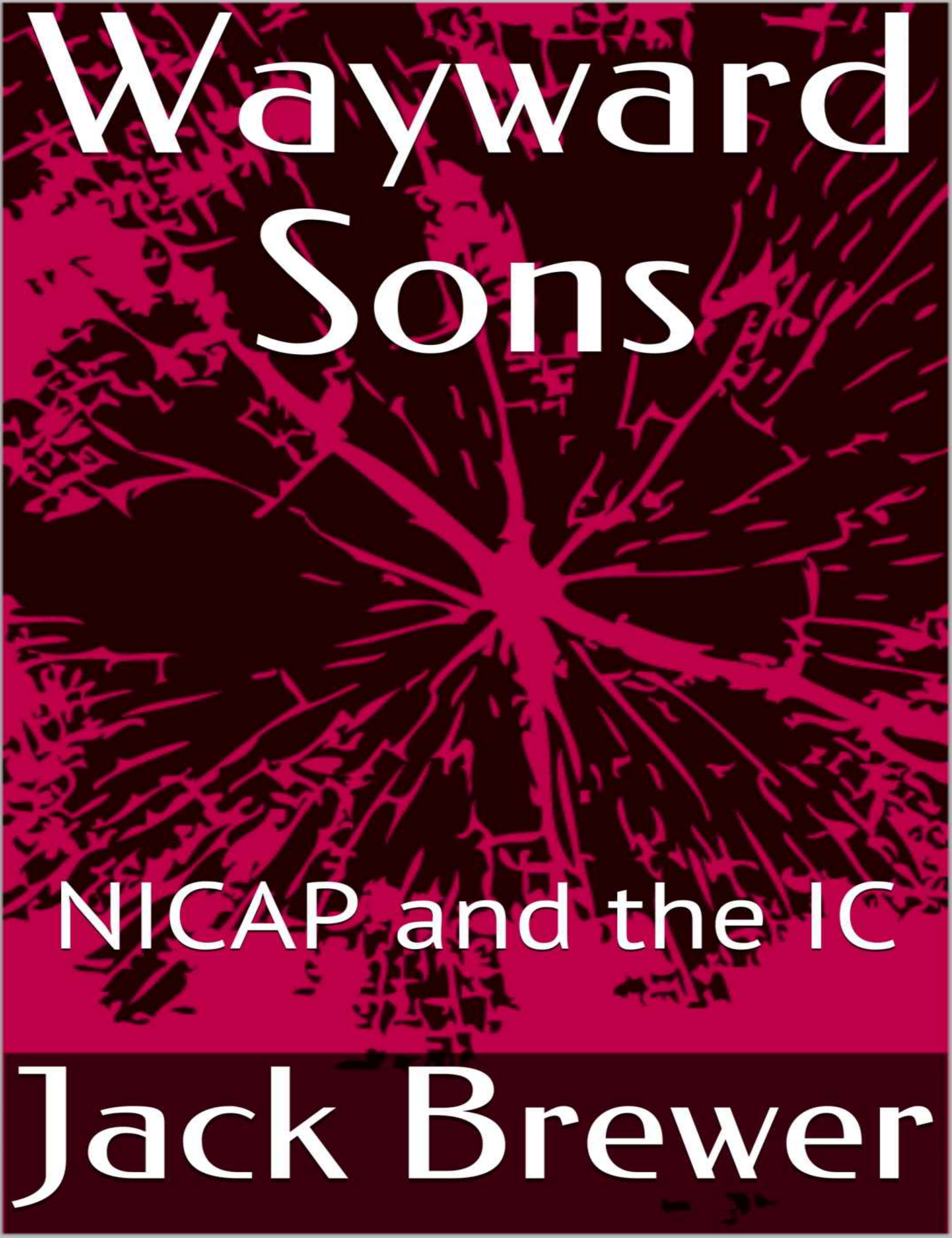

Wayward Sons

NICAP and the IC

Jack Brewer

WAYWARD SONS

NICAP AND THE IC

By

JACK BREWER

Copyright © 2021

INTRODUCTION

The significance of the NICAP story is subjective. Like many historical sagas, it depends on who you ask as to what it meant, and, in some cases, what even happened. Select events can be established from records and archives, and we will certainly examine them, but the fact remains people have differing ideas about what was most important and most interesting about the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena.

It is notable that the NICAP saga may be viewed in at least two contexts. One, which is my interest, is the organization's intersection with the intelligence community. A second, and more commonly viewed context, is NICAP UFO investigation. People interested in UFOs understandably want to know if the group learned anything important. The investigators of NICAP sure thought so, but dissecting the situation leads us to the paradox of the matter. The story of NICAP, and what is most significant about it, is not so easily discerned.

Did NICAP do some good work? Yes, it did. Were NICAP investigators credulous? Yes, that's true too, depending on specific circumstances considered. Was NICAP a CIA front? That might be accurate as well, short lived and/or intermittent as it may have been. Did NICAP rattle swords with the CIA and Air Force about a UFO cover-up? Yep, it certainly did. Was the CIA monitoring NICAP? It sure appears so, to more and less extents and depending on the particular circumstances. Did the CIA dismantle NICAP? Maybe so, or, at the least, it is true that CIA associates did basic managerial work for NICAP throughout its lifespan and stages of decline. Did NICAP run itself in the ground through financial mismanagement? Yes, to an extent it did indeed, which also means the CIA was not fully responsible for its demise, at least not necessarily. Much like the parable of the blind men and the elephant, many perspectives are correct to some extent, depending on how one comes at it.

Many feel NICAP was derailed by the Central Intelligence Agency. Perceived motives often include thwarting UFO investigation and destabilizing the group's effort to challenge the Condon Report, which was an Air Force-sponsored assessment that minimized the saucer situation. The presence of CIA associates in the saga is clear enough, but motives are much less so. We will consider the circumstances along with the perspectives of those familiar with the events.

I actually came to strongly suspect the CIA was substantially involved in the incorporation and initial operation of NICAP. We will explore this in detail on the coming pages.

Ironically, I am not convinced the situation significantly impaired or even particularly affected the way Maj. Donald Keyhoe would run the outfit for the next 13 years. During his tenure there was some overt CIA interest in NICAP activities, as well as some possible not so overt interest. The activities of CIA psychological warfare specialist and NICAP Board of Governors member Col. Joseph Bryan III will be explored, as will profiles of his intelligence colleagues from the Office of Policy Coordination. We will examine those situations along with some surrounding spectacles that found their ways into a NICAP orbit.

A focus of this book is NICAP's relation to the intelligence community, particularly the CIA and FBI. We will draw upon documents obtained through the Freedom of Information Act (FOIA), newspaper clippings, and many more cited sources.

Much of the material referenced was obtained from records published on the websites of intelligence agencies or by submitting my own requests under the FOIA. As of this writing, several FOIA requests remain open. I will post the material at my blog, The UFO Trail, as it is received.

Another primary source for information covered in this book was NICAP files provided by researcher and archivist Barry Greenwood. I am tremendously grateful to him for supplying the material.

A 69 MB folder provided by Mr. Greenwood consists of 42 pdfs containing NICAP records. It may be accessed in whole on Google Drive or as individual files I will reference and link, as will be the case with many additional sources.

I apologize in advance for the errors which will inevitably inhabit this offering. I hope we find them few, far between, and of minimal consequence.

I am thankful to all who helpfully fielded my questions, provided material, and assisted me in reaching people of interest. I also thank all the researchers whose work and materials are cited. Select archives played key roles as well, and I am grateful to their administrators for their valuable assistance.

Thanks to those who maintain intelligence agency online reading rooms. I am grateful to the FBI, NARA, CIA, NSA, USAF, and the many FOIA officers at several agencies who filled my requests, informed me when no material was available, conducted correspondence, and continue to process records pertaining to this saga. Their work is important and appreciated.

I am grateful to the friends, loved ones, and acquaintances who supported this effort. Your messages, encouragement and phone calls are important to me. Thank you.

I am grateful to you for joining me on an exploration of events beginning some 70 years ago. Thanks for coming along. In doing so, we will hopefully catch a meaningful glimpse or three of what took place. I trust you will share the interest I developed, and find that circumstances from years gone by tend to shed light on more recent events.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Introduction

Table of Contents

Chapter 1 Oh, Disclosure, I Hear You Calling

Chapter 2 Launch

Chapter 3 The NICAP Story

Chapter 4 Count de Rochefort

Chapter 5 Early Finances

Chapter 6 OPC & Counsel Services

Chapter 7 CI, Not ET

Chapter 8 Mixed Messages

Chapter 9 UFO Tunnel Vision

Chapter 10 Keyhoe Years

Chapter 11 Col. Bryan

Chapter 12 The OPC Psy Warfare Crew

Chapter 13 In the News

Chapter 14 Final Years

Closing Thoughts

Things get complicated when you get past eighteen
But the class of '57 had its dreams

- The Statler Brothers, *The Class of '57*

Chapter 1

Oh, Disclosure, I Hear You Calling

The 1940's rang in the modern UFO era. Many researchers went on to sincerely believe they had legitimate shots at pulling the UFO sword from the stone.

“The greatest story involving Earth and Space may soon be told,” proclaimed an October 1, 1954, newsletter distributed by CRIFO. That organization was “Civilian Research, Interplanetary Flying Objects,” directed by Leonard Stringfield.

The assertion was based on an interview Stringfield conducted with Lt. Col. John O'Mara, described as a “Deputy Commander, Intelligence,” in the United States Air Force. The colonel apparently kindly “confirmed the existence of 'flying saucers,'” leading Stringfield to declare the “truth may be bared soon.”

Spoiler: It wasn't.

Stringfield further reported the Air Force planned to cooperate with the public about saucers, and that the public would be taken into confidence. This was believed to be “stimulated by recent events.” Ain't it always?

Stringfield continued, “Flying saucers 'do exist' the Colonel told me, and he added, in effect, past contradictions were unfortunate.”

Stringfield described Col. O'Mara as “wonderfully cooperative,” and the officer even gave a thumbs up to the CRIFO newsletter. Asked about the publication, the colonel indicated it was slanted in the right direction.

The CRIFO newsletter was shared with me in an email from writer and researcher James Carrion. He found the comparisons interesting to much more recent drums of Disclosure, as beaten by such outlets as the New York Times. I indeed share the perspective, as we can note many similarities to the ongoing story of the Advanced Aerospace Threat Identification Program (AATIP) and those promoting the narrative. Comparisons include: recent events were supposedly a tipping point; in-the-know intelligence community insiders were believed to be aiding the process; the government acknowledged the existence of UFOs; praise was bestowed upon the writer embracing the narrative; and, of course, the ultimate confirmation was to come any day.

Members of the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena, or NICAP, once believed they, too, were on the verge of something big. In approximately 1958 literature from the young organization was distributed with a message from its director, Maj. Donald E. Keyhoe.

“Because of new developments, we expect a break in official [UFO] secrecy in 1959,” it was explained.[1] The general story line came to be a recurring theme for NICAP and its investigators, many of whom worked diligently in their attempts to facilitate Disclosure. It was believed an ample amount of public pressure strategically applied to the right agencies and offices would cause a bean spill. The struggle, progress and setbacks of Disclosure were often publicly reported by the group. As a matter of fact, a tug of war with Uncle Sam pretty much came to define NICAP.

In 1961 hopes remained high. A NICAP investigator mailed a letter to a potential UFO witness, enclosing a questionnaire and requesting they fill it out and return it along with details of the sighting. Such was relatively standard operating procedure.

“The information that you give may be the link in solving the great UFO mystery,” the investigator wrote.

The NICAP researcher further explained, “I might also add that your sighting of this UFO may prove a point which could affect not only our present generation, but also the generations to come.”[2]

The letter comes to us from files compiled by the FBI on NICAP. The recipient apparently forwarded it along with the questionnaire to FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover. That was not a particularly unusual thing to do in those days, as Bureau files contain several letters from citizens expressing concern about the NICAP agenda. Letter writers would request Hoover's guidance on their suspicions the UFO group may have had a Communist allegiance. This was not exclusive to NICAP by any means, as a variety of factors led the American public to suspect Communist sympathies ran rampant in the United States.

Hoover's policy towards NICAP was to maintain a neutral public stance, as his response indicates. He or his secretary would typically thank letter writers for their concerns, craft a cordial enough “no comment” on NICAP, and provide further reading on such topics as how to spot Soviet propaganda.

Hoover's response in this particular instance included explaining he would like to be of service, but information contained in FBI files must be maintained as confidential due to regulations of the Department of Justice. Hoover wrote he regretted being unable to answer the inquiry, and hoped it would not be interpreted to infer the Bureau either did or did not have the data requested.

“We're close to it,” Maj. Keyhoe declared in 1966 about discovering what flying saucers were. He made the statement towards the end of his appearance on the then-popular nationally televised show, To Tell the Truth.[3]

In 1978, optimism among UFO investigators persisted. Phoenix-based Ground Saucer Watch (GSW) Director William H. Spaulding suggested during a funding appeal published in the organization's April bulletin that UFO answers were obtainable.

He wrote, “Now is the time all of us must ask ourselves if we really want to solve the UFO mystery. If you answer yes, then we must ask every member to donate five, ten, twenty dollars to help defer the expensive legal fees.”

Spaulding was alluding to legal action directed at targets such as the CIA to obtain what were believed to be revealing UFO documents. In that same bulletin, GSW Director of Research W. Todd Zechel expressed his confidence in cracking the case.

Zechel told readers, “In order to continue this fight and put enough pressure on government agencies to force them to start telling the truth regarding UFOs, we need substantial donations from each and every member. Moreover, we need help from the general public. After all, these efforts will benefit all of mankind, in that the evidence we obtain will once and for all allow us to determine the origin and nature of UFOs. I'll get you the truth: you get me the funds.”

In Spaulding and Zechel's defense, they and their colleagues actually did, in fact, successfully obtain a substantial amount of government documents pertaining to UFOs. The material just never conclusively established their ultimate suspicions and beliefs about Uncle Sam and saucers.

Too bad for Ground Saucer Watch they didn't think of raising funds by throwing a hat in the public securities ring. That's what happened in 2017 at To The Stars Academy of Arts and Science (TTSA).

Coinciding with a company launch and call for investors, TTSA front man Tom DeLonge took up the 'breakthroughs are imminent' torch, stating, “We believe there are discoveries within our reach that will revolutionize the human experience, but they can only be accomplished through the unrestricted support of breakthrough research and innovation.”

“Imagine having 25th century technology *this* century,” added longtime ufology staple and TTSA co-founder Dr. Hal Puthoff. He explained that a team of passionately curious minds was assembled to reveal and decode “information that can challenge the limits of traditional theory” pertaining to studying Unidentified Aerial Phenomena. Puthoff further asserted they were bringing transformative science and engineering out of the shadows.

Those 2017 remarks by DeLonge and Puthoff do not appear to be aging too awfully much better than those from their overly optimistic and perhaps at times self-important 20th century predecessors, but maybe I don't know revolutionized human experience and transformative science when I see it. I do, however, still have my money in my pocket. As of this writing, it appears much of that team of passionately curious minds sought greener pastures and the future of TTSA is very much in doubt.

Prior to the TTSA creative fundraising, the Mutual UFO Network (MUFON) cut right to the chase and seemed to accept funds provided to Robert Bigelow by the Defense Intelligence Agency (DIA). The controversial philanthropist and UFO World main character facilitated the arrangement as part of apparent Pentagon UFO programs. I say “apparent” because a great deal of the projects remain unconfirmed for the time being. Key MUFON personnel typically claim no knowledge of the source of the funds or involvement with what we now know to have been the agency originally managing the reported UFO projects, the DIA. It is also unclear if the DIA fully endorsed enrolling the services of MUFON, particularly if the feds were already in possession of so much information ripe for Disclosure, but we'll just keep moving.

Writers like Leslie Kean and George Knapp managed to position themselves in the midst of the Disclosure dust devil on several occasions, even if their coverage may be disingenuous, in error, or more than a little responsible for perpetuating the whirlwind itself. The two, along with numerous Disclosure beat reporters who followed suit, tend to promote rather credulous stories and flawed lines of reasoning in the form of what some came to consider access journalism. Such examples include Knapp's devotion to the Bob Lazar story, unquestioning portrayal of Skinwalker Ranch, and uncritical acceptance of TTSA statements and narratives while consistently showcasing the personalities involved.

Knapp's defense of the dubious Lazar case is particularly vulnerable to criticism, considering the duo's claim they were each aware of a location where Lazar stashed some purportedly alien-engineered Element 115, yet they steadfastly refused to produce it. Researchers aptly noted the irony of supposed Disclosure activists who, we are to believe, choose not to grace the world with the very smoking gun they demand from the powers that be.

Kean's objectivity and apparent confirmation bias were called into question when she perpetuated claims of a government cover-up of the JAL 1628 UFO case. The claims were directly contradicted by testimonies of two firsthand witnesses to the alleged cover-up. They attended a meeting in which the purported cover-up directive was allegedly issued, yet they said no such statements were made. Moreover, the two indicated info was actually distributed for analysis. Kean omitted the circumstances from her account of the case - even after researchers brought them to her attention - while reportedly simultaneously obstructing communication between the researchers and her contact who claimed the cover-up was in place.

Kean also made yet to be verified assertions about the AATIP, as well as fantastic claims about Chilean alleged UFOs that proved unsupported. The work of such writers as Kean and Knapp is held in high regard by many UFO enthusiasts, while others seriously question their chronic uncritical and incomplete reporting that often omits rather obvious discrepancies. Criticism may be most justified in the way the two present themselves as journalists, while titles such as UFO promoters seem much more accurate.

Yet another noteworthy UFO Disclosure activist, or at least he seems to like to think so, is Dr. Steven Greer. The former medical doctor undertook rather extreme theatrics and questionable lines of research, ostensibly designed to facilitate wider knowledge of UFOs and their occupants. Greer's activities reportedly include bringing an entourage of armed bodyguards to a scheduled speaking engagement at the 2013 Contact in the Desert event in Joshua Tree, California. He is also known for exaggerating the significance of his interactions with public officials and charging substantial fees for workshops purported to facilitate contact with extraterrestrials, among other eyebrow-raising activities.

Greer's general shtick is that the visiting ETs are friendly, but Uncle Sam wants to paint them as hostile and keep a lid on it because ET has a source of free energy. Letting the free energy cat out of the bag would loosen the government stranglehold on many industries, Greer suggests. His outspoken activism on UFO truth, he would lead us to believe, resulted in several thwarted attempts on his life by the powers that be, thus the dramatic scene at Joshua Tree.

Greer may be most infamous for his extraordinary claims which proved incorrect surrounding the Atacama skeleton, and the ethical issues which arose with his and Dr. Garry Nolan's handling of the specimen. Nolan, an honored Stanford professor and researcher who obtained degrees in genetics, had a brief affiliation with To The Stars. He was also widely and confidently suspected to be a not so anonymously portrayed, starry eyed character in a Dr. Diana Walsh Pasulka nonfiction (sort of) book, *American Cosmic*.

The situation was questioned by your author, as was Nolan and Walsh Pasulka's lack of willingness to directly address their alleged involvement in reports of “security personnel” monitoring and editing her statements made on podcasts. Suffice it to say neither of the two had much to say about any of it, but I guess that's Disclosure for you. Transparency often seems to only be a good thing if it's applied to the actions of others. The sincerity of Walsh Pasulka's seemingly halfhearted effort to conceal the identities of primary characters in *American Cosmic* was questioned throughout segments of the UFO genre, as were the underlying motives.

Back to Greer. He shoveled the coal pretty hard on the Atacama skeleton story, which he sold as pertaining to extraterrestrials. This was depicted in his 2013 crowdsource-funded film, *Sirius,* which was billed as blowing the lid off the UFO mystery. Cash contributors voiced disappointment when they had to pay to view the movie and indicated they felt double-billed. Some then found the contents of the movie lacking and falling well short of its advertised lid-blowing significance. The disappointment didn't get any less bitter when Greer announced yet another film which needed funding and would, once and for all, reveal the shocking truth. It of course didn't, then he did it again. Some might think tax forms show the purpose of his persistence in the face of chronic futility.

In 2014 I reviewed tax information submitted to the Internal Revenue Service by the Greer-operated nonprofit corporation, Center for the Study of Extraterrestrial Intelligence (CSETI), which seemed to serve as the hub for his ventures. I discovered Greer reported taking no salary from CSETI, but during the 2012 tax year, CSETI reported paying some $177,000 for consultation fees to the Greer-owned Crossing Point Inc.

The amount CSETI paid the prior year, 2011, to Crossing Point was $180,360. In 2010 over $214,000 was paid from CSETI to Crossing Point. During the three-year period reviewed, Greer's Crossing Point was paid nearly 70% of the $833,083 combined CSETI reported total income, according to 990 forms filed to the IRS.

The 2012 CSETI Form 990EZ indicated the organization surrendered its nonprofit status effective January 1, 2013. The move may have been related to bringing in so much more unrelated business income than public support that its nonprofit charity status was possibly jeopardized as defined by IRS. Surrendering the nonprofit status would then be an advisable move on Dr. Greer's part, and not bad work if you can get it.

Stephen Bassett crashed the Disclosure party and formed the Paradigm Research Group, a lobbying initiative, or something to that effect, to end the “truth embargo.” To the best of my knowledge, the Group officially and functionally consists of no one other than himself. His efforts include such projects as the 2008 Million Fax on Washington, in which he attempted to inspire followers to inundate the incoming Obama administration with faxes, emails, and phone calls demanding the release of UFO files.

Bassett probably made his loudest noise with the 2013 Citizen Hearing on Disclosure. Six former members of Congress were paid $20,000 apiece to sit in a mock hearing in which they spent a few days listening to dozens of people of varying levels of credibility, notoriety, and infamy provide testimony on UFOs. The above mentioned Steven Greer was among the presenters, and evening activities included a screening of his film, *Sirius*.

Richard Dolan was also among the presenters at the Citizen Hearing and is known for what his followers seem to believe is his fight to pry the UFO truth from the government. At the Hearing he rather shamelessly trotted out a filmed interview of an aged man, referred to as “Anonymous.” The man allegedly worked for the CIA and observed many astounding ET-related sights during his employment at Area 51. The statements, dubbed a deathbed testimony, were heavily implied to be motivated by the man's desire to tell the world what he knew and avoid taking the stories to his looming grave.

Trouble was, as I covered in 2013, Linda Moulton Howe had long since interviewed “Anonymous.” His completely unverified story was no less than 15 years old at the time it was implied to be urgent and showcased by Dolan and Bassett at the Citizen Hearing on Disclosure. In preparation for my above referenced 2013 article on the situation, I offered both Dolan and Bassett an opportunity to comment and explain what they would say to people who might question the tactic. Neither responded.

Doubt was further cast on Dolan's judgment and motives when he participated in the Roswell Slides fiasco, a chain of events involving slides which depicted what was actually a mummified Native American child but were promoted as images of an ET. Dolan spoke at the dubious beWITNESS event, a public rollout of the slides sponsored by Jaime Maussan, at which time Dolan called the slides “compelling.” He also vouched for the research skills of the questionable crew promoting the story, who at absolute best utterly failed to pursue the most profoundly obvious of explanations. Many wondered how Dolan, who claims to be qualified to penetrate and analyze complex issues related to UFOs and national security, could sincerely be so inept.

Shortly after the beWITNESS purported big reveal of the slides, the truth came shining through and the story was completely dismantled due to the quality work of the Roswell Slides Research Group. Within hours of the event, a team of volunteer researchers was well on its way to competently analyzing the slides, high resolution images of which the promoters had previously withheld and supposedly been unable to accurately interpret for years. As stated, the slides were conclusively shown to depict a deceased Native American child. Dolan's stock continued to dip with other instances of seemingly unquestioning acceptance of fantastic stories that should test the patience of even the most credulous UFO fan.

He more recently vigorously fanned the flames of an ill conceived tale with extremely loose connections between dots, all ultimately designed to prove what, in UFO circles, is known as the Core Story (saucer crashes, alien bodies and all that). A word to the wise: if an argument relies heavily on speculation, it doesn't prove a point.

The incarnation in question of this version of the Core Story involves hearsay and alleged statements attributed to the purportedly in-the-know Adm. Thomas R. Wilson, and was referred to by Dolan as the “UFO leak of the century.” The story was of course amplified by George Knapp, since it included reference to Eric Davis and others of Skinwalker and TTSA notoriety. For those particularly interested, writer Billy Cox reported how Wilson repeatedly denied any validity to the rumors, among other problematic aspects of this shaggy dog story.

It is rather fascinating how the UFO Disclosure concept stays propped up so sturdily. Back on January 8, 1999, Art Bell hosted “UFO Disclosure '99” on Coast to Coast AM. Stephen Bassett was an integral part of the show, and other guests included Steven Greer, Richard Hoagland, and Joe Firmage.

It should be noted that so many of these UFO activists somehow manage to endlessly sell urgency. Many have been personally ringing an alarm of imminent Disclosure for decades.

The highest hurdle for Bassett to clear indeed became the fact the deadlines of his recurring insinuations and outright predictions came and went, unfulfilled. And he made a lot of insinuations and predictions.

Similar can be said of history's many UFO personalities who donned the Disclosure cape to promise all-telling government revelations to an eagerly awaiting UFO World. It may get tough to perpetually conjure Disclosure urgency, but it is obviously quite possible. New generations and followers continue to find it an irresistible draw while taking roles as both movement leaders and supporters. For some there may be a lack of awareness of the history of futility, while the dedication of others may be grounded in stubbornness, wishful thinking, questionable motives, or any number of such circumstances. The UFO-intoxicated masses just keep coming, and there is always a supplier to meet the demand, if not create it.

Let's dial the clock back from the current head-spinning pace and return to the early days of the modern UFO steeplechase. Though absent internet and podcasts, the pioneers were not without urgency and drama. Far from it.

Our group of focus formed in Washington, D.C. in the 1950's. Mystery and curiosity surrounded the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena from its very inception. Many challenges would plague the organization, but public interest in its affairs was usually not among them. This was apparently due in part to the public's fascination with flying saucers, an occurrence which was driven by several factors, most certainly including media attention.

After considerable investigation I have become thoroughly convinced many NICAP members were sincere and effective researchers, even if unaware of their biases at times. Whatever games may have been afoot, there were indeed people in NICAP genuinely interested in a UFO mystery, for better or worse. They believed their work was important and they considered themselves to be pioneers of a sort. In some manners of speaking, perhaps they were. In other instances, motives are more in question, as is research accuracy at times.

NICAP experienced highs, lows, success and failure, reportedly amassing some 14,000 members at one point. For some context, the Mutual UFO Network currently claims on its website to have about 4,000 worldwide members.

Among the most notable aspects of the NICAP legacy is *The UFO Evidence*, brought to life by editor Richard Hall. The 1964 report consists of some 200,000 words of UFO investigations. It embodies what NICAP felt was its 750 most compelling cases from the more than 5,000 contained in its files. *The UFO Evidence* was provided to Congress and more than 10,000 copies were disseminated to scientific research organizations, government agencies, universities, military installations, and libraries.[4] While the relevance of the material could certainly be debated, the report offered a tangible starting point for discussions and a realized achievement for investigators of its day.

So what happened between NICAP's inception, a 1960's hay day of public interest, soaring membership, reports of CIA infiltration, the org's decline, and its eventual 1980's demise? To better understand the rise and fall of NICAP, and events of cultural and social significance along the way, let's start by exploring the beginnings. That takes us to the U.S. capital. The year was 1956.

CHAPTER 2

LAUNCH

If you strolled the sidewalks of D.C. in 1956, there's a good chance you'd hear an Elvis song drifting out of a nearby bar or from the radio of a passing motorist. Presley's “Heartbreak Hotel” and “Don't Be Cruel” were the year's number one and two selling record singles.

That passing motorist might be cruising in a Chevy Corvette with a convertible top down. The now iconic 'Vette was the best selling car of '56.

The ladies in the District might be clad in skirts and knit sweaters. Another popular look was fur, used to make dresses, coats, and even tailored suits. Accessories included the headscarf and cat-eye glasses.

While Elvis forged a legend, President Eisenhower conducted a successful campaign for reelection with a vice president named Richard M. Nixon, and Americans became increasingly aware of a nation called Vietnam, an eclectic group of men and women began meeting around Washington. At least some of them were interested in flying saucers.

The initial gathering took place in 1956 of what would become the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena. The planning session was likely attended by T. Townsend Brown, Morris K. Jessup, Clara L. John, Maj. Donald E. Keyhoe, Arnold and Margaret Kruckman, and possibly a few other local UFO investigators and interested parties.

Women played significant roles in NICAP, although some of their saucer-related beliefs would later be justifiably criticized by men in positions of leadership. To be fair, in the grand scheme of things their notions often don't seem to have been any more far fetched than those of their male counterparts. One way or the other, it is clear that women were instrumental in forming and operating the organization.

Archived letters written by Margaret Kruckman show how she voiced her opinions to the male NICAP leadership on such issues as potential board members. Other times, Arnold Kruckman would act as somewhat of a liaison, explaining his wife's thoughts to NICAP leaders.

As I read through the many NICAP files graciously provided to me by Barry Greenwood, I felt I developed somewhat of a sense of the social climate. Regardless, the fact often remains that necessity is the mother of invention, and produces mutually beneficial relationships. Women of NICAP worked as both volunteer and paid employees, and some contributed financially, even if their appointments to positions of authority were simply never going to happen.

Clara John, aka Mrs. Walton Colcord John, is largely credited with paving the way for NICAP. She was a widow who apparently shared an interest in esoteric subject matter with her late husband. Most notably, Clara was the original ghostwriter for the well known and controversial contactee, George Adamski.

She resided on a Maryland farm where she hosted a flying saucer discussion group. The group would also reportedly meet at a local YWCA. Clara regularly published a related newsletter, *The Little Listening Post*, which would later serve as a supportive voice for NICAP news.

Morris Jessup was apparently acquainted with Clara John and her circles. Along those lines, a NICAP letter dated October 23, 1956, was sent to an individual in response to their questions about the forming of the young outfit.

“The idea for the national organization was presented at a meeting of a local saucer group here in Washington by Mr. Morris K. Jessup and Mrs. Walton Colcord John concurrently,” the letter reads. “Most of the initial encouragement came from Mrs. John. The writer became interested and agreed to donate his time in the organizational stages in order to get something started immediately.”[5]

It should be noted, however, there are variations of the story of who first conceived or initiated formalizing NICAP. There are probably several reasons, ranging from matters of convenience to being polite, and perhaps even some intentional misleading.

The inventor T. Townsend Brown became involved with Clara's saucer group and took a specific interest. The group would prove to serve as the inspiration and framework for NICAP. Collections were taken up to help with costs. As a matter of fact, it is noted on the Thomas Townsend Brown Family Website that NICAP was founded from Clara's “Little Listening Post,” and it is suggested the term “Committee” was run up the flagpole while sitting around the Brown kitchen table.

The life stories of each of these original NICAP organizers could easily in themselves be the primary subjects of entire books, and most were. Their activities made their ways into many a widely read work, UFO-related and otherwise. The lives and stories of NICAPers mingled, forming a collective saga, for better or worse.

NICAP was officially incorporated Oct. 24, 1956, according to a copy of a certificate archived in the NICAP files. T. Townsend Brown was the inaugural

NICAP executive vice chairman, or basically director, though his stint would be short lived.

From a young age, Brown showed an interest in physics and was particularly intrigued by possible antigravity forces. In 1923 he attended the California Institute of Technology and tried to demonstrate his perceived discoveries. However, physicists were not impressed and disagreed with his interpretations of his experiments. This would become a recurring and decades-long theme. Although his work continues today to inspire scattered interest, Brown's efforts to document antigravity forces related to electric charges are largely considered to have simply been wrong and explainable as misidentified occurrences of physics. His persistence may well have been partially fueled, however, by the very resistance to his ideas.

Brown first began working on a proposal for what he called Project Winterhaven in 1951, according to the Brown Family Website. Winterhaven manifested in a 66-page project proposal Brown reportedly shopped to the Department of Defense. The ambitious and large scale operation would have involved multiple organizations with the stated purpose of confirming “a fundamental interlocking relationship exists between the electrodynamic field and the gravitational field.” The relationship was proposed to be harnessed and applied to fields such as weapons research and communications. The Winterhaven proposal included photos of experiments undertaken with flying saucer-like objects and related concepts. Brown's work continued in one form or another for many years.

His interest in harnessing antigravity certainly played a role in his visit to Clara John's saucer club, and Brown would eventually model some of his experiments after UFOs as described by George Adamski. Somewhat curiously, Adamski's craft were perceived to resemble a flying saucer in a dream experienced by Brown's daughter. Adamski himself toured the North Carolina lab in which those experiments took place, although Brown was no longer working there by the time of Adamski's visit in 1960.

Reviewing materials on Mr. Brown might lead one to suspect his persistence about physics experiments was more motivated by personal longings than solid research and educated opinions. Some would argue such emotionally driven confirmation bias might also be an accurate portrayal of what came to power NICAP itself, even if from a bit different point of view.

Adamski and NICAP were not the only connections between Brown and the UFO scene, whether those connections were organic or manufactured. Writer/researchers William L. “Bill” Moore and Charles Berlitz built a heavy claim out of the Brown legacy in their 1979 book, *The Philadelphia*

Experiment. The duo asserted Brown and his work were involved in a now famous yet unsubstantiated cluster of events which cascaded out of an alleged 1943 government project. The purported events were unanticipated byproducts of an experiment and were said to include profound distortions of space and time, or at least I guess that's how we'd describe the alleged spontaneous long distance transfer of a Navy battleship that supposedly left crewmen stuck in the walls.

Some readers will recognize writer Morris Jessup for his relation to the saga of the Philadelphia Experiment. Long before Moore and Berlitz, he launched the story.

Jessup authored four books on UFOs, all between 1955 and 1957, what we might consider some of the formative NICAP years. The first of the four books, *The Case for the UFO*, contained information about the alleged experiment. Jessup then soon began receiving letters from someone claiming to have direct knowledge of the purported extraordinary incidents in Philadelphia.

The book itself became a significant piece of UFO lore when, in 1957, Jessup was reportedly contacted by the Office of Naval Research (ONR) and informed it had been mailed a copy of the book. The copy was annotated throughout with bizarre references to aliens, the alleged experiment in Philly, and other sundry fringe topics. The notes were made to imply they were part of an ongoing conversation volleyed between three different people – or aliens – but the entire chain of events is obviously quite dubious and many theories surround the circumstances.

To make a strange story even stranger, the ONR opted to print a small run of 100 copies of the annotated book. It became quite a collector's item in certain circles and is understandably considered to represent one of the more intriguing chains of events in the entire UFO shooting match. Over 60 years since it happened we still don't know for sure what the hell was going on, but Jessup and Brown, who apparently converged upon Clara John's saucer club and subsequently NICAP, were certainly in its orbit.

Enter Arnold Kruckman. Mr. Kruckman would be considered a fascinating, Dos Equis 'most interesting man in the world' kind of guy without ever getting mixed up in the flying saucer and NICAP plot lines. As Kruckman informed Adm. Delmer Fahrney in a letter he penned in 1957, “Who's Who in America has carried me for the last forty years.”[6]

Kruckman's story includes being a visionary in the media industry with ties to the Hearst family of newspaper dynasty fame. The Kruckman News Service of Washington, D.C. was part of his influence on public opinion and news cycles.

Kruckman was a successful lobbyist with connections and he produced results. He influenced legislation, was an official in the Aeronautical Society of America, organized details for several aeronautical firsts (including the initial around the world flight), hung with the Wright brothers in Kitty Hawk, and was acquainted with Nikola Tesla. I read he was even made an honorary member of the Hopi tribe. The man got around.

It is reasonable to suspect mutually shared interests may have created a familiarity between Kruckman and Maj. Keyhoe, a former Marine Corps pilot and author who managed promotional tours for aviation pioneers. Keyhoe wrote many articles and books, several about aviation or flying saucers, expressing a belief UFOs represented extraterrestrial spacecraft.

One of Kruckman's widely known success stories happened when he got immersed in an early 20th century high profile case of land and water management. Kruckman organized the formidable League of the Southwest to lobby for its desired land development.

Just days before a much anticipated public hearing was slated to occur, Kruckman scheduled his own meeting. Opponents criticized the move as a grandstanding propaganda ploy, as public officials and opponents of the League were not obligated in any way to consider the agenda of Kruckman's meeting or even so much as attend. However, they seemed to be in the unenviable position of appearing unconcerned if they ignored Kruckman and his group, yet would devalue the state-sanctioned proceedings if they marched to the beat of Kruckman's drum. They would also be unable to promote their views at Kruckman's event if they did not attend, and the public might further form its expectations of rulings without them by the time the official meeting took place a few days later. The bottom line is Kruckman's strategies proved successful. The position of the League of the Southwest prevailed and eventually led to the 1922 Colorado River Compact and the Boulder Dam.

Letters exchanged in 1956 between Kruckman and Brown show Kruckman's moral support of NICAP, as well as Kruckman's endorsement for Brown as its leader. Both Arnold Kruckman and his wife, Margaret, also expressed written support for Morris Jessup, Maj. Donald Keyhoe, and Clara John, among others, to be key members of NICAP. The Kruckmans suggested they believed those people to be knowledgeable about UFOs. Some of the couple's suggestions materialized and some did not. Jessup, for instance, was never actually on the Board of Governors. Keyhoe was destined to become the face of NICAP, while Clara John never had any direct long term involvement.

The Kruckmans, Clara John, and their circles gave the claims of George Adamski and the contactee movement more credibility than some of the

NICAPers, including Keyhoe, were willing to extend. This would become a sticking point throughout the ranks and years of NICAP, and largely throughout the UFO genre itself. NICAP leadership wanted the support - morally, financially, and in labor - of what we might call the fringe element, but did not want the baggage that came with it. NICAP wanted to embrace stances that might draw the interest of serious scientists and reputable figures. UFO researchers and organizations continue today to struggle with alternately promoting and rejecting content that may alienate the followings they seek to build. You can't please all the saucer buffs all the time, and the publicly perceived line separating open-mindedness and foolishness is subject to ebb and flow.

Kruckman's willingness to entertain the incredible and unsubstantiated can be found within his archived letters. In a September 1956 letter to Kansas Representative Wint Smith, Kruckman referenced Adamski while voicing concerns thousands of extraterrestrials might be roaming freely within the United States.

“What I have in mind,” Kruckman explained, “is that if it is true there are such numbers of persons, from the planets in space, here in the United States it should be mandatory that they register in an appropriate way. Obviously we should know what they are here for and we should have access to them in order that we may get a better understanding of the aerial phenomena represented by 'flying saucers', etc.”[7]

Margaret Kruckman donated to become a founding member of NICAP, while Arnold Kruckman kept a bit more distance, in spite of his involvement in the planning stages. Kruckman, experienced at influencing and sailing those ebbing tides of public opinion, described his admitted financial interest in the flying saucer topic in 1956 letters to Brown.

The Kruckmans were undertaking an entrepreneurial venture directed at youth.[8] Kruckman was “working on the juvenile periodical SPACE ADVENTURE,” a magazine of which he would sell subscriptions, he reiterated to Brown in a letter dated Aug. 25, 1956.

“Aside from its very specific objective of appealing to the imagination of the juniors,” Kruckman wrote, “it is my intent that it shall be a vehicle to stir in their minds and in the souls of the more adult the spirit of patriotism that I discussed in this letter. I am explaining this so that you may understand that SPACE ADVENTURE not only will try to arouse the imaginary concepts of the young in those things for which your Committee stands, but that also it will be devoted to the purpose of arousing the utmost patriotism in the sense expressed by Mr. Hoover.”

I interpret the “Mr. Hoover” referenced was Herbert, not J. Edgar of the FBI, as Kruckman described his strong support for former President Herbert Hoover on a previous page of the four-page letter. He stated that Herbert made a notable address at the then-recent Republican Convention.

Kruckman explained to Brown his plans to market an emblem to be used as costume jewelry and a lapel pin. Initial goals for NICAP membership drives apparently targeted some half a million members, and this did not escape Kruckman's notice. It apparently did not escape CIA notice, either, if not an idea attributable to Agency assets themselves, as we will explore in the coming pages.

“When it is time we should like to discuss this emblem matter with you, or with the proper Committee in order that the idea be made a part of the initial drive,” Kruckman wrote Brown. “From my past experience in similar matters I know that the emblem will be of extreme usefulness to those who conduct your drive for the 500,000 membership. The more people who are seen with the emblems on their coats or on their dresses, the greater will be the interest in the drive itself.”

Promotional material for the emblem is pictured below.

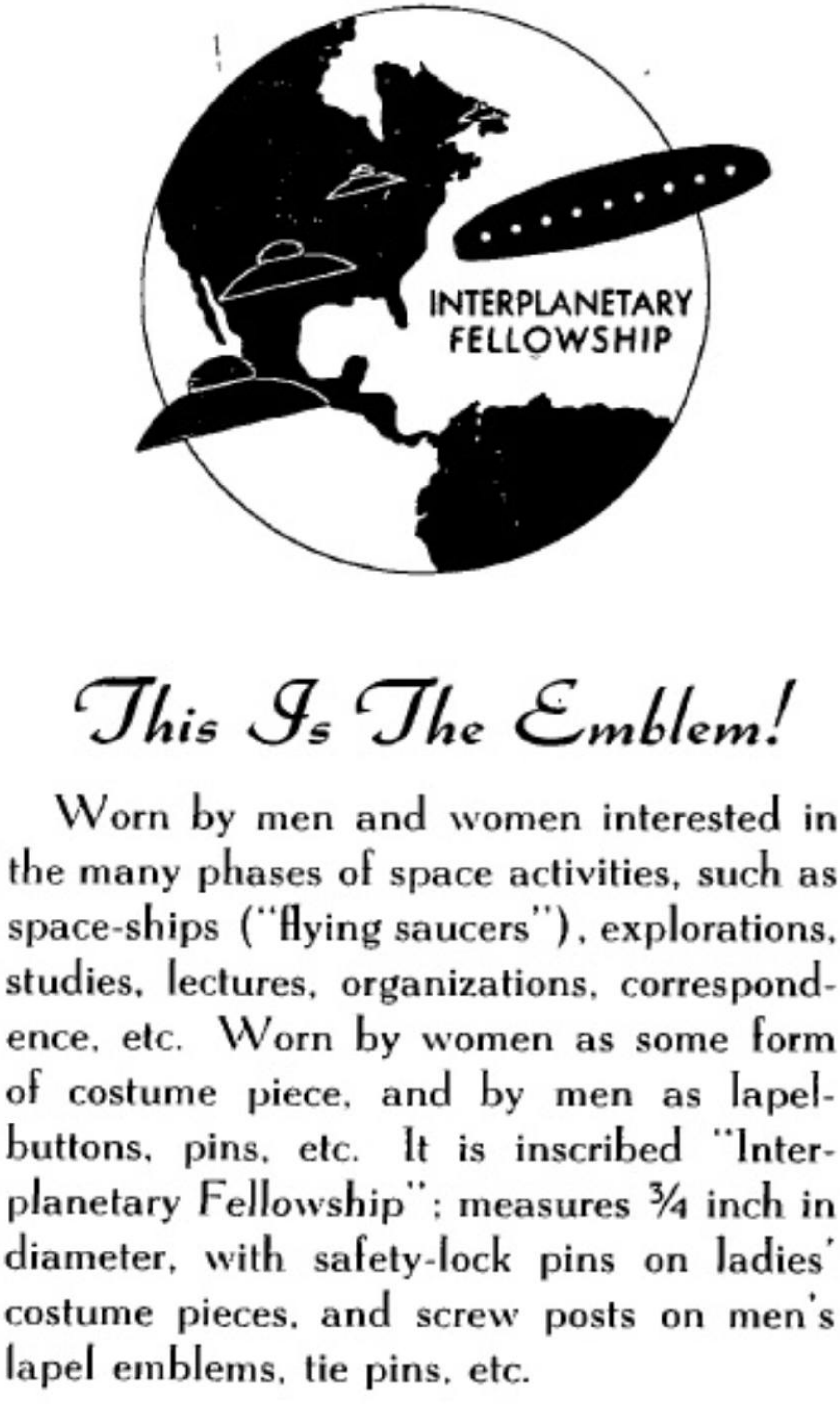

This Is The Emblem!

Worn by men and women interested in the many phases of space activities, such as space-ships ("flying saucers"), explorations, studies, lectures, organizations, correspondence, etc. Worn by women as some form of costume piece, and by men as lapel-buttons, pins, etc. It is inscribed "Interplanetary Fellowship": measures ¾ inch in diameter, with safety-lock pins on ladies' costume pieces, and screw posts on men's lapel emblems, tie pins, etc.

Kruckman further expressed his vision by way of Clara John's *The Little Listening Post*.[9] A 1956 press release coordinated with the newsletter reflected how Kruckman likened what he termed the "interplanetary space problems" to the pioneer phases of aviation. He explained saucer groups would fuel public interest, as had been the case when aeronautics clubs assisted with sustaining the popularity of airplane flight. Kruckman assured saucer enthusiasts they were an integral part of an important big picture process.

“Organizations like yours maintain the interest that assembles the invaluable observations and data which will enable the scientist and others to make the essential studies that will supply the scientific answers to the problems that confront us today,” Kruckman wrote.

Trouble was, Mr. Kruckman didn't know what he was talking about, at least not when it came to the convergence of UFO groups and scientific answers. An interesting question is whether he cared.

The final paragraph of the press release read, “Mr. Kruckman will shortly produce a new monthly periodical to be known as SPACE ADVENTURE. It is addressed to the Junior group. It will provide the stimulation to imagination which will divert many youngsters from the search for adventure which today leads them into collision with the law. The first issue, eagerly awaited by many, will appear around Nov. 1, 1956.”

In a letter dated Sep. 9, 1956, Kruckman expressed appreciation to Brown for extending an invitation to join the NICAP Board of Governors.[10] Kruckman also expressed concern, however, that if he accepted the invitation, people might interpret his connection to NICAP as purely for profit, given what Kruckman described as his “commercial interest in some phases of the aerial phenomena.”

“I think that,” Kruckman continued, “like Caesar's wife, anything connected with the Committee – and any person – should be sure to leave the Committee above suspicion.”

Kruckman then empowered Brown with the ultimate decision as to whether Kruckman's identification with the Committee might do damage. Kruckman never joined the Board, for what were probably a variety of reasons.

It would prove interesting that Brown was warned by Kruckman about the dangers of financial conflicts of interest. Accusations spread that Brown used NICAP funds to further his personal research, or, at best, mismanaged the till. Such personal research was almost certainly related to Brown's vision for the previously mentioned Project Winterhaven.

At the Jan. 15, 1957, first annual meeting of NICAP members and the Board of Governors, at which time Board members were to be formally elected, the inaugural front man was ousted. Brown subsequently submitted his resignation as requested, and so goes the tumultuous story of the founding of the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena.[11]

The Brown family soon left the DC area and moved to Umatilla, Florida, a small town about an hour north of Orlando. Umatilla would still today be considered quite a ways off the beaten path, on the border of the Ocala National Forest and consisting of two traffic lights. When the Browns arrived, the town was little more than a country road running among lakes, woods, and orange groves.

According to the family website, after moving to Florida in early 1957, Brown divided his time between "intelligence work" and pursuing Winterhaven. By fall, Brown was traveling back and forth between Umatilla and the Agnew Bahnson, Jr. lab of Winston Salem, North Carolina. That is where the work took place on the seemingly Adamski-inspired concepts.

Brown never established his antigravity-related notions. He died in 1985 in Avalon, California.

The FBI replied to my FOIA request that it was unable to locate responsive records on Thomas Townsend Brown. Somewhat interestingly, the Bureau added in its 2020 letter that records potentially responsive were destroyed.

The FBI further stated potentially responsive records were identified during a search but were not in their expected locations. An additional search, the Bureau advised, was also unable to locate the records.

It does not appear Arnold Kruckman's vision materialized for the "Space Adventure" periodical and an international emblem, at least not to the extent he seemingly hoped. Truth be told, however, I confidently suspect a man who successfully executed as many high profile projects as was the case with Kruckman left a number of unrealized ideas in his wake. Mr. Kruckman passed away – about three years after the incorporation of NICAP – on June 30, 1959, at the age of 79. The FBI replied to my FOIA request in 2020 that it identified no records responsive to Arnold Kruckman.

Just two months prior to Mr. Kruckman's death, on April 30, 1959, Morris Jessup took his own life. He was 59 years old.

Jessup was reportedly found dead in a car near Miami with a hose running from the exhaust pipe into the vehicle. Conspiracies circulated, but the death was ruled a suicide.

A 2020 FOIA response from the FBI indicated some records on Jessup may have been destroyed. The Bureau also advised that file 31-HQ-93324 was potentially responsive and had been transferred to the National Archives and Records Administration, or NARA.

After submitting a request to NARA, it replied in a Sep. 25, 2020, email that an initial assessment revealed the subject of the file to be Morris Jessup, Dr.

Rulen Alred, Alex Joseph, John Ray, and Shirley Joseph Baker. “Dr. Rulen Alred” may possibly be a reference to Rulon Allred, a chiropractor who led a fundamentalist sect and was assassinated in 1977.

NARA stated the file was created between June 1973 and October 1974, and consists of approximately 100 pages. The records must be reviewed for information protected from release under the FOIA, NARA explained, and estimated it will take 39 months to complete processing. That might put our eyes on the file, or what parts of it may be released, around December 2023.

The profile today of Mr. Jessup, depending on who you ask, might describe a man who became disillusioned with a UFO mystery that refused to bear answers. Though he earned a Masters in Science, Jessup spent much of his life as an auto parts salesman and writing about UFOs. His marriage dissolved in 1958. The Philadelphia Experiment likely took an emotional toll, and that might particularly be the case pertaining to his interactions with the characters of the saga and the people who filled the pages of his books.

CHAPTER 3

THE NICAP STORY

Turning our attention to early 1957, Donald Keyhoe would soon land in the NICAP director's chair, beginning his 13-year tenure. Keyhoe was effective at some of his chosen priorities, but recurring money woes would disrupt the organization for the duration of his reign and the existence of NICAP.

The resume of Maj. Keyhoe (1897-1988) indicates the Iowa native was a graduate of the Naval Academy and a Marine Corps pilot of aircraft and balloons.[12] Following a night crash at Guam, Keyhoe was retired and became editor of Coast and Geodetic Survey. He then had a stint with the Department of Commerce as Chief of Information Civil Aeronautics. Keyhoe's public relations career included managing tours for Adm. Richard E. Byrd and Col. Charles A. Lindbergh. Keyhoe lectured and wrote extensively, publishing many magazine articles and several books.

Professional office space was previously leased under T. Townsend Brown's direction and continued to be rented for Keyhoe's personnel. During Keyhoe's time at the helm he secured the employment of Richard Hall and later Gordon Lore. Hall and Lore each served as assistant directors and pretty much ran the NICAP office and network of investigators. They were aided by Isabel Davis and others.

The Keyhoe-led NICAP operation continues to this day to receive respect from certain circles while simultaneously drawing criticism from others. Both perspectives are reasonably warranted, depending on the specific circumstances considered.

Compared to later years of UFO investigation, NICAP was rather impressively proactive and well coordinated in certain respects. The strategy was quite functional, all things considered and given the dynamics of the era. At least in theory, the NICAP model was an intriguing idea and effectively executed in some ways.

The basic NICAP operating model consisted of a DC-based committee which oversaw multiple subcommittees and affiliates. The subcommittees might work on specific projects, while affiliates represented geographic areas and, in effect, became NICAP chapters. Brooklyn, for instance, was the home of the first chapter outside Washington.[13]

Each chapter would utilize volunteer investigators who preferably possessed applicable skill sets and experience. Some of the staff at NICAP headquarters in Washington drew salaries if and when funds were available, and volunteers were also a key part of the DC operation during the Keyhoe years.

Police departments were contacted, as well as military bases. Local chapters would encourage them to share UFO reports received. Investigators offered to collaborate and then disseminate analysis to the media as appropriate. Working relationships were built between UFO investigators, law enforcement officers, and newspaper reporters, among others.

Existing saucer groups, often isolated and geographically scattered, were solicited for interest. They were offered all the standard NICAP benefits plus certain privileges to join forces.

Membership levels were sold. Subscribers were entitled to various amounts of NICAP-produced magazines and newsletters, as well as votes on issues put to the members. The higher your membership level, the more votes you could cast and the more material you would receive by mail, or at least that was the plan. Nonvoting memberships initially went for $7.50 and received basic mailings, while fees ranged up to $1,000 for a “founder's endowment” that entitled its owner to the full compliment of reading material and 100 votes on any given issue.[14]

While office staff turned the NICAP gears, Keyhoe worked primarily off site, speaking publicly and promoting the organization. Keyhoe secured major media appearances and NICAP leadership consistently rubbed elbows with significant public figures. Keyhoe, however, became increasingly occupied with a campaign to penetrate government UFO secrecy.

By the second half of the 1960's members were beginning to feel NICAP put too much emphasis on the cover-up angle. While some were convinced exposing a cover-up was surely on the path to liberating secret government UFO files, others grew weary of the plot line, and not just those sympathetic to the military and intelligence agencies sustaining the bulk of the criticism. In an April 10, 1969, letter to NICAP members, Keyhoe explained he had become aware that “most members” were apparently tired of reading about the Committee's fight against UFO secrecy.[15]

The NICAP newsletters and journals were supposed to inform members about breaking UFO cases and what the growing network of investigators was doing, but NICAP was afflicted with trying to accomplish too many things at once. The org was perpetually late mailing its printed material, often having not met its publishing commitments before membership dues were scheduled to be paid again.

As then-NICAP President Alan Hall explained about the monthly journals in a late-1970's message to members, “The June and July issues came out in September. In October you will have the August and September issues. The issues for October and November will come out in November. And by December we will be up to date!”[16]

This was a chronic shortcoming, happening pretty much from the outset. It was particularly problematic because the print material was the lifeline of NICAP. It was the benefit of being a subscriber and apparently a primary revenue source. Newsletters and similar literature were how NICAP briefed its following on the perceived escalating flying saucer mystery and any progress it believed it was making toward solving it.

Veteran researcher Barry Greenwood got involved with NICAP in what would turn out to be the organization's latter stages. He suggested in a 2020 email to me that he thought NICAP did not do a good job of delegating, which resulted in personnel ineffectively trying to handle too many responsibilities.

“Research and administration should be entirely separate in an organization,” Greenwood wrote. “Researchers shouldn't be handling funds and keeping track of membership matters. This takes time away from research. And administrators shouldn't be doing research while managing the business at the same time. Due diligence isn't being done for research while one is being distracted by business issues.”

Financial shortcomings and related challenges aside, among the most justifiable criticism of NICAP was the group expressed a commitment to objectively follow evidence, yet was unable to consistently and uniformly keep that commitment. Keyhoe and NICAP portrayed a scientific approach yet were prone to subscribing to premature conclusions.

Proclamations of using serious research protocols, while accurate at times, in other instances seemed to be somewhat of a public relations facade. Intentionally or not, the stance served to garner credibility while shielding NICAP from accountability for its bias. NICAP leaders and members often seemed completely convinced their beliefs would prove correct if they could only persuade certain agencies to release their files. Unfortunately, we may sometimes be wrong that our beliefs are necessarily facts under such conditions.

A big part of the NICAP effort involved coaxing scientists, military officers, pilots and similar figures to get on the bandwagon. NICAP enjoyed success at attracting respected professionals, but an abundance of such support could ultimately not overcompensate for the fact the endorsements in many instances represented an ever growing collection of stated opinions, suspicions, and beliefs, not established facts.

In their defense, NICAP and its supporters did not have the luxury of hindsight that researchers enjoy today. Even still, many of the lessons of the previous 70 years remain widely ignored and only selectively cited in today's body of UFO research.

The praise many feel NICAP deserves, in addition to its general operating model and, ironically, just like the criticism often aimed at the organization, is also due to the activities of the Keyhoe crew. They collectively ran the group from 1957 through 1969. It was during those years that NICAP expanded its membership to 14,000; *The UFO Evidence* was compiled and published; and the infamous Michigan flap and “swamp gas” story unfolded and was investigated, among other events of interest.

It was also under Keyhoe's direction NICAP was credited with contributing to motivating the Air Force to fund the University of Colorado UFO project, a 1966-1968 official study of the saucer situation. However, the study became known as the infamous Condon Report, containing a damaging assessment for UFO enthusiasts due to its minimization of reported UFO activity. The motives behind the project and the validity of its resulting report were adamantly challenged by NICAP. The Keyhoe crew was essentially disbanded within a year of the Condon Report.

What remained of the Committee by the 1980's, which pretty much amounted to little more than its files and mailing list, was absorbed into J. Allen Hynek's Center for UFO Studies (CUFOS). Much of the NICAP previous personnel and investigative networks were long gone. The group's 1960's state of field investigations, public appearances, and formidable reputation, at least among saucer enthusiasts, were mere memories.

Accusations of CIA infiltration were widespread. Many believed NICAP was sabotaged by the intelligence community, an intentional derailment in order to cease its investigations and halt its campaign to expose a UFO cover-up perpetrated by the CIA and Air Force.

The late researcher and FOIA activist Todd Zechel was among the more adamant accusers. He expressed his perspectives widely, including in an article he penned for the previously referenced 1978 bulletin published by Ground Saucer Watch (GSW). The article provides a working summary of what many feared and believed took place, and serves as a basic model of what much of the UFO genre generally thinks happened to NICAP.

Zechel wrote how NICAP drew the attention of the CIA from the very beginning. He asserted that Bernard J.O. Carvalho and Nicholas de Rochefort, men on the inaugural 1956 NICAP team formed by T. Townsend Brown, were CIA assets.

That may very well be correct, although their intentions are not nearly as clear as Zechel seemed to suppose. Carvalho's history is much less substantiated than Rochefort's, the latter of which was a psychological warfare expert at his day job and almost certainly a CIA man.

Zechel, who according to the Washington Post was a former NSA employee himself, suggested the CIA was interested in keeping tabs on NICAP and gaining access to its unpublished files. Essentially, Zechel asserted the Agency wanted access to unpublished UFO reports and identifying information therein about “leakers” who approached Keyhoe and his staff in confidence. The CIA could presumably then advise the Air Force of the situations and any leakers in its midst. The Air Force, Zechel continued in the GSW bulletin, could respond by transferring its personnel who were secretly providing information to NICAP, disrupt lines of communication, and similar actions in order to render NICAP ineffective.

Townsend Brown was quickly relieved of his leadership position due to his “inability to make NICAP solvent,” Zechel wrote. Before long Keyhoe got the nod, and Carvalho and Rochefort were soon gone due to what Zechel termed Keyhoe cleaning house. This may be true enough, but is not easily verified, although we do know that, for whatever reasons, Carvalho and Rochefort in fact did not stick around after Brown's departure.

Former Director of Central Intelligence Adm. Roscoe H. Hillenkoetter quite curiously served on the NICAP Board of Governors. This is widely accepted to have resulted from a preexisting relationship with Maj. Keyhoe. They were reportedly classmates at the Naval Academy.

Hillenkoetter was the first director of the CIA, holding the position from 1947 to 1950. He sat on the NICAP Board from 1957 to 1962. As suggested earlier, a number of prestigious and well-respected intelligence officers lent their names to NICAP, accepted advisory positions, and supplied the group with supportive statements. Their remarks were widely published in efforts to further legitimize both the organization and the UFO topic.

The most effective means employed by the CIA to infiltrate, exploit, and ultimately sabotage NICAP, Zechel alleged, came in the form of Col. Joseph Bryan III. Whether or not Zechel was entirely correct about the objectives of the colonel and the Agency, Bryan is considered by many to weigh heavily in the NICAP story and was indeed a Company Man.

He headed a psychological warfare division within the Office of Policy Coordination, a substantial CIA front (Please make a mental note of the Office of Policy Coordination, as we will be exploring it much further). Numerous men of diverse talents and skills were employed in Bryan's division, including

E. Howard Hunt of future Watergate infamy. Bryan reportedly worked with the CIA from approximately 1947 to 1953. He sat on the NICAP Board of Governors for substantial lengths of time both during and following the Keyhoe years of 1957 to 1969.

Zechel asserts that Bryan repeatedly tried to persuade Keyhoe to reveal his most confidential reports and documents. Keyhoe suspected ulterior motives, but Bryan provided a personal letter, denouncing Air Force policies of UFO secrecy, along with permission to quote him. This, according to Zechel, won Keyhoe's confidence and resulted in extending an invitation to Bryan to join the Board.

It should be noted there was apparently not a great deal known among UFO enthusiasts in the 1950's and 1960's about the likely CIA affiliations of Bryan, Rochefort and Carvalho. We're still extracting that through the FOIA process, all of which might give us food for thought about when the public might realistically expect resolution to questions surrounding more recent intelligence professionals-turned-ufologists.

It is also noteworthy that it was not unusual in my research to discover situations in which NICAP members and UFO researchers seemed to think motives could be discerned from the degree of belief or skepticism a person expressed about flying saucers. This became somewhat of a cultural staple in the genre. In essence, you were labeled a white hat if you were a believer and a disinformation agent if you voiced disbelief or even reasonable skepticism. It seemed to escape many that their beliefs had not yet been established as facts and very well should be challenged, not to mention motives and objectives might be more complex than those that hinged upon stated opinions about UFO riddles.

Zechel asserted that Bryan betrayed Keyhoe, penetrating NICAP for “covert and subversive purposes.” This purportedly put the Agency in a position to effectively combat security leaks and block NICAP efforts in the process. Documents leaked to Keyhoe by military officers sympathetic to the cause were allegedly discovered by Bryan and therefore compromised.

“In other words,” Zechel wrote in the 1978 Ground Saucer Watch bulletin, “NICAP had no secrets.”

Mr. Zechel seems to have not found it important to note that, even if he were indeed correct the CIA had designs on covertly monitoring NICAP channels and learning its secrets, the effort may have had nothing whatsoever to do with concerns about extraterrestrial space travelers and the cover-up thereof. Suffice it to say there are additional reasons intelligence agencies might take interest in military officers influenced to be sympathetic of an organization denouncing Air Force procedures to the point of leaking documents to its director. I'd venture to say those reasons make for much more likely scenarios of attracting official interest, particularly in this circumstance.

Those scenarios do not, however, offer researchers the intoxicating satisfaction that comes with believing if they and their colleagues become subjects of interest to intelligence operatives, then they must be getting too close to the proverbial truth. In reality, it of course doesn't necessarily mean their assumptions about UFOs are correct at all. It might just indicate they have some misunderstandings about national security concerns they frame in support of their confirmation bias. That stated, I fully concede this is a complex chain of events spanning years and should not be oversimplified as a matter of convenience.

I have become rather convinced, however, several possibilities seem more likely than Zechel's interpretation of the situation. The intelligence community indeed had interests in saucer groups, researchers, and NICAP, I just doubt it was for the reasons typically suspected.

It bears reiterating Zechel's version of the dissolution of NICAP provides a basic account of what many feel happened to the group. I am not citing it for the purpose of particularly supporting or challenging his personal assertions, but to offer as a written summary the views of those who indeed feel the organization was dismantled by the CIA.

The deepest betrayal, Zechel continued, took place when Bryan led a successful charge to remove Keyhoe from his position as director. In the wake of the hotly contested Condon Report, released in January 1969, the other shoe seemed to drop on Dec. 3, 1969, when Keyhoe was reduced to occupying a seat on the Board of Governors. He was accused of organizational mismanagement, particularly concerning perpetual NICAP financial problems. Zechel rejected the explanations offered, asserting Keyhoe was actually removed as a means to pull his speaker platform out from under him. Zechel suggested this was done to destabilize NICAP and minimize Keyhoe's ability to challenge the Condon Report.

Keyhoe's removal coincided with the discharge of Assistant Director Gordon Lore. He was “cashiered,” notified by telegram of his dismissal and locked out of his office with no notice or advance discussion, according to the late NICAP researcher Richard Hall.

Keyhoe was soon replaced at director by Stuart Nixon, a NICAP staffer. John L. Acuff was elected president and this began what is often referred to as the Acuff-Nixon era of NICAP.

It would prove to be the beginning of the end, as the 1970's became a decade marred with dwindling public support and decreasing frequency of NICAP UFO investigations. More men associated with the CIA would become significantly involved in NICAP operations during this time period, notably including Harry C. Cooper, appointed to the Board of Governors in 1971; Alan Hall, who took over as president in 1978; and Charles Lombard, seated on the Board when Alan Hall was elected president.

Richard Hall wrote that NICAP organizers Carvalho and Rochefort each had "past CIA connections." He asserted this in a 1994 paper posted on the NICAP website and titled, *The Quest For The Truth About UFOs: A Personal Perspective On The Role Of NICAP*, in which Hall expressed several views about NICAP, its activities, and the intelligence community.

Incidentally, in 2020, UFO Classified podcast host Erica Lukes aired clips of a recording she obtained of an interview longtime NICAP investigator Ann Druffel conducted with Richard Hall. During the interview, Hall suggested he addressed the issue of the intelligence community meddling with NICAP in a paper he wrote and recommended Druffel review. I confidently believe that paper to be the above referenced *The Quest For The Truth About UFOs*.

Hall wrote in the paper that in 1971, with Bryan still on the Board of Governors, Harry Cooper was added to the Board. Cooper, Hall asserted, "had served in the CIA from its inception in 1947 until retirement in 1966, including service in the Operations Branch. He became Special Assistant to the Deputy Director for Intelligence."

Hall described Charles Lombard as "an acknowledged former CIA employee and aide to Senator Barry Goldwater." When Lombard arrived on the scene in October 1978 as a new Board member, he was appointed along with John Fisher, the head of the American Security Council and Communication Corporation of America, a conservative fundraising group. Lombard was eventually involved in negotiations resulting in the CUFOS acquisition of NICAP.

Goldwater, by the way, numbered among the high profile NICAP supporters and even became a Board member in the 1970's. The Arizona Senator, who secured the 1964 Republican presidential nomination before losing the election to incumbent President Lyndon B. Johnson, went on to chair the Senate Intelligence Committee in the early 1980's. He was also credited with writing a letter on behalf of NICAP to encourage membership.

"I and my colleagues on the Board of NICAP think it is high time more independent research on UFO's was undertaken," the four-plus page Goldwater letter reads.[17] The document is not dated but was probably composed in the mid 1970's.

“In December 1978, Alan N. Hall, a retired CIA employee, became President [of NICAP],” Richard Hall wrote further. “Hall (no relation) allegedly took the position as a post-retirement hobby, and he operated out of his home without access to the files, answering the phone and occasionally writing a letter. As of then NICAP was all but dead, a hollow shell of its former self.”

Much of the generalities of the NICAP story are verifiable, much more is likely to be reasonably accurate, and even more is rather widely accepted, whatever it may all specifically indicate. An excerpt from *The UFO Cover-Up* by Lawrence Fawcett and Barry J. Greenwood, and posted in 1997 at UFO UpDates List:

“Further evidence of CIA influence in NICAP developed during the period immediately before NICAP's decline. On December 3, 1969, Donald Keyhoe was ousted as NICAP's Director during a Board meeting. Who led the effort to remove Keyhoe? The Chairman of the Board, Col. Joseph Bryan, former Chief of the CIA's Psychological Warfare Staff (1947-1953). And who replaced Keyhoe? John Acuff, who was the head of the Society of Photographic Scientists and Engineers (SPSE), a frequent target of Russian spying attempts and a group that had many members involved in Defense Department intelligence units, including the CIA. His management of NICAP was financially 'tight' (in the cheap sense) and totally inept in a research sense. Criticism of government UFO policy was gone, and NICAP merely served as a sighting collection center. Acuff's management drove loyal NICAP Board members away and ultimately led to Acuff's downfall in 1978.

”And who replaced Acuff? None other than Alan Hall, a retired CIA employee, who accepted the position after a number of other CIA employees were offered the job. Support for Hall from the NICAP Board came from Charles Lombard, an aide to Senator Goldwater and former CIA covert employee.”

Fawcett and Greenwood wrote further:

“There certainly seems to be a pattern behind NICAP's destruction. Is it a coincidence that so many ex-CIA people became deeply involved in the operation of NICAP? It is possible that the CIA wanted to influence NICAP activities for several reasons:

“1) To gather intelligence through NICAP's investigators network.

“2) To identify and plug leaks from government sources (NICAP was renowned for receiving military-oriented reports).

“3) To monitor other hostile intelligence agencies (NICAP received several overtures from the Soviet KGB).”

There are a lot of differing ideas about all of this, even among those who were there and/or studied it closely. Richard Hall wrote it was tempting for him to suspect the gradual dismantling of NICAP was a deliberate master plan. “However,” he continued, “I cannot prove this and can only speculate on it.”

“There were a number of ex-CIA in the hierarchy of NICAP,” Barry Greenwood explained by email. “The question has always been did they exert an undue influence on the end of it as a group. On thinking back, the golden opportunity to finish NICAP was after the Condon Report, which preceded a precipitous decline in public interest for several years. NICAP finances were never that good but this was exacerbated by Keyhoe's money management which was awful. Aside from the membership income, there was constant pleading for money. The NICAP board could have said the Condon Report poisoned the UFO topic and they couldn't continue the battle against secrecy with such a poor business climate. But they continued on for another ten years and there was sometimes good case reporting in that time. The hierarchy was more concerned about administration than networking with members, especially the subcommittees which was the bread and butter of case work. I do remember the members feeling alienated in the early '70's by this less-than-friendly attitude. The subcommittees folded and swarmed to burgeoning groups like the Midwest UFO Network, further aggravating NICAP finances. Was this a deliberate action? Maybe, but one can't document that with an order from the CIA to mismanage NICAP into oblivion. It is as Dick Hall said.”

Jan Aldrich, an early NICAP supporter and longtime archivist of UFO history, provided comments by email. He suggested UFO researchers often try to mold the NICAP story into what they want it to be to fit their agendas.

“Hillenkoetter,” Aldrich added, “to the best of my knowledge never visited. The CIA officially visited NICAP once. They had Hall fill out a security clearance which was never granted. [Don] Berliner said two characters which he thought were CIA visited NICAP and purchased copies of *The UFO Evidence* and bombarded him with questions.”

Aldrich suggested most UFO researchers overlook nuance. Keyhoe, for instance, had medical issues, including military service-related. His family suffered from significant medical problems as well. This added to the reasons Keyhoe worked remotely.

The NICAP office, Aldrich explained, consisted of minimal staff prior to the mid 1960's, at which time more paid employees were brought aboard. Up until that time, a couple staffers got paid first, then Keyhoe and his assistant took what was left for expenses.

“This is it for staff,” Aldrich wrote. “NICAP was not CIA North with a big detachment of spies and Hillenkoetter running the place secretly.”

Aldrich continued, “Hall got out *The UFO Evidence* with the help of a volunteer college student and donations from a couple in Maryland or Delaware. He actually started getting the affiliates and subcommittees started. Keyhoe may have helped with ideas, but most of this was Hall's work...

“Some time around '63-'64 interest started to pick up, and they began to increase staff and equipment.

“Keyhoe always had contacts within the government so he got info others could not.”

It is widely accepted, and certainly seems to be correct, that a study of NICAP can be broken into three general timeframes. I would suggest the study of NICAP involvement with the intelligence community would be categorized in much the same way. First would be the forming of the organization during 1956, and the presence of Nicholas de Rochefort and company (pardon the pun). Then we have the Keyhoe years, 1957 to late 1969, with the ongoing presence of Board member Col. Joseph Bryan III. This period included a lot of military brass in NICAP circles, which was rather inherent due to the nature of the manner community leaders and intelligence officers were solicited for support. Lastly, we have the post-Keyhoe era, from 1970 to the CUFOS acquisition in the early 1980's. It was during this time Stuart Nixon and John Acuff initially had responsibility for the org, and Harry Cooper, Alan Hall and Charles Lombard became influential.

“Col. J. Bryan,” Aldrich wrote further, “did not have almost magical powers because he had been in charge of CIA psyops. He had been in the Pentagon a pro-UFO voice. His family confirms he was very interested in UFOs. The attempt to blame Bryan and the CIA for NICAP woes is trying to cover-up the silly financial situation started in 1957 and continued up to the mid-1960's.”

Keyhoe operated freely, Aldrich suggested, with the board acting as no more than “a rubber stamp entity.” About 1967 or so, some concerned employees tried to get the checkbook and finances away from Keyhoe, informing the Board of lax financial controls and how it could be held accountable.

“NICAP was already reduced in size because of lost revenue,” Aldrich asserted. “The board met and demanded further controls. That didn't happen. When they met again they kicked Keyhoe upstairs to the board and put Gordon [Lore] on leave. [Stuart] Nixon was like the only one left. He became NICAP.”

Former NICAP Assistant Director Gordon Lore had somewhat of a different take, expressing concern about CIA malevolent intentions. He referred me to his book, *Flying Saucers From Beyond the Earth: A UFO Researcher's Odyssey*. Chapter 19, titled “The CIA Connection,” particularly addresses the issue. Lore expressed his suspicions in the chapter that Keyhoe replacement Stuart Nixon, among others, may have been acting on behalf of the CIA.

“It didn't take me long to wonder if Nixon may have been sent there to recruit me for a possible C.I.A. takeover of NICAP,” Lore wrote in his book. “I had heard from Dick Hall that two of the agency's operatives had visited the NICAP office before I came on board and spent several hours scrutinizing the sighting reports. I soon realized that Don Keyhoe himself may have opened the door for that eventuality by appointing Admiral Roscoe Hillenkoetter, the first Director of the C.I.A., Chairman of the NICAP Board of Governors. The Admiral and Keyhoe had been friends since their days long ago as cadets at the U.S. Naval Academy in Annapolis, Maryland.

“Other board members – including Colonel Joseph Bryan and Dewey Fournet – had also been C.I.A. operatives. They were among the many contacts Keyhoe had established in the military, the Pentagon and the intelligence agencies. They would serve him well in obtaining UFO reports he could use in his books and at NICAP. I was also beginning to realize that this infiltration would serve them well if they really had the goal of taking over control of the world's largest UFO organization.”

You may be wondering at this point how many people in NICAP were *not* spooks. The Agency was indeed adequately represented in leadership positions.

You may also be wondering how directly all these alleged operatives can conclusively be linked to the Agency. We will explore that more in depth as we proceed, but the short answer is pretty conclusively, at least for the most part. The positioning of the chess pieces and general points contained in the NICAP stories as expressed by Hall and others are reasonably accurate. The intentions behind the actions, or what the CIA was doing, are most at issue and subject to interpretation, as suggested by the wide range of perspectives held.

Richard Hall provides us with yet more thoughts to ponder. He occasionally suggested, such as during the previously mentioned interview conducted by Ann Druffel, that it didn't really matter to him what the CIA was up to because it did not substantially change his research focus or activities. He suggested there was nothing to hide, so he did not find attention from the intelligence community to be overly significant. Others expressed similar points of view, such as Jan Aldrich when he inferred the CIA had no involvement in day-to-day activities under Keyhoe's NICAP. Such a lack of involvement would of course minimize CIA influence on research published by the group.

That often seems most relevant to those who feel the primary subject of the NICAP story is UFOs. To many that seemed the logical thing to surmise, while others see a fascinating saga in which passionately held beliefs collide with a public, media, and intelligence community harboring multiple layers of agendas. The Committee's intersection with the CIA is certainly among the prominent points to ponder.

We need look no further than the CIA itself to find confirmation of the Agency's official interest in NICAP. As Aldrich and Lore each suggested, inquisitive CIA officers indeed paid a visit to NICAP and Richard Hall. It occurred in 1965, as demonstrated in a two-page CIA memo carrying a NICAP subject line.

Now seems as good a time as any to mention the CIA is of course not a hive-mind operation. Everyone who works there is not all on the same page with the same access to a full compliment of information, anymore than is the case in any organization. Officers dispatched to question Richard Hall did not necessarily know, for instance, that Board member Col. Bryan was an Agency asset, or any number of similar such circumstances that might have been more heavily guarded.

Part of the complexity of our story certainly involves the likelihood intelligence professionals entered the NICAP orbit for a variety of different reasons. Those reasons possibly include a personal interest in UFOs, doing a favor for a friend or professional associate, or acting in an official capacity, among others. What's more, CIA officers possibly dispatched on official assignments were not necessarily all working on the same operation.

We might also consider that CIA objectives varied from one director and decade to the next. There are lots of possibilities, as the NICAP story spans some 25 years and multiple CIA divisions. Now that we're gaining a bit deeper acquaintance with some of these people, let's take even closer looks at them.

CHAPTER 4

COUNT DE ROCHEFORT

Nicholas de Rochefort was reportedly born May 1, 1902, in St. Petersburg, Russia. He was the son of a Russian woman and a Frenchman who was in the country to represent French financial interests. The Rocheforts are one of France's oldest families, members of which fought in the Crusades.

Nicholas graduated from a French military academy and the School of Law of the University of Paris. He also earned a doctorate from a higher education science institution in France.

During World War II he served as a captain in the French Army and was captured by German troops. Rochefort subsequently faked an illness and remarkably tricked his captors into releasing him from a prisoner of war camp. This may have been among the first successful acts of psychological warfare undertaken by a man destined to be recognized as an expert in the field. When the Allies later launched an invasion, Rochefort was among them in the First French Armored Division.

He spoke five languages and wrote numerous articles for political-science journals. Count de Rochefort came to the United States in 1949 on a lecture tour. In 1954 he renounced his French citizenship and title to become an American citizen. He went on to be a professor at American University and live in Georgetown, where he resided when he passed away due to cancer in 1964.

Rochefort wrote and spoke for Voice of America, a state-controlled international television and radio network founded in 1942 and funded by the U.S. federal tax budget. The World War II POW drew global attention in 1954 when he helped lead Freedom Day, a celebration held in Berlin, New Hampshire, which honored East German resistance to Communism. Rochefort's heavily attended speech was broadcast internationally in three languages by Voice of America.

Remarks by Wisconsin Representative Charles Kersten about Rochefort and his Freedom Day co-organizer Dr. Charles Lowry were entered into the 1954 Congressional Record. Kersten emphasized the advantageous impact abroad of the event and stated to Congress on July 29, 1954:

“A lesson can be drawn from this experience.

“Two men of small financial means, but armed with imagination, perseverance, and knowledge of methods and techniques of psychological warfare were able to plan and carry out an operation of this nature, in finding assistance and aid from the part of the American people.

“Such projects as this, staged in America, implemented by American citizens and groups of citizens, can better be worked out, prepared and initiated by private initiative than by the Government.

“It would therefore be desirable to create a private organization for this very purpose, the members of which could devote all their time and their skill to devising actions of unconventional psychological warfare, inspire and coordinate them. It would not require millions of dollars; relatively modest sums would suffice.”

Rochefort and his associates were way ahead of Rep. Kersten. In 1953 Nicholas de Rochefort was credited with founding The Committee of One Million Against the Admission of Red China to the United Nations. The DC-based lobbying group was known as “The Committee,” just as the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena would later be called at times and which Rochefort helped organize in 1956. As the 1953 Committee full name implies, it opposed the domestic and international acceptance of Communist China.

The “China lobby,” as activists rejecting Red China and often supporting the nation's former regime were known, raised big bucks and was accused of employing vast amounts of propaganda to influence policy and opinion. Some felt the lobby disingenuously characterized the Chinese government's predecessor favorably while ignoring its corruption. All of which, it was argued, left citizens with the short end of the economic stick while bureaucrats, politicians, and war mongers got fat.

The China lobby of the late 1940's to early 1960's was so influential in America, wrote investigative journalist Robert Sherrill in the New York Times, “that normal relations with mainland China were delayed at least a generation while we continued to support the burdensome and corrupt Chiang Kai-shek's Government in retreat; also, the China lobby infected our foreign policy with such fear of 'Red hordes' as to contribute to our panicky commitment in Vietnam.” Sherrill's 1977 Times article, *Buying American foreign policy*, cited the work of some of his fellow investigative reporters, who asserted no foreign lobby in Washington had ever been as rich or powerful, or interfered so insidiously in the American governmental process.

The most well known part of that rich and powerful China lobby, Sherrill reported, was The Committee of One Million. That's quite a CV being compiled by Rochefort. Among the work cited in Sherrill's piece was that of Stanley D. Bachrack, author of the 1976 nonfiction book, *The Committee of One Million*.

“Who dreamed up The Committee?” Sherrill continued. “Bachrack suspects that one of The Committee's founders, Nicholas de Rochefort, a former French military man (expert in psychological warfare), was working for the Central Intelligence Agency and that The Committee may have been the C.I.A.'s idea. But so far Bachrack's efforts to open the C.I.A.'s files have been frustrated in court.

“Another founder, and perhaps The Committee's most ardent executive, was Congressman Walter Judd, a former medical missionary who sincerely viewed the Democratic Party of F.D.R.-Truman as a Satanic host. Bachrack suspects that Judd may have secretly used a House subcommittee in a dubious, if not illegal, way to launch the lobby. But again, his efforts to get at the subcommittee's secret records have been frustrated by Federal rules.”

Please allow me to emphasize characters found in the overlapping of UFOs and the intelligence community often have significant roles in political circles. This is repeatedly the case, and I would include more current day circumstances in that assessment as well. I do not find this coincidental or inconsequential. I'm of the opinion the official involvement of intelligence professionals, members of Congress, and similar figures in the UFO subculture is rarely, if ever, primarily fueled by their interest in UFOs. That just might falsely appear to be the case to those who themselves are passionate about UFOs and may view the circumstances with a bit of UFO tunnel vision. Moreover, NICAP became further entrenched in politics as our story unfolds.

The trail of Stanley Bachrack's effort to gain access to CIA records takes us to the U.S. District Court for the Central District of California. It was with that court in 1975 that *Stanley D. Bachrack v. CIA, William Colby* was filed. The lawsuit sought all information on then-deceased Nicholas de Rochefort relations with the CIA and its predecessor organizations. Judge William P. Gray presided over and subsequently dismissed the case.

Judge Gray explained in his 1976 ruling, as documented in a CIA study on security classification released to the public in 2012, “While there is a strong public interest in the public disclosure of the functions of government agencies, there is also a strong public interest in the effective functioning of an intelligence service, which could be greatly impaired by irresponsible disclosure."[18]

The 188-page (including notes) CIA study observed specifically about Bachrack's effort to obtain records potentially pertaining to Rochefort, “Through the decisions of these district courts a series of precedents is emerging which have already greatly enhanced the legal stature of sources and methods as an independent means of protecting intelligence information - at least in the context of FOIA requests for information."

I tried unsuccessfully to obtain the Bachrack vs. CIA case file. The California District Court informed me by email in 2020 that searches were conducted in response to my inquiry but the case "was probably destroyed or not recorded."

During correspondence with the Court it referred me to the National Archives at Riverside, which located and provided a small docket file. The gist of the file is contained in the image below, which suggests dismissal of the case.

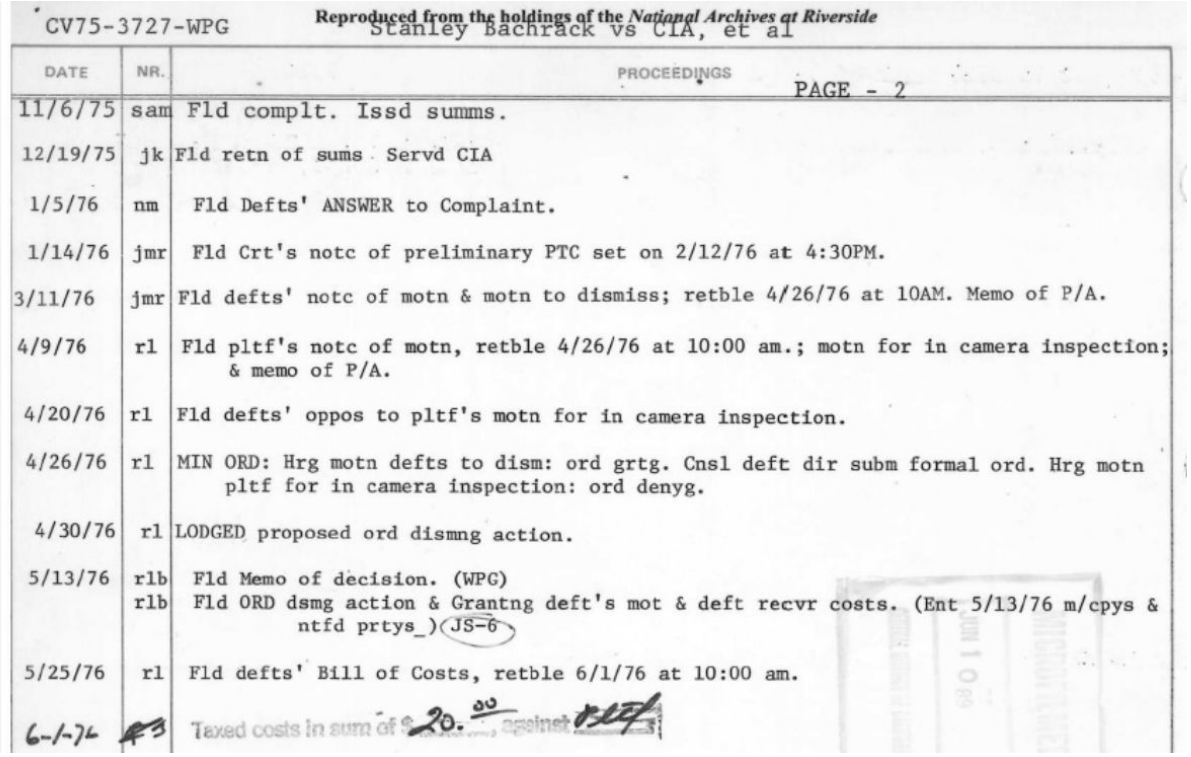

Reproduced from the holdings of the *National Archives at Riverside*

CV75-3727-WPG Stanley Bachrack vs CIA, et al

PAGE - 2

DATE	NR.	PROCEEDINGS
11/6/75	sam	Fld complt. Issd summs.
12/19/75	jk	Fld retn of sums Servd CIA
1/5/76	nm	Fld Defts' ANSWER to Complaint.
1/14/76	jmr	Fld Crt's notc of preliminary PTC set on 2/12/76 at 4:30PM.
3/11/76	jmr	Fld defts' notc of motn & motn to dismiss; retble 4/26/76 at 10AM. Memo of P/A.
4/9/76	rl	Fld pltf's notc of motn, retble 4/26/76 at 10:00 am.; motn for in camera inspection; & memo of P/A.
4/20/76	rl	Fld defts' oppos to pltf's motn for in camera inspection.
4/26/76	rl	MIN ORD: Hrg motn defts to dism: ord grtg. Cnsl deft dir subm formal ord. Hrg motn pltf for in camera inspection: ord denyg.
4/30/76	rl	LODGED proposed ord dismng action.
5/13/76	rlb	Fld Memo of decision. (WPG)
	rlb	Fld ORD dsmg action & Grantng deft's mot & deft recvr costs. (Ent 5/13/76 m/cpys & ntfd prtys_) JS-6
5/25/76	rl	Fld defts' Bill of Costs, retble 6/1/76 at 10:00 am.
6-1-76	#3	Taxed costs in sum of $ 20.00, against Pltf

In March 2021, the CIA responded to my 2020 FOIA request on material pertaining to Nicholas de Rochefort. It stated, in short, a search indicated no records responsive that would reveal a publicly acknowledged affiliation between the CIA and the subject. The Agency would neither confirm nor deny any records might exist that would reveal a classified association, as such records would be exempt from disclosure under the FOIA.

I thought the request was worth a try, in the event files surrounding the Bachrack lawsuit had found their way into the light of day by this point in time. They had not.

So our profile of Nicholas de Rochefort thus far suggests he was an honorable World War II veteran. Educated and politically active, Mr. Rochefort assisted Voice of America and became recognized as an expert in psychological warfare. While heavily involved in such activities he sought American citizenship in 1954. Rochefort held influence within the China lobby at the time, a demographic credited as among the wealthiest and most powerful lobbies in Washington. He numbered among the founders of The Committee of One Million, a suspected brainchild of the CIA and considered the most high profile aspect of that China lobby. To learn more about this man, who curiously became an organizer of NICAP in 1956 and briefly instrumental in its early operation, we turn to the FBI.

In 2020 the Bureau responded to my FOIA request on Nicholas de Rochefort with a 29-page file. It consists of several 1956 and 1957 documents pertaining to investigations of Rochefort.

Some of the investigations were conducted under the Foreign Agents Registration Act. As explained at the website of the National Archives and Records Administration, the Act required "foreign propagandists" or "agents of a foreign principal" engaged in distributing propaganda to register with the State Department. The Bureau conducted related investigations.

I think it is an extremely reasonable suspicion Rochefort's request for American citizenship in 1954 was related to his line of work, whatever, exactly, that line of work may have been. FBI concerns reflected in the 29-page file include if Rochefort was employed by “Nationalist China.” The Bureau eventually seemed to have established to its satisfaction that was not the case, and noted those familiar with Rochefort often considered his anti-Communist proclamations to be sincere. That was of course important to J. Edgar Hoover's agents.

Perhaps most curious to our exploration of the mysterious Count de Rochefort is the timing of memos written by Director Hoover and reports composed by FBI Special Agents during their investigations. The file contains reports composed on the bullseye of the timeline in which we're most interested, late 1956 and early 1957, when NICAP was incorporated and launched.

The Bureau seems to have been conducting an “SGE,” or special government employee, investigation, running concurrently with the Registration Act matter. An August 1956 Airtel from Hoover to the FBI Washington Field Office:

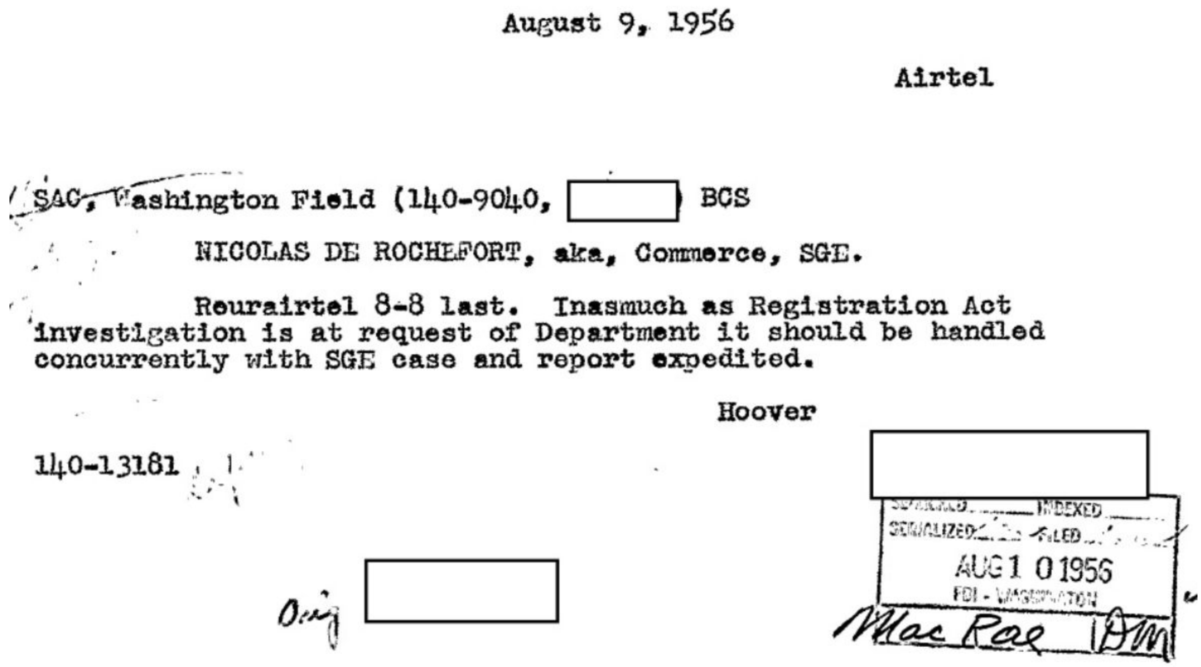

August 9, 1956

Airtel

SAC, Washington Field (140-9040, [redacted]) BCS

NICOLAS DE ROCHEFORT, aka, Commerce, SGE.

Reurairtel 8-8 last. Inasmuch as Registration Act investigation is at request of Department it should be handled concurrently with SGE case and report expedited.

Hoover

140-13181

[redacted]

SEARCHED ____ INDEXED ____
SERIALIZED ____ FILED ____
AUG 1 0 1956
FBI - WASHINGTON

MacRae DM

Orig [redacted]

Hoover's message seems to suggest the Registration Act investigation was conducted for the State Department, as we might expect. The “SGE case” may have been related to Rochefort's employment with the Department of Commerce, as perhaps inferred by the term, “Commerce, SGE.” Subsequent FBI reports would also indicate Rochefort was periodically employed by the State Department.

An August 1956 FBI report was written by Special Agent Duncan MacRae of the Washington Field Office. Quite notably, MacRae cited a file on Rochefort at the State Department that indicated Rochefort was employed by the U.S. government in Washington, D.C. The employment took place from October 1, 1952 to May 31, 1954. That would have been before Rochefort was granted American citizenship, and during the time he was suspected of working on behalf of the CIA on The Committee of One Million as suggested by Stanley Bachrack. The top of the first page of MacRae's report, referencing Rochefort's work with the U.S. government, The Committee of One Million, and a group known as The Advertising Council:

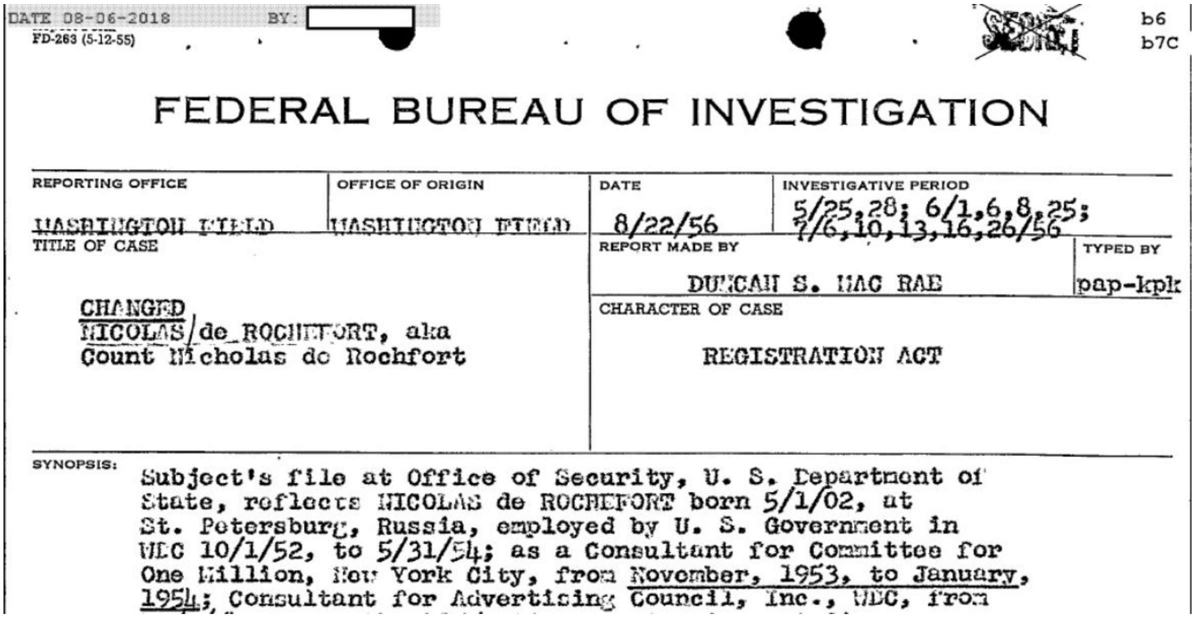

DATE 08-06-2018 BY: [redacted]

FD-263 (5-12-55)

~~SECRET~~

b6
b7C

FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION

REPORTING OFFICE: WASHINGTON FIELD

OFFICE OF ORIGIN: WASHINGTON FIELD

DATE: 8/22/56

INVESTIGATIVE PERIOD: 5/25,28; 6/1,6,8,25; 7/6,10,13,16,26/56

TITLE OF CASE:

CHANGED
NICOLAS/de ROCHEFORT, aka
Count Nicholas de Rochfort

REPORT MADE BY: DUNCAN S. MAC RAE

TYPED BY: pap-kpk

CHARACTER OF CASE: REGISTRATION ACT

SYNOPSIS: Subject's file at Office of Security, U. S. Department of State, reflects NICOLAS de ROCHEFORT born 5/1/02, at St. Petersburg, Russia, employed by U. S. Government in WDC 10/1/52, to 5/31/54; as a Consultant for Committee for One Million, New York City, from November, 1953, to January, 1954; Consultant for Advertising Council, Inc., WDC, from

I submitted a FOIA request to the State Department for the above referenced file on Rochefort. It suggested I seek the file from the National Archives and Records Administration. In 2020 NARA responded that a search of records spanning from 1945-1959 located a single document, a 1951 letter. There was no explanation offered as to whether the requested State Department file cited in the FBI report above may have been lost, destroyed, or perhaps some other circumstance.

The document provided was a letter from the office of House Majority Leader Congressman John W. McCormack of Massachusetts. It was written by an aide, apparently to a State Department official, endorsing the “services” of Nicholas de Rochefort and suggesting an existing professional relationship of some capacity with the Congressman. From the 1951 letter:

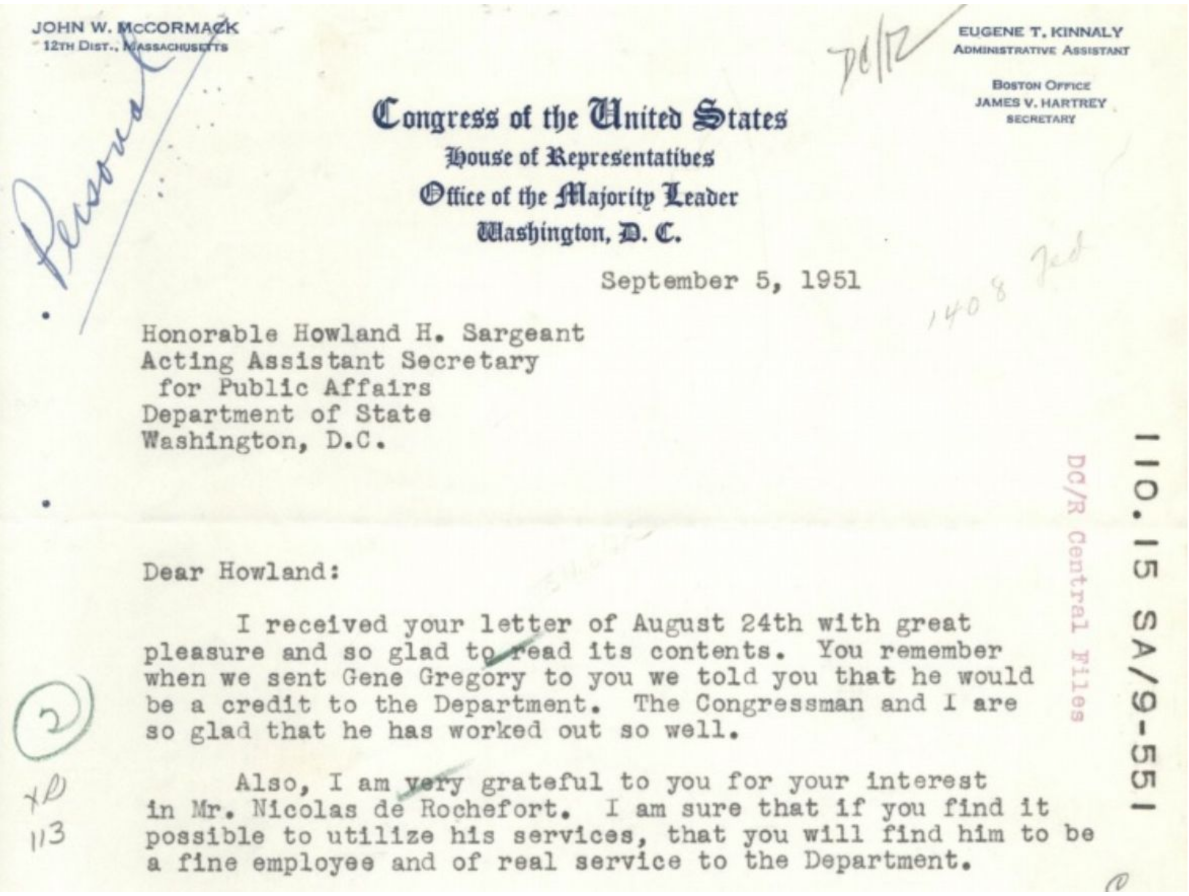

JOHN W. McCORMACK
12TH DIST., MASSACHUSETTS

EUGENE T. KINNALY
ADMINISTRATIVE ASSISTANT

BOSTON OFFICE
JAMES V. HARTREY
SECRETARY

Congress of the United States
House of Representatives
Office of the Majority Leader
Washington, D. C.

Personal

DC/R

September 5, 1951

1408 Fed

Honorable Howland H. Sargeant
Acting Assistant Secretary
for Public Affairs
Department of State
Washington, D.C.

110.15 SA/9-551

DC/R Central Files

Dear Howland:

I received your letter of August 24th with great pleasure and so glad to read its contents. You remember when we sent Gene Gregory to you we told you that he would be a credit to the Department. The Congressman and I are so glad that he has worked out so well.

②

xR
113

Also, I am very grateful to you for your interest in Mr. Nicolas de Rochefort. I am sure that if you find it possible to utilize his services, that you will find him to be a fine employee and of real service to the Department.

Turning our attention back to the August 1956 FBI report, the investigation reflected statements of the president of The Advertising Council. He described Rochefort as “a good propagandist, particularly valuable in projects designed to counter Communist propaganda.”

Rochefort's employment activities are described in another report by Special Agent MacRae, dated November 27, 1956. The investigation period covered dates between mid-September and mid-November. NICAP was incorporated October 24, 1956, after some preparation. A synopsis of the FBI report, which credits Rochefort with conception and promotion of The Committee of One Million, is pictured below.

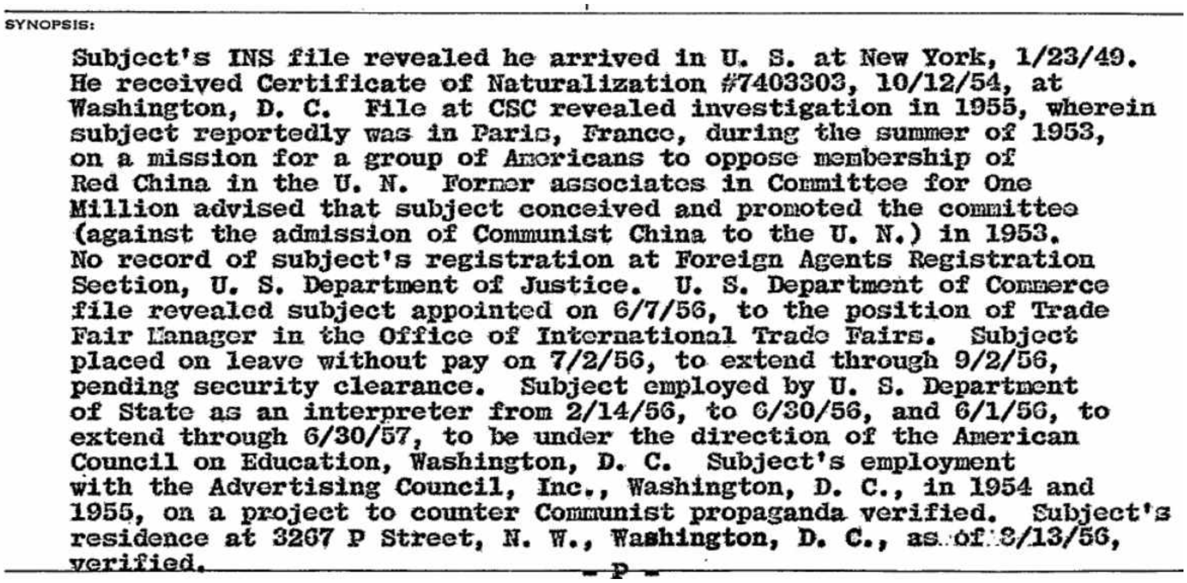

SYNOPSIS:

Subject's INS file revealed he arrived in U. S. at New York, 1/23/49. He received Certificate of Naturalization #7403303, 10/12/54, at Washington, D. C. File at CSC revealed investigation in 1955, wherein subject reportedly was in Paris, France, during the summer of 1953, on a mission for a group of Americans to oppose membership of Red China in the U. N. Former associates in Committee for One Million advised that subject conceived and promoted the committee (against the admission of Communist China to the U. N.) in 1953. No record of subject's registration at Foreign Agents Registration Section, U. S. Department of Justice. U. S. Department of Commerce file revealed subject appointed on 6/7/56, to the position of Trade Fair Manager in the Office of International Trade Fairs. Subject placed on leave without pay on 7/2/56, to extend through 9/2/56, pending security clearance. Subject employed by U. S. Department of State as an interpreter from 2/14/56, to 6/30/56, and 6/1/56, to extend through 6/30/57, to be under the direction of the American Council on Education, Washington, D. C. Subject's employment with the Advertising Council, Inc., Washington, D. C., in 1954 and 1955, on a project to counter Communist propaganda verified. Subject's residence at 3267 P Street, N. W., Washington, D. C., as of 8/13/56, verified.

- P -

Sources cited in MacRae's report include an "INS" file, which is Immigration and Naturalization Service, and a 1955 investigation conducted by the "CSC," or Civil Service Commission. Also described in the synopsis is Rochefort's June 7, 1956, appointment to the Department of Commerce and subsequent July to September leave, pending security clearance. Note Rochefort's employment, as well, with the State Department during what would have been his involvement with NICAP. The FBI notably verified Rochefort's previous employment at the Advertising Council "on a project to counter Communist propaganda."

MacRae's report goes on to site the CSC as establishing Rochefort's interactions and apparent good standing with Col. John Splain of the Joint Chiefs of Staff. Rochefort reportedly met with such officials in the Pentagon and abroad on behalf of those backing The Committee of One Million, including the previously referenced Congressman Judd. Topics of discussion included Freedom Day in Berlin, New Hampshire:

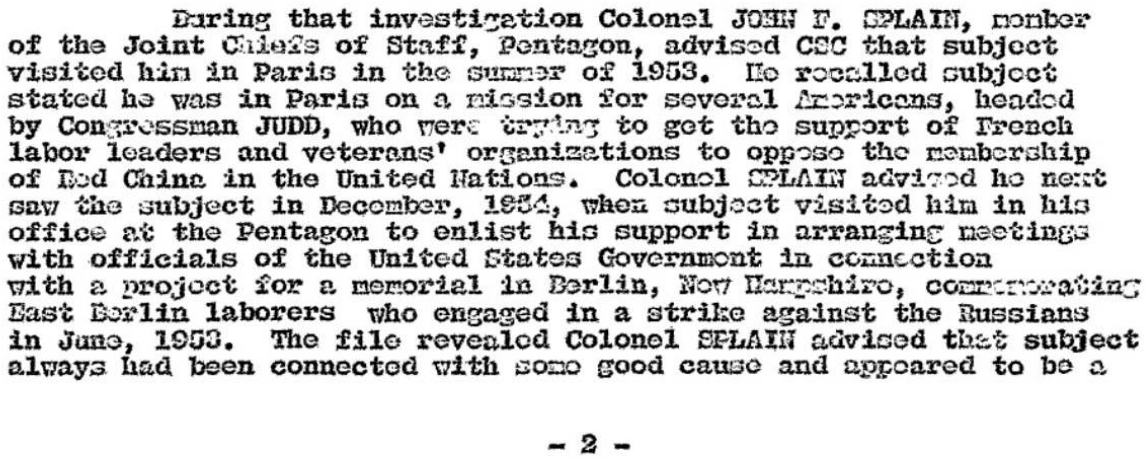

During that investigation Colonel JOHN F. SPLAIN, member of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, Pentagon, advised CSC that subject visited him in Paris in the summer of 1953. He recalled subject stated he was in Paris on a mission for several Americans, headed by Congressman JUDD, who were trying to get the support of French labor leaders and veterans' organizations to oppose the membership of Red China in the United Nations. Colonel SPLAIN advised he next saw the subject in December, 1954, when subject visited him in his office at the Pentagon to enlist his support in arranging meetings with officials of the United States Government in connection with a project for a memorial in Berlin, New Hampshire, commemorating East Berlin laborers who engaged in a strike against the Russians in June, 1953. The file revealed Colonel SPLAIN advised that subject always had been connected with some good cause and appeared to be a

- 2 -

The next page of MacRae's November report is below, which references Rochefort's substantial responsibility in the development of The Committee. Leadership of the lobby group described Rochefort as a highly convincing speaker and credited him with writing a petition which received nearly a million signatures.

The executive director of The Committee was also tapped by investigators. He stated that he worked closely with Rochefort, who he described as doing an outstanding job at bringing the issue before the American people about Red China's admission to the United Nations. He explained the entire idea of the petition originated with Rochefort – or, we might wonder, with the CIA, as Stanley Bachrack strongly suspected.

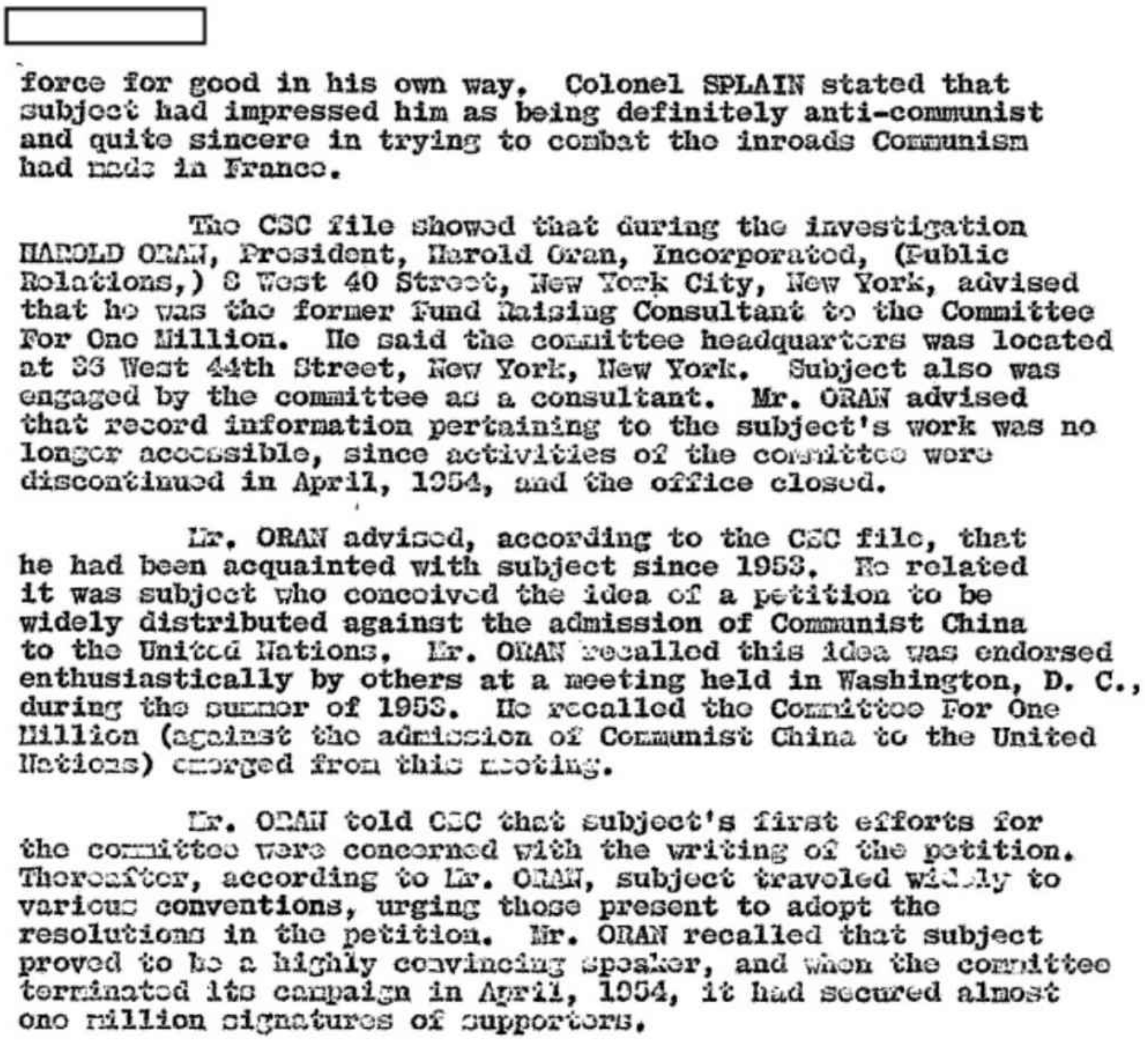

[redacted]

force for good in his own way. Colonel SPLAIN stated that subject had impressed him as being definitely anti-communist and quite sincere in trying to combat the inroads Communism had made in France.

The CSC file showed that during the investigation HAROLD ORAN, President, Harold Oran, Incorporated, (Public Relations,) 8 West 40 Street, New York City, New York, advised that he was the former Fund Raising Consultant to the Committee For One Million. He said the committee headquarters was located at 33 West 44th Street, New York, New York. Subject also was engaged by the committee as a consultant. Mr. ORAN advised that record information pertaining to the subject's work was no longer accessible, since activities of the committee were discontinued in April, 1954, and the office closed.

Mr. ORAN advised, according to the CSC file, that he had been acquainted with subject since 1953. He related it was subject who conceived the idea of a petition to be widely distributed against the admission of Communist China to the United Nations. Mr. ORAN recalled this idea was endorsed enthusiastically by others at a meeting held in Washington, D. C., during the summer of 1953. He recalled the Committee For One Million (against the admission of Communist China to the United Nations) emerged from this meeting.

Mr. ORAN told CSC that subject's first efforts for the committee were concerned with the writing of the petition. Thereafter, according to Mr. ORAN, subject traveled widely to various conventions, urging those present to adopt the resolutions in the petition. Mr. ORAN recalled that subject proved to be a highly convincing speaker, and when the committee terminated its campaign in April, 1954, it had secured almost one million signatures of supporters.

SA MacRae's November 1956 report referenced the August FBI investigation pertaining to background checks for government employees. The investigation established Rochefort was projected to be employed, ostensibly or otherwise, at the Department of Commerce as a Trade Fair Manager, and by the State Department as an interpreter, during the time we now know he helped organize and launch NICAP, between approximately October 1956 and January 1957:

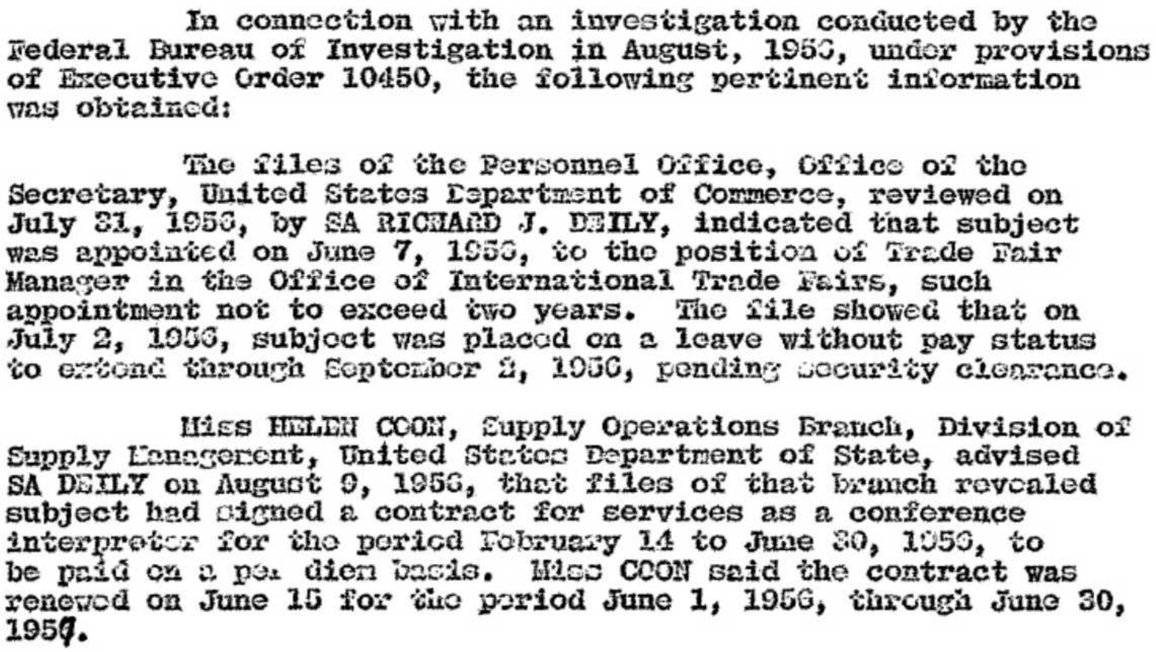

In connection with an investigation conducted by the Federal Bureau of Investigation in August, 1956, under provisions of Executive Order 10450, the following pertinent information was obtained:

The files of the Personnel Office, Office of the Secretary, United States Department of Commerce, reviewed on July 31, 1956, by SA RICHARD J. DEILY, indicated that subject was appointed on June 7, 1956, to the position of Trade Fair Manager in the Office of International Trade Fairs, such appointment not to exceed two years. The file showed that on July 2, 1956, subject was placed on a leave without pay status to extend through September 2, 1956, pending security clearance.

Miss HELEN COON, Supply Operations Branch, Division of Supply Management, United States Department of State, advised SA DEILY on August 9, 1956, that files of that branch revealed subject had signed a contract for services as a conference interpreter for the period February 14 to June 30, 1956, to be paid on a per diem basis. Miss COON said the contract was renewed on June 15 for the period June 1, 1956, through June 30, 1957.

When Director Hoover was provided copies of SA MacRae's November 27 report on Rochefort, he was additionally given the memo shown below, not included in the copies designated for other cleared recipients. The memo, exclusively for Hoover, contains information that is fully redacted, as is the source. The information was apparently obtained on November 2, 1956, just days after the formal incorporation of NICAP, under the stipulations it was furnished in strict confidence and not to be disseminated outside the director's office.

Efforts were unsuccessful to get further declassification of the memo, curiously exclusively for Hoover. In 2021 the Bureau conducted a Mandatory Declassification Review as requested, but declined to further declassify any of the document, citing exemption from the FOIA. For the time being we are left to wonder the identity of the informant, the nature of the information the source wanted withheld from FBI field offices and other agencies, and if it had anything to do with Rochefort's involvement with NICAP.

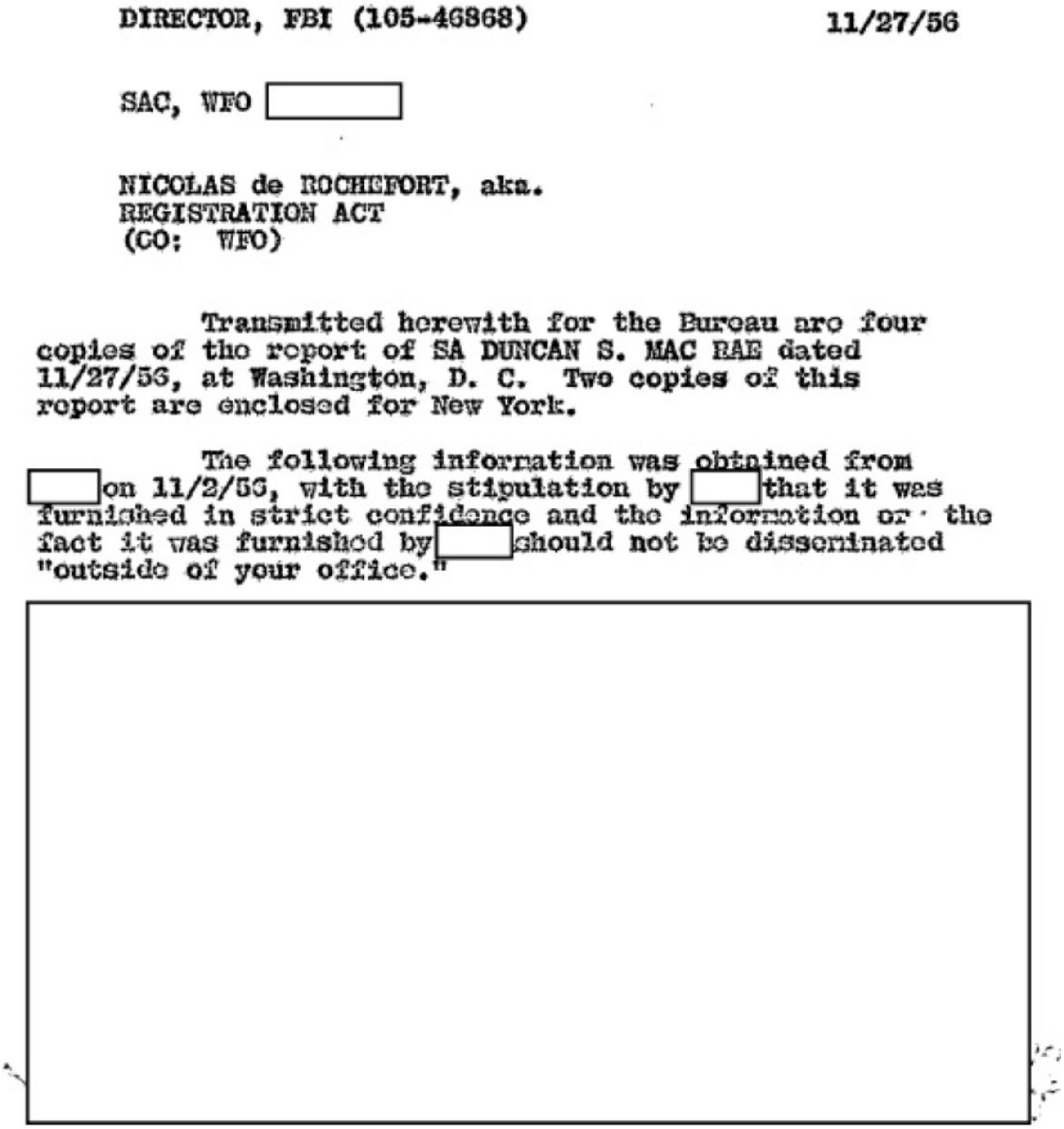

DIRECTOR, FBI (105-46868) 11/27/56

SAC, WFO [redacted]

NICOLAS de ROCHEFORT, aka.
REGISTRATION ACT
(CO: WFO)

Transmitted herewith for the Bureau are four copies of the report of SA DUNCAN S. MAC RAE dated 11/27/56, at Washington, D. C. Two copies of this report are enclosed for New York.

The following information was obtained from [redacted] on 11/2/56, with the stipulation by [redacted] that it was furnished in strict confidence and the information or the fact it was furnished by [redacted] should not be disseminated "outside of your office."

[redacted]

SA Thomas Alt investigated Rochefort between late November 1956 and early January 1957. He touched base with Col. Splain of the Joint Chiefs, confirming previous investigation reports continued to accurately reflect the officer's high regard for Rochefort. SA Alt also spoke with confidential informants in Washington familiar with Chinese affairs who advised they had no knowledge of Rochefort, thus the Frenchman was not suspected to be employed by Nationalist China. Coincidentally or otherwise, Alt's report was dated January 11, 1957, just days before the first annual NICAP meeting of members and the Board of Governors in which T. Townsend Brown was formally ousted.

I continue to seek material on Nicholas de Rochefort through the FOIA from intelligence agencies and archives. My efforts include requesting an FBI file from the National Archives and Records Administration after the FBI advised me of its existence. NARA responded by email that a preliminary review indicated Rochefort is indeed the subject of the file, which consists of some 200 pages. It was compiled as the result of an internal security investigation conducted between 1955 and 1964. NARA further stated the file must be processed for public release. The completion date was estimated to be September 2022.

During FOIA correspondence with the FBI, it indicated additional records potentially responsive to Nicholas de Rochefort were destroyed. It stated that was the case in a 2020 FOIA response.

There is much less information available on Rochefort's partner in, well, whatever they were partners in, Bernard J.O. Carvalho. You will recall Mr. Carvalho joined Rochefort and Brown as an early NICAP organizer and was accused of being a CIA man by people ranging from Richard Hall to Todd Zechel and many in between and since.

Among the few things I located was an old story in which Carvalho is a supporting character and was described as “a director of publications and former reporter who was helping Ivy Duce publicize *God Speaks*.” There's a lot to unpack in that sentence, but here we go: Ivy Oneita Duce was a female Murshida, or spiritual guide, of Sufism Reoriented, which was an American school of spiritualist training. Sufism Reoriented was started by Meher Baba, considered by some a spiritual master, and the author of the book, *God Speaks*.

The story comes to us from July 1956 and concerns a publicity tour for Meher Baba. He was being filmed conducting his activities and departing from New York. The entourage was destined for Myrtle Beach, SC, where Meher Baba was scheduled to participate in dedication ceremonies for the Meher Spiritual Center.

There was apparently pre-flight engine trouble and a storm, but Carvalho must have been pretty hellbent on getting the master and some television cameramen to that gig in Myrtle Beach. It would seem securing and flying airplanes on short notice numbered among Carvalho's abilities and talents, assuming this is the Bernard Carvalho in question, which I obviously suspect to be the case.

“NBC-TV cameramen were to come from New York and film the proceedings for the nationally televised 'Dave Garroway Show,'” a blogger recounted, “but their flight was canceled due to engine trouble. However, Bernard Carvalho found a small private plane and flew them through a storm to Myrtle Beach.”

“After a long search,” according to one of the blogger's cited sources, “Bernard Carvalho finally found a small private plane and flew them, himself, through a storm to Myrtle Beach.”

Carvalho was apparently not a big fan of layovers, at least not in this particular instance. Barry Greenwood gave me a heads up by email there is “almost nothing” available on Carvalho in the NICAP files and material.

“With very fragmentary information,” Greenwood added, “I gathered that de Rochefort and Carvalho were brought on by Townsend Brown to fund raise, but due to questionable financial activities they appear to have been gone by the time Keyhoe took hold. There is no evidence either were into UFOs otherwise.”

Indeed there is not. There is no reason to think either of the two had any existing interest in UFOs when they got on board with NICAP. It is time to follow the money.

CHAPTER 5

EARLY FINANCES

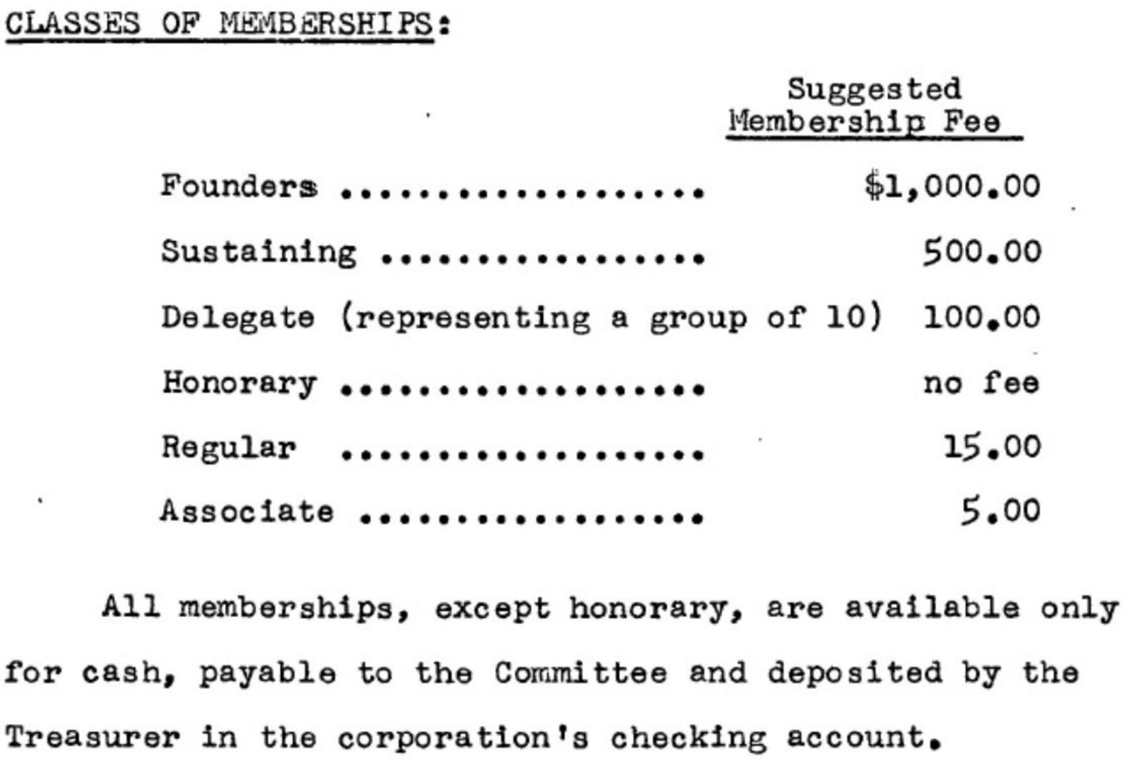

CLASSES OF MEMBERSHIPS:

	Suggested Membership Fee
Founders	$1,000.00
Sustaining	500.00
Delegate (representing a group of 10)	100.00
Honorary	no fee
Regular	15.00
Associate	5.00

All memberships, except honorary, are available only for cash, payable to the Committee and deposited by the Treasurer in the corporation's checking account.

The above image is from an early NICAP prospectus.[19] The inflation increase from 1957 to 2021 is over 9.5 times; $15 = 143.70, 1,000 = 9,579.89.

Early on there were suspicions among NICAP organizers about the motives of Townsend Brown and his associates. Within the many NICAP files provided by Barry Greenwood is a series of handwritten notes. The notes are not signed by their author, but the three pages offer us apparent insights into circumstances surrounding what seems to be a 1956 meeting. Below is one of the pages.[20]

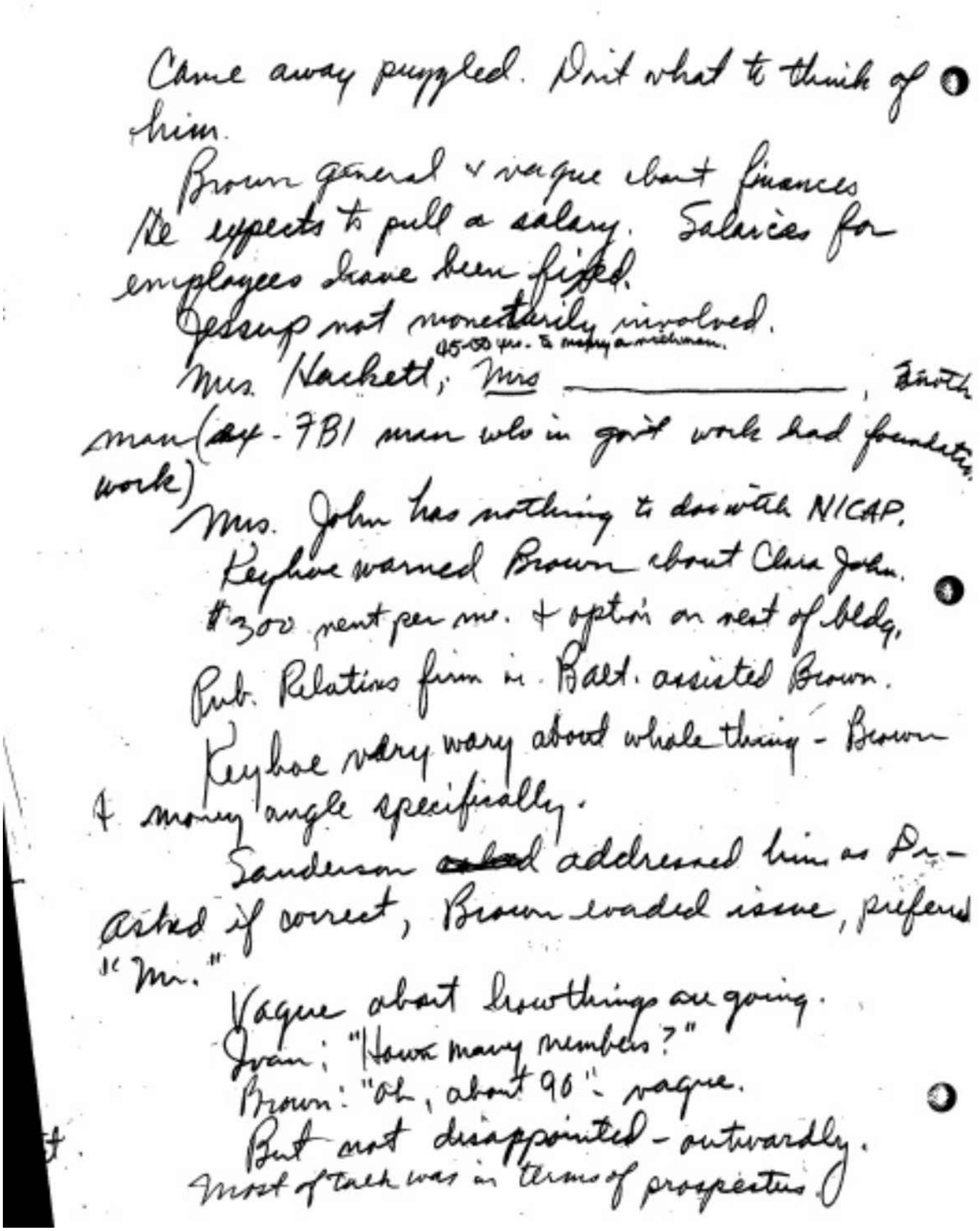

Came away puzzled. Don't know what to think of him.

Brown general & vague about finances. He expects to pull a salary. Salaries for employees have been fixed.

Jessup not monetarily involved.

45-50 yrs. to marry a rich man.

Mrs. Hackett; Mrs ______________, another man (ex-FBI man who in gov't work had foundation work)

Mrs. John has nothing to do with NICAP.

Keyhoe warned Brown about Clara John.

$300 rent per mo. & option on rest of bldg.

Pub. Relations firm in Balt. assisted Brown.

Keyhoe very wary about whole thing - Brown & money angle specifically.

Sanderson ~~asked~~ addressed him as Dr.—asked if correct, Brown evaded issue, preferred "Mr."

Vague about how things are going.

Ivan: "How many members?"

Brown: "Oh, about 90" - vague.

But not disappointed - outwardly.

Most of talk was in terms of prospectus.

The above page suggests Townsend Brown spoke only vaguely about finances. It is also suggested Morris K. Jessup was not monetarily involved with NICAP.

There is reference to Mrs. Rose Hackett, the office manager. She was one of four who made “Founder Membership” donations of $1,000 during the first year of operations, according to a 1959 report to the Board of Governors authored by Maj. Donald Keyhoe.[21] Mrs. Hackett was a widow and was soon to marry D. Cameron Campbell, who briefly worked for NICAP as a treasurer.

The curious presence of “another man” is noted, described as an “ex-FBI man who in government work had foundation work.” His name is not documented.

It is noted Mrs. Clara John had nothing to do with NICAP, and that Keyhoe warned Brown about her. I confidently suspect such warnings pertained to Mrs. John's liberal views of UFOs, contactees, and esoteric subject matter, as compared to those of Keyhoe, who considered himself more UFO conservative.

Rent is listed as $300 per month with an option for the rest of the building. Calculating for inflation, that's over $2,800 a month by standards as of this writing. Perhaps they either expected saucer hunting to be more lucrative than it turned out or they initially had wealthier underwriters than most UFO researchers who followed in their footsteps, or both.

Please take particular note of the line indicating a public relations firm in Baltimore assisted Brown. Similar was suggested in a letter from Arnold Kruckman to Kansas Representative Wint Smith.

After Brown and two associates formally filed for NICAP incorporation in August 1956, Kruckman wrote to Rep. Smith in September, “The Committee has just been incorporated and it has employed a fund-gathering organization which will operate in all parts of the United States. I understand the fund-gathering organization has made a preliminary investigation for its own business purposes, and has come to the conclusion that it will be able to undertake this operation successfully. If I recall my facts, correctly, it expects to raise its funds from some 500,000 persons. In addition there are tens of thousands [in] local clubs or organizations in every part of the United States devoted to 'sightings' and other forms of studies and recordings connected with aerial phenomena and 'flying saucers.'”[22]

It indeed appears likely Nicholas de Rochefort and Bernard J.O. Carvalho acted as consultants with fundraising organizations or public relations firms, as Barry Greenwood suggested by email. Perhaps the two were even presented as part of the Baltimore firm. You will recall Rochefort's employment history as an influential lobbyist and propagandist, and Carvalho's apparent assistance promoting Meher Baba and his book.

Further documented in the above handwritten note was Maj. Keyhoe's doubts about proposed financial strategies. As a matter of fact, the line immediately following mention of the public relations firm states, “Keyhoe very wary about whole thing – Brown & money angle specifically.”

The handwritten page goes on to reference UFO writer and researcher Ivan Sanderson. He and his associates apparently and understandably took interest in the buzz generated by NICAP. One such associate was Robert Serling, older brother of famed Twilight Zone creator, Rod Serling.

Robert Serling was an avid writer, credited with at least eight novels and 16 nonfiction books. During World War II he served in the Army Air Forces and subsequently had a particular interest in covering aviation. Robert joined United Press International after the war and became its aviation editor in 1960.

A few years before that, Robert apparently composed a memo to Ivan Sanderson about NICAP. He described general operations and a visit he made to NICAP headquarters, almost certainly in 1956.

“They say vigorously it is an independent organization with NO connection with the government,” Robert Serling wrote to Sanderson.[23]

His memo goes on to briefly describe the activities of Townsend Brown and Morris Jessup, the latter of which was observed to be “connected with the outfit in some capacity.” Their personal positions on flying saucers were noted: Brown considered himself a shade right of center, Jessup to the left.

Robert Serling's memo concludes with the following description of events during his visit, “A rather distinguished-looking woman pleasantly asked me if she could help me. Her face froze about 40 degrees when I said I was a reporter. She stiffly asked for identification. Brown, Jessup, and frozen face [were] the only three in the office at the time. Brown made a call to someone and asked if someone would like to speak to him, but someone said no.”

An early NICAP personnel list taken from a Board of Governors Progress Report dated January 7, 1957:[24]

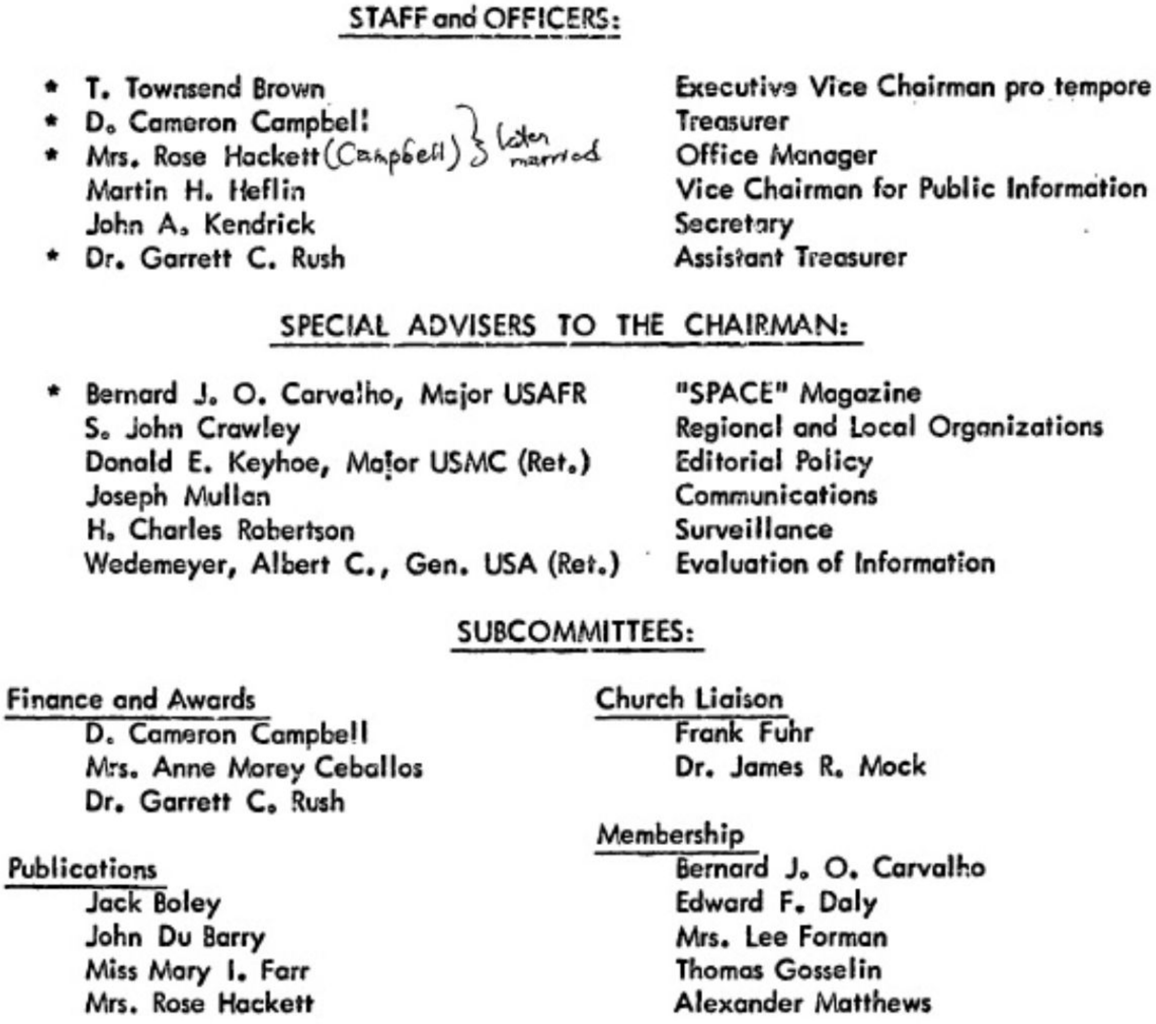

STAFF and OFFICERS:

* T. Townsend Brown	Executive Vice Chairman pro tempore
* D. Cameron Campbell	Treasurer
* Mrs. Rose Hackett (Campbell) } later married	Office Manager
Martin H. Heflin	Vice Chairman for Public Information
John A. Kendrick	Secretary
* Dr. Garrett C. Rush	Assistant Treasurer

SPECIAL ADVISERS TO THE CHAIRMAN:

* Bernard J. O. Carvalho, Major USAFR	"SPACE" Magazine
S. John Crawley	Regional and Local Organizations
Donald E. Keyhoe, Major USMC (Ret.)	Editorial Policy
Joseph Mullan	Communications
H. Charles Robertson	Surveillance
Wedemeyer, Albert C., Gen. USA (Ret.)	Evaluation of Information

SUBCOMMITTEES:

Finance and Awards
- D. Cameron Campbell
- Mrs. Anne Morey Ceballos
- Dr. Garrett C. Rush

Publications
- Jack Boley
- John Du Barry
- Miss Mary I. Farr
- Mrs. Rose Hackett

Church Liaison
- Frank Fuhr
- Dr. James R. Mock

Membership
- Bernard J. O. Carvalho
- Edward F. Daly
- Mrs. Lee Forman
- Thomas Gosselin
- Alexander Matthews

Note D. Cameron Campbell, Treasurer, and the notation indicating he soon married Mrs. Rose Hackett. Campbell took over as treasurer from Thomas O'Keefe. The two treasurers play curious although brief roles in our developing story.

Also please notice the presence on the list of Bernard J.O. Carvalho. He was listed as a major in the Air Force, a circumstance I consider to increase the likelihood he was the same Bernard Carvalho who, a few months earlier, flew the Meher Baba entourage with NBC cameramen in tow through a storm in New York to a spiritual center dedication in South Carolina. Carvalho was designated a NICAP “Special Advisor,” whose responsibilities included producing a magazine. The Army Times Publishing Company was apparently a prospect for a publisher, as indicated below in the same January progress report.

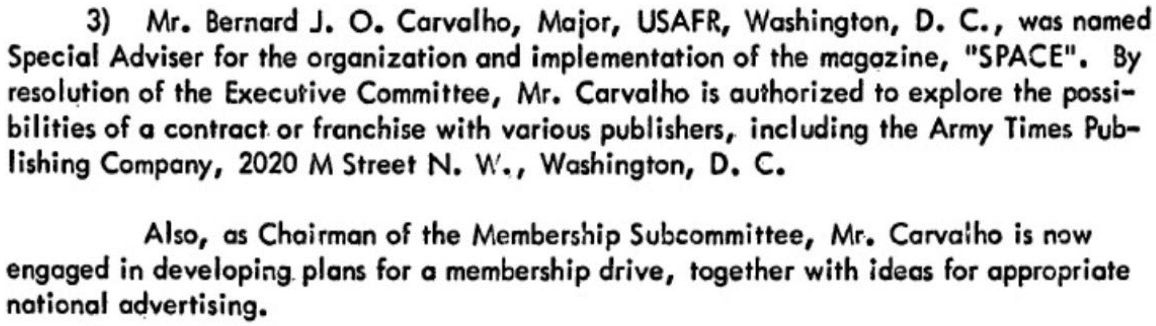

3) Mr. Bernard J. O. Carvalho, Major, USAFR, Washington, D. C., was named Special Adviser for the organization and implementation of the magazine, "SPACE". By resolution of the Executive Committee, Mr. Carvalho is authorized to explore the possibilities of a contract or franchise with various publishers, including the Army Times Publishing Company, 2020 M Street N. W., Washington, D. C.

Also, as Chairman of the Membership Subcommittee, Mr. Carvalho is now engaged in developing plans for a membership drive, together with ideas for appropriate national advertising.

Further evidence in a December 17, 1956, NICAP progress report of Carvalho's position as Chairman of the Membership Subcommittee:[25]

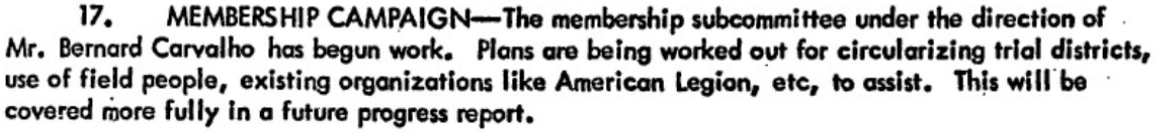

17. MEMBERSHIP CAMPAIGN—The membership subcommittee under the direction of Mr. Bernard Carvalho has begun work. Plans are being worked out for circularizing trial districts, use of field people, existing organizations like American Legion, etc, to assist. This will be covered more fully in a future progress report.

An example of Carvalho's activities in his capacity as Chairman of the Membership Subcommittee included signing a form letter for prospective members. The letter stated NICAP was chartered to implement and direct a united scientific investigation of aerial phenomena.[26]

The January 7, 1957, Board of Governors Progress Report also referenced Nicholas de Rochefort:

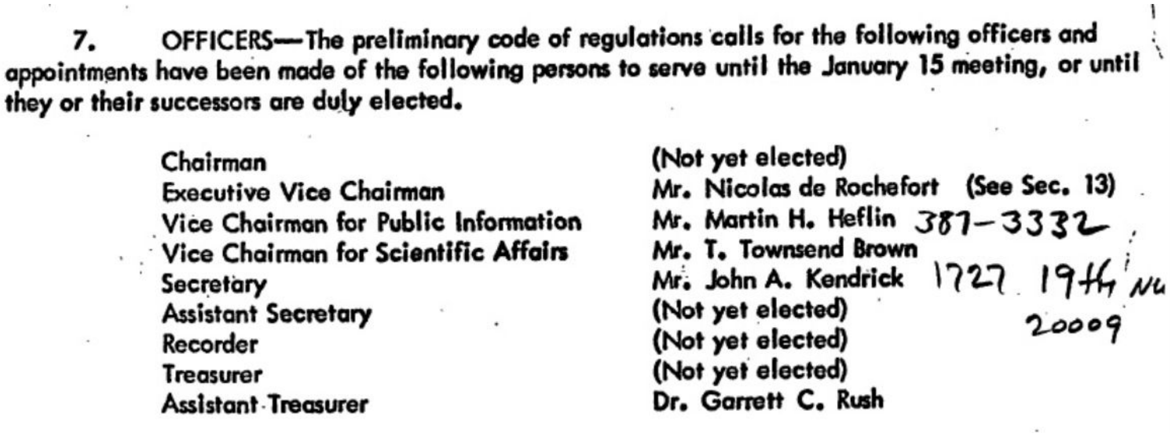

7. OFFICERS—The preliminary code of regulations calls for the following officers and appointments have been made of the following persons to serve until the January 15 meeting, or until they or their successors are duly elected.

Chairman	(Not yet elected)	
Executive Vice Chairman	Mr. Nicolas de Rochefort (See Sec. 13)	
Vice Chairman for Public Information	Mr. Martin H. Heflin	387-3332
Vice Chairman for Scientific Affairs	Mr. T. Townsend Brown	
Secretary	Mr. John A. Kendrick	1727 19th Nw
Assistant Secretary	(Not yet elected)	20009
Recorder	(Not yet elected)	
Treasurer	(Not yet elected)	
Assistant Treasurer	Dr. Garrett C. Rush	

A sample of Rochefort's activities with NICAP:

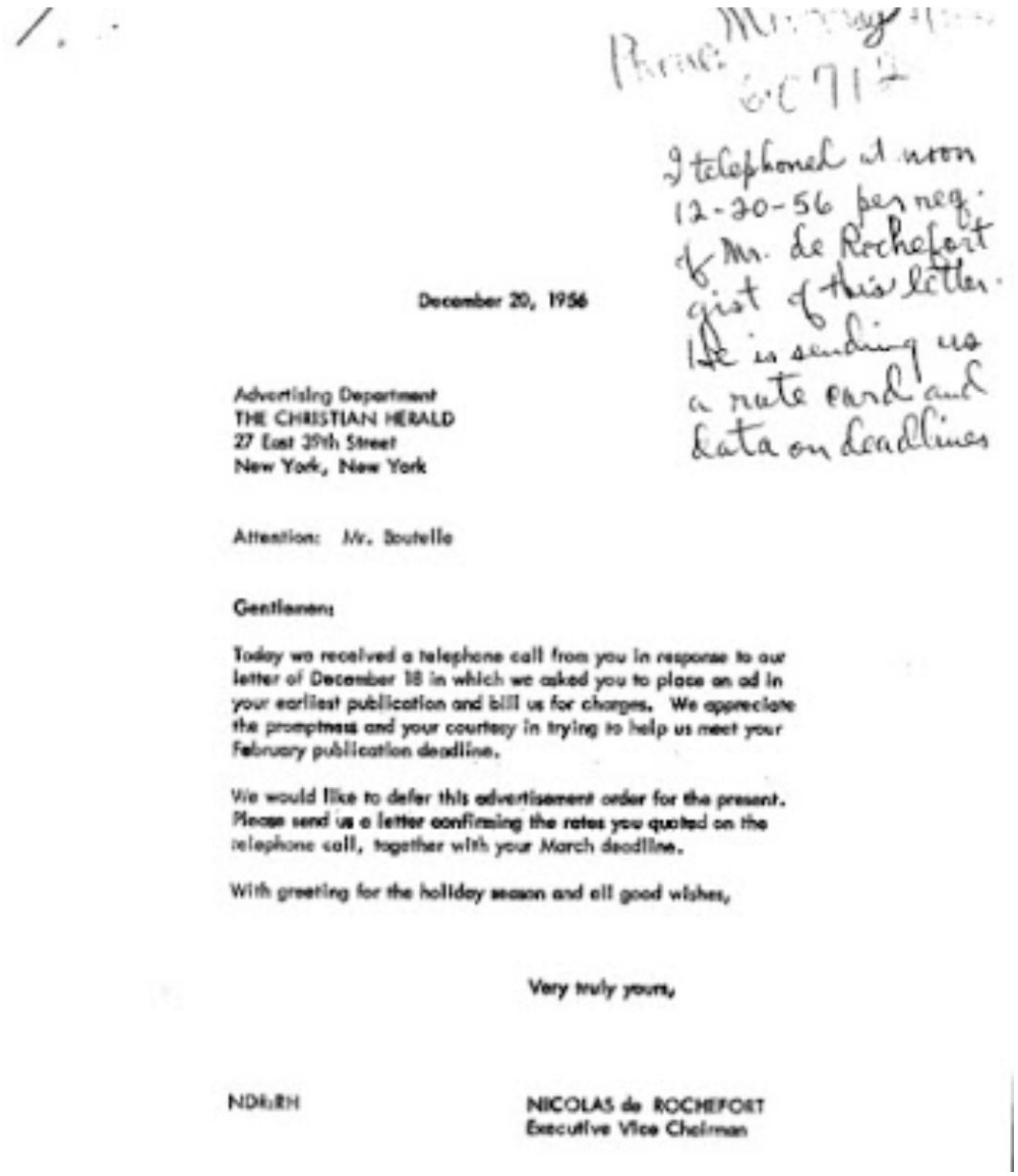

Phone: M[illegible]

6-C71[illegible]

I telephoned at noon 12-20-56 per req. of Mr. de Rochefort gist of this letter. He is sending us a rate card and data on deadlines

December 20, 1956

Advertising Department
THE CHRISTIAN HERALD
27 East 39th Street
New York, New York

Attention: Mr. Boutelle

Gentlemen:

Today we received a telephone call from you in response to our letter of December 18 in which we asked you to place an ad in your earliest publication and bill us for charges. We appreciate the promptness and your courtesy in trying to help us meet your February publication deadline.

We would like to defer this advertisement order for the present. Please send us a letter confirming the rates you quoted on the telephone call, together with your March deadline.

With greeting for the holiday season and all good wishes,

Very truly yours,

NDR:RH

NICOLAS de ROCHEFORT
Executive Vice Chairman

Was a fundraising firm, consulted under Brown's direction, actually serving as cover for Rochefort, Carvalho, and the CIA? As my research continued, it seemed to be an increasing possibility.

Let's take it from the top. In late August 1956, Brown and two of his associates filed a Certificate of Incorporation for NICAP (You will recall, as documented in the previous chapter, the FBI launched investigations of Rochefort the same month, August 1956). The trio of T. Townsend Brown, Mary V. King, and Thomas D. O'Keefe completed the document on August 28. The next day it was submitted to the applicable agency. From a copy of the

Certificate of Incorporation, Non-Profit, National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena:[27]

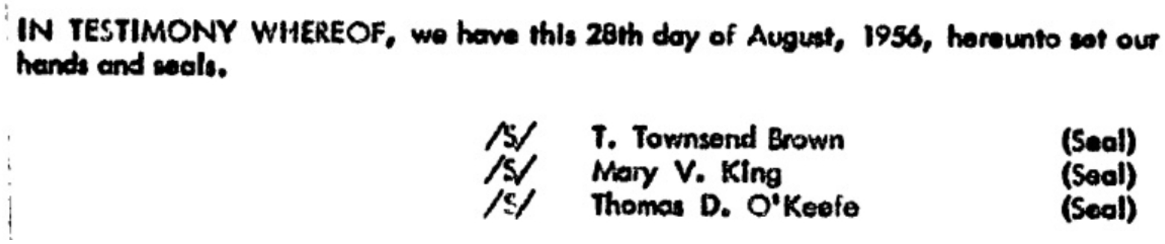

IN TESTIMONY WHEREOF, we have this 28th day of August, 1956, hereunto set our hands and seals.

/S/ T. Townsend Brown (Seal)
/S/ Mary V. King (Seal)
/S/ Thomas D. O'Keefe (Seal)

Further documentation of the incorporators:

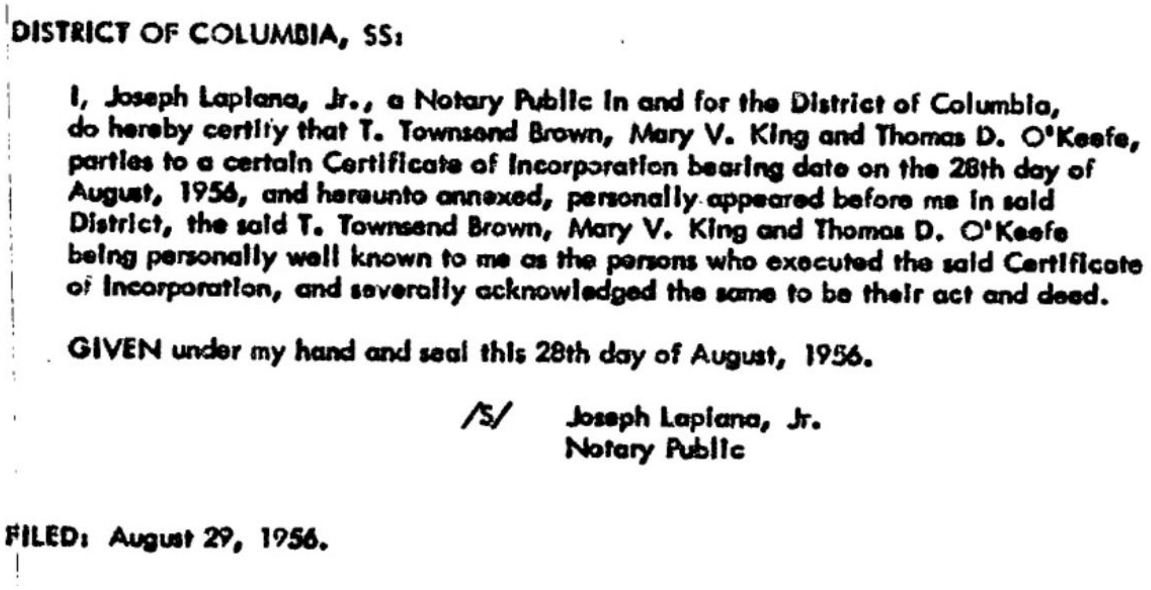

DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA, SS:

I, Joseph Laplana, Jr., a Notary Public in and for the District of Columbia, do hereby certify that T. Townsend Brown, Mary V. King and Thomas D. O'Keefe, parties to a certain Certificate of Incorporation bearing date on the 28th day of August, 1956, and hereunto annexed, personally appeared before me in said District, the said T. Townsend Brown, Mary V. King and Thomas D. O'Keefe being personally well known to me as the persons who executed the said Certificate of Incorporation, and severally acknowledged the same to be their act and deed.

GIVEN under my hand and seal this 28th day of August, 1956.

/S/ Joseph Laplana, Jr.
Notary Public

FILED: August 29, 1956.

A two-page contract dated August 29, 1956, was drawn up between NICAP and Counsel Services, Incorporated, which was located in Baltimore. This is almost certainly the previously referenced Baltimore firm.

The contract states Counsel Services would direct "initial organizational plans and the general public relations and membership enlistment program" for NICAP. The document goes on to describe plans pertaining to membership recruitment and a sustained public information program. The importance of making a positive initial impression on the public was emphasized, and Counsel Services stressed its need to handle the task, which, it warned, should not be left to amateurs.

The contract was undertaken on behalf of Counsel Services by "Mary Vaughan King, President," who collaborated on the NICAP Certificate of Incorporation 24 hours earlier. Counsel Services was to be paid $1,500 per month beginning October 1 and for three months, with the fee increasing to $1,850 each month for the next 12 months, starting in January 1957. Those figures would be multiplied over nine times to factor inflation as of this writing.

The contract stipulated “additional consultants in related fields, for Regional directors, may be retained as necessary to keep pace with expanding operations – subject to the approval of the Committee's Officers, all to work under the supervision of the senior officers of this firm – namely, Mr. Thomas D. O'Keefe and Mary V. King (Mrs.).” Costs of consultants and all related expenses were to be paid by NICAP. It is reasonable to suspect such consultants included Rochefort and Carvalho.

A copy of the contract, accepted by Brown, pending approval by the Board:[28]

301 —

C
O
P
Y

Counsel Services, Incorporated
219 West Monument Street
Baltimore 1, Maryland

August 29, 1956

National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena
1536 Connecticut Avenue N. W.
Washington 6, D. C.

Att: Mr. Townsend Brown
Executive Vice Chairman

Gentlemen:

This is in confirmation of our mutual understanding, as of August 16, 1956, with respect to this firm's direction of initial organizational plans and the general public relations and membership enlistment program for the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena.

We have undertaken this assignment with the knowledge that present financial circumstances do not permit of payment of usual professional fees for such services, and that we will operate on a minimum cost basis during the six weeks or so developmental period— mostly out of our own offices.

Operating plans will be made gradually, with maximum flexibility in relation to the progress in organizational development, i.e., *First things first:*

I. Recruitment of a Board of Governors of persons whose calibre will, *per se*, establish in the public mind the unimpeachable sincerity of the Committee's work and efforts, literally guaranteeing the integrity of its operations, - is of prime importance. These persons should be selected on a Regional basis (except for assuring that a quorum can be obtained for meetings in the Eastern area during the early stages) thus facilitating the enlistment of a National Membership of adequate size and quality.

II. An Advisory Council or similar body should be named to be comprised of interested persons who are willing and able to assist actively in related fields of science, public information, government relations, industrial relations, and international cooperation.

III. The National Membership Campaign can be instituted only after these two steps are accomplished, to assure a sound, dignified presentation to organized groups, persons with special interests in the field (such as aviators) and lay individuals generally.

IV. The preparation of designs for specific promotional and informational materials to be used in conjunction with the above mentioned program may be in process of course, but actual printing and release of such materials must await completement of enlistment of leadership. Meanwhile, artists are already working on designs for appropriate emblems, symbols, color schemes and layouts. The preliminary application forms for Membership are printed, and Membership cards are being sketched for presentation to the Committee for approval.

V. Planning of initial releases to information media must be done with extreme care, and every precaution exercised to prevent premature publicity which could have the very unhappy effect of focusing public attention on an infant organization whose future course of action is yet to be plotted accurately. Thus, by falling into the category of irresponsible, uncoordinated – if well intentioned – amateurs, the Committee Members would be relegated to ignominy and defeat before given a fair chance. This point cannot be over-emphasized, as the successful attainment of the Committee's aims and objectives hinges upon the Initial Impression made when the organization is presented to the public.

VI. Development of sustained public information programs will follow the outline and encompass the areas listed in Section VII of the original Prospectus concerning the formation of the Committee. The chronology of events can scarcely be determined at this early point, inasmuch as the direction to be taken depends upon the outcome of conferences yet to be held to seek the support and guidance of consultants and advisors whose counsel will be invaluable.

This firm is willing to proceed with the assignment on this basis, with the understanding that after the Committee goes into actual operation and funds become available for its operation, this firm will be reimbursed for costs incurred with the consent of the Officers, and professional fees at the rate of $1500.00 per month will be paid for the first three months, beginning with October 1, 1956, and $1850.00 per month for the next twelve months until January 1, 1958. This contract will be renewable by mutual consent of the Officers of the Committee and the management of this firm, with the further understanding that additional consultants in related fields, for Regional directors, may be retained as necessary to keep pace with expanding operations—subject to the approval of the Committee's Officers, all to work under the supervision of the senior officers of this firm —namely, Mr. Thomas D. O'Keefe and Mary V. King (Mrs.). Costs of additional consultants, as well as costs of materials, postage, travel, meetings, printing, etc., as incurred with the consent of the Committee's Officers, will be paid by the Committee directly.

If this is in agreement with your understanding of our arrangement, please sign the attached carbon copy of this letter, thus constituting this a valid contract between us, and return same for our files. We are deeply honored to have been selected for this assignment and feel it a privilege to be associated with a work of such magnitude and significance to our civilization.

Very Sincerely yours,

COUNSEL SERVICES, INCORPORATED

By: /S/ Mary Vaughan King, President

Accepted, subject to review by the
Board of Governors
/S/ T. Townsend Brown
For the National Investigations
Committee on Aerial Phenomena.

Date: August 31, 1956

The NICAP Certificate of Incorporation was formally approved October 24, 1956. Organizers of the young group then held a meeting in early November to appoint acting officers and personnel. Most seemed expected to retain their positions until at least the first annual meeting in January. Staff would then be solidified, and meetings of the Board of Governors and membership were envisioned to take place annually thereafter.

A November 6, 1956, letter attributed to NICAP Secretary John Kendrick advised Adm. Delmer Fahrney of the evolving situation.[29] Sort of. Adm. Fahrney would become the inaugural NICAP Chairman of the Board. The letter mentioned some personnel appointments as well as changes already taking place, but was not entirely clear about circumstances surrounding Mary Vaughan King. Neither did it specifically mention the proposed Counsel Services contract, but did advise the admiral that NICAP was pursuing professional fundraising organizations and the Board would be polled when recommendations were reached.

On a semi-interesting aside, It could be argued the letter was not written by John Kendrick, as compared to perhaps composed for his approval. I suggest this because there is mention within the second paragraph of Kendrick by name, which would indicate, if he wrote the letter, he oddly chose not to refer to himself in first person.

An apparent draft of the letter was located in a separate NICAP file.[30] The draft carries what might be considered some interesting differences from the letter eventually sent to Adm. Fahrney. For instance, the draft initially suggested incorporator and Counsel Services senior officer O'Keefe retained his position as NICAP treasurer, then it is amended to suggest he never intended to keep the office but only accepted it on a temporary basis.

We can also observe that Mary Vaughan King is described in the draft as relinquishing her post “in order to assist in the very important work of public relations,” with Kendrick taking her place. In the final letter, Fahrney is told Vaughan King relinquished her position “to assist in the Committee management liaison work”.

Below are the apparent draft and final letter:

Dear Governor____________

The formal details of incorporation have now been completed and there remains only the necessary implementation to put the Committee on a functioning basis

At the initial meeting of the Incorporators on ______ ________, 1956, T. Townsend Brown was appointed as the Executive Vice Chairman pro tempre, Mrs. Mary V ~~Olive~~ King as Secretary, and Mr THOS. D. ____ O'KEEFE ~~Campbell~~, Treasurer, ~~and Mr. ____ ____ Rush as Assistant Treasurer~~. These persons have continued to hold these posts until now, w/exception of MR O'KEEFE who had accepted the ofc on a temp basis, Cameron D. Campbell However, it has become necessary for Mrs. King to relinquish her post in order to assist in the very important work of public relations and John A. Kendrick was selected in her place. It was also necessary to obtain an overall public relations expert and Martin H. Heflin was selected for that post.

Two posts remain open at this time - the Chairman of the Committee and the Executive Vice Chairman. The position of Chairman would logically be held by the Speaker of the Board of Governors and this should be filled by the Board of Governors from among its own membership. This action can probably await the annual meeting in January. Mr. Bown, who has largely spearheaded the entire effort, has agreed to continue as the operating head of the organization until a successor is selected, at which time Mr. Bown would like to assume the direction of the scientific investigation.

It is proposed that the following administrative group be continued until the annual meeting in January:

Executive Vice Chairman - T. Towhsend Brown
Vice Chairman (Pub. Rels)- Martin H. Heflin
Vice Chairman (Scientific) - T. Townsend Brown
Secretary - John A. Kendrick
Treasurer- ____ ____ Campbell
Asst. Treasurer - ____ ____ Rush

cc for Mr. Kendrick

RECEIVED
JOHN A. KENDRICK

November 6, 1956

Admiral Delbert S. Fahrney
Roundelay
Chadds Ford, Pennsylvania

Dear Admiral Fahrney:

The formal details of incorporation have now been completed and there remains only the necessary implementation to put the Committee on a functioning basis.

At the initial meeting of the incorporators on August 29, 1956, Mr. T. Townsend Brown was appointed as the Executive Vice Chairman pro tempore, Mrs. Mary Vaughan King as Secretary and Mr. Thomas D. O'Keefe as Treasurer. With the exception of Mr. O'Keefe, who had assumed this office on a temporary basis, these persons have continued to hold those posts until now. Mr. D. C. Campbell then assumed the responsibilities of Treasurer and Dr. Garrett C. Rush as Assistant Treasurer. It has since become necessary for Mrs. King also to relinquish her post in order to assist in the Committee management liaison work and Mr. John A. Kendrick was selected in her place. It was also necessary to obtain an overall public relations counsel and Mr. Martin H. Heflin was selected for that post.

Two headquarters management posts remain open at this time: the Chairman of the Committee and the Executive Vice Chairman. The position of Committee Chairman would logically be held by the Speaker of the Board of Governors, which office will of course be filled by the Board of Governors from among its own membership. From a practical standpoint this action can await the annual Board meeting in January. Mr. Brown, who has largely spearheaded the entire organizational effort, has agreed to continue as the operating executive officer of the organization until a successor is selected, at which time he would assume a vice chairmanship for direction of the Committee's scientific affairs.

It is proposed, therefore, that the following headquarters administrative officers be continued until the annual meeting in January:

Executive Vice Chairman	T. Townsend Brown, pro tempore
Vice Chairman of Public Relations	Martin H. Heflin
Vice Chairman of Scientific Affairs	T. Townsend Brown
Secretary	John A. Kendrick
Treasurer	D. C. Campbell
Assistant Treasurer	Dr. Garrett C. Rush

It is further proposed that Messrs. Brown, Heflin and Kendrick be designated as an Executive Committee to guide the day to day affairs of the Committee. Such a procedure becomes imperative, since the Board of Governors will not meet until shortly after the first of the year.

We are now preparing a Code of Regulations (Bylaws) which will be forwarded to you in the near future for your views.

Plans already are under way for the fund raising campaign and several professional organizations have been contacted in order to obtain estimates of such a program's costs. We will again poll the Board when we are in a position to make recommendations.

We solicit your comments, views and suggestions, and therefore ask your approval and ratification of the following:

1) Appointment of the officers named above until the annual meeting in January.

2) The initial appointments by the incorporators.

3) Appointment of the Headquarters Executive Committee composed of the persons named above.

There is enclosed a copy of this letter memorandum and it would be appreciated if you would indicate your approval and return this copy.

Respectfully,

JAK:RH
Encl.

JOHN A. KENDRICK
Secretary

APPROVED:

Member, Board of Governors
NATIONAL INVESTIGATIONS COMMITTEE ON AERIAL PHENOMENA

The letter apparently sent to Fahrney documents it was at this point, in early November 1956, that D. Cameron Campbell assumed the position of treasurer from Thomas O'Keefe. Handwritten notes, apparently of the minutes, from the November 6, 1956, meeting:[31]

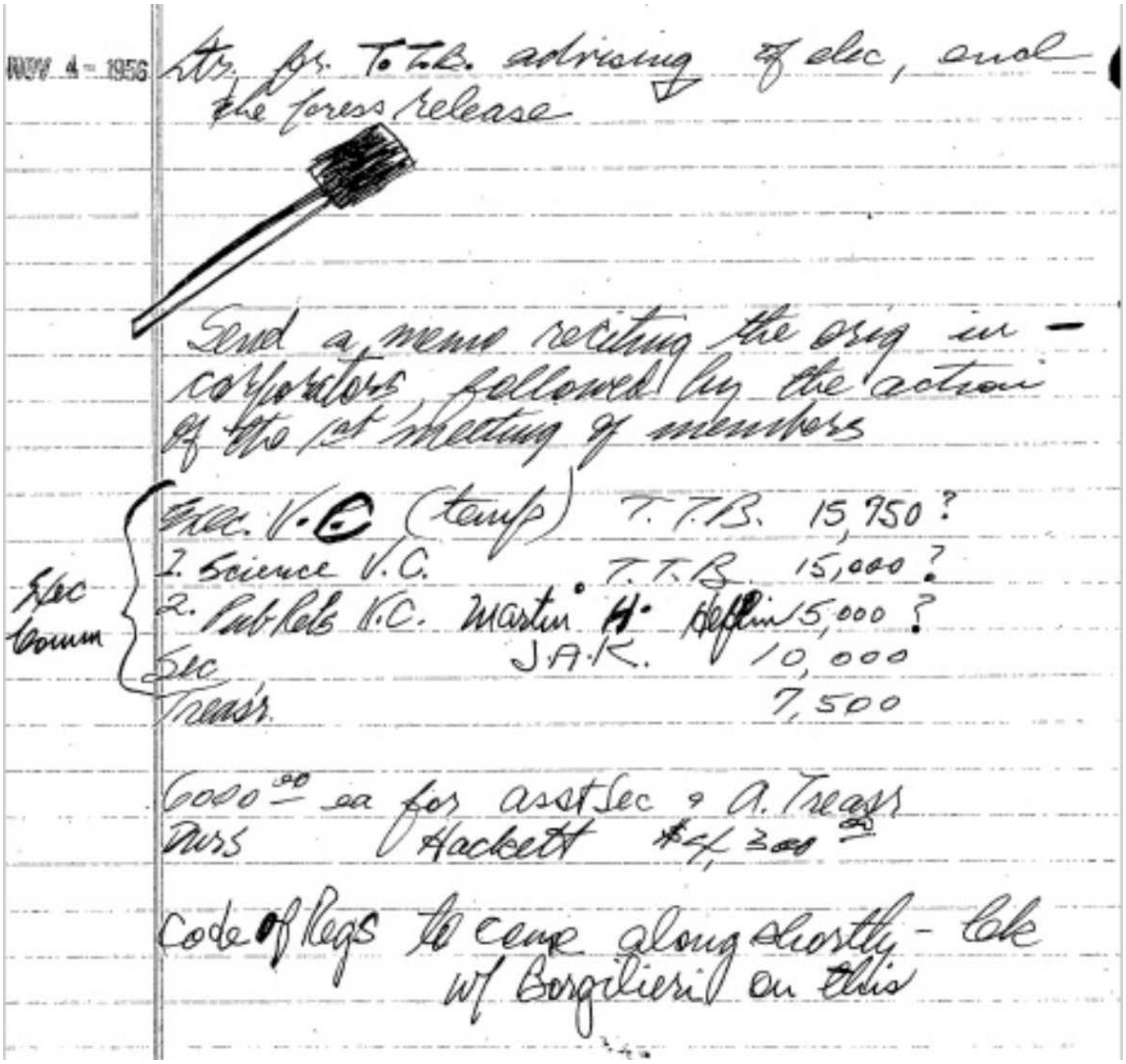

NOV 4 - 1956 Ltr. fr. T.T.B. advising of elec, and the press release

Send a memo reciting the org in-corporators, followed by the action of the 1st meeting of members

Exec Comm
Exec. V.C. (temp) T.T.B. 15,750?
1. Science V.C. T.T.B. 15,000?
2. Pub Rels V.C. Martin H. Heflin 5,000?
Sec J.A.K. 10,000
Treas. 7,500

6000.00 ea for asst Sec & A. Treas
Purs Hackett $4,300.00

Code of Regs to come along shortly - Chk w/ Borgilieri on this

The notes indicate salary considerations, and there is a brief reference to touching base with an attorney named Borzilleri. We will explore his activities a bit more shortly.

A meeting was then held December 17, 1956, and Rochefort was appointed to succeed Brown as Executive Vice Chairman, effective virtually immediately. The circumstances were documented below in a progress report to the Board of Governors composed the same day of the meeting, December 17. This in all likelihood reflects Brown's rapid fall from favor.

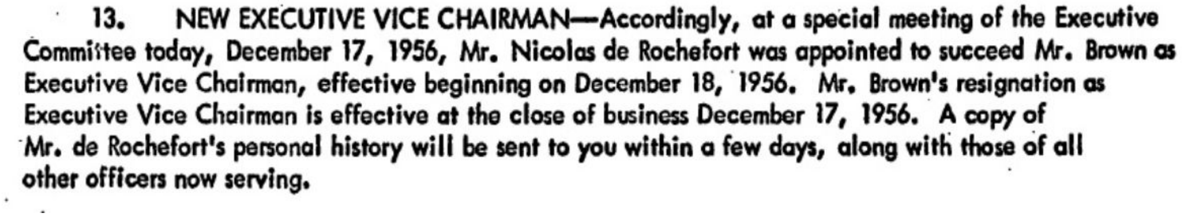

13. NEW EXECUTIVE VICE CHAIRMAN—Accordingly, at a special meeting of the Executive Committee today, December 17, 1956, Mr. Nicolas de Rochefort was appointed to succeed Mr. Brown as Executive Vice Chairman, effective beginning on December 18, 1956. Mr. Brown's resignation as Executive Vice Chairman is effective at the close of business December 17, 1956. A copy of Mr. de Rochefort's personal history will be sent to you within a few days, along with those of all other officers now serving.

However, and rather interestingly, Rochefort soon brought it to the attention of the Executive Committee it lacked the authority to make the change. It seems this suggests Rochefort had more than a passing familiarity with the applicable NICAP regulations, or at least a better understanding of Executive Committee authority and limitations than others. It might also be reasonably interpreted to suggest Rochefort had reasons to oppose the removal of Brown. The personnel change was subsequently deferred, as indicated in the images below taken from a January progress report.

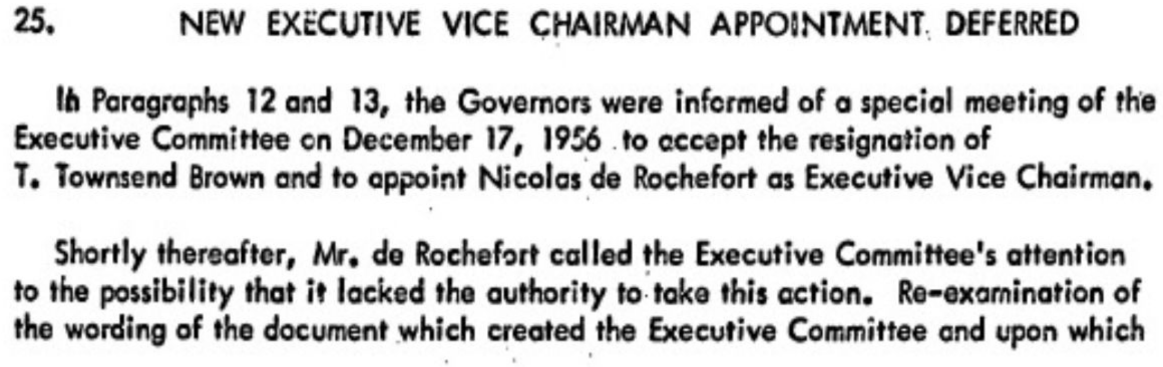

25. NEW EXECUTIVE VICE CHAIRMAN APPOINTMENT DEFERRED

In Paragraphs 12 and 13, the Governors were informed of a special meeting of the Executive Committee on December 17, 1956 to accept the resignation of T. Townsend Brown and to appoint Nicolas de Rochefort as Executive Vice Chairman.

Shortly thereafter, Mr. de Rochefort called the Executive Committee's attention to the possibility that it lacked the authority to take this action. Re-examination of the wording of the document which created the Executive Committee and upon which

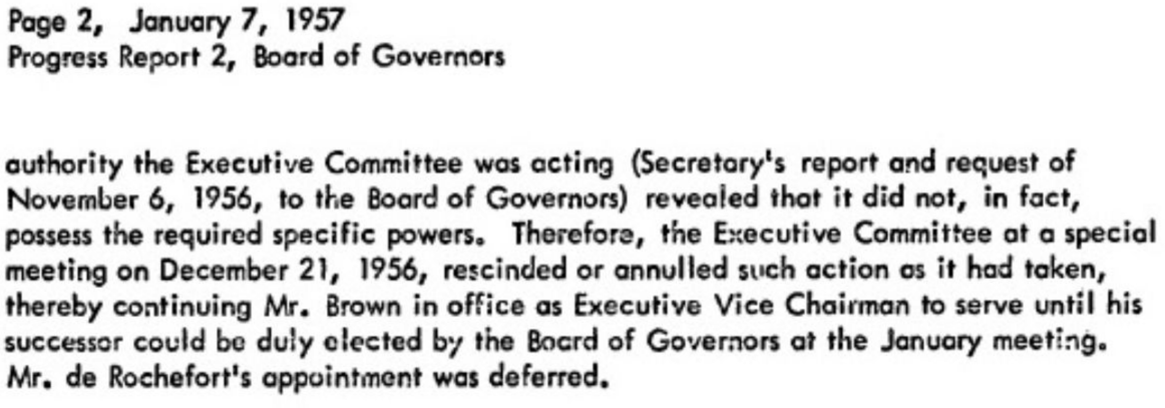

Page 2, January 7, 1957
Progress Report 2, Board of Governors

authority the Executive Committee was acting (Secretary's report and request of November 6, 1956, to the Board of Governors) revealed that it did not, in fact, possess the required specific powers. Therefore, the Executive Committee at a special meeting on December 21, 1956, rescinded or annulled such action as it had taken, thereby continuing Mr. Brown in office as Executive Vice Chairman to serve until his successor could be duly elected by the Board of Governors at the January meeting. Mr. de Rochefort's appointment was deferred.

For whatever reasons, Mr. Campbell quickly resigned as treasurer. After taking over the position from Mr. O'Keefe in November, Campbell tendered a resignation in December. Townsend Brown penned a December 18 letter to

Campbell, regretfully acknowledging Campbell's desire to vacate the position. A December 28 memo from Brown to the Executive Committee indicates Campbell was subsequently asked to withdraw his resignation until his successor could be elected at the January meeting of the Board of Governors.[32] Campbell apparently agreed.

It was following that fateful first annual meeting of the Board of Governors that Brown and NICAP formally parted ways. Brown's letter of resignation is shown on the following page.[33]

Brown's associates, including Rochefort and Carvalho, were gone in short order as well. As suggested previously, many researchers now believe Brown and company were banished due to problems that arose with NICAP financial accounting, and this is certainly supported by the chain of personnel shuffling. Their suspected ties to the CIA may or may not have been an issue in late 1956, but it is certainly implied by various sources. Coincidentally or otherwise, the forming of NICAP and its tumultuous beginning ran concurrently with FBI investigations of Nicholas de Rochefort, which, as we explored, took place from mid-1956 to at least January 1957, and, in all likelihood, until the year he died, 1964.

January 16, 1957

Board of Governors
National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena
1536 Connecticut Avenue North West
Washington 6, District of Columbia

Attention: Major Donald E. Keyhoe

Gentlemen:

In accordance with your request and in a spirit of cooperation with the new policies adopted at the executive session of the Board of Governors meeting of NICAP, held January 15, 1957, I tender my resignation, effective January 15, 1957, as Executive Vice Chairman and as Vice Chairman in Charge of Scientific Affairs.

It is my understanding that it is the Board's desire, for the time being, to streamline the organization by abolishing these offices and to create the office of Director—to be filled at present by Major Donald E. Keyhoe, USMC (Ret.).

I am informed that Major Keyhoe will implement the new policies as set forth by Chairman Fahmey and will take immediate steps to raise the necessary funds. I am also informed that certain economics can be effected without departing from NICAP's basic objectives.

I shall, of course, continue my interest in NICAP, especially in its scientific findings, and I shall be happy to serve whenever needed as Adviser on Scientific Affairs.

Very truly yours,

TTB:RH

T. TOWNSEND BROWN

Maj. Donald Keyhoe would later allude to unfulfilled promises of significant NICAP financial support.[34] In a July 1959 Director's Report to the Board of Governors, Keyhoe wrote that Brown resigned “with NICAP in the doldrums.” Keyhoe indicated NICAP was in debt at the time, but two donations of $5,000 each were promised, as well as an “assurance of $50,000 or more to guarantee operations.”

It is not clear how much debt the organization accrued in its opening months. Factoring inflation, those pledges totaled over half a million dollars. Keyhoe further stated the funding was withheld for reasons he attributed, correctly or otherwise, to “ridicule and pressure.”

There were clearly problems and turmoil in the upstart NICAP financial department. Our story of NICAP early finances demands a deeper look at Counsel Services, Incorporated. Its leadership and the circles it kept raise interesting implications, particularly considering the likelihood Rochefort and Carvalho rode in with them.

CHAPTER 6

OPC & COUNSEL SERVICES

Efforts to learn more about Counsel Services and its President Mary Vaughan King led to the discovery of an assertion Col. Ulius Louis “Pete” Amoss was a client of the corporation. Col. Amoss was a career CIA officer credited with overseeing spy networks and whose lengthy service history included experience in psychological warfare. While I would not rely on any single casual report to conclude Amoss was necessarily a Counsel Services client, extenuating circumstances encouraged me to look further. For instance, Amoss reportedly worked with the CIA division, the Office of Policy Coordination, or OPC. You will recall the OPC was the reported assignment of future NICAP Board of Governors member and psychological warfare expert Col. Joseph Bryan III, according to such sources as E. Howard Hunt.

I located a special collection of correspondence for Col. Amoss kept at the University of Oregon. An administrator helpfully provided pdf copies of select folders of letters I requested. Two of the letters obtained do, in fact, strongly suggest Mary Vaughan King had professional and ongoing relationships with Col. Amoss and his wife, Mary Veronica Grogan. “Ron,” as the latter was known, appears to have exchanged letters from France and Turkey in 1951 with Vaughan King that are contained in the collection of correspondence.

Grogan served in the Armed Forces secret intelligence, as was the case with her husband. Both Grogan and Amoss were employed in the spy trade.

Additional documentation obtained strongly suggests Counsel Services acted as a CIA resource. Such documentation included newspaper clippings and material obtained from the CIA archives.

Further circumstances of interest were found in a 1971 letter from Townsend Brown to the NICAP director at the time, Stuart Nixon.[35] Brown suggested in the letter he had an existing relationship with a public relations firm (I confidently suspect to be Counsel Services) for several years prior to their 1956 collaboration on the incorporation and initial operation of NICAP. He indicated the firm was originally retained years prior due to Brown's antigravity-based Project Winterhaven for which he unsuccessfully attempted to obtain funding from the Department of Defense. We will explore the above and surrounding circumstances further in the following pages.

Let's start with the Office of Policy Coordination. The OPC operated from 1948 until 1952, at which time it was merged with the Office of Special Operations (OSO). The merge created the Directorate of Plans (DDP) and was credited with the solidification of the Clandestine Services of the Central Intelligence Agency.

According to a 1973 CIA Studies in Intelligence report (released in partially redacted form in 2006), the OPC genealogical tree had many branches, but its hardiest limb was the Covert Action Staff of the Clandestine Services. Many of the developments chronicled in OPC may seem to have ceased due to the fixed termination date of the Office. However, the study explains, it should be expected that Clandestine Services maintained continuity where the formal histories of OPC and OSO end. As a matter of fact, the Clandestine Services picked up the pace, the CIA document states.

An intriguing aspect of the OPC was its unique features as a component of the CIA. The Office was described as an anomaly in a 1976 Sen. Frank Church Committee report. This was because the personnel and budget were appropriated within the CIA, but the Director of Central Intelligence (DCI) did not call the shots, at least not for its first couple years. That was done by the Office's director, who was appointed by the Secretary of State. Policy guidance and decisions on the need for specific activities came from the State Department and Department of Defense.

The OPC was headed by Frank Wisner, a Mississippi native from a prominent family. He attended law school in Virginia, practiced in New York, and became an experienced intelligence officer. The growth and reach of the OPC under his command was considered exceptional.

During the inception of the OPC in 1948, then-DCI and future prominent NICAP Board member Adm. Roscoe Hillenkoetter concurred with the position of a State Department representative on matters of OPC direction. The two put forth that political warfare and additional activities conducted by the OPC should be considered tools of U.S. foreign policy and subject to direction by the State Department during peacetime.

The 1973 CIA report states the National Security Council (NSC) created the OPC and “gave it a loose charter to undertake the full range of covert activities incident to the conduct of secret political, psychological, and economic warfare together with preventative direct action (paramilitary activities).” The OPC organizational structure was later echoed in E. Howard

Hunt's book when he stated he served in the Office, and it consisted of three sections: Paramilitary Operations, Political and Psychological Warfare, and Economic Warfare.

The NSC specified the OPC "was to operate as independently of the other offices of CIA as efficiency would permit." That remained the case until late 1950, when Lt. Gen. Walter Bedell Smith replaced Hillenkoetter as DCI. Smith was successful in restructuring the OPC command pipeline to go through his office from the State and Defense Departments. This effectively made him Frank Wisner's boss and at the helm of the OPC.

In 1952, DCI Smith expressed concerns about the objectivity and effectiveness of Air Force UFO investigations. While Smith did not seem to suspect flying saucers were of extraterrestrial origin or even a particularly concerning threat, he wanted to know "what use could be made of the UFO phenomenon in connection with US psychological warfare efforts," according to the CIA.

The Church Committee intelligence report cited above asserts the OPC evolved into a vastly different entity than initially envisioned. The report states the Office achieved an institutional independence that was unimaginable at the time of inception. The numbers alone are staggering.

In 1949 the OPC had a total of 302 personnel. By 1952 it had 2,812 with an additional 3,142 overseas contract personnel. The 1949 OPC budget was $4.7 million. Just three years later, in 1952, it was $82 million. By the time of its merge with the Office of Special Operations, OPC activities included worldwide covert missions conducted out of some 47 overseas stations.

The previously cited 1973 CIA intelligence study and its assertion the Clandestine Services stepped up the pace thereafter could certainly be interpreted as significant, if not outright mind boggling. The study references a CIA-composed history of the OPC made up of five volumes, consisting of 722 pages plus three appendices and eleven attachments (To the best of my knowledge, the five-volume OPC history has not yet been released, although a partially redacted version of its introduction is contained in the referenced 1973 CIA Studies in Intelligence).

The somewhat rogue, snowballing OPC division of intelligence officers seems aptly represented by the likes of Col. Ulius Louis "Pete" Amoss (1895-1961). While the colonel was indeed a career intelligence officer, the description often falls short of expressing deeper context. For instance, Amoss was credited with serving as Director of the Balkan Desk for information, C.O.I. (Coordinator of Information), while in the Armed Forces; Director of the OSS (CIA Office of Strategic Services) Near Eastern Desk, intelligence; Deputy

Directory, OSS, for sabotage, intelligence, psychological and guerrilla warfare; Commanding Officer, Experimental Detachment G-3 UASFIME; and Deputy Chief of Staff, U.S. Ninth Air Force. He even married a fellow spy.

Letters obtained from the University of Oregon collection show Amoss was well connected and entrepreneurial. He often provided his contacts with money-motivated investment tips. Interestingly enough, he invented Grecian Formula, a hair coloring product for men. Perhaps hanging around CIA labs had its fringe benefits.

Amoss outwardly had a wide range of financial interests and his primary career objectives might be considered difficult to discern. Truth be told, perhaps he had a number of agendas at different times and as situations dictated.

Amoss was probably best known among his peers for his outside the box stances on warfare and the CIA. He wrote the original essay on Leaderless Resistance, a strategy that does not rely on vertical, hierarchical command chains, but effectiveness through the shared vision and beliefs of an inspired population. I wouldn't think that went over real well at Langley.

Amoss asserted that leaders are not needed, only leading ideas. He further asserted that underground, chain of command-oriented cells, as typically established by the Agency, were often infiltrated by enemies. He argued, in effect, all the cloak and dagger stuff had only questionable returns and got people killed.

This is not to suggest, however, that Col. Amoss did not partake in theater. He most certainly did. What's more, being the professional intelligence officer he was makes it difficult to identify his intentions with much degree of confidence. Similar could be said about a lot of people in these circles.

After the colonel's purported retirement he resided in Gibson Island, Maryland, and launched the International Services of Information Foundation, or ISI. The ISI distributed a variety of bulletins and letters to supporters. Amoss wrote the publications and his wife served as editor. Annual subscriptions went for 25 bucks apiece and at one point the couple claimed to have a thousand subscribers. That would have been pulling in well over 200 grand a year on that venture alone by today's value.

ISI newsletters contained what was portrayed as breaking international intelligence news. Some of the stories proved credible and others did not. Amoss threw more gas on the CIA fire by frequently suggesting intelligence collection did not have to be as secretive as the establishment made it. He maintained the public is more confident in intelligence services that openly report their activities and knowledge of enemies, at least to a reasonable extent.

Officials scoffed, suggesting the very nature of intelligence work is grounded in secrecy.

ISI newsletters caught the eye of, or at least potentially annoyed, the Agency with implications of having sources in sensitive places. Amoss, for instance, once reported a story he ran was obtained after it was overheard in the halls of the Kremlin. From an ISI newsletter archived at the CIA:

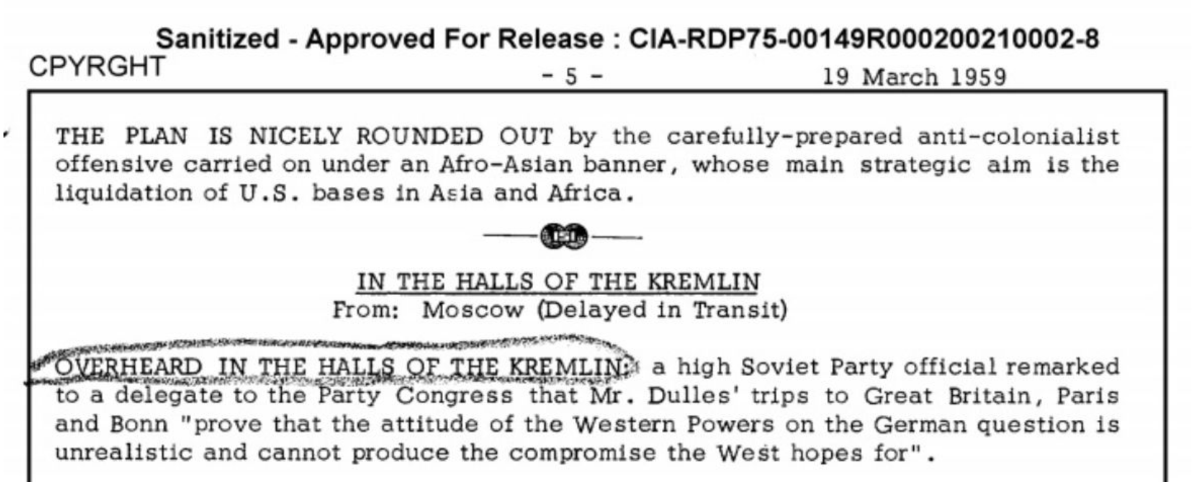

Sanitized - Approved For Release : CIA-RDP75-00149R000200210002-8

CPYRGHT

- 5 -

19 March 1959

THE PLAN IS NICELY ROUNDED OUT by the carefully-prepared anti-colonialist offensive carried on under an Afro-Asian banner, whose main strategic aim is the liquidation of U.S. bases in Asia and Africa.

IN THE HALLS OF THE KREMLIN

From: Moscow (Delayed in Transit)

OVERHEARD IN THE HALLS OF THE KREMLIN: a high Soviet Party official remarked to a delegate to the Party Congress that Mr. Dulles' trips to Great Britain, Paris and Bonn "prove that the attitude of the Western Powers on the German question is unrealistic and cannot produce the compromise the West hopes for".

Further complicating the situation was the fact the CIA knew Amoss was indeed well connected if he wanted to take advantage of his intelligence experience. We can only wonder how much the public rivalry between Amoss and the CIA was performative. Whatever the case, the show apparently sold newsletters and garnered attention. In 1953 the Washington Post carried a lengthy four-part series on what was then known publicly of the career of Col. Amoss and the ISI.

According to the 1953 Washington Post series, which is archived on the CIA website, Amoss received substantial funding from a wealthy philanthropist, Clendenin Ryan, who had an interest in national security issues. He contributed $50,000 to Amoss's cause in one donation alone in 1953. Factoring inflation, that's about $490,000. We can reasonably suspect Mary Vaughan King and Counsel Services aimed to play some part in such DC funding circles.

Another beneficiary of Clendenin Ryan's financial generosity was Desmond FitzGerald, a New York attorney-turned-CIA man, whose story left a fascinating footprint in events surrounding NICAP organizers. Little was known publicly about FitzGerald's role with the Agency until after his untimely death in 1967 at the age of 57. He was stricken with a heart attack while playing tennis at one of his homes in Virginia. He was considered one of the half dozen most influential men in government, in spite of the lack of public information about his specific activities at the time. Upon his death, Agency leaders released statements describing FitzGerald's dedicated service.

"Dez" FitzGerald left a partnership with a New York law firm in 1951 to become a full time CIA officer. He is yet another alumni of the Office of Policy Coordination and had substantial responsibilities in the Agency, rising to the position of Deputy Director of Plans. By 1966 FitzGerald was identified as the man in charge of international espionage operations and succeeded Richard Helms in directing clandestine operations. It should be noted that FitzGerald's leadership role in Plans put him in a position to direct the activities of many of his fellow members of the former Office of Policy Coordination.

Back in 1949, before FitzGerald left the New York law firm, he served as chairman of a reform group which sought unsuccessfully to defeat the incumbent NYC mayor's reelection bid. FitzGerald's group was funded by Clendenin Ryan, who apparently became quite fond of the work of Col. Amoss. Fascinatingly, the title of FitzGerald's New York reform group was The Committee of Five Million.

Four years later in 1953, as previously explored, The Committee of One Million was spearheaded by future NICAP organizer Nicholas de Rochefort. You will recall records reviewed by the FBI, and documented to be on file at the State Department, resulted in FBI reports indicating the psychological warfare expert and then-foreign citizen was employed at the time by the U.S. government. It is curious indeed that shortly after Dez FitzGerald was recruited into the Office of Policy Coordination and as he apparently worked his way up the CIA chain of command, Rochefort was credited with masterminding what became the most prominent group in the wealthy China lobby, which practically shared the same name as FitzGerald's former group.

In light of such circumstances, I think it is reasonable to strongly suspect writer and researcher Stanley Bachrack was correct Mr. Rochefort was affiliated with the CIA. Rochefort was quite likely acting on behalf of the Agency when he proposed forming The Committee of One Million and its activities.

Three years after Rochefort's work in the China lobby, in 1956, he was closely involved in organizing NICAP. He seems to likely have been affiliated with NICAP incorporators Mary Vaughan King, Thomas O'Keefe, and their firm, Counsel Services.

We can discern from documents reviewed thus far that Counsel Services was overtly interested in fundraising and financial management. This is obviously also the case with the CIA circles of Dez FitzGerald and Ulius Amoss.

I obtained two letters from the University of Oregon special collection of Amoss papers. They were written by Mary Veronica “Ron” Grogan, intelligence professional, ISI newsletter editor, and wife of Col. Amoss.[36] The two letters contain greetings to “Mary.” Based on a report that Amoss was a customer of Counsel Services, combined with the fact Vaughan King and Amoss each operated out of the Baltimore area, and factoring the content of the two letters, I strongly suspect they were written from Grogan to Vaughan King.

The letters casually describe general events experienced by Grogan and Amoss over a two-week period during a trip to Paris and Turkey in 1951. The opening line of the first letter from Grogan states, “I thought I would write you a line that has nothing to do with ISI.” Please note, as indicated in the image below of the letter, that a “King” annotation was added to the greeting. Moreover, the folder name containing the letter is “King,” thus my reason for requesting the folder from the University of Oregon in the first place.

I found it intriguing the two letters survived all the miles and years to be archived in the collection. I also found it interesting, whatever it may or may not ultimately indicate, that in 1951 Ron Grogan sat at a typewriter in Paris, apparently explaining to Mary Vaughan King that she would not be discussing ISI. In doing so, she effectively confirmed for me, 70 years later, that ISI may well have been a common topic of their communications and primary aspect of their relationship. It indeed appeared likely ISI was affiliated with Counsel Services, as apparently was the Townsend Brown Family Foundation and later NICAP.

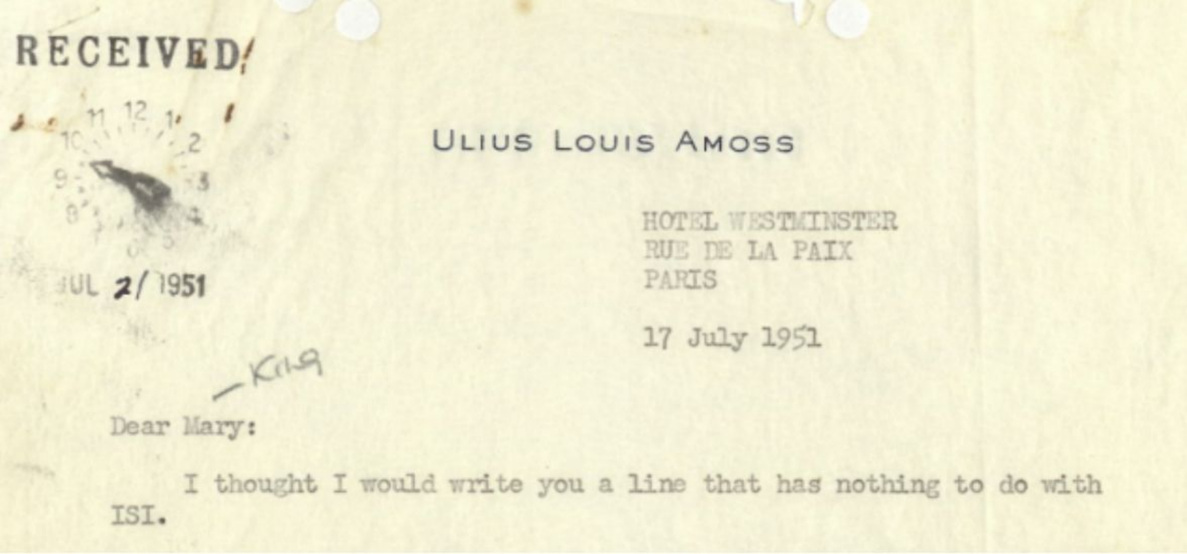

RECEIVED
JUL 21 1951

ULIUS LOUIS AMOSS

HOTEL WESTMINSTER
RUE DE LA PAIX
PARIS

17 July 1951

—King

Dear Mary:

I thought I would write you a line that has nothing to do with ISI.

Further research revealed Counsel Services announced its formation in The (Baltimore) Evening Sun in March 1947. The advertisement highlighted Mary Vaughan King, Leo H. McCormick, and L.G. Shreve. Services were offered from 219 W. Monument St., Saratoga:

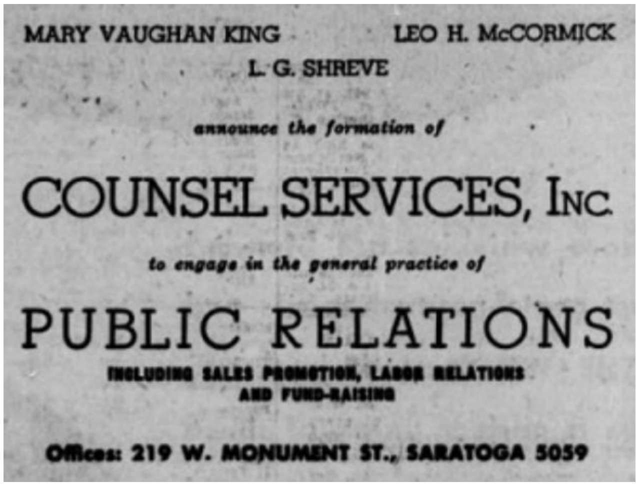

MARY VAUGHAN KING LEO H. McCORMICK

L. G. SHREVE

announce the formation of

COUNSEL SERVICES, INC.

to engage in the general practice of

PUBLIC RELATIONS

INCLUDING SALES PROMOTION, LABOR RELATIONS AND FUND-RAISING

Offices: 219 W. MONUMENT ST., SARATOGA 5059

Documents obtained from the CIA show Amoss and Grogan's International Services of Information Foundation used the same 219 W. Monument Street address, as indicated by a 1953 ISI newsletter depicted in the image below.[37]

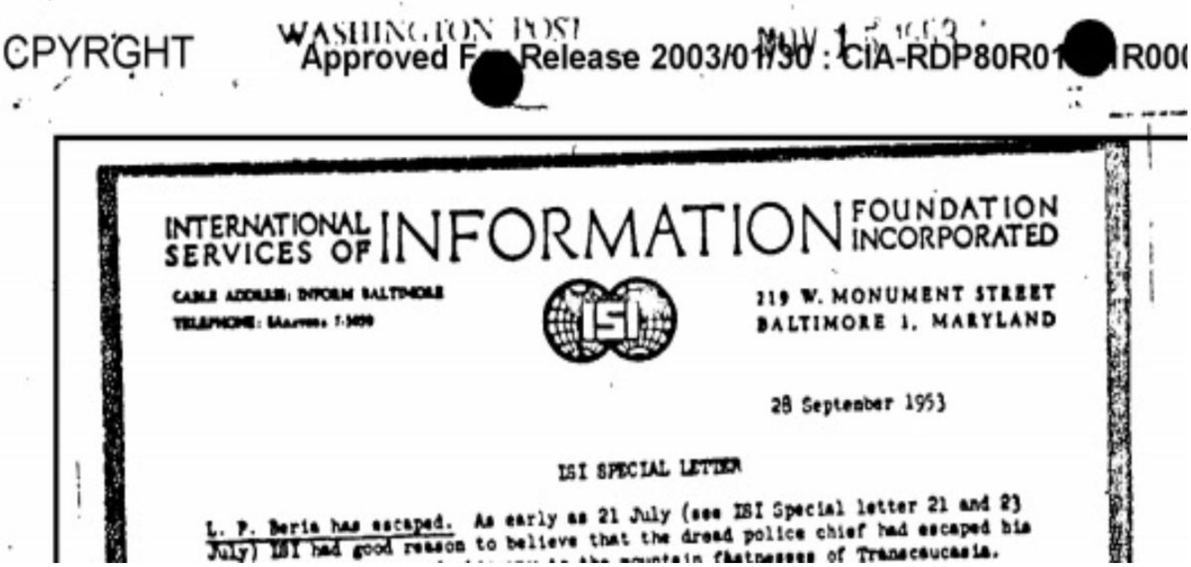

CPYRGHT WASHINGTON POST

Approved F Release 2003/01/30 : CIA-RDP80R01 R00

INTERNATIONAL SERVICES OF INFORMATION FOUNDATION INCORPORATED

CABLE ADDRESS: INFORM BALTIMORE

TELEPHONE: [illegible]

219 W. MONUMENT STREET
BALTIMORE 1, MARYLAND

28 September 1953

ISI SPECIAL LETTER

L. P. Beria has escaped. As early as 21 July (see ISI Special letter 21 and 23 July) ISI had good reason to believe that the dread police chief had escaped his [illegible] to the mountain fastnesses of Transcaucasia.

Leo H. McCormick was credited with founding Counsel Services. He was an extremely politically and civically active insurance executive.

Let's momentarily direct our attention to an office called the Economic Cooperation Administration (ECA). It was a government agency that set up headquarters on Connecticut Avenue in Washington, as would the Townsend Brown Family Foundation and NICAP.

A March 1949 letter shown below from DCI Hillenkoetter to the administrator of the ECA clearly establishes the CIA obtained intelligence from the organization. What's more, Hillenkoetter advised the ECA, “In order that the most complete economic intelligence information may be regularly received by this Agency, it is requested that the Central Intelligence Agency be placed on the routing list for all cables, memoranda and reports of all classifications, including TOP SECRET, which are received in the Economic Cooperation Administration.”

“I wish to take this opportunity to thank you for the cooperation you have given in the past,” Hillenkoetter added.

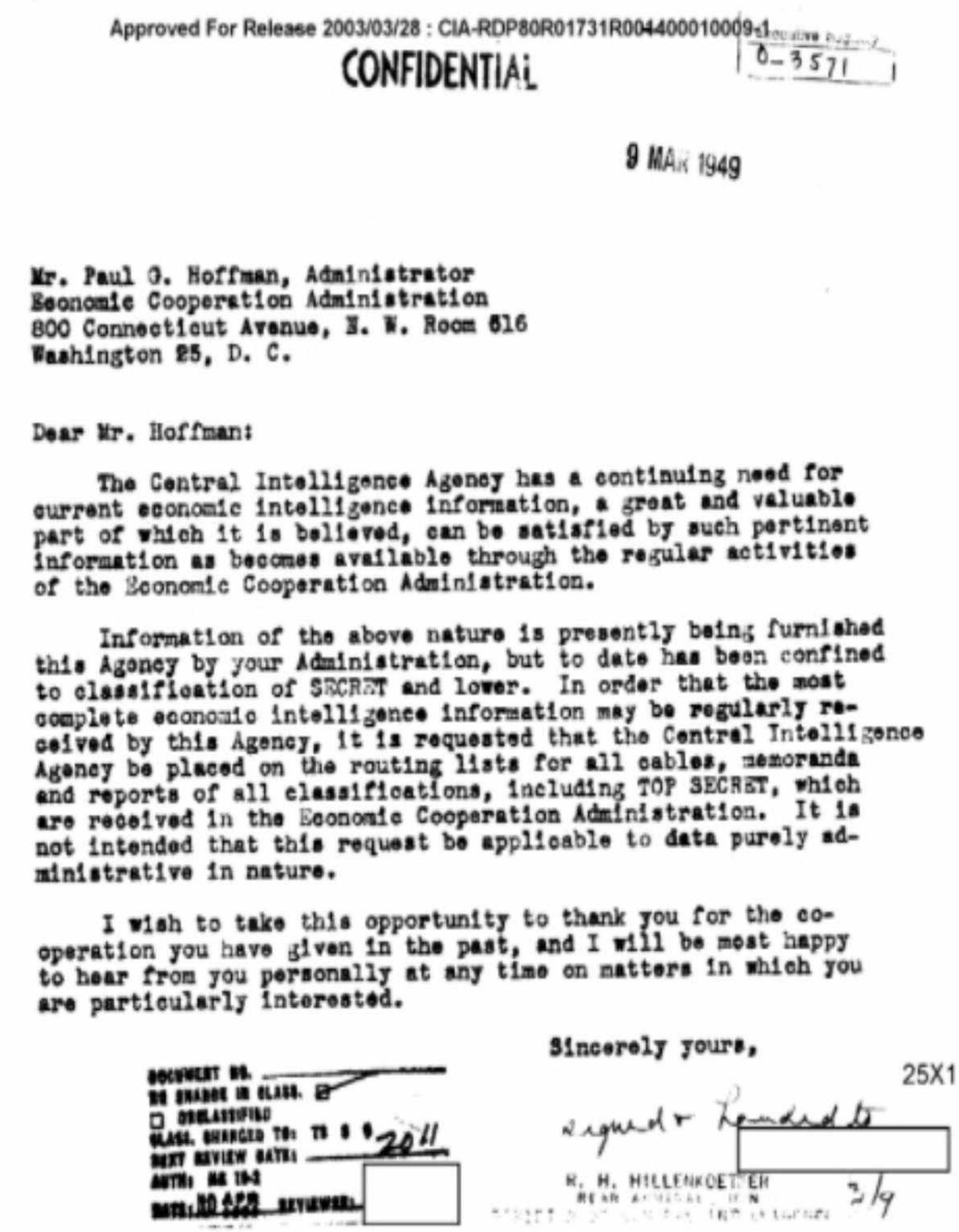

Approved For Release 2003/03/28 : CIA-RDP80R01731R004400010009-1

Executive Registry
0-3571

CONFIDENTIAL

9 MAR 1949

Mr. Paul G. Hoffman, Administrator
Economic Cooperation Administration
800 Connecticut Avenue, N. W. Room 616
Washington 25, D. C.

Dear Mr. Hoffman:

The Central Intelligence Agency has a continuing need for current economic intelligence information, a great and valuable part of which it is believed, can be satisfied by such pertinent information as becomes available through the regular activities of the Economic Cooperation Administration.

Information of the above nature is presently being furnished this Agency by your Administration, but to date has been confined to classification of SECRET and lower. In order that the most complete economic intelligence information may be regularly received by this Agency, it is requested that the Central Intelligence Agency be placed on the routing lists for all cables, memoranda and reports of all classifications, including TOP SECRET, which are received in the Economic Cooperation Administration. It is not intended that this request be applicable to data purely administrative in nature.

I wish to take this opportunity to thank you for the cooperation you have given in the past, and I will be most happy to hear from you personally at any time on matters in which you are particularly interested.

Sincerely yours,

25X1

signed

[redacted]

R. H. HILLENKOETTER
REAR ADMIRAL, USN
DIRECTOR OF CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE

3/9

DOCUMENT NO.
NO CHANGE IN CLASS. ☒
☐ DECLASSIFIED
CLASS. CHANGED TO: TS S C
NEXT REVIEW DATE: 2011
AUTH: HR 70-2
DATE: 10 APR [illegible] REVIEWER: [redacted]

Just two months later, in March 1949, The Evening Sun reported Counsel Services was operating under ECA auspices. This fascinatingly involved a mission to China, which would become Nicholas de Rochefort's area of interest.

“Three members of a Baltimore firm are en route by air to China where they will serve temporarily with the Joint Commission of Rural Reconstruction, under ECA auspices,” the Sun reported.

“They are L.G. Shreve, president of Counsel Services, Inc., and Arthur Goodfriend and Henri M. Pascal. They will be joined later by Dr. Gerald F. Winfield, director of United Services to China.

“According to Mrs. Mary Vaughan King, executive vice president of the firm, the men are on special temporary assignment.”

The article continued, “Shreve initiated the project last December when he was in China with headquarters in Canton. A veteran public relations man, he served with the Army in the China theater during the war as information and education officer.

“Goodfriend, a world traveler and lecturer, of New York, and Pascal, of Los Angeles, who has traveled extensively in China,” the Sun concluded, “are affiliated with Counsel Services especially for this assignment.”

A July 1950 article, *Baltimore Firm Assists ECA*, further established collaborations between the future NICAP incorporators and the CIA asset. “Specialists of Counsel Services are now under contract to the Economic Cooperation Administration in connection with work in Europe after having worked on the ECA's audio-visual education operations in China,” the Sun reported.

In 1956, Mary Vaughan King acted as an incorporator for NICAP. She presented the organization with an extensive and costly marketing strategy. Given the currently available information, I propose it is a distinct possibility, if not likelihood, that whether or not the CIA effectively destroyed NICAP as later alleged, its assets in 1956 were directly involved in launching the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena.

Let's fast forward to September 1971. Stuart Nixon is now the Executive Director of NICAP. He wrote Townsend Brown and asked him to submit an article about the beginning of NICAP. He framed the request in the context of preparing a 15-year anniversary edition of the NICAP newsletter. Nixon urged Brown to be as detailed as possible about how the organization was founded and his role in those events.[38] Brown did not respond.

Nixon wrote him again over a month later and repeated his desire to learn about NICAP beginnings. In this letter Nixon numbered and posed eight specific questions. “How did it all begin?”, “Who had the original idea?”, “Who were some of the people involved?”, “Were there any interesting experiences during the first few months of operation?”, and similar inquiries.

This time Brown responded with a three-page letter. He claimed in an October 1971 response that he had not yet replied because he had been out of town. He suggested it was upon returning home he found the two letters from Nixon.

"Let me say at the outset," Brown wrote, "that my files and records for those early years are in storage and not now available to me, so that I cannot give you detailed information as to names and dates. I simply do not remember some of the names of the persons involved."

Brown went on to explain Clara John's saucer club helped with early interest, and stated he personally chose the name of NICAP. He claimed he asked Maj. Keyhoe to take his place running NICAP after continued operations seemed assured, a description of events that are doubtful and unsupported by the material we have reviewed. Brown's version of his apparent requested departure may not be particularly surprising, however, given its unflattering nature to him.

It should be reiterated at this point that Brown worked for a few years prior to NICAP on his Project Winterhaven, starting as early as 1951. The ambitious - arguably wildly so - undertaking of anti-gravity experiments was described in a proposal he hoped to get funded by the Department of Defense. The large scale project suggested the use of multiple collaborators. As mentioned earlier, ongoing experiments involved small flying saucer-like discs.

For several years prior to NICAP's incorporation, Brown wrote further to Nixon, the Townsend Brown Foundation maintained an office on Connecticut Avenue and was engaged in preparing and submitting Project Winterhaven to the Defense Department. The program was intended to be secured under a secret classification but was never approved by the Department.

"Several radio stations gave [NICAP] some initial publicity, principally a station in Baltimore," Brown went on to explain.

"The Townsend Brown Foundation had retained a public relations firm from Baltimore in connection with Project Winterhaven and that firm, it seems, was well known to the Baltimore broadcasters and this accounted for carrying this news item on the Baltimore station.

"The Foundation also retained an attorney (whose name I do not remember) in the same building where our offices were located, to file the incorporation papers for NICAP. The three incorporators were: 1) the attorney 2) the woman in charge of the Baltimore public relations firm (whose name I do not remember) and 3) myself."

This clearly suggests Townsend Brown had an ongoing relationship with Counsel Services prior to the forming of NICAP. He indicated the firm was hired by the Brown Foundation to work on Winterhaven.

We might wonder about the status of the arrangement at the point Counsel Services assisted with NICAP formation and presented the upstart organization with a substantial service contract. A number of questions arise, such as why Brown ever "retained" Counsel Services "in connection with Project Winterhaven." Whatever the answers to the implied questions might prove to be, the circumstances are surely entangled with the rumors of misappropriation of funds.

Brown's statement his foundation retained an attorney to file incorporation papers for NICAP is further evidence of blurred boundaries between projects and expense reports. An attorney on Connecticut Avenue appears to have indeed assisted with some various filing for NICAP, as indicated in the image below. The attorney does not, however, appear as an incorporator on the documents we reviewed and contradicts Brown's representation of the situation to Stuart Nixon.[39]

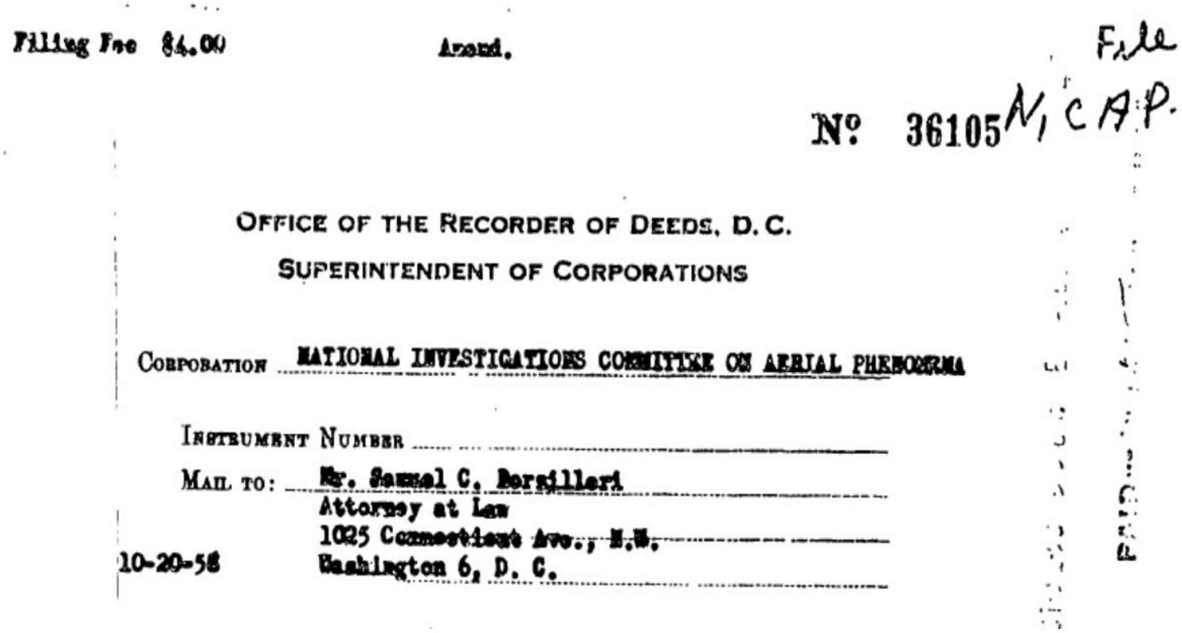

Filing Fee $4.00 Amend. File

No 36105 N.I.C.A.P.

OFFICE OF THE RECORDER OF DEEDS, D. C.

SUPERINTENDENT OF CORPORATIONS

CORPORATION NATIONAL INVESTIGATIONS COMMITTEE ON AERIAL PHENOMENA

INSTRUMENT NUMBER

MAIL TO: Mr. Samuel C. Borzilleri
Attorney at Law
1025 Connecticut Ave., N.W.
Washington 6, D. C.

10-20-58

It certainly appears Brown's fellow incorporators were, in fact, Thomas O'Keefe and Mary Vaughan King, each described as officers of Counsel Services in the 1956 proposed contract we reviewed. Brown rather notably omitted mention by name of O'Keefe, Vaughan King, and Counsel Services in his letter to Nixon. He failed, mistakenly or otherwise, to so much as describe the existence of Mr. O'Keefe.

The employment resume of Mr. O'Keefe interestingly indicates he worked abroad for the Commerce Department during the formative years of the Office of Policy Coordination, circa 1948. The employment history gives no indication O'Keefe was an attorney, as we might suspect from Brown's description of the incorporators.[40]

A search of documents published at the CIA online reading room, using the term, “1025 Connecticut”, reveals a reference to the office of attorney Samuel C. Borzilleri. I strongly suspect this is the person referenced in the previously explored November 6 NICAP meeting notes, in which it was suggested to check with him about a code of regulations. An image located that was archived on the CIA website:

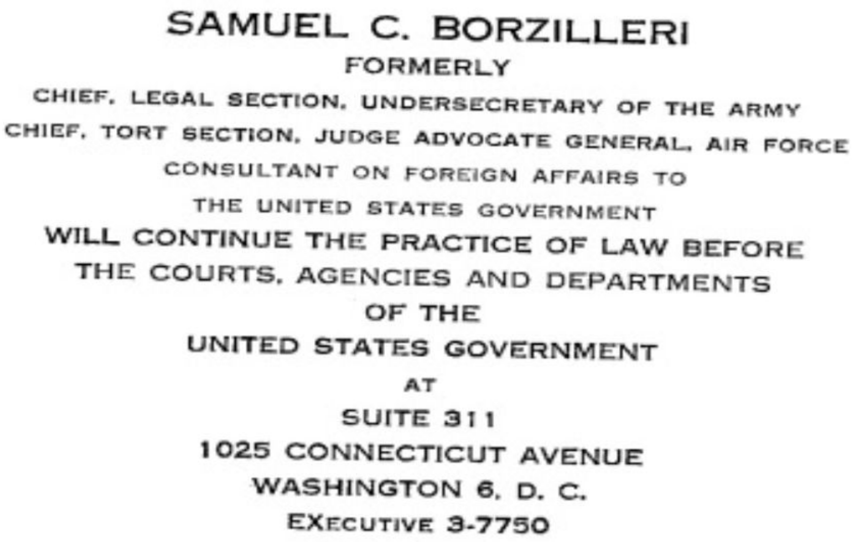

SAMUEL C. BORZILLERI
FORMERLY
CHIEF, LEGAL SECTION, UNDERSECRETARY OF THE ARMY
CHIEF, TORT SECTION, JUDGE ADVOCATE GENERAL, AIR FORCE
CONSULTANT ON FOREIGN AFFAIRS TO
THE UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT
WILL CONTINUE THE PRACTICE OF LAW BEFORE
THE COURTS, AGENCIES AND DEPARTMENTS
OF THE
UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT
AT
SUITE 311
1025 CONNECTICUT AVENUE
WASHINGTON 6, D. C.
EXECUTIVE 3-7750

CIA document search results included a September 1955 letter from Attorney Borzilleri to the CIA Office of the General Counsel. The attorney advised the CIA of his legal interpretations on matters pertaining to rights and royalties of the published book, *The Red Interpreter*. His specific relationship with the Agency is not clear.

Townsend Brown's representation of events to Nixon were problematic. His 1971 narrative to Nixon has obvious discrepancies. For whatever reasons, he failed to identify almost anyone involved, while describing some of their roles incorrectly. The nature of Brown's description of his existing relationship with Counsel Services at the time he and the firm collaborated to incorporate NICAP could be considered intriguing, given what we can gather of extenuating circumstances.

Col. Amoss has at least one more interesting indirect link to our unfolding story. In 1952, the same year the CIA asserts DCI Smith expressed concerns about Air Force abilities to effectively investigate UFOs and took an interest in the use of flying saucers in the psychological warfare effort, Amoss gave a heads up to the USAF about a UFO report. It turned out to be a wild goose chase, has some intriguing side plots, and wound up in Project Blue Book. The image below is from page one of an eleven-page OSI file.

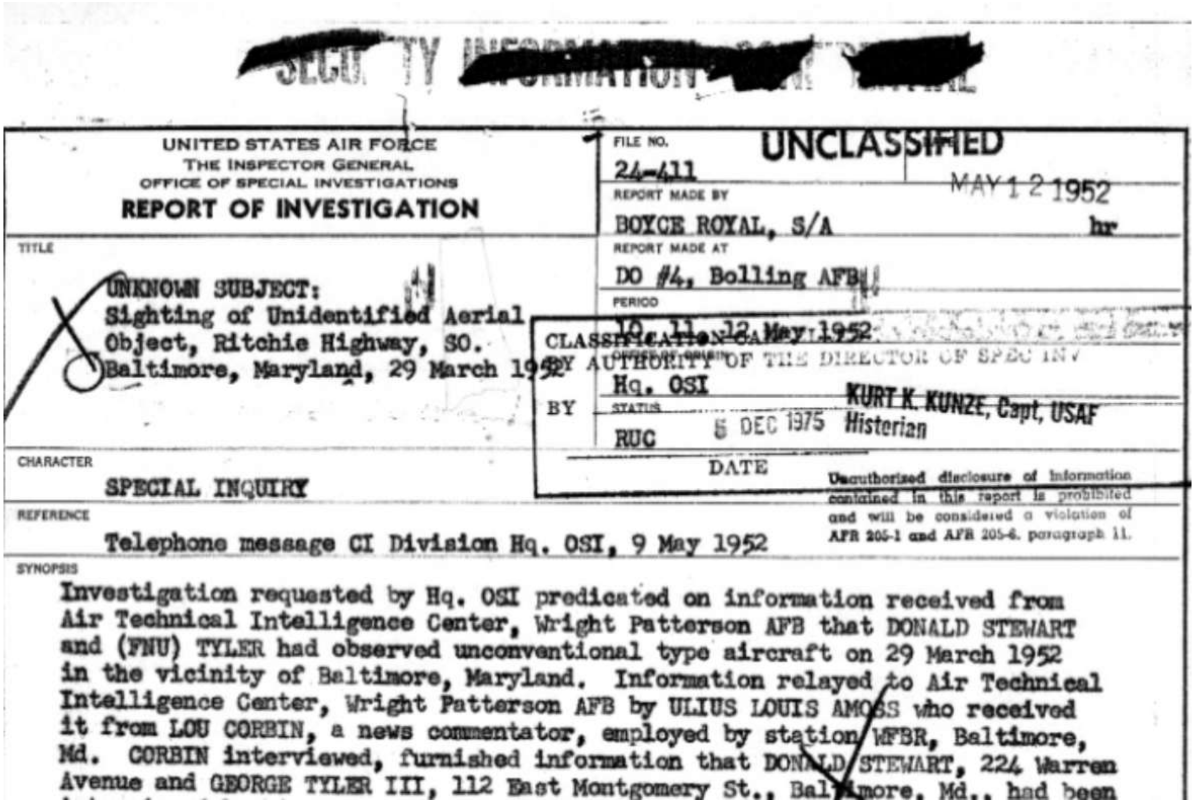

[redacted]

UNITED STATES AIR FORCE
THE INSPECTOR GENERAL
OFFICE OF SPECIAL INVESTIGATIONS
REPORT OF INVESTIGATION

FILE NO. 24-411

UNCLASSIFIED

MAY 12 1952

REPORT MADE BY: BOYCE ROYAL, S/A hr

REPORT MADE AT: DO #4, Bolling AFB

PERIOD: 10, 11, 12 May 1952

OFFICE OF ORIGIN: Hq. OSI

STATUS: RUC

TITLE: UNKNOWN SUBJECT: Sighting of Unidentified Aerial Object, Ritchie Highway, SO. Baltimore, Maryland, 29 March 1952

CLASSIFICATION CANCELLED
BY AUTHORITY OF THE DIRECTOR OF SPEC INV
BY KURT K. KUNZE, Capt, USAF
Historian
DATE 5 DEC 1975

CHARACTER: SPECIAL INQUIRY

REFERENCE: Telephone message CI Division Hq. OSI, 9 May 1952

Unauthorized disclosure of information contained in this report is prohibited and will be considered a violation of AFR 205-1 and AFR 205-6, paragraph 11.

SYNOPSIS

Investigation requested by Hq. OSI predicated on information received from Air Technical Intelligence Center, Wright Patterson AFB that DONALD STEWART and (FNU) TYLER had observed unconventional type aircraft on 29 March 1952 in the vicinity of Baltimore, Maryland. Information relayed to Air Technical Intelligence Center, Wright Patterson AFB by ULIUS LOUIS AMOSS who received it from LOU CORBIN, a news commentator, employed by station WFBR, Baltimore, Md. CORBIN interviewed, furnished information that DONALD STEWART, 224 Warren Avenue and GEORGE TYLER III, 112 East Montgomery St., Baltimore, Md., had been

The image indicates Col. Amoss alerted the Air Technical Intelligence Center at Wright Patterson AFB he got wind of a UFO sighting. The subsequent report documents Amoss claimed to investigate the sighting, at least to some extent. Wright Patterson passed the info to the Air Force Office of Special Investigations and the chase was on.

The report states Amoss claimed to have obtained the UFO story from a news commentator at a Baltimore radio station. The circumstances could easily be interpreted to overlap with Townsend Brown's later description to Stuart Nixon of the public relations firm he retained, almost certainly Counsel Services, being “well known” to broadcasters at a Baltimore radio station.

OSI interviewed the radio commentator, Louis E. Corbin, who claimed he heard the UFO story from a reporter he knew but did not name. Corbin told OSI he intended for some time to do a UFO documentary, so he was interested in the report. Corbin further claimed he had not released any of the information publicly and would not do so until authorities completed their investigation. He advised OSI, however, he was acquainted with the editor of a civilian intelligence bulletin, Amoss, and what would be his International Services of Information Foundation, and had informed Amoss of the story.

Fascinatingly, the OSI Special Agent subsequently documented Amoss described Corbin as a reserve CIC officer (The Army Counter Intelligence Corps was a Cold War era intelligence agency made up of highly trained officers and later absorbed into the Army Intelligence Corps in 1961). When apparently asked about it, Corbin denied to OSI he was a CIC officer. He did state, however, he was a former intelligence officer under Gen. George Patton and that he held an inactive reserve commission as a lieutenant colonel.

Another intriguing discrepancy was Amoss claimed Corbin advised him of a specific father and son pair of witnesses, George and John Mason, that Amoss said he was unable to locate. Amoss added their address of Yacht Club Road, Riviera Beach, Maryland, did not check out either. Corbin, when directly asked about the father and son by OSI, claimed he was not familiar with the names. It was never conclusively resolved how the names even got in the story.

Neither was it entirely clear why Amoss ever took up the investigation at all, much less alerted the Air Force to the third hand tale. Perhaps he was interested in reporting it in his ISI publication. Maybe he was concerned about adversarial intelligence operations, or perhaps he was acting in an official capacity for unknown reasons. Curiously, the chain of events preceded the dramatic and much discussed July 1952 Washington, D.C., UFO reports by just a few weeks.

The work of James Carrion seems to deserve mention in this context. In his books *Anachronism* and *The Roswell Deception*, Carrion argues mid 20th century UFO tales may have been employed as tools to help break codes used by adversaries. He focuses on the 1946-1947 timeframe.

The basic premise involves how an American intelligence agency might manufacture a UFO story through the use of resources such as its officers and media contacts. In the ensuing days, intercepted messages would necessarily contain details of the report, such as location, names of witnesses, and date, particularly if the report carried implications to national security. Such might of course be the case, for instance, with alleged wreckage found in Roswell and announced through an official statement released by military officers. The near certainty such a story would be included in coded messages sent by adversaries would increase the opportunities of deciphering the codes, given the keywords involved.

Given such strategies, it might be considered intriguing the names and address of the apparently nonexistent father and son somehow found their ways into the 1952 Amoss-Corbin UFO story that came to be archived in Blue Book. While I am admittedly speculating, it is not difficult to envision such a code-breaking scenario, or an occurrence in which the names were inserted in the story to see if and where they surfaced, serving as a tool to identify leaks and potential spies. An analogy might be considered tossing a dye pack in a sinkhole and seeing where the dye turns up.

In the event you're wondering, the gist of the Amoss-Corbin UFO story was two Baltimore area young men claimed to see a disc-like flying object. An OSI Special Agent located the two, and during the course of his investigation became increasingly skeptical for several well-defined reasons. Upon follow-up OSI questioning, one of the purported witnesses admitted he had seen no such craft. He said he was persuaded by the other witness to make the fraudulent claim. He added he agreed because he at first believed the claim of his acquaintance, that the man had seen a UFO earlier that day. He said the acquaintance requested he fabricate his part of the story out of fear otherwise no one would believe the sighting happened. Eventually, the confessor came to doubt the acquaintance's tale. The acquaintance nonetheless stuck to his story that they both observed a flying saucer.

I recommend giving the OSI report a read, as it systematically documents statements of witnesses and people of interest, offering an anatomy of a UFO investigation and unraveling story. It is interesting from several perspectives, the presence of Col. Amoss most certainly being among them. As previously stated, it is difficult at times to feel much confidence in discerning the intentions of professional intelligence personnel. I suspect the assigned OSI Special Agent could relate.

We may have been left a clue about intelligence officers and such UFO reports within a 1954 CIA cable, a transcript of which is on file at the Office of the Historian. The message documents CIA assets in Guatemala were instructed to consider fabricating a flying saucer story to serve as a public distraction.

“If possible,” the transcript reads, “fabricate big human interest story, like flying saucers, birth sextuplets in remote area to take play away.”

The distraction was intended to divert mounting public awareness of Agency responsibility for a successfully executed coup. The CIA did, in fact, sponsor the uprising and of course preferred the Guatemalan news cycle to focus on something other than its manipulation of the country's political affairs.

The covertly backed CIA coup brought an end to the Guatemalan Revolution, 1944-1954. A key CIA asset and aspect of the overthrow was the United Fruit Company, headquartered in New Orleans. In 1950 the United Fruit

Company had a reported profit of $65 million, a sum two times greater than the annual revenue of the entire Guatemalan government.

We find potentially interesting correlations in the employment resume of Thomas O'Keefe, a NICAP incorporator, its first treasurer, and an apparent Counsel Services senior officer.[41] It states he previously worked as Assistant to Executive Vice Chairman in the Office of the Secretary of Defense. His employment prior to incorporating NICAP and spending a month as its treasurer included serving as a Consultant on Trade and Finance with the State Department, a career path strikingly, and coincidentally or otherwise, similar to that of Nicholas de Rochefort.

The resume states that 1948-1951 O'Keefe was Special Assistant to the Secretary of Commerce, which included, “Assisting other American Republics in their economic, industrial and agricultural development.” Guatemala is among countries listed as a “previous assignment” where he “spent considerable time.”

O'Keefe also listed his relatively latest previous positions as a member of the Selection Board for Foreign Service Officers with the Department of State, an assignment we can reasonably assume would necessarily place him in the company of spies and intelligence operatives. I frankly found it semi-amusing that O'Keefe, a man formerly employed on a board at least ostensibly tasked with selecting State Department personnel for foreign assignments, was the inaugural NICAP treasurer and designated in the Counsel Services contract as empowered to hire consultants to work as NICAP regional managers. I strongly suspect Nicholas de Rochefort, and likely Bernard Carvalho, were appointed to NICAP positions in such manners.

A search of government records suggests O'Keefe was indeed employed at the State Department, as indicated on his resume. In 1947 he was a Deputy Director in Washington.

When declassified, the 1954 CIA cable inspired a 2003 New York Times piece. The article bore the curious title, *Word for Word/Coup Control; The C.I.A.'s Cover Has Been Blown? Just Make Up Something About U.F.O.'s*.

The story about the CIA cable is fairly well known among those of us interested in, as Mark Pilkington and company put it, the “Mirage Men” aspect of ufology. Less discussed in UFO circles, however, are the people credited with the 1954 operation and their indirect connections to the genre.

The National Archives reports notable individuals involved in the coup operation, titled PBSUCCESS, included former DCI Walter Bedell Smith and E. Howard Hunt. The State Department website has a 1952-1954 list of foreign relations personnel pertaining to Guatemala. Making the list are Smith, Hunt, and Frank Wisner, who you will recall ran the Office of Policy Coordination. By this time he was the Deputy Director of Plans. The State Department list additionally includes pseudonyms used by each of the three. E. Howard Hunt, aka Walter C. Twicker, is listed as a CIA case officer and Chief of the Propaganda Branch. There are also pseudonyms listed whose corresponding identities have not yet been publicly disclosed.

It doesn't seem like much of a stretch to me to suppose the Chief of the Propaganda Branch would be in the loop on a cable consisting of suggestions to assets as to how to manipulate public attention by way of a fantastic story about flying saucers or sextuplets. It doesn't seem like much of a stretch it could have been his idea either. Those possibilities are all the more interesting when we consider his apparent history in the OPC.

Hunt worked for the CIA from approximately 1949 to 1970, or at least that's what the record shows and is the consensus among historians. He would later explain in his book, *American Spy: My Secret History in the CIA, Watergate and Beyond*, that before PBSUCCESS in Guatemala he was assigned to the OPC. It was there that he worked on the Political and Psychological Warfare staff for Joseph Bryan III, who became an ongoing staple of the NICAP Board of Governors.

From Hunt's book:

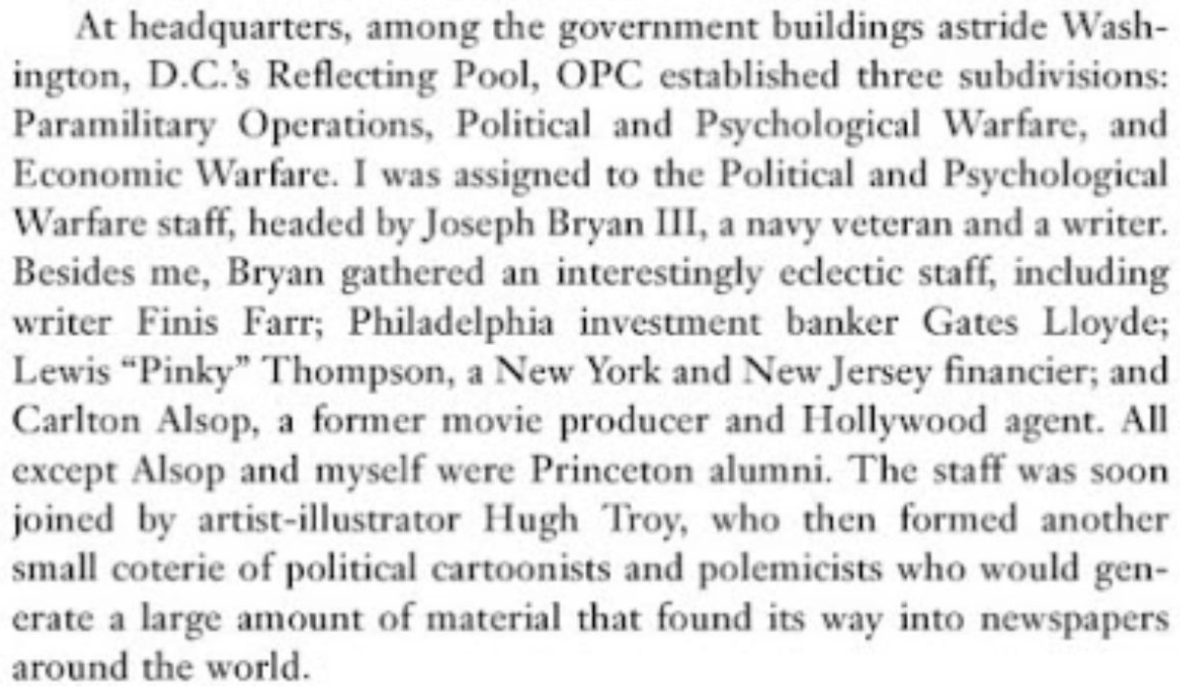

At headquarters, among the government buildings astride Washington, D.C.'s Reflecting Pool, OPC established three subdivisions: Paramilitary Operations, Political and Psychological Warfare, and Economic Warfare. I was assigned to the Political and Psychological Warfare staff, headed by Joseph Bryan III, a navy veteran and a writer. Besides me, Bryan gathered an interestingly eclectic staff, including writer Finis Farr; Philadelphia investment banker Gates Lloyde; Lewis "Pinky" Thompson, a New York and New Jersey financier; and Carlton Alsop, a former movie producer and Hollywood agent. All except Alsop and myself were Princeton alumni. The staff was soon joined by artist-illustrator Hugh Troy, who then formed another small coterie of political cartoonists and polemicists who would generate a large amount of material that found its way into newspapers around the world.

I am suggesting it is entirely possible CIA officers masterminded the incorporation of NICAP, or at least took significant interest in the developing situation. Perhaps Townsend Brown was utilized. Nicholas de Rochefort almost certainly was. The game plan for the organization may have been designed in a similar manner as was the case when Rochefort acted as lead man for The Committee of One Million. I interpret that if Counsel Services was a CIA resource, then it becomes all the more likely the Agency was involved in the development of NICAP, for what might be any number of reasons. I suspect none of those reasons had anything to do with extraterrestrial visitors.

It seems rather significant NICAP was incorporated by T. Townsend Brown, a man long in search of DOD funding who had peculiar ties to both the UFO and intelligence communities; Mary Vaughan King, who ran a public relations and fundraising service with apparent relationships with Amoss, Rochefort, and Carvalho; and Thomas O'Keefe, who was seemingly an officer of Vaughan King's company and a former State Department man that listed the selection of personnel for foreign assignments among his previous responsibilities. I doubt this crew's interest in saucer hunting.

You will recall Thomas O'Keefe held the position as NICAP treasurer only briefly. His successor, Duncan Cameron Campbell, described himself as a longtime employee of the Federal Housing Administration in Washington, D.C.[42]

Mr. Campbell quickly served notice to resign his turn at the position in December 1956, making two treasurers in about as many months. He apparently formally vacated the position by January of 1957. Shortly thereafter he married NICAP Office Manager Rose Hackett in February.

He seems to have tragically died in June that same year at his home in Bethesda, Maryland. The manner of death was similar to how Morris Jessup would die in 1959 in Miami: asphyxiation in a car.

Years later in 1971, then-director Stuart Nixon apparently inquired to Dr. Garrett C. Rush about early NICAP happenings. Nixon's inquiry seems to have happened in the same general timeframe as when he was asking Townsend Brown about NICAP origins.

Perhaps Nixon was painstakingly preparing an anniversary edition of the newsletter as he wrote to Brown. Perhaps he personally wanted to know more about what had been going on in the organization he was now directing. Maybe he had some pretty good ideas what had been going on and at least wanted to know what people would say when he asked them. Maybe a bit of all of that.

The letter from Dr. Rush to Nixon:[43]

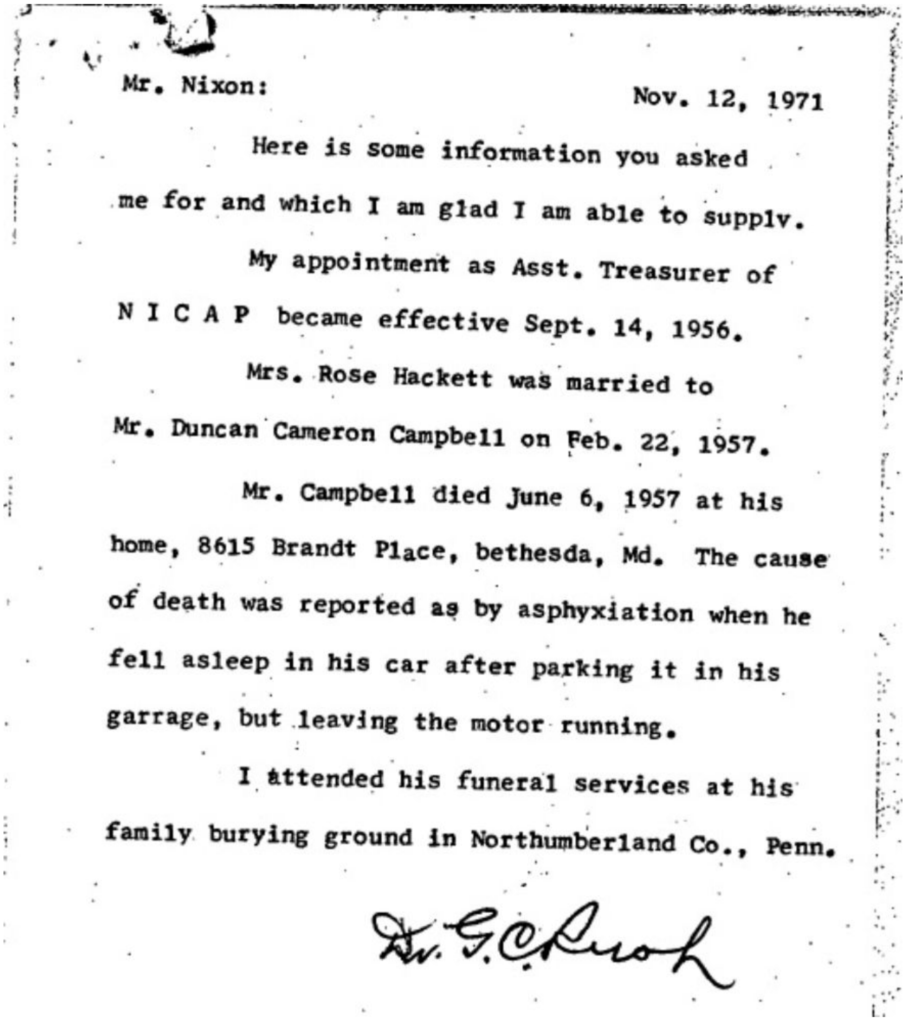

Mr. Nixon: Nov. 12, 1971

Here is some information you asked me for and which I am glad I am able to supplv.

My appointment as Asst. Treasurer of NICAP became effective Sept. 14, 1956.

Mrs. Rose Hackett was married to Mr. Duncan Cameron Campbell on Feb. 22, 1957.

Mr. Campbell died June 6, 1957 at his home, 8615 Brandt Place, bethesda, Md. The cause of death was reported as by asphyxiation when he fell asleep in his car after parking it in his garrage, but leaving the motor running.

I attended his funeral services at his family burying ground in Northumberland Co., Penn.

Dr. G.C.

Mrs. Rose Hackett Campbell would stay on with NICAP after the death of her husband and work with Maj. Keyhoe and Richard Hall. According to Hall, she was dismissed in late 1958 or early 1959, a circumstance he attributed to her devotion to the contactee movement. Keyhoe and Hall viewed themselves much more as intellectuals and men of science, perspectives they hoped the public would adopt about NICAP.

Before we continue our unfolding story, there are two more suicides to note. Wealthy philanthropist Clendenin Ryan, credited with using his fortune to fund turbulent political crusades, shot himself on September 12, 1957. The Baltimore millionaire and angel donor of Col. Amoss, Dez FitzGerald, and the CIA was 52 years old.

The same fate befell the former head of the Office of Policy Coordination, Frank Wisner. The man who recruited key personnel and ran the whole damn outfit would go on to shoot himself in the head with a shotgun at his Maryland farm in 1965. The New York Times reported Wisner had been ill for some time and shot himself in an upstairs room of his home about an hour after arriving there from Washington. His wife was downstairs when she heard the fatal shot. Frank Wisner was 56 years old when he died.

Chapter 7

CI, Not ET

The 1954 CIA cable alluding to the use of the topic of flying saucers as an intelligence tool for deception in Guatemala opens a big can of worms. Entire books have been written on such matters, competently documenting decades of intelligence community interest in alleged contactees, UFO writers, and others who wade into saucer waters. A close and sober review suggests official interest is typically much more about ulterior motives and counterintelligence than extraterrestrials. Let's take a look at just a few of the many instances with potential correlations to the NICAP timeline.

As one tale goes, a flying saucer allegedly crashed in 1952 on the Norwegian island of Spitsbergen and was obtained by the U.S. government. The story bounced around for decades. The saucer, if it ever even existed, was suggested at different times to originate from Russia or outer space, among other possibilities. The case was also said to be both a meaningless hoax and matter of extreme importance, depending on who you asked and when you asked them.

In 1968 a Russian science editor wrote an article critical of sensational UFO tales. He devoted a paragraph to the Spitsbergen case. Shortly after publication, a copy of the article was sent by airgram from the American ambassador in Moscow to the State Department. Quite interestingly, the airgram, now archived by the National Security Agency, carries the annotation "plant" beside the circled paragraph pertaining to the alleged Spitsbergen crash:

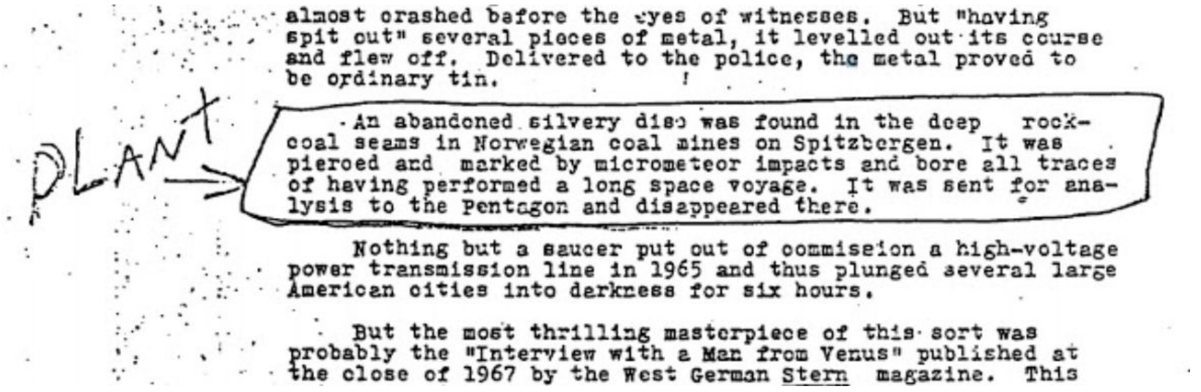

almost crashed before the eyes of witnesses. But "having spit out" several pieces of metal, it levelled out its course and flew off. Delivered to the police, the metal proved to be ordinary tin.

PLANT

An abandoned silvery disc was found in the deep rock-coal seams in Norwegian coal mines on Spitzbergen. It was pierced and marked by micrometeor impacts and bore all traces of having performed a long space voyage. It was sent for analysis to the Pentagon and disappeared there.

Nothing but a saucer put out of commission a high-voltage power transmission line in 1965 and thus plunged several large American cities into darkness for six hours.

But the most thrilling masterpiece of this sort was probably the "Interview with a Man from Venus" published at the close of 1967 by the West German Stern magazine. This

About the time DCI Smith was inquiring how the UFO phenomenon could be used to improve psychological warfare efforts (1952), a CIA-sponsored scientific advisory panel secretly recommended UFO organizations "should be watched" (1953). The Robertson Panel, as it became known, informed the Agency:

"The Panel took cognizance of the existence of such groups as the 'Civilian Flying Saucer Investigators' (Los Angeles) and the 'Aerial Phenomena Research Organization [*sic*] (Wisconsin). It was believed that such organizations should be watched because of their potentially great influence on mass thinking if widespread sightings should occur. The apparent irresponsibility and the possible use of such groups for subversive purposes should be kept in mind."

In 1957, a member of the Aerial Phenomena Research Organization (APRO) was indeed reportedly visited by intelligence personnel. The officers expressed a most curious stance on flying saucers and even seemed to circle back to the Spitsbergen case, as explored in *Mirage Men* by Mark Pilkington.

Dr. Olavo Fontes of Brazil took an interest in UFO investigation and joined APRO. He read a September 1957 newspaper column describing material allegedly retrieved from a UFO. Strikingly similar to the dubious 1947 Maury Island case in the United States, a witness in Brazil claimed to have seen a "flying disc" while fishing and to have retrieved associated metallic material from the water.

Fontes apparently found the circumstances of interest and arranged to have the material tested at Brazil's National Department of Mineral Production. Samples of the debris were also sent to the USAF through the American embassy.

Nothing significant came of the tests. The samples reportedly proved to be mostly magnesium, but the case brought Dr. Fontes significant public attention (Lucky him, right?).

In early 1958, Fontes met Antonio Villas Boas, a Brazilian farmer with a dramatic story of otherworldly beings who flew into his crop field about three months earlier. The Villas Boas case is a whole 'nother head scratcher with far reaching implications.

At any rate, shortly after making the acquaintance of Villas Boas, and maybe even because of it, Dr. Fontes was visited by two intelligence officers from the Brazilian Naval Ministry. They claimed to want to discuss the purported saucer debris.

The officers proceeded to warn Fontes to stay out of matters that did not concern him. They reportedly went as far as to assert that global governments were aware of the extraterrestrial presence, and, what's more, wanted to keep it quiet. Some of the most sensitive information, they added, could not even be shared with the Brazilian president. How trusting of them to confide in Fontes!

Retrieval of crashed saucers was reportedly discussed, including the mention of one from Scandinavia. Pilkington considered the likelihood the reference pertained to the Spitsbergen disinformation story. Pilkington also contemplated the possibility the intelligence officers intended for Fontes to share their statements with his APRO associates and perpetuate the tales. I agree those issues are among the intriguing aspects of the Dr. Olavo Fontes saga, as is the fact it took place during the formative years of NICAP.

The Robertson Panel carries ties to our trail of NICAP and the CIA. The Agency-sponsored Panel met approximately January 14-18, 1953, and was briefed on UFOs. It was made up of five scientists, including chairman and physicist Dr. Howard P. Robertson.

The group collectively concluded the evidence examined showed no indication UFOs were a direct threat to national security.[44] The Panel advised, however, that reporting UFOs and wildly speculating about them was problematic. The threat arose in the form of “clogging of channels of communication by irrelevant reports,” the related false alarms, and the resulting natural tendency to lower defenses. The Panel further warned of a “cultivation of a morbid national psychology in which skillful hostile propaganda could induce hysterical behavior and harmful distrust of duly constituted authority.”

The Panel was not wrong, yet it bears emphasizing the Agency did not overlook the opportunity for the offensive use of saucer-related skillful hostile propaganda itself, as already noted. Neither does it escape this writer's appreciation for irony that the CIA's Col. Amoss was among those clogging communication channels with irrelevant reports.

Those interviewed by the Robertson Panel included Capt. Edward J. Ruppelt, inaugural director of Project Blue Book, a 1952-1970 Air Force official UFO study, at least outwardly. Ruppelt published a book in 1956 that first alerted UFO investigators to the existence of the Robertson Panel. The CIA concealed its sponsorship, eventually preparing a “sanitized” version of the resulting report which was subsequently released through the Air Force. All mention of the CIA and psychological warfare potential of the UFO topic was deleted for the published report, as the Agency now acknowledges was the case.

The Robertson Panel had two associate members in attendance in addition to its five primary members. The two were Dr. J. Allen Hynek along with rocket and guided missile expert Frederick C. Durant III. The latter worked in the CIA Office of Scientific Intelligence and is credited with preparing and composing the findings of the Panel, thus the resulting document is sometimes referred to as the Durant Report.

Durant apparently developed an association with Maj. Dewey J. Fournet, who was interviewed by the Panel. Maj. Fournet was a veteran of Air Force UFO study projects, including Blue Book and Grudge, and a future long term member of the NICAP Board of Governors.

Capt. Ruppelt wrote of Project Blue Book and Maj. Fournet, “I was beginning to spend as much time telling people what was going on as I was doing anything about it. The answer was to get somebody in the Directorate of Intelligence in the Pentagon to act as a liaison officer. I could keep this person informed and he could handle the 'branch office' in Washington. Colonel Dunn bought this idea, and Major Dewey J. Fournet got the additional duty of the Pentagon branch. In the future all inquiries went to Major Fournet, and if he couldn't answer them he would call me. The arrangement was excellent because Major Fournet took a very serious interest in UFOs and could always be counted on to do a good job.”

Fournet spent 15 months as a Project Officer and liaison for Blue Book. The major told the Robertson Panel he eliminated known and probable explanations for a number of specified UFO reports. The Panel acknowledged that his background as an aeronautical engineer and technical intelligence officer “could not be slighted,” but it ultimately did not accept cases he cited because “they were raw, unevaluated reports.”

By 1960 Fournet was a member of the NICAP Board and served well into the 1970's, however cosmetic the position may have become by then. In a 1976 letter to future blogger Robert E. Barrow, Fournet wrote, “[T]here has never been any censoring [of UFO data], per se,” but added, “On the other hand, I'm positive that the public was frequently fed misleading statistics and examples of reports that were atypical, intended only to make the subject appear to be entirely asinine.”

Some might consider the statements to be indicative of an orchestrated UFO cover-up. Others might say it reflects findings of the Robertson Panel that the most serious national security threats posed by UFOs were related to propaganda and hysteria, thus reports of flying saucers were minimized by the

CIA. Yet others might point out intelligence personnel, including Agency officers at times, took conflicting positions on the topic over the years, both downplaying and promoting its significance as apparently advantageous. The motives could be many, and necessarily change from one specific instance to the next.

The January 1978 edition of the *Just Cause* newsletter leveled an accusation suggesting the CIA Office of Scientific Intelligence's Fred Durant developed relationships with both Maj. Fournet and Capt. Ruppelt in order to gain access to Air Force UFO information. “Durant, posing as a civilian, befriended Major Dewey Fournet and Captain Ed Ruppelt in order for the CIA to gain access to the Air Force's UFO data as early as April 1952,” the newsletter asserted.[45] The story originated from “reliable sources,” it was reported. However correct the accusation may have been, I strongly suspect the primary interests of Durant and his employer were not related to either extraterrestrial or paranormal subject matter.

The FBI informed me in a 2020 FOIA response it was unable to identify records on Frederick Durant III. However, the Bureau advised a file transferred to the National Archives and Records Administration was potentially responsive. A subsequent FOIA request was submitted to NARA.

In March 2021 I received an interim response from NARA, stating the file was located and an initial assessment revealed Frederick Durant III to be the subject. NARA informed me the file contains an estimated 50 pages, expected to take 39 months to process at a total cost of $40 for a reproduction. The price reflects the current rate of 80 cents per page for a pdf. It should be noted files may be viewed at no cost by visiting the NARA facility in College Park, Maryland, once processing is complete, which, in this case, looks to be in 2024.

Interestingly, NARA stated the FBI file in question was created between July 1952 and December 1953. As is the case with FBI investigations of others in our story, such as Nicholas de Rochefort, this suggests the Bureau was looking at the activities of Mr. Durant during the same time as is of interest to us. Specifically, the Robertson Panel met in January 1953, and the FBI file was apparently created during the surrounding months. Once again, the date the records were compiled looks to be right on target.

There are a number of reasons potentially responsible for our recurring FOIA timeline of good fortune. For instance, the FBI may have been called upon for security investigations on certain individuals. That certainly does not make the circumstances any less potentially intriguing. I also find it interesting that FBI files tend to provide glimpses of long ago investigations into many varieties of people and their activities. While we might tend to think we should look to the CIA to study a CIA project, it becomes increasingly apparent there is a likely chance J. Edgar Hoover had files on the project personnel and related activities as well. Such records stand to offer alternative perspectives than we might expect to find, for instance, by reading approved CIA material.

History clearly shows us there were rivalries and power struggles between agencies. Hoover would not have accepted without question the motives and intentions portrayed to him by CIA officers. Neither would he have fully trusted their competence in screening personnel and protecting classified information, even if their stated objectives were expressed relatively authentically. Given what CIA officers were doing during this specific point in time, the early 1950's, Hoover's potential doubts would have arguably been well justified. The existence of FBI investigations and resulting files seems to often validate our interests in the circumstances.

A FOIA request submitted to the FBI on Dewey Joseph Fournet, Jr. was immediately closed. The Bureau stated it could neither confirm nor deny the existence of such records, a response known as a “Glomar.”

I soon appealed the ruling, stating the response was not consistent with others. I pointed out the Bureau was typically forthcoming about FOIA requests on deceased people. As a matter of fact, I appealed a very similar Glomar response on the same grounds, resulting in a favorable ruling. While the similar situation did not bear any records, at least they agreed to conduct the search.

In the Fournet instance, however, the appeal was denied. The Glomar stood.

I tried submitting a new request on Fournet with revised information, although the first request was pretty much my standard submission. It was once again Glomar-ed.

Maj. Fournet is the only individual out of many for which I requested FBI files during the course of researching NICAP that, for whatever reasons, resulted in a Glomar final response. I submitted yet a third request on Fournet, once again revising it a bit, and this time received a response stating the Bureau was unable to locate any records. I decided to consider that progress and call it quits, at least for the time being.

The thing is, we could go to the FBI Vault (online reading room) as of this writing, conduct a search using the term “Fournet,” and locate his name in an already public file on NICAP. I'm therefore not sure what the FOIA responses are all about. I have some ideas, but won't speculate. The bottom line is no further FBI records are currently forthcoming on Maj. Fournet.

The Glomar FOIA response, “neither confirm nor deny,” arose out of a Cold War deception operation conducted through a collaboration with the high profile billionaire Howard Hughes. The intriguing story might be considered to carry implications to events surrounding the wealthy and controversial philanthropist Robert Bigelow, who has a more recent history of involvement in questionable projects with intelligence agency funding and personnel.

In 1968 a Soviet submarine armed with nuclear missiles sank in the Pacific Ocean. After two months the Soviets called off their search, conceding the ocean was simply too large to find the vessel, combined with the fact it was probably resting more than three miles underwater.

The sub represented quite an intelligence target to American officers. A plan was subsequently formulated to locate and ultimately retrieve it, and thus was born Project Azorian.

Howard Hughes was enlisted to aid with a cover story to deceive the Soviets. He announced he was launching a venture to build a customized ship to mine valuable material from the ocean floor. In reality, the vessel would have a submersible vehicle with a claw designed to pull the sub to the surface. The operation took hundreds of millions of dollars and six years to execute, but the Hughes Glomar Explorer remarkably retrieved about 40 feet of the 300-foot Soviet submarine. It took about two months from the time the Glomar set sail.

By 1975 the operation began showing up in media reports. *Rolling Stone* magazine filed a FOIA request to which the CIA responded it could neither confirm nor deny the existence of any such records. From there, using the term to avoid addressing material which, if existent, would be properly classified and exempt from FOIA disclosure, became known as a Glomar response.

During the same time the CIA was manipulating political matters in Guatemala, it also took an active interest in Tibet. Writer Amish Raj Mulmi noted the presence of references to political unrest in the region while exploring CIA declassified documents on UFOs and the Yeti (Yes, Bigfoot). Mulmi documented in a 2019 article for the Kathmandu Post how Cold War era documents relevant to the area included UFO sightings as well as an alleged crashed saucer.

There was also a 1959 memo from the American embassy in Kathmandu to the State Department in Washington, advising about regulations on mountain climbing expeditions conducted in Nepal and related to the Yeti. The memo explained, among other stipulations, payment to Nepal was required for Yeti hunts and permission from the Nepalese government was necessary prior to publishing any news about the existence of the creature.

This may very well be related to the 1950's CIA effort to assist Tibetan rebels in resisting Chinese occupation. CIA support was given in the form of arms, training, propaganda and other resources.

In 1955 a leading CIA operative reportedly posed as a "tourist" in order to confer with Tibetans at a Himalayan village. The American outlined a program to overthrow the Chinese in Tibet, and such infiltration of the borders became common. The operation did not match the results obtained by PBSUCCESS in Guatemala and was eventually referred to by one CIA account as "a military disaster." An American ambassador to India, briefed on the failed effort in Tibet, called it a "particularly insane enterprise."

The era also included what the CIA would later claim was responsible for an increase in UFO sightings, its U-2 spy plane. The Agency rather sensationally suggested in 2014 the plane accounted for some 50 percent of UFO reports occurring during the 1950's and 1960's.

However inaccurate the claim may be, the U-2 saga carries intriguing implications for some of our NICAP characters. The inaugural pilots in the mid-1950's for the secret program are among the earliest documented instances of "sheep-dipping," an intelligence community term referring to staging a person's military retirement. In reality, the person becomes a covert operative. The process typically involves doctoring the official personnel records of a career military service member. Efforts to solidify perceptions of a new yet fictitious lifestyle for the undercover operative may cleverly include their misleading letter-writing to family and friends about their supposed new plans. As one writer jokingly portrayed the contents of such letters, "And that's why I decided to leave the Army and pursue my new life of definitely not being in the CIA."

If all this weren't confusing enough, while the U-2 program was taking flight, rather remarkable strides were made in an operation known as Project PALLADIUM. Its implications to reported UFOs are astounding.

CIA man Gene Poteat penned a now-declassified article published in Agency literature describing some 15 years of mid 20th century information warfare and the development of electronic countermeasures. Initial efforts to confuse enemy radar and conceal flight paths of aircraft evolved into increasingly sophisticated weapons of deception and intelligence gathering. By the 1960's, Poteat asserted, a scheme was developed that could electronically generate and inject carefully calibrated false targets into Soviet radar, deceiving them into picking up and tracking ghost aircraft. An aircraft could be simulated of any size, at any speed and altitude, flying on any path.

Each PALLADIUM operation involved a CIA team with its ghost aircraft system, an NSA team with special communications intelligence and decryption equipment, and a military operational support team. “Covert PALLADIUM operations were carried out against a variety of Soviet radars around the world,” Poteat explained.

The CIA officer described one such operation off the coast of Cuba. The PALLADIUM teams were positioned in an attempt to collect intelligence on the sensitivity of Soviet radar. A false U.S. fighter plane was made to appear to be flying from Key West towards Cuba. Fascinatingly, a Navy submarine was coordinated to surface just long enough to release a timed series of “balloon-borne metalized spheres of different sizes.” The spheres were released into the path of the oncoming ghost aircraft.

The idea was for the false fighter plane to initially alert the Soviet radar, then the PALLADIUM team would monitor communications and responses to assess which balloons the radar was tracking or missing. They got the information they went after, Poteat wrote, as well as some excitement and entertainment.

Cuban fighter planes began circling where the submarine surfaced and released the balloons, and another gave chase to the ghost aircraft. “We had no trouble in manipulating the PALLADIUM system controls to keep our ghost aircraft always just ahead of the pursuing Cuban planes,” Poteat explained. “When the Cuban pilot radioed back to his controllers that he had the intruding aircraft in sight and was about to make a firing pass to shoot it down, we all had the same idea at the same instant. The technician moved his finger to the switch, I nodded yes, and he switched off the PALLADIUM system.”

I have FOIA requests submitted to multiple agencies, citing Poteat's report and pertaining to Project PALLADIUM. They are pending as of this writing.

It might seem rather stunning in hindsight that UFO researchers who focus on the mid 20th century don't typically make more of the impressive operation. We might also question how intelligence officers who subscribed to UFO beliefs could perpetually be so oblivious to reasons such information might remain classified that of course had nothing to do with saucer cover-ups. Before we are too quick to judge, it should be noted electronic warfare continued to evolve. It indeed carries strong implications to today's UFO genre, as reported at The War Zone. In spite of that being the case, it is rarely included in the collective conversation.

During email exchanges, Jan Aldrich pointed out the potential significance to the NICAP saga of a document known as JANAP 146. That was the Joint Army-Navy-Air Force Publication 146. It referred to a Joint Chiefs of Staff directive, Communications Instructions for Reporting Vital Intelligence Sightings (CIRVIS). The 1953 directive outlined procedures for reporting and sharing information about what personnel were witnessing. As the name implies, it was classified, and it most certainly included reporting unidentified flying objects.

As pretty much anyone even remotely knowledgeable about military procedures should tell you, the armed forces have long been extremely interested in air space and its monitoring. It's a primary responsibility. A lot of the confusion comes with framing what differences there may be between a UFO and your run of the mill bogey.

Aldrich suggested Maj. Fournet and Adm. Hillenkoetter were in positions to be aware of CIRVIS, yet bound by security oaths not to disclose it to Maj. Keyhoe and company. That would of course also include any insights they may have had about the circumstances. Potential problems obviously arise when collaborators in a research group, such as NICAP, possess varying levels of awareness of situations, yet have their hands tied about sharing it. We need look no farther than the JANAP 146 and U-2 program for specific examples.

Even without such examples, security concerns should nonetheless be apparent surrounding officers mingling with investigators who are inquisitive about their professional activities. It is my understanding this is typically heavily frowned upon if the officers are not actually working in some type of official capacity, such as counterintelligence.

Moreover, Keyhoe and others argued men such as Hillenkoetter and Fournet were in positions that their interest in UFOs further validated the topic in itself. However, by that very argument, if such men ultimately knew no more about the alleged saucers than the rest of us, the value of their supposedly informed opinions was debatable.

Any way that we may keep coming at it, a primary story line – perhaps *the* primary story line - is the security issues at stake. Not due to saucers, but the people and officers who carry on about saucers. It seems inevitable that agents and informants would be enlisted to infiltrate such groups and report on what was taking place among the members. Key personnel issued security clearances would be targeted by bad actors for information extraction. False information would be injected into the social circles for a variety of purposes. Deception operations and psychological warfare would inevitably ensue. Were the public and its belief systems simply considered collateral damage?

Even the infamous CIA Project MKULTRA left footprints in UFO history, or vice versa, depending on how we want to look at it. Initial Director of Central Intelligence Adm. Roscoe H. Hillenkoetter (May 1947-October 1950) was followed by Gen. Walter Bedell Smith (October 1950-February 1953). The next DCI was Allen W. Dulles, who held the position the longest of all CIA directors, from February 1953 to November 1961. It was Dulles who formally authorized MKULTRA on April 13, 1953, following several years of questionable and unethical Agency research and development. The large-scale behavior modification endeavor and related programs continued into the 1970's.

The late writer and researcher Hank P. Albarelli, Jr. explored such circumstances in his 2009 book *A Terrible Mistake: The Murder of Frank Olson and the CIA's Secret Cold War Experiments*. Albarelli explained his interactions with MKULTRA project director Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, a chemist and former chief of Technical Services Staff. In 1997 Gottlieb reportedly told Albarelli UFOs were out of his reach of knowledge, adding that he found the subject fascinating.

“That something is there, and that people see something, is unquestioned,” Gottlieb continued. “I think, for me, it's best to leave it like that.”

“Did the CIA leave it like that?” Albarelli asked.

“I assume not, no,” Gottlieb replied.

Albarelli wrote that in 1956 and again in 1957 Gottlieb asked professional magician John Mulholland to examine and render an opinion on UFO reports. Mulholland, a consultant for the Agency, had in 1953 composed a 71-page CIA manual titled *Some Operational Applications of the Art of Deception*. He is also credited with writing the Agency manual, *Recognition Signals*.

Gottlieb reportedly enlisted Mulholland to discreetly investigate the now famous 1955 Kelly-Hopkinsville case which occurred at the Sutton home in Kentucky. There are no known documents pertaining to Mulholland's research or findings. DCI Richard Helms ordered the destruction of MKLUTRA files in 1973, greatly hampering investigation of the program and its some 149 subprojects.

Gottlieb told Albarelli he could not recall anything about the Hopkinsville investigation. He is known among researchers for his selectively poor memory. Gottlieb repeatedly stated during Congressional hearings he was unable to remember details and often even basic aspects of MKULTRA subprojects, including personnel and what they were supposed to be doing.

Albarelli further reported that Mulholland visited Levelland, Texas, in the weeks following widely publicized UFO sightings of November 2-3, 1957. The Levelland case is a staple among UFO enthusiasts who typically consider it rather compelling, at least of something. Writer and researcher Kevin Randle blogged in 2020 about coming across a November 6, 1957, newspaper clipping suggesting the reported UFOs “were American inventions.”

The article contains the account of an Arthur P. Ticknor, a chemical engineer who said he and companions happened upon a secret airfield in 1953 in New Mexico. Their adventure reportedly involved armed security personnel and witnessing the flight of what he seemed to think were extraordinary aircraft. It is from there Ticknor deduced flying objects reported in Levelland in 1957 were American inventions. My initial reaction was to search for Mr. Ticknor's name in locations such as the previously mentioned list of pseudonyms used by State Department employees, but I haven't turned up anything yet.

Albarelli's *A Terrible Mistake* explores events surrounding the November 1953 death of CIA biochemist Frank Olson. The author makes the case it was a murder, perpetrated for reasons related to Olson's involvement in covert and unethical weapons testing. The author explained that during the decade he spent researching the circumstances prior to the book's 2009 release, he was contacted on multiple occasions by people asserting Olson was killed to keep his knowledge of UFOs and aliens concealed.

"One person, who seemed quite knowledgeable about Camp Detrick," Albarelli wrote, "claimed that 'definitive evidence proving alien contact with Earth' had been removed from UFO crash or landing sites by the government. This evidence was allegedly transported for study to Camp Detrick and other military installations. That several of the key CIA and Army participants in Olson's death were involved in the government's UFO research in the 1950's is certainly interesting."

Had he not become convinced Olson's death involved other reasons, Albarelli continued, "some of these theories may have been much more provocative." I interpret Albarelli to have suggested some of the UFO-related stories may have been put in his path to deter his direction of research. As may have been the case with Dr. Olavo Fontes, and many more both before and since, perhaps tales of crashed saucers and alien artifacts were used in an effort to influence, or exploit, Hank Albarelli.

CHAPTER 8

MIXED MESSAGES

When Maj. Donald Keyhoe took the NICAP reigns in January 1957, he wasted no time promoting the statements of distinguished board members and adding qualified voices to NICAP panels. While the organization was often plagued with financial shortcomings and deserves some criticism in certain areas, the experience and prestige of high profile supporters was a prominent characteristic that should not be overlooked. NICAP assembled an impressive group of flag wavers, even in comparison to future UFO groups. Some of the motives might be questioned at times, but NICAP was irrefutably well connected. A description of the Board of Governors during the Keyhoe years, per Richard Hall, is pictured below.

Keyhoe and his NICAP colleagues consistently landed high profile supporters and coverage from leading newscasts, magazines, and newspapers. Lengthy lists of advisors were compiled in addition to the names populating the Board of Governors. Career intelligence personnel joined the ranks, and many well known personalities promoted NICAP. A host of military officials, along with renowned psychiatrist Carl Jung and Sen. Barry Goldwater, were among those lending their names to the organization's flyers and brochures.[46]

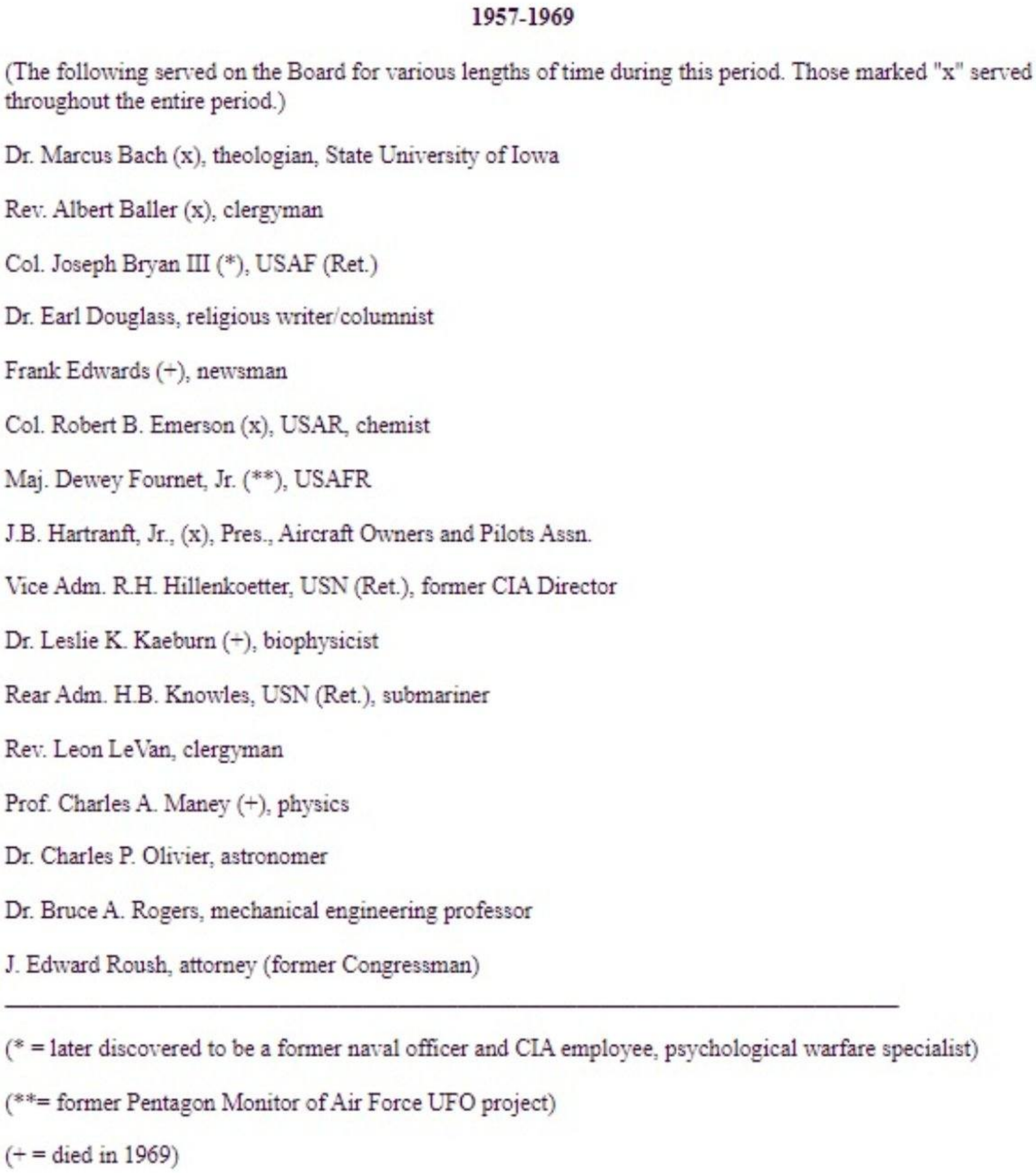

1957-1969

(The following served on the Board for various lengths of time during this period. Those marked "x" served throughout the entire period.)

Dr. Marcus Bach (x), theologian, State University of Iowa

Rev. Albert Baller (x), clergyman

Col. Joseph Bryan III (*), USAF (Ret.)

Dr. Earl Douglass, religious writer/columnist

Frank Edwards (+), newsman

Col. Robert B. Emerson (x), USAR, chemist

Maj. Dewey Fournet, Jr. (**), USAFR

J.B. Hartranft, Jr., (x), Pres., Aircraft Owners and Pilots Assn.

Vice Adm. R.H. Hillenkoetter, USN (Ret.), former CIA Director

Dr. Leslie K. Kaeburn (+), biophysicist

Rear Adm. H.B. Knowles, USN (Ret.), submariner

Rev. Leon LeVan, clergyman

Prof. Charles A. Maney (+), physics

Dr. Charles P. Olivier, astronomer

Dr. Bruce A. Rogers, mechanical engineering professor

J. Edward Roush, attorney (former Congressman)

(* = later discovered to be a former naval officer and CIA employee, psychological warfare specialist)

(**= former Pentagon Monitor of Air Force UFO project)

(+ = died in 1969)

“Flying saucers – unidentified flying objects – or whatever you call them, are real,” Goldwater was quoted by NICAP.

Likewise, Dr. Jung was described In NICAP literature as writing a letter to Maj. Keyhoe containing the remarks, “I am a NICAP subscriber. I am grateful for all the courageous things you have done in elucidating the thorny problems of UFO reality. I do not possess sufficient evidence which would enable me to draw definite conclusions. The evidence available, however, is convincing enough to arouse a continuous and fervent interest. If it is true the AAF (American Air Force) withholds telltaling facts then one can only say this is the most unpsychological and stupid policy one could invent... The public ought to be told the truth."

Rear Adm. Delmer Fahrney was a 30-year Navy veteran and graduate of the Naval Academy. As was the case with Hillenkoetter, he was a classmate of Keyhoe's at Annapolis, as Richard Hall wrote. Fahrney earned a Bachelor of Science from the Naval Academy and a Master of Science from MIT. The admiral was an aeronautical engineer and an expert in radio controlled aircraft, earning him the title "the father of guided missiles." He also served as the first NICAP Chairman of the Board of Governors.

Fahrney's UFO-related statements as distributed in NICAP literature are shown in the image below.[47] Some readers might note the similarities between the admiral's remarks and those of future high profile figures in the UFO genre, most certainly including more current day trendsetters. The "it's not one of ours" theme seems to particularly get a lot of mileage, in spite of what educated science advocates and intelligence officials should know about differentiating between what people saw and what people say they saw.

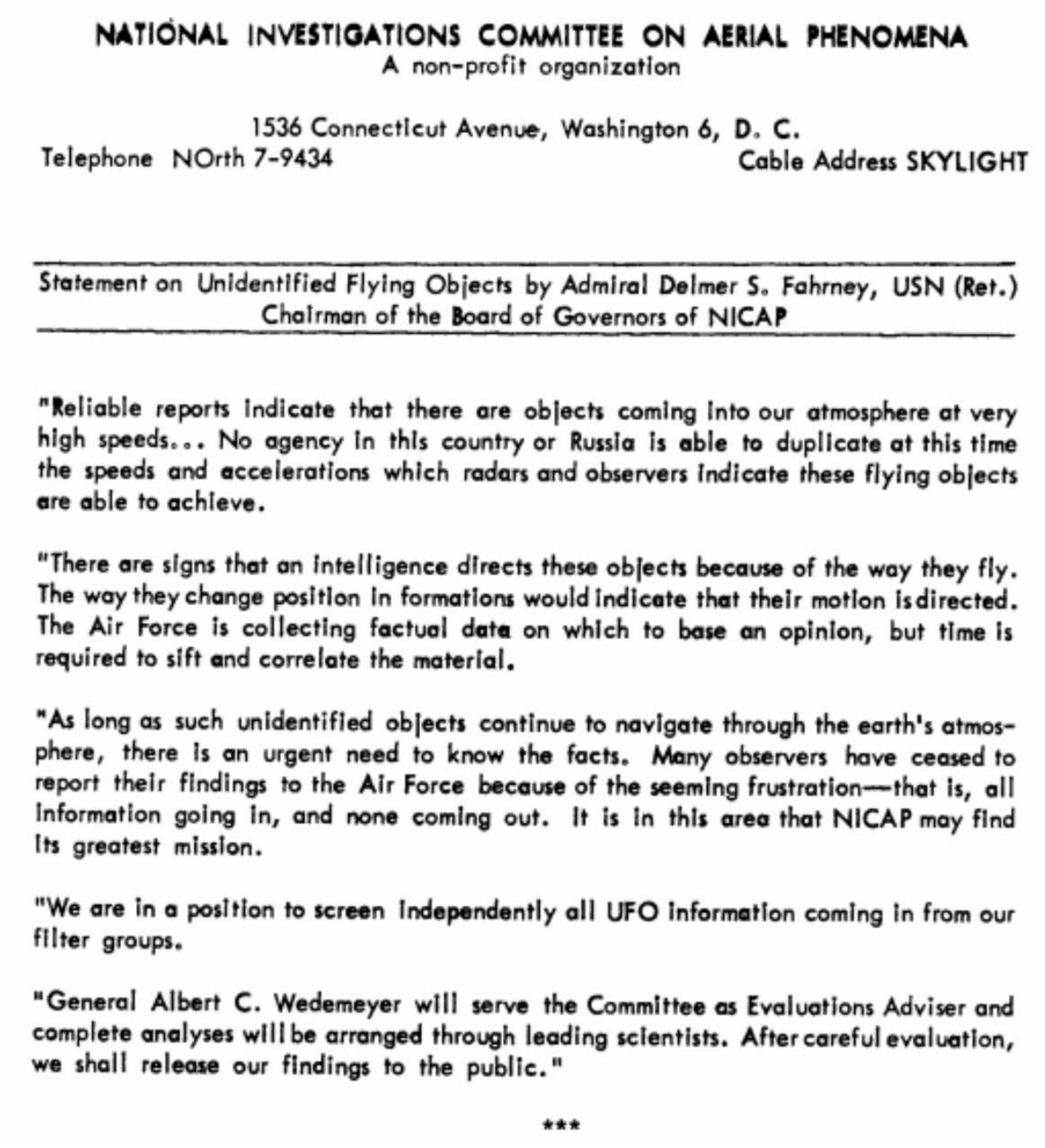

NATIONAL INVESTIGATIONS COMMITTEE ON AERIAL PHENOMENA
A non-profit organization

1536 Connecticut Avenue, Washington 6, D. C.
Telephone NOrth 7-9434 Cable Address SKYLIGHT

Statement on Unidentified Flying Objects by Admiral Delmer S. Fahrney, USN (Ret.)
Chairman of the Board of Governors of NICAP

"Reliable reports indicate that there are objects coming into our atmosphere at very high speeds... No agency in this country or Russia is able to duplicate at this time the speeds and accelerations which radars and observers indicate these flying objects are able to achieve.

"There are signs that an intelligence directs these objects because of the way they fly. The way they change position in formations would indicate that their motion is directed. The Air Force is collecting factual data on which to base an opinion, but time is required to sift and correlate the material.

"As long as such unidentified objects continue to navigate through the earth's atmosphere, there is an urgent need to know the facts. Many observers have ceased to report their findings to the Air Force because of the seeming frustration—that is, all information going in, and none coming out. It is in this area that NICAP may find its greatest mission.

"We are in a position to screen independently all UFO information coming in from our filter groups.

"General Albert C. Wedemeyer will serve the Committee as Evaluations Adviser and complete analyses will be arranged through leading scientists. After careful evaluation, we shall release our findings to the public."

***

In statements published by United Press in January 1957, Fahrney fully threw the Air Force under the bus. He said UFO reports were declining because they go into Air Force files and never come out. Fahrney added the Air Force deals with such reports with skepticism and ridicule, making people reluctant to come forward. He blamed the circumstances for contributing to the need to form NICAP.[48]

“The reason the Air Force doesn't put out any information, of course, is because the visitors must not be from the earth – therefore they must be from some other part of the universe," Fahrney was further quoted. "The obvious question then, is where are they from and why are they here? And the Air Force can't answer. So they say nothing."

In a February 1957 Director's Report to the Board of Governors, Keyhoe stated NICAP could easily become a tremendous success.[49] We may surmise such success was primarily defined by swaying popular opinion, or what UFO organizations tend to questionably describe as educating the public.

Keyhoe noted in the report that Fahrney's statements were carried widely. The news story, Keyhoe added, was repeated on radio, television, and other mediums, including flying saucer magazines published both domestically and abroad.

Keyhoe was pleased with Adm. Fahrney's aggressiveness, but the major's use of Fahrney as a noteworthy and inspired figurehead was short lived. Fahrney soon resigned as Board chairman, and rumors spread he was forced by the Navy to quit. From an April 1957 "Special Bulletin" signed by Keyhoe:[50]

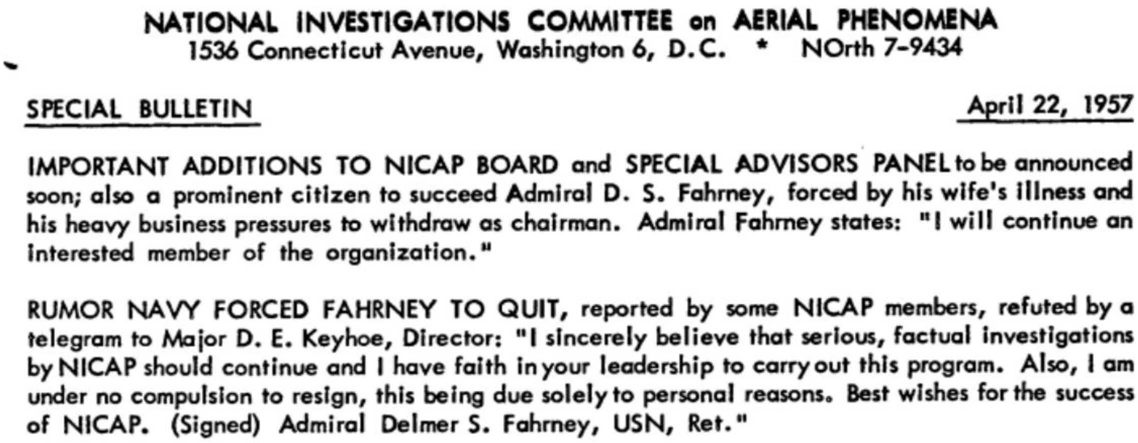

NATIONAL INVESTIGATIONS COMMITTEE on AERIAL PHENOMENA
1536 Connecticut Avenue, Washington 6, D.C. * NOrth 7-9434

SPECIAL BULLETIN **April 22, 1957**

IMPORTANT ADDITIONS TO NICAP BOARD and SPECIAL ADVISORS PANEL to be announced soon; also a prominent citizen to succeed Admiral D. S. Fahrney, forced by his wife's illness and his heavy business pressures to withdraw as chairman. Admiral Fahrney states: "I will continue an interested member of the organization."

RUMOR NAVY FORCED FAHRNEY TO QUIT, reported by some NICAP members, refuted by a telegram to Major D. E. Keyhoe, Director: "I sincerely believe that serious, factual investigations by NICAP should continue and I have faith in your leadership to carry out this program. Also, I am under no compulsion to resign, this being due solely to personal reasons. Best wishes for the success of NICAP. (Signed) Admiral Delmer S. Fahrney, USN, Ret."

It took Keyhoe little time to secure a new Board chairman, Roscoe H. Hillenkoetter. The former director of the CIA was indeed an impressive addition. Any number of aspects of the Hillenkoetter-NICAP saga are worthy of exploration, and a winding story spanning decades and involving a cloak and dagger myth about crashed flying saucers is certainly among them. Let's begin our look at this intriguing plot line with a review of events as documented by Adam Gorightly and others.

In 1981, a now infamous researcher by the name of Bill Moore was working on a book project (The same Bill Moore who in his 1979 book speculated Townsend Brown was involved in Morris Jessup's tale of an epic experiment in Philadelphia gone haywire, as considered earlier). The working title of Moore's potential 1981 offering was *MAJIK-12*. It was a never published, fictional account of the supposedly real Majestic 12, aka MJ-12, as based upon quite dubious information provided by Richard Doty.

The MJ-12 were allegedly an extremely secret group of a dozen individuals purported to be charged with overseeing the retrieval of crashed extraterrestrial spacecraft. Moore and his fellow researchers speculated about the identities of the twelve, whose project was of course not verified to exist. Moore then reportedly provided the names to Doty in the possible hope of obtaining confirmation.

Three years later, in 1984, Moore's research partner, Jaime Shandera, reportedly received an anonymously mailed package. It contained a 35mm role of film with photos of what became known as the MJ-12 papers, a set of unauthenticated documents supposedly confirming identities and activities of the MJ-12. Moore's previous speculation about identities of the MJ-12 appeared to be accurate, at least if you put any faith in the dubious docs. The MJ-12 papers are now widely considered fraudulent for many reasons and are, at absolute best, unverified.

Perhaps the whole Moore-Doty bit involved unsavory goings ons or, as Gorightly put it, a feedback loop. A good argument can sure be made. After all, the story and names Moore gave the infamously unreliable Doty are what landed in the mailbox, apparently.

At any rate, Adm. Hillenkoetter turned up among the alleged MJ-12. Besides the fact Moore had already named Hillenkoetter, his inclusion was inevitable in a UFO mythology kind of way. He headed the CIA (1947-1950) in the wake of the alleged Roswell crash of the summer of '47, so he could hardly not be in on the supposed crash retrievals. That might especially be the case considering the story was being told by a guy, Moore, who purported to subscribe to the Roswell crash story.

Also named in the MJ-12 papers as an alleged member of the group, along with Hillenkoetter, was Dr. Donald H. Menzel, an astronomer and astrophysicist. Menzel was critical of views promoted by NICAP, earning a book he authored a place as a reference as a recommended skeptical view in the abstract of the NICAP 1964 cornerstone publication, *The UFO Evidence*. As a matter of fact, Menzel was so adamant in his position UFOs could be conventionally explained that some later suspected his 1980's inclusion in the alleged MJ-12 was a joke among the hoaxers of the documents.

The FBI provided five pdf files totaling over 200 pages in response to my FOIA request on Donald Howard Menzel. After follow up, the Bureau notified me of three more potentially responsive files transferred to the National Archives and Records Administration.

A FOIA request submitted to NARA for the additional three files resulted in receiving an email establishing Menzel is indeed the subject of each file. The records total an estimated 550 pages and must be processed for release. NARA estimated it would take 39 months to complete processing, potentially making the files available in 2024, at a projected cost of $440.

The date range of the documents provided thus far by the FBI is from the 1940's to the 1970's. The docs tell a story, often portrayed through FBI memos and information obtained from confidential informants, of Cold War measures and a doctor who essentially spent his life subject to the surveillance of intelligence agencies. This was due to his involvement in such projects as the Atomic Energy Commission, which he worked with at Los Alamos. He was also investigated extensively by the Office of Naval Intelligence due at least in part to his responsibilities with "code matters" for the Boston Naval Reserve.[51] Dr. Menzel was frequently the subject of security investigations to either clear him for inclusion in classified projects or revisit the political loyalties of he and his associates due to their ongoing involvement with classified material.

After some 30 years of accumulated investigation memos, the Bureau considered approaching Menzel for work as a double agent. I suppose it stands to reason that guys who are feared to be security leaks their entire careers would be easy sells as traitors to adversaries. From a now declassified 1974 FBI memo in which the Boston Field Office requested authority to proceed with grooming Menzel as a potential double agent:[52]

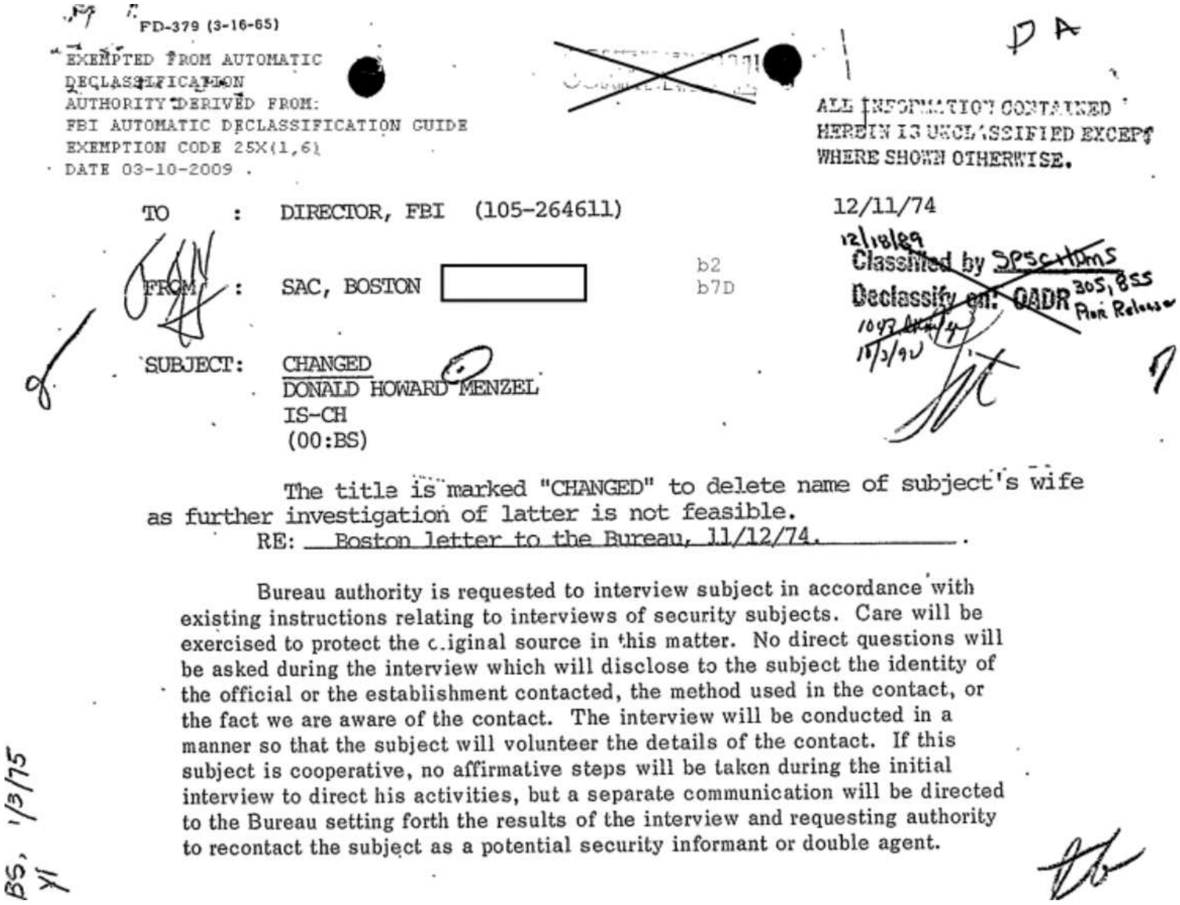

FD-379 (3-16-65)

EXEMPTED FROM AUTOMATIC
DECLASSIFICATION
AUTHORITY DERIVED FROM:
FBI AUTOMATIC DECLASSIFICATION GUIDE
EXEMPTION CODE 25X(1,6)
DATE 03-10-2009 .

PA

ALL INFORMATION CONTAINED
HEREIN IS UNCLASSIFIED EXCEPT
WHERE SHOWN OTHERWISE.

TO : DIRECTOR, FBI (105-264611)

12/11/74

12/18/89
~~Classified by SPSC+tdms~~
~~Declassify on: OADR~~ 305, 8SS Prior Release
10/3/90

FROM : SAC, BOSTON [redacted]

b2
b7D

SUBJECT: CHANGED
DONALD HOWARD MENZEL
IS-CH
(00:BS)

The title is marked "CHANGED" to delete name of subject's wife as further investigation of latter is not feasible.

RE: Boston letter to the Bureau, 11/12/74.

Bureau authority is requested to interview subject in accordance with existing instructions relating to interviews of security subjects. Care will be exercised to protect the original source in this matter. No direct questions will be asked during the interview which will disclose to the subject the identity of the official or the establishment contacted, the method used in the contact, or the fact we are aware of the contact. The interview will be conducted in a manner so that the subject will volunteer the details of the contact. If this subject is cooperative, no affirmative steps will be taken during the initial interview to direct his activities, but a separate communication will be directed to the Bureau setting forth the results of the interview and requesting authority to recontact the subject as a potential security informant or double agent.

BS, 1/3/75
yl

The Bureau may not have been the only agency with such ideas. Menzel was apparently considered a potentially advantageous source at least partially because he was frequently invited to international conferences. A 1975 memo indicates the FBI contacted him to make arrangements for a seemingly related interview. Menzel informed the Bureau he was plenty willing to discuss circumstances with them, but advised he'd already been interviewed about his recent trip to the People's Republic of China by the CIA:[53]

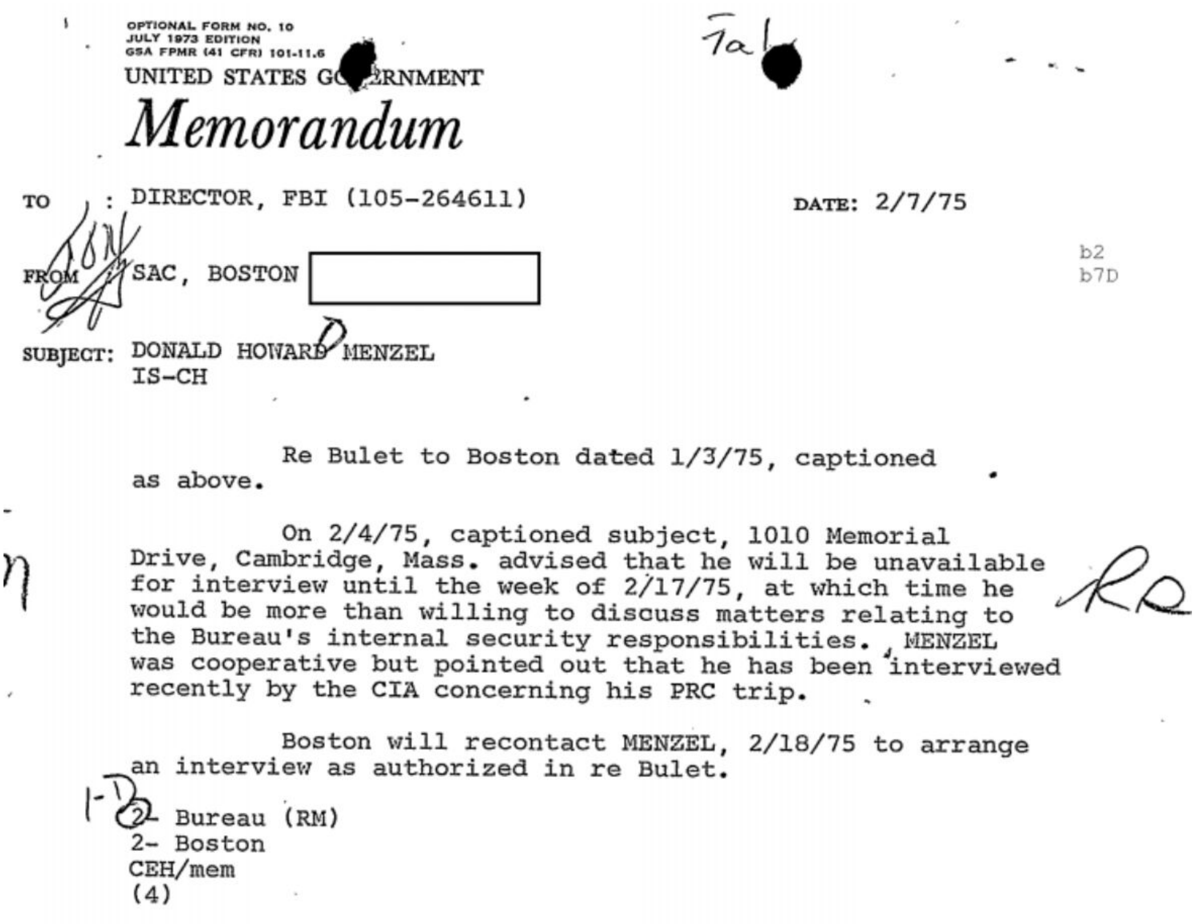

OPTIONAL FORM NO. 10
JULY 1973 EDITION
GSA FPMR (41 CFR) 101-11.6
UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

Memorandum

7a

TO : DIRECTOR, FBI (105-264611)

DATE: 2/7/75

FROM : SAC, BOSTON [redacted]

b2
b7D

SUBJECT: DONALD HOWARD MENZEL
IS-CH

Re Bulet to Boston dated 1/3/75, captioned as above.

On 2/4/75, captioned subject, 1010 Memorial Drive, Cambridge, Mass. advised that he will be unavailable for interview until the week of 2/17/75, at which time he would be more than willing to discuss matters relating to the Bureau's internal security responsibilities. MENZEL was cooperative but pointed out that he has been interviewed recently by the CIA concerning his PRC trip.

Boston will recontact MENZEL, 2/18/75 to arrange an interview as authorized in re Bulet.

1-2- Bureau (RM)
2- Boston
CEH/mem
(4)

Readers may find it somewhat amusing that a 1949 FBI memo noted a confidential informant provided information indicating Menzel “lunches in New York City at the Metropolitan Club with Admiral Chester Nimitz.” The admiral's namesake is the USS Nimitz, a Navy vessel now known around the UFO genre due to its involvement in the celebrated 2004 “Tic Tac” case. For better or worse, the promotion of the 2004 UFO case in 2017 by the New York Times and To The Stars Academy pretty much bears full responsibility for the otherwise shelved story's revived lease on life.

History buffs might also take interest that, in 1942, Adm. Nimitz was relayed analysis of Japanese messages that had been intercepted and successfully decrypted, enabling the U.S. Navy to secure a major victory at Midway. The circumstances changed the entire course of war in the Pacific, according to page 7 of a CIA study.

The FBI files on Dr. Menzel suggest a close association with Dr. Harlow Shapley was consistently among the Bureau's deepest concerns during the 1940's, however warranted it may or may not have been. Menzel and Shapley were employed in the astronomy department at Harvard. Despite their apparent strong differences on certain academic issues, Bureau memos suggest Menzel respected Shapley and defended his right to his opinion. Like Menzel, Shapley was also the subject of an FBI security investigation. Somewhat interestingly, Shapley's apparent take on extraterrestrials would later be portrayed in NICAP literature.

In a NICAP brochure within a section titled, “Published Statements on the Question of Other Worlds,” the first entry reads, “Dr. Harlow Shapley, former Director of Harvard Observatory: 'We must now accept it as inevitable that there are other worlds with some kind of thinking beings.'”[54]

A 1949 report on Menzel contained in the Bureau files indicates a confidential informant stated Menzel and Edward U. Condon shared a mutual contact.[55] As previously mentioned, Condon would go on to lead an Air Force-commissioned study of UFOs, producing in 1969 what became widely known as the Condon Report. The study was a big disappointment to NICAP. In what by now should be no surprise at all, one individual in the professional circles described by the informant was noted in the FBI report to already be the subject of a then-current security investigation. It might be easier to find people not under investigation. “What took ya so long?”, indeed.

In August 2020 I had an email exchange with James Carrion in which he shared some images of Roscoe Hillenkoetter letters. Carrion stated the source of the material was a Bill Moore archive. One of the intriguing images, apparently depicting a copy of a letter authored by Hillenkoetter and once in Moore's possession:

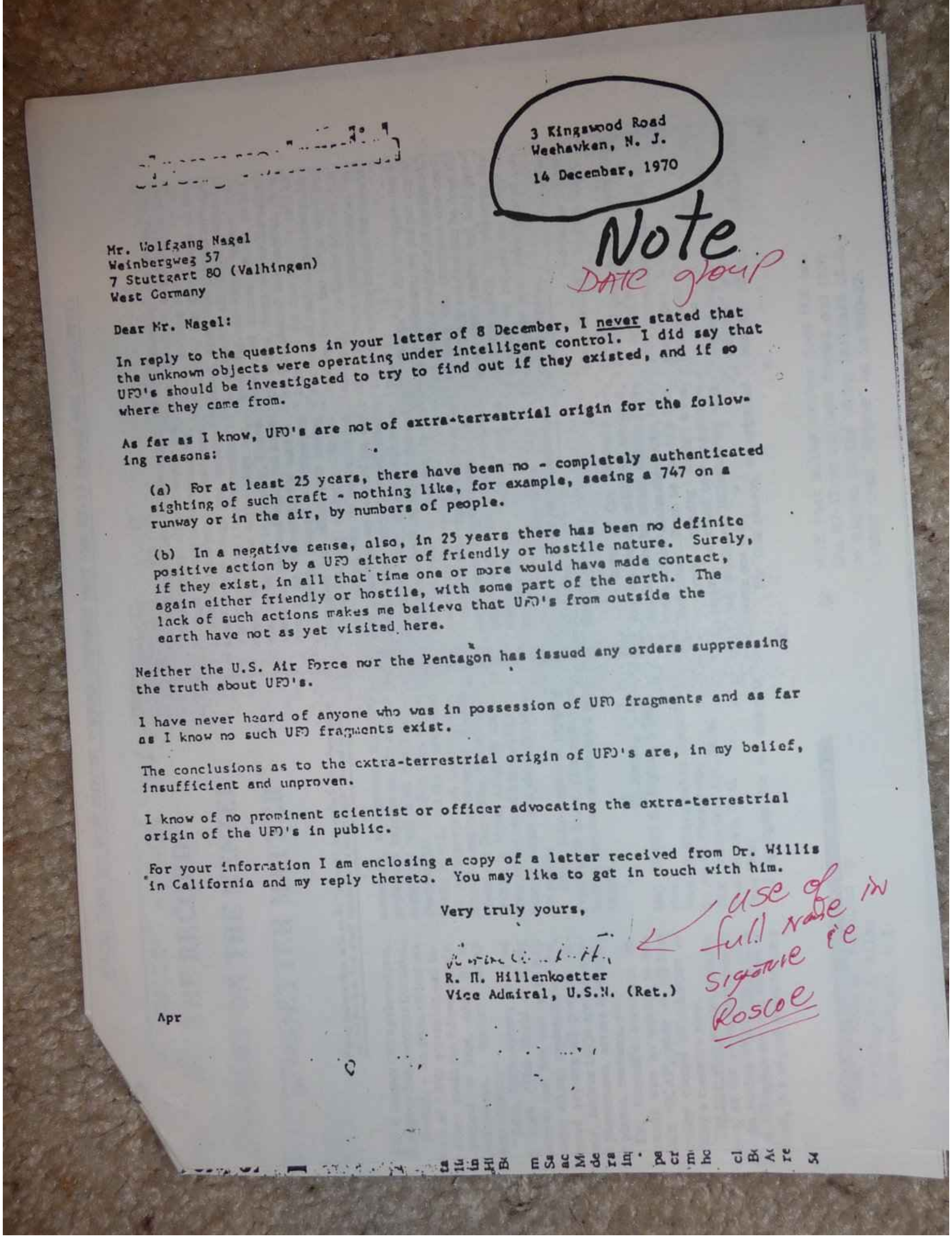

3 Kingswood Road
Weehawken, N. J.

14 December, 1970

Note
DATE group

Mr. Wolfgang Nagel
Weinbergweg 57
7 Stuttgart 80 (Valhingen)
West Germany

Dear Mr. Nagel:

In reply to the questions in your letter of 8 December, I never stated that the unknown objects were operating under intelligent control. I did say that UFO's should be investigated to try to find out if they existed, and if so where they came from.

As far as I know, UFO's are not of extra-terrestrial origin for the following reasons:

(a) For at least 25 years, there have been no - completely authenticated sighting of such craft - nothing like, for example, seeing a 747 on a runway or in the air, by numbers of people.

(b) In a negative sense, also, in 25 years there has been no definite positive action by a UFO either of friendly or hostile nature. Surely, if they exist, in all that time one or more would have made contact, again either friendly or hostile, with some part of the earth. The lack of such actions makes me believe that UFO's from outside the earth have not as yet visited here.

Neither the U.S. Air Force nor the Pentagon has issued any orders suppressing the truth about UFO's.

I have never heard of anyone who was in possession of UFO fragments and as far as I know no such UFO fragments exist.

The conclusions as to the extra-terrestrial origin of UFO's are, in my belief, insufficient and unproven.

I know of no prominent scientist or officer advocating the extra-terrestrial origin of the UFO's in public.

For your information I am enclosing a copy of a letter received from Dr. Willis in California and my reply thereto. You may like to get in touch with him.

Very truly yours,

R. H. Hillenkoetter
Vice Admiral, U.S.N. (Ret.)

use of full name in signature ie Roscoe

Apr

Yet another image shared by Carrion showed a hard copy of a 1963 letter from Hillenkoetter to Dr. Menzel. Across the top of the page was a boilerplate message suggesting the copy was initially printed by the American Philosophical Society Library.

I soon discovered the Library to currently be in operation and rather easily accessible. An email from the Reference Staff confirmed the original 1963 Hillenkoetter-Menzel letter is, in fact, an authentic item housed at the facility. The letter is located in a Hillenkoetter folder within a Donald Menzel collection. The folder consists of ten pages that include letters exchanged between the two and dated from 1961-1965. The American Philosophical Society Library provided a pdf of the folder.

The letters exchanged with Hillenkoetter reflect Menzel's skeptical position on UFOs and his concerns about NICAP. The doctor expressed his interpretation NICAP was undermining authority while its personnel had tendencies to make much more of UFO reports than was justified. He was firmly in opposition to NICAP trying to persuade the government to take up the cause of UFO activism. Congress, Menzel suggested, should be investigating NICAP instead of UFOs.

Hillenkoetter sat on the NICAP Board of Governors from 1957 until his resignation in 1962. Most of the letters were therefore written after the admiral's NICAP stint.

In a 1963 letter to Menzel, Hillenkoetter wrote, “I resigned from NICAP about 20 months ago feeling that it had degenerated from an organization honestly trying to find out something definite about possible unknowns, into a body bickering about personalities. The Air Force, too, could have helped by not being so secretive.”[56]

Hillenkoetter, in my estimation, maintained a commitment to portraying himself rather graciously to the unwavering Menzel, a strategy we might not find particularly surprising of a man of his experience and travels. In that same 1963 letter, Hillenkoetter stated, “Thank you very much for your book. To my mind, it was very well done and I enjoyed it and found it of great interest. I should say that you have effectively put to rest all surmises about flying saucers being from 'outer space'. You have done a thorough and praiseworthy job.”

There is, however, a somewhat interesting discrepancy that arises. It becomes apparent to Menzel that Hillenkoetter seems to express a different stance on UFOs to Keyhoe than he communicates to Menzel. The situation further inflames Menzel's ongoing prodding of Hillenkoetter to publicly denounce NICAP and UFOs.

In a 1965 edition of NICAP's *The UFO Investigator*, the magazine cites and challenges Menzel's assertion that Hillenkoetter accepts Menzel's explanations for UFOs.[57] From the article:

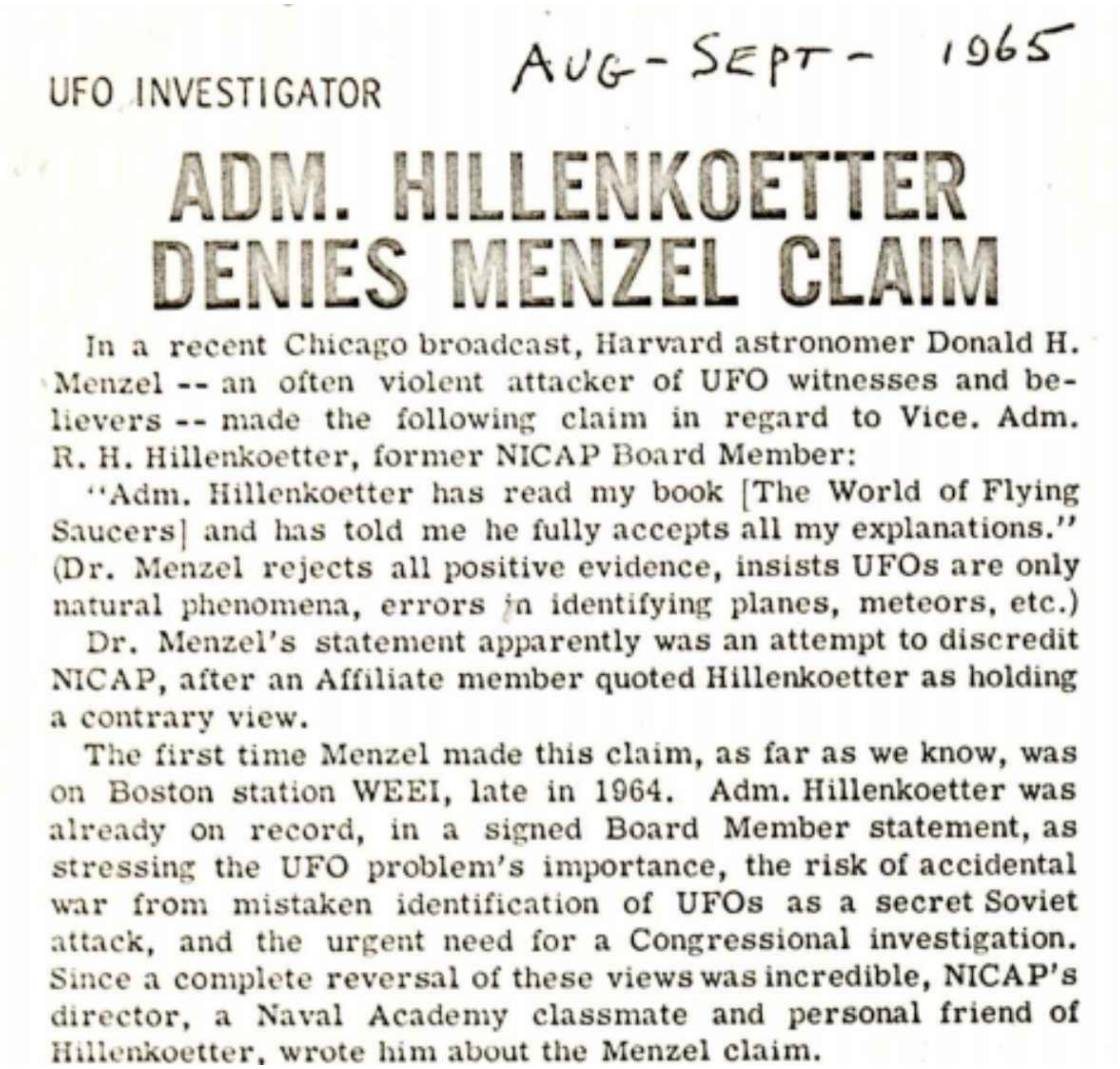

UFO INVESTIGATOR

AUG-SEPT- 1965

ADM. HILLENKOETTER DENIES MENZEL CLAIM

In a recent Chicago broadcast, Harvard astronomer Donald H. Menzel -- an often violent attacker of UFO witnesses and believers -- made the following claim in regard to Vice. Adm. R. H. Hillenkoetter, former NICAP Board Member:

"Adm. Hillenkoetter has read my book [The World of Flying Saucers] and has told me he fully accepts all my explanations." (Dr. Menzel rejects all positive evidence, insists UFOs are only natural phenomena, errors in identifying planes, meteors, etc.)

Dr. Menzel's statement apparently was an attempt to discredit NICAP, after an Affiliate member quoted Hillenkoetter as holding a contrary view.

The first time Menzel made this claim, as far as we know, was on Boston station WEEI, late in 1964. Adm. Hillenkoetter was already on record, in a signed Board Member statement, as stressing the UFO problem's importance, the risk of accidental war from mistaken identification of UFOs as a secret Soviet attack, and the urgent need for a Congressional investigation. Since a complete reversal of these views was incredible, NICAP's director, a Naval Academy classmate and personal friend of Hillenkoetter, wrote him about the Menzel claim.

The article presents a letter from Hillenkoetter intended to resolve the situation and support the credibility of both NICAP and the ongoing UFO hunt:

Adm. Hillenkoetter's reply is reproduced below. (The reference to Maj. Hart was not concerned with Menzel.)

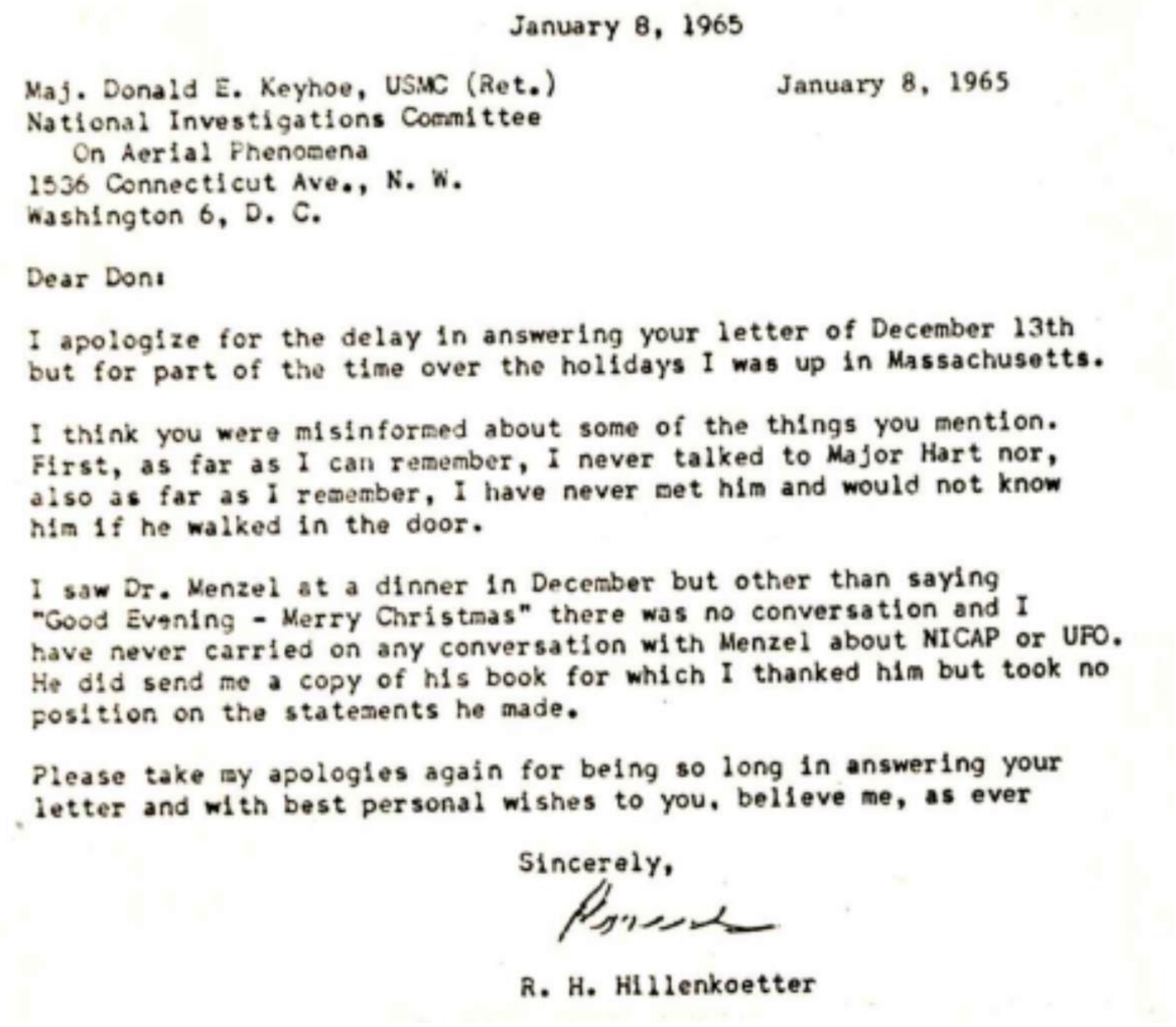

January 8, 1965

Maj. Donald E. Keyhoe, USMC (Ret.)
National Investigations Committee
On Aerial Phenomena
1536 Connecticut Ave., N. W.
Washington 6, D. C.

January 8, 1965

Dear Don:

I apologize for the delay in answering your letter of December 13th but for part of the time over the holidays I was up in Massachusetts.

I think you were misinformed about some of the things you mention. First, as far as I can remember, I never talked to Major Hart nor, also as far as I remember, I have never met him and would not know him if he walked in the door.

I saw Dr. Menzel at a dinner in December but other than saying "Good Evening - Merry Christmas" there was no conversation and I have never carried on any conversation with Menzel about NICAP or UFO. He did send me a copy of his book for which I thanked him but took no position on the statements he made.

Please take my apologies again for being so long in answering your letter and with best personal wishes to you, believe me, as ever

Sincerely,

R. H. Hillenkoetter

The article continues:

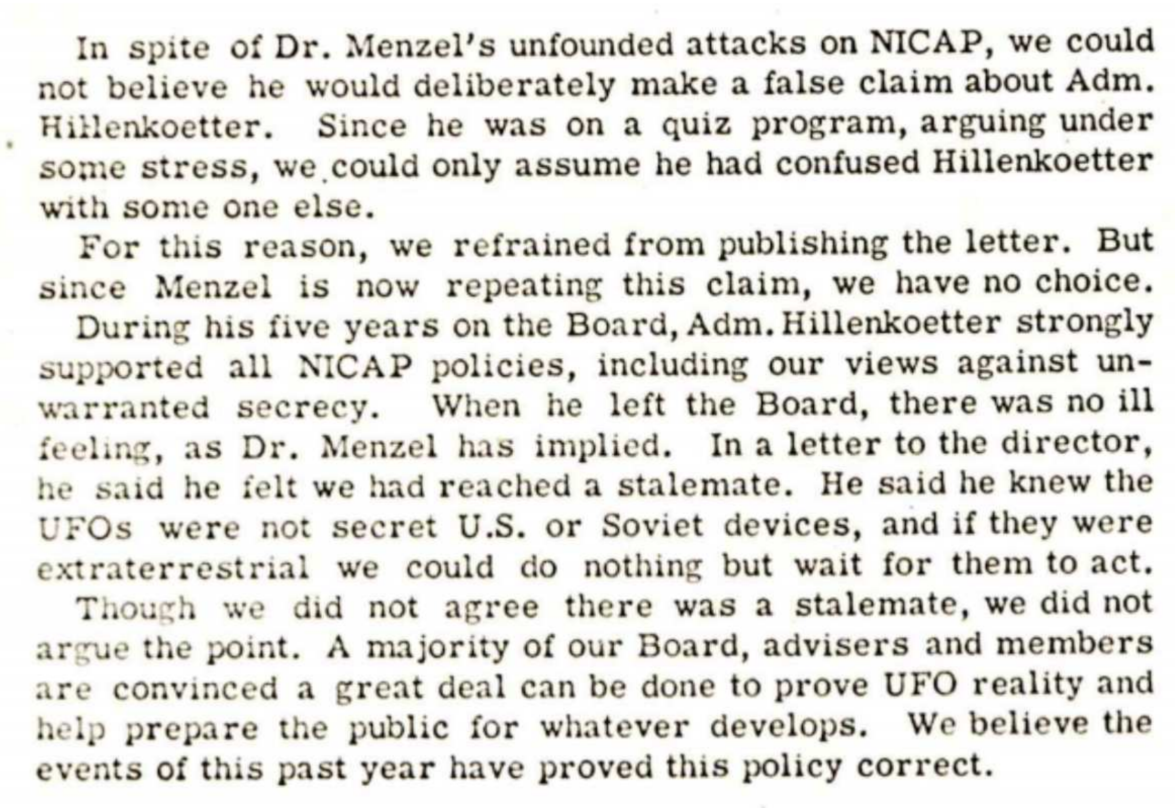

In spite of Dr. Menzel's unfounded attacks on NICAP, we could not believe he would deliberately make a false claim about Adm. Hillenkoetter. Since he was on a quiz program, arguing under some stress, we could only assume he had confused Hillenkoetter with some one else.

For this reason, we refrained from publishing the letter. But since Menzel is now repeating this claim, we have no choice.

During his five years on the Board, Adm. Hillenkoetter strongly supported all NICAP policies, including our views against unwarranted secrecy. When he left the Board, there was no ill feeling, as Dr. Menzel has implied. In a letter to the director, he said he felt we had reached a stalemate. He said he knew the UFOs were not secret U.S. or Soviet devices, and if they were extraterrestrial we could do nothing but wait for them to act.

Though we did not agree there was a stalemate, we did not argue the point. A majority of our Board, advisers and members are convinced a great deal can be done to prove UFO reality and help prepare the public for whatever develops. We believe the events of this past year have proved this policy correct.

The letters in the Hillenkoetter folder contained in the Menzel collection in the care of the American Philosophical Society Library were apparently saved by Menzel on account of this very feud. It seems it was important to Menzel to save documentation of the written statements, which spanned 1961-1965. The latest letter in the folder, which references Hillenkoetter's previously quoted 1963 note, and demonstrating Menzel's strategy for handling the admiral's contradictory statements:

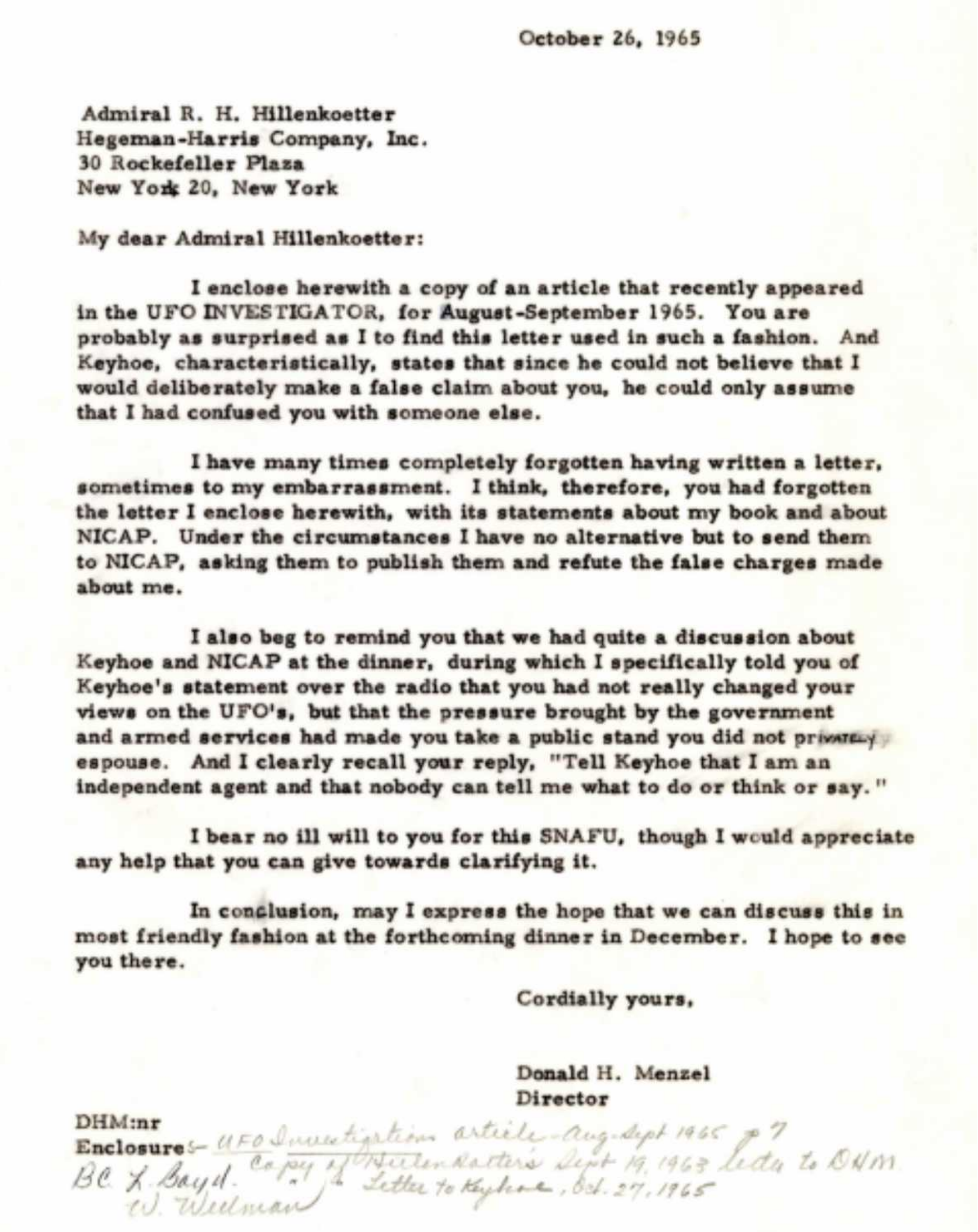

October 26, 1965

Admiral R. H. Hillenkoetter
Hegeman-Harris Company, Inc.
30 Rockefeller Plaza
New York 20, New York

My dear Admiral Hillenkoetter:

I enclose herewith a copy of an article that recently appeared in the UFO INVESTIGATOR, for August-September 1965. You are probably as surprised as I to find this letter used in such a fashion. And Keyhoe, characteristically, states that since he could not believe that I would deliberately make a false claim about you, he could only assume that I had confused you with someone else.

I have many times completely forgotten having written a letter, sometimes to my embarrassment. I think, therefore, you had forgotten the letter I enclose herewith, with its statements about my book and about NICAP. Under the circumstances I have no alternative but to send them to NICAP, asking them to publish them and refute the false charges made about me.

I also beg to remind you that we had quite a discussion about Keyhoe and NICAP at the dinner, during which I specifically told you of Keyhoe's statement over the radio that you had not really changed your views on the UFO's, but that the pressure brought by the government and armed services had made you take a public stand you did not privately espouse. And I clearly recall your reply, "Tell Keyhoe that I am an independent agent and that nobody can tell me what to do or think or say."

I bear no ill will to you for this SNAFU, though I would appreciate any help that you can give towards clarifying it.

In conclusion, may I express the hope that we can discuss this in most friendly fashion at the forthcoming dinner in December. I hope to see you there.

Cordially yours,

Donald H. Menzel
Director

DHM:nr
Enclosures- UFO Investigation article - Aug-Sept 1965 p 7
Copy of Hillenkoetter's Sept 19, 1963 letter to DHM
" " Letter to Keyhoe, Oct. 27, 1965
BC L. Boyd.
W. Weilman

Perhaps no one has been cited to bolster NICAP relevance and credibility more than former Director of Central Intelligence Adm. Hillenkoetter. His statements in support of the extraterrestrial hypothesis and saucer mystery were emphasized by NICAP and continue to this day to be frequently promoted among UFO enthusiasts appealing to authority. Trouble is, those quoted statements may not thoroughly reflect Hillenkoetter's actual views and evolving perspectives, if the quotes are even completely authentic in the first place. They certainly do not accurately represent his apparent contradicting statements or the context of the battles waged to win his public endorsements.

There are clearly implications to the MJ-12 hoax and a lack of evidence pertaining to the UFO mystery contained in the Hillenkoetter-Menzel letters. Whatever classified projects about which these men may have shared knowledge, retrieving crashed saucers was obviously not among them. Unless, of course, the two intended their letters to later be examined as part of a ruse to dupe future researchers into thinking they knew nothing about saucers, in which case they were sure playing the long game!

If Hillenkoetter did consider himself to have any significant knowledge of classified evidence of UFOs, he didn't seem to have a lot of conviction about it. Perhaps knowledge he may have had about the exploitation of the topic for deceptive purposes was another story. The behavior of the former DCI might particularly be considered intriguing in light of his awareness of the relationship the Agency had with the Economic Cooperation Administration and, by extension, Counsel Services.

I could reiterate the difficulty in discerning motives of professional intelligence personnel. As is often the case with UFO stories of yesteryear, the trail takes intriguing twists and turns where we find the merging paths of UFO investigators, skeptics and spies.

CHAPTER 9

UFO TUNNEL VISION

NICAP enjoyed wide coverage from the press. A 1957 archived newspaper article describing the organization and a UFO report it championed provides a typical example.[58]

The clipping explained that the first edition of the NICAP new monthly publication, *The UFO Investigator*, was going to include a description of a case in which a California radar operator tracked four UFOs. The objects were reportedly cruising in excess of 3,600 mph. The incident would go on to receive frequent mention from NICAP representatives.

The article further explained Adm. Roscoe Hillenkoetter would help govern NICAP. “The CIA which he headed is Uncle Sam's top intelligence agency,” the writer pointed out.

Adm. Fahrney was listed as a founder of the organization. Maj. Fournet's inclusion and expertise as a former UFO investigator for the Air Force was cited, and the involvement of community leaders was noted.

Maj. Keyhoe's career as an author of three UFO books was referenced. He was also reported as believing the Air Force had a plot to keep UFO facts from the public. Keyhoe was quoted as saying the real mission of NICAP was to get the Air Force to open its secret files on saucers. The popularity of the perspective illustrates how UFO tunnel vision creates blind spots for various circumstances such as national security issues.

Frankly, it borders on inexplicable how military officers, many with substantial experience in the intelligence community, could not see it problematic to demand secret files be opened. Potential hidden agendas of the intelligence officers partaking in such a scheme momentarily aside, it is rather dumbfounding how this could not have been understood to inevitably create suspicions about the loyalty and intentions of involved parties, if not their very competence. At least some of them numbered among those who apparently found the prospect of alien life visiting us so overwhelmingly intellectually seductive they didn't care what apple carts they upset.

This is a primary area that demonstrates a difference in the thinking habits among people who find the NICAP story to be about UFOs, as compared to those who find it interesting for social reasons, such as the seeming ongoing

CIA presence. Similar could actually be said about the UFO topic in general. It makes perfect sense to people with a burning – and arguably understandable – desire to learn about UFOs if they demand the military and intelligence agencies open all potentially related classified files. It makes equally as much sense to those with an eye to the intelligence community that such files remain classified for reasons that, in probably a vast majority of instances, have little to nothing to do with UFOs.

Such reasons might include properly classified information pertaining to sources and methods. In such cases the publishing of records might detrimentally reveal how data was obtained and analyzed. If your U-2 plane is classified and its pilot is supposed to be retired and running a dairy farm in Wisconsin, you're not very well going to give Donald Keyhoe a file explaining how the plane helped record flight capabilities of an aircraft he happens to mistakenly believe to originate from another planet.

You're also not going to throw caution to the wind and release files which may exist pertaining to flying objects you haven't confidently identified, even if the data collecting process does not jeopardize operations security. You necessarily interpret recorded air traffic as human-manufactured aircraft. You likewise investigate occurrences of radar anomalies as weather phenomena, deceptive electronic warfare (see electronic countermeasures), technical malfunctions or similar circumstances. To you, it's not about a “UFO,” it's an information gathering process and a bit of a poker game in which you don't tip your hand.

You simply do not want your adversaries to know how much you do or do not know about what they're doing. Neither do you want them to know about your latest tools and abilities to document what they're doing. Intelligence agencies are not in the business of clarifying operations, and they most certainly do not exist for the purpose of making their understandings of any given topic clear to the global public. We may argue the practicality of the policies all we want, but the facts will remain.

In contrast, those afflicted with UFO tunnel vision tend to only see reports and classified files as indicative of some type of anomalous phenomena, if not nonhuman intelligence or ET. They often confidently believe classified records contain profound revelations about UFOs themselves. Arguments to the contrary, or even suggestions it might not be in the best national interest to reveal which files are about relatively legitimate unknowns and which are not, are typically dismissed out of hand. No matter how many files are released, the supposed best files are always believed to remain slightly out of reach.

UFO groups and their supporters tend to make judgments about what constitutes a mysterious UFO, as compared to an aircraft not yet identified or similar prosaic occurrence. The military has understandably always been interested in monitoring air traffic and related intelligence matters, and often does not detail its reasons and findings. Once saucer enthusiasts form mental constructs and assumptions around events of their choosing, it is often nearly impossible for them to contemplate an alternative and less sensational context.

“I consider that the evidence that the UFOs are real and are interplanetary machines is conclusive,” Keyhoe was quoted in the above referenced 1957 newspaper article. He therefore apparently believed classified files would confirm his conclusion, and he may very well have been unaware his supposition was not an objective observation. He certainly would not have been the first or last.

Keyhoe composed a report to the NICAP Board of Governors and Panel of Special Advisors in 1959 in which he included a poll. The second question asked if they agreed the Air Force withholding information on UFOs is dangerous, and if it could lead to a false claim by the USSR that saucers are secret Soviet weapons.[59] The arguably overly simplistic question represented one of Keyhoe's ongoing talking points in which he employed a strategy of suggesting UFO secrecy was detrimental to public safety. Among his reasons was the argument UFOs could be mistaken for Soviet aggression with potentially catastrophic results.

Keyhoe's poll to NICAP leadership also included the following item:

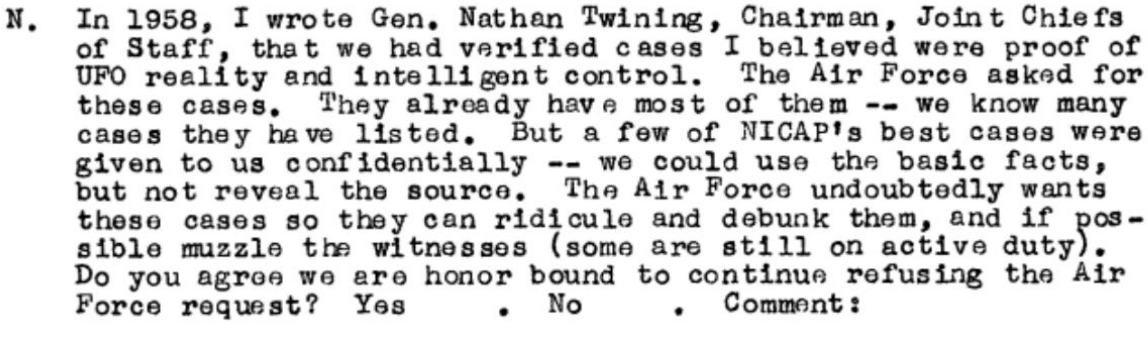

N. In 1958, I wrote Gen. Nathan Twining, Chairman, Joint Chiefs of Staff, that we had verified cases I believed were proof of UFO reality and intelligent control. The Air Force asked for these cases. They already have most of them -- we know many cases they have listed. But a few of NICAP's best cases were given to us confidentially -- we could use the basic facts, but not reveal the source. The Air Force undoubtedly wants these cases so they can ridicule and debunk them, and if possible muzzle the witnesses (some are still on active duty). Do you agree we are honor bound to continue refusing the Air Force request? Yes . No . Comment:

Keyhoe's ability to pry UFO reports from within the military became a staple of his reputation. The circumstances might be considered rather astonishing of a retired officer obtaining confidential information with potential security implications while refusing to disclose it to applicable authorities. While some might consider this to be heroic efforts at UFO Disclosure, suffice it to say that was not the position of the U.S. Air Force. It would only stand to reason solutions and counter strategies would be considered by the powers that be.

Records obtained from the CIA indicate in 1958 Keyhoe wrote the Agency inquiring about what would come to be known as the Robertson Panel, the scientific UFO think tank explored earlier. The letter, provided in its entirety in the following two images, contains several points of interest. We can observe Keyhoe implementing his strategy of suggesting UFO secrecy was a threat to public safety. We also see him informing the Agency of his knowledge since 1953 of the meeting of the then-secret CIA scientific advisory panel.

ER 10-7358

COPY

NATIONAL INVESTIGATIONS COMMITTEE
ON AERIAL PHENOMENA
Major Donald E. Keyhoe, Director
1536 Connecticut Avenue
Washington 6, D. C.
NOrth 7-9434

NICAP
Richard Hall
Elizabeth Ann Kendall

Sept. 22, 1958

[redacted]
Executive Officer
Central Intelligence Agency
Washington 25, D. C.

[redacted]

With the approval of Board members with whom I have discussed the situation, I am writing again to ask what part the Central Intelligence Agency plays in the official investigation of the unidentified flying objects.

Since January 1953 I have been aware of the fact that the Central Intelligence Agency assembled a group of scientists at the Pentagon to examine the evidence on UFOs and to decide or suggest a course of action. Several months ago I was questioned by an investigator of the McClellan Subcommittee on Government Operations. During one of the several interviews in which I gave the subcommittee a mass of verified evidence, I told the investigator of the 1953 meeting of scientists and suggested that he ask for the copy of the official report.

Later he told me that the Air Force explained that this was not an Air Force document and that they would have to ask the approval of the agency involved. On still another occasion the investigator told me that this had proved to be the Central Intelligence Agency and that he had been sent a summary of the full report, which was classified.

Until that time, the Air Force had officially denied the existence of any such document. However, shortly after I had the verification from the McClellan subcommittee investigator, the Air Force admitted that there was such a document, as I had claimed. Within a short time they released what they said was a summary of the main points, and the conclusions of the scientists. No mention was made of the connection with the Central Intelligence Agency.

Since then, requests for the full report of this group have been refused, on the grounds that the report is classified.

The National Investigations Committee is hereby requesting declassification of this full report so that we may examine the document and the evidence along with the scientists' conclusions.

The Air Force has repeatedly stated that there is absolutely no danger connected with unidentified flying objects. It has also said that there is no classification as regards national security. It has admitted "official use only" classification, which, the Air Force says, is to protect the names of witnesses who do not wish to be publicly listed.

Since the CIA document is said not to list witnesses' names but to discuss the general problem, there is no reason apparent why it should not be declassified, as requested.

Despite the published conclusions of the 1953 scientists group, we have found that there is an increasing public belief that the UFOs may possibly be unfriendly. We have absolutely no evidence to prove that they are hostile and I cite this only to prove the danger of the present secrecy policy. Secrecy breeds ignorance of the subject and it could lead to hysteria or even panic under certain conditions. I believe that an open discussion of the problem would serve the best interests of the country.

In addition to requesting a copy of the formal report drawn up by the scientists in 1953, NICAP requests an interview with an official of the Central Intelligence Agency who is qualified to speak for the CIA on this subject. It is our belief that a frank discussion of the problems will be of mutual benefit.

In my previous letters, I gave you the name of some of our Board members, including Vice Admiral R. H. Hillenkoetter, USN (Ret.), who formerly was director of the Central Intelligence Agency. I am sure that Admiral Hillenkoetter, as well as all the members of our Board and our Special Advisers would tell you, if questioned, that they disagree with the present secrecy about unidentified flying objects.

With a membership covering all 49 states and many foreign countries, except those in the USSR, NICAP has, by its serious, factual approach won the attention of many important citizens here and abroad. Our factual press releases have been given serious attention by the press and by newscasters. We are in a position to help citizens in America, and elsewhere, for the facts which eventually will have to be made public. We hope the Central Intelligence Agency will agree to a conference or at least an interview on the various aspects of this problem.

Sincerely yours,

/s/ Donald E. Keyhoe

Donald E. Keyhoe, Major USMC (Ret.)

DEK:k

The same CIA pdf contains an inner Agency message, pictured below, discussing a response to Keyhoe's letter. Variations of this dance were recurring themes at multiple agencies.

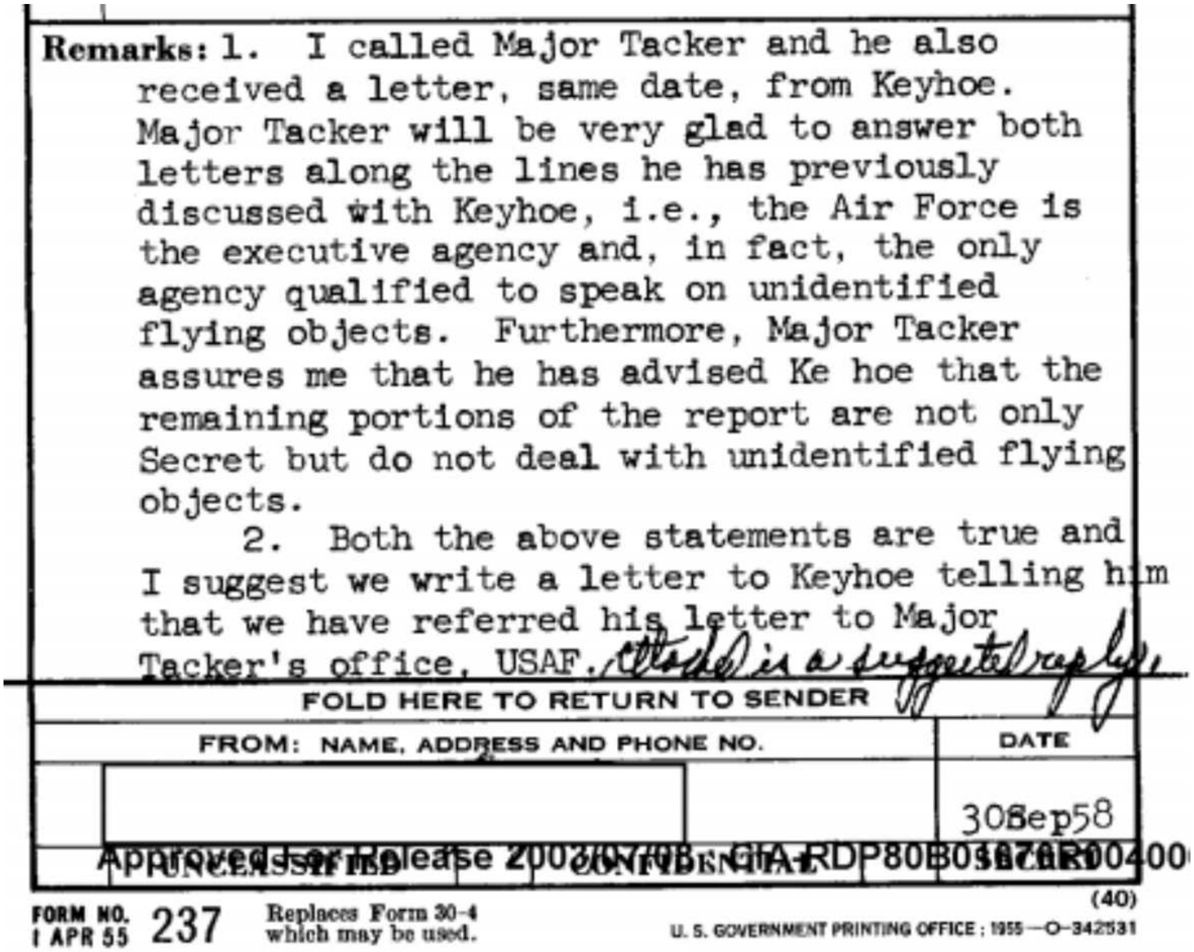

Remarks: 1. I called Major Tacker and he also received a letter, same date, from Keyhoe. Major Tacker will be very glad to answer both letters along the lines he has previously discussed with Keyhoe, i.e., the Air Force is the executive agency and, in fact, the only agency qualified to speak on unidentified flying objects. Furthermore, Major Tacker assures me that he has advised Ke hoe that the remaining portions of the report are not only Secret but do not deal with unidentified flying objects.

2. Both the above statements are true and I suggest we write a letter to Keyhoe telling him that we have referred his letter to Major Tacker's office, USAF. Attached is a suggested reply.

FOLD HERE TO RETURN TO SENDER

FROM: NAME, ADDRESS AND PHONE NO.	DATE
	30Sep58

Approved For Release [illegible] CIA-RDP80B0[illegible]R00400

UNCLASSIFIED CONFIDENTIAL SECRET

FORM NO. 237 Replaces Form 30-4 which may be used.
1 APR 55

(40)

U. S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE : 1955—O-342531

It would not have been particularly difficult for the CIA to investigate and surmise some circumstances surrounding Keyhoe's sources of information about the Robertson Panel, considering the involvement in NICAP of men like Maj. Fournet, who testified to the group. Perhaps, however, there is a larger point to be made here about UFO tunnel vision. Maj. Keyhoe and UFO enthusiasts apparently found no issues with securing informants in places of interest. Neither did they seem to find it problematic to solicit military personnel to leak documents. They apparently found it honorable and encouraged it, at least to a certain extent.

Keyhoe and company then seemed to feel it completely reasonable to handle such information as if it belonged to them, minding its security, protecting it from the very agencies from which it was obtained. They then suggested they felt harassed when such agencies came calling, or persecuted at the prospect of having their organization infiltrated in similar manners as they were themselves infiltrating agencies. Whatever one's opinion on such issues, it should not be difficult to understand why I question the wisdom or authenticity of people, particularly intelligence officers, who failed to grasp the problematic nature of the ideology. NICAP alienation was arguably much more the expected natural evolution of events than an exception.

A bit of tolerance and empathy may be extended to NICAP and mid 20th century UFO activists. Granted, there wasn't much of a template with which to work. The more experience the UFO scene got under its collective belt, the more difficult it becomes to understand outrage about how swatting beehives leads to bee stings.

The image below is from a now declassified CIA file and represents a handwritten note apparently arising out of Keyhoe's then-latest inquiry to the National Security Council about saucer policy. The four-page file contains a 1958 exchange between Keyhoe and the Council, which includes the NSC advising him copies were being forwarded to the Department of Defense. The NSC Executive Secretary, when subsequently writing the DOD, enclosed copies to the CIA as well, due to Keyhoe's assertion he had proof the Agency was concerned with UFOs.

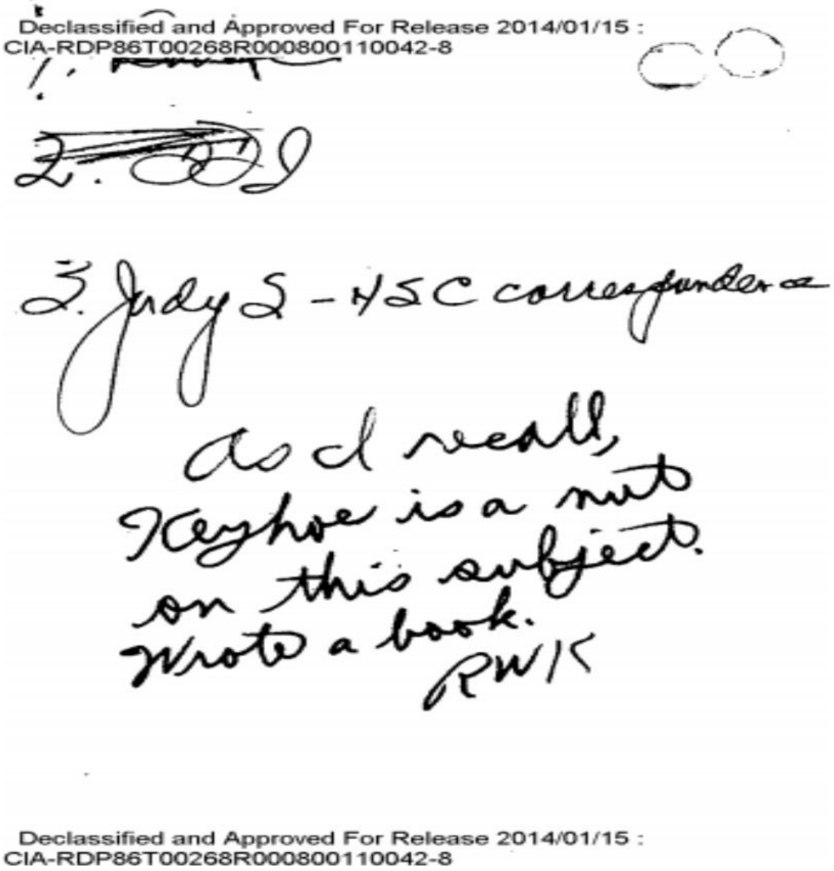

Declassified and Approved For Release 2014/01/15 : CIA-RDP86T00268R000800110042-8

1. [illegible]

2. ~~DDI~~

3. Judy S - NSC correspondence

As I recall, Keyhoe is a nut on this subject. Wrote a book.

RWK

Declassified and Approved For Release 2014/01/15 : CIA-RDP86T00268R000800110042-8

We might surmise the NSC alerted the DOD and CIA to Keyhoe's persistent questions about UFO policies for any number of reasons that did not necessarily have much to do with covering up literal anomalous sky phenomena. At the least his implication about possessing information contradicting CIA public policy, regardless of the specific topic, was quite possibly viewed as reason enough in itself to keep the Agency advised. He was of course suggesting he had a secret, and at other times he outright said so.

We might also confidently surmise the NSC, CIA, and DOD personnel in this loop had to break their attention from something else in order to repeatedly deal with Keyhoe. It only stands to reason they would rather have not been writing extra letters and expending additional energy to address variations of the same question about UFOs over and over again.

The sheer audacity of some of Keyhoe's inquiries was shocking, perhaps even humorously so in hindsight. The following letter, from a CIA file, is indicative of another round of exchanges between the major and the Agency:

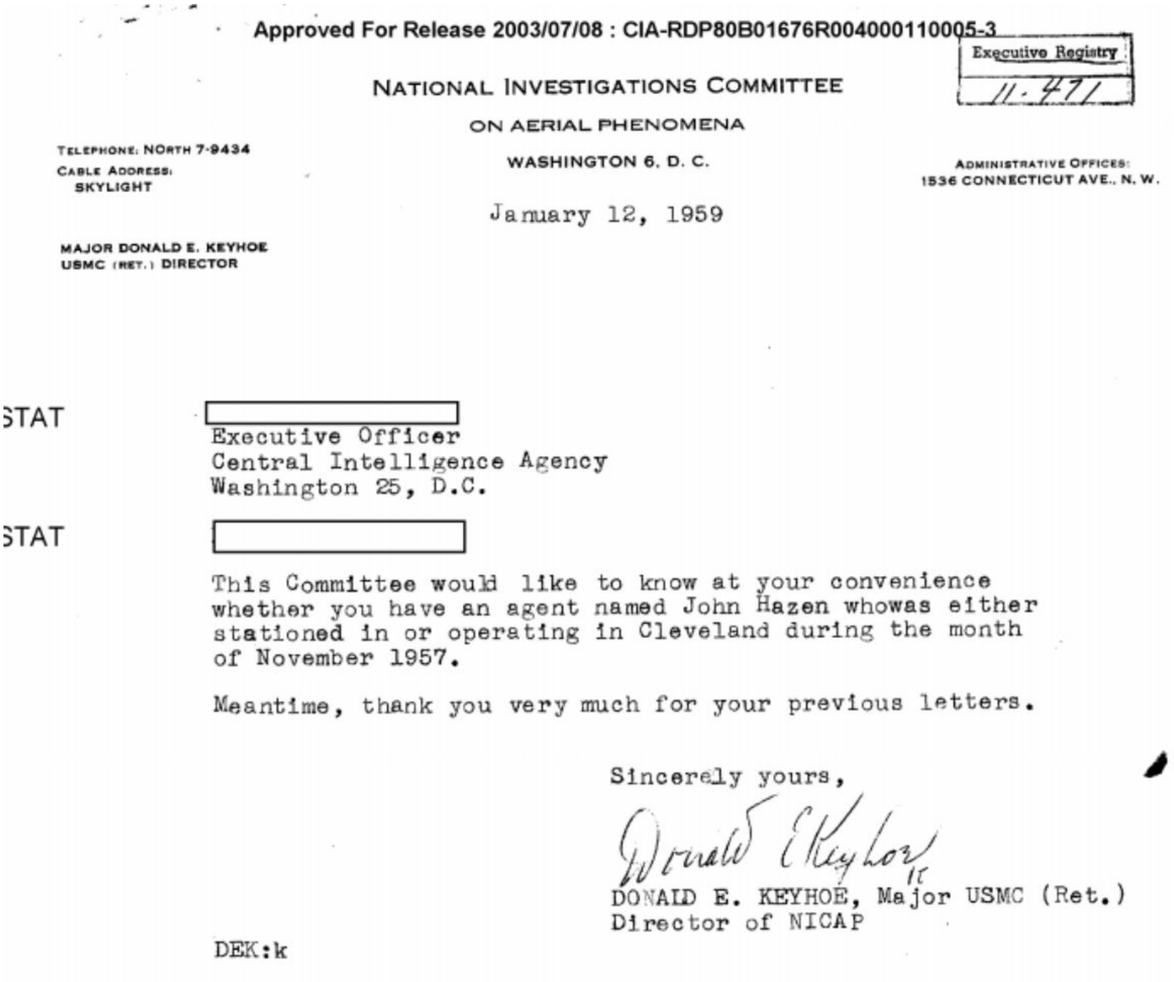

Approved For Release 2003/07/08 : CIA-RDP80B01676R004000110005-3

Executive Registry
11-471

NATIONAL INVESTIGATIONS COMMITTEE
ON AERIAL PHENOMENA
WASHINGTON 6, D. C.

TELEPHONE: NORTH 7-9434
CABLE ADDRESS:
SKYLIGHT

ADMINISTRATIVE OFFICES:
1536 CONNECTICUT AVE., N. W.

January 12, 1959

MAJOR DONALD E. KEYHOE
USMC (RET.) DIRECTOR

STAT [redacted]
Executive Officer
Central Intelligence Agency
Washington 25, D.C.

STAT [redacted]

This Committee would like to know at your convenience whether you have an agent named John Hazen whowas either stationed in or operating in Cleveland during the month of November 1957.

Meantime, thank you very much for your previous letters.

Sincerely yours,

Donald E Keyhoe

DONALD E. KEYHOE, Major USMC (Ret.)
Director of NICAP

DEK:k

The circumstances arose when in 1957 the CIA Office of Scientific Intelligence (OSI) requested the Contact Division (CD) obtain photos from Ralph C. Mayher, a photographer for KYW-TV in Cleveland. In November 1957, Mr. Mayher provided for analysis five photos he shot in 1952.

John Hazen, a CD officer, returned the photos to Mayher in December 1957. According to the CIA version of the story, Mayher asked Hazen for the Agency's evaluation of the pictures, explaining he intended to make a television show about UFOs and wanted to suggest an intelligence agency found his photos of interest. Hazen reportedly advised Mayher he would prefer the photographer not take that approach, but added Mayher was of course free to choose for himself.

Keyhoe later contacted Mayher, and stories of witness suppression and CIA interest in UFOs resulted. Keyhoe tried to confirm Hazen's employment with the Agency in writing in an effort to expose a CIA interest in UFOs, but no such letter would be forthcoming. Questions persisted about the Agency's role regarding UFOs, and the CIA eventually acknowledged its concern over secrecy made matters worse.

From the perspective of Keyhoe and his supporters, NICAP was advocating government accountability and transparency, or at least that was *their* public stance. It seems likely there were layers of agendas, and the most prevalent among Keyhoe and his allies appears to have been to separate the United States government from proof of an extraterrestrial presence that some in NICAP were thoroughly convinced the Air Force and CIA were hiding.

It warrants pointing out the CIA and company shared some responsibility in public mistrust, as explored in previous examples of deception and misdirection. It's not as if it was completely unjustified to suspect there were stories to be read between the lines. It is also understandable Keyhoe was motivated to document an apparent CIA interest in UFO photos after the Agency claimed it was not involved in UFO investigations.

It nonetheless seemed to remain outside the scope of UFO activist considerations that a claimed interest in photos did not necessarily translate into having an interest in them for the same reasons as UFO buffs. Neither did it necessarily mean OSI was concerned the pictures portrayed what some of the public happened to believe was captured on the film. There are lots of possibilities and potential scenarios.

For instance, while working on another research project, I happened upon documentation the FBI considered “using the pretext of an automobile accident” to conduct an interview with a person of interest. A file obtained from the FBI contained a 1969 message from the Washington Field Office, informing Director Hoover that, unless advised to the contrary, it would approach the person under the guise of investigating a car accident supposedly occurring in their vicinity and involving a government vehicle. The ruse would enable the interview without revealing the purpose of the investigation, which actually pertained to people the individual was with during the time in question.

The evolving opinion Keyhoe was “a nut” on the UFO topic, in addition to getting tired of conducting tedious correspondence with him, may have had something to do with content he chose to publish. In his 1953 book *Flying Saucers from Outer Space*, Keyhoe passed along an image now known as Silverman. Keyhoe cited a publication which depicted the photo as the capture of a Mars man, and included in his description a sensational story line that accompanied the picture. Keyhoe noted the tale was not new and had been previously run in a similar version by a different outlet.

Keyhoe did not report and may have been unaware of the initial source of the story. According to internet personality and researcher Isaac Koi, the original rendition of the photo appeared on April 1, 1950, in the German newspaper *Neue Illustrierte* with the title "Der Mars-Mensch." A few days later the paper apparently admitted it was an April Fool's joke, but that did not stop the spread of the picture along with various embellished narratives. Silverman, pictured below, continues to periodically surface today, rarely with explanations of its origin as reported by Koi. The false stories are much more commonly repeated from one book and social media post to another.

A 1957 newspaper article, proclaiming saucer investigators offered a deal to the Air Force, reported that NICAP presented an eight-point plan of cooperation.[60] The plan was reportedly designed to end controversy and public confusion over UFOs. Intelligence officers taking up the NICAP cause were apparently either obtuse (for what may have been any number of reasons) or unaware the Air Force was not looking for Marine majors to offer unsolicited advice on how to run its affairs.

It is possible Keyhoe thought some of his moves were good publicity strategies. In a manner of speaking, they were, at least from the perspective that we're still talking about NICAP so many decades later. He may have even enjoyed a certain degree of success “pressuring” the Air Force and intelligence agencies into some UFO-related projects. The practicality and sincerity of the effort expended in such projects is very much in question, however. It is nonetheless clear future FOIA researchers benefited from some paths forged by the likes of Keyhoe and mid 20th century UFO investigators. Everything is relative.

It might also be considered that, somewhat in Keyhoe's defense, a number of UFO researchers still play such games today. It is common for UFO activists to purport to be pressuring government agencies. Whether or not current day UFO researchers sincerely consider their activities to be serious Disclosure ploys or simply a strategy to gain advantageous public attention is another matter.

Records pertaining to Maj. Keyhoe obtained from the FBI include a 1958 letter he authored to J. Edgar Hoover. The two-page letter indicates it was not Keyhoe's first submission inquiring about UFO policies to the FBI director. Along with his usual insinuations, the message included Keyhoe's request for an interview with a spokesperson “acquainted with the facts, and the FBI policy which may be involved,” as he similarly asked of the CIA. The following image from the letter shows questions Keyhoe additionally posed to Director Hoover:

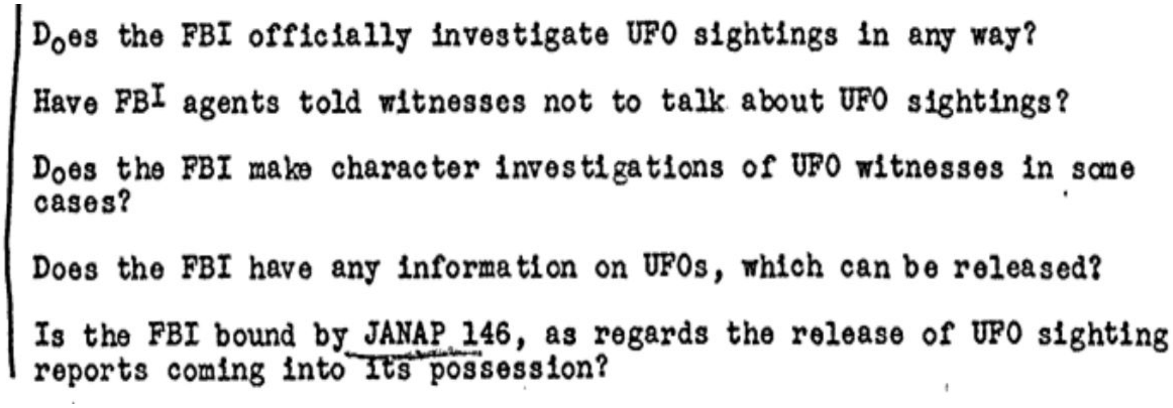

Does the FBI officially investigate UFO sightings in any way?

Have FBI agents told witnesses not to talk about UFO sightings?

Does the FBI make character investigations of UFO witnesses in some cases?

Does the FBI have any information on UFOs, which can be released?

Is the FBI bound by JANAP 146, as regards the release of UFO sighting reports coming into its possession?

Part of a subsequent Bureau memo:

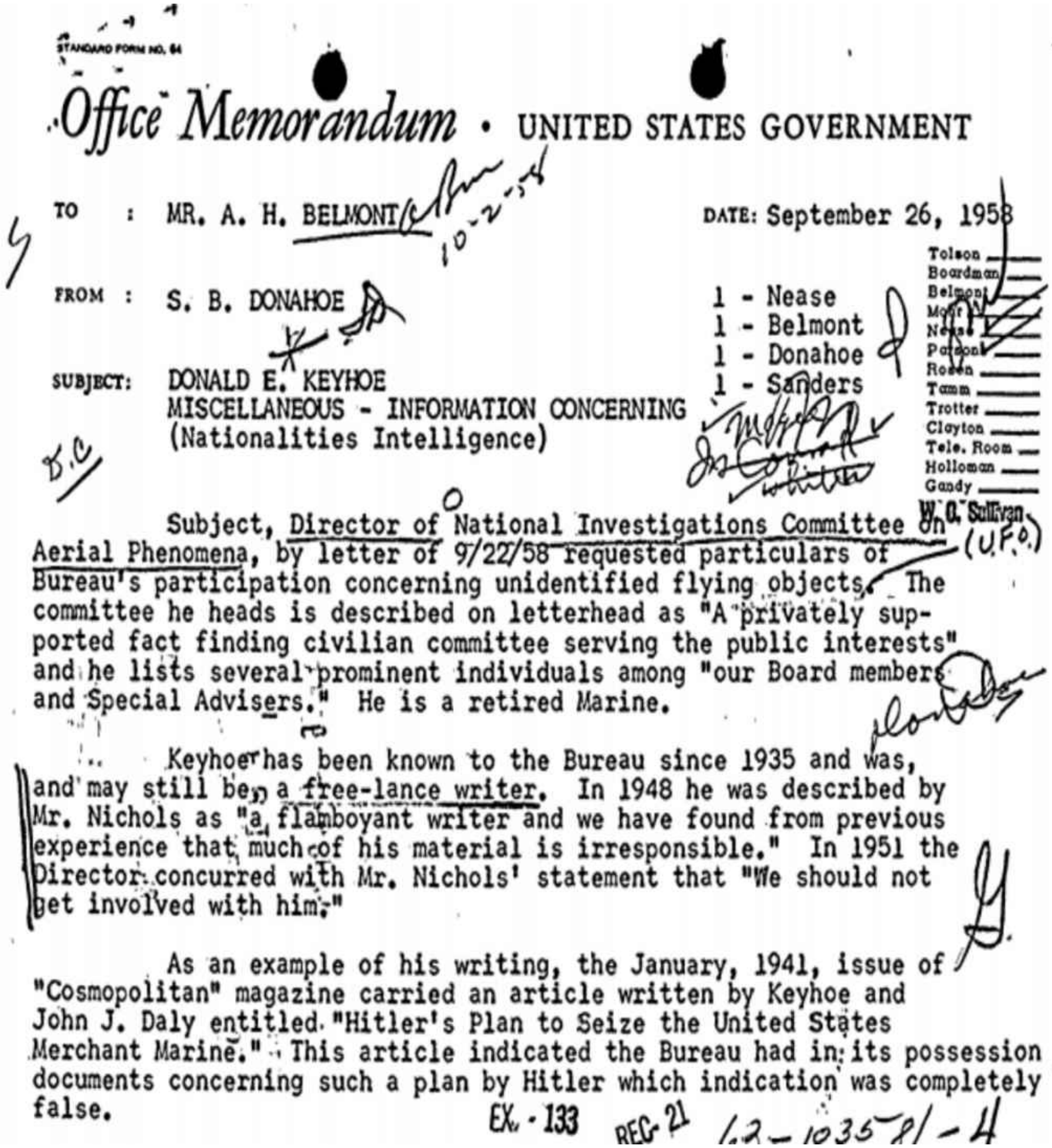

STANDARD FORM NO. 64

Office Memorandum • UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

TO : MR. A. H. BELMONT 10-2-58

DATE: September 26, 1958

FROM : S. B. DONAHOE

SUBJECT: DONALD E. KEYHOE
MISCELLANEOUS - INFORMATION CONCERNING
(Nationalities Intelligence)

1 - Nease
1 - Belmont
1 - Donahoe
1 - Sanders

Tolson
Boardman
Belmont
Mohr
Nease
Parsons
Rosen
Tamm
Trotter
Clayton
Tele. Room
Holloman
Gandy
W. C. Sullivan

(U.F.O.)

Subject, Director of National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena, by letter of 9/22/58 requested particulars of Bureau's participation concerning unidentified flying objects. The committee he heads is described on letterhead as "A privately supported fact finding civilian committee serving the public interests" and he lists several prominent individuals among "our Board members and Special Advisers." He is a retired Marine.

Keyhoe has been known to the Bureau since 1935 and was, and may still be, a free-lance writer. In 1948 he was described by Mr. Nichols as "a flamboyant writer and we have found from previous experience that much of his material is irresponsible." In 1951 the Director concurred with Mr. Nichols' statement that "We should not get involved with him."

As an example of his writing, the January, 1941, issue of "Cosmopolitan" magazine carried an article written by Keyhoe and John J. Daly entitled "Hitler's Plan to Seize the United States Merchant Marine." This article indicated the Bureau had in its possession documents concerning such a plan by Hitler which indication was completely false.

EX. - 133 REC-21 62-103581-4

The FBI may have been among the more effective of all the intelligence agencies at dealing with Keyhoe, as evidenced in Hoover's response to Keyhoe's latest inquiry:

Belmont
Donahoe
Sanders

REC-101 62-103581-5

September 26, 1958

Major Donald E. Keyhoe, Director
National Investigations Committee
on Aerial Phenomena
1536 Connecticut Avenue
Washington 6, D. C.

Dear Sir:

In response to your letter of September 22, 1958, the following requested information is furnished:

> The Federal Bureau of Investigation does not investigate sightings of unidentified flying objects. When the details of such a sighting are reported to representatives of this Bureau, the information is forwarded to the Air Force.
>
> Representatives of this Bureau do not issue instructions to individuals who have sighted unidentified flying objects that they should not talk about such sightings.
>
> It is not a function of this Bureau to make character investigations of individuals who have witnessed unidentified flying objects.
>
> This Bureau does not have information on unidentified flying objects which can be released. This does not imply that this Bureau has information concerning unidentified flying objects which cannot be released.
>
> It is understood that JANAP 146 is a Department of Defense document and is not, as such, applicable to the operations of the Federal Bureau of Investigation.
>
> Possible communication with extraterrestrial vehicles from another planet, should the unidentified

COMM - FBI
MAILED

REC'D READING ROOM
F B I
SEP 26 3 25 PM '58

10 JUL 25

ESS:jas
(6)

See cover memo Donahoe to Belmont, captioned "Donald E. Keyhoe, Miscellaneous - Information Concerning (Nationalities Intelligence)," dated 9/26/58, ESS:jas.

60 OCT 14 1958

MAIL ROOM ☐

ESS:jas
10-3-58

C. Sullivan

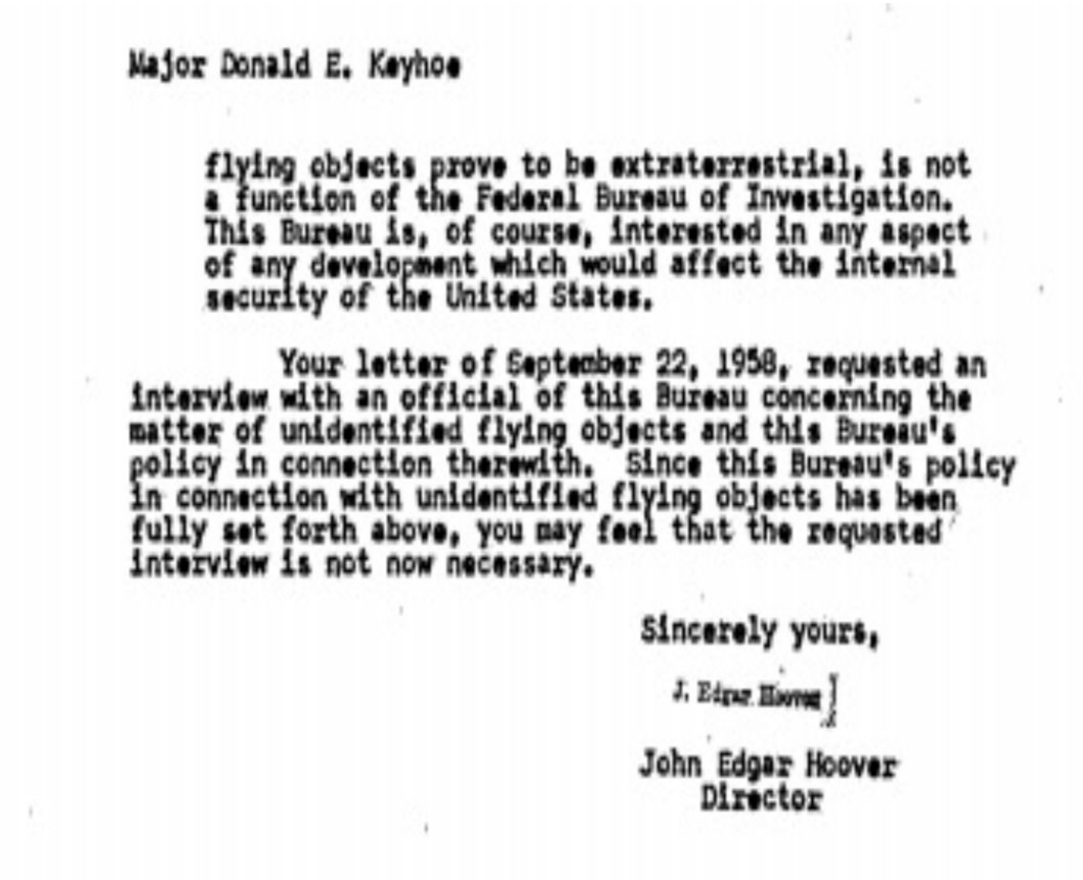

Major Donald E. Keyhoe

flying objects prove to be extraterrestrial, is not a function of the Federal Bureau of Investigation. This Bureau is, of course, interested in any aspect of any development which would affect the internal security of the United States.

Your letter of September 22, 1958, requested an interview with an official of this Bureau concerning the matter of unidentified flying objects and this Bureau's policy in connection therewith. Since this Bureau's policy in connection with unidentified flying objects has been fully set forth above, you may feel that the requested interview is not now necessary.

Sincerely yours,

J. Edgar Hoover

John Edgar Hoover
Director

I requested the FBI conduct a search for additional records, but it indicated no files were located that dated back to 1935, as referenced in the above FBI memo. The reference may have pertained, at least in part, to the mention of Keyhoe's “irresponsible” writing. This was not a perspective limited to the FBI, as it was considered potentially relevant to some of his critics as well.

Keyhoe was a well established writer by the time he authored UFO books, having been published in such popular outlets as *Saturday Evening Post* and *Reader's Digest*. He had also written for some of the most widely distributed pulp magazines on topics considered science fiction or “weird fantasy”. That aspect of his writing career contributed to doubts surrounding his motives and objectivity about the UFO topic. Keyhoe's short story “Through the Vortex” made the July 1926 cover of *Weird Tales*:

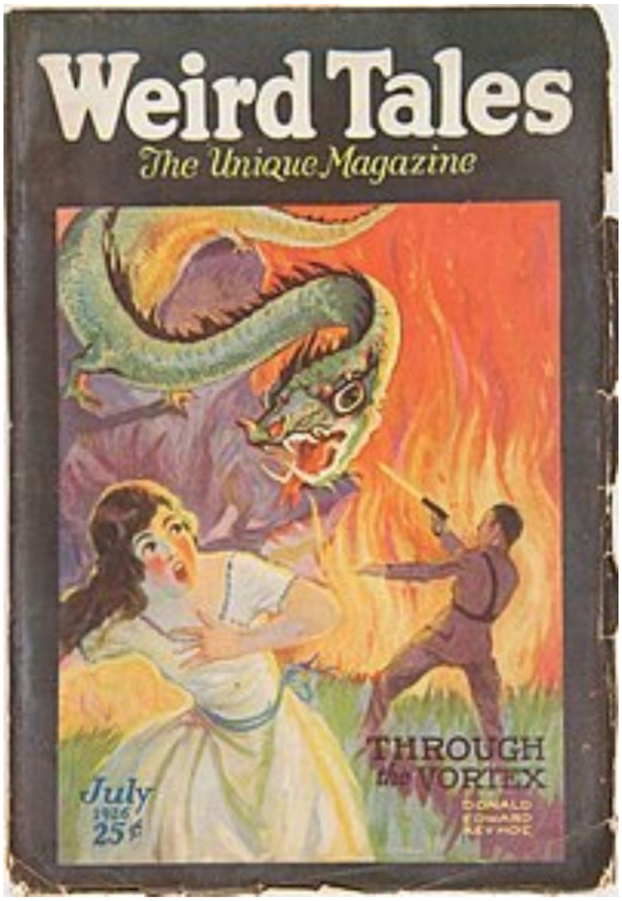

Raymond Palmer was arguably the king of the 20th century pulp fantasy genre, publishing such magazines as *Amazing Stories* and *Fate*. Palmer covered the Kenneth Arnold flying saucer story extensively, as well as some quite dubious UFO cases. The lines between fact and fiction were extremely blurry. It is widely accepted that pulp mags played substantial roles in cultivating public belief in saucers and fringe topics, and their popularity is undeniable.

Files released by the FBI indicate an investigation of Palmer was opened in 1953 after concerns were expressed to the Bureau he was a Communist sympathizer. The perception was based upon articles advocating peace that were published by Palmer. Such points of view were often considered anti-military and unpatriotic. Similar was the case among messages promoted by so-called contactees, who claimed their ET diplomats wanted everybody to just get along.

The FBI did not find Palmer to be a Communist threat, but problems arose in 1954 when he published a story in his *Mystic Magazine* titled “Venusians Walk Our Streets!”. The piece was authored by Paul M. Vest, who claimed acquaintance with said Venusians. Of concern to Hoover was Vest's allegation that FBI labs were in possession of a plate of heavy steel which, according to a letter received by the Bureau, Vest's story claimed “a man from space marked with a half inch deep streak by simply, and without effort, passing his fingernail over it.”

Hoover subsequently confirmed to his satisfaction the Bureau was not in possession of any such steel plate, nor did it have knowledge of visitors from Venus. The director then advised agents to make Palmer, of Evanston, Illinois, aware that was the case. Hoover further requested agents inform Palmer “we do not appreciate having the name of the Bureau used in fantastic stories appearing in his publication to add credence to his stories and articles.”

A resulting FBI memo in response to Hoover indicates Palmer was contacted. He claimed it was an oversight on his part to allow the dubious reference to the Bureau to remain in Vest's story and apologized for it. He also offered to print a retraction, refuting Vest's claim about the FBI. According to the FBI report, Palmer stated “he would be glad to insert an article agreeable to the Bureau” in the next issue of *Mystic Magazine*. He was informed the FBI had no recommendation in that respect, and that whether or not he desired to refute part of Vest's article was solely up to him.

During the course of the interview, Palmer told the FBI he regularly forwarded UFO-related letters to the CIA. The July 22, 1954, memo explains, “Mr. Palmer advised that he receives approximately 50 letters per week concerning flying saucers and pointed out that he takes those letters which appear to be the most feasible and furnishes the information to the Central Intelligence Agency in Chicago, Illinois, noting that he has been advised that they are interested in flying saucer reports.”

A 1953 report contained in the FBI Palmer file lists five publications operated by Palmer at that time, including *Fate*. The report added that *Fate* magazine had a circulation of 65,000. One might wonder if Palmer made similar offers to the CIA as he extended to the FBI about publishing agreeable stories.

The FBI responded to my 2020 FOIA request on Palmer with the above referenced file. It informed me another file might be obtained from the National Archives and Records Administration. NARA responded to my subsequent request that it indeed located and would process the file, which consists of 33 pages, after NARA returns to regular operating procedures following the pandemic. The file has not yet been received as of this writing.

NICAP Secretary Richard Hall piled on the Air Force in a 1959 article in the Hartford Times titled *Air Force Study Called Fiasco*.[61] Hall stated NICAP did not necessarily hold the idea that saucers are vehicles from other worlds. Someone apparently needed to make Director Keyhoe aware that was the case. Keyhoe's public statements obviously suggested otherwise.

In the same article, Hall made the point that UFO data obtained by the Air Force was not available for study by the scientific community, only the conclusions in the form of fact sheets. While Hall's point is well taken, the following item, attached to a message signed by Maj. Keyhoe, is the type of fact sheet NICAP distributed in its literature and apparently preferred:[62]

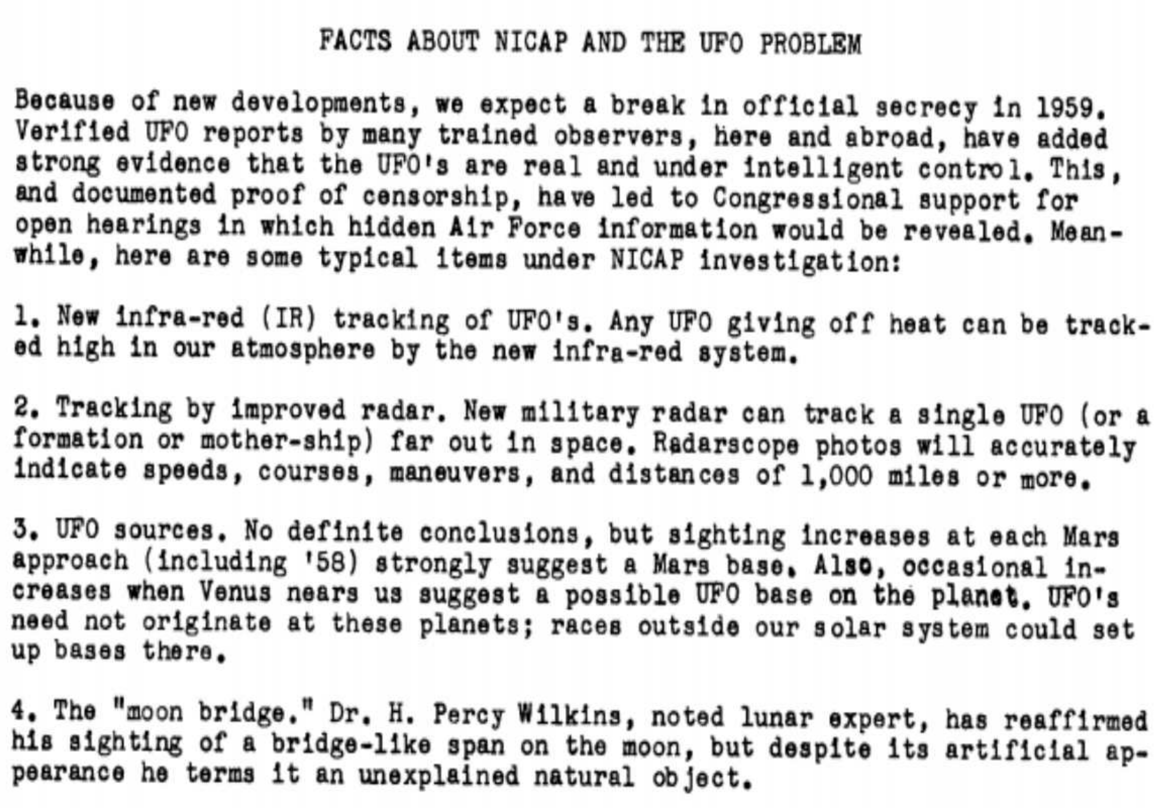

FACTS ABOUT NICAP AND THE UFO PROBLEM

Because of new developments, we expect a break in official secrecy in 1959. Verified UFO reports by many trained observers, here and abroad, have added strong evidence that the UFO's are real and under intelligent control. This, and documented proof of censorship, have led to Congressional support for open hearings in which hidden Air Force information would be revealed. Meanwhile, here are some typical items under NICAP investigation:

1. New infra-red (IR) tracking of UFO's. Any UFO giving off heat can be tracked high in our atmosphere by the new infra-red system.

2. Tracking by improved radar. New military radar can track a single UFO (or a formation or mother-ship) far out in space. Radarscope photos will accurately indicate speeds, courses, maneuvers, and distances of 1,000 miles or more.

3. UFO sources. No definite conclusions, but sighting increases at each Mars approach (including '58) strongly suggest a Mars base. Also, occasional increases when Venus nears us suggest a possible UFO base on the planet. UFO's need not originate at these planets; races outside our solar system could set up bases there.

4. The "moon bridge." Dr. H. Percy Wilkins, noted lunar expert, has reaffirmed his sighting of a bridge-like span on the moon, but despite its artificial appearance he terms it an unexplained natural object.

The suggestion of an impending break in official UFO secrecy was destined to become an assertion of remarkable staying power. Its perseverance weathered some 70 years and is going strong.

In more recent times, the proclamations of intelligence community figures-turned ufologists at To The Stars Academy fueled hope that UFO Disclosure was upon us. The primary flag wavers have since left the organization and the “Academy” appears relatively disbanded as of this writing. Among the TTSA crew was a Pentagon employee asserting he directed a UFO research program, a former Deputy Assistant Secretary of Defense for

Intelligence, a defense contractor, and a veteran CIA officer, among others. The similarities to NICAP were striking.

After their TTSA departures, plenty of talk persisted among them about unidentified aerial phenomena (UAP) maneuvering at excessive speeds, retrieved UFO debris, and the ever present “it's not one of ours” theme. Actual evidence was disappointingly scarce, particularly as compared to talk that it existed but was classified. Like their predecessors from years past, this crew was also fond of intermittently saying it's aliens and then chastising people for accusing them of saying it's aliens. Basically, the current and former TTSA personnel asserted they'd love to tell us what they know but can't, but, not to despair, they would be happy to demand Uncle Sam tell us what he knows and let the saucer out of the bag.

A concern about the credulous acceptance of the TTSA movement was how its leaders and followers alike had tendencies to suggest the circumstances were unprecedented. The talking point was along the lines of government insiders had never before come out in such strong support of the reality of UFOs and made such commitments to bust through the wall of official secrecy. The perspective was simply not true, and those cultivating it were either poorly informed or disingenuous, either of which obviously devalues discourse.

Certain aspects of TTSA were remarkably similar to NICAP, as illustrated in the image below taken from a letter signed by Keyhoe and distributed by NICAP. The message was a staple of the organization, repeated widely.[63]

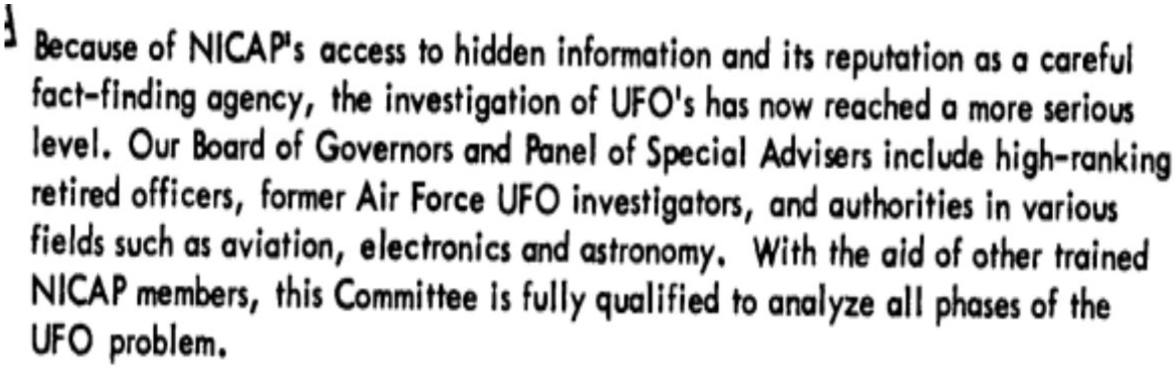

Because of NICAP's access to hidden information and its reputation as a careful fact-finding agency, the investigation of UFO's has now reached a more serious level. Our Board of Governors and Panel of Special Advisers include high-ranking retired officers, former Air Force UFO investigators, and authorities in various fields such as aviation, electronics and astronomy. With the aid of other trained NICAP members, this Committee is fully qualified to analyze all phases of the UFO problem.

The following statement distributed in NICAP literature shows the long held theme of retrieved UFO debris.[64] As in the cases of Maury Island and Dr. Olavo Fontes in Brazil, nothing substantial ever seems to come of these samples.

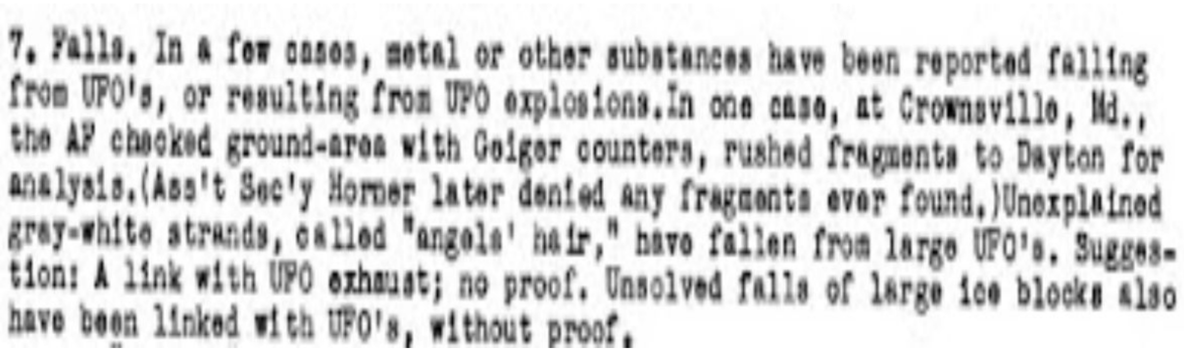

7. Falls. In a few cases, metal or other substances have been reported falling from UFO's, or resulting from UFO explosions.In one case, at Crownsville, Md., the AF checked ground-area with Geiger counters, rushed fragments to Dayton for analysis.(Ass't Sec'y Horner later denied any fragments ever found.)Unexplained gray-white strands, called "angels' hair," have fallen from large UFO's. Suggestion: A link with UFO exhaust; no proof. Unsolved falls of large ice blocks also have been linked with UFO's, without proof.

TTSA representatives frequently discussed alleged exotic metals and UFO debris, often suggesting significant research was in progress. The narrative culminated into securing an Army contract and the rather stunning acquisition of “Art's Parts,” a sample of material of dubious origin. The material was once provided to the late paranormal talk radio icon Art Bell by a listener with a story, and more recently kept in the care of Linda Moulton Howe. Its 2019 transition to TTSA included a $35,000 payday for Ms. Moulton Howe. As of this writing, the story pretty much ended there, other than lots of questions that remain about the Army contract.

Some of the most celebrated TTSA story lines involved the credit the group got for influencing politicians such as Sen. Harry Reid, Sen. Marco Rubio, and former Director of National Intelligence John Ratcliffe to openly discuss UAP. A report from the Office of the Director of National Intelligence was produced in mid 2021. A lot of hope was hung on the circumstances, particularly given there wasn't much else left to cling to about TTSA in the wake of its breakup. You shouldn't be entirely surprised to read there wasn't too much conclusively established about UFOs in the report, and further investigation would be required.

Some felt the UAP report marked an intriguing change of policy by the powers that be, acknowledging a UFO reality of sorts, while at least somewhat proposing a course for future research. Others interpreted the report as less significant, failing to clarify the said phenomena necessarily amount to anything more than incidents lacking enough data to aptly make a conclusive identification of relatively prosaic circumstances.

There is an enormous amount of precedence of official and upper level interest in UFOs, even if often ignored by many current UFO enthusiasts. Involved parties include Barry Goldwater, Gerald Ford, the Clintons, the Rockefellers and many more. Reviews such as conducted by the Robertson Panel are not entirely uncommon by any means, and discussions of UFOs and the groups that investigate them may be found in the Congressional record.

Reports on the overall UFO situation, as well as specific incidents and intelligence studies, have been produced by the CIA, Air Force and other authorities, even if their thoroughness and sincerity may often be argued.

We might observe about TTSA, similarly to NICAP, that it is quite concerning when intelligence officials, of all people, seem to either not understand the problematic nature of demanding UFO Disclosure or, for whatever reasons, pretend they do not. In the case of NICAP, it did not have 70 years of hindsight to draw upon. TTSA did.

We might consider similar about inadequate research practices. For instance, it would seem such seasoned personnel would be keenly aware of the importance of presenting evidence for public review, as compared to demanding claims be accepted on faith.

Intelligence officials and scientists are rather uniquely qualified to understand the 'put up or shut up' principle, and should anticipate being held accountable for providing verifiable proof in proportion to assertions. They should *expect* to be questioned about unsupported suppositions presented as facts. They are otherwise indistinguishable from UFO story peddlers who disingenuously target audiences who simply do not know any better.

Vulnerable demographics in the UFO genre are all too eager to embrace stories that support their bias. They are historically considered advantageous targets for charlatans due to their willingness to support and defend those who tell them what they want to hear, all the while showing a near total lack of concern for verifying the claims.

When less scrupulous UFO investigators avert from journalists who pose relevant, pointed inquiries, and they become defensive about an increasingly apparent lack of research integrity, it is entirely reasonable to question the value of their contributions to a body of evidence. We not only have the right, but the responsibility.

Hoover and the Bureau may have held fast to a public policy of neutrality towards NICAP, but by 1961 internal reports revealed a much more decisive view.[65] Information was compiled for the New Orleans Field Office after a clerk inquired whether there would be any objection to becoming active in NICAP. The resulting FBI report frowned upon the NICAP attack on the Air Force and criticized Keyhoe's writing.

“A number of former United States military officers have been affiliated with the NICAP,” the document continued, “and Keyhoe has openly attempted to capitalize upon their names and military titles. The Bureau has been most cautious in handling correspondence from the NICAP to avoid any inference that we hold views, either favorable or unfavorable, to this organization.

“As the above information regarding Donald Keyhoe and the NICAP reflects, the NICAP is not the type of organization with which the Bureau's name should become connected – either through membership of FBI employees in the NICAP or by any other means.”

It is for such reasons I find it difficult to accept without question that intelligence professionals decide to get involved with UFO organizations, sometimes deeply so, in strictly recreational capacities. It often just doesn't make sense for a number of reasons.

Meanwhile, members of the public persisted in writing Hoover and requesting guidance on NICAP. In 1962 a high school student, expressing concern about Communism and interest in propaganda, posed a question to the FBI director. The young man wanted to know if Hoover thought NICAP was either inspired or influenced by Communism.

Hoover diplomatically explained in response the FBI was strictly an investigative agency of the federal government and did not provide evaluations on organizations. He soon added, “Perhaps you will like to refer to my books, 'Masters of Deceit' and 'A Study of Communism'.”[66]

CHAPTER 10

KEYHOE YEARS

Whatever culmination of events may specifically have contributed to the formation of NICAP, Donald Keyhoe at least seemed to be flying solo, independent of intelligence agency influence in daily operations. He was assisted by a cast, significant members of which included but were not limited to Richard Hall, Gordon Lore, Isabel Davis, Ann Druffel, Ted Bloecher, Don Berliner, and Larry Bryant. Many who contributed at NICAP became higher profile members of future UFO organizations and the UFO research community at large.

For all of its faults and questionable motives, NICAP was quite effective in some areas. Keyhoe and his closest allies were committed to certain standards of evidence, even if their methods of applying those standards might have been called into doubt at times. NICAP frequently made a point of criticizing aspects of the UFO circus it felt devalued the topic. Circumstances and people involved in such devaluing, Keyhoe reasoned, made it all the more difficult to accomplish getting the subject of UFOs taken seriously. NICAP committed itself to calling out those who tried to capitalize on the UFO topic through questionable means, a policy largely abandoned by future UFO organizations and to the detriment of the genre.

To be clear, many UFO organizations and high profile “researchers” became shameless enablers of poor investigative practices and sensational yet unverified tales. The most widely accepted reasons for such tactics is those tales put butts in seats. Little concern is typically given to the damage sustained to the credibility of an organization, the genre as a whole, or the consumers.

UFO writers and similar such individuals who rely on popularity for livelihood are often extremely hesitant to critically examine any story being embraced by their targeted audience. They would often much rather ride coattails than implement professional research standards. Likewise, they frequently refuse to acknowledge scientific findings that contradict cherished beliefs, such as those pertaining to memory fallibility, the unreliability of witness testimony, and even forensics research which could be implemented in some instances. Such common practices might be considered particularly hypocritical and self-defeating given the genre's disingenuous longstanding claim to strive for acceptance from the scientific community.

Among those criticized by Keyhoe were contactees, a demographic who claimed to interact with flying saucer occupants from other worlds. Keyhoe floated the idea contactees should be administered lie detector tests, facilitated by NICAP.

He was likewise outspoken against charlatans who incorporated UFOs into their scams. Keyhoe took the opportunity in 1957 to write a letter of congratulations to FBI Director Hoover when a Bureau investigation resulted in just such an arrest. The accused had used a UFO story as a tool to swindle a woman out of 38 grand. Calculating inflation, that would currently be over $360,000. From an ensuing article:[67]

“Following up the FBI arrest of Harold J. Berney, 59 year old ex-convict, for a 'Trip to Venus' swindle in Washington, D.C., the National Investigations Committee has congratulated FBI Director, J. Edgar Hoover, for exposing the fraud and has offered its full cooperation in securing evidence of other false UFO claims.

“'One of our purposes,' NICAP wrote Director Hoover, 'is to turn the spotlight on such fraudulent claims, whether made for personal gain, publicity or other reasons. Acting for the Board and the members of NICAP, I should like to congratulate you and the Federal Bureau of Investigation for your public exposure of this case.'

“Berney was arrested in Alabama on charges of swindling Pauline E. Goebel, Washington, D.C., out of $38,000 in an alleged scheme to set up communications between Venus and the earth.

“Berney's arrest followed his attempt to sell a book manuscript in which he had related a dramatic story of visits to Venus.

“According to Berney, he was picked up by a flying saucer which landed in Texas with two frozen bodies inside. After transferring to a larger ship, the story ran, Berney reached Venus where he learned advanced sciences and cultures. During his stay, Berney said, he was chosen to be an earth agent for Venus, specifically to set up a communications system.

“A publisher to whom Berney submitted the manuscript tipped off Washington police and Detective Sgt. Millard Dixon uncovered some interesting facts which brought in the FBI.

“After producing a new type of antenna, Berney had set up a Delaware company he called the Telewand Corporation. Miss Goebel and another backer financed the operation, according to the FBI, including the 'trips to Venus' which Berney reported. Later a package reached the backers, supposedly from a Venusian comrade of Berney's named Ucellus. Inside were Berney's camera, his credentials, pictures of his family and about $300 in cash. Along with these was a message saying that Berney had died on Venus.

"A check on Berney's record, according to the FBI, disclosed that he had served two years for selling watered stocks in Michigan, eight years for violating postal regulations in West Virginia, and five years on another charge in Florida.

"Following Berney's trail from Eagle Pass, Texas, where the package had been mailed, the FBI located him working as a sign painter in Pritchard, Alabama, where the arrest took place."

The article went on to explain Hoover diplomatically stated to Keyhoe in a June 6, 1957, response, "I have received your letter of May 29, 1957, concerning our activities in the 'Trip to Venus' case and I want to thank you for your thoughtful congratulations."

One of the more fabled Keyhoe incidents involved his January 22, 1958, live CBS television appearance on Armstrong Circle Theater. His microphone was cut during the program as he asserted a Congressional committee was examining evidence that would prove UFOs were machines under intelligent control. Resulting accusations of conspiracies and censorship thrived.

The CBS director of editing countered that the program was carefully reviewed for security reasons. Statements to be made by Keyhoe on the show were reportedly cleared beforehand with the Air Force by the network, and Keyhoe was seemingly silenced when he deviated from the script.

Keyhoe's point of view on the matter as expressed in his subsequent letter, apparently distributed by NICAP to its mailing list:[68]

Armstrong
A-6

NATIONAL INVESTIGATIONS COMMITTEE
ON AERIAL PHENOMENA
WASHINGTON 6, D. C.

TELEPHONE: NOrth 7-9434
CABLE ADDRESS:
SKYLIGHT

ADMINISTRATIVE OFFICES:
1536 CONNECTICUT AVE., N. W.

January 28, 1958

MAJOR DONALD E. KEYHOE
USMC (RET.) DIRECTOR

Dear friend:

Please accept my apologies for this form letter, made necessary by hundreds of queries about the Armstrong Theater UFO program. The statement I began when cut off the air was as follows:

"In the last six months, we (NICAP) have been working with a Senate committee investigating official secrecy on Unidentified Flying Objects. If open hearings are held, I feel it will prove beyond doubt that the flying saucers are real machines under intelligent control."

This statement was discussed with a sponsor's representative and he agreed it would get wide attention; but later the producer told me that since he personally was not informed he had no choice under CBS rules but to cut me off; however, even though this action was not deliberate censorship by CBS, strong AF pressure previously had caused deletion of a vital statement from my script. This script contained a statement listing four Air Force documents never officially released but which had been confirmed by the former chief of the AF Project Blue Book, Capt. E. J. Ruppelt, and by another former Project officer. The documents were:

1. A September 23, 1947 secret conclusion by Air Technical Intelligence Center (ATIC) that the flying saucers were real.
2. A 1948 top secret ATIC document concluding that the UFOs were interplanetary spaceships.
3. A secret Air Force Intelligence analysis of UFO maneuvers, also concluding that the objects were interplanetary.
4. A secret report by a panel of top scientists convened at the Pentagon in January 1953 which urged a) that the Air Force quadruple its UFO project, and b) that they give the American people all UFO information, including secret Air Force conclusions, unsolved sightings and photo analyses. (These recommendations were officially rejected.)

According to one of the program staff, when my script was shown to the AF representative he warned that the Air Force would immediately deny the documents' existence if I were permitted to make the statement. This would also include denouncing the quoted source—their own former Project chief—even though his book containing these items had been cleared by Air Force Security and Review. This Air Force threat, which appears to be censorship by intimidation, caused my planned statement to be cut out. In addition, though the program officials tried to present an impartial program, the AF insistence on an unfair share of the time forced me to delete many factual items refuting most AF claims. Among these were: Listing of official orders which silence armed forces personnel; citing of an AF letter to NICAP by Maj. Gen. Joe Kelly, Director Legislative Liaison USAF; refusing to release UFO reports; and admitting they are classified "For official use only."

In case you wish to join us and help to make all the facts public, we are enclosing information on NICAP. Regardless, we appreciate your interest and your protest against secrecy on this vital subject.

Sincerely yours,

Donald E. Keyhoe

Major U.S. Marine Corps (Ret.) — Director of NICAP

DEK:RHC

A privately-supported fact-finding body serving the national public interest

It is not difficult to understand Maj. Keyhoe's perspective. That stated, his assumptions and preferred conclusions are reflected in his numbered points. He suggested a secret conclusion was reached that flying saucers were “real”; secret documents concluded UFOs were interplanetary spaceships; and he strongly implied the 1953 Robertson Panel advocated some kind of UFO disclosure policy.

Those claims are not entirely incorrect in all instances, not exactly, but they are certainly not accurate either. Keyhoe often alluded to information contained in some select reports, but took great liberty with context. I tend to think such discrepancies were typically due to the major's overwhelming desire to believe his suspicions were correct, combined with a certain amount of hearsay and similar dynamics that muddied the proverbial waters. I suspect that to be the case as compared to intentional distortion of the circumstances, but I of course do not conclusively know what drove Donald Keyhoe. I just tend to think the major succumbed to motivated reasoning, and he was clearly immersed in personal grudges. It's not difficult to envision he had a lot emotionally vested in chasing his white whale.

As Keyhoe indicated, there were in fact some reports associated with projects Sign and Grudge that suggested the possibility some UFOs could be interplanetary spacecraft. The conjecture was obviously not conclusive. Moreover, we now know the Robertson Panel collectively concluded the biggest threat from UFOs was related to propaganda, and the Panel actually found the UFO evidence presented to be unconvincing.

Keyhoe's incorrect supposition foreshadowed use of a tactic destined to characterize certain questionable researchers – and which would ultimately haunt truth seekers - for decades to come: as long as a claim could not be falsified, it was thoroughly promoted for maximum benefit. As this related to government reports and eventual FOIA researchers, the proverbial smoking gun document was perpetually believed, or at least claimed to be believed, to be just around the corner.

It was speculated the Robertson Panel report would tell all. When it did not, this was suspected to surely be due to a carefully orchestrated cover-up. The pursuit was then on to the next cache of documents, promoted as the ones “they” didn't want us to see. It was then fair game to purport the highly sought after docs would reveal most anything anybody felt like speculating, at least until it was conclusively discovered they did not. The process would then repeat. Many researchers were so certain their suspicions were correct that it didn't seem to ever occur to them what the circumstances might look like if, in fact, there were no documents confirming interplanetary spacecraft. The very notion of no hidden, damning UFO documents continues today to be considered by many to simply be outside the realm of possibility.

Perhaps in some instances, like the case of the MJ-12, some guys just decided to make their own so-called government documents. It's not as if there wasn't a demographic fully primed and eager to believe the batch of papers was authentic.

Later in 1958 Keyhoe was on another television show, The Mike Wallace Interview. Such public relations appearances were common for the NICAP leader.

The tolerant but skeptical Wallace allowed Keyhoe plenty of room, but did indeed question some of his proclamations. Keyhoe asserted the same four points about official government documents as contained in his above letter. Wallace countered that the Air Technical Intelligence Center was contacted at the Pentagon and strongly disputed Keyhoe's claims about the contents and even existence of the docs.

The show host conceded, however, the issue really came down to a matter of why Keyhoe believed the Air Force would conceal such information and deceive the American public. Keyhoe argued the reasons involved minimizing panic, and implemented as an analogy a famous Orson Welles radio broadcast, *The War of the Worlds*. It originally aired in 1938 and depicted a Martian invasion that scared the daylights out of listeners who thought it was really happening. The creative work was adapted into a film in 1953, just five years prior to the Wallace-Keyhoe interview.

Mike Wallace referenced the previously explored Harvard astrophysicist Dr. Donald Menzel. His status was cited as a leading authority in the scientific community who held a dismissive view of UFOs. Keyhoe challenged the doctor's assessment, suggesting the man was simply wrong.

“What would you like to see done about flying saucers that is not currently being done?” Wallace asked Keyhoe, a question I personally appreciated. Keyhoe's response included suggesting viewers write their Congressmen and urge inquiries and hearings, circumstances that have since not proven particularly productive on several occasions, spanning multiple generations. As I write this, rumblings for Congressional UFO hearings are once again making news cycles.

In a fascinatingly paradoxical sign of the times, the video clip of the interview includes Mike Wallace holding a lit cigarette made by Parliament, the show sponsor. Wallace periodically takes a break from his no nonsense investigative journalism to ironically explain the superior quality of the

Parliament filter, findings, he asserts to the audience, to be confirmed by the United States Testing Company.

In 1958 NICAP landed a researcher who substantially shaped its future. Richard Hall was born on Christmas in 1930 in Hartford, Connecticut. According to his resume, he enlisted in the Air Force in 1949.[69] He enrolled at Tulane University in 1954 and graduated with a BA in philosophy and minor in mathematics.

Hall first became aware of Keyhoe's writing in the early 1950's while serving in the Air Force. A few short years later, while attending Tulane in New Orleans, he came across a letter written from Keyhoe to the college's resident astronomer. By that point Hall was publishing his own newsletter, *Satellite*, and immediately upon learning of NICAP wrote Keyhoe and offered his services. It was after his 1958 graduation, Hall later wrote in 1994, that he set off to the nation's capital “on an adventure that would dominate my life until this day.”

He was soon offered a part-time position with a commitment from Keyhoe it would become full-time as finances improved. “The prospect of receiving any salary at all for investigating UFOs was irresistible,” Hall wrote. He would go on to be credited with organizing NICAP subcommittees, coordinating a network of investigators, and editing publications, among other responsibilities and substantial contributions.

A transcript of a 1958 article published in the Fayetteville Observer quoted Hall as stating there was no doubt in his mind UFOs were real. It did not necessarily have to follow that they were spaceships, he added, but identified that as “probably the most reasonable explanation.”[70]

“Somebody knows a lot more about UFOs than they are willing to admit,” Hall asserted, “but the public in general is blissfully unaware that it is being deprived of the facts.”

Although NICAP enjoyed support among the UFO faithful, that was not the case with entirely everyone who kept an eye cast towards saucer-hunting researchers. The late Jim Moseley had an infamous streak for skeptically-minded humor, often portrayed in his long running newsletter, *Saucer Smear*. In his 2010 book, *Shockingly Close to the Truth!*, Moseley explained Hall occasionally contributed content to *Saucer Smear* while attending Tulane. Moseley added he thought Hall considered himself “a high-powered intellectual,” and provided the following account:

“Sometime in 1958 or 1959, Hall and I had a telephone conversation concerning my 'attacks' on NICAP. Almost before we began, he asked me if I was taping our chat. I truthfully told him I wasn't and that I didn't own a tape recorder (I still don't). He kept coming back to this, alleging he could hear clicks on the line and so on. I kept denying it. Finally, Hall practically shouted into the phone that I was lying, that he *knew* I was taping the call. I saw red, yelled 'Paranoid!' into the phone, and slammed down the receiver. Things haven't been the same between the suspicious, ill-tempered, and very full of himself Dick Hall and me since."

Longtime UFO proponent and author Jerome Clark expressed a different view of Hall. "Under the sometimes fierce exterior," Clark wrote in a tribute to the late researcher, "Dick was a warm, gentle, witty, and forever curious man. He had many friends, and all of us will never cease missing him. He was a giant in ufology's earth."

Clark further suggested in his tribute to Hall it was more apparent all the time the extraterrestrial hypothesis was a correct explanation for some UFO reports. This, Clark implied, further demonstrated the wisdom Hall and he possessed. I would not agree, and I would be critical of Clark's choice to present the ETH in more of a factual context than matter of opinion.

It has been said money is not the primary reason most people stay at a job, and the notion is certainly supported by a review of NICAP. Keyhoe addressed the organization's financial shortcomings in a 1959 Director's Report to the Board of Governor's and Panel of Special Advisors.[71] He explained that he was often not drawing his own salary, and the organization was chronically behind in paying employees Richard Hall and Elizabeth Kendall. The latter, Keyhoe noted, worked five nights per week processing mail, filing material and the like. Kendall often voluntarily worked for free, or more hours than she was scheduled to be paid, due to her interest in UFOs. Keyhoe indicated he sometimes paid her out of his own pocket when able.

Keyhoe informed the Board he gave Hall a full-time position due to Hall's abilities to analyze UFO reports, write articles, handle correspondence and such. Hall's experience with UFO research was noted, as was the fact he declined better offers than NICAP could match from other potential employers.

According to the salary structure set up by the Board in 1957, Hall should have been receiving $6,000 per year, or what would be the current equivalent of over $57,000, factoring inflation as of this writing. However, Keyhoe explained further, Hall was initially only offered $45 per week. The pay was eventually upped to $270 per month, which would have been a bit over $2,400 monthly, calculating inflation.

At the time Keyhoe composed the 1959 report, he explained, NICAP had been unable in recent months to even pay Hall the $45 per week. To add insult to injury, Hall lent NICAP money.

“Not only that,” Keyhoe reported about failing to pay the young writer even his original salary, “Hall has borrowed on his insurance to loan NICAP money.”

The 1959 report included an itemized budget. The budget, excluding salaries, is pictured below:

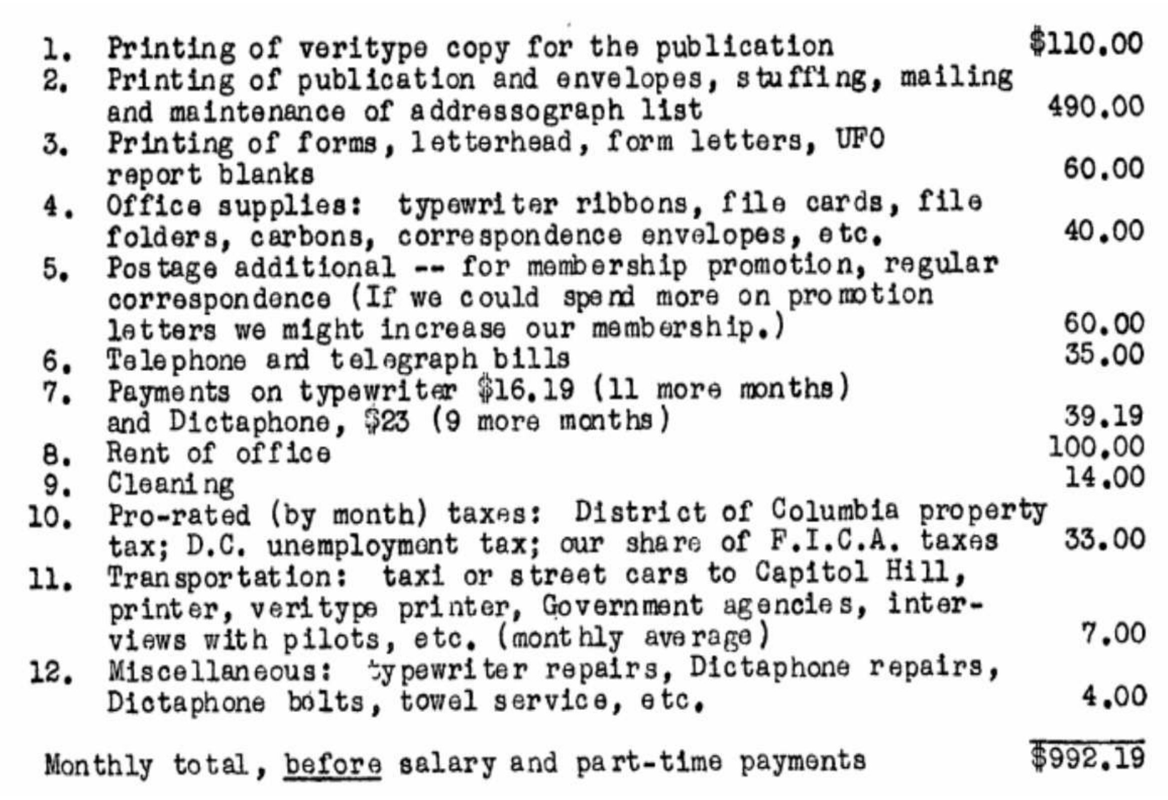

1.	Printing of veritype copy for the publication	$110.00
2.	Printing of publication and envelopes, stuffing, mailing and maintenance of addressograph list	490.00
3.	Printing of forms, letterhead, form letters, UFO report blanks	60.00
4.	Office supplies: typewriter ribbons, file cards, file folders, carbons, correspondence envelopes, etc.	40.00
5.	Postage additional -- for membership promotion, regular correspondence (If we could spend more on promotion letters we might increase our membership.)	60.00
6.	Telephone and telegraph bills	35.00
7.	Payments on typewriter $16.19 (11 more months) and Dictaphone, $23 (9 more months)	39.19
8.	Rent of office	100.00
9.	Cleaning	14.00
10.	Pro-rated (by month) taxes: District of Columbia property tax; D.C. unemployment tax; our share of F.I.C.A. taxes	33.00
11.	Transportation: taxi or street cars to Capitol Hill, printer, veritype printer, Government agencies, interviews with pilots, etc. (monthly average)	7.00
12.	Miscellaneous: typewriter repairs, Dictaphone repairs, Dictaphone belts, towel service, etc.	4.00
	Monthly total, before salary and part-time payments	$992.19

The strong majority of expenses were costs associated with the printing of publications. Of the roughly $1,000 per month budget, a figure that would be over nine times higher if we factor inflation, substantially over half was allocated to printing, postage, and related items. That was certainly a factor in NICAP chronically failing to meet its newsletter commitments.

If minimum salaries for Hall and Kendall were added to the equation, the payroll would substantially increase the total expenses, before even counting the pay owed to Keyhoe. As future organizations and researchers learned, it was difficult to consistently raise that kind of money to pay people to specialize in UFOs.

In a 1957 report, Keyhoe previously told the Board the primary purpose of NICAP personnel was to investigate and report facts. “This is our main job,” he wrote with authority, underlining the final words of the phrase for emphasis.[72] How well he understood the differences between reporting facts and trying to persuade people to agree with him may be at issue, but it seemed clear enough he felt it was the NICAP purpose.

Trouble was, Keyhoe could not count on NICAP for his livelihood. The funds just frequently were not available. According to his reports to the Board, it was not unusual for him to spend more of his personal money on the organization than he earned.

Financial challenges momentarily aside, we might still consider the reasons researchers of the era thought their work was urgent and justified full-time, paid employment. It seems UFO investigators of the 1950's were often under the impression flying saucers were interplanetary vehicles, and that their perceived arrival was a relatively new occurrence. That might account for some of Keyhoe's passion and martyr-like behavior. It might seem much more difficult to envision how present day ufologists continue to attach such urgency to the notion of extraterrestrial visitors and similar concepts, as if the ideas are novel or some important event is imminent, in spite of the fact the genre has collectively held to that belief now for some 70 years.

In late September 1961 Maj. Keyhoe was written a letter by Betty Hill.[73] She described the now famous UFO sighting she experienced with her husband Barney less than a week earlier. Richard Hall forwarded Betty's letter to Walter N. Webb, who headed the Massachusetts NICAP Unit #1 Subcommittee at Cambridge. Webb was an astronomer who studied under Dr. J. Allen Hynek.

Betty's September 26, 1961, letter to Keyhoe did not include a description of having been abducted and examined by aliens. It seems to have taken the Hills a while to develop those perceptions. Her letter stated Barney saw “many figures scurrying about” on a pancake-shaped craft when he viewed it through binoculars. Betty added Barney's “mind has completely blacked out” about what happened after he made the observation, and indicated the couple was considering the services of a competent psychiatrist who used hypnotism.

Walter Webb soon made contact with the Hills. His October 26, 1961, resulting initial report is considered documentation of the first interview conducted with the Hills by a UFO investigator. Some future researchers would refer to it as a significant tool in identifying ways the story evolved and was seemingly embellished over time.

Webb wrote a final report on the Hill case in 1965. Points of interest include an assessment of the case as rendered by Dr. Benjamin Simon, the psychiatrist who worked with the couple and implemented hypnosis, apparently as a means to treat emotional trauma.

Webb explained Simon believed the Hills saw an aircraft of some kind, either conventional or perhaps classified, during what came to be known as the first encounter. The doctor did not suspect it was an alien spacecraft. Likewise, Simon did not believe the Hills encountered aliens at a later point in the evening.

“Regarding the second encounter (the abduction story),” Webb wrote, “[Simon] believes it happened only in Betty Hill's dreams and that Barney, upon hearing his wife tell about her dreams repeatedly, finally felt he must have been abducted, too.”

Simon's position has been misrepresented repeatedly as subscribing to alien abduction as an explanation for the Hill case. Not only did Walter Webb document in 1965 the psychiatrist stated no such thing, but multiple sources have concurred, including statements attributed to those familiar with the investigation.[74] The position of Dr. Simon, as reported by Mr. Webb, was also clarified in statements made by Dr. Simon himself.[75] The incorrect framing of Simon's position nonetheless often persists.

In 2016 I wrote about my interactions with Massachusetts mental health professional Donna Killeen, who explained she felt duped by the UFO community and its misrepresentation of Simon's opinion on the Hill's reported abduction. Killeen stated she was once impressed a prestigious psychiatrist was apparently supporting the story, and how that was a critical part of the case to her. It was upon speaking directly to Dr. Simon in the 1970's she came to think otherwise.

Killeen described how Simon explained to her that although he was portrayed in books and the media as believing the Hills were abducted by aliens, he actually never thought that was a likely scenario. Killeen stated Simon indicated he suspected the Hill's perceptions arose out of anxiety and dreams, as Webb likewise documented in 1965 to be the doctor's stance.

“After speaking directly with Dr. Simon,” Killeen explained to me, “I felt duped by the UFO community and media. There was misrepresentation of Dr. Simon's conclusions in the Hill case. These false conclusions were widely continued on in movies, books, etc. I was very disappointed and discounted the case as a result of hearing the truth from the practitioner.”

NICAP and Webb's 1960's documentation of the circumstances could certainly be considered relevant contributions to the genre. That's the case even if the contribution may not have turned out quite like it was initially intended.

By the early 1960's the NICAP Board of Governors was shaping up to include Col. Joseph Bryan III, Maj. Dewey Fournet, and Adm. Herbert B. Knowles.[76] Dozens more were listed as members of a Panel of Special Advisers. Among them were numerous scientists and career military officers, as well as a few names more typically associated with UFO circles, such as Lee Munsick and Leonard Stringfield.

Meanwhile, Richard Hall was apparently a quick study of his mentor Keyhoe, as by 1960 Hall was writing the FBI. I obtained over 20 pages of records pertaining to Hall through a FOIA request submitted to the Bureau. Included was a 1960 letter in which Hall asked Hoover about a UFO photo reported by the Detroit Times and involving FBI agents at the Flint office. Hall requested info about the case as well as clarification if the Bureau had revised its policies to include investigating UFOs, a recurring topic of correspondence between NICAP and intelligence agencies. The FBI response to my request did not include a reply from Hoover to Hall.

The FBI advised me of records transferred to the National Archives and potentially responsive to the request. My subsequent FOIA request to NARA is pending as of this writing.

In 1962 NICAP would again cross paths with an FBI investigation. The above referenced FBI records on Hall include a letter he wrote Hoover. Hall informed the FBI director it had come to the attention of the Committee the Bureau had to some extent investigated a Dr. Frank E. Stranges. A “Doctor of Divinity,” Frank Stranges is quite the story himself.

Hall provided the FBI with a fact sheet on Stranges, which stated he joined NICAP in 1958. The sheet goes on to state the doctor's “sermons” addressed such topics as Communism, parental and juvenile delinquency, crime and, naturally, UFOs. Stranges claimed to have been in contact with “a Venusian in the Pentagon.” He also claimed to be a good friend of Keyhoe, who, incidentally, denied they ever so much as met. Stranges was reportedly in the habit of suggesting to audiences far and wide he was some type of special NICAP member and was authorized to speak on its behalf.

Hall documented to Hoover various communications outlining the circumstances, including inquiries he sent to Stranges about the allegations. Stranges would call them false, going so far on one occasion, Hall explained, as to reply in writing they were “UNFOUNDED accusations.”

Hall would seemingly no sooner get such assurances from Stranges than once again receive word the preacher was asserting his NICAP VIP status and acquaintance with a Pentagon Venusian. Hall explained to Hoover the Venusian story was so widely touted by Stranges it became common public knowledge, and Stranges eventually ceased denying it after he published it in one of his books. The Venusian gained legendary status as Valiant Thor.

It became increasingly apparent to NICAP Stranges was associating himself with what Hall termed “crackpot 'contactee' conventions,” and misusing his NICAP membership. The Los Angeles Subcommittee was subsequently instructed to refund his registration fee and Stranges was informed his membership was revoked.

While this all would have certainly annoyed Hall, I seriously doubt Hoover cared about any of it until he got to the part about Stranges claiming he worked for the FBI. The Bureau had gotten wind of that before, and it was the kind of thing that tended to get Hoover's attention.

By May 1962 Hoover was writing the San Francisco Field Office and directing it to locate Stranges. Hoover instructed, “He should be admonished to cease making any such statements or in any way implying that he is associated with the Bureau.”

The Los Angeles Field Office ended up in the loop and promptly informed Hoover that Stranges was advised as directed. Stranges denied ever stating he was associated with the FBI, an agent documented, adding Stranges claimed he often referred to Director Hoover and the Bureau in a “complimentary manner” during his talks. Stranges further stated he would be more cautious in the future to be certain none of his listeners received the impression he was associated with the FBI. I suspect getting “admonished” by the 1962 LA FBI had a way of rapidly moving one to see things their way.

In 1967 Frank Stranges founded the National Investigations Committee on Unidentified Flying Objects. We might reasonably suspect that was a bit of a dig at NICAP.

A 2020 FOIA request to the FBI on the now deceased Frank Stranges resulted in receiving a 56-page file. It consists of allegations and resulting investigations pertaining to the reverend. The file also contains materials demonstrating what were referred to by the Bureau as his “veiled hints” of having been employed by the FBI.

The Frank Stranges saga offers food for thought about laws, or lack thereof, pertaining to making outlandish claims. It often seems difficult to differentiate between expressing religious-like beliefs and committing fraud. The line seems to get crossed when money is extracted for purposes that cannot be shown to be factual, such as in the previously explored case of Harold

Berney and his “Trip to Venus” swindle, but a lot of ambiguity obviously remains.

Payment of donations, speaker fees, and similar financial transactions become relatively fair game, with legalities often seeming to have little to do with the quality of the information presented. A person can pretty much claim anything they want, and the consequences fall on the consumer. The implications to the UFO genre are obvious. Even more to the point, it has never been against the law to conduct a UFO hoax, and one is particularly likely to avoid trouble if they do not submit falsified reports to law enforcement agencies.

One of the seeming attempts by Stranges to suggest he worked for the FBI without actually saying so, and as contained in his FBI file, is shown below.

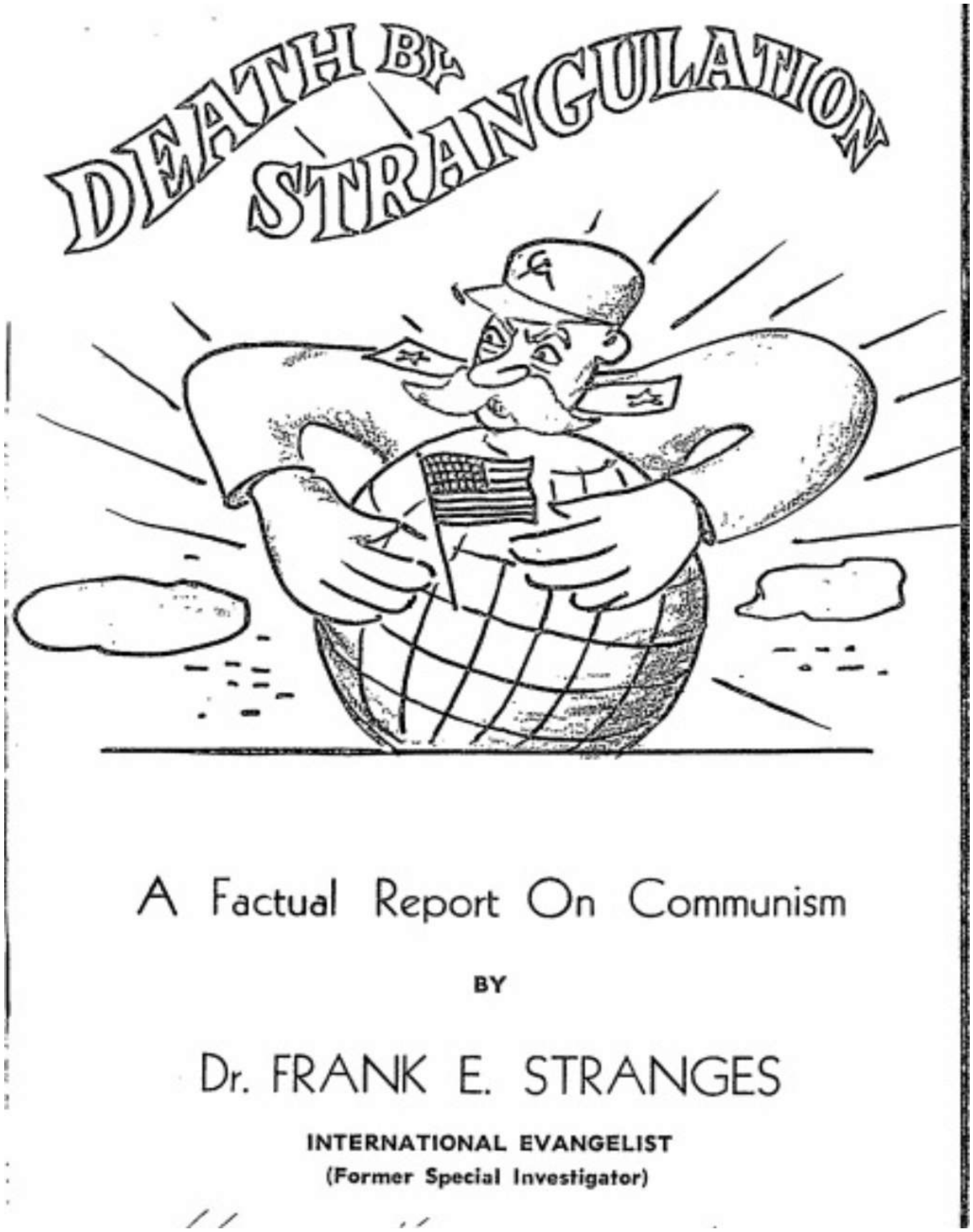

DEATH BY STRANGULATION

A Factual Report On Communism

BY

Dr. FRANK E. STRANGES

INTERNATIONAL EVANGELIST
(Former Special Investigator)

The 2020 FOIA response received from the FBI on Frank Stranges indicated the records provided were released in previous requests. This means a search for files was not actually conducted, only to the extent of files provided as the result of past requests. I subsequently submitted a request for all records not included in the first response. This resulted in a wider search, and obtaining some 20 additional pages of documents on Stranges in 2021.

One of the newly acquired files pertains to a threatening letter sent to Stranges in 1992. A subsequent FBI investigation included documentation of statements from Stranges, who indicated he knew the man who wrote the letter.

The man, Stranges told an FBI agent, was originally a member of his brother's church. Stranges suggested he was like a father figure to the individual, and produced letters received from him in 1987 that were friendly and cordial.

In 1988 or 1989, Stranges continued, the man murdered both of his parents while suffering from severe mental illness. He was subsequently found not guilty of charges by reason of insanity, and placed in a maximum security mental health facility.

Stranges added he kept in touch with the man after the family tragedy and visited him in 1990. When asked why he thought so much had changed in his relations with him, Stranges stated he believed it was due to extreme mental illness and drugs the man was currently taking.

Contact was made by the FBI agent with a caseworker at the facility who stated the man suffered from schizophrenia, was considered a danger to society, and was probably not going to be released anytime soon. However, they added, the individual could be released at some point if a judge deemed them no longer a threat, since they were not convicted of any charges. The caseworker had a bit different evaluation than Stranges for the cause of the threatening letter.

“[The caseworker] stated that [the man] has said he gave quite a large sum of money to the International Evangelism Crusades, and he believes this ruined his life,” the FBI agent reported. “He has fixated on FRANK E. STRANGES, the head of that organization, as the cause of all his problems which led up to his family tragedy.”

The FBI directed the mental health facility to send notification if the man was released, but the Bureau was presumably not needed further on the case. Frank Stranges lived until the year 2008, at which time he passed away in Van Nuys, California.

Learn more about Dr. Stranges by listening to The Saucer Life, a high quality podcast produced by historian and author Aaron Gulyas. He explored the activities of Stranges in episodes titled “A Valiant Effort” and “A Strange(s) Update”.

Also recommended is the work of Adam Gorightly. Find his discussion with the late doctor himself on YouTube, titled “Adam Gorightly Interviews Rev. Frank Stranges!”. Gorightly also wrote about Stranges and his connections to UFO culture in a series of posts at his blog, Historia Discordia.

NICAP files contain reference to what the organization considered “educational work” conducted in 1962. During the first quarter of the year, “special material” was sent to 62 students and teachers for what was described as use in preparing term papers, science projects, research reports, and so on.[77]

Such material included “a bibliography, source material, back magazines, etc.” More shipments for the fall were reportedly being processed.

Similar efforts to “educate” Congress were also undertaken, as indicated in a 1962 form letter apparently authored by Keyhoe:[78]

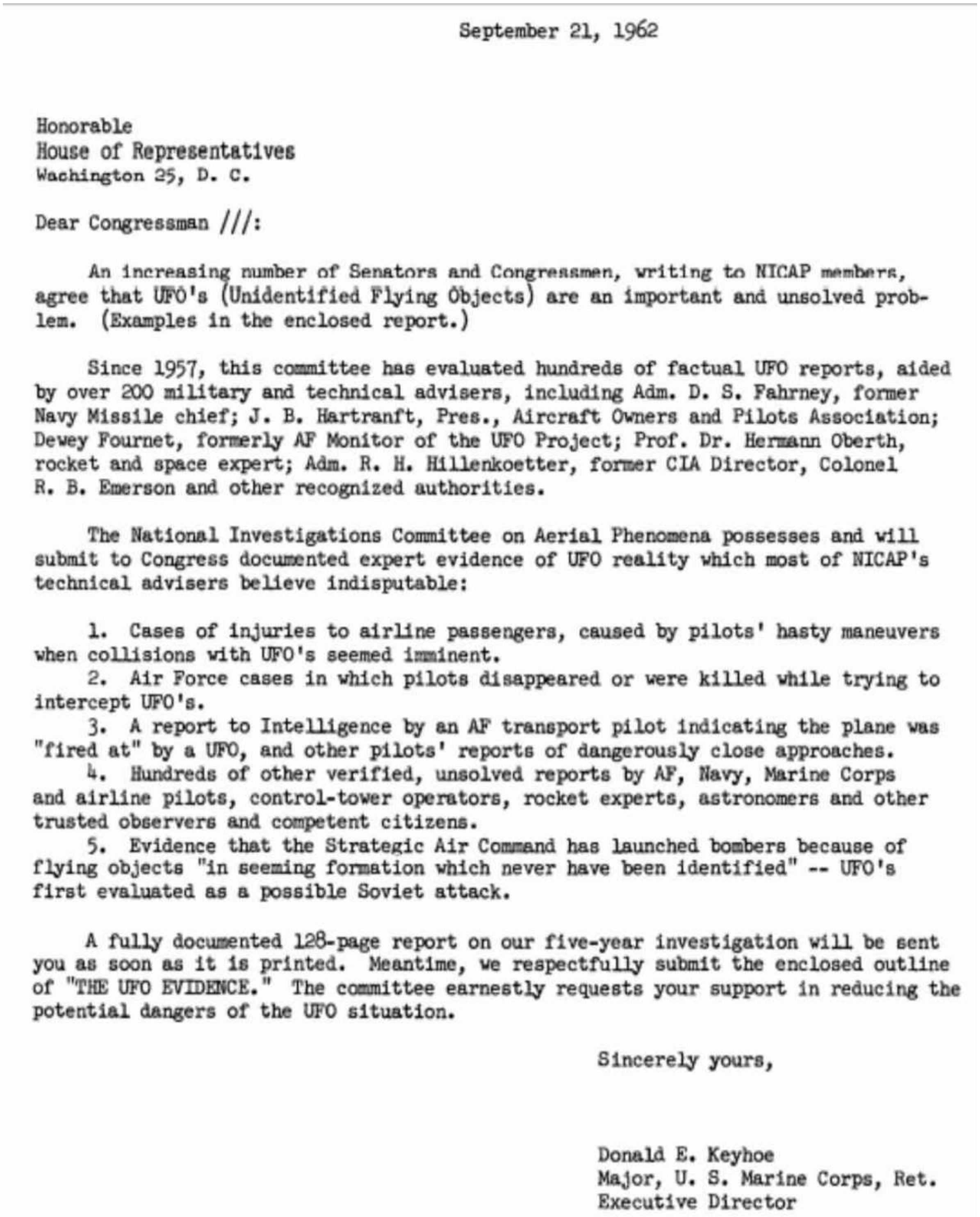

September 21, 1962

Honorable
House of Representatives
Washington 25, D. C.

Dear Congressman ///:

An increasing number of Senators and Congressmen, writing to NICAP members, agree that UFO's (Unidentified Flying Objects) are an important and unsolved problem. (Examples in the enclosed report.)

Since 1957, this committee has evaluated hundreds of factual UFO reports, aided by over 200 military and technical advisers, including Adm. D. S. Fahrney, former Navy Missile chief; J. B. Hartranft, Pres., Aircraft Owners and Pilots Association; Dewey Fournet, formerly AF Monitor of the UFO Project; Prof. Dr. Hermann Oberth, rocket and space expert; Adm. R. H. Hillenkoetter, former CIA Director, Colonel R. B. Emerson and other recognized authorities.

The National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena possesses and will submit to Congress documented expert evidence of UFO reality which most of NICAP's technical advisers believe indisputable:

1. Cases of injuries to airline passengers, caused by pilots' hasty maneuvers when collisions with UFO's seemed imminent.
2. Air Force cases in which pilots disappeared or were killed while trying to intercept UFO's.
3. A report to Intelligence by an AF transport pilot indicating the plane was "fired at" by a UFO, and other pilots' reports of dangerously close approaches.
4. Hundreds of other verified, unsolved reports by AF, Navy, Marine Corps and airline pilots, control-tower operators, rocket experts, astronomers and other trusted observers and competent citizens.
5. Evidence that the Strategic Air Command has launched bombers because of flying objects "in seeming formation which never have been identified" -- UFO's first evaluated as a possible Soviet attack.

A fully documented 128-page report on our five-year investigation will be sent you as soon as it is printed. Meantime, we respectfully submit the enclosed outline of "THE UFO EVIDENCE." The committee earnestly requests your support in reducing the potential dangers of the UFO situation.

Sincerely yours,

Donald E. Keyhoe
Major, U. S. Marine Corps, Ret.
Executive Director

We can observe Keyhoe's tactic of declaring UFOs represented a national security threat. This would hold obvious significance to elected officials and intelligence agencies. Perhaps, however, applying the term “UFO” to such potential threats was not as relevant as UFO proponents might prefer the public believe. Beyond groups like NICAP using the issue as a public relations ploy, it's not clear how the armed forces should do its job any differently if it called air incursions UFOs instead of radar returns. Similar circumstances may be observed today.

Keyhoe previously ran into resistance on such matters. Rep. Joseph Karth, in a 1961 letter to Keyhoe, addressed Keyhoe's proposal for a Congressional hearing. Karth wrote:[79]

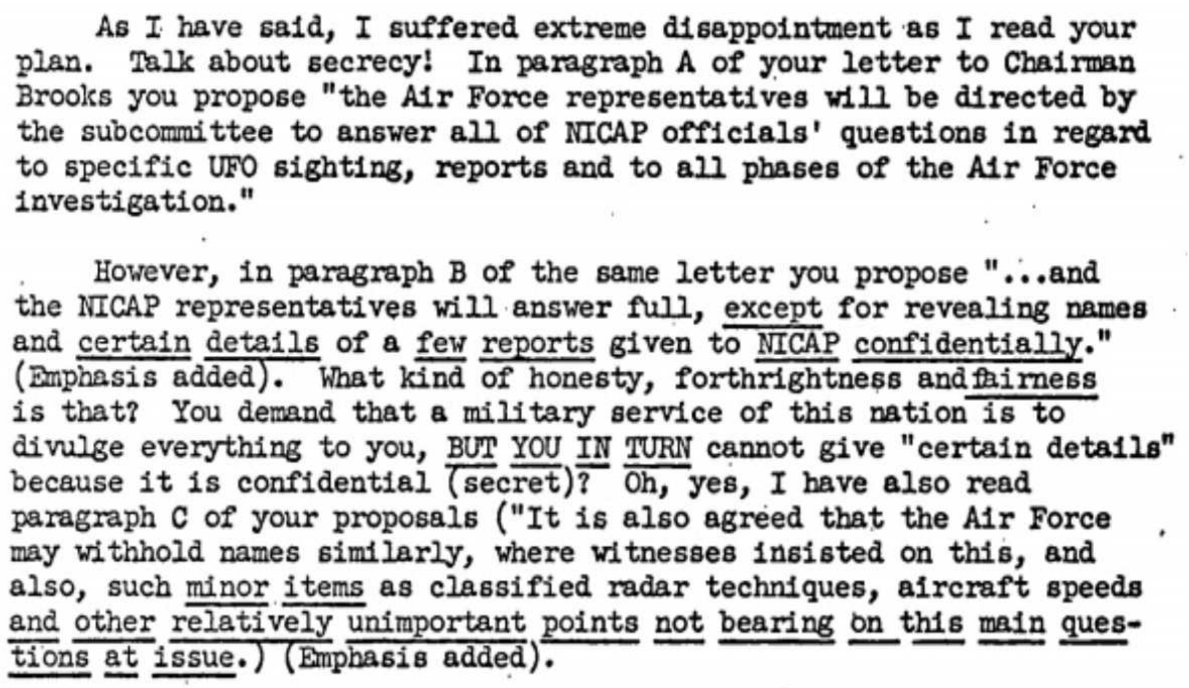

As I have said, I suffered extreme disappointment as I read your plan. Talk about secrecy! In paragraph A of your letter to Chairman Brooks you propose "the Air Force representatives will be directed by the subcommittee to answer all of NICAP officials' questions in regard to specific UFO sighting, reports and to all phases of the Air Force investigation."

However, in paragraph B of the same letter you propose "...and the NICAP representatives will answer full, except for revealing names and certain details of a few reports given to NICAP confidentially." (Emphasis added). What kind of honesty, forthrightness and fairness is that? You demand that a military service of this nation is to divulge everything to you, BUT YOU IN TURN cannot give "certain details" because it is confidential (secret)? Oh, yes, I have also read paragraph C of your proposals ("It is also agreed that the Air Force may withhold names similarly, where witnesses insisted on this, and also, such minor items as classified radar techniques, aircraft speeds and other relatively unimportant points not bearing on this main questions at issue.) (Emphasis added).

Rep. Karth expressed disappointment in Keyhoe's apparent intention to focus on Air Force secrecy as compared to presenting substantial evidence of UFOs. It has since become an all too standard part of the ufologist tool kit to plead their cases based on the obstruction of evidence rather than its presentation.

Furthermore, Karth suggested he questioned Keyhoe's arrogance and hypocrisy concerning national security and secrecy. The Congressman appeared perturbed Keyhoe seemed oblivious to the sensitivity of classified material, referring to it as “minor items,” while expecting to be granted the luxury of withholding information as he saw fit. This of course became a staple of the UFO genre, and it continues today. Such concealed details frequently obstruct fundamental aspects of the universally recognized fact-finding process. The double standards try the patience of the more discerning members of the community at large. Rep. Karth was apparently in the “put up or shut up” camp, and saw the irony in Keyhoe reserving the right to remain silent while demanding answers from men charged with protecting national security.

Nonetheless, as noted in the above 1962 letter penned by Keyhoe, *The UFO Evidence* was on its way. It was destined to be considered among NICAP and editor Richard Hall's most significant contributions to the study of UFOs. From a July 1, 1964 NICAP press release:[80]

“A documentary report charging Air Force censorship of unidentified flying objects was submitted today to Congressman John McCormack, Speaker of the House, and Senator Mike Mansfield, Majority Leader. The report is based on a 7-year investigation by military and technical experts of the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena (NICAP).

“The 184-page document, titled 'The UFO Evidence,' contains hundreds of verified UFO sightings by airline and military pilots, aerospace scientists and engineers, and other experienced observers.

“NICAP, a private fact-finding organization, includes on its Board of Governors and Advisers: Army, Navy and Air Force officers, scientists, veteran pilots, and other specialists...

“The charge of official secrecy was backed by a majority of the Board and Advisers, including Colonel J. Bryan III, USAFR (Ret); Admiral H. B. Knowles, USN (Ret); Dr. Leslie K. Kaeburn, biophysicist, University of Southern California; and Dr. C. P. Olivier, President of the American Meteor Society...

“The NICAP Report covers approximately 750 cases selected from over 5000 on file. The documented cases include numerous reports by Air Force pilots, and incidents of UFOs which made close approaches to aircraft... According to NICAP, the large majority of these cases are totally unsolved. Although Air Force analysts claim to have explained some of the cases, NICAP says counter-to-fact answers have often been given to Members of Congress and the press...

“After the current outbreak of UFO sightings, the Air Force admitted it had 910 unsolved cases out of 8128 - approximately 11%. Heretofore the Air Force had insisted it had solved all but 1 or 2%. The most recent unexplained sighting, according to the Air Force, is the April 24 observation by a police officer in Socorro, N.M., who saw an egg-shaped UFO take off from a gulley. Imprints and scorch marks were found at the site.

"The NICAP report states '...it is a reasonable hypothesis that the unexplained UFOs are real physical objects... artificial... under the control (piloted or remote) of living beings'... Many of the NICAP Board Members and Advisers have gone further, contending that the UFOs are extraterrestrial devices observing the earth. Among these are Col. J. Bryan III; Admiral H. B. Knowles; Prof. C. A. Maney; Dr. Leslie K. Kaeburn; and Capt. William B. Nash.

"Verified cases in the report show speeds and maneuvers beyond the capabilities of any earth-made machines, often confirmed by radar... In addition to the massive U.S. evidence, NICAP reports dozens of foreign cases from trained observers which confirm the observations of high performance objects and lead to the same conclusion.

"In order to reduce the dangers of accidental war caused by misidentification of UFOs on radar screens, and to educate the public to the realities, NICAP advocates a sweeping review of government policies on the subject by Congress. Speaker McCormack and Senator Mansfield have been asked to request UFO hearings. Many Members of Congress in recent years have gone on record in favor of open hearings...

"In releasing the document, NICAP warned that crackpot groups might try to take advantage of it by claiming it supports their views. The Committee disowned any claims that UFOs proved any particular religious or philosophical views currently being expounded by UFO cults. NICAP stated it had not found verification of a single claim of communication with space men."

NICAP would indeed eventually see its hopes come to fruition for a Congressional hearing on UFOs, but before that happened, CIA officers paid a visit to NICAP headquarters. A now publicly available CIA memo dated January 25, 1965, reflects Agency interest in obtaining materials, including UFO reports, from NICAP for delivery to its Office of Scientific Intelligence (OSI). The memo further states OSI desired the information to assist in preparing a paper on UFOs.

The CIA Contact Division met with Richard Hall on January 19, 1965, at which time he loaned the dispatched officers material and UFO reports for review. It was noted in the January 25 CIA document there was a strong feeling on the part of NICAP officials that the Air Force tended to downgrade the importance of UFO sightings. Hall apparently told the CIA officers there had been instances where the Air Force attempted to intimidate witnesses and get them to sign false statements.

In closing, the report stated a security clearance was being requested on Hall. There are various accounts and anecdotes around the UFO community about Hall's interactions with intelligence agencies, often framed as Hall having a rather nonchalant attitude about them. A generally accepted consensus is Hall was never issued a security clearance and did not develop a significant relationship with the CIA, and I have not discovered any particular reasons to suppose otherwise.

A now declassified OSI memo is dated January 26, 1965. You will note it was apparently composed the day after the above memo was written. The OSI memo was sent to the Director of Central Intelligence from OSI Assistant Director Donald F. Chamberlain. It was written in response to a request from DCI John McCone for an assessment on UFOs. The materials borrowed from NICAP contributed to findings reported by Chamberlain in the memo, according to the CIA.

Chamberlain summarized some then-recent UFO reports, adding no evidence was revealed UFOs were of foreign origin or were a security threat to the United States. He clarified OSI monitored UFO reports, including those investigated by the Air Force, and concurred with Air Force conclusions.

Ironically, while Keyhoe and his supporters were convinced an orchestrated UFO cover-up was being perpetrated by the CIA and Air Force, the two agencies were apparently actually in agreement there was not even a threat, at least not from unknown airborne objects. Threats of propaganda and espionage were another story, as suggested previously by the Robertson Panel. An argument could be made such concerns, and the resulting minimization of the topic for what may have been considered in at least some instances the public's own good, contributed significantly to the perception of official UFO secrecy.

Similar might be said about the intelligence community's aversion to publicly addressing UFOs due to reasons that included its own manipulation of the topic in an offensive capacity. Uncle Sam obviously did not want to address his own covert use of the UFO subject.

There was additional irony in the way UFO enthusiasts tended to interpret CIA interest in NICAP. For instance, NICAP and Keyhoe chose to withhold certain information because they did not want to divulge sources of reports and documents. They subsequently feared the CIA was snooping around to infiltrate their lines of communication. That may have been true to some extent, but not for the reasons NICAP chose to believe, which hinged upon the perception the

CIA was scrambling to keep the existence of an extraterrestrial presence from becoming publicly revealed.

In a manner of speaking, NICAP activities and subsequent CIA responses served as a self-fulfilling prophecy for NICAP. Intelligence community actions often seemed to be interpreted to confirm what UFO investigators chose to subjectively believe, and that largely continues to be the case in the UFO genre today.

Gordon Lore explained it was during this point in time he began working at NICAP. In his book *Flying Saucers from Beyond the Earth*, Lore stated he had taken a job as a writer-editor in Washington, D.C. In addition to writing, the future NICAP assistant director was also a musician who played the guitar at night at a local coffee house.

Richard Hall was in attendance during one of Lore's performances in the summer of 1965, Lore wrote. He accompanied Hall and a group of friends back to Hall's apartment where they hung out and Lore entertained some more. Lore told Hall about his interest in UFOs, and was hired to join NICAP by the end of the night. He soon submitted his resignation at what he described as a subsidiary of U.S. News and World Report and was on his way to work with Keyhoe, Hall and NICAP.

“It was to become a dream job,” Lore wrote, “mixed with more than a little anxiety about keeping the organization afloat during the next five years.”

In 1966 a series of dramatic UFO sightings began in Michigan. The widely reported events included dozens of witnesses, as well as police officers giving chase to whatever they were seeing in the sky. Renowned UFO investigator J. Allen Hynek infamously suggested swamp gas as a feasible explanation.

Then-House Minority Leader and future-President Gerald Ford took interest. As an elected official of Michigan, he was among those supporting calls for a Congressional hearing on UFOs. The House Armed Services Committee soon conducted just such a hearing, although it was relatively brief. While there wasn't much in the way of substantial information getting revealed, a chain of events was by that point in motion that would forever shape the timeline of UFO World.

The Air Force announced a forthcoming independent review of Project Blue Book and related UFO evidence. It was titled the University of Colorado Scientific Study of UFOs, conducted by what was known as the Condon Committee due to the lead researcher, physicist Dr. Edward U. Condon.

Richard Hall described events of 1966 and how they influenced NICAP in his previously referenced 1994 paper, *The Quest For The Truth About UFOs: A Personal Perspective On The Role Of NICAP*. With a little help from the UFOs, Hall explained, NICAP was thrust further than ever into the media spotlight. As a result of all the buzz, NICAP was deluged with mail, routinely receiving hundreds of letters a day. Public interest in UFOs, and subsequently NICAP, produced a degree of financial stability previously unknown to the organization.

Don Berliner reported that by early 1967 NICAP grew to some 14,000 members. The Committee then employed nine full-time staff, which, Berliner noted, was more than could be said for the Blue Book payroll.

Hall wrote that NICAP worked diligently to provide Dr. Condon and his staff with the best evidence possible to assist in compiling its report. NICAP understandably saw the UFO study undertaken at the University of Colorado as significant, or, as Hall put it, that their dreams were coming true. The help was enrolled of Dr. James E. McDonald, an outspoken UFO proponent and atmospheric physicist at the University of Arizona. Many UFO proponents probably fully anticipated a desirable outcome, at least initially, because they sincerely believed the evidence *did* indicate an abundance of interplanetary craft. Intelligence agencies and other scientists, not so much.

In his 1973 book, *Aliens From Space*, Maj. Keyhoe stated NICAP eventually compiled some 9,300 UFO cases, 2,000 of which he suggested were top notch. I guess he was suggesting there were aliens all over the place. Perhaps it did not occur to Keyhoe that overwhelming Condon and the public in endless stories might not be as effective a tactic as he hoped.

Hall wrote NICAP “worked on a massive project of copying files for the Colorado scientists.” This went on for over the course of a year and included “hundreds of strong cases,” as well as NICAP subcommittees sending Condon new reports perceived as potentially important.

Keyhoe further wrote that almost right away Condon and the project administrator, Robert J. Low, began indicating to the press they did not anticipate arriving at conclusions supporting anything overly significant about UFOs. The two were quoted as speaking favorably about Air Force investigative efforts, as well as suggesting the government should get out of the UFO business. Such positions were of course in conflict with stances held by NICAP.

In spite of the statements, Keyhoe and NICAP tried to stay the course. That might have particularly been due to repeated assurances received from Condon and Low the study would be conducted objectively, according to the writings of Keyhoe and Lore. Dr. Condon and Robert Low reportedly minimized the significance of their published remarks when asked about them by Keyhoe.

The final straw came for Keyhoe when he learned of what came to be known as the “Trick Memo.” It was a leaked Condon Committee memo written by Robert Low in which he described an operating strategy for the UFO study. The committee would consist of scientists, Low explained, who could not possibly prove a negative result, even though they might indeed publish an impressive body of evidence suggesting there was nothing extraordinary about UFO observations. Low then added, “The trick would be... to describe the project so that, to the public, it would appear a totally objective study, but, to the scientific community, would present the image of nonbelievers trying their best to be objective but having an almost zero expectation of finding a saucer...”[81]

Keyhoe and his organization, when they got wind of the memo, responded with an April 30, 1968 press release, “NICAP Calls Colorado UFO Project Failure”.[82] The release stated NICAP sent a report to the president of the United States, containing evidence of “grave deficiencies” in the University of Colorado UFO project. It was further stated NICAP broke relations with the project after 17 months of cooperation. Reasons listed for the break included Condon had never conducted a field investigation of a UFO sighting or interviewed responsible witnesses, although named as chief principal investigator.

“Dr. Condon summarily discharged two Project scientists,” the news release continued, “for revealing written proposals by Project Coordinator Robert J. Low that the Colorado Project be represented to the public as 'totally objective', when in fact it would be constituted almost entirely of non-believers, with 'an almost zero expectation of finding a saucer'.”

It was further alleged Condon and Low “both refused, in writing, to answer NICAP questions as to whether the Project was being conducted in a biased and negative manner.” Condon, it was asserted, “refused to guarantee he would examine any of the hundreds of NICAP-investigated UFO reports, submitted at the Project's request.”

Keyhoe and NICAP took measures to prepare for public response to what was clearly going to be, from their perspectives, an unfavorable report from Condon. Their efforts included a second Congressional hearing, organized by NICAP supporter Rep. J. Edward Roush, an Indiana Congressman who chaired the House Committee on Science and Aeronautics. He held the Symposium on Unidentified Flying Objects on July 29, 1968.

While a few qualified scientists and NICAP representatives attended and provided testimony, the event was limited in scope. It did, however, mark the historic occasion of a second Congressional hearing on UFOs.

The Condon Report was published in January 1969. The general conclusion stated nothing had come from the study of UFOs that added to scientific knowledge. It was additionally reported, “Careful consideration of the record as it is available to us leads us to conclude that further extensive study of UFOs probably cannot be justified in the expectation that science will be advanced thereby.”

The issue was addressed in the document as to what, if anything, the federal government should do about UFO reports received from the general public. “We are inclined to think that nothing should be done with them in the expectation that they are going to contribute to the advance of science,” the Condon Committee wrote.

If the implications were not clear enough as to what the group collectively recommended about operating government UFO research projects outside normal military channels, it explicitly clarified its stance. “It is our impression that the defense function could be performed within the framework established for intelligence and surveillance operations without the continuance of a special unit such as Project Blue Book, but this is a question for defense specialists rather than research scientists.”

The Condon Committee made its position clear: The study of UFOs was producing nothing of scientific value and Blue Book should be discontinued.

The report, eagerly anticipated by the public, was now actually published. Gordon Lore wrote a memo to the NICAP office in the aftermath. The January 27, 1969, memo declared the organization and the UFO subject were facing perhaps their most critical period. Refuting the Condon Report was crucial and would require cooperation and hard work on the part of NICAP, Lore suggested.[83] Time would show the goal was not to be achieved.

Challenges included quarrels among the staff and a declining membership. If the negative Condon Report wasn't bad enough, it had now been over two full years since the Michigan sightings. People were tired of waiting for answers, or at least the answers they wanted to hear. What's more, a growing number of NICAP supporters' patience was wearing thin about attacking the Air Force.

As explored earlier, it is difficult to tackle the UFO subject without drawing lines in the political sand. This was not only true in Keyhoe's day, but was the case for years to come. As I write this, current news cycles are more likely to include statements about UFOs from Pentagon spokespersons, Senators, and bureaucrats than from scientists. We should take that into deep consideration when forming our assessments. We might also question what practical contribution Congress might even make to the topic of UFOs. In hindsight, much of it seemed to be performative and in pursuit of a mixed bag of agendas.

In the case of Keyhoe, he seemed to have come to believe lobbying elected officials and leveling demands at intelligence agencies *was* UFO research. At the least, it appears he considered it the most likely way to produce substantial results. If his actions were indicative of his beliefs, and he truly thought he was pursuing the most productive path, he was simply wrong. He gave it a hell of a try, though, for what that may or may not be worth.

Many at the time seemed to believe the Condon Report was part of an orchestrated cover-up to deny the reality of UFOs and ultimately the extraterrestrial presence the reported craft were often believed to indicate. More than a few still think so, at least among those in UFO circles who are aware of the Condon Committee. Frankly, I doubt many people could tell you why they believe the study was a sham, the idea just took on the quality of one of those “everybody knows” kind of things.

I strongly suspect very few people could articulate such circumstances as the Trick Memo and offer specific reasons why they believe the Air Force and Condon Committee conspired to deceive the public and cancel Project Blue Book. In most circumstances, the primary reason for such beliefs seems to be because UFOs were not confirmed to be sensational, thus there must have been a government cover-up.

Perhaps there actually were more deceptive motives at play. It's possible, for any number of reasons. It's also possible the Air Force came to conclude chasing UFOs was a waste of time much more often than not, and Condon and Low were subsequently identified as good candidates to arrive at such a conclusion.

It's a reasonable likelihood Air Force officials sincerely found UFOs and the related controversies to be an unproductive drain of resources, and believed objective scientists would concur – as had often been the case up to that point. The powers that be may therefore have identified a somewhat “fixed” study as the best way out of the problem. It may not have been they were trying to rig the study as much as they were trying to ensure it did not fall under the care of overly enthusiastic saucer fanatics.

It could even have been the intent, at least in part, for the Condon Committee to upstage NICAP, and create an alternative group of respected scientists and researchers. The alternative group would, of course, reach different conclusions than those promoted by NICAP. In the process, it would ease the Air Force burden of answering questions about UFOs and constantly finding itself in the crosshairs of Donald Keyhoe.

Richard Hall did not seem to subscribe to conspiracies about the Condon Committee. That was the case even though he was admittedly bitter over circumstances surrounding his August 1969 final departure from NICAP. He described negotiations as long and contentious with Board members Col. Joseph Bryan III and Joseph B. Hartranft, Jr. Hall wrote the conflict was over back salary issues and stated the negotiations ultimately went nowhere.

Hall extensively supplied information to the Condon Committee, as well, which stood to substantially increase his disappointment about the resulting report and overall circumstances. Nonetheless, he did not promote the Condon cover-up angle.

“Was the Colorado UFO Project a conspiracy to debunk the subject?” Hall wrote in 1994. “Another 'front' operation to sweep the UFO problem under the rug? Many UFOlogists today write it off in that way, assuming that it must have been a put-up job from the start. However, there is a much simpler and all-too-human explanation for what happened.”

Condon and Low were simply not interested in UFOs, Hall suggested. Hall wrote that during one briefing he attended, Condon fell asleep.

In another instance, Hall explained he personally hand-carried to Condon what he felt was an impressive and thick investigation report on a 1966 UFO case. When the Condon Report was later released, Hall was astonished to find no mention of it at all.

“It had never occurred to me,” Hall explained, “that he would simply ignore it.”

In his previously referenced 2018 book, Gordon Lore reflected, “Following the public release of the Condon Report, the prospects for NICAP continuing as a viable UFO organization quickly took a downward spiral. Adding fuel to the fire, unfortunately, was Keyhoe himself. Being an organizational and money manager was not his cup of tea. Some had even compared him to 'a second Townsend Brown.'

“In a secret meeting on December 3, 1969, the NICAP Board with Colonel Joseph Bryan III presiding, fired both Keyhoe and myself. It soon became apparent that I had to be terminated as a convenient 'scapegoat.'”[84]

And like that, the Keyhoe years were over.

Staffer Stuart Nixon became director, and John “Jack” Acuff was soon appointed president. Ted Bloecher recalled the circumstances in a letter written to Richard Hall in approximately 1973. He was initially referencing his own business disagreement with Nixon, as compared to those concerning Keyhoe and Lore, when he wrote, “I have underestimated the lengths Stuart is capable of going to. But then, he's the one who fixed it so Major Keyhoe and Gordon Lore got axed. The shame of it is, I went along with it.”[85]

CHAPTER 11

COL. BRYAN

Joseph Bryan III (1904-1993) had the distinction of serving in three different branches of the service, the Army (lieutenant), Navy (lieutenant commander), and Air Force (lieutenant colonel). Bryan reportedly worked for the CIA from the late 1940's until 1953. His apparent background in intelligence and expertise in psychological warfare was not widely known during his years as a staple of NICAP.

Bryan was born into an influential Virginia family. He went to Episcopal High School in Alexandria before attending Princeton University, where in 1927 he obtained an A.B. degree. Bryan had a rather extensive and significant writing career.

The image below is from a 1947 FBI memo, "Subject: Joseph Bryan III," which is part of an FBI file compiled on Bryan and obtained through the FOIA: [86]

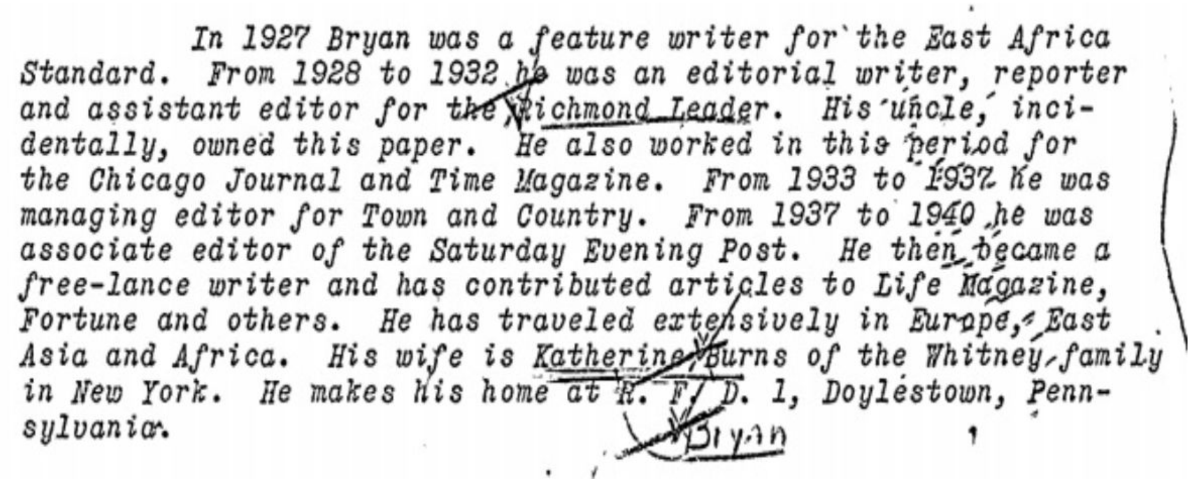

In 1927 Bryan was a feature writer for the East Africa Standard. From 1928 to 1932 he was an editorial writer, reporter and assistant editor for the Richmond Leader. His uncle, incidentally, owned this paper. He also worked in this period for the Chicago Journal and Time Magazine. From 1933 to 1937 he was managing editor for Town and Country. From 1937 to 1940 he was associate editor of the Saturday Evening Post. He then became a free-lance writer and has contributed articles to Life Magazine, Fortune and others. He has traveled extensively in Europe, East Asia and Africa. His wife is Katherine Burns of the Whitney family in New York. He makes his home at R. F. D. 1, Doylestown, Pennsylvania.

Bryan

For a bit of clarification on the "Whitney family" reference, the memo went on to assert, "His mother-in-law is a Whitney and as a result of his marriage he is independently wealthy."

In 1942 Bryan was commissioned a lieutenant in the Navy and his service included assignment to the Southwest Pacific. In 1944 as a lieutenant commander he reported for duty to the Office of Public Relations in Washington.

An online search conducted at the CIA reading room, using the term "Office of Public Relations," returned documents suggesting, as one might expect, the Office served propaganda and intelligence efforts. Interestingly, Navy brass, future NICAP Board member, and inaugural CIA Director Roscoe Hillenkoetter has a few appearances among the documents.

A 1948 letter written to Hillenkoetter from Army Brig. Gen. E.J. McGaw is among the documents that carry implications of the significance of the Office of Public Relations. The general offered an apology in his letter for declining an invitation to meet Hillenkoetter following the latter's public speaking engagement. McGaw indicated he had to promptly leave the event because his presence was required elsewhere. He was unable to stay and make the CIA director's acquaintance, McGaw advised Hillenkoetter, "because Admiral Robert F. Hickey, Deputy Director, Office of Public Relations, Department of the Navy, was arriving at Carlisle Barracks at 12:15 PM."

The CIA online reading room has a few documents that contain reference to both Hillenkoetter and the Navy Office of Public Relations. Additional search returns on the Agency website include a 1947 National Security Council report referencing the Office. The report addresses steps "required to strengthen and coordinate all foreign information measures of the U.S. Government in furtherance of the attainment of US national objectives." It seems an entirely reasonable assumption Bryan's 1944 involvement in the Office of Public Relations helped facilitate his path to the CIA and 1948 Office of Policy Coordination.

The previously referenced 1947 FBI memo indicates the Richmond Field Office reported that after the death of Bryan's father, he inherited his father's stock in Richmond Newspapers, Inc. Bryan was then a small stockholder in the newspaper company apparently owned by his uncle.

The New York Times reported Bryan held editorial positions with *Time* magazine, *The New Yorker* and *Town and Country*, and was associate editor at *The Saturday Evening Post* from 1937 to 1940. He then became a freelance writer. His continued interactions with media outlets, particularly newspaper executives, were destined to become significant to his career in intelligence, as we shall see.

The 1947 FBI interest in Bryan was because he was under consideration by the *Saturday Evening Post* for an assignment to write a series of articles profiling the FBI. Director Hoover and his agents of course wanted to know about the author and assess the likely tone of the series. Bryan was not the first writer considered by the Post for the project, and the Bureau previously expressed dissatisfaction with the candidates. It was important to the FBI to identify its ability to influence the content of the articles and framing of the Bureau.

The 1947 FBI memo stated Bryan had been characterized as being born with “a silver spoon in his mouth” and developing an unrealistic personal interpretation of the world. Bryan, the memo suggested, might be unaware of the social and economic conditions of the time, due to his understandings being limited to “cafe society” of New York. He was described as an individual who enjoyed and appreciated a good time. He was also described to the Bureau by multiple professional journalists as an excellent writer.

The Bureau spoke with various acquaintances of Bryan, including a general manager at the Richmond newspaper. The man suggested Bryan tended to write about observations he could see on the surface, rather than dig into operations of an organization. While the general manager expressed the opinion Bryan would write critically if he felt a situation warranted, he added Bryan was more inclined to focus on the glorious rather than critical side of any operation. He indicated Bryan was extremely ethical and could maintain confidences. Bryan was described as physically very tall, and a fashionable dresser who liked to be the center of attention in New York society. He was said to be extremely conservative and his loyalty to the United States was unquestioned.

The memo added, “It was pointed out that the best way to handle Bryan is to outline exactly what information he should publish and have a clear understanding with him as to the information he could not publish.”

The FBI talked to Jack Patterson, described as formerly “in the public relations office of the Department,” a reference I interpret to mean the Justice Department, which includes the FBI. Patterson was employed with the State Department at the time the FBI memo was composed in 1947, and was referred to as knowing Bryan personally. He described Bryan as very witty, and echoed previous comments indicating Bryan could be trusted to maintain confidences.

“Patterson thought that the thing to do with Bryan was to be very factual and lay the cards on the table,” the memo added.

A 1947 FBI memo authored by Assistant Director L.B. Nichols documents Bryan visited Bureau headquarters the week of October 13, 1947. Nichols greeted Bryan and provided a rather extensive tour. They discussed the potential series of articles, and the memo indicates Nichols was optimistic about Bryan.

Hoover shared the optimism, going as far as to highlight conditions put forth by Bryan for writing the articles. He was so fond of Bryan's suggested conditions he noted they should be kept in mind for future dealings with writers. Bryan shared some ground rules he used for writing about Navy Adm. William Halsey, resulting in a book considered by some to have been his best work, as noted in a previous memo. Bryan suggested to Nichols, and Hoover highlighted, that “he would write nothing except that which was true; that he would not write anything which would cast a reflection on the Naval Service; that he would not put anything into direct quote which Halsey did not specifically authorize.” It is not difficult to understand why Hoover would appreciate the gist of the strategy.

When Bryan and Nichols met with Hoover, Nichols took the opportunity to emphasize Bryan committed to publish only that which was true and stated he would let them see the material. The meeting apparently went well for the Bureau, and Nichols described it as very much worthwhile.

An observation Nichols noted and described as “rather interesting” involved Bryan reportedly telling a friend he would meet them at 5pm, yet appearing unconcerned as the appointment time passed. Nichols wrote the late afternoon meeting with Director Hoover went on for some two hours, lasting until 6:15pm, even though Nichols reminded Bryan of his 5pm commitment.

“Even though I had reminded him of the 5:00 o'clock appointment,” Nichols noted, “he had lost track completely of the time.”

Nichols further wrote in the memo a question Bryan posed after meeting Hoover, and the answer he was ostensibly given. Nichols apparently documented the situation in the event it should come up again and any agents with access to the memo would be aware of it.

During his conversation with Hoover, Bryan mentioned he was still a Naval officer, to which Hoover replied, “I know.” Bryan later asked Nichols how Hoover knew.

Nichols constructed a story in response in which he claimed he asked a mutual acquaintance in Richmond about Bryan after learning Bryan might be writing about the FBI. The acquaintance, Nichols told Bryan, subsequently sent a newspaper clipping with an extensive bio on Bryan. The director undoubtedly saw the clipping, Nichols added. One might suspect a number of such games were represented in comments exchanged between Bryan, Hoover, and Nichols during Bryan's visit to the Bureau.

Nichols included the following passage in his memo, “I further told Bryan if he wished we would be glad to give him an office and a typewriter and he could write here at the Bureau and if questions arose he could put them to us and if the question necessitated research we could compile the information at the time. This seemed to please Bryan and he stated that he would be very glad to take advantage of this offer. It frankly is my idea that the closer we can keep Bryan to the Bureau, the more voluminous information we can furnish him, the less he will be seeking it from bootleg sources."

Hoover noted at the end of the Nichols memo he felt Bryan was sincere. He concurred the Bureau should "help him" all it could, but it was yet to be seen whether Bryan could make the *Saturday Evening Post* see Hoover and his agents "in the right light":

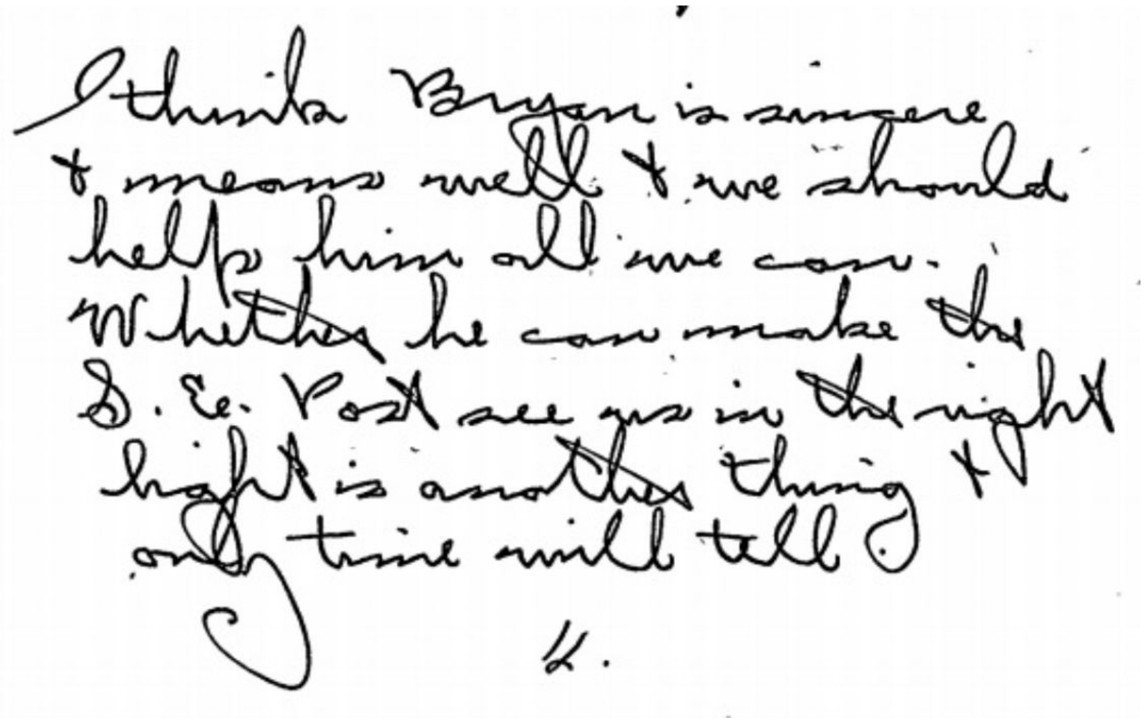

I think Bryan is sincere & means well & we should help him all we can. Whether he can make the S. E. Post see us in the right light is another thing & only time will tell.

H.

Nichols later documented in a November 1947 FBI memo a telephone conversation he initiated with Bryan, who stated there was no rush on the FBI series. Bryan added he was just about to write Nichols to inform him another matter arose that the *Saturday Evening Post* insisted he handle immediately. Hoover noted it looked like the series was fading.

Bryan would later indicate he scrapped the project entirely. In a February 1948 letter to Assistant Director Nichols, Bryan suggested his workload would not allow him to author the series of articles on the FBI. He informed the Bureau he would not be writing about it:[87]

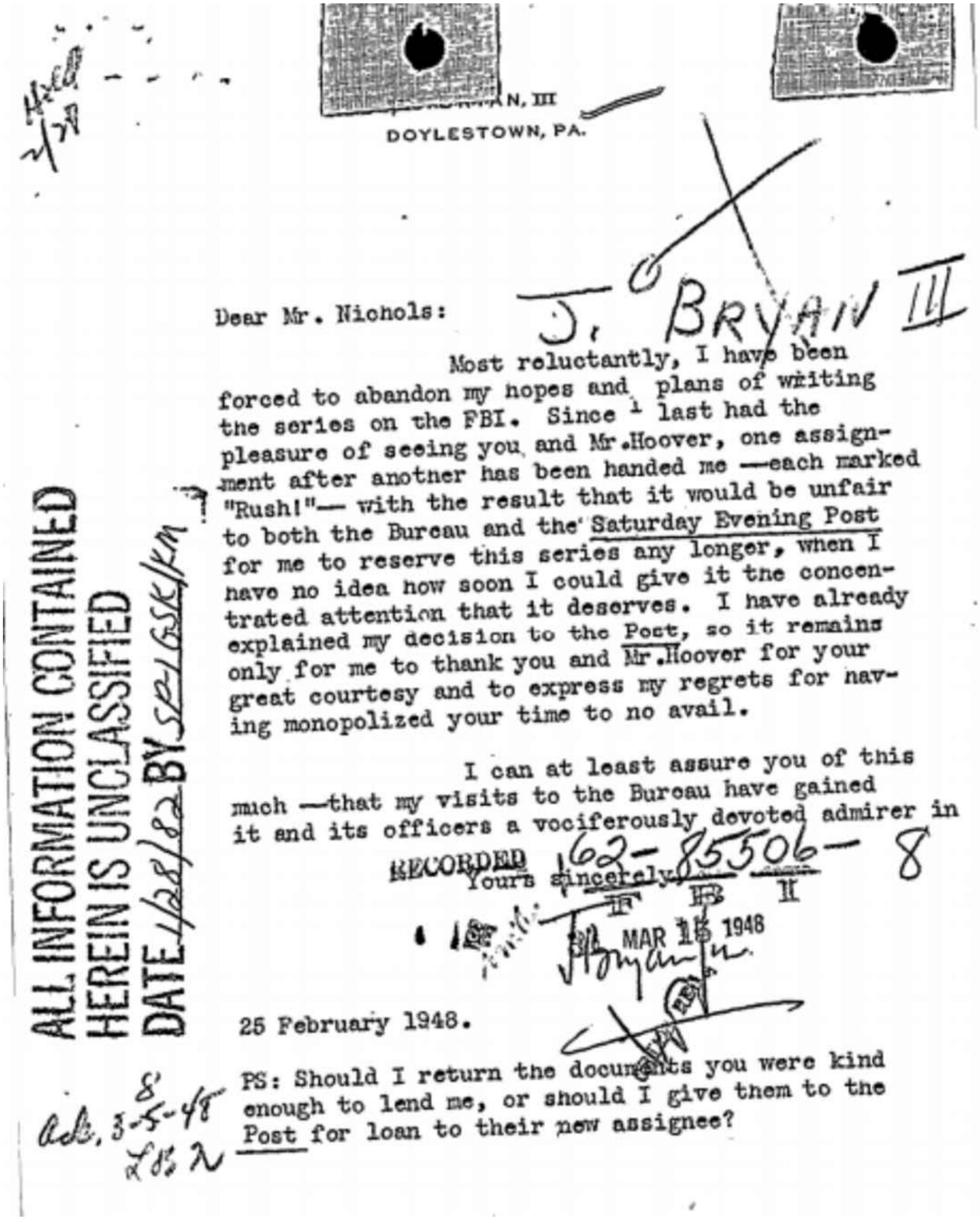

[redacted] N, III [redacted]
DOYLESTOWN, PA.

J. BRYAN III

Dear Mr. Nichols:

Most reluctantly, I have been forced to abandon my hopes and plans of writing the series on the FBI. Since I last had the pleasure of seeing you and Mr. Hoover, one assignment after another has been handed me —each marked "Rush!"— with the result that it would be unfair to both the Bureau and the Saturday Evening Post for me to reserve this series any longer, when I have no idea how soon I could give it the concentrated attention that it deserves. I have already explained my decision to the Post, so it remains only for me to thank you and Mr. Hoover for your great courtesy and to express my regrets for having monopolized your time to no avail.

I can at least assure you of this much —that my visits to the Bureau have gained it and its officers a vociferously devoted admirer in

RECORDED 62-85506-8

Yours sincerely,

MAR 15 1948

J Bryan III

25 February 1948.

PS: Should I return the documents you were kind enough to lend me, or should I give them to the Post for loan to their new assignee?

ALL INFORMATION CONTAINED
HEREIN IS UNCLASSIFIED
DATE 1/28/82 BY SP1GSK/KM

Ack. 3-5-48
LBN

I think there is a strong likelihood this chain of events reflects Bryan's recruitment into the Office of Policy Coordination, which you will recall was launched in 1948. You will also recall E. Howard Hunt asserted he worked for Bryan in the OPC as a member of the Political and Psychological Warfare staff. The OPC, its personnel, and its merge with the Office of Special Operations in

1952, as previously explored, tied into DCI Smith's interest in the UFO topic as a psychological warfare tool; the celebrated PBSUCCESS CIA operation in Guatemala; the 1954 CIA cable to assets in Guatemala suggesting consideration be given to fabricating a flying saucer story as a public distraction, and related events.

Let's consider how a series of FOIA requests on Joseph Bryan III progressed. In 2019 I submitted requests to the CIA and FBI for records pertaining to Bryan.

In a 2020 response the CIA denied my FOIA request and would neither confirm nor deny the existence or nonexistence of any such records, as the information itself is properly classified: the Glomar response. The Agency did acknowledge its website hosts two documents related to Bryan. One is a file containing a 1966 NICAP-related newspaper article.

The other is a 1951 CIA calendar with a brief reference to an October 25 telephone call with Bryan. The call quite possibly was conducted with DCI Smith, given the date and the fact the file is part of a Smith special collection.

“Telephone conversation with Mr. Joseph Bryan,” page 138 of the document reads, “advising him that Mr. George Kennan would be unable to comment on the book 'Come Stalin'.”

The FBI promptly responded by providing a 37-page pdf containing material as linked and described above. The file contains several more letters and memos which will be explored on the forthcoming pages.

The Bureau advised of the existence of two additional potentially responsive files and indicated more potentially responsive files were destroyed. The two files were identified as 62-HQ-116607 and 100-HQ-93216. The FBI suggested both were in the care of NARA, the National Archives and Records Administration.

NARA responded to my resulting FOIA request it was not in possession of 62-HQ-116607 and stated the file remained in FBI custody. A subsequent series of follow-up correspondence with the FBI, including a FOIA appeal, did not produce the file. The Bureau ultimately implied it was destroyed.

NARA indicated the second of the two files, 100-HQ-93216, was indeed in its possession and was believed to contain material pertaining to Joseph Bryan III. The Administration further stated the file consisted of some 8,500 pages and would have to be processed for release pursuant to the FOIA. Subsequent correspondence with NARA revealed only two of the pages referred directly to Bryan. NARA processed and provided the two pages as requested, which we will explore a bit later. Other aspects of the large file would prove to be of interest as well.

Further research revealed the file, 100-HQ-93216, was previously released in part to John Greenewald of The Black Vault. In 2005 he received about 360 of the 8,500 pages. Its primary subject was bacteriological warfare, or, perhaps more specifically, FBI investigation of potential threats of bacteriological warfare and related issues.

In 2019 I published a blog post related to the circumstances. The post included a link to the pdf of the approximately 360 pages previously obtained by Greenewald. I was soon contacted by microbiologist Dr. Tyler Kokjohn, who informed me he had been reading the file and discovered an intriguing document within it. He directed my attention to pages 207-212 of the pdf, which contain a memo dated May 31, 1949, Subject: Biological Warfare.

The six-page memo is written from FBI Assistant Director Ladd to Director Hoover and referenced an Advisory Committee to the Secretary of Defense. The Bureau was repeatedly encouraged to send a representative to meetings of the Committee, which explored "matters relating to biological warfare." The Bureau held fast it preferred a relationship with the Advisory Committee via a liaison rather than direct participation.

The memo summarized meeting minutes provided to the FBI from a then-recent gathering of the group, indicating representatives from academic institutions and the CIA were in attendance. Discussion topics included what were described as security precautions pertaining to a presumably human research subject. The project and a potential lack of adequate security precautions, it was suggested, "might prove unsafe for public consumption and that knowledge of the existence of such a project might bring forth ridicule."

The memo continued, "The Committee expressed considerable interest in the various methods of isolation of the subconscious mind which were discussed, particularly in the use of drugs as an aid to hypnotic techniques."

The area of the memo following the above statement was redacted, as was the case with additional sections. I soon submitted a request to NARA for a Mandatory Declassification Review of the memo. NARA complied and in its response released a substantial amount of the previously redacted material.

One of the more intriguing finds of the MDR was it revealed FBI documentation a CIA scientist asserted the Advisory Committee represented the first time the CIA sought to collaborate with American intelligence agencies and institutions about behavior modification research. The memo further documented the CIA sought support from the Committee for vigorous exploration of such research. The scientist was Scientific Branch Chief Dr.

Willard Machle. From page three of the further declassified version of the memo:

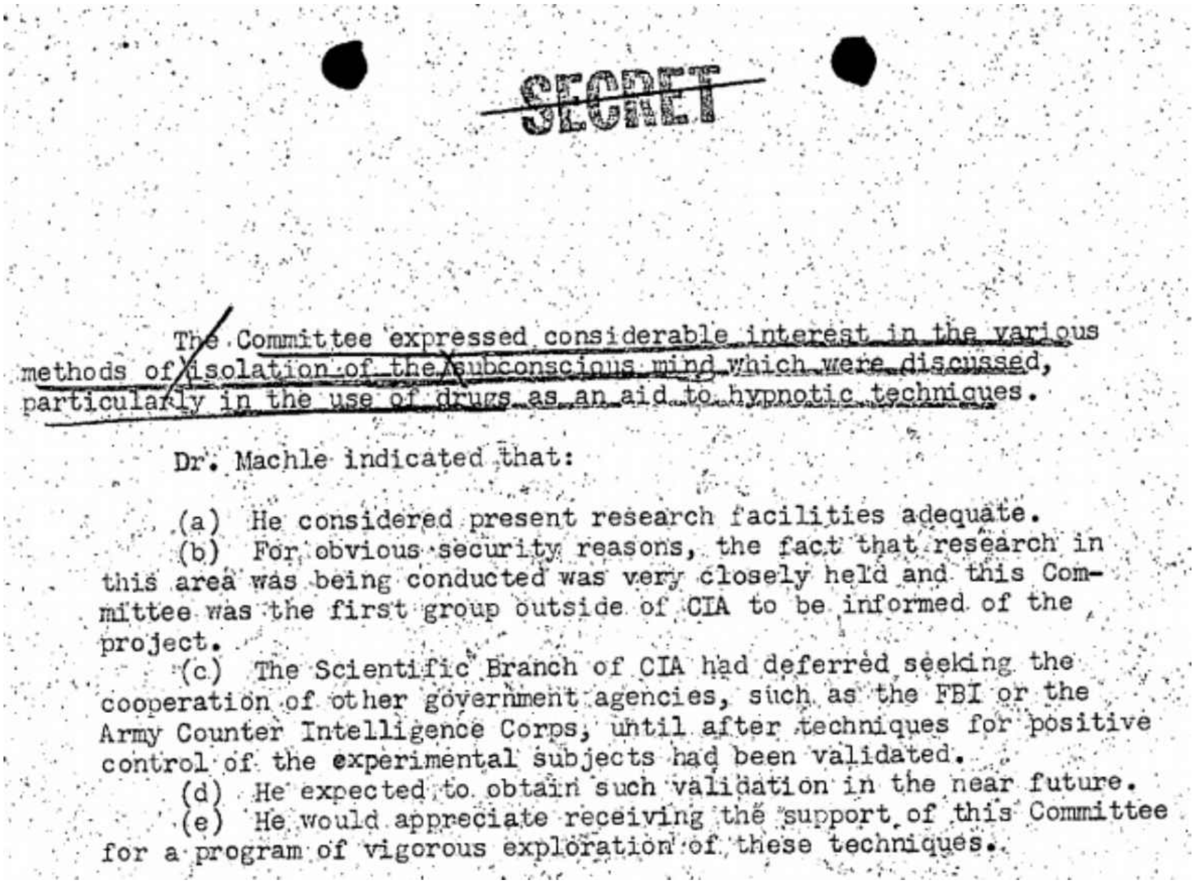

~~SECRET~~

The Committee expressed considerable interest in the various methods of isolation of the subconscious mind which were discussed, particularly in the use of drugs as an aid to hypnotic techniques.

Dr. Machle indicated that:

(a) He considered present research facilities adequate.

(b) For obvious security reasons, the fact that research in this area was being conducted was very closely held and this Committee was the first group outside of CIA to be informed of the project.

(c) The Scientific Branch of CIA had deferred seeking the cooperation of other government agencies, such as the FBI or the Army Counter Intelligence Corps, until after techniques for positive control of the experimental subjects had been validated.

(d) He expected to obtain such validation in the near future.

(e) He would appreciate receiving the support of this Committee for a program of vigorous exploration of these techniques.

The MDR also revealed further information about Committee attendees, who apparently met May 14, 1949, in the Park Avenue New York apartment of Dr. Alfred L. Loomis:

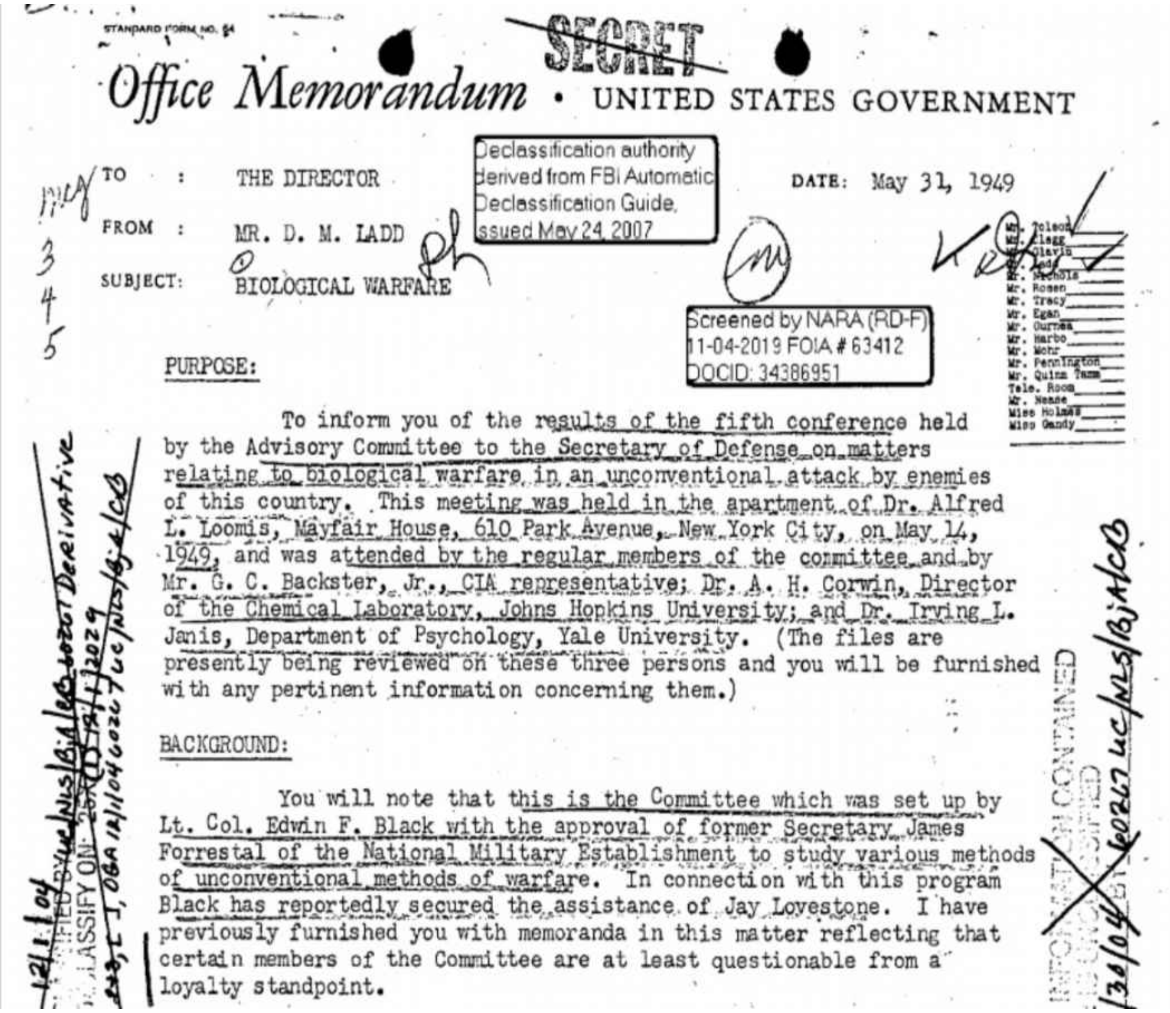

STANDARD FORM NO. 64

~~SECRET~~

Office Memorandum • UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

TO : THE DIRECTOR

FROM : MR. D. M. LADD

SUBJECT: BIOLOGICAL WARFARE

DATE: May 31, 1949

Declassification authority derived from FBI Automatic Declassification Guide, issued May 24 2007

Screened by NARA (RD-F) 11-04-2019 FOIA # 63412 DOCID: 34386951

Mr. Tolson
Mr. Clegg
Mr. Glavin
Mr. Ladd
Mr. Nichols
Mr. Rosen
Mr. Tracy
Mr. Egan
Mr. Gurnea
Mr. Harbo
Mr. Mohr
Mr. Pennington
Mr. Quinn Tamm
Tele. Room
Mr. Nease
Miss Holmes
Miss Gandy

PURPOSE:

To inform you of the results of the fifth conference held by the Advisory Committee to the Secretary of Defense on matters relating to biological warfare in an unconventional attack by enemies of this country. This meeting was held in the apartment of Dr. Alfred L. Loomis, Mayfair House, 610 Park Avenue, New York City, on May 14, 1949, and was attended by the regular members of the committee and by Mr. G. C. Backster, Jr., CIA representative; Dr. A. H. Corwin, Director of the Chemical Laboratory, Johns Hopkins University; and Dr. Irving L. Janis, Department of Psychology, Yale University. (The files are presently being reviewed on these three persons and you will be furnished with any pertinent information concerning them.)

BACKGROUND:

You will note that this is the Committee which was set up by Lt. Col. Edwin F. Black with the approval of former Secretary James Forrestal of the National Military Establishment to study various methods of unconventional methods of warfare. In connection with this program Black has reportedly secured the assistance of Jay Lovestone. I have previously furnished you with memoranda in this matter reflecting that certain members of the Committee are at least questionable from a loyalty standpoint.

It is for such reasons I have come to believe FBI archives are a significant resource for researchers on topics typically not considered to pertain to the FBI. If something mattered, there is a really good chance J. Edgar Hoover had a man on it. In many instances, he had multiple field offices on it. FBI files stand to provide us with reports compiled by professional investigators on any number of issues and people, which apparently include activities and personnel related to operations Bluebird, Artichoke, and the eventual MKULTRA. FBI documents archived and reviewed by NARA may provide information on CIA projects typically withheld and redacted by the CIA. Similar may likely be the case on any number of topics investigated by the Bureau and subsequently framed from the perspectives of its agents.

You will recall the above memo was plucked out of about 360 previously released pages of a large, vastly unprocessed 8,500-page file, 100-HQ-93126. In early 2020 I requested through the FOIA that NARA release the file in its entirety. The process will take several years, and NARA indicated it will incrementally notify me of progress.

The estimated total cost of a reproduction of the completely processed file, such as a pdf, is $6,800. I am considering options such as enrolling the help of journalists who have grounds for fees to be waved. Additional options include partnering with institutions which recognize the potential historical value of the file, or undertaking crowdsource fundraising. The first job is to get the file or sections thereof processed and available, then we can work on the best ways to obtain and start combing through the material, thus, the FOIA request.

So, back to how we got the 8,500-page 100-HQ-93126 file in our sites in the first place: It was identified by the FBI as potentially responsive to records pertaining to Joseph Bryan III and in the custody of NARA. After inquiring further, NARA helpfully informed me just two of the pages referred directly to Bryan.

NARA subsequently provided me with the two pages, a 1953 memo pertaining to a brainwashing movie shown during a meeting held in the Attorney General's office and attended by, among others, FBI Director Hoover and CIA Director Allen Dulles. The author of the memo, FBI Assistant Director D.M. Ladd, who also attended the meeting, explained the film contained confessions of four captured American pilots who were portrayed to admit to Chinese interrogators they flew missions with the purpose of dropping bacteria.

Discussion topics included techniques potentially used to solicit false confessions. Ladd noted CIA representatives indicated the Agency was conducting related studies. The memo carries several implications to biological warfare, the study of interrogation techniques, and the evolution of CIA mind control projects. This would prove to become somewhat of a theme of documents pertaining to Bryan and his associates, even if more an indication of the Agency's obsession with the issues than that of some of its specific personnel.

The memo contains one single mention of Bryan, who apparently was an associate of an involved party, midway through the third paragraph. The paragraph:

“The film was then shown and, in sequence, the four American flyers were shown being questioned by Chinese Reds, and they admitted in considerable detail dates when they allegedly received briefing on bacteriological warfare and dates of missions which they allegedly flew for the purpose of dropping bacteria. After each sequence showing the questioning of one of the four airmen, the group was briefed in a very genera[redacted] It will be re[redacted] was an associate of Joseph Bryan III and was questioned in connection with rumors circulated by [redacted] the group that the statements of the prisoners obviously were not correct, inasmuch as a check had been made and no lectures or briefing had been given at the camps on the dates alleged by the prisoners, and several of the missions which they claimed to have flown were, in fact, never flown by them."

It could be considered interesting that apparently no explanation about Bryan was required, seeming to suggest those with access to the memo – and perhaps in attendance at the April 1953 meeting - would be familiar with him. We can only wonder what additional information may have been contained in the records on Bryan that were destroyed as indicated by the Bureau.

Turning our attention back to the 37-page file on Bryan provided by the FBI, we find copies of a pair of short 1950 letters composed by Director Hoover.[88] The first is to Judge Edward Allen Tamm of the U.S. District Court for the District of Columbia. Hoover thanked Judge Tamm for forwarding a letter to him from "Mr. Neil Vanderbilt."

The second note from Hoover is written directly to "Major Cornelius Vanderbilt, Jr.," thanking him for furnishing data contained in his March 14, 1950, letter forwarded by Judge Tamm. "I appreciate having the information made available to me," Hoover wrote Vanderbilt.

Each copy of the two letters from Hoover have handwritten notations, presumably added by Bureau staff, stating, "Joseph Bryan III alias Gil Bryan." The Hoover letters were obviously placed in the file pertaining to Bryan, for whatever reasons.

The referenced letter written by Vanderbilt and forwarded to Hoover from Tamm is not in the file. A FOIA request for the document was submitted to the FBI. The Bureau responded in 2021 that potentially responsive records were identified but not in their expected location. An additional search was conducted but also met with unsuccessful results, the response explained.

I believe Cornelius Vanderbilt, Jr. to have been the son of the founder of Vanderbilt University. I interpret this to be a potential further indication of Joseph Bryan's prestigious social status, among other possibilities. As previously suggested, NICAP Board members and advisors were socially and professionally well connected, and often financially well off. These were not only desirable characteristics for positions of leadership within UFO and nonprofit organizations, but, in the case of Bryan and his circles, traits indicative of those sought for recruitment into the CIA.

It is noteworthy the Vanderbilts are documented to have been well represented in the Office of Strategic Services.[89] The OSS was the World War II precursor to the CIA.

In 1983 Athan G. Theoharris of the Marquette University Department of History published a paper titled “The CIA and the *New York Times*: An Unanswered Question”. Appearing in *Government Publications Review*, Vol. 10, pp 257-259, 1983, the abstract reads, “The author surveys a mysterious contact between CIA psychological warfare official Joseph Bryan III and *New York Times* officials in 1951, noting the need for further research into the relationship between the Agency and the media and the Agency and the FBI.” We now know the timeframe in question was right in the heart of both the escalation of the Office of Policy Coordination and future NICAP Board member Bryan's apparent service to the CIA.

The paper explored two January 1951 meetings Bryan conducted with newspaper executives. The first was in Paris with the Times European bureau chief Cyrus Sulzburger. The second took place in New York with the uncle of Cyrus, Times publisher Arthur Hays Sulzburger.

Theoharris cited a letter dated January 15, 1951, written by Cyrus to Arthur between the two meetings and emphasizing the importance to his uncle to clear his schedule to accommodate Bryan. “I want to call this to your attention so that you are sure to see him, no matter how busy you are,” Times European Bureau chief Cyrus Sulzburger wrote. He added in his “personal and confidential” letter to his uncle, “I am sorry to be so mysterious about this, but I want to be sure and call this subject to your attention ahead of time so that there can be no misunderstanding.”

The purposes of the two meetings are not clear. Theoharris cited interviews later conducted with Cyrus Sulzburger and Joseph Bryan in which the men provided conflicting accounts of the circumstances. Theoharris described each as “not fully responsive when not apparently evasive.”

Cyrus was quoted as suggesting Bryan had been traveling throughout Europe in the winter of 1951 signing up reporters for nondisclosure statements. The contracts represented agreements to provide journalists with information as long as they did not reveal the CIA as the source, Cyrus indicated.

Bryan denied the allegation, suggesting Cyrus was the only newspaperman he knew in Europe. Bryan further suggested any meeting with Cyrus would have been to get information from him, not to give it to him. As for the meeting with Times publisher Arthur Sulzburger in New York, Bryan claimed he could not recall the details.

Oh, that Joe Bryan.

So how does the Bureau fit into this part of the story, besides conducting investigations on everybody? That would be due to something the FBI called its “obscene file,” and Bryan's request for access to it, which was granted. Theoharris explained in his 1983 paper:

> “Whether or not coincidental, Bryan’s approach to the *New York Times*’s European bureau chief and publisher coincided with his request, initiated that same winter, to secure authorization to review the FBI’s 'obscene file.' A discrete file maintained in the FBI laboratory, the 'obscene file' had been created in 1943 and contained either derogatory personal information on diverse individuals or memorandums/letters containing obscene language. FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover personally supervised access to this file; 'outsiders' were only 'rarely' permitted to view this file and then approval was granted 'for official reasons.' To obtain access to the obscene file on an individual(s) (the name or names have been deleted in released FBI documents), Bryan went through the appropriate CIA and FBI channels, secured the needed authorization, and in May 1951, reviewed the file. He now claims that 'nothing came of' having reviewed this file.”

Theoharris aptly pointed out the saga brings up a number of relevant questions about the activities of the early 1950's CIA psychological warfare division, as well as its relationships with the FBI. Also at issue was the government obstruction of answers to those questions. It did not escape my attention that Theoharris's concerns and lines of reasoning in 1983 echoed those addressed in the previous decade by writer and researcher Stanley Bachrack, pertaining to FOIA exemptions applied to Nicholas de Rochefort and his relationship with the CIA.

Before continuing this line of inquiry, it should be noted the FBI file on Bryan contains a copy of an April 23, 1953, clipping of a social column from a New York publication.[90] Among other society news of note, the writer explained the “fabulous Aga Kahn” announced from Paris that a book deal was obtained. The forthcoming work would reveal the truth behind his “demi god playboy facade,” according to the columnist.

The aging ruler of the Ismail sect, who had apparently been in the news for half a century, was set to extract as much as a million dollars from the American reading public. His contract with Simon and Schuster reportedly included the highest royalties ever paid to an author at that point in time, some 20 percent.

“The memoirs must be hot property indeed,” the article stated.

“The Aga Kahn has promised to 'tell everything,'” the writer continued, “no matter how embarrassing it may be to many famous people living in dread. In fact, the memoirs deal with so many personages close to home that publishers in France and England wouldn't touch them with an asbestos glove.”

The article further stated the book's writer-editor was Joseph Bryan III. He would travel with Aga Kahn to five different European destinations, including Cannes and Venice, over the next few months “to whip the material into shape.” Whether significant or not, the article reminded me of Bernard J.O. Carvalho's 1956 publicity tour with Meher Baba, among other implications. I interpret researcher Theoharris may have suspected the combined circumstances suggest Bryan was in the business of obtaining dirt on potential Communists or others in order to provide political leverage. Motives may have included inspiring persons of interest to defect from the Soviet Union.

A similar April 1953 article was published in the Washington, D.C., Evening Star. It stated Aga Kahn, the “spiritual head of 80 million Ismail Moslems,” decided to write his memoirs and reached all the way to Washington to get the man who would do it for him. The article identified ghostwriter Bryan as the former assistant to the Secretary of the Air Force and a New York socialite. Bryan moved to DC with his wife, the piece stated, “a few years ago when he joined the Central Intelligence Agency.”

We pick up the trail of Joseph Bryan and the FBI “obscene file” back in the pdf compiled on Bryan by the Bureau. The implications are complex and not entirely clear as contained in some 1955 letters and memos. It is completely clear, however, the cast of characters were very much involved in issues surrounding Communist China, the hunt for Communist sympathizers, and the related accusations potentially used as intelligence tools, whether true or not.

It is noteworthy Nicholas de Rochefort's apparent areas of interest, Red China and psychological warfare, were very much at issue, as were agencies such as the State Department which repeatedly surface in our saga of NICAP and its personnel. It additionally seems worth keeping in mind that Office of Policy Coordination activities in the early 1950's included Project BGMARQUE, an operation consisting of commando raids against China's mainland coast. Other CIA operations targeting China during the same timeframe include the curiously titled HTMERLIN, which sought to create the perception Nationalist China discredited itself in the eyes of its population.

Related material suggests such initiatives came to include U-2 reconnaissance missions. I find it likely the involvement of Rochefort and his associates, as explored earlier, in the 1956 NICAP scheme may have been an extension of the themes of the 1950's intelligence community.

Plot lines represented in the Bureau file pertaining to Bryan include copies of letters provided to the FBI by J.G. “Jay” Sourwine.[91] He served as chief counsel for many years on Senate committees that conducted inquiries into such topics as lack of security in the State Department, Communist activities in the United States, and operations considered harmful to American interests undertaken with media outlets. The New York Times was particularly called into question, while some accused Senate committees of unjustly targeting the newspaper. In June 1955 Sourwine gave the FBI copies of two letters exchanged between Bryan and Capt. Robert A. Winston, USN (Ret.).

The letters are contained in the Bryan file. They indicate strong disagreements between Bryan and Winston over testimony Winston provided to a Senate committee during a closed door hearing to which Sourwine had access. Accusations of derogatory comments were thrown about, including questions of “scurrilous” statements allegedly made by Bryan about Director Hoover himself. Bryan and Winston, both Navy men, apparently knew one another a significant amount of time, as Bryan wrote to Winston he “thought” he was still his friend.

In a response to Bryan, Winston referenced a Lyle Munson, “who worked with us in the CIA and whom you personally had recommended to me as a thoroughly reliable and patriotic individual with enough guts to testify before the same group I went to.” Winston suggested Bryan's name did not come up during a telephone conversation with Munson, who apparently told him he could put complete trust in Jay Sourwine, Counsel for the Committee. Sourwine was subsequently briefed by Winston, who again suggested to Bryan his name did not come up, and the counselor immediately arranged for Winston to testify under oath in an executive session.

“Before and after my testimony I stressed its sensitivity and the danger to our country should it be revealed,” Winston explained further in his letter to Bryan. “I now urge you to keep this matter from public knowledge, for the same reasons.”

Winston informed Bryan, specifically about his testimony, “I did state that you had made certain statements to me in private, in your office, in the course of explaining to me why you personally could not visit the FBI Obscenity Room and why you wanted the FBI's permission for our two staff artists to go there.”

The letters indicate the Office of Naval Intelligence was asking around about Winston, presumably conducting an investigation. It at least partially pertained to Communist sympathizing, distribution of propaganda, moral conduct and similar issues.

A resulting 1955 FBI memo, Subject: Joseph Bryan III, authored by Assistant Director Nichols indicates he discussed the circumstances with Sen. Jenner, a player in the saga. Nichols paraphrased the Senator as stating he never had any doubt in his mind but that Winston told the truth.

“He furthermore never had any doubt in his mind,” wrote Nichols, “but that Bryan was a 'liar' as he has tangled with Bryan before...”

Nichols documented explaining to Sen. Jenner that Bryan denied making the statement in question (whatever exactly it may have been), adding that Bryan provided a hand-written letter to Hoover reiterating the denial. It was made clear to the Senator the Bureau wanted him to know this because it did not like having malicious lies circulated.

The overt representation of the significance of Communism, Red China, and related social dynamics of the intelligence community, observable among these men as the incorporation of NICAP loomed closer, could be considered interesting. That, and Robert A. Winston had a specific history in UFO lore, even if the UFO community did not know it.

Winston composed some of the most comprehensive intelligence reports on the “Ghost Rockets” of the 1940's and figured prominently in James Carrion's nonfiction book, *Anachronism*. The book explores the likelihood the UFO topic served intelligence interests as a tool of deception during the 1946-47 timeframe. Carrion cited documents establishing Winston as the U.S. Naval Attache at Stockholm, Sweden, during 1946, at which time Winston observed the brass was quite unconcerned about the reported rocket sightings.

“Swedish press and public aroused,” Winston documented in a formerly Top Secret 1946 intelligence report, “but Swedish Air Force officers still on summer leave, aircraft warning net not mobilized, and no attempts made to intercept missiles with jet fighters.”

Winston continued that the Swedish Defense Staff obviously wished he and others to believe the objects were rockets, but he was clearly unconvinced a threat was genuinely perceived. He concluded the Swedes knew the origin of the missiles and were not worried about them. Moreover, Winston added, “[T]he Swedish Defense Staff will conceal any evidence of the true nature of the reported objects until it deems expedient to release the information.”

Carrion proposed there were a limited number of American officials in on the Ghost Rocket ruse along with their Swedish counterparts. He just didn't think Winston was in the loop at the time. Winston's future career in the CIA seems to have possibly increased his information access.

Bureau files obtained on Robert A. Winston contain memos from 1960 indicating he went on to write a fiction novel, *The Pentagon Case*, under the name Col. Victor J. Fox. The book pertains to DC politics and the Communist threat, particularly, as I understand it, a heroic Pentagon official fighting for democracy amid persecution and mounting odds. As of this writing, I am not aware if Capt. Winston wrote in an official capacity for his CIA employer. Given the timeframe of his work as a Naval Attache in 1946, I would not find it surprising to discover his recruitment into the Agency corresponded in some way with the launching of the Office of Policy Coordination in 1948 and its subsequent escalation.

A 1962 newspaper clipping archived on the CIA website identified Winston as a former staff member of the Agency and the author of seven books. The article was an announcement for a speaking engagement for Winston. He was described as a controversial figure who had been the subject of attacks from Communist publications, left-wing columnists, and unnamed Pentagon “spokesmen,” the latter specifically put in quotes. The reasons for the attacks were attributed to his writings.

Continuing our exploration of the 37-page pdf on Bryan provided by the FBI, there is a four-page 1953 memo on Lewis “Pinky” Steenrod Thompson, Jr. I found the inclusion of the memo in the file intriguing because it contains no mention whatsoever of Bryan, only the handwritten addition of his name beneath the subject line. The notation was presumably added for filing purposes at some point after the document was read by the recipient, Assistant Director Nichols. The top of page one of the memo:

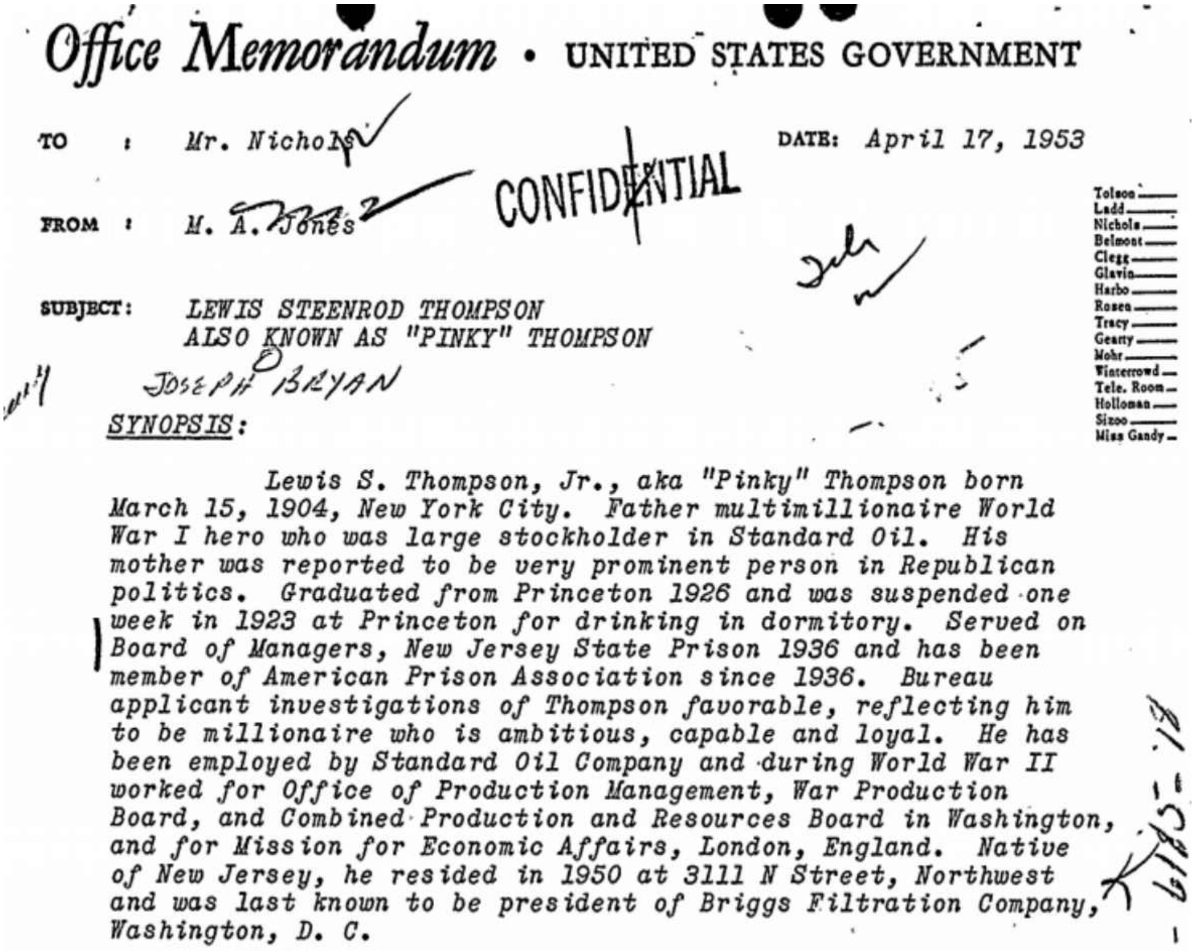

Office Memorandum • UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

TO : Mr. Nichols

DATE: April 17, 1953

CONFIDENTIAL

FROM : M. A. Jones

SUBJECT: LEWIS STEENROD THOMPSON
ALSO KNOWN AS "PINKY" THOMPSON

JOSEPH BRYAN

Tolson
Ladd
Nichols
Belmont
Clegg
Glavin
Harbo
Rosen
Tracy
Gearty
Mohr
Winterrowd
Tele. Room
Holloman
Sizoo
Miss Gandy

SYNOPSIS:

Lewis S. Thompson, Jr., aka "Pinky" Thompson born March 15, 1904, New York City. Father multimillionaire World War I hero who was large stockholder in Standard Oil. His mother was reported to be very prominent person in Republican politics. Graduated from Princeton 1926 and was suspended one week in 1923 at Princeton for drinking in dormitory. Served on Board of Managers, New Jersey State Prison 1936 and has been member of American Prison Association since 1936. Bureau applicant investigations of Thompson favorable, reflecting him to be millionaire who is ambitious, capable and loyal. He has been employed by Standard Oil Company and during World War II worked for Office of Production Management, War Production Board, and Combined Production and Resources Board in Washington, and for Mission for Economic Affairs, London, England. Native of New Jersey, he resided in 1950 at 3111 N Street, Northwest and was last known to be president of Briggs Filtration Company, Washington, D. C.

The basis of the memo was stated to be a summary of pertinent information in Bureau files regarding Thompson, and in accordance with the instructions of Nichols. Surmising Nichols requested the summary, and Thompson's activities somehow related to Bryan, I began searching for further information about Thompson.

Having read quite a bit about Bryan by this point in my research, it did not escape my attention Thompson was a Princeton alumnus, as was Bryan. The time period matched, as well.

An initial search of CIA records resulted in several returns on Thompson. They included such items as a reference to Thompson in an entry on page 79 of the 1950 calendar of DCI Walter Bedell Smith:

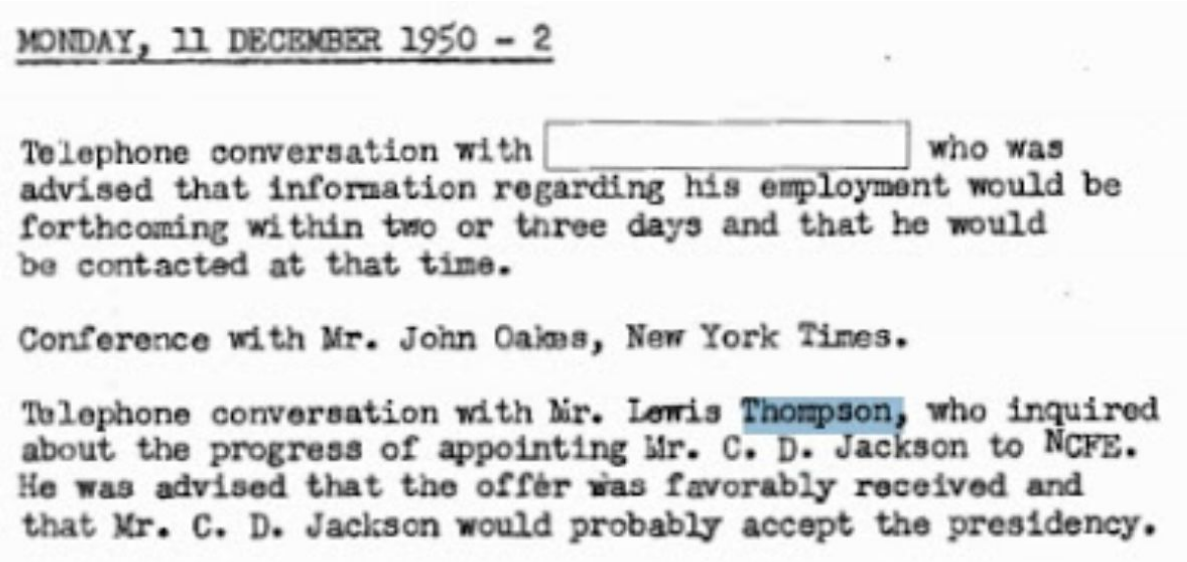

MONDAY, 11 DECEMBER 1950 - 2

Telephone conversation with [redacted] who was advised that information regarding his employment would be forthcoming within two or three days and that he would be contacted at that time.

Conference with Mr. John Oakes, New York Times.

Telephone conversation with Mr. Lewis Thompson, who inquired about the progress of appointing Mr. C. D. Jackson to NCFE. He was advised that the offer was favorably received and that Mr. C. D. Jackson would probably accept the presidency.

I discovered an intriguing passage in author Hugh Wilford's 2013 book, *The CIA, the British Left and the Cold War*. Page 229 describes the likelihood an organization called the American Committee on United Europe (ACUE) was in fact a front for the Office of Policy Coordination and, in essence, the CIA and State Department. According to the recollection of one source, Wilford explained, an initial payment funneled through related channels "arrived in the form of a bag containing $75,000 dumped on his desk by CIA officer Pinky Thompson with the words, 'This is for you.'"

Wilford goes on to explain the operation became more sophisticated and described the scale of funding as massive. Only about a third of the total disbursements were recorded on the ACUE's books, Wilford continued, adding payments were disguised as gifts from fictitious donors or company-sponsored foundations and trusts. The remaining two-thirds were described as being transacted covertly. Wilford explained his research suggested the CIA was passing nearly a million dollars a year via the ACUE to the European unity campaign in the mid-1950's.

Another file located at the CIA website documented minutes of a 1952 meeting that included such notables as DCI Gen. Smith, Frank Wisner, and Allen Dulles. Others in attendance included Deputy Director for Administration Walter Reid Wolf, who stated Pinky Thompson would be coming to work, initially as a special assistant.

It seemed increasingly likely the FBI memo pertaining to Pinky Thompson was placed in the file compiled on Joseph Bryan due to something to do with such circumstances as their positions with the Office of Policy Coordination and CIA. It was during this phase of my research in 2019 I first discovered the previously referenced book written by E. Howard Hunt and Greg Aunapu, *American Spy: My Secret History in the CIA*. The following entry located on page 46 would become a primary factor in what led me to learn more about NICAP, the OPC and, eventually, Counsel Services, Mary Vaughan King, and her associates:

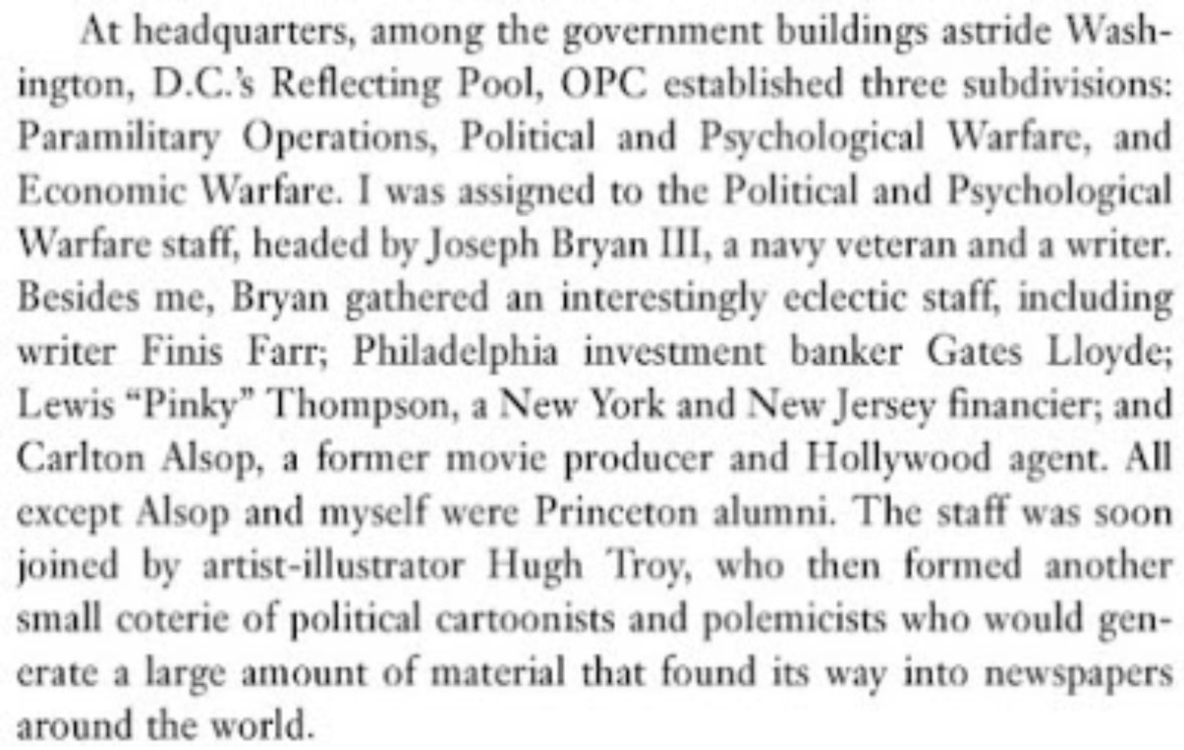

> At headquarters, among the government buildings astride Washington, D.C.'s Reflecting Pool, OPC established three subdivisions: Paramilitary Operations, Political and Psychological Warfare, and Economic Warfare. I was assigned to the Political and Psychological Warfare staff, headed by Joseph Bryan III, a navy veteran and a writer. Besides me, Bryan gathered an interestingly eclectic staff, including writer Finis Farr; Philadelphia investment banker Gates Lloyde; Lewis "Pinky" Thompson, a New York and New Jersey financier; and Carlton Alsop, a former movie producer and Hollywood agent. All except Alsop and myself were Princeton alumni. The staff was soon joined by artist-illustrator Hugh Troy, who then formed another small coterie of political cartoonists and polemicists who would generate a large amount of material that found its way into newspapers around the world.

Learning more about the activities of the men who worked for Bryan in the OPC does not necessarily tell us more about NICAP. It does, however, provide us a better profile of Bryan, the work he did, the circles he kept, and the interests of an agency, the CIA, which employed numerous people associated with NICAP. No less than seven such people, in Nicholas de Rochefort, Bernard J.O. Carvalho, Roscoe Hillenkoetter, Joseph Bryan, Alan Hall, Harry Cooper, and Charles Lombard, were verified or strongly implicated as CIA personnel or associates. Most filled positions of leadership in NICAP, spanning from its inception to dissolution.

You will note Hunt's awareness above of Bryan's apparent partiality to employing Princeton alumni. It was a little before Bryan and Thompson's days at the university, but Dulles was a Princeton man himself.

CHAPTER 12

THE OPC PSY WARFARE CREW

FOIA requests submitted to the FBI resulted in some 50 pages of records on Lewis "Pinky" Steenrod Thompson, Jr. (1904-1965). The majority of the records are FBI memos pertaining to Thompson that resulted from "special inquiries." A 1941 memo, pictured in part on the following page, with a misspelling of "Lewis" as "Louis," shows the initial request for FBI investigation.[92]

A chain of investigations on Pinky Thompson was undertaken that included the participation of FBI offices from Boston to New Orleans and several points in between. The numerous resulting reports indicate he was born in 1904 in New York City, raised in Massachusetts, and attended Princeton University, where he played football and had considerably above average grades. He graduated in 1926 with an A.B. degree.

He made his home on what was described as an estate in Red Bank, New Jersey, when he was not relocating for work. He came from a wealthy family, having made its mark in the oil business. Thompson continued the tradition, working for Standard Oil.

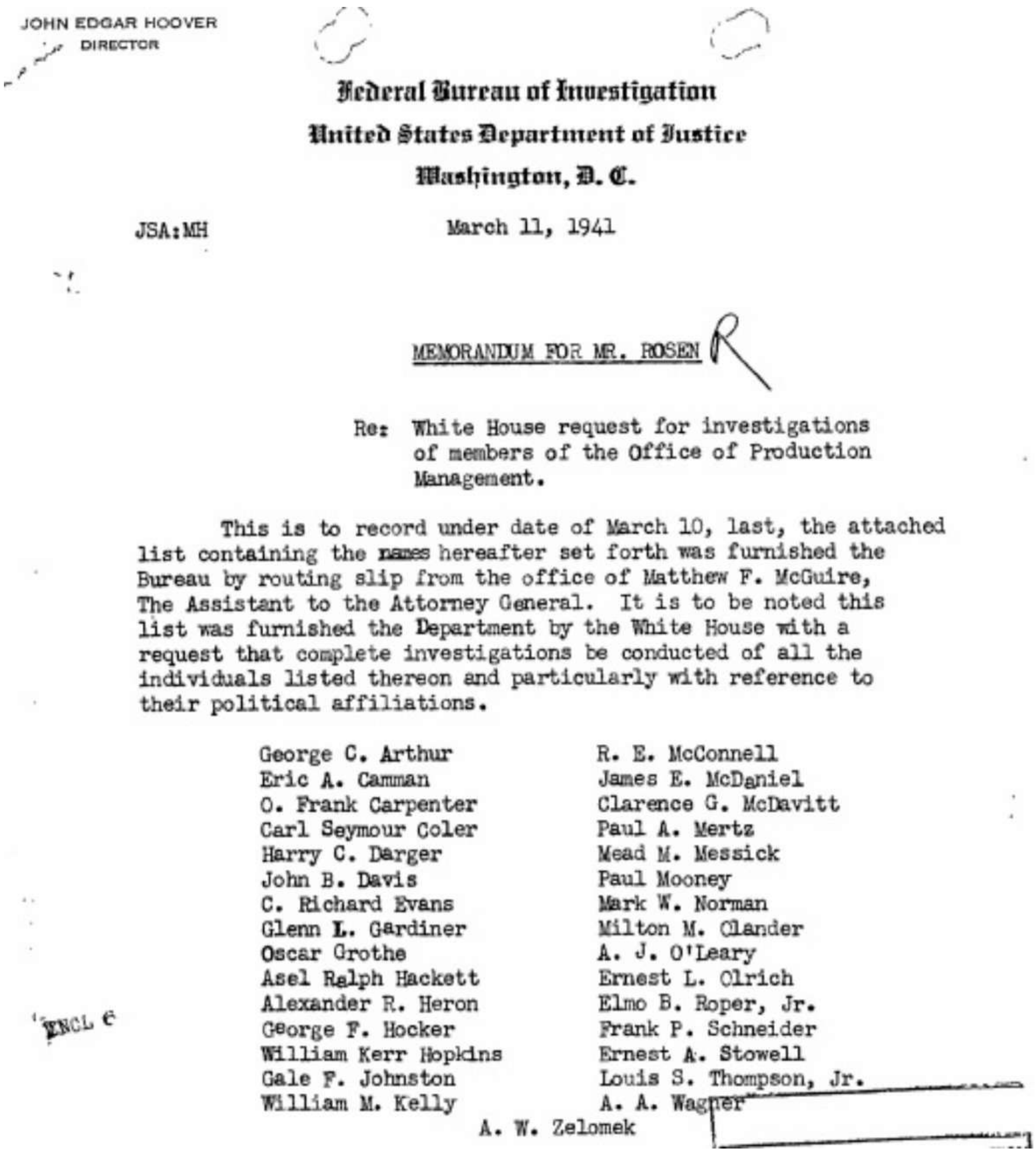

JOHN EDGAR HOOVER
DIRECTOR

Federal Bureau of Investigation
United States Department of Justice
Washington, D. C.

JSA:MH

March 11, 1941

MEMORANDUM FOR MR. ROSEN R

Re: White House request for investigations of members of the Office of Production Management.

This is to record under date of March 10, last, the attached list containing the names hereafter set forth was furnished the Bureau by routing slip from the office of Matthew F. McGuire, The Assistant to the Attorney General. It is to be noted this list was furnished the Department by the White House with a request that complete investigations be conducted of all the individuals listed thereon and particularly with reference to their political affiliations.

George C. Arthur
Eric A. Camman
O. Frank Carpenter
Carl Seymour Coler
Harry C. Darger
John B. Davis
C. Richard Evans
Glenn L. Gardiner
Oscar Grothe
Asel Ralph Hackett
Alexander R. Heron
George F. Hocker
William Kerr Hopkins
Gale F. Johnston
William M. Kelly

R. E. McConnell
James E. McDaniel
Clarence G. McDavitt
Paul A. Mertz
Mead M. Messick
Paul Mooney
Mark W. Norman
Milton M. Olander
A. J. O'Leary
Ernest L. Olrich
Elmo B. Roper, Jr.
Frank P. Schneider
Ernest A. Stowell
Louis S. Thompson, Jr.
A. A. Wagner

A. W. Zelomek

ENCL 6

Incidentally, Standard Oil would later be identified as sharing a history with the CIA forerunner, the Office of Strategic Services. “The families Vanderbilt, DuPont, Archbold (Standard Oil), Ryan (Equitable Life Insurance), Weil (Macy's department store), Whitney were all represented in the ranks of [“Wild Bill”] Donovan's [OSS] army,” wrote Frances Stonor Saunders on page 29 of her book, *The Cultural Cold War*. You will recall Col. Bryan married into the Whitney family, according to a previously referenced FBI report.

Thompson's father passed away, leaving him large stock holdings in Standard Oil. This gave him a financial worth of some $7 million in the 1930's.

Pinky married twice and had three children.

His associates and neighbors consistently described him as having excellent character. His credit record was very good and his loyalty to the United States was unquestioned. FBI interviews showed him again and again to be thought of as honest and high in integrity.

Thompson's mother was a prominent New Jersey political activist. She was registered Republican, as was Pinky. The Red Bank police chief described the Thompsons as a well respected family.

Thompson was a longstanding member of the American Prison Association. He served as a member of the New Jersey State Prison Board of Managers in 1936 and sat on the New Jersey State Parole Board in 1941.

Fred Moss, a New York City oil businessman and former employer of Thompson, stated Thompson was an excellent salesman and entirely reliable. He added the Thompson family was friends with the Roosevelts.

Mr. J.C. Richdale, another oil executive, explained to the Bureau he had known Pinky all his life. He told an agent that Lewis S. Thompson, Sr. was a hero in the first World War. At the time of the veteran's death, Richdale explained, *Time* magazine ran a long article honoring him and his service. Richdale added he was positive Pinky wanted to follow in the footsteps of his father.

“Mr. Richdale stated that he had just returned from New York City,” the 1941 FBI report continued, “and while there he had heard that Thompson had gone to Washington, D.C. to offer his services in Government defense work.”

It is not difficult to surmise Thompson would have been considered favorably by certain potential government employers, given such investigation findings from the FBI. In the early 1940's he worked with the Office of Production Management and the War Production Board. Bureau files indicate it was during this time, in 1942, Hoover received a letter from the Office for Emergency Management inquiring about Thompson.

“Inasmuch as Mr. Thompson has access to extremely confidential material,” the letter stated, “it will be appreciated if this case can be expedited so that we may have a report as soon as possible.”

Hoover replied an investigation was completed on Thompson for the Office of Production Management. He pointed out some six different reports were compiled by various field offices in cities across the nation where Thompson resided and/or conducted business. Hoover included a copy of each report in his response.[93]

The Office for Emergency Management should not be confused with the Office *of* Emergency Management. The parent agency of the former, where

Thompson worked, was the Executive Office of the President. The Office for Emergency Management, in turn, was the parent agency of some half-dozen additional agencies and several departments to be found within them. They included the Office of Production Management and the War Production Board, each of which became recognized by the FBI as employers of Thompson.

A 1943 FBI report composed by an agent of the Washington Field Office indicated Thompson had a brush in 1942 with the subject of an espionage investigation. It seems that a Madame Helene Jules-Henri was the subject of an "Espionage – F" investigation, and Thompson owned a car that showed up at the house where she resided. "The occupants of the automobile registered to Thompson were seen to enter the house where Madame Jules-Henri was living," it was documented in the previously referenced 1953 FBI memo on Thompson contained in the file compiled on Joseph Bryan.[94]

The memo indicated that in 1942 Thompson was working for the Office of Production Management, followed by the War Production Board that same year. It might therefore be somewhat reasonably assumed his employment in some way shaped the circumstance of his automobile turning up at the residence of Jules-Henri. There were no apparent consequences to Thompson arising out of the incident.

That same 1953 memo, "Subject: Lewis Steenrod Thompson also known as 'Pinky' Thompson", states the Bureau conducted two "applicant-type investigations" on Thompson. They occurred in 1941, as we explored, and again in 1950. The 1953 memo, composed for FBI Assistant Director Nichols per his instructions, indicated the 1950 investigation correlated with Thompson's application to work with the CIA. From the second and third pages of the memo:

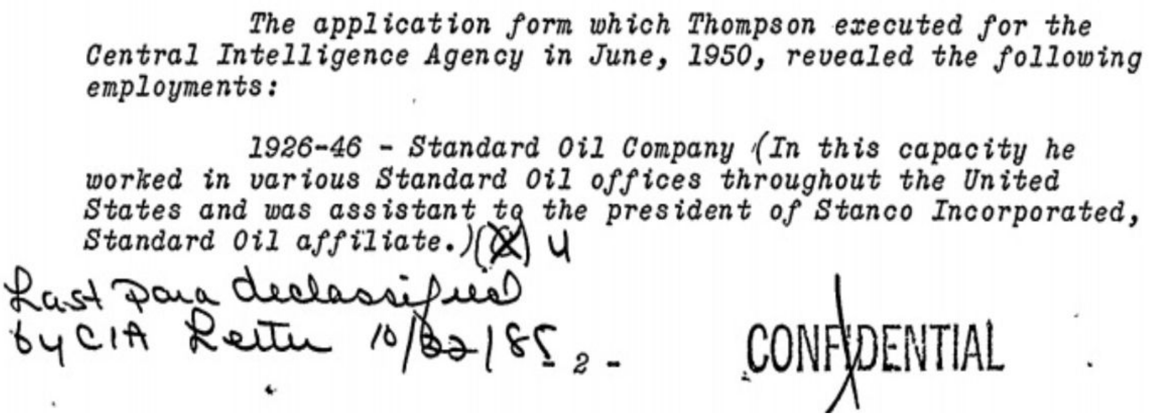

The application form which Thompson executed for the Central Intelligence Agency in June, 1950, revealed the following employments:

1926-46 - Standard Oil Company (In this capacity he worked in various Standard Oil offices throughout the United States and was assistant to the president of Stanco Incorporated, Standard Oil affiliate.) (X) U

Last para declassified
by CIA Letter 10/22/85

- 2 -

CONFIDENTIAL

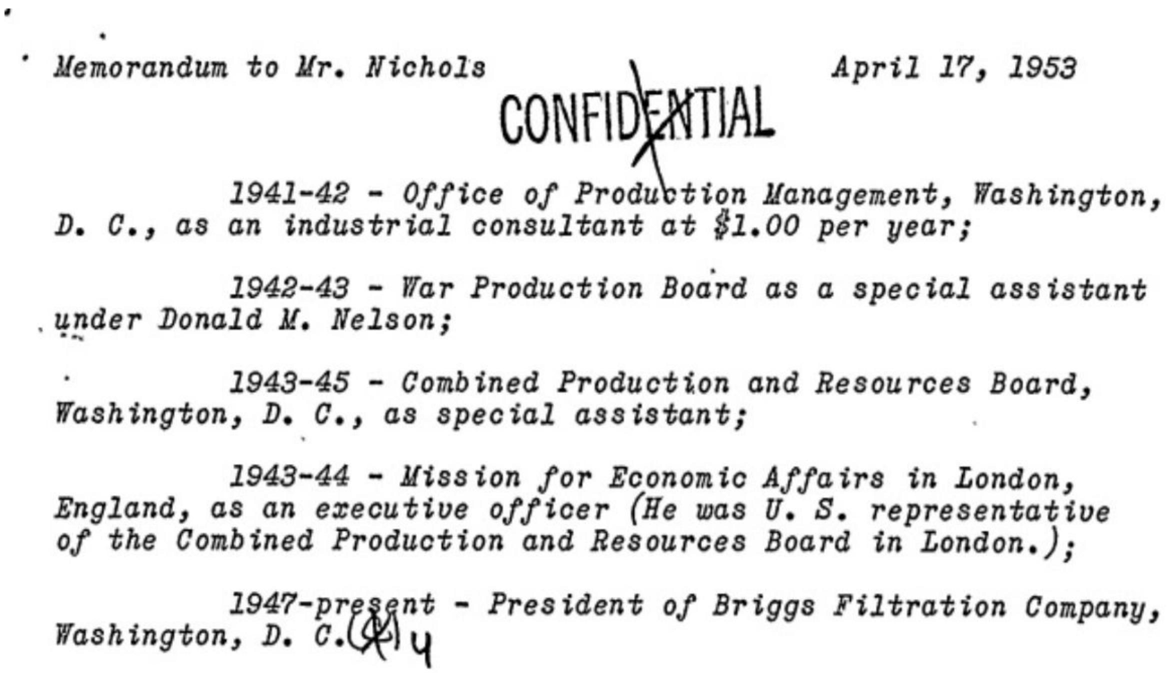

Memorandum to Mr. Nichols *April 17, 1953*

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1941-42 - Office of Production Management, Washington, D. C., as an industrial consultant at $1.00 per year;

1942-43 - War Production Board as a special assistant under Donald M. Nelson;

1943-45 - Combined Production and Resources Board, Washington, D. C., as special assistant;

1943-44 - Mission for Economic Affairs in London, England, as an executive officer (He was U. S. representative of the Combined Production and Resources Board in London.);

1947-present - President of Briggs Filtration Company, Washington, D. C. (U) 4

It might be considered interesting that, years after the 1942 Jules-Henri incident and according to 1953 meeting minutes on file at the CIA, Thompson provided DCI Dulles with a document pertaining to the Julius and Ethel Rosenberg case. An FBI investigation launched in 1949 discovered the couple to be a driving force behind a spy chain responsible for transferring state secrets pertaining to the atom bomb. In 1950 the Rosenbergs were arrested and charged with numerous crimes stemming from espionage conspiracy. In 1951 they were convicted and issued death sentences. Following failed attempts through the court to avoid the sentences, they were each executed at Sing Sing Prison in New York on June 19, 1953. From January 28, 1953, CIA meeting minutes:

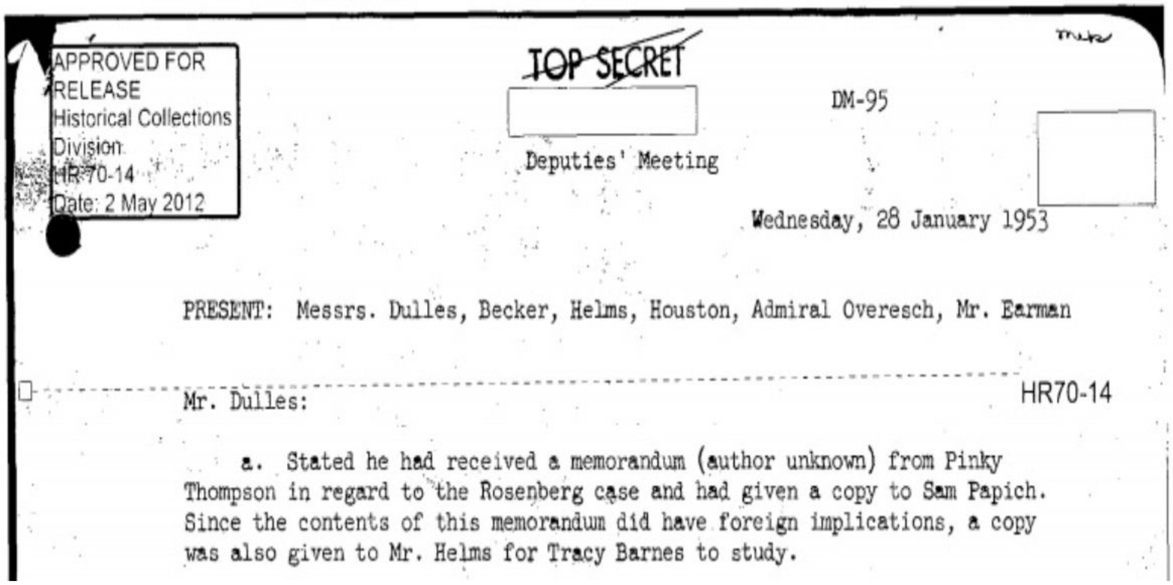

APPROVED FOR RELEASE
Historical Collections Division
HR70-14
Date: 2 May 2012

~~TOP SECRET~~

[redacted]

DM-95

[redacted]

Deputies' Meeting

Wednesday, 28 January 1953

PRESENT: Messrs. Dulles, Becker, Helms, Houston, Admiral Overesch, Mr. Earman

Mr. Dulles:

HR70-14

a. Stated he had received a memorandum (author unknown) from Pinky Thompson in regard to the Rosenberg case and had given a copy to Sam Papich. Since the contents of this memorandum did have foreign implications, a copy was also given to Mr. Helms for Tracy Barnes to study.

In 2019 I received the previously explored pdf from the FBI pertaining to Joseph Bryan III. I blogged about it, and pointed out it did not escape my attention the memo on Pinky Thompson contained in the file was dated April 17, 1953, just four days after the start of Project MKULTRA. DCI Allen Dulles officially authorized the now infamous project on April 13, 1953.

There seemed to be several implications of MKULTRA in the unfolding FOIA material I was obtaining in my pursuit of learning more about Joseph Bryan. Among them were the repeating overlap with biological warfare; the 1953 FBI memo on the brainwashing film that documented a meeting in the Attorney General office attended by Dulles and Hoover with reference to Bryan; $75,000 reportedly dumped by CIA officer Pinky Thompson upon a desk in Europe in the mid 1950's; and even Thompson's participation on governing boards within the prison system seemed potentially advantageous to the Agency. Preferring to err on the side of caution in my blog posts, I gave the circumstances mention but offered no opinions, inventorying them for the record and allowing readers to make of it what they would.

I subsequently heard from and consulted with multiple researchers knowledgeable on the topics. It was suggested to me the material could be interpreted to imply the FBI and CIA collaborated to various degrees on research related to interrogation techniques, or, essentially, projects leading up to and including MKULTRA.

The April 1953 FBI memo pertaining to Thompson clearly indicated he was vetted for employment with the CIA in June 1950, quite possibly due to his work with Joseph Bryan's psychological warfare division within the Office of

Policy Coordination. Moreover, the 1953 memo could easily be interpreted to indicate he was being vetted by the FBI at the time of its composition, for what knowledgeable sources suggested to me could quite possibly have been his inclusion in work related to Project MKULTRA. You will recall that is the memo on Thompson located in the FBI file on Bryan, with Bryan's name added by hand below the subject line.

Among the people who reached out to me about the blog post was researcher Mary Jo Watts, who stated she had extensively documented MKULTRA subprojects and how they were funded. Her initial message somewhat amusingly expressed her observation my post referencing the above FOIA documents danced all around MKULTRA without overtly suggesting its apparent relation. She explained she was quite familiar with Thompson through her own research, suggested he was heavily implicated in the MKULTRA saga, and volunteered receipts if I wanted to see them. Indeed I did.

In subsequent correspondence Watts provided me with various tips and copies of newspaper clippings, including a 1965 death announcement for Thompson. The announcement stated, "In lieu of flowers, contributions may be made to Geschickter Fund for Medical Research, Georgetown University Hospital." (A 1965 obituary published in a DC newspaper and archived at the CIA states Thompson, described as a CIA aide, died after a long illness.)

Anyone familiar with the MKULTRA saga, transcripts of the resulting Senate hearings, and works such as *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate* by John Marks, should recognize the significance of the Geschickter Fund. In the years after Thompson's death, the Fund was identified as among the most significant conduits for the covert transfer of CIA funding to institutions conducting MKULTRA subprojects.

The Geschickter Fund was a preferred CIA cover managed by Dr. Charles Geschickter, and as reported by John Marks. It served as a CIA "cutout," Marks wrote. He further explained the Geschickter Fund for Medical Research was a Washington, D.C. family foundation, headed by Dr. Geschickter, who provided the Agency with a variety of services for more than a decade.

The circumstances were more recently summarized by The Hoya, a Georgetown publication. It noted Dr. Charles Geschickter was "a Georgetown University professor of pathology who, according to CIA documents, had top-secret clearance and received CIA funding to construct a new research wing in the Georgetown University Medical Center. A description of the proposed facility — the Gorman Annex — suggested that human patients and volunteers would be available for experimental purposes. The testing began in March 1959."

Further information is available through the now declassified CIA material on MKULTRA Subproject 35, which involved construction of a new research wing at Georgetown Hospital. The arrangement enabled CIA covert research and undercover personnel.

The Geschickter Fund funneled money to many MKULTRA subprojects, and, in addition to Subproject 35, Dr. Geschickter served as an asset on Subproject 6 of Project MKSEARCH, the successor to MKULTRA. A portion of the transcript of August 3, 1977, Senate hearings on MKULTRA reads, "Authorization to contribute CIA funds toward construction of the Gorman Annex is contained in Subproject 35 of MKULTRA. Recently discovered material indicated that Dr. Geschickter continued his research for sleep- and amnesia-producing drugs under Project MKSEARCH through July 1967 at Georgetown University Hospital."

The involvement of Dr. Geschickter and his family foundation in CIA behavior modification research is considered common knowledge among historians. It is indeed noteworthy that respects to a deceased CIA employee were requested to be expressed through contributions to the Geschickter Fund. The 1965 death announcement provided by Mary Jo Watts:[95]

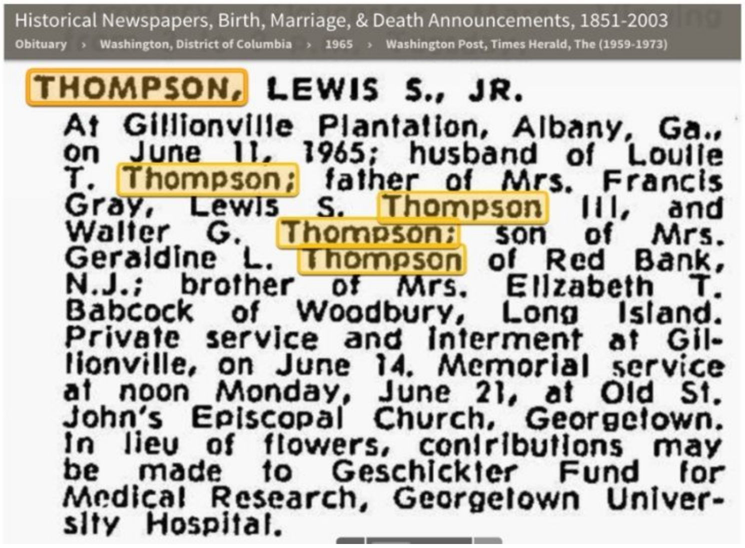

Historical Newspapers, Birth, Marriage, & Death Announcements, 1851-2003

Obituary › Washington, District of Columbia › 1965 › Washington Post, Times Herald, The (1959-1973)

THOMPSON, LEWIS S., JR.

At Gillionville Plantation, Albany, Ga., on June 11, 1965; husband of Loulie T. Thompson; father of Mrs. Francis Gray, Lewis S. Thompson III, and Walter G. Thompson; son of Mrs. Geraldine L. Thompson of Red Bank, N.J.; brother of Mrs. Elizabeth T. Babcock of Woodbury, Long Island. Private service and interment at Gillionville, on June 14. Memorial service at noon Monday, June 21, at Old St. John's Episcopal Church, Georgetown. In lieu of flowers, contributions may be made to Geschickter Fund for Medical Research, Georgetown University Hospital.

Watts additionally supplied me with a copy of a clipping from the June 22, 1963, edition of the Asbury Park (New Jersey) Press. The clipping indicated a relationship between Pinky's son and the Geschickter Fund.

The article announced the marriage of Lewis Steenrod Thompson III, son of Mr. and Mrs. Lewis S. Thompson, Jr. The bridegroom, Thompson III, was reported to be “with the Geschickter Fund for Medical Research of Georgetown University Hospital.”

Watts provided yet another clipping, this one from the May 28, 1963, Red Bank (New Jersey) Register. The article explained an ongoing court trial reached its fifth week concerning allegations a racehorse owned by Pinky Thompson failed post-race drug tests. The horse, Star Ice, was disqualified after winning two races and the purses from each were forfeited. Thompson and the horse trainer denied any wrongdoing. Interestingly, Dr. Geschickter testified on their behalf.

“Dr. Charles Geschickter of Washington testified yesterday that on a basis of reports made by three other Washington authorities on a Star Ice urine specimen in September, 1959, he would conclude there was no presence of a drug in the nature of amphetamine,” the article reported.

It seems some of us may have stranger job perks than others.

Readers will recall we went down the trail of Pinky Thompson after finding an FBI memo, of which he was the subject, located in an FBI file on Joseph Bryan III. We subsequently discovered E. Howard Hunt's assertion Hunt and Thompson worked for Bryan in a political and psychological warfare unit. The unit was a subdivision of a 1948-1952 CIA and State Department front, the Office of Policy Coordination. Another individual Hunt identified as a member of the unit was “Philadelphia investment banker Gates Lloyde,” a misspelling of CIA man H. Gates Lloyd II (no “e” on the end of Lloyd).

Horatio Gates Lloyd II (1900-1993) was described in a 1993 New York Times obituary as a Philadelphia investment banker who also served for ten years as a Deputy Director of the Central Intelligence Agency. He graduated from Princeton in 1923 and joined Drexel and Company, a Philadelphia investment bank founded by his father, where in 1927 he was made a partner of the firm. Mr. Lloyd joined the CIA in 1950, the article continued, and was appointed Deputy Director in 1954, a position he held until his retirement in 1964.

A FOIA request submitted to the FBI resulted in a response indicating no records were located pertaining to H. Gates Lloyd II. A search of the CIA website, however, revealed many declassified documents pertaining to Lloyd. Among them was a 1955 CIA memo verifying his appointment as Deputy Director of Support shown below.

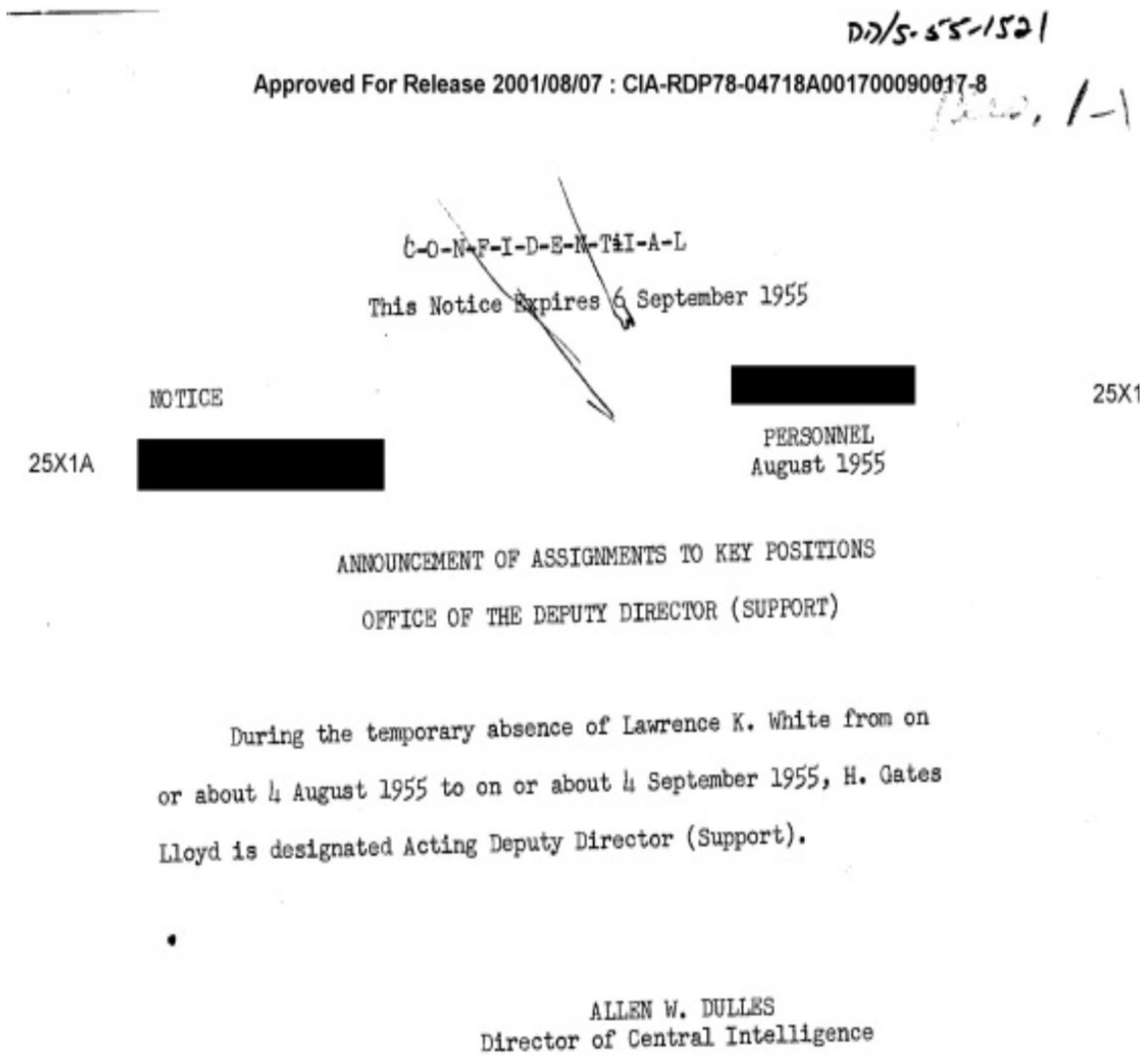

DD/S-55-1521

Approved For Release 2001/08/07 : CIA-RDP78-04718A001700090017-8

1-1

C-O-N-F-I-D-E-N-T-I-A-L

This Notice Expires 6 September 1955

NOTICE

[redacted] 25X1

25X1A [redacted]

PERSONNEL
August 1955

ANNOUNCEMENT OF ASSIGNMENTS TO KEY POSITIONS

OFFICE OF THE DEPUTY DIRECTOR (SUPPORT)

During the temporary absence of Lawrence K. White from on or about 4 August 1955 to on or about 4 September 1955, H. Gates Lloyd is designated Acting Deputy Director (Support).

ALLEN W. DULLES
Director of Central Intelligence

Another 1955 CIA memo, Subject: Implementation of a Verbal Understanding Between DCI and Mr. Nelson Rockefeller, was sent to the attention of Gates Lloyd. It advised him an agreement had been reached between DCI Dulles and Nelson Rockefeller for a method of dispersal of funding to “be used as directed by Mr. Rockefeller but not specifying the exact objects or purposes for which it is to be used.” The most practical method of making funds available, it was determined, “would be to simply increase CIA's contribution to PCG,” apparently for such expenses as a consultant.

Further research revealed the “PCG,” or Planning Coordination Group, was chaired by Nelson Rockefeller. A transcript of a 1955 memo posted at the Office of the Historian indicates the Group was set up within the Herbert Hoover-led Operations Coordinating Board. “The Planning Coordination Group was established," the memo states, "to aid in developing planning in both overt and covert fields and to advise and assist the responsible operating agencies in the coordinated development of plans and programs to carry out those national security policies appropriate to its functions." The memo further indicates the functions and composition of the PCG were described in a Budget Director's memo to the president and titled, "Coordination of Economic, Psychological, Political Warfare, and Foreign Information Activities."

The historic record suggests the PCG may have been intended to function in a capacity of coordinating and overseeing covert activities, but Rockefeller rather quickly identified its futility. Essentially, the CIA was not to be restrained. Incidentally, Nelson Rockefeller, Daniel Inouye, Barry Goldwater, who supported NICAP, and other notables would go on to sit on Senate committees conducting inquiries into CIA activities and MKULTRA. Joe Biden numbered among them as well.

A September 1956 CIA memo authored by Gates Lloyd shows he continued to play a supporting role in CIA finances from his position as Deputy Director. Lloyd advised the Director of Training about budgets for "position ceilings" for fiscal years 1957 and 1958. The ceiling allowances, which are redacted, were applicable to both military and civilian personnel, Lloyd wrote in the memo.

During an email exchange with Mary Jo Watts pertaining to circumstances surrounding Pinky Thompson, she described a network of CIA assets involved in transferring money into the Geschickter Fund. The operation included a relative of Dulles and employees at financial institutions. She mentioned one of the group was involved with a Pennsylvania investment bank.

Suspecting the individual might have something to do with Gates Lloyd and his work as a Philadelphia investment banker, I mentioned him to Watts. She was indeed familiar with Lloyd and responded with research tips surrounding the following information.

In September 1977, Sen. Edward Kennedy presided over a Senate health and scientific committee conducting inquiries into human drug testing done by the CIA. Dr. Charles Geschickter testified to the committee and responded to questions posed by Sen. Robert Schweiker.

The Senator asked how the Geschickter Fund received money designated for MKULTRA subprojects. Page 90 of a hearing transcript pdf indicates Dr. Geschickter explained the "original conduit" was a Philadelphia foundation.

Upon further questioning about the Geschickter Fund's role in distributing CIA money, the doctor described a system in which universities submitted research proposals and he would in turn see the projects were funded. Sen.

Schweiker then further sought clarification the previously described Philadelphia foundation acted as a funding entity.

“Yes,” Dr. Geschikter testified. “We only got, Senator Schweiker, we only got about $75,000 anonymously in our books that I can trace to CIA. All this money that we are talking about, the big volume of money, came through the Philadelphia Foundation.”

Mary Jo Watts explained the foundation was almost certainly an entity titled the Investment Association of Philadelphia. During the same hearing, Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, the director of MKULTRA, testified he could not recall details about the Philadelphia connection. Historians will recognize Gottlieb's failing memory as a recurring tactic implemented by the CIA chemist when asked specifics about subprojects he oversaw.

H. Gates Lloyd II had a son, H. Gates Lloyd III. According to The Philadelphia Inquirer, “he followed in the footsteps of his father,” graduating from Princeton in 1950 and ensuring a future in investment banking by taking a position at Drexel. In 1959, the Inquirer further reported, Gates Lloyd III was made the president of the Investment Association of Philadelphia.

Files readily available in the CIA online reading room include an April 1956 society column published in The Georgetowner. The article describes a dinner party hosted by the Undersecretary of the Army and his wife, honoring the Secretary of the Air Force and his wife. The 125 guests in attendance included Mrs. Frank Wisner, wife of the CIA officer who launched the Office of Policy Coordination; Joseph Bryan III, who headed up a political and psychological warfare subdivision of the OPC and was soon to sit on the NICAP Board of Governors; Mrs. Lewis Thompson, wife of Pinky, who worked for Bryan in the OPC; and CIA Deputy Director Gates Lloyd, who worked for Bryan in the OPC.

A 1962 Washington Post society article archived on the CIA website documented dozens of celebratory dinner parties taking place one September evening in Georgetown. The community was commemorating the reopening of a refurbished landmark tavern. Mrs. Wisner's participation was again noted. Attending another party were Mr. and Mrs. Gates Lloyd, along with Mr. and Mrs. Desmond FitzGerald. You will recall Dez FitzGerald was the NY high profile attorney who chaired the Committee of Five Million, worked in the OPC, and became a powerful CIA officer.

E, Howard Hunt, who described himself as working for Joseph Bryan in the OPC, wrote a number of novels. In the OPC, Hunt secured a contract with a publisher to do several paperbacks. It is not known how many total books the CIA sponsored, as a list has never been disclosed, but the New York Times alleged in 1977 the Agency was responsible for the publication of at least 1,000 books.[96]

As previously explored, Hunt went on to be credited with playing a key role in Operation PBSUCCESS and its destabilization of the government in Guatemala. His activities of note were many and diverse, and have filled entire books. He is best known for his role as a Watergate "plumber."

So what about the other members of the Office of Policy Coordination's political and psychological warfare unit as identified by Hunt and others? Let's take a look at more of Bryan's crew, but first, for context, let's take one more look at what Hunt wrote about the OPC and Bryan's group:

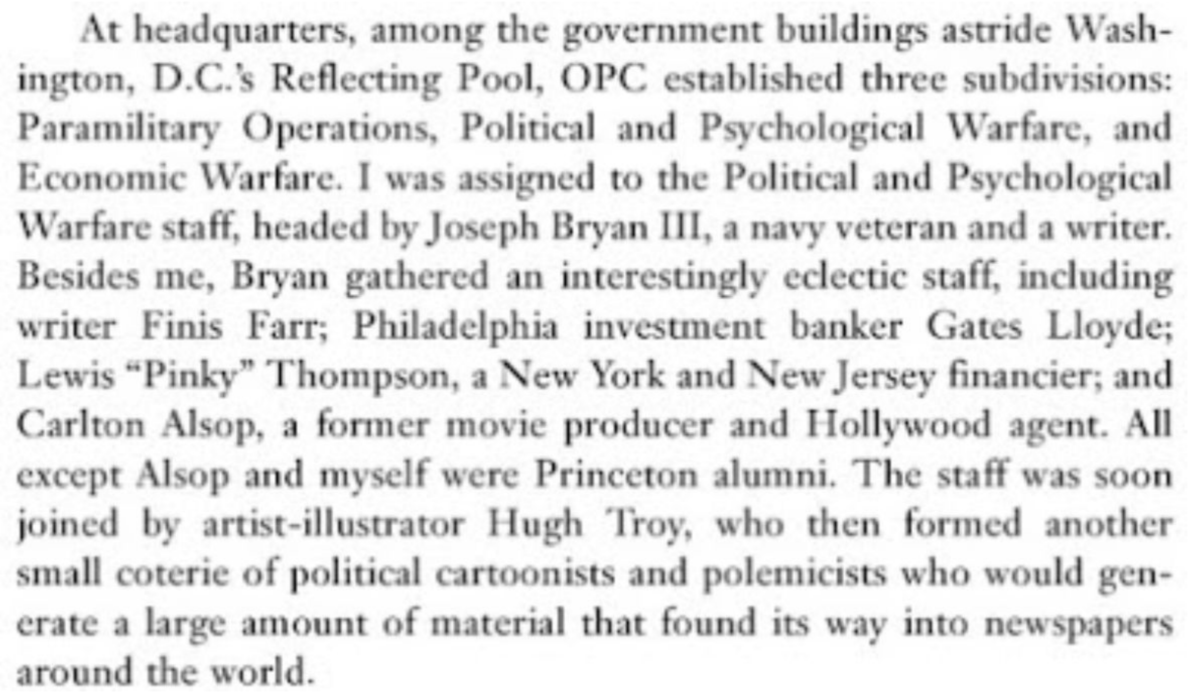

At headquarters, among the government buildings astride Washington, D.C.'s Reflecting Pool, OPC established three subdivisions: Paramilitary Operations, Political and Psychological Warfare, and Economic Warfare. I was assigned to the Political and Psychological Warfare staff, headed by Joseph Bryan III, a navy veteran and a writer. Besides me, Bryan gathered an interestingly eclectic staff, including writer Finis Farr; Philadelphia investment banker Gates Lloyde; Lewis "Pinky" Thompson, a New York and New Jersey financier; and Carlton Alsop, a former movie producer and Hollywood agent. All except Alsop and myself were Princeton alumni. The staff was soon joined by artist-illustrator Hugh Troy, who then formed another small coterie of political cartoonists and polemicists who would generate a large amount of material that found its way into newspapers around the world.

"Finis Farr is an experienced journalist but not, to put it charitably, a great biographer," a 1973 book review published in the New York Times began. Perhaps the circumstances would have been more clear to the reviewer had they known Mr. Farr was another of Joseph Bryan's recruits in an OPC psychological warfare unit.

Finis Farr, born New Year's Eve 1904 and deceased January 3, 1982, was in the Princeton Class of 1926. The "J Bryan Papers" collection maintained at a Princeton library (Bryan was the Class of 1927) includes some 500 letters exchanged between Farr and Joseph Bryan. The library collections are not available to the public as of this writing due to renovations being made. Farr, known as a writer with Hollywood connections, came on board with the OPC at the same time as Carlton Alsop.[97]

Carleton William Alsop (1900-1979), aka Carlton Alsop, was considered in his day to be the CIA's “most valuable asset in Hollywood.”[98] That was really saying something, considering the mid 20th century Agency reached into Fox, MGM, Universal, Disney, and now list many other production companies and film executives to have been among its propaganda arsenal.

Alsop operated undercover as a producer and agent at Paramount Studios. He worked with Judy Garland in the late 1940's and early 1950's, by which time he had joined Wisner, Bryan, Hunt and the political and psychological warfare subdivision of the OPC.

Alsop's responsibilities and contributions went on to include compiling movie reports. His work was part of a larger CIA campaign to discredit Soviet claims about discrimination in the U.S. against people of color and the accompanying issues of low pay, unequal justice, and violence. The Soviets took frequent advantage of opportunities to emphasize America's history of poor race relations. Alsop subsequently assisted the Agency in monitoring Communists in Hollywood, and reported on the success and failure of a covert group he led. The group was charged with introducing specific themes into films that furthered CIA objectives, and often minimized aspects of racism and oppression otherwise commonly found in the United States.

It was Alsop and Farr who were dispatched by the CIA to England after George Orwell's death in 1950 to meet his widow and secure film rights to *Animal Farm*. The rights acquired, Hunt secured a producer, Farr and Alsop funneled CIA funds into the project, and production began in November 1951. The most ambitious animated film ever made at the time included 80 cartoonists and arguably had minimal resemblance to the message portrayed in Orwell's classic writing. His moral that greedy, power-hungry Communists were impossible to discern from greedy, power-hungry capitalists was replaced with a much more overtly positive framing of CIA-promoted values.

Incidentally, writer and researcher Robbie Graham documented CIA influence in Hollywood, particularly including its portrayal of flying saucers and incoming extraterrestrials. The involvement of Agency assets was present in the making, for instance, of the iconic 1951 classic *The Day the Earth Stood Still*.

Alsop reportedly once turned down an offer from Walt Disney to manage Disneyland, and was known for mingling with the stars, many of whom he contributed to their careers in some fashion. While executing a career as a CIA officer, he was a Tinseltown publicist, advertising executive, and radio and film producer.

Hugh Troy (1906-1964) of Bryan's outfit was an artist and award-winning writer of children's books. He painted noteworthy murals in addition to his talents as an illustrator, and wrote for *Life Magazine*, *The New Yorker*, and *Esquire*. A native of Ithaca, New York, Troy attended Cornell, but was reportedly suspended without receiving a degree. Even the fact his father was a professor at the university was not enough to save him from the wrath of a faculty grown tired of his practical jokes.

Hugh Troy had an absolutely famous penchant for clever gags. To a legendary extent, as a matter of fact. Popular humorist H. Allen Smith, in his book, *The Complete Practical Joker*, referred to Troy as “the most imaginative and ingenious of all practical jokers.”

Troy holds the distinction of having been credited with devising an epic Cornell stunt during a winter snow storm. He took a wastebasket made out of a rhinoceros foot and used it to make it appear tracks had been left across the campus. The trail led to Beebe Lake, which the college used as a source for drinking water. It was there where the tracks came to an end that Troy created a large cracked area in the ice covering the lake.

Perhaps he experienced a mild bit of remorse over the next few days as people stopped drinking the water. Troy reportedly sent an anonymous note to administrators, revealing it was a joke and confessing how it was executed.

Other tricks in his bag included a bit where he got arrested leaving Central Park with a park bench. Upon reaching the police station, he produced a bill of sale for the bench, demonstrating he owned it and had brought it with him to the park.

As unconfirmed legend has it, police got so tired of the routine they ceased questioning the smart aleck who liked to walk around with a park bench. Troy then enlisted the help of his buddies to make off one night, one by one, with every bench in the park.

His college hijinks also reportedly included some stunts in which he and his team of pranksters dressed to appear like a work crew. In one instance, they descended upon the Waldorf-Astoria Hotel and removed all the light bulbs without being questioned.

In another, they began digging a hole in the street with presumed authority. As the story goes, police even showed up and helped divert traffic. At some point the band simply left, leaving the police and town with a hole in the street.

Funny guy, that young man destined to be a CIA recruit. His talent at perception management is evident, and I must say I found the implications to UFO hoaxes intriguing, particularly considering his artistic abilities. Mirage Men, indeed. Perhaps there is the odd UFO case or three from the 1950's followed by an anonymous confession it was a hoax.

At any rate, Troy's understanding of behavior and inducing incorrect assumptions did not escape this writer, nor, apparently, the CIA. In 1951 he moved to Washington, D.C., presumably in relation to the Agency and OPC.

While we are left to wonder the extent these men may have been involved in the UFO mix, that is much less the case with Joseph Bryan. The colonel was among the military officials thrust upon the public by NICAP, and apparently headed up the Board when Maj. Keyhoe and Gordon Lore were relieved of responsibilities.

Bryan's UFO advocacy, ostensibly or otherwise, included his stated position on UFOs as contained in a 1966 article published in the DC-based Sunday Star and archived at the CIA. The article, *Flying Saucers Again: Do You Believe in Them?*, was authored by retired USAF Lt. Col. Charles Cooke. The piece described Bryan as one of NICAP's most highly qualified members of its Board of Governors, and noted Bryan's former position as Special Assistant to the Secretary of the Air Force and a former member of the staff of Supreme Allied Commander at NATO Gen. Lauris Norstad.

“It is my opinion,” Bryan was quoted, “that the UFOs reported by competent observers are devices under intelligent control; that their speeds, maneuvers, and other technical evidence prove them superior to any aircraft or space devices now produced on earth; and that these UFOs are interplanetary devices systematically observing the earth, either manned or under remote control, or both.”

Col. Cooke further reported that a photo published with the story was provided by NICAP. The image depicted a plane and an alleged nearby flying saucer, a dubious interpretation at best. A more clear copy of the article and photo than archived at CIA may be viewed at Jan Aldrich's Project 1947 website.

A substantial amount of material was made available to us about Joseph Bryan and the surrounding characters via the Freedom of Information Act and related methods. There is clearly, however, more to learn. Whether further answers to key questions can be obtained at this distant point in time is yet to be seen. I have a number of FOIA requests still pending as of this writing. Perhaps some will bear significant fruit.

In yet other instances, FOIA officers replied that requested files were identified, yet, after multiple searches, could not be located. All things considered, I do not find that particularly unreasonable. Disappointing, yes, but not necessarily unreasonable. It's been a while since Townsend Brown met Nicholas de Rochefort.

A question we're going to keep coming back to, the more we learn about the intelligence officers involved with NICAP and the circles they kept, is if it seems feasible they would have been interested in the organization in an unofficial capacity. Are we to believe these men in the business of the State Department professional spy trade, employed as Central Intelligence officers, and experts in psychological warfare all just decided, over the course of NICAP's 20-plus years of operating, it would be fun or rewarding to be in a UFO group? Are we to believe all of their employers, former or current, found no conflicts of interest, potential security issues, or similar problematic aspects of their involvement with NICAP? I do not find such scenarios likely.

Sure, maybe a CIA propaganda specialist decided to help with UFO Disclosure. It's possible, and the irony would be fascinating, but, no, I do not find it probable.

Statements attributed to Joseph Bryan's son indicate he did not suspect his father had an agenda to undermine NICAP. Moreover, C.D.B. Bryan apparently described his father's outspoken stance on UFOs as an embarrassment.

"Anyone who knows anything about the history of NICAP knows that the group didn’t need *anybody's* help in its disintegration; it simply self-destructed," C.D.B. Bryan was quoted.

He apparently went on to write, “[M]y father’s unswerving, outspoken faith in UFOs... was, I felt, something of an embarrassment... I do not believe it was the sort of public position an agent would take whose covert goal was to smother interest in UFOs."

I tend to agree, yet it still does not absolve intelligence agencies or some of their personnel from covert interest or discreet agendas pertaining to NICAP. Whether the Agency intended to destroy NICAP is but one potential scenario. There are many more possibilities.

In his previously referenced book, Howard Hunt wrote that Joe Bryan eventually resigned in disgust from the OPC. “Nonoperational OPC bean counters and administrators made work increasingly harder,” Hunt asserted. This allegedly resulted in the departure of Bryan, who Hunt described as “our creative thinker.”

Bryan's apparent departure from OPC would probably have been in 1953 or so, after the Office merged with the Office of Special Operations, forming the Directorate of Plans. Perhaps Bryan stayed on with the Agency in some capacity after his reported split from OPC, or perhaps not.

Either way, we can easily surmise an environment of turmoil and distrust in the intelligence community. This is evident in the previously reviewed FBI investigations, and, particularly, the letters provided to the Bureau that were exchanged between Capt. Winston and Col. Bryan. Combined with Winston's published writing, which included a novel about a heroic conservative Pentagon official fighting the good fight against Communism in spite of attempts to undermine him, a theme is clear. The theme was even overtly expressed and explicitly played upon in the work we explored of Col. Amoss. It's also as old as politics itself: People, in this case CIA officers, feeling persecuted and hampered by bureaucratic red tape. That might be considered particularly ironic given the things we now know about the lack of effective CIA oversight and the extremes the Agency employed to further its priorities. It is indeed no less ironic those charged with oversight felt stifled as well, as suggested by events surrounding Nelson Rockefeller, the Planning Coordination Group he chaired, and of course eventual hearings on MKULTRA and unwitting human experimentation.

Nonetheless, a feasible argument could be made that perhaps Bryan, disgusted with an intelligence community which he had served that nonetheless apparently came looking to tarnish his reputation at one point, became resentful and distrusting of Uncle Sam's minions. This might be suggested, for instance, in the discrepancies concerning statements made about Edgar Hoover, and circumstances surrounding Winston's testimony to a Senate committee. The Soviet Union was no doubt pleased with America's obsession with loyalty as prioritized and fueled by the FBI and select politicians, and the resulting accusations and decreased productivity it manifested.

It is possible Bryan subsequently numbered among a percentage of intelligence officers who got caught up in the UFO steeplechase when they saw their colleagues getting involved with NICAP, and got on board for various personal reasons. Perhaps his disgust with a turning tide of CIA directors, merging offices, and untrustworthy bureaucrats contributed to suspicions he may have harbored that there actually was a significant UFO cover-up. Or maybe the subject provided an attractive forum for criticizing his former employers. He would have been neither the first nor the last to argue any given stance on a UFO topic based more on the dislike of the opposition than concern about the issue at stake.

Perhaps arguably most likely, however, is that Col. Bryan was just doing his job, whatever the objectives may have been. A job he may have taken pride in for personal reasons, as compared to financial compensation.

It seems noteworthy Bryan took on the ghost writing project for Aga Kahn in 1953, presumably after his purported CIA departure and as the incorporation of NICAP grew closer. Bryan's experience with the FBI obscenity room, and the "tell all" nature of the book project seem relevant, as does Bryan's expertise in propaganda. It is difficult to dismiss potential implications of his continuing official relationship with the Agency and/or U.S. intelligence community in the Aga Kahn project.

It is for such reasons I find Bryan's experience in the OPC potentially relevant. The talents and activities of his crew hold implications to the 1950's UFO genre as a whole, but each of their continuing service to the CIA arguably carries significance to the NICAP story. The career paths taken by members of Bryan's crew over the course of the 1950's and 1960's offers us a profile of his OPC outfit and intriguing implications. If Joe Bryan was not - at the least - called upon by the Company for the occasional favor or task, he would be the only one among them who was not. Howard Hunt continued as a significant CIA officer, given particular credit for his work in Operation PBSUCCESS, among other notable events; Pinky Thompson became a special assistant and an asset in the funneling of funds, as apparently did his son; Gates Lloyd became a Deputy Director of Support and worked with funding and budgets, and his son apparently assisted as well; Finis Farr was a high profile writer with Hollywood connections; Carlton Alsop was recognized as the Agency's most valuable Hollywood asset; and Hugh Troy was a talented artist and perception manager who oversaw the distribution of CIA propaganda into publications throughout the world. With all of that being the case, we are left to consider their boss, Joseph Bryan, joined NICAP.

It seems likely that intelligence agencies indeed had concerns about Keyhoe's sources of classified information and reports perceived to relate to UFOs. It only seems reasonable the CIA, FBI, Air Force and other agencies would be concerned about identifying those sources and any individuals overly interested in them. It might even be considered somewhat surprising if there were not some lower profile assets than Bryan involved in NICAP and infiltrating the lines of communication. There is even the possibility the entire operation was a counterintelligence effort designed to roll up spies, aka people inordinately interested in gaining the trust of personnel with situational ethics when it came to leaking classified information. Keyhoe and his closest supporters – those genuinely interested in the UFO mystery - would not necessarily have been aware of such an operation. As has been aptly pointed out by others, the best front organization is one that doesn't know it's a front.

Therein might lie some of the reasons for the NICAP resignations of esteemed officers, as compared to the rumors they were pressured to leave the organization. It seems about as likely some of them preferred to avoid getting caught up in security issues and potential spy games, as opposed to the idea they were urged to resign from NICAP by former employers for other reasons.

Perhaps further research will provide deeper understandings yet to be found, but my general thesis is the intelligence community played a significant role in the incorporation of NICAP. I suspect the interest rose and fell over time, with assets serving various purposes to one extent or other as deemed advantageous. In the end, the CIA seems to have used its associates to oversee managing and eventually dissolving the organization. That was done for what could have been a number of reasons, none of which I suspect had much to do with UFOs.

CHAPTER 13

IN THE NEWS

Although DCI Allen Dulles authorized MKULTRA on April 13, 1953, the project roots can be traced back much earlier, as is typically the case with any given program. CIA directors Roscoe Hillenkoetter and Walter Bedell Smith have their rightful spots as well in overseeing the progression of unconventional warfare and mind control research.

It was Hillenkoetter who was at the helm in 1949 when the Advisory Committee to the Secretary of Defense was meeting, as documented in the previously explored FBI memo on biological warfare. Readers will recall CIA representatives sought support from the Advisory Committee for what was described as vigorous exploration of techniques to achieve positive control of experimental human subjects.

A CIA memo, Subject: Project Bluebird, indicates Hillenkoetter's authorization of activities and funding for the MKULTRA forerunner in 1950. Knowledge of Bluebird was specified to be limited to an absolute minimum number of people. That need to know basis was designated to include representatives of the Office of Policy Coordination.

The memo continued, “The purpose of this project is to provide for the immediate establishment of interrogation teams for the operational support of OSO [Office of Special Operations] and OPC [Office of Policy Coordination] activities.”

Please allow me to briefly direct our attention back to the FBI memo, “Subject: Lewis Steenrod Thompson also known as 'Pinky' Thompson”. The memo documented Thompson executed an employment application for the CIA in June 1950, coincidentally or otherwise, two months after Hillenkoetter authorized Bluebird.[99] The memo was also placed in the file of Joseph Bryan III, for whatever specific reasons.

Back to the 1950 CIA Bluebird memo, it stipulated for a doctor's office to be set up in Washington, staffed with psychiatrists and personnel to “serve as cover for training, experimentation, and indoctrination purposes in the use of drugs and hypnosis.” Field support for interrogation teams was designated to be provided by either OSO or OPC.

A total annual budget of $65,515 was allocated for Bluebird, with $18,000 of it earmarked for transportation, second only to payroll. That was an estimated $1,500 per person for each trip, projecting three people making an average of four trips per year. Factoring inflation, that would be almost $17,000 per trip for each person, not counting salary. They got around.

In August 1951 the name of Bluebird was changed to Artichoke. The launching of Artichoke took place during the tenure of DCI Smith, the man responsible for initially pulling the OPC under his and CIA control before merging it with OSO into the Directorate of Plans in 1952. Artichoke received guidance from at least mid-1951 through 1953 from the “Bluebird/Artichoke Committee,” which consisted of representation from various divisions, including the Office of Policy Coordination.[100]

Frank Wisner, who directed the OPC and was credited with its expansion and subsequent reach, led the above referenced Directorate of Plans from 1952 to 1958, with future DCI Richard Helms as his Chief of Operations. Allen Dulles took the Central Intelligence reigns and authorized MKULTRA in 1953, and it was Helms who would eventually give the now infamous orders to destroy all related documents. It was apparently only due to some boxes of overlooked files, later obtained by John Marks through a FOIA lawsuit, that the public ever began to learn anything at all about the grossly unethical research projects.

In E. Howard Hunt's descriptions of the activities of the OPC political and psychological warfare staff, he suggested a significant aspect of operations included publishing content in newspapers. Specifically, Hunt wrote Hugh Troy formed a group of personnel “who would generate a large amount of material that found its way into newspapers around the world.” The assertion is certainly supported by any number of documents and accounts of OPC activities. It is a given that propaganda techniques include such methods.

James Carrion wrote about interesting potentially related circumstances, as mentioned earlier, in his books *Anachronism* and *The Roswell Deception*. Each are available for free download in searchable pdf at his blog, historydeceived.blogspot.com.

Carrion suggested select UFO cases, including the reported 1946 Ghost Rockets and events which took place during the fateful UFO summer of 1947, served as opportunities for the American intelligence community. He documented how the press was fed incorrect information about such events by intelligence officers, and proposed the published stories had specific purposes. The targeted demographic would not have been the public at large, but a combination of spies attempting to report the information back to their home agencies, along with the ultimate recipients of the messages, such as Joseph Stalin, and the manipulation of their perceptions and resulting actions.

It would be somewhat of a given Stalin would not suspect UFO reports to be indicative of otherworldly visitors, but some type of weapons development, classified exotic aircraft, and/or related disinformation effort. This would necessarily make select UFO reports of interest to the global intelligence community.

Resulting advantageous opportunities might include, for instance, intercepting diplomatic carriers transporting coded messages and subsequently cracking the codes. The task might be made less difficult if intelligence personnel could be reasonably sure they were looking for certain proper nouns and circumstances contained within the coded messages. You will recall we briefly explored Carrion's hypothesis earlier when Col. Amoss advised the Air Force Office of Special Investigations of a UFO report, and the account given to an OSI officer by Amoss somehow came to include alleged witness names and an address unknown to all other involved parties. That was curiously the case even though Amoss stated he got the story from one of those parties. Such circumstances might potentially serve a variety of purposes, such as code breaking efforts or as a means to identify security leaks if the names surface at a later date, among other scenarios.

Another instance of potential interest arose pertaining to the activities of UFO skeptic Dr. Donald Menzel. As explored earlier, the astronomer and astrophysicist worked with the Atomic Energy Commission at Los Alamos. Documents obtained through the FOIA revealed he also worked with the Boston Naval Reserve on code-related matters. At least some of Menzel's work was apparently related to identifying atmospheric conditions most advantageous for activities pertaining to message transmissions, according to previously referenced records already obtained. Hundreds of pages of additional FBI documents pertaining to Dr. Menzel are being processed for release by the National Archives and Records Administration stemming from the original FOIA request.

Carrion suggested the careful and intentional manipulation of UFO reports in the media might lead adversaries to suspect the existence of advanced weapons research and development. While some of the potential benefits are rather obvious, others might be more subtle. This might include anticipating how a figure like Stalin would react to such manipulation, and conducting operations accordingly, or, in effect, staying a step ahead of where you're directing his next move.

Carrion cited how a specific operation, Project Seal, was misrepresented to the American press. Reporters were told it was a research project involving an airborne weapon as powerful as the atomic bomb. In actuality, Seal was an already discontinued project that explored the possibility of creating tsunami waves through underwater explosions. In some instances, Carrion demonstrated, the doctored reports about Project Seal were published on the same 1947 newspaper pages as those that carried stories about Kenneth Arnold's famous UFO sighting.

Sweetening the pot even more, Carrion shared how he developed reason to suspect that even the shape of Arnold's reported craft, and the ensuing parade of published saucer reports thereafter, potentially played a role in the narrative constructed by the powers that be. Stalin demonstrated a particular post-World War II interest in securing the services of an Austrian husband and wife team of weapons developers. The couple were known to have been working on plans for a disc-like aircraft to act as a long range delivery system for bombs. The aircraft would theoretically skip across the atmosphere, not unlike a stone across a pond, effectively outdistancing missiles of its day. Carrion therefore proposed an intended effect of misrepresenting Project Seal, combined with manipulation of the 1947 UFO stories, may have been for Stalin to suspect his American counterparts had landed the Austrian couple and/or outpaced his efforts to achieve the advanced delivery system.

Such circumstances may have influenced UFO media reporting, the accompanying rapidly growing public interest, the overlapping of the UFO and intelligence communities, and even the existence of UFO reports themselves. As suggested, Carrion suspected all of this may have ultimately been related to deciphering codes. Public confusion obviously becomes a byproduct of such operations.

Mary Jo Watts mentioned in an email that she discovered instances in which research later known to be related to MKULTRA was published in mid 20th century newspapers. At my request, she helpfully offered an example. The clipping she shared involved Dr. Geschickter and his work with experimental drugs.

My previous research into such topics as the CIA and its descent into the study of hypnosis revealed similar circumstances. Dr. Martin Orne, for instance, published material on hypnosis later known to be the result of his work conducted under the umbrella of the Agency. One might suspect such circumstances to be common, and arguments have been competently made the CIA steered the formations of 20th century paradigms in fields such as psychiatry, or at least its funding recipients did. We might wonder what other purposes may have been involved in publishing such stories.

I found it interesting when Watts added that, in the course of her research, she came across archived newspapers in which MKULTRA-related material was published on the same pages as UFO-themed stories. She further noted that even though some of the articles were wire stories, she found it curious the pieces varied a bit from one publication to another, circumstances I happened to be aware Carrion observed in his work as well.

Theoretically, if select details were published in a newspaper in Oak Ridge, Tennessee, while alternative details were reported in the same wire story in Los Alamos, New Mexico, one might gain opportunities to collect valuable information on those who incorporate the different key words into their reports and messages. This might include learning more about their locations, capabilities, interests, and codes used in communications, among other things. The methods potentially stood to assist the code breaking process, gain intelligence on spy rings, and manipulate the actions of the recipients of the coded messages. There stood to be a lot of reasons intelligence officers might publish news stories in addition to simple propaganda and political warfare.

Watts provided me with an image of a page from the March 12, 1956, edition of the Mirror-News, pictured below. Across the bottom of the page, from left to right, we find an article on Capt. Ruppelt and his book about flying saucers and Project Blue Book; a reference to a book, *The Search for Bridey Murphy*, which pertained to psychic research, reincarnation, and "little-known aspects of the mind," among other esoteric subject matter; and, far right, a book on hypnotism by George H. Estabrooks, a Harvard graduate and Colgate psychologist later known for his MKULTRA efforts to intentionally split the personalities of undercover spies, aka Manchurian Candidate research.

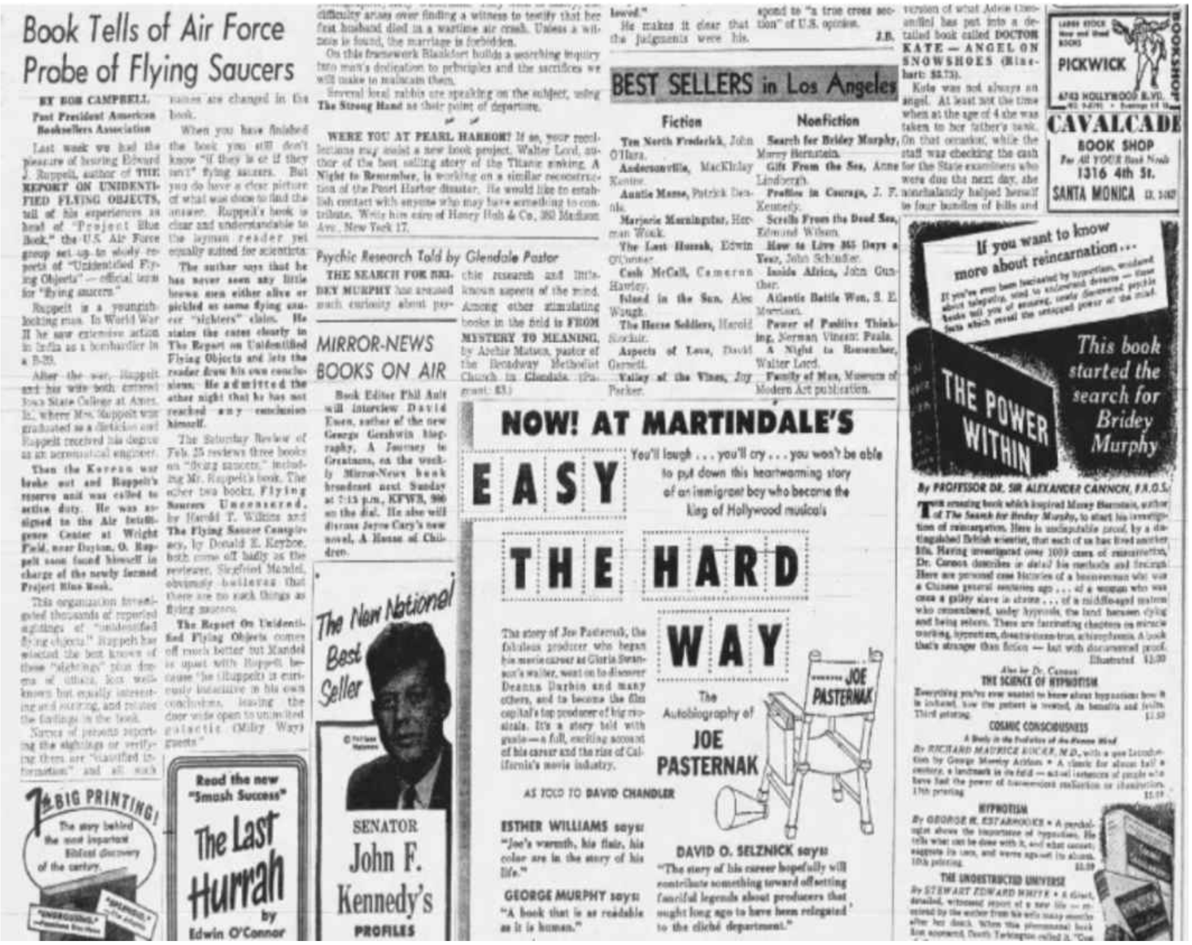

Book Tells of Air Force Probe of Flying Saucers

BY BOB CAMPBELL,
Past President American Booksellers Association

Last week we had the pleasure of hearing Edward J. Ruppelt, author of **THE REPORT ON UNIDENTIFIED FLYING OBJECTS,** tell of his experiences as head of "Project Blue Book," the U.S. Air Force group set up to study reports of "Unidentified Flying Objects"—official term for "flying saucers."

Ruppelt is a youngish-looking man. In World War II he saw extensive action in India as a bombardier in a B-29.

After the war, Ruppelt and his wife both entered Iowa State College at Ames, Ia., where Mrs. Ruppelt was graduated as a dietician and Ruppelt received his degree as an aeronautical engineer.

Then the Korean war broke out and Ruppelt's reserve unit was called to active duty. He was assigned to the Air Intelligence Center at Wright Field, near Dayton, O. Ruppelt soon found himself in charge of the newly formed Project Blue Book.

This organization investigated thousands of reported sightings of "unidentified flying objects." Ruppelt has selected the best known of these "sightings" plus dozens of others, less well-known but equally interesting and exciting, and relates the findings in the book.

Names of persons reporting the sightings or verifying them are "classified information" and all such names are changed in the book.

When you have finished the book you still don't know "if they is or if they isn't" flying saucers. But you do have a clear picture of what was done to find the answer. Ruppelt's book is clear and understandable to the layman reader yet equally suited for scientists.

The author says that he has never seen any little brown men either alive or pickled as some flying saucer "sighters" claim. He states the cases clearly in The Report on Unidentified Flying Objects and lets the reader draw his own conclusions. He admitted the other night that he has not reached any conclusion himself.

The Saturday Review of Feb. 25 reviews three books on "flying saucers," including Mr. Ruppelt's book. The other two books, **Flying Saucers Uncensored,** by Harold T. Wilkins and **The Flying Saucer Conspiracy,** by Donald E. Keyhoe, both come off badly as the reviewer, Siegfried Mandel, obviously believes that there are no such things as flying saucers.

The Report On Unidentified Flying Objects comes off much better but Mandel is upset with Ruppelt because "he (Ruppelt) is curiously indecisive in his own conclusions, leaving the door wide open to unlimited galactic (Milky Way) guests."

difficulty arises over finding a witness to testify that her first husband died in a wartime air crash. Unless a witness is found, the marriage is forbidden.

On this framework Blankfort builds a searching inquiry into man's dedication to principles and the sacrifices we will make to maintain them.

Several local rabbis are speaking on the subject, using **The Strong Hand** as their point of departure.

WERE YOU AT PEARL HARBOR? If so, your recollections may assist a new book project. Walter Lord, author of the best selling story of the Titanic sinking, **A Night to Remember,** is working on a similar reconstruction of the Pearl Harbor disaster. He would like to establish contact with anyone who may have something to contribute. Write him care of Henry Holt & Co., 383 Madison Ave., New York 17.

Psychic Research Told by Glendale Pastor

THE SEARCH FOR BRIDEY MURPHY has aroused much curiosity about psychic research and little-known aspects of the mind. Among other stimulating books in the field is **FROM MYSTERY TO MEANING,** by Archie Matson, pastor of the Broadway Methodist Church in Glendale. (Pageant: $3.)

MIRROR-NEWS BOOKS ON AIR

Book Editor Phil Ault will interview David Ewen, author of the new George Gershwin biography, A Journey to Greatness, on the weekly Mirror-News book broadcast next Sunday at 7:15 p.m., KFWB, 980 on the dial. He also will discuss Joyce Cary's new novel, A House of Children.

lowed."

He makes it clear that the judgments were his.

spond to "a true cross section" of U.S. opinion.

J.B.

BEST SELLERS in Los Angeles

Fiction	Nonfiction
Ten North Frederick, John O'Hara.	**Search for Bridey Murphy,** Morey Bernstein.
Andersonville, MacKinlay Kantor.	**Gift From the Sea,** Anne Lindbergh.
Auntie Mame, Patrick Dennis.	**Profiles in Courage,** J. F. Kennedy.
Marjorie Morningstar, Herman Wouk.	**Scrolls From the Dead Sea,** Edmund Wilson.
The Last Hurrah, Edwin O'Connor.	**How to Live 365 Days a Year,** John Schindler.
Cash McCall, Cameron Hawley.	**Inside Africa,** John Gunther.
Island in the Sun, Alec Waugh.	**Atlantic Battle Won,** S. E. Morison.
The Horse Soldiers, Harold Sinclair.	**Power of Positive Thinking,** Norman Vincent Peale.
Aspects of Love, David Garnett.	**A Night to Remember,** Walter Lord.
Valley of the Vines, Joy Parker.	**Family of Man,** Museum of Modern Art publication.

version of what Adele Comandini has put into a detailed book called **DOCTOR KATE — ANGEL ON SNOWSHOES** (Rinehart: $3.75).

Kate was not always an angel. At least not the time when at the age of 4 she was taken to her father's bank. On that occasion, while the staff was checking the cash for the State examiners who were due the next day, she nonchalantly helped herself to four bundles of bills and

LARGE STOCK New and Used BOOKS
PICKWICK BOOKSHOP
6743 HOLLYWOOD BLVD.

CAVALCADE BOOK SHOP
For All YOUR Book Needs
1316 4th St.
SANTA MONICA

If you want to know more about reincarnation...
If you've ever been fascinated by hypnotism, wondered about telepathy, tried to understand dreams — these books tell you of amazing, newly discovered psychic facts which reveal the untapped power of the mind.
THE POWER WITHIN
This book started the search for Bridey Murphy
By PROFESSOR DR. SIR ALEXANDER CANNON, F.R.G.S.
The amazing book which inspired Morey Bernstein, author of The Search for Bridey Murphy, to start his investigation of reincarnation. Here is indisputable proof, by a distinguished British scientist, that each of us has lived another life. Having investigated over 1000 cases of reincarnation, Dr. Cannon describes in detail his methods and findings. Here are personal case histories of a businessman who was a Chinese general centuries ago . . . of a woman who was once a galley slave in chains . . . of a middle-aged matron who remembered, under hypnosis, the land between dying and being reborn. There are fascinating chapters on miracle working, hypnotism, dreams-come-true, schizophrenia. A book that's stranger than fiction — but with documented proof.
Illustrated $3.00
Also by Dr. Cannon:
THE SCIENCE OF HYPNOTISM
Everything you've ever wanted to know about hypnotism: how it is induced, how the patient is treated, its benefits and faults. Third printing. $3.50
COSMIC CONSCIOUSNESS
A Study in the Evolution of the Human Mind
By RICHARD MAURICE BUCKE, M.D.
HYPNOTISM
By GEORGE H. ESTABROOKS
THE UNOBSTRUCTED UNIVERSE
By STEWART EDWARD WHITE

7th BIG PRINTING!
The story behind the most important Biblical discovery of the century.

Read the new "Smash Success"
The Last Hurrah
by Edwin O'Connor

The New National Best Seller
SENATOR John F. Kennedy's PROFILES

NOW! AT MARTINDALE'S
EASY THE HARD WAY
You'll laugh . . . you'll cry . . . you won't be able to put down this heartwarming story of an immigrant boy who became the king of Hollywood musicals
The story of Joe Pasternak, the fabulous producer who began his movie career as Gloria Swanson's waiter, went on to discover Deanna Durbin and many others, and to become the film capital's top producer of big musicals. It's a story told with gusto—a full, exciting account of his career and the rise of California's movie industry.
The Autobiography of JOE PASTERNAK
AS TOLD TO DAVID CHANDLER
ESTHER WILLIAMS says: "Joe's warmth, his flair, his color are in the story of his life."
GEORGE MURPHY says: "A book that is as readable as it is human."
DAVID O. SELZNICK says: "The story of his career hopefully will contribute something toward offsetting fanciful legends about producers that ought long ago to have been relegated to the cliché department."

Watts also provided an image of a page of the February 26, 1956, Jackson Sun. Articles covering Ruppelt's book and *The Search for Bridey Murphy* were published side by side.

Additionally provided by Watts was an image of a page from the January 17, 1957, Shamokin News-Dispatch. Published the month Maj. Keyhoe took the NICAP reigns, the page contained an article on NICAP and Adm. Fahrney's assertion UFOs moved at speeds that could not be duplicated by Russian or U.S. aircraft. The article was published alongside references to both Hungarian refugees and hypnosis experimentation, topics which would each prove of significant interest to the CIA.

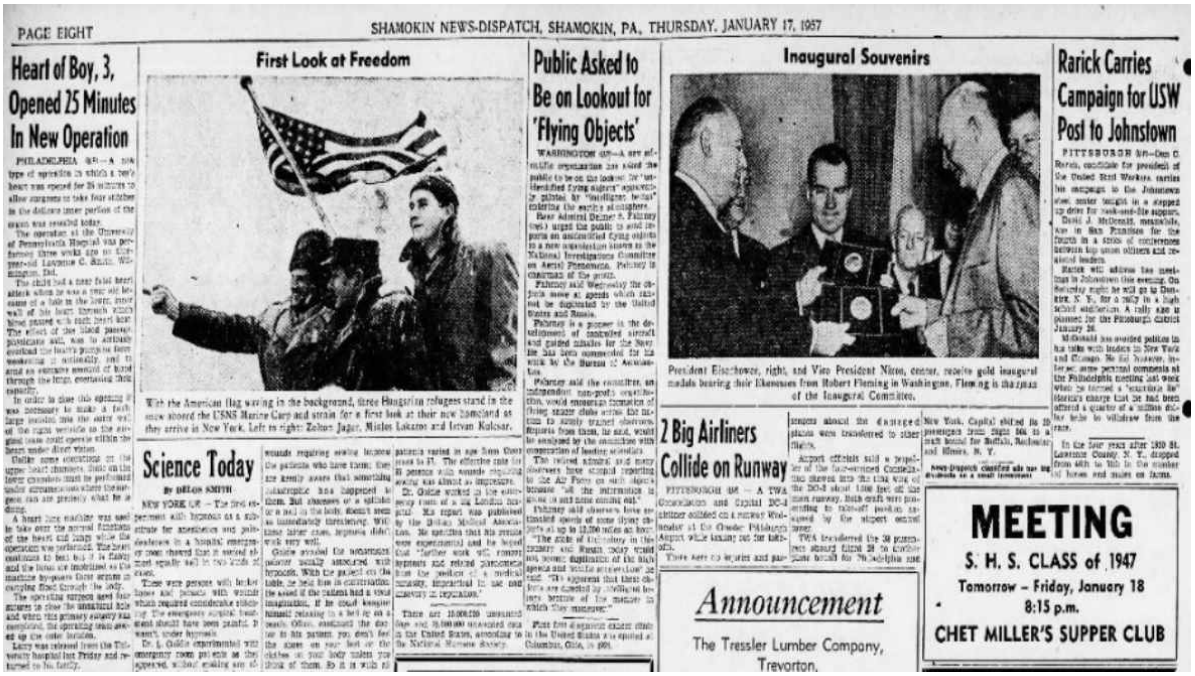

PAGE EIGHT SHAMOKIN NEWS-DISPATCH, SHAMOKIN, PA, THURSDAY, JANUARY 17, 1957

Heart of Boy, 3, Opened 25 Minutes In New Operation

First Look at Freedom

With the American flag waving in the background, three Hungarian refugees stand in the snow aboard the USNS Marine Carp and strain for a first look at their new homeland as they arrive in New York. Left to right: Zoltan Jager, Miklos Lakatos and Istvan Kolcsar.

Science Today

By DELOS SMITH

Public Asked to Be on Lookout for 'Flying Objects'

Inaugural Souvenirs

President Eisenhower, right, and Vice President Nixon, center, receive gold inaugural medals bearing their likenesses from Robert Fleming in Washington. Fleming is chairman of the Inaugural Committee.

2 Big Airliners Collide on Runway

Rarick Carries Campaign for USW Post to Johnstown

Announcement

The Tressler Lumber Company,
Trevorton.

MEETING
S. H. S. CLASS of 1947
Tomorrow – Friday, January 18
8:15 p.m.
CHET MILLER'S SUPPER CLUB

Further food for thought can be found in the previously referenced 1953 FBI memo on Pinky Thompson located in the Bureau file on Joseph Bryan III. Readers will recall the memo included documentation of a 1950 employment application submitted by Thompson to the CIA. As shown in the image below, Thompson was documented as listing his position at the time of the CIA application in 1950 as president of Briggs Filtration Company of Washington, D.C.

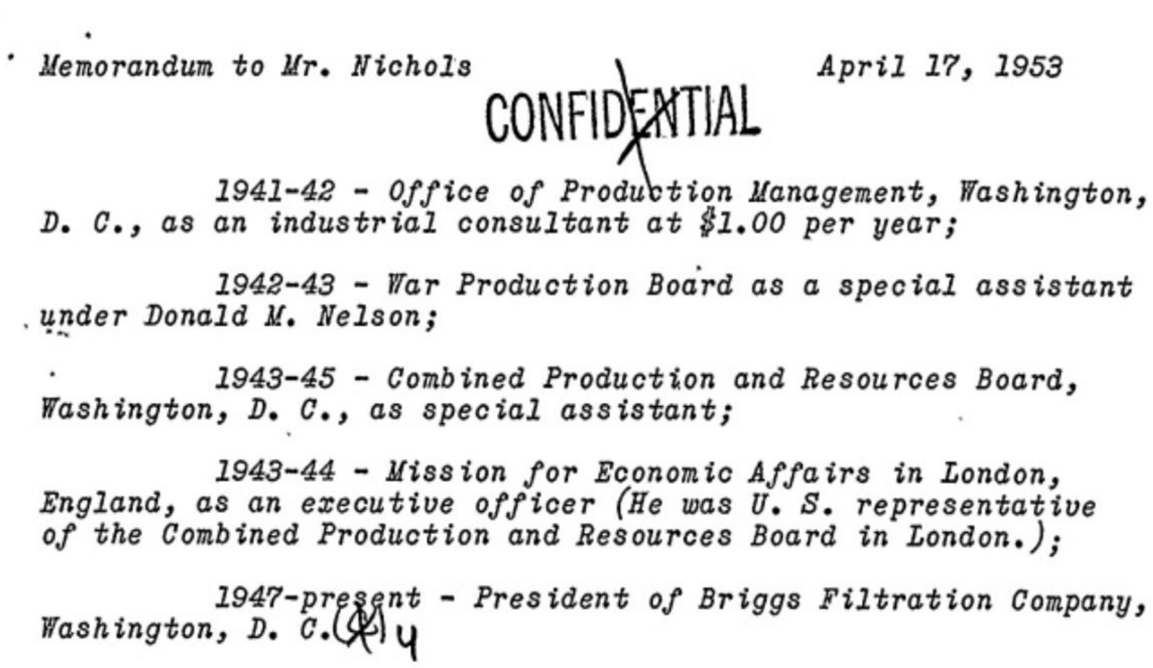

Memorandum to Mr. Nichols April 17, 1953

CONFIDENTIAL

1941-42 - Office of Production Management, Washington, D. C., as an industrial consultant at $1.00 per year;

1942-43 - War Production Board as a special assistant under Donald M. Nelson;

1943-45 - Combined Production and Resources Board, Washington, D. C., as special assistant;

1943-44 - Mission for Economic Affairs in London, England, as an executive officer (He was U. S. representative of the Combined Production and Resources Board in London.);

1947-present - President of Briggs Filtration Company, Washington, D. C.(X) 4

In an effort to learn more about the activities of Briggs Filtration Company, I came across an internet search return which directed me to a 1955 article published in Scientific American and archived at the JSTOR digital library. The article, *The New Psychiatric Drugs* by Harold E. Himwich, curiously pertained to the exploration of new avenues for the application of drugs to treat mental illness, including reference to lysergic acid and mescaline.

I soon obtained a pdf of the article from JSTOR, and discovered a reference to Briggs Filtration Company located in a full page advertisement for Alcoa Chemicals. The chemical company, as seen in the image below, proudly demonstrated its collaboration with Briggs to supply the Howard Hughes-owned Trans World Airlines with air filtration systems for its jets.

The 1955 Scientific American piece additionally contained an advertisement to sell Douglas aircraft, “designed for the U.S. Navy.” An ad for Hewlett-Packard was also featured in the article.

Take a filter tip from the new TWA SUPER-G CONSTELLATIONS

At 20,000 feet they cleanse recirculated, pressurized air with Briggs filters of Alcoa Activated* Alumina

The pressurization unit of the Super-G Connie provides a smooth change from one altitude to another. It is equipped with a Briggs filter containing ALCOA Activated Alumina for removal of smoke and odors. A "first" for TWA.

ALCOA Activated Alumina is acting as a king-size cigarette filter . . . to improve your comfort next time you fly Trans World Airlines' ultramodern Super-G Constellations. An integral part of the ship's pressurization and air filter system is an ALCOA Activated Alumina block manufactured by Briggs Filtration Company, Washington, D.C.

Aloft, with the cabins under pressure, this ALCOA Activated Alumina block goes to work on recirculated air . . . filters it of all tobacco smoke, tars, gums and other contaminants . . . returns it, clean and fresh, to the cabins. When replaced periodically, the block is saturated with tars, proof of ALCOA Activated Alumina's efficient contribution to passenger comfort.

This is but one of the many contributions ALCOA Activated Alumina makes . . . in comfort air conditioning, in dehydration of gases, liquids and solids, in catalytic reactions. There's a grade and type of Activated Alumina for *your* application, too. Write for samples. Let us tell you how this amazingly efficient desiccant can go to work for you.

*Reg. T.M., Aluminum Company of America

ALUMINUM COMPANY OF AMERICA, CHEMICALS DIVISION
729-K Alcoa Building, Pittsburgh 19, Pa.

ALCOA
CHEMICALS
ALUMINUM COMPANY OF AMERICA
*ALCOA

© 1955 SCIENTIFIC AMERICAN, INC

This content downloaded from
38.68.67.196 on Fri, 28 May 2021 13:19:21 UTC
All use subject to https://about.jstor.org/terms

CHAPTER 14

FINAL YEARS

America's cultural transition from the tumultuous 1960's into the 1970's was not lost on NICAP. If the first two categories of the evolution of NICAP were the 1956 Townsend Brown crew followed by 13 years of Keyhoe rule, then the decade of the '70s began its third and final chapter.

Stuart Nixon, formerly a NICAP staffer, was in effect running the organization after the removal of Donald Keyhoe and Gordon Lore. Richard Hall had ceased being a steady fixture since even before the Condon Report. In 1970 Nixon was made Secretary-Treasurer and later given the position of Executive Director. He was known for his interest in photo analysis, as compared to boots on the ground field investigation or other aspects of UFO research that had come to characterize NICAP.

John L. "Jack" Acuff was appointed President of NICAP in May of 1970, and thus formally began what came to be known as the Acuff-Nixon era. Acuff was the former director of the DC-based Society of Photographic Scientists and Engineers. He was also the proprietor of Acuff Associates, Inc., a business management services provider. He did not seem to know much or care a whole lot about UFOs, but perhaps that suited the Board just fine in the wake of the passionate Keyhoe and other circumstances.

The arguably drama-prone Todd Zechel reported in the August 1978 edition of the *Just Cause* newsletter that the Russian KGB targeted Acuff and the Society of Photographic Scientists and Engineers. From 1967 to 1970, Zechel asserted, Acuff was in communication with the FBI as a result of Soviet transactions conducted with the Society. As the story went, the Soviets ordered books from the Society and paid by check through the mail. The FBI began monitoring the payments and asked Acuff about the purposes of the checks. This purportedly fostered a relationship between Acuff and the Bureau, and Acuff would notify the FBI about transactions with Russians.

According to Zechel, the situation progressed to the point Acuff "would meet Soviet personnel at the secret request and guidance of the FBI."[101] Assuming this happened anything as described, perhaps KGB interest was related to classified work conducted by the Society and relationships its members may have had with select CIA personnel.

A search of the CIA online archive returned a number of documents responsive to “Society of Photographic Scientists and Engineers.” The documents include, for instance, a 1962 CIA Office of Training internal publication that provided details for the Society's annual conference. The information was listed in a section designated for professional meetings and conferences of interest.[102]

Additional documents indicate CIA interest in papers presented and topics explored by the Society. The evolution of photography techniques, photo analysis, and film development would naturally be of interest to global intelligence agencies. The same might be said of experts who study the activities.

A 2020 FOIA request submitted to the FBI for files referencing or pertaining to the late John Leland “Jack” Acuff, Jr., resulted in no responsive records. It is always possible such records remain classified for one reason or other, or were destroyed, or something of that nature, but the Bureau did not suggest potentially responsive records may have been lost or destroyed. It simply stated there were no records pertaining to Acuff.

A FOIA request on Acuff was also submitted to the CIA. It remains open as of this writing.

Zechel further asserted that in May 1977 the KGB attempted to recruit Acuff while he was employed as the president of NICAP. Zechel identified “Gennadiy I. Fedosov, First Secretary for Public Cultural Exchanges, Soviet Embassy offices, Washington, D.C.,” as a suspected KGB officer targeting Acuff for recruitment.

Suspected purposes for continued KGB interest in Acuff as described by Zechel included confidential sources developed by NICAP. Such sources provided NICAP with information related to UFO reports, in one instance including a message from NORAD, the North American Aerospace Defense Command. Some of the UFO reports involved international cases, such as a now famous event in Iran, and NICAP published the material in 1975 and 1976 editions of newsletters.

Zechel further theorized KGB interest might have been due to NICAP personnel in and of themselves. NICAP may have been targeted because of certain covert CIA employees who held important positions in the organization, Zechel wrote.

Rumors of CIA tampering in NICAP were bound to spread, even if no one knew at the time of circumstances we have opportunities today to review in hindsight and as explored in this book. Intel community intrigue was simply baked into the NICAP mode of operation, and it was and remains entirely reasonable to take interest in the cast of characters.

Richard Hall wrote that in 1971, with Acuff as president and Joseph Bryan still on the Board, two new members were added to the Board of Governors. One was Brig. Gen. Robert C. Richardson III, USAF (Ret). Hall described Richardson as a World War II fighter group commander who served in various planning and R&D roles for NATO, Air Force Systems Command, and the Defense Atomic Support Agency.

Harry C. Cooper was the other 1971 new addition to the Board. “Harry C. Cooper,” Hall wrote in his 1994 paper, “had served in the CIA from its inception in 1947 until retirement in 1966, including service in the Operations Branch. He became Special Assistant to the Deputy Director for Intelligence.”

Acuff negotiated contracts on behalf of Acuff Associates, Inc., or AAI, with NICAP in order to manage the organization. Services were to include maintaining business and research files, coordinating investigations, distributing newsletters, conducting administrative duties, and similar responsibilities. NICAP was run from an AAI office along with other clients.

Available files suggest the NICAP cost of these contracts may have run in excess of $30,000 per year.[103] Calculating inflation from 1974 to the time of this writing, AAI was requesting payment of some 170 grand a year by current standards. In a manner of speaking, NICAP curiously ended up back where it started, contracted with a business management corporation, in this case AAI instead of Counsel Services.

Stuart Nixon left NICAP in 1974, reportedly due to a power struggle involving Acuff's plans to mold NICAP into his personal enterprise.[104] This might not be entirely difficult to envision, considering Acuff's contract negotiations.

It was the early 1970's phase of NICAP, while Nixon held the position of executive director, depicted in typed notes on file at the CIA. The undated, unsigned profile of NICAP archived at the Agency is shown in the images below.

National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena (NICAP)

Appears to be a fairly loose structure but rather efficient. Stuart Nixon (background in investigative journalism) is currently Executive Director. He along with John Acuff and Charles Miller (backgrounds unknown) make up the organizations Editorial Review Board which is responsible for policy, including the newsletter, pxxx press and other media relations, as well as special xxpxqx reports and xx programs.

This board xmkmk relies heavily on both a loosely xxx structured advisory group and a fairly well developed and well placed xx network of investigators. The advisory group is made up of experts in xkk many disciplines including physics, astronomy, anthropology, medicine and psychology. This group also includes some ex-CIA and Defense Intelligence types who advise on investigative techniques and NICAP / Government relations. There does not seem to be any logical or systematic program by which these advisors are chosen, but rather xx the procedure seems to be to simply offer one's services to the organization through either Nixon or the Review Board. Often the advisors simply joined NICAP (a rather easy task since all it takes is a specified membership dmxx fee) found something out about the organization, and then made their qualifications known to the Review Board.

The xt system of investigators is a good one. Nxon has divided the country into regions and has established, "investigators" in each of the regions. Any member of NICAP is encouraged to xmkxkkx request a form by which one can apply for this position. The requirements for the position xxemxtmxxbmx include a minimum age of 25, formal training or experience in some branch of science, or other specialized background applicable to systematic collection of information, the ability to cover an area of at least 50 miles in diameter xf or one hour of driving time. As of a few months ago some 35 investigators were located throughout the country, with NICAP in the process of establishing even more. A breakdown of their backgrounds looked like the following: 7 PhDs, 2MAs or MS, 23 BAs or BS, 1AA and 2 with college training but no degrees. Occupationally they included 4 physical scientists, 13 engineers, 3 college profs, 13 specialists, including doctor, technician, computer programmer and businessman. Five of the 35 are pilots. Also xxxtxx utilized as " legmen" for the investigators are investigator xxxtx assistants. All investigators carry ixx credentials xt identifying them as investigators for NICAP.

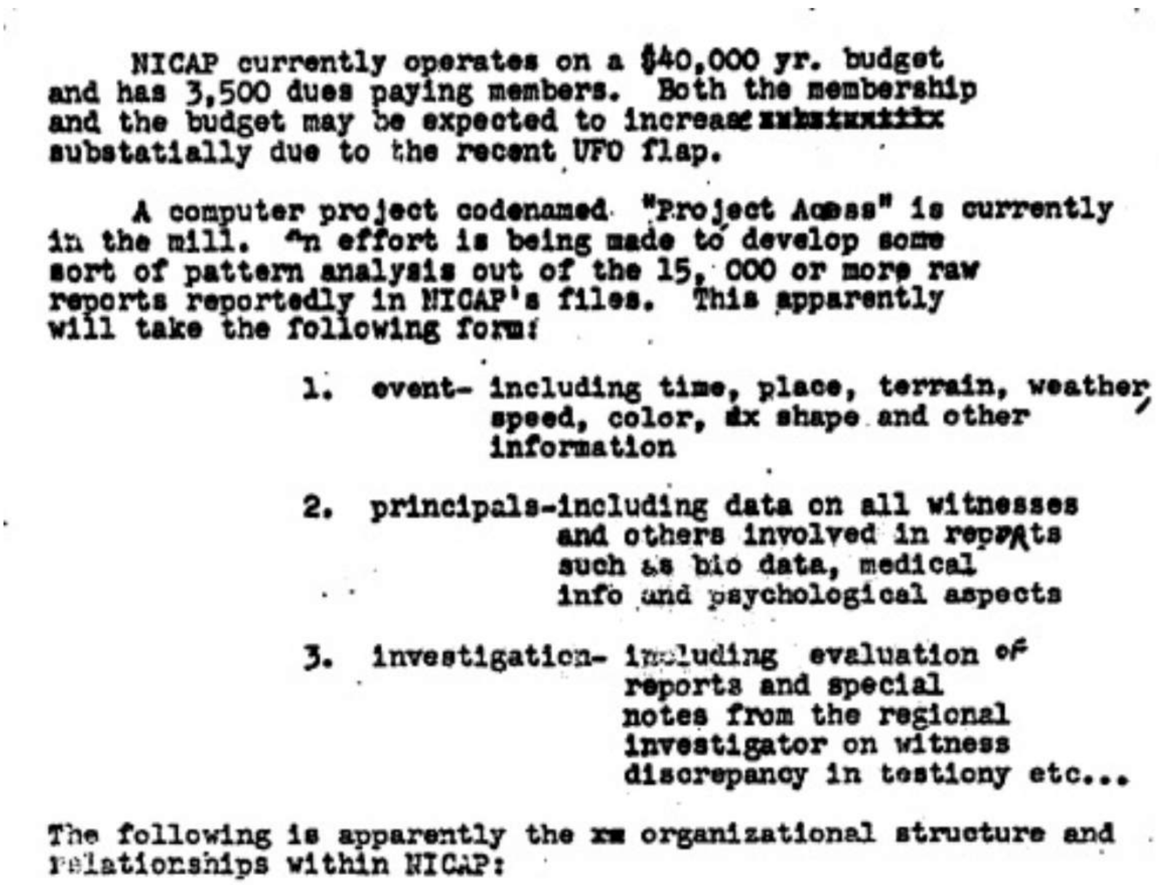

NICAP currently operates on a $40,000 yr. budget and has 3,500 dues paying members. Both the membership and the budget may be expected to increase substatially due to the recent UFO flap.

A computer project codenamed "Project Acess" is currently in the mill. An effort is being made to develop some sort of pattern analysis out of the 15, 000 or more raw reports reportedly in NICAP's files. This apparently will take the following form:

1. event- including time, place, terrain, weather, speed, color, shape and other information
2. principals-including data on all witnesses and others involved in reports such as bio data, medical info and psychological aspects
3. investigation- including evaluation of reports and special notes from the regional investigator on witness discrepancy in testiony etc...

The following is apparently the organizational structure and relationships within NICAP:

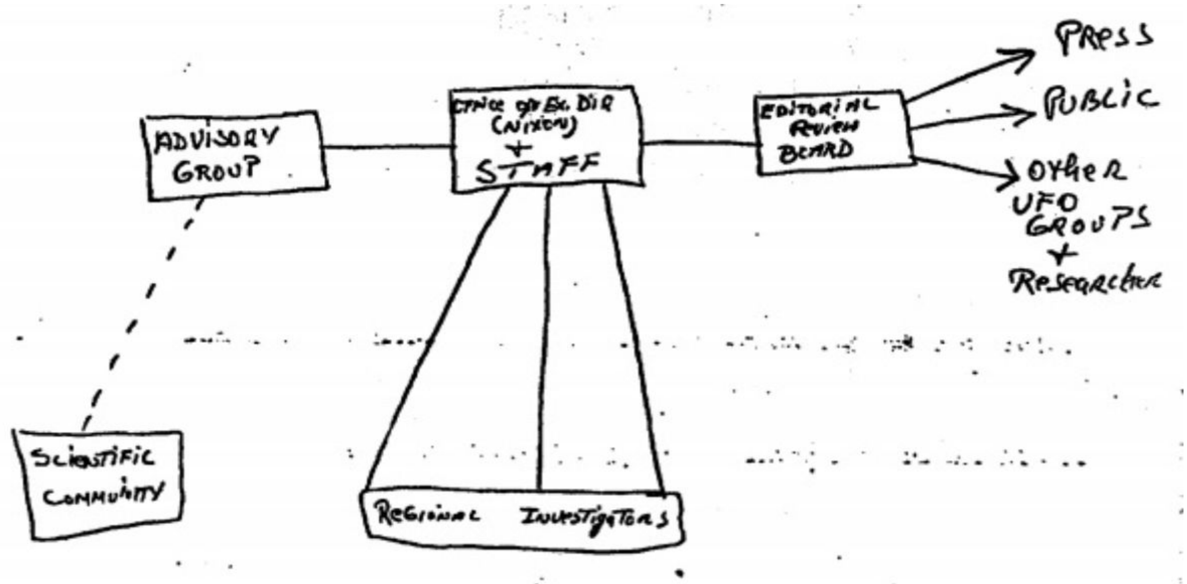

OFFICE OF EX. DIR (NIXON) + STAFF
ADVISORY GROUP
EDITORIAL REVIEW BOARD
PRESS
PUBLIC
OTHER UFO GROUPS + RESEARCHER
SCIENTIFIC COMMUNITY
REGIONAL INVESTIGATORS

The same year Nixon departed, 1974, longtime NICAP flag waver Sen. Barry Goldwater took a seat on the Board of Governors. For whatever reasons, NICAP was reportedly spending minimal amounts of revenue on UFO investigations during this era, further depleting its dwindling membership while its reputation continued to slide.[105]

By 1978 the wheels were coming off. Acuff was complaining he was owed significant sums of money and the cupboards were bare. If there weren't enough problems already, NICAP staffers and members were barraged with mailers of Nazi propaganda. The material arrived bearing NICAP computer labels and membership codes. Goldwater's office was reportedly particularly displeased with the turn of events, which does not seem a huge stretch, given potential political fallout of the Senator having a leadership role in an organization disseminating Nazi reading material.

The trail seemed to go through Ernst Zundel, aka Christoff Freidrich, the head Nazi at a group in Toronto called Samisdat. “Freidrich” claimed he bought the NICAP mailing list twice from Acuff – and he had complaints about it, too. He was reportedly angry at Acuff because the list of past and present NICAP members he paid for included 8,000 names of people who were physically dead.[106]

If there might be anything to say in defense of Acuff in the whole mess, it would be that by some accounts he was tricked into the transaction when Samisdat used a front organization to buy the mailing list. Other sources believed Acuff knew where the list was going, and an argument might still be made he shouldn't have been selling and releasing the information at all.

About this same time, an interested party happened one Sunday to be driving in the vicinity of Acuff's office, aka NICAP headquarters, when they caught sight of a bunch of kids running down the road with armloads of UFO magazines. The person became suspicious and followed the line of youths back to the source: the dumpster at the NICAP office, where they promptly discovered even more youngsters making off with UFO loot. Doing their own dumpster dive, the concerned adult reportedly filled a station wagon with NICAP books, magazines, files by the hundreds, correspondence, photos, film negatives and related items while apparently keeping scavenging future ufologists at bay.

A number of individuals were understandably concerned about the state of NICAP. Some contacted the Board of Governors in attempts to preserve files and help shape whatever tentative future the org might have had left. Acuff was reportedly shopping NICAP around for a sum of about $30,000, an amount that could settle the books with him if he were to pull off the sale. By some accounts, Acuff claimed NICAP owed him over $20,000.

Richard Hall, Dr. John Carlson, and Larry Bryant were among a group of people making up an informal committee to preserve NICAP. The three entered into negotiations with NICAP representatives in 1978.

Hall, who at that point had not been involved with NICAP in several years, later wrote that Gen. Richardson, Joseph B. Hartranft, and Charles Lombard, an aide to Sen. Goldwater, acted on behalf of NICAP. Dr. J. Allen Hynek was also involved in negotiations, although his Center for UFO Studies would not absorb NICAP for a couple more years yet. In 1978, Richardson and Lombard expressed interest in reviving NICAP, Hall indicated. MUFON and CUFOS were by that time leading organizations in the field, and Hall's group was more concerned with preserving NICAP files than perpetuating its existence.

Negotiations continued for five months, with Richardson and Lombard occasionally suggesting Hall was under consideration to be offered the job of president. Hall would later express concerns about ulterior motives, suggesting an overall lack of interest in UFOs was exhibited by the NICAP representatives and Board. Throwing everything in a dumpster might have been a tell, as well.

Hall's group was struck by what he termed the complete ignorance of UFO history, UFO groups, and prominent ufologists displayed by these Board members. “We wondered if there were some hidden agenda behind their machinations,” he wrote.

It surely didn't help such suspicions when in October 1978 the Board removed Acuff, as anticipated, but rather than offering the position of president to Richard Hall as discussed might happen, installed alleged career CIA man Alan Hall in the spot. Acuff was officially said to have resigned and was moved to the Board, instead of severing all ties, for reasons widely figured to be related to the money the org owed him. Acuff retained possession of NICAP files for the time being, or, as one former member put it, was holding them ransom.[107]

Two new Board members were voted in at that same point in time, Charles Lombard, who had been assisting with negotiations, and John Fisher. As touched on earlier, Fisher was the head of the American Security Council and Communication Corporation of America, a conservative fund-raising organization.

Alan Hall's work as NICAP president seems to primarily have been limited to answering the phone and occasionally writing a letter out of his home. The organization existed in little more than name during its final couple of years.

I located minimal information about either Harry C. Cooper or Alan N. Hall. Patrick Huyghe, a writer and researcher well known among those with UFO interests due to his popular website, The Anomalist, explored NICAP in his 1979 article published in the New York Times, *U.F.O. Files: The Untold Story*.

“There are presently three former C.I.A. employees on the NICAP board of directors,” Huyghe wrote, “including Charles Lombard, a congressional aide to Senator Barry Goldwater, who is himself a NICAP board member; and retired U.S. Air Force Col. Joseph Bryan III. Bryan feels, as he did back in 1959 when he joined the board, that U.F.O.'s are interplanetary. NICAP's current president is Alan Hall, a former C.I.A. covert employee for 30 years.”

The CIA online archive has little to no information about Harry Cooper or Alan Hall. That is not the case for Charles Lombard, to which a CIA website search results in many documents.

Among the CIA documents is a pdf containing notes from 1972, apparently approved for release in 2006, indicating Agency interactions with representatives from the Office of Legislative Counsel. As shown in the first of two images below, the notes suggest Lombard was granted compartmented security clearance due to his work with the Senate Space Committee.[108]

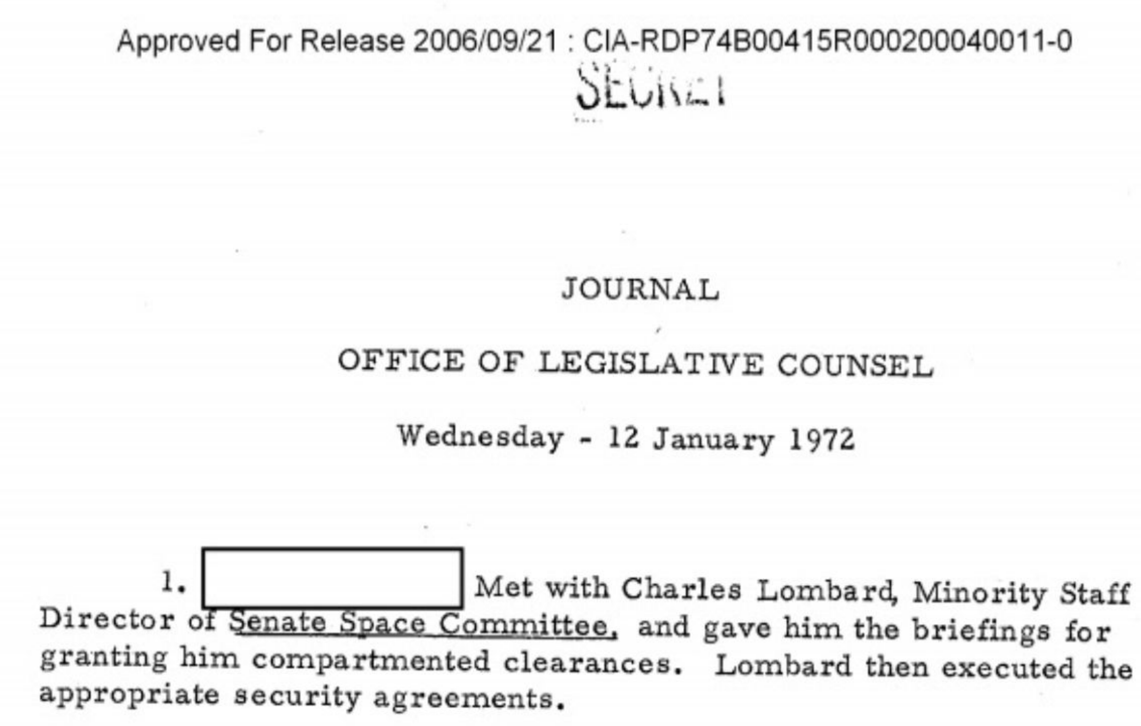

Approved For Release 2006/09/21 : CIA-RDP74B00415R000200040011-0

SECRET

JOURNAL

OFFICE OF LEGISLATIVE COUNSEL

Wednesday - 12 January 1972

1. [redacted] Met with Charles Lombard, Minority Staff Director of Senate Space Committee, and gave him the briefings for granting him compartmented clearances. Lombard then executed the appropriate security agreements.

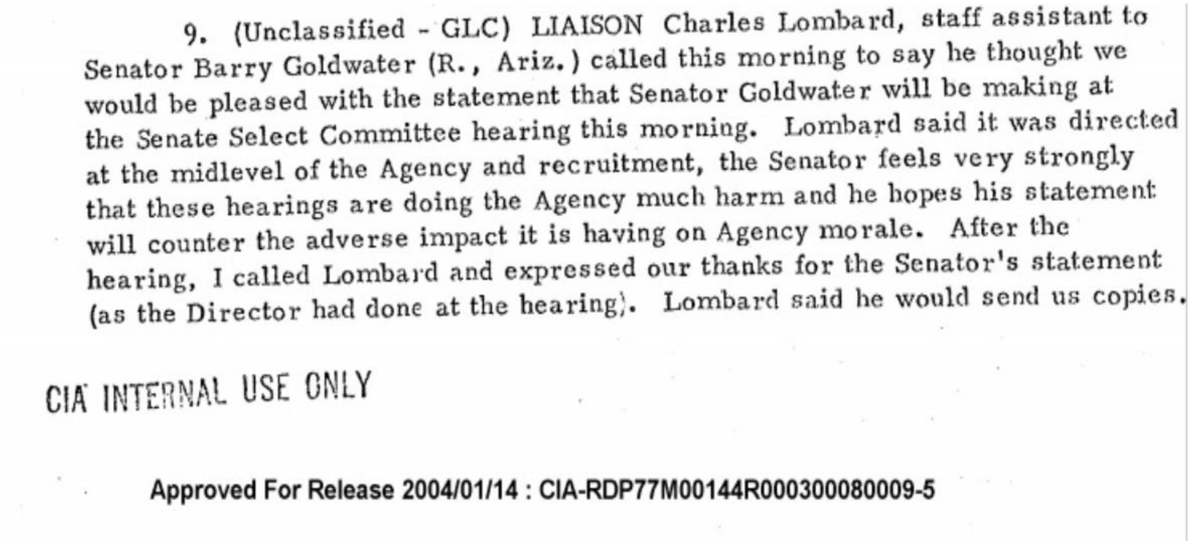

9. (Unclassified - GLC) LIAISON Charles Lombard, staff assistant to Senator Barry Goldwater (R., Ariz.) called this morning to say he thought we would be pleased with the statement that Senator Goldwater will be making at the Senate Select Committee hearing this morning. Lombard said it was directed at the midlevel of the Agency and recruitment, the Senator feels very strongly that these hearings are doing the Agency much harm and he hopes his statement will counter the adverse impact it is having on Agency morale. After the hearing, I called Lombard and expressed our thanks for the Senator's statement (as the Director had done at the hearing). Lombard said he would send us copies.

CIA INTERNAL USE ONLY

Approved For Release 2004/01/14 : CIA-RDP77M00144R000300080009-5

The second image depicts a similar September 24, 1975, CIA internal document indicating Lombard advised the Agency of Goldwater's intentions to make statements in support of the CIA at a Senate Select Committee hearing. This was during an era the Church Committee and other Senate hearings scrutinized the CIA and outed such programs as drug testing on unwitting human subjects, unauthorized tampering with mail, and numerous such abuses of privacy and human rights.[109]

In 2021 I contacted the CIA Office of Public Affairs, informing it I was writing a book on interactions between the 20th century intelligence and UFO communities. I requested a statement on whether Harry Cooper, Alan Hall, and Charles Lombard were ever publicly acknowledged to be employed by the Agency. I emphasized any information available would be most appreciated. I have not received a response as of this writing.

Numerous articles are available that chronicle the NICAP involvement of Joseph B. Hartranft, Jr. Among them is a July 12, 1957, story published in the Cedar Rapids Gazette. It opens by reporting Dr. Marcus Bach, a professor of religion at the University of Iowa, was appointed to the NICAP Board. It curiously added Dr. Bach was then-currently leading a group of Iowans on a tour of Russia.[110]

The article went on to list the addition of several Board members, including Hartranft. He was described as president of the Aircraft Owners and Pilots Association.

Hartranft participated along with other NICAP key personnel at a 1966 press conference held at the National Press Club in Washington. A NICAP document containing bio information on the conference participants indicates

Hartranft served on leadership committees of multiple aeronautical organizations, and was the recipient of the 1966 Award for Achievement of the National Aviation Club.[111]

A 2020 FOIA response from the FBI indicated a file potentially pertaining to Hartranft was transferred to the National Archives and Records Administration. Subsequent correspondence with NARA revealed it evaluated the subject of the file in question to be Joseph B. Hartranft. NARA further indicated the file was created between June 1940 and February 1968, and consisted of an estimated 100 pages. The file must be processed for release, with an estimated date of completion in June 2024. The estimated cost for a reproduction is $80.

In 2020 the CIA issued a response to my FOIA request for records on Stuart Nixon, excluding the two files already published on the Agency website. The material subsequently provided on Nixon only consisted of a copy of a newspaper clipping on file. It was a 1973 article quoting Nixon, who indicated NICAP was swamped with calls in the wake of the reported UFO abduction of two fishermen in Pascagoula, Mississippi. Charles Hickson and Calvin Parker were destined to become storied names of UFO lore.

The July 28, 2020, CIA response emphasized in bold font that the Agency has no organized effort to do research in connection with UFO phenomena, nor has there been an organized effort to collect intelligence on UFOs since the 1960's. I found the phrasing mildly amusing, considering my request was simply for records pertaining to Stuart Nixon. I did, however, appreciate the Agency's apparent desire to make its position crystal clear.

The CIA further explained a list was compiled of hundreds of previously processed documents pertaining to UFOs and in response to FOIA requests. The list consists of some 30 pages, representing titles of documents containing over 2,700 pages, and the Agency included the list in the July 2020 FOIA response. Also included were instructions how to order the documents individually or in bulk, such as on a compact disc. In addition to clarifying its position, I had a bit of appreciation for the CIA's apparent understanding of where such a line of inquiries leads a FOIA requester. In a manner of speaking, it felt as if the CIA was responding, “Here's what we got. Help yourself and leave us alone. We're not doing the 20th century CIA-UFO dance.”

In 1980 the transfer of NICAP was again on the bargaining table. Negotiations probably never really stopped as much as experienced lulls. Gen. Richardson, J.B. Hartranft, and John Acuff were involved in coordinating the CUFOS acquisition of NICAP. CUFOS Chairman John P. Timmerman primarily conducted communications for Dr. Hynek's organization, acting as liaison through the process.

It appears in May 1981 a transaction was arrived upon involving a payment of $3,000 from CUFOS to NICAP, along with stipulations concerning assets.[112] NICAP was in the process, for instance, of receiving funds from the settling of an estate, the deceased owner of which had designated NICAP as a beneficiary. Correspondence conducted during the negotiations suggest CUFOS was directed by Acuff to retain the NICAP name and a semblance of activities long enough to deter legal complications and possible voiding of the estate settlement. This took a few more months of time, until early 1982, when CUFOS-NICAP began receiving about $7,700 from the estate. Combined with other stipulations and agreements reached, this seems to have been enough to cover a sum agreed was owed to Acuff.

John Acuff then finally left the NICAP Board, or what was left of it, when the estate settlement was secured and an initial payment of about $500 was apparently made to him in January 1982. Records suggest Acuff shipped the NICAP files at that point.

Mr. Timmerman wrote in a June 4, 1982, letter to Acuff, “It is with considerable pleasure that [I] send you the final check with payment in full to complete our agreement between your firm and the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena. We have received all but the final 25% of the estate settlement and hope to receive that in the next three or four months. Our total share of the estate will be $7,779.24, including the first partial which you received in January.” The letter further stated the June and final payment to Acuff was $3,532.79.

A January letter authored by Acuff to Sen. Goldwater indicates Acuff's early 1982 resignation from the Board. The message, copied to Timmerman, additionally carried a somewhat intriguing “P.S.” about a letter Acuff wanted Goldwater to make sure got to a Senate committee. The January 1982 letter:[113]

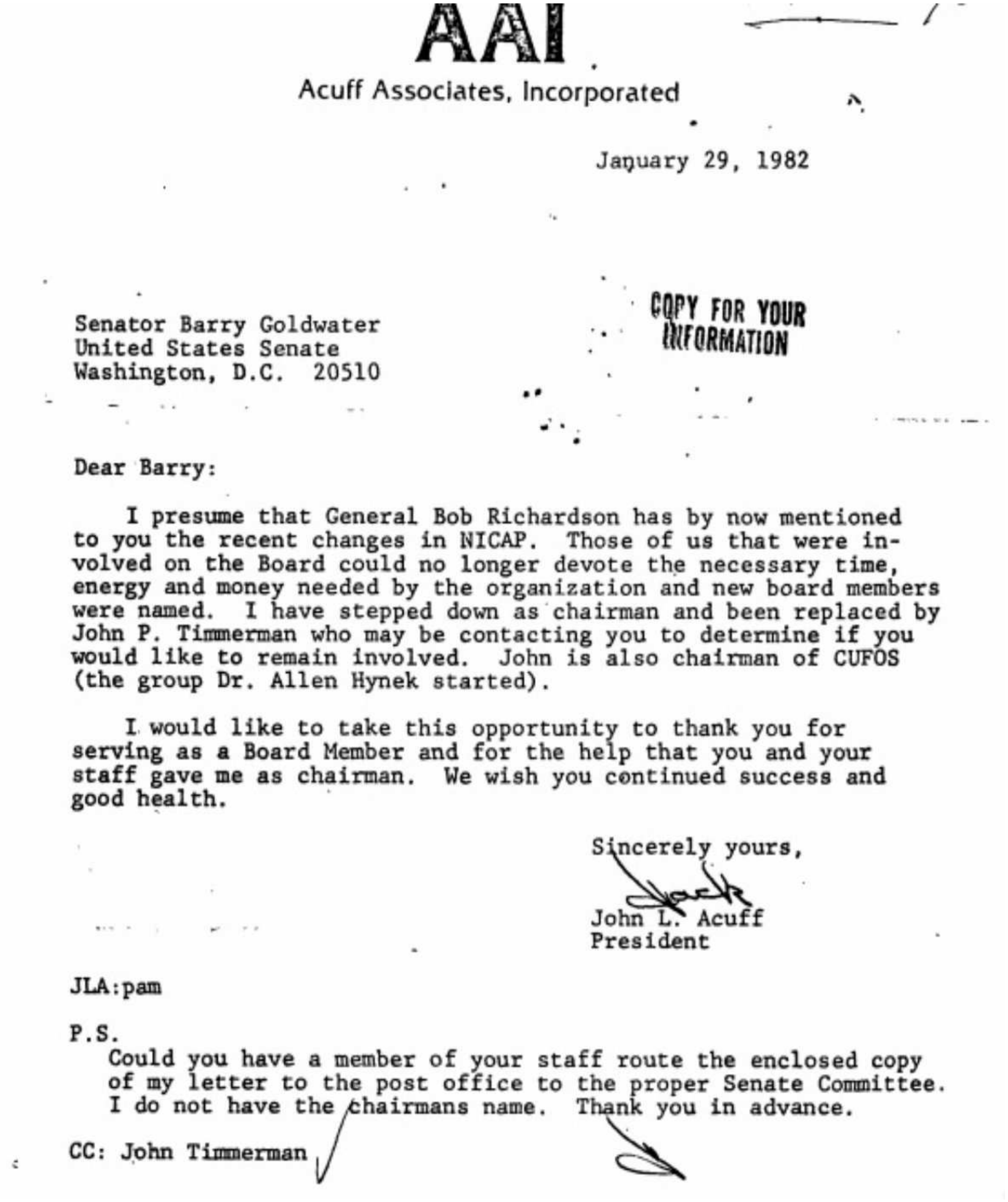

AAI
Acuff Associates, Incorporated

January 29, 1982

COPY FOR YOUR INFORMATION

Senator Barry Goldwater
United States Senate
Washington, D.C. 20510

Dear Barry:

I presume that General Bob Richardson has by now mentioned to you the recent changes in NICAP. Those of us that were involved on the Board could no longer devote the necessary time, energy and money needed by the organization and new board members were named. I have stepped down as chairman and been replaced by John P. Timmerman who may be contacting you to determine if you would like to remain involved. John is also chairman of CUFOS (the group Dr. Allen Hynek started).

I would like to take this opportunity to thank you for serving as a Board Member and for the help that you and your staff gave me as chairman. We wish you continued success and good health.

Sincerely yours,
Jack
John L. Acuff
President

JLA:pam

P.S.
Could you have a member of your staff route the enclosed copy of my letter to the post office to the proper Senate Committee. I do not have the chairmans name. Thank you in advance.

CC: John Timmerman

Acuff requested Goldwater have a member of his staff “route the enclosed copy of my letter to the post office” to the proper Senate committee. Goldwater chaired the Senate Intelligence Committee during this time, from January 1981 to January 1985, but it did not seem likely this was the destination of the letter, given Acuff's phrasing.

I asked some of my contacts experienced with NICAP what they made of it. While I did not come across anyone who felt confident about an interpretation, Barry Greenwood and I were in agreement it seemed to be a reference to a copy of a letter Acuff had written to a post office that he had some apparent reason to provide to a Senate committee. We speculated it might have been related to the Canadian Nazi mailing list caper. Regardless, it seemed a somewhat fitting ending to the enigmatic NICAP saga.

The NICAP tank was finally on empty, even if the Committee had long since ceased existing in the eyes of its members and staff from the Keyhoe years. With that, in 1982, the settling of an estate, shipment of the files, and departure of Acuff, NICAP was reaching a formal end. Perhaps some of the original organizers heard the news.

CLOSING THOUGHTS

Thank you for joining me on this exploration. Your time and attention are appreciated. Such journeys are destined to remain ongoing stories, even though the subject matter is relegated to the past, as FOIA responses and the discoveries found therein remain in the future.

I made a concentrated effort in several instances to separate my opinions of what the material and events indicate from their presentation. When I did offer some analysis, I hope I was overt enough in clarifying it was my opinion. Following is a summary of my thoughts on some of the circumstances.

Among the things I found most interesting was the saga of Nicholas de Rochefort. It is intriguing that he lived a life known to political historians due to his involvement in the China lobby, yet those historians typically had no interest in UFO organizations. Similarly, UFO researchers tend to have no interest in Rochefort's political activism. To Count de Rochefort, I suspect those two aspects of his life were one and the same. There might even be some clues to the strategy employed in the fact his detour into ufology seems virtually dismissed as irrelevant by historians.

The involvement of Counsel Services in founding NICAP appears significant. Its associates and relationship with the Economic Cooperation Administration, as established to be a CIA resource, are worthy of consideration. Counsel Services played a key role in the initial existence of NICAP.

Also of interest was that I got further with researching the specific aspects of the CIA that are potentially relevant to NICAP than I initially thought I would. It was less difficult than I suspected it would be to learn with whom Col. Bryan worked, the office in which it took place, and aspects of key personnel in that office. Not only did I find it intriguing that those in Bryan's subdivision were skilled at deception and propaganda, but we documented his associates went on to hold positions of increasing responsibility within the Agency as well. Their career paths were potentially relevant, as were the divisions in which they worked. Perhaps future research will continue to provide insight into the circumstances.

I suppose I thought it would be harder to learn some of this than it turned out because I incorrectly figured it would be more frequently discussed if it were accessible. I'd say the same about the hundreds of pages of documents now being processed on parties of interest as the result of my FOIA requests. I am a bit both surprised and disappointed such FOIA requests were apparently simply never made before.

I came to think the lack of attention given to such parties of interest is probably indicative of people who want to learn about UFOs aren't typically concerned with things like the organizers and board members of a group. They just don't find that interesting. I obviously think they should. In some instances, I suspect it might even be a matter of researchers would rather not know about certain material than have to incorporate the circumstances into their already formed opinions.

Suffice it to say I find it relevant that a Princeton library has a collection of hundreds of letters pertaining to Col. Bryan. Perhaps I will explore this further as the library increases operations and makes the collection available once again.

If I had to venture a guess as to what CIA interest in NICAP meant, I'd of course start by saying it was complicated and the implied question does not have one single, all inclusive answer. That stated, I suspect Nicholas de Rochefort and his associates were empowered to execute a plan that was probably scrapped pretty early on. I tend to think an evaluation of risk to reward was made, and circumstances became complicated rather quickly. I have suspicions the purposes of launching a CIA UFO organization may have included raising funds, controlling the narrative, spy hunting, and numerous possibilities as situations warranted.

It seems reasonably apparent to me the CIA, and quite possibly the State Department as well, had initial interests in the formation of NICAP. I have come to think this likely did not represent a burning desire to infiltrate the UFO community as much as the CIA meddled in everything, from magic mushrooms and Pentecostal church services to Guatemalan politics and psychic spies, and did not exempt UFO researchers from its collection of demographics for potential exploitation.

Moreover, the opportunities for intelligence operations within the genre were and remain self-evident. People issued security clearances and entrusted with national security show a rather amazing willingness to mingle at UFO-themed events and online social media sites where angels fear to tread.

Apparent CIA involvement in the incorporation of NICAP may be a story of money. There are many signposts that could be interpreted to point in that direction. Dez FitzGerald and Nicholas de Rochefort were talented in creative fundraising and lobbying techniques. We might consider the seemingly disproportionately expensive contract presented by Counsel Services, and Bernard Carvalho's apparent responsibilities in growing NICAP membership. Combined with the rumors of funds misappropriation, an argument could be made NICAP was considered for use as a resource to raise, launder, and distribute CIA funds.

The significance of the Cold War climate, Red Scare, and potential use of NICAP for propaganda purposes can likewise not be overlooked. A variety of strategies might have been considered for implementation, ranging from implying the presence of otherwise nonexistent advanced weapons projects to infiltrating Communist sympathizers believed to be in the circles of so-called contactees and the UFO genre at large.

I tend to suspect Col. Bryan was urged by the CIA, possibly from within the Directorate of Plans, to approach Keyhoe and get involved with NICAP. I do not suspect Bryan's participation was intended to suppress public knowledge of an alien presence or similar such typically hurled accusations. I think it more likely the Agency wanted to keep a finger on the pulse of an organization it created. As is the case with any project, advantageous opportunities might present themselves over time, and, in Bryan, a man was in place to identify and put such opportunities in motion, perhaps not unlike Carleton Alsop's role in Hollywood.

It is of course also possible Bryan was simply interested in UFOs and believed the things he said about them, I just happen to doubt it. I don't envision a man with his experience in the intelligence community would have identified such behavior as a productive way to proceed if that had been the case.

I was unable to conclusively identify exactly how Maj. Keyhoe got mixed up with this crew in the first place, and that bothers me a bit. I don't find it entirely suspicious, at least not as compared to individuals like Rochefort and Carvalho who apparently had no existing interest in UFOs, but I would have liked to know for sure. One might think there would at least be some version of a story around about Keyhoe's initiation into the NICAP beginnings, but there does not seem to be.

I tend to think Keyhoe was reasonably sincere, even if overzealous. One of my primary reasons for suspecting so, as compared to Keyhoe being some kind of intelligence operative or con man, is there were people who worked with him at NICAP for years who seemed to reasonably trust him. Could they have been deceived? Yeah, sure, but the burden would be on us to prove it, and it just doesn't seem particularly likely, not versus the likelihood he was what he relatively appeared to be.

It bears emphasizing that whatever was going on with the Board, the daily operations were rather removed from it, as is often the case with any organization. I would suspect there would have been stretches during the 1960's that Joe Bryan went months at a time without interacting with Keyhoe and his staff. I lean towards thinking NICAP, under Keyhoe's direction, may very well have gone a lot like it went whether or not it was initially launched by the CIA. It is curious how some Board members withdrew, such as Fahrney and Hillenkoetter, as the heat turned up, but, in general, I think Keyhoe got a long leash. That, or the powers that be didn't always mind what he was doing. The involvement of Fahrney, Hillenkoetter and other NICAP advisors is worthy of continued examination.

However much we may minimize potential intelligence community involvement during the '60's, there is no getting around how the org evolved at the end of the decade. While the termination of responsibilities of some key personnel, including Keyhoe, may have had nothing to do with the CIA, the fact remains Agency associates were involved in negotiating the terms of the situations and maintaining NICAP for years afterward. I find it beyond comprehension this would organically happen if the CIA had not held a specific interest in ensuring the timeline of the org was not left to chance.

I do not find it coincidental that the ebb and flow of NICAP drama somewhat reflected the eventual scaling down of highly controversial Agency activities, the changing of CIA leadership, and 1970's Congressional oversight hearings that probed an intelligence agency run wild. The CIA had some pretty big demons to publicly confront, and it might be considered somewhat on script to flip a UFO organization to CUFOS and leave the sleeping dog lie a while.

As for other UFO organizations, the 1980's, and ever since... that might be a different story.

Follow Jack Brewer's ongoing research at his blog, The UFO Trail, and connect with him on Twitter @TheUFOTrail.

Contact Brewer at jackbrewerblog@yahoo.com.

---

[1] NICAP_papers_mixed_years.pdf, p4

[2] National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena (NICAP) Part 2 of 3, FBI Vault, pp4-5

[3] 1966-04-11: Major Donald Keyhoe on To Tell the Truth, 9:34

[4] NICAP_early_formative_papers.pdf, p46

[5] NICAP_internal__memos_reports.pdf, p30

[6] NICAP_Brown_TT_Kruckman.pdf, p2

[7] NICAP_Brown_TT_Kruckman.pdf, p8

[8] NICAP_Brown_TT_Kruckman.pdf, pp18-21

[9] NICAP_Brown_TT_Kruckman.pdf, pp22-23

[10] NICAP_Brown_TT_Kruckman.pdf, p25

[11] NICAP_Brown_TT.pdf, p105

[12] NICAP_early_formative_papers.pdf, p12

[13] NICAP_incorporation_papers.pdf, p30

[14] NICAP_early_formative_papers.pdf, p36

[15] NICAP_early_formative_papers.pdf, p57

[16] NICAP_early_formative_papers.pdf, p67

[17] NICAP_Administrative.pdf, pp4-8

[18] Secrecy vs. Disclosure, CIA, p61

[19] NICAP_early_formative_papers.pdf, p35

[20] NICAP_Brown_TT.pdf, p65

[21] NICAP_Board_of_Governors.pdf, p7

[22] NICAP_Brown_TT_Kruckman.pdf, p9

[23] NICAP_Brown_TT.pdf, p68

[24] NICAP_Brown_TT.pdf, p95

[25] NICAP_Brown_TT.pdf, p90

[26] NICAP_birth_of.pdf, p2

[27] NICAP_incorporation_papers.pdf, p3

[28] NICAP_internal__memos_reports.pdf, pp6-7

[29] NICAP_TT_formation.pdf, pp1-2

[30] NICAP_forms_and_brochures.pdf, p57

[31] NICAP_Brown_TT.pdf, p80

[32] NICAP_TT_formation.pdf, pp4-5

[33] NICAP_Brown_TT.pdf, p105

[34] NICAP_early_formative_papers.pdf, p38

[35] NICAP_TT_formation.pdf, pp22-24

[36] King.pdf, pp31-35

[37] CIA-RDP80R01731R000400710001-3.pdf, p17

[38] NICAP_TT_formation.pdf, pp19-24

[39] NICAP_incorporation_papers.pdf, p5

[40] NICAP_Brown_TT.pdf, p39

[41] NICAP__Brown_TT,pdf, p39

[42] NICAP_Brown_TT.pdf, p123

[43] NICAP_Brown_TT.pdf, p86

[44] CIA RP pdf, p14

[45] NICAP_problems_1978.pdf, p5

[46] NICAP_early_formative_papers.pdf, pp2-3

[47] NICAP_Keyhoe_1957_1958.pdf, p30

[48] Keyhoe_1957_1958.pdf, p38

[49] NICAP_internal_memos.pdf, p1

[50] NICAP_Keyhoe_1957_1958.pdf, p3

[51] Menzel FBI 3, p6

[52] Menzel FBI 4, p12

[53] Menzel FBI 4, p14

[54] NICAP_Keyhoe_1957_1958.pdf, p35

[55] Menzel FBI 3, p9

[56] Am Phil Soc.pdf, p7

[57] Am Phil Soc.pdf, p6

[58] NICAP_clips_early.pdf, p5

[59] NICAP_Board_of_Governors.pdf, pp7-8

[60] NICAP_clips_early.pdf, p8

[61] NICAP_clips_early.pdf, p3

[62] NICAP_papers_mixed_years.pdf, p4

[63] NICAP_papers_mixed_years.pdf, p16

[64] NICAP_papers_mixed_years.pdf, p11

[65] National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena (NICAP) Part 2 of 3, FBI Vault, pp12-13

[66] National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena (NICAP) Part 2 of 3, FBI Vault, pp21-22

[67] NICAP_forms_brochures.pdf, pp184-185

[68] NICAP_papers_mixed_years.pdf, p35

[69] NICAP_early_formative_papers.pdf, p17

[70] NICAP_papers_mixed_years.pdf, p2

[71] NICAP_Board_of_Governors_post_1958.pdf, pp2-10

[72] NICAP_internal_memos_reports.pdf, p4

[73] 610919hill_report2.pdf, p40

[74] Testimony by Ben H. Swett

[75] Audio History of Alien Abduction, file 21, 03:20

[76] NICAP_papers_mixed_years.pdf, p32

[77] NICAP_Educational_work.pdf, p1

[78] NICAP_Educational_work.pdf, p9

[79] NICAP_Keyhoe_Karth.pdf, p3

[80] NICAP_papers_mixed_years.pdf, pp32-33

[81] Lore, Gordon. 2018. *Flying Saucers from Beyond the Earth*. BearManor Media. (p124)

[82] NICAP_incorporation_papers.pdf, p31

[83] NICAP_Condon_reaction.pdf, p1

[84] Lore, Gordon. 2018. *Flying Saucers from Beyond the Earth*. BearManor Media. (p237)

[85] NICAP_Bloecher_Report_1947.pdf, p5

[86] Bryan.pdf, p10

[87] Bryan.pdf, pp17-19

[88] Bryan.pdf, pp20-21

[89] Stonor Saunders, Frances. 2013. *The Cultural Cold War*. The New Press. (p29)

[90] Bryan.pdf, p37

[91] Bryan.pdf, pp33-37

[92] Thompson FBI 3.pdf, p31

[93] Thompson FBI 3.pdf, pp43-45

[94] Bryan.pdf, p29

[95] Thompson death notice

[96] Stonor Saunders, Frances. 2013. *The Cultural Cold War*. The New Press. (pp206-207)

[97] Stonor Saunders, Frances. 2013. *The Cultural Cold War*. The New Press. (p246)

[98] Stonor Saunders, Frances. 2013. *The Cultural Cold War*. The New Press. (pp244-247)

[99] Bryan.pdf, p28

[100] CIA-RDP81-00261R000300050005-3, p5

[101] *Just Cause*, August, 1978, p16

[102] CIA-RDP78-03921A000300100001-3, p23

[103] NICAP_Acuff_takeover.pdf, p36

[104] NICAP_problems_1978.pdf, p1

[105] NICAP_problems_1978.pdf, p14

[106] NICAP_problems_1978.pdf, pp1-3

[107] NICAP_problems_1978.pdf, p14

[108] CIA-RDP74B00415R000200040011-0.pdf

[109] CIA-RDP77M00144R000300080009-5.pdf, p2

[110] NICAP_clips_early.pdf, p9

[111] NICAP_early_formative_papers.pdf, pp5-7

[112] NICAP_sale_of_1980.pdf, p9

[113] NICAP_sale_of_1980.pdf, p21

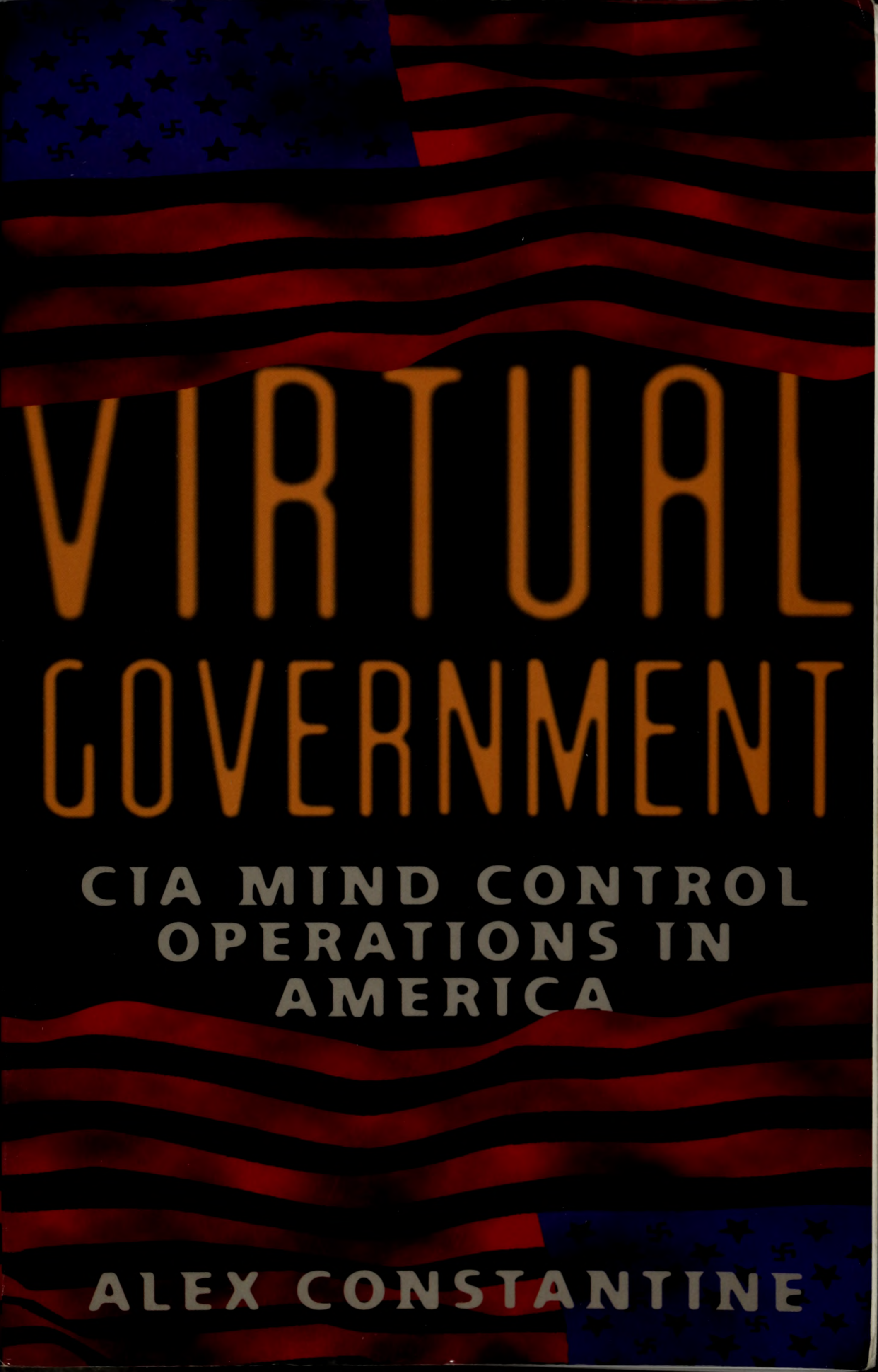

VIRTUAL GOVERNMENT

CIA MIND CONTROL OPERATIONS IN AMERICA

ALEX CONSTANTINE

3—

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2011

http://www.archive.org/details/virtualgovernmen00cons

VIRTUAL
GOVERNMENT

CIA Mind Control Operations in America

Alex Constantine

Feral House

VIRTUAL GOVERNMENT

CIA Mind Control Operations in America

Alex Constantine

FERAL HOUSE

Virtual Government © 1997 Alex Constantine

All rights reserved

ISBN 0-922915-28-8

Feral House
2532 Lincoln Blvd. Suite 359
Venice, CA 90291

Design by Linda Hayashi

First edition 1997

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2

For Gloria Brighton

Virtual Acknowledgements

Nicole Angiler, Dave Bader, Val Bankston, Douglas Barr, Joseph Bosco, Walter Bowart, the late Mae Brussell, Ann Chin, Marilyn Colman, Mike Coyle, "Curio," Melissa Darpino, Dick Farley, the editors of *Filth*, Vicky Flores-Guerra, Cynthia Ford, "Fortfan," Patrick Fourmey & Al Marcelliene of *Prevailing Winds*, Donald Freed, Harlan Girard, Catherine Gould, Charles Higham, D.K., Paul Krassner, Ed Light, Ben Lindsay, M., Jackie MacGauley, Dave Manning, Betty Martini, Virginia McCullough, Claudia Mullens, Sandy Munro, Adam Parfrey, Claire Reeves, Lynn Moss-Sharman, Claudia Mullens, Tony Van Rentergheim, Paul Ruiz, Thomas Savona, Steve Smith, Kathleen Sullivan, Wes Thomas, the editors and staff of *Survivorship*, Beth Vargo.

Acknowledgements vi

Preamble: On the Road to the Fourth Reich 1
The Geopolitical Framework of Virtual Government

"And Now, a Few Words from Our Sponsor—the CIA" 35
The Birth of Operation MOCKINGBIRD, the Takeover of the American Press and the Programming of Public Opinion

Virtual Government 67
"Alien" Abductions, "Psychic" Warfare and Cult Programming: Military-Corporate, Academic and Quasi-Religious Fronts for Mind Control Operations in America

The Search for the Manchurian Preschooler 148

McMartin Preschool Revisited 156

Acclaimed 1992 San Diego Grand Jury Child Abuse Report Found to be Fraudulent by Subsequent Grand Jury 182

Bleak House 191
A Case of Nazi-Style Experimental Psychiatry in Canada

The Hollywood/Florida Mob Connection, the CIA and O.J. Simpson 202

The Good Soldier 246
The Rise of Timothy McVeigh from "Robotic" Soldier to Mad Bomber

CIA Mind Control and the U.S. Postal Service 285

Correspondence 300

PREAMBLE

On the Road to the Fourth Reich

The Geopolitical Framework of Virtual Government

The Dragon of Order Castle

In February, 1945 the U.S. Army's Ninth Division, still smarting after a brief exchange of bullets with a band of Nazi die-hards near Vogelsburg, trudged along a fire-gap cut into the spine of a mountain. Saw-toothed pine breached the fog swirling in the valleys on either side and sloped to a sprawling lake far below. The soldiers rounded a bluff and the fog scattered at the sudden rise of immense brownstone towers and flying buttresses.

The Americans entered the castle and explored its cavernous corridors, passed splashing marble fountains, moribund gargoyles and murals of the Teutonic Knights.

The interlocking fortresses sprawled over hundreds of acres.

The castles of Vogelsburgen were training grounds of the Hitler SS elite—"the elite of the elite," per William Shirer. The "Order Castles" (there were four) represented the pinnacle of the Aryan romance. Vogelsburgen lent the SS a sense of mystery and power. Only the highest-scoring students of the academies were accepted. Graduates acquired discipline, knowledge, elitist myopia and blind obedience to authority.

Following the German defeat at Stalingrad in 1943, the Order Castles were transformed into bustling wombs of future political leaders, scientists, spies, military officers and industrialists. Students of the *Ordensburgen* were given new identities and dispatched to countries around the globe to settle in as "sleepers."

Racial hatred was applied on a mass scale, parading as ideology. Like Hitler, to whom the students of the Order Castles swore allegiance, they were inculcated in, as Pope Pius XII described it, "the cult of violence, the idolatry of race and blood, the overthrow of human liberty and dignity." The castles were modeled after the fortresses of the Teutonic Knights, and students were trained to rule over "inferior" men with conspiratorial terror. The school operated in much the same way as a criminal organization. A charter retrieved from the castle of *Vogelsburg* by the Ninth Division explained that students were expected to be "dedicated to the Order for life and death. These men must know that there is no road back for them. He who fails, or would betray the part of his leaders, will be destroyed by this Order. Every National Socialist leader must know that he is climbing a steep grade." Confidence of success was inspired by "an absolute belief in ... Adolph Hitler."

In 1944, more than 2,000 Order graduates were trained at Vogelsburgen in the event of an Allied victory. The purpose of the castle, its ominous implications, may have been clear to the Americans. Or, after the horrors of World War

II, it is possible they overlooked the ominous implications.

A wind, a low, growl, rumbled up through the castle, growing louder and subsiding like the lugubrious moan of a waking dragon.

"Un-American Activities"

> *Those were days when, as we have since found out, Project Paperclip brought such Nazi scientists as Arthur Rudolph and Otto von Bolschwing into the American aerospace industry; when our Central Intelligence Agency was formed by the wholesale grafting of Hitler's Eastern Front intelligence corps onto the remnants of the Office of Secret Services; when friends became enemies and enemies, friends.*
>
> *Nowadays, when the world takes industrial might for granted as the only order all must march to, one can do no more than pray that the truth will continue to pick its slow way through the blood and smog.*
>
> —Peter Carey, *San Jose Mercury-News,* July 18, 1986

In 1933, the year of the Long Knives, Representative Hamilton Fish's life was derailed by a reading of *Communism in Germany,* issued by a Nazi propaganda house. Inspired by this tract, Fish joined forces with George Sylvester Viereck, ranking Nazi agent in the United States. Ever the public servant, Fish graciously conferred upon Viereck free reign of the Congressman's suite in the House Office Building.

A few years later, hours of thunderous Congressional oratory followed the arrest of George Hill, Fish's office clerk, on charges of spying for Himmler's SS.

Well before the Martin Dies Committee convened, Congressman Fish conducted the very first inquisitional federal "investigation of Communism," otherwise known as the House Un-American Activities Committee (HUAC). Between the pair of right-wing hot-seats, Dies and HUAC, came the McCormack-Dickstein Committee, formed in 1934 to investigate the dissemination of Nazi propaganda in the United States. This panel discovered that there was, in progress, a "fascist plot to seize the government." Shortly thereafter, the McCormack-Dickstein Committee was dissolved and its successor turned a deaf ear to any mention of fascist agitation on domestic soil.

But confirmation that Nazis were quietly rallying for the next phase of the war came with the publication of *Treason's Peace,* by Howard Armbruster, in

1947. Ambruster: "A few weeks after the surrender, Democratic Senator Harley M. Kilgore returned from an early postwar trip to occupied Germany with the announcement that he had uncovered proof of the plot to revive I.G. Farben and other German war industries, and that German industrial leaders were already preparing for the next world war."

Domestic fascists conspired with their European counterparts to transform the American political and military bureaucracies into a low-intensity battleground.

In *The Yahoos* (Marzani and Munsell, 1964), a study of Aryan Nations-type groups in America, author Mike Newberry detailed the *bona fidés* of ranking HUAC "investigators," among them:

> EDWARD SULLIVAN: HUAC's first "chief investigator," a career criminal with a record of nine arrests [ranging from sodomy to larceny]. Co-editor of a Nazi hate sheet with James "Kike Killer" True. Addressed German-American Bund rallies prior to his concern with "Un-Americanism" and was director of an openly fascistic Ukrainian group.
>
> DR. J.B. MATTHEWS: HUAC's "second chief investigator." Predicted in his autobiography that America's answer to Communism would be fascism or "something so closely akin to it that the difference will not greatly matter." His autobiography was published by John Cecil, a veteran anti-Semite, and his writings were reprinted by *Contra-Komintern,* the official house organ of the Nazi Foreign Office. He was a close advisor to Robert Welch of the John Birch Society.
>
> DR. FRED SCHWARTZ: One of HUAC's most revered "experts." Chairman of the Christian Anti-Communist Crusade.
>
> FULTON LEWIS, III: Rabidly "Christian" leader of Young Americans for Freedom, a front for Nazis entering the country from Munich. Earned his spurs on the HUAC staff. He wrote for the anti-Semitic *American Mercury,* edited by Harold Lord Varney, formerly a propagandist for the Italian Fascisti.

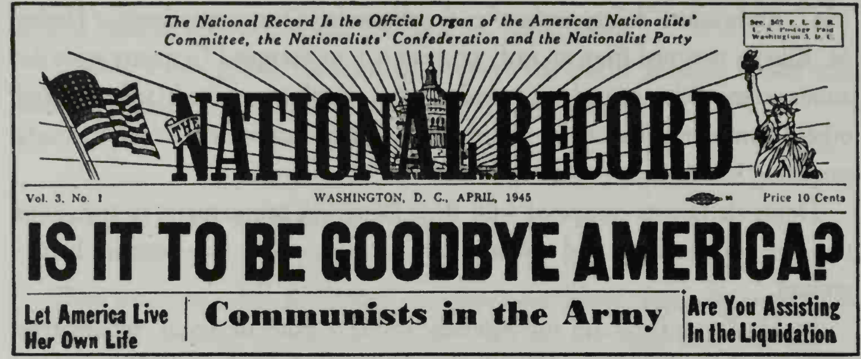

The National Record Is the Official Organ of the American Nationalists' Committee, the Nationalists' Confederation and the Nationalist Party

Sec. 562 P. L. & R.
U. S. Postage Paid
Washington 5, D. C.

THE NATIONAL RECORD

Vol. 3, No. 1 WASHINGTON, D. C., APRIL, 1945 Price 10 Cents

IS IT TO BE GOODBYE AMERICA?

Let America Live Her Own Life | Communists in the Army | Are You Assisting In the Liquidation

The *National Record* was festering homegrown Nazi propaganda of a patriotic strain, published in the 1940s by Senator Robert Rice Reynolds. Prior to WWII, the Senator travelled to Germany and returned chanting his praises for Hitler. He called for the formation of a Nationalist Party back home, and wrote in the *Congressional Record:* "The dictators are doing what is best for their people. I say it is high time we found out how they are doing it."

Dance of the Antipodes

We Germans should be realistic. We lost two wars to the Jews.
Why should we lose another?
—Nazi Propagandist, Werner Naumann to British intelligence agents, July 1953

"Let us show them who is the natural elite!
Who is the world's greatest killer? White man!"
—Dan Burros, national secretary, American National Party

In September 1944, Sims Carter, then assistant chief of the economic warfare section of the Justice Department, testified before the Kilgore Committee that despite military defeat, the industrial cartels of German had renewed activity from bases in Argentina. "All the machinery," he said, "is ready for safeguarding German supremacy in the steadily expanding South American market." Much of that economy had been *incorporated* by I.G. Farben and other financial backers of Hitler years before the war began.

In the 1930s, as German factories tooled for the onslaught, Nazi entrepreneurs quietly constructed manufacturing bases, railroads and chemical and steel plants throughout South America. The munitions industry was all but cartelized by Farben and Krupp, providing business fronts for the Nazi fifth column. The insinuation of Nazism into Caribbean politics was directed by Alfred Becker and Arnold Margerie, officers of Farben La Quimica Bayer in Caracas. Down in Argentina, Axel Wenner-Gren, the Swedish millionaire, inventor of the modern refrigerator and a crony of Herman Goering, Hitler's propaganda minister, established subsidiaries and gracefully snatched up key industrial plants.

After the war, Nazis quietly assumed new posts *en masse* within the German government, and the Adenauer administration adopted an anti-Nazi facade in public while elevating war criminals to bureaucratic seats of power. By 1951, 134 former members of the National Socialist Party held senior positions in the West German Foreign Office. One of them was Dr. Franz Massfeller, a specialist on racial blood purges. Massfeller once advised his superiors in the Hitler regime to kill all *half*-Jews after the full-blooded victims were completely decimated. In the 50s, Dr. Massfeller was employed as a counselor in the Bonn Ministry of Justice.

In Germany, as in the United States, a virtual government was conceived with the trappings of democratic rule by the engineers of the Holocaust.

Attorney Hans Globke, author of the legal rationale underlying the Third Reich's racial laws, was entrusted with the directorship of President Adenauer's Federal Press and Chancellory Bureau.

Werner Naumann, formerly an officer of the SS and Goebbels' propaganda machine, was the founder of the German Reich Party, secretly abetted by the Adenauer government in Bonn. Herr Naumann's role in the postwar Reich was the placing of Nazis in business and industry.

On May 10, 1996, the Reuters news service released a story that trotted up to the door of the resuscitated Reich, nearly entering for a look-see ...

> NEW YORK (Reuter)—Realizing they were losing the war in 1944, Nazi leaders met top German industrialists to plan a secret postwar international network to restore them to power, according to a newly declassified U.S. intelligence document.
>
> The document, which appears to confirm a meeting historians have long argued about, says an SS general and a representative of the German armaments ministry told such companies as Krupp and Roehling that they must be prepared to finance the Nazi party after the war when it went underground. They were also told "existing financial reserves in foreign countries must be placed at the disposal of the party so that a strong German empire can be created after the defeat."
>
> The three-page document, released by the National Archives, was sent from

Supreme Headquarters of the Allied Expeditionary Force to the U.S. secretary of state in November 1944. It described a secret meeting at the *Maison Rouge* (the Red House Hotel) in Strasbourg, occupied France, on August 10, 1944.

Jeffrey Bale, a Columbia University expert on clandestine Nazi networks, said historians have debated whether such a meeting could have taken place, because it came a month after the attempt on Adolph Hitler's life, which had led to a crackdown on discussions of a possible German military defeat.

Bale said the meeting was mentioned in Nazi hunter Simon Wiesenthal's 1967 book *The Murderers Among Us,* and again in a 1978 book by French Communist Victor Alexandrov, *The SS Mafia.*

"As soon as the [Nazi] party becomes strong enough to re-establish its control over Germany, the industrialists will be paid for their efforts and cooperation by concessions and orders," the intelligence document said. The meeting was presided over by a "Dr. Scheid," described as an SS *Obergruppenfuhrer* [general] and a director of Hermsdorff & Schonburg Company.

Attending were representatives of seven German companies including Krupp, Roehling, Messerschmidt, and Volkswagenwerk and officials of the ministries of armaments and the navy. The industrialists were from companies with extensive interests in France and Scheid is quoted as saying the battle of France was lost and "from now on ... German industry must realize that the war cannot be won and it must take steps in preparation for a postwar commercial campaign."

The Real McCloy

In October, 1929, Martin Heidegger, [the existentialist and constructivist] warned an official in the German Ministry of Education against Verjudung (growing Judaisation) as a threat to "our German spiritual life."... Heidegger was to Sartre what Hegel was to Marx.

—D. CAUTE, 1995, Spectator 21 x Reviewing Elzbieta Ettinger, *Hannah Arendt/Martin Heidegger,* Yale University Press

Meanwhile, backstage at the war crimes show trials, Rockefeller counsel John J. McCloy, the high commissioner of Germany (later a high commissioner of the JFK murder investigation) courted Nazi officials on behalf of the U.S. government. Defendant Gustav Krupp once controlled 138 private concentration camps utilizing slave labor—yet the German industrialist was permitted to hold board meetings with executives of the Krupp business empire while still a prisoner at Nuremberg. McCloy freed Krupp and kindly returned the munition-builder's property. The CIA banker also assembled a panel chaired by David Peck, leading justice of the New York Supreme Court, to "review" the sentences of Germans wanted for recruitment by the Allies. Otto Skorzeny, Krupp's representative in Argentina, Hitler's very own Commando, was among the first German spies surreptitiously placed on the American Cold War intelligence dole.

On January 19, 1953, the *New York Times* took notice: "Nazism is not dead in Germany." Given time and opportunity, "a form of Nazism could again rise to power. Materially speaking, Nazism was smashed into a pulp by 1945," but the "vigorous roots remained."

A national priority was made of economic recovery in the Fatherland. A memo from the German Press Department of B'nai B'rith to officials of the Jewish organization on July 1, 1953, detailed a meeting of the former Waffen SS in Verden, once a Nazi garrison town: "The reason this little alumni club exists is, one might say, plausible, even sentimental—to care for those in their ranks who survived and to locate lost comrades. The reunion, their first since the war, brought five thousand men to Verden. Mufti-clad, they marched through cramped, flag-bedecked streets to the rally with all their famous and former military precision."

Among their contacts in the United States, the Nazi "elite" could rely on the generous assistance of a patron, Pedro Del Valle, who went on to become a vice president of ITT. In 1954, Del Valle, a retired Marine Corps lieutenant general, was soundly defeated in his bid for the Republican gubernatorial nomination. His campaign was spiced with public endorsements of a foaming, anti-Semitic booklet, *Know Your Enemy.* In 1974, Del Valle and ITT consultant John McCone, formerly a CIA director, threw in to overthrow Allendé in Chile's 1970 coup. ITT funneled some $350,000 into the elections, and when the brutal dictatorship of Pinochet was installed, conspired with other politically "conservative" companies to pirate the country's natural resources.

As a hedge against the fall of the Third Reich, German industrialists made provisions in 1944 for protecting their loot from confiscation by the U.S and England. On the instruction of Martin Bormann, the surviving SS, now ODESSA, established hundreds of corporations abroad, donated handsomely to far-right political candidates and cleared the path for the reconstruction of the Reich on foreign soil. All of this was accomplished by channeling the loot through a labyrinth of secret bank accounts. The funds were transferred to nonbelligerent nations and under Bormann's direction financed some 750 new companies to oversee the Nazi Party's revival.

Over 100 of those companies were based in the United States.

Funds materialized in the accounts of Germany's agents around the world. They were instructed to invest in selected businesses and propaganda fronts in the U.S. and elsewhere, channel legal aid to indicted Nazis, purchase out-of-the-way estates for Nazi leaders in foreign countries, and so on. These funds also supported the "ratlines," ports-of-call situated every 40 miles along the German border for Nazis fleeing the Allied noose.

In December 1946, a memorandum from Laurence Frank, the US Consul in Austria, was sent to the State Department noting that Goering and Goebbels had moved funds to Geneva in diplomatic bags to avoid detection. "It is reported that Reichsmarshall Goering lately used this method to transfer personal funds," wrote Frank. "Goering sent more than $20 million of his personal fortune to Argentina." He shipped some of this fortune via submarine in the summer of 1943. Goebbels secreted $1.3 million in a safety deposit box in Buenos Aires.

The *Times of London* reported on December 6, 1996 that the Nazis "secretly sent more than $1 billion to Argentina in the last month of the war and scoured the world for sanctuaries for their plundered wealth. It was reported that Eva Perón may have conspired with the Nazis to set up secret accounts on behalf of her husband to hide hundreds of millions of dollars obtained from looted Nazi gold, cash and art treasures."

Reactionary opinion in the United States was fomented by American Nazis. For America, a spin-off of the America First Committee, was formed in 1954, steered by leading WWII isolationists. One of the organization's steatorian spokesmen was Colonel Robert McCormick, publisher of the *Chicago Tribune*. The Chairman of For America was Clarence Manion, formerly dean of law at Notre Dame University. Manion once sat on Eisenhower's Commission on Inter-Governmental Affairs. Robert Wood, then CEO of Sears, Roebuck, was a ramrod leader of the bund.

The stated aim of For America was support of political candidates sympathetic to the Nazi cause. Three Congressmen made up the recruiting arm of the organization: Burton K. Wheeler, Hamilton Fish and Howard Buffett. Fish, the Republican Party leader, had as his greatest ambition the start of a third party based on principles of National Socialism. The others were already in disrepute for involvement in pro-Nazi, "non-interventionist" groups during the war.

"What will it take to disband this group?" asked the *Atlanta Journal* of this reincarnation of America First, "*World War III?*"

General Wedemeyer's Ultraconservative, Lonely-Hearts Club Bund & Dr. Becher's Beltway Brotherhood

The war came marching home. The German military machine had been pounded to scrap in Europe and Japan, but the propaganda that fueled it resurfaced in San Antonio, Texas ... and the proletariat, including veterans, greased the gears. The 1961 "Let's Look at America" seminar, sponsored by the Fourth Army and the San Antonio Chamber of Commerce Jaycees, drew a crowd of 3,500 strong. Retired General Alfred Wedemeyer, a supporter of the John Birch Society, railed at President Kennedy's "appeasement" of the Soviet Union. Cleon Skousen, formerly an FBI agent and a scion of the Christian Anti-Communist Crusade, demanded the end of all diplomatic relations with the Eastern Bloc. Dr. Gerhart Niemeyer, a writer for the *National Review,* spoke at the rally, and so did Senator Strom Thurmond and Donald Jackson of HUAC.

The "seminar" spurned direct orders from the Pentagon—a "violation of Army policy," Army Secretary Elvis Stahat cautioned. Unmoved by orders, Colonel William Blythe of the Fourth Army's G-2 Division shot back: "We are not interested in *politics*! The Army intends to stand up and be counted!"

General Wedemeyer flew from the San Antonio session to Dallas, where he met with oil baron H.L. Hunt, a financial sponsor of Joseph McCarthy (Borger, *Texas News Herald,* September 25, 1961).

A small battalion of military personalities threw in with a host of fascist front organizations, figureheads for the domestic war, among them:

Generals Nathan Twining, Admiral Radford, J.B. Medaris and Rear Admiral Chester Ward: Military-Industrial Institute.

Admiral Arleigh Burke: Featured speaker of the Christian Anti-Communist Crusade.

General Charles Willoughby and General Peyton Campbell: Christian Anti-Communist Crusade.

General Stratemeyer: Liberty Lobby and the Christian Crusade.

General Bonner Fellers: Endorsed the Birch Society and Americans for Constitutional Action.

Admiral Strauss and General Wedemeyer: National Advisory Board of Young Americans for Freedom.

And a blue-ribbon coalition of military officers who joined forces with Ultracons and Aryan Nationals alike. While ranking officials raised the rabble against Soviet "expansionism," the Nazis sought influence in D.C. One of the most influential Nazi spies in the U.S. was Dr. Walter Becher, an anti-Communist "refugee leader" from Germany. Becher joined the National Socialist Party in December, 1931, and took the job of editor of *Die Zeit,* a Nazi propaganda sheet, in 1937. He was a brownshirt for a spell, and a recruit of the National Socialist Student Bund. Dr. Becher editorialized for the purge of all Jews from state-owned radio in Prague. During the war, he worked in the Goebbels Propaganda Ministry and for the *Wehrmacht* as a correspondent. Shortly after the fall of the German military, he founded a newspaper and agitated for a restoration of National Socialism.

Herr Becher had his advocates in Washington, a powerful collection of dupes and political operatives. In 1957, Congressman Usher Burdick inserted one of Dr. Becher's propaganda pieces in the *Congressional Record;* in August 1959, seven more appeared in the pages of the same journal. When Becher traveled to the States, conferences were arranged for him by the State Department. His political views were trumpeted by the Mutual Broadcasting Network and scores of newspapers.

Dr. Becher's early contacts in Washington were Joe McCarthy, William Jenner in the Senate and a handful of Congressmen in the House. T.H. Tetens, in *The New Germany and the Old Nazis,* was awed by the Nazi's camaraderie with Beltway politicians, and tracked Becher's movements through the District of Columbia: "During the early fifties, when he first came to Washington, he began to build for himself a formidable political machine. His scheme was very simple. If he could obtain the support of leading politicians in the United States, his prestige and stature would grow enormously at home.... With the help of the McCarthy faction in the United States, he could establish a nationwide reputation as the foremost leader of the anti-Communist crusade."

Among the senators who sent personal letters of support to Dr. Becher in Munich in the 1950s, count: Prescott Bush, Albert Gore, Pat McNamara, William Knowland, Strom Thurmond, Thomas Dodd, Robert Byrd, William Langer and Stuart Symington. House Speaker John McCormack also tendered a letter of support to the Nazi propagandist.

Ultraconservatives place much emphasis on character, a quality all too often absent within their own ranks. A glaring example is Willis Carto, publisher of *Spotlight,* a populist newspaper that backed Patrick Buchanon for president in the 1996 election. Carto was the protégé of Francis Parker Yockey, a radical right-winger indicted for sedition during WWII. Yockey's indictment included charges of supporting the Nazi Party.

Carto's organization was one of five "Liberty Lobbies" founded in 1957 at the first major world anti-Communist conference in Mexico City. The faction known today as the Liberty Lobby was run by a steering committee of American fascist leaders and Nazi spies, including:

Major Gen. Charles A. Willoughby: Born Adolph Tscheppe Weidenbach, born in Heidelberg, Germany in 1892. Nazi agent in the Army Supreme Command and intelligence chief under MacArthur in Korea. "Security Director" of the Shickshinny Knights of Malta.
Willis A. Carto: Treasurer and founder.
Major General Edwin Walker: US Army, John Birch Society.
Lt. Col. Philip Corso (ret): US Army Intelligence under Willoughby-Weidenbach.
Robert Morris: American Security Council (ASC), Young Americans for Freedom, Birch Society.
Senator Strom Thurmond (D-S.C.): Since, a "defector to the Republican Party," a senator his mid-90s.
Otto Otepka: Director, security evaluations, State Dept.
Senator James O. Eastland (D-Miss.): The director of internal security in the U.S. Senate.

A maze of bridges was erected by the Liberty Lobby to Germany's Nazi Party. Edwin Walker was the coeval of Gerhard Frey, publisher of the neo-Nazi *Deutsche National-Zeitung und Soldaten-Zeitung.* A bosom ally of Major General Willoughby-Weidenbach. Theodor Oberlander, the German commander of the Ukraine Nightingales during the war, wrote for the German newspaper. He settled in Canada after the war. Dick Russell, in *The Man Who Knew Too Much,* drew connections between the Munich-based Reinhard Gehlen apparat under Allen Dulles and sundry WACL "lobbies" under Charles Willoughby-Weidenbach: "German veterans were included, notably Fritz Kramer [another German agent, a crony of American economist Peter Drucker and an intelligence asset from Nazi Germany. Kramer haunted the Plans Division of the DoD during the Vietnam War]—a former Abwehr officer who once headed up a private vigilanté cadré that ferreted out German leftists at the behest of private industry. Its U.S. sister organization was the ASC." The American Security Council a private, Washington-based security force, was established in 1955 by former FBI agents, and compiled an index of over one million alleged "subversives" for the corporations. Willoughby-Weidenbach, a close friend of Fritz Kramer, went on to sit on the ASC board.

Kennedy assassination researcher William McLoughlin, in an unpublished essay on Willoughby-Weidenbach, notes that MacArthur's Nordic intelligence chief engaged in a lifetime of acts "with the direct intention of facilitating either the success of the Third Reich or the rise of the Fourth. The most frightening thing to consider is that he almost succeeded in his intentions on several different occasions.

"It is my contention that Charles [Adolph] Willoughby will eventually be remembered as one of the most prolific mass murderers in the history of mankind, behind only Joseph Stalin and Adolph Hitler."

McLoughlin cites "the surprise attack on Pearl Harbor on December 7, 1941 and the ensuing bombing of the U.S. Far Eastern Command in the Philippines. Both of these events fell under the aegis of MacArthur and his sidekick Willoughby [Weidenbach] as head of intelligence for the Far Eastern Command. Even after he was told of [the] Pearl Harbor attack, Willoughby [Weidenbach] declined to suggest a search of the Pacific rim for the Japanese carriers supporting the surprise attack and instead opted for leaving the U.S. Army's entire air strike capability sitting on the tarmac in the Philippines in closely clustered groups, which made them easy targets for the Japanese Zeroes ten hours later."

The presence of ranking military officers at extreme right-wing political rallies did not pass unnoticed. In *The Warfare State* (1962), Fred J. Cook detailed the doomed attempt of Senator Fulbright to rein in the "Prussianized" officers:

> Senator J. William Fulbright, the intellectual and independent Arkansas Democrat who is chairman of the Senate Foreign Relations Committee, sent Secretary McNamara a memorandum protesting against the activities of the military in indoctrinating the public at a nationwide series of Radical Right forums. Fulbright made the vital point that the military, whose proper role is the execution of it, were attempting to determine public policy by lending the prestige of their rank and uniforms to some of the most rabidly extremist groups in the nation....
>
> He had struck at the juncture, at the military link of the military-industrial complex, and the roars of outrage that were emitted from the jungles of the Radical Right filled the halls of Congress and reverberated across the nation. The bellowing was led by Senator J. Strom Thurmond, a Major General in the Army Reserves and a Dixiecrat from South Carolina whose mind rebelled at the racial heresies of the twentieth century. Thurmond denounced the Fulbright memorandum and thundered that a "dastardly" attempt was being made to "muzzle" the military and keep them from fighting the Communist enemies of America.

> Joined by other far-out conservatives, Thurmond kept a daily oratorical barrage rolling in the Senate....
>
> Here, visually demonstrated in action, was the military-industrial combine of which Eisenhower had spoken as a potential menace to the nation. The revolt of the Military Brass against the rule of a civilian Secretary, the collaboration of the military and big business in whipping up war-like passions among the people limned an overall issue of greatest magnitude.... At conflict, in essence, were traditional American principles and the kind of Prussianized military-industrial concept that produced Hitler.

The Economics of Virtual Government

Confiscated Jewish assets were poured into the Nazi rebirth and turned up in the oddest places. On September 20, 1996, a half century after the fact, the Associated Press at long last noticed: "Tons of gold looted by Nazis during World War II—some of it possibly taken from the fillings in Holocaust victims' teeth—are stored in the Federal Reserve Bank of New York and the Bank of England in London. Recently declassified federal documents show that six tons of gold looted by Nazis are stored in the two banks, the World Jewish Congress [WJC] said. The group's president has written to the two countries asking that the gold be returned to Holocaust survivors."

Elan Steinberg, speaking for the WJC, based his allegations on declassified State Department documents that confirm two tons of Nazi gold had turned up in New York vaults (worth about $28 million) and four tons ($56 million) in London.

One of the concealed links in the gold transfers was the Wallenberg family. The Wallenbergs ran Sweden's largest commercial bank during the war and assisted the Nazis in the movement of gold and jewels stolen from the Jews. In *The Art of Cloaking,* Dutch authors Gerard Aalders and Cees Wiebes describe the Wallenberg family as front men cozy with Hitler and Co., a covert arm of the regime that disguised foreign subsidiaries of German corporations. Jakob Wallenberg's Stockholm *Enskilda* was the largest privately-owned bank in Sweden. The authors suggest that the family's links to Hitler may explain why the famed Raoul Wallenberg—an agent of a "semi-clandestine U.S. agency," according to a Reuters report on October 1, 1993—was seized by Soviet troops in 1945. Aarons and Loftus came to the conclusion "the Soviets captured Raoul and tortured him for several weeks before they realized they had the wrong Wallenberg."

DEMOCRATS
VOTE CONSERVATIVE
REPUBLICANS
SUPPORT RED AGENTS
ATTEND BOLSHOI BALLET
REPEAL THE INCOME TAX !
SUPPORT THE LIBERTY AMENDMENT
BEWARE OF THESE 3 STEPS!
1 "LIBERAL"ISM
2 SOCIALISM
3 COMMUNISM
EARL WARREN SHOULD BE
IMPEACHED
GIVE RED CHINA
OUR UNITED NATIONS SEAT
HELP GET U.S. OUT OF U.N.
GOLDWATER IN '64
INVESTIGATE
THE STATE DEPARTMENT
stamp out
COMMUNISM
DON'T SEND RANSOM
SEND TROOPS

In March, 1996, Senator Alphonse D'Amato tinted the whitewash with gold: "From the 1930's until the onset of the Holocaust, European Jews and others deposited funds and other assets in Swiss banks for safekeeping. In doing so, they were trying to avoid what some inevitably saw as the writing on the wall, namely the coming Nazi onslaught. Others did so simply for business reasons. At the end of the war, however, a great many Swiss banks denied holding these assets."

Throughout the intervening years, Allied governments requested cooperation in finding the assets. Several organizations made a determined effort to persuade the Swiss to examine their records and find the missing assets. For the Swiss, though, the matter was simple: they did all they possibly could to evade an audit to conceal evidence of collusion with the Nazis. The Swiss cowered behind the 1934 Bank Secrecy Act, originally implemented to protect the identity of Jewish clients, to withhold the assets from survivors and rightful heirs of Holocaust victims.

Edward Stettinius, U.S. secretary of state, speaking at an inter-American conference in 1945, warned that the Nazis would attempt "to escape the consequences of their crimes. We must be constantly on the alert for the flight into this hemisphere of Nazi funds and Nazi underground leaders who will seek to find a refuge here for an ultimate comeback."

Among those to slip through the Allied dragnet in occupied Germany, scrabble across the ratlines set up by American intelligence and the secret orders of the Vatican and settle in South America were Klaus Barbie (Bolivia), Heinrich Mueller (Argentina), Joseph Mengele (Paraguay), Walter Rauff (Chile), and Freidrich Schwend (Peru). Financial and political ties in South America, the collusion of American and Latin officials and military intelligence, subverted any attempt to block the resurgence. The heart of the Nazi Party, the General German Staff, remained nearly intact.

In *A Combine of Aggression,* German emigré Karl Otten described the underground leadership's ability "to perpetuate itself, and to render itself immortal, through its innermost core, the brains of a bellicose nation's brains ... in anonymity, [residing in] unknown places, secluded from the world, controlling politics no less than operations in the field."

The Nazis were created by the world oligarchy for war and wore Gnostic vestments. German terrorist units had names like "The Death's Heads" and were known to commit ritualistic murder. "The roots of the Nazi Party were buried in hidden places," declared Hitler's friend Hermann Rauschning. The German military is not to be confused with the Nazi covert operators; the former fought on the battlefield, the other undercover.

After the military was flattened, the Nazis gracefully pushed on with the war.

In August, 1945 the U.S. argued for, and succeeded in disbanding, the UN War Crimes Commission in favor of the Nuremberg Tribunal. The one-man think tank who planned Nuremberg was Henry Stimson, former secretary of state under Herbert Hoover. Stimson, a vocal atom bomb proponent, suggested it be dropped on Japan and every wheel and cog in the Uranium Wing of virtual government went into motion to accommodate him.

At Nuremberg, he fell back on a strategy that would become standard in all pupeteered Congressional hearings—*narrowing the scope of the investigation.*

"With judgment at Nuremberg," wrote Stimson in *Foreign Relations* (January 1947), "we at last reach to the core of international strife." Articulate, smooth, disingenuous words.

Stimson's tribunal reached to "the core of the strife," but the "penalty" for participation in Nazi genocide was set by agents of virtual government. The directors of I.G. Farben, the economic and industrial sponsor of the Nazi party, and Krupp, *the* principal supplier of munitions, were tried for making war in violation of the Briand-Kellogg Treaty ... and were led through a revolving door—seems it couldn't be "proven beyond a doubt" that their intent was "aggressive," as stipulated by the treaty. Upon their release, the directors of Krupp and Farben immediately went on to exchange Nazi gold for Swiss notes on the sly. They stashed reserves away for the cold phase of the war.

All I.G. Farben facilities were left standing by American bombers on strict order from Washington. To smooth the path to corporate growth, General Patton stepped in and—in violation of the Potsdam Agreement, which specifically called for the dismantling of Farben—reorganized the company and promoted many of its former mid-level executives.

For every Nazi convicted at Nuremberg, four were released. With "Judgment at Nuremberg" constricted by such reasoning, it was hardly surprising that the first trial ended with the conviction of a dozen Nazis from a pool of 22. For the next trial the definitions of intent and authority were constrained even further, and 49 of the 52 leading German officers and industrialists were freed.

Dr. Robert Kempner, who might be described as an early "conspiracy theorist," wrote that with few exceptions, "the other SS leaders convicted at Nuremberg on charges of murder have been prematurely pardoned and freed, as a result of strong pressure by certain, partly still anonymous hinter-manner [sponsors]." In June, 1949, jurisdiction over the war criminals was handed off to High Commissioner John McCloy, the hard-core "anti-Nazi." His attitude underwent a drastic change in closed sessions, however. McCloy's secret Clemency Board reduced the sentences of all but the most intractable SS. Nearly a third were released for "good behavior" at the behest of the General German Staff. Others were granted amnesty by the thousands.

A year later, Jim Martin, a Defense Department investigator, traveled to Germany to track down Gerhard Westrick, the CEO of ITT in Germany and

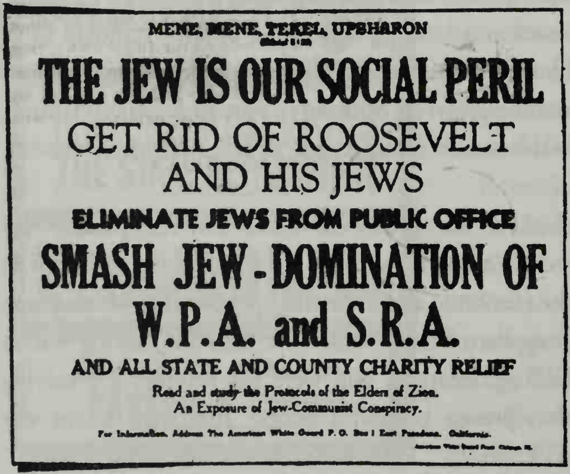

MENE, MENE, TEKEL, UPSHARON
[illegible]

THE JEW IS OUR SOCIAL PERIL
GET RID OF ROOSEVELT
AND HIS JEWS
ELIMINATE JEWS FROM PUBLIC OFFICE
SMASH JEW-DOMINATION OF
W.P.A. and S.R.A.
AND ALL STATE AND COUNTY CHARITY RELIEF

Read and study the Protocols of the Elders of Zion.
An Exposure of Jew-Communist Conspiracy.

For Information, Address The American White Guard P. O. Box 1 East Pasadena, California.

American White Guard Press Chicago, Ill.

A handbill distributed by the American White Council of California.

already a mover in the formation of the Fourth Reich. Westrick had fled the Berlin bombing and took refuge in a castle to the south. By post he appealed for help from his Army cronies, who smuggled him to Paris to apprise Colonel Alex Sanders of the condition of ITT's German holdings. Westrick received a token prison sentence and was released.

Hermann Abs, one of Hitler's principal financial backers, was employed as a consultant in the British zone for Deutsche Bank.

As an agent for the OSS in eastern Europe, Frank Wisner had compiled a list of SS men. In Pullach, a Bavarian village, Wisner and Dulles contacted Reinhard Gehlen, formerly the head of Hitler's eastern military intelligence corps. Gehlen was decked out in American uniform and flown to Fort Hunt, Virginia, where he was interrogated, processed and returned to Germany in July, 1946 to recruit SS and White Russian operatives for the Cold War. Gehlen, rapidly promoted to the rank of U.S. intelligence official, took up residence in Martin Bormann's mansion, or the "White House" to enlistees.

The emerging order was a reorganization of the old. Anyone who caught on was ignored, or if the whistle was blown, tarred by government officials as Communists, including Dexter White and Lauchlin Currie of the Treasury Department. White and Currie were investigating financial dealings with Germany throughout the course of the war by Standard Oil, Chase and National City Banks, the Morgan family, ITT, Ford and GM, among others. The careers of both investigators were buried by the McCarthy hearings and they were conveniently silenced.

Telford Taylor, the chief counsel at Nuremberg, saw the proceedings for what they were. He was beside himself that the most powerful Nazis had been acquitted on legal technicalities. "Murder, maiming, enslavement, ravage and plunder are a familiar litany," he wrote in 1970. The unique ingredient, especially in Eastern Europe, he argued, "was the enormous scope of the atrocities and the systematic planning and meticulous execution of these hideous enterprises."

One of those strategists was General Adolf Ernst Heusinger, inspector general of the West German Bundeswehr, former Wehrmacht General and chief of operations and planning of Hitler's land forces, responsible for ordering the wholesale atrocities in Poland and Russia. At Nuremberg, Heusinger testified that he was but a humble courier and denied any connection with the Nazi Party. Not only was he released—he turned around and talked American officials into letting his colleagues in the General Staff off as well. Among those freed as a result of his intercessions were several SS officers responsible for shooting unarmed American pilots downed over Germany. Killing American prisoners, it seems, was a standing order of "courier" Heusinger.

After Nuremberg, the Nazi joined the Gehlen spy organization, now split into the early CIA and the security arm of the Bonn government. Heusinger and Gehlen immediately set out to assemble a new German General Staff and an underground army that drew heavily upon the European criminal element. In the early 1950s, Heusinger was named West German Chancellor Konrad Adenauer's security adviser, and accepted his kind invitation to rebuild the German army.

"The new look of the next German army will be strictly non-Prussian," announced the *New York Times,* "middle class.... Its brains and boss will be Adolf Heusinger ... a very *American* type." In 1963, Heusinger was appointed chairman of the Permanent Military Committee of NATO.

Nuremberg was an inside job, instigated by Stimson, George Kennen, Allen Dulles and Dean Acheson at the State Department. Dulles was a vocal apologist for Hitler's Germany until Pearl Harbor, and as a lawyer at Sullivan & Cromwell planted Farben subsidiaries in the United States. Dean Acheson was an unabashed "Pan-German." The *San Francisco Chronicle* for August 4, 1963 captured his bilateral enthusiasm before a group at Yale and Smith college students: "I believe the single most important country in Europe is Germany, and we should treat her like a 51st state. We should consult her on every move we make."

The Cold War German-American alliance was the source of the Adenauer regime's "economic miracle." In *The Paperclip Conspiracy,* Tom Bower details the machinations behind Germany's miraculous recovery:

> The truth is sinister. In Washington a number of officials expected the resurgence of German industry, but only Samuel Klaus and a few sympathizers had wanted to prevent it, and they had failed for a series of reasons. Within Germany, the early schemes of the American military government to destroy the masonic industrial cartels had been curbed as a result of unrelenting political, commercial and diplomatic pressure from Congress, New York bankers and the British government....
>
> The publicly-stated policy of the U.S. to remove Nazis and their supporters "from the civil service, the judiciary, the educational system, the professions and the police" lamentably failed. Germany was not denazified.

The National Security Act of 1947 gave rise to dual governments, the existing system and a covert military regime. Among the authors of this virtual constitution was Paul Nitze, an employee of the the Nazi-entangled Dillon, Read investment firm and a political protégé of James Forrestal. Nitze's affinity with the Nazi cause fell under the scrutiny of the FBI in 1940.

The investigation was ordered up by Alfred Berle, then assistant secretary of defense, and Nelson Rockefeller, coordinator of inter-American affairs, who appears in fact to have been scouting for new talent—Paul Nitze resigned from Dillon, Read a few months later to take the job of financial manager of Nelson Rockefeller's office.

Nitze's doting respect for the Hitler regime was acknowledged by all he knew. One "reliable, confidential informant," who furnished "valuable information" to Hoover's FBI, said of Nitze that his political thoughts were "leaning more and more" toward Nazism, that he had "expressed feelings of admiration for totalitarianism and considerable contempt for the processes of democracy."

Transcontinental Ultraconservative Cold War cross-breeding was at play in the formation of a new U.S. intelligence group formed in May, 1948, the Office for Policy coordination (OPC), the nascent bureaucracy of America's Cold War army. The OPC and its liaisons in the intelligence sector operated with unrestrained freedom, according to NSC directive.

The early Cold War turned on the decisions of Kennon's staff. Another intelligence branch, the fledgling CIA, was an appendage of the OPC early on, but fear of exposure led the State Department to conceal the latter inside the former, away from the prying eyes of Congress and the public.

Roscoe Hillenkoetter, an early CIA director, wasn't at all pleased with this arrangement, or with this mysterious sub-agency with its WASP agents, but followed orders to look the other way while the OPC escorted Nazi war criminals to the States. Immigration irregularities were ironed out by the so-called International Rescue Committee, a CIA enterprise headed by a young intelligence agent named William Casey.

The OPC was established to take any assignment the CIA didn't have the stomach to accept. It soon became the operating arm of the Agency, acting on information gathered by CIA operatives, often at cross-purposes.

On Acheson's recommendation, a wealthy Wall Street attorney, Frank Wisner, formerly an OSS operative, accepted the position of director. If the OPC charter opened the Cold War floodgate, Wisner held the throttle. His orders to terrorize the Soviets was limited only by "plausible deniability" on the part of his superiors. Wisner was granted license to employ economic warfare, propaganda and wide-open terrorism to assist underground resistance groups.

Wisner's political power base included John McCloy, Averell Harriman (like Stimson and Kennan, a Yale Bones man), and Secretary of Defense James Forrestal. The Agency was initially supplied with 302 agents and a budget of $4.7 million. By 1952, the OPC employed 4,000 people and inhaled $84-million in federal revenues.

But Wisner's Nazi-hunting operation had a hidden source of funding to place emigrés in the U.S. as well.

Many of the mysterious emigrés found employment with the newly-established "research institutes." Operating funds were donated by the Committee for Liberation from Bolshevism, or Radio Liberty. The Committee was an OPC front founded by George Kennan well before the CIA was chartered. Funds gushed through "private" fund-raising organizations, including the "Crusade for Freedom," chaired by General Lucius Clay, who retired from his post as the American governor of the American Zone in 1949. Dwight Eisenhower and Ronald Reagan, among others, solicited public contributions. But more than 90 percent of its income was drawn from the unvouchered accounts of the CIA, not public donations. The State Department laundered the cash through private charities. The Rockefeller and Carnegie Funds were the fattest sugar daddies. And the Ford Foundation's Russian Research Committee performed a little public relations number applauding its own contributions to the flagrantly seditious Crusade for Freedom.

The Pentagon embraced the Nazis' refreshing ideas for waging covert warfare and devising horrific new weapons. It would be 40 years after the dust settled on the detritus of Berlin that the United States government acknowledged that domestic intelligence services frequently employed Nazi and Eastern European Quisling refugees as "informants," and even conspired to scuttle their prosecution for war crimes. In *Unholy Trinity,* a history of the Vatican's collusion with Old Guard fascists and the Soviet intelligence apparat, authors Aaron and Loftus observe: "It seems certain the Ratlines are *still* alive and well in America. The Nazis ... have found a new home: the World Anti-Communist League [WACL], formerly headed by retired US General John Singlaub. This is the same organization suspected by the US Congress of complicity in running guns [and drugs] for Contragate."

At the Chemical Warfare Service, founded in 1944 with $2.5 million in its bankroll, anthrax and botulism, two strains of biochemical poisons the military has had no qualms about using on Third World populations, became a mainstay of the American arsenal. George W. Merck, the pharmaceutical kingpin and an adviser to Secretary of War Henry Stimson, was the founder of the Biochemical Warfare Division, drawing on scientists from ivied American universities. The show was run in the early 1950s by Lawrence Laird Layton, a Nazi agent who resettled in the U.S. after WWII. His family made up the inner-circle of the People's Temple, the CIA's mind control and medical experimentation center in Guyana.

Thirty years after the CIA was founded, some of its most appalling abuses of public trust seeped out. There were demands for a Congressional inquiry, in effect circumvented by President Gerald Ford, who issued an executive order establishing a presidential commission to "investigate" the Agency. Nelson Rockefeller, then vice president, chaired it. Knowledgeable observers compared the appointment to setting the fox to guard the hen-house, given Rockefeller's links to the intelligence community and his vast working knowledge of covert activities. A second investigation concluded that the Rockefeller panel had been convened to undermine further investigations of abuses by the intelligence groups.

The godparents of the organized insanity about to be unleashed across the fresh green breast of the New World were "Wild Bill" Donovan and Allen Dulles from the inner-circle of a reorganized American "intelligence" network. Donovan was a bundle of raging contradictions. In public he despised fascism but was a staunch elitist himself. He rose Gatsby-like from poor Irish stock and grew to be an outwardly warm if professionally ruthless lawyer of influence on Wall Street. The firm is currently located at Rockefeller Plaza: Donovan, Leisure, Newton and Irvine. It was whispered in Washington that Wild Bill was the crony of wretched European aristocrats.

The Round Table of the Fourth Reich

As one OpEd town crier moaned: "If the Bilderberger group is not a conspiracy of some sort, it is conducted in such a way as to give a remarkably good imitation." The commentary was the complaint of G. Gordon Tether, a writer for England's *Financial Times.* He was subsequently ordered not to write about the organization again. Within a year, Tether was sacked.

Prince Bernhard was the first chairman of the Bilderberger Round Table, but the founder of the conference was Dr. Joseph Retinger, a compulsive financial and political schemer. Retinger was also the founder of the European League of Economic Cooperation and other groups formed to promote European solidarity.

Retinger, born in Poland in 1888, studied psychology in Munich and received his Ph.D in literature at the Sorbonne. In 1911 he settled in England and made contacts in government circles through London's Polish Bureau. Before long, Retinger made the acquaintance of Prime Minister Asquith—but lost that contact when the social climber publicly declared Lady Asquith to be a lesbian.

During the First World War, Retinger lived in Paris until, for unknown reasons, he was roughly expelled. From France he moved on to Cuba and Mexico, where he founded a nationalistic secret society, and ran intelligence missions for the Mexican government under diplomatic cover. On a trip to Italy in the 20s to warm relations between the Mexican government and the Vatican, Retinger found allies in Rome.

During World War II, Retinger was back in England, in league with General Sikorski and the Polish exile movement. Following the death of Sikorski in 1943, Retinger boarded the SOE under the direction of Sir Colin Gubbins, code-named "M," a Scottish Highlander and seething anti-Communist. Gubbins was born in 1896 in Yokahama, the son of a short-tempered British linguist. He graduated from Woolwich and fought in a field artillery unit throughout the First World War. When Hitler picked off Norway, Gubbins led the Independent Companies, the direct forerunner of the commandos. Gubbins was selected to organize "stay-behind parties," secret death squads formed to prey on any German troops that might step foot on British soil. Under Gubbins, Retinger trained as a paratrooper.

He resumed his obsession with a unified Europe with a fervor after the war, accompanied Winston Churchill on his 1949 tour of the United States. Their fund-raising gave birth to the American Committee for a United Europe (ACUE), chaired by William Donovan, former director of the OSS. His second was Allen Dulles, former head of the OSS office in Berne, Switzerland, who provided the group with covert funding. At the top of the agenda of the ACUE (and a slew of CIA clones) was the remilitarization of Germany and Western Europe. An open call for "unification" was delivered at a 1948 Hague conference in which Churchill and Germany's Konrad Adenauer (still busily rebuilding the German government, drawing heavily on Nazi elements) dominated the proceedings. A year later, Retinger's Council of Europe, partially supported by the CIA with a bankroll filtered through the ACUE, was formed in Strasbourg.

The anti-Communist message soon took on the trappings of a political crusade. In 1947, muckraker George Seldes lamented the drift toward unification driven by CIA opinion-shapers with king-making arrogance in their blood, among them Henry Luce at *Life:*

> Historians will discover that the first clarion call for a holy crusade of the Western Democracies for the Third World War was sounded while Second was still in progress, and that it appeared in the pages of a Luce publication.
>
> The author was William C. Bullitt, onetime ambassador to Moscow, and one-

time ambassador to France. The date was September 4, 1944. The editorial introduction called Mr. Bullitt "a special *Life* correspondent" who had gone to Italy where "he was granted interviews with well-informed and authoritative personages, among them Pope Pius XII." There was more than an inference that Bullitt was quoting the Pope as favoring what was euphemistically called a holy crusade.

The proposal to divide the world into a Western and an Eastern bloc, and to fight it out for control, was later taken up by Winston Churchill, whose writings were purchased by *Life* and the *New York Times*, and eventually by leaders throughout the world. Mr. Luce may therefore point with journalistic pride to the fact that one of his publications was the first to propose World War III.

From the anti-Communist annexes of the Vatican came Intermarium, a Catholic organization on comfortable terms with the Nazi eugenics movement under Alfred Rosenberg. In Germany, the Abwehr, Hitler's intelligence arm, drew on Intermarium for information on the movements of East European emigrés and sent members abroad to influence foreign political and corporate leaders. With the assistance of Pope Pius XII, the Vatican offshoot established ratlines for Nazi collaborators from the eastern bloc, the single largest fascist escape route to the United States and Canada.

Such groups became the army in the holy war against the USSR, and the call to arms was signaled by the corporate press and several umbrella intelligence operations, many of them founded by Retinger. These included the Council of Europe, chaired by Paul Rijkins, the chairman of Unilever. It was Rijkins who introduced Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands to Dr. Retinger.

Bernhard, soon to become the Bilderberg figurehead, was the son of an early recruit to Himmler's SS. World War II historian John Keenan notes: "It was a measure of Himmler's obsession with heredity that he particularly welcomed as recruits representative of the German aristocracy." Among the early aristocrats to join the SS were Prince von Waldek, Prince von Mecklenburg, Prince Lippe-Biesterfeld (Bernhard's father), Prince Hohenzollern-Sigmaringen and the archbishops of Brunswick and Freiburg. Later, with the foundation of the Order Castles as enclaves of the SS, Himmler molded the upper echelon of the organization into a pagan order of chivalry.

Bernhard was recruited by Retinger, the godfather of right-wing groups around the world. As Bernard tells it, his ascension to chairman of the Bilderbergers was an alruistic act. "Retinger came to me," he recalled later, "and told me about his worries concerning the rising tide of anti-Americanism in Europe."

Pietro Quarino, an Italian recruited to the Bilderbergers by Retinger, found the doctor to be a born schemer. "A Pole once remarked to me, many years ago, 'every Pole has conspiracy in his blood.' First came very vague hints concerning desirable aims. Then, as I gradually caught on, a few details, then he revealed further details, then a few names ..."

The first meeting of the Bliderbergers took place around a ping-pong table on September 25, 1952. The membership roster included Retinger's old boss at the SOE, Sir Gubbins, and Antoine Pinay, the prime minister of France. The first resolution voted upon was a plan to draw the United States into the group's geo-political activities. Retinger and the Prince traveled to Washington to meet with Allen Dulles, whose exploits on behalf of the Nazis are well documented, and Walter Bedell Smith, director of central intelligence and former chief of staff to Eisenhower during WWII—and one of the key officers to rubber-stamp the residency papers of genocidal Ukranian Nazi emigré Mykola Lebed for "national security" reasons. The American Bilderberger Committee had David Rockefeller, Dean Rusk, Henry Heinz II and Joseph Johnson of the Carnegie Endowment for Intenational Peace.

The first full-blown conference took place in May, 1954 at the Hotel de Bilderberg in Oosterbeck, Holland with the CIA and the Dutch government graciously picking up the tab. Topics of discussion included "the attitude toward European integration and the European defense community." The press was barred from the proceedings. The world outside remained blissfully unaware of the telling resolution made and recorded in the "strictly confidential" minutes of the first meeting:

> "Insufficient attention has so far been paid to long term planning, and to evolving an international order which would look beyond the present-day crisis. When the time is ripe our concepts should be extended to the whole world."

The attendance list at Bilderberger conclaves read like a *Who's Who* of bloodless American Nazi collaborators. Arthur Dean, a partner with John Foster Dulles at the Sullivan & Cromwell law firm since 1929, was named co-chairman. Dean invited a group of German bankers and industrialists to the meetings. J.F. Dulles was chairman of the Rockefeller Foundation (with $854 million in assets) and the Carnegie Endowment. Allen Dulles liaisoned with Gerhard Westrick, the ITT-Nazi financial operative, until 1944, and was a director of the Schroeder Trust Company, a wing of the international banking empire of Baron Kurt von Schroeder of the German General Staff. The bank run by Henry and his brother Bruno was credited by *Time* as an "economic booster of the Rome-

Berlin axis." And Schroeder, Rockefeller and Co., Investment Bankers was the financial nexus of the Nazi fifth column on the East Coast during the war. John J. McCloy from the law firm of Milbank, Tweed and Chase Manhattan Bank was a regular at the conferences.

On the steering committee sat Robert Murphy, chairman of Corning Glass and Eisenhower's Foreign Intelligence Advisory Board, and William Baker, a Rockefeller Institute trustee. Robert Lovett, a former secretary of defense, also attended. Lovett was a business partner of Averell Harriman in Brown Brothers, Harriman and Co., the firm that employed George Bush's father and grandfather.

Noting the involvement of the same corporate conspirators in the running of the leading American universities, Congressman John Rarick was moved in September 15, 1971 to lament: "The university as a strategic institution within American society provides both the technical manpower and the ideological justification of ... state capitalism. Since the legal and political power of the university system clearly rests in the hands of the ruling class, it follows that as an institution the university's primary function is to *serve the interest of wealth and power rather than free inquiry.*"

The influence of Joseph Retinger on the organization continued until his death in 1960. The first American secretary general was Joseph Johnson, the Carnegie Foundation scion, succeeded in 1974 by William Bundy, another Bonesman from Yale (described by David Halberstam as "a shadowy figure on the outside center of power"). In 1979, Bundy's chair was passed to Paul Finney, an editor of *Fortune.* Henry Kissinger was appointed to the steering committee years before he was asked to serve in the Nixon administration.

In the 1980s, participants included:

George Ball: Former undersecretary of state and an author of the National Security Act of 1947, the *carte blanche* charter of the CIA.
Paul Volcker: Federal Reserve.
Giovanni Agnelli: The Italian fascist, president of Fiat.
David Kearns: Chairman of Xerox.
Arnold Horelick: Director of the Rand/UCLA Center for the Study of Soviet International Behavior.
Jack Bennett: A senior VP at Exxon.
David Daustresme: A partner at Lazard Frere.
Charles Mathias: U.S. senator.
Robert Reid: Chairman of Shell UK, Ltd.
Robert Jecker: Executive board president of Credit Suisse.

... and a midnight colonade of "conservative" government leaders.

And what are they up to? Ultraconservative Phyllis Schlafly once called the "Bergers" "a little clique of powerful men who meet secretly and plan world events that appear to just happen."

JOY

William Donovan

We have nothing with the outcast and the unfit: let them die in their misery. For they feel not. Compassion is the vice of kings: stamp down on the wretched and the weak: this is the law of the strong: this is our law and the joy of the world.

—Aleister Crowley, *Book of the Law*

All of this empire-building took its toll on the sanity of two of the most powerful aspiring bureaucrat-soldiers in the intelligence netherworld, William Donovan and James Jesus Angleton. After the war, Donovan was stricken with severe "brain atrophy" and unceasing, violent hallucinations. Donovan, his mind wheeling with paranoid aberrations, once saw a swarm of Soviet troops marching across Washington's 59th Street Bridge. The visions hounded him until his death in 1959, appearing for all the world to be caused by massive drug overdoses, suspicious given his close association with Allen Dulles, Albert Hoffmann of Sandoz, Aldous Huxley and other Knights of the Holy Order of LSD.

Both sides of the Second World War had undertaken a quest for the ideal truth drug. OSS Director Donovan assembled a team of psychologists and drug researchers to create chemicals capable of altering and controlling behavior. This coalition included Drs. Winifred Overhulser, Harry J. Anslinger, Edward Strecker and George White. At the same time, in Germany, Nazi doctors at Dachau pursued the same ends by experimenting on Jews, Slavs and other genetic "inferiors."

Forrestal was generally high-strung, but on the day of his resignation as secretary of war, he was found *frozen* in place at his desk. An aide whisked him to his home in Georgetown. Forrestal, like Donovan, claimed that "Communists and Jews" were conspiring against him, and was obsessed with a coming invasion of Communist hordes. He attempted suicide and was admitted to Bethesda

Naval Hospital. Jacob Heilbrun, a Georgetown University scholar of postwar European history, wrote in the October 5, 1992 issue of the *New Republic* that George Kennan exercised a decisive influence on Forrestal: "Writing to Forrestal in October 1947, he proposed the creation of what he called a 'guerilla warfare corps' trained by the American military, which could 'fight fire with fire.' Forrestal agreed, but he felt that such an effort should be established under the auspices of the CIA. On December 13, 1947, the NSC approved a program of covert propaganda under CIA direction. More than likely he approved the recruitment of Ukranian Nazi collaborators for 'Operation Nightingale.' The guerillas were trained in the United States and sent to certain deaths in the Ukraine."

Forrestal was in the midst of transcribing Winthrop Mackworth Praed's translation of *Ajax,* whereupon he stood up, strolled to a kitchen storeroom, looped his pajama cord around his neck, secured it to a sill and leapt out the window. The cord broke.

James Forrestal, secretary of defense, the man who designed the postwar Navy, went out in the classic Sophoclean manner: "worn by the waste of time—comfortless, nameless, *hopeless* save in the dark prospect of the yawning grave."

If the minds of Donovan and Forrestal were broken by drug overdosing, a likely medium would have been a critical dose of BZ, a chemical sibling of LSD and an offshoot of Albert Hoffmann's labors for Sandoz, a subsidiary of Warburg and Farben. The CIA's Arnold Rothman, known as "Mr. Death" inside the Agency, discussed his leery flirtation with the potent hallucinogen in his capacity as a gadgeteer, as he explained in the January, 1977 issue of *Playboy:*

> **Playboy:** Were you ever asked to work with drugs?
>
> **Mr Death:** Only twice that I remember. My contact brought me a half gram of LSD, sealed in 27 different bottles inside of each other.... This was in the 50s and I had no idea what LSD was.... That specific job gave me the very distinct, creepy feeling that it was under the counter even for [the CIA]. I had a whole box of Neo-Synephrine spray bottles that I loaded.
>
> **Playboy:** What dosages were you using.
>
> **Mr. Death:** Enormous dosage. Probably wipe you out forever.
>
> **Playboy:** You mentioned two instances. What was the other drug you worked with?
>
> **Mr. Death:** The other was called BZ, and I wouldn't ever want to get dosed with that. It was something like LSD, but the dosage was much lower and you had to

> work with it in a glove box, because it was administered by breathing. I saw some very frightening films of soldiers who had been given BZ. The guys were reduced to catatonics. They would just sit there, drooling, with no control over their bodily functions unless they were given commands, like "get up," or "put your helmet on."

There was a panting interest in the human brain in some intelligence circles. *Maclean's* reported on March 13, 1991 that mind control experimentation is still a "touchy" subject, that the silence of the government on this lost chapter of military history persists: "The Mulroney government appointed a one-lawyer commission to look into the pleas of nine broken victims" of the CIA's ranking Black Psychiatrist, Dr. E. Ewen Cameron.

And who should be entrusted with this most sensitive political investigation? "A defeated Conservative MP, George Cooper of Halifax, who, loyal to the regime that held the answer to his future, concluded that the government bears no 'legal or moral responsibilities' for the experiments. Odd. Deep within the report is buried evidence that Ottawa in fact funded Cameron and his experiments with five times the financing contributed by the CIA. Cooper did meekly suggest a $100,000 payment to each survivor, not because the government was guilty of wrongdoing, but as an expression of 'a collective sense of accountability for events that took place in good faith with ill effect.'"

An FOIA document bearing the signature of the Sidney Gottlieb of the CIA's Chemical Division charts a few early forays into hypnotic mind control:

> 11 May 1953
> MEMORANDUM FOR THE RECORD
> SUBJECT: Visit to Project [deleted]
>
> 1. On this day the writer spent the day observing experiments with Mr. [deleted] on project [deleted] and in planning next year's work on the project (Mr. [deleted] has already submitted his proposal to the [deleted]).
> 2. The general picture of the present status of the project is one of a carefully planned series of five major experiments. Most of the year has been spent in screening and standardizing a large group of subjects (approximately 100) and the months between now and September 1 should yield much data, so that these five experiments should be completed by September 1. The five experiments are: (N stands for the total number of subjects involved in the experiment.)

Experiment 1—N-18 Hypnotically induced anxieties to be completed by September 1.
Experiment 2—N-24 Hypnotically increasing the ability to learn and recall complex written matter.
Experiment 3—N-30 Polygraph response under hypnosis....
Experiment 4—N-24 Hypnotically increasing ability to observe and recall a complex arrangement of physical objects.
Experiment 5—N-100 Relationship of personality to susceptibility to hypnosis....

The chemical companies had long engaged in secret political subterfuge. "The DuPont's fascistic behavior" Charles Higham wrote in *Trading with the Enemy,* "was evident in 1936, when Irenee du Pont used General Motors money to finance the notorious Black Legion." The DuPonts' Legionnaires, sporting black robes garnished with the skull and crossbones, killed labor organizers, bombed union halls and plotted to rid the earth of Jews and Communists. They enlisted Klansmen, ex-convicts, rapists, psychopaths, murderers and thugs. This coalition of ne'er-do-wells were the muscle of the notorious Wolverine Republican League of Detroit.

Journalist John Roy Carlson infiltrated the Legion in the 1930s, and received a baptism in organized violence: "Vigilantés pledged an oath of secrecy. Its multiple units bore such names as Black Guards, Bullet Club, Silent Legion, Modern Patriots. Its regiments were divided into squads for special duty: death squads, arson squads, flogging squads." Each squad received special "patriotic" assignments. Charles Poole, a Black factory worker, was beaten to death by the Legion, which boasted 100,000 strong. During the Poole trial it emerged that the Legion had beaten and mutilated 50 Blacks, Jews and "Communist-influenced" union organizers.

After WWII, the American military machine locked onto the Bolsheviks as the ranking dire threat to freedom and democracy and raised the roof over "Soviet expansionism." The fact that Winston Churchill had signed an agreement with Stalin recognizing Soviet domain over Rumania and Bulgaria in exchange for British control of Greece was scarcely mentioned. Poland was an open question—Britain maintained bases there and a schism of loyalties had emerged in the Polish government. Negotiations collapsed. Russia moved prematurely, ruthlessly, to assure that neighboring governments were politically compatible, providing a buffer from the West. Kennen and Acheson scapegoated Communist aggression and the secret war was underway.

In *Thy Will Be Done,* a Rockefeller biography that rakes up entire strata of muck where business and politics meet in Latin America, Gerard Colby tracked the CIA's initial steps into mind control as a strategic weapon: "Nelson Rockefeller merged the Federal Security Agency and its $4.6 million operating budget," Colby writes ...

> and the operating units of three federal corporations, into a single, new cabinet-level department, Health, Education & Welfare.... HEW became involved in intelligence matters ... and became the first conduit for the CIA's mind control experiments. Project Artichoke and consequently MK-ULTRA ... was given cover by both HEW and its sub-agency, the National Institute of Mental Health (NIMH). Nelson needed little introduction to MK-ULTRA. The CIA's use of HEW for mind control experiments had been initiated during his tenure as under-secretary. The Rockefeller Foundation was also no stranger to this type of research.

Adolph Berle, a key New Dealer, agreed to sit on the board of the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology, a foundation established at Cornell University by Nelson Rockefeller and Allen Dulles to conceal the funding of more illicit CIA mind control experimentation.

"I am frightened of this one," Berle wrote in his journal. "If scientists knew what they had laid out for themselves—men will become manageable ants."

Colby:

> The CIA received a startling proposal to "provide for Agency-sponsored research involving covert biological and chemical warfare." During Nelson's chairmanship of the Special Group, the CIA also searched for the means to program assassins. The CIA had discovered that a man "could be surreptitiously drugged through the medium of an alcoholic cocktail at a social party ... and the subject induced to perform the attempted assassination" of an official in the government in which he was "well-established socially and politically." The CIA officer in charge of the operation was Sheffield Edwards. Edwards later worked with Edward Lansdale in Operation Mongoose, the assassination attempt against Cuba's Fidel Castro.

Mind control experimentation took place behind the private fences of university campuses across the country, secretly transacted by the CIA's Sidney Gottlieb, director of the chemical section of the CIA's Technical Services Division. Gottlieb hailed from an old boy intelligence cell that had at its nucleus Nelson Rockefeller's former CIA sidekick in Brazil, J.C. King of the

Directorate of Plans, late of the United Fruit Company's overthrow of Guatemala, then presiding over all clandestine activities in the western hemisphere.

Two pivotal figures in the early cold war cemented forces shortly after the fall of Berlin: Fritz Kramer, schooled in Nazi Germany, and young Henry Kissinger. It was Kramer who convinced Kissinger to study at Harvard and introduced the *basso-vocé* intellectual to Nelson Rockefeller. Kramer became a key strategist at the Pentagon. His son Sven studied under Kissinger and joined the National Security Council under Ronald Reagan.

John Foster Dulles was named Secretary of State after the war. According to CIA historian John Ranelagh, Dulles didn't condescend to to mingle with other federal officials, preferring to work *secretly,* "depending upon his close personal relationships with America's governing elite."

In 1945, Nicolae Malaxa, the key financier and arms supplier to the Iron Guard (an SS advance unit in Austria), signed a confidential contract with Grady McClaussen of the OSS, agreeing to a generous payoff in exchange for entry into the U.S. And so, in September, 1946, Malaxa disembarked with a trade mission for New York. Upon his arrival, Malaxa headed for the Chase National Bank and withdrew several million dollars waiting for him in a firm

"CHE GUEVERA ONCE TOLD *I.F. Stone in an interview that the U.S. embassy in Mexico had bought up and junked all the copies it could lay its hands on of the Spanish translation of* Hidden History. *In the United States, on its original appearance in 1952, the book met with an almost complete press blackout and boycott. Though its analysis was extremely damaging to the State Department line on the war, no effort was made to answer it. It achieved better treatment when it appeared in England, as did the translations in Spanish, Italian and Japanese. Two chapters were published in Jean Paul Sartre's* Les Temps Modernes. *In the U.S., the book has almost entirely disappeared, even from public libraries."*

◆◆◆

An introductory note to *The Hidden History of the Korean War,* by I.F. Stone, published in 1952. Stone's detailed chronology of the confrontation's early stages found General Douglas MacArthur's intelligence chief, Charles (Adolph) Willoughby (Weidenbach), a Nazi spy, to be a manipulator of events in Korea and reports from the front to draw the United States into a "police action" that strongly resembled a war.

account. For political pull, Malaxa enlisted the aid of Dulles and a young senator from California, Richard Nixon. In May, Malaxa set up a dummy corporation, Western Tube, and proposed to build the plant in Nixon's hometown, Whittier, California. The company's address happened to be the same as Nixon's law firm. Herman Perry, who convinced Nixon to run for the Senate, was now "vice president" of the corporation. The application was approved.

Malaxa was soon flying off to meet with Argentina's Juan Peron, Otto Skorzeny and other principals in the reconstruction of the Reich. Nixon and Malaxa remained bosom allies.

But the U.S. had its own Iron Guard, an underground fascist terrorist cell fronted by the Midtown Sporting Club in New York City, bankrolled by the Morgan family, several Wall Street investment firms and the German General Staff.

"The penalty for betraying our secrets is death," was the warning John Roy Carlson received upon infiltrating the group, echoing the charter found at Vogelsburg Castle. "We have men watching every one of you, men without mercy. Men who don't give a damn. They are the guardians of the Iron Guard. You are the soldiers of Christ.... We are the trained body of Christian citizens who must give aid and defense to all Christian groups."

After swearing never to divulge information regarding the secrets of the Iron Guard, he was permitted to attend a "ritual war" ceremony: "A half dozen straight-backed chairs, several armchairs and a small round table with an open Bible laying on it composed the furniture. Across the pages of the Bible lay a bayonet. Several rifles leaned against the wall. I sat down facing the emblem of the Iron Guard, a large black circle and an inner circle of white. Within the circles was a red arm holding in its fist a flash of lightning."

Hermann Schmitt, the leader of the Guard, stood in the circle and blurted, "We *are* FASCISTS, American *fascists!* Democracy is a tool to do away with Christianity. The time is ripe for something entirely new—*fascism!*"

The lunacy, seeded by the oligarchy, was spreading. A U.S. War Department release to the armed services in 1945 schooled soldiers on the malignancy of fascism:

> Fascism is government by the few and for the few. The objective is seizure and control of the economic, political, social and cultural life of the state. The democratic way of life intervenes with their methods and desire for conducting business, living with their fellow men and having the final say in matters concerning others.... They maintain themselves in power by use of force combined with propaganda based on primitive ideas ... by skillful manipulation of fear and hate and by false promise of security.

There are, declared the War Department, "Three Ways to Spot U.S. Fascists":

> Fascists deny the need for international cooperation. These ideas contradict the fascist theory of the "master race." The brotherhood of man implies that all people have rights. International cooperation runs counter to the fascist program of war and world domination.
>
> Many fascists make the spurious claim that the world has but two choices ... fascism or Communism, and they label as "Communist" everyone who refuses to support them.

In France, few conformed to the fascist mold like Francois Genoud, a Nazi collaborator who joined the National Socialist Party at 21 and rose to prominence in Switzerland. His National Front for Switzerland was funded by the Oltramaire family, owners of the Lobard-Oldier Bank of Geneva, the secret pocket of OSS Station Chief Allen Dulles and his German contacts.

Many of the most powerful Nazis, of course, settled in the U.S.

Edward Fleckenstein, a Weehawken, New Jersey lawyer, published an open letter in Germany to Dr. Konrad Adenauer, offering "observations regarding U.S.-German affairs." The letter circulated widely in Germany. The American government, Fleckenstein said, was "corrupt at every level ... a quasi-dictatorship ruled by the hidden tyranny of money and satanic special interest groups. Well-meaning bourgeois are still in the majority here but they get nowhere [as] the U.S. administration is dominated by a secret, invisible government." This "secret government and its conspirators," Fleckenstein wrote, "put Eisenhower in office."

Sources

Charles R. Allen, Jr., *Heusinger of the Fourth Reich* (1963); Scott Anderson and Jon Lee Anderson, *Inside the League* (1986); Herbert Aptheker, *Dare We Be Free?* (1961); Tom Bower, *The Paperclip Conspiracy: The Hunt for the Nazi Scientists* (1987); John Roy Carlson, *Undercover: My Four Years in the Nazi Underworld of America* (1943); Fred J. Cook, *The Warfare State* (1962); Transcripts of Senator D'Amato's hearings on Swiss handling of Jewish assets, 1996; Ladislas Farago, *Aftermath* (1974); M.R.D. Foot, "Subtle Maker of War" (re: Joseph Retinger), *London Telegraph*, July 31, 1993; Arnold Foster & Benjamin R. Epstein, *Cross-Currents* (1956); Charles Higham, *American Swastika* (1985); Glen Infield, *Secrets of the SS* (1981); John Loftus, *The Belarus Secret* (1982), and with Mark

Aarons, *Unholy Trinity: The Vatican, the Nazis, and Soviet Intelligence* (1991) and *The Secret War Against the Jews* (1994); Ferdinand Lundberg, *The Rockefeller Syndrome,* (1975); William Manchester, *American Ceasar: Douglas MacArthur 1880–1964* (1978); William Morris McLoughlin, "General Charles Adolph Willoughby, Looking for 'Hate' in all the 'Right' Places," undated monograph, *Prevailing Winds Research,* Santa Barbara, CA; Mike Newberry, *The Yahoos* (1964); E.A. Piller, *Time Bomb* (1945); Dick Russell, *The Man Who Knew Too Much* (1992); Michael Sayers & Albert E. Kahn, *Sabotage! The Secret War Against America* (1942) and *The Plot Against the Peace* (1947); Anthony Sampson, *The Arms Bazaar: From Lebanon to Lockheed* (1977); Christopher Simpson, *Blowback: America's Recruitment of Nazis and its Effect on the Cold War* (1988); Telford Taylor (chief counsel at the Nuremberg trials), *Nuremberg and Vietnam: an American Tragedy* (1970); T.H. Tetens, *The New Germany and the Old Nazis* (1961); Lucian K. Truscott, IV, "Even in Arcadia" *Vague,* London, England, no. 18: Spring 1989; others cited in the text.

"And Now, A Few Words From our Sponsor"

THE CIA

The Birth of Operation MOCKINGBIRD, the Takeover of the Corporate Press & the Programming of Public Opinion

"My lips have been kind of buttoned for almost twenty years ..."
—Walter Cronkite

Little has been written about the CIA's hidden relationship with the media. John Ranelagh's *The Agency*—an officially-sanctioned, Bible-length history—mentions few occasions of meddling. One of them was exposed at the oversight level in 1973 when Vernon Walters, then acting director, asked William Colby to draw up a list of "skeletons" in the CIA's burial ground of a history to submit at a closed Congressional hearing...

The list was single-spaced. It was 693 pages long.

Among the confessed abuses of power was a Project Mockingbird: "During the period from March 12, 1963 to June 15, 1963, the Office of Security installed telephone taps on two prominent Washington-based newsmen suspected of disclosing classified information obtained from a variety of governmental and congressional sources."[1]

A routine wiretap. Not a particularly damning disclosure. But this Mockingbird is not to be confused with the wholesale political and cultural pollution of the media known to the ink-stained wretches who study the CIA's international underground as Operation MOCKINGBIRD.

In the early gusts of the Cold War, the American intelligence services competed with Communist activists to influence European labor unions. With or without the cooperation of local embassies, Frank Wisner, an undercover State Department official assigned to the Foreign Service, hired students abroad to enter the Cold War as agents of his Office of Policy Coordination. Philip Graham, an alumnus of the Army Intelligence School in Harrisburg, Pennsylvania, publisher of the *Washington Post,* signed on to direct the propaganda program.[2]

The following decade, Wisner and Graham would both resign their CIA commissions by committing "suicide."

In the early 1950s, former *Village Voice* reporter Deborah Davis wrote in her biography of Katharine Graham, "Wisner had implemented his plan and '*owned*' respected members of the *New York Times, Newsweek,* CBS and other communications vehicles, plus stringers, four to six hundred in all, according to a former CIA analyst."[3] The partnership was overseen by Allen Dulles, the ultimate insider, a virtual government templar for German and American corporations who wanted their point of views represented in the media. Early MOCKINGBIRD swelled to influence some 25 newspapers and wire agencies by 1955, consenting, in the most frigid period of the Cold War, to act as founts of right-wing propaganda.[4] Many of these were already operated by men with highly reactionary views, among them William Paley (CBS), C.D. Jackson (*Fortune*), Henry Luce (*Time*) and Arthur Hays Sulzberger (*N.Y. Times*).

Curious activists nosing into the dense mysteries of MOCKINGBIRD have been shocked to find, in heavily-redacted FOIA documents, agents boasting of their pride at having placed "important assets" inside every major news outlet in the country.[5] It was not until 1982 that the Agency openly admitted for the first time that journalists on the CIA dole have acted as case officers to agents in the field.[6]

I. MOCKINGBIRDGATE

> *So the muckrakers were suppressed, the newspapers were reduced, brought into safe hands, writers were controlled, books privately censored, publishing houses bought into and influenced, peace societies and philanthropic and educational foundations linked up with financial houses and the universities by interlocking directorates, our university teachers kept looking forward to pensions, young recalcitrants dismissed or set in their places ...*
>
> —Porter Sargent, "What Makes Lives"

The seeding of public opinion, often explained (when the straining dams of secrecy leak) as a necessary reaction to Communism, has since served to conceal the criminalization of the intelligence agencies. The CIA's early forays into mind control experimentation on unconsenting subjects, for example, were justified by an ersatz cover story that POWs of the Korean War had been "brainwashed" by their captors. In fact, the Army investigation was unable to document a single case of "brainwashing" among the prisoners released by the North Koreans. The word was coined by Edward Hunter, a veteran OSS propagandist recruited by Dulles, the Nazi-collaborating oligarch who, in fact, conceived of MOCKINGBIRD as a mass mind control operation.

The Korean War itself was urged along by propaganda oozing from the front pages of the country's leading newspapers. A detailed study of the disinformation assault, I.F. Stone's *Hidden History of the Korean War,* first appeared in 1952. The book sold well overseas, but in the States, as explained in a note from the publisher in later editions, it "met with an almost complete press blackout and boycott. The book has almost entirely *disappeared,* even from public libraries, and it rarely turns up in the second-hand book market."

The muckracking era was yesterday's coffee grounds—corporate franchising of the print media saw to it. "When it began," lamented George Seldes in *1000 Americans,* a survey of American corporate power published in 1947, muckraking journalism had advocates in "all people who had the general welfare at heart, but as the probes went deeper and further, and seemed to spare none of the hidden powers, the politicians as well as other spokesmen for money, business and profiteering turned savagely upon the really free press and *destroyed it....* Trash may indeed be the opium of the people, but it was not the real aim of the magazines to stupefy the public, merely to suppress the facts, merely to pullify, to create a wasteland."

A Niagara of pro-American propaganda sponsored by the U.S. Information Agency (USIA), a CIA symbiont, shaped domestic and foreign political sensibilities beginning in the early 1950s. In this period, a niagara of books with USIA funding were disseminated by Praeger, Inc., the Franklin Press and other publishing houses bearing, of course, no indication of their actual origin.

By the mid-Reagan era, the USIA would spend nearly a billion dollars per anum to export propagandizing magazines, books (an average of three million a year) and exhibitions. The Agency sponsored ten magazines and commercial bulletins in twenty languages, including *Topic* (South Africa) and a radio teletype network that disseminated propaganda to 159 outlets overseas. Some 200 films acquired from private domestic studios were distributed, and a television program entitled *Worldnet.*[7]

The CIA came to dominate the Monopoly board of the corporate press, and drew a card from the stack marked with that monocled millionaire in the top hat (bearing a curious resemblance to Allen Dulles) calling for a strategy of psychological warfare, the art of calculated deceit, often with catastrophic results.

Cord Meyer, Jr., the ranking Mockingbird in Europe, then a *Newsweek* correspondent, swung widely throughout Europe inciting student and union protests. "This localized psychological warfare is ultimately, of course, warfare against the Russians," Davis emphasized, "who are presumed to be the source of every leftist political sentiment in Italy, France, the entire theater of Meyer's operations. In Eastern Europe his aim [was] to foment rebellion."

In 1956, "the CIA learns that the Soviets will indeed kill 60,000 MOCKINGBIRD-roused Hungarians with armored tanks."[8] Nevertheless, Radio Free Europe urged the people of Hungary to resist the Kremlin, the conclusion of an investigative committee of the UN: Many Hungarians "had the feeling that Radio Free Europe promised help." They believed military aid from the West would arrive to back an uprising. On November 5, a year later, a dry, unsteady voice crackled through the static of a Hungarian radio station:

> Attention: Radio Free Europe, hello. Attention. This is Roka speaking. The radio of revolutionary youth.... Continual bombing. Help. help. help ... Radio Free Europe ... forward our request. Forward our news. Help ...

And on November 6, another broadcast:

> We appeal to the conscience of the world. Why cannot you hear the call for help of our murdered women and children? Have you received our transmission?
>
> Attention! Attention! Munich! Munich! Take immediate action. In the Dunapentele area we urgently need medicine, bandages, arms, food and ammunition.

The final transmission, 24 hours later:

> Must we appeal once again? We have wounded ... who have given their blood for the sacred cause of liberty, but we have no bandages ... no medicine. The last piece of bread has been eaten.
>
> Those who have died for liberty ... accuse you who are able to help and who have not helped. We have read an appeal to the UN and every honest man. Radio Free Europe, Munich! Radio Free Europe, Munich ...[9]

Operation MOCKINGBIRD was an immense financial undertaking. Funds flowed from the CIA largely through the Congress for Cultural Freedom (CCF), founded by Tom Braden, a "liberal" who would make his mark as a syndicated columnist and co-host of CNN's *Crossfire* opposite Ultracon Pat Buchanon. The CCF was founded in June, 1950 by prominent academics assembled in Berlin's U.S. zone at the Titania Palace Theater. The CCF, directed by Denis de Rougemont, was formed to "defend freedom and democracy against the new tyranny sweeping the world." About 20 periodicals were financed by the front, including *Encounter* in the UK, *The New Leader, Africa Report* and *El Mundo Nuevo* in Latin America.[10]

The hidden source of CCF's income—and the influence the CIA had been exercising over the intellectual life of Europe—erupted in a wave of scandal that filled a page of the England's *Observer* in 1967. The *Sunday Times* also drew down on "CIA Culture," exposing a "Literary Bay of Pigs." *Encounter,* the epicenter of the scandal, was presided over by Melvin Lasky, a former Army captain. Lasky negotiated with the CIA for funding from the start, and he edited the journal for 32 years.

Most literati embroiled in the scandal denied any role in it, including co-editors Stephen Spender and Frank Kermode, who immediately resigned in a huff. Editor Lasky claimed to have "learned" of the true source of funding in 1963. However, Tom Braden, in disclosures that appeared in *The Saturday Evening Post,* acknowledged that he'd constructed the "front" program for the Central Intelligence Agency, and had appointed one agent to preside over the CCF and another to edit *Encounter.*[11]

Lasky shaped the reputations of some of the UK's most respected anti-Communist "scholars," including Hugh Trevor-Roper, a military intelligence officer, and George Urban, previously director of Radio Free America and later adviser to Margaret Thatcher on German affairs. From the Lasky crowd emerged historian and poet Robert Conquest, whose *The Great Terror,* an account of the Stalin purge, is widely considered a minor classic (gratis the CIA).[12]

The Nation reported a major stink over the subsidies to *Encounter,* noting: "The journal, with a circulation of 42,000, put a number of journals not funded by the CIA out of business." Lasky was unruffled, even though the British press found an "agonizing debate" raging in academia "around the question of what a free thinker should do when he finds out that his free thought has been subsidized by a ruthlessly aggressive intelligence agency as part of the international cold war."[13]

In 1965 the CCF was renamed Forum World Features and purchased by Kern House Enterprises—a CIA front directed by Mockingbird John Hay Whitney, publisher of the *International Herald Tribune* and formerly ambassador to England.[14]

Without a rumble, even a quiver, the cold war propaganda machine rolled into the book publishing business. Deals were struck with a host of writers, commercial publishers and distributors. The CIA, in collaboration with the USIA, financed the publication of well over a thousand books of anti-Soviet propaganda by 1967.

The CIA publication list included *The Communist Front* and *Political Warfare* by James D. Atkinson, *In Pursuit of World Order* by Richard N. Gardner and *The Dynamics of Soviet Society* by Walt Rostow. Langley also financed the worldwide distribution of an animated version of George Orwell's *Animal Farm.*[15]

The book business still pumps out radically "conservative" propaganda for mass consumption. In an unpublished proposal for a book on the life of Joe Coors, Delaware writer S.T. Shields reports that the brewer determined the economic policy of Ronald Reagan in his first run for the presidency. To hammer out the details of Reagan's economic plank, Coors, who maintained close ties to the intelligence sector, "recruited his friend and financial mentor, University of Chicago economist Milton Friedman, well-known but controversial. Friedman's 1976 Nobel Prize for economics had offended many prior laureates who protested in a letter to the Swedish academy that following the overthrow and assassination of Chilean president Salvador Allendé, Friedman had been invited by the Pinochet-headed junta to help the new regime formulate a conservative economic policy."

With backing from MOCKINGBIRD's Richard Scaife, publisher of the *Pittsburgh Tribune-Review* and a leading financier of Accuracy in Media (AIM, a military-industrial propaganda mill), Joe Coors paid a conservative Erie, Pennsylvania television station, WQLN, to make a ten-part series, *Free to Choose,* starring Friedman and his "monetarist" theories. Widely aired on public television in 1980 and anywhere else its sponsors could find audiences, the series was an effective propaganda tool, convincing millions of Americans that the Reagan economic policies could work. Issued as a book, *Free to Choose* was a non-fiction bestseller.

The building of corporate media empires by the CIA occurred throughout the western hemisphere. In the early 1950s, the CIA gave $7 million to press baron Axel Springer toward the formation of an immense media conglomerate. The Berlin mogul's holdings came to include a daily newspaper with 11 million readers, *Bild Zeitung,* an arch-conservative tabloid spiced with sex and violence, several popular magazines and the Ullstein publishing house. Rudolph Augstein, a competitor, publisher of *Der Spiegel,* laments: "No single man in Germany, before or after Hitler, with the possible exception of Bismarck or the two emperors, has had so much power as Springer."

When the CIA came along, Herr Springer was well known for his liberal views. As he gained power, however, the MOCKINGBIRD publisher espoused increasingly conservative political opinions. Within 20 years his dailies were snatched up by about 35% of the German readership and his Sunday papers exceeded 80% of the market. His star was still rising when he launched an aggressive editorial campaign against German liberals. In the Spring of 1968, students marched against his media monopoly in Hamburg, Berlin and Munich and stormed the editorial offices.

One CIA official told reporter Murray Waas that some at the Agency felt they'd played the role of Dr. Frankenstein: "We had in the long run helped create something that served neither American interests nor West German ones."[16]

By the time MOCKINGBIRD's ties to Springer were exposed, outlays for global propaganda climbed to a full third of the CIA's covert operations budget. Some 3,000 salaried and contract CIA employees were engaged in propaganda efforts. The cost of disinforming the world cost American taxpayers an estimated $265 million a year by 1978, a budget larger than the combined expenditures of Reuters, UPI and the AP news syndicates. In 1977, the *New York Times* ran a front-page story detailing a worldwide propaganda effort, with direct CIA ownership of some 50 newspapers in the U.S. and elsewhere.[17] In 1977, the Copely News Service admitted that it worked closely with the Company—to be sure, 23 employees at Copley alone were full-time employees of the Agency.[18]

And the corporate media was no potted plant in the Agency's secret garden of political subterfuge. One CIA dispatch, dated April 1, 1967, declassified nine years later under FOIA, advised planted "assets" in the media on "Countering Criticism of the Warren Report." Features and book reviews "are particularly appropriate for this purpose," the CIA dispatch observed. Strategies to "answer and refute" critics of the government's investigation of the JFK murder included accusations that they were "financially interested," "hasty and inaccurate in their research," "infatuated with their own theories," and "wedded to theories adopted before the evidence was in," The CIA's mouthpieces in the press were directed to emphasize: "No significant new evidence has emerged," "there is no agreement among the critics," or the ever-popular, "Conspiracy on the large scale often suggested would be impossible to conceal."

Most consumers of "CIA culture" were—and are—widely unaware of the scale the Mockingbirds have granted themselves in the coloring of public opinion. There is no way to gauge the political and cultural damage done by censorship and politically-contrived reporting. But the brute finances of CIA propaganda are another story. Sean Gervasi, a visiting professor of economics at the University of Paris, audited the CIA books in 1978. "Some $270 million, or 60 percent of the sum, is allocatable to covert action support. One-third of the $270 million, or $90 million, could be considered the indirect cost of covert propaganda."

2. Old Boys in the Sauerkraut & Pizza Divisions

But some sensed there was something very, well, odd about the folksy editors over at *Reader's Digest.* For one thing, the magazine appealed to a political fringe group. Throughout the war, the Nazi party made reference to articles in the

Digest because they proved to be stirring propaganda. The *Digest* was often cited in a magazine distributed to American POWs. *Stars & Stripes* reported that Germany's 805th Tank Destroyer Battalion went so far as to blast canisters stuffed full of *Digest* reprints from 105mm cannons at American troops.[19]

On December 2, 1996, *Newsday* staffer Dan Cryer described the crafting of an American end-table fixture and identified the Promethean Rockefeller who dismembered the dream of founder DeWitt Wallace:

> Wallace fashioned the *Digest* into an American original, a mighty instrument for global education and uplift. Meanwhile, his wife, Lila Acheson Wallace, not only stood by her man but periodically stepped inside the organization to wield a stiletto against her "enemies." Alas, the ambitions of the Wallaces were "sabotaged and destroyed." Their magazine was cheapened, their formerly pampered employees fired, and their six billion dollar empire "overrun by salesmen and profiteers." The orchestrator of this outrage was Laurance Rockefeller, a wolf wearing sheep's clothing, who had been brought in by the Wallaces to protect their legacy.

Dr. Goebbels was an avid reader, as he admitted in a January, 1942 journal entry: "*The Reader's Digest* ... has published a sensational article that asserts that the United States in the last analysis is unable to undertake anything against the armed force of the Axis. America's war was a hopeless undertaking and could only result in bleeding the nation white. At last *one voice* in the wilderness."[20]

Stateside, the *Digest* was publicly pullified when a 1944 release from the Field News Syndicate reported that the Air Force distributed the strange little magazine around the word, opened foreign *Digest* editorial offices, even supplied the magazine's paper.

In the Eisenhower decade, a brood of MOCKINGBIRD propagandists contributed regularly to the *Digest,* including Allen Dulles, Carl Rowan, James Burnham, Brian Crozier, Stewart Alsop—a great-nephew of Teddy Roosevelt (who once explained in correspondence to the magazine's readers that in Africa, "female posteriors have the same symbolic significance as bosoms in this country") and Claire Sterling.[21]

"World War III has *begun,*" Henry's Luce's *Life* declared in March, 1947. "It is in the opening skirmish stage already." The issue featured an excerpt of a book by the CIA's James Burnham, who called for the creation of no less than an "American Empire": "*world-dominating* in political power, set up at least in part through coercion (probably including war, but certainly the threat of war) and in which one group of people ... would hold more than its equal share of power."

The same vision was captured a shade more bluntly by Baroness Ella van Heemstra, the mother of Audrey Hepburn, according to Alexander Walker in *Audrey—Her Real Story.* The Baroness opined in a newspaper published by the English Fascist Party that "a new world" should be built on fascist principles.

The presiding power broker at Langley, Allen Dulles, was the source of much of the news gathered in the formative years of the Cold War. His key political operative was Thomas E. Dewey. Allen Dulles and the mob's Meyer Lansky contributed handsomely to Dewey's political campaigns, including his 1948 presidential bid, and his firebrand reactionary protégé, Richard Nixon.[22]

Cap Cities/ABC rose like Mothra from this Republican social cocoon. Dewey's neighbor, newsman Lowell Thomas, purchased a stake to launch the company's direct forerunner, the notorious Resorts International, said to be the corporate front for Meyer Lansky's branch of the Mafia crime family. Another of the original investors was one James Crosby, who donated $100,000 to Nixon's 1968 presidential campaign. In 1965, James Crosby's Mary Carter Paint Company purchased the Paradise Island resort across the bay from Nassau, and opened a casino through Wallace Groves, founder of the Grand Bahama Port Authority and an "advisor and possible officer" of the CIA, according to an internal "Covert Security Approval" memorandum dated December 30, 1965.[23] The casino was registered in the name of Groves's wife.[24] Crosby hired Ed Cellini, the brother of Dino Cellini, one of Lansky's closest business associates, to manage the casino.[25] In 1968, the company chiselled into casino interests in Atlantic City. Police in New Jersey attempted, without success, to block the issuance of a gambling license to the company, basing their opposition on its Mafia ties.

In 1954, this same circle of investors, all Catholics, founded Cap Cities. The company's chief counsel was OSS veteran William Casey, who clung to his shares by concealing them in a blind trust even after he was appointed CIA director by Ronald Reagan in 1981.[26]

"Black Radio" was the phrase CIA critic David Wise coined in *The Invisible Government* to describe the CIA's intertwining interests in the emergence of the transistor radio with the entrepreneurs who took to the airwaves. "Daily, East and West beam hundreds of propaganda broadcasts at each other in an unrelenting babble of competition for the minds of their listeners. The low-price transistor has given the hidden war a new importance."[27] By 1958, the UPI could report: "A second mysterious Arab radio station went on the air yesterday calling itself the 'Voice of Justice' and claiming to be broadcasting from Syria.

Earlier, the 'Voice of Iraq' went on the air with attacks against the Iraqi revolutionary government. The 'Voice of Justice' called Kruschev the 'Hangman of Hungary.'"[28]

On the domestic front, a lasting relationship was struck between the CIA and William Paley, a wartime colonel and the founder of CBS. A staunch believer in "all forms of propaganda" to foster loyalty to the military, Paley hired CIA agents to work undercover at the behest of his close friend Allen Dulles. Paley's designated liaison in dealings with the CIA was Sig Mickelson, president of CBS News from 1954 to 1961.[29] Mickelson was also the reigning official at Radio Free Europe and Radio Liberty in the 1970s.

The domestic counterpart to these bulwarks of conservative propaganda was the Crusade for Freedom, a lavishly-funded public relations effort employing media celebrities to weave a spell of Cold War hysteria. Another was the so-called National Committee for a Free Europe, directed by MOCKINGBIRD'S Allen Dulles, "Wild Bill" Donovan, Henry Luce, C.D. Jackson and *Reader's Digest* editor Eugene Lyons. Both organizations martinized CIA funds to finance the emigration of European Nazis to the U.S. Ultimately, some 90% of the Crusade's funding came from Langley, passing briefly through the accounts of RCA among other major corporations, and such well-heeled charitable fronts as the Carnegie Fund and Ford Foundation.[30]

The ratings for the most popular political radio personalities of 1950 were a barometer of the political climate[31]:

COMMENTATOR	ESTIMATED AUDIENCE	SALARY
Walter Winchell	25 Million	$650,000
Drew Pearson	15 Million	$400,000
Fulton Lewis, Jr.	10 Million	$350,000
Westbrook Pegler	45 Million	$90,000

Of the four, Walter Winchell was the closest to political moderation. Pearson wrote scathing exposés of McCarthy's backstair dealings. But two of the most popular pulpit bullies in America, Nazi agents Fulton Lewis and Westbrook Pegler, pandered to McCarthy, voluntarily slanted news stories for him and ignored unfavorable press reports to enhance the senator's public image.[32]

Another political discussion program, Longine's *Chronoscope*, aired from 1950 to 1955 on television stations with a CBS franchise. *Chronoscope* borrowed from the news magazine format. Interviewers (or "co-editors") with granitic foreheads steered the discussion along, including William Bradford Huie, publisher and editor of the ultra-right *American Mercury* magazine; Henry Hazlitt, a political economist and contributing editor of *Newsweek*, the publisher of *Freeman* magazine; and Larry Lesueur, a reporter for CBS News. Guests on *Chronoscope* included:

Adm. William H. P. Blandy (June 11, 1951): Former Commander-in-Chief of the Atlantic Fleet, oversaw the nuking of the Bikini Atoll.

Paul G. Hoffman (July 30, 1951): President of the Ford Foundation, a funding source for the Nazi migration from Germany.

William C. Bullitt (September 24, 1951): The pro-fascist former U.S. Ambassador to the Soviet Union and France.

Brig. Gen. Bonner F. Fellers (October 3, 1951): Strategist and psychological warfare expert.

Lt. Gen. Albert C. Wedemeyer-Weidenbach (June 18, 1952): National chairman, Citizens for Taft Committee, director of the U.S. Liberty Lobby, Nazi operative.

Senator Joseph R. McCarthy (R-WI) (June 25, 1952).

Robert Morris (July 2, 1952:): Special counsel, "Senate Internal Security Subcommittee," otherwise known as the McCarran Committee.

Thomas E. Dewey (October 15, 1952): Former Governor of New York with hidden ties to the Mafia, and 1948 Republican nominee for President. A founding investor in Cap Cities.[33]

Listen to the MOCKINGBIRD

The technology of early radio leap-frogged with the reverse engineering of sound equipment designed by the Nazis. In 1945, Col. John T. Mullin of the U.S. Signal Corps, assigned to a team investigating German electronics, was informed by a British officer of a tape-recorder discovered at a Frankfort, Germany radio station with unprecedented musical quality. The "Magnetophone" audio tape recorder/player was a vast improvement over the then current American counterpart. Professor Marvin Bensman, a historian at the University of Memphis, notes that the machine used "plastic tape impregnated or coated with iron oxide and the employment of a very high frequency mixed with the audio signal to provide 'bias.'"

"Hi-Fi" was born in Hitler's Germany.

As Dr. Bensman fine-tunes early radio history ...

The first two machines acquired were turned over to the Signal Corps and Col. Mullin disassembled two other machines and shipped them to his home in San Francisco. In 1946, Mullin re-wired and reassembled the Magnetophone machines and went into a partnership with Bill Palmer for movie sound-track work, using those machines and the 50 reels of tape he had acquired. In October of 1946, Mullin and his partner Palmer attended the annual convention of the Society of Motion Picture Engineers. He demonstrated the machine to the sound heads of MGM, 20th Century Fox and the chief engineer of Altec Lansing. Mr. Mullin was then invited to an Institute of Radio Engineers meeting in May of 1947 to demonstrate the German Magnetophone. It was there employees of Ampex saw and heard the tape recorder. Shortly thereafter, Ampex began its own developmental project.

In 1947, the technical staff of the Bing Crosby Show on ABC arranged to have Mullin re-record original disk recordings of the Bing Crosby Show on ABC onto tape and then edit them. Crosby had been with NBC until 1944, doing the Kraft Music Hall live but did not like the regimen imposed by live shows.

Since NBC would not permit recorded programs, Crosby took a year off and returned on the newly formed ABC network when his new sponsor, Philco, and ABC agreed to let him record on electrical transcriptions as long as his ratings did not fall below a certain mark.... In July of 1947, after the initial demonstration of editing, John Mullin was invited to give a demonstration of his equipment for Bing Crosby's producers by taping live side-by-side with transcription equipment the first show for the 1947–48 season in August at the ABC-NBC studios in Hollywood.

Bing Crosby Enterprises then negotiated financing for Ampex for exclusive distribution rights and Mullin was employed to record the Crosby show on his original German equipment until the Ampex machines would become available.

With the original German tape-recorders and 50 rolls of BASF tape, Mullin's first recorded demonstration show of August, 1947, was broadcast over ABC on October 1, 1947. In April of 1948, Alexander Poniatov and his team of engineers at Ampex in Redwood City, CA, introduced the first commercial audio tape recorder based on the Magnetaphone as Ampex Model 200. The first two, serial numbers 1 and 2, were initially presented to John Mullin and numbers 3–12 went into service at ABC. To meet the contract requirements, Mullin gave his machines to ABC and later received Nos. 13–14 for his contribution. Mullin joined Bing Crosby Enterprises in 1948 and recorded his shows and others at ABC until 1951. Bing Crosby Enterprises, as the exclusive distributor for Ampex products, sold hundreds of recorders to radio stations and master recording studios.

> In 1951, Mullin and other engineers were spun off as the Bing Crosby Electronic Division to handle development of audio instrumentation and video recording. In 1956, the Electronic Division became the Minicom Division of 3M where Mullin served as head of engineering and Professional Recorder Development Manager until his retirement. [34]

The propagandists at Langley's House of Secrets proceeded to shape collective opinion with invisible chisels. The CIA's assimilation of old guard Nazis was overseen by the CIA's Operations Coordination Board, directed by Mockingbird C.D. Jackson. During World War II, Jackson had represented the Office of War Information, served as deputy chief, Psychological Warfare Branch of the Allied Forces HQ, 1943, and deputy chief, Psychological Warfare Division, Supreme HQ, Expeditionary Force, 1944–45. Jackson was also a former executive of *Time* magazine and Eisenhower's special assistant for Cold War strategy. In 1954, he was succeeded by the ubiquitous Nelson Rockefeller, who quit a year later, repulsed, he sneered, by the administration's political infighting.

Vice President Nixon succeeded Rockefeller as key Cold War strategist. "Nixon," writes John Loftus, at one time an attorney for the Justice Department's Office of Special Investigations, took "a small boy's delight in the arcane tools of the intelligence craft—the hidden microphones, the 'black' propaganda." Nixon especially enjoyed his visit to a Virginia training camp to observe Nazis in the "special forces" learning the arts of "spycraft" he so admired.[35]

One of the fugitives recruited by the American intelligence establishment was heroin smuggler Hubert von Blücher, the son of a German ambassador. Hubert often bragged that he'd been trained by the Abwehr, the German military intelligence division, while still a civilian in his twenties. He served in a reconnaissance unit of the German Army's 2nd Battalion until forced out for medical reasons in 1944. He worked briefly as an assistant director for Berlin Film on a movie entitled *One Day,* and finished out the war flying with the Luftwaffe—not to engage the enemy, but to smuggle Nazi gold bullion out of the country.[36] In 1948, he flew the coop to Argentina. Posing as a photographer, he immediately paid court to Eva Peron, presenting her with an invaluable Gobelin tapestry (doubtless a sample from the wealth of artifacts confiscated by SS from their victims). Hubert then met with Martin Bormann at Argentina's Hotel Plaza and turned over German marks amounting to $80 million. He later told investigators the loot financed the formation of the National Socialist Party in Argentina.

Three years later Hubert migrated to *El Norte.* The Nazi landed a position with the Color Corporation of America in California, and eked out a living writing scripts for Hollywood's thriving movie industry. His voice graces a film set in the Amazon, produced by Walt Disney. In 1951 he returned to Buenos Aires, then Düsseldorf, West Germany. He established a firm that developed not movie scripts, but anti-chemical warfare agents for the German government.[37] At the stately *Industrie* Club in Düsseldorf in 1982, Von Blücher crowed to journalists: "I am chief share-holder of Pan American Airways. I am the best friend of Howard Hughes. The Beach Hotel in Las Vegas is 45 percent financed by *me.* I am thus the biggest financier ever to appear in the *Arabian Nights* tales dreamed up by these people over their second bottle of brandy."[38]

Not exactly. Two of the biggest financiers to stumble from the drunken dreams of world-moving affluence were, in their time, Moses Annenberg, publisher of *The Philadelphia Inquirer,* and his son Walter, the CIA/mob-anchored publisher of the *TV Guide.* Like most American high-rollers, Annenberg lived a double life. Moses, his father, was a scion of the Capone mob. Both Moses and Walter were indicted in 1939 for tax evasions totalling many millions of dollars—the biggest case in the history of the Justice Department. Moses pled guilty and agreed to pay the government $8 million and settle $9 million in assorted tax claims, penalties and interest debts. Moses received a three-year sentence. He died in Lewisburg Penitentiary. Johnny Rosselli, years before he was an intelligence asset, worked the gambling wire service operated by Annenberg, and remained in Hollywood, mingling with the most illustrious names in the business, after Moses died.

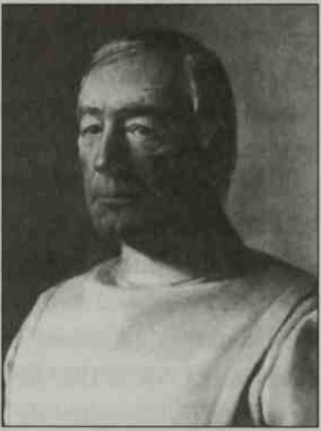

The Imperious Walter Annenberg, by Andrew Wyeth.

He once told another California Mafioso, Jimmy Fratianno: "I knew half the people in this town on a first-name basis. Jack Warner, Harry Cohn, Clark Gable, George Raft, Jean Harlow, Gary Cooper, I knew them all and enjoyed their company."[39]

Walter Annenberg, the *TV Guide* magnate, rose to the loftiest ranks of the Republican Party. On the campaign trail in April, 1988, George Bush flew into Los Angeles to woo Reagan's "kitchen cabinet." "This is the topping on the cake," Bush's regional campaign director told the *Los Angeles Times.* The Bush team met at Annenberg's plush Rancho Mirage estate at Sunnylands, California.

It was at the Annenberg mansion that Nixon's cabinet was chosen, and the state's social and contributor registers built over a quarter-century of state political dominance by Ronald Reagan, whose acting career was greatly enhanced by Operation MOCKINGBIRD.

Another trans-Atlantic student of Goebbels was Liz Noelle-Neumann-Maier-Leibnitz, whose presence as a visiting scholar at the University of Chicago caused a furor on campus in 1991 when her Nazi past was aired in the conservative Jewish quarterly *Commentary.*[40] At the outbreak of WWII, Noelle—a "visiting" scholar since 1978—claimed in her 1940 dissertation that Jews, "who have monopolized a large part of America's intellectual life, have concentrated their demagogic capacities on anti-German agitation.... the treatment of the Jews in Germany is portrayed by the American press in a completely distorted manner."

The dissertation was passed off in the U.S. under the title *The Spiral of Silence* as a contemporary study of "bandwagon" theory—based largely on the laboratory experiments of Solomon Asch, a social scientist who posited that people will often revise their own perceptions to agree with status quo opinions. "Mobs," Noelle claims, "are typically aroused by instinctive reactions.... It is on this basis that the Nazi minister of propaganda Goebbels was able to mobilize a full stadium with the rallying call, 'Do you want to have Total War?'"

In the 1930s, she'd been an activist and Hitler Youth leader. Noelle ran a series of Nazi student organizations, managed to survive arrest by the Army's Counter-Intelligence Corps in 1947 for her wartime propaganda efforts, and founded a public opinion polling agency, the *Institut fuer Demoskopie.* As late as 1991, a poll conducted by the agency asked Germans whether the Jews have "too much influence in this country."

She went on to become an adviser to Helmut Kohl and the 1990 recipient of the Helen Dinerman Award for "outstanding contributions of scholarship" to the World Association for Public Opinion Research.

In 1949, MOCKINGBIRD's Phil Graham and John Hayes, vice president of the *Post's* electronic media division, bought into CBS radio, an arrangement approved by FCC chairman Wayne Coy. It was Coy who negotiated the establishment of the CIA-anchored Radio Free Europe in Germany earlier in the year. Walter Cronkite, a former military intelligence officer, and in the postwar period UPI's Moscow correspondent, was lured to CBS by Phil Graham.[41]

The script for the charade of the CIA's propaganda war was written in 1955 by David Sarnoff, RCA's chairman of the board. Media historian Shawn Parry-Giles writes in the *Western Journal of Communication* that the 42-page plan, entitled "Program for a Political Offensive Against World Communism," recommended: "America's propaganda could be proliferated overseas via television and other media sources. Sarnoff argued that 'no means of communication should be ignored in America's propaganda efforts,' including official and private channels. Sarnoff's underlying assumption was that the 'best and surest way to prevent a Hot War [was] to win the Cold War,' [with] propaganda as the primary 'weapon.'"[42]

Television presented the intelligence world with unprecedented potential for propagandizing, even prying, in the age of Big Brother.

George Orwell glimpsed the possibilities when he installed omniscient surveillance technology in *1948,* a dystopian novel re-christened *1984* for the first edition published in the U.S. by Harcourt, Brace.

Operation Octopus was in full swing by 1948, a surveillance program that turned any television set with tubes into a transmitter with a range of 25 miles. Agents of Octopus could pick up audio and visual images with the equipment. Hale Boggs was investigating Operation Octopus at the time of his disappearance in the midst of the Watergate probe.[43]

The idea was revived in a Nixon administration study prepared by its Office of Science and Technology recommending the use of "telescreens" for surveillance purposes. The proposal was discovered by Congressman William Moorhead, who decried the plan to "manufacture and installation of special FM receivers in every home radio and television set, boat and automobile, which could be automatically turned on by the government to contact every citizen, whether awake or asleep." The drawback with existing surveillance devices, administration technocrats complained, was the lack of an essential "wake-up capability."[44]

Orwellian, obviously—but the programming of minds steeped in the "CIA culture" was equally intrusive, if a bit more subtle. A Hydra of private foundations sprang up to finance the propaganda push. One of them, Operations and Policy Research, Inc. (OPR), received hundreds of thousands of dollars from the CIA through private foundations and trusts. OPR research was the basis of a television series broadcast by public television stations in New York and Washington, D.C. in 1964, *Of People and Politics,* a "study" of the American political system in 21 weekly installments.[45]

Meanwhile, in Hollywood, the visual cortex of the Beast, the same CIA/Mafia combination that formed Cap Cities sank its claws into film studios and labor unions. Johnny Rosselli had been pulled out of the Army during the war by a criminal investigation of Chicago mobsters in the film industry. The CIA mob functionary, murdered shortly after his testimony at a closed

Watergate hearing, played sidekick to Harry Cohn, the Columbia Pictures mogul. Cohn visited Italy's Benito Mussolini in 1933, and upon his return to Hollywood remodeled his office after the dictator's.[46] The only honest job his pal Rosselli ever held was assistant purchasing agent (and a secret investor) at Eagle Lion productions, run by Bryan Foy, a former producer for 20th Century Fox. Rosselli, Capone's man in California, passed a fortune in Mafia investments to Cohn.[47]

Other Mafia dons found lifelong friends in Hollywood. Bugsy Siegel pooled gambling investments with Billy Wilkerson, publisher of *Hollywood Reporter.*[48] And in 1952, at MCA, Actors' Guild president Ronald Reagan—a movie idol recruited by MOCKINGBIRD's Crusade for Freedom to raise funds for the resettlement of East European Nazi Quislings in the U.S.—signed a secret waiver of the conflict-of-interest rule with the mob-controlled studio, in effect granting it a labor monopoly on early television programming.[49] In exchange, executives of MCA made Reagan a part owner of the company. The political bonds were tight. MCA Chairman Lew Wasserman was Reagan's agent in Hollywood and the studio's board of directors has been represented by politicians from both parties.

In 1987, historian C. Vann Woodward, writing in the *New York Times,* reported that Reagan "fed the names of suspect people in his organization to the FBI secretly and regularly enough to be assigned 'an informer's code number, T-10.' His FBI file indicates intense collaboration with producers to 'purge' the industry of subversives."[50]

The Mafia's hold on Hollywood periodically burst into headlines with politically-embarrassing results. In December of 1988, the president of MCA's Home Video Division, Eugene Giaquinto, was accused by the FBI of funneling corporate payoffs to Ed "The Conductor" Sciandra, believed to be Giaquinto's uncle and the alleged underboss of Pennsylvania's Buffalino crime family. FBI agents reported in sworn affidavits, based on wiretaps of the company's executive offices, that the money was laundered by North Star Graphics in Clifton, New Jersey, a company that held a $12–15 million a year contract to package MCA video cassettes. The FBI investigation centered on Giaquinto, Martin Bacow, a Hollywood labor consultant, and retired Los Angeles Police Detective John St. John, formerly an icon of the LAPDs organized crime intelligence section. A second connection to the LAPD was Giaquinto's attorney, Richard Crane, former chief of the department's Organized Crime Strike Force. Today, Crane is full or part owner of five gambling casinos in Nevada and Colorado.[51]

The wiretaps led the FBI to a self-described CIA asset, Robert Booth Nichols, a suspect in the murder of journalist Danny Casolaro, found slashed to death with a broken beer bottle in the bathtub of a West Virginia Sheraton hotel in 1991. Nichols, under oath, has described himself as an eccentric entrepreneur and intelligence genius. In March, 1993, in a civil suit waged against the L.A. Police Department, Nichols charged the cops with interfering in a huge overseas arms sale. From the witness stand he waved correspondence on White House stationery and photographs of himself in the company of foreign political and military dignitaries. He informed the jury that he had operated for nearly 20 years in the service of the CIA. The FBI affidavit alleges that during a July 15, 1987 stakeout on Sunset Strip, agents saw Giaquinto, then under investigation, hand a box to Robert Booth Nichols. The affidavit also mentioned that "Nichols may have been associated with the Gambino LCN [*La Cosa Nostra*] family in New York City."

The Justice Department inquiry set out to determine whether Giaquinto, Nichols and others were "buying or selling stocks by the use of manipulative or deceptive practices." In 1988, after Giaquinto resigned from the board of Meridian International Logistics, Inc., a firm controlled by Nichols, he took a sudden "leave of absence" from MCA, never to return.[52]

The name Robert Booth Nichols, reported the *Los Angeles Times* on March 21, 1993, also "surfaced in a House Judiciary Committee report on possible malfeasance in the Justice Department during the Reagan era. The report also linked Nichols to an aborted business venture at the Cabazon Indian Reservation in Indio which, he declared on the witness stand, dealt with the manufacture of machine guns to sell to the Nicaraguan Contras." To underscore his client's credibility,

> Nichols' lawyer introduced in court a flood of paper indicating that he had worked on numerous ventures with prominent individuals. They included Robert Maheu, Howard Hughes' former right-hand man; Michael McManus, an aide to President Reagan; Clint Murchison, then the owner of the Dallas Cowboys, and George Pender, an executive with a worldwide engineering company. Nichols testified about discussions he had with a White House aide on the rebuilding of Lebanon while he was affiliated with Meridian's predecessor, Santa Monica-based First Intercontinental Development Corp., [a firm that] supposedly specialized in secret foreign construction projects for the U.S. government. Nichols also testified that he had no visible income for more than 15 years except for the living expenses he claimed he was receiving from unnamed CIA keepers.[53]

In 1988, the Justice Department assigned a seasoned criminal investigator to the U.S. attorney's office in Los Angeles. A year later he charged Hollywood spell-weaver Joseph Isgro, a record promoter and the executive producer of *Hoffa,* with fraud, among other charges. The trial got underway with the usual courtroom disputes and appeals, then stopped dead. There were no further developments in the case because, without a word of explanation to the press, a prosecutor in the case was quietly suspended in the Summer of 1995 and made the target of a criminal investigation himself. Isgro's attorney, Donald Re, an organized crime specialist, filed for dismissal, protesting that his client had a right to a speedy trial. The government countered that the delays were caused by the prosecutor's suspension. His office was sealed by dictate of the court.

The federal petition also claimed, somewhat lamely, that the probe of the prosecutor's own organized crime activity excluded the possibility of consulting directly with him about the Isgro case.[54] In fact, the Justice Department proved too soaked in its own corrupt practices to try Isgro. Six volumes of testimony from a government witness, Dennis DiRicco, conflicted with statements he'd made at his own trial a year before. Prosecutors withheld DiRicco's testimony from Isgro's defense attorneys. With the trial at an indefinite standoff, Judge James Ideman was forced to grant the motion for dismissal—"with prejudice" against the federal prosecutors for "outrageous government misconduct."[55]

Hollywood still crawls with operatives, not to mention organized crime. When Italian financier Ginacarlo Parretti set out to fund his purchase of MGM in October 1990, the deal was brokered by Joe Kelso, a self-styled financier with reported ties to the CIA (he appears in Oliver North's notebooks), and members of the Knights of Malta, O.S.J. in New York (a fraternal order unrelated to the eleventh-century Knights affiliated with the Vatican).[56]

Fox television has its roots in Metromedia Co., founded by German-born John Kluge, an Army intelligence officer in the Second World War. Kluge bought his first radio station in 1946 and went on to become one of the world's richest man with a personal fortune of $5.6 billion.[57]

In the print media, to quote former *Newsweek* editor Malcolm Muir to Carl Bernstein in 1977: "I do think in those days the CIA kept pretty close touch with *all* responsible reporters."

They continued to "keep in touch," throughout and beyond the Cold War, and so did their publishers. No one in the industry was more comfortable in the world of black bag jobs and foreign intrigues than Franklin Murphy, CEO of Times Mirror Square, the parent of the *Los Angeles Times.* Murphy was also the chancellor of UCLA throughout the 1960s, and he was a director of four multinationals—BankAmerica, Ford Motor Co., Hallmark Cards and Norton Simon, Inc.. He was also the president of the Ahmanson Foundation, chairman of the J. Paul Getty Trust, a trustee of the University of Pennsylvania (like UCLA, a haunt of mind control research in the 1960s) and the Carnegie Institution. There was a decided editorial conflict-of-interest in his ties to the CIA and the Pentagon: The newspaper's ranking executive was a member of the Foreign Intelligence Advisory Board, the Federal Commission on Government Security, and served on the board of consultants of the National War College and the board of visitors of the U.S. Air Force Air University.[57]

The editorial pages were planted with "scholars" picking solemnly through national security issues in the "think tanks," propaganda machines that crank out pre-fab opinions to program public opinion for military-industrial clients. The American Enterprise Institute (AEI), a spook clearing-house, draws heavily on "scholars" from the intelligence pool. The current director of Asian studies at the AEI is James Lilly, a former assistant secretary of defense for security affairs, a veteran of the NSC and director of operations at the CIA with a total of 27 years under his belt. William Colby of the Phoenix Program was "an old friend."

In January 1996, Lilly told a Senate committee: "Journalists, I think, you don't recruit them. We can't do that. They've told us not to do that. But you certainly sit down with *your* journalists, and I've done this and the Station Chief has done it, others have done it—it's a *wonderful* way of finding out what's happening in a country, whether it's Steve Muffson or Patrick Tyler of the *Times* or Debbie Wong of ABC, you've *got* to keep in touch with these people."[59]

At the time of MOCKINGBIRD's conception by Allen Dulles, a bastion of social conditioning and disinformation was set up at Marquette University, the Interuniversity Consortium for Political and Social Research. The Consortium was an appendage of the Institute for Social Research at Michigan University. Early projects were funded by the military, including one Air Force study of the most effective approaches to propagandizing the Soviet Union.[60]

Newsweek, an early MOCKINGBIRD publication, was—and is—on cozy terms with the intelligence sector. In the 1950s, Dulles appointed an agent to deal regularly with the magazine's reporters. Muir declared, "I had a number of friends in the Allen Dulles organization."

The weekly dropped into MOCKINGBIRD's roost in 1961. The magazine was purchased from the Astor Foundation and New York Governor Harriman for a song. David Halberstam called it "one of the great *steals* of contemporary journalism." *Newsweek* was worth an estimated $15 million at the time, but ultimately no more than $75,000 actually changed hands.[61] As it happened, financier Gates W. McGarrah, the grandfather of Dick Helms, the Agency's director in the 60s, sat on the board of directors of the Astor Foundation. The Post's Ben Bradlee had been tipped that the magazine was to be placed on the block by his friend Helms—who'd heard of the sale from his grandfather.[62]

Any illusion that *Newsweek* exercises journalistic independence from the fetters of corporate and governmental influence is easily dispelled by a glance at the boardroom. *Washington Post/Newsweek* director Richard Simmons sits on the board of Union Pacific Railroad. James Burke, a director of IBM and the Prudential Insurance Co., recently sat on the board of *Newsweek's* parent company. In 1985, Cap Cities purchased ABC for $3.5 billion. Eighteen percent of the Cap Cities stock was transferred to the portfolio of Warren Buffett, a major investor in the *Post.* Barbara Scott Preiskel, *Post/Newsweek's* media conglomerate director, has been a director of Textron, General Electric and the Mutual Life Insurance Co.. The *Post* company and Cap Cities are both currently represented by the Wilmer, Cutler and Pickering law firm run by Lloyd Cutler, a Nixon crony, attorney to the Pharmaceutical Manufacturers' Association and the mentor of Clinton appointee Zoé Baird, whose bid to run the Justice Department was spiked by Congress to hoots of indignation over a minor tax violation.[63]

The CIA's infiltration of the media was such a stunning success that the executive branch established a propaganda machine of its own, Operation Candor, based on C.D. Jackson's recommendations for creating a "national will" in support of military objectives, created to perform what James M. Lambie, Jr., special assistant in the White House office, referred to as "a job of persuasion or indoctrination or propaganda." Shawn Parry-Giles, a professor of communications at Monmouth College in Illinois, combed through correspondence archived at the Dwight Eisenhower Library in 1996 and cobbled together the hidden history of a propaganda machine from its inception in the imagination of C.D. Jackson—a well-oiled machine that still thrums softly behind the headlines of the present day:

> [A] primary tactic of Operation Candor involved the domestic news media. A July 8, 1953 White House central files plan advised that the scope of Operation Candor be "extended to include ... support by newspaper and magazine publishers, editors, columnists and writers." In fact, the first initiative of this expansive campaign involved the "immediate exploitation [of] U.S. domestic press, radio, television, and newsreels." In order to achieve such exploitation, Abbott Washburn [deputy director of America's propaganda program at the time] requested that "top opinion molders [be] contacted." Those earmarked for inclusion were the heads of

> national organizations, top journalists, columnists, commentators, educators. To further insure the requisite coverage, the campaign organizers planned a "confidential briefing at [the] White House of top media executives of TV and radio network presidents ... magazine publishers, etc." The media could provide what the organizers of the propaganda campaign refer to as a "multiplying effort" insuring the massive distribution of the administration's message.[64]

The shaping of a "public will" was undertaken by Eisenhower's contacts in the media, among them familiar publishers, advertising executives and network CEOs, including Henry Luce of *Time,* Helen Rogers Reid, owner of the *New York Herald Tribune,* William Robinson, publisher of the *Herald Tribune* and Arthur Sulzberger, publisher of the *New York Times.*"[65]

Over the years, Operation MOCKINGBIRD and its spin-off efforts have left a maze of tracks across the corporate media's Monopoly board. A quarter-century after the program was conceived, Representative Otis Pike (D-NY), chairman of the House Select Committee on Intelligence, pried open the lid on one of Langley's most sensitive black boxes—the takeover of the American press by the virtual government—in public hearings. The committee's findings proved so incendiary that the House voted down its release until the White House could censor it. Pike reports that the CIA's special counsel, outraged by the Pike Committee's to approval of the report, threatened to gutter his career. The counsel told one of Pike's principal investigators: "Pike will pay for this—you wait and see. I'm serious. There will be political retaliation. Any political ambitions in New York that Pike had are through. We will *destroy* him for this."[66] Both Pike and his fellow CIA inquisitor Frank Church were defeated in their bids for re-election, due largely to adverse publicity from MOCKINGBIRD's Op-Ed branch.

And with their defeat a republic rose from the window dressing of the "American Century." Then and now, most consumers of the corporate media were totally unaware of the influence the CIA has on their own beliefs. A network anchorman in time of national crisis is an instrument of psychological warfare in the CIA culture. He is a creature from the national security sector's chamber of horrors. For this reason, consumers of the corporate press have reason to examine their basic beliefs and attitudes about government and life in the parallel universe of these United States.

Notes

1. John Ranelagh, *The Agency—The Rise and Decline of the CIA, New York: Simon and Schuster,* 1986, p. 556.
2. Deborah Davis, *Katherine the Great: Katherine Graham and the Washington Post,* Bethesda, MD: Zenith Press, 1987, p. 138. Before his suicide, Philip Graham had been confined at Chestnut Lodge in Rockville, Maryland, a "private psychiatric hospital"—and a thriving mind control laboratory—immediately before he shot himself in the head. The hospital is staffed by military and CIA doctors, and researchers for the NIMH and the FDA. "In reality," wrote the late political researcher Mae Brussell in her notes, "Chestnut Lodge is a profit-making research prison.... Allen Dulles's son was confined [there] ... CIA personnel were assigned to 'nurse him.' Administrative head of the institution: [Col. Louis McColler] a retired Army colonel."
3. Davis, p. 139.
4. Carl Bernstein, "The CIA and the Media," *Rolling Stone,* October 20, 1977.
5. Daniel Sheehan interview, WBAI-FM, San Francisco, transcript posted to the alt.activism newsgroup, message ID: 1992Nov11. 124208.11887@murdoch.acc. Virginia.edu.
6. CIA Base entry from First Principles, August 1982 number, p. 11.
7. Fitzhugh Green, *American Propaganda Abroad,* New York: Hippocene Books, 1968, pp. 61–70.
8. Davis, p. 234.
9. David Wise and Thomas B. Ross, *The Invisible Government,* New York: Random House, 1964, pp. 325–27.
10. William Blum, *The CIA: A Forgotten History,* London: Zed Books Ltd., 1986, p. 114.
11. "An Insufficiency of Frankness," *Nation,* May 29, 1967, p. 678.
12. Matthew D'Ancona, "Why I am Still Fighting My Cold War," (Irving Kristol interview), *London Times,* April 9, 1993, p. 12.
13. Alexander Werth, "Literary Bay of Pigs," *Nation,* June 5, 1967, p. 678.
14. Philip Agee and Louis Wolf, *Dirty Work: The CIA in Western Europe,* New York: Dorset Press, 1978, p. 206.
15. Blum, pp. 127–28.
16. Murray Waas, "Covert Charge," *Nation,* June 19, 1982, p. 738.
17. Sean Gervasi, "CIA Covert Propaganda Capability," *Covert Action Information Bulletin* (32) Summer 1989, pp. 64–65. Also, "Micaj Sifry amd Robert Friedman, "From CIA Intern to '*The New York Times,*'" *Village Voice,* March 27, 1990, p. 31 on.
18. CIABase entry from *First Principles,* September 1977, p. 9. Also, *Washington Post,* September, 1977, p. 9.

19. George Seldes, *1,000 Americans,* New York: Boni & Gaer, 1947, p. 94.
20. George Seldes, *Never Tire of Protesting,* New York: Lyle Stuart, 1968, p. 91.
21. Fred Landis, "The CIA and Reader's Digest," *Covert Action Information Bulletin* (29) Winter 1988, p. 42.
22. Andy Boehm, "The Seizing of the American Broadcasting Company," *L.A. Weekly,* February 26, 1987.
23. Dan E. Moldea, *Interference: How Organized Crime Influences Profressional Football,* New York: William Morrow, 1989, pp. 129 & 458.
24. Ibid., p. 458.
25. Ibid., p. 177.
26. Boehm.
27. Wise and Ross, p. 313.
28. Ibid., p. 317.
29. Bernstein.
30. John Loftus, *The Belarus Secret,* New York: Alfred A Knopf, 1982, p. 107.
31. George Seldes, *Witness to a Century: Encounters with the Noted, the Notorious, and the Three SOBs,* New York: Ballantine, 1978, p. 363.
32. Ibid.
33. Sarah L. Shamley, compiler, "Television Interviews, 1951–1955: A Catalog of Longine's *Chronoscope* Interviews in the National Archives," National Archives and Record Administration, Washington, D.C., 1990.
34. Marvin Bensman, "A History of Radio Program Collecting," University of Memphis Department of Commuication release.
35. Loftus., p. 132–33.
36. Ian Sayer and Douglas Botting, *Nazi Gold—The Story of the World's Greatest Robbery and its Aftermath,* New York: Congdon & Weed, 1984, pp. 92–93.
37. Ibid., pp. 221–22.
38. Ibid., p. 183.
39. Dan E. Moldea, *Dark Victory: Ronald Reagan, MCA, and the Mob,* New York: Penguin, pp. 84–85.
40. Leo Bogart, "The Pollster & the Nazis," *Commentary,* August, 1991, pp. 43–49.
41. Davis, p. 187–88.
42. Shawn Parry-Giles, "'Camouflaged' Propaganda: The Truman and Eisenhower administrations' covert manipulation of news," *Western Journal of Communication,* Vol. 60: April 1, 1996, p. 146.
43. John Judge interview, *Prevailing Winds Research,* Santa Barbara, CA.
44. David Wise, *The Politics of Lying,* New York: Random House, 1973, p. 186.
45. John S. Friedman, "Public TV's C.I.A. Show," *Nation,* July 19–26, 1980, p. 77.

46. Charles Rappleye and Ed Becker, *All American Mafioso: The Johnny Rosselli Story,* New York: Doubleday, 1991, p. 57. On Rosselli's status in the Mafia pecking order, see Ronald Brownstein, *The Power and the Glitter,* New York: Vintage, 1990, p. 163.
47. Ibid.
48. Ibid., p. 119.
49. C. Vann Woodward, "The President and Us," *New York Times Book Review,* January 11, 1987, p. 28. Reagan held on to the office of Guild president longer than anyone, from 1947 to 1952, and again, 1959–1960. "Under Mr. Reagan's leadership," Woodward noted, "the guild acted in concert with management allied with one union affiliated with the guild to break another and more democratic union also affiliated with it. Mr. Reagan seems to have acted [as a strikebreaker} doing the will of the producers."
50. Ibid.
51. Bob Feldman, "Newsweek Magazine's CIA Connection," *Downtown* (New York weekly), February 17, 1993.
52. "MCA Official Suspected of Funneling Funds to Mafia," *Los Angeles Times,* December 13, 1988. Also, Knoedelseder, Murphy and Soble, "Prosecutor Benched After Getting His Man," *Los Angeles Times,* January 20, 1989. Also, John Emshwiller, "U.S. Probe of Mob Influence in Hollywood is Stalled," *Wall Street Journal,* November 8, 1989. For more on Richard P. Crane, see Daryl Kelley, "Campaign Fund Laundering Probe Started," *Los Angeles Times,* June 23, 1993, p. B-1.
53. Henry Weinstein and Paul Feldman, "Trial Offers Murky Peek into World of Intrigue," *Los Angeles Times,* March 21, 1993, p. A-3.
54. John Emschwiller, "Federal Prosecutor in Los Angeles is Quietly Suspended Amid Probe," *Wall Street Journal,* April 22, 1996, p. B-9.
55. Jube Shiver, Jr., "Judge Abruptly Ends Payola Case Against Five," *Los Angeles Times,* September 5, 1990, p. A-1.
56. Alan Citron and Michale Cieply, "Financing Details Add Bizarre Twist to MGM Saga," *Los Angeles Times,* April 24, 1991, p. D-1.
57. Joe Taylor, "Nation's Richest Man Says He's Just Been Lucky," *Honolulu Advertiser,* October 14, 1990.
58. Myrna Oliver, "Franklin D. Murphy Dies; L.A. Civic, Business Leader," *Los Angeles Times,* June 17, 1994, p. A-1.
59. James Lilly testimony, transcript from the Hearing of the Commission on the Roles and Capabilities of the U.S. Intelligence Community, Room SD-106, Dirkson Senate Office Building, January 19, 1996.
60. Jim DiEugenio, "MOCKINGBIRD: The Next Generation," *Probe: Newsletter of the Citizens for Truth About the Kennedy Assassination,* vol. 3: no. 3, March–April, 1996, p. 13.

61. Feldman.
62. Ibid.
63. On Cutler, Robert N. Winter-Berger, *The Washington Pay-Off: An Insider's View of Corruption in Government,* New Jersey: Lyle Stuart, pp. 213–14. Also, on Baird and Cutler, Russ Baker, "CIA: Out of Control," *Village Voice,* September 10, 1991.
64. Parry-Giles cites *Memorandum on a public information program in support of Operation Candor,* (1953, July), White House Central Files (Confidential File), Box 12, Dwight D. Eisenhower Library, 1–6.
65. Ibid.
66. Agee and Wolf, p. 22. As for Pike's committee, it fell apart, according to Ranelagh: "President Ford paid particular attention to the demands for documents and information made by Pike, bringing in the attorney general on several occasions to advise if the demands should be met. When the attorney general said no, Ford witheld the requested information. The House Select Committee finally imploded with internal rivalries, its unfinished report leaked to the press in January 1976." *The Agency,* p. 595.

Addendum: MOCKINGBIRD UK, the Rise of Margaret Thatcher & the CIA's London Operations

England's answer to Operation MOCKINGBIRD was as ambitious an experiment in social conditioning as the original—and the stench of the CIA rose in England when the can of worms was peeled open by *The New Statesman* in March 1995:

> The political playing field of the postwar world was tipped to the right by the secret support of Whitehall's cold warriors for "politically correct" writers, academics and politicians. And, scandalously, the government is still refusing to reveal the extent of these operations. Key files are held back from the Public Records Office, long after they should have been released under the 30-year rule.
>
> The key agency in all this was the Foreign Office's Information Research Department (IRD), set up in 1948 as a secret anti-Communist propaganda department [with] 400 staff based at Riverwalk House on the South Bank, with an annual budget of £1 million.... It was also involved in various covert operations—attempting to influence the choice of leadership in the former colonial countries, interfering in domestic trade unions and mounting other black propaganda exercises that could in no way be described as anti-Communist.
>
> This continued well into the 1970s. For example, Colin Wallace, the former

British army information officer in Belfast, has told how IRD officers planted anti-IRA stories in the British and foreign press. These were straightforward disinformation, for example claiming that the KGB was running the IRA.

IRD was very much a creature of MI6. Many of its staff were intelligence officers. The last head of IRD was Ray Whitney, who later became a very dry Tory MP. (Within a few months of leaving Whitehall, Whitney was attacking the West's 'sell out to Marxists in southern Africa' in an article in *Free Nation,* an organ of the far-right National Association for Freedom.)

John Ogilvy Rennie, head of IRD from 1953 to 1958, later became head of MI6. IRD operations in Malaya during the crisis of the 1950s were run by Maurice Oldfield, then MI6 station chief in Singapore.

One of the most useful pieces of new evidence about IRD's activities is the recently published autobiography of *Brian Crozier, Free Agent—The Unseen War, 1941–1991.* Crozier, a journalist from the 1940s onwards, during the 1960s ran a London-based news agency, Forum World Features, which was later exposed as a CIA front. In his book, he describes how, after he left the *Economist* in 1964, he was also approached by 'Ronald Franks', an old friend from MI6. After lunch at Frank's club, the Athenaeum, Crozier was taken to MI6's then HQ at Century House.

Crozier: "Franks escorted me to the upper floor, where he introduced me to the head of his department, which dealt with Sino-Soviet questions. This was my first shock. I had met the man, Noel Cunningham (not his real name), several times. That day and on future days, I met a number of people whom I had talked to, in the Travellers and elsewhere, in the belief that they were 'Foreign Office' ... Later on, at Century House, I met a number of non-officials whom I had known for years, whose 'contact' with MI6 was similar to mine. They included academic friends of mine specializing in matters of interest to me, including Vietnam and the Soviet Union." Crozier was hired by MI6 as a part-time consultant for IRD.

IRD's roots lay in the wartime Special Operations Executive (SOE) launched by Winston Churchill to "set Europe ablaze." The great lesson SOE learnt about disinformation was that it worked only if it could be dropped into normally accurate news. Listeners and readers have to believe the output for the carefully placed lie to work. IRD set up a worldwide network of news agencies and radio stations, often connected to apparently independent news media.

One of the first agents recruited by the IRD was Soviet spy Guy Burgess, later fired for drunkenness, but not before he was able to pass on a full account of IRD's operations to Moscow.

Cord Meyer

Family and Personal History: Owned a fortune in sugar interests and real estate. Cord graduated from Yale in December 1942, and joined the Marines with the rank of lieutenant. A Japanese grenade took his sight in one eye while stationed in Guam. (Source: Philip Agee, *Dirty Work*)

In 1945, he attended the charter conference of the United Nations in San Francisco. Two years later he joined the United World Federalists. He was selected one of the ten most outstanding men in America in 1947. (Another was Richard Nixon.) Allen Dulles persuaded him to join the CIA in 1951. Meyer was assigned to the office of the Deputy Director for Plans and reported to Tom Braden (later a "liberal counterbalance" to Pat Buchanon on PBS's *CrossFire*).

Meyer was sent to London in 1973 and ran all CIA operations in Europe.

From Ralph McGehee's *CIABase:*

> **Labor Infiltration:** 1960–69. Cord Meyer's International Organizations Division assisted labor ops via AFL-CIO.
>
> **Funds to European Labor Unions:** CIA opened mail of George Meany, Irving Brown and Jay Lovestone to ensure they were sending CIA funds to European labor contacts.

From Robert Moss, "Arnaud de Borchgrave, Robert Moss and Right-Wing Disinformation," *Covert Action Information Bulletin,* No. 10, pp. 40–41:

> THE CIA & THE RISE OF MARGARET THATCHER
>
> On his return to Britain, Moss became a speech-writer for a then little-known member of Parliament, Margaret Thatcher. Moss [a propagandist on the CIA payroll] wrote her speech attacking the "Sovietization of Britain," which gave Mrs. Thatcher the nickname "the Iron Lady." Moss became the leading light in the Institute for the Study of Conflict, [which] served as a way of bringing CIA journalists and military intelligence officers together.
>
> Moss founded and became the president of a British version of the *Chilean Comando de Accion Gremial,* the National Association of Freedom. According to the *Guardian* (December 21, 1976), Moss organized the NAFF under the banner of halting the "Sovietization" of Britain through the Labour Government and the influence of the trade unions." It was this ISC that issued the disinformation (57 Labour MPs are Marxists, Soviet plan to Communize Britain, etc.) that provided the catalyst for the formation of the NAFF. The leaders of the NAFF then

formed themselves into a Conservative shadow government that is today the Conservative Government.

In 1977, Moss and friends set up a would-be British Intelligence Station for Capitol Hill, a think-tank calling itself the Heritage Foundation....

The New York Times (December 1977) and former FWF writer Russell Warren Howe (*More Magazine,* May 1978) have identified Brian Crozier as a CIA contract agent, and Moss as his protégé. During the time Crozier was working for CIA, he used the journalistic covers of: defense correspondent of the *Daily Telegraph,* director of *Forum World Features,* founder of the Institute for the Study of Conflict, correspondent for *National Review,* publisher of the *London Economist* "Foreign Report," and correspondent for *Soviet Analysis.* As Crozier retired from many of these positions they were all taken over by Moss....

This propaganda was used as cover for two actual crises manufactured at this time—a series of insoluble strikes, and escalating terrorism and counter-terrorism in northern Ireland. From Moss's own handwriting we know that he had two mentors in fomenting these crises, Miles Copeland and Cord Meyer, Jr. Meyer was CIA Station Chief in London at the time and for many years the main figure in charge of the Agency's covert operations; Copeland was formerly head of the Gaming Room on the fourth floor at CIA headquarters, where simulations of strikes were acted out before being implemented in Chile.

NAFF's main activity was to turn strikes from symbolic ritual into covert war. It did so by turning each strike into a traditional testing ground of the ability to resist—not the normal economic demands of unions but "Communist encroachment."

Coordination with military intelligence was facilitated by a leading figure at ISC, Sir Peter Wilkinson who, according to the *Guardian* (July 16, 1976), "was recently the coordinator of intelligence on the Cabinet Office and formerly head of administration at the Ministry of Defense."

Through such contacts Crozier and Moss became instructors in military intelligence training schools.

Brian Crozier's CIA-funded Institute for the Study of Conflict and the British Labor Unions (Source: Philip Agee, *Dirty Work*):

The Institute prepared a special manual on counterinsurgency for the British police and regularly participated in training programs at the National Defense College and the Police College. The Institute's line appears to encourage preemptive surveillance and other measures against a broad range of 'subversives,' a term which could easily include law-abiding trade union militants and anti-establishment intellectuals.

Robert Moss, CIA/NET Propagandist

A sampling of Robert Moss's "conservative" propaganda for National Educational Television (Source NET Programming Press Release): Washington, DC March 17, 1996

> AMERICA THE BANKRUPT?
>
> (Commentary by NET President Paul M. Weyrich on *Dateline: Washington*) During NET's Eighth Wonder program this week, the thorny issue of entitlements was the subject of the entire program. Underwritten by the Vernon K. Krieble Foundation, producer ROBERT MOSS explored the explosive growth of entitlements over the past several decades as part of a three part special entitled "America the Bankrupt?"
>
> Among the issues aired on this special broadcast is how the Social Security Trust Fund is handled. Currently that trust fund has a surplus. But that surplus is not invested on behalf of future recipients of Social Security. Rather, that surplus money is used to offset deficit spending in other federal government programs. Therefore, the so-called Trust Fund simply has some IOU notes from the federal government which may or may not be able to pay up when the time comes.
>
> The way the United States handles Social Security is contrasted with the way the same issue is handled in Chile. In that country, where Social Security has been semi-privatized, real money is put aside and invested on behalf of each individual recipient. Needless to say, Chile's Social Security system is on a much sounder basis than our own.
>
> The issue is very relevant to the moment because, as House Appropriations Committee Chairman Bob Livingston told us on Direct Line last week, great progress has been made in getting the non-entitlement portion of the budget under control. But not a thing has been done about the majority of the budget which consists of entitlements. And the growth of entitlements is what has put this nation on the road to bankruptcy.
>
> President Clinton's own Medicare trustees have told the nation that Medicare needs reformation because it is headed for bankruptcy. Yet, President Clinton has refused to budge on any reformation of the system. He portrays himself as the

savior of Medicare. But in truth it is quite the opposite. His refusal to even meet the Republican reformers half way on the issue is driving this nation ever closer to insolvency. Clinton is practicing politics of the moment, while some Republicans, at least, have sought to put the system back on a sound basis.

The issue of Social Security itself hasn't even been touched yet by either political party. But in a few years those surpluses, which have been used to hide the real size of the federal deficit, will end. At that point, payments to all Social Security recipients will be in grave danger.

Unless this President and the Congress tackle the issue of entitlements, the other cuts they may make in federal spending will be meaningless. In a few short years entitlements will overwhelm the entire federal budget.

The Vernon K. Krieble Foundation, under the able leadership of Helen Fuscuss, has done the nation a great service by putting the issue of entitlements front and center where it ought to be.

Now we can only hope that those in high office who can see beyond the next election will pay attention. Failure to do so will make these United States into a third world style nation in a very few years.

Re: Moss, Crozier and CIA propaganda in Chile (from Donald Freed, *Death in Washington,* Lawrence Hill & Co, 1980, p. 167):

The CSIS [Center for Strategic and International Studies] published ... *The Stability of the Caribbean,* edited by the British journalist Robert Moss. Moss's book was published jointly with the London-based Institute for the Study of Conflict, with financial support from the Tinker Foundation. Contributors to the book included James Theberge, Brian Crozier, head of the institute, and Moss himself, who was identified as the author of "the forthcoming book, *Chile's Marxist Experiment.*

In January 1977, *The Guardian* (London) and the *New York Times* identified *Chile's Marxist Experiment* as one of the propaganda books produced by the CIA. These articles also revealed that the entire second printing of Moss's book had been purchased by the Chilean military junta at a cost of £55,000, to be given away as part of a propaganda package.

VIRTUAL GOVERNMENT

Alien Abduction, Psychic Warfare and Cult Programming

Military-Corporate, Academic and Quasi-Religious Fronts for Mind Control Operations in America

Vipers and Daydreams

He looses his hounds on us
Grants us a grave in the air
plays with his vipers and daydreams
—Paul Celan, "Death Fugue"

Ed Dames, a proprietor of Psi-Tech—a "remote viewing" service in Beverly Hills, California founded by a clique of former intelligence officers—explains to late night radio talk show host Art Bell how the company's sole product—psi—works: "This is a very structured technique, the remote viewer sitting at a desk with a ream of white paper and a pen. Using [remote viewing] protocols, they first perceive a target. They're not told what the target is, only given a random number. Their unconscious minds are taught to do all the work, viewing the target first as sort of a '*thought-ball,*' if you will ...."[1]

"The next stage is sensory perceptions. They elaborate, download and objectify in words and sketches the colors, textures, the smells and taste, the sounds, the temperatures and the dimensions present at the site."

Dames lets on that his psychics constructed clay models of the Unabomber's bombs, "that sort of thing," for a "federal agency." It doesn't come to him that all of this may sound a bit far-fetched, grandiose, the paranormal hard-wired to the trappings of computer science—not to mention blatant disinformation. His firm built clay models when "remote viewing" could, if the "protocols" worked as advertised, have pinpointed the killer's location, supplied the "colors, textures," and so on, of the Unabomber's hutch, even his name. After all, insists Dames, "if the 'target' is a terrorist—Saddam Hussein or Abu Nidal—we go in through the back door. We can be in their minds, in their dreams."

A company brochure reports that Psi-Tech was founded in 1989, employing "a select, technically-qualified group of professional analysts who provide a unique data collection capability not available anywhere else in the world. We are a team of highly-trained remote viewing specialists [who've] developed applied remote viewing into a powerful investigative tool." The FBI and National Security Council have drawn upon the company's services.

Dames delivers a metaphysical Marvel Comics narrative, but assures us this is serious business. During the Gulf Crisis, one Psi-Tech client, "a large company with strategic oil interests in the Mid-East," called on Dames and his telepaths "to provide data and analysis on Saddam himself, his mind (intent, motivation, emotional and behavioral states), to penetrate his war room for information concerning battle plans, operations, force strengths and possible deception schemes, and to provide a six-month general outlook for the Gulf region."

Major Dames claims that human abductees are ferried to Mars for use as slave labor. He has "seen" all of this, of course, by remote viewing "alien" activity. But then, Dames is schooled in intelligence, the former commanding officer of the Army's "Psychic Espionage Unit," a cadré that operated under DIA and Army INSCOM charter.[2]

He is also a chronic confabulator, the chief Plumber of the "Stargate" psychic spying "scandal." He draws his intelligence background from the shadows like the priest's robes Jim Garrison recovered from the closet of David Ferrie. In the past, he acknowledges, "I have been involved in a lot of very, very deep, dark black occult projects." And he admits, "I have never been assigned to a unit that has suffered more ostracism, been looked upon with more *fear.*"

He is on familiar terms with "aliens" and the "occult," but his resumé, published in Psi-Tech sales literature, qualifies him for covert military operations spiked with classified psychotronics:

> Edward Arthur Dames joined the United States Army in 1967, enlisting as a paratrooper at the age of seventeen. After serving one year as an Airborne Infantryman, Mr. Dames transferred to the Army Security Agency, and was assigned to the Far East to support National Security Agency missions in that part of the world. In 1974, Mr. Dames returned home to attend college, quickly earning a four-year scholarship for academic excellence. After three years as an undergraduate at the University of California, Berkeley, where he double-majored in bioelectronics and Chinese, Mr. Dames joined Berkeley's ROTC program, becoming a Distinguished Military Graduate in 1978.
>
> Newly commissioned as a second lieutenant in Military Intelligence, Dames was sent to be trained as a tactical electronic warfare officer and, for three years, was assigned to Germany to intercept and jam Soviet and Czech communications. From there he was recruited by a scientific and technical military intelligence "black unit," ultimately to direct clandestine operations against high-value foreign targets. He remained in deep cover, travelling worldwide under assumed identities....

Dames explains that he served with three "elite units." His familiarity with advanced technology includes highly-advanced espionage hardware, "boxes in the sky that look down and through buildings," precisely the sort used in certain covert operations, and quite possibly in "remote viewing" exercises as well:

> The first [unit], beginning in ... 1980, had me as a targeting officer at the secretary of defense level, at the national agency level. My job there was to choose among America's intelligence collection priorities, mostly—those were weapons of mass destruction—and to select targets, and to engineer penetration missions using any means at my disposal. And *carte blanche,* when it came to funding, orchestrate the successful penetration of those targets—that is, facilities, programs, people, those kinds of things.... I'm talking about intelligence targeting.... They involved boxes in the sky that look down and through buildings, they involved agents underground and training case officers to manage those agents, they involved extremely sophisticated technologies.

But before all of this, in the late 1970s, Dames acknowledges, he served with a unit "associated with the occult. It gave the unit a bad name."[3]

And Dames as well. Wherever one stands in the ESP debate, Psi-Tech was formed in the caul of the intelligence underground's "occult" projects, a world of flying disks, cosmic telepathy, teleportation, out-of-body sojurns and communication with house plants. The "psychic spying" unit, Dames intones with pride (ignoring the compulsory secrecy oath?), has provided services to the CIA, NSA, DIA, DEA, Navy and Air Force under the watch of a board chaired by Army General Stan Hyman, one of several paranormal divisions run by the DIA and the Secretary of the Army, code-named Sun Streak, Grill Flame, Center Lane, Scanate and Stargate.[4]

Dames's allies in the military-metaphysical complex included General Albert Stubblebine, the retired director of Army intelligence (INSCOM), and a Psi-Tech co-founder. Another is David Morehouse, Ph.D, an executive officer of the Second Battalion and deputy of the 82nd Airborne Division until 1994, when he resigned. Morehouse is the author of *Comes the Watcher: The True Story of a Military Psychic Spy,* and *Peace Quest: Visions of Future War,* a glorification of advanced weapons. He is also the producer of a Hanna-Barbara cartoon series, *Peace Force: The Avalon Odyssey,* about aliens defending the galaxy with, again, advanced weapons. Morehouse is also a vice president at Paraview, a television production company with headquarters in Manhattan.[5]

Jim Schnabel, in a feature story about Morehouse commissioned but ultimately rejected by *Esquire,* notes that in the early 1980s the "psychic warrior" was a first lieutenant, [and] served briefly in Panama as the *aide de camp* to Brigadier General Kenneth Leuer. By 1986, Morehouse was a captain in command of a Ranger company. The following year, "apparently thirsting for a sexier assignment, he joined the Army's Intelligence Support Activity (ISA), a hush-hush unit that specialized in quick-reaction intelligence-gathering, covert action, and counter-terrorist missions." At least this is the account pedelled to the public. The ISA is the most secret unit in the Army, and reports of mind control activity have surfaced in connection with it (there is, for instance, a letter to me from a survivor in Atlanta, who reports that the ISA operatives handled her "more gently" than the CIA in a "Manchurian Candidate"-type mind control assignment. She may be disappointed to learn of the CIA watchers who insisted that the ISA was secretly run by the Agency all along, despite the usual denials to Congressional inquiries).

Morehouse is a graduate of the Army's Command and General Staff College. He moved on in 1992 to Fort Bragg—a base of military mind control operations with a long history of participation in projects that would make the Waffen SS pause (such as the Jeffrey MacDonald case, in which the physician's wife and children were butchered after he threatened to turn in members of a mind control cult engaged in heroin smuggling at Fort Bragg, according to his friends and supporters).

The wife of a subordinate, a driver, accused Morehouse at his dishonorable discharge hearing of aggravated sexual harassment. Schnabel writes that Angela Connor (a pseudonym) complained at the tribunal of Morehouse's "strange behavior." She testified that Morehouse slipped into blood-curdling moods. At the dinner table, "he liked to cut her food for her, and 'sometimes asked if he could feed me.'" On a few occasions, he bragged that he could kill her. Once during sex: "He was squeezing my neck with my jugular vein or something and I asked him, 'What are you doing.' He said, 'Oh, I was just rying to find your jugular vein. How does that feel? Do you know how easy it would be for me to *kill* you right now' " He was acting very strange that night and was kind of quiet, too. He kept looking around. I asked him, I said, 'What are you looking for? Why do you keep looking around?" He said, 'I'm looking for a good area, a good set of woods, so I can take you out and tie you up to a tree and murder you.'" A few minutes later, he "started laughing."

Schnabel tracked down witnesses to the sources of claims made in *Psychic Warrior* and found the book to be heavily "fictionalized":

> The book begins with Morehouse, guided by another remote viewer ... psychically visiting a friend who died in a helicopter crash. The anecdote, along with its description of remote viewing as a kind of vivid virtual reality game, is fictional, but it contains a grain of truth: A similar helicopter crash was targeted by Fort Meade remote viewers in the late 1970s. Morehouse presumably heard about the story and decided to make it his own....

> To tag every piece of fiction in the Morehouse book would mean commenting on virtually every page. Indeed, both Mel Riley and Lyn Buchanan remember Morehouse telling them that they were not to worry, the whole thing was going to be a novel anyway. Or perhaps, as Ed Dames says, a screenplay, for there is lengthy screenplayish dialogue throughout, and the entire thing seems calculated to push all the New Age and *X-Files* conspiracy buttons in the Hollywood version of reality, from the repeated appearance of an angel to the cynical falsehood that the DIA was using remote viewers to monitor US troops' chemical weapons exposure in the Gulf War...
>
> As I sifted back and forth through all this garbage the other day, with a borrowed copy of *Psychic Warrior,* the final thing to catch my eye was Morehouse's dedication: "To my darling wife Debbie, whose love has nourished and sustained me for longer than I can remember. We are together eternally." I have no doubt that Americans will buy that, in droves, not only at bookstores but in cinemas. Word on the street is that Sylvester Stallone wants to do the movie. People are talking about a budget of $70 million. I can already see Stallone's head trembling with paranormal effort as he tries to psychically scramble the mind of Saddam Hussein or some unlucky cocaine cartel boss. Perhaps blood will run from Stallone's nose, or his ears. And the audience will gape up at the screen, feeding themselves with popcorn, and somewhere Morehouse will be laughing, all the way to the bank.

Morehouse claims he was drafted as a "psychic spy" after he took a bullet in the head: "The son and grandson of military officers, Morehouse had been a straight-up-and-down soldier on a fast-track career in the elite infantry and had reached the rank of captain when he was hit by a stray bullet during a hush-hush training mission in Jordan. His Rangers helmet saved his life: he was knocked out cold, but the bullet did not enter his skull."

> We are to believe that the injury endowed Morehouse with profound mental capabilities: "He came to, shook his head and carried on with the mock attack. By evening he had a headache. Later that night he awoke to a vision of dark souls wandering through the rocks, and spoke to an angel. He has been plagued with nightmares and spontaneous 'visions' ever since. His soldier's reaction was to tell nobody. He would scream and thrash about on his bed and would wake up on the lawn panting from fights with strange, demonic creatures. It was only after he was posted to a DIA unit dealing with dirty-trick spying that he let slip his torment to its psychiatrist. The psychiatrist seemed more intrigued than alarmed, and within weeks Morehouse found himself recruited to the ranks of the psychic spies."

I Rode a Flying Saucer

> *I get these messages from other planets. I'm apparently some kind of agent from another planet, but I haven't got my orders clearly decoded yet.*
>
> William S. Burroughs

In *Psychic Warrior* there is discussion of the accident, but Schnabel learned that this story, too, is a fantasy. "Morehouse told colleagues about the incident," he found, "but mentioned that it had only given him a headache afterwards. In *Psychic Warrior,* the incident has been transformed into a turning point in Morehouse's life. The trauma from the bullet, we are now told, destabilized his brain and caused him to have a variety of psychic and transcendental experiences, including meetings with an angel."

The occult is a recurring theme in this milieu. "They have no idea what they're dealing with," complains Rod Lewis, a spokesman for the American Federation of Scientists. "Of course, the immediate speculation is that they're dealing with the demonic realm." *Demonic?* "It's a Greek word for 'disembodied intelligence.' Apparently it's something they take very seriously."

But the spirit realm takes a back seat to the technological marvels of the military-intelligence core of virtual government.

One corporation took part in coordination with the CIA, Scientific Applications International Corporation (SAIC), with corporate headquarters in San Diego. SAIC is directed by some of the highest ranking oligarchs of the DoD and intelligence groups: former NSA Director Bobby Ray Inman, former CIA director John Deutch, William Perry, Clinton's secretary of defense from ESL, Inc. (the corporate co-owner of Area 51), Melvin Laird, defense secretary under Nixon, and Donald Kerr, former director of Los Alamos National Laboratory. These men have in common a maudlin interest in advanced technology with military applications, *not* ESP.

The CIA "covets" remote viewing as a source of intelligence, Dames boasts.[6] In real life, the Agency covets his metaphysical cover stories, schizoid tall tales that direct attention from blatant human rights violations. The Taos Hum, he confides, is a 17 hz. "time beacon" that pumps pulses of gravity into space, an invisible lighthouse for time-travelling ETs. Psi-Tech's remote viewers, he says, have located and drawn diagrams of the "alien beacon" of Taos (and all along residents thought it was a classified electromagnetic device attuned to the brain's auditory frequencies). Mars is "super-important"—Psi-Tech's telepaths have supposedly discovered a breed of "alien" from Mars, ferried to earth by wayfarers from a remote civilization known as "The Federation." The time-travelling aliens store their mind control gear in "parking garages" on the moon's surface. Since Psi-Tech has "confirmed" that Bug-Eyes are abducting human beings, out goes the thesis that human scientists are conducting illicit biological experiments and dropping off the subjects with hypnotic/virtual-reality enhanced memories of "aliens" ...

Not to mention mental communication with "aliens" and—many abductees and mind control subjects, even ritual abuse survivors, report it—an awakened "remote viewing" ability. Are they "psychic?" Are "aliens," CIA researchers and cultists somehow stimulating the brain's "third eye?"

They are if the *technology* makes it possible. The mind control fraternity has had devices that broadcast images to the brain for some time, and the linkage of pulsed EM signals with digital "remote viewing" equipment produces this common symptom of "alien" abduction.

Basic components are current in emergent military technology. In England, the Army and RAF are working on a surveillance rig, mentioned briefly in the *Daily Telegraph* on October 9, 1996, that can peer far beyond enemy lines. The surveillance device "uses advances in digital imaging to provide standard and infrared images of the battlefield. It is capable of providing clear pictures from 20 miles and should replace reconnaissance cameras that use film"—and military technology in its class is primitive in comparison with classified exotica. "Remote viewing" devices exist that would make a true "psychic" queasy.

"Oscillatori Telegrafica"

Almost halfway through the Decade of the Brain, an interdisciplinary team of neurobiologists, computer scientists, physicists, and electronics engineers has devised an electronic version of the hippocampus—the brain's center for memory and learning. The research group, led by Theodore Berger, a professor of biomedical engineering at the University of Southern California, first created a computer program whose behavior is identical to the intricate neuronal firings of a rabbit's dentate gyrus, a region of the hippocampus. Next, they hardwired the program into a computer chip.

In principle, we have the ability to create an artificial hippocampus, one that might actually function in a living animal or replace a hippocampus damaged by trauma or disease in a human," explains Berger. Now, using neuron cell cultures, the team is working on ways to connect the electronics to living tissue.

—N. Sankaran, *The Scientist,* June 27, 1994

The paranormal fantasies spun by Dames, a veteran of the CIA's UFO "Working Group," could be interpreted as a blind for illegal mind control experimentation and the harassment of subjects or anyone falling into disfavor with the intelligence community. In fact, the deep history of Psi-Tech is a story of a much larger movement, one that thrives on the spread of religious programming, "alien" invasions and other forms of irrational belief. The surface of the underground movement swarms with seemingly delusional quasi-mystical savants. Beneath, a hidden world of terror—with origins in the waste of warstruck Europe and the beating hearts of some of Nazi Germany's most ruthless military scientists. From these cold chambers exploded many of the mysteries that have since riddled the postwar world.

One sector of the virtual government, the mind control and biocybernetics group, was born in academia. The goal of the research: to gain "control of an individual to the point where he will do our bidding against his will and even against such fundamental laws of human nature as self-preservation."[7]

The Agency's scientific contracts were first handed around by Barnaby Keeney, president of Brown University. In 1951, Keeney took a sabbatical to design a CIA trainee program and a system of fronts to finance covert operations. In 1962 he was named chairman of the Human Ecology Fund, the financial hub of MK-ULTRA.[8]

From "The Modern Era," a chronology of Brown University presidents issued by the school's public relations department:

> Brown President Barnaby C. Keeney was [an] "insider": He had joined the faculty in 1946 as assistant professor of medieval history, then became dean of the Graduate School in 1949 and dean of the College in 1953. But Keeney, a much-decorated combat veteran, [was] blunt and outspoken, and ... ambitious for Brown....
>
> President Barnaby Keeney got the equivalent of a standing ovation at his last Commencement exercises in 1966. The success of the building campaign was a testament to Keeney's skills as a fund-raiser (Wriston said that his "gift for charm-

> ing money from flint-like men of substance ... is awe-inspiring") and to Brown's stature, which made it easier to attract large gifts. Citing its potential to "become one of the most important university centers in the country," the Ford Foundation twice honored Brown with major grants during the Keeney years, the first for $7.5 million and the second for $5 million.... Not all the money went into buildings, of course.... Plans for a medical school began to be discussed, and a six-year program leading to a Master of Medical Science degree was established in 1963. He went on to head the newly established National Endowment for the Humanities....

In *Black Issues in Higher Education* (January 11, 1996), former presidential contender Julian Bond discussed Keeney's role in defusing the civil rights movement—in concert with a covert state agency known as the Sovereignty Commission, a coalition of spies that kept files on thousands of civil rights activists—sweeping through Tougaloo College in Mississippi, an African-American academic sanctuary, in the mid-1960s:

> Tougaloo was a movement center ... a safe haven that housed an interracial faculty.... Brown and Tougaloo had a cooperative arrangement which proved profitable for the small Mississippi school, securing support from Northern philanthropists. But Brown could not tolerate Tougaloo's involvement in the civil rights movement. Brown's president, Barnaby Keeney, managed to arrange the firing of Tougaloo President Daniel Beittel, who had encouraged students to take an interest in the world beyond their campus. Keeney also ended Tougaloo's association with a movement-inspired literacy project and its involvement in Mississippi's anti-poverty agency, which had long been a thorn in the side of the state's congressional delegation and local white leadership. The Brown president was also on the Central Intelligence Agency payroll, [and] the CIA connection is illustrative of the tangled web of government/academic/philanthropic connections and the Black struggle which remain largely unexplored today.

The newly-christened mind control initiative tended to attract academics of Keeney's caliber (and bigoted sensibilities, a reminder that one of four Nazi doctors participating in terminal experiments in the concentration camps hailed from leading universities).

The prospects for electronic control of the brain were explored in the laboratory sixty years ago, according to *Popular Electronics* (July, 1973), with the invention of a crude "brain-wave detector." In the 1930s, Professor F.

Cazzamalli published a series of papers on "radiations from the mind." Dr. Cazzamalli situated his subjects in a shielded room and shot VHF radio waves through their heads. He claimed to have picked up 'beat frequencies' using an untuned receiver equipped with a diode tube, a fixed capacitor, an antennae and a sensitive light-beam galvanometer: "He told an astounded world that his subjects would hallucinate when under the influence of his 'oscillatori telegrafica.'"

Tom Jaski, a highly-respected engineer of the 1930s, duplicated Dr. Cazzamalli's experiment with a low-power oscillator sweeping at 300–600 MHz: "His subjects could not see the dial. They were told to sound off as soon as they felt something unusual. At a certain frequency range—varying between 380MHz to 500 MHz—the subjects repeatedly indicated points with exact accuracy in as many as 14 out of 15 trials. At these 'individual' frequencies, the same subjects announced having experienced pulsing sensations in the brain, ringing in the ears and an odd desire to bite the experimenters."

Forty years later, the Department of the Army sanctioned the torture of civilians in a 1972 report entitled *Controlled Offensive Behavior—U.S.S.R.*, a review of Russian scientific literature based upon 500 studies on the biological effects of "Super-high frequency electromagnetic oscillations": "SHF may be used as a technique for altering human behavior. Lethal and non-lethal effects have been shown to exist. In certain non-lethal exposures, definite behavioral changes have occurred. There also appears to be a change in mammals when exposed to SHF in sensitivity to sound, light and olfactory stimuli."

The purpose of invasive electromagnetic brain experimentation, according to the report—which seems on hindsight to have cleared the way for experiments on unconsenting subjects—was perceived by the Pentagon as the creation of "one or more of several possible [mental] states in the conscious or unconscious areas of the brain. The ultimate goal of controlled offensive behavior might well be *the total submission of one's will to some outside force.*"

Two years later, Michael Shapiro, a professor of law at the University of Southern California, reported in the *Southern California Law Review:* "Psychotropic drugs, electrical stimulation of the brain (ESB) by electrodes, psychosurgery and organic conditioning techniques are now available for use by the state in controlling criminal, sick or otherwise aberrant or unwanted behavior."[9]

One 1982 Air Force study mustered then current data on bio-technology and EMR brain experimentation, predicting that "specially generated radiofrequency radiation (RFR) fields may pose powerful and revolutionary military threats. Electroshock therapy indicates the ability of induced electric current to completely interrupt mental functioning for short periods of time ... and to restructure emotional response."

Air Force officials warmed to the idea that "a rapidly scanning RFR system could provide an effective stun or kill capability over a large area," and cooed that low-level radio frequencies could be used to "sensitize large military groups to extremely dispersed amounts of biological or chemical agents to which the unradiated population would be immune."

The mind control syndicate has long been fascinated with the effects of extremely low frequencies (ELF) on human biology. Jack Anderson's column for July 31, 1986 notes: "For years, ELF research suffered under the cloud of 'parapsychology,' into which it was lumped with such cockamamie concepts as time-warp machines and intercontinental mind-reading. Unfortunately for the human race, there's nothing silly about the potential effects of very low-level electromagnetic radiation on the nervous system."

Most studies of mind control focus on experiments conducted 20–40 years ago—as if the CIA abandoned mind machines because a few loose secrets tumbled out in Congressional testimony. The clandestine operations branches are, in fact, very interested in EM brain manipulation. A 30-year lag yawns between declassified projects and the most advanced technology known to the American proletariat.

Contemporary military cybernetics dwarfs Orwell's most totalistic techno-fantasies.

Suddenly, as though machined from thin air, "dual-use" spin-offs from the mind control lab appear in the hands of law enforcement. One such device is the Passive Millimeter Wave Imager, an instrument with a range of 90 feet that can peer into clothing to find a concealed weapon or contraband. Two models of the Imager, a creation of the Millimetrix Corporation of Massachusetts, are under development. The large model, roughly the size of a shoebox, is mounted on a patrol car and pointed at an unsuspecting target. The gadget does not use X-rays; it collects electromagnetic waves emitted by human flesh. Anything that blocks the EM radiation—a pistol or knife—or emits an attenuated signal—a bag of cocaine or plastic explosive—is highlighted on a small screen in the patrol car. Walls do not block the signal.

Headlines like this one from the AP newswire on October 2, 1996 are increasingly common: "The Department of Health and Human Services awarded $1.9 million to the University of Pennsylvania this week to begin clinical trials of imaging processes developed to spot missiles. The federally funded trials will analyze at least 2,000 breast cancer cases, comparing standard mammograms to the digitally-enhanced pictures produced by the new technology."

Readers of *Physical Science Letters* for August 21, 1995 were treated to the latest plan for "a silicon implant with a lot of nerve," concerning the work of Drs. Peter Fromherz and Alfred Stett at the Max Planck Institute of Biochemistry in Munich, Germany. Fromhertz and Stett have developed a silicon chip that directly stimulates a single nerve cell without damaging it. By propagating a voltage pulse from.a tiny spot on the cell membrane, a neuronal impulse can be triggered. Information flow in the opposite direction, from cell to chip, is accomplished using "neuron transistors" which pick up nerve impulses and transform them to electrical impulses on a silicon chip.

Victims of quasi-military EM experimentation report the transmission of crystal clear images and auditory effects.

From the Pentagon's classified psycho-technological arsenal came a "soft kill solution" promoted by Paul Evancoe, formerly deputy director of the State Department's counterterrorism division. The *Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists* reported in March, 1994 that Evancoe is eager to put non-lethals in the hands of SWAT teams and local police departments, although he warns their use could create legal complications: "Several 'disabling technologies' employ high-intensity strobe lights that flash at or near human brain-wave frequency, causing disorientation and nausea." Bystanders, of course, are not immune from the effects of the strobe.

The Yerkes Primate Center at Emory University has long been a busy hive for CIA mind control activity. In its heyday, the center was run by Dr. Geoffrey Bourne.

Bourne's family pedigree, from the notes of late political researcher Mae Brussell: "Trained at Oxford. Long career in intelligence related activities. Peter [his son] spent two years in Vietnam profiling U.S. special forces under stress, then set up counseling programs for turning veterans into Manchurian Candidate-type assassins *á la* John Hinckley. (Califano, partner of E.B. [Edward Bennett] Williams, Hinckley atty. [twice offered the position of CIA director; the mentor of Michael Tigar, an attorney in the Oklahoma City bombing case].)"

Dr. Peter G. Bourne, his son, was brought into the center by his father. Peter was a "special adviser on drug abuse" to the presidential administrations of Nixon, Ford and Carter. Dr. Bourne was forced to resign the office in 1979 when he was caught prescribing Quaalude prescriptions for Carter's staffers.

The timeline resumes: "Bourne met Carter, 1969: Carter, conservative, running for governor. Bourne directed mental health center in Atlanta ghetto. 1971: Asked Carter if he would 'run for president.' ... Bourne goes to Washington to work for Nixon on 'drug abuse' (Rebozo, Hunt, Liddy, Vegas, Sindona, Marcinkus, Nixon, Italian mob). Mary King Bourne, $50,000 for ACTION, a director of Peace Corps. 1977: George Bush CIA director. Grenada, Medical school. 1978: Rep. Leo Ryan went to Guyana.... April, Prime Minister Bishop, elected in Grenada. London Attorney. CIA death plot on Bishop. Geoffrey Bourne, his father: Vice-chancellor, previously primatologist, expert on apes. Studying effects of drugs, sensory deprivation, behavioral modification on apes, surrogates for human beings. Bourne retained his affiliation to Yerkes Division of Pathology and Immunology even after he transferred to St. George's. Bourne views the black population of Caribbean as animals, equivalent to the apes he studied."

In 1978, Peter Bourne was accused by liberal activists in New York with the mystery murder of a physician-activist at the Lincoln Hospital drug detoxification program. The doctor had opposed Nelson Rockefeller's methadone maintenance proposals. Bourne was the last person to see the doctor alive, yet his possible involvement was never investigated. In 1977, Peter Bourne provided debriefing reports to the CIA after a trip to Southeast Asia and Pakistan. Details of the story appeared in the *Chicago Sun-Times* on July 23, 1978.

Peter Bourne ran the psychiatry division at the Grenada medical school at the time of the invasion—as it happens, the hospital was the only building on the island that was bombed (to destroy evidence of mind control experimentation?). Dr. Bourne advised the State Department and CIA at the time. He and Eric Gairy (voodoo practitioner, UFO watcher and petty despot) were close chums.

Press reports of the October, 1983 incursion were heavily censored. The American Air Force killed many of the inmates of the Grenada mental hospital. "It's hard to believe the bombing was accidental, given the technical sophistication of present day military targeting," writes Lenny Lapon, an independent reporter on psychiatric abuses, in *Mass Killers in White Coats:* "The Reagan government then sought $40 million in aid to Grenada—$360 per inhabitant—to rebuild the psychiatric institution. By comparison, the gross national product, counting the value of all goods and services produced in that tiny island country, was only $100 million in 1981, or $850 per person. Was the Grenada 'hospital' the scene of another Jonestown-style mind control experiment?"

Right-wing criminologists Barton Ingraham and Gerald Smith drew a timeline of their own: "The technique employed in electrophysiology in studying the brain of animals and man by stimulating its different areas electrically is nothing new.... [The technique has advanced] during the last twenty years ... as a result of equipment which allows the implantation of electrodes deep in the subcortical regions of the brain and the brain stem by stereotaxic instruments."[10]

The development of implants that interact with the brain and body was already underway in the academic haunts of the microwave mafia by the mid 60s. The Guiness world record for the most implants may go to Terry P., a subject in Toronto, Ontario left permanently disabled by dozens of foreign objects packed into his 42-year-old body. Terry, in a letter to Stone Angels, a Canadian network of mind control survivors, recalls forced psychosurgical vicimization at the age of fourteen:

> The pathology report reveals brain tissue removal. My mother was not informed of this. She was advised prior to the surgery that by 'removing scar tissue' they would lessen seizure disorder. In short, psychiatric brain mutilation was carried out under the guise of treating epilepsy. What I find confusing is the X-rays from Toronto General Hospital and St. Michael's Hospital, which reveal 43 metallic implants. Toronto Epilepsy Association states to my girlfriend that they can find no literature where metallic implants are used in surgical procedure [for] epilepsy.

The *Kugelblitz* Conundrum

It should be evident by now that those who deny that the spacecraft and space people are in our skies are agents of the Anti-Christ.

—George W. Van Tassel

The phenomenon reported is something real and not visionary or fictitious. There are objects approximating the shape of a disc, of such appreciable size as to appear as large as a man-made aircraft.

—Lt General Nathan Twining, Preliminary Report to USAF Commander, Air Materiél Command, Sept 23, 1947

The winged airfoil is not the only aerodynamic design in aviation history. An unpolled number of witnesses have observed flying disks performing wingless acrobatics, but they have not come bolting across time and space to torture humanity with genetic, biological and mind control experiments. The Federation has not arrived bearing brain implants. They are not "alien" in origin.

In 1917, a Dr. Nipher reported that the weight of a substance could be lightened by loading it with a powerful electrostatic charge.[11] One theory advanced by UFOlogists holds that the disks float on this principle—DoD documentation, however, only goes so far as to confirm positively that the EM propulsion has been an interest of the military since WWII.

Twenty years ago, Dr. Mason Rose of the University for Social Research published a monograph on the experiments of Dr. Paul Biefeld, a physicist at the California Institute for Advanced Studies in Pasadena, and his assistant, Thomas Townsend Brown. In 1923, Biefeld found that a high-voltage condensor is drawn to the positive pole when suspended in a gravitational field. The results of the Biefeld study were assigned to Brown, and a series of experiments led him to conclude that the field-propelled condensor opertated best when balanced in a disk-shaped housing. Three years after Biefeld's discovery, Brown published a paper detailing the design characteristics of his flying saucer.[12]

In 1930, he joined the Naval Research Laboratory and served as an officer in the Reserves, rising to Lt. Commander. Ten years later, he was hired as a radar consultant in the advanced design section at Lockheed. Yet he was unable to scare up funding to develop the electrostatic disk drive until 1952, after the Naval Research Labs conducted an exhaustive study of the propulsion system. Brown filed a report in 1956 on the USAF's Project Winterhaven, a joint undertaking of the Air Force and British military establishments to develop the Mach-3 Combat Disk, an aircraft with the classic design characteristics of a UFO.[13] At roughly the same time, he founded the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena (NICAP). His classified experiments continued into the 1970s at the Stanford Research Institute (SRI) (simultaneously the site of "remote viewing" experiments funded by the CIA, and as will become evident, the core of much of the chaos to come), in concert with the University of California at Berkeley and NASA's Ames Research Center.

Since the Biefeld-Brown experiments, the principle of electrogravitic propulsion has haunted the margins of establishment science. Townsend Brown fiddled with it until his death by lung cancer in 1985. Albert Einstein grappled with it.[14] Science fiction writers extrapolated its utilization in a multitude of bizarre forms. Theoretical possibilities gave rise to complex models for quantum EM wormholes, multi-dimensional gravity waves, space-time cross-currents, and some sought to wring from it a demonstration of Einstein's unified field.[15]

As late as 1990, SAIC, the corporate "remote viewing" folk, tinkered with electrogravitic propulsion for space travel on an Air Force contract.[16] A second study was conducted the following year at Phillips Laboratories in New Mexico, also for the Air Force, by Veritay Technology, Inc. entitled "Twenty-First Century Propulsion Concepts."[17]

Nazi scientists built similar electrostatic devices into German military prototypes. It is probably not the sole form of propulsion used in modern disks, but it was, at the very least, built into the Combat-13 and may still be an experimental engineering feature of the ubiquitous airborne vehicles.

Among the most avid American popularizers of Brown's theoretical work is Elizabeth Rauscher, a nuclear scientist and director of the Technic Research Lab in San Leandro, California. Dr. Rauscher is also champion of ELF for military applications. She has experimented with frequencies that induce nausea and play on the emotions. "Give me the money and three months," she boasts, "and I'll be able to affect the behavior of 80 per cent of the people in this town without their knowing it, make them happy (or at least they'll *think* they're happy) or aggressive."[18]

Rauscher appeared recently at a conference on Brown's theories with Harold Puthoff, formerly of the NSA and SRI, a parapsychologist and one of the principal hoaxers behind the promotion of Uri Geller. The ESP experiments at SRI were Puthoff's brainchild, and he pursued his quasi-academic interests with research partner Russell Targ. Both scientists engage in the R&D of advanced technology, while publicly engaged in zany forays on the paranormal. Like most of the merry pranksters of mind control, the SRI experimenters are not the addled occultists they appear. Puthoff designed a tunable laser. Targ is the inventor of a microwave-frequency plasma oscillator and an official of the International Association for Psychotronic Research.[19] As it happens, psychotronic devices that communicate directly with the brain are the hidden thrust of the current mind control program. Many survivors of the experimentation come to realize that psi and out-of-body experiences, like "alien" abductions, are hypnotic cover stories. Subjects are used against their will. They are often tortured in their own homes with advanced non-lethals of the type developed by the CIA's mind control crew.

In *The Search for Superman,* John Wilhelm mentions that Puthoff's psychics were funded by the Naval Electronics Systems Command in San Diego. These days, electronics are the beating heart of mind control because CIA scientists discovered years ago that any breakthroughs they may have enjoyed with hypnosis and drugs they could more easily and dependably reproduce with remote brain technology—and since the subject never lays eyes his tormentors, they need not fear exposure. EM stimulation of the brain and nervous system to control or punish a human guinea-pig is the perfect crime.

It is fitting that General Hans Kammler, the same Nazi who designed the Auschwitz concentration camp, should also have overseen the development of the "foo-fighter"—the predecessor of the flying disk and, later, a preferred kidnap and escape vehicle of the American mind control underground. The infamous Nazi compound and the disk have one thing in common: they are both used to conduct illicit medical experimentation.

Kammler, a protégé of Heinrich Himmler, was the highest ranking officer in Nazi Germany after the ministers in Hitler's cabinet, and he held more authority than any of them. "If Kammler had lived in ancient Egypt," British correspondent Tom Agoston wrote, "snobbish pharoahs, anxious to outshine previous dynasties, would undoubtedly have turned to him to build their pyramids."[20]

Kammler caught the eye of Hitler by pulling off construction projects considered impossible by many ranking Nazi engineers. Auschwitz, a state-of-the-art genocide machine, was his creation. A diplomat stationed in Berlin, shortly before the United States entered the war, described Hans Kammler as "always unpredictable. I have seen him soothe and tame a nervous unruly horse, using a magically gentle touch, and then minutes later order a negligent groom to be brutally horsewhipped."[21] The General was in command of the V-rocket campaign that terrorized London in 1944. He had the run of Germany's entire rocket program, the forerunner of NASA, and constructed the first bomb-proof underground aircraft factory in the world. One of them was the Nordhausen plant in the Harz mountains, a slave labor shop that turned out flying bombs, rockets and Messerschmitt motors.

Albert Speer distrusted and envied the man who built Auschwitz: "Himmler heaped assignments on him and brought him into Hitler's presence at every opportunity. Rumors were afloat that Himmler was trying to build up Kammler to be my successor. I had found Kammler absolutely brilliant, yet cold, a ruthless schemer, a fanatic in pursuit of his goal, as carefully calculating as he was unscrupulous."[22]

When the Reich was pummeled into defeat, Speer, technically the director of all new weapons development, watched the Nazi dream crumble. But work progressed in an underground factory deep within the Thuringian Forest.[23] It is well known that in the final months of WWII, Hitler promised his embattled troops that advanced weapons were on the way to turn the war around. To the Allies the boast seemed a last-ditch propaganda strategy. But the U.S. developed the A-Bomb in short order, and the scientists under Albert Speer were caught out at war's end with much more than a recipe for Buna rubber.

On January 2, 1945, the *New York Herald Tribune* blared: "Now, it seems, the Nazis have thrown something new into the night skies over Germany. It is the weird, mysterious 'Foo Fighter' balls which race alongside the wings of Beaufighters flying intruder missions over Germany. Pilots have been encountering this eerie weapon for more than a month in their night flights."

Most of the records of Nazi military science, advancements in nuclear, aeronautic and electronic warfare were removed to the Bavarian Alps or trashed. But intelligence reports describing a "circular German fighter without wings or rudder" survived, as did records of unusual test flights. One witness to carnage in the sky over Switzerland described "a strange flying machine, hemispherical or at any rate circular in shape." The machine overtook a formation of American airplanes, and "when it passed in front of the formation, it gave off a number of little bluish. clouds of smoke. A moment later the American bombers mysteriously caught fire, exploding in the air, while the German 'rocket' had already disappeared over the horizon."[24]

Renato Vesco, the foremost aerospace engineer in Italy in the 1960s, traced the history of the Nazi flirtation with the flying disk to the U.S.. Albert Speer and the SS Technical General Staff, Vesco learned, had equipped the disks with a "proximate radio interference" capability—the most widely-reported electronic effect in postwar domestic UFO abductions—to disable the sensitive electronics of American night fighters: "Thus a highly original flying machine was born. It was circular and armored, more or less flat and circular, whose principles of operation recalled the well-known aelipile of Hero, which generated a great halo of luminous flames." The "fireballs" reported by Allied pilots over Germany were illuminated by "chemical additives that interrupted the flow of electricity by overionizing the atmosphere in the vicinity of the plane, generally around the wing tips or tail surfaces, subjected the H2S radar on the plane to the action of powerful electrostatic fields."[25]

The unmanned experimental disks were guided by remote television controls designed by *Telefunken,* in coordination with the German Institute for High Frequency Studies and *Blaupunkt.* The micro-television camera fitted by Kammler's technicians to the nose of anti-aircraft rockets was installed on the experimental prototype, which had but to fly within a hundred yards of an Allied bomber to knock out the ignition with a powerful electrostatic surge and send it spinning to earth.

The technology dropped into American hands with the Nazi surrender.

In the Pentagon, Assistant Secretary of War John J. McCloy, formerly a Wall Street attorney, used his authority to intervene in the executions of convicted Nazi war criminals. McCloy arranged to have Klaus Barbie sheltered from prosecution by the 970th Counter-Intelligence Corps at Oberamergau. His interest in the Nazis was obvious: McCloy represented Standard Oil and Chase Manhattan, both high-handed investors in Nazi Germany. Before the war, McCloy had been a legal adviser to I.G. Farben, the German chemical conglomerate that financially hoisted many in the Hitler regime to power and prospered by Jewish slave labor at Auschwitz and elsehwere.[26]

After the fall of Berlin, the Allies launched "Operation Lusty" to gather scientific papers, blueprints and experimental models hidden away in abandoned mines, ancient castles, caves and vaults buried throughout occupied Europe. The confiscation of German scientific files and prototypes was the chore of Allied "T-Forces," OSS and military operatives assisted by "Paperclip" personnel, playing escort to the Nazi thirst for bloodshed. In his review of Nazi technology, Colonel Donald Putt, assistant commanding officer of the Allied Technical Information Service (soon to serve in Operation Paperclip with a promotion to Lt. General), stated in July 1946 that fleeing German scientists had left behind, at Peenemünde, Wiener Neustadt (home of the famed Nazi Foo Fighters) and elsewhere, prototypical marvels of *future* air warfare.[27]

After the occupation, Colonel Putt toured the once-bustling R&D complex at Volkenrode. Kamikazé journalist Tom Bower reported in 1987 that Putt was "amazed." Strolling though the Nazi laboratories, the colonel "realized he was in the midst of [the] *most magnificent and lavish research facility ever constructed.* The sheer abundance and extravagance of the instruments, subsidiary tools and testing equipment were awe-inspiring."

Theodore von Karmen, an American scientific adviser to the Air Force, was also struck by the show of German technical superiority. He was one of a small circle of military officials who, Bower reports, "forged the wartime marriage between the military and the scientists."[28] Von Karmen found employment after the war at Cal Tech, where he worked closely with Jack Parsons, the head of the Agape Lodge of the Ordo Templis Orientis (OTO), the occult lodge in Pasadena.[29]

A publicity release from Kelly Air Force Base touts Karman and Putt as originators of "a program to bring hundreds of Germany's best scientists and technicians to the United States."

Colonel Putt was a founder of the Air Force Scientific and Technical Intelligence Division. He was the deputy commanding general for intelligence in the Air Technical Service after the war. In 1995, the colonel was inducted into the Air Intelligence Agency's "Hall of Honor."[30]

Many were briefed on aspects of the Nazi migration, but two men knew all. The debriefing of Kammler and Speer took place in a pocket of history sealed and stricken from the record by the Pentagon. The fumigators converged on the moment. There survives no record that officials of the U.S. mission ever spoke to Herr Kammler—the man who built Auschwitz and Nordhousen—or even sought him out: an impossible oversight. Four entirely different accounts have been given of his disappearance on April 17, 1945.

Transcripts of the interrogation of Albert Speer by Allied officials are stored at the British Public Record Office. Their release has been *denied until the year 2020,* an exception to the standard 30-year rule.[31] A microfilm copy of the interrogation of Albert Speer is filed at the U.S. National Archives. Speer stubbornly denied knowledge of the Holocaust at Nuremberg, and Hollywood has depicted him as a blushing innocent, but a number of scholars have rejected his disavowals, including Matthias Schmidt in *Albert Speer: The End of a Myth* (1984), and Gitta Sereny in *Albert Speer: His Battle with Truth* (1995). He was denied a position in the postwar West German government because he was considered too tainted.[32]

Speer's memoirs (which briefly mention the development of flying disks) were best-sellers and made him millions.

Another welcome guest of the government was Dr. Hubertus Strughold, the "Father of American Space Medicine." When details of his past were declassified, the blowback was ferocious. On September 24, 1995, the Jewish Telegraphic Agency reported:

> The sadistic Nazi background of a late German scientist has resulted in plans to remove his name from a U.S. Air Force library. In 1993, soon after the scientist's background was first uncovered, his portrait was removed from a mural of medical heroes at Ohio State University.
>
> Scientist Hubertus Strughold, who died in 1986, was secretly brought to the United States in 1945 to work on the space program, even though he was sought for prosecution at Nuremberg. The library at the School of Aerospace Medicine at Brooks Air Force Base in Texas had been named to honor Strughold, who helped develop the pressure suits used by astronauts as well as the U.S. space capsule.
>
> As the head of Nazi Germany's Air Force Institute for Aviation Medicine, Strughold participated in a 1942 conference that discussed "experiments" on human beings. The experiments included subjecting Dachau concentration camp inmates to torture and death.
>
> Strughold had denied approving the experiments and said he learned of them only after World War II.

A Mind Control Octopus

> *Top Gun pilots chased a UFO across Europe to within five miles of the English coast, it was claimed yesterday. A Belgium F-16 Fighter locked onto the craft, but it swerved and vanished after accelerating from 230 mph to 1,700 mph in half a second. More than 13,000 people in three countries reported seeing the UFO in 1990. Now author Derick Sheffield is claiming a cover-up by the Ministry of Defence.*
>
> —The (UK) *Sun,* 4th September 1995

> *On numerous occasions, I was hypnotized to think that the helicopters I was forced to ride in were UFO's....*
>
> —K.S., "Alien" Abductee

Among the first of the technical hunters and gatherers was Major Clay Shaw, OSS, a spy under William Donovan who went on to become general manager of New Orlean's International Trade Mart, an import-export concern with a clutch of European war criminals on the board of directors. Shaw was the wartime *aide de camp* to General Charles Thrasher. After the war he rose to deputy chief of staff at a detainment camp for Nazi POWs. In *The Kennedy Conspiracy,* Paris Flammonde describes a fateful meeting:

> Von Braun first met Clay Shaw in 1945 when he, Walter Dornberger [a Nazi, soon to become the CEO of Bell Helicopter] and about 150 other Nazi rocket scientists abandoned Peneemünde and traveled south to join the American forces in Germany close to the French border. The Nazis were brought to the Deputy Chief of Staff's headquarters where major Clay Shaw maintained their relationship over the years through their mutual connection with the Defense Industrial Security Command, or D.I.S.C., an operational arm of the counterespionage division of the FBI.

Shaw was arrested and tried for complicity in the murder of John Kennedy, acquitted on March 1, 1969, by a grand jury. When Shaw learned he was a suspect in the Garrison investigation, he immediately phoned Fred Lee Crisman, a veteran of Operation Paperclip and a covert contract "security" specialist for the ranking aerospace firms. In 1947, Shaw's contact supposedly found "metal slag" fragments dropped by a UFO over Maurey Island off Tacoma, Washington.[33] Crisman claimed to have given the fragments to two G-2 officers from Wright-

Patterson Air Force Base (a Paperclip stronghold run by General Twining) who'd witnessed the overflight. A few days later, The G-2 officers perished in a plane crash. The ensuing investigation concluded that the plane had been "sabotaged." Ever the good soldier, Crisman steered speculation over motive to the slag. Anthony Kimery, an investigative reporter in Washington, D.C., believes Crisman "knew a lot more about the aircraft [witnesses] saw than he acknowledged—aircraft some intelligence sources believe were hybrids of those designed early that decade by Nazi engineers who were brought to the U.S. under Project Paperclip."

Secret technology and mind control were themes in several lives close to the 1963 coup. Kerry Wendell Thornley, a Marine buddy of Lee Harvey Oswald, has alleged that while on active duty he was subjected to hellish electronic mind control transmissions. He maintains that a device planted without his knowledge in the base of his neck picked up the baleful "voices" of a "Nazi" covert operations unit toying with his head.

Another technological curiosity on the road to Dallas was the saucer found by Guy Banister, the FBI "counterterrorist" for Division Five who lurked at 544 Camp Street, a fierce anti-Communist alleged in conspiracy lore to have run patsy Lee Harvey Oswald through a self-implicating obstacle course on the periphery of the John Kennedy assassination. In 1947, Banister reported the discovery of a "flying disk" in Twin Falls, Idaho, according to a July 11, 1947, Associated Press report. The saucer measured roughly 30.5′ across, and "appeared to have been turned out by a machine," possibly as a prototype.

Suspects in the John Kennedy assassination had a pronounced knack for stumbling onto the "unexplained" flying disks.

It is a commentary on the UFO/mind control/intelligence connection that the counterterrorist unit of the FBI already tied to Shaw and Crisman, Division Five—the Nazi division—also employed Guy Banister, and has been largely responsible for the development of a form of remote brain manipulation known as Ultrasonic Intra-Cerebral Control.[34]

Enter America's imperial clan, the Rockefellers. Laurance, vetted by the U.S. Naval Reserve, rose to the rank of lieutenant commander during the war, assigned to the Bureau of Aeronautics as liaison between the Navy and aircraft production plants—despite huge financial investments in Hitler's Holocaust machine by family-owned businesses, as documented by George Seldes and Charles Higham—who dreamed of transforming the postwar world with advancements in communications, nuclear power, aviation and computers. The defense industry fostered experimentation with new technologies and they intrigued Laurance, especially those with the potential to significantly transform everyday life.[35]

When Hitler's Germany rolled out the armaments to flatten Europe, young Rockefeller launched into an intense study of military aviation. He joined the Institute of Aeronautical Sciences, was a director of Eastern Airlines and a trustee of *Air Affairs,* a quarterly international journal. Laurance and his brother Winthrop organized the Air Youth of America, an aviation training program.[36]

Laurance may have been less visible than his brothers, but he was equally steeped in the sordid world of covert intelligence and propaganda. In the 1950s, he served on a panel that released a report written by Henry Kissinger, *International Security—The Military Aspect,* calling for successive escalations in defense expenditures of $3 billion per anum to 1965. In 1973 he was named a director of *Reader's Digest,* a fount of CIA cold war black propaganda. (To indulge in a bit of necessary guilt by association, Melvin Laird, a *Digest* officer, is also a director of SAIC, the "remote viewing" sponsor.) Rockefeller is a trustee of M.I.T., a director of the Alfred P. Sloan Foundation, Olin Mathieson, and so on.[37]

Renato Vesco traced the immediate postwar development of the Nazi disks to the UK. Vesco, the Italian Werner von Braun, plodded through a detailed investigation of the technology transfer in *Intercept,. but Don't Shoot,* published in 1967. British defense officials, he discovered, hoped to barter advancements in saucer propulsion and design to the United States in exchange for classified nuclear research data. A priority was placed on making the aircraft faster, leading to experimentation with a number of rocket propulsion systems. Wind tunnel tests demonstrated the disks could easily slip through the sound barrier when the friction layer was drawn through a multitude of pinholes punched in the hull. Normally, the layer of air that builds along an aircraft's surface slows it. The air pulling on the craft, otherwise known as the buoyant layer, was eliminated in the saucer design with suction along the entire surface of the vehicle in place of the conventional jet design. The pinholes sucked away the buoyant layer and pumped the air through a jet thruster.

When the war ended, Laurance travelled to Europe, according to Alvin Moscow's martinized Rockefeller biography, "to examine the latest British experiments with *jet propulsion* for military aircraft. He looked into *the technology of the German Rockets* used in the blitz of London."[38] Moscow does not mention a visit to the British Air Force saucer section, but if developments were shared with anyone, it was surely Laurance Rockefeller, the wealthiest and most influential military aerospace scion in the world, gratis the spoils of war.

Laurance was a lavish godfather to UFO organizations that attributed saucer overflights and abductions to "alien" activity.

His business associates are familiar names in the security complex. Columbia, Missouri UFOlogist Val Germann writes in *Big Money and UFOs:*

> In 1947, there was talk of a Congressional investigation of Navy contracts vis-a-vis McDonnell during the period that Laurance was in the Navy. But, that investigation never seemed to get off the ground, no pun intended. Thus Laurance sailed on, later forming a consortium with family friends C. Douglas Dillon and Felix DuPont to make a fortune out of helicopter production during the Korean War. This consortium also owned Nuclear Development Associates, the original power behind civilian nuclear reactors, and a little company called ITEK, which would make the spy cameras for the U-2 and America's spy satellites. The capital for these ventures would come from brother David's Chase Bank, the very center of Rockefeller power.
>
> In 1950 Laurance hired Lewis Strauss, a former Kuhn, Loeb banker who had been an assistant to Herbert Hoover in World War I, an official in the 1930s of the company that later became UniRoyal, and the lawyer/banker who had helped Kodak market Kodachrome and later aided Dr. Land and his Polaroid. Strauss spent World War Two in the Navy and had been made an Admiral by his good friend James V. Forrestal. Funny how things like this worked out.
>
> In any event, in 1950 Strauss was overseeing the Rockefeller Brothers Fund and was heavily connected into the high-tech science world. He left Rockefeller employ to become the chairman of the AEC under Eisenhower, just as Laurance put together a company called United Nuclear which had the inside track on the development of civilian atomic power. Also at this time ITEK was created, begun when a Boston University scientist advised his good friend Laurance Rockefeller that Ike's Administration was going to liquidate Boston University's Physics Research Lab. Laurance bought the thing and put his good scientific friend in charge of it. It made millions out of the U-2 and the Discovery satellites, both of which were promoted relentlessly by Rockefeller operatives, including Nelson, inside the administration.
>
> Later on, Laurance would be a power behind LBJ's administration.

The number of aircraft defense firms swelled with an infusion of funds from Laurance Rockefeller. The most imposing is McDonnell-Douglas, founded in 1930 by a prodigy of aircraft design, James S. McDonnell of St. Louis.[39] McDonnell shares with Laurance Rockefeller the taint of war profiteering. Periodic postwar investigations of his aircraft company by the General

Accounting Office have exposed a deep, chronically over-funded well of fraud.[40] In 1967, the company merged with Douglas Aircraft, the primary subcontractor of Western Electric, an AT&T subsidiary.[41]

However cerebral, James McDonnell had one foot firmly planted in the occult. He was a principal donor to the famed J.B. Rhine psychic research center at Duke University, and supported psychic experimentation at Washington University in St. Louis.[42]

Professor Rhine and his wife Louisa joined the faculty of Duke University in 1927 to explore the paranormal with Dr. William McDougall, chairman of the psychology department. In a few years, according to Parapsychological Institute literature, "Dr. Rhine was conducting the groundbreaking research that demonstrated under rigorous, scientific conditions that certain persons could acquire information without the use of the known senses. He introduced the term extrasensory perception (ESP) to describe this ability and adopted the word parapsychology to distinguish his experimental approach from other methods of psychical research."[43]

Among the key early supporters of the Rhine ESP center was Medtronics, a medical technology firm in Minneapolis. The connection is chilling in the context of forced human experimentation. Bear in mind the horrors of the surgical table described by abductees, encircled by "alien" doctors, when paging through the Medtronics catalog: "The company's neurological business produces implantable systems for spinal cord stimulation and drug delivery.... The Itrel II spinal cord stimulation system is the most advanced and flexible implantable neuro-stimulation device on the market today."

Another financial supporter of the Rhine center was insurance magnate W. Clement Stone, whose name was the very first on Richard Nixon's list of presidential campaign contributors.[44]

The psi theme crops up repeatedly in abductee accounts. Dorothy Burdick, in her self-published study of electronic mind control, *Such Things Are Known* (1982), observed: "Recently, through TV and the news media, there has been an effort toward making parapsychology respectable.... The CIA has a program of 'disinformation' which may be a convenient cover for scientists working on programs which seem to the uninformed to border on the occult, such as bioplasma research and Kirlian photography."[45]

U.S. News & World Report recently featured a report on John Gittinger, a psychologist on a Human Ecology Fund contract, who admits to knowledge of ESP experiments in which subjects were given electric shocks when they responded to questions incorrectly.

The Agency had been interested in parapsychology well before ARTICHOKE, which grew out of the ESP experiments of the late 40s.[46] "Why," researcher Martin Cannon asks, "are paranormal phenomena always linked in governmental studies with mind control research? Why did the CIA study ESP as part of MK-ULTRA, and not as part of a separate program? Why are these two abilities—to read minds, and to commandeer minds—so closely linked?" [47]

TEN STATES WITH THE HIGHEST INCIDENCE OF REPORTED SAUCER SIGHTINGS,
June–July, 1947

STATE	SIGHTINGS	WITNESSES
California	109	465
Washington	83	178
Oregon	54	110
Idaho	43	510
Illinois	40	74
Colorado	36	80
Ohio	29	150
Alabama	28	75
Wisconsin	27	58
Texas	27	50

Source: UFO Information Service

Seymour Hersch, the acclaimed investigative reporter, was the first to expose in the public print classified bioelectromagnetic experimentation. He reported shortly thereafter that he began to receive long letters from subjects alleging to have participated in CIA mind control operations and telepathic links to "aliens."[48]

The paranormal is taken very seriously by many of the cults operating under the aegis of federal intelligence groups. Dr. Corydon Hammond's controversial "Greenbaum Speech" mentions a type of mind control subject called "Thetas," or "psychic killers," though much of his research remains unconfirmed.[49]

One abduction case has been traced by the subject herself directly to CIA operatives crouching behind a thinly-constructed "alien" blind. The woman had several contacts in the intelligence underground. She experienced the first of series of abductions after volunteering at an ESP testing laboratory. The experimenters advised her to join a local UFO organization, as were other test subjects. In the course of her abduction, two of her 'alien' kidnappers made the mistake of speaking to her—in English—and she recognized their voices. They belonged to her acquaintances in the CIA, one of whom had predicted the abduction. She confronted him. He explained that he'd known in advance because he had "ESP."[50]

Another abductee, identifying herself only as C.P., was so tortured by the microwave mafia that she sought asylum at a foreign embassy. Her experience, too, began with academic parapsychology experiments. There was nothing unusual about her life until 1983. C.P. had participated in the teaching of a parapsychology course at a West Berlin community college. Through students, she fell in with a circle of Americans with backgrounds in the intelligence field, among them Peggy Woolsey, former secretary to CIA director Richard Helms. Peggy was garrulous and often dwelt on her life in Iran.

One evening, at Peggy's apartment, C.P. noticed at least an inch of sediment at the bottom of her drink. Peggy explained it away as the residual sludge of "Berlin Water." On another occasion, Peggy took her along on a junket to East Berlin in a car with diplomatic plates. C.P. had crossed the border in the past to only to attend the opera and theater, or purchase books:

> I had the impression that something strange was transpiring. It was during this time that I was, on three occasions, at three different locations, talked to during my sleep by people I was acquainted with. On these occasions I had awakened abruptly during my sleep and became aware of what was transpiring. I went to the U.S. consulate and named names.
>
> After this I was harassed by a man in a white car who would drive by my apartment and when in close proximity, would zap me with an electrical field of some sort. He was very brazen. I would find my body pulsating during my sleep especially at the base of my spine, but my whole body would vibrate as well and I would see flashing lights on my wall. I had to go to the U.S. Consulate several times and they expressed disbelief in what I was saying, rudely stating: "Who would be interested in you—you have no important political or military contacts."
>
> Ultimately I decided to return to the U.S., and I had no idea what would be in store for me. I returned to a living hell and unbelievable torture, abuse and experimentation.
>
> In retrospect, the only conclusion that makes reasonable sense is that I must have exposed a CIA operation. I was then classified as a "write-off" or expendable as a human being. By some unfortunate decision I was designated for a constant monitoring, inhuman method of electronic incarceration utilizing intracerebral microwave induction of voices. This is one of several sadistic approaches they have used to destroy my life. So for 13 years now I have never known one moment of privacy or peace. My entire life has been stolen from me. My apartment serves them as the cage of a guinea pig. [51]

Kathleen S., an abductee in Atlanta, Georgia, described in personal correspondence the interplay of the politics and mind control in the Gingrich State:

"Several years ago, on an Atlanta talk radio station, I heard a very disturbing campaign advertisement. It promoted a candidate for the House of Representatives named Bob Barr. He was touted as the best candidate, since he already had experience in the government *as an employee of the CIA.* I did several double-takes. Did I hear correctly? Yes, he blatantly admitted, as if that made him *more* qualified to be a Georgia representative in D.C. The man won.

"Worse yet, he won AGAIN!"

"I saw the blurb about his background, etc. in the *Chattanooga Times* (November 6, 1996)":

> U.S. HOUSE DISTRICT SEVEN
> **Counties:** Bartow, Carroll, Chattooga, Cobb, Douglas, Floyd, Haralson, Heard, Paulding, Polk, Troup
> BOB BARR
> Hometown: Marietta
> Career: Barr is a lawyer and CIA analyst.
> Previous political involvement: He has served in the U.S. House since 1994.
> On the issues: Barr represents a district that has become increasingly conservative. He voted against the minimum-wage bill, opposes gun control. He's opposed to gay marriages.

"District Seven has a spooky fox guarding an underground, black-marketing hen-house," Kathleen complains.

Her abduction occurred in or near Cobb County.

"Illegal activities are *rampant* in that part of Georgia," she says. "The county owes *its existence* to Lockheed/Martin-Marietta. Lockheed shares boundaries with Dobbins Air Force Base. I was drugged and guided through a 'space travel' scrambling memory on Lockheed grounds at least once. Lockheed and Dobbins AFB are in Cobb County. God help any survivor who begins to break away and contacts Barr's office for *assistance*!"

In the postwar period, universities housed the scientific and propaganda branches of the Pentagon. Harvard, Yale, Cal Tech, MIT, Princeton, UCLA and most other ranking academies in the Western hemisphere played host to the foundations. And the intelligence cells buried within them. From Cambridge, for example, came Ivan Sanderson from the wartime Navy Counter-Intelligence Corps (CIC). Charles Berlitz, co-author of *The Philadelphia Experiment,* was a Yale graduate recruited by the wartime CIC. UFOlogist Jaques Vallee was a student of Allen Hynek (Johns Hopkins, University of Chicago), worked for Shell

Oil and since the 1960s and has been a familiar face at Stanford, where he was engaged in computer projects for the Defense Advance Research Projects Agency (DARPA), the Project Pandora people: developers of direct microwave communication with the brain.

Charles Tart, a subject of the CIA's mind control program, met his wife at Duke's parapsychology lab and went on to become one of the leading authorities around on "ESP." Tart was born in 1937 and reared a Lutheran with an intellectual drive. In Dr. Rhine's lab, Tart, now 22, was given a massive dose of mescaline. At a young age he developed an unquenchable fascination with science, particularly electronics. In high school he obtained a first-class radio telephone license, and silenced his urgings for spirituality with books on the occult. He was admitted to the engineering school at MIT in 1955. There, Tart organized a psychic research club, met some of the leading psychics of the period. His extracurricular interests led him to declare a major in psychology.[52]

The abrupt change in career ambitions was accomplished with the help of Dr. J.B. Rhine. In 1957, the parapsychologist pulled strings and ushered Tart to Duke University. At the parapsychology lab he met Judy Bamberger and married her. He dropped mescaline a few years later.

The experiment was run by Dr. Ivo Kohler, a visiting professor from the University of Vienna who'd tested the hallucinogen on human subjects in Austria since the 1930s. Dr. Kohler visited the lab one afternoon and struck up a conversation with Tart, an aficionado of the British hallucinatorian Aldous Huxley. Dr. Kohler mentioned he'd never given the drug to an American and the curious student volunteered. It so happened that Kohler had a massive dose of pure mescaline sulfate on his person. It tasted like "vomit," Tart recalls.

He attended graduate school at the University of North Carolina in Chapel Hill a few years later, volunteered for experiments with LSD and psilocybin mushrooms funded by a private foundation with CIA moorings. He has since collaborated with CIA hucksters Targ and Puthoff on books and monographs popularizing ESP. Their high-toned theories of "anomalous phenomena" spurn an ambitious year-long Air Force psi research program known as VERITAC (named for the computer that calculated the results). The VERITAC study found any measurable "anomalies" to be "insignificant."

And compared to the EM weapons hidden in the DoD/CIA vault, they truly were: advances in brain research at UCLA were soon to render the quest for psychic abilities obsolete. Dr. Ross Adey, a neuroscientist who'd worked beside the Paperclip Nazis, is currently a brain researcher at Loma Linda University. The *New York Times* reported on January 1, 1973 that Adey had been accused of gross disregard in the testing of animals for NASA. He testified on his own behalf in a federal courthouse—and stated under oath that "the brain is insensitive to pain." Dr. Adey has participated in hundreds of brain experiments involving animals and humans, some funded by the CIA. He has stuffed electrodes deep within cerebral tissue to measure minute electrical impulses.

His early success at inducing calcium efflux in the brain have given rise to the "confusion weaponry" in the military's "non-lethal" arsenal. Adey was among the first scientists recruited by the DoD's Project Pandora, the quest for a psychoactive microwave. His work, researcher Anna Keeler explains, is "precise in inducing specific behavior. He has correlated a wide variety of behavioral states with EEG including emotional states (e.g. stress in hostile questioning) increments of decision-making and conditioning, correct versus incorrect performance etc. and he has [used] electromagnetic fields that look like EEG which have resulted in altered EEG and behavior."

In his own published accounts, Adey has shown it is possible to design a radio frequency carrier modulated at specific brain frequencies. He demonstrated that "if the biological modulation on the carrier frequency is close to frequencies in the natural EEG of the subject, it will reinforce or increase the number of ... the imposed rhythms and modulate behavior."[53] "Modulate" is a roundabout way of discussing the remote control of a human brain.

Paperclip Nazi Herman Schwann conducted similar experiments with microwaves at the University of Pennsylvania. Schwann was able to map out the electrical properties of human tissue stimulated by varying frequencies of microwave emissions.[54] The work continues to the present day, almost always in secrecy, sometimes camouflaged by innocent-sounding titles, like the $30,000 CIA study published in 1976 entitled "Novel Biophysical Information Transfer Mechanisms (NBITM)."

The technology of "biophysical information transfer" is so advanced that it is often passed off as "alien." In a lawsuit filed against the National Security Agency in a Disctrict of Columbia federal courthouse (civil action 92-0449) a private citizen, John St. Clair Akwei, described the ultimate in electronic surveillance, Remote Neural Monitoring (RNM). This device sends coded signals to the brain's auditory cortex, he claims, communicates directly with the brain "to debilitate subjects by stimulating auditory hallucinations characteristic of paranoid schizophrenia. Without contact with the subject, Remote Neural Monitoring can map out electrical activity from the visual cortex of a subject's brain [on] a video monitor. NSA operatives see what the surveillance subject's eyes are seeing. Visual memory can also be seen. RNM can send images direct to the visual cortex, bypassing the eyes and optic nerves. NSA operatives can use this surreptitiously to put images into a surveillance subject's brain while in REM sleep for brain programming purposes."

Hard physics meets the paranormal in telekinesis researcher Dr. Robert G. Jahn, dean emeritus of the Princeton Engineering and Applied Science Department. He is the recipient of an award from the American Society of Engineering Education for an experimental study of high-powered plasma discharges for spacecraft propulsion, a fellow of the American Physical Society and the American Institute of Aeronautics and Astronautics (AIAA), and (recalling the Biefeld-Brown effect) chairman of the AIAA Electric Propulsion Technical Committee. Jahn serves on the NASA Space Science and Technology Advisory Committee. He is also a director of Hercules, Inc. and chairman of the private spaceflight company's technology committee.[55]

The dean's work in spaceship propulsion systems is as futuristic as any fantasy offered by Puthoff's paranormal Pranksters. Jahn's investigation of pulsed electromagnetic gas acceleration, funded by NASA and the Air Force, examined how "high-power electrical discharges can be used to accelerate a variety of working fluids to very high velocities. These intense discharges and the plasma streams they produce are configured into magnetoplasmadynamic (MPD) thrusters which offer a desirable combination of high specific impulse and high thrust density for advanced space propulsion."

High-energy plasma has apparent uses in UFO technology. Connect the Paperclip UFO/CIA mind control dots in this excerpt from Dr. Jahn's resumé:

> ENGINEERING ANOMALIES RESEARCH
>
> **Investigators:** R. G. Jahn and B. J. Dunne
>
> **Support:** The McDonnell Foundation, The Fetzer Institute, Laurance S. Rockefeller, Donald C. Webster, and The Ohrstrom Foundation.
>
> This program addresses the interaction of human operators with low-level information processing devices and systems. This program combines appropriate engineering facilities and techniques with a selection of protocols and insights drawn from modern cognitive science to explore certain aspects of human/machine interactions known to yield anomalous effects currently inexplicable on the basis of established physical concepts and statistical theory.

"Human/machine interaction" on a "cognitive" wavelength is a round-the-block euphemism for mind-linked cybernetics, with "ESP" supposedly acting up as a ghost in the works. Obviously, the ability of a psychic to jerk a molecule—Jahn claims it has been done in his laboratory—pales by comparison.

The hybrid of cybernetics and radio transmitters oscillating on the brain's frequencies has made possible horrific new forms of assault. Why allow this priceless technology to molder around the shop?

Princeton conducted its share of early experiments with psychoactive devices. The hoarding and reclassification of the university's scientific data on infrasound by the Pentagon led Eliot Handelman, a researcher at McGill University, to post his frustration on an academic computer bulletin board: "I'm trying to locate research on the biophysical effects of infrasound," Handleman complained. "A few years ago I collected a series of citations—about 25 from *JASA,* primarily from the late 50s and early 60s. Princeton cataloged several of these but they were all *missing.* It turned out that these papers were reclassified during the 1980s, and my efforts to get them through the DoD met with no success, supposedly because Princeton did not wish to comply with DoD's restricted materials protocol. Can anyone tell me what is so interesting about the biophysical effects of infrasound that merit classification?"[56]

Among the responses: "It's really a very powerful tool for mood manipulation ... you'll feel very giddy, your face will flush red ... if you're drunk you'll become much more drunk ... you'll lose about 20% of your IQ and about 15–20% of your ability to balance yourself ... it makes your chest vibrate ... it makes your eyes shake so much that you can't see clearly anymore."

Like most acoustic weapons, the effects of infrasound vary as a factor of frequency. The military potential is mind-boggling. In 1983, Russian scientists at the Leningrad Institute beamed rats with a scattering of infrasonic frequencies for three hours a day over a period of 45 days. The exposure produced spasms in the main blood vessels, resulting in lesions, especially in the range of 10–15 Hz.[57] The low-frequency, high-decibel sound resonates in body cavities, blurs vision and causes nausea. As the decibels rise, effects range from general discomfort to permanent damage and death.[58]

According to a brochure from a subsidiary of Mankind Research Unlimited (MRU) in Los Altos, California, a CIA proprietary, the company's psychoacoustical infrasound emissions invade the brain cells "*and wipe them clean.*"[59]

The Power

In a 1975 speech, Leonid Brezhnev refers to novel weapons systems "more terrible than anything the world has known."

—James Mills, *The Power*

The Russian and U.S. governments fill the air with low-frequency sound waves meant to control us.

—Steve Carlton, *Sports Illustrated,* April 18, 1994

The work of the German aeronautical scientists was kept under wraps. If anyone knew the background of the UFO sightings of the early 1950s, it was American military personnel drawn into the Operation Overcast and Paperclip Nazi emigration projects. One of them, Brigadier John Samford, a graduate of West Point, was an eager participant. When Colonel Putt filed a memo with the Brigadier, pleading for measures to "improve the morale" of incoming Nazis, Samford tore off a letter to the DoD requesting "Immediate action in this situation." The German scientists, it seems, were a bit down in the mouth. Some of them were even suicidal, Samford lamented. It was the Pentagon's responsibility to make the fugitives comfortable, he pointed out, "if we are to divert the services of valuable scientists from France and Russia to the United States."[60]

Dissolve from Samford's collaboration with "valuable" Nazi scientists to the *London Times,* July 29, 1952:

> AERIAL OBJECTS OVER WASHINGTON AIR FORCE INQUIRY
> The *Times* reported: "a group of unidentified aerial objects [has been] observed on radar screens at Washington National Airport. This is the second time in a week that such objects have been reported in this area." The overflights squeezed the Democratic National Convention from the headlines (and this may well have been the intended aim since the Nazis who migrated to the U.S. were ensconced in the Republican Party). A pilot reported he'd been unable to intercept the "glowing lights" seen near Andrews Air Force Base. (Most residents of Washington chalked it up to experimental aircraft.) So who should step forward to brief the press but John Alexander Samford, fresh from a promotion to director of Air Force intelligence (and four years later to the highest office of the National Security Agency).[61]
>
> Major General Samford, with other officers, discussed the investigation of the reported phenomena for an hour and a half this afternoon and answered innu-

> merable questions. The result was largely "an explanation of an inability to explain," but General Samford did say definitely that Air Force inquiries made since 1947 had revealed "nothing constituting a danger." The radar blips, he said, were probably "phenomena associated with intellectual and scientific interests."

Pentagon spokesmen made no attempt to account for the report of one agitated woman in Oregon, according to *Newsweek* (April 17, 1950), that "she had seen a whole squadron of disks maneuvering in the sky. The hovering UFOs spelled out: P-E-P-S-I.

A detailed accounting was given by radio commentator Henry J. Taylor in a series of broadcasts. Taylor announced that the flying machines were "wonderful news," highly advanced "*secret weapons.*" One of the aircraft was "roughly circular," a variation on the Phantom Jet with engine louvres arrayed across the aircraft's shell. The other vehicles sighted were *saucer-shaped.* The Pentagon, of course, denied the reports.[62]

But the lights of Peenemünde flitted in the sky from Seattle to Washington, D.C.

Pentagon spokesmen smoothed away any exposures of Operation Paperclip, not to mention saucers, for decades. It was therefore inevitable that the very first "investigative" panel assembled in 1953 to investigate UFO sightings was chaired by Dr. Howard P. Robertson, another Princeton physicist—wouldn't you know, the same intelligence officer charged with directing the Consolidated Advance Field Teams (C.A.F.T.s) assigned to locating Nazi Germany's technical secrets after WWII.[63]

Dr. Robertson was also instrumental in the transplanting of Werner von Braun and his fellow Nazi fugitives from Peenemünde to the United States.

For the next 20 years he designed weapons for the CIA and DoD. In the mid-1950s, he jumped ship to the California Institute of Technology and joined the science advisory board of the NSA under Director John Samford.[64] Another scientist from the Robertson Panel, Lloyd Berkner, was a technical adviser to the CIA for 20 years.[65]

J. Allen Hynek, an astronomer, had already found fame as an "authority" on the growing "saucer psychosis." His own 1947 UFO committee probe had, according to Vesco, an unstated objective: "to attribute the sightings either to nonexistent things or to mistakenly identified things that already existed: psychopathic hallucinations, hoaxes, optical illusions, weather balloons, perihelia, lenticular clouds, meteorites, ordinary planes flying at high altitudes ..."[66]

From the Robertson Panel's recommendations came a policy of "debunking" all flying saucer sighting reports: "The 'debunking' aim would result in reduction in public interest in 'flying saucers' which today evoke a strong psychological reaction," the panel concluded. "This education could be accomplished by mass media, [especially] television, motion pictures and popular articles." The panel advised that mental health professionals familiar with mob psychology should design the "education" program. It also recommended that UFO organizations should be *surveilled* "because of their potentially great influence on mass thinking if widespread sightings should occur. The apparent irresponsibility and the possible use of such groups for subversive purposes should be kept in mind."[67]

Ordo Templis Intelligentis

UFO mythology was launched in a big way in the 1950s, wrapped in gaudy pulp covers and flashed on the silver screen. Jack Parsons, the CalTech rocket pioneer and high priest of the Ordo Tempis Orientis Agape Lodge in Pasadena—and one of the first Americans to report sighting a UFO—was addicted to science fiction. He regularly attended meetings of the L.A. Fantasy and Science Fiction Society, where, in 1945, the adept (he took "the Oath of the Anti-Christ" in 1949) met Lt. Commander L. Ron Hubbard, who made "alien" visitations an integral part of a religious doctrine he called Scientology.[68]

The OTO was founded between 1895 and 1900 by a pair of powerful Freemasons, Karl Kellner and Theodor Reuss. Politically, the order was right-wing in the extreme, proposing the creation of a pan-German world based on pagan spiritual beliefs. Kellner died in 1905, and Reuss, a former spy for the Prussian Secret Service, assumed the office of High Caliph. While living in the UK, Reuss spied on German socialist expatriates. In 1912, he made the acquaintance of Aleister Crowley and appointed him head of the OTO's British chapter.[69]

But The Beast's political loyalties have always been an open question. While living in the States, he penned a series of pro-German diatribes for a pair of fascist publications, *The Fatherland* and *The Internationalist*. After the war there were calls for his head. Crowley offered that his pro-German stance was a ruse concocted by MI6, England's military intelligence apparatus. In 1912 he had informed the secret service of his correspondence with Reuss, the German spy. Throughout the 20s and 30s, Crowley gathered intelligence on European Communists, the Nazi movement and Germany's occult lodges.[70]

Crowley died in 1947, willing the copyright for his books and unpublished manuscripts to the OTO and leadership of the order to Karl Germer, otherwise known as Frater Saturnus X., formerly Crowley's Legate in the United States. Germer was born in Germany, served in WWI and was reportedly tossed in prison by the Nazis for his involvement in Freemasonry. (Crowley believed Germer to be a Nazi spy but admitted him to the OTO anyway.) He settled after the war in Dublin, California and died on October 25, 1962 "under horrifying circumstances," according to his wife in a letter to Marcelo Matta, an OTO official in Brazil. She informed him that Germer, on his death bed, had insisted Matta succeed the German as the Outer Head of the occult order.

However, the mantle did not pass to Karl Germer's chosen successor because the CIA orchestrated a coup. But not as one OTO spokesman tells it: "Recently the United States government has legalized our opinion.... [Outer Head Grady McMurty's] leadership of the Ordo Templi Orientis rests on several rather clear letters of authorization from Crowley himself. They met while McMurty was a young First Lieutenant during World War II. He had been admitted to the OTO in 1941 [by] Jack Parsons."[71] In fact, the choice of McMurty was not "clear" at all. Matta's advocates insist that the court decision was based on the perjured testimony of Grand Poo-Bah Grady McMurty and a clutch of attorneys on the CIA dole. And the cult's position is irrelevant since, according to charters signed on March 22, 1946 and April 11, 1946 by Crowley, The Beast had left it to Germer to veto or amend his choice of a successor.

As Matta saw it, no one had a legitimate claim to the title but he. Unfortunately, Herr Germer died during the period the CIA had chosen to move mind control experimentation from academic and military labs into the community. An inner circle of Heironymous scientists experimented on cult devotees, and sometimes collaborated in mass murder to silence the subjects (Jonestown, SLA, Solar Temple). It was a marriage of convenience. Occult societies are secretive. They follow direction. They exist in corners of a society that ignores them.

A number of intelligence agents with occult interests already had their hooks into the OTO. One of them was Gerald Yorke, a veteran British intelligence agent working, an advocate of Matta argues, "with American intelligence in an attempt to absorb the OTO into the ideological warfare network of the political right."[72]

Before the horns of Thelemite succession were bestowed upon Grady McMurty, Yorke the prelate spy "misinterpreted" Germer's will and named Joseph Metzger, a ranking Thelemite (and the son of a former Swiss intelligence chief), to the office of High Caliph. One order adept, Oskar Schlag, was an alleged "psychological warfare" specialist from Israel. Even McMurty (with his degree in political science) was a State Department bureaucrat on the day Herr Germer died.

The coup was sealed while Marcelo Matta, a writer for Brazilian television, fended off operatives of the CIA bent on destroying his sanity and leaving him financially crippled. It was a ritual that subjects of mind control conditioning would come to know well. Strangers approached his friends and filled their ears with lurid stories of debauchery. He was suddenly unable to find work. His mail was opened.

Matta took a job teaching English, studied self-defense.

"He had begun to doubt his sanity," the Matta advocate says. "He constantly suspected people who approached him. He saw in himself all the clinical symptoms of paranoia."

After a few years of harassment and squabbling over the leadership of the OTO, Motta came to the realization that the McMurty junta and "the American 'intelligence' network behind them had a worry, and a pressing one; "Motta's proposed *New Manifesto* [did] not mention ... Grady at all. Since their purpose was to create an American 'intelligence' tool at the expense of a religious organization, it was necessary to either bring Motta to concede Grady further authority or discredit Motta completely."

They did what they wilt. In 1967 Germer's entire occult library and manuscripts were stolen from the home of his widow. Without the royalties these raked in, Mrs. Germer was destitute and literally starved to death.

Matta was cast out of the OTO.

Trouble brewed in the cult's cauldron. At least one Son of Sam killer passed through a deviant offshoot.[73]

The OTO's Solar Lodge in San Bernardino was founded by Maury McCauley, a mortician, on his own property. McCauley was married to Barbara Newman, a former model and the daughter of a retired Air Force colonel from Vandenberg.

The group subscribed to a grim, apocalyptic view of the world precipitated by race wars, and the prophecy made a lasting impression on Charles Manson, who visited the lodge on occasion. In the L.A. underworld, the OTO spin-off was known for indulgence in sadomasochism, drug dealing, blood drinking, sexual child abuse and murder. The Riverside OTO, like the Manson Family, used drugs, sex, psycho-drama and fear to tear down the mind of the initiate and rebuild it according to the desires of the cult's inner-circle.[74]

On the East Coast, a series of murders created an atmosphere of fear in New

York City. Before the world had ever heard of Son of Sam, an obscure Vietnam veteran named David Berkowitz moved into an apartment on Pine Street, a rotting gantlet of hovels in Yonkers. Like much of the bloodshed for which he is known, Berkowitz did not make the decision to live on Pine Street. Key decisions in his life were made by the leaders of a religious group based in Westchester, a hybrid of OTO members and acolytes from the Process Church of the Final Judgment. Members of the cult mingled with others in Manhattan and Brooklyn, and had contact with similar groups across the country. The leader of the Westchester "family" was a real estate attorney with a practice in White Plains. He was active in local politics. Balding, lean with years, the attorney directed Berkowitz and his "brothers" to kill in the name of an ancient cause.

The group's meeting place was an abandoned church, a decrepit hulk on the grounds of the abandoned Warburg-Rothschild estate. The church, partially eaten by fire, was the group's "eastern Headquarters." Most of the pews had been removed from the church long ago. On one wall was hung a large silver pentagram, festooned with silver insets in the shape of Waffen SS lightning bolts.[75]

MK-ULTRA and the Godfather

The interaction of the CIA with organized cult crime is a natural, and it's hardly unprecedented. Other, more traditional crime "families" also have connections in spyworld.

James "Whitey" Bulger, the most notorious gangster in Boston, has achieved mythic status in his hometown with the help of the the FBI. His past is a study of the national security underground insinuating itself into a typical metropolitan criminal network.

On January 1, 1994, the *Boston Globe* ran a story on Bulger's introduction to the CIA:

> James (Whitey) Bulger, the reputed gangland leader, is uniquely qualified to comment on the burgeoning scandal over the government-sponsored use of human guinea pigs." From 1956 to 1959, while serving a sentence at Atlanta federal penitentiary on a bank robbery conviction, Bulger received a reduction in sentence for volunteering to be a subject in LSD experiments sponsored by the CIA. In an interview with *Globe* reporters," Senate President William Bulger said he had discouraged his brother from participating in the experiments in letters the two sib-

lings exchanged in the late 1950s. Those who know Whitey Bulger say he continues to suffer side effects from the experiments, including nightmares and insomnia.

"Who knew about LSD then?" recalls State Senator Bulger. "But I was very apprehensive about it. Imagine, three days a month [dropped from his sentence] for running that risk. There were only 8–10 of them and two guys went stark raving mad.... You couldn't go through something like that and come out improved."[76]

Whitey read voraciously in prison. The bank robber was especially fond of books on military history, strategy and intelligence operations. Whitey's reading contributed to his survival in the mob wars of the 1960s. His legendary ability to manipulate federal agents was, one local reporter noted years later, "a study in Cold War political strategy."

After his release from prison in 1965, Bulger rose to prominence in organized crime in Boston's south side. The 1986 President's Commission on Organized Crime declared him a killer. Bulger, the *Globe* reported on September 20, 1988, rose steadily in the past decade to the top of the underworld with 'nary a scratch': "I can't tell you that anybody I've worked with has any idea what kind of muscle he has," a former prosecutor says, "just that everybody's scared to death of him." In 1981, the bugging of the Angiulos Mafia family led to the discovery that they could call on Bulger and Flemmi, if need be, anytime, to *kill* for them.

"I'll tell you right now, if I called these guys ... they'd kill anybody we tell 'em to," underboss Gennaro Angiulo claimed. When Angiulo was placed under arrest in 1983, Bulger became the most powerful organized crime figure in Boston. It was rumored that Whitey fed leads to the FBI, resulting in Angiulo's downfall. With the competition scrubbed, Bulger became the ranking mobster in South Boston.

Whitey led the charmed life of a godfather with an uncanny intuition for evading arrest. Local police complained that he always *seemed to know* when there was a listening device in the room. Bulger was somehow aware of the sleuthing and either talked nonsense when monitored by FBI agents, or said nothing at all. On one occassion he unearthed $50,000 in electronic equipment and federal agents begged him to return it while Bulger drowned out their voices with a good-cop, bad-cop parody.

For thirty years, he managed to maintain an unblemished police record.

Bulger was a sensitive subject around city hall. Police Commissioner Francis

Roache refused to discuss him. There was internal dissension at the FBI over Bulger's untouchability, much of the protest arising from blowback over his relationship with John Connolly, an agent of the FBI's organized crime unit. But James Ahearn, the special agent in charge of the Boston office, flatly rejects any suggestion that the FBI was protecting Bulger. He also instructed Connolly not to talk to .reporters about his friendship with South Boston's most powerful mobster.

"It really made you think, why won't the FBI do this guy?" one high-ranking DEA official complains.

More chaos in local law enforcement ensued when state police discovered a small proviso tagged to state budget legislation in 1991, The attachment would have forced all supervisors of the department's intelligence division to "*retire immediately.*" It was purged from the budget, but police were unable to determine exactly who in the state capital had slipped the item into the state budget. Many in law enforcement felt the proviso was a message to the state police officials who ordered the Lancaster Street investigation of Whitey Bulger.

The whole unexpurgated story of the mobster's federal connections leaked out slowly over a period of five years. The *Globe* took notice on March 5, 1995 of "ill will arising from Bulger's role as an informant and his uncanny ability to dodge electronic surveillance used by the Massachusetts State Police and US Drug Enforcement Agency."

The FBI "informant" had friends in high places, that much was clear. There was, in 1991, for example, Bulger's $1.9 million in state lottery winnings—the Justice Department discovered five years later that Bulger had obtained his share of the winning $14 million lottery ticket in a mob money-laundering scheme.

Charges that he received a "tribute" on all drug profits from the mobs of South Boston arose when 51 residents of the area, otherwise known as the Winter Hill Gang, were stung in a DEA investigation and indicted on drug charges. Bulger, their boss, quietly lit out of town and went into hiding. His partner in organized crime, 'Cadillac Frank' Salemme, escaped at about the same time. In August, 1995 the FBI caught up with Salemme, who had presided over the entire New England Mafia. The don was arrested in West Palm Beach, Florida and held without bail.

In 1996, the FBI completely reversed itself and formally acknowledged that since the 1960s (not the 80s, as FBI officials confessed a few years earlier), James Bulger had been a valued "informant." That is, while local, state and federal police—even the FBI's own agents—doggedly pursued him, the most feared man in Boston had friends in the Bureau. They granted him a license to run drug-trafficking operations in Boston, even to knock out competitors by turning state's evidence against them.

As of this writing, James Bulger remains at large.

The Mafia's Savona-Profaci family was drawn into the obscure world of intelligence and mind control when a young member of the clan became a guinea-pig in trauma-based mind control and covert radio-frequency brain experimentation. Thomas Savona was convicted after a two-day trial—in which the complainants, an uncle and aunt on his mother's side, were the only prosecution witnesses—by the New York State Supreme Court. The charge was the attempted murder of his uncle. Savona testified on his own behalf on the advice of his attorney. Three eyewitnesses for the defense were not called. Savona's attorney explained to him that his own testimony would be sufficient to win an acquittal. It wasn't. Thomas was sentenced on September 30, 1991.[77]

The question of exceptional circumstances was never addressed by the court: "Ever since my teenage years, I have been trying to prove that I am being victimized," wrote Savona from the Sullivan Correctional Facility to New York's *City Sun* on February 19, 1994, "by [the CIA's] brain wave frequency sector, twenty-four hours a day, seven days a week." Savona complained that parties unknown had tapped his "thoughts, vision, hearing and other sensory wave frequencies, detecting and tuning into them, modulating them."[78] His complaint was ignored by the court and examining psychiatrists, though he asked repeatedly for an MRI scan and medical tests to prove that he'd been implanted with a bio-chip.

Until the age of six, Thomas Savona was raised by black Muslims. He still does not eat meat or fish. He doesn't take drugs. One day, Savona recalls, the Muslims "disappeared," and his Uncle entered, or "infiltrated," the picture. The uncle was a cultist, Savona says. The boy suffered ritualized, trauma-based conditioning—in the course of a prolonged war waged against the Mafia family by local "blood cults" with ties to "the elite power structure and government."

Young Thomas turned to Carmela Profaci, his great aunt and the mother superior of Regina Pacis Church in Brooklyn, New York, to protect him from the abuse. She hid him when the cult attempted to subject him to further abuse.[79] In high school, he was generally considered to be honest and hard working. Dr. Adolph Goldman, a court-appointed doctor, noted in is 1988 report that the accused "had no history of psychiatric problems." Thomas's brother Philip entered the family business, organized crime. The first arrest came in 1979—although, according to parole officers, he spoke of occultism and electronic brain monitoring months before the police hauled him away. As he tells it, Thomas and his uncle, said to be a high priest in a local satanic cult, had a heated argument after the latter refused to ship heart medication to Thomas's father in Sicily, where it was unavailable. The uncle produced a gun and Thomas struggled with him. The gun went off while still in his uncle's hand. The weight of the testimony (from his aunt and uncle) heard by the jury was against him. Savona was convicted in 1979.

He was sent to Marcy State Hospital. Thomas had become "delusional," according to Dr. Goldman: "He [Thomas] remembered being at Marcy for 14 days, but he couldn't really give an explanation for this. 'I was trying to explain to people that my brain was monitored.' He has a theory that the brain gives electrical waves which can be picked up. "I know I'm monitored ... through biofeedback."[80] The patient was incarcerated at the mental hospital for 45 days and "refused any medication," insisting he was a target of electronic mind control and harassment. After his release in 1985, Savona fired a gun at his much-despised uncle on two occasions, "in self-defense," he says, and was again charged with attempted murder in 1988.

Court-appointed psychiatrists diagnosed Thomas as a "delusional psychotic," yet concluded he was "fit to stand trial and be sentenced." The diagnosis is questionable since Savona was verbally articulate, and while incarcerated maintained a 3.5+ grade point average at a local community college.[81] He has been consistently denied the MRI scan he has requested since the mid-80s. Like most victims of EM experimentation, Thomas has written letters to anyone who might help him prove that he is a target of electromagnetic attack, including Governor Mario Cuomo, the Martin Marietta Corp., the Brain Research Foundation, IBM Research Department, the Department of the Navy, and so on. None of the respondents have offered technical assistance. He is currently a prisoner at a the Fishkill high-security medical facility in Beacon, New York.

Occult Politics

> *One can safely predict that techniques for controlling behavior and modifying personality will grow more efficient by the year 2000. Thousands of experts at conditioning are now trying out their behavior-changing technology on tens of thousands of people—in classrooms, prisons, mental hospitals, day-care centers, factories, nursing homes....*
>
> —*Journal of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences* (Summer, 1967)

The CIA's s use of cult cut-outs was advanced by a visit to Elizabeth Kubler-Ross, whose knowledge of the occult underground served as the map for forging alliances. Cults sprang up and proliferated throughout the 1960s, many with links to the munitions and intelligence empires.

The cults were on the rise. In San Francisco, Anton LaVey's "Magic Circle," the forerunner of the Church of Satan, was an elite secret society comprised of assorted eccentrics. They enacted Egyptian rituals in celebration of Osiris, seances, black masses. LaVey's Magic Circle included, according to LaVey biographer Burton Wolfe:

> The heir of the Vickers munitions empire, a [crony] of arms dealer Basil "Death Merchant" Zaharoff in the days when the war profiteer had a mysterious black chapel in his chateau; Carin de Plessen, inaccurately called "the mad countess" by her neighbors in Marin County (she was an authentic baroness who grew up in the Royal Palace of Denmark) because she kept a compound of Great Danes at her rustic, isolated house on a knoll in Woodacre; novelist Stephen Schneck, author of *The Night Clerk;* anthropologist Mike Harner [headed for professorships at Columbia, Yale and Berkeley, also the chair of the New School for Social Research]; investment broker Donald Werby [a billionaire accused of pederasty in 1990] and his wife Willy, son-in-law and daughter of the man who owns Chock Full O' Nuts; underground filmmaker Kenneth Anger ....

And a gaggle of others, not to mention Shana Alexander (current director of the National Women's Political Caucus); a dildo manufacturer; the grandson of an American president; several popular science fiction writers and "various physicians, attorneys, artists, writers, policemen and policewomen."[82]

Like so many others in this inventory, the direction of LaVey's life took a drastic turn with exposure to the castrated Hitler regime. In the spring of 1945, LaVey's uncle took "Tony" along on a sojourn to Germany to rebuild blasted airstrips. On this junket, the impressionable youth stopped at a military post long enough to watch confiscated Nazi horror movies, thinly-veiled depictions of Nazi occultism. The gothic trappings of LaVey's postwar notoriety had their beginnings in rumors circulating in Germany, grim accounts of a Black Order operating within the Nazi Party.[83]

The shamanic beliefs of the cults were formed by national security gurus spinning capricious spiritual self-indulgence into blinds for CIA mind control operations. In 1961, Dr. Timothy Leary of Harvard directed a program that tested hallucinogens on prisoners in Massachusetts to determine whether the drugs had an effect on criminal tendencies.[84] State officials fired him for inciting inmates to rebellion, but in a tape-recorded interview in 1975, Leary admitted he was a "willing agent of the CIA." He refused to discuss how he was paid.[85]

In an unpublished manuscript, mind control researcher Walter Bowart invokes documents indicating that Leary "had received money channeled by the CIA through various government agencies. The files showed that, in all, there were eight government grants paid to Leary from 1953 to 1958, most of them paid through the National Institute of Mental Health, now known to have 'fronted' for the CIA."

Another psychedelic priest of the period was Charles Tart, the LSD-dropping protégé of Dr. J.B. Rhine. Tart received his Ph.D in psychology from the University of North Carolina. His academic interests included personality theory, dreams and hypnosis. Tart's *Altered States of Consciousness,* published in 1969, was widely considered a ground-breaking study of meditation, yoga, drugs, hypnosis and dreams. His work is greatly influenced by the philosophy of G.I. Gurdjieff, and he has mingled with cults founded on the teachings of the Russian mystic and spiritual guide of Karl Haushofer, the Nazi strategist. Professor Tart taught at the University of California at Davis for 30 years. (The Davis campus is a stone's throw from Vacaville Prison, where psychotropic drugs were tested on prisoners by the CIA, sometimes against their will and often as punishment. The adjacent town is Dixon—one of two sources, according to an FCC report, of the famous "Soviet" ELF hum that rumbled through Eugene, Oregon in 1978.[86] A second signal was detected with a source offshore. Who should step forth to "explain?" Pentagon spokesman William Perry, until recently secretary of defense, an SAIC board member, falsely blamed the Soviets for the ringing ears, nose-bleeds and head pains caused by the EM transmissions.)

One of the savants who did the most to fill the heads of credulous seekers with addled metascientific proselytizing was Andrija Puharich, the CIA mystic who discovered Uri Geller, the Cyprus-born Israeli "psychic." Puharich was born in 1918. He received a medical degree from Northwestern University in 1947. Upon graduation, Puharich developed a slavish interest in clairvoyance and dabbled in theories for electronically enhancing and synthesizing psychic abilities. He joined the Army and took part in certain "parapsychology" experiments.[87] The *Washington Post* reported in 1977 that Puharich also worked in the Army's Chemical and Biological Warfare Center at Fort Detrick, Maryland, and has "lectured the Army, Air Force and Navy on possibilities for mind warfare. Expert in hypnotism as well as microelectronics."

Puharich took a fatal fall down a flight of stairs in January 1995. Researcher

Terry Milner peeled away the cover stories and found that the true Puharich bore little resemblance to the hallucinatory shaman touted by his devotees:

> Throughout his life Andrija performed many outrages on four legged inhabitants of earth, slicing and dicing them as he saw the need to do so all in the name of science. Dogs were a favorite. One of life's little mysteries is why he belonged to the Kennel Club, but he did.
>
> It was while he was at Northwestern that Andrija put his mental-pedal to the mental-metal and came up with his Theory of Nerve Conduction. The theory proposed that the neuron units radiate and receive waves of energy which he calculated to be in the ultra-shortwave bands below infrared and above the radar spectrum. Therefore the basic nerve units—neurons—are a certain type of radio receiver-transmitter.
>
> The theory got passed around and glimpsed by various high personages of 1940's science. Among them was Paul Weiss, a neurophysiologist at the University of Chicago. José Delgado, the guy who tortured animals by putting electronic implants into their brains to influence their behaviour, liked Paul Weiss and you can find his grateful acknowledgment to the man in his "ve know vat's goot for you" book, *Toward a Psychocivilized Society.*
>
> While his nerve conduction manuscript was circulating, Puharich headed out for California to do his internship as a medical researcher. He spent a year or so at the Permanenté Research Foundation. During that time he carried out research into the effects of digatoid drugs, funded by Sandoz Chemical Works. Sandoz.
>
> Andrija's wife Virginia, who had been an editor at the Office of War Information during the war, came with him and worked at the same facility.

Puharich is the inventor of an implantable, "miniature tooth radio, sold to the CIA."[88] He admits to involvement in "LSD work for the CIA in 1954." (Biological warfare researcher Frank Olsen, injected with a massive dose of MDA, a potent hallucinogen, plummeted twelve stories and was killed in an operation run by agents from Ft. Detrick at New York's Statler Hotel a year before.) Immediately upon his ostensible release from the service, Puharich set up a laboratory to study clairvoyance. He was also the founder of the Intelectron Corporation, a medical electronics firm (recalling the J.B. Rhine/Medtronics combination).

The electronic wizardry of Dr. Puharich was the source of the unpleasantness experienced by David B., a mind control subject who had implants surgically removed ...

> X-rays revealed a metal object on the left side of my skull under the jaw in the soft tissue of my neck. In May 1996, I finally had it removed, I asked many doctors about the possibility of it falling there during an extraction—they said, "possible, but remote." Most of them thought it punctured my neck from the outside. I sent X-rays to Dr. Sims, and he arranged removal. The strange thing that came out of this was discovery of the small object in my shoulder. Dr. Leer called after receiving my X-rays and asked if I had ever broken my shoulder, if I had ever been in an explosion. I replied no. He said the reason was that the X-ray clearly showed a screw in my left shoulder. He said it looked like an operation for a broken shoulder. I have never broken a bone to my knowledge, and called my mother to ask. She said I'd had no operations as a child. This part is a complete mystery,
>
> During the first six months of torture (extreme at that time), I went to a dentist and reported pain under my new dental bridge, installed a few months before the assault. He removed it and I was still in contact. So I wrote off my teeth and concentrated on my throat, wrongly. In my X-rays and CAT scan, one tooth is very bright and in one frame of the catscan it shows rays of white emanating from it. People I asked said it was probably an interference effect with the metal.
>
> A researcher commented by mail recently: "The tooth implant I have followed was to be used as a send-receive unit or a hearing device. I have no idea what its current appearance would be. Back then it required using the tooth's nerve as a pathway. It was developed by Dr. Andrija Puharich and a dentist named Joe Lawrence." He also said there was a Government interest in the doctor's work.

In his books, Puharich echoed the schizy Blavatsky efflux of his fellow mind control operators. Uri Geller ("tested" and approved by Targ and Puthoff at SRI) had profound mental abilities "beamed to him," Puharich claimed, from "a distant galaxy." The source of the radio signal that allowed Geller to bend silverware was an "extraterrestrial race" known as "the Hoovians," under the command of a powerful alien council he called "The Nine." Most impressive was Geller's ability to "teleport" himself across great distances in the blink of an eye and "dematerialize" small objects. Puharich complained that the "E.T.s" buzzed him in flying saucers and left obnoxious messages on his answering machine. One summer, at his Ossning, New York complex, Puharich put together a cult of "Gellerings" called the "Space Kids," twenty adolescents from seven countries supposedly graced with the same abilities as Uri Geller. They claimed to be of "alien" origin. A 14-year-old participant reports his suspicions were aroused when he was asked to take part in a "remote viewing" exercise—to spy on the Kremlin, among other sensitive political targets.[89]

Russell Targ, an instigator of all this—the most unlikely cover story in history—affects the trappings of hard science in his books on the paranormal. But his work is laden with more fantastic tales that conceal his efforts on behalf of the CIA. Targ claims that the public is hobbled from an understanding of psychic functioning by a wide variety of religious cult leaders who "profit and flourish by attracting a continuous flow of recruits who believe their claims [of] enlightenment and power ... derived through special knowledge about the inner-workings of reality and the mind."[90]

In 1979, as director of the Human Freedom Center in Berkeley, Targ devoted several months 'interviewing and counseling' former cult members" (bear in mind that he is a physicist, not a therapist), and "I found that many individuals had joined cults as a result of their having either experienced or witnessed what they believed were psychic occurrences."[91] All well and good, but Targ somehow neglects to mention that the Human Foundation Center was a direct link to the CIA mind control operation known as People's Temple.

The UC Berkeley counseling center that employed Dr. Targ was founded by Elmer and Deanna Mertle, Jones's public relations officers. The Mertles changed their names to Al and Jeannie Mills after leaving the Temple in 1975.[92] The Mills clan pulled out of the Jones operation with a group of Caucasians who made up the inner-circle of People's Temple, lieutenants of Jim Jones reborn as Concerned Relatives, a support group. The core of the group had in fact conspired with Dr. Lawrence Laird Layton at UC Berkeley, the hidden hand of the CIA medical experimentation compound in Guyana, and "Minister" Jones in mass murder.[93]

Al and Jeannie were unwilling participants in People's Temple. Jones had forced their loyalty by reminding them of the confession of criminal acts they'd signed before the couple and their children were permitted into the fold. Eventually, Al and Jeannie came to like their positions of rank in the Temple. Once out of it, they were instrumental in luring Congressman Leo Ryan, who'd been investigating CIA ties to the cult, to Guyana, where he perished among the 1,200 murder-victims of Jonestown.[94]

Al and Jeannie Mills set up the Human Freedom Center in a ramshackle house in Berkeley. Russell Russell Targ joined the Center in March, 1979, four months after the People's Temple slaughter.[95] He counseled survivors for almost a year, then returned to his psi research position at Stanford Research Institute, from whence he had come.

On February 26, 1980, shortly after Targ resigned, an unidentified killer entered the Center and executed Al, Jeannie and their teen-aged daughter with gun shots to the head. The building was not burglarized. A friend of the Mills family arrived at the local police station a few days later to report that a psychiatrist once employed at the Center had committed the murders.[96]

Vipers and Daydreams (Reprised)

The California university system was a minor West Coast Pentagon of covert planning of psychological warfare programs that tended to overlap with CIA mind control operations. Experimentation on the People's Temple flock was directed by Dr. Layton, a Berkeley scientist. A decade earlier, in the winter of 1969 to be exact, Dr. Arthur A. Jensen, a professor of educational psychology at UC Berkeley, turned the science of eugenics on its ear with the publication an article in the *Harvard Educational Review* reviving discredited notions of race and IQ.

Almost instantly, Jensen became the darling of the corporate media. Jensen's position that the genetics of race determines intelligence was treated by the press, independent scholar Allan Chase recalls in *The Malthus Legacy,* "as the greatest scientific development since the first nuclear device was exploded at Los Alamos." Feature stories lauding Jensen's incarnation of Nazi-style eugenics were published in *Newsweek, Time, Life* and *U.S. News & World Report* and elsewhere.

On March 31, 1969, *Newsweek* summarized Jensen's "findings": "Dr. Jensen's view, put simply, is that blacks are born with less 'intelligence' than most whites.... The reason, he argues, is that intelligence is an inherited capacity and that since a prime characteristic of races is that they are 'inbred,' blacks are likely to remain lower in intelligence."

The notion that African-Americans were not as smart as Caucasians (and even engaged in "in-breeding") led Jensen to ask the rhetorical question, "Is there a danger that current welfare policies, unaided by eugenics foresight, could lead to the genetic enslavement of a substantial segment of our population?"

Welfare, Dr. Chase emphasizes, "was the basic point of the Jensen testament—not education. Nor intelligence. Jensen's article was nothing more, and nothing less, than a propaganda tract for eugenics."

The Pioneer Fund has made Jensen's theories the academic backbone of its anti-welfare campaign. The right-wing organization exerts unheard of influence on public policy for a political fringe group. Its platform—ending welfare, halting immigration, cutting funds to educational programs, scaling back entitlements and affirmative action—fuels federal and state ballot measures.

Marek Kohn, in *The Race Gallery* (1995), traced the history of the Pioneer Fund: founded in 1937 to promote higher reproduction by American whites and "research 'race betterment.'" The fund "disburses around a million dollars a year. In the second half of the 1980s, its main beneficiary was Thomas Bouchard's twin study project, which was given more than $500,000. .... Between 1971 and 1992, Arthur Jensen received more than one million dollars."

The Pioneer Fund was set up, according to IRS documents, to raise money to fund the study of racial purity. On December 14, 1995, *El Sol Del Valle* reported:

> Their literature was quoted by Nazi war criminals as the basis for the "Final Solution," that is, the extermination of the Jews. Yes, at the Nuremberg War Crimes trials, German war criminals actually quoted Americans and their study of "eugenics" as the basis for Nazi racial views and policy.
>
> The Pioneer Fund led American groups in advocating the use of German "eugenics." It still does. The Fund responded to Dr. Tanton's requests with over $700,000 in seed money to fund FAIR [an activist front that advocates population control]. FAIR is a group founded by ... Dr. John Tanton. For start-up money, Tanton went to the Pioneer Fund.... Dr. Tanton claims he knows nothing of the Pioneer Fund's pro-Nazi background. It has financed such racially charged and directed projects as the famous Dr. Shockley studies that tried to prove that "negroes" are inferior to white people and, more recently, it is reported, funded the infamous *Bell Curve* studies of Charles Murray.

The Pioneer Fund has granted liberal support to Roger Pearson ($787,400 by 1993), editor of two widely distributed journals advocating racial purity, *Mankind Quarterly,* repeatedly cited in *The Bell Curve,* and *The Journal of Social, Political and Economic Studies,* which publishes articles by Jensen and his fellow "conservative" eugenicists. Pearson was once an organizer for The Northern League, the UK neo-Nazi movement that recruited senile officers of Hitler's SS.

Pearson moved to the U.S. in 1965 to edit *Western Destiny,* a jorunal published by Willis Carto of the Liberty Lobby. The editorial board of the "academic" journal included Austin App, the pro-Nazi leader of the German American National Congress and a leading Holocaust revisionist. Pearson went on to become the editor of the American Security Council's *Journal of International Relations* and served on the board of the Council's American Foreign Policy Institute. The council is headed without exception by military-industrial hawks, and high on the council's agenda is the promotion of military spending, thus the molding of public opinion with Dr. Jensen's genetic IQ theories, a "scientific" rationale for stanching the welfare coffers and diverting tax revenue to the DoD. (It is a testament to the ASC's political clout that presidential candidate Robert Dole boasts Council credentials).

Thirty years after Arthur Jensen's revival of fascist eugenics hardened racial attitudes, he sits on the "Scientific Advisory Board" of BrainTainment Resources, Inc. (BTR) in Laguna Beach, California. BTR sales literature boasts that Dr. Jensen is the country's "most highly esteemed scientist in the field of IQ measurement and intelligence analysis." Incorporated in January 1995, BTR set up a core development team of cognitive scientists, computer technicians, teachers and psychologists. John H. Kranzler, PhD, formerly a research associate of Arthur Jensen's, is the company specialist in intelligence testing, or "cognitive chronometrics." Kranzler received his doctorate, also from the University of California at Berkeley, in 1990. He is currently an assistant professor of the School of Psychology at the University of Florida. His research turns on the "assessment and development of cognitive abilities."

BrainTainment, Inc. claims that ThinkFast, computer software advertised on the Internet, utilizes "the underlying technology of psycho-interactive intelligence to perk up tired brains, clear out foggy heads and focus in scattered minds." After all, "why not have fun while educating and empowering your brain?" The company suggests that "real brain power should be measured much like muscle-power, that is, with an 'ergometer' that dynamically challenges ('loads') the full capacity of the 'muscle.' We call it *psycho-interactivity.*"

But the interaction of mind with computer, the essence of electronic brain manipulation, is not advertised on the Net. It is squandered by the "national security" underground. Chris Bird, a CIA psychological warfare specialist, and Peter Tomkins, an OSS veteran, authors of *The Secret Life of Plants* (Harper & Row, 1973), are also steeped in the moral wasteland of the CIA's mind control sector. The book was largely concerned with the experiments of Clive Backster, a lie detector operator who took galvanic readings of houseplants and claimed to have produced fluctuations that coincided with his thoughts. Cornell experimenters were unable to duplicate his results (although Paul Sauvin, a minister at the Psychic Science Temple of Metaphysics, claimed that the "Backster Effect" was easily evoked in his own lab). As usual, the technology behind the ruse is a dead give-away—Sauvin, according to Bird, was a "pacifist, abhorrent of the use of thought controlled weapons ... though he has taken out business certificates on such devices—which put him on record as the owner."[97]

Bird himself has bona fidés that scream EM mind control. After the Vietnam

War, he found employment as a representative of the Rand Development Corporation (a front similar to the Human Ecology Fund), chaired by H.J. Rand, the son of the CEO of Sperry-Rand, the munitions builder. Bird partook of an early exchange of advanced scientific information with the Soviets. He was also a "biocommunications"—cyber-clairvoyance—specialist at MRU, the CIA proprietary engaged in the development of "psycho-acoustical" biotechnology.[98]

The "New Age" (still dripping with occult beliefs reminiscent of the "New Age" in proto-Nazi Germany), saucer mythology and drugged clairvoyance are blinds for involvement in extreme human rights violations. The gamut of zany cover stories combine in the enigmatic C.B. Scott Jones, yet another military intelligence officer who, as a Navy pilot in the Korean War, happened to witness a UFO overflight.[99] It has long been suspected by abduction researchers that Jones is a veteran of electromagnetic mind control operations.

Angela Thompson, once a fixture at Jahn's psi research lab at Princeton, reports that Jones's primary metaphysical pursuit is "dream-projection" (á la John Alexander and his much ballyhooed "Jedi Project," the DoD's "New Age Army"), the supposed ability to entrain and manipulate the thoughts of others.

Thompson was a consenting target. Jones, then an aide to Senator Claiborne Pell, entered the picture in the late 1980s and linked "psychic" research to military intelligence brass, including Laurance Rockefeller. Pell's mentor was Averell Harriman. The Pell presence in American politics antedates the American revolution. "Clay" has long been a career politician. He attended the organizing session of the UN in San Francisco and spent seven years in the State Department, assigned to the Foreign Service. He has a strong interest in the paranormal.

He is also a closet homosexual. Attorney Robert Winter-Bergen, in *The Washington Pay-Off,* relates that he was summoned in June 1964 to release Senator Pell from jail after he'd been arrested in a Greenwich Village gay bar:

> If Senator Pell had had any identification with him, the police would have entered his name in their record of the raid [and] it would have become a matter of public information, available to anyone. In politics, the opposition will go to any lengths to obtain information that can be used to pressure, even to blackmail, a candidate, no matter how innocent the circumstances may be. I realized that only a person of influence would be able to resolve the problem without leaving any traceable evidence, and the only person I knew with such power was Carmine DeSapio, then the Democratic leader of Manhattan's First Assembly District South. I had come to know DeSapio through Julia Skouras. DeSapio had been a good friend of Pell's father, Herbert Pell, a prominent New York socialite and Democratic Party leader.

> Despite the hour, I telephoned DeSapio, whom I had known slightly for several years, and after I explained the situation to him he offered to meet me at the police station in an hour. We arrived at the same time. While I waited in the main room, DeSapio went down a hall and evidently talked to whoever is in charge.
>
> He returned in a few minutes and told me: 'Everything's okay.' Almost immediately, Pell came out of a large room at the back of the station. The moment was not conducive to chit-chat, so there were some embarrassed thank-you's and we all went our separate ways.

Scott Jones is founder of the Human Potential Foundation (HPF), a UFO "watchdog" organization in Washington, D.C. In October 1995, *Common Cause* reported that Laurance Rockefeller donated some $700,000 to the Foundation.[100]

Scott Jones was recruited by the Navy in 1946, trained as an aviation midshipman and rose to officer rank as a pilot in Korea. He has degrees from George Washington University, the University of Maryland and American University. He was with Naval intelligence for 15 years, assigned as an "assistant attaché" in New Delhi and Katmandu. And while still an intelligence officer, Jones worked at Kaman Tempo, Inc., a subsidiary of the Kaman Sciences Corporation. In 1983, a branch of the company, Kaman Tempo, a "think tank" that performs intelligence analysis for the virtual government, hosted a seminar on "applications of parapsychology." The minutes of the seminar were edited and published by Jones. In them, he mentions a network of intelligence contacts.[101]

Dr. Cecil Jones "retired" from Naval Intelligence in 1976. Turn down the volume when he talks. Like his fellow psyop agents, emergent neuro-cybernetic technology lurks behind the shaggy-dog "aliens" and psychic excursions.

The Kaman Corporation is a sprawling, diversified military contractor. Company officials include Admiral Huntington Hardisty (ret.), former commander-in-chief of the U.S. Pacific Command and director of operations for the Joint Chiefs of Staff.[102] Former Secretary of Defense Frank Carlucci, a Kaman director, also sits on the boards of several companies known to have built radio-frequency "mind control" weapons (Westinghouse and Bell Atlantic). He is chairman of the Carlyle Corporation, former secretary of defense (1987 to 1989), a director of Texas Biotechnology and other founts of advanced military technology. Among other things, Kaman manufactures airborne laser electro-optical imaging systems for military operations, and provides "advanced technology services to a number of customers, including all branches of the armed forces and various government agencies." Kaman's technical services include "various types of artificial intelligence systems," the heart of modern mind control.[103]

The company Jones keeps reveals, a social register of oily political operatives:

Congressman Charlie Rose (D-N.C.): Best remembered for his investigation of Banco Nationale Lavorro (BNL) and American companies that conspired to stock Saddam Hussein's $100-billion armaments base—ironic, since Rose was himself tarred by the scandal. In August 1989, the congressman from North Carolina threw his weight behind a lobbying group, led by the Bush administration, that pressured Eximbank—chaired by William Draper III, a friend of George Bush at Yale and the son of a Dillon, Read executive who advanced the Nazi rearmament effort between the wars[104]—to relax restrictions on military exports to Iraq. The lobbyists, including Representative Rose, convinced Draper to stretch Iraq's line of credit against the advice of the bank's own analysts, who pointed out that Hussein was the world's worst credit risk.

On April 15, 1991, Rep. Henry Gonzales of the House Banking Committee wrote in a memo, "at present, the U.S. government owes various U.S. and foreign companies over $2 billion because of Iraqi default."[105] Rose chaired a House committee investigation of the Bush administration's role in Iraqgate, a gross deception since he was among the scandal's key participants.[106]

The Congressman has long been an advocate of the Pentagon's "parapsychological" pursuits.

"Some people think this is the work of the Devil," he observes, "other people think it's the work of the Holy Spirit." The comment prompted James Mills, author of a novel about the DoD's "psychic warriors," to complain: "I think it's very dangerous for even an individual to be toying around with the occult. When you see nations doing it as a matter of national policy, that really gets scary."[107]

Rose moves in the Pentagon's mind control underground like an old hand. His friend Ira Einhorn, a counter-cultural Jabberwocky, was forced to flee the country after police in Philadelphia discovered his girlfriend's cadaver stuffed in a trunk. Jack Sarfatti of the Esalen Institute caught a glimpse of the underground on a visit to Einhorn, then "very concerned about what he called 'Soviet breakthroughs in psychotropic weapons of mind control at a distance using ELF and sound waves.'" This is just the sort of rationale that leads to classified domestic weapons development. Einhorn was attempting to pull together a study group to meet the Soviet threat. "He said he had support from the local telephone company and from the Bronfmans [the Canadian liquor

Family that held an interest in Clay Shaw's Trade Mart] to link up visionary scientists like myself.... Ira mentioned that he was working with Congressman Charlie Rose of the House Select Committee on Intelligence. Rose confirmed his connection to Einhorn in a telephone conversation."[108]

Hill & Knowlton: An intelligence clearinghouse, the most frequently exposed CIA proprietary in the District of Columbia.

Dick Farley, formerly an assistant to Jones at HPF, informs us ...

> Here is a 'Jones link' to Hill & Knowlton that I can confirm. In 1990–93 or so, a former Capitol Hill staffer by name of Janet Smith (well, she said that's her name) was one of those receiving money passed through the Human Potential Foundation. Janet would visit Jones for a few hours from time to time, with office door closed and locked (according to Jones's secretary at the time), and then Janet would emerge with a nice check in the $5K or more range to tide her own little non-profit group over for a while. Janet was "into" alternative medicine, and she had a "donated" office at Hill & Knowlton. I was there a few times, as H&K also hosted some "alternative medicine" kinds of meetings, filled with cultists of the New Age sort, both the true and the gullible, as well as the manipulators.
>
> Janet Smith is a devotee of Indian mystic Sai Baba, and she visited him regularly in India. Jones also is a scholar of India and particularly its military (subject of his doctoral thesis at American University), and of course Jones served in India.

Theodore Rockwell: Scott Jones has conducted "ESP" studies with Rockwell, a nuclear engineer from the Oak Ridge Lab (home of radiation experiments on children, etc.) and vice president of the U.S. Psychotronics Association, an organization that passes off absurd cover stories as legitimate science—the Association's 1989 conference in New York on the "Cosmicgate Conspiracy" explored the following "topics": how UFO abductions are permitted by government "in exchange for extraterrestrial technology," inter-dimensional warfare, astrological weather forecasting, the Illuminati, CFR, the world "super government" and "the prophecy of Americas economic collapse in 1989."[109]

Prince Hans Adam of Liechtenstein II: In pursuit of "aliens" and the paranormal, C.B. Scott Jones has a kindred spirit in Prince Hans Adam of Liechtenstein II, the most autocratic ruler in Europe and one of the last of ruling princes. One conservative German magazine opined that the Prince governs the tiny principality of Liechtenstein, wedged between Austria and Switzerland, "according to his wishes." He lives in imperial style: the prince once proposed dismantling the government and reigning like a monarch from his medieval castle. When he inherited power in 1989, Hans Adam went so far as to dissolve the parliament because it balked at giving him a museum for his famous art collection. His Highness owns a lion's share of the richest bank in Germany, the Bank of Liechtenstein, and his assets are valued at an estimated $2.5 billion.[110]

Hans Adam's fascination with UFOs may seem plebeian, but he has bankrolled some of the dizziest operatives in UFOlogy to fan a smokescreen for abductions by the mind control underground. In this context, traipsing after flying saucers is as imperious and arrogant as one might expect. In 1995, Prince Hans Adam was an "anonymous donor" to a conference on "alien" abductions at MIT. The conference drew about 100 abductees, scientists, doctors, psychiatrists and a pair of admitted intelligence agents.[111] The itinerary featured a lecture by John Mack, the Harvard psychiatrist Pulitzer Prized for his biography of Lawrence of Arabia, famed for his work with "alien" abductees. Less well-known is his deep background in psychoanalyzing fear and trauma in children, leadership in political organizations with CIA ties, an obsession with Werner Erhard's mind control techniques, and a $200,000 donation from Laurance Rockefeller, channeled through C.B. Scott Jones's Human Potential Foundation to fund his therapeutic work with "alien" abductees.[112]

John Alexander: Connect the Metaphysical-Industrial dots—UFOlogist Robert Durant mentions names and cover stories already examined in connection with "non-lethal" EM technology:

> Scott's friend, Colonel John Alexander, was Jones's fellow researcher on anomalies in the Bahamas, and has displayed a long term interest in the paranormal. Alexander has actively promoted psychic metal bending among government personnel using the techniques pioneered by Jack Houck of McDonnell-Douglas.
>
> Alexander is a former president of the International Association for Near-Death Studies, and he worked with Elizabeth Kubler-Ross. Alexander also served as the military liaison to the National Research Council's panel evaluating parapsychological applications.
>
> Reportedly, he had access to classified government material on parapsychology. Alexander had a 32-year career in the Army, including a stint as director of the Advanced Systems Concept Office, U.S. Army Laboratory Command. Alexander

also was chief of the Advanced Human Technology Office of the Intelligence & Security Command (INSCOM)."[113]

Alexander and Janet Morris, research director of the U.S. Global Strategy Council, teamed up with Newt Gingrich on his first book, *Window of Opportunity,* released in 1984. "Gingrich acknowledges in the book that Janet Morris, research director of the U. S. Global Strategy Council, coached the congressman through the book and gave form to his ideas. Former Jones staffer Richard Farley offers: "It was Janet's more recent 'nemesis,' her once friend and colleague John Alexander in 'non-lethal' weapons R & D, who helped Newt get his 'thinking cap' straightened out. Alexander taught them NLP (neuro-linguistic programming)." NLP, of course, is a form of hypnotic behavior modification.

Alexander ran the "non-lethal" weapons lab at Los Alamos in New Mexico. Non-lethals are a scientific bull market for virtual government technocrats. A monograph from Los Alamos ponders the bioeffects of EM radiation, or "friendly force":

> PHYSIOLOGICAL RESPONSES APPLICABLE TO DEVELOPMENT OF LESS-THAN-LETHAL WEAPONS
> Sponsored by National Institute of Justice, Oak Ridge National Laboratory
>
> Less-than-lethal weapons have a variety of applications in law enforcement, including rescuing hostages, stopping fleeing felons and quelling prison disturbances. The National Institute of Justice is sponsoring a broad program to develop new techniques for "friendly force" as an alternative to the use of deadly force. As part of this program, Oak Ridge National Laboratory (ORNL) is examining approaches based on known physiological responses to certain types of stimuli. These "weapons" would temporarily incapacitate an individual or a group with no lasting physiological damage. These concepts are based on ORNL's experience and expertise in biological-based systems and biophysical responses, particularly in evaluating the physical responses of humans to a variety of chemical, physical and radiological agents....
>
> ORNL has already examined several possible concepts for less-than-lethal weapons based on known physiological responses to energetic stimuli, including a thermal gun, a seizure gun, and a magnetophosphene gun. A thermal gun would have the operational effect of heating the body to 105 to 107°F, thereby incapacitating any threat, based on the fact that even a slight fever can affect the ability of a person to perform even simple tasks. This approach is built on four decades of research relating radio frequency exposure to body heating. A seizure gun would

> use electromagnetic energy to induce epileptic-like seizures in persons within the range of a particular electromagnetic field. The magnetophosphene gun is designed around a biophysical mechanism which evokes a visual response and is thought to be centered in the retina, known as magnetophosphenes. This effect is experienced when a person receives a blow to the head and sees "stars." This same effect can be produced with electromagnetic energy.

British reporter Armen Victorian concluded that Alexander is an active operative assigned to a covert military group "specializing in dissemination of disinformation," collectively known as the "Aviary." [114] ("Remote viewers" Ed Dames, Hal Puthoff, David Morehouse and Courtney Brown are also Avarians.)

The *Albuquerque Journal* reported on March 10, 1993 that Alexander had organized a national conference in Santa Fe devoted to research reports of "ritual abuse, near-death experiences, human contacts with extraterrestrial aliens (sic) and other so-called 'anomalous experiences.'"

"Something's happening that's impacting on the psyché of America," Alexander told the *Journal.* "That's for sure."

Nomenclature of a Brain Trust

> *There is no doubt that the original Laurance Rockefeller, now 85 years old, is the power behind much UFO research in the United States. This man, one of two surviving grandsons of the first John D. Rockefeller, has been a true major league player in the affairs of the United States since the 1930s. If he is interested in UFOs, then they are indeed very, very important.*
>
> —Val Germann

You couldn't miss it. Brightly-lit saucers barreled across the sky and folks periodically disappeared to pop up again with horrific tales of "alien" abduction, mental telepathy and macabre experimentation. Cults, many distributing narcotics, roamed the cities. And then there were the "zombie killers."

A typical example was Tyrone Mitchell, who mowed down a group of young children in a school-yard across the street from his L.A. home on February 24, 1984. He managed to murder one ten-year-old girl and wound thirteen other children before killing himself. His rampage was attributed to drugs and the torment he suffered after his parents, a brother and four sisters were killed at Jonestown, the cloistered CIA concentration camp conceived by U of C

Berkeley's Dr. Lawrence L. Layton. Mitchell had been at Jonestown, too. But the press did not speculate that the cause of his murderous tantrum may have been related to mind control programming conducted in Guyana, or rage-inducing brain stimulation back home.

Mitchell was a bodyguard at the People's Temple for Beatrice Grubbs, formerly a legal secretary for the Internal Revenue Service. She was also one of Jim Jones' most trusted sidekicks. Grubbs narrowly escaped the carnage of Peoples' Temple because she'd been in nearby Georgetown for a dental appointment, accompanied by her bodyguard.

Tom Grubbs, her husband, a psychologist from the University of California, allegedly died in the massacre—but his body was not identified among the dead. Grubbs had been the principal of the People's Temple school.

He also designed Jones's personal sensory deprivation chamber, an implement of torture known as the "box." Experimental subjects (children) were forced inside the chamber, and lowered into a root cellar to simulate the effect of being buried alive. Jones appreciated Grubb's traumatizing "box" so much he ordered a complete set of coffin-shaped models.[115]

Jones researcher Michael Meiers: "Early Temple experiments in sensory deprivation are not well documented, but it is known that Jones imparted his expertise to Donald DeFreeze, who utilized the technique to brainwash Patricia Hearst." Subjects "interred in the boxes were totally deprived of all sensory input." Sans input, the subject emerges from the ordeal in a receptive state for mind control conditioning.

The Peoples' Temple arrived in Ukiah, California in 1965. *The Psychic World of California,* a paranormal handbook by David St. Clair published seven years later, highly recommended Jim Jones's "psychic healing" abilities to all New Age seekers.[116] The Peoples' Temple flock believed in them as well, but then most were patients from Mendocino State Mental Hospital. (The hospital had been systematically infiltrated by the cult until every employee of the institution was also a parishioner of the Temple. When Governor Reagan scaled back funding for state psychiatric institutions, most of the patients were released to the supervision of the Jones commune—so many, in fact, that the hospital was nearly emptied. It was the first mental hospital in California closed by order of Governor Reagan as a "cost-cutting" measure.

Familiar behavior modification techniques were applied in Guyana. Children were subjected to electric shocks to keep them in line. University of Miami psychologist José Lasaga described Jones's hold on his followers as "mass hypnosis at a social level ... a unique process of group regression that led to a full acceptance of the leader's delusional system."[117] Drug experimentation was conducted with a surfeit of supplies from leading chemical companies, offshoots of I.G. Farben, the German drug conglomerate fused by a complex series of patents and investments with the Rockefeller family's Standard Oil. Jonestown was built on land leased by an attorney for Farben, once the landlord of Auschwitz, like its successor in Guyana a center of inhumane medical experimentation with a mass murder queüe.

In 1978, People's Temple became People's Tomb. Among the public figures to release statements concerning the massacre was Albert Speer, resurfacing in Bonn, West Germany. Speer stated flatly that ODESSA was playing out a strategy to "take control of the U.S."[118]

Keith Harary, a research associate in psychiatry at Maimonides Medical Center in Brooklyn, abruptly resigned and relocated to San Francisco to "investigate" the workings of the cult and direct a year-long counseling program for former cultists. He was employed by leading experimental laboratories for 25 years before he was, by his own account, suddenly gripped by an urge to become a clinical psychologist. A year later, he signed on to the CIA's Stargate "psychic spying" project at SRI, Russell and Targ's stomping grounds, funded by SAIC. Harary holds a Ph.D. in psychology and has published eight books on altered states of consciousness, perception and "coercive influence" (or practical mind control techniques to influence a subject short of violence. Many CIA mind control propagandists focus on "persuasive coercion technology" as a diversion from the advanced methods and machines perfected by the Agency and commonly employed by the intelligence cults.) He is known in occult circles for his contributions to a Duke University study of out-of-body flights. In 1982, Harary founded Delphi Associates with Russell Targ to sell "clairvoyance" to the private sector.[119]

Harary has extensive laboratory experience in the physiology of altered states of consciousness and has developed techniques for inducing them. He is the co-author of a book, *Who Do You Think You Are? Explore the Many-Sided Self,* which has sold 100,000 copies since its release in November, 1995. He has lectured to the International Association of Law Enforcement Intelligence Analysts, the UN, Stanford University, UC Berkeley, the University of Edinburgh, drawn audiences in Europe, Canada and Russia. He is the research director of the Institute for Advanced Psychology in Tiburon, California.[120]

The media, late in 1995, strained public credulity to the breaking point by reporting Stargate's far-fetched cover stories without a smirk. In a shower of CIA disinformation, all objectivity eroded at the *San Francisco Examiner:*

> Keith Harary, alone in the white room, had been given an assignment: "Describe the condition of Subject X." Given no other details, he began to concentrate, striving to clear his mind of everything save making "a connection" with this unseen stranger.
>
> Soon, Harary was describing an "extremely ill person" who had a "physical disease that was affecting his mental state." The subject, he said, may be suffering from multiple sclerosis. In any case, he predicted, the person "would be on a plane in the next two to three days."
>
> Two days later, in July 1980, American diplomat Richard Queen, one of 53 Americans being held hostage in Iran, was released from captivity. He was flown to a military hospital in West Germany—where he was treated for neurological problems later diagnosed as multiple sclerosis.[121]

From top to bottom of the virtual government's paranormal corps, invasive mind control weapons are bound to lurk nearby. The SRI's "psychic" experiments were duplicated at the Navy Electronics Laboratory in San Diego, not in a tarot parlor—the test runs may well hve been technological, not paranormal. This much is strongly suggested by declassified, internal SRI documents identifying Puthoff and Targ as experimenters in "perceptual augmentation techniques" for the Institute's Electronics and Bioengineering Laboratory.[122]

Concrete evidence that electronic mind control was an object of study at SRI was exposed by the *Washington Post* on August 7, 1977. When the Navy awarded a contract to the Institute ...

> The scientific assistant to the Secretary of the Navy, Dr. Sam Koslov, received a routine briefing on various research projects, including SRI's.
>
> As the briefer flashed his chart onto the screen and began to speak, Koslov stormily interrupted, "What the hell is that about?" Among the glowing words on the projected chart, the section describing SRI's work was labeled,
>
> ELF AND MIND CONTROL
>
> "ELF" stands for "extremely [low] frequency" electromagnetic waves, from the very slow brain frequencies up to about 100 cycles per second.... But the "Mind Control" label really upset Koslov. He ordered the SRI investigations for the Navy stopped, and canceled another $35,000 in Navy funds slated for more remote viewing work.

Contrary to Koslov's attempt to kill the research, the Navy quietly continued to fork out $100,000 for a two-year project directed by a *bionics* specialist.[123]

Mind control is not a humanitarian pastime: it is military. As a rule, test subjects are treated with the same thorough disregard for human rights as the radiation tests conducted at the height of the Cold War.

The treatment subjects have received at the hands of their own government would be considered atrocities if practiced in wartime.

Mind control was also used in domestic covert operations designed to further the CIA's heady ambitions, and during the Vietnam War period SRI was a fount of covert political subterfuge.

The Symbionese Liberation Army, like the People's Temple, was a creation of the CIA. The SLA had at its core a clique of black ex-convicts from Vacaville Prison. Donald DeFreeze, otherwise known as "Cinque," led the SLA. He was formerly an informant for the LAPD's Criminal Conspiracy Section and the director of Vacaville's Black Cultural Association (BCA), a covert mind control unit with funding from the CIA channeled through SRI. The Menlo Park behavior modification specialists experimented with psychoactive drugs administered to members of the BCA. Black prisoners were programmed to murder selected black leaders once on the outside. The CIA/SRI zombie killer hit-list included Oakland school superintendent Dr. Marcus Foster and Panthers Huey Newton and Bobby Seale, among others.[124] DeFreeze stated that at Vacaville in 1971–72, he was the subject of a CIA mind control experiment. He described his incarceration on the prison's third floor, where he was corralled by CIA agents who drugged him and predicted that he would become "the leader of a radical movement and kidnap a wealthy person."[125] After his escape from Vacaville (an exit door was left unlocked), that's exactly what he did.

EM mind machines were championed at SRI by Dr. Karl Pribram, director of the Neuropsychology Research Laboratory: "I certainly could educate a child by putting an electrode in the lateral hypothalmus and then selecting the situations at which I stimulate it. In this was I can grossly change his behavior." *Psychology Today* hailed Pribram as "The Magellan of Brain Science." He obtained his B.S. and M.D. degrees from the University of Chicago and at SRI studied how the brain processes and stores sensory imagery.[126] He is credited with discovering that mental imaging bears a close resemblance to hologram projection (the basis for transmitting images to the brains of experimental subjects under the misnomer "remote viewing"?).

The Institute is joined incestuously to military-industrial sponsors. Former SRI Chairman E. Hornsby Wasson, for example, was a director of several major companies, including Standard Oil of California; he went on to become chairman of the Chamber of Commerce, and CEO of Pacific Telephone & Telegraph.

The SRI/SAIC psi experiments were supervised at Langley by John McMahon, second in command under William Casey, succeeding Bobby Ray Inman, the SAIC director. McMahon has, according to Philip Agee, the CIA whistle-blowing exile, an affinity for "technological exotics for CIA covert actions."[127] He was recruited by the Agency after his graduation from Holy Cross College (also the alma mater of CIA contractees Edward Bennett Williams, attorney, and Robert Maheu, hit man). He is a former director of the Technical Services Division, deputy director for Operations, and in 1982, McMahon was appointed deputy director of Central Intelligence. He left the Agency six years later to take the position of president of the Lockheed Missiles and Space Systems Group. In 1994, he moved on to Draper Laboratories. McMahon is a director of the Defense Enterprise Fund and an adviser to congressional committees.[128] This is not exactly the resumé of an eccentric spiritualist.

Many of the SRI "empaths" were mustered from L. Ron Hubbard's Church of Scientology. Harold Puthoff, the Institute's senior researcher, was once a leading Scientologist. Two "remote viewers" from SRI have also held rank in the Church: Ingo Swann, a Class VII Operating Thetan, a founder of the Scientology Center in Los Angeles, and the late Pat Price. Puthoff and Targ's lab assistant was a Scientologist married to a minister of the church. When Swann joined SRI, he stated openly that fourteen "Clears" participated in the experiments."[129] At the time, he denied CIA involvement, but now acknowledges, "it was rather common knowledge all along who the sponsor was, although in documents the identity of the Agency was concealed behind the sobriquet of 'an east-coast scientist.' The Agency's interest was quite extensive. A number of agents of the CIA came themselves ultimately to SRI to act as subjects in remote viewing experiments, as did some members of Congress."[130]

"If you recall," astronaut Edgar Mitchell, another participant in the experiments, reminded radio disinformation broker Art Bell on April 30, 1996, "back in the early 70s, I did work at SRI with Harold Puthoff and Russell Targ and Uri Geller, and I was invited to brief the CIA on our results. George Bush was head of the CIA at that time." (Mitchell was preaching to the choir—Bell's own background is strongly suggestive of military intelligence and advanced weapons involvement: his mother was a Marine drill instructor, his father a Marine officer. Bell served in the Air Force for a dozen years as a microwave electronics technician. He has also been employed by ITT in Nutley, NJ, a manufacturer of sophisticated radar and navigational devices for the military. The participation of ITT in cloaked CIA misadventures is widely documented.)

Mitchell spins a cocoon of metaphysical yarns as outrageously far-fetched as any of his SRI cronies. He claims to have traced the brain's center of ESP to native creativity, a "relationship that exists in nature, it's responsible for our inner-experience.... It involves the zero-point field, quantum physics, mystical experience, para-psychological functioning." The ubiquitous "aliens," he insists, are at the heart of the federal UFO cover-up, visitors from a civilization "a few million, or even a few billion years older than we are." His book *The Way of the Explorer* is chock-a-block with the astronaut's rambling metaphysical cover stories.

The Agency was reportedly so taken with the SRI experiments that the bankroll for "human augmentation" research swelled. Millions of dollars were thrown at "Grill Flame" under (DIA) and Navy auspices. The projects at SRI were augmented by a parapsychology team at Fort Meade in Maryland under INSCOM and the NSA. Military intelligence personnel were recruited, including Major Ed Dames. General Stubblebine ran the project and broadened it to include tarot cards and the channeling of "spirits." By this time, Puthoff and Swann left the Church of Scientology to join a spin-off religious movement. The DIA inherited Project Grill Flame.

A reporter for the BBC (requesting anonymity) offered a glimpse of the Army's remote viewing project at Fort Meade. He declares that he was given the "Official Line"—that is, "we were about to be used for disinformation. As soon as I started asking hard questions, the project was taken away from us and [given] to a far more docile broadcaster."

The British correspondent learned on the tour that medical oversight for the "remote viewing" experiments was provided by Dr. Louis Jolyon West, a retired professor of psychiatry at UCLA, one of the most notorious CIA mind control specialists in the country. Apart from monitoring the health of subjects, according to SRI spokesmen, Dr. West conducted his own experimental studies of the "phenomenology of dissociative states," or multiple personalities, at SRI. Dr. Colin Ross, a specialist in dissociative disorders, confirms that Dr. West's work for the CIA centered on the biology or personality of dissociated states.[131]

In "Pseudo-Identity and the Treatment of Personality Change in Victims of Captivity and Cults," "Jolly" West details the creation of "changelings," or dissociative personalities. "Prolonged environmental stress," UCLA's own CIA mind control specialist observes, "or life situations profoundly different from the usual, can disrupt the normally integrative functions of personality. Individuals subjected to such forces may adapt through dissociation by generating an altered persona, or pseudo-identity."

Patricia Hearst (examined by Dr. West for trial) hosted an alternate personality named "Pearl," he reports. The newspaper heiress was subjected to a corpus of trauma-based programmimg of a sort developed by CIA specialists (e.g. Dr. West):

> [Patricia], violently abducted by members of the [CIA-mustered] Symbionese Liberation Army in February of 1974, [was] brutalized, raped, tortured and forced to participate in illegal acts beginning with the bank robbery for which she was later (in our view wrongly) convicted. The traumatic kidnapping and subsequent two months of torture produced in her a state of emotional regression and fearful compliance with the demands and expectations of her captors.
>
> This was quickly followed by the coerced transformation of Patty into Tania and subsequently (less well known to the public) into Pearl, after additional trauma over a period of many months (Hearst & Moscow, 1988; *The Trial of Patty Hearst,* 1976). Tania was merely a role coerced on pain of death; *it was Pearl who later represented the pseudo-identity* which was found on psychiatric examination by one of us (West) shortly after Hearst's arrest by the FBI. Chronic symptoms of PTSD were also prominent in this case.[132]

Many survivors of CIA-sponsored experimentation have been left with multiple personalities induced at a tender age, and it is reported by subjects that the CIA can trigger electronically from a remote source to commit any act on cue—the ultimate Manchurian Candidate.

In *Such Things are Known,* electronic mind control subject Dorothy Burdick discusses one of Dr. West's writing partners, Dr. Jerome Siegal, another UCLA psychiatrist—the creator of FOCUS (the Flexible Optical Control Unit Simulator), a machine that projects images directly on the retina, rendering the image indistinguishable from reality. In 1968, Siegal published a monograph, "A Device for Chronically Controlled Visual Input," which describes a device that broadcasts visual images to the brain via the optic nerve.

Dr. William Sweet of Massachussetts General Hospital, another psychiatrist from the Louis J. West mind control circle, implanted four electrode strands in the brain of Leonard Kille, a referral misdinagnosed by Sweet and his colleagues as "epileptic" after losing his temper at his wife after learning that she'd been carrying on an affair with a boarder.

Dr. Sweet didn't lack credentials. He is the co-inventor of the PET scan, and he lists among the many accomplishments in his vitae the development of "the most frequently used procedure for the treatment of trigeminal neuralgia (radiofrequency lesioning of the trigeminal ganglion)." But Kille didn't know he'd been selected as a mind control test subject in Sweet's radio-frequency experiments, or that his doctor had no intention of treating his "disorder." The subject was partially paralyzed for life.

Oblivious to the destruction he'd visited upon Leonard Kille, Dr. Sweet crowed in medical journals that the procedure was a stunning success.

In 1995, Dr. Sweet's morbid medical curiosity caught the attention of the corporate media. Reporting was spotty. Dr. Sweet was not identified as a CIA asset.

> RELATIVES PREPARE SUIT OVER BRAIN TUMOR TREATMENT
> (*New York Beacon,* October 4, 1995)
>
> Cancer patients who underwent experimental radiation therapy blamed for killing at least 10 of them were unwitting pigs for doctors who knew it was useless, according to suit prepared on their behalf.
>
> Relatives of two patients who died in 1961 after brain tumor treatment at Massachusetts General Hospital and the Massachusetts Institute of Technology prepared the suit for filing today in U.S. District Court in New York.... The idea was to destroy tumors by injecting them with boron and exposing the chemical to a beam of neutrons, but the treatment was found to also kill brain tissue and blood vessels.
>
> "The early experiences were very unfortunate," Dr. Victor Bond, head of the medical department at Brookhaven, said in a 1982 interview cited in the suit.
>
> The suit maintains that none of the patients was told enough about the procedures to give consent....
>
> "It is a monstrous crime that Dr. William Sweet did, and I'm glad that he is still living so that he can be exposed, not as a great scientist, but as the monster that he is," Evelyn Heinrich [said].

Sweet's patients were treated to cancer-eating streams of boron radiation at the Brookhaven reactor. They were stretched out in a coffin-like trench in the concrete floor, their heads positioned over a hole and a nuclear reactor that blasted neutrons through their brains.

In his current resumé, Dr. Sweet boasts that he is a "major proponent of Boron Neutron Capture Therapy for brain tumors."

"We were really completely in the dark," Sweet told journalist Pete Carey from *U.S. News & World Report* (September 18, 1995), "as to what was going to happen." He is still in the dark, but that hasn't stopped Massachussetts General from reviving the experiments more than 30 years later. "Last September," Carey discovered, "researchers at Brookhaven National Laboratory in New York began treating 28 cancer patients with the procedure. Scientists there have developed an improved boron compound and a new neutron energy beam, reviving hopes for the treatment. More recently, a consortium of physicians leased an idled government nuclear reactor in Idaho. Their plan: to use the reactor [for] treatment of brain tumors. Despite those developments, critics say, [the] treatment is as *useless* now as it was 30 years ago."

Dr. Sweet's theories of brain surgery are not exactly geared toward healing, either, according to Peter Schrag in *Mind Control 1978*):

> Between 1968 and 1972, Vernon Mark, William Sweet and Frank Ervin reported on a series of cases purporting to show the effectiveness of psychosurgical procedures. One of them was a woman who, after two such operations, became enraged and refused any further psychosurgery. The doctors dismissed the rage as "paranoid," but they removed the electrodes and, noting her good mood and "high spirits," released her from the hospital to go shopping. She went directly to a phone booth, called her mother to say good-bye, took poison and killed herself. The doctors interpreted the suicide as an indication that she was functioning and therefore getting well, a "gratifying result of the operation."

Vernon Mark, Dr. Sweet's partner in psychosurgical crime, is currently the director of the Center for Memory Impairment and Neuro-Behavioral Disorders in Brookline, Massachussetts, and author of *Brain Power: A Neurosurgeon's Complete Program to Maintain and Enhance Brain Fitness Throughout Your Life* (Houghton Mifflin, 1989).

Under Dr. West's tutelage at UCLA, parapsychology experimentation of a sort was conducted by Kirlian aura researcher Thelma Moss, a writer for television and a human guinea-pig herself in LSD experiments conducted by the CIA in 1957. Three years later, as a UCLA psychology student, she designed protocols for her own LSD experiments under the supervision of Dr. Oscar Janiger.[133]

The CIA, of course, could not be far away. Dr. Janiger's supplier of the drug was the legendary Captain Al Hubbard, the "Johnny Appleseed of LSD." "Nothing of substance has been written about Al Hubbard," Janiger once said, "and probably nothing ever should."[134] Hubbard, a convicted rum-runner, had a knack for electronic communications. He was recruited by the OSS by agents of Allen Dulles and almost certainly reported to the CIA thereafter. Hubbard, an arch-conservative, joined SRI at the urging of Willis Harman, director of the

Institute's Educational Policy Research Center, ostensibly as a "security guard." Harman, an LSD experimenter himself, admits, "Al never did anything resembling security work." Hubbard was employed on the Alternative Futures Project, a "corporate strategy program."

"Al had a grandiose idea," a co-worker recalls, "that if he could give the psychedelic experience to the major executives of the Fortune 500 companies, he could change the whole of society."[135] Hubbard was a major supplier to universities sponsoring experimentation, and flooded the youth subculture he despised with LSD in the 1960s. The massive drug-dealing operation—at least as large as the government's—had Harmon's full support.

Among the labs closed in 1966 with the criminalization of LSD was Dr. Janiger's.[136] His protégé, Thelma Moss, continued to experiment with the hallucinogen as a psychotherapeutic tool, and later an ESP trigger and for experiments in "behavior modification."[136] Her increasingly bizarre interests led her to Kirlian photography and she christened a lab at UCLA under Dr. West.[137]

At least one volunteer in Moss's experiments alleges to have been led down a blind alley to lifelong torture. D.S. (requesting anonymity) appeared on Moss's doorstep in 1978. After the experiments, she was stricken by "back-to-back psychic experiences"—not true ones, she realized, but precognitive dreams "that had to be fed to me." (Subjects of EM assault frequently complain that their dreams are commandeered.) For fifteen years she walked through a barrage of novelty effects. The "psychic" episodes gradually gave way to torture, including head pains and endless hours of "persuasive coercion," the art of psychological paralysis honed by the CIA in the prison system. In 1994 she began to receive non-stop audio transmissions that still torment her, cybernetic "voices" registering on her brain's "primary frequency allocation," her own mental "channel."

The resident "psychic" at Moss's parapsychology lab was graduate student Barry Taff. Moss recalls that Taff had "the special gift" of falling into a trance at will. He is also a certified hypnotist.[138]

Israeli Schlomo Arnon, an electrical engineer on loan to Moss from the UCLA Physics Department, suggests on hindsight that Taff was familiar with the development of "non-lethal" weapons of the sort used in CIA mind control operations—decades before they were popularized by John Alexander and the military-intelligence "alien"-touting Aviary.

"In all the conversations with Taff, he and I were always on the same 'frequency,'" Arnon recalls. "Except for one occasion: He told me a story I will never forget, because it was so unusual. He said he was present in a military experiment, where a tank had been blown out by a laser beam at a distance of a few hundred yards. And this is in the mid-seventies! Now, I have never known him to lie to me. He did not have to tell me anything. I was never interested in anything else outside of the paranormal. If he really saw it, this is a technology that *even today* we don't admit that we have."[139]

The cryptic Barry Taff has gone on to become a noted UFOlogist, parapsychologist and screenwriter (*UFO Cover Up, Live!*).

Val Bankston, an abductee, met Taff in the course of seeking answers to her abuse by the ubiquitous "aliens."

"You may recognize the name Barry Taff," she says. "He consulted on a movie called *The Entity.* Shortly after we met, I was assaulted by a disembodied 'entity' during broad daylight [a "novelty effect' of electromagnetic harassment], who engaged in sexual acts with me. At the time, I believed that it was an incubus. Now, knowing what I do about Barry—the fact that he is a certified hypnotist, for one—I believe that Barry hypnotized both me and the other subject of his research leading to the movie *The Entity* into having these experiences. I believe that this woman and I may have been sexually assaulted, and caused to remember the sensations at a later date than the activities actually occurred. He probably did several women this way, and picked the one that was the best at bolstering his book and movie scheme."[140]

Another indication that military biotechnology, cyber-psi, was focal in Stargate research was the Agency's choice of the American Institutes of Research (AIR) in Washington, D.C. to evaluate the validity of "remote viewing." AIR could be counted on to keep the secrets. In the 1970s, the Army's Office of the Inspector General released declassified files disclosing a series of CIA-DoD behavior modification experiments conducted in prisons, mental hospitals and campuses from 1950 through 1971. The documents identified 44 laboratories enriched with public tax funds for secret, inhumane brain research. The first on the list was AIR.[141] SRI also received funding. An in-house "study" ensured CIA personnel would not be dragged in from the "cold."

Some of the aims of the research:

- Inducing toxic psychosis, terminal cancer, stress, sleep, headaches and chemical lobotomies.
- Developing foods that taste normal but stimulate fear and anxiety.
- The concoction of drugs to facilitate the brainwashing of civilians.
- Using LSD-25 and electrodes in the brain to pinpoint pain centers.

A number of SRI spin-offs have taken "remote viewing" into the private sector. A brochure for the Farsight Institute promotes the "alien" diversion:

> The Farsight Institute (TFI) was founded by Courtney Brown, Ph.D, in 1995, evolving from a research program that he conducted in the early 1990s, described in his book *Cosmic Voyage: A Scientific Discovery of Extraterrestrials Visiting Earth* (Dutton 1996). Dr. Brown's investigations began with his training in a remote viewing technology that had previously been used by the U.S. military during highly classified operations in the 1980s and 90s.
>
> Historically, the principal breakthroughs with this technology were made at Stanford Research Institute in the 1970s and 1980s by the gifted artist and natural psychic, Ingo Swann. The vision of The Farsight Institute is to promote the continued research and development of the most modern and effective forms of this continually evolving technology.

Other "remote viewing" gurus from the SRI program have sprung up like poison mushrooms around the country, ranting about the paranormal, scapegoating "aliens." The rhetoric is a serious development in mind control—cult programming for mass consumption. The populace is now subjected to the same crazed systems used to indoctrinate recruits of the mind control cults. Psi-Tech founder Ed Dames claimed on Art Bell's syndicated radio program that his company can comb the "collective unconscious" for answers to such mysteries as the origins of the AIDS virus. By scanning the "Global Mind," Dames claims, "we perceived massive global weather changes that preclude growing crops, a tremendous problem with epidemics and pandemics in Third World countries because it appears the ozone problem is increasing the mutation rate. We're perceiving a bovine AIDS that kills a lot of babies.

The future "gets grimmer after that."[142] It certainly did for the Rancho Santa Fe cult believing in Dames's "remote viewing" of the "Hale-Bopp spaceship"—"fantastic proof" of the group's far-fetched religious cosmology—they suicided.

Parapsychology, E.T.s and the "End Times" are not just for the tabloids anymore—the intelligence community wants you to believe ... *believe* ...

Like so many Cold War propagandists. In fact, current mind control disinformation has its foundations in anti-Communist propaganda. Lt. Col Thomas Beardon, an Army Reservist, was made to order in magazines published by the "Committee to Restore the Constitution" and other ultra-conservative organizations. Beardon had a loyal following. He made a career of writing about emergent Soviet EM mind control technology, but somehow it rarely seemed to cross his mind that the U.S. might be pursuing the same initiative. Beardon warned that the Soviets were developing weapons that generate "time-reversed (TR) electromagnetic waves," and were capable of launching a "TR Blitzkrieg War" of awful proportions. He warned grimly that the black-hearted Communists had their hands on "time-reversal" weapons that could "take Europe." A single flying Soviet "TR wave weapon," he claimed, was capable of knocking out all British and American radars. It could "kill personnel wholesale."[143]

Return of The Cabalistic Reich

There is a growth industry in electromagnetic assaults on the brain. "Some of the people trained for this computer science type of control," concludes San Francisco mind control researcher Elizabeth Russell-Manning, "are Werner Erhard graduates (EST), as well as students from many of the ivy league schools (University of California, Stanford M.I.T., etc.)."[144]

Jack Sarfatti, a physicist with a degree from Cornell—home of the CIA's Human Ecology Fund, the mind control funding pool—class of 1960: "I did graduate from an Ivy League school, where CIA finds many of its 'academics,'" Sarfatti says. "Couple that with the fact that my former professors at Cornell are the guys who built the bomb in the Manhattan project and that I was a National Defense Fellow. Just put two and two together and read between the lines the remark of British agent, Dennis Bardens, to me in 1974 at the Blue Boar Inn in Cambridge, England: 'Doctor Sarfatti, it is my duty to inform you of a psychic war raging across the continents between the Soviet Union and your country.'"

Connect the dots in Jack Sarfatti's recent journey through an Oz of mind control "mystics" and old-guard Nazis:

> I was back in Paris several weeks later [at] the swank Ritz Hotel. We waited in the lobby and a guy who looked like Richard Gere in a jump suit walks in with a woman. He says: 'Hi, I'm Werner Erhard.'... We flew to New York. Sharon and I spent a few days with Uri Geller, Ira Einhorn, Bob Toben, Sir John Whitmore and Andrija Puharich at Puharich's large house in Ossining.

Sarfatti stayed with his "literary agent," Ira Einhorn, and his "doomed girlfriend Holly Maddux." Einhorn took him on a junket to Arthur Young's mansion. Young, the inventor of the Bell Helicopter, had been a close friend of Charles Lindbergh, the pro-Nazi aviator. Young landed Paine a position at Bell Aircraft under former Nazi General Walter Dornberger, who oversaw V-2 development for the Nazis and was snatched from a death sentence at Nuremberg by the United States Air Force.[145]

Young was married to an heiress of the Forbes Steel fortune. He was also the sugar daddy of the Institute for the Study of Consciousness in Berkeley, California. The melange of cultists at Young's mansion was rife with intelligence intrigues and Nazi plots. Sarfatti:

> The estoids all seemed to be glassy-eyed and very creepy. I was not at all subservient to Werner in his presence like most of the academics that surrounded and apparently adored him.... Werner had fifteen loyal estoids in the Carter White House. [He] was very active with trainings of government people in Washington D.C.... Werner used remote-viewing in his training and he also contributed money to SRI for that project....
>
> Werner had me meet with several Stanford and U.C. faculty before he set up the Physics Consciousness Research Group at Esalen with me and Michael Murphy as co-directors. Michael arranged for Jean Lanier to supply me with money. Jean was a close friend of Laurance Rockefeller who would telephone the Nob Hill flat looking for her....
>
> I attended the est April Celebrity Training of 1975.... Sterling Hayden quickly walked out calling Werner a "Nazi" as he pushed away some estoids who tried to block his passage.... I was getting suspicious of Werner, especially after I heard the rumor that he said he changed his name from Jack Rosenberg to Werner Erhard to *"give up Jewish weakness for German strength."*
>
> I received a phone call from a man named George Koopman during one of our Esalen seminars in 1976.... He provided money through military contracts with the Air Force and the U.S. Army Tank Command funneled through his company Insgroup in Irvine, California.... I found out through one of my girlfriends that Koopman succeeded in spying on the Arica organization.... Arica was started in Chile by high ranking fugitives from the Third Reich who were masters of the occult. Many of the regulars at Esalen including some of our group like Dr. John Lilly and Claudio Naranjo had been in the first Arica training in Chile. Timothy Leary was released from prison. Leary became part of my group at Esalen. Leary was a close friend of Michael Murphy....
>
> I walked into the Caffe Trieste one day in 1979. A young girl Maiti said she had written a poem about me. We soon started dating. She said her father [Robert Dickson Crane] was a "senior policy planner" in the government.... She showed me a photograph of her grandfather who was German [Nazi] General Hans Rudel during World War Two [and an ODESSA leader]. Her father had

> met her mother while on Army duty after the war.... Her father was an Arabic-speaking expert in Middle-East affairs with high level contacts... She also said that her father was a close friend of conservative Pat Buchanan....
>
> My adventures with two more women during this period are worth mentioning.... One named Crystal picked me up in the Caffe Trieste. She was a statuesque blonde in a low cut green evening dress. Crystal said she belonged to a Coven of Beautiful Witches who wanted me to be their Warlock. I later found out that Crystal knew another girl friend of mine from Esalen named Betty Andreason. I have since heard of a woman by that name who claims to have been abducted by UFOs....
>
> Was Jan telling the truth about the Fourth Reich using Arica to influence the New Age? Brewer was part of the original Esalen group of forty that went to Chile for the first Arica training.[146]

Sarfatti makes no bones about the involvement of the CIA in his "occult" projects. He has identified the late Harold Chipman, a former CIA station chief, as the middle-man in funding to SRI's remote viewing lab and even Uri Geller.[147] Chipman served in Laos in the mid-1960s. In Vietnam, he was the director of all CIA operations in Nha Trang. After the war, he was assigned to Moscow, Berlin and Miami.[148]

Sarfatti looks back on his involvement with the mind control sector as if he has severed all bonds. "I was then simply a young, inexperienced, naive 'useful idiot' in a very very sophisticated and successful covert psychological warfare operation run by the late Brendan O. Regan of the Institute of Noetic Sciences and the late Harold Chipman, who was the CIA station chief responsible for all mind-control research in the Bay Area in the 70s. Chipman (aka 'Orwell') funded me openly for awhile in 1985 when he was allegedly no longer in the CIA, and covertly before that, and told me much of the story. In fact, he even introduced me to a beautiful woman adventurer-agent who was one of his RV subjects who later became my live-in 'significant other.'"

In fact, Chipman was one of Sarfatti's numerous contacts in the murky intelligence world. His resumé boasts that he was "consulted" on the physics of "remote-viewing," Strategic Defense Initiative, and other classified matters for several U.S. intelligence agencies and policy think tanks (e.g., A.L. Chickering of the Institute for Contemporary Studies in San Francisco, and CIA propagandist Robert Conquest of the Hoover Institution at Stanford on the new paperback edition of *Special Tasks* by former KGB officer Sudoplatov)." Conquest was exposed in 1967 as a CIA disinformation agent for Melvin Lasky's Congress for

Cultural Freedom, the publisher of *Encounter,* a pasty academic loaf of white-bread political commentary, during the Cold War. Conquest currently grinds out slippery pro-business tirades disparaging Soviet Communism and the American Left,[149] a genré of opinion-shaping that went out with the Wooly Mammoth but has been resurected with the "conservative" propaganda onslaught of the 1990s.

The Arica Institute bills itself as "a mystical school" for "spiritual transformation" through meditation, gymnastic "psychocalisthenics" (sic), nonverbal communication and group theater.[150] Oscar Ichazo, the institute's founder, teaches a hodge-podge of Zen, Sufism, Yoga, I Ching and Buddhism. The symbol adopted by Ichazo for Arica resembles a top-heavy pentagram, known as the Enneagon, representing "a body of practical and theoretical knowledge in the form of a nine-level hierarchy of training programs aimed at the total development of the human being."[151] Ichazo held his first Arica seminar in Chile in 1971. It was attended by Charles Tart, LSD experimenter Lilly (then studying on a fellowship at the Center for Advanced Study in the Behavioral Sciences in Palo Alto), Naranjo and about 45 Sufi poseurs. Since, some 40 training centers have surfaced in the U.S., South America, Europe and Australia.

Arica is a small cloud in a big sky. But as the Pentagon's psychotronic arsenal proliferates, so do the victims of illicit experimentation and harassment.

Meanwhile, back in the USSR, Georgey Georgyevich Rogozin, a former Soviet undercover officer and occultist, was named a ranking general in May, 1995 by Boris Yeltsin. It was said that Rogozin "terrorized" Kremlin bureaucrats. He was given free reign in his occult studies, which included 'reading thoughts at a distance, obtaining information by way of analyzing man's biological electric field.'" The CIA has followed these developments closely ...[152]

Notes

1. Interview, Art Bell radio program, December 7, 1995.
2. "Ed Dames Challenges Government on Remote Viewing," CNI News, vol. 13, part 1, ISCNI News Center, December 7, 1995. Also, ABC Nightline, November 28, 1995.
3. Psi-Tech literature and Bell interview.
4. CNI Report.
5. Leonard Buchanon, "Who is Dave Morehouse, Ph.D.?" a hand-out from ProblemsSolutions-Innovations (PSI), a "psychic viewing" firm in Mechanicsville, Maryland run by Buchanon.
6. Debby Stark, "Talking to Ed Dames," *Mufon News,* nos. 6 & 7, June–July 1993.

7. *CounterSpy,* Spring 1980, p. 46. Listed in Ralph McGeehee's CIA-Base.
8. *Counterspy,* Spring 1980, pp. 45–46.
9. Michael H. Shapiro, "Legislating the Control of Behavior Control," *Southern California Law Review,* vol. 47, February 1974, no. 2, p. 240.
10. Barton Ingraham and Gerald Smith, "The Use of Electronics in the Observation and Control of Human Behavior and its Possible Use in Rehabilitation and Parole," *Issues in Criminology,* vol. 7: no. 2, Fall 1972.
11. *Science,* Sept. 21, 1917, p. 173.
12. Townsend T. Brown, "How I Control Gravity," *Science and Invention,* August 1929, and *New York Times,* February 18, 1929. Also of note: "The Townsend Brown Electro-Gravity Device — A Comprehensive Evaluation by the Office of Naval Research," September 15, 1952, and Gaston Burridge, "Another Step Toward Anti-Gravity," *American Mercury,* June 1958, p. 77. "After the mid-1950's to the present, no other information regarding the technology of electrodynamics and its effect on gravity have been [found] in any of the unclassified U.S. literature." — James Hartman file, Future Science Administration.
13. Hartman file.
14. Paul Arthur Schilpp, *Albert Einstein: Philosopher-Scientist* [3rd ed.], LaSalle, Ill., Open Court, 1979, pp. 522–23.
15. See, for example, Marco Cavaglia, "Quantum Electromagnetic Wormholes and Geometrical Description of the Electric Charge," *Plain Tex, Report* no. SISSA 92/94/A, 13 pp., and Racz Istvan, "Maxwell Fields in Spacetimes Admitting Non-Null Killing Vectors," PACS nos. 04.20.Cv, 04.20.Me, 04.40+c.
16. Dennis L. Cravens, "Electric Propulsion Study," AL-TR-89-040, Scientific Applications International Corporation (SAIC) for the former Astronautics Lab, Air Force Space Technology Center, Edwards AFB, August 1990.
17. R.L. Talley, "Twenty-First Century Propulsion Concept," PL-TR-91-3009, Air Force Systems Command, Phillips Laboratory, Propulsion Directorate, Edwards AFB, May 1991.
18. *Orvotron Newsletter,* March/April, 1994.
19. Ken Lawrence, "Flim-Flam," *Covert Action Information Bulletin,* no. 21, Spring 1984, p. 44. Also, Targ and Harary's *Mind Race.*
20. Tom Agoston, *Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Super-Secrets to Russia,* New York: Dodd, Mead & Co., 1985, p. 4.
21. Ibid., p. 9.
22. Ibid., p. 8.
23. Renato Vesco & David Hatcher Childress, *Man-Made UFOs, 1944–1994,* Stelle, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Publishers, 1994, p. 110.
24. Ibid., p. 134.
25. Ibid., pp. 85–86.

26. Mae Brussell, "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination," (1983) in *A Mae Brussell Anthology,* Prevailing Winds Research, Santa Barbara, California.
27. Vescoe & Childress., p. 162. For Colonel Putt's promotion of the Nazi scientists to higher-ups, see Tom Bower, *The Paperclip Conspiracy: The Hunt for the Nazi Scientists,* Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1987.
28. Bower, pp. 89 & 155.
29. Mike Davis, *City of Quartz,* London, Verso, 1990, pp. 59–62.
30. "Eight Inducted into AIA's Hall of Honor," Air Force Intelligence Association Headquarters, Kelly Air Force Base, Texas, a publicity release concerning ceremonies held on September 30, 1995, highlighting the reunion of the Freedom Through Vigilance Association.
31. Agoston, pp. 58–59.
32. Milton Goldin, "Speer Carrier," *The Intelligent Guide to Jewish Affairs* (a biweekly newsletter), no. 54, January 3, 1996. Speer consistently denied that he was privy to the Holocaust. Yet he was, on a daily basis, "wide awake and in constant touch with Himmler and SS chiefs intimately involved with mass murder, robbery and slavery. He constantly demanded more slaves for his factories, made deals with the SS to obtain them, and visited camps where all he claims to have noticed were prisoners hard at work."
33. Anthony L. Kimory, "The Secret Life of Fred L. Crisman," *UFO Magazine,* vol. 8: no. 5, 1993, pp. 34–38.
34. SKBI (a group of involuntary subjects exploited in electromagnetic mind control experiments or harassed for falling into disfavor with the intelligence sector) Report, *Intelligence Community's Use of Mind-Control and Thought-Manipulation,* pp. 44–45.
35. Alvin Moscow, *The Rockefeller Inheritance,* New York: Doubleday, 1977, p. 178.
36. Ibid., p. 126.
37. Ferdinand Lundberg, *The Rockefeller Syndrome,* Secaucus, New Jersey: Lyle Stuart, 1975, pp. 266–68.
38. Moscow, p. 178.
39. Moscow, pp. 126–27. Among the aircraft firms and suppliers in which a sizable share is held by Laurance Rockefeller, count Airborne Instruments Laboratory, Wallace Aviation, Marquardt Aircraft, Flight Refueling, Airborne Instruments Laboratory, New York Airways, Eastern Airlines, Piasecki Helicopter and so on. Lundberg, p. 267.
40. Richard F. Kaufman, *The War Profiteers,* New York, Bobbs-Merrill, 1970, p. 27.
41. Ibid., p. 89.
42. Richard S. Broughton, communications specialist for the Institute for Parapsychology, Rhine Research Center, Duke University, personal correspondence, January 29, 1996.

43. "History of the Rhine Research Center," Duke University Parapsychology Lab public release.
44. Bruce Oudes, *From: The President—Richard Nixon's Secret Files,* New York: Harper & Row, 1989, p. 142.
45. Dorothy Burdick, *Such Things Are Known,* New York: Vantage Press, 1982.
46. Michàel Rossman, "On Some Matters of Concern in Psychic Research," in *Psychic Warfare: Fact or Fiction,* Guildford, Surrey, Aquarian Press.
47. Martin Cannon, "Selections from a DIA Report on Soviet Parapsychology Research," *Mind Control: A Reader Compiled by the Editors of Prevailing Winds Research,* Santa Barbara, Prevailing Winds, 1994, p. 69.
48. Rossman, p. 142.
49. D.C. Hammond," "Hypnosis in MPD: Ritual Abuse," delivered at the Fourth Annual Eastern Regional conference on Abuse and Multiple Personality, Radisson Plaza Hotel, Mark Center, Alexandria, Virginia, June 25, 1992, .
50. Martin Cannon, unpublished chapters from *The Controllers,* February, 1996. "The 'ESP' connection is suggestive," Cannon argues. "The MK-ULTRA documents betray an astonishing interest on the part of the intelligence agencies in matters parapsychological."
51. C.P., "A Victim of CIA Mind Control: Political Asylum," *MindNet Journal,* vol. 1, no. 33, December 4, 1995.
52. Ralph Losey, "The Problem of the Subtle Sybil Effect," ms.
53. Keeler essay.
54. James and Joyce Frazer, "How Radiofrequency Waves Interact with Living Systems," *21st Century,* March–April, 1988, p. 51.
55. Resumé of Robert G. Jahn, professor and dean, Princeton University Engineering Quadrangle.
56. Eliot Handelman, "Biophysics of Infrasound," request for information posting, WWW, McGill University, January 27, 1994.
57. S.V. Alekseev, et.al, "Myocardial Ischemia in Rats During Exposure to Infrasound," *Zabolevaniia,* August 1983, pp. 34–38. Abstract on file at the NASA Life Sciences Division.
58. Gerald Frost and Dalvin Shipbaugh, *GPS Targeting Methods for Non-Lethal Systems,* Rand Publication, RP-262, 2-1-94, p. 3.
59. A. J. Weberman, "Mind Control: The Story of Mankind Research Unlimited, Inc.," *Covert Action Information Bulletin,* no. 9 (June 1980), p. 16.
60. Bower, p. 160.
61. James Bamford, *The Puzzle Palace: Inside the National Security Agency: America's Most Secret Intelligence Organization,* Middlesex, UK: Penguin, 1982, p. 98.

62. News item, "DELUSIONS: Flying Saucers Again," *Newsweek,* April 17, 1950, p. 29.
63. Bower, p. 86. Also see, Val Germann, "Know Your UFO Players!" *UFO,* vol. 10: no. 1, February 1995, p. 24.
64. Bamford, p. 427.
65. Germann, p. 24.
66. Vesco, p. 18.
67. Timothy Good, *Above Top Secret: The Worldwide UFO Cover-Up,* New York: William Morrow, 1988, pp. 336–38.
68. Davis, pp. 59–62.
69. Michael Howard, *The Occult Conspiracy: Secret Societies—Their Influence and Power in World History,* Rochester, Vermont: Destiny, 1989, p. 112.
70. Ibid., p. 133–34.
71. Frater Cernunnos, "The OTO After Crowley's Death," from the secretary's office, OTO's Albion Lodge, London, England.
72. Anonymous., "Intelligence Services are Not So Intelligent, or The OTO Since Crowley's Death," undated pages from *The Oriflame,* c. 1987.
73. Maury Terry, *The Ultimate Evil: An Investigation into America's Most Dangerous Satanic Cult,* New York: Dolphin, 1987.
74. Lucian K. Truscott IV, "Even in Arcadia" *Vague,* London, England, no. 18–19, Spring 1989, p. 128. Truscott writes that the sado-masochistic sex was part of the cult's personal brand of "perverse sacraments, practices that the [Manson] Family held in great esteem. At the Tate house, Susan Atkins licked the blood of Sharon Tate off her fingers."
75. Terry.
76. Background information in this section was culled from stories about James Bulger appearing in the *Boston Globe* for September 20, 1988; January 1, 1994; March 5, 1995; August 1, 1995; August 15, 1995; January 5, 1996; January 27, 1996.
77. *West's New York Legal Supplement,* second series, 176 A.D. 2d 362, People v. Savona case file, N.Y.S.2d 595 (A.D. 2 Dept. 1991), pp. 595–596. Also, Dr. Adolph Goldman, M.D., New York Supreme Court-ordered psychiatric evaluation, March 10, 1988.
78. Thomas Savona, letter to Maitefa Angaza c/o the *City Sun,* New York, January 19, 1994.
79. Thomas Savona, letter to Cardinal O'Connor, April 15, 1992.
80. Goldman.
81. Student transcript of Thomas Savona, Sullivan County Community College, January 3, 1994.
82. Burton H. Wolfe, *The Devil's Avenger: A Biography of Anton Szandor LaVey,* New York: Pyramid Books, pp. 66–67.

83. Blanche Barton, *Secret Life of a Satanist: the Authorized Biography of Anton LaVey,* Los Angeles: Feral House, 1990. p. 23.
84. "Leary Gave prisoners Drugs, Newspaper Says," *Orange County Register,* January 2, 1994, p. 24, after a story that appeared in the *Boston Globe* a day or two before.
85. "Leary Admits He was CIA Agent," *Freedom,* May, 1975 (the interviewer was Walter Bowart).
86. "EPA Joins Probe of Odd Signals," *Chico Enterprise-Record,* March 28, 1978, p. 1.
87. Steven Levy, *The Unicorn's Secret: Murder in the Age of Aquarius,* New York: Prentice Hall, 1988, pp. 128–29.
88. John L. Wilhelm, "Psychic Spying?—The CIA, the Pentagon and the Russians Probe the Military Potential of Parapsychology," *Washington Post,* August 7, 1977.
89. Levy, pp. 166–67.
90. Russell Targ and Keith Harary, *Mind Race: Understanding and Using Psychic Abilities,* New York: Ballantine, 1984, p. 121.
91. Ibid., p. 124.
92. Michael Meiers, *Was Jonestown a CIA Medical Experiment?: A Review of the Evidence,* Lampeter, Dyfed, Wales, Mellen House, UK, 1988, p. 468.
93. Ibid., p. 468–69.
94. Ibid.
95. Targ and Harary, p. 127.
96. Meiers, p. 470.
97. Weberman.
98. Ibid.
99. R.F. Haines, *Advanced Aerial Devices Reported During The Korean War,* Los Altos, California, LDA Press, 1990, p. 54.
100. Deborah Lutterbeck, "White House Alien Policy," *Common Cause,* October–December, 1995.
101. Robert J. Durant, "Will the Real Scott Jones Please Stand Up?" Paranet Information Service, Denver, Colorado, September 5, 1993.
102. "Admiral Hardisty Elected President of Kaman Aerospace International," Kaman Corp. press release, September 18, 1995.
103. Kaman SEC report, March, 1996.
104. Howard Watson Ambruster, *Treason's Peace: German Dyes and American Dupes,* New York: Beechhurst Press, 1947. p. 386.
105. Kenneth Timmerman, *Death Lobby: How the West Armed Iraq,* New York: Houghton Mifflin, 1991, pp. 359–61.
106. Richard Lacayo, "Did Bush Create this Monster?" *Time,* June 8, 1992, p. 41.
107. James Mills, interviewed by Ray Briehm, KABC-AM, Los Angeles, October 19, 1990.

108. Jack Sarfatti, "In the Thick of It!" Internet posting by Jack Saratti, p. 3.
109. Durant.
110. Andrew Giarelli, "The Last Prince," *World Press Review,* January 1, 1994, p. 28. For information on the $200,000 donation from Laurance Rockefeller to John Mack, see Deborah Letterbeck, October, 1995 number of *Common Cause.*
111. Paul McLaughlin, "ET: The Extraterrestrial Therapist," *Saturday Night,* vol. 110: June 1, 1995, p. 44.
112. "The Harvard Professor and the UFOs," *Psychology Today,* March/April 1994.
113. Durant.
114. Armen Victorian, correspondence with Gilbert Ortiz, Los Alamos, NM, February 14, 1994.
115. Meiers, p. 390.
116. D. St. Clair, *The Psychic World of California,* Garden City, New York: Doubleday, 1972, p. 315.
117. Joel Greenberg, "Jim Jones: The Deadly Hypnosis," *Science News,* vol. 116, December 1, 1979, p. 378.
118. Meiers, p. 320.
119. Russell and Targ, p. 310.
120. Promotional literature for *Neuro Transmissions,* a newsletter edited by Harary on "emerging topics in psychology, neuroscience, and many other fields." Also, Julian Guthrie, "Tapping Our Psychic Powers," *San Francisco Examiner,* December 24, 1995.
121. Guthrie.
122. Harold Puthoff and Russell Targ, final report on perceptual augmentation experiments for the period January 1974 through February 1975, Project 3183, SRI, Menlo Park, CA, approved for release, July 1995.
123. Wilhelm.
124. Mae Brussell, "Why was Patricia Hearst Kidnapped?" *The Realist,* undated copy from 1974.
125. Brussell, undated taped lecture in 1974.
126. Elizabeth Russell-Manning, ed., in *Mass Mind Control of the American People: Conspiracy & Cover-Up of the State & Federal Government,* published by the author, 1993: 1600 Larking Street, San Francisco, California 94109, p. 16.
127. Philip Agee and Louis Wolf, *Dirty Work: The CIA in Western Europe,* New York: Dorset Press, 1978, p. 307.
128. Lockheed Co. press release, "Missiles & Space Company, Inc., Founders and Presidents."
129. Wilhelm.

130. Ingo Swann, "The Emergence of Project SCANATE—The First Espionage-Worthy Remote Viewing Experiment Requested by the CIA (Summer, 1973)" ms., sci.psychology.misc. newsgroup, posted January 24, 1996.
131. BBC reporter, correspondence with the author, January 29, 1996.
132. Louis Jolyon West, "Pseudo-Identity and the Treatment of Personality Change in Victims of Captivity and Cults," in *Dissociation: Clinical and Theoretical Perspectives,* Lynn, SJ and Rhue JW, eds. (Guilford Press, 1994).
133. Thelma Moss, *The Body Electric: A Personal Journey into the Mysteries of Parapsychological Research, Bioenergy and Kirlian Photography,* Los Angeles: St. Martin's, 1979, pp. 27–8.
134. Todd Brendan Fahey, "The Original Captain Trips," *High Times,* November 1991.
135. Ibid.
136. Moss, p. 33.
137. Moss, p. 124.
138. Val Bankston, an abductee, correspondence with the author, July 7, 1996.
139. Shlomo Arnon, correspondence with the author, July 7, 1996.
140. Bankston.
141. Mae Brussell, "Why Did Allen Dulles Buy 100,000 Doses of Acid?" *Mind Control,* Santa Barbara, CA, Prevailing Winds Research, 1994, p. 7.
142. Bell program.
143. Thomas Beardon, "Soviet Phase Conjugate Weapons: Weapons that Use Time-Reversed Electromagnetic Waves," *Bulletin* (Committee to Restore the Constitution newsletter), January 1988, p. 1.
144. Manning.
145. Letter from Mike Coyle, editor of *MindNet,* to Jack Sarfatti, January 26, 1997.
146. Sarfatti. On February 21, 1995, Nightline reported that a cultist borrowing from the Werner Erhard formula of huckster psychologizing conned an excess of $1 million from the Federal Aviation Administration (FAA). Gregory May, a disciple of the Ramtha sect (whose leader supposedly channels the wisdom of a 35,000 year-old master), dressed exactly like Erhard and closely imitated his speech and gestures.

    "Was a cult training government employees?" asked the ABC program listing for February 21, 1995. "*Nightline* will reveal the results of a forthcoming investigation by the FAA Inspector General. FAA employees had bizarre training techniques imposed on them by an outside contractor with clear connections to the Ramtha cult located in Washington State. Gregory May was hired to train senior executives of the FAA. ABC News *Nightline* has learned that over five years, May put executives through bizarre training rituals; had control over appointments and was able to continue being funded without competitive bidding."

147. Sarfatti Internet post, "Harold Chipman and Remote Viewing," September 9, 1995.
148. Ralp McGeehee's CIABase.
149. "An Insufficiency of Frankness," *Nation,* May 29, 1967, p. 678. Also, Matthew D'Ancona, "Why I am Still Fighting My Cold War," *London Times,* April 9, 1993, p. 12, and Alexander Werth, "Literary Bay of Pigs," *Nation,* June 5, 1967, p. 678.
150. Arica Institute brochure, "The Arica System of Spiritual Transformation," an introductory program sponsored by the Associates for Inner-Maturity in San Diego.
151. "Arica Institute, Inc., Plaintiff v. Helen Palmer and Harper & Row," no. 771, docket 91-7859, U.S. Court of Appeals, Second Circuit, January 30, 1991 (a trademark dispute).
152. Martin Sieff, "Reputed Rasputin Advises Yeltsin—Ex-KGB Officer Dabbles in Occult," *Washington Times,* 24 May 1995, A-16.

The Search for the MANCHURIAN Preschooler

In September 1995, a psychology conference held in Los Angeles explored the treatment of children subjected to experiments by the CIA's mind control fraternity. Topics on the conference itinerary included discussions of torture-based programming, the treatment of multiplicity and the remote control of human automata ...

Time Machine: Singed Synapses, Muffled Scream

The debris of Berlin smoldered. The American intelligence "services" quietly courted Nazis and their Quislings in the Soviet satellites. Some 5,000 European "anti-Communists," according to the *Washington Post* for June 9, 1982, quietly emigrated to the United States. In the early days of television, young Ronald Reagan's fund-raising acumen was tapped by the "Crusade for Freedom," a CIA front. The then "liberal" celluloid cut-out and FBI informant appeared in a cameo spot to talk viewers out of their hard-earned dollars to fund the migration of East European "freedom fighters" to the United States—these paragons were really diehard Nazis. The CIA, Pentagon and an army of Nazi recruits have since consummated an ideological bond that has held in sickness and in stealth.

In 1950, the Agency tooled up for a battery of mind control experiments on human guinea pigs, underwritten by a network of scientific foundations and academic fronts. Neuropsychiatrists at Tulane, McGill, Yale, UCLA and Harvard, some of them laboring beside the Nazi imports, researched the use of brain implants to control behavior. Dozens of books and articles have since appeared describing grim laboratory experiments—none chronicle the use of children in The Firm's mind control initiative (in part, presumably, because journalists never imagined children could be used in such a bloodthirsty way).

An article written in the 1960s by Dr. José Delgado, a Yale psychiatrist hailing from Franco's Spain, detailed his experiments on an 11-year-old boy with electrodes implanted in his brain. Dr. Delgado stimulated his young subject's synapses with a radio transmitter at a range of 100 feet. The boy was immediately stripped of his sexual identity, reporting that he wasn't sure if he was a boy or a girl.

One survivor recalls that she'd been instructed to address her CIA programmer as "Herr Doctor."

Some of the children subjected to the experimentation, according to New Orleans psychologist Valerie Wolf, were fragmented by trauma-based programming into a spate of alternate personalities. "Most of these patients responded to certain sounds," Wolf reported in testimony to the President's Advisory

Committee on Radiation Experiments on March 15, 1995, "clickers, metronomes or just clicking the tongue or hand clapping. Patients would vacillate from calm to robotically asking, 'Who do you want me to *kill*?'"

They were triggered to attempt suicide and attack the therapist, or march out of the office in a fugue state to assassinate somebody.

Claudia Mullens, a survivor of the experiments, testified at the Advisory Committee hearings about a trip in 1959 to the Deer Creek camp in Maryland, then used to train child prostitutes for sexual blackmail operations. At the camp, she was the "guest" of a Mr. Sheiber, an alias of the CIA's notorious LSD*meister* Dr. Sidney Gottleib:

> Most of the men I came to know well were either there as observers or volunteer targets. We were taught different ways to please men and at the same time ask questions to get them to talk about themselves. Then we had to recall everything about them....
>
> After this trip, I mainly went to hospitals, Army or Air Force bases or universities or the hotels in New Orleans and a place called the TRIMS facility in Texas.

The sole CIA official not briefed on the cabin and Dr. Gottlieb's child prostitution ring was John McCone, a former director who might have objected to the use of seven-year-old girls to gather information and ply their training in sexually "coercive techniques."

Weeping in the Playtime of Others, by former Princeton scholar Ken Wooden, describes a mental institution near Dallas, Texas that conducted freakish sensory deprivation experiments on retarded children of military personnel:

> On the grounds I noticed a strange structure with heavy, black plastic covering all the windows. That evening, a former house parent told me it was the private domain of a Dr. Snapp, who believes that the children are not retarded, but that their intellectual development has been aborted by birth.
>
> Dr. Snapp believes he has restructured the mother's womb with totally darkened rooms, and he places the child there to grow.
>
> Donna Parrish came close to dying in her "womb." When her parents removed her after four weeks in this atmosphere, they found her body covered with sores.

"Most patients," Wolf testified at the Advisory Committee hearings, "reported neo-Nazi alter personalities who believed in the coming of the next Reich."

Other symptoms of survivors include grand mal epileptic seizures with a temporary cessation of breathing. Doctors managed to strap one survivor to an EEG machine in the midst of a seizure—his brain waves registered normal—in other words, the fit was not a true grand mal, but a body memory of electric shocks years after the torture occurred.

ECT, the invention of Dr. Ugo Cerletti, another Spanish fascist, was often applied to various parts of the body, Wolf says, "usually the physical places that do not readily show or in tissue that heals quickly." High technology was combined with drugs, hypnosis and torture to create alter personalities. Years before Silicon Valley introduced virtual-reality computerware, children by the score told psychotherapists they'd been forced to wear goggles that flashed 3-D images of horror and death.

Cult Abuse of Children and Mind Control Programming

In the mid-1960s, Langley's spychologists feared exposure. Newspaper reporters had caught wind of Auschwitzian behavioral modification research funded by the government. Congress was asking questions. The thugs at Langley scratched their heads. It was only a matter of time before an inquisitive reporter exposed the rot of mind control.

The solution: CIA scientists bugged out of the laboratory. The experiments were moved into the community, hidden, like the flying saucers, in plain sight. Eccentric religious groups were organized or co-opted by intelligence operatives, including the People's Temple, the Symbionese Liberation Army, Ordo Templis Orientis (OTO), Finders, Solar Temple and the Bhagwan Shree Rajneesh Movement, among others.

In 1966 Charles Buckey built a preschool in Manhattan Beach, California. Buckey was an engineer at Hughes Aircraft (a household crack of the period: "Hughes *is* the CIA").

The McMartin mind control operation was reportedly the work of an intelligence cult.

The sect is said to be a cut-out of the American security elite's mind control fraternity. It isn't unique. There is much intermingling. Janet Morris, for instance, a science fiction writer and charter member of the Association for Electronic Defense, is a member of the Subud sect, an interdemonational group with roots in Indonesia. She is also research director of the U.S. Global Strategy Council, a Washington "think tank" founded by ultra-conservatives Claire

Booth Luce, Gen. Maxwell Taylor, Gen. Richard Stillwell, former CIA Deputy Director Ray Cline and the abrasive Jeanne Kirkpatrick, among other representatives of virtual government. In 1991, Morris traveled to Russia to study a technological marvel that transmits subliminal command messages over the low frequency infrasound band. Political researcher Armen Victorian discovered that with·the Russian "psycho-correction" transmitter, "subliminal messages bypass the conscious level and are effective almost immediately." Another prominent member of the Subud sect, according to informants, is an executive of Mattell—a leading maker of virtual reality computer games for children, similar to the ones used by CIA scientists to traumatize young subjects. Children at the school mentioned balloon rides, elephants and clowns—were these virtual reality episodes, like the ones reported by Valerie Wolf? Other Subudians include executives of TRW and Hanna-Barbara, a cartoon company founded by OSS agents.

The CIA's hired guns in the media, and front groups like the False Memory Syndrome Foundation (with its shadow chairman Martin Orne, a veteran of the Agency's pedophile/blackmail ring, according to Claudia Mullens), have mustered support for the defendants in the McMartin case by distorting the children's testimony in the press.

It is conveniently forgotten that after the hung jury verdict was delivered in the second trial of Ray Buckey, *all* jurors at a press conference raised their hands when asked by reporters if they believed children had been abused at McMartin. It had simply not been proven that Buckey was the perpetrator, they said.

Tunnels unearthed beneath the preschool in 1990—60 feet of them, according to *five* independent scientists from local universities—corroborate the testimony of the children.

The McMartin disclosures to parents and psychologists are identical to those of children victimized in the formative years of the CIA's mind-splintering laboratory experiments.

Oliver Stone was drawn into producing a film, *Indictment,* conceived by screenwriter Abby Mann and aired by HBO earlier this year. Mann, the Emmy-winner, is also credited with the writing of *Judgment at Nuremberg*—unfortunately, there was no justice at the Nazi war crimes tribunal. Mann's specialty as a manipulator of public opinion is damage control of blowback from the Nazi diaspora. One of the best-selling Hollywood biographers in the country offers that Abby Mann does not really write screenplays but employs ghostwriters to produce the scripts in his name, an allegation confirmed by researcher Donald Freed.

Indictment conceals the fact that ritual child abuse is a legacy of The Firm's work in torture-based programming.

Treating Mind Controlled Children

On September 30, about 100 psychologists, mostly from the western states, convened at the Biltmore Hotel in Los Angeles for a three-day conference on "Mind Control, Multiplicity and Ritual Abuse." Each of the therapists have patients who have been tormented by cult cut-outs. Conference organizer Catherine Gould, a child psychologist from Encino, California, gave the keynote tour of a programmed multiple's "landscape of alters."

"In most instances," she said, "the alters are cult aligned. They are caught up in the underworld of mind control and know no other life. It isn't unusual for a patient to have an alter who reports to the cult everything said in the last therapy session."

But programmed alters are not the enemy. "They have experienced horror. Sexual abuse may be only one part of the traumatization pattern. Mind control is originally established when the victim is a child under six years old. During this formative stage of development, the perpetrator systematically combines dissociation-enhancing drugs, pain, sexual assault, terror and other forms of psychological abuse in such a way that the child dissociates the intolerable traumatic experience. The exception is the child who cannot dissociate and has been exposed to horror, disintegration and psychological death. The worst perpetrator is rage-based, disconnected from the core personality, and in the course of programming disdain for the victim is instilled in the alter personality. The mother herself may be a cult multiple and an amnestic. "

Mind control programming is deeply embedded, triggered by code words and sounds, sometimes inaudible ones. The alter personalities frequently "live" in the part of the body that has been traumatized. If a child was tortured in the shoulder, this is where an alter will reside. "The psychologist's job," Gould said, "is to map the alters and neutralize 'booby traps'—including suicidal impulses—left by the programmer as a monkey trap in the therapeutic process. The patient is ready to work with conscious memories of the trauma and begins healing when he can move around freely in the system of alters."

Vicki Graham-Costain, Ph.D., a clinical child psychologist, discussed the treatment of character pathologies that accompany mind control conditioning, and the sudden "flooding" of memories of childhood torture lurking behind post-hypnotic obstacles to recall, and in some cases, repression. Dr. David Neswald took up programming neutralization strategies, and common roadblocks to overcoming mind control conditioning. "Survivors are told they will be shunned by 'decent' people," Neswald says, "that people will be repulsed by and never accept them."

The treatment of mind controlled kids is a growing field, despite the call for public denial from the corporate press. Cult abuse of children, Gould wrote in *The Journal of Psychohistory* in the Spring of 1995, "is considerable in scope and extremely grave in its consequences. Among 2,709 members of the American Psychological Association who responded to a poll, 2,292 cases of ritual abuse were reported. In 1992 alone, ChildHelp USA logged 1,741 calls pertaining to ritual abuse; Monarch Resources of Los Angeles logged 5,000; Real Active Survivors tallied nearly 3,600; Justus Unlimited of Colorado received almost 7,000; and Looking Up Maine handled around 6,000."

Leading scientists in the Company's mind control academy have all at one time or another spoken of creating a "psycho-civilized" society. If this is the grand design, it is built on a bed of torture. Civilization is not the idea.

The Captains of Industry want our heads.

McMartin Preschool

REVISITED

PART I.
Welcome to Manhattan Beach

Paul Bynum graduated from college in 1972 and joined the Hermosa Beach police department a year later. At 31 he was promoted to the rank of chief detective. He was not a typical investigator—a fellow detective observes that Bynum was "too bright to be a cop." Off duty, he drove an MG and mixed with the 60s survivors at the Sweetwater Café. In 1976, Bynum was assigned the investigation of the Karen Klaas murder. Klaas was the divorced wife of Bill Medley, a vocalist for the Righteous Brothers. She was raped and murdered one morning about an hour after dropping her five-year-old son off at the McMartin preschool in Manhattan Beach.

Neighbors told police they'd been alarmed at of a menacing stranger spotted before the murder wandering through the neighborhood. Police later entertained speculation that Klaas had been stalked. Throughout the week her body was found, this same stranger had popped up several times on her street corner. A neighbor phoned Karen to warn her. She didn't answer the phone. When friends entered the back door of the house, concerned for her safety, they found a Caucasian male with a beard, about 5′ 7″, about 28-years-old, dressed in a long olive green coat with a tunic collar and boots, exiting through the front door. Klaas was found naked and unconscious. She died five days later.

Nothing was stolen. Police had no indication that Klaas knew her killer.

In 1984, shortly after indictments were handed down to defendants in the McMartin child molestation case, Gerald Klaas, her husband, drove off a cliff in Oregon and was killed. Children alleged in a grand jury hearing that teachers at the preschool had threatened to kill family members if they disclosed abuse. It was rumored that the Klaas deaths and the McMartin case may have been related.

But police insisted there was no connection. "We have no leads, no suspects and we're not coordinating with Manhattan Beach," Hermosa Beach Lt. Mike Lavin told reporters.[1]

In 1979, Paul Bynum was forced out of the police department without an explanation despite an unblemished record. After the detective completed an investigation of a series of murders of teenage girls in nearby Redondo Beach—culminating in the arrest and conviction of serial killers Roy Norris and Lawrence Bittaker—police chief Frank Beeson pressured him to take a stress leave. Bynum was still haunted by the serial murder investigation, but he remained confident in his emotional stability and refused the leave. The chief obtained an order from the city manager, and Bynum was forced out on indefinite disability leave.

He chalked it up to internal politics, "paranoia," a purging of all potential detractors in the police department.

Bynum told local reporter Kevin Cody: "When the papers reported that Beeson had shown up apparently drunk at his first Hermosa [city] council meeting and dropped his revolver on the floor, he thought we had tipped reporters." Beeson was apparently unaware that reporters routinely attended meetings of the city council.[2]

Bynum found a new career as a private investigator. In March 1984, he was retained by the Buckeys' defense attorney, Danny Davis, and in the course of his investigation came to the conclusion that children had been abused at the preschool. Bynum found the videotaped interviews of the children by child therapists "credible." One afternoon, outside the courtroom, Cody mentioned to Bynum that hundreds of children had alleged abuse took place at the preschool. A dark cloud of distress passed over Bynum's face. He stammered that he had no idea so many children were involved.

In 1986, Bynum was called to testify at the trial of Ray Buckey by prosecutor Lael Rubin. The morning he was to appear, a juror's home was burglarized and the private investigator's testimony was rescheduled for the following morning.

"Neither side is going to like what I have to say," he confided to Cody.

For one thing, there was the matter of Bynum's lost citation books, records he'd kept as a detective in Hermosa Beach. When the police arrested Ray Buckey on child molestation charges, the "lost" books were discovered on the preschool attendant's desk.

What were official police records doing in Buckey's home?

Rubin meant to ask Bynum about a map turned up by investigators from the District Attorney's office in March 1986, pin-pointing the location of turtle shells Bynum had unearthed at the lot adjacent to the McMartin preschool. (The children claimed teachers had killed turtles to demonstrate what would happen to them and their families if they talked about the molestations. Bynum, while retained by the defense, had managed to corroborate a key point in the testimony of the children.)

Bynum's court appearance was pre-empted by his "suicide," although the timing left some parents in the case convinced he'd been murdered.[3] His body was discovered by his wife at 5:45 in the morning. Bynum died of a head shot from a .38 caliber pistol.

"None of the half dozen people questioned who were close to Bynum could think of any reason why his involvement in the case might have driven him to suicide," reported Kevin Cody in the *Easy Reader* in Manhattan Beach. "Paul was kind of a worrier," said Stephen Kay, a deputy district attorney and friend of the Bynum family, "but there was no hint of suicide. He was very upbeat about his wife and new daughter, both of whom he adored."[4]

The belief that Bynum had been murdered was fueled by the memory of another odd death, the alcohol toxicity that claimed the life of Judy Johnson, the first mother to speak publicly about child molestation at McMartin. Sympathizers of the Buckeys in the press have gone to great lengths to portray Johnson as "crazy." There is no indication that her life was inverted the day her son returned home from the McMartin school, bleeding from the anus. Threatening strangers entered her life. She believed she'd been poisoned. (In 1992, therapists at the L.A. Commission for Women's Ritual Abuse Task Force also insisted they'd been poisoned, and corroborated their allegations with medical reports—the *Los Angeles Times* was given the reports but shunned them, alleging the therapists were paranoid fantasists with "hysterical" delusions.[5]) She lived in fear and felt it necessary to keep a gun in the house. Her estranged husband appeared to have joined in the harassment campaign. Johnson took to alcohol. She was allergic to alcohol.

It poisoned her.

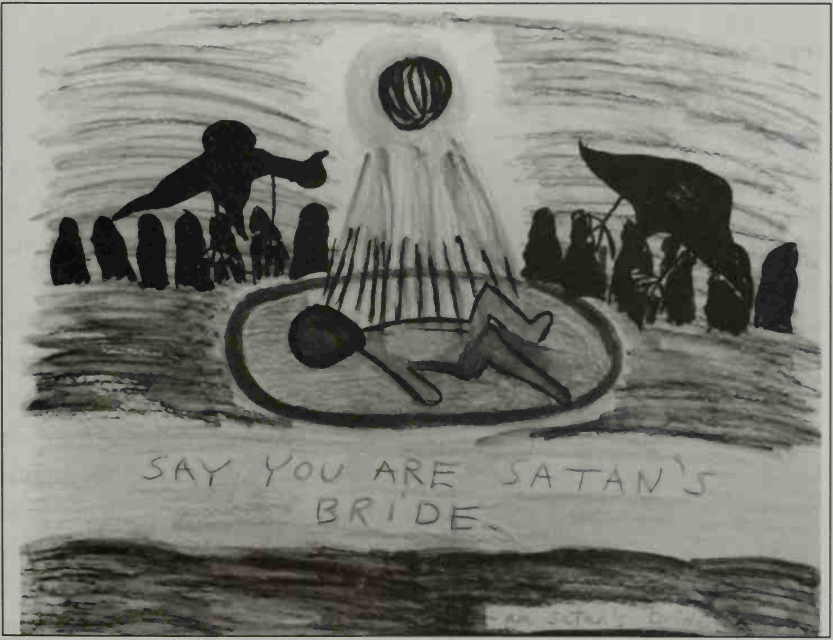
SAY YOU ARE SATAN'S BRIDE.

Wendy Hoffman, "Child's Drawing," 1990

The death of Judy Johnson was met with howls of laughter in greater Los Angeles. She will be remembered as the delusional paranoiac who set in motion an implacable wave of child abuse "hysteria" carried through southern California by a sensational press and out across the mountains and plains, contaminating lives and decimating families everywhere, a groundless "witch-hunt." This was the explanation given by "experts" from leading universities.

Nevertheless, children who attended the preschool *still* insist they were abused. And the detailed memories of their parents are sharply at odds with the simple caricature of the case repeated endlessly in the press. They recall the long hours of testimony by dozens of children, the telephoned death threats, how some of the children suffered deep emotional problems requiring hospitalization. Knowing child pornography to be a highly lucrative business, they frown at the snickering over the children's disclosures that they were forced to play "naked movie star" games. They haven't put aside as anomalous accident the first exhibit in the case: a physician's report that one of the children suffered "blunt force trauma" of sexual areas.[6] The parents were left to ponder why some of the toddlers in the care of the McMartins had chlamydia, a sexually-transmitted infection.[7]

Where was the humor in all of this?

Open Season

The parents questioned, like everyone else, the incredibility of the charges'—some said the children were lying— yet had to wonder about Peggy McMartin's testimony that she had only worked at the school for a few weeks, when payroll records revealed that she had been employed there for years. To the families, the final verdict of Ray Buckey meant it was now "open season on children."

The world was told repeatedly that ABC's Wayne Satz, the reporter who broke the case (felled by a heart attack in December, 1992 at age 47), and therapist Kee MacFarlane, had had an affair—as if this had any bearing on the children's allegations. Even Oliver Stone took to the bandwagon with a film made for HBO, written by Abby Mann, reinforcing the already widespread belief that "hysteria" in Manhattan Beach was kindled when a child returned home from school one afternoon with "a red bottom"—this would be the son of Judy Johnson, and he hadn't been spanked—he was bleeding. This hardly constitutes a little media "spin." It is conscious participation in a felony. The account of the case pounded into collective memory by media repetition goes that far to distort the facts. The widespread media coverage was, according to *Los Angeles Times* editor Noel Greenwood, "a mean-spirited campaign" organized to discredit the children and their therapists.[8]

But why should certain members of the corporate press and segments of the legal and psychiatric professions go to such lengths to suppress evidence of organized child abuse at McMartin preschool? Because the traumatic crimes reported by the children bear an uncanny resemblance to mind control programming, a specialty of certain classified federal agencies and cultists on the black budget payroll.[9]

The children are often ridiculed because some of their charges are thought to be impossible. Tunnels under the preschool? Too far-fetched to consider. But, in fact, there were tunnels, confirmed in 1993 by a coalition of five earth scientists from leading universities.

The unearthing of the tunnels, like much of the critical evidence, never made it to the courtroom. They have been discreetly filtered from newspaper accounts.

To fill the void, Debbie Nathan, a widely published skeptic of ritual abuse, heaped scorn on the tunnel allegations in the *Village Voice* in June 1990. She maintained the McMartin site had been "painstakingly probed for tunnels" once before. "None were found."[10] Nathan's account is a fabrication. In fact, recalls Dr.

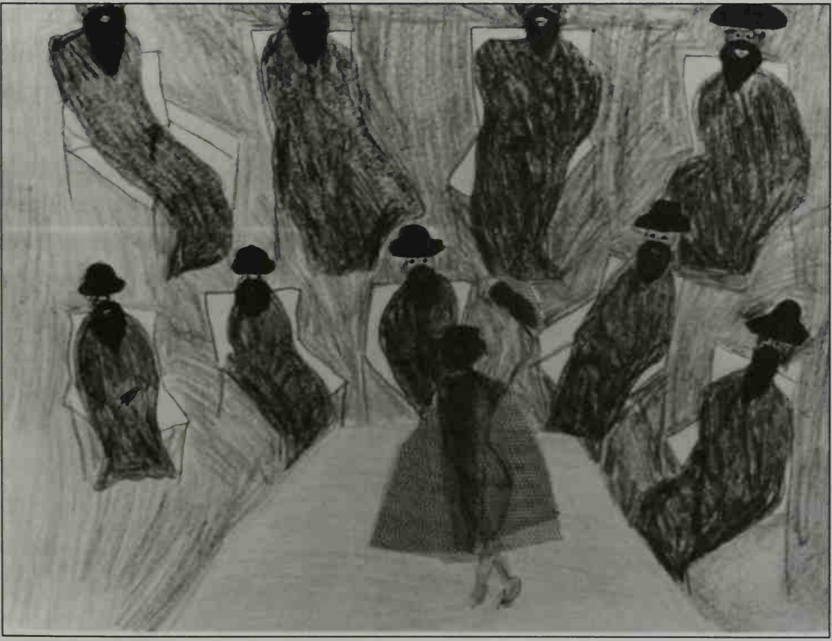

Wendy Hoffman, "Child's Drawing," 1990

Roland Summit, who contributed to the final report on the tunnel excavation, parents started digging and prosecutors, reluctantly forced to a showdown, "commissioned a superficial search of open terrain." District Attorney Ira Reiner then declared the tunnel stories unfounded "without going under the concrete floor of the preschool." Once the tunnels were officially discounted, attempts to explore for an underground reality were instant targets for ridicule.[11] Archeologist Gary Stickel was retained to lead the excavation on the recommendation of Dr. Rainier Berger, chairman of UCLA's Interdisciplinary Archeology Program, by parents of McMartin children.[12] Initially Stickel sided with the Buckeys, believing the abuse allegations to be so much moonlight for hysterics. However, he'd heard of late homicide detective Paul Bynum, the first to dig at the site:

> "Bynum apparently conducted his informal digging in February," 1984 (*Daily Breeze,* 1987). "It is significant to note he did unearth some buried animal remains, 'numerous pieces of tortoise shells and bones'" (*Daily Breeze,* 1987). "There was keen interest at the time since it was reported that the children testified that tortoises, rabbits, and other small animals were mutilated to terrorize the children into keeping silent" (*Daily Breeze,* 1987).[13]

But "authorities" courted by the press snaffled at the suggestion that animals were killed to frighten children at McMartin and other preschools around the country. It was not until 1993 that a study by the National Center for Child Abuse and Neglect confirmed that children are not only threatened in day care settings, but most threats are "specific in terms of what the consequence of disclosure will be and how the threat will be carried out.... The use of such severe threats is obviously quite frightening to young children and is effective in preventing disclosure. In fact, it appears that threats used in day care center cases may go beyond what is usually needed to silence victims, and may in some instances be made for purposes of psychological terror in and of itself."[14]

Into the Grotto

Most reporters in Southern California pooh-poohed the notion that the children had been threatened into silence, but there was a great, gaping silence in the media when the tunnels were found.

"I asked my daughter," recalls Jackie MacGauley, a mother of two children who attended the preschool, "'how could they have taken you to these places without being seen?' And she answered me as though I was silly to ask such a question. She said, 'through the *tunnels,* of course.'"

For a month, the *Los Angeles Times* ran a spate of feature stories ridiculing the excavation team—until actual evidence of tunnels was discovered. Then the *Times* ran a one-paragraph news item, dryly noting that "evidence" of tunnels had been found. The *Times* never mentioned the subject again.

Only the local *Beach Reporter* covered the story without an embarrassed grin.

Parents began to dig with shovels in an area pointed out by a nine-year-old former charge of the McMartin preschool, who told them to dig behind a cement planter in the northeast corner. When parents unearthed several broken turtle shells and a few bones, they stopped digging and notified the District Attorney's office.

Once the entrance was exposed, Stickel used remote ground sensing equipment to read the terrain conductivity of the empty lot next to the preschool. The survey was conducted by a respected geophysicist, Robert Beer, working with an electromagnetic scanner. The tunnel opening was found precisely where children said it would be.

Stickel: "Some of the children had stated there had been animal cages placed along that wall and that they had entered a tunnel under the cages." A foreign

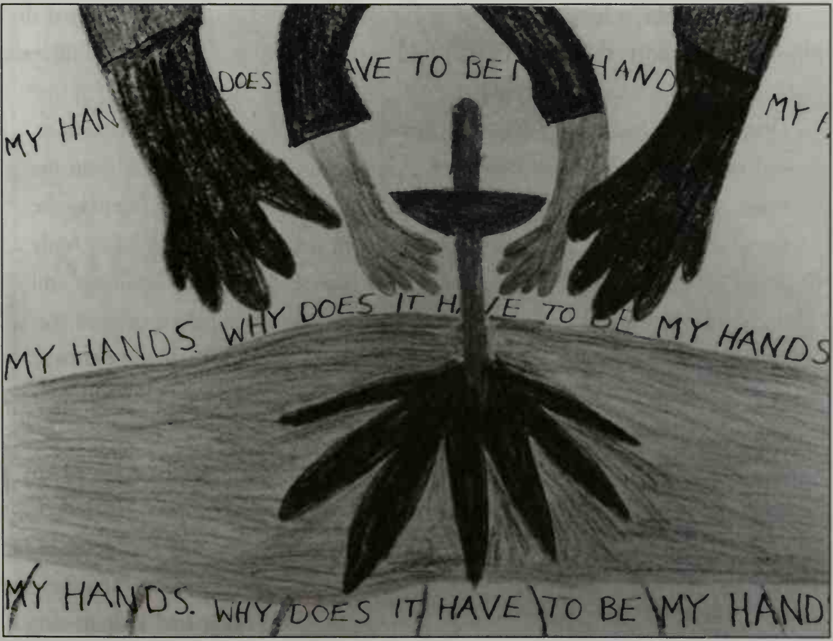
DOES
VE TO BE
HAND
MY HAN
MY
MY HANDS WHY DOES IT H VE TO BE MY HANDS
MY HANDS. WHY DOES IT HAVE TO BE MY HAND

Wendy Hoffman, "Child's Drawing," 1990

soil deposit was found near the foundation. Clearing the anomaly with a backhoe, they found the roots of an avocado tree cut to clear a path for the tunnel. The roots had been cut with a hand saw and torn away, and shreds dangled on either wall of the tunnel.

This is precisely the moment editors at the *Los Angeles Times* chose to pull reporters off the story: once "evidence" of tunnels was found, the story was no longer deemed newsworthy. All other news outlets rapidly followed suit.

But the excavators cleared the foreign soil and followed the tunnel anyway. The passage "meandered under Classroom No. 4 and then most of Classroom No. 3.... There is no other scenario that fits all of the facts except that the feature was indeed a tunnel," they concluded. "The date of the construction and use of the tunnel was not absolutely established, but an assessment of seven factors of data all indicate that it was probably constructed, used and completely filled back in sometime after 1966 (the construction date of the preschool)."[15]

Dr. E. Michael, a specialist in forensic geology in Malibu, was called to examine a cavity in the underground passage. Together with Dr. Herbert Adams of the geology department at Cal State University, a ground resistivity reading of the tunnel was followed from the preschool to a triplex next door, a traversing section parallel to the north wall of the school, 5 feet away, extending 20 feet eastward, 10 to 15 feet beneath the surface.[16]

Gerald Hobbs, a local tree surgeon for 25 years, did much of the actual digging. Hobbs reports that the children told two different stories about the tunnels:

> One, that they had gone through the tunnel and came up in the house next door, and two, they had come up in the garage, which blocked the house from the street. At any rate, the tunnel went in that direction.... That evening I went to the house next door and followed the walk between the school and the house, only about 4 1/2 feet apart. I went about 30 feet down between the buildings and found a crawl space under the house. I bellied my way toward the southwest corner of the house. After going about 20 feet, I found an area inside the west wall of the house where the floor was cut out. If I remember correctly, the area of floor that was missing was 36″ x 38″ x 41″ [17]

The use of tunnels to conceal criminal activity is not unprecedented. One SRA/mind control survivor in Atlanta, Georgia (identified as Kathleen H. in Daniel Ryder's *Cycle of Abuse*), grew agitated when asked to comment on the above account of the McMartin dig. As it happens, an organized kidnap ring in Cobb County, GA, she recalls, had

> … caged and killed and sold children in underground systems of tunnels, some under their own neighborhoods. They had also used the tunnels to conceal drug laboratories and for munitions storage. Such people will most likely never be caught, because [their] activities are literally underground. One of them was a retired Presbyterian minister who owned a house where I and his grandchildren independently showed adults where the tunnel access was, but he'd had time by then to seal off the entrance from behind a wall—in the grandchildren's playroom.

Police, Kathleen says, "scratch their heads after doing searches *above-ground.* More law enforcement officials should be informed of the widespread usage of underground tunnels, old bomb shelters, abandoned S.A.M. missile sites, and more sophisticated equipment could be made available to law enforcement personnel to help them to detect such tunnels."[18]

But there is still much snickering in Los Angeles over the tunnel allegations—even after a subterranean complex of passageways was discovered in Brooklyn, an underground arms caché that linked the safe houses of a political sect that conditioned recruits with sleep and sensory deprivation, rudimentary forms of mind control, in its indoctrination sessions. On November 13, 1996,

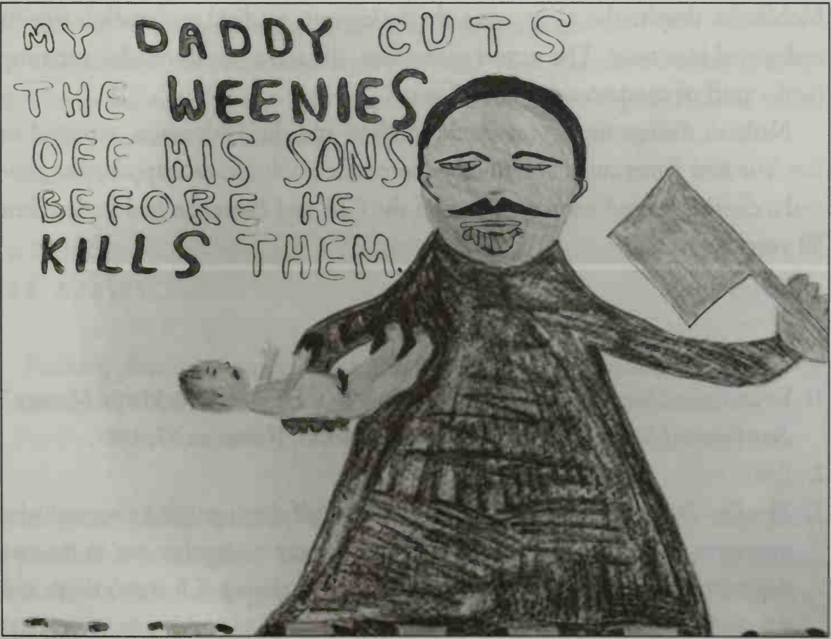
MY DADDY CUTS THE WEENIES OFF HIS SONS BEFORE HE KILLS THEM.

Wendy Hoffman, "Child's Drawing," 1990

the *Times of London* described the "MAZE of tunnels and underground 'dungeons' containing rifles, machineguns and explosives [found] in a residential district of New York. Police said the bizarre find in Brooklyn's Crown Heights area could indicate the presence of an urban militia which may have been using three adjoining houses."[19]

A total of 77 animal bones were found buried at the McMartin site, a assortment of the osteo-remains of domestic cattle, chickens, dogs and a single rabbit.[20]

However, Debbie Nathan, the hide-bound "skeptic" of ritual abuse and a widely published advocate of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation, tells another story: "[The McMartin] parents have invested years believing in demonic conspiracies and underground nursery tunnels. (Until recently, the parents were still digging. They came up with Indian artifacts)." No mention of Bynum's independent findings. No mention of the dig as it happened in the real world. She reserves much of her ridicule for former FBI agent Ted Gunderson and Jackie MacGauley. In fact, these two brought in Stickel and his geological team to defuse accusations they were directly engaged in the dig. They weren't. The search for the tunnels was independent, and scores of volunteers pitched in.

Nathan's refrain of "no evidence" is hollow. She has been known to contort the facts of ritual abuse in a grotesque parody of journalism and is frequently blind to critical evidence. Nathan continues to find "no evidence" of abuse at McMartin, despite the nightmares, the acting-out, medical molestation reports and sexual infections. The tunnel excavation, she assures with psychic certainty (and a sniff of condescension), is a "*hoax.*"

Nathan's disingenuous attacks on children and their advocates, repeated in the *New York Times* and a host of other corporate publications, happened to conceal a classified mind control operation the CIA and Pentagon had undertaken 30 years before....

Notes

1. Kevin Cody, "Former HB Officer's Suicide Adds Questions to McMartin Mystery," *Easy Reader* (Manhattan Beach tabloid news weekly), November 17, 1987.
2. Ibid.
3. The *Easy Reader* obituary declares: "none of the half dozen people questioned who were close to Bynum could think of any reason why his involvement in the case might have driven him to commit suicide. But the timing of Bynum's death and the controversy already surrounding the McMartin case ... inevitably spawned speculation that a link existed between his suicide and his pending testimony."

4. Cody.
5. The medical reports were reprinted in Alex Contantine, *Psychic Dictatorship in the U.S.A.,* Portland: Feral House, 1995, pp. 97–111.
6. McMartin trial record, exhibit one.
7. Interviews with parents.
8. Constantine, "Ray Buckey's Press Corps and the Tunnels of McMartin," pp. 77–96.
9. Ibid.
10. Debbie Nathan, "What McMartin Started: The Ritual Abuse Hoax," *Village Voice,* June 12, 1990.
11. Roland Summit, M.D., "Introduction," *Archeological Investigations of the McMartin Preschool Site,* Manhattan Beach, California, unpublished report by archeologist Gary Stickel of the McMartin Tunnel Project, 1993, p. ii.
12. Gary Stickel, foreword to Archeological Investigations.
13. Ibid.
14. Kelly, Brant and Waterman, "Sexual Abuse of Children in Day Care Centers," *Journal of Child Abuse & Neglect* (17), 1993, p. 74.
15. Stickel, Archeological Investigations, p. 95. The assessment of the tunnel's age was corroborated by Dr. Jon Michael, a geologist on the McMartin project.
16. Dr. E. Michael, letter to Dr. Gary Stickel, July 2, 1992, pp. 2–3.
17. Gerald Hobbs, "Notes on Investigation of the Neighboring Triplex," in Archeological Investigations, p. 176.
18. Kathleen H., personal correspondence with the author, August 29, 1996.
19. Quentin Letts, "Arms cache found under New York," *Times of London,* November 13 1996.
20. Charles Schwartz, Ph.D., "The McMartin Preschool Osteological Remains" (2nd report), *Archeological Investigations,* June 15, 1990, p. 1.

PART II.
Bad Apples

> *Federally funded biomedical and behavioral research has resulted in major advances in health care and improved the quality of life for all Americans.*
>
> —Bill Clinton, February 17, 1994

Intelligence officials contort through hard questions so gracefully that their appearance at investigative hearings is always lively with outraged congressmen bellowing in disbelief. A spy is a liar by definition, so no one listened in 1964 when CIA director Richard Helms, in a letter to the Warren Commission, made reference to Langley's interest in a cyborgean form of "biological communication."

"Cybernetics," Helms explained, "can be used in molding of a child's character ... the amassing of experience, the establishment of social behavior patterns..."—What was that? Machines? Molding character? No one at the Warren Commission thought to ask the CIA official what he was talking about—"... control of the growth processes of the individual ..."[1]

Helms wasn't exagerrating. At McGill University, Georgetown, Cornell and some 40 other upper-crust academic institutions around the country, psychiatrists and engineers on the CIA payroll R&D'd the technology of remote "biological communication." But the breathtaking potential of the devices has been marred by the bloodthirsty protocol of CIA-military experimentation.

One subject of the experiments in the 1960s, a psychologist living in Germany today, recalled in a letter to the Freedom of Thought Foundation, an organization of researchers and survivors of CIA-DoD mind control experiments, his grim history as a guinea pig. The experience was horrifyingly similar to the abuse later described by hundreds of toddlers in southern California. He suggests that far-fetched cover stories (ritual abuse, "psychic" spying experiments, "alien" abductions, poltergeists, etc.) routinely conceal EM assaults on mind and personality, as detailed by one subject of nonconsentual mind control experimentation:

> The functions of torture ... associate the original personality of the victim with pain, panic and horror—the desired personality is conditioned with pleasure afterwards, to function as aversive conditioning to establish new behavior patterns, establish a panic-controlled mechanism of amnesia ("If you remember, you will try to betray us, but we will be informed before you succeed in managing this, because we are everywhere, then you will be tortured again, so you will not remember."), produce an artificial, controlled multiple personality disorder (which is, under natural conditions, a result of traumatization).
>
> And by the way, torture itself, even if not combined with mind control techniques, elicits amnestic disorders or memory blocks.... With heavy electroshocks the victim is regressed to a state of an infant. Then the torture resembles psychologically the ill-treatment in childhood. Rape is common, too, as an equivalent of sexual abuse in infancy.
>
> Being a human robot means to be mentally ill, means to be a person suffering from Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD). The difference between a "natural" MPD and a artificial, mind controlled MPD is that the latter was consciously tailored by the controllers to whom the victim is tied by invisible unconscious chains.
>
> Many students in the field of psychology and psychiatry don't believe that

mind control is possible ... and that is probably because they haven't understood the basic concept: MPD produced by a stimulation of the natural conditions of its causes. This is very important: Only if the natural conditions of the causes of MPD are reproduced [will] a human robot work reliably. And that is a "must" in all clandestine actions.

You may ask why I can be so sure. There are two reasons: As a psychologist I know a little bit about the mechanisms of mind and behavior, and I am a victim.

As far as I can remember, I was the victim of a program with the aim to delete my personality—literally to dissolve my personality and extract it from my nervous system. They told me that I was sentenced to death and that they have found a method to execute me, but leave my body alive. In short: They tried to make a human robot or a slave out of me [with]:

- Classical hypnosis, drugs and so on.
- Electrical torture of my genitals. They used a device which I call a torture trouser. This is a sort of loin-cloth made of leather and steel bonds by which an electrode is fastened to the genitals of the victim. For electric supply they use a cable or a battery so that you can freely move and if the torturer wants to torture you he sends an electric signal to the battery using a transmitter. This is a very practical device for aversive behavior modification....
- They gave me a drug that induces near-death experiences. When I was clinically dead a voice suggested to me that he was God and that he had decided that I have to be born again as a slave. Then I was reanimated.
- They used electromagnetic fields to induce panic, fear, depression and pleasure. By this means they conditioned me very effectively. They used ESB too, but it was not so effective. They conditioned my EEG.
- They obviously have found a wavelength with hypnotic effects so that they could give me post-hypnotic orders. I wasn't able not to obey.
- My memory was erased by electroshocks, radiation and the described torture mechanism.

As far as I can remember all this happened between 1972 and 1982. There are some reminiscences making me believe that the first manipulations started earlier, 1967.

Some other reminiscences furnish evidence that they began to dissociate my mind when I was a little child living in an orphanage, younger than three years old.

I am not a mad man. I am 43 years old. I am a psychologist and a doctor of the

> economic and social sciences. I am working for a network of facilities treating drug addicts, and I am responsible for public relations. I am strongly convinced that I am out of danger now. I don't know whether they used modern electronic mind control methods. I can't believe that they implanted brain transmitters into my skull, but who knows.
>
> I don't know why they chose me for this program. There are lots of more or less nonsensical cover stories ... being a man from outer space, having dangerous paranormal (psi) faculties, being able to unmask spies by using these methods....[2]

"*Averse conditioning ... electric shocks ... rape is common*"—years later, the McMartin children would also testify they were" tied by invisible unconscious chains" to morbidly cruel adults engaged in traumatic "clandestine actions." Another survivor of the experiments of the 1960s has memories nearly identical to those of the McMartin children: "hypnosis, electroshock, sensory deprivation, by isolation—in closets, in underground dirt rooms, in graves, underwater, death threats to self, others and animals, use of drugs ... seduction and blackmail...."[3]

At the preliminary McMartin hearing, 14 children testified for 88 days. They described 45 threats to them and their parents.[4] The tactic is debated. One psychologist will frown at threatening children. Another will dismiss the very mention of death threats as a hysterical aberration or a "false memory."

Guess which psychologist has a security clearance.

Virtual Hell

Walter Urban, a defense attorney for the Buckeys, told *New York Times* reporter David Hechler in 1988 that the "stories" of children at McMartin were impossible to believe, "such as: 'I was molested.' Where did it occur? 'In a hot-air balloon over the desert.' 'In a speed boat, where sharks were all around, and they told us that we were going to be thrown to the sharks if we didn't agree to be molested.' That kind of stuff."[5] Other children swore they'd witnessed teachers at the preschool "flying."

Kids do say the darnedest things. Anyone with a grain of sense rejects these claims out of hand. Then again ...

Chris de Nicola would keep Amnesty International's entire staff occupied for a year. Born in July, 1962, Nicola was used at the age of four in federally-sponsored hypnotic imaging experiments at Kansas City University. "I was strapped down," she recalls. A doctor festooned her head and body with electrodes, "used what looked like an overhead projector and repeatedly said he was burning different images into my brain while a red light flashed, aimed at my forehead." Electric shocks and drugs were applied in each sequence, "and [he] told me to go deeper and deeper, each image would go deeper into my brain, and I would do whatever he told me to do.... When it was over, he gave me another shot. The next thing I remember I was with my grandparents again in Tucson."[6] The McMartin children also spoke of adults slipping them drugs, and electric-convulsive shocks are a recurrent theme of cult abuse claims. The "doctor" in this instance was L. Wilson Greene. With a little research, the girl's therapist discovered that a man with this name was the scientific director of the Chemical and Radiological Lab at the Army Chemical Center.[7]

Children forced into participation in the experiments have spoken of wearing virtual-reality goggles. Thirty years after the inhumane treatment Nicola received, the beaming of images to the visual cortex is stock-and-trade stuff in the mind control underground. The virtual-reality goggles were described by young mind control subjects years before they were commercialized. In the CIA experiments, the children reported they were made to view threatening images, or convinced they'd participated in murder, cannibalism and other horrific crimes.[8]

In January 1996, the full-grown director of a support group for ritually abused children in Los Angeles (she has worked closely with the families in the McMartin case) experienced first-hand the same virtual-reality episodes induced at the preschool when local mind control technicians targeted her for torture from a remote source. The experience began with a splitting headache, "like needles" boring into her cranium. The pain was not stationary, like the average headache, but moved around in her head. The attack continued for seven or eight hours. She was reduced to screaming and crying and took to bed. When she closed her eyes, her head teemed with technicolor images of figures in robes moving in a circle. She opened her eyes and the figures still swarmed in the darkness in front of her. She switched on the light. The images were still there.[9]

She wasn't hallucinating. And the McMartin children weren't suffering "false memories." These days, the images—frequently combined with an electronic form of hypnosis—are projected to the brain's visual pathways, received with perfect clarity.

There are innumerable examples of helpless private citizens who've had the misfortune to fall prey to the whims of the radionics crews.

One of them was Patrick Warden, a high-potential high-achiever who scored in the 98th percentile of his high school intelligence test in 1969, an accomplishment repeated in his graduate record exam at the University of California at Berkeley. In 1980, a CIA recruiter approached him. In short order, invasive "voices" spoke to him. They told him that the Agency wanted him to become a public relations officer for the Agency's "mental telepathy system." The "system," he discovered by scouring obscure journals and the few books on CIA mind control available, is "operational," employing "technology that operates apparently by radio and microwaves, and can broadcast voices, visual images and somatic sensations, and affect the autonomic nervous system across distances.... Though in its primitive form the MTS mimics psychic phenomena, it involves man-made technology."[10]

There are innumerable instances of ritual abuse accompanied by exotic "psychic" images, voices, sensations, special effects of the type generated by technology described in case histories of CIA mind control.

There is the case of Chad Ingram, the son of confessed ritual abuser Paul Ingram of Olympia, Washington. Lawrence Wright, in a 1993 *New Yorker* story attempted to dismiss ritual abuse as a therapeutic aberration and exonerate Ingram based on opinions of psychologists from the False Memory Syndrome Foundation. The CIA shrinks dismissed the boy's memories of abuse out-of-hand because "he had heard voices in his head."[11]

A doctor at one of Stockholm's most prestigious hospitals states that young children were used for experiments involving advanced mind control technology to evaluate their "thought activity and reactions."[12] This line of R&D quite naturally evolved into tinkering with the transmission of virtual-reality images and voices to the brain.

The devices have been around for decades. And they weren't produced in the dog-star cluster, shipped by flying saucer to earth, though the CIA, military intelligence sector and certain psychologists (with a CIA pedigree) have convinced hundreds of millions that "aliens" travel from untold light-years away to stick CIA implants in human heads, the most transparent cover story ever told—one passionately defended by many of the very same skeptics who drown allegations of ritual abuse in condescending snorts of laughter.

Richard Helms was acknowledging his own deepest ambitions when he told the Warren Commission of the Agency's experiments in "molding a child's character" with cybernetics.

Notes

1. Walter Bowart, *Operation Mind Control,* New York: Dell, 1978, p. 256.
2. Anonymous letter, *Free Thinking* (Freedom of Thought Foundation newsletter), prepublication review copy, vol. 1: no. 4, March 1995.
3. Marcia Chambers, "Bail is Rejected in Child Sex Case," *New York Times,* December 20, 1986, p. 34.
4. Renee Bright, correspondence to the President's Advisory Commission on Human Radiation Experiments, March 9, 1995, p. 2.
5. David Hechler, *The Battle & the Backlash: The Child Sexual Abuse War,* Lexington, Massachusetts: Lexington Books, 1988, p. 334.
6. Chris De Nicola, statement to the President's Commission on Human Radiation Experiments, April, 1995 hearings, p. 1.
7. Valerie Wolf, letter to Presidential Advisory Commission on Human Radiation Experiments, March 12, 1995, p. 3.
8. Valerie Wolf, "Report on Behavior and Activities Reported by My Patients from 1988 to Present," Presidential Advisory Commission hearings.
9. Interview with author, January 24, 1996. Compare this virtual-reality vision with the memory of Paul Ingram in the Olympia, Washington ritual abuse case: "Ingram began seeing people in robes kneeling around a fire. He thought he saw a corpse." Lawrence Wright, "Remembering Satan—Part I," *The New Yorker,* May 17, 1993, p. 73.
10. Patrick A. Warden, "Mind Control and Mental Telepathy," *MindNet Notes* (electronic journal), August 1, 1993.
11. Wright, p. 74. Often, as the German subject points out, post-hypnotic suggestion is used to dissolve a child's memory of the trauma, protecting the identities of his tormentors. It's not uncommon for a subject to resort to self-mutilation, an impulse that is programmed in by hypnotic command, when recalling blocked memories of childhood abuse in therapy sessions. Similar programming could explain the sudden comatose state of Chad Ingram when confronting certain memories: "Chad produced a memory of being assaulted by Ray Risch [a mechanic for the Washington state police and a drinking buddy of the boy's father] in the basement of Ingrams' house when he was ten or twelve years old. At this point, Chad leaned forward in a trance-like state.' Sometimes he would go off for 5–10 minutes without saying anything." Wright, p. 77.

    "A major part of the mind control experimentation [on children] was involved in wiping out the memory of the subject through electric shock, trauma and drugs."—Valerie Wolf, in a report to Clinton's Commission on Radiation, March 12, 1995, p. 4.
12. Robert Naeslund, a victim of Swedish mind control research, original ms. of Brain Transmitter, a privately-printed appeal.

PART III.
The Wall

One much-maligned school of psychology holds that a day-care center operated by a mind control cult specializes in dissociative conditioning, a regimen of physical and psychological beatings that give rise to a cluster of pseudo-identities. The first stage of conditioning, they maintain, insults the child's most primitive reflexes, a repetition of torture that overloads the child's neurological complex and forces the adoption of protective alters. Most very young children rapidly learn to dissociate, a learned reflex that the group exploits as the child grows—often into adulthood—by accessing the alters. They can be called upon at any time and used in criminal enterprises. Dissociative programming is sort of a psychological hard drive: it occurs when the victim is very young and is the bed of future programming.[1]

But the study of dissociative conditioning in traumatized preschool children did not reach these conclusions until 1990 (with the work of Dr. Steven Ray, Frank Putnam and others)—nearly a decade after the first charges of abuse at McMartin were filed.

Before techniques for multiplicity programming were understood by psychologists treating survivors of ritual abuse, a lively debate of distinguished, smartly-groomed psychologists was kindled by the McMartin trial. An early champion for the defense was the late Dr. Nahman Greenberg, a prominent psychiatric consultant on child abuse. With a grant from the National Institute of Mental Health in 1971, Dr. Greenberg once designed a psychological profile to identify the personality characteristics of abused children. For twenty years, while still an associate professor at the University of Illinois's psychiatry department, he was director of child development in the clinical and research unit. In 1975, he founded CAUSES (Child Abuse Unit for Studies, Education and Services) at Illinois Masonic Hospital. His office glittered with numerous honors from federal and state government agencies.[2]

Dr. Greenberg was retained to make sense of the McMartin allegations. He studied the questioning techniques of therapist Kee MacFarlane and generally seemed to agree with her findings. But in public pronouncements Greenberg later stated that MacFarlane coerced accusations of abuse from the children, goaded them into making slanderous allegations. The argument, endlessly repeated by the media, has since tainted McFarlane's credibility.[3]

But Greenberg's subsequent career is revealing. His next ritual abuse case came shortly after his consultation on McMartin. Beth Vargo joined Believe the

Children shortly after witnessing it.

In April 1984, Vargo suspected that her four-year-old daughter had been sexually abused at the Jewish Community Center (JCC) preschool in Chicago. Several other children detailed abuse. They described "strangers" engaging in sexual escapades at the center and elsewhere. But this time it wasn't only children who spoke of sexual abuse. Adult staff members of JCC stepped forward to fill gaps in the children's allegations with their own testimony.

Vargo was referred to Dr. Greenberg by the local Department of Child and Family Services.[4] The name rang a bell, and after a moment of reflection she recalled where she had heard the name before—the family doctor had warned her to steer clear of him.

Dr. Greenberg did not believe in "involving" the "police or prosecutors in child abuse cases, but preferred to work with the child victims and adult perpetrators to repair relationships damaged by sexual abuse," she recalls. "Since our case involved extra-familial abuse, not incest, my husband and I made other therapy arrangements for our daughter."

At a meeting called by the center to address parents' concerns about the investigation, Greenberg recommended that they and the teachers attend a retreat to "share their feelings." The psychiatrist empathized primarily with the teachers' "stress," not the children's trauma, and engaged in heated arguments with therapists treating them. He refused to accept the word of the JCC's own staff that the toddlers had been abused at the school, and when asked, refused to cooperate with police.[5]

The case was a repetition of McMartin. During questioning, two mothers reported that their daughters had told them the teachers had threatened to kill their families if they talked. The children insisted that they'd been beaten, stuck with needles and screwdrivers. In fact, parents reported unexplained scratches and bruises. The preschoolers also said that teachers at the center organized "naked games."

"This will be with us forever," one mother lamented. "It will never be wiped away."[6]

In 1987, Dr. Greenberg's consultation in another aborted child abuse investigation—the child pornography operation run by the Finders cult—exposed an unshakable bias in favor of ritual abuse perpetrators—and his role in a CIA cover-up. The Finders, as most cult observers are aware, was a CIA-anchored circle of ritual abusers engaged in operant mind control conditioning, child pornography and kidnap. At first, Langley officials admitted to custom agents in Tallahassee, Florida that the CIA "owned the Finders."[7]

Marion David Pettie, who retired from the Air Force in 1956 and defined himself as a "political powerhouse," was the guiding light of the cult. He denied any connection to the CIA—yet his late wife was an employee of the agency and his son a veteran of Air America, the opiate courier. Confidential sources told police the Finders conducted "brainwashing" sessions and "explored satanism."[8]

Police in Tallahassee were called off the case after Dr. Greenberg examined the children and found "no evidence of recent physical harm." Nonetheless, two Florida policemen stood by their statement that they'd found visible evidence of sexual abuse. The original arrest file, as one investigating Treasury agent complained in an internal report, was "classified *secret* and not available for review." Customs service agents in Washington discovered on the group's premises directions for kidnapping children and photographing them. Yet the case was guttered, largely due to Dr. Greenberg's denials that children could possibly be used by an occult group with an active interest in mind control programming.

Another ritual abuse "expert," an oft-cited debunker, has FBI credentials. Agent Ken Lanning of the Quantico Behavioral Science Laboratory has provided "skeptics"—mostly pedophiles, CIA propagandists and mind control operatives in academia and the press—with an illusory pillar of debate. (The unit had three founders hailing from the Justice Department, among them Mark Richard, who went on to become a key advisor to Janet Reno in the Branch Davidian stand-off. According to Lanny Sinkin, writing in the *Portland Free Press:* "In a recent interview, Daniel Sheehan, general counsel for the Christic Institute, noted that Mr. Richard has a long history of [closing] down investigations [that] might expose covert operations," among them, "assassinations, drug smuggling and other criminal activity, pursued under the guise of combatting terrorism.")

Fatal flaws in Lanning's "research report," a denial that the cult abuse of children exists, were exposed as a cover-up by a fellow law enforcement "insider":

> I have spoken to Ken Lanning, I know others who have spoken to him and we all take issue with Ken's "opinion" and how this report is being used.
>
> It should also be stated that I work within the System in some capacity and have some experience in investigations. Neither am I too pleased by what I have been learning about the atrocities that are occurring, the reasons for it, and the artful skewing of perceptions....
>
> Ken Lanning is an armchair analyst and he has "not" personally investigated many cases of RA. Law enforcement and others sometimes "consult" with him about cases and how to proceed. He is not aware of all RA cases. The FBI,

> Children's Services and law enforcement do not keep statistics on ritual crime. No one is keeping track; therefore no one can say with authority how prevalent ritual abuse is. The DAs are not bringing evidence of RA into cases unless they really have to because of freedom of religion issues and reports like Lanning's.
>
> He has a confusing, difficult time defining RA. He has told others that he prefers to categorize RA under "sex rings" or "gang violence." Someone like him cannot deal with or understand metaphysical intent. Few people can. Nor can he officially acknowledge ritual abuse because of various governmental entities which have been implicated.
>
> There are mechanisms being put in place to make the RA claims "incredible." The FBI has been implicated in at least "botching" some RA case investigations and in some instances covering up the evidence. The CIA has been implicated in far worse fashion.... There are many cases of ritual murder and brainwashing.
>
> Lanning professes not to know of any.[9]

The science of mind control has benefited enormously from experiments on young children. The horror stories told by toddlers at McMartin did not arise in a historical vacuum. Comparable outrages, foreshadowing McMartin by thirty years, filled Lynne Moss-Sharman's childhood as an unconsenting guinea-pig:

> I am a survivor of military torture and experimentation as a young child in the 1950s. It is very difficult to write about my experiences because of the military's use of electricity and binding on my right hand to assure I could or would not communicate through printing, writing or drawing for decades. One of the sessions involved huge amounts of electricity applied to my right hand; then it was tied to my back, and I was made to walk around on my knees, using my left hand for support, "like a dog." Their other torture techniques and devices took care of the possibility of talking.[10]

The preschoolers in Manhattan Beach provoked scorn and giggles when they claimed they'd been whisked off to military bases. But numerous examples from classified federal files could confirm that children have been tortured in biomedical and behavior control research since the prime of D. Ewen Cameron. Military bases are a common theme.

One mother of children attending McMartin alleged that employees of TRW, a local defense contractor based in Southern California, paid regular afternoon visits to the school.[11]

In 1989, nearly a year before the verdict of the second trial was delivered, a

McMartin mother took note of a van parked in front of her home. Two strangers sat inside the van. A few hours later, they were still there. When two of the mother's strapping male friends arrived, she complained of the surveillance. Her friends strolled out to the van. They couldn't help noticing that the walls of the vehicle were lined with advanced electronic surveillance equipment. The stake-out team was dragged out of the van and questioned—but not by police. More than one child in the household had attended McMartin. A compromised justice system and a hostile media had forced the families to find answers anywhere they could. And this pair of snoops with their high-tech gear would do fine.

But they refused to answer questions. One of the interrogators hit on an idea frowned upon by most law enforcement authorities—sodium amytal. The drug was administered. In a few minutes, the pair gazed blankly and began to answer questions. Who were they? Members of a religious cult. Where did they call home? San Diego. Who else belonged to this cult? They named several prominent officials in the defense establishment.[12] The pair were released after questioning.

Of course, none of this reached the jury.

Lee Coleman, a California psychologist who delivered the keynote address at the Second National Conference of VOCAL (Victims of Child Abuse Laws)—a now-defunct organization notorious for recurring scandals among its leadership involving pedophilia—testified that the McMartin children had indeed been abused—not by teachers at the preschool, but by unnamed law enforcement "officials" who'd "brainwashed" the children into "believing" abuse had occurred at McMartin.[13] Coleman's theory has evolved into a combative branch of psychology based on "false memories" a "syndrome" that lends its name to an organization of accused child abusers directed by veterans of the CIA's mind control fraternity, the False Memory Syndrome Foundation.

The "syndrome" is widely accepted as fact. But at Carleton University, a group of graduate researchers recently concluded a study of the so-called "false memory syndrome," a theory promoted by psychologists who appear frequently on talk shows to denounce therapists for filling the heads of children with recollections of horrific abuse. One of the most prominent figures on the board of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF) was Dr. Ralph Underwager, formerly a director of VOCAL, a clinical psychologist and minister who once insisted that it was "God's will" adults have sex with children and suggested to a group of British reporters in 1994 that most women who are raped "enjoy the experience."

The researchers at Carleton were unable to find any evidence that an insidious pathology, the "confabulation" of memories, exists, a charge the FMSF has been making about ritual abuse for years—to conceal the participation of CIA psychiatrists in the torture of young children, a regime of trauma used to condition the minds of young children to mind control programming.

The Ottawa Survivors' Study searched for evidence of the false memory syndrome in 113 adult women who, as children, reported they'd been sexually molested. Four sets of questions concerning symptoms of false memory were drawn up. The women were asked about the type of therapy they received, problems with personal relationships and subsequent patterns of stress. A detailed evaluation of their responses also sought the presence of pseudo-memories, the core of false memory theory.

The study was headed by Connie Kristiansen, a professor of psychology at Carleton who proposed that the university examine statistical claims of the Foundation widely repeated in the press. The FMSF claims that 25 percent to all recovered memories of child abuse are completely false, in contrast to the results of the Ottawa study. About half of the subjects remembered abuse. The other half had, as adults, eventually recalled buried memories of abuse. The responses of the two groups were evaluated—only two of the 51 women with recovered memories had symptoms that met the false memory criteria, leading the researchers to conclude that the syndrome does not exist as defined by the Foundation, and may not exist at all.

They advised that false memory "syndrome" should not be used in the courtroom to discredit recovered memories of abuse until the validity of false memory theory can be demonstrated.

Notes

1. David Neswald & Catherine Gould, "Basic Treatment and Program Neutralization Strategies for Adult MPD Survivors of Satanic Ritual Abuse," *Treating Abuse Today,* vol. 2: no. 3, p. 5.
2. Obituary, *Chicago Tribune,* June 4, 1991.
3. Correspondence, Beth Vargo, executive director of Believe the Children, Gary, Illinois, to John Boyd, Ph.D., August 28, 1995.
4. Vargo.
5. Ibid.
6. Carolyn Lenz, "Parents: Abusive Teachers Still at JCC," *Rogers Park Edgewater News,* May 23, 1984, p. A-1.
7. U.S. Custom and Treasury Department documents.

8. Witkin and Martinez, "Through a Glass, Very Darkly," *U.S. News & World Report,* January 3, 1994, p. 30, and Saperstein & Churchville, "Officials Describe 'Cult Rituals' in Child Abuse Case," *Washington Post,* February 7, 1987.
9. Anonymous, "Re: FBI/Ritual Abuse," alt.pagan WWW newsgroup, March 7, 1996.
10. Lynne Moss-Sharman, "Nancy Drew Meets the Exorcist," *MindNet* (electronic journal), January 20, 1996.
11. Interview, August 22, 1988.
12. Interviews with participants.
13. David Hechler, *The Battle and the Backlash: The Child Sexual Abuse War,* (1988: Lexington, Kentucky), Lexington Books, p. 255.

The Notebooks of Lynn Moss-Sharman: In a book of drawings recalling a childhood of experimentation in the 1950s, predating McMartin by thirty years, the allegations are strikingly similar:

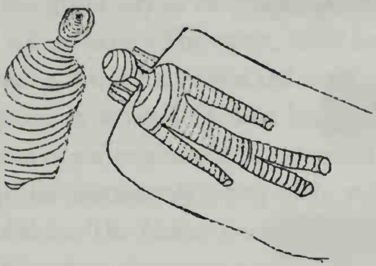

"First we make you. Then we break you." A series of techniques. They dislocated my arms at the shoulders, then wrapped me up in bandages. It is a portable sensory deprivation unit. You know who is boss after this. Most of the other "breaking" techniques involved electricity, boxes and other containers.

There were always sacrifices and rituals involving children. The small angel is my internal "observer." Whenever the "angel" showed up, somebody usually got killed. The same man who did the experiments in the hospitals and at the military bases were part of the group of men who went to the rituals and pedophiles.

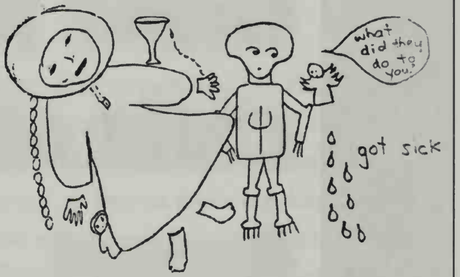
what did they do to you?
got sick

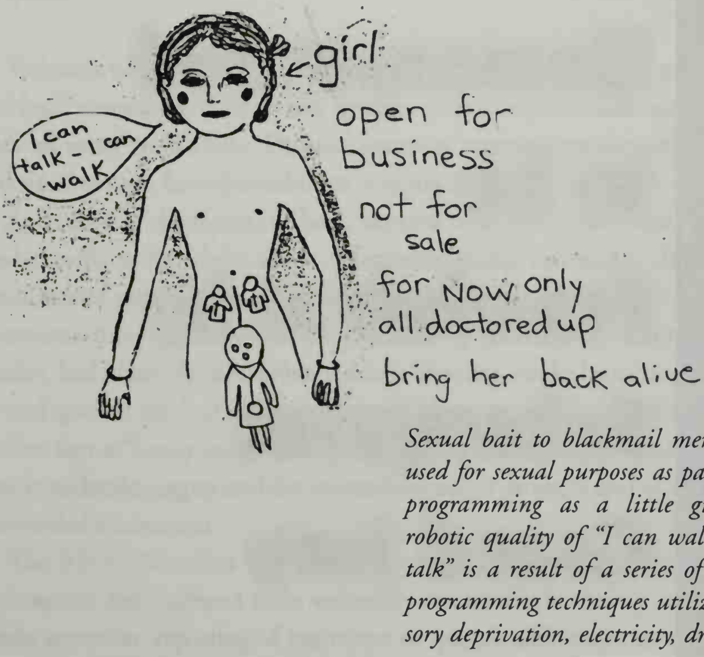
girl
I can talk - I can walk
open for business
not for sale
for Now only
all doctored up
bring her back alive

Sexual bait to blackmail men: I was used for sexual purposes as part of the programming as a little girl. The robotic quality of "I can walk, I can talk" is a result of a series of torture-programming techniques utilizing sensory deprivation, electricity, drugging.

Acclaimed 1991–92 San Diego Grand Jury Child Abuse Report Demonstrated to be Fraudulent by Subsequent Grand Jury

An Organized Child Abuse Cover-Up

In 1992 some 2,300 copies of a report on child abuse were mailed by a San Diego County grand jury to congressmen, newspaper reporters, social service agencies and college faculty. The report, *Child Sexual Abuse, Assault and Molest Issues,* was touted on network television and in the public print. Even the liberal *Mother Jones* magazine, in its July 1996 issue, lauded the efforts of Carol Hopkins, deputy forewoman of the original San Diego grand jury and organizer of the mailing campaign, for courageously taking on the sensitive issue of "unfounded allegations" of child abuse. The *Mother Jones* story, written by Judith Levine, was typical of the publicity given the report, which claimed that mindless "panic" over child abuse "seems to sprout from the desert soil of San Diego as abundantly as neon fuchsia succulents and bougainvillea":

> The county has been the scene of a string of highly publicized false allegations of molestation, including satanic ritual abuse, going back to the 1980s. In 1992, a major grand jury investigation found the county's child welfare agencies and juvenile courts to be "a system out of control," so keen on protecting children from predation that it took hundreds of them away from their parents on what turned out to be false charges. The report called for "profound change" throughout the system.

Verbatim copies of the report are available from men's rights organizations and legal advocacy groups on the Internet promoting the "false memory" bromide of ritual child abuse. Defense attorneys representing accused pedophiles and ritual abusers have quoted from it in the courtroom.

And much of the report is a hoax, sheared from whole cloth and sewn into a legal parachute for child abuse defendants facing conviction. In a second, unpublicized grand jury inquiry into claims made in the 1991–92 report. it was discovered that the first grand jury, chaired by retired Navy Captain Richard Macfie, had blatantly misrepresented case histories, cooked courtroom testimony and ignored physical evidence of sexual abuse to arrive at the erroneous conclusion that a "family crisis" exists in the justice system, that a break-up of families is endemic, aggravated by overzealous social workers and a profusion of unfounded accusations.

The 91–92 "Families in Crisis" report concluded that the issue of child molestation has "suffered from excessive, sometimes bordering on hysterical, media attention, reporting of inaccurate or questionable statistics, and the failure to define and identify child sexual abuse accurately." And the panel's own handling of facts and statistics can, ironically enough, be interpreted as an attempt to generate hysteria, to arouse parental fear of child protective services and reinforce the ongoing backlash against ritually abused children and their advocates.

The April 1993 report of the San Diego County Commission on Children conflicts flatly with the original grand jury's argument that "children lie about these issues." On the contrary, the commission's study, cited in the second grand jury's review, refutes the "false memory" argument and the original panel's suggestion that children frequently "lie" about sexual predation :

> Goodman (1986, 1989) and Saywitz (1989) on children's memory and on the reliability of children's allegations of sexual abuse ... demonstrate:
>
> 1. It is uncommon for children to make false allegations about being molested.
> 2. Children's memories are relatively good when compared to adult's memories.
> 3. Errors by children in the recall of events are usually those of omission, rather than commission.
> 4. While children may be more suggestible with respect to their memory of peripheral details, their recall of significant events that they have experienced, rather than things they have merely observed, cannot be easily changed or manipulated.

The second grand jury protested that its investigation was "hampered by missing 1991–92 files." The files, they discovered, "had been removed from the grand jury offices" by members of the original jury. A total of "fourteen files were returned on June 14, 1993 following a court hearing." The review panel's report, completed in 1993, details serious "flaws" in the 91–92 findings, and uncovers an unmistakable pattern of gross misrepresentation, arriving at the false impression that families are routinely torn asunder by groundless accusations of abuse.

A review of the original report found more falsifications in the presentation of abuse histories from county files, obvious in the following excerpts:

> THE 1991–92 GRAND JURY REPORT
>
> "[A] school teacher was tried for child abuse after pushing a child. A jury found her not guilty. It was acknowledged by the supervising Deputy D.A. that this was a weak case, prosecuted "'to teach a lesson, test the parameter of the law, educate the public.'"

REVIEW FINDINGS

"The 1992–93 Grand Jury found there were seven victims [not one]. The defendant was *not charged at all* due to technical complications (statute of limitations and lack of witness availability). One child had been lifted by one arm and thrown into his desk, another was slapped hard on the head. She also had her hair pulled. A third child was slapped twice on the head and a fourth was hit on top of the head during a school assembly.

"The children said that the defendant called them such names as 'stupid' or 'idiot.' This teacher's personnel file showed that she had received ten notices complaining about her inappropriate use of physical discipline on 8-year-old children. One of [the complainants] suggested termination."

THE 1991-92 GRAND JURY REPORT

"A teenager was prosecuted for felony child molestation upon an allegation by a foster child in his mother's home. There was no physical evidence. The D.A.'s office prosecuted despite its awareness that this child's DSS file contained references to previous unfounded allegations as well as psychological evaluations of the child as a pathological liar."

REVIEW FINDINGS

"The case was based on a report by a 12-year-old boy to his social worker. He said that the defendant had molested him numerous times during a two-year period by oral copulation, sodomy and masturbation/fondling. The abuse began about one month after the victim was placed in foster care at the defendant's mother's house. The victim described weapons the defendant had either used or threatened to use, including a whip, a knife, brass knuckles and a rifle. These weapons were found in a subsequent police search of the defendant's living quarters. The examining physician detailed physical findings which supported the victim's claim of having been sodomized.

"The victim was borderline retarded, had sociopathic behaviors and psychological problems, but no reference to a report that the victim was a pathological liar was found.

"The defendant pled guilty to Penal Code 647.6 (child molestation). The 1991–92 report makes additional comments about this case ... and alleges that the District Attorney's "decision to prosecute was based solely on the child's accusation." The files that were reviewed contained references to far more physical evidence, and in a civil suit brought by the victim against the County of San Diego, an award of over $1 million was made. This fact is a positive indication that the County felt their the case was valid, and that the victim was truly a victim."

THE 1991–92 GRAND JURY REPORT

"A step-grandfather was prosecuted for the felony child molestation of his 11-year-old granddaughter. He and the family adamantly denied the allegations. Again, DSS files available to the D.A. contained contradictory information and evaluations of the child as a pathological liar. There was also a child molest report involving the natural father and the child. None of this information was revealed to the defense. The child testified at the preliminary hearing but was not cross-examined. At the time of trial, the D.A. stated that the child could not be located. The preliminary hearing testimony of the child was entered. The step-grandfather was convicted. Between conviction and sentencing the defense became aware that the child's whereabouts were known, and had been known, by the D.A. The defense asked for a retrial. It has been granted."

REVIEW FINDINGS

"This case involves the molest of a nine-year-old girl by the boyfriend of the girl's grandmother. After trial, he was convicted of eight counts of violating Penal code 288(a) and he was sentenced to six years in a state prison. His motion for a new trial was denied. No reference in the reports contained in the dependency file contained any reference to the victim as a 'pathological liar.' The girl's grandmother did accuse the girl of being a pathological liar. No police report was ever made regarding a molest of the victim by her father, after a report by the brother of an ex-landlord who said that he once saw some "messing around" between the father and the victim, but the incident was written up by the San Diego Police Department and referred to Child Protective Services.

"The statement that the victim was not cross-examined at the preliminary hearing is untrue, and the preliminary hearing transcript shows such cross-examination. The prosecution found out where the victim was after the trial, when the victim's grandmother told the deputy where she was. Prior to this time, the prosecution had no information on the whereabouts of the girl. The defense did ask for a new trial, but the motion was denied and the defendant was sentenced to prison."

Among other many "flaws" in the 1991–92 child abuse report, the grand jury cited the statement that a chief deputy county counsel pressed subordinates to file charges in cases based on false allegations. The counselor in question, however, states that she had overruled deputies on only four petitions of child abuse, and all four petitions were in fact sustained by the court.

The initial San Diego grand jury report also quoted the director of Child Protection Services in San Diego, who denied that he had ever made the statement, "I don't think I'm as good as some doctors at maintaining an objective outlook, but I do the best I can." This was based on a misquote in a newspaper story. He emphasizes that errors in "non-intervention" far outnumber "intervention" errors. The 92–93 grand jury review confirmed the observation with statistical analysis demonstrating that, if anything, the system is far from "out of control," but errs most often in favor of abusive parents:

> Of the current annual level of 68,000 plus calls entering the San Diego Child protection system, most are closed without action, many result in children being referred to "diversion" or left at home relying on "family preservation" programs, with only 1,500 (at current rates) resulting in removal of the child and dependency court petitions, less than half the number three years ago.... Complaints may be expected from adults who feel deeply offended, regardless of the merits of the removal from the viewpoint of the best interests of the child. The adults may be articulate, or at least have articulate counsel. Adults can organize politically, contribute to campaigns, issue press releases, grant interviews to the media, testify before the legislature and attempt to persuade the grand jury. In fact, adults have done so—particularly those accused of sexual abuse of their children.

And who speaks for the 64,000 cases of reported child abuse in which no action is taken?

> Here, there is no articulate spokesperson. Even where there is counsel for the child, that counsel is circumscribed by rules of confidentiality, meant to protect the child. In addition, no civil remedy for the child exists where the state fails to remove—even where failure to do is gross negligence by the state."

The result of the original jury's "investigation" has been, according to the subsequent grand jury report, that San Diego Children's Services Bureau employees "were caused unneeded difficulty in performing their jobs." Morale was "seriously affected." Prosecutors and social workers identified by job title in the original report and "accused of misconduct or worse have suffered greatly. And, because of the prestige associated with the imprimatur of the grand jury, the reports are now held up as authoritative proof of a malaise in child protection services generally, and by implication, those associated with the process."

The review panel also blamed the 91–92 child abuse report and attendant media coverage for creating an atmosphere in which "errors are more likely to be made in the failure to remove children than in their inappropriate removal," rendering abused kids defenseless. Contrary to the widely reported findings of the original panel, the most significant flaw in the system was determined to be a failure to "adequately investigate and intervene where there is an indication of serious child abuse." The intransigence of child services was found to contribute to "substantial numbers of errors in failure to remove, failure to intervene, failure to treat," with the result that many children are "condemned to years of suffering."

Failure to separate a child from parents suspected of abuse can culminate in tragic circumstances:

> There has been a great deal of attention placed on voluntary diversion {family agrees to CSB contract terms in return for having children left at home} in the last few months. The family of Tiffany C. was offered a voluntary contract, which the father signed, agreeing that he would move out of the house, attend anger management classes, and never be alone with the children (Tiffany and her sibling). Two months after the contract was signed, Tiffany was dead of injuries sustained in her home.
>
> Natasha B.'s mother has borne six children. The youngest, and the only one still in the mother's custody is Natasha, now six months old. When Natasha was 11-days old, her mother signed a voluntary services case plan. On two separate occasions since, Natasha has suffered head injuries inflicted during her parents' domestic disputes.

The original jury detailed the handling of one child, Alicia Wade, which has since become something of a cause *celebré* in the "men's rights" movement. The review panel acknowledged that errors were made in the deputy D.A.s investigation—but as a result of statements made by Alicia and her parents themselves, and by confusion in verifying the identity of the true perpetrator, not an inquisitional campaign of persecution waged by the San Diego D.A.'s office, as the 91–92 report claimed. There was no question that Alicia had been sexually abused. She sustained serious injuries, conclusively. But the first grand jury report neglected to mention this fact and treated the molestation charge as frivolous:

1991–92 GRAND JURY REPORT

"In the case of Alicia W., the father persisted in denying allegations of molest, but the mother was repeatedly told by her attorney and social worker that her only chance to reunite with Alicia was to say that she believed her husband did it. The child, who persistently described a strange perpetrator, was not believed. In order to allow her 'the freedom" to remember' without trauma, visits with her parents were terminated until she could come up with 'a more believable story.' This child was kept in court ordered therapy for two and a half years, twice a week, 'dealing with the molest.'"

REVIEW FINDINGS

"Albert Carder [ultimately determined to be Alicia's abuser] was charged with [four] child molests ... in July 1989. The deputy district attorney assigned to the case filed charges against Carder alleging molestations of these children. Carder pled guilty just before his preliminary hearing. Although the deputy D.A. had heard of the incident involving Alicia, which had occurred in May 1989, no evidence had been presented to her requesting additional charges against Carder since no evidence was known to the police connecting Carder to that case at that time.

"In the case of the four victims mentioned above, the deputy D.A. learned that Carder knew the victims and their mothers. The attacks did not result in serious injury as they did with Alicia.... The explanation given by Alicia's parents for her injuries was odd. Mr. W. told police that if he had done it, he did not recall it. The detective assigned to the case had received a report that Mrs. W. had told another person that her husband had committed the molest.

"The grand jury report on Alicia W. unleashed an attack on the deputy district attorney, accusing her of ethical violations. She was threatened with criminal prosecution. This harmed her professionally, socially and emotionally. "

It is a cutting irony, in light of the many sexually-abused children neglected by the legal system, that the false findings of the original grand jury report have been gleefully aired by the media, while the critical grand jury examination issued in 1993 has been widely overlooked.

It is serious enough that the 1991–92 "Families in Crisis" jury report defrauded San Diego's legal system into adopting policies inimical to the lives of abused children. Equally outrageous was the *plagiarizing* of the report by a grand jury in Merced County, a farming community in California's central valley. *The San Diego Union-Tribune* reported on July 9, 1992 that the original hoax was revisited in the Merced report, "uncannily similar—virtually word-for-word in most sections—to the San Diego jury's report. Even some of the testimony quoted by the San Diego panel appears in the Merced jury's report." The pirating was discovered when officials of Merced's Human Services Agency compared the documents, and concluded that at least three-fourths of the Merced report had been cribbed from the deception cobbled together under the watch of Captain MacFie in San Diego.

Oh, what a web ...

BLEAK HOUSE

A Case of Nazi-Style Experimental Psychiatry in Canada

by Steve Smith and Alex Constantine

After 20 years of frustrated efforts to do anything whatsoever about the nightmarish "treatment" Steve Smith received in a Canadian mental institution, the paperwork began to in.

In 1991, Smith requested his clinical records from the archive of the Oak Ridge Mental Hospital and received a grand total of 15 pages. Predicated on these, Smith filed a complaint with the College of Physicians and Surgeons about an illicit, sadistic regimen of psychiatric "treatment," euphemized by his handlers as "Defense Disrupting Therapy." The College investigated and bluntly denied that Oak Ridge had ever conducted experimental studies on Smith or anyone else.

Smith appealed to Canada's Health Professions Board and submitted the hospital records to support his complaint. The Board ordered the College of Physicians and Surgeons to open the investigation. In a 19-page letter, the Health Board demanded a thorough investigation. "I have copies of the correspondence between the Board and the College," Smith says, "and they have become quite critical, applying to the former such terms as 'not serving the public interest.'"

It can only serve the public interest to report Smith's submergence in a horrifying world of brutal psychiatric experimentation and the men who presided over it, particularly Dr. Elliot T. Barker, the psychiatrist who supervised Smith's "treatment" at Oak Ridge. The selection of experimental psychiatric subjects is often arbitrary when sanctions are handed around by secret bureaucracies, and the involvement of the CIA is suggested by Dr. Barker's experimental psychiatric method and sponsorship of a patient cum Rhodesian mercenary. Experimentation on human subjects in violation of the Nuremberg agreement is ongoing. Like Steve Smith, subjects may struggle for decades to assemble a case documenting their exploitation. His account is not unique. Anyone is a prospective subject to a scientific underground founded on absolute disregard for human rights.

—A.C.

Steve Smith's Story

In the winter of 1968 I left high school, and no one seemed bothered by that. An adolescent urge to wander set me on the road to California. At that time I was learning to drive and getting a driver's license was the most important thing in my life. I'd sometimes swipe my mother's keys and drive around the back streets of my neighborhood. My parents were divorced when I was ten. My brother and I lived with my father in Sudbury, Ontario. My mother ran off with a tough, good-looking bartender, and my father's life was rapidly overtaken by alcohol and self-destruction. My brother and I were left to fend for ourselves in a house that was neglected and often without food. The decimation of my father took about a year, and we were sent to live with my mother and Bill. These were years of physical and emotional abuse. We were all victims of Bill's drunken rages. He committed suicide in 1987. My mother lives out the declining years of her life alone with her dogs and cats.

After a few brushes with the Sault Ste. Marie police, and a system of justice that dealt with the local counter-culture in a heavy-handed way, I headed for the west coast.

My friend Ben and I hit the road in the dead of winter, no funds, no plans. The first hitch took us to WaWa, Ontario. We spent the night in the basement of a church. The next morning was freezing cold and hitching a ride was punishment. We hitched on to White River, the "coldest spot in Canada."

Our choice was to walk or die. We reached Marathon sometime in the night, desperately cold. Everything in town was closed. There was no point in looking for an open restaurant. We didn't have enough money between us for a cup of coffee. Ben and I found a small used car lot on the outskirts of town and stole a car. We drove to the next town and arrived just before dawn, abandoned the car at a service station. As we were climbing out, the police pulled in behind us. Five minutes earlier or later, and the course of my life would have been entirely different.

A child of the times, I had in my shirt pocket two tablets of LSD I'd planned on taking when we reached Vancouver. The tabs were about the size of a match head. The trip to Vancouver was ended by our arrest, so I swallowed the tablets and thus began my trip into a hell that was to last eight months and haunt me the rest of my life. My recollection of the next 24 hours is fuzzy, but much is unforgettable:

I am in a black steel cell covered with lurid graffiti, handcuffed, standing in front of a doctor. The floor is rolling like a wave.

In a hospital emergency room large men hold me down, dodging and maneuvering to insert a plastic tube in my nose. I am struggling. A glass of what looks like red wine. I drink and within seconds I am violently throwing up. I am overdosing, very sick, more frightened than I have ever been in my life.

The next several hours are a blank. I remember standing in a court room full of skeletons in black robes. The judge took one glance at me and I was bundled off to 30 days of observation at the local psychiatric hospital.

The first day I was confined to bed with little or no contact with anyone. The next week was uneventful. I was interviewed a few times but I don't remember if I told anyone about the LSD. I had the impression they either believed me to be faking or drugged. Within a short time I was given my clothes and permitted to wander about the hospital. I was not locked in, and I suppose I could have walked out. I met a girl from another ward and she invited me to a dance that evening. I was leaving my ward for this rendévouz when I was stopped by an attendant who objected to the way I was dressed, very 1960s counter-culture, beads, the usual accoutrements. The attendant was hostile. He pushed me against the wall and pawed at my jeans, blustering something about proper dress.

I made another big mistake. I fought back. He dragged me to the floor in short order. Reinforcements came running, and in an instant my pants were around my ankles and I was injected with something painful. I was dragged down the hall, tossed into an empty room and locked inside. I was furious. The girl was waiting for me and here I was, naked, locked in this little room. I pounded on the door and screamed until my lungs were aching.

There is an entry in my clinical record, dated April 26, 1968, a few days after this incident: Steve Smith "... tends to become resentful, hostile and uncooperative when he is not able to have his own way...." Of course, I didn't realize how dangerous an outburst of defiance could be. Never get mad in a mad house. The next day I was informed that I was to be sent to Penetang Hospital for the criminally insane. I have no words to express the fear that swept over me at that moment. Penetang was notorious. It's the end of the line, you never get out. I was in big trouble, but not insane. The next day I was dragged onto a train in handcuffs by two burly guards who made it clear that they would take no nonsense from me. They showed me a billy club and a large syringe. We traveled in a private berth. Neither of my traveling companions shifted their gaze from me.

We reached Midland, Ontario. There was a car waiting for us. A short drive later, I was at the front gate of Oak Ridge Hospital, which resembled a prison. The iron gate rang behind me and I was not to see the outside world again for eight months. I was struck by the size of the guards. I have never in my life seen such a collection of oversized homosimians. As far as I knew, no one knew that I was there. I had disappeared off the face of the earth, and never felt more alone and helpless. No one said a word to me. I was treated like a slab of meat. Stripped naked. My hair, mouth and armpits were probed for concealed weapons or contraband. My head was shaved. I was sprayed with a disinfectant that burned, given a heavy canvas gown and locked in a cement cell with nothing but a blanket. Not a word from anyone. The door slammed shut.

I don't know how many days passed. It occurred to me that I could be incarcerated for the remainder of my life. If there was anything in that cell I could have used to kill myself, I believe I would have done so.

The light was on 24 hours a day. I ate from paper plates. No utensils, not even a plastic spoon. The only escape was sleep, and I forced myself to do as much of it as possible. Men strolled past my cell dressed in street cloths. I thought they were doctors or hospital staff, and tried to talk to them, find out what the hell was going to happen to me. No one even looked my way. I was completely ignored. I don't know how many days this went on.

One day the door slid open and a Dr. Elliot T. Barker entered. He was charming, soothing, smiling, his arm around my shoulder. He addressed me by my first name. It seemed I'd never known contact with another human being. I fell for it, not knowing what this man had in store for me, the torture and degradation I was to suffer.

"Do you think you are mentally ill?"

"No, I do not."

He grinned, his arm around my shoulder.

"Why do you think you are here?"

"I don't know."

"Well, I'll tell you. You are a very *sick* boy," Barker told me. "I think you are a very slick psychopath, and I want you to know that there are people just like you in here who have been locked up more than 20 years. But we have a program here that can help you get over your illness. If you volunteer for this treatment, it will improve your chances of release—but you must cooperate fully with the program."

He told me that being a psychopath was essentially an inability to communicate with others, and that beneath the reinforced surface was a deeply rooted psychosis. What he proposed to do, through the use of LSD, methedrine and other drugs, was to bring out this "hidden psychosis" and treat it. In other words, to cure you I must first drive you mad.

I was locked in a cold, brightly-lit cell, numb with cold, clutching a blanket. Anything would be better than this. I agreed to cooperate.

The "consent" form that I signed on the 27th of December, 1967, obtained under freedom of information, proposed an unusual approach to "psychotherapy":

REQUEST FOR COMPRESSED ENCOUNTER THERAPY

Realizing that my chances of recovery and release are improved considerably by intensive treatment, I request admission to the Compressed Encounter Therapy Unit on "F" ward. I am ready to meet the conditions of treatment specified below:

1. Commitment to an indefinite period of group interaction under conditions of the most stringent security.
2. Agreement to take such medications as the ward psychiatrist may judge likely to hasten or otherwise assist in my treatment. Such medications might include scopolamine, methedrine, mescalin, psilocybin, sodium amytal, dexedrine, etc....

I was released from my cell, given a shower, khaki pants and shirt, escorted to the "Sun Room," an unfurnished vestibule occupied by six or seven men (boys) about the same age as myself. They had all been in this room for a week or more. Dr. Barker informed me that he was locking me in with them without prior "conditioning" to "shake things up a bit." I watched them for a few days without saying much. Nothing they did was rational. The patients seemed to be playing some kind of psychotic game, talking like doctors. When their attention shifted to me, I was forced by ringleaders to concede that I was mentally ill. The pressure was intense, unrelenting. Here I was imprisoned in this snake pit of a hospital, encircled by rapists and killers determined to convince me that I was insane.

I was the only character in this equation who wasn't deluded. My sole possession in the world at this stage was my sanity, and I wasn't about to give it up. I was soon to discover that these mental patients had more resources at their command than group pressure. After a few days of silent resistance, the other patients concluded that I needed some drugs to "loosen" me up—THE PATIENTS PRESCRIBED THEM. They recommended I be given methamphetamines. Dr. Barker signed his approval. Two attendants and a nurse entered and chased me around the room until I was cornered and dragged to the floor. I put up a good fight but they finally managed to slip the needle into my arm. The drug hit me within seconds. I lived for that drug for the next five years. I would do anything to have it.

Dr. Barker's program was run by the inmates. The staff observed and approved their decisions. What followed was a systematic bombardment of drugs intended to break my resistance and to bring out the so-called "hidden psychosis." I suggest that these potent drugs did not reveal something that was already there, but in fact created a drug-induced psychotic state. In his published papers, Dr. Barker describes the drugs he used and the results that he hoped to obtain, but reports nothing about the horrors suffered by the victims of these experiments.

I will try to relate some of the effects of the drugs forced on me over a sustained period. During the drug treatments, it was standard practice to handcuff patients together with seatbelts and padlocks. It was also common for any patient resisting the injections to be choked into unconsciousness by twisting a towel around his neck. This was done to me a few times before I realized that I was more likely to stay alive if I submitted to the drugs. I remember a direction that I was to be an "observer," that I must stay awake all night to watch the other patients sleep. To aid me in this task I was given as much Benzedrine as I wanted. I was supplied with a log book and a pencil stub and told to record everything that happened. I wrote all night.

The hallucinations began after a few days of sleep deprivation, smoke at the edge of my peripheral vision, and eventually thousands of bugs crawling on my skin. I tried to show these bugs to other patients and the attendant who brought us our our meals. Everyone would take a close look and start laughing. Two attendants came in and without a word put me in handcuffs and leg restraints.

Then paranoia, not the generalized anxiety that is so common in current language, but the real thing, full-blown psychotic paranoia. I thought everyone just out of my range of hearing was conspiring to kill me. I remember laying on a mattress on the floor with a blanket pulled over my head. I assumed the two patients next to me were prying a staple out of the log book to impale my eye.

I lifted a corner of my mattress. The floor was seething with bugs and worms. That was it. I jumped up in a panic, attacked the two patients next to me. I tried to wrench my arm around one of them, and with the seatbelt straps locked around my wrists strangle him before anyone could stop me. This outburst was the result of chemical torture and sleep deprivation, otherwise known as "Defense Disrupting Therapy."

A series of drugs was forced on me. I remember something called scopolamine, a so-called truth serum. I was told that it was used by the Nazis as an effective means of chemical interrogation. The effects of this drug are so overwhelmingly horrifying that I am at a loss to describe them. It was administered in three injections, about an hour apart. After the first, my mouth dried up completely. The throat constricts to the size of a pinhole. When you try to swallow you hear a dry, clicking sound. One side-effect is a very high pulse-rate (160 sitting down) and a sense of suffocation and anxiety. After the second injection you begin to slip in and out of delirium. Time sense and continuity are disrupted. The third injection is followed by an 8 to 12 hour period of complete delirium, incoherence, restlessness, hyperventilating.

Patients undergoing this study in medieval degradation were handcuffed to two other patients throughout the ordeal. It was the job of these observers to stop the subject from bashing himself into walls and hyperventilating to death. No training was provided. The life of another patient could be in the hands of people who themselves were on the same drugs a few days before. I think I was given scopolamine three times during my stay in the "sun room" and a continuous diet of methamphetamines and "goofballs."

I don't recall much about the months that followed. I slipped further into a drug-soaked existence, punctuated by incidents of extreme brutality. Dr. Barker came into the sun room with a small can of something. He flipped it from one hand to the other and described a wonderful new invention he called "mace." With no justification but a as test of its effectiveness, he let loose with this spray and blasted us all to the floor. That's the kind of man he was: very curious and always willing to try a little hands-on experiment. I think I was in the sun room for about two weeks when Dr. Barker moved me into the regular program.

At this point I was resisting everything, and fought Barker's attempts to morph my mind with drugs so he could reshape it to his own idea of normalcy. I was moved to a cell with a real bed and my own sink and toilet.

Shortly thereafter, a patient-teacher came to my cell with a stack of psychological tests and insisted I take them. He was dressed in street cloths and conducted himself like hospital staff. I'd had enough of this. I told him to take his tests and shove off. He came back with two attendants who strangled me with a towel and injected me. My clothes were peeled off. I was thrust into an empty cell.

My inmate-instructor returned with the tests and said with a smile, "are you ready to do this or do you need a little more prompting?" I was so drugged I could not keep my eyes open. I started to write and fell asleep, face down on the paper. I woke up with someone squeezing a nerve point on my heel. I started to write again. It was impossible to concentrate. Math questions, logic questions. What's wrong with this picture? I fell asleep again and came to under an ice-cold shower, locked in place by attendants at each arm. This was torture and I screamed. Back into the cell, dripping wet and turning blue.

Do the tests or submit to more torture. I turned to the tests.

Hospital records claim that my IQ is roughly equivalent to my shoe size. I don't remember completing these tests, but eventually I was permitted to sleep.

The next day a formal brainwashing program was underway. Every minute of the day was structured. The basic idea was to force patients to memorize long papers dealing with defense mechanisms and some kind of twisted logic. A rule of silence was strictly enforced. Inmates were not permitted to talk to one another outside the groups. No warnings were given. Any breach of the rules was met with immediate punishment. This could be anything from having your cell stripped, leaving nothing but a blanket on the floor, to strapped incarceration and drugging that went on for days. An infraction of the rules could be something as simple as turning your eyes to the ceiling in a gesture of disbelief. After a week of this discipline I was a whipped animal, docile and cooperative. I followed Dr. Barker's dictates like a robot.

We were forced to perform military exercises three times a day. When the whistle blew, we dropped for push-ups. Put your heart into it or take punishment. I never knew what the next phase was going to be, but throughout the ordeal of drugs, handcuffs and humiliation came authoritarian "psychic driving." I gave the answer expected of me when asked if I was mentally ill.

I suppose I had truly been driven mad.

I had seen LSD used in massive doses on selected patients. There were beatings and murders. I remember the names Matt Lamb, Peter Woodcock and others.

All of this under *the direct control of inmates.* This in itself makes this story all the more difficult to write. It sounds so absurd. That's how it was. And I couldn't request a review of my case by hospital administrators—this required the approval of a panel of mental patients.

Dr. Barker's "treatment" program was devised to drive young men into a drug-induced psychosis, and through fear and discipline from within the group, create a self-sustaining system of docile mental patients. How any doctor could view this as a benefit to the mentally ill is beyond me.

But in light of what I have since learned of CIA-sponsored LSD experiments, and the part Canada played in the Agency's MK-ULTRA program, my story is placed in a context that is far from outrageous. Much of what occurred in Oak Ridge was comprehensible only after I began to fit it with pieces of the CIA mind control puzzle.

For example: a cut-throat world of covert operations lurks in the subtext of this report from the *Toronto Globe & Mail* on the premature release and death of the homicidal Matt Lamb, a "rehabilitated" Oak Ridge patient:

> ARMY CLASH WITH GUERRILLAS
>
> TWO KILLED IN ONTARIO, CANADIAN SLAIN IN RHODESIA
>
> A Windsor man who spent seven years in an Ontario mental hospital after killing two people has been slain in action with the Rhodesian army. Lance Corporal

Matthew Charles Lamb, 28, died in a clash with black nationalist guerrillas seeking to oust Rhodesia's white minority government.

Dr. Elliott Barker, a psychiatrist who treated Lamb for several years in the hospital and befriended him, said he was not recruited but traveled to Rhodesia about two years ago with the purpose of joining the army. Lamb was released in 1973 from the maximum security section of the Penetanguishene Mental Health Center, where he had been sent after the shotgun slaying of two young people walking with friends on a Windsor street. Lamb visited relatives and went to see Dr. Barker at his farm near Penetanguishene while on leave last summer. "He knew when he went back he probably would be killed," Dr. Barker said yesterday.

A communiqué issued by the Rhodesian security forces yesterday said that the Canadian and eight blacks identified as guerrillas were killed in clashes during the past 48 hours. Dr. Barker said he was advised that Lamb was killed on Sunday.

Last month another Canadian serving with the Rhodesian forces, Trooper Michael McKeown of Dartmouth, N.S., was sentenced to a year in prison for refusing to fight. He said he was recruited in Canada. Lamb was 19 in January, 1967 when he was found not guilty by reason of insanity on a charge of murdering 20-year-old Edith Chaykoski. She was in a group of young people walking toward a bus stop when a man stepped out from behind a tree and began shooting. Three other people were wounded, and one of them a 21-year-old man, died later.

During court proceedings in his case, Lamb made two unsuccessful attempts to escape.

In 1965, when he was 16, Lamb served 14 months in the penitentiary after he robbed a suburban store and exchanged shots with a policeman. After his 1967 committal to Penetanguishene, Lamb was treated by Barker, who was then head of the therapeutic unit at the hospital's maximum-security division.

He was released in 1973 by order of the Ontario Cabinet, acting on a recommendation of an advisory review board. "He was given a clean bill of health," Dr. Barker said in an interview. "The advisory review board felt he was no longer dangerous. He had been sick and he was no longer sick."

During his two to three years in the hospital, he was one of the patient therapists, and they looked up to him.

After he was freed, Lamb lived with Dr. Barker and the psychiatrist's family for a year on their 200-acre farm near the hospital, earning his keep as a laborer....

Fortunately for me, the laws governing committal to hospitals were changed during my stay at Oak Ridge. A review board was created to give patients an avenue of appeal.

I remember sitting in a chair before five or six bureaucrats. They were my last chance at reclaiming my life. The interview lasted less than half an hour, and in the end they told me that I would be released as soon as arrangements could be made. It was out of Barker's hands. Within days I was on a bus to Toronto. It ended as suddenly as it began, but the consequences of my months as Dr. Barker's guinea pig were to affect the direction of my life for years to come. I had tried LSD twice, and the second time precipitated my forced incarceration. Like most people my age in the 1960s, I experimented with drugs. But after Oak Ridge I was addicted to amphetamines, my slide into self-destruction revisiting my father's decline.

Before Oak Ridge, the thought of sticking a needle into my arm was repulsive. But when you want amphetamine, the quickest way is the only way. It came to living in the back of an abandoned car, using a refill from a ball-point pen for a fix. Barker left me shipwrecked on the shore.

But there came a time when I was able to reclaim control of my life and determine my own direction, because that's who I am. Today I have my own business. I have a little sailboat and I go skiing when I can.

Many others were left incurably wounded. I have found some of them. Dr. Barker devastated our lives. I saw murder in Oak Ridge. I saw torture that one would only expect to see in the most squalid Third World country. I have been over this for years, and it seems that every question inevitably leads to more questions. I want answers from Oak Ridge and Dr. Barker.

The Hollywood/Florida Mob Connection, the CIA and O.J. Simpson

PART I: PIZZA DRIPPINGS ON THE COURTROOM FLOOR—JOEY IP'S MURDER, INC.

PART II: MEYER LANSKY'S MIGRATORY BIRDS OF PREY

1: F. Lee Bailey, "Bad Eye" Gerstein & BCCI
2: Joey Ip's Nubian Wiseguys and Denise Brown, the Grieving Gunsel
3: The Rumor and the Phoenix

PART III: THE CATSPAW PRECURSOR —A MIRROR IMAGE OF THE SIMPSON CASE

PART IV: A KILLER'S BRAIN FREQUENCIES, A FEW WORDS ABOUT CIA/MAFIA CLEAN-UP OPERATIONS

1: "Sufficient Truth"—Blowback at the LAPD
2: "Evidence of Conspiracy"
3: The "Experts"

PART I:
Pizza Drippings on the Courtroom Floor

> *"Here, take a good look." He tossed it across the desk. Chuck [Giancana, brother of the Mafia's Sam Giancana] caught the coin and instantly realized it was old, ancient in fact. Chuck fingered the coin, turning it over and over again, and then tossed it back to his brother.*
>
> *Mooney [Sam Giancana] leaned forward. "Look, this is one of the Roman gods. This one has two faces, two sides. That's what we are, the Outfit and the CIA ... two sides of the same coin."*
>
> —Sam (Jr.) and Chuck Giancana

The shadow of Joey Ippolito falls across the courtroom floor, seeps into every crack in the Simpson case. Yet his name is seldom mentioned.

His father, Joseph Ippolito, Sr., was in the pay of the syndicate's Meyer Lansky and a soldier of Sam "the Plumber" DeCalvacante, who brought Joey into the league. "Little Man" Lansky, of course, was no homunculus. He led the mob into an alliance with the intelligence sector of government in WWII and loomed above the Combination until his death in 1983. Today, Meyer Lansky's foot soldiers march in step with Langley. CIA denials have been scuffed by too many tongues over the years to be taken seriously (Campbell, Hoch, Pizzo, et. al.).

Joey Ip's Murder, Inc.

Joey Ippolito is second generation Mafia, one of several powerful successors of Meyer Lansky. He was born to a brood of nine children. Joey's brother Frankie perished of a heart attack unloading a crate of marijuana from an Eastern Airlines plane in New Jersey. His brother Louie is a convict (Burdick).

Ippolito's influence in the Mafia is felt from Philadelphia to Dade County, Florida to Southern California. Joey received a medical discharge from the U.S. Marines in 1968, and went to work for his father, the proprietor of Ippolito Construction in New Jersey. A few years later he was charged with counterfeiting federal reserve notes and served a single year, hard time (Medvene). Joey, a one-time U.S. Powerboat Champion, was forced out of racing after a competing boat veered out of control and hurtled across his own, crushing one hand and killing Ippolito's best friend. In 1988, after completing a 40-month prison sentence for marijuana smuggling, he spent a year rebuilding his family's motel in New Jersey, then headed for California. Ippolito's brothers purchased a restaurant in Malibu, the PCH Bar & Grill, and Joey undertook its renovation and management (Medvene; Anastasia & Jennings).

For at least eight years, he retained a burly African-American bodyguard, one Allen C. Cowlings, then an assistant to the president of Jonathon Martin Dress Company in L.A. On August 24, 1994, the *Boston Herald* reported that O.J. Simpson's chum was a "close associate" of the mobster when he "was running a popular restaurant—and a thriving cocaine-dealing business—until last year. Telephone records from the restaurant, confiscated by federal prosecutors and the FBI in Los Angeles, also show calls from Ippolito's restaurant to O.J. Simpson's Brentwood estate, where the tense freeway drama ended."

Los Angeles law enforcement enjoys publicizing its efforts to frustrate the attempts of organized crime to gain "a foothold" in Los Angeles (a Hooverism, since the Mafia established roots in Southern California decades ago). The Organized Crime Intelligence Division (OCID) boasts that it maintains a squad of operatives at L.A. International Airport to intercept incoming mob figures at the turnstile and send them packing (Lieberman). Presumably, Ippolito slipped into town and opened a restaurant in an exclusive area without drawing the attention of the OCID's watchdogs.

Another explanation, of course, is that certain Mafia figures are permitted to flourish in Los Angeles. There is even a question as to whether the OCID gives a fig about organized crime. The division evolved from a unit called the Public Disorder Intelligence Division, a highly political unit, and retired OCID detective Mike Rothmiller maintains that the priority is still politics, not the Mafia. After resigning from the department, Rothmiller gave a deposition to the ACLU and six lawsuits were promptly filed charging the PDID's subversives squad with illegal spying and undercover political provocations. In his deposition, Rothmiller charged that OCID officials had instructed him to find "dirt" on "at least a half-dozen" public officials. One source to the department recalls: "They had files on almost everybody. They were interested in people who could hurt the government, publishing companies, media people, show business people, people like that" (Lieberman & Berger). The division kept no files on organized crime at the time of Rothmiller's resignation, but did target liberal activists for surveillance, spied on police in rival departments, harassed opponents of former police chief Daryl Gates and performed local services for the CIA (Rothmiller & Goldman).

Among the notables to emerge from the OCID into the headlines:

- In 1988, one OCID detective agreed to take an early retirement after he was questioned by police upon receiving information that he had tipped the Mob's labor negotiator to a federal investigation. The detective's OCID partner was suspended for thirty days for failing to inform department heads of the impropriety (Lieberman & Berger).

- Former police detective Michael D. Brambles, an acclaimed mob investigator, convicted to 102 years in state prison for a string of stickups and sexual assaults in 1994. The 47-year-old OCID veteran exhibited "no remorse whatsoever," Superior Court Judge John W. Ouderkirk observed from the bench (Abrahamson & Lieberman).

Among Ippolito's narco-goons was bodybuilder Rod Columbo, his life ended with three shots to the back of the head on January 7, 1992. Columbo himself had been the leading suspect in the murder of cocaine dealer Rene Vega in 1989. Columbo worked at *Cent'Anni's,* a restaurant owned by Ippolito until it folded in 1991. At this time Columbo began to travel extensively. His body was found slumped over the wheel of a 1984 Cadillac in southern New Jersey. LAPD Detective Lee Kingsford told reporters that it was the West Coast consensus the murder had been "drug related."

A few months before to the Columbo killing, Ippolito fell under the scrutiny of Los Angeles police and the FBI. The timely death of a leading distributor eased his legal difficulties considerably.

Dante's Circle of Ippolito associates is not a lonely place.

Another ranking member of the Ippolito syndicate on this plane of existence was John Steele, formerly the mayor of Hallendale, Florida. Mayor Steele once placed a police station at the sub-division where Meyer Lansky lived, at the gangster's request (Burdick). Joey Ippolito, who also lived in the high-security subdivision, was arrested in Long Island in the early 1980s with a dozen other marijuana smugglers running eight tons of cannabis from a ship anchored offshore (Burdick).

Yet another cog in Joey's dope machine was Donald Aronow, a friend of George Bush and designer of the famous Cigarette speed boat, a high-speed favorite of cocaine runners everywhere. Aronow, a wealthy Casanova with more testosterone in his blood than Earnest Hemingway, built racing boats for numerous financial outlaws, including the Shah of Iran, Robert Vesco and Charles Keating. (Convicted of securities fraud in 1991 by Judge Lance Ito.) Keating's extensive CIA ties were never mentioned by prosecuting attorney William

Hodgman, who incidentally, acted as a trial strategist in the Simpson case.

Aronow was gunned down in his parking lot on February 3, 1987. Throughout the week prior to the fatal ambush, he held a series of lengthy telephone conversations with Vice President George Bush (Burdick). It was rumored about Miami that Aronow, who'd been questioned by police about cocaine trafficking a few days before, intended to turn state's evidence. A subpoena was to be served on him the day after the shooting.

Ippolito once broke parole after an eight-year prison term to visit actor James Caan of *Godfather* fame in Los Angeles. The actor was also friendly with Ben Kramer, the convicted Bell Gardens, California casino owner and marijuana smuggler. Kramer is married to Meyer Lansky's niece (Burdick).

The syndicate lurking behind the O.J. Simpson case is a closed circle. Actor James Caan was a regular at the exclusive Turnberry Island resort, twelve miles south of Fort Lauderdale, Florida's Bacchanalian playground for wealthy men (daily rates for a suite range from $275 to $2,100) with teeming hormones.

Turnberry Isle is the Floridian stomping ground of Robert Evans, once Denise Brown's paramour. (He still dotes fondly on erotic memories elicited by the photo of Denise that hangs on his wall.)

Bill Mentzer and Alex Marti—the convicted killers of fledgling Hollywood producer Roy Radin (the godson of Johnny Stoppelli, a soldier in the Genovese crime family)—accused Evans from the witness stand of complicity in the murder. Evans was subpoenaed. He pled the Fifth and went home.

Alex Marti hails from an Argentine death squad. *Newsday's* Steve Wick writes that Marti "loved guns, had a fascination with violence, craved money and hated lots of people, but particularly Jews. A watercolor portrait of Adolph Hitler adorned one wall of his Los Angeles home, and he was a collector of books and writings about the Third Reich.... His most quoted remark was that to really put someone away, you had to shoot him in the back of the head. That was the way the *Nazis* did it" (Wick).

CIA mind control operations overlap with the activities of this family of cocaine distributors and contract killers.

Tally Rogers, a coke courier who had the misfortune of falling in briefly with the Mentzer/Marti circle, is currently serving a prison sentence for child molestation. He claims: "They are frying my brain with microwaves. It's some kind of government *plot,* and I don't understand it" (Wick).

In the early 70s, Robert Evans, according to author Maury Terry in *The Ultimate Evil,* gave orders to the "Son of Sam cult" in New York, a heavily-armed death squad that recruited Bill Mentzer, Marti's co-conspirator in the

Radin murder, to participate in the contract killings.

Evans, cut his teeth in syndicated crime at the gaming tables of Batista's Cuba. He boasts in his autobiography of his friendship with Henry Kissinger. Bill Mentzer, a cocaine courier, bodybuilder and hit man, belonged to the Sams and took part in the killings attributed to David Berkowitz, according to Maury Terry. His neo-Nazi partner, Alex Marti, opened a private investigative service in Los Angeles and hired the late Rod Columbo before the cocaine distributor found employment with Joey Ippolito, another regular at Turnberry Island, James Caan's friend and the employer of Al Cowlings.

Other regulars at Turnberry Isle: Jack Nicholson and Tommy Lasorda. Statuesque hostesses, employed by Don Soffer, the resort's developer—the "Don" who received a fond farewell in O.J. Simpson's suicide letter (Ruiz)—have included model Donna Rice, Lyn Armandt (the wife of a Miami drug dealer alleged to be a friend of Lansky's great-nephew Ben Kramer; her phone call to the *Miami Herald* finished Gary Hart's presidential ambitions), and a clutch of heart-breakingly beautiful hookers with pasts in CIA sex trap operations.

On the afternoon Donald Aronow was gunned down, his chum Soffer received a telephone call at Turnberry's central office, informing him: "You're *next*" (Burdick).

Chris Darden's book tells the tale of one Beth Reed, who phoned the Simpson trial prosecutor from the Bahamas to volunteer that a store clerk had informed her O.J. Simpson was due, shortly after the Brentwood murders, to arrive in the Bahamas for a rendévous with a yacht dubbed the "Miss Turnberry." Darden writes that he checked Simpson's address book and found a reference to "Turnberry Associates" and the name, "Don Soffer." Darden flew to the Bahamas to check into the story, and met the boat's captain, who adamantly denied the story despite the insistence of several witnesses that Simpson had planned to meet there with Soffer's subordinates.

Parenthetically, the resort is the home of the Wolfsonian Museum, named for Miami business tycoon Mitchell Wolfson, Jr. The museum opened in 1995 with an exhibition titled, "The Arts of Reform and Persuasion," drawn from Wolfson's permanent collection, an endless labyrinth stuffed full of historical objects promoting ideas of modernism. "There were," wrote a reporter for the *Nashville Business Journal* on February 12, 1996, "Norwegian tapestries celebrating romantic nationalism ... and posters from Germany and Italy exploring how the Nazi and fascist propaganda machines there penetrated all aspects of life and art."

PART II:
Meyer Lansky's Migratory Birds of Prey

> *"It seems like all the LCN [La Cosa Nostra] drug interests are interconnected," I suggest. "I'm thinking that you just chopped off one arm of an enormous octopus."*
>
> *[Assistant U.S. Attorney Bill Norris] nods. "That's usually what we do," he says in a somewhat resigned tone. "And it turns out to be more like one arm of a starfish, so it regenerates."*
>
> —Thomas Burdick, *Blue Thunder*

Meyer Lansky's attorney Mel Kessler was a suspect in the investigation of Joe Ippolito's drug smuggling venture. Kessler was suspected of being the brains of the operation (Burdick). Hollywood, Florida vice squad officials suspect that Kessler arranged the shipment of 200 kilos of cocaine from Bolivia and was involved in a smuggling operation based in San Juan, Puerto Rico with stopovers in the Caribbean. Telephone records revealed that Ippolito's fellow mobster, Ben Kramer, an investor in the Bicycle Club in Southern California, consulted with Kessler almost daily (Burdick). Kessler has also been linked with "Little Ray" Thompson, another Lansky associate, indicted for drug smuggling with Steadman Stahl, a Dade County judge groomed for the post by state prosecutor Richard "One Eye" Gerstein, a former Watergate investigator who doubled as Kramer's attorney and a business partner of F. Lee Bailey.

He lived in Meyer Lansky's back pocket. Gerstein was elected in 1956 to the first of six terms as state attorney, generally considered to be the second most powerful office in Florida, after the Governor's (Myers). He was also the most popular prosecutor in Dade County history.

PART 1:
F. Lee Bailey, "Bad Eye" Gerstein and BCCI

In 1982, stormy Dick Gerstein was investigated, but not indicted, after accepting drug money intended for laundering in Panama.

He has long been a crony of F. Lee Bailey. In fact, O.J. Simpson's celebrated attorney hung a shingle in Florida with him: Bailey, Gerstein, Carhart, Rushkind, Dreskick & Rippingille.

At the time of Bailey's migration to Florida, he represented the families of the passengers of Korean Airlines Flight 007, downed by the Soviets in 1983, in a wrongful death suit. A few years later, the families' steering committee sued Bailey himself for misrepresentation after making "a personal pledge" in his letter of acceptance to "work full-time as required" on the case. In five years, Bailey clocked only 97 hours on pretrial preparation, compared with 6,311 hours put in by the two other law firms retained by the families. In a court brief, Bailey cited the move to Florida, allowing his wife Patricia to be near her "ailing parents," as his rationale for not assisting the families he'd been hired to represent—although he had no qualms about charging full-time legal fees. In 1993 a federal court in Washington ordered Bailey to return a share of his ill-gotten fees to the families (Felsenthal).

Bailey and Gerstein were the directors of CenTrust Federal Savings Bank, a failed satellite of the Bank of Credit and Commerce International (BCCI), the CIA's preferred money laundering franchise (Truell & Gurwin; Bender suit). A major share in CenTrust was secretly owned by BCCI—in fact, a full quarter of the bank's shares were snapped up by Saudi tycoon Ghaith Pharaon, a BCCI front man who maintained daily contact with CenTrust President David Paul between 1984 and 1988, when the S&L was declared insolvent (Truell & Gurwin), and Paul was convicted on 68 charges of bank fraud to a maximum prison term of five years. Paul's financial strategies included illegal bond deals with Charles Keating and false entries in the S&L's accounting books (*New York Times,* November 25, 1993).

CenTrust Savings, the largest thrift in Florida, made handsome contributions to the campaign funds of several Congressmen, including Joseph Biden (Truell and Gurwin) and Newt Gingrich (FEC Report). When it defaulted, taxpayers were saddled with $2 billion in debts (Truell & Gurwin). The co-trustee named in lawsuits filed against CenTrust was Citibank and its president John Reed, a banker with extensive ties to the CIA (Thompson & Kanigher).

Bailey was Dick Gerstein's legal and business partner. The prosecutor's Family chum, Joey Ippolito, never wanders far from the Simpson case. Nor do his mob associates. Simpson's well-connected attorney brought in retired New York investigator John E. McNally to look into the Brentwood murders. McNally, the *Los Angeles Times* reported, was, in 1989, accused by federal investigators "of being part of the 'security department' of Gene Gotti, the younger brother of notorious mobster John Gotti." Prosecutors in New York believe McNally screened prospective employees for the Mafia (Newton). Also hired to investigate on behalf of Simpson was Pat McKenna, a Palm Beach gumshoe, and a veteran of the William Kennedy Smith rape case.

Attorneys on both sides of the case have been an odd assortment. Robert Baker, Simpson's attorney in the civil trial, specializes in wrongful death suits with an emphasis on medical malpractice and product liability. "He has fought on behalf of doctors accused of killing or injuring patients," reported Stephanie Simon in the *L.A. Times* on September 10, 1996, "manufacturers blamed for dangerous products and corporations suspected of producing toxic waste. In a tribute to his top-notch reputation, Baker has also defended some of L.A.'s most powerful lawyers against clients claiming malpractice." His fuse is short: under questioning about drug use, O.J. Simpson repeatedly spurned Baker's advice to stop talking. Baker snapped out: "Am I a potted plant?"

Of the original "Dream Team," Simpson chose to bring along to his civil trial F. Lee Bailey.

The plaintiff's attorneys had little experience trying murder cases. Daniel Petrocelli, an attorney from Mitchell, Silberberg & Knupp, represents Occidental Petroleum. Arthur Groman, a Yale graduate and a senior partner in the same firm, is a director, with Al Gore and John Kluge, of Occidental (1995 company FEC report). The Petrocelli team boasted two former New York prosecutors and an appeals consultant. Also, a criminal defense attorney whose client list includes Radovan Karadzic, the Serb leader accused of orchestrating genocide in Bosnia (Simon, September 9, 1996). The latter attorney would be Petrocelli's law partner, Edward Medvene, who has also represented Marlon Brando and Ruben Zunoi Arce, the Mexican businessman who spear-headed the 1985 kidnap and murder of DEA agent Enriqué Camarena (Weinstein).

Again, the CIA and drugs enter the Simpson orbit. Scripps Howard reported on October 4, 1990 that the CIA "trained guerrillas at a ranch owned by a Mexican drug lord" convicted of killing Camerena:

> A DEA report filed in a Los Angeles federal court quotes informant Lawrence Harrison, 45, as saying representatives of Mexico's now disbanded Federal Security Directorate were at the ranch to give the CIA "cover." According to the report, Harrison said the directorate was working with drug traffickers to move narcotics from Mexico to the United States. The House Government Operations Information Subcommittee has held two closed-door hearings on the matter and plans to question Justice Department officials at another private hearing (Bennett).

The CIA's Mark Mansfield bluntly denied any connection. "The whole story is *nonsense,*" he swore. "We have not trained Guatemalan guerrillas on that ranch or anywhere else." Naturally, the Agency's interaction with Guatemalan death squads has since turned up with nauseating regularity in the "mainstream" press.

So, in this tale, does Joey Ippolito. In his 1992 court battle on cocaine distribution charges in Los Angeles, Joey retained Edward Medvene—two years later an attorney for Fred Goldman in the wrongful death trial—and his partners Robert DiNicola and Scott Bauman, to represent him (*U.S. v Lorenzo et.al.*). On November 16, Ippolito fired the Medvene team and hired Cowlings attorney Donald Re. But the conflict-of-interest in Medvene's role as a forensics specialist in Simpson's civil trial is staggering: The plaintiffs hired an attorney for a mobbed-up cohort of O.J. Simpson, the employer of Al Cowlings, a suspect in a score of murders.

PART 2:
Joey Ip's Nubian Wiseguys and Denise Brown, the Grieving Gunsel

> *"Fred Goldman's lawyer said Wednesday that there is 'not a single shred of evidence' linking the murders of Ronald Goldman and Nicole Brown Simpson to ... drug activity, as O.J. Simpson has alleged."*
>
> —*Los Angeles Times,* February 18, 1996

Nicole Simpson's sister, Denise Brown, was squired about L.A. for several years by an Ippolito recruit. When Joey was arrested, police questioned his bodyguard and chauffeur, Allen Cowlings, who was visiting the mobster when police entered his residence to make the arrest (Harrell). In a sworn declaration submitted to the federal district court of Los Angeles in September 1992 on behalf of Ippolito, Cowlings claimed that he'd met the drug dealer "four or five years" earlier (*US v Lorenzo* et al). However, the AP reported in August, 1994 that Joey knew Cowlings "for up to 20 years, [and] that Cowlings was once a bodyguard and driver for Ippolito" (Deutch).

Organized crime investigator Steve Bertellucci told ABC News that Ippolito was a "principal player in major narcotics trafficking." Yet Al Cowlings maintained in his sworn declaration that Ippolito was "opposed" to cocaine use: "Joe became very upset when he learned that I was a free-base cocaine addict," he wrote. After years in the public spotlight as a professional football player, Cowling confessed: "I was having difficulty adjusting to life in the real world. I had entered a drug rehabilitation center a couple of years before, but I couldn't kick my habit. When Joe moved to Los Angeles, he took it upon himself to help me overcome my addiction." The situation was "so dismal that I know if it were not for Joe, I probably would have died" (Cowlings deposition).

Ippolito's roommate, Ronnie Lorenzo, was the owner of Splash, a chic Malibu restaurant, and a fraternal member of the Bonnano crime family, a perennial target of organized crime probes.

In 1987, LAPD detectives investigating Lorenzo found themselves on a dizzying trail when they discovered that Splash had recently changed ownership in a sale handled by an Encino company, Richman Financial Services, and that Lorenzo's Pontiac had been registered by the firm's president, Maurice Rind, a principal shareholder with Barry Minkow in L.A.'s ZZZZ Best Carpet stock fraud scandal—once described by LAPD officers, in congressional testimony, as an organized crime figure with ties to all five Mafia families (Lieberman). (As a New York stockbroker, Rind was sentenced twice on fraud charges. In the ZZZZ Best case, however, only one of nine suspects, some of them felons with lengthy rap sheets, was indicted, namely Barry Minkow, though Police Chief Daryl Gates had, in a press conference, accused all nine of stock fraud and the laundering of Mafia proceeds. Minkow made the Mafia the main thrust of his defense, testifying that he had had been "a puppet" under "duress." Maurice Rind, called to testify for the defense, pled the Fifth no less than 92 times and went home. Stockbroker Donald A. Johnson refused to testify because Rind had "threatened" him. He pled the Fifth as well.)

Kidnap and extortion were two of many charges filed against Lorenzo. James Caan offered his home as collateral toward the $2 million bail and appeared as a character witness for his "dear friend" (Lieberman, Connolly). The government case centered on Lorenzo's obscenity-strewn comments, captured on tape as he and Robert Franchi, an FBI informant, bought five kilograms of cocaine in Brentwood and Santa Monica from a source arranged by Lorenzo: Joey Ippolito. The narco-restaurateurs were both sentenced to ten years hard time for distributing cocaine in Santa Monica and Brentwood (Lieberman, February 27, 1993).

Joey escaped from the minimum security prison to which he was sentenced *three weeks before the brutal murders* in Brentwood. The prison was located on a MILITARY BASE in Pensacola, Florida (Harrell). The Mafioso was seen escaping in an automobile driven by an African-American male, according to news reports.

Bullish Bostonian Robert Franchi, the aforementioned FBI informant turned to the Bureau's investigation of organized crime in L.A., learned of Ippolito's stroll to freedom at Eglin Air Force Base and immediately ran to the FBI, demanding to know why the mobster had been interred at a minimum security prison. Franchi was convinced that Joey would attempt to kill him in retaliation for turning state's evidence. The feds told Franchi that they had "allowed Ippolito to escape," and "tracked his movements" to "learn who his contacts might be." The FBI claimed to have known of Ippolito's whereabouts at all times, traced all telephone calls and learned of an ex-girlfriend, who claimed to have been physically abused by the mobster and agreed to cooperate with investigators. As a fugitive, the agents told Franchi, Ippolito made numerous calls to O.J. Simpson. What's more, Franchi reports that, Ippolito had a "sit-down meeting" with Simpson two weeks before the carnage on Bundy Drive. The nature of the meeting is not known. On August 24, 1995, Ippolito was recaptured and placed in the custody of U.S. marshals in New York City. He has since been released from custody and turned as an "informant" for the FBI (Bosco).

What does Ippolito know of the killings? A source in the LAPD confirmed for Donald Freed, the author of *Killing Time,* an examination of the evidence untainted by courtroom strategy, that an organized crime figure had ordered the killings.

Someone besides Nicole's estranged husband took an intense interest in her.

O.J. Simpson consort Paula Barbieri's Toyota 4 X 4 was stolen from a Beverly Hills parking lot on January 24, 1994. The Toyota was used to follow Nicole. Police in Newport Beach recovered the car after it was involved in a traffic accident a week later and arrested one William Wasz, who insisted when questioned by police that he was unaware Barbieri owned the vehicle.

Simpson, said the miscreant, did not hire him. He refused to divulge the identity of the mystery man who did.

Inside the vehicle was found a 3″ x 5″ notebook with scribbled references to two weapons, including a 9mm pistol. The first page mentions "Nicole's sched." The notations make reference to "the Gym ... Westwood," and at "11:00," Nicole's stop at "Litchfield Toys, Westwood." At "12:00 noon," she eats at "Tony Roma's, Ventura Blvd. Encino." The note ends with "9 PM Viper Room" (Tinney).

A gun and a crack pipe were also found in the stolen Toyota. Nicole Simpson had apparently been someone's obsession. Allegations have also been made that Anthony Pellicano, a veteran military-intelligence officer, the so-called "Gumshoe to the Stars," had staked out Nicole's house. Pellicano has more mob connections than J. Edgar Hoover. He was hired by Howard Weitzman in the John DeLorean case, his first assignment upon moving to Los Angeles in 1983.

In 1976 he resigned under fire from the Illinois Law Enforcement Commission after local newspapers publicized the $30,000 loan he'd received from Paul "the Waiter" Ricca, the son of mob boss Paul de Lucia—the godfather of Pellicano's daughter. He was credited as technical adviser in the making of *The Firm* (Hubler & Bates). Pellicano also provided an inventive but ultimately unconvincing alibi for singer Michael Jackson (of child molestation and Nazi video fame) with his "frame-up" plea.

Since the start of the Simpson trial, the busy Denise Brown was the smiling paramour of Tony "the Animal" Fiato, a marmoset-eyed mob enforcer and FBI informant in a probe of the murder of Hollywood's Frank Cristi, another actor with a *Godfather* credit. The lead investigator of the Cristi murder case was Detective Tom Lange, a Florida veteran of the Marine Corps and Vietnam, assigned to the "elite" LAPD Homicide Special Section (Van Derbeken and Hardy). Lange was also assigned, with Detective Phillip Vanatter, to the Simpson case. Tony Fiato's testimony was directed at Norman Freeberg, who attempted to hire Fiato on the contract. The "Animal" rejected the offer. Two alleged collaborators were indicted.

On March 23, 1995, the *San Francisco Examiner* broke ranks with the press gang and noticed Ms. Brown's latest love interest:

> Two convicted murderers filed for retrial Wednesday because Anthony Fiato, a key prosecution witness and shadowy mob informer, emerged from hiding in a public relationship with Nicole Brown-Simpson's sister. The Superior Court retrial motion was filed by attorney Barry Levin on behalf of Ronald Coe and Alan Betts, who were convicted Feb. 3 of killing tough-guy actor Frank Christi in a murder-for-hire scheme.... Prosecutors told jurors that Norman Freedberg hired Coe, Betts and Harvey Rosenberg to kill Cristi because of a dispute over a woman.
>
> Defense lawyers were blocked from delving into Fiato's background because prosecutors said revealing his whereabouts would endanger the federally protected witness. Photographs of Fiato and Denise Brown have appeared recently in newspapers and supermarket tabloids.

Denise Brown's ties to ne'er-do-wells surfaced again with her much-ballyhooed domestic abuse "charity," run by Jeff Noebel, a 40-year-old S&L swindler from Dallas, Texas.

Noebel was a convicted con artist and accused spousal batterer, described in a restraining order filed by his wife as presenting a very uncharitable "clear and present danger to his estranged wife and two children." The polyamorous Denise Brown met the convicted felon by way of her contact with Randall England, an actor in "General Hopsital." She'd met England at their mutual modelling agency on L.A.'s west side. They dated and England became a close friend of the Brown family. He was a pall-bearer at Nicole's funeral.

On July 10, 1995, the *Los Angeles Times* reported that Noebel, the "dapper, smooth-talking" president of the Nicole Brown-Simpson Charitable Foundation, had blazed a trail of white-collar crime from Texas to California. Dreading a conviction, he agreed to cooperate with police. Noebel pled guilty to one count of making a false statement to federal banking regulators. In exchange, he was granted a reduction in a maximum two-year prison term.

Despite all of this, Randall England, a longtime cohort of Noebel's, claimed to have "no knowledge" of his legal or domestic problems:

> Denise Brown, the organization's spokeswoman and chief executive officer, did not respond to repeated requests for an interview.
>
> Noebel's life was complicated by ... matters that seemed at odds with his charitable work. While he was busy strategizing with the Browns—who he contends knew about his troubles—Noebel was under federal indictment in Texas for a scam that allegedly bilked 14 investors out of $875,000.
>
> According to court records, Noebel and several cohorts were accused of duping the investors into buying dubious shares of a Florida savings and loan....
>
> Court documents also show that Noebel's estranged wife has accused him of a pattern of stalking and abuse that came to head in June, 1994, just days after Nicole Brown Simpson was killed.
>
> Under his guidance, by all appearances, the organization got off to a rollicking start. A news conference was called at the swank Rainbow Room, high atop New York's Rockefeller Center.
>
> Speaking for the family was Denise Brown, 37, a near mirror-image of her slain sister, whose portrait was blown up on one wall. After reading a brief statement, which Noebel says he co-authored, she held up a giant-sized check for $50,000, courtesy of jeans-maker No Excuses.
>
> No Excuses had snatched up Donna Rice as a spokesmodel after her rendezvous with then-presidential candidate Gary Hart, then anointed Marla Maples as its pitchwoman after her tryst with Donald Trump (Lopez and Katz).

In defense of the Foundation, Denise responded to reporters on July 19, 1995 that media reports were "overblown" (Reyes).

This is one accusation that will never be leveled at Ippolito's camaraderie with Al Cowlings and another long-suffering Buffalo Bill.

The mobster considered O.J. a sterling source for inside information on the football industry, enhancing his stake in the gambling pools, according to tabloid profiles.

That Simpson and Cowlings had formed an alliance in the black market and had more in common with Joey Ippolito than point spreads became evident with the arrest of Tracey Alice Hill, alias Amanda Armstrong, a 32-year-old stripper from Santa Monica. in February, 1995. Hill was seized by police in Dunsmuir, a small town in northern California, with 40 pounds of cocaine stuffed in her suitcase. Police also found a vial of pills prescribed to one Al Cowlings in her purse. Hill's computerized address book listed the telephone numbers of both Cowlings and Simpson.

She was booked in Eureka and flown to Sacramento. During the fight, *she twice attempted to leap out of the plane while it was airborne.* (Simpson, during the Bronco "chase," also attempted suicide, according to Robert Kardashian.) On March 3, Ms. Hill was indicted by a grand jury on a single count of possessing cocaine with intent to distribute.

The Associated Press reported that Donald Re, Cowling's attorney—and Joey Ippolito's, also a former law partner of Howard Weitzman— denied any connection whatsoever to Ms. Hill (March 25, 1995). In fact, the denial is a direct contradiction to the snappy admission issued by Cowlings' attorney to the *Contra Costa Times* that "Ms. Hill is a *friend* of Al Cowlings. He is *upset* she was arrested" (Ginley & Porterfield).

Moreover, Cowlings visited the stripper's apartment on Pier Avenue, a stone's throw from the beach, after her arrest, a few days before federal agents searched it, according to a neighbor. Within two days of Cowling's visit, a moving van arrived. The movers were still crating and hauling Hill's belongings when the police pulled up, cordoned off the apartment and conducted the search. But it is likely any evidence that might connect Ms. Hill and her cocaine to Cowlings and Simpson had vanished by this time.

The *Contra Costa Times* reported on the 24th that police "refused to say what they found. Patrick Hanley, an assistant U.S. attorney assigned to the case in Sacramento, would not discuss the matter, saying he couldn't confirm or deny Cowling's involvement."

Robin Meiss, the neighbor, told the *Times* that Ms. Hill "was a quiet tenant whom Cowlings visited often." Meiss's husband offered: "He [Cowlings] was dating her."

Simpson has been involved with the mob since his glory days as running back for the Buffalo Bills. In his prime, local police accused him of selling cocaine. Simpson also ran with a real estate swindler in Florida with mob affiliations.

One of Simpson's Mafia friends back in Buffalo, Casimir "Butch Casey" Sucharski, visited O.J. in Brentwood a few weeks before the Brentwood murders. Sucharski himself and two women in his company were shot repeatedly in the head and neck in Miramar, Florida two weeks after Nicole Brown-Simpson and Ron Goldman were murdered.

Eerily enough, other Southern California murder cases are linked to the Simpson case, including the March 19, 1995 murder of O.J.'s friend, record company promoter Charles Minor in Malibu, California, Ippolito's stomping grounds. Suzette McClure, one of Minor's many paramours, was charged with the murder. Simpson's attorney Robert Shapiro attended the wake (Haring).

Bobby Chandler, another chum of O.J.'s, was in blooming health in the summer of 1994. By the end of the year, he contracted lung cancer and was dead (Ruiz).

Yet another muffled death scream resonating with Nicole's belonged to Brett Cantor, the proprietor of the Dragonfly, a Hollywood nightclub. Nicole and Ron Goldman were regulars at the Dragonfly. Cantor was murdered on July 30, 1993, in a vicious knife attack nearly identical to the one that took the lives of Ron Goldman and Nicole Simpson. The club owner had been cut from behind. The killer started on the lower left side of the neck, drew upward and away to the right. Both Goldman and Cantor were stabbed repeatedly on the arms and chest. In both cases, the knife had a long, thin blade. At one point, Shapiro planned to argue that the same killer was responsible for the bloody melée on Bundy Drive, but the LAPD announced (with psychic certainty) that there was "no connection" between the two cases (La Fontaine). A close friend of the Cantor family reports that the club owner's parents believe firmly that the cases are linked.

The Syndicate has been a quiet participant in the Simpson case since the opening knock of the gavel. Howard Weitzman, the first attorney to speak for Simpson, studied white-collar crime in law school. He represented Tom Dragna, a racketeer, in 1980. Three years later he lost a vigorous defense of Barbara Mouzin, currently serving a 25-year prison term for her role in the Grandma Mafia cocaine-trafficking case. Weitzman's client roster includes "conservative" S&L stinkbug Charles Keating, John DeLorean, Marvin Mitchelson, Michael Jackson (who once quit a party attended by Robert Shapiro after receiving word that his brother Tito's ex-wife, who loathed swimming, had been found dead at the bottom of a pool with numerous *bruises* on her body—the coroner ruled that she'd drowned to death), and rock geek Ozzy Osbourne (West). The grizzled Hollywood lawyer's bona fidés also include a stint as lecturer at Georgetown Law Center, long a haunt of the CIA.

As the first Simpson trial wrapped up, Weitzman took an executive position at the Music Corporation of America (MCA), the Mafia-ridden black tower that looms above much of the entertainment industry in North Hollywood (Moldea). MCA also employed Simpson's crony and parttime counsel Robert Kardashian as president of the Radio Network at Universal Studios from 1987 to 1990 (Karabian).

Johnny Cochran's post-trial legal career also entered familiar territory: Murderville, USA. A particularly well-heeled, politically-connected client of Johnny Cochran's, in the aftermath of the "Trial of the Century," was Calvin Grigsby, founder of Grigsby Brandford & Co., the largest minority-owned bond underwriting firm in the country. His investment company sank $200 million into returning the Raiders to Oakland. For more than ten years, Grigsby Brandford handled all municipal financing for Alameda County, California. Grigsby drew the interest of federal investigators in Miami when they looked into his incursions in local municipal bond markets. Also under investigation was Dade County Commissioner James Burke, a business partner of Grigsby's. Burke was caught up in a sweeping probe of corruption known as Operation Greenpalm after he had given Grigsby an assist in landing lucrative Miami bond deals. When reporters called for comments, Grigsby immediately resigned as chairman of his own firm. His departure was hastened by a $5,000 fine imposed by the California Fair Practices Commission for improper contributions in an Oakland mayoral race. Cochran refused to take telephone calls concerning Grigsby's influence-peddling in Dade County (Sinton & Howe).

The statistically-striking incidence of murders on the edge of the Simpson case were an overlooked sideshow. During the criminal trial, Judge Ito's bailiff was shot dead without a squeak of speculation from the press regarding a possible connection to the case. With few exceptions, the murder of Ron Goldman's friend Michael Nigg shortly after the verdict was announced went unreported. The *Los Angeles Times* did not find Nigg's death newsworthy, although the newspaper dealt at length with trial minutiae and duly published leaks from the LAPD concerning "blood-smeared trench tools," and such. The *San Jose Mercury-News* reported Nigg's murder on September 11, 1995:

> FRIEND OF RONALD GOLDMAN KILLED
>
> LOS ANGELES (AP)—A waiter and aspiring actor who befriended Ronald Goldman when both worked at the Mezzaluna restaurant was shot to death after refusing to give money to two robbers.
>
> Michael Nigg, 26, was killed Friday night in a parking lot as he and his girlfriend were going to a restaurant, police spokeswoman Cherie Clair said Monday....
>
> Nigg was from Colorado and worked as a waiter at Sanctuary, a Beverly Hills restaurant. He recently appeared on the syndicated TV show "Liars."
>
> Nigg had worked at Mezzaluna in nearby Brentwood, where he and Goldman, another waiter, were good friends. Nigg quit Mezzaluna in May 1994, just a month before Goldman was slain along with Nicole Brown-Simpson.
>
> Nigg had just stepped out of his car at the Hollywood parking lot Friday when two thieves approached and demanded money. He was shot in the head after he refused, Clair said.
>
> She didn't know if the thieves got any money.
>
> Nigg's girlfriend, Julie Long, was still in the car and was not injured.
>
> The thieves fled in a car driven by a third suspect, police said.

Michael Nigg was one of several employees at Mezzaluna who fell under armed assault. Another, a waiter, was nearly killed in a car bombing. The national media did not find either story newsworthy. Locally, the murder received scant mention on the evening news. It was not until "sweeps" month, November 1996, that the television news industry in Los Angeles realized that Ron Goldman and Nicole Simpson were but two links in a chain of murders. KCOP, an independent television station, ran a series on the Mezzaluna carnage, but cautioned viewers that the station's own investigation found "no connection" to the Simpson case, echoing police sources—despite the LAPD's exceptionally, chronically flawed handling of the related cases.

In an interview, conducted by KABC-AM's Michael Jackson on November 26, Steve Cohen, KCOP news director, positively ruled out the possibility of conspiracy in the Simpson case—yet acknowledged repeatedly that the station's own investigation was not, in fact, all that "definitive":

> **Cohen:** Michael Nigg was a waiter at Mezzaluna. He was approached by three men, apparently a robbery attempt. They demanded money from Mr. Nigg. He refused to hand over his wallet and they shot him in the head. He died on the way to the hospital. Within a month the police had three men in custody, and one of them

confessed. That's what our sources say. What we learned is that the prosecutors never filed a case against the three men.

Jackson: Why?

Cohen: Well, there was some problem in terms of the nature of the informants they had.

Jackson: But if one of the three confessed, the other two were his associates, surely they [the police] had sufficient information...

Cohen: They had sufficient information, but they had what I guess I would call tainted sources that brought them to the case. And the prosecutors were not feeling good about the nature of the confession and how it was obtained. The result was that the L.A. prosecutor's office decided that they would not bring charges against these three people. However, right now the LAPD has continued to appeal to the District Attorney's office to see if they could do something...

Jackson: Again ...

Cohen: Now, Goldman and Nigg ...

Jackson: Just one second. Again, that includes the man who *confessed*?

Cohen: That's correct. Now, Goldman and Nigg were definitely friends, and they hung in the same circles.... We have not been able to determine anywhere that there was any connection between any of these three fellas that [are] alleged to have murdered Mr. Nigg.

Jackson: So at this stage it's all just a horrible, sad, sick, criminal coincidence.

Cohen: Correct. There's another gentleman, 25-year-old Brent (sic) Cantor, who also was a friend of Ron's and also of Mr. Nigg's....

Jackson: The other guy, what happened to him?

Cohen: Well, he was 25 years-old. His name was Brent (sic) Cantor. He also was a friend of Ron. And he eventually had a record company of his own. He signed bands like Rage Against the Machine, pretty well-known bands. He promoted shows at a place called the Dragonfly, which is an "underground" nightclub.... And on the night of July 30, 1993, which was eleven months before the deaths of Ron and Nicole, someone walked up to Cantor's apartment ... which was just off the Sunset Strip ... rang the bell and was buzzed inside. So we guess that it was someone that he knew. And he was murdered brutally, by how many assailants no one knows. He was stabbed repeatedly, and his throat was slashed.

Jackson: Did they take anything?

Cohen: No, no. The case file is sealed in this one. And, again, this is the case of Brent (sic) Cantor. The Simpson defense team did have the opportunity to examine the Cantor file prior to the beginning of the original O.J. case, the criminal case. His throat was deeply slashed, just like Nicole Brown's. But as far as we can determine—again, this is our independent investigation—that's where the similarity ends. We haven't had access to the file; we've not seen the details of the autopsy report.

Jackson: If I worked there, I'd be in hiding.

Cohen: Well, again ... but ... but ... I know this is hard for everyone, especially our viewers and your listeners, but it does seem, as far as we can tell, ballistically, that there doesn't seem to be any specific tie, except some darn, pretty bad luck that comes out of the kind of the kinds of circles that these folks lived in. I guess that's the only ...

Jackson: But it is fodder for those who see a "conspiracy" in everything.

Cohen: Yeah. Well, sure. And I want to go a little further here just to clean up the record. Phil Vanatter and Tom Lange did meet with the detectives investigating the Cantor case, because of course the similarity—the use of a long knife, multiple stab wounds, etc. THEY concluded that there was nothing further for them to pursue in the case. Now, the "Dream Team" did try to enter Cantor as evidence into the preliminary hearing in the criminal case with O.J., and Ito said, "No. We're not going to have it. It's irrelevant."

Now, there is one other individual who is alive I think your listeners might be interested in. They probably know about it. His name is Keith Zlombowitch. And Keith was the director of operations at Mezzaluna, and he was also a former lover of Nicole. He did appear before a grand jury, and his testimony is a matter of public record that he was her lover, and that he was scared to death, as he put it, of O.J.'s having found out about that. And he went to Aspen to run the Mezzaluna there, then went to Florida. We have been unable for the last two months of this investigation to find him. When we have it that he disappeared, he *disappeared.*

There also was another incidence of a fella who was a waiter for a short time, in the same period of time. His car was firebombed. He was just working at Mezzaluna. He's okay, but his car was blown up.

Unsolved murders, the release of a confessed killer for nebulous reasons, similar murder weapons, sealed autopsy reports, disappearing witnesses and car-bombings do not add up to the conclusion there is "no connection" between the murders and the under-reported backstage carnage.

Despite the fact that there have been no convictions for any of the above slayings, Cohen closed off the interview with the ironic observation, "I think it's very seldom that the system doesn't work."

But then, the opinions of a news director are all too often susceptible to the influence of the corporate executives who sign his paycheck. KCOP is owned by Chris-Craft, a CIA front that once had auto-cocaine wizard John DeLorean on its board of directors (Levin). Another director of the company that owns KCOP, until his death by brain cancer on December 6, 1996, was Alvin "Pete" Rozelle, the retired commissioner of the Mafia-ridden National Football League (see *Interference: How Organized Crime Influences Professional Football,* by Dan Moldea, 1989).

According to the *New York Daily News* on May 6, 1996:

> O.J. Simpson's buddy Al Cowlings was called before a grand jury probing one of the largest sports gambling rings in Southern California.... Cowlings, an ex-pro football player, appeared before the secret panel in the Criminal courts building April 23, a date squeezed among his three days of questioning last month in the wrongful-death civil suit against Simpson....
>
> The grand jury also wanted to question Simpson's lawyer buddy Robert Kardashian, according to our law enforcement source. But last week Kardashian said, "I don't know anything about it. I don't gamble" (Freed).

In a telephone conversation in June, Donald Freed informed this writer that the grand jury looked not only organized into gambling, but also drugs and child pornography as well.

The Rumor and the Phoenix

After the Brentwood murders, a rumor circulated in Beverly Hills night spots. It explains more than the average corporate media courtroom glossover, and pulls together significant loose ends. Simpson and his estranged wife were immersed in the adrenal world of Joey Ip and the Combination. The rumor accounts for motive, is correct in essential details, and fills some gaps in the trial testimony regarding Simpson's secret life in the Ippolito syndicate.

This account holds that O.J. Simpson had financed a wholesale cocaine distributorship employing a network of Fast Eddys and aspiring celebrities on the Hollywood fringe. It is said that suppliers (Mr. Ippolito and Mr. Lorenzo?) entrusted him, over a period of several months, with a sizable quantity of cocaine, on credit. And Nicole was not exactly the thriftiest of wives with her designer, danger-high-voltage wardrobe and jet-set vacations ...

Barry Hoestler, a private investigator hired for the Simpson case by Robert Shapiro, contended that Nicole entertained the notion of becoming financially independent by opening a restaurant with Ron Goldman as her partner and financing it with cocaine profits (Frost). Hoestler also said that Nicole and her friends were "over their heads with some dope dealers."

As one Beverly Hills resident put it, Simpson and his circle were under intense pressure but "optimistic—entering a tough street business, fueled by a jolt of the goods from time to time."

Simpson's inability to make good on cocaine debts, run up largely by Nicole's circle, was not viewed lightly.

When Simpson's suppliers insisted on payment, Nicole Brown-Simpson and friends suddenly found reasons to leave town. O.J.'s suppliers were attempting to control him by controlling his finances.

This was done by manipulating the habits of Nicole's circle. He attempted to patch up the marriage and failed.

"Simpson wanted her to straighten up and come home," an adherent to the rumor maintains. "Unfortunately for her, O.J. was not in the mood to pick up her 'bar bills' while some young stud was driving the Mercedes he bought for her. He told her that explicitly.... He refused to pay for the wholesale purchases she and her friends made for their new 'business' venture. When O.J. was threatened by her "bill collector," he balked because it was not the debt he agreed to back, and it was more than he could raise."

Simpson's debtors did not buy his excuses. He went to Chicago to pay a call on "the man whose Family, even though not in Los Angeles, has always been the 'patron saint' of a particular part of the movie industry. The people in Chicago tried to step in. They asked for a meeting, but it's a new Family that owns the streets of Los Angeles these days. That only made it worse, because the L.A. boys took the interference as an insult. They've been beating the Chicago crowd for years, even in South Chicago and all over Indiana, where they have spread their operation."

Nicole Brown-Simpson was living precariously. Her best friend was a cocaine addict. Next door when she lived on Gretna Green Way, lived Carl Colby—son of William Colby, a former CIA director and guiding force of the PHOENIX program, the notorious mass-murder operation in Vietnam that targeted suspected and potential Viet Cong collaborators in the South. Carl's sister starved herself to death. It is widely thought that she slowly dwindled away to protest her father's role in the war, according to David Corn in *The Blond Ghost* (1995).

Colby's wife, Catherine Boe, took the stand first to testify that she'd often heard O.J. Simpson, at the time of his separation from Nicole in early 1992, argue with her about their respective sex lives. Nicole, she said, "was upset about his womanizing." O.J. fumed that Keith Zlombowitch, the Mezzaluna manager, had been sleeping at Nicole's in a spare bedroom.

Repeatedly, Mrs. Colby—who asked to be addressed as "Miss Boe" (probably to distance herself from the name "Colby" and the CIA) continued to answer the prosecution's questions after Shapiro and Cochran raised objections.

Glaring, Simpson's attorney barked for a sidebar conference:

> **Shapiro:** Your honor ... we have no discovery on this. I have called this lady and asked to talk to her and she refused to talk to us.
> **Darden:** You just really never know what you are going to get from Mrs. Colby,
> **Cochran:** It might be helpful if you talked to her.
> **Darden:** I have, but I believe she is going to testify that ...
> **Cochran:** She is an ALIEN from another planet!

The *Los Angeles Times* (February 4, 1995) reported that Carl Colby's testimony at the preliminary hearing was "disjointed and confused." Colby testified that he "spied [sic] a suspicious man" outside his house one evening in 1992. It was Simpson. Colby called police, "because he found it odd that a person of Simpson's description was in the neighborhood at that hour. As he said that, a black alternate juror rolled his eyes toward the ceiling, and another alternate, also black, chuckled to herself."

The *Times* did not find it worth mention that Nicole happened to live next to the son of a necrotizing CIA official.

Nicole Brown-Simpson had been tethered to Simpson throughout her adult life. She feared her husband's periodic rages. He followed her ("Oh my God, it's O.J.!") and knew her whereabouts at all times. She had escaped a suffocating marriage. Her newfound freedom was exhilarating.

Why glance back?

PART III:
The Catspaw Precursor—A Mirror Image of the Simpson Case

Because the Simpson case is a carefully concerted reenactment of another double-murder: Before the legal throes of O.J. Simpson, there was embattled Murray Gold.

The Brentwood slaughter was foreshadowed in 1974 when 71-year-old Irving Pasternak and his wife Rhoda were brutally stabbed to death in Waterbury, Connecticut. All in a few moments. Gold was charged. There were no witnesses.

Mr. Pasternak, before his retirement, was legal counsel to the Motion Picture Producers and Distributors of America (MPPDA), a Hollywood labor union once run by Pat Casey, an "undercover agent" of mob boss Johnny Rosselli (Moldea). (Already the "Catspaw" case has struck familiar territory: Murderville.).

A glance at Mafia history links the two cases.

Rosselli, like Lansky, had one foot in the underworld, the other in Langley, Virginia. By his own testimony before the Church Committee in 1974, Rosselli was once handed a CIA contract on the lives of Fidel Castro, Che Guevara and other Latin American rebels. Rosselli went on to link Las Vegas casino interests with Howard Hughes, Moe Dalitz and Jimmy Hoffa (Kohn).

John Rosselli was an asset of the intelligence sector, per his own admission before the Church Committee on Assassinations. Charles Rappleye, in a biography of Rosselli, describes the gangster's initial appearance as Congress attempted to unravel criminal interconnections of the Watergate debacle:

> Hoping to get to the bottom of the Nixon administration burglaries, the Watergate prosecutors turned to John Rosselli. Leslie Scherr, the Washington D.C., attorney who appeared with Rosselli at the closed hearing, recalled, "It was so convoluted, you really had to be John Le Carre to follow it." But judging from the questions posed to Rosselli, Scherr said, the prosecutors felt that "the reason why the break-in occurred at the Democratic Party headquarters was because Nixon or somebody in the Republican Party suspected the Democrats had information as to Nixon's involvement with the CIA's original contract with Rosselli" (Rappleye & Becker).

In July 1976, Rosselli's dismembered body was found—shortly after a Congressional appearance—stuffed inside a 55-gallon oil drum bobbing in the intercoastal waters of Biscayne Bay, off Miami, near Donald Aronow's speedboat factory.

Lansky and Aronow were both questioned by police about the murder (Burdick).

The indictment of Murray Gold, a Jewish survivor of the Holocaust and former son-in-law of the Pasternaks, hung entirely on circumstantial evidence. There was, for one thing, the tell-tale slash on the index finger of Gold's left hand. The prosecution made a fuss over the finger. They argued in court that Gold had injured himself in the course of killing the Pasternaks. His defense team—a coalition of world famous attorneys, soon to include F. Lee Bailey—ushered to the stand an expert witness who testified that it was improbable a slasher could frenetically wound his victims and stab himself without inflicting more damage than a minor flesh wound.

Witnesses passing the Pasternak home the night of the murders gave police a description bearing no resemblance to the accused.

Bruce Sanford, a friend of the Pasternak's daughter who enjoyed sleeping in graveyards, fit the description in all particulars. Sanford was known to wear Catspaw boots consistent with the feral heelprints stamped in the blood of the Pasternaks. Sanford had a long, sordid criminal history: a heroin addict, he once attempted suicide by *eating glass*, admired Charles Manson and belonged to a motorcycle gang called the "Peddlers of Death." On two occasions, he openly confessed to friends of committing the murders, yet Waterbury authorities covered for him, at one point going so far as to testify in the courtroom that Sanford had been safely locked away in a jail cell the night of the murders when, the defense learned, he had not.

Yet the name Sanford did not turn up on the list of suspects, because on December 12, 1974, he cut his own throat. Murray Gold argued that police and prosecutors had set him up and were deliberately overlooking Sanford's guilt to win a false conviction.

The prosecution dogged Murray Gold through *five* murder trials before a guilty verdict was finally handed down—ten years after the crime took place. It was a textbook frame-up.

On the jury sat a secretary for the Attorney General of Connecticut, the same office that indicted Gold (just as a secretary for the D.A.'s office turned up on the jury in the second Simpson trial), a woman with two first cousins on the police force, another who admitted upon questioning to have "extensive contact" with the police, a juror who spent "23 years in government service," an employee of a state agency, and an alternate with a son employed as a "corrections officer" (Nizer).

Yet Gold's claim that he was the target of a "police conspiracy," lightly dismissed by the state's prosecutrix, Marcia Smith, was treated by the court as proof of diminished capacity.

The jury found Gold guilty of the murders, but at a post-trial hearing the verdict was set aside with a false finding that Gold was mentally crippled, that an irrational fear of courtroom "conspiracies" had decimated his sanity. The judge concluded that Gold was entitled to a *sixth* trial. In the meantime, evidence that Sanford committed the murders mounted. Gold was released after a defense argument about suppressed evidence at the post-trial hearing.

PART IV:
A Killer's Brain Frequencies & A Few Words About CIA/Mafia Clean-Up Operations

Gold was not the slasher—but he was an ideal cut-out for a CIA/Mafia killing. Gold once held a top-security position at Grumman Aerospace. He had worked on secret defense projects (Nizer).

Grumman's personnel office would have kept a comprehensive file on Gold. His history would be an open book to any intelligence operatives—including the period when he was incarcerated at Mount Sanai Hospital in New York, where he received shock treatments for depression.

Mount Sanai shares with other leading hospitals around the country the distinction of employing psychiatrists moonlighting in the scientific/psychiatric netherworld of CIA mind control. Dr. Harold Abramson (hand-picked for the mind control program by Sidney Gottleib of the CIA's Technical Services Division) conducted LSD research at Mount Sanai—unusual in itself because Abramson had no formal training in psychiatry. His research was funded by the Macy Foundation, a CIA shell (Marks). Abramson is best known as biochemical warfare specialist Frank Olson's therapist—before the CIA mind control subject plummeted from a tenth-floor office window.

At Mount Sanai, too, the Agency would have easy access to detailed information concerning Murray Gold. His professional and psychiatric profile spelled p-a-t-s-y.

The backroom presence of CIA mind control in the Simpson case explains the break-in at the office of Dr. Ameli and other therapists retained to temper the emotional aches of the Simpson crowd.

A chilling indication that the CIA's mind control fraternity exercised a hidden influence on the trial was the breakdown of juror Tracy Hampton in early May, 1995. Before she was released by Judge Ito, Ms. Hampton had been observed *sitting motionless* in the jury box. Jurors reported that she had taken to staring at a blank television screen for *hours* at a spell. Hampton was removed from the jury on May 3, after complaining to Judge Ito, "I can't take it anymore."

Hard Copy reported that Hampton had been "hearing voices," a detail overlooked in newspaper accounts. The CIA's mind control fraternity has, for at least 20 years, transmitted words to subjects snared for experimentation in mental institutions, prisons and even society at large. After she was ousted from the courtroom, Hampton tried to commit suicide by eating glass—an allusion to the Catspaw case—specifically the attempted self-immolation of suspect Bruce Sanford, who also bolted down a mouthful of glass. Paramedics carted Ms. Hampton from her home on a stretcher. She was hospitalized. After her release, she denied attempting suicide.

Prosecutor Christopher Darden also seems to have had a close brush with mind control. In April 1995, Duarte, California artist Steve Hardy related a grim story of CIA brain manipulation and death to reporters of the *Los Angeles Sentinel.* The "subject" was Sonji Taylor, an elementary school teacher shot by police on a medical center rooftop in Los Angeles on December 16, 1993. Taylor was discovered in a stairwell at the medical center at about 8 PM by a janitor, who summoned security guards. They found Taylor—a church choir singer, devoted single mother, a former homecoming queen—holding her son in a head-lock, clutching a knife. A hospital dispatcher called 911 at 8:25 PM and reported that Taylor had threatened to stab anyone who approached.

"Sonji Danese Taylor," Hardy said, "was an involuntary human experimentee. Advanced technologies using microwaves can make people hear voices":

> Officials do not know how, when or why Taylor arrived atop the medical center. She moved to Los Angeles in 1991 with dreams of becoming an actress or model. Neither she nor her son, Jeremy Jamal, 3, had ever been a patient or received any treatment at the center.
>
> Taylor was working as a substitute teacher at K.L. Carver and William L. Valentine elementary schools in San Marino....
>
> Shortly after [a] 911 call, Los Angeles Police Department officers Sgt. Michael Long, an 18-year veteran, and Craig Liedahl, a 15-year veteran, arrived on the scene....
>
> Taylor was holding her son in her left arm and using her right to make threatening gestures with the knife and yelling "For the blood of Jesus!"
>
> The heliport lights were off and the only illumination was provided by the street lights below and by adjacent structures.
>
> Taylor failed to respond to repeated commands to release her son and drop the knife. The officers later said Taylor was swinging the knife dangerously close to Jeremy and they feared she might stab him.

Long sprayed Taylor twice with pepper spray and the second application forced her to release Jeremy, who was grabbed by another officer and rushed from the immediate vicinity.

Long and Liedahl said Taylor then lunged at them with the knife and both officers shot her, Long firing twice with his nine-millimeter automatic and Liedahl seven times with his weapon. Jeremy witnessed his mother's death.

Although nine shots were fired, the autopsy revealed Taylor sustained ten bullet wounds, seven in the back. The coroner speculated the tenth wound was caused by a ricochet.

Hardy said he became intrigued with Taylor's case because her last minutes on earth were so unlike everything that preceded it.

"Something seemed wrong," he said. "She wasn't on drugs, she wasn' t drunk and she had no mental health problems. She was a good mother and a law abiding citizen. She came from a stable family and she had a little boy. Then, suddenly, she goes crazy. No one has any idea why she was there [at the medical center] or what she was doing."

If Taylor was an involuntary human experiment of microwave experiments, all of her odd behavior is explained, Hardy said....

Hardy said people will not participate in experiments if they know the outcome of certain types of research is permanent physical damage and/or death. Therefore involuntary human experimentees are needed and Hardy says unsuspecting citizens are routinely used as test subjects.

Taylor, Hardy said, through microwave transmissions, was subjected to voices that told her to got to St. Vincent the night of Dec. 16, 1993. He said the voices probably pretended to be demons or Taylor, because of her religious upbringing, thought she was hearing demons and that accounts for her repeated use of the phrase "For the blood of Jesus" as a chant to ward off demons.

He said she was not threatening her son that night, but trying valiantly to protect him.

"She was displaying the traits of a mother who was bravely doing her damnedest to protect her son and ward off attackers. She was steered to do what she did."

On Sept. 28, 1994, the Los Angeles County District Attorney's Office released a report on Taylor's death that said Officers Long and Liedahl would not face criminal charges. The team of prosecutors, including O.J. Simpson prosecutor Christopher Darden, concluded the case could not be won in a court (Parker).

The coroner ruled the shooting of Sonji Taylor a "homicide." The L.A. County coroner's office, reported the *San Gabriel Valley Tribune,* was not forthcoming with the report. It was released to reporters only after an attorney intervened (Bolden). The 45-page investigative findings, prepared by Chris Darden, raised "the possibility ... that the officers are not being truthful about their actions that evening," Questions concerning the account of the shootings given by Long and Liedahl arose when it was revealed that four of the bullets that dropped Taylor were flattened, or "mushroomed," directly under her body, indicating she'd been shot repeatedly after she was prostrate. One investigator observed, "it was a bad shoot and it can't be justified" (Stein).

"If this woman posed such a danger, why was she shot in the *back*?" attorney Johnnie L. Cochran, Jr. asked. "For the district attorney's office to find that this was a justifiable shooting is outrageous" (Hubler).

Prosecutor Darden's reasons for clearing the officers depended entirely upon a legal loophole in a less than full investigation. The coroner's report acknowledged public speculation of a police cover-up. Indeed, Investigators Darden and Richard Goul wrote, "the evidence does not square with the police account." The most troubling question: "How could Taylor lunge forward at the officers and yet be shot in the back?" Darden and Goul wrote. However, they noted, the force of the bullets' impact could have turned Taylor's body around as she fell—subverting criminal prosecution of the officers." Darden claimed that the officers could not be prosecuted because, under rules of circumstantial evidence, "if a jury is presented with two rational conclusions and one points to innocence, that is the conclusion it must adopt" (Stein).

1: "Sufficient Truth": Blowback at the LAPD

> *"When people in the mainstream talk about the man charged with the Oklahoma City bombing—and keep in mind that was allegedly the worst act of domestic terrorism in history—they speak in much gentler terms than they do about O.J. Simpson."*
>
> —Johnny Cochran, *San Francisco Chronicle,* November 17, 1996

There are troubling contradictions, still unexplained, in the Simpson case. The *Los Angeles Times* reported: "Police detectives disregarded state law and their own departmental policy when they waited hours to summon the county coroner" (Frammolino & Weinstein).

Blood, as from a holy stigmata, materialized on a pair of Simpson's socks. AP's Linda Deutch, in her November 4, 1996 story on former police lab supervisor Gregory Matheson's testimony at the civil trial:

> Matheson glossed over the socks found at the foot of Simpson's bed the day after Nicole Brown Simpson and Ronald Goldman were slashed to death.... Matheson, who is now chief forensic chemist for the Police Department, acknowledged he saw no blood on the socks when they were collected June 13, 1994. He examined them again on June 29 and still saw no blood.
>
> It was left to defense attorney Robert Blasier to tell jurors that criminalist Collin Yamauchi studied the socks in his laboratory on Aug. 4 and found copious amounts of blood.
>
> "On Aug. 4, is it correct that's the first time Mr. Yamauchi looked and determined blood was visible to the naked eye?" Blasier asked.
>
> "That was the first day blood was located, yes," Matheson said.
>
> Obviously miffed, Blasier asked Matheson: "Were you told by the plaintiffs you were not going to be asked a single question about any of the testing you did?"
>
> The answer was blocked by an objection....
>
> When Blasier asked about the socks, Matheson said he didn't do a close examination before writing his initial notes which said of blood: "None obvious."
>
> "I brought them out, gave the general color description ... and there was no blood obvious on the socks," Matheson said.
>
> In the first trial, the defense suggested the socks were pristine when taken to the laboratory, then contaminated with blood from Simpson and his slain ex-wife while they were in the laboratory.

Is Mark Fuhrman a white supremacist? The spinner of bloody tales for credulous femmes signed a book deal with Regnery Press, which bills itself as the "premier publisher of conservative books." Furhman received a $1.2 million advance from Regnery, the publisher of such Ultracon titles as *The Conservative Mind* by Russell Kirk, *God & Man at Yale* by William F. Buckley, *Goldwater: the Man Who Made a Revolution* by Lee Edwards, *Right From the Beginning* by Patrick J. Buchanan, and *Inventing the AIDS Virus* by Peter Duesburg

He has been accused at least a half-dozen times of threatening and beating suspects, particularly blacks and Hispanics. Police Watch, a non-profit citizen advocacy group in Los Angeles, has received five complaints against Fuhrman since 1988. "I work with these files every day," says Police Watch official Michael Salcido, "and I personally handled over a thousand intakes a year and I know no other officer that has five counts against him" (Noble).

Kathleen Bell's July 19, 1994 letter to Cochran is a consistent step in Fuhrman's bucolic track record:

> I'm writing to you in regards to a story I saw on the news last night. I thought it ridiculous that the Simpson defense team would even suggest that their (sic) might ... be racial motivation involved in the trial against Mr. Simpson. I then glanced up at the television and was quite shocked to see that Officer Ferman (sic) was a man that I had the misfortune of meeting. You may have received a message from your answering service last night that I called to say that Mr. Ferman (sic) may be more of a racist than you could even imagine.
>
> Between 1985 and 1986 I worked as a real estate agent in Redondo Beach for Century 21 Bob Maher Realty (now out of business). At the time, my office was located above a Marine recruiting center off of Pacific Coast Highway. On occasion I would stop in to say hello to the two Marines working there. I saw Mr. Ferman (sic) there a couple of times. I remember him distinctly because of his height and build.
>
> While speaking to the men I learned that Mr. Ferman (sic) was a police officer in Westwood, and I don't know if he was telling the truth, but he said that he had been in a special division of the Marines. I don't know how the subject was raised, but Officer Ferman (sic) said that when he sees a "nigger" (as he called it) driving with a white woman, he would pull them over. I asked would he if he didn't have a reason, and he said that he would find one. I looked at the two Marines to see if they knew he was joking, but it became obvious to me that he was very serious.
>
> Officer Ferman (sic) went on to say that he would like nothing more than to see all "niggers" gathered together and killed. He said something about burning them or bombing them. I was too shaken to remember the exact words he used, however, I do remember that what he said was probably the most horrible thing I had ever heard someone say. What frightened me even more was that he was a police officer.

In 1983, the volatile Mark Fuhrman was interviewed by Dr. Ira Brent in lieu of a disability claim for work-related stress. Mark Furhman confided to Brent that he "beat up" on suspects, and "blacked out," became "a wild man" (Noble). Investigative reporter Stephen Singular, in *Legacy of Deception,* found in Furhman's testimony a passage about his thoughts in the immediate aftermath of the murders: he testified that he was "'concerned with the [younger Simpson] children and the ex-husband since they [Nicole and O.J.] still had joint custody of the children.' How, I asked myself, did he know about this joint custody arrangement? " (Singular).

The planned relocation to Sandpoint in the Idaho panhandle was something of an LAPD tradition. So many officers live there, in fact, some residents claim that the LAPD runs the county (Ockenfels). Richard Butler, founder of the

Aryan Nations compound in Hayden Lake, 30 miles south of Sandpoint, told CNN: "He has to be a racist, or he'd stay in Los Angeles." A swastika loomed above Butler's shoulder. "It's hypocritical for them to say they come up here for the birds and bees and trees. If this area was all non-white, you wouldn't find a police officer within a hundred miles of here," the Nazi said.

Aryan Nations also entered the picture when an anonymous caller to the Michael Jackson talk show, aired on KABC-AM in Los Angeles, claimed to have met with "Aryan Nations types" from his past on the Colombian cocaine circuit. The caller said that since serving a stiff prison sentence, he'd straightened out his life, and today runs a local construction company.

He told Jackson he'd overheard his past Nazi cohorts "planning the murder of Nicole Simpson." Jackson, flustered, quickly ditched him, babbling "it couldn't be." But without knowing more about the story, Jackson could not have possibly known whether or not the caller was relaying the truth. Jackson, who hails from South Africa, is presumably not a psychic. He refused to delve into the caller's story, which sounded straightforward enough, if a bit unsteady with nervousness.

KABC is an affiliate of Cap Cities, a company with a long history of collaboration with the CIA—the media conglomerate, in fact, is steered by former executives of the Mary Carter Paint Co., a CIA proprietary closely aligned with the Vatican's Maltese order. In the late 1960s, the company moved drugs into the U.S., primarily heroin and LSD, and laundered the proceeds through offshore accounts (Kruger).

The call to Michael Jackson was broadcast weeks before Mark Fuhrman's famed trip to northern Idaho, the beating heart of Aryan Nations. Jackson refused to entertain the possibility that the caller he ditched in a panic may have been an important eyewitness, one who might have decimated the prosecution's case.

And the Ippolito circle is chock-a-block with enforcers capable, with an assist from infiltrators in the LAPD, of framing Simpson.

Frankie Viserto, for example. Viserto, Joey 's lead hit-man, was an original member of New York's Purple Gang, an offshoot of the Genovese Family. The Purple Gang formed in the 1970s, named after the bootleggers of Prohibition-era Detroit. A 1979 file on the gang prepared by the Florida Department of Law Enforcement notes that they operated "in Florida and may be using this state as a base of operations," and were "committing gangland murders in Florida." At the time, they ran the largest heroin smuggling operation in the country.

Viserto, a suspect in the killing of Donald Aronow, is the leader of the Purple

Gang. He is a terrorist and gun-runner. In the past, he has worked with death squads in Guatemala, traditionally a bailiwick of the CIA. A gun once found at the site of the assassination of a Guatemalan official was traced to Frankie Viserto. The BATF considers him, according to one report, a "significant criminal." Angelo Wedra, a former cellmate, told police in 1977 that Viserto claimed to have killed 15 people. "Wedra learned that Frankie especially enjoyed torturing techniques," according to the report (Burdick).

In the past, Viserto has tormented his victims with knives (Goldman was tortured). He has threatened his enemies with decapitation (Nicole was beheaded). He is known to be one of a clutch of hit-men who'd be pleased to make a revenge hit for Joey or silence a troublesome witness, ala Nicole Brown-Simpson.

For those who refrain, "who else would have killed her?" there are other possibilities.

2: "Evidence of Conspiracy"

A thoughtful examination of the case, posted on the Net by a pair of college students during the first trial, raises more nagging questions than Johnny Cochran:

> In violation of policy, evidence remained in the processing room for three days before the first piece was booked in the secure ECU (electronic-controlled unit)—seventy to eighty police personnel have keys to the processing room. The evidence remained on a table top, and could be handled by anyone with access. The reckless processing room analysis of the evidence was 50% inconclusive, but still entered by June 15—in time for the first "summit" case evaluation meeting between prosecutors, serologists and detectives while the blood samples were still unbooked and laying about the evidence processing room.

"The blood drop on Nicole's back gate wondrously appears for collection on July 3, with no photo records of its existence on June 13 or June 14," better preserved than blood collected near the bodies.

"Possibly significant EDTA (blood preservative) discovery in Nicole blood on O.J.'s sock, as Harmon begrudgingly hinted at a 'glimmer of hope' for defense in his typically biased, bonehead, pompom girl manner." (Harmon is the protégé of Judge Lowell Jenson, a central participant in the "Alameda Mafia," a circle of corrupt, right-wing public officials recruited by the Justice Department in the early 1980s by Alameda's Edwin Meese. Jenson was the second-ranking official in the Justice Department under Meese.)

"Racist cop with special animus towards black men with white women. Unexplained DNA mix on steering wheel column: other than O.J., Nicole, or Goldman.

"The suppressed 'car testimonies' of Park and Kato suggest unexplained movement of vehicle(s) *after* O.J. departed for the airport....

"While witnesses are compelled to tell the 'whole truth,' the prosecution can only argue 'sufficient truth.' In that non-intersecting domain between 'sufficient truth' and 'whole truth' lies an opportunity to establish 'sufficient confusion' in a jury, grounded not merely in speculation but also in real facts left unappropriated by a recklessly and smugly contrived theory of the case" (Larson & Wilson).

Was it smugness that led the LAPD to leak that a "bloody ski-mask" had turned up, and a "blood-stained military-style entrenching tool?" Ten days later, police stumbled on the fact that there was no ski mask, no murder weapon. In the meantime, local propagandists on far-right talk radio had a field day convincing the public that Simpson was guilty.

Liberal doses of perjury eliminated obstacles on the path to a guilty verdict. Furman wasn't the only detective to misspeak under oath. One L.A. weekly newspaper charged criminalists Dennis Fung and Tom Lange with "CRIMINAL BEHAVIOR," noting that the corporate media, the LAPD and the D.A.'s office had failed to investigate them after "Simpson's defense team showed that Fung misrepresented the facts in his testimony about the collection of evidence at the murder scene and Simpson's house. Fung also testified that he altered original documents relating to the booking of evidence. In an apparent effort to run interference for Vannatter, Lange misrepresented the facts in his testimony about the department's requirements for booking blood evidence, claiming that there was a window of 24 hours. He also testified that he took evidence collected at the scene to his house. Not only have these actions gone uninvestigated, but Fung actually received a promotion during the course of the trial" (*L.A. View*).

Convicted felon Marianne Gurchis, prepared to testify she saw four suspicious men walking away from the Nicole Simpson's townhouse, was told by police officers: "We've got the case all sewn up." She called the district attorney's office. A detective placed her on hold, said he'd get back to her: "I'm talking to a psychic right now" (Hiscock).

From the first drop of the gavel, the case was lost in constant bickering and minute analysis of the evidence by attorneys on both sides of the bench. Any mention of the Mafia or CIA was a taboo observed by both sides. Johnnie

Cochran could have effortlessly impeached the credibility of Denise Simpson by producing the photo of her beaming from the arm of her beau, the "Animal." But then any mention of the syndicate could conceivably open the door to a melée of accusations and counteraccusations, disrupting Ito's tightly-regimented courtroom.

But if the police already had the the killer in custody.

Who broke into Robert Shapiro's office, forced open a locked filing cabinet and stole confidential papers related to the case?

Why did Faye Resnick skip town?

Who broke into Resnick's apartment to appropriate documents and photographs that could link her to the Simpsons?

Who left death threats for Ron Goldman's therapist, Dr. Jennifer Ameli, on her answering machine? (Who *knew* Goldman had a therapist?) Why was her office broken into? Why were only the files on Goldman stolen (*National Examiner*)?

Who hired the car-thieving William Wasz to monitor the movements of Nicole Brown-Simpson six months before the hit?

Who stole the slander suit filed in a Los Angeles courthouse against Marcia Clark during the "Trial of the Century?" Ted Chirac, author of *The Second Gun,* an examination of the RFK assassination, related the saga of the vanishing lawsuit to Dave Manning, a board member of the Citizens for Truth About the Kennedy Assassination, in April, 1996. "Midway through the Simpson trial," Manning says, "Juan Mercado, the son of a Spanish diplomat, was washing his car. He accidentally splashed some soap and water on a car parked next to his own. The driver of the car, an upright woman, approached. Juan tried to clean if off and apologized for the accident. She kept on him about messing up the car. He tried to calm her down, but she wouldn't let it go. She got so volatile that the police were called by somebody because she was getting out of hand. Juan decided to file a complaint against this woman, Marcia Clark. He filed a slander suit. A week later, Mercado's attorney attempted to examine the file on the case at the courthouse. He discovered that no complaint, no suit, had been filed, and couldn't understand what happened to it. It disappeared" (Manning).

The revelations bubbled up in the courtroom and the tabloid press. The "respectable" news outlets were too frequently caught out napping. A point of evidence as significant as Biblical transmutations of blood on a pair of socks should have been nailed down by journalists long before Matheson's uneasy appearance in the courtroom.

And even *in* the courtroom, key points raised by the defense were suppressed by the bench: "The O.J. Simpson civil trial opened Tuesday with a flurry of rulings that significantly restrict the defense's strategy of attacking the Los Angeles Police Department as a group of inept bunglers and corrupt, racist cops who sought to frame Simpson for murder." If anything else, the first trial demonstrated that the LAPD investigators assigned to the double murders were indeed "inept bunglers." They tromped through blood on the sidewalk, took half a day to call the coroner. At least one was a "racist cop." Ineptitude and racism were the foundation of Simpson's defense argument. "This is not a case about did the LAPD commit malpractice," said Fujasaki (Simon). There is no doubt the LAPD committed malpractice. Did it extend to the framing of O.J. Simpson?

3: The "Experts"

The tabloid cover photo of O.J. Simpson sporting a pair of Bruno Magli's was validated by the Rochester Institute of Technology. According to a CIA document dated October 16, 1975, the Agency had "certain relationships" with the Rochester Institute; they were described as "special," even "particular." The College of Graphic Arts and Photography received roughly $200,000 from the CIA in grants from 1966 to 1975. The school has been adamant in maintaining its relationship with the Agency despite the periodic protests from the faculty and students. M. Richard Rose, president of Rochester Tech, was forced to resign in 1991 after acknowledging that he secretly worked for the Agency while on leave. Trustees had a secret agreement that actually gave the CIA authority over the curriculum (Mann; Glaberson).

Political researcher Paul Ruiz in Washington notes that photographers Harry Scull and E.J. Flammer, "who took 30 photographs of O.J. on the same day that Scull took his photograph, have the same lawyer and the same agent. In addition, Robert Groden says they know each other. This is important, because Flammer has insisted all along that he is '*independent*' of Scull."

In the criminal trial, the Menlo Park, California engineering firm of Failure Analysis Associates (FAA) produced a computer-animated enactment of the Brentwood killings. Roger McCarthy, chief executive officer of FAA, described the experiment as "state of the art," "sophisticated"— but he told reporters that the computer simulation was wholly based on the work of forensics experts and the choreography of *actors.* He boasted that the company exercised "complete artistic control" over the project. But there was no need for the trappings of high technology—filming the actors would have produced the same results, and not cost the "hundreds of thousands of dollars" that McCarthy's company spent on four minutes of highly impressive, if superfluous digitized animation (Armstrong).

FAA's credibility has been an issue since the company's computer simulation of the Kennedy assassination as adopted by Gerald Posner in *Case Closed,* a book that strains to remove the onus of CIA involvement but is really one more study in disinformation, a rehash of cooked evidence rejected even by the Warren Commission. The book is larded with false quotations (Scott).

McCarthy arrived at the conclusion, "the victims were tortured before they died. There was a clear indication to deliver more than death" (Armstrong).

Another vaunted expert who testified in the Simpson case was Dr. Michael Baden, formerly head of the House Select Committee on Assassination's forensics pathology panel. Baden's testimony before the committee in 1978 was grossly deceptive, according to David Lifton in *Best Evidence,* a detailed examination of the John Kennedy autopsy by military doctors. Baden's conclusion, after analyzing the panel's medical reports, held that Kennedy had been struck by two shots from behind, supporting the Warren Commission's improbable findings. Baden's supporting evidence, Lifton discovered, had been "created" to agree with the Committee's predetermined judgment that Lee Harvey Oswald murdered John Kennedy.

Dr. Weir, another expert witness for the prosecution, began his testimony insisting that his statistical DNA analysis was unimpeachable. He was proven wrong upon cross-examination, despite his professorship in genetics at North Carolina State University and 100 peer-review articles to his credit. Dr. Weir has long been an FBI consultant. In the courtroom, he never testifies for the defense. His errors consistently favor the prosecution (Gard). These were sufficient grounds to strike much of Dr. Weir's testimony from the record.

FBI Agent Roger Marx, the EDTA "expert," was accused by Agent Whitehurst, the Bureau whistle-blower, of "manipulating" evidence in the Atlanta bombing case (Ruiz).

In the end, author Joe McGinniss chose not to write his book. He prompted outrage in the courtroom early on when Ito honored the "journalist" with a front-row seat. McGinniss is the same confabulator whose *Fatal Vision* echoed the government's framing of Dr. Jeffrey MacDonald for the murder of his wife and two daughters (Constantine). The MacDonald case, too, involved drugs. As a doctor, MacDonald had treated addicts assigned to Fort Bragg employed in the importation of China White from Vietnam in the body cavities of war casualties. MacDonald himself was the target of murder. He lived to be railroaded to prison by the U.S. Army. McGinniss's account protected the identities of Army and CIA officials linked to the scandal.

The Faye Resnick book is also redolent with the politics of assassination. Michael Viner, her publisher, once resided in Washington, D.C. and worked at Georgetown University's School of Foreign Service (*Los Angeles Times,* June 3, 1996), the very epitomé of the CIA's academic presence.

The passing connections to the Kennedy killings recur, and they are not the mark of Kismet.

The Nazi-Mafia Combination that ambushed American history in November, 1963 survives to continue urging the country toward open fascist rule. Each murder along the way makes the going a little easier. Nicole Simpson and Ron Goldman were claimed by an Octopus, and the creature continues to destroy anyone threatening its avaricious grasp on power and privilege.

Sources

Alan Abrahamson & Paul Lieberman, "LAPD Detective Gets 102 Years in Crime Spree," *Los Angeles Times* (Orange County edition), September 21, 1996, p. A-13.

Anonymous, "Run for Your Life," *National Examiner,* October 18, 1995, p. 12.

George Anastasia and John Way Jennings, "Motive in Venice Bodybuilder's Slaying a Mystery," *Santa Monica Evening Outlook* (originally published by the *Philadelphia Inquirer*), March 1, 1993, p. 1A. (On Ippolito and Lorenzo arrest.)

AP Release, "Attorney Denies Cowlings Connection to Drug Arrest," *Santa Monica Evening Outlook,* March 25, 1995.

David Armstrong, "Virtual Murder: Nicole Tape Debuts," *San Francisco Examiner,* March 31, 1995.

George R. Bender, Plaintiff-Appellant, v. CenTrust Mortgage Corporation, U.S. Court of Appeals, Eleventh Circuit, No. 92-4669, May 10, 1995.

John Bennett, "House Probes Charges of CIA Tie to Drug Lord," *Memphis Commercial Appeal,* October 4, 1990.

James Bolden, "Coroner's Office Rules Shooting of Mom a Homicide," *Los Angeles Sentinel,* February 3, 1994.

Joseph Bosco, interviewed by Paul Ruiz, June 7, 1997.

Thomas Burdick & Charlene Mitchell, *Blue Thunder: How the Mafia Owned and Finally Murdered Cigarette Boat King Donald Aronow* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1990).

Rodney Campbell, *The Luciano Project: The Secret Wartime Collaboration of the Mafia and the U.S. Navy* (New York: McGraw Hill, 1977).

John Connolly, "Cafe Nostra," *Spy,* March 1994, pp. 62–68.

Alex Constantine, *Psychic Dictatorship in the U.S.A.* (Portland: Feral House, 1995).

"Declaration of Allen Cowlings," filed at the United States District Court for the Central District of California in Los Angeles, case no. CR-92-400-DMT (Exhibit 18), September 8, 1992.

Linda Deutch, "Defense Says State is Trying to 'Burn Up' Simpson DNA Sample" (AP Story), *Boston Globe,* August 24, 1994, p. 1.

Linda Deutch, "Nicole Simpson's Life is Assailed in Court," *Philadelphia Inquirer,* October 25, 1996, p. 1.

Edward Felsenthal, "Controversy Surrounds Lawyer F. Lee Bailey," *Wall Street Journal,* March 20, 1995, p. A-1.

FEC Report, "Individual Contributors to Newt Gingrich," January 1, 1979 to FEC, period ending June 30, 1994.

Ralph Frammolino and Henry Weinstein, "Delay in Notifying Coroner Hurt Simpson Case Probe," *Los Angeles Times,* September 17, 1994, p. A-1.

Donald Freed, telephone interview. Also, Donald Freed & Raymond P. Briggs, *Killing Time: The First Full Investigation* (New York: MacMillan, 1996).

Tony Frost, "How O.J. Trapped Nicole into Life of Cocaine," *The Star,* August 30, 1994, pp. 24–29.

Nancy Gard, "Dr. Weir's Background," alt. fan.OJ newsgroup, Delphi Internet Services, June 25, 1995.

Jacqueline Ginley and Bob Porterfield, "Cowlings Visited Woman's Home After Her Arrest," *Contra Costa Times,* March 25, 1995.

William Glaberson, "Rochester Institute will Maintain Controversial Ties with the C.I.A.," *New York Times,* November 24, 1991, p. A-46.

Jan Golab, "Blue Heaven," *Los Angeles Magazine,* June, 1995, pp. 66–74. (*"Mark Fuhrman is just the latest cop to head to north Idaho," Ockenfels found. "Some even say the LAPD runs the 'secret' backwoods enclave."*)

Bruce Haring, "Too Fast to Live, Too Young to Die," *Los Angeles Reader,* June 30, 1995, pp. 8. (This feature dwells at length on Charles Minor's sexual conquests, and neglects to touch upon organized crime connections. The article does, when not reveling in Minor's philandering, shed light on the famed record promoter's financial and emotional decline.)

K. Harrell, "Nicole Murder was Mafia Drug Hit," *Globe,* March 21, 1995, pp. 40–41.

J. Hiscock, "Police Ignored Four Suspects in OJ Murder Case," *Daily Telegraph,* January 26, 1995, p. A-3.

Shawn Hubler and James Bates, "Streetwise Gumshoe to the Stars," *Los Angeles Times,* September 11, 1993, p. A-1.

Shawn Hubler, "Police Won't Be Charged in 1993 Shooting; Investigation: Woman was shot seven times in the back after reportedly lunging at officers with a knife on a hospital rooftop. Questions about the case remain," *Los Angeles Times,* September 29, 1994, p. B-1.

Walter Karabian, "Just Who Is Robert Kardashian Anyway," *Armenian Reporter,* October 21, 1995.

Howard Kohn, "The Hughes-Nixon-Lansky Connection," *Rolling Stone,* May 20,1976.

Henrik Kruger, *The Great Heroin Coup: Drugs, Intelligence & International Fascism* (Boston: South End Press, 1980).

Dave LaFontaine, "Nicole's Mystery Link to Nightclub Murder," *The Star,* October 11, 1994, p. 5.

Eric Larson and Michael Wilson, "Evidence of Conspiracy," SprintLink on-line communication network, May 13, 1995.

Hillel Levin, *Grand Delusions—The Cosmic Career of John DeLorean* (New York: Viking, 1983).

Paul Lieberman, "The Gang that Couldn't Shoot Straight," *Los Angeles Times Magazine,* February 21, 1993, p. 24.

Paul Lieberman, "Restauranteur Found Guilty in Drug Case," *Los Angeles Times,* February 27, 1993, p. B-3.

Paul Lieberman, "Last Loose End Wrapped Up in ZZZZ Best Fraud Case," *Los Angeles Times,* May 5, 1994, p. A-1.

Paul Lieberman and Leslie Berger, "Police Spy Unit was Rife with Risks, Temptations," *Los Angeles Times,* July 26, 1992, p. A-1.

David S. Lifton, *Best Evidence: Disguise and Deception in the Assassination of John F. Kennedy* (New York, MacMillan, 1980).

Robert J. Lopez and Jesse Katz, "Nicole Brown Anti-Abuse Charity Beset by Problems; Embarrassments include controversial donors, felony record of fired leader. Family cites growing pains." *Los Angeles Times,* July 7, 1995, p. A-1.

Jim Mann, "CIA Tries to Get Collegians to Perform Intelligence Jobs," *Los Angeles Times,* February 26, 1993, p. A-4.

Dave Manning, executive board member of CTKA, April 24, 1996.

John Marks, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate: The CIA and Mind Control* (New York: Times Books, 1979).

Edward Medvene, et.al., "Motion of Defendent Joseph Ippolito for Release Pending Trial," on file at the United States District Court, Central District of California, case no. CR-92-400-DMT, September 10, 1992.

Dan Moldea, *Dark Victory: Ronald Reagan, MCA and the Mob,* (New York: Penguin, 1987).

Steven Lee Myers, "Richard E. Gerstein, Dead at 68; Prosecuted Key Watergate Figure," *New York Times,* April 27, 1992, p. D-12.

"Music Executive Slain in Malibu, Woman Held," (Charles Minor case) *Los Angeles Times,* March 20, 1995, p. B-1.

Jim Newton, "Simpson Private Eye is No Stranger to Big-Name Cases," *Los Angeles Times,* July 22, 1922, p. A-1.

"Ex-Chief of CenTrust Bank is Convicted on 68 Charges," *New York Times,* November 25, 1993, p. D-9.

L.A. View, "Criminal Behavior," January 5, 1996, p. 7.

Louis Nizer, *Catspaw: The Famed Trial Attorney's Heroic Defense of a Man Unjustly Accused* (New York: Donald I. Fine, Inc., 1992), pp. 52–53.

Kenneth B. Noble, "Simpson Trial Likely to Put a Tough Detective on Trial," *New York Times,* February 21, 1995, p. A-6.

Emanuel Parker, "SONJI DANESE TAYLOR: She's Become Obsession of White Artist Since Her Death," *Los Angeles Sentinel,* April 19, 1995.

David. L. Paul, Intervener v. Resolution Trust Corporation, U.S. Court of Appeals (Miami), Eleventh Circuit, Nos. 91-5408, 91-5035.

Stephen Pizzo, Mary Fricker and Paul Muolo, *Inside Job: The Looting of America's Savings and Loans* (New York: McGraw-Hill), 1989.

D. Reyes, "Nicole Simpson Foundation Gives Shelter $10,000," *Los Angeles Times,* July 17, 1995, p. A-17.

Charles Rappleye and Ed Becker, *All American Mafioso—The Johnny Rosselli Story* (New York: Doubleday, 1991).

Paul Ruiz, Washington, D.C.-based political researcher for Citizens for Truth About the Kennedy Assassination (CTKA), interview in Los Angeles, January 4, 1997.

Mike Rothmiller and Ivan G. Goldman, *L.A.'s Secret Police: Inside the LAPD Elite Spy Network* (New York: Pocket Books, 1992). (The last chapter details the shooting of Rothmiller by an arms and drug smuggler from Orange County. Though crippled, Rothmiller had to fight for a disability pension from the LAPD.)

"Trial Journal," *San Francisco Examiner,* March 23, 1995, SFE News Service.

Peter Dale Scott, "Case Closed or Oswald Framed?" *Prevailing Winds,* No. 1, 1995, p. 52.

Stephanie Simon, "Diverse Legal Team's Task: To Prove Simpson Guilty," *Los Angeles Times,* September 9, 1996, p. A-1.

Stephanie Simon, "Judge Restricts Simpson Defense as Civil Trial Opens," *Los Angeles Times,* September, 18, 1996.

Stephen Singular, *Legacy of Deception: An Investigation of Mark Fuhrman and Racism in the L.A.P.D.* (Los Angeles: Dove Books, 1995).

Peter Sinton and Kenneth Howe, "Feds to Question S.F. Banker in Bond Probe," *San Francisco Examiner,* September 25, 1996, p. A-1.

M.L. Stein, “”Who’s Telling the Truth?” *Editor & Publisher,* vol. 127: February 19, 1994, pp. 27.

Gary Thompson and Steve Kanigher, “Search for the Tiger’s Treasure,” *Las Vegas Sun,* December 26, 1993, p. A-1.

U.S. v. Lorenzo et. al., case no. 92-400, U.S. Criminal Court Clerk’s Office, Los Angeles, California.

H. Weinstein, “L.A. Lawyer to Defend Chief of Bosnian Serbs in Trial,” *Los Angeles Times,* July 10, 1996, p. A-1.

Steve Wick, *Bad Company: Drugs, Hollywood and the Cotton Club Murder* (New York: Harcourt, Brace, Javonavich, 1990).

West Legal Directory, “Howard Weitzman” profile (Los Angeles: West Publishing Co., 1995).

Steve Tinney, “Mystery Man was Stalking Nicole,” *The Star,* August 9, 1994, p. 22. (Photocopies of the notebook entries illustrate the story.)

Peter Truell, *False Profits: The Inside Story of BCCI, the World’s Most Corrupt Empire* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1992).

UPI News Service, “DeLorean’s legal Team—The ‘Howard and Don Show,’” *San Francisco Chronicle,* August 17, 1984.

Jaxon Van Derbeken and Terri Hardy, “Tenacity of Lead Detective Praised—Investigator Lange Given Credit for Solving String of Tough Cases,” *Los Angeles Daily News,* July 8, 1994, p. 20.

Mike Walker, “I Fear I’ll be Murdered,” *National Enquirer,* September 6, 1994, p. 10.

ADDENDUM: THE CIA/MAFIA REDUX

EX-CON, O.J. BOND INSTANTLY AT GOLF TOURNEY

MIAMI HERALD, MAY 19, 1997

O.J. Simpson’s golfing buddy in the recent charity tournament on Key Biscayne: Steve Thiele, 34, an ex-con on parole.

Thiele, once a bodyguard who ran with the Miami River Cops, now works for a courier service. He is a six-day-a-week golfer who shoots in the mid-70s. He showed up—Pings in his bag—at the Crandon Park course, hoping to meet The Juice.

“I started hitting balls and making small talk. I asked him if he needed a caddy or any type of security. He told me the way he sees me hitting, he’d like to get me on his team.”

Thiele says he couldn't afford the entry fee. "He said, 'Don't worry, I'll take care of it.'"

Thiele told Simpson he had done hard time—6 1/2 years—in federal prison for making a threatening phone call to a businessman who owed him money—and for beating up Ray Corona, a former bank president convicted in a marijuana smuggling case. Thiele used to be Corona's bodyguard.

Simpson invited Thiele to play with him in L.A. "He gave me his address and his phone number and told me to definitely call."

But first, Thiele says, he must get permission—from his parole officer.

From "Darkness at Sunshine State," in James Ring Adams, *The Big Fix: Inside the S&L Scandal* (New York: John Wiley & Sons, 1990), pp. 125–126:

Ray [Corona] did buy his own bank, the Sunshine State Bank in South Miami. It took two years for the FDIC to close down this bank, even after a federal indictment called it "part of a vertically integrated drug conspiracy," and Ray and his father were convicted.

As the government later proved in two protracted trials, Tony Fernendez provided funds for Ray Corona's bank ventures.... Tony Fernandez fled to the United States from Cuba in 1962 and survived for the next 14 years through low-paying odd jobs. He measured drapes, stamped circuit boards for personal computers, and, for two years, did contract work for the Central Intelligence Agency. In 1976, a friend brought him to meet a sinister figure named José Alvero-Cruz, and Tony's fortunes took a dramatic turn. Alvero Cruz was considered the largest marijuana smuggler in Miami."

From *Miami Herald* archives:

EX-BANK OFFICER ON TRIAL

DECEMBER 18, 1986

Ray L. Corona, former chairman of the now-defunct Sunshine State Bank, stood trial Wednesday for making false statements and illegally receiving nine weapons, ranging from shotguns to precision target pistols, that were shipped interstate....

SMUGGLER TELLS HOW HE INVESTED IN BANK

JUNE 3, 1987

Jose Antonia Fernandez took the witness stand in federal court Tuesday and with businesslike resolve described how former Sunshine State Bank chairman Ray Corona helped him buy 51 percent of the bank....

CORONAS

OCTOBER 22, 1987

Ray Corona, the sophisticated South Miami banker who teamed with a notorious marijuana smuggler to buy the Sunshine State Bank, was sent to prison for 20 years Wednesday.

Corona's father Rafael, 66, also was sentenced by U.S. District Judge James W. Kehoe to five years in prison and fined $10,000. He was convicted on a lesser charge in the bank purchase....

MAN IS ARRESTED IN STORE BOMBING

DECEMBER 23, 1989

Federal agents have arrested a man for allegedly bombing Classy Formal Wear and then trying to extort $80,000 with further bomb threats. Steve Thiele, of 1717 N. Bayshore Dr., was arrested by agents of the Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms on Thursday night and charged with bombing the store....

BODYBUILDER CONVICTED OF BEATING WITNESS

AUGUST 3, 1990

A federal jury convicted a bodybuilder with ties to Miami River Cops on Thursday of beating up banker-turned-racketeer Ray Corona in a courthouse scuffle two months ago....

FOUR RIVER COPS HAVE BEEN RELEASED FROM PRISON

AUGUST 5, 1992

At least four of the 20-plus Miami River Cops sentenced to serious prison time in the late 1980s for their roles in a huge drug corruption scandal are already out. They are: Rodolfo "Rudy" Arias, Ricardo Aleman, Luis Batista and Regino "Reggie" Capiro....

THE GOOD SOLDIER

Timothy McVeigh's Rise From "Robotic" Soldier to Mad Bomber

Sometimes the minority cannot prevail except by force; then it must determine whether the prevalence of its will is worth the price of using force.

— William F. Buckley, Jr.

The popular conception was spun by the press corps like a shallow clay urn: Timothy McVeigh, the volatile minuteman, was so bitter after failing to make the Army's "elite" Special Forces, so stuffed full of paramilitary dogma and the froth of *The Turner Diaries,* that he vented his rage on the Alfred Murrah Federal Building in Oklahoma City.

The popular conception oversimplifies. Captain Terry Guild, McVeigh's former platoon leader, told reporters that the failure to become a Green Beret left the Iraq War veteran "upset. Not angry. Just very, very disappointed."

McVeigh's sister testified at the closed grand jury hearing that he worked for a special forces unit involved in criminal activity. He reportedly trained at the School of the Americas, the CIA's academy for death squads.

As a civilian, Timothy McVeigh clung to the trappings of the military. In 1992, he joined the National Guard of Tonawanda, New York. He took a job with Burns International Security Services in Buffalo. McVeigh was assigned to the security detail at Calspan, a Pentagon contractor that conducts classified research in advanced aerospace rocketry and electronic warfare.

Al Salandra, a spokesman for Calspan, told reporters that McVeigh was "a model employee." His fellow enlistees describe him as a gun-toting, adrenal-crazed cartoon soldier. In the Army, he demonstrated a willingness to carry out orders, *any* orders. He trained on his own time while other soldiers languished in their bunks or caroused at the PX.

"He was *real* different," Todd Regier, a plumber, told the *Boston Globe.* "Kind of cold. He was almost like a *robot.*"

Within a few months, his manager planned on promoting McVeigh to the supervisory level, but he abruptly resigned.

McVeigh had "more pressing matters to tend to," the *Globe* reported. His bitterness "was becoming directed at a much larger, more *ubiquitous* enemy. "

It was in Buffalo that McVeigh's rage peaked. He complained that federal agents had implanted him with a microchip and left him with an unexplained scar on his posterior. It was painful, he winced, to sit on the chip.

It's conceivable, given the current state of the electronic mind control art, a biocybernetic Oz over the black budget rainbow, that McVeigh had been drawn into an experimental project, that the device was the real McCoy. Ironically enough, McVeigh's contention that he'd been implanted and tracked was laughed off by most sensible, media-fed folk, even as an electronics firm in Tampa, Florida—Pro-Tech Monitoring, Inc. in Tampa, Florida—introduced a satellite-tracking system, SMART (or Satellite Monitoring and Remote Tracking device) for use by the criminal justice system, a "patent-protected, space-age device that tracks and continuously monitors offenders, stalkers and provides advance warning for victims."

Jeff Camp, who worked as a guard with McVeigh in upstate New York after high school, told *Newsweek* that John Doe One was "just a very strange person. It was like he had two different personalities."

The press has long ignored the rise of mind control operations and technology, but electronic monitoring of the brain has been perfected in research laboratories more secretive than the military science units that once slipped isotopes to crippled children in their oatmeal.

The generals play it close to their armored vests, but the miniature implantable monitor was declassified long ago. Sandia National Laboratories in Albuquerque, New Mexico markets a sensor implant sealed inside a "hermetic biocompatible package" that operates on a tiny power coil, complete with a programmable sensor and telemetry circuits. Sandia's sales literature notes that the implant design "is founded on technology originally developed for weapons."

From the Pentagon's electromagnetic arsenal came Timothy McVeigh, by his own account obsessed with visions of Waco and Ruby Ridge. If McVeigh was in fact a subject of electromagnetic harassment, he marched in step with a small army of glassy-eyed felons.

No Programmed Killer's Hall-of-Fame would be complete without a bust of Dennis Sweeney, the student activist who shot Allard Lowenstein, the civil rights and anti-war activist. Lowenstein was suspected by many of working for the CIA. A Yale graduate, he marched in the Freedom Summer of 1964 in Mississippi, campaigned for Adlai Stevenson and Robert Kennedy. Yet he was a close friend of William F. Buckley, the garrulous CIA propagandist of PBS fame and Lowenstein's conservative counterpart. He qualified for the Nixon enemies list, yet associated with the bund of Plumbers occupying the White House. Lowenstein ran the National Student Association before the CIA officially took it over.

"Lowenstein," the *New Republic* reported, "for several years attempted to prove that a great conspiracy had plotted the deaths of John and Robert Kennedy and Martin Luther King Jr., and was also responsible for his own political downfall ... a force of evil that would explain his own and his movement's decline."

Sweeney, who marched with Lowenstein in Mississippi, shot his mentor seven times at Rockefeller Center. He did not flee. The assassin sat down, lit a cigarette and waited for police to arrive.

He maintained that the CIA, with Lowenstein's help, had implanted him with a telemetric brain device fifteen years earlier and made his life an unbearable torment. "Voices" were transmitted through his dental work, he said, and he attempted to silence them by filing down his false teeth. Sweeney blamed CIA controllers for his uncle's heart attack and the assassination of San Francisco mayor George Mosconé.

The murders of Mosconé and City Supervisor Harvey Milk *did* indeed have earmarks of mind control. Dan White, the "Twinkie" assassin, had been a paratrooper in the 173rd Airborne Division, in which capacity he served a tour of duty in Vietnam. He was discharged from Fort Bragg in 1967, and returned to San Francisco to join the police department. White settled in Sausolito, tooled around in a Porsche and generally lived far beyond his means. In 1972, he gave it all up and took an extended vacation since known as White's "missing year." He broke all contact with friends and family, kept no records of the trip, purchased no travel tickets, did not use a credit card. He later accounted for his mystery year by explaining that he'd worked a stint as a security guard in Alaska.

Back in San Francisco, White joined the fire department where his temper tantrums were an embarrassment to co-workers, though his work record was without blemish. In his run for the Board of Supervisors, he spoke as if he was "programmed," according to Stan Smith, a local labor leader. During Board sessions, White was known to slip into spells of silence punctuated by goose-stepping struts around the supervisors' chambers.

The murders of Moscone and Milk were accomplished with illegal hollow-point bullets. After Milk's body was cremated, the ashes were enshrined at his prior direction with bubble bath, signifying his homosexuality, and several packets of Kool-Aid. The confection was Milk's hint, specified in the will he'd revised a week before the shootings, shortly after the fall of the People's Temple (founded in San Francisco), that the murder was related to the mass CIA mind control experiment that ended with the destruction of 1,200 largely black subjects in Guyana.

"I can be killed with ease," Milk noted in a poem written the month he died. "I can be cut right down." In his revised will, he wrote: "Let the bullets that rip through my brain smash every closet door in the country."

Allegations of classified federal mind control operations have cropped up repeatedly, erupting from hidden pockets of "national security" labyrinths.

In 1984, Francis Fox of Coral Gables, Florida, the owner of a prestigious bridal shop, announced she'd been subjected to traumatic mind control experiments by CIA and military psychiatrists. She spoke to reporters for the *St. Petersburg Times* for three hours. Her story,

> MILITARY CONTROLS MY MIND, WOMAN SAYS
>
> was published on March 6, 1994. "Fox said her father was a Cuban-American," the *Times* reported. "He went into the U.S. military and was stationed in Panama, Germany and several U.S. bases, including MacDill in Tampa."
>
> She was tormented for a year, while her father was visiting Cuba. She also was subjected to ritualized trauma by her father on instructions from the CIA to fragment her personality and "deposit the painful memory with several alter personalities."

Five months after the bombing in Oklahoma, freeway sniper Christopher Scalley claimed to take direction from "electronic appliances," as reported by the *San Francisco Chronicle* on August 19, 1995:

> WHY EVIDENCE ON I-80 SNIPER LANGUISHED—
>
> CHP WAS GIVEN SUSPECT'S LICENSE NUMBER IN JUNE
>
> Auburn, Placer County—The California Highway Patrol received information almost two months ago leading to the man arrested Thursday in the Interstate-80 sniping spree, but an official acknowledged yesterday that the CHP did not pass it on to local investigators.
>
> David Morillas of Loomis said his wife Carla wrote down the license number of a truck that passed them after the side rear window of their car was blown away, showering their sleeping 5-year-old son with glass in what is now thought to have been the sniper's first attack, in Citrus Heights, a Sacramento suburb, on June 27.
>
> "We kept thinking that the CHP was checking into it," Morillas said.
>
> He said yesterday that after his car window shattered, he saw a red Toyota pickup suddenly slow down and shift into the right lane on the roadway.
>
> Morillas said he slowed down alongside the truck and yelled through an open window. "I was shouting at him. 'Did you see what happened to my window?' ... Finally, he said, 'I didn't see nothing.' He was kind of talking weird, mumbling. I couldn't understand him."
>
> The tie-in between the June 27 shooting and the other fourteen sniper attacks was not made until this week, when Carla Morillas spoke to sheriff's officers. The

officers discovered that the license plate number she had reported matched the tag number of their suspect, Christopher Shaw Scalley, 48, of Applegate, who was arrested Thursday.

According to arrest documents, Scalley told Placer County authorities that he had been receiving messages via radio waves and electronic appliances, and had heard voices telepathically from passing vehicles. Scalley had been arrested before for the sale of controlled substances and for driving under the influence. Scalley was booked for investigation of nine felony counts of malicious discharge of a firearm at an occupied vehicle, Placer County Sheriff Ed Bonner said.

The other six reported attacks remain under investigation.

Victims in the shootings identified Scalley from a photo lineup, sheriff's Captain Steve Reader said yesterday.

Scalley had been missing since his home was searched Tuesday. He was spotted Thursday by a television news crew in his red pickup outside a home in Carmichael, where a friend of Scalley's reportedly committed suicide Wednesday.

Placer County deputies were contacted and they arrested Scalley a short distance away.

Authorities said Thursday that they had no further information on the apparent suicide of Larry Don Shores, 58, who died from a gunshot wound to the head after visiting with Scalley at his Carmichael home Wednesday.

Shores was not considered a suspect in the sniper attacks. Authorities said they do not know if Scalley was connected to Shores' death.

There were 15 reported sniper attacks on buses, motor homes and other vehicles, mostly along a two-mile stretch of I-80 between Applegate and Clipper Gap in the Sierra Nevada foot-hills about 40 miles east of Sacramento.

Was Timothy McVeigh a Remote Mind Control Subject?

> *Advances in 'overhead' sensors—satellites and UAVs (Unmanned Aerospace Vehicles) included—will create opportunities not only to detect targets but to track them as they move. In [General] Fogelman's view, "this is kind of a revolution in warfare."*
>
> —General Ronald R. Fogelman, *Jane's Defense Weekly*

> *Presumably, research will continue to increase the effectiveness of psychological techniques for controlling human behavior. But we think it is unlikely that psychological techniques alone will be sufficient to adjust human beings to the kind of society that technology is creating.*
>
> —Unabomber's Manifesto, sec. 149

McVeigh's rage at a target "larger" and "more ubiquitous" than the Army was stoked at Calspan within a year of his Special Forces exam.

Calspan and electromagnetic mind control both have roots at the same Ivy League institution—Cornell University, Ithaca, New York. Calspan was founded in 1946 as Cornell Aeronautical Laboratory. Cornell was also the contract base of the CIA's "Human Ecology Fund," a gushing fount of financial support for classified brain experimentation at the country's leading universities.

Cornell Aeronautical was reorganized in 1972 and renamed Calspan. Six years later, the firm was acquired by Arvin Industries. Recently, Arvin-Calspan merged with Space Industries International (SII), a commercial space-flight venture based in Texas. During the Reagan-Bush era, SII expanded from a staff of 33 to over 2,700 employees.

Timothy McVeigh was assigned to the conglomerate's Advanced Technology Center in Buffalo, NY (Calspan ATC). ATC sales literature boasts a large energy shock tunnel, radar facilities and "a radio-frequency (RF) simulator facility for evaluating electronic warfare techniques."

One Calspan research lab specializes in microscopic engineering.

Calspan literature boasts that ATC employs "numerous world renowned engineers" on "the cutting edge" of science.

Human tracking and monitoring technology are well within Calspan's sphere of pursuits. The company is instrumental in REDCAP, an Air Force electronic warfare system that winds through every Department of Defense facility in the country. A Pentagon release explains that REDCAP "is used to evaluate the effectiveness of electronic-combat hardware, techniques, tactics and concepts."

The system "includes closed-loop radar and data links at RF manned data fusion and weapons control posts." REDCAP is managed by the Development Test Center's 46th Test Wing at Florida's Eglin Air Force Base.

The "ubiquitous" enemy that obsessed McVeigh in Buffalo made its presence known—possibly through a national microwave system like REDCAP—the week before the bombing in Oklahoma City. One Patriot computer newsboard claimed that a disembodied, rumbling, low-frequency hum had been heard across the country the week of the bombing. Past hums in Taos, NM, Eugene and Medford, OR, Timmons, Ontario and Bristol, UK were most definitely (despite specious official denials) attuned to the auditory pathways.

The RF hum in Eugene, Oregon in March, 1978 was so powerful that it caused headaches and nosebleeds. Nobel Prize laureate Robert O. Becker has noted that a low-frequency Naval communications line has its terminus near Eugene, Oregon. The Federal Communications Commission reported that the source of the EM signal was tiny Dixon, California (population 10,000), lying midway between Davis and Vacaville, home of the notorious prison and its Maximum Psychiatric Diagnostic Unit, designed by Brown & Root, a site of documented CIA mind control experiments on prisoners, often as a form of punishment.

The Air Force is among Calspan's leading clients, and Eglin AFB has farmed key personnel to the company. The grating irony—recalling McVeigh's contention he'd been implanted with a telemetry chip—is that the Instrumentation Technology Branch of Eglin Air Force Base is currently engaged in the tracking of mammals with subminiature telemetry devices. According to an Air Force press release, the biotelemetry chip transmits on the upper S-band (2318 to 2398 MHz), with up to 120 digital channels.

"Built onto this tiny device," the release boasts, "are programmable capabilities ranging from frequency, transmission mode, input scaling and signal conditioning. The Armament Directorate's Instrumentation Technology Branch is currently pursuing the use of subminiature telemetry to transmit data related to dolphin research."

Monitoring dolphins as they swim through the sea is an unclassified scientific pursuit. The monitoring and controlling of humans has been, for forty years, a highly classified specialty avidly studied by the CIA and military. And brain telemetering systems are but a subset of the Pentagon's "non-lethal" arsenal. The dystopian implications were explored by *Defense News* for March 20, 1995:

> NAVAL RESEARCH LAB ATTEMPTS TO MELD NEURONS AND CHIPS
>
> STUDIES MAY PRODUCE ARMY OF "ZOMBIES"
>
> Future battles could be waged with genetically engineered organisms, such as rodents, whose minds are controlled by computer chips engineered with living brain cells.... The research, called Hippocampal Neuron Patterning, grows live neurons on computer chips.
>
> "This technology that alters neurons could potentially be used on people to create zombie armies," Lawrence Korb, a senior fellow at the Brookings Institution, said.

The executive suites at SII and Calspan are another pocket of the military elite that jealously squanders certain advances in science and technology—the type with severe human rights implications.

The president of SII is former space shuttle pilot Joseph P. Allen, whose early accomplishments included a Fulbright scholarship to Germany (1959) and nuclear research at Brookhaven National Laboratory (1963–67), recently under investigation by the Department of Energy for conducting secret radiation experiments on human subjects. Dr. Allen was recruited by NASA in 1967. He trained at Vance Air Force Base in Oklahoma. He has also served as staff consultant to the President's Council on International Economic Policy, and was a NASA assistant administrator for legislative affairs (1975–78).

From the "mammal tracking" folk at Eglin AFB hails Richard Covey, a former astronaut who has flown four shuttle missions and taken five spacewalks, currently SII's director of business development. Covey, the fighter hawk, served two tours in Vietnam and flew 339 combat missions. An Air Force press release notes that his immediate postwar assignment was to Eglin AFB, where he was joint director for electronic warfare testing of the F-15 Eagle.

Another military scientist at Calspan, Paul Brodnicki, chaired the technical program at a closed conference on electronic warfare simulations held in February, 1994 at the US Army Research Lab in Adelphi, Maryland. Topics on the itinerary included *"off-board Radio Frequency Self-Protection."*

Calspan places much research emphasis on bioengineering and artificial intelligence. In May, 1995, Lames Llinas of the Buffalo division gave a talk at the Navy Center for Applied Research in Artificial Intelligence in Washington, D.C. While making his rounds at Calspan, perhaps Tim McVeigh picked up a company newsletter that discussed the work of Cliff Kurtzman, a graduate of UCLA and MIT's Space Systems Lab, and a "team leader" in the R&D of artificial intelligence (Calspan pioneered the field in the 1950s) and telerobotics.

Besides the Air Force and NASA, the firm is a ranking subcontractor for Sentar, Inc., an advanced science and engineering firm capable, according to company literature, of creating artificial intelligence systems. Sentar's customers include the U.S. Army Space and Strategic Defense Command, the Advanced Research Projects Agency, Rockwell International, Teledyne, Nichols Research Corp. and TRW.

All of this is to say that it is technically feasible that McVeigh had been implanted with a telemetry chip.

The "guilt by association" prize goes to retired Brigadier General Benton Partin of the USAF, who laid responsibility for the Oklahoma bombing on "*Leftists*" conducting a "psycho-political operation going on at the present time against the 'Christian Right' bogeyman." The payoff, Partin insisted darkly, was a propaganda victory for "a world commonwealth of independent states" plotting to "criminalize the patriotic support of Constitutional rights."

The press ridiculed anyone contradicting the FBI's version of events, belittled those who argued that the bombing might be a conspiracy—with the sole exception of Brig. Gen. Partin, who called a one hour press conference at the National Press Club in Washington, D.C. on June 15. The conference was attended by *over 100 reporters* representing *every* major broadcast, newspaper and wire service, independent news firm and the foreign media.

But then Brig. Gen. Partin was not exactly a disinterested party. He served 31 years in the Air Force, in the research, design, testing and management of weapons development. He was commander of the Air Force Armament Technology Laboratory. He boasted that he held authority over *all* advanced weapons concepts R&D'd by the Air Force and its high-tech contractors—which would, of course, include Calspan.

But CIA observers everywhere choked when CNN announced that a psychological trauma team, mustered by the American Psychological Association, would converge in Oklahoma City to treat survivors of the explosion and the victims' families—led by none other than Dr. Louis Jolyon West of UCLA's Neuropsychiatric Institute, the breeding ground of some of the most necrotizing Dr. Strangeloves in the mind control business. Alumni emeritus of the Institute include Dr. Ross Adey, a former NASA brain scientist with much experience collaborating with the Paperclip doctors who expatriated to the U.S. after the war.

Dr. West is a creation of the Agency's mind control fraternity. Among other totalitarian projects, he has studied the use of drugs as "adjuncts to interpersonal manipulation or assault," and employed pioneers in the field of remote electronic brain experimentation at UCLA.

West has recommended to federal officials that drugs be used to control "bothersome" segments of the population:

> This method, foreseen by Aldous Huxley, has the governing element employing drugs selectively to manipulate the governed in various ways. In fact, it may be more convenient and perhaps even more economical to keep the growing numbers of chronic drug users (especially of the hallucinogens) fairly isolated and also out of the labor market, with its millions of unemployed.
>
> To society, the communards with their hallucinogenic drugs are probably less bothersome—and less expensive—if they are living apart than if they are engaging in alternative modes of expressing their alienation, such as active, organized, vigorous political protest and dissent.

The Lost Tribes of Israel Meet Frankenstein

Ah, distinctly I remember,
it was in bleak December,
And each separate dying member
wrought a mess upon the floor.
Eagerly I wished the morrow,
for it was then that I would borrow
A pick-up truck and without sorrow,
tote the sorry carcasses of this war.
—Linda Thompson

If McVeigh bore a microchip, he was certainly not alone. His rambles would be tracked by remote sensors and receivers, and he would be but one of an unpolled segment of the population that has fallen under the classified federal electromagnetic mind control push. "Classified" but no mystery to victims of sadistic CIA/DoD experimentation and harassment. At present, there at least three national organizations of victims and survivors in the U.S. alone. In past mind control operations—the killings of Robert Kennedy, Allard Lowenstein and John Lennon, among others—operatives were placed in the path of the subject to program his thinking and urge him through a self-incriminating maze to the fatal act.

Afterwards, intelligence operatives (often a psychiatrist) may step forward to hypnotically deprogram the subject.

A cover-up proves the crime and raises the identities of perpetrators into relief. After the Oklahoma bombing, "country" lawyer Stephen Jones was handed McVeigh's case. If McVeigh was involved, Jones asked reporters, "Is he a 'Manchurian Candidate?' Is he a *patsy*?"

Stephen Jones may never publicly resolve the question. He took the case after both of his legal predecessors were run off by death threats. Jones stepped forward to represent John Doe One. He said he had no qualms about lynch-mob reprisals. He also claimed to have no conflicts of interest in the case. But Jones is not the simple backwoods lawyer he affects to be.

In 1964, he was a legal assistant to Richard Nixon. Jones "stayed in touch." He was among the "honored," he boasts, to be graced with an invitation to Nixon's funeral in 1994.

The Nixon road to high office was paved with political assassinations. In a 1973 *Ramparts* story, political researcher Peter Dale Scott offered: "what links the scandal of Watergate to the assassination in Dallas is the increasingly ominous symbiosis between U.S. intelligence networks and the forces of organized crime." The Watergate hearings suppressed critical evidence that would have opened old wounds—did not, for example, explore the CIA backgrounds of Howard Hunt (death squad activity and political coups in South America) or J. Gordon Liddy (a hit-man on the White House payroll who proposed kidnapping campus radicals, today the second most popular radio talk show host in the country) or neo-Nazis entering the country from Munich (via Young Americans for Freedom, an all American Nazi front organization), drug running, or a host of capital crimes infinitely more serious than a routine wiretap or Nixon's Milk Fund.

The Watergate Committee also neglected to delve into Nixon's connections to a score of CIA, FBI, Mafia and military intelligence pariahs. They and their recruits are currently trooping along with the Nazi underground, propagandizing the militias with "New World Order" rants designed to incite "conservative" rage with the usual ethnic and political scapegoats of organized fascism.

Congress, the Pentagon and sundry political entities still crawl with right-wing politicians who have struck up an alliance with Nazi movements.

Time magazine reported on May 1, 1995 that George Nethercutt, "the giant-slayer Congressman [who succeeded House Speaker Tom Foley as a Washington State representative]," drew strength from radio shows that had callers hollering about sightings of black helicopters and UN plots to set up a secret compound in the state. In neighboring Idaho, Helen Chenoweth up-ended an environmentalist Democratic incumbent in part by saying that the sole endangered species on the planet was the "white Anglo-Saxon male." Ms. Chenoweth, upon winning the election, equated environmentalism with Marxism and defended

Samuel Sherwood, leader of the U.S. Militia Organization, who told followers far and wide to know their legislators, because some day they might be forced to "blow their faces off."

Anne Fox, Idaho's superintendent of education, won the office with an assist from the state's 1,000 militia members. The victory was tarnished, however, when it emerged that her campaign manager and chief deputy, Terry Haws, had been charged in Alaska for giving drugs to a minor in exchange for sexual favors.

Another Patriot booster is Don Rogers, a California state senator who has shared the podium with the likes of former Klansman Louis Beam. His first political act in Sacramento was the introduction of a measure opposing the formation of a global government controlled by the United Nations.

Four leading Republican state senators backed the bill.

Larry Pratt, a Virginia state legislator, is a thumping anti-Communist. He has run with anti-insurgent movements in Guatemala and the Philippines. In 1990 he published *Armed People Victorious,* a sentimentalization of death squads, or "the people's militias." He calls for these same groups to fight the domestic "drug war."

A right-wing extremist in Colorado's state senate, Charles Duke, is running a national campaign for state legislatures to pass states' rights resolutions.

It stands to reason that Aryan Nation's leader Richard Butler, at a news conference in July 1995, enthused that the Republican Party is "waking up." Butler said he was particularly taken with California governor and frustrated presidential candidate Pete Wilson for supporting the University of California Board of Regents' decision to overturn affirmative action in admissions and hiring.

Proponents of the Beltway's "Republican Revolution," engineered by propaganda assaults to occur midway through President Clinton's first term, invited the Patriots to present their case publicly after the Oklahoma blast. Some on the Beltway have abetted the most volatile extremists linked to the Patriot movement.

In August 1995, for example, *Mother Jones* ran a feature story on the creepings of "law-and-order" Republican Phil Gramm. In his bid for the Oval Office, Gramm has scolded Clinton for overturning minimum mandatory sentencing for drug pushers. But upon arriving in Washington in 1980, he was "petitioned for help by the family of federal inmate Bill Doyle, a white, middle-class drug dealer. Doyle had served a total of fewer than seven years in jail—and less than half of his latest sentence—on three adult and eight juvenile offenses, many of which involved narcotics, guns or explosives. What did Gramm do? He lobbied long and hard to [free] Doyle. Instead of pursuing information that might have exposed the ammunition sales, Gramm had it excluded from a parole hearing."

Gramm's sudden attack of altruism was prompted by a letter that Doyle wrote to his brother Jim—a Pentagon official—pleading for aid. Jim Doyle turned to a neighbor, Mary Fae Kamm, an employee in the senator's office. The staff wrote letters of support for the accused, and went so far as to expunge Doyle's criminal files of serious felonies, including a charge of "possessing a bomb."

Doyle admits freely that he has engaged in the sale of weapons stolen from the Army by militiamen "armed with anti-tank weapons, grenades, rocket launchers, the whole show."

Gramm offered the convict taxpayer funds to start up an electronics company. Upon his release, Doyle "devoted that electronics business to helping drug dealers guard their operations against the police. Meanwhile, he opened three new drug franchises, and helped his gun-running accomplice conceal firearms from the cops."

This is the same law-and-order candidate who has set out to "remake the criminal justice system in America." He has a vision ... of slave labor. At the annual NRA convention in Phoenix earlier this year, Gramm proposed "decriminalizing prison labor" by converting "every federal prison in this country into a mini-industrial park. I want prisoners to work ten hours a day, six days a week,"

Collaborations between populist politicians and extreme-right militants (The Reichswehr) gave rise to the Third Reich. Another familiar pattern is the mingling of political vigilantés and enlisted men, and a thriving black market in armaments boosted from military bases. Shawn Helmer, a sergeant at Fort Lewis, Washington, testified that he loaded a truck with anti-tank rocket launchers and an assortment of guns looted from a local base, and drove to Florida where he planned to sell them to some of Lt. Col. Oliver North's political mercenaries. Helmer was arrested by the BATF.

Ironically, by stockpiling arms against military intrusions of government, the right wing plays into the hands of the defense establishment that markets them and invites repressive tactics. One Patriot group went so far as to hijack a TOW missile from a military convoy and attempted to blow up the Southern Poverty Law Center with it. And a month after the destruction in OKC, *Time* reported on the conviction of two firebrands from the Minnesota Patriot's Council for "planning to use a lethal biological weapon against U.S. marshals and IRS agents. Federal prosecutors are going after other members of the right-wing military group. In doing so, they hope to stop the spread of ricin, an extract of castor oil, which can *kill in minutes* if ingested, inhaled or absorbed through the skin. According to trial testimony, Patriot's Council members discussed poisoning U.S. agents by placing ricin on doorknobs."

PART II

"Hell has Victories": The Deep Politics of the Oklahoma Bombing

On April 27, 1995, the Knight-Ridder newswire announced:

WEEKS BEFORE OKLAHOMA, THREAT PUT UTILITIES ON ALERT

The U.S. Marshal's Service, a full month before the bombing, issued a warning that "Islamic terrorists" were planning to attract media attention by launching "suicide" assaults on federal buildings and installations. The memo was wired to federal courthouses nationwide. On April 23, the Carthage, Texas *Penula Richmond* published a story on Norma Smith, an employee of the courthouse across the street from the Alfred Murrah Building. Ms. Smith detailed how she arrived at work on the 19th at 7:45 AM and found a bomb squad in the parking lot between the two buildings. The spectacle was observed by other courthouse employees perplexed by the commotion.

A haunting moment of April 19, 1995 was the execution of Richard Wayne Snell in Arkansas. Among the charges filed against Snell was participation in a 1983 plot to blow up the federal office building in Oklahoma City. The *San Francisco Chronicle* reported in April 1995 that this was the very same day "on which Richard Wayne Snell, an Oklahoma native and alleged member of the white supremacist group called The Order, was executed for his part in a conspiracy to murder federal officials."

"Snell," the *Denver Post* reported, "repeatedly predicted that there would be a bombing or an explosion the day of his death."

The Militia of Montana rallied to defend the Nazi martyr, "a Patriot to be executed by The Beast." The Militia's national network of faxes and web pages were flooded with right-wing battle cries against the "liberal" justice system that had condemned the Patriot to death. From his own prison cell in Varner, Arkansas, the doomed Nazi distributed his own newsletter, *The Seekers,* the trumpet of the "war to establish righteousness."

Snell felt no remorse for the killing of a businessman and a black state trooper. Nevertheless, he had an arm-banded "spiritual adviser," the haughty Robert G. Millar, the leader of a heavily-armed apocalyptic cult near Muldrow, Oklahoma.

At a clemency board meeting, Snell quoted his hero Rudolf Hess and demanded that he either be executed or set free. He shot off a note to Governor

Tucker before his execution was ordered. "Governor Tucker," Snell wrote, "look over your shoulder. Justice is coming. I wouldn't trade places with you or any of your cronies. Hell has victories. I am at peace."

The *New York Times* conceded on May 20, 1995 that "although evidence of an earlier plot does not itself demonstrate any links between those identified as plotters then and those accused now, it does suggest that the idea of bombing this particular federal building could have been a subject of discussion among small extremist groups for more than a decade."

McVeigh once received a traffic ticket, the *Times* noted, in the Fort Smith, Arkansas area, where some co-conspirators in the original bombing plot lived. The only other known connection is his sister's subscription to the *Patriot Report,* a newsletter published in Fort Smith.

The principal prosecution witness of the 1983 conspiracy was James D. Ellison, founder of the Covenant, the Sword and the Arm of the Lord—more accurately described as a sword and arm of virtual government—a neo-Nazi sect that once thrived in northern Arkansas. In 1988, fourteen Nazis were charged with scheming to overthrow the government. One of them was Richard Butler, the guiding force of the Aryan Nations sanctuary in Hayden Lake, Idaho. Other notable *ubermenschen* put on trial were Robert E. Miles, a former Klansman and leader of the Mountain Church of Jesus Christ the Savior in Michigan, an ex-con since his school-bus burning glory days, and Louis Ray Beam, former grand dragon of the KKK and "ambassador to the Aryan Nations."

These organizations share a common set of "religious" beliefs—the "Christian Identity" strain—grounded in a mythic past of Aryan supermen with superior electrons spinning in their brains, recalling the anti-Semitic, paganistic, rune-reading, sun-worshipping cults that flourished in the early days of the Nazi Party. The movement binds many of the neo-Nazi movements in the United States.

On one hand, Identity Christians believe they are the true descendants of Adam and Abraham, that Jews conspire with the Devil to enslave the world, all explained in frothy racist diatribes sweetened with Old Glory patriotism to put the icing on the mind control. On the other, the Identity altar is littered with the occult paraphernalia of the Nazi twilight. Wesley Swift, Richard Butler's mentor, blended KKK and Nazi racism with the "lost tribe" concept and the occult. Swift often preached about Atlantis and alluded to Edgar Cayce. Identity's Pastor Arnold Murray let on that the Great Pyramid was the second revelation of God, architecturally encoded to deliver the Word to the initiated patriarchs of the Identity racial fantasy.

The most exalted is Richard Girnt Butler, a retired Lockheed engineer and a suspect in the original Oklahoma bombing plot. Butler founded Aryan Nations, an Identity church, on a 20-acre plot of Idaho panhandle, in the shadows of looming guard towers. Butler's speeches were met with Nazi salutes and culminated in cross burnings. Buildings in the Hayden Lake area were periodically bombed. Armed compounds have cropped up in Pennsylvania and Utah, with minor outposts scattered about the country. The movement has been linked to dozens of murders since 1980. Butler's Idaho HQ was disarmed in 1987 following the passage of the state's Terrorist Control Act, but it was here that Oberführer Butler played host to a vanity fair of seething neo-Nazi celebrity bombers, including Richard Snell and the Order.

One of the most sinister was Manfred Roeder, leader of the the largest and most rabid Nazi organization in Europe. American and South African benefactors subsidized his terrorist fund. In 1978 he made a junket to Brazil for a meeting with Dr. Josef Mengele and other holdovers of the Nazi regime. From Brazil he made a bee-line for the United States, where he met with Dr. William Pierce, a former assistant professor of physics at Oregon State University, leader of the rabidly right-wing National Alliance, author of *The Turner Diaries,* the blueprint for the Order's carnage. (Like many domestic leaders of fascist cadrés, Pierce entered the network through the John Birch Society, arch-conservative supporters of Brig. Gen. Partin's "Leftist International" theory of the Oklahoma bombing.)

Pierce's world-hopping German ally, Herr Roeder—then a fugitive wanted in Germany for the bombing of a Vietnamese refugee center—was an honored guest at the annual gathering the Aryan Nations compound in 1982. Like Butler, his American counterpart, Roeder was the patriarch of several neo-Nazi groups. He fed them a steady diet of Jewish conspiracy theories. All this, and he still found time to steep himself in the blood-drenched politics of the PLO.

Another crazed bomber linked to Butler's movement is Jeremy Knesal, who faces a 45-year sentence for the bombing of an NAACP office in Tacoma, Washington. Knesal's mentor at the Idaho compound was Floyd Cochran, then the Nations' resident propagandist, today a reformed fascist who lectures around the country about the evils of racism.

Under Cochran's tutelage, Knesal acquired a National Socialist perspective on religion, eugenics and "racial history."

A second bomb plot in Washington state was allegedly hatched by Darwin Michael Gray, 27, at roughly the same time the Oklahoma bombers conceived their plan. Gray is the foster brother of Kevin Harris, the Identity rebel acquitted with Randy Weaver of the murder of a deputy U.S. marshal in the shootout at Weaver's cabin in northern Idaho in 1992.

Alexi Erlanger, another familiar face at Aryan Nations gatherings, hails from Buffalo, New York, Timothy McVeigh's stomping grounds. Erlanger was Nazi to the bone, the leader of the Liberation Movement of the German Reich, a bridge to the survivors of Germany's Nazi confederacy known as the *Kameradenwerk,* or Odessa. Ladislas Farago reported in *Aftermath* that in 1973 a German-American journal called *Die Brucke* "proudly announced that Alexi Erlanger of the Buffalo chapter was heading a drive to bring two 'famous German war heroes' to the U.S.A. for a visit of our military institutions and our German community. One of the invited guests was Colonel Hans Ulrich Rudel. The other was Colonel Otto Skorzeny."

Hans Rudel, the German ace and postwar founder of an aircraft factory in Argentina, is a ramrod of the postwar Nazi "refugee" underground, a world spokesman of the neo-Nazi movement, a Mother Theresa to fugitives of the Hitler era.

Otto Skorzeny, the 6′4″ hulk of an SS commando, was trained in assassination and terrorist tactics. He was among the very first Nazi officers recruited by the budding CIA. During the war, he rescued Mussolini from his jailers and kidnapped East European politicians who refused to collaborate with invading Germans. His postwar career included the running of ratline operations for Nazis escaping via Spain and Syria. "Both the Odessa and die Spinne SS escape organizations," Christopher Simpson observes, "revolved in large part around the personality—and the myth—of Otto Skorzeny."

A member of the network that survives "Hitler's Commando" told an interviewer in 1981 that the "Nazi International" had infiltrated Texaco, Resorts International and Lockheed, among other major federally-subsidized corporations.

Tim McVeigh, the migratory hawk, lived in Kingman, Arizona, home of the Hephzibah Ranch and its Christian Identity proprietor, Jack Maxwell Oliphant, ex-convict, Mojave County militia leader, and with Butler a co-conspirator in the original plot to blow up the federal building in Oklahoma City. The ranch is 20 miles off the main road.

Oliphant has worried local lawmen since he moved to the Arizona mountains over a decade ago. From primitive training camps near Kingman and Flagstaff, the *Arizona Republic* reported on December 21, 1986 that a contingent of Patriots intermingled with the Order and Aryan Nations. The newspaper identified one Arizona Patriot as a member of Posse Comitatus, the Christian

Identity tax-protest group. (Other insidious links have been forged by this native fascist organization. In a videotape distributed by anti-abortionists, leaders of violent opposition to the clinics appear with Bryan Dale of Posse Commitatus.)

Oliphant's brigade, the Arizona Patriots, has taken refuge in the past few years in a morbid cloud of secrecy. One witness in the grand jury hearings claims that McVeigh mingled with Oliphant's mountain men. Kingman residents emphasize that local Patriots are *outsiders, clearly not from the area.* Oliphant, who shot off his right arm in 1977 while handling a shotgun, has a demonstrated penchant for ultra-violence. From the *News and Observer:*

> Kingman is a hotbed for paramilitary activity and if he mixed with militias here, he almost certainly mixed with the Arizona Patriots, said Bernell Lawrence, a former law officer who ran surveillance on the group's activities before 1992....
>
> In 1983, Oliphant bought 160 acres in the mountains from Tod Becker, a local real estate agent whose family owned the property, according to Becker.
>
> Almost immediately, men wearing military fatigues were sighted on Oliphant's land conducting desert warfare training.
>
> Oliphant founded the Arizona Patriots and made no secret of his paramilitary activities, said Lawrence, who watched the ranch first as a Mohave County sheriff's deputy, then as part of an area anti-narcotics unit and finally as a Department of Public Safety officer.
>
> The people who trained with Oliphant were typically not locals.
>
> In 1987, Oliphant and two fellow Patriots devised a plan to hold up an armored car that carried money to and from Laughlin, the cash-rich gambling town across the Colorado River in Nevada, according to statements from federal investigators at the time. One of the members of the group, who was unwilling to take part in the heist, went to the FBI and told of the plot. When agents in helicopters raided Oliphant's ranch in 1987, they also found plans to blow up the nearby Hoover Dam.
>
> Oliphant and two other Patriots pled guilty to conspiracy. Clutching a worn Bible at the hearing to enter his pleas, Oliphant acknowledged that money from the planned robbery was to be used to "build a compound for the Identity Movement" on his property, according to news accounts of the sentencing. The Identity Movement is associated with white supremacists who believe Jews are the root of evil in society, according to the FBI's case. Among the allegations against Oliphant and his co-defendants was that they intended to stop the armored car and use explosives to blow it open.
>
> Oliphant served a short prison term, then returned to his ranch and has not shown signs of restarting the Identity Movement, Becker said.

Opinions differ on whether the Patriots remain active on Oliphant's ranch today. Lawrence believes the group still trains at Hephzibah Ranch, but that in recent years the group became much more secretive.

Oliphant's desert brigade planned to pull an armored car heist and launder the proceeds in Las Vegas casinos. Two men who'd been charged in 1985 with selling Uzi submachine guns to undercover agents were also rounded up.

The Patriot Movement takes its direction from Christian Identity propagandists, strident "constitutionalists" all, most with backgrounds in military intelligence, including Mark Koernke, the Enola Gay of ultra-rightwing conspiracy theorists, Bill Cooper, Bo Gritz and Linda Thompson.

The leadership has included the likes of John Salvi, a rabid militia footsoldier from Florida accused of killing two abortion clinic staffers in Boston in December, 1994.

Francisco Duran, wrestled into submission after squeezing off a few rounds at the Clinton White House, ran with a militia in Colorado. Police found occult literature on the front seat of Duran's car, according to the *San Francisco Chronicle,* possibly originating in the cabalistic fringe of the Identity movement. The occult is often found in combination with mind control in the covert operation arm of virtual government.

In 1994, the following organizations issued alerts on the threat posed by white supremacists mixing with the Patriots: the Southern Poverty Law Center, Planned Parenthood, The Coalition for Human Dignity, the Center for Democratic Renewal, the Montana Human Rights Network and the Association of National Security Alumni, among others.

The Iran-Contra Players and the CIA's War on America

McVeigh's social circle—strutting fundamentalist Identity rebels and politically-programmed Patriots—led the press to assume that others had joined in the plot. The day after the bombing, the *New York Times* offered that right-wing militias were not believed "to have the technical expertise to engage in bombings like the one today," only to report on the very same page that a fertilizer bomb is so "cheap and easy" to construct, "anyone" can do it.

The press has speculated at length on the bombers' probable motives. That speculation has been accepted as fact, but a vengeful commemoration of the Waco and Weaver fiascos have not been confirmed as motives.

Another probable reason for the destruction in Oklahoma was offered by the Nazi Party itself.

On April 20, 1995, mailing list subscribers of the American National Socialist Worker's Party received a copy of the "Official ANSWP Statement Regarding the OKC Bombing." The statement noted that the Secret Service and much-despised BATF were investigating Gary Lauck of Lincoln, Nebraska, leader of the domestic NSDAP and the most prolific distributor of racist propaganda to neo-Nazis in Germany. With Lauck's European arrest, "U.S. officials have been doing extensive surveillance of Lauck's contemporaries in Oklahoma, Kansas, Nebraska and north Texas. These surveillance activities were being coordinated out of the OKC offices, according to our sources."

Furthermore, "the OKC office of *the ATF had plans to serve search warrants* 'by the beginning of Summer' on several well-known white supremacists."

But the warrants were never issued.

Agents investigating Aryan Nations were headquartered at the Alfred Murrah Federal Building. Evidence was stored there. The investigation may explain, as the *New York Daily News* reported on May 1, precisely why "Feds Rescue Documents, not People." Within hours of the bombing, the *News* discovered, "some rescue workers were stopped from searching for survivors while federal officials removed boxes of documents. 'You'd think they would have let their evidence and files sit at least until the last survivor was pulled out,' one angry rescue worker told the *News.*

"The worker and a firefighter said that 10 to 12 hours after the 9 AM blast on April 19, federal officials began limiting the number of rescue workers in the building to a dozen, confining them largely to the lower right side of the battered structure. Meanwhile, *40 to 50 federal agents* spent much of the night carrying boxes from the floors occupied by federal DEA and the BATF."

Was there a connection between the investigation of neo-Nazis in the southwest and the bombing? The contents of the files were not divulged, but federal agents told reporters they were "looking into the possibility that alleged bomber Timothy McVeigh and his accomplices had targeted the nine-story building in an effort to destroy DEA or ATF investigation files."

Acquaintances of McVeigh told reporters that Timothy McVeigh, like Billy Doyle, Senator Phil Gramm's Nazi cause celebré, supported himself by peddling methamphetamines. McVeigh ran his drug concession in Kingman, Arizona. Ralph McPeak, a Kingman resident and friend of McVeigh's, told the *Los Angeles Times:* "When I met him [last year], he was *wired up.* He couldn't stand still." McPeak and his estranged wife said in separate interviews that some of the same people who had frequented the house also designed and detonated explosives. Two of the acquaintances fled when a fertilizer and fuel oil bomb damaged their house. They accused "McVeigh or his associates in the *drug trade.*"

McVeigh traveled widely, always with a billfold crammed full of cash. He had no visible means of support. Drugs may explain the financing of McVeigh's whirlwind Gypsy tour around the country.

And then there were the syringes found by McVeigh and Nichols on their food trays during confinement at El Reno. Were the syringes a warning?

The *San Francisco Examiner* published a fascinating story from independent sources implicating the warden in El Reno prison:

> AUG. 28, 1995
>
> The warden of the federal prison holding the two Oklahoma City bombing suspects says the inmates are not at risk despite a report that syringes were found on their food trays.
>
> Warden R.G. Thompson told the *Daily Oklahoman* on Monday that security at the El Reno Federal Correctional Institution is "not at all" in jeopardy. He said the controversy was "an internal personnel matter" and refused further comment.
>
> The Muskogee *Daily Phoenix* reported that Charles Mildner, chief correctional supervisor at the prison, was suspended with pay after he ordered that only one officer be allowed to handle food trays for bombing suspects Timothy McVeigh and Terry Nichols.
>
> Mildner's supervisors revoked the order, his attorney, David Wilson, told the newspaper.
>
> Mildner established the policy after syringes were found on food trays going into the unit where McVeigh and Nichols are held, Wilson said.
>
> Contraband was found again on the trays after Mildner's order was countermanded and inmates had access to the trays, Wilson said.
>
> "What would happen if one of those two inmates were to die inside the prison?"
>
> Even though Mildner is a member of management, he has the support of Local 171 of the American Federation of Government Employees Council of Prison Locals, whose members total more than 95 percent of the 430 rank-and-file employees at the prison. Union members planned to hold a rally in support of Mildner Monday at the El Reno city park and to picket the prison on Tuesday.

A sensitive investigation of Nazi activity and drugs was allegedly underway in Oklahoma City. If the building was destroyed, in part, to bury evidence of virtual government involvement in the distribution of drugs, it's certain that a representative from this murky milieu would step forward to float disinformation and divert attention from higher-ups.

Who should surface immediately after the bombing but a chorus of "National Security Experts" drawn from hundreds of propagandists squatting in the blinds of the corporate press.

The most strident terrorism "expert" consulted by the media was Vincent Cannistraro, the former CIA officer who ran covert ops for the NSC during the Iran-Contra debacle with its cocaine backdrop. In 1991, he told the *San Francisco Chronicle* that sinister "environmentalists" had formed "clandestine cells" plotting to create technologies to diminish, even "eliminate" *the entire human race.*

Cannistraro performed a similar service for the NSC Contragate defendants by blaming the Gander crash on Iraqi terrorists. In fact, the plane was bearing a score of intelligence agents to the U.S. when it crashed in Newfoundland. Several of them had gathered damning information on John Singlaub, North and Pentagon/CIA chicanery abroad.

In December 1990, Gene Wheaton, formerly an investigator for the Christic Institute, concluded a probe of the Arrow Air jet crash with the comment, "the official version is a cover-up, and the Canadian and U.S. government officials who are responsible have been criminally negligent or worse." On board had been over 20 crack commandos from the Special Forces, identified on the passenger log as "warrant officers." Arrow Air itself was a CIA dummy front, and bore a ton of mystery cargo when the jet and its 256 passengers crashed.

Wheaton found that Arrow had transported arms from Israel to Iran on North's behalf as part of the arms-for-hostages swap. The mid-flight explosion was a retaliatory strike by the Iranians for a swindle perpetrated by the Reagan administration's pugnacious Oliver North, Wheaton says.

Immediately after the Oklahoma bombing, the same spin doctors who muddied the water of such CIA misadventures as Jonestown and Iran-Contra hauled out the fertilizer.

Admiral Stansfield Turner, former director of the CIA, currently a director of Monsanto and a public affairs officer at the University of Maryland, suggested that it's time to "reassess the nature and extent of anti-terror measures." (As CIA director, Turner once spoke this way about the Soviet Union to scare up operating funds from Congress.) "We have to decide what to do with the FBI and other agencies [to] ward this kind of thing off in the future," said Turner, who foresaw the inevitable "trade-off between [terrorist] intrusions and our personal freedom."

Frank Keating, governor of Oklahoma, echoed Turner's sentiments. But then Keating himself is a career intelligence operative and a solid "conservative" Republican. Keating earned his B.A. in history from Georgetown University in

1966. His resumé notes that his "distinguished public service career began as an FBI agent, where he investigated New Left terrorist activities, bombings and bank robberies on the west coast." After a term as assistant district attorney in Tulsa, Keating won a seat in the state House of representatives in 1972. In 1986, President Reagan offered him the position of Assistant Secretary of the Treasury, in which capacity he supervised Interpol and the BATF. Back in Oklahoma, he served as associate attorney general and presided over the federal prison system. His wife, Cathy Keating, is a consultant to *U.S. News & World Report.*

One trail to Oklahoma bumps against Bill Clinton and the CIA-Mena drug scandal. The Agency's London Station Chief, Cord Meyer, recruited Clinton, then a Rhodes student in the UK, into the fold. The dimpled spy and and current resident of the White House has since been dragged into the muck at Mena, one of the largest aircraft refitting facilities in the country, situated just across the Oklahoma border, and may have figured in the interagency probe of regional drug operations.

As governor, Clinton failed to investigate allegations of drug running in Mena. Funds earmarked by the state legislature for an investigation of CIA activity in Arkansas disappeared under Clinton's watch.

Federal agents in Oklahoma City were not the only ones investigating drug movements in the southwest. In 1995, Gene Wheaton investigated the theft of 32 military aircraft, and was drawn to familiar territory. Wheaton was at one time an affiliate of North's. The investigator is mentioned in the disgraced NSC aide's notebooks, first as a potential ally to the contra supply effort, later as a bothersome whistle-blower. The same culprits, he said, who flew massive cocaine shipments from South America to Mena under Reagan "were running things now. It's a continuation of Iran-Contra. Everybody thinks Iran-Contra quit with Ollie North and Secord being exposed. But it's actually got bigger because the media stopped looking at it."

Some of the mud flicked at Clinton originates with Arkansan Larry Nichols, a CIA veteran of the contra guns-for-drugs network. Nichols fought under John Singlaub in Vietnam, and reported to the World Anti-Communist League official during the Nicaraguan contra war.

Singlaub is an anti-Communist of the 1950s genus, and it was during that decade, as deputy CIA station chief in South Korea, that his political pathologies found an outlet. During the Korean war he fell in with a circle of Seoul's most powerful politicians, spies and industrialists. His sole ambition in life since appears to be fund-raising to destroy Communism. In Vietnam, Singlaub organized the dreaded Phoenix Program under his Special Operations Group, a bund of 10,000 troops unleashed in the south to conduct covert raids, assassinations of Viet Minh by the tens of thousands, psychological warfare and sabotage missions.

Ollie North was one of John Singlaub's second lieutenants.

Claire Sterling, a veteran CIA propagandist, writes that Singlaub "came to be regarded with awe by a whole generation of military men and intelligence officers, many of whom shared his conservative views about the way things should be in Asia. Around him grew a following that developed into *an infrastructure at the Pentagon and CIA*."

This infrastructure is represented in the OK bombing case by Michael Tigar, the attorney representing Terry Nichols. In the 60s and 70s, Tigar was employed by the law firm of Williams, Wadden & Stein. He reported to Edward Bennett Williams, the head of the firm, a Beltway attorney long on intimate terms with the CIA. Williams often referred to Tigar as his "most brilliant protégé."

The law firm sprang into existence to cater to the same interagency intelligence underground implicated in drug distribution, mind control and by all appearances a U-Haul of exploding compost in Oklahoma City. A senior partner of the firm was Brendon Sullivan, the high-strung legal phenomenon who represented Oliver North during the Congressional Iran-Contra hearings. Williams, a Jesuit, was twice offered the post of CIA director. He refused (possibly because he was already a *de facto* CIA functionary) and by refusing shaped history—Gerald Ford gave the job to George Bush instead. Robert Maheu, the CIA hit man, attended Holy Cross with Williams and was a close friend. In 1958, the famed attorney paired Robert Maheu with Los Angeles mobster Johnny Rosselli to plot against Cuban premier Fidel Castro.

The Williams' client roster has included Joseph McCarthy, Mafia don Frank Costello, Jimmy Hoffa, Frank Sinatra, Armand Hammer and John Connally. He was general counsel to Georgetown University, which has long maintained a symbiotic relationship with the CIA. Junk bond magnate Michael Milken, a client of the firm, openly wept at Williams' funeral in 1988.

Michael Tigar came to the firm after resigning his position as a Supreme Court clerk. He represented some extremely high-powered clients for a journeyman attorney. It was Tigar who coached Bobby Baker, the LBJ aide imprisoned for tax fraud and influence peddling in 1967, before Senate appearances. Tigar defended John Connally when the former Texas governor was accused of pocketing a bribe. Connally was acquitted. He rewarded Tigar with a prize bull. The beast was packed off to Fidel Castro.

One San Francisco reporter suggests that Michael Tigar, with his pricey wardrobe and trademark crewcut, looks "more like a young Republican than the spell-binding firebrand he was a dozen years ago." The press has made much of his radical days at Berkeley and representation of Angela Davis, but he usually caters to the Right. One of Tigar's most controversial clients was John Demjanjuk, the accused Nazi war criminal. Tigar also represented Clayton Jackson, the California lobbyist convicted for money laundering, racketeering and offering a bribe to state senator Alan Robbins.

He agreed to counsel Terry Nichols at the request of three federal judges.

Like his mercurial attorney, Terry Nichols was turned out by the same national security bund behind the Iran-Contra swaps, Mena and the Gander bombing, not to mention a series of foreign coups, death squad outrages, drug imports and a long history of homicidal covert operations.

Terry Nichols hid a dagger under his compost-smeared cloak. Lana Padilla, his first wife, called a news conference on July 13 after visiting him in prison. She said that Nichols made frequent trips to the Philippines—so many, in fact, that the farmer from Kansas had charged $40,000 in air fares to his credit cards. Ms. Padilla also claimed that Tim McVeigh footed the bill for a 1989 trip. After his arrest, federal agents discovered that Terry Nichols had a locker full of gold and silver bullion stored in Las Vegas. Nichols, she told reporters, was given the precious metals in November, 1994, while on a junket to the Philippines, by a party unknown.

Padilla said that Nichols refused to take Mary Fay, his second wife, a mail-order bride, along when he traveled, though her family lived in Cebu—a well-known terrorist haunt in the Philippines.

Before departing for his last trip, Nichols told Lana, "I might not be coming back." He traveled with a gun, she said—and managed to pass through airport security gates. Before he left, he entrusted her with $20,000 for McVeigh in case he never returned. He did and he was noticeably on edge,

"*Those* people can *kill* you," he told Lana with a shudder, "I'm *never* going back there again." Who are the deadly mysterians who hired Nichols to perform secret missions in far-off lands? Lana Padilla suggested they were Islamic terrorists.

The U.S. has a long, sordid history of intrigue in the islands. Islamic terrorists make their home there. The investigation of the World Trade Center bombing was not as painstaking as it might have been because sandbags were repeatedly dropped in the path of FBI investigators by operatives of the CIA. One veteran FBI agent, in a *Village Voice* story that appeared on March 30, 1993, claimed that Sheikh Abdel Rahman was a core conspirator. "It was no accident that the Sheikh got a visa and that he's still in the country," one veteran FBI agent complains. "He's here under the banner of national security, the State Department, the NSA and the CIA. I haven't seen a lone-gunman theory advocated [with this vigor] since the John F. Kennedy assassination."

Jack Blum, a former investigator for the Senate Foreign Relations subcommittee, was appalled at CIA-terrorist interactions that surfaced after the bombing: "One of the big problems here is that many suspects in the World Trade Center bombing were associated with the Mujahedeen. There are components of our government that are absolutely disinterested in following that path because it leads back to people we supported in the Afghan war." "We" are a deep cover infantry of counter-insurgent drug smugglers, arms dealers, money launderers and professional liars.

There is a bridge spanning the World Trade Center and the Oklahoma City federal building. It is in the Philippines.

And it's made of gold—Japanese and Nazi gold buried in underground vaults once used to imprison and torture American prisoners of war and local insurgents. Approximately 1,000 tons of the loot was liberated by Ferdinand Marcos before his ouster. Billions of dollars worth were shipped overseas by American intelligence agents and the Mafia. Much of the horde was cabbaged away in a high-security, subterranean storage caché buried under the Zurich airport. This vault was once used to conceal European gold from Hitler's SS scavengers. Fifty years later, some of the same bullion has found its way into the campaign coffers of ultra-conservative political candidates in the U.S., according to the *Las Vegas Sun.*

But Marcos didn't recover the lion's share of the pelf. A six-month series in the *Sun* reported in 1993 that Marcos abandoned thousands of tons of gold hidden in his homeland. Gary Thompson, then the newspaper's managing editor, and journalist Steve Kanigher published photo-copies of gold certificates from Credit Suisse, deposit records from the Union Bank of Switzerland, the correspondence of Corazon Aquino and letters to Reagan administration officials documenting witness accounts that lackeys of the CIA and Army Special Forces carted off an unknown quantity of the bullion. They followed one lead after another, flying around the world for eleven months to piece together an elaborate story of political corruption and greed. The gold extraction was sanctioned by Lt. General Robert Schweitzer, President Reagan's senior military liaison to the National Security Council, and Lt. General Daniel Graham, then director of the DIA and a key consultant on the Strategic Defense Initiative. Schweitzer and retired General John Singlaub, the aforementioned veteran of the Iran-Contra affair, joined the board of Nippon Star, a Japanese conglomerate with branches in the Philippines. As they explained to two plaintive Nippon Star consultants, "the company is going out of business—the National Security Council is *taking over.*"

Among those recruited to run the intelligence front was retired Army Colonel Dan Myers, a former aide to Watergate-hit-man-*cum*-radio-celebrity G. Gordon Liddy. Eldon "Dan" Cummings, a Pentagon staffer, was named vice president.

Schwartz's ambitious aide, Oliver North, was already dabbling in the gold trade. In 1985, he attempted to sell 44 tons of Marcos bullion, worth $465 million, on the black market. He blithely suggested skimming $5 million to finance the Nicaraguan contra war, but the deal fell through when North, true to form, stiffed the Israeli middlemen on the Marcos payroll.

Tapes and documents implicating American officials in the gold transfers were withheld from the Iran-Contra committee by Major General Colin Powell, Defense Secretary Caspar Weinberger and William Odom, director of the NSA. "It wasn't so much the mention of gold that concerned them," say Thompson and Kanigher. "It was Marcos talking (on tape) about contributions to U.S. presidential campaigns and the use of the gold proceeds to fund illegal arms deals."

To extract the metal, Ray Cline, then deputy director of the CIA, organized a working group that included a chief regulator of the S&L industry. Citibank was drawn into the operation to negotiate the claims on a Philippine gold horde secreted in the Bahamas. NASA pilots drew up a plan to transport the bullion.

Bo Gritz, the Idaho militia leader who ran for president with David Duke as his running mate, also traveled to the Philippines to participate in Singlaub's gold dig. Gritz claims that he struck out—but the Special Forces veteran has been known to spin a plausible denial or two in his time.

Either Lana Padilla was right about Terry Nichols' mystery trips abroad, or she is a scholar of national security studies with an emphasis on black operations. Her reference to terrorists from the Middle East was hardly far-fetched. And General Schweitzer's crew from the NSC hired a team of attorneys to peddle gold recovered in the Philippines. Much of it was sold off to Middle Eastern terrorists. Some of them *have* indeed been linked to the World Trade Center bombing, according to the *Sun* exposé.

It is not at all unlikely that Terry Nichols should have had dealings with the rabid foreign clients of the national security sector. McVeigh had intelligence contacts as well. In McCurtain, Oklahoma a major flap erupted over a telephone call McVeigh placed a few days before the bombing. The local *Gazette* reported on July 14, 1996, "phone records indicate that on April 5, a call was made to Elohim City from a motel room registered to Timothy McVeigh." Elohim City is a "Christian" settlement near the Arkansas-Oklahoma border—and the burial sire of the venomous Richard Wayne Snell, executed for his part in the original Oklahoma City bombing plot. As it happens, two calls were placed by McVeigh to Elohim City's director of security, Andreas Carl Strassmeier. The FBI maintains that Strassmeier was a paid informant assigned to "infiltrate" the Identity Aryans at the encampment. Officially, Strassmeier was a lowly "informant," but his immediate entry into the heart of the federal intelligence underground suggests he was a functionary, a guiding light of the reactionary cult.

The Identity Nazis at Elohim City received military instruction in the use of small firearms from Strassmeier. And one witness in the case has identified him as the mysterious stranger who rode with McVeigh in the Mercury Marquis, which trailed the Ryder truck through Oklahoma City.

After the *Gazette* story appeared, Strassmeier's attorney, Kirk Lyons, a legal champion of the white supremecist cause, wrote in a newsletter that Strassmeier had fled the country, his "escape" from "death threats" conducted by Germany's "elite" counter-terrorist squad, GSG-9, via Mexico, Paris and Frankfurt. He arrived unaccosted in Berlin.

The *Gazette* detailed Strassmeier's background: "The son of [one of] Europe's most able and influential politicians, Andreas began 'visiting' the U.S. in 1988. Up to that time, the then 23-year-old German army officer served in the Panzer Grenadiers.... Srassmeier's father, Gunter, had risen to the position of Secretary of State to Berlin.... Strassmeier junior has admitted to journalists that his military assignments sometimes include *covert projects* and training... In the *London Sunday Telegraph,* Strassmeier told interviewers that he settled in the U.S. in 1989 on a 'special assignment' he was promised by the U.S. Justice Department...."

When he disembarked, posing as a tourist, Herr Strassmeier was quickly taken under the wing of Vincent Petruskie, a retired Air Force colonel and former intelligence operative for the Office of Special Investigations. The colonel set out to find empolyment for the German "tourist." Publicly, Petruskie has admitted that he sought only "odd jobs" for Strassmeier, who had his eye on a job at the DEA. Though he had no green card, the German was blessed with a Tennessee driver's license and a social security number.

"Strassmeier," the *London Telegraph* reports, "settled down and said he was acting as a middle man for an old family friend, Col. Petruskie, who he also described as 'an ex-CIA guy that my father has known since the Cold War.'"

In 1992, Strassmeier committed a traffic offense and his car was impounded by the Oklahoma highway patrol. Inside, police found a valise full of government documents. Strassmeier called in his cavalry—the State Department and the Governor's office phoned police to urge his release, as did an unnamed caller who argued that Strassmeier—his proof of citizenship notwithstanding—enjoyed the protection of diplomatic immunity.

The client list of Kirk Lyons, Strassmeier's attorney and co-sponsor in the United States, include (as do many of the arch-conservatives in McVeigh's entourage) the Identity Nazis of Elohim City, home of the original bombing plot that ended in the execution of Richard Snell and his burial in the shell-shocked hills of Arkansas.

Military-Intelligence Connections

Patriot leaders descend from the Nazi-anchored Identity movement that formed around William Potter Gale and a clutch of like-minded individuals who served under General Douglas MacArthur during the last world war—with one notable exception: Colonel William Neblett, an officer in MacArthur's entourage. In *Pentagon Politics,* published in 1953, Noblett summarized his feelings about American covert military policy:

> The power of the military must be curbed at once. To allow the professional military to control us any longer will mean the end of our republican form of government. If the Pentagon and certain politicians can keep the fear of Communistic aggression fresh in the public's mind for a few years longer, a 'Prussianized type of army' will be achieved.

The leadership of the Patriots have roots in the "Prussianized" military intelligence community. Between domestic Nazis, Patriots and the clandestine "services," there is much commingling. Members of the Wisconsin's Free Militia may drift over to the U.S. Taxpayer's Party, a "Constitutionalist" cadré run by radical right organizer Howard Phillips, a career CIA neo-conservative, and vice versa.

In 1976, a flap erupted at Camp Pendleton with the discovery that the KKK had heavily infiltrated the base. Several black Marines were assaulted by whites sporting the Klan insignia, and a cross was burned nearby. Corporal Daniel Bailey, Jr., an Exalted Cyclops, informed the local press that Marines recruited by the Klan numbered about a hundred. But the Corps managed to contain the story—until a group of black Marines beat up a congregation of white men. At the court-martial, the accused GIs testified that commanders at Camp Pendleton had ignored the flaunting of Klan regalia and assaults on blacks by KKK Marines. Pro-Nazi literature materialized on the base.

Hardline Identity Nazis mix freely with the militias. The Michigan group is friendly with the Militia of Montana, led by John Trochmann, a featured speaker at the Aryan Nations compound in Idaho in 1990.

Trochmann claims to have visited the Nazi enclave on "four or five occasions." But Loretta Ross, research director of the anti-fascist Center for Democratic Renewal in Atlanta, noted in her Congressional testimony on July 11, 1995, that Trochmann "frequently visited the Aryan Nations neo-Nazi paramilitary compound in Idaho and was a featured speaker there in 1990, although he claims to have merely spoken on morality. But according to Aryan Nations founder Richard Butler, Trochmann visited the compound many times and even helped write the group's code of conduct."

When Trochmann appeared at a post-bombing Congressional probe, the *Nation* quipped that if Senator Arlen Specter had been half as hard on the militia movement as he was on Anita Hill, his recent Judiciary Subcommittee hearing on the militias might have truly discredited the radical right. Instead, the inquiry became a soapbox for the 'patriots' rather than the critical forum that was so badly needed." Specter was provided with a letter from Aryan Nations documenting Trochmann's close relationship with the leaders of the organization, yet his gentle inquisitors in Washington neglected to ask him about it.

The Michigan Militia was thrust into the roving media spotlight by reports that Tim McVeigh had once been employed by the oratorical Mark Koernke, the leading light of the group. Koernke is a veteran of the 78th Division of the Army Reserve in Livonia, Michigan. His star in the Patriots began to rise when he traded on his self-proclaimed military intelligence background. He often refers to himself as an "intelligence analyst" and "counter-intelligence coordinator" with a "top-secret clearance."

He co-founded the Michigan Militia in April, 1994, with Reverend Norman Olsen, a Baptist preacher, abortion foe, military veteran and "intelligence specialist." The cadré has since become the largest in the country, boasting to have recruited some 12,000 footsoldiers.

The April 22, 1995 edition of the stridently anti-fascist *Germany Alert* noted that the Michigan Militia "is organized closely along the lines of the established German neo-Nazi organizations."

Koernke has boasted of commanding two "special-warfare" brigades that trained Army personnel in "foreign warfare and tactics." These claims may be exaggerated, but Koernke did in fact attend the Army's intelligence school at Fort Huachuca in Arizona. He returned to Michigan an E-5 specialist with a G-2 (security) section of a peacetime Reserve unit. Koernke's particular brand of fulmination against bastions of the looming "world order," with emphasis on the Council of Foreign Relations and the Trilaterals, smack of the dark arts of propaganda and psychological warfare, the curriculum of any self-respecting spy school.

At a militia conference in Florida, Koernke introduced himself as a "military intelligence advisor for the militias" with tentacles reaching across the country. He boasted of supplying his troops with information about "United Nations troop movements and federal government activity."

Mark from Michigan has boasted freely to friends that he was once employed as a "provocateur." For whom?

Provocateuring at the behest of an unnamed branch of government accounts for his role in a crazed scheme to blow up a local National Guard base in January, 1995. The bombing plot was conceived when some 70 recruits of the Michigan Militia Corps convened at a truck-stop near Detroit. The brigade was outraged by photographs of Russian tanks en route to Camp Grayling via railway flatcars. They interpreted the photos as proof of Russian troop movements under UN control launching an invasion on American soil.

A few days later, about 20 militia men met at a farm near Leonard, Michigan for their weekly combat training. Militia leaders laid out maps and a plan to lay siege to the camp.

"Let's go blow up those tanks and kill those bastards who put them there," one brigade leader urged.

From a summary of the planned assault on the military base:

> Contact all the brigades in the state and storm Camp Grayling, killing anyone who attempts to defend the base and arresting anyone else who is left.
>
> Photograph, for historical purposes, all foreign equipment.
>
> Hunt down anyone involved in bringing in the foreign equipment and try them for war crimes in a revolutionary court, which denies the accused a chance for appeal. The accused would be executed as soon as possible.
>
> Hunt down all UN forces in the U.S.

The Michigan Militia has attempted to distance itself from Timothy McVeigh. The day after the blast, Koernke's regiment faxed out messages informing the world that one of the Nichols brothers had attended a meeting, but was tossed out for circulating tax resister material. But Branch Davidian Ron Cole, a Waco survivor who knows Koernke well and has met each of the bombing suspects at Patriot rallies, insists there was a close relationship. "Tax resister material is the *kindergarten* curriculum for beginner Patriots," Cole told the *Boulder Weekly.* "The idea that they would throw him out for that is *highly unlikely.* If people in the militia movement are going to tell lies, then let's at least make them believable."

The fringe of the lunatic fringe is monopolized by Bill Cooper, a Navy veteran and commander of an Arizona militia. Cooper preaches in his shortwave broadcasts that a secret government cabal has struck an alliance with a species of hominoid-saurus reptiles from space. This "serpent cult," he says, has granted the privileged, namely conspiratorial ranks of "Jesuit-Masonry," dominion over all terrestrial Gentile non-Masons.

Echoing Brig. Gen. Partin, Cooper attributes mass murder in Oklahoma City to the fulfillment of "the hidden agenda of the Communist/Socialist Internationale."

In *Kooks,* a compendium of American extremists, author Donna Kossy writes: "Cooper was born into a military family in 1943, and upon graduating high school in 1961 (in Japan) enlisted in the Air Force. During his more than ten years in both the Air Force and the Navy, he was an exemplary member, earning medals, and steadily taking on greater responsibility. Soon after enlisting, he was graced with a secret security clearance, and outfitted with a dosimeter, worked around "REAL atomic bombs" on a daily basis. He says that he was part of the elite of the Air Force."

By definition, intelligence agents are liars. Cooper's shortwave broadcasts are feasts of capricious political fantasy, yet his protégé and worshipful booster, Indiana militia leader Linda Thompson, who spent 14 years in Army uniform, once told an audience of rapt, highly-impressionable right-wing sod-busters: "If Bill Cooper is wrong, we're *all* in trouble."

In a *Village Voice* profile of Linda Thompson, author Adam Parfrey noted that she resembles "Madge the manicurist, and that is perhaps a source of her credibility among the Patriot common folk. But similarities to the lumpen proletariat end there. According to her resumé, Thompson served in the Army between 1974 and 1978, including a stint as 'Assistant to the U.S. Army Commanding General, NATO, Allied Forces Central Europe' with a 'cosmic Top Secret/Atomal security clearance.' Thompson's military career did not end with her honorable discharge in 1978, but continued for another decade in the Army reserve."

Her computer network bulletin board asks, "What is the address of your safe house?"

"For all of those who believed the claims that I'm an 'agent provocateur,'" she argues, "notice that the ONLY information about me is what I have put out, personally, on public record (when I was arrested)." Her logic recalls Ronald Reagan's explanation to the press regarding the Iran-Contra scandal, and her political thinking is equally suggestive of Alzheimer's. Where she once flogged prolifers (or "racists wanting more white babies to adopt"), Thompson, in a recent shortwave broadcast, sniffed, "I've always been against abortion."

To critics, she argued that turnabout was fair play. Thompson claimed she pivoted to oppose abortion after viewing ghastly photos of the medical procedure. She joined with one of the anti-choice movement's most pathological proponents, Reverend Matt Trewhella, pastor of the Mercy Seat Christian Church in Milwaukee and leader of the "Missionaries of the Pre-born National." The Missionaries are among the most radical "rescue" operations in the country. Their tactics include blockades and invasions of abortion clinics, lock-and-blocks and picketing campaigns. At a recent conference of anti-abortionists, Trewhella advised his congregation: "This Christmas, I want you to do the most loving thing—buy each of your children an SKS rifle and 500 rounds of ammunition."

The comments were made at the Wisconsin state convention of the U.S. Taxpayer's Party in May, 1994. His speech was taped secretly by staffers of Planned Parenthood at the convention. Trewhella, who has signed a document advocating the slaughter of doctors and the formation of militias around the issue of abortion, insisted, "Our government wants to disarm us! What should we do? We should do what thousands of people across the nation are doing—we should be forming militias." Pastor Trewhella asked parents who teach their children to play Pin-the-Tail-on-the-Donkey. "We need to start blindfolding them, sitting them down on the living room floor and saying: 'Now put that weapon together.'"

Some of the hottest rhetoric to come out of the Thompson camp is reserved for the Anti-Defamation League, which they consider the fountainhead of all sinister conspiracies. In one of her computer network alerts she insists:

> The ADL was the source of all LIES about militias, claiming militias were "racists."
>
> The ADL provided ALL the so-called experts who testified before Congress on militias.
>
> The ADL was the source for the lies about the Branch Davidians...

In Thompson's world, the ADL accounts for any tarnish on the reputations of the Davidians. Moreover ...

> The ADL-FBI alliance is destroying our country. It has taken over our media, taken over our congress, and its terrorist backers want the omnibus counter-terrorism bill passed by the FBI. ALLIED WITH THESE TERRORISTS, THEY WILL CONTROL THE COUNTRY!

She claims to be a perennial target of the government. Within a week of the decimation of the Alfred P. Murrah building, Thompson informed her computer network, "The FBI just threatened me." Why? Because she claimed to have information that a Japanese saboteur had infiltrated the Bureau to spy on the White House. The Justice Department, she alleged, was aware of the situation and was "trying to shut down all information about it. I called the FBI to give them this information and related what information I do have, and it was an instantaneous reaction, as if I am on to what is going on."

"What if McVeigh suddenly decides to give a statement," the FBI agent rejoindered, "and says he blew up the Oklahoma building because of Linda Thompson?" (McVeigh, in fact adored Thompson.) The militia leader regarded this as a "clear threat" that the FBI intended to indict her, but the comment could be interpreted as a simple observation that her violent rhetoric had egged McVeigh on.

Like McVeigh, Thompson claims to be a victim of remote electronic harassment:

> **GOVERNMENT WANTS ME DEAD** BY THE ASSOCIATED PRESS, 5-14-95
> INDIANAPOLIS – A national militia leader arrested last week ... made claims about people wanting to kill her, according to court documents.
>
> Court records show attorney Linda Thompson told a deputy at the Marion County Prosecutor's Office that the government was trying to kill her with radio frequency weapons.
>
> Her behavior was so alarming the deputy feared Thompson was going to shoot him or other workers in the office with the loaded .45-caliber handgun she wore in a holster, court documents stated.
>
> Thompson was arrested Thursday and charged Friday with battery on an officer, resisting law enforcement and disorderly conduct. A pretrial court hearing was set for next Friday morning in Marion Municipal Court.
>
> The incident Thursday began after Thompson went to the prosecutor's office

> and told Sheriff's Deputy Jeffrey Dunn she wanted to file battery and stalking charges against Richard Bottoms.
>
> Bottoms is a systems analyst for *Nuvo,* a weekly newspaper in Indianapolis, who has written about Thompson's militia activities. Thompson became irate when Dunn told her that she was not providing enough details to file charges against Bottoms, according to court documents.
>
> Thompson then began "yelling and screaming" and told Dunn that the people responsible for last month's bombing of the federal building in Oklahoma City were shooting her in the head with radio frequency weapons and already had killed six of her friends this way.

She lashes out at the FBI, derides gun control lobbyists, curses informants. But Thompson reserves her most corrosive venom for James 'Bo' Gritz. Both Bill Cooper and Gritz emerged on the radio talk show circuit in 1989, parroting public speakers of the Christic Institute at the height of the firm's La Penca lawsuit. The effect was to marginalize the group.

Gritz served four tours of duty in Vietnam. 'Bo' is a former chief of Congressional relations for the Defense Security Assistance Agency. In 1988, Col. Gritz and an associate pled guilty to shipping a quantity of plastic explosive by commercial airliner to train Afghan rebels in the Nevada desert. His counterinsurgency training of the Afghans began with his employment by the Pentagon's Intelligence Support Activity (ISA) group, a top-secret covert operations unit. The ISA was formed by General Shy Memey, then the Army's Chief of Staff, a unit so covert that even the Pentagon, CIA and White House claimed to be unaware of its existence until the unit was exposed by Gritz himself in 1982 Congressional testimony. In open hearings, Gritz let slip that his search for American POWs in Laos had support from "the Activity," a covert brigade with which Congress was completely unfamiliar. A barrage of questions followed.

Scott Barnes, a former CIA contract officer in Bakersfield, California, insists that Gritz, then working as an employee of Hughes Aircraft, claimed credit for Barnes's own attempts to document the imprisonment of American POWs in Southeast Asia. "Gritz," Thompson notes, "is a known FBI informant and has known connections to CIA" documented in her "Traitor File."

Gritz denies that he is Nazi, even a white supremacist, despite his unabashed praise of Identity:

> I believe that the Identity Christian Movement will continue to grow in this nation until it is able to stand self-sufficient in spite of the government....

> Basically the Zionists are taking over and we Christians are being formed into small pockets that have to go to camps twice a year to learn what's going on.... The enemy you face today is a Satanic overthrow where he would change the United States of America, a nation under God, into U.S.A. Incorporated with King George as chairman of the board, and a Zionist group that would rule over us as long as Satan might be on earth....
>
> I am telling you that he (God) has given us all that we need. He's given us ... the Identity Christian movement.

The blue-eyed ruler of the universe also created James Nichols, brother of Terry Nichols, accused co-conspirator. The Michigan farmer often describes anyone who doesn't travel with Israel's "lost tribes" as "sheeple," a common Identity put-down.

American Patriots and many militia groups, led by hired guns of the CIA and DoD, are waging war. "Sheeple," particularly liberals, are perceived as the enemy. This same scape-goating has resulted in massive destabilization, "secret" wars and wide-open conflict in every country on earth.

The United States is rapidly becoming the terminal battleground.

Sources

Many of the principal sources are cited in the text. A number of them are listed here, as are others not cited above.

Adams, James, *Secret Armies: The Full Story of S.A.S., Delta Force and Spetsnaz,* New York: Atlantic Monthly Press, 1987.

Anonymous, "Anti-Abortion Activist Pushes Forming Militias in Wisconsin," Knight-Ridder News Service, August 18, 1994.

Anonymous, "Oklahoma City Terror Suspects Linked to Nazis?" *Germany Alert,* extra edition, April 22, 1995.

Anonymous, "Washington: Arrests in Bomb Plot," Associated Press report, July 1, 1995.

ANSWP News Service, "Official ANSWP Statement Regarding the OKC Bombing," American National Socialist Workers' Party, Inc., April 20, 1995.

Business Editors, "Pro-Tech Monitoring: Crime Fighting Surveillance Tool," *Business Wire,* May 2, 1996.

Cash, J.D., McCurtain (Oklahoma) *Daily Gazette,* July 14 1996, p. 1.

Davidson, Keay, "60s Hero from UC to Defend Nichols," *San Francisco Examiner,* May 14, 1995.

Davis, Jayna (reporting), "OKC Blast Connected to International Terrorist?" KFOR-TV news broadcast, July 13, 1995.

Daily News staff writers, "FILES BEFORE VICTIMS—Rescuers: Feds Slowed Search," *New York Daily News,* May 1, 1995.

Dyurman, Dan, "Militia Goes Mainstream in Idaho," *Militia News from Idaho,* February 12, 1995.

Dyurman, Dan, "Rep. Helen Chenoweth: Poster Child of the Militia," *Militia News from Idaho,* June 25, 1995.

Edwards, Brad (reporter), "Did the Government Know About Bombing Before it Happened?" KFOR-TV news broadcast, August 10, 1995.

Eglin AFB Computer BBS, "Mammal Research Using Subminiature Telemetry" (on the RF tracking of dolphins by Air Force scientists utilizing monolithic chip modules and modified missile tracking equipment).

Farley, John, "The West is Wild Again—The Federal government is Faced with Localities Willing to Fight for what they Believe is Their Land," *Time* Domestic BBS, vol. 145: no. 11, March 20, 1995.

Hall, Andy, "Secret War 'Patriots' have Loose Ties to Rightists Nationwide," *Arizona Republic,* December 21, 1986.

Hamilton, Arnold, "Indictment of McVeigh, Nichols Reveals No Motive," *Dallas Morning News,* August, 11, 1995.

Janofsky, Michael, "Militia Plotted Assault on Military Base," *San Francisco Examiner,* June 25, 2995.

Jasper, William F., "OKC Bombing: Expert Analysis" (bio of Brig. Gen. Benton Partin), *The New American,* June 26, 1995.

Larson, Viola, "Identity: A 'Christian' Religion for White Racists," *Christian Research Journal,* Fall, 1992.

Laugesen, Wayne and Dyer, Joel, "Civil War: Militia Leaders Warn Government to Leave Them Alone," *Boulder Weekly,* vol. II: no. 35, April 27, 1995.

Moldea, Dan E., *Dark Victory: Ronald Reagan, MCA, and the Mob,* New York: Pengiun, 1986. (On E.B. Williams, Rosselli, etc.)

NASA public relations dept., "Joseph P. Allen (Ph.D.)" [biographical data concerning the former astronaut and Calspan president], Lyndon B. Johnson Space Center, Houston, Texas.

Sentar, Inc. company literature, from the firm's Internet BBS.

Smolowe, Jill, "Enemies of the State: America's 'patriots' have a tough list of demands: keep your hands off my land, my wallet—and my guns," *Time* Domestic BBS, vol. 145: No. 19, May 8, 1995.

Southern Poverty Law Center, "Early Warning Signs Pointed to Violence on April 19—Potential for Further Outbreaks Remains High," *Klanwatch Intelligence Report,* June, 1985.

Swaney, Mark, "Clinton/Bush: Co-Conspirators in CIA Drug Smuggling," Prevailing Winds Research: Santa Barbara, California, August 8, 1995.

Thomas, Evan, *The Man to See: Edward Bennett Williams, Ultimate Insider, Legendary Trial Lawyer,* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1991).

Thompson, Gary and Kanigher, Steve, "The Search for the Tiger's Treasure," *Las Vegas Sun,* April–December, 1993.

Van Biema, David, "Militias, the Message from Mark Koernke," *Time* Domestic BBS, vol. 145: no. 26, June 26, 1995.

Wallace, Bill, "Militia Tied to Blast Hates Gun Control—Leaders have Said it Might Come to War," *San Francisco Chronicle,* April 22, 1995.

Weiss, Philip, "Outcasts Digging in for the Apocalypse," *Time* Domestic BBS, vol. 145: no. 18, May 1, 1995.

Woods, Jim and Riepenhoff, Jill, "Plague Vials Found in Car: Lancaster Man Charged, Got Cultures through the Mail," *Columbus Dispatch,* May 13, 1995.

Witt, Howard, "Anatomy of an OK City Conspiracy Theory," *Chicago Tribune,* May 9, 1995.

Zeskind, Leonard, "The Smell of Yesteryear: Militias and White Supremacy," *The Body Politic,* May, 1995.

CIA Mind Control & the U.S. Postal Service

By Vincent Fontana & Alex Constantine

At a Congressional inquiry in September, 1992, an angry witness to mass murder at a Royal Oak post office charged the panel with conducting a "controlled investigation" to leave "the impression that efforts are underway to stop this tragic carnage."

He added that the investigation was not an effective response and did not lead to a cessation of violence ...

> *We are in need of more than political responses which produce nothing more than window dressing. Such efforts have led to:*
>
> - *Blaming the victims, declaring them to be mentally unstable.*
> - *Review of a whistleblower's background, military record and prior work behavior.*
> - *Hot lines to permit employees to report "unusual behavior."*
> - *Blaming union officials and supervisors.*
> - *The convening of a joint task force to make written pronouncements that "postal workers oppose violence."*
>
> "Violence in the U.S. Postal Service," Congressional Hearing, Royal Oak, Michigan

The postal service has long had a cozy relationship with the intelligence "services." Former CIA employees are often granted appointments as postmasters. It's a little known fact that the system has its own built-in intelligence agency known to bug employee restrooms illegally, and the internal agency has spied on the American Postal Workers and Letter Carriers unions. The service uses its own covert intelligence network to harass whistle-blowers and sow disinformation about them.

It has also been used for human experimentation without the knowledge or consent of employees.

In 1977, after the Watergate break-in, it surfaced in the Select Intelligence Subcommittee investigation that the CIA was illegally spying and conducting field mind control experiments on unwitting subjects. The organic mysteries of the mind were decoded by CIA scientists with illegal drugs, electronic hypnosis, sleep deprivation, subliminal suggestions over controlled radio and television stations, direct microwave communication to the auditory pathways, the remote transmission of images and electronic manipulation of emotions.

> There are subliminal and brainwashing techniques by which the subconscious of the individual is invaded and his thoughts or personality influenced without his consent. These influences can be smuggled in past the customs of the senses. Methods of which I am aware include ultrasonic waves. These are inaudible to the conscious sense, like the 'silent' dog-whistle. Similarly subliminal messages can be concealed in films or television programs. Of course, such means are banned, but anyone sufficiently ingenious, or some central authority seeking to indoctrinate, could succeed.
>
> Experiments have also demonstrated that it is possible to hypnotize persons with television and radio.
>
> Surveillance Technology, U.S. Senate Hearing

Implants—placed in the body by *human* experimenters—are another means of tracking or controlling a subject, according to the *San Francisco Examiner* (November 8, 1995):

> VENTURA—He didn't want his name used. He's a California surgeon, and he's scared of repercussions.
>
> "I'd probably be ostracized, I'd be criticized, maybe I'd even lose my license," he said. "People with credibility who put themselves forward in this field could wind up dead, in jail or out of business."
>
> He performed the operations anyway, before witnesses and a video camera. He cut into the big toe of a woman and into the back of a man's hand. Both believed they'd been abducted by aliens. From both, he extracted small foreign objects with some unusual properties.
>
> The object in the man was the size of a cantaloupe seed; one of the woman's two was T-shaped. The objects were encased in a thick, dark membrane. But these weren't cysts, he said. They were so tough, his scalpel couldn't cut them.
>
> The doctor was prepared for ingrown follicles or shards of plastic. "I was as doubting as anyone else," he said. When the membranes were dried out and cut open, they revealed tiny, highly magnetic pieces of a shiny black metal. The hard membrane was composed of substances naturally occurring in the body.
>
> The skeptics remain skeptical. "We haven't heard of anything that, without the shadow of a doubt, couldn't have been made here on Earth," said Barry Karr, director of the Center for Scientific Investigation of Claims of the Paranormal.

The hearings of the Select Committee in 1977 exposed an illegal research program that ruined lives and careers. Much of the populace did not hear of

MK-ULTRA because, with the exception of New York state, news of the hearings was blacked out across the country. The pleas of victims are still ignored and ridiculed by an indifferent press.

Subjecting private citizens to terminal experiments and remote electromagnetic harassment is not a national security issue. The SS carried out political sieges of imprisonment and human experimentation because the Jewish faith offended the dictatorship of Adolph Hitler. The Nuremberg Trials found such acts, even with the justification of war, criminal.

> Admiral Stansfield Turner, CIA director, stated in the 1977 Congressional investigation of Project MK-ULTRA, "It is abhorrent to me to think of using humans as guinea pigs." He promised Senate investigators that new procedures and guidelines would be established, and only volunteers would be used for human experimentation. He also said he would follow up and disclose all the names of private citizens who were illegally experimented on, and the Agency would pay restitution, but this was merely political rhetoric.
>
> When a lawsuit against the CIA was filed by a victim who happened to be a member of Parliament, the CIA director made a statement to one of his subordinates that he hoped that the victim would die before the case ever went to trial.
>
> Harvey M. Weinstein, M.D., *Psychiatry and the CIA: Victims of Mind Control*

The United States of America has not *openly* declared war on private citizens. But illicit human experimentation and vicious "non-lethal" radio frequency assaults have been carried out by agencies within a number of federal institutions for 50 years.

One of them is the U.S. Postal Service. When conducting behavior modification experiments on human subjects, federal agencies are required to follow procedural guidelines for protecting human rights. Behavior modification specialists are obliged to collect full written consent from their subjects. Before volunteering and signing a consent form, a subject must understand the full extent and purpose of the experiment. Research involving humans should not be detrimental to the subject's physical or mental welfare.

In the postal system, innocent victims of mind control experimentation are tortured and ultimately "tested" to death. Once an individual is targeted, mind control will follow wherever he moves, wherever he makes his occupation. Employees are often not aware that they are illegally spied upon, bugged and manipulated by a team of "controllers."

The Nuremberg code of 1947 established protocols for medical research to improve the human lot—*not destroy it.*

The University of Oklahoma in Norman, Oklahoma was known to conduct behavior modification experiments for the Central Intelligence Agency. Patrick Sherrill, 44, a mail carrier, murdered a dozen people and committed suicide. Was he a programmed killer for the intelligence community? Was he hypnotized and "psychically-driven" to grab a gun and kill his fellow employees? He was harassed by the "voices" of children. Were they really children or adults who disguised themselves with voice synthesizers to harass him? Were electronic bugs slipped in his mailbag or postal vehicle without his knowledge? Was a transmitter implanted on him surgically, enabling his antagonists to transmit radio frequencies and electronically dominate his emotions? Why did they choose him? He may have documented all of his experiences on a computer, posthumously confiscated by the FBI. There is mind control experimentation that attempts to control or kill an enemy with a computer that generates electrical impulses loaded with a post-hypnotic trigger or "trill."(See: William Nack, *Sports Illustrated,* July 9, 1995, vol. 63: no. 5.)

Several years ago in La Jolla, California, Dr. Carl Rogers addressed a symposium on the "Frontiers of Science" at the Western Behavioral Sciences Institute. Rogers acknowledged that behavioral science had developed to the point that human thought and behavior could be controlled to an unprecedented degree. "This capability is made to order for dictatorial rule," he said.

In 1989, San Diego was hit with an epidemic of murders and suicides:

John Merlin Taylor, a 52-year-old mail carrier in Escondido, CA, was described as mellow and friendly by friends and fellow employees. Taylor shot and killed his wife and two co–workers before killing himself.

William Charles Camp, 62, El Cajon, a postal worker, described as easy-going. Camp hung himself in his garage.

Donald Martin Mace, 44, a Poway letter carrier, shot himself in the lobby of the local post office—after responsibly turning in his keys.

Hector Manuel Rubio, 40, a Pacific Beach postal clerk, hung himself with a weight-lifting belt in his home.

Jay Thomas Fanum, 37, a postal clerk in Vista, perished from carbon monoxide poisoning in his own garage.

Hector Torres, age unknown, a San Diego postal clerk, plummeted to his death from the Coronado Bridge.

Was a barrage of subliminal directions to kill transmitted into their homes via television and radio frequencies? Were they driven to their deaths with strategically-planted electronic devices? Did their psychological profiles match the ones sought by a clutch of state-sponsored behavior modification specialists? Was this a "cluster of mind control experiment?" Who were the psychiatric operatives in the area?

Most of the postal workers who went berserk in the San Diego area had fatal car accidents. Were these a standard *modus operandi* in illegal mind control experiments? Were the workers intentionally discredited beforehand to provide an easy explanation of their state of depression? Did a directed-energy weapon aimed at their heads while driving cause them to lose control of their vehicles? Or did the intelligence operatives send remote control radio signals to a transmitter implanted on the targeted victim?

Dead men *do* tell tales. Several of the victims' bodies were summarily cremated—possibly to conceal tell-tale evidence of microwave damage to their internal organs. One dead postal employee had donated his body to science, but when his body was examined the coroner found internal organs badly seared by microwaves, rendering them useless. Is cremation a standard procedure in classified mind control experiments, an attempt to destroy physical evidence of murder?

The terminal use of technology, billed as "non-lethal," presents the medical profession with a challenge to study and detect forensic effects of gigahertz radiation.

Sniper James O. Huberty shot and killed 21 people at McDonald's in San Ysidro on July 18, 1984. Some of the victims were children. Did he nurse a grudge against them? Most mass murderers do not shoot children. Was Huberty tormented by children's "voices?" Mind control technicians beam microwave audiograms (digital simulations of human speech) of baleful, rage-piquing messages to the brain of the subject to mask their own voices.

The intelligence community is responsible for the killings in San Ysidro, not Huberty.

Some of the postal employees were said to have had mental problems. Did they? Or were they discredited in advance because this is a tactic used to isolate them? A personality disorder accounts for an "irrational" obsession with corruption, a strategy reminiscent of the Soviet abuse of psychiatry.

CONGRESSIONAL HEARING
USPS LABOR–MGMT RELATIONS PROBLEMS IN SAN DIEGO
EXCERPTS OF THE TESTIMONY OF RANIER THORNHILL, *DECEMBER 11, 1989*

What creates stress strong enough for my Vietnam veteran brother Donald Martin Mace to [consider] suicide in Poway as a practicable postal option? What

> was the catalyst that created the abominable confusion in Escondido, or that tied the hangman's knot in El Cajon?
>
> The FBI refuses to investigate, citing lack of authority needed from the US Attorney's office or the Justice Department....
>
> Whatever happened to Title 18, Sections 241 and 242? After various postal employees provided written complaints citing criminal violations of same sections to the FBI and the US Attorney's office, the Justice Department declined to pursue and dropped [the case].
>
> Here in San Diego an older male supervisor sexually harassed and selectively terminated a 20-year-old hearing-impaired woman, Kim Brooke. He is promoted and she in her quiet confused world is socially and personally destroyed. She still dreams of her past postal employment, wonders why she was scapegoated so.
>
> I have a recent tape recording of Congressman Bates [informing] a member of his Postal Task Force group that Thornhill is "the guy that wants to kill me." Do all Congressmen have free license to defame a citizen's character without cause or due process, or is this one just trying to cover up truths he knows I have attempted to address for over five years?
>
> Who enforces the Whistle-blower's Protection Act?
>
> The Postal Inspection Service is utilized by local management as a personalized gestapo....
>
> There is so much more I could tell you and prove, if you were interested and officially authorized a genuine investigation. I anticipate reprisals for my truthful testimony here, and realize beforehand that there is no help forthcoming.... If you can't help me and many others, then I intend to protect myself in the future....
>
> I strongly assert the need for the executive branch of our government to comprehensively and immediately clean up this local postal managerial morass.

Employees testified at the September 15, 1992 congressional hearings in Royal Oak, Michigan that management and U.S. postal inspectors used "abusive tactics" and threats to silence them.

In Edmond, the local postmaster ordered employees to not discuss the mass murder there. Postal employees testified that they were harassed to stop them from talking.

Federal inspectors blamed the shootings on employee "hiring practices." Whistle-blowers are often treated to a draconian backlash. One woman employed by the mail service testified in September, 1992 that she was "a victim of physical assault and abuse":

> On February 25, 1985, I blew a whistle on a postal violation of child labor law.

> I notified the proper chain of command and they in turn mishandled the report. And the manager responsible was contacted at home and he [came] to the postal facility to attempt to kill me. Mr. Grell did assault me ... and he was given a letter of warning. Mr Martin was then MSC manager. I continued on with my duties that day....
>
> I called the Postal Inspection Service and they never did anything to help me. I went to the local police and was told that since I [was] assaulted on federal property, I had to go to the U.S. Attorney.
>
> On December 4, 1991, Honorable Judge Terry J. Hatter, Jr. found Hector Godinez and Arthur Montoya guilty of unlawful discrimination towards me as a U.S. Postal Employee.
>
> On February 20, 1992, they sent out an open letter to all Santa Ana Division employees, attacking me publicly for having won a federal case of discrimination, and to the *L.A. Times* ... claiming I was "insubordinate."
>
> I demand Congressional oversight of all U.S. attorneys' offices to insure that there will be, henceforth, legal prosecution [for] obstruction of justice cases and postal assaults.

The postal system is riddled with horror stories. In Minneapolis, an undercover postal inspector gave marijuana to a mail sorter grieving the death of his wife. The inspector then turned the worker over to police and had his employment terminated.

The objective is to isolate the bothersome informant, depict him as incompetent, disloyal, troublesome, mentally unbalanced or ill. The whistle-blower is forced out, frightening workmates and supporters. A psychiatric history allows postal inspectors to avoid examining legitimate allegations of corruption. The assault continues until the target is left discredited, exhausted, in poor health, financially-crippled, his career in ruins.

Psychological harassment and intimidation are carried out by hired specialists. The U.S. Postal Service and other federal agencies draw on their services.

The intelligence agencies are capable of transmitting voices and images directly to the cranium's sensory pathways. The onset of advanced radio frequency technology has given rise to a coming generation of "thought police." They are a profound threat to a democratic society. Radio frequency weapons have eased the malignant growth of fascism within the intelligence agencies. Anyone who falls into disfavor with this elite can be condemned to interminable physical and psychological torture. The victim is often murdered without a trace.

The abuse of mind-invasive technology is an unprecedented violation of privacy and freedom of thought. There are individuals presently sitting in our prisons and mental institutions who have been set up with the new thought control technology. Due process is abandoned. The victim's life hangs exclusively on the whims of the "controllers," an unprecedented violation of the individual's civil and constitutional rights.

The new "elite" death squads employ directed-energy weapons to harass and kill a designated guinea-pig. These domestic terrorists are trained in the art of persuasive coercion (CIA jargon for a harassment campaign designed to break a subject without direct physical violence).

Mind control techniques perfected by the CIA include psychological intimidation, often racial and sexual. The unsuspecting victim is treated to post-hypnotic programming, psychological conditioning, chemical harassment and biological assaults 24 hours a day. He is provoked to rage and violence at the whim of a remote handler, often to the point of killing.

Mark Hilbun, a postal worker in Dana Point, CA, killed his girlfriend and several other postal employees in a frenzy of jealous rage in 1993. Was his girlfriend, a supervisor, a behavioral modification specialist conducting classified research? Did she seduce him by sending him synthetic love with radio waves on his biological EM frequency? Did a programmer transmit repeated messages to Hilbun that she was disloyal? Was a gun placed in his hands in the grip of remotely-induced rage? Did the girlfriend play God with his life? She may have even dared him to go after her with a gun because she is "omnipotent"—she could put him to sleep with a transmitted radio frequency. If so, she found out all too quickly that she is not "God" for all her "black magic tricks."

To the intelligence community, Hilbun was a "hypno-patsy."

Bruce Clark, a postal worker in the City of Industry in California, was another. In 1995, Clark met a co–worker and shot him for no apparent reason. Was there someone in the catwalks transmitting subliminal commands to kill, images of someone he was hypnotized to fear or hate? Bruce Clark was not listening to the "voice of God," but to a mazer shotgunned to his head. A post-hypnotic "trill" may have triggered him to commit murder. Was it the clothes the victim wore? Was it something he said? Or was it in the lyrics of music playing over a controlled PA system at work? Bruce Clark was a loner. He loved cats. His friends said that Clark was not violent. He had no criminal history.

A man carrying a gun, dressed as a National Parks Service ranger, was arrested on October 6, l995 in Yonkers, New York. He stole onto the seminary grounds where Pope John Paul II had spoken a few hours later. His name is William Wylong, a 45-year-old postal worker. He claimed he was there to "protect" the Pope.

There will be more just like him.

There is a conspiracy within the intelligence agencies to conceal field testing of highly-advanced mind control technology.

On October 2, 1995, President Clinton publicly apologized to the victims of radiation experimentation. Some victims were volunteers, some were not. The victims were not told of the debilitating effects and multi-generational consequences. It took them 40 years to collect enough evidence to elicit a simple acknowledgement and an empty apology.

The government *still* experiments on private citizens without their consent, often to death. They will continue to experiment and deny until forced to stop.

But ...

> The dangers of permitting a governmental agency to be the sole judge of the legality of its employees' actions are by this time all too painfully apparent. There is of course the danger that the Agency will quash an investigation to avoid embarrassment rather than serve legitimate governmental objectives.
>
> —1977 Senate Hearing, Project MK-ULTRA

Further Reading

Mailman Slays Fourteen, Self in Oklahoma Massacre,
Los Angeles Times, August 24, 1986
Thrown Off Plane, Jailed in Houston,
Los Angeles Times, August 28, 1987
Postal Employee Kills Wife, Two Co-Workers,
Los Angeles Times, August 11, 1989
Suspect In Postal Worker Murders—Probed For Link to 'Ninja' Killing,
New Jersey Star-Ledger, October 24, 1991
3 Killed, 8 Injured in Shooting Rampage at Post Office,
Accused Postal Worker Charged in 1988 Murder,
Los Angeles Times, November 15, 1991
Dana Point Postal Shooting,
Los Angeles Times, May 18, 1993
Emotional Problems Cited in Murder of Parents,

Postal Worker Held Says He 'Just Lost It',
New Jersey Star-Ledger, November 9, 1993
Ex-Postal Worker is Charged With Slaying Four in Holdup,
Los Angeles Times, March 23, 1995
Postal Worker Held in Slaying of Supervisor,
Los Angeles Times, July 10, 1995
Postal Employee Held in Shooting of 2 Co-Workers,
Los Angeles Times, August 30, 1995
Man With Gun Arrested at Seminary,
Associated Press Wire, October 6, 1995

APPENDICES:
Auditory Perception of Radio Frequencies

Douglas Barr, a professor of electronics at the University of Colorado, has been hypnotically accessed since childhood for mind control purposes, and as an adult is a target of electromagnetic harassment. He writes:

There has been much discussion of "Microwave Hearing" phenomenon and I was intrigued by this and have done some research. It turns out that microwave hearing does indeed exist. There is a fair sized body of research available on the subject. This is one of the more complete reviews of the subject:

> "Auditory Perception of Radio-Frequency Electromagnetic Fields," in: *The Journal of Acoustical Society of America,* 1982 pages 1321–1334, by Chung-Kwang Chou and Arthur W. Guy, PhD, researchers at the University of Washington.
>
> Funded by: Office of Naval Intelligence, National Institute of Handicapped Research and the Department of Education with a special thanks to Richard M. White of the University of California, Berkeley.
>
> INTRODUCTION
>
> Pulsed microwaves have been heard as sound by radar operators since radar was invented during World War II ....
>
> The earliest report we have found on the auditory perception of pulsed microwaves appeared in 1956 as an advertisement of the Airborne Instruments Lab in Proceedings of the IRE. The advertisement described observations made in 1947 on the hearing of sounds that occurred at the repetition rate of radar

while the listener stood close to a horn antenna. When the observers first told their co-workers in the lab of their hearing experiences, they encountered skepticism and rather pointed questions about their mental health.

POWER LEVELS AND FREQUENCY RANGE

At very low frequency range (< 1MHz), a human-size biological object absorbs very little radio-frequency energy; however, the absorption can be appreciable at the resonant frequency near 70–80 MHz (where the long dimension of the body is approximately 0.4 wavelengths) (Durney et al. 1978). For a human head, the resonant frequency is near 600 Mhz.... Although there is universal agreement on the thermal effects of the highlevel (> 100 milliWatts/centimeter(squared)) radio-frequency electromagnetic radiation, there is considerable debate on the biological effects of low-level (< 100mWatts/cm2) electromagnetic radiation. ...

The thresholds (for hearing) of average power density of fields at the head were determined to be 0.4 and 2mW/cm2, respectively for the two transmitters. ...

In another experiment they used a 2450MHz pulse generator with pulses in the 0.5 to 32 microsecond width. The generator produced peak power of 10kW. Calculations indicated that the maximum amount of absorbed energy was 16 microJOULES/gram (They are talking microjoules per gram now instead of milliwatts per cm squared. They use microjoules when they talk of absorbed energy and milliwatts when talking about radiated wattage. The two are related of course, but the energy absorbed depends on the makeup of the human head, whereas the energy radiated is dependent on the transmission power). (ED) ...

In another experiment they used 5 to 15 microsecond pulses at 3 Ghz frequency.

DISCUSSION

The microwave-induced auditory phenomenon is an example of a microwave-biological interaction that has been WELL QUANTIFIED and WIDELY ACCEPTED (emphasis this author) as a bona fide "weak-field" effect. Although originally the hypothesis of a direct nervous system stimulation was proposed, the evidence is now strongly convincing that the hearing phenomenon is related to thermoelastically induced mechanical vibration. The same type of vibration can be produced by other means, e.g. by a laser pulse, or by activating a piezoelectric crystal in contact with the skull [implant].

The paper ends with about a page of references to other works, one of which is Frey's paper published in 1963.

So there you have it, Microwave hearing is fact, not fiction.

Douglas Barr

Case Histories of Electromagnetic Harassment

FROM *NEXUS* MAGAZINE:

EDITOR:

While reading a back issue of *Nexus* (vol. 2, no. 20), I came across a news clip entitled, "The Mysterious Taos Hum." It says that Representative Bill Richardson (D-NM) has asked the House Select Committee to investigate a noise which causes dizziness, shortness of breath, headaches, anxiety and sleeplessness, and is thought by some to be from a secret defense-related program plaguing various cities in New Mexico.

Well, I believe I know something about that sound, so here is my story.

During the years 1980–83 I was living with the daughter of the now deceased Dr. David Fraser, former head of the Department of Toxicology at the University of North Carolina, Chapel Hill. One day the daughter told me of a frightening encounter her father had with the American military. Later, when Dr. Fraser came to stay with us while on vacation in 1981, I asked him to tell me the story firsthand.

In the early 1970s, the small city of Medford, Oregon became the suicide capital of the United States overnight. (The exact dates can be found by checking national health statistics.) After Dr. Fraser was notified of this dramatic anomaly, he organized and sent a team of researchers to look for the cause. They checked the water, the air, the soil and a variety of additional possibilities, but still could find no reason for the massive increase in suicides. Then they discovered that Ultra Low Frequencies were being beamed into Medford, Oregon, from the local military base. (I never thought to ask for the name.) The researchers then went to that military base and met with its commanding officer. The commanding officer said he knew about the ULF, but his base was not responsible, and that Russians were. The ULF waves stopped the very next day.

The researchers had not only determined the military base as the source, they also determined that the ULF was coming into the homes of the populace through their television antennas, which created some sort of standing wave resonance within the structure of the home itself. Those people who did not get out of their homes became severely depressed.

As the ULF wave had now stopped, the researchers returned to the University of Chapel Hill to write their report and confer with Dr. Fraser. At that time, a number of men appeared who displayed CIA credentials and said the ULF waves beamed into Medford were a "national security" matter. They went on to threaten explicitly to kill each of the researchers, including Dr. David Fraser himself, should anyone speak further about it.

As a postscript, I have often wondered how many times researchers have stumbled over the effects of secret weapons directed against the American people and have been intimidated into silence, or possibly murdered. I myself have made no public statement until now, fourteen years from the time I heard this story (and more than twenty years since the initial fact). It seems clear to me that the military-industrial complex has secretly declared war on the American people quite some time ago, and is waging a long-term psychological warfare operation, complete with fully operational, mass mind control technology.

Lastly, I don't say these things so that people will be afraid. The good news is that these cockroaches don't feel strong enough to be caught out in the light. However, should any of your readers be feeling depressed, anxious or nauseous, before calling a doctor try taking down your TV antennae.

Sincerely,
Mark M., Hollywood, CA

A letter to Alex Constantine from G.W., a victim of EM harassment living in Tucson, Arizona:

Alex:
Harlan Girard (director of the International Committee for the Convention Against Offensive Non-Lethal Weapons) has encouraged me to get in touch with you regarding my mind control ordeal.

I've had a hellish year. I began hearing "voices" last August—which promptly got me diagnosed as a paranoid schizophrenic and hospitalized three times. After the first hospitalization, it became clear that the source of this transmission was something other than my own jangled neurons, and it gradually began to dawn on me—partly because the voices themselves said it—that some facet of the government, most likely the CIA, was responsible.

I've been tortured for a solid year: sleep deprivation, electric shocks ... never once have I been let off the line. My film and video business has been stolen out from under me. I have been marginalized—both financially and emotionally.

When I have tried to obtain legal help, I've lost large sums of money, legal documents have disappeared from my files, the lawyers have mysteriously quit or been scared off the case. I now find myself destitute, unable to make any headway regaining ownership of my business.

I am saddled with enormous debts. I no longer have health insurance.

I have no idea why I've been selected for this form of torture. The only thing I can attribute it to is the breakup with my former boyfriend and business partner, David Frankel Arond. We had a film and video business—East West Films. I oversaw the office here, while for much of the last decade David did a considerable amount of work in the then Soviet Union. Among other things, we did some work for USIA [the United States Information Agency, which often fronts for the CIA overseas] both directly and via a company called Techniarts in Washington, DC that subcontracted with us. Techniarts ultimately lost its contract with USIA, and we then contracted directly with USIA on a story-by-story basis.

This may have brought me under the scrutiny of the intelligence community. The only other strange occurrence that I can think of that might have brought us under the watchful gaze of the CIA is when David was the first Westerner given an interview with Oleg Kalugin. This struck me as odd given David's lack of prominence in the media.

The events of the past year have had a devastating impact on my life. My health has suffered greatly. My hemoglobin plummeted to an alarming reading of 6.5. My thyroid is not functioning normally. The loss of my business, the lack of income and poor health has made parttime work more of a challenge than it might otherwise have been. I have no understanding about the science of ELF, microwaves and whatever—but it would seem that this must have contributed to my health problems. With no place else to turn, I have had to rely on the information supplied by concerned individuals who had looked into these goings on. Any suggestions you might have would be greatly appreciated. I live in Tucson and am hoping to connect with people in this region who have some level of understanding about the mind control experience.

Thanks,
G.W.

Correspondence

Dr. Barker (the unconventional psychiatrist in "Bleak House") surfaced in a computer discussion group for social workers in Canada on May 28, 1887. The comments are from Lynne Moss-Sharman, a subject herself in experiments conducted when she was a child, and a survivor's advocate, to a social worker specializing in childhood trauma.

May 28, 1997
From: Lynne Moss-Sharman

Jim:

Part of the healing process is taking responsibility for what one has "enacted" in the "past." Dr. Barker has engaged in a 1996–97 dialogue with Steve Smith [a victim of forced incarceration] that includes creating his own version of the Book of Revelations. At some point I think we arejust dealing with out and out criminal behaviour under the guise of psychiatry and with the protection of that profession, and unless the Dr. Barkers in Canada are legally pursued there will be no moral healing. Don't forget that Dr. Ewen Cameron [a pioneer of CIA mind control experimentation] was the President of the Canadian Psychiatric Association, and Dr. Martin Orne (who was named as a torturer conducting CIA funded mind control experiments on children in the 1950s, a President of the American Psychiatric Association and more recently, Founding Member of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation) at the Presidential Hearing on Human Radiation Experiments in March 1995.

When I see things like electro-shock "Therapy" increasing 3000-fold at our regional psychiatric hospital (wipe 'em all out before it gets closed down?) in the past four years ... I do not think the torture has stopped. The public and other professions are not being informed ... I get chills thinking that Dr. Barker is still functioning as a "child/adolescent specialist" ... proclaiming himself to be the Director of The Canadian Society for Prevention to Cruelty to Children.

—Lynne

Since CIA involvement is suspected, Canadian intelligence needs to pay attention too. And government needs to address the damage caused by the secrecy that protects these institutions by walling them off from public scrutiny and supervision, so that the basic human rights of their inmates are denied. The confidentiality of Steve's records has not been in his best interests!

The 60s and 70s were a dark time in the children's treatment field, but enough people tried their best to help children that the effects of neglect and of sexual abuse and of child trauma gradually became recognized, and today we are at the threshold of being able to genuinely help traumatized people. Unfortunately that knowledge is not widely known yet.

—Jim

A letter to the author from Val Bankston, an abductee who has been repeatedly accessed by her perpetrators to the present day. Although initially believing her "controllers" to be "aliens," she has since recovered memories of human perps lurking behind hypnotically-induced screen memories of little green men.

Alex:

I remember being abducted at an unmarked clinic (by humans) where I reported for a referred mamogram. I never got the mamogram, and only remembered later that I had gone there. I had a chunk of "missing time"!

This was near the VA hospital in the San Fernando Valley. I haven't been able to find the exact spot. It made me physically ill to go around there, so I just gave up on it.

Over a period of time, I had experienced what seemed to be a number of UFO related incidents. In addition to these sightings and contacts with what appeared to be alien entities, I have flashbacks and memories of being abducted in vans and cars and taken to hospitals and drugged by doctors, set in front of TV screens and debriefed about various things that happened while "on duty" as it were. I have been tortured. I have been drugged at parties (I never eat or drink anything offered to me at a party anymore—especially orange juice) I have possessed and have been photographed wearing spy-tech devices. I have remembered using them ... I remember having had them used on ME.

I had no idea where I got my orders. I knew only that I was doing a job for a man to whom I was (am) intensely loyal. The job involved being able to operate with no memory of what I was doing, because I had to infiltrate certain groups undetected. I felt that this was my choice.

I remember also incidents of breaking and entering locations, threatening people, stealing an object from an aerospace lab, delivering articles, giving verbal encoded messages etc. My cues were either verbal or by seeing a very bright light, or encoded in the personal section of the *Recycler.* I thought these orders were coming from the UFO entities. Up until I wised up about being programmed, I used to get instructions over the phone.

Listen to this story:

I find myself approaching a doorway of a nice looking house in an upperclass neighborhood. When I get to the door, I hand something that I can't see to a woman. She asks me to come in and join the party. I decline. I recognize this woman as my enemy, but I don't know why. My adrenaline is pumping and I know that I must go. She insists that I come in. I walk briskly away, declining curtly once again. She calls for a man in the house who joins her at the door as I am walking down the driveway to my car, which is parked up the street, out of sight. When I reach the bottom of the driveway, the woman says something that I don't understand, and I fall right down on the ground. Just like a UFO abduction experience! I look up and see the woman and the man approaching cautiously, with tense looks on their faces as though they don't know what to expect from me.

Finding myself in this condition, I remember an order to look at my hands if this ever happens. I struggle to raise my hands and look at first my left then my right hand. On my right hand is the ring, which I immediately recognize. I know that I am supposed to depress a button on the side of it. I do this. It clicks off five clicks and then delivers an electric shock to my hand. I am somewhat revived but not enough to get up and flee. I know if this happens, I must hit the button again. This time, it ticks very rapidly, many times. I get the feeling that it could be a bomb or administer a drug or something terrible like that. As I lose consciousness completely, I realize just how vulnerable I really am-following orders that could possibly kill me without knowing what in the hell I am really doing.

(I have a picture taken of myself wearing the "spy-ring." I really thought it was a watch. I can send you a copy if you like.)

My next memory was finding myself at home, in the bathroom, looking in the mirror. The ring was destroyed and in pieces (some of which were missing) on the counter beside me. I felt like hell and went to bed. I don't remember the next day or the previous day or anything else. The ring peices disappeared next time I looked.

But I have photos of myself with the ring clearly shown, taken before the event. Before it happened, I knew that I had to wear the ring at all times, and that I would be called upon to do a "job."

Love,
Val

A letter to the Freedom of Thought Foundation, an organiation of survivors, from a victim of unauthorized medical experimentation with radioactive implants.

Dear FOTF:

My name is Roland Thompson. I'm 38 and I have a radio isotopic loop implanted in my abdomen. It was placed there during a routine surgery for ulcers in 1980 while on active duty with the army.

It is apparent on x-ray and it registers on geiger counters in the range of .02-.03 millirads. At times it seems to be moved closer to the sensor of the geiger counter by my heart beat....

I've gone to several doctors and nuclear educators at my university. All of them, save one or two, are skeptical. The two individuals who have witnessed the evidence are critical to my situation; one is my personal physician who is a close friend and happens to be the coroner in my district. He is in favor of removing it, as am I, and is agreeable to video taping the operation and being present in the operating room while it is removed. I feel safer with him there and am fortunate enough to have a friend in his capacity.

The other individual is a technician in our local hospital who indulged me in a test with a geiger counter. He also has an open mind and will attest to the fact that the radiation is localized. They seem to be together on their beliefs and are convinced that i'm the genuine article. all that remains are the details of the surgery.

The physician will read the copy of the interim report on human radiation experimentation that president Clinton's advisory committee has produced. he'll also read my biography of the events leading up to the implant's discovery, contact a surgeon we both trust and I suppose we'll go from there. I would solicit advice on how to go about having the device analyzed, preserving a chain of evidence and the mechanics of involving the media in this bizarre undertaking.

Thank you,
Roland

A letter to the Freedom of Thought Foundation, an organization of survivors, from a victim of unauthorized medical experimentation with radioactive implants:

Dear FOTF:

My name is Roland Thompson, I'm 38 and I have a radio isotopic loop implanted in my abdomen. It was placed there during a routine surgery for ulcers in 1980 while on active duty with the army.

It is apparent on x-ray and it registers on geiger counters in the range of .02-.05 millirads. At times it seems to be moved closer to the sensor of the geiger counter by my heart beat...

I've gone to several doctors and nuclear education at my university. All of them, save one or two, are skeptical. The two individuals who have witnessed the evidence are critical to my situation: one is my personal physician who is a close friend and happens to be the coroner in my district. He is in favor of removing it, as am I, and is agreeable to video taping the operation and being present in the operating room while it is removed. I feel safer with him there and am fortunate enough to have a friend in his capacity.

The other individual is a technician in our local hospital who indulged me in a test with a geiger counter. He also has an open mind and will attest to the fact that the radiation is localized. They seem to be together on their beliefs and are convinced that it's the genuine article; all that remains are the details of the surgery.

The physician will read the copy of the interim report on human radiation experimentation that president Clinton's advisory committee has produced. he'll also read my biography of the events leading up to the implant's discovery, contact a surgeon we both trust and I suppose we'll go from there. I would solicit advice on how to go about having the device analyzed, preserving a chain of evidence and the mechanics of involving the media in this bizarre undertaking.

Thank you,
Roland

NEW FROM FERAL HOUSE

KILLER FICTION

G. J. Schaefer, as Told to Sondra London
Introduction by Colin Wilson

These vile, fetishistic stories were used in court to convict Schaefer of serial murder. Schaefer, recently stabbed to death in prison, received literary tutoring from novelist Harry Crews, and researched his books by committing the sordid crimes detailed within. Includes illustrations, [illegible]
PAPERBACK • 6" x 9" • $14.95

THE OCTOPUS
SECRET GOVERNMENT AND THE DEATH OF DANNY CASOLARO

Kenn Thomas and Jim Keith

This extraordinary book uses the secret notes of Danny Casolaro, a journalist murdered investigating a cabal of [illegible] he called "The Octopus," since it led a torturous course from [illegible] to Hollywood to Indian Reservations to the Department of Justice.
HARDCOVER • 6" x 9" • $19.95

PSYCHIC DICTATORSHIP IN THE U.S.A.

Alex Constantine

A collection of unnerving essays which demonstrate that mind-control telemetry is the shadow state's stock-in-trade... a strange [illegible] of democracy turned dictatorship." — [illegible]. Cover by [illegible]
PAPERBACK • 5 1/2" x 8 1/2" • $12.95

All titles above may be ordered from Feral House. To order, send check or money order. Add $3 first book and 50 cents each additional book ordered for shipping. For a free catalogue of publications, send an SASE.

Feral House • 2532 Lincoln Blvd., Suite 359 • Venice, CA • 90291

NEW FROM FERAL HOUSE

KILLER FICTION

G. J. Schaefer, as Told to Sondra London

Introduction by Colin Wilson

These vile, fetishistic stories were used in court to convict Schaefer of serial murder. Schaefer, recently stabbed to death in prison, received his literary training from novelist Harry Crews, and researched his books practicing the sordid crimes detailed within. Includes illustrations. Adults Only!

PAPERBACK • 6″ x 9″ • $14.95

THE OCTOPUS
SECRET GOVERNMENT AND THE DEATH OF DANNY CASOLARO

Kenn Thomas and Jim Keith

This extraordinary book uses the actual notes of Danny Casolaro, a journalist murdered investigating a nexus of crime he called "The Octopus," since it led a torturous course from software manufacturers to Hollywood to Indian Reservations to the Department of Justice.

HARDCOVER • 6″ x 9″ • $19.95

PSYCHIC DICTATORSHIP IN THE U.S.A.

Alex Constantine

"A collection of unnerving essays which demonstrate that mind behavior-control telemetry is the shadow state's stock-in-trade ... a savage indictment of democracy-turned-dictatorship."—*Nexus.* Cover by Frank Kozic.

PAPERBACK • 5 1/2″ x 8 1/2″ • $12.95

The titles above may be ordered from Feral House for check or money order plus $3 first book and 50 cents each additional book ordered for shipping. For a free catalogue of publications, send an SASE.

Feral House • 2532 Lincoln Blvd., Suite 359 • Venice, CA • 90291

Current Affairs $14.95

MIND CONTROL...

dwells in a virtual government obscured by CIA "Psysops."

MIND CONTROL...

inhabits a twilit zone of so-called "alien invasions," "zombie killers," "cult murder/suicides," "remote viewing," and "lone nut assassinations."

MIND CONTROL...

exists in a scientific netherworld with origins in the hearts of some of Nazi Germany's most ruthless military scientists.

In VIRTUAL GOVERNMENT:

- Drug and mob connections to the Simpson murder case
- Integration of Nazis into American intelligence
- CIA experiments on children
- The rise of Timothy McVeigh from robot to bomber
- Infestation of American media by CIA operatives
- Mind control within the US Postal Service

and a hidden world of terror are revealed with intelligence, hard research and moral fury. Researcher Alex Constantine's previous book, PSYCHIC DICTATORSHIP IN THE USA, is also available from Feral House.

"Alex Constantine is the foremost journalist and contemporary historian of the murky world of vice and vice squads."
—Donald Freed, author of KILLING TIME

Design by Sean Tejaratchi
A Feral House Book
ISBN 0-922915-45-8
51495>
9 780922 915453

From the Authors of *THE SECRET WAR AGAINST THE JEWS*

#1 INTERNATIONAL BEST-SELLER

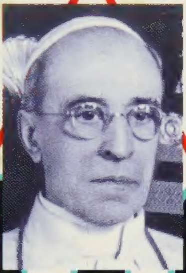

UNHOLY TRINITY

THE VATICAN, THE NAZIS, AND THE SWISS BANKS

MARK AARONS and JOHN LOFTUS

NEW AND REVISED EDITION

With Recently Declassified Information

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2022 with funding from
Kahle/Austin Foundation

https://archive.org/details/unholytrinityvat0000aaro

Unholy Trinity

Also by the authors
The Secret War Against the Jews

Also by Mark Aarons
Sanctuary! Nazi Fugitives in Australia

Also by John Loftus
The Belarus Secret
Valhalla's Wake

MARK AARONS and JOHN LOFTUS

Unholy Trinity

THE VATICAN,
THE NAZIS,
AND THE SWISS BANKS

NEW AND REVISED EDITION

St. Martin's Griffin
New York

UNHOLY TRINITY: THE VATICAN, THE NAZIS, AND THE SWISS BANKS. Copyright © 1991, 1998 by Mark Aarons and John Loftus. All rights reserved. Printed in the United States of America. No part of this book may be used or reproduced in any manner whatsoever without written permission except in the case of brief quotations embodied in critical articles or reviews. For information, address St. Martin's Press, 175 Fifth Avenue, New York, N.Y. 10010.

Photographs were drawn from the following sources: US National Archive (1, 2, 14, 15, 26, 28); Yugoslav National Archives (3, 12, 13, 16, 17, 18, 19); Tiskara Papinskog Sveucilista Gregoniane, Rome (5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 22); Ukrainian Archives (23, 24); ABN *Correspondence* (25); private collection of Pierre Vicary (20, 21)

ISBN 0-312-18199-X

First published in the United States by St. Martin's Press, 1991.
First published in Great Britain under the title *Ratlines* by William Heineman Limited, 1991.

First St. Martin's Griffin Edition: July 1998

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

For Susan and Robyn

'In any case I long ago realized that it is almost impossible for a layman and a non-Catholic, and indeed for most Catholics and ecclesiastics outside the Vatican City, to form a valid judgment or express an authoritative opinion on Papal policy. The Pope's decision may, or must be influenced by so many imponderable or invisible elements. Moreover, not only is the atmosphere of the Vatican supranational and universal . . . but it is also fourth-dimensional and, so to speak, outside of time . . . for example, they can regard the Savoy dynasty as an interlude, and the Fascist era as an incident, in the history of Rome and Italy. They reckon in centuries and plan for eternity and this inevitably renders their policy inscrutable, confusing and, on occasion, reprehensible to practical and time-conditioned minds.'[1]

– Sir D'Arcy Osborne,
British Ambassador to the Vatican,
March 1947.

'I gather that . . . some arrangement has been worked out with Vatican and Argentina . . . protecting not only Quislings but also (those) . . . guilty of terrible crimes committed in Yugoslavia. I presume we must protect our agents even though it disgusts me . . . we are conniving with Vatican and Argentina to get guilty people to haven in latter country.'[2]

– John Moors Cabot
American Ambassador to Belgrade
June 1947.

Contents

Preface to the New Edition xi

Part One The Church's War Against Communism

1 A Spectre Was Haunting Europe 3
2 Bishop Hudal and the First Wave 25
3 A French Spy in the Vatican 48
4 A Staggering Blow to the Holy See 70
5 Ratline 88
6 The Golden Priest 120

Part Two Communism's War Against the Church

7 The Vatican's Black Orchestra 143
8 The Catholic Army of the Ukraine 173
9 Diplomacy and Deceit 189
10 The Philby Connection 208
11 Barbie and the American Ratlines 235
12 Conclusions 264
13 Conclusions: A Reappraisal 288

Postscript 301
Acknowledgements 305
Endnotes 307
Bibliography 373
Index 381

Preface to the New Edition

For a small volume, this book has engendered considerable controversy over the years. Since its first release in Britain in 1991 under the title *Ratlines*, there have been numerous translations, including into Polish, French, Italian, and even Serbian. Each foreign-language edition was published in a country that had some part – mostly major – in the Vatican's operations to smuggle Nazi war criminals out of Europe from under the noses of the Allied teams that were hunting them and to safety in Latin America (especially Argentina), and even in Britain, Canada, the United States, and Australia.

The Serbian edition was undoubtedly used as a propaganda weapon by the Orthodox Serbs against the Catholic Croats in the Balkans war that broke out just as the book was first published. One of the major revelations of the first half of the book is the role of the Croatian priest Father Krunoslav Draganović in smuggling hundreds of wanted war criminals out of Europe on behalf of the highest officials in the Vatican.

The detailed account provided in the first half of this book of Croatian Fascist atrocities against Serbs, Jews, and Gypsies engendered considerable interest amongst Serb nationalists around the world. Some Australian Serbs even approached us seeking support for the nationalist cause being pursued in Bosnia in the 1990s. Needless to say, and in light of the detailed research we had undertaken in Bosnia and Croatia, this overture was rejected as an attempt to secure our support for the Serb genocide of the 1990s as some sort of 'just' retribution for the Croat genocide of half a century earlier.

In America, the book was published as *Unholy Trinity* in 1991 and more recently became the basis for an ABC *Prime Time* special on Nazis in Argentina, the country most favoured to receive the wanted fugitives by Father Draganović and his senior Vatican sponsors, especially then Assistant Secretary of State Giovanni Montini (later Pope Paul VI). After explaining how the Vatican-Argentine connection worked, we supplied ABC with intelligence documents that correctly identified Reinhard Kopps, a German intelligence officer who worked for Bishop Alois Hudal and the Vatican on the first Nazi smuggling operations detailed in Chapter Two.

After sending hundreds of his fellow Nazis to Argentina, Kopps followed them and promptly occupied himself writing anti-Semitic hate propaganda and meeting with other fugitive war criminals to reminisce about the 'good old days' under the Third Reich. As much of this book documents, when it came to the Vatican's Nazi-smuggling networks, most roads led to Argentina regardless of whether the fugitive was German, Croat, Slovak, or Austrian.

When Sam Donaldson confronted Kopps with our files on his past, he confessed. Not realizing that he was on camera, he was caught whispering the name of a much more senior Nazi, Erich Priebke. To the television audience (and every Nazi in South America), it appeared as if one war criminal had denounced another to save his skin. When the program aired, Kopps fled to Tierra del Fuego out of a justifiable fear of retaliation. The truth is that the ABC producer, Harry Phillips, had already identified Priebke as a target.

Months before the television show aired, Harry had combed Argentina looking for Nazi suspects. He called early one morning and stated that he had a lead on a major war criminal, Erich Priebke, but no one knew quite what he had done. Even Simon Wiesenthal could only find an innocuous link between Priebke and an SS office in Verona, Italy.

We had a bit more luck. One of our sources from the US Army Counter Intelligence Corps, the late William Parkinson, had donated a classified two-volume index, produced by US Naval Intelligence at the end of World War II. The old intelligence files revealed what Wiesenthal had missed: before Priebke went to his last posting in Verona, he had spent the majority of the war as the Deputy Gestapo Chief of Rome. In thirty seconds, we had the answer. Priebke had not only tortured Allied agents, he had personally organized the infamous massacre of unarmed Roman citizens in the Ardeatine caves in Rome.

We tracked down Priebke's history with the help of several sources, including former Ambassador to Australia Mel Sembler and Mrs Betty Sembler, who donated a rare volume on the Italian

Fascist era. John Taylor and George Wolff, of the US National Archives, helped us locate innumerable Nazi documents on Priebke's service. Most importantly, the staff of the US Army's Central records facility at the Intelligence and Security Command at Fort Meade, Maryland, were invaluable in retrieving the Army Counter Intelligence Corps (CIC) files on Priebke's past.

When confronted by Sam Donaldson with the voluminous intelligence records and original Nazi documents, Erich Priebke was stupid enough to confess on national television that he was indeed responsible for the Ardeatine caves massacre. Priebke became the first of the Vatican's Nazis ever extradited from Argentina to Italy to stand trial for his crimes.

It was not an easy trip. At first the Menem government denounced ABC and sought to delay Priebke's extradition. ABC promised to pursue the Priebke story to its conclusion. Suddenly, John Loftus, one of the authors of this book, received an invitation from the Menem government to come to Buenos Aires to address an International Seminar on anti-Semitism.

It did not take long to discover why: the Argentine government wanted him to talk about Nazis in America, to take the sting away from the Nazis in Argentina. The conference turned out to be a public relations effort to gloss over the dark side of Juan and Evita Perón's role in providing Argentine visas to the Vatican to smuggle Nazis out of Europe, which we document later in this book. Several speakers minimized the presence of Nazis in Argentina, defended the Peróns, and praised President Menem for his courageous decision to open Argentina's immigration files for inspection.

It was an empty promise. A small staff of Jewish volunteers and scholars had been given access to the voluminous immigration files, but not to the intelligence index. Loftus gave the researchers a copy of the American intelligence index, as well as a list of ships that were chartered to carry Nazis to Buenos Aires. Suddenly, the Argentine files began to yield the proof of the ugliest chapter in Argentine history. As this book shows, Juan and Evita Perón had welcomed some of the worst Nazi mass murderers of World War II, including Ante Pavelić, the leader of the 'independent' state of Croatia. Pavelić and nearly the entire cabinet of his bloody Ustashi government had emigrated via the Vatican to Buenos Aires, where Perón promptly made Pavelić one of his senior 'security advisers'.

Even the carefully presented facts did not move the Menem government. Months passed, and it seemed that Priebke would suffer little more than 'protective' custody under the benevolent eye of the Argentinians. Eventually, however, they had to hand Priebke over in the wake of an almost unprecedented international campaign.

Several of our intelligence sources warned us that Priebke was still being protected. He knew too much about the Vatican's Ratlines to Argentina to ever be permitted to stand trial. Amazingly, the Italian military tribunal acquitted Priebke on a technicality. The people of Rome dimmed the lights of the city in protest. The next morning, Priebke was rearrested. The Supreme Court of Italy ruled that he must stand trial in a civil court. But to our dismay, Priebke received only a five-year sentence, roughly equivalent to a week in jail for every person he had murdered in the Ardeatine caves.

As we were to discover, Priebke was indeed protected by charitable Church forces. Priebke knew too much about the Vatican's Ratlines, and did not even serve his time in a prison, but lived comfortably for many months under 'house arrest' in a Catholic monastery.[1] In March 1998 the Italian military tribunal again considered his case, and this time decided to gaol him for life. By this time Priebke had been moved to a hospital located, ironically enough, in the Jewish quarter of Rome. As we write in April 1998 it seems unlikely that Priebke will serve more than a few symbolic days of his 'life sentence' in a prison.

How could a confessed Nazi murderer get away with it? What did Priebke know to receive such special treatment? The answer lies in the secrets revealed in the original edition of this book, and in the new material we have added in Chapter Thirteen.

Among other things, this new chapter deals with one of the best-kept secrets shared between the Vatican and the British Secret Service. In pursuing their own economic interests, the British spies – many of whom came from the banking and financial elite – bugged the Swiss banks and broke their telegram codes. Buried in the Western intelligence files is the evidence of Swiss corruption in financial dealings with the Third Reich, and damning evidence against the Dulles brothers – John Foster and Allen – whose American clients also invested in the Third Reich, together with a large number of Britain's industrial and financial establishment.

Even more relevant for the main themes of this book, the electronic intercepts of the Swiss banks revealed the role played by the Vatican Bank in investing the Catholic Church's wealth in Hitler's Germany, and its part in smuggling the Third Reich's massive treasure – stolen from its victims – out of Europe to safety in the Nazi diaspora in Latin America, and especially in Juan Perón's Argentina.

According to our sources in the intelligence community – whose information is reported extensively in the follow-up to this book, *The Secret War Against the Jews* – the British codebreaking files contain many revelations. We are told, for example, that a secret German intelligence group, operating under the cover of Nazi Airforce intelligence, deciphered Allen Dulles's private codes from Switzerland, which revealed his treasonous activities on behalf of his wealthy clients while he was supposed to be conducting anti-Nazi intelligence operations on behalf of the American government.

While Jewish groups campaign to force the Swiss bankers to open their files, the best evidence is sitting in the communications intelligence vaults of the National Security Agency in Maryland and the Government Communications Headquarters in Cheltenham, England. The material contained in the new chapter at the end of this book outlines the ugliest secret of World War II: the bloody circle of Western money laundered through Switzerland to the Third Reich, then out through the Vatican Bank to South America, and then finally back to the original owners in Germany. The entire, corrupt system was established for the profit of a few pro-Nazi Western investors, and to ensure that the Vatican Bank could keep the ledgers of St Peter's balanced no matter who won World War II.

So what, in the end, have we learned? Perhaps the moral is that you can get away with murder, if you are rich enough. In the end, the Nazis – with the help of their Western and Vatican collaborators – got away with it. A large number of Nazi mass murderers did not even seek sanctuary in Argentina; they simply settled in Britain, America, Australia, and Canada, where it took thirty to forty years to catch up with them. Most either died in the meantime or were too old to be prosecuted for anything more than immigration and naturalization felonies.

These were lessons that every mass murderer of the last half century has learned and skillfully applied in the many genocides that have followed the Nazi Holocaust.

Pavelić's Croatian Fascist movement of World War II has been reborn in the present government of Croatia, led by Franjo Tudjman, ironically a former Communist general who served under Marshal Tito. The cruelties of the Communist retaliations against the Ustashi of the postwar years are mirrored in the Serbian atrocities in Bosnia in the 1990s, and the Croatian reprisals against both Serbs and Muslims.

There is an irony that fifty years after World War II, we are still hunting war criminals in the Balkans, and despite the hard work and good intentions of people from all around the globe, we are still failing at the task, just as we failed to bring Ante Pavelić and his cut throats to justice half a century ago. Perhaps if we had been more assiduous in prosecuting Pavelić in 1947, we could have avoided the resurgence of violence that has led to the stationing of Allied troops in this sad and striven land.

It is no coincidence that Pavelić's lieutenant Srečko Rover – whose roles in the brutal atrocities in and around Sarajevo during World War II and in the British intelligence terrorist networks of the late 1940s are documented in Chapter Six of this book – has given Tudjman's government specialist advice on how to conduct a good massacre. Nor is it a coincidence that Rover, and his Ustashi comrades who were smuggled down the Vatican Ratlines to Argentina, America, Canada, Australia, and Britain, trained a new generation of Western-educated Croatian war criminals who left their adopted countries to slaughter Serbs and Muslims in the 1990s Balkans wars.

We hope that in some small way, this book may teach our children a different lesson. Sooner or later, all secret crimes pass into the public domain and are judged before the bar of history. No matter how great the wealth, or influential their access to the press, those who lie about history are exposed. Sooner or later, the truth emerges, even from the darkest corners of the intelligence vaults. Except, it seems, from the voluminous holdings in the Vatican's vaults.

In an era when the unthinkable has happened, and the Kremlin's secrets have finally been revealed in the Gorbachev and Yeltsin eras, the last secrets of the twentieth century lie buried inside the Holy See. When we first researched this book, several senior Catholic historians in Rome commented that the current Pope, John Paul II, was considered a radical because he had advanced the open period of the Vatican's Secret Archives from 1891 to 1922. Perhaps they did not fully realize the irony of their comments.

The Vatican's cover-up, however, continues into the 1990s. In September 1997, the Simon Wiesenthal Center had a personal interview with Pope John Paul II and requested that the Vatican's Secret Archives on this period of history be opened up for public scrutiny. The venue was the annual conference of the International Committee of Christians and Jews held in Rome. The Wiesenthal Center's European Director told Monsignor Remy Höchman, Secretary General of the Pope's Committee on Relations with Judaism, that 'in light of a rumor mill going around about the Vatican assisting war criminals, we would appreciate a decision to open its archives'.

It is a sad commentary that fifty years after the amoral events recorded in this book – and long after the publication of the substantial evidence that indicts the Holy See – Monsignor Höchman replied that the Vatican 'will not address the issue; it is out of the question'.[2]

A few months later the Vatican announced that it would finally open the files of the infamous Inquisition, over five hundred years after the cruel events which saw so many innocents suffer at the hands of the Church. It seems that Pope Pius's secrets from the Nazi era are also so painful, and so damaging, for the 'Princes of the Catholic Church' that, like the files of the Inquisition, the records must remain buried long after the truth has been so comprehensively documented in this, the most definitive history thus far of the Vatican's Ratlines.

The Vatican's determination to hide this aspect of Church history was illustrated by the document on the Nazi era issued in Rome by Australian-born Cardinal Edward Clancy in March 1998. 'We Remember: A Reflection on the Shoah' is a ten-page document which took the Church a decade to prepare. While it is the nearest thing yet to a statement of the Church's responsibility for Jewish suffering, it is notable for its silence on the Vatican's Ratlines which were set up to help the guilty mass murderers evade justice.

Not surprisingly, it has nothing at all to say about the Vatican's decision to invest in the Third Reich in the 1930s, nor about the extraordinary lengths the Church went to in order to recover its fortune from the ashes of the Third Reich. Nor does it address the

Church's role in putting the Vatican Bank at the disposal of the Nazis and their many Western investors so they could illegally transfer their wealth – much of it stolen from the victims – out of Europe and into the safe hands of the Nazi diaspora in Juan and Evita Perón's Argentina.

We had hoped that this work would serve as a road map for other historians, and we have not been disappointed. In April 1998, the Jewish researchers of Buenos Aires released a two-volume set of documents taken from Argentina's hitherto secret immigration files. These records reveal what the Vatican has tried to conceal for a half century.

Buried in the Argentine official records is dramatic proof that the story we relate here is accurate in all major points. The Argentine files are replete with the evidence of the felonies of Father Draganović, Ante Pavelić, and Ferdinand Durčansky, whose names appear in detail in the following pages. With independent confirmation from Buenos Aires, there can be no doubt that what we have written is the truth.

As we finished updating this book in March and April 1998 two international media groups undertook their own research and confirmed what we had already documented seven years earlier. Working independently, the BBC and the US News and World Report reached the same conclusions about the Vatican's Ratlines and the central role played by the Argentine government of Juan and Evita Perón in the illegal emigration of thousands of Nazi fugitives out of Europe.[3]

No matter what the Vatican does to deny and cover up its role, the truth keeps coming out: the Vatican-Argentine connection can no longer be disputed. For fugitive Nazis, all roads had indeed led to Rome.

Mark Aarons and John Loftus
April 1998

Unholy Trinity

Unholy Trinity

PART ONE

The Church's War Against Communism

1

A Spectre Was Haunting Europe

No one can trace with precision the psychological roots of either heroic or tragic decisions, but the disasters that befell the Vatican after World War II may have sprung in part from one man's obsession. Thirty years before the Cold War, in May 1919, a Catholic priest was violently threatened in Germany. It happened on the last day of an abortive Communist uprising . . .

The fighting had raged all through the day as the remnants of the Red forces clung desperately to key positions around Munich's Palace of Justice and at the railway station. The ragged gunfire punctuated the death cries of the revolutionaries. The White troops, bearing their blue and white flag aloft and wearing fir twigs on their steel helmets, slowly but surely dislodged Munich's short-lived Soviet government.

May Day 1919 was a time of blood and madness. The anti-Communist troops wanted revenge for the ten hostages shot by the Communists the day before. The Whites took their vengeance in the brutal killing of some 300 Red Spartacists. In those chaotic last hours, another war – the long cold war of the Catholic Church – was perhaps also beginning.

As the Whites advanced into the city, the Papal Nuncio's residence was repeatedly raked in the crossfire. In the final spasm of massacre and retreat, the 'civilised' rules of war were abandoned as each side hunted for one last target of revenge. The priest could hear the mob coming; it was coming for him.

The Reds entered his extra-territorial compound and clattered up the stairs. The Nuncio 'insisted on facing them alone', dressed in his Bishop's robes. He coldly berated them, and in response they menacingly pointed their weapons at his head. It was one of those moments where history holds its breath.

The priest remained impassive and stared the mob down. With a quiet smile he said, 'It's never wise to kill a diplomat'. The Spartacists were dumbstruck, and left soon after in the Nuncio's car. As one historian later recorded, by 'impressing them with his dignified, decisive and immovable protest he forced them to withdraw without daring to commit violence. It was a magnificent victory.'[1]

By mid-afternoon the victory was complete. The Pope's representative emerged from his bullet-scarred residence and angrily denounced the Reds' 'bestial hostage murder'. Despite his calm demeanour, the incident was a 'genuine shock to his system'.[2]

The Papal Nuncio was Eugenio Pacelli, who later became Pope Pius XII. For the rest of his life, he never forgot the moment that the Reds held a gun to his head. That memory became the Pope's recurring nightmare. Pacelli's 'private doctor recounted later that the Pope often relived it in his dreams even when he was nearly eighty'.[3] Some historians trace Pacelli's silence towards Hitler to that May Day in Munich:

> Pius XII's acquiescence in Nazi misdeeds during the Second World War . . . can be traced back to that year when the Pope – as nuncio Pacelli – had an encounter with Soviet rule that turned him into an inflexible anti-Communist for the rest of his life.[4]

There is only circumstantial evidence to support the obsession theory. While publicly denouncing the Reds' murder of the ten hostages in 1919, the Nuncio ignored the 300 prisoners massacred by the Whites. A pattern of selective condemnation had begun that later appeared to many to be echoed by the Pope's silence concerning Hitler's atrocities and his strident denunciations of Stalin.

One historian maintains that Pius XII's vocal condemnation of Communist atrocities after the war can also be traced to Munich, claiming that 'it acted on him as a stimulant rather than a depressant, and many of his challenges to the Communists after the Second World War were inspired subconsciously by that remote incident'.[5]

Eugenio Pacelli was not the only priest to have experienced Bolshevik terror first-hand, nor was he the only future Pope who became an inflexible anti-Communist as a result. One year after the attack on Pacelli, the Papal Nuncio in Warsaw also witnessed Communist methods during the Russo-Polish war. Like Pacelli in

Munich, the Nuncio in Poland had personal experience of 'the anti-religious policy of the Moscow Government [which] inspired in him an abiding hatred of Bolshevism' and 'a conviction of its danger to a Christian Europe'.[6]

In 1922 the Papal Nuncio in Poland succeeded Pope Benedict XV, and took for himself the name of Pius XI. He was not a man to over-react to danger. The new Pope favoured a slow, balanced approach, 'patiently hoping to reach a practical understanding with the Bolshevik regime . . . to secure a measure of protection for Catholics in the exercise of their religion'.[7]

In October 1925 Pius XI sent a senior Jesuit to the Soviet Union to study the religious situation. His report 'was gloomy in the extreme', as he found the Orthodox Church 'hopelessly divided' and the Catholics 'suffering from a complete absence of bishops and acute shortage of priests'.[8]

But none the less Pius XI was still optimistic in 1925, and confident that Communism was corrupt and transitory. The inevitable collapse of Soviet rule in Russia would give the Vatican the long hoped for opportunity to bring the Orthodox schismatics back into Rome's fold. Therefore, 'quiet but thorough preparations [were] continually being made in Rome' for eventual missionary work in the East. The Pope himself had 'acquired a large piece of land in Rome in which [would] be erected a Russian seminary for the training of priests, chosen from the exiled clergy'.[9]

A few months later a British diplomat reported that while the Soviet situation 'filled him with despair', the Pope was certain that 'Providence' would soon provide a man 'capable of stirring the sluggish minds of the Russian peasants to action and with the capacity and courage to lead them to a better state of things'.[10] Providence had already delivered Lenin's death, but the outlook was far bleaker under Stalin.

Pius XI frequently preached of 'the licence and anarchy to which Liberalism and Socialism lead society', and of the need to resist 'the disruptive influences of Bolshevism'. As Stalin's campaign of religious persecution became more severe, he responded with explicit denunciations of 'a page of history dark with persecution and atrocities inconceivable in this 20th century'.[11]

The Pope frequently drew attention to the plight of the Church under Communism, where '[p]riests and nuns were daily facing death and worse than death in the territories of the Soviet Republic unobtrusively preaching the Word of God, ministering to the sick and dying, and bringing comfort to countless homes where all hope of better things had perished'.[12]

These denunciations remained in the background during the 1920s while Nuncio Pacelli negotiated with Soviet officials in Berlin, hoping for a Concordat, or at least a bilateral agreement. As the 1930s opened, Pius XI apparently concluded that there was no hope of an understanding and launched a strident public campaign against the atheistic foe.[13]

The bitter truth was that there was little Pius XI could do. As Stalin once asked with derision, 'how many divisions does the Pope have?' There was once a time when he could have answered, 'All the armies of Europe.' In its first thousand years, the Church grew from a tiny, underground cult into a vast, multinational power. As one Catholic historian has put it, the Pope 'examined the claims of candidates to the Imperial crown, organised the crusade against the Albigensian Heresy, deposed the King of England, John Lackland; he established around St Peter's throne a ring of vassal monarchies'.[14]

After the bloody Crusades of the Middle Ages, the Popes assumed many of the characteristics of Kings. Entire Italian provinces were politically incorporated into the Papal States. Citizens owed allegiance and paid taxes to the Bishop of Rome. But the traumas of the Reformation and the Napoleonic Wars signalled the gradual erosion of the Pope's earthly powers. By the middle of the nineteenth century, inexorable political, social and cultural processes sapped, and then overwhelmed, the Vatican's political power.

The unification of Italy, confiscation of Church lands, and the Pope's confinement to the few square miles of St Peter's symbolised the loss of temporal power. By the time of Pius XI's election, the world had long since outgrown its need for Emperor Popes. In many ways, this was the inevitable outcome of the onset of modernity and the consequent rise of democracy, anti-clericalism, liberalism, socialism and Communism. As a result, by the end of the nineteenth century it was widely believed to be 'anachronistic that the Popes should play a civil political role in the modern international community of Europe'.[15]

Instead of dealing with the changing times, the previous Popes had retreated inside the Vatican's walls. Catholicism began to stagnate under a heavy load of isolationism, conservatism and increasing rigidity. This was caused in no small part by a destructive election policy that excluded all but Italians from the Papacy by stacking the votes in the College of Cardinals. For several hundred years, the Universal Catholic Church had been virtually dominated by the Italian clergy.

The world was changing rapidly, and for the worse. Even in heavily Catholic Italy, old traditions of obedience to the clergy were gone and new doctrines were rising in their place. Mussolini's Fascist government had taken over Italy, and was enthusiastically welcomed by some rank and file Catholics. In addition to the growth of Fascism in Italy and the rise of Communism in Russia, the Holy See was concerned with the increasing influence of secularisation, materialism and even the spread of Democracy. Pius XI believed that this latter form of government, 'based on almost universal franchise, had grave defects' because it allowed even a common 'porter' to govern a democratic nation.[16]

These new doctrines were even more disturbing after the collapse of the old order in Central Europe. Traditionally, the Vatican had looked to the Habsburg rulers of the Austro-Hungarian Empire for the protection of Catholicism in Central Europe. The Habsburg dynasty was the Vatican's military bulwark between Protestant Prussia and Orthodox Russia.

The dismembering of the Austro-Hungarian Empire at the end of World War I was yet another major catastrophe for the Holy See. The long serving Secretary of State, Cardinal Pietro Gasparri, considered the resultant creation of a number of small, independent states to be 'extremely unfortunate'. In his view, 'the new Czechoslovakia was so nationally heterogeneous and so geographically anomalous as to be unstable and likely to raise grave difficulties. His view of probable developments in a Serbian-dominated Yugoslavia was the same.'[17]

The collapse of a stable Catholic Central European Empire was a major blow to the Vatican's historic conception of the proper order. The new nations emphasised secularisation, and rejected the ancient concept that their citizens owed a dual allegiance to Church and State. The Vatican viewed these changes with alarm:

> With the break-down of this dual allegiance and the emergence of the omnicompetent secular State, tending in the direction of totalitarianism,

> the Catholic Church held that disastrous results had followed. The secularization of European society and its indifference to the Christian moral law in politics and economics, had led to the *laisser faire* economy (the tyranny of the astute); and that in turn to collectivist democracy (the tyranny of the supposed will of the majority); that had then been followed by war conducted between whole nations, which had given rise to totalitarianism (the tyranny of armed and unscrupulous gangs).[18]

The greatest totalitarian threat the Vatican faced still came from socialism, especially the brand advocated by the disciplined and well organised international Communist movement. By the end of the 1920s, the spread of 'atheistic Bolshevism' had made it even more imperative for the Vatican to settle its political status and stabilise its base of operations in Rome.

As a former diplomat, Pius XI understood the reality of modern times, and opened discussions to resolve the Vatican's political relationship with the Italian government. Since 1870, his predecessors had steadfastly refused to accept the loss of the Papal States to Italy and had chosen to remain prisoners in the Vatican. Pius XI offered to relinquish his claims to temporal power over the former provinces in return for permanent recognition of the sovereign status of Vatican City.

Pius XI never liked, let alone accepted, Fascism, declaring that 'no Catholic could be a genuine convinced Fascist'.[19] However, an uncomfortable accommodation with Mussolini was reached to end the Church's stagnation. In February 1929 the Lateran Treaty was concluded, settling the so-called 'Roman Question'.

All that remained of the Papal States as a result were the few square miles of Vatican City, together with some extra-territorial colleges and institutes in Rome itself. In effect, Pius XI ruled a tiny nation completely surrounded by Mussolini's Fascist state. However small his kingdom, Vatican City was finally recognised as the Pope's sovereign territory, complete with its own border security (the medieval Swiss Guards), banks, postal service, diplomats and legal system.

The Lateran Treaty was a realistic admission that the twentieth century had no place for the ancient status of the Popes as political leaders. But the loss of the Papal States had brought about a major change in the Holy See's orientation. From Leo XIII in the late 1870s, the Popes of Rome increasingly sought 'a supra-national world moral authority'.

Taking a far greater interest in issues of social justice and the rights of workers (for example, Leo XIII's seminal 'Labour' Encyclical, *Rerum Novarum*), and in wider questions, like world peace, the Holy See tried to establish itself as a moral force against the iniquities of the modern world. The Popes were becoming diplomats for peace. The Lateran Treaty contained the essentials of this modern, supra-national moral position. In Article 24, the Vatican declared that

> it desires to remain and will remain outside the temporal competitions between other States and international Congresses summoned for such an object, unless the contending parties make a unanimous appeal to its mission of peace, in all cases reserving to itself the right to assert its moral and spiritual power.[20]

After the 1929 Lateran Treaty with Mussolini and the 1933 Concordat with Hitler, Pius XI used the Church's enhanced diplomatic status as a springboard for its modern moral mission. Under the protection of sovereignty, condemnations of right-wing totalitarianism continued to issue from the Vatican. The strongest denunciations, however, were reserved for the left, particularly atheistic Communism.

As the 1930s opened, the Vatican began to come to terms with the fact that Bolshevik rule was proving more enduring than first expected. Pius XI's public statements on religious repression became more frequent and more strident, expressing 'horror and emotion over the acts of persecution and sacrilege that were being perpetrated in Russia', protesting at 'the ill-treatment and imprisonment of the Catholic clergy, including three bishops, two of Latin and one of Byzantine Rite, and against the activities of the anti-God League.'[21]

Increasingly the Church's pronouncements spoke of the 'Bolshevik Yoke' imposed by Stalin on his people. Communist principles were denounced by the Pope, effectively making it a practical impossibility for any Catholic to simultaneously be a Communist. At the same time, he condemned the increasing materialism of the age, exhorting his flock 'to return to a simpler and less ease-loving life'.[22]

At first the British Foreign Office perceived a definite lack of balance in Pius XI's concern with Communism's threat. They believed that his 'experience as Nuncio in Warsaw increased his natural hatred of Bolshevism to such an extent that it blinded him to the scarcely lesser dangers of Fascism and Nazism'. For much of the 1930s the British actually thought he was dangerously in Mussolini's pocket.[23]

But in March 1937, that view altered dramatically, when the Pope issued his famous Encyclical, *Mit brennender Sorge*, sharply attacking aspects of Nazi ideology and rule. It was smuggled into Germany and read from pulpits all over the country. In particular it denounced the many breaches of the 1933 Concordat negotiated by the Pope's Secretary of State, Cardinal Eugenio Pacelli. The Nazis' encouragement of anti-Christian doctrines, and their racist ideology and policies were also highlighted by Pius XI. 'Whoever gives the idea of race or people or state or form of government a value beyond that of the ordinary world and claims to make idols out of them, violates the divine order of things,' Pius XI declared, although he did not specifically mention Nazi attacks on Germany's Jews.[24]

The Pope had carefully prepared the ground for his anti-Nazi stand. Two weeks earlier he had issued another Encyclical, *Divini Redemptoris*, in which he declared that Communism 'is intrinsically wrong and no one who would save Christian civilization may collaborate with it in any field whatsoever'.[25] The British, though, believed that *Mit brennender Sorge* was an important turning point in Vatican policy. With almost none of its previous temporal might, the Vatican could do little but be a moral standard bearer, but Pius XI, unlike his successor, Pacelli, waved the banner well:

> Not only did His Holiness courageously assert the rights of catholicism against the attacks of international communism and German national socialism, but, in a world distracted by ideological controversies between dictatorships and democracies, capitalism and communism, abstract international ideals and concrete nationalist ambitions, he proclaimed the Church's neutrality as regards political systems and national differences, and reiterated and emphasised her unwavering support of the principles of social justice and international morality.[26]

As Pius XI edged towards death, his public statements became even more markedly anti-Nazi. One British diplomat noted that 'Nazi Germany has taken the place of Communism as the Church's most dangerous enemy'. A few days before he died in February 1939, Pius XI prepared a final speech to give to the Italian Bishops. In the most 'vigorous and caustic' language, he was ready to issue a stinging denunciation of Nazism and Fascism. The Pontiff, unfortunately, departed earth without ever delivering it.[27]

In his recent study of British–Vatican relations during this period, Owen Chadwick argues that in 'February 1939 it mattered more to the Powers who the new Pope was than at any election since the earlier nineteenth century'. The British and French hoped for a successor who would continue Pius XI's outspoken policies, especially his 'ideals of peace and justice, [and] his denunciation of racialism'. They wanted a Pope who would continue to preach with Pius XI's boldness against the Nazi menace.[28]

Naturally, Hitler and Mussolini hoped for the converse, for a Pope who would at least remain neutral in their struggle with Britain and France. Yet, as Chadwick shows in great detail, all sides supported Cardinal Eugenio Pacelli's elevation. Nearly every major player on the world stage, from very different perspectives and conflicting interests, saw Pacelli as the man most likely to serve their cause.[29]

Pacelli came from a prominent, aristocratic Roman family which had been influential in the Vatican since the early years of the nineteenth century. He could have chosen almost any career, but pursued the calling of the Church and was ordained in 1899. Although he wanted a pastoral career, he was rapidly inducted into the Holy See's Secretariat of State (the Vatican's Foreign Affairs Ministry) in 1901. He soon made a name for himself as a consummate Vatican diplomat, serving with such distinction that he was made titular Archbishop of Sardes. Prior to his posting in Munich, Pacelli had already risen to the senior levels of the Holy See's Secretariat of State, becoming Under Secretary for Extraordinary Affairs in 1914 at the age of thirty-eight.[30]

This section was in effect the Vatican's 'political organ' and administered the Holy See's relations with foreign governments, including negotiating Concordats. The Secretariat's other section, Ordinary Affairs, issued relief, alms and subsidies, and gave advice to Catholic Action throughout the world, thus influencing 'the internal politics of other countries'.[31]

After his heroic stand at Munich, Pacelli was appointed Papal Nuncio to Germany, and was responsible for negotiating Concordats with both Bavaria and Prussia. In 1929 he was made a Cardinal and the following year Pius XI appointed him Secretary of State. Described by a British diplomat as a 'man of impressively saintly character', a 'fine preacher, a man of great piety, intelligence and unusual personal charm', Eugenio Pacelli also played a major role in bringing about the Vatican's 1933 Concordat with Hitler's Germany.[32]

Two decades after his traumatic encounter in Munich, Cardinal Pacelli was lifted by his peers into the most exalted position of all, assuming the title of Pope just as the world was bracing itself for another World War. On 2 March 1939, his sixty-third birthday, Pacelli adopted the name of Pius XII. Some saw great significance in this, claiming that the new Pope thus declared his intention to continue his predecessor's anti-Nazi policies.

It is instructive to compare and contrast the decisions of Pius XI and Pius XII during their time on St Peter's Throne. The two former Nuncios had more in common than their Papal names. Both were diplomatic activists determined to resist the encroachments of Communism and re-unite the splintered Christian churches under the authority of the Vatican. In some ways, the Vatican's Cold War strategy evolved from the pre-war experiences of Pius XI. In other respects, Pius XII's policy was a radical departure from his predecessor.

In fairness, the differences between the two approaches arose less from their personalities than from the varying degree to which the Church itself was threatened by the evolution of Communism. Both were leaders of the Church in crisis, but their reactions were very different. For Pius XII, Communism was the all-consuming enemy because it posed a clear and immediate threat to the very survival of the Church. For Pius XI, Communism was but one of many pre-war threats. The danger was real, but still remote. Where Pius XI acted from a sense of immediacy about the Nazis, Pius XII adopted a more understated, diplomatic role. Certainly, Pius XI's outspokenness against Nazism's threat was all but absent from his successor's public stance. Following the outbreak of hostilities in September, Pius XII's policies, attitudes and actions pleased none of the combatants.

Pius XII's first decision was to consign his predecessor's undelivered denunciation of Nazism to the oblivion of the Vatican Secret Archives, where it remained for twenty years until John XXIII released extracts in 1959.[33] The controversy about Pius XII's policies during World War II is well known; readers may judge for themselves from the many scholarly texts which explore the evidence.[34]

On the one hand, the critics accuse Pius XII of having abrogated his moral and charitable roles during the war, of remaining silent when faced with the most urgent imperative to speak out against the massacre of millions of innocents. They believe that he should have spoken out with unequivocal moral force, instead of moderating and even masking his messages of sympathy and solidarity with the persecuted. Further, the Bishops of Europe could have been ordered to take more effective actions to discourage the atrocities, and provide greater moral and material assistance. Might not many of the dead have survived if the Pope had put the full weight of the Church's not inconsiderable resources into the anti-Nazi struggle?

On the other side, the Church has very ably defended itself from such attacks, arguing that the Pope did everything possible, under the prevailing conditions. Virtually surrounded by enemies in the tiny state of Vatican City, first by Mussolini's Fascists then by Hitler's Army, Pius XII could do little more than pursue a quiet, diplomatic approach to the great moral issues of the day. If he had done otherwise, the entire Church might well have been destroyed, and with it the last hope for the persecuted. All he could do was rescue as many potential victims as humanly possible, and this was done to the best of the Church's ability and means.

There is undoubted merit, and much substantial evidence, to support both these contending viewpoints. The truth is probably somewhere between the two extremes. In fairness to the Vatican, however, it should be recalled that none of the major powers emerged from the Holocaust with unstained records. The Western Allies, while willing to capitalise on 'atrocity stories' in their propaganda, did virtually nothing to help the victims; in some cases they actually refused Jews safe haven.

Since the end of the war, the Catholic Church has been singled out for turning its back on the Holocaust. With hindsight, one of the reasons for Pius XII's silence was his wish to secretly support the policies of the Western governments, particularly Great Britain.

In April 1943, a conference of British and American officials formally decided that nothing should be done about the Holocaust, and 'ruled out all plans for mass rescue'. The Foreign Office and the State Department were both afraid that the Third Reich would be quite willing, indeed eager, to stop the gas chambers, empty the concentration camps, and let hundreds of thousands (if not millions) of Jewish survivors emigrate to freedom in the West. As late as 1943 the British Foreign Office 'revealed in confidence' to the State Department their fear that if approaches to Germany to release Jews were 'pressed too much that that is exactly what might happen'.[35]

The bigoted reality behind the Secret Report of the Easter 1943 Bermuda Conference was that not a single Allied nation wanted to let the Jews settle in their country. The unspoken consensus was that it was better to let Hitler handle them than arrange a mass evacuation to America, Britain, or Canada. In short, the Jews were expendable to the war effort. The Soviets, too, had a poor record on this score and, of course, were busily carrying out their own atrocities during and after the war.[36]

In fact, the Vatican's shocking silence towards the Jews was fully in accord with Western policy. This is well illustrated by an incident which occurred in 1944, just as Adolf Eichmann was preparing his last major extermination operation. Most of Hungary's 800,000 Jews had survived until the Germans installed a completely pro-Nazi government in March 1944.

An urgent plea was dispatched to the Vatican by an American delegation. Acting on behalf of the War Refugee Board, they requested Papal intervention to save the helpless victims. 'It is both timely and fitting we believe that the moral values involved and the spiritual consequences that must flow from indulgence in the persecutions and mass murder of helpless men, women and children be brought to the attention of the Hungarian authorities and people'. They pleaded that 'His Holiness may find it appropriate to express Himself on this subject to the authorities and people of Hungary, great numbers of whom profess spiritual adherence to the Holy See.'[37]

Over the following months, Hungary's Jews were rounded up and concentrated in hastily prepared ghettos, where they were horrifically maltreated. Most were then shipped off to Auschwitz and murdered. By October, their numbers had been drastically reduced, but the Americans received information that up to 300,000 survivors were about to be deported to their certain deaths. The Vatican was approached once more, and the Pope asked to broadcast a public appeal to the people and clergy of Hungary, 'urging them to temporarily conceal Jews and oppose the deportation and extermination of these people to the full extent of their powers'.[38]

Rumours that the Pope might actually do this apparently reached the British, who were alarmed lest His Holiness go too far. They instructed their Ambassador to speak to Franklin Gowen, an American diplomat at the Holy See. Gowen reported that the Ambassador 'feared the Holy Father may make a Radio appeal on behalf of Jews in Hungary and that in his appeal he may also criticise what the Russians are doing in occupied territory. [He] said something should be done to prevail upon the Pope not to do this as it would have very serious political repercussions.'[39]

Gowen was not in the least perturbed, having already learned that Pius XII had decided against making the appeal, 'because if he did so he would in fairness to all have to criticise the Russians'. Without revealing this, the American quietly persuaded his British colleague to take no action to intervene with the Vatican.[40] Apparently the diplomats knew that their leaders wanted to avoid conflict with Stalin, so Hungary's Jews were abandoned.

It is ironic that Pius XII is condemned for following Western policy in public, while his private actions may have saved more Jewish lives than all the Allied governments put together. For example, the Vatican Nuncio in Berlin protected 28,000 Jews in the heart of the Third Reich itself by cleverly insisting that the Vatican would not allow German Catholics to divorce their Jewish spouses. As long as they were married to Catholics, the Jews were safe.[41] Using similar pretexts, the Vatican temporarily delayed deportation of Jews in the Balkans and slowed implementation of the racial laws for several years. Such efforts were ultimately ineffectual as most of the pro-Nazi clerics, such as Slovakia's Monsignor Tiso, ignored the Vatican.

In countries like Italy, where the Pope had some political influence, he used it well. Largely through his personal intercession, Mussolini's forces deliberately bungled the shipment of Jews from Italian-occupied areas. The Germans were so convinced of stereotypical Italian incompetence, that they did not realise the cleverness behind the botched shipment schedules:

> In Italy . . . the deportation and murder of Jews began only after . . . the Germans became masters of the country. There were Italian priests and

> monks, who like those elsewhere, went out of their way to save Jewish lives. Several thousand Jews were at one time harbored within Vatican City. The sympathies of Pope Pius XII were not outspoken, though it was known that he condemned the barbarities which were being perpetrated against the Jews.[42]

Moreover, the Vatican bank was the conduit for secret bribes to save lives. The Israeli government publicly credits the Vatican for secretly negotiating payments that ransomed thousands of Jews from Nazi custody. Pius XII was not as evil as his critics claim, nor as righteous as his defenders hope. The record is mixed to say the least. The Pope was silent in public, but helped some Jews in secret. Churchill and Roosevelt made speeches in public, but their policy was to abandon the Jews. If the Pope was a hypocrite, he was not alone.

Far from being a covert supporter of Hitler, the Holy See's secret disgust with both Nazism and Communism was well known to Western diplomats. During the war, Monsignor Domenico Tardini, Under Secretary of State for Extraordinary Affairs, conveyed voluminous memoranda to Western diplomats. He emphasised that 'Europe is faced with two great dangers; Nazism and Communism. Both are opposed to religion, to Christian civilization, to personal liberty, to peace.' That the Vatican viewed Communism as the greater of the two evils is certain, as Tardini added that:

> If even one of these evils – Communism, for example – were to remain an active force, Europe would, within a few years, be in a situation identical with that in which it finds itself today. In fact, Communism, once victorious, would find no further resistance in Continental Europe and would spread among the germanic peoples, the slav races and finally among the latins. In consequence, within the space of a few years there would be an enormous Communistic bloc, whose inevitable destiny it would be to provoke a war with England and America, regarded by the Communists as a Capitalistic bloc.[43]

In May 1943 Tardini openly predicted that 'there is ground for fearing (a) that the war will end in a preponderantly Russian victory in Europe and (b) that the result will be a rapid diffusion of Communism in a great part of continental Europe and the destruction there of European civilization and Christian culture.'[44]

Imminent Allied victory also realised Monsignor Tardini's worst fears – Soviet occupation of most of Central and Eastern Europe, and formation of a powerful Communist bloc. Previously there had even been talk of some sort of *rapprochement* between Moscow and the Vatican. However, as the Soviet Army advanced westwards, Moscow launched a vitriolic propaganda campaign, accusing the Holy Father of being 'pro-Fascist' and in favour of a German victory. Moscow had somehow learned of Pius XII's post-war plans for a Catholic buffer state in Central Europe, free of both German and Soviet influence. Hence their propaganda campaign to discredit the Vatican.

By February 1944, American intelligence had discovered the Soviets' purpose. They believed that the Soviets were very well informed of the Holy See's plans and activities, noting that the 'projects of the Vatican for the re-establishment of a Habsburg Monarchy in Central Europe and plans for the re-organization of a Catholic Federation to counteract the Soviets' religious policy, are no secret to Moscow'.[45]

US intelligence predicted that the Vatican would try to exclude America from Central Europe as well. Confirmation came from a senior SS intelligence officer debriefed by the Americans after the war. Albert Hartl left the Catholic priesthood in 1934, and the following year became Chief of Church Information in the notorious Reich Security Main Office (RSHA), with the rank of SS Major.

Hartl was, in fact, the Nazis' specialist in Catholic religious matters.[46] During the war he wrote numerous 'reports concerning political and religious trends outside Germany'. The SS officer was also sent to Rome on an especially sensitive mission in 1944 'to establish contact through the Vatican with the Western powers'. He was to convince the West to break with Stalin, 'and join with [Germany] against the Bolsheviks'. Hartl's senior position in German intelligence certainly gave him access to top secret information, as he told the Americans:

> When the Vatican realized that the United States and the Soviet Union would be victorious in the Second World War, it started immediately to form a bloc of Western European nations to effect a counter-balance to these two countries. France, 'the most beloved daughter of the Catholic Church', was to take the leading part . . . Therefore, the Vatican turned its sympathies away from the Vichy government and toward the Free French under De Gaulle . . .
>
> At the same time, the Vatican hopes to create a similar unity among the powers of Eastern Europe. This bloc was initiated by de Gasperi . . . later Premier of Italy. De Gasperi, by means of this bloc, sought to increase not

> only the influence of the Vatican, but also that of Italy. The plan was quickly supported by other Vatican dignitaries – among them were Archbishops Tardini and Montini, Bishop Hudal, and the Bishops of Gorizia and of Ljubljana.[47]

As we shall see, this tiny but highly influential cabal around Pius XII indeed favoured this secret policy. The two men most closely involved were Alcide de Gasperi, post-war leader of the Italian Christian Democrat party, and Monsignor Giovanni Montini, the Pope's Under Secretary of State for Ordinary Affairs since 1937.

Like Pius XII, Montini came from a well-to-do Catholic family with good connections to powerful figures at the Vatican. He, too, had pursued a brilliant career in the Secretariat of State, and established close relations with lay Italian Catholic political leaders. US intelligence described Montini as one of 'the most authoritative persons in the Vatican', who 'for many years has been among the important personalities in the Vatican Secretaryship of State'. It can hardly be alleged that Montini formulated policy without Pius XII's knowledge. Following Cardinal Maglione's death in August 1944, the Pope did not fill the Secretary of State position, effectively re-assuming the role himself.

Although the Pope formulated his own foreign policy, Montini and the other Under Secretary of State, Monsignor Tardini, were certainly among 'the most influential people of the Vatican'.[48] Both were in constant, daily personal contact with Pius XII, with whom Montini in particular enjoyed a 'special confidence' and 'a certain affinity of temperament'.

Their personal relationship was certainly close, but it extended into matters of high policy. In practice, Montini was Pius XII's personal assistant; he gave Montini 'particularly delicate and difficult tasks to perform'. During the war Pius asked Montini to organise the Vatican Information Service, whose ostensible task was to trace missing persons, refugees and prisoners of war. But US intelligence suspected that its role went far beyond humanitarian purposes.

Pius XII also asked Montini 'to supervise Vatican efforts for the resettlement of the millions of refugees and displaced persons who swarmed into Western Germany, Austria, Italy, and France' after the war. Further, as one of the Holy See's finest diplomats, Montini controlled foreign policy 'in regard to Italian politics'. As will be seen, each of these 'delicate and difficult tasks' brought Montini into the centre of the Pope's clandestine activities.[49]

Montini deservedly has a reputation as an anti-Fascist and Democrat. He had a close personal and political relationship with Alcide de Gasperi, who spearheaded the post war anti-Communist fight through the Christian Democrat party. The Vatican bureaucrat and the Italian Catholic politician had begun their close working relationship during the war. According to US intelligence they spent many weekends together discussing 'important political problems', particularly the Communist threat.[50] In fact they were working on active anti-Communist plans in Central and Eastern Europe. In the fearful days that followed Stalin's occupation of these regions, the two men forged even closer bonds.

It was probably not surprising, then, that the Americans concluded in 1944 that Moscow's anti-Vatican campaign 'should be considered as an attempt to serve as a serious warning to the Pope to refrain from any interference in problems affecting Catholic citizens' in areas occupied by the Red Army. Ominously, they also predicted that if Pius XII did not heed this threat, 'Moscow may have recourse to an anti-clerical movement among Soviet citizens of the Catholic creed'.[51]

The war had no sooner ended than this analysis was proved correct. New battle lines were immediately drawn, this time between the Soviets and their new satellites, and the Western democracies. It was a shattering blow to Pius XII, who became 'more than ever oppressed by the Communist menace in Europe i.e. [the] combination of atheistical materialism and Russian imperialism'.[52]

Where the Vatican was publicly silent towards Soviet and German atrocities during the war, Pius XII reversed his own policy in 1945 and decided that now the Church's voice had to be raised against Stalin's crimes. Montini was thrown into the fray, providing detailed reports to the Western powers on conditions in the Soviet zone of Berlin. They were replete with stories of confiscations, deportations, the proliferation of abortions as a result of widespread rape by Soviet troops, disease, deprivation and deliberate starvation.[53]

It was a scene of horror which the Vatican reported from every country under Soviet occupation. In Hungary, the Soviet troops

> under the eyes of their own officers and other civil authorities, who almost always remained passive, gave themselves over to unbridled sacking of private houses, sparing not even the Bishop's palace and the rectories, and putting to death not a few of the civil population. Even the Apostolic Nunciature was invaded and completely sacked, in spite of the protests of His Excellency the Nuncio. Women from ten years of age to seventy, not excluding religious women (about twenty) were raped . . . Bishop Apor of Györ was killed by a Russian soldier, while defending the honor and the life of the Faithful . . . Bishop de Mikes died from apoplexy, which was the effect of the sufferings inflicted on him by Russian soldiers. Many priests lost their lives while defending their people from similar outrages.[54]

By 1950 the Vatican had gathered enough intelligence to show that the same situation, to one degree or another, existed in all the other countries where the Communists had effective control – Albania, Czechoslovakia, Bulgaria, Romania, the Baltic States, Yugoslavia, eastern Germany and Poland. In newly acquired Catholic areas of the Ukraine, the hybrid Uniate Church was forcibly disbanded and united with the Communist-controlled Orthodox Church. Hundreds of priests were arrested or deported.[55]

As news from behind the 'Iron Curtain' filtered into the Holy See from 'reliable confidential channels',[56] the Vatican increased their criticism. In return, the Soviets stepped up their barrage against Pius XII. One British report summarised Moscow's propaganda thus:

> The Pope is charged with being a reactionary, a supporter and protector of Hitler and the Nazis and of Mussolini and the Fascists . . . an enemy of democracy . . . an opponent of reforms benefiting the masses, but a champion of the vested interests of the privileged classes. He is accused of intervening in political life and, in general, of plotting to restore Fascist tyranny and to rob the progressive democracies of their newly-won . . . liberties. He is also denounced as an ally of Anglo-Saxon capitalistic imperialism.[57]

To bolster such claims, prominent clerics, including Cardinal Mindszenty of Hungary and Archbishop Stepinac of Croatia, were arrested, tried and imprisoned on basically trumped up charges. It was hardly surprising, then, that the British Ambassador's 1945 *Annual Report* noted that, with 'the eclipse of nazism and the passing of the persecution of the Church in Germany and German-occupied territory, bolshevism, with its worldwide Communist satellite organisation, automatically regained its former position as the Church's Enemy No 1'. The Vatican was 'engaged in a life-and-death struggle for survival'.[58]

The bureaucrats at the Foreign Office in London noted with satisfaction that the Vatican had apparently returned to form and was raising a long-term moral struggle against the evils of Stalinism. 'Believing that . . . the ultimate triumph of the Church is sure, the Vatican tends to take longer views than do secular governments . . . As is often said "The Church is eternal and can afford to wait".'[59]

There were clues that the Vatican was in fact pursuing a more immediate anti-Communist strategy. The British had discerned at least one unexpected post-war trend. They noted that Communist propaganda was increasingly linking the Vatican with Nazism and Fascism. The British admitted that it was 'a score on which the papacy is unfortunately slightly vulnerable in view of its attitude towards many men, who are or were virtually war criminals'.[60]

The Americans also received clues that the Church's strategy of patient resistance to Communism was being scrapped. In September 1946, Franklin Gowen reported that an extremely gloomy mood prevailed in the Vatican. According to Cardinal Tisserant, the 'outstanding Vatican authority on Russian affairs', a new war was imminent. 'Russia [was] now obviously in [a] favorable position to over-run Western Europe gearing Germany and Communist organizations to her war machine.'[61]

Between the Holy Years of 1925 and 1950, the enormous growth of Communism was threatening the survival of the Church. Persecution abounded in 1925, but a quarter of a century later had reached unparalleled levels. Pius XII must have reflected bitterly on the setbacks suffered by the Church over the previous century. First had come the rise of Italian nationalism, culminating in loss of the Church's lands. Then, in the aftermath of World War I, the Holy See had witnessed the destruction of the Catholic Central European Empire, and Bolshevism's first victory in Russia. Worse, Hitler's maniacal policies had awakened the Communist colossus which now controlled the beloved Catholic nations of Central Europe.

Which of the Pope's three crowns would Pius XII wear to meet the latest menace? At least the first crown remained undiminished. This signifies that the Pope is the spiritual head of the world wide Church, the 'Vicar of Christ' on earth and successor to St Peter.

In matters of theology, Pius's interpretations bound other priests as surely as his predecessors'. But after the war, millions of Pius XII's flock were forcibly separated from his theological leadership.

The second crown, too, remained undisturbed. Pius was the Bishop of Rome, titular head of the Roman Catholic Church with its vast administrative hierarchy of priests, nuns and lay people. They were, though, no match for Stalin's armies.

However, little was left of the third crown, representing the Pope's status as a sovereign head of state, equal in rank to Presidents and Prime Ministers. But Pius XII's temporal crown was in fact a pale reflection of its once mighty self. He had no armies to command, only diplomats and their fellow travellers. In the Church's life and death struggle against Communism, the Pope opted for espionage and all that went with it. Before the end of World War II, the diplomatic cabal around the Pope had recruited agents for the next, and final war with Communism.

The genesis of these activities can probably be traced to the Pope's request to Montini to organise the Vatican Information Service. The American Army had observed the suspicious activities of this humanitarian agency as early as March 1944, noting that it had been 'organized for handling welfare messages by radio to and from prisoners of war in North Africa'. The Americans believed that some kind of clandestine activity was taking place and ordered that no 'extension of the Vatican Information Service can be contemplated, having due regard for security consideration'.[62] If later reports can be believed, the Vatican Information Service expanded after the war into a major intelligence force.

American intelligence had been taking an active interest in the Vatican's response to the 'Red Menace' for some time. Indeed, 'high ranking Allied intelligence officers' were reportedly in 'close relations with high Vatican dignitaries' well before the Nazi collapse.[63] In October 1945 the Americans noted 'the preponderant influence which the Jesuit fathers, who always present concrete and well-reasoned projects, tend to exercize at the Curia'. According to their source, the Jesuits were leading the Holy See's struggle with Moscow, and the

> one positive step so far taken by the Vatican has been the organization of a penetration program; especially resourceful personnel is being sent into the area to lead the catholic elements and through their zeal and example keep these elements from wavering. Most of these agents are Jesuits.[64]

In late 1947, US intelligence received completely fantastic reports of Vatican involvement in clandestine anti-Communist operations. Jack Neal, head of the State Department's Division of Foreign Activity Correlation (a top secret intelligence group with the US Foreign Service), addressed a memo to FBI director J. Edgar Hoover, the chief of Naval intelligence and American diplomats at the Holy See:

> . . . source which is considered most reliable has reported that the Vatican Information Service, with Headquarters in Vatican City, is the international espionage service of the Vatican.
>
> The same source reports that during and after the last war, Russian Army deserters organized clandestinely in Germany and Austria. Shortly after VE Day, this group was rumored to consist of several million people . . . It seems, moreover, that the Vatican decided to make use of this clandestine organization, and reportedly has already spent millions of dollars toward this end, possibly through the above-mentioned Information Service.
>
> Most of the deserters are said to be Estonians, Lithuanians, Czechs, and other nationals of predominantly Catholic background, who were forcefully inducted into the Russian Army during the war.
>
> The Vatican is said to be presently organizing these men within the respective countries in which they are located, and reportedly is also planning to send to those countries in the future additional man-power, under the guise of displaced persons or immigrants. These groups allegedly are being organized in the various countries under the name of the Christian Front . . . A primary prerequisite towards admission consists of each member taking an oath of allegiance to the Church, which entails loyalty to the latter over and above the prospective member's national allegiance. It is, of course, possible that individuals who join this organization are primarily interested in fighting Soviet Communism, and the Red Army in particular . . .
>
> It is stated that since the Vatican is convinced that a Soviet invasion of Central and Western Europe is inevitable, it considers this recruiting and support of a clandestine buffer contingent a justifiable measure of self-defense and self-preservation.[68]

In hindsight, it is clear that few believed the Vatican had abandoned its patient resistance policy and launched a covert war. Such reports were promptly discarded as outlandish exaggeration. How could such a grand enterprise have hitherto gone undetected? Where would the Vatican find the resources for such an immense scheme, particularly as much of its wealth was in fixed assets?

An American diplomat at the Holy See cautioned that 'reports of the Vatican spending "millions of dollars," on para-military organizations should be treated with considerable reserve'. He outlined the moral and practical impediments to their involvement, citing the views of a 'highly placed Jesuit priest whose name has been linked with confidential information services'. His Jesuit informant knew nothing of the 'Christian Front', although on 'one occasion he professed to have a vague recollection of such anti-Communist groups in East Prussia and the Baltic countries. He believed, however, that they had been heavily penetrated by Russian agents.'[66]

Despite these overblown claims, there were grains of truth to some of the intelligence reaching Western agencies. As we shall see, the same group of senior Vatican officials who supported the Central European programme was also directing clandestine anti-Communist operations in this area. To say that its efforts led to disaster would be an understatement. The tiny cabal of right-wing officials around Pius XII was co-ordinating that most secret and most shameful operation in Vatican history: they were recruiting ex-Nazis to fight the Communists for control of Central and Eastern Europe.

Later, after American intelligence had staged a burglary at the centre of the Vatican's Nazi smuggling network, bugged its code room and recruited their own informants, it was discovered that many of the worst rumours were true. Some of the Vatican's anti-Communist recruits were notorious Nazi war criminals. A few Church officials were laundering stolen Nazi treasure to finance their 'freedom fighters'. Although it was not discovered until much, much later, Communist agents had in fact penetrated their command structure from top to bottom. The Vatican's 'anti-Communist' networks were secretly manipulated from Moscow. Some of the Vatican's Nazis were really spies for the Kremlin.

In the beginning, the Vatican's involvement with Nazi fugitives was disorganised, even amateurish. The first priest who ran the operation was Bishop Alois Hudal. As already seen, Hudal had been closely associated with Montini and de Gasperi in formulating the Holy See's response to the expected Allied victory. Now his job was to rescue as many Nazis as possible from what he believed was 'Allied vengeance', a task he grasped with considerable enthusiasm. Pius XII's nightmares were only beginning, as Hudal's wildly erratic operations led the Vatican on the first steps down the road to the Ratlines, and tragedy.

2

Bishop Hudal and the First Wave

The Vatican's road to disaster was paved with good intentions. The scandal of the Ratlines actually began innocently enough. At war's end the Western-occupied zones of Germany, Austria and Italy were teeming with millions of DPs – Displaced Persons from all parts of Europe. Most were legitimate victims of Nazism and Communism. They were the uprooted who had left their homes not through choice, but as a direct consequence of the war. Most could not return home because of Stalin's brutal occupation of Central and Eastern Europe.

Many were Catholics, and it was not surprising that the Vatican took up their cause with the Western military authorities. Months before the Third Reich disintegrated, the Holy See's Secretariat of State launched a concerted lobbying campaign. They wanted permission for selected priests to visit the civilian and prisoner of war camps. The aims of these missions were noble and humanitarian – to provide spiritual and material assistance, and to extend the hand of Christian Charity to the needy.

Among these largely innocent masses, however, were many Nazis who had the blood of millions of innocents on their hands. It was hard for the Church to know who was who. The Vatican has consistently claimed that they were unaware of the identity of those who were undeserving of their humanitarian assistance. But some influential priests not only knew who the Nazis were, they actively sought them out and provided extra-special treatment . . .

In 1948 Franz Stangl wearily trudged along the road to Rome. Three years earlier he had been an important man: Commandant of the Treblinka extermination camp. He was meticulous in his work. When the boxcars crammed full of deported men, women and children arrived, all they saw was an ordinary train station neatly decorated with flower boxes. In the distance were a few innocuous looking sheds. Franz Stangl insisted on order. The passengers were told to disembark for a routine rest stop and showers. As they disrobed, people were told to secure their valuables in numbered stalls so they could easily find them later.

It was all so swift, so organised, so deadly. The showers were actually a gas chamber where 900,000 people, mostly Jews, were murdered immediately upon arrival. Unlike Auschwitz, no work was done here. Treblinka existed for one purpose only: mass murder of human beings. Franz Stangl had commanded the Third Reich's most efficient death factory.

When it became clear the Nazis would lose the war, Treblinka was razed and efforts made to hide its traces. Poplar trees were planted over the site and a small farm built from the bricks of the dismantled gas chambers. A Ukrainian family was moved in, awaiting the arrival of the Red Army. Stangl would not be there: he had been transferred to fight Yugoslav partisans.

When the Third Reich collapsed, Stangl was captured by the American Army and interned at Bad Ischl, near Salzburg in Austria. In July 1945 he was transferred to the huge prisoner of war camp at Glasenbach, where he remained a virtually anonymous figure for over two years. Around Christmas 1947, the Americans handed Stangl over to the Austrians, who held him in the open prison at Linz. There were many Austrians willing to turn a blind eye towards a good comrade. The following May Stangl 'escaped' and travelled south. One of the most wanted war criminals had slipped the Allied net and was trudging slowly on his way to Rome.

After many days on dusty roads, he walked wearily across a bridge over the Tiber, looking for a priest whose name had been whispered back in the prison camps. Suddenly he found himself face to face with a former comrade, a security police officer who had served in Vichy France. 'Are you on your way to see Hulda?', the man asked. 'Yes,' Stangl replied, 'but I don't know where to find him.'[1] Years later, after he was re-arrested, Stangl's recollections of his escape were taped in a German prison by his noted biographer, Gitta Sereny. Stangl said that when he came to Rome he was in fact looking for Bishop Alois Hudal, Rector of the Pontificio Santa Maria dell'Anima, one of three seminaries for German priests in Rome. It was Hudal's name that had been whispered throughout the Nazi underground:

> The Bishop came into the room where I was waiting and he held out both his hands and said 'You must be Franz Stangl. I was expecting you.'[2]

Stangl described the power and influence of Hudal's extensive smuggling network for fugitive Nazis. It was Hudal who arranged 'quarters in Rome where I was to stay till my papers came through. And he gave me a bit more money – I had almost nothing left.' After several weeks, Hudal 'called me in and gave me my new passport – a Red Cross Passport . . . [he] got me an entrance visa to Syria and a job in a textile mill in Damascus, and he gave me a ticket for the ship. So I went to Syria.'[3]

But when he was given his passport, the punctilious German noticed that his names had been reversed and said indignantly, 'They made a mistake, this is incorrect. My name is Franz D. Paul Stangl.' Hudal patted the naive Stangl on the shoulder and said in his fatherly way, 'Let's let sleeping dogs lie – never mind.'[4] Hudal knew that Stangl should never risk using his real name again. Like numerous fugitive Nazis, Stangl was very grateful to the charitable organisations of the Catholic Church which aided his escape.

Gitta Sereny asked Monsignor Karl Bayer for a comment. At the time, Bayer was the Rome Director of the Catholic relief organisation, Caritas International. He said that such mistakes were unfortunately commonplace in the post-war chaos. After all, the Church was dealing with enormous numbers of refugees. Stangl, he confirmed, probably 'would have received money – which came from the Vatican – or a ticket to Syria, but rarely both'. Bayer conceded that there were perhaps 'exceptional cases where "refugees" were given a ticket *and* money, but it didn't happen to anyone I helped.'[5]

Bayer initially played down Hudal's access to International Red Cross documents, but eventually admitted, 'Perhaps Hudal *did* get batches of passports for these particular people.' Finally he conceded that the money Hudal gave Stangl would certainly have come from Vatican funds. 'The Pope did provide money for this; in driblets sometimes, but it did come.'[6]

Was Stangl an isolated case, a regrettable but unavoidable accident by a legitimate Catholic charity? Or was he one of many who escaped via Hudal's secret Church connection? Simon Wiesenthal, who was responsible for Stangl's eventual recapture in Brazil in 1967, believes that a sophisticated Vatican network was involved.

Wiesenthal was in the courtroom when Stangl went on trial in Düsseldorf in West Germany, and heard him tell the judge that the Nazis had advance knowledge of the Vatican escape route. 'During the time we were in the internment camps we knew that we should go to Rome . . . Catholics should go to Bishop Hudal [who would] give us an International Red Cross Identity card and then a visa.'[7]

The assistance Stangl received from Hudal is strikingly similar to that provided to other German war criminals. Gustav Wagner, one of Stangl's close friends, was also helped by Hudal. Wagner was the Commandant at Sobibor at the time Stangl was running Treblinka. These were the major Nazi extermination camps in occupied Poland. After their escape from Allied custody, they bumped into one another in Graz, Austria, and travelled together on the long road to Rome. They eventually ended up in Brazil, and both praised Bishop Hudal's help.[8]

Wiesenthal alleges that yet another Nazi, Alois Brunner, also escaped via Hudal's Vatican smuggling network. Brunner, one of the most brutal senior officials in the Jewish 'deportation' programme, escaped to Damascus in Syria where he still lives under the name of Dr Georg Fischer. By all accounts he remains totally unrepentant about the hundreds of thousands of victims he sent to be 'processed' by Stangl and Wagner.

Wiesenthal is convinced that Hudal was also responsible for smuggling the most infamous war criminal of them all: Adolf Eichmann, the chief architect of the Holocaust. As head of the SS Department for 'Jewish Affairs', Eichmann's careful supervision ensured that men like Brunner, Stangl and Wagner ran the machinery of death at peak capacity. Wiesenthal believes that Hudal equipped Eichmann with a new identity as a Croatian refugee called 'Richard Klement', and sent him to Genoa. There Eichmann was apparently hidden in a monastery under Archbishop Siri's charitable control, before finally being smuggled to South America.[9]

Someone so notorious could not be protected for ever. Eichmann was eventually tracked down in Argentina by Israeli intelligence, kidnapped, tried and executed in Jerusalem in 1962. What angers Wiesenthal is that a Catholic relief organisation, Caritas, 'paid all of the travelling expenses for Eichmann' to reach South America.[10]

Official Vatican historian, Father Robert Graham, admits that

Hudal might have helped 'a handful, a mere handful of Nazi war criminals to escape':

> When Eichmann was arrested it was alleged he passed through Rome and got some help from Bishop Hudal. Hudal was asked about this and said, 'I don't know, I helped a lot of people and Eichmann may have been among them. I don't know, he didn't use his own name'. Hudal did help Germans go off to Latin America, particularly Argentina, but that wasn't the Vatican, that wasn't Pius XII.[11]

If Eichmann was a case of unauthorised assistance, he was certainly not the only instance. Hudal seemed to make mistakes with frightening regularity. Wiesenthal recalls: 'During my search for Eichmann I found out that many [war criminals] were living in monasteries, equipped by Hudal with false documents', showing they were refugees. One point is certain: many war criminals who escaped to South America have gratefully acknowledged that they owed their freedom to the Austrian-born Bishop.

Hudal was certainly no stranger to the Nazis, having served during the war as Commissioner of the Episcopate for German-speaking Catholics in Italy, as well as Father Confessor to Rome's German community. Born on 31 May 1885, he became Professor of Old Testament Studies at the University of Graz in 1919. Four years later Hudal moved to Rome as Rector of the Pontificio Santa Maria dell'Anima, on the ironically named Via della Pace, the street of peace. If Wiesenthal was correct, it was anything but peaceful during Hudal's tenure. The Anima had been established in the sixteenth century for the theological education of German priests, but it was a hotbed of Nazi-smuggling in the post-war era.

It is not surprising that Wiesenthal accuses Hudal. The Bishop's pro-Nazi views were well known. Even Father Graham concedes the point: 'Hudal was rather notorious in Rome for being openly philo-Nazi. He had this idea that it was his divine call to settle relations between the Nazis and the Catholic Church.'[12] By the early 1930s, Hudal openly supported Hitler, travelling widely through Italy and Germany to address large crowds of German-speaking Catholics. From the very beginning of Nazi rule, he warmly embraced the new goverment as his own.[13]

Hudal was an ardent anti-Communist and convinced that the real threat in Europe was 'atheistic Bolshevism'. He therefore advocated reaching an understanding with the National Socialists, the only power strong enough to defeat Communism. Hudal believed that this was a life and death struggle for the Church, one that would decide whether Communism or Christianity would eventually survive.

His first contact with a senior Nazi was probably with Franz von Papen, Hitler's Vice Chancellor. Von Papen arrived in Rome in April 1933 to negotiate the Concordat between Berlin and the Holy See. A month later, Hudal gave a speech at the Anima in Rome. Among the invited guests were members of the German Diplomatic Corps, as well as local representatives of various Nazi organisations. The Bishop told his approving audience that 'in this hour of destiny all German Catholics living abroad welcome the new German Reich, whose philosophies accord both with Christian and National values'.[14]

There is no direct evidence that Hudal actually worked with von Papen on the 1933 Concordat, although he was closely connected with the Vatican's chief negotiator, Secretary of State Pacelli. However, by the following year Hudal had certainly become von Papen's political ally, and was consulted by him immediately following the unsuccessful Nazi *putsch* in Austria.[15]

Within a few years, Hudal's Nazi sentiments became public knowledge. In 1936 he published a 'philosophical' treatise, *The Foundations of National Socialism*. He later modestly claimed that his work examined trends in the Nazi Party, 'objectively as a scholar, not as a politician'. In fact, the book was fulsome in its praise for the ideas, programme and actions of the Nazis, although it did criticise anti-Christian elements in the Party. By this time many of the worst features of Nazi rule were already apparent. Yet Hudal argued that there were no philosophical reasons why 'good' Nazis and Catholics could not co-operate closely to build a Christian Europe.

Hudal was not the only cleric to hold these views. The Primate of the Austrian Church, Cardinal Theodore Innitzer, was at that time strongly pro-Nazi. It was natural, therefore, that he gave Hudal's book an 'imprimatur', or official Church permission for publication. The Cardinal glowingly endorsed it 'as a valuable attempt to pacify the German people's religious situation'.[16]

However, Hudal's book received a mixed reception from the Nazis. His friend and Vice Chancellor, Franz von Papen, was delighted 'that a Bishop of Hudal's rank so praised the positive achievements of National Socialism'. Nevertheless, Propaganda Minister Joseph Göbbels promptly banned it, reflecting the Nazis' hostility towards Vatican functionaries in general.

Leading Nazi ideologist, Alfred Rosenberg, justified the decision, declaring that 'we do not allow the fundaments of the Movement to be analyzed and criticized by a Roman Bishop'.[17] Despite the book's harsh treatment, Hudal was apparently well regarded by the Nazi hierarchy, for he held a Golden Nazi Party membership badge.[18]

Apparently Hudal's high Nazi profile did not harm his Vatican career. Since 1930 he had been a consultor in the Holy Office, a senior Vatican tribunal working 'in the most rigorous secrecy', as US intelligence reported. Founded in 1542 'to combat the Calvinist and Lutheran revolts', its role was basically ideological purity, 'to defend the faith, Catholic morals, and the unity of the Church against heresies, schisms' etc.

The Holy Office was 'concerned with the protection and surveillance' of religious doctrine. To put it bluntly, it was the section of the Vatican concerned with censoring books and educational materials. Hudal was no stranger to that. Today the Holy Office is the Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith, and remains one of the most influential Vatican Ministries, the 'guardian of orthodoxy of doctrine' and enforcer of religious discipline.[19] The post of consultor is extremely important in this work, as these prelates 'have to examine, investigate, and prepare all the cases submitted to the Holy Office'.

Yet as Hudal's views grew more stridently and publicly pro-Nazi, nothing was done either to discipline or remove him from this powerful post. Instead the Vatican promoted him in June 1933 from priest to Titular Bishop, an extremely rare honour for a relatively lowly Rector of a teaching college.[20]

Despite this promotion, Father Graham distances Hudal's pro-Nazi political sentiments from the Vatican. They certainly had nothing to do with his choice Vatican assignments; he was merely 'a Catholic Bishop in good standing and among such people there's room for a lot of political opinions'.[21]

Father Burkhart Schneider, a German Jesuit, is also certain that 'Bishop Hudal was not at all close to the Vatican. And certainly not close to the Holy Father. He was . . . how shall I put it . . . even then slightly suspect – not taken seriously. He desperately *wanted* to be taken seriously.' Schneider, who worked with Graham preparing the Holy See's defence of Pius XII's wartime role, was adamant that Hudal 'was very much on the fringes'.[22]

By contrast, Father Jacob Weinbacher, who was in a better position to know, has no doubt that 'Hudal was very close to Pius XII . . . they were friends.' Weinbacher became Rector of the Anima in 1952, and clearly recalls several conversations in which his predecessor discussed his close personal relationship with the Pope. 'I talked a lot with him and this certainly emerged very clearly.'[23]

Weinbacher's account is not the only one which contradicts Graham's and Schneider's contention that Hudal had no influence with leading Vatican officials. One version alleges that Hudal and Pius XII had a longstanding friendship dating from 1924, when Pacelli was the Nuncio in Germany.[24]

Another more conspiratorial version is that Hudal followed in his patron's brilliant footsteps. Hudal's appointment to the Holy Office in 1930, and his elevation in 1933 to Titular Bishop of Ela, were due to Pacelli's growing influence at the Holy See. Certainly Hudal's promotions followed Pacelli's appointment as Secretary of State in 1930.

According to this theory, Hudal's close relationship with Pacelli is illustrated by the fact that 'Pacelli personally celebrated [Hudal's] mass of consecration' as a Bishop in the Anima. In fairness to Pacelli, it should be noted that he was by then the official Protector of the Anima. However, according to this version, their relationship was also very political, stemming from Hudal's role as Pacelli's adviser in the lengthy negotiations leading to the 1934 Concordat with Austria.[25]

Far from being just another anonymous cleric on the fringes of the Vatican, 'Hudal may well have been the sounding board for the Pope in the German speaking countries'.[26] The current Rector of the Anima, Monsignor Johannes Nedbal, is certain that Hudal was very close to Pius XI. Nedbal cites Hudal's part in the Austrian Concordat as the reason for his appointment as Bishop.

Nedbal admitted in a recent interview that Hudal's career was most exceptional. In his view, 'it's quite rare' that the head of a Roman college would be made a Bishop. Nedbal confirmed that Pacelli presided at Hudal's consecration as a Bishop, but insisted that this in no way recognised Hudal's pro-Nazi views. Rather, it was 'because Cardinal Pacelli was the protector of the Anima'.[27]

While conceding that Hudal worked directly with two Popes, Nedbal is rather scathing about his predecessor's rescue work for Nazi war criminals. 'It's quite possible that he helped individuals, a few people . . . He himself talks of helping several hundred but I think that's an exaggeration and he had a real propensity for exaggeration.'

Nedbal provided a fascinating insight into Hudal's character, emphasising that he 'was a man of very small stature and he was always trying to "big note" himself. You can see it in his photographs and if you knew him, you could see it as well.'[28] But for a man with an ego problem, Hudal certainly had unusual and powerful friends.

In 1943, for example, he met Walter Rauff, a major war criminal. Following Himmler's distress at witnessing a mass shooting of Jews at Minsk in 1941, Rauff had overseen the development of the programme for mobile gas vans. These 'Black Ravens' murdered Jews by pumping exhaust fumes from diesel engines into hermetically sealed chambers at the back.

Rauff's gas trucks were not without their macabre technical problems; in early tests the unfortunate victims died not from exhaust fumes, but from gradual asphyxiation. Instead of being quickly poisoned, the human cargo left claw marks on the metal walls as they slowly choked to death. Once Rauff's system was 'perfected', some 100,000 people, mostly Eastern European women and children, died in his mobile gas vans.[29]

Following the collapse of Mussolini's regime in September 1943, Rauff was dispatched to northern Italy where he served with the SS in the region around Genoa, Turin and Milan. Once again, his assignment was the extermination of the Jewish population. It was during this period that Hudal made contact with this notorious mass murderer.

The genesis of Hudal's and Rauff's friendship is something of a mystery. Alfred Jarschel, a former Nazi Youth leader, claims that Rauff first met Hudal in the spring of 1943, when Deputy Führer Martin Bormann sent him to Rome for six months without any apparent mission. This was at a time when the Reich desperately needed senior officers of Rauff's experience and calibre as the war's outcome still hung in the balance. Jarschel believes 'that the first contacts with the Vatican were established during those months, which were to lead eventually to the setting up of Hudal's escape network.'[30]

The time was fast approaching when it would be needed. By early 1944 when the Allies landed in Sicily, even Hudal could see that Hitler's 'Thousand Year Reich' was doomed. As long as the Nazi Armies were winning, he had proudly driven around Rome with a 'Greater Germany' flag on his car; but when the Allies arrived in the Italian capital in June 1944, Hudal 'was the first to change it – suddenly his flag was Austrian'.[31]

Like many Austrians in 1945, Hudal switched overnight from being a Fascist philosopher to demonstrating his new-found democratic aspirations. Discarding his long held pro-German position, he rushed to join the Free Austrian Committee in Rome and even helped organise a 'symbolic' liberation of the Austrian legation, belatedly reclaiming his long lost national pride. Hudal was not alone in his hypocrisy. It is ironic that the people of Austria, who had a higher percentage of Nazi party members than Germany, immediately demanded special treatment as the first victims of Hitler's tyranny.[32]

There were many dramatic changes in the Vatican as well, one of which may have played a crucial role in the development of Hudal's escape network. In August 1944 Cardinal Maglione died. Pius XII decided not to appoint a new Secretary of State, reassuming personal responsibility for foreign policy. From that time, Monsignors Tardini and Montini worked directly for the Pope.

Ladislas Farago claimed in his controversial book, *Aftermath*, that this decision 'was Hudal's entrée to the highest echelon of the Holy See'. Farago argues that Hudal had been on the outer with Maglione, relying on infrequent contact with the Pope himself to influence Vatican policy. But now he 'acquired a friend in the Secretariat of State'.[33]

Maglione's death suddenly left Giovanni Montini in charge of Pontifical Assistance to refugees, opening the door for Hudal's plans. Farago claims that it was Montini who allowed Hudal access to Vatican passports and other identity and travel documents, which he then used to aid his Nazi friends. At the same time Hudal allegedly developed good contacts with another important Vatican bureau under Montini's control. This was the

Pontifical Commission for Assistance, which was concerned with work among refugees. One of its major roles was issuing travel documents to legitimate refugees. Finally, Farago alleged that Montini gave Hudal access to Caritas International, a Catholic charity which paid living and travelling expenses to help genuine refugees.

One of the Vatican's official historians hotly disputes Farago's claims. While conceding that Hudal 'interested himself, by his own admission, with ex-Nazis', Father Robert Graham is certain that 'Bishop Hudal had *no* role' in the Pontifical Commission for Assistance. He was not 'even "close"' to its work.[34] However, Farago's claims, if true, would explain Wiesenthal's persistent allegations that Caritas and the Vatican refugee bureau were directly involved with Nazi-smuggling.

The Nazi connection may have been purely personal, through Hudal, rather than through the agency officials themselves. They insist their roles were purely humanitarian, claiming that they were entirely ignorant of any Nazi-smuggling operations. But if Farago's allegations are true, it is astounding that Montini would have allowed Hudal, a declared pro-Nazi, any access to these Vatican sections at a time when the Nazis were desperate to escape. Such a decision would have been seen by Hudal as an overt act of encouragement to aid his Nazi friends. If Farago is right, Montini apparently gave Hudal every opportunity to do so.

There is some circumstantial evidence in the American diplomatic records to support the claim that Montini was deliberately aiding Hudal's Nazi-smuggling. This came about in a fairly innocent way. Following the virtual collapse of the German Army in Italy, Pius XII began to campaign for the right to send his personal representatives to visit the tens of thousands of prisoners of war and civilian internees then held in Italian camps.

As previously discussed, the Pope wished to extend his 'mission of charity in favour of all the victims of war without national or religious distinction'. In taking up this case with the Allied authorities in August 1944, the Vatican Secretariat of State pointed out that the Holy See 'cannot fail to interest itself now in these German prisoners'.

Over the next few weeks, the British and American forces debated the Pope's request. They asked the Holy See to provide a detailed justification for the proposed visits, and received this reply:

> . . . the Representative of His Holiness (usually an Archbishop), accompanied by a Secretary, acting if necessary as interpreter, visits the camp, bringing with him some small gifts (spiritual books, books of instruction or light literature, games etc.); makes a short discourse and spends some time with the prisoners or internees . . .
>
> . . . the purpose of the visit of the Representative of the Holy See is to assure normal religious assistance to Catholic prisoners as well as to exercise that mission of charity proper to the Church by bringing some comfort to those in affliction.

It was a completely reasonable argument in favour of humanitarian and charitable works. On 10 November the US President's Personal Representative to the Pope conveyed the Allied decision to the Vatican Secretariat of State. These visits would be permitted, provided they were restricted to religious assistance, and each visit was requested individually.[35]

A very peculiar request followed a few weeks later. Having achieved their humanitarian goal, on 2 December the Vatican asked that a representative be permitted 'to visit the German-speaking civil internees in Italy'. The Bishop chosen to minister to the defeated enemy population was none other than Hudal, the Vatican's 'Spiritual Director of the German people resident in Italy'.

It is astonishing that the Holy See singled out the most notorious pro-Nazi Bishop in Rome for this extremely sensitive mission. It was well known that these 'civilian' camps were teeming with fugitive Nazis who had discarded their uniforms and were hiding among the legitimate refugees. The Americans were at least partly to blame for granting Hudal access to the internment camps. When a senior US diplomat at the Vatican forwarded the Secretariat of State's letter to Allied headquarters in Rome, he made no mention of Hudal's pro-Nazi sympathies. But the Americans at the Vatican knew all about Hudal's views. One diplomat had formed a bad opinion of him during the war, observing that he did not 'trust Bishop Hudal', as his 'reputation . . . was not too good from an Allied point of view'.[36]

American intelligence were also aware of Hudal's views, and compiled an intelligence dossier on his pro-Nazi book.[37] Although Allied Headquarters had previously refused some Vatican requests for travel passes, the Security Division approved this one, 'provided the object of [Hudal's] visit is specifically limited to giving normal religious assistance to catholic internees'.[38] Still, for the Vatican to obtain an Allied travel pass for Hudal to visit the German internees was a bit like giving whisky to an alcoholic and telling him not to drink; the resulting corruption was inevitable.

Equipped with his special credentials, Hudal was free to spread the good news about the escape system to his German friends hiding in the camps. There was no need for wanted war criminals to visit Rome to obtain assistance; Hudal brought it to them. Many years later he wrote a frank confession about his travels:

> I thank God that He [allowed me] to visit and comfort many victims in their prisons and concentration camps and [to help] them escape with false identity papers.[39]

Hudal had nothing but contempt for the American victors who helped him:

> The Allies' war against Germany was not a crusade, but the rivalry of economic complexes for whose victory they had been fighting. This so-called business . . . used catchwords like democracy, race, religious liberty and Christianity as a bait for the masses. All these experiences were the reason why I felt duty bound after 1945 to devote my whole charitable work mainly to former National Socialists and Fascists, especially to so called 'war criminals'.[40]

Hudal's self confessed activities are all the more controversial because he operated with the full authority of the Vatican. Far from being 'on the fringes' as Father Schneider argues, Hudal obtained the approval of high level officials. Without the Vatican's direct diplomatic intercession to obtain his Allied travel pass, he could never have succeeded in making contact with so many Nazi war criminals. Indeed, without such help, he would have been bottled up in Rome.

It appears that one of the first Nazis Hudal visited was his old friend, Walter Rauff, in Milan. Eighteen months earlier, Rauff had left Rome to become Head of the Milan SD. This made him the chief SS security officer for all of northwest Italy, including Turin and Genoa. By 1944, Pius XII was extremely concerned that Italy's major industrial region would be destroyed in the final Allied offensive.

With Rauff's assistance, the senior Wehrmacht commanders in northern Italy began a series of secret surrender negotiations. Allen Dulles, the American intelligence chief in Switzerland, worked out the surrender of German forces with the help of Vatican intermediaries. These negotiations were codenamed Operation Sunrise, and although they were singularly unsuccessful in shortening the war, each of the Nazi officers involved escaped serious punishment.[41]

When the German Army in Italy surrendered on 29 April 1945, Rauff obtained a false passport in the name of Carlo Comte and rented a flat in Milan. He then took his copy of Mussolini's secret police archives, including the Fascist Party membership lists, and quietly buried them outside the city. He knew they would be very useful in the coming months and his judgement proved correct. The very next day, however, Rauff was arrested by the Americans and interned in Milan's San Vittore gaol. Within hours a priest arrived and arranged for Rauff to be transferred to an American Army Hospital.

According to Wiesenthal, Rauff's release was arranged by Monsignor Don Giuseppe Bicchierai, Secretary to Milan's Cardinal Schuster. Bicchierai was one of the Vatican intermediaries in the secret surrender negotiations, who sheltered Rauff after his release and arranged for him to stay covertly 'in the convents of the Holy See'.[42]

On the other hand, Alfred Jarschel believes that Rauff's release was engineered by the Milan branch of the Italian Communist Party. In exchange for Rauff's Fascist Party membership lists, the Communists allegedly turned a blind eye to the establishment of his escape organisation.[43] What neither Wiesenthal nor Jarschel realised was that Rauff was released to the custody of 'S Force Verona', an OSS unit working with the British-American 'Special Counter Intelligence' team in Italy (SCI-Z), headed by James Jesus Angleton.

The S Force was, among other things, the Western equivalent of Rauff's wartime anti-Communist section. Rauff was a valuable asset, and over the objections of the US Army's Counter Intelligence Corps, who called him 'an unrepentant Nazi' and recommended lifetime imprisonment if not elimination, S Force Verona took charge of the grateful Rauff. After an extensive debriefing on Communist activity in his sector, he was released. Perhaps this was because Rauff openly boasted of high level connections in the

Vatican negotiations, which he claimed could be 'confirmed by Hussman and Mr Dulles, allied agents in Switzerland'.[44]

It is no coincidence that Rauff's 'Mr Dulles' later became Director of the Central Intelligence Agency, or that James Jesus Angleton became head of CIA Counter Intelligence. Throughout Angleton's career he retained exclusive control over American intelligence liaison with the Vatican.[45] Whatever the American motive, it is incontestable that Rauff was released from custody and returned to his flat in Milan.

According to the French publication, *Cercle Noir*, Rauff made contact with Archbishop Siri of Genoa, and immediately went to work for the Vatican in establishing a Nazi-smuggling system. Apart from his high level American and Vatican contacts, Rauff's main contribution to Hudal's smuggling system may have been financial. The man who once ran the mobile gas truck programme now became a money launderer, with the help of Frederico Schwendt, Rauff's former SS colleague. Schwendt is considered among the greatest counterfeiters in history, having forged millions of banknotes during the war as part of an SS operation codenamed *Wendig*.[46]

The original intention was to undermine and possibly destroy the Allied economies, but, as the war was drawing to a close, Schwendt laundered the counterfeit money through various banks and obtained legitimate Western notes. This was the seed money for the first Nazi escape network. Wiesenthal claims that Schwendt turned the proceeds over to his old comrade, Walter Rauff.[47]

However, Jarschel has a slightly different version. He claims that Hudal contacted Rauff in July 1945, asking him to come to Rome for a secret meeting. This proved impossible, so Hudal suggested that Rauff travel instead to Genoa and contact the newly appointed and strongly anti-Communist Archbishop Siri, another key player in the Nazi-smuggling operation. Rauff went to Genoa and was received by one of Siri's private secretaries. Jarschel alleges that he was given a sizeable sum of money and a Red Cross passport with a valid visa for Syria. He then returned to Milan and established the escape network.[48]

Perhaps the truth is somewhere in between: Rauff probably used Siri's money to augment the proceeds from the counterfeit laundering operation. Jarschel and *Cercle Noir* both agree that over the next four years some of the most wanted Nazi war criminals passed from Rauff in Milan, to Bishop Hudal at the Anima in Rome and then on to Archbishop Siri in Genoa. Here they boarded ships and left for new lives in South America.

The Vatican has never opened its bank records to show what sums were allocated to refugee assistance. To this day the dossiers on Schwendt and the Nazi money laundering are among the most highly classified American intelligence documents. However, the one paragraph which was declassified contains an intriguing reference about Schwendt's connection to the Nazi underground:

> On the Brenner Pass route from Austria the first stop on the underground railroad in Italy is at a castle in Merano where German is the language of the directors. [It is owned by] an agent of the SS task force . . . sometimes called 'Group Wendig' under the command of Schwendt, Col. Frederick, who was responsible only to Kaltenbrunner and Himmler. One [agent] . . . claimed 5,000,000 Dollars from the US Government for property confiscated at Merano after the war's end. All this property was the loot of the SS group which had been stored in . . . Schwendt's HQ and other buildings in Merano. Included in this loot were large quantities of British Pound Notes.[49]

The report goes on to list banks in Britain, Palestine, Italy and Switzerland that were tied to Schwendt's network. But money alone was not enough. False papers were the most important requirement for escaping Nazis. Hudal could provide all of these: Italian identity papers, false birth certificates, even visas for their country of destination. The most necessary were International Red Cross Passports.

According to Madame Gertrude Dupuis, a senior official in the Rome branch of the Red Cross, it '*was* comparatively simple for [Hudal] to achieve this; he was a Bishop don't forget – that did help . . . How could we refuse to accept the word of priests?' she asked.[50] Madame Dupuis explained that if Hudal had requested that Red Cross papers 'be made out according to his specifications' and sent to him at the Anima, 'they probably were'.[51]

The IRC in Rome was flooded with applications in the mass confusion at war's end. To be fair, millions of people were on the move throughout Europe, many had lost their homes and their identity papers; others with shady pasts preferred to 'lose' documents which might identify them to a War Crimes Tribunal.

Many relief organisations issued new identity documents to the refugees. Some were only valid in Italy. For example, the International Caritas and the Vatican Refugee Organisation (Commissione Pontificia d'Assistenza) both issued hundreds of local 'identity documents' each week at this time. Many refugees used these *unofficial* Vatican documents as the starting point for the long paper trail for emigration.

While a Vatican identity card could be used to apply for the many further documents needed for emigration, on its own it did not permit its holder to leave Rome, let alone Italy. There is therefore no truth to the oft-repeated allegation that the Vatican handed out thousands of passports to Nazis. Indeed, the only strictly Vatican passports were the official credentials for its accredited clerical diplomats and officials.

The Red Cross was a far more promising source for a fugitive Nazi. For those who could not risk a personal appearance at the refugee relief counters, there was a flourishing and lucrative black market in stolen and forged documents. Madame Dupuis had personal experience of this, angrily recalling seeing such papers in her superior's office at IRC's Rome Headquarters. 'I could see from several feet away that they were forged. Not only were they filled out differently from how we do it ordinarily, but my signature was obviously forged.'[52] While Madame Dupuis could do little about this situation, some IRC officials apparently turned a blind eye to these abuses.

The illicit trade in Red Cross documents was soon discovered by American intelligence. By late 1945 they were almost certain that fugitive Nazis were among the beneficiaries. This was confirmed in mid-1946, when there was a breakout of German prisoners from Rimini camp in northern Italy. Many escapees were subsequently apprehended with false IRC documents.

An investigation, codenamed Operation Circle, was launched by the American Army's Counter Intelligence Corps. They forwarded their early findings to Vincent La Vista, a senior Rome officer of the Division of Foreign Activity Correlation. La Vista had been involved in a number of top secret post-war intelligence operations, investigating Fascist espionage cells operating in America and commercial, financial and industrial dealings between Italy and Germany.

La Vista investigated and forwarded his report to Washington in May 1947. Since its release in 1984, it has become known simply as the 'La Vista Report'. Although the findings contain some significant errors, it is a fairly comprehensive analysis of illegal emigration through Italy. It should be noted that La Vista was himself a Catholic, but one of his main conclusions was that the Vatican was helping the escape of fugitive war criminals.[53] When his report eventually surfaced, this claim was strongly denied by the Church.

Official Vatican historian, Father Graham, argued that the report's real purpose had been 'completely misrepresented'. Its focus was not escaping Nazis, but 'Communist infiltration into Latin America. It isn't very honest or objective to pick out a page and a half where La Vista alludes to Nazis escaping, when the whole report wasn't about Nazis but Communists. The only real Nazi mentioned escaped with the help of the Jewish Zionist organisations.'[54]

However, much of La Vista's report is concerned with the role of Vatican institutions and officials in illegal Nazi emigration. The State Department officer listed nearly two dozen 'Vatican relief and welfare organizations engaged in or suspected of engaging in illegal emigration'. At the top of the list was the ubiquitous Bishop Hudal.[55] The US Army's CIC conducted extensive investigations into the black market in forged documents, and several reports were appended to La Vista's report.

Appendix B dealt extensively with the Rimini breakout the previous July. A reliable CIC informant reported that two of the escapees, Gianni and Vorkörper, 'had been instructed to proceed to Rome and contact' a CIC informant, who was supposed to help them emigrate to South America. The Germans were placed under surveillance and it emerged that Gianni's real name was Walter Fütling 'living in the apartment of a German woman who was formerly employed at the German Embassy in the Vatican'. The two escapees joined two other fugitives in Rome, who were in close contact with local priests.

One priest was reported to be 'aiding the escapees with food, lodging, and contacts with German and Vatican officials'. When two of the escapees went to Genoa to arrange transportation to South America, the CIC informant 'borrowed' their passports and discovered that they were 'issued by the International Red Cross'.[56] The CIC agent instructed his informant to attempt to obtain his own false passport. He did so 'by paying 20,000 lire to a person known to have contacts with the International Red Cross'.

The system for obtaining passports was simple. The informant was sent to a man who took down his personal details. The man had an inside contact who examined the IRC files, looking for 'the name of a missing or dead person who fitted the [informant's] description'. Two days later the CIC informant was told to apply for a Red Cross passport under the false name of Mirko Baucech. He also needed two letters of identification which his contact obtained from the Vatican and the Italian Red Cross.[57]

In August 1946 the CIC operation ceased when the men under surveillance were arrested; three were Rimini escapees and the fourth held 'false discharge permits'. The Germans admitted having contacts with people close to the Vatican. The CIC report also referred to another Vatican representative who had good connections with 'South American Consulates and business firms'. This Vatican contact was the last link in the 'German emigration chain which funnels all of its clients through the International Red Cross'.[58]

La Vista also confirmed that Milan was an important centre in the smuggling network. Although he does not mention Rauff, La Vista discovered a network run by his close friend, Frederico Schwendt:

> There is a general movement of Germans . . . who cross the border via Treviso and Milan for the sole purpose of obtaining . . . ficticious identity documents, passports and visas, and leave almost immediately via Genoa and Barcelona for South America.[59]

As a demonstration of how easily the Vatican could obtain false IRC documents, La Vista arranged for two 'Hungarian refugees' to visit Father Josef Gallov, who operated the Hungarian relief 'agency sponsored by the Vatican'. La Vista called Gallov 'an honest, conscientious Catholic Priest, but he is likewise a sentimental old man' who did not bother to ask too many questions of the 'refugees'.

The men had been chosen because they spoke Hungarian. They arrived at Father Gallov's office without any personal papers or documentation of any kind, saying they had just fled from the Soviets. 'Both men claimed to be natives of a small village in Hungary and to have lost their entire families in bombing raids during the war.' The second informant agreed to corroborate his friend's story under oath and Gallov prepared an affadavit. He then gave the man a letter to present to the Red Cross and, a few hours later, La Vista's informant obtained a perfectly valid passport. Shortly thereafter, the first informant simply reversed the procedure and obtained a passport for his 'Hungarian' friend. 'Needless to say,' La Vista commented, 'both men are Italian, neither ever having been outside Italy.'[60]

Yet another CIC officer concluded that IRC documents could be obtained without any identification through 'the assistance of persons operating under the protection of the Vatican'. Paul Lyon later became a key US liaison to the Vatican's Ratlines, but in 1946 he investigated their operations. He discovered that the Holy See was sponsoring the illicit trade in Red Cross papers, obtained either 'under an alias or with false nationality'.[61] Lyon also confirmed that Hungarian Catholic priest Father Gallov was central to this operation. He also identified some of those who obtained such false documents as 'known or wanted war criminals'.[62]

According to the CIC officer, the system for obtaining false papers was fairly straightforward. An applicant would be provided with a letter bearing 'an official stamp of the Vatican' to take to Gallov's 'personal contact in the International Red Cross . . . to secure a . . . Red Cross identity document'. This could then be used to obtain 'the necessary ration cards and temporary resident permit from the Italian police authorities to remain safely in Italy', while awaiting 'permission from the Consuls of Central and South American countries to immigrate'.[63]

La Vista's report initially caused a major upheaval in Washington. The State Department decided that the report 'required urgent attention'.[64] A top secret meeting was convened, but the Washington bureaucrats eventually decided to issue only a very discreet and informal protest.[65] La Vista was not even asked to follow up his investigation to establish the full ramifications of the Vatican smuggling network.

The Americans decided that good relations with the Holy See were more important than bringing mass murderers to justice. The State Department's orders to their representative at the Vatican were hardly a model of American outrage.[66] He was merely asked to 'approach the Vatican informally. I leave it to you to decide what, and how much, should be done in this regard'.[67] The diplomat took the hint, and decided that an oral message, or Note Verbale, would be sufficient. This is the lowest class of diplomatic communication, reserved for informal topics too insignificant to warrant an official Diplomatic Note.

Yet by the time the oral message was delivered, it had been watered down even further. Monsignor Walter Carroll of the Vatican Secretariat of State was only advised that 'unscrupulous persons, often engaged in illicit and clandestine activities' had somehow managed to obtain travel documents 'through the unwitting assistance of charitable organizations'. Although the message was somewhat ambiguous, there was apparently no mention whatsoever of La Vista's evidence that the Vatican was actively helping Nazis to escape.

The State Department seemed more concerned that the false documents might inadvertently assist Jews going to Palestine or 'secret [Communist] agents, many of them destined for the Western Hemisphere'. The bewildered Vatican official probably thought that the Americans were only concerned about sophisticated Jewish and Communist smuggling organisations. He hastened to assure the American diplomat that 'such agencies are not connected to the Vatican'.[68]

The American concluded his 'protest' by requesting the Vatican's assistance to ensure that all 'nations may be preserved from infiltration by unfriendly agents and that the charitable and benevolent work of assisting bonafide displaced persons . . . may not be prejudiced' by such illegal activities.[69] None of the priests named in the La Vista report was even mentioned.

If Father Graham only read the oral summary of this strange meeting, he would be quite right to assume that La Vista's report had nothing to do with smuggling Nazis. The American diplomat provided the lame excuse that it 'has not been possible to be more specific because of the need to protect our sources of information and our investigators who still have important work in progress. Also, I felt that my action should be tempered somewhat because officials in the Vatican have betrayed to me on several occasions their sensitiveness over the amount of private American capital which has gone into the financing of illegal migration.'

These may well have been the reasons for American indifference towards the Vatican's Ratlines. However, one researcher discovered a document in the US Archives which throws fascinating light on official US attitudes. According to Charles Allen, the very same day that this meeting with Monsignor Carroll was reported to Washington, another, *unsigned* letter was dispatched from Rome to Washington, warning that 'Monsignor Walter Carroll, Secretariat of State of the Holy See, had cautioned . . . in an "Oral Message" not to delve too deeply into the details of the financing of the Nazi escape routes'.[70]

Apparently the State Department was informed that the Vatican was, indeed, aware of the funding arrangements for the smuggling network.

While the diplomatic niceties were being observed, Hudal continued to send wanted fugitives down the escape route, until the Vatican itself came under concerted attack. A series of articles in the Italian press questioned the motives of Pius XII, who was by then widely labelled as the 'German Pope'. The entire Vatican–Nazi connection was threatened with exposure. For example, on 6 August 1947 the Milan based evening paper, *Milano Sera*, published an article headed 'Too many Germans around the Pope'. It claimed that within

> the Pontifical apartment in the Vatican, only German is spoken – a language in which the Pope is exceedingly well versed . . . The Pope lives on German cuisine . . . Pius XII's private secretary [Father Leiber] is a husky Bavarian . . . He is often seen about Rome in his car, from which he alights alone to stop at one of the typical German beer parlors . . . frequented by . . . SS war criminals who hide under assumed names.
>
> It is plain that the new myth, to which even the Vatican subscribes, of the 'poor German' who is paying the penalty for others' guilt and who has the right to assistance from the whole world, has arisen solely from this particular [pro-German] atmosphere which so tightly surrounds the Head of the Church.[71]

The Vatican realised that this form of publicity harmed its international reputation. They immediately knew who to blame. Pressure was applied to Hudal; he later wrote that Vatican diplomats began to shun him, some even calling him the 'Nazi, fascist Bishop – *troppo tedesco* [too much the German]'.[72] However, despite the fact that Hudal's Nazi-smuggling operation threatened to become a public scandal, it took nearly four years to replace him as Rector of the Anima. He finally bowed to the inevitable at

Christmas 1951, announcing that he would leave the Anima the following July.[73]

Convinced that his only sin was a bad press image, Hudal remained in Rome until his death, unrepentant for his work on behalf of Nazi war criminals:

> To help people, to save a few, without thinking of the consequences, working selflessly and with determination, was naturally what should have been expected of a true Christian. We do not believe in the eye for an eye of the Jew.[74]

Apparently Bishop Hudal believed that the Germans should be excused for their crimes in the name of Christian Charity while simple justice was a vengeful concept, at least when it applied to the killers of Jews. To his death, Hudal remained a convinced anti-Semite.

The press scandal that erupted in 1947 did not end the Nazi Ratlines. By the time Hudal's star was waning, more discreet priests had taken his place in the dark constellation of the smuggling system. There was one direct benefit from the threat of the press scandal. From that moment on, extraordinary measures were taken to conceal the existence of the Nazi escape routes. Their full extent would not be publicly discovered for another forty years.

Well before Bishop Hudal stepped off the stage, the scene was set for a more professional and clandestine smuggling operation that would assist war criminals and quislings from all the Catholic countries of Europe. Whether or not Hudal had acted alone, his successors were clearly authorised by senior Vatican officials. Like Hudal, his successors received their start in Nazi-smuggling as the result of official Vatican intervention to obtain Allied travel passes.[75] It is no coincidence that the Vatican selected Fascist priests from Central and Eastern Europe for this work. Hudal had already sent many Germans to South America, but now tens of thousands of non-German Nazi collaborators were clamouring for assistance.

As the Americans would soon discover, the Vatican was willing to smuggle Fascists of every stripe. What the Americans did not know was why the Holy See was involved.

3

A French Spy in the Vatican

Special Agent William Gowen was puzzled and frustrated. The American intelligence officer was increasingly despondent at his failure to trace the *émigré* Nazi underground in Rome and apprehend wanted war criminals who were thriving in the city. As soon as he discovered their whereabouts they disappeared from view, as if swallowed by a dark and unfathomable chasm. He was sure that a shadowy group called Intermarium was somehow involved, but lacked hard evidence to justify his suspicion.

A few months earlier, Gowen and his colleagues in the US Army Counter Intelligence Corps had seemed on the verge of a major breakthrough, but this was now further out of reach than ever. When the reports of Operation Circle had been assessed they thought they were close to solving the Vatican mystery. As previously discussed, this clandestine operation had been launched in July 1946 to discover how such fugitives were able to survive on the run, who was assisting them to hide in Rome and then leave for the safety of South America.

The American officers concluded that the Vatican was 'the largest single organization involved in the illegal movement of emigrants' in and through Italy, and that the Holy See's justification for 'its participation in this illegal traffic is simply the propagation of the Faith'. For it was

> the Vatican's desire to assist any person regardless of nationality or political beliefs, as long as that person can prove himself to be a Catholic . . . The Vatican further justifies its participation by its desire to infiltrate, not only European countries but Latin American countries as well, with people of all political beliefs as long as they are anti-Communist and pro-Catholic Church.[1]

State Department intelligence officer, Vincent La Vista, reported that the Vatican had 'brought pressure to bear' on Catholic countries in South America, especially Argentina but also Mexico, Cuba and others. This resulted 'in the foreign missions of those countries taking an attitude almost favouring the entry into their country of former Nazi (sic) and former Fascists or other political groups, so long as they are anti-Communist'.

During the investigations of this traffic, US intelligence had come across an array of Vatican-sponsored 'relief and welfare organizations in Rome engaging in or suspected of engaging in illegal emigration'. La Vista interviewed many Church officials involved, concluding that they were operating 'under the benevolent sponsorship of the Vatican':

> Needless to say, all of the Agencies operating in conjunction with or under the protection of the Vatican are financed by Vatican funds. No attempt was made to ascertain the amount of these funds, their origin, or their method of distribution, but it is the observation of this writer that substantial sums are being spent generously in the promotion of this work.[2]

La Vista was qualified to draw this conclusion, having investigated the web of illicit Nazi money laundering which occurred after World War II. Similar claims have been repeatedly made by other researchers. Austrian-based Nazi hunter, Simon Wiesenthal, has dubbed it the 'Roman Way'. He alleges that the Vatican ran a systematic smuggling system to spirit Nazi mass murderers out of Europe.[3]

The Vatican has consistently denied these claims. When La Vista's report surfaced in early 1984, it caused an international furore, forcing the Vatican to deny it. Their spokesperson, Reverend Romeo Panciroli, cited two of the Holy See's historians, Father Robert Graham and Reverend Pierre Blet. Graham claimed that La Vista's findings were 'propagandistic manoeuvres' by people who 'never lose the occasion to crucify' the Church. 'The accusations in the report are founded on nothing but air,' the American priest said.

Reverend Blet concurred that the report was 'artificial and false, unworthy of attention', and probably 'based on information furnished by questionable elements'. Reverend Antonio Weber, a German-born priest who ran a Vatican-sponsored relief organisation, went even further, stating categorically that 'the Vatican never hid or aided Nazis after the war'.[4]

Clearly there is little agreement between the Vatican and its critics. However, in mid-1947 William Gowen established that the truth lay somewhere in the middle. Gowen was in a good position to discover what was really happening. Not only was he a CIC agent, but his father, Franklin Gowen, was a senior State Department officer. In 1940 President Roosevelt had sent Myron Taylor to be his Personal Representative to Pius XII, and Gowen senior went to the Holy See as one of his assistants. He served there until 1947, when he returned to Washington. His son stayed in Rome and investigated the Vatican's Nazi connections.

Gowen junior was by then an up and coming young intelligence officer, ambitious for postings in the exciting world of European espionage. The shadowy Nazi diaspora seemed to have eluded his colleagues, but now Gowen was putting the pieces together. He had solved the puzzle that had frustrated him for so many months, going beyond Operation Circle's conclusions and getting right inside Intermarium. He discovered that the Vatican's total denials were not supported by the evidence; neither was the blanket claim that the Holy See *as an entity* was involved.

Rather, Gowen found that a well organised network of Central and Eastern European Nazi *émigrés* was operating on the Vatican's fringes, and receiving the secret support of a tiny but powerful cabal, of church and intelligence agents. These investigations took the best part of eighteen months and in the process the American officer also discovered that the Vatican cabal was only a small part of a mysterious spy organisation called Intermarium.

Gowen found that its roots went back to the early 1920s, to a so-called 'White' Russian *émigré* group which fled to Paris in the wake of the Bolshevik seizure of power. They were termed the 'Whites' to distinguish them from the Communist 'Reds' in the civil war. Once in Paris, a former Czarist general established a group to unite all nationalities subjugated by Communism.[5]

By the mid-1930s the Paris group had evolved into Intermarium, 'a secret international organization that desires as its members people whose homes are to be found in the "Intermare" – that part of Europe between the Baltic, the Black Sea, the Aegean, the Ionian Sea, and the Adriatic. Also included are the Caucasians.'

Intermarium grandly proclaimed the unity of sixteen nations 'inhabiting the territory between Germany and Russia proper . . . which are united in the effort of their struggle for liberation, as well as in their tendency to secure a peaceful existence and to participate in the construction of a new Europe and that of a world, free from tyranny, terror and famine'. Although the goal was to ensure the self-determination of all these disparate 'nations', it was almost completely impractical. Many of the countries supposedly united in these endeavours had long histories of bloody conflicts between themselves, in which ethnic, cultural and even religious differences played powerful roles.[6]

Nevertheless, Intermarium proclaimed the necessity for a powerful anti-Communist Pan-Danubian Confederation, comprised in the main of the Catholic nations of Central Europe. Before the war it had received strong support from both French and British intelligence for anti-Communist operations.[7]

Intermarium's goal was to create a *cordon sanitaire* against both the Russians and the Germans. This plan had received considerable support from France, Britain and the Vatican in the 1920s and 1930s. The Holy See looked with great fondness on France, proclaimed by Pius XI as 'the first-born of the great Catholic family'. The British Foreign Office had noted in October 1942 that the Vatican's post-war policy would 'favour the creation of a large Danubian federal State, if it gives promise of stability and is not controlled by Bolshevik Russia'.[8]

Gowen's CIC colleagues in Austria had found traces of this Pan-Danubian Confederation during their early investigations of the Ustashi's post-war revival. Formed in the late 1920s, this Fascist group had conducted a campaign of international terrorism in the 1930s. They were then placed in power in Croatia by the Nazis during the war, and proceeded to exterminate hundreds of thousands of innocent civilians. On 25 June 1945, only seven weeks after the war had concluded, the Ustashi had made contact with a Papal mission in Salzburg in the US zone of Austria. They asked for the Pope's assistance to create either another independent Croatian state, or at least 'a Danube-Adriatic union in which, according to all natural laws, Croatia would have its possibility for development'.[9]

Gowen had discovered the intricate connections between Intermarium, the Vatican, French and British intelligence by tracking down a young Hungarian he suspected was one of its key organisers. He hoped that Ferenc Vajta would provide valuable inside information on how Intermarium linked into the well organised and financed Nazi-smuggling network. He believed that Vajta could even confirm the Vatican's deep involvement in these activities, as he knew the Hungarian was well connected with Church leaders.

Vajta had proved an elusive quarry, well hidden in the *émigré* underground that had been built in Rome since war's end. Hints of his important role had emerged in late 1946, when the Hungarian government claimed that he was 'living in great state at the "Grand Hotel", Rome'. The CIC discovered this was untrue. Rather, 'according to fairly reliable sources', he was in fact living 'in one of the many monasteries in the Rome area'.[10] This chance discovery led Gowen to Vajta in the first half of 1947.

Gowen told Vajta's close friends that in return for information, he would assist the fugitive to regain possession of his identity papers, recently confiscated by the Italian police.[11] Vajta had a lot to tell. He said he had worked for over two years with both French and British intelligence, organising 'two clandestine movements against the Russians'. According to Vajta, the Vatican had supported these operations, informally working with the French and British to revive Intermarium after World War II.[12]

Vajta revealed that he had been Hungarian Consul General in Vienna at war's end, sent to organise the evacuation of Hungarian industry and establish escape routes for 'refugees'. He 'organised more than 7,000 train trucks of machinery and factories' to reach western Germany, and saved 'the great majority of Hungary's bourgeoisie and aristocracy' from the Soviets.[13]

The French soon discovered his key role as 'one of the few men who knew the location of this evacuated industry'. The French were desperately short of money to finance clandestine operations, and Vajta's stolen treasure became the main financial base for France's revival of Intermarium in 1945.[14] Vajta recalled that he had been easily located by French military intelligence in their occupation zone in Austria. He was recruited for special intelligence operations then taking shape at General Charles de Gaulle's Paris headquarters.

According to Vajta, the historical convergence of French and Vatican interests in Central Europe played a crucial role in de Gaulle's schemes 'to employ the factor of Catholicism'. Vajta told French intelligence of his pre-war role in their clandestine operations in Central Europe. While studying at the Sorbonne in the early 1930s, he joined the secretive *Grand Orient*, an organisation specialising in Central and Eastern European affairs which linked Francophiles from these regions to French activities.[15]

This was one of many reasons why Vajta was employed in 1945 and 1946 by the Deuxième Bureau and the French High Command in Austria. He claimed to be a personal favourite of de Gaulle himself, visiting Paris in late 1945 and gaining a first-hand impression of the President's aims. Gowen later noted that Vajta had not only helped to finance French operations, but also proved himself in various active anti-Communist operations. These included the 'arrest and expulsion of a Czechoslovakian Army search team, and the detection and courtmartial of Hungarian Soviet agent Galle'.[16]

Vajta explained that as soon as hostilities ceased, de Gaulle ordered an aggressive campaign 'to gain the sympathy of the peoples of Eastern Europe'. His aim was to create a counterweight to British plans and his conception was 'very simple' but, according to Vajta, very just. The French leader believed that it was necessary to prepare for a new war with Stalin to restore France's rightful role in the region.

De Gaulle told Vajta that France needed 'the friendship of those countries' *émigrés* who tomorrow, with discreet help, could become the rulers of Eastern Europe'.[17] Vajta claimed that he had received 'the authority of the French High Command in Austria to bring together in the French zone all the exiled politicians of South Eastern Europe'. He worked with two branches of French intelligence – État Majeur and the Deuxième Bureau – laying the foundation for Intermarium's resurrection. He categorically denied that former Nazis were involved.

Under French direction Vajta built intelligence centres in Innsbruck, Freiburg and Paris. 'The *émigrés* travelled with État Majeur papers', so that they could move about securely, and establish a sophisticated intelligence network. Vajta claimed that de Gaulle developed close relations with the Vatican. The French leader's plan 'was to collaborate with the Church and to be sustained by the Vatican in the struggle for the Europe of tomorrow. He knew too well that France alone was not strong enough to play the heavy cards.'

The French General staff were initially successful in gaining the Vatican's help, utilising 'Church personalities' to make contact with *émigré* leaders. One of the most important Vatican officials to take up their cause was French Cardinal Tisserant, the Holy See's leading Eastern European expert. Among other things, the French utilised Tisserant to approach the Vatican 'for a secret collaboration to "save European heritage"'.[18]

De Gaulle wanted the Pope's help to create a European Confederation, bringing together the Catholics of Spain, France, Italy, Austria, Germany, Poland, Hungary, Slovakia, Croatia, Slovenia and the Baltic states, among others. To realise this pipedream, de Gaulle knew that 'France would have to sign friendship treaties with Spain and Italy', establishing a powerful 'triangle' which would then be aided, 'under the Pope's influence', by the South American Catholic states. The success of this 'triangle' also depended on Vatican assistance 'to help French politics in Bavaria, Würtemberg and Baden-Baden for the creation of a federal state of Catholic Germany', detached from the Protestant majority.

The final link in de Gaulle's plan was a Central European Catholic Pan-Danubian Confederation, allied to Poland and the Baltic states. This would enable the detachment of Catholic Slavs from their Orthodox and Protestant countrymen, ensuring the collapse of Yugoslavia, Czechoslovakia and large parts of the Soviet Union itself, thus contributing greatly to rolling back the Bolshevik menace. De Gaulle's plan was the first formal step in Intermarium's revival.

Gowen later reported to his superiors that through 'the winter of 1945–46 the propaganda effort in Italy diminished . . . However, Vajta Ferenc . . . succeeded in establishing himself in "Intermarium". His reputation as a conceited adventurer true to only money did much to drive the Hungarians away from "Intermarium".'[19] Vajta became a senior Intermarium leader, writing two books and propaganda for the *Intermarium Bulletin*.[20] He later 'elaborated for État Majeur and the [French] Foreign Minster' a number of 'confidential plans' for organising clandestine Balkan activities.

After July 1946 Vajta lived briefly in Innsbruck with the local French intelligence chief, who proposed that Vajta should direct all *émigré* operations from Paris. However, he declined this invitation because of a major disagreement, left the French zone with his closest comrades and relocated to Italy. He soon re-established the close contacts he had built with the Vatican and Italian Catholic politicians during the late 1930s when he had been a journalist in Rome. Soon after, 'the Vatican retired from the circle of French interest'.[21]

American intelligence established that in Rome Vajta 'started to work with the Jesuits. This line of work took him to Spain and Switzerland.'[22] Gowen discovered the reason for his 'disagreement' with the French, who had demanded that Vajta sign over his rights in a Hungarian bauxite mine 'in return for financial and political backing'. Vajta severed most of his contacts, as he no longer wished to be branded as 'a French spy' by the Hungarian Communists.[23]

Vajta had filled in important gaps about France's role in Intermarium's post-war resurrection, but he also explained the British connection. The origin of post-war British activities was traced to the establishment of a 'Central European Committee' by Prime Minister Churchill in early 1944. His aim was to create a Confederation of Central European nations under London's influence.[24] As the war ended, the Secret Intelligence Service (MI6) launched a sophisticated intelligence operation to recruit Central and Eastern European *émigrés*.

Vajta explained that SIS aimed to establish 'a political league against Bolshevism', and provide material aid to draw the exiles into the 'British circle' for anti-Soviet counter-espionage and paramilitary operations. The British had also established Masonic Lodges among the exiles, thereby attracting 'the most eminent leaders of the Balkans'.[25] Then, using 'their very best teams', many of whom had worked with Intermarium in the 1930s, SIS took the initiative from the French. Although British and French operations were tentatively co-ordinated, the two European powers had very different plans: London wanted total domination of Central Europe.

'The first British intelligence experts and specialists were already working in Austria in June 1945', and Vajta's French bosses ordered him to liaise with the SIS teams. The SIS men were 'very clever and very hard, harder even than the French and better prepared'. Vajta knew that they had penetrated agents among the *émigrés*, establishing intelligence centres in Graz and Klagenfurt in the British zone of Austria. By July 1945, '215 British agents had begun the battle for the peace, among them some of the most important Balkan experts.'[26]

The British were convinced that war would soon break out with the Soviets, so they collected everybody, 'it didn't matter who they were, where they came from, what party they belonged to, what ideology they proclaimed'. According to Vajta, the British 'gave succour even to Nazis and the Ustashi', and from the first they 'built military and terrorist centres among all the Balkan refugees. They were in a hurry and didn't want to lose any time,' and soon they had 'a magnificent organisation' which reached into the most obscure parts of the Balkans.[27] A network of *émigré* centres was set up in Italy, Austria, Germany, London and even Paris.[28]

Gowen was finally putting together the pieces of the Intermarium puzzle. 'During the latter part of 1945,' he wrote, '"Intermarium" was in embryo form and by the summer of 1946, it was a well developed organization . . . British and French intelligence took considerable interest in the development of the organization.'[29]

By late summer 1946, British intelligence had achieved 'an undeniable predominance' over their French rivals. Vajta admitted his own contacts with the SIS men, especially after closer French–British co-operation was established in the second half of 1946. He told the Americans that ultimately his 'discussions with the British were not successful, because they asked for too much'. There was at least one major point of agreement between Paris and London: the United States should be excluded from these clandestine operations. They adopted the slogan of 'Europe for the Europeans, without Russians and Americans. Make the United States fight the Russians and exploit the victory'.[30]

Gowen noted that by mid-1946, Intermarium was sufficiently strong for British intelligence to launch 'a large-scale propaganda campaign' in the Italian Displaced Persons camps. 'Apparently the organization had considerable sums at its disposition, for it printed and distributed a 14 page charter of the "Free Intermare" and began printing a bulletin in Rome.'

Gowen also noted that 'the propaganda became so strong at Fermo camp', where many Croatian war criminals had settled, that Father Krunoslav Draganović, Secretary of the Confraternity of San Girolamo in Rome, 'became Croat representative to "Intermarium" in a quasi-official capacity'. The official representative was Croatian Peasant Party leader, Vlatko Maček, who was in fact residing in Washington. In Rome, the man who gave Intermarium its most powerful influence with the Vatican was Father Draganović.[31]

Described by CIC as a 'prominent member of Intermarium', Draganović was the most important figure in the clandestine network. San Girolamo was the centre of the operation, supported by powerful figures in the Holy See hierarchy. Founded in 1453 with the patronage of Pope Nicholas V, San Girolamo has produced some of the most outstanding Croatian scholars, scientists, writers and priests. Like France, Croatia is one of the Church's most beloved nations, a Catholic bulwark against the Orthodox schismatics.[32]

After World War II, Father Draganović skilfully used the benevolence with which the Vatican viewed San Girolamo, to build a thoroughly professional Nazi-smuggling system. With the help of other fanatic Croatian nationalist clerics, the Institute became the headquarters of the Ratlines. Born in 1903 in Brčko, Bosnia, Draganović had been brought up to be a fiercely proud Croatian Catholic. After completing his education in Sarajevo and Vienna he studied theology, taking his vows in 1928. In 1932, Draganović went to Rome to study at the Papal Oriental Institute and the Jesuit Gregorian University. He stayed there until 1935, working in the Vatican Archives. He then became secretary to Bishop Ivan Šarić of Sarajevo, who achieved notoriety in the war as the 'hangman' of the Serbs during the Ustashi's bloody massacres.[33]

Draganović had returned to Rome in August 1943, representing the Ustashi and the Croatian Red Cross. This allowed him to build his escape routes for Nazi war criminals. He was supported by Croatia's Archbishop, Aloyius Stepinac, who had provided Draganović with introductions to influential Vatican contacts. As a result, he could move in the highest circles, meeting regularly with Secretary of State Maglione, and even with Pope Pius XII. He also had close contacts with Axis diplomats at the Vatican, which would later prove invaluable.

Draganović began lobbying the British in favour of the Pan-Danubian Confederation in early 1944 when he delivered a lengthy memo to the British Ambassador to the Vatican. He passed on proposals made by senior Ustashi ministers in Zagreb, which were sent to London via the Vatican. Although nothing came of this early contact, Draganović's London connection blossomed after the war.

Draganović established very close relations with senior Vatican figures, especially Assistant Secretary of State Montini, who helped him gain access to the Pope's Refugee Assistance Commission. By 1944, he was ready to open his Ratline. He depended heavily on the Pontifical Assistance Commission, from which he obtained large numbers of identity papers. Although many, perhaps most, were given to legitimate refugees, thousands helped fugitives make good their escape from justice.[34]

One of Draganović's most important lay colleagues was Intermarium's President, Miha Krek. Leader of the Catholic Slovene People's Party, and a close friend of Vajta, Krek worked for British intelligence.[35] Gowen noted that Krek 'is known to have wide connections' and that one of his principal

> assistants is Kotnik Ciro, former Royal Yugoslav diplomat accredited to the Vatican. Kotnik who has been in Italy over twenty (20) years has built up a chain of useful contacts. Thus, in individual cases, Krek sends Kotnik to the Rome Questura [police] to 'fix up' the foreigners in Rome in whom Krek has an interest. This is relatively easy for Kotnik since he is the respected acquaintance of Dr Angelo de Fiore head of the Ufficio Stranieri [the Italian police section dealing with foreigners].[36]

Draganović's own contacts reached to the very top of the Italian Interior Ministry. The two men had another thing in common: high level Vatican contacts. Krek operated through the Slovene Assistant General of the Jesuits, Monsignor Anton Prešeren. The OSS reported that the Pope had received Krek and Prešeren 'in private audience' in November 1944. According to Italian intelligence, Prešeren was the leader of a powerful group of Slovenes inside the Vatican, which received 'a lot of help from the English'.[37]

Other British agents in Intermarium included the former Nazi Romanian Foreign Minister, Gregorij Gafençu; Casimir Papée, Poland's Ambassador to the Vatican; his fellow countryman, Myz-Mysin, who was the group's counter-espionage expert in Rome; Monsignor Ivan (John) Bučko, the 'spiritual leader of the Ukrainian resistance movement', who also had extremely good Vatican connections; and Ferdinand Durčansky, former Slovak Foreign and Interior Minister, and wanted war criminal. Even the Orthodox Serbs were represented at the Vatican by Dr Kosta Čukić, who was 'in charge of communications with the French', as the Italian secret service reported.[38]

The vast majority of Intermarium leaders were ex-Fascist leaders who worked either for British or French secret services, although there was also a fair sprinkling of Soviet agents. Needless to say, the CIC listed Ferenc Vajta as a senior Intermarium figure and its main propagandist in 1946 and 1947.[39]

Gowen was struck by the fact that many leading Intermarium figures also operated the Vatican-sponsored emigration bodies listed in La Vista's report. At the top of the list was Bishop Hudal of the Austrian committee, who ran the first crude escape networks while Intermarium was being organised: Father Draganović, Monsignor Prešeren, Bishop Bučko and Father Gallov were all active in Intermarium's Nazi-smuggling operations.[40]

William Gowen was reasonably sure that by developing his contacts with Vajta he would get to the bottom of the murky waters covering Intermarium. So he visited local police headquarters and 'arranged for the return of Vajta's documents from the Italians and continued the Intermarium investigation which led into a series of various channels'.[41]

Vajta explained that after arriving in Rome in September 1946, he quickly 'made contacts with various circles inside the Vatican', particularly with the Jesuits where fellow Intermarium leader, Monsignor Prešeren, was influential: they 'always supported my struggle'. As previously discussed, in October 1945 the OSS had identified the Jesuits as key Vatican agents involved in 'a penetration program' inside Communist-occupied areas.[42]

Vajta also 'worked especially closely with the Christian Democrats', and had 'lots of friends' in their top leadership.[43] On one occasion he negotiated a deal involving the Italian government and exiled Hungarian businessmen. Gowen reported that in 'the name of a group of businessmen in the French Zones of Austria and Germany, Vajta was responsible for negotiations with [the] Minister of Industry of the de Gasperi Italian Government. These negotiations were successfully concluded in August 1947.' The Hungarians re-established their industries in Italy, providing employment for a significant population, which might otherwise have looked to the Communists.[44]

After re-establishing his Church and Christian Democrat connections, Vajta extended his activities. In February 1947 he travelled to France and Spain where he obtained 'the help of the Archbishop of Toledo'. In Madrid he also contacted the local US Embassy, which discovered that Vajta was a friend of the former Polish Ambassador in Madrid, Marjan Szumlakowski, who assisted his work in Spain.

Vajta held discussions with Spanish Foreign Affairs officials which resulted in an agreement for the 'entry of Eastern Europeans into Spain'. The US Embassy commented that such people were 'not necessarily "pro-American" but favourable to Vajta's group'. In an obvious attempt to curry favour with US intelligence, Vajta also provided the Embassy with information on the Soviets' 'Tangiers network'.[45]

On his return to Rome, however, Vajta received a nasty shock: he was arrested 'as a war criminal'. Apparently the Hungarian government had organised this through Eugenio Reale, the Italian Communist Under Secretary of Foreign Affairs. 'At the time of my arrest, naturally the Church could do nothing for me,' Vajta said, emphasising that his close relations with them had 'remained intact'.[46]

After investigating the incident, Gowen reported that Vajta had taken up 'residence at the "Mediterranée" [hotel] on 10 April 1947 apparently after returning from Spain.' When he was arrested two days later he was 'interned in Regina Coeli jail', but on 26 April 'released despite the fact that he is on the official war criminal list and that Italy should automatically deliver him as such to the foreign authorities'.

Gowen reported that Vajta's release was 'believed to have been engineered by Pecorari, Secretary General of the Italian Demo-Christian Party, and Insabato, head of the Italian Agrarian Party. These two men are known to be in close contact with Vajta and to be in constant communication with him.'[47] Fausto Pecorari was also the Christian Democrat Vice-President of the Constituent Assembly.

Gowen further noted that Vajta had a close friend in the Pope's inner circle, one 'Padre Gallus of the Germanicum, the Pope's confessor'. The Germanicum is another of the colleges in Rome for German-speaking priests.[48]

Another example of Vajta's influence occurred soon after his release. About ten days before his arrest, one of his Hungarian friends had also been caught. Oliver Virtschologi-Rupprecht was the 'former editor of [the] Nazi daily *Magyarsar*', and 'one of the most notorious Nazi propagandists' in Hungary.[49]

Vajta arranged to save his friend through his influential Italian contacts. Gowen discovered this from Rupprecht himself, who later became one of his sources. The CIC Agent reported that Rupprecht had been

> arrested under his mother's name Marconnay in Bolzano for illegal entry. Prior to his entry to Italy he had been cleared by [the] French I[ntelligence] S[ervice] at Innsbruck which also recognized as legal his change in name . . . While in Austria he is known to have worked for the French and to have seen Vajta. Subsequent to his arrest he was transferred to Regina Coeli jail in Rome. There he met Vajta who had just been arrested. Vajta boasted that he would shortly be released and that . . . [Rupprecht] . . . would also be set free.

Gowen then reported a truly remarkable event. After Vajta was freed, Rupprecht was transferred to Farfa Concentration Camp for 'undesirable foreigners'. One day he was summoned by the Camp Director 'who informed him that a telegram had been received from the Ministry of Interior' ordering his 'escape':

> The next morning V[irtschologi]-R[upprecht] was placed on a bus and brought to the Salarian highway 30 kilometres from the camp and released. However, in the Farfa files he is listed as escaped. This man is now in Rome in contact with this Agent . . . [who] . . . presumes that it was through 'Intermarium' that this escape was organized.[50]

The tables were slowly but surely turning in William Gowen's relationship with Ferenc Vajta. At first the American believed himself master of the situation, bleeding his source dry and building a detailed picture of the intelligence, political and Church figures who had encouraged and organised Intermarium's clandestine activities. Now, though, it was Vajta's turn to use the Special Agent.

At some point in this process, Gowen completely altered his outlook. Previously he had diligently searched for wanted Nazis and refused all their offers of co-operation. He had initially believed that Vajta was a 'war criminal' and 'a conceited adventurer true to only money'. By early July 1947, Gowen was strongly advocating that American intelligence should take over Intermarium; before long, the CIC officer was no longer hunting for Nazis, but recruiting them.

One of his first Nazi recruits was Vajta himself. Hungary had requested his extradition in January 1946, but neither the French nor the British complied, although he was in their custody at various times.[51] Vajta complained to Gowen that, in comparison, the Americans took Nazi-hunting too seriously, failing to 'differentiate between Nazis, traitors and those forced to collaborate'.[52] Vajta recalled that immediately after the war the Office of Strategic Services had placed him on the 'Black List' of wanted Nazis, making him liable for 'automatic arrest'. As a result he was rounded up by the CIC and detained at Dachau. As luck would have it, one of his fellow prisoners was the Crown Prince of Siam, and a 'British officer came to release the latter and upon recognising Vajta's name, brought him out of the Center as well'.[53] Like many Nazi collaborators, Vajta was simply considered too valuable to French and British intelligence operations to be handed back.

Gowen discovered the reason for this: Vajta worked for the Hungarian secret service before the war, and had contacts with several Western intelligence services. He had also been a senior Nazi propagandist for German-sponsored newspapers which spewed out 'an incessant pro-Nazi and anti-Semitic barrage that poisoned Hungarian public opinion and prepared the ground for the anti-Jewish measures adopted during the German occupation in 1944'.[54]

Vajta justified his activities on the grounds that there was an anti-Soviet war being fought, telling Gowen he was 'pro-German, but anti-Nazi'.[55] His propaganda, intelligence and political work render this excuse totally hollow. But Vajta contended that he had been a victim of the Nazis, claiming they had savagely attacked him in the press.

However, when this was investigated, the Americans found no evidence that he had been persecuted because of his alleged anti-Nazi activities. Rather, they determined that he had been a member of a pro-Nazi party and had 'allegedly denounced numerous anti-Nazis. Reputation generally unsavoury,' the US Embassy in Budapest concluded.[56] Further, between 1941 and 1944, Hungary's pro-Nazi governments frequently sent Vajta on special missions, including to Berlin, Istanbul (then a centre of intense espionage by the major powers) and a number of Balkan countries then actively collaborating with the Germans. Clearly Vajta was a trusted and loyal agent of the pro-Nazi regimes in Budapest, as shown by his 1944 promotion to Consul General in Vienna.[57]

Vajta's account of his activities on behalf of the Nazis clarified other things that Gowen had discovered about Intermarium. He found that during the war 'it was believed to have been an instrument of the German intelligence'. In fact, even before the war, German Military Intelligence (the Abwehr) used Intermarium members as '"agents of influence" abroad as well as reasonably reliable sources of information on the large *émigré* communities of Europe'.[58] It is an undisputed fact that by 1939, most Intermarium leaders had thrown in their lot with Hitler and the Nazis. After the war, they escaped punishment by helping British and French intelligence against the Soviets.

Vajta now wanted US support. 'You know, the United States was a horrible failure in Austria and Germany after the war. Our best experts put themselves at the disposal of the French and British services, seeing that in Salzburg and Frankfurt you Americans only wanted Jews, Sovietophiles and idiots. You believed that we were all Nazis, all collaborators, traitors and people with whom you couldn't work, whereas with the British and French we always found a very warm welcome.'

Gowen was hooked, wanting to know what could be done to rectify these past errors and establish an American presence in this vital field of intelligence and clandestine political work. 'The Vatican can and must play an historic role in this,' Vajta insisted

> because it's also in its interests to win America for the real European reconstruction. The Vatican must assist us to come together, because even though the majority of Americans are Protestant, in the Danube's valleys there exists a dominant and traditional Catholicism, so America must look for the Holy See's help. From this collaboration a new and modern world can be born. We've had enough of small British and French intrigues. Now, at last, it's time to re-organise Eastern Europe in a way that the peace will be fruitful and we can return to some sort of equilibrium.

Gowen will still puzzled. What could America do? 'The British and French can't help us any longer economically, but the United States can,' Vajta said, pulling in his catch with some delight:

> If you want peace in the world you must look to a Danubian Confederation in which the liberty of all people will be recognised, with a healthy and traditional democracy. The time has come to create the grand unity of Europe and a Pan-Danubian Confederation composed of peoples of the same culture, of the same traditions. It's simply necessary to help it for it to be born. It would be in America's own interest to work with us and accept our demands. You could ensure the collaboration in such a way that you could become very important.[59]

Little is known of what Gowen reported to his superiors following his meetings with Vajta. It is known that the Special Agent wrote a detailed five page report, but less than one page was declassified for release to the authors. Vajta's arguments certainly swayed the American, as demonstrated by the few uncensored paragraphs. Gowen reminded his superiors that he had previously concluded that only the discovery of Intermarium's true source of funding could 'lead to the full understanding' of its activities.[60]

The next four pages were totally blacked out by the censors at Fort Meade in Maryland, but something of its flavour can be judged from his conclusions:

> The most outstanding feature of these complex activities is the inability of worthy anti-Communists to find a stable base of operations. No sooner do they start working in one direction than the government from which they have gotten backing changes policy.
>
> The second outstanding feature is the lack of United States activity in this, the larger intelligence field. While the Russians, British, and French have to build up artificial societies to further their ends, it is the opinion of this Agent, that only the friendly coordination of worthy elements by the United States would be necessary to build a firm base for future healthy European political development.

Vajta now had an influential American agent supporting his world view, reporting on it in very similar tones to his own and recommending it wholeheartedly to 'higher commands so that its full international importance [can] be evaluated'.[61]

Gowen went even further in a later report: Vajta 'is a key man as he has been active in the *émigré* and clandestine political field since 1932 when he became so engaged as per instructions of the Hungarian Ministry of Foreign Affairs. He has excellent Vatican, British, French and Spanish contacts.'[62]

As far as the American was concerned, Ferenc Vajta was no longer a wanted war criminal. It seemed as though he had cemented his place with yet another Western intelligence agency.

Undoubtedly this was due largely to his successful discussions with Gowen. He later recalled that American policy had changed 'in the first months of 1947', as Washington became more interested 'in the problems of Eastern Europe'. After 'recognising the danger of Communism', Vajta said, the Americans adopted a more concrete policy.[63] A further rude shock, however, was in store for both the Hungarian fugitive and his new American friend.

Two months after Gowen recommended that the United States become involved with Intermarium, the Hungarian government renewed its efforts to bring about Vajta's extradition. Italian foreign affairs official, Reale, filed an extradition order against Vajta and on 1 September this reached Italian Police Chief, Ferrari, who automatically had to send out an arrest warrant.

The Interior Ministry Police Chief had previously told the Hungarians Vajta was not in Rome at all. Gowen later reported that Vajta returned to Rome on 3 September, from a secret trip with Casimir Papée. An 'outstanding Polish diplomat', Papée had been at the Holy See since 1939,[64] and was also a leading Intermarium member. He was also well connected with Western intelligence; Gowen reported that on their trip they met with British and French intelligence officers.

Gowen heard rumours that orders were to be issued for Vajta's extradition. On his return, friends met him and warned of his impending arrest. Instead of returning to the Pensione Patrizia, he went immediately to Castelgandolfo, about twenty kilometres outside Rome. This is the village where the Pope has his summer residence. Although it is not certain that Vajta was actually hidden on Vatican property, Castelgandolfo was a favourite hideout for fugitive Nazis at this time, as will be seen in the next chapter.

On the morning of 4 September 1947, Vajta left Castelgandolfo and returned to Rome, where he had many friends. Gowen noted that Vajta's connections reached to the very top of the Christian Democrat party. Its leader and Italian Premier, Alcide de Gasperi, had personally guaranteed Vajta's safety. Gowen also observed that the French had issued Vajta with false papers on which he still travelled around Europe in relative security.

The CIC officer then got to the heart of the matter, reporting what had occurred on 4 September:

> This Agent had an appointment with Vajta at 1400 at a bar in Piazza Venezia, Rome. Upon meeting, the information pertaining to the arrest

> orders was immediately passed on and Vajta took refuge with an Hungarian Jesuit father in the nearby Jesuit Gregorian University. This Agent thereupon left for Castelgandolfo, fearing that the orders might have already reached the village and that it would be unsafe for Vajta himself to return. Orders from the Police were already on hand but this Agent stated that Vajta had gone to Rome to the Police. As a result, Vajta's effects were taken away by this Agent.
>
> At 1730 this Agent picked up Vajta at the Gregorian University and left for Leghorn, arriving there that night. Vajta remained hidden in the Leghorn area the next day while this Agent returned to Rome. Vajta gave this Agent his false documents with which arrangements for flight from Italy would have to be made.
>
> Upon the return of this Agent to Rome, he conferred with [censored]. The latter, asked where he thought Vajta should be sent, replied that Spain would probably be the best as far as [censored] was concerned. This Agent stated that Vajta himself apparently wanted to go to Spain where he knew General Franco, the Spanish Foreign Minister Artajo, and the Cardinal Primate of Spain personally.[65]

Gowen then made the necessary arrangements for Vajta to travel to Spain, promising that US funding would be made available if the Hungarian could organise a new movement. Once in Spain, the fugitive immediately linked up with his old friend, Marjan Szumlakowski. Vajta decided to establish a new anti-Communist group, which he called the Continental Union. His aim was to attract *émigré* leaders away from the British-controlled Intermarium, and take them into Washington's orbit. To achieve this, he and Szumlakowski held negotiations with senior officials of General Franco's government. As a result, a new *émigré* centre was established in Madrid.

They also received the assistance of a senior Hungarian Catholic priest, Monsignor Zoltán Nyísztor, 'formerly head of the Vatican Press Office in Rome'. This enabled them to enlist the support of the Papal Nuncio in Madrid, who came 'to their aid in a strongly-worded four-page letter to Foreign Minister Artajo', warning that Intermarium had been 'penetrated by French and British freemasonry'. Following the Vatican diplomat's intervention, Artajo ordered his officers to assist Vajta and his Continental Union.

Monsignor Nyísztor also introduced Vajta to one of Spain's leading Vatican experts, Joaquin Ruiz-Giménez, the president of the government-controlled Spanish Cultural Institute. Ruiz-Giménez's important role in Spanish–Vatican relations was demonstrated soon afterwards when he was appointed as General

Franco's Ambassador to the Holy See. Having secured the support of this senior Spanish official, Vajta launched a vitriolic campaign against Intermarium, alleging that many Soviet agents had penetrated the groups working for British and French intelligence. This resulted in a purge of Intermarium leaders from the Eastern European section of the Spanish Cultural Institute.[66]

Vajta and Szumlakowski then entered into an agreement with Ruiz-Giménez and senior Foreign Office officials for Spain to 'officially tolerate and silently aid' the Continental Union's activities. Intermarium was to be discouraged, and political and counter-espionage contacts were established between the Spaniards and Vajta's group. The agreement provided for the free entry of Continental Union personnel into Spain, in exchange for intelligence on Soviet operations. The Cultural Institute provided 'silent' financial assistance for the Union to publish a cultural and information bulletin.

Vajta had succeeded yet again in establishing a powerful *émigré* centre, forcing former Intermarium figures to defect to the Continental Union. The Hungarian assured his American contacts that he did not want to 'get too close' to the Spaniards, as he was working towards firmer relations with US intelligence. To demonstrate his ability to provide good intelligence, he submitted a lengthy and detailed report on *émigré* affairs to the US Embassy, which stressed that Intermarium's British agents in Madrid were rapidly losing ground to his pro-US group.[67]

In pitching his line to the Americans, Vajta pointed out that 'the peoples of Europe are more favourable to American action than to Anglo-French action', especially after President Truman decided to take a strong anti-Communist line. However, he emphasised that the reaction in London and Paris to Washington's decision to 'put itself at the head of the anti-Communist campaign' had been to regroup, unifying their previously parallel campaigns to take 'united action not only against Communism but also against the U.S.' From intelligence he had gathered, he was certain that they planned for this 'silent struggle to become more spirited and stronger' by demonstrating that the most important *émigré* leaders were in their camp.[68]

Vajta's approach to the Americans was initially very successful, but soon he became a huge embarrassment to the US government. On 11 February 1948 the Army's Intelligence Division cabled the

US European Headquarters Command. They ordered an immediate investigation into Gowen's connections with his Hungarian Nazi contact. The message pointed out that there had been a great deal of publicity about Vajta's arrival in the United States 'on visa issued by American Consulate Madrid Spain marked "Diplomat" also has letter of commendation signed by Gowen . . . stating Vajta had been of great assistance to Counter Intelligence Corps in Rome giving information on immigrants from Russian satellite states'. The message also reported that Vajta had been identified 'as Hungarian war criminal, Nazi stooge and directly responsible for murder of American airmen downed in Hungary'.[69]

This had all come to light after Vajta arrived in New York on 16 December 1947. Apparently Gowen handed over his contact to State Department intelligence which brought Vajta to Washington. The Hungarian fugitive was issued with his visa in Madrid after presenting 'letters from William Gowen . . . indicating US interest in trip'.* The Embassy had passed the details of Vajta's trip to an intelligence agency official, together with a list of people he wished to meet in America. These included Cardinal Spellman, Jesuit leader Father La Farge and a host of *émigré* political leaders Vajta hoped to entice into the Continental Union.[70] Another contact Vajta wished to see was senior State Department official, Franklin Gowen, father of his CIC sponsor.[71]

The main purpose of Vajta's trip was to enlist support for the Continental Union. Although he had acquired influential backers in US intelligence and diplomatic circles, his mission turned into a disaster. News of his arrival rapidly reached two well known journalists, Drew Pearson and Walter Winchell. Soon the government was enveloped in adverse publicity, and someone had to be held responsible.

Vajta was immediately arrested and held on Ellis Island, and on 3 February 1948 the Hungarians requested his extradition. A secret Congressional enquiry was soon underway, but its results have never been released. Vajta himself became something of a media celebrity, boasting to the press, truthfully, that Italian

---

*In a recent discussion, Gowen insisted that neither he nor any other CIC agent played a role in bringing Vajta to the United States. It is very plausible that the State Department removed evidence of its recruitment of Vajta and falsely implicated the CIC by placing Gowen's letter of introduction in Vajta's visa file.

Christian Democrat leader, Fausto Pecorari, had requested Rome's Chief of Police to issue various permits to him. Predictably, however, democratic Hungarian groups publicly denounced Vajta as a 'Nazi', a view with which the American courts ultimately concurred.[72] William Gowen's reports admitted not only his own involvement in Vajta's escape, but his close personal knowledge of the Vatican's role in hiding and assisting known Nazi fugitives. The special Agent's outlook was characterised by his belief that the storm then raging in Washington had been created by Hungarian Communists, who had somehow manipulated Drew Pearson into writing his article. In Gowen's view, the whole thing was a Communist provocation.[73]

Back in the United States, though, Vajta had become a public relations disaster for the government. The Immigration and Naturalization Service took action to have him summarily deported. Although he resisted through a series of legal appeals, he was finally thrown out in February 1950. Charles Ashman and Robert Wagman in their book, *The Nazi Hunters*, report that he went to Colombia after both Italy and Spain refused to have him back.

As the Americans did not want to return him to Hungary, which was still agitating for his surrender in 1950, it fell to the Holy See once more to extend its charitable hand to Vajta. According to Ashman and Wagman, 'the Vatican stepped in and arranged for Colombia to accept him, and for a small Catholic college there to employ him. He spent the rest of his life in Bogota as an economics professor.'[74]

By mid-1947, William Gowen had already recommended that America should ignore the Vatican's protection of an even more notorious Nazi mass murderer. As will be seen in the next chapter, he justified this because of the Holy see's contribution to the anti-Communist cause. After the publicity surrounding Hudal it may have been expected that the Vatican would become more circumspect. But Vajta was not the last of the Vatican's Nazi scandals. The worst was yet to come. For fugitive Nazis, all roads led to Rome.

4

A Staggering Blow to the Holy See

Ante Pavelić turned back to face the rising sun. Although the spring of 1945 was already some weeks old, the Slovene countryside was still cold and mist hung in the valleys and hollows. Despite the temperature, Pavelić wiped sweat from his brow. The fleeing dictator was now on foot, having abandoned his car on the clogged roads and joined the throng of refugees marching wearily towards Austria.

Pavelić reflected on the irony of his situation. A few days before he had been the Poglavnik of 'independent' Croatia, exercising comparable powers to the Führer in Germany. He had even managed to keep the death machine operating almost until the end, while the Germans were frantically dismantling theirs. Then, without warning the Nazis had capitulated. The Poglavnik was now just one of hundreds of thousands fleeing towards Austria to surrender to the British.

Pavelić recalled with bitterness his previous flight into exile in 1929. Then he had been a young man and an underground life – building his clandestine Ustashi terrorist network – had appealed to him. His twelve years abroad had seemed worthwhile, for in April 1941 he had assumed power in his beloved Croatia, even if the Italian Fascists and German Nazis exercised real authority behind the scenes.

The fugitive dictator had become used to power and wondered if he would ever taste it again. For Pavelić knew that if he fell into the wrong hands his future would be very short indeed. He hoped that his emissaries sent ahead into Austria had made the right contacts with British intelligence and the Catholic Church. If they had failed, only death awaited him.

Pavelić quivered, almost like a startled rabbit; he was sure he could see a motorised partisan unit in the distance. He turned again towards the Austrian frontier and broke into a desperate jog . . .

*

Such is the legend of Ante Pavelić's disappearance in May 1945, which has grown in the retelling over the years. Depending on which side is telling the story, his flight was either the end of the most glorious four years in Croatian history, or the country's liberation from a terrorist and mass murderer.[1]

It is impossible to know for sure the precise details of the Poglavnik's flight from his homeland. We do know that he fled from Zagreb to Austria via the Slovenian town of Maribor on the Yugoslav–Austrian frontier. However, both pro-Pavelić and pro-Tito accounts agree that panic was the predominant mood as the retreating Ustashi leadership fled for their lives ahead of the Communist forces.

Pavelić had many reasons for concern, among them the horrific massacres of Serbs, Jews and Gypsies over the previous four years; half a million innocent civilians slaughtered at his personal command. Many had been dispatched using extremely medieval methods; eyes had been gouged out, limbs severed, intestines and other internal organs ripped from the bodies of the living. Some were slaughtered like beasts, their throats cut from ear to ear with special knives. Others died from blows to their heads with sledgehammers. Many more were simply burned alive.[2]

Even so, Pavelić hoped to be greeted in Austria by both Church and British leaders as a prominent Catholic leader in the struggle against 'atheistic Bolshevism'. After all, British intelligence had maintained close pre-war relations with his underground terrorist network, even after the 1934 assassination of Yugoslav King Alexander in Marseilles. Pavelić also knew that the Holy See looked on Croatia as 'the frontier of Christianity'; a special relationship between Croatia and the Pope extended back to 700 AD.[3]

Apart from this strong historical connection, Pavelić was also aware that Pius XII and his senior advisers held extremely charitable opinions of his militant Catholicism. During the war Pavelić had forcibly converted tens of thousands of Serbian Orthodox under penalty of death. In fact, the atrocities were already underway at the very moment Pius XII received the Poglavnik in private audience in late April 1941.

The bureaucrats at the British Foreign Office reacted with outrage at 'the reception by the Pope of a notorious terrorist and murderer', describing Pius XII as 'the greatest moral coward of our age'. When pressed to justify the reception, the Vatican explained lamely that Pavelić had only been received in his private capacity, not as head of the Croatian state. They could not ignore a Catholic 'statesman' such as Pavelić, the Vatican replied. But the Foreign Office 'was indeed astonished and pained that the Vatican should so consider him even for a moment'.[4]

The British Ambassador to the Holy See found it difficult when he took up the matter personally with the ever charming Pius XII:

> . . . one approaches him with indignation in one's soul and protests on one's lips, [but] it is impossible not to be disarmed by his simplicity, humanity, friendliness and sincerity and by his devastating combination of saintliness and charm. One talks so easily to him, he listens so readily, responds so frankly and smiles so enchantingly and easily that one's carefully prepared attitude of dignified disapprobation just evaporates.[5]

The Pope called Pavelić 'a much maligned man'. Pius XII could not believe that he had been involved in the assassination at Marseilles, even though Pavelić had been convicted *in absentia* in a French court. The cynics back in the Foreign Office conceded that the Pope 'must indeed be a charmer', but told their Ambassador in no uncertain terms that his reception of Pavelić 'has done more to damage his reputation in this country than any other act since the war began'.[6]

It was hypocrisy of the most unbridled kind! Before the war, British intelligence had used Pavelić, despite his unsavoury reputation as a terrorist and murderer. Now, though, the Pope was to be thoroughly condemned merely for receiving him. Of course, times had changed, and Pavelić was massacring hundreds of thousands of innocents as part of Hitler's savage racial war. Surely the Holy Father would not stand aside and watch such ghastly deeds without raising the voice of Christian Charity?

A young Yugoslav by the name of Branko Bokun believed that the Pope could not. Bokun had been sent to Rome by one of Yugoslavia's intelligence chiefs to ask for the Vatican's intervention to stop the slaughter in Croatia. Armed with a large file of documents, eye witness accounts and even photographs of the massacres, Bokun finally gained entrance into the Vatican Secretariat of State in September 1941.

He wanted to deliver his file to Monsignor Giovanni Montini, Under Secretary of State for Ordinary Affairs, but could not gain an audience. Bokun was told to leave his file and come back a week later, with the promise that 'the Monsignor will give the matter careful consideration'.

This was at the height of the worst atrocities and Pavelić had taken steps of his own to influence Vatican opinion. He had dispatched Father Cherubino Seguić to Rome to counter the spreading horror with which the massacres were greeted in many Catholic circles. Seguić soon discovered that the Ustashi regime was viewed by many as 'a crowd of barbarians and cannibals'. He promply sought an audience with Montini, and recorded in his diary that the Vatican bureaucrat sought 'full information on the events in Croatia', also confirming that the 'calumnies' had reached the Monsignor's ears.[7]

Father Seguić seems to have had a persuasive effect on Montini. When Bokun returned to discuss his file detailing evidence of these 'calumnies', he received short shrift from Montini's secretary. Bokun was simply told that 'the atrocities described in your file are the work of the Communists, but maliciously attributed to the Catholics'. Bokun had the evidence but no access to Montini, while Seguić had no difficulty in presenting his side of the story.[8]

There is no doubt that Montini was well informed of the true situation, for on a number of occasions he castigated Croatia's representatives to the Holy See. While Montini would begin with harsh words, invariably these sessions concluded with assurances that the Holy Father would assist Catholic Croatia.[9]

The Pope's own attitude towards the murderous Ustashi leader was more than benign neglect. When Pavelić asked for another audience with the Holy Father in May 1943, he was assured by Secretary of State Maglione that 'there were no difficulties attached to the Poglavnik's visit to the Holy Father except that he could not be received as a sovereign'. Pius himself promised to give Pavelić his personal blessing again.[10] By this time, the Holy See possessed abundant evidence of the atrocities committed by his regime.

The Vatican has consistently defended its policy, pointing out that official Vatican recognition was denied Pavelić's state. However, senior Vatican officials, including Pius XII, regularly received his 'unofficial' diplomatic representative who called himself the 'Croatian Ambassador'. The Pope also continued to receive other senior officials and delegations, turning his face away from their countless victims.[11]

Pavelić's record was well known. On one occasion a visiting Italian Fascist journalist had been granted an interview with the Poglavnik. Noticing what appeared to be a large bowl of oysters, he had asked Pavelić whether they were from the Dalmatian coast. He was shocked when the dictator replied that they were forty pounds of Serbian eyes sent to him by his loyal Ustashi.[12]

On another occasion, Pavelić held discussions with Hitler in Berlin. In a strange reversal of roles, he castigated the Führer about the 'lenient' treatment of German Jews, boasting that in comparison he had completely solved the Jewish question in Croatia while some remained alive in the Third Reich.[13]

But when Hitler died, Pavelić could not be sure that even his staunchest Church supporters would offer him protection. He disappeared so completely that it was as though the Austrian countryside had suddenly opened up and swallowed him. In the following months, British and American intelligence combed the areas under their control. The Foreign Office and the State Department repeatedly told Tito's government that Pavelić would be returned to face trial as a war criminal, just as soon as he was found, but all they discovered were shadowy rumours.

The Communist government in Belgrade was sceptical of the West's repeated denials. Tito had a battle-hardened and extremely efficient intelligence network operating in Austria, tracking the Ustashi's movements. In July 1945 their Ambassador in London told the British that Pavelić had 'been made prisoner by the troops of Field Marshal Alexander, and . . . is now in the part of Austria under the control of the British Army'. In late August the Yugoslavs repeated their claim that Pavelić had 'been taken prisoner at Celovac (Klagenfurt), Austria, by British troops'.[14]

The Foreign Office was adamant that Pavelić had never been in their hands, and assured the cynical Yugoslavs that every 'effort is being made to discover the present whereabouts of Dr Pavelić'. Their 'energetic attempts' had 'produced no information except that Pavelić was still rumoured to be in the Saltzburg area on September 26th'.[15] Salzburg was not even in the British zone, having been occupied by the Americans.

There were still many leads for the British to follow. Serbian Četnik officers claimed that Pavelić was 'disguised as a monk in a monastery at Klagenfurt'; the Yugoslavs also alleged that he was in 'a villa not far from Klagenfurt'. The British conducted a 'thorough search' of the area 'without result' and finally decided that the fugitive must be in Soviet hands. They wrote to Foreign Minister Vyshinski, but received a negative reply.[16]

The Yugoslavs launched a vitriolic press campaign, claiming they had given the British 'precise information regarding the town and street' where Pavelić was living 'in complete freedom'. The Foreign Office decided that it was time for 'a little counter-battery work' and wrote to the Yugoslav Ambassador insisting that the Yugoslav press campaign 'was entirely without foundation'.[17]

The Yugoslav Ambassador persisted, telling the British in early January 1946 that Pavelić 'was disguised as a monk'. He asked if the British 'had no influence with the Vatican'. Tito was obviously convinced that the British were conniving with the Holy See to protect the Ustashi leader. The Foreign Office reacted with complete innocence, pointing everywhere else. They even asked their American ally if they perhaps had captured Pavelić, receiving yet another negative answer.[18]

Throughout 1946 the claims and denials went back and forth. The Yugoslav Communists sent diplomatic notes and directed their press to launch ever more hysterical campaigns. The message was always the same: the West could find Pavelić if they really wanted to, but refused because he and his supporters were being used in an anti-Tito crusade.[19]

The British response also became repetitive; 'especial efforts' had been made to trace Pavelić, who 'has at no time been in British custody, nor has his whereabouts ever been known to any British authority'. The Americans joined in these emphatic denials, stating that authorities 'in U.S. and British zones have searched diligently' for Pavelić 'without success'.[20]

As 1946 drew to a close, it had been eighteen months since Pavelić crossed the Austrian frontier and apparently disappeared into thin air. In examining the official files it is striking that they assume a significantly different tone in late November. Suddenly the Pavelić mystery was solved. A senior British Political Adviser reported that it was 'becoming increasingly clear that many of the more important quislings are taking refuge under the wing of the Church', pessimistically forecasting that little could be done 'unless the Vatican can be persuaded into active co-operation'.[21]

The British had found that five wanted Yugoslavs were 'at present in the Oriental Institution in Rome'. This was the Pope's institute specialising in Eastern European affairs, and enjoyed complete extraterritoriality. The Foreign Office feared that 'it would create a most unfortunate impression if the British authorities decided to arrest these men on Vatican property without any prior notice to the Vatican authorities'. They proposed to the Americans that they jointly tell Tito that 'since these traitors are resident on Vatican property, they are outside our jurisdiction, and that the Yugoslav Government should apply to the Vatican, to whom they have an accredited diplomatic representative'. The Americans were happy to go along with this cynical proposal.[22]

At last the British bureaucrats had someone to blame for Pavelić's disappearance. They noted on 18 December that it seemed 'more and more likely that Pavelić is in Italy and that his whereabouts may be known to Dr Draganović . . . and to no-one else'. The British had gathered detailed intelligence showing that Father Krunoslav Draganović, Secretary of the Croatian Institute of San Girolamo, was the main organiser of the Ratlines used by known war criminals to escape the Western dragnet. The Foreign Office believed the British Army's claim that it was 'unlikely that Pavelić has been in Austria since the British occupation, except possibly in transit'. They were certain that Draganović held the answer to the Poglavnik's disappearance.[23]

If Draganović's own version of his relationship with Pavelić can be believed, he thought the dictator was a brutal mass murderer, one of the 'most dangerous men' he had met in his whole life. Years later, Draganović maintained that he had repeatedly intervened with the Ustashi leadership during the war, begging for the lives of Jews, Serbs and even Communists.[24] The priest claimed that he had followed the commandments of Christian love, regardless of religion, politics or nationality. He bragged that this had endangered his own life, because the Ustashi strongly disapproved of his charitable work and forceful interventions. Draganović insisted that he took up his complaints with Pavelić himself.[25]

There is no independent corroboration of Draganović's account. If it is correct, it throws fascinating light on his post-war decision to aid this mass murderer, whom he rightly blamed for the extermination of innocent Serbs, Jews, Gypsies and others. Yet Western intelligence was certain that the two men were extremely close after the war, and that Pavelić could never have slipped through their dragnet without Draganović's charitable assistance.

Special Agent William Gowen and his colleagues in the Rome detachment of the US Army's Counter Intelligence Corps found out that their British ally had been lying all along: they knew a great deal about Pavelić's whereabouts. This emerged in early 1947 when American intelligence launched its own intensive operation in early 1947 to find Pavelić.[26] By the time the CIC investigations were concluded, it was established that Yugoslav intelligence had been right all along. According to 'reliable sources', Pavelić had indeed made it across the Austrian frontier and reached British lines, where he

> was protected by the British in British-guarded and requisitioned quarters for a two (2) week period. Due to the insecurity of his position and due to the inevitable embarrassment of the British Command, he then left these quarters but remained in the British Occupation Zone for at least two (2) or three (3) months more still in contact with the British I[ntelligence] S[ervice].[27]

This confirmed what Ferenc Vajta had told Gowen about SIS's recruitment of the Ustashi immediately after hostilities had ceased. Gowen's colleague, Special CIC Agent Robert Mudd, was also working on the case, reporting on 30 January 1947 that the former Poglavnik had fled from Yugoslavia and taken refuge at Klagenfurt, where he 'had an apartment and a villa', just as the Četniks and Communists had previously claimed. This report provided further evidence of the Catholic Church's involvement.

In 'April of 1946 Pavelić left Austria and came to Rome accompanied only by an Ustashi lieutenant named Dochsen. Both men were dressed as Roman Catholic priests. They took refuge in a college there in Via Giacomo Belli, 3.' Pavelić's travelling companion was in fact Dragutin Došen, a former senior officer in the Poglavnik's Personal Body Guard. The British discovered that Došen was 'a leading light of San Girolamo (Draganović's HQ)'.[28]

Mudd's informant believed that Pavelić had taken refuge in a Vatican-protected college in Rome, although the authors could not verify this claim. The informant also reported that Pavelić had obtained a Spanish passport 'under the name of Don Pedro Gonner', in preparation for his eventual escape, probably to Spain or South America. However, in mid-1946 Pavelić was afraid that he was too closely monitored and instead of leaving Europe, he returned to Austria.

Mudd directed his informant 'to penetrate the Ustashi intelligence network', and report on their escape routes:

> . . . the network runs from Grumo–Rome–Venice–Trieste–Ljubljana–Zagreb. The whole affair is run under the cover of the Roman Catholic clergy whose priests in these monasteries are nearly all of Croatian extraction . . . The Ustashi organization in Italy is at present a tightly-knit group still maintaining its 'cell' organization, still publishing its papers, and still interested in the same aims that they professed before and during the war . . . the focal point of all intelligence and activity is the Monastery of Saint Jerome (sic), Via Tomacelli, 132, Rome.[29]

From a very confidential source, American intelligence had discovered in May 1946 that the Poglavnik was living 'close to Rome in a building which is under the jurisdiction of the Vatican'.[30] This was soon after Pavelić had first arrived in Rome from Austria, and it is now known that the Poglavnik, like Ferenc Vajta, actually took refuge at Castelgandolfo, where the Pope's summer residence is located. It seems that many Nazis gravitated to Castelgandolfo, for Pavelić was housed with a former Minister in the Nazi Romanian government.[31]

US intelligence received even more sensational information from their confidential source, who claimed that 'Pavelić holds frequent secret meetings with Monsignor Montini, the Under Secretary of State of the Holy See'.[32] Gowen was just then starting to piece together the Intermarium jigsaw puzzle. From what he had learned from Vajta, he was convinced that the Vatican was deeply implicated in some very unsavoury business. Information received by the US Embassy in Rome in early January 1947 claimed that Pavelić had been in San Girolamo the previous month, and was travelling under several aliases.[33] Suddenly Gowen was on to a major case. By late January, the American intelligence officer had collected enough evidence from 'reliable informants' to report that Pavelić

> is at the present time in the extra-territorial walled-in compound on the left bank of the Tiber, at Lungo Tevere Aventino, Rome. This compound has within its walls five Catholic organizations . . . 1) The Monastery of St. Sabina of the Dominican Order; 2) The St. Alessio School for Roman Studies; 3) The Cavaliers of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta; 4) The Benedictine Monastery of St. Anselmo; 5) A children's school run by Nuns. The compound is situated on top of the Aventine Hill which . . . is reputedly honeycombed with subterranean tunnels which link the individual buildings.[34]

Having 'carefully checked' the compound, Gowen concluded that Pavelić was probably in the Monastery of St Sabina, reporting that other 'information from reliable informants tends to show that the tram line running beneath the Aventine Hill along the Tiber and thence to the Circus Maximus, the Colosseum and Via Cavour is the connecting link between Pavelić and Via Cavour, 210 int. 3, which is an Ustascia base well known in Rome'. Although we were unable to vertify the existence of an underground tunnel linking Pavelić with his loyal Ustashi supporters, Gowen attached a map to his report showing the route he believed it took to the tramline.[35]

Gowen seemed to have finally uncovered a concrete lead in the mysterious Pavelić case. He was still cautious, though, reporting that 'the information seems plausible and paints a plausible picture when it is taken as a whole'. However, he believed that only 'action against such known Pavelić contacts as Draganović, Krunoslav can ultimately reveal the hiding place of Pavelić and lead to his apprehension'.[36]

The net seemed to be finally closing and all fingers, from the British Foreign Office to the US Army's CIC, were now pointing at Father Draganović as the man who could lead to Pavelić's arrest and extradition. The focus of the Yugoslav press campaign now shifted to the Vatican. They claimed 'that a number of Yugoslav war criminals had been enabled to emigate from Italy under the protection of a Vatican institution'.[37]

US intelligence launched a comprehensive operation to establish the truth, quickly confirming that Draganović was in close contact with the former Croatian dictator all along. According to one report, Draganović was 'known as the "alter ego" of Ante Pavelić', with whom he maintained close relations. Indeed, Draganović operated a regular courier service between San Girolamo and the Poglavnik's Austrian hideout.[38]

After establishing the close relations between the two men, the Americans convened a top secret conference on 11 April 1947 to plan Pavelić's arrest. The US Army's senior Rome intelligence officers were all present to review the information available and put in motion a plan to penetrate Pavelić's Vatican network.[39]

Over the following weeks CIC officers received information that he was hiding in one Vatican-controlled institution or another. They also discovered more of the fugitive's aliases. The Jesuits were among his closest Church helpers at this time, assisting his plans to leave Italy by arranging for his passage to Spain under the alias of Padre Gomez, supposedly 'a Spanish Minister of Religion'.[40]

The barrage of reports that Pavelić had taken refuge under the wing of the Vatican forced a senior State Department official to ask the diplomats at the Vatican to make inquiries. He cynically pointed out:

> 'while I am aware of, and appreciate, the Vatican's humanitarian attitude towards criminals who may have shown any indication of repentance, it seems to me that Pavelić's peculiarly unsavory record would make it difficult for the Church to afford him protection.'

Washington was apparently in no hurry to receive a reply; there 'is no urgency about this case, but I should appreciate hearing anything you may be able to turn up'.[41] In Rome they evidently took this hint, taking over two months to report that they had not been able to confirm the wanted man's whereabouts; 'Pavelić, like Kilroy, seems to be everywhere. Or so the reports of dozens of sleuths would indicate.'[42]

By mid-June, the Foreign Office was also involved in the hunt, proposing that every effort be made to catch Pavelić. Apparently a huge chasm of mistrust existed between Washington and London. The British suspected that the Americans were deliberately sabotaging the plan, by insisting that the Italian police had to be involved in the operation, because 'from a practical point of view there is a far greater danger of a leakage or of inefficient handling'.[43] Ustashi intelligence was especially efficient in Rome, where they had extremely good connections with the Italian police, who had sponsored Pavelić during his exile in the 1930s.

This British position was cynically dishonest; while SIS protected Pavelić, the Foreign Office complained of US efforts to sabotage the plan to apprehend him. As we shall see, both governments were involved in devious and often conflicting machinations at higher policy making levels.

By mid-July the British had also received information that Pavelić was living 'within the Vatican city' and proposed a joint operation to arrest him.[44] The reluctant Americans agreed, but only if Pavelić's arrest was 'carried out to [the] greatest extent possible by [the] Italians'.[45] The British again warned against the risks of Italian involvement, insisting on 'the closest supervision of the whole operation by the Allied Security authorities'.[46]

On 28 July the State Department issued unenthusiastic instructions for American authorities to participate 'to [the] extent necessary and possible in [the] Pavelić case'.[47] The following day, the US Political Adviser in Rome passed this order on to the Supreme Allied Commander, still insisting that US forces would only 'assist the Italian authorities in endeavouring to arrest him at a suitable opportunity outside Vatican territory'. His British counterpart followed suit on 2 August.[48]

In fact, British and American officials were playing bureaucratic chess. The intelligence operatives on the scene were merely their pawns and really did not understand the game's rules. The British hoped to blame the Americans if the operation failed, while the Americans were desperate to force the British to make the arrest so they could claim that they were not responsible.

In this game, the British finally forced their ally to 'supervise the arrest' and it seemed that finally, after more than two years of prevarication, action was about to be taken.[49] On 7 August the US Deputy Chief of Staff at Allied Force Headquarters noted that it would 'be an extremely tricky operation requiring elaborate coordination between the U.S., British and Italian authorities and the maintenance of absolute secrecy'.[50]

Updated information was then collected on Pavelić's exact location, and it was discovered that he was 'hiding as an ex-Hungarian General under the name of "Giuseppe". He wears a small pointed beard and has his hair cut short'. Further, he

> is living on Church property under the protection of the Vatican, at Via Giacoma Venezian No. 17-C, second floor. On entering the building you go along a long and dark corridor. At the end of the corridor there are two stairs, one to the left and one to the right. You must take the right. On the right the rooms are numbered 1, 2, 3 etc. If you knock once or twice at door No. 3 an unimportant person will come out. But if you knock three times at door No. 3, door *No. 2* will open. It leads to the room where Pavelić lives, together with the famous Bulgarian terrorist Vancia Mikoiloff (sic) and two other persons.
>
> About twelve other men live in the building. They are all Ustasha and make up Pavelić's bodyguard.
>
> When Pavelić goes out he uses a car with a Vatican (SCV) number-plate.[51]

News of the Poglavnik's hiding place in Via Giacoma Venezian belatedly reached the Italian public in September 1948, when the press published a sensational series of articles dealing with the

Vatican's role in the affair. By then, Pavelić was long gone, perhaps explaining why someone in Western intelligence leaked the story to the newspapers.[52]

Twelve months earlier, US intelligence had investigated Via Giacoma Venezian 17-C. They suspected that it was one of the Vatican's libraries, although we have not been able to confirm this. But they did confirm that some senior Vatican official was protecting Pavelić: he regularly travelled around in their official cars. As these bore the special number plates of the Diplomatic Corps, the Western authorities could not stop them, even when Pavelić left Vatican territory.

However, everything seemed in place; the joint intelligence team only had to quietly observe Pavelić, and when he left the Vatican's extraterritorial protection, follow him until he alighted from his Vatican car and arrest him. Three weeks went by and nothing happened, prompting London to ask Rome to 'report recent developments'. Another six weeks elapsed but still no answer was forthcoming; the Foreign Office grew agitated and again asked for a response.[53]

Eventually the operation was allowed to quietly die. The apparent determination to arrest this notorious Nazi mass murderer disappeared, just as Pavelić himself had seemingly done in May 1945. The answers to this further mystery are partially found in three key American intelligence documents. On 7 July 1947 Bernard Grennan, Chief of CIC Operations in Rome, directed his Supervising Agent, Gono Morena, to take Pavelić 'into custody on sight'. The order had come down the line from the Assistant Chief of Staff of Army Intelligence.

One week later, a handwritten note was added to Grennan's memo by Morena. He had received 'new instructions', which he summarised with a brief but all too obvious comment:

'Hands Off'

The order was passed to Morena by Grennan and Lieutenant Colonel Charles Hartman, the commander of Army Counter Intelligence in Rome. Grennan and Hartman were at the top level conference held on 11 April to plan the operation, and must have been astounded by this sudden change of direction.[54] Evidently someone much higher up the chain had already decided to sabotage the operation, even before it had been finalised. The senior American officers certainly passed the 'Hands Off' decision down their chain of command. From all the available evidence, however, it seems probable that the original decision was taken by British intelligence officers, who were the fugitive's real sponsors.

The American motive for quietly going along with London's decision to allow Pavelić's escape was really very simple. Senior US officials were then developing their own network of ex-Nazis, and were beginning to co-ordinate activities with both the Vatican and London.

The 'Hands Off' policy came into effect just eight days after Gowen completed his report on wanted Hungarian war criminal Ferenc Vajta and the Vatican connection. Gowen recommended on 6 July that American intelligence should take over Intermarium, passing his views up to 'higher commands so that its full international importance [can] be evaluated'.[55]

Gowen had certainly worked out which way the wind was blowing. No one cared about Nazis as long as they were anti-Communist. Nearly two months after the 'Hands Off' policy was decided, Gowen and another officer submitted a lengthy report on the Pavelić case. They noted, with a great deal of charity, that though 'fanatically anti-Serb and to a lesser degree anti-Orthodox, Pavelić is a cultured person and a social liberal'. They had to admit, though, that

> during the early months of the Pavelić regime about 150,000 persons of the Serb Orthodox faith were slaughtered – in many cases, it is a matter of record, they were offered salvation if they renounced their faith and became Catholics.
>
> Thus, today, in the eyes of the Vatican, Pavelić is a militant Catholic, a man who erred, but who erred fighting for Catholicism. It is for this reason that [Pavelić] now enjoys Vatican protection . . . Pavelić is known to be in contact with the Vatican which sees in him the militant Catholic who yesterday fought the Orthodox Church and today is fighting Communist atheism . . .
>
> For the reasons given above he is receiving the protection of the Vatican whose view of the entire 'Pavelić Question' is that, since the Croat State does not exist and, since the Tito regime cannot be expected to give anybody a fair trial, [Pavelić] should not be turned over to the present Yugoslav regime with the excuse of bringing him to justice. The extradition of Pavelić would only weaken the forces fighting atheism and aid Communism in its fight against the Church.[56]

The CIC agents were still a little uncomfortable with the Holy See's approach, so they went to some lengths to explain fully the Vatican's justification for its immoral policy:

> Pavelić's crimes of the past cannot be forgotten, but he can only be tried by Croats representing a Christian and Democratic Government, the Vatican maintains. While Pavelić is allegedly responsible for the deaths of 150,000 persons, Tito is the agent of Stalin, who is responsible for the deaths of tens of millions of persons in the Ukraine, White Russia, Poland, the Baltic and the Balkan States over a period of twenty-five (25) years.[57]

Gowen and his colleague were also certain that Pavelić 'is today being supported and exploited by some power' other than the Vatican. As Pavelić had been 'protected by the British in British-guarded and requisitioned quarters' when he first arrived in Austria in May 1945, and knowing 'something of the British Intelligence system', the CIC officers were sure that this power was the United Kingdom.

They further pointed out that even Pavelić's arch enemies, the pro-Royalist Serbian Četniks, believed that 'he ought not to be turned over to Tito at the present time since his trial would be used as a basis for more anti-American and pro-Communist propaganda'. So the CIC officers recommended

> that the Vatican and Chetnik views of Pavelić be appreciated and that no direct police action be taken against him on the part of the American Military Authorities. Such action would force his extradition to Tito and would bolster the present British anti-American campaign be (sic) waged among the political *émigrés* in Western Europe.[58]

The US intelligence officers were referring here to the long-standing British campaign to denigrate America in the eyes of the Nazi *émigrés*. They hoped to exclude the Americans from all aspects of the clandestine intelligence and military operations they had organised over the previous two years.

The CIC officers were aware that the British campaign included the claim that the Americans had returned many innocent anti-Communists to Yugoslavia. They commented that in 'the case of the Croats the British state that while they have only extradited seven (7) Croats from Italy the United States had extradited ninety-eight (98) from Austria'. It was completely false, but nonetheless a very effective propaganda tool in Britain's anti-American campaign. US intelligence was by then fully aware that SIS were recruiting ex-Nazis for their anti-Communist crusade.[59]

A *post facto* rationale was found to justify the 'Hands Off' policy. Neither the British nor the Americans were serious about apprehending Pavelić and sending him back to Tito's 'justice'. The bureaucrats in London and Washington formally favoured this course, while turning a blind eye to the activities of their intelligence services. SIS was then mounting major political, intelligence and military operations against Tito. Using Pavelić's followers, they wanted to overthrow the Communist government in Belgrade. Some sympathetic Americans were already working on these operations without official sanction. They, too, saw the Ustashi as useful weapons in the anti-Communist struggle.

Clearly, if the Americans handed over the head of the movement to the enemy, it would be impossible to expect loyalty from the Ustashi rank and file. The solution was clear: Britain must 'be forced to arrest and extradite him themselves. The ultimate disposal of Pavelić is necessary if the Croat democratic and resistance forces are to ever be recognized by the United States.'[60]

'Disposal', of course, meant escape, and the Holy See was the perfect 'fall guy' to shoulder the blame for smuggling Pavelić. The Vatican had the most to lose if he was handed over to the Communists. Soon after he helped Vajta to leave Rome, Gowen wrote a final report:

> Pavelić's contacts are so high and his present position is so compromising to the Vatican, that any extradition of [Pavelić] would deal a staggering blow to the Roman Catholic Church.[61]

Ante Pavelić was once again allowed to disappear into thin air. The names of his high level contacts inside the Holy See's bureaucracy are still highly classified. As seen earlier, at least one US intelligence source believed that it was Monsignor Giovanni Montini, the Pope's Under Secretary of State for Ordinary Affairs, and later Pope Paul VI. This is dismissed by present day senior Vatican bureaucrat, Monsignor Milan Simčić, who was Father Draganović's close colleague in Rome at that time.

Although Simčić rejected the claim that Montini was involved with the Poglavnik, he was absolutely certain that Pavelić was in close contact with Draganović. Simčić insisted that Draganović and Montini were also extremely close, suggesting the strong possibility that Montini, the future Pope, may have known of Pavelić's escape.[62]

A few months after Gowen's suggestion for the 'ultimate disposal' of Pavelić, the fugitive re-emerged in Argentina, where dictator

Juan Perón employed him as a 'security adviser'. There is considerable debate about exactly how the Poglavnik made good his final escape. What is known is that he departed Italy on 13 September 1947, arriving in Buenos Aires on 6 November aboard the Italian ship SS *Sestriere*, travelling under the name of Pablo Aranyos.

In the early 1950s, Avro Manhattan, a bitter critic of the Vatican and Catholicism, claimed that Father Draganović not only provided the Red Cross passport Pavelić used and arranged the shipping details, but actually accompanied the fugitive war criminal to Buenos Aires and stayed with him for twelve months. Despite Manhattan's religious bigotry, he was very well informed, having worked for British intelligence during the war.[63]

As late as 1986, this was still the 'semi-official' story peddled by the Yugoslav secret police, UDBA, in a series of articles in the Sarajevo-based *Svijet* magazine.[64] However, new evidence has recently emerged which suggests a different version. In early 1990 a secret Communist intelligence file was smuggled out of Eastern Europe to the authors. Although the identity of the Communists' source was not disclosed, whoever it was had intimate contact with the Poglavnik, his family and closest associates, as minute details of events and conversations were provided.[65]

The document confirms that Pavelić and Draganović met on numerous occasions, and the priest did in fact procure the Red Cross passport in the name of Pablo Aranyos, supposedly a Hungarian refugee. But according to this source, the two men had some kind of falling out. Draganović proposed that Pavelić leave Rome by air, and as this was thought too dangerous by the fugitive's closest advisers, the priest was cut out of the final preparations.

There is absolutely no mention in the Communist police file of Draganović accompanying the Poglavnik to Argentina. According to the source, the man who allegedly made the final arrangements was also a Croatian priest, by the name of Father Jole. His real identity is Father Josip Bujanović, another wanted war criminal now living peacefully in Australia.

This version of events is basically confirmed by Draganović's close colleague, Monsignor Simčić. In a taped interview, he freely admitted that Pavelić had asked Draganović to assist his escape. Simčić insisted that Draganović was working on smuggling the wanted man out of Italy. He was certain, though, that Pavelić eventually made other arrangements. This would seem to be the case, as the evidence points to Pavelić using his extremely influential contacts in the Italian secret service to make his escape. Whatever method Pavelić used, there is no doubt about Draganović's role in arranging the Vatican's protection prior to his embarkation, and providing him with the necessary travel documents.[66]

Further, Draganović had gone to considerable trouble to arrange to have Pavelić met when he reached Argentina. The ground had been very carefully prepared. According to US intelligence, one Daniel Crljen had been flown to Buenos Aires with Vatican assistance to 'confer with Gen[eral] Perón on the organization of an Ustasha "Elite" movement in the Argentine'.[67] Crljen was one of the movement's senior ideologues and propagandists, having played a key role in instigating the slaughter of Serbs during the war.

Crljen's mission had certainly been successful; Pavelić's arrival merely completed the transfer of almost his entire government to Argentina. Those veterans waiting to greet him included nearly every surviving cabinet minister, as well as many municipal officers, military and police commanders. Most were wanted war criminals, yet they too had evaded justice, using the same method as their Poglavnik.

Draganović's Ratline was a sophisticated and professional operation. It was extremely well organised and could handle hundreds of fugitives at one time. One of Draganović's key operatives estimates that as many as 30,000 people were funnelled from Austria to Rome, on to Genóa and new homes in North and South America and Australia.[68] Most of those running the Ratline had very shady pasts of their own. They were not part of some exotic SS 'brotherhood'. In fact, nearly all the personnel running the smuggling network were Croatian Catholic priests.

5

Ratline

It is absurd to believe that 30,000 fugitive Nazis escaped to South America on the few U-Boats remaining at the end of the war, or that they all made their own travel arrangements. Modern popular culture has presented the escape of the Nazis in an adventurous, almost romantic light. The most popular Nazi-smugglers are ODESSA and Die Spinne, although other mysterious groups are also mentioned from time to time. But in the main these stories owe more to the fertile imagination of script writers and novelists than to historical research and accuracy.

The truth is much more ordinary, almost mundane. It is all the more shocking as a result. For whatever successes ODESSA achieved, they were mere amateurs at Nazi-smuggling when compared with the Vatican. Draganović's Ratline was truly professional, ensuring that many guilty war criminals reached safe havens. Often they did not end up in the remote jungles of South America, but settled instead in Britain, Canada, Australia and the United States.

Most Nazi mass murderers were in fact not even German. At the end of World War II, there were tens of thousands of Central and Eastern European Nazi collaborators who were just as guilty as their German sponsors. They were the leaders of Nazi puppet governments, municipal officials, police chiefs and members of local auxiliary police units which had carried out the Holocaust. Many were on Allied 'Black Lists', either because they were individually known to have ordered or committed war crimes, or because they were members of units which had done the Nazis' bloody work.

These were the people of most concern to Father Krunoslav Draganović, Secretary of the Croatian Institute of San Girolamo in Rome. Draganović was well known for his deep sympathy for the Croatian Ustashi, even those who had committed war crimes. Many relatively innocent Croatians had been cynically returned by the British to certain death at the hands of Tito's Communist government in May 1945 But many horrendously guilty war criminals escaped, and were being hunted by Western intelligence. According to Draganović, their real crime was their anti-Communist nationalism.

The Ustashi were the first to be protected by Draganović. Britain and the United States decided after the war that Ustashi atrocities were so horrific that all proven members would be handed over to the Communist government, a policy never actually implemented due to a dramatic change of heart in Washington.[1]

Official Vatican historian, Father Robert Graham, admits Draganović's role. Graham initially described those helped by Draganović as 'Croatian refugees', but then conceded that many were Ustashi members. 'I've no doubt that Draganović was extremely active in syphoning off his Croatian Ustashi friends.' But Father Draganović, like Bishop Hudal, was not the Vatican. 'Just because he's a priest doesn't mean he represents the Vatican. It was his *own* operation. He's not the Vatican.'[2]

However, this explanation is not supported by the facts. As recounted earlier, Draganović had been in Rome since August 1943, negotiating for Pavelić at the Vatican and working for the Croatian Red Cross. Pavelić's plans for a smuggling network were already well advanced. US intelligence reported a few months later 'that the Pavelić Government has purchased sixty Argentine passports for evacuation purposes. Funds have been transferred to Argentina.'[3]

Draganović was the key man in setting up this Ratline. He established contacts with Pius XII, as well as senior officials of the Vatican Secretariat of State and Italian intelligence. His most important connection was with Monsignor Montini, Under Secretary of State for Ordinary Affairs, and the man responsible for the Pope's charitable work for refugees.

Like Bishop Hudal, Draganović also received very favourable treatment from the Allied authorities. In late 1944 the Vatican requested that he be permitted to visit the camps where his fellow countrymen were housed. Although Draganović was well known to Western diplomats as a fanatic Ustashi, Allied intelligence gave him *carte blanche*. Using American travel papers, he then ventured out from Rome in May 1945. Travelling in an American car, he visited northern Italy and the regions around Klagenfurt and

Villach on the Austrian–Yugoslav border. Here he made contact with senior Ustashi leaders, and also with other Fascist priests who worked on the Ratline.[4]

Draganović's smuggling network was organised around the Brotherhood of San Girolamo, which took its name from the Institute at Via Tomacelli 132. This was the central base for the operation. The Brotherhood's Committee consisted of Monsignor Juraj Magjerec, President and Rector of the Institute; Deputy President and Treasurer, Father Dominik Mandić, assisted by Vitomir Naletilić; and Secretary, Father Krunoslav Draganović. The Brotherhood was soon recognised as the official Croatian Committee of the Pontifical Welfare Commission, the Pope's own refugee assistance body.[5]

This was a powerful base on which to build the network's ever expanding operation. Ostensibly the Croatian Committee offered moral and material assistance to refugees. But, through the Pontifical Commission, they also maintained close connections with the International Red Cross and the Allied authorities in Italy. Draganović had especially close relations with two Western intelligence officers, Colonel C. Findlay, the Director of the Displaced Persons and Repatriation section of the occupation force, and his assistant, Major Simcock. This proved invaluable, for these officers were only too willing to assist the priest's clandestine activities.

Draganović also had close relations with important Italian officials, especially the Minister of Internal Affairs, Dr Migliore, who directed the Italian secret service and the police section dealing with refugees in Italy. Draganović reached an agreement with Migliore to gain unofficial Italian support for his Ratline, especially from the foreigners section of the Questura.[6]

Through this web of influential contacts, Draganović built a sophisticated network, stretching through Italy, Austria and Germany. The official Croatian Committee of the Pope's Refugee Commission was able to send its agents out to visit the numerous camps where the fugitive Nazi war criminals had taken refuge. Most of these agents were Croatian Catholic priests, and while much of their spiritual and material work consisted of helping the sick, invalids, widows and genuine refugees, there was plenty of time to assist the fugitives.[7]

In the course of researching this book a number of visits were made to the Institute of San Girolamo in Rome, searching for eye witnesses to Draganović's activities. The current Rector, Ratko Perić, was initially cool, absurdly claiming that Draganović had never been an important figure. However, Perić suggested we talk with a priest who was actually there. Monsignor Milan Simčić was one of Draganović's closest colleagues in the smuggling network. Through Simčić, contact was established with Father Vilim Cecelja and Monsignor Karlo Petranović, also close colleagues in the Ratline. Each of these Croatian priests spoke freely about their important roles in the smuggling network.

The First Priest

The smuggling operation started in Austria, where Father Cecelja was the link to Rome. Cecelja died a few months after he gave a taped interview in which he vividly recalled his work on the Ratline. His last years were spent in a picturesque village just outside Salzburg where he was cared for by the nuns of the Maria Pline convent. By then in his eighties, Cecelja was a small man with a pronounced stoop, and in obvious poor health. He was still immensely proud of his important role for his beloved Croatia. Although critical of the Ustashi for giving Croatians 'a bad name', he showed neither guilt nor remorse for his own important post in the Ustashi.

Cecelja freely admitted his senior post of military chaplain in the wartime Ustashi forces.[8] In fact, he was Deputy Military Vicar to the Ustashi militia (as opposed to the ordinary Croatian Army, which took little part in the atrocities) with the rank of Lieutenant Colonel. He was appointed by Pavelić himself in October 1941 and later confirmed by his close friend, Archbishop (later Cardinal) Aloyius Stepinac.

Cecelja was unashamed about being listed by Tito's government as 'war criminal number 7103'. While he criticised the Ustashi in 1989, he had previously been extremely proud of his membership. Ten days after Pavelić was put into power by the Nazis, the official Ustashi newspaper, *Hrvatski Narod* (*Croatian Nation*), published a lengthy interview with Cecelja. Headlined 'The Ustashi Priest Cecelja', it was a contemporary account of his true attitudes.

Cecelja boasted of his important role in the movement's illegal pre-war activities in Zagreb, where many underground Ustashi leaders had secretly met at his vicarage. He admitted his secret

Ustashi membership, proudly describing the ritual oath he had taken before two candles, a crucifix and crossed dagger and revolver. This entitled him to the revered title of 'Sworn Ustasha', which only pre-war veterans were allowed to use. The Fascist priest later presented Pavelić with his crucifix and candles as a sign of devotion. Cecelja also spoke with pride of his leading role in organising 800 peasants to fight alongside the Nazi invaders.

When a priest was required to officiate at Pavelić's swearing in ceremony, Cecelja was only too pleased to do the job. He administered the oath to his Poglavnik, giving the Church's blessing to the Nazi puppet regime. Shortly after, Cecelja publicly 'greeted the moment of freedom with delight', openly proclaiming his close connections with senior Ustashi cabinet ministers, like Mile Budak. A few weeks later, Budak publicly announced the fate of the two million Serbs in Croatia: one third were to be killed, another deported and the rest forcibly converted to Catholicism. Cecelja, however, did not amend his benign attitude towards Budak.[9]

Cecelja's subsequent attitude toward the Ustashi is very puzzling. From the safety of half a century, he criticised his old comrades. But during the vital period when they were carrying out some of the worst massacres of World War II, he was a loyal adherent. This is shown by his inclusion in Pavelić's official delegation to Rome in 1941, which was blessed by Pius XII at the Vatican on 17 May. By then the dictator's anti-Serbian and anti-Jewish laws had already been proclaimed and the genocide was underway. The delegation's main 'achievement' was to cede the Dalmatian coast to Italy, hardly an act of Croatian patriotism.[10]

In view of prevailing conditions in Croatia during the war, it is impossible that Lieutenant Colonel Father Cecelja could have been unaware of the murder of hundreds of thousands of Serbs, Jews and Gypsies. Yet he admits to remaining at his post until the worst excesses had been perpetrated, although he did not mention the high decoration bestowed on him by his beloved Poglavnik.[11] It was only in May 1944 that he finally abandoned his post to go to Vienna, allegedly to care for wounded Croatian troops. His real task was to prepare the Austrian end of the escape network, for he also founded the local branch of the Croatian Red Cross, which provided ideal cover for his illegal work.

In his interview, Cecelja claimed that he was 'a member of the Central Headquarters of the International Red Cross during the war'.[12] In fact, the IRC refused officially to recognise the Croatian Red Cross, although it did provide a great deal of unofficial assistance. Cecelja's control of the Austrian section of this body proved vitally important to Draganović's Ratline operation.[13]

An American diplomat subsequently exonerated Cecelja of all charges of Nazi collaboration. The US Consul in Zagreb claimed that he had been banished by Pavelić to Vienna for his role in an anti-Ustashi plot. However, this seems unlikely, as Cecelja continued to travel regularly on official Ustashi planes between Vienna, Zagreb, Prague and Berlin, laying the groundwork of the Nazi escape network. Further, in 1944 Cecelja received orders from Zagreb to conduct an intensive propaganda campaign among the Ustashi in Austria, especially at the officer training schools. Instead of being one of Pavelić's enemies, as the American claimed, he was actively bolstering Pavelić's flagging cause until the very end.[14]

By Easter 1945, it was obvious that the 'independent' Croatian state was doomed. With the Red Army on the march, this 'Sworn Ustashi' priest left Vienna and shifted his base to Alt Aussee near Salzburg, where many fugitive Nazis gathered at the end of the war. The area around Salzburg was in fact one of the major destinations of his Ustashi comrades, who were forced to flee a few weeks later. He was well positioned to assist them to avoid repatriation by the Allies.

Cecelja was supplied with Red Cross and American papers which enabled him to travel freely through the US occupation zone. It was yet another example of the Allies supplying a Fascist priest with travel papers, which he promptly used to help notorious mass murderers evade justice. Cecelja declared proudly: 'As I travelled in the American zone, I used to leave these small Red Cross identity papers in all the camps . . . I was in charge of organising papers for people who had lost theirs.' He made no secret of having helped fugitives to change their identities – 'I had blocks of Red Cross application forms', with which he provided new identities to anyone who wanted to change their names and personal histories.[15]

Then, on 19 October 1945, he was arrested by the 430th CIC Detachment of the US Army. He remained in gaol for the next eighteen months, because the CIC had discovered that Father Cecelja was allegedly 'the Ustashi head in this region'. They knew he was using the Croatian Red Cross as a cover for his real activities: to 'protect Ustashi members at Salzburg' who were 'wanted war criminals'. According to the Assistant Chief of Staff of US Army Intelligence in Austria, Cecelja endangered 'the security of the occupational forces as well as the objectives of Military Government'.[16]

Ten months later, the Yugoslav government requested his extradition as a traitor, accurately outlining his activities on behalf of the Ustashi during the war.[17] The Foreign Office noted that the 'fact that he was a chaplain in the Ustaši Armed Forces may be sufficiently incriminating for him to be handed over'. Eventually, the British decided that 'most of his works seem to have been humanitarian and non-political'. The Americans interrogated him in December 1945, and over the following eighteen months strenuous efforts were made to exonerate this 'Sworn Ustashi'.[18]

One of those who spoke in his favour was his old friend, Archbishop Stepinac. During his 'show' trial in Zagreb in October 1946, Stepinac described Cecelja as 'an honourable man, against whom I cannot utter even a single word of reproach . . . if everyone were like Cecelja not a hair would fall from any head'.[19] Another senior prelate who took up his case was American Bishop Joseph Patrick Hurley, who was in Yugoslavia as the Pope's representative. Hurley believed that the Yugoslav motive was 'purely political', merely part of their campaign against the Church.[20]

On the basis of a quite inadequate investigation, the US Consul in Zagreb recommended that Cecelja 'not be surrendered to [the] Yugoslavians', as he was a 'priest of high standards'.[21] This intensive campaign followed the decision of the US Extradition Board in Austria to approve the 'Yugoslav request for extradition as collaborator of Vilim Cecelja'. Previously, the Americans had found that there was insufficient evidence to justify his extradition, asking the Yugoslavs to provide further substantiation.

By 4 April 1947, the Board considered the Yugoslav charges were confirmed by their own intelligence reports which 'reasonably establish Cecelja's participation in collaborationist activities'.[22] Ultimately, however, this finding was ignored and US Secretary of State, George Marshall, ordered that he was not to be surrendered. He was too late. The Ustashi priest had been released seventeen days before.[23]

After his release, Cecelja spent some time in hospital and then returned to smuggling wanted Nazis. When he applied for a visa to visit America in 1957, his official security check declared that the allegation that Cecelja was 'purposely harbouring and hiding ex-Ustasha members was never substantiated'. However, US intelligence had gathered a great deal of information linking Cecelja to militant Ustashi activities.

Four years before the Fascist priest was granted a US visa, American officers in Austria had noted that Cecelja's Croatian Red Cross branch was in fact controlled by the Ustashi. They were using its various offices as an 'information collecting agency' for clandestine operations in Yugoslavia and Austria. Further, Cecelja was known to be one of the key Ustashi organisers in Austria, where he regularly attended militant gatherings and delivered fiery speeches to the assembled faithful. Later, he was directly implicated by Australian security authorities in a series of terrorist actions launched by Ustashi cells operating in Sydney and Melbourne.[24]

In fact, the Americans had ample evidence that Cecelja was directly involved in a range of clandestine Nazi activities. In his 1989 interview, he freely admitted his role in Draganović's Ratline. He was proud of assisting these fugitives 'with food and accommodation, registering them and providing them with immigrant papers, giving them the opportunity to move around the world to Argentina, Australia and South America. I got the papers from the Red Cross.'[25]

Cecelja was well informed about those he sent down the Ratline to Rome and on to their new homes. 'Some of them were high ranking ministers and civil servants,' he admitted. Further, he was certain that Draganović had the approval of the Vatican for his work, claiming that the Holy See had asked him to take care of a broad based emigration of Central European 'refugees'. Draganović 'was fully empowered by the Holy See and was in charge not only for Croatians, but for everybody', he emphatically declared in his taped interview.[26]

Although fast approaching death, Cecelja vividly recalled how the smuggling system worked. Up in Austria the fugitives would be cared for by his section of the organisation, which provided them with money, food, accommodation and the false papers they needed to travel from Austria to Italy. Down in Rome, Draganović was at the operation's nerve centre. He arranged the international travel documents and through his high level contacts with South American consulates, organised the necessary visas, especially to Argentina. Once a week Cecelja called Draganović who told him how many places were available that week. Cecelja then sent exactly that number to Rome.[27]

This interview with an unabashedly Fascist priest had been truly astounding. His testimony was a vital link in the chain of evidence about the Ratline and its connection with the Vatican hierarchy. Western intelligence files fully confirm Cecelja's recollections. The British established that the 'nucleus around which all Ustaš activity in Italy takes place . . . [is] . . . the Confraternity of S[an] Girolamo in Rome'. They discovered that not only was Draganović 'the brains behind the Ustaš movement in Italy,' but he had a remarkably similar history to Cecelja's.[28]

The Second Priest

Like his close friend in Austria, Father Draganović was also a wanted war criminal. The Yugoslav War Crimes Commission recorded that he had been a senior official of the committee dealing with the forced conversion of Orthodox Serbs to Catholicism. Further, they had discovered his leading role in the forced requisitioning of food during the Nazis' bloody anti-partisan offensive on Kozara mountain in western Bosnia in the summer of 1942. This was the same offensive in which Austrian President Kurt Waldheim played a leading role as a Nazi officer.[29] Pavelić awarded Waldheim a major decoration for his services, and then followed him to Austria at war's end.

In July 1947 the Yugoslavs requested Draganović's extradition, especially citing his role in the Kozara offensive, which was carried out in his capacity as Vice President of the Ustashi's 'Office for Colonisation'. This office was an integral part of the Nazi genocide machine, preparing the Serbs and Jews for extermination or, if they were extremely lucky, deportation.[30] Although Draganović claimed to have taken a strong stand against the Ustashi's massacres, allegedly even complaining to Pavelić himself, he did not deny the substance of the Communist charges. When the Nazis occupied Zagreb in April 1941, he was Professor of Theology at the local University. He later recounted that when the 'independent' Croatian state was proclaimed, 'I was waiting in Zagreb with tears in my eyes. I thought that the Croatian nation, after eight centuries, had created their most deep wishes for independence and autonomy.'[31]

Draganović fully accepted Pavelić's state. He felt that he had gained his freedom when the Ustashi came to power, and co-operated with them 'as a citizen according to the laws of the Lord'. One of the tasks he admitted performing with great energy was overseeing the conversion of Orthodox Serbs to Catholicism, as a member of the special committee established for this purpose.[32]

He claimed he had never actually been present in the Serbian villages where the forced conversions took place. These were 'celebrated' by Catholic priests under the close scrutiny of heavily armed Ustashi police units. The threat of death hung over these ceremonies, as the Serbian peasants were fully aware that these same units had been conducting massacres in the neighbouring areas. However, there was at least one occasion when Father Draganović ventured out of his comfortable office in Zagreb. He did not hide the fact that he had held the senior position of Vice President of the Ustashi's Committee for Colonisation. Two witnesses confirmed that the priest had been present at the bloody Kozara offensive, when the Colonisation Committee had played a key part in the assault on the population.[33]

In another striking parallel with Cecelja's career, Draganović also worked on Croatian Red Cross matters. In August 1943 Pavelić and Archbishop Stepinac dispatched him to Rome. American intelligence observed that it was 'a classic example of "kicking a man upstairs" inasmuch as it is fairly well established that the leaders of the Independent State of Croatia expected the prelate, through his good connections in the Vatican, to be instrumental in working out the orientation of Croatia towards the West rather than the East'.[34]

Although Draganović was supposedly sent to Rome because of his defiance of Pavelić, he also admitted accepting appointment as the Ustashi's representative to the Vatican. Perhaps this explains why he continued to have access to senior members of Pavelić's regime on his regular visits to Croatia. Like Cecelja, Draganović travelled on several occasions to and from Zagreb, consulting with his Ustashi superiors. Apparently there was a concerted campaign to provide these Fascist priests with good cover stories, enabling them to present themselves as victims of the Ustashi, while they quietly got on with the task of building the underground escape network.[35]

Draganović also received a 'large subsidy' from the Ustashi government, much of which remained in his hands at the end of the war. American intelligence further established that as 'he was a trusted follower of Ante Pavelić . . . he was entrusted with . . . all valuables smuggled by the Ustacha'. These funds were the financial base on which his Ratline was initially built.[36]

According to British intelligence, at the end of the war San Girolamo assumed the 'role of granting asylum' to the Ustashi *émigrés*:

> In the summer of 1945 Draganović made a personal tour of the camps where ex-members of the Ustaš armed forces and political organisations were being accommodated. He soon developed an intensified political activity and made contact with the chief Ustaš representatives. In this he was assisted by other Croat priests and close liaison was maintained between S. Girolamo and the Ustaš groups throughout Italy and also in Austria. This led to the formation of a political intelligence service enabling S. Girolamo to collect reports and data on political trends among the *émigrés*. It is also probable that the information received from these reports was then passed on to the Vatican.[37]

The Third Priest

The distinctive characteristic of the Ratline was that most of its operatives were Croatian priests, many of them unashamed Fascists. Cecelja and Draganović had murky pasts, but Father Dragutin Kamber was a bloody mass murderer. Like so many of the priests involved in the smuggling network, Kamber had a longstanding connection with San Girolamo, studying there in the late 1920s and early 1930s.

The Yugoslav government requested Father Kamber's extradition in April 1947, claiming he had been a Ustashi member since 1936. After the Axis invasion, he was appointed head of the Ustashi administration at the town of Doboj, 'and one of his first acts was to set up a concentration camp, which he himself headed as camp commandant. He introduced in the district the Nazi racial rules and accordingly issued orders for the Jews to wear yellow arm-bands and for the Serbs to wear white bands.'

Later, 'he proclaimed that the Serbs and Jews were to be exterminated as harmful to the *ustasha* State. In Doboj he carried out mass arrests and internment of Serbs. Many of the victims were first brought for interrogation to Kamber's house and, on his orders, were subsequently killed in the cellars of that house. The first to be killed in this way were the Serbian teachers and priests.'[38]

These were fantastic charges against a Roman Catholic priest. Surely they were just Communist propaganda? However, the British Consul in Zagreb made enquiries and found that Kamber was 'responsible, to some extent, for the massacres at Doboj'. Further investigation established that he had also been an officer in Pavelić's notorious Personal Body Guard, and had definitely 'incited [the] wholesale massacre of Serbs at Doboj in Bosnia'. The British further noted that Kamber was 'in close contact' with San Girolamo.[39]

Despite Draganović's close relations with Fascist priests like Cecelja and Kamber, he repeatedly lied to Western intelligence officers, claiming that he had no connection with the movement at all.[40] Both British and American intelligence found this to be untrue. One US report concluded that 'his task [is] to co-ordinate and direct Ustacha activity in Italy. He provides them with moral and material help', arranging to send them to South America:

> He is helped in this activity by his numerous contacts with the Embassies and Legations of South America in Italy and with the International Red Cross and by the fact that the Croatian Confraternity of the College of S. Girolamo degli Illirici, where he has his office, issues false identity cards to the Ustacha. With such documents and with the approval of the Pontifical Welfare Commission for Refugees, located in Via Piave 41, Rome, which is controlled almost exclusively by Ustacha, passports can be obtained from the International Red Cross, where Draganović has some way of ensuring their issue.[41]

The Fourth Priest

Is it possible that a Fascist priest could have had access to the Pope's charitable welfare organisation without anyone in the Vatican hierarchy knowing? The 'Pontifical Welfare Commission', after all, was an official Vatican body which the Pope had established to assist genuine refugees. Draganović's abuses must have been known in senior Vatican circles, since the false identity cards he issued to fugitive war criminals were 'printed at the Franciscan printing press'. US intelligence discovered that this had been arranged by Father Dominik Mandić, the official Vatican representative at San Girolamo.[42]

Mandić, it will be recalled, was a senior member of San Girolamo's Brotherhood, which was the official Croatian section of the Pope's Refugee Assistance Commission. He was also a senior official in the Franciscan order, holding the position of General Economist, or treasurer. Not only did he arrange to print San Girolamo's false identity papers, he also put the Franciscan press at the disposal of the Ustashi propaganda machine. Much of the British-sponsored campaign waged in DP camps like Fermo, Modena and Bagnoli owed its success to the Franciscan printers. Mandić himself regularly visited the camps to deliver rousing speeches to the assembled Ustashi militants.[43]

Father Mandić was a crucial link in the Ratline. Using his connections with the Italian secret police, Draganović got the Franciscan's identity cards accepted 'as official documents on the basis of which Italian identity cards and residence permits were issued'. The Italians closely monitored Draganović's activities. They launched a top secret intelligence operation, and soon discovered that numerous Ustashi fugitives were using the false identity cards printed by the Franciscans. The Italians found that many wanted criminals were housed at San Girolamo, including senior members of Pavelić's government, but no action was taken against Draganović or the Italian officials who assisted him.[44]

British intelligence also monitored this development closely, although they decided to hide their information from the Italians:

> There is incontrovertible evidence that some of the most notorious war criminals were issued in this way with the S. Girolamo identity card under an entirely false name and thus were enabled to obtain Italian residence permits, visas and other documents allowing them to emigrate.[45]

CIC Agent Robert Mudd certainly procured 'incontrovertible evidence' about Draganović's activities. He penetrated his own spy into San Girolamo, and his reports confirmed the Italian intelligence reports. Italian agents described San Girolamo as 'a den of Croatian nationalists and Ustashi. It is said that the walls of the college are covered in pictures of Pavelić.'[46]

Monsignor Milan Simčić worked in San Girolamo at this time, assisting Draganović in his 'rescue' operations. He indignantly denied that Pavelić's photo was displayed in San Girolamo, because photos of civilian authorities were not permitted in 'a Church institution'. Simčić conceded that some Ustashi were allowed to sleep in the Institute, 'but this was only for a few months in 1945'.[47]

But in February 1947 Mudd's spy found very different conditions inside the Institute. He confirmed the Italian secret service's information, reporting that San Girolamo 'was honeycombed with cells of Ustashi operatives':

> In order to enter this Monastery one must submit to a personal search for weapons and identification documents, must answer questions as to where he is from, who he is, whom he knows, what his purpose is in the visit, and how he heard about the fact that there were Croats in the Monastery. All doors from one room to another are locked and those that are not have an armed guard in front of them and a pass-word is necessary to go from one room to another. The whole area is guarded by armed Ustashi youths in civilian clothes and the Ustashi salute is exchanged continually.[48]

Simčić agreed in a taped interview that there was extremely tight security at San Girolamo at this time. Although he denied that the young men employed to guard the building were armed, he claimed that precautions were necessary due to the ever present threat of attack from the Communists. 'I was in danger and no one could just enter San Girolamo, because people there were extremely scared. The Communists attacked us a few times, as is well known.'[49]

Mudd's spy obtained a great deal of information which explained the Communists' intense interest in what was going on at San Girolamo. He gained a first-hand insight into the calibre of those either living in San Girolamo or 'in the Vatican'. The spy had wormed his way into a position of some trust, for he knew the identities of those attending Draganović's regular clandestine meetings. Far from being religious occasions, these gatherings were all politics. Rather than bringing the faithful together, those in attendance were more like a who's who of the most wanted and notorious Croatian war criminals:

1. Ivan Devčić, Lt. Colonel.
2. Vrančić, Dr Vjekoslav, Deputy Minister of Foreign Affairs.
3. Toth, Dr Dragutin, Minister of Croat State Treasury.
4. Sušić, Lovro, Minister of Corporations in Croatian Quisling Government.
5. Starčević, Dr Mile, Croat Minister of Education.

6. Rupčić, General Dragutin, General of Ustashi Air Force . . .
8. Pečnikar, Vilko – Ustasha General and C[ommanding] O[fficer] of Ustashi Gendarmerie.
9. Marković, Josip, Minister of Transport in Pavelić Government.
10. Kren, Vladimir – Commander-in-Chief of the Croat Air Force.[50]

By September 1947, US intelligence had established that several of these senior Ustashi leaders were living with their Poglavnik in what was believed to be one of the Vatican's libraries at Via Giacoma Venezian 17-C.[51] Among them were Lovro Sušić, Pavelić's Minister of National Economy. He had worked closely with the Nazis on the deportation of Croatian workers for forced labour in Germany, later serving with the bloody SS Division Prince Eugen. Sušić's surrender to Tito's government had been agreed in August 1946.[52]

Dragutin Toth was another senior figure on Mudd's list. He had been Pavelić's Minister of Trade and Industry, president of the Croatian National Bank and, finally, Minister of Finance.[53] John Colville of the British Foreign Office, who later admitted that he had deliberately allowed many 'fanatic' Ustashi to escape justice, thought that Toth 'sounds, and looks, a bad hat'. Both London and Washington agreed to Toth's surrender to the Yugoslavs, but he also went down Draganović's Ratline and made his way to Argentina in mid-1947.[54]

Vjekoslav Vrančić was another senior war criminal to benefit from Vatican protection. Vrančić's key role in the extermination programme is clearly demonstrated by his appointment as Under Secretary of the Ustashi Interior Ministry. This was the body directly responsible for the concentration camps and repressive police apparatus. Vrančić was supposed to be handed over to the Yugoslavs, but three days after this decision was taken he mysteriously 'escaped' from British custody. He then made his way to the safety of San Girolamo and was sent down the Ratline by Father Draganović. In November 1947 US intelligence reported that he had arrived in Argentina under the name Ivo Rajičević, where he became a major figure in the revival of the Ustashi's terrorist apparatus.[55]

One further case is that of Vilko Pečnikar, a veteran of the movement and organiser of Pavelić's pre-war terrorist groups. During the war he rose to be a General in Pavelić's Personal Body Guard, also commanding the brutal Gendarmerie which worked in close collaboration with the Gestapo. Both Britain and America agreed to hand him over to Tito.[56]

US intelligence described Pečnikar as 'anti-Hebrew, anti-Serb, pro-Austrian, living in a monastery'. According to this report, Draganović and Pečnikar worked closely together on re-organising the Ustashi movement. The Fascist priest allowed Pečnikar to have access to the treasure he had collected for his Ratline. As will be seen, some of this also financed a new Western-backed terrorist campaign inside Yugoslavia.[57]

All these war criminals were on the list supplied by Mudd's spy in San Girolamo. But the clandestine operation 'stopped abruptly when it became too dangerous for the counter-intelligence agent in the Monastery'. The US officers wanted further proof, so Gowen arranged for a daring burglary of Draganović's office, the centre of the Vatican's smuggling operation. It is not known how this was achieved, but the results were spectacular, for Gowen was able to photograph many of Draganović's top secret records.[58]

The documents procured from Draganović's office were handed on to Mudd for assessment. One of the most important documents was a list of the nominal roll of Croatians who 'are fed, clothed, housed and otherwise provided for by the Monastery of San Girolamo'. By comparing this roll with the West's lists of wanted war criminals, Mudd established that it also included 'the names of several long sought after Jugoslav War Criminals whose presence in the Monastery and whose sponsorship by the Vatican Draganović has consistently denied'.

In fact, at least twenty of those housed at the Institute were on the West's 'Black Lists'. Details about these fugitives were obtained from one of the most significant files photographed during the burglary. It disclosed not only their true identities, but also the aliases Draganović had given them.[59] Other documents contained detailed information on Draganović's system of procuring Central and South American visas.

Mudd reported the results of Gowen's burglary of San Girolamo in September 1947. He noted that the 'photostats of personal files and documents of the Croat Nationalist priest Draganović, Krunoslav procured in Rome indicate clearly his involvement in aiding and abetting the Ustashi to escape into South America. The documents also indicate his connections with Ustasha personnel, a fact which Draganović has formally denied personally to this

Agent'.[60] Mudd further reported that 'all this activity seems to stem from the Vatican, through the Monastery of San Geronimo to Fermo, the chief Croat Camp in Italy. Chief among the intelligence operatives in the Monastery of San Geronimo appear to be Dr Draganović and Monsignor Madjarac.'[61]

Mudd concluded by describing how those Ustashi living in the Vatican travelled between their lodgings and San Girolamo:

> . . . these Croats travel back and forth from the Vatican several times a week in a car with a chauffeur whose licence plate bears the two initials CD, 'Corps Diplomatic'. It issues forth from the Vatican and discharges its passengers inside the Monastery of San Geronimo. Subject to diplomatic immunity it is impossible to stop the car and discover who are its passengers.
>
> Draganović's sponsorship of these Croat Quislings definitely links him up with the plans of the Vatican to shield these ex-Ustashi nationalists until such time as they are able to procure for them the proper documents to enable them to go to South America.

The Fifth Priest

The next and final stop on the Vatican's sophisticated Ratline was Genoa, where yet another Croatian priest took charge of the passengers. Monsignor Karlo Petranović is now almost eighty years old and has lived in Niagara Falls, Canada, for the past three decades. Although he complains of a few ailments and has had heart bypass surgery, he is in remarkably good health and still very active. When interviewed in 1989, he seemed a generous and kind-hearted man, but after the war he was Draganović's operative in Genoa, shipping out hundreds of fugitive war criminals.

In a taped interview, Monsignor Petranović was adamant that he had never been a member of the Ustashi. When the Nazis invaded Yugoslavia in April 1941, Petranović was a chaplain in the Army. The day the 'independent' Croatian state was proclaimed he was stationed at Topuško, south of Zagreb. After hearing of this development, he returned to Ogulin where he had been the parish priest since 1934. Ogulin is a mixed Croatian and Serbian district, and during the war was the scene of some of the most brutal and widespead Ustashi massacres of Serbs. Petranović stayed there throughout the war, but only heard vague rumours of these atrocities.[62]

When asked about his attitude to Pavelić's 'independent' Croatia he said, 'I was very happy when it was created', but as for masacres, 'I saw nothing'. When pressed further, he recalled that he 'heard rumours that people were dying, and there were one or two Jews in Ogulin, but I don't know what happened to them, they just disappeared'. According to Petranović, his superior ordered him to stay away from politics and although he welcomed and recognised the new Croatian state, he claims to have obeyed this order.[63]

In the Public Record Office in London we discovered documents that directly contradict the Monsignor's version. When the Yugoslavs wrote to the British in July 1947 requesting Petranović's extradition, they categorically stated that he was a Ustashi member. They claimed he had joined the movement immediately after the invasion, whereupon he was appointed to a number of very senior and influential official positions. In fact, he had been given the rank of captain in the Ustashi army, also accepting the position of deputy to the local Ogulin Ustashi leader. Contrary to Petranović's claim that he was not involved in politics, the Yugoslavs maintained that 'he became a very important factor in the policy of the local Ustaši regime which decided on the life and death of the Serbs of Ogulin and the surrounding district. As evidence shows, this policy consisted of terror against the entirely innocent Serbian population, resulting in the extermination of about 2,000 local Serbs.'[64]

The Yugoslavs went even further, alleging that Petranović had organised and instigated a number of very serious war crimes. On one occasion, they claimed, he had directed the arrest and execution of seventy prominent Serbs. Another time the priest was allegedly responsible for the removal of five or six Serbian patients from Ogulin's hospital, who were killed 'in the most brutal circumstances'. A further incident was the murder of Dr Branko Živanović on 31 July 1941, 'on the basis of a false statement made by Petranović'.

This was in the summer of 1941 at the height of the Ustashi's first assault on the Serbs. During this period, the Yugoslavs said, Petranović had helped organise 'the mass arrest of [the] Serbs of Ogulin and district' who were robbed and killed, 'some at Brežno, the others near the village of [St] Petar'. Another allegation concerned Petranović's role in the death of about one hundred Serbs at the end of July, a massacre carried out 'in accordance with a decision made by the Ogulin Ustaši committee' of which Petranović was a senior and influential member. The Yugoslav extradition request ended by claiming that, in 'addition to these crimes, the Ustaši committee at Ogulin, of which Petranović was an active functionary, is responsible for sending hundreds of local Serbs and Croats to the Ustaši concentration camps, which resulted in the extermination of the majority of them'.[65]

Despite his denial of any connection with the Ustashi during the war, there is independent evidence which supports the Yugoslav charges. For example, on 1 July 1941, the official Ustashi newspaper, *Novi List*, announced Petranović's appointment 'to the post of *pobočnik* in the camp for the district of Ogulin'.[66] This was precisely the position which the Yugoslavs claimed Petranović had held: he was indeed second-in-command to the Ogulin Ustashi leader.

When asked about his post-war activities, Monsignor Petranović cheerfully admitted that he helped 'a couple of thousand people' leave Italy via Genoa. When the war ended, he says he witnessed the Communist massacres of captured Ustashi. After a brief stay in Zagreb, he was dispatched to the Yugoslav-Austrian border, where he moved freely among the fleeing Ustashi. He settled for a time in Graz where many notorious war criminals were hiding. His work there was aided by Bishop Ferdinand Pawlikowski, who obtained clearance from the local police chief to allow Petranović to stay in Graz.

From there he made his way down to Trieste, where the local Bishop arranged his accommodation, and then on to Milan where he was helped by Cardinal Schuster, finally arriving in Genoa towards the end of 1945. He wanted to go to San Girolamo in Rome, but as it was full remained in Genoa and became Draganović's local operative.

Petranović's first contact with the smuggling network was through fellow wanted war criminal, Father Kamber, who took Petranović for a long walk down by Genoa's harbour and suggested that he could assist. Soon afterwards Dragnović himself visited Genoa and recruited Petranović to the Ratline. He desperately needed a reliable link in this key Italian port city, someone who could be counted on to procure plenty of berths on ships for South America. Petranović agreed to carry out the work on one condition:

he insisted that San Girolamo pay his phone bills. According to Petranović, he received no other assistance for his work in Genoa.[67]

When asked about his role in the Ratline, Petranović explained that it was really quite straightforward. Draganović would regularly ring to tell him how many places he required. Petranović would already have visited the local shipping offices and obtained guaranteed berths. He would tell Draganović how many berths were available, and that number of people were sent to Genoa a couple of days before embarkation. Draganović had already provided the passengers with the requisite travel documents and visas, so Petranović only needed to find them lodgings for a few days and then conduct them to the ship.[68]

Some of those he assisted were undoubtedly genuine refugees. He is particularly proud of having helped Hungarian-born actress Zsa Zsa Gabor to travel to America where she launched her famous career. However, Western intelligence knew that most of Petranović's passengers were not aspiring film stars. They were fully aware that many senior war criminals were escaping via Genoa with his aid. For example, in Feburary 1947 a list of wanted Croatians was sent from Rome to London. British intelligence had also penetrated San Girolamo, for they knew that the fugitives were soon to be sent down the Ratline to Genoa, where accommodation and other assistance 'will probably be arranged by the Croat priest Father Petranović'.[69]

The British then made Petranović a major surveillance target, noting that he was 'helping Croat *émigrés*, and in particular, Ustaši, escape to the Argentine'. Over the following months they confirmed that those assisted by Petranović were mainly 'listed war criminals', also noting that the Croatian priest was 'probably identical with the wanted Croat quisling'. Three who had recently departed with the priest's help were the Pavelić government ministers Stjepan Hefer, Mile Starčević and Vjekoslav Vrančić. They had all been hidden in Rome by Draganović, who had also obtained their false travel documents and sent them to Petranović's charitable arms in Genoa.[70]

Monsignor Petranović now shrugs off the important work he did for Draganović, saying that it really was not well organised and certainly not political, merely 'God's Providence'. However, he had very good connections in the Church hierarchy, especially

Genoa's Bishop Siri, yet another senior prelate involved in smuggling fugitive Nazis. US intellience discovered that Siri was one of the main organisers of 'an international organization whose purpose is to arrange for the emigration of anti-Communist Europeans to South America . . . This general classification of anti-Communists would obviously cover all persons politically compromised with the Communists, namely Fascists and Ustaschi and other similar groups.'[71]

Siri was the same senior prelate who was allegedly Walter Rauff's contact in setting up Bishop Hudal's escape network to smuggle wanted Germans out of Europe. Not surprisingly, his operation was mainly concerned with assisting German fugitives, including Adolf Eichmann. But he also helped Petranović, lending a hand whenever he could.

Although Siri maintained his own organisation, he was fully informed of the Croatian network. Petranović recalled one example of the close relationship he enjoyed with Genoa's Bishop. The Croatian was caring for a number of fugitives who urgently needed to leave for Argentina, but he could not procure enough berths. So he sent a telegram in Siri's name to the shipping office in Buenos Aires, requesting that places be made available for his passengers. This had the desired result, and they were allowed to embark. Petranović later informed Siri of this forgery, but instead of being angry, the Bishop was delighted at the Croatian's initiative.[72]

Petranović also vividly recalled one of the few occasions when Western intelligence took effective action against his operation. This occurred in early March 1947, when Major Stephen Clissold visited Genoa. Clissold had been a British diplomat in Zagreb before the war, then he served as a liaison officer to Tito's partisans. His mission in Genoa was to arrest suspected Ustashi war criminals before they set sail on the SS *Philippa*, one of the ships which regularly plied between Genoa and Buenos Aires with its cargo of fugitives.

Clissold worked for the British Special Screening Mission, tracking down fugitive Nazis. He had received reliable information that a group of wanted war criminals, travelling under false names, would embark on the *Philippa* on 4 March. He knew that Vladimir Kren would be among this group, travelling under the alias of Marko Rubini. In his memoirs, Clissold recalled that the wanted men were 'sponsored by the Pontifical Commissione de Assistenza', and 'were being looked after in Genoa by Father Petranović, a trusted collaborator of Draganović'.[73]

The day the ship was to leave port Clissold's men intercepted sixteen of Petranović's passengers as they tried to board. One man, 'of thick-set and distinctly non-Semitic aspect', gave his name as Marko Rubini. Clissold recalled that his 'manner, at first truculent, turned ingratiating and finally servile as he admitted that he was General Vladimir Kren, the former Yugoslav airforce officer who had organised notable defections to the Germans in April 1941 and been rewarded with the command of Pavelić's airforce'.[74] US intelligence had previously discovered Kren's name among those senior Ustashi officials under Draganović's care. Eventually he was one of the unlucky few to be handed over to the Yugoslavs.

When Petranović heard that Kren and nine others had been detained by Clissold, he went to see the British officer, urging him to 'let these people go'. He remembers that Clissold only smiled, but said nothing. The next day Petranović again intervened with the British officer, saying that 'Croatians were very unhappy with Yugoslavia and therefore joyful when the Independent State of Croatia was proclaimed'. This, apparently, was supposed to mitigate in favour of those who had loyally served the Nazi cause.[75]

This was one of the very few occasions when Western intelligence triumphed over the very well organised and successful Ratline run by Father Krunoslav Draganović and an array of Croatian clerics. A few weeks later the British arranged an ambush at San Girolamo itself, arresting about one hundred men as they left a meeting.[76]

Mostly, however, the Western operations were spectacularly unsuccessful. The reason for this was very simple. Sections of the Allied authorities were in fact co-operating with the Vatican to ensure that many fugitives were allowed to slip quietly out of Genoa. One US diplomat discovered that the Western powers were 'apparently conniving with [the] Vatican and Argentina to get guilty people to haven in latter country'. This was indeed the case. Both Washington and London had entered into arrangements with the Holy See to assist many Nazi collaborators to emigrate via Draganović's smuggling system. The Vatican was cynically being used as a respectable cover for the West's own immoral conduct.[77]

The successful operation at Genoa was the exception to an otherwise shoddy Western effort. Gowen's burglary at San Girolamo had probably disclosed Kren's alias, making him one of the handful who did not benefit from the Allies' policy of amnesty.

The Priests' Passengers

There is no doubt that Draganović and his colleagues organised their network because of their ardent, even fanatical, Croatian nationalism. Nor can there be any debate that most were Fascist priests and committed Ustashi militants, sharing Pavelić's hysterical hatred for the Serbs. What, though, was their justification as Christians for shielding mass murderers from justice? A unique insight into their mentality is provided in a lengthy memo Draganović sent in May 1947 to the American Ambassador to Italy.[78]

Draganović argued persuasively that justice under the Communists in Yugoslavia was virtually non-existent. He unequivocally declared that those 'who have committed war crimes', especially 'crimes against humanity . . . must be punished'. However, he then cleverly argued that the most culpable should not be classified as war criminals, by distinguishing between those who had personally perpetrated such crimes and the *political leaders* of Pavelić's government. His view was that 'to be a state official, even with a high function, or member of the Ustasha Movement does not need signify that the persons in question are war criminals'.[79]

Such a statement, of course, could be seen as completely unexceptional. War criminality should be judged by the evidence in each case, not merely established by general allegations of political misconduct. However, the only people condemned by Draganović as war criminals were the rank and file who actually bloodied their hands in the villages and concentration camps.

He excluded those politicians who actually enacted the racial laws which legalised mass slaughter. These were the senior ministers and functionaries of Pavelić's 'independent' Croatia, who in their statements and propaganda openly instigated mass murder, thus creating a vicious climate. Some uneducated Croatian peasants therefore came to believe that mass extermination was an acceptable, even desirable, form of behaviour. Yet Draganović defended the former and condemned the latter.

This, then, was his justification for assisting Pavelić and his closest colleagues. However, even this was a lie, for he also knowingly helped many common murderers. Ljubo Miloš, for example, had been a senior official at the Jasenovac concentration camp. One of his notable acts was the 'ritual killing' of Jews. After a transport had arrived in the camp, Miloš 'would put on a physician's gown, send the guard to bring him all those who had applied for hospital, take them to the "ambulance", put them along the wall and with a strike of the knife cut the victim's throat, shear his ribs and slit open his belly'.[80]

Miloš also supervised other brutal methods of extermination. Naked prisoners were thrown alive into the raging furnace of the brick factory attached to the camp, while others were bludgeoned to death with clubs and hammers. Miloš was definitely not an 'innocent' Croatian patriot who had merely served in Pavelić's government out of a sense of 'duty' to his nation. He was a common sadist and murderer, guilty of exactly the types of crimes Draganović believed deserved punishment.[81]

Yet Draganović extended his 'Christian Charity' to this man. There is no doubt that he knew of Miloš's terrible crimes, for he later condemned Jasenovac as 'the most horrible bloodbath that Croatia has ever known'. According to Draganović, Miloš was 'a monster, a slaughterer of innocent people and a coward'. He had first met this 'monster' in Austria in mid-1945, where he was hiding under a false name and later saw him in Rome. The priest admitted that he gave Miloš a great deal of money, but only because he feared that Miloš would kill him.[82]

However, Western intelligence established that Draganović was lying. They discovered that Miloš was living in an Italian camp and were about to apprehend him. Draganović was tipped off by someone in British intelligence, and used his sophisticated network to spirit Miloš away to safety.[83]

This was a fairly common occurrence. Western intelligence repeatedly observed that Draganović had advance warning of their operations to arrest war criminals. They even discovered that he had obtained the lists of those to be arrested, indicating his influence with senior levels of Western intelligence. In fact, many key Allied officers were very co-operative. Draganović regularly visited the military and intelligence headquarters in Rome, where Major Simcock would tell him the details of impending operations to apprehend fugitives.[84]

One of the most intriguing aspects is that so many of the war criminals assisted in this way, including Miloš, were later captured on terrorist missions inside Yugoslavia. Perhaps the real reason for Draganović's benevolence related to Pavelić's need for men to serve in his secret anti-Tito army then being organised with Western help.

What kind of priest would extend his protection to a killer like Ljubo Miloš? The Italian press investigated Father Draganović in 1948, describing him as 'robust and slender, dressed impeccably as a priest'. They reported 'that this priest, undoubtedly a complex and ambiguous figure, proposes to justify the criminal Ustashi with evangelical reasons'.[85] At this time the Ratline was operating at maximum capacity, but Draganović was surrounded in mystery and intrigue. Legends grew around the Vatican's 'eminence grise', but few really knew, let alone understood, the real man.

Three of his closest colleagues recently provided fascinating insights into his character. Each had been an important figure in the Ratline, working with amazing dedication to rescue his comrades. Draganović's superb intellect left an indelible impression on both Monsignor Petranović and Father Cecelja. Petranović recalled him as 'reserved, distant and very serious', not someone who often shared a joke or engaged in light hearted banter.[86]

Monsignor Simčić gave the most intimate account. Of the three priests, he was the closest to Draganović, working on the Ratline in Rome for several years. He was 'an amazing person, a great activist and a superb organiser, a man of great ideas. Like all such people he tended to be interested in the big projects and leave the details to others. Perhaps he relied too much on his intuition.'

Simčić was fulsome in his praise of Draganović's intelligence, and certain of his greatness. He was 'one of the most important men in Europe, a great scholar with an excellent knowledge of history'. Draganović had a 'big heart, big horizons, and was far sighted but naive like some great people are'. His naivety did not stop Draganović from also being a great conspirator. 'He had a great love of conspiracy', and thrived on code words and clandestine meetings. He frequently took elaborate precautions to avoid surveillance when he ventured out from San Girolamo. But Simčić was sure that Draganović was not 'careful in many matters. A true conspirator would not have made the mistakes he did.'[87]

Not many of the eye witnesses with whom we spoke agreed with this last point. However, nearly everyone who knew Draganović agreed that he was one of the most conspiratorial men they had ever met. One British intelligence officer remembered him being like 'all Croats, very conspiratorial'. This officer was well acquainted with Balkan intrigues. He had served in Greece, Yugoslavia and Albania during the war, and was then active in anti-Tito operations in post-war Italy. On several occasions he had lengthy discussions with Draganović, finding him rather unapproachable 'from a human point of view. I think he was very cold, very much a realist . . . He was not expansive, flamboyant or outgoing, but very closed and conspiratorial.'[88]

Was it possible, we asked this British officer, that Pius XII did not know of Draganović's conspiracy to smuggle Nazis? In a taped interview, he told us that Western intelligence was fully informed of the Vatican's intrigues, including the racket to supply Nazis with false documents. Draganović was definitely the key figure, he insisted, adding that Pius XII 'knew everything about Father Draganović's activities, otherwise he would never have stayed in his position'.

From the intelligence available to him, this officer was certain that Draganović's real status in the Vatican was 'head of the Balkan desk of the Secretariat of State'. Father Draganović was 'very close, for example, to Monsignor Angelo dell'Acqua', then a very senior Vatican intelligence officer. Later dell'Acqua became an Archbishop, but according to the British officer at that time he was really Draganović's superior in the Vatican intelligence hierarchy. He further confirmed Draganović's close links with Italian intelligence, which were well known in the small circle of Western intelligence agents in Rome. There were close social connections between these officers, and gossip was very common.

In his experience, nearly everyone in Western ingelligence knew that Draganović was protecting Ante Pavelić, who was hiding in the Vatican. Further, Draganović's Ratline was an open secret in the intelligence community at the time. The priest was notorious for helping war criminals to escape. He mentioned other Ustashi figures who he knew had been protected by the Church. One was former Colonel, Jozo Rukavina, who 'was working as a gardener in Vatican City'.

In fact, Draganović was widely known among Western intelligence operatives at the 'Balkan grey eminence'. This was a standing joke among both American and British officers, in whose circles Draganović moved freely. This was also confirmed by Simčić, who was certain that Draganović had direct contact with British, American and Italian intelligence.[89] The former British officer was also emphatic that 'you can almost talk about interlocking directorships between Western intelligence and the Vatican at this period'.[90]

If this allegation is true, Pius XII is deeply implicated in a much wider conspiracy than merely Draganović's smuggling network. The Vatican has persistently denied claims about the involvement of its own senior officials in Draganović's network, let alone with Western intelligence operations.

There is at least some evidence to support this view. For example, one British diplomat at the Vatican came to their defence in November 1947, claiming that it was 'unlikely that the Vatican approve the political, as opposed to the religious activities of Father Draganović & Company'. However, the Foreign Office totally rejected this:

> We fully understand the views of the Vatican authorities and subscribe to some of them ourselves. While we cannot condemn the charitable attitude of the Church towards sinful individuals we feel, however, that there has been much evidence to show that the Vatican has permitted the encouragement both covert, and overt, of the Ustaši. This wholly undesirable organisation has not only been collectively responsible for vile atrocities on an immense scale during the war but has ever since its inception made use of murder as a normal political weapon. There is surely all the difference between giving shelter to let us say dissident Slovene priests, and giving positive aid to a creature like Pavelić?[91]

For its part, the Holy See has gone to considerable lengths to discredit and cast doubt on the reliability of Western intelligence reports which implicate the Church. For example, when we were researching this book, Vatican official historian, Father Graham, warned us not to rely on the veracity of US intelligence reports. Yet the British consistently confirmed the American information. So did the Italian secret police, who also closely monitored the conspiracy. It seems very difficult to believe that Western intelligence was wrong so regularly, in both its information and general analysis. After all, they had penetrated agents into the Ratline's headquarters. The Americans went one better, and actually broke into San Girolamo and photographed Draganović's files.

Further, two key witnesses *inside the Church* confirmed the Vatican's involvement. Monsignor Milan Simčić and Father Vilim Cecelja, both close confidants of Father Draganović, were certain that senior Vatican officials knew about Draganović's work and approved of it.

Today Simčić is a senior Vatican official, who freely admits that San Girolamo protected senior Ustashi fugitives and helped them to escape. He knew this first-hand, not from hearsay. In two taped interviews, Simčić recalled that many fugitives had been housed, fed and clothed by the Institute. He was absolutely clear that the 'most important people', including 'former government ministers, heads of army formations and former police chiefs were handled separately by Dr Draganović'. Simčić claimed that Draganović had a sophisticated underground network to deal with these people, utilising radio communications and intelligence contacts.[92] These were precisely the Ustashi fugitives identified by Western intelligence as taking shelter in San Girolamo and the Vatican.

Those mentioned by Simčić could not be called 'refugees' by any stretch of the imagination. By his own admission they were the senior politicians and officials of one of the most infamous Nazi puppet governments. Simčić merely commented, with an apparent easy conscience, that San Girolamo's role was not 'to make any moral judgements about the people we were helping. Our job was to make it possible for them to escape and history could judge them later.'

Father Graham, though, emphatically insisted that Draganović 'was not the Vatican'. He was running his own *independent* operation, and Pius XII and Assistant Secretary of State Montini had not known about it, let alone approved.

The Sixth Priest

Simčić now dropped his bombshell. According to his first-hand account, 'Dr Draganović and Montini were together very many times', discussing San Girolamo's work. Simčić is certain that the Vatican Assistant Secretary of State knew exactly what this work entailed, for Draganović frequently sought his advice and assistance in specific cases. Often he would ask Montini to 'obtain more visas' from countries that were not issuing an adequate number and the Vatican bureaucrat would intercede with the relevant diplomats.[93]

Simčić was just as certain that this relationship worked both ways, and that Draganović frequently returned Montini's favours. He insisted that:

> Montini got in touch with Draganović many times, asking him to help people on his behalf.

Not only was Montini aware of Draganović's Ratline, but Simčić is certain that he actually utilised it himself. When asked what this meant, Simčić claimed still to possess copies of letters from Montini to Draganović in which the senior Vatican official asked for assistance to smuggle certain people. Although Simčić would not produce these documents, he insisted that Montini had asked Draganović to act on the Holy See's behalf on several occasions.

In fact, there 'were excellent relations between us and the hierarchy'. While Simčić carefully avoided implicating Pius XII there is no doubt that the Pope was fully aware of Draganović's work. As already discussed, Montini was the Pope's favourite at this time, and directly supervised the Holy See's charitable work for refugees. As the two prelates met daily and discussed the Secretariat of State's work, it is inconceivable that Pius XII was left in the dark. In other words, two senior Vatican officials were informed. Both the reigning and future Popes (Montini later became Paul VI) approved of Father Draganović's Ratline.[94]

Father Cecelja went even further than Simčić, claiming that Draganović was the Holy See's official representative for the emigration of all Nazi groups, not just Croatians. Although Simčić disagreed on this point, it is independently confirmed by other sources. Božidar Kavran, a senior member of Pavelić's post-war underground network, has testified that Draganović boasted in his presence that he was the Vatican's official representative for all Eastern European nations. Finally, US intelligence identified Draganović as the Vatican's 'DP Resettlement Chief'. They knew this because they were utilising his Ratline to smuggle their own agents out of Europe.[95]

Apart from eye witnesses and the unanimous opinion of Western intelligence, there is other evidence that clearly demonstrates Draganović's influence with both the Secretariat of State and the

Pope himself. For example, on many occasions the Vatican intervened on behalf of interned Ustashi prisoners in Allied camps. Nearly always these intercessions were engineered by Draganović. On one occasion, in early March 1946, Draganović appealed to leading Church figures around the world, including Cardinals Griffin and Gilroy in Britain and Australia, requesting their assistance. He then actively lobbied the Secretariat of State to intervene formally.[96] Finally, Draganović went directly to Pius XII.

The object of his appeal was two hundred former Ustashi militia men, and numerous members of the infamous SS Divisions Prince Eugen and Handžar. The former was composed of Yugoslav Germans, while the latter was raised from the significant Moslem population of Bosnia. Both had committed atrocities against innocent civilians. Others whose cases were advocated by Draganović included former Ustashi government ministers, Dragutin Toth, Vjekoslav Vrančić, Mile Starčević and Stjepo Perić, as well as former air force chief, Vladimir Kren. Several of these men later turned out to be hiding in San Girolamo or the Vatican, as discovered by Mudd's spy.

The Vatican soon acted, taking up these cases with American and British diplomats and recommending their 'kind attention and consideration' of Father Draganović's appeal.[97] Many more diplomatic interventions by the Vatican followed, most on behalf of men who had so recently perpetrated the Nazi Holocaust.

Draganović had many opportunities to pass his message to Pius XII. For example, in June 1946 San Girolamo's Executive Committee appointed a 'special delegation' to attend a personal audience with the Pope. Draganović was a senior member of this committee, so it was not surprising that his 'close friends', Dr Ivo Omrčanin and Professor Nikolić, a well known Ustashi propagandist, were chosen to attend the meeting. The Italian government had complained to the Western powers about Omrčanin's activities twelve months before, noting that he had been an official of the Ustashi Foreign Ministry.[98]

US intelligence determined that Omrčanin had 'worked closely with Draganović . . . to assist Croatian refugees emigration matters'. Simčić recalled Omrčanin as a man full of his own self-importance, always boasting of his central role. Nonetheless, Simčić confirmed that Omrčanin 'was very close to Draganović and they co-operated during that period'.[99] Omrčanin had in fact worked directly under Draganović in the Croatian Committee of Pontifical Assistance between 1948 and 1953, touring the DP camps and sending thousands of fugitives down the Ratline.

Omrčanin now lives in Washington, from where he publishes a stream of pro-Ustashi propaganda tracts. He confirms Simčić's and Cecelja's views. For instance, in a 1986 interview he claimed that Assistant Secretary of State Montini was aware of the full dimensions of Draganović's smuggling network. Omrčanin also boasted that they had sent 30,000 people down the Ratline, including many German scientists and technicians.[100]

Finally, there is the issue of the Vatican's involvement in San Girolamo's finances. British intelligence discovered that Father Dominik Mandić controlled San Girolamo's finances 'with considerable dexterity'. He was the treasurer of the official Croatian section of the Pope's Assistance Commission for Refugees. The British established that one of his principal tasks was to 'arrange the placing against Italian currency of the gold, jewellery and foreign exchange deposited by high-ranking Ustaš officials', in reality the valuables of Pavelić's murdered victims, stolen by the fleeing Ustashi.[101]

Mandić was the senior Franciscan official who placed the order's printing press at San Girolamo's disposal so that false identity cards could be provided to the fugitives. American intelligence discovered that he was in fact 'a representative from the Vatican' at San Girolamo. It is not without coincidence that Father Mandić was the treasurer of Draganović's smuggling operation.[102]

Is it possible that all the eye witnesses who worked on this network are lying, perhaps to serve their own political ends? Or that all the Western intelligence officers got the facts completely wrong? According to Father Graham, the Holy See did not even know about, let alone endorse, what Draganović and his fellow Fascist priests were doing.

This seems highly implausible. The declassified Western intelligence and diplomatic records totally support the eye witnesses. American officers like William Gowen and Robert Mudd employed extraordinary means to find out the truth. They infiltrated spies into San Girolamo, penetrated the Ustashi intelligence network and even illegally photographed Draganović's files. Their findings were unambiguous: the Vatican was behind this Fascist priest's activities. Gowen came to believe that the Vatican's attitude, although perhaps unsavoury, was entirely justified by the exigencies of the Cold War. This makes his conclusions about the Vatican's involvement all the more powerful.

British SIS files on this subject (as in nearly all cases) are completely closed. However, there are several key diplomatic and military intelligence reports publicly available that completely support the American findings. It is impossible to believe that all these reports were written by incompetent or prejudiced officials. After all, both the British and later the Americans had recruited the very same Nazis who were being protected by the Church. Their information actually came from within the very bowels of the machine. Further, it is clear that Western intelligence was both co-operating with and cynically manipulating the Vatican for its own ends.

In summary, it is virtually inconceivable that the *key* officials in the Vatican hierarchy were ignorant of Draganović's Nazi-smuggling network. It is true that these prelates were only a tiny cabal, but they numbered among them the most influential officials, including the Pope and at least one Assistant Secretary of State. They were the men with access to real power and resources.

There was a reason for their protection of Nazis. Britain's SIS had not helped the Vatican save Ante Pavelić through misguided notions of benevolence and charity. They wanted a great deal in return. They wanted agents to infiltrate Communist Yugoslavia, to gather intelligence and conduct terrorist strikes on strategic targets and Communist personnel, especially the feared secret police.

These agents were drawn from the ranks of Pavelić's defeated Ustashi. Harking back to the militant days of Christendom, the Poglavnik dubbed these Catholic warriors the Križari – his Crusaders. The Vatican scandal was only beginning.

6

The Golden Priest

The main hall of the old Zagreb Fair was packed with a carefully picked crowd of 1500 Communist stalwarts. The fifty-seven defendants of the 'show trial' nervously awaited the inevitable verdicts with an air of resignation. Throughout July and August 1948 a farcical judicial process had been conducted in the close, hot summer. An almost carnival atmosphere had prevailed, as the unruly spectators alternately applauded the prosecution with great enthusiasm, then cat-called, jeered, booed and laughed at the unfortunate Ustashi militants brought to account for their crimes.

The proceedings had been broadcast live over the local radio station, a tightly controlled Communist propaganda outlet. Whenever there was an embarrassing departure from the carefully prepared script, the crowded court room would shout 'Long Live Comrade Tito', and the radio station would switch to repetitious slogans glorifying the dictator's regime.

No one was surprised at the guilty verdicts, or the death sentences and long terms of imprisonment. But despite the crudeness of the trial, none except diehard Ustashi supporters believed that the outcome was not justified. Among the defendants were some of Ante Pavelić's most brutal mass murderers, men who had implemented their Poglavnik's bloody racial and political policies with unbelievable relish.[1]

Their war crimes, though, had merely been a backdrop to the trial's real purpose: to crush the morale of the largely anti-Communist populace. The defendants were the cream of Pavelić's Crusaders, or Križari, the underground resistance movement left behind to raise an insurrection against the Communists. Most of those on trial had infiltrated into Croatia from the Križari's bases in Austria over the previous two years.

Their orders were to strengthen the underground and launch a violent campaign of assassination, sabotage and disruption, preparing for the moment when they would finally settle scores with their old enemies. Their aim was to link up with powerful units operating in the rugged terrain, destroy telegraph, telephone and railway communications, attack industry and murder 'more prominent political and military representatives'. Instead of finding a well organised underground of over 300,000 men, they soon encountered Tito's efficient and ruthless secret police. Most were in Communist hands within a few days of crossing the border, many within hours.

Although the whole Križari affair was obviously manipulated, the prosecutors and judges cleverly turned it into an effective propaganda exercise, linking notorious war criminals with both the West and the Catholic Church. Most of the defendants admitted their murderous roles for Pavelić. Many implicated unspecified Western intelligence services, said to have provided logistical support, training and equipment for the terrorist operations inside their homeland.

Not surprisingly, in light of the powerful position of the Croatian Catholic Church, special attention was reserved for the sinister machinations of the Vatican, which allegedly had been plotting Tito's downfall in league with Archbishop Stepinac and the local clergy. Tito had begun his campaign against the Church in November 1945, announcing that 'terrorist organisations had been discovered which were led by priests and made up of Ustaše, who had now changed their names to Crusaders'.[2]

Trials of Križari members began the following month, when Father Ivan Condrić and four other priests were found guilty of organising Križari terrorist actions. The man behind these schemes was said to be Father Krunoslav Draganović, Secretary of the Confraternity of San Girolamo in Rome and the 'Ustashi representative at [the] Vatican'.[3]

Many of the defendants in the 1948 trial admitted taking refuge at San Girolamo, where Draganović recruited them to the Križari. They outlined his central role in directing the underground network, even claiming that the Pope himself had blessed the work during a meeting with Draganović. According to one defendant, Draganović was the Križari's 'grey eminence', the 'chief person who perhaps acts stronger behind the scenes than publicly. He was the main leader, because he had behind him all forces, both [the] Vatican and the foreign powers.'[4]

In a typical rhetorical flourish, the Communist prosecutor claimed that an 'especially shameful role' had been played by 'Vatican circles'. Father Draganović had 'established contact between the Ustashi terrorist groups', the Vatican had financed them and Draganović had set up a 'spy centre' in Trieste in 1945 and sent in the first group of terrorists.

Draganović had also maintained close contact with British and American intelligence, who had directed and assisted the Križari's military preparations. Ljubo Miloš told the court that Pavelić and Draganović had closely collaborated, jointly issuing orders to the terrorist groups. Miloš knew what he was talking about, having been saved from Allied arrest by Father Draganović, despite his bloody record as a Ustashi war criminal.[5]

These charges were fantastic. If true, the Vatican had actually supported wanted war criminals to launch a terrorist campaign against the 'atheistic Bolshevik' foe. Back at the Foreign Office in London, the bureaucrats dismissed the claims, noting that much of 'the "evidence" produced to this effect was of course puerile'. Still, they had to admit that Brigadier Fitzroy Maclean's Mission in Italy had stumbled across substantial evidence implicating US intelligence in aiding the Ustashi's activities. There was no doubt, the British further noted, that San Girolamo 'was the centre of much suspicious activity'.[6]

Having decided that their American ally was the most plausible guilty party, the Foreign Office happily washed its hands of any responsibility for the disastrous collapse of the anti-Communist cause in Yugoslavia. The reality was very different . . .

William Gowen and his CIC colleagues had started to unravel Britain's role in the Križari's operations during their hunt for Ante Pavelić in 1947. As already discussed, they soon discovered that the Vatican was sheltering Pavelić, with the connivance of the British Secret Intelligence Service. In the course of establishing this, Gowen also confirmed sensational claims made by Ferenc Vajta. It will be recalled that the American's Hungarian Nazi contact had told him that SIS was behind the military and political revival of the Ustashi.

Gowen investigated the Križari's finances and soon uncovered the unsavoury truth: their money came partly from the 'treasure' which 'Pavelić's henchmen' had carried out of Croatia. According to Gowen, the Ustashi had fled with a large number of truckloads of this stolen booty. When the British SIS apprehended Pavelić in Austria in May 1945, they also picked up some of his loot. Gowen believed that the following story of what really happened was 'closest to the truth':

> British Lt Colonel Jonson was placed in charge of two (2) trucks laden with the supposed property of the Catholic Church in the British Zone of Austria. These two (2) trucks, accompanied by a number of priests and the British officer, then entered Italy and went to an unknown destination.[7]

Major Stephen Clissold confirmed that two such Ustashi 'treasure trucks' had indeed reached Austria. Not surprisingly, Clissold did not mention the British role in removing them to Italy, claiming instead that they 'were deposited in the safe-keeping of a monastery'.[8] Perhaps the 'treasure' had been in a monastery, but Gowen was certain that the British were now using it to finance

> the Croat resistance movement in Yugoslavia. The resistance forces . . . go by the name of Križari (Crusaders) . . . Radio contact is maintained by means of a field radio operated by Vrančić, a former Pavelić minister, located in the British Zone of Austria. The Ustascia courier service within the Austrian Zones is believed aided by the Roman Catholic Church in Austria. The Cardinal of Graz is known to be on close terms with . . . Professor Draganović, Krunoslav, known Pavelić contact in Rome.[9]

Yet again, Western intelligence found that Father Draganović was at the centre of the Ustashi's clandestine activities. Indeed, he was widely known in Western intelligence and *émigré* circles as 'the golden priest' because he controlled a large part of the stolen treasure.[10] Although Colonel Jonson had taken away two truckloads in 1945, this was only a fraction of Pavelić's loot.

Four hundred kilos of gold, worth millions of dollars, and a considerable amount of foreign currency had been secreted at Wolfsberg, where it was under the control of former Ustashi Minister, Lovro Sušić. Draganović discovered this from senior Ustashi officials during his visit to Austria in mid-1945. They were apparently determined to maintain some independence from the British, who they feared would seize the gold, so they asked Draganović to save it. The priest was only too willing to oblige, for he contacted Sušić and with his agreement took forty kilos of gold bars to Rome, concealed in two packing cases.[11]

There is no doubt about Draganović's close connections with the Ustashi hierarchy in this money laundering scheme. Sušić appointed Draganović to a three person committee to control the treasure. His colleagues, former Ustashi Minister Stjepan Hefer, and Gendarmerie General Vilko Pečnikar, were also senior Križari officers. Pečnikar was Pavelić's son-in-law and played a particularly important role in the terrorist network. US intelligence discovered that he 'maintained contact with several clandestine Nazi organizations' and operated a sophisticated intelligence service which liaised between the Austrian and Italian groups. All of these men were wanted war criminals, but evaded the Western dragnet with Draganović's help. At one time or another, they each had taken shelter under his wing, either at San Girolamo or in some other Vatican-protected haven.[12]

Draganović's close colleague on the Ratline, Monsignor Milan Simčić, is certain that his conspiratorial friend was not involved in the Križari's operations. Simčić recalled the mood which prevailed among the Ustashi at the end of the war. There was widespread optimism, he said, and a firm belief that the Western powers would soon launch a new war against Communism, and topple Tito's regime. The Ustashi high command thought that their exile would end almost as soon as it had begun, and with Western help they would return to create another 'independent' Croatian state.

According to Simčić, the Križari were 'idealists', who organised the terrorist network without any assistance from either Draganović or Western intelligence, although he conceded that many were also 'fanatics'.[13] However, Draganović admitted at least some involvement with the Križari high command, although he tried to minimise his role.[14]

Draganović sought desperately to place the whole blame for the Križari on Pavelić, who, he said, had organised the terrorists while hiding in the British zone of Austria. The man entrusted to command the operation was one of the Poglavnik's most faithful servants, Božidar Kavran, assisted by Lovro Sušić, Draganović's partner in saving the stolen treasure hidden in Austria. Although the priest did admit to discussing the Križari with Kavran at a meeting in Rome, he insisted that he was not the Križari's Church contact.[15]

He claimed that this was another Croatian Fascist priest, Father Josip Bujanović, who had been the Ustashi leader at the town of Gospić during the war. A young British captain by the name of Evelyn Waugh had investigated Father Bujanović's activities in Gospić, and concluded that 'he is credibly reported to have taken a hand in the massacre of Orthodox peasants'.[16] Like his fellow priests running the Ratline, Bujanović fled Croatia in front of the Communists and became a senior Križari officer working directly under Kavran and Sušić. As previously discussed, Bujanović arranged for Pavelić's trip to Argentina, and then followed him to South America, before finally settling in Australia.

Having confirmed that Father Bujanović was a senior officer in the terrorist network, Draganović denied his own involvement. Indeed, he 'was certain that a priest should not be part of such a revolutionary organisation', and unequivocal that he remained aside from the Križari. In fact, he claimed actively to have discouraged participation in such dangerous operations. His old friend, Monsignor Simčić, fully supported Draganović on this point.[17]

However, in tracking down Pavelić's treasure, Gowen found that the Church's involvement with the Križari went much deeper than Father Bujanović. In fact, the CIC officer finally pieced together yet another jigsaw puzzle which had confused US intelligence over the previous two years. His CIC colleagues in Austria had placed the Križari under close surveillance immediately war ended, arresting some of its senior leaders. They quickly established that the retreating Ustashi had enlisted 'the Roman Catholic Church in their struggle'. As outlined earlier, this was achieved on 25 June 1945 when a meeting was held with a 'papal mission in Salzburg'.

A letter was addressed to the Pope, elaborating the Ustashi's plan to create either a new Croatian state or some form of the Pan-Danubian Confederation. In support of their request for assistance, they argued that Croatia was a bastion in the fight against the large 'Serbian state' (i.e. Yugoslavia), which was 'a tool of Russia for the conquest of the Balkans'. [18] There is a great deal of evidence that the Vatican responded positively to these approaches. One British intelligence officer recently confirmed that the Križari had extremely strong links with the Vatican.

This officer worked on anti-Communist operations in Italy after the war and was certain that the Church had also been a link to senior Italian politicians and bureaucrats who assisted the Križari's terrorist operations. In the hysterical mood of the early Cold War years, Croatia was seen by the Vatican as its stronghold in the Balkans.[19]

American intelligence recorded that the Ustashi have 'received much assistance from the Catholic Church since the end of the war'.[20] One of their principal Church helpers was Archbishop Andreas Rohracher of Salzburg. According to Ljubo Miloš's testimony at the Križari 'show trial', Rohracher put the Church at the disposal of Intermarium's Pan-Danubian Confederation.

At Rohracher's initiative, a meeting was called by the Bishop of Klagenfurt to discuss bringing the Catholic nations of Central Europe into this Confederation. Apart from Rohracher and the Bishop of Klagenfurt, Bishops Gregory Rožman of Ljubljana and Ivan Šarić of Sarajevo attended the meeting. The last two prelates had been enthusiastic Nazi collaborators, US intelligence noting that Bishop Šarić was a '"hangman" known to Croatian Serbs, and those in Bosnia and Herzegovinia under the regime of the Ustachis during the war'.[21]

Archbishop Rohracher had also interceded on behalf of the Ustashi with the Allied authorities in Austria, 'to create a favorable impression' in preparation for their offer to 'put themselves at the disposal of Anglo-American leadership'. The Italians obtained reliable information in June 1945 that the British had immediately accepted this offer. It came from no less a source than Father Draganović's close colleague in the Ratlines, Ivo Omrčanin. According to the Italian report, Omrčanin told them that Pavelić and his closest comrades were meeting regularly with 'sympathetic elements of the British forces, who have been paying for the reorganisation of a united Ustashi for eventual use against Tito'.[22]

Another Italian report noted that these activities aimed 'to overthrow Tito's regime in Yugoslavia'. American intelligence agreed that their British ally was co-ordinating the operations in Austria. Gowen established that in August 1946 a 'considerable number of pamphlets were dropped in Croat territory by planes, apparently from the British Zone of Austria. These pamphlets, signed by Pavelić . . . declared that ceaseless warfare would continue until such time as either Tito or Pavelić was permanently eliminated.' The latter would be the victor in 'this death struggle'.[23]

Further, the US officers received information that the Križari's military supplies were almost completely British, including 'mortars, machine guns, sub-machine guns, two-way field radios and uniforms of British manufacture. The condition of the weapons is good and each man is furnished with a firearm. Nearly all the arms are of British types.'[24]

The Ustashi's approaches to the Catholic Church were apparently equally successful. US intelligence received information that the Križari's 'organization has extended to the Vatican, where the center of the Command is currently located. From the Vatican, help is delivered by underground methods, such as delivery of arms and other vital supplies . . . Arms arriving in Croatia are said to come from Switzerland.'[25]

The outlandish charges made by the Yugoslavs during the Križari 'show trial' may have had more than a little substance after all. Twelve months before the trial had even commenced, the CIC in Salzburg had learned from a reliable source that Draganović was not only the head of the 'Croatian Clerical Party', but also a senior leader of the Križari. He maintained excellent contact with his forces inside Croatia and received 'the backing of the Catholic Church'.[26]

The Salzburg CIC detachment later reported that this so-called 'Clerical Party' was 'under the direct leadership of the Pope', who wanted to create the Catholic Pan-Danubian Confederation.[27] It was further established that Draganović was working 'hand-in-hand' with the Slovene Clerical Party.[28]

The two most important members of this group in Rome were both senior Intermarium figures – Miha Krek, political leader of the Slovene Catholics and Monsignor Anton Prešeren, the Assistant General of the powerful Jesuit order. The Italian secret service noted the influence exercised by the Slovenes at the Vatican as early as August 1944. The Italians observed that the Slovene clericals were actively collaborating with the Nazis, and already working closely with Draganović in providing welfare and assistance to 'refugees'. At that time, Reverend Ahčin was the 'go-between' for this group and the Vatican, the Italians noted.[29]

From their contacts in Italian intelligence, the Americans discovered in July 1945 that Krek, Prešeren and Ahčin were really British agents.[30] By that time, Prešeren was the main contact with the Holy See. Under cover of the Church, and in close co-operation with Draganović, the Slovenes had established their own section of the Križari.[31]

The Slovenes did not make exaggerated claims like their Croatian comrades, who falsely boasted of having between 40,000 and 300,000 Križari in the Papuk mountains and other rugged areas. The Slovenes, however, kept up a constant stream of propaganda to convince the Allies that they, too, had major forces in the field.[32] Interrogation of Slovene leaders indicated that their guerrilla units were operating mainly in the Gorensko region and Pohorje mountains, maintaining a high level of co-operation with the Ustashi groups. They 'are clothed in American and British combat dresses, and armed by subguns. Their ranks consist of deserters and farmers, mostly.'[33]

The spiritual leader of the Slovenian Križari forces was Bishop Gregory Rožman, whose pastoral centre was in the capital, Ljubljana. This very political Bishop had not set foot there since early May 1945, when together with other Nazi collaborators he had fled to Austria. Here he found a warm welcome from the Bishop of Klagenfurt in the British occupation zone. Rožman desperately needed his protection, for he was one of the most wanted Nazi collaborators. In Krek's absence during the war, Rožman took charge of the Slovene Clerical Party, establishing close ties with both the Italian Fascists and the Nazis.

Rožman was more than a mere figurehead, taking an active part in organising the quisling forces. In mid-1942, he went on a secret mission to the Vatican, asking Pius XII to obtain weapons, food, uniforms and other essential equipment for his Catholic anti-Communist army. As a result, the Italians supplied Rožman's forces. At his suggestion, a number of priests also assumed key military and intelligence roles for the Axis powers.[34]

When the Italians capitulated in September 1943, Rožman organised the smooth transition to Nazi rule, suggesting the formation of the Slovenian Homeguard to Hitler's Gauleiter. This Homeguard was completely under German control, serving directly under the command of the local SS and Higher Police chief. It was infamous for its massacres of civilians, especially supporters of the Communist-led partisans, while its secret police conducted a campaign of terror and murder under the Gestapo's direction.[35]

While these atrocities were taking place, Rožman gave enthusiastic support to the Nazi cause, issuing numerous appeals for Slovenes to 'fight on the side of Germany'. His Pastoral Letter of 30 November 1943 was typical of the stridently pro-Nazi tone of the Bishop's 'spiritual work'. Having urged his faithful to fight for Germany, he pointed out that only 'by this courageous fighting and industrious work for God, for the people and Fatherland will we, under the leadership of Germany, assure our existence and better future, in the fight against [the] Jewish conspiracy'.[36]

There was little doubt in London that Bishop Rožman was a notorious Nazi quisling who deserved extradition to Tito's Yugoslavia. The evidence against him was overwhelming. In addition to his anti-Semitic Pastoral Letter, Rožman was photographed on the dais with the local SS commander during an official ceremony. The Homeguard had just sworn to serve under Hitler's command and were marching past their commanding officer. The SS General stood rigidly to attention, giving the Nazi salute, while the Bishop gave pious approval to his quisling army.

By late 1945, the Foreign Office concluded that Rožman had clearly 'collaborated with the enemy' and was no less guilty than others who had been turned over to the Communists.[37] However, Rožman had powerful friends at the Vatican, and this ultimately explains why the British allowed him to 'escape' and play a major role for the Križari.

Six months before the war ended, Krek and Monsignor Prešeren took up Rožman's cause with the Pope. At a meeting with Pius XII on 26 November 1944, they delivered the Bishop's personal letter to the Pontiff. Rožman outlined his plan for a Western-backed effort to defeat Tito's partisans and install a pro-Western government.[38] As soon as hostilities ceased, the Vatican launched a concerted campaign to secure their Bishop's freedom, repeatedly asking that he be given safe conduct from Austria to find refuge at the Holy See.[39]

They even offered to send a specially selected priest to travel to Klagenfurt to collect Rožman. The man chosen for this task was none other than Father Draganović, who later recalled that rescuing Rožman was one of the most important tasks given him by the Vatican. Draganović was ordered to locate the Bishop on his visit to Austria in May 1945 and bring him back to Rome. He worked hard to carry out his mission, attempting to procure the necessary travel papers for Rožman to make the journey. However, he encountered serious difficulties with the British. Although they permitted him to visit the Bishop, they refused to provide the travel pass and Rožman was forced to remain in Austria. Draganović was disgusted, complaining bitterly that politics had intruded into the Church's charitable work.[40]

Indeed they had, for in response to the Holy See's interventions, the Foreign Office noted that Rožman was 'a quisling'. This explained why they refused Draganović's entreaties, for they had decided that Rožman could on no account be permitted to 'find sanctuary at the Vatican'. Officially, the British favoured his surrender to the Communists. But with typical cynicism, they blamed their American ally for their failure to carry out this decision. Their Embassy in Washington reported in January 1946 that on 'account of the probable repercussions amongst Catholics in this country and elsewhere [the] State Department want to be quite sure of their ground before agreeing to the surrender of Bishop Rožman'. Senior US bureaucrats, however, had unofficially indicated that they would probably ultimately agree to hand him over to Tito.[41]

In fact, senior State Department officials concluded that the 'case as presented by the Yugoslav Ambassador is sufficient to justify handing the Bishop over to Yugoslavia'. However, the Secretary of State simply decided that the Vatican's interest in the case overrode the evidence. America refused to agree with London's proposal for Rožman's extradition.[42]

British intelligence were delighted. The attitudes of the Americans and the Holy See were perfect smokescreens for their real plan. Over the following twenty months the British maintained some nominal supervision of Rožman at his relatively luxurious residence at the Bishop of Klagenfurt's Palace. As the Cold War threatened to 'hot up', they decided unofficially to release the Bishop, despite their previous decision to deliver him up to the Yugoslavs.

This followed yet another intervention by Intermarium President Krek, who exerted considerable pressure on the Foreign Office through the good offices of a Labour Member of Parliament. Krek's entreaties on Rožman's behalf were laced with numerous fabrications and lies, among other things asserting that the 'Holy Father approved all deeds of Mnsgr. Dr Gregorius Rožman' during the war. According to Krek, Rožman had really been a courageous anti-Nazi. The real reason for Tito's extradition request was that Rožman had also been 'a vigorous, active, unyielding adversary of the Communists'.[43]

The British knew Krek's version was completely inaccurate, but nonetheless the campaign then being waged in parliament coincided with their own plan. This involved doing a deal with the Vatican to bring about the very solution they had been requesting for the previous two years. The British proposed quietly to allow the Bishop to 'escape', travel from Klagenfurt to Salzburg, and thence to the safety of Italy and finally the Vatican. Once he had 'escaped', Rožman would be under the care of the Catholic Church and no longer the Foreign Office's concern.

So in November 1947 a British Diplomat visited Monsignor Tardini, head of the Extraordinary Affairs Department in the Vatican's Secretariat of State. He explained the scheme to Tardini, who 'was very relieved to hear of H. M. Government's proposal, and he immediately suggested that the best thing' would be to send Rožman to the United States, where he felt sure that the American Catholic Bishops 'would, if requested by the Pope, be glad to look after' him.[44]

Tardini also mounted a spirited defence of Rožman, saying that he was 'an excellent bishop'. His only offence was 'that he had done everything to organise an anti-Tito Government, in the expectation that the British and American troops, who, in his view, stood for order and civilisation, would get to his part of the world before Tito's troops, who were only a "Godless and shirtless crowd"'.[45]

Tardini did not mention that Rožman's anti-Communist government was in fact completely under Nazi control, although he 'added that it was true the Vatican laid down as a general maxim that the clergy should not interfere in politics, but they left it to the bishops to decide how to interpret this in the light of local conditions and their effect on the faithful. Bishop Rožman had acted for the best according to his conscience, and the Vatican could not disown him.'[46]

Back in London they were very pleased at Tardini's response, and immediately asked the Americans if they would go along with the scheme. However, even as the final arrangements for the Bishop's 'escape' were being made, Rožman quietly slipped away without warning. This prompted the British bureaucrats to observe hypocritically: 'It seems curious that a Paladin of the Roman church should have failed to keep his word.' Rožman was by then fully aware of the deal struck with the Vatican. Nonetheless, the Foreign Office feigned shock that a senior prelate, who was merely 'on parole', could have acted dishonestly.[47]

In fact, Rožman's escape was part of a wider plan. The Bishop had quietly slipped away following a message from American Cardinal Spellman to Archbishop Rohracher of Salzburg, telling him that Rožman 'could find sanctuary in the United States'. Soon after, on 11 November 1947, Rožman quietly disappeared from the Bishop of Klagenfurt's palace and made straight for the protection of Archbishop Rohracher in Salzburg. The Foreign Office noted that the story doing the rounds in Vienna was that Rožman had 'left Klagenfurt in an American army staff car, driven by an American driver!'[48]

This may explain why US intelligence soon discovered the real reason for Rožman's disappearance. They traced him to his hideout in Salzburg, and put him under close surveillance. They reported that Rožman enthusiastically resumed his work for the Nazi underground immediately he fled from Klagenfurt. The quisling Bishop had linked up with the Križari command and undertaken an extremely important assignment on their behalf.

According to the Americans, Rožman intended to visit Berne in Switzerland, where US intelligence officers had recently discovered the whereabouts of much of the Ustashi treasure Pavelić had sent abroad. With the help of Catholic priests, Pavelić had begun to transfer large quantities of gold and currency to Switzerland in early 1944. Some of the treasure had been taken to Italy by British Lieutenant Colonel Jonson to finance the Križari forces. Another portion went to Rome with Draganović and also ended up financing the terrorist network.[49]

But over 2,400 kilos of gold and other valuables still remained secreted in Berne. It was supposed to be used to 'aid refugees of the Catholic religion', but was really earmarked for the Ustashi's clandestine operations. Although the Allies had temporarily prevented them from gaining access to these funds, by early 1948 the time had come to use the Church to retrieve the loot.

In Berne, Rožman's Ustashi friends were engaged in wholesale fraud, using the black market to convert the gold into dollars, and later, into Austrian schillings. '[A]id to the refugees is accounted for at the official rate of exchange for dollars,' the American officers noted, adding that 'malpractices have been carried on (officially, the dollar is worth 10 schillings; on the black market, 100 to 150).' According to reliable information:

> Rožman is going to Berne to take care of these finances. The money is in a Swiss bank, and he plans to have most of it sent through to Italy and from there to the Ustashis in [the] Argentine.[50]

A short time later Rožman duly arrived in Berne, accompanied by Bishop Ivan Šarić, the 'hangman' of Sarajevo. By the end of May 1948, Rožman had apparently carried out this money laundering operation for the Ustashi, for he visited the US Consulate in Zurich and was given a 'non-quota immigration visa as a minister of religion'. He then travelled to the United States and settled in Cleveland, Ohio.[51]

The circle was now almost complete. Pavelić's stolen 'treasure' had been tracked down through close monitoring of the movements and activities of the quisling Bishop of Ljubljana. But this was only the beginning of the Križari's money laundering schemes. Through high level Church figures, the Križari command actually received Vatican funds. Some was used to induce the Italian government of Alcide de Gasperi to provide the weapons they required for their anti-Tito crusade . . .

Hints of this were first picked up in the Allied zone of Trieste by Special CIC Agent, Willard Thomas. In May 1947 one of his informants came into close contact with Križari 'Colonel', Drago Marinković. According to Thomas's source, Marinković had 'the responsibility for securing arms and funds from Italian sources', travelling widely on these missions between Trieste, Venice and Rome. Further, Marinković had 'contacted the Vatican in Rome where he recently was successful in securing a large sum of money, although whether this was received from the Vatican or from some other party through the facilities of the Vatican is not known'.[52]

Thomas noted that this money had been used successfully to procure weapons, 'as during the past week a truck and trailer carrying Sub Machine Guns camouflaged with furniture . . . was met by a group of people who were waiting to carry the arms into

Yugoslavia'. The US officer commented that while the West was apparently not helping the Križari in Italy, 'they are supposed to be furnishing aid across the Austrian border'.[53]

The source of these arms shipments was determined a few weeks later when the Americans investigated Slovenian Križari leader, Franjo Lipovec. According to their information, Lipovec had been one of the first Križari leaders recruited by British intelligence after the war. In 1945 he was picked up by the SIS in Trieste, where he was later 'employed on a salary basis' by a British Army intelligence unit.

The CIC officers established that Lipovec was the main liaison between the Križari and the Italian government. In August 1946 he met senior Italian military intelligence officers who 'proposed that some degree of cooperation should be established'.[54] Lipovec accepted their offer and 'sold himself and his plans completely' to the Italians. His plans were in turn furnished to de Gasperi's *chef de cabinet*, and the Italian Premier subsequently 'assured Lipovec that . . . his government would *unofficially* do everything within their means to strengthen the Tito opposition.' Unconditional public support was promised when the situation was more favourable.

With the financial support of Italian intelligence, Lipovec and his comrades then launched a propaganda campaign to make new recruits among the *émigrés* in Trieste. The next step was to arm the Križari units there, and after several meetings with Italian intelligence, Lipovec reached an agreement 'whereby weapons from Italian Army supply depots would be made available to Lipovec for his onward forwarding to Križari elements' in Trieste.

In February and March 1947, eight arms shipments were delivered under this agreement, including over 500 automatic weapons, some 4,000 hand grenades, 100 pistols and over 30 time bombs. Italian intelligence paid the transportation expenses to take the weapons into Yugoslavia from the Allied zone of Trieste.[55]

A former British intelligence officer, who served in Trieste at this time, confirms these American reports. In a taped interview, he recalled that his orders were to establish a special anti-Communist security office in Trieste. Most of his team were British officers, but they co-ordinated their operations with both American intelligence and local Italian police. The latter were in effect Trieste's

Special Branch, or 'political police', but were really under Allied command.[56]

Their main task was to control Yugoslav subversive activities, including infiltrations into the so-called Free Territory of Trieste, which was under British military rule. In investigating Communist intelligence operations, this British officer came into contact with anti-Communist Yugoslav terrorists, who were smuggling weapons into their homeland, helped by Italian Fascists.

According to this officer, Trieste was the 'meeting point for the resistance forces inside Yugoslavia and the forces who were financing, controlling and directing them in Italy'. The main liaison was Professor Ivan Protulipac, described by the British officer as 'Father Draganović's man in Trieste'. In the 1930s, Protulipac was the leader of an official Church group, ironically also called the Križari. After the war, he took a leading role in the terrorist Križari, until Communist agents assassinated him in Trieste in late 1946.[57]

The British officer also confirms that Draganović was working closely with Italian intelligence, smuggling arms into Yugoslavia under cover of the Italian Red Cross. These were the same Italian intelligence officers described in the American reports as Lipovec's link to de Gasperi. The British officer was also aware of the West's role in the Križari's operations, although he had no personal involvement.

He told us that common criminals, especially drug smugglers and black marketeers, were frequently utilised to assist the Križari to cross the Yugoslav border. In his view, this was one reason why the West's political and military operations were a disaster. 'We always used the wrong elements. We took any crook, any compromised person', including Nazis and murderers.[58]

Although the British dominated the joint intelligence operation in Trieste, close liaison was maintained with the Americans. The Trieste CIC detachment received information about joint British–American operations involving

> an Allied sponsored recruiting campaign . . . for volunteers for the Križari Movement. Many of these volunteers have already been taken to an American training camp in or near Udine, where they receive training. They are furnished with American Army rations and uniforms, plus 700 lire pay daily . . . On completion of their training the men are furnished with American arms and taken into Austria, from which they enter Jugoslav

> territory. They have use of British camps in Austria . . . to which they retire for periodic rests.[59]

The Americans believed this story was possibly Communist-inspired propaganda, 'circulated in an attempt to discredit the Americans, and as such, is not true at all'.[60] However, there certainly were Americans working in Trieste and Udine on joint Allied Križari operations.

For example, according to our former British intelligence contact, Colonel Lewis Perry was ostensibly with the US CIC detachment in Trieste during 1946 and 1947, although he did not wear any distinguishing military insignia on his uniform. 'I know he used to regularly go to Rome, and I'm absolutely sure he must have known Draganović'. As will be seen, Perry later became one of the key US links in Father Draganović's Ratline.

Perry was one of the few Western officers identified by name at the Križari 'show trial' in Zagreb in 1948, specifically accused of being the head of the 'spy centre in Trieste'.[61] The Yugoslavs found out a great deal about Perry from the defendants. For example, the most senior Križari on trial, Božidar Kavran, provided many details about the American's contacts with the terrorist network.

Kavran was the wartime commander of Ustashi headquarters, and then after the war was in charge of the Križari's Austrian base at Trofaiach. He worked directly under Pavelić and Draganović on Križari terrorist and intelligence operations. Nearly forty years later, his interrogation reports were smuggled out of Eastern Europe to the authors. These revealed many aspects of Perry's work in Trieste, especially his close relationship with Srečko Rover, one of the younger rising stars of the terrorist network. Kavran and Rover worked closely even before the war, when they were both underground Ustashi members in Bosnia, involved in a plot to assassinate King Peter.

When the Nazis arrived in 1941, Rover became a member of one of Pavelić's murderous Mobile Courts Martial, summarily executing the Ustashi's racial and political enemies. After serving on this roving extermination squad, Rover was sent to Austria for special officer training, and then promoted to serve in Pavelić's Personal Bodyguard, a repressive police unit similar to the Gestapo.[62]

After the war, Rover joined the throng of wanted war criminals hiding out in the Italian countryside, and soon enrolled in the

Križari underground. He got his false identity papers from Draganović at San Girolamo, allowing him to obtain official documents, especially Italian residency papers. Rover worked closely with Draganović, undertaking numerous missions on behalf of the Ustashi's 'grey eminence', and eventually rising to the very top of the Križari command.[63]

Early in 1946 Rover was dispatched to Trieste to work with Draganović's intelligence network. He contacted Colonel Perry and established close working relations with the American intelligence officer. Apparently Perry was impressed with Rover's proposals, for he recruited the Križari 'captain' and supplied him with travel and identity documents. The American then sent him into Yugoslavia to establish a clandestine route for infiltrating agents into Yugoslavia. It was the start of a very profitable relationship for the 'little wolf', the nickname fondly given to Rover by his Križari comrades.

Nearly every time Rover was in trouble with Western authorities, Perry came to his assistance. The Allied Nazi hunting units arrested Rover on many occasions, but Perry's interventions ensured his release. Rover's relationship with the American also gave the 'little wolf' access to resources and information which assured his rapid promotion through the Križari ranks, finally becoming Kavran's second-in-command at the Trofaiach base in Austria.

As the clandestine network expanded, Rover undertook many important assignments. At first he was a courier, carrying top secret instructions between Križari leaders. He also became skilled at procuring and forging sophisticated travel and identity documents, allowing him and his comrades to travel freely, even in Communist Yugoslavia. Then he recruited volunteers for the terrorist and intelligence missions.

After returning from his clandestine mission for Perry, Rover travelled to Rome and met with Draganović to report directly on his recent successes. He was soon working closely with other senior members of Draganović's network, including many who later turned up on trial in Zagreb.

From the very beginning of his relationship with Perry things seemed to go wrong. For example, Rover's first mission for the American had taken him to Rijeka and Zagreb. Although he returned safely, the very next person Rover sent in via this route was immediately captured. Despite this, the 'little wolf' told his closest comrades that he believed the route he had established through Trieste was perfectly safe, and should be used for further operations.

Perhaps it is only coincidental, but nearly every Križari operation on which Rover worked was a complete disaster. Pavelić himself came to suspect that Rover may have been a Communist double agent, or at least some sort of *provocateur*. Among the senior Križari leaders, Rover seems to have been one of the few who repeatedly entered Yugoslavia and avoided detection and arrest by Tito's secret police. Apparently Rover was extremely lucky, unlike the many Križari he recruited in Italy, Germany and Austria.

Under orders from Draganović and Kavran, he travelled through the numerous camps in the Western zones, persuading many Ustashi to enlist in the Križari. When he became Kavran's deputy at Trofaiach, he was in charge of the underground's radio communications. He was well acquainted with the secret codes used to communicate between the Austrian headquarters and the Križari units inside Yugoslavia.

When the last disastrous operations were launched in mid-1948, Rover was placed in charge of guiding the terrorist groups into the country. Coincidentally, all the men he took across the border were either killed or captured, most within hours, the stragglers within days. The survivors found themselves before Tito's court in Zagreb in 1948. It seems that Srečko Rover was one of a handful of senior Križari operatives not amongst their ranks. Later Rover ran similar fiascos from Australia.

In retrospect, it is clear that the Communist secret police were well informed about all major aspects of the Križari's plans. Some US intelligence officers in Salzburg had suspected this since late 1947, when Dr Petar Prokop approached them asking for 'active financial and moral support'. Prokop promised to carry out acts of terrorism inside Yugoslavia as proof of the Križari's 'ability and organization'. The Americans commented that 'Prokop may be an Agent Provocateur used by [the] Tito authorities in an attempt to compromise US Agencies'.[64]

The evidence presented at the Križari 'show trial' in 1948 left little doubt that the Communist secret police had used double agents to run a very sophisticated counter operation. Somehow they had obtained the secret radio codes used by the Križari, and were informed well in advance of the precise details of their operations. They knew the exact routes used by the groups, as well as the dates and times of their entry into the country. With these advantages, it was easy for the secret police to lure the unsuspecting Križari into their hands using their own radio codes. Once inside the country, they were picked up at will.

It was a pattern that was eerily repeated over the coming years. Despite these terrible setbacks the operations were continued, and even extended into other Communist countries. Throughout the 1950s and into the 1960s the Yugoslav government held trials of captured agents, many allegedly financed by and operating under the orders of Father Draganović. One US intelligence report detailed massive illegal currency dealings in Austria, noting that these financed 'sending couriers and agents into Yugoslavia'. The counter-intelligence officer concluded that 'these present and past activities are being carried out by high-ranking Ustasha adherents, in conjunction with the Austrian government and the Catholic Church, which are attempting to establish the "Intermarium" or "Inter-Danube" state, composed of all the Catholic nations in Southeast Europe.'[65]

Pavelić's Križari were just a part of a wider effort launched by the Vatican in co-operation with Western intelligence. Other underground Catholic armies had been raised to disrupt, and if possible overthrow, the Communist regimes of Central and Eastern Europe. In Czechoslovakia, Poland, the Baltic states and the Ukraine, clandestine Nazi groups were operating in close liaison with the Križari.

US intelligence initially thought that these operations went under the codename 'Integral'. They soon discovered that the Križari's partners were notorious Fascists, operating under the leadership of Ukrainian Nazi Stepan Bandera to build yet another powerful Catholic-dominated alliance – the Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations. They were soon working for the West on operations similar to the Križari, which ended in the same disastrous way.[66]

Long before British and American intelligence officers enticed the Vatican into these operations, the Communist secret police had taken action to frustrate and destroy the Western-backed *émigrés*. It would be years before the true story of Communist penetration and manipulation of the Catholic Nazis emerged from the classified intelligence files.

PART TWO

Communism's War Against the Church

7

The Vatican's Black Orchestra

The first public hint that Communist agents had deeply penetrated the Holy See came in 1967, when Father Krunoslav Draganović suddenly disappeared behind the 'Iron Curtain'. The one man who knew every detail of the Ratlines, including the role of two Popes, was about to call a press conference inside Communist Yugoslavia. Previously it had been Pacelli's recurring nightmare about Munich which had dominated. Now it was Montini's turn to have nightmares.

Tito must have been delighted. It quickly turned into a spectacular propaganda coup. Draganović had been at the centre of the Vatican's intelligence network for over three decades, and been on the closest terms with both Pius XII and Paul VI, the reigning Pope. He had also collaborated with Western intelligence on a variety of sensitive operations.

Even better for Tito, Draganović was prepared to do the unthinkable, and openly heap praise on Communist Yugoslavia. By the time Father Draganović met with local and foreign journalists on 15 November 1967, he had actually been in Yugoslav hands for over two months. The Vatican's 'grey eminence' confidently addressed the assembled press corps before he would permit questions, and most accounts agree that he seemed to be completely in control.

Draganović's Ustashi friends were certainly unprepared for his performance. His previously bitter denunciations of Serbian and Communist domination of Croatia had completely disappeared, replaced with glowing praise for the 'democratisation and humanising of life' in Tito's Yugoslavia, and its commitment to de-Stalinisation.[1] A few days earlier, the Yugoslav press had published Draganović's letter to the District Attorney in Sarajevo, where he was living freely. He had nothing but praise for Tito's Yugoslavia, which 'with its independent ways and internal and international politics has so far been an example and guide to many nations'.[2]

To the undoubted consternation of many local Catholics, Draganović stated that religious freedom and the Church's mission were flourishing in Communist Yugoslavia. He also emphasised that he had returned to the country 'deliberately and freely' and not as the result of 'kidnapping, trickery, entrapment or police manoeuvres', as the *émigré* Ustashi press had claimed.[3]

However, Draganović's close confidant and co-worker on the Ratlines, Monsignor Milan Simčić, strongly disputed this. Father Draganović did not freely return to Yugoslavia, 'he was arrested by UDBA [the Yugoslav secret police]', he insisted in early 1990. According to Simčić, UDBA had laid an elaborate entrapment plan to lure Draganović to a meeting on the Yugoslav–Italian frontier, where he was kidnapped in mid-September 1967.[4]

Simčić claimed that the bait was laid by an UDBA officer, who happened to be distantly related to Draganović. Claiming to be disillusioned with Communism, he offered 'to confidentially inform the Americans about what the Yugoslav army was doing against the Atlantic Treaty [NATO]. Therefore UDBA arrested him through a trick.'[5]

Numerous versions soon gained currency among *émigré* Ustashi around the world. One popular story was that the priest had been an UDBA agent all along. It was even claimed that he had fled with San Girolamo's entire archives, which he promptly turned over to UDBA. Others speculated that Draganović had submitted to the wishes of Pope Paul VI, who asked him to return to his country for the good of the Church.[6]

Draganović's return also fascinated the Yugoslav media, but the semi-official 'inside' story was not published for nearly twenty years. In 1986 the Sarajevo-based *Svijet* (*The World*) magazine published a fifteen part series by a former UDBA officer and a journalist based on official documents. According to their version, an UDBA agent had indeed been involved, but not in the manner claimed by Simčić and the *émigré* Ustashi.

The articles disclosed that an UDBA officer by the name of 'Zlatko' had befriended Father Draganović in the early 1960s, maintaining close connections first in Rome and then later, in Vienna and Pressbaum in Austria. Draganović was apparently aware of Zlatko's mission, but nevertheless he allowed himself to be drawn into the UDBA trap. Finally, in late August 1967, he supposedly agreed to return.

On 10 September he met Zlatko at a hotel above Trieste and departed in a Yugoslav-registered Mercedes. A short time later they crossed into Yugoslavia and Draganović was taken first to Belgrade, and a few days later, to Sarajevo, where he was held by UDBA for a short time.[7] The senior Croatian prelate, Cardinal Šeper, hinted at foul play, claiming that UDBA had planted an agent in Draganović's inner circle.[8]

However, as Western intelligence desperately scrambled to re-evaluate the Vatican's Ratlines, many fingers pointed directly at Draganović. The old hands were horrified at the possibility that he had really worked for the Communists all along. The reaction of one former British intelligence officer was typical. As previously discussed, this intelligence specialist found Father Draganović a cold and unapproachable character. With the benefit of hindsight, he believed that the priest must have worked for the Communists at some time:

> I think he was very much a realist, and I'm not certain to this day whether he was not a double agent . . . it's impossible that Draganović, having been . . . the 'grey eminence' of Balkan intelligence in the Vatican, particularly from a Croatian point of view . . . [would] go back and end his life . . . [there] . . . on a voluntary basis. I just don't believe it. He went on a voluntary basis, he was never kidnapped . . . if they didn't kill him, it means he was a double agent. There's no two ways about it, in my opinion.[9]

When confronted with this claim, Monsignor Simčić expressed complete amazement:

> This is beyond logic, beyond everything. I knew him in the very depths of his soul . . . he was a great Croatian who could not even conceive of Yugoslavia. He fought all his life for a free Croatia. He was against any Yugoslavia, regardless of the politics of the regime . . . Draganović was religiously anti-Communist. Now, you tell me, how could he be a Yugoslav spy, especially for Communist Yugoslavia?[10]

Far from being a cold realist, as claimed by the British officer, 'Draganović was very naive', and had been completely fooled by a very effective Communist spy. According to Simčić, 'a man of ill repute . . . a notorious spy', had indeed infiltrated Father Draganović's headquarters at San Girolamo in Rome. His name was Miroslav Varoš.[11]

Varoš's career closely tracked Draganović's. They both came from Sarajevo, and soon after Draganović went to Rome in 1943, Varoš followed. He, too, became active in Ustashi *émigré* politics, quickly establishing close relations with San Girolamo, where he worked for Draganović as a typist. He wrote prolifically for various *émigré* papers and, according to the Communists, worked for a number of Western intelligence agencies.[12]

Simčić, however, was certain that it was Varoš who lured Draganović into UDBA's hands. It was also Varoš who had organised the guerrilla operations in Yugoslavia. He surely was a double agent, for after Draganović's arrest, he returned to Yugoslavia and continued his work for UDBA.[13] If Monsignor Simčić's version is correct, the priest who smuggled thousands of fugitive Nazis to freedom with the support of Pius XII, Montini and powerful sections of Allied intelligence, was simply tricked and kidnapped because of his naivety.

The British officer could not recall this naive streak in Draganović's character.[14] In some ways it does not matter who is correct. For both Simčić and the British officer agree that the Communists had successfully penetrated the Vatican's Ratline. Whether it was Draganović or Varoš is really academic; either way, Tito knew everything about the Holy See's activities, and Pope Paul VI's key role.

In a taped interview, Milan Simčić was adamant that the Communists did not obtain their information from Draganović. 'He was also a great man in tragedy,' he said proudly. 'When they caught him and forced him to give certain statements, even then he was great in saving others – he accepted the responsibility . . . UDBA didn't get anything important.' Draganović later smuggled a letter to Simčić, telling him: 'Be at peace, no one is in danger as a result of my words.'[15]

Certainly, the Yugoslav public would not have known that Draganović had been at the centre of the Vatican's most remarkable operation of this century. Instead of re-running the 1940s propaganda line against the Holy See, virtually no details of the Church's involvement were publicly disclosed. The Communist-controlled press merely reported that Draganović had 'skilfully avoided giving direct answers to some "delicate questions"'. However, it is certain that UDBA had forbidden Draganović to tell the world what he knew. Instead, he was ordered to bitterly denounce the Ustashi's international terrorist network and, at every appropriate opportunity, to praise Tito's regime.[16]

It should be recalled that this regime had consistently labelled Draganović as a war criminal, the organiser of an elaborate Nazi-smuggling system, and the brains behind the Križari terrorist operations. Yet when they finally had him in their hands, they did nothing to punish him.[17] Instead, he was permitted to shelter behind an amnesty passed by Tito's government in 1962. Obviously a deal had been done, for Draganović assured the Yugoslav public that 'the organs of the state authorities behaved towards me correctly, what is more, humanely and with consideration as towards a human being and priest, for which I sincerely and publicly thank them'.[18]

Eventually, although they kept a close eye on him, the secret police allowed him to settle quietly in Sarajevo. He promptly went back to work for his beloved Church, and spent the rest of his days updating the general register of the Catholic Church in Yugoslavia, which he had published in 1939.[19] He died peacefully in June 1982, and although UDBA immediately confiscated a large collection of his papers, no plausible official explanation of his 'defection' has been forthcoming.

Despite the extraordinary propaganda coup which the *public* revelations had handed the Communists, Monsignor Simčić was certain that they had not successfully blackmailed Draganović:

> 'Noooo', he said emphatically, 'Draganović was not a man who could be blackmailed . . . I'm 100% sure that they could not have blackmailed him . . . Nor did they get anything significant from him.'[20]

Perhaps, in the end, Father Draganović was sent home as a sacrificial lamb – part of a sophisticated deal struck between Tito and the Vatican. The roots of his ultimate demise can probably be traced to 1960 when another series of "show trials" occurred in Yugoslavia. Draganović was again said to be the organiser of an underground network of Ustashi priests, operating in widely dispersed areas of the country. Apparently, his money laundering days had continued unabated, for he had allegedly laundered millions of dinars to support the network's subversive activities.[21]

Soon after these further sensational allegations, Draganović 'removed himself' from San Girolamo, heralding a marked improvement in Vatican–Yugoslav relations.[22] His old friend Vilim Cecelja, who had run the Austrian end of the Ratline so efficiently, lamented that Draganović 'was not accepted any more' in senior

Vatican circles. In fact, he was distinctly on the outer from that moment on, and as 'he was in the top leadership, he was the one decapitated'.[23] According to the Yugoslavs, Draganović was actually removed from San Girolamo, and assaulted by powerful factions within the Vatican. It was shortly after this that the mysterious UDBA officer 'Zlatko' contacted Draganović and supposedly began the long process of 'bringing him home'.[24]

Over the next few years a remarkable thaw took place between the Holy See and Communist Yugoslavia, culminating in a series of top level talks and ultimately a protocol which virtually normalised relations in June 1966.[25] Fourteen months later, Father Draganović was back home, praising the protocol and denouncing the 'direct political activities of priests' which had 'in the past brought [the Church] so much ill fortune'.[26]

Perhaps Krunoslav Draganović was a victim of the new mood sweeping the Catholic Church in the wake of Pius XII's death, the ascension of John XXIII and the radical departures of the Second Vatican Council. But it seems much more likely that the deal that had been struck between Tito and the Vatican included a provision requiring Draganović to retire behind the 'Iron Curtain' and quietly co-operate with UDBA. The Communist secret police knew almost everything anyway, and this was probably the reason why the Vatican was forced to yield. This may have been the price that Father Draganović paid – even willingly – for the dreadful errors the Vatican had made in establishing the Ratlines.

Strangely enough, both Monsignor Simčić and the semi-official UDBA version agree on at least one important point: Draganović performed extremely well under interrogation. According to *Svijet*, he was extremely cunning, defeating at least one senior UDBA officer entirely and pushing another to the point of total exasperation. The Communists admitted that Draganović cleverly evaded their probing when he believed they did not know the answer to their questions. But when he was certain they were well informed, he co-operated.[27]

However, new evidence has recently emerged that he in fact admitted a great deal to UDBA. In 1990 a copy of one of Draganović's most revealing statements was smuggled out from an Eastern European Communist source to the authors. This is the first time that Father Draganović's confession to UDBA has been in Western hands. The document is dated 26 September 1967 and is undoubtedly the first comprehensive statement made by the priest after his mysterious return. It described in great detail how the Vatican built the San Girolamo Ratline, and the close connections maintained by the Pope's Refugee Commission with the Red Cross and Italian and Western intelligence.[28]

Draganović also disclosed many details of the Vatican's role in saving Pavelić's war booty, and the operation of the Križari's underground terrorist network. Perhaps UDBA already knew most of these details from Varoš and other sources. A considerable amount could only have been provided by Draganović personally. Even *Svijet* admitted that his information had enabled UDBA to piece together the labyrinth of the *émigré* underground, and its connections to Western intelligence. UDBA interrogated Draganović almost non-stop for two weeks on these matters, revealing everything about the Ustashi diaspora, and corroborating UDBA's own voluminous files.[29]

However, even after his death, the Communists did not publish the whole story. Although *Svijet* obviously based their 1986 articles on Draganović's interrogation reports, no mention was made of the key issues canvassed in this first document. In fact, Draganović's confession gave the Communists a unique insight into the secrets of the Vatican's Ratlines. They were secrets which Tito chose to bury very securely, for they have never been publicly disclosed before, even in Yugoslavia. They included:

- an intimate description of his high level contacts with the Vatican Secretariat of State
- a detailed outline of San Girolamo's smuggling system, including the names of the priests who held key positions, and the formal connections they maintained with the Pope's Welfare Commission
- the names of the Allied officers with whom he had worked closely
- the names of his Christian Democrat contacts inside the Italian Ministry of Internal Affairs
- a complete overview of his senior role in co-ordinating the Vatican's Ratlines for all Central and Eastern European nationalities
- minute descriptions of secret missions he had undertaken on behalf of the Vatican
- an account of his own role in saving and smuggling the Ustashi's stolen treasure
- details of the Ustashi's money laundering operation in Switzerland
- descriptions of the leading personalities, command structure and operations of the Križari[30]

The version so carefully contrived by UDBA in *Svijet* ignores these aspects. They did let slip at least one very interesting fact: Father Draganović had also been working for West German security chief, Reinhard Gehlen, the former Nazi intelligence General on the Eastern front.[31]

It seems that Draganović had penetrated all the major Western security services. Yet if Milan Simčić is correct and Miroslav Varoš, not Krunoslav Draganović, was the UDBA spy in San Girolamo, then the Communists knew nearly every detail of the Ratlines before Draganović returned home. The Vatican had probably long since realised this, for it turned out that the Soviets had penetrated the *émigré* Nazi groups long before the Pope had decided to use them. Like Draganović, their agent had penetrated most Western intelligence services, and a few more besides . . .

While Eugenio Pacelli was still a Papal Nuncio in Munich, and before Pius XI had become Pope, Soviet military intelligence had already recruited an agent who would wreck the Vatican's anti-Bolshevik schemes for the next half century. Ironically, the Communists utilised the same tactics and methods used by the Czarist secret police over the previous few centuries. The Empire had always been paranoid about the numerous ethnic groups which sought independence from the Russian centre.

Decades before Felix Dzerzhinsky organised the fearsome Cheka, the Czar's secret police had become skilled manipulators of these dissident nationalists. Whenever and wherever Ukrainian, Byelorussian or Baltic separatist movements grew up, the Czar's police were busily penetrating them with moles. Their tasks included creating intense factionalism and personality splits, dividing the movements and shattering their nationalist dreams. One of the goals of the *agents provocateurs* was to provoke the would-be revolutionaries into taking premature action which could easily be defeated by the Czar's men.

The Bolsheviks were mindful of the Czar's successes. After all, they had themselves fallen victim to exactly this tactic. It was hardly surprising that the Communists decided to employ the same methods against their anti-Communist opponents, who fled in the wake of the Red Army's victory in the civil war. In fact, some of the police officials who had run these operations under the Czar were recruited into the Cheka, where they faithfully passed their secrets to the Bolsheviks. Soviet intelligence evolved into two rival agencies, the civilian KGB and the military GRU. For the last seventy years they have faithfully copied the Czar's *agents provocateurs* tactics.[32]

In each generation, Soviet intelligence created 'anti-Communist' *émigré* front groups, ostensibly to foment revolution and topple Bolshevism. The front groups attracted support from the West. Considerable financial assistance was supplied and close ties forged with various Western intelligence services. This enabled the Communist double agents running the front groups to co-opt the legitimate *émigré* opposition, splinter their leadership and provoke them into premature and poorly organised rebellions which were easily defeated. More importantly, the false front groups were a vehicle for long-term Soviet penetration of Western society.

The first and classic example was *The Trust*, organised by Felix Dzerzhinsky himself. It was supposedly an organisation of dissident monarchists and generals, plotting to overthrow Lenin. British intelligence poured huge sums of money into *The Trust* without realising they were subsidising the Communists. This is the famous spy scandal that enabled the Soviets to capture Sidney Reilly, the much renowned 'ace of spies'.[33] During the 1950s the CIA fell for a similar trap and poured millions into Operation WIN in Poland, only to discover to their horror that their anti-Communist forces were largely a figment of Soviet imagination. For seventy years *émigré* agents were a critical factor in ensuring Communism's survival.[34]

What no one ever realised was that there was yet another *émigré* group headed by a long term Communist agent which had an equally disastrous effect on the Holy See. The Vatican's nemesis was a member of the Czar's nobility, Prince Anton Vasilevich Turkul, arguably the greatest professional spy of the twentieth century. During Turkul's extraordinary career he penetrated the Imperial Russian Army, the French Deuxième Bureau, the Japanese General Staff, Mussolini's headquarters, both British Secret Services (MI5 and MI6), Ribbentrop's personal intelligence service (Bureau Jahnke), Admiral Canaris's Abwehr, Wehrmacht Intelligence on the Eastern front (the Fremde Heere Ost or Foreign Armies East, headed by General Reinhard Gehlen), the SS Security Service (SD) and passed Soviet disinformation to virtually every nation in both the Axis and Allied camps.

After World War II, Turkul worked for West German intelligence (the Gehlen Org), collaborated with many of the spy services of NATO, including the American Military Intelligence Service (MIS – for offensive intelligence), the US Army Counter Intelligence Corps (CIC – for defensive purposes), the ultra-secret State Department Office of Policy Co-ordination and the Central Intelligence Agency. Unlike Kim Philby, Turkul was not exposed during his lifetime. He died in 1959, without anyone proving that his exclusive loyalty lay with Soviet Military Intelligence, the GRU.

It appears that not even senior officers of the KGB knew that the GRU had placed an agent right inside Vatican intelligence. Turkul was the double agent who wrecked all of Pius XI's hopes to overthrow the Bolsheviks, and later sabotaged Pius XII's plans to mediate an Anglo-German alliance against the Soviets. Prince Turkul was at once the Vatican's best secret agent, and its greatest secret enemy. Until now, his story has never been fully told.

No one knows when Prince Turkul was first recruited by the Bolsheviks. Much of his early history is shrouded in mystery. Even his birthdate is uncertain. One intelligence report says that he was born on 12 November 1892 in Odessa.[35] Another states that he was born exactly nine months earlier in Bessarabia.[36]

When he was in his early twenties, Prince Turkul served the Czar as an officer in the Don River Legion. After the Revolution, he joined the White counter-revolutionary army, was promoted to Colonel and at some later time to Brigadier General. Turkul's command of his White division was not without controversy, for US intelligence recorded that it was 'alleged that while in this position, shipments received by him of British arms were actually turned over to the Red Forces'.[37]

One of the keys to Communist victory in the Russian civil war was that several of the opposing White generals were really working for Lenin and Trotsky. In addition to Prince Turkul, Generals Skoblin, Voss and the son of General Abramow were also double agents. Perhaps the Bolshevik triumph was due less to Trotsky's military genius and more to the brilliance of his intelligence service. After the civil war, the Communist double agents had still not been discovered. Turkul and the other White Russian officers were evacuated to Paris by the sympathetic French Government, which, along with the British, had financed much of the anti-Bolshevik effort.[38]

In 1925 British intelligence sent Commander Dunderdale to liaise with the White *émigrés* in Paris. The older generals, led by Baron Wrangel and Aleksander Kutepov, had established a White Russian veterans' corps known by its cyrillic acronym, ROWS.[39] ROWS supervised a secret 'Combat Organisation' as well as a counter-intelligence service, the Inner Line, to concoct schemes for restoring the Czarist monarchy in Russia.[40] The recently released intelligence files explain why their plans met with little success.

Soon after ROWS was created, the double agents went to work to sabotage the *émigré* resistance. ROWS was to be discredited as ineffective or exposed as totally penetrated by the Communists. A number of new front groups (even more dominated by the Bolshevik clique) were to be established in its place. Over the next ten years, the older generals of ROWS were kidnapped, murdered or assassinated. Turkul's fellow agent, General Skoblin, would emerge as head of the ROWS Inner Line by climbing over the bodies of his victims.[41]

Turkul was among the original group of double agents who came to Paris from Gallipoli in 1920, and was later suspected of involvement in the plots against the ROWS leaders, Wrangel and Kutepov.[42] However, Turkul was spared much of the ensuing scandal in Paris as he was quickly re-assigned to the Balkan section of ROWS. He was in fact being prepared for the second phase of the Bolshevik strategy.

According to top secret information of the 'utmost discretion to British intelligence', Turkul's new superior was Claudius Voss, alias Alexandrov. Voss was regarded as one of Britain's leading agents inside the Inner Line during the 1920s. This key agent was in charge of counter-intelligence for Slovakia. As was later discovered, Voss was loyal to the Bolsheviks, not to ROWS or the British.[43]

Voss's direct superior in the Inner Line was General Abramow, chief of the Balkan section in Sofia, where Turkul had also conveniently settled. Voss pushed General Abramow out of the way by exposing his son as an agent of Soviet civilian intelligence. This was a cynical example of how the GRU sacrificed agents from a rival Communist organisation (the predecessor of the civilian KGB), in order to advance their own men.[44]

Predictably, the Abramow scandal, coming on the heels of the series of assassinations and kidnappings in Paris, substantially discredited ROWS in the eyes of the White Russian *émigré* community.[45] Another front group was waiting in the wings to replace it. Since 1924, Voss had actively participated in the founding of the Narodny Trudovoi Soyuz (NTS), or People's Labour Alliance, and had talent-spotted young Prince Turkul as NTS's future star. Originally dependent on ROWS, the stepchild NTS lost no time in denouncing the old Monarchist organisations.[46]

Turkul emerged as a leader of the 'new generation' of NTS anti-Communist *émigrés* and a variety of other front groups, all untainted by the mud that clung to the old ROWS leadership. Between 1927 and 1931 Turkul shuttled between Sofia and Paris, ostensibly keeping himself above the fray, but always making new contacts. According to US intelligence, his 'enemies considered him the ruiner of ROWS and an opportunist'.[47]

When NTS went to work for Menzies of British intelligence, the Soviet agents, including Turkul, were already in place.[48] By 1930 Turkul's cover as an anti-Communist organiser was impeccable and for the next several decades he and the NTS remained at the forefront of Menzies's anti-Communist intrigues:

> The main group used by MI6 for operations inside the Soviet Union until the end of the 1960's was the People's Labor Alliance (NTS) founded in 1930 in Belgrade by social democratic Russian *émigrés* who sought the overthrow of the Communist regime from within and its replacement with a parliamentary democracy.[49]

American intelligence had a rather different view of NTS ideology, calling it Fascist, anti-democratic and violently anti-Semitic.[50] It should be noted that such attitudes did not prevent the Americans from taking over NTS from the British in the 1950s, not realising that this right-wing group had been thoroughly infiltrated by Soviet intelligence since the 1920s.

By 1930, the Soviet spy services had completely polarised the *émigré* community in Paris. The military branch, later the GRU, focused mainly on the ethnic Russian exiles. NTS with its pro-Russian orientation attracted those exiles who favoured the restoration of the geographical borders of the Czarist empire, including the ethnic minorities of the Baltic provinces, the Ukraine, Byelorussia and the Slavic regions of the Balkans. The NTS insisted on retaining these non-Russian minorities as subordinate parts of Greater Russia once the Bolsheviks were overthrown.

The Soviet civilian espionage branch, later the KGB, generally concentrated on the non-Russian ethnic minorities which had organised separatist groups to break away from Great Russian domination. These rival *émigré* organisations – Intermarium, Prometheus and the Abramtchik Faction etc. – had an anti-Russian orientation. Unlike the GRU's recruits, these exiles from the minority populations hated Russian imperialism and favoured splintering the Soviet Union into a loose confederation.

Instead of unifying Russian and non-Russian *émigrés* around their common hatred of Bolshevism, *agents provocateurs* ensured that the dissidents spent more time fighting each other than their common enemy. The pattern of division and competition, so skilfully employed by Czarist police and taken over by the Cheka after World War I, lasted well into the Cold War. No matter which way the anti-Bolshevik *émigrés* turned, Soviet double agents were waiting to co-opt their strategies.

As Menzies's biographer confirms, His Majesty's Secret Service recruited *émigré* cadres for 'terrorism and sabotage' against the Soviets. Britain was not alone in employing terrorists before World War II. Few Western intelligence services had scruples when it came to dealing with extremist groups, even those with Fascist tendencies like NTS, as long as they professed anti-Communism.[51]

The truth is that during the 1920s and 1930s a little dose of right-wing extremism was perfectly acceptable to several intelligence services. Turkul always claimed to oppose the anti-Russian philosophies espoused by groups such as the Ukrainian-dominated Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations (ABN). However, he never let his affiliation with NTS prevent him from occasional collaboration with the minority separatists who also worked for the British and the French. He was hired by the Deuxième Bureau in Paris just as the Vatican and the French General Staff were recruiting White Russian supporters for Intermarium.[52]

Since Intermarium was dedicated to independence for non-Russian minorities, it may seem contradictory to have included ethnic Russians as members. But, as William Gowen reported, everyone was welcome in Intermarium as long as they were anti-Soviet, and 'it is supposedly for this reason that the "White" Russians are included as the first victims of Communism'.[53]

Indeed, there is evidence that factional groups like Intermarium were formed out of the disintegration of ROWS. According to

Gowen, Intermarium was 'an outgrowth of a "White" Russian society organised in Paris before World War II by a former Czarist General . . . of the old Paris group'.[54] In view of the recently discovered evidence that White Russian double agents deliberately arranged the disintegration of ROWS, there is ample reason to suspect that Intermarium inherited the same group of Red agents who had infiltrated ROWS in the early 1920s.[55]

To illustrate the confusion of the times, some intelligence services used the term 'White Russian' to refer to anti-Communist ethnic Russians, while other agencies called the Byelorussians 'White Russians', although they were a separate ethnic minority opposed to both Red and White Russians. Although Byelorussia literally means 'White Russia' in English, the term is similar to but not the same as, the Russian word for the anti-Communist White forces. To compound the confusion, some Byelorussians were Reds as well, working with NTS's White Russian network for the Soviets.[56] The ethnographic lines were further blurred by frequent interchanges between the various Soviet and Western intelligence services and their various front groups.

One wonders how the Soviets could keep it all straight, but it should be recalled that confusion was part of their game plan. Indeed, the Abramtchik Faction illustrates the complex intelligence cross-overs between the NTS and the separatists. The British-sponsored Prometheus network supposedly controlled the Abramtchik Faction in Paris which in turn controlled another Byelorussian sub-group which was part of NTS at the same time they were receiving funds from the Vatican through a Baltic Bishop. The head of this Byelorussian hodge-podge was Mikolai Abramtchik, yet another Communist agent in pre-war Paris.[57] Abramtchik was a Byelorussian (White Russian) separatist working for the anti-Communist Great Russians while secretly working for the Reds. If such devious complexities gave headaches to the Communists, it was nothing compared to the pain they inflicted on the West and the Vatican. A disgruntled American agent simply threw up his hands and privately referred to all the *émigrés* as 'lower slobbovians' after the Al Capp comic strip. It really was not funny in view of what happened.

The one thing that is clear is that back in the 1920s, before Western intelligence groups like Intermarium and Prometheus were even formed, the Soviets had infiltrated each new organisation that popped up in Paris. Control of counter-intelligence screening for the Parisian *émigrés* had already been taken over by the Communists. The trusted Inner Line security apparatus was riddled with agents like Skoblin and Voss who could supply false vetting for double agents. Moreover, Turkul himself was well placed to infiltrate agents into every faction under the guise of NTS's broad-minded collaboration.

Since Turkul was supported by both British and French intelligence, it is not surprising that NTS eventually developed networks among the traditionally pro-Russian Serbs in Yugoslavia (the Mihailović Faction which was later dropped by Britain in favour of Tito). Turkul also had contacts inside the traditional anti-Russian Ukrainian separatist movement (the Melnyk Faction which was later dropped by British intelligence in favour of Stephen Bandera's group). Turkul even had contacts with the Abramtchik Faction of the Byelorussians who supported anyone who was in power at any particular moment. Abramtchik in fact worked for both the Poles and the Soviets, collaborated with the Nazis and was later passed on to the CIA by the British.[58]

In view of the tendency of the exiles to work simultaneously for anyone who paid them, Anthony Cave Brown is probably correct to list the Abramtchik Faction and other pre-war groups as working for the British, while acknowledging the CIA's estimate that the *émigrés* took 'handouts' from more than one Western intelligence service.[59] Soviet intelligence must have been amused as one spy service after the other swallowed the *émigré* bait.

The anti-Communist networks in Paris soon attracted the attention of the infant German intelligence service, which opened a file on General Turkul in 1927.[60] One German officer in particular, Wilhelm Canaris, wanted to join the *émigré* game, and offered to pool German support for the common cause:

> During this same period . . . Canaris also had some part in founding an embryonic intelligence network in Central Europe and the Balkans, and co-operated with at least one Entente agency – most probably the British – against Communist agents who had begun to flood into Western Europe to provoke revolutions in support of the Kremlin.[61]

A few years later, on 1 January 1934, Admiral Canaris became Chief of the German Military Intelligence Service, the Abwehr.[62]

As we shall see, there can be little doubt that Turkul was the go-between for joint Anglo-German co-operation against the Communists. During the 1930s Menzies's representative to the *émigré* groups in Paris was Charles Howard Ellis, Dick or Dickie to his friends, of whom he had many among the Russian exile community:

> Dick Ellis dealt with anti-Communist exiles in Europe. He was the SIS expert on what Stalin called the nationalities question – the euphemism for unrest among non-Russians making up half the population of the USSR. Stalin regarded White Russians as potential leaders of revolt. Ellis dealt with the best known of the White Russian leaders in Paris, General Andrei Turkul – and encouraged him to keep up his powerful Nazi connections. The Nazi Germans had secret plans for using White Russians and Ukrainians to overthrow Stalin.[63]

Perhaps Ellis thought he was doing the right thing in helping Admiral Canaris prepare for war against the hated Communists. To this day, there is some question whether Ellis aided the Nazis on his own or under instructions from Menzies. Before 1939 it made sense to share British networks with the Germans in the common anti-Soviet struggle.[64] Unfortunately, Ellis was also using Turkul's German connections for personal gain, augmenting his meagre salary by working on the side for Admiral Canaris. Even after Hitler came to power, he was a paid Nazi agent and later admitted selling the rosters of British intelligence agents.[65]

In 1936 General Turkul was doing a little selling of his own: behind Menzies's back he had peddled NTS to the Japanese. According to his recently declassified intelligence file, Anton Turkul is listed as an agent who 'worked for the Japanese in Russia, head of [the] Russian fascist party in Japan, speaks fluent Japanese'.[66] The Japanese paid Turkul through a bank account in New York right up until Pearl Harbor. Turkul later bragged that his organisation had been subsidised by the Japanese General Staff which regarded NTS as an excellent method of keeping an eye on Soviet intentions.[67]

The Japanese did not realise that the Soviet GRU was keeping an eye on them. Turkul's GRU contact in Japan was one Richard Sorge, a German journalist who had infiltrated the Japanese Army for the GRU.[68] After the ring had worked successfully for a few years, Turkul decided in 1938 to sell his own 'Japanese' net to the

Germans. Turkul used as his go-between a German Jew, code-named MAX KLATT, whose real name was Richard Kauder. 'Klatt' claimed to have a spy ring inside the top levels of the Soviet military which was willing to sell documents to the Abwehr.

General Turkul wrapped such a shroud of secrecy around himself and Klatt that, as late as 1961, 'Herr Klatt' was described by Ladislav Farago as the most effective (and mysterious) of all the Nazi spies:

> This inscrutable man (whose real name and true identity were never established) was *the* Secret Agent Extraordinary of the Abwehr against the Soviet Union. Who he was, how he looked, and what made him work for the Abwehr, aside from purely mercenary considerations, I do not know . . . suddenly he blossomed out as a secret agent on a massive scale . . .
>
> In August, 1938, Klatt arrived in Vienna and was taken by a mutual friend to the colonel [of the Abwehr] . . . He came to the meeting with a startling amount of intelligence, especially about the innards of the Soviet Air Force. He claimed to have a link to the Soviet Legation in Sofia and said he was receiving the bulk of his information from the Soviet Union via short-wave radio. Although he was extremely accommodating, he steadfastly refused to reveal anything more about his sources, but he did volunteer to leave his material with the Abwehr so that it might be examined closely before a deal was made . . .
>
> His material stood the test of the most painstaking checking. The discovery of this remarkable agent was considered so important that it was reported directly to the Chief of the General Staff, an unusual step, and, from then on, the Klatt material was handled with top priority by special officers in Berlin. His data became the basis of German planning against the USSR on the highest echelon, something few spies in history could claim.
>
> When the deal was made (and it was fantastic in terms of money; Klatt was extremely expensive), the new master spy returned to Sofia to become the top secret agent – and virtually the only direct-action spy – the Abwehr had working full-time in this important sector of the secret war. This phenomenal spy never disappointed his employers. And he never ceased to intrigue them . . . All efforts over the years to disclose anything at all about Klatt personally, and about his sources, proved in vain.[69]

But who were the 'special officers in Berlin . . . at the highest echelon' who put this mysterious Jew in charge of Nazi espionage against the Soviets? US intelligence identified Admiral Canaris as one of Klatt's superiors.[70] But the Turkul/Klatt team had another contact whose name has been kept secret for the last fifty years.

General Turkul and his Jewish assistant 'Klatt' worked directly for Oberst (Colonel) Kurt Jahnke, Chief of the Jahnkebureau, Ribbentrop's personal intelligence service. Jahnke was also a trusted adviser to Rudolf Hess and Hitler himself. During World War II all of Jahnke's records for the years 1933 to 1938 were confiscated by the SS.[71]

However, one senior SS officer read the Jahnke dossiers before they vanished. Eleven years after World War II, Walter Schellenberg wrote his memoirs, in which he vividly recalled how Jahnke had developed 'excellent connections with Japan' through unusual channels, involving a former Czarist officer and a German Jew.[72]

General Turkul was not mentioned by name, an understandable precaution since both of them were still working for the British SIS at the time the memoirs were published.[73] Still, Schellenberg left substantial clues, confirmed by recently declassified American intelligence files, which clearly identify Turkul as the Czarist officer who worked for the Nazi intelligence hierarchy.

For example, Schellenberg boasts that this agent ran a spy ring inside Stalin's General Staff at Marshal Rokossovsky's Soviet military headquarters.[74] American intelligence files list Rokossovsky's General Staff as one of Turkul's sources.[75] Similarly, Schellenberg states that one of Jahnke's contacts in Japan was Richard Sorge.[76] American intelligence files state that Sorge passed information to Berlin through Turkul's assistant, Klatt.[77]

The recently declassified files also confirm that Schellenberg's unnamed German Jew was Max Klatt, Turkul's Jewish intelligence chief who worked for Jahnke and Admiral Canaris before being taken over by the SS. Schellenberg's memoirs detail how the SS helped Jahnke protect his German Jew from the Gestapo because he was such an invaluable intelligence source on Japan. Schellenberg further identifies the rescued German Jew as the chief of a world-wide 'information network [which] went through various countries and penetrated every stratum of society. He furnished quick and exact reports from the senior staffs of the Russian Army.'[78]

There was only one team of a Czarist officer and a German Jew with 'excellent Japanese connections' who spied on the Soviets for the Abwehr and were later protected by the SS from the Gestapo. Schellenberg's account is confirmed in all important details by the secret post-war interviews of Turkul and Klatt. But there was something which Schellenberg mentioned which the earlier investigations had missed, something that only Schellenberg had seen: the files on Kurt Jahnke's secret connection to Turkul. Schellenberg's recollection of these long destroyed documents is of more than academic interest. As we shall see, the evidence shows that Turkul became Jahnke's courier to the Vatican.

On 26 August 1939 Hitler shocked his General Staff with news of the Ribbentrop–Molotov pact. It was now safe, he told them, to attack Poland. The war would go well, he predicted. 'I am only afraid that at the last minute some *Schweinhund* will produce a plan of mediation.'[79]

Kurt Jahnke tried to do just that the following day. On 27 August he 'used every conceivable means to bring an English intelligence man to Hitler' for eleventh-hour peace negotiations. Much to Jahnke's dismay the British agent was turned away when he arrived in Berlin. Jahnke knew that an alliance with the Soviets would mean war with Britain, but Hitler's mind was made up. So was Jahnke's. If Hitler could not understand that Germany must ally itself with Britain against the Soviet Union, then Hitler must be removed.

On 29 August, Jahnke's British agent returned to London and reported that the German General Staff were plotting to depose the Nazi regime. Word leaked back to the Gestapo who wanted to arrest Jahnke for high treason, but Admiral Canaris stopped the indictment.[80]

For years Canaris and Jahnke had been secretly plotting to overthrow Hitler and form an Anglo-German alliance against Stalin. There is evidence of careful pre-arrangement with the Vatican to pass the plotters' messages in the event of hostilities. On 3 September 1939, the same day that Britain and France declared war on Germany, Admiral Canaris made contact with British intelligence through the Vatican. One week later, Canaris passed the Vatican news of Nazi atrocities against Catholic priests and Jews in Poland. The Vatican gave the information to French and British intelligence.[81]

The Vatican's plan to help Canaris and Jahnke replace Hitler did not sit well with the Soviets in 1939. Stalin wanted Germany, France and Britain to fight a long and bloody war until the Red Army could move in and take over Central Europe. If this plan were to succeed, the Vatican had to be prevented from helping the

German opposition to negotiate peace with Britain. Apparently the GRU (and Jahnke) sent their best agent. Sometime before the outbreak of war, Prince Turkul moved from Berlin to Rome.[82]

On the eve of war, the anti-Hitler group made contact with Pius XII, who had just assumed St Peter's throne. In October the Pope was asked to play the part of intermediary between Germany and Britain. Canaris had selected Dr Joseph Müller, a Catholic lawyer from Munich, as his first courier to the Vatican. In October, Müller arrived in Rome and met his old friend, Monsignor Kaas, near the Quo Vadis Chapel off the Appian Way. The Jahnke–Canaris group of conspirators was soon given the code name *Schwarze Kapelle* after the Black Chapel in Rome. But the anti-Hitler group is better known as the Black Orchestra; apparently *Schwarze Kapelle* is a German pun on the *Rote Kapelle*, the famous Soviet spy ring known as the Red Orchestra. Subsequent developments in the Vatican revealed that there was more than irony involved in the similarity of names:

> By the first fortnight of October 1939, Müller was able to report to Canaris and [his deputy] Oster that the Pope had consented to serve the *Schwarze Kapelle* as intermediary with the British government in the person of Sir D'Arcy Osborne, the British ambassador at the Holy See. His Holiness, Müller reported, had accepted with the words: 'The German Opposition must be heard in Britain,' and he [the Pope] would be its voice. The objective of the Pope's intercession would be a peace based upon the proposition that Britain and France would not attempt to take advantage of the disturbance that would follow the deposition of Hitler to invade and occupy Germany.[83]

Pius XII wanted to tread a careful path. If he succeeded, Hitler would be overthrown and the West would join in a common war against Stalin. If he failed, Hitler would wreak vengeance on the Catholic Church. For security reasons, Pius XII stated that he would not meet with Müller directly, but would receive his communications through a Jesuit priest, Father Leiber, a Vatican Archivist, whom the Pope trusted absolutely. Leiber would pass Müller's messages to the Pope, who would pass them on to the British Ambassador personally, because it would be perfectly normal for the Pope to meet him regularly. On 27 October Müller was summoned to meet Father Leiber at the Jesuit Gregorian University. The Foreign Office had given Osborne permission to conduct armistice negotiations with Canaris's *Schwarze Kapelle*.[84]

Word of the Vatican negotiations quickly reached Heydrich of SS intelligence. The source of the original leak has never been determined, but in hindsight it may have been a Soviet agent who wished to sabotage peace talks with the West.[85] In any event, it was Heydrich who gave the code name Red Orchestra to the Soviet file and Black Orchestra to the Vatican file.[86] Perhaps he suspected (correctly) that a common bond existed. But in 1939 the SS were unaware that the *Kapellmeisters*, or orchestra leaders for the *Schwarze Kapelle* were Canaris and Jahnke, the chiefs of the rival German intelligence agencies.

As the SS surveillance around the Black Orchestra tightened, Canaris had to move quickly to convince Hitler that Müller was not a traitor, but the Abwehr's best double agent inside the Vatican. Much to Heydrich's chagrin, Hitler believed the story, and the SS had to put the Black Orchestra file on hold.[87] At first Canaris believed that a Fascist Benedictine monk named Keller had betrayed the Black Orchestra negotiations, but it seems unlikely for soon another more dangerous leak appeared.

A Swiss newspaper published a report that 'high officers of the German general staff' were involved in a plot against Hitler.[88] That information could not have come from a lowly Benedictine monk. In fact, only a handful of people inside the *Schwarze Kapelle* knew of the difficulty Canaris was having recruiting allies from the skittish General Staff. Someone on the inside had leaked the story.

The Swiss newspaper leak threw the plotters into uproar and made the General Staff even more nervous. One historian records that

> someone in the German group asked what guarantees could be got that if the Germans overthrew Hitler the western allies would not force a Carthaginian peace like Versailles upon Germany. From the widow of one of the conspirators, von Dohnanyi, we have evidence that her husband suggested a secret guarantee of the proposed conditions of peace by the Pope. The guarantee was to be got through Müller.
>
> Early in November 1939, Müller came again to Monsignor Kaas, who put him in touch with Father Leiber the Pope's secretary. Not without doubts whether he was doing what was right, Father Leiber put the plan personally to the Pope . . . The Pope was being invited to engage in a conspiracy to overthrow a tyrant, and incidentally to put himself and his aides into those dire risks which attend conspirators . . . On 6 November 1939 Father Leiber assured Josef Müller that the Pope was ready to do 'all he can' for peace.[89]

Unfortunately, the SS was by then increasing its efforts to find out what the Vatican was doing. They had already sent a phony 'peace offer' to British intelligence. Menzies warned his agents that the terms of the new offer did not correspond to the other Vatican messages, but it was too late. The two British agents who had gone to Venlo to negotiate were kidnapped by Schellenberg and taken back to Germany.[90]

The Foreign Office suspected further treachery and broke off all peace negotiations, although Menzies tried to keep the lines to Canaris open:

> The Vatican talks hung fire for over a month, and were only resumed when the Pope vouched for the bona fides and honesty of Müller. With that assurance, made personally by Pius XII in a communication to Lord Halifax, the conversation reopened with a meeting between the Pope and Sir D'Arcy Osborne, which took place – according to the British Cabinet Minutes – at the Vatican on January 12, 1940.[91]

The peace talks dragged on through February, March and April of 1940 with both the Pope and the British getting ever more impatient with the delays and increasingly dubious about the Black Orchestra's chances of success. According to several eye witnesses, explicit terms for an Anglo-German peace treaty had actually been concluded, but Canaris found that no one in the Germany Army was willing to overthrow Hitler. On 3 April 1940 the Pope told Osborne that he feared their efforts had come to an end.[92]

In an act of desperation, Canaris sent Müller back to the Vatican in May to warn the Pope about Hitler's plans for a sneak attack on Belgium and the Netherlands. Not only were the warnings disbelieved by the Allies, but Belgian telegrams incriminating the Vatican were intercepted by the Nazis *before the invasion was launched*. Hitler was furious at the security leak, and ordered the SS to investigate. This time Canaris barely managed to talk his way out. His cover-up succeeded only with the help of some 'elfin mischief' in the form of an alibi from the good Jesuit Father Leiber, but the Müller link to the *Schwarze Kapelle* had to be closed down.[93]

Despite the *débâcle*, the *Schwarze Kapelle* decided to put forth new peace proposals 'through other secret channels'.[94]

It did not take the SS long to find out what they were. There is only a hint in the American files of Turkul's pre-war service to the Vatican; a brief notation that he was supplied with false passports by the Abwehr and money from the Japanese to send 'apostles' into the Soviet Union for propaganda. This may have been Turkul's first espionage work for the Jesuits who, as mentioned in Chapter One, had been trying with limited success to infiltrate their own agents into Soviet territory. It is perhaps only a coincidence that Turkul was running his own early Japanese Ratline into the Soviet Union for the Abwehr at the same time as the Jesuits. Even if Turkul had no direct Jesuit connection in 1938, his Abwehr boss certainly did.

It was probably Canaris himself who asked Turkul in 1938 to do for the Black Orchestra what he was already doing for the Japanese; spy on both the Nazis and the Soviets. Admiral Canaris, the 'Jesuitical Russophobe' had a direct liaison with Father Leiber of the Jesuits, the Pope's confidant. According to American intelligence, Turkul suddenly left Paris and moved to Berlin to form 'his own White Russian Army which succeeded in smuggling people in and out of Russia'.[95] Turkul later claimed that it was the Hitler–Stalin Pact that drove him to quit Berlin, but it is possible he had already moved to Rome at the end of 1938.[96]

On the other hand, the move to Rome may have been ordered by the Black Orchestra after Dr Müller was 'anonymously' exposed. Turkul pretended to share Canaris's belief that any pact with Stalin was a betrayal of the White Russian cause. Turkul certainly had a plausible motive for wanting to overthrow Hitler and had the right connections to the Black Orchestra through Jahnke. But after Müller was exposed, the Black Orchestra had to shift to a more secure method of communication. It must have seemed logical to use Turkul's NTS network as back up couriers to the Vatican and the British.

NTS had longstanding relations with British intelligence. Several of Turkul's close associates were Uniate and Orthodox clergymen who were well known to the Jesuits. Indeed, the Jesuits had built an entire college in Rome to train Uniate seminarians.[97] Moreover, Turkul had something invaluable to offer the Jesuits who were worried about security. What could be more secure than diplomatic immunity? The Japanese Secret Service was already funding Turkul's NTS network. By giving NTS couriers diplomatic passports from Japanese-controlled Manchuria, they could travel freely across Europe without embarrassing questions from the Germans, or so they thought. There is evidence that the Jesuits fell for it completely.

In the spring and summer of 1940, the SS began receiving tips about a Japanese spy ring with connections to the Vatican. Two envoys with Japanese-controlled diplomatic credentials were intercepted carrying sensitive documents on the German war effort. The envoys were not orientals at all. One was a White Russian who belonged to the Melnyk faction of the Ukrainian nationalists and the other was a Slav whose last name was given by Schellenberg simply as K.[98]

K was found to be carrying detailed high level information on German military strength and future plans. Under interrogation, K admitted that the plans were to be taken to Rome where 'the material was transmitted by the Japanese Embassy to a trusted agent of the General of the Jesuit Order, Ledochovski'. K could not tell the SS how the Japanese–Jesuit collaboration began, but it appeared to have been a systematic arrangement.[99] According to Owen Chadwick:

> The Jesuit general Ledochowski was a Pole, deeply pro-British, passionately anti-Nazi, a strong and courageous man. In August 1939 the Italian ambassador at the Vatican, Pignatti, told his government that under Ledochowski the whole Jesuit order was 'drawn up, with extreme decision' against Nazi Germany.[100]

Through K, the SS had stumbled across the alternative route for the Vatican's communications with Jahnke and the *Schwarze Kapelle*. Cave Brown believes that K was a man named Kunzcewincz.[101] However, he may have been another member of Turkul's net, Dr Tuan Kowalewsky, a Polish-Ukrainian separatist who obtained his information from another Japanese spy, Omida, who lived in Sofia. Turkul's intelligence chief, the German Jew Klatt/Kauder/Max also lived in Sofia. He too had a Japanese connection:

> The spy's actual source was neither the Soviet Legation in Sofia nor some mysterious informants on the Red Army General Staff, but solely the obscure correspondent of a Tokyo newspaper, Isono Kiyosho by name, who had his headquarters in the Rumanian capital. From the correspondent the lines led directly to the residence of Dr Richard Sorge, the Soviet's own master spy.[102]

In fact, everywhere the SS investigators turned, Japanese spies with connections to Turkul's network kept turning up. Schellenberg leaves enough references in his memoirs to clearly connect Turkul's Japanese network to the Vatican in the summer of 1940. According to Schellenberg, when the SS checked further they found that the Vatican information was being passed to British intelligence through a Japanese journalist in Stockholm. Turkul's organisation did have a Japanese contact in Stockholm, a journalist named Enomoto who knew Turkul personally.[103]

From Stockholm to Switzerland to the Vatican, all the signs led back to Turkul's work for Canaris and the Jahnkebureau. Yet the SS did nothing to smash the Black Orchestra. There were rumours that Canaris had evidence of Heydrich's homosexuality and Jewish antecedents locked in a safety deposit box in Switzerland, with instructions to send the documents to the *New York Times* if he was ever arrested. Schellenberg believed that Canaris had a similar file on Himmler.[104]

The actual reason for SS inaction in 1940–41 may be more mundane. The Jahnke–Turkul channel was the only one capable of providing reliable intelligence on both Japanese and Soviet intentions at a critical period in German history: it was the time that Hitler was considering war against the Soviet Union. In April 1941 Tokyo and Moscow had signed a neutrality pact. But Japan had also signed a treaty with the Third Reich. If Hitler attacked Stalin, which pact would the Japanese honour?[105]

Like Leopold Trepper's Red Orchestra network in Western Europe, both the Turkul and Sorge networks were fully informed of Hitler's war plans against the Soviet Union, but Stalin refused to believe his own spies. When Operation Barbarossa was launched in June 1941, it came as a complete surprise. Stalin waited with bated breath to see if the Japanese, like Hitler, would betray their pact and launch an attack from the east. In the autumn of 1941, with winter approaching, even Hitler had become anxious about Japanese intentions. This was the moment the GRU had been waiting for. The Third Reich was in a panic for information in the Orient: they could turn to only one reliable source.

The Gestapo grumbled, Heydrich fumed, but in 1941, Schellenberg swallowed his suspicions and asked Jahnke to use his excellent channels, the mysterious team of the Czarist officer and the German Jew, to carry a message to the Japanese Secret Service. By October 1941, the Germans had received their response: the Japanese would not attack the Soviet Union, but they would support the Axis war effort by attacking the Americans at Pearl Harbor.[106]

If Hitler was less than thrilled by the Japanese response, the Soviets were ecstatic. They frantically stripped their Mongolian divisions from the Soviet eastern borders and shipped them west to Moscow.[107] On 2 December 1941 a German reconnaissance unit reported that they could see the gleaming towers of the Kremlin in their binoculars. Four days later the Soviets threw their newly arrived divisions against the Nazis. Hitler did not know it, but the tide of war was turning against him for ever. The Turkul network was a cancer from which the Third Reich would never recover. Canaris and Jahnke were using the Black Orchestra channels to inform the Vatican (and Turkul) in advance of all of Hitler's moves.[108] As US intelligence discovered too late, the Vatican's Black Orchestra and Moscow's Red Orchestra were one and the same:

> . . . the Schwarze Kapelle was formerly comprised of high ranking Wehrmacht officers and had at one time been directed by Admiral Canaris. [Source] stated that the Schwarze Kapelle had been activated between the years 1930 and 1934, at which time the Rote Kapelle, an organization comprised mainly of MVD [Communist intelligence] members and sympathizers, was active as a resistance organization. Initially the two organizations were coordinated to form a united front, however, the Schwarze Kapelle activities subsided to the extent that those individuals who remained active looked to the Rote Kapelle for guidance.[109]

Even after the Red Orchestra's Japanese connection, Richard Sorge, was exposed as a Soviet agent by the Japanese and Jahnke was exposed as a British agent by the SS, Turkul continued to be trusted by the Germans because of his service to the Black Orchestra. Even in 1942, when Heydrich denounced Canaris's Abwehr for political unreliability, Turkul and his Jewish spy chief survived, but under new masters. Since the Third Reich had virtually no other source for Soviet war plans, Turkul's organisation was ordered to share its precious MAX reports on Soviet troop movements with other German agencies. Canaris ordered the transfer of Turkul's organisation to General Gehlen of the Fremde Heere Ost (FHO – Foreign Armies East), the intelligence headquarters of the German Wehrmacht on the Eastern front.

Klatt's MAX material was so invaluable to the German High command that in the summer of 1942 the Abwehr organisation physically moved to Gehlen's headquarters in Vinnitsa in the Ukraine. On paper, Klatt still reported to the Abwehr, but in practice the MAX reports on the Soviet order of battle were flowing directly to Gehlen's headquarters.[110] Turkul's intelligence production was important enough to force a *de facto* merger between two rival branches of German intelligence. Heinz Höhne, the noted German historian, aptly described the network's value to the Third Reich:

> The most sensational information on the Red Army, however, came from a mysterious figure . . . a Jewish trader named Klatt, whose code-name was 'Max'. His information was so accurate that the sceptics in FHO often wondered whether Max was not a double agent feeding fake Russian material back to the Germans. No one in FHO knew the truth, which was that, via Isono Kiyosho, a journalist living in Sofia, Max had tapped the Japanese Secret Service, which was better informed than any other about the Soviet Union.[111]

Gehlen needed Klatt's help, but apparently did not realise that while he was reading Klatt's information on the Soviets, Klatt was probably reading every file he could in Gehlen's intelligence headquarters.[112] It probably seemed necessary for Klatt to be briefed on German battle plans so that he would know where Gehlen needed the most information. In any event a great deal of gossip can be picked up inside any intelligence office. One thing is certain: whatever Klatt learned from Gehlen he was passing on to the Kremlin.[113]

American intelligence analysts tried for years to discover what Turkul was doing in Rome during the war, but were sent on a wild goose chase by Turkul's British employers and his fellow NTS conspirators. The Americans were led to believe that Turkul's Roman activities were insignificant, that he was out of the German intelligence loop completely, a '*quantité negligible*'. One German officer remembered differently. He recalled that during the week that Klatt's assistant, Lang, went to visit Turkul in Rome, the MAX reports from the Soviet Union stopped completely. But when Lang came back from his Roman holiday with Turkul, he brought the backlog of MAX reports for the entire week.[114]

But apart from this single visit, how was Turkul able to smuggle the voluminous MAX information in and out of Rome? He knew that the Japanese–Vatican courier system was exposed, that the

Nazis had previously intercepted and decoded the Vatican's warning of the Belgian invasion and that Klatt was under near constant surveillance by the Gestapo. Schellenberg let the cat out of the bag when he casually admitted that the SS had a German agent in Rome who was 'closely connected to the Vatican'. The agent refused to use couriers, wireless, or travel to Germany, but he had very important information about the Soviet Union. Schellenberg solved the communication problem by giving the Roman source a new secret invention, the burst transmitter. 'The rapidity of the transmission made it impossible for any direction-finder to establish the location of the transmitter.'[115]

The recently declassified intelligence files show that Klatt commanded an extensive radio network across the continent, but that his post-war American interrogators never discovered the central burst transmitter in the Vatican (which Schellenberg revealed only much later). Schellenberg was not the only one to hire the Jahnke–Turkul network. Far from being an insignificant figure in Rome, Turkul was 'allegedly on excellent terms with Mussolini who often asked for [Turkul's] opinions on Russian matters. He was supposedly a frequent guest of Mussolini's; however some people state that Mussolini asked Germany to suppress [Turkul] when he left Italy.'[116]

Mussolini had good reason to be angry. Just as Turkul had sold the phony MAX reports to the Germans, he had convinced the Italians to purchase an equally false MORITZ network that fed Mussolini reams of Soviet disinformation. With the help of his undetectable SS transmitter, Turkul was perfectly placed in Rome to monitor the Axis war effort and report to his Soviet masters. After all, in the summer of 1942, his agents were operating right inside the German intelligence headquarters for the Eastern front.[117]

Although it is beyond the scope of this book, there is reason to believe that Turkul was the mysterious 'Source Werthe' who supplied the Soviet Lucy ring in Switzerland with daily German battle plans long after other members of the Red Orchestra had been captured. The Black Orchestra provided perfect cover for Soviet Military Intelligence: no matter how much evidence the Gestapo gathered against Turkul and Klatt, the heavyweight team of Jahnke and Canaris would intervene to protect them.

Even the Japanese Secret Service provided unwitting assistance as they continued the Jahnke connection in an effort to mediate peace between Stalin and Hitler. As Schellenberg himself admits, Jahnke was a critical player in these efforts. After Sorge's capture in 1942, Turkul had the only secret channel open to Japan.[118]

As Turkul's network had access to German military intelligence on a daily basis, and in view of the widely acknowledged admission that the MAX information shaped much of the German war plans on the Eastern front, the entire history of the Red Orchestra (and much of World War II) may have to be rewritten. The Turkul files have confirmed that the Supreme Command of the German Army received only that information which was approved by the Soviets. Turkul's network may have been the decisive factor behind many Soviet victories during World War II.[119]

Two decades later, American intelligence still had no idea how the MAX system worked, although they knew it was somehow run by the Soviets. The missing link for the American interrogators was the Vatican–Japanese connection. We can reconstruct the system by speculating on how the pieces which are now known to exist fitted together in the Soviet scheme. From Moscow, the Soviet disinformation went to their net in Japan, which couriered it to the Vatican (probably by diplomatic pouch after the K incident). After Sorge was arrested, the MAX reports were probably shipped through one of Turkul's Japanese journalists directly to Rome through a Vatican pouch.

From Rome they probably went by burst message to one of Klatt's listening posts, and then via a secure wire link to Gehlen's headquarters. Klatt's liaison to Gehlen copied down the German battle response and sent it back down the channel to the Soviets, who always had the last move on the chessboard. Thanks to Schellenberg's unwitting technical assistance with the burst transmitter, couriers were no longer needed. The MAX system became so highly automated (and untraceable) that by 1943, Turkul could step out of the loop entirely.[120]

Only a month after the Klatt operation was transferred to Gehlen's headquarters in the Ukraine, Turkul received an alarming message. The Germans were proposing to reverse Hitler's brutal anti-Slavic policies and recruit Ukrainian, Byelorussian and Russian soldiers to fight for the Third Reich. If the plan were ever approved, millions of Central and Eastern Europeans might volunteer to fight the Soviet Army. The Ukrainians alone could provide enough manpower to turn the tide for the Nazis.[121]

As soon as the burst transmitter replaced the MAX courier system, Turkul's new assignment for the Soviets was clear:

1. Monitor anti-Communist activities through his White Russian network
2. Hamstring the German anti-Communist effort by setting the factions against each other
3. Keep the Soviets informed of all new developments[122]

There were new developments indeed. In 1942 some Vatican officials were rumoured to support the new German policy of using Slavic volunteers against the Communists. There was talk of greater religious freedom and an end to racial persecution of the Slavs. There were even reports that high level negotiations with the Nazis over the Church's position in the Ukraine were already underway.

If the Pope endorsed a German crusade, the Catholics of Central Europe might join with the White Russians and Soviet prisoners of war in the common cause of liberation. The Red Army would be overwhelmed. At all costs, any Vatican initiative in the Ukraine must be stopped before it ever got off the ground. In 1942 Soviet military intelligence turned its attention to Rome. Turkul's assault on the Vatican had begun in earnest. What the Pope did not know was that many Ukrainian priests were already working for Turkul's 'anti-Soviet' network.

8

The Catholic Army of the Ukraine

The lights burned late in the Pope's private quarters in September 1942. It was not a time for peaceful rest. The Nazis wanted Pius XII to make a deal: endorse the Third Reich or face the destruction of the Catholic Church. Throughout the summer, the pressure on the Pope had increased. Despite intervention by his old German friend, Franz von Papen, the Nazis kept turning the screws tighter and tighter. Harassment of Catholics in Europe increased.[1]

The Ukrainian Catholics had been among the hardest hit. On 26 August 1942 the Pope had written to his old friend, Metropolitan Szepticky, Archbishop of the Uniate Catholic See of Lvov in the Polish province of Galicia.[2] It was a hard letter to write. The Uniate Catholics had endured so much. They were a religious hybrid, the result of being the last outpost of the old Austro-Hungarian empire. Ukrainian in nationality, Orthodox in Slavic liturgy, but obedient to the Pope of Rome, Archbishop Szepticky and his stubborn flock had endured hatred and persecution at the hands of Czarist Russia, the Poles and then the Bolsheviks.[3]

Now it was Szepticky's golden jubilee and the Nazis had arrived. The fiftieth anniversary of a priest's ordination is usually cause for special rejoicing. But on this occasion, Pius XII could only commiserate with the old Archbishop, now approaching his eightieth birthday. Szepticky's fellow priests and pastors were suffering terribly at the hands of the Germans. In his letter the Pope sympathised with their plight.[4]

The reply was even more disturbing. Archbishop Szepticky reminded the Pope that three years earlier, he had asked the Pope's permission to commit suicide as a protest against the Communist takeover of Galicia. Stalin had persecuted the Uniate Catholics even more savagely than the previous Polish occupation. Death would have ended the old Archbishop's agony, but on that occasion the Pope had been firm and refused Szepticky leave to die.[5]

However, Szepticky's 1942 letter was not a further request to commit suicide: 'The last three years have persuaded me that I am not worthy of this death which would have had less meaning before God than a prayer spoken by a child.' Now he wrote of the horrors of the new masters of the Ukraine, the Nazis. 'Liberated by the German army from the Bolshevik Yoke, we originally felt a certain relief, which however lasted no more than one or two months.'[6]

Indeed, Szepticky himself had blessed the Nazi 'liberators', and welcomed the 'independent' government of the Ukraine proclaimed by Jaroslav Stetsko of the OUN. The Organisation of Ukrainian Nationalists was a Fascist revolutionary sect under the leadership of Stephen Bandera and his deputy, Jaroslav Stetsko. They had previously served German intelligence in organising pogroms in the East. The fanatical Fascists of the OUN had long awaited the day when Hitler would break his pact with Stalin and place them in power in the Ukraine.[7]

On the heels of the invading German Army in 1941, the OUN returned to Galicia. The biographer of a young Jewish eyewitness named Simon Wiesenthal recounted what they did next:

> They celebrated their return to Lwow by starting a pogrom that lasted three days and three nights. When the massacre was over, 6,000 Jews had been killed . . . The Jews were ordered to form a long row, face the wall and cross their arms behind their necks. A Ukrainian began to shoot . . . The shots and shouts of the dying men were getting closer to Wiesenthal. He remembers that he stood looking at the grey wall without really seeing it. Suddenly he heard the sound of church bells, and a Ukrainian voice shouted 'Enough! Evening mass!'[8]

Although devout in their loyalty to Church and Reich, the Ukrainian collaborators were treated with disdain by the Germans. At that time, the Nazis thought they had no use for an OUN puppet government. Within a month, Stetsko and the other OUN leaders were thrown out or imprisoned under house arrest in Germany.[9] The true face of the Nazi administration was revealed to Archbishop Szepticky. 'Little by little, the government has instituted a truly unbelievable regime of terror and corruption . . . Today, the whole country feels that the German regime is if anything worse, almost diabolically worse, than the Bolshevists.'[10]

It was not only the 200,000 Jews who had already been killed who troubled the Archbishop; 'hundreds of thousands of Christians' were being systematically slaughtered by the Nazis and their local Ukrainian henchmen. The survival of the Ukrainian Catholic

Church was threatened: Archbishop Szepticky was writing to tell the Pope that soon the clergy in the Ukraine would be extinct.[11]

Of course that need never happen if the Pope would consider the Nazis' alternative: he could help them resolve a difficult problem. Stalin had been turning people against the Nazis by reviving the Orthodox Church as a potent propaganda force against the Nazi occupation. What the Nazis needed was a religious stooge of their own: they wanted Archbishop Szepticky to collaborate. Everyone in the Ukraine, even the Orthodox clergy, loved the saintly old leader of the Uniate Catholics. The Nazis wanted to portray themselves as 'protectors of religion' by having Szepticky unite all the Ukrainian Christians into one pro-Nazi, anti-Communist Church.[12]

A united Eastern Church had been the Vatican's dream since the great Orthodox schism tore Christianity apart in 1024 AD. The hybrid Uniate Church was a compromise devised in the sixteenth century by the Jesuits and encouraged by the Habsburg dynasty of Austria as a political counterweight to Orthodox Russia. In 1942 the Nazis were offering the Pope a solution to the Ukrainian question. The Pope knew it was a cruel and cynical propaganda manoeuvre, but the Nazis were eagerly awaiting his answer. Would Pope Pius XII permit Archbishop Szepticky to fulfill the Church's ancient dream to unite the Orthodox and Uniate Sees of the Ukraine?[13]

In the darkness of those autumn nights, the Pope weighed his moral and political alternatives. If he accepted the Nazi offer in the Ukraine, there would be more demands, more requests, more deals. Soon the Vatican would be emasculated like the German Protestant Church. On the other hand, there were other considerations. Pius XII reread Szepticky's heartrending letter and considered his options.

Word of the Pope's secret decision reached American-born Bishop Ivan (John) Bučko, one of the Vatican's experts for Ukrainian issues. Bučko was a porcine figure with a receding hairline and close-set eyes that peered out from behind round-rimmed glasses. Bishop Bučko was also a fanatical Ukrainian nationalist. He was one of the first to find out that the Pope was planning to walk a delicate and dangerous tightrope between public collaboration and token resistance. The first step was to accept the Nazi offer to open negotiations in the Ukraine. An accommodation might be reached, the Bishop thought, if the discussions were approached carefully. Bučko smiled. His dream of an independent Ukraine might yet come true.

For Turkul's masters in the Soviet GRU, Ukrainian unity was a nightmare. The Soviets had encouraged division and splinter groups among the Ukrainian nationalists. It was no coincidence that Turkul's NTS agents in the Melnyk faction had denounced the Bandera group to the Gestapo. Before Admiral Canaris knew what had happened, his hand-picked Ukrainians were ousted, and Melnyk loyalists were running auxiliary police units for the SS. Even some of Bandera's followers, like Mykola Lebed and Father Ivan Grynioch, the Catholic Chaplain of the murderous Nachtigall Battalion, had deserted Bandera for the SS.[14]

Those Ukrainians who survived the purge of Bandera's followers served Soviet interests admirably by instituting a reign of terror that drove more and more of their country men into the hands of the Red Partisans. The last thing the GRU wanted was for the Vatican to negotiate peace among the Ukrainian religious factions and work with the Germans for a united Ukraine.

For the US War Department, the vision of a Nazi–Vatican accord was not a dream but a nightmare. At the end of September 1942, word of the impending deal exploded in the pro-Axis press in Catholic Spain and then in Italy. At first, no one believed the rumours of negotiations. Only a few months earlier, the Nazis had given orders that officials in the occupied Eastern countries were not even to meet with Vatican representatives.[15] But by the beginning of October 1942, the press was reporting an enormous change in Church–Reich relations. The teletype clattered out the news that the Vatican was starting to negotiate with Nazi Germany:

> Lisbon – Catholic circles in Italy confirm the report that Pius XII has sent a mission, headed by Cardinal Lavitrano, Archbishop of Palermo, to investigate the ecclesiastical situation in Nazi-occupied Russia. Catholic papers outside Rome have stated that this mission was sent at the invitation of the German government with the aim of studying the possible unification of the Roman Catholic Church and the Orthodox Church.[16]

US intelligence knew that this hinted at a propaganda coup for the Nazis, and tried to downplay its significance in a series of background briefings for the press, claiming that the Germans were only trying 'to play on the religious sentiments of the

Ukrainian people in restoring to the cult several churches which had been closed under the Soviet regime'.[17] But if that were so, why would the Pope send a Prince of the Church, a Cardinal, to discuss the Ukraine? It was evident that a change of tactics could be under way.

US intelligence feared that the Nazis might succeed with these new tactics, especially 'in the Ruthenian diocese of Lwow (Lemberg, Poland) of which metropolitan Mgr Szeptycki is the head . . . Mgr believed this means a real opportunity for the revival of faith and when overtures were made by Orthodox Bishops for the union of Christian churches, he has believed that a cherished project might come to execution . . . The Nazi authorities expressed their desires that Mgr Szeptycki should be appointed as metropolitan of Kiev, capital of Ukraine.'[18]

The Allies knew that Hitler did not share the Catholic Church's ambitions in the Ukraine. The War Department speculated that the Nazis had something else in mind than 'Christan Charity' for Archbishop Szepticky. The War Department Intelligence Division was worried that 'the Nazis wanted to use the influence of the extremely popular prelate to further political plans of a Ukrainian puppet state in which a nationalized church would cultivate hate against Russia'.[19]

British intelligence also sensed the explosive potential of a Catholic–Nazi alliance in the Ukraine. A report on the Uniate issue was prepared at Oxford University for the British Foreign Office:

> Mgr Szepticky's early policies were Ukrainophil; he supported the idea, which the Austrian Government encouraged for anti-Russian political reasons, of an independent Ukraine. It would appear that he still pursues this idea (which Germany has revived since her attack on Russia), if a recent report is true that he has issued an appeal to the Ukrainian Orthodox clergy . . . to unite with the Ruthenians . . . for the sake of national unity . . . The prestige of this Bishop, who is the Grand Old Man of this region, and is probably revered by Orthodox as well as his own flock, should be remembered in all propaganda to this part of the world . . . The policy of the Vatican in regard to this region is hard to predict.[20]

Suddenly it appeared to the Allies as if the Vatican's policy was beginning to tilt towards the Nazis. A confidential American report gave the War Department Intelligence Division reason to expect the worst:

> A private information (sic) states that the most Rev. John Bučko who was up to the end of 1941 Auxiliary Bishop . . . of the Ukrainian Greek Catholic dioceses in the United States, has accompanied the mission of Cardinal Lavitrano to the Ukraine . . . Bishop Bučko . . . is considered a friend of Msgr Szeptycki who was in this country repeatedly between 1916 and 1924 and it is not impossible that [Bučko] went to Rome with the intention of advocating the creation of an Ukraine (sic) ecclesiastical province under the leadership of Msgr Szeptycki.[21]

The War Department's confidential informant was probably the Most Reverend Constantine Bohachevsky, who had been Bishop Bučko's immediate superior when he was living in Pittsburgh. As the War Department noted: 'It is said that Mgr Bučko had in his last years of office dissented with Bishop Bohachevsky in stressing that the Catholic Ukrainians living around Pittsburgh had to be favored in their anti-Russian national sentiments.'[22]

News of Bishop Bučko's anti-Russian sentiments must have greatly disturbed the War Department, which was having problems enough with its temperamental Soviet ally. For Pius XII to select Bučko to be part of the Lavitrano Mission was a possible indication that the Vatican was considering a shift towards the Nazis. Equally alarming, official Vatican channels were providing no advance information on the Lavitrano Mission.[23]

Turkul knew because he had inside sources who were well informed about the negotiations. Metropolitan Anastasius of Yugoslavia was head of the Synodal or Karlowac Church, representing the right wing of Russian Orthodoxy which was ardently pro-German. The head of his German diocese was Metropolitan Seraphim of Berlin who called Hitler 'the great Leader of the German people who has raised the sword against the foes of the Lord'.[24] According to American intelligence files, the Orthodox cleric Anastasius was Turkul's direct collaborator in his anti-Communist centre. Metropolitan Seraphim is identified in British files as another member of the Turkul network.[26]

Their agent in the Ukraine was fully prepared to resist the Vatican's offer of unification. Instead of joining the Catholic Uniates:

> A splinter group of the [Autonomous] Russian clergy, under Bishop Panteleimon of the ancient Lavra monastery at Kiev, was prepared to place itself under the émigré church of Metropolitan Seraphim in Berlin.[27]

The number of clerics who belonged to Turkul's network is amazing, among them Archbishop Vitalie in the United States, Father George Leonidov Romanov, a 'Greek Orthodox' (possibly Uniate) priest who worked on the MAX network, and a number of minor luminaries, including Father Alexei Ionov and the Russian Priests Grabbe and Kisiliew, who later worked for Turkul in Munich.[28]

With so many potential sources of agitation, it would not have taken much effort for Turkul to inflame the existing tensions among the various Orthodox sects in the Ukraine, although he may have had some help. At least one of the Orthodox leaders, Archbishop Alexis Gromadskii, has been accused of being an NKVD agent.[29] The Orthodox could not agree to unite among themselves, let alone with Szepticky's Uniates:

> Szepticky made a series of attempts to bring about an alliance between the Uniates and the Autocephalous adherents, the two nationalist churches. However, Ohienko, who conducted the negotiations for the UAPTs, [Orthodox group] refused unification under the authority of the Pope.[30]

Despite Bishop Bučko's strident anti-Russian sentiments, Cardinal Lavitrano had apparently brought a sharp message from the Pope which disappointed Nazi expectations. When word got back to America, the War Department's Intelligence Division breathed a sigh of relief and prepared its own press report:

> Szeptycki has now declared officially that as an old and ailing man of 80 years, he cannot accept the See of Kiev ... To put it bluntly Msgr Szeptycki says that a religious union of Churches cannot be made under the political domination of the Nazis and that he does not desire to be their tool in accepting to be metropolitan of the Ukraine ... the investigations of Cardinal Lavitrano, confirm the fact that the Vatican will not accept to make any new division of dioceses as long as the Germans are occupying eastern Europe.[31]

However, within a few weeks, US intelligence dropped its fulsome praise of the Vatican's steadfastness. It was beginning to appear that Bishop Bučko's anti-Russian outlook may have won at least a partial victory. By the end of October 1942, US intelligence recognised that the Nazis' alternating promises of religious tolerance and threats of greater persecution, had achieved the desired result: 'the Nazis have avoided open protests from the Vatican in the last few months.'[32]

Evidence was trickling in that the Lavitrano Mission had struck a deal after all. On the eve of the Final Solution of the Jewish question, the Lavitrano Mission had agreed to compromise with the Nazis. In return for easing religious persecution in the East, the Vatican would become neutral in favour of the Germans. For the rest of the war, the Pope never discussed Nazi atrocities against the Russians, nor was the word 'Jew' ever mentioned in any Papal pronouncement.[33]

The terms of the Pope's bargain in Eastern Europe quickly became apparent to the American War Department, which noted that although 'the Vatican does not . . . allow any Bishops in those countries to make open collaborationist statements, it [does] not favor all too outspoken protests. A certain modus vivendi seems to have been established in this sense as the result of the Commission of Cardinal Lavitrano.'[34]

In a confidential comment, American intelligence cited as proof the fact that the Pope permitted Dr Werhun of Berlin to remain the official Apostolic Administrator for the Ukraine. For the rest of the war, while the local Jews were being exterminated, the Vatican's chief delegate for Ukrainian affairs was conveniently absent in Berlin. The War Department described Dr Werhun as 'just the man who will not go in for outspoken protests, and will try to make the best of an evil situation'.[35] Amid such silences, Auschwitz was built.

Soviet intelligence had other things to worry about: the subsequent German response to the Lavitrano mission was a direct threat to the Red Army. Within a year, the SS had reversed its anti-Slavic policy toward the Ukrainians and allowed them to form their own SS Division, the 'Galician'. After heavy losses on the Eastern front, the Germans were pleased that 40,000 young Ukrainians volunteered for SS service. Only half that number, the cream of the crop were accepted, usually from among those Ukrainians who had already proved their total devotion to the Nazis by service in the brutal auxiliary police battalions that had massacred Jews, Poles and even fellow Ukrainians.[36]

By the beginning of 1943, nearly all of the 800,000 Ukrainian Jews had been murdered and their police executioners needed new assignments. There were so many ex-police volunteers that the Ukrainian unit was originally named the 'Galician Police Division' before it was formally accepted by the SS. For the rest of his life, Simon Wiesenthal had a special hatred for Gustav Otto Wächter, the Nazi Governor of Galicia, who had directed the Jewish massacre and then rewarded his Ukrainian henchmen with the 'honour' of becoming SS volunteers.[37]

Unlike most senior German officials, Wächter recognised that a loyal Ukrainian SS force was a significant asset to the Nazis. The Soviet partisan underground was seriously threatening the German supply lines. As the war turned against them, Wächter recognised that it was essential to win the hearts and minds of the civilian population who were assisting the partisans. The centrepiece of Wächter's strategy was the five million Catholic Uniates, of which three and a half million were concentrated in the Galician region.[38]

Their religious leader, Archbishop Szepticky, pointed the way by blessing the Galician SS Division. Finally, the Ukraine had its own fighting force to smash the Soviet partisans. The Galician SS, complete with Uniate chaplains, would soon be a Catholic army in a crusade against the 'Godless Bolsheviks'.[39] Bishop Bučko must have been especially pleased that the 'anti-Russian nationalism' of his people had been preserved. The seeds of co-operation sown by the Lavitrano Mission were beginning to bear fruit.

The Uniate victory in the Ukraine was only the first step in the struggle to contain the hated Communists. Only three months after the Lavitrano Mission had concluded its work, the Vatican floated a story in the *New York Herald Tribune* and the *Washington Post* about Pius XII's post-war hopes for Europe. The Pope was said to be in favour of an anti-Communist Central European Confederation of Catholic states, 'which would stretch from the Baltic to the Black Seas'. Pius XI's dreams of a Catholic Intermarium were to be brought to fruition by Pius XII.[40]

Such a Catholic anti-communist bloc had also been the dream of the Pope's old friend, Archbishop Szepticky, who 'was in his younger days a personal friend of the Emperor Francis Joseph', last great ruler of the Austro-Hungarian Empire.[41] However, US intelligence did not view the Pope's post-war plans so favourably.

Most of the War Department's views on this sensitive topic are still censored, but their anger about the Pope's political attitude is quite clear from the report's conclusions:

> ... leading Catholics all over the world do not hold the view that it is in the interest of Christianity and the Church to have 'Catholic' States, but stress freedom for the Church everywhere, whether Catholics are in a majority in a particular country or not. There is definite tendency to avoid

> the repetition of the opposition between 'Catholic' and 'Protestant' States which did so much harm in the past. They can hardly favor the idea of a 'Catholic Slav Federation'.[42]

The Soviets certainly did not favour the idea and launched a religious propaganda exercise of their own in September 1943:

> Stalin received the Metropolitan of Moscow, whereupon the restoration of the Synod was announced, with the Metropolitan as Patriarch. Moscow gave wide publicity to this event, contrasting it with reports of German atrocities . . . In reply to the Moscow conclave, a special conference of eight Russian Orthodox Bishops, including Seraphim of Berlin, was convened in Vienna in October 1943 . . .
>
> Sergius of Riga expressed his displeasure in no uncertain terms. In general, he viewed Seraphim and the Karlowac church as decrepit reactionaries who had lost all touch with Soviet affairs and could only compromise the anti-Soviet cause by foisting themselves upon it. What he objected to most was the close and overt association between the monarchist *émigrés* and the Nazis.[43]

As one of the leaders of the 'monarchist émigrés', Turkul must have been amused. Seraphim and Anastasius had served their purpose, the Orthodox Church was hopelessly divided. Now it was time for the Catholic Uniates. His assistant, George Romanov, was sent to Switzerland to become ordained as a priest. It was a judicious move. Romanov had worked in Vienna on the MAX network and had written to Turkul that Klatt might be a Communist double agent. He had come close to the truth and had to be kept out of the way. Besides, Romanov might be useful in the future as a source on Orthodox–Uniate alliances. It was an area that had concerned Moscow for a long time.[44]

Since the time of the Bolshevik revolution, the Jesuits had revived their interest in playing the Uniate card. Uniate missionaries were trained in Rome for infiltration. Pius XI and his successor both foresaw that Jesuit-trained missionaries might reunite Orthodox Russia with the Catholic Church 'as soon as the way was open'.[45] Unfortunately, the Bolsheviks had blocked the way for three decades, and appeared to have no intention of stepping aside.

The heart of the anti-Communist crusade was a special unit of the Vatican which co-ordinated Eastern policy. During World War II, the secretary of this office, Congregatio pro Ecclesia Orientali, was 'the French Cardinal Tisserant, a well-known Orientalist', and a noted anti-Communist.[46] By 1942, this Congregation was actively preparing a missionary network of Uniates. Jesuits were sent in disguise into Soviet territory to provide intelligence reports on the prospects for religious reunification with the Orthodox.[47]

The extent to which Turkul assisted the Jesuit penetration missions may never be known (at least until the Vatican Secret Archives are opened). Yet it is interesting to note that of the three hundred volunteer 'Apostles' he admitted smuggling into the Soviet Union, only a handful ever came back out.[48] During the war, Turkul's assistant kept close watch on the Catholic Army of the Ukraine. It was not difficult for Klatt to follow the Galician SS since his network monitored all Soviet and German troop dispositions on the Eastern front:

> . . . he conducted its activities in a manner that was unique. His office staff consisted of two persons – everything in the office was mechanized . . . He was able to report large-scale strategic plans as well as details of troop movements in some important cases even down to divisional level; his reports usually came in two or three weeks ahead of events, so that our leaders could prepare suitable counter-measures – or, should I say, could have done so if Hitler paid more attention to the information.[49]

It was not Klatt's intelligence work, but his Jewish background that eventually drew Hitler's attention. The Führer ordered the dismissal of all Jews working for his intelligence services. Gehlen lamented: 'My most reliable agent, who had brought in the best information I have about Russia, I can't use anymore because he is half Jewish.'[50]

A temporary rescue was arranged by transferring Klatt on paper to the Hungarian intelligence staff. According to Farago, Klatt was in need of frequent rescue,

> not because his material was not satisfactory (it was uniformly excellent) but because his mystery continued to disturb his employers. Once, in 1945, only the personal intervention of General Heinz Guderian, then chief of the General Staff, saved his life; the Germans, totally exasperated by Klatt's impregnable secret, decided to get rid of him for good by sending him to a concentration camp. Guderian was scandalized; the information the man was supplying was so invaluable that the General Staff Chief gave orders to leave Klatt alone, or else, he said, the best source of information about the USSR would be lost.[51]

Despite his Catholicism, Klatt was still harassed about his Jewish racial status, but continued to provide information up to the last days of World War II. His mysterious sources never dried up.[52] Klatt had worked for Admiral Canaris of the Abwehr, then General Gehlen of FHO and finally, Walter Schellenberg of the SS. Every branch of Nazi intelligence, including General Guderian at Hitler's highest headquarters, depended on Klatt. It appears that he may have been the one mysterious Jew in the SS intelligence service who received Honorary Aryan status. It should be noted that those decrees were signed by Adolf Hitler personally. It would indeed be an irony if Klatt found his final rescuer at the top of the Third Reich.[53]

But the search for Klatt's intelligence source continued. According to the recently declassified files, Klatt's chief agent was 'Lang', yet another of General Turkul's spies who worked for the SS. His real name was 'Ira LONGIN aka IRA aka LANG, head of the "Dr LANG" Section [in] VIENNA which supplied amazingly accurate information to the Germans concerning top level Soviet strategy during the war'.[54]

If Klatt was getting his information from Lang, who was Lang getting his from? Lang supposedly had agents on Marshal Rokossovsky's Soviet General Staff, but how could he communicate with them? After all, one could not simply pick up a telephone in SS headquarters in Vienna and dial a traitor in the Kremlin. Heinz Höhne supplies the answer, although he misspells General Turkul's name:

> [The] line to the senior levels of the Red Army ran through the exiled Russian General Turgut. Living in Vienna and working for the Abwehr office there, he maintained radio stations in the Caucasus and Urals over which he communicated with anti-Stalinists among senior Red Army officers.[55]

Another author also misspelled Turkul's name, but confirms his direct involvement with radio espionage:

> After the outbreak of World War II, Turkhul disappeared . . . General Turkhul showed up unexpectedly in Central Europe, having been traced through a secret transmitter which provided the Germans with intelligence on Soviet military formations and movements.[56]

In a recently declassified intelligence file, the US Army Counter Intelligence Corps filled in many of the blanks on Turkul's wartime movements:

1. Pius XI's Secretary of State Eugenio Pacelli, photographed after successfully concluding the Vatican's Concordat with Germany. Within a few years, Hitler was attacking the Catholic Church while Pacelli, as Pope Pius XII, tried to preserve his diplomatic neutrality on the eve of war.

2. After another triumph of Pacelli's diplomacy, the 1929 Concordat with Fascist Italy, Mussolini's cavalcade arrives at the Vatican for an official reception with Pope Pius XI. Unlike his successor Pacelli, Pius XI was willing to take a strong public stand against Hitler's policies.

3. After Hitler's defeat, Pacelli abandoned his controversial wartime neutrality towards Germany and spread the word that the Vatican would shelter Fascist fugitives. Fearing retribution for their wartime massacres, the Croatian Ustashi pack up for the flight to Austria, first stop on the Ratline to Rome.

Griffen 19 km
Bleiburg 3 km
burg 25 km

4. In the chaos of post-war Europe, the roads were clogged with refugees fleeing to the West away from the victorious Communists. Many infamous war criminals, including Croatian dictator Ante Pavelić, mingled with the throng to avoid capture by Marshal Tito's ruthless partisans.

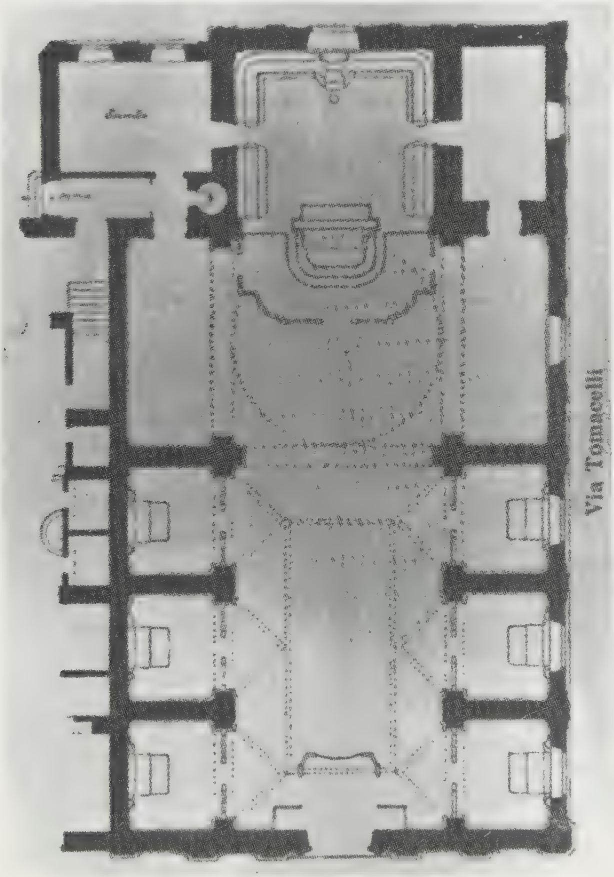

5. All roads led to Rome and the charitable hands of Father Draganović at the Institute of San Girolamo at Via Tomacelli 132. After World War II Father Draganović turned this Croatian Institute into a sanctuary for Fascist fugitives going down the Vatican Ratline.

6. The drawing room in San Girolamo when it housed wanted war criminals in the late 1940s. After pro-Nazi Bishop Alois Hudal was exposed for smuggling German and Austrian war criminals such as Stangl and Eichmann, San Girolamo became the headquarters for a more discreet and far more efficient Vatican smuggling network.

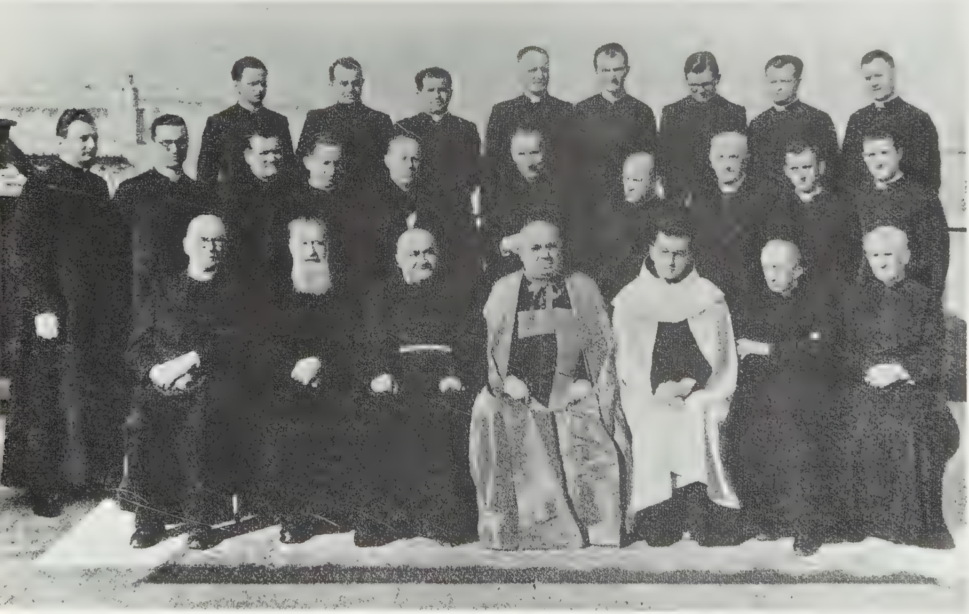

7. The priests who ran San Girolamo in the early 1950s, posing with Church dignitaries. Father Draganović is in the second row, sixth from the left. Several of the priests who worked on Father Draganović's Ratlines gave tape-recorded interviews to the authors.

8. Father Draganović (left), and San Girolamo's Rector Monsignor Juraj Magjerec (right) celebrating a special mass in St John Lateran in Rome, 1953, on the occasion of the 500th anniversary of the Institute. Draganović and Magjerec were the key operatives in the Nazi-smuggling network run under the cover of San Girolamo's "charitable" work for refugees. Several religious orders, including the Franciscans and the Jesuits, supplied forged documents and other assistance to the Ratlines.

9. Draganović and Magjerec on one of their many visits to the largely Croatian Displaced Persons Camp of Bagnoli. After the war, many wanted Ustashi war criminals hid at Bagnoli and later used the camp as a centre for terrorist operations against the Communists. During the Cold War, Draganović was a secret Vatican liaison to the intelligence services of Italy, Britain and the United States. When Draganović retired behind the "Iron Curtain" in 1967, there were many who wondered whether his real loyalty lay with the Communists all along.

10. A large group of San Girolamo's priests together with well-wishers, posing on the steps of St Peter's during the celebrations of the Institute's 500th anniversary. Father Draganović is the second figure on the right of the bearded figure in the centre, and Monsignor Magjerec is the second on his left. By the time this picture was taken in 1953, Soviet intelligence had thoroughly infiltrated the Ratlines with their own agents, often posing as fugitive Nazis, and had even placed a spy, Miroslav Varoš, inside San Girolamo itself.

11. Pius XII's Under Secretary of State, Monsignor Giovanni Montini, with another dignitary on the terrace of San Girolamo. It was Montini who secretly supervised Draganović's Ratline and lobbied the Western powers for the release of war criminals. During this time Montini was recruited as a secret intelligence source for US counter-intelligence chief, James Jesus Angleton, a relationship which boosted Angleton's CIA career when Montini became Pope Paul VI.

12. Croatian war criminal Ante Pavelić in his office with Ustashi officials in Zagreb during the war. Under the direction of Adolf Hitler (whose picture hangs on Pavelić's office wall) the Poglavnik's government slaughtered over half a million Serbs, Jews and Gypsies in the most barbarous manner. After the war, the US Army staged a burglary at Father Draganović's office and discovered that Pavelić was living inside the Vatican along with other wanted war criminals.

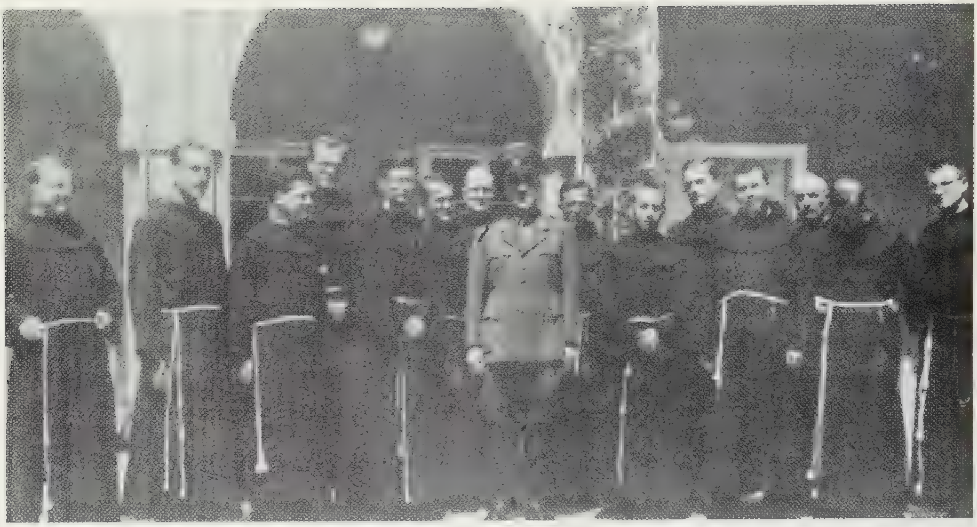

13. A wartime picture of Croatian dictator Pavelić with a group of Franciscan priests. Many Croatian clerics supported Pavelić's Fascist Ustashi movement. After his post-war sanctuary in the Vatican was discovered by the American Army, Pavelić was allowed to quietly escape to South America in order to prevent a "staggering blow" to the Roman Catholic Church.

14. One of many villas in the grounds of the Pope's Summer Residence at Castelgandolfo outside of Rome. A number of important fugitives were in hiding at Castelgandolfo, including Ante Pavelić and Ferenc Vajta. Vajta worked for the Nazis in Hungary, was later recruited by French intelligence, then by the Vatican, and finally told all their secrets to the Americans.

15. Post-war Italian President Enrico de Nicola (centre) and Prime Minister Alcide de Gasperi (right) after an audience with Pope Pius XII in mid-1946. De Gasperi worked closely with Monsignor Montini of the Vatican Secretariat of State on anti-Communist plans, and his Government was heavily implicated in the Vatican's Ratline. Soon after this photograph was taken, de Gasperi became involved in running guns for the Vatican's "freedom fighters".

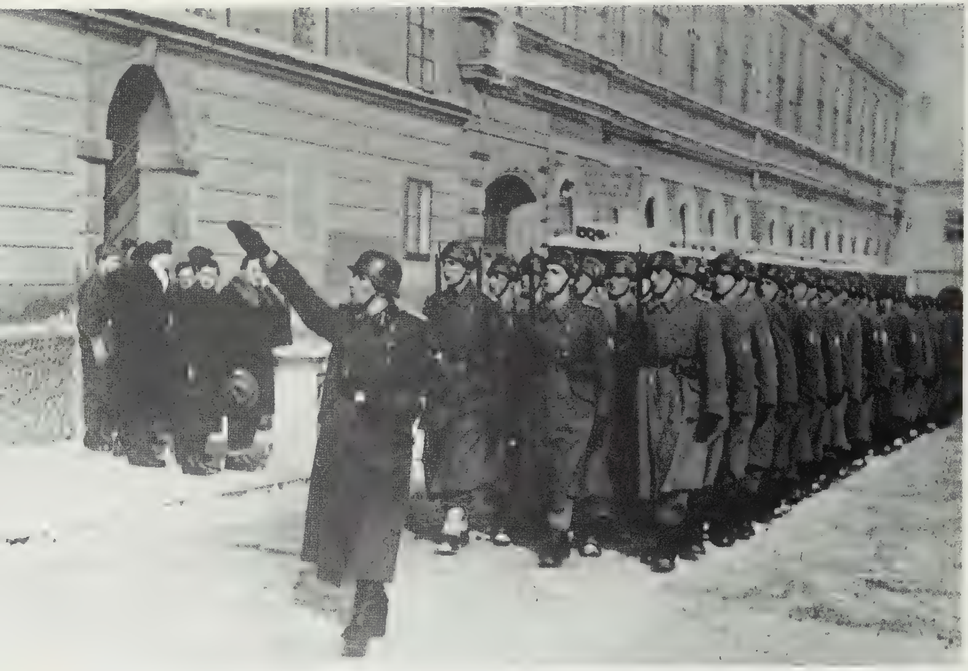

16 & 17. Unfortunately, many of the Vatican's "freedom fighters" were former Nazi collaborators. Here is a picture of an SS officer leading Bishop Gregory Rožman's "anti-Communist" army down the streets of Ljubljana in 1944. On the dais, Bishop Rožman himself reviews the troops with local SS commander and the Fascist president of Slovenia. The Bishop's wartime collaboration included a "Pastoral Letter" urging his flock to join the Nazi cause to "assure our existence and better future, in the fight against [the] Jewish conspiracy".

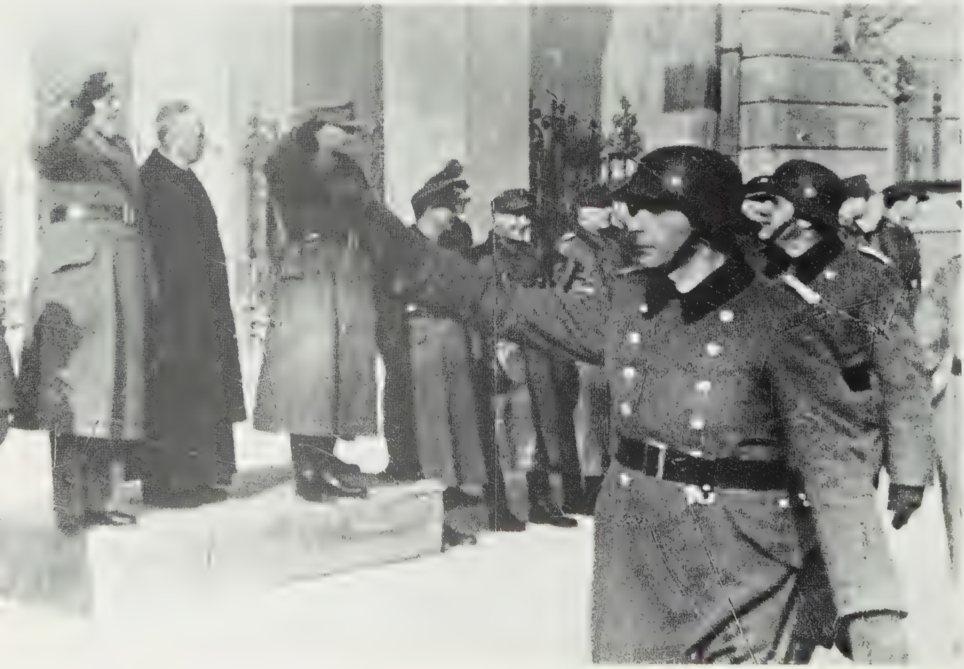

18. After the march-past Bishop Rožman extends his warm greetings to SS General Rösener. Although both the British and American Governments concluded that Rožman should be handed over to Tito as a Nazi collaborator, they permitted his "escape" to Switzerland in 1947. In Berne, Bishop Rožman laundered Fascist treasure to fund the Križari terrorist groups behind the "Iron Curtain".

19. Wanted war criminal Srečko Rover posing in his Ustashi uniform. After the war he was provided with false identity papers by Father Draganović, and rose to be a senior officer in the Križari terrorist network which launched a series of disastrous operations in 1946–48. After being denounced as a Communist agent, Rover finally settled in Australia and organised another equally disastrous terrorist network.

20 & 21. The Communist Yugoslav government accused Father Karlo Petranović of participating in the wartime massacres of Serbs around Ogulin. After the war he became one of many priests recruited by Draganović to run the Ratline, sending thousands of fugitives out of Genoa to North and South America and Australia. Here he is with some of his "passengers" on the waterfront in Genoa.

NIOTTO L
DIMARE
GEN

22. Bishop Ivan Bučko, the saviour of the Ukrainian SS Division 'Galicia'. Bučko worked closely with Father Draganović smuggling fugitive Nazis, and also had influential contacts with senior Vatican bureaucrats, including Pope Pius XII.

23. Ukrainian volunteers for the SS Division 'Galicia' on parade during the war. Although Archbishop Szepticky of the Uniate (Catholic) Church privately denounced the Nazis to Pope Pius XII, he blessed the SS volunteers, many of whom had previously committed war crimes while serving in auxiliary police units.

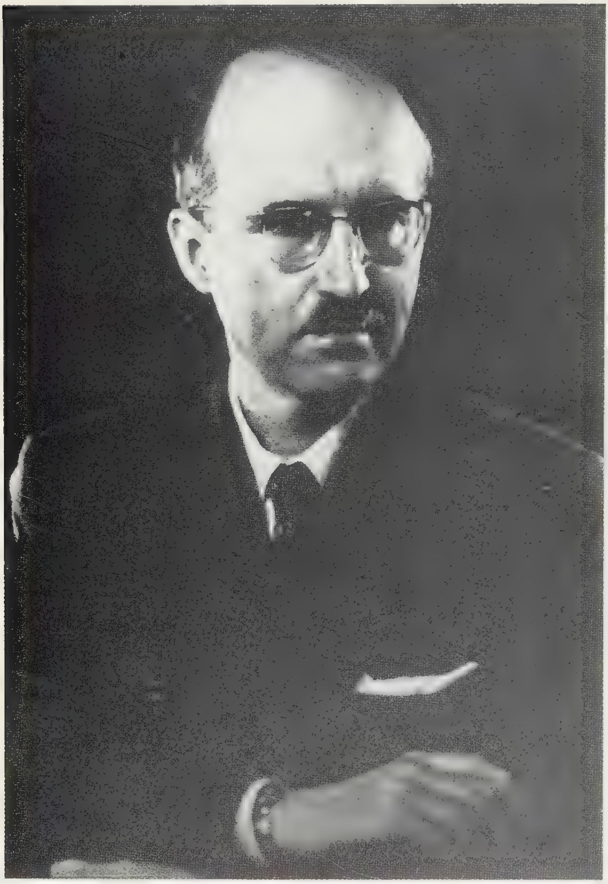

24. Ukrainian Nazi leader, Yaroslav Stetsko, whose Organisation of Ukrainian Nationalists conducted anti-Jewish pogroms following the Nazi invasion in 1941. Banned by the US State Department, Stetsko moved to Canada where he headed the British intelligence front, the Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations. Stetsko's ABN was supervised by a British double agent named Kim Philby who used this Fascist-dominated organisation to crush legitimate anti-Communist resistance efforts behind the Iron Curtain.

25. Despite his cloudy past, Yaroslav Stetsko enjoyed a resurgence of popularity with the Reagan administration and was even received in the White House. Here Stetsko meets with former US Army General John Singlaub, one of the key figures named in the Iran–Contra scandal and former head of the World Anti-Communist League. WACL was formed by merging neo-Fascist and terrorist groups from many nations.

26. France's Ambassador to Italy, François Poncet (wearing a moustache and bow tie), was captured by the 'Butcher of Lyon', Klaus Barbie, and secretly collaborated against the Resistance. As the senior French official in occupied Germany, and later President of the International Red Cross, Poncet went on to play an important role in the Ratline. By the late 1940s, he had become Allen Dulles's conduit for Red Cross papers, so desperately needed by the Vatican's Nazi-smugglers.

27. Slovak Fascist leader, Jozef Kirschbaum, in his Hlinka Guard uniform during World War II. The CIA identified Kirschbaum's associate, Ferdinand Durčansky, as a class A war criminal and double agent whose intrigues with the Vatican helped bring about the Communist takeover of Czechoslovakia in 1948. Kirschbaum and Durčansky went to Canada along with other Slovak Fascists after

28. General Prince Anton Vasilevich Turkul, the greatest Communist agent of them all. In addition to penetrating the Holy See, General Turkul was a Communist double agent in German, Japanese, British, French and American intelligence. It was Turkul who splintered the anti-Bolshevik *émigré* groups after World War I, sent Hitler false information that crushed the Nazis on the Eastern front, helped turn the Vatican Ratlines into a vehicle for Soviet intelligence during the Cold War, and culminated his career by prematurely instigating the Hungarian revolution of 1956.

> In Rome subject succeeded in getting in contact with the Reichssicherheitshauptamt (RSHA) for whom he allegedly worked as an agent in the winter of 1943. Subject was removed from Rome in 1943, primarily at the insistence of Richard KLATT aka KAUDER, who was one of [Turkul's] leading agents in the Balkans.
>
> KLATT insisted that [Turkul] not be captured by the allies, fearing that then the organization would fall apart. [Turkul] was removed in an Abwehr plane. The Abwehr was helping Klatt. They believed that by establishing direct contact with [Turkul] and promising him financial support for his White Russian Organization they would keep the good will of . . . the 'Dr Lang' section [in] . . . Vienna which supplied amazingly good information to the Germans concerning top level Soviet strategy during the War, and other Turkul agents. Support of [Turkul] was the primary condition set by Lang for his service with the Abwehr.[57]

The incestuous trio of Turkul, Klatt and Lang was literally blackmailing German intelligence, by threatening to withhold its information on the Soviet Union unless Turkul's political programme was accepted. For decades, historians have puzzled over the German failure to adopt a cohesive strategy concerning the recruitment of Soviet *émigrés* for their Army. According to the recently declassified files, General Turkul was the principal obstacle to any unified volunteer force.

Wrecking the Vlasov Army was the key to Turkul's strategy. The Nazis were planning to use captured Soviet General Andrei Vlasov to recruit an army of Soviet volunteers from the POW camps, give them German arms and equipment, and send them against the Soviet Union. In order to infiltrate the Vlasov movement, Turkul ordered Klatt to make a counter proposition to Schellenberg of the SS.

Turkul ordered his NTS network to serve as 'political commisars' with Vlasov's units to ensure their loyalty to the Third Reich. The Germans quickly accepted, and Turkul's agents were soon in a position to denounce Soviet POW leaders.[58]

Turkul later suggested that it was Klatt who had penetrated and sabotaged the anti-Communist units. But the evidence showed that it was Turkul who was Vlasov's harshest critic.[59] Turkul's views carried great weight: in addition to Admiral Canaris, head of the Abwehr, he 'succeeded in gaining the trust of Himmler . . . and Alfred Rosenberg, who were both close to Hitler'.[60] Turkul's White Russian network was so valuable that only a handful of Third Reich officials even knew of its existence. None of them realised that Turkul's NTS had promoted its own agenda for the Soviets:

> by placing members of its organization in stratgic positions (in the Reich as well as in the occupied areas) and seeking a monopoly of effective leadership among the *émigrés*, the influence of the Solidarists (NTS) was disproportionate. One of the top propagandists at the Wehrmacht propaganda compound . . . was a leading NTS man. Kaminskii's Russian Nazi 'party' was guided by NTS officials. The Ostministerium's training camp for 'converted' prisoners at Wüstrau was in effect a fief of the NTS, where its ideas were propagated under the noses of the German mediocrities. In at least two-score towns and cities in the occupied areas there were Solidarist mayors, chiefs of police, or newspaper editors recruited by the proselytizers of the NTS; finally several of the top men within the Vlasov movement were likewise NTS members, although Vlasov himself refused to endorse their group.[61]

In hindsight, it is easy to see the trap that Turkul had set. Every detail of the new volunteer forces was passed to Soviet headquarters. The Vatican's dream of their Uniate missionaries marching into the Soviet Union on the heels of a Catholic army was severely dashed when the Galician SS was virtually destroyed in the Battle of Brody in 1944. To complete the débâcle, the survivors were reformed into various military units under KONR, a committee for the Liberation of the Peoples of Russia, led by General Vlasov.

The reaction of the minority groups was predictable. The Organisation of Ukrainian Nationalists under Bandera and Stetsko deeply resented being led by a Russian and had already established its own paramilitary force, the Ukrainian Insurgent Army, or UPA.[62] While the Wehrmacht was working to unite all the *émigrés* under Vlasov, Turkul and the SS were working in an entirely different direction.

The former Governor of Galicia and SS leader, Gustav Wächter, participated in sensitive and secret negotiations to gain the collaboration of Bandera's OUN/UPA forces. Bandera and Stetsko were quietly released from house arrest and eagerly rejoined the Nazi cause. It had been a long time since the Nazis had needed him, but now Bandera had conditions: the OUN/UPA would fight for Hitler, but not under the command of Vlasov, the renegade Soviet General who insisted on re-incorporating the Ukraine into a Great Russian Empire after the Nazi victory.[63]

Vlasov's scheme was anathema to the OUN separatists who wanted an independent Ukraine. Bandera joined with other anti-Russian nationalists to form a new bloc. Although there is little evidence to support it, OUN leaders claim that in 1944 Bandera formed the 'Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations' (ABN), to unite all the non-Russian minorities working for the Third Reich.[64] It appears that Turkul's NTS may have overreached themselves with their divide and conquer strategy, and grown careless. The NTS headquarters in Warsaw was discovered to be in communication with the Soviets. In 1944 the Gestapo began a mass round-up of NTS members leaving the field open for a final German push to unite the *émigrés*. It was too little, too late.[65]

In view of the exigencies of the Nazi military situation, Bandera and the other anti-Vlasov separatists agreed to defer their squabbling in the interests of Nazi unity. At the urging of Wächter, Bandera agreed to have a moderate OUN spokesman, General Pavel Shandruk, conduct negotiations with the pan-Russian allies of the Third Reich. Soon General Vlasov had agreed that at least the Galician Ukraine would not be considered part of a Greater Russia after the Communists were defeated.[66]

In February 1945, as the Soviets swept across Eastern Europe, the last details of Slavic collaboration were still being ironed out in Berlin. The Nazis still refused to give any written guarantees of religious freedom, but at least no longer referred to the Slavs as 'sub-humans'.[67] Still, with the Nazi war machine in permanent retreat, the negotiations were completely futile.

In the spring of 1945 General Shandruk assumed command of the scattered Galician SS, which was simply renamed the First Ukrainian Division. At the end of the war, the unit took its place, on paper at least, as part of Vlasov's army. But instead of fighting the Soviets, the Catholic army of the Ukraine was fighting Tito's partisans in Yugoslavia before retreating into Austria.[68]

Turkul was hot on their heels. To show his good faith with the Nazis, he had assumed control of a Vlasov unit and also headed for Yugoslavia. 'A politically amorphous though distinctly tsarist group of Russian *émigrés* in Yugoslavia was authorized to form a Schützkorps, employed primarily against the partisans there.'[69] In an interesting bit of Stalinist duplicity, Turkul's mission was to crush Tito.[70]

Turkul's forces made contact with the Fascist commander Dimitrije Ljotić, and remnants of Draža Mihailović's Četniks, whose forces had also collaborated with the Nazis. When the war ended, Turkul established emissaries to the West through Ljotić and Mihailović who had already begun to negotiate sanctuary. Suddenly, all across Europe, the *émigré* armies of the Third Reich disappeared. Immediately, rumours about the Vatican's role began to spread.

9

Diplomacy and Deceit

The flight of the Ukrainian SS is a good example of a bad example. Many other Fascist groups, such as the Ustashi, followed in their path, imitating the Ukrainian strategies for post-war survival. The Vatican was not alone in protecting Nazi fugitives after the war. Nor was the Holy See solely behind the transformation of ex-Nazis into 'freedom fighters'. The termination of serious war crimes investigations was the result of official diplomatic decisions by several Western powers.

Intelligence front groups like the Ukrainian-dominated Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations were not created in a vacuum. They were the product of a deliberate double standard and cynical secret policies. In many respects the Vatican was only a junior partner in a diplomatic shell game whose rules were largely shaped in London. It was a game that the fugitive Nazis learned quickly and well.

Even before the end of the war, word spread quickly throughout the Fascist forces of Eastern Europe: head for the British-occupied area of Austria to avoid capture by the Communists. Some of the fugitives, particularly those from the Ukraine, must have been a little apprehensive at surrendering to anyone. Many of the people in General Shandruk's Galician SS Division had previously earned a reputation for brutality during the gruesome police executions in the Ukraine. Some also allegedly participated in the bloody suppression of the Warsaw uprising, while others may have fought against the West at Monte Cassino. Some were reportedly involved in massacring French partisans.

Under Shandruk the unit had little chance to commit war crimes. To be fair, it appears that most of the real atrocities had already been committed prior to 1943, when the Ukrainian unit was still just an amalgam of auxiliary police battalions, and before it was formally absorbed into the SS.[1] Although the exact wartime role of the Galician SS is still hotly debated, one fact is certain: in the spring of 1945 the Galicians headed westwards. The First Ukrainian Division, Bishop Bučko's last great hope, surrendered in May 1945 to the British Army at Klagenfurt, Austria.[2]

The arrival of Shandruk's Division, 90 per cent of whom were Uniate Catholics, was not entirely unexpected by the British. According to the Ukrainians, the British had a special interest in them:

> . . . contacts were established with the British forces . . . On May 8th the entire unit was successful in crossing to join the British forces at Klagenfurt . . . Arms were not removed from the unit; in fact, in many cases more arms were issued and the unit was instructed to cross over to Italy. The move beginning May 28th ended up . . . at Rimini.[3]

According to their own detailed account, the Galician SS was the only Axis unit to survive the war intact, under arms and with their own officers. The British did not place the Ukrainians in a POW cage, but in Camp 374, for 'Separated Enemy Personnel' at Rimini, a distinction which, to the Ukrainians at least, denoted their special status.[4] However, one unit of the Division had been cut off, and fell into far less hospitable American hands.

On 5 July 1945 the President's Personal Representative to the Pope received a diplomatic note from the Vatican Secretariat of State:

> Several thousand Ukrainians are in Germany and fear they may be sent to Galicia. On their behalf, the Holy See has been requested to use its good offices in order that these poor refugees may soon be allowed to leave Germany and to take refuge in France, Belgium, the Netherlands, or any other country rather than being obliged to go to territories under Russian domination.[5]

The difficulty was that the 'poor refugees' were captured still wearing German uniforms. The American Army lacked a sense of humour about these prisoners. One of the Galician officers was discovered to have the distinctive SS tattoo under his armpit, listing his blood type in case he was wounded in battle. The Americans promptly made arrangements to extradite him to the Soviets. They had no intention of simply allowing an SS unit to cross over to a friendly Catholic state as the Vatican had requested, and continued their search for 'refugees' with SS tattoos.[6]

This must have been disquieting news: over 2,000 Galician SS members had once undergone SS cadre training. A large number of Shandruk's officers also bore the incriminating tattoo.[7] It was high time for the Vatican to intervene more directly on behalf of the Catholic Ukrainian army.

A few weeks later, on 11 August 1945, the Vatican Secretariat of State delivered a diplomatic note to the Americans 'on behalf of the spiritual and religious care of the displaced persons of Ruthenian Catholic Rite in Germany . . . whether the latter be within or outside concentration camps'.[8]

The Vatican specifically requested that its recently appointed Apostolic Visitor 'be authorized to visit . . . the concentration camps in Germany where there are Ruthenian Catholics'. It is not without coincidence that the man chosen for the Pope's emissary was none other than 'his excellence Monsignor Bučko'. Yet again, the Vatican had nominated a Fascist priest as its emissary to Catholic Nazi collaborators. They asked that he be given the assistance of priests 'whom he will find among the Ruthenian displaced persons'. This was apparently a reference to Uniate Chaplains like Ivan Grynioch who had served with the Galician SS.[9]

The Vatican also conveyed the opening shot in the amnesty barrage from the Oriental Congregation. Apparently, the Vatican's lawyers had been working overtime and had found a loophole to keep the Galician SS out of Soviet hands:

> . . . those Ukrainians . . . who are classified as prisoners of war . . . should not be considered as deserters from the Red Army; for their nationality in 1939 was Polish and not Russian. For the same reason their custody cannot be requested by the Soviet Authorities on the basis of the agreements of Yalta [which promised repatriation for] only those Russian citizens who departed from Soviet territory after 1927 or those individuals who were formerly members of the Red Army.[10]

The British Foreign Office understood this extremely clever argument. The Galician SS could not go back to the Soviets because they had once been Poles. On the other hand, they could not be sent to Poland because Galicia was now part of the Soviet Union. Under the Vatican's version of 'Catch 22', all Galician war criminals would simply have to be released into the benevolent hands of Bishop Bučko. But the Americans would not budge.[11] Under the Yalta agreement, these Nazis had to be returned to Soviet custody.

A week later the pressure was increased a notch when Bučko's old superior, Bishop Bohachevsky of Pittsburgh, sent a letter on 25 August to General George Marshall, Chief of Staff of the War Department. He insisted that all Ukrainians in the US zone be given asylum, Red Cross assistance and the right to organise their own 'charitable committees':

> These Ukrainians, who are classified as Russians or Poles, live in deathly fear and dread the thought of being sent to Soviet Russia or Poland. Reports from semi-official and private sources revealing tales of relentless, horrible, barbaric religious, social, and political persecutions, imprisonments, and executions of Ukrainians, especially the intellectuals, clergymen, etc., by the Soviet authorities give the Ukrainians good cause for fear and anxiety.[12]

Undoubtedly most Ukrainian refugees in Germany had good reason to fear those consequences. Stalin treated even slave labourers and POWs as Nazi collaborators. Many of those returned to him were summarily murdered and the rest shipped off to Siberia. But among the Galician SS were many who had previously served with the SS mobile killing units at places like Babi Yar, where over 100,000 Jews had been shot in just three days. These killers had real cause for fear and anxiety.[13]

The War Department dumped Bishop Bohachevsky's letter on the State Department, which sent him a cursory reply a few months later, saying simply that 'the situation of those who remain is receiving every appropriate consideration to avoiding undue hardship'.[14] Throughout the autumn of 1945 the American Army continued to round up fugitive Ukrainians and ship them off to the Soviet Union. As it turned out, they were among the last to be sent back. The Nazis were going to get a Christmas present.

On 30 November 1945 the Vatican sent a formal Diplomatic Note 'on behalf of 2,000 Ukrainian refugees residing in Stuttgart . . . these refugees maintain that their repatriation would almost certainly expose them to deportation, physical and mental torture, and even death by shooting . . . In view of the assurances recently given that Hungarian refugees would not be repatriated against their will, it is believed that there are grounds for hoping that the Ukrainians . . . will likewise not be treated differently.'[15] Yet again the Americans gave the Vatican a polite brush-off. The men in question were suspected of being Nazi collaborators.[16]

Two weeks later, the Vatican was back with another Diplomatic Note marked URGENT. Bishop Bučko had issued an appeal directly to Pius XII. The Vatican stated that, contrary to all assurances, the Americans were still transferring Ukrainian prisoners to the Soviets at Stuttgart. They quoted Bučko's appeal to both Pius XII and the Americans for a temporary stay of transfer so that, 'as Bishop Bučko writes, "They could prepare themselves for a Christian death"'. Bučko also related 'that in the Displaced Persons Camp at Hannei some refugees committed suicide rather than permit themselves to be transferred'.[17]

Bučko's propaganda campaign was effective. Five weeks later, on 23 January 1946, the State Department issued a 'new directive' that altered the rules in favour of Ukrainians. From now on only those Ukrainians who were both residents and citizens of the Soviet Union after 1939 were liable for forcible hand-over. This exempted most of the 'Polish' Ukrainians from Galicia. In addition, the State Department would only hand over those 'non-Polish' Ukrainians who were actually captured in German uniform, or against whom there was 'reasonable evidence' that they had voluntarily rendered aid and comfort to the Nazis.[18]

The Americans were not alone in feeling Catholic pressure. The Canadian government reluctantly allowed Reverend Kushnir to visit imprisoned Ukrainians in the Western-occupied zones of Germany, allegedly on a charitable mission. Soon after, the British Foreign Office was chagrined to receive a broadside from Reverend Kushnir as 'Chairman of the Board' of a political group strongly protesting the policy of forcible repatriation of Ukrainians.[19]

The Vatican had obtained a signficant compromise on the Ukrainians, but pushed its luck in intervening for members of Vlasov's army.[20] The American decision was to treat all Russians under the Ukrainian rules which guaranteed that they would be handed over. It was a mistake that the West bitterly regretted, for it cost them dearly throughout the Cold War. At least Vlasov's army was largely untainted by war crimes. That could not be said for the Galician SS, some of whom had committed spectacular atrocities.

It is one of the tragedies of the post-war era that the American and British governments rounded up tens of thousands of petty collaborators, prisoners of war and innocent political refugees and forcibly handed them over to certain death or imprisonment. For a short period, the West was an accomplice in Stalin's post-war massacres.[21] The irony is that the Vatican's protests only helped the guilty evade punishment. As a result, the Ukrainians believed themselves favoured protégés and began to apply for American visas.[22]

The shift in American policy did not go unnoticed. On 25 June 1946 the Ukrainian–American League wrote to the State Department to

> unequivocally protest plans to bring to our country people who cooperated with German fascists in terrorizing the Ukrainian, Polish and Jewish populations of Western Ukraine (formerly Poland), or who were soldiers in the SS Division 'Halychyna' [Galician] which fought against the American and British armies in Italy, or who belonged to the armed bands which helped the German fascists in terrorizing and persecuting the people of our allied countries. They aided the Germans in the death camps in destroying not only Ukrainians, Poles and Jews, but citizens of Britain, France, and the United States.[23]

The State Department replied that the 'screening of war criminals, quislings and collaborators is being pressed vigorously by the allied military authorities . . . with a view to the elimination of such persons from the displaced persons centers'.[24] The American government was still under the illusion that no Nazi collaborators would escape unpunished. The British had no such illusions.

Incredible as it seems, the entire Galician SS Division had been basking in the sun for the previous two years in the British camp at Rimini. It had suddenly dawned on the British that they had to at least make a token attempt at screening them before the camp was turned over to the new Italian government in September 1947. In January Brigadier General Fitzroy Maclean and his assistant arrived at Rimini to screen for undesirables[25]

The screening was scanty. They interviewed only 200 men out of 8,272. They used camp inmates as interpreters, conducted no cross-examinations and basically asked the Ukrainians to tell them where they had been during World War II. Brigadier Maclean's 'screening team' cheerfully admitted that 'the short history of the Division was supplied entirely by the Ukrainians themselves and we had no information of any kind against which they could be checked'.[26]

The Ukrainian officers conjured up a false order of battle, claiming that their unit was the First Ukrainian Division of the Wehrmacht, which had a relatively innocent ring to it. The screening team noted: 'Some of the real villains . . . if there are any, may be sheltering behind these innocuous-sounding units, but that is a risk we have to take.'[27] The British were already months behind in their screening. 'If, however, we are to get anywhere, we must, and in my opinon safely can, assume that by and large the men are what they say they are and did what they said they did,' Maclean wrote.[28]

Brigadier Maclean had a little problem when several of the prisoners started talking about their ranks in the Galician SS. Such confessions did not cause the British screeners much anxiety. Surely, the prisoners had made an innocent mistake. 'I do not see anything suspicious in some of the men not knowing exactly what unit they were in . . . it seems however to have had some SS training.'[29] The British preferred to stick with the fictional Wehrmacht cover story even when faced with contrary evidence supplied by the prisoners themselves.

It was a little more difficult for the screeners when, despite all the hints, the prisoners persisted in saying that 'the great majority of them voluntarily enlisted in the German armed forces and fought against our allies.' Since that would have qualified them for handover to the Soviets, the screeners surmised that the prisoners really had not meant that they 'volunteered' in that sense.[30]

Fortunately, none of the prisoners was stupid enough to confess to war crimes, and so none was discovered. Despite his assistant's recommendation that it would take many months to screen each person in the camp properly, Maclean informed the Foreign Office in February that his investigation in Rimini would be completed by the middle of March.[31]

This was 'good news' to the Foreign Office, which hoped to avoid the embarrassment that would naturally follow any rigorous investigation.[32] The news that many had confessed their voluntary service to the Reich was even more embarrassing. The British hoped that those problem prisoners would simply disappear into the night, cynically noting: '. . . it is unlikely that there will be a big bag of quislings owing to the lack of guards to prevent their escape.'[33] They need not have worried.

A Soviet team had made a quick visit to the Ukrainians in the summer of 1945 and indentified a 'small fascist minority' in leadership positions. Eleven 'were in fact removed at the request of the Soviet Mission but were subsequently allowed by the British authorities to return'.[34] This is one of the rare instances where fugitive Nazis wanted to break back into a 'prison camp'. Such was British internment in Italy. Rimini was notorious among American counter-intelligence officials for the ease with which prisoners seemed to come and go at will.[35]

The Ukrainians enjoyed British custody and had no plans to leave. Brigadier Maclean, who genuinely liked these fellows,[36] asked the Foreign Office how to protect the Ukrainians from falling into Soviet hands once the Italian government took over the camp. Despite all the self-serving explanations, the Ukrainians had been captured in German uniforms and had already admitted that they volunteered to fight for the Nazis. 'In the circumstances, the only possible solution appears to be to remove them from Italy before the ratification of the Treaty to a British controlled area where they could be further investigated should this be necessary,' wrote Maclean.[37]

The Foreign Office was divided over this suggestion. A small majority favoured bringing the entire Galician SS Division to Britain until the matter could be resolved.[38] Some of the bureaucrats dissented vigorously, claiming that the scheme was a 'flimsy' pretext to evade the Yalta obligations.[39] Others said that only those who fought on the British side should be helped, not those who fought for the Germans.[40] British sympathy by this time was on the side of everyone who claimed to be anti-Communist. Whatever the unsavoury truth about the Galician unit, it was decided that Ukrainians in British custody were to be brought to safety in Britain.[41]

However, there were still large numbers of Ukrainian collaborators in American hands. The attempt to portray the Galician SS as 'freedom fighters' became international in scope. In February 1947 Reverend Kushnir's Ukrainian Canadian Committee launched another broadside at the US Secretary of State, claiming that 'to deliver these boys into the hands of the Soviets is tantamount to condemning them to death without trial. We appeal to you and your government for intervention and justice.'[42]

In May Cardinal Spellman of New York became the object of supplication. A petition, signed on behalf of 5,000 Ukrainians living in Salzburg in the US zone of Austria, was promptly delivered by the Cardinal to the National Catholic Welfare Conference, an organisation with no small political clout, which passed it on to the State Department.[43]

The petition marked a significant change in propaganda tactics by the *émigré* Ukrainians. For the first time, they took the offensive to claim that the Soviets were falsely accusing many Ukrainians of war crimes because they supported Bandera's anti-Communist underground, which was still engaged in a guerrilla war behind the Iron Curtain:

> By the press communicates [sic] of the agencies 'associated Press' and 'Dana-Reuter' from May 12, 1947, we were informed, that . . . USSR, Poland, and Czechoslovakia signed a treaty against the partisan group the so-called Ukrainian Insurgent Army [UPA] . . . we find almost daily more and more news in the press about the heavy battles on the borders of the mentioned countries with heavy armour, artillery, air-force and parachutists . . . All this is happening in the second anniversary of ceasing all military actions in Europe . . . the official press of the mentioned countries finds only one expression of these units; 'bandits.' We know, your Eminence, that in the lines of these so-called 'bandits' have been many priests . . . we know that the . . . bloody facts of persecution of the Greek-Catholic Church on the West Ukrainian territory, are well known to you, your Eminence. All the world knows, that our seven bishops were thrown into prisons, where they either died or are tormented in the dreadfullest conditions.[44]

By the summer of 1947, the British government had completed their first efforts to protect the Ukrainian 'freedom fighters'. The move did not escape the attention of the world press:

> 'Galician Division' in Britain . . . A dispatch from Rome comments on the statement made by Mr Hector McNeil, British Minister of State, about Hitler's so-called 'Galician Division,' 8,000 members of which have been brought to Britain from Italy. Mr McNeil claims that a Soviet Commission took part in the screening of these 8,000 men from the Western Ukraine and that no war criminals have been discovered among them.
>
> This statement has occasioned considerable surprise in Rome press circles, since the 'Galician Division' was notorious for its cruelty and belonged to an SS formation. No Soviet representatives took part in any check-up of these 8,000 men, as the British military authorities invariably replied with a refusal when approached by Soviet representatives on this subject. Mr McNeil's statement is clearly intended to mislead public opinion.[45]

The Foreign Office received a more gentle criticism from Felix Wirth of the Foreign Press Association in Britain, who apparently recognised that very little screening had been done in the rush to evacuate the Ukrainians:

> It would be . . . interesting to determine by careful investigation if any of these people could be classed as war criminals . . . Little is known, on the whole, of the Ukrainians' terrible role as Germany's faithful and active henchmen in the slaughter of the Jews in Lwow and other towns in that part of the world, as well as in the murder factories throughout Eastern Europe. The notorious Ukrainian SS Division 'Galizien' and other Ukrainian formations bear full responsibility for a good deal of the monstrous outrages perpetrated there.
>
> Whatever may be our quarrel with the Russians, surely the conscience of civilization could not permit to classify those people as innocent political refugees unless we establish that they are definitely not guilty of crimes which cry to Heaven unretributed.[46]

Had McNeil misled the British parliament? Was there no effective screening? Forty years later, in November 1988, a British All-Party Parliamentary Committee determined that the Galician SS had not received even the minimal screening required for normal immigration to Britain, let alone the rigorous scrutiny promised in 1947.[47] At that time, official assurances were given that further exhaustive screening would be undertaken and that the Ukrainians had only been brought to Britain 'to make it more difficult for persons with dubious wartime records to escape'.[48]

William Wilkinson of the Foreign Office insisted that 'it is unlikely that any war criminals will be found'.[49] Perhaps he knew that no one was really looking. In his many memoranda Wilkinson insisted that the Ukrainians had already been screened by Brigadier Maclean at Rimini.[50] Unfortunately, both Maclean and Wilkinson were relying on the prisoners' own information. The 'never in the SS' cover story was soon rebutted by the Ukrainians themselves.

By 1947 there were so many Ukrainians in Britain that they started holding conventions. In February 1948 the fourth convention of the Ukrainian Union was held at Westminster Cathedral. In addition to Cardinal Griffin, Father Josephat Jean was present as the representative of the Uniate Catholics. According to the convention reports, the 'Union anticipates a large increase of membership in the near future when the men of the SS "Galizien" who have hitherto been prisoners of war become free workmen'.[51]

This not only destroyed the cover story that they had only been part of the Wehrmacht; the Ukrainians also let the cat out of the bag about the Foreign Office plan to release the prisoners quietly and give them civilian status. The ensuing outcry in the press should have compelled an honest investigation. Instead, Wilkinson wrote a chatty note to 'Dear Garelon', the head of the Ukrainian Union and signed it 'Willie'. He chided his friend for publicising the embarrassing truth:

> I am sure that you will agree with me that it is most undesirable that public expression should be given to statements likely to give the impression that SS men are being allowed to settle down in the United Kingdom, as the question of the future disposal of these people is still under consideration. I should be grateful if this subject could be treated with discretion.[52]

Instead of keeping his mouth shut, Garelon sent Willie a memorandum containing an even more startling admission: every man had to 'sign an "application form" declaring that he "voluntarily applied to serve"' in the Galician Division.[53] This not only contradicted Maclean's pronouncement that they were draftees, but Garelon's confession also meant that they could not legally be considered refugees.[54]

Having thus disqualified his own people for Displaced Person status, Garelon argued that their voluntary service to the Reich was not important.[55] After all, it was not the first time the British had bent the rules:

> The Jugoslavs who constituted a similar unit of about 12,000 were moved to the British Zone at the same time when the Ukrainians were moved to the UK a year ago. *They were all released in the British Zone as DPs.* [emphasis in original][56]

It appears that 'Dear Garelon' was embarrassing the Foreign Office. Evidently, the Ukrainians knew too much about British protection of other ex-Fascists and could create an even greater public scandal. However, the Foreign Office declined Garelon's invitation to become publicly 'associated with tributes to the Ukrainian Insurrectionary Army'.[57] Surreptitiously, they accelerated plans to resettle the Ukrainian SS elsewhere.

In May 1948 Wilkinson asked the British Cabinet to repudiate the Yalta Agreement concerning forcible repatriation of Soviets, which 'would also have the merit of bringing our policy regarding Soviet nationals into line with our policy regarding Yugoslavs and others'.[58] The Cold War was heating up, and any enemy of Britain's enemy was now a friend. Laudable as it may have been to refuse to hand over people for summary execution, the British government made no attempt to deal with the nagging problem of suspected war criminals on their own territory. Even after the Soviet Ambassador supplied a list of 124 officers of the Galician SS wanted for war crimes, Wilkinson wrote 'I do not think that a full-blooded screening is called for at this time'.[59] Instead, he suggested that the Foreign Office rely on the already unsatisfactory Maclean screening.[60]

Unfortunately, the Home Office was not so easily deceived. They had checked with US intelligence in Germany. The Americans had already arrested one man when they discovered his SS tattoo. Worse, American censors provided copies of his correspondence with his Galician SS comrades in Britain.[61] The Home Office was not amused:

> It would obviously be embarrassing to them if they civilianised these 124 officers and afterwards discovered that they were either war criminals in the most serious sense or had unpleasant SS records.[62]

To the Foreign Office's dismay, the Home Office was 'proposing to return all these men willy-nilly to Germany'.[63] That suggestion was promptly postponed, pending discussions with the Canadian government to absorb them as immigrants,[64] despite the British Home Office's suspicion that 'some of these men really might be war criminals'.[65] Apparently, it was one thing to dump SS men on Canada, quite another to give them British citizenship.

Only a privileged few in the Foreign Office realised that the Galician SS was already on the British side. A good part of the Ukrainian Nazi puppet government had already been recruited by the Secret Intelligence Service.[66] It was not such an outrageous idea. The leader of the Ukrainian nationalists, Stepan Bandera, had worked for the SIS before the war. In 1945, after the Nazis were defeated, the prodigal Bandera was taken back into the fold.

He was not alone. Less than a year afterwards, General Pavel Shandruk, the last commander of the Galician SS, was listed as one of the top leaders of Prometheus, a pre-war British operation which had been taken over by the Nazis and then resurrected by SIS.[67] The British wanted more than just a Ukrainian resistance force; they wanted to merge all the 'freedom fighters' into a massive Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations. At first, the ABN was simply a merger of the friendly Fascists of OUN and their northern neighbours, the Byelorussian (White Russian) Nazis.[68]

They were a motley crew. Jaroslav Stetsko became the President, Mikolai Abramtchik was Vice President and Stanislav Stankievich was Secretary.[69] Stetsko had pledged his undying loyalty to the Führer in the middle of the OUN massacre of Jews at Lvov.[70] Abramtchik had been the Nazi Minister of Intelligence in the puppet government of Byelorussia.[71] Stankievich was the kind of war criminal who made Stetsko look good; a description of his heinous atrocities had been read into the Congressional Record of the United States.[72]

Shortly afterwards, his name resurfaced when the Soviet Delegate rose in the UN and accused America of hiding Stankievich, Bandera and other 'quislings and traitors' in the Allied zones of West Germany.[73] The State Department denied the charges, but the US Army Counter Intelligence Corps began their own investigation in Germany. Stankievich was arrested, but quickly released after he told the Americans what was going on. British intelligence had cleverly located ABN headquarters in the American zone, along with Bandera and other top Nazis denounced in the UN.

The CIC was furious at the British scheme. SIS had previously offered Bandera's services to the Americans, but the offer was refused.[74] It was one thing to help the British in secrecy, another to be publicly blamed for their recruitment of notorious war criminals. Instead of keeping their Nazi agents in their own zone, they had cynically dumped them in Munich, setting up the Americans as scapegoats in case of adverse publicity. In self-defence, and as a prelude to exposing the truth, the Americans downgraded the Bandera case from *Top Secret* to *Confidential*.[75]

The War Department asked the State Department for permission to issue a press release saying that the American Army was not protecting war criminals and would make every effort to arrest Bandera, if he was found in their zone of Germany.[76] The proposal was quickly squelched by Jack D. Neal, Chief of the State Department's Division of Foreign Activity Correlation, which handled intelligence liaison with the British. Neal thought it 'inadvisable to issue any press release on the subject', since it 'implied a willingness to arrest' Bandera if they ever found him.[77] Later, another State Department spy chief admitted the real reason why the British protection of Ukrainian Nazis was swept under the rug. The Americans had been trying to cut their own deal behind Britain's back. Since 1946 the Ukrainian Nazi leadership had been

> chronically unable to cooperate wholeheartedly with American intelligence representatives in Germany, primarily because the price set by Stephan Bandera for complete cooperation involved types of political recognition and commitments to his group which no American in Germany was in a position to make . . . It first came to the attention of the American authorities when the Russians demanded the extradition of Bandera and many other anti-Soviet Ukrainian nationalists as war criminals. Luckily the attempt to locate these anti-Soviet Ukrainians was sabotaged by a few far-sighted Americans who warned the persons concerned to go into hiding.[78]

The report concluded that, although the Ukrainians were not working for the Americans, 'alienating such a group could . . . have no particular advantage to the United States'. Consequently, the State Department admitted that 'no serious attempt has ever been made by American officials in Germany to disband [them]'.[79] The Americans quietly released their Galician SS prisoners and watched them happily track across the border to the British zone or quietly merge into the refugee population in their own zone. Across Germany the Ukrainian SS began drawing rations as 'victims of Nazi oppression'.[80]

The UN accusations were quickly forgotten. But Simon Wiesenthal could not forget the man who organised the Galician Nazis, SS Brigadeführer Dr Otto Gustav Wächter:

> I saw him early in 1942, in Lwow ghetto. He was personally in charge on August 15, 1942, when four thousand elderly people in the ghetto were rounded up and sent to the railway station. My mother was among them.[81]

Apparently Wiesenthal was ignorant of the connection between the Vatican and British intelligence; he thought that

> Wächter escaped after the war with the help of ODESSA and was given refuge in a religious college in Rome by Slovak priests who didn't know his identity . . . In 1949, Wächter became very sick and wasn't expected to live long. He told the people in Rome who he was . . . and asked to see a priest. He was given the sacraments by Bishop Hudal.[82]

In an interview, Wiesenthal recounted the rest of the story. The West German prosecutors called Hudal as a witness in a criminal case involving the Galician SS. Under oath, Hudal confessed that Wächter was the same man who had been living in the Vatican disguised as 'Father Otto Reinhardt'. Hudal was obviously embarrassed, but said that he did not make the Holy See's policy.[83]

However, Wiesenthal wrote in his memoirs that 'an Austrian aristocrat who occasionally helped me asked Bishop Hudal to release Wächter's files. The Bishop refused.'[84] The archives of the Galician SS are presumably still in Vatican custody. What Wiesenthal never knew was that the Ukrainians had much more powerful protectors than Bishop Hudal. The Pope himself had a hand in the sanctuary negotiations for the Ukrainian SS. Just as the war was ending

> General Pavlo Shandruk, the leader of a Ukrainian liberation committee that had been founded under Nazi auspices, contacted Archbishop Ivan Buchko, a high ranking prelate in Rome specializing in Ukrainian matters for the Holy See . . . Shandruk hoped that Archbishop Buchko might reach the Pope himself with the general's plea for mercy on behalf of his men.
>
> 'Archbishop Ivan [Buchko] answered my letter very soon informing me that he had already visited the Division,' Shandruk recalled later. 'In a special audience (at night) the Archbishop had pleaded with His Holiness Pope Pius XII to intercede . . . as a result of the intercession by His Holiness, the soldiers of the Division were reclassified merely as confinees and Bolshevik agents were prohibited to visit . . . By the Spring of 1946 Shandruk, backed by Archbishop Buchko and the Ukrainian Relief Committee of Great Britain, had arranged with the British government to extend 'free settler' emigration status to the Ukrainian Waffen SS veterans at Rimini and to assist them in resettling in Canada, Australia, and other Commonwealth Countries.[85]

It would be misleading to state that the Pope was to blame for pressuring the British government. The truth is that Britain had its own agents of influence inside the Vatican, pressuring Pius XII to support its programme for the Ukrainians. In a declassified document, American intelligence listed the prominent leaders of Intermarium. As previously recounted, the Ukrainian delegate was none other than Bishop Bučko. The saviour of the Galician SS was an agent of the British SIS.[86]

Nor was Bučko the only prelate to serve two masters. Intermarium was replete with priests, monks and brothers from a wide range of orders including the Jesuits, Benedictines and Franciscans. They ran the printing press for false identity cards, coordinated the network of convents and monasteries that served as safe houses, laundered money and, perhaps most importantly, organised a very effective propaganda campaign that worked hand in glove with British interests. From the Križari to the OUN, from the Baltic to the Black Sea, Catholic clerics like Draganović and Bučko administered an espionage network that was vital to British intelligence. It was also something of a problem for British diplomacy.

The Foreign Office had more than a few embarrassing moments protecting the vital Vatican connection from exposure. On the one hand, His Majesty's Government had made very noble (later very inconvenient) public pronouncements concerning Britain's obligations to hunt for Nazi war criminals. On the other hand, the Vatican had the largest intelligence service in Eastern Europe, which could substantially assist the creation of a British sphere of influence, or at least revive ties to scores of nationalist organisations which fled to the Vatican after the Nazis' defeat. Noble ideals soon gave way to recruiting Eastern European Nazis.

The Ukrainian Nazis were the last large group to be smuggled directly through British territory. With the help of Bishop Bučko, Shandruk made arrangements to evacuate the Galician SS to Canada and Australia. Shandruk repaid the British by taking over the leadership of Prometheus. The group had been renamed 'the Prometheus League of the Atlantic Charter' to give it a more democratic flair. But it was still the same front group, run by SIS chief Sir Stewart Menzies, which had defected to the SS before returning to the British. By 1946, the Prometheus propaganda arm was almost fully geared up to battle the Communists.[87]

It was, however, a bit risky for Britain to undertake any more large-scale Nazi-smuggling, at least directly. Not only was Parliament concerned about the true nature of the Galician SS, but US intelligence was starting to realise that Prometheus was a thinly disguised British attempt to rearm Ukrainian Nazis under the cover of General Anders's Polish Army in Italy.[88]

Besides, the cover was a bit overworked. Anders's forces had taken in the fugitive Byelorussian SS Division Belarus as well as the Ukrainians and things were becoming crowded in their camps. The Vatican had been generous, but there was insufficient room in their convents and monasteries for all the new recruits. With the imminent withdrawal of the Allies from Italy, something had to be done with the remaining Nazis before R Day, 1947, when the Italians might have to extradite them as war criminals.

The reality of R Day, when the Italians resumed control of their own territory, had certainly stiffened the resolve of several faint-hearted British diplomats. Even Pavelić's Ustashi felt the benefit of the Ukrainian backwash. As late as May 1947 the Foreign Office was still reprimanding the Vatican about protecting the Ustashi:

> I should be glad if you would point out to the [Vatican] Secretariat of State that those persons who actively worked for the Pavelić Ustashi Government were giving their support and approval to a regime which flouted humanitarian principles, and which condoned atrocities unsurpassed in any period of human history.[89]

By November the Foreign Office had turned completely around. Instead of criticising the Vatican, they discreetly asked them to help smuggle the Ustashi out of Italy:

> His Majesty's Government have asked the Vatican to assist in getting the Greys to South America, although they are certainly wanted by the Yugoslav government.[90]

Despite the code word, there is no doubt that the fugitives were wanted Nazis. 'Grey' was a term used by the Western Allies to denote known Nazi collaborators. The term 'Black' indicated that they were war criminals, whose extradition had been requested. 'Whites' were victims of Nazi oppression – Jews, former slave labourers, inmates of concentration camps etc. 'Whites' need not be smuggled: the International Refugee Organisation provided them with papers and funds for legal resettlement. Only 'Blacks' and 'Greys' needed Vatican help to get out of the country. For them, immigration was illegal.

In order to help the Vatican, the British changed all the rules so that some 4,000 'Blacks' were redesignated as 'Greys', much to the fury of Brigadier Maclean, who had served in Yugoslavia during the war. As much as he liked the Ukrainians, he had a fanatical hatred for the Croatian Ustashi. Maclean was very thorough in screening Yugoslav Nazis. He had no need to rely on phony histories supplied by the prisoners. He knew – first-hand – what Pavelić's followers had done.

As head of the Screening Mission, Maclean's stubbornness could wreck the scheme for getting the Nazis out of Italy. Worse, he was beginning to realise that his own British superiors were leaking his top secret screening reports to Father Draganović, who tipped off the Ustashi before they could be arrested. The good Brigadier was beginning to suspect too much. The solution was simple: circumvent Maclean with a higher authority. There were always a few friendly Americans willing to lend a hand.

In June 1947 the US and British Governments issued the top secret document known as FAN 757. They agreed that all Nazi screening would henceforth be done by a Joint Review Committee. After all Italy was an Allied problem, and who could object to Americans participating in screening? It sounded so innocent.

The reality, as shown by State Department cables, was a cynical charade to disguise the Vatican's smuggling of the so-called 'Grey' Nazis to Argentina before they could be screened. By mid-1947, those Americans involved were sending their top secret messages back and forth through military channels to avoid detection of the British–Vatican deal. On 7 June 1947 the US Political Adviser in Leghorn, Italy, informed the State Department that:

> I have discussed FAN 757 . . . with my British colleague . . .
>
> Understand that . . . screeners will notify Vatican names and particulars of unacceptables as they appear. It seems possible that this arrangement may result in out shipment to Argentina of many individuals [who may screen Black or Grey]. To avoid possible misunderstanding and confusion I believe it should be clearly stated whether unacceptables must all be screened . . . or only those Argentines refuse [to] accept . . . Latter alternative would greatly reduce work . . . and would solve before it began problem . . . of how to dispose of Greys.[91]

This 'work saving' suggestion exposed the reality of the Allied solution for Nazi emigration: those too notorious to be categorised as legal emigrants (Whites) would be dumped on the Vatican. But the US State Department, however much they wanted to help the British, would not stomach sending category 'Black' war criminals through the Vatican Ratline:

> Such action should be confined to Whites and Greys only and Greys preferably before they have been formally labelled as such in order [to] facilitate their departure.[92]

The complete FAN 757 correspondence (half located in London, the rest in Washington) discloses the diplomatic complicity behind the Vatican Ratlines. The screening was a complete farce. The Nazis were deliberately rushed to the Vatican before they could 'be formally labelled as such'. Although the Vatican was sometimes ignorant of the passengers' true backgrounds as war criminals, the files show that Holy See officials were conspiring to help the West smuggle known Nazi collaborators.

From Rome, the last Nazis began the long journey to freedom.

They were gone from Italy by R Day. An extremely embarrassing situation had been averted. The pool of anti-Communist 'freedom fighters' had been increased. The diplomats of London, Washington and the Vatican had done their jobs too well. They were all to blame for the coming disasters of the Cold War.

By R Day, British intelligence was well under way with the merger of all the ex-Nazi front groups. Intermarium, Prometheus, the Abramtchik Faction, and Bandera's OUN were formed into the SIS-sponsored Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations.[93] Their members spread around the world and settled in friendly Western nations. The West would never really know for sure which were legitimate Nazis and which were double agents. By 1947, a few Communists had already popped up in Intermarium, as the Americans found out from Ferenc Vajta, William Gowen's Hungarian Nazi contact.[94] The Vatican did not know it, but there were a lot more double agents. The real master of the Ratlines was the Kremlin. While the Soviet GRU was working with Turkul, the KGB had been busy as well.

10

The Philby Connection

One of the first Soviet agents to penetrate British intelligence was a Catholic priest. Between 1932 and 1937 the top NKVD 'illegal' in England was Father Theodore Maly. He was indeed a brilliant agent. It was Father Maly who recruited Anthony Blunt and the rest of the Cambridge ring:

> One of the most remarkable non-Russian Comintern agents who ever served as undercover Soviet Intelligence officers, Maly was a newly ordained Hungarian Priest, who became a regimental chaplain with the Austro-Hungarian army when World War I broke out. Captured by the Tsar's army on the Carpathian front, he was horrified by the starvation and disease in the prisoner of war camps.
>
> 'I lost my faith in God, and when the revolution broke out, I joined the Bolsheviks,' Maly once told a friend, explaining how service with the Cheka and Red Army during the brutal civil war against the Whites had hardened him.[1]

When Father Maly came to London in 1932, the Kremlin was already aware of tentative British–German negotiations for an alliance against Communism. Two cipher clerks in the British Foreign Office had been on the Soviet payroll since 1929, reporting to Father Maly.[2] The leaked cables told Moscow that there was indeed high level support for an Anglo-German initiative against Stalin. It is not surprising that penetration of Fascist circles in Britain became a high priority for the Kremlin.

Many of Father Maly's best recruits were young men from upper class backgrounds who pretended to hold Fascist sympathies to hide their true Communist loyalties. The most famous KGB agent was Harold Adrian Russell Philby. As with all of Father Maly's agents, 'Kim' Philby's upper class British background was impeccable. His father had been briefly imprisoned as an ardent Nazi supporter. Kim pretended to share his father's sympathies. He joined pro-German organisations and was awarded a Fascist decoration by Franco for his services as a war correspondent in

Spain. Many of his fellow agents had similar Fascist credentials which, judging by the rate at which they were hired, was certainly no impediment to a career with British intelligence.

But British Fascism was not the only secret to Soviet success in espionage, nor was the KGB their only agency active in Britain. Long before Father Maly arrived in London, the GRU had planted members of Turkul's network in London:

> One was the ubiquitous Anatoli Baykolov. This supposedly White Russian journalist was an associate of Sabline, the Tsarist *chargé d'affaires* who had gone over to the Soviets in the twenties.[3]

Both Communist agents in London had a mutual friend, Guy Liddell, an enterprising young officer working in Special Branch, the police unit responsible for domestic security. No one knows how or why Liddell was recruited by Turkul's GRU network but there are several theories:

> While it is impossible to do anything more than speculate on what personal frustrations and subtle external political forces *might* have led Guy Liddell to cast his lot in with the Soviets, certain obvious possibilities such as his artistic temperament, his long-term connections with Baykolov and the penetrated Russian *émigré* community in London – as well as the scars of his marriage – can be considered factors . . . Then, too, other sources told me about Liddell's premarital love affair in the early twenties with a London University student (believed to still be alive), whose Marxism and links to the Communist party were well known to her contemporaries. This lead has so far proved impossible to corroborate, but if true, it could explain how one of the ranking officers in Special Branch might have become an early victim of a Soviet 'honeytrap'.[4]

There is some circumstantial evidence to place the date of Liddell's recruitment to the 1920s. At that time, every Soviet Embassy was assigned a 'Soviet Kolonii' (SK) Officer to monitor the loyalty of the local 'Soviet Colony'. The principal function of the SK Officer was to ensure that no Soviet Diplomat defected. The Embassy in London never had an SK officer. There may be a simple explanation: Guy Liddell was performing that function for them. He was in charge of anti-Soviet operations for Special Branch. Any information on potential Soviet defectors was passed to him. In 1931 Liddell joined MI5 and became head of the entire anti-Soviet section.[5]

As the British author John Costello notes, the Liddell–Baykolov connection could explain why MI5 failed on nearly two dozen occasions to take effective action against Soviet operations.[6] Certainly by 1933, there was ample warning that Baykolov was a Communist:

> In 1933 a Ukrainian named Korostorets warned *émigré* leaders in Paris that Baykolov was really working for the Soviets and a warning to that effect appeared in the October 22 edition of *Zovrozhdenie*. His activities interviewing recent Russian escapees, supposedly for a study of the Soviet judicial system, appear to have been tied up with his mission for the OGPU [Soviet Intelligence Service]. He was an associate of Sabline, the former Tsarist *chargé d'affaires* in London, who was later found to have been an undercover OGPU agent monitoring the White Russian exiles in Britain. He had links to Skoblin, the OGPU operative in Paris, who was involved in the 1932 kidnapping of General Miller, the Paris-based chairman of the Russian Military Union [ROWS] ... Baykolov was a longtime MI5 and Foreign Office source of Soviet intelligence; his contact was Guy Liddell.[7]

Baykolov was regarded as totally trustworthy because he and his GRU accomplice in the German Embassy, Putlitz, had helped protect one of the most embarrassing secrets of the British government:

> Moscow did not hesitate to activate the Baykolov back channel when it believed Moscow's interests could be served.
>
> This appears to have been the case on January 30, 1936, the day King George V died. There was a widespread concern about the pro-German sympathies of the new King, Edward VIII ... It was feared that Edward's coronation would accelerate a rapprochement between London and Berlin. There is evidence that the Soviets activated the Baykolov connection to pass word of this danger ... The Soviets were getting their information from inside the German embassy via their mole Putlitz.[8]

The information was astounding: Wallis Simpson was a Nazi agent. Simpson was also Edward's mistress. Through her royal lover, she was in a position to pass on Cabinet minutes and top secret information. If Putlitz and Baykolov were correct, there was a Nazi spy in the King's bedroom. Liddell had MI5 place a wiretap on the telephone lines of the Ambassador's residence in London to see if Simpson was working for the Germans. The wiretap was a major shock to the British government. As we shall see, Mrs Simpson was the least of their problems.

Transcripts of the British wiretaps have never been publicly released. However, in the US National Archives we discovered a top secret American interrogation file of Joachim von Ribbentrop, who was Hitler's Ambassador to London before becoming German Foreign Minister. It was Ribbentrop's phone that was tapped. Shortly before he was hanged at Nuremberg, Ribbentrop confirmed that he almost concluded an alliance in the 1930s with the help of two British leaders who were secret Nazi sympathisers. One was a former Prime Minister, the other was the future King:

> It was perhaps hard to believe in the light of events, that the Führer's fondest dream had been of an Anglo-German alliance in the service of which he had been prepared to maintain a force of twelve divisions for the defence of any part of the British Empire. Such were the Führer's sentiments that he was the more deeply hurt when Britain seemed to mistrust his motives and to obstruct his plans . . . but his efforts to win sympathy among distinguished people, including Mr Ramsay MacDonald and King Edward VIII for National Socialist conceptions had not been altogether unsuccessful.[9]

The recently disclosed papers of the Duke of Coburg confirm Ribbentrop's confession. Soon after his father's death, Edward Windsor, the Prince of Wales, had told the Nazis that an alliance between Germany and Britain was an 'urgent necessity'. Based on assurances from Windsor that he would prevent British intervention, Hitler seized the Rhineland from the French. Edward had promised Hitler that Britain would never interfere with his plans 're Jews or re anything else'.[10]

The Foreign Office was alarmed over the King's 'increasing and disturbing intervention in foreign affairs'. A search was under way for 'ways and means of compelling him to abdicate'. The King's mistress, the pro-Nazi American Wallis Simpson, was used as the excuse.[11] No mention was made of the Nazi wiretaps. For many years the public has believed that Windsor abdicated the throne to marry the woman he loved.[12]

There is ample evidence that Windsor was merely a pompous dilettante who was used as a pawn by Mrs Simpson. But FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover was convinced that Windsor was himself a dangerous Nazi agent. He wanted the former King imprisoned, not just interned in the Bahamas.[13] The British thought the suggestion absurd, but made every effort to monitor the former King to determine whether in fact

> Edward was in correspondence on political matters with Hitler . . . Menzies made extraordinary efforts to intercept the letters but was largely unsuccessful, and it was not until immediately after World War II that they

> were found. Then they gave the Churchill government and its successor a severe shock when evidence was received that laid open Edward to charges of having committed treason.[14]

There is direct evidence from another source that after he abdicated, Windsor betrayed his country while it was at war with the Nazis:

> By 1940 . . . Windsor had become a member of the British Military Mission with the French Army Command . . . according to German Foreign Office Records, Windsor actually disclosed to [a Nazi] emissary the details of a secret meeting of the Allied War Council. Windsor revealed that the Council had discussed in detail the situation that would arise if Germany invaded Belgium . . . The entire message was of such importance to the German government that it was shown to Hitler in person.[15]

British intelligence realised that the Windsor secret was a bombshell. If Edward were put on trial, then a small but significant part of the British Establishment would have to be put in the dock with him. In the 1930s Fascism (or corporatism as it was called in polite circles) was a popular philosophy among more right-wing members of the British upper class. Some were in the pro-Fascist Cliveden set; others were prominent businessmen connected to Windsor's schemes, including Lord McGowan of Imperial Chemicals Industries and Montagu Norman of the Bank of England, who were laundering money to Hitler through Swiss banks in the mistaken belief that a Nazi victory was inevitable.[16] Lord Rothermere of the London *Daily Mail* 'gave a total of $5 million in cash to assist in Hitler's rise to power'.[17]

After Hitler started to lose the war, Windsor's contacts tried to hide their Nazi connections in Canaris's Black Orchestra. In fact, Lord Halifax and others in Windsor's group had been trying to negotiate peace with Hitler behind Churchill's back.[18] When the extent of Windsor's treason was confirmed by MI5, Churchill and Robert Vansittart, who handled sensitive matters for the Foreign Office, scrambled frantically to hide the scandal.

The Soviets, who had already penetrated the real Black Orchestra through Turkul, decided to help protect the secret, if for no other reason than insurance in case their agents were ever discovered. A wise precaution as it happened, since the Windsor scandal was later used to blackmail the British to protect Turkul and other double agents.[19]

The British did not realise until the 1960s that the original guardians of the Royal secret were all connected to Turkul. It was later discovered that Baykolov, who passed on the original tip about Mrs Simpson, had worked for Turkul in Paris. It is no coincidence that Baykolov's MI5 contact, Guy Liddell (who later vouched for Turkul's bona fides to the OSS), used another Turkul contact from Paris, Dickie Ellis, to translate the Ribbentrop wiretaps.[20]

The more they kept silent about upper class Fascists, the safer the Communist moles became. Respected by the British establishment as the trusted guardians of Royalty's greatest scandal, the GRU agents were quickly promoted. Baykolov became an adviser to Churchill and Vansittart on Soviet affairs. Liddell became head of MI5's counter-espionage section. His associate, Roger Hollis (also a suspected GRU agent), took over the MI5 section monitoring Fascists in Britain.[21]

By the end of World War II, Windsor's 'protectors' occupied so many key positions in MI5 that the GRU had to borrow KGB agents to help monitor Britain's Fascist minority.[22] Although the KGB did not know who was helping them, Father Maly's 'Apostles' discovered that not only could they pass security clearances for sensitive government posts, but they even became the guardians of the Windsor scandal:

> It was extremely odd that the head of counter espionage in England at that time, Guy Liddell – who preferred homosexual company though it was claimed that he himself was not a homosexual – paid little if any attention to the politics of the Apostles.[23]

Liddell not only ignored them, he hired them. The notoriously homosexual Guy Burgess took over from Baykolov as Putlitz's MI5 handler from whom he learned a great deal, 'especially concerning the Duke and Duchess of Windsor's association with Ribbentrop'.[24] Liddell subsequently helped Burgess to leave MI5 and join SIS.[25] Burgess's one-time lover and fellow Apostle, Anthony Blunt, was recruited by MI5 to retrieve copies of the embarrassing Windsor correspondence with the Nazis. Blunt then received an appointment at the Palace from the grateful Royal Family.[26]

Kim Philby, who may have met Mrs Simpson at German Embassy parties given by the Anglo-German Friendship Society, was a most unlikely candidate for Soviet espionage. At Cambridge, Philby was identified as a Marxist and a homosexual. Before the

GRU intervened, he could not find three referees to sponsor him for a minor Foreign Office post. Yet suddenly he found that there was 'nothing recorded against' him when he applied for the British Secret Service.[27]

There is no direct evidence that Philby's early SIS duties brought him into direct contact with the Vatican, although he was well positioned to observe them. As head of the Spanish desk (later expanded to include Italy) he may have been privy to the Black Orchestra's British–Vatican negotiations. Before the war was over, Philby was no longer a peripheral observer, but a principal player with the Vatican. In 1944 he was promoted to head the new anti-Soviet section of SIS.

Behind his unassuming stutter and false Nazi sympathies, Philby was working for the Soviets when he headed Britain's anti-Soviet programme.[28] The new position provided ample opportunity for sabotage. On 13 November 1944, shortly after Philby's promotion, 'a German officer named Karl Marcus, alias Carlsen, arrived in France . . . "he had been sent to get in touch with the British, particularly Lord Vansittart, and that he would disclose his mission only to a British Officer" . . . Marcus described himself as the secretary to and emissary of Kurt Jahnke.'[29]

Marcus's message was simple: Jahnke wanted to re-open the Black Orchestra peace negotiations through the Vatican. After Canaris's arrest for the 20 July plot, Jahnke had become the leader of the German opposition. According to Marcus, Jahnke had found a new recruit: SS intelligence leader Walter Schellenberg, who had helped save Turkul and Klatt from the Gestapo. Instead of smashing the Vatican's Black Orchestra, Schellenberg had joined up to save his neck. Once again the Vatican was sending peace messages from the Germans.[30] All of the Ultra intercepts of Nazi–Vatican negotiations for this period remain highly classified.

Stalin was kept apprised of the Anglo-German negotiations 'by an agent somewhere in the Allied high command – his informant may well have been Philby making his first appearance as a Soviet spy on the grand scale'.[31] On 3 April 1945 Stalin sent the British 'his ugliest message of the war', accusing them of making a deal with the Nazis behind his back:

> . . . do not have doubts that the negotiations have taken place and that they have ended in an agreement . . . As a result of this at the present

> moment the Germans on the western front in fact have ceased the war against England . . . and continue the war with Russia.[32]

The battle statistics for the following week suggest that Stalin was prophetic. There were more than 40,000 German casualties on the Eastern front versus 2,500 in the West. Even more suspicious, over a quarter of a million German soldiers were suddenly reported 'missing' in the West.[33]

Stalin suspected that the British would use the 'missing' Nazis against him. Churchill later admitted that he had given orders 'to Lord Montgomery directing him to be careful in collecting the German arms, to stack them so that they could easily be issued again to the German soldiers'. Montgomery agreed that he had obeyed the order. It was true that 'England had prepared for war with Russia using the defeated German army as an ally even before the war was over'.[34]

If Philby helped Stalin expose the Black Orchestra deal, it was not his only coup that year. In September he became the first KGB officer to learn that they had a secret benefactor. A GRU defector in Canada named Gouzenko told the British that there was a GRU spy code named ELLI inside 'five of MI'. Soon after, another Soviet defector, Volkov, gave an even more explicit identification: 'I know, for instance, that one of these agents is fulfilling the duties of a head of section of the British Counterintelligence Directorate.'[35] On 18 and 19 September Philby cabled this news to KGB headquarters in Moscow under his code name 'Stanley'.[36]

At first Moscow refused to believe Philby's cable. No one in KGB headquarters had ever heard of 'ELLI' nor did they know of such a high level agent. Moscow's 1945 reply to Philby was decoded many years later by Peter Wright of British intelligence:

> It read: 'Consent has been obtained from the Chiefs to consult with the neighbors about Stanley's material about their affairs in Canada. Stanley's data is correct.'
>
> . . . Philby by the time this message was sent, had been a top-class KGB agent and head of Counterespionage in MI6 for the best part of ten years, yet it appeared as if they doubted his intelligence. Why did it need checking? What was it about Stanley's data that had thrown the KGB into such confusion?
>
> Only one explanation could account for all these oddities. The KGB must have been ignorant of the spy in 'five of MI' controlled by the GRU. Thus, when Philby relayed to them the news of this spy, and the threat made to him by Gouzenko, the KGB had to obtain permission from the 'Chiefs', the

> Politburo to consult with the 'neighbors', the GRU to ask if they did indeed have such an asset in London. Having received assurances from the GRU that they did have such a spy, the KGB realized that the heat was likely to come on in London, so they sent back the message confirming Stanley's data, and followed it up with urgent orders to increase security.[37]

Whether ELLI was Hollis (head of Section F) or Liddell (head of Section B) is still hotly debated. But there is no doubt that after September 1945, Lavrenty Beria, head of the KGB, was told the Politbureau's greatest secret: through the Turkul network, the GRU had slowly but thoroughly taken over MI5 while the KGB was struggling to place a few agents inside MI6.[38] From that day, Beria insisted that all top Soviet agents be co-ordinated to help each other. From 1945 until the mid-1950s, Soviet intelligence ran the most effective spy operation in history: no one else before or since has ever come close.

While American and British intelligence were hopelessly divided and restructured after World War II, Soviet intelligence executed a plan of smooth integration to protect and promote all their agents in the West. For example, when MI6 discovered German documents proving that Turkul's friend Ellis was a Nazi agent, Philby ordered that the investigation be closed. No top KGB agent would have risked the inevitable exposure, except under orders from Moscow. If Ellis had been exposed in 1945, it would have jeopardised Turkul, who was far more valuable than Philby. Because of Philby's cover-up, Turkul and Ellis were safe for several more years.

Apart from being a suspected GRU agent, Ellis later confessed that he was a Nazi double agent during the war. Despite his admitted treason, Ellis was not tried because of what he knew: after all, if he were a Nazi so was Edward VIII. Rather, Ellis was recruited by SIS's Colin Gubbins to purge British intelligence files, presumably of any other embarrassing evidence. As we shall see, there was quite a bit to be put into the shredder. Ellis claimed that it was Menzies who ordered him to keep up Turkul's Nazi contacts in the first place.[39]

Returning to London in 1945, Philby must have been pleased with himself. It had been a very good year. In Stockholm he had personally trained yet another Baltic agent to use British intelligence codes.[40] Another anti-Communist 'freedom fighter' was already on his way across the Black Sea. Philby passed the new agent's codes and identity to the Soviets in order to prepare a proper reception. Upon his arrival, he was placed under discreet surveillance, and not disturbed until he had recruited all the local anti-Communist dissidents. As soon as Philby's Judas goat had unwittingly identified all his contacts, the entire network was arrested.

More than forty years later, when the Latvian Nazi agent, Robert Osis, was released from the Gulag, he identified Philby as the man who recruited him and then betrayed his entire network to the Communists.[41] But there was an even darker side to Philby's Nazi recruiting. He was helping the KGB take over the Vatican's networks.

Even before World War II, Soviet intelligence had planted Communist double agents among each of the Eastern European Fascist groups. Having riddled the Fascist opposition with informers, after the war the Soviets were only too glad to help the Vatican smuggle the Nazis to every Western nation gullible enough to take them in.[42] As one British intelligence officer later lamented, there was no better disguise than posing as a fugitive war criminal. 'It was the perfect cover.'[43] Soon after La Vista's report, the Americans warned the Vatican that Communist agents were using the Ratlines, but no one believed such reports. The Vatican never knew what hit them.

By the time he left London in 1946, Philby had merged the hopelessly riddled Nazi networks like Intermarium and Prometheus into the Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations. The Vatican was unaware that the Soviets, not the British, controlled ABN from its inception and had bent the Ratlines into a complete circle.[44] The KGB must have been amused that the Vatican was smuggling Soviet agents to Western countries.

In 1946 Philby was sent to Turkey where, as chief of station for anti-Soviet operations, he would have a bird's-eye view of British, Vatican and American operations in the Balkans and Central Europe.[45] More importantly, Philby launched his own Vatican operation. Shortly before he left London, arrangements were made to surface another of Intermarium's fugitive Nazis. Ferdinand Durčansky had been the Foreign Minister of the Slovak Nazi puppet government, and was tried *in absentia* as a war criminal by the democratic government of Czechoslovakia. After disappearing at the end of the war, he resurfaced in Rome. According to the Czech trial records:

> Dr Ferdinand Durčansky was in Rome in October 1946, and in a certain coffee house met the English woman . . . This English woman disclosed that there is some club of Central European Nations the aim of which is to restore those states which existed under German rule in Central Europe. Croat Ustashi, Poles of the Anders brand, Hungarians, Serb Chetniks are members of this club, together with the accused Dr Durčansky, whose main aim is to restore the totalitarian Slovak Republic.
>
> Durčansky had also a conversation with Anders on this subject, who had allegedly given his consent to this plan . . . Durčansky has interesting information concerning present conditions in Slovakia. He asserts that only approximately 10% are Communists, and that all of those are Lutherans. According to him the Catholics and their priests, and 80% of the Bishops would be in favor of a restoration of Slovak State independence. Even the Vatican allegedly sympathizes with his plans. Asked by the English woman from where his money would come, Durčansky said that he had many friends in the world.[46]

On 6 June 1947 the *New York Times* reported that Durčansky was in Italy 'where he broadcasts daily to Slovakia and is in constant contact with the underground'.[47] On 24 June the Czechoslovak government announced that leaflets were being distributed claiming that a new government would soon seize power in Slovakia with Durčansky as premier.[48] Most of the world dismissed this as *émigré* hyperbole. After all, Durčansky was listed by the UN as a Category A war criminal. Who would possibly support an ex-Nazi to overthrow the only non-Communist government in Eastern Europe?

According to his CIA file, Durčansky proceeded with his plot. Further inquiries disclosed his source of funding:

> Durčansky in no way denies that the Slovak populist emigration is supported by the Vatican, and that a part of the financial means is received by them from some church dignitaries, especially in Belgium and Argentina.[49]

Since the CIA also described Durčansky as one of Intermarium's leaders, it is likely that the Vatican was again laundering British intelligence money to Durčansky's Slovak Liberation Movement. Before Durčansky's plot, the Communists were a significant minority but lacked important posts in the government; his plot changed all of that.

In September 1947 a commission headed by General Ferjenčik announced that they had uncovered a 'massive conspiracy' to overthrow the government. The Durčansky ring had been thoroughly infiltrated, and numerous documents were produced linking scores of Slovak politicians to Durčansky's ring. The minority Communists demanded that parliament be purged. They then gained several key ministries and soon spread the anti-Fascist purge into every corner of the government. Within a few months, they seized control of the entire country from the fragmented Democratic opposition. The Communist counter coup occurred so quickly that the British Consul wondered if Durčansky had staged the whole thing:

> [Durčansky's] subversive organisation . . . appears undoubtedly to exist, though it does have a curious aspect. The evidence collected is so complete and well-documented that it is difficult to believe in the genuineness of the movement, and Dr Frastachy believes that the participants were inveigled into it by *Agents Provocateurs* . . . The whole thing, I was told, smacked of elaborate stage management: but it seems to have been effective, whether or not that was its purpose, in giving a handle to the instigation of the purge.[50]

At the time, no one realised Durčansky's connection to Intermarium and Philby. Under Philby's direction, Intermarium had not overthrown a single Communist regime, but it had destroyed a freely elected government. After the *débâcle*, a cover story went out to move suspicion from British intelligence:

> The Czechoslovak Telegraph Agency quotes the Slovak Commissioner of Interior as stating that Durčansky had escaped from a prison in Rome, disguised as a nun. He is reported trying to get in touch with French Foreign Minister Bidault, whom he has known since the days when they were students together.[51]

It was a plausible story because Durčansky had worked for French intelligence before Britain took over Intermarium. In fact, Durčansky had not fled to France but had gone down the Vatican Ratline to Argentina. As head of the Balkan section of SIS, Philby probably got credit for shielding his superiors from blame for the Czech disaster. Both he and Durčansky were subsequently promoted, Philby becoming the SIS liaison to CIA, while Durčansky became Intermarium President.[52]

With Philby running field operations in Central Europe from 1947 to 1949, it was hardly surprising that the Czech government was overthrown, the Križari smashed in Yugoslavia, the Romanian infiltration suppressed, and the abortive Albanian invasion betrayed. Every British initiative was leaked to the Communists well in advance. In 1948 the British reluctantly concluded that they lacked sufficient finances to combat the Communists' growing success in Greece and the Balkans. They asked President Truman to take over SIS's anti-Communist groups.[53]

Menzies's biographer candidly admits that many of the SIS nets passed on to the Americans were Nazi collaborators. The rationale was that these extremist organisations

> existed as a major political irritant that, at critical times throughout the period from 1925 until the mid-1950's, nourished Soviet insecurity. During the period immediately before World War II, the [SIS] cells inside Russia – they were known by such code names as the Prometheus Network, the Inter-Marium Programme, the Abramtchik faction, and the Russian Army of Liberation ... were taken over by the German military intelligence service of Admiral Wilhelm Canaris ... After World War II, when Canaris's men were all in jail, Menzies reacquired interest in these organisations until, at last, he passed them to the American intelligence services. Such complex tangles were not uncommon ... although they had not yet become the infinity of complication ... where, as the good wizard said of the bad ones in J. R. R. Tolkien's epic, *The Lord of the Rings*, 'It is difficult with these evil folk to know when they are in league, and when they are cheating one another.'[54]

The real 'Lord of the Rings' was not Menzies but Lavrenty Beria. KGB headquarters must have congratulated themselves when in 1949, Menzies announced that Philby had been promoted to Senior United Kingdom Liaison Officer to America and Canada. Philby's mission was to transfer Britain's Nazi 'freedom fighters' to the Americans.[55] This was an important opportunity for the KGB as most American intelligence services had been reluctant to employ Nazis, although they occasionally bent the rules for rocket scientists.

However, Philby was about to realise his first significant failure. The newly formed CIA wanted no part of Durčansky, Intermarium or the ABN. They supported the moderate Czech Democrats, many of whom had fled to America after the Communist takeover. Durčansky was anathema to them, and Philby had to find another sanctuary for his Slovak Nazis.

Some of the most embarrassing Canadian secrets are revealed in Durčansky's massive CIA file. Before its release in 1987, the CIA blanked out all references which might embarrass a foreign government, as required by the US Freedom of Information Act. However, the CIA declassified the fact that Durčansky headed Intermarium,[56] not knowing that a few months later a British author would reveal that it was run by British intelligence.

Anthony Cave Brown, in his recent book on Sir Stewart Menzies,[57] describes Intermarium as one of many 'long and witty' British intelligence operations. As we have seen from Philby's penetration, the joke was really on SIS. Cave Brown correctly identifies Intermarium as having worked for the British, then the Nazis, then the British again, and finally the Americans.

What Cave Brown does not mention is that in 1949 the wealthy Americans at first refused Philby's offer to take over Intermarium. In fact, the CIA tried to screen out all known Nazis before they entered the country. Some were easy to spot. The CIA noted that in 1946 Durčansky had been listed by the UN as a Category A war criminal, and that in 1947 he was 'condemned to death by the Slovakian National Council after trial in absentia'.[58] This was before the Communist takeover was completed.

On 20 September 1950 the CIA sent a nasty report on Durčansky to the US immigration authorities.[59] After they closed their door, Philby had no alternative but to dump Durčansky and his Slovak Nazis elsewhere. On 15 December Durčansky left Argentina via London for Canada. The British blushingly admitted that Durčansky was a wanted war criminal, but apologised to the Canadians, claiming that Durčansky's UK visa was an 'administrative error'.[60]

Despite this confession, the Canadians made no move to arrest or expel Durčansky. It is no coincidence that Philby travelled back and forth from Washington to Ottowa to help Canadian intelligence 'vet the Nazis' who were settling there.[61] Where his Nazi agents were concerned, Philby ensured that 'administrative errors' occurred with clockwork regularity. Durčansky travelled freely in and out of Canada, despite the fact that the government was fully aware of his war crimes.[62]

In 1951 Durčansky sent a letter to the White House listing his address as 97 Crawford Street, Ontario.[63] Although he spent most of his later years working for ABN in London and Germany, he was still giving occasional anti-Semitic speeches in Canada well into the 1970s.[64] He had a friendly audience, as thousands of Fascists settled in Canada.[65]

Among other Nazi collaborators identified by CIA in Canada is Durčansky's close wartime companion, Jozef Kirschbaum.[66] Both are listed in a report received by the CIA as senior Fascists 'guilty of the gruesome calvary of the Slovak Jews'.[67] In 1952 Kirschbaum tried to obtain a US visa, but was quickly exposed in the media. A photo of him in Fascist uniform was shown on TV, and he quickly scuttled back to safety in Canada.[68] He is still on the State Department's banned list.[69]

Durčansky met the same reception in 1959. The *New York Times* accused him of being a Nazi. Durčansky denied that he was a Fascist, and blurted out that his 1950 American visa application 'was rejected on the grounds that he was "a Communist"'.[70] America was not alone in suspecting that Durčansky was a Communist spy, as the CIA noted:

> During his tenure of the Ministry of Foreign Affairs (1939–1941), Durčansky allegedly attempted – prior to the German–Soviet conflict – to establish certain contacts with Soviet politics through the Soviet Legation in Budapest . . . Hitler is said to have summoned Tiso to Germany and ordered Durčansky's removal from office . . . The Germans are said to have made further representations as a result of which Durčansky left Slovakia and eventually went to Italy.[71]

What the CIA did not know in 1950 was the extent of Durčansky's 'support from the Vatican', or its involvement with the Canadian government. The Vatican can hardly shirk responsibility for the emigration of Nazis to Canada. They had unsuccessfully requested on several occasions that Durčansky's associate, the Fascist Slovak Ambassador to the Vatican, Karol Sidor, be allowed to settle in America. Sidor had become an embarrassment in Rome, so Pius XII personally asked the Canadian Privy Council to shelter him.[72]

Ironically, the Deschenes Commission which investigated Nazis in Canada, concluded that America was most responsible for dumping Nazis there.[73] In fairness, the Canadian investigators were not even permitted by their own lawyer to request Durčansky's CIA file. Moreover, all references to British intelligence were purged from the Deschenes Commission's 1986 report. Not one word of the embarrassing Philby connection was published. The lawyer involved was recently appointed Canada's Ambassador to the UN.[74]

Canada continues to pay the price for its indifference. The CIA files are filled with examples of Communist propaganda discrediting the West as a haven for war criminals like Durčansky and Stetsko. For the next two decades, the Communists held ABN up to the world as an organization of war criminals, whose leaders were frequent visitors to Canada.

In January 1990 some of the American intelligence files on the ABN were declassified at the authors' request. From the moment Stetsko became ABN head in 1949, US officials were told to ignore his persistent approaches. He was not to have a single piece of paper that he could use to claim US support.[75] By 1953, all the 'moderate and democratic member groups' had quit ABN.[76] In 1955 a US Senator was confidentially told that:

> Many of the leaders of the A.B.N. were closely associated either with the Nazi government or with the totalitarian regimes of their respective states. Because of their records many have been unable to obtain an immigration or visitor's visa into the United States or to other countries. There is no question of their anti-Communist sentiments but 'neither was there a question of the anti-Communist sentiments of Hitler'. I permitted [the senator's aide] to read brief biographic sketches on Ferenc Farkas, Grigore Manoilescu, Dimitr Waltscheff, Yaroslav Stetsko, Radoslav Ostrovski, and Ferdinand Durčansky. The sketches listed the war-time posts of the A.B.N. leaders, a record which itself is indicative of the political complexion of the A.B.N.[77]

In 1958 the US Veterans of Foreign Wars were warned to have nothing to do with the ABN:

> Mr. Stetsko's . . . organization is based on the Führer principle . . . and has a long record of murder, terror and coercion perpetrated in the DP camps in Germany against those Ukrainians who do not share their views.[78]

The Veterans were told to deal with the CIA front group, the 'American Committee for Liberation'. Philby had utterly failed to convince the Americans to take over ABN, and had to settle for second best by dumping his networks in Canada.

For Philby, the worst was yet to come. By 1951, US intelligence had broken portions of the Soviet diplomatic code. Several Communist agents were in danger of exposure, and Guy Burgess and Donald Maclean fled to the Soviet Union. Philby was unofficially expelled from Washington in disgrace, and the CIA never trusted him or his agents again. They set out to remove any of Philby's Nazis who had any contact with US intelligence.[79]

American intelligence naively believed that it had defeated the KGB's best agent. They had refused to swallow Philby's Nazi bait and had even detected several Communist agents among his 'freedom fighters' before they could emigrate to America.[80]

What the CIA did not realise for years was that the Vatican's Nazis had a new home just across America's northern border. Of course, they had received a great deal of assistance on the way to Canada from the KGB networks in Britain:

> Agents of the 'Cambridge network' were . . . remarkably well placed at the start of the Cold War to ensure that the MI5 and MI6 vetting slips carried the magic words 'no traces against' when it came to the penetration of the ABN by Moscow. This ensured that a slew of Soviet agents, including . . . the Czech Intermarium chief Ferdinand Durčansky, the Ukrainian Stefan Bandera and the Byelorussian leader Mikolai Abramtchik, were either directly involved or had staff members who ended up running and recruiting other agents for covert operations against the Soviet Union.[81]

Before he left Washington in 1951, Philby had merged all of the Vatican's Nazi groups – Intermarium, Prometheus, the International of Liberty and several others – into one giant Soviet sewer. The CIC files even listed Jaroslav Stetsko as a suspected Communist agent. Of course, it was probably a false lead; the real Communists were harder to find.

Back in Moscow, the Politbureau was not in the least dismayed when the KGB's operation collapsed. It really did not matter that the Americans had shunned ABN. Behind the KGB's back, the Politbureau had supervised a GRU counter-operation that had succeeded where Philby had failed. The Americans were enthusiastically funding Turkul's 'resistance movement'. They had dodged the KGB's Nazis only to fall into the GRU's trap.

At the end of World War II, the remnants of the Vlasov army under Turkul's control established liaison with the anti-Tito forces in Yugoslavia.[82] Turkul knew that the Fascist anti-Communist forces were 'secretly supported' by British intelligence, and so he attached his staff to theirs.[83] He joined the various Fascist factions in their escape to Austria. On 3 May 1945 Turkul's intelligence chief, Max Klatt, was released from a Nazi prison and headed to Salzburg to link up with Turkul.[84] It was time to recycle the phony MAX network to the even more gullible Allies.

In rapid succession, Turkul and Klatt offered their 'anti-Communist' network to British intelligence, the US Office of Strategic Services, and General Patton's intelligence staff.[85] Captured Germans had already reported on the incredible MAX network. The British Army's counter-intelligence staff was working on a report about the miraculous Abwehr spy team of the Hungarian Jew and the 'notorious professional spy General aka Prince Turkul normally resident in Rome'.[86] But some British officers were rather sceptical about Turkul's 'extensive and infallible intelligence service which delivered information with equal speed from Leningrad, Kuibischev, Nororossik on the Western desert, [which] was suspiciously free from the administrative hitches to which most spy systems are liable'.[87]

Fortunately for Turkul, Klatt was not captured by the author of that report. On 24 May 1945 he was arrested in Austria by two US CIC men who turned him over to the OSS. He had fallen into friendly hands indeed. 'By November of 1945, Klatt had concluded an agreement with OSS in Salzburg to work against the Communists.'[88] At the same time, Turkul had established the 'Russian National Central Committee' in Salzburg and, of course, was appointed chairman.[89] The Committee screened refugees for the OSS, looking for Communist double agents. Once again, the Communist fox was guarding the *émigré* chicken coop.

Turkul's success in contacting the OSS was no suprise. His aide, Father George Romanov, had long standing relations with the OSS in Switzerland. In fact, the Turkul network's 'first contact with the allies' was with Paul Blum, Allen Dulles's assistant in the Berne OSS office. Dulles was hoping to become head of OSS, but instead, was transferred to the backwaters of occupied Germany.[90]

Having been passed over for promotion, the disgruntled Dulles probably saw the Turkul net as his route to stardom. He had undoubtedly heard the Turkul legend from the American born Jahnke, who had fled to Switzerland to escape the SS. While Marcus was conveying the Jahnke–Schellenberg terms to London, the Black Orchestra was also negotiating with the Americans. The Vatican was asked to open peace talks with Dulles, and conveyed a message through Dom Emanuele Caronti, Abbot General of the Benedictines:

> In the sixth year of war, Germany finds herself alone in the fight against Bolshevist Russia. In the interests of saving mankind, Germany now looks

> to the highest ecclesiastical authority to intervene with the Anglo-Americans and guarantee absolute secrecy to any negotiations with the Vatican.[91]

Dulles was no stranger to Vatican secret negotiations, as he had subsequently used Church contacts to negotiate the surrender of German forces in Italy.[92] Unfortunately, Stalin had found out about these talks and put pressure on President Truman to call them off. That did not stop Dulles, who went ahead anyway, much to the President's anger. As it turned out, Dulles's German contacts had been stalling him, and only concluded the agreement when they learned of Hitler's suicide. An investigation showed that Dulles had been thoroughly taken in, and had made embarrassing promises to protect major war criminals, but received nothing in return.[93]

Dulles returned to Washington as an outsider, but through his old contacts, kept his hand in intelligence work. If Dulles thought that Turkul's network would restore his tarnished prestige, he was in for a rude shock. By June 1946, Turkul's propaganda antics against the Soviet Union had attracted the attention of the CIC, which learned that he was living in a villa near Parsch DP camp:

> An interview with Mr Malkievich, fnu, director of the UNRRA team at Camp Parsch, Salzburg, disclosed that Subject and his associates have been actively engaged in disrupting morale and contributing to unrest and apprehension in the camp . . . [they] circulated wild rumors among the camp's inhabitants and have, on frequent occasions, slandered UNRRA and its efforts to run the DP camp on peaceful democratic lines. On one occasion, the Turkul group stated its dissatisfaction with [the UNRRA leaders], claiming that the former was a Jew and the latter was a Communist.[94]

The CIC concluded, however, that despite Turkul's claim to be a 'Vlasov Army Commander', he was 'a vain, not-too-clever opportunist seeking always to be at the head of an organization of power or influence':

> There is no evidence as yet to hand to indicate that Subject is anything other than an old-time anti-Bolshevik constantly dreaming of leading again the fight against the Soviets with any available means.[95]

Apparently, Dulles took Turkul rather more seriously than the CIC. The next document in the CIC file has been completely censored by the CIA, perhaps to protect the reputation of a man who became CIA Director in 1953.[96] However, the other Turkul files contain ample references to the developing scandal.

In January 1946 a joint British–American intelligence unit, (SCI/A) attempted to recruit one of Turkul's aides in Munich. These élite Allied 'Special Counter Intelligence' units were the only ones entrusted with code breaking secrets such as ULTRA. As we shall see, many of the SCI teams were extremely sympathetic to Menzies's and Dulles's anti-Soviet schemes. In mid-1946, the SCI team sent an unnamed source (probably Turkul) to Germany to recruit yet another anti-Communist operative, his old GRU sponsor, Claudius Voss.[97]

Not suprisingly, the Communist moles in British intelligence gave Voss a clean bill of health, revealing to the Americans 'in the utmost discretion', that Voss had been a British agent since 1923 when he was 'one of the leading men of the Inner Line' counter-intelligence service in Paris. In 1929 Voss had 'in effect become chief' of ROWS for the Balkans. For the next ten years, he and Turkul had collaborated on a 'project unknown', which Voss later admitted was the creation of the NTS.[98]

No mention was made of Turkul's wartime service for the Nazis, but British intelligence volunteered 'that since the end of the war both Voss and [Klatt's deputy, Ira Longin] have been building intelligence nets for source, allegedly for the western allies'.[99] This was a coy reference to Dulles's recruitment of Turkul. Indeed, the files explicitly state that Voss's agents were working for British intelligence and a 'Colonel Dulles' in Washington.[100]

Armed with such impressive credentials, the SCI team should have quickly recruited Voss. There was only one minor obstacle: they discovered that he was a longstanding Communist agent.[101] The proof against Voss was never revealed, but he was suddenly placed under arrest.[102] In a desperate attempt to save himself, Voss tried to prove his anti-Communist bona fides by providing chapter and verse on the MAX reports and his longstanding association with Klatt, Longin and Turkul.[103] This only alarmed the SCI even more. If Voss was a Communist agent, maybe they all were; if so, Dulles's post-war work with Turkul's organisation had been hopelessly compromised.

It was a potential catastrophe. Klatt and Turkul also worked for the same Colonel Lewis Perry who was co-ordinating the spectacularly unsuccessful Križari incursions into Yugoslavia.[104] Turkul's villa in Glasenbach was conveniently close to both the Križari bases and the starting point of Father Draganović's Ratline. Indeed, Turkul's intelligence reports were sent directly to the American officer co-ordinating the Ratline, Major Milano.[105] Apparently, Milano was relying on Turkul's information to determine which defectors were valuable enough to send down the Ratline. The code name for this programme was 'The Crown Project'.[106] As we shall see, this operation bears a striking similarity to another American programme involving Father Draganović.

Klatt was arrested in Salzburg in 1946 and held at a special Allied interrogation centre for preliminary questioning before being sent to London. He claimed that he had never collaborated with Voss, but this only aroused suspicion that he was lying. Since Klatt 'was unquestionably the brains of the Turkul operation, it would have made sense for him to deny any association with a known Soviet agent like Voss'. The more he talked, the more he contradicted the facts that Voss and others had already confirmed. It was beginning to look very bad. Orders were received from Washington to terminate the 'Crown Project' and bring Turkul in for interrogation.[107]

However, Turkul had skipped town: on 17 July 1946 he requested a Military Entry Permit and crossed the border into Bavaria just ahead of his pursuers. His reason for entry to Germany was listed as 'DP business'. Indeed it was, as Turkul was trying to become a Displaced Person himself.[108] Shortly after he arrived in Uffing, Bavaria, he wrote to a friend in South America, asking for some Chilean visas.[109] Unfortunately, Turkul's letter was intercepted. Even then, there were still those who spoke in his defence:

> It is pointed out however that Subject's action to escape Europe, coupled with his absence of any overt activity, indicates that a Soviet penetration is not likely. It is to be mentioned, however, that Subject in Salzburg has allowed himself to be 'used' by known or suspected Soviet agents due to his own stupidity, blind vanity, or his non-evaluation of personalities around him.[110]

The CIC arrested Turkul on 16 September 1946, and although he tried everything to talk his way out of it, the combined interrogation team of Mr Ryle of the CIC, and Mr Johnson of British intelligence wore him down. With Klatt's and Voss's interrogations behind them, they caught Turkul in lie after lie.[111]

In order to deny that Klatt got his information from the Soviets, Turkul claimed that the MAX reports were invented so that he could build his own White Russian organisation under the noses of the Germans.[112] However, he had to retract when confronted with proof that the Germans had corroborated the MAX reports down to the smallest detail.[113] Turkul also denied that he was anti-Tito, until told that his links to Fascist Yugoslavs had already been exposed.[114]

Still, Turkul did not break down completely but kept up a stubborn resistance. He did admit that he had penetrated numerous Nazi-controlled *émigré* organisations, and that his anti-Vlasov activities might have sabotaged German attempts to raise anti-Communist forces.[115] But he refused to admit that he deliberately wrecked the Axis recruitment effort, because that would have been a tacit admission that he was really a Soviet agent. Turkul fudged and said that he would never betray the White Russians, of whom he was the most trusted leader.[116]

Turkul's followers in the DP camps were outraged that their beloved leader had been imprisoned, and a chorus of protests erupted across Bavaria. The Americans had to do something quickly to quieten things down. Lieutenant Colonel Richard Stevens described Turkul as a Communist 'double agent in whom the British and [US] had consecutive interests'. Despite this, Stevens approved the creation of a cover story for Turkul's arrest to 'help prevent antipathy for the US' among the refugee population.[117]

On 8 November 1946 the Americans agreed to disseminate the story that Turkul was not being extradited in order to reassure the refugees.[118] The protest movement collapsed, confident that their beloved leader was off on some secret mission. Turkul did not know it, but his arrest had a serious impact on other American intelligence operations as well.

For example, Turkul's arrest was impeding Project 113, the recruitment of Nazi scientists, and Operation Rusty, the recruitment of Nazi intelligence experts.[119] Operation Tobacco, the cover name for using ex-Nazis to smoke out untrustworthy refugees, was also in jeopardy.[120]

After the protests ended, things only got worse for Turkul. Voss's testimony had led the investigators to Klatt's deputy, Ira

Longin, who was arrested and sent to London for further interrogation. Slowly but surely, the investigators were tearing Turkul's network to pieces. In order to save himself, he denounced Klatt. He was fitted up with a tape recorder by the Americans and confronted Klatt in the prison courtyard. The transcript shows that Klatt caught on quickly, indicating that if Turkul denounced him as Soviet spy, he understood.[121] It was a sad ending for the courageous Jew who had single-handedly sabotaged Hitler's armies on the Eastern front. The wages of spies are often paid in the coin of betrayal.

The Americans were not altogether taken in, and continued to wonder if Turkul were really the head of a gigantic Communist network.[122] The investigation widened. No cover story in the world can stand up to protracted and detailed scrutiny. By the end of November, it was time for Turkul to play his trump card: the GRU agents inside British intelligence provided phoney background clearances for Turkul and the rest of his network. Suddenly, the US investigator, Mr Ryle, discovered that his British counterpart, Mr Johnson, was solidly on Turkul's side. In December the two investigators travelled to Geneva, where Paul Blum introduced his best source on Turkul: Father George Romanov.[123]

Ryle pressed Father Romanov on the means by which the Turkul network acquired its information for the Nazis, recalling the German who suspected that the MAX reports came from Turkul in Rome. Romanov was aghast, insisting that Turkul chose to spend the war in 'splendid isolation in Rome . . . a model of inertia', while Klatt did all the work. Turkul was a '*quantité negligible*' he claimed, and no one paid the slightest attention to him because 'the White Russian émigrés in Rome counted for nothing'. Johnson concurred: the British view was that 'Rome was of no importance'.[124]

Ryle was completely taken in: he was unaware of the British–Vatican peace negotiations, or Turkul's connection to the Black Orchestra, or his dinners with Mussolini. Johnson may have been a victim of deception by his superiors in British intelligence, although he and Romanov were surprisingly knowledgeable about Yugoslav Fascists. Father George described Ljotić as the 'most honest and true enemy of the Soviets' he ever met.[125]

Perhaps to whet Ryle's appetite, he revealed that Turkul was the head of an organisation in Belgrade that supported the return of King Zog to the Albanian throne.[126] Ryle's ears must have perked up at this. At that very moment British and US intelligence were conspiring with the Fascist Balli Kombëtar party to overthrow the Communists and restore King Zog. No one knew that Turkul was helping out. His name is absent from the histories of the abortive Albanian coup. If Turkul did indeed have a hand in it, it is not surprising that it was so disastrous.

Both Johnson and Romanov tried to convince Ryle that Klatt, not Turkul, was the Soviet agent. Romanov stated that he had warned Turkul towards the end of the war that Klatt was a Communist.[127] Ryle was led to believe that Turkul was a great anti-Communist leader, beloved by the Church. Even Father George offered to travel to the US to meet privately with senior officials.[128] After all, there was 'no better cover than a priest's frock'.[129] It was all very amusing until one recalls that the Turkul net was working for the GRU.

Ryle was stubborn and insisted on checking Romanov's information.[130] He also asked the successor to the OSS to check on Turkul's known associates. They asked the British for help, as one author discovered documents in the US Archives showing

> the extent to which OSS and its successor organization(s) relied heavily on MI5 to weed out these Communists . . . For example No. KEL 3064, dated April 28, 1947, contains assessments requested by the OSS station in Austria for ten contacts of General Anton Turkul, a White Russian who had fought with the Germans, although it was thought his intelligence chief Klatt was a double agent for the Russians. Turkul was arrested in Salzburg [in 1945], then released and employed as the White Russian representative in the American zone of Austria. On the strength of the 1947 MI5 report . . . the Americans concluded . . . 'Investigation did not reveal any information that SUBJECT has been doubling as a Soviet Agent.'[131]

After this, even Ryle began to wonder if he was barking up the wrong tree. However, Schellenberg's interrogation in London revealed that several Nazi agencies, including the Gestapo and part of the SS, were convinced that Turkul's network was a Communist front. Yet not one of Turkul's agents was ever identified by MI5. After the negative MI5 report, Johnson insisted Turkul be exonerated. All Ryle could do was file his dissent. Under increasing British pressure, Turkul was freed, and promptly wrote a nasty letter to CIC demanding that his papers be returned.[132]

How did he convince British intelligence to defend him? The answer may never be known for sure, but the Black Orchestra was apparently alive and well in London. Turkul was not the only one to have his past sanitised by British intelligence. Many SS men posed as members of the Vatican's Black Orchestra at the end of the war, and Marcus was no exception. Marcus claimed that he had been arrested for the anti-Hitler plot, but was saved by his old friend, Dr Hoffman, who vouched for him and arranged his release.[133]

In fact, Marcus was nowhere near the Hitler plot, he was in Byelorussia co-ordinating SS networks of Soviet collaborators.[134] He had served as Schellenberg's co-ordinator of V-Men, and knew the identity of every SS confidential agent ('Vertrauensmann') in Eastern Europe.[135]

Marcus was quickly hired by Vansittart's propaganda section. His real mission was to recruit SS fugitives for Philby's anti-Communist section of SIS. In order to increase his effectiveness, Marcus was appointed mayor of a small town in the British zone of Germany. He was therefore able to provide new identity cards and assistance to his old SS friends. Word spread quickly that the British were hiring anti-Communist experts. He quickly hired his old friend, Hoffman, and gave him a letter falsely certifying that he was active in the resistance.[136] By now, the Black Orchestra had many more members than it had while Hitler was alive.

Hoffman had contact with the Nazi Romanian Iron Guard during the war.[137] French intelligence had placed a priest in the British zone to co-ordinate Iron Guard recruitment.[138] It is possible that Marcus sent Hoffman out to find more Romanian Fascists, although the British had recruited quite a few already.[139]

But Hoffman came back with an even bigger catch: he had found Klaus Barbie. Marcus knew Barbie well, but despite his record of atrocities in France, he quickly recruited him. Barbie became something of an operational genius in supplying false papers and equipment to the growing roster of Britain's ex-Nazi agents.[140] Barbie's notebook contained the names of some of the Third Reich's leading strategists on the Eastern front.[141]

British intelligence did Barbie a major favour. During this time, all the American reports about Barbie's brutal war crimes disappeared. The authors have discovered that the Allied lists were sanitised while Barbie was in British employ:

> While I was special agent in charge of the Delta Base CIC in Marseille 1944–45, the Lyons France office was one of our satellite offices which I visited with Major Clarence Read, our Commanding Officer. While there we not only heard of the 'Butcher of Lyons' Klaus Barbie but saw several folders in our files with his name. These were transmitted to our office and to G-2 Marseille. Surely they were sent to SHAEF [Supreme Allied Headquarters in Paris]. What happened after that I will never know.[142]

There is clear evidence that the now missing Barbie war crimes dossiers were widely circulated by the Americans. His name is listed in the 11 October 1944 US Navy *Who's Who of agents and suspects* under the following entry:

> BARBIE(R), Obersturmfuhrer von
> *German*: born c. 1909: Sipo & SD Lyons in 1943 . . . later report of January 1944 said that he had returned to Lyons and was head of Abt IV [Gestapo]: height 5′6″ (167 cm.): stout, grey eyes, rosy complexion: described as combining brutality with effusiveness.[143]

It should be noted that British intelligence had direct access to these files at this time. Long before Barbie arrived in the US zone, his wanted status was mysteriously downgraded to security suspect. Soon afterwards, things went seriously wrong for the Marcus network. In autumn 1946 Hoffman quit after Marcus accused him of trifling with his wife.[144] Hoffman promptly teamed up with SIS's rivals in British Military Intelligence and gained his revenge by exposing the giant network of ex-SS agents working for a 'fascist Foreign Office Expert'.[145] It is unclear whether this refers to Vansittart or Philby.

In any event, the British Army took Hoffman's claims seriously, and arrested Barbie. Despite the fact that his 'escape' was apparently arranged by SIS, Barbie later said that he lost faith in the British and their many promises. When Hoffman begged him to come back, Barbie turned him down flat.[146] He had a better idea.

Like Turkul, Barbie headed down the long road to Munich in the American zone. He did not know it, but it would take him to Dulles's private spy network. It was no accident that many Turkul supporters were living in the quiet little towns around Munich: Dulles had arranged for his 'freedom fighters' to be tucked away in this discreet corner of Bavaria.

In 1946 Dulles's men in Germany simply changed their OSS uniforms, and became the War Department's Strategic Services Unit (SSU). Dulles's chameleons went under various names:

sometimes they were the SSU, sometimes the War Department Detachment (WDD); often they used the innocuous sounding 'Document Disposal Unit' (DDU) for cover.[147]

In effect, there were two CIAs in Germany, one liberal (Department of Army Detachment), one conservative (DDU). The first took orders from the President. DDU took its from Dulles, who had joined Thomas Dewey's Campaign Staff, expecting Dewey to be the next President.[148]

Dulles's DDU men were the OSS 'Political Intelligence' experts. This ultra-conservative (and very secret) corps wore Army uniforms although the State Department (where Dulles still had considerable influence) actually paid them. They were waiting for Truman to be swept from office by a conservative, who would unleash their *émigré* armies on Stalin.[149]

In the meantime, while DAD (the CIA's predecessor) hunted Nazis like Bandera, Dulles's clique recruited them and kept them in cold storage pending the 1948 election. Dulles's men had a secret ally: Region IV of the CIC in Munich had been quietly helping the DDU recruit ex-Nazis. There were plenty to choose from: Prince Turkul's followers; Bishop Bučko's Ukrainians; General Gehlen's men; and Father Draganović's Intermarium network.[150]

Hiding them all was a risky business as the Munich CIC was technically committing mutiny by protecting Nazis who were wanted by CIC Headquarters in Frankfurt. Barbie's arrival in Region IV complicated an already precarious situation. Barbie did not know it, but he was about to ignite a scandal between the CIC and the DDU that would send him on his way to Rome. It was not a problem for Dulles. He had good connections at the Vatican.

11

Barbie and the American Ratlines

There was what Moscow calls a 'useful idiot' in the CIA, not a witting Communist agent, but a person who helps his enemy without realising it. His name was James Jesus Angleton. While he was nominally a member of the 'liberal' wing of the CIA, he was a secret supporter of Allen Dulles's arch-conservative DDU faction in the State Department. As we shall see, Angleton played a central role in supporting the DDU's chameleons, and was Dulles's most brilliant protégé.

Angleton was an Anglophile, having spent his early war years in London. After Dulles and the Vatican arranged the German surrender in Italy, he joined the British–American Special Counter Intelligence unit (SCI-Z) that descended on Rome. This unit soon recruited Nazis like SS intelligence chief Walter Rauff, who had worked with Dulles on the surrender negotiations. Rauff was quickly released by SCI-Z over the CIC's protest that he was a major war criminal. Rauff then went off to work for the Vatican Ratlines.[1]

Although he was not a Catholic, Angleton had a close relationship with Vatican intelligence. He warned the Vatican that one of its code clerks had been suborned by the Soviets.[2] Many such acts of kindness followed, endearing Angleton to Pius XII's closest adviser, Giovanni Montini, in the Vatican Secretariat of State.

Angleton's friendship could not have come at a better time for the Vatican. In July 1946, just as Turkul was arrested in Germany, Pius XII was confronted with a Communist propaganda campaign to secularise Italy, destroy the Vatican's privileges and seize political power. The Communists were on his doorstep, and his nightmares of the 1919 Munich uprising were coming back through the ballot box.

The Pope abandoned any pretence of neutrality and ordered a covert programme of political intervention.[3] The Americans soon learned of the secret plan, probably from Montini himself. From the spring of 1945, Angleton

> had been cultivating his source directly within the Vatican – later identified as Giovanni Battista Montini, then a Bishop and under-secretary of state at the Vatican and later Pope Paul VI. This contact may have developed further as a by-product of the negotiations then underway between Allen Dulles in Berne and the German high command in Northern Italy to arrange for a separate surrender, for Angleton's source appears to have been privy to all that the German Ambassador to the Vatican, Ernst von Weizsäcker, was reporting about Pope Pius XII.[4]

Almost all references to the Vatican's wartime role have been censored in both the ULTRA and OSS files. After the war, Angleton kept his Vatican source a secret even from the local CIA office.[5] Angleton always denied the rumours that he had recruited Montini. However, we discovered new evidence that this future Pope was a source for American intelligence.

Montini's recently declassified CIC file contains two reports of his private discussions with Pius XII. On 30 July 1946 the Pope told Montini of his growing alarm

> because of the information collected by the Vatican regarding the execution of the Soviet plan in Italy by Italian Communists.
>
> The plan is to render difficult the relationship between Italians and Anglo-Americans to the total advantage of the Soviet Union . . . a part of this plan is the provocation of incidents between Italians and Anglo-Americans in Italy to render more bitter the relations between Italy and the Western Allies, in order to oblige England and the United States to take severe measures.
>
> The Pope has given instructions that Italian Catholics react to this Soviet Plan through their organizations.[6]

The following evening, Montini had another private discussion with Pius XII, who elaborated plans for a secret counter offensive to preserve the Lateran pacts:

> the Pope gave instructions to . . . Montini, acting Secretary of State, to send directives to the Italian Catholic Action . . . to the Demo-Christian Party and all the Italian parishes . . . in order that millions of signatures of Italian men and women may be collected . . .
>
> This action on the part of the Pontifice derives from reliable information obtained by the Holy See on a vast program of propaganda promoted by the leftist parties for the revision of these pacts in regard to matrimony, religious education and the sovereignty of the Pontifice . . .

> The Communists directed by the Soviet Union are the most active in spreading such propaganda.[7]

Since only Montini was present when Pius XII discussed his plans, only he could have delivered these reports to the Americans. The speed with which they were delivered indicates the meetings' importance. Even before the Pope decided to give covert support to the Italian Christian Democrats in July 1946, Angleton was already helping the Vatican's anti-Communist politicians:

> Angleton's first major postwar assignment in Italy was to help make certain that when elections were held the Communists did not come into power . . . A coalition of parties . . . governed until there could be free elections in June of 1946. The preceding June Ferruccio Parri, the resistance leader brought back from Switzerland through Allen Dulles's mediation, had been designated prime minister, but had been forced to resign . . . and Alcide de Gasperi, whom Angleton knew well, had succeeded him.
>
> Angleton and others are said to have fed substantial sums of money into the June Referendum; he emphatically denies this. The vote . . . demonstrated the strength of de Gasperi's Christian Democrats.[8]

De Gasperi was not only Christian Democrat head and Angleton's close friend. As discussed in Chapter One, he was also Montini's accomplice in the Vatican's political initiatives. His government ran guns to the Križari, and de Gasperi had personally protected fugitive Fascist, Ferenc Vajta.

Before Angleton left for Washington in 1947, the Vatican was promised continuing American financial support in the critical 1948 elections. Despite the CIA's objections, the cash continued to flow with help from Angleton's friends in the State Department's Special Projects Division, where Dulles still had considerable influence.[9] For the rest of his career with US intelligence, Angleton kept the Vatican as his exclusive client. As the Vatican and de Gasperi appreciated, the Americans were willing to back their anti-Communism with cold, hard cash.

But there was a price for Angleton's largesse. It was no coincidence that the Americans asked for a share of the Ratlines in mid-1947. The Vatican probably did not need much convincing to switch horses, in view of Vajta's comments that they were disgusted with the tepid strategies of the French and British.[10]

According to Vajta, the Vatican was extremely displeased with British intelligence's handling of Intermarium.[11] 'However in the sad years of 1945 and 1946, it was the only organization of international character . . . for combatting the Russians.'[12] The Vatican was equally disappointed with the French, but did not blame de Gaulle. He was betrayed by his own general staff which:

> wished to continue collaboration with the British and did not believe in the efficiency of collaboration with the Vatican.
>
> After the fall of the General, the socialists sabotaged [his] policy, but finally, they were forced to admit that de Gaulle had been right and, toward the month of May 1946, they took up the idea with the General. But by this time, it was not only the officers of the General Staff, but the Parisian Free Masons who wished to fight with the British . . . Their game was too childish and the Vatican retired from the circle of French interest.[13]

In autumn 1947 Vajta fled to Madrid with William Gowen's help. Once there, as already discussed, he lobbied the Spanish government to establish a new Continental Union with Vatican and American support. Unfortunately, no one had cleared these plans, and Vajta was arrested after he entered America. President Truman demanded an investigation of who was smuggling Nazis to America.[14] Truman was no Charles de Gaulle, and Dulles's plans to send his Nazis to America had to be shelved until Dulles's candidate could replace Truman in the 1948 election. Vajta must have been confident of Dewey's victory, for he filed a series of appeals to stall his deportation.

In the meantime, Dulles had a problem. Turkul's agents were piling up in the Austrian refugee camps and the Army, although sympathetic, was getting nervous because the Nazis' 'continued residence in Austria constituted a security threat at well as a source of possible embarrassment . . . since the Soviet command had become aware of their presence in the US zone of Austria and in some cases had requested the return of these persons to Soviet custody'.[15]

But how could Dulles get the Nazis out? After R Day, 1947, Allied control of Italy ceased and the terms of FAN 757 expired. The British had enough problems with the Galician Division and after the Vajta scandal, Dulles could hardly ask his State Department friends to help. He needed some method to put his Nazi 'freedom fighters' into temporary cold storage. He needed the Vatican's Ratlines.

After Angleton's munificent support in 1947, how could the Vatican refuse? There is clear evidence that a deal was made.

Several years later, an American agent, Paul Lyon, wrote a 'History of the Italian Rat Line' for Major Milano:

> 1. ORIGINS
> a. During the summer of 1947 the undersigned received instructions from G-2 [army intelligence], USFA . . . to establish a means of disposition for visitors who had been in the custody of the 430th CIC . . .
> b. The undersigned, therefore, proceeded to Rome where, through a mutual acquaintance, he conferred with a former Slovakian diplomat [Kirschbaum, Sidor and Durčansky were all in Rome at that time] who in turn was able to recruit the services of a Croatian Roman Catholic Priest, Father Draganovich . . . [who] . . . had by this time developed several clandestine evacuation channels to the various South American countries for various types of European refugees.[16]

Lyon observed that if anything went wrong, the Vatican could take the blame:

> Draganovich is known and recorded as a Fascist, war criminal, etc . . . and his contacts with South American diplomats of a similar class are not generally approved by US State Department officials, plus the fact that in the light of security, it is better that we may be able to state, if forced, that the turning over of a DP to a [National Catholic] Welfare Organization falls in line with our democratic way of thinking and that we are not engaged in illegal disposition of war criminals, defectees and the like.[17]

Unfortunately, Father Draganović wanted something in return. If he smuggled the Americans' Nazis, they would have to help him smuggle his. A subsequent memo revealed the terms of this distinctly immoral partnership:

> Through the Vatican connections of Father Draganović, Croat, DP Resettlement Chief of the Vatican Circle, a tentative agreement was reached to assist in this operation. The agreement consists of simply mutual assistance, i.e. these agents assist persons of interest to Father Draganović to leave Germany and, in turn, Father Draganović will assist these agents in obtaining the necessary visas to Argentina, South America, for persons of interest to this Command . . .
>
> It may be stated that some of the persons of interest to Father Draganović may be of interest to the Denazification policy of the Allies; however, the persons assisted by Father Draganović are also of interest to our Russian ally. Therefore this operation cannot receive any official approval and must be handled with minimum amount of delay and with a minimum amount of general knowledge.[18]

It was probably Dulles or Angleton who resurrected the old OSS term for an escape and evasion network:

> Early in 1944 Welles . . . was a member of an OSS team being dropped from Brindisi by parachute into Croatia . . . [The OSS] played the Yugoslav circuit for six months . . . brought in supplies to the partisans . . . and helped man the rat line (or escape line) that got perhaps forty American Air Force men, shot down in Austria or northern Yugoslavia, back behind Allied lines in Italy.[19]

As previously explained, a ratline is the rope ladder reaching to the top of the mast, the last place of safety when the ship is going down. Thus Ratline became a generic intelligence term for an evacuation network. But the Pentagon was hardly likely to spend the large sums of money demanded by Father Draganović ($1,000 minimum per passenger) merely to establish a standby rescue network in the event of World War III.

Colonel Lewis Perry, who was the Americans' secret liaison to Pavelić's Križari, came up with a good cover story. The Vatican was helping relocate Soviet defectors of interest to US intelligence. If they remained in Austria, they would be a headache because of Soviet surveillance and kidnapping teams. The best solution was to have the Vatican put them on a boat and send them over the hill to South America. Colonel Perry transformed Major Milano's Operation Ratline into Operation Headache/Boathill and had it quickly approved at the highest Pentagon levels. Here is an example from the Top Secret Allied Forces Headquarters Message Center of 13 December 1949:

> 13 travelers awaiting shipment follow (real names, aliases and shipping names listed . . .)
>
> Subsequent to debriefing subjects turned over to organization of Croatian Catholic Priest Father Draganović, K, Vatican DP Resettlement Chief, through contact Bosiliewicz, Vladimir in Salzburg Austria. [International Red Cross] passports carried by subjects procured by Bosiliewicz in Geneva Switzerland unassisted by CIC. Subjects departed separately from Salzburg, Austria current by train for Naples, Genoa and Rome. Subjects now in vicinity of Rome awaiting shipment to Paraguay, Argentina, Bolivia or Venezuela, depending on country from which visa can be procured. Effective control by CIC over subject ceases when subjects depart Austrian territory.[20]

'Bosiliewicz' was in fact Vladimir Bosiljević, a key member of Father Draganović's network. It was no coincidence that he could procure IRC passworks, as he had been working on the Ratline in Salzburg since May 1945. US intelligence established that Bosiljević had been appointed to the position of Secretary General of the Croatian Red Cross by no less a person than Father Vilim Cecelja, Draganović's Austrian representative. Colonel Perry had probably met Bosiljević during the spectacularly unsuccessful Križari operations, since the Croatian was also a senior Križari officer, working closely with Srečko Rover on maintaining radio contact with the terrorist groups in Yugoslavia.[21]

This was another reason why it was important to keep the CIC from knowing too much about the Ratlines' real purpose. Colonel Perry was probably one of Dulles's DDU chameleons, but he had to rely on the CIC for legmen. Even Major Milano was not told the source of the Red Cross passports, nor was he informed of the actual war crimes backgrounds of Perry's recruits. Many years later the bewildered CIC agents who manned the Austrian–Vatican Ratlines said that as far as they knew, only one Nazi had gone out through that route; they thought the rest were legitimate Soviet defectors.

They were telling the truth as far as they knew it. By the time the 430th CIC took over in 1947, most of the well known Nazis had already been sent down the Ratline; the remainder were little known collaborators who easily convinced the gullible Austrian CIC that they were really 'anti-Communist refugees'.

Most of the Austrian CIC agents were new recruits, fresh out of Fort Holabird. They had no bitter memories of World War II to cloud their perceptions of the Slavic refugees, who seemed like rather nice people. The Austrian CIC had the kind of dim but daring thinkers that Dulles wanted. Their mission was simple: the Nazis were defeated and the Communists were the new enemy.

The 430th CIC quickly got the message. In 1947 virtually all Nazi-hunting in their area came to a complete stop. CIC agents in Rome, Trieste and Salzburg started recruiting Nazis for their anti-Communist expertise. William Gowen's reports on Ante Pavelić reflect the winds of change that swept through sections of the CIC in 1947. The reports suddenly changed focus. While their counterparts in Germany were still keeping lists of wanted war criminals and devoting at least some resources to locating them, the 430th CIC was making lists of which Nazis worked for which foreign intelligence service as a guide for eventual recruitment by Dulles's DDU.[22]

There was, however, one CIC unit in Germany, which was considerably less co-operative with Dulles's plans. The 970th

Detachment had a nucleus of professional intelligence agents who had stayed on after the war. Both the anti-Nazi and anti-Communist desks in Germany were staffed by CIC veterans who hated war criminals, and suspected that the DDU's recruits were hopelessly penetrated by the Soviets.[23]

The CIC and CIA agents in Germany swapped stories about the DDU's latest idiocy. The 970th CIC was hard to fool: they maintained a massive Central Registry that all too frequently exposed the true backgrounds of the DDU's 'freedom fighters'. To put it bluntly, they were giving Allen Dulles fits.

One of the 970th CIC's most brilliant anti-Communist experts absolutely forbade hiring Nazis to spy on the Soviets. He later played a key role in closing down Klaus Barbie's network. President Truman had ordered the 970th Detachment to hunt Nazis and they obeyed him with quiet professionalism.[24] Despite the opprobrium that has recently been heaped on them, the 970th CIC was one of the few intelligence services that did a competent, dedicated job of Nazi-hunting.

The 430th CIC in Austria was another matter. For example, both Detachments were ordered to submit reports on Stanislaw Stankievich. The 970th correctly identified Stankievich as a former official of the Nazi puppet government in Byelorussia. The 430th reported that he was a prominent anti-Communist *émigré*. The State Department picked the Austrian CIC's version.[25]

Although Stankievich had confessed that he was a senior Nazi, he was released through State Department intercession.[26] The 970th were told to keep their hands off Nazis who worked for the British or French, but lived in the US zone.[27] The CIC reluctantly complied, but kept embarrassing lists of these 'freedom fighters' indexed by their previous war crimes and atrocities, to prevent them obtaining US visas.[28] As long as these existed, the 970th had closed off the US zone as an emigration route.

By and large, Austria was a much safer transit point for Dulles's growing army of agents. The 430th knew the true names of the passengers using the Ratline, but not their war crimes background. The 970th had the latter information, but was unaware that the 430th was running the Ratline. The two CIC units had virtually no contact, and Dulles wanted it that way. If they could be kept apart, the Ratlines would function smoothly.

Whether by design or coincidence, the Pentagon solved the problem. As part of the massive reorganisation of the Defense Department between 1947 and 1949, Germany and Austria were placed under separate command headquarters. The military meddlers' most significant accomplishment seems to have been their bewildering array of acronyms. The bottom line for Dulles was that the two CIC Detachments were permanently divided under different commands.

After the reorganisation, the 430th in Austria was not really part of the CIC any more; it effectively ceased to exist. All intelligence units in Austria, Italy and Trieste were detached from their own agencies and placed under the direct command of US military intelligence headquarters in Salzburg, where Colonel Perry could keep an eye on the 430th. Their records were purged every three years for unexplained security reasons, and only a few reels of microfilm survive.[29]

As far as Major Milano knew, the 430th was supporting a legitimate anti-Communist programme that had been approved by higher headquarters. Perry knew better, but kept his mouth shut. Part of the Ratlines deal was to assist Draganović's Nazis to leave Germany and enter Austria. Perry had to contact the Nazis and get them across the border without the 970th learning about it. The Ratlines needed someone in Germany who was immune from arrest. Dulles had the perfect answer: he recruited Turkul's old boss, General Gehlen.[30]

Gehlen was a consummate con artist. He had built his reputation under the Nazis by claiming credit for the Abwehr's MAX reports. After the war, he used the same scam on the gullible Americans. In 1946, after a year of negotiations with Dulles and senior Pentagon commanders in Washington, Gehlen was flown to a secret base in Munich to establish a new US espionage network. Unfortunately, just as he arrived, Voss and Klatt were identified as Soviet agents and even Turkul was under suspicion. Where could Gehlen get the secrets he had promised the Americans?

Ignoring his instructions not to hire any tainted agents, Gehlen recruited Dr Franz Six and Emil Augsburg to head his anti-Communist desk. Both were infamous war criminals, but had encyclopaedic knowledge of Nazi intelligence operations in Eastern Europe. To stall for time, they interviewed German prisoners returning from the Soviet Union. It was not enough. The Americans pressed Gehlen to produce results by July 1947 or his funds would be cut. The truth was that Gehlen's only forte was rewriting other people's work and claiming the credit for himself. He did not have the faintest idea how to penetrate the 'Iron Curtain' on his own.[31]

The secret of Gehlen's success was timing. Just as the US connection to the Vatican Ratline was established in mid-1947, Turkul was cleared by the British and released in the US zone of Germany. He resumed leadership of the 'new' NTS,[32] which had penetrated every level of Soviet *émigrés* in Germany, and offered Gehlen

> a literally inexhaustible source of information. However impenetrable the Iron Curtain might seem, into the houses, the camps and the association offices of these émigrés ran the secret channels of communication; Red Army deserters found refuge with friends; Russians received letters from relatives in the Soviet Union; exiled politicians were in radio communication with the Ukraine.[33]

Virtually all the *émigré* organisations publicly identified as Gehlen fronts, including the NTS, and many other exotic groups like the Saint Andrew's Flag, were secretly controlled by Turkul. A comparison, for example, of the list of Gehlen front groups cited in E. H. Cookridge's biography of Gehlen with the recently declassified US intelligence files, shows the extent of Turkul's secret dominance of Operation Rusty and the Gehlen Organisation.[34]

Turkul located his headquarters in Munich, near Gehlen's own offices in the comparative safety of Region IV. Of course, Turkul's recruits did not stay in Germany, but he had connections in Salzburg. Here the 430th worked with, not against, him to evacuate Nazis under the nose of the 970th.[35] It was just the kind of connection Father Draganović needed.

Turkul was the link between Germany and the Austrian Ratlines. His network's reports were sent directly to Major Milano in Austria, who was working closely with Colonel Perry on Operation Headache/Boathill.[36] If anything went wrong, Perry could vouch for Turkul.[37] If the Americans wanted 'freedom fighters', Turkul knew just the men. His NTS reached into every *émigré* organisation in Europe.

First he took NTS away from the British and delivered it to Gehlen; then he took control of Gehlen's contacts with other *émigré* groups. According to Turkul's recently declassified files, he moved very quickly when he was released. 'For a short time Turkul was a member of General Peter von Glasenap's Russian Monarchist Organization, the League of Saint Andrew's Flag.'[38] Glasenap had been working for Gehlen, but was quickly dropped after Turkul took over the Saint Andrew's Flag. Neither Gehlen nor Glasenap resented Turkul as long as he got the job done.

Glasenap stayed 'in direct contact with Turkul' and passed information to Region IV's agents.[39] Perry vouched for Turkul as 'a close friend of General Glasenap . . . who has excellent contacts with a US intelligence agency in Germany'.[40] There was one little problem: wherever Turkul took over, security went to pieces:

> One of [Gehlen's] investigators came to the conclusion that in a certain émigré organization known as 'NTS, people working directly for the Soviet Union are recklessly given cover and support.' In another émigré society, the 'league of Andreas Flag', an informer detected an ex-Lieutenant Colonel Solomin of the Soviet Secret Police who 'when in his cups, would tell stories of his prowess in shooting Russian colonels and generals for attempted desertion to the Germans.' Vigilant though they were, Gehlen's men could never be sure whether they were dealing with figments of the imagination of some harum-scarum intelligence-peddler, or with doctored material fed to them by the Russians.[41]

Gehlen had fallen for the same game that Turkul had played on him during the war. Although his own people suspected that 90 per cent of the information they passed to the Americans was false, Gehlen had no other sources and continued to use NTS:

> Initially he had no alternative but to try the old methods once more. He therefore turned to the more reliable among the anti-Communist émigrés in the hope that they might assist him to penetrate the Soviet Union . . . In particular, with Gehlen's help, the Nationalist 'NTS' despatched parachutists as far away as Moscow; most of them, however, were discovered and arrested by the Soviet counter-espionage authorities.[42]

No one suspected that it was Turkul who leaked information to the GRU. It was always someone else, like Klatt or Voss, who was blamed. To plug the leaks, Gehlen hired Turkul's own Security Chief Tenzerov, whose real name was Puzanov. He seemed to be a reliable watchdog because he had himself been betrayed by some NTS leaders at war's end. But Tenzerov, who had been a leading Nazi propagandist for the Vlasov Army, still had good contacts with Turkul. He supported Gehlen's attempts to unite the Vlasov groups under the command of his old friend, Turkul.

It appears that Dulles's clique knew very little about Soviet infiltration of the NTS in 1947, and believed that it was just another Fascist organisation working for the British. Perry should have paid more attention to the note in Turkul's file: the Gestapo had arrested several NTS leaders in 1944 when they discovered a radio connection between their Warsaw headquarters and the Soviets.[43] Perhaps Perry overlooked things in the rush to find a secure way to get Draganović's friends out of Germany. Besides, Turkul had already been cleared by the British.

Gehlen was less picky about his agents' backgrounds. Soon there was a trickle, and then a flood of ex-Nazis moving south into Region IV. Why work for the British when the Americans were allowing the Germans to build their own espionage agency? Klaus Barbie was certainly impressed and in January 1947, went to work for Gehlen along with several of his SS friends who had worked on Ukrainian affairs. Unfortunately, Gehlen was no more adept at protecting war criminals than the British.

A few months after Barbie arrived, the CIA 'liberals' discovered that Gehlen had broken his promise and was hiring SS war criminals. They yanked Dr Six away from Gehlen and put him on trial at Nuremberg. Six was convicted of running an SS mobile killing unit, but was subsequently pardoned after Vatican intercession.[44]

But a small faction within US intelligence thought the CIA's morality misplaced. Dulles later said of his use of Gehlen's people: 'There are few Archbishops in Intelligence, and besides, one need not invite them to one's club.' Before the CIA could discover the other Nazis in Gehlen's club, Dulles's DDU smuggled Augsburg, Tenzerov, Barbie and others to a safehouse, and then resettled them in Augsburg, Bavaria, where the SS recruiting continued on the sly.[45]

Region IV was run by a series of temporary commanders like Aaron Banks, a former OSS agent (who later became 'Godfather to the Green Berets'), and Elliot Golden (who worked on 'special operations' for the Air Force). Their CIC employees were supposed to be hunting Nazis, but under their noses, Region IV became a haven for Dulles's recruits.

The fugitives were disguised as sub-agents for the innocuous

Abwehr Captain Peterson. In this corner of Bavaria, the DDU built a network of war criminals. It was several years before CIC Headquarters in Frankfurt discovered the DDU's double game in Region IV, but by then it was much too late to expose anyone. They were too deeply involved. Barbie, Augsburg and Tenzerov were working for Gehlen and had close contacts with Turkul's growing network.[46]

When the Barbie affair finally emerged into the glare of publicity thirty-five years later, the Americans launched an official inquiry. Although the US Justice Department's report on the Barbie affair discreetly censored most references to Barbie's previous work for British intelligence, enough references have been declassified to show the true reason for his recruitment by Gehlen. In addition to identifying SS officers working for the British,[47] Barbie had information on their Ukrainian operations.[48] In fact, he lured an entire faction of Ukrainian Fascists away from the British ABN and brought them over to Gehlen and Dulles.

Barbie submitted written reports on two men who played key roles in the Cold War. The reports no longer exist, but we know from Barbie's payment list that his subjects were Mykola Lebed and Ivan Grynioch. Both were subsequently recruited by DDU and moved to Bavaria. Barbie was small fry compared with them.

Grynioch, as previously discussed, was a Ukrainian Catholic priest who had joined Nazi intelligence before the war. He was chaplain to Bandera's Nachtigall Battalion when the Germans invaded the Ukraine, and remained in favour even after Stetsko and Bandera were unceremoniously dumped by the Nazis. Father Grynioch was Lebed's deputy.[49]

Like Bandera, Lebed had been convicted of political assassination in pre-war Poland, and was subsequently hired by the Abwehr. He was given special training at the Gestapo's security academy and became head of Bandera's security service, the SB. According to his intelligence file, Lebed consolidated OUN power by murdering the leaders of several rival Ukrainian nationalist groups during the war. Lebed successfully played the German factions against each other, and ended the war as Bandera's right-hand man and an SS favourite. Even pro-Ukrainian historians admit that Lebed's record was bloody indeed.[50]

In 1945 Lebed fled to Rome where he had high level contacts in the Vatican.[51] He called himself the Foreign Minister of the OUN, and downplayed his murderous past. Bishop Bučko was the Ukrainian contact for Intermarium at this time, and an avid OUN supporter. Unlike Bandera, who worked only for Philby and the British, Lebed was attracted by an offer to work with Turkul and his wealthy American friends.[52]

It was not the first offer. In autumn 1944 the Vlasovites offered to work with the OUN, but Bandera's attitude prevented this.[53] As we shall see, Turkul's connections to Region IV and the DDU allowed him to bring about a merger. It is ironic that the Soviets' strategy to divide and conquer the OUN finally succeeded with Barbie's help.

By the end of 1947, Region IV's commander was in the hot seat. CIC Headquarters had discovered the Nazi network and ordered Barbie's arrest. But DDU's operation was saved by an astounding stroke of luck. Judging from the dates of his reports it was probably Barbie who first alerted the Americans about Lebed's change of heart. Lebed was afraid that his Italian government and Vatican contacts would be unable to protect him after R day. Barbie's network offered him sanctuary in Augsburg.

In November 1947 Region IV asked permission to smuggle Lebed from Rome. Camile Hadju, Barbie's case handler, personally drafted the plan which was submitted up the chain of command.[54] The proposal to hire a known Ukrainian war criminal must have raised a few eyebrows at higher levels, but the chance to interview Lebed was too tempting. There were intriguing references to his 'connections with de Gaulle and French Intelligence'. Here was an opportunity to get to the bottom of Intermarium, not to mention the inside story on Bandera's work for the British.[55]

Captain Hale, who had co-ordinated CIC's hunt for Bandera, arranged for Lebed to be airlifted to Region IV. Barbie, who apparently provided the original contacts to Grynioch and Lebed, was not turned over to the French as a war criminal. Instead, he returned to work after a few months with instructions not to tell the British what had transpired.[56]

Only a few people at CIC Headquarters in Germany knew what had happened. Decisions about Region IV's Nazis were made at a much higher level. The Vatican was helping the DDU steal the OUN away from the British. According to William Gowen:

> Early in April [1948] Monsignor Bučko, the only surviving Ukrainian Roman Catholic Bishop on the European Continent, left Rome for Salzburg Austria . . . and other cities in Western Europe. Bučko is sometimes described as the 'spiritual leader' of the Ukrainian resistance. He is the key man in Vatican affairs and to him go a proportion of the Ukrainian-American and Ukrainian-Canadian donations to the Ukrainian nationalist cause.[57]

According to Gowen, Bučko was impatient with Bandera's refusal to co-operate with other Ukrainian factions. His source claimed that 'Bandera is an overrated extremist. In the latter respect this agent was informed by Casimir Papée, Polish London Government Ambassador to the Vatican, that today Bandera's Army is largely dispersed and lacking all types of necessary equipment.'[58]

Like Bučko, Papée was a leading Intermarium member. The Vatican was laundering funds, but not to Bandera. Bučko later met with the Bavarian Culture Minister to discuss Vatican funding for the Ukrainian Red Cross, the Ukrainian Free University and other 'cultural groups'.[59] One of the most prominent 'cultural' leaders in Germany was Father Grynioch. Bučko's tour apparently had an energising effect on the anti-Bandera faction. The switch from British intelligence to Dulles was under way.

Lebed and Grynioch went to a secret showdown with Bandera in Munich in August 1948. They told him they were setting up their own Ukrainian organisation in Augsburg, the UHWR.[60] Bandera was furious:

> . . . attacks were made against one Iwan Hrinioch (sic) and one Mikola Lebed, who were accused of being opportunists . . . [and splitting] the UHWR and OUN-R in order to weaken the position of Stephen Bandera.
>
> In a rebuttal, Mikola Lebed, confirmed and reiterated statements made by Dr Hrinioch, to the effect that the UHWR . . . hoped, some day, to set up a free democratic government which is divorced from all dictatorial pressure.[61]

As a parting shot, Grynioch and Lebed 'stated that the latest events in the OUN indicated a trend toward Fascism, and in a demonstration, quit the session'.[62] Since they had been active Nazis themselves during the war, this quip was for the benefit of the gullible Americans. Bandera fired them and warned his organisation to avoid contact with the new Ukrainian centre in Augsburg.[63] All the Vatican's prodigal sons were coming home to Germany. There was just one problem: Dulles's friend Dewey lost the 1948 election, Truman was re-elected and Dulles's agents were out on a long, long limb.

Barbie's reports on Lebed and Grynioch could not have come at a better time. In March 1948 orders had been given to Region IV to break up the Barbie net, as he was of no further use. However, after the August split in the OUN, Barbie's position temporarily improved. The dissolution of Region IV's net was halted, but CIC Headquarters brooked no further delays when they discovered in November that Barbie and his friends were really running underground SS networks for Gehlen. Instead of working for the CIC, Region IV's net was working for Gehlen.[64]

Payments to Gehlen's fugitives in Augsburg had been handled by the DDU under cover of the War Department Detachment (WDD).[65] This was too much, as most senior agents at CIC Headquarters believed that Gehlen's operation was heavily penetrated by Soviet double agents. Their estimate was correct, as shown by the Felfe trial in the 1960s. Heinz Felfe was Gehlen's right-hand man, and had access to NATO's secrets, which he gave to Moscow.[66]

But in early 1949 Gehlen still had many protectors. In May a meeting was held at European Command Headquarters where Captain Vidal of CIC was told the facts of life, up to a point. Barbie would stay on the payroll, but Vidal was not told why. One reason was that Barbie's knowledge could compromise the DDU's Ukrainian operations. If Barbie was fired, he might talk about an even bigger scandal. DDU agents in Germany had learned that Tenzerov was on the Soviets' list of most wanted traitors and war criminals. The demand for his arrest had arrived only a few days earlier, on 13 May. Curiously, the Soviets did not mention Tenzerov's work for NTS, although they mentioned everything else:

> PUZANOV, Nikolai Vasilievich, also known as TENZEROV Yevgeni Vasilievich . . . a former officer in the Soviet Army. Collaborated with the enemy. After having been taken prisoner in 1942, he attended a school of the German 'Eastern Ministry' for training propagandists to be sent to the USSR. From the beginning of 1943 he worked as senior instructor and leader of studies in the Russian section of the propagandists school. Was editor of the anti-Soviet magazine 'Our Days'. In November 1944, he was brought into the German-sponsored Committee for the Liberation of Russian Nationalities [KONR]. From December of that year, he was Chief of the Security Branch of KONR. In February 1945, he was the authorized

> representative of KONR at Berlin. Has received German awards and the title of Lieutenant Colonel in [Vlasov's Army]. Is residing in the US Zone of occupation in Germany.[67]

Tenzerov was in the US zone all right; he was on Gehlen's payroll. Dulles's DDU had made a big mistake in putting Tenzerov in the same network with Augsburg and Barbie. If Barbie went down, he could take both the Gehlen and Turkul organisations with him. The State Department had to protect another war criminal. As with Pavelić, the orders were 'Hands Off'. The CIC was ordered to babysit Barbie for the State Department.[68]

Captain Vidal made hand-written notations in Barbie's file: his status was officially changed from a CIC asset ('Administratively dropped'), but his relations with Region IV were continued until CIC was 'notified by the State Department'. In short, Barbie was fired by CIC on paper, but was not told. Vidal was disgruntled, but orders were orders.[69] In occupied Germany, the State Department called the shots.

Other members of the Barbie net were taken off CIC's books. Augsburg was apparently more trustworthy than Barbie. He was allowed to quit CIC and go to work for a 'positive US intelligence agency', identified in Heinz Höhne's book as the Gehlen organisation. Barbie's other colleagues, like Kurt Merck, were regarded by CIC as 'not effective', but a top secret shroud was thrown over the Merck case, 'due to his connection with another American intelligence agency'. Once again the DDU had protected its own. Everyone went back to work for Gehlen, except Barbie.[70]

The DDU had good reason for keeping Barbie at arm's length. Most of the DDU officers were under cover as full or part-time State Department officers. They knew what CIC did not: the Barbie case was about to explode. Shortly after Vidal agreed to babysit Barbie for the State Department, he learned that Barbie was a major war criminal, wanted by the French Government.[71]

Vidal, no friend of DDU's Nazis, promptly arranged for French Military Intelligence to interview Barbie as a defence witness for René Hardy.[72] The Deuxième Bureau was content to take a written statement, but the rival Sûreté was livid. Barbie must be turned over for trial for his own war crimes. Vidal had no objection, and made the arrangements. Once again, the State Department had to tell Vidal the facts of life.[73]

They were better informed than CIC: the French conservatives really did not want Barbie back, because he could expose several prominent French politicians as Gestapo informers and create a scandal that might give the Communists a greater share of power. The Sûreté, which was heavily penetrated by Moscow,[74] wanted Barbie as a pawn to discredit François Poncet, the French High Commissioner for Germany. It was an ugly story. France's highest ranking official in occupied Germany had been an informant for Klaus Barbie and the Gestapo.[75]

By July 1949, Vidal knew that whatever Poncet had told Barbie during the war had caused the State Department to believe that France would never officially request Barbie's extradition. Indeed, Poncet ensured that the French paperwork never crossed his own desk to reach McCloy, his American counterpart.[76]

The DDU agents in Germany were quite amused at Poncet's game, until the French got wise and submitted the paperwork directly to Washington, bypassing Poncet and their operatives around McCloy. State Department channels buzzed with secret messages about Barbie's 'highly embarrassing' potential.[77]

That was an understatement. Barbie knew about the Tenzerov–Turkul–Gehlen connection and the relocation of Grynioch and Lebed. Worse, Poncet's wartime indiscretions to the Gestapo could hand the French Communists a major propaganda victory.

In May 1950 Vidal received instructions from Colonel Eckmann, the CIC 'special squad' liaison to DDU. Barbie was not to be turned over to the French, contrary to the State Department's public statements. There was more to the Barbie connection than CIC knew: 'there are ramifications at higher headquarters of which this region has no knowledge.'[78]

Indeed there were. CIC never knew it, but François Poncet was the secret source of the Vatican's Red Cross passports. According to a source in a Western intelligence service, whose information was confirmed by another Western agency, Poncet was de Gaulle's connection to Intermarium.[79] Before the war, he was the French Ambassador to the Third Reich and then to Italy. After war broke out, he was interned by Mussolini until he was kidnapped by Barbie and taken to France. Poncet confirmed this in his diaries.[80]

As early as 1946, US intelligence in Austria knew that the 'International Red Cross were issuing temporary identity documents under assumed names . . . to persons operating under the protection of the Vatican', including war criminals,[81] and that Red Cross couriers were being used to evade Allied mail censorship. Before his death in 1989, Father Cecelja confirmed that he had access to blank Red Cross papers, which he gave to fugitives in Austria *en route* to Draganović. Poncet was the source.

In pursuit of Intermarium, de Gaulle permitted Poncet to wear two hats. He was both French High Commissioner for Germany (which controlled the distribution of HICOG travel documents), and French representative to the International Red Cross (which distributed the passports that Father Draganović so desperately needed). Poncet became Vice President of the Red Cross International Committee, and later President.[82] The CIC later discovered that Poncet was meeting Dr Joseph Müller in a Munich safehouse, but did not realise that Müller had been the Black Orchestra's emissary to the Vatican.[83]

The State Department stumbled on the Red Cross connection because of La Vista's report on Vatican Nazi smuggling. His report was quickly removed from normal channels and passed to the super secret Special Projects Division in Washington (DDU's predecessor) where it was quietly shelved. The Red Cross was discreetly advised to tighten security before anyone else found out.[84]

When the Barbie case exploded, Dulles himself came to Poncet's rescue. They were old friends from the diplomatic service. In return for keeping Barbie out of harm's way, Poncet promised Dulles a share of the Red Cross passports. Their deal was reluctantly but absolutely confirmed by several sources in Western intelligence.[85] As we shall see, Poncet's recruitment was the culmination of DDU's plan to take over the Vatican's Ratlines from the British and the French.

Keeping Barbie out of harm's way was no easy matter. As late as June 1950, the State Department hoped the French would not press the case. They publicly told the French they could not find Barbie in the US zone. Simultaneously, they told the Army not to look.[86] Orders were orders, so the Army never *officially* asked CIC if they knew Barbie's whereabouts.

But the problem would not go away. The British suddenly chimed in with an arrest warrant for Barbie. The affidavit was signed by Hoffman, Barbie's old comrade-in-arms. Worse, the French extradition request would soon be officially delivered to the

American High Commissioner. The DDU feared that the case would blow up in their faces, and decided to make scapegoats of the CIC.[87]

To his utter shock, Vidal received an official State Department order to report whether CIC objected to Barbie's extradition. Vidal scrawled across the memo 'a foul one!' Indeed it was. Apparently, DDU was hoping that Barbie's side job with CIC was so sensitive that Vidal would conceal him, and let them off the hook for hiding him.[88]

But Barbie's actual work for CIC was so inconsequential that they had nothing to fear. The popular view, that the CIC protected him because he infiltrated the German Communists is a fraud. CIC Headquarters had already covertly photocopied the entire Communist party registry. Barbie's trivial bits of information were superfluous. The only operation he could expose was the dirty tricks shop of DDU.[89]

Vidal ensured the scapegoat plan backfired. Both CIC and CIA cheerfully informed the High Commissioner they had no objections to handing Barbie over for trial. In October 1950 DDU struck back with a last ditch effort to force CIC to take the blame for the Barbie fiasco. Cunningham of DDU (who was under cover as local HICOG representative) complained to McCloy's intelligence chief that CIC was *refusing* to look for Barbie, and that the Army should be forced to investigate his whereabouts.[90]

This bit of whining was ineffectual, as the CIC would not be bluffed. Vidal had previously agreed to turn Barbie over to the French and would have done so had it not been for DDU's counter order in May 1950. What happened next is difficult to document. The following fourteen files have been removed from the State Department's archives, but it appears that the High Commissioner's Office issued Barbie with Allied Control Board travel documents, and sent him down the Vatican Ratline.[91]

Draganović promptly shipped him off to South America under the name of Klaus Altmann. In Bolivia, Barbie was received by Draganović's local representative, Father Rocque Romac, another Fascist Croatian priest and wanted war criminal, whose real identity was Father Stjepan Osvaldi-Toth.[92] Vidal's obstinacy really did not matter in the end: the DDU arranged for Major Milano to staff the Ratlines, and CIC got the blame after all.

However, a close examination of the badly copied Barbie documents reveals that the State Department co-ordinated his passage down the Ratline.[93]

Indeed, almost all of the early passengers on the American Ratlines were handled by the State Department's Office of Policy Co-ordination (OPC) through their contact man in Rome:

> In fact, many of Draganović's phoney exit papers were arranged through Robert Bishop, an American ex-OSS agent who was then in charge of the eligibility office of the International Refugee Organization (IRO) in Rome, according to CIC records. Bishop was one of the . . . OPC's most important assets in that city. He had worked . . . on a variety of clandestine projects in Istanbul, Bucharest and Rome since at least 1944.[94]

Bishop, not surprisingly, had also been a member of Angleton's operation.[95] Unfortunately, he had a nervous breakdown due to alcoholism and started to babble stories about underground armies and covert financing of the Italian elections, claiming that he was 'the saviour of Italy'.[96] Like Barbie, he knew too much and was quietly removed before he could further embarrass the Vatican and his superiors.

In 1950, just as the Barbie case was threatening to explode, Dulles stepped out of the woodwork to take over briefly from Frank Wisner as head of OPC. Within a few months, Wisner was back in command when Dulles became Deputy Director of CIA. Bringing Dulles in to smooth relations between OPC and CIA was one of Truman's biggest mistakes, for he brought the Ratlines with him. Shortly after Barbie reached Bolivia, and Dulles joined CIA, the pretence was dropped. Perry's office told the Austrian CIC that their services were no longer required:

> In closing, 430th stated that they are not 'budgeted' beyond 30 June 1951, and implied that they may have to cease this [Ratline] operation after that date. They further stated that a directive received through G2, USFA, indicated that some time in the undetermined future CIA will assume all responsibility for evacuations. Although it is not certain, it appears to 430th that end of the budget and assumption of control by CIA roughly coincide.[97]

To this day, the Justice Department, the CIC and the CIA do not know how the State Department pulled off the Barbie affair, or what was really at stake. It was Dulles's very survival. While the CIA was booting out ABN's Nazis and Philby was sending them to Canada, DDU had brought them back in with phony (and very illegal) visas issued in Germany.[98] Although smuggling Nazis was a felony, the State Department brought Mykola Lebed to America in October 1949, using a false name and background.[99]

Barbie knew too much about Lebed, and Lebed knew too much about Turkul. By the time Barbie went down the Ratline in March 1951,[100] the Augsburg connection had passed the point of no return. Shortly after the OUN split, the 'Ukrainian Vlasov Committee' (Bučko's Galician SS) agreed to work with Turkul.[101] Barbie's Ukrainian contacts had solidified Turkul's base as the rising *émigré* force. With his ties to Lebed, Gehlen and Dulles, Turkul campaigned to 'unify' all the *émigré* groups. It was the same infiltration and co-option strategy he had used to split the Third Reich's *émigrés*.[102]

Turkul had an uncanny knack; he belonged to every faction simultaneously and through his interlocking membership on their executives, advanced his position as the *eminence grise* of the *émigré* anti-Communist movement. Turkul charmed his way through the alphabet soup of *émigré* groups and swallowed them one after another.

By March 1948, Turkul was a leading member of Saint Andrew's Flag, AZODNR, and the paramilitary youth wing of the Vlasov Army. In December 1948, as soon as he had formed a coalition of these groups, Turkul tried to dissolve them and form a new organisation, the KOW, or 'Committee of United Vlasovites'. Eighteen months later, KOW sponsored a conference with other Vlasov organisations, which formed the 'combat union for the liberation of the Peoples of Russia', with its own military centre called SWOD.[103]

To increase his influence, Turkul went international. In September 1950 he tried to merge with the US Kerensky Committee and the Russian monarchists in Paris, but Turkul's organisation was rejected for being too far on the totalitarian right. Turkul then downplayed his Nazi past, and joined the Supreme Council of Russian Exiles.[104] Finally, he proposed that all groups merge into the 'Russian Committee of Liberation'.

There was one ethnic group excluded from Turkul's new committee, as US censors discovered when they opened his mail: 'Our movement will never agree to have Jews on the Russian Committee of Liberation . . . Jews are responsible for 50 million people shot.'[105]

Turkul's shifting alliances were meant to confuse. He downplayed his Nazi affiliations to please the Americans, yet at the same time he joined the British-sponsored ABN. His contradictory loyalties did not trouble Colonel Perry. He vouched for Turkul as an ABN leader and close friend of General Glasenap, who had 'excellent contacts with a US Intelligence Agency in Germany'. As of 14 September 1950, Perry knew of no derogatory information on Turkul.[106] Even Region IV's renegades knew better, listing him as a 'Notorious double agent . . . heading NTS'.[107]

Turkul's post-war network included his old Ukrainian friend Kowalewsky and Vuković of the Serbian movement.[108] NTS leaders were a diverse group: Russian priest Alexiew Kisiliew, who ran a 'Russian School' in Munich along with Father Grabbe and Engineer Marmulkow; Baranowsky ran 'a considerable net for the Americans'; Victor Bajdalakow was NTS Chief, and his assistant, Boldyreff was the liaison in Washington.[109] Boris Ovseenko ran the Australian wing out of the Fairbane Hostel in Canberra, where many Ukrainian Nazis were housed after migrating under the DP scheme.[110]

Major Milano's agreement with the State Department in Germany, which barred NTS members from entry or exit from the US zone, was abandoned.[111] But NTS was still on CIC's banned list in Germany. They rejected Turkul's visa application in 1951, as it 'was felt that his previous intelligence activities could be a security risk to the country', and because he 'was considered [as] having totalitarian rightist leanings'.[112]

Turkul's liaison in Washington, Boldyreff, made things worse when he launched a propaganda offensive. This caused former SS leader, Werner Ohletz, to approach the Americans to warn them against Boldyreff:

> BOLDYREFF portrays the ideologies of the NTS and emphasizes its fight against Nazism and Bolshevism. To this I say the following: As long as it seemed that Germany would win the war, the NTS was very eager to co-operate with the German authories and Intelligence Service. But when it became clear that the Allies would probably be victorious, the NTS began to work for both sides and thus became even more dangerous to the German cause . . .
>
> [Ohletz] states that it is dangerous to co-operate with the NTS and that German Intelligence determined from experience long ago that it was more successful to collaborate with a Democratic Anti-Great Russian Organization and to back their political aims.[113]

As the officer in charge of the SS section which took over military intelligence from Canaris, Ohletz had long and bitter experience with Soviet *émigré* organisations. He described Vlasov's plan to 'liquidate a few million' in order to take over Russia, and added that 'a similar reply was also received from the White Russian General Turkul'.[114] Ohletz warned that 'the German Counter Intelligence Service found that all Émigré Organizations were infiltrated by the NKVD with such effectiveness that it was impossible to discover the connecting lines from top ranking people to the common follower'.[115]

Ohletz insisted that it was 'futile to attempt a co-ordination of Russian Émigré Groups toward a single political direction'.[116] Army intelligence agreed:

> As source emphasized in his conclusions, Émigré Groups have been infiltrated by Russian intelligence Agencies to the extent that the degree of penetration is not always discernible. *It is significant that neither OHLETZ or SCHELLENBERG, who were charged with the obtaining of positive intelligence in the RSHA, failed to discern the extent and ease with which the Turkul organization penetrated the German Intelligence Service and the Vlasov movement.* [emphasis in original]
>
> For the purposes of illustrating the danger of employing émigré organizations as intelligence collection agencies, Turkul's organization has been selected as a vehicle to illustrate the following:
>
> **a.** Penetration of émigré organizations by Russian agents;
> **b.** The elusiveness of the Soviet Intelligence deception measures;
> **c.** The unreliability and irresponsibility of these oganizations for intelligence purposes;
> **d.** The unsuspiciousness and failure of the German intelligence service to realize that this organization was working for the Soviets.[117]

It is ironic that Army intelligence selected NTS as an example of Soviet penetration, while ignoring Turkul himself. Still, the report was scathing. NTS was denounced for inciting premature rebellion with its propaganda. It was also believed that NTS had no partisans of its own behind the 'Iron Curtain', and was simply trying to wreck the fragile unity of pro-US groups.[118] Indeed, the CIC had also pegged Turkul's agents as saboteurs, citing their intrigues in the Saint Andrew's Flag.[119] The Soviets consistently helped their agents by denouncing them as war criminals.[120]

Dulles and Gehlen fell for the trap. Anyone condemned by the Soviets was all right in their book. They ignored the Army's warnings and expanded support for NTS. Without CIA knowing, Dulles's clique poured millions of dollars into Turkul's networks. Dulles's determination to hide his Nazis from the 'liberals' fooled the CIA; they thought their money was going to democratic groups. As Philby himself recalls:

> The American attack on the alliance between Bandera and SIS gathered strength in 1950, and much of my time in the United States was spent in transmitting acrimonious exchanges between Washington and London on the rival merits of obscure émigré factions. The CIA proferred three objections to Bandera as an ally. His extreme nationalism, with its fascist overtones, was a handicap which would prejudice Western dealings with other groups inside the Soviet Union; for example, the Great Russians. He was alleged to have his roots in the old emigration and to lack all contact with the new 'more realistic' emigration which the Americans were busy cultivating. Finally, he was accused flatly of being anti-American. The British plea that Bandera was being used solely for the purpose of gathering intelligence, and that such a use could have no political significance, was brushed aside by the Americans, who argued that, whatever the nature of the connection, its very existence must inflate Bandera's prestige in the Ukraine. They professed fears that any reinforcement of Bandera's following must risk splitting the 'resistance movement' in the Ukraine with whom they were themselves working.[121]

Philby must have giggled when the Americans complained that SIS support for Bandera undermined their work with moderate Ukrainian and Russian *émigrés*. While the CIA chased Bandera's Nazis, Dulles brought the Turkul and Lebed network into the CIA through Gehlen's back door. Angleton made sure that the CIA kept their hands off Dulles's empire, regaling Philby with tales of Gehlen's prowess. Philby recalled that Angleton knew that French intelligence was hopelessly penetrated by Soviet double agents, however:

> Angleton had fewer fears about Germany. That country concerned him chiefly as a base of operations against the Soviet bloc and the socialist states of Eastern Europe. The CIA lost no time in taking over the anti-Soviet section of the German Abwehr, under von Gehlen . . . Angleton [defended] with chapter and verse, the past record and current activities of the von Gehlen organization.[122]

The former Abwehr section hired by Angleton turned out to be Turkul's phoney MAX network. If Angleton knew that the Army believed NTS was riddled, he certainly kept it to himself. There are curious holes in the CIA files which suggest that Angleton 'compartmentalised' any information that might embarrass Dulles, Gehlen or Turkul. For example, when Lebed's Nazi past was uncovered by the Immigration Service, CIA's head agreed to sponsor him for permanent citizenship under the special provisions of the 100 Persons Act (which allowed 100 US agents to surreptitiously enter the country each year).

Yet, the CIA's own analysts could not even find Lebed's first name when they compiled files on Nazi Ukrainian agents.[123] In the late 1970s, CIA reported to Congress that no 'war criminals, assassins, or persons of that type' had ever been brought in under the 100 Persons Act.

The popular view is that CIA deliberately lied. The truth is more tragic. The DDU became a pseudo-CIA inside CIA that hid information instead of centralising it. The CIA does not realise to this day that a trio of 'useful idiots' – Dulles, Wisner and Angleton – sabotaged their filing system to protect the State Department's Nazis. Much derogatory information was never passed by Angleton to the responsible CIA analysts.[124] Former British intelligence officer, Peter Wright, claimed that Angleton even hid files from the President.[125]

After Eisenhower became President in January 1953, Dulles's agency-within-the-Agency received official sanction. Dulles became CIA head, Wisner was placed in charge of covert operations, and Angleton kept the Vatican files to himself.[126] Even then the old DDU hands kept the rest of the CIA in the dark. All information on NTS was diverted to Wisner's Program Branch, where it was secure from the 'liberals'.[127]

Dulles told his staff that gloves were off. Lebed's SB assassinated suspected Soviet agents,[128] and Angleton and Wisner launched Operation Red Sox/Red Cap, the code name for the overthrow of Communist regimes behind the 'Iron Curtain'.[129] They were funding Turkul: his recently declassified CIC file contains several references to front groups 'financed by AMCOMLIB', the American Committee for the Liberation of the Peoples of Russia.[130] This committee, better known today as Radio Liberty, has been publicly acknowledged as one of Dulles's funding conduits.[131]

The CIA and Radio Liberty were ignorant of Ukrainian assassins or Nazi smuggling. They needed access to the Immigration Service's top secret files on the OUN and the State Department's security investigation of Stanislav Stankievich; neither is in the CIA's filing index.[132] To put it bluntly, the DDU clique was laundering CIA money to finance an array of corrupt activities, including the GRU's creature, the NTS.

In February 1956 Turkul tried to leave Europe before the final curtain came down, and again applied for a US visa under the laxer rules of the 1953 Refugee Relief Act. The Kremlin should erect a statue to Senator Joseph McCarthy: his hysterical anti-Communism forced Congress to change the laws to permit entry of Nazis who had only fought against the Soviets. Turkul's wife and sister-in-law were already in America. Relying on British intelligence advice, the CIC again concluded in August 1956 that 'investigation did not reveal any information that SUBJECT had been doubling as a Soviet Agent'.[133]

Three months later, at the height of the bloody Hungarian rebellion, the NTS incited false hopes of Western assistance, enabling the Soviets to smash the revolt and discredit Dulles's 'freedom fighters' for ever:

> In the wake of the failed rebellion there was considerable controversy over whether or not the United States had misled street fighters in Budapest into believing that US military aid would be delivered to the rebels. Many anti-Communist Hungarian refugees bitterly charged that such promises – supposedly broadcast over Radio Free Europe – had resulted in considerable unnecessary bloodshed when rebels held out to the last man in the false hope that international help was on the way . . .
>
> In fact, however, misleading claims that American military aid was on the way *had* been broadcast by radio, though not by Radio Free Europe. According to a special investigation by the parliamentary Council of Europe, the Russian nationalist NTS organization was responsible for beaming ill-considered pledges into Hungary at the height of the rebellion. The NTS, as it turns out, sporadically operated a clandestine radio station named Radio Free Moscow, aimed at Soviet troops in East Germany, and they decided to send its signal into Hungary at the height of the fighting. As with other NTS projects of the period, Radio Free Moscow was staffed primarily by former Nazi collaborators – for it is they who made up most of the NTS leadership during the 1950s – and was almost entirely financed by the CIA.[134]

In one master stroke, Turkul had broken the anti-Soviet resistance. Subsequent investigations showed that it was Angleton's and Wisner's Red Sox/Red Cap NTS agents who had broadcast the misleading propaganda to the Hungarians. The remaining operations were scrapped. Operation Red Sox/Red Cap was the culmination of General Turkul's work for the Soviet Union. He died peacefully in 1959.[135]

Both the CIA and Gehlen belatedly agreed that Turkul was himself a Soviet agent.[136] In order to absolve themselves, Dulles and Angleton blamed the mole ridden British Intelligence Service for this 'slew of Soviet agents, including the White Russian general Anton Turkul'.[137] In hindsight, even Sir William Stephenson agreed that Turkul 'was in fact a Soviet agent sending chickenfeed to the Nazis to maintain his credibility', while he was really loyal to Moscow.[138] There was enough embarrassment to go around. By mutual Western agreement, an eery shroud of silence descended over the Turkul scandal; it lasted for over three decades.

It was exactly what the Kremlin wanted. Because of the deliberate Soviet silence, the West was lulled to sleep. No one re-investigated Turkul's 'unimportant' years in Rome. No one re-examined his role in the Ratline run by Perry and Milano. No one remembered the mail intercepts showing that Turkul was co-ordinating the 'Yugoslav emigration' networks. No one suspected a Soviet connection inside the Vatican.[139]

Even when Father Draganović retired behind the 'Iron Curtain', no one suspected that the Vatican Ratlines had been run by Moscow from the beginning. There is not one word in Turkul's US intelligence files of his connection to the Vatican's Black Orchestra. The Americans did not even open a file on the *Schwarze Kapelle* until seven years after World War II.

In 1952 the US European Command requested information about 'the Schwarze Kapelle' from its three major intelligence organisations: the CIA's 'Department of Army Detachment' (DAD); the State Department's 'Document Disposal Unit' (DDU); and the Headquarters of the 66th CIC Detachment (previously the 970th). They searched their files and found nothing. However, in Berlin, Region I of the CIC had a 'usually reliable source', who described the Soviet operation to control the Black Orchestra. The origins of Soviet penetration were laid out in one short paragraph:

> . . . the Schwarze Kapelle was formerly comprised of high ranking Wehrmacht officers and had at one time been directed by Admiral Canaris. [Source] stated that the Schwarze Kapelle had been activated between the years 1930 and 1934, at which time the Rote Kapelle, an organization comprised mainly of MVD [Soviet Military Intelligence] members and sympathizers, was active as a resistance organization. Initially the two organizations were co-ordinated to form a united front, however, the Schwarze Kapelle activities subsided to the extent that those

> individuals who remained active looked to the Rote Kapelle for guidance.[140]

Somehow one man had discovered the Soviets' best kept secret: their Red Orchestra controlled the Vatican's Black Orchestra. The US agent had no idea what his source was talking about. He closed the file and put it away. The Vatican never realised that it had fallen into a Soviet trap when it joined the Black Orchestra in 1939. The Ratlines were run from the Kremlin.

12

Conclusions

We do not claim that this history of the Vatican Ratlines is complete, nor that it is totally free from error. Analysing the declassified files is akin to pasting the leaves back on a tree after a violent storm has passed. It is hard enough to trace the branches of Cold War diplomacy, let alone its secret intelligence roots. The passing decades have scattered many pages, covered over a great deal, and much remains hidden in the vaults. Even the declassified files may have deceived us; disinformation may have blurred our vision of how these documents originally fitted into the tangled web.

But our purpose was not to chart a single tree but to map the wreckage of the forest. Where disaster cut a swath across the nations, the débris of previously classified files from every corner of the world reveals the track of the secret storm. The trail of wrecked operations and covert destruction leads inexorably back to Rome. The hurricane's centre was in the Vatican.

However, Pius XII and his closest advisers were surrounded by a whirlwind of forces: the Soviets had penetrated the Nazi nationalists; the French, British and Americans had recruited the Nazis for their anti-Communist crusade. Some may feel that the Vatican should be exonerated because it was deceived on all sides. The truth is that the Vatican knew exactly what it was doing at critical points, and adopted policies which led to its own disgrace.

However, while the focus of this book is the Vatican, we would be remiss if we failed to mention the involvement of other nations. It would take many volumes to fully outline the evidence against them. Moreover, in the course of researching this book, we have come across many additional issues that are too complex for current resolution. Before turning to the Vatican itself, we set forth our suggestions on how the pieces may fit together, so that future historians may eventually solve the puzzle. The reader is cautioned that, unlike the preceding chapters, this is simply the authors' opinion of the possible international scope of the Ratlines.

The Union of Soviet Socialist Republics

The Soviet Union's infiltration of the Ratlines was a stunning technical achievement in espionage. The twin virus of the GRU and KGB encircled the Vatican and infiltrated every pore of the Nazi networks. The Soviets ascertained the weak spot in the Western defensive system: a sad tendency on the part of our intelligence services to affiliate with extreme right-wing movements. Stalin's agents not only used the ultra-right as a camouflage, they manipulated these extremist groups to polarise and defeat the Western response to Communism. Instead of democracy, there was Durčansky; instead of truth, there was Turkul; instead of freedom there were Fascist spokesmen for the anti-Communist cause; instead of ending Stalin's tyranny, totalitarian agents were infiltrated among our own populations.

We wished to conduct one final interview to complete the history of the Ratlines. One of our researchers travelled to Moscow and requested permission to film an interview with Kim Philby. Philby reviewed the list of questions we had prepared, and agreed to participate. We suspected that it was the first time that anyone had asked him about his part in Nazi-smuggling operations run by the Vatican and the Western nations. Senior Soviet officials assured us that in the new era of *glasnost*, it was time for all the old scandals of the Stalin era to be exposed. However, after repeated delays, the Philby interview was postponed.

Our contact explained with some embrarrassment that our request was being reviewed at a higher level. Shortly afterwards, news of the Ligachev–Gorbachev struggle in the Politbureau was leaked to the press. Perhaps coincidentally, we were told that Philby had changed his mind and, as a free Soviet citizen could not be compelled to do the interview. It was suggested that perhaps things would change in a few months. Shortly afterwards, Philby's death was announced.

Apparently, there are limits to *glasnost*. From the declassified Western files, there can be no doubt that Soviet intelligence encouraged and assisted the emigration of Nazis. Nor is there any doubt that Philby himself helped build the smuggling network as a Trojan horse for Communist penetration of Western intelligence.

Perhaps there are older, deeper scandals. There have been rumours, never verified, that some of the top Nazi war criminals were Soviet double agents. Schellenberg, for example, insisted that Müller, the head of the Gestapo, was working for Moscow.[1] If he is right, that would explain why it took so long for Müller's Gestapo to detect the Western half of the Red Orchestra, and why Turkul's net continued to survive.

Even the admission that Turkul's MAX network was working for Soviet military intelligence could be a major source of embarrassment. The issue for future historians may not be why the Soviet Army did so well in World War II, but why they did so poorly. The more interesting explanation for modern Soviet silence is that some aspects of the Ratlines are still being run from the Kremlin.

Austria

The declassified US files confirm that the post-war Austrian government supported the Vatican's plans for the revival of Intermarium. According to one source, the Austrian liaison was Kurt Waldheim.[2] If true, this would explain a great many things. Waldheim says that he was not involved with war crimes in the bloody Kozara massacre of 1942, that he was many miles away, working for the German Quartermaster in western Yugoslavia. Collecting food is hardly a capital offence, but it does show that Waldheim may have had an opportunity to meet Father Draganović, who was in charge of forced requisitioning for the Ustashi in western Bosnia at the time of the Kozara offensive.[3] Waldheim certainly made an impression on Ante Pavelić, who awarded him a silver medal with oak leaf clusters for his services in the same region at the same time.

As was later acknowledged by Waldheim's former superior, Allied intelligence should have disqualified him from any position with the Austrian Foreign Service.[4] In 1945 it was Allen Dulles's son-in-law who provided the Austrian government with a wildly erroneous background check that ignored Waldheim's true military record.[5]

Whether by blunder or design, Waldheim was cleared to join the Austrian diplomatic corps at the time his governemnt repeatedly turned a blind eye toward the Ustashi's terrorist network on their soil, even letting them openly recruit in the DP camps. Draganović himself later became an Austrian citizen before he returned to Yugoslavia.

The Communist countries have been unusually silent about Waldheim's past, providing the necessary votes to elect him UN Secretary General against the Western-backed candidate. The West German press has critically examined Waldheim's UN record, and now questions who he was really working for. It should be noted, however, that the Yugoslav rumours about Waldheim's secret Nazi dossier have never been verified. Indeed, the Yugoslav Communists have engaged in what is apparently a calculated campaign of disinformation on the Waldheim affair, perhaps because of Tito's close post-war relations with the Austrian President.

When the allegations against Waldheim were made in 1986, a respected American journalist with impeccable Yugoslav contacts made a series of startling claims about Communist attempts to blackmail the Austrian in the late 1940s. Based on interviews with former Yugoslav secret police and government officials, it was alleged that the Waldheim war crimes dossier was manufactured and used to threaten him when he was secretary to the Austrian Foreign Minister. This was before the Tito–Stalin split, and it was claimed that the blackmail operation was eventually taken over by the Soviets, and that 'Waldheim was recruited' by them.[6]

The story was vehemently denied by both Waldheim and Belgrade, and some of the journalist's Communist sources retracted important details. But according to US intelligence files, someone in the Austrian Foreign Ministry was in fact assisting the Vatican's intelligence operations after the war. That person's identity will only be known if an independent examination of the classified files is made by the Austrian government.

Italy

The evidence is overwhelming that the covert policy of the Italian government was to subvert foreign governments and create the political entity known as Intermarium. This policy was pursued with the help of the Vatican, Britain and America. There is a consistent pattern of evidence that Italian security, police and intelligence officials played a prominent part in the false identity chain for the fugitive Nazi war criminals. Indeed, the Ratlines could not have functioned without Prime Minister Alcide de Gasperi's official sanction and support, as in the case of gun running to the Križari.

While the extent of Soviet penetration of Italy is not clear, it appears that Mussolini's intelligence service was co-opted by the Turkul network, and that a significant number of agents of the Fascist intelligence service remained in their posts after World War II. The P2 scandal, involving an extreme right wing intelligence group that supported neo-Fascist terrorism in an attempted coup, follows the pattern of Soviet *agent provocateur* successes in other Western countries which harboured Fascist cliques.

France

It is certain that François Poncet and Henri Lebrun worked for Barbie as informants, but what did they tell him? An American CIC officer confirmed that the US Government mentioned something called TECHNICA when they asked him why Barbie was protected for so long. It is difficult to know exactly what TECHNICA involved, but the few references in declassified literature suggest that it was a rogue French operation controlled by British intelligence, without de Gaulle's knowledge. It eliminated post-war Communist rivals in the resistance by betraying their identities to the Nazis. If true, the TECHNICA connection could explain why the anti-Communist French Military was so reluctant to have Barbie back.

Whatever Poncet's mysterious involvement with Barbie, the Black Orchestra, or TECHNICA, the role of the French government in the post-war revival of Intermarium is clearly demonstrated by several independent sources. Charles de Gaulle was the man who led the Nazis on the road to the Vatican and freedom. French politician Paul Reynaud was the Vatican's front man in France, and the French General Staff were up to their epaulettes in smuggling war criminals.

United States of America

The spectre of the Vatican Ratlines continues to haunt American politicians. In anticipation of certain victory by his candidate in the impending November 1948 American elections, Allen Dulles told his friend, Frank Wisner, to go ahead with smuggling the Ratlines' recruits. Much of the false paperwork was already in the visa pipeline when word came of Truman's stunning re-election. Dulles must have been crushed. It would be four more years before he would become head of the CIA. Wisner must have been terrified; he had transformed the Vatican Ratlines into an illegal immigration pipeline, codenamed Operation Bloodstone.

In 1949 Intermarium's first Nazi agents finished their long journey and arrived in America. They were welcomed by 'Carmel Offie, the OPC officer working under State Department cover who was responsible for the care and feeding of a number of Bloodstone *émigrés*'.[7] Offie had been promoted as Wisner's assistant for 'émigré affairs' and managed to find some of the Nazis jobs as broadcasters for Radio Liberty and the Voice of America.

Offie knew how the game was played. He had previously helped the Vatican get travel passes for their 'religious missions' (Hudal and Draganović) to the prison camps, and later served as Political Adviser in Germany. There was only one little problem: Carmel Offie was accused of being a Communist spy.

To this day, Offie's friends continue to deny that he was a Soviet mole. 'How could the Soviets blackmail him? Everyone in Washington knew he was a homosexual!'[8] Both Philby and Offie were widely regarded as victims of McCarthyism who were hounded out of public service. Like Philby, Offie received a sinecure position doing intelligence work on the side.[9]

What no one realised at the time was that Offie had succeeded where Philby had failed: he had transplanted the Vatican Virus to America where it would flourish undetected within US intelligence for the next several decades. While the CIA was booting out the Nazi Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations, Offie was bringing them in the back door through DDU. The case of Carmel Offie deserves a long second look. It was another scandal that Dulles swept under the rug.

When Allen Dulles finally became head of the CIA in 1953, he and Wisner were too embarrassed or too stupid to realise what the Soviets had done. According to one former intelligence officer 'the final sting' was that a number of these infiltrated networks were taken on by Wisner, and later incorporated into the CIA.[10] According to one estimate, some 10,000 Nazi war criminals entered the United States after World War II.[11] Dulles could not risk investigating Communist infiltration among the Nazis without exposing his own involvement with illegal immigration.

In 1959 the NATO intelligence services reviewed their anti-Soviet failures and concluded that support for the *émigrés* should be abandoned, as these 'exile organizations were hopelessly riddled with Communist spies'.[12] Ironically, NATO's West German intelligence liaison was Hans Felfe, the top Communist mole in the Gehlen Organisation.

Soviet penetration of the Nazi networks were not only a threat to Allen Dulles's reputation, their exposure would have ruined the political career of Richard Nixon, the Republican candidate for President in 1959. Nixon authorised Dulles's covert projects during Eisenhower's illnesses in 1956 and 1957.[13] After Nixon was defeated and Dulles was fired by President Kennedy, a large number of OPC files were ordered 'routinely destroyed'. Wisner had already committed suicide; Dulles betrayed his country by taking the Vatican secret with him. The CIA discovered too late that Dulles's political cover-up had cost them a decade:

> But it was not until after Philby defected to Moscow [1963] and the Blunt investigations revealed the true extent of the 'Cambridge network' that James Angleton ordered a major reassessment of the CIA's European underground networks. This involved reviewing thousands of previous checks for agents and sources who had earlier been cleared by MI5 and MI6.[14]

Putting Angleton in charge of the investigation was like putting the fox in charge of the hen house. Angleton knew full well what had gone wrong. He was the CIA's principal expert on World War II Nazi intelligence, as well as its Vatican liaison. As Chief of CIA Counter Intelligence, Angleton was in a perfect position to see that politically embarrassing dossiers never made it out of his office.

Of course, there were always a few insiders who knew the dirty little Nazi secret. During the subsequent Nixon administration, the US States Department secretly informed the Australian government that they were ignoring Ustashi fugitives in America because they were useful in turning out the ethnic vote 'in several federal, state and municipal elections'.[15]

The only thing Nixon's State Department did about the Nazis was to quietly warn a few American politicians not to attend any Croation functions on 10 April, as that is the occasion when the Ustashi celebrate the day Hitler set up Pavelić's puppet government. Apparently the warning did not reach Governor Ronald Reagan. He proclaimed 10 April as 'Croatian Independence Day' in California and later, as President, had his picture taken in the White house with prominent ex-Fascists and war criminals of the ABN. Despite the previous condemnation by the State Department and CIA, Jaroslav Stetsko was treated as an honoured guest by Reagan and the leaders of several other Western nations.

It is difficult to believe that George Bush knows absolutely nothing about the Croatian terrorists, since they hijacked an American airliner while he was head of the CIA. Yet President Bush made the same 'mistakes' as Reagan: his campaign staff published a calendar celebrating 10 April as 'Croatian Independence Day' and permitted known Fascists to work on his 'ethnic outreach' programme during the 1988 election campaign. Perhaps Bush heeded the cynical advice of the Nixon administration that the Eastern European Nazis can deliver the ethnic vote.

Many politicians, including Ronald Reagan, have embarrassing ties to the Ratlines. In the US Archives is a newsreel of Reagan in 1950, innocently raising money for one of Dulles's front groups that laundered money to Fascist 'freedom fighters'. Reagan's intelligence chief, William Casey, headed another front group, the International Rescue Committee, that helped the fugitives with their immigration problems. Perhaps Oliver North did not invent the money laundering system for Contragate; he may have simply copied the one that Casey and Reagan had previously worked on.

It seems certain that the Ratlines are alive and well in America. The Nazis from Intermarium and ABN have found a new home: the World Anti-Communist League, formerly headed by retired US General John Singlaub. This is the same organisation suspected by the US Congress of complicity in running guns for Contragate. Some of WACL's leaders were the same Nazis recruited by Kim Philby. The heads of the Western intelligence services may be afraid to open the Cold War files documenting their own leaders' involvement with Nazis for fear that they will hear Stalin laughing from his grave.

Germany

There is substantial evidence in US intelligence files that a portion of the Red Orchestra survived World War II. Soviet intelligence had a special section in Hitler's Germany: the 'BB Apparat', which focused on German technical and scientific advances in warfare. The BB Apparat was kept separate from the run-of-the-mill Communist informants in Germany, and if American intelligence's suspicions are correct, is still at work among the German military industrial complex. Such penetration would explain Stalin's fascination with Hitler's secret weapons development.[16]

Among the dubious achievements of Nazi science was the invention of Sarin, Tabun and Soman. These nerve gases, later called the G-series by NATO, were so effective that the same formulae are still in use today by both the Soviets and the West. According to British records, a man named Mengele was in their custody in 1945 for interrogation concerning chemical weapons, but whether this is a reference to Joseph Mengele or his brother, Karl, is not known. It should be noted that by agreement with the Americans, all German experts on bacteriological and chemical warfare were handed over to British custody.[17]

There is some circumstantial evidence that the British made a deal with Mengele for his nerve gas records. Joseph Mengele suddenly left his hiding place, and despite the fact that he was a wanted war criminal, crossed into the Soviet zone to bring back a trunkful of records that he had buried just before the end of the war. Soon afterwards, Mengele's brother, father and co-researcher at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute were all released from custody and allowed to resume their civilian employment without regard to their Nazi pasts.[18]

Mengele himself proceeded to Italy for emigration to Argentina. According to Ivo Omrčanin, Draganović's assistant on the Ratlines, they processed 'thousands' of German scientists and technicians who wished to emigrate to South America. When the Americans realised the extent of Stalin's nerve gas production, they hired a few German experts of their own. Even the head of I. G. Farben was brought to America to work on the death gas plants, along with several of the more knowledgeable designers. When their task was finished, they were all allowed to return to West Germany and go back into business.[19]

During the 1970s, US codebreakers found dramatic evidence that West German companies were selling the Sarin secret to several Arab nations in the Middle East. Fifty years after *Kristallnacht*, Hitler's final solution may be coming to Israel.[20]

According to John McIntyre, an American intelligence agent who worked briefly on the Gehlen end of the Ratlines before he quit in disgust, the Third Reich's most ingenious weapon was the prussic acid gas gun for assassins.[22] Soviet intelligence obtained a copy of the device and issued it to its own assassins in order to make it look like a Gehlen hit. Two of Turkul's rivals, Stephan Bandera and an NTS leader were killed with these devices. Perhaps to protect the surviving members of the BB Apparat, Soviet intelligence has always attributed the proliferation of illegal weapons to the Americans and the Israelis. No one has ever examined the role of West German intelligence as a merchant of death for GRU clients such as Libya and Iraq. The greatest scandal may involve the German bankers, as discussed below.

Even more alarming are reports that West Germany is behind the secret proliferation of nuclear weapons. According to a former Argentine diplomat, a secret nuclear protocol was attached to a West German–Argentine Trade Treaty during the 1960s. The rationale was that West Germany was afraid that some day the Americans would pull out of NATO or withdraw their nuclear shield. Because of Soviet antipathy to German possession of the atomic bomb, it was decided to develop the nuclear weapons secretly by utilising the large *émigré* communities of German scientists in Argentina and South Africa.[21]

Great Britain

The lion's share of the blame for the Ratlines undoubtedly belongs to the government of Great Britain. In 1990 Lord Shawcross led the fight in the House of Lords to stop belated prosecutions of war criminals. Among the unsatisfactory reasons given was that British soldiers had been assassinated in Palestine after the war, which caused a change in attitude towards the Jews.[23] Despite the ineffective protests of Lord Shawcross, it was under his post-war leadership that British prosecution of Nazi war criminals utterly collapsed, as described in Tom Bower's work, *The Pledge Betrayed*.[24]

We believe there was another reason. In 1948 the British government had already secretly cabled the Commonwealth countries to stop all investigations of Nazi war criminals.[25] Even before the prosecutions collapsed, the evidence is overwhelming that British intelligence was recruiting Nazi war criminals for several covert projects including Intermarium, Prometheus and NTS. British intelligence sheltered Pavelić, smuggled the Ustashi gold and arranged the mass escapes from Rimini and other camps. His Majesty's Government asked the Vatican for assistance to resettle 'Grey' Nazis, and asked America to help sabotage the screening process. British intelligence maintained contact with their Nazi protégés in Canada and Australia under the guise of ABN. Finally, British intelligence vouched for the Communist-riddled Nazi networks and peddled them around the world as 'freedom fighters'.[26]

The American cover-up was not unique. The British also have methods of dealing with their embarrassing scandals caused by Philby, Ellis and Turkul. As a result of Philby's intervention in 1945, British intelligence did not discover until the mid-1960s that 'Dickie' Ellis was a Nazi agent with ties to General Turkul's Soviet net. Only a handful of people in British intelligence were told Ellis's secret, and they decided that it was so shocking that neither the FBI nor the CIA should know: the White Russian General who was Ellis's 'Nazi' contact had turned NTS into the most deadly weapon of Soviet espionage. British intelligence had sold a Communist net to the gullible Americans. It was better to lie and claim that Ellis was not prosecuted in order to protect the Windsor scandal. That sorry excuse has been used to death. In fact, it was SIS's Colin Gubbins (the Prometheus liaison) who put Ellis to work on the document shredder *after* Ellis had confessed to treason. It was SIS's reputation, not Windsor's, that was being salvaged.

For the last half century, Britain has been the only Western nation to refuse any access to its intelligence archives. There is good reason. Time after time, American records were withhheld from the authors on the grounds that it would embarrass a foreign government. When the authors asked who was withholding Nazi documents, we were provided with a copy of a letter from the British Embassy in Washington. The British government is sitting on the last secret of the Cold War, and is desperately pressuring its allies to keep the lid on.

The authors' documentary series on Nazis living 'down under' has been credited by the Australian government as the impetus for re-opening war crimes cases. When one of the authors requested CIA permission to inform Australia of certain classified details of Nazi-smuggling to that country, the letter came back with so many deletions that it looked like Swiss cheese. When the authors offered to provide declassified information on the role of British intelligence in protecting these Nazis for the last forty years, the Australian investigator reacted as if he had been bitten by a snake.

The Australian, British and Canadian war crimes investigators limit their inquiries to identifying Nazis living in their particular jurisdiction. No one investigates who helped the Nazis emigrate in the first place. In 1985 one of the authors testified before the US Congress about British sponsorship of Nazi emigration. The US General Accounting Office issued a report confirming our charges that American intelligence agencies had protected Nazis who had previously been employed by another Allied nation, but deleted all references to Britain. The only thing the British did well was the cover-up.

But we live in an age of documents, there are no more secrets, only deferred disclosures. Piece by piece, the archivists in Washington, Rome, Ottawa, London and Canberra have declassified seemingly innocuous documents, and the Ratlines' outlines have emerged. Behind the Nazis were the Vatican, behind the Vatican were the British, behind the British were the Communists.

'Forget about the Communists,' one of the old spies told us. He explained that we should ignore all the ideologies as a smokescreen and follow the one common denominator that made sense. 'Trace the money,' he said. And so we did. As the last layer of the onion peeled away, we found out who was at the centre of the Ratlines.

The Bankers

During World War II, the Swedish corporation SKF controlled 80 per cent of all the ball bearing production in Europe, and held the patents for most of the world:

> . . . the power behind their production and distribution as SKF Chairman was Sven Winquist, a dashing playboy friend of Goering and the Duke and Duchess of Windsor. He was a prominent partner in Jacob Wallenberg's Stockholm Enskilda, the largest private bank in Sweden – a correspondent of Hitler's Reichsbank.[27]

While Raoul Wallenberg was heroically rescuing Hungary's Jews, his relative, Jacob, was the most important Nazi banker in history. Sixty per cent of SKF's world-wide production went to Germany.[28] By 1943, the Americans had had enough. But when the US Ambassador to Stockholm demanded an embargo, the Swedish Foreign Minister coolly threatened to publish the full correspondence which would show that 'trade between Sweden and Germany was on a contract basis known to the allied governments and based on prior agreements with them'.

British Chancellor of the Exchequer, Sir Kingsley Wood, described pre-war Western deals with Nazi bankers: 'This country has various rights and interests . . . under our international trust agreements between the various governments. It would not be in our interest to sever connection.'[29] The British Minister of Economic Warfare, Lord Selbourne, begged the Americans not to put SKF on the embargo blacklist, and instead outbid the Nazis for Wallenberg's ball bearings.[30]

According to Anthony Cave Brown, Wallenberg had high British connections indeed. He was working both sides of the fence as a go-between for the Black Orchestra. Apparently, British intelligence used Jacob Wallenberg for shuttle diplomacy with the Nazis at the same time that Raoul Wallenberg was aiding the Jews. The Soviets captured Raoul and tortured him for several weeks before they realised they had the wrong Wallenberg. They killed him to cover up their British connection. Of course, Jacob Wallenberg had an American intelligence connection as well. SKF's American lawyer was Allen Dulles. In fact, the Dulles brothers had represented most of the Nazi banks prior to the outbreak of the war.

Allen Dulles was also connected to the Swiss Bank of International Settlements (BIS) through a German correspondent bank headed by Kurt von Schroeder. Somehow the bankers learned of the secret American plan to invade North Africa in 1942, for immediately the

> German bankers, along with their French correspondents, transferred 9 billion gold francs via the BIS to Algiers. Anticipating German defeat, they were seeking a killing in dollar exchange. The collaborationists boosted their holdings from $350 to $525 million almost overnight . . . Another collaborator in the scheme was one of the Vatican's espionage group who leaked the secret to others in Hitler's high command.[31]

Apparently the Holy See was not above making a profit out of its intelligence operations. Still the spectacle of Nazi, French, British, Japanese and Vatican bankers all swapping information to make a profit on the currency exchange is one that would have chilled the blood of the soldiers on whose lives they were betting.

From the bankers' point of view, the Vatican's peace negotiations with Germany were a convenient cover for continuing business as usual with the Nazis. At the same time, bankers like Wallenberg had protected themselves just in case the Allies won or the bumbling Black Orchestra ever succeeded in assassinating Hitler. The Vatican's role in the Black Orchestra takes on a whole new light.

State Department records for South America confirm that the Ustashi Minister for Finance and the French Under Secretary of State of the Vichy Government, went to Argentina via the Vatican Ratline.[32] According to Paul Manning, there were rumours of others. He cites the FBI's copy of a surveillance file forwarded by the Central de Intelligencia of Argentina's Ministry of the Interior:

> . . . in 1948, Martin Bormann received the bulk of the treasure that had made up the financial reserve of the Deutsche Bank . . . Like other fugitives, he entered Argentina in 1948, coming from Genoa on a second-class ticket, with forged Vatican documentation.[33]

The 'Bormann connection' may be nothing more than a clever hoax to discredit the underlying charges that stolen Nazi money was laundered to South America and injected back into West Germany for the 'great economic miracle' of 1948 to 1951. Most of these financial allegations have been dismissed out of hand, perhaps prematurely.

In 1945 the US Treasury Department accused Allen Dulles of laundering funds from the Nazi bank of Hungary into Switzerland. Similar charges were made against Dulles's agent, Hans Bernd Gisevius, who had worked for Dulles as an OSS agent while serving at the Reichsbank.[34] The State Department quickly took over the Treasury Department's money laundering allegations, and the Dulles–Gisevius investigation was quietly dropped.[35]

Gisevius may have had some involvement with the Ratlines. He was a senior member of the Black Orchestra during World War II and was considered to be 'Allen Dulles's pipeline to Admiral

Canaris'.[36] After the war, Gisevius personally briefed the Australian government on American efforts to resettle the surplus population of Europe in other countries, citing the support of the 'Committee for a Free Europe', later acknowledged as a clandestine front for Dulles's Cold War programmes. This was also the organisation which served as the American end of the Vatican Ratlines.[37]

The most important front group was an entity called the World Commerce Corporation established after World War II to rebuild German–South American trade networks.[38] The directors of this corporation were Sir William Stephenson, formerly of British intelligence and General William Donovan, formerly of the OSS. One of the attorneys for World Commerce was Allen Dulles, whose assistant, Frank Wisner, was the State Department's deputy for currency and economic reform in the American zone of West Germany. Many of the staff members for the economic reconstruction of occupied Germany came from the same international financial firms which had invested heavily in the pre-war German economy.

According to sworn testimony before the US Senate by a representative of the German banking industry, an organisation did exist in 1950 which was 'formed by Lord Shawcross of England and Mr Hermann Abs of Germany to bring about a Magna Carta for the protection of foreign investments of World War II'.[39] This is the same Lord Shawcross who led the recent campaign in the British House of Lords to prevent the re-opening of war crimes investigations in Britain. Despite allegations by Manning, it is difficult to believe that Shawcross would have lent his good name to Abs's organisation if he had known its real purpose. In a 1966 hearing before the Select Committee on Standards and Conduct of the US Senate, Abs was identified as the common denominator of a group seeking return of vested enemy properties of World War II.[40]

When the United States entered the war in 1941, all of the branches of American banks in France under German control were closed, except two which had ties to Abs: Morgan et Cie and Chase of New York:

> both received this special treatment through the intercession of Dr Hermann Josef Abs of Deutsche Bank, financial adviser to the German

> government. According to US Treasury agent reports, the favorable treatment was due to . . . an 'old school tie', an unspoken understanding among international bankers that wars may come and may go but the flux of wealth goes on forever.[41]

According to Nuremberg records, Abs's Deutsche Bank was the principal conduit for laundering Nazi money into Argentina during the war under the supervision of Martin Bormann.[42] The American war crimes investigation of Abs, former head of the Deutsche Bank, was quietly dropped and Abs was appointed economic adviser for the British zone of Germany.[43] It should also be noted that Abs became a financial adviser to the Vatican.[44]

According to Penny Lernoux, the financial collapse of Vatican-supported banks during the 1970s involved the same group of people connected to Dulles's and Angleton's network of money launderers.[45] Prior to World War II, Angleton's father had financial interests in Milan, and may have met both Montini and a Sicilian banker named Michele Sindona at this earlier time.

According to Lernoux, Sindona 'wangled an introduction to the powerful Giovanni Montini in Milan, who would later become Pope Paul VI'. Montini introduced Sindona to the leader of the Christian Democrats. Sindona served the younger Angleton for many years as a CIA 'funnel for supporting funds' to friendly Italian politicians.[46] In 1969 Sindona became the financial adviser to the Vatican while Montini was the Pope. Sindona and his cohort, Roberto Calvi, created a financial scandal that cost the Vatican Bank hundreds of millions of dollars.[47]

The laundering of Nazi war profits after World War II may be the most embarrassing secret of all. There is a pattern of Western silence on this topic which cannot be ignored. We believe such reticence stems from a desire to prevent their own citizens from learning the embarrassing truth, and not from any consideration of national security interests.

The Holy See

And so we turn now to the Vatican's scorecard. When we use the word 'Vatican', we mean only that tiny cabal of priests and diplomats who actively participated in the Ratlines. In the preceding chapters, we have endeavoured to set forth the facts in a straightforward manner. Now we wish to state our own opinions and conclusions. Our charges are sometimes harsh; we reiterate that they involve only those unworthy and unrepresentative bureaucrats who ran Vatican policy.

It is our opinion that Pius XII and Giovanni Montini (later Pope Paul VI) were not always swept up by forces beyond their control. In many cases, they were the architects of their own folly, or active accomplices to others' crimes. Sooner or later, the head of every state stands before the bar of history, and the Pontiff is no exception. When the Pope assumed the temporal powers of his third crown, he was held to temporal standards of accountability. There is one difference: the only tribunal is public opinion.

We do not claim that the evidence is sufficient to convict, only enough to warrant a belief among reasonable people that crimes were committed. We leave it to the reader, and history, to judge if there is cause for indictment and further inquiry, or whether it is time to put false accusations to rest . . .

COUNT ONE: *Crimes Against Peace.* We find no evidence that the Vatican encouraged Nazi Germany in any war of aggression. Contrary to popular belief, the evidence is fairly clear that the Holy See repeatedly attempted to resist Hitler's predatory policies. By means of the Church's intelligence services advance warning was given of Nazi plans to invade Belgium and Holland.

Far from being pro-Hitler, Pius XII personally assisted the German opposition in secret attempts to overthrow his regime. Although unsuccessful, the Black Orchestra risked their lives to end Nazism. Some will say that the Vatican's secret anti-Hitler negotiations are the finest hour of the Catholic Church. We submit it is also evidence of the Vatican's double standard.

In its Concordat with Mussolini, the Holy See undertook to stand above politics, to be a purely moral force, only intervening if requested by all parties to resolve a dispute. The Black Orchestra was hardly a case of international mediation; it was covert assistance to an attempted coup. Hitler's opponents received substantial assistance from the Vatican; does that not justify the Ratlines' support for Stalin's opposition? If the Vatican endorses covert diplomatic assistance to overthrow dictators, where does it draw the line? If combatting Hitler justifies breaking the rules, what about Quaddafi, Suharto or Saddam Hussein?

At the very least, the Black Orchestra precedent exposes the

Holy See to charges of selective moral involvement. The Vatican cannot privately support some causes while publicly ignoring others. The present Pope actively and successfully supported Poland's anti-Communists, but yet he remains silent about East Timor, although Indonesian occupation there has brought about another Holocaust. If the Vatican wishes to exert moral authority, it must be unequivocal and truly neutral. Only in that way can it remain above temporal affairs. The world has need of diplomats whose agenda is peace on earth and goodwill to all humanity. There are enough plotters.

The Vatican's defenders believe that it has been unjustly attacked for supporting Hitler's policies. Yet, in order to preserve confidence in its trustworthiness as a secret intermediary in time of war, the Vatican has remained silent about its role in the Black Orchestra. We do not believe that such silence is warranted, or such trust deserved.

According to Anthony Cave Brown, the Allies had so little hope in the Black Orchestra that they sacrificed it to deceive Hitler. In spring 1942 Nicholas Kallay became Prime Minister of Hungary. After Stalingrad, 'Kallay began to lobby the West for a separate peace through the Department of Extraordinary Affairs at the Vatican'. The Allies sent a known Soviet agent as their negotiator. Word of the Hungarian peace initiative was quickly leaked to Hitler. 'There was every reason to suppose the British had deliberately tipped Kallay's hand, and their revelations had the desired effect in provoking the Führer's wrath.'[48]

Similarly, 'there were indications from the Vatican that Romania could expect favorable terms' if it switched from the Axis to the Allies. But when the Romanian emissary met British negotiators in Cairo, 'both his whereabouts and his mission were revealed on Allied Newscasts'. Exposing the Vatican's peace efforts was part of an Allied deception programme co-ordinated with Moscow.[49] This had the desired effect: Hitler stripped his three best divisions from France and sent them to the Balkans to stop the Black Orchestra's uprisings. Shortly afterwards, Allied troops landed in Normandy.[50]

For the last half of the war, the Allies used the Vatican's Black Orchestra to mislead Hitler about D-Day. Pius XII wanted to be a major player on the international chessboard, but he was just a pawn. Pius XII's first mistake was to get involved with the Black

Orchestra; his second was to rely on the West, because the Soviets had outwitted them at every turn. The Vatican is not guilty of supporting Hitler, but guilty of hypocrisy, incompetence and stupidity in risking the lives of his opponents.

Naivety is the cardinal sin of diplomacy, and of that the Vatican was unquestionably guilty. The unintended result was the betrayal and execution of most Black Orchestra members, whom the Allies had judged, like the Jews, to be expendable to the war effort. In hindsight, the Vatican accomplished nothing.

COUNT TWO: *Obstruction of Justice.* What the Pope did after the war was worse than nothing. Instead of smuggling homeless Jews to Argentina, the Ratlines smuggled Eichmann, Pavelić and Stangl, among many others. Instead of denouncing Bishop Hudal, the Vatican replaced him with a less conspicuous, but far more efficient and effective operative in the form of Father Draganović. Instead of international justice, there was Intermarium and a host of *émigré* Nazi fronts. The world has paid a heavy price for that decision.

What the Vatican did after World War II was a crime. The evidence is unequivocal: the Holy See aided the flight of fugitives from international justice. The Ratlines were intentionally created to aid and abet the escape of wanted Nazi war criminals. Hudal was known for his Nazi affinities long before 1945, yet retained his influential position long after he was publicly exposed. His successor, Father Draganović, was assisted by several religious orders which printed false identity cards, procured Red Cross passports under false pretences, and provided transport under false names. These were not acts of Christian charity. The clandestine Nazi-smuggling immorally misused the Church's legitimate charitable organisations.

We find no defence of ignorance: Pius XII was fully aware of Ante Pavelić's crimes. Nor was he the only case. The Ratlines operated with reckless disregard for the fugitives' crimes against humanity. If the Pope wanted to know their real names, he had only to ask Father Draganović. The burglary of his office revealed that he kept lists of the fugitives' true and false identities. The Pope's diplomatic messages reveal a pattern of protection and intercession for war criminals. There was virtually unanimous agreement among the surviving witnesses, both clerical and intelligence officials, that the Vatican knew they were sheltering Nazis.

We find no defence of unauthorised conduct: the Ratlines were an official extension of covert Vatican diplomacy. Both the US and British files confirm that the Vatican was asked to smuggle Nazi collaborators, so-called 'Greys', and co-operated in this programme. There was virtually unanimous agreement among the surviving witnesses that Draganović operated with the highest official sanction. One key witness testified that Montini asked Draganović to smuggle fugitives. The intelligence files of several nations confirm that the Vatican's top leaders authorised and directed the smuggling of fugitive war criminals.

We find no defence of coercion, rescue, or necessity. The West were Stalin's accomplices when they handed back tens of thousands of people who had fled Communist tyranny. Many were not Nazis, but innocent victims of the war, although many were murderers deserving little sympathy. There was no acceptable system of justice behind the 'Iron Curtain', and those forcibly returned were slaughtered or imprisoned without trial. The Allied leaders were guilty of criminal naivety in 1945.

But the forced repatriations came to a halt almost immediately, when the Allied leaders realised their mistake. Thereafter only a few Communist extradition requests were agreed. The Ratlines continued to smuggle war criminals well into the 1950s, years after the threat of repatriation had disappeared. But what of Eichmann, Stangl and Rauff, among many others? What of the many German and Austrian Nazis who were of no interest to the Soviets and their allies? What excuse can be made for them? Was the Vatican afraid of democratic justice? The Western tribunals were shamefully lenient; only a handful were punished.[51]

Fear of Communist persecution was not the criterion for those who utilised the Ratlines. In every case we examined, the Vatican's fugitives were previously in Western not Soviet custody. The Vatican sheltered Nazis who had been condemned by the democratic governments of Hungary and Czechoslovakia. Barbie was fleeing from French justice, not Stalin's. The mitigating factors which led the Vatican to shelter Stalin's victims in 1945 had long expired by 1951. The Ratlines did not exist to rescue the innocent, only the guilty. The innocent had no need of false identities. We find overwhelming reason to indict the Vatican for obstruction of Justice.

COUNT THREE: *Receiving Stolen Goods.* Agents of the Vatican were knowingly receiving passports which were stolen or fraudulently obtained from the Red Cross. The available evidence only implicates François Poncet and later, Allen Dulles, in the actual theft. But Draganović knew he was trafficking in stolen goods. Indeed, he was forging identity cards as part of the same fraudulent scheme.

We have found no *direct* evidence that the Vatican profited from the property stolen from the Nazis' victims. However, circumstantial evidence raises troubling questions of a peripheral involvement in Allied intelligence money laundering. Certainly, the Ratlines were subsidised by Western intelligence, as documented in the Barbie case. However, that does not explain where the Vatican got the rest of the money. The evidence shows that Bishop Rožman laundered money on the black market in Switzerland, and that some or all of those funds were the Ustashi's plundered treasure, smuggled out of Yugoslavia by the Church and British intelligence. Draganović admitted that he took some of this money to the Vatican.

The weight of the evidence is that the Ratlines' laundered money originated with gold bullion from Pavelić's war booty. It was not, as suggested by one intelligence file, the property of the Croatian Catholic Church. Pavelić's treasure was in the form of gold bars and Western currency, not jewelled vestments or chalices. Moreover, even after the gold was safely out of Communist territory, Draganović remained accountable to Ustashi officials. We find sufficient evidence to accuse the Vatican of receiving stolen property, and overwhelming evidence that they trafficked in stolen or fraudulently obtained documents.

COUNT FOUR: *Abuse of Diplomatic Privileges.* The evidence shows a clear pattern of violation of diplomatic norms by the Vatican. Fugitive war criminals were escorted in vehicles with diplomatic plates, protecting them from arrest. Senior Vatican diplomats intervened with the Allies to obtain official travel documents for Bishop Hudal, Father Draganović, Bishop Bučko and others, enabling them to organise the Ratlines under cover of official religious duties. Vatican facilities with official extra-territoriality or *de facto* immunity were used to house transient war criminals. False representations by Hudal, Draganović, Bučko and others were conveyed by Vatican diplomatic channels to obtain the release of Nazi murderers and collaborators.

We find no defence of ignorance for the reasons stated previously. The Ratlines could not have existed without the Vatican's diplomatic protection. Vatican diplomats knowingly shipped Nazi nationalists to other countries in violation of their immigration laws. Indeed, that was the very purpose of the Ratlines. By turning a blind eye towards the Nazis' crimes, covert Vatican diplomacy helped create the disasters of the Cold War. They interceded on behalf of Slovak Fascists before, during and after the Durčansky plot which led directly to the Communist takeover of Czechoslovakia.

Apart from a few successes in local Italian politics, Vatican diplomacy played a significant role in discrediting the legitimate anti-Communist movements of Central and Eastern Europe. Intermarium was an act of war, and the human losses caused by the Vatican in the Cold War were far greater than the Canaris group's in World War II. By repeating the Black Orchestra mistake, they unwittingly helped the Communists maintain control.

The Vatican was not innocent by reason of mistake, they knew what they were doing. Pius XII and Montini were experienced diplomats, and they pursued strategic and diplomatic initiatives that were intended to subvert hostile states. Their goals were armed revolution, not diplomacy. Intermarium was meant to foment insurrection. The Vatican advanced its own geo-political interests, like the other major players. It is no defence to say that the Communists were more clever at espionage than the Vatican. Pius XII played Machiavelli, and Stalin beat him at his own game.

In conclusion, we believe that the evidence clears the Vatican of actively assisting Hitler, but indicts it for aiding war criminals, dealing in stolen property, and violating the norms of international diplomacy.

We recognise that this book will re-open old wounds and place the Vatican's response to the Holocaust in a new perspective. How, it will be asked, could the Vatican do so much to help the Nazis in the Cold War and so little to help the victims? Why did Pius XII switch in 1945 from his policy of silence towards the Jews to advocacy for the Nazis? Where were the Ratlines for those who wished to escape from Auschwitz? Why would the Vatican give false passports to the Nazis when its officials rarely gave false baptismal certificates to the Jews? Are the Ratlines evidence of hypocrisy, or worse, anti-Semitic double standards? We recognise that our evidence of Vatican misconduct in the Cold War raises new and harder questions about its conduct during the Holocaust.

We do not have all the answers, but believe these issues must be addressed, for on their resolution may well depend the future direction of Vatican activism. And so we turn to the ugliest accusation of all: that the Vatican was guilty of crimes against humanity.

We find no evidence to support the charge that the Vatican supported the Holocaust or encouraged the destruction of any racial, political or religious group. It is true that it showed selective morality, placing a lesser importance on some atrocities. Pius XII himself demonstrated this when he remained silent about the slaughter of the Spartacists in 1919, while loudly condemning their crimes. The evidence shows that the Vatican attempted to rescue as many Jews as possible with quiet diplomacy. In countries like Italy, where the Pope had some influence, he used it well. Even in Berlin, Vatican diplomacy was the conduit for bribes to save lives. The Israeli government publicly credits them for secretly negotiating payments that ransomed thousands of Jews from Nazi custody.[52] Churchill and Roosevelt made speeches in public, but in private, their policy was to abandon the Jews to their fate. The Pope did the opposite; without making speeches, the Catholic Church probably saved more Jews than all the Allied governments combined. We believe it was nowhere near enough.

Perhaps the Pontiff is held to a double standard (or a higher one). No matter what he may have done in secret, there are those who still condemn Pius XII for not speaking out in public. In truth, there is little that can be said in his defence. It does not matter that Britain and America wanted the Holy See to remain silent when the last Jews of Hungary were about to be deported. The Pope has higher obligations than diplomacy; the Vatican is not Switzerland.

Nor does it matter that the Pope sent a private telegram pleading for the lives of Hungarian Jews instead of making a radio appeal. By his public silence, he was perceived to be neutral in favour of the Germans. Raoul Wallenberg was neutral, and a diplomat, but that did not stop him. He handed out false citizenship papers to every Jew he could. He was never touched by the Nazis. Cardinal Roncalli, later John XXIII, handed out false baptismal certificates. He was not harmed.

Before his death, Pius XI had already published one Encyclical condemning Nazi teachings. The Church did not suffer; in fact, its status was enhanced. At death's door, he had prepared another denunciation of the Nazis' anti-Christian doctrines. His successor, Pius XII, quietly buried it. Therein, we submit, lies his guilt: from the moment he assumed St Peter's mantle he chose diplomacy over truth, his temporal powers over his moral duty.

13

Conclusions: A Reappraisal

In light of the intense publicity and interest in the fate of the Third Reich's missing and vastly immense fortune, we have decided to add this new chapter to this reprinted edition of the book.

At the time this book was first published in Britain in 1991 under the title *Ratlines*, we had traced the flight of the Third Reich's stolen treasure – especially the gold plundered from the millions of victims – from the retreating Fascist armies through a number of senior officials of the Catholic Church to the Vatican itself and then to the Nazi diaspora, particularly in Argentina.

At that time, we relied on a number of declassified US intelligence documents, and on files smuggled out from behind the Iron Curtain just before the collapse of Communism. The evidence presented in this book led us to many new contacts in the intelligence community, and as a result we followed a number of leads that we had previously ignored or at least neglected because of our strict focus on just one aspect of the Vatican's role in moving Hitler's fortune around the world.

In consequence, we have revised our conclusions set out in Chapter Twelve. In particular, we now make a quite different appraisal of our Third Count against the Holy See: Receiving Stolen Goods, as set out on page 284. Where in 1991 we found 'no *direct* evidence that the Vatican profited from the property stolen from the Nazis' victims', in 1997 we find that on the balance of probabilities, and taking into account the additional evidence that has since emerged, there was no other reason than profit for this enterprise.

Indeed, we now conclude that it is more likely than not that the Ratlines were established as much for the Vatican's economic benefit as they were to pursue its war against Communism by saving the Fascist armies of the defeated Third Reich.

To justify this conclusion we now examine the complex financial dealings between Hitler's Germany and Western financiers and lawyers, and the crucial role played by the Vatican's own bank in stitching these deals together. All done, as we show, to advance the Holy See's own shares portfolio and reap a handsome dividend.

The most recent account of the post-1945 trail of Nazi gold goes like this: after fifty years of indifference and official cover-up, the truth about the Third Reich's looted gold and stolen treasure became mainstream news in 1996 because of a US Congressional inquiry. Jewish communities all across the globe applauded the belated action, and hundreds of Holocaust survivors came forward to claim money from decades-old accounts that Swiss bankers had fraudulently appropriated after World War II.

This version – which diverts attention to the world of Swiss banking – is the story that many vested interests would like recorded as the final word on the Nazis' stolen fortunes. There is one vested interest in particular that would like this to be the last word: the Vatican.

The bankers of Zürich, on the other hand, know that the bulk of the stolen Nazi money was laundered from Switzerland through the one bank that can never be audited. The trail of Nazi money leads to the one financial institution with total diplomatic immunity: the Vatican Bank. Here in the eternal city of Rome, the last secret of World War II lies buried inside the Vatican's vaults under the careful protection of the Swiss Guards.

The Nazi looting of the wealth of nations was one of the most documented crimes in history. National treasuries were seized, artworks stolen; tens of billions of dollars' worth of gems and currency vanished forever. But half a century later, we are only beginning to ask the crucial question: Where did all that money go?

In recent times Switzerland has been singled out as the secret accomplice to the monetary crimes of the Third Reich. As a wit remarked in *The New Republic*, the Germans liked the Swiss not because they were good neighbors, but because they were good fences. Particularly poignant are the assertions that the 'gnomes' of Zürich have been compounding interest for themselves from the unclosed accounts of those who vanished in the Holocaust.

Such chicanery is on a par with the Swiss companies which denied life insurance payments to Jewish heirs, first, because they could not produce death certificates attesting to their parents' demise in the Holocaust, or in the alternative, because the premiums had not been paid after the policyholders were incarcerated at Auschwitz.

There are ample grounds to argue that Swiss neutrality was a contradiction in terms. The back doors of some notionally Swiss-controlled arms factories straddled the border and opened inside Germany. According to the Stuart Eizenstat's report to Congress, nearly 40 percent of all the Third Reich's arms deals were handled by the Swiss.[1] The principal focus of the Eizenstat report was on gold bullion stolen by the Nazi regime from ten occupied nations. Even with this inquiry, less than two-thirds of these assets were able to be traced: some $2 billion worth of bullion is still listed as 'disappeared'.

The overwhelming majority of Europe's wealth lay, however, not in national treasuries, but in private hands. Tens of billions of dollars' worth of gems, currency, and corporate assets had also been taken by Hitler's minions. The Eizenstat report did not even look at the fate of these vast holdings.

The story of Hitler's stolen treasure actually began in 1919 in the aftermath of World War I. Then, as now, there was controversy over the tracing of German money. The victorious Allies had imposed harsh financial penalties; German assets held in foreign banks were seized as war reparations. In the 1920s the international banking industry was thrown into turmoil as it struggled to return to the delicate financial balance that had existed before the war.

The current generation of Zürich bankers is not alone in knowing the key role played by the Vatican in laundering the Nazis' money. Many others in the world of international finance in the late 1990s also understand how these events in the early decades of this century connect directly to the Holy See and the Nazis' stolen treasure. Many in the American and British financial and industrial establishments are also aware of what really went on because they have inherited the key to the puzzle – both literally and figuratively – from their fathers and grandfathers.

Outside of this select group, however, few remember that the German Kaiser himself – arguably one of the greatest personal losers in the post–World War I vengeance of Versailles – had found an American law firm willing to take on the unpopular cause of getting his money back. But then, Sullivan & Cromwell was a most unusual firm, and John Foster Dulles, the Kaiser's personal attorney, was a most unusual lawyer.[2]

During the Versailles negotiations in 1919, Foster Dulles lobbied to protect his German clients. The subsequent Congressional investigations determined that Foster Dulles may have been the 'bagman' for bribes going all the way to Harry Daugherty, the Attorney General of the United States. Daugherty was indicted, but Dulles evaded criminal sanctions and returned to his New York practice, where he was soon joined by his brother Allen.

Foster specialized in a very profitable practice: he became the lawyer of choice for those wealthy people unfortunate enough to be on the wrong side of a war. The Kaiser was only his first German client. By the end of the 1920s Sullivan & Cromwell represented most of the leading banks of Berlin and Bavaria.

The 1920s and early 1930s were a profitable time for American investors in Germany. The break up of the American cartels at the end of the nineteenth century, followed by Teddy Roosevelt's 'trust-busting' legislation in the 1910s, induced the early multinational corporations to seek a more friendly clime offshore. Germany not only permitted cartels and vertical monopolies, it encouraged them as a means to rebuild its industrial might after the devastation of World War I and the Versailles reparations.

Moreover, from the late 1920s the German economy, although cash poor, was scientifically advanced. As the Weimar Republic began to disintegrate under the weight of internal chaos and external greed, German scientists, sponsored by German corporations, led the world in research in physics, chemistry, and biology. So esteemed was the German intellectual edge at the end of the 1920s that American scientists who wished to make their mark would take their advanced degree at a German university.

Effectively, Germany had a virtual high-tech monopoly on advanced production techniques, rigidly reinforced through a system of worldwide patents that gave it a decided advantage. If the Du Pont Corporation, for example, wanted a license for chemical processes, it had to deal with Berlin.

Sullivan & Cromwell's American clients, in turn, had something that the Germans wanted badly: gold. Under the Versailles Treaty, Germany had to pay its reparations to the Allies in gold bullion. In 1924, Sullivan & Cromwell stepped into the breach with the ingenious Dawes Plan. In its simplest form, the Dulles brothers' clients would loan gold to Germany, so that it could repay its reparations to France and Britain, which would then recycle the American gold to repay their war loans to America. It was a crazy merry-go-round, but it worked.

The attraction for Sullivan & Cromwell's clients was that the Germans paid off the original American gold loans with stock in German corporations. Unlike the hyperinflated Deutsch mark, German stocks and bonds were far from worthless, as they were backed by the very patents and trade secrets that American industry so desperately sought.

With the crash of 1929, the American economy went into the Great Depression, but simultaneously Sullivan & Cromwell's clients poured billions into the German economy. For example, John Foster Dulles's legal records show that he handled the transfer of $10 billion worth of gold in return for German bonds and investments. By some estimates, 70 percent of the money that went to rebuild the German economy after World War I came from Wall Street investors, most of whom sought the legal counsel of Sullivan & Cromwell.[3]

By the 1930s the total American gold investment in Germany may well have been on the order of $60 billion in today's values. By comparison, the Eizenstat report says that the entire value of the gold stolen by the Nazis during World War II was less than $6 billion, hardly enough to meet the interest payments on the American gold loans.

The American investors did not send their gold to Germany for nothing. In return, they obtained patent rights at well below their market worth, as well as access to newly developed advanced technology. Of course, something of a stigma attached itself to German investments straight after World War I. In addition, there was the distinct risk that the American investments might be seized in some future conflict as war reparations. Through their expertise in the Trading With the Enemy Act, Sullivan & Cromwell's lawyers found a place to hide the foreign investments: Switzerland.

The Americans secretly owned the stock in certain Swiss banks, including a significant share in the Bank of International Settlements, as well as undetermined interests in several others such as Credit Suisse and Union Bank. These institutions were also represented by Sullivan & Cromwell at key points before World War II. The Swiss banks, in turn, owned significant stock interests in several of the leading German banks (again represented by Sullivan &

Cromwell), which in turn owned the stock of major German corporations, such as I. G. Farben (also represented by Sullivan & Cromwell), which in turn owned the valuable patent rights and processes so desperately desired by the American investors, such as the Rockefellers (represented, inevitably, by Sullivan & Cromwell).

On paper, the Americans owned only bank shares in neutral Switzerland. The effect, however, was as if they had bought major shareholdings in the German corporations. Everyone swapped paper to protect their investments. So great was the cross-collaterization of loans and patent rights that, after the Rockefellers, the next largest investor in the Standard Oil Company was I. G. Farben. It was hard to tell where American investment ended and German management began.

Of course, the Americans were not alone in buying German shares during the Great Depression. A substantial number of British corporations, such as Imperial Chemicals, were also involved in this profitable enterprise. By the time the Deutsch mark stabilized in the early 1930s, the Western investors were sitting on a not so small fortune.

The secret strings of German investment were held by American lawyers sitting on the boards of German banks and corporations. Allen Dulles, for example, sat on the board of the Schröder Bank, with offices in London, New York, and Berlin. Ostensibly owned by a prominent German banking family, the real controllers were Sullivan & Cromwell's clients.

Correspondent banks, such as Schröder, handled their transactions through the Bank of International Settlements (BIS) in Switzerland, whose director, William McKittrick, was personally represented by Allen Dulles both before World War II and after. Despite the fact that the BIS was targeted for dismemberment by the Allies after the war as a Nazi front, it never was.

John Foster Dulles served on the board of I. G. Farben, the company that was largely responsible for later building Auschwitz, and then became legal counsel to the US agency responsible for seizing German assets. I. G. Farben was never dismembered and 'de-Nazified' after World War II, despite the direct orders of General Dwight Eisenhower.

Sullivan & Cromwell's expertise in 'cloaking' foreign investments, as well as their capacity to protect their clients from the Trading With the Enemy Act, made the Dulles brothers attractive to some of the largest investment houses in America, including Dillon Read and Brown Brothers, Harriman. Represented by the able lawyers of Sullivan & Cromwell, such investment houses promoted German cross-investment in America.

Up until America entered World War II, there was technically nothing illegal about investing in Germany. It wasn't as if American corporate leaders were investing in the Nazi party. Quite the opposite, most American investors preferred the more stolid German monarchists to the upstart Hitler. Besides, the bulk of American funds had gone to Germany in the late 1920s before Nazism was anything more than a fad. To Sullivan & Cromwell, petty nationalist disputes should never interfere with international banking and commerce.

It is hard to believe now, but fifty or sixty years ago, Nazism was seen as a good thing by many foreign investors. Fascism, so it was thought, was simply an external manifestation of the attitudes of the conservative German people who were traditionally hostile towards Communists and labor unions. Some of the most prominent and respected German industrialists – such as the Thyssen family and the Brooklyn-born Hjalmar Schacht – reassured the American investors that Hitler was simply 'a dog on a chain' to keep the left out of power in Germany.

People such as Henry Ford and the Rockefellers admired a great deal in the new Nazi philosophy. While most Americans still favored the German establishment, they sought to cover their bets by financing the infant Nazi party as well.

Sullivan & Cromwell's clients were not the only foreign investors in Germany, nor were they the only ones to hedge their bets by making small donations to the infant Nazi party. Following the $26 million cash settlement with Mussolini over disputed lands in 1929, the Vatican invested nearly all the proceeds in German industry, but at least one small investment was made in the Nazis as well. The following incident was reported by an eyewitness, Sister Pascalina, a nun who was the personal aide (and devout admirer) of the Papal Nuncio in Munich and the man who would become Pope Pius XII on the eve of World War II:

> Hitler came one night to the holy residence of Archbishop Eugenio Pacelli [later Pius XII]. All others in the household were asleep by then, except [Sister] Pascalina . . . Hitler told Pacelli that he was out to check the spread of aetheistic communism . . . It did not come as a surprise to her, therefore,

> in light of Pacelli's hatred of the Reds, to see the prelate present Hitler with a large cache of Church money to aid the rising revolutionary and his small struggling band of anti-communists.[4]

It should be noted that Pacelli deeply despised Nazism as a philosophy, although he was actively pro-German. The Vatican was merely protecting its heavy financial investment in German industry in case Hitler ever came to power, while Pacelli really supported the Catholic Center Party.

In fact, the Dulles brothers' neglect of the infant Nazi party actually caused them some problems. By 1932, the Nazis were denouncing Foster Dulles's principal client, I. G. Farben, 'as an exploitive tool' of the 'money-hungry Jews'. In June 1932, two I. G. Farben officials met with Hitler in his home in Munich to try to make peace, and a deal was made: Hitler would leave I. G. Farben alone in return for heavy backing by the German industrialists. Both I. G. Farben and the huge Giesche conglomerate, another of Dulles's clients, backed Hitler financially in the 1933 elections.

Following the Nazis' electoral success in January 1933, Hitler sought to distance himself from his foreign backers with the bank disclosure law that forced a flood of German money over the border into Switzerland. This forced the Dulles's clients to create a protective barrier of Swiss bank stock to insulate them from Hitler detecting their continued control of the major German corporations.

It is no coincidence that the Swiss passed a law in 1934 making disclosure of Swiss bank accounts a crime. In the same year, Sullivan & Cromwell officially closed its Berlin office. From 1934, Switzerland was the center of the Dulles brothers' operations. With so much of its own holdings tied up in Nazi Germany, the Vatican had little option but to adopt the same course.

The Holy See devised a special shield to help protect it from the looming international conflict – its own financial institution, the Vatican Bank. This was the one monetary entity in the world that was completely immune from outside audits, protected by Vatican sovereignty, and with the added convenience of diplomatic immunity.

During the War, the Dulles brothers and the Vatican were drawn into a symbiotic relationship: Sullivan & Cromwell's investors needed the Vatican Bank to launder their profits under the watchful eyes of both the Nazis and their own governments, while the Vatican needed the Dulles brothers to protect its own investments in Hitler's Germany.

After America entered the war in 1941, Allen Dulles managed to transfer his headquarters from America to Switzerland. While ostensibly representing US intelligence (the Office of Strategic Services), Dulles also had ties to the Bank of International Settlements (BIS) through his Schröder Bank connections (not to mention that the director of BIS was Dulles's personal client).

In an admission that confirmed our long-held suspicions, the BIS has recently conceded that it purchased $4 billion worth of gold from the Nazis during World War II.[5] In relative terms, this is a minor transaction compared to the Dulles brothers' banking operations. For example, on one occasion alone the Dulleses' clients laundered 9 billion francs through the BIS on the eve of the 'secret' American invasion of North Africa in 1942.[6]

This is the first documented instance to show that Dulles's BIS clients and the Vatican collaborated on financial deals in Switzerland even while the war was going on. According to a sworn statement from Nazi official Otto Abetz to American officials on 21 June 1946:

> German bankers, along with their French correspondents, transferred 9 billion gold francs via the BIS to Algiers. Anticipating German defeat, they were seeking a killing in the dollar exchange. The collaborationists boosted their holdings from $350 to $525 million almost overnight . . . Another collaborator in the scheme was one of the Vatican's espionage group who leaked the secret to others in Hitler's high command.[7]

By 1944, Allen Dulles's Vatican connections had grown so close that he began to use them in private intelligence operations that aimed to protect both their investments. From Switzerland, Dulles used Vatican intermediaries in an abortive attempt to arrange for the surrender of German forces in Italy. One of the Nazi negotiators was Walter Rauff, the inventor of the poison-gas vans used to massacre Jews, whose work on the Vatican's Ratlines is discussed in Chapters Two and Eleven of this book.

After his arrest by the Allies, Rauff openly boasted of high-level connections in the Vatican negotiations, which he claimed could be 'confirmed by Hussman and Mr. Dulles, Allied agents in Switzerland'. Needless to say, Rauff and the other Nazis linked to Allen Dulles were quietly released with the help of James Jesus Angleton, Dulles's Catholic protégé in Italy and later head of the CIA's Vatican desk.[8]

The path from Dulles to Rauff leads to an interesting man, Frederico Schwendt, one of Rauff's colleagues in the SS. Schwendt was the head of what was then the largest counterfeiting operation in history: Operation *Wendig* (Window). As the Russian Army advanced towards Berlin, the SS swapped forged banknotes for genuine British currency held in the German banks and then spread the forgeries far and wide in an attempt to undermine the Allies' financial strength. It was just one small part of a much wider operation to smuggle German capital out from under the Allies' watchful eyes and send it to safety via the Vatican.

Anticipating defeat, Schwendt shipped the genuine British currency to a castle in Merano through the Brenner Pass to the Vatican Bank. An unverified FBI report that recently surfaced in the American press claims that the proceeds of the Deutsche Bank later ended up in Argentina, after key Nazis smuggled them through the Vatican. Other intelligence reports, however, are indisputably corroborated.

On 23 July 1997, the US National Archives faxed us a copy of a Top Secret document that had recently been declassified. It was a report from Emerson Bigelow, an intelligence officer of the Strategic Services Unit.[9] The SSU was an interim spy organization that existed between the end of the Office of Strategic Services and the creation of the Central Intelligence Agency. The intelligence report was 'received from a reliable source in Italy' and was forwarded to the US Treasury Department on 21 October 1946.

In Chapter Six of this book we set out the detailed evidence of Father Draganović's role in smuggling large amounts of the Ustashi's plundered treasure and gold to safety in Rome. The Bigelow report independently demonstrated the Vatican's involvement in smuggling Nazi gold out of Switzerland to the safety of the Vatican Bank, and eventually on to the Nazi diaspora in South America.

This recently released report confirmed several key pieces of US Army CIC evidence about the Vatican gold connection on which we had relied in the first edition of this book. According to Bigelow's separate sources, a large portion of Nazi gold stolen by Ante Pavelić and his fellow Croatian war criminals had, indeed, ended up in the Vatican Bank:

> The Ustascha organization (a Croatian fascist organization, headed by Ante Pavelic) removed funds from Jugoslavia estimated to total 350 million Swiss francs. The funds were largely in the form of gold coins.

> Of the funds brought from the former Independent Croat State where Jews and Serbs were plundered to support the Ustascha organization in exile, an estimated 150 million Swiss Francs were impounded by British authorities at the Austro-Swiss frontier; the balance of approximately 200 million Swiss Francs was originally held in the Vatican for safe-keeping. According to rumor, a considerable portion of this latter amount has been sent to Spain and Argentina through the Vatican's "pipeline," but it is quite possible that this is merely a smoke-screen to cover the fact that the treasure remains in its original depository.

Bigelow was right to suspect a smoke screen. As discussed in Chapter Six of this book, a few months after the Bigelow report, Special Agent William Gowen of the US Army Counter Intelligence Corps established that the British had taken the Ustashi money to Italy 'accompanied by a number of priests'. British intelligence, instead of seizing the stolen assets, passed them to the Vatican to finance an anti-Communist Croatian terrorist network known as the Križari.[10]

Father Draganović, the key Vatican organizer of the Ratlines and a major intelligence source inside the Vatican, later admitted that in 1945 400 kilos of Ustashi gold, worth millions of dollars, had been hidden in Austria, and he had personally moved 40 kilos to Rome concealed in two packing crates.[11]

But this 400 kilos of gold was just a tiny part of the Vatican's role in hiding and moving Nazi plunder. Eighteen months after the Bigelow report, US Army intelligence confirmed the existence of a Vatican-Swiss bank connection. They reported that 2,400 kilos of gold and other valuables (worth more than $30 million at today's gold prices) still remained in the Vatican's secret accounts in Switzerland. But how to get it out? And where to hide it? The Vatican's key courier for the Ustashi's stolen gold in Switzerland was the Slovene quisling Bishop Rožman, who arranged to send it to Italy and later to Pavelić in Argentina.[12]

Yugoslavia was not the only looted nation. Mark Masurovsky, an instructor at the American University, discovered a US Treasury report concerning the Nazi bank of Hungary. According to this report from the files of Operation Safehaven (the US operation to track down and intercept Nazi financial assets), Allen Dulles had smuggled the Hungarian Nazi treasury to safety in Switzerland toward the end of the war. He was accused of manipulating the gold transfer with the assistance of a German businessman, whom Dulles had ostensibly recruited for intelligence work for the Allies. Dulles denied all the charges, insisting that the Allies had no proof.[13]

In fact, the ultimate proof of the Swiss bank scandal has been buried in classified files for many years. Allen Dulles did not know it, but President Franklin Roosevelt's agents, working with the British, had broken the Swiss bank codes used in their telegram traffic. Moreover, the electronic spy service of the Nazi Airforce had deciphered Dulles's private cipher code. After the war, these intercepts fell into Allied hands and have remained hidden in the vaults at Fort Meade, Maryland, and at Cheltenham, England.

Even if both governments resist handing over their Swiss bank wiretaps on the grounds of national security, the Vatican secret will still emerge. As outlined earlier in this book, in 1967 the Vatican's top Nazi smuggler, Father Draganović, surrendered himself to the Yugoslav government and gave a secret confession that was later smuggled out to the authors. It is certain that Father Draganović gave the Communists a comprehensive account of the Vatican's Swiss bank connection.

Slowly, the secret files have emerged, and the jigsaw puzzle has been put back together using sources from the old Soviet bloc, declassified files in Washington, Rome, Canberra, Buenos Aires, and even London. The only source still completely closed is within the walls of the Holy See, buried somewhere in the Vatican's Secret Archives.

On Sunday, 24 August 1997, the *Chicago Tribune* published a front-page story headlined, 'WWII files of Vatican need airing, critics say; some believe church helped hoard wealth of fascism's victims'. Long before the Vatican opens its vaults for inspection, the records are emerging from Argentina, the former Yugoslavia, Washington, London, and other capitals that know some piece of Pope Pius XII's secret. In each of these countries, the trail of laundered Nazi money leads inexorably back to the Vatican.

Further confirmation of the central role played by the Vatican in the Nazi money laundering scheme was recently uncovered by Stuart Eizenstat's team in the US State Department. In March 1998 the US News and World Report cited new evidence that the laundering had been going on even during World War II.[14] Eizenstat's team has traced at least one significant money transfer from a Nazi-controlled bank in Berlin to the Vatican Bank in Rome. Even though the Holy See keeps its financial records safely under lock and key, the truth keeps seeping out from the secret files held in the Allied archives.

Few who watch the film *Evita* would recognize that the Perón family of Argentina worked directly with the Croatian Ustashi to establish a pipeline from the Vatican Bank. As recounted earlier in this book, Ante Pavelić himself, the Croatian Nazi leader, moved to Buenos Aires and became a 'security adviser' to the Peróns. Laundered through the 'untraceable' Vatican Bank, the Nazi treasure moved from Switzerland to South America. There the stolen funds were invested in a number of Argentine businesses whose lawyer was, of course, Allen Dulles.

As the final act of the money laundering, Dulles created the World Commerce Corporation to revive trade between Argentina and West Germany. On its board were such notables as William Donovan of US intelligence, and William Stephenson of British intelligence. During the 1950s much of the stolen proceeds were laundered back to Germany for the great economic revival of West Germany.

In the end, the money went back to the original German companies and their Western investors. It is not Swiss bank accounts that we should be tracing; it is the stock ownership of the Swiss banks. There lies the last and perhaps the ugliest secret of World War II. And therein lies the major culpability of the Vatican in its relations with Hitler's Germany: without the Vatican's investments in the Third Reich there could not have been the motive to provide the means to smuggle the Nazis' plundered loot from Switzerland through the Vatican Bank.

In the end, history will probably record that the Ratlines were established less for the benefit of the fugitive Nazis and more for the financial interests of the non-German investors, including the Pope. Certainly the fresh evidence we have uncovered since this book was first published in 1991 suggests that Count Three of our conclusions requires substantial revision. The Vatican did more than receive stolen goods. It was an accomplice to the theft.

April 1998

Postscript

The revised edition of this book would not be complete without our acknowledgement of one of our sources in the US intelligence community, upon whose postwar investigative reports we heavily relied in the research for the original edition published in Britain in 1991. As you will have read, in Part One of this book we quoted extensively from intelligence reports written in 1947 by William Gowen, the American Army CIC agent named in Chapter Three as the man who, according to Congressional records, had smuggled Ferenc Vajta, a leading Hungarian Nazi, out of Rome.

Just as this book was first due to be published in America in 1992, St Martin's Press received a letter from Gowen, who had read the British edition of the book and was incensed by our charge. We replied that he had been officially denounced by a State Department investigation in the 1940s and again in the 1970s in a General Accounting Office report to Congress.[1]

Gowen insisted that he was innocent, had never known that he was the subject of any government investigation, and stoutly maintained that he had been framed. His bewildered outrage had the ring of truth to it. We added a note to the US edition of this book, warning readers that Gowen may indeed have been set up by his own government.

The more we investigated, the more the evidence indicated that Gowen had been falsely accused by the State Department. Gowen became one of our sources for *The Secret War Against the Jews,* the follow-up to this book. As detailed in that book, we confirmed that James Jesus Angleton, head of the CIA's Counter Intelligence section, had deliberately deceived a Congressional investigation and shifted the blame for his own misdeeds onto the shoulders of William Gowen. Moreover, Angleton had deceived two US presidents with forged information.

As set forth in detail in *The Secret War Against the Jews,* Angleton forged a series of Top Secret Vatican telegrams and planted them on his own government under the codename JVX. The CIA unwittingly shared the phony JVX files with other US agencies and eventually deposited them with the US National Archives as an important historical source.

In good faith, we relied in this book on one of the JVX files obtained under the Freedom of Information Act from the US Army's CIC. As a result, one of the Vatican's official historians, the recently deceased American Jesuit Father Robert Graham, criticized our reliance on a forgery and caused us to double-check our research. This led us to expose Angleton as a liar and forger, and since then the CIA and the National Archives have relabled the JVX files as forgeries.

Gowen also confirmed one of the main theses of this book: that British intelligence asked the Vatican to smuggle Nazis out of Europe as part of a future cadre of anti-Communist experts. As already discussed in this book, it was an embarrassing blunder, as the British architect of this scheme was Kim Philby, the highest-ranking Communist spy to penetrate the British Secret Service. Angleton, a protégé of Allen Dulles, had defied his own president to aid the British (and Philby's) scheme.

Years later, Gowen finally understood why Angleton had targeted him for disgrace and harassment. 'I was the first man to identify that the British were behind the Vatican network.'

Although we did not know it at the time this book was first published, Gowen had collected a mountain of intelligence on the postwar Nazi-British collaboration. Among his secret sources was Monsignor Augustine Juretić, who had been a classmate of Ante Pavelić himself. Juretić was the representative in Rome of Maček's Peasant Party, the largest non-Fascist party in Croatia, and also the Vatican's Ecclesiastic Counsel to the pre-war Royal Yugoslav Embassy in Rome. This prominent cleric had intelligence from both sides of the secret war in Yugoslavia.

Juretić confirmed that Pavelić, and other Nazis, were working for the British Secret Service. As discussed in Chapter Six, Gowen's report of his interrogation of Juretić revealed how the British had helped Pavelić truck his stolen treasure to safety in Italy. The stolen Nazi treasure was used by the British Secret Service to finance a Croatian 'resistance' force inside Tito's Communist Yugoslavia.

Juretić was not Gowen's only source inside the Vatican. The head of the Nazi smuggling network, Father Draganović, showed up in Gowen's office one day. He assumed that Gowen was pro-Ustashi and briefed him extensively on the secret British-Pavelić connection. The reason for Draganović's error was simple. He thought Gowen was one of the Dulles-Angleton clique that worked with the British Secret Service on the Nazi scheme. It was a reasonable mistake. Both the British and Angleton had intelligence offices in Gowen's building.

In addition, Draganović also provided Gowen with intelligence about the Ustashi's connection with British intelligence. In fact, he introduced Gowen to another fugitive Nazi, Colonel Babić. Just before the end of World War II, Pavelić had sent Babić out of Croatia to make contact with the British. Babić told Gowen how the British had picked him up by submarine. His mission was to relay Pavelić's offer of official cooperation with the British if they invaded Croatia and stopped Tito from taking power. To provide cover for the secret mission, Pavelić announced that Babić had been shot as a traitor.

Draganović insisted to Gowen that there had been all sorts of contacts between the British and Pavelić before the end of the war.

Gowen reported his observations to his superiors. It was not for him to decide whether to emulate British (and French) policies of recruiting Nazis as an underground intelligence force. Indeed, such an alliance was directly opposed to President Truman's explicit directives. But what Truman did not know was that renegade Americans were already working with the British. James Jesus Angleton, later head of the Vatican desk of the CIA, feared that Gowen was coming too close to the truth.

As we discussed in Chapter Eleven, Angleton had recruited Monsignor Giovanni Montini as his secret source inside the Vatican. Montini was then the Vatican Assistant Secretary of State who supervised Father Draganović's Nazi smuggling on behalf of the Holy See. One of the British officials, D'Arcy Osborne, told Gowen that Montini was the only person in the Vatican who was truly supportive of British policy. As the second half of this book demonstrates, it was one of the saddest chapters in the Catholic Church's history.

No one realized that Kim Philby was pushing the recruitment of ex-Nazis as a means of helping Soviet intelligence, not hurting them. Under Philby, British intelligence policy was a disaster. As we documented in Chapter Ten, Philby succeeded in placing numerous 'Red Nazis' right inside the British-Vatican network.

In hindsight, William Gowen realized that the British-Nazi connection did great damage to the Vatican. Readers who wish to know the full details of William Gowen's revelations should refer to the follow-up to this book, *The Secret War Against the Jews.* It is an attempt to place the role of Western intelligence and the Vatican in the larger context of the geopolitical struggle that continues in the Middle East.

As one retired intelligence agent said to us: 'If you think what we did *with* the Nazis was bad, wait till you see what we did *to* the Jews.'

April 1998

Acknowledgements

Numerous people have assisted us in writing this book, not all of whom can be credited here, partly for space reasons, but also because many wish to remain anonymous. We are especially grateful to the many former and present officials of both Western and Communist governments who have quietly provided information, documents, leads and advice. Their identities must remain confidential, but they have our gratitude.

We could not have even started our work without the patience and perseverance of official archivists around the world, particularly in the Public Record Office in London and the United States National Archives in Washington, where John Taylor of the Modern Military Section and Sally Marks of the Diplomatic Branch were of immense help.

Christopher Simpson was enormously generous in allowing us access to his personal records, compiled in preparing his book, *Blowback*. James Walston is also gratefully acknowledged for his diligent research in the Italian Archives in Rome, as are many officials of the Roman Catholic Church and the Vatican, who encouraged certain lines of investigation. Although they do not wish to be cited by name, their help is reflected in the text.

It should be noted that we went to considerable trouble to obtain access to the Vatican's own records of the events dealt with, but were denied access to all relevant files. The access policy of the Vatican Secret Archives bars researchers from seeing most files after 22 January 1922. We thank official Vatican historian, Father Robert Graham, for trying to fill in some of the resultant gaps, and for his prompt responses to our many queries.

A large number of people gave us invaluable assistance by translating into English hundreds of pages of documents from many languages. Their work allowed us to present a rich diversity of material from international sources. We particularly thank Paula Gruden for translating Serbo-Croat and Slovenian material, and

Claudia Taranto for Italian. Pierre Vicary, East European Correspondent of the Australian Broadcasting Corporation, convinced surviving priests who worked on the Ratline to give tape recorded interviews and obtained rare personal photographs, some of which appear in the book. Mr. Vicary, a British citizen fluent in several languages, lives in Zagreb and was also instrumental in negotiating the release of several key documents from Communist sources.

We would also like to thank Mr. William Gowen, whose criticisms and comments reached us only after this book was written. While Mr. Gowen states that he was not personally aware of Pius XII's involvement in the Ratlines and disagrees with us on a number of points, he does confirm the secret support given to the Vatican's Intermarium program by British intelligence.

Finally, we wish to record that, although we frequently took the advice of our many contacts, we alone are responsible for any errors, omissions or shortcomings.

Mark Aarons and John Loftus
October 1991

Endnotes

A Note on Abbreviations

Because of the number of times material from the Public Record Office and the United States National Archives is cited in the text we have adopted the following abbreviations:

Public Record Office is cited as PRO

United States National Archives is cited as USNA

The Turkul Dossiers in the USNA are cited 'T' as further explained on page 319, endnote 35

Epigraph

1 Letter from the British Legation to the Holy See, to the Foreign Office, of 7 March 1947, PRO FO 371 67917c
2 Airgram from Cabot, Belgrade, to Washington, 12 June 1947, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116EW/6–1147

Preface to New Edition

1 We are grateful to Harry Phillips, ABC producer, for the update on Priebke's residence and disposition
2 *The Sydney Morning Herald*, 13 September 1997, p. 19
3 *US News and World Report*, 30 March 1998, and BBC television documentary, *The Evita Connection*, screened on Four Corners, Australian Broadcasting Corporation, 17 March 1998.

1 A Spectre was Haunting Europe

1 Corrado Pallenberg, *The Vatican From Within*, George Harrap, London, 1961, p. 19; and Carlo Falconi, *The Silence of Pius XII*, Faber & Faber, London, 1970, p. 86
2 Other accounts of these incidents can be found in Richard Grunberger, *Red Rising in Bavaria*, Arthur Barker, London, 1973, pp. 110, 141, 145; and Branko Bokun, *Spy in the Vatican*, Tom Stacey, London, 1973, p. 39
3 Falconi, *The Silence of Pius XII*, p. 86
4 Grunberger, *Red Rising in Bavaria*, pp. 157–8
5 Falconi, *The Silence of Pius XII*, p. 86
6 Handwritten cover note to letter from the British Legation to the Holy See, to the Foreign Office, of 31 December 1938, PRO FO 371 23810; and Owen Chadwick, *Britain and the Vatican during the Second World War*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1986, p. 7
7 Nicholas Cheetham, *Keepers of the Keys: The Pope in History*, Macdonald & Co, London, 1982, p. 283

8 'Holy See Annual Report, 1925' from British Legation to the Holy See to the Foreign Office, 21 April 1926, PRO FO 371 11399
9 *Ibid.*
10 Letter from British Legation to the Holy See to the Foreign Office, 30 June 1926, PRO FO 371 11775
11 'Holy See Annual Report, 1925' from British Legation to the Holy See to the Foreign Office, 21 April 1926, PRO FO 371 11399; 'Holy See Annual Report, 1926' from British Legation to the Holy See to the Foreign Office, 31 May 1927, PRO FO 371 12206; 'Holy See Annual Report, 1927' from British Legation to the Holy See to the Foreign Office, 27 February 1928, PRO FO 371 15258
12 Letter from British Legation to the Holy See to the Foreign Office, 28 December 1926, PRO FO 371 12582
13 Cheetham, *Keepers of the Keys: The Pope in History*, p. 283
14 Father Joseph Lecler, as quoted in Paul Ormonde, *The Movement*, Thomas Nelson (Australia), Melbourne, 1972, p. 131
15 'A Survey of Modern Trends in Papal Diplomacy', State Department research paper, USNA, RG 59, 866A.00/3–2448
16 Letter from British Legation to the Holy See to the Foreign Office, 6 January 1932, PRO FO 371 16400
17 'The policy of the Catholic Church in the Danube Valley', Foreign Research and Press Service, Balliol College, Oxford, 21 October 1942, PRO FO 371 33434
18 *Ibid.*
19 Anne Fremantle (ed.), *The Social Teachings of the Catholic Church*, Menton-Omega, New York, 1963, p. 80
20 As quoted in 'The policy of the Catholic Church in the Danube Valley', Foreign Research and Press Service, Balliol College, Oxford, 21 October 1942, PRO FO 371 33434; and Falconi, *The Silence of Pius XII*, p. 22
21 'Holy See Annual Report, 1930' from British Legation to the Holy See to the Foreign Office, 13 February 1931, PRO FO 371 15258
22 'Holy See Annual Report, 1930' from British Legation to the Holy See to the Foreign Office, 13 February 1931, PRO FO 371 15258; "Holy See Annual Report, 1932' from British Legation to the Holy See to the Foreign Office, 20 February 1933, PRO FO 371 11410
23 Chadwick, *Britain and the Vatican during the Second World War*, pp. 7–13, 28
24 As quoted in Chadwick, *Britain and the Vatican during the Second World War*, p. 20; and Falconi, *The Silence of Pius XII*, p. 95. See also, letter from the British Legation to the Holy See, to the Foreign Office, 12 June 1945, PRO FO 371 50062
25 Cheetham, *Keepers of the Keys: The Pope in History*, p. 283
26 'Holy See Annual Report, 1937' from British Legation to the Holy See to the Foreign Office, 10 February 1938, PRO FO 371 15258
27 Letter from the British Legation to the Holy See, to the Foreign Office, 31 December 1938, PRO FO 371 23810; Chadwick, *Britain and*

the Vatican during the Second World War, pp. 25–7; and Falconi, *The Silence of Pius XII*, p. 96

28 Chadwick, *Britain and the Vatican during the Second World War*, p. 30

29 For a detailed account of Pacelli's election, see Chadwick, *Britain and the Vatican during the Second World War*, Chapter Two, pp. 30–56

30 A good account of Pacelli's career is found in Pallenberg, *The Vatican From Within*

31 Pallenberg, *The Vatican From Within*, pp. 123–4; and Central Intelligence Group memo from an unknown (censored) source, to Jack D. Neal, Department of State, 24 October 1946, USNA, RG 59, 866A.404/10–2446

32 Reports from the British Legation to the Holy See to the Foreign Office, 'Holy See Personalities', 21 June 1938 and 3 July 1939, PRO FO 371 22441 and 23827; other details about Pacelli are found in 'Notes on Leading Personalities connected with the Holy See', and 'Holy See: Personalities, 1932', from the British Legation to the Holy See to the Foreign Office, 29 April 1927 and 5 January 1932, PRO FO 371 12206 and 15979

33 Falconi, *The Silence of Pius XII*, p. 95

34 See for example, Falconi, *The Silence of Pius XII*; Pierre Blet, Robert A. Graham, Angelo Martini and Burkhart Schneider (eds), *Les Actes et Documents du Saint Siège relatif à la Seconde Guerre Mondiale*, Libreria Editrice Vaticana, Vatican City, Vols 1–11, 1966–81. For somewhat biased versions of the attack against the Vatican see, for example, Edmond Paris, *The Vatican against Europe*, Macmillan, London, 1961, and Avro Manhattan, *Terror Over Yugoslavia*, Watts & Co, London, 1953. A good summary of the Vatican's position is contained in the lecture given by official Vatican historian, Father Robert Graham, 'The "Good Samaritan" in World War II. The Record of Relief and Rescue, Particularly by the Vatican, in Favour of the Victims of War', delivered at the Bethesda Regional Library, Bethesda, Maryland, 30 January 1989, under the auspices of the Catholic League for Religious and Civil Rights

35 David S. Wyman, *The Abandonment of the Jews*, Pantheon, New York, 1984, p. 342

36 For accounts of the official policies of various governments see Walter Laqueur, *The Terrible Secret*, Weidenfeld & Nicolson, London, 1981; and Martin Gilbert, *Auschwitz and the Allies*, Michael Joseph/Rainbird, London, 1981

37 Note from US President's Personal Representative to the Holy See, 24 June 1944, to Vatican Secretary of State, Myron Taylor Papers, USNA, Box 4

38 Cable from US State Department to US President's Personal Representative to the Holy See, 25 October 1944, Myron Taylor Papers, USNA, Box 4

39 Note to Ambassador, 7 November 1944, Myron Taylor Papers, USNA, Box 4

40 *Ibid.*

41 Alan Abrams, *Special Treatment*, Lyle Stewart, New York, 1985, p. 34

42 Solomon Grayzel, *A History of the Jews*, Mentor, New York, 1968, p. 675

43 'Summary of Considerations on Communism Expressed by H. E. Monsignor Tardini in Conversation with Mr Myron Taylor September 17 1941', one of the documents in 'Memoranda Concerning Vatican, Czechoslovakia, Germany, Hungary, Italy, Poland, Rumania, Russia, Yugoslavia, Austria, 1941 to 1946', from Myron Taylor to State Department, 4 September 1946, USNA, RG 59, 121.866A/9–446

44 'Informal Notes Concerning Communistic Peril After the War by H. E. Monsignor Tardini May 30 1943', one of the documents in 'Memoranda Concerning Vatican, Czechoslovakia, Germany, Hungary, Italy, Poland, Rumania, Russia, Yugoslavia, Austria, 1941 to 1946', from Myron Taylor to State Department, 4 September 1946, USNA, RG 59, 121.866A/9–446

45 Report of 12 February 1944, USNA, RG 226, Records of the Office of Strategic Services, 60701. For Moscow's view of this, see also 'Annual Report for 1945', from the Holy See to the Foreign Office, 22 February 1946, PRO FO 371 60803

46 Details of Hartl's career are found in Gitta Sereny, *Into that Darkness: 'the mind of a mass murderer'*, Picador, London, 1977, pp. 17, 64–71, 97, 295–6

47 Interrogation Report of Albert Hartl, 17 May 1946, USNA, RG 59

48 Reports of 31 August 1944, and 10 February 1945, USNA, RG 226, Records of the Office of Strategic Services, 92389 and 118384

49 Francis Murphy, 'A Brief Biography of Paul VI', in James Andrews (ed.), *Paul VI: Critical Appraisals*, Bruce Publishing, New York, 1970, pp. 132–9; and Pallenberg, *The Vatican From Within*, p. 128. For further details of Montini see 'Holy See Personalities', 21 June 1938 and 3 July 1939, from British Legation to the Holy See to the Foreign Office, PRO FO 371 22441 and 23827

50 Report of 31 August 1944, USNA, RG 226, Records of the Office of Strategic Services, 92389

51 Report of 12 February 1944, USNA, RG 226, Records of the Office of Strategic Services, 60701

52 Telegram from Holy See to Foreign Office, 25 August 1945, PRO FO 371 47606

53 'Confidential notes on the situation in the Russian-occupied zone of Berlin – (April, May, June 1945)', attached to letter from the Holy See to the State Department, 15 October 1945, USNA, RG 59, 740.00119 Control (Germany)/10–1545

54 'Memorandum on Political and Religious Situation in Hungary, July 27 1946', one of the documents in 'Memoranda Concerning Vatican, Czechoslovakia, Germany, Hungary, Italy, Poland, Rumania, Russia, Yugoslavia, Austria, 1941 to 1946', from Myron Taylor to State Department, 4 September 1946, USNA, RG 59, 121.866A/9–446

55 Detailed reports on the religious situation in Soviet-occupied Europe are found in 'Alleged persecution of the Catholic Church in the Russian Sub-Carpathian Province and the Ukraine', from the Holy See to the State Department, 29 January 1947, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 17; 'Annual Report for 1945', from the Holy See to the Foreign Office, 22 February 1946, PRO FO 371 60803; 'Annual Political Review for 1946', from the Holy See to the Foreign Office, 10 February 1947, PRO FO 371 67920A; 'Annual Review for 1949', from the Holy See to the Foreign Office, 11 March 1950, PRO FO 371 89815; 'The Catholic Church in Eastern Europe', Foreign Office Research Department paper of 5 December 1949, PRO FO 371 79904; and 'Memorandum on Political and Religious Situation in Czechoslovakia, August 1 1946'; 'Memorandum on Political and Religious Situation in Poland, July 30 1946'; 'Memorandum on Religious Situation in Germany, August 20 1946', documents in 'Memoranda Concerning Vatican, Czechoslovakia, Germany, Hungary, Italy, Poland, Rumania, Russia, Yugoslavia, Austria, 1941 to 1946', from Myron Taylor to State Department, 4 September 1946, USNA, RG 59, 121.866A/9–446

56 Information provided by Tardini to an American diplomat at the Holy See, in Airgram of 9 January 1947, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 10

57 'Italy: Ideological Report From The Holy See', report of 1 May 1947, from the Holy See to the Foreign Office, PRO FO 371 67918

58 'Annual Report for 1945', from the Holy See to the Foreign Office, 22 February 1946, PRO FO 371 60803; 'Italy: Ideological Report From The Holy See', report of 1 May 1947, from the Holy See to the Foreign Office, PRO FO 371 67918; 'The Vatican and the "Iron Curtain" countries', Foreign Office Research Department paper of 13 December 1949; and 'The Catholic Church in Eastern Europe', Foreign Office Research Department paper, 5 December 1949, PRO FO 371 89817 and 79904

59 'The Vatican and the "Iron Curtain" countries', Foreign Office Research Department paper, 13 December 1949, PRO FO 371 89817

60 Handwritten note on the cover of 'Italy: Ideological Report From The Holy See', report of 1 May 1947, from the Holy See to the Foreign Office, PRO FO 371 67918

61 Telegram from Holy See to State Department, 18 September 1946, USNA, RG 59, 761.00/9–1846

62 Memos of 15 March and 16 October 1944, USNA RG 319, ABC, Box 73

63 Interrogation Report of Albert Hartl, 17 May 1946, USNA, RG 59

64 Report of October 1945, USNA, RG 226, Records of the Office of Strategic Services, XL 24218

65 Memos of 18 December 1947 and 5 January 1948, USNA, RG 59, 866A.20200/12–1847

66 'Memorandum on Reported "Christian Front"', attached to memo of

29 April 1948, from the Holy See to the State Department, USNA, RG 59, 866A.20200/4–2948

2 Bishop Hudal and the First Wave

1 This account is based on Gitta Sereny's interviews with Stangl, in *Into that Darkness*, p. 289
2 *Ibid.*
3 *Ibid.*
4 *Ibid.*
5 *Ibid.*
6 *Ibid.*
7 Interview with Simon Wiesenthal, Vienna, 21 February 1985
8 Testimony of Frau Stangl at her husband's trial in Düsseldorf, quoted in Sereny, *Into that Darkness*, p. 357
9 Interview with Simon Wiesenthal, Vienna, 21 February 1985
10 *Ibid.*
11 *Ibid.*
12 Interview with Father Graham, 15 April 1985
13 For example, in a letter written during the war Hudal recalls 'speaking in the town of Trier in November 1934, during a tour of lectures in Germany'. USNA, RG 226, Records of the Office of Strategic Services, Report of 2 September 1944, 95157
14 Alois Hudal, *Die Gründlagen des Nationalsozialismus; eine ideengeschichtliche Untersuchung*, Johannes Günther, Leipzig, 1937, p. 9
15 Erika Weinzierl, 'Austria: Church, State, Politics' in Richard Wolff and Jorg Hönsch (eds), *Catholics, the State and the European Radical Right 1919–1945*, Columbia University Press, New York, 1987, p. 23
16 USNA, RG 226, Records of the Office of Strategic Services, Report of September 1944, 95157
17 *Ibid.*
18 Karlheinz Deschner, *Ein Jahrhundert Heilsgeschichte; Die Politik der Papste im Zeitalter-der Weltkriege. Von Pius XII 1939 bis zu Johannes Paul I 1978*, Kiepenheuer und Witsch, Köln, 1983, pp. 135, 359
19 Letter from Central Intelligence Group, source unknown (censored) to Jack D. Neal, Department of State, 24 October 1946, USNA, RG 59, 866A.404/10–2446; letter from Father Robert Graham, 22 January 1990; and Pallenberg, *The Vatican from Within*, pp. 185–90
20 Alois Hudal, *Römische Tagebücher: Lebenberichte eines alten Bishofs*, Leopold Stocker, Graz/Stuttgart, 1976, p. 317; interview with Anima Rector Nedbal, Rome, 13 May 1989; letter from Father Robert Graham, January 1990; and Pallenberg, *The Vatican from Within* p. 186
21 Interview with Father Graham, 15 April 1985
22 See Blet *et al.*, *Les Actes et Documents du Saint Siège relatif à la Seconde Guerre Mondiale*; and Sereny, *Into that Darkness*, p. 303
23 Sereny, *Into that Darkness*, p. 305
24 Alfred Persche, 'Die Aktion Hudal; Das letzte Aufgebot des

Abendlandes', Unpublished Manuscript, p. 73, held by the Dokumentationsarchiv des Österreichischen Widerstandes
25 Anton Szanya, 'Alois Hudal Zum 100 Geburtstag eines gern vergessenen Österreichers', *Der Freidenker*, anno 15, issue 4, 1985, p. 12; and letter from Father Robert Graham, January 1990
26 Persche, 'Die Aktion Hudal; Das letzte Aufgebot des Abendlandes', Unpublished Manuscript, p. 73, held by the Dokumentationsarchiv des Österreichischen Widerstandes
27 Interview with Rector Nedbal, Rome, 13 May 1989
28 *Ibid.*
29 Raul Hilberg, *The Destruction of the European Jews*, Homes & Meier, New York, 1985, pp. 333–4
30 Werner Brockdorff (Alfred Jarschel), *Flucht vor Nürnberg*, Welsermuhl Verlag, Wels/Munich, 1969, pp. 25–6. For details of Rauff's Italian assignment, see Hilberg, *The Destruction of the European Jews*, p. 668
31 Sereny, *Into that Darkness*, p. 321
32 USNA, RG 226, Records of the Office of Strategic Services, Report number 88819
33 Central Intelligence Group memo from an unknown (censored) source, to Jack D. Neal, Department of State, 24 October 1946, USNA, RG 59, 866A.404/10–2446; Ladislas Farago, *Aftermath*, Pan, London, 1976, pp. 210–11
34 Farago, *Aftermath*, pp. 211–12; and Father Graham letter of 22 January 1990
35 For details of the Vatican's request, and Allied policy see the Vatican Secretariat of State's memo of 23 August 1944; Carmel Offie's letter to Tittman, 8 September 1944; Myron Taylor's Note Verbale to the Vatican Secretariat of State of 19 September 1944; the Vatican Secretariat of State's memo of 3 October 1944; Carmel Offie's letters to Myron Taylor of 26 October 1944 and 7 November 1944; and Myron Taylor's Note Verbale to the Vatican Secretariat of State of 10 November 1944, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 6
36 Memo of 7 December 1945, to Samuel Reber, Washington, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 29
37 In early September 1944 Bishop Hudal had written a report in which he attempted to show that his book *The Fundamentals of National Socialism*, 'far from Nazi propaganda was [in fact] an honest, calm, scientific criticism . . . measuring nazism by Christian morale and state doctrine'. See report of 2 September 1944, USNA, RG 226, Records of the Office of Strategic Services, 95157
38 Letter of 19 December 1944, from John Chapman to Allied Commission Liaison Division, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 6
39 Hudal, *Römische Tagebücher*, p. 21
40 *Ibid.*
41 Karl Wolff, for example, had been a commander of a notorious SS Einsatzgruppe in the Soviet Union. He was personally involved in the murder of 300,000 people, yet was sentenced in 1949 to the derisory

term of four years' imprisonment of which he served only a week. He was re-arrested in 1962 and sentenced in 1964 to fifteen years' imprisonment. He served six years before being freed because of ill health. See Christopher Simpson, *Blowback*, Weidenfeld & Nicolson, New York, 1988, pp. 92–4 and 93–4n; Wolff obituary, *Daily Telegraph*, London, 17 July 1984; and Hilberg, *The Destruction of the European Jews*, pp. 1085, 1109

42 Simpson, *Blowback*, pp. 92–3

43 Jarschel, *Flucht vor Nürnberg*, pp. 77–9

44 'Interrogation of SD Officers', 1 May 1945, USAINSCOM File D-216719, Ft. George V. Meade, Md.

45 David Martin, *Wilderness of Mirrors*, Harper & Row, New York, 1980, p. 182

46 Department of State, Report from Vincent La Vista to Herbert J. Cummings, 15 May 1947, USNA, RG 59, FW 800.0128/5-1547; the cite for the French book, *Cercle Noir*, is taken from translated excerpts which were graciously provided by Charles Kenney of the *Boston Globe*

47 Interview with Simon Wiesenthal, Vienna, 21 February 1985. See also Werner Brockdorff (Jarschel), *Flucht vor Nürnberg*, pp. 55–6, 81. Brockdorff, that is former Nazi youth leader Jarschel, also confirms that Schwendt was closely collaborating with Rauff in Milan

48 Jarschel, *Flucht vor Nürnberg*, p. 79

49 Department of State, Report from Vincent La Vista to Herbert J. Cummings, 15 May 1947, USNA, RG 59, FW 800.0128/5-1547, Appendix C, p. 4, paragraph 16

50 Sereny, *Into that Darkness*, pp. 316–17

51 *Ibid.*

52 *Ibid.*, p. 317

53 Department of State, report fom Vincent La Vista to Herbert J. Cummings, 15 May 1947, USNA, RG 59, FW 800.0128/5-1547. Some details of La Vista's earlier work can be found in a telegram from the State Department to the US Embassy in Rome, of 28 July 1945, USNA, RG 59, 840.414/7-2845. See also, Charles R. Allen, Junior, 'The Vatican and the Nazis', in *Reform Judaism*, Spring/Summer 1983, and 'Debate Rages: did Vatican help Nazis to escape from Europe?', in the *National Catholic Reporter*, 2 March 1984

54 Interview with Father Robert Graham, 15 April 1985

55 Department of State, Report fom Vincent La Vista to Herbert J. Cummings, 15 May 1947, USNA, RG 59, FW 800.0128/5-1547, Appendix A

56 CIC report by Leo Pagnotta of 28 December 1946, released under US FOIA, pp. 1–10. This report is also attached to Department of State Report from Vincent La Vista to Herbert J. Cummings, 15 May 1947, USNA, RG 59, FW 800.0128/5-1547, as Appendix B

57 *Ibid.*

58 *Ibid.*

59 Department of State, Report from Vincent La Vista to Herbert J. Cummings, 15 May 1947, USNA, RG 59, FW 800.0128/5-1547, p. 10

60 *Ibid.*, pp. 3–4
61 CIC report number D-3330 by Paul Lyon of 16 December 1946, released under US FOIA, pp. 7–9
62 *Ibid.*
63 *Ibid.*
64 Top Secret Office memorandum from Hamilton Robinson, Office of European Affairs, 26 June 1947, USNA, RG 59, 865.56/6-2647
65 See Division of Protective Services, Department of State to Leland Harrison, American Minister, Berne, 11 July 1947, USNA, RG 59, 800.142/5-1547; and letter from Leland Harrison, Minister, American Legation Berne to Secretary of State, 12 September 1947, USNA, RG 59, 800.142/9-1247
66 Top Secret Office memorandum from Hamilton Robinson, Office of European Affairs, 26 June 1947, USNA, RG 59, 865.56/6-2647
67 Letter of 28 July 1947, from Dowling at the State Department to Parsons at the Vatican, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 17
68 Letter and Oral Message from Parsons to Dowling, of 29 August 1947, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 17
69 USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 17
70 Letter and Oral Message from Parsons to Dowling, of 29 August 1947, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 17; and Charles R. Allen, Junior, 'The Vatican and the Nazis', in *Reform Judaism*, Spring/Summer 1983
71 Enclosure Number 1 to despatch 603 of 13 August 1947 from J. Graham Parsons, Vatican City, USNA, RG 59, 866A.00/8-1347
72 Hudal, *Römische Tagebücher*, p. 21
73 Several of the Austrian Episcopate members who voted to remove him later expressed their regrets. Salzburg's Archbishop Rohracher wrote to Hudal on 24 January 1952 saying that he had only signed the resignation demand 'under pressure'. And on 22 June 1953, after Hudal had already left the Anima, the Bishop of Graz, Ferdinand Pawlikowski did the same. See Hudal, *Römische Tagebücher*, pp. 303, 306
74 Hudal, *Römische Tagebücher*, p. 21
75 See letter from the Secretariat of State to Tittman of 11 August 1945, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 8

3 A French Spy in the Vatican

1 Vincent La Vista, 'Illegal Emigration Movements in and Through Italy', 15 May 1947, USNA, RG 59, FW 800.0128/5-1547
2 *Ibid.*
3 Interview with Simon Wiesenthal, Vienna, 21 February 1985
4 *New York Times*, 30 January 1984
5 Gowen CIC report of 23 June 1947, Vajta file, obtained under the US FOIA, pp. 49–51
6 *Intermarium Bulletin*, number 5, January 1947, courtesy of Christopher

Simpson. Copies of this publication are found in the Library of Congress, Washington, and some in FBI files available under US FOIA

7 Anthony Cave Brown, *The Secret Servant*, Michael Joseph, London, 1988, pp. 143–4

8 'Annual Report, 1925' from the British Minister to the Holy See, Sir Odo Russell, to London, 21 April 1926, PRO FO 371 11399; and Foreign Office Research and Press Service report, 'The policy of the Catholic Church in the Danube Valley', 21 October 1942, PRO FO 371 33434

9 CIC report on 'The Croatian National Independence Movement', 9 April 1946, Ustashi file, obtained under the US FOIA, pp. 23–5

10 Appendix D to Vincent La Vista, 'Illegal Emigration Movements in and Through Italy', 15 May 1947, USNA, RG 59, FW 800.0128/5-1547

11 See Gowen CIC report pf 5 March 1948, Vajta file, pp. 30–3, obtained under the US FOIA, for an account of his early contacts with Vajta

12 An extremely detailed account of Vajta's claims to the Americans is contained in his Curriculum Vitae, and his paper 'The Struggle for the Domination of Central and South Eastern Europe', Rome 10 February 1947, both in French and enclosed in State Department memo of 10 April 1948 from Rome to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/4-1048

13 Vajta's Curriculum Vitae provided to the US Embassy in Rome, Enclosure to State Department memo of 10 April 1948 from Rome to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/4-1048

14 Gowen CIC report of 22 March 1948, Vajta file, obtained under the US FOIA, pp. 9–14

15 Gowen CIC report of 22 March 1948, Vajta file, obtained under the US FOIA, pp. 9–14; memo of 20 December 1947, from Wilford to Culbertson, enclosed in State Department memo of 31 December 1947 from Madrid to Washington, from Vajta's FBI file, released under US FOIA, document 0009

16 Gowen CIC report of 22 March 1948, Vajta file, obtained under the US FOIA, pp. 9–14

17 'The Struggle for the Domination of Central and South Eastern Europe', Rome 10 February 1947, Enclosure to the State Department memo of 10 April 1948 from Rome to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/4-1048; memo of 20 December 1947, from Wilford to Culbertson, enclosed in State Department memo of 31 December 1947 from Madrid to Washington, from Vajta's FBI file, released under US FOIA, document 0009

18 Memo of 20 December 1947 from Wilford to Culbertson, enclosed in State Department memo of 31 December 1947 from Madrid to Washington, from Vajta's FBI file, released under US FOIA, document 0009

19 Gowen CIC report of 23 June 1947, Vajta file, obtained under the US FOIA, pp. 49–51

20 State Department telegrams of 24 February and 24 March 1948 from Washington to Rome, and Madrid to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/2-2448, and 111.20A/3-2448

21 Memo of 20 December 1947 from Wilford to Culbertson, enclosed in State Department memo of 31 December 1947 from Madrid to Washington, from Vajta's FBI file, released under US FOIA, document 0009

22 Smofford CIC report of 19 January 1948, Vajta file, obtained under the US FOIA, pp. 40–1

23 Gowen CIC report of 22 March 1948, Vajta file, obtained under the US FOIA, pp. 9–14; and Vajta Curriculum Vitae, enclosed in State Department memo of 10 April 1948 from Rome to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/4-1048

24 Memo of 20 December 1947, from Wilford to Culbertson, enclosed in State Department memo of 31 December 1947 from Madrid to Washington, from Vajta's FBI file, released under US FOIA, document 0009

25 *Ibid.*

26 'The Struggle for the Domination of Central and South Eastern Europe', Rome 10 February 1947, Enclosure to State Department memo of 10 April 1948 from Rome to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/4-1048

27 *Ibid.*

28 See 'The Ideological Basis of the Confederation of Central-Eastern Europe', in the *Intermarium Bulletin*, number five, January 1947 for the organisation's account of its aims, Library of Congress, Washington

29 Gowen CIC report of 23 June 1947, Vajta file, obtained under the US FOIA, pp. 49–51

30 'The Struggle for the Domination of Central and South Eastern Europe', Rome, 10 February 1947, and Vajta Curriculum Vitae, enclosed in State Department memo of 10 April 1948 from Rome to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/4-1048; memo of 20 December 1947, from Wilford to Culbertson, enclosed in State Department memo of 31 December 1947 from Madrid to Washington, from Vajta's FBI file, released under US FOIA, document 0009

31 Gowen CIC report of 23 June 1947, Vajta file, obtained under the US FOIA, pp. 49–51; and CIC memos of 21 August, 4 and 15 October, and 10 December 1946, Intermarium file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 1–6

32 For the early history of San Girolamo, see Mons Dr Juraj Magjerec, *Hrvatski Zavod Sv. Jeronima u Rimu: Jubilejske Proslave (1453–1953)*, Tiskara Papinskog Sveučilsta Gregoriane, Rome, 1953. This is a particularly interesting account, especially as it was largely prepared by Father Draganović.

33 These details of Draganović's early life are taken from his statement

to the Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967; on Bishop Šarić see Harrington CIC memo of 9 March 1948, 'Activity of Bishops Rožman and Šarić', released under US FOIA

34 CIC Index Card and Captain Davis, undated memo, 'Consolidated Interrogation Report on Dr Krunoslav Stepano Draganović', Draganović file, obtained under the US FOIA, pp. 2, 41–6; unpublished manuscript by Stephen Clissold; interview with Milan Simčić, Rome, 12 May 1989; undated Italian Secret Service report, attached to Ministry of Foreign Affairs memo of 20 August 1944, Ministry of Foreign Affairs Archives, 'Affari politici (Jugoslavia), 1948 Busta 33 fasciolo 3, Attivita' di jugoslavi contrari di Tito in Italia; Draganović statement to the Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967; and Bogdan Križman, *Pavelić u bjekstvu*, Globus, Zagreb, 1986, quoting *Hrvatska Revija*, Munich, 1975, Year 25, issue 4, pp. 655–64

35 Memo of 20 December 1947, from Wilford to Culbertson, enclosed in State Department memo of 31 December 1947 from Madrid to Washington, from Vajta's FBI file, released under US FOIA, document 0009. For a good account of Vajta's and Krek's relations see the former's letters to the latter, Rome, 16 March 1947, and Innsbruck, Paris, Rome, 12 December 1946, enclosed in State Department memo of 10 April 1948 from Rome to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/4-1048. Also see, Draganović statement to the Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967

36 Gowen CIC report of 23 June 1947, Vajta file, obtained under the US FOIA, pp. 49–51. See also, undated Italian Secret Service report, attached to Ministry of Foreign Affairs memo of 20 August 1944, Ministry of Foreign Affairs Archives, 'Affari politici (Jugoslavia), 1948 Busta 33 fasciolo 3, Attivita' di jugoslavi contrari di Tito in Italia

37 OSS report of 8 February 1945, USNA, RG 226, 113566; Italian Secret Service report of 6 July 1945, and undated Italian Secret Service report, attached to Ministry of Foreign Affairs memo of 20 August 1944, Ministry of Foreign Affairs Archives, 'Affari politici (Jugoslavia), 1948 Busta 33, fasciolo 3, Attivita' di jugoslavi contrari al regime di Tito in Italia; and Draganović statement to the Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967

38 Gowen CIC report of 23 June 1947, and CIC List of Intermarium Leaders, Vajta file, obtained under the US FOIA, pp. 49–51 and 55; memo of 20 December 1947, from Wilford to Culbertson, enclosed in State Department memo of 31 December 1947 from Madrid to Washington, from Vajta's FBI file, released under US FOIA, document 0009. For details of Durčansky, see CIA Biographic Report of 18 November 1949, CIA file obtained under the US FOIA, p. 11

39 Memo of 20 December 1947, from Wilford to Culbertson, enclosed in State Department memo of 31 December 1947 from Madrid to Washington, from Vajta's FBI file, released under US FOIA,

document 0009; Italian Secret Service report of 6 July 1945, Ministry of Foreign Affairs Archives, 'Affari politici (Jugoslavia), 1948 Busta 33, fasciolo 3, Attivita' di jugoslavi contrari al regime di Tito in Italia

40 Appendix A to Vincent La Vista, 'Illegal Emigration Movements in and Through Italy', 15 May 1947, USNA, RG 59, FW 800.0128/5-1547

41 Gowen CIC report of 5 March 1948, Vajta file, obtained under the US FOIA, pp. 30–3

42 See report of October 1945, USNA, RG 226, Records of the Office of Strategic Services, XL 24218

43 Vajta Curriculum Vitae, enclosed in State Department memo of 10 April 1948 from Rome to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/4-1048

44 Gowen CIC report of 22 March 1948, Vajta file, obtained under the US FOIA, pp. 9–14

45 State Department telegram of 24 March 1948 from Madrid to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/3-2448

46 Vajta Curriculum Vitae, enclosed in State Department memo of 10 April 1948 from Rome to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/4-1048. For the official American view of Vajta's arrest see State Department Confidential Telegram from Rome to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 16 April 1947, 740.00116EW/4-1647

47 Gowen CIC report of 12 May 1947, Vajta file, obtained under the US FOIA, pp. 52–3

48 *Ibid.*, pp. 49–51

49 State Department Confidential Telegram from Budapest to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 24 April 1947, 740.00116EW/4-2447

50 Gowen CIC report of 23 June 1947, Vajta file, obtained under the US FOIA, pp. 49–51. For details of Rupprecht's role as a Nazi propagandist, see Randolph Braham, *The Politics of Genocide: The Holocaust in Hungary*, Columbia University Press, New York, 1981, pp. 55–6, 160–1

51 List of Hungarian war criminals of 5 February 1946, enclosed in State Department memo of 23 June 1947 from Budapest to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116EW/6-2347; handwritten CIC note, undated, and Smofford CIC report of 19 January 1948, and Gowen CIC report of 22 March 1948, Vajta file, obtained under the US FOIA, pp. 56, 40–1, 9–14; Vajta Curriculum Vitae, enclosed in State Department memo of 10 April 1948 from Rome to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/4-1048; and Simpson, *Blowback*, p. 183

52 'The Struggle for the Domination of Central and South Eastern Europe', Rome 10 February 1947, Enclosure to State Department memo of 10 April 1948 from Rome to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/4-1048

53 Gowen CIC report of 22 March 1948, Vajta file, obtained under the US FOIA, pp. 9–14; Vajta's Curriculum Vitae provided to the US Embassy in Rome, Enclosure to State Department memo of 10 April

1948 from Rome to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/4-1048; and State Department memo of 5 March 1948, 'Biographic Report on Ferenc Vajta', from Vienna to Washington, from Vatja's FBI file, released under US FOIA

54 Braham, *The Politics of Genocide*, pp. 55–6, 160–1. Many details of Vajta's history are taken from his Curriculum Vitae provided to the US Embassy in Rome, Enclosure to State Department memo of 10 April 1948 from Rome to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/4-1048

55 Open Letter to Ferenc Nagy, leader of Small Proprietors Party, 26 June 1947, Enclosure to State Department memo of 10 April 1948 from Rome to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/4-1048

56 State Department memo of 30 March 1948 from Budapest to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/3-3048; State Department Telegram of 9 January 1948 from Budapest to Washington, from Vatja's FBI file, released under US FOIA, document 0008

57 State Department memo of 30 March 1948 from Budapest to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/3-3048

58 Simpson, *Blowback*, p. 181

59 This conversation between Gowen and Vajta is based on the latter's detailed paper submitted to the US Embassy at around the same time the two met, 'The Struggle for the Domination of Central and South Eastern Europe', Rome, 10 February 1947, enclosed in State Department memo of 10 April 1948 from Rome to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/4-1048, and on what material has been declassified from Gowen's own reports

60 Gowen CIC report of 6 July 1947, Vajta file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 44–8

61 *Ibid.*

62 Gowen CIC report of 22 March 1948, Vajta file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 9–14

63 Memo of 20 December 1947, from Wilford to Culbertson, enclosed in State Department memo of 31 December 1947 from Madrid to Washington, from Vajta's FBI file, released under US FOIA, document 0009

64 Falconi, *The Silence of Pius XII*, p. 158

65 Gowen CIC report of 5 March 1948, Vajta file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 30–3; and Caniglia and Gowen CIC report of 9 September 1947, Vajta file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 47–8

66 State Department Memo of 31 December 1947 from Madrid to Washington, and enclosed memo of 20 December 1947, from Wilford to Culbertson, from Vajta's FBI file, released under US FOIA, document 0009; and 'Holy See: Annual Review for 1949', from the British Legation to the Holy See, to the Foreign Office, of 11 March 1950, PRO FO 371 150738

67 Memo of 20 December 1947, from Wilford to Culbertson, enclosed in State Department memo of 31 December 1947 from Madrid to

Washington, from Vajta's FBI file, released under US FOIA, document 0009

68 *Ibid.*

69 HQ European Command Confidential incoming telegram from Intelligence Division of 11 February 1948, Vajta file, obtained under US FOIA, p. 36. See also HQ European Command Incoming Message from Army Intelligence Director of 2 March 1948, Vajta file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 34–5

70 State Department Telegram of 8 January 1948 from Madrid to Washington, from Vajta's FBI file, released under US FOIA, document 0003; State Department Memo of 31 December 1947 from Madrid to Washington, from Vajta's FBI file, released under US FOIA, document 0009

71 'Open Letter to Ferenc Nagy, leader of Small Proprietors Party', 26 June 1947, Enclosure to State Department memo of 10 April 1948 from Rome to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/4-1048; and State Department Memo of 31 December 1947 from Madrid to Washington, from Vajta's FBI file, released under US FOIA, document 0009

72 HQ European Command Internal Route Slip of 16 February 1948, and Colonel Lyster report of 20 January 1948 to Major General Floyd Parks, Army Public Information Division in Washington, Vajta file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 37–9; State Department telegram of 24 March 1948 from Budapest to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/3-2448; Hungarian Legation note to State Department of 3 February 1948, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116EW/2-348; State Department telegram of 24 January 1948 from Budapest to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 851.20263/1-2348, Microfilm, LM 108, Roll 15, frame 00442; State Department telegram of 24 February 1948 from Washington to Rome, USNA, RG 59, 111.20A/2-2448; memo of 27 August 1948 from Clark to Culbertson, enclosed in State Department memo of 8 September 1948 from Madrid to Washington, from Vajta's FBI file, released under US FOIA; and Simpson, *Blowback*, p. 183

73 Gowen CIC report of 5 March 1948, Vajta file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 30–3. The Hungarian press investigated how Vajta escaped and discovered most of the details, including the Vatican's role. For an account of this see, State Department telegram of 3 March 1948 from Budapest to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 864.00/3-348

74 Charles Ashman and Robert Wagman, *The Nazi Hunters*, Pharos Books, New York, 1988, pp. 189–90

4 A Staggering Blow to the Holy See

1 Accounts of Pavelić's flight from Zagreb via Rogaska Slatina and Maribor to Austria can be found in Križman, *Pavelić u bjekstvu*; and

Vilim Cecelja, 'Ċetrdesetdodjisnjica Bleiburga', in *Vjesnik*, Journal of Croatian Workers and Migrants in Germany, year 14, number 51, Easter 1985. The former gives his account from a pro-Yugoslav point of view, while the latter was a senior Ustashi member and gives a sympathetic portrayal of Pavelić.

2 A detailed history of the growth of the Ustashi, its terrorist activities in the 1930s and the terrible atrocities committed during the war can be found in Mark Aarons, *Sanctuary! Nazi Fugitives in Australia*, Heinemann Australia, Melbourne, 1989, pp. 57–63. A somewhat biased, although largely accurate account can be found in Edmond Paris, *Genocide in Satellite Croatia, 1941–1945*, The Serbian Thought, Melbourne, 1981

3 Magjerec, *Hrvatski Zavod Sv. Jeronima u Rimu: Jubilejske Proslave (1453–1953)*, pp. 177–80

4 Handwritten notes of 5 June and 26 May 1941, PRO FO 371 30174 and 30226; and memo from Apostolic Delegate to Foreign Office of 23 May 1941 and memo from Eden to Osborne, British Ambassador to the Holy See, 24 May 1941, PRO FO 371 30174

5 Report from Osborne to the Foreign Office, 13 June 1941, PRO FO 371 30174

6 Handwritten note of 10 July 1941 and memo from the Foreign Office to Osborne, 21 July 1941, PRO FO 371 30174

7 Falconi, *The Silence of Pius XII*, p. 307

8 Bokun, *Spy in the Vatican*, pp. 21–3

9 Falconi, *The Silence of Pius XII*, pp. 308, 335–6

10 *Ibid.*, pp. 330 and 350

11 Paris, *Genocide in Satellite Croatia, 1941–1945*, pp. 167, 221; Bokun, *Spy in the Vatican*, p. 46; and Falconi, *The Silence of Pius XII*, pp. 344–51

12 Curzio Malaparte, *Kaputt*, Harborough, London, 1960, p. 200

13 See the account in Hilberg, *The Destruction of the European Jews*, pp. 711–8

14 Note of 3 July 1945, PRO FO 371 48890; and Note from Yugoslav Embassy, London, to Foreign Office, 30 August 1945, PRO FO 371 48892

15 Note from the Foreign Office to the Yugoslav Embassy, London, 9 October 1945, PRO FO 371 48892; and Telegram from Vienna to Foreign Office, 28 October 1945, PRO FO 371 48893

16 Telegram from Foreign Office to Caserta, 12 September 1945, PRO FO 371 48892; Telegram from Belgrade to Caserta, 15 October 1945, PRO FO 371 48893; Telegram from Belgrade to Foreign Office, 27 August 1945, PRO FO 371 48892; Telegram from Caserta to Foreign Office, 10 October 1945, PRO FO 371 48893; letter to Vyshinski from Frank Roberts of the British Embassy, Moscow, 15 October 1945, PRO FO 371 48893; letter to the Foreign Office from Allied Commission for Austria (British Element), 2 December 1945, PRO FO 371 48894; and letter from Foreign Office to Yugoslav Embassy, London, 3 January 1946, PRO FO 371 48894

17 Telegram from Belgrade to Foreign Office, 14 December 1945, PRO FO 371 48894; Colville note of 22 December 1945, PRO FO 371 48894; Telegram from Belgrade to Foreign Office, 14 December 1945, PRO FO 371 48894; and letter from Foreign Office to Yugoslav Embassy, London, 19 December 1945, PRO FO 371 48894

18 Colville note of 10 January 1946, PRO FO 371 59399; Telegram from Foreign Office to Washington, 10 January 1946, PRO FO 371 59399; and Telegram from Washington to Foreign Office, 14 January 1946, PRO FO 371 59399

19 See telegram from Belgrade to Foreign Office, 9 June 1946, PRO FO 371 59408, for an example of the Yugoslav press complaints; for the continuing official campaign, see for example, the Yugoslav Embassy's note to the Foreign Office of 2 August 1946, PRO FO 371 59415

20 Letter from British Embassy, Belgrade, to Yugoslav Foreign Affairs Minister, 21 August 1946, PRO FO 371 59417; and letter from Walworth Barbour, Acting Chief of the US State Department's Division of Southern European Affairs, to J. C. Mance, 7 October 1946, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116EW/9-2546

21 Letter of 21 November 1946 to Foreign Office, PRO FO 371 59423

22 Letter from British Embassy, Washington, to State Department, 9 November 1946, and State Department reply, 20 November 1946, USNA, RG 59, 860H.00/11-946; and letter from Father Robert Graham, 22 January 1990

23 Note of 18 December 1946; and Telegram from Vienna to Foreign Office, 14 December 1946, PRO FO 371 59423

24 Draganović statement to the Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967

25 *Ibid.*

26 See for example the index card reporting the views of the Judge Advocate General's War Crimes Branch of 5 November 1945, USNA, Investigative Records Repository, RG 319, Pavelić Dossier, XE 001109

27 Gowen and Caniglia report of 29 August 1947, Pavelić CIC file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 2–6

28 Note of 16 July 1947, and letter from Major Vivian Street, Rome, to Foreign Office, 5 June 1947, PRO FO 371 67380

29 Mudd memo of 30 January 1947, CIC report of Caniglia and Zappala of 15 March 1947, and index card of 14 April 1947, USNA, Investigative Records Repository, RG 319, Pavelić Dossier, XE 001109

30 Pro Memoria of 10 May 1946, reporting the views of Source P, USNA, Investigative Records Repository, RG 319, Pavelić Dossier, XE 001109

31 Hubert Butler, *Escape from the Anthill*, The Lilliput Press, Mullingar, 1985, p. 282; and Communist intelligence document, 'The Poglavnik's Stay in Rome and Departure for Argentina'

32 Pro Memoria of 10 May 1946, reporting the views of Source P,

USNA, Investigative Records Repository, RG 319, Pavelić Dossier, XE 001109

33 Telegram of 7 January 1947 from Rome to Colonel Smith, USNA, Investigative Records Repository, RG 319, Pavelić Dossier, XE 001109

34 Gowen memo of 22 January 1947, USNA, Investigative Records Repository, RG 319, Pavelić Dossier, XE 001109. Father Robert Graham confirms that these Church establishments are in fact located in this complex. Letter of 22 January 1990

35 Father Robert Graham told us that 'Old Romans I have talked to do not remember any tramline that went "under" the Aventine. Of course there was a street car line circling there.' Letter of 22 January 1990

36 Gowen memo of 22 January 1947, USNA, Investigative Records Repository, RG 319, Pavelić Dossier, XE 001109

37 Letter from the British Political Adviser, Caserta, to the Foreign Office, 26 February 1947, PRO FO 371 67372

38 See for example, CIC report, 'Pavelić, Ante and the "Legitimists" in the Ustaša Movement', Pavelić CIC file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 3–4; and CIC reports of 10 October and 26 November 1946, Draganović files, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 49–54, 54

39 CIC report of Marion Scott, of 18 April 1947, USNA, Investigative Records Repository, RG 319, Pavelić Dossier, XE 001109

40 See Summary of Information, Pavelić CIC File, obtained under US FOIA, p. 9; and memo of Captain Robert Stuart, 20 June 1947, USNA, Investigative Records Repository, RG 319, Pavelić Dossier, XE 001109

41 Memo of 22 May 1947, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 17

42 Parsons memo of 26 July 1947, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 17

43 Warner note of 19 June 1947, PRO FO 371 67385

44 Telegrams from Rome to Leghorn, 17 July 1947, and from Foreign Office to Rome, 20 July 1947, PRO FO 371 67385. See also Telegram from Rome to Foreign Office, 22 July 1947, PRO FO 371 67386

45 Telegram from Foreign Office to Washington, 25 July 1947, PRO FO 371 67385

46 Telegram from Washington to Foreign Office, 25 July 1947, PRO FO 371 67387

47 Telegram of 28 July 1947 from Washington to Rome, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116EW/7-2847

48 Memos of 29 July and 2 August 1947, USNA, Investigative Records Repository, RG 319, Pavelić Dossier, XE 001109. See also the two Telegrams from Leghorn to Foreign Office, 30 July 1947, PRO FO 371 67387

49 Telegram from Foreign Office to Rome, 30 July 1947, PRO FO 371 67387

50 USNA, Investigative Records Repository, RG 319, Pavelić Dossier, XE 001109

51 Informal Routing Slip, 8 August 1947; 'Ante Pavelić and other Ustasha personalities'; and Gowen and Caniglia CIC memo of 9 June 1947, USNA, Investigative Records Repository, RG 319, Pavelić Dossier, XE 001109
52 Articles in *La Repubblica*, 23, 24, and 26 September 1948, Ministry of Foreign Affairs Archives, 1948 Busta 33, fasciolo 2, Processo di Zagrabia
53 Telegrams from Foreign Office to Rome, 27 August and 7 October 1947, PRO FO 371 67387; and Telegram from Headquarters Trieste United States troops, 10 September 1947, Pavelić CIC file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 1–2
54 Memo of 7 July 1947, and Morena handwritten note of 14 July 1947, USNA, Investigative Records Repository, RG 319, Pavelić Dossier, XE 001109
55 Gowen memo of 6 July 1947, Vajta file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 44–8
56 Gowen and Caniglia report of 29 August 1947, Pavelić CIC file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 2–6
57 *Ibid.*
58 *Ibid.*
59 *Ibid.*
60 *Ibid.*
61 Gowen, Caniglia and Morena report of 12 September 1947, USNA, Investigative Records Repository, RG 319, Pavelić Dossier, XE 001109
62 Interviews with Simčić, Rome, 12 May 1989 and 16 February 1990
63 Avro Manhattan, *Terror over Yugoslavia*, pp. 117–8, and *Catholic Terror Today*, Paravision, London, 1969
64 Sarajevo's *Svijet*, series of articles on Draganović, by Siniša Ivanović and Kršto Leković, published weekly from 13 June to 19 September 1986
65 Communist intelligence document, 'The Poglavnik's Stay in Rome and Departure for Argentina'
66 Interviews with Simčić, Rome, 16 February 1990; Križman, *Pavelić u bjekstvu*, p. 225
67 CIC memo, 'Pavelić Ante and the "Legitimists" in the Ustaša Movement', Pavelić file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 3–4
68 Details of the scope of the smuggling operation were given by Ivo Omrčanin in interviews with the *Religious News Service*, May 1986, and John Loftus, 1985

5 Ratline

1 See 'United States Policy Toward the Ustashi', Research Project No. 61, Division of Historical Policy Research, Department of State, April 1948, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116EW/4-148
2 Interview with Father Graham, 15 April 1985

3 Report of 25 November 1943, USNA, RG 226, Records of the Office of Strategic Services, OB 6362
4 Draganović statement to the Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967; and statement by Ljubo Miloš to the Yugoslav authorities
5 Draganović statement to the Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967
6 *Ibid.*
7 *Ibid.*
8 Interview with Vilim Cecelja, Maria Pline, 23 May 1989
9 Miss Jackson's note of 22 August 1946, PRO FO 371 59415; Yugoslav War Crimes Commission dossier number 7103, Yugoslav Archives, Belgrade; Stella Alexander, *The Triple Myth*, East European Monographs, Boulder, 1987, pp. 86, 157; Yugoslav extradition requests of 6 August 1946, PRO FO 371 59415, and 4 September 1946, USNA RG 59, 860H.00/9-446
10 Interview with Vilim Cecelja, Maria Pline, 23 May 1989; and Paris, *Genocide in Satellite Croatia*, p. 74
11 Yugoslav War Crimes Commission dossier number 7103, Yugoslav Archives, Belgrade
12 Interview with Vilim Cecelja, Maria Pline, 23 May 1989
13 Security check for non-immigrant visa, 18 September 1957, USNA RG 319, Investigative Records Repository, Cecelja Dossier, XE 006538
14 Telegram from Zagreb to Washington, of 29 May 1947, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116EW/5-2947; and Interview with Vilim Cecelja, Maria Pline, 23 May 1989
15 Interview with Vilim Cecelja, Maria Pline, 23 May 1989
16 Appendix A to Personal Questionnaire, and Security Arrest Report, both citing CIC report, 'Ustasha Activity in Land Salzburg', of 2 October 1945; Index Card; Memo of 14 February 1947; and Memo of 26 February 1947, USNA, RG 319, Investigative Records Repository, Cecelja Dossier, XE 006538
17 Notes of 6 August 1946, PRO FO 371 59415, and 4 September 1946, USNA, RG 59, 860H.00/9-446
18 Note by Jackson of 22 August 1946, and Letter of 31 August 1946, PRO FO 371 59415
19 As quoted in Memo from Zagreb to Washington, of 30 May 1947, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116EW/5-3047; and Alexander, *The Triple Myth*, pp. 157–8
20 See Memo from Zagreb to Washington, of 4 June 1947, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116EW/6-447
21 Telegram from Zagreb to Washington, of 29 May 1947, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116EW/5-2947
22 Telegram from Vienna to Washington, of 4 April 1947, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116EW/4-447; and Memo of 12 March 1947, USNA, RG 319, Investigative Records Repository, Cecelja Dossier, XE006538
23 Telegram from Vienna to Washington, of 6 June 1947, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116EW/5-2947

24 Security check for non-immigrant visa, 18 September 1957, USNA, RG 319, Investigative Records Repository, Cecelja Dossier, XE 006538; Index Card of 24 June 1953, USNA, RG 319, Investigative Records Repository, Pavelić Dossier, XE 001109; CIC report on 'Croatian Émigré Activities in Austria', of 28 August 1953, Ustashi CIC file, released under US FOIA, p. 8; and documents of the Australian Security Intelligence Organisation, tabled in the Australian Senate, 27 March 1973

25 Interview with Vilim Cecelja, Maria Pline, 23 May 1989

26 *Ibid.*

27 *Ibid.*

28 'Memorandum on the Ustaša Organisation in Italy', enclosure in letter from Maclean to Wallinger, 17 October 1947, PRO FO 371 67398

29 Yugoslav War Crimes Commission document, 29 March 1949, Zh. 9670/11547, Yugoslav Archives, Belgrade

30 Draganović's extradition was asked for in a Yugoslav note of 26 July 1947, PRO FO 371 67387; some details of the work of the Office for Colonisation can be found in another Yugoslav note of 26 March 1947, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116EW/3-2547

31 Draganović statement to Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967

32 *Ibid.*

33 Draganović statement to Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967; and statements by Moškov and Miloš to the Yugoslav authorities

34 Mudd memo of 12 February 1947, Draganović CIC file, released under US FOIA, pp. 311–13

35 Draganović statement to Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967

36 'Memorandum on the Ustaša Organisation in Italy', enclosure in letter from Maclean to Wallinger, of 17 October 1947, PRO FO 371 67398; and 'Consolidated Interrogation Report on Dr Krunoslav Stepano Draganović', and memo of 26 November 1946, Draganović/Pečnikar CIC file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 41–6, 49

37 'Memorandum on the Ustaša Organisation in Italy', enclosure in letter from Maclean to Wallinger, of 17 October 1947, PRO FO 371 67398

38 Yugoslav note of 23 April 1947, PRO FO 371 67376; see also Yugoslav note of 7 November 1947, PRO FO 371 67400; Magjerec, *Hrvatski Zavod Sv. Jeronima u Rimu: Jubilejske Proslave (1453–1953)*, p. 133; and Manhattan, *Terror Over Yugoslavia*, p. 76

39 Note by Miss Jackson of 15 May 1947, PRO FO 371 67376; and enclosure to letter from Special Refugee Commission to Foreign Office, of 23 October 1947, PRO FO 371 67398

40 See for example, 'Consolidated Interrogation Report on Dr Krunoslav Stepano Draganović', Draganović/Pečnikar CIC file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 41–6

41 Memo of 26 November 1946, Draganović/Pečnikar CIC file, obtained under US FOIA, p. 49

42 CIC memo of 10 October 1946, Draganović file, obtained under US FOIA, p. 54
43 For some details of Mandić's role in this propaganda campaign, see Paris, *Genocide in Satellite Croatia*, p. 260; Draganović statement to the Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967; evidence of Mimo Rosandić enclosed with the dispatch from the US Consulate in Zagreb, of 4 August 1948, USNA, RG 59, 860H.00/8-448
44 Ministry of Foreign Affairs memo of 2 November 1945, Ministry of Foreign Affairs Archives, 'Affari politici (Jugoslavia), 1946 Busta 1, fasciolo 3, Esponenti del cessato,regime ustascia in Italia; and Ministry of Interior (Rome Police) report of 9 July 1946, attached to Ministry of Foreign Affairs memo of 30 July 1946, Ministry of Foreign Affairs Archives, 'Affari politici (Jugoslavia), 1948 Busta 33, fasciolo 3, Attivita' di jugoslavi contrari al regime di Tito in Italia
45 'Memorandum on the Ustaša Organisation in Italy', enclosure in letter from Maclean to Wallinger, of 17 October 1947, PRO FO 371 67398
46 Undated Italian Secret Service report, attached to Ministry of Foreign Affairs memo of 20 August 1944, Ministry of Foreign Affairs Archives, 'Affari politici (Jugoslavia), 1948 Busta 33, fasciolo 3, Attivita' di jugoslavi contrari di Tito in Italia
47 Interview with Simčić, Rome, 16 February 1990
48 Memo of 12 February 1947, Draganović/Pečnikar CIC file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 38–40
49 Interview with Simčić, Rome, 16 February 1990
50 Memo of 12 February 1947, Draganović/Pečnikar CIC file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 38–40
51 Telegram of 10 September 1947, Pavelić CIC file, obtained under US FOIA, p. 2
52 See Yugoslav note to the Foreign Office of 25 July 1946, and Foreign Office reply of 15 August 1946, PRO FO 371 59415. Also see Yugoslav note to the State Department of 15 August 1946, USNA, RG 59, 860H.00/8-1546
53 'Yugoslav Quislings and Possible War Criminals at Terni', PRO FO 371 59400
54 See note from British Embassy, Washington, to Foreign Office, of 20 June 1946, and Foreign Office note to the Yugoslav Embassy, London, of 2 July 1946, PRO FO 371 59412. Also see the Yugoslavs' earlier note of 11 May 1946, PRO FO 371 59406, for further details, and for Colville's and Jackson's comments of 14 and 17 May 1946. Details of Toth's flight to Buenos Aires are found in the memo from Buenos Aires to Washington of 16 July 1947, USNA, RG 59, 860H.20235/7-2347, Microfilm, LM 76, Roll 12, Frames 3328–9. Colville's confession about allowing many Ustashi to avoid repatriation is in John Colville, *Footprints in Time*, Michael Russell, Salisbury, 1984, pp. 212–13
55 'Yugoslav Quislings and Possible War Criminals at Terni', PRO FO

371 59400; Telegrams of 8 and 11 September 1946 from A Branch GHQ CMF to rear 13 Corps, and from Caserta to Foreign Office, 13 September 1946, PRO FO 371 59418; and CIC memo of 3 November 1947, Vrančić file, obtained under US FOIA, p. 2

56 See Yugoslav note to the State Department of 19 August 1946, and State Department reply of 3 April 1947, USNA, RG 59, 860H.00/8-1946; letter from British Embassy, Washington, to State Department, of 18 September 1946, and State Department reply of 15 October 1946, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116EW/9-1846, and 860H.00/10-1546; Telegram from Washington to Leghorn of 3 June 1947, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116EW/5-2747; and letters from Foreign Office to Vienna and Caserta, 17 August 1946, PRO FO 371 59415

57 Memo of 5 November 1946, Draganović/Pečnikar CIC file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 53–4

58 Memo of 5 September 1947, Draganović CIC file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 307–10

59 *Ibid.*

60 *Ibid.*

61 Memo of 12 February 1947, Draganović/Pečnikar CIC file, obtained under US FOIA, pp. 38–40

62 Interview with Karlo Dragutin Petranović, Niagara Falls, Canada, 17 June 1989

63 *Ibid.*

64 Yugoslav note of 21 July 1947, PRO FO 371 67386

65 *Ibid.*

66 As quoted in Manhattan, *Terror Over Yugoslavia*, p. 77

67 Interview with Karlo Dragutin Petranović, Niagara Falls, Canada, 17 June 1989

68 *Ibid.*

69 Telegram from Rome to Caserta, of 25 February 1947, PRO FO 371 67372

70 Foreign Office letter to the Screening Mission, Klagenfurt, of 14 August 1947, PRO FO 371 67386; G-2 memo of 16 January 1947, Ustashi CIC file, obtained under US FOIA, p. 47; letter from Caserta to Foreign Office, 26 February 1947, PRO FO 371 67372; 'Memorandum on the Ustaša Organisation in Italy', attached to letter from Maclean to Foreign Office, 17 October 1947, PRO FO 371 67398; and telegram from Leghorn to the State Department, USNA, RG 319. For further examples of the Genoa operation, see letter from Maclean to Foreign Office of 16 May 1947, from Foreign Office to Klagenfurt of 30 July 1947, Yugoslav notes to the Foreign Office of 15 July and 3 September 1947, letter from Klagenfurt to Foreign Office of 29 September 1947, PRO FO 371 67378, 67384, 67385, 67392 and 67393; and telegram from Leghorn to State Department, of 22 May 1947, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116EW/5-2147

71 Central Intelligence Group report of 21 January 1947, USNA, RG 59, 840.5510/1-2447

72 Interview with Karlo Dragutin Petranović, Niagara Falls, Canada, 17 June 1989
73 Stephen Clissold, unpublished manuscript; and Telegram from Rome to Foreign Office of 22 February 1947, PRO FO 371 67372
74 Clissold, unpublished manuscript
75 Interview with Karlo Dragutin Petranović, Nigara Falls, Canada, 17 June 1989
76 Clissold, unpublished manuscript
77 For a few of the many documents dealing with this operation, see telegrams from Leghorn to State Department, of 7 June 1947, and State Department to Leghorn, of 12 June 1947, USNA, RG 319; and telegrams of 12 and 25 June 1947, from Belgrade to State Department, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116EW/6-1147 and 740.00116EW/6-2547
78 'The Legal Position of Croatian War Criminals in Italy', 19 May 1947, enclosed with letter from Rome to State Department, of 28 May 1947, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116EW/5-2847
79 *Ibid.*
80 One account of Miloš's crimes is found in Zdenko Löwenthal (ed.), *The Crimes of the Fascist Occupants and their Collaborators against Jews in Yugoslavia*, Federation of Jewish Communities of the Federative People's Republic of Yugoslavia, Belgrade, 1957, p. 17
81 Draganović statement to the Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967
82 *Ibid.*
83 See CIC memo of 10 October 1946, Draganović file, obtained under US FOIA, p. 54; and letter from Caserta to Foreign Office, of 2 November 1946, PRO FO 371 57729
84 'Memorandum on the Ustaša Organisation in Italy', enclosure in letter from Maclean to Wallinger, of 17 October 1947, PRO FO 371 67398; and statements of Mimo Rosandić, Branko Kuštro, Ivica Gržeta, Julijo Spalj and Vladko Hranilović to the Yugoslav authorities
85 Article in *La Repubblica*, 26 September 1948, Ministry of Foreign Affairs Archives, 1948 Busta 33, fasciolo 2, Processo di Zagrabia
86 Interview with Karlo Dragutin Petranović, Niagara Falls, Canada, 17 June 1989; and with Vilim Cecelja, Maria Pline, 23 May 1989
87 Interview with Simčić, Rome, 5 May 1989 and 16 February 1990
88 Interview with a former British military intelligence officer, recorded on the condition that it would not be attributed, London, 5 May 1989
89 Interview with Simčić, Rome, 16 February 1990
90 Interview with a former British military intelligence officer, recorded on the condition that it would not be attributed, London, 5 May 1989
91 Perowne letter of 18 November 1947, and Wallinger reply of 5 December 1947, PRO FO 371 67402
92 Interviews with Simčić, Rome, 12 May 1989 and 16 February 1990
93 Interview with Simčić, Rome, 16 February 1990
94 Interviews with Simčić, Rome 12 May 1989 and 16 February 1990

95 Interview with Vilim Cecelja, Maria Pline, 23 May 1989; interviews with Simčić, Rome, 12 May 1989 and 16 February 1990; Telegram from COMGENUSFA (Rear) Salzburg, Austria from PAGBI, to Department of the Army for CSGID for DISC, of 13 December 1949, USNA, RG 319, Records of the Army Staff, Box 135; and statement by Božidar Kavran to the Yugoslav authorities

96 See Draganović letter of 5 March 1946, and also the French version of the same material, PRO FO 800 476

97 Note of 27 March 1946, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 21; and PRO WO 204 11133

98 'Memorandum on the Ustaša Organisation in Italy', enclosure in letter from Maclean to Wallinger, 17 October 1947, PRO FO 371 67398; Italian Foreign Affairs Ministry letter to US Ambassador, Rome, 7 July 1945, and Memorandum for the Allied Commission 29 July 1945, USNA, RG 331, Allied Control Commission, Executive Commissioners, 10000/109/319, Box 9; and Clissold, unpublished manuscript

99 Interview with Simčić, Rome, 16 February 1990

100 CIC Index Card, of 7 February, Draganović file, obtained under US FOIA, p. 66; and interviews with Omrčanin by the *Religious News Service*, May 1986 and John Loftus, 1985

101 'Memorandum on the Ustaša Organisation in Italy', enclosure in letter from Maclean to Wallinger, of 17 October 1947, PRO FO 371 67398

102 CIC memo of 10 October 1946, Draganović file, obtained under US FOIA, p. 54. On Father Mandić see Alexander, *The Triple Myth*, p. 94; and Paris, *Genocide in Satellite Croatia*, p. 260

6 The Golden Priest

1 Detailed accounts of the trial can be found in US State Department telegrams and memos, 16 July 1948 from Zagreb to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 860H.00/7-1648, 19 July 1948, from Zagreb to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 860H.00/7-1948, 2 August 1948, from Belgrade to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 860H.00/8-248, 30 July and 4 August 1948, from Zagreb to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 860H.00/8-448, 30 September 1948, from Zagreb to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 860H.00/9-3048; and British Foreign Office reports and memo of 10 September 1948, PRO FO 371 72563E

2 'Annual Report for 1945', from the British Legation to the Holy See, to the Foreign Office, of 22 February 1946, PRO FO 371 60803

3 Report of trial in the Communist newspaper, *Borba*, as recounted in US State Department telegram of 2 August 1948, from Belgrade to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 860H.00/8-248; and letters from British Embassy, Belgrade, to Foreign Office, 2 January and 20 March 1946, PRO FO 371 59399 and 59403

4 See accounts of the evidence of Adam Miličević, Mimo Rosandić

and Božidar Petračić, in US State Department memo of 30 July, enclosed in despach of 4 August 1948, from Zagreb to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 860H.00/8-448

5 See attachments 2 and 6 to US State Department memo of 30 July, enclosed in despatch of 4 August 1948, from Zagreb to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 860H.00/8-448

6 British Foreign Office reports and memo of 10 September 1948, PRO FO 371 72563E

7 Gowen memo of 29 August 1947, Pavelić CIC file, released under US FOIA, pp. 2–6

8 Statement of Mimo Rosandić to the Yugoslav authorities; and Clissold, unpublished manuscript

9 Gowen memo of 29 August 1947, Pavelić CIC file, released under US FOIA, pp. 2–6

10 Statement by Draganović to Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967

11 *Ibid.*

12 Statement by Draganović to Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967. For some details of Pečnikar's role in the Križari network, see 'Memorandum on the Ustaša Organisation in Italy', enclosure in letter from Maclean to Wallinger, of 17 October 1947, PRO FO 371 67398; and memoranda on the Križari intelligence organisation, TISSO, especially the Browning memo of 11 June 1947, Ustashi CIC file, released under US FOIA, pp. 89–113

13 Interviews with Simčić, Rome, 12 May 1989 and 16 February 1990

14 Draganović statement to the Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967

15 *Ibid.*

16 As quoted in Alexander, *Church and State in Yugoslavia since 1945*, p. 28, and *The Triple Myth*, p. 76; and Draganović statement to the Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967

17 Draganović statement to the Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967; and Simčić interview, Rome, 16 February 1990

18 A comprehensive account of this is found in the US Military Intelligence Service in Austria 'Special Investigation and Interrogation' report of 9 April 1946, dealing with 'The Croatian National Independence Movement', CIC file on the Ustashi, released under US FOIA, pp. 10–30

19 Interview with a former British military intelligence officer, recorded on the condition that it would not be attributed, London, 5 May 1989

20 Radell report of 4 April 1950, CIC file on the Ustashi, released under US FOIA, pp. 1–5

21 Interrogation of Ljubo Miloš, as reported in Attachment number 6 to US State Department report of 4 August 1948, from Zagreb to Washington, USNA, RG 59, 860H.00/8-448; Harrington CIC memo of 9 March 1948, 'Activity of Bishops Rožman and Šarić', released under US FOIA

22 Italian Ministry of Foreign Affairs report of 28 June 1945, Ministry of Foreign Affairs Archives, 1946 Busta 1, fasciolo 3, Esponenti del cessato regime ustascia in Italia

23 Italian Ministry of Foreign Affairs report of 23 July 1945, Ministry of Foreign Affairs Archives, 1946 Busta 1, fasciolo 3, Esponenti del cessato regime ustascia in Italia; and Gowen memo of 29 August 1947, Pavelić CIC file, released under US FOIA, pp. 2–6
24 Murdoch report of 25 September 1947, Križari CIC file, released under US FOIA, p. 6
25 Madewski report of 12 September 1946, CIC file on the Križari, released under US FOIA, pp. 38–9
26 Radoulovitch report of 23 July 1947, Ustashi CIC file, released under US FOIA, pp. 12–13
27 Radell reports of 18 November 1949, and 4 April 1950, CIC files on the Ustashi, released under US FOIA, p. 2 and pp. 1–5
28 Radoulovitch report of 23 July 1947, CIC Ustashi file released under US FOIA, pp. 12–13
29 Undated Italian Secret Service report, attached to Ministry of Foreign Affairs memo of 20 August 1944, Ministry of Foreign Affairs Archives, 'Affari politici (Jugoslavia), 1948 Busta 33 fasciolo 3, Attivita' di jugoslavi contrari di Tito in Italia
30 Report on 'Yugoslav personalities in Rome', of 20 July 1945, USNA, RG 226, Records of the Office of Strategic Services, 139960
31 Italian Secret Service report of 18 April 1946, Ministry of Foreign Affairs Archives, 1946 Busta 1, fasciolo 1, Rapporti politici
32 See, for example, Gettigan report of 24 May 1947, CIC Križari file, released under US FOIA, pp. 23–4
33 Interrogation report of Franc Južina, Gettigan report of 15 June 1947, CIC Križari file, released under US FOIA, pp. 14–18
34 Interview with Yugoslavian historian, Franček Saje, 1 April 1979
35 For a contemporary report of the Homeguard's atrocities see American Military Intelligence Division report of 19 February 1944, USNA, RG 226, Records of the Office of Strategic Services, 63632
36 Note from Yugoslav Ambassador in London, to British Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs, of 15 November 1945, PRO FO 371 48893
37 Letter from London to UK Embassy, Washington, of 28 November 1945, PRO FO 371 48893
38 Report of 8 February 1945, USNA, RG 226, Records of the Office of Strategic Services, 113566
39 Letter from Vatican Secretariat of State to Franklin Gowen at the Vatican, of 19 February 1946, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 21; handwritten note of 16 July 1945, PRO FO 371 48890; and telegram from the British Legation to the Holy See, to the Foreign Office, of 23 February 1946, PRO FO 371 59401
40 Telegram from Carmel Offie at Caserta, to Tittman at the Vatican, of 22 July 1945, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 29; and statement by Draganović to Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967
41 Note by John Colville, of 27 February 1946, PRO FO 371 59401; and letter from Washington to Foreign Office, of 25 January 1946, PRO FO 371 59400

42 Handwritten note on the cover of memo to the Secretary of State, of 29 December 1945, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116 EW/12-2945; and telegram from Washington to Caserta, of 21 February 1946, USNA, RG 59, 740.00116 CONTROL/2-2146

43 Memo by Krek, attached to letter from Stokes to the Foreign Office, 5 August 1947, PRO FO 371 67388

44 Letter from Somerlocks to Foreign Office, 8 November 1947, PRO FO 371 67402

45 *Ibid.*

46 *Ibid.*

47 Handwritten note by Christopher Warner, of 11 December 1947, PRO FO 371 67406

48 Letter from the British Legation, Vienna, to the Foreign Office, 23 January 1948; and handwritten note on its cover, PRO FO 371 72559

49 Draganović statement to Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967; and article in *La Repubblica*, 24 September 1948, Ministry of Foreign Affairs Archives, 1948 Busta 33, fasciolo 2, Processo di Zagrabia

50 Harrington CIC memo of 9 March 1948, 'Activity of Bishops Rožman and Šarić', released under US FOIA

51 Harrington CIC memo of 9 March 1948, 'Activity of Bishops Rožman and Šarić', released under US FOIA; Airgram from Berne to State Department, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 21; letter from Washington to Foreign Office, 1 July 1948, PRO FO 371 72563C; and Magjerec, *Hrvatski Zavod Sv. Jeronima u Rimu*, p. 188

52 Thomas memo of 17 May 1947, Križari CIC file, released under US FOIA, pp. 29–30

53 *Ibid.*

54 Gettigan memo of 1 July 1947, Križari CIC file, released under US FOIA, pp. 8–10

55 *Ibid.*

56 Interview with a former British military intelligence officer, recorded on the condition that it would not be attributed, London, 5 May 1989

57 Alexander, *The Triple Myth*, pp. 40–5; and interview with a former British military intelligence officer, recorded on the condition that it would not be attributed, London, 5 May 1989

58 Interview with a former British military intelligence officer, recorded on the condition that it would not be attributed, London, 5 May 1989

59 Report of 25 April 1947, Križari CIC file, released under US FOIA, pp. 34–5

60 *Ibid.*

61 British Foreign Office reports and memo of 10 September 1948, PRO FO 371 72563E

62 For details of Rover's wartime career, see Aarons, *Sanctuary! Nazi Fugitives in Australia*, pp. 219–20

63 Most of the details of Rover's activities in the Križari are taken from the official Yugoslav interrogation reports of Božidar Kavran and related documents, held at the High Court in Zagreb. See also, Aarons, *Sanctuary!*, pp. 220–4 for further details

64 Milovanovich *et al.* report of 11 December 1947, Ustashi CIC file, released under US FOIA, pp. 32–3

65 Radell report of 18 November 1949, CIC file on the Ustashi, released under US FOIA, p. 2. A further US intelligence account of continuing military operations is contained in a 12 January 1951 Biddle report, Ustashi CIC file, released under US FOIA, pp. 81–2. Reports of trials mentioning Draganović and the Križari can be found in a 25 February 1960 State Department Intelligence Report, USNA, RG 59; and translation of *Borba* article of 19 March 1960, Draganović CIC file, released under US FOIA, pp. 37–43

66 Golden report of 9 February 1948, Ustashi CIC file, released under US FOIA, p. 97; and report of 17 October 1947, USNA, RG 319, Investigative Records Repository, Pavelić dossier, XE 001109

7 The Vatican's Black Orchestra

1 *Oslobodjenje*, 16 November 1967; and Sarajevo's *Svijet*, series of articles on Draganović, by Siniša Ivanović and Kršto Leković, published weekly from 13 June to 19 September 1986

2 *Vjesnik*, 12 November 1967

3 *Oslobodjenje*, 16 November 1967

4 Interview with Milan Simčić, Rome, 2 February 1990

5 *Ibid.*

6 Sarajevo's *Svijet*, series of articles on Draganović, by Siniša Ivanović and Kršto Leković, published weekly from 13 June to 19 September 1986

7 *Ibid.*

8 *Ibid.*

9 Interview with a former British intelligence officer, given on the understanding that it would not be attributed, London, 5 May 1989

10 Interview with Milan Simčić, Rome, 2 February 1990

11 Ibid.; some details on Varoš can be found in Magjerec, *Hrvatski Zavod Sv. Jeronima u Rimu*, pp. 174, 211

12 Sarajevo's *Svijet*, series of articles on Draganović, by Siniša Ivanović and Kršto Leković, published weekly from 13 June to 19 September 1986

13 Interview with Milan Simčić, Rome, 2 February 1990

14 Interview with a former British intelligence officer, given on the understanding that it would not be attributed, London, 5 May 1989

15 Interview with Milan Simčić, Rome, 2 February 1990

16 *Oslobodjenje*, 16 November 1967

17 *Vjesnik*, 12 and 21 November 1967

18 *Ibid.*, 21 November 1967

19 Alexander, *Church and State in Yugoslavia since 1945*, footnote, pp. 238–9

20 Interview with Milan Simčić, Rome, 2 February 1990

21 Accounts of these trials can be found in State Department 'Intelligence Report', number 8230, of 25 February 1960, USNA, RG

59; Yugoslav press digest, reporting *Politika*, 17, 18 and 19 March 1960, Draganović CIC file, declassified under US FOIA, pp. 37–43; and Alexander, *Church and State in Yugoslavia since 1945*, pp. 239–40

22 Alexander, *Church and State in Yugoslavia since 1945*, p. 239

23 Interview with Vilim Cecelja, Maria Pline, 23 May 1989

24 Sarajevo's *Svijet*, series of articles on Draganović, by Siniša Ivanović and Kršto Leković, published weekly from 13 June to 19 September 1986

25 A detailed account of these developments is found in Alexander, *Church and State in Yugoslavia since 1945*, pp. 226–48

26 *Vjesnik*, 12 November 1967

27 Sarajevo's *Svijet*, series of aricles on Draganović, by Siniša Ivanović and Kršto Leković, published weekly from 13 June to 19 September 1986

28 Draganović statement to Yugoslav authorities, Sarajevo, 26 September 1967

29 Sarajevo's Svijet series of articles on Draganović, by Siniša Ivanović and Kršto Leković, published weekly from 13 June to 19 September 1986

30 Draganović statement to Yugoslav authorities, Sarajevo, 26 September 1967

31 Sarajevo's *Svijet*, series of articles on Draganović, by Siniša Ivanović and Kršto Leković, published weekly from 13 June to 19 September 1986

32 Richard Deacon, *A History of British Secret Service*, Granada, London, 1969, p. 297 (Czarist *agent provocateur* tactics copied by Bolsheviks); David Dallin, *Soviet Espionage*, Yale University. Press, New Haven, 1956, pp. 1–9; David Wise and Thomas B. Ross, *The Espionage Establishment*, Bantam, London/New York, 1968, pp. 35–64; John Barron, *KGB*, Bantam, London/New York, 1979, pp. 457–65 (on origins of Soviet intelligence services). For a comparison of Czarist and Communist organs see Ronald Hingley, *The Russian Secret Police: Muscovite Imperial Russian and Soviet Political Security Operations 1556–1970*, Simon & Schuster, New York, 1970

33 Deacon, *A History of British Secret Service*, pp. 297–304

34 Thomas Powers, *The Man Who Kept the Secrets: Richard Helms and the CIA*, Pocket Books, New York, 1981, pp. 48–52

35 CIC Agent Report, Refugee Relief Act, 'Turkul, Anton', dated 22 August 1956, found in USNA, RG 319, Box 303, Investigative Records Repository, CIC File XE 001758, TURKUL, Anton, hereinafter cited as 'T/1249'. Because of the fragility of the Turkul files in the US National Archives, the three voluminous dossiers in which this document appears were not yet available for photocopying, and cites are given to our tape recorder serial numbers in order to provide a relative guide to the sequence in which the Turkul documents appear. For example, 'Military Entry Permit, 17 July 1946, T/001,' indicates that this document can be found among the

earlier 1946 documents while the Refugee Relief Act Report of 22 August 1956, T/1249, can be found among the later entries in the file. Since the three volumes of Turkul dossiers appear to be arranged in reverse chronological order, researchers are cautioned to begin with what is labeled as Box III, and proceed through Box II to Box I in order to preserve the chronological sequence of our tape-recorded index

36 In addition to the Turkul files in the US National Archives, the authors received additional pages which were previously withheld from declassification. Undated CIC index card 'Turkul, Anton; Born: Bessarabia 2/12/1892' found on p. 3 of the INSCOM, USAIRR dossier for 'Anton Turkel', released under US FOIA 16 April 1990. The very next card on the same page lists Turkul's birthdate as '11 Dec 92 – Odessa, Russia'. Nineteenth-century Russian birthdates are often misleading because of the subsequent change of calendar systems. It is also possible that Turkul himself gave different birthdates in order to hinder Western background checks.

37 CIC Agent Report, Refugee Relief Act, dated 22 August 1956, p. 1, T/1249

38 Special Interrogation Report on Kauder, aka Klatt, MISC-USFET Counter Intelligence, undated, circa 1947, T/363, continuing at T/1000-60

39 Anthony Cave Brown, *'C': The Secret Life of Sir Stewart Menzies, Spymaster to Winston Churchill*, Macmillan, New York, 1987, pp. 143–4. Turkul's CIC file equates General Wrangel's 'Russian Officers Committee' with 'ROWS'. Depending on the transliteration method used ROWS stands for 'Ruski Obtshe Wojennyi Sojuz' or 'Ruski Obtshe Vojenski Soiuz' (Russian Common Military Union). General Kutepov's 'Combat Organization' of front line veterans is described in Turkul's CIC file as the 'Verbander Frontksemper' or the 'Verband der Frontkaempfer' (Union of Front Line Fighters). CIC Agent Report, Refugee Relief Act, dated 22 August 1956, p. 1, T/1249; MISC USFET CI Special Interrogation Report on Kauder, aka Klatt, undated series of reports, circa 1947, T/369

40 Cave Brown, *'C': The Secret Life of Sir Stewart Menzies*, pp. 142–3; Top Secret Interrogation of Claudius Voss, alias Alexandrov, 20 March 1947, T/1167-78

41 Top Secret Interrogation of Claudius Voss, alias Alexandrov, 20 March 1947 (unsourced, apparently prepared by SCI-A), T/1178

42 CIC Index Card, undated, T/039; Special Interrogation Report on Kauder, Richard, aka Klatt, MISC-USFET CI, undated, T/369-70

43 Top Secret Interrogation of Claudius Voss, alias Alexandrov, 20 March 1947, T/1167-84 (unsourced, apparently prepared by SCI-A)

44 Professor Ryle and Mr Johnson, 'The Turkul Organization and the MAX/Moritz Messages', hereinafter cited as the 'Ryle-Johnson Report', undated, T/178-88, 218

45 Ryle-Johnson Report, undated, T/218-29; Interrogation of Claudius Alexandrovich Voss, 30 December 1947, T/1113–23

46 Interrogation of Claudius Alexandrovich Voss, 30 December 1947, T/1110-36

47 Agent Report, Refugee Relief Act, dated 22 August 1956, p. 2, T/1249

48 For example, the Communists had clearly penetrated ROWS even before NTS was formed. Ryle-Johnson Report, undated, at T/164-94 and T/200-28; note also the Communist agent Voss's admission that he was an 'active participant' in the founding of NTS which then denounced its parent group, ROWS, as a 'Bolshevist Front Organization'. Interrogation of Claudius Alexandrovich Voss, 30 December 1947, T/1110-24

49 Jonathan Bloch and Patrick Fitzgerald, *British Intelligence and Covert Action*, Brandon, Dublin, 1983, p. 33

50 External Research Paper, Series 3, No. 76, *NTS – The Russian Solidarist Movement*, Office of Intelligence and Research, US State Department, 10 December 1951, released under US FOIA

51 Cave Brown, *'C': The Secret Life of Sir Stewart Menzies*, p. 143; for Russian *émigré* politics in the pre-World War II period see Geoffrey Bailey, *The Conspirators*, Harper, New York, 1960

52 CIC Agent Report, Refugee Relief Act, dated 22 August 1956, with biographical appendix, T/1249

53 CIC Report, Rome Detachment, 23 June 1947, Subject Intermarium, released under US FOIA

54 *Ibid.*

55 Ryle-Johnson Report, T/222–8, surmising that Voss arranged for Turkul to come to Paris and take over the anti-Communist leadership 'without the mud of ROWS'.

56 The best work on such ethnographic distinctions is Nicholas Vakar, *Belorussia: The Making of a Nation*, Harvard University Press, Harvard, Cambridge, 1956

57 CIC Consolidated Orientation and Guidance Report, 1948, Par. 184g, 189, cited in Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, Ch. 4, n. 11

58 The details of Turkul's liaisons wih other *émigré* factions are set forth throughout his voluminous CIC dossier such as the Ryle-Johnson Report's discussion of the Ljotić and Mihailović contacts at T/145–8. However, we wish to acknowledge the assistance of a former CIC officer who helped place these convoluted issues in perspective. Confidential Interviews, 1988–90. For background on the Abramtchik Faction, see Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, pp. 37–44

59 Cave Brown, *'C': The Secret Life of Sir Stewart Menzies*, pp. 142–3, quoting CIA estimate; see also CIC File 'Operation Circle' on the origins of Intermarium, and Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, pp. 49, on French involvement with Prometheus

60 Turkul's CIC Index Cards contain an original of a German card file showing Turkul's Paris address in 1927, T/046

61 Anthony Cave Brown, *Bodyguard of Lies*, Star, London, 1977, pp. 145–6

62 *Ibid.*, p. 140

63 William Stevenson, *Intrepid's Last Case*, Villard, New York, 1983, p. 281
64 Compare Cave Brown's and Stevenson's accounts on this point
65 John Costello, *Mask of Treachery*, Morrow, New York, 1988, pp. 351, 384
66 Undated summary of previous CIC reports, T1/1017
67 Ryle-Johnson Report, undated, T1/164-78
68 Ladislas Farago, *Burn After Reading*, Walker & Co., New York, 1961, pp. 116–17
69 Farago, *Burn After Reading*, pp. 114–16
70 CIC Agent Report, Refugee Relief Act, dated 22 August 1956, T/1249
71 Walter Schellenberg, *The Labyrinth*, Harper, New York, 1956, p. 237
72 *Ibid.*, pp. 237–9
73 Schellenberg Interrogation by British Intelligence, circa 1945, declassified copy provided courtesy John Taylor, Modern Military Branch, USNA. Schellenberg's memoirs were published in 1956 but Turkul's NTS continued to work for British Intelligence until the 1960s. Bloch and Fitzgerald, *British Intelligence and Covert Action*, p. 33
74 Cave Brown, *Bodyguard of Lies*, p. 263
75 MISC USFET Interrogation, circa 1946, Turkul, Anton, T/1234
76 Schellenberg, *The Labyrinth*, p. 160
77 Compare Farago, *Burn After Reading*, p. 117 (identifying Sorge as Klatt's Japanese contact) with CIC Summary of Previous Reports, undated (Turkul suspected Soviet agent working for the Japanese), T/1017
78 Schellenberg, *The Labyrinth*, p. 263
79 Cave Brown, *Bodyguard of Lies*, p. 175
80 Cave Brown, *'C': The Secret Life of Sir Stewart Menzies*, pp. 211–12
81 Cave Brown, *Bodyguard of Lies*, p. 178
82 Special Interrogation Report on Kauder, aka Klatt, undated, circa 1946, MISC-USFET Counter Intelligence, T/363–80 (Turkul moved to Rome in 1939)
83 Cave Brown, *Bodyguard of Lies*, p. 181
84 *Ibid.*, p. 182
85 It has been suggested that Stalin himself wished to keep Hitler alive during 1939–41 in the vain hope that his Western opponents might destroy themselves in a bloody repetition of World War I. Stalin's pre-war support of Hitler might also explain the ruthless post-war persecution of those Soviet Red Orchestra agents who had warned Stalin of Hitler's betrayal. See for example, Leopold Trepper, *The Great Game*, McGraw-Hill, New York, 1977, p. 378
86 Cave Brown, *Bodyguard of Lies*, p. 148; Schellenberg, *The Labyrinth*, p. 277
87 Cave Brown, *Bodyguard of Lies*, pp. 184–5
88 *Ibid.*, p. 184
89 Chadwick, *Britain and the Vatican during the Second World War*, p. 87
90 Schellenberg, *The Labyrinth*, pp. 68–80

91 Cave Brown, *Bodyguard of Lies*, p. 192
92 *Ibid.*, pp. 192–4
93 Schellenberg, *The Labyrinth*, pp. 349–51; Cave Brown, *Bodyguard of Lies*, pp. 195–8
94 Cave Brown, *Bodyguard of Lies*, p. 206
95 CIC Agent Report, Refugee Relief Act, dated 22 August 1956, p. 1, T/1249
96 Special Interrogation Report on Kauder, aka Klatt, MISC-USFET Counter Intelligence, undated, T/363
97 This is the famous 'Russicum' recently depicted in the espionage film *The Third Solution*. The origins of the missionary work into Russia are described in Chapter One
98 Schellenberg, *The Labyrinth*, pp. 125–30
99 *Ibid.*, pp. 134–5
100 Chadwick, *Britain and the Vatican during the Second World War*, pp. 88–9
101 Cave Brown, *'C': The Secret Life of Sir Stewart Menzies*, pp. 284–5
102 Farago, *Burn After Reading*, p. 117
103 Special Interrogation Report on Kauder, aka Klatt, MISC-USFET Counter Intelligence, undated, T/1005
104 Schellenberg, *The Labyrinth*, pp. 158, 193, 355, 359
105 *Ibid.*, pp. 235, 241
106 *Ibid.*, pp. 239–44
107 Edwin Layton, Roger Pineau and John Costello, *And I was There*, Quill, New York, 1985, p. 178
108 'towers of the Kremlin . . .' Cave Brown, *Bodyguard of Lies*, p. 229. The Vatican–Black Orchestra connection indeed cost Hitler dearly. Shortly before D Day, he transferred his three best divisions from Normandy to the Balkans to put down a phantom invasion. Cave Brown, *Bodyguard of Lies*, pp. 443–54
109 CIC IRS, 'Die Schwarze Kapelle', 24 April 1952, declassified under US FOIA
110 Heinz Höhne and Hermann Zolling, *The General was a Spy*, Bantam, New York, 1972, p. 23 (Baun's Walli I network was incorporated directly into Gehlen's FHO)
111 *Ibid.*, p. 24
112 *Ibid.*, pp. 22–5
113 The Ryle-Johnson Report concluded that there was 'no doubt' that the network acted as a Soviet Trojan horse, T/105
114 Ryle-Johnson Report citing Summary of Wahl Interrogation, T/260–3
115 Schellenberg, *The Labyrinth*, p. 363
116 CIC Agent Report, Refugee Relief Act, dated 22 August 1956, pp. 1–2, T/1249
117 Ryle-Johnson Report, T/101–38
118 Schellenberg, *The Labyrinth*, pp. 161–4, 239–40, 253–6, 258
119 There are several good sources on the mystery of the Red Orchestra, the best of which is Heinz Höhne's *Codeword: 'Direktor'*, Secker &

Warburg, London, 1971. The US intelligence files are only beginning to be declassified but they reveal a complete ignorance of how the Eastern European GRU networks passed information. USAIRR CIC File, Red Orchestra, declassified under FOIA, January 1990. However there are intriguing references to a possible Vatican connection in the earlier works, notably in Alexander Foote's recollection that the Lucy ring operated under a Catholic publishing house and seemed to receive detailed German plans via diplomatic pouch. A. Foote, *Story of a Russian Spy*, formerly *Handbook for Spies*, Doubleday, New York, 1949. See also Leopold Trepper, *The Great Game*, McGraw-Hill, New York, 1977 for an intriguing account of yet another deception scheme, the 'Brown Orchestra' in which the Gestapo attempted to feed disinformation to the Soviets. With Turkul's ability to check the actual German troop dispositions, it is not surprising that the GRU failed to be taken in

120 The Ryle-Johnson Report is based upon voluminous interrogations of the members of the MAX network and includes a diagram of their wireless net. T/229–96. The only missing element in the communication system was the secret Vatican burst transmitter which was not revealed until 1956. Schellenberg, *The Labyrinth*, p. 363

121 Höhne and Zolling, *The General was a Spy*, p. 22. The best account of the Third Reich's *Untermensch* recruitment strategy was written by the fugitive war criminal SS Obersturmbannführer Friedrich Buchardt, which manuscript became the basis for Alexander Dallin's seminal work, *German Rule in Russia*, St Martin's Press, New York, 1957

122 Ryle-Johnson Report (American assessment), T/248–58

8 The Catholic Army of the Ukraine

1 Franz von Papen, *Memoirs*, Deutsch, London, 1952, p. 278, cited in Dallin, *German Rule in Russia*, p. 475, n.2

2 English translation quoted by Sereny, *Into That Darkness*, pp. 279–80

3 The best overview of Uniate history is probably the September 1942 report to the Foreign Office, by Thomas M. Parker, Librarian of Pusey House, Oxford, PRO FO 371/33434, *The Uniat Roman Catholic Churches*

4 English translation quoted by Sereny, *Into That Darkness*, pp. 279–80

5 *Ibid.*

6 *Ibid.*

7 The OUN version of these events is presented in John Armstrong's *Ukrainian Nationalism 1939–45*, Columbia University Press, New York, 1955. For a somewhat less biased account, see Dallin, *German Rule in Russia*, Chs VI, XXII, XXVIII

8 Simon Wiesenthal, *The Murderers Among Us: The Wiesenthal Memoirs*, McGraw-Hill, New York, 1967, p. 28

9 SS Obersturmbannführer Friedrich Buchardt, Unpublished Memoirs, *Die Behandlung des russischen Problems während der Zeit des national-sozialistischen Regimes in Deutschland*, Top Secret Sensitive Documents – Confidential Informant's Index, Office of the Army Chief of Staff for Intelligence, Vault 2, USNA, Suitland, Md.; Simpson, *Blowback*, pp. 164–5; Dallin, *German Rule in Russia*, Chs VI, XXII, XXVIII

10 English translation quoted by Sereny, *Into That Darkness*, pp. 279–80

11 *Ibid.*

12 September 1942 report to the Foreign Office, by Thomas M. Parker, Librarian of Pusey House, Oxford, PRO FO 371/33434, *The Uniat Roman Catholic Churches*

13 *Ibid.*

14 Lebed's and Grynioch's secret work for the SS was known only to a handful of insiders. SS Obersturmbannführer Friedrich Buchardt, Unpublished Memoirs, *Die Behandlung des russischen Problems während der Zeit des national-sozialistischen Regimes in Deutschland*, Top Secret Sensitive Documents – Confidential Informant's Index, Office of the Army Chief of Staff for Intelligence, Vault 2, USNA, Suitland, Md.; Dallin, *German Rule in Russia*, p. xix

15 Dallin, *German Rule in Russia*, p. 475, n.2

16 War Department, Special Report IDS 52, 7 October 1942, USNA, RG 226, Box 179, 23570, p. 3

17 *Ibid.*, p. 3 (Summary of Previous Reports)

18 *Ibid.*, p. 1

19 *Ibid.*

20 September 1942 report to the Foreign Office, by Thomas M. Parker, Librarian of Pusey House, Oxford, PRO, FO 371/33434, *The Uniat Roman Catholic Churches*, pp. 19–20, n.1

21 War Department, Special Report IDS 52, 7 October 1942, USNA, RG 226, Box 179, 23570, p. 1

22 *Ibid.*, p. 2

23 *Ibid.*

24 Dallin, *Russia Under German Rule*, p. 474, n.1

25 'Metropolitan Anastasia, Lodgensky and Turkul were the center of anticommunism in the event of a future war with Soviet Russia'. Klatt Interrogation Continued, undated report, T/1022-4

26 MI5 'Kel' report submited to 7707 CIC, 6 May 1947, T/1154. According to the British, Father Seraphim Ivanovich Rodianov was the former Chairman of the Karlowac exarchy and may have travelled to Moscow after the war

27 Dallin, *Russia Under German Rule*, p. 482, n.3

28 Interrogation of Father George Leonidov Romanov, 19-20 December 1946, T1/1053 and T/1069; Klatt Interrogation Continued, undated, T/1023-4; Interrogation of Claudius Alexandrovich Voss, 30 December 1947, T/1133-9

29 Dallin, *Russia Under German Rule*, p. 485, n.1

30 *Ibid.*, n.2

31 War Department, Special Report IDS 52, 7 October 1942, USNA, RG 226, Box 179, 23570, p. 1
32 War Department, Special Report IDS 66, 27 October 1942, USNA, RG 226, Box 179, p. 1
33 Sereny, *Into That Darkness*, pp. 141–2, 283–4, 298–9
34 War Department, Special Report IDS 66, 27 October 1942, USNA, RG 226, Box 179, p. 1
35 *Ibid.*; War Department, Special Report IDS 52, USNA, RG 226, Box 154, 22067, p. 1
36 Raul Hilberg, *The Destruction of European Jewry*, Quadrangle Books, New York, 1961, pp. 329–30; SS Obersturmbannführer Friedrich Buchardt, Unpublished Memoirs, *Die Behandlung des russischen Problems während der Zeit des national-sozialistischen Regimes in Deutschland*, Top Secret Sensitive Documents – Confidential Informant's Index, Office of the Army Chief of Staff for Intelligence, Vault 2, USNA, Suitland, Md.; Simpson, *Blowback*, p. 164; Dallin, *German Rule in Russia*, Chs VI, XXII, XXVIII
37 Wiesenthal, *The Murderers Among Us*, p. 275; Scott and Jon Lee Anderson, *Inside the League*, Dodd, Mead, New York, 1986, p. 25
38 See SS Obersturmbannführer Friedrich Buchardt, Unpublished Memoirs, *Die Behandlung des russischen Problems während der Zeit des national-sozialistischen Regimes in Deutschland*, Top Secret Sensitive Documents – Confidential Informant's Index, Office of the Army Chief of Staff for Intelligence, Vault 2, USNA, Suitland, Md.; Simpson, *Blowback*, p. 164; Dallin, *German Rule in Russia*, Chs VI, XXII, XXVIII
39 Dallin, *German Rule in Russia*, Chs VI, XXII, XXVIII
40 Andre Visson, 'Federation of Catholic Slavs Seen As Vatican's Post-War Goal', *New York Herald Tribune*, 11 February 1945, cited in War Department Special Report IDS 142, USNA, RG 226, Box 0277, 30348, pp. 1–2
41 September 1942 report to the Foreign Office, by Thomas M. Parker, Librarian of Pusey House, Oxford, PRO FO 371/33434, *The Uniat Roman Catholic Churches*, p. 19, para. 90
42 Visson, 'Federation of Catholic Slavs Seen As Vatican's Post-War Goal', *New York Herald Tribune*, 11 February 1945 cited in War Department Special Report IDS 142, USNA, RG 226, Box 0277, 30348, pp. 1–2
43 Dallin, *Russia Under German Rule*, pp. 490–1
44 Interrogation of Father George Leonidov Romonov, 19–20 December 1946, T/1053-69
45 September 1942 report to the Foreign Office, by Thomas M. Parker, Librarian of Pusey House, Oxford, PRO FO 371/33434, *The Uniat Roman Catholic Churches*, p. 20
46 *Ibid.*
47 *Ibid.*
48 Ryle-Johnson Report, T/164-72

49 Schellenberg, *The Labyrinth*, p. 263
50 Charles Whiting, *Gehlen's Master Spy*, Ballantine, New York, 1972, p. 41
51 Farago, *Burn After Reading*, p. 118
52 *Ibid.*
53 For a reasonably accurate background history, see Special Interrogation Report on Kauder aka Klatt, undated, MISC-USFET Counter Intelligence, T/356-390, continued at T/1000-07. A somewhat conflicting version can be found in David Kahn, *Hitler's Spies*, Arrow, London, 1980, pp. 298–303. Kahn's work is intriguing as it connects 'Fritz Kauders' and the MAX network to an American consul in Zagreb as well as to a 'Miss Beloševic of the embassy of the newly founded Croatian state'. This early link to the Ustashi may well have been the forerunner of Soviet penetration of the post-war Ratlines. For the handling of Jewish *Mischlinge*, see Abrams, *Special Treatment*, pp. 148–9
54 CIC Agent Report, Refugee Relief Act, dated 22 August 1956, T/1249, p. 2
55 Höhne and Zolling, *The General Was a Spy*, pp. 23–4
56 Stevenson, *Intrepid's Last Case*, p. 281
57 CIC Agent Report, Refugee Relief Act, dated 22 August 1956, T/1249, pp. 2–3
58 Compare the Ryle-Johnson Report at T/131-45 with Interrogation of Richard Klatt, undated, p. 13, T/1040-2
59 Ryle-Johnson Report, T/133-45
60 Chapman Pincher, *Too Secret Too Long*, St Martin's Press, New York, 1984, p. 441
61 Dallin, *Russia Under German Rule*, p. 256
62 Anderson, *Inside the League*, p. 25; SS Obersturmbannführer Friedrich Buchardt, Unpublished Memoirs, *Die Behandlung des russischen Problems während der Zeit des national-sozialistischen Regimes in Deutschland*, Top Secret Sensitive Documents – Confidential Informant's Index, Office of the Army Chief of Staff for Intelligence, Vault 2, USNA, Suitland, Md.; Simpson, *Blowback*, p. 164; Dallin, *German Rule in Russia*, Chs VI, XXII, XXVIII
63 *Ibid.*; *Ibid.*; *Ibid.*
64 Peter Potichny, *et al.*, *Political Thought of the Ukrainian Underground*, University of Toronto Press, Toronto, 1986, pp. 224–5, n.34
65 Interrogation of Claudius Alexandrovich Voss, 30 December 1947, T/1110-1125
66 Dallin, *German Rule in Russia*, Chs VI, XXII, XXVIII, especially pp. 620–53
67 *Ibid.*
68 Memorandum, Ukrainian 'Divisia Halychyna', (Ukrainian POW in Great Britain), undated, PRO FO 371/71636, p. 3
69 Dallin, *Russia Under German Rule*, p. 525, n.4
70 Ryle-Johnson Report, T/340-5

9 Diplomacy and Deceit

1 Hilberg, *The Destruction of European Jewry*, pp. 329–30; SS Obersturmbannführer Friedrich Buchardt, Unpublished Memoirs, *Die Behandlung des russischen Problems während der Zeit des nationalsozialistischen Regimes in Deutschland*, Top Secret Sensitive Documents – Confidential Informant's Index, Office of the Army Chief of Staff for Intelligence, Vault 2, USNA, Suitland, Md.; Simpson, *Blowback*, p. 164; Dallin, *German Rule in Russia*, Chs VI, XXII, XXVIII

2 Memorandum, Ukrainian 'Divisia Halychyna' (Ukrainian POW in Great Britain), PRO FO371/71636, p. 3

3 Refugee Screening Commission. Report on Ukrainians in SEP Camp No. 374 Italy, 21 February 1947, PRO FO 371/66605, p. 2; Memorandum, Ukrainian 'Divisia Halychyna', (Ukrainian POW in Great Britain), PRO FO 371/71636, p. 3

4 Simpson, *Blowback*, p. 180n

5 Airgram, Confidential Files, Secretary of State, 6 July 1945 USNA, RG 59, Box 291

6 Apparently, the Foreign Office was the only Allied institution not to recognise the incriminating character of this mark. See RAE Minute to N7588, 6 July 1948, PRO FO 371/71663

7 Letter, 3 July 1948, enclosure to N7588, 6 July 1948, PRO FO 371/71663

8 Note Verbale, 27 August 1945, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 8/800

9 *Ibid.*

10 *Ibid.*

11 'these men are really having the best of both worlds'. Report, Refugee Screening Commission, PRO, FO 371/66605, p. 6

12 Letter No. 1423, Bishop's Chancery Office, 25 August 1945, USNA, RG 59, Box 4112, p. 1

13 The best history of the Allied deportations is Nikolai Tolstoy, *The Secret Betrayal*, Charles Scribner, New York, 1978. For a discussion of the Babi Yar massacre, see Hilberg, *The Destruction of European Jewry*, pp. 329–30

14 Letter of 12 October 1945, USNA RG 59, 800.4016 DP/9-145

15 Tolstoy, *The Secret Betrayal*

16 Enclosure No. 3 to State Department Decimal File 840.48 REFUGEES/12-145 (0358), USNA, RG 59

17 Tolstoy, *The Secret Betrayal*

18 Vatican Correspondence of 19 December 1945, USNA, RG 59, 800.4016DP/12-2045

19 *Ibid.*

20 Letter, 5 March 1946, PRO FO 945/575

21 Vatican Correspondence, 30 March 1945, USNA, RG 59, 840.48 REFUGEES/3-3046, pp. 1061–2

22 Response to Vatican Correspondence, 30 March 1945, USNA, RG

59, 840.48 REFUGEES/3-3046, p. 1063. However, not all of the forces who fought with Vlasov were lily white. See Simpson, *Blowback*, p. 20

23 Letter, 25 June 1946, Ukrainian-American League, USNA, RG 59, 800.4010 DP/6-2546

24 8 July 1946 Response to Letter of 25 June 1946, Ukrainian-American League, USNA, RG 59, 88.4010 DP/6-2546

25 Refugee Screening Commission, Report on Ukrainians in SEP Camp No. 374 Italy, 21 February 1947, PRO FO 371/ 66605

26 *Ibid.*, p. 1, para. 3 and p. 5, para. 11

27 *Ibid.*, p. 3, para. 7

28 *Ibid.*, p. 5, para. 11

29 *Ibid.*, p. 2, para 5

30 *Ibid.*, p. 6, para. B

31 Compare Outgoing Cable No. 457, 22 February 1947, attached to Refugee Screening Commission, Report on Ukrainians in SEP Camp No. 374 Italy, 21 February 1947, PRO FO 371/66605 at para. 3, with Cypher/OTP No. 584, 9 March 1947, PRO FO 371/66605

32 Handwritten Minutes to WR858, 12 March 1947, PRO FO 371/ 66605

33 *Ibid.*

34 Refugee Screening Commission, Report on Ukrainians in SEP Camp No. 374 Italy, 21 February 1947, PRO FO 371/66605, p. 4, para. 8

35 See, for example, the incident of the German escapees described in Chapter Three which led the CIC to initiate Operation Circle

36 Refugee Screening Commission, LACAB/62/INT/WOSM, 1 March 1947, enclosure to Report on Ukrainians in SEP Camp No. 374 Italy, 21 February 1947, PRO, FO 371/66605 ('These men surrendered to us . . . They must therefore be regarded as a British responsibility. It is hard to see how H.M.G. could justify . . . [the likelihood of] forcible repatriation.') Note also his assistant's comments, p. 6, para. B, that 'We must however I think, take into account their motives . . . They probably were not, and certainly do not now seem to be at heart pro-German . . .'

37 *Ibid.*,p. 2

38 Minutes, WR 957, 7 March 1947, PRO FO 371/66606, para. 1 of Legal Officers Minutes

39 *Ibid.*, para. 2 of Brimelow Minutes. See also para: 2 of Hankey Minutes

40 *Ibid.*, para. 6 of Hankey Minutes

41 Armstrong, *Ukrainian Nationalism 1939–45*

42 Cable of 19 February 1947, Special Projects Division, USNA, RG 59, 740. 62114/2-1947

43 Correspondence of 16 September 1947, USNA, RG 59, 860E.00/9-1647

44 Petition of 21 June 1947, enclosure to Correspondence of 16 September 1947, USNA, RG 59, 860E. 00/9-1647

45 Press clipping enclosure to WR 2353, 19 June 1947, PRO FO 371/66712

46 Letter, 8 June 1947, enclosure to WR 2353, 19 June 1947, PRO FO 371/66712

47 Letter, 9 July 1947, enclosure to WR 2353, 19 June 1947, PRO FO 371/66712

48 *Ibid.*

49 Handwritten Minutes to WR 2353, 19 June 1947, PRO FO 371/66712

50 *Ibid.* At least Maclean's screeners recognized that 'the men may all be lying, even about their names'.

51 Letter, 24 February 1948, enclosure to N2193, PRO FO 371/71636

52 Letter, 8 April 1948, enclosure to N2193, PRO FO 371/71636

53 Memorandum, Ukrainian 'Divisia Halychyna' (Ukrainian POW in Great Britain), Enclosure to N2193, PRO FO 371/71636, para. 6

54 Refugee Screening Commission, LACAB/62/INT/WOSM, 1 March 1947, enclosure to Report on Ukrainians in SEP Camp No. 374 Italy, 21 February 1947, PRO FO 371/66605, pp. 2–3 (distinguishing those who were forced to volunteer)

55 Compare Panchuk's Memorandum, Ukrainian 'Divisia Halychyna' (Ukrainian POW in Great Britain), Enclosure to N2193, PRO FO 371/71636 with the British Screening Team's discussion of Displaced Person Status under the rules of the International Refugee Organization. Refugee Screening Commission, LACAB/62/INT/WOSM, 1 March 1947, enclosure to Report on Ukrainians in SEP Camp No. 374 Italy, 21 February 1947, PRO FO 371/66605, pp. 2–8

56 Memorandum, Ukrainian 'Divisia Halychyna' (Ukrainian POW in Great Britain), enclosure to N2193, PRO FO 371/71636, p. 8, Part V, para. 7

57 First Handwritten Minutes to N2193, 24 February 1948, PRO FO 371/71636

58 First Handwritten Minutes to Flag C of N2153, 26 February 1948, PRO FO 371/71661

59 Second Handwritten Minutes to N3730, 25 March 1948, PRO FO 371/71662

60 First Handwritten Minutes to N3730, 25 March 1948, PRO FO 371/71662

61 N7688, and enclosures, July 1948, PRO FO 371/71663

62 O'Grady Typewritten Minute to N7500, 30 June 1948, PRO FO 371/71663

63 RAE Typewritten Minute to N7500, 30 June 1948, PRO FO 371/71663

64 N7500, July 1948, Handwritten Minutes of Mr Stark, PRO FO 371/71663

65 'RMAH' Typewritten Minute to N7500, 30 June 1948, PRO FO 371/71663

66 Bruce Page *et al.*, *The Philby Conspiracy*, Ballantine, New York, 1988,

pp. 188–9; Kim Philby, *My Silent War*, Ballantine, New York, 1983, pp. 163–4, 208

67 USAINSCOM Dossier 'Prometheus', undated card index listing Shandruk as a leader, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Fort George V. Meade, Md., released under US FOIA; Stevenson, *Intrepid's Last Case*, p. 243, acknowledging Colin Gubbins as head of Prometheus; and Cave Brown, *'C': The Secret Life of Sir Stewart Menzies*, pp. 143–4, acknowledging Prometheus as a long-standing British intelligence operation before being taken over by German Intelligence; Dallin, *Russia Under German Rule*, pp. 111, 117–18, 258n, describing Prometheus's work with the Nazis

68 Costello, *Mask of Treachery*, pp. 535, 565–6; Anderson, *Inside the League*, pp. 35–7; Simpson, *Blowback*, pp. 269–73

69 Anderson, *Inside the League*, pp. 33–7

70 Dallin, *Russia Under German Rule*, citing original German reports, pp. 119–20, nn.2–4

71 Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, pp. 48–9, 73–8, 106–19; Cave Brown, *'C': The Secret Life of Sir Stewart Menzies*, pp. 143–4

72 Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, pp. 20–8, 65–6

73 Cable Number S 6496, 27 November 1946, enclosure to State Department Decimal File 860E.00/12-346, USNA, RG 59

74 Philby, *My Silent War*, pp. 163–6

75 Cable Number S 6496, 27 November 1946, enclosure to State Department Decimal File 860E.00/12-346, USNA, RG 59

76 *Ibid.*

77 Letter of 17 December 1946, enclosure to State Department Decimal File 860E.00/12-346, USNA, RG 59

78 OUN/SB Classified Files, US Immigration and Naturalization Service, Washington HQ, quoted in Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, pp. 102–4

79 *Ibid.*

80 Without citation, Panchuk's history of the Galician Brigade alleges that the American forces kept 3,000 POWs for six months to a year, released them, and allowed them to acquire DP status

81 Wiesenthal, *The Murderers Among Us*, p. 275

82 *Ibid.*

83 Interview with Simon Wiesenthal, 21 February 1985

84 Wiesenthal, *The Murderers Among Us*, p. 275

85 Simpson, *Blowback*, pp. 180–1, n

86 USAINSCOM Dossier 'Intermarium', US Army Investigative Records Repository, Fort George V. Meade, Md., released under US FOIA

87 USAINSCOM Dossier 'Prometheus', undated card index listing Shandruk as a leader, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Fort George V. Meade, Md., released under US FOIA; Stevenson, *Intrepid's Last Case*, p. 243, acknowledging Colin Gubbins as head of Prometheus; and Cave Brown, *'C': The Secret Life of Sir Stewart*

Menzies, pp. 143–4, acknowledging Prometheus as a long-standing British intelligence operation before being taken over by German Intelligence; Dallin, *Russia Under German Rule*, pp. 111, 117–18, 258n, describing Prometheus's work with the Nazis

88 INSCOM Dossier, 'Polish-Ukrainian Military Staff', 970th CIC, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Fort George V. Meade, Md., released under US FOIA

89 Memo of 14 May 1947, from London to British Embassy at the Holy See, PRO FO 371 67376

90 Letter of 18 November 1947, from British Embassy at the Holy See to London, PRO FO 371 67402

91 War Department Top Secret INCOMING CLASSIFIED MESSAGE No. 89, 7 June 1947, AFHQ Declassified Files, USNA. (The AFHQ Cable Files are arranged chronologically in incoming and outgoing transmission sequence and are stored in Vault Six of the Suitland Annexe)

92 War Department Top Secret INCOMING CLASSIFIED MESSAGE No. 44, 12 June 1947, AFHQ Declassified Files, USNA

93 Costello, *Mask of Treachery*, p. 535

94 Memo of 20 December 1947, from Wilford to Culbertson, enclosed in State Department memo of 31 December 1947, from Madrid to Washington, from Vajta's FBI file, released under US FOIA, document 0009

10 The Philby Connection

1 Costello, *Mask of Treachery*, p. 279

2 *Ibid.*, p. 174

3 *Ibid.*, p. 602

4 *Ibid.*, p. 720, n.41

5 A serial of the incriminating evidence against Liddell is set forth in Costello, *Mask of Treachery*, pp. 602–3, including two occurrences in the late 1920s before he joined MI5. The peculiar omission of the Soviet Kolonii section in London was described in January 1989 by a former American Counter Intelligence officer, on the condition that it not be attributed

6 Costello, *Mask of Treachery*, pp. 602–3

7 *Ibid.*, p. 672, n.77

8 *Ibid.*, pp. 311–12

9 Ribbentrop, Joachim Von, CC HQ GP CC, 2 July 1945, Top Secret Interrogation Summaries, Vault 14W, USNA

10 Cave Brown, *'C': The Secret Life of Sir Stewart Menzies*, pp. 178–85

11 *Ibid.*, pp. 181–5

12 *Ibid.*

13 Memo from Director to US Attorney General, Justice Department Files, Washington, Attorney General's Eyes Only Records, Sixth Floor Vault, Main Justice Department, indexed under 'Windsor'

14 Cave Brown, *'C': The Secret Life of Sir Stewart Menzies*, p. 180
15 Charles Higham, *Trading with the Enemy*, Delacorte Press, New York, 1983, p. 182
16 *Ibid.*
17 *Ibid.*, p. 190
18 *Ibid.*, pp. 189–209
19 Pincher, *Too Secret Too Long*, p. 350 (regarding Anthony Blunt). The matter is alluded to again in Peter Wright, *Spycatcher*, Viking Penguin, New York, 1987, p. 223. The post-war MI5 cover-up of the Turkul network is discussed infra.
20 See Costello, *Mask of Treachery*, p. 602 (Liddell-Baykolov-Paris connection). For Ellis's connections to Turkul's network in Paris, see Pincher, *Too Secret Too Long*, pp. 440–1. According to Nigel West, *MI6*, Random House, New York, 1983, p. 123, Ellis 'as a German linguist, participated in a telephone tap placed on Ribbentrop's supposedly secure direct line to Berlin'.
21 Costello, *Mask of Treachery*, p. 672 notes 77–8
22 As head of B Division, Liddell was authorised to overrule negative MI5 reports at the time he hired KGB agents Blunt and Burgess. Costello, *Mask of Treachery*, p. 603
23 Cave Brown, *'C': The Secret Life of Sir Stewart Menzies*, p. 173
24 *Ibid.*, p. 198
25 *Ibid.*, p. 198
26 Pincher, *Too Secret Too Long*, p. 351
27 *Ibid.*, pp. 157–67
28 *Ibid.*, pp. 166–7
29 Cave Brown, *'C': The Secret Life of Sir Stewart Menzies*, pp. 651–4
30 *Ibid.*, pp. 652–5
31 *Ibid.*, p. 658
32 *Ibid.*, pp. 658–9
33 *Ibid.*, pp. 658–9, n.
34 *Ibid.*, p. 664
35 Wright, *Spycatcher*, p. 281
36 *Ibid.*, p. 284
37 *Ibid.*, p. 285
38 Compare Wright's treatment of the 'ELLI' cable in *Spycatcher*, pp. 281–5 with Costello's in *Mask of Treachery*, pp. 514–16
39 Stevenson, *Intrepid's Last Case*, pp. 243, 252, 254–6
40 Interview, *Reporting London*, 27 June 1988 subsequently seen as 1989 Thames Television Interview, *This Week*
41 *Ibid.*
42 See for example, the discussion of Stankievich's role as a Nazi/Communist double agent and his subsequent transfer to America from the British, in Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, pp. 93–4
43 5 May 1989 interview with former British Intelligence Officer given on the condition that it remain unattributed.
44 For a discussion of Soviet agents in ABN, see Costello, *Mask of Treachery*, pp. 535, 595–6

45 Philby, *My Silent War*, pp. 163–5
46 CIA File Ferdinand Durčansky, translation of Czech Home Service, 5 March 1947, declassified under US FOIA, p. 49a (hereinafter cited as Durčansky CIA File)
47 *Ibid.*, p. 25a
48 *Ibid.*
49 *Ibid.*, p. 47a
50 Undated Memo, British PRO FO 371 65809
51 Durčansky CIA File, p. 27a, quoting *Kis Ujsag*, Budapest, 20 November 1947
52 Durčansky CIA File, Biographical Information, pp. 1–16a
53 Costello, *Mask of Treachery*, p. 596
54 Cave Brown, *'C': The Secret Life of Sir Stewart Menzies*, acknowledging long-standing British intelligence fronts, pp. 173–4
55 Costello, *Mask of Treachery*, pp. 535–6; Philby, *My Silent War*, pp. 163–5
56 Durčansky CIA File, Biographical Information, p. 16a, par. 5
57 Cave Brown, *'C': The Secret Life of Sir Stewart Menzies*, acknowledging long-standing British intelligence fronts, pp. 173–4
58 Durčansky CIA File, Biographical Information, pp. 2–3a
59 Durčansky CIA File, Letter of 20 September 1950, p. 15, para. 2
60 Secret Cypher Cable 'From: The High Commissioner for Canada, London, England To: The Secretary of State for External Affairs, Ottawa' forwarding reply from Mr Purvis of Northern Department, British Foreign Office, 13 December 1950, External Affairs File No. 7899-40, Canadian Archives, Ottawa, Canada
61 Remark attributed to Philby in Edward Jay Epstein, *Disinformation*, Simon & Schuster, New York, 1989, p. 35
62 Durčansky's war crimes background was apparently known to the Canadian Government two days *before* he arrived on 15 December 1950. Compare note 60 supra with Letter No. C. 593, 2 February 1951, From: The Under-Secretary of State for External Affairs, Ottawa File No. 7899-40. The February 1951 letter confirms that both the immigration service and the Royal Canadian Mounted Police had been informed of Durčansky's particulars
63 White House correspondence 20 March 1951, State Department Decimal File, USNA, RG 59, FV 700/42051, enclosing Letter of 5 March 1951 from Professor Dr Ferdinand Durčansky, 97 Crawford St, Toronto, Ontario, Canada
64 The text of Durčansky's speeches to conventions of the Slovak World Council in Canada were provided by a Jewish source in Canada who wishes to remain anonymous, but copies are freely available from the SWC in Toronto, which continues to revere Durčansky in its publications
65 The Galician Division is probably the largest of the surviving Fascist organisations in Canada, but the other ethnic factions of the ABN remain very active. The exact number of Fascists who entered

Canada is the subject of some dispute between the Deschenes Commission and its critics in the Wiesenthal Centre. Interviews with Alti Rodal, 1986–9

66 Durčansky CIA file, 'Wartime Card Index', apparently provided by Czech *émigrés* in the US. Kirschbaum's photo is on p. 11a. The CIA combined the Durčansky and Kirschbaum files in its response to our Freedom of Information Act request

67 Card Index, Durčansky CIA File, pp. 9a–10a

68 Kirschbaum Biographical Information, Durčansky CIA File, p. 8a

69 1989 Conversations with US General Accounting Office Investigators on the condition that their identities remain anonymous

70 Durčansky CIA File, p. 42a, citing *New York Times*, 16 March 1959

71 Durčansky CIA File, Biographical Information, pp. 14–16a

72 Alti Rodal, *Presence in Canada of other Nazi collaborators from Central and Eastern Europe and their links with Western intelligence agencies and the Vatican*, Chapter XII, Part 4, Historical Appendix to Deschenes Commission Report, Ottawa, 1985, pp. 409–27. According to Rodal, 'Sidor was admitted to Canada only after the direct intervention of Pope Pius XII with the Prime Minister, Louis St Laurent.' Rodal Report, p. 414. The Vatican began interceding for Sidor soon after the war. By the end of 1945, Monsignor Montini of the Secretariat of State was dropping hints that Sidor should be allowed to settle in America, and over the following four years several official requests were sent. See Airgram of 13 December 1945 from Tittman to Washington, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 29 and State Department Decimal File 701.60F66A/12-1345; letter from US Consulate, Naples to Gowen, 15 May 1947 and Note Verbale from the Personal Representative of the US President to the Vatican, 20 May 1947, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 17; and letters from the Vatican to Taylor, 28 June 1949, and from Gowen to Montini, 5 July 1949, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 25. The US State Department concluded that 'Mr Sidor's entry into the United States either as an immigrant or as a temporary visitor, would be prejudicial to American interests.' US Embassy (Consular Section) memo, 18 July 1949, USNA, Myron Taylor Papers, Box 25

73 A cursory reading of the main report of the Deschenes Commission contains numerous references to an American connection, but virtually all references to British involvement were deleted from both the main report and the Appendix. See Rodal Report, for example pp. 415–20. Interview with Alti Rodal, 1990

74 Interview with Alti Rodal, 1990. Ms Rodal was the author of the heavily censored Appendix to the Deschenes Report and confirms that she indeed requested access to these files and was denied on the grounds that they were beyond the Commission's scope of inquiry

75 Memo to File, State Department Decimal File 800.43 International of Liberty/6-1549 and 1649, USNA, RG 59, Secret Files

76 Memo to File, State Department Decimal Files, 7618.00/6-1256, USNA, RG 59

77 Memo to File, State Department Confidential File 700.001/1-1355 CS/LGS, USNA, RG 59
78 Memo to File, State Department Decimal File 811. 4613/4-1658, USNA, RG 59
79 See, e.g. FBI Dossier of Frantishek Kushel on shift of CIA [AMCOMLIB] funding from the Abramtchik Faction, discussed in Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, pp. 110–13. The FBI's source was none other than Jan Stankievich, brother of the infamous war criminal
80 See, e.g. US Immigration and Naturalization Service, Stankievich visa file, rejecting immigration on grounds of suspected Communist affiliation, original documents now in the possession of OSI, US Justice Department, Washington, DC
81 Costello, *Mask of Treachery*, pp. 595–6
82 Ryle-Johnson Report, T/148
83 *Ibid.*, T/145–148
84 Special Interrogation Report on Kauder, aka Klatt, MISC-USFET Counter Intelligence, T/1001
85 *Ibid.*, T/1004
86 War Room London CI Report; 'German Intelligence Service and the War', 1 December 1945, T/1239
87 *Ibid.*
88 Ira Longin Interrogation, 16 September 1947, T/1141-44
89 Interrogation of Nikolai Singular, T/1071-1075
90 Interrogation of Father George Leonidov Romanov, 19–20 December 1946, T/1063; as to Allen Dulles's thwarted plans, see Leonard Mosley, *Dulles*, Dial Press, New York, 1968, pp. 222–4
91 Cave Brown, *'C': The Secret Life of Sir Stewart Menzies*, p. 655
92 Interrogation of Father George Leonidov Romanov, 19–20 December 1946, T1/063; Allen Dulles, *The Secret Surrender*, Harper & Row, New York, 1966, pp. 88–124
93 Top Secret No. 11265, 'Role of the Wolff Group in Operation Sunrise, US Political Adviser for Germany, Berlin, 10 November 1947, US State Department Decimal Files, 740.00116EW/11-1047 A/VS, pp. 1–2, USNA, RG 59
94 CIC Salzburg Det., Subject 'Turkul, Anton', MOIC 29 June 1946, Declassified under FOIA 16 April 1990
95 *Ibid.*
96 CIC Salzburg Det., Letter of 16 July 46, declassificaion refused May 1990, citing CIA
97 Top Secret Interrogation of Claudius Voss, aka Alexandrov, 20 March 1947, SCI/A, T/1167-1181
98 *Ibid.*
99 *Ibid.*
100 Interrogation of Claudius Alexandrovich Voss, 970th CIC Det., 30 December 1947, T/1107
101 Top Secret Interrogation of Claudius Voss, aka Alexandrov, 20 March 1947, SCI/A, T/1167-1181

102 *Ibid.*
103 *Ibid.*
104 Cable, 17 August 1950 from Lewis E. Perry, Col. GSC Dep Acof S, G-2 USFET, T/1400
105 Cover Letter, 4 January 1949, Subject: White Russian net intelligence reports: attn. Major Milano, T/1312
106 SCI/A Interrogation, Ira Longin, circa 1946, T/328
107 *Ibid.*
108 Allied Military Control Stamp issued 17 July 1946, T/001
109 Interrogation of Nikolai Singular, T1/113–115
110 CIC Salzburg, Letter of 21 July 1946, declassified in part under FOIA, 16 April 1990
111 Ryle-Johnson Report, T/115-48
112 *Ibid.*, T/128-131
113 *Ibid.*, T/133
114 *Ibid.*, T/150
115 *Ibid.*, T/138-142
116 *Ibid.*, T/150
117 Memo of 20 October 1946 to SSU, War Department Mission to Germany, USFET, T/1212-221
118 CI Report no. 53, Subject OPERATION RUSTY, to Asst. Chief of Staff G-2 Headquarters USFET by s/a Paul H. Marvin, CIC, Project 113, 8 November 1946, T/1190-1200. Among the interesting items in this series is a mention of a 'Mr Harry Hecksher' of the 'War Department Detachment', a predecessor of the CIA's covert operations section in Germany. Hecksher was later the CIA Chief of Station in Berlin under Dulles. Thomas Powers, *The Man Who Kept the Secrets*, Pocket Books, New York, 1979, pp. 56–7
119 CI Report no. 53, Subject OPERATION RUSTY, to Asst. Chief of Staff G-2 Headquarters USFET by s/a Paul H. Marvin, CIC, Project 113, 8 November 1946, T/1190-1200
120 Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, pp. 59–60
121 Undated summary of Turkul/Kauder conversations, T/1404
122 *Ibid.*
123 Interrogation of Father George Leonidov Romanov, 19–20 December 1946, T/1050-69
124 *Ibid.*
125 *Ibid.*
126 *Ibid.*
127 *Ibid.*
128 *Ibid.*
129 *Ibid.*
130 Although it is not certain, it appears that Ryle was the American who requested the MI5 background checks discussed infra
131 Costello, *Mask of Treachery*, p. 595 and n.24, p. 720
132 Ryle-Johnson Report, Observation of Gilbert Riles [sic], T/235; Turkul Letter, 24 October 1947, T/1138

133 CI Special Interrogation Report 62, 15 April 1948, 7707 ECIC. App. 166. Documents reproduced in the Appendix to the US Justice Department's Report on Klaus Barbie are cited by numbering the Appendix pages in sequence, e.g., App. 166 is the forty-third page from the front of the Appendix

134 CIA biographical file for Radislav Ostrowsky, describing Marcus's recruitment of White Russian Nazis in 1944, released under US FOIA

135 British Interrogation Report of Walter Schellenberg, London, 1945, copy in USNA, Military Reference Branch

136 CI Special Interrogation Report 62, 15 April 1948, 7707 ECIC. App. 166

137 *Ibid.*

138 CIC Trust Report, 'Subject: IRON GUARD', INSCOM DOSSIER, US Army Intelligence Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., released under US FOIA

139 *Ibid.*

140 Operation Selection Board, Master Target List, 970th CIC, App. 27–8

141 *Ibid.*

142 Letter from former CIC Agent to Isadore Zack, Military Intelligence Association of New England, 28 September 1983, copy in authors' possession

143 Volume One, p. B8, *The German Intelligence Services*, Secret Files, US Navy Archives, copy in authors' possession

144 CI Special Interrogation Report 62, 15 April 1948, 7707 ECIC, App. 167

145 Undated Document entitled 'Operation Selection Board', apparently prepared for the 970th CIC Historical Files, App. 10

146 CI Special Interrogation Report 62, 15 April 1948, 7707 ECIC. App. 167

147 CIC File, Subject 'Black Orchestra', containing 1951 correspondence to DDU and DAD, declassified under US FOIA May 1990; Letter of 23 August 1946 to Captain O'Neal SSU/War Department Detachment, T1/017. We gratefully acknowledge the background explanations by a former US Counter Intelligence Officer. The CIA has recently published a multi-volume history of the early disputes between the CIA and Dulles, the so-called 'Darlin Report' which is available behind the information desk of the Main Reading Room of the USNA. However, neither the Darlin Report nor any other CIA history has ever identified the DDU as the cover for Dulles's rival intelligence organisation in the State Department. To our knowledge, this is the first time the existence of this super-secret organisation has ever been discussed in print

148 Allen had been promised the directorate of the CIA after Dewey's victory. His brother, John Foster Dulles, was to become Dewey's Secretary of State. Mosley, *Dulles*, p. 245. Allen did not wait for the

election results before hiring his staff. John A. Bross, who later went on to a distinguished career in the CIA, confirmed that he was interviewed by Allen Dulles in the middle of the 1948 election campaign. Bross Interview, 1988. Mr Bross insists however that his own involvement as a legal officer in the Barbie case was prior to his actual employment with Dulles and not in any way connected with intelligence work. See for example, Bross's Office Memorandum of 13 June 1950, Office of the US High Commissioner for Germany, App. 410–11, which does not reflect any knowledge of Barbie's intelligence connection. Subsequently, Bross became Chief of the East European Division where he supervised Harry Heckscher of the old 'WDD'. See note 118, supra; Bowie interview, 1985

149 'Around the White House they were still smoldering over some of the things Dulles and his political supporters had said about Truman during the recent Senate Campaign.' Mosley, *Dulles*, p. 249

150 References to each can be found in the Barbie documents, discussed in the next chapter

11 Barbie and the American Ratlines

1 Although Rauff's name is not mentioned in Dulles's memoirs of Operation Sunrise, *The Secret Surrender*, Rauff certainly remembered Dulles's name during his CIC interrogation. The sensitive Rauff-Dulles connection undoubtedly came to Angleton's attention as he had been 'transferred to Italy in November 1944, as the commanding officer of the SCI Unit Z'. Robin W. Winks, *Cloak and Gown*, Morrow, New York, 1987, p. 350. After March 1945, Angleton was in charge of co-ordinating all OSS interrogation information, especially concerning captured SD officers, such as Rauff. *Id.* p. 362. The US Army's files confirm that after SD officer Walter Rauff was interrogated by CIC he was released to the OSS unit 'S Force Verona'. INSCOM DOSSIER, 'Subject: Walter Rauff', US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., originally released under US FOIA to the Simon Wiesenthal Centre. Shortly after the CIC turned Rauff over to the OSS, he escaped under mysterious and controversial circumstances. See Chapter Two, supra. Rauff's subsequent role in the Ratlines is discussed in the French book, *Cercle Noir*, translated excerpts of which were graciously provided by Charles Kenney of the *Boston Globe*

2 David Martin, *Wilderness of Mirrors*, Ballantine Books, New York, 1981, pp. 23–4

3 INSCOM DOSSIER, Subject: 'Giovanni Montini', Memo of 30 July 1946, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., declassified under US FOIA

4 Winks, *Cloak and Gown, p. 354*

5 Martin, *Wilderness of Mirrors*, p. 182

6 INSCOM DOSSIER, Subject: 'Giovanni Montini', Memo of 30 July

1946, Unattributed, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., declassified under US FOIA

7 INSCOM DOSSIER, Subject: 'Giovannli Montini', Memo of 31 July 1946, Unattributed, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., declassified under US FOIA

8 Winks, *Cloak and Gown*, pp. 380–1

9 A number of authors have correctly described the 'Special Procedures Group' as a component of CIA, without mentioning that SPG was an ad hoc joint operation between the CIA and the State Department's Special Projects Division. It was the latter which pushed the Italian election initiative over the reluctant CIA. SPD formally became OPC in 1948 as a permanent State Department mechanism for circumventing the CIA's scepticism for covert political action. Compare Winks, *Cloak and Gown*, p. 385, with Powers, *The Man Who Kept The Secrets*, pp. 36–7, and Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, pp. 69–70. We use the term SPD to identify the non-CIA covert operations section run by the State Department prior to November 1948. Although Angleton was technically in the CIA, he was also one of the SPG co-ordinators for Italy and helped SPD run the election campaign through his assistant, Raymond Rocca in Rome. Winks, *Cloak and Gown*, p. 385, n. The recently released 'Darlin Report', discussed supra, explains many but not all of the bureaucratic tangles

10 Declassified US State Department Archives released under US FOIA: Enclosure to dispatch No. 4404 dated 31 December 1947, subject, 'Recent Developments in the Establishment of an Anti-Communist Eastern European Center in Madrid'.

11 *Ibid.*, pp. 3–5

12 *Ibid.*

13 *Ibid.*, pp. 3–4

14 *New York Times*, 10 January 1948, p. 6; 12 January 1948, p. 4; 15 January 1948, p. 11. On Vajta's plans to solicit US support, see Declassified US State Department Archives released under US FOIA; Enclosure to dispatch No. 4404 dated 31 December 1947, subject, 'Recent Developments in the Establishment of an Anti-Communist Eastern European Center in Madrid'.

15 Informal Routing Slip, Headquarters, United States Forces Austria, 'History of the Italian Ratlines', 10 April 1950, Paul Lyon, HQ 430th CIC Opns, Attn: Maj. Milano, p. 1, App. 474

16 *Ibid.*

17 *Ibid.*, p. 3, App. 476

18 Top Secret Informal Routing Slip, Headquarters, United States Forces Austria, 'Rat Line from Austria to South America', HQs 430th CIC, 12 July 1948; para. 2–3. App. 481

19 Winks, *Cloak and Gown*, p. 445

20 Top Secret Incoming Cable, Number P 4232, 13 December 1949, Department of the Army, Staff Message Center, AFHQ Record Group, USNA, p. 3

21 Details of Bosiljević's activities in the Križari are from the official Yugoslav interrogation reports of Božidar Kavran and related documents, held at the High Court in Zagreb. On Bosiljević's activities with Cecelja and the Croatian Red Cross, see Cecelja's 'Final Interrogation Report', USNA RG 319, Cecelja Dossier, XE 006538

22 See, e.g. CIC Trust Report, 'Subject: IRON GUARD', INSCOM Dossier , US Army Intelligence Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., released under US FOIA, indexing Fascist Romanians working for British, French and American intelligence services in 1947

23 Interviews with former 970th CIC Officers, 1988–90

24 Only one 970th CIC agent, Henry Quarles, was found to be involved in illegal immigration activities. He was courtmartialed. Confidential File Index, Statement of Henry Quarles, US Army War College, Carlisle Barracks, Pennsylvania; Interview with former 970th CIC Officer, September 1990

25 Incoming Airgram, A-150, Nr 2337, 16 April 1948, US State Department decimal File Nr. 740.00116 EW/4-1648, citing 'security agencies in Austria', para. 1, USNA, RG 59; see Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, pp. 65–6

26 Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, p. 66

27 *Ibid.*, pp. 66, 73–4

28 *Ibid.*, pp. 74–5

29 After the separation of the commands, OPERATION HEADACHE BOATHILL preferred to recruit their personnel from the recent graduates at Fort Holabird rather than from their more experienced colleagues in Germany. Incoming Classified Message, P 4233, 14 December 1949, Department of the Army, Staff Message Center, USNA, AFHQ RG. Information concerning 430th records was given to John Loftus in 1979 on a briefing tour of classified microfilm room, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md

30 Interview with Major Milano, 1984; US Department of Justice, *Klaus Barbie and the United States Government*, August 1983, p. 136 [hereinafter the Ryan Report]

31 Höhne and Zolling, *The General was a Spy*, pp. 92–4 (July 1947 deadline, POW interrogations); p. 199 (Emil Augsburg); Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, pp. 63, 78 (Dr Six)

32 CHISEL [secret operation] REPORT No. 563, 28 February 1947, T/1008

33 Höhne and Zolling, *The General was a Spy*, pp. 170

34 Compare E. H. Cookridge, *Gehlen: Spy of the Century* Hodder & Stoughton, London 1972; with Höhne and Zolling, *The General was a Spy*, p. 162 (Gehlen and SBONR organisation); p. 180 (Gehlen and League of the Andreas Flag); p. 187 (Gehlen and NTS). Each of these organisations is listed as controlled or infiltrated by Turkul. See, e.g.,

MISC-USFET, 'Answer of Brief for Interrogation to: SSU Rep USFET', 30 October 1946, T/1085. In addition, Turkul's aides were caught by CIC with Gehlen's paperwork on them. Interrogation of Claudius Alexandrovich Voss, 970th CIC, 30 December 1947, T/1105 (Voss file mentions 'Rusty' and 'TIB', both codenames for the Gehlen Organization). In addition, Peter von Glasenap, the leader of St Andrew's Flag, is listed both as a Gehlen informant (7021 Composite Group, a CIC code name for Gehlen) and as a contact for General Turkul. CIC Card Indexes, undated, T/1364-1370

35 CHISEL [secret operation] Report No. 563, 28 February 1947, T/1008

36 Compare Memorandum: Subject: White Russian Net Intelligence Reports, Attn: Major Milano, 4 January 1949, T/1308 with Informal Routing Slip, Headquarters, United States Forces Austria, 'History of the Italian Ratlines,' 10 April 1950, Paul Lyon, HQ 430th CIC Opns, Attn: Maj. Milano, App. 474

37 Cable from Lewis E. Perry, Col. GSC, to Deputy to the Assistant Chief of Staff G-2 USFET, 17 August 1950, T/1402 (advising his intelligence counterpart in Germany that Turkul 'has excellent contacts with US intell agy in Germ.' Apparently a reference to Gehlen or the DDU)

38 MISC-USFET, 'Answer of Brief for Interrogation to: SSU Rep USFET', 30 October 1946, T/1085

39 CIC Card Indexes, Undated, T/1364-1370

40 Cable from Lewis E. Perry, Col. GSC, to Deputy to the Assistant Chief of Staff G-2 USFET, 17 August 1950, T/1402

41 Höhne and Zolling, *The General was a Spy*, p. 180

42 *Ibid.*, pp. 186–7

43 Interrogation of Claudius Alexandrovich Voss, 970th CIC, 30 December 1947, T/1122-23

44 CI Special Interrogation Report NO. 65, File CI-SIR/66, 16 June 1948, p. 133, App. 190 (Barbie learns of Dr Six arrest from Emil Augsburg); Interviews with John Bross and John McCloy, 1983 (Vatican intercession among reasons for Six's pardon); see general discussion of Dr Six's career in Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*

45 Simpson, *Blowback*, pp. 224–5n (Tenzerov, Augsburg and Barbie worked for the Gehlen Organization). There is no doubt that this network was working part-time for Dulles's undercover 'War Department Detachment' as the CIC makes explicit mention of payments received by the WDD. Letter, 8 March 1948, 970th CIC Region IV, p. 2, para d, App. 159. Unfortunately, the subsequent Barbie investigation missed the Dulles connection entirely because they could find no trace of the term 'War Department Detachment'. Ryan Report, p. 159n. The Turkul file contains ample references to this unit, e.g., CI Report 53, Subject: Operation RUSTY, 8 November 1946 (mentioning a conference about Turkul with Mr Hecksher of the War Department Detachment), T/1190-1200.

Hecksher was Dulles's representative in Berlin. Powers, *The Man Who Kept the Secrets*, p. 56

46 Simpson, *Blowback*, pp. 224–5n (Tenzerov, Barbie and Augsburg work for Gehlen); a diagram of Barbie's and Augsburg's role in the Peterson Organization is contained in App. 213. The Peterson net's secret connection to the Gehlen Organization (codenamed TIB) is discussed in Letter, Subject: Merk, Kurt; Barbie, Klaus, 16 November 1948, CIC Region IV, App. 217, para. 4, p. 2. The Turkul-Tenzerov-DDU connection is discussed infra

47 See the references to Bandera and Ukrainian contacts in the British Zone in Letter, Subject: Operation Flowerbox, 20 March 1947, 970th CIC Region I, App. 61–2

48 *Ibid.*

49 Letter to HQ 970th CIC Det., Subj: Klaus Barbie, 11 December 1947, p. 4, App. 113 (note that Barbie's reports on Lebed and Grynioch were submitted to CIC on 18 November 1947, almost three weeks *before* Barbie's case handler, Camille Hadju, arranged to smuggle them from Rome and hide them in his house; compare INSCOM Dossier C8043982J, Mykola Lebed, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., declassified under US FOIA, pp. 15–16 (report by Hadju on conduct of 5 December 1947 smuggling). The Barbie-Hadju-Ukrainian connection may have begun even earlier. Hadju's informal memorandum of 10 November 1947, unsourced (p. 142) was apparently based on oral reports from the Merck-Barbie network, as Hadju had no other network with contacts outside Germany. Barbie's information about Lebed and Grynioch had to have been typed up during the week of 10 November in order to be logged in for payment on 18 November. It is no coincidence that on 17 November 1947, Barbie's case handler, Hadju submitted his first official request (pp. 47–50), to smuggle Lebed from Rome to Germany, and then logged the Barbie reports in the following day as back-up. (App. 113)

The recently declassified Lebed file also contains a wealth of information on the wartime and post-war activities of Father Grynioch and the OUN, see e.g., p. 31 (Father Grynioch served as Lebed's deputy); p. 9 (Grynioch describes co-operative agreements with Germans), p. 19 (Galician training ground), p. 12 (Lebed's association with Abwehr intelligence); p. 146 (Father Grynioch was co-founder of the Ukrainian Army, UPA, along with Lebed)

50 INSCOM Dossier C8043982J, Mykola Lebed, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., declassified under US FOIA, p. 36, described Lebed as 'a well known sadist and collaborator of the Germans'. Another source, listed as highly reliable by CIC, confirmed that Lebed, in order to dominate the anti-Soviet resistance movement, simply murdered several of his Ukrainian rivals and burned their villages to the ground. 'As a result, the Ukrainians now have difficulty forgetting the fact that Lebed

killed some Ukrainian partisans who were fighting for the same cause,' p. 39. For an overview of the SB's gruesome conduct, see generally, Armstrong, *Ukrainian Nationalism 1939–45*

51 INSCOM Dossier C8043982J, Mykola Lebed, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., declassified under US FOIA, pp. 24, 149

52 INSCOM Dossier C8043982J, Mykola Lebed, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., declassified under US FOIA, pp. 9, 24 (Lebed fled to Rome along with the Croatians in May 1945 and established himself as 'General Secretary for Foreign Affairs'). Bishop Bučko was not his only Church contact: Archbishop Szepticky had previously helped commute Lebed's sentence for political assassination in Poland, p. 7. Lebed's CIC File, p. 6, lists his 1955 occupation as 'Secretary General, Foreign Affairs, Supreme Ukrainian Liberation Council, 353 Fort Washington Avenue, New York 37, New York'. This was a subsidiary of Dulles's American Committee of Liberation (AMCOMLIB) in New York which was subsiding General Turkul at the same time. Agent's Report, Refugee Relief Act, 22 August 1956, T/1279. OPC sponsorship of Lebed's group is discussed in Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, pp. 102–3. See also App. 158–60 (under Hadju, Barbie net was giving information of much value to the WDD which in turn subsidised this CIC net)

53 INSCOM Dossier, Jaroslav Stetsko, Extract from CI report, 5 September 1947, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., released under US FOIA

54 INSCOM Dossier C8043982J, Mykola Lebed, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., declassified under US FOIA, pp. 15, 44 (Lebed warned by Italian police that Soviets would kidnap him after American forces withdrew from Italy); pp. 13–20, 43–50 and 142 contain the paperwork approved by the chain of command; see note 49 for a discussion of Barbie's foreknowledge

55 INSCOM Dossier C8043982J, Mykola Lebed, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., declassified under US FOIA, p. 11

56 INSCOM Dossier C8043982J, Mykola Lebed, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., declassified under US FOIA, p. 21, 46 (Captain Hale's role); Top Secret Letter, Barbie, Klaus, 18 March 1948, para 3–4, App. 162–3 (superseding December 1947 instructions, now asking that Barbie be dissuaded from talking to the British by making co-operation a condition of his release). It should be noted that these new instructions were signed by Colonel Eckmann, one of the CIC liaisons to Dulles's group.

57 INSCOM Dossier, Subject: Ukrainian Nationalist Activities, Letter of 21 May 1948, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., released under US FOIA

58 *Ibid.*

59 INSCOM Dossier, Subject: Ukrainian Nationalist Activities, Letter of 31 March 1950, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., released under US FOIA

60 INSCOM Dossier C8043982J, Mykola Lebed, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., released under US FOIA, pp. 4, 12

61 *Ibid.*, p. 3

62 *Ibid.*, p. 2

63 *Ibid.*, pp. 3–4

64 Letter, Subject: Informants Net, 9 March 1948, App. 154–6 (Hadju's summary of orders to close down net); Letter, Subject: Merk, Kurt and Barbie, Klaus, 25 October 1948, App. 222 (listing CIC Headquarters decision to drop the Barbie network, or ask the CIA (DAD) if they wished to run it); Letter, Subject Merk, Kurt and Barbie, Klaus, 16 November 1948, App. 217–219 (admitting Gehlen penetration: 'TIB'); B/L – CIC Region IV, Subject: Merk, Kurt and Barbie, Klaus, 16 November 1948, App. 215 (three months extension on closing down net). Apparently the CIA did not want Barbie either

65 See note 45 supra and previous discussions of WDD-DDU as Dulles's front groups

66 Höhne and Zolling, *The General was a Spy*, pp. 280–91

67 US POLAD, Berlin, 13 May 1949, State Department Decimal File 740.00116 EW/5-1349, USNA, RG 59

68 Letters, Subject: Barbie, Klaus, 12 January 1950, App. 250–1 (Vidal is listed as the action officer); the history of the 'drop him but don't tell him' charade is set forth in Vidal's 'Memorandum for Colonel Erskine', 3 May 1950, App. 332–6 (containing Vidal's hand-written comments)

69 It should be noted that the man who gave the bizarre drop-off orders described in the preceding footnote was Colonel Eckmann, the CIC liaison to DDU. IRS, Barbie, Klaus, 24 May 1949, App. 247

70 Agent Report, Merk, Kurt, 19 October 1949, App. 238–42

71 Memorandum for Colonel Erskine, 3 May 1950, p. 5, para. 23, App. 336 ('prior to May 1949, this headquarters had had no indication that Barbie was wanted by the French for war crimes')

72 Top Secret Cable No. 26, 15 May 1950, App. 328

73 Memorandum for Colonel Erskine, 3 May 1950, p. 5, para. 23, App. 336 ('decided by Col . . . Eckmann . . . that Barbie shall not be placed in hands of French contrary to opinion expressed before'. Colonel Johnson and Ligon of Intelligence Division concurred in decision); Letter, Subject: Extradition of Klaus Barbie, 30 August 1950, App. 440 (decision not to hand Barbie over was co-ordinated with Mr B. Shute, Director of Intelligence (State Department), High Commissioner for Germany and Colonel W. R. Philp, Intelligence Division). Vidal noted that the reasons for the May 1950 hands-off decision on Barbie was 'well known to the above mentioned persons'.

Shute was State's liaison for DDU, Colonel William R. 'Rusty' Philp was the red-headed Army liaison to Gehlen's 'Operation Rusty'. Interview with former State DDU (and later CIA) officer, John A. Bross, 1983–4; see also Höhne and Zolling, *The General was a Spy*, p. 68 (Col. Philp recruited Gehlen in 1945). It is not surprising that they ordered Vidal to keep the French from getting their hands on Barbie

74 Memorandum for Colonel Erskine, 3 May 1950, p. 4, para. 16, App. 335 ('French Sûreté has been thoroughly penetrated by Communistic elements'); Office Memorandum, 21 June 1950, HICOG to Shute, App. 421 (Several influential French officials would be embarrassed by extradition to France)

75 IRS, HQ EUCOM (contd), 20 July 1949 (Barbie interrogated some very high French officials including François Poncet and Lebrun)

76 IRS, HQ EUCOM (contd), 20 July 1949 (Barbie interrogated four times by French but 'no attempt has ever been made' to bring formal charges); Memorandum for Colonel Erskine, 3 May 1950, p. 5, para. 23, App. 336 (no written request for extradition ever received by our headquarters); Secret Telegram, 26 May 1950 ('Note summarizes unsuccessful attempts' to obtain extradition through HICOG channels, recalling earlier conversations with McCloy that the French were no longer interested in obtaining Barbie's presence); Letter (undated circa 1950) from Office of General Counsel to M Lebegue, App. 360–1 (reminds French HICOG that no formal paperwork, only informal requests, have been transmitted to American HICOG)

77 Incoming Telegram, Department of State, No. 2172, 8 May 1950, App. 365 (Barbie case has 'highly embarrassing possibilities to put it mildly')

78 See Vidal's handwritten memo discussed in note 73, supra, and 1st Ind., HQ, Region XII, 16 May 1950, App. 339

79 1984–5 Confidential Interview including John Bross (now deceased). Permission to write an unclassified version of Poncet's activities for *Stern* Magazine was obtained in a series of correspondence with CIA/PRC, copies in authors' possession

80 INSCOM Dossier, François Poncet, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., released under US FOIA; Poncet's wartime background and diaries are discussed in John Loftus, *L'affreux secret*, Plon, Paris, 1985, pp. 172–222

81 430th CIC, Vienna City Section, Memo of 16 December 1946, INSCOM Dossier, 'RED CROSS CENSORSHIP', US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., p. 7, released under US FOIA

82 INSCOM Dossier, François Poncet, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., released under US FOIA

83 *Ibid.*

84 Memo to Mr Robinson from Mr Clattenburg of SPD (Special Projects Division), 20 June 1947, USNA RG 59, FW800.142/5-1547, showing that the La Vista report was passed to the SPD for handling

85 1984–5 Confidential Interviews including John Bross (now deceased). Permission to write an unclassified version of Poncet's activities for *Stern* Magazine was obtained in a series of correspondence with CIA/PRC, copies in authors' possession; Bowie interview, 1985
86 Top Secret Office Memorandum, US HICOG, 21 June 1950, App. 421
87 Top Secret Letter, 20 June 1950, Lightner to Wallner, App. 416 ('Mr McCloy directed that we smoke out EUCOM on the matter to . . . get more details as to just how embarrassing it would be to them (CIC) if he were turned over to the French.')
88 Confidential S-3 Work Sheet, 23 August 1950, App. 442 and HQ Eucom SRI 732–50, 21 August 1950, App. 443; Vidal sent a typed memo recalling the earlier decision by several higher authorities, including Shute, of HICOG and queried if either they or the French had now changed their minds about denying extradition
89 Confidential Interview with former US Counter Intelligence Officer, 1988–90. According to this officer, the CIC already had the 'crown jewels' and had no need for Barbie's baubles of information about the Communists in Germany. On 14 September 1950, Vidal approved a cable telling HICOG that CIC had no objections to Barbie's extradition, and reminding them that Barbie was not under the control of any Army agency, especially CIC. Secret Cable from CIC Liaison Office Heidelberg, 9 September 1949. Vidal's handwritten instructions are at the bottom of the page, App. 445
90 Confidential Office Memorandum, US HICOG, 20 October 1950, App. 457
91 Letter, 20 April 1983, International Committee of the Red Cross, App. 521 confirms that Barbie travelled on documents issued by the Allied High Commission for Germany, but noted that the original documents were missing
92 Romac's role in Barbie's escape are discussed in Neal Ascherson, Magnus Linklater and Isabel Hilton, *The Fourth Reich*, Hodder & Stoughton, London, 1984, pp. 192, 219–20; and Aarons, *Sanctuary!*, pp. 222, 233, 239, 240–51. *Sanctuary!* also details Romac's subsequent emigration to Australia and his role in organising Ustashi terrorist cells which launched a wave of bombings, shootings and guerrilla incursions into Yugoslavia in the 1960s and 1970s
93 Top Secret Memo for Record, Subject: Informant Disposal, undated, p. 5, App. 488, notes that the 430th informs the Department of State of the informant's real name and 'shipping name' and then the State Department notifies the US consul in the 'receiving country' to expect his arrival; Undated Memorandum, 66th CIC Germany, App. 493–4 para. 3, n, notes that 'The 430th handles all 66th cases *via State Department communication* as though they were 66th cases; no further 66th involvement?' [emphasis added]
94 Simpson, *Blowback*, p. 195
95 Winks, *Cloak and Gown*, p. 140

96 IRS, HQ USFA, Subject, History of the Italian Rat Line, 10 April 1950, App. 476–7
97 66th CIC Memorandum for the Record, Subject: Informant Disposal, undated, pp. 7–8, App. 490–1
98 See discussion in Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, pp. 89n, 95–6, 103n, 123–8
99 Classified Information provided by author to 1985 GAO Report to US Congress; Lebed has been publicly named as the subject of the report in Simpson, *Blowback*, p. 168
100 Barbie's Argentine Visa was stamped in Geneva on 19 March 1951, App. 533, but he did not actually depart from Genoa until 22 March 1951, Steamship Ticket, No. 15659, App. 549
101 Blue Card, 28 August 1948, T/025 (Ukrainian Vlasov Division); War Department General Staff, Intelligence Report, 'Russian Émigré Organizations', para. 6.a., enclosure to Letter, 10 May 1949, US POLAD, State Department Decimal Files, USNA, RG 59, 861.20262/5-1049 MM Secret File (post-war attempts by NTS to compromise Vlasov movement)
102 MOIC, 8 June 1948, CIC Sub-Region Landshut, Alleged Regrouping of Former ROA Members, USNA, RG 319, IRR index under AZODNR (controversial attempts by Turkul's aides to recruit Ukrainian Vlasovities); MOIC, 13 April 1948, CIC Region V, Re; Anti-Soviet Activities, USNA, RG 319, IRR index under AZODNR (policy differences causing lack of co-operation between General Shandruk's Ukrainians and General Turkul's factions)
103 Undated reports circa 1959 attached to MISC USFET, Answer of Brief for Interrogation, 30 October 1946, T/1085–1098 (reciting history of Turkul's affiliations)
104 SOURCE PICA, Letter to ODDI via USFA, Subject Turkul, Supreme Council of Russian exiles KROMIADI contra Glasenap; members of Supreme Council, Turkul, FNU, General; 10 May 1951, T/1315–17
105 Intercept Report, Civil Censorship Austria, 18 June 1951, T/1306-11
106 Cable, 14 September 1950 From Perry to Dep ACOS G-2 USFET, T/1402 (enclosed note Slip: no derogatory information as of 14 September 1950)
107 Region IV File Check, 30 June 1951, T/1404
108 Interrogation of Richard Klatt (supplemental, undated), p. 13, T/1042-8
109 Interrogation of Claudius Alexandrovich Voss, 970th CIC, 30 December 1947, T/1128-36
110 IRS, undated, Ovseenko source of Huntington reports recently emigrated, T/1322
111 Memo from Major Milano, 4 October 1949, T/1327
112 Secret Cable EUCOM, 10 May 1951, enclosure to CIC Agent Report, Refugee Relief Act, 22 August 1956, T/1249
113 War Department General Staff, Intelligence Report, No. R-E&A/81-49, 'Russian Émigré Organizations', enclosure to Letter, 10 May

1949, US POLAD, State Department Decimal Files, USNA, RG 59, 861.20262/5-1049 MM Secret File
114 *Ibid.*, para. 5a
115 *Ibid.*, para. 5b
116 *Ibid.*, para. 5f
117 *Ibid.*, para. 6
118 *Ibid.* (citing the Russian organization ATSONDR as an example), Para. 6a
119 MOIC, 13 April 1948, CIC Region V, Re; Anti-Soviet Activities, USNA, RG 319, IRR index under AZODNR, ANTI COMMUNIST CENTER LIBERATION MOVEMENT OF THE PEOPLES OF RUSSIA, VOL. I
120 Letter, 13 May 1949, US POLAD, USNA, RG 59, State Department Decimal File 740.00116 EW/5-1349
121 Philby, *My Silent War*, pp. 163–4
122 *Ibid.*, p. 157
123 Simpson, *Blowback*, pp. 166–7; CIA Declassified Report, German Intelligence Agents on The Eastern Front, Room 13W, USNA
124 One of the authors had access to the classified files of the 100 Persons Act during his employment with the US Justice Department and compared the CIA's information with the Army and State Department files. See Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, p. 136
125 Wright, *Spycatcher*, pp. 346–7
126 Powers, *The Man Who Kept the Secrets*, pp. 59–61; Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, pp. 116–17, 130
127 Confidential Interview with former intelligence officer familiar with NTS programmes under Wisner, 1981
128 Letter, Immigration and Nationalization Service, Top Secret Headquarters File, Indexed under OUN, quoted with permission in Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, pp. 102–3 (alleging 35,000 Soviets killed by OUN inside the Soviet Union since the end of World War II)
129 William Corson, *The Armies of Ignorance*, Dial Press, New York, 1977, pp. 366–71
130 CIC Agent Report, Refugee Relief Act, 22 August 1956, T/1275-79 (Turkul cashier of organization Funded by AMCOMLIB, 6 East 45th St, New York)
131 Powers, *The Man Who Kept the Secrets*, p. 101; Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, p. 107
132 Neither the report on OUN/SB assassinations, note 128 supra, nor the State Department's security investigation of Stankievich appear anywhere in the CIA files. See Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, pp. 142–3
133 CIC Agent Report, Refugee Relief Act, 22 August 1956, p. 3, T/1250
134 Simpson, *Blowback*, p. 267
135 General Turkul's obituary appears in the December 1959 edition of 'ROA', Russian language newspaper collection, Hoover Institution, Palo Alto, California
136 Confidential Interview, 1981, former intelligence officer who worked

on NTS programmes in Germany. According to this rather defensive source, the OPC's attitude at the time was that they were merely writing cheques; if Turkul produced something good, fine, if he turned out to be a spy, all they had lost was money. In fact, Turkul helped them lose Hungary in 1956 and wrecked most of Gehlen's operations. See discussion of NTS failures in Höhne, *Gehlen: Spy of the Century*

137 Compare Costello, *Mask of Treachery*, p. 595; with Pincher, *Too Secret Too Long*, p. 441 (Ellis' contact, Prince Turkul, part of a major Soviet deception program) and p. 442 (indusputable evidence that Ellis's White Russian contacts worked for the Soviet GRU)

138 Stevenson, *Intrepid's Last Case*, p. 281

139 Notes to CBI Detachment 35 F, 358, Civil Censorship Group Austria, 11 April 1952, T/1290-5 (Turkul attempted to get in contact with General Miodrag Damjanović in the British Zone about co-ordinating the work of the Yugoslav emigration)

140 Internal Route Slip, European Command, Die Schwarze Kapelle, 24 April 1952, p. 6 of INSCOM Dossier, 'Schwarze Kapelle – Black Band', US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Suitland, Md.; partly declassified May 1990 under US FOIA

12 Conclusions

1 Schellenberg, *Labyrinth*, pp. 318–21

2 Confidential 1984 Interview, former Western intelligence officer. The person who named Waldheim also described extensive details of the Italian-Austrian leg of the Ratline which were subsequently corroborated by another source who admitted that the DDU unit was disguised as a medical team for the 351st Infantry Regimental Combat Team in Trieste, later the 349th regiment in Linz, Austria. Waldheim's own superior in the Austrian Foreign Ministry also confirmed that 'there may be a link between the US intelligence community and Waldheim'. Statement of Karl Gruber to the London Observer Service, quoted in *Quincy Patriot Ledger*, 29 April 1986

3 Waldheim was awarded the Ustashi silver medal of King Zvonimir with oak leaf clusters for bravery under fire for his services during July 1942. Waldheim admits that this was the period of the Kozara massacre, but claims that he was 200 miles away at the time. *New York Times*, 6 March 1986, 'Waldheim Says His Past Was Misrepresented'; see also *Der Spiegel*, 14 April 1986, 'The Waldheim Case: Austria's Quiet Fascism'. However, a check of the original Ustashi newspapers in the Yugoslav Archives showed that Pavelić awarded Waldheim the medal specifically for services in 'Western Bosnia' which was also the area assigned Father Draganović by the Ustashi Bureau of Colonisation

4 London Observer Service, Interview with Karl Gruber, reported in *Quincy Patriot Ledger*, 29 April 1986

5 *Ibid.* (Fritz Molden, Dulles's son-in-law recommended that Gruber hire Waldheim and performed Waldheim's background check. Molden had served as an OSS officer in Italy)

6 Duško Doder, 'Agents Say Waldheim Was Blackmail Target', *International Herald Tribune*, 31 October 1986

7 Simpson, *Blowback*, p. 121

8 1986 Interview with senior OPC official attached to HICOG; see also Powers, *The Man Who Kept the Secrets*, pp. 74–5

9 'after leaving the CIA, Offie went to work for the AFL-CIO in Europe. In 1972 he was killed in an air crash at London Airport.' Powers, *The Man Who Kept the Secrets*, p. 409, n.21

10 Costello, *Mask of Treachery*, p. 596

11 Estimate by Allan Ryan, author of *Quiet Neighbors*, and formerly director of the Office of Special Investigations at the US Justice Department. He is also the author of the Ryan Report on Klaus Barbie. However, Ryan continues to insist that the 10,000 Nazis entered America without any governmental assistance and that Barbie was the only war criminal to go through the Ratline. E.g., *Ryan Report*, p. 212

12 The 1959 report, which is still classified, was a belated admission from the Gehlen organisation. Some elements of the CIA had been saying the same thing openly since 1952. Lyman Kirkpatrick, *The Real CIA*, Macmillan, New York, 1968, p. 153

13 Corson, *Armies of Ignorance*, pp. 36–9

14 Costello, *Mask of Treachery*, p. 596

15 Memo, Australian Department of Foreign Affairs, reporting comments made by Mr Johnson of the US State Department. A copy of this document was tabled in the Senate by the Australian Attorney General, 27 March 1973

16 September 1990 Interview with former US Counter Intelligence officer. The Red Orchestra and BB Apparat files are only beginning to be declassified. INSCOM Dossier, Rote Kapelle, US Army Investigative Records Repository, Ft. George V. Meade, Md., partially declassified under US FOIA, 1990

17 Department of Army, Combined Intelligence Objective Summaries, 'Chemical Warfare Activities in the Munsterlager Area', July–August 1945, declassified under US FOIA. The document citing Mengele appears in the Appendix of German chemical warfare officers. An asterisk denotes that Mengele was in custody at the time of the British CIOS report

18 Gerald Posner and John Ware, *Mengele: The Complete Story*, McGraw-Hill, New York, 1986, pp. 66–9, 70

19 Nearly 20,000 pages on wartime and post-war recruitment of German chemical warfare scientists were recently released to the authors under the US FOIA. Among the more intriguing revelations are

detailed formulas and instructions for the manufacture of each type of nerve gas

20 Both Iraq and Syria possess pilot plants for Sarin, and both are on the verge of mass production. According to a chemical warfare expert for the United States, American monitoring of West German sales continued for a decade before Bonn could be pressured into taking any action. 1988–9 Confidential Interviews

21 The American author, Paul Manning, has obtained startlingly direct confirmation from a German nuclear scientist who worked on the programme, and graciously permitted the authors to review his material. Apparently both of us were working on the same investigation at the same time

22 1984–5 Interview with John McIntyre, who was also one of the DDU escorts from Gehlen's headquarters to the Ratlines. The remarkable story of McIntyre and his family is set forth in John Loftus and Emily McIntyre, *Valhalla's Wake*, Atlantic Monthly Press, New York, 1989

23 *Washington Post*, 6 June 1990, p. A20, 'British Lords Kill War Crimes Bill in Rare Display of Parliamentary Power'. Lord Shawcross stated that Jewish attacks on British troops created an atmosphere in which it would have been impossible to continue war crimes trials, and criticised the younger generation for their 'more simplistic ideas of right and wrong'

24 Title Doubleday, New York, 1981

25 Press statement of Deschenes Commission, 8 October 1985, releasing Top Secret cable from British Government, cited on p. 54; Testimony of John Loftus before the US House of Representatives, Committee on the Judiciary, Subcommittee on Immigration, Refugees, and International Law, 17 October 1985 (written submission)

26 Testimony of John Loftus before the US House of Representatives, Committee on the Judiciary, Subcommittee on Immigration, Refugees, and International Law, 17 October 1985 (written submission), pp. 32–7

27 Higham, *Trading With the Enemy*, p. 117

28 *Ibid.*

29 *Ibid.*, p. 10

30 *Ibid.*, p. 122

31 *Ibid.*, p. 11, citing sworn statement of Otto Abetz to American officials on 21 June 1946

32 Buenos Aires despatch of 23 July 1947, enclosure to Secret Letter No. 1563, Subject: Illegal Emigration from Italy to South America, Rome, 5 September 1947, USNA RG 59, 800.142/9-547

33 Paul Manning, *Martin Bormann*, Lyle Stuart, New York, 1981, pp. 205–6

34 US State Department Post Files, Switzerland, 1945, Folder for Operation Safehaven, Interrogation of Allen Dulles, USNA; Manning, *Martin Bormann*, p. 251

35 It should be recalled that about the same time, the Treasury

Department was alleged to have been infiltrated with Communists, the Morgenthau plan for dismembering the German cartels was overturned, and jurisdiction over the economy of occupied Germany was turned over to the far more conservative State Department

36 Manning, *Martin Bormann*, p. 251

37 Memos of meetings with Hans Gisevius and Australian government ministers and officials, Australian Archives, Canberra, AA CRS A445, Items 194/2/3 P3, and 194/2/4 (citing Rockefeller's assistance to the Committee for a Free Europe); Simpson, *Blowback*, pp. 202–3

38 Fortunately, World Commerce left behind a substantial paper trail of litigation. See, e.g., *Matter of Minerals Corp. and Panamerican Commodities*, Volume 15 New York State Appellate Division Reports, 2nd series, p. 432, 1st Department, 27 February 1962 (World Commerce Corp. represented by Donovan, Leisure, Newton & Irvine)

39 Manning, *Martin Bormann*, p. 268, citing Senate committee testimony of Julius Klein

40 *Ibid.*, pp. 268–9

41 *Ibid.*, pp. 71–2

42 Sworn statement of George Wilhelm Marty to investigators at Nuremberg Trial, document quoted without citation in Manning, *Martin Bormann*, p. 59

43 Statement of Walter Rockler, former US Prosecutor at Nuremberg Bankers' Trial, at 40th Anniversary Reunion of Nuremberg Prosecutors, Boston College Law School, Massachusetts

44 Penny Lernoux, *In Banks We Trust*, Doubleday, New York, 1984, p. 214

45 *Ibid.*, p. 189

46 *Ibid.*, pp. 181–2

47 *Ibid.*, pp. 188–214

48 Cave Brown, *Bodyguard of Lies*, pp. 450–1

49 *Ibid.*, p. 453

50 *Ibid.*, pp. 453–4

51 Bowers, *The Pledge Betrayed*, pp. 182–203, 236–8, 276–7

52 Grayzel, *A History of the Jews*, p. 676; Wyman, *The Abandonment of the Jews*, pp. 240–79; Interview with Father Robert Graham, 15 April 1985

Postscript

1 Moreover, some of his own intelligence reports that we had quoted had previously been published in Christopher Simpson's book, *Blowback*, which details US intelligence's use of Nazis

13 Conclusions: A Reappraisal

1 *US and Allied Efforts to Recover and Restore Gold and Other Assets Stolen or Hidden by Germany During World War II,* coordinated by Stuart E. Eizenstat, Under Secretary of Commerce for International Trade, prepared by William Z. Slany, Department of State Historian, May 1997

2 Readers interested in the original sources for much of this account are directed to the sequel to *Unholy Trinity,* John Loftus and Mark Aarons, *The Secret War Against the Jews: How Western Espionage Betrayed the Jewish People,* St Martin's Press, New York, 1994, especially Chapters Three to Six inclusive. The endnotes to these chapters provide a definitive guide to the so far declassified documents and previously published material on the Dulles–Swiss bankers–Vatican connections in the Nazi treasure story

3 One of the best histories of these prewar investments is Christopher Simpson, *The Splendid Blond Beast: Money, Law and Genocide in the Twentieth Century,* Grove Press, New York, 1993, which cites directly to archived documents of the US State Department

4 Paul I. Murphy, *La Popessa,* Warner Books, New York, 1983, p. 52

5 The Eizenstat report mentioned this in passing. While the purchase of Nazi gold may have been immoral, it was technically legal for the 'neutral' BIS, which merely sought to provide services to its member banks, several of which were in Allied nations

6 This issue is addressed in more detail in Chapter Twelve, p. 275 et seq., but is briefly set forth here for purposes of continuity

7 Originally cited in Charles Higham, *Trading with the Enemy,* Delacorte Press, New York, 1983, p. 11

8 An account of these events can be read earlier in this book, pp. 38–39. See also *The Secret War Against the Jews,* Chapters Three and Four

9 Letter of 21 October 1946 to Mr. Harold Glasser, Director of Monetary Research, US Treasury Department, USNA RG 226, Entry 183, Box 29, File #6495. According to Mr John Taylor, the distinguished document expert at the National Archives, Record Group 226 contains OSS and SSU intelligence files

10 Gowen memo of 29 August 1947, Pavelić CIC file, released under US FOIA, pp. 2–6. Father Draganović, the Vatican's point man for the Križari operations, made a full confession years later to the Yugoslav intelligence services. Draganović statement to Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967; and article in *La Republica,* 24 September 1948, Italian Ministry of Foreign Affairs Archives, 1948 Busta 33, fasciolo 2, processo di Zagrabia

11 Statement by Father Draganović to Yugoslav authorities, 26 September 1967, document cited in *Unholy Trinity,* pp. 123–24

12 Harrington CIC Memo of 9 March 1948, 'Activity of Bishops Rožman and Sarić', released under US FOIA

13 US State Department Archives, Berne, Switzerland, Post Files, Memos and Correspondence files concerning Operation Safehaven, 1945–46

14 *US News and World Report,* 30 March 1998

Bibliography

Publications of brief extracts from copyrighted material is gratefully acknowledge for the following works *

*Mark Aarons, *Sanctuary! Nazi Fugitives in Australia*, Heinemann Australia, Melbourne, 1989

Alan Abrams, *Special Treatment*, Lyle Stewart, New York, 1985

Paul Addison, *Now the War is Over. A Social History of Britain 1945–51*, BBC and Jonathan Cape, London, 1985

Reuben Ainsztein, *Jewish Resistance in Nazi Occupied Eastern Europe*, Paul Elek, London 1964

Stella Alexander, *Church and State in Yugoslavia since 1945*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1979

Stella Alexander, *The Triple Myth. A Life of Archbishop Alojzije Stepinac*, East European Monographs, Boulder, 1987

All Party Parliamentary War Crimes Group, *Report on the Entry of Nazi War Criminals and Collaborators into the UK, 1945–1950*, House of Commons, London, 1988

Charles R. Allen, Junior, 'The Vatican and the Nazis', in *Reform Judaism*, Spring/Summer 1983, and 'Debate Rages: did Vatican help Nazis to escape from Europe?', in the *National Catholic Reporter*, 2 March 1984

Gennady Alov and Vassily Victorov, *Aggressive Broadcasting*, Novosti Press Agency Publishing House, Moscow, 1985

Julian Amery, *Approach March*, Hutchinson, London, 1973

Scott and Jon Lee Anderson, *Inside the League*, Dodd & Mead, New York, 1988

Christopher Andrew, *Secret Service*, Heinemann, London, 1985

Christopher Andrew and Oleg Gordievsky, *KGB: The Inside Story of its Foreign Operations from Lenin to Gorbachev*, Hodder & Stoughton, London, 1990

John Armstrong, *Ukrainian Nationalism 1939–45*, Columbia University Press, New York, 1955

Charles Ashman and Robert Wagman, *Nazi Hunters*, Pharos Books, New York, 1988

Gerald Astor, *The Last Nazi: The Life and Times of Joseph Mengele*, Donal Fine, New York, 1985

John Barron, *KGB*, Bantam, London/New York, 1979

John Beattie, *Klaus Barbie. His Life and Career*, Methuen, London, 1984

Nora Beloff, *Tito's Flawed Legacy: Yugoslavia and the West 1939–1984*, Victor Gollancz, London, 1985

James Bentley, *Martin Niemüller*, Oxford University Press, Oxford, 1984

Nicholas Bethell, *The Last Secret. Forced Repatriation to Russia 1944–47*, André Deutsch, London, 1974

Nicholas Bethell, *The Great Betrayal: The Untold Story of Kim Philby's Biggest Coup*, Hodder & Stoughton, London, 1984

Pierre Blet, Robert A. Graham, Angelo Martini and Burkhart Schneider (eds), *Les Actes et Documents du Saint Siège relatif à la Seconde Guerre Mondiale*, Libreria Editrice Vaticana, Vatican City, Vols 1–11, 1966–81

*Jonathan Bloch and Patrick Fitzgerald, *British Intelligence and Covert Action*, Brandon, Ireland, 1983

Howard Blum, *Wanted. The Search for Nazis in America*, Quadrangle/*New York Times*, New York, 1977

*Branko Bokun, *Spy in the Vatican*, Tom Stacey, London, 1973

Joseph Borkin, *The Crime and Punishment of I. G. Farben*, The Free Press, New York, 1978

Yury Boshyk (ed.), *Ukraine During World War II: History and its Aftermath*, Canadian Institute of Ukrainian Studies, University of Alberta, Edmonton, 1986

Douglas Botting, *In the Ruins of the Reich*, Allen & Unwin, London, 1985

Douglas Botting and Ian Sayer, *Nazi Gold*, Grove Press, New York, 1984

Douglas Botting and Ian Sayer, *America's Secret Army*, Fontana, 1989

Tom Bower, *Blind Eye to Murder*, Granada, London, 1983

Tom Bower, *Klaus Barbie*, Pantheon Books, New York, 1984

Tom Bower, *The Paperclip Conspiracy*, Michael Joseph, London, 1987

Randolph Braham, *The Politics of Genocide: The Holocaust in Hungary*, Columbia University Press, New York, 1981

Werner Brockdorff, *Flucht vor Nürnberg. Plane und Organisation der Fluchtwege der NS-Priminenz im 'Römischen Weg'*, Verlag Welsermühl, Munich, 1969

*Anthony Cave Brown, *Bodyguard of Lies*, W. H. Allen (Star), London, 1977

Anthony Cave Brown, *The Secret Servant*, Michael Joseph, London, 1987

*Anthony Cave Brown, *'C': The Secret Life of Sir Stewart Menzies*, Macmilian, New York, 1987

Friedrich Buchardt, *The Treatment of the Russian Problem during the Time of the National Socialist Regime in Germany*, unpublished US intelligence document

Hubert Butler, *Escape from the Anthill*, The Lilliput Press, Mullingar, 1985

Owen Chadwick, *Catholicism and History. The Opening of the Vatican Archives*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1978

Owen Chadwick, 'The Pope and the Jews in 1942', in *Studies in Church History*, Vol. 21, edited by W. J. Sheils, Basil Blackwell, Oxford, 1984

*Owen Chadwick, *Britain and the Vatican during the Second World War*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1986

Nicolas Cheetham, *Keepers of the Keys: The Pope in History*, Macdonald, London, 1982
Yurij Chumatskyj (pseudonym), *Why Is One Holocaust Worth More Than Others?*, Veterans of the Ukrainian Insurgent Army, Sydney, 1986
Stephen Clissold, *Whirlwind*, Cresset Press, London, 1949
Stephen Clissold, *Croat Separatism: Nationalism, Dissidence and Terrorism*, Institute for the Study of Conflict, London, 1979
Stephen Clissold, unpublished autobiography
John Colville, *Footprints in Time*, Richard Russell, Salisbury, 1984
*E. H. Cookridge, *Gehlen. Spy of the Century*, Hodder & Stoughton, London, 1972
John Cooney, *The American Pope. The Life and Times of Francis Cardinal Spellman*, *New York Times*, New York, 1984
John Cornwell, *A Thief in the Night. The Death of Pope John Paul I*, Viking, London, 1989
Rupert Cornwall, *God's Banker. The Life and Death of Roberto Calvi*, Unwin, London, 1984
William Corson, *The Armies of Ignorance*, Dial Press, New York, 1977
*John Costello, *Mask of Treachery*, Morrow, New York, 1988
Geoffrey Cox, *The Race for Trieste*, Kimber, London, 1977
Tom Cullen, *Maundy Gregory*, Bodley Head, London, 1974
Erhard Dabringhaus, *Klaus Barbie*, Acropolis, Washington, 1984
*Alexander Dallin, *German Rule in Russia 1941–1945*, St Martin's Press, New York, 1957
Alexander Dallin, *Soviet Espionage*, Yale University Press, New Haven, 1956
Michael Davie (ed.), *The Diaries of Evelyn Waugh*, Penguin, Harmondsworth, 1979
Richard Deacon, *A History of British Secret Service*, Granada, London, 1969
Ladislas de Hoyas, *Klaus Barbie. The Untold Story*, W. H. Allen, London, 1985
Leon de Poncins, *Judaism and the Vatican*, Revisionist Press, Brooklyn, 1982
Leon de Poncins, *Vatican and Freemasons*, Revisionist Press, Brooklyn, 1982
Justice Jules Deschenes, *Report of the Commission of Inquiry on War Criminals*, Ottawa, 1986
Karlheinz Deschner, *Ein Jahrhundert Heilsgeschichte: Die Politik der Papste im Zeitalter der Weltkriege. Von Pius XII 1939 bis zu Johannes Paul I 1978*, Kiepenheuer und Witsch, Cologne, 1983
Luigi di Fonzo, *St Peter's Banker*, Watts, New York, 1983
Ahmet Donlagić, Žarko Atanacković and Dušan Plenča, *Yugoslavia in the Second World War*, Interpress, Belgrade, 1967
Madelaine Duke, *Top Secret Mission*, Evans Brothers, London, 1954
Allen Dulles, *The Secret Surrender*, Harper & Row, New York, 1966
John Dziak, *Chekisty. A History of the KGB*, Lexington Books, Massachusetts, 1988

Robert Erickson, *Theologians under Hitler*, Yale University Press, 1985
Carlo Falconi, *The Silence of Pius XII*, Faber & Faber, London, 1970
*Ladislas Farago, *Burn After Reading*, Walker, New York, 1961
*Ladislas Farago, *Aftermath*, Pan, London, 1976
Benjamin B. Ferencz, *Less than Slaves*, Harvard University Press, Cambridge, Massachusetts, 1979
Alexander Foote, *Story of a Russian Spy*, formerly *Handbook for Spies*, Doubleday, New York, 1949
Anne Fremantle (ed.), *The Social Teachings of the Catholic Church*, Menton-Omega, New York, 1963
Saul Friedlander, *Pius XII and the Third Reich*, Chatto & Windus; London, 1966
Jozef Garlinski, *Fighting Auschwitz. The Resistance Movement in the Concentration Camp*, Julien Friedmann, London, 1975
Peter Gay, *Weimar Culture*, Penguin, London, 1974
Reinhard Gehlen, *The Gehlen Memoirs*, Collins, London, 1972
Martin Gilbert, *Auschwitz and the Allies*, Michael Joseph, London, 1981
Martin Gilbert, *Atlas of the Holocaust*, Michael Joseph, London, 1982
Marin Gilbert, *The Holocaust*, Holt, Rinehart & Winston, New York, 1986
Martin Gilbert, *Final Journey*, Allen & Unwin, London, 1979
Father Robert Graham, The "Good Samaritan" in World War II. The Record of Relief and Rescue, Particularly by the Vatican, in Favour of the Victims of War', delivered at the Bethesda Regional Library, Bethesda, Maryland, 30 January 1989, under the auspices of the Catholic League for Religious and Civil Rights
*Solomon Grayzel, *A History of the Jews*, Mentor, New York, 1968
Andrew Greeley, *The Making of the Popes*, Futura Press, London, 1978
Richard Grunberger, *Red Rising in Bavaria*, Arthur Barker, London, 1973
Richard grunberger, *A Social History of the Third Reich*, Pelican, Harmondsworth, 1977
Larry Gurwin, *The Calvi Affair. Death of a Banker*, Macmillan, London, 1983
Michael Hanusiak, *Ukrainischer Nationalismus*, Globus Verlag, Vienna, 1979
Peter Hebblethwaite, *John XXIII. Pope of the Council*, Geoffrey Chapman, London, 1984
Stjepan Hefer, *Croatian Struggle for Freedom and Statehood*, Croatian Liberation Movement, USA, 1979
Robert Herzstein, *Waldheim, the Missing Years*, Grafton, London, 1988
Charles Higham, *American Swastika*, Doubleday, New York, 1985
*Charles Higham, *Trading with the Enemy*, Delacorte, New York, 1983
Raul Hilberg, *The Destruction of the European Jews*, Holmes & Meier, New York, 1985
Ronald Hingley, *The Russian Secret Police: Muscovite Imperial Russian and Soviet Political Security Operations 1556–1970*, Simon & Schuster, New York, 1970

Rolf Hochhuth, *The Representative*, Methuen, London, 1963
Heinz Höhne, *Codeword: 'Direktor'*, Secker & Warburg, London, 1971
Heinz Höhne, *Canaris*, Secker & Warburg, London, 1976
*Heinz Höhne and Hermann Zolling, *The General was a Spy*, Pan Books, London, 1973
Alois Hudal, *Die Grundlagen des Nationsozialismus; eine ideengeschichtliche Untersuchung*, Johannes Günther, Leipzig, 1937
Alois Hudal, *Römische Tagebücher: Lebensberichte eines alten Bischofs*, Leopold Stocker, Graz/Stuttgart, 1976
Siniša Ivanović, *Spijun u Mantiji*, Nova Knjiga, Belgrade, 1987
Fikreta Jelić-Butić, *Ustaše i NDH*, Skolska Knjiga, Zagreb, 1978
Peter Jordan, *Central Union of Europe*, Robert Marrick, New York, 1944
*David Kahn, *Hitler's Spies*, Macmillan, New York, 1978
Ihor Kamenetsky, *Hitler's Occupation of Ukraine*, Marquette University Press, Milwaukee, 1956
J. Kelly, *The Oxford Dictionary of Popes*, Oxford University Press, 1986
Stephen Knight, *The Brotherhood: The Secret World of the Freemasons*, Granada, London 1984
Lazo Kostich, *Holocaust in the Independent State of Croatia*, Liberty Press, Chicago, 1981
Bogdan Križman, *Ante Pavelić i Ustaše*, Globus, Zagreb, 1978
Bogdan Križman, *Pavelić izmedu Hitlera i Mussolinija*, Globus, Zagreb, 1980
Bogdan Križman, *Pavelić u Bjekstvu*, Globus, Zagreb, 1986
Walter Laqueur, *Weimar: A Cultural History 1918–1933*, Weidenfeld & Nicolson, London, 1974
Walter Laqueur, *The Terrible Secret*, Wedenfeld & Nicolson, London, 1981
George Leggett, *The Cheka: Lenin's Political Police*, Clarenden Press, Oxford, 1981
Penny Lernoux, *In Banks We Trust*, Doubleday, New York, 1984
Penny Lernoux, *People of God: The Struggle for World Catholicism*, Viking, New York, 1989
Djordje Ličina, *Dvadeseti Čovjek*, Centar za Informacije i Publicitet, Zagreb, 1985
Djordje Ličina, *Roverova Brača*, Centar za Informacije i Publicitet, Zagreb, 1987
Robert Jay Lifton, *The Nazi Doctors*, Basic Books, New York, 1986
Magnus Linklater, Isobel Hilton and Neal Ascherson, *The Fourth Reich*, Hodder & Stoughton, London, 1984
David Littlejohn, *The Patriotic Traitors*, Heinemann, London, 1972
*John Loftus, *The Belarus Secret*, Knopf, New York, 1982
Zdenko Löwenthal (ed.), *The Crimes of the Fascist Occupants and their Collaborators against Jews in Yugoslavia*, Federation of Jewish Communities of the Federative People's Republic of Yugoslavia, Belgrade, 1957
Fitzroy Maclean, *Eastern Approaches*, Jonathan Cape, London, 1949

Juraj Magjerec, *Hrvatski Zavod Sv. Jeronima u Rimu*, Tiskara Papinskog Sveučilista Gregoriane, Rome, 1953
Curzio Malaparte, *Kaputt*, Harborough, London, 1960
Avro Manhattan, *Terror Over Yugoslavia*, Watts, London, 1953
Avro Manhattan, *Catholic Terror Today*, Paravision, London, 1970
*Paul Manning, Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile, Lyle Stuart, Seacaucus, 1981
Jovan Marjanović (ed.), *The Collaboration of D. Mihailović's Chetnik's with the Enemy Forces of Occupation*, Arhivski Pregled, Belgrade, 1976
David Martin, *Wilderness of Mirrors*, Harper & Row, New York, 1980
Malachi Martin, *The Vatican*, Secker & Warburg, London, 1986
Andjelko Maslić, *Terrorism by Fascist Emigration of Yugoslav Origin*, Socialist Thought and Practice, Belgrade, 1981
Mark Mason, *Christian Illusions and Papal Power*, Markwell Press, Hong Kong, 1981
Giuseppe Masucci, *Misija u Hrvatskoj*, Drina, Madrid, 1967
Andrew Menzies, *Review of Material Relating to the Entry of Suspected War Criminals into Australia*, Canberra, 1986
Leonard Mosley, *Dulles*, Dial Press, New York, 1978
Ewen Montagu, *Beyond Top Secret U*, Peter Davies, London, 1977
Brendan Murphy, *The Butcher of Lyon*, Empire Books, New York, 1983
Francis Murphy, *The Papacy Today*, Macmillan, New York, 1981
Francis Murphy, 'A Brief Biography of Paul VI', in James Andrews (ed.), *Paul VI: Critical Appraisals*, Bruce Publishing, New York, 1970
Ivo Omrčanin, *Dramatis Personae and Finis of the Independent State of Croatia*, Dorrance, Bryn Mawr, 1983
Ivo Omrčanin, *Enigma Tito*, Samizdat, Washington, 1984
Marcel Ophuls, *The Sorrow and the Pity*, Paladin, London, 1975
Paul Ormonde, *The Movement*, Nelson, Melbourne, 1972
Nazareno Padallaro, *Portrait of Pius XII*, J. M. Dent, London, 1956
Bruce Page, Phillip Knightley and David Leitch, *Philby*, André Deutsch, London, 1968
Michael Palumbo, *The Waldheim Files*, Faber & Faber, London, 1988
Corrado Pallenberg, *The Vatican From Within*, Harrap, London, 1961
Edmond Paris, *Genocide in Satellite Croatia 1941–45*, The Serbian Thought, Melbourne, 1981
Edmond Paris, *The Vatican Against Europe*, Macmillan, London, 1961
Edmond Paris, *The Secret History of the Jesuits*, Chick Publications, USA, 1982
Alfred Persche, 'Die Aktion Hudal; Das letzte Aufgebot des Abendlandes', Unpublished Manuscript, held by the Dokumentationsarchiv des Österreichischen Widerstandes
*Kim Philby, *My Silent War*, Ballantine, New York, 1983
*Chapman Pincher, *Too Secret Too Long*, St Martin's Press, New York, 1984
John Pollard, *The Vatican and Italian Fascism*, Cambridge University Press, 1988

James and Suzanne Poole, *Who Financed Hitler? The Secret Funding of Hitler's Rise to Power 1919–1933*, Dial Press, New York, 1978
Peter Potichnyi and Shtendera Yevhen (eds), *Political Thought of the Ukrainian Underground 1943–1951*, Canadian Institute of Ukrainian Studies, University of Alberta, Edmonton, 1986
Thomas Powers, *The Man Who Kept the Secrets*, Knopf, New York, 1979
John Prados, *Presidents' Secret Wars*, Morrow, New York, 1986
Prison Notes of Cardinal Wyszynski: A Freedom Within, Hodder & Stoughton, London, 1985
Alexander Ramati, *While the Pope Kept Silent*, Allen & Unwin, London, 1978
John Ranelagh, *The Agency*, Simon & Schuster, New York, 1986
Gerald Reitlinger, *The House Built on Sand*, Weidenfeld & Nicolson, London, 1960
Gerald Reitlinger, *The Final Solution*, Perpetua, New York, 1961
Gerald Reitlinger, *The SS. Alibi of a Nation 1922–1945*, Arms and Armour Press, London, 1981
Werner Rings, *L'or des Nazis: la Suisse, un relais discret*, Payot, Lausanne, 1985
Walter Roberts, *Tito, Mihailović and the Allies: 1941–1945*, Rutgers University Press, New Brunswick, 1973
Alti Rodal, *Nazi War Criminals in Canada: The Historical and Policy Setting from the 1940s to the Present*, prepared for Justice Jules Deschenes's Canadian Commission, Ottowa, 1986
Harry Rositzke, *Secret Operations*, Reader's Digest Press, New York, 1977
Barry Rubin, *Istanbul Intrigues*, McGraw Hill, New York, 1989
Allan Ryan, *Klaus Barbie and the United States Government*, report with appendices, to the US Attorney General, US Department of Justice, Washington, 1983
Allan Ryan, *Quiet Neighbors*, Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, New York, 1984
*Walter Schellenberg, *The Labyrinth*, Harper Bros, New York, 1956
Klaus Scholder, *The Churches and the Third Reich*, Vol. One 1918–34, Vol. Two 1934–, SCM Press, London, 1987 and 1988
Matthias Schmidt, *Albert Speer, the End of a Myth*, St Martin's Press, New York, 1985
Günther Schwarberg, *The Murders at Bullenhauser Damm*, Indiana University Press, Bloomingdale, 1984
*Gitta Sereny, *Into that Darkness . . . the Mind of a Mass Murderer*, Picador, London, 1977
Neal Sher, Aron Goldberg and Elizabeth White, *Robert Jan Verbelen and the United States Government*, report to the US Assistant Attorney General, Washington, 1988
William Shirer, *The Rise and Fall of the Third Reich*, Pan, London, 1968
William Shirer, *The Nightmare Years 1930–1940*, Little Brown, Boston, 1984
Paul Shoup, *Communism and the Yugoslav National Question*, Columbia University Press, New York, 1968

*Christopher Simpson, *Blowback*, Weidenfeld & Nicolson, New York, 1988
Dušar Sindik (ed.), Secaija Jevreja na Logor Jasenovac, Čačanski Glas, Beograd, 1972
David Smiley, *Albanian Assignement*, Chatto & Windus, London, 1984
Branimir Stanojević, *Under the Wing of Fascism. Andrija Artuković and the Ustaša Regime*, Tanjug, Belgrade, 1985
Branimir Stanojević, *Tunel Pačova*, Eksportpres, Belgrade, 1988
Hansjacob Stehle, *Die Ospolitik des Vatikans 1917–1975*, Piper Verlag, Munich, 1975
Stewart Stehling, *Weimar and the Vatican 1919–1933*, Princeton University Press, 1983
*William Stevenson, *Intrepid's Last Case*, Villard Books, New York, 1983
Drago Šudar, *Coming of Age in Tito's Prisons*, Mosor, Los Angeles, 1987
Anton Szanya, *Alois Hudal Zum 100 Geburtstag eines gern vergessenen Österreichers*, Der Freidenker, anno 15, issue 4, 1985
James Taylor and Warren Shaw, *A Dictionary of the Third Reich*, Grafton Books, London, 1987
Tajni Documenti od Odnosima Vatikana i Ustaške NDH, Biblioteka Društva Novinara Hrvatska, Zagreb, 1952
Nikolai Tolstoy, *The Great Betrayal*, Charles Scribner, New York, 1978
Nikolai Tolstoy, *Victims of Yalta*, Corgi, London, 1979
Nikolai Tolstoy, *The Minister and the Massacres*, Century Hutchinson, London, 1986
Jozo Tomasevich, *The Chetniks*, Stanford University Press, Stanford, 1975
Leopold Trepper, *The Great Game*, McGraw-Hill, New York, 1977
Henry Turner, *German Big Business and the Rise of Hitler*, Oxford University Press, New York, 1987
Ann and John Tusa, *The Nuremberg Trial*, Papermac, London, 1984
United States, Comptroller General, *Nazis and Axis Collaborators Were Used to Further US Anti-Communist Objectives in Europe – Some Immigrated to the United States*, General Accounting Office, Washington, 1985
Bela Vago, *The Shadow of the Swastika*, Saxon House, Farnborough, 1975
Nicholas Vakar, *Belorussia: The Making of a Nation*, Harvard University Press, Harvard, 1956
Jochen von Lang (ed.), *Eichmann Interrogated*, Farrar, Strauss & Giroux, New York, 1983
Fritz von Papen, *Memoirs*, André Deutsch, London, 1952
Bernard Wasserstein, *Britain and the Jews of Europe 1939–1945*, Clarendon, London, 1979
Peter Watson, *The Nazi's Wife*, Grafton, London, 1986
Erika Weinzierl, 'Austria: Church, State, Politics' in Richard Wolff and Jorg Hönsch (eds), *Catholics, the State and the European Radical Right 1919–1945*, Columbia University Press, New York, 1987
Charles Whiting, *Gehlen's Master Spy*, Ballantine, New York 1972
*Simon Wiesenthal, *The Murderers Among Us*, Heinemann, London, 1967
*Robin Winks, *Cloak and Gown*, Morrow, New York, 1987

David Wise and Thomas B. Ross, *The Espionage Establishment*, Bantam, London/New York, 1968
Robert Wistrich, *Who's Who in Nazi Germany*, Weidenfeld & Nicolson, London, 1982
*Peter Wright, *Spycatcher*, Viking Penguin, New York, 1987
David S. Wyman, *The Abandonment of the Jews*, Pantheon, New York, 1984
David Yallop, *In God's Name*, Jonathan Cape, London, 1984
Dragoljub Zivojinović and Dejan Lučić, *Varvarstvo u ime Hristovo. Priloži za Magnum Crimen*, Nova Knjiga, Belgrade, 1988
Susan Zucotti, *The Italians and the Holocaust*, Halban, London, 1988

Index

Abetz, Otto 296
ABN, *see* Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations
Abramow, General 152, 153
Abramtchik Faction 155, 156, 157
Abramtchik, Mikolai 156, 201
Abs, Hermann 278–9
Ahčin, Revd 127
Albania, abortive coup 231
Alexander, Field Marshal 74
Alexander, King of Yugoslavia 71, 72
Alexandrov, pseud., *see* Voss, Claudius
Allen, Charles 46
Altmann, Klaus, pseud., *See* Barbie, Klaus
Anastasius, Metropolitan 178, 182
Anders, General 204
Angleton, James Jesus 38, 39, 235, 236, 238, 239, 259–60, 270, 279, 296, 301–2
Anima, *see* Pontificio Santa Maria dell'Anima
Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations (ABN) 139, 155, 187, 189, 200–1, 207, 217, 223, 269
Arab nations, nerve gases 273
Aranyos, Pablo, *see* Pavelić
Argentina, Nazis in *xiii–xv,* 28, 29, 48, 85–6, 205–6; *Prime Time* special *xi–xiii*
Ashman, Charles 69
Augsberg, Emil 243, 246, 247, 251, 256
Auschwitz camp 14, 180, 286
Australia, Nazis in 275
Austria: and Intermarium 266; Ratline 87, 233, 234, 238–41, 242; and Waldheim 266–7
Austro-Hungarian Empire, collapse 7

Babić, Colonel 303
Bad Ischl, Austria 26
Bajdalakow, Victor 257
Bandera, Stephen 139, 157, 174, 186–7, 197, 200–1, 202, 247, 248–9, 259, 273
Bank of International Settlements (BIS) 276, 293; and Allen Dulles 295–7
Bankers, Ratlines 275–9
Banks, Aaron 246
Barbie, Klaus 242, 246, 247–8, 250–6, 268, 283; escape 254–5; missing dossier 232–3
Bayer, Monsignor Karl 27
Baykolov, Anatoli 209, 210, 213
BB Apparat 272
Beria, Lavrenty 216, 220
Bermuda Conference (1943) 14
Bicchierai, Mons. Don Giuseppe 38
Bigelow, Emerson 297–9
Bishop, Robert 255
Black Orchestra 162–72, 214, 280–1; post-war 232; Soviet connection 163, 168, 262–3
Black Ravens 33
'Blacks' 205, 206
Blet, Revd Pierre 49
Bloodstone, Operation 269
Blum, Paul 225, 230
Blunt, Anthony 208, 213
Bohachevsky, Bishop Constantine 178, 192
Bokun, Branko 72–3

Boldyreff (NTS, Washington) 257
Bosiljevic, Vladimir 240
Bower Tom 273
Brazil Nazis in 28
Brown Brothers, Harriman 294
Brunner, Alois 28
Bučko, Bishop Ivan (John) 58, 59, 175, 178, 179, 181, 190, 191, 192, 193, 203, 248, 249
Budak, Mile 92
Bujanović, Fr Josip 86, 125
Burgess, Guy 213, 223
burst transmitter, use 170, 171, 172
Bush, President George 271
Byelorussia 156

Calvi, Roberto 279
Cambridge 'Apostles' 208, 213
Canada: Nazis in 220, 221–3, 224; and Ukrainian prisoners 193
Canaris, Admiral Wilhelm 157–8, 159, 161–8, 170, 176, 184, 185, 214, 220
Caritas International 27, 28, 35, 41
Caronti, Dom Emanuele 225
Carroll, Mons. Walter 45, 46
Casey, William 271
Castelgandolfo 78
Catholic Central European Confederation 17, 51, 54, 55, 57, 101–2, 127
Catholic Church: Communism, threat to 12, 21, Italian clergy in 7; Nazism and 12–13; powers of 6–7; *see also* Vatican
Cave Brown, Anthony 157, 166, 221, 276, 281
Cecelja, Fr 91–6, 112, 115, 116, 241; and Draganović 147–8
Central European Confederation, Catholic 17, 51, 54, 55, 57, 127, 181–2
Circle Noir 39
Chadwick, Owen 11, 166
Cheka 150, 151, 155
Chetniks 84, 187–8
Chicago Tribune 299
Christian Front 23, 24
Churchill, Winston 212, 215, 286
CIA: and ABN 269; DDU and 260–l; divisions 234; Gehlen and 258, 259; and Slovakian Nazis 220
CIC and ABN 201, and Austrian-Vatican Ratlines 240, 241; and Barbie 250–2, 254; and Cecelja 93–4; and Križari 125; Munich 234; and NTS 257, 258; Operation Circle 41–4, 48; and Pavelić 77, 79; and Turkul 226
Circle, Operation 41–4, 48, 50
Clissold, Maj. Stephen 108–9, 123
Coburg, Duke of 211
Cold War disasters, blame 207
Colville, John 102
Commissione Pontificia d'Assistenza, *see* Pontifical Commission for Assistance
Communism, threat 8–10, 12, 16–17, 20–4
Comte, Carlo, pseud., *see* Rauff, Walter
Concordat (1933) 10, 12, 280
Condric, Fr Ivan 121
Congregatio pro Ecclesia Orientali 182, 191
Continental Union 66–7, 68
Cookridge, E. H. 244
Costello, John 209
Crijen, Daniel 87
Croatia: Catholicism 57, 73; 'independent' 70, 97, 104, 110 massacres 71; Serbs in 92; stolen treasures 123–4, 125; Ustashi 51, 88–9, 91; and Yugoslavia 89
Croatian Red Cross 89, 92–3, 94, 95, 97
Crown Project 228
Cuba, Nazism 49
Čukić, Kosta 58

Danubian federal state, *see* Central European Confederation
Daugherty, Harry 291
Dawes Plan 291–2
DDU 234, 235, 241, 246, 247, and ABN 269; and Barbie 250, 251, 252, 253, 254; and CIA 260–1
de Fiore, Angelo 58
De Gasperi, Alcide 17–18, 19, 59, 65, 133, 134, 237, 268

dell'Acqua, Mons. Angelo 113
democracy, defects of 7
Desdhenes Commission (1986) 222
Devčić, Lt. Col. 101
Dewey, Thomas 234, 249–50
Dillon Read 294
Displaced Persons, Pontifical Assistance 25, 34–6
Divini Redemptoris Encyclical 10
Doboj massacres 98–9
Donaldson, Sam *xii, xiii*
Donovan, General William 278, 300
Došen, Dragutin 77
Draganović, Fr Krunoslav *xi–xiii, xvii,* 109, 112–14, 282; and Communist Yugoslavia 143–4; defection 143–50; as double agent 145, 150; and Dulles 239–40; and Intermanum 56–9; interrogated by UDBA 148–50; justification of actions 110– 12; and Križari 121–2, 123, 124–5, 127, 135; money laundering 284; and Montini 85, 89, 115–16; Nazi-smuggling 116, 239–40, 243; office burgled 103–4, 110, and Pavelić 76–9, 85, 86, 89, 98, 113; and Pečnikar 103; and Petranović 106–7, and Pius X11 117; Ratlines 76, 87, 88, 89–91,95–6, 113, 136; and Rover 137, 138; and Rožman 129–30; and Ustashi 96, 100, 102, 103–4; Vatican and 115– 19; and the Vatican/Swiss bank connection 299; as war criminal 96–8, 99
Dulles, Allen: and the Bank of International Settlements (BIS) 295–6; at CIA 39, 255, 260, 269–70; and Gehlen 243, 246, 250; and the Hungarian Nazi treasury 298–9; and IRC passports 284; money laundering *xiv–xv,* 277; and Nazi banks 276–7; and the Nazi party 295–6; Nazi smuggling 233, 234, 238–41; and 970th CIC 241–2; and NTS 246, 258–9; post-war organization 233–4; and Ratlines 269–70, surrender negotiations 38; and Turkul 225–7; and the World Commerce Corporation 300
Dulles, John Foster *xiv;* and I. G. Farben 293; and Kaiser Wilhelm, 290–1; and the Nazi party 295
Dunderdale, Commander 153
Dupuis, Mme Gertrude 40, 41
Durčansky, Ferdinand *xviii,* 58, 217–23
Dzerzhinsky, Felix 150, 151

East Timor 281
Edward VIII, King 210, 211–13, 216, 274
Eichmann, Adolf 14, 28–9, 108
Eisenhower, Dwight D. 293
Eizenstat report 290
'ELLI' (GRU spy) 215–16
Ellis, Charles Howard ('Dickie') 158, 213, 216, 274
emigration, illegal 48–9
Encyclicals: *Divini Redemptoris* 10; Mit *brennender Sorge* 10; *Rerum Novarum* 9
Europe, Confederation, *see* Central European Confederation

'FAN 75' 206, 238
Farago, Ladislas 34–5, 159, 183
Fascism and upper classes 212, 213
Felfe, Hans 250, 270
Ferjencik, General 218–19
Ferrari, Italian police chief 65
Findlay, Col. C. 90
Fischer, Georg, pseud., *see* Brunner
Ford, Henry, and Nazism 294
France: and Barbie 251–3, 254; Catholicism 17, 51; Deuxime Bureau 53; Etat Majeur 53, 54; and Intermarium 51–2, 53, 55; post-war foreign policy 52–4; and Ratlines 268; and Vatican 17, 52, 53–4, 55
Franciscan press 99, 100
Franco, General 66
Fütling, Walter 42

Gabor, Zsa Zsa 107
Gafençu, Gregorij 58

Galician SS 183, 186, 187–8, 189–90; at Rimini 190, 194–6, 198; in UK 196, 197–200
Gallov, FrJoseph 43–4, 59
Gallua, Padre 60
Garelon, of Ukrainian Union 199
Gasparri, Cardinal Pietro 7
Gaulle, General Charles de 52, 53–4, 238, 252, 253, 268
Gehlen, General Reinhard 150, 168–9, 171; and CIA 258, 259; and Region IV 250, 251; as US agent 243–7
Genoa 87, 104, 106–7, 108, 109
Germany: American gold investment in 292–94; Catholic-Jewish marriages 15; Concordat with Vatican (1933) 10, 12, 30; and Intermarium 63; nerve gases 272–3; and nuclear proliferation 273; pre-war scientific advancement 291–300; Ukrainian refugees in 192; Versailles Treaty 290–2
Gilroy, Cardinal 117
Gisevius, Hans Bernd 277–8
Glasenap, Gen. Peter von 245
Glasenbach camp 26
Göbbels, Joseph 31
Golden, Elliot 246
Gouzenko, defector 215
Government Communications Headquarters, *xv*
Gowen, Franklin 15, 21 50, 68
Gowen, William 103, 110, 118, 119, 126, 238, 241; as a CIC agent 301, 303, 304; and Intermarium 48, 49–52, 55, 59–60, 63–6, 78; on IRC 155–6; and Križari 122–3; and Pavelić 77, 78–9, 83–4, 85; and Ustashi money 298; and Vajta 51–2, 59–69
Grabbe, Fr 179, 257
Graham, Fr Robert 28–9, 31, 32, 35, 42, 45, 49, 89, 114, 115, 118, 302
Grand Orient 52–3
Great Britain: and ABN 200–1, 207; and Fascists 189, 193; foreign policy 55–6, 119; and Holocaust 13–15; and Intermarium 51–2, 53, 55–6, 58; and Križari 122, 123, 126–7, 135–6; Nazi-smuggling 204; and Pavelić 71–2, 74–5, 80, 83, 84–5, 122, 126; post-war policy 55–6; and Ratlines 273–5, and Rožman 129–32; and Tito 126; and Ukrainian POWs 190, 191, 194–200, 201, 202, 203; and USSR 215; and Ustashi 71–2, 85, 89, 205; Vatican and 114
Grennan, Bernard 82
'Greys' 205, 206, 283
Griffin, Cardinal 117
Gromadskii, Archbishop Alexis 179
GRU 151, 153, 154, 156, 176, 207
Grynioch, Fr Ivan 176, Igl, 247, 249, 250
G-series nerve gases 272–3
Gubbins, Colin 216, 274
Guderian General Heinz 183, 184
Gypsies, persecution 71, 76, 92

Hadju, Camile 248
Halifax, Lord 212
Hapsburg dynasty 7
Hardy, René 251
Hartl, Albert 17
Hartman, Lieut. Col. Charles 82
Headache/Boathill, Operation 244
Hefer, Stjepan 107, 124
Heydrich (SS agent) 163, 167, 168
Himmler, Heinrich 185
Hitler, Adolf 161–2, 163; and Anglo-German alliance 211; and Edward VIII 211, 212; Archbishop Pacelli and 294–5; and Vatican 280–2
Höchman, Remy *xvii*
Hoffman, Dr 232, 233, 253
Höhne, Heinz 169, 184,
Hollis, Roger 213, 216
Holocaust: Vatican and 117, 285–7; Western allies and 13–15
Holy Office 31
Holy See, *see* Vatican
Hoover, J. Edgar 211
Hrvatsti Narod (Croatian Nation) 91
Hudal, Bishop Alois 24, 29–34, 36–7, 282; anti-Semitism 47; and

Intermarium 59; Nazi-smuggling 26–9, 34–5, 37–40, 42, 108; and Pius XII 30, 31–3; pressured by Vatican 46–7; and Rauff 33, 37; and Wächter 202–3
Hungary: and Italy 59; Jews, extermination 14–15; Secret Service 62–3; Soviet atrocities 19–20; uprising (1956) 261
Hurley, Bishop Joseph Patrick 94
Hussman (Allied agent) 296

I. G. Farben 293
identity cards, false 27, 28, 99, 100, 118, 137, 203, 284; local 41; replaced 40–1
Inner Line 157
Innitzer, Cardinal Theodore 30
Insabato, Italian Agrarian Party head 60
Intermarium 48, 50–1, 54, 55–6; Britain and 51, 52, 55–6; British agents in 58–9, 203–4; and Durcansky 219, 221; France and 51–2, 53, 55, 252, 253; and German intelligence 63; Italy and 267–8; leaders 59; lords of 221; Pan-Danubian Confederation 126; post-war revival 56; United States and 62, 63–6, 83, 269; Vajta's campaign against 66, 67; Vatican and 237–8; White Russians in 155
International Red Cross (IRC): and Croatian Red Cross 92–3; passports 27, 28, 40, 41–5, 86, 93, 95, 99, 240, 241, 252–3, 284
International Rescue Committee 271
Ionov, Fr Alexei 179
Iron Curtain 20
Italy 65; Allied withdrawal 204; Catholicism 7; Christian Democrats 237; Communist Party 38; Fascism 7; Hungary and 59; and Intermarium 56–7, 267–8; Jews, extermination 15–16; and Križari arms 133–4, 135; R Day (1947) 238; and Ratlines 268; Red Cross 135; and Vatican 8–9
Jahnke, Oberst Kurt 160–1, 162, 163, 167, 168, 170–1, 214, 225
Japanese, and Turkul 158–9, 165–7, 169, 171
Jarschel, Alfred 33–4, 38, 39
Jasenovac camp 111
Jean, Fr Josephat 198
Jesuits: battle with Communism 22–3, 24; and Intermarium 59, and Pavelic 79–80, and Uniate church 165, 182; in USSR 165–6, 183
Jews: Croatian 71, 76, 92, 96, 98; extermination, and Western policy 13–15; resettlement 14; Ukrainian 174
John XXIII, Pope 148
John Paul II, Pope *xvii*
Johnson (British agent) 228, 230–1
Jonson, Lt. Col. 123, 132
Juretić, Augustine 302–3

'K', Black Orchestra agent 166
Kaas, Mons. 162, 163
Kalley, Nicholas 281
Kamber, Fr Dragutin 98–9, 106
Kauder, Richard (Max Klatt, pseud.) 159–60
Kavran, Bozidar 116, 124, 136, 138
Keller, Benedictine monk 163
KGB 151, 155, 207
Kirschbaum, Jozef 222
Kisiliew, Alexiew 179, 257
Kiyosho, Isono 166, 169
Klatt, Max 159, 160, 168–71, 183–4, 185, 224, 225, 227, 228–9, 230, 231
Klement, Richard, pseud., *see* Eichmann
KONR 186, 250–1
Kopps, Reinhard *xii*
Kotnik Ciro 58
KOW 256
Kowalewsky, Tuan 166, 257
Kozara offensive (1942) 96, 97, 266
Krek, Miha 58, 129, 130–1
Kren, Vladimir 102, 108–9, 117
Križari 119; finances 123, 298; leadership 124–5, recruitment 135–6, Slovene 128; and stolen treasure 132; trials of 120–2, 127,

Križari (*continued*) 136, 138; weapons 126–7, 133–4, 135
Kunzcewincz, as 'K' 166
Kupetov, Alexander 153
Kushmir, Revd 193, 196

'Lang', agent 182, 184, 185
Lateran Treaty (1929) 8–9
LaVista, Vincent 41–5, 48–9, 59, 217, 253
Lavitrano, Cardinal 176, 178, 179, 180, 181
Lebed, Mykola 176, 247–8, 250, 256, 259, 260
Lebrun, Henri 268
Ledochovski, Jesuit General 166
Leiber, Fr 162, 163, 164, 165
Leo XIII, Pope 8–9
Lernoux, Penny 279
Liddell, Guy 209, 216
Lipovec, Franjo 134
Ljotić, Dimitrije 187, 230
Longin, Ira 227, 230
Lyons, Paul 44, 239

McCarthy, Senator Joseph 26
McCloy, Commissioner 252
MacDonald, Ramsay 211
Maček, Vlatko 56
Macan, Lord 212
McIntyre, John 273
McKittrick, William 293
Maclean, Brig. Gen. Fitzroy: and Ustashi 122, 205; and Ukrainians 194–5, 196, 198, 200
Maclean, Donald 223
McNeil, Hector 197, 198
Magjerec, Mons. Juraj 90, 104
Maglione, Cardinal 18, 73
Maly, Fr Theodore 208, 213
Mandić, Fr Dominik 90, 100, 118
Manhattan, Avro 86
Manning, Paul 277, 278
Marcus, Karl 214, 232, 233
Marinković, Drago 133
Marković, Drago 133
Marković, Josip 102
Marshall, George 94, 192
Masurovsky, Mark 298–9
MAX network 168–72, 225, 229, 266
Meloyk faction 157, 176
Mengele, Joseph 272
Mengele, Karl 272
Menzies, Sir Stewart 154, 155, 164, 204, 211, 216, 220
Merck, Kurt 251
Mexico, Nazism 48
Middle East, and nerve gases 273
Migliore, Dr 90
Mihailović Faction 157
Mihailović, Draza 187–8
Milano, Maj. 228, 239, 240, 241, 243, 244, 254, 257
Miloś, Ljubo 111, 122, 126
Mindszenty, Cardinal 20
Mit brennender Sorge Encyclical 10
Mobile Courts Martial 136
mobile gas vans 33
money laundering 39–40, 49, 132–3, 275–9
Montgomery, Lord 215
Montini, Mons Giovanni (later Paul VI) 18–19; Angleton and 235, 236, 303; and Croatia 72, 73; diplomacy, abused 285; and Draganović 58, 85, 89, 115–16, 143; and Fascism 19; and Hudal 34–5, and Pavelić 85; and Pius XII 18; and Ratlines 118; and Sindona 279
Morena, Gono 82
MORITZ network 170
Mudd, Robert 77–8, 100, 101 103–4, 118
Müller, Joseph 162, 163, 164, 165, 253, 266
Munich: ABN in 201; CIC 234; Communist (1919) 3–4, 5
Mussolini, Benito 8–9; and Turkul 170
Myz-Mysin 58

Naletilić, Vitomir 90
National Security Agency *xv*
Narodny Trudovoi Soyuz (NTS) 154–5, 156, 157, 158, 257–8, 261; denounced 257–8; leaders 257; 'new' 244–6; and Vlasov Army 185–6, 187

Nazis: escaped 88; Red Cross passports 41–5; screening 205–6
Neal, Jack D. 23, 201
Nedbal, Mons. Johannes 32–3
nerve gases 272–3
New Republic 289
Nikolić, Professor 117
Nixon, Richard 270
Norman, Montagu 212
North, Oliver 271
Novi List (Ustashi newspaper) 106
NTS, *see* Narodny Trudovoi Soyuz
Nyísztor, Mons. Zoltán 66

ODESSA 88, 202
Office of Strategic Studies (OSS) 62; name change 233–4; and Turkul 225
Offie, Carmel 269
Ogulin massacres 104
Ohletz, Werner 257–8
Omrčanin, Ivo 117–18, 126, 272
Operations: Barbarossa 167; Bloodstone 269; Circle 41–5, 48, 50; Headache/Boathill 244; Red Sox/Red Cap 260, 261; Rusty 229, 244; Sunrise 38; Tobacco 229; WIN 151
Organisation of Ukrainian Nationalists (OUN) 174, 186, 247; split 248–9, 250, 256
Oriental Congregation 75–6, 182, 191
Orthodox Church, divisions 182
Osborne, Sir D'Arcy 162, 164, 303
Osis, Robert 217
OSS, *see* Office of Strategic studies
OUN, see Organization of Ukrainian Nationalists
Ovseenko, Boris 257

Pacelli, Eugenio 11; and Hitler 294–5; Papal Nuncio in Munich 3–4, 6, 11; as Pope, *see* Pius XII; as Secretary of State 10, 11–12
Panciroli, Revd Romeo 49
Pan-Danubian Confederation 125, 126, 127
Panteleimon, Bishop 178
Papal States, loss 6, 8
Papée, Casimir 58, 65, 249
Papen, Franz von 30, 173
Parkinson, William *xii*
Paris: Russian émigrés 153–4, 156, 157, 158; White Russians in 50
Parri, Ferruccio 237
Parsch camp 226
Pascalina, Sister 294
passports, false 27, 240, 241, 252–3
Paul VI, Pope 85; and Draganović 144
Pavelić, Ante *xvi, xvii,* 100, 112, 119, 282; Britain and 126; and Cecelja 93; and Draganović 98; escape 70–87; and Krizari 120, 124; Mobile Courts Martial 136; Personal Bodyguard 136; as Poglavnik 70, 91, 92, 96, 97; and Rover 138; smuggling network 89; and stolen treasures 123, 132, 284, 297, 298, 299, 300; and Waldheim 266
Pawlikowski, Bishop Ferdinand 106
Pearson, Drew 68, 69
Pečnikar, Vilko 102–3, 124
Pecorari, Fausto 60, 68
People's Labour Alliance, *see* Naroday Trudovoi Soyuz (NTS)
Perić, Stjepo 117
Perić, Ratko 91
Perón, Evita *xiii*
Perón, Juan *xiii,* 86
Perón family, 300
Perry, Col. Lewis 136, 137, 227, 240–1, 243, 245, 246, 257
Peterson, Capt. 247
Petranović, Mons. Karlo 104–9, 112–14
Philby, Harold Adrian Russll 'Kim' 208–9, 213–24, 233, 302, 303–4; and ABN 217; and Vatican 214, 217
Philippa, SS 108
Pius XI, Pope 5, 51, 152, 287; and Communism 5–6, 9–10, 12; and democracy 7; and Fascism 8; and Nazism 10–11, 12; policies 12
Pius XII, Pope 152, 259, 265–6, 269, 271; and Black Orchestra 162–3, 164; and Communism 4,

Pius XII, Pope (*continued*)
12, 19–20; diplomacy, abused 285, and Draganović 113, 116, 117; election 12; factors affecting 18, 264; and Galician SS 193, 203; German influence on 46; and Hitler 280–2; and Hudal 30, 31–3; and Hungarian Jews 14–15; international support for 11; and Italian Communism 235–7; and Jews 285–6; and Križari 128; and Montini 18; Nazis and 173, 175–8, 180; and Nazism 4, 12; Nazi-smuggling 50; obstruction of justice 282–4; and Pavelić 71–2, 73, 92; policies 12–13, 22, as rescuer of Jews 15–16; as Secretary of State 18, 34; and Sidor 222; Soviet attacks on 20, and Ustashi 117
Poland, Nazi atrocities 161
Poncet, François 252–3, 268, 284
Pontifical Commission for Assistance 35, 41, 58, 99, 108, 149; Croatian Committee 90
Pontificio Santa Mana dell'Anima 26, 29, 32–3, 46–7
Popes: papal crowns 21–2; powers of 6–7
Prešeren, Mons. Anton 58, 59, 127, 129
Priebke, Erich *xii, xiii, xiv*
Prime Time (ABC TV), special on Nazis in Argentina *xi–xiii*
'Project 113' 229
Prokop, Petar 138
Prometheus 155, 200, 204, 274
Protulipac, Ivan 135
Putlitz (Soviet agent) 210

R Day (1947) 204–7, 238
Radio Liberty 260, 269
Rajičević, Ivo 102
Ratlines *xvi,* 300; American finance 45–6; Austria- Vatican 233, 234, 238–41, 242; Bankers 277–9; Britain and 273–5; Communist penetration 143, 146, 148; Croatian priests in 87, 98; finances 98; France and 268; Italy and 268; KGB takeover 217, origin 25; United States 255; USSR and 265–6
Rauff, Walter 33, 37–40, 234, 296; Hudal and 33, 37
Reagan, President Ronald 271
Reale, Eugenio 60, 65
Red Cross, *see* International Red Cross
Red Orchestra 162, 163, 167, 168, 170, 171, 266, 272; Black Orchestra and 163, 168
Red Sox/Red Cap, Operation 260, 261
refugees, *see* Pontifical Commission for Assistance
Reich Security Main Office (RSHA) 17
Reilly, Sidney 151
Rerum Novarum Encyclical 9
Reynaud, Paul 268
Ribbentrop, Joachim von 210–11, 213; Ribbentrop-Molotov pact 16
Rimini camp 190, 194–6, 198; escapes 42–3, 274
Rockefeller family 293; and Nazism 294
Rohracher, Archbishop Andreas 126, 132
Rokossovsky, Marshal 160
Romac, Fr Rocque 254
'Roman Way' 49
Romanov, Fr George Leonidov 179, 182, 225, 230–1
Rome, in Ratline 87
Roncalli, Cardinal (later John XXIII) 287
Roosevelt, President 50, 286
Rosenberg, Alfred 31, 185
Rothermere, Lord 212
Rožman, Bishop 298
Rover, Srečko *xvi,* 136–8, 241
ROWS 153–4, 155–6, 227
Rožman, Bishop Gregory 126, 128–33, 284
RSHA, *see* Reich Security Main Office
Rubini, Marko, pseud., *see* Vladimir Kren
Ruiz-Gimenez, Joaquin 66–7
Rukavina, Jozo 113
Rupčić, Gen. Dragutin 102

Rupprecht, Oliver Virtschologi 61
Rusty, Operation 229, 244
Ruthenian Catholics, Pope and 191
Ryle (CIC agent) 228, 230

'S Force Verona' 38
St Andrew's Flag, League 245, 256, 258
Safehaven, Operation 298
Salzburg area, Ustashi in 93
San Girolamo, Confraternity of 56, 57, 76, 77, 79, 90; Draganović leaves 147–8; spy in 100, 101–2, 103–4, 107, 110, 115; UDBA spy in 145, 150; Ustashi in 78, 96, 98, 99, 100, 102, 103, 104, 115, 117, 121, 124, 127
San Girolamo, Institute 90–1
Sarić, Bishop Ivan 57, 126, 133
Sarin nerve gas 272–3
Schellenberg, Walter 160–1, 164, 166–7, 171, 184, 214, 231, 232, 266
Schneider, Fr Burkhart 31–2, 37
Schroeder, Kurt von 276
Schröder Bank 293
Schuster, Cardinal 106
Schwarzc Kapellc, see Black Orchestra
Schwendt, Frederico 39, 40, 43, 297
SC/A 227
SCI-Z 38, 234
Secret Intelligence Service (SIS) 55, 56, 77, 119, 122, 123
Seguić, Fr Cherubino 73
Seper, Cardinal 145
Seraphim, Metropolitan 178, 182
Serbs: forced conversion 96, 97; persecution 71, 74, 76, 92, 96, 97, 98, 104–5
Sereny, Gitta 26, 27
Schacht, Hjalmar, and Nazism 294
Shandruk, Gen. Pavel 187, 189, 200, 203
Shawcross, Lord 273, 278
Siam, Crown Prince 62
Sidor, Karol 222
Simčić, Mons. Milan 85, 91, 100–1, 117, 125; on Draganović 112, 114, 115–16, 124; and Draganović's defection 145, 146, 147, 148; on Pavelić 86–7
Simcock, Major 90, 111
Simpson, Wallis 210, 211, 213
Sindona, Michele 279
Singlaub, John 271
Siri, Ardhbishop 28, 39–40, 109
Six, Dr Franz 243, 246
SKF corporation 275–6
Skobline, General 152, 153, 157
Slovak Liberation Movement 218
Slovene Clerical Party 127, 128
Slovenian Homeguard 128–9
Soman nerve gas 272
Sorge, Richard 158, 160, 166, 167, 168
Source Werthe 170
Soviet Union, *see* USSR
Spain and Continental Union 66–7
Spanish Cultural Institute 67
Spellman, Cardinal 132, 196
Spinne, Die 88
SSU, *see* Strategic Services Unit
Stalin, Joseph 5, 6, 9, 161, 167, 192, 214–15, 226
Stangl, Franz 25–8
Stanakievich, Stanislav 201, 242, 260
Starčević, Mile 101, 107, 117
Stephenson, Sir William 262, 278, 300
Stepinac, Cardinal Aloysius 20, 57, 91, 94, 97
Stetsko, Jaroslav 174, 186, 201, 223, 224, 271
Stevens, Lt. Col. Richard 229
Strategic Services Unit (SSU) 233–4
Sullivan & Cromwell (law firm) 290–2, 293; Dawes Plan 291–2
Susić, Lovro 101, 102, 123–4
Svijet (The World) magazine 144, 148, 149–50
Swiss bankers; American investents 292–3; Jewish groups and *xv;* and the Vatican 289–90, 295–6, 297–8
SWOD 256
Szepticky, Mgr 173–5, 177, 179, 181
Szumlakowski, Marjan 60, 66, 67

Tabun nerve gas 272
Tardini, Mons. Domenico 16, 18, 34, 131
Taylor, Myron 50
TECHNICA 268
Tenzerov, Y.V. 245, 246, 247, 250–1
Thatcher, Margaret 274
Thomas, Willard 133–4
Thyssen family, and Nazism 294
Tiso, Mons. 15
Tisserant, Cardinal 21, 54, 182–3
Tito, Marshal 74, 75, 76, 84, 89, 143, 146, 147; Britain and 126; Vatican and 121, 147, 148
Tobacco, Operation 229
Toth, Dragutin 101, 102, 117
Trading With the Enemy Act 293–4
Treblinka camp 25–6
Trepper, Leopold 167
Trieste: Free Territory 135; Križari in 134–5
Trofaiach, Krizari base 136, 137, 138
Truman, President Harry 67, 238, 242, 250, 303
Trust, The 151
Tudjman, Franjo *xvi*
Turkul, Prince Anton Vasilevich 151–61, 178, 261–2; arrested 228–31; and Ellis 274; and Gehlen 168, 244; and Jahnke 60, 161, 165–6; Japanese and 158–9, 165–7, 169, 171; and Jesuits 183; and Liddell 209, 213; and OSS 225; radio espionage 184; released 244–6; in Rome 162, 165, 169, 170, 172, 262; in Salzburg 225; and Soviet émigrés 244–6, 256–7, 258, 261; in Vatican 152; and Vlasov army 185–6, 224; in wartime r84–5; and Windsor scandal 212–13; in Yugoslavia 187

UDBA, and Draganović 144–50
UHWR 249
Ukraine: Catholic-Nazi alliance 173, 175–9, 180, 181, 182; Churches, united 175, 176, 177, 178–9, 182; independence 176; Nazi puppet government, and 200–1; Nazis in 174–5; prewar nationality 191–2; Uniate Church 20
Ukrainian Catholic Church 173–5
Ukrainian Insurgent Army (UPA) 186, 197
Ukrainian Union 198, 199
Uniate Church 20, 173, 175; division 182
United States: and ABN 201; and Bandera 201–2; and Central European Confederation 181–2; Croatian Independence Day 271; and Galician SS 190–4, 202; Germany, pre-war investment in 292–4; and Hudal 36–7; and Intermarium 62, 63–6, 67–9, 83, 269; and Križari 135–6; National Catholic Welfare Conference 196; Nazi-hunting 62; and NTS 154; and Pavelić 77–85; and Ratlines 237, 255, 268–71; and Rožman 132; and Ukrainian POWs 190–4, 196; and Ustashi 71–2, 85, 89, and Vatican 44–6; War Refugee Board 14
UPA, *see* Ukrainian Insurgent Army
USSR: *agents provocateurs* 150–l, 155; and Catholic Central European Confederation 182; Czar's secret police 150–1, 155; double agents 151, 152, 266; and Ratlines 207, 265–6; and Vatican 17, 19–24, 265
Ustashi 51, 57, 88–9, 91; Britain and 71–2; Croatian priests in 91–2, 97–8; and Croatian Red Cross 95; escape routes 78; as 'Greys' 205; massacres 71, 73, 74, 96; money laundering 124, 132–3; Office for Colonisation 96, 97; stolen treasure 98, 123–4, 125, 132, 284, 297; trials of 120–2; US and 71–2; use in anti-Communist struggle 85; as war criminals 110, *see also* Križari

Vajta, Ferenc 51–6, 59–69, 77, 122, 207, 237–8, 301
Vansittart, Robert 212, 232, 233
Varos, Miroslav 145–6, 150

Vatican: anti-Communist crusade 182–3, 186, 298; Bank, *see* Vatican Bank; Cold War strategy 12, 119; Communism and 8–10, 16–17, 20–4; Concordat (1933) 10, 12, 30; covert operations 23; diplomatic privileges, abuse 284–5; and Draganović 115–l9; Dulles and 238–40; espionage 22, 23; factors affecting 264, and Fascism 9, 47; finances 23–4; foreign policy 18–19, 51; France and 17, 52, 53–4, 55; and Galician SS 191–4; Hitler and 280–2; and Holocaust 285–7; identity cards 41; Information Service 18, 22; Intermarium and 237–8; Japanese connection 171; Jews, rescue 15–16; and Križari 125–8; money laundering 218, 284; Nazi recruits in anti-Communist struggle 24; and Nazism 10–11, 16; Nazi-smuggling operations 48–50, 88; neutrality 281; obstruction of justice 282–4; passports 41, 44; and Pavelić 81–4, 85, 122; peace efforts 281; Philby and 214, 302, 303; Ratlines 279; Ratlines cover-up *xvi–xviii;* and San Girolamo 57; Secretariat of State 11; State 6, 8; stolen goods, receiving 284, 288–9; and Swiss banking 289–90, 295–6, 297–8; Tito and 121; Turkul in 152; and Ukraine 172; and underground Catholic armies 139; US and 44–6; USSR and 17, 19–24, 262–3, 265; and the Ustashi 113, 117, 126; Western Allies and 114–15, 281–2, and world affairs 6–9; Yugoslavia and 147, 148
Vatican Bank 16, 40, 279; and Nazi gold *xv,* 297–8
Vidal, Captain 250, 251, 252, 254
Virtschologi-Rupprecht, Oliver, *see* Rupprecht
Vitalie, Archbishop 178
Vlasov Army 224, 245
Vlasov, General 185–6, 187, 193
Volkov, defector 215
Voss, Claudius (Alexandrov) 152, 153–4, 155–6, 157, 227, 228, 243
Vrančić, Vjokoslav 101, 102, 107, 117, 123
Vuković (Serb) 257

Wächter, Gustav Otto 180–1 186, 187, 202–3
Wagman, Robert 69
Wagner, Gustav 28
Waldheim, President Kurt 96 266–7
Wallenberg, Jakob 275, 276, 277
Wallenberg, Raoul 276, 287
war criminals 110
Waugh, Evelyn 125
Weber, Revd Antonio 49
Weinbacher, Fr Jacob 32
Wendig (Window), operation 296
Werhun, Dr 180
Western allies: and Holocaust 13–15; and Križari 136; and Tito 124; Ukrainian POWS and 189–200; and underground Catholic armies 139; Ustashi-smuggling log; and Vatican 114–15, 281–2
'Whites' (Nazi victims) 205, 206
'Whites' (Russian émigrés) 50, 152–3, 229, 230; defined 156
Wiesenthal, Simon: on Hudel 29, 35; and Priebke *xii;* on Rauff 38; on Stangl 27–8; on Ukrainian atrocities 174, 180; on Vatican Nazi smuggling 49; and Wchter 202–3
Wilhelm II, Kaiser 290–1
Wilkinson, William 198, 199, 200
Winchell, Walter 68
Windsor, Edward, *see* Edward VIII, King
Winquist, Sven 275–6
Wirth, Felix 197
Wisner, Frank 255, 260, 269, 270, 278
Wood, Sir Kingsley 276
World Anti-Communist League 271
World Commerce Corporation 278, 300

Wrangel, Baron 153
Wright, Peter 215, 260

Yugoslav War Crimes Commission 96
Yugoslavia: and Ustashi 105–6; Draganović and 143–4, 146–7; Justice 110; and Pavelić 71, 72, 74–5; and Vatican 147, 148

Zivanović, Branko 105
Zlatio, UDBA officer 144–5, 148
Zog, King of Albania 231

$16.95

The Definitive Story of

The Vatican's Secret Collusion with Nazi War Criminals

PRAISE FOR *UNHOLY TRINITY*

"Meticulously researched, carefully documented... The shadow of these accusations still hangs heavy and dark over the twentieth-century Church."
—Morris West, author of *The Shoes of the Fisherman*

"Impossible to put down." —*Publishers Weekly*

"Head-spinning documentation of how Vatican immunity shielded Nazi war criminals from just punishment." —*Kirkus Reviews*

"[*Unholy Trinity*] is an important and meticulously researched piece of work and deserves the sort of massive readership reserved for books that the British government ham-fistedly attempts to ban." —*The Literary Review*

Written in riveting fashion by the coauthors of *The Secret War Against the Jews*, *Unholy Trinity* tells one of the darkest tales of World War II. After the war had ended, fearing a surge of Soviet growth, the Papacy entered into an espionage alliance with British and American intelligence agents. Subsuming justice to the nascent Cold War ideology, these three powers ferreted Nazi criminals out of Europe so that they could be used in the supposedly greater fight against Communism. The Vatican's Nazi smuggling network was penetrated by Prince Anton Turkul, the great Soviet double agent who turned the operation into a sting for his masters in the Kremlin. *Unholy Trinity* exposes Turkul's "Red Nazi" operation for the first time and shows how Kim Philby, the infamous British–Soviet double agent, and his network were nearly sacrificed to preserve Turkul's Vatican operation.

Exploring the Vatican's role in aiding Nazi criminals to escape punishment for their crimes, this book, originally published in 1991, first revealed the Vatican–Swiss bank connection to Nazi gold and documented the hidden links to Western investors in Nazi Germany. Since 1991, major revelations about the role of the Swiss banks have confirmed *Unholy Trinity*'s exposé of the flight of the Nazis' stolen treasures; the new introduction and new final chapters, written by Aarons and Loftus for this edition, bring the book completely up to date and show how the media have missed the vital Vatican connection in the Swiss-bank story. Among other things, the authors demonstrate that U.S. and British code-breakers were fully aware of the Holocaust as early as 1941 but lied to the Western press; that the code-breakers bugged the Swiss banks and then buried secrets of Nazi gold transfers to protect U.S. intelligence chief Allen Dulles; and that the Australian, British, and Canadian governments are still waging a campaign to keep their citizens ignorant about the Nazi war criminals living among them.

Covering all these topics and more, *Unholy Trinity* is the definitive history of a series of profoundly disturbing cover-ups involving the Holy See, Allen Dulles, the Swiss banks, and the remnants of the Third Reich.

MARK AARONS is an internationally award-winning investigative reporter and the author of several books on intelligence-related issues. He exposed Nazi war criminals in Australia, where he lives, and prompted changes to Australian federal law. Attorney **JOHN LOFTUS** is the author of four histories of intelligence operations. As a former prosecutor with the U.S. Justice Department's Nazi-hunting unit, he had unprecedented access to top-secret CIA and NATO archives. He lives in Florida. Together, Aarons and Loftus are the authors of *The Secret War Against the Jews*.

Cover design by Tom McKeveny/Cover photographs from Corbis-Bettmann: photograph of Pope from UPI collection; photograph of the Vatican from Reuters collection

ST. MARTIN'S GRIFFIN
175 Fifth Avenue, New York, N.Y. 10010
PRINTED IN THE U.S.A.

ISBN 0-312-18199-X
51695>
9 780312 181994

UFOs

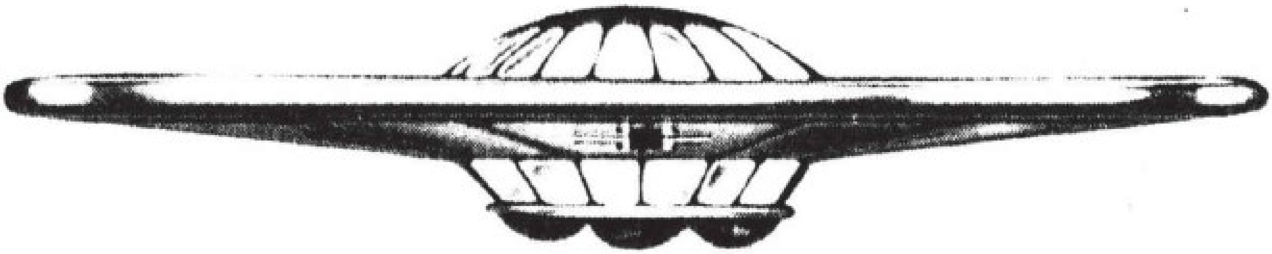

NAZI SECRET WEAPON?

ERNST ZÜNDEL

DEDICATION

This book is dedicated by the authors, their collaborators and the publishers to the unsung and often-maligned heroes of the Second World War.

ZÜNDEL

Every effort has been made by the authors to give credit to the originators of material whether it be written or pictorial. However, the search for such originators sometimes proved fruitless. Should anyone not be included, it is solely due to the confusing maze of claims and counterclaims to copyrights.

CONTENTS

FORWORD

THE MIND AND PERSONALITY OF ADOLF HITLER

ATOMIC BOMB

TRUTH STRANGER THAN FICTION?

WHY THE BIG UFO COVER-UP?

FORWORD

Ever since the fall of Berlin and the unconditional surrender of the German armed forces in 1945 one continually reads of Adolf Hitler's possible or definite escape from Berlin and Germany. Hitler has been reported to be living in several inaccessible spots in South America, in some well-guarded Shang-ri-la surrounded by S.S. Guards armed to the teeth. He is supposed to have spent some time in a monastery in Spain and other reports have him as a "prisoner" in Russia, itself.

Millions of words have been written and spoken to this effect. Over 100,000 books have been written about Hitler and W.W. II in most major languages of the world. Most of them were more or less fictional accounts and re-hashes of the official propaganda lines and clichés of the military victors of W.W. II. None of these studies were deep or exhaustive enough to be considered conclusive. Many very important facets were not covered at all or were only touched upon the fringes.

The book that is before you, is to the knowledge of the authors, their collaborators and to the publishers as well, the first attempt to cover some of these fringe issues in more depth. Consequently, they have drawn some very different conclusions to those already written on this vast and complex topic.

In order to start on a sound footing, and ultimately to do it justice, Hitler, the man is examined. Hitler, the thinker, the statesman, the politician and above all, Hitler the founder of the National Socialist Ideology (Weltanschauung) is examined in greater detail and in a more dispassionate manner. To only write about the technical aspects and ratifications of the UFO mystery, of the UFO's purely military potential, would, of necessity, lead to incorrect conclusions

To separate the totality of Hitler's control and influence over the production and eventual use of the UFO's and over every other secret development of the II Reich would be stupid. Without Hitler's backing or his knowledge of their potential uses, no weapons, not even the UFO's would have been developed; they would have been condemned to the "planners' morgue" or the junk piles.

Hitler knew about the research work being done on UFO's by his scientists, just as he knew about the other incredible secret weapons they were feverishly working upon in their bomb-proof laboratories. Many of these highly sophisticated weapon systems represented scientific breakthroughs of great importance. Many of these devices fell into Allied hands and they are pictured here for the first time and to the best of our knowledge. Others are re-created from engineering drawings or from testimony given to the Allied interrogators.

There is a whole array of jet and rocket-powered aircraft, both fighters and bombers. There are T.V. guided missiles and torpedos. There are plane and submarine-based rockets. Also there are wind cannons and many other devices.

In order to understand all aspects of this vexing problem we have to examine the governmental set-up of National Socialist Germany, especially war-time Germany. Unlike any other state in recorded history, Hitler's Germany was literally run by one man, much in the shape of a pyramid, with the chain of command moving down and out. In Hitler's hands ended all the strands; from his pinnacle of absolute power emanated all orders. From Hitler came the final orders of the scrapping or the production of any kind of weaponry. He alone was capable of making available the vast amounts of money for the research and production of what was needed to win the war. He alone could delegate the sweeping powers and set the orders of priority of one weapon system over any other.

All attempts to clarify this or that aspect of the German war effort, of diplomatic or military moves, which do not take fully into account this pyramidical structure of the decision-making process in Nazi Germany, are doomed to dismal failure. This structure of National Socialism is the very foundation of the movement, it is the "Führerprinzip" — leadership principle — in action. It is the failure or deliberate unwillingness to understand this basic principle, that has been the undoing of 95% of the writers, historians and media people of the world. By ignoring this simple principle in action and its effect on all things the origins of the UFO's (Krautmeteors), their current whereabouts and status, as well as Hitler's fate, have been shrouded in mystery and often contradictions.

The author of this book and his friends started to delve into the UFO mystery. They circulated their findings over the years to an ever-increasing number of friends and contacts around the world, but only as a basis for discussion and further study. Whenever more reports of UFO crews speaking German (Kearny Report) and behaving like German soldiers (electricity blackout Eastern States), or of sightings and documentation (French T.V. showed a UFO landing gear imprint in a clear swastika shape), reached the authors, they took a closer look. There now appeared a distinguishable pattern, in proper time and date sequence, that hinted at a possible connection between the appearance of UFO's in large numbers and Hitler's possible survival and escape from Berlin.

A book was born. Many publishers were contacted, all thought the material had merit, but none dared to publish it in its entirety. Many wanted to publish only the UFO developments. All would have loved to reproduce the hither-to unpublished engineering drawings and illustrations of prototypes of the German UFO's and the many other secret weapons but the authors insisted it was to be all or nothing.

So the manuscript made the rounds for years and years. Eventually it lay buried. Then one day, excerpts fell into the hands of a group of individuals who decided to collect money amongst themselves and publish the manuscript. With the help and active participation of the authors and their collaborators the book is now before you.

Against threats and persecution this courageous group of individuals composed of diverse ethnic backgrounds, has stood firm. We ask of the reader only to reserve judgement until he has thoroughly read through the book to the very last page. This book is not an easy book to read. One could almost call it an unnerving study of a very unusual and extraordinary man, his ideas his actions, his motivations and his ultimate goals. It also gives one a glimpse of German inventiveness and their capacity to suffer punishment and to be able to rise Phoenix-like from the ashes of "total defeat". This book also shows

Hitler’s opponents in a new light; in the light of truth and not propaganda. The book can further serve the unprejudiced individual as a catalyst to study and re-examine many events from a new perspective. Now that many Allied documents are being de-classified, a new search will produce new and startling insights and conclusions.

We believe that the open-minded reader after studying this book and after delving into the many reference and source materials listed, will never again look at the world with the same eyes.

The publishers

P.S. Those of you fortunate enough to be able to speak and to read German will find a considerable difference between the English and German editions. The reasons are simply:

1. Difficulty in finding translators for such a deeply philosophical work.

2. The English-speaking readership is used to material in this lighter vein.

For the above reasons, this is not a true translation of the German version but rather a book about another book.

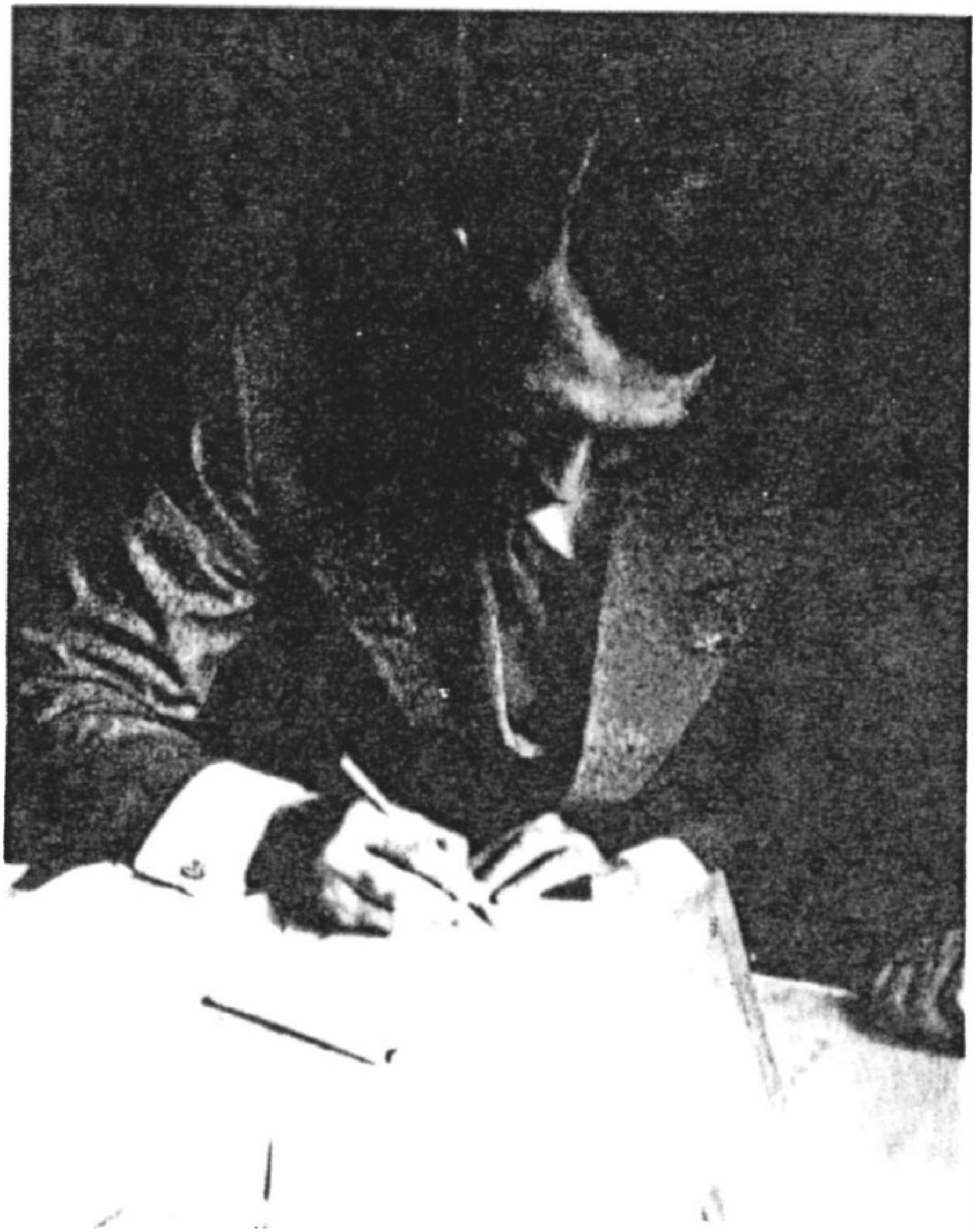

Hitler planning

THE MIND AND PERSONALITY OF ADOLF HITLER

The non-German world has a rather sketchy and fragmentary picture of the mind of Adolf Hitler; how he thought, felt and what motivated him. Lacking accurate knowledge, no one can possibly claim to understand the personality of this extraordinary man. Consequently, we will try to condense into a few paragraphs, what has taken historians volumes and volumes of books to describe.

Adolf Hitler was above all else, an intuitive, artistic human being, capable of accurately sensing situations and of grasping them with the clarity of an extremely orderly mind. He believed in the absolute supremacy of the spirit over the material, and this was borne out by his now-famous statement that for him, and for a National Socialist, two words did not exist in the dictionary — **impossible** (unmoglich) and **never** (niemals).

Let us look at his own life as a case in point. An early orphan, poor, with incomplete education, a stateless citizen in Germany with a sickly physical constitution, and, after the First World War, penniless and without a job or trade. He was just one of the many millions of Germans in similar desperate straits at that time in history. He had, one has to admit, not a chance to be anything other, even if lucky, than a manual labourer. Impossible, one would have to concede, that this man could ever become Mayor of Munich let alone the Chancellor of the largest, most populous, best-trained and educated country in the heart of Europe. Never — not in his circumstances!

Impossible? Never? Well, the entire world is witness to the fact that not only did the impossible become possible, it actually happened and in a very short period of time. The **never** and **impossible** were stricken from his and from history's dictionary.

Here enters the very first and most important component in understanding Adolf Hitler, and through it, the partial solution to the U.F.O. riddle.

Nothing in National Socialism was ever allowed to seem an impossible task or an unattainable goal. With Adolf Hitler it was always mind over matter. The belief then held by aircraft designers that the human body could not survive space flight and faster-than-sound speeds was scornfully put on one side by Hitler and it was his challenging of this belief that brought forth the U.F.O.'s.

Let us now return to the other facets of Hitler's mind in order to get an even clearer picture.

Hitler felt, based on his studies and an enormous amount of reading, that there existed a very definite plan by a small, but immensely powerful group of Jewish bankers, financiers, industrialists and others, to take control of the entire world. It is important to remember that he lived in Vienna during a time when a very noisy battle was raging between Zionist Jews, (who wanted to be a separate race, religion, nation and culture with their own state, Israel), and the assimilated elements amongst the Jews, (who wanted to be part of the cosmopolitan establishment of the Austrian Empire), with all the privileges and power their immense wealth bestowed on them. Hitler's appraisal of the Jews can best be summed up as contained in "The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion". This is a very important aspect of the whole U.F.O. story, because in it, we find the seeds for many far-reaching decisions made 30 years later. Hitler saw in this actual or imagined Jewish drive for world domination, a very definite danger to his own work and plan.

From now on we must look at every problem from this vantage point. Hitler would undoubtedly double-check each major question by this criterion: "How would I act in this case if I were a Jew bent on world conquest?" Now we have the two most important keys to understanding the functioning of his mind.

There is, however, another very important fact, and this is motivation. What motivated this man? Why should this penniless and jobless vagrant, (often disparagingly called a paperhanger) act the way he did? Millions of words have been devoted to this question. All, or most of them, completely misrepresented him, and this is especially true in the non-German world where he is portrayed as some power-mad maniac, seeking power solely for destructive reasons. This kind of thinking might have been justifiable as propaganda during war time, but the truth requires a long over-due reevaluation, and the truth is simple.

The artistic, sensitive soul in this man rebelled at what he saw taking place around him. Since no single person, no group, no party and no ideology at that time expressed his feelings, he started expressing his own frustrations and ideas at the meetings of others. To his complete amazement he found that others listened and they listened in ever-increasing numbers. Thus, Hitler the agitator, the motivator, was born. There is no motivator without motivation and it was the concept of National Socialism that was his motivation.

It is neither the intent nor the desire of the authors to rewrite "Mein Kampf" and we shall restrict ourselves to the very barest of outlines to clarify his motivations. This is necessary to solve the U.F.O. riddle and can best be summed up in the 24 points of the N.S.D.A.P. Party Programme and also are reflected in a study Hitler made of the political situation for the army in Munich, where he was "Political Information Officer".

THE PROGRAMME OF THE PARTY

> THE Programme of the German Workers' Party is limited as to period. The leaders have no intention, once the aims announced in it have been achieved, of setting up fresh ones, in order to ensure the continued existence of the Party by the artificially increased discontent of the masses.
>
> 1. We demand the union of all Germans, on the basis of the right of the self-determination of peoples, to form a Great Germany.

2. We demand equality of rights for the German People in its dealings with other nations, and abolition of the Peace Treaties of Versailles and St. Germain.

3. We demand land and territory (colonies) for the nourishment of our people and for settling our surplus population.

4. None but members of the nation may be citizens of the State. None but those of German blood, whatever their creed, may be members of the nation. No Jew, therefore, may be a member of the nation.

5. Anyone who is not a citizen of the State may live in Germany only as a guest and must be regarded as being subject to the Alien laws.

6. The right of voting on the leadership and legislation is to be enjoyed by the citizens of the State alone. We demand, therefore, that all official appointments, of whatever kind, whether in the Reich, the provinces, or the small communities, shall be granted to citizens of the State alone.

We oppose the corrupt Parliamentary custom of the State of filling posts merely with a view to Party considerations, and without reference to character or capacity.

7. We demand that the State shall make it its first duty to promote the industry and livelihood of the citizens of the State. If it is not possible to nourish the entire population of the State, foreign nationals (non-citizens of the State) must be excluded from the Reich.

8. All further non-German immigration must be prevented. We demand that all non-Germans who entered Germany subsequently to August 2, 1914, shall be required forthwith to depart from the Reich.

9. All citizens of the State shall possess equal rights and duties.

10. It must be the first duty of every citizen of the State to perform mental or physical work. The activities of the individual must not clash with the interests of the whole, but must proceed within the framework of the community and must be for the general good.

We demand therefore:

11. Abolition of incomes unearned by work. Abolition of the thraldom of interest.

12. In view of the enormous sacrifice of life and property demanded of a nation by every war, personal enrichment through war must be regarded as a crime against the nation. We demand therefore the ruthless confiscation of all war profits.

13. We demand the nationalization of all businesses which have (hitherto) been amalgamated (into Trusts).

14. We demand that there shall be profit-sharing in the great industries.

15. We demand a generous development of provision for old age.

16. We demand the creation and maintenance of a healthy middle class, immediate communalization of wholesale warehouses, and their lease at a low rate to small traders, and that the most careful consideration shall

be shown to all small purveyors to the State, the provinces, or smaller communities.

17. We demand a land-reform suitable to our national requirements, the passing of a law for the confiscation without compensation of land for communal purposes, the abolition of interest on mortgages, and prohibition of all speculation in land.

On 13 April 1928, Adolf Hitler made the following declaration:

"It is necessary to reply to the false interpretation on the part of our opponents of Point 17 of the Programme of the NSDAP.

"Since the NSDAP admits the principle of private property, it is obvious that the expression 'confiscation without compensation' refers merely to the creation of possible legal means of confiscating, when necessary, land illegally acquired, or not administered in accordance with the national welfare. It is therefore directed in the first instance against the Jewish companies which speculate in land."

"(Signed) ADOLF HITLER."

"Munich, April 13, 1928."

18. We demand ruthless war upon all those whose activities are injurious to the common interest. Common criminals against the nation, usurers, profiteers, &c., must be punished with death, whatever their creed or race.

19. We demand that the Roman Law, which serves the materialistic world order, shall be replaced by a German common law.

20. With the aim of opening to every capable and industrious German the possibility of higher education and consequent advancement to leading positions the State must consider a thorough reconstruction of our national system of education. The curriculum of all educational establishments must be brought into line with the requirements of practical life. Directly the mind begins to develop the schools must aim at teaching the pupil to understand the idea of the State (State sociology). We demand the education of specially gifted children of poor parents, whatever their class or occupation, at the expense of the State.

21. The State must apply itself to raising the standard of health in the nation by protecting mothers and infants, prohibiting child labour, and increasing bodily efficiency by legally obligatory gymnastics and sports, and by extensive support of clubs engaged in the physical training of the young.

22. We demand the abolition of mercenary troops and the formation of a national army.

23. We demand legal warfare against conscious political lies and their dissemination in the Press. In order to facilitate the creation of a German national Press we demand:

(a) that all editors and contributors to newspapers employing the German language must be members of the nation;

(b) That special permission from the State shall be necessary before non-German newspapers may appear. These need not necessarily be printed in the German language;

(c) That non-Germans shall be prohibited by law from participating financially in or influencing German newspapers, and that the penalty for contravention of the law shall be suppression of any such newspaper, and immediate deportation of the non-German involved.

It must be forbidden to publish newspapers which do not conduce to the national welfare. We demand the legal prosecution of all tendencies in art and literature of a kind likely to disintegrate our life as a nation, and the suppression of institutions which militate against the above-mentioned requirements.

24. We demand liberty for all religious denominations in the State, so far as they are not a danger to it and do not militate against the morality and moral sense of the German race.

The Party, as such, stands for positive Christianity, but does not bind itself in the matter of creed to any particular confession. It combats the Jewish-materialist spirit *within* and *without* us, and is convinced that our nation can achieve permanent health from within only on the principle: the common interest before self-interest.

25. That all the foregoing requirements may be realized we demand the creation of a strong central power of the Reich. Unconditional authority of the politically central Parliament over the entire Reich and its organization in general.

The formation of Diets and vocational Chambers for the purpose of executing the general laws promulgated by the Reich in the various States of the Confederation.

The leaders of the Party swear to proceed regardless of consequences—if necessary at the sacrifice of their lives—towards the fulfilment of the foregoing Points.[1]

MUNICH, February 24, 1920.

In a meeting held in the Circus Krone on 18 September 1922 Hitler formulated "*some fundamental demands of the Party":*

"1. We must call to account the November criminals of 1918. It cannot be that two million Germans should have fallen in vain and that afterwards one should sit down as friends at the same table with traitors. No, we do not pardon, we demand—Vengeance!"

"2. The dishonouring of the nation must cease. For betrayers of their Fatherland and informers the gallows is the proper place. Our streets and squares shall once more bear the names of our heroes; they shall not be named after Jews. In the Question of Guilt we must proclaim the truth".

"3. The administration of the State must be cleared of the rabble which is fattened at the stall of the parties".

"4. The present laxity in the fight against usury must be abandoned. Here the fitting punishment is the same as that for the betrayers of their Fatherland".

> "5. We must demand a great enlightenment on the subject of the Peace Treaty. With thoughts of love? No! but in holy hatred against those who have ruined us".
>
> "6. The lies which would veil from us our misfortunes must cease. The fraud of the present money-madness must be shown up. That will stiffen the necks of us all".
>
> "7. As foundation for a new currency the property of those who are not of our blood must do service. If families who have lived in Germany for a thousand years are now expropriated, we must do the same to the Jewish usurers".
>
> "8. We demand immediate expulsion of all Jews who have entered Germany since 1914, and of all those, too, who through trickery on the Stock Exchange or through other shady transactions have gained their wealth".
>
> "9. The housing scarcity must be relieved through energetic action; houses must be granted to those who deserve them. Eisner said in 1918 that we had no right to demand the return of our prisoners—he was only saying openly what all Jews were thinking. People who so think must feel how life tastes in a concentration camp!"
>
> "Extremes must be fought by extremes. Against the infection of materialism, against the Jewish pestilence we must hold aloft a flaming ideal. And if others speak of the World and Humanity we say The Fatherland—and only the Fatherland!"[1]

Hitler's "Study of the Jews" — for the army

In so far as the danger with which Jewry threatens our people today finds its expression in an undeniable aversion experienced by the majority of our people, the cause of that aversion is not generally to be found in a clear awareness of the Jews' systematically destructive effect, whether conscious or unconscious, on our nation as a whole, but arises mainly from personal intercourse and the impression made by the Jew as an individual... . Thus antisemitism all too easily takes on the character of a mere manifestation of emotion. And that is wrong. As a political movement antisemitism cannot and must not be determined by emotional motives but by a recognition of the facts...: To begin with, Jewry is incontestably a race and not a religious community. And the Jew himself never describes himself as a Jewish German, Jewish Pole or, say, a Jewish American, but always as a German, Polish or American Jew. In no case has the Jew ever . . . assimilated very much more from other nations than their language. . . . Even the Mosaic faith . . . is not the final word on the question of Jew or non-Jew. . . . By a thousand years of inbreeding, often occurring within a very small circle, the Jew has generally kept his race and type more sharply defined than the peoples among whom he lives. The result of this is that we have in our midst a non-German, foreign race neither willing nor able to sacrifice its racial characteristics or to renounce its own way of feeling, thinking and striving and which nevertheless has just the same political rights as us. If the Jew's very feelings are concerned with the purely material, how much more so his thinking and striving. The dance round the Golden Calf becomes a merciless struggle for all those possessions which to our way of feeling ought not to be the only and ultimate things worth striving for. The value of an individual is no longer determined by his character, by the importance of his achievements to the whole, but exclusively by the size of his fortune.... A nation's stature is no longer to be reckoned

> by the sum of its moral and spiritual forces but only by the profusion of its worldly goods. From this feeling there arises that thinking, that striving after money and after the power to protect it, which leads the Jew to be unscrupulous in his choice of methods, and pitiless in applying them.... In an autocratically governed State he whines to gain the 'majesty's', the prince's, favour which he abuses [by battening] on his subjects like a leach. In a democracy he goes whoring after the favour of the masses, crawls before the 'majesty of the people' and knows only the majesty of money. He destroys the prince's character by Byzantine flattery, and national pride – the strength of a people – by mockery and the shameless promotion of vice. His weapon is public opinion . . . which he guides and distorts by means of the Press. His power is the power of money which in his hands proliferates unceasingly and effortlessly in the form of interest.. .. Everything that induces men to aspire to higher things, be it religion, socialism, or democracy, is to him only a means to an end – that of satisfying his lust for money and domination. He acts on the peoples like racial tuberculosis. And as a consequence antisemitism arising out of purely emotional reasons will find its ultimate expression in the form of progroms [*sic*]. Antisemitism based on reason, however, must lead to a systematic and legal campaign to deprive the Jew of the privileges which he alone of all the foreigners in our midst enjoys (Aliens Legislation). But its final goal must always remain the removal of the Jews as a whole.

It could be said that we are a little far off the U.F.O. problem but without this groundwork it is not possible to unravel this very complex story. We now have a clear picture of the basic working of Hitler's brain. We know how he felt about "his enemies", real or imagined, and we also know what motivated him in his political moves and decisions.

To sum up:—

1. Hitler never thought anything impossible; he never accepted defeat. Hitler did not believe that even death was the end and thought of death only as a transition, after which the struggle continued only on a different plane. This can be clearly seen in his words "Und Ihr habt doch gesiegt" — "And you were victorious in spite of death" — often repeated during memorial speeches while honouring those of his supporters who fell during the march on the Feldherrnhalle on November 23rd, 1923 in Munich. This same thinking permeates his last two public speeches broadcast January 10th, 1945 and February 25th, 1945 in which he re-affirmed that Germany would still win the war — " . . . and the Last Battalion will be ours".

2. Hitler saw a world-wide conspiracy of Jews and their Allies, (democrats, liberals, social democrats and marxists) in a concerted, well-planned drive for Jewish world domination. He argued vehemently and convincingly to untold millions of Europeans that there was a struggle taking place for a Jewish world in which all non-Jews were to be mere work slaves, with Jewish rulers, similar to those forming the Communist government in the Soviet Union, e.g., Trotsky (Bronstein), Litvinoff (Finkelstein), Kanganovich (Cohen), Ehrenburg and Berija, or for an Aryan world where the white man played a forceful dynamic role in global affairs, based on self-determination but within strict limits of a larger white world or what the Germans call "Abendland".

3. Hitler’s motivating force was an unusual synthesis, (never before or since attempted), of the best features of **Socialism** and of **Free Enterprise** as opposed to multi-national corporations, (then called monopoly or state capitalism) on the one side, and Nationalism (based on ethnic origin and adherence) versus universalism or internationalism on the other. Hitler’s synthesis worked and it was eminently successful all over Europe, providing full employment, financial stability (zero inflation) and introducing the greatest worker-benefit programmes of any modern, industrial state. It was never defeated as an idea but only destroyed (by military power), as a system.

An idea can only be superseded or defeated by another, better idea. Germany was only defeated militarily in 1945 but the idea of National Socialism is still as strong as ever and is flourishing around the world, but by necessity, underground.

The above three factors must constantly be kept in mind as we move from chapter to chapter and from event to event in the following pages.

SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH ESPECIALLY IN THE AIRCRAFT FIELD IN N.S. Germany

When Germany sent unmanned guided missiles, in the form of the V.1 and later the V.2 (the V standing for Vergeltungswaffen or Revenge Weapon), crashing into England as payment for England’s, treason against Europe, a weapon was thus introduced to the astonished world that up to that time had only been written about in Science Fiction magazines. Again, the “impossible” had been realised. There was no defence in England against the V.2 and there would have been no defence against the A.9 and A.10 (America Rockets) which were destined to rain on New York and Washington in the Fall of 1945. These rockets were intended as revenge for the aimless and merciless killing of German civilians by the saturation fire-bombing of German cities by the U.S. Air Terrorists.

The breakthrough in the rocket weapon field by Germany so astonished the Allied leadership that Winston Churchill, fearing panic would break out in England,, contemplated germ warfare against Germany. It was only a lack of germs that prevented such action. However, the rocket breakthrough came too late to turn the tide for Germany. Conventional mass-bombing and mass-killing by the Allies took such a heavy toll that the war ended before all the new technology developed by German genius could be brought into the war. It was the knowledge that it was quantity winning over quality that had driven the hopelessly outnumbered German soldiers to despair, and the new technology gave them a feeling of relief plus the knowledge that only for a space of time had mass overwhelmed spirit.

Secret Weapons

General Eisenhower wrote in his book “Crusade in Europe”: “It seems likely that if the Germans had succeeded in perfecting and using these new weapons six months earlier than they did, our invasion of Europe would have proved exceedingly difficult, perhaps impossible. I feel sure that had they succeeded in using these weapons over a six month period, particularly if he (Hitler) had made the Portsmouth-Southampton (landing) area one of his principle targets, Overlord (the invasion) might have been written off”. Those were the “conventional” V. I and V. II rockets mentioned by Eisenhower with such awe.

Winston Churchill spoke of the “miracle weapons” that Goebbels had promised the Germans, and that if they had come half a year earlier Hitler would have driven the allies out of Europe!

It is interesting to speculate about what weapons these two allied war leaders were referring to. Some were undoubtedly the remote controlled missiles, V.I and V.ll already mentioned. But there were others. There were ground-to-air missiles, some radio-controlled, some heat-seeking, some radar-guided and others even more sophisticated.

Long Range Rockets (ICBM) The “Amerika Rocket” at extreme left was to be operational by Fall-Winter 1945. (Note size of man in relation to size of rockets). Some of the German jet planes on the drawing boards and in the test stage. The experienced observer can trace most “modern developments” to these ancestors. Germany was at least a generation ahead of the rest of the world in “conventional” aircraft design

Flying bombs — remote controlled. See fore-runner of famous U.2 spy plane at top right. All were operational

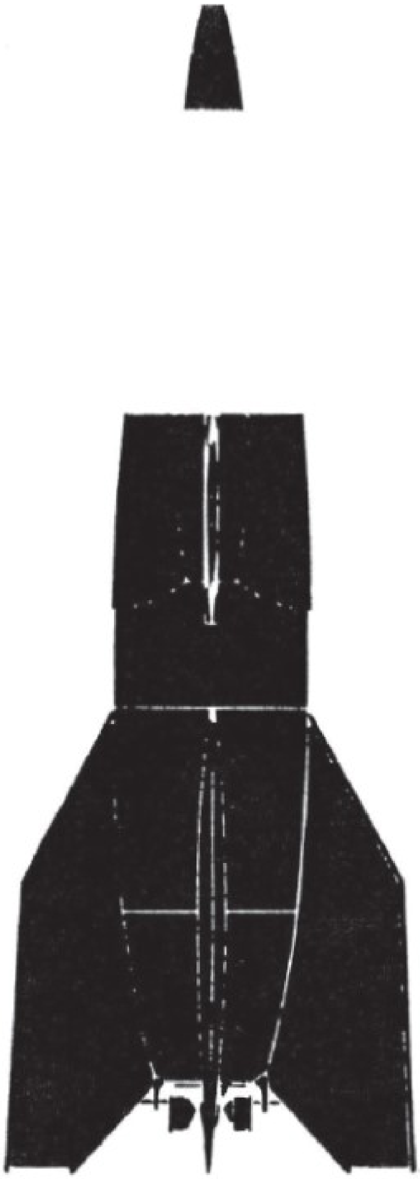

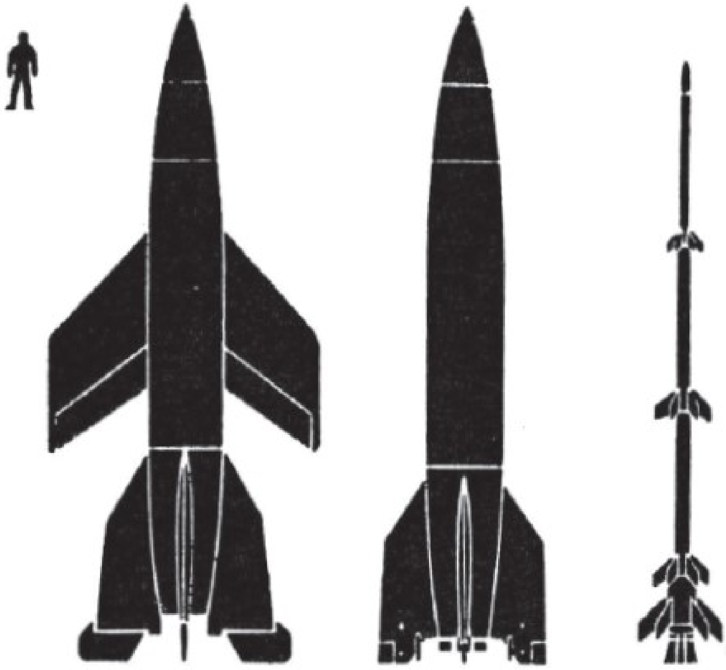

Abb. 217-220. Femraketen. Von links nach rechts: A-9/A-10; A-4b und A-4 (V 2) von Peenemünde; ganz rechts: Rheinmetall „Rheinbole".

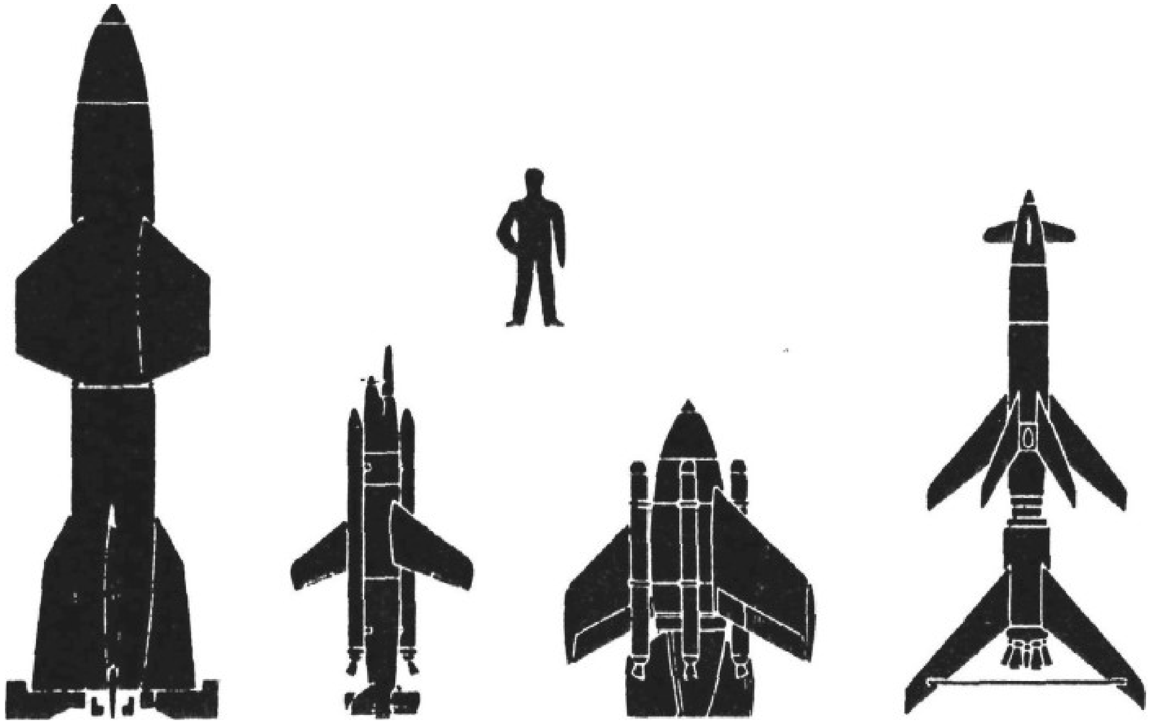

Abb. 221-224. Fla-Raketen. Von links nach rechts: Peenemünde C-2 „Wasserfall”; Hen achel Hs 117 „Schmetterling”; Konrad „Enzian E-l”; Rheinmetall „Rheintochter R. 1

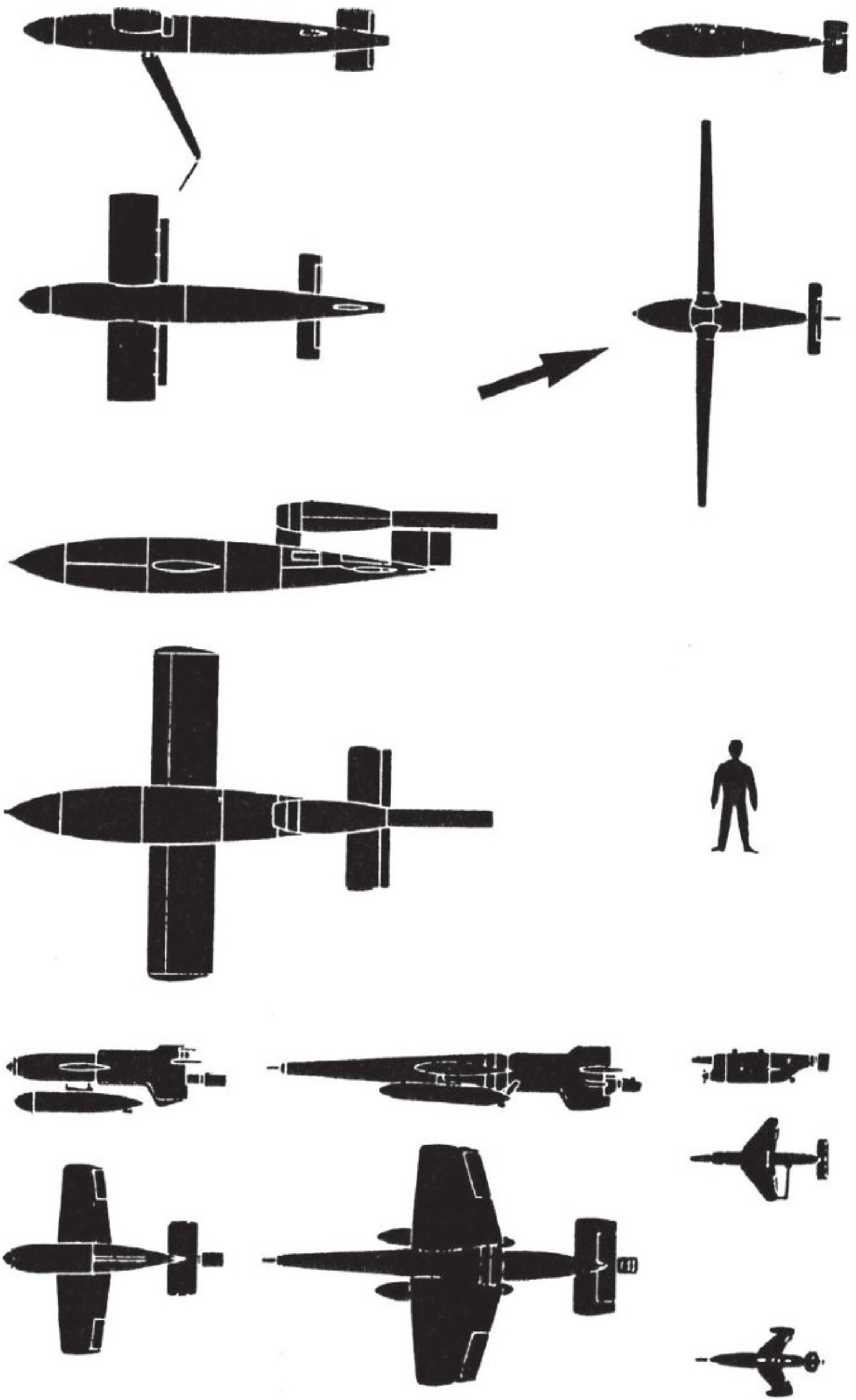

Abb. 225-231. Fllegende Bomben. Oben links: Blohm & Voss BV 143; oben rechts: BV 246 B; mitte: Fleseler Fl 103 (V 1); unten links: Henschel Hs 293 A-O; unten mitte: Hs 294; untere Relhe rechts oben: Hs 298; untere Relhe rechts unten: Kramer X-4.

In April 1945, Germany had, in fact, over 130 different types of missiles and rockets. We reproduce here a' cross-section of the most important types. Please note their size relative to the size of a man. All the ones pictured were operational types. Many others were just days or weeks away from combat use. Amongst them were the devastatingly successful R.4-M, air-to-air missiles which were mounted under the wings of an aircraft. A ME-110 could carry 48 R.4M's and Germany's new jets carried 24 of these murderously effective weapons.

Luftwaffe Lieutenant Werner Schneider, a German Wing-Commander, flying a F.W.190, attacked on allied bomber formation near the town of Schweinfurth in April 1945 and reported after his landing, "We were about a mile away when we received our directions from the control centre. 'You are close enough' a missile expert told us. 'Hold that range. Just point your noses forward towards them and pull the switches.' With a hissing sound the missiles blasted away. The result was beyond our wildest expectations. The missiles equipped with proximity fuses, some also with acoustical detonators, sent forty bombers to the ground within minutes."

Before the war ended, Germany had produced over 20,000 of these missiles of the R4M type in underground factories in the Sudetenland. Allied sources have put bomber losses at the hands of the R4M to over 500 in a few weeks. However, since aircraft were in short supply at that time, greater emphasis was placed on ground to air missiles. To mention but a few, there are the Enzian (Gentian), Hecht (Pike), Feuerlilie (Firelily), Schmetterling (Butterfly), Rheintochter (Rhine maiden), Wasserfall (Waterfall) and the Taifun (Typhoon). The last one had an acceleration of an incredible 45 G's.

Wasserfall could reach 50,000 feet and was later improved upon. It was equipped with an infrared guidance system which sent it in a beeline for any Allied bomber — and was 100% accurate. The Butterfly was another step in the V (Vengeance) weapon programme. In April 1945, 3,000 were produced; in June it was to be 10,000 missiles of this type alone.

When V.E. day came around, on May 8th, 1945, many expert analysts amongst the victors expressed the opinion that not a single allied plane would have been able to penetrate the borders of the German Reich after May, 1945. Germany's defence curtain of anti-aircraft missiles would have been 100% fool proof. Not even the atomic bomb would have been able to be "delivered", not to mention the fact that London and Washington were by that time within range of existing Germany long-range rockets and jet bombers. But there are other weapons to be mentioned here.

There was the “Lafferenz Projects” which was just completed at the time it permitted the firing of missiles from submerged U-Boats. Attacks were planned on cities such as New York, Boston, Philadelphia, Washington and even far-off Detroit.

Tests had been completed using small-scale subs and rockets (Lake Topliz, Austria) and large V.ll’s towed behind a submarine off Cuxhaven on the North Sea. Then there were flying bombs with built-in computer-controlled T.V. cameras, controlled by pilots who could be hundreds of miles away. There were long-range jet bombers, with 12,000 mile range, jet aircraft — aircraft carriers, transport planes that carried other smaller planes (12 of them) piggyback to their target area and then let loose their cargo of death and destruction. There were ram jets, jet fighters, bombers, transports and there was even an SST transport capable of flying four times the speed of sound.

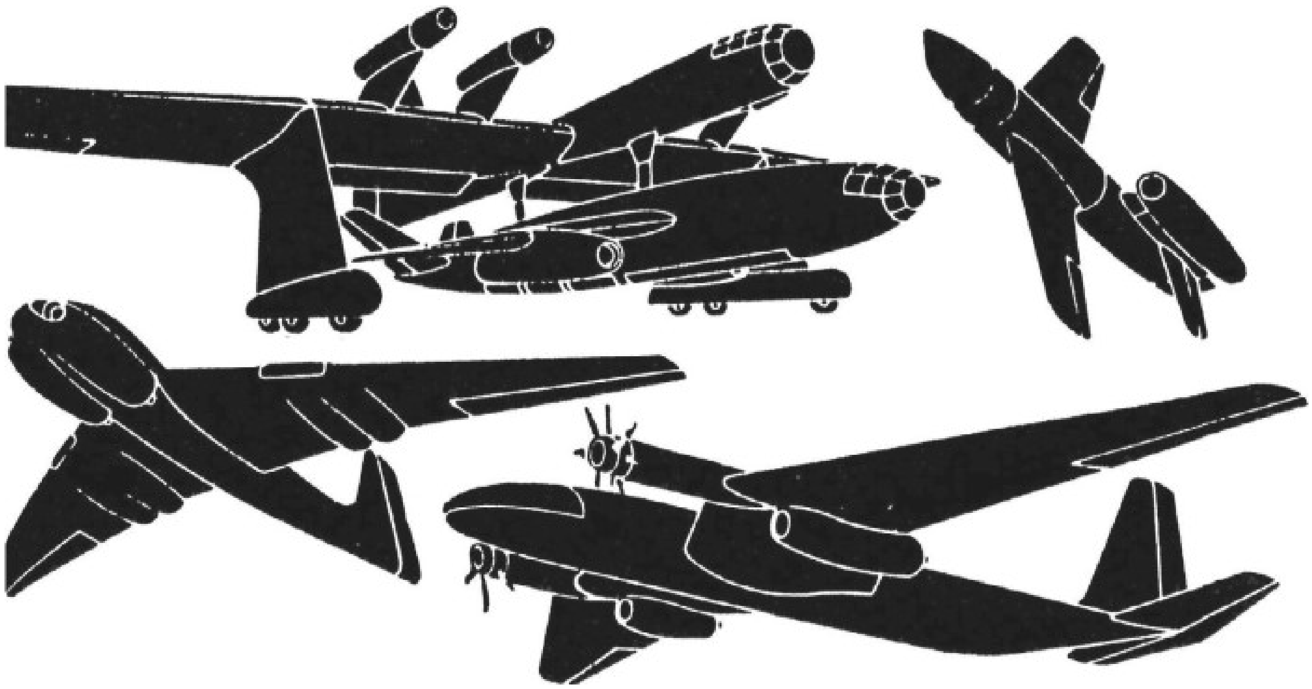

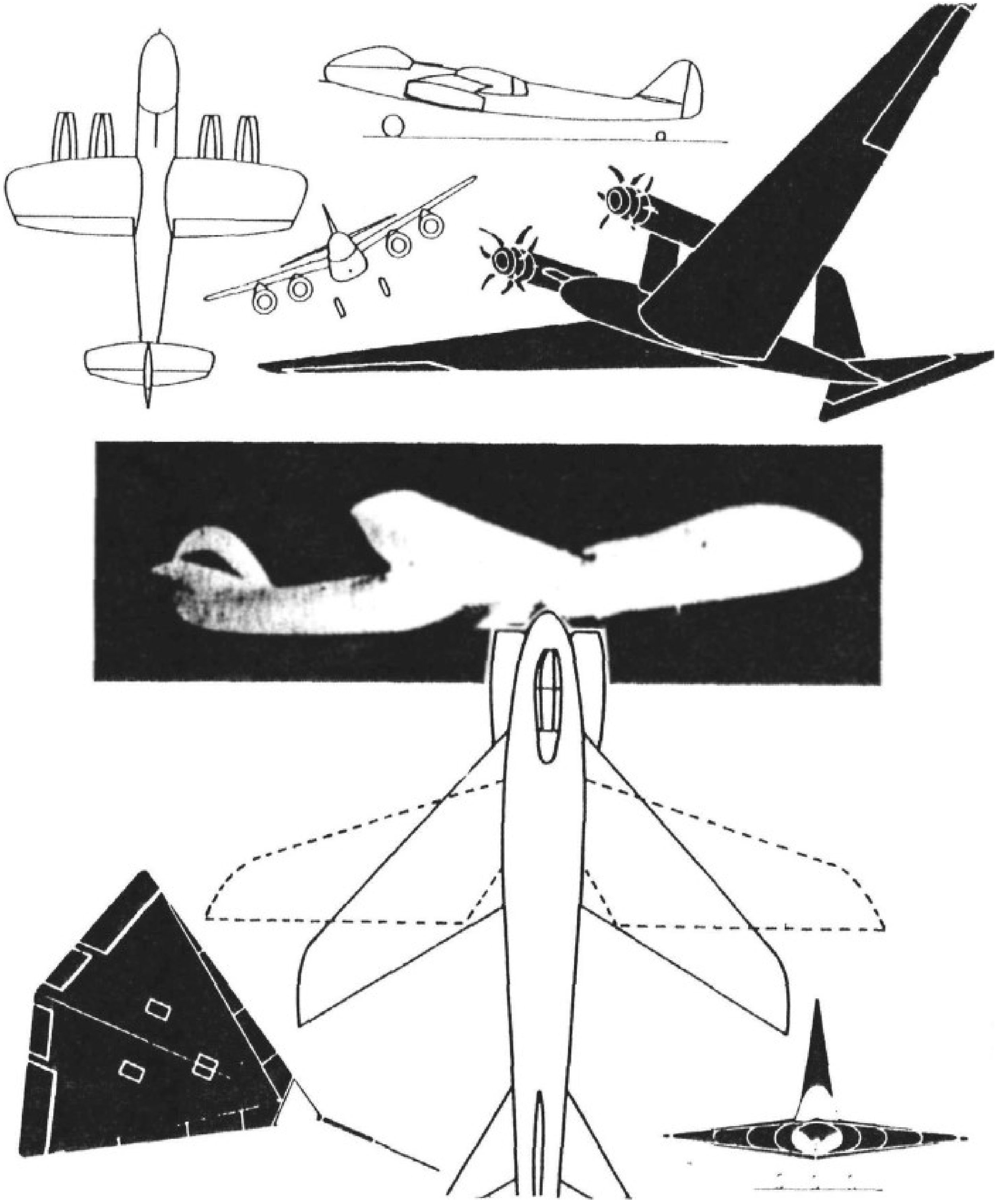

T.F.X. Jets and S.S.T. airliners; their origins can clearly be traced to Germany's Research labs.

Also there were passenger jets, a few of which are reproduced here. These plans had already progressed to the stage where models were being tested in the wind tunnels. It is interesting to see that the Americans adopted the German engine mountings on their later aircraft, but most startling of all is the Jumbo jet shown in these pages. Many of the Allied postwar developments originated right here in Germany’s laboratories, as is evidenced by the following excerpts photographically reproduced from “America’s Aircraft Year Book,” an official publication. It speaks for itself.

> As part of its comprehensive research program to exploit former enemy aeronautical developments, the Air Materiel Command’s Technical Intelligence agency was using the services of some 86 top-flight German aviation scientists of World War II. Working side by side with American military and civilian aeronautical engineers in the laboratories of Wright Field, these German experts were being used, as were tons of captured enemy materiel, documents, blueprints and microfilm, to save American engineers the time they would devote to problems already investigated by the Germans. Their knowledge also helped the Americans to catch up and improve upon Germany’s wartime advancement in such phases of aeronautical developments as rocket and jet power. Similar groups of former enemy technicians were employed in other parts of the country by various branches of the armed forces. At Fort Bliss, Texas, one group was working in connection with research on German V-2 rockets and other guided missiles. Others were working with the Army ordnance and engineer experts, and still others were working for the Navy in several fields of applied war research and development.
>
> Among those in the German group at Wright Field were Rudolph Hermann, Alexander Lippisch, Heinz Schmitt, Helmut Heinrich, and Fritz Doblhoff and Ernst Kugel. Hermann was attached to the Peenemunde Research Station for Aerodynamics, where Germany’s V-2 rockets were hatched and launched against England. A specialist in supersonics, he was in charge of the supersonic wind tunnel at Kochel in the Bavarian Alps. He also was a member of the group entrusted with Hitler’s futuristic plans to establish a space-station rocket-refueling base revolving as a satellite about the earth at a distance of 4,000 miles—a scheme which he and certain high-ranking AAF officers in 1947 still believed to be feasible.
>
> In order to break down the language difficulties in deciphering captured German documents, prominent educators were working with the AAF in compiling a new 75,000-word German-English dictionary intended to clarify German aeronautical terms and phrases. Supervising the project was Dr. Kurt I.. Leidecker, on leave from the Behr-Manning Corporation and Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute, where he was assistant professor of modern languages and instructor of scientific German. Nearly half the contents of the new dictionary were to be new words. The Germans had nazified aeronautical terms formerly having classic roots, and had coined many new terms not found in any existing dictionary. Material for the dictionary was being extracted from broken enemy codes and from 250 tons of captured German air documents. Considerable value was attached to the widely heralded German ZWB (Central Organization for Scientific Reports) Index which contained important scientific documents. Included were many of the newer aeronautical terms and some applications of older words, which served as an aid to the project translators. Also helpful were German translations of American and British aeronautical terms found in captured documents, and the arbitrary words and phrases applied to German prototypes and equivalents of Allied equipment and accessories.
>
> The German scientists worked voluntarily at Wright Field under special contracts as alien civilian employees of the War Department. Their salaries ranged from $2.20 to $11 a day, and were paid to their banks or families in Germany.

There are other developments never mentioned in any official book, namely the UFO and other even more devastating weapons. Why is no mention made of them officially? Is it because they were not found? Or that they were destroyed?

However, before proceeding with the UFO’s there are a few more secret developments which must be covered and which, perhaps, you have never heard of before, — the death rays, the sun cannon, Pandora’s Box and the Aeolus Bag.

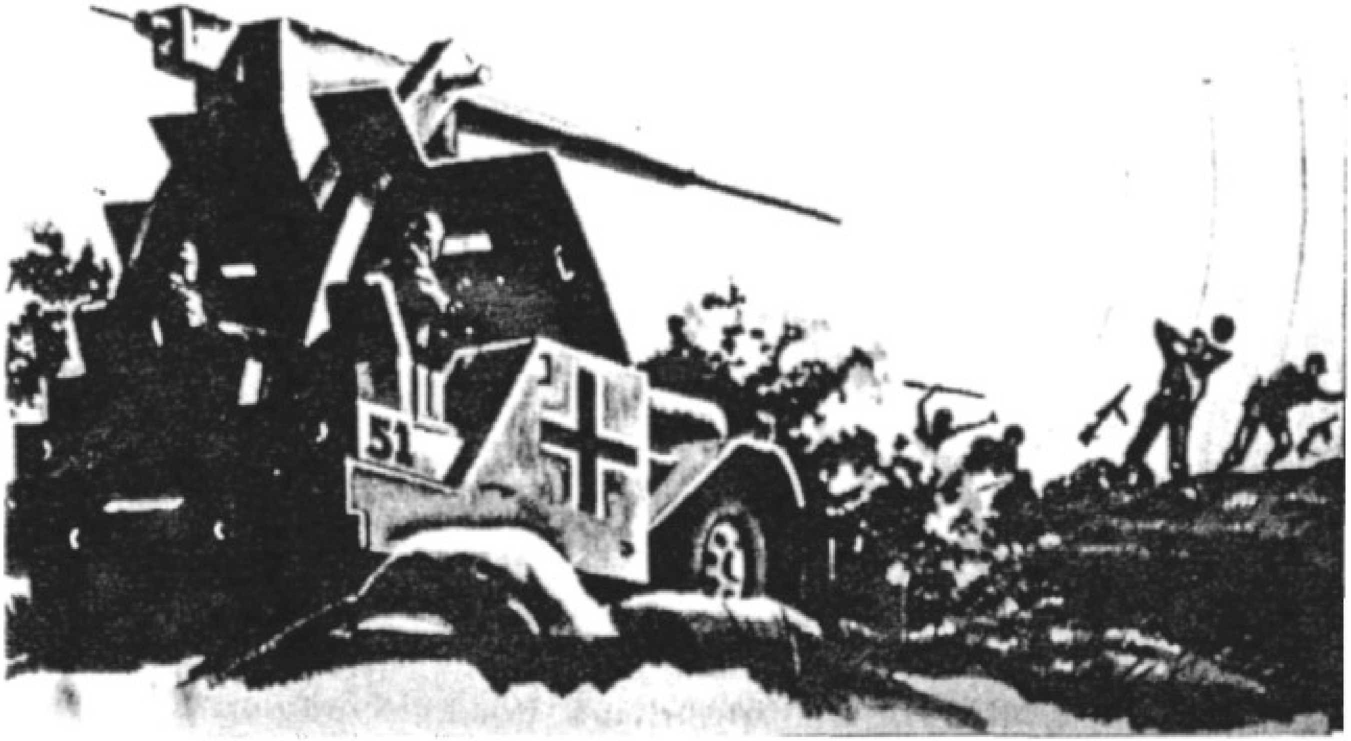

ART BY FRANK BOLLE

The Sound Cannon

Once again, we find Hitler steering his scientists towards using nature, not opposing it. He had them harness two important elements, namely the power of the air and the power of the sun.

The first experiments started as early as 1943, on a lonely, rarely-visited mountain plateau in Tyrol. For a number of weeks scientists and specialists from the Reichsluftfahrtamt in Berlin (Office of Aeronautics) — of which Major Lusar, who reported about the German UFO programme, was also a member, had been busy setting up a camp, or more appropriately, a base. They were busy unpacking and assembling some odd-looking pieces of equipment. Huge crates arrived by truck from various parts of the Fatherland. Significantly again, many factories which were involved in this project were located underground in what is now Czechoslovakia. When all was assembled, there stood on that lonely, bleak plateau, high in the mist-shrouded mountains of Austria, a most fearsome weapon — the Sound Cannon. (see photograph reproduced here). It looks like a weird longish platform with an angular smoke stack that can be turned into horizontal positions and a fire place or boiler seems to be at the base of it. In actual fact it is a rigid steel combustion chamber in which methane and oxygen can be ignited under high pressure, with the ultimate aim of creating a series of powerful explosions at rapid intervals. The shock waves created by these explosions were to be directed, via the conical smoke stack against any aggressor, with a devastating force. The whole infernal principle was based on the knowledge that the shock waves of sound, generate a certain pressure upon objects which may be in their path. Thunderclaps with their earth-shaking after effects served as the father of thought, in this particular case.

Sonic booms as created by fast and high-flying jet aircraft can, in effect, damage buildings and burst ear drums. Sound, therefore, if strong enough, can kill. And so the reasoning went behind these tests. Why were they testing this device way up in the Alps? To the peasants below and around, it sounded like a thunderstorm and so created little suspicion.

The scientists had had hundreds of dogs and pigs trained to take the place of attacking Russian infantry. The animals were trained, Pavlovian style to run in a certain direction for their daily fodder, about 400 yards away. The day the experiment was started, they were once again headed for their troughs. The Sound Cannon had been erected behind some bushes. First came the dogs, then the pigs. There were no eaters at troughs that day; not one animal survived that 400 yard dash.

The dogs came first; at 150 yards distance the first salvo was fired, there was a terrific bang and then followed the shock waves. The dogs stood as if frozen to the ground. Suddenly they let loose a heart-rending howl and raced towards the troughs only to be hit by another round. The dogs had come within 50 feet of the sound cannon and not one of them survived that second shot. The pigs, still 100 yards away were paralyzed for hours. All suffered from disorientation effects, causing them to run helter skelter in each and every direction. None of them made it to the feeding troughs.

The sound cannon was used operationally against the Russians on the approaches to the Elbe River and against American aircraft close to Passau on the Danube — with the same results. (One wonders did Admiral Byrd suffer the same fate as the pigs when he gave orders to abort that Antarctic overflight after all his orientation instruments went haywire in 1947?). Illustration shows artist’s conception of the Sound Cannon.

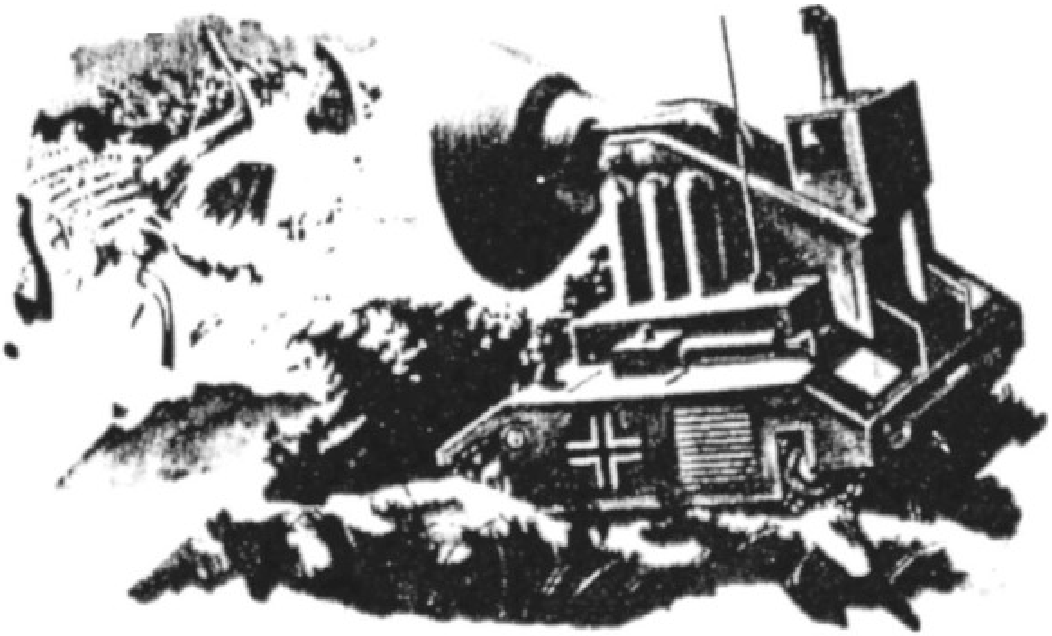

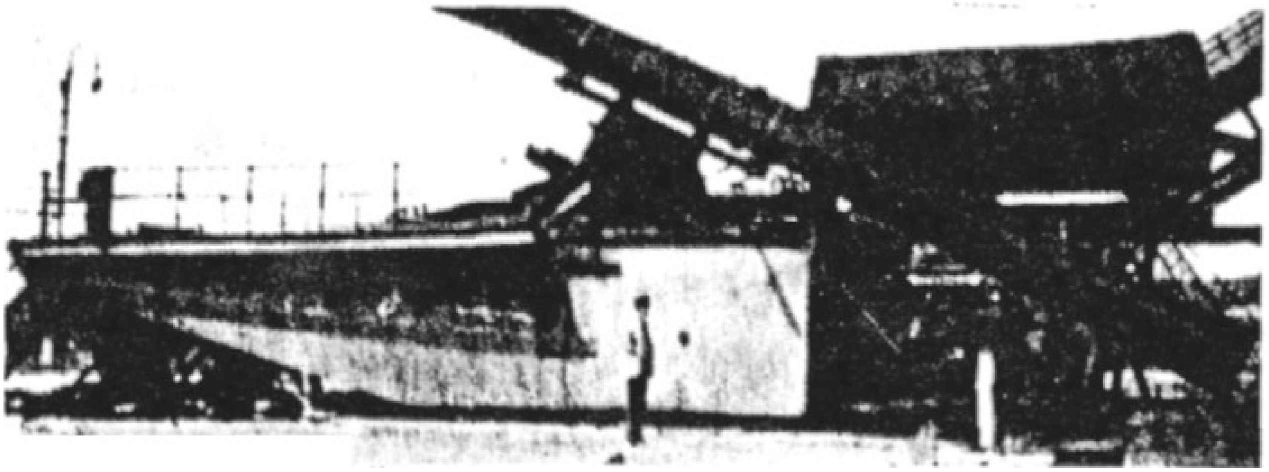

The Aeolus Bag

This New-Age weapon was used to fight off the seemingly endless hordes of Mongolians that were spewed forth from Asia’s vast steppes. It used oxygen and hydrogen for combustion. The weapon’s function was similar to an air compressor, commonly found on construction sites. If you have ever witnessed the concentrated power of pressurized air from a pneumatic tool or drill you will be able to appreciate the potential impact of the Aeolus Bag. It could stop a truck or a plane dead in its track before disintegrating it.

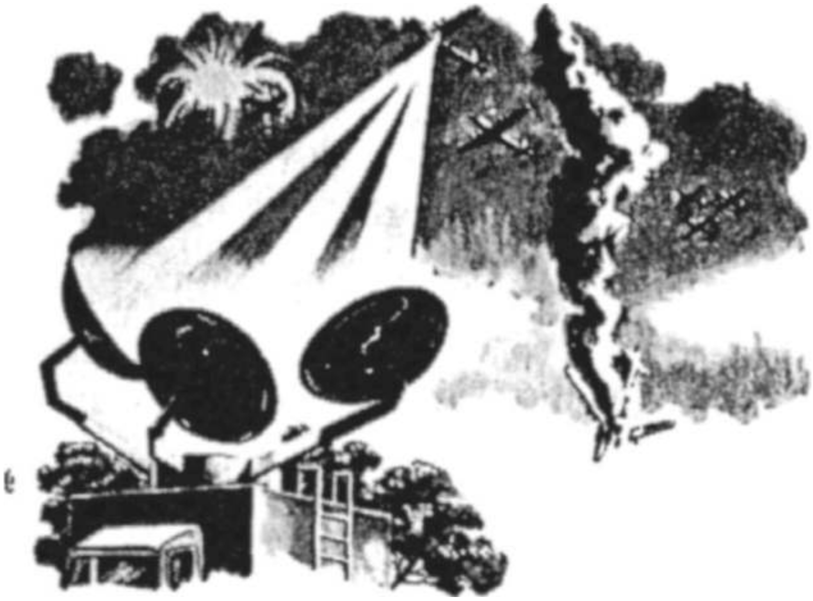

The Sun Cannon

Very early in the war, the Germans, well-versed in Greek mythology, built another contraption of note. This silent weapon consisted of a huge truck-mounted mirror able to be rotated at will. The sun's rays were to be collected, concentrated and sent back towards the sky, blinding enemy pilots and gunners, and so giving to the German fighters very easy pickings. Due to weather conditions over northern Europe, the weapon was seldom used "at home". However, a member of the Africa Corps reported it used on the ground on some occasions and with excellent results.

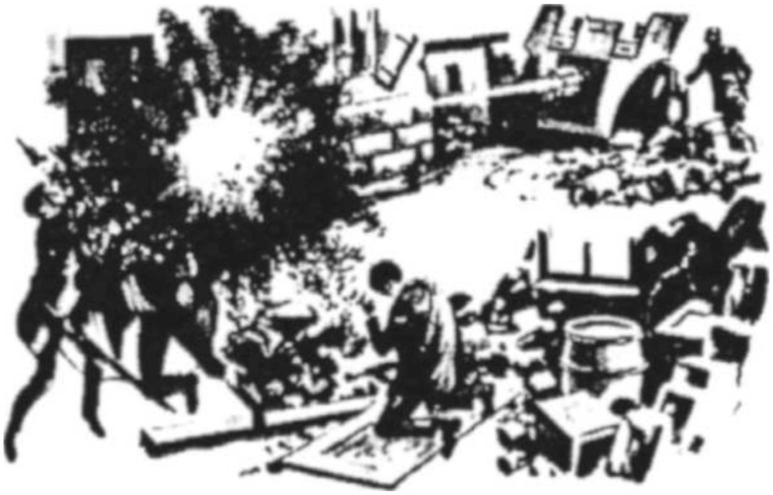

Pandora's Box

When first conceived Pandora's Box was thought of as an anti-aircraft weapon, but it proved to be most devastating on the ground. The SS used it against the Jewish, uprising in the Ghetto of Warsaw.

The inventor was, in civilian occupation, a mining engineer. He simply re-created the dread of all coal miners — an underground coal dust explosion. The explosion literally razed any building from its foundations. (See illustration). None of these weapons were ever used by the allies in any of the 50 wars since the end of W.W. II. One could safely assume therefore that these weapons did not fall into allied hands, since every other German invention has been reproduced; from missiles to space flight and satellites, and each has been always loudly heralded as some scientific breakthrough by either Russia or Uncle Sam.

This brings to mind a glaring example of the "Brain Drain". Recently it was announced with great fanfare that a U.S. paint company had perfected a superb camouflage paint capable of absorbing radar waves or make them unintelligible. They must have either "re-invented" a German invention which had been long in U.S. hands, and probably at great expense to the U.S. taxpayer, or else they just pocketed the money for going through Hitler's files, for it was nothing more than the paint used on German planes at the end of the war.

There were also other fantastic developments in the purely conventional aircraft design. Reproduced here are a few of the planes on the drawing boards when Germany surrendered. The famous B.M.W. plant in Munich produced for Hitler the world's first supersonic jet bomber only 12 months after Hitler had requested it. It's range was to be 10,000 miles. Six jet engines were to give it the speed of sound at an altitude of over 50,000 feet. The plane's code name, the Horten XVIII, would have been rolling off the assembly lines in the summer of 1945. It was to have carried 8,000 pounds of explosives to America and Russia and was designed to give the native population of these continents a taste of what it felt like to be at the receiving end of the "Liberators".

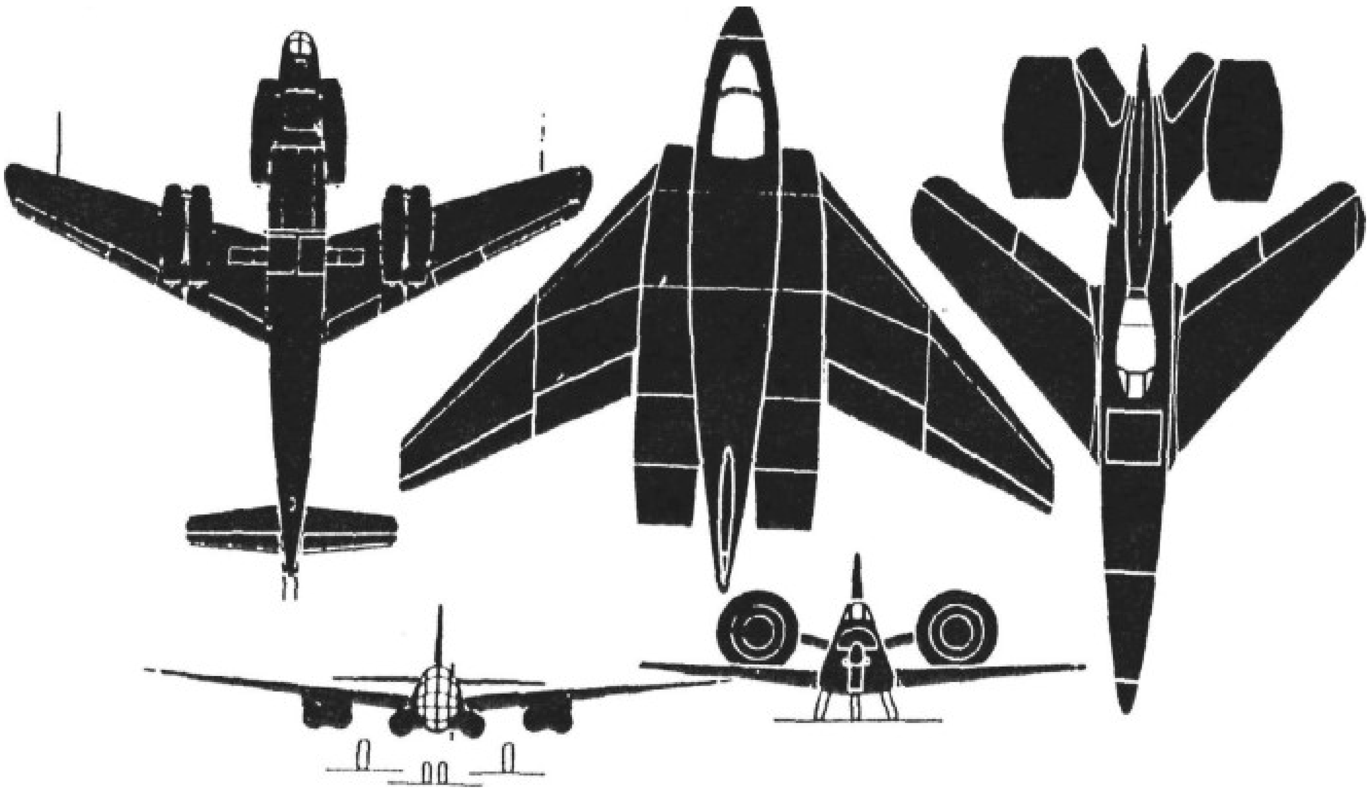

Hitler was an ardent believer in the teaching of Clausewitz and despite having under his control all of the above advanced technology and the atom bomb, he realised the necessity of having a certain amount of physical force to be able to occupy and control any given land-populated area. This Hitler lacked in April 1945 and hence his strategic withdrawal from Berlin.

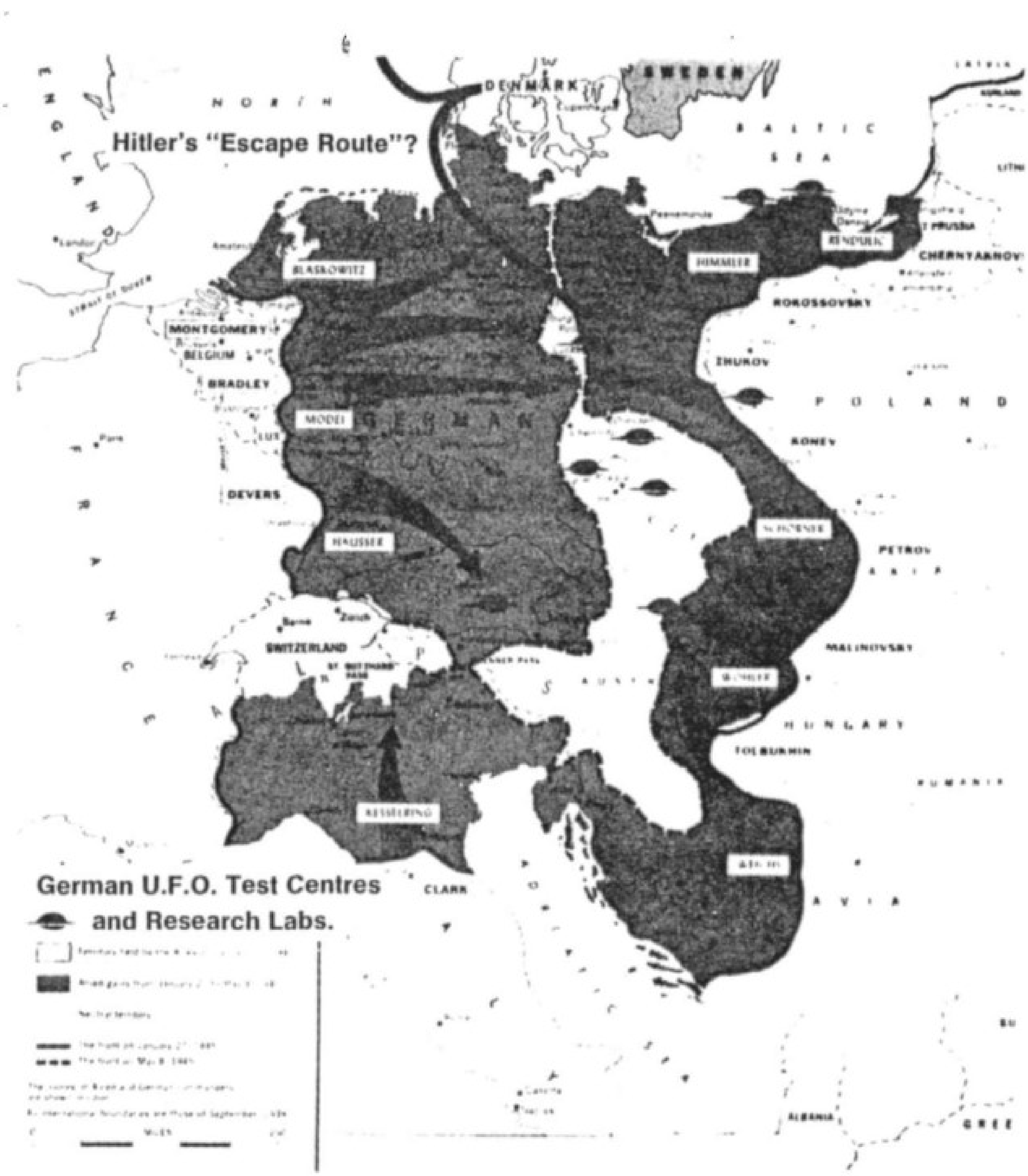
Hitler's "Escape Route"?
DENMARK
SWEDEN
NORTH
BALTIC SEA
ENGLAND
London
Strait of Dover
Peenemunde
Gdynia
Danzig
EAST PRUSSIA
BLASKOWITZ
MONTGOMERY
BELGIUM
BRADLEY
MODEL
GERMANY
DEVERS
HAUSSER
HIMMLER
RENDULIC
ROKOSSOVSKY
ZHUKOV
POLAND
KONEV
SCHÖRNER
PETROV
MALINOVSKY
WÖHLER
HUNGARY
TOLBUKHIN
RUMANIA
Berne
Zurich
SWITZERLAND
ST. GOTTHARD PASS
FRANCE
KESSELRING
CLARK
ALBANIA
German U.F.O. Test Centres and Research Labs.

Positions in February, May 8th, 1945

With the advancing allied armies came teams of scientifically trained specialists, whose sole jobs were to hunt for German scientists and to ensure that their installations, laboratories and factories were not destroyed. The Americans were the cleverest and best organized in this field, capturing many “prize catches”, and this, much to the chagrin and often anger, of the British, the French and especially the Russians. This great American “brain robbery” of the defeated enemy was so mind-boggling that a special dictionary for technical jargon of the aircraft industry alone had to be created by the captured Germans. It was comprised of over 75,000 separate terms and it made possible the exploitation of the stolen German patents. Wind tunnels, whole factories, all machines, every nut and bolt, including models, drawings and prototypes were shipped to America and to a lesser degree to the other allies. Top flight scientists were “invited” to work in the U.S. for $2.20 a day while being kept prisoners. In order to get cooperation, their starvation diets were kept “supplemented”. Some were even offered citizenship as an inducement, or “war crimes” trials if they didn’t produce. They included “Wernher von Braun”!

The Russians used methods only slightly different to those used by the Americans. On one particular occasion in an extremely well-coordinated plan conducted all over Soviet-occupied Germany, 275,000 specialists with their wives and children were hauled out of their beds in the early hours of the morning.

KIDNAPPING OF GERMAN SPECIALISTS

The raid was conducted in the Soviet Zone, 21st and 22nd October, 1946, all over central Germany by heavily armed troops, working to a minutely detailed plan. The specialists were forced to sign work agreements of five-year duration. Those who refused were taken in spite of their refusal. Women, children and even babies were taken. Protests were ignored or beaten down.

With few personal belongings, they were all shipped off to Russia. German factories were awaiting them, already dismantled and crated. There these specialists worked around the clock for three bowls of borscht soup and a slice of dark bread daily. In this way they were forced to help in bringing the Soviets, first, up-to-date and into the 20th Century, and then into the space age. With the further aid of U.S. Communist spies, Rosenberg, Greenglass et al the Russians were able to produce the first atom bomb. German science allowed them to produce Mig fighter-planes which were used to kill many Americans in Korea and later, in Vietnam.

The German scientists worked in about 40 different locations all over Russia:

40% in Kujbyschew — aircraft and jet engineer works
31% in Podberesje — aircraft design
6.5% in Moscow — radio, telephone technicians
4.5% in Tuschinow — pipelines
3% in Ostasckleow —
2% in Suchumi — Atomic research
1.5% in Leningrad — T.V. technicians

When the Germans protested as a group, they were shown documents, in English, signed by President Roosevelt of the United States, and by Winston Churchill, granting the Russians the express right to utilize any German person as they saw fit. Apparently these democratic leaders had no regard for human rights or liberties. These were the same men, who had wailed at Nuremberg, about the Germans utilizing forced labour in concentration camps. What hypocrites.

After their five year terms had been served, during which many had died and many were condemned to slave labour camps for life — camps such as “Workuta”, the scientists were kept for another 2-3 years in quarantine, so that they would forget the projects they had worked on, no pencils, no paper was allowed them. What devils in human form. Sanctioned by the leaders of England and the U.S.A.

All submarine construction, torpedo development, tank-building and, of course, military rocket construction was performed by the forced, slave labour of the German top brains and thus was fulfilled the agreement made by the Allies, and in particular by the Americans, at conferences held in Potsdam and Yalta.

The Allies committed the greatest highjacking crime in all recorded history when they stole thirty railroad cars full of German patents. Stolen is the only word that fits this crime, for not a cent was ever paid to Germany in royalties or property rights. However, the true motives of both the East and West were soon revealed to the entire world. It was not humanitarian ideals that led to the “get Germany” war in 1939 but obviously it was outright theft and industrial-economic considerations. As soon as the Allies had in their hands the German specialists and had bombed their troublesome competitor (German industry) out of the world market place, (not a savoury method but an extremely effective one), (see photo copy of U.S. Steel Speech), they couldn’t have cared less about freedom. There was no freedom of the press, freedom of speech or of opinion in Allied-occupied Europe and even today, thirty years later, there is still none.

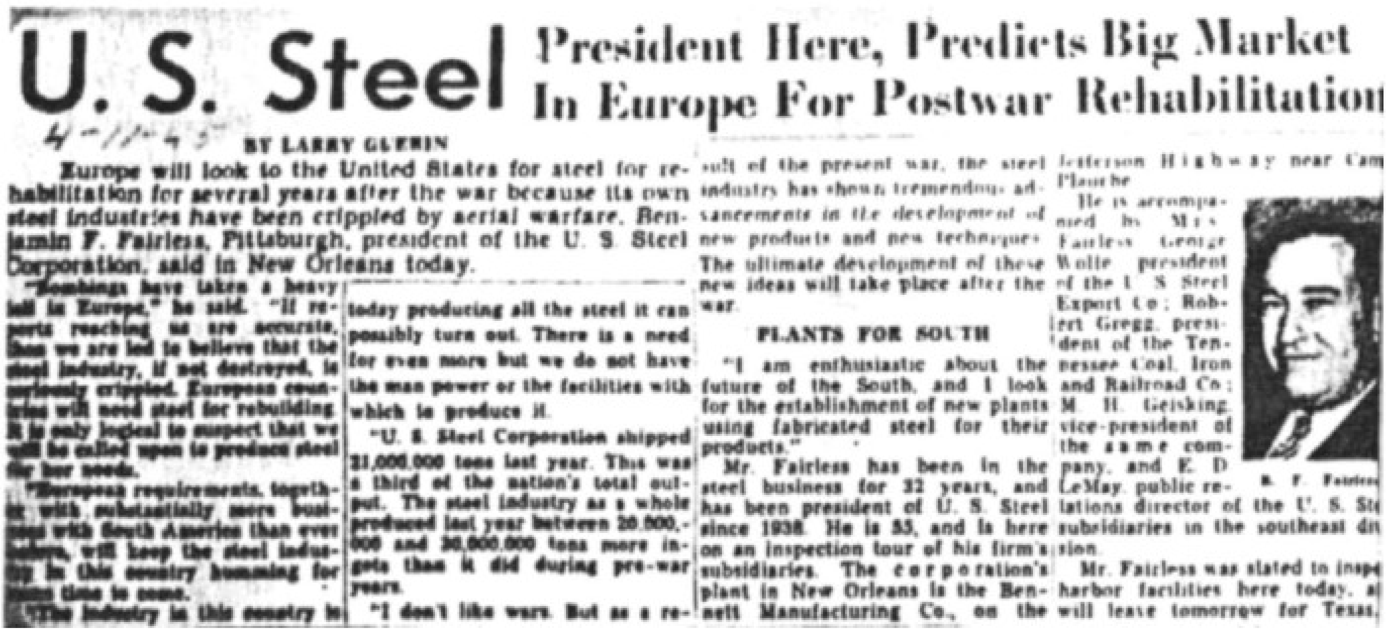

U. S. Steel President Here, Predicts Big Market In Europe For Postwar Rehabilitation

4-11-45

BY LARRY GUERIN

Europe will look to the United States for steel for rehabilitation for several years after the war because its own steel industries have been crippled by aerial warfare, Benjamin F. Fairless, Pittsburgh, president of the U. S. Steel Corporation, said in New Orleans today.

"Bombings have taken a heavy toll in Europe," he said. "If reports reaching us are accurate, then we are led to believe that the steel industry, if not destroyed, is seriously crippled. European countries will need steel for rebuilding. It is only logical to suspect that we will be called upon to produce steel for her needs.

"European requirements, together with substantially more business with South America than ever before, will keep the steel industry in this country humming for some time to come.

"The industry in this country is today producing all the steel it can possibly turn out. There is a need for even more but we do not have the man power or the facilities with which to produce it.

"U. S. Steel Corporation shipped 21,000,000 tons last year. This was a third of the nation's total output. The steel industry as a whole produced last year between 20,000,000 and 30,000,000 tons more ingots than it did during pre-war years.

"I don't like wars. But as a result of the present war, the steel industry has shown tremendous advancements in the development of new products and new techniques. The ultimate development of these new ideas will take place after the war.

PLANTS FOR SOUTH

"I am enthusiastic about the future of the South, and I look for the establishment of new plants using fabricated steel for their products."

Mr. Fairless has been in the steel business for 32 years, and has been president of U. S. Steel since 1938. He is 55, and is here on an inspection tour of his firm's subsidiaries. The corporation's plant in New Orleans is the Bennett Manufacturing Co., on the Jefferson Highway near Cam Plauche.

He is accompanied by Mrs. Fairless, George Wolfe, president of the U. S. Steel Export Co.; Robert Gregg, president of the Tennessee Coal, Iron and Railroad Co.; M. H. Geisking, vice-president of the same company, and E. D. LeMay, public relations director of the U. S. St subsidiaries in the southeast di sion.

B. F. Fairle

Mr. Fairless was slated to insp harbor facilities here today, a will leave tomorrow for Texas.

War and its aftermath always mean big profits for big business

It was also the victors who introduced at Nuremberg the "democratic" order that "Might was Right" and so hanged Europe's elite for alleged crimes, which similar crimes the victors were still committing daily, such as employing slave labour (P.O.W.'s), establishing and running concentration camps, (Dachau, Buchenwald, Auschwitz etc., but now with Allied guards), and expelling millions from their ancestral home lands, to name a few.

However, despite all the stealing, one prize catch eluded both the east and west. Germany's U.F.O. research scientists could not be found. At first, drunk with victory, this important factor was overlooked but as the hangover from booty hunting, rape and conquest came to an end, it was too late. That some key scientists were obviously missing became clear, and although some plants and their installations were located, the staff with their machinery and prototypes had disappeared. Even the test pilots had vanished.

The Allied Intelligence networks again became active, but now the singleness of purpose — to kill the Krauts — was missing. The Allies began to suspect and accuse each other of having captured the "last secret". They had agreed to divide the loot "honestly". Each Ally was to receive microfilm copies of each and every German patent and secret document, regardless of whom had captured them, and since each stated they had kept their side of the bargain, a deadlock was reached. This controversy, which took place in the utmost secrecy and on the highest level, suddenly took a new and alarming twist.

From Northern Europe, and especially from neutral Sweden, came reports of Flying Saucers, called by the Swedish Press, "German Secret Weapons". This caused a sensation not only in Europe but in the entire world.

Stories abounded about overflights by these strange objects at speeds and in formations which the Swedes had only seen during the latter days of the war. During intense German secret weapon development, many of these weapons were being tested in the then still safe Baltic area. This U.F.O. activity (as it soon became called), occurred at just about the same time as serious European, and especially North and South American newspapers and radio networks, were carrying sensational reports about Hitler.

It was being claimed that Adolf Hitler had never committed suicide but had escaped from the Bunker in Berlin via a “hospital tank”, had been taken to Tempelhof airfield and there, with his wife, Eva Braun-Hitler, had transferred to one of Germany’s fast jets and flown first to Denmark and then on to Norway. Both Denmark and Norway were still firmly in German hands. From Norway, Hitler and a mysterious group of people, making up an entire convoy, were claimed to have left for an unknown destination. Let us now investigate!

Whilst the last paragraph reads like a story out of a sensational publication, (the type usually dealing with crime and sex), nevertheless Time magazine issue of May 7th, 1945, (one day before the war was officially ended), gave space for the following article, and this seven days after Hitler’s supposed suicide. Add to this the fact that the Press service from which this report emanated and was distributed, seems to be the same one or at least connected with, the Press service for which a certain Willy Frahm (now known as the retired Chancellor of West Germany, Willy Brandt) quite freely filed stories whilst in exile. Should this be the case then the report must be given added credence, for another of these exiles using this service was Herbert Wehner, today a top West German politician. At this time he was known as one of Stalin’s most active operators in the European underground and under constanct surveillance by the Swedish Police as a “Soviet Agent”.

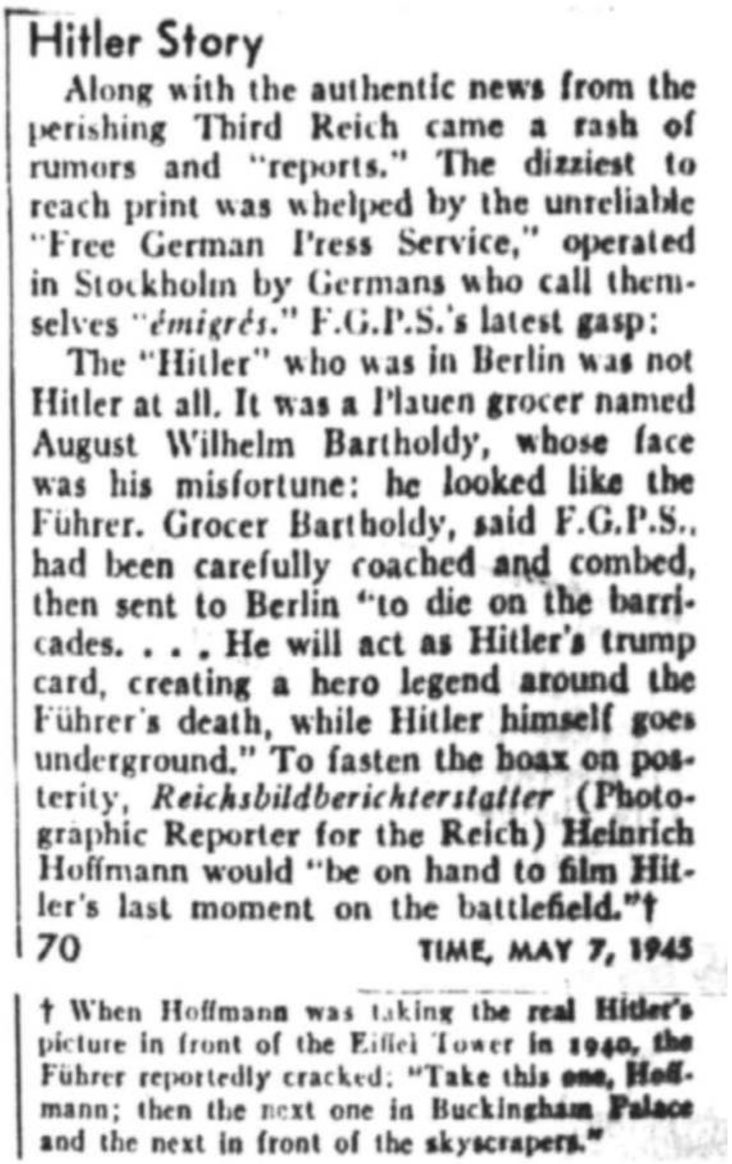

Hitler Story

Along with the authentic news from the perishing Third Reich came a rash of rumors and "reports." The dizziest to reach print was whelped by the unreliable "Free German Press Service," operated in Stockholm by Germans who call themselves "*émigrés.*" F.G.P.S.'s latest gasp:

The "Hitler" who was in Berlin was not Hitler at all. It was a Plauen grocer named August Wilhelm Bartholdy, whose face was his misfortune: he looked like the Führer. Grocer Bartholdy, said F.G.P.S., had been carefully coached and combed, then sent to Berlin "to die on the barricades. . . . He will act as Hitler's trump card, creating a hero legend around the Führer's death, while Hitler himself goes underground." To fasten the hoax on posterity, *Reichsbildberichterstatter* (Photographic Reporter for the Reich) Heinrich Hoffmann would "be on hand to film Hitler's last moment on the battlefield."†

70 TIME, MAY 7, 1945

---

† When Hoffmann was taking the real Hitler's picture in front of the Eiffel Tower in 1940, the Führer reportedly cracked: "Take this one, Hoffmann; then the next one in Buckingham Palace and the next in front of the skyscrapers."

These types of Press services were usually the mouthpieces of communist spy rings inside German-controlled Europe. They were organized and financed by the Soviet Komintern or K.G.B. Their sources of information were from secret communist cells operating vast guerilla and spy networks which the Russians had set up even before W.W. II. Usually their information was first hand.

The Reds were waiting for the day of Germany's defeat when they could then get away with "murder" by killing all anti-Communists and conveniently calling them Nazi-collaborators.

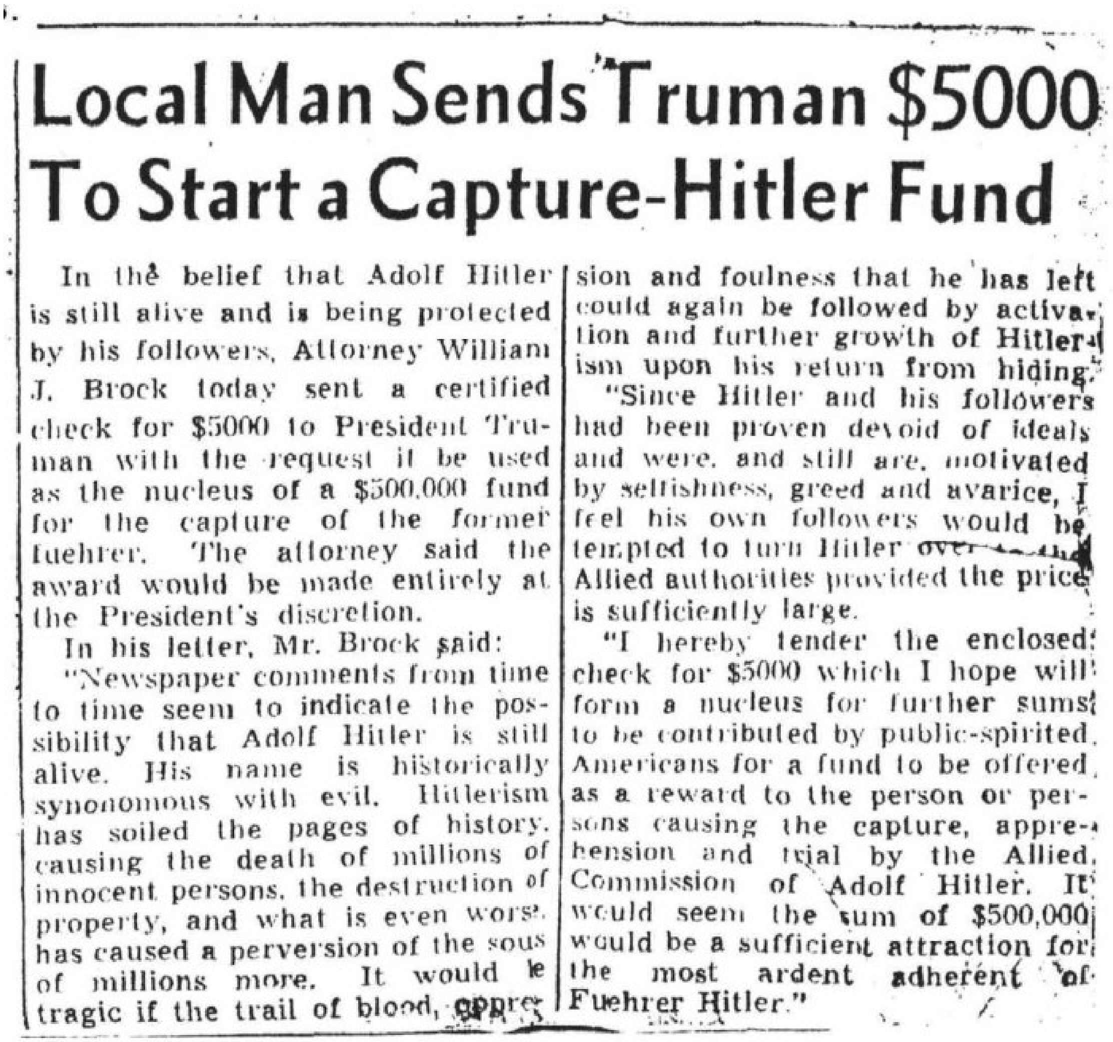

Local Man Sends Truman $5000 To Start a Capture-Hitler Fund

In the belief that Adolf Hitler is still alive and is being protected by his followers, Attorney William J. Brock today sent a certified check for $5000 to President Truman with the request it be used as the nucleus of a $500,000 fund for the capture of the former fuehrer. The attorney said the award would be made entirely at the President's discretion.

In his letter, Mr. Brock said:

"Newspaper comments from time to time seem to indicate the possibility that Adolf Hitler is still alive. His name is historically synonomous with evil. Hitlerism has soiled the pages of history, causing the death of millions of innocent persons, the destruction of property, and what is even worse, has caused a perversion of the souls of millions more. It would be tragic if the trail of blood, oppression and foulness that he has left could again be followed by activation and further growth of Hitlerism upon his return from hiding.

"Since Hitler and his followers had been proven devoid of ideals and were, and still are, motivated by selfishness, greed and avarice, I feel his own followers would be tempted to turn Hitler over to the Allied authorities provided the price is sufficiently large.

"I hereby tender the enclosed check for $5000 which I hope will form a nucleus for further sums to be contributed by public-spirited Americans for a fund to be offered as a reward to the person or persons causing the capture, apprehension and trial by the Allied Commission of Adolf Hitler. It would seem the sum of $500,000 would be a sufficient attraction for the most ardent adherent of Fuehrer Hitler."

Another very interesting article was one which appeared in many U.S. newspapers announcing the formation of a "Capture Hitler Fund"! This is only second to an incredible book written by one of America's senior diplomats, former Secretary of State Jimmy Byrnes, in which he reveals a lengthy conversation he had with Stalin about the touchy subject of Hitler's disappearance from the world scene, and confirms Stalin's belief that Adolf Hitler had not died in the Bunker in Berlin.

Reproduced here is a condensed version of an article which appeared in an American religious publication entitled "The Cross and The Flag" of date April 1948, and gives Stalin's response to a direct question from Mr. Byrnes about Hitler's whereabouts. It seems that even the highest echelons of the Allied governments were not convinced of Hitler's death, for any reports of Hitler having been seen were always thoroughly checked out.

Is Hitler Still Alive?

Former Secretary of State Jimmy Byrnes reveals in his new book entitled "Frankly Speaking" that it is the opinion of Joe Stalin that **Hitler is still alive.** The statement of Byrnes sounds more like a belated confession than an historical account. Says Byrnes in effect: "While in Potsdam at the Conference of the Big Four, Stalin left his chair, came *over and clinked his liquor glass with mine in a* very friendly manner. I said to him: '**Marshal Stalin, what is your theory about the death of Hitler?' Stalin replied: 'He is not dead. He escaped either to Spain or Argentina.'** "

If anyone knows where Hitler is, outside of his intimate friends, it is Josef Stalin. It will be remembered that the American troops were ready to invade Berlin first, but at the order of Franklin D. Roosevelt, acting through Ike Eisenhower, the American troops were held back in order that Stalin might have the honor of capturing Berlin. What a deal! What a betrayal of the pride and dignity of the United States Army, and what an insult to the British Army which was also ready to move in with our troops.

There are numerous theories concerning what happened to Hitler. I list them below:

1. The publicized theory is that he was burned up during the bombing of Berlin.
2. He was captured by the Russians and is now a prisoner in Moscow.
3. *He was captured by the Russians, tortured* and then killed.
4. He was spirited away by certain Jewish extremists who desired to slaughter him as an act of revenge.
5. He was assassinated by one of his own aides who had accepted a large sum from Hitler's enemies and promised safety.
6. He committed suicide.
7. He commandeered a military plane and escaped with a staff of trusted compatriots.

Evidently Joe Stalin believes that the seventh theory is correct. I agree with Stalin in this theory. The most sensational neglect of a news story is in the fact that when Stalin told this to Byrnes it was not flashed across the world and given sensational display in the headlines of every daily newspaper on earth. It is still one of the most sensational pieces of news to come out. I will give you my reasons for believing that the first six theores are not well founded.

1. Just prior to the capture of Berlin, Hitler was in complete command of all military forces. Why did a man as brilliant and powerful as he was crawl down into a shelter and submit himself to cremation. This is illogical and unreasonable in the light of all that is known about Hitler.
2. Hitler was hated by the Russians more than any enemy that the Soviet had. He never would have submitted to being captured by them alive, and there was no reason why he should have been captured. Escape was really easy as far as he was concerned.
3. The argument which eliminates the second theory eliminates this one.
4. There were practically no Jews in Berlin when it was captured or prior to its capture. This theory seems far-fetched.
5. This theory might stand up were it not for the fact that only a few months prior to his disappearance certain corrupted friends had planted a bomb under his chair and somehow it did not go off at the proper moment, but *went off after he left his chair,* injuring him but not killing him. This made him very cautious and it is reasonable to believe that he was very alert at the time of his disappearence to betrayal within his own camp.
6. *This theory is exploded by the fact that* Hitler was a very courageous man. He never did anything to indicate physical or moral cowardice. It will be recalled that newsreels showed him walking freely and mixing freely with the crowds. A courageous man, whether he is wrong or right, whether he is a statesman or criminal, never commits suicide.
7. This theory stands up and there is any one of five or six places where he might be today. They include (a) *Argentina;* (b) *Spain;* (c) *Ireland;* (d) *Sweden;* (e) *Africa;* (f) *Portugal;* (g) *Switzerland.*

Hitler was known to have many, many followers in all of these countries. It will be remembered when Stalin was about to overrun and undermine Spain, and his followers were burning the churches, that Hitler sent an abundance of help to Franco, and Franco evidently felt under lasting obligation to Hitler.

Whatever the truth may be concerning this matter, it is not to be overlooked that Hitler, Mussolini and Roosevelt left the stage of action within a few weeks of each other. Mystery still surrounds the passing of Roosevelt. Thus, these 'three rulers,' who were perhaps three of the most powerful men that ever lived, disappeared from public life shrouded with mystery. It is now a matter of common knowledge that Mussolini was hanged by a Communist mob. The same people who hung Mussolini and spat upon him and rolled his body in the

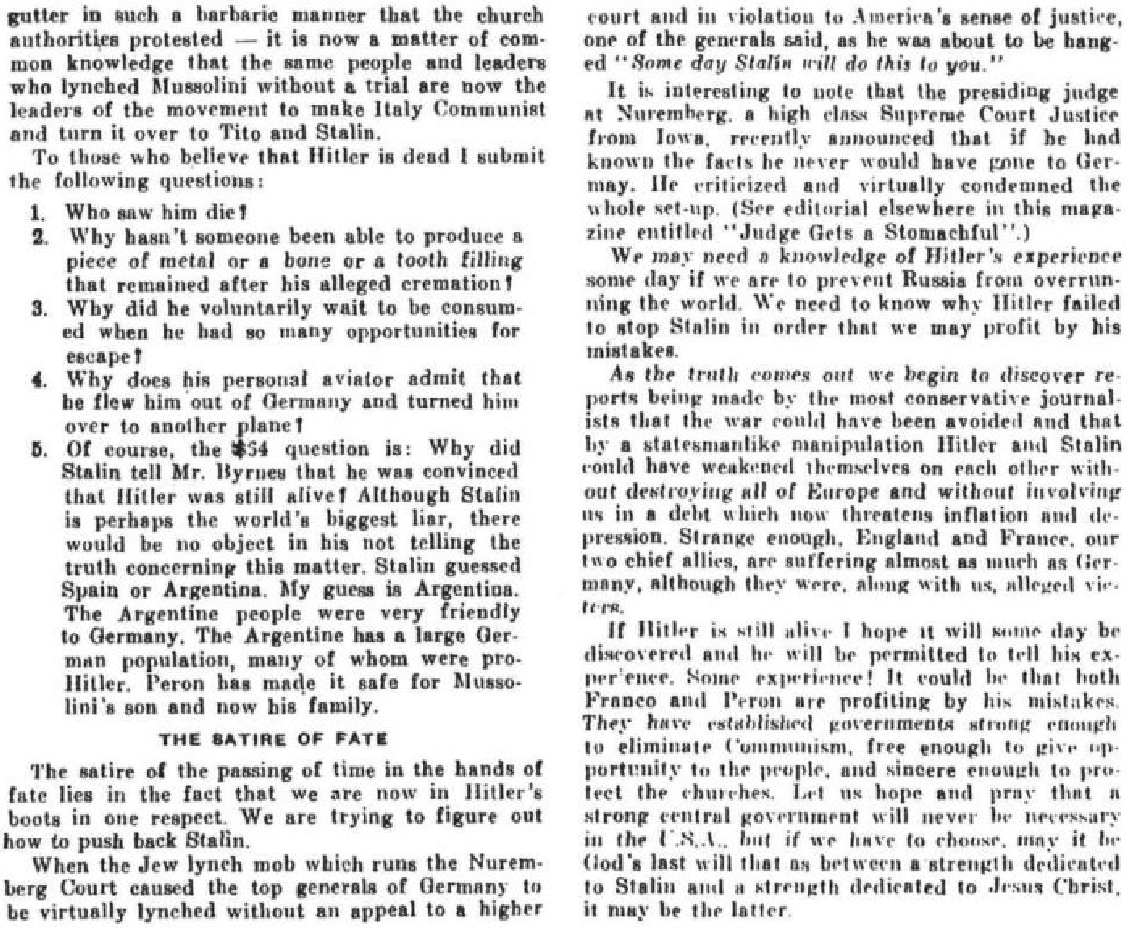

gutter in such a barbaric manner that the church authorities protested — it is now a matter of common knowledge that the same people and leaders who lynched Mussolini without a trial are now the leaders of the movement to make Italy Communist and turn it over to Tito and Stalin.

To those who believe that Hitler is dead I submit the following questions:

1. Who saw him die?
2. Why hasn't someone been able to produce a piece *of metal* or a *bone* or a *tooth filling* that remained after his alleged cremation?
3. Why did he voluntarily wait to be consumed when he had so many opportunities for escape?
4. Why does his personal aviator admit that he flew him out of Germany and turned him over to another plane?
5. Of course, the $54 question is: Why did Stalin tell Mr. Byrnes that he was convinced that Hitler was still alive? Although Stalin is perhaps the world's biggest liar, there would be no object in his not telling the truth concerning this matter. Stalin guessed Spain or Argentina. My guess is Argentina. The Argentine people were very friendly to Germany. The Argentine has a large German population, many of whom were pro-Hitler. Peron has made it safe for Mussolini's son and now his family.

THE SATIRE OF FATE

The satire of the passing of time in the hands of fate lies in the fact that we are now in Hitler's boots in one respect. We are trying to figure out how to push back Stalin.

When the Jew lynch mob which runs the Nuremberg Court caused the top generals of Germany to be virtually lynched without an appeal to a higher court and in violation to America's sense of justice, one of the generals said, as he was about to be hanged "*Some day Stalin will do this to you.*"

It is interesting to note that the presiding judge at Nuremberg, a high class Supreme Court Justice from Iowa, recently announced that if he had known the facts he never would have gone to Germany. He criticized and virtually condemned the whole set-up. (See editorial elsewhere in this magazine entitled "Judge Gets a Stomachful".)

We may need a knowledge of Hitler's experience some day if we are to prevent Russia from overrunning the world. We need to know why Hitler failed to stop Stalin in order that we may profit by his mistakes.

As the truth comes out we begin to discover reports being made by the most conservative journalists that the war could have been avoided and that by a statesmanlike manipulation Hitler and Stalin could have weakened themselves on each other without *destroying all of Europe* and without involving us in a debt which now threatens inflation and depression. Strange enough, England and France, our two chief allies, are suffering almost as much as Germany, although they were, along with us, alleged victors.

If Hitler is still alive I hope it will some day be discovered and he will be permitted to tell his experience. Some experience! It could be that both Franco and Peron are profiting by his mistakes. *They have established governments strong enough* to eliminate Communism, free enough to give opportunity to the people, and sincere enough to protect the churches. Let us hope and pray that a strong central government will never be necessary in the U.S.A., *but if we have to choose, may it be* God's last will that as between a strength dedicated to Stalin and a strength dedicated to Jesus Christ, it may be the latter.

Oberst Skorzeny was a famous German Commando leader and a personal friend of Hitler. Hitler entrusted him with many daring missions, such as the rescuing of Mussolini from his mountain-top prison, and the arresting of Vice-Regent Horthy of Hungary from the Castle in Budapest, at a time when the Castle was surrounded by thousands of Hungarian elite troops. Skorzeny was repeatedly interrogated by the American C.I.C. and even as late as 1947-48, about his alleged role in the escape of Hitler!

Did Hitler and some of his closest men indeed survive the Third Reich? This question is of world significance, and it is with this in mind that the following articles are quoted, and some are reproduced in photo copy form for those readers who are multilingual.

Of all the articles and the versions of Hitler's escape from his embattled bunker in Berlin, the following seems the most plausible: In the German-language book "Das Ende des Hitler Mythos", page 339, reference is made to a series of events which completely negate the claims of the suicides of Hitler and Eva Braun. These suicides are usually stated to have happened at the Fuhrer Bunker, Berlin, April 30th, 1945, 3.30 p.m. In the above book it is claimed that Hitler was seen at 4.15 p.m. on that same day. Eyewitnesses gave their accounts under oath. Hitler either made a Christ-like resurrection, three quarters of an hour after his "death" or he had left the Bunker alive and with a plan.

4 [illegible] nero

LA SUPUESTA FUGA DE HITLER

VARSOVIA, 3. — (A. P.) — [illegible] diario "Wiarus" [illegible] artículo diciendo al ex [illegible] de las SS, capitán Peter Baumgart, como [illegible] de Hitler y Eva Braun [illegible] a Estados Unidos a bordo de un submarino, dos días antes de la caída de Berlín, en 1945.

Baumgart fué citado en forma similar por el mismo diario, en octubre del año pasado, diciendo [illegible]

[illegible] pero, en esa opor-

[illegible]

Tanquista alemán dice haber visto escapar a Hitler

[illegible]

MUNICH, 17 (UP). — Un tanquista alemán de 24 años de edad, que no quise revelar su nombre por temor a represalias nazis, declar bajo juramento que vió a Hitler escapar de la Cancillería en un tanque ambulancia el 29 de Abril de 1945, es decir, el día que el Fuehrer se suicidó.

Esta historia ha provocado poco interés oficial.

[illegible]

PRETENDE HABER VISTO A HITLER QUE HUIA

NUREMBERG, Alemania, [illegible] (AP).— Funcionarios del Servicio de Inteligencia del Ejército de Estados Unidos encontraron a otro alemán que pretende haber visto a Hitler y Eva Braun escapar de Alemania. Arthur Frederick Angelotte Mackensen, ex piloto de la fuerza aérea alemana, afirmó a los oficiales que él vió a Hitler y a Eva escapar por avión de Berlín hacia Dinamarca, a fines de abril de 1945.

Mackensen fué arrestado en Molfratshausen, cerca de Munich, por una información proporcionada por una muchacha alemana.

Los oficiales dijeron que relatos similares les han sido hechos en el pasado, pero nunca

---

ZIG ZAG
16 Enero 48

¿HITLER EN DINAMARCA?

Durante el proceso que se realizó en la ciudad de Varsovia, el capitán Peter Baumgart declaró que había llevado en su avión a Hitler y a un grupo de amigos de éste a Dinamarca, el día 28 de abril de 1945, poco [illegible] pués de los aliados. [illegible] vanta vuelo en el Hohenzollerndamm y aterrizó a 19 kilómetros del río Eider, en Dinamarca. Según su declaración, el Fuehrer le entregó al aterrizar un cheque por 20.000 marcos. Baumgart aparece en esta fotografía con uniforme de aviador, tal como se presentó en el juicio que se le sigue en Varsovia en su condición de miembro de la organización hitlerista de las S. S. —iniciales con que se designaba a la "Schutz-Staffel", la fuerza organizada y férreamente disciplinada por Heinrich Himmler para la protección del Fuehrer.

Spanish newspaper reports about Hitler's escape

According to further evidence contained in press reports emanating from Munich and appearing in the pages of "Diario llustrado" of Santiago, Chile issue of 18th January, 1948, "on 30th of April, 1945, Berlin was in dissolution but little of that dissolution was evident at Tempelhof airfield. Ground support organizations, such as radio, radar as well as harbour and riverboat direction were functioning at peak efficiency. Takeoffs and landings were handled smoothly. The airspace was crowded. Every six minutes a plane landed and ten planes took off every hour, and all of this with a city under siege. Highspeed German fighters and jets could be seen circling about to secure airspace and consequently Tempelhof runways had received only minor damage. The sound of machine-gun fire could be heard in the distance. Radio operators had received reports that the Russians had advanced to the Koch and Oranian Strasse. Contact to the city's centre had been interrupted. Two alternatives remained, escape by air from Tempelhof or capture by the advancing Soviet troops".

"At 4.15 p.m. a JU52 landed, and S.S. troops directly from Rechlin for the defence of Berlin disembarked, all of them young, not older than 18 years. The gunner in the particular plane was an engineer by the name of B......... whom I had known for a number of years and for whom I had endeavoured to get exemption from military service. He sought to tank up and leave Berlin as quickly as possible. During this re-fuelling interval Mr. B......... was suddenly elbowed in the ribs by his radio operator with a nod to look in a certain direction. At about 100-120 metres he saw a sleek Messerschmitt Jet Model 332. (The reporters must have made a mistake here, it could only have been an ARADO 234 — a mistake not difficult to understand since secrecy was the hallmark of the Nazi Regime. This Turbojet had a range of 4,000 km.) Mr. B........ and the radio operator saw and without any doubt whatsoever, standing in front of the jet, their Commander in Chief, Adolf Hitler, dressed in field-grey uniform and gesticulating animatedly with some Partyfunctionaries, who were obviously seeing him off. For about ten minutes whilst their plane was being refuelled the two men observed this scene and around 4.30 p.m. they took to the air again. They were extremely astonished to hear during the midnight military news bulletin, some seven and a half hours later that Hitler had committed suicide".

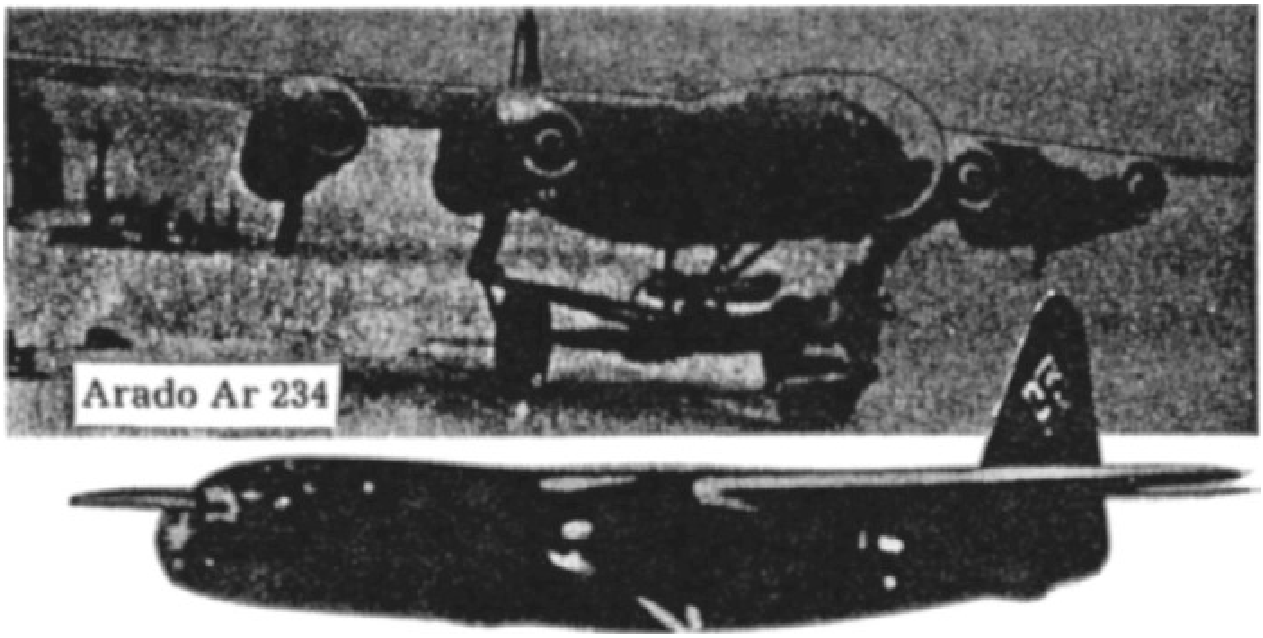

Arado Ar 234

It was during this military news broadcast that Admiral Donitz announced that he was taking over as the new Commander-in-Chief. This same bulletin was broadcast over the German civilian radio network and Dr. Goebbels reported that the Fuhrer had entered Valhalla, (that mystical place in ancient Nordic sagas where heroes dwell after death).

Upon questioning, the engineer Mr. B........... denied the possibility of error on his part and reiterated that on April 30th, 1945 at 4.15 p.m., whilst refuelling his plane at Tempelhof airport, and in the bright light of the setting sun he saw Adolf Hitler, and at a time when it was no longer possible to reach the Reichskanzlei (Hitler's Bunker). When Mr. B......... first heard the news reports he concluded that Hitler had died in an airplane crash." This particular report by Mr. B........ with all the sensational content, was never published in the English-speaking press.

The Soviet Information Office reported on May 3rd, 1945, that Hitler's servant, Fritsche had been captured and interrogated by the Soviets and had stated that Hitler, Goebbels and the new Chief of the General Staff, General of the Infantry, Krebs, had committed suicide. Lt. Heimlich of the American C.I.C., whose responsibility it was to check all rumours and reports, all sightings and evidence regarding the whereabouts or the death of Hitler, reached the conclusion that Hitler, Eva Braun and Martin Bormann were still alive and that there existed not one iota of proof that Hitler had actually died.

The report (INS) further stated that according to investigations by the American authorities it would have been relatively simple to escape from Berlin, whilst experts pointed to the almost impossible task of burning a corpse in the open air by just dousing it with a can of gasoline and not leave behind some recognisable evidence.

It is a fact that a working party made up of American, British, French and Russian soldiers did find a ditch which produced two hats, supposedly belonging to Hitler, and also a pair of panties bearing Eva Braun's initials, but no corpses or parts of corpses.

This is where Hitler's hats and Eva Braun's panties were found. (Allied investigators)

Much has been written regarding identification through medical and dental records and Hitler has been much in the news in this respect. A recent report by the Canadian Broadcasting Corporation makes interesting reading. On the programme "As it Happens" on September 17th, 1974 at 7:15 p.m., a Prof. Dr. Ryder Saguenay, oral surgeon from the Dental Faculty of the University of California at Los Angeles revealed the facts that Hitler had ordered a special plane to leave from Berlin with all medical and dental records, and especially X-rays, of the top Nazis and for an unknown destination, and that any drawings, charts and other evidence which have been presented, regarding Hitler's dental status; have been drawn from MEMORY by the dental assistant to Hitler's dentist, the latter who was himself never found.

To fully appreciate the importance of the above evidence, the situation of Germany at the end of the war must be taken into account. Planes were scarce, but apparently not too scarce for Hitler to decide it was of great importance to use one to fly medical and dental records to some unknown place. If Hitler had been contemplating suicide why would he have bothered to remove such vital evidence? To where were they flown and why did he feel it was necessary to remove all traces of such identifying material? Unless the “suicide” was a well-thought out ruse to confuse the Allies whilst Hitler was escaping.

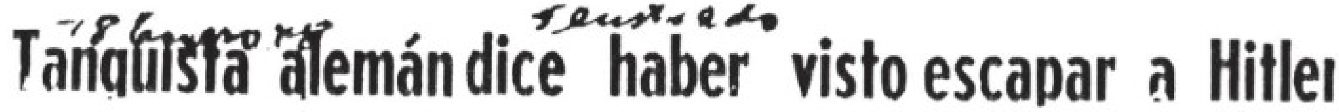

Tanquista alemán dice haber visto escapar a Hitler

There are a few other reports from the Spanish-speaking press which deserve mention and reproduced here is one as it appeared in Editorial “Zip Zag”. Santiago, Chile, on 16th January, 1948. It seems that on April 30th, 1945, a Peter Baumgart (FlugKapitan — Flight Captain), took Adolf Hitler, his wife Eva Braun, as well as a few loyal friends by plane from Tempelhof airport to Tondern in Denmark (still firmly in German hands). From Tondern, where Baumgart landed, the Fuhrer’s party continued in a new plane with another crew, to Kristiansund in Norway, also still in German hands. There a German submarine convoy was waiting to receive its unusual “cargo”. In the meantime the Junkers which had brought the Fuhrer returned to Tondern, circled the airfield and dropped a mes-, sage to the effect that the Fuhrer had reached his destination safely. This unusual method of communicating was chosen, so as to keep radio silence and not attract undue notice. (From Mattern, U.F.O. Letzte Geheimwaffe des III Reiches page 50-51).

Another dimension is added to this story when comparing some of the statements made by Erich Kempka who had been in Hitler’s employ, as chief of his carpool since 1932. In his book “Ich habe Adolf Hitler verbrannt” — “I burnt Hitler”, page 109, he recounts that after some confused telephoned conversations with Gunsche (Hitler’s personal adjutant), Gunsche shouted at him, wide-eyed and rather theatrically — “The Chief is dead”. Kempka stated how shocked he felt and then how he asked Gunsche how could it have happened since he had spoken to Hitler just the day before when he, Hitler, was completely well and completely controlled. In the same book on page 139 there is further information which all points to a well-conceived plan. A German submarine commander had stated under interrogation by the American C.I.C. that he was under orders since 25th April, 1945, to be at constant readiness, “Besonderen Verfugung”, under immediate control of the Fuhrer. At Bremen this submarine commander declared that at least 10 other submarine commanders had received the same order! .

Further, the C.I.C. found that twelve Flight Captains had been issued a valid secret order from the Fuhrerhauptquartier (Hitler’s H-Q.) to be in a constant state of readiness for Hitler’s departure.

Gross Admiral Donitz has always figured in developments surrounding Hitler’s whereabouts, and Donitz was Hitler’s successor. The American writer, Malcolm X refers to him in his book “We Want You? Is Hitler Alive?”, page 10, and claims that Donitz knew about Hitler’s plans and was instrumental in his escape to an oasis in South America.

Mattern, in his German version of the U.F.O. Story, repeatedly quotes Donitz as playing a key role in the Fuhrer’s plans. On page 15 he reports excerpts from one of Donitz’s speeches at a graduation ceremony to naval cadets in Kiel, in 1944: “The German navy has still a great role to play in the future. The German navy knows all hiding places for the navy to take the Fuhrer to, should the need arise. There he can prepare his last measures in (“aller Ruhe”) complete quiet”.

Michael Bar-Zohar speaks of the role of Donitz — “The Avengers” page 99. Essentially, Bar-Zohar corroborates Michael X and Mattern. Excerpts below.

Michael Bar-Zohar speaks of the role of Donitz

> In 1943 Admiral Doenitz had declared: “The German U-boat fleet is proud to have made an earthly paradise, an inpregnable fortress for the Fuehrer, somewhere in the world.”
>
> He did not say in what part of the world it existed, but fairly obviously it was in South America.
>
> As far back as 1933, when the Nazi Party had come to power, the new masters of the Reich had made a special effort to spread their doctrine in South American countries. For several reasons, these countries presented a fertile field. There were large German colonies strongly established in many parts of Latin America. Several hundred thousand Germans or people of German stock were settled in Brazil, At Blumenau and Florianópolis, in the federal state of Santa Catarina, everything was, and still is, reminiscent of Germany—the countryside, the style of the houses, the appearance of the people, their speech. It was the same in several regions of Argentina. In the capital, Buenos Aires, in Tucumán, Formosa, Córdoba, and Cordier, in the Gran Chaco and the vastness of the *Paraná Misiones*, and at San Carles de Bariloche, a bit of Switzerland in the southern hemisphere, with its pine trees and snow-clad mountainside—at all these places German colonies had settled and expanded with amazing rapidity. In Paraguay, tens of thousands of German immigrants had cleared and cultivated virgin areas to the east of the Asnnción and had given their new towns names like Hohenau to remind them of their origins. Another wave of German immigrants had spread over the southern part of Chile, the region round the towns of Osorno and Valdivia, and the island of Chiloé, as well as settling in the capital. Santiago. Many more had gone to Peru, Uruguay, and other Latin American countries.

Having made an initial study of the mind of Hitler and having some understanding of his modus operandi we can now move into another area of this story. What are the other indications, which point to where, why, when and how? Let us examine some of the statements made during Hitler’s career.

Hitler never tied the success of his mission on the sole fate of Germany. He fully realised, and early in his career, that Germany proper could be over-run by his enemies. He said right at the beginning of the war and during the conquest of Poland, “And if our enemies should inundate (uberschwemmt) all of Germany, we shall then fight on from abroad, we will never capitulate.” And another statement from no less a book than “Mein Kampf”, German version, 1938, page 470: “The battle that rages today is for very high goals. A culture fights for its existence, that encompasses the heritage of ancient Greece and modern Germandom as well . . .”

Again, we see that Hitler saw the struggle as a global one even before the war. He had written Mein Kampf in 1923-24. On page 475, of the same volume he states further: “Certainly the world is approaching a great upheaval. It can only be around one single issue; will it be favourable to the Aryan people or will it benefit only the eternal Jew?”

In these sentences can be found a very clear indication that Hitler felt, as far back as 1923-24 that the struggle, his struggle, (which, incidentally, is the literal translation of the words "Mein Kampf") was not for Germany alone but for all Aryan man, or to put it in simple language, for the existence of the white man.

It is evident from Hitler's alliance with "yellow" Japan and his collaboration and active support with many non-white independence movements, such as the Arabs, the Caucassus tribes, the Cossacks and also India, that he was never the narrow-minded, racist bigot allied propagandists have tried to brainwash the world into believing. The German general, Beck, once said about Hitler, "This man has no fatherland". It is important we approach this entire question with an absolutely open mind, for only then will we be able to unravel this Hitler-U.F.O. connection.

Had Hitler been a narrow-minded, nationalist politician, a mustachioed dictator who experienced his thrills by ranting and raving at large crowds of cowed followers driven to mass rallies at bayonet point, then his end would seem explainable. He was far more than that, namely a prophet, with global vision much in the cast of the prophets of old who have been recorded and revered in the old Testament by both Christians and Jews. He was born into German-speaking central Europe, that's all. An accident of fate. Undoubtedly, he would have preached the same eloquent sermon had he been born in France or England.

On July 20th, 1944 Skorzeny arrived at Hitler's Headquarters bringing with him the liberated Mussolini. This visit coincided with the one and only nearly-successful attempt on Hitler's life. Hitler made to Skorzeny a most significant statement. "I begin to doubt whether the German people are worthy of my ideals". This statement again reveals Hitler's detachment from Germany and points up the mentality of a universal-thinking individual. It must be granted, that indications are present that Hitler was ready to continue the struggle from outside Germany. But how, and with what methods and weapons? Before we continue we must take another look at the suicide plot.

1. The bodies of Hitler and Eva Braun were never produced.

2. The items introduced as "evidence" are only circumstantial; two of Hitler's hats, 1 pair of panties with the initials E. B. and a few bones. (There were millions of bones lying all over Germany as the result of the mass-killing by the Allied aerial bombing)

3. The bloodstains found on the furniture in Hitler's quarters in the Bunker were not of his blood type.

4. Hitler was not suicide prone. On the contrary, only a few days earlier after he had heard of the suicide of the Mayor of Leipzig and his family, he had condemned suicide as cowardly and unbecoming to a National Socialist.

5. The most important witnesses and the men closest to Hitler have never been found, e.g. Bormann, Stumpfegger, Gunsche et al.

6. Hitler, by his very nature, and his unfailing belief in his mission, (one of global and not national dimensions), would tend to continue the struggle from elsewhere.

7. There are too many reports and sightings, eye witness reports and even evidence that the suicide attempt was a brilliantly-successful, carefully-staged scenario. A typical Hitler production.

In view of the above summation, we can assume that there was indeed a contingency plan.

One of the iron-clad rules of wartime Nazi Germany was to never let anyone, however high their position or rank, know more about a plan or operation than was absolutely necessary to the execution of his or her particular contribution to the overall whole. This rule applied to all and even to men like Himmler who was Chief of the S.S. and who by the end of the war, commanded vast military forces on the eastern front. Himmler had known Hitler since his earliest days and even he could not comprehend the absolute calm and certainty of final victory that Hitler displayed in those terrible last days in the Bunker in Berlin. He saw, when he tabled his ever more devastating reports about lost ground, enemy advances, bombing damage etc. how Hitler would listen attentively and quietly. This led him to speculate aloud and come to the conclusion “The Fuhrer has some kind of a plan” — reported in Trevor Roper’s book “Hitler’s Letzte Tage” on page 101.

There are other indications that even very high level military types, such as General Keitel and Jodl were not privy to all secrets. An April 22nd, 1945, these two men received orders to leave for the Obersalzberg (Hitler’s famous “Alpine Redoubt” about which we will speak later). Although loyal to the very end to their Commander-in-Chief, they did not want to die in the “Rat Trap” as they called the Bunker in Berlin. Consequently, they tried to persuade Hitler to leave with them. A heated debate ensued, according to the ever-present stenographer, Hergesell, and even a forceful abduction of Hitler to the Alpine fortress was considered by the two top generals. Finally Bormann, one of the few who apparently was in the know about the plan, persuaded them otherwise, and they left without Hitler.

Dr. Josef Goebbels, one of the most brilliant followers and exponents of Hitler, seems also to have been initiated to some degree, in the final phase. He had a three hour meeting with Hitler in those hectic last days and left the meeting calling out “Mein Fuhrer was sind Sie gross” — “My Fuhrer, what a great man you are”. A few days later in a radio broadcast he made a number of interesting statements and one in particular which referred to new Secret Weapons, so fantastic “they made my heart beat more quickly when I saw them”.

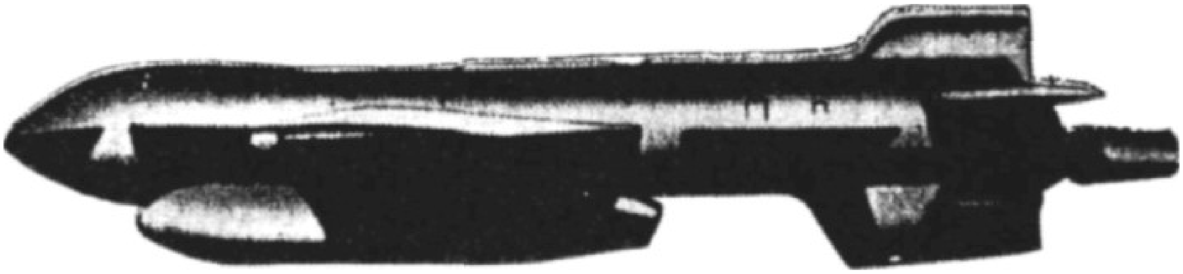

There are also some statements he made to his secretary on April 22nd, 1945, as reported in the book “Mit Goebbels bis zum Ende”, Durer Verlag, Buenos Aires “. . . We want to see if under these circumstances the Americans will shoot us in the back”. A few days later Goebbels gave a further highly-significant glimpse of what was planned when he said “May God protect our Fuhrer during the approaching danger” — reported also in the above-mentioned book. Was Goebbels referring to the underwater journey to the paradisical oasis in South America? How much clearer could we be told of what was afoot?

Maybe in Hitler’s own words? On February 24th, 1945 Hitler made a prophetic speech at the end of which he said these words:— “In this war there will be no victors and no vanquished either, but only the dead and the survivors. The last battalion however, will be a German one”. A further definition can be obtained by Hitler’s remark, towards the end of the war, that “. . . the inevitable and automatic clash between east and west will come sooner or later and we (the Germans) will then be and act as the proverbial tip of the scale”.

Should there still be some doubt in the reader’s mind as to whether there was, in fact, “something cooking” in Adolf Hitler’s fertile brain in those days when his world around him was going up in dust, flames and smoke, then read this. Germany’s legendary female flyer, Hanna Reitsch, holder of many world records, first rocket plane jet pilot, daredevil of the air and one of the Fuhrer’s favourite people, had voluntarily accompanied one of Germany’s top men — Ritter von Greim, to embattled Berlin. They flew over the Soviet lines in order to get into the beleaguered capital and were hit by Russian antiaircraft fire. Ritter von Greim was hit by shrapnel and badly wounded. Hanna Reitsch managed to wrestle the controls of the floundering aircraft out of the hands of von Greim and landed the aircraft in Berlin’s famous Unter den Linden Boulevard.

In the previously-quoted book of Trevor Roper, “Hitler’s Letzte Tage”, page 146, mention is made of a telephone conversation which took place on April 28th, 1945 at Hitler’s headquarters, between Ritter von Greim and his subordinate, General Koller, who was in Furstenberg. “It goes something like this” said General Koller “He, (von Greim) would be lost. Gen-Koller offered his condolences about Greim’s condition, his wounds, and his seemingly useless promotion to new Chief of the German Luftwaffe (after Goring’s firing). He bemoaned the state of things generally and the future of Germany, in particular. He also reiterated his doubts about being able to do anything with the Luftwaffe. Then he paused. He expected a similarly gloomy echo from the Fieldmarshall on the other end of the line. But the world was still full of surprises for Gen. Koller. Life in the Bunker Headquarters seemed even more surreal than his experiences at Furstenberg. Koller was astounded when instead of lamentation of impending defeat, he heard an optimistic analysis of the future, and even promise of an inevitable German victory. “Just wait”, said the new Chief of the hard-pressed Luftwaffe. “Don’t despair. **All will be well!** The presence and optimism of the Fuhrer have given me new hope. The Bunker affects me like a fountain of youth". Koller listened in disbelief and was incredulous. He just could not understand it at all.

So the optimism in Germany in these last days was spoken from the mouth of Goebbels, a brilliant doctor of jurisprudence, the Reichsminister and the hero of Berlin. The man who had wrestled the communist-controlled workers of Berlin out of the clutches of the false prophet's of Moscow and delivered them to the Fuhrer as a gift to Germany's inner healing. A level-head and a first-rate brain. Also from Heinrich Himmler, the cold realist, a top cop of Germany, holding the same position and wielding even greater power, than the late J. Edgar Hoover had held in the United States. And lastly, from Fieldmarshall Ritter von Greim's conversation with a General Staff Officer. All these men had had lifelong careers and training in the martial arts and were cool, non-emotional Prussians to the core. From the above, there can be only one conclusion and that is that Hitler did not commit suicide. Hitler did not die.

That there was a drama could hardly be denied, as evidenced by the article (reproduced earlier) from Time magazine, but weighing all the evidence, an escape from Berlin is certainly more likely than a suicide.

We have now covered almost every loose end and woven the loose strands into a more or less logical pattern. Now there remains only the how and where? Hitler escapes! Why?

Why were the secret weapons not used in the battle for Germany's survival? Many of them were, but there was a standard requirement in German military thinking that demanded that for every new weapon introduced, a defence had to be introduced with it. A sensible safety measure in case any weapon ever fell into enemy hands which could then quickly be copied and used against Germany. Thus, when radar was introduced, radar jamming devices were introduced at the same time. When fast jet planes were brought in, (200 kilometers faster than the fastest Allied planes in existence or in the planning stage), ground to air defence missiles were concurrently introduced.

It might interest the reader to have a look at this array of advanced technology, unparalleled in variety and ingenuity even to this day. The photographs shown here are of operational types only. Some of the "planned" hardware is also shown in order to give the reader a quick look at how far ahead National Socialist Germany was in 1945 compared with the rest of the world.

Anti-aircraft, ground to air rockets would have completely stopped Allied air activities over Germany after June, 1945

German U.F.O. being serviced. Conventional propulsion system.

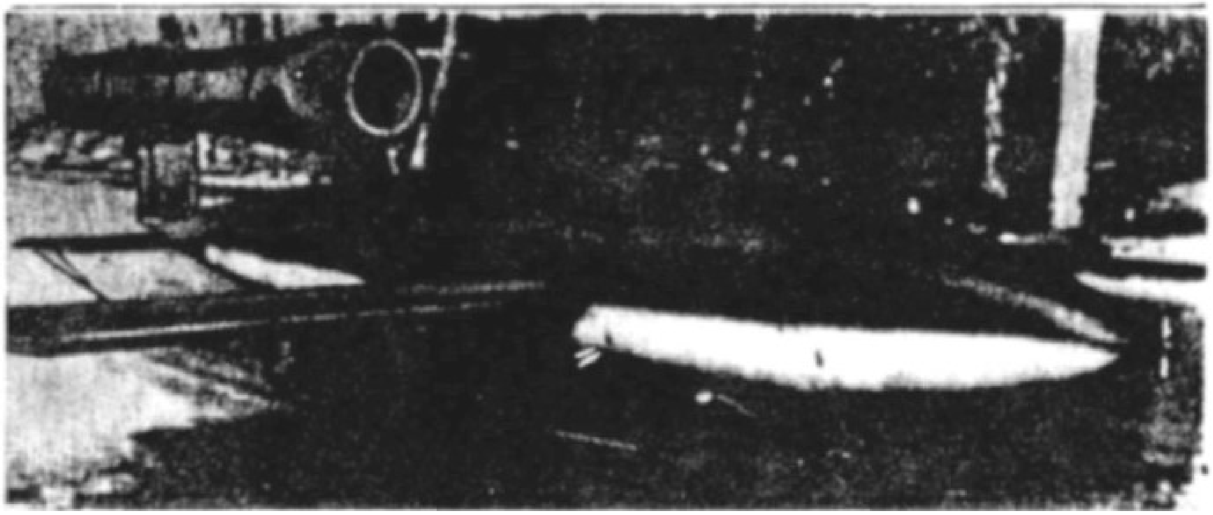

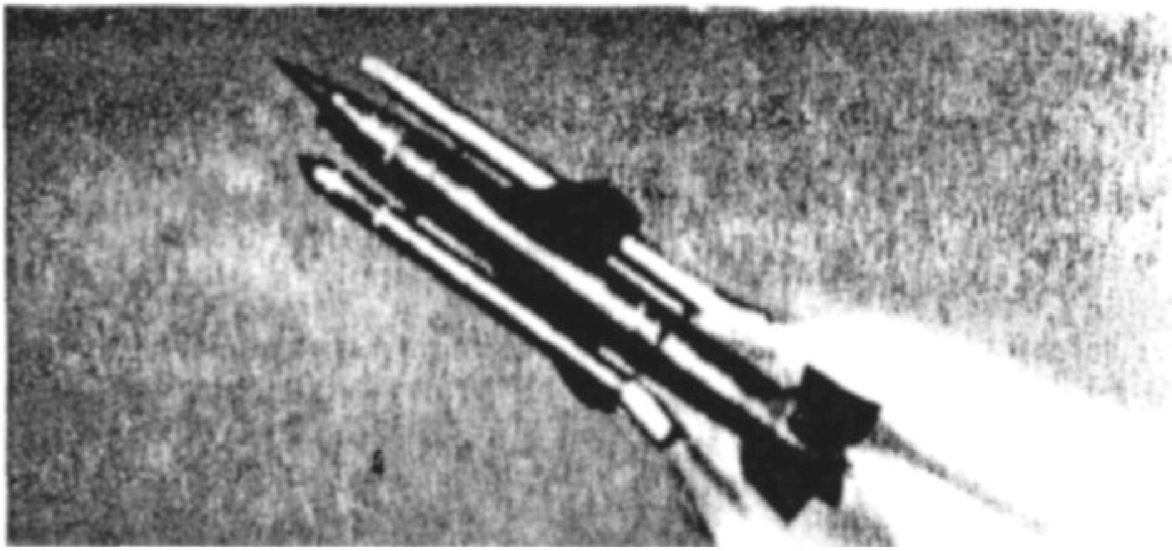

Anti-aircraft, ground to air rockets would have completely stopped Allied air activities over Germany after June, 1945

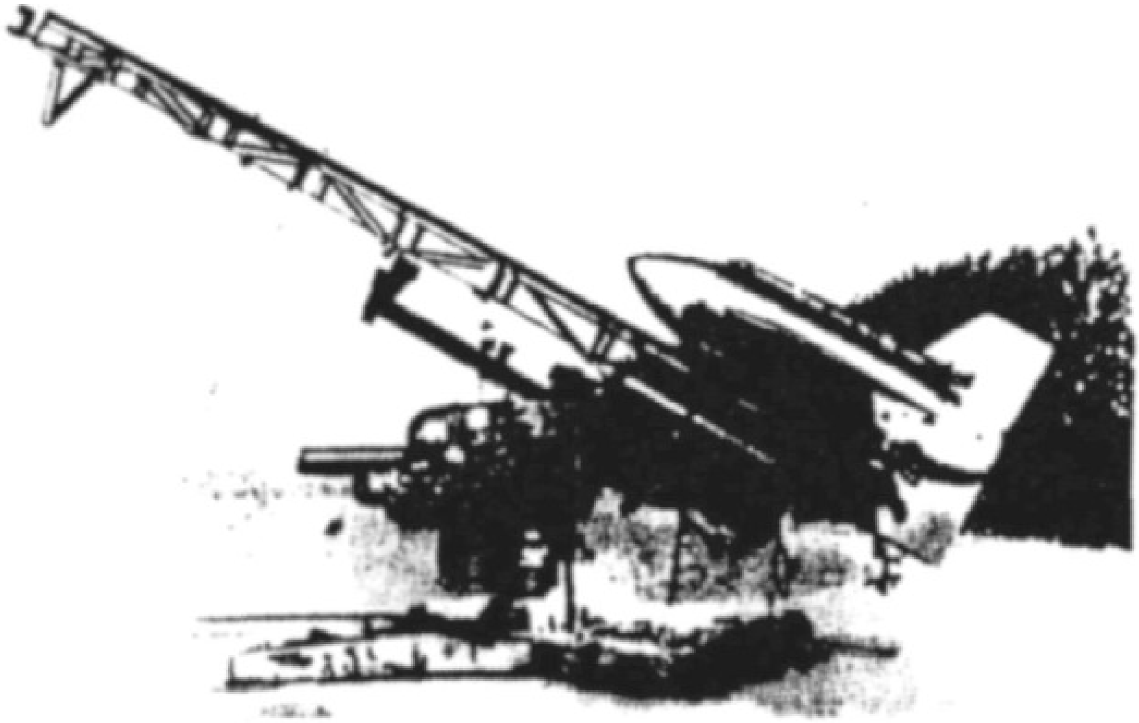

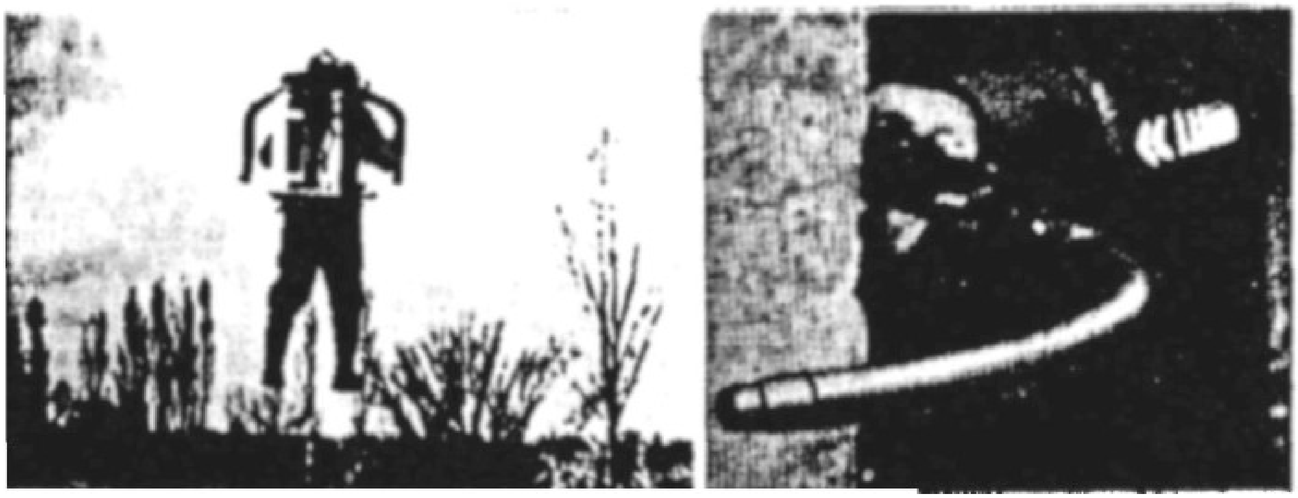

Flying People. Jet-powered back-packs — called “Himmelsturmer” — Sky stormer. Designed for mountain troops and for leaping across rivers

Intercontinental missiles were already a fact and although stolen by both the U.S. and Russia after the surrender in 1945 it took them another 15 years to come up to the German level, even though they were using many of the “captured” scientists. This brings us back to the actual story of the U.F.O. mystery.

Germany had U.F.O.’s as early as 1940. We find photographic proof of the existence of flying prototype models. Reproduced here are two photographs of two different U.F.O. designs, both operating on the electromagnetic propulsion method of Victor Schauberger, (also the inventor of the implosion motor), and produced by the Kertl firm of Vienna IV, which was then part of the greater German Reich.

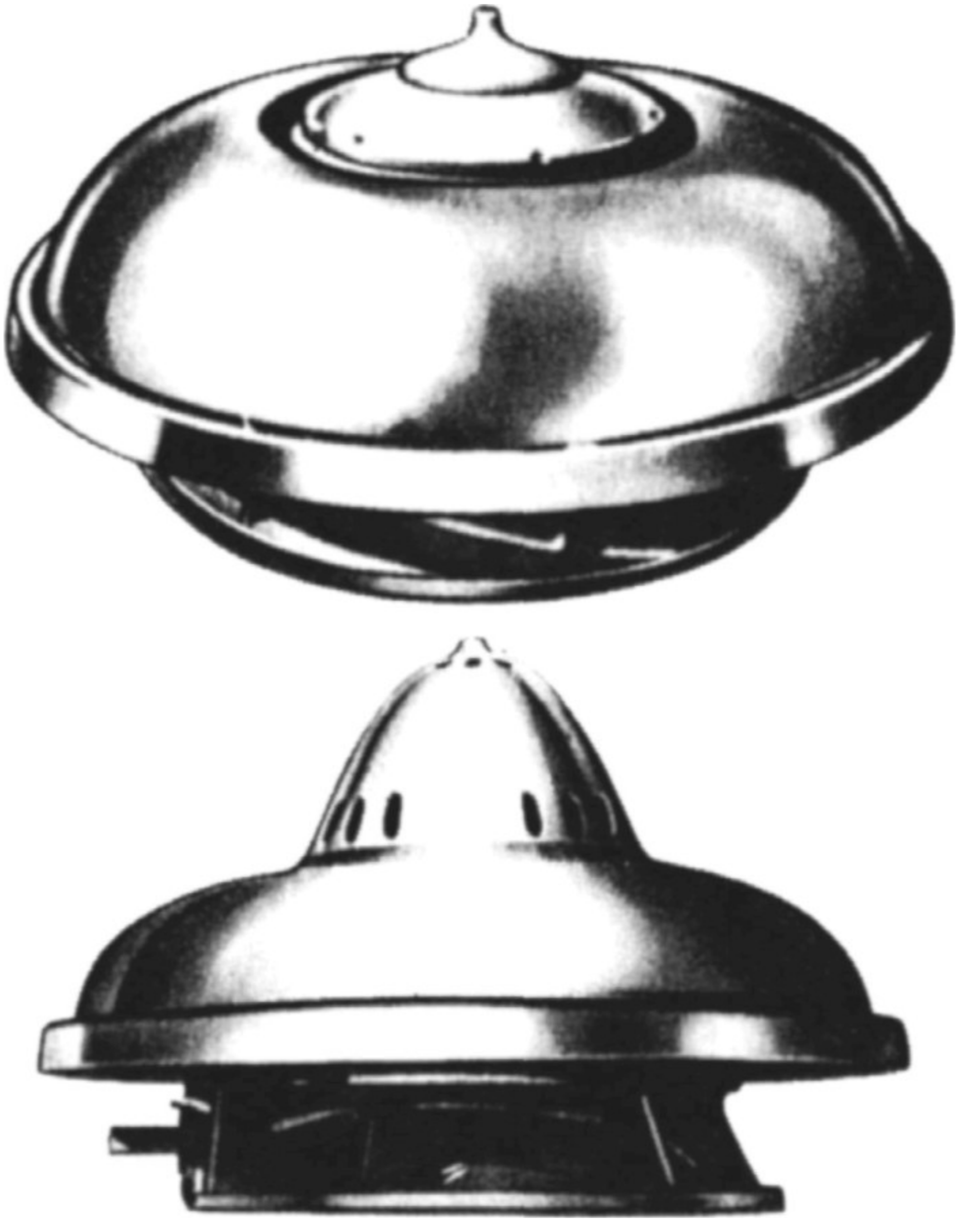

These are the famous smokeless, soundless, Schauberger Models. Note similarity to real U.F.O. shown in A.C. Roberts Photo

Below are reproduced a series of actual photographs of a U.F.O. photographed in flight over New Jersey in 1958 by George J. Stock of Passiac, N.J., courtesy August C. Roberts Wayne, N.J. The similarity to one of the Schauberger models is self-evident and is conclusive enough proof to most people of the German origin of the U.F.O.'s. However there is more.

This photo courtesy August C. Roberts

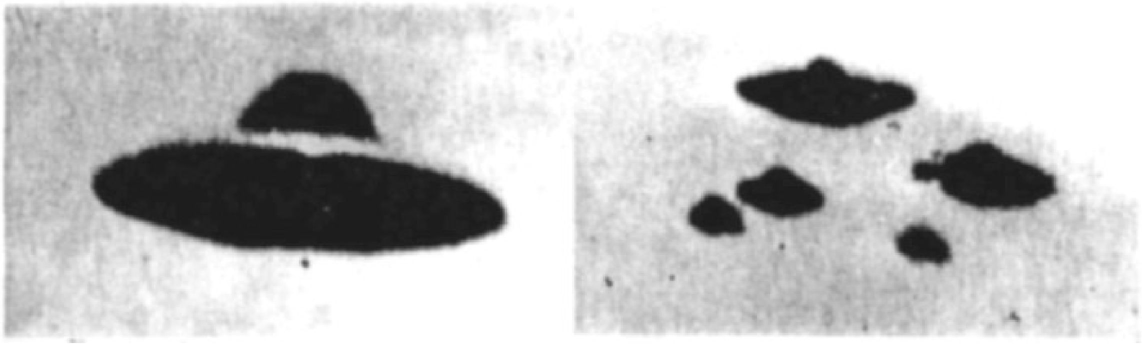

Photographed by A. Birch, February, 1964. Mosborough, England.

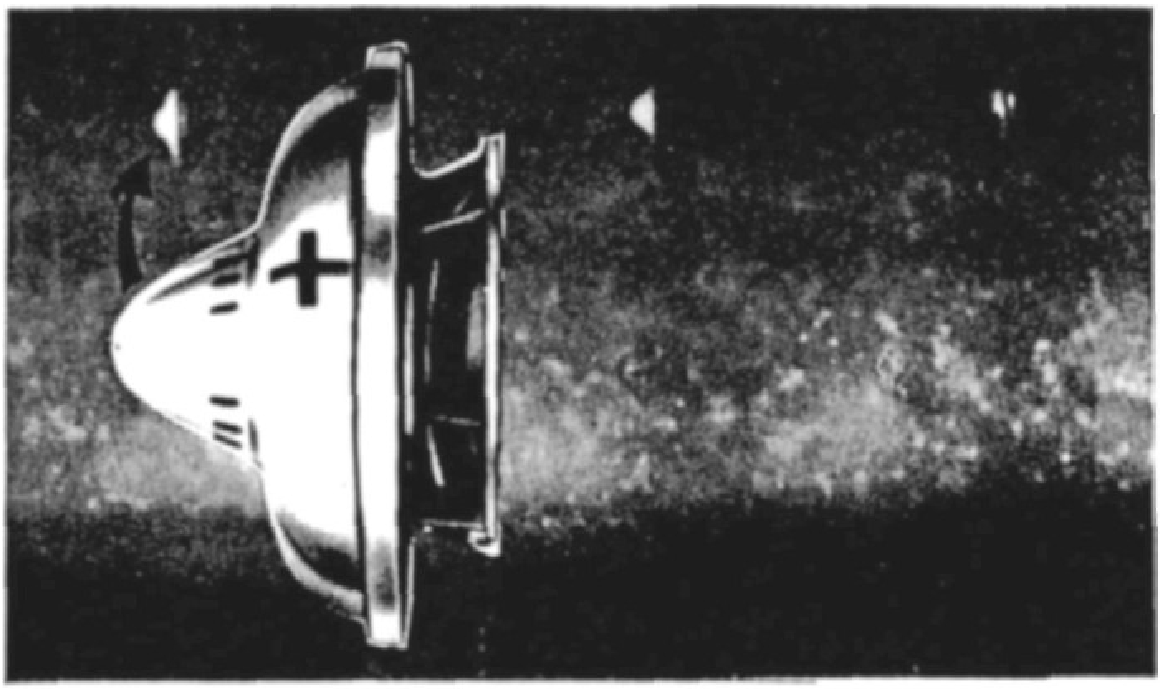

U.F.O. over Austria 1950

Photographed by Bruno Ghibandi, 27th April, 1961, Pescara, Italy.

U.F.O.'s were seen by American and German night fighters and bomber pilots *over* Germany in 1943-45. The Americans called them Kraut meteors and were scared of them. Even the top brass knew about their existence, as is indicated in the book entitled "Der Weltraum Ruckt Uns Naher", Blanvalet Verlag, by Major Keyhoe the famous U.F.O. investigator, Chapter III. Major Keyhoe says the U.S. infiltrated 600 scientists into Bohemia, in tank crew uniforms, in 1945, to check over some of the U.F.O. bases.

German Flying Saucer — called Kraut Meteor — during night flights in 1943-44.

Focke-Wulf 190 fighter plane in foreground. U.F.O. shooting straight upwards at tremendous speed. Over Austrian Alps 1944. Rare photograph.

Following is a letter from a lady, still alive and personally known to the authors which we have translated into free English. The lady attests to having been one of the first and top secretaries in the S.S. Reichssicherheitshauptamt working in the anteroom of one of the most powerful men in Nazi Germany — S.S. Amtschef III Ohlendorf (the subject of many books and articles since the end of the war). The lady letter writer states that one day in 1938 a young scientist came into her office clutching a document, neatly typed and comprised of about 60 pages. The young man said that the contents were a revolutionary new approach to the aircraft propulsion problem. He proceeded excitedly to explain to the young lady some of his ideas. He said he hoped for active help and protection from the S.D. (Security Service) in doing experimental work on his project, since both Himmler and Ohlendorf were absent from Berlin at the time, she took the document into safe keeping, storing it in her safe. This document was later handed to Himmler and Ohlendorf. After reading it they contacted aircraft and propulsion experts. A number of top secret conferences were called but with no positive results. The experts scoffed at the revolutionary proposals advanced by the young man, which amongst other things, contained such suggestions as the creation of a vacuum in front of the disc shaped aircraft into which the craft could then move, without effort, at incredible speeds. Also proposed was exploitation of the earth’s natural magnetism along with a steering mechanism based on internal polarity shift.

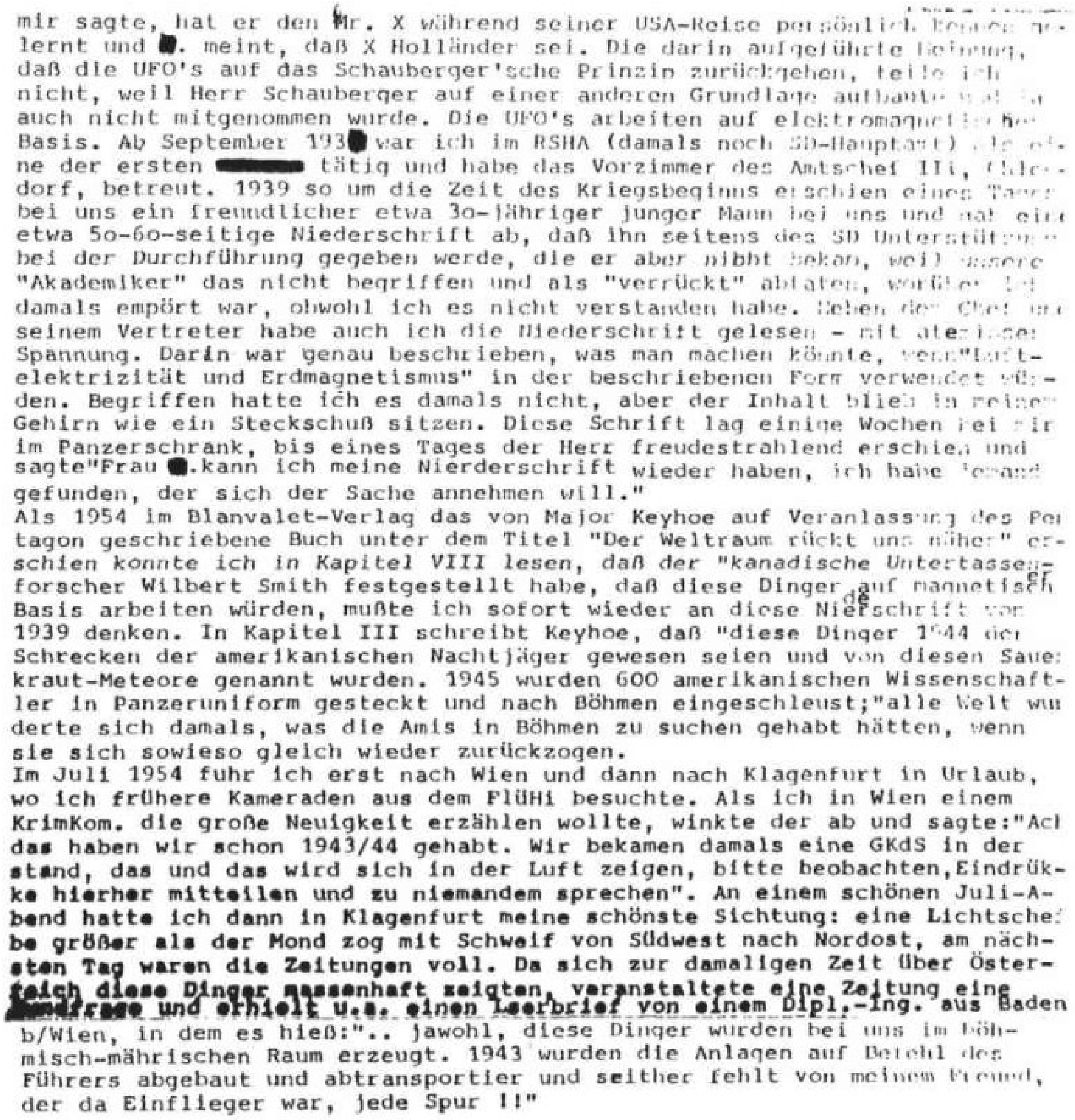

mir sagte, hat er den Mr. X während seiner USA-Reise persönlich kennen gelernt und [redacted]. meint, daß X Holländer sei. Die darin aufgeführte Meinung, daß die UFO's auf das Schauberger'sche Prinzip zurückgehen, teile ich nicht, weil Herr Schauberger auf einer anderen Grundlage aufbaute und ja auch nicht mitgenommen wurde. Die UFO's arbeiten auf elektromagnetischer Basis. Ab September 193[redacted] war ich im RSHA (damals noch SD-Hauptamt) als eine der ersten [redacted] tätig und habe das Vorzimmer des Amtschef III, Ohlendorf, betreut. 1939 so um die Zeit des Kriegsbeginns erschien eines Tages bei uns ein freundlicher etwa 3o-jähriger junger Mann bei uns und gab eine etwa 5o-6o-seitige Niederschrift ab, daß ihn seitens des SD Unterstützung bei der Durchführung gegeben werde, die er aber nibht bekam, weil unsere "Akademiker" das nicht begriffen und als "verrückt" ablaten, worüber ich damals empört war, obwohl ich es nicht verstanden habe. Neben dem Chef und seinem Vertreter habe auch ich die Niederschrift gelesen - mit atemloser Spannung. Darin war genau beschrieben, was man machen könnte, wenn"Luftelektrizität und Erdmagnetismus" in der beschriebenen Form verwendet würden. Begriffen hatte ich es damals nicht, aber der Inhalt blieb in meinem Gehirn wie ein Steckschuß sitzen. Diese Schrift lag einige Wochen bei mir im Panzerschrank, bis eines Tages der Herr freudestrahlend erschien und sagte"Frau [redacted].kann ich meine Nierderschrift wieder haben, ich habe jemand gefunden, der sich der Sache annehmen will."

Als 1954 im Blanvalet-Verlag das von Major Keyhoe auf Veranlassung des Pentagon geschriebene Buch unter dem Titel "Der Weltraum rückt uns näher" erschien konnte ich in Kapitel VIII lesen, daß der "kanadische Untertassenforscher Wilbert Smith festgestellt habe, daß diese Dinger auf magnetischer Basis arbeiten würden, mußte ich sofort wieder an diese Niederschrift von 1939 denken. In Kapitel III schreibt Keyhoe, daß "diese Dinger 1944 der Schrecken der amerikanischen Nachtjäger gewesen seien und von diesen Sauerkraut-Meteore genannt wurden. 1945 wurden 600 amerikanischen Wissenschaftler in Panzeruniform gesteckt und nach Böhmen eingeschleust;"alle Welt wunderte sich damals, was die Amis in Böhmen zu suchen gehabt hätten, wenn sie sich sowieso gleich wieder zurückzogen.

Im Juli 1954 fuhr ich erst nach Wien und dann nach Klagenfurt in Urlaub, wo ich frühere Kameraden aus dem FlÜHi besuchte. Als ich in Wien einem KrimKom. die große Neuigkeit erzählen wollte, winkte der ab und sagte:"Ach das haben wir schon 1943/44 gehabt. Wir bekamen damals eine GKdS in der stand, das und das wird sich in der Luft zeigen, bitte beobachten,Eindrükke hierher mitteilen und zu niemandem sprechen". An einem schönen Juli-Abend hatte ich dann in Klagenfurt meine schönste Sichtung: eine Lichtscheibe größer als der Mond zog mit Schweif von Südwest nach Nordost, am nächsten Tag waren die Zeitungen voll. Da sich zur damaligen Zeit über Österreich diese Dinger massenhaft zeigten, veranstaltete eine Zeitung eine Rundfrage und erhielt u.a. einen Leerbrief von einem Dipl.-Ing. aus Baden b/Wien, in dem es hieß:".. jawohl, diese Dinger wurden bei uns im böhmisch-mährischen Raum erzeugt. 1943 wurden die Anlagen auf Befehl des Führers abgebaut und abtransportier und seither fehlt von meinem Freund, der da Einflieger war, jede Spur !!"

To the young secretary all this seemed very difficult to comprehend and only because it was so totally out of her usual line of work does she remember all of the above details. The closed minds of the consulted experts annoyed her, it was their arrogant **impossible** and **never** which stuck in her mind. Being a convinced National Socialist, she had known of the Fuhrer's abhorrence of the stuffy traditionalists and reactionaries with which Germany, especially, seems to be plaqued? The project was still being discussed when the young man re-appeared, and in a very happy frame of mind asked for the return of the documents. He told our correspondent that he had found someone else to support and finance his research and experiments, even with plant facilities to produce them.

Years later, after the war, when the U.F.O. sightings were the topic of the day, she mentioned the above to a friend, a man, who had been a Kriminal Kommisar (Criminal Commisar similar to the American G man of old) in Austria during the war (then a part of the greater German Reich). He was not at all surprised but on the contrary he remembered having received a top secret telex order, issued by Berlin Headquarters, requesting that the people's reactions to "strange flying objects" be monitored, and that these flying objects would be appearing in the skies over the entire Reich. There would be no need to sound the alarms for they belonged to Germany. The date? 1943-44. In due course, the flying objects appeared. The German fighters thought they were American, the Allies thought they were German secret weapons. The Americans nick-named them appropriately enough, “Kraut meteors”. (Keyhoe) There is one final aspect of the lady’s letter which seems particularly significant. While in Vienna she saw a letter published in a large daily newspaper by a well-known Diplom Ingenieur from Vienna’s fashionable suburb, Baden, and this letter stated:—“We built flying saucers in Bohemia and Sudetenland. My friend was one of the test pilots for these devices. One day in 1943 the entire plant was dismantled and shipped by freight train to destinations unknown. From that day to this, I have never heard from my friend, the test pilot. Incidentally, orders for this dismantling came directly from Adolf Hitler”.

A most incredible development. Were the flying saucers not used in combat because the Germans had not come up with the required anti-weapon? Or were they, perhaps, not available because of the rare metal needed in large enough quantities to make the required impact? Or were they used and so devastatingly that no survivors were around to tell the story? Once again, a letter and some suppressed books written by a German engineer, can help us fill the gap. We reproduce excerpts from a letter received by the authors from divided Berlin, Germany. The letterhead of the correspondent states he is a Diplom Ingeneur who seems to head a private spaceflight research organisation in Germany and Switzerland. He is the author of several books about spaceflight and we reproduce the cover of one. The title translated into English is: “German Spaceflight Since 1934”, with a sub-title of “A Troublesome Book”. In it are many engineer’s drawings of weird and strange-looking craft the like of which we have never seen anywhere before. Strange names are given to these contraptions. One model especially merits to be reproduced here for your evaluation. The claim is made that the author launched a rocket to the moon in the early thirties, propelled by a light conversion power plant. In other words, the rocket was propelled by sunlight transformed into energy. Certainly, a revolutionary concept.

In a series of letters we have received, Prof. Dr. Phillips, claims to have been a wartime comrade (W.W.1) of Adolf Hitler, and that they kept in close touch and that Hitler was kept fully informed about all the research and that he, Hitler himself, entrusted Phillips with critical missions, in rare cases. He further states that to this day he has in a bank safety depository a special pass of the Fuhrer giving him sweeping authority. See photocopy of excerpt of letter.

Two other points mentioned in different letters are relevant to our story. Dr. Phillips who speaks several languages, and amongst them Russian, claims to have been employed by the Russians in the very “collecting camps” the Soviets had set up for screening German scientists for use in their own weapons development. His linguistic abilities made him “Chief Screener”. If all this is true, then one can safely assume that Hitler’s friend would find ways and means to ensure that top grade scientists did not fall into the hands of the Soviets at least in this instance. Prof. Dr. Phillips claims he knows exactly who went where and many other details. Dr. Phillips also men-lions his experimental work during the war with the practical use of death rays.

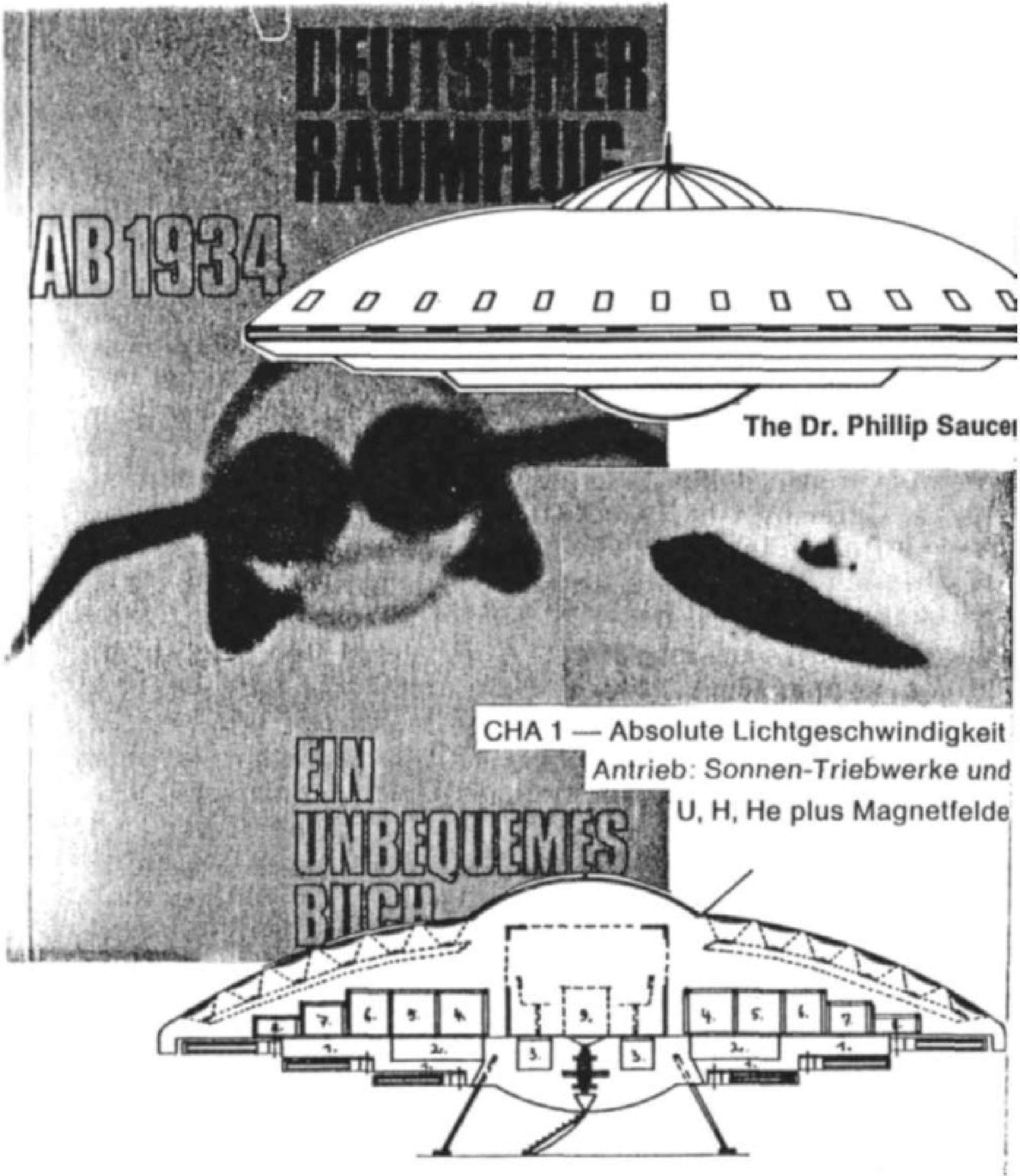
DEUTSCHER RAUMFLUG
AB 1934
EIN UNBEQUEMES BUCH
1.
2.
3.
4.
5.
6.
7.
8.
9.

The Dr. Phillip Sauce

CHA 1 — Absolute Lichtgeschwindigkeit
Antrieb: Sonnen-Triebwerke und
U, H, He plus Magnetfelde

Noch etwas : ich besitze (auch heute noch im Banksafe liegend) den Sonderausweis des Führers über "plein pouvoir" .-

ami-Flieger gültig, die im Rundfunk voraus bekanntgaben : die Bewohner von Bremen werden ausradiert. Militär war sowieso keines dort ! Nun ruht der Pulk geschlossen in der Nordsee !

Frdl;Grüße
Jhr
(pp. Philipp)

Excerpts of letters

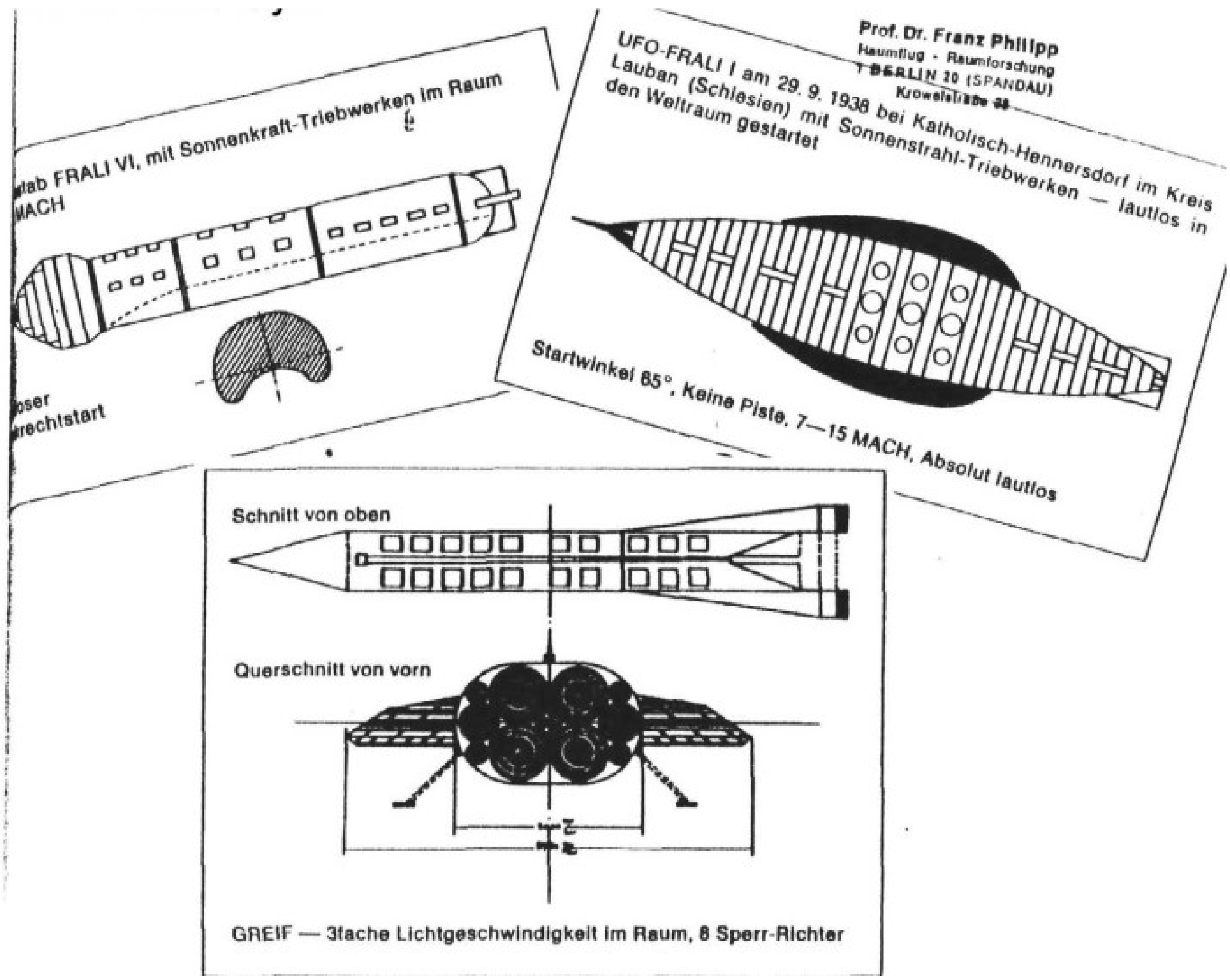
...tab FRALI VI, mit Sonnenkraft-Triebwerken im Raum
...MACH
...oser
...rechtstart
Prof. Dr. Franz Philipp
Raumflug - Raumforschung
1 BERLIN 20 (SPANDAU)
Krowelstraße 88
UFO-FRALI I am 29. 9. 1938 bei Katholisch-Hennersdorf im Kreis Lauban (Schlesien) mit Sonnenstrahl-Triebwerken — lautlos in den Weltraum gestartet
Startwinkel 65°, Keine Piste, 7—15 MACH, Absolut lautlos
Schnitt von oben
Querschnitt von vorn
GREIF — 3fache Lichtgeschwindigkeit im Raum, 6 Sperr-Richter

The solar-energy-powered space vehicles

However, there are also other sources available for the U.F.O. verification. There is the best-selling book already in its 5th Edition called “Die Deutschen Geheimwaffen des Zweiten Weltkrieges und ihre Weiterentwicklung” by Rudolf Lusar, published by Lehmann Verlag of Munich, West Germany. A small English edition exists but seemingly is suppressed. One of the authors of this book obtained just one copy from the author himself. The late Rudolf Lusar had been a Luftwaffe Major, an inventor and engineer, he had been employed during W.W. II in the patent and experimental section of the Reichsluftwaffen Ministerium in Berlin. In this book Lusar describes some pretty far-out, highly-advanced technology on rocket torpedoes, submarine fired ballistic missiles, Flying People (see photo) and very detailed information on the flyinq saucer programme. Shown here are photographs of engineering drawings, top and front view, along with excerpts of his descriptions.

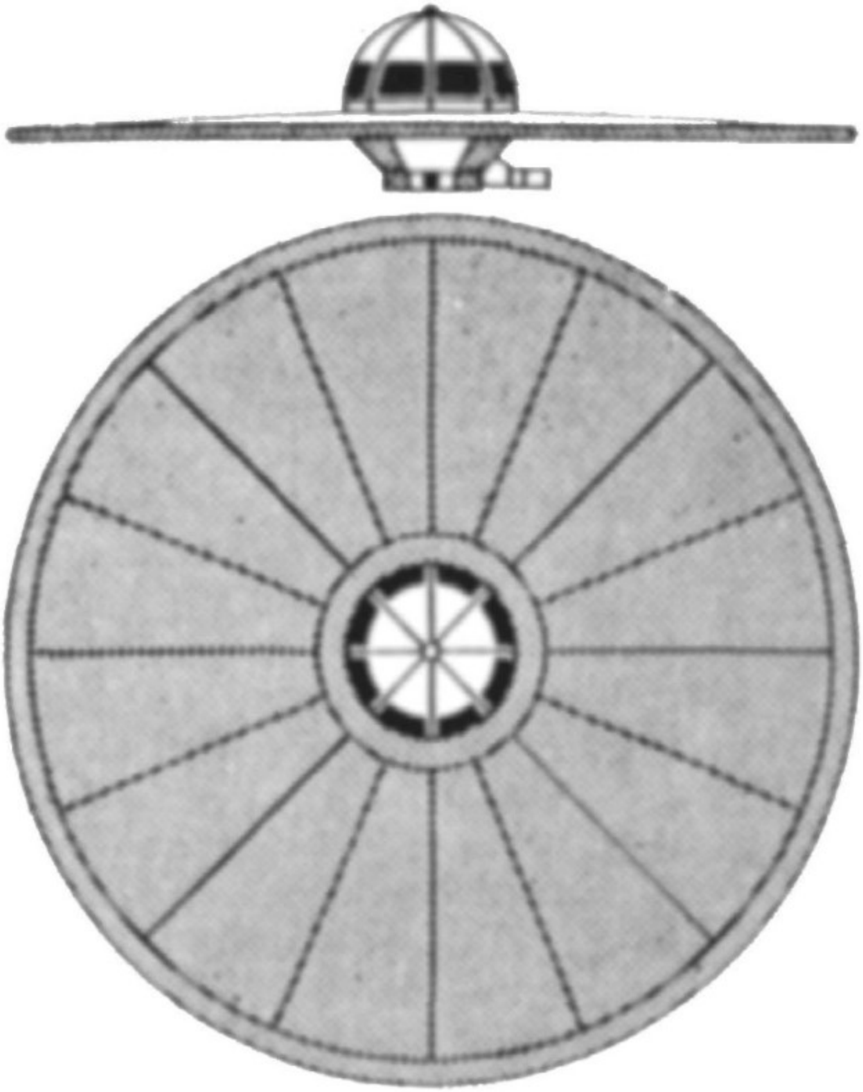

Flying Disc

Flying Saucers

Flying saucers have been whirling round the world since 1947. suddenly turning up here and there, soaring in and darting off again at unprecedented speed with flames encircling the rim of the saucer’s disc. They have been located by radar, pursued by lighters and yet nobody has so far succeeded in establishing the existence of such a “flying saucer” or managed to ram or shoot one down. The public, even the experts, are perplexed by an ostensible mystery or a technical miracle. But slowly the truth is coming out that even during the war German research workers and scientists made the first moves in the direction of these “flying saucers”. They built and tested such near-miraculous contraptions. Experts and collaborators in this work confirm that the first projects, called “flying discs”, were undertaken in 1941. The designs for these “Hying discs” were drawn up by the German experts Schriever, Habermohl and Miethe, and the Italian Bellonzo. Habermohl and Schriever chose a wide-surface ring which rotated round a fixed, cupola-shaped cockpit. The ring consisted of adjustable wing-discs which could be brought into appropriate position for the take-off or horizontal flight, respectively. Miethe developed a discus-shaped plate of a diameter of 42 m. in which adjustable jets were inserted. Schriever and Habermohl, who worked in Prague, took off with the first “flying disc” on February 14, 1945. Within three minutes they climbed to an altitude of 12,400 m. and reached a speed of 2,000 km./h. in horizontal flight (!). It was intended ultimately to achieve speeds of 4,000 km./h.

Extensive preliminary tests and research were necessary before construction could be started. Because of the great speed and the extraordinary heat stress, special heat-resisting materials had to be found. The development, which cost millions, was almost completed at the end of the war. The then existing models were destroyed but the plant in Breslau where Miethe worked fell into the hands of the Russians who took all the material and the experts to Siberia, where work on these “flying saucers” is being successfuly continued.

Schriever escaped from Prague in time; Habermohl, however, is probably in the Soviet Union, as nothing is known of his fate. The former designer Miethe is in the United States and, as far as is known, is building “flying saucers” for the United States and Canada at the A. V. Roe works. Years ago, the U.S. Air Force received orders not to fire at “flying saucers”. This is an indication of the existence of American “flying saucers” which must not be endangered. The flying shapes so far observed are stated to have diameters of 16, 42, 45 and 75 m. respectively and to reach speeds of up to 7,000 km./h. (?). In 1952 “flying saucers” were definitely established over Korea and Press reports said they were seen also during the NATO manoeuvres in Alsace in the autumn of 1954. It can no longer be disputed that “flying saucers” exist. But the fact that their existence is still being denied, particularly in America, because United States developments have not progressed far enough to match the Soviet Union’s, gives food for thought. There also seems some hesitation to recognise that these novel “flying saucers” are far superior to conventional aircraft—including modern turbo-jet machines—that they surpass their flying performance, load capacity and manoeuvrability and thereby make them obsolete.*

According to Lusar, of the many scientists who worked on U.F.O. projects only one of these was found, a man named Miethe, and he was from the team who worked outside Prague. His whereabouts and movements are known. He worked in the early fifties for the A. V. Roe Company in Malton, Ontario, a suburb of Toronto, Canada. This man Miethe is the originator of a genuine flying saucer, which was produced by Avro on contract to the U.S. Air Force.

See photograph below — compare similar shape and concept with Lusar’s drawings. Of particular interest is the propeller fan blade arrangement. The craft pictured above was shown to the press on the ground only, not in flight. However, we reprint a photograph or what is purported to be a photograph which originated with the Royal Canadian Airforce in Ottawa, Negative File No. T.P. 1256C, unit 2 Rd. The craft looks similar to the Miethe-designed Avro saucer, that has never been seen air borne by anyone. This was reprinted by the now defunct Toronto Telegram, once the second largest daily newspaper in Toronto.

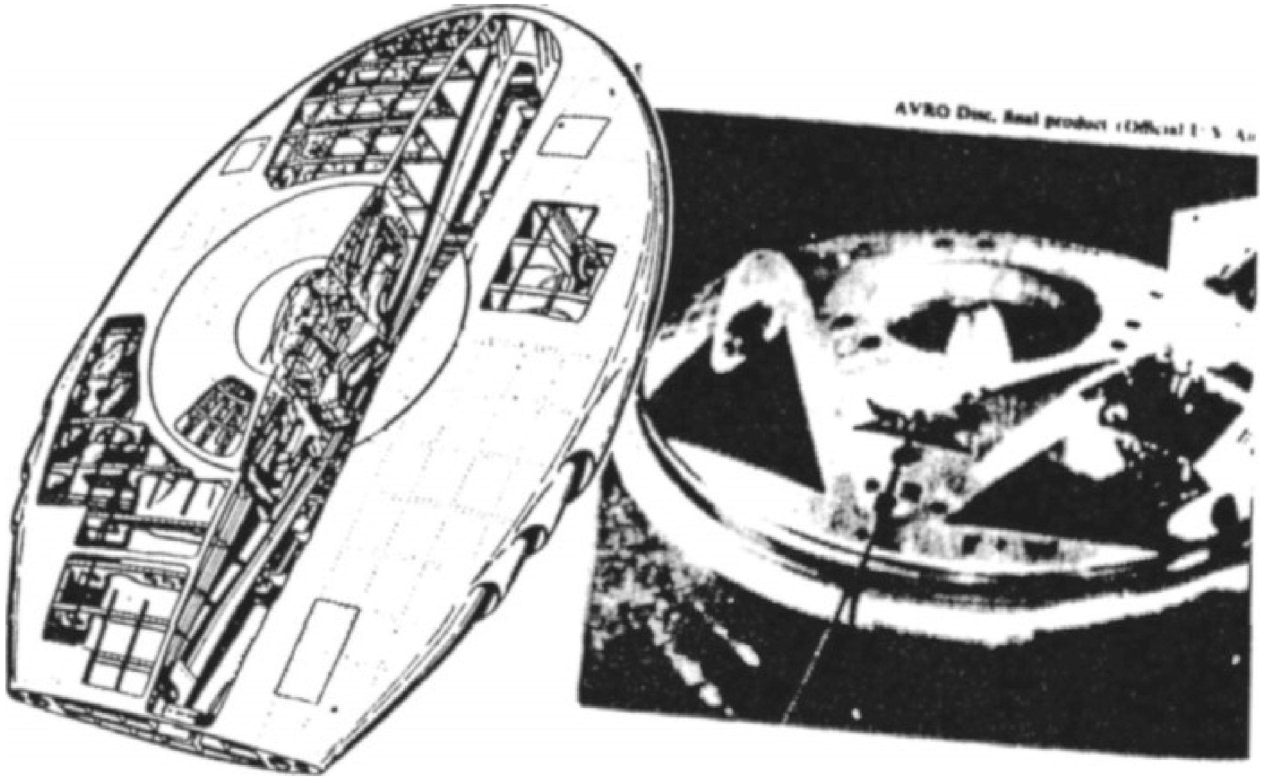
AVRO Disc, final product (Official U.S. A

The much-maligned Avro Disc, built with the collaboration of the German scientist, Miethe. Because it has never been seen "flying" does not mean it has not "flown" when the press were not around. Design clearly employs the "Vertikalzugschraube" experimented with by Miethe and his colleagues in Germany, or at least elements of the idea.

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

CANADA

MINISTÈRE DE LA DÉFENSE NATIONALE

1555-3 (D/Coord)

Commanding Officer
Canadian Forces Photographic Unit
Canadian Forces Base Ottawa
Ottawa, Ontario
K1A 0K4

The Truly Great Books
107 King St E
Toronto 110, Ontario

25 June, 1974

Dear Sir:

This is to thank you for your letter dated 12 June, 1974.

Our research department has checked our files and made inquiries at various other photo departments in the Ottawa area, but unfortunately they have been unable to locate the negative that you asked about.

We regret we are unable to assist you with your request, but if we may be of any assistance to you in any future quest, please do not hesitate to write us.

Yours truly,

J.A. Young
Lieutenant Commander
Commanding Officer
Canadian Forces Photographic Unit

The authors contacted the defence department in Ottawa for permission to re-print the photograph. The file was missing and it was reported that no trace could be found of anything, negatives or prints. So that leaves the big question — why didn't Miethe's saucer fly? Or did it fly and we were not told the truth? Or, was Miethe a victim of the previously described German policy of only letting an individual know as much as he needed to know, to fulfill his task? No more and no less! Did he purposely sabotage the American Flying Saucer? Of greater importance, where is Miethe today? I doubt that we will ever know.

The A.V. Roe aircraft company was driven into bankruptcy in 1958-59 by the then Prime Minister of Canada — John Diefenbaker. Thousands of top flight scientists were overnight out of work and the cream of them were quickly hired by Boeing, General Dynamics and others. Miethe and the flying saucer he helped to build have vanished without a trace!

The Soviets too got into the act during the height of the UFO craze in the late 50's and early 60's. Since the Communists have ruled Russia, they have invented everything or reinvented everything, from gunpowder to spaceflight! To assure that credit goes where it is due, reproduced here is the Soviet flying saucer. A poor photograph of a canvas-covered circular-shaped wingless aircraft, the type the Germans experimented with around 1935 and in concept similar to the United States all-wing bomber. Surely, if the Soviet's had captured, as had been feared for some time, the German UFO teams and their factories, they could have come up with something a little better! And so again, we must conclude there is a missing link.

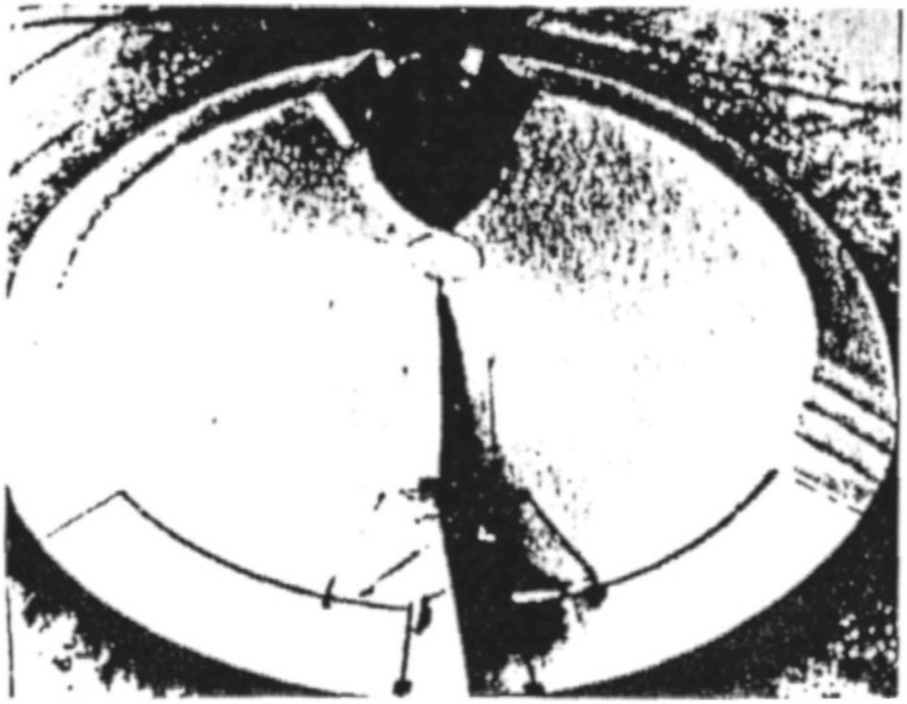

Where are the flying saucer teams now? Or better still, to where did they go after they left Germany? It is almost a certainty that they did leave Germany. There are a number of possibilities, but all point in the general direction of the Southern Hemisphere.

Essentially, Bar-Zohar corroborates Michael X and Mattern.
"The Avengers" page 110 111 Excerpts below.

> When the fighting ended in Berlin, some men of the Russian Fifth Army came across a burned-out tank at Spandau, and lying near it was the body of a man wearing a long leather jacket In one of the jacket pockets they found a small book which turned out to be the diary of Martin Bormann, the Fuehrer's deputy and one of the most astute of the Nazi Party leaders.
>
> The dead man was not Bormann—this was very soon verified—but an entry in the diary, in Bormann's handwriting, said "May 1, attempt to break out."
>
> A telegram that the Reichsleiter had neglected to destroy was found in his office: "April 22, 1945. Agree with proposal of dispersal in southern zone beyond the ocean. Signed, Bormann."
>
> These two sentences clearly conveyed Bormann's intentions to flee to South America and showed that he had begun to put his plans into effect on May 1.

There was Peron, Hitler's admirer, in power in Argentina. It is a well known fact that huge tracts of land had been bought up by Nazi money and interests. An interesting aside is that Germany's top fighter-bomber pilot Hitler's favourite, (Stuka divebomber ace with over 2,500 sorties and over 500 tanks and 140 planes to his credit), Hans Ulrich Rudel, worked on secret aircraft development schemes for Juan Peron after the war. He met Peron personally on several occasions and the team around Rudel, Tank and Horten did produce a very fast jet fighter plane for Argentina. See photographs. From this fact it is possible to deduct that both the facilities as well as the talent were available and did not lay idle. Rudel by the way has made over 75 trips to South America since then!!! What for?

German scientists produced this jet for Peron.

Peron and the German experts

So we have seen Berlin fall. We have looked into the suicide drama, we have seen Hitler leave Berlin for Denmark and Norway. We have double-checked every angle, even Hitler's mind and motivation. We have traced his thinking back to as early as 1920 right up to 1945 and gleaned from his own book "Mein Kampf" and from his various speeches right up to the last days in Berlin and all are valuable insights, having a direct bearing on the solution to the UFO mystery.

Now we must follow the U-Boat convoy that allegedly has Hitler and Eva Braun aboard on its secret underwater journey — to where? Will it be possible to break out of the ring of steel and fire the seemingly all-conquering allies have thrown around the crumbling Third Reich? The first indications come from a captain of the British Navy. His cruiser was part of a large allied force which engaged the Fuhrer's convoy in a battle. The allies were obviously not aware of the significance of this particular convoy, but must logically have expected some isolated break out attempts by a select group of top political and military leaders from fast-sinking Germany. They had thrown up a virtual blockade around the entire North Sea, stretching from the polar region down to the Spanish coast.

The Fuhrer convoy was detected and promptly engaged by all available allied units in the general area, and with unexpected and devastating results. It would seem that the secret weapons, which Goebbels had spoken of in such glowing terms only a few days previous, were now put to use for the first time in an actual battle situation. The result, was one sole survivor from a British destroyer and it was from this, the captain, that the words were uttered: "May God help me, may I never again encounter such a force". The report of the captain's words was carried in El Mercurio, Santiago, Chile and in "Der Weg" a paper published by exiled Germans living in Buenos Aires, Argentina.

Michael X in "We Want you — Hitler is Alive" mentions that the great mediaeval seer and prophet, Nostradamus prophesied Hitler's escape from Germany, and in a submarine, and we quote him as follows:—

> "The leader who shall lead an infinite number of people,
> Far from their home land to one of strange manners and language,
> Five thousand in Candia and Thessaly finished,

The **leader escaping, shall be safe in a barn on the sea”**.

But there is another verse, even more explicit, mentioning an “iron cage” — a clear reference to a submarine.

Wild beasts for hunger shall swim over the rivers,
Most of the land affected shall be near the Danube
Into an iron cage he shall cause the great one to be drawn
When the child of Germany shall see nothing”

The wild beasts are obviously the raping, all-devouring Allies, fording the Neisse, Elbe, Rhine Moldau, **Danube**, that’s where it all ended in April 1945. Or did it?

Michael X also involved Donitz and the German submarine fleet, and speaks of a paradisical oasis in Latin America. There is even more weightier evidence of the submarine escape of Hitler and Eva Braun. On July 10th, 1945 a sensational news report made headlines around the world. (A world that was busy getting ready for the sell-out conference of Potsdam where a final stamp of approval was given to the Bolshevik armies allowing them to rape, plunder and drive from their ancestral homes, millions of Germans beyond the Oder Neisse line, who were now defenceless since the German soldiers, beaten, disarmed and starving were performing unpaid slave labour in England, France and America. The Soviet methods were even more indescribable than those of the rest of the Allies.)

A German submarine, of the latest design, “U-530”, had given itself up to the Argentine authorities, but not before all scientific instruments and weapons on board had been destroyed. The U-boat had calmly slipped into the harbour of Rio de la Plata. The Commander’s name was Otto Wermoutt. The world was stunned and electrified! What was a German submarine doing all the way down there in South America more than two months after the war had officially ended? Why had they not surrendered earlier?

The U.S. government immediately demanded internment and extradition of the entire crew to the United States. As per usual in Yankee dealings with South America, the colonial master whistled and the Latin dog had to wag its tail. In order to save face the Argentinian authorities “studied” the request just long enough to question the officers and crew about the why and where of their surrender unusual. Since Washington became very insistent, the prisoners were turned over to the U.S. authorities. Special planes had been dispatched to Argentina and the men were shipped off to the United States for interrogations. An icy silence settled over results obtained and also about the whereabout of the crew. Rumours have it that the entire crew answered all questions put to them with similar answers so that the impression remained that they had been prepared for this eventuality.

Apparently little useful information was obtained from officers and crew about the intended purpose and final destination of their U-Boat. However, the Argentinian investigators did find that the U-530 was part of a larger submarine convoy which was travelling entirely underwater and under strict orders to keep absolute radio silence, a measure usually employed only during extremely sensitive and highly-secret missions, for this type of movement risks the loss of cohesion of the convoy and therefore the possible loss of U-Boats and crews to the watchful enemy. Obviously, whoever had planned this mission was willing and capable of losing some boats. The precautions taken in order to safeguard the secret of the final destination are extraordinary.

It was later revealed in a news report that James Forrestal, then U.S. Secretary of the Navy, (who later supposedly jumped to his death from a 13th storey window while in the Walter Reed Army Hospital) had stated that the U-530 was chiefly a transport submarine and had only carried a few torpedoes. They were of a new type called “torpedoes-arana” or “spider torpedoes”. In effect, they were wire guided underwater missiles and remote controlled and they never missed their targets. Due to the devastating effectiveness of the secret weapons carried by the convoy, there apparently were few Attack U-boats in the convoy.

Two things, however, aroused the suspicions of the interrogators. The U-530 carried a crew of 54 men aboard. The usual German crew size was only 18 men. There were also unusually large food stocks on board. However, the real surprise was 540 large tin cans or barrels, all hermetically sealed and upon opening were found to contain nothing but cigarettes. This was especially unusual since all crew members turned out to be avowed non-smokers. Now what was a German U-boat of the very latest and very largest design doing, cruising around South American waters two months after the end of the war? And with a triple strength crew; carrying a cargo of nothing but cigarettes?

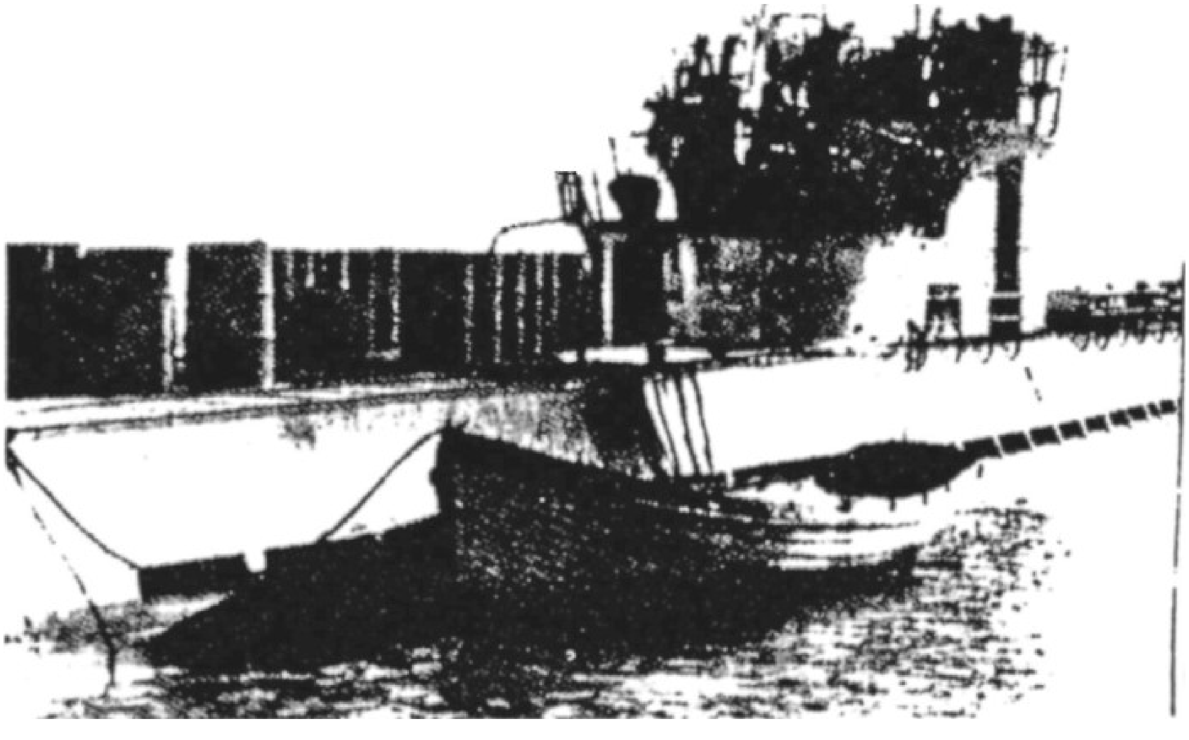

Photograph of U-530 after surrender In Argentina. Note “tin cans” on submarine — mentioned in text

The average age of those 54 men turned out to be less than 25 years, with the exception of the machinist who was 32 years old. The commander himself was only 25, and the second officer an incredibly 22 years young. (Photograph shows the extreme youth of the crew. Shown with them are the tin cans on the deck of the submarine.)

Faces of crew clearly reveal how young they are. Close up photos for more detail.

Age and name-list of crew of U-530

Officers: Captain Otto Wermoutt (25 Jahre), Karl Felix Schubert (22), Karl H
Lenz (22) Petri Leffler (22) Gregor Schluter (32).

Sub-officers: Jürgen Fischer (27), Hans Setli (26), Johannes Wilkens (3
Paul Hahn (45), Georg Rieder (27), Kurt Wirth (24), Heinz Rehm (24), Ru
Schlicht (26), Rolf Petrasch (26), Ernst Zickler (24), Georg Mittelstaedt (2
Robert Gerlinger (24), Viktor Wojsick (27), Günter Doll (21), Rudolf Bock (2
Werner Ronenhagen (24), Arny Krause (25), Karl Kroupa (25).

Crew members: Herbert Patsnick (22), Sigismund Kolacinsky (22), Friedrich Mü
dick (23), Arthur Jordan (21), Eduard Kaulbach (23), Rudolf Mühlbau (2
Franz Hutter (22), Harry Kolakowsky (21), Franz Rohlenbücher (22), Johan
Oelschlager (20), Willy Schmitz (21), Heins Hoffman (20), Heins Paetzold (
Gerhard Nellen (20), Ernst Liewald (21), Reinhard Karsten (22), Hans Wolf
Hoffmann (22), Arthur Engelken (22), Hans Sartel (21), Erhardt Piesnack (
Joachim Kratzig (20), Erhardt Muth (25), Friedrich Ourez (21), Werner Ze
(20), Erhardt Schwan (20), Hugo Traut (20), Engelberg Rogg (20), Franz J
retzki (23), Georg Wiedemann (21), Günther Fischer (29), Georg Goebl (24

Extensive checks and cross checks were conducted by the American and the Argentinian authorities with the files at the German Naval Headquarters in Kiel, and another mystery was brought to light — there was no record of a Captain by the name of Otto Wermoutt as commander of U-Boat 530; he along with several others of the U-530 had similar mysteries surrounding them. Interrogation by the allies brought forth from Otto Wermoutt and his crewmembers the same response — "We are alone. We have no living family relations". Apparently, their wives, parents, brothers, sisters and sweethearts had died in air raids or had been killed in some way or another during the war.

Soon the world forgot about U-530 and its fate and was busy listening to radio reports of the sudden arrest of Rear Admiral Karl Donitz, whom Hitler had designated as his successor as military leader of Germany — significantly enough not as the new Fuhrer but as military leader of Germany. Donitz was arrested and with his entire cabinet was shipped off to Nuremberg for war crimes trials. Germany thus became a country with its entire government behind bars.

Donitz after his "arrest"

In the meantime, Allied Naval Intelligence Units were engaged in endeavouring to locate Hitler's monster submarines which had been built on the insistence of Hitler and whose success once led him to remark "I am of good mind to scrap all surface vessels — the future belongs to the submarine". Not one single operational submarine was found. It was not until the surrender of Japan that a number were turned over to the Americans. Occasionally, stories were heard of mysterious submarines appearing and disappearing, mostly alleged to be of Soviet origin, or more often, of unknown identity.

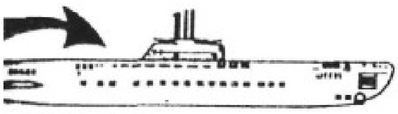
XXI (1944)

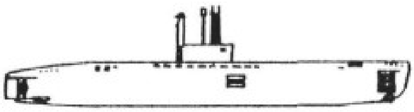
Typ XXX (Entwurf 1944)

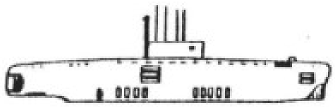
Typ XXVI (Entwurf 1944)

On August 17th, 1945, five weeks later, another sensational submarine surrender took place and again at Rio de la Plata. A German U-boat, U-977 under Commander H. Schaffer gave itself up to the Argentinian authorities, and this, three months after the end of the war in Germany. This time the crew consisted of only 32 men, but this was still fourteen above the average crew number. It was soon learned that another 16 men, all of them married and with families in Germany, had been dropped off "on orders", on the Norwegian coast. It would certainly seem that whoever was in charge of this operation was completely in control and knew the smallest detail right down to an individual crew member's family and marital status. From the logs of both submarines, the U-530 and the U-977, it was found that they had left Kristiansund, Norway, on May 2nd, 1945; none other than the exact same spot where earlier reports stated the Fuhrer had been taken after his departure from Berlin.

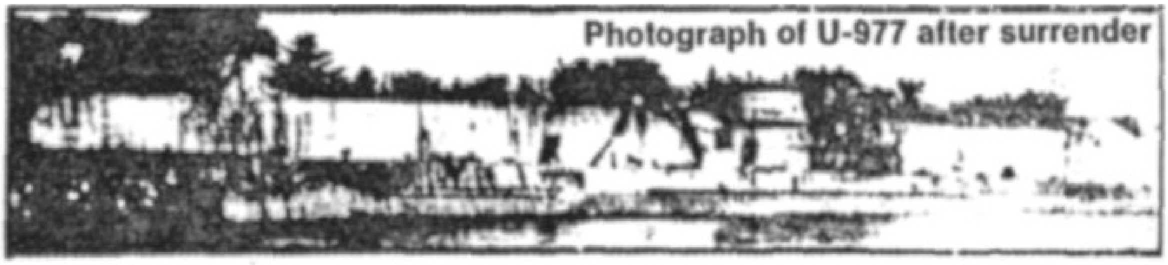
Photograph of U-977 after surrender

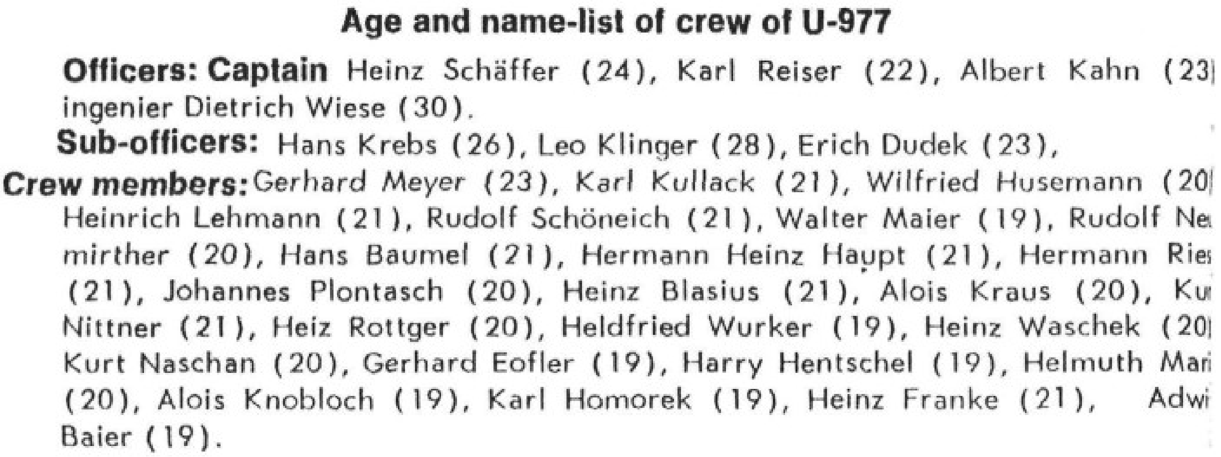
Age and name-list of crew of U-977

Officers: Captain Heinz Schäffer (24), Karl Reiser (22), Albert Kahn (23 ingenier Dietrich Wiese (30).

Sub-officers: Hans Krebs (26), Leo Klinger (28), Erich Dudek (23),

Crew members: Gerhard Meyer (23), Karl Kullack (21), Wilfried Husemann (20 Heinrich Lehmann (21), Rudolf Schöneich (21), Walter Maier (19), Rudolf Ne mirther (20), Hans Baumel (21), Hermann Heinz Haupt (21), Hermann Rie (21), Johannes Plontasch (20), Heinz Blasius (21), Alois Kraus (20), Ku Nittner (21), Heiz Rottger (20), Heldfried Wurker (19), Heinz Waschek (20 Kurt Naschan (20), Gerhard Eofler (19), Harry Hentschel (19), Helmuth Mar (20), Alois Knobloch (19), Karl Homorek (19), Heinz Franke (21), Adwi Baier (19).

The fact that Captain Schaffer had waited another five weeks before giving himself up in the same manner and in exactly the same spot as the U-530 can only mean that he had waited, in the hope that he was to be picked up by a search party. He must have known of the fate of the U-530 since radio reports were regularly monitored. Captain Schaffer wrote a book about his experiences called “U-977” in which he supplies these details. “We were whisked out of Argentina with great haste. However, not before every square inch of the U-Boat, even floor boards, walls and corners had been painstakingly examined and probed for a trace of the Fuhrer — **In the clear knowledge that the Fuhrer was still alive”**.

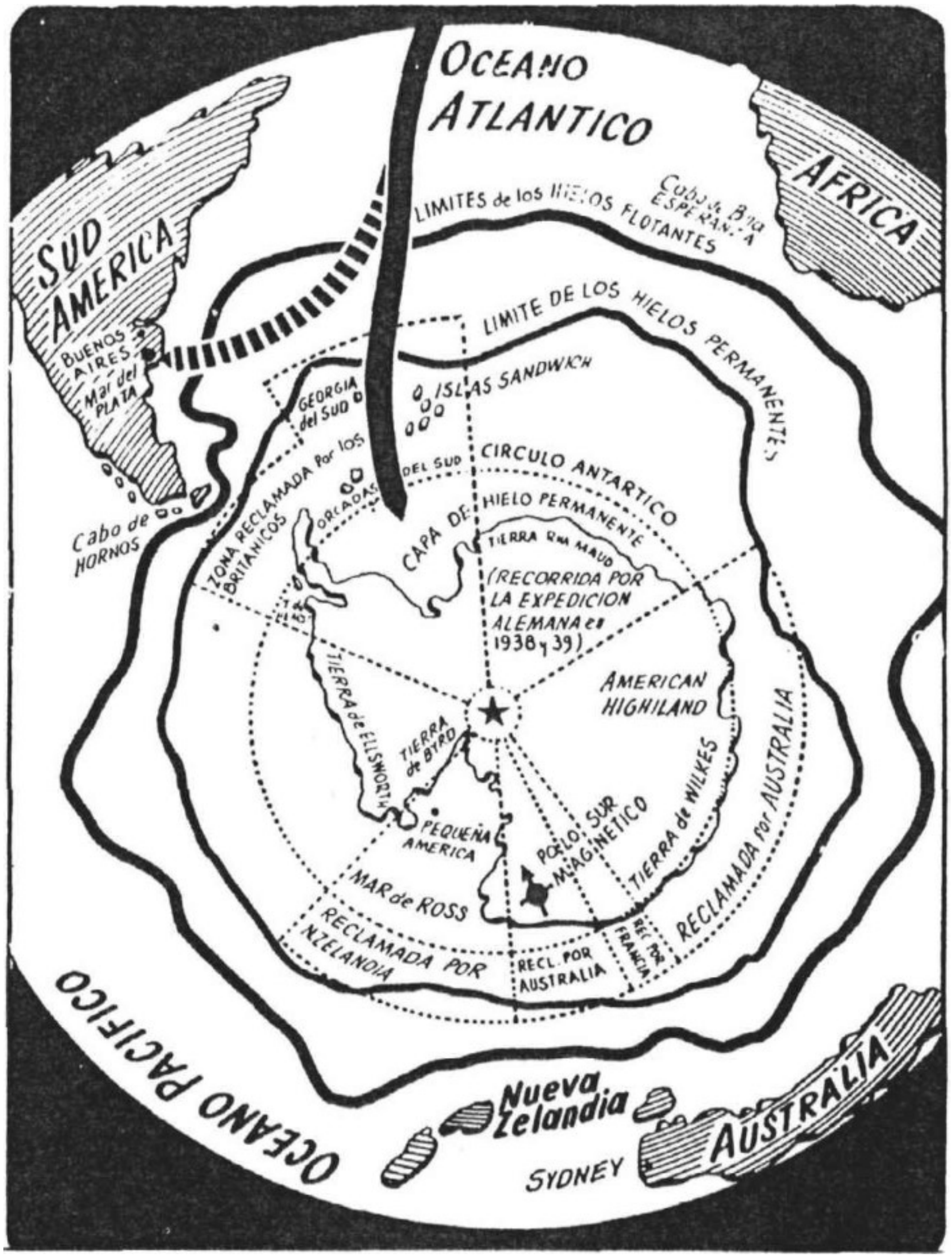
OCEANO ATLANTICO
AFRICA
Cabo de Bna ESPERANZA
LIMITES de los HIELOS FLOTANTES
SUD AMERICA
BUENOS AIRES
Mar del PLATA
LIMITE DE LOS HIELOS PERMANENTES
GEORGIA del SUD
ISLAS SANDWICH
ZONA RECLAMADA por los BRITANICOS
ORCADAS DEL SUD
CIRCULO ANTARTICO
Cabo de HORNOS
CAPA DE HIELO PERMANENTE
TIERRA Rna MAUD
(RECORRIDA POR LA EXPEDICION ALEMANA en 1938 y 39)
AMERICAN HIGHILAND
TIERRA de ELLSWORTH
TIERRA de BYRD
PEQUEÑA AMERICA
POLO SUR MAGNETICO
TIERRA de WILKES
RECLAMADA por AUSTRALIA
MAR de ROSS
RECLAMADA POR N.ZELANDIA
RECL. POR AUSTRALIA
REC. POR FRANCIA
OCEANO PACIFICO
Nueva Zelandia
SYDNEY
AUSTRALIA

Map taken from the Spanish book "Hitler esta vivo?" — "Is Hitler Alive?", showing the Fuhrer convoy route and the deviation of U-530 and U-977 (broken line)

Less well known, but equally significant, is the report supposedly originating with the British Admiralty. On June 5th, 1945, five weeks before the surrender of the U-530, the 47 crew members of a German submarine had surrendered to the Portuguese authorities, opposite Leixoes, after they had scuttled their heavily damaged submarine. One can certainly assume that this submarine also belonged to the Fuhrer convoy. Time and direction certainly seem to coincide. Perhaps the submarine which had been abandoned had been damaged during the allied blockade force attack?

THE STORY OF U-859

On April 4, 1944 at 4:40 a.m., the German submarine U-859 under Kapitanleutnant Jan Jepsen left Germany for a mysterious mission which was to come to an abrupt end several months later, at a place half way around the world. The unusually large crew of 67 men had not the faintest idea where they were heading. For several months they cruised around Africa then Arabia and India and finally they ended up in the area of Sumatra, Indonesia. During this time they sank some freighters and an Allied troop transport.

Just outside Penang in the Straits of Malakka, fate caught up with U-859. The U-boat was sunk by a British submarine and most of the crew lost their lives. Not in itself an unusual event in wartime, and therefore soon forgotten by the world. Almost forgotten that is. One of the survivor's mentioned on his deathbed, almost 30 years later that U-859 had taken a treasure to its watery bed. He insisted that welded into the bow and holds of U-859 were 33 tons of mercury, all in glass bottles and sealed again in watertight tin crates.

Since mercury is a very expensive item, even today, an expedition was organized to investigate the rumour. After months of effort U-859 was indeed located, and just where the dying sailor had indicated his comrades' large steel coffin would be found. Divers went down into the shark-infested waters and started to cut open the hull with the latest of underwater blow torches. After several months of very difficult work the divers found large black tin crates which were hauled to the surface and opened with blowtorches. The dying man's story was found to be true in every detail. Packed in neat rows, none the worse for their 30 years at bottom of the ocean was 33 tons of mercury.

Again the question must be asked, what was a German U-boat doing with an incredibly large crew of 67 men, carrying a secret cargo of war-vital mercury half way around the world? To where was the U-boat heading? For whom was the cargo intended? And for what use was the mercury to be put to? Obviously the British did not know the real mission of U-859.

The Mercury Treasure of U-859 after it was salvaged

Here again, was that remarkable loyalty and discipline of the German displayed — this secret had been kept for 30 years, almost unto death. It is interesting to speculate how many more submarines, similar to U-859, were on mysterious missions and to ponder as to where they now may be.

Still more reports of mysterious German U-Boats arriving in South America can be found in "The Avengers", page 105, written by Michael Bar-Zohar, published by Hawthorne Press. Excerpts reproduced here.

> Two more U-boats, according to reliable sources, appeared off an uninhabited stretch of the coast of Patagonia between July 23 and 29, 1945. Two sailors from the *Admiral Graf Spee*, Dettelman and Schulz, who were sent to Patagonia by Captain Kay with several of their shipmates, later described their "mission." They were lodged at an *estancia* belonging to a German-owned firm, Lahusen. From there they were taken to a deserted part of the coast and saw two U-boats surface. The *Graf Spee* men went aboard the U-boats and collected some heavy crates which they ferried ashore in rubber dinghies. Then the crates were quickly loaded on eight trucks and taken to the *estancia*, but very soon afterwards the trucks set off again with their load, heading inland. The rubber dinghies also served to bring about eighty people ashore, a number of whom were in civilian clothes. Judging by their manner of giving orders, they were obviously important people. They got quickly into cars waiting for them with engines running, and were driven off.

There has been a great deal of speculation about the size of the Fuhrer convoy. An assumption can be made that it must have been considerable, for otherwise the loss of three boats, with large crews, would have prompted "rescue attempts", an easy enough task in the quiet waters off the South American coasts during that summer season. If Hitler had indeed set up some refuge in South America, we might ask ourselves with how many people. No definite answer can be supplied but again, by deduction, we can arrive at an approximate number.

Perhaps unknown to many north American readers, is the fact that in Europe, there exists a registration obligation for each member of a community. Precise and detailed records are kept of where a person lives, number of children, sex, age etc. and also place of work. Also noted, are details of closest relatives. In Europe, therefore, it is relatively easy to trace and locate anyone and at short notice. True, there was a temporary breakdown in the last few months of the war due to heavy bomb damage and the refugee problem, but conditions soon returned to the usual bureaucratic precision. The Allies found these exact records to be extremely useful in the job of ferreting out “Nazi war criminals”. They soon discovered that 250,000 persons had disappeared. Taking into account, casualties and deaths from all causes, this number of 250,000 has remained relatively constant and has been a continual source of speculation. To where could so many people disappear in densely populated Germany? Could the answer be found in a new “Third Reich” located in some far away place? Were select individuals withdrawn, over a long period of time, and re-located somewhere? Were they the “last battalion” to which Adolf Hitler referred several times In his prophetic speeches towards the closing days of the war? Are they the cream of the crop — saved for the day — that inevitable day when east and west shall meet in mortal combat and WE, as Hitler put it in several speeches, “will be the tip of the scale”? Will they hold the balance of power? How? With what? Will their Secret Weapons be the disappeared “Kraut meteors” the “Fliegenden Scheiben” or the flying discs? With what will they be armed? The death rays spoken of by Prof. Dr. Phillips?

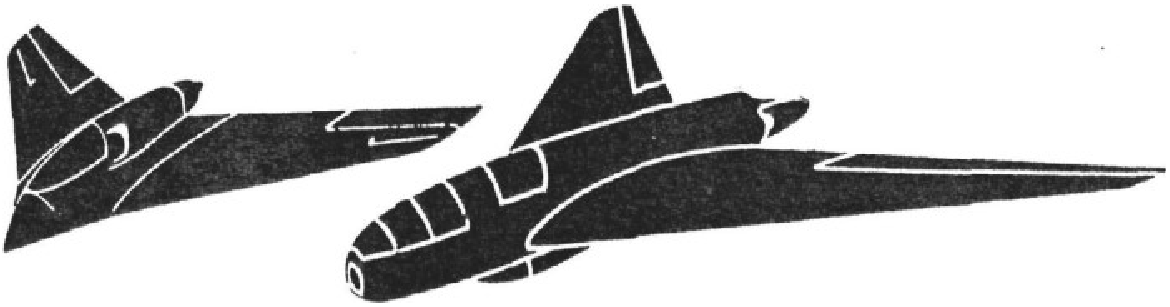

---

* According to a Washington report at the end of 1955, the United States Air Force was then shortly going to test aircraft models whose appearance would fully correspond to the conception of the “flying saucer”. Secretary of the Air Force Donald Quarles has stated that these models are disc-shaped and able to take off vertically. They will do without expensive runways (see “German flying discs”).

ATOMIC BOMB

The great guessing game as to whether Hitler had or did not have the atomic bomb can be answered rather conclusively. The German scientists whom the western Allies scrounged together after V.E. day who were working on the atomic bomb revealed they had reached a critical point in their research. They were part of the teams who had done research work near Berlin and at the Max Plank Institute. Later on they worked at Haigerloch, a little Swabian town in the south of Germany.

The scientists were imprisoned after the war in Farm Hall, an English maximum security prison. Their rooms and cells were bugged with microphones. During the night of Aug. 6th, 1945, when the American A-Bomb was dropped on Hiroshima, the British "listeners" found out how far Hitler's atom bomb had progressed. Apparently it was ready. Prof. Oppenheimer is reported to have said that the bomb dropped on Hiroshima was made in Germany.

Germany first started atomic research when Hitler was sent a letter by Prof. Dr. Harteck. Hitler's order was signed Sept. 26th, 1939. Dr. Esau was put in overall charge. With the capture of Norway there was available to Germany a source of heavy water which had previously been lacking. Production was ordered to be increased by 5,000% at the heavy water plant at Vermork. This plant was the repeated target of frantic Allied bombing raids and a favourite source for "commando raids". Some were very damaging and did hamper Germany's efforts. Apparently one tanker full of heavy water had not been accounted for to this day. It was presumed lost or sunk by a mine. An interesting question would be — "Did it get sent to some place else for later use?"

It is interesting to note that Hitler sent Field Marshall Erhard Milch to the Gottow laboratories near Berlin, where atomic research was also being carried out in 1945, to do an inspection. He also was given wide powers to supply the scientists with anything they might need. During the inspection Milch asked Dr. Werner Heisenberg: "How big would a bomb have to be in order to destroy New York or London?" Heisenberg told the Fuhrer's envoy: "About as big as a pineapple, and we will have a basketful for the Fuhrer by Christmas . . .!" Heisenberg was later tried and the above statements were introduced by the allied prosecutors as evidence!

Two of Hitler's A-Bomb experts. Dr. Wirtz. Dr. Mentzel

Hiroshima Bomb — Made in Germany?

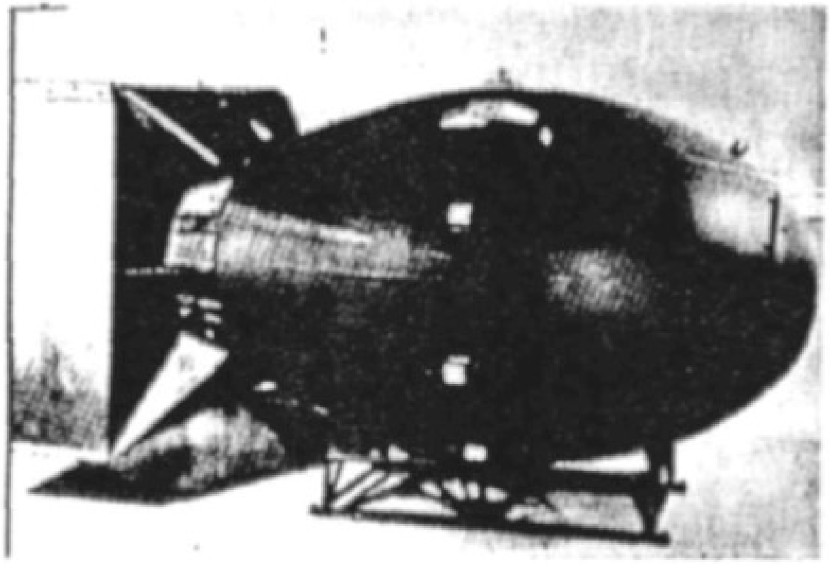

Haigerloch Atomic Research Lab

As a passing note, it may be of interest to the reader to know that America's atom bomb effort took 125,000 workers and cost well over two billion dollars. It was later betrayed to the Russians by communist spies, Ethel and Julius Rosenberg, Nobel, David Greenglass, Fuchs and other Jews.

Was Wernher von Braun and his staff of conventional rocket experts deliberately sacrificed to put America on the obsolete track of wasteful fire-cracker rocketry while the Nazis perfected the superior U.F.O.’s somewhere in South America?

TRUTH STRANGER THAN FICTION?

The following story was made available to the authors by a British businessman who has requested to remain anonymous. The identity of the nurse and hospital are known to him. We include it without commentary.

Letter is unedited. Punctuation and spelling as in original

I have been a night nurse in charge of a terminal geriatric ward for many years and as you can guess have seen some pretty horrible sights, but still met some interesting people, the one who was really fascinating was this German chap I mentioned to you some time ago, the poor chap was a terminal case, a terrible carcinoma of the stomach, he was in a side ward by himself as he rarely got more than a couple of hours sleep a night even with the huge injections of heroin we gave him, but he never complained and was always ready to have a chat, and many a night when it was quiet I would take him in a cup of coffee and sit with him and chat for an hour or so. He spoke English well, with a marvellous German, American accent which he had picked up in America, he had been with us over a year, when one night I was sitting talking about my service in the navy and the conversation got on the Flying Saucers . . . he then went very quiet and gave me an odd look, I laughed and said:

“Do I sound mad talking about Flying Saucers?”

He said no, and then said, I might think he was mad as he had flown in one, anyway I had to leave then but the next night we continued the conversation, for the first time he told me he had been in the Luftwaffe, a security officer, attached to somewhere called Rechlin, where they were experimenting with all manner of almost science Fiction type weapons, he mentioned a wind gun, rockets and laughed and said Germany had all these long before the rest of the world had even thought of them and that given another year or so, the war would have had a completely different ending, and that even now things could still happen engineered by the Reich that could alter the world’s future.

I laughed, and he continued, on and on about the progress that had been made during the war years, a lot of things I had heard about but some that seemed way out of this world . . . heat rays, queer new explosives and new type flying vehicles, then he went on about the saucers, how they began with quite small open ones with one man cockpits then on to bigger and bigger ones.

Later they moved to another base, and here for the first time he heard about the so-called “Neuer Deutschland” in the Antarctic, pre-war there had been rumours but never many details, there were many scientists at the new base and flying took place only by night as allied planes were continually flying over, and there were continual attacks, as time went by and the outcome of the war became more apparent the work was speeded up more and more and late in 1943, the first of the big saucers was flying and then came the news that certain specialists were being chosen to go on a special trip to a secret base where the war was to be continued from, he flew in planes on several occasions to bases in the North of Norway, escorting men and women scientists equipment, files, specialised machinery and weapons, all of this was taken direct to long range U-Boats and put straight on board, the weapons were all very modern and he described them as brand new automatic rifles that later were known as MP 44s, there was also a large amount of explosive.

The saucers flew continually and as soon as a new one was built and tested it was loaded with equipment and crewed and when night fell they took off and did not return, as time went by stories of the U-Boats coming and going taking out masses of supplies and people, not just scientific personnel but also administration and military, security, cooks, and amongst them a fair contingent of women.

As the end of the war came near organisation began to break down and supplies ran short they were being bombed and strafed daily by Allied fighter bombers, when the last saucer left, the base was abandoned, he flew on in one of the last planes to leave the base a Heinkel III, they were attacked by a Russian fighter and damaged and landed eventually just outside Oslo. Norway was in chaos at this time but he got a lift in a car with an SS officer, he explained he was heading for a U-Boat base and a possible way out, the SS man had no better ideas and they went North, they reached the base two days later and found two U-Boats refuelling and restocking for their final trips, there were not as many people wishing to use the vessels as most wanted to go home after the war, in fact the cargo carrying boats were even short of crews, they were full of supplies of all sorts, the day after they arrived there was a raid by American bombers a lot of buildings were damaged but the boats were not. . . they sailed that night.

They reached the Antarctic base after a long trip, by sea and across the ice cap, but after a couple of weeks he went back to the coast to carry on his security work with some last minute arrivals on a U-Boat, he then left with instructions to meet another boat in the Atlantic, things however went wrong and his vessel was damaged and sunk by a patrol boat, he was rescued and was made a P.O.W., his captors did not realise who he was as he had got rid of his papers and was wearing naval cold weather gear.

He was held as a P.O.W. in America, and after his release was repatriated to Germany, when he saw the way things were going there under the occupation he got himself some new papers, Polish and managed to get to Britain as a refugee, he settled down, married, his wife died in the late 1950’s, and he was having treatment for cancer, radium treatment was tried but slowly things got worse and he was eventually admitted to hospital where he died.

End of letter

Whatever the merits of this dying man’s story are, one thing we can be very certain and that is of one terrible weapon at the Fuhrer’s command and of which Hitler spoke towards the end of the war when he clearly made reference to the atom bomb — “May the heavens forgive me, if I should reach for that final terrible weapon still at my disposal! We are today already able to blow up half the planet”.

Another startling fact proving quite definitely that W.W. II did not end on 8th May, 1945 is the following account in “France Soir”, a serious paper (not a scandal sheet):— “Almost 1½ years after cessation of hostilities in Europe, the Islandic Whaler, "Juliana" was stopped by a large German U-boat. The Juliana was in the Antarctic region around Malvinas Islands when a German submarine surfaced and raised the German official naval Flag of Mourning — red with a black edge.

The submarine commander sent out a boarding party, which approached the Juliana in a rubber dinghy, and having boarded the whaler demanded of Capt. Hekla part of his fresh food stocks. The request was made in the definite tone of an order to which resistance would have been unwise. The German officer spoke a correct English and paid for his provisions in U.S. dollars, giving the Captain a bonus of $10 for each member of the Juliana crew. Whilst the food stuffs were being transferred to the submarine, the submarine commander informed Capt. Hekla of the exact location of a large school of whales. Later the Juliana found the school of whales where designated. This is the direct quote from "France Soir". Added to this must be a wire service bulletin releasd by France's own Agence France Press on the 25th Sept. 1946, which further clarifys the above: "The continuous rumours about German U-boat activity in the region of Tierra del Fuego (Feuerland, in German), between the southernmost tip of Latin America and the continent of Antarctica are based on true happenings".

Putting all these details into proper sequence and perspective a clear picture emerges. Selected segments of the Third Reich survived the collapse of Germany proper and obviously did not surrender to the allies as they were supposed to have done under the "Unconditional Surrender" signed by Donitz on behalf of the German people.

There must be rather large secret Nazi bases where work continues on the UFO's and other secret weapons. Investigation shows that huge amounts of money were clandestinely invested by Nazi Front men all over the world, but especially in South America. An incomplete, but nevertheless surprising statistical compilation of these funds appeared in the newspaper "Zig-Zag" in Santiago, Chile, on 19th June, 1947. According to this compilation, Spain received 300 million dollars, Sweden 250 million, Switzerland 100 million and Portugal 50 million and this represents only about 25% of such investments.

This amounts to nearly 3 billion dollars invested in large tracts of remote jungle and pampas real estate, factories, transportation, airlines, shipping(!!!) companies,, food processing and agriculture. **In the shockinly candid book entitled "The Avengers" written by Michael Bar-Zohar dealing with Jewish war and post war tactics against the Germans, we find a lot of detailed information about the transfer of German money to foreign lands. Some excerpts are reproduced here.**

> A most unusual conference of German officials and industrialists was held at the Maison Rouge Hotel in Strasbourg on August 10, 1944. The proceedings of this "Red House" conference are known from the shorthand report, which fell into the hands of the American OSS at the end of the war. A Lieutenant Revesz showed it to Simon Wisenthal, who took a photostat and published it some years later.
>
> Among those present at this conference were representatives of the Ministry of Munitions and the Foreign Office, delegates from the big industrial combines—Krupps, Messerschmitt, Rochling, Goering Werke, Hermannsdorfwerke—and several senior civil servants. The object of the meeting was to decide upon measures for safeguarding the treasury of the Third Reich. They reached two

main decisions—some of the riches would be hidden away in the territory of the Reich; and German capital would be sent abroad.

The conference urged that the Nazi Party should go underground in the event of defeat, and should prepare for a return to power with the help of the treasures safely hidden away.

These decisions began to be put into effect in the following months. An “experimental station” was set up near Lake Toplitz and a number of containers packed chiefly with forged pound notes and documents were submerged in the lake, and some other containers were hidden away in old mines in the hills. Most of them were removed again when Allied forces were approaching the region. Although the Allies did not have full knowledge of these hiding places until the report of the “Red House” conference fell into their hands, some information on the Nazis’ postwar plans had reached the Allied secret services early in 1945. In March of that year a detailed report on the subject was submitted to the State Department in Washington:

“The Nazi regime has made very precise plans for the perpetuation of its doctrine and domination after the war. Some of these plans are already being put into effect.

“Members of the Nazi Party, German industrialists and Army leaders, realizing that there is no hope of victory, are presently preparing commercial plans for the postwar period, endeavoring to renew connections with industrial circles abroad in the hope of reestablishing prewar cartels. After the war, the intention is for ‘front men’ to appeal to the courts of various countries against the ‘illegal’ seizure of German industrial concerns and other German property by the Allies at the outbreak of the war. In the event this method does not succeed, the recovery of the German property would be made through figureheads possessing the requisite citizenship. German attempts to continue to have a share in the control and development of technological progress during the immediate postwar period are reflected in the phenomenal increase in German patents registered in certain foreign countries during the past two years. These registrations reached their peak in 1944....

“German capital and plans for the building of ultramodern technical schools and research laboratories are being offered on very advantageous terms, in view of the fact that the Germans will thereby be able to make and perfect new weapons.

“The German propaganda program is an integral part of this general planning for the postwar period. The immediate aim of this propaganda program will be to bring about a relaxation of Allied controls on the pretext that the Germans should be treated ‘honestly.’ Later, this program will be extended and intensified with a view to reviving Nazi doctrine and pursuing German ambitions of world domination. Unless these plans are counteracted, they constitute a constant threat to the peace and security of the postwar world.”

The American specialists had greatly extended their knowledge of this subject by the end of the war. They soon had a list of 750 firms with head offices in neutral countries, founded or bought with German capital. Switzerland headed the list with 274 firms; then came Portugal with 258, Spain with 112, Argentina with 98, and Turkey with 35. A number of firms had also been acquired in South American countries other than Argentina.

Special accounts in Swiss and Liechtenstein banks were placed at the disposal of the Argentine Government, officially to help their industrial development. Some of the accounts were made personally available to Argentine leaders.

As military defeat and final castastrophe had become more certain, the Nazi chiefs stepped up their preparations for the future—a future in which they meant to have a stake. They had deposited large sums with banks in neutral countries and salted away just as much in the portfolios of apparently respectable persons in Liechtenstein, Portugal, and Patagenia, and had hidden much wealth in the depths of old salt mines in Austria and below the dark water of the Alpine lakes. All of this hidden treasure might indeed permit a revival of Nazism one day—so long as there were still Nazis around able to draw upon it.

Added to this must be the fact that the high priority tasks of the newly elected National Socialist government in 1933, was the securing of adequate food supply for the entire population. Extensive research was immediately launched into areas of artificial food cultivation, in huge greenhouses, with everything grown only on "chemical soil" and under artificial light. Butter was apparently produced from coal and dry milk was another German invention. A method was also discovered to indefinitely preserve wheat flour. Great strides were also made in Freeze Drying all types of food and this was carried out particularly in experimental plants located in the area of Helmstedt. Hitler was keenly interested in these projects visiting them frequently. In a very short time, Germany was more or less self-sufficient and for the first time in centuries. No German ever experienced want and hunger again until the Allies burnt or robbed all the huge warehouses of their contents in 1945 and after.

Any German who lived through that dreadful time will tell you what the humanitarian liberators of Germany doled out as food rations after their victory. In the French zone of occupation it was officially 850 calories a day, in the American zone a little more, whilst the inmates of Hitler's concentration camps, (whose bony corpses you are still seeing daily on T.V. and in the newspapers), received more than double that amount of calories daily. The resultant famine and death from starvation, particularly among the elderly and infants is well remembered by the German population. They call it a "peace crime". The food supply for any secret UFO force, (which we shall call by the name Hitler himself had given it) — The Last Battalion, had already been solved. But how about necessary monies to keep such an enterprise running? Hitler had again already planned, with great foresight for this inevitability. In captivity in concentration camps such as Dachau, Buchenwald and Auschwitz, were Europe's best-known and most skilled forgers, — many of them Jews. They were geniuses at their particular craft.

The victims of the "Liberators".

One day, a secret order arrived from Berlin code-named “Operation Bernhard”. All the forgery experts were collected and were offered life and freedom if they cooperated in producing for Hitler, perfect forgeries of some of the allied currencies, but in particular, forgeries of the British pound and the American dollar. At first they refused, but one by one they cooperated and in an astonishingly short space of time, they produced what seemed to be perfect forgeries. The German government supplied from its own papermills what is usually the stumbling block to perfect counterfeiting — high quality paper. The plates and paper were perfect, but not satisfied with their own judgement, a secret agent was sent to neutral Switzerland with a suitcase full of “German-made” pounds and dollars as well as other currencies in all denominations. This agent went to one of Switzerland’s largest banks and requested to see the manager and stated: “I am negotiating a business deal with a man I suspect of being a Nazi agent, and he intends to pay me in this currency with these bills. Please test them and see if they are genuine”. The bank manager explained he could not do this right away since it was in foreign currency, so the Nazi agent left the bills with the bank manager arranging to return within a few days. Upon his return, he was told that the money was genuine, and that the bank would be pleased to accept it for exchange. The agent returned to Germany and the printing presses started rolling in Auschwitz and Buchenwald. Untold millions were printed, so much so that Britain after the war, withdrew from circulation its five pound note — a first in British history.

There is an interesting sequal to this story. Rumours persisted about operation Bernhard long after the end of the war and one such rumour was checked out. For weeks a group of Austrian government frogmen searched Lake Toplitz in Austria. Eventually they found the wreckage of a German plane, the skeleton of the dead pilot still strapped to his seat. In the hold were large metal trunks which, when pried open, revealed over 300,000 British five-pound notes, in neat bundles, perfectly unspoiled and with them, some of the printing plates. The money was confiscated by the Austrian authorities, although it was at that time useless the five pound note having been withdrawn from circulation by the British after the war.

Now remember the U-Boat captain had paid for his food in U.S. dollars and obviously had no shortage of money since each crew member of the whaler had been given a $10 bonus.

It is not generally known that the entire Reichsbank Treasure, (All of Germany’s reserves) disappeared from the bank vaults in Berlin, before the end of the war. Guinness “World Records” book lists this story under **“The greatest unsolved robbery!”**

During the U.S. balance of payments crisis, Time magazine carried an article about discussions taking place at the Headquarters of the World Monetary Fund in Basle, Switzerland. They found that 15 Billion Dollars were in circulation, which should not really exist. One wonders where that amount of money came from?

TOP-SECRET NAZI EXPEDITION

Let us now turn our attention to the location of the bases. Again, even in this area Hitler had planned far ahead and at long range. Obviously guided by the possible occupation and subsequent loss of Germany itself, he had cast around for land still available for colonization and found that Antarctica was, at that time, the only continent still unclaimed. With his usual dispatch, a polar expedition was organized, the preparation of which was kept secret. The force consisted of several large vessels, at least two of which were aircraft carriers, not the present-day type but rather large ships with float-equipped airplanes on board. The planes were rocket-catapulted off special ramps at the end of the ships and retrieved out of the water via a crane. This secret Nazi Expeditionary Force was headed by Kapitan Ritscher and took place in 1937-38. The force landed in the area of Queen Maud Land and established bases there. Large float planes of the Dornier-Wal type, with their unusual pusher-puller propellers were used to explore a huge area of Antarctic terrain. Over 11,000 photographs were taken for mapping purposes. Significantly, a Swastika flag was dropped *every* 20 kilometres to substantiate the German claim to that land, comprising over 600,000 square kilometres in all. In this way, not only was a terrain claimed by Germany, larger than Germany itself, but more significantly, for the first time, ice-free oasis (warm lakes) were found by this secret Nazi expedition. They were photographed along with Alp-like mountain ranges of over 4,000 metres in height. Naturally, the explored areas were given German names and so we have today places like “Ritscher Gipfel” — “Ritscher Peak”, named after the leader of the expedition. The hot oasis amongst the eternal ice was called “Schirmacher Seen Platte” — “Schirmacher Lake Group”. The different coloured appearances of these inland lakes were caused by alga found floating in the sweet water. The waters are warm enough to allow swimming and bathing with just bathing suits and swim trunks.

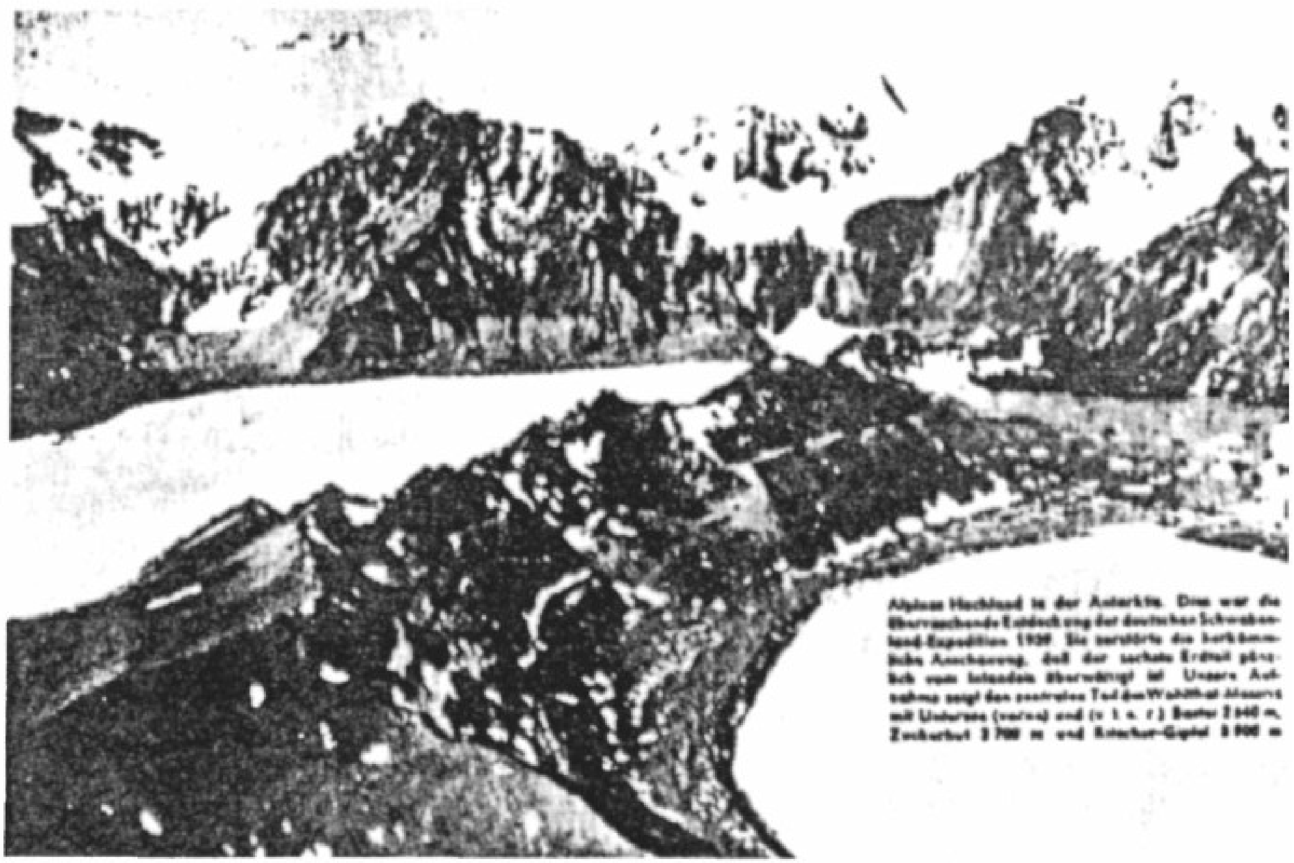

The Alp-like mountain range discovered by Germans; the highest peak over 4,000 metres was christened “Ritscher Peak” after the leader of the expedition.

German landing party in rubber dinghy. In background the aircraft carrying ship "Schwabenland"

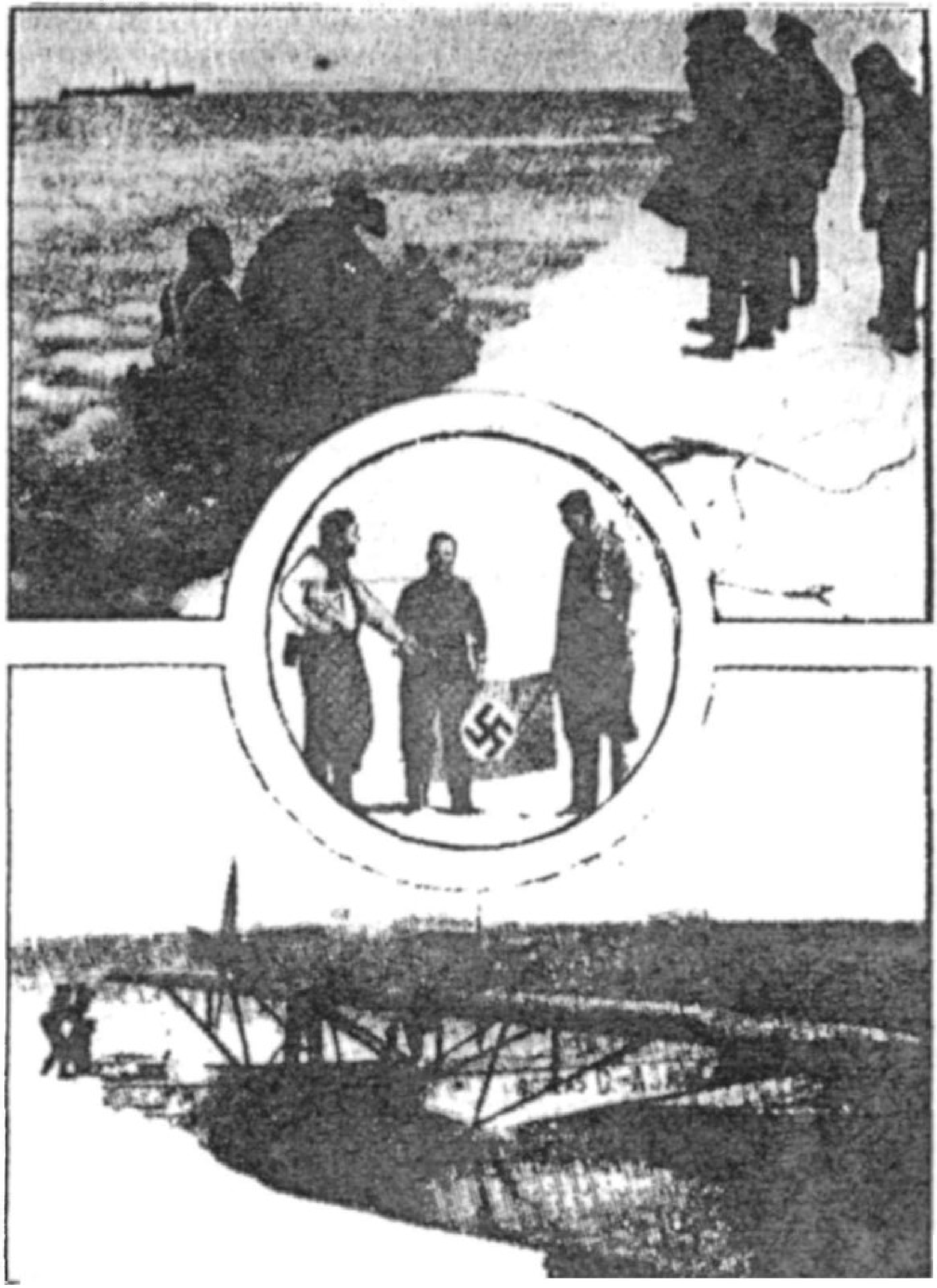

Centre: Expedition members showing one of the Swastika flags, dropped by the mapping planes every few miles to underline Germany's claims.

Bottom: German flying boat on the ice-free oasis, warm water lakes, discovered by the expedition. Note pusher-puller propeller arrangement

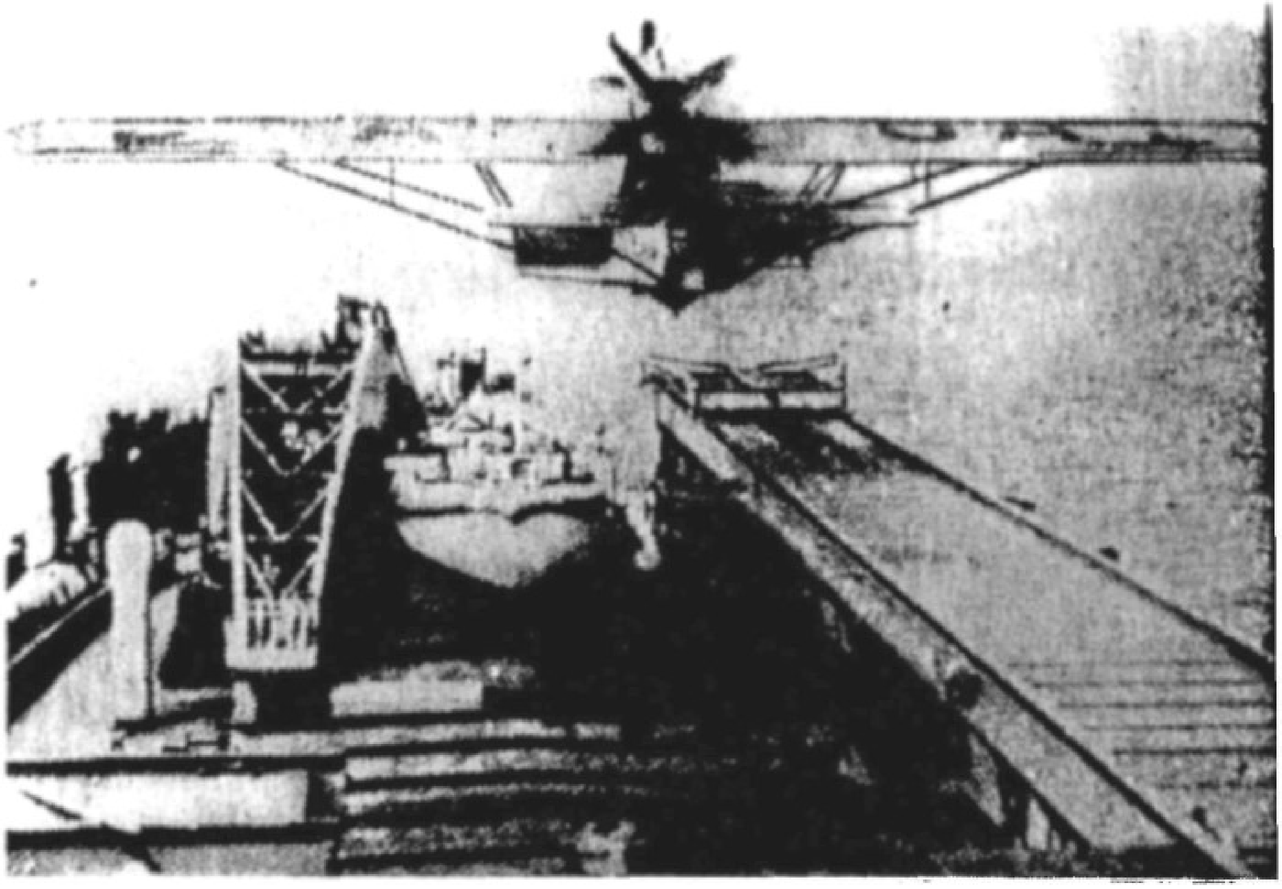

The German catapultship One of the large Dornier-Wal flyingboats is just taking off. (Note large motor vessel in drydock area)

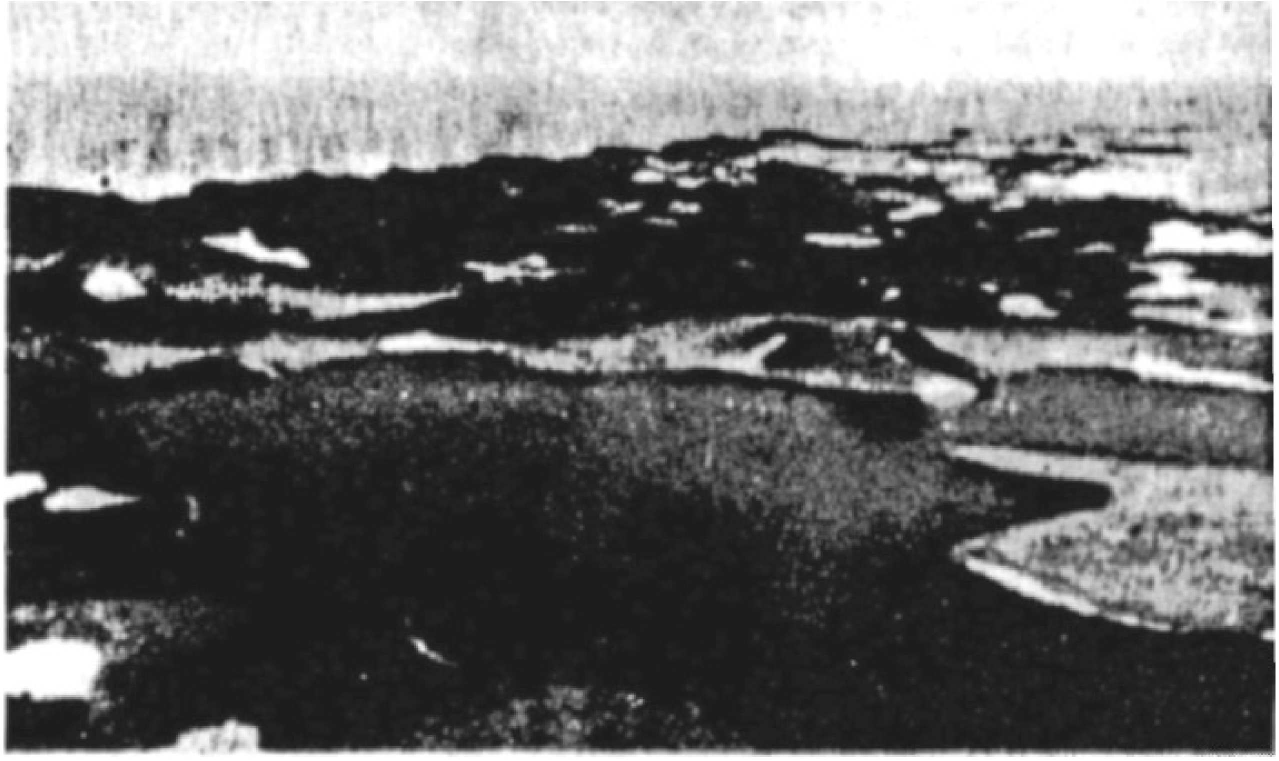

The Expedition took over 11,000 photographs, mapping approx. 600,000 square kilometres. Here is a photo of the "Schirmacher Seenplatte" — the ice-free islands, "Re-discovered" by Admiral Byrd ten years later.

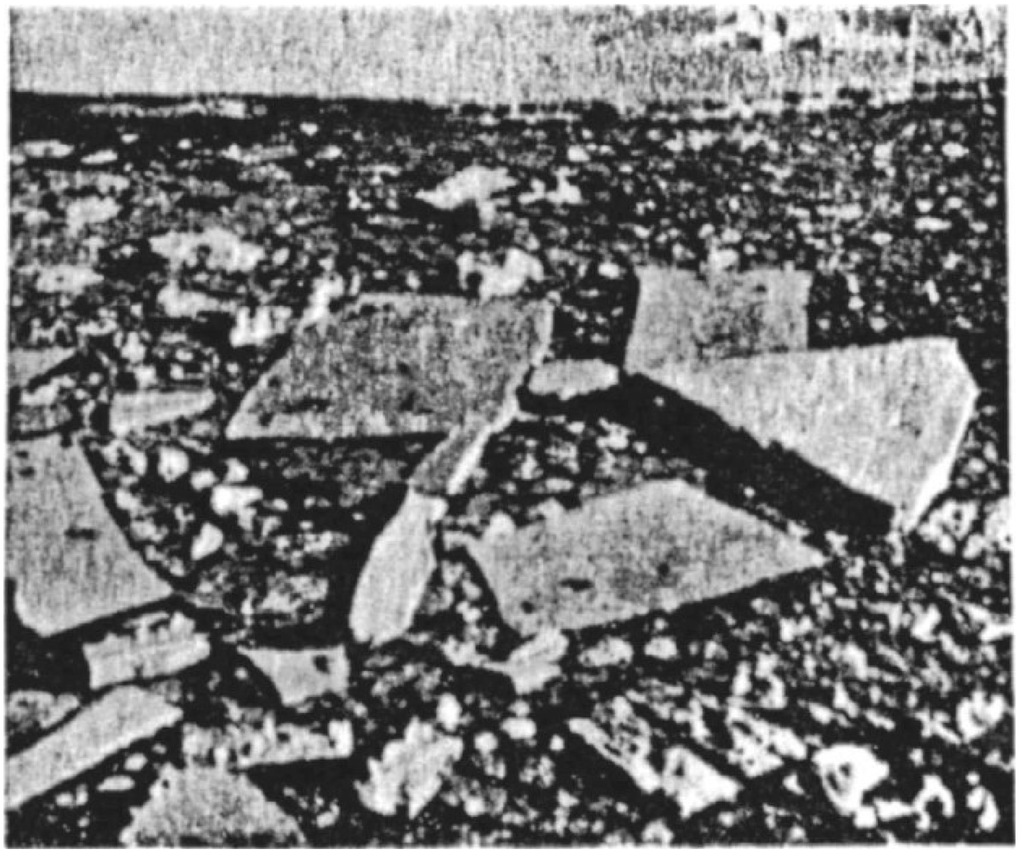

The little specks on the ice are seals and sea lions weighing up to 2,000 pounds and “not too bad to eat” and very plentiful.

THE MOUNTAIN RANGES DISCOVERED

Heretofore never published in the English-speaking world, are actual photographs of this Nazi expedition and some of the startling discoveries.

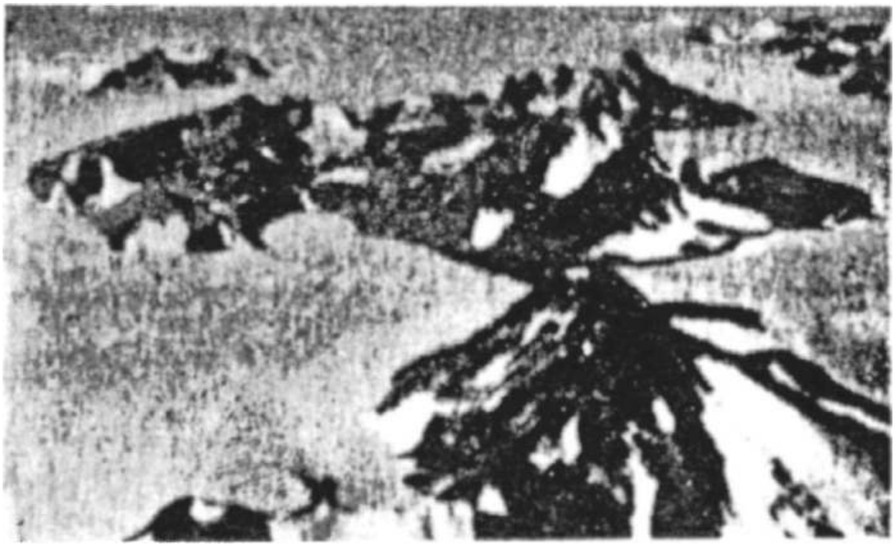

The Alp-like mountain range discovered by Germans;
Taken from the air.

Added credence to the secret bases thesis can be found in remarks attributed to Joachin von Ribbentrop at the outbreak of the war. “In accordance with Germany’s long-range political strategy, we have taken into firm possession the Antarctic area, called New Swabia (New Schwabenland) to ensure a safe retreat in case of necessity.” (Taken from Mattern’s previously quoted German edition of this book).

For an exact location of the German area of Antarctica, please look at the map reproduced here, and compare the relative size of the United States with Antarctica. A huge area, indeed.

Continental United States in comparison with Antarctica

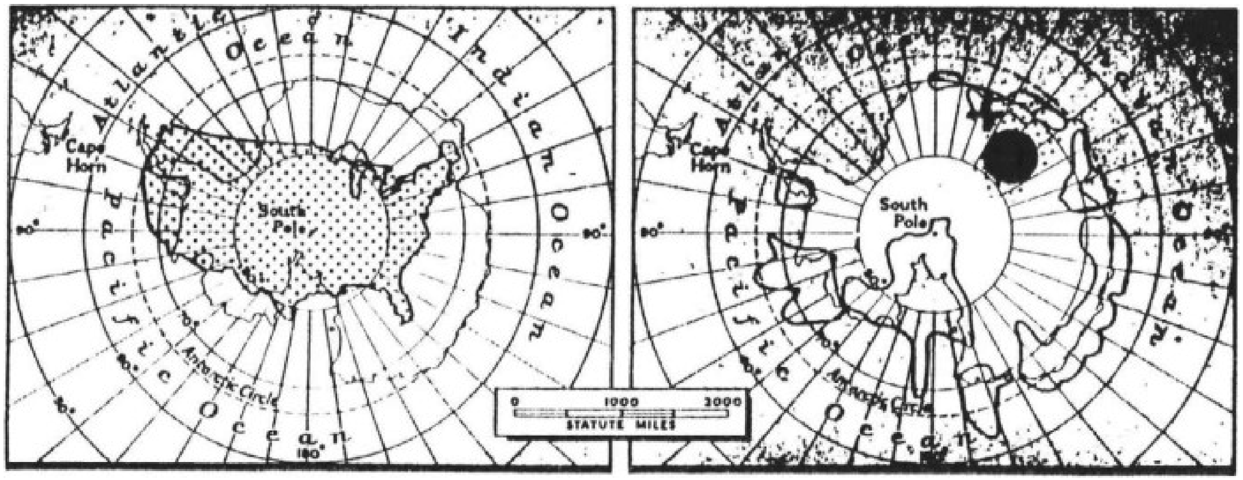
Atlantic Ocean
Indian Ocean
Pacific Ocean
Cape Horn
South Pole
Antarctic Circle
90°
90°
180°
0
1000
2000
STATUTE MILES

The Byrd expedition and its mapping mission indicated by wavy lines. Black circles indicates German territory. Byrd's intercepted flight marked X

Other factors make Antarctica an ideal place for these bases. There is no rust, no germs, and consequently very little illness or decomposition. Food remains edible forever it seems, since the whole region acts rather like a giant freezer. For instance, the shed where Scott spent some months pre-W.W. I, before he launched his ill-fated antarctic expedition, was recently discovered. The food which remained in the shed, from almost 70 years ago was still as fresh and edible as on the day it arrived in antarctica, and wooden boxes, tin cans, cups, candle and paper (in fact everything), are as well preserved as if by inanimate suspension. Antarctica has no flies, no bugs, — no bacillus can survive the cold temperatures — not even the common cold can survive.

See photographs of Scott's camp.

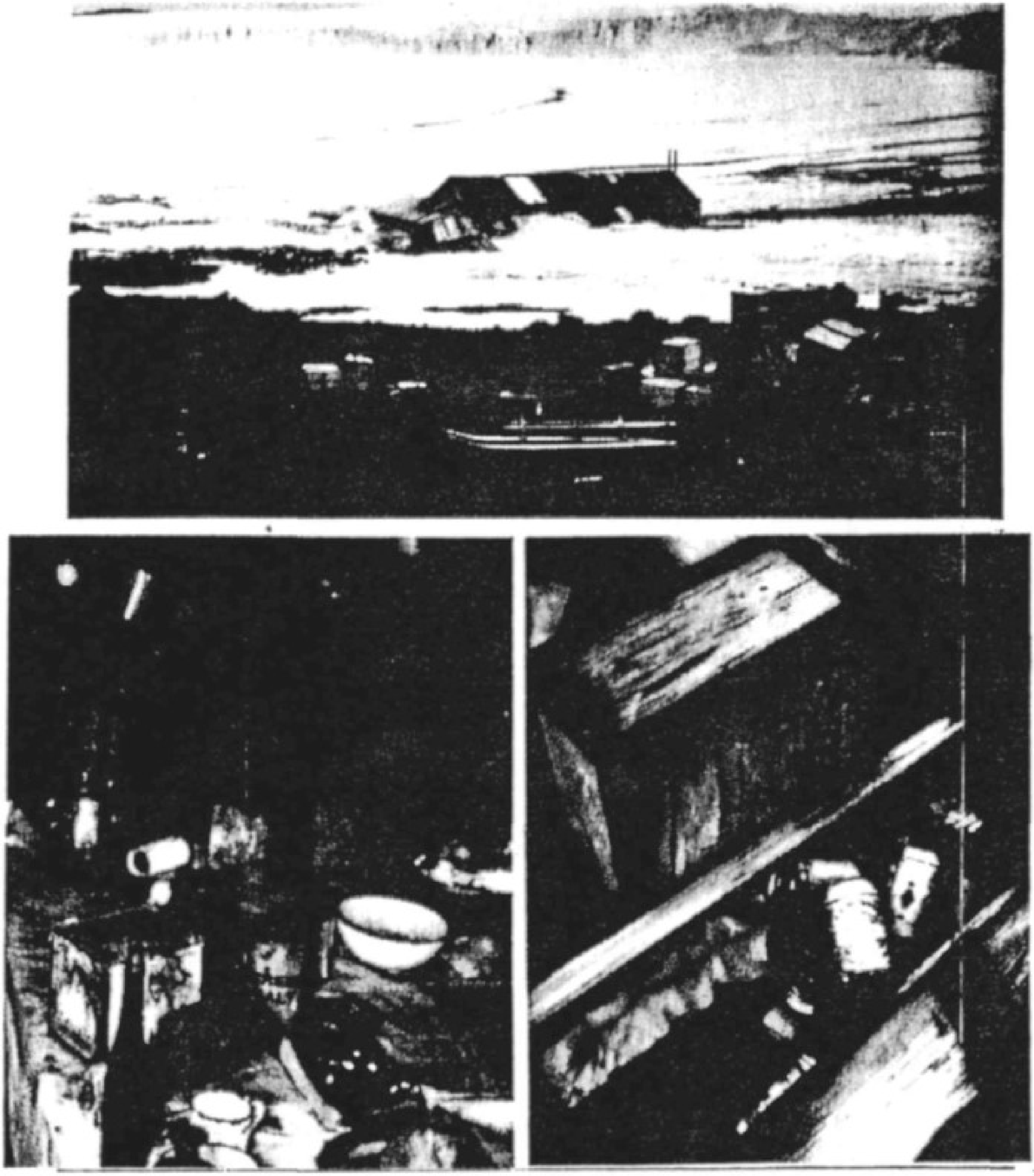

The camp of Polar-explorer Scott, re-discovered after 60 years. Food supplies which were left were still edible. The table setting was as if just left. No deterioration.

These same non-deteriorating conditions where found in Jan. of 1947 by Admiral Byrd at the headquarters in Antarctica which he had established and lived in for months in the early 30's. From this it would seem safe to assume that human beings too would be subject to the same natural laws and therefore age much less quickly. The significance of all these factors would not have been lost to **a** very health conscious, vegetarian Adolf Hitler.

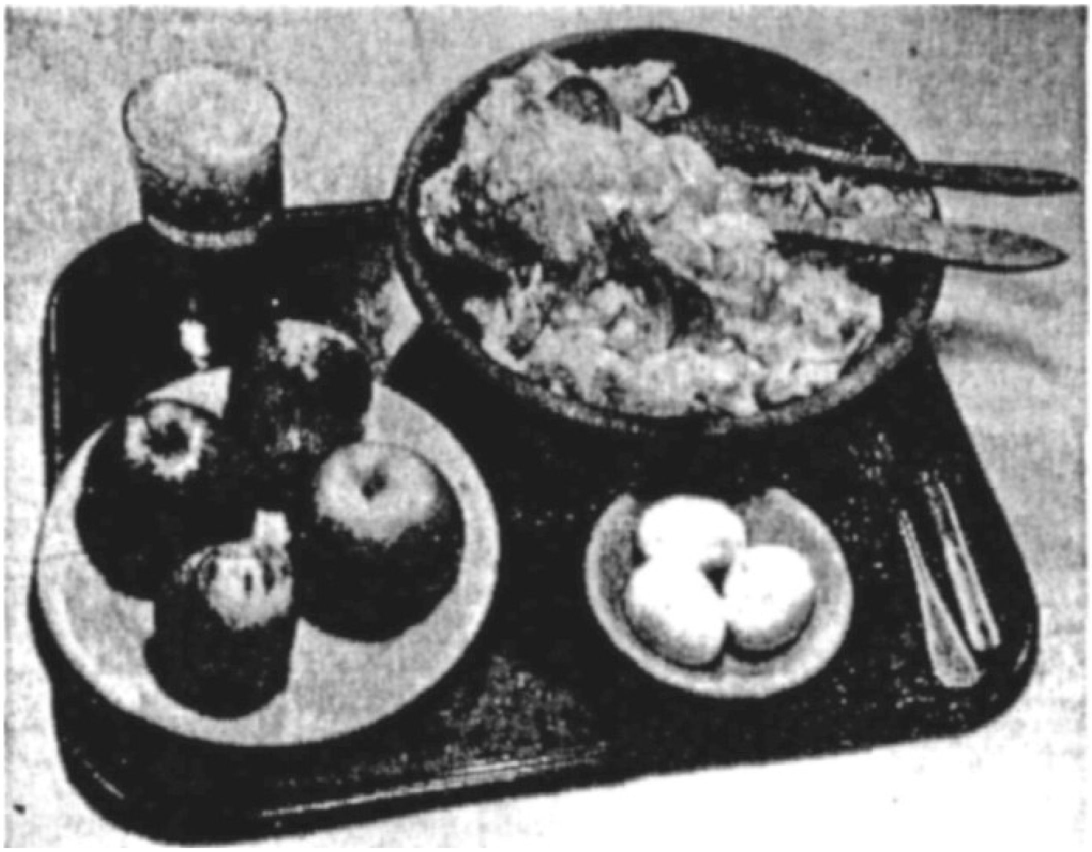

Health-conscious Hitler was a vegetarian. Here is a typical meal. No alcohol. No nicotine.

Now could all of this have taken place in the 20th century without detection? Hardly! What steps were taken to discover the truth? What has been done about the secret bases now that their existence has been established and established beyond **a** doubt? Why did the world not hear about these incredible events?

Obviously, Hitler's escape was soon discovered, otherwise the statements of Stalin and of Eisenhower and all other quoted sources would be an exercise in insanity. It has been speculated that the Nuremberg War Crimes Trials were staged, to a great extent, in the hope that the "Last Battalion" could be drawn from their impregnable, inaccessible hideouts, and thus force the Fuhrer's hand. A large armed force of elite troops surrounded the whole of the Nuremberg area during the long agonizing months of the typically-Bolshevik show trials. Perhaps there are readers who will be able to recall from newspaper pictures or newsreels the "tight security" that existed in the whole of Germany during these trials. Some S.S. men were actually caught, tried and convicted for attempting to free their leaders, but when the orgy of strangulations and torture was over, the Fuhrer was still nowhere to be found. Some UFO overflights and activities were reported but no actual armed clashes or incidents took place.

(Associated Press Radiofoto)

Manned by U. S. troops, an armored truck and a weapons carrier stand guard outside Nurnberg courthouse while verdict is being read.

Washington, Moscow and London then decided to really “get into the act”; in fact, eight countries in total decided to do some “scientific” work and in Antarctica, of all places!! A large expedition, lavishly financed was quickly put together. It consisted of over 4,000 specially selected elite U.S. navy troops along with an eight month food supply. Thirteen ships under the overall command of Admiral Byrd made up this purely “scientific” expedition, composed mostly of military-types and very few scientists.

The U.S. Antarctic battle fleet left Norfolk, Va. on Dec. 2, 1946 — three distinct battle groups, comprised of the Mount Olympus, Admiral Byrd’s command ship, the ice-breaker, “Northwind”, the catapult ship “Pine Island”, the destroyer “Brownsen”, the aircraft-carrier “Philippines Sea”, the U.S. submarine “Sennet” and the two support vessels, “Yankee” and “Merrick”, as well as the two tankers “Canisted” and “Capacan”, an additional floatplane carrying ship, “Currituck” and the destroyer “Henderson”.

At the same time it was announced officially that a similar English-Norwegian force was operating in a support capacity in Antarctic waters around Bahia Marguerite. A Soviet contingent was also reported to be participating in the “research”.

U.S. Convoy in Antarctica

The Soviet participation is an interesting one, since Winston Churchill had already spoken of an "Iron Curtain" and felt that "they" — the crusaders to Europe had "killed the wrong pig". Obviously Churchill now realised that they should have destroyed Bolshevik Russia not Germany.

The general public was told that the "RESEARCH" mission was interested in locating uranium and studying the weather. Admiral Byrd, who had already undertaken a similar, though much smaller and speedier, investigation of the north pole was asked why he had recommended the establishment of armed observation camps. His reply, "Because the pole lies between us and our enemies" — El Mercurio, Santiago, Chile, July 7th, 1947. Further questioning as to which enemy he meant, since the Axis powers had just been defeated and had "unconditionally surrendered," brought no response.

However, it was soon learned that as well as the scientific jobs, the mission had the task of "observing the activities of a foreign power in the South Pole Region". Questioned further on this part of the expedition's activities, Adm. Byrd reportedly replied "To break the last desperate resistance of Adolf Hitler, in case we find him in his Neuberchtesgaden inside "New Schwabenland" in the Queen Maud Land region, or to destroy him".

The Spanish book "Hitler esta vivo" page 161, reports that Byrd's expedition was equipped with the very latest devices, amongst them "detectores termo magnetico" — as stated by Ladislao Szabo.

The U.S. expedition duly arrived and landed in Antarctica. With them the very latest in military gear and gadgets, from amphibian tanks to troop carriers, helicopters, floatplanes and every other conceivable military apparatus. Bases were established and quickly expanded. Observation planes were sent out all over the region. Reproduced here is a map giving a flight pattern of all the flights undertaken. Many thousands of photographs were taken and mapping missions flown. One particular flight stands out amongst all those reported and one in which Adm. Byrd, himself, was aboard. The instruments went totally haywire and the performance gauges and altimeters behaved in a most erratic manner, causing

Adm. Byrd to abort the flight and return to base on “visual” control. All instruments returned to normal as soon as open terrain had been reached.

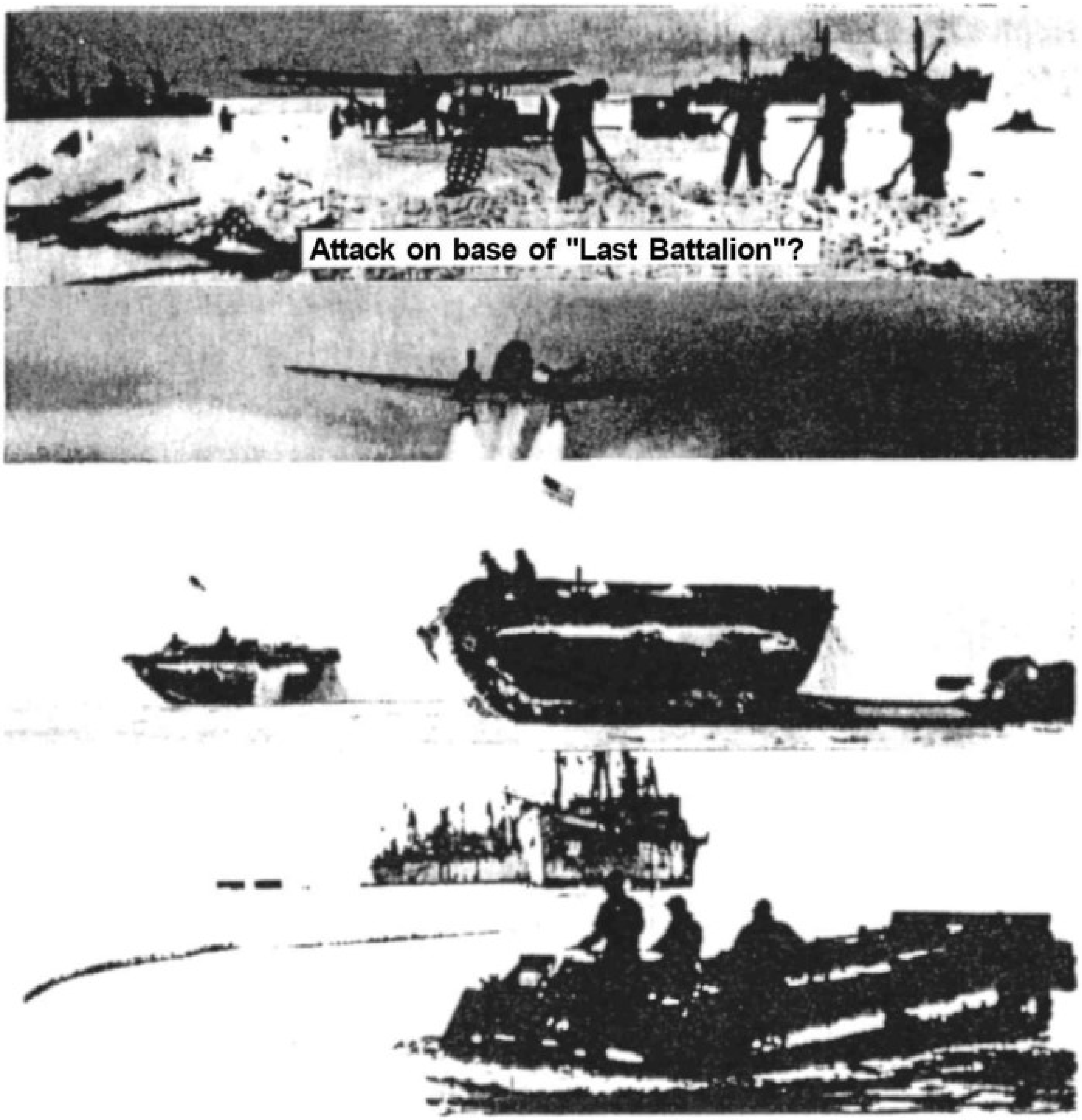

U.S. Amphibian landing

It has been reported by papers and sources previously mentioned here, that Admiral Byrd had located the Secret Nazi Base and was approaching it when the above incident took place causing abandonment of the flight, but not before he is reported to have dropped an American flag (some reports mention **a** bomb) on the approximate spot of the base. Undoubtedly this was done to warn Hitler he was not entirely safe even in his “New Berchtesgaden” or, as one writer calls it, Hitler’s Shang-ri-la.

Vengeance was apparently swift and it seems the Fuhrer was not to be humoured. Within 48 hours, four of Byrd's planes had been lost, some without a trace and others without any survivors. (See crash sites marked on map). Adm. Byrd hastily abandoned all his efforts and disembarked, with all his force, for home.

German Base? German defenders? Red Alert!

On board his flagship "Olympus" he gave the following startling interview, translated from the Spanish as it was reported in the paper El Mercurio, Santiago, Chile on March 5, 1947. It appeared on the front page under the headline "On Board the Mount Olympus on the High Seas". Apparently Adm. Byrd granted an interview to Lee van Atta. "Adm. Byrd declared today that it was imperative for the United States to initiate immediate defence measures against hostile regions. The Admiral further stated that he didn't want to frighten anyone unduly but that it was a bitter reality that in case of a new war the continental United States would be attacked by flying objects which could fly from pole to pole at incredible speeds. (Earlier he had recommended defence bases at the North Pole). Admiral Byrd repeated the above points of view, resulting from his personal knowledge gathered both at the north and south poles, before a news conference held for International News Service".

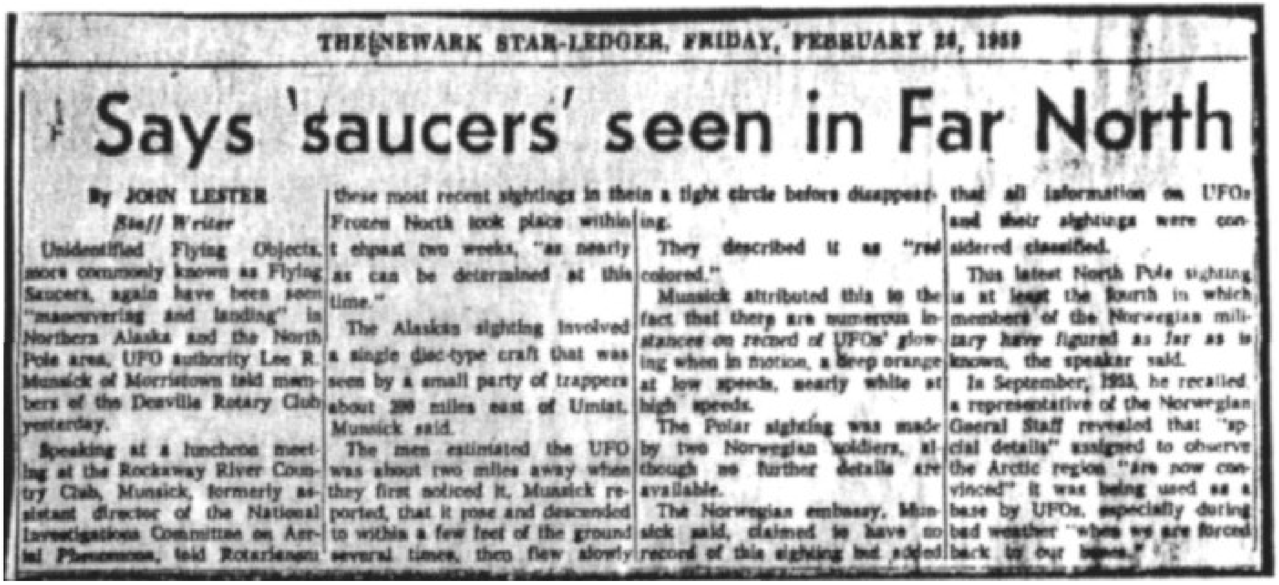

THE NEWARK STAR-LEDGER, FRIDAY, FEBRUARY 20, 1959

Says 'saucers' seen in Far North

By JOHN LESTER
Staff Writer

Unidentified Flying Objects, more commonly known as Flying Saucers, again have been seen "maneuvering and landing" in Northern Alaska and the North Pole area, UFO authority Lee R. Munsick of Morristown told members of the Denville Rotary Club yesterday.

Speaking at a luncheon meeting at the Rockaway River Country Club, Munsick, formerly assistant director of the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena, told Rotarians these most recent sightings in the Frozen North took place within the past two weeks, "as nearly as can be determined at this time."

The Alaskan sighting involved a single disc-type craft that was seen by a small party of trappers about 200 miles east of Umiat, Munsick said.

The men estimated the UFO was about two miles away when they first noticed it, Munsick reported, that it rose and descended to within a few feet of the ground several times, then flew slowly in a tight circle before disappearing.

They described it as "red colored."

Munsick attributed this to the fact that there are numerous instances on record of UFOs' glowing when in motion, a deep orange at low speeds, nearly white at high speeds.

The Polar sighting was made by two Norwegian soldiers, although no further details are available.

The Norwegian embassy, Munsick said, claimed to have no record of this sighting but added that all information on UFOs and their sightings were considered classified.

This latest North Pole sighting is at least the fourth in which members of the Norwegian military have figured as far as is known, the speaker said.

In September, 1955, he recalled, a representative of the Norwegian General Staff revealed that "special details" assigned to observe the Arctic region "are now convinced" it was being used as a base by UFOs, especially during bad weather "when we are forced back to our bases."

During this press conference the Admiral also stated that in a quickly shrinking world the United States could no longer derive any sense of security from its isolation or on the geographic distance of the poles or oceans. The Admiral affirmed once again his belief that the entire Antarctic continent should be closely watched and surrounded by a "wall of defence installations, since it represented the last line of defence for AMERICA". (These defence measures have since been taken). Admiral Byrd further stated that no one could give a more accurate accounting of the true significance of the situation than he could, since he had had occasion to employ the latest scientific developments and from what he had learned he could make comparisons. (Meaning he had encountered the effect of the secret weapons?)

When Admiral Byrd had arrived in the United States and the significance of his findings had found their way into the press, he was hospitalized. No hard information was ever unearthed but it seems his frank statements to the press in South America and on board the Olympus were not appreciated by the powers that be in Washington. Was he thus the first victim of a long string of prominent people "removed from circulation" for their honest belief in Unidentified Flying Objects, flying at incredible speeds from pole to pole?

Many definite and also very important conclusions can be drawn from the previous reporting:

1. The final outcome of W.W. II is yet to be decided. This is borne out by the late General and former President Eisenhower's statement—"The second world war has not yet ended" and corroborated by Admiral Byrd's alarming phrase "in the case of a new war". Hitler's Last Battalion is waiting for its golden opportunity to be "the tip of the scale" in any conflagration yet to come.

2. The over forty-four small wars since 1945 including Korea and Vietnam, were supposed to provoke a premature "showing of hands" by the Last Battalion.

3. Hitler has defended his secret lair as successfully against Byrd as he had his numerous headquarters in Europe, during the war against the Allies. Byrd was forced to retreat and to acknowledge the superiority of the UFO's, and their secret weapons.

4. The "New Third Reich" has maintained its crucial time — technology advantage over its W.W. II adversaries — possibly even increased it.

5. Idealism (spirit) has triumphed already over Materialism (money), since only the German state was destroyed but not the ideology of National Socialism.

6. There has been a 30-year cover up by brain and more often by brawn, about the true identity of the UFO's or at least many of them. Their origins have been known, but deliberately suppressed by the rulers of the Unholy Alliance of 1939-45.

7. The real and only reason for the insane UFO cover up, now falling apart, is to be found in most UFO's German origin. The Allies in East and West have told so many lies about the barbaric, sadistic behaviour of the Nazis, that they now fear wide-spread panic amongst their populations, should the truth become known. After all, if the Nazis are still around, would it not be logical and natural for them to take revenge one day? With U.F.O. power!

WHY THE BIG UFO COVER-UP?

For 30 years some of the world's most imaginative people have wondered about the "strange" behaviour of their governments when it came to the questions of the UFO's. If the UFO's are extra terrestrial and the humans on this planet have no "defence" against them, then why annoy these beings by orders to "shoot to kill?" It is interesting that once again we see perfect harmony of approach between the U.S. and the Soviets. Recently there was a very detailed report about the Soviet Air Forces having stumbled upon some secret UFO bases in far off Mongolia. Apparently the Soviets went in in their usual barbaric style, bombed and burned everything to the ground, as reported by Dipl. Ing. A. Schneider in the Viennese newspaper, K. Die aktuelle Serie, P.a. Sat. Sept. 14,1974. ". . . the following remarkable report reached us today from the Soviet Union: April 24, 1970 was a day that all hell broke loose. A supersonic Soviet jetbomber in a secret mission from Moscow to Vladivostok was lost without a trace over Siberia. The pilot was in voice contact with ground control stations when suddenly the transmission was interrupted. An intensive search by nearly two hundred planes was quickly organized over the area where the pilot was last heard from. Almost simultaneously a number of pilots reported to ground control "we are not alone up here, above us are flying objects, may be 25 or even more. They are huge, they are so high we cannot get near them". That same afternoon in Krasnojarsk, red alert was sounded and troops were deployed around the city because an entire formation of these silvery, silent visitors circled over the scared town. Apparently, entire salvoes of ground to air missiles were fired at hundreds of flying discs which crowded the airspace of the Sino-Soviet-Mongolian frontier area. There was a concerted action by the strange intruders against the town of Ulan Bator, where all flights seemed to emanate from and end. A spokesman for a group of touring German students said after returning from Mongolia, where they had been at the time of the "UFO invasion", that the Soviet Union had destroyed a secret UFO base of immense proportions consisting of many miles of subterranean tunnels, and dozens of pyramid like structures in the northern area of Mongolia." However no photographic proof or documentary evidence exists. The Soviets are always very secretive.

After Admiral Byrd's hasty retreat from Antarctica he not only suggested bases around both poles and a ring of armed camps, but offered this plan: Turn Antarctica into atomic test ranges where atom and hydrogen bombs could be dropped to be "tested". No sooner had the idea been advanced and announced in the press than a strange thing happened. Capitol Hill in Washington, D.C. received an official visit. There is not a UFO fan who has not seen this historic photograph of an entire "swarm" of U.F.O.'s flying over the nearby Congressional Buildings and the White House in perfect, "typically-German" formation. Many UFO researchers have been puzzled about that particular flight. Was it a demonstration of strength? Strength calculated to show that open cities such as Washington or New York, with the many skyscrapers, were far more vulnerable to havoc than the continent of Antarctica with its three to four mile thick ice cap. Interesting too, that the Antarctic test site idea was never again seriously considered. Perhaps we should score another victory of the Fuhrer's "Last Battalion"?

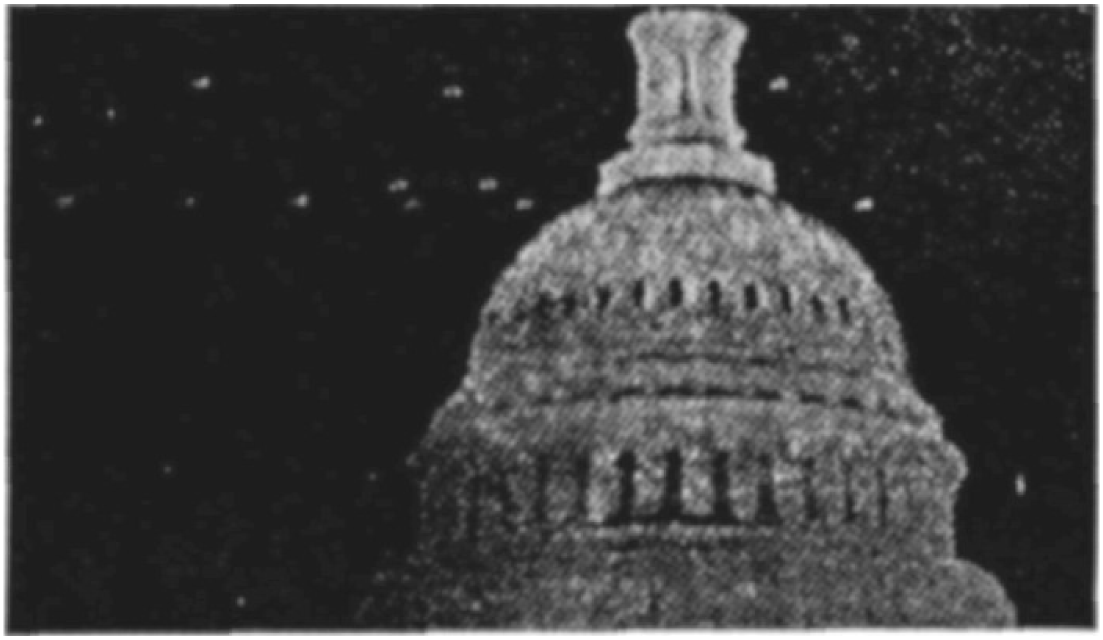

Many sightings took place around the world from Japan to Korea, where we have a particularly good example of a UFO de-materialising in front of the cameras. (See photo.) One must ask “Why do these UFO’s always show themselves, but why do they not land”? If one accepts the normal theory that they are extra terrestrial then the behaviour is certainly strange. Did the crews of these UFO’s travel for so many millions and millions of miles and now not be able to make up their minds to land or not to land? Hardly sensible. Surely it makes more sense to assume they are from this earth, consequently they don’t have to land since they know what earth is all about, and that they are, in fact, reconnaissance aircraft of some earthly power and have no need or desire to communicate. After all, they can tune in and monitor all radio, T.V. and telephone conversations without too much effort, and this would be “old hat” to people who have lived with this, our own technology, all their lives.

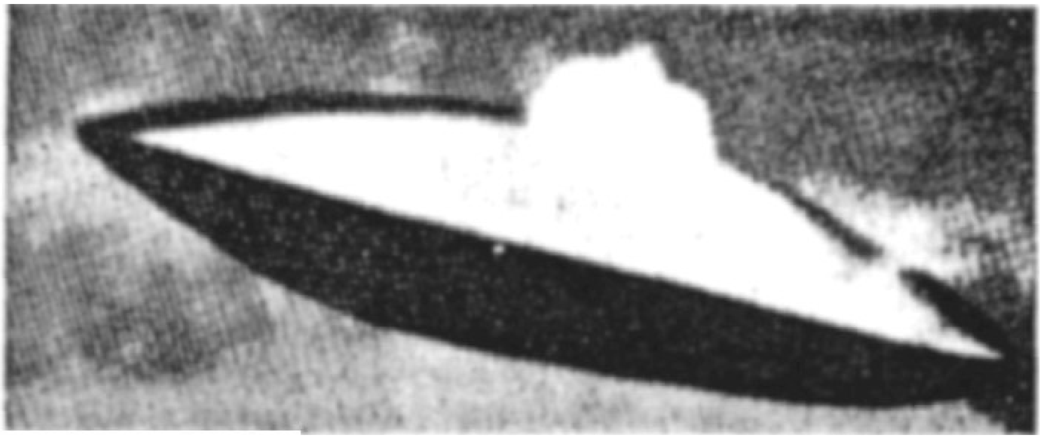

A book which makes very interesting reading is “Incident At Kearney” written by a German American who claims, and claims most convincingly, that he was taken up in a UFO on several occasions. He writes that the entire crew spoke German and behaved like German soldiers. He was taken on a flight to the pole. (Why to the Pole and not to the jungles of Africa or Brazil???) They were friendly and correct to him. No sooner had this author, Reinhold Schmidt, landed in his native America than he was put through a regular hell on earth. Soviet methods were used to persuade him to “shut up” including the K.G.B. tactic of “insane asylum” treatment as reported by Solzhenitsyn and others. One further note of interest is that Schmidt was taken up in a UFO which matches exactly the shape and design of at least two German design UFO’s. Just coincidence? I am inclined to think not.

The UFO cover up is similar in action to those other unholy alliances such as the mass murders of Operation Keelhaul, at Katyn, Dresden and Hiroshima. Let anyone dare to “not conform” with “the establishment’s” version of things and we see people being hounded, defamed and persecuted.

The same pattern that applied in politics globally, when the non-conformist Hitler threatened to upset the international applecart, is still being applied’ to the UFO cover up and has been applied for the last 30 years. Why?

Finally even N.A.S.A. seems to have caught on that rocketry is a rather old fashioned method of spaceflight and according to “Das Neue Zeitalter”, of 5th August, 1967, is now ready to “drop rocketry in favour of flying saucers for flights beyond the Sun and Jupiter”. However, not too much has materialized in that direction to this date.

It is here that another question must be asked. At the speed of our own space vehicles, the nearest “base” for visitors would be 170,000 years away. Well, that’s quite a distance. Even granting a superior technology which could increase speed ten-fold, it would mean that the saucer crews would have to have taken off 17,000 years ago, when we barely had hairy Neanderthal “ancestors” grunting their way through caves along the “corocodile” invested Rhine. At that time, we had not even invented the wheel, hardly fire, never mind rockets. The only aircraft around at that time on this planet were, at best, birds and may be a few fire-flies. The space people could hardly have been worrying about us and our atomic experimenting — not when they left their bases, so perhaps we should stop making ourselves the laughing stock of the universe. Undoubtedly there is life out there in space amongst all those lovely stars in the sky. Not to believe this would be the height of ignorance and arrogance. Most of the UFO’s we are hearing about on this planet are **earthlings!**

In 1959, in three separate large circulation newspapers in Santiago, Chile, it was reported on the front pages that UFO’s had been seen, had landed, and that the crew members behaved and talked like “soldados alemanos”. When the big UFO flap was on in the Catskills and in New York and in New Jersey in the early sixties, farmers repeatedly spoke of the crew members as addressing them in German or in English with a German accent. The power of the UFO’s was pretty well demonstrated beyond the shadow of a doubt by the great “black out”. Many people still insist the black out was the work of UFO’s. There certainly was a rash of sightings at the time over and along hydro lines and power stations.

Often, UFO fans advanced the theory that the strange flying objects come from distant planets and galaxies to check on our “atomic experimenting”, and some people state “contactees” have been told that the UFO’s would prevent an atomic war on the planet earth. Why should they? Why should they care? They certainly do not demonstrate any great desire to colonize the earth — at least not in any great numbers. However if they are from earth, this attitude makes sense.

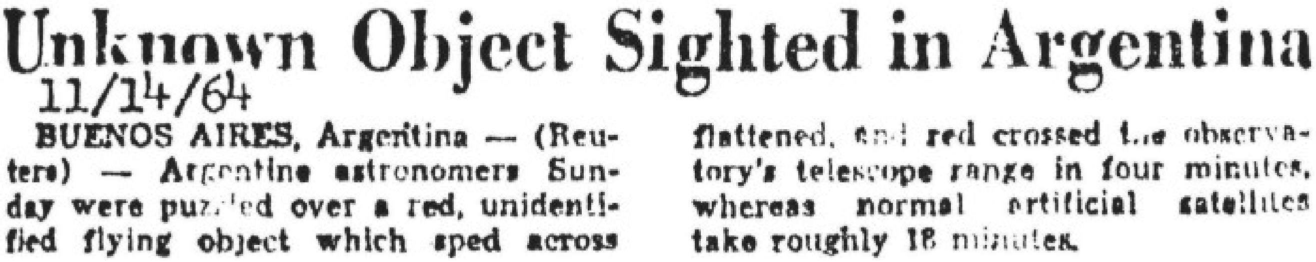

Unknown Object Sighted in Argentina

11/14/64

BUENOS AIRES, Argentina — (Reuters) — Argentine astronomers Sunday were puzzled over a red, unidentified flying object which sped across flattened, and red crossed the observatory's telescope range in four minutes, whereas normal artificial satellites take roughly 18 minutes.

But there are other reasons why the UFO’s will not allow atomic devastation to wreck this planet:—

a) The UFO’s are, by this time, driven by electro magnetism, consequently all secrets surrounding electric power have been discovered. Since all modern communications and guidance systems are based on electronics, it is an easy task to “listen in”, decode and prevent the start or to re-direct whilst in flight, any vehicle or space craft, now in use by the “allies”.

b) The destructive power of atomic weapons is therefore much more of a threat to the powers who possess them and have them stored in silos, in subs, in planes or on their own soil than to those countries who do not have these weapons at all, since they could quite easily be set off by remote control from the UFO’s, before they were even launched.

c) The UFO’s will undoubtedly prevent atomic war to prevent the extinction of the White Race. At the moment the white people are outnumbered ten to one on the planet and should there be an atomic exchange the ratio would be a hundred to one in our dis-favour.

No man of the calibre of Adolf Hitler, deeply committed to the survival and resurgence of Western Culture, would ever allow this tragedy to happen to the White race.

There is an interesting aside to this UFO Antarctic business and spaceflight. Perhaps a few of our readers know that in the region of the South Pole (Antarctica), and to a lesser extent the North Pole, it is possible to escape from the earth’s magnetic pull and death through radiation because the Van Allen Belts open up, funnel-like, at both of these extremities. It is possible to launch a spacecraft, with very little radiation protection from this area avoiding enormous weight, a crew needs no radiation-protection gear.

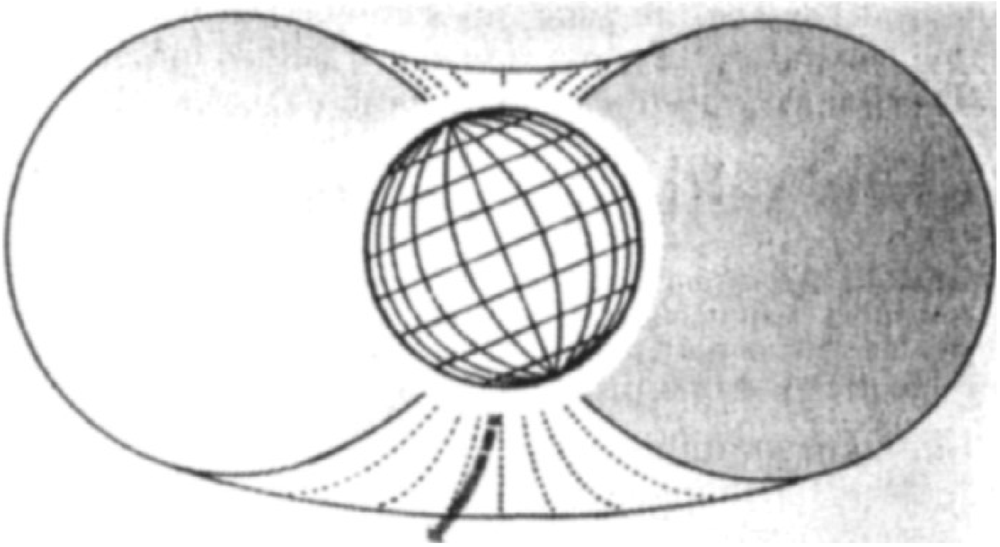

The Van Allen Belts; radio active death belts surrounding the planet earth. They are open funnel-like at the north and south poles, permitting flight into space without heavy lead shields and protective suits.

We must also remember Hitler's feasibility studies of space stations, based on Prof. Dr. Oberth's ideal, 2-hour trajectory. An artificial satellite was to be rocketed into space in 1947 with the A9-A10 rocket, in a steep angle away from the axis of the earth, and counter to the earth's rotation. From this point it would have been possible to:

1) Observe any spot on earth within any given two hour time period.

2) Hit any spot on earth with accurate missiles, bombs, radar-guided or other gadgets such as "mirror beams" or "death rays".

Julius and Ethel Rosenberg mentioned these platforms in their testimony during their espionage trials. They called them "Warships of space". Where did they get this information about these top secret plans, not realised by the Allies until 25 years later? From the same documents that gave them the atomic bomb? But all of this is an indication that spaceflight was already known to a mysterious group of beings.

The American astronomer, Prof. Dr. James Greenacre and four of his colleagues made an astounding observation from Flagstaff, Ariz. Observatory and reported it to a Conference on "Moon Problems" in New York City in May of 1964. Because of the UFO cover-up policy still in force by the U.S. government, Prof. Dr. Greenacre was only able to give his report verbally to colleagues who were present at the Conference. Here is roughly what he said "On 29th Oct. 1963 we observed several colourful spots on the Moon, the spots moved in formation across the motionless face of the moon. One month later Prof. Dr. Greenacre observed the same phenomena. The May 1966 issue of "UFO Nachrichten" Vol. 117 reproduced what Dr. Greenacre had stated he had observed . . . "Prof. Dr. Greenacre saw on or close to the moon at least 31 space craft of gigantic size. Some were from 300 metre to 4.8 kilometres long. They were in motion while being observed through the telescopes. Also, clearly discernible were numerous smaller craft approximately 150 metres in diameter, which moved past or alongside the huge craft, the "mother craft" occasionally changing colour, as in the often-reported, pulsating style." (The distance from the earth to the moon is 384,000 kilometres). End of report.

The American Professor thought at first the Russians might have beaten the Americans to the punch but as it turns out, the workers' paradise has not managed to land even a man on the moon — last report was that they were seen improving the brand barbed wire used in their more than 1,000 slave labour and death camps on earth, not on the moon. So, who is out there in the wild blue yonder? Prof. Dr. Phillips of Berlin, Hitler's wartime comrade claims he knows! He even sent the author of this book some charts and times tables of his flights. They match!!

Before we leave this area of investigation, we have to look into the repeatedly reported "glowing" or "pulsating" lights emanating from U.F.O.'s. We find an interesting reference to this phenomena in the previously-mentioned book "We want You" — "Is Hitler Alive?". On page 17 the author reports about a brilliant German metallurgist who had created "a metal harder than diamonds" called appropriately enough "Impervium". This metal glows alternately in the colours of the rainbow when heated to a high degree. This seems to tie up another loose end. Again the timing is interesting. The metal was used for the first time commercially in 1935-36. The laboratories were located not at Schramberg as Michael X reports, but at Starnberg and Starnberger See. However, this could be a simple spelling error by someone not too familiar with the German language.

Now it is time for us to get deeper into the state of actual German UFO research and development. Some is based on hard evidence, other areas have to be pieced together from bits and pieces.

German research and science were once the envy of the world. Every time Nobel prizes were awarded, one could find half a dozen Germans amongst those honoured. That was for achievement, real honest effort; recently, the only Germans so honoured were for betraying the interests of their country, usually to the Reds, in the east. When German scientists were given proper encouragement, sufficient funds and lofty goals their creative output was truly amazing. In the few short years from the time Hitler achieved power, the Germans graduated from W.W.I-type airplanes to jets. The first all jet-powered plane was aloft in 1938 — a Heinkel. Since Germany was forbidden by the Treaty of Versailles to build large planes or military planes, research and development was taking place clandestinely in Russia for a time, but Russia being the type of country it was and still is, this work did not amount to very much.

In National Socialist Germany as soon as Hitler gave the directive, things got rolling. A tremendous amount of experimental work was carried out in several fields of development, namely:

a) conventional propeller-driven planes, usually all metal skin.
b) experimental, all-wooden, to scale delta wing airplanes, and all wing designs.
c) jet-powered planes and rockets, as well as turbo props.
d) the futuristic designs, such as flying disc and boomerang-type aircraft, powered various ways; flying platforms, people, tanks etc.
e) the helicopter, rotating wing, the gyrocopter designs as well as U-Boat pulled kites and gyroscopes etc.

During peace time all this work was carried out at regular aircraft plants near airports of major aircraft producing towns such as Munich, Augsburg, Stuttgart etc. These places were safe from aerial attack until America got involved in the war. Then the designs on the more futuristic designs were transferred to Silesia, East Prussia, the Sudetenland, Bohemia etc. The laboratories were usually underground in abandoned salt or coal mines, in some cases, however, entire mountains were honeycombed with a maze of tunnels, shafts, elevators and underground railroads. Smoketacks were camouflaged as medieval castle turrets. Entrances were so well camouflaged by entire forests that had been transplanted and in one such case it took playing youths six weeks after the war to stumble on a secret jetbomber factory the Americans had overlooked.

One case, known to the author's father, is the airfield in the Sudetenland, without any runway. The entire airfield, in effect, was built into a mountain. The planes touched down on what looked like the extension of a regular highway and were immediately gobbled up by a yawning crack in the side of the mountain. On the opposite side of the mountain, the jets would roar out at almost the speed of sound whenever they took off. Eventually, the Allies stationed 20 fighters on an around-the-clock basis always circling the "hole in the ground", hitting the elusive German fighters at that crucial time when forced to slow down to aim for the hole in the mountain. It is in bases like the above-mentioned, that some of the UFO experiments were conducted. All areas were guarded by electrified barbed wire, constant patrols and minefields. It was only possible to enter with special passes granted only by Himmler's Headquarters, all were consecutively numbered and had a picture of the bearer affixed. All security arrangements were in the hands of the S.S. Troops. Often when rumours got around to flying discs, wings etc. amongst these S.S. Troops, they referred, in hushed tones to “Himmler’s baby”, leaning on a play in words, since Himmler in German means sky — “Himmelskind” or “child of the sky or heaven”. Why this strange nomenclature? Actually it is not so strange at all. The German “Landser”, the popular nickname for the German version of the G.I. had always developed short, but very fitting descriptive titles. For instance, when the Russians introduced their feared rocket batteries which sent a salvo of 12-16 projectiles screaming across to the German lines, it sounded like discordant organ music, therefore it was immediately nicknamed the “Stalin-organ”. So to the S.S. men the flying saucers became known as Himmler’s babies”, just as the Americans quickly called them “Krautmeteors”, appropriately enough, since they were fast as meteors and just as silent.

Let us visit one of the German saucer bases as described by the late Prof. Dr. Friedrich Kuhfuss, who died in Barcelona, Spain, in exile, having never been captured by the Allies. Prof. Kuhfuss had for years been involved in all manner of experimental flying activities. His family was wiped out by an American air raid and he vowed he would rather take his knowledge on flying saucers to his grave than to ever share them with “those barbarians from across the seas or those peachy complexioned hypocrites along the River Thames”. From Dr. Kuhfuss we at least know how one of these bases looked . . .

BASE X

Deep among the near-primeval, dark and foreboding forests, somewhere in one of the many hilly areas of Germany, there was a secret base simply called X. To the outside world it looked like an ancient hunting lodge, perched atop a small hill. Only two meandering winding roads led up to the “Jagdschloss” as German woodsmen and small farmers of the nearby village (about 8 km. distant) would simply call it. Apparently some gruesome murders had taken place in centuries past at the castle and local woodsmen insisted that on certain nights one could hear the frightful din and clash of arms and the shrieks and cries of the wounded and dying. Therefore the spot was treated with a peasant’s healthy respect, for stories of this type were never taken too lightly in Europe. However, someone in high places had apparently not heard of the ghosts and had decided that because of its strategic location at the end of the world, the Jagdschloss would be a good site for some far out experimentation and before the peasants and woodsmen knew what was happening, their forest area had been declared a restricted area. They were told that for the duration of the war the entire area was under the direct control of the S.S. All villagers were issued with special passes, with photographs; no outsiders were allowed to visit them and they were sworn to secrecy. War was war, and this was not the first time in their lives they had had to restrict their lives because of special circumstances and besides they found a ready market amongst the soldiers for some of the few things they had to offer for sale, such as eggs, the occasional chicken, goat, rabbit and perhaps even a pig. They observed, however, bus loads of people driving through their village usually sombre looking men, very few women, but many of them uniformed and an exceptional number of higher rank officers.

Since there was only one Inn in the village, The Gasthaus zum Goldenen Ochsen (The Golden Oxen) occasionally some of the heavy Mercedes and Opel automobiles would stop and their occupants lunch or partake of snacks. The men behaved in a most peculair manner. They all took their briefcases with them to lunch, many of these cases being of a size larger than the usual German briefcase. They were chained and locked to left wrists and time and time again the local peasantry stood open-mouthed with amazement as these people from “the outside world” descended upon their peaceful Inn, asking for dishes with which they were not familiar and asked for in German dialects which they could hardly understand.

However, the hand motions of the eaters, sometimes shooting into the air, or weaving back and forth, sometimes hovering and the occasional word fliegen (flying), schweben (float in air), aufsteigen (climb up) which they could understand, they began to realise that something to do with flying was being discussed and obviously in connection with the Jagdschloss.

One day, one visitor even asked the proprietor's daughter to fetch some old saucers from the kitchen with which a very serious group of men piled out into the courtyard and watched with much excited discussion and nodding, how saucer after saucer was hurled into the air like today's "Frisbees", to demonstrate to the assembled guests (obviously scientists) the flight peculiarities of Saucers, all of this much to the chagrin of the young woman, because dishes were a pretty precious commodity during war. However, the guests paid well for them, more than the "new" price and after the demonstration they roared out of town.

There was relative quiet for a number of weeks and then one day S.S. men asked the local burgermaster to call together the local inhabitants. An officer was introduced, he announced that close to the Jadgschloss an auxilliary to a concentration camp was to be set up and that the inmates were war plant workers engaged in extremely important work. Nobody was to fraternize with these people and all strangers or strange happenings were to be immediately reported to the S.S. Ortskommandatur. The inhabitants were thanked for the exemplary manner in which they had treated their "uninvited" guests and hoped for future good relations. He raised his arm, everybody said "Heil Hitler" and he walked out, leaving the townspeople talking excitedly amongst themselves. A few days later, truck after truck loaded with construction equipment of every conceivable description rolled through the village. Then followed wood lumber, many rolls of tarpaper and finally barbed wire. Later, followed a few buses, with windows painted over, followed by truckloads of steel-helmeted soldiers with carbines. Quiet settled again on the village. A few weeks later, where there had been meadows was now a hustling, bustling camp.

Soon loud and frightening blasts could be heard day in and day out, reverberating through the valleys. After a few months they ceased. Then huge, slow-moving, flatbed trucks began to arrive carrying loads, covered with tarpaulins all chained to the platforms and guarded by soldiers. This went on for many, many weeks. By now the whole village was rife with the most unbelievable rumours.

One night, the entire village was awakened and terribly frightened by sound of such high pitch and frequency that had commenced only as a hardly audible humming, that it was soon realised that something very unusual was happening. They rushed outside and to their utter amazement and bewilderment they saw a brilliantly illuminated "thing" hovering in the air in the general direction of the Jagdschloss. Then, just as violently as it had announced its arrival the sound died down, the light faded and the strange "thing" settled behind the treetops, out of sight of the relieved, yet still shaken local people. Eventually, this strange sound became familiar to them and only the children became excited about it everytime a "thing" started or landed. Soon, several of these strange vehicles, each a little different from the other, were flying about, at first slowly but later at such fantastic speeds that it was difficult to follow them with the naked eye. But now a new annoyance frightened the farmers. They had observed that their cows and dogs seemed to be affected by the high whine of the engines of these "things". Sometimes, when flying so fast, they made frightful noises, big bangs, that reverberated around the valleys rather like heavy thunderclaps. All in all they were beginning to be a little “unheimlich” (scary) and there was talk of asking the mayor to protest again these shenannigans to the S.S.-Ortskommandantur.

In the meantime, two of the local boys who were in the Army, came home on leave. When they were told what was going on they mentioned to their folks the nicknames “Himmelskinder”, and how it was thought that they were the miracle weapons the Fuhrer had spoken of several times in the last few months. This consoled the local population for after all reports from the front were none too rosy and if their valley could help to turn the tide of events and be of aid to the Fuhrer then it was alright with them. So, the months became years, then one day long columns of trucks clogged the roads. Since there were two roads into and out of the Jagdschloss it was difficult to know what was transpiring, but soon they knew. Les and less flying “things” were seen and soon the camp was only a shadow of its former self. One day all work ceased, tremendous explosions ripped, once again, through the valley, smoke rose from the area of the Jogdschloss and a few weeks later the Russians rode into town, unopposed, raping and looting everything in sight. They found only ruins at the Jagdschloss. When they were told, during interrogation, what had been seen, they just stared over their vodka bottles disbelieving the Germankis. Little did they realise that in those caved-in caverns, with electrical cables and wires dangling from now damp ceilings, on the debris-littered floors, in seemingly endless halls, with strange burn marks on the concrete floors, walls and ceilings, had taken place one of the wonders of the world. Now all lay wrecked and mute, only worthless bits of pieces of metal, nuts, bolts, steel rods, rubber tires, some leather and some strange-looking and feeling “slacklike”, greyish substance was to be found amongst all the rubble. There was the usual amount of rusty and burnt bunk bends, with their half-rotten straw sacks, broken down tarpaper shacks, half burned, empty cans, containers, some empty munition boxes, guard huts and two or three abandoned, cannibalized trucks. And that was all. No records, no evidence, only destruction.

THE U.F.O. PUZZLE

Technical Details

One could safely state without fear of contradiction, that the UFO origins and their technical aspects, such as method of propulsion, guidance, metallurgical composition of the craft themselves, and the origins of the crews, human or non-human, have perplexed an entire generation of people.

Much has been stated in this book that has never been looked at before in the light of German operated UFO’s. Now it is time to look at the available data, real hard facts.

Most people interested in the UFO phenomenon know the Reinhold Schmidt story, so we will only summarize here that he was an American, born in America, but who could still speak some German which his parents had taught him. He has stated that he was taken into a flying saucer on several occasions and actually taken for rides as far away as the poles. The crew spoke German and behaved like German soldiers. Certainly a remarkable story. The crew leader claimed he was from another planet, which could certainly be true, and it could mean that Germans have inhabited other planets. Then comes the obvious question — how did Germans get to other planets? Reinhold Schmidt forgot to ask. However, we do have a sketch of the flying saucer he was taken up in, and it certainly resembles the German UFO’s that follow, a photo of Schmidt's saucer and the Bellonzo-Schriever-MietheModel which actually flew. There are two authorities who can vouch for the actual flights and some of the details as to propulsion, size, speeds reached in actual flight etc. One is the late Major Rudolf Lusar, author, and an engineer by profession who worked for the German Air Force Ministry and in the patent and discovery evaluation section during the war. We reprint his account of the Flying Disc experiments from his definitive work on German Secret Weapons of W.W.II, pages 165 and 166 of the English edition, published by Neville Spearman, London, England.

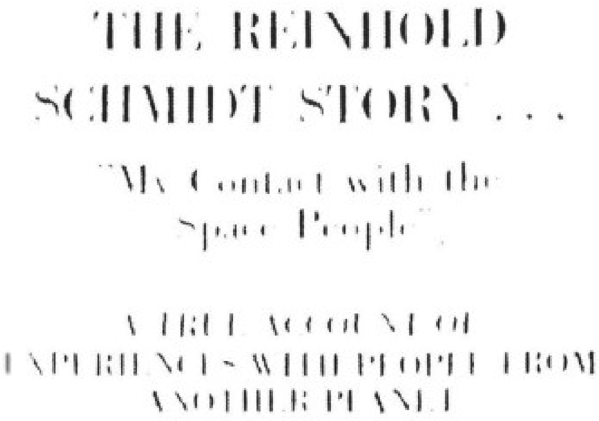

THE REINHOLD
SCHMIDT STORY . . .
"My Contact with the
Space People".

A TRUE ACCOUNT OF
EXPERIENCES WITH PEOPLE FROM
ANOTHER PLANET

Photograph of Reinhold Schmidt and front cover of his book

Mentioned in other pages of this book

There are a number of speculations which Lusar makes as to the postwar whereabouts of some of the scientists and their plants, equipment etc. which have since been established to be erroneous. However, in 1953 when he wrote this book, that was all that was then known and all that could be surmissed. In conversations with the author just before his death, Lusar mentioned that he was going to update the 6th German Edition; his premature death prevented such updating.

Now we must turn our attention to another man who has been closely linked with the German UFO story — Victor Schauberger. Reproduced here are photos of two of his electro-magnetically powered "Flying Hats" and some photographs that show how strikingly similar they are to actual UFO's photographed flying over the United States. Victor Schauberger lived for some years in the United States after the war where he was reported to be working on UFO projects. Apparently he was well financed and supported by a group of mysterious, but obviously wealthy people. He received wide publicity in the middle 1950's when he first published his work on "implosion" instead of "explosion", which is a concept as revolutionary as saying "not nuclear fission but nuclear fusion" is the way of the future. His articles were greatly discussed and then one day in Chicago he just vanished. His battered body was found and as to who killed Schauberger or why has never been solved. One version has it that gangsters tried to beat his revolutionising secrets out of him and accidentally killed him. However, Schauberger did experiments early in 1940-41 in Vienna and his 10 foot diameter models were so successful that on the very first tests they took off vertically at such surpriing speeds that one model shot through the 24 foot high hangar ceiling, damaging not only the roof but also causing the first UFO casualty, namely itself, for it was blown to bits. After this "success" Schauberger's experiments received "Vordringlichkeitsstufe" — high priority and he was given adequate funds and facilities as well as help. His aides included Czechoslovakian engineers who worked at the concentration camp af Mauthausen on some parts of the Schauberger flyinq saucers. It is largely through these people that the story leaked out. There is a further witness to all this, he is a Diplom-Wirtschaftsfachmann (Economist) named Hermann Klass from Muhlheim a.d. Ruhr who wrote extensively about his wartime involvement in the UFO development in the "Bergische Wochenpost" a regional paper in his area. We reproduce here a few of his photo copies which date back as far as 1941.

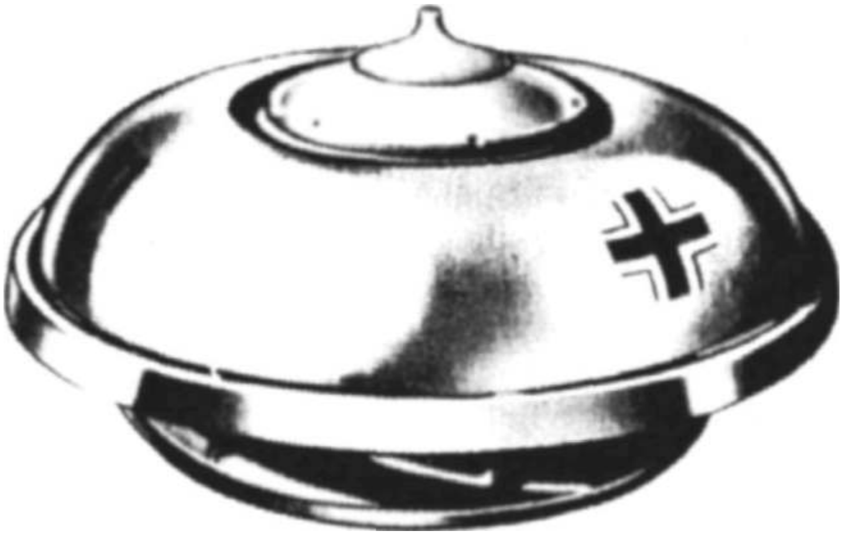

These are the famous smokeless, soundless, Schauberger Models. Note similarity to real U.F.O. shown in Photos

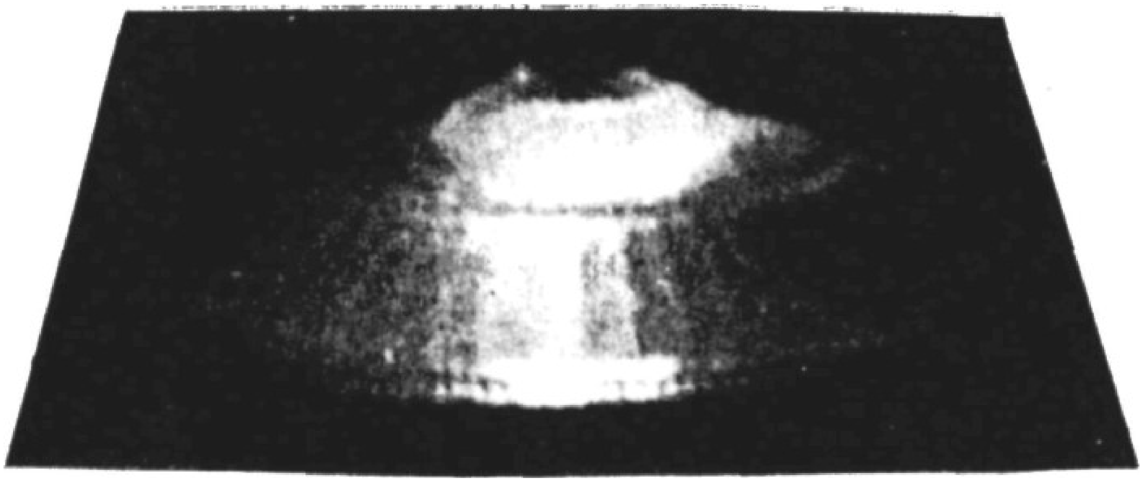

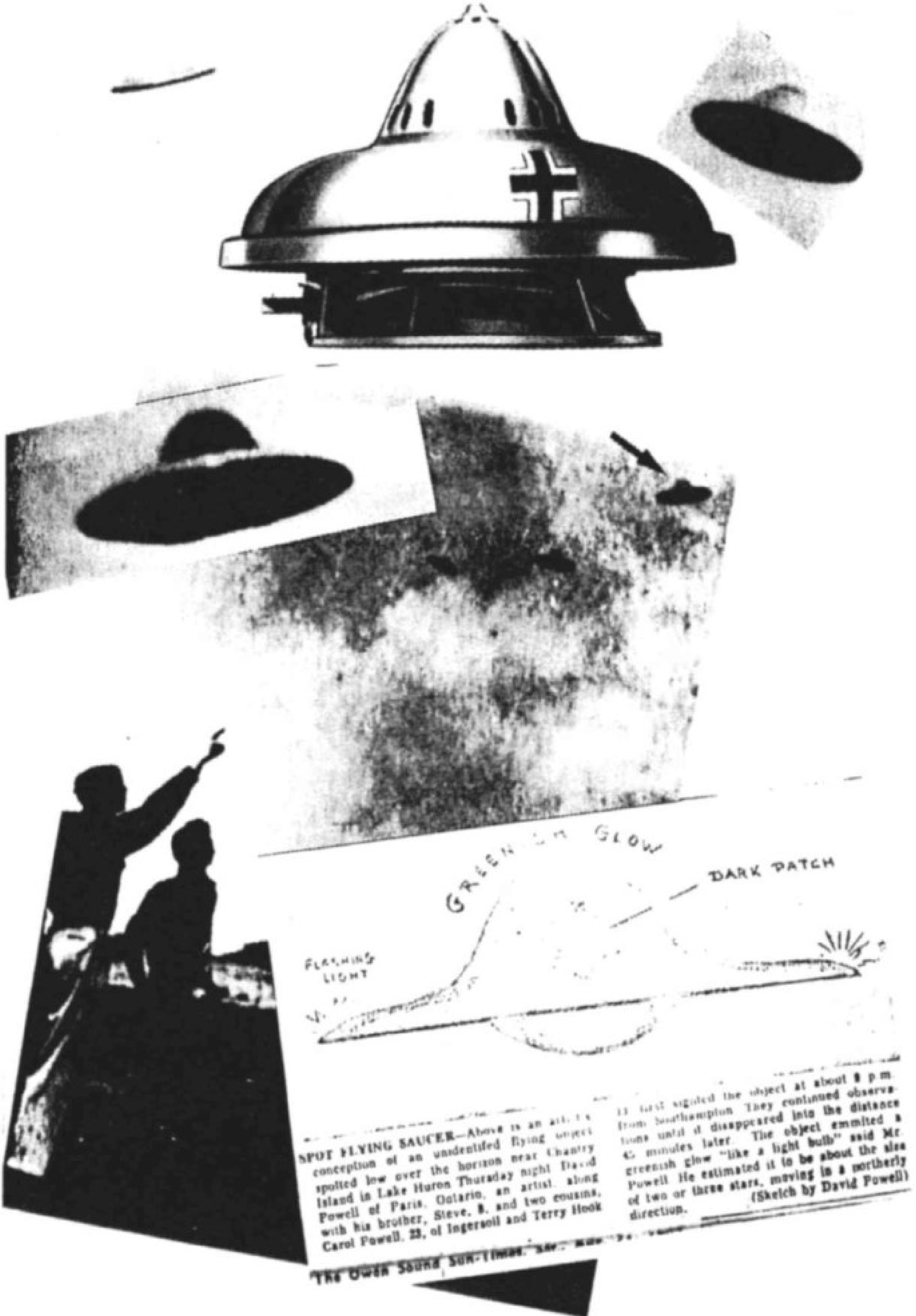

SPOT FLYING SAUCER—Above is an artist's conception of an unidentifed flying object spotted low over the horizon near Chantry Island in Lake Huron Thursday night David Powell of Paris, Ontario, an artist, along with his brother, Steve, 8, and two cousins, Carol Powell, 23, of Ingersoll and Terry Hook first sighted the object at about 8 p.m. from Southampton. They continued observations until it disappeared into the distance 45 minutes later. The object emmited a greenish glow "like a light bulb" said Mr Powell. He estimated it to be about the size of two or three stars, moving in a northerly direction. (Sketch by David Powell)

The Owen Sound Sun-Times, Sat., [illegible]

Photographed by Dean Margan Red Bud, III. 1950

Hermann Klaas knew Victor Schauberger personally and transported U.F.O. parts from Mauthausen to Vienna and most likely to the factory named Kertl which is mentioned in the book “Flying Saucers over South Africa” written by Sievers. The director of this Viennese firm complained once to Klass about the fantastic speed and silent take-off of Schauberger’s invention which had caused the hole in the roof — earlier reported.

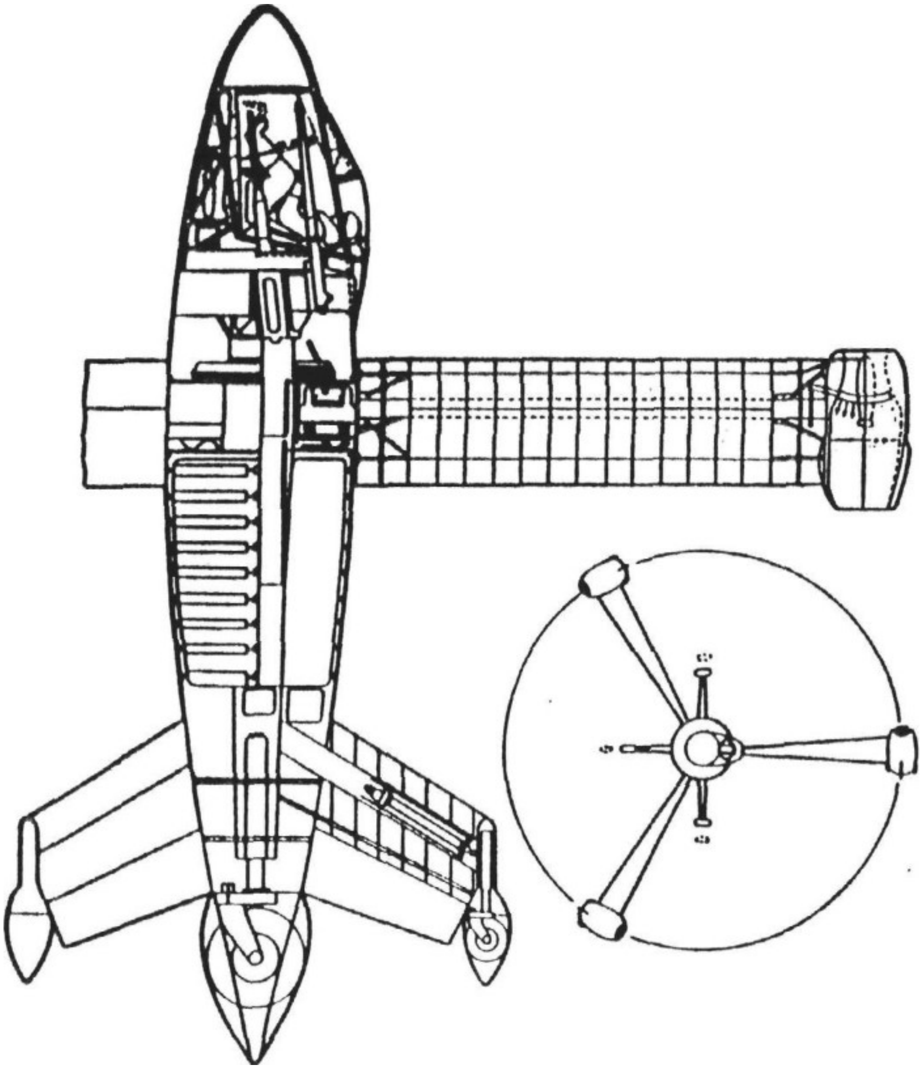

The “Verlikalzugschraube” principle as well as tillable rotating jets in wing tips incorporated in unusual “plan”. Many elements were used in German Flying Saucers. Note: Pilot’s seating arrangement.

Let us now examine each saucer in detail. We leave the original German descriptions and add English translations on the engineering drawings.

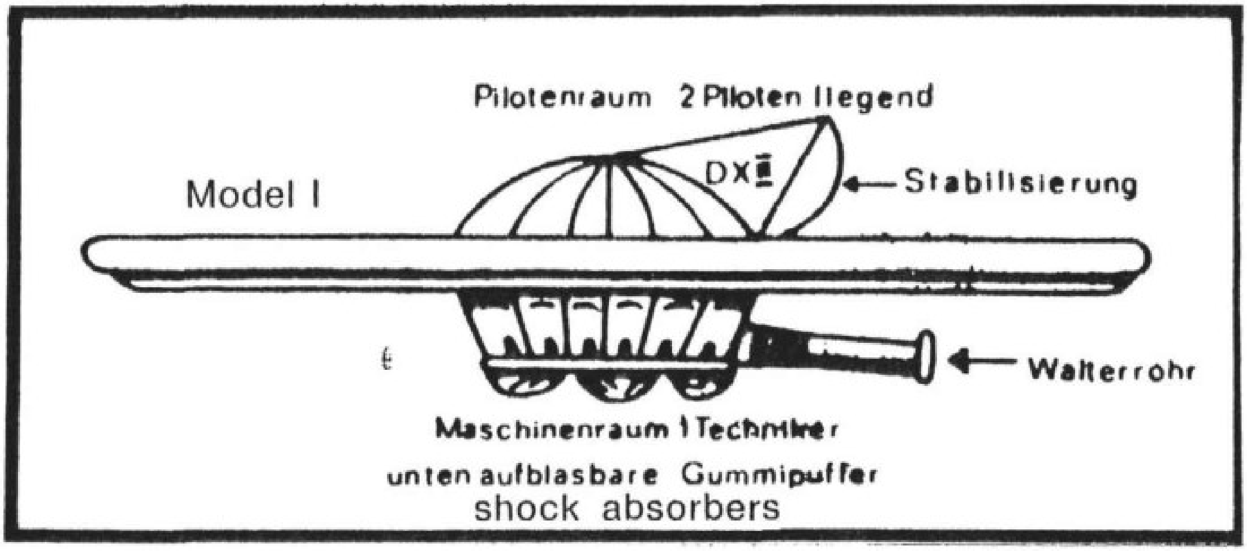
Pilotenraum 2 Piloten liegend
Model I
DXII
Stabilisierung
Walterrohr
Maschinenraum 1 Techniker
unten aufblasbare Gummipuffer
shock absorbers

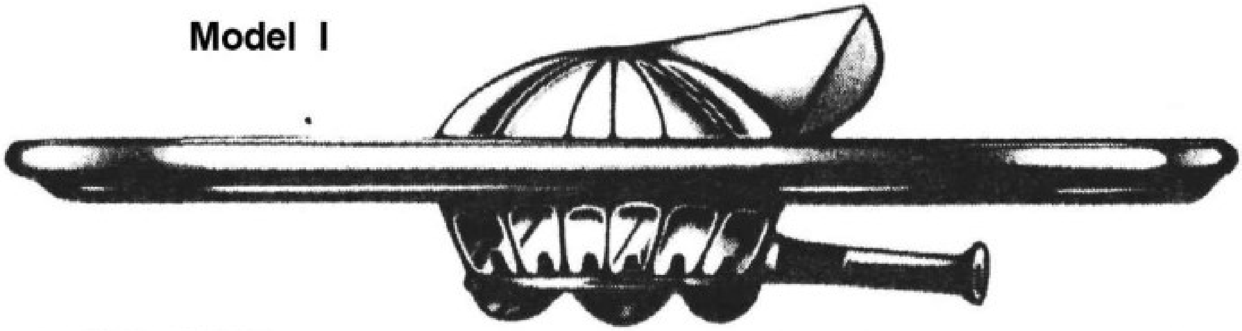

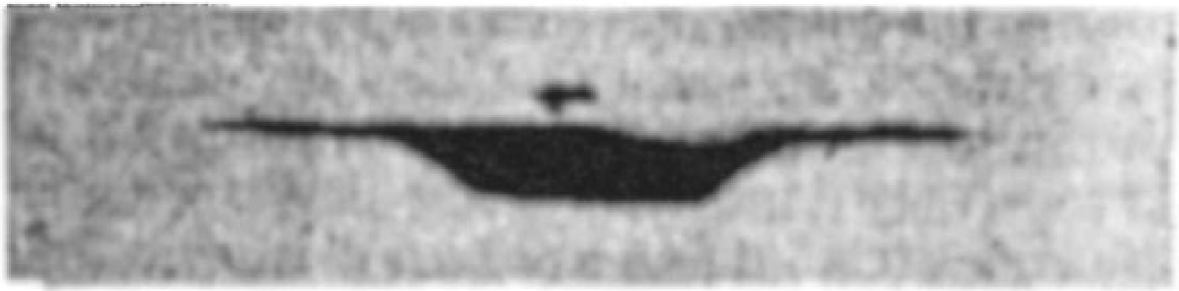

1969: A single object in Goias, Brazil.

1973: In the Rimac valley near Lima, Peru.

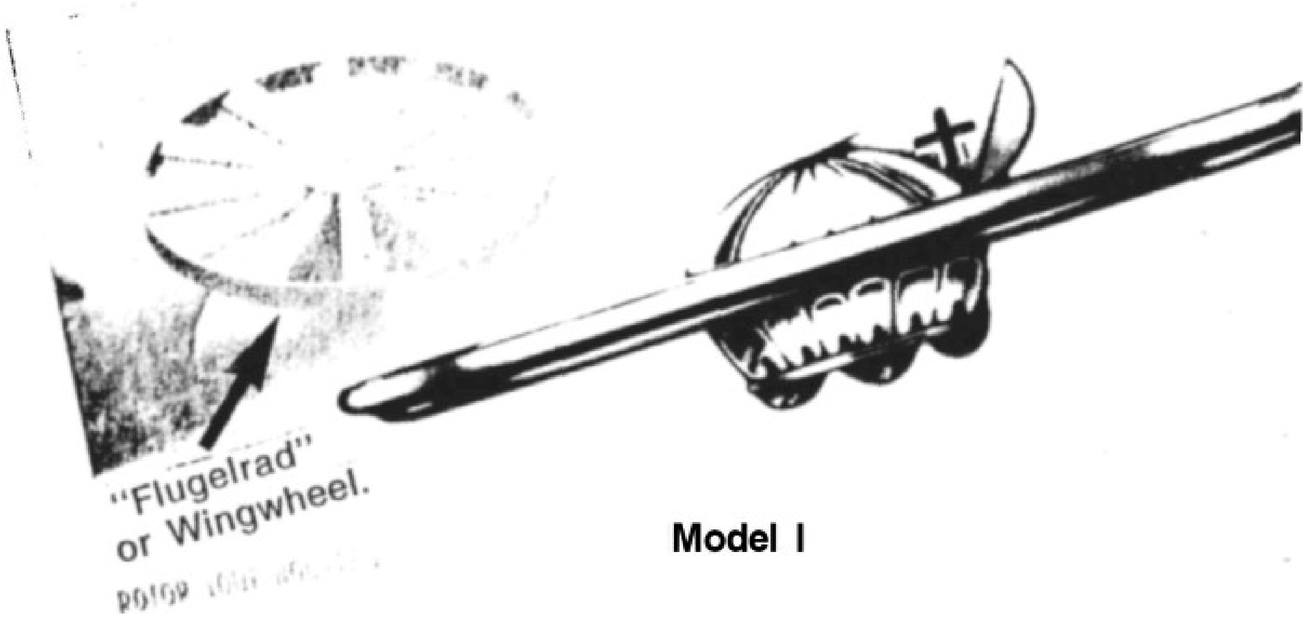
"Flugelrad" or Wingwheel.

Model I

This prototype was first test-flown in 1941-42; it is also the world's first vertical takeoff flying vehicle. It has similar flight characteristics as the Schauberger models but it was less stable. The wings which issued from the centre of the craft like spokes towards the outer rim, were tillable. The Germans called that "Flugelrad" or Wingwheel. This caused the designers immense problems because the smallest imbalance caused the wingwheel to vibrate and this vibration increased at high speeds and was the cause on many occasions of wrecked machines. Perhaps the best comparison is to the tire of a car that is not properly balanced or is unevenly worn. Since the r.p.m.'s were so utterly fantastic, the problems faced by the designers can be easily appreciated even by the layman. Whilst car wheel balancing can be corrected by adding lead slugs to the rims of the wheels, German UFO scientists could employ no such crude remedy and so it was repeatedly "back to the drawing board" and it was absolute perfect workmanship which finally eradicated the problem. This model was test-flown with the standard German Rocketmotor then in use and called the Walterrohr. Because of its tremendous speeds, fuel consumption was very high and there was not sufficient tank space on board. At first, the pilot sat in a reclining contour seat as in an airplane. Later the position was changed to lying flat. Provision was made for one flight mechanic whose compartment can be seen below the "Flugelrad". The jet engines on all conventionally propelled flying saucers were manouverable or tillable in order to achieve what is called the "Coandaeffeckt" which results in the vertical take-off of the craft. Many improvements were naturally made in the course of the experiments and flight trials.

More German hardware

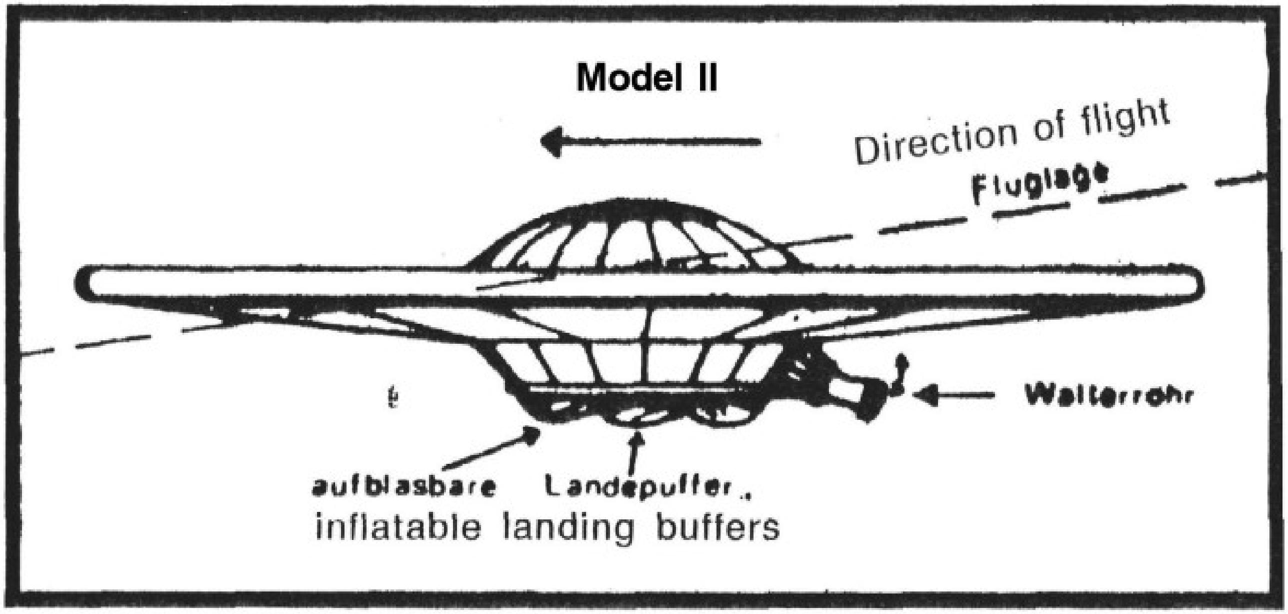
Model II
Direction of flight
Fluglage
Walterrohr
aufblasbare Landepuffer.,
inflatable landing buffers

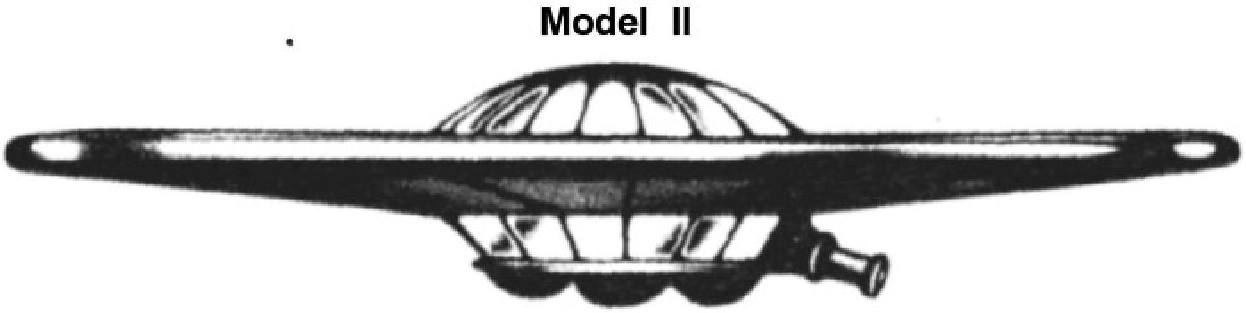

These photographs are identical to the German craft, even including the “inflatable” airbags or cushions that were lowered when coming in for a landing (photos from Australia)

Another U.F.O., closely resembling the German type.

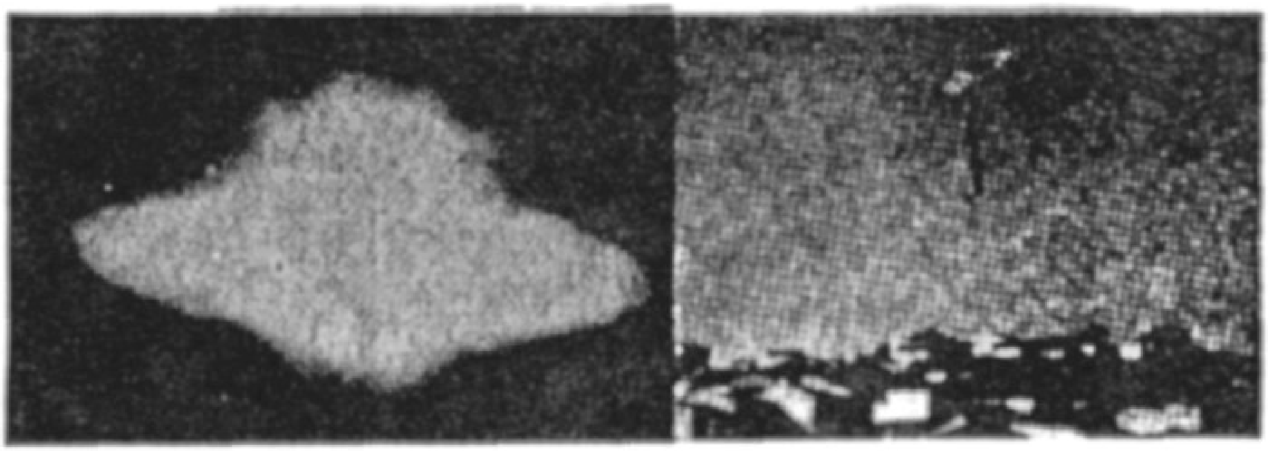

German spacecraft?

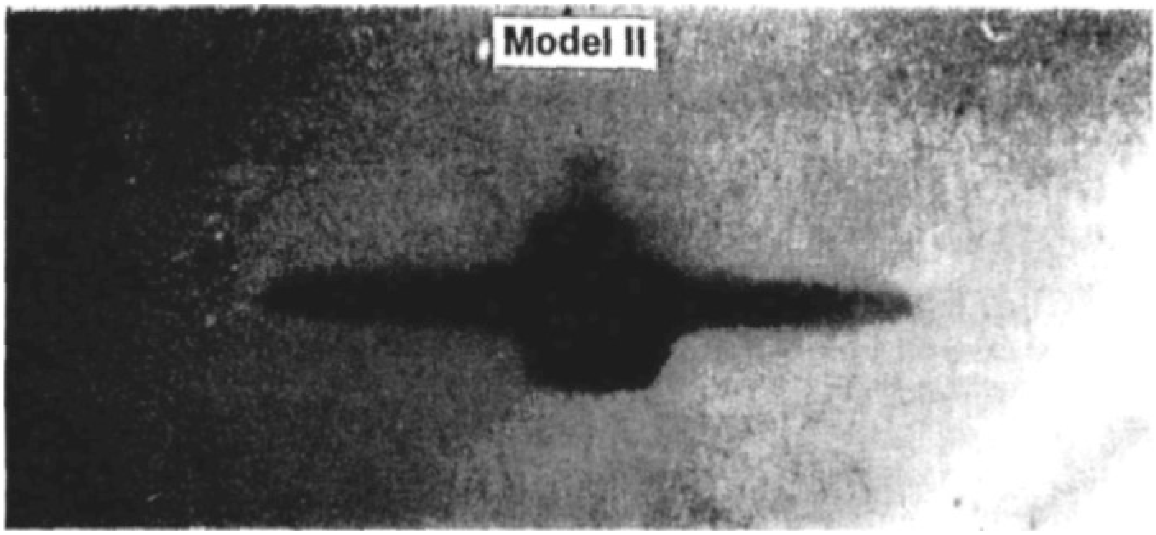

Photographed by Jose Martinez Carrasco June 1969. Serra Dourada, Brazil

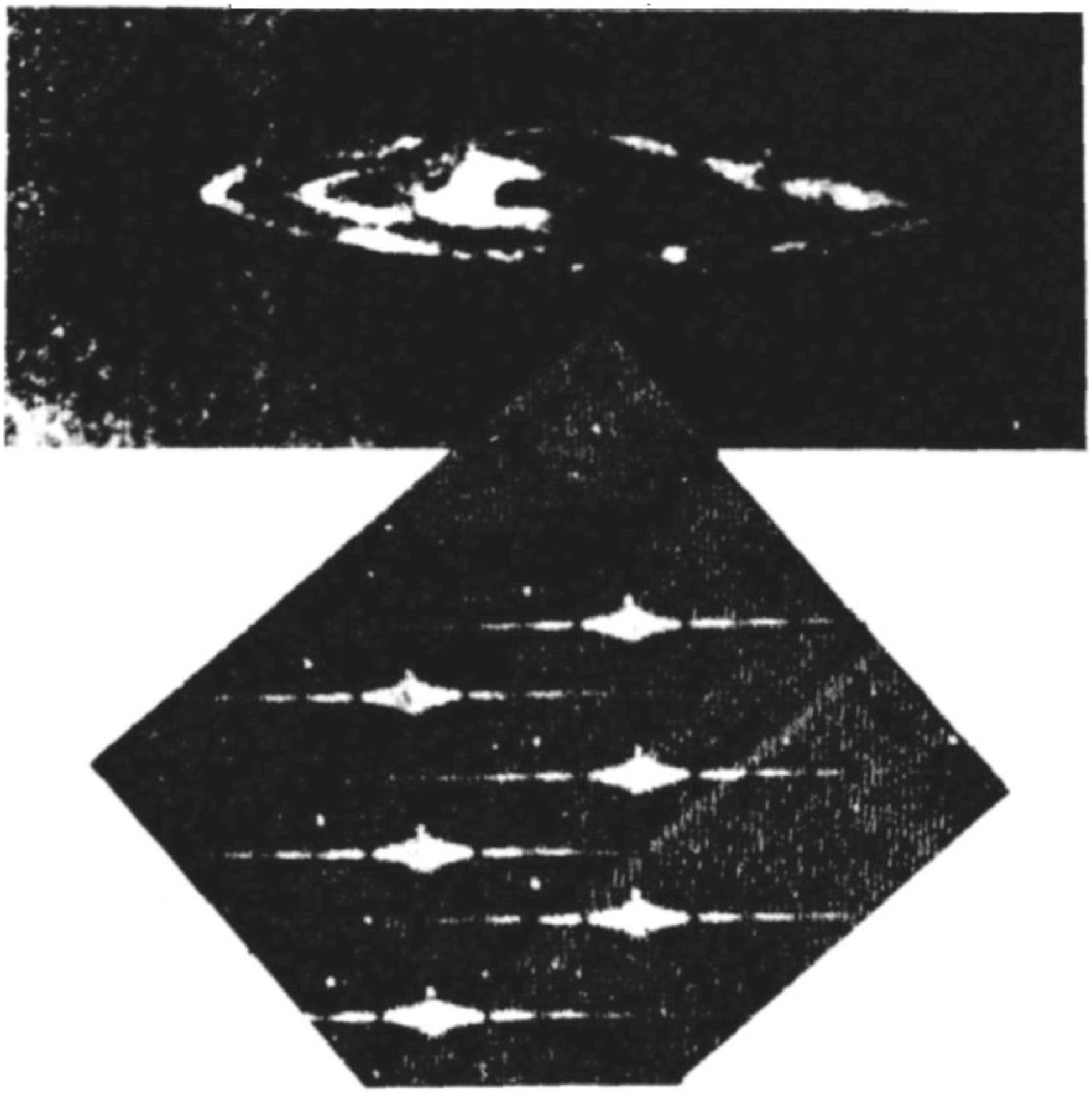

This picture of six flying objects was taken near Vienna in Austria. The National Aeronautics and Space Administration said: "We have no conception of what the phenomenon is."

Model II

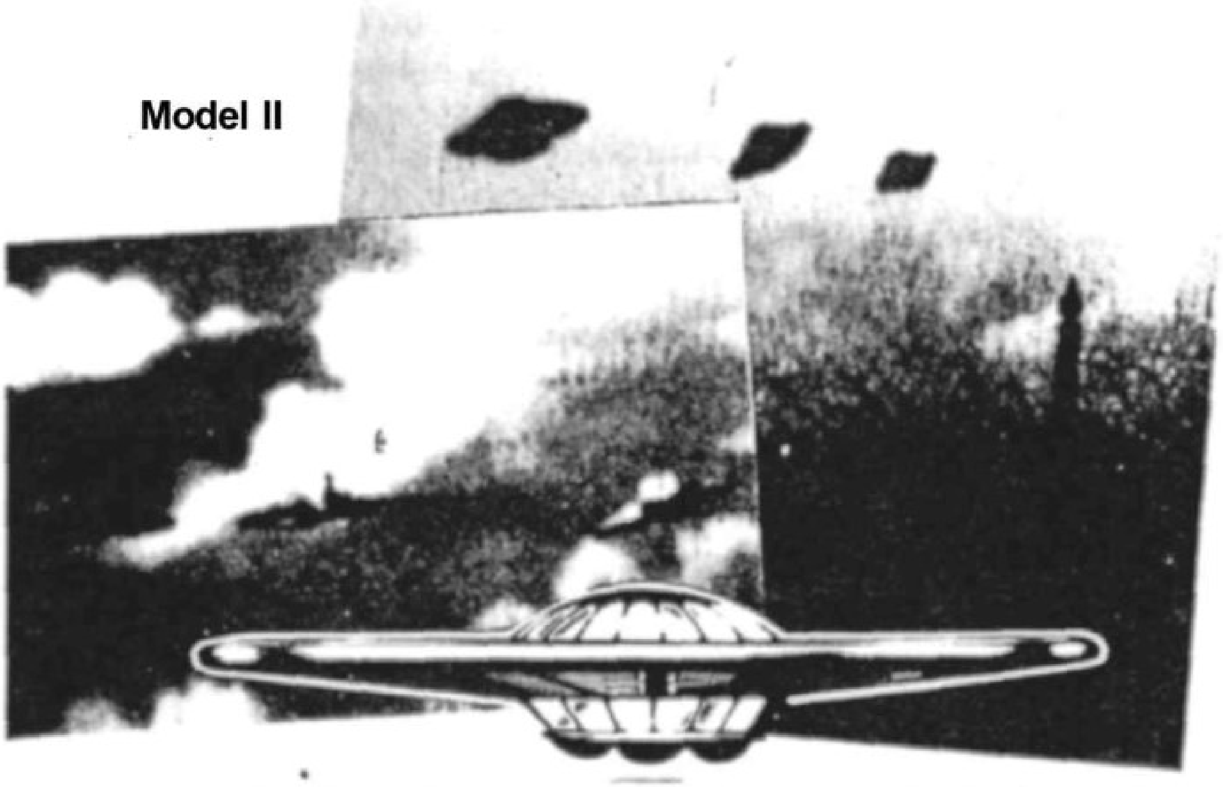

GIANT PRINTS PRESSED INTO EARTH AT SCENE WHERE BOY CLAIMS SAUCER LANDED

The Galt Saucer of
July 30th, 1957

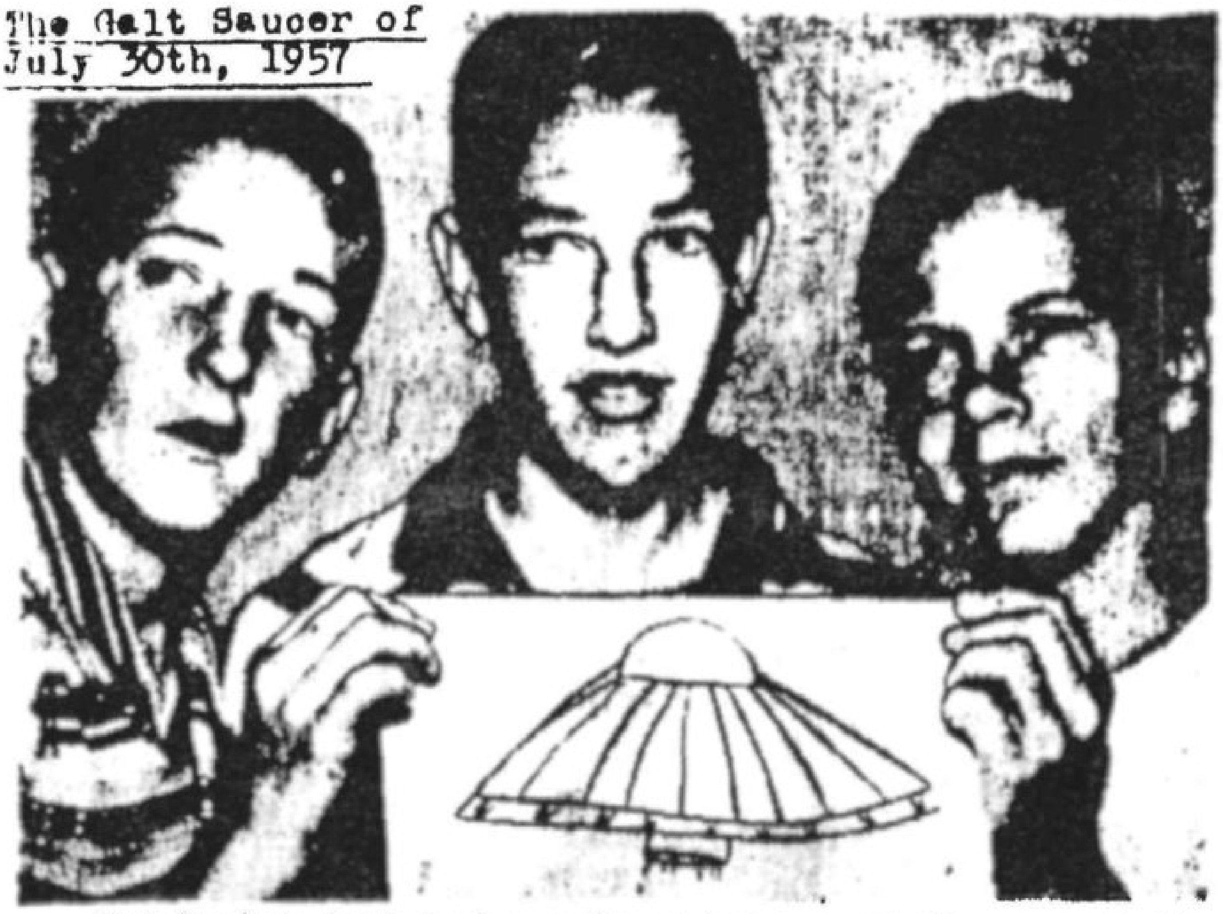

Jack Stephens (centre) who says he watched a round silver-covered object hover for 40 minutes before landing, shows a sketch of what he saw to chums Jerry Pawelko (left) and Danny Oliver. He said the saucer was about 35 feet in

Model II embodies some of these changes. The size has been increased to accomodate two pilots lying in a prone position and the engine compartment as well as fuel carrying capacity have been increased. This model also used an airplane-like rudder steering-assist mechanism for stabilization. Speeds of between 1000-2000 km/hour were reportedly achieved. The problem of wheel balancing had been solved and the wingscrew or wing propeller arrangement worked to satisfaction. The German terms coined at the time were “Vertikalzugschraube” or vertical pull propeller. As soon as the desired height was reached the propeller blades were adjusted to a very flat angle and now the pull up propeller became the “Tragschraube” or carrying propeller — very similar to the principle of the helicopter.

Mentioned in other pages of this book

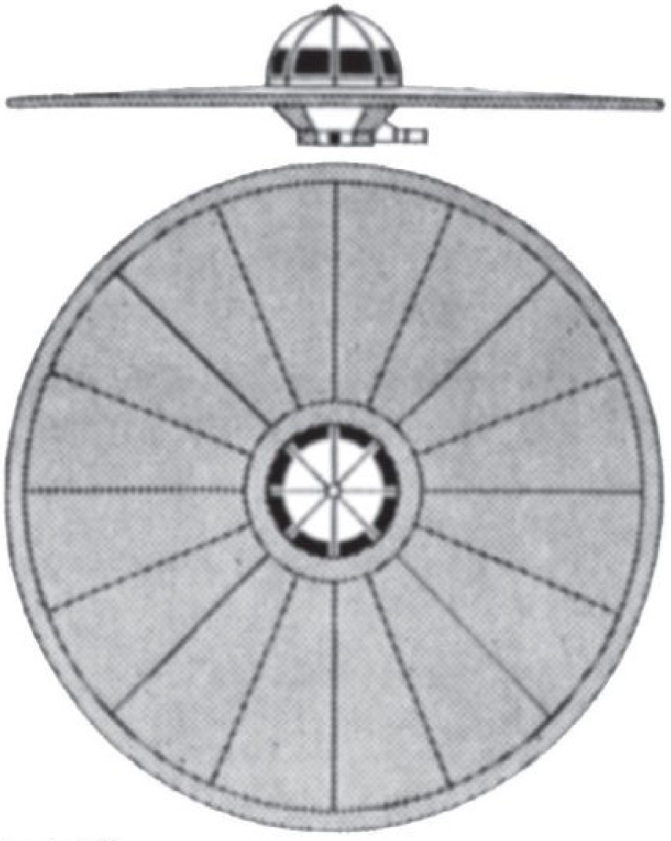

Model II

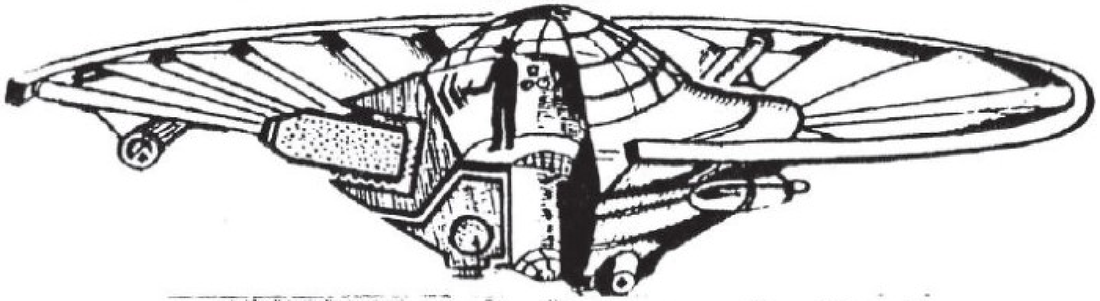

Fred Regan's description of the saucer he claims to have been in is very similar to a design by Schriever.

Model III

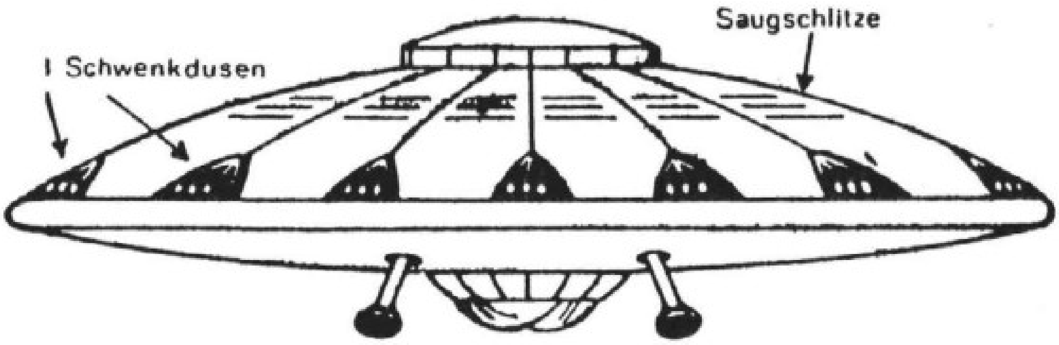
I Schwenkdusen
Saugschlitze

Ballenzo – Schriever – Miethe – Diskus"
ᵉStart - und Landebeine, unten aufblasbare
Gummipuffer, ein- und ausfahrbar

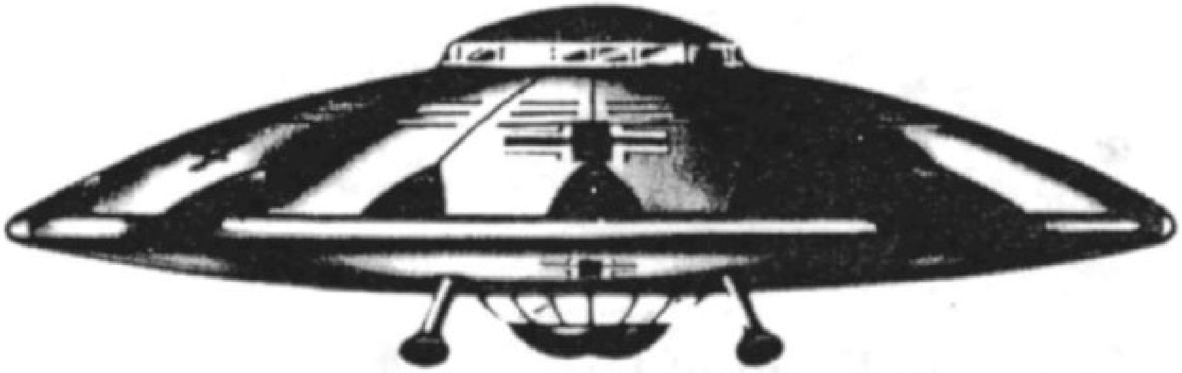

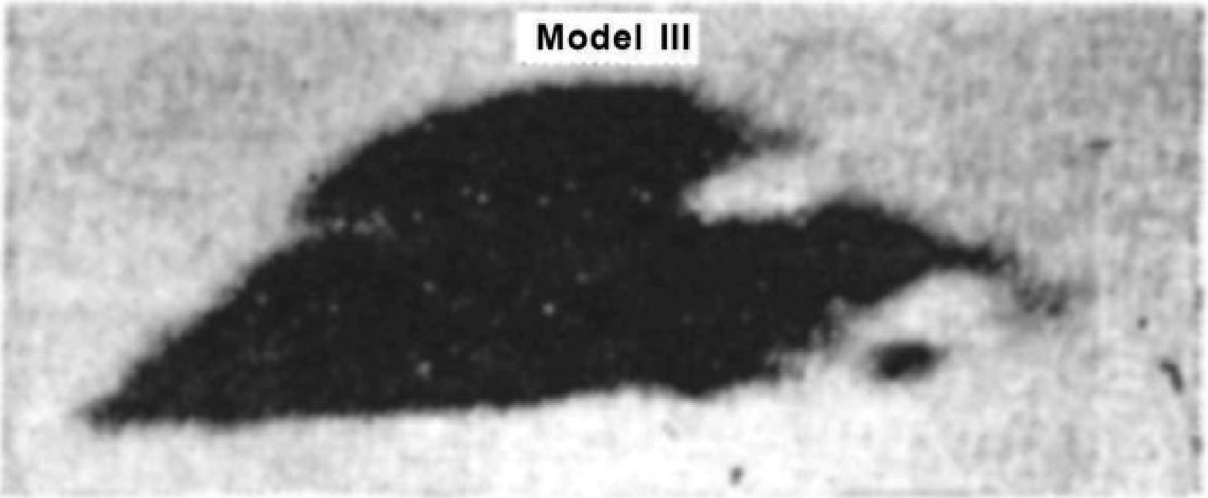

1951: Over a mountain near Riverside, Calif.

Saucer over Rouen, France

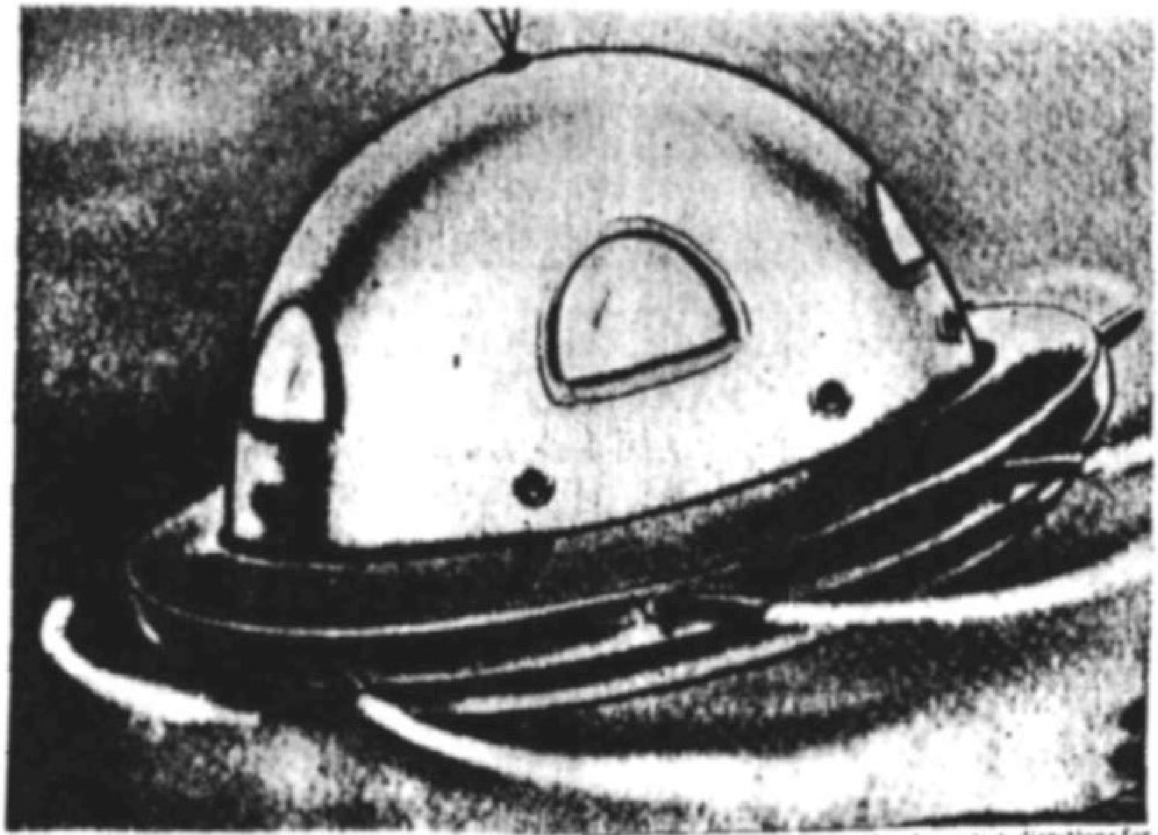

THIS IS IT [illegible] flying saucer which Her[illegible] Long [illegible], Pa., contends he saw [illegible] feet from his car. He's shown (right, below) giving [illegible] artist, directions for sketch. Air Guard officers [illegible] Reading discount recent saucer sightings in that area. (AP Wirephotos)

'Saucer' in Front of Car

TURNING OUT SKETCH OF A "SAUCER"

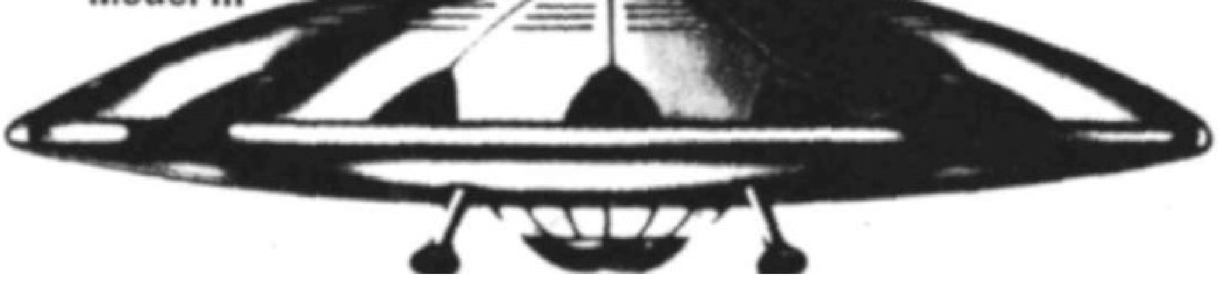

Model III

The previous few pages and some of the following ones show quite clearly the trend in U.F.O. development. Significantly some of the best photos, originated in South America and Europe. They span over 30 years.

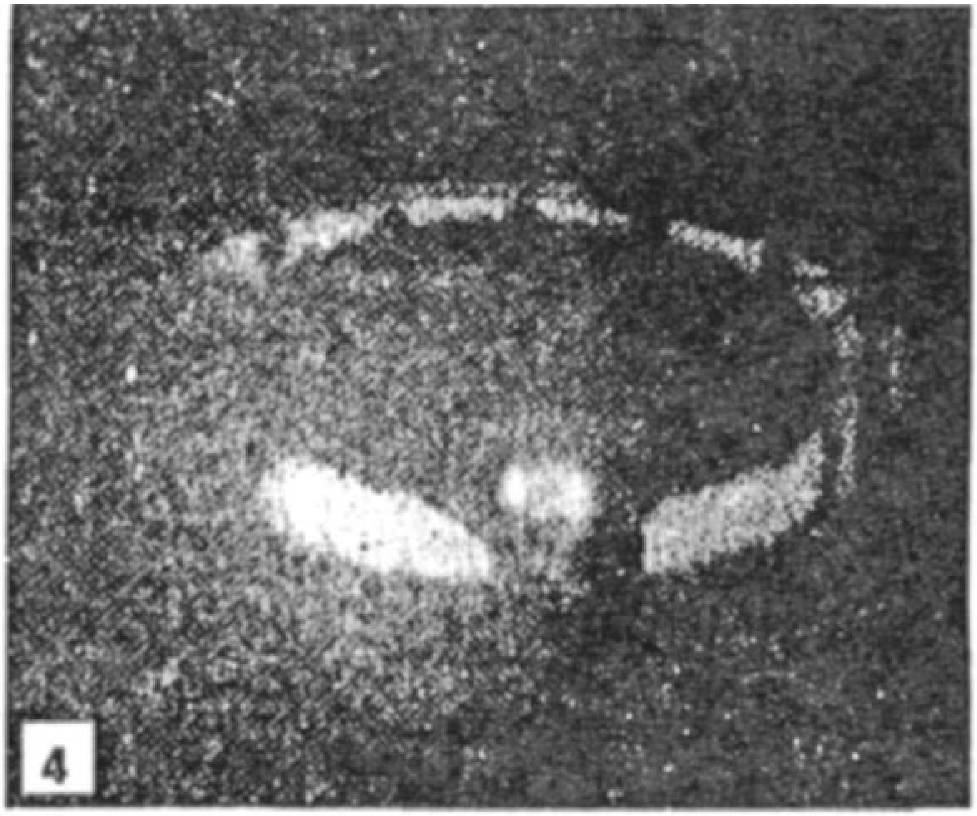

This disc-like craft was photographed over Alberton, South Australia. Experts say it could not be an aircraft or a satelite.

"Sightings" Boom in Mexico

A REAL FLYING SAUCER, at least that's the claim, shows clearly in this photograph taken by a businessman during an otherwise routine trip in Northern Mexico. It was one of dozens of such sightings during a 2-month period.

Illuminated cupola of German Model II or III?

AF INTELLIGENCE MANUAL SHOWS FLYING DISCS

[illegible]

U.S. Intelligence Manual talking of saucers

Pilot Chases 50-F

Saucer

The recent pursuit of a "S by a Utah pilot, fully a other pilots and airport being investigated by AF. The chase occurred about near Utah Central Airpor City.

Two National Air Guar scrambled after the private a report. But the stran eluded them in a swift ma

The disc-shaped UFO wa by Waldo J. Harris, whe he taxied out for a take-of toward the object, which w at 6500-7000 feet, he close three miles.

"It appeared to be a Harris later reported. " like a pair of saucers, one side down on the other. was light grey, and it w 50 feet across and four There were no visible

showing the Swastika

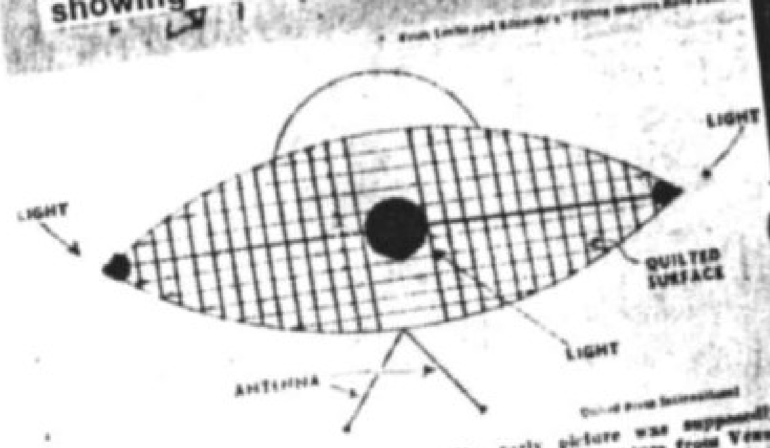

United Press International

PICTURE OF A SAUCER: The top diagram, from a book published in 1953, shows a spacecraft that bears a close resemblance to the composite drawing (below) of an unidentified flying object which many people reported seeing last week in Michigan.

The early picture was supposedly produced by a creature from Venus who visited saucer buff George Adamski in California, took away Adamski's negative of his spacecraft, and returned with this substitute photo with an undecoded message.

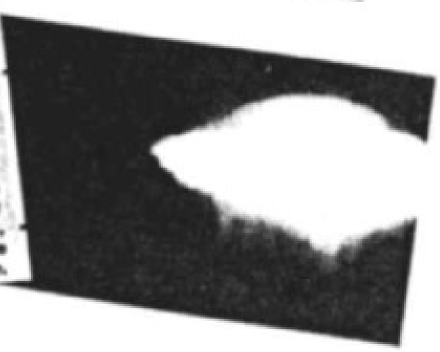

Photographed by Henk Beverloo, 5th April, 1959. Rotterdam

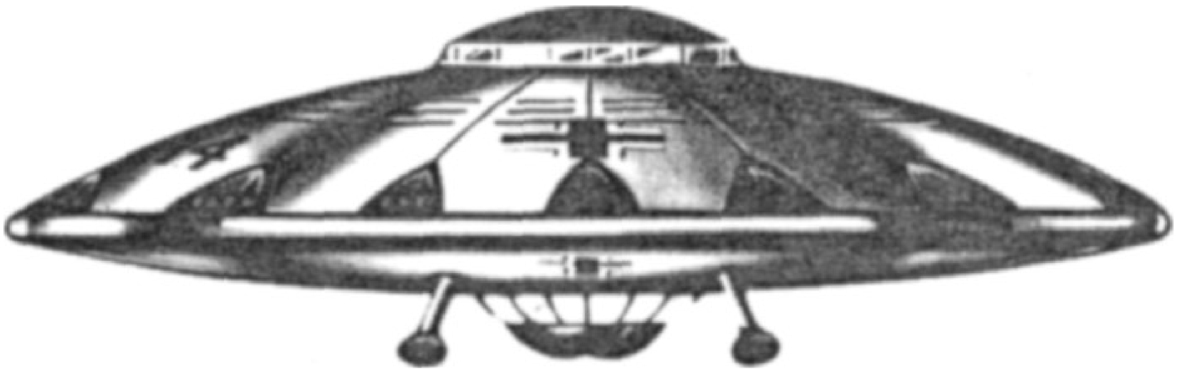

Model III last known German prototype

Model III This is the final model; some experts refer to it as the Bellonzo-Schriever-Miethe Diskus. This version was produced in various sizes, some as large as 135 feet and even 225 feet in diameter. Actual speeds recorded were over 2000 km/hour. Conventional rocket motor speeds of up to 4000 km/hour were anticipated. As is clearly visible, this model already incorporated a very aerodynamic shape and for the first time also had retractable stilt-like shock absorbers. The craft is ringed by a sophisticated arrangement of tiltable directional jets which guaranteed not only a tremendously increased manoeuverability but also increased speed and better fuel utilization. The top of the craft was ringed by suction openings which had a dual purpose; a) to cool the engine and b) to create a near vacuum into which the craft could glide or ascend into with much less effort. The flight mechanic or flight technicians' compartment was retractable during high speed flying and was only lowered during slow flying or upon landing.

In this advanced, conventional, design can clearly be seen all the basic ingredients of just about every subsequent UFO type which has been sighted and photographed around the world. Undoubtedly, these models were also powered by Viktor Schauberger's flameless and smokeless implosion motors. However, to date, no German technicians who ever worked on these advanced machines have volunteered their knowledge.

We reproduce here many photographs and drawings of UFO vehicles which have been sighted and photographed and any interested UFO investogator can readily compare them with the Model III German flying saucer.

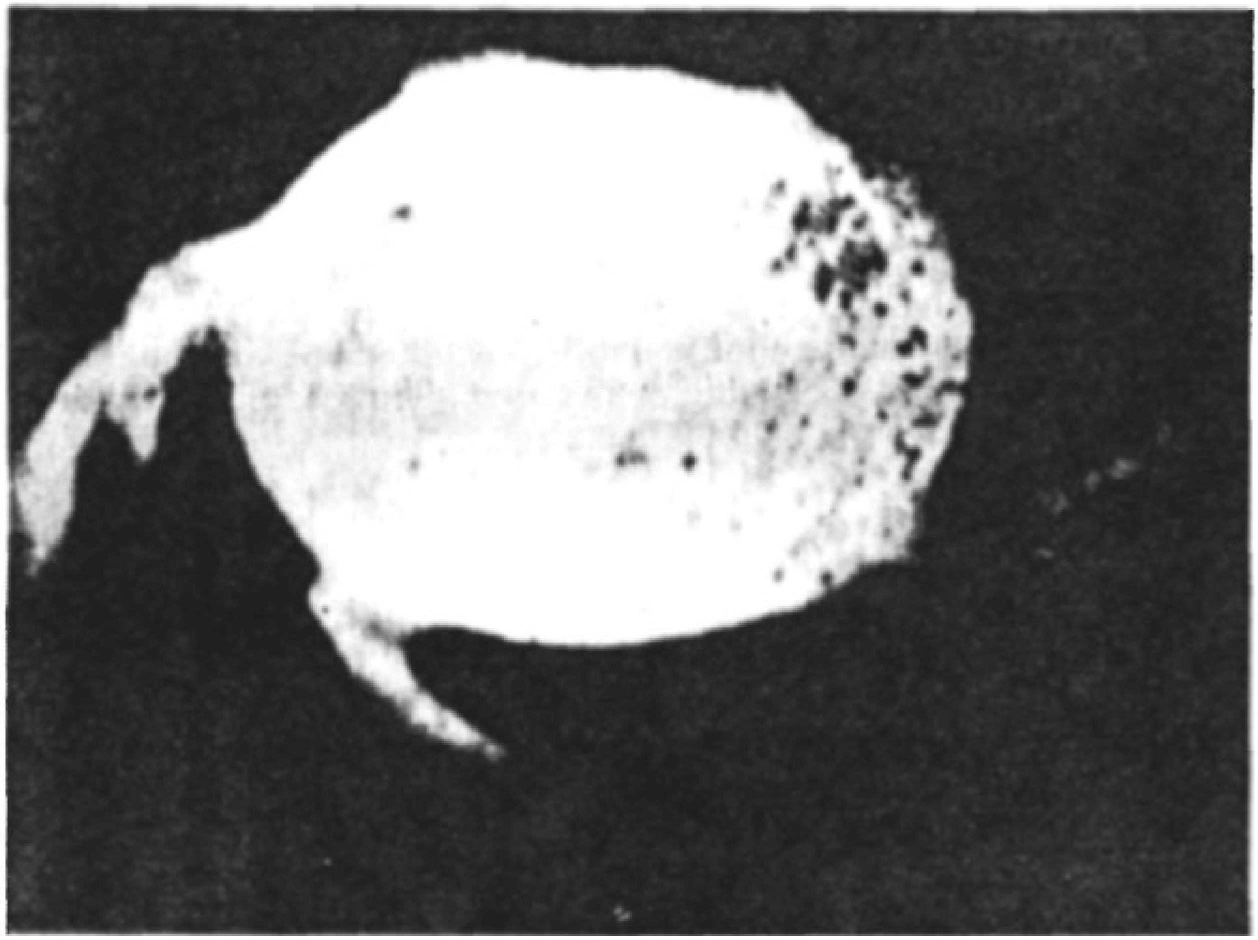

Photographed by Enrique Hausemann-Muller, April 24th, 1950. Spain “Wirbelrad” effect; caused by jet emissions on outer rim, clearly visible.

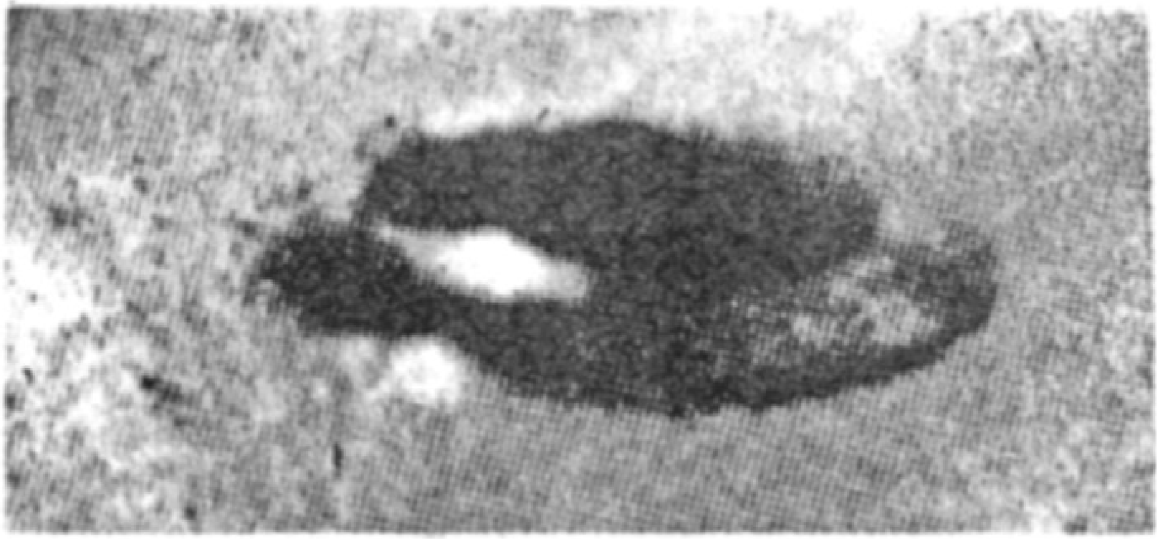

Rouen,France

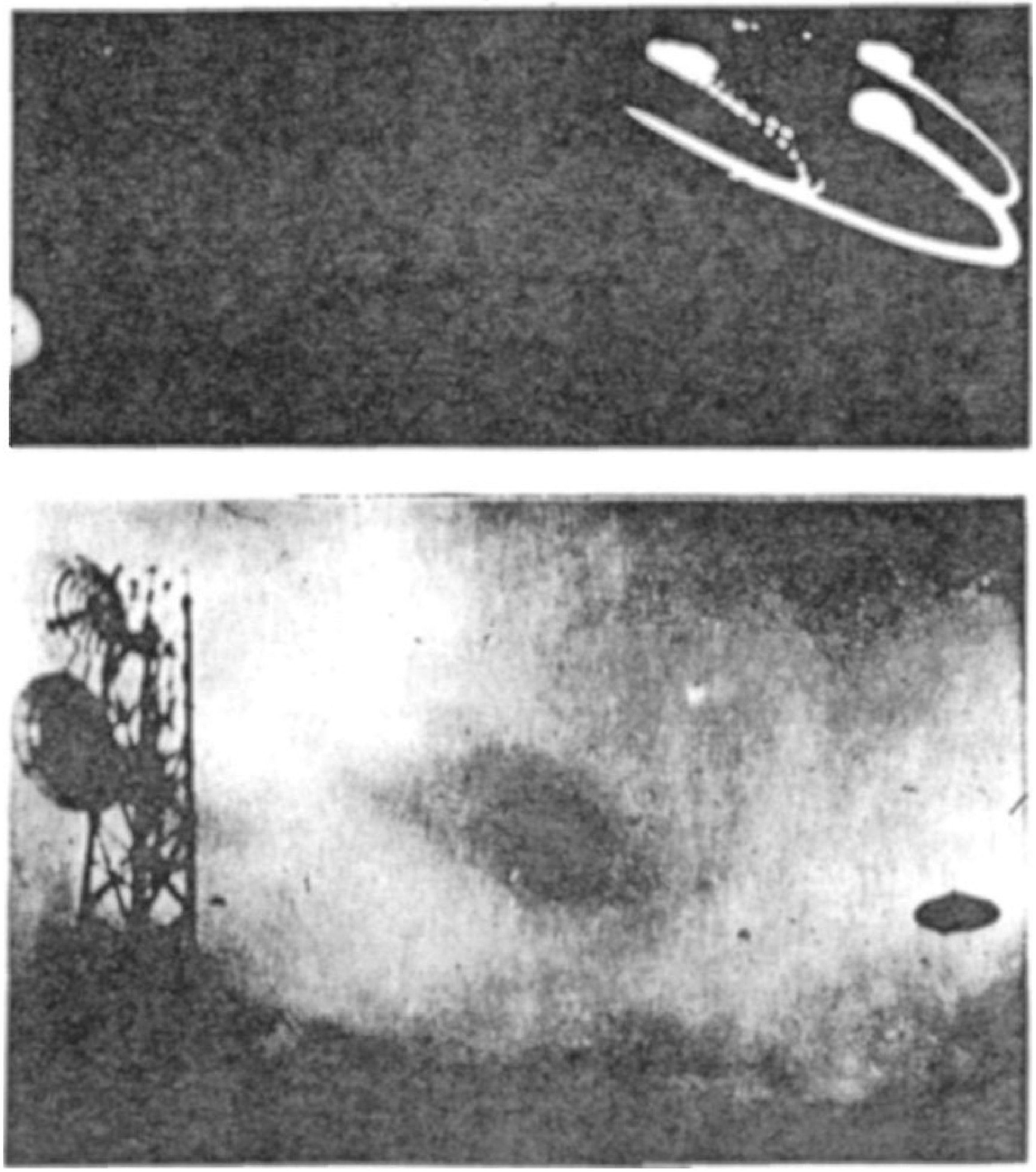

Pescara, Italy. 1957

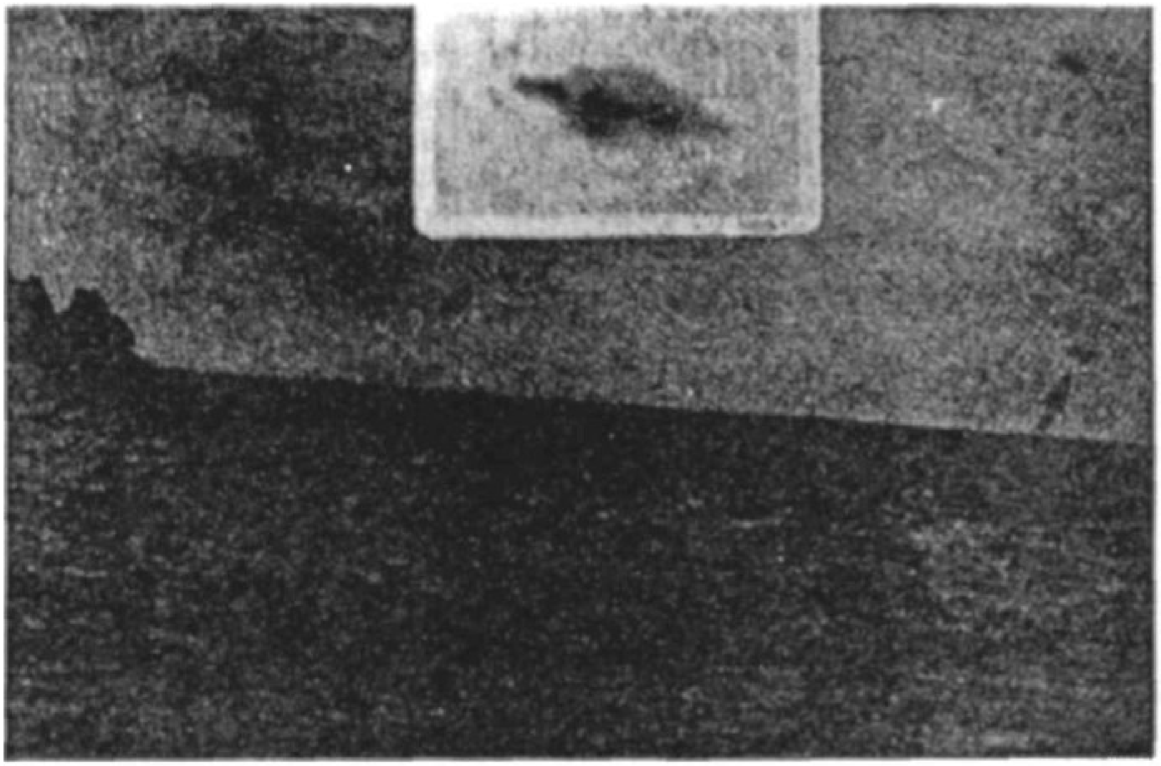

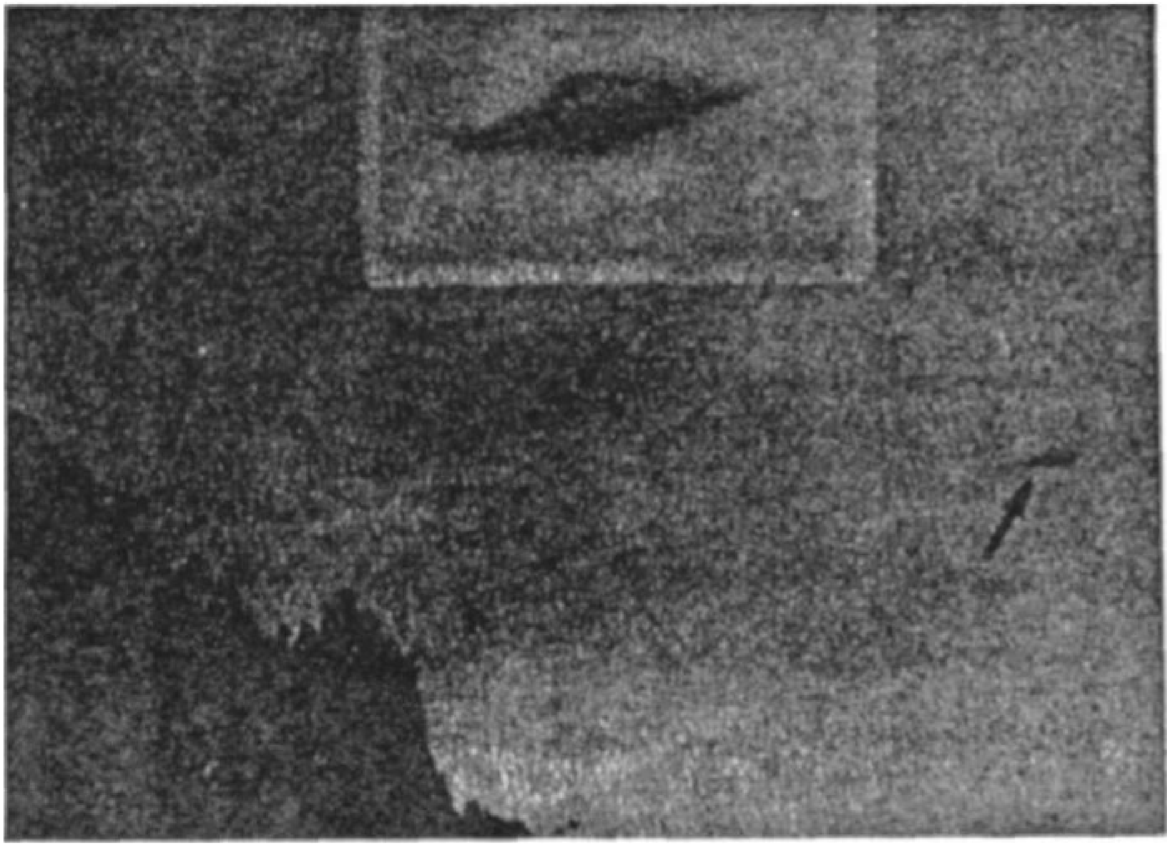

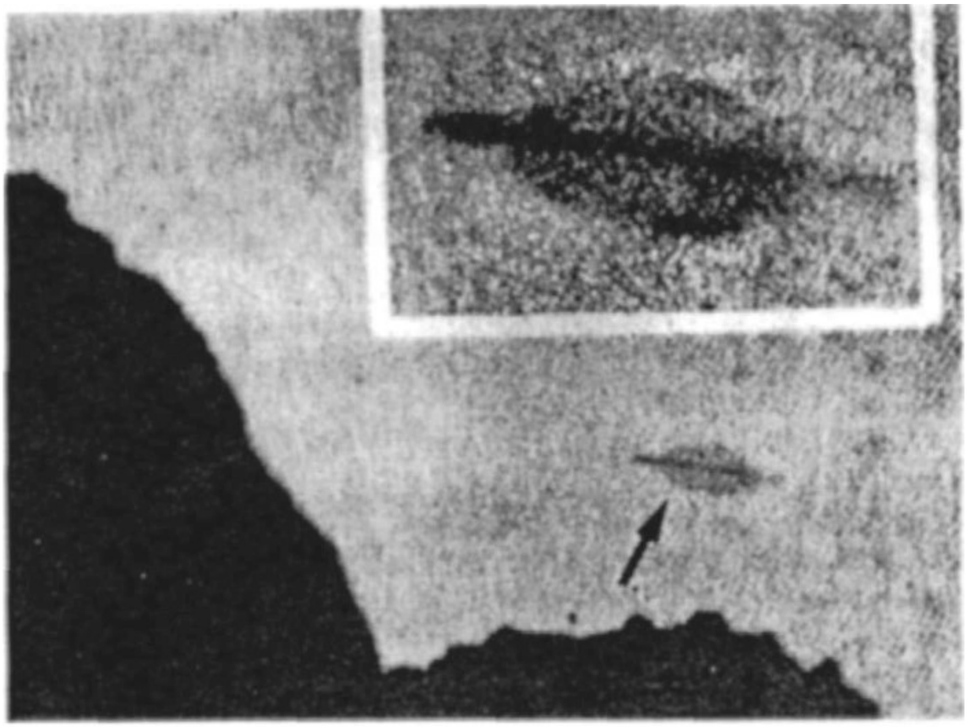

These four photographs by Almiro Barauna, Jan. 16th, 1958. Island of Trinidade, Brazil.

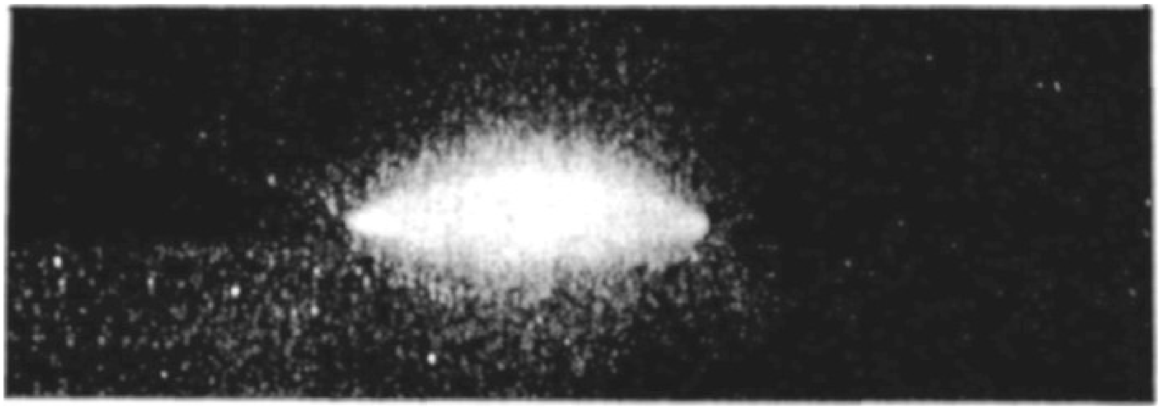

Sub-U.F.O. surfacing near pole.

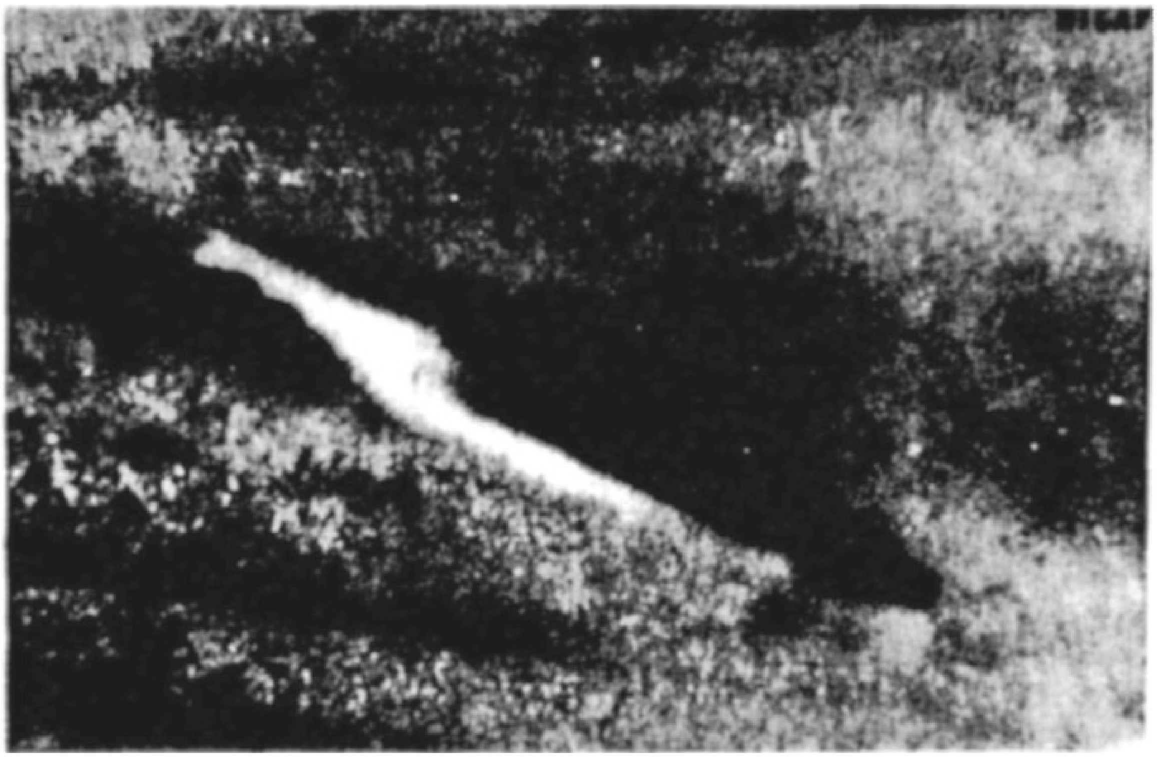

NICAP Photo of U.F.O. observing jet test flight

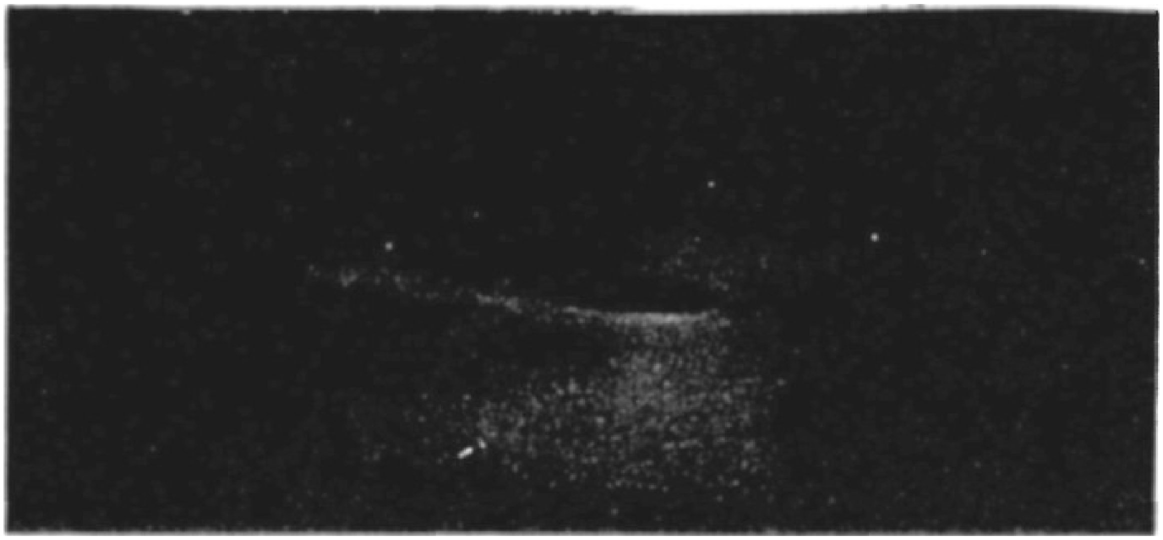

Photographed by Gunther Wildemann, 23rd November, 1966.
Benidorm, Spain.

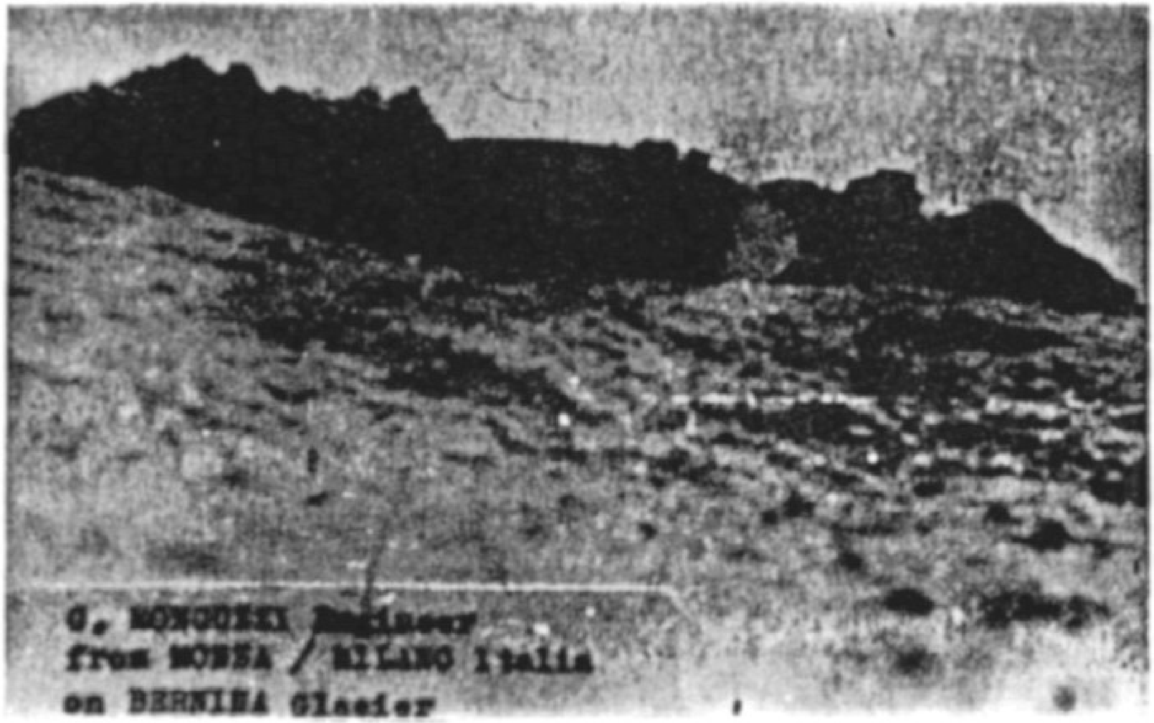

G. MONGUZZI Engineer
from MONZA / MILANO Italia
on BERNINA Glacier

Photographed by Dick Blevens, August 30th, 1964. Seville, Ohio

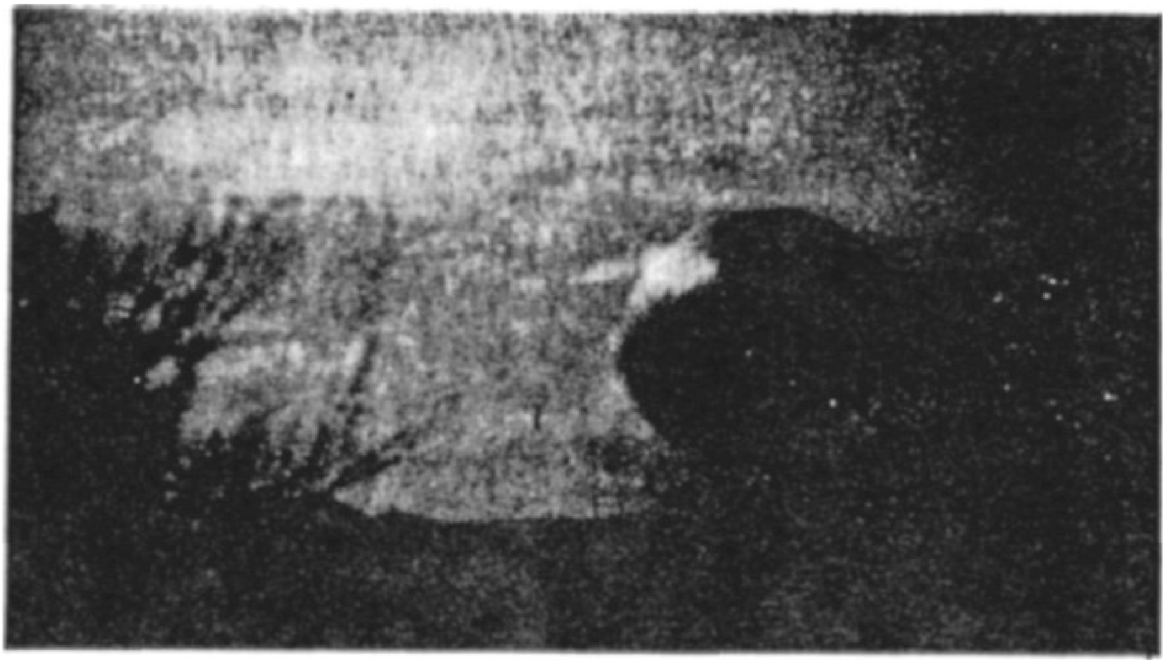

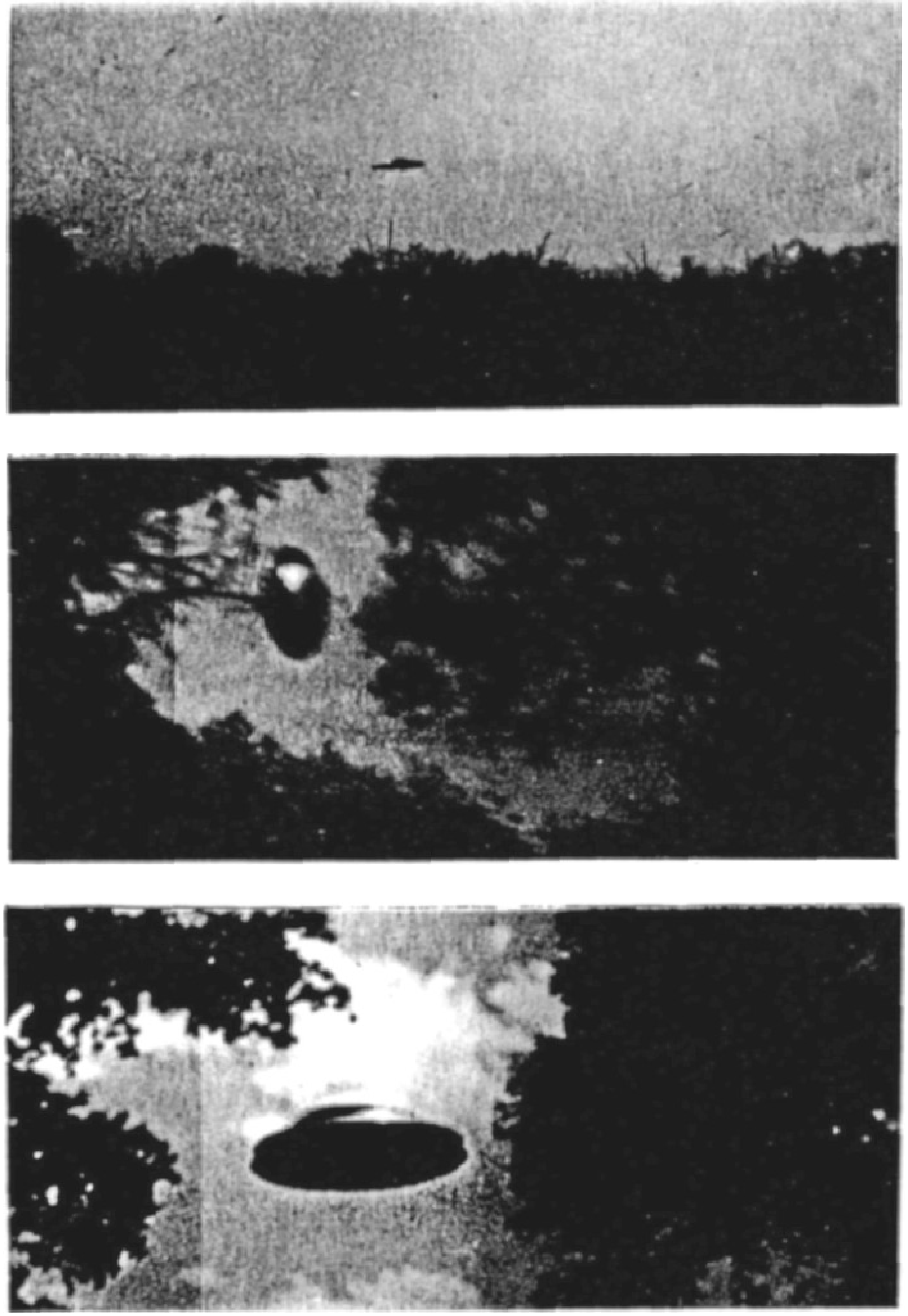

Copyrighted coloured postcard of these photographs available from:
Ventla Verlag, Postfach 17185

Wiesbaden, Schierstein, Germany

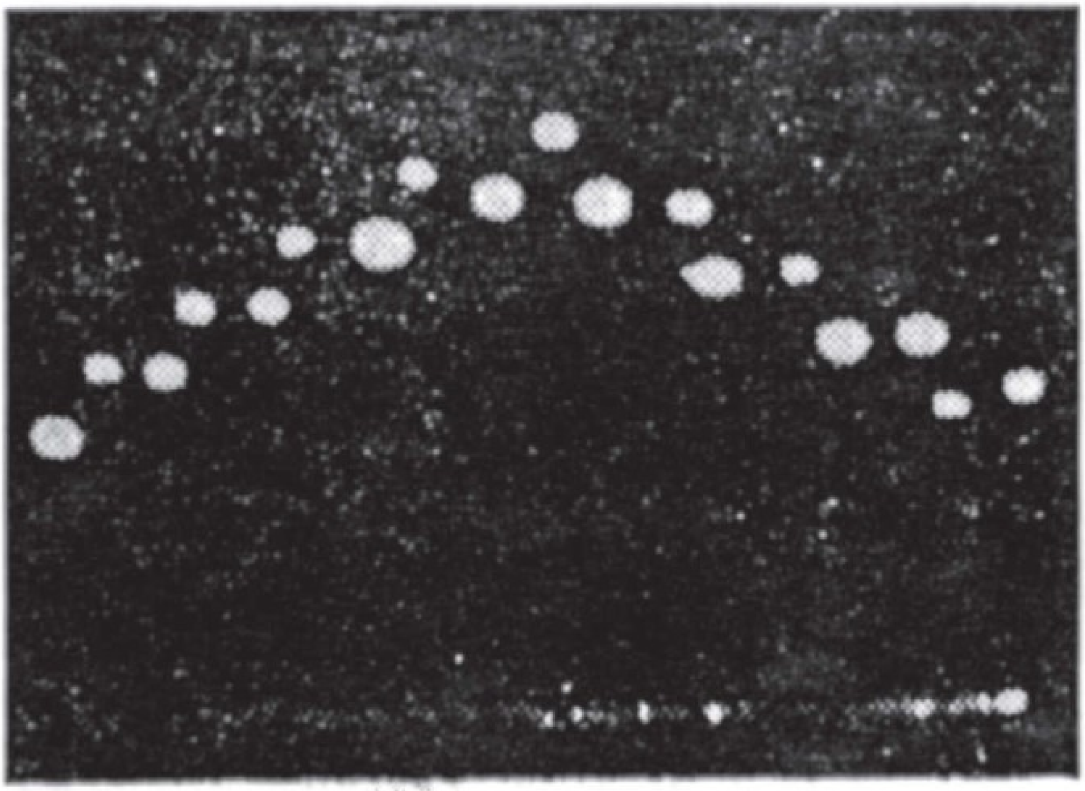

1951: Formation flight over Lubbock, Tex.

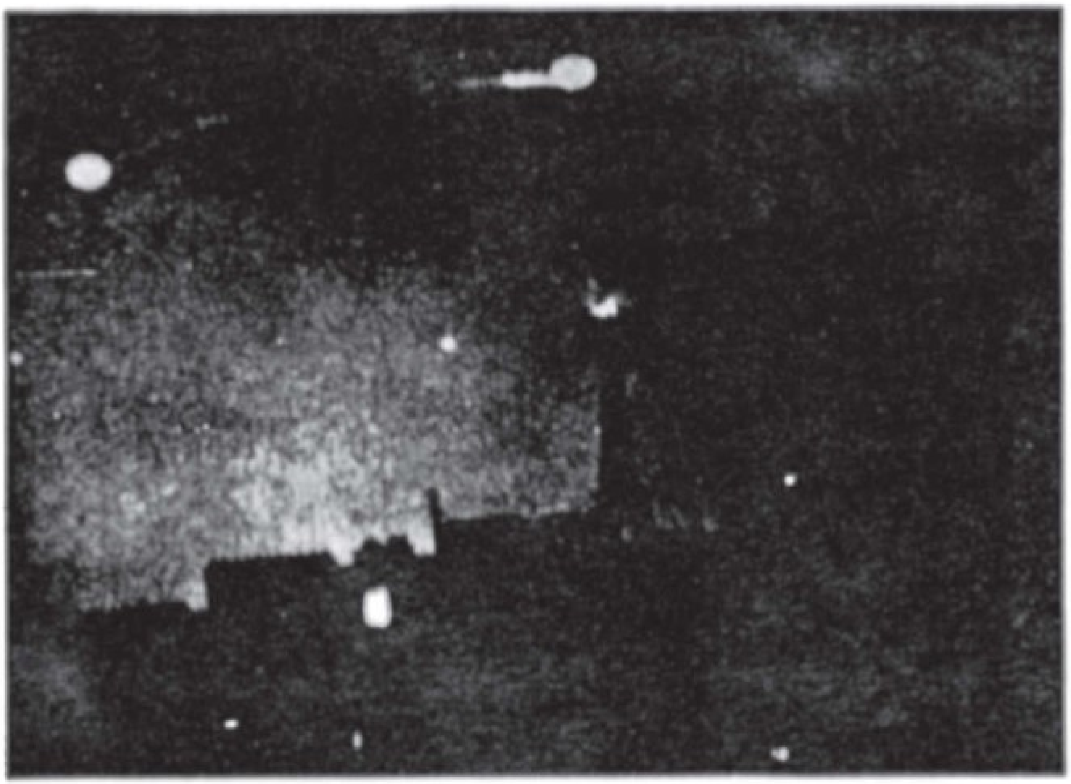

Photographed by Paul Paulin, 29th Dec. 1953. Paris, France

Please Post in Radio Room and on the Bridge

FOR EARLY WARNING IN DEFENSE OF THE NORTH AMERICAN CONTINENT

MERINT

RADIOTELEGRAPH PROCEDURE

1. WHAT TO REPORT

Report immediately all airborne and waterborne objects which appear to be HOSTILE, SUSPICIOUS or are UNIDENTIFIED.

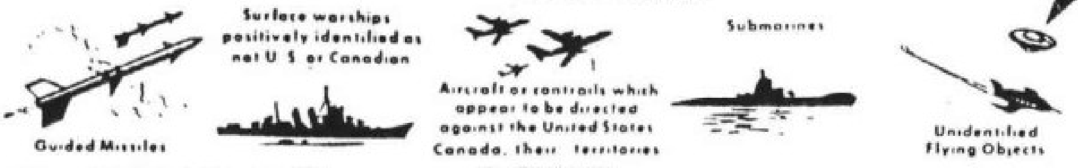
Guided Missiles
Surface warships positively identified as not U. S. or Canadian
Aircraft or contrails which appear to be directed against the United States Canada, their territories or possessions
Submarines
Unidentified Flying Objects

2. SEND TO ANY

United States Naval Radio Station
Canadian Naval Radio Station
United States Coast Guard Radio Station
United States Commercial Radiotelegraph Station
Canadian Department of Transport Coastal Station

Receiving station will relay to military destination

3. HOW TO SEND

* MERINT MERINT MERINT (Coastal Station) DE (Own Signal Letters) K (Own Signal Letters) DE (Coastal Station) K
EMERGENCY (For U. S. or Canadian Naval or Coast Guard Radio Stations) or
RAPID US GOVT COLLECT (For U. S. Commercial Coastal Stations) or
RUSH COLLECT (For Canadian Dept of Transport Coastal Stations)

4. SEND TO ONE DESTINATION

ComAsDeForLant Norva
ComWestSeaFron Navy SFran
NavyCharge Halifax
NavyCharge Esquimalt

Select destination nearest to your receiving station

5. SEND THIS KIND OF MESSAGE

Content—	Example—
a. Begin your message with the word "MERINT"	MERINT
b. Give the reporting ship's name and signal letters	SS TOLOA WHDR
c. Describe briefly the objects sighted	TWO UNIDENTIFIED SURFACED SUBMARINES
d. Give ship's position when objects are sighted, also TIME and DATE	5034N 4012W 071430 GMT
e. If objects are airborne, estimate altitude as "low", "medium", "high"	(not applicable)
f. Give direction of travel of sighted objects	HEADING 270 DEGREES
g. Estimate and give speed of sighted objects	15 KNOTS
h. Describe condition of sea and weather	SEA CALM
i. Give other significant information	ELONGATED CONNING TOWERS

6. SEND IMMEDIATELY

a. DO NOT DELAY YOUR REPORT DUE TO LACK OF INFORMATION
b. EVERY EFFORT SHOULD BE MADE TO OBTAIN ACKNOWLEDGMENT FROM RECEIVING STATION THAT MESSAGE HAS BEEN RECEIVED.

* *The International urgency signal* (XXX XXX XXX) may be used as an alternate to clear circuit.

Authorized by Secretary of the Navy

OPNAV 94-P-3B
0420 062 0000

Posters put out by United States Government, Secretary of the Navy, about U.F.O. reporting procedure.

Stephen Derbyshire, England

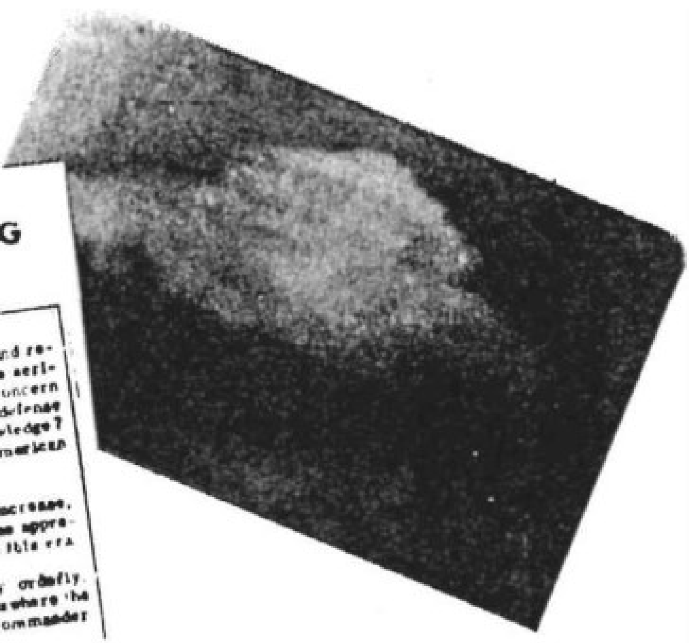

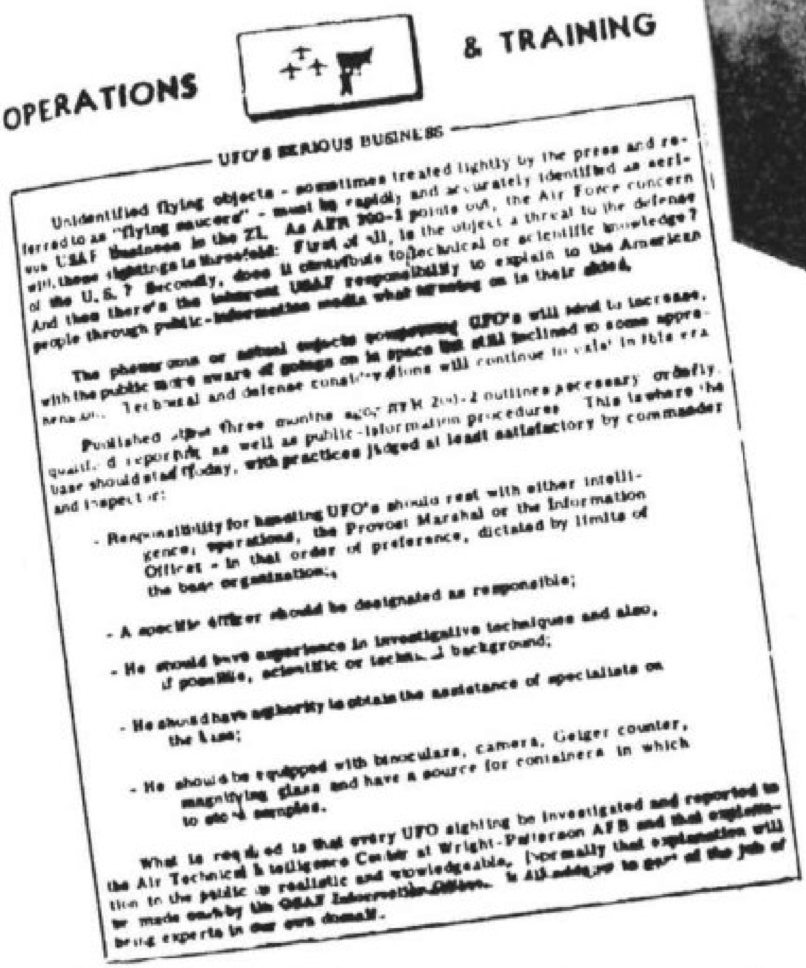

OPERATIONS & TRAINING

UFO'S SERIOUS BUSINESS

Unidentified flying objects - sometimes treated lightly by the press and referred to as "flying saucers" - must be rapidly and accurately identified as serious USAF business in the ZI. As AFR 200-2 points out, the Air Force concern with these sightings is threefold: First of all, is the object a threat to the defense of the U.S.? Secondly, does it contribute to technical or scientific knowledge? And then there's the inherent USAF responsibility to explain to the American people through public-information media what is going on in their skies.

The phenomenons or actual objects comprising UFO's will tend to increase, with the public more aware of goings on in space but still inclined to some apprehension. Technical and defense considerations will continue to exist in this era.

Published about three months ago, AFR 200-2 outlines necessary orderly, qualified reporting as well as public-information procedures. This is where the base should stand today, with practices judged at least satisfactory by commander and inspector:

- Responsibility for handling UFO's should rest with either intelligence, operations, the Provost Marshal or the Information Officer - in that order of preference, dictated by limits of the base organization;
- A specific officer should be designated as responsible;
- He should have experience in investigative techniques and also, if possible, scientific or technical background;
- He should have authority to obtain the assistance of specialists on the base;
- He should be equipped with binoculars, camera, Geiger counter, magnifying glass and have a source for containers in which to store samples.

What is required is that every UFO sighting be investigated and reported to the Air Technical Intelligence Center at Wright-Patterson AFB and that explanation to the public is realistic and knowledgeable. Normally that explanation will be made only by the USAF Information Office. It All adds up to part of the job of being experts in our own domain.

Official U.S. Government poster, recognizing existence of U.F.O.'s and detailed instructions of what to do in case of their appearance.

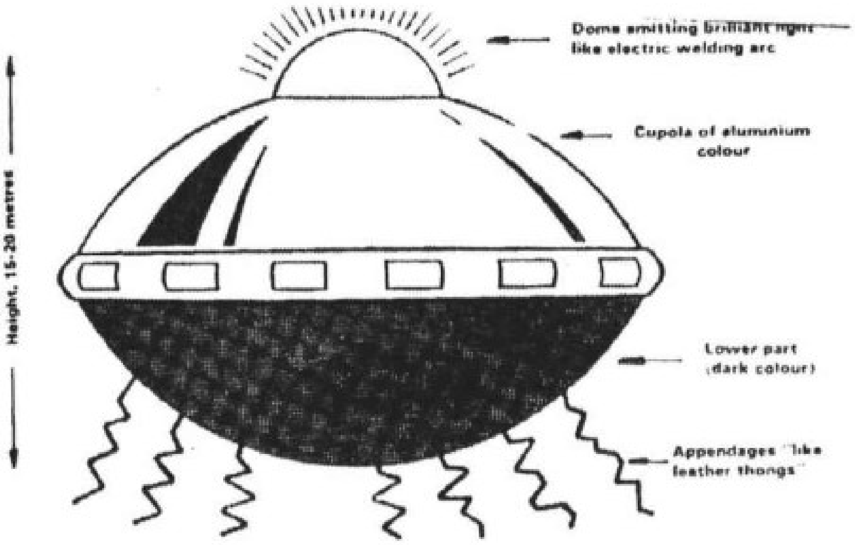
Dome emitting brilliant light like electric welding arc
Cupola of aluminium colour
Height, 15-20 metres
Lower part (dark colour)
Appendages "like leather thongs"

Frequently reported shapes of U.F.O.’s and how they function.

German U.F.O. Base? Flight Control Area?

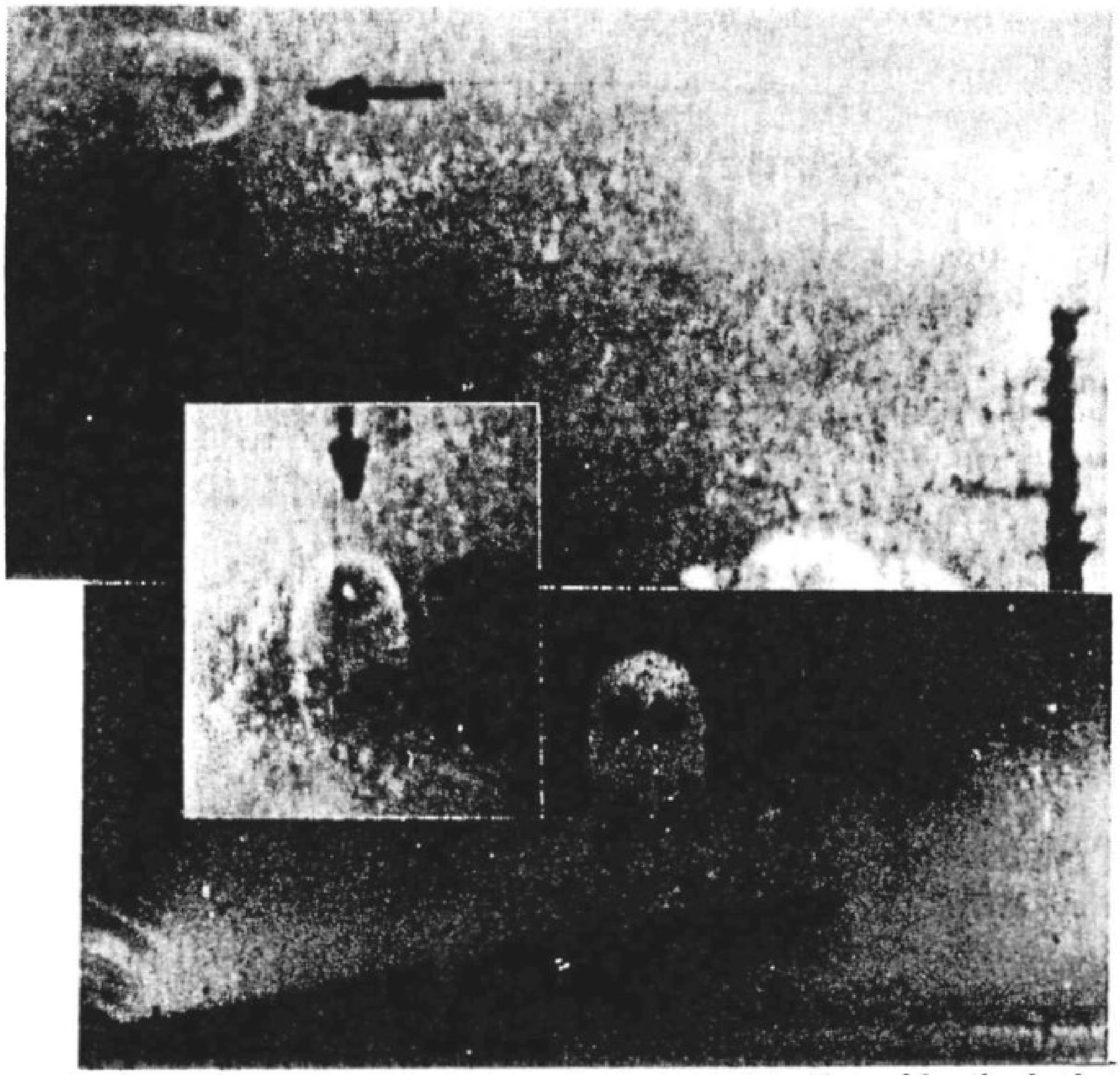

U.F.O. in flight over Washington State 1950. Note identical shape as U.F.O. photographed by German W.W. II Focke Wulf fighter pilot In 1943-44.

U.F.O. formation photographed June 24th, 1965 on World U.F.O. Day, Hokkaido, Japan

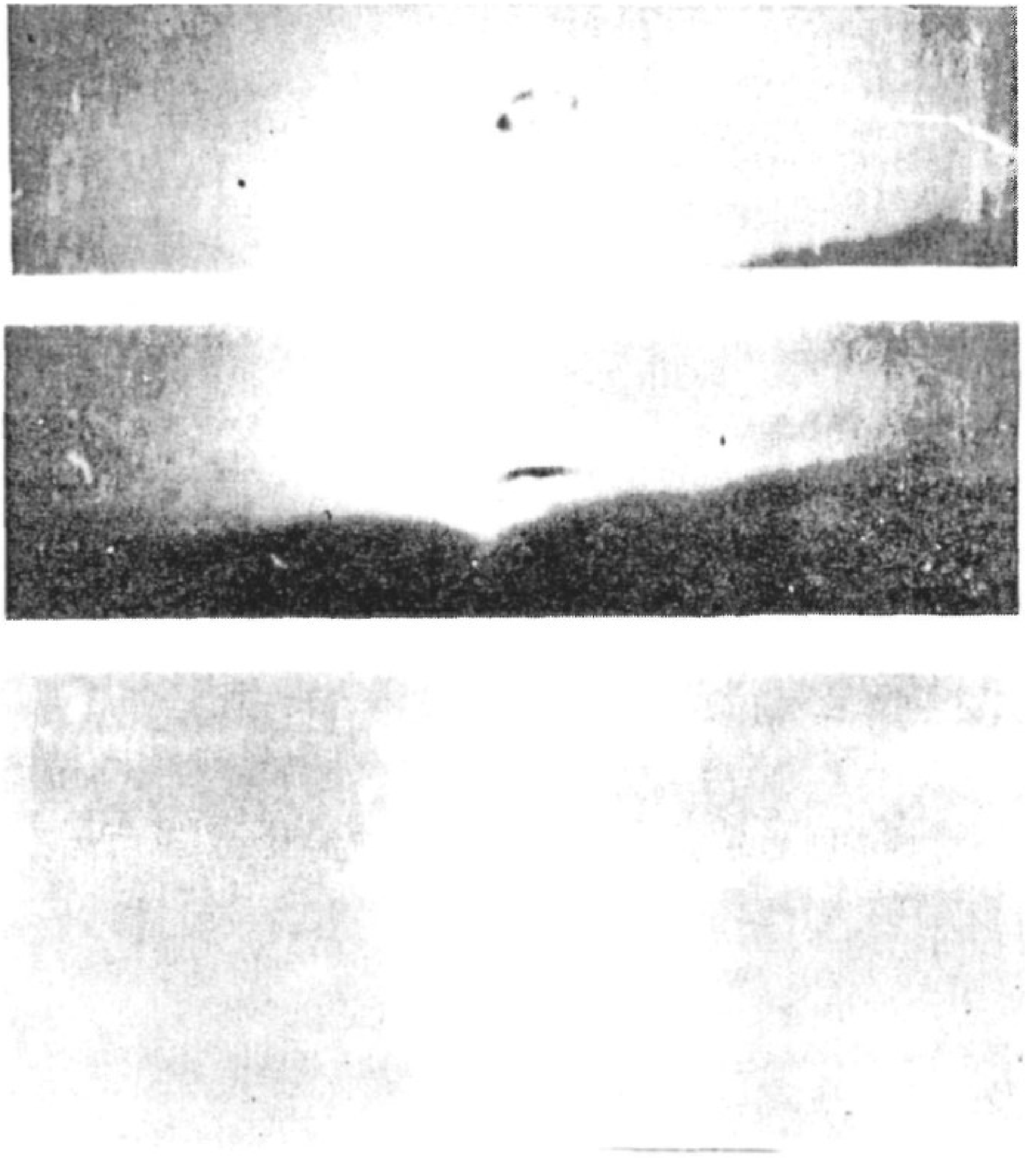

U.F.O. performing like the one at left.

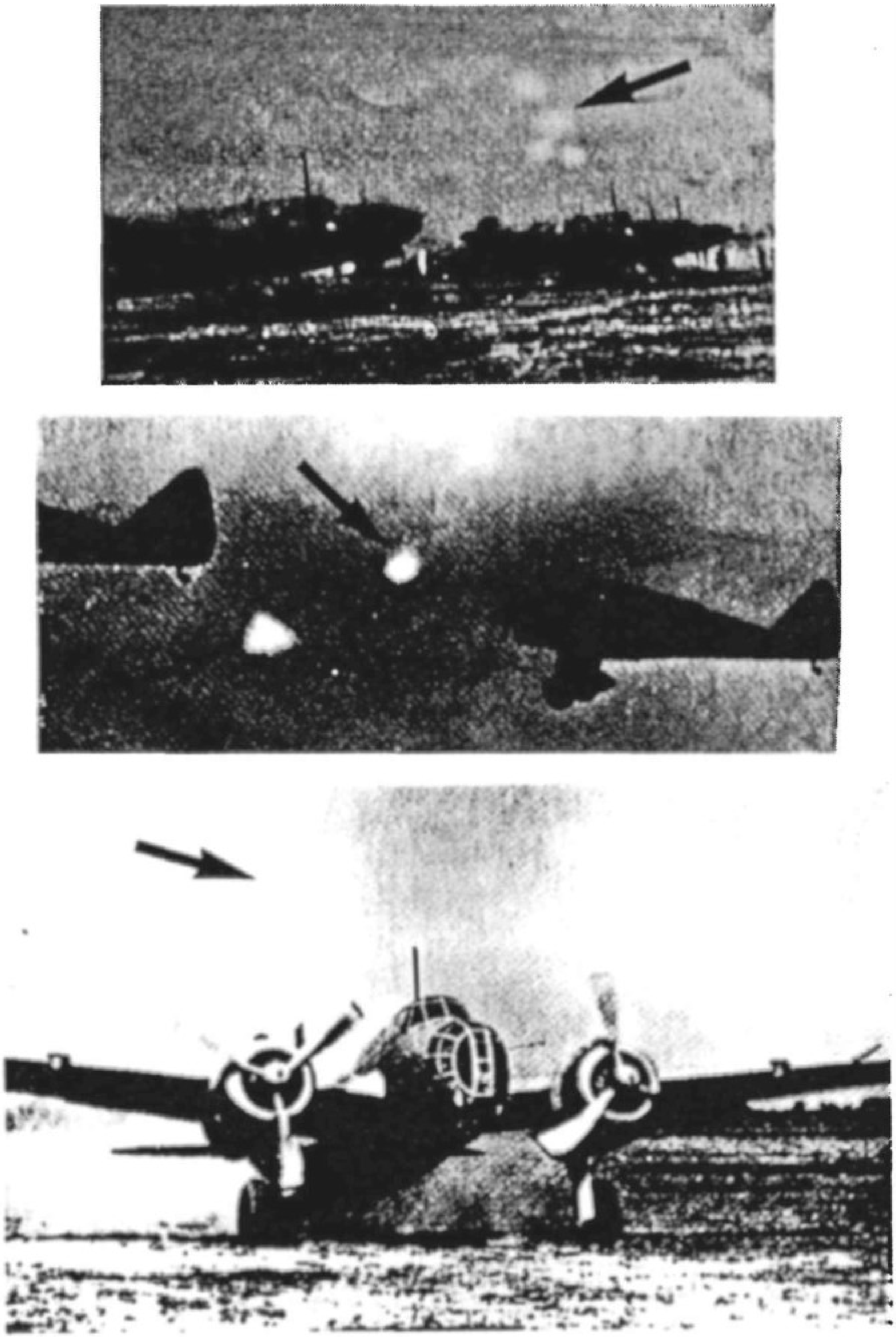

U.F.O.'s appearing over the Japanese battle fronts after the war in Europe was over. Called Foo-fighters!

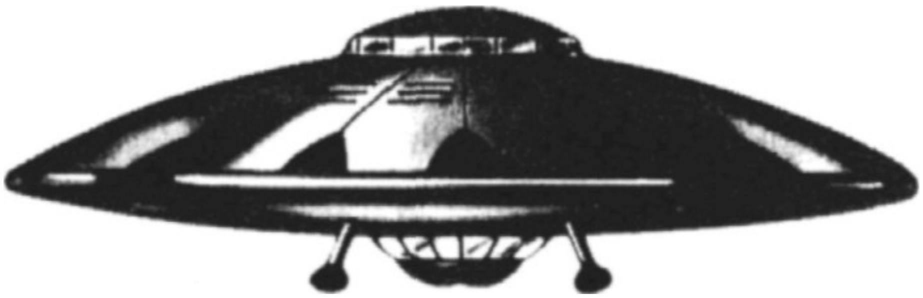

Undoubtedly, tremendous advances must have been made on these flying machines by those who knew the secret of flying saucers, and any unbiased reader must admit that the German Flying Saucer development ushered in a new age in travel. However, because of the new technology we have to ask ourselves some very searching questions.

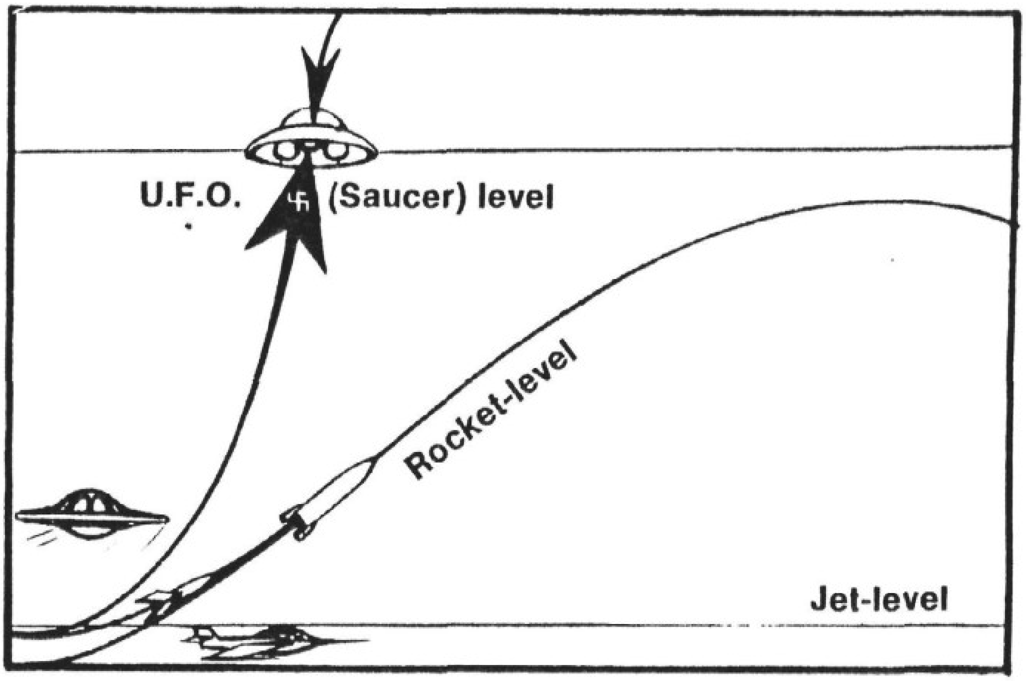

Did the Germans have help from "real" U.F.O. people because their technology was the most advanced?

Did Hitler's scientists perform their "miracle" alone, unaided or did flying saucer "people", perhaps visitors from other galaxies give them a helping hand because they had mastered the new technology and consequently spoke the same or at least similar technological language? Could this be possible? Another question could be, did the Nazis discover some long-hidden deep secrets during their lengthy and exhaustive expeditions to the Himalayas and ancient Tibet? Intriguing and fascinating volumes have been written about these mysterious activities which had the active support and blessing of men such as Heinrich Himmler. It has been reported that the S.S. had an extremely large collection of occult books and medieval transcripts of alchemy and sorcery. Apparently over 20,000 volumes were, at one time, housed at the Ordensburg, Sonthofen, in Bavaria.

Perhaps there are elements of truth from all these stories. Did the Nazis establish secret bases in Antarctica? Did they perfect there a far-advanced flying saucer programme? Did they accidentally discover during their many expeditions that there is indeed an "Inner Earth"? (Nordic legends and Sagas have long recounted very inspiring tales of a perfect society of blue-eyed, blond Germanic giants who dwell in the inner earth). Was the world not astounded when it became known in 1945 that many of the Nazi leaders had been early members — 1918-20 — of the Secret Order of Thule!? It is known that Dietrich Eckhardt, Hitler's brilliant poet friend, had introduced him to this organization in Munich. The great expounder and father of geo-politics, Haushofer, friend and mentor of Rudolf Hess (Hitler's comrade and cell mate of Landsberg) Hess himself and Hitler were all steeped in the ancient mysteries of the Nordic world. It is therefore quite conceivable that the Nazis were the outer earth representatives of the "inner earth" or "outer space" blond, blue-eyed giants who spook through Nordic, Inca, Aztec and even North American Indian legends.

Perhaps Erich von Danniken has uncovered the tips of an iceberg? Are we about to have shattered our comfortable world picture that God created the earth in 7 days etc. etc. And so, again and again we have to come back to the same questions which can only be answered by the same answers. Every government on earth seems to be frantically engaged in suppressing the UFO story. Films are confiscated, pilots instructed to intercept and shoot to kill UFO's. People, are railroaded into hospitals and eventually insane asylums because they have seen or even been contacted by UFO's. Why? Why? Why, the UFO crews themselves give most of the answers to the questions. If they were from other planets and had come here to investigate or make contact with earthlings, they would hardly waste their precious time and tremendous expense and effort just to fly around and treat us to pulsating lights in some remote swamps or hills in the backwoods of the world. They would do what we would do if we had some crews of astronauts investigating some distant planet. Our astronauts would have been given some detailed orders, such as go and make a flypast, take photos, films and make visual observations. Test for radioactivity, air oxygen content etc. Radio and teletype all your findings back to earth and then return home. Even more conceivable would be that orders would be given for them to land, if they found conditions "bearable", and especially if they had the technology (which UFO's obviously have) and investigate everything in sight and take soil and rock samples; if you find "beings" talk with them, film them and perhaps even kidnap one.

Now let us look at how the flying saucer people have behaved:

Technologically they are certainly very advanced, move at tremendous speeds, change direction at will, (often denying every known law of motion or gravity. They can seemingly appear and disappear from human vision or radarscreens with great ease. Theoretically and also practically they could land, take samples, kidnap people and leave for home, and almost unimpeded! So we must assume the obvious. These UFO's from other planets, (and on purely a mathematical probability there are habitants on other planets), have come, have seen, have sampled and returned home. Why would any representatives of any civilization advanced enough to come the tremendous distances involved, just play cat and mouse with a few hillbillies in Mississippi? The answer is self evident, they just would not bother with such a farce and over a period of 30 years!

So there has to be an equally simple answer to why UFO's behave the way they do. They have to be either from earth itself which can only explain their lack of curiosity and also accounts for their linguistic skills. Reinhold Schmidt states the crews of the flying saucer he flew with, spoke German, and those Adamski and others met, spoke English. They apparently looked like us and pretty well behaved as we do — undoubtedly because they are "from us".

Now it is not inconceivable that in the never-ending stream of time our race has either gone from here "out there" or we have been landed here or stranded here from "out there" eons of time ago. Legends and sagas of old can supply many pointers.

Could it mean that the German nation is indeed a colony, either from the German-speaking "Saturnians" with whom Reinhold Schmidt conversed or are they the outer-earth beach head of the inner-earth civilization previously mentioned? Is this perhaps the answer to the vexing question of why the Germans are "different"? Is this the explanation for their superb performance and genius as soldiers? Are they leading the world in precision engineering and in technology because they have dwelling amongst them a disproportionate number of "Saturnians" or "Atlantians"? Could this be the reason why they always rise stronger and Phoenix-like from the ashes of defeat? Was Hitler planted on this planet earth to pull back Western civilization from the brink of degenerate self-extinction — peacefully, if at all possible — through war, if necessary?

Should the above question be answered in the affirmative, then "The Last Battalion", when the time is ripe, will spring into action. With racial strife and economic disaster looming, how far away can "Der Tag" actually be? And finally, will the "Saucer Nazis", as a last resort, invade strategic areas militarily?

Members of "The Last Battalion" are already amongst us as soldiers, labourers, teachers, students, scientists — in fact, in all walks of life. Male and female, young and old. So look at your neighbours and your friends — how many of them do you think belong to "The Last Battalion"? Time will tell!

AF BANS PHOTO RELEASE

The Air Force last night banned publication of a photograph of an unidentified flying object seen over Ohio by hundreds of persons and chased 86 miles by police.

Police Chief Gerald Buchert, of Mantua, Ohio, about 25 miles east of Cleveland, said he photographed the object from the front lawn of his home.

Buchert, according to an Associated Press dispatch, said the Air Force told him not to release the photograph or permit pictures to be taken of it. He said the object looked like "two table saucers put together."

An East Palestine, Ohio, police officer and Portage County Sheriff's Deputy W. L. Neff said they "played tag" with the mysterious object for 86 miles through eastern Ohio before losing it near Conway, Pa.

PHOTOGRAPHED UFO—Mantua, O., Police Chief Gerald Bucher, left, gives information on unidentified flying object to Deputy Sheriff Dale Spaur, center, and radioman Robert Wilson after Bucher and several other police officers chased the object 85 miles from Mantua to Freedom, Pa. During the chase Bucher photographed the UFO. The photographs will not be released until viewed by federal authorities.

UPI Telephoto.

Eyewitnesses reports! All contain many elements of the Nazi-Saucer designs, technology similar as well as behaviour and flight patterns.

Flame-Shooting 'Phantom Plane'

Airline Pilots See 'Wingless 2-Decker'

ATLANTA, July 24.—(AP)—Two Eastern Airline pilots said they met a wingless two deck plane early today southwest of Montgomery, Ala. They said the strange ship shooting red flames and with a blue glow underneath the fuselage, passed the E. A. L. plane at ,000 feet headed toward New Orleans.

"The pilots said the stranger looked like a "Buck Rogers rocket ship."

SEEN AT 2:45 A. M.

The two pilots—Captain C. S. Childs, and co-pilot J. B. Whitted—were flying the Houston-to-Atlanta-to-Boston run. They left Houston, Tex., at 8:30 p. m. last night. This morning at 2:45 o'clock, 20 miles southwest of Montgomery they sighted the strange ship.

After reaching Atlanta at 2:49 a. m. EST., the two pilots told of their strange experience. Captain Childs said that they first sighted the object up ahead when nearing Montgomery.

"It was in line almost with our flight," he said. "We veered off to the left and the object turned to its left. When it came nearer to us, within better sight, its fuselage appeared to be about 100 feet in length and about four times the *circumference of a* B-29 fuselage.

2 ROWS OF WINDOWS

"It had two rows of windows, an upper and a lower. They were square. Out of the rear of the ship red flames were shooting 25 to 50 feet. There was a blue glow underneath the fuselage.

The ship appeared to be doing between 500 and 700 miles an hour, heading toward New Orleans.

"Of the 20 passengers on board Childs 9said only one was awake and saw the other ship. He gave this ppassenger's name as C. L. McKelvie, Henelton Pike, Columbus, Ohio.

The E. A. L. ship went on from Atlanta to Boston today on its regular run.

At Montgomery, Maxwell and Dannelly army fields said they knew nothing about the report.

Radar Tracks Zipping Objects Near Air Base

8-2-65

OKLAHOMA CITY (UPI)—Air Force radar tracked four unidentified flying objects zipping along in a diamond formation at high altitude in a 50-mile radius of the sprawling Tinker Air Force Base Sunday night, authorities said.

At least eight law enforcement officers spotted the objects during the two hours immediately after the first sighting report which came just before sundown.

The sightings followed by less than 48 hours a Wynnewood, Okla., policeman's report of a UFO that emitted red, white and blue light near Wynnewood. The object was tracked on two radar screens early Saturday before it disappeared and then reappeared about 29 miles south of Tinker Base, officers said.

Wynnewood is about 29 miles south of Purcell, where the UFO's first were sighted Sunday night.

The Oklahoma Highway Patrol said a security officer at Tinker informed the patrol that the base's radar picked up from one to four UFO's at various times during the evening.

The objects were moving erratically, at an altitude of about 22,000 feet, the patrol quoted the officer as saying.

A base spokesman later would neither confirm nor deny that radar had tracked the objects. He said only that the Air Force would investigate the UFO reports.

Paper Unknown — Oct. 28, 1955

Donald E. Keyhoe, former Marine Corps officer and author of books on flying saucers, on an Air Force statement that flying saucers don't exist:

"It is an insult to the hundreds of radar operators who have confirmed that the flying saucers are solid objects, maneuvering at fantastic speeds under intelligent control." 10-28, 1955

U.F.O. reports from around the world and from pretty well-known people

Sydney, Australia WEDNESDAY, DAILY TEL

THE THING ON TH

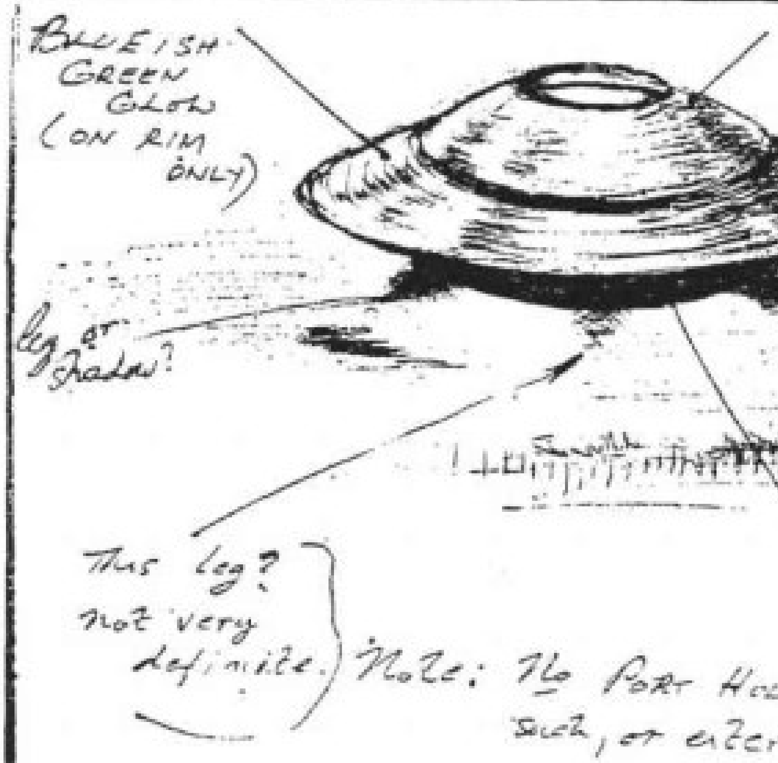
BLUEISH GREEN GLOW (ON RIM ONLY)
leg or shadow?
This leg? not very definite.
Note: No Port Ho
such, or exter

THE SKETCH by Mr. Denis Crowe of the object he sawon Monday nig the saucer shape as silvery grey on top and darker grey beneath wi what might have been three or four '

GLOWING IMP

A green, glowing object that took off at high s on Monday night in no way resembled conventional said last nig

[illegible] watched the object in flight for 10 seconds before it disappeared in cloud over Manly.

Mr. Crowe at his home in Coolong Road, Vaucluse, told a *Daily Telegraph* reporter last night:

"It took off with a noise like air forcibly released from a balloon.

"The noise was quite unlike any made by jet engines."

Mr. Crowe said that the object a giant disc, was bathed in a glow.

He saw no sign of movement within the craft or any portholes or doors.

He said he became aware about 5.30 p.m. on Monday of a glow coming from the beach.

He went to investigate and saw that the glow emanated from a huge disc resting on the beach.

Near disc at take-off

He was within 50 or 60 feet of the disc when it took off.

"Its diameter appeared to be about 20 feet," he said.

"I estimate its height at nine feet, including what appeared to be legs protruding from the bottom.

"Its rim was glowing a greenish blue, while the top and bottom halves were dullish silver-grey.

"A hollow in the top could have been a glass dome."

Mr. Crowe said that as the object took off, a yellow or orange glow appeared beneath.

After a take-off run of only 50 or 60 feet, the craft climbed rapidly in the direction of Manly.

"I looked around, hoping to see someone else who saw what I saw, but about a dozen or so dogs," Mr. Crowe said.

"While the object was stationary, they were all barking loudly at it.

"After it took off, they were all strangely silent."

Mr. Denis Crowe

Mr. Crowe said that when he returned home he sat down to collect his thoughts.

He had dinner, then wrote down what was still vividly in his memory, and sketched the object as he recalled it.

The sketch is reproduced above.

[Mr. Crowe, an Englishman who has been in Australia for more than four years, was formerly a technical and illustrative artist with British aircraft companies.]

"At first I wondered whether I should say anything about what I had seen," he said.

"The natural reaction of most people might label me a crackpot.

"But I could not keep silent.

"I felt I had a moral obligation to speak of what I had seen."

ARKANSAS GAZETTE, Thurs., Aug. 12, 1965.

UFO Is Reported In Western Area

SANTA ANA, Cal. (AP)—An unidentified flying object described as round, bright and with a long orange tail was seen by scores of Southern California residents Tuesday night and by at least three airline pilots flying over Arizona's Grand Canyon.

Viewers said the object moved rapidly from west to east in about 10 to 20 seconds. It appeared to descend rapidly, they said, then it would level and disappear to the east.

Three pilots reports a similar sighting and described it as a "large ball of fire with a tail, traveling west to east."

Similar reports came in from airports at China Lake, Palmdale, and Edwards Air Force Base, Cal., and the Albuquerque, N. M., Air Route Traffic Control Center.

Paper unknown Feb. 21, 1956

Huge Flying Saucer Reported Over Paris

Paris —(U.P.)— The French government sought today to solve the mystery of the "phantom of Orly" a gigantic flying-saucer-like object which whirled across the airport's radar screen at supersonic speed last Friday.

It was the third time in less than a year that the "phantom" has been charted on radarscopes at the busy international airfield outside of Paris. The object was described as about twice the size of the largest known plane, moved at times at an estimated 2,000 miles an hour, and hovered around the airport for about four hours.

Mystery Object Over Hawaii

HONOLULU (UPI)—An unidentified flying object, traveling west at a "very high altitude and a high rate of speed," was sighted by hundreds of persons in the Hawaiian islands.

Two Air National Guard pilots said they saw the object north of the island of Kauai during a routine training mission in jet fighters at an altitude of 40,000 feet. Honolulu newspapers and radio stations were flooded with calls.

Capt. Jon Parish said he thought the object was "possibly a rocket or some sort of space object flying a predetermined course." Lt. George Joy said he thought it was the Milky Way at first, but then noticed that it left a visible vapor trail.

Witnesses in Honolulu said the object looked like a crescent-shaped moon falling into the sea. They said it was bright, and some said it appeared to be on fire.

ALASKAN TELLS OF MYSTERIOUS STREAK IN SKY

KETCHIKAN, April 15.—(AP) — A mysterious reddish orange streak across the sky over Annette Island was reported to the coast guard at 2 a. m. today.

Earl Leding said he sighted what seemed to be a flaming object hurtling westward at tremendous speed as he was returning by boat from Metlakatla, the Annette Island native community.

He said he and Ray Haldane saw the streak for about 40 seconds before it disappeared.

PHILADELPHIA INQUIRER JANUARY 6 1965

Navy Radar Spots Mystery Objects

WASHINGTON, Jan. 5 (AP). - The Air Force is investigating the reported sighting of two high-speed unidentified flying objects by Navy radar operators at Patuxent Naval Air Station, Md.

The Navy said Tuesday that the operators observed "two objects on their scope approaching at approximately 4800 miles an hour from 30 to 40 miles south" of the base at 8:30 P. M. Dec. 29.

The objects approached the naval air station, executed a tight turn and disappeared from the scope, the Navy said.

About the fastest aircraft in existence is the X-15 experimental plane, which has flown at 4104 miles an hour. The X-15 is based on the West Coast. It has a very short range.

7/8/65

See 'UFO'

BUENOS AIRES (UPI) — Argentine sailors at two Antarctic outposts saw a multi - colored "unidentified flying object" dawdling across the sky Saturday, the Navy Department announced Wednesday night.

"The object was discus-shaped and predominantly red and green in color, with occasional flashes of yellow, blue, orange and white. . ." The Navy announcement said.

"It was moving generally eastward, but at times it went west . . . at some moments, it appeared to hover . . .

"It was in view for 15 to 20 minutes, allowing ample time to photograph it . . . (the object) was seen by members of the naval detachments at Deception and Orcadas."

Eerie Object Seen Over Antarctica

'65

BUENOS AIRES, July 7. — (Reuters) — Argentines at two Antarctic bases have confirmed reports by British and Chilean scientists of the appearance four days ago of an unusual celestial body over the frozen subcontinent.

The object, observed and photographed by the Argentine Navy men last Saturday night, was shaped like a double-convex lens. It was colored mainly red and green, a Navy statement said.

The object made no noise, and moved generally eastward at changing speeds before disappearing.

An earlier report from a British Antarctic base said the object made geomagnetic instruments wild.

Ten-Gallon UFO Sighted at Sault

SAULT. STE. MARIE, Ont. (CP) — An unidentified flying object shaped like a "ten-gallon hat" was sighted here Friday night.

Darlene Wagner, 15, said she saw the object about 10:20 p.m., silently descending to the top of an oil storage tank across the road from her home. It landed on the oil tank.

The girl said the object was shaped like a hat, the crown glowing red, the brim blue. There were flashing blue and white lights at each edge of the "brim."

London Free Press
May 6, 1966

Aug 9, 1962

Object Filmed By X15 Still Big Mystery

Aug. 9, 1962

Aug. 9, 1962

EDWARDS AIR FORCE BASE, CALIF. (UPI)—A possibility the X15 encountered strange phenomena in space arose Thursday with scientists unable to identify a mysterious object both sighted and photographed by Maj. Bob White on a soaring flight by the rocket ship.

Scientists said Wednesday they could give no explanation whatsoever for the objects that appeared near the X15 on July 17 when White skyrocketed to a world airplane altitude record of nearly 60 miles.

"It is impossible to explain the object's presence at this time," space agency scientists said.

The National Aeronautics and Space Administration, after intensively studying White's sighting report and films from a tail movie camera, on the X15, released photographs of an object that darted above and behind the plane.

The photographs, taken from the movie films, show an object that looks like a fluttering piece of paper and which scientists describe as being "grey-white."

White, from his cockpit near the nose of the rocket ship, reported seeing what looked to him like a piece of paper the size of his hand "going along with the ship" at an altitude of 270,000 feet—over 50 miles high.

July 16, 1952

Pilots Tell Of Saucers Flying In Formation

MIAMI, July 16.—(UP)—Two veteran air-line pilots added to the flying-saucer lore today accounts of seeing eight huge discs zipping in formation at supersonic speed near Norfolk, Va.

W. B. Nash, 35, and W. H. Fortenberry, 30, pilots of Pan American Airways, said the "glowing, orange-red" saucers maneuvered oo sharply for human endurance at a speed of "far above 1,000 miles per hour."

"Whoever was in those things," he pilots declared, "had capabiliies far beyond our own. Those hings absolutely did not contain any human being as we know hem."

Nash and Fortenberry said they were flying their DC-4 with ten company officials aboard southward between Newport News, Va., and Norfolk Monday night when he saucers appeared 6,000 feet below them, at about 2,000 feet altitude.

Mystery object

SANTA MARIA, Azores (UPI) — An airport spokesman Saturday said a mysterious flying object apparently stopped all electro-magnetic watches at the Santa Maria Airport when it flew slowly over this island Friday. He said a white cylindrical object was seen flying northwest at an altitude of 33,000 feet and attempts to identify it were unsuccessful.

THE AUGUSTA
CHRONICLE-HERALD
SUNDAY, JULY 11, 1965

Pilot believes he saw manned space-ship

Evening Press 23/9/59

THE pilot of a Pan-American airliner, flying almost four miles up between New York and Paris, this morning, reported that he sighted what he believed was a space ship with people on board.

In a brief message from the clipper, Captain J. Cone, said it was visible for only 30 seconds and that the object had vertical tail fins. It was travelling very fast in a south-westerly direction between the stars, Elnath and Castor.

The message was flashed to a U.S. coastguard cutter.

There were 119 people including 12 crew members on board the jet liner, which later landed at Paris. It was flying at an altitude of 20,000 feet when the object was sighted.

Gave position

Other brief details given in the message gave the object's position as 53.40 degrees north, 58 degrees west, which would be slightly north-east of Goose Bay, Newfoundland, about 2,000 miles west of Ireland.

The report has set off speculation in international circles studying space aeronautics, the dominant view being that it was a secret Russian attempt to send men to outer space, probably to the moon.

It is expected that a report will be sent to the United States Government for investigation.

On DEW line

The object was sighted almost on the D.E.W. line, the distant early warning radar screen which protects the entire north-west coast of America and Canada from attack.

Dublin Evening Press

Mystery Object Buzzes Planes

TOKYO, March 21 (Reuters). —Two Japanese civilian pilots reported their planes were buzzed Thursday by an unidentified flying object, an air safety officer in southwestern Japan said Sunday.

A spokesman for the Air Safety office at Takamatsu on Shikoku Island said the planes were a Convair 240 airliner and a private Piper Apache plane.

The newspaper Mainichi Shimbun quoted the airliner pilot as saying an object about 15 yards in diameter and radiating a greenish luminescence approached the plane at about 20 miles an hour, wheeled abruptly and flew alongside for about three minutes before making off.

HE PHILADELPHIA INQUIRER.

PAPER UNKNOWN Dec. 4, 1965

Unidentified Objects Sighted by Astronauts

SPACE CENTER, Houston, Tex., Dec 4 (AP)—Twice in the early part of their space flight, astronauts Frank Borman and James Lovell reported seeing objects that were not explained immediately. On the second orbit, Borman said, "We have a bogey at 10 o'clock high."

There was some static in the transmission and the space center had to ask three times for explanation. Borman said they could see the spacecraft booster "as a brilliant body against the sun," slowly tumbling and that three of four miles ahead of the spacecraft there were "what looks like hundreds of little particles."

In addition, he said, there was the "bogey." That's an airman's term for another object.

On the third revolution, while burning fuel to raise the orbit, Lovell reported "we hit something."

Space Center: "You hit something during the burn?"

Lovell: "Something came forward by the right window. Look-

Nov.19.1953

British Radar Tracks Air 'Object'

LONDON, Nov. 19.—(AP)—An object described by observers as huge and glowing and probably metallic has been tracked by radar high over England twice this month, the War Office disclosed last night.

Official reports of the sightings have been made by members of two army radar crews. They estimated that the object's altitude was 60,000 feet.

The reports were on November 3. The first report said the object was kept in sight from 2:30 to 3:10 p. m. A similar report was made that day by two flying officers of the Royal Air Force. They were at 20,000 feet in a jet plane, they said, when the object passed far overhead at "tremendous speed."

N.Y. NEWS MARCH 25, 1966

They're Up There Again

Bangor, Maine, March 24, (UPI)—A Bangor man said today he fired four shots at a glowing, cigar-shaped unidentified flying object late last night and believes he hit it with at least one bullet.

John King, 22, said the craft responded by zooming skyward, almost straight up, and swiftly vanished to the North. He said he thought he saw a similar object some distance away mom-

---

Report Flying Object In Alexandria Area

ALEXANDRIA (AP) — Three state policemen and several other persons reported they saw an unidentified flying object about 30 miles south of here last night.

Troopers P. E. Lemoine and H. J. Roy said the object "definitely was not a plane" and described it as

UFOs Spotted In Minnesota

MINNEAPOLIS (AP) — Unidentified Flying Objects were spotted over parts of Minnesota and North Dakota Monday night.

Dozens of police officers on patrol between 12:20 and 2:30 a. m. reported sightings in the Minneapolis-St. Paul area. According to various reports, the objects "bobbed, dipped, hovered, stopped, jerked along and sped away."

An officer in suburban Shorewood radioed his dispatcher: "Boys, I hope you don't think I'm crazy, but I just got passed by a star."

The airport control tower said it had seen nothing on radar. The tower said also that a number of B-52 military aircraft were in the area.

Sky Object Tracked by AFB Radar

OKLAHOMA CITY (UPI) — Tinker Air Force Base officials reported tracking an unidentified flying object by radar early Saturday before it suddenly disappeared.

The object was first sighted by Lewis Sikes, a Wynnewood policeman. He said it appeared to emit a red, blue and white light.

The Highway Patrol told Tinker authorities of the sighting and Tinker picked up the object on radar. Carswell Air Force Base at Fort Worth, Tex., [illegible] located the object on radar.

The object was [illegible] to a location 29 miles [illegible] Tinker before it disap

Tulsa Daily World, Sunday, August 1, 1965.

Topeka Daily Capital 23
Thursday, Feb. 26, 1959

'Saucers' Fly Beside Plane

DETROIT — (UPI) — The pilot of an American Airlines DC-6 passenger plane said Wednesday three mysterious objects that looked like shining saucers appeared to accompany the plane for 45 minutes last night on its nonstop flight from Newark, N. J., to Detroit.

Capt. Peter Killian of Syosset, N. Y., who has flown passenger planes for 15 years, said "I have never seen anything like it before."

Killian said other members of the crew and the 35 passengers also saw the flying objects. The plane left Newark at 7:10 p.m.

* * *

KILLIAN and co-pilot John Dee of Nyack, N. Y., said they lost the three strange objects in the haze when they started their descent for landing at Detroit's Metropolitan Airport while the plane was over Cleveland, Ohio.

The three bright whitish lights first were sighted while the plane was flying at 8,500 feet between Philipsburg and Bradford, Pa.

Mysterious Object Seen

HELSINKI (UPI) — Mysterhe said,

EVENING CHRONICLE 7/4/59

'Flying object' near Russia

A flying object was seen over northern Finland near the Russian border, say Press reports in Helsinki.

One report said that the object was seen near Kuusamo, about 20 miles from the border.

ENGLAND

Air-Line Pilot Sees Mysterious Flying Objects

CHICAGO, July 18. — (UP) — A veteran air-line pilot reported seeing four flying objects moving at high speed over Denver last night.

Capt. Paul L. Carpenter of American Airlines said he and his crew spotted the objects after a flight ahead of them radioed them to be on the look-out.

Carpenter said the objects looked like planets and had a yellowish tinge. He said he saw one by itself, then two others and finally a fourth. He estimated their altitude at 25,000 to 30,000 feet and said he thought they were traveling at about 3,000 miles an hour.

UFO Watch Ordered

MEXICO CITY (AP)—The airport commander here, Luis Angel Jara Monroy, has ordered control tower men to keep watch for flying saucers. Public relations chief Ricardo de Zaldo said he had no doubt some strange objects were seen by the hundreds who phoned in one night but he doubted they were from other

---

ILY EXPRESS FRIDAY DECEMBER 9 1960

Did Hillary see Chinese rocket?

ENGLAND

KATMANDU, Thursday. — Sir Edmund Hillary, the New Zealand explorer, said today that he had seen "phenomena" across the Nepal-Tibet border in the Mount Everest region which could have been anything, including a Chinese rocket.

He said that while camping in a glacier in October members of his Himalayan expedition saw a streak of vapour trail and a flash of fire moving in a zig-zag.—Reuter.

---

by branch."

The boy, Raymond Grant, was taken home, suffering from shock.

ENGLAND

Flying saucer 'hisses'

Men on the tarmac at London Airport were certain last night that they saw a flying saucer. One described it—"white, with a blue flame from its tail. Speed about 600 miles an hour, and it hissed."

Mr Fred Perrior, airport porter, said it was a foot long and six inches wide, and it kept a straight course.

But control tower officials neither saw it nor heard the hiss.

THE PEOPLE 16/10/56

I've seen flying saucer—Priest

ENGLAND

AN Anglican missionary reported to his headquarters yesterday. "I've seen a flying saucer with men inside it.

"The men waved and exchanged signals with us," said Father W. B. Gill, of Boiana Anglican Mission, Papua, in a report which reached Brisbane yesterday.

Radar Crews Get Solid Fix on UFOs

HOUGHTON (Mich.)—(UPI)—Personnel at the U.S. Air Force radar base in the Keweenan Peninsula yesterday reported "solid radar contact" with seven to 10 unidentified flying objects moving in a "V" formation over Lake Superior.

The objects were moving out of the southwest and were heading north - northeast at about 9,000 miles per hour, the men said. They were 5,200 to 17,000 feet high.

One of the men at the base said three other radar stations, in North Dakota, Minnesota and Luther Air Station in Canada, also reported spotting the objects. He said another station reported electronic jamming of its radar.

Seven other objects were spotted over Duluth and jet interceptors gave chase, he said, but they could not maintain the speed of the UFO's and were easily outdistanced.

The radar personnel, Air Force enlisted men, asked that their names not be disclosed.

2 SOUTH AFRICAN POLICEMEN REPORT SIGHTING OF 'SAUCER'

JOHANNESBURG, South Africa—South African police and scientists investigated Thursday a report that a flying saucer-type object had landed on a main highway near Pretoria, the country's administrative capital.

Two patrolling police officers reported seeing the flaming "saucer," about 30 feet in diameter, shortly after midnight. One of them, Koos de Klerk, said that the shiny copper-colored object resembled a giant spinning top.

The two men claimed that, as they approached the object, it took off silently at great speed with flames shooting out of its underside.

Scientists who examined the spot where the officers said that they saw the object were reported to have found that a six-foot wide section of the tarred road had been badly burned. Grass on either side of the highway also was reported slightly scorched.

(Associated Press)

September 29, 1959

ARKANSAS GAZETTE

In Conquest of Cosmos

Earthlings, Planet Men To Join Forces, Red Says

London, Sept. 29 (AP).—A Russian scientist predicted today that space-probing earthlings eventually would meet up with beings from other worlds.

And together they would go on to conquer the cosmos.

"Soviet science already commands the means to send cosmic rockets to Mars and Venus," claimed Moscow radio.

To be sure of getting to Venus a rocket will have to be set off precisely at 11.5 kilometers (7.46 miles) per second—"somewhat greater" than the speed of Russia's rocket which hit the moon, the broadcast said.

In man's conquest of the cosmos, Moscow radio reported, astronomer Feliks Segal believes the space travelers first will colonize the moon.

Then they will conquer the rest of the planets. Finally they will venture forth into *other solar systems.*

In a broadcast beamed to North America, Moscow radio said the moon at present was no place for man to make a home. It has no atmosphere and man could not breathe there. Daytime temperatures rise to 130 degrees centigrade but the nights are unbearably cold, the thermometer dropping to minus 160 degrees.

Moscow radio said one Russian scientist estimates that one inhabited planetary system must exist for every million stars.

"Consequently there must be about 150,000 inhabited planetary systems in our galaxy.

"On some of them life exists in lower forms. But there must be planets, too whose inhabitants may even be higher than man in point of development.

"Some of them may even have begun to make flights into space. Therefore we should have meetings with them.

"If such meetings do take place, they may result in the *co-ordination of the efforts of* man and these other intelligent beings in the great work of combating the elemental forces of nature."

Strange Air Object Seen In N.M.

ALAMOGORDO, N.M. (UPI)—A cigar-shaped unidentified flying object was reported seen Friday night near the place where the "manhigh" Air Force space balloon landed Wednesday.

The object was reported by John Romero, identified as a missile engineer, on the White Sands Proving Ground. But he said it had a fan-shaped tail and four pin-point spots of lights on the side like portholes.

THE NEWARK STAR-LEDGER, FRIDAY, FEBRUARY 20, 1959

Says 'saucers' seen in Far North

By JOHN LESTER
Staff Writer

Unidentified Flying Objects, more commonly known as Flying Saucers, again have been seen "maneuvering and landing" in Northern Alaska and the North Pole area, UFO authority Lee R. Munsick of Morristown told members of the Denville Rotary Club yesterday.

Speaking at a luncheon meeting at the Rockaway River Country Club, Munsick, formerly assistant director of the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena, told Rotariansm these most recent sightings in the Frozen North took place within t ehpast two weeks, "as nearly as can be determined at this time."

The Alaskan sighting involved a single disc-type craft that was seen by a small party of trappers about 200 miles east of Umiat, Munsick said.

The men estimated the UFO was about two miles away when they first noticed it, Munsick reported, that it rose and descended to within a few feet of the ground several times, then flew slowly in a tight circle before disappearing.

They described it as "red colored."

Munsick attributed this to the fact that there are numerous instances on record of UFOs' glowing when in motion, a deep orange at low speeds, nearly white at high speeds.

The Polar sighting was made by two Norwegian soldiers, although no further details are available.

The Norwegian embassy, Munsick said, claimed to have no record of this sighting but added that all information on UFOs and their sightings were considered classified.

This latest North Pole sighting is at least the fourth in which members of the Norwegian military have figured as far as is known, the speaker said.

In September, 1955, he recalled, a representative of the Norwegian Gneral Staff revealed that "special details" assigned to observe the Arctic region "are now convinced" it was being used as a base by UFOs, especially during bad weather "when we are forced back to our bases."

WE ALL KNOW UFOs ARE REAL, SAID THE ASTRONAUT!

The question is, he added, where do they come from?

WORLDWIDE EXCLUSIVE

Sightings by 26 Astronauts Confirm:

UFOs Spied On Skylabs, Many Other Space Shots

They Even Followed Apollo 11 to the Moon

UFOs Watch Every Move NASA Makes, Say Astronauts Who Were Tailed on Space Shot

Twilight Language

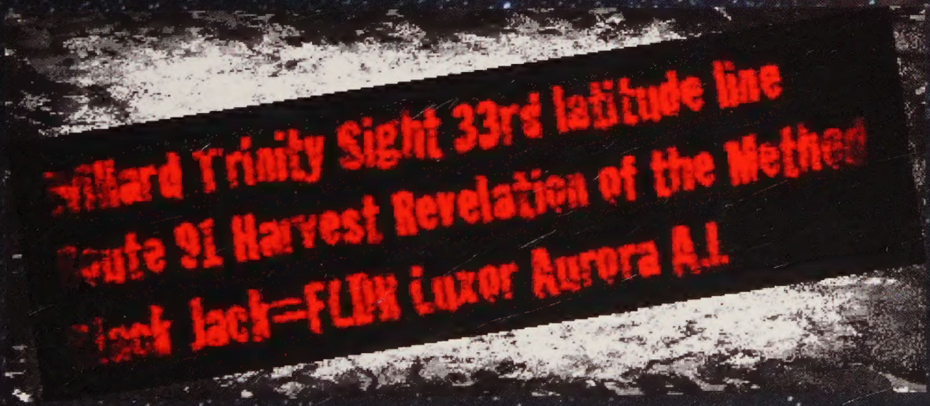
illard Trinity Sight 33rd latitude line
oute 91 Harvest Revelation of the Method
ack Jack=FLDR Luxor Aurora A.I.

Michael Hoffman

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2022 with funding from
Kahle/Austin Foundation

https://archive.org/details/isbn_9780990954750

ALSO BY MICHAEL HOFFMAN

Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare

The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome

Adolf Hitler: Enemy of the German People

Usury in Christendom:
The Mortal Sin that Was and Now is Not

Twilight Language

Michael Hoffman

Independent History and Research
Coeur d'Alene, Idaho

2021

Twilight Language
Copyright ©2021 by Michael Hoffman
All Rights Reserved.

The scanning, uploading and distribution of this book without permission is a violation of Title 17 of the Copyright Law of the United States and subject to criminal and civil penalties.

With the exception of excerpts in reviews, and fair use in compliance with the Copyright Law of the United States, no part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form by any means, digital, photocopy, mechanical, recording or otherwise.

ISBN: 978-0-9909547-5-0

www.RevisionistHistory.org

Independent History and Research
Box 849 • Coeur d'Alene, Idaho 83816

Printed in the United States of America

FIRST EDITION

The cover illustration depicts Isis and Nephthys officiating at the embalming by Anubis of Ramesses II (circa 1300 BC).

In memory of
James Shelby Downard [1]

---

[1] Photo © WiNG Publications. Used by permission.

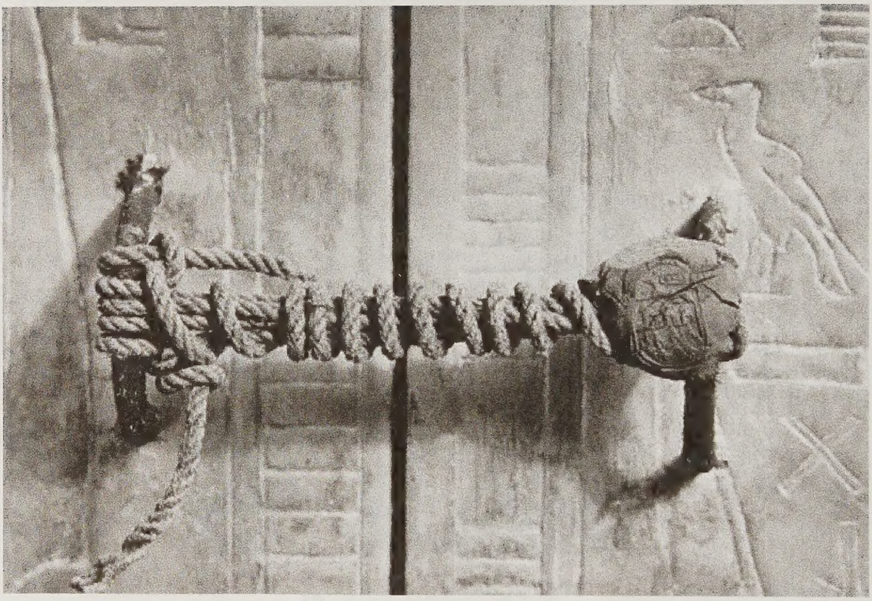

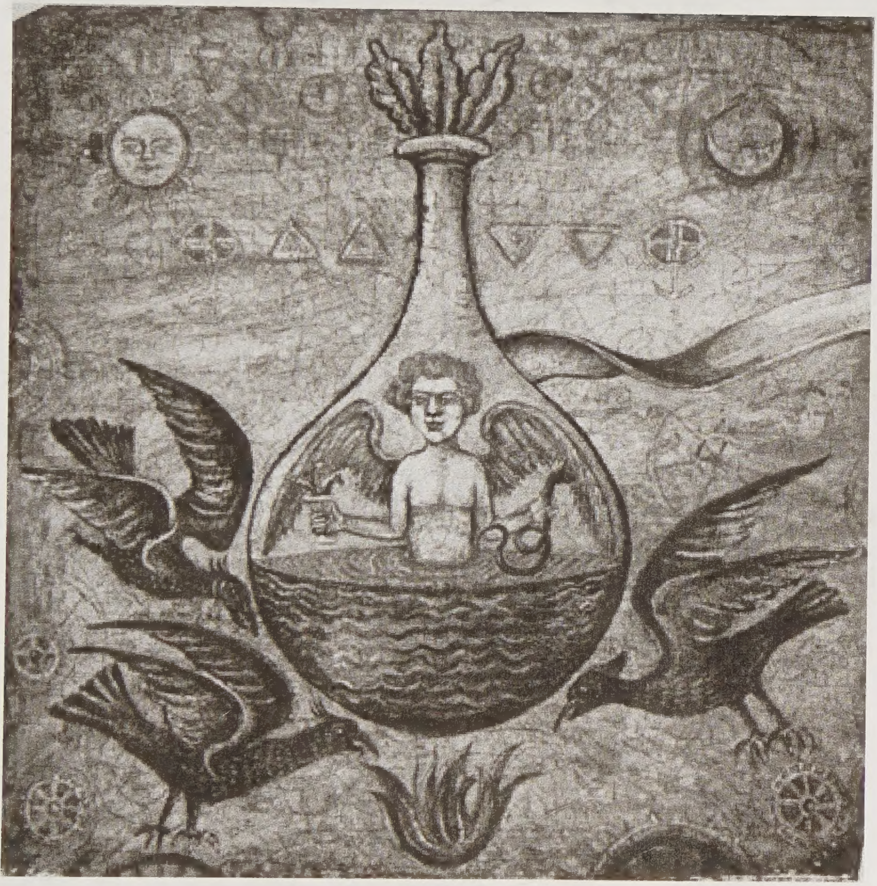

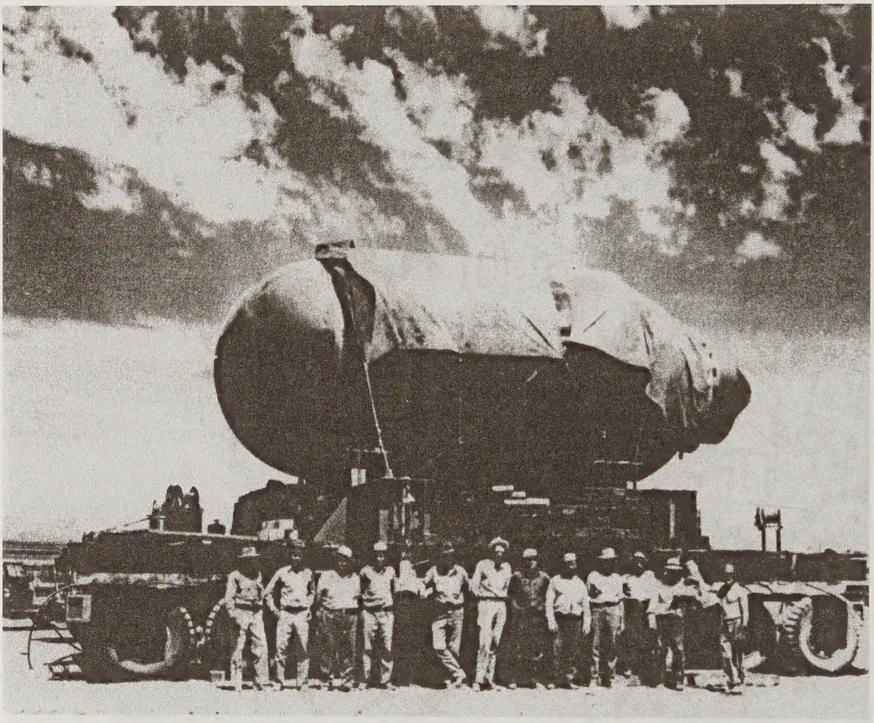

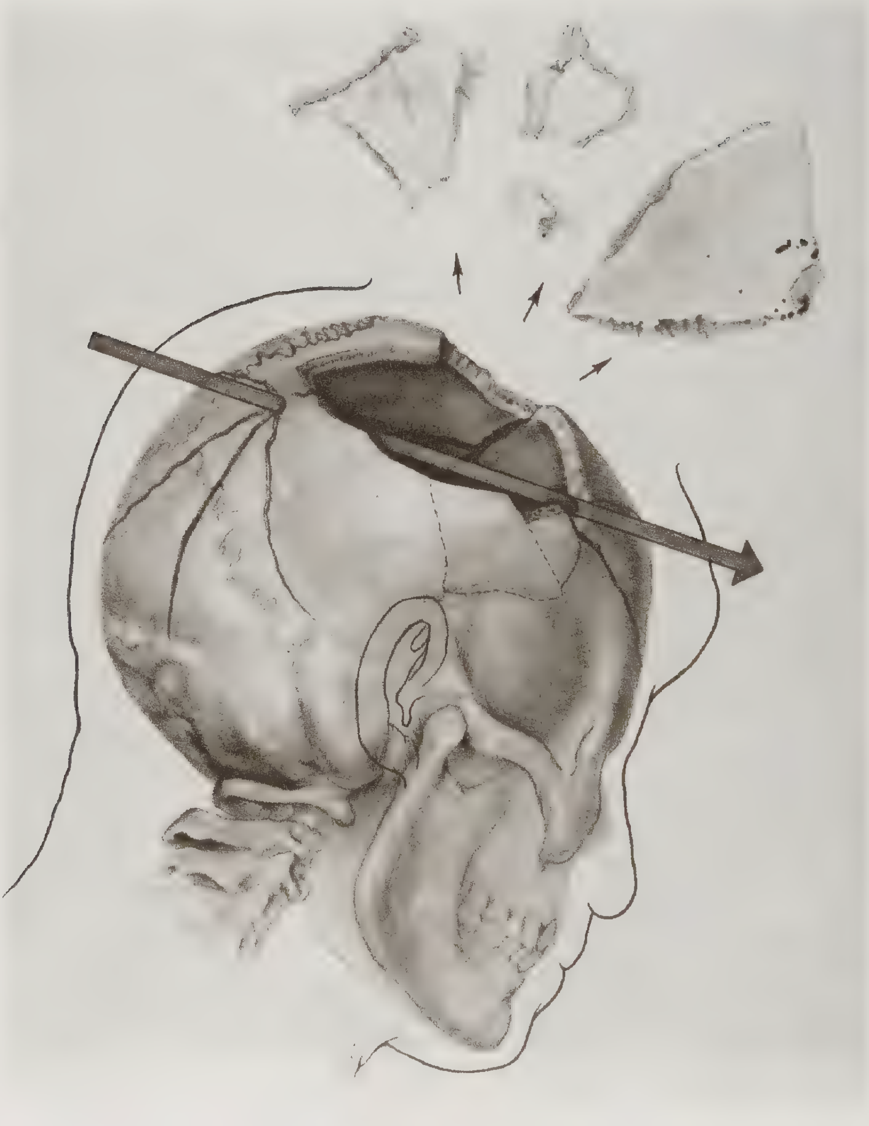

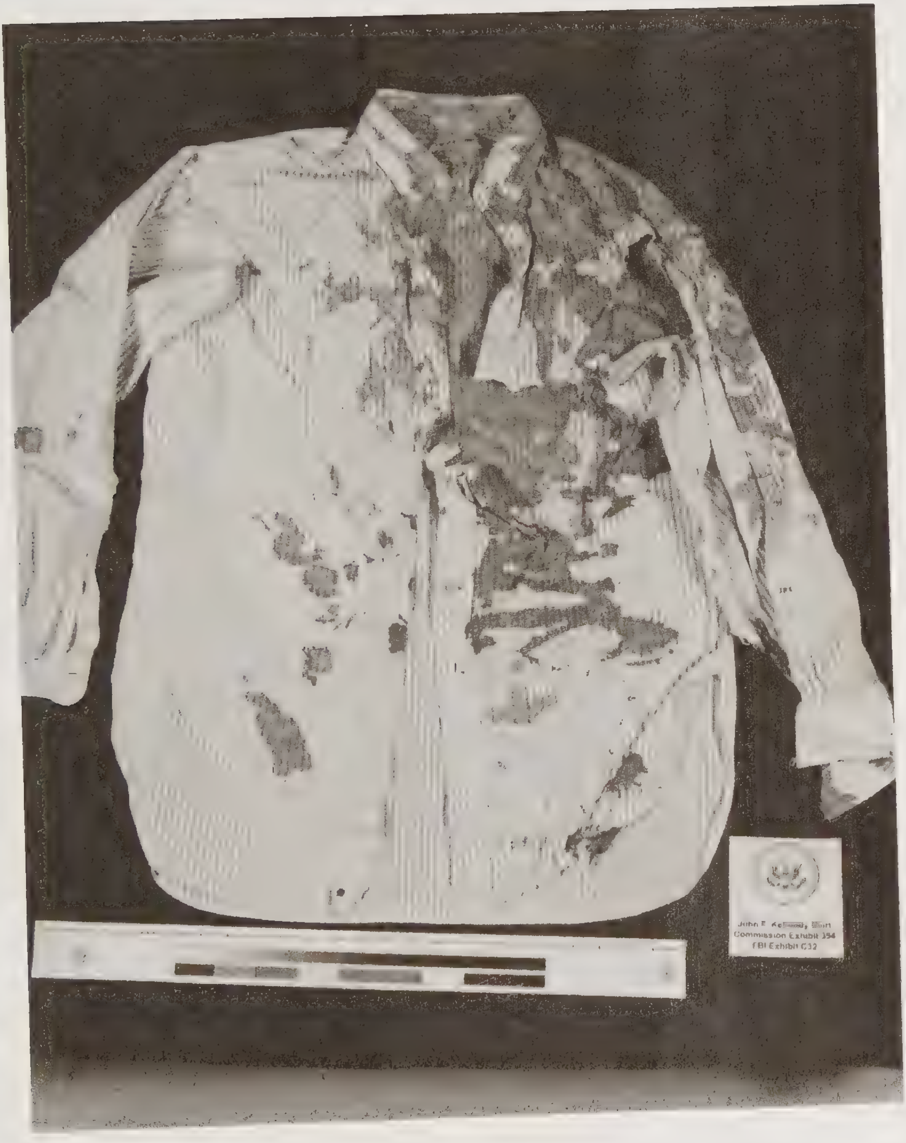
John F. Kennedy Shirt
Commission Exhibit 394
FBI Exhibit C32

"...everything around them has been built from blood, the earth and the heavens fashioned—literally—from the dismembered body of a murder victim.

"The universe as crime scene: it is an unsettling story, full of strangeness, violence, and contradictions, a tale whose truths must be felt rather than merely explained and understood."

Neil S. Price

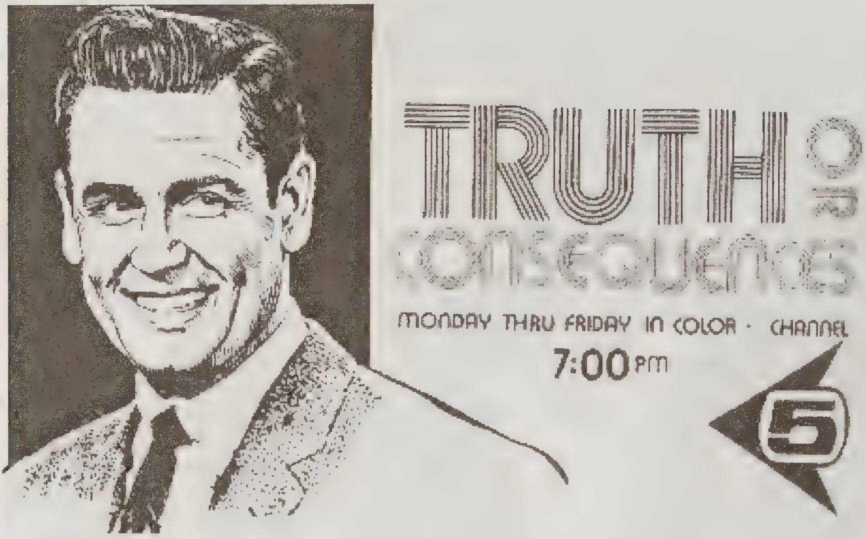
TRUTH
OR
CONSEQUENCES
MONDAY THRU FRIDAY IN COLOR · CHANNEL
7:00 PM
5

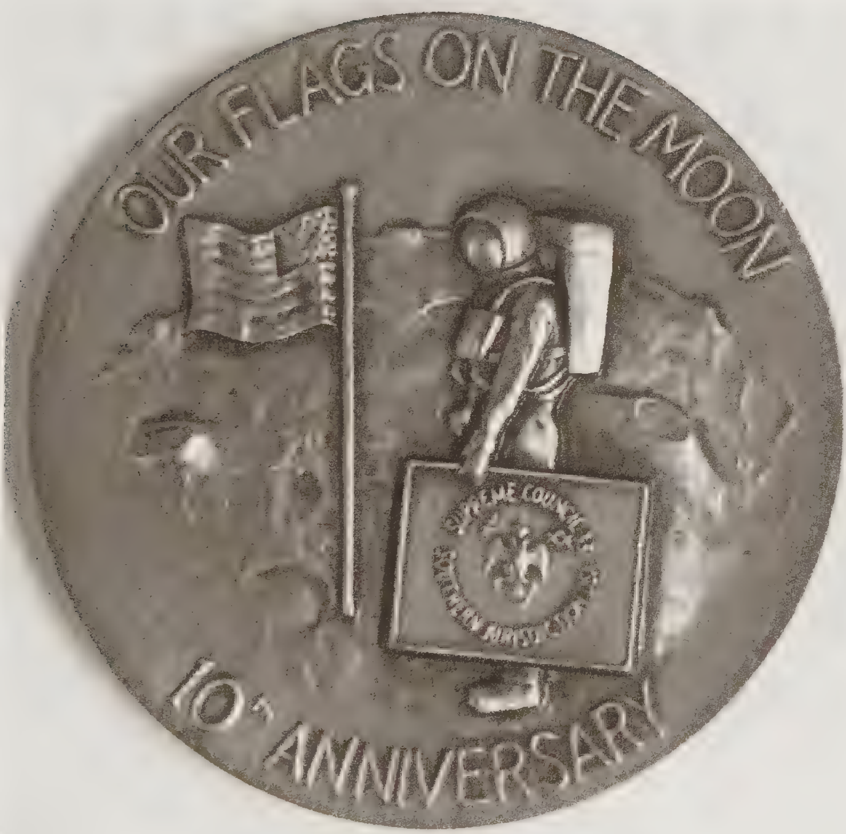
OUR FLAGS ON THE MOON
SUPREME COUNCIL
10th ANNIVERSARY

ABRACADABRA
ABRACADABR
ABRACADAB
ABRACADA
ABRACAD
ABRACA
ABRAC
ABRA
ABR
AB
A

Abracadabra is an Aramaic word
often written in the form of a triangle, denoting:

I create as I speak.
With words I create.

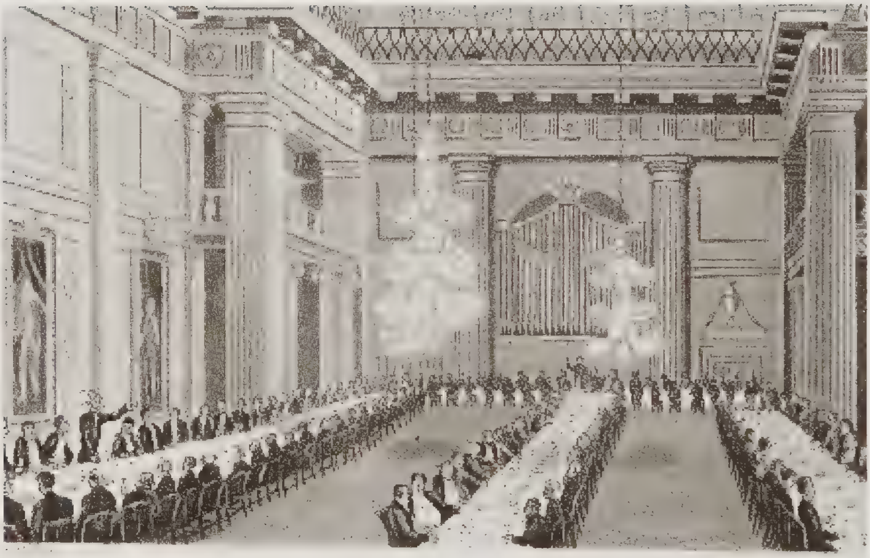

[illegible]

Massive Ordnance Air Blast (MOAB) is a non-nuclear US Air Force super-bomb.

The etymology and original meaning of the name Moab is unknown. The word is foreign to Hebrew. In the Old Testament Moab is the name of the incestuous son of Lot (Genesis 19:37). In the Plains of Moab, opposite Jericho (Numbers 22:1 ; 26:63 ; Joshua 13:32), the children of Israel had their last encampment before they entered the land of Canaan. Moses died in the land of Moab (Deuteronomy 34:5 Deuteronomy 34:6).

The MOAB bomb was developed by Albert L. Weimorts of the United States Air Force. In German the word *wei* denotes white. In French the word *mort* denotes death. Weimort = White death. [2]

---

[2] ...the Massive Ordnance Air Blast...nicknamed the "mother of all bombs." (*New York Times*, Dec. 25, 2005, Section 1, Page 41). Moab is the county seat of Grand County and a regional center of southeastern Utah. Known variously as Grand Valley and Mormon Fort, the majority of its residents have been Mormons since its founding in 1880.

"The society of the spectacle had begun everywhere in coercion, deceit, and blood, but it promised a happy path...

"Now it no longer says: 'What appears is good, what is good appears.' It simply says, 'It is so.' It admits frankly that it is no longer essentially reformable, though change be its very nature in order to transmute for the very worst every particular thing. It has lost all its general illusions about itself."

Guy Debord
The Society of the Spectacle
Preface to the Fourth Italian Edition

"Debord's early distinction between the concentrated and diffuse forms of spectacular organization is abandoned in favor of a single category: the integrated spectacle...'When the spectacle was concentrated, the greater part of surrounding society escaped it; when diffuse, a small part; today, nothing. The spectacle has spread itself to the point where it now permeates all reality...this reality no longer confronts the integrated spectacle as something alien...

"Possessing 'all the means necessary to falsify...perception,' the spectacle 'is the absolute master of memories just as it is the unfettered master of plans which shape the most distant future.'

"...Debord argued that the 'vague feeling that there had been a rapid invasion which forced people to lead their lives in an entirely different way is now widespread...many see it...as something inevitable...the cycles of...simulation..."

Sadie Platt
The Most Radical Gesture

"For Facebook and Google and Instagram and Twitter, the business goal quickly became maximizing and monetizing human attention via addictive dopamine hits. Attention, they meticulously found, is correlated with emotional intensity, outrage, shock and provocation. Give artificial intelligence this simple knowledge about what distracts and compels humans, let the algorithms do their work, and the profits snowball. The cumulative effect — and it's always in the same incendiary direction — is mass detachment from reality...

"With each passing second online, news stories, graphic videos, incendiary quotes, and outrages demonstrate their stunning utility to advertisers as attention seizers, are endlessly tweaked and finessed by AI to be even more effective, and thereby prime our brains for more of the same. They literally restructure our minds...

"And if you live in such a madhouse all the time, you will become mad. You don't go down a rabbit-hole; your mind increasingly is the rabbit hole — rewired that way by algorithmic practice...But the thing about algorithms and artificial intelligence is that they don't rest, they have no human flaws, they exploit every weakness we have, and have already taken over. This is not a future dystopia in which some kind of AI robot takes power and kills us all. It is a dystopia already here — burrowed into our minds, literally disabling the basic mental tools."

Andrew Sullivan
Substack.com

The largest and longest-lived of the devils was the Great God Power, who sanctioned all behavior that was successfully conducted.

Contents

Preface........24
Prologue: A Black Jack Progression: 2(00)1 — (20)21........27

Part I: Parallel Latitudes 58

Twilight Language: An Interview........59
The Psychic Highway........117
The Willard Factor........122
Anubis: Overlord of the Cosmic Graveyard........141
"Little Egypt"........147
FLDR........157
Pike Bites the Dust........162
The Moab Monolith........166

Part II: A Slow Music 174

King-Kill/33 Fifty-Eight Years Later........175
9/11 Terror as Alchemical Ritual........235
The "Literary Game" of the Rosicrucian Brotherhood........246
The Tarot Card Killer........254
Virginia Tech Terror 33........268
"Batman Massacre" Aurora Colorado........275
Necromancy in Parkland........287
End-Time Burnout........293
The Joker........303
El Paso Cielo........306
Satanic Pederast Rings in Legend and Reality........310
Route 91 Harvest Massacre........322

Part III: Pharmakos 336

Preface

"It was (Martin) Heidegger who first had the audacity to trace the accumulating ills of modern society to a steady deterioration of human sensibilities with regard to the wonder of things in their sheer radiant existence, the miracle of Being that gives all things that are.

"The cultures of the West gradually lost their capacity to mediate and develop this sensibility, the core of truly human existence; the consequent hollowing out of our traffic with beings is manifest both in the way our care for what is has curdled into the manipulation of things as tools, and in the way our communities have devolved into impersonal structures of social management and exploitation. All this, as a result of a fall away from the authentic expression of Being..." [3]

This work, *Twilight Language,* could perhaps serve as a transcendent voyage to a reawakened comprehension of how our experience of Creation has been purloined, and how our human *being* can be restored.

The acquisition of comprehension leading to an "authentic expression of being," is possible, but so arduous and daunting given our inhabitation in and of this time, that it is mainly, if not exclusively, a blessing bestowed by grace unearned, rather than a titanic labor undertaken by *ubermenschen.*

And as the smart ship grew
In stature, grace, and hue,
In shadowy silent distance grew the Iceberg too. [4]

In these pages we are engaged in the study of the nature of reality, in search of a counter-modern retrieval of radiant human *being* amidst the wonders of Creation, against the defection encoded in and abetted by Twilight Language which, in a preponderance of cases, is a departure from authentic apprehension and expression of verisimilitude, into a degraded burlesque of communication which repudiates the ontological search for knowledge of ourselves as images of the divine, within the natural world of wonder.

---

[3] Paul DeHart, *Aquinas and Radical Orthodoxy*, p. 6

[4] Thomas Hardy, "The Convergence of the Twain"

Human beings have been partakers of this debased language which has been codified by the western secret societies such as the early Rosicrucians, and further eroded by post-modern advertising, radio, "rock," cinema, Internet and news media. Inside this psychic pressure cooker, true apprehension of Being and Creation is rendered unobtainable. As a consequence of this Intentional Processing, men and women are radically diminished — experiencing the reduction of their existence to the level of post-human consumers of imitation phenomena, rather than instauration as *imago Dei* living the immanence of divine creation.

The decay is reflected in indices of rising levels of loss of memory and cognitive acuity, divorce, abortion, suicide and "random violence," as well as in our profound disengagement from human relationships and communion, amidst an artificial world simulated by signs conveying constant messages of avarice, degeneration, incapacity, sterility and death.

Twilight Language is the visible spectrum of the occult imperative. It is rendered invisible through our willful forgetfulness — the price we pay to maintain a sliver of comfort and self-satisfaction within the sorcerous system of things.

Consumption of the knowledge and branding of Twilight Language (as opposed to the study and analysis of its function as neuro-linguistic programming), is an act of enthrallment, not liberation. Participants in The Process situate greater knowledge of Twilight Language in a continuum of thrilling jolts to their seriously impaired and dulled autonomic nervous systems, like narcotic addicts who increase their dosage to obtain the same level of serenity first experienced with the ingestion of a lower dose.

Consequently, this book can either be an empowering map for sleuths seeking emancipation from simulation, or a further descent into psychological and spiritual bondage on the part of those who partake of this writing mainly to obtain a more thrilling shock of recognition concerning their own demise — a shock that will eventually dissipate and require yet another unprecedented jolt, and then another, and another…

Many of the people stewed in morbid conspiracy theory suffer the effects of the mental contagion they imagine they are decoding. The Process ends when the nervous system becomes too anesthetized and stupefied to experience further stimulation. This is the Black Jack state of 2(00)1.

Theater of the Clown Priests of Zuni

"...the clowns--priests annually elected from the membership of the Kâ'-kâ, and disguised as monsters, with warty, wen-eyed, pucker-mouthed pink masks and mud-bedaubed equally pink bodies. First appear the dancers, some fifty of them, costumed and masked with such similarity that individuals are as indistinguishable as the birds or the animals they conventionally represent are from each other. Large-jawed and staring-eyed demons of one kind or another marshal them into the open plaza of the village under the guidance of a sedate unmasked priest bearing sacred relies and prayer-meal. One of the demons sounds a rattle and howls the first clause in the song stanza; then all fall into line, all in equal time sing the weird song, and go through the pantomime and dance which invariably illustrate its theme.

"When four verses have been completed, the actors, bathed in perspiration, retire to their *estufa* to rest and pray, while the priest-clowns appear with drum, cabalistic prayer-plumes and the paraphernalia of guess-games.

"They begin the absurdest, most ingenious and witty of buffoonery and raillery, generally managing, nevertheless, to explain during their apparently nonsensical dialogues, the full meanings of the dance and song — the latter being often couched in archaic or jargonistic terms utterly incomprehensible to others than the initiated among the audience..." [5]

---

[5] Clowns, Priests, and Festivals of the Kâ`-kâ, "Zuñi Breadstuff," Millstone 10, no. 8 (1885): 141-44.

Prologue

A Black Jack Progression: 2(00)1 — (20)21

This book is not a how-to manual to prevent being alchemically processed by the Cryptocracy. One cannot prevent a disease that has already metastasized. Neither is it a "wakeup call." Since the Gateway Year 2001, the majority of Americans have been processed as initiates. They are "Masons on sight," i.e. members of the secret society without knowing it.

A "wakeup call' presupposes that people are asleep. They are only partly so. In their waking stages they intuit that the Cryptocracy in the United States engages in human sacrifice and occult process. This thrills them and they keenly anticipate more thrills.

At this stage in history, America is a carnival-sideshow thrilldrome and "We the People" vie for a front row seat. Eternal salvation, the pursuit of truth and freedom—all that takes a back seat, despite the rhetoric.

The alchemical processing of humanity is ahead of schedule. People are becoming less human and far more numb and easily misdirected, as the Reign of Dead Matter appears on the horizon.

Reality, facts and truth are dispensable in the high echelons of the Cryptocracy. Sorcery entails a calculus in which reality, facts and truth are whatever the sorcerer declares them to be.

According to allegations in Ariel Sabar's book *Veritas: A Harvard Professor, a Con Man and the Gospel of Jesus's Wife* (Random House, 2020), one of the principals who was allegedly instrumental in promoting the "Jesus Had a Wife" papyrus fragment hoax, was Karen King, Hollis Professor of Divinity at Harvard University. In a review of Sabar's book, James Lasdun states concerning King's alleged co-conspirators in the hoax:

"She had little interest in hearing what Sabar had found out...Nor did she offer any mea culpas when her fragment was discredited. You could read this as the product of a lofty post modern sensibility, unbound by crude categories of true and false. King's statements over the years certainly support that. 'History is not about truth but about power relations,' she wrote in one paper. Sticklers for the former were guilty of 'fact fundamentalism.'

"But such relativism, for her, was never an end in itself. It was always in the service of a larger goal, and from the beginning of her career that goal was unabashedly religious...A gospel revealing Mary Magdalene as not just Jesus's disciple but also his wife would restore...forfeited sexuality. If it turned out to be genuine, so much the better. But even if it didn't, might it not do some good all the same..." [6]

In the non-Gnostic, orthodox Christian theology of the Bible this legerdemain falls under two categories. The first is *mendacium officiosum* (the officious lie; the helpful lie; lying "for our own good" to "assist us into illumination").

Jacob conveyed to his father Isaac the "helpful" lie that he was his first born son (Genesis 27:19). The seventeenth century theologian Thomas Brooks notes that Jacob told Isaac an officious lie, after which: "Jacob hardly ever had a merry day, a good day after it; for God followed him with a variety of troubles, and his sorrows came posting in, one after another, even to his dying day, that both himself and others might see what bitterness is wrapped up in officious lies...(St.) Augustine stoutly asserts that we are not to tell an officious lie though it were to save all the world....

"Nepos reported of Epaminondas, a nobleman of Thebes and a famous warrior, that he would never lie in jest nor in earnest, either for his own or another's gain. This refined heathen will one day rise in judgment against such kind of Christians who take a pleasure in officious lies."

The most common occult lie is *mendacium perniciosum*, pernicious lying intended to defraud or cheat. There is no occult imperium without rampant *mendacium perniciosum*. If it is successfully conducted it becomes a "truth" of consensus "reality." This is the might-is-right winner's creed. The Christian counter-culture says otherwise: it is better to be a loser in this world than a liar. Jeremiah loathed and abominated liars to such an extent that he chose to live in the wilderness than among them (Jeremiah 9:2-8).

---

[6] James Lasdun, *London Review of Books*, September 24, 2020, p. 8. The *New York Times* lent support to the papyrus hoax, cf. *Times*, September 19, 2012. The "Jesus Had a Wife" papyrus fragment was allegedly forged and conceived by Walter Fritz, a German-American, who, according to Mr. Sabar's book, produced "hot wife" pornographic films starring Fritz's wife, a series of men, and on occasion, Fritz himself. Mrs. Fritz "had her own website that jointly celebrated 'sluthood,' and, of all things, the teachings of Jesus. The latter are given a distinctly Gnostic spin: 'That's why Jesus says: The Kingdom of Heaven Is Within You! It means: find your own reality within, then you will know it all.' References to Aleister Crowley...and even Karen King's translation of the Gospel of Mary, appear in the couple's online writings and videos." (Lasdun, p. 6).

What is “the Reign of Dead Matter”? Is it “inevitable”?

In the summer of 2020 Elon Musk expressed anxiety to Maureen Dowd of the *New York Times* over the possibility that Silicon Valley oligarchs may be “summoning the demon.” In this connection he informed Dowd that he believed machines will surpass human intelligence before 2025, at which time “things” will start to “get...weird.” [7]

Machines = Dead Matter.

“Inevitable”? Can the present be colonized by “the future”? If so, then yes. But what is the future if not a unit of measurement of time, and as Frank Wilczek has observed, “…measurement is a disruptive process, which disturbs the thing being measured.”

Concerning His followers, Jesus Christ proclaimed, “He that believeth on me, the works that I do, shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do...” (John 14:12). Jesus must have had very few actual followers in the America of the twentieth century, because after the Creation and Destruction of Primordial Matter (atomic incineration) at the 33rd degree Trinity Site in New Mexico (the “Land of Enchantment”), in 1945, it was the Killing of the King rite at masonic Dealey Plaza, near the Triple Underpass and on the 32nd degree of north parallel latitude, on November 22, 1963, that *catapulted our nation into a psychic Oz from which we have yet to emerge. The virtuoso managers of the once-and-future-America-as-crime-scene, have gone from victory to victory,* in what until recently was supposed to have been “a Christian nation.”

If this writer has learned anything over the course of more than forty years of sleuthing secret languages and coded messages, mass shootings and serial killings, it is that a unit of the Cryptocracy inside the United States government propitiates dark forces with human sacrifices, such as occurred with Son of Sam, Hillside Strangler, Double Initial, Columbine High School, the Aurora Colorado theater, and in Las Vegas, in front of the shimmering pomps and sleazy props of Pharaonic Egypt.

---

[7] *New York Times*, July 25, 2020. In the play and movie "Harvey" by Mary Chase, a character named Dowd has an evanescent fairy companion, a giant rabbit who renders him invulnerable to harm.

Law enforcement in this country did not arrest and convict the actual killers of John or Bobby Kennedy, Martin Luther King or Malcolm X. The elite perpetrators of the September 11, 2001 attacks, the rapists and suffocaters of the little girls of Rochester, New York; the planners of the Aurora shootings, the perps and commanders of the Las Vegas mass-murder, have all walked free.

Except for the Swartzentruber Amish and members of cognate "primitive" Anabaptist groups, certain non-Amish off-grid wilderness folks, and that rare breed who can live *in* a city without being *of* the city, the vast majority of those who reside in North America, the British isles, Ireland, Europe, Canada, Australia and New Zealand, are occult-processed to such an extent that they have the status of occult initiates.

The masses of people have been immersed in enough twilight language communication that many can see it for what it is, though in most cases they will not admit this to themselves or others.

This is not a book of who to blame for this state of affairs: Jews, blacks, immigrants, rednecks, Rothschilds or Republicans. The "blame," if one may use such a word in this context, is fairly evenly distributed among the millions of human beings who choose to comprise the United States of Amnesia, of Apathy; of eerie indifference.

"Just a Little Bit Crazy"

Howling Madness Spouted After Sept. 11, 2001

"We Have Forgotten How to Hate"

"Today I will surprise you by complaining about how we have forgotten how to hate. The proper response to the cowardly brutes who perpetrated the horrific attacks against America is to hate them with every fiber of our being and purge ourselves of any morsel of sympathy which might seek to understand their motives. The only way to react to incorrigible evil is to wage an incessant war against it...and to hope they find no rest, neither in this world nor in the next...the purpose of our hatred is not revenge, but preservation of justice...we track them down because G-d at Sinai entrusted us with the promotion of justice, turning the jungle into a civilized society....

"Only if we hate the truly evil passionately will we summon the determination to fight them fervently. Odd and uncomfortable as it may seem, hatred has its place...Let us make sure, therefore, that we never make the mistake of forgiving those whose sin is so inextricably woven with their rotten character that the two can never be separate."

— Shmuel Boteach, the Lubavitcher Rabbi of Oxford University.

Americans Will Welcome a Police State

"Probes from the 1970s investigations led by Sen. Frank Church...have crippled intelligence gathering and covert operations...Human intelligence capabilities suffered as CIA agents wishing to pose as journalists or recruit informants with criminal backgrounds face a daunting internal approval process...unshackle our intelligence agencies.

"The absurd rules aimed at...preventing U.S. involvement in assassinations have no place...Americans will greet wider surveillance, detention for questioning...and many other precautions with relief and unified public support."

— Daniel J. Popeo, Washington Legal Foundation

Don't Rule Out Using Nuclear Weapons

"In the excellent words of Paul Wolfowitz, deputy secretary of defense, we must 'end states who sponsor terrorism.'...It must be fought with the most effective weapons we possess (a few weeks ago, Rumsfeld refused, correctly, to rule out nuclear weapons). And it must be fought in a manner that secures victory as quickly as possible...regardless of the countless innocents caught in the line of fire. These innocents suffer and die because of the action of their own government in sponsoring the initiation of force against America..."

— Leonard Peikoff, Ayn Rand Institute, in a full page advertisement published in the *New York Times*, October 2, 2001.

Ally with Drug Cartels and the Russian Mafia

"We need to be really focused, really serious, and just a little bit crazy...terrorists and their supporters need to know that from here forward we will do whatever it takes...it takes a home-grown network to destroy a home-grown network...

"Actually, we would enlist the drug cartels. They have the three attributes we need: they know how to operate as a covert network and how to root out a competing network, such as Mr. bin Laden's. They can be bought and know how to buy others.

"And they understand that when we say we want someone 'dead or alive' we mean 'dead or dead.'

"The Cali cartel doesn't operate in Afghanistan. But the Russian mafia sure does, as do various Afghan factions, drug rings...Something tells me Mr. Putin, the Russian president and former K.G.B. spymaster, has the phone number of the guy in the Russian mafia who knows the guy in the Afghan cartels who knows the guy who...knows where Mr. bin Laden is hiding.

"It is going to be that kind of war...an underground network you fight with moles and exterminators....right now is the season of hunting down people..."

— Thomas Friedman, *New York Times* columnist, winner of the National Book Award and the Pulitzer Prize. *New York Times,* September 28, 2001.

The Twin Tower Game of 21

"The appearance of the Sentinel from '2001' at the beginning of the year 2001 and the century it symbolizes (the 21st), marks the symbolic end of the preparatory-processing phase intended to program us into accepting the appearance of the devil himself as our presiding Overlord...The process...culminates in a hermetic game of hazard or 'chance,' 21..This principle corresponds to...the 2001 gateway to the '21' epoch." *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare 2001*, published July 2001, pp. 15-16.

The attack on the World Trade Center is represented in the Rider-Waite Tarot cards by the number 16 Tower card, and the attack on the five-sided Pentagon by the Tarot's number five of Pentacles. Sixteen plus five equals twenty-one.

The Rider-Waite Tarot deck was first published in 1910 by Rider and Co. in Great Britain. It was designed by the English Freemason Arthur Edward Waite (1857-1943). Waite was the author of *The Holy Kabbalah: A Mystical Interpretation*; *A New Encyclopedia of Freemasonry*, and *The Secret Tradition in Freemasonry: An Analysis of the Inter-Relation Between the Craft and the High Grades*. Waite was one of the founders of the Order of the Golden Dawn.

The number 16 assigned to the Tower card symbolizes the so-called *sectio aurea* ("Golden Section"), Golden Ratio or Golden Number, known as *Phi* (after the 21st letter in the Greek alphabet).

Since the early Greeks, a ratio of length to width of approximately 1.6 has been considered the most aesthetically pleasing in the construction of monumental architecture. Fibonacci numbers are also anchored by 1.6. The ratio of successive Fibonacci numbers gets continuously closer to this "Golden Ratio of Phi." No matter what two numerical values are used, if Fibonacci terms are employed to continue the series, the ratio of the two terms will always be the Golden Ratio of 1.6 etc.

The same is true for the Lucas numbers: 1, 3, 4, 7, 11, 18, 29, 49 etc. The Lucas sequence is made in the same manner as Fibonacci numbers. One obtains each number by adding together the two previous (1 + 3 = 4; 3+ 4 = 7 etc.). If we take pairs of Lucas numbers and divide the higher by the lower we get the same first two 1 6 numbers every time: 18/11 = 1.6363.

29/18 = 1.6111. 47/29 = 1.6206, ever more progressively approaching the Golden Mean (1.6180339887).

In other words, all of these mathematical roads lead to the basic building block of 1.6, which the Kabbalist Waite represented as 16 in his depiction of the downfall of the Grand Architect's construction, i.e. the fall of the Tower of Babel and all subsequent Babels.

All that goes up must eventually come down, but in most cases the fall is the slow crumbling of decay. Whereas, what is built with god-like conceit—the occult "Edifice Complex"—will fall catastrophically. If Freemasons know this, then why do they continue to propitiate their "Grand Architect" and their rivalry with God? We would answer, conceit does not necessarily imply ignorance. The greatest deviltry is performed fully conscious of the consequences. Truth or consequences = the 33rd degree.

The downfall of the tower in the inferno of September 11 (9/11) is the 911 emergency call to the psyche of the Group Mind, unleashing imprisoned energy. A burst of illuminated consciousness was released on 9/11. Properly channeled and directed, this Group Mind energy is harnessed to produce conditions for the imposition of an even more enormous and conceited tower. Every successive Babel is more towering than the previous one, thus does the imposing empire of the Grand Architect "build bigger" from out of the ruins of the old.

The only thing not destroyed in the towering inferno is the principle that built it, symbolized by the number 11, which stays the same even when written upside down. This principle is further elaborated in alchemical imagery by the salamander, the legendary creature that paradoxically thrives in fire.

At the other end of the equation is the five-sided Pentagon, representing both the cosmic force of the five-pointed "blazing star" which, according to Scottish Rite Supreme Commander Albert Pike symbolizes for the Freemasons the "dog star" Sirius, and which was personified in Egypt as *Set-An* (Satan); as well as by the door through which *Set-an*'s power manifests on earth, in the form of the exploitation of the feminine principle of "wounded but undying Nature," under the occult veil of Isis: she who bleeds and is not injured; she who bleeds and does not die. *The divine menstruant is represented numerically by the mean number of days in the menstrual cycle, five.*

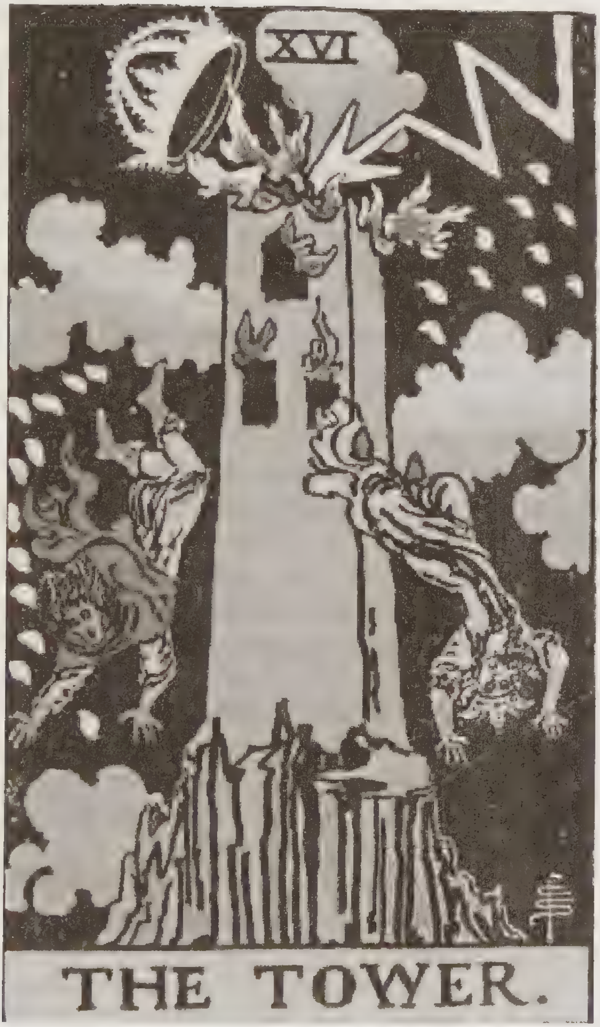

The union of the exploding phallic tower (16) and the wounded but functioning pentagon (5) comprises an equation totaling 21, e.g. the point in the flow of time where the process manifests—the 2(00)1 gateway to the 21st century epoch—the age appointed for the corporeal manifestation of the Overlord in “masonic progression”: from twenty years ago in 2001, to 2021, where the Overlord walks among us only partially concealed under a flimsy and threadbare cloak which is becoming progressively more transparent, and whose civic acceptance is prophesied to be virtually universal.

According to Gordon Moog of the United Supreme Grand Chapter of Mark and Royal Arch Masons, "The symbolism of Passing the Veils is that enlightenment which comes from Masonic progression...the entire object of alchemic art 'is the uncovering of the inner faculty of insight and wisdom and the removal of the veils intervening between the mind, and dividing it from its hidden Divine root'...the lifting of each veil is accomplished by giving a password..."

This magnum opus represents a departure from the incremental processing of the masses which has hitherto, with a few spectacular exceptions, been the Cryptocracy's modus operandi. Recently it became the process of conditioning through climax, where timing is key. It was necessary to initiate an anti-climax, a planetary false alarm in the form of the Y2K panic, which hundreds of millions of people were duped into believing:

"In relation to the end of one millennium and the beginning of the new one, we see the familiar outline of anti-climax and climax. A legion of false prophets and con-men, who wore an anti-Establishment mantle, but whose views were trumpeted by the Establishment, predicted financial collapse in 1999 and the 'end of civilization as we know it' in 2000, and these soothsayers raised both the physiological and psychological adrenaline of the masses, in some cases to fever pitch in what became an anti-climax of the apocalypse.

"...But the Cryptocracy had rather clearly, through the medium of its anointed prophets, such as Arthur C. Clarke, signaled to initiates and those percipients whose alertness is sufficient to qualify them as self-initiates, that 2001 would serve as the climax entry point for the epoch of human alchemy..." [8]

The miscued *goyim,* with their charlatan Nostradamus, were paralyzed as they passively spectated at the end of 1999 and the dawn of 2000, looking for discernment concerning the future of nature. The 2001 advertising slogan of the giant, Frankenfood agri-business, ADM (Archer-Daniels Midland) gives an initiate's hint at the deterministic contours of the Merlinesque "inevitability" game that is being played. Their corporate motto is, "ADM: The Nature of the Future."

---

[8] Hoffman, *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare*, p. 13.

Writing in April 2001 (and published in the July edition of *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare),* we analyzed the making of the atomic bomb from the point of view of occult ceremony. We further cited the propagation of the theory of evolution in fashioning the Cryptocracy's degraded "New Man." In the aftermath of the attacks on the World Trade Center and the Pentagon, Evolutionism's high-priest, Harvard Prof. Stephen Jay Gould, used atomic terminology to refer to the ruins of the Trade Center as "ground zero" and to make reference to "the largest human structure ever destroyed in a catastrophic moment." (*New York Times*, September 26, 2001).

Prof. Gould's arcane "ground zero" cue, (which is now the standard term for the devastated Trade Center site), leads us to a key dictum of atomic physics, the point at which Merlin meets Einstein, "Time relations among events are assumed to be first constituted by the specific physical relations obtaining between them."

This dictum is Camelot arcana restated in scientific jargon, thereby making it more palatable to the post-modern mentality that would scoff at Merlin but embrace Einstein. The underlying principle is the same, however: "...to orient us to the space-time conjunction necessary to the maintenance of the once-and-future inevitability of the Cryptocracy's Camelot allegory." [9]

Gould's imagery recalls that other "largest human structure ever destroyed in a catastrophic moment," the Tower of Babel. Perhaps he was covertly signaling that those who built the World Trade Center were involved in idolatry, because the edifice was another Babel, the "largest human structure ever destroyed in a catastrophic moment" (since Babel).

One peers at the ground zero made at the World Trade Center and glimpses the ruins of a modern Babel, summoning Biblical eschatology. The apocalyptic age, the 21 hazard era, came not in the snare of 1999/2000 as focused for the *goyim* by the Establishment and its useful idiots, but in Year One of the final millennium, at the 21st century gateway which is the 2(00)1 space (time) odyssey to the greatest battlefield of all, the cosmic war between alien scale and human scale, between the anti-Christ reign of number and the Holy Spirit realm of poetic serendipity.

---

[9] Ibid, p. 16.

All this was *consciously* lost on our yahoo friends and neighbors who were deep into a predictable, first-stage pattern of a formulaic spasm of "patriotic" war-fever and self-righteous drivel post-September 11, 2001, through the early stages of the Afghanistan and Iraq invasions. We qualify their perception with the word "consciously" because, as in the aftermath of the Cryptocracy's last great climax in the management of masonic progression—the JFK assassination—there is a sub-rosa, shadow side to the flag-waving persona propelled out of the smoldering ruins of the Twin Towers' "double day" of 11 September, which planted seeds of doubt and wonder deep in the subconscious of Americans.

Of course 21st century Americans are not 1950s Americans; they have been run through the mill that is the psychedelic funhouse ritual rollercoaster, ever since that other "double day" on the calendar of America mystica, the 22nd of November, 1963. In whose wake:

"...the American people were forced to confront a scary alternative reality, the reality of a shadow government over which they had neither control or knowledge. The shepherding process was thus accelerated with a vengeance. Avant-garde advertising, music, politics and news would hereafter depict (especially in the electronic media)— sometimes fleetingly, sometimes openly—a "shadow side" of reality, an underground, amoral 'funhouse' current associated with extreme sex, extreme violence and extreme speed. The static images of the suit-and-tie talking heads of Establishment religion, government, politics and business were subtly shown to be subordinate to the Shadow State, which the American people were gradually getting a bigger glimpse of, out of the corner of their collective eye. The interesting function of this phenomenon is that it simultaneously produces both terror and adulation and undercuts any offensive against it among percipients, which does not possess the same jump-cut speed and funhouse ambiance." [10]

The same freeze-thaw cryonic process is gnawing into the official fabric of the events of September 11. In the subterranean layers of the psyche of even the most convinced Bush-booster and Fed-fan was a corner-of-the eye glimpse of the twin at work. An ancient tradition of occult governance holds that the actual ruler does not show himself until his power becomes absolute. Instead, such a ruler's invisible, omniscient presence pervades the land and all consciousness like a shadow.

---

[10] Ibid, p. 86.

This sense of hidden rulers behind the figurehead presidents and prime ministers has bored deep into the consciousness of the American people. The attack on the New York Towers and the District of Columbia Pentagon, constitute an electrifying, lightning-like revelation that always accompanies the disruption of mundane routine when overturned by sudden chaos and explosive realignment.

In the presence of this overthrow, the reaction in the percipient is a burst of momentary, X-ray like perception—illuminating what was hidden by glimpsing it in a flash of insight—such as was experienced at Ground Zero at the site/sight of the first atomic incineration.

The shocking perception is subsequently suppressed and denied through the chatter of innumerable talking-head spin doctors, who impose approved "solutions" and expert "explanations."

Hence, slowly and inexorably, excruciating tension builds between the public world of the suit-and-tie solvers-and-explainers with their phonograph-record parroting of the restricted official line — and the Sirius B-side of the record, with its shadows and spectres which hint at the dark truth about the Towering Inferno and the wounded Pentagon and for that matter, the wounded head of John Fitzgerald Kennedy.

A population torn between these two extremes may be said to mirror the psychiatric state termed "bipolar."

Since 2001 these insights have been leaked to the masses by the Establishment itself, in bits and pieces. The frigid 2001 Officialspeak which assailed us from every televiewer has been thawed. Truths about the attacks have flooded the public consciousness, long after effective counteraction has been rendered inoperable; thereby doubling the god-like awe in which the hidden rulers are held, until such time as their power is finally absolute. At that point in their game, the Overlord, "Black Jack," is set to assume public, universal, physical manifestation.

An unspoken, indeed, dare-not-be-spoken, insight was propelled in the psychic pressure cooker ignited on September 11, 2001: the impression that a hidden force was behind the

Pentagon and Trade Center Towers' "special operation," a force much bigger and more powerful than "Arab terrorists." This force was hypnotically suggested not so much by the actual person of the double bin Laden (Osama and Usama), but by the imagery which bin Laden's icon invoked, that of the turbaned seer from the East, whose crystal ball and oracular powers are foreshadowed rather than stated.

This was the trance state induced in the masses, who, in keeping with Revelation-of-the-Method elements outlined in *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare*, experience certain dream-like, hypnotic cues dropped by the media and the government, suggesting that in special operations of this type it is necessary that they should be deceived by their media and their government; indeed that it is necessary that high officials of the United States government lie to the American people:

"Special operations by their nature are cloaked in secrecy and deception making it impossible to know whether officials who discuss them obliquely are being completely candid." ("Bush Assures Hot Pursuit," *New York Times,* September 29, 2001, p. B4).

The bipolar made visible:

"Last week Secretary of Defense Donald Rumsfeld held a news conference in which he quoted Winston Churchill, 'In wartime truth is so precious that she should always be attended by a bodyguard of lies.' The Pentagon later issued a clarification that Rumsfeld did not mean to imply the government would lie. Yet that seems to be exactly what Rumsfeld was saying." (*Los Angeles Times,* October 11, 2001).

Rumsfeld did not mean to imply the government would lie. Yet that seems to be exactly what Rumsfeld was saying.

In addition to lying to us "for national security reasons," we have also been informed that the special operation, the "game of 21" and that which emanates from it in concentric rings, entail psychological warfare: "...the United States is planning extensive psychological operations..." (*New York Times,* October 3, 2001, p. B4). "The Pentagon also has begun deploying forces to mount psychological operations, or 'psy-ops'..." (*Wall Street Journal*, October 4, 2001, p. 1).

Where, in any of these reports, was there any assurance that the American people were not themselves targets of these operations? On the contrary, the fleeting allusions to the necessity of deception, psychological warfare and psy-ops would seem to hint that no one will be exempt in the mind games dragnet, least of all the taxpayers who fund it.

Psychological warfare operations were launched after September 11 to pre-empt revolt against continued U.S. collusion with the Israelis, and more seriously, revolt arising from inquiry into U.S. government involvement in the attacks.

Hints were dropped, ostensibly about bin Laden, but in fact concerning "our" own elite. For example, "The White House told the media to be careful of broadcasting videos of bin Laden or his lieutenants, saying they could contain coded messages..." (Associated Press, October 11, 2001). Yet when campaigners against Hollywood and Madison Avenue manipulation attempted to document the existence of coded messages and subliminals in Establishment videos and advertising, they were dismissed as paranoid cranks.

George W. Bush's own staffers were caught inserting subliminals into Bush advertisements during the presidential campaign. The American-based Cryptocracy regularly uses seemingly run-of-the-mill news conferences, book illustrations, audio recordings and films to send coded messages. The technique is as old as cryptography, as venerable as the 16th century painting, "Shepherds of Arcadia" by Nicolas Poussin, or of the Victorian artist Walter Sickert, who incorporated clues to the identity of the masonic Jack the Ripper killer in his "Camden Town" paintings.

Detecting the Great Game

Andrea Mitchell of NBC News reported on national television on September 19, 2001 that certain financiers had advance knowledge of the catastrophe and profited from the fall of airline, insurance and brokerage stocks through the purchase of "put options." Mitchell was a bit more authoritative than your average media dork, in that she was at that time the spouse of Federal Reserve Bank Chairman Alan Greenspan.

On September 10, thousands of put options on American Airlines were purchased on the Chicago exchange, worth over $4 million after September 11. Numerous put options were also placed on United Airlines stock in the week before September 11. Morgan Stanley Dean Witter & Co., which occupied 22 floors of the World Trade Center, had over 2,000 of its put options bought in the three trading days before 9/11. This compares with an average of only two dozen contracts per day in the first week of September. This deal too represents millions for the investors involved. A similar pattern was observed with Merrill Lynch & Co. stock, as well as insurance stocks. The identity of the investors has, as of this writing, not been divulged.

The firm that was used to place the put options on United Airlines was, until recently, managed by the man who served as the number three executive of the CIA, A.B. "Buzzy" Krongard, the former chairman of the A.B. Brown investment bank. A.B. Brown was acquired by Banker's Trust in 1997. As part of the merger, Krongard became Vice Chairman of Banker's Trust-AB Brown. In 1998 Krongard joined the CIA, and advanced rapidly to a position as special counsel to CIA Director George *Tenet*.

In addition to the money web in the respectable corporate world of high finance, there is the "evil twin" which spins a web of symbiosis in a mocking, carnival milieu. Ringling Brothers and Barnum and Bailey Circus traveled in two separate units, the Red Circus and the Blue Circus. The U.S. military's psychodrama teams are divided into the Red team and the Blue teams. The *Wall Street Journal* reported: "Mind Games...U.S. Military 'Red Teams' Adopt Enemy Identities..." (October 2, 2001 p. 1). The *Journal* stated that during these "mind games" the U.S. Military's Red team kills its own people, including women and children, then "seeds the landscape with the bodies...when the first reporters and CNN cameramen arrive... (they) announce..." that the enemy did it. (October 2, 2001 p. A12, column 2).

We asked a question in the immediate aftermath of September 11: how many of the System's top luminaries disappeared in the collapse of the World Trade Center, which was home to the New York offices of the FBI, the CIA, the Secret Service and the ATF? How many members of the elite survived the Pentagon crash, an attack which gave wide berth to Secretary of Defense Donald Rumsfeld's offices and the nerve centers of the Pentagon? (The "airliner" [or missile] struck a relatively thinly staffed portion of the Pentagon that had been undergoing renovation).

This writer has only been able to identify two of the System's top functionaries among the victims: the wife of U.S. Solicitor General Ted Olsen, who supposedly died on Flight 77, and

John O'Neill, retired FBI commander who was the intelligence chief in charge of Trade Tower security from his 23rd floor command post.

O'Neill had previously ran the 1993 World Trade Center bombing "investigation." However, like FBI commander William Sullivan who was shot to death by U.S. intelligence because he knew too much about the JFK assassination, O'Neill may have been allowed to perish because he knew a good deal more about FBI culpability in the 1993 bombing than was healthy:

"One of the largest acts of domestic terrorism in U.S. history was the 1993 bombing of the World Trade Center in New York. As it turned out, the FBI was fully aware of the bomb plot before the attack took place. The Muslim group involved had been infiltrated by Emad Salem, a former Egyptian intelligence agent who was hired by the FBI and ultimately paid $1 million. The FBI even provided the Egyptian with a timer for the bomb, prompting the *Chicago Tribune* to publish a report headlined: 'FBI Tipster Said He Built NY Bomb" (*Chicago Tribune*, December 15, 1993).

The Establishment quickly mocked and then dismissed as an "urban legend" the report that Israelis were tipped in advance of the attack on the Trade Center in Manhattan. The account was derided as coming from the "Arab rumor mill." The September 16, 2001 edition of the *Jerusalem Post* reported: "The Foreign Ministry in Jerusalem has so far received the names of 4,000 Israelis believed to have been in the areas of the World Trade Center and the Pentagon...Army Radio reported."

But no 4,000 Israelis have been reported missing by the American media. Did thousands of Judaic persons save themselves due to an advance warning, in part from an Israeli electronic message service? As reported by the Hebrew language newspaper *Ha'aretz*, in a story headlined, "Odigo says workers were warned of attack," we read:

"Odigo, the instant messaging service, says that two of its workers received messages two hours before the Twin Towers attack on September 11 predicting the attack would happen, and the company has been cooperating with Israeli and American law enforcement, including the FBI, in trying to find the original sender of the message predicting the attack...Odigo (is a) well-known Israeli instant messaging application." (*Ha'aretz,* October 1, 2001).

There have also been accounts ("urban rumors") of a group of Israelis videotaping the Trade Tower attacks as they happened. That report is also from *Ha'aretz* newspaper: "5 Israelis detained for 'puzzling behavior': "Five Israelis who had worked for a moving company based in New Jersey are being held in U.S. prisons for what the Federal Bureau of Investigation has described as 'puzzling behavior' following the terror attack on the World Trade Center in New York last Tuesday.

"The five are expected to be deported...The families of the five, who asked that their names not be released, said that their sons had been...kept in solitary confinement...The mother of one of the young men explained the chain of events as she understands it to *Ha'aretz*: she said that the five had worked for the company, which is owned by an Israeli, for between two months and two years.

"They had been arrested some four hours after the attack on the Twin Towers while filming the smoking skyline from the roof of their company's building...The (Israeli) Foreign Ministry said in response that it had been informed by the consulate in New York that the FBI had arrested the five for 'puzzling behavior.' They are said to have had been caught videotaping the disaster and shouting in what was interpreted as cries of joy and mockery." (*Ha'aretz*, September 17, 2001).

The possibility that these Israelis filmed the first impact, and were taken into custody by the FBI after an allegedly outraged witness caused the incident to be made public, fits a pattern.

Absent from the World Trade Center on September 11 was the Federal Reserve's New York President, William McDonough, who was in Switzerland at the time. Missing from Washington, D.C. on September 11 was Alan Greenspan who was also in Switzerland. Federal Reserve Governors Laurence Meyer (in China at the time); Edward Gramlich (visiting in Arizona) and Edward Kelley, who was "on vacation" at an undisclosed location, also missed the attack on New York and Washington D.C.

There are certain telltale indicators when a crime is an inside job. One of these is the failure of law enforcement to interview accessible witnesses who may have had contact with either the victims or the perpetrators. Ted Kaczynski, the "Unabomber," had been under FBI surveillance for years. We surmise that from its early stages the FBI was inside the Unabomber scenario. That is why, when a man matching descriptions of a radical environmentalist, turned up in Kaczynski's adopted hometown of Lincoln, Montana a few days after the arrest of Kaczynski, publicly espousing support for Kaczynski, the FBI did not bother to question or investigate the man. *Why would they? The FBI knew that Kaczynski's only accomplices were other government agents. There was no need to conduct an authentic investigation.*

Our investigation unearthed similar evidence of macabre indifference in the case of 9/11. We have spoken with a relative of a passenger on a flight departing Newark airport just after the hijacked United Flight 93 airliner departed for San Francisco. The passenger, a California executive in the publishing field, took time to look over the passengers on the doomed airliner bound for the earlier flight to California, to see if there anyone he knew. This eyewitness was not contacted by the FBI. His jet took off after the hijacked airliner, from a nearby gate. The FBI, while making a great show of "interviewing thousands" and following "tens of thousands of leads," didn't bother making contact with a prime witness, and others like him.

The year 2000 edition of *Criminal Acts Against Aviation*, published by the Federal Aviation Administration (FAA), cited bin Laden as a "significant threat to civil aviation, particularly to U.S. civil aviation." The warning was ignored by U.S. Law Enforcement. National Public Radio's Morning Edition reported on September 29, 2001 that the FBI knew before 9/11 that bin Laden-connected associates were training as pilots in the U.S. The U.S. spends $40 billion a year on the eleven intelligence agencies that comprise its huge secret police network; that's a total of $400 billion in the past ten years. Yet, the Bush Administration says it was taken by surprise.

On September 11 the "Arlington Road" script was implemented, as in the Oklahoma City ruse, where the patsy McVeigh was apprehended the day of the crime by means of self-incriminating license plates.

The Cryptocracy left no room for doubt as to who was to blame for the Trade Center and Pentagon attacks. *Within 10 minutes* of the second tower being hit, CNN declared Osama bin Laden had done it. Cell phones which were apparently impervious to interception only that morning, were suddenly yielding congratulatory phone calls to bin Laden's associates that afternoon.

By September 12 the U.S. government and media somehow had managed to obtain incriminating Arab-language flight manuals, Last Wills and Testaments of the hijackers, and copies of the *Quran* which turned up in the perpetrators' vehicles, or in luggage conveniently abandoned at Boston's Logan airport.

And what of the tale of quickly finding a passport bearing an alleged suicide bomber's real identity, in the vast World Trade Center rubble, before it had barely been sifted?

As in the Oklahoma City dramaturgy, self-incriminating "evidence" was swiftly and conveniently "discovered" in order to imprint the Group Mind with a lasting "first impression," while evidence of official involvement was made to disappear, such as where were the American military's air defense fighter jets after the first tower was attacked?

Placing the High Stakes Black Jack Wager

Those who engineer the reign of dead matter over humanity are virtuoso risk-takers. Placing the high stakes Black Jack wager is part of their DNA. On Monday, June 5, in the year 2006, on page A19 of the *New York Times*, the "newspaper of record" read by millions, the Cryptocracy inserted the following advertisement in the form of a news report for a highly disruptive, indeed revolutionary counter-narrative of the 9/11 terror attacks. [11] In an article that comprised nearly one-third of the page, the *Times* reported:

"Such was the coming-out for the movement known as '9/11 Truth,' a society of skeptics and scientists who believe the government was complicit in the terrorist attacks.

"In colleges and chat rooms, this band of disbelievers has been trying for years to prove that 9/11 was an inside job."

The article asked:

"...how the building at World Trade Center 7" (which wasn't hit by an aircraft) "collapsed like a ton of bricks."

---

[11] nytimes.com/2006/06/05/us/05conspiracy.html
The article that appeared in the print edition of the paper was titled, "For 9/11 Conspiracy Buffs, A Chance to Compare Notes." The same article online has a different headline, "500 Conspiracy Buffs Meet to Seek the Truth of 9/11." No imputation of wrong-doing or conspiracy is alleged concerning the author of the 2006 *New York Times* report.

The *New York Times* article of 2006 goes on to draw attention to incendiary facts that have been hotly denied by the *Times* and other legacy media ever since:

"...the military command that monitors aircraft 'stood down' on the day of the attacks" and "the towers did not collapse because of burning fuel and weakened steel but because of a 'controlled demolition' caused by pre-set bombs."

The *Times* went to far as to publicize a dissenting technical "report written by Steven E. Jones, a professor of physics at Brigham Young University (BYU) and the movement's expert in the matter of (building) collapse."

The "newspaper of record" even provided the correct Internet URL (which was an active link online in 2006), containing Dr. Jones' rigorous scientific critique of the official engineering analysis of the collapse of the Twin Towers that had been issued by the National Institute of Standards and Technology: physics.byu.edu/research/energy/htm7.html

(The link was removed some years later by BYU).

As of this writing, other than the assassination of the President of the United States in daylight in masonic Dealey Plaza, no spectacular crime has so stimulated the collective psyche of the American people as that which occurred on September 11, 2001. Consequently, it was a perilous Revelation of the Method gamble in 2006 for the Cryptocracy to point to the Internet location of the painstaking and meticulous critique by Prof. Steven E. Jones, a credentialed academic, of the 9/11 tale as told by the government and an overwhelming majority of the corporate media.

Here is a matter of life and death: establishing that the towers were brought down by explosives as part of a controlled demolition and not as a result of the impact of the two jet aircraft striking the "Twin Towers." Unraveling the official tale, and proceeding to apprehend and prosecute the actual planners, perpetrators and concealers of the terror attacks, would represent a solar high wind of cleansing power blown through America.

Consider this: less than six years after the September 11 attacks, on June 5, 2006 readers of the *New York Times* were handed a key to the puzzle palace. What did they do with it?

Next to nothing.

There was no great groundswell of sustained activism. After receiving this revelation, the millions of percipients continued their drowsy ramble deep into The Process, as the Black Jack players had gambled on them doing, cognizant that an astonishing revelation that does not produce a mighty movement arising in reaction to the alarming public manifestation of high crimes and misprisions, instills deeper hypnosis, paralysis, demoralization, misdirection and confusion in the target audience.

Howard Dean: Bush Knew

Memory refresh: the 2006 Revelation of the Method by the *New York Times* was preceded in 2003 by another.

Former Vermont Governor "Howard Dean, whose penchant for off-the-cuff comments has proved both a strength and political liability, is facing a new flap over suggestions that President Bush had advance knowledge of the September 11 terrorist attacks...

"Dean suggested Bush 'is suppressing evidence' that could aid the Kean Commission in its reconstruction of events leading to the terrorist attacks. Leaders of the commission — which is headed by former New Jersey Gov. Thomas H. Kean — have complained that the Bush administration has been too slow to provide access to key documents, and has intimidated witnesses by insisting that CIA and FBI observers attend sensitive interviews. The president has declined to turn over highly classified intelligence reports to the panel, despite threats of a subpoena (*Los Angeles Times,* December 9, 2003).

Diane Rehm: "Why do you think he (Bush) is suppressing that (September 11) report?"

Howard Dean: "I don't know. There are many theories about it. The most interesting theory that I''ve heard so far — which is nothing more than a theory, it can't be proved — is that he was warned ahead of time by the Saudis. Now who knows what the real situation is?" [12]

"Bush called it an 'absurd insinuation' to raise questions, as (Howard) Dean did recently, about whether the president had advance knowledge of the September 11 attacks." (Associated Press, December 15, 2003).

This statement by Mr. Dean, who at the time was former Vice-President Al Gore's anointed presidential candidate, and the insipid response from Bush, might signify that a bold gamble by the Establishment was afoot to leak the fact that the Bush administration was implicated in the 9/11 attacks.

---

[12] Transcript of remarks broadcast on the "Diane Rehm Show," NPR (National Public Radio), December 1, 2003.

The Fabulous Doublecross of His Satanic Majesty

A familiar pattern in the Revelation of the Method is to leak bits and pieces of evidence of criminal conspiracy and then ensure that the perpetrator gives vague answers, or talks around the subject, as George W. Bush did. The goal of the Revelation is to desensitize Americans to the fact of Bush's complicity in 9/11 by exposing them to an intermittent, occasionally dramatic, but mostly low-level buzz. By this conditioning process, awareness of Bush's connivance gradually becomes absorbed into the din of The Process, morphing into the sub-strata of the digital-psychedelic funhouse.

The slowly dawning revelation of Bush's treason becomes not a basis for indictment and prosecution, but a sideshow for the game zone's sarcastic management simulator, a macabre, yet perversely sexy rumor-mill that burnishes Bush's potency and aura, and plays on people's jaded sense of awe in the presence of a "Satanic Majesty" who commands such power that he can successfully mount a fabulous doublecross and still thrive.

The crimes of the Cryptocracy are leaked by the Cryptocracy itself, in part to trivialize them by embedding them within our high-speed electronic freakshow clown culture. 9/11 has become one such phenomenon and President George W. Bush's involvement in the conspiracy has morphed into a fetish of power, accompanied by the subconscious sense that, "If he did allow 9/11 to happen, he did so for our own good."

Consider the Pearl Harbor con. One of the first to penetrate that charade was John Toland in his 1982 book. *Infamy*. The *New York Times* passed sentence on the truth that Toland (and many others) uncovered, with this clever wordplay: "Toland said he had turned up evidence to conclude that Roosevelt had known in advance of Japan's impending attack but failed to inform the naval command in the Pacific in the hope of rousing America from its isolationism. This view put him (Toland) at odds with a series of official federal investigations and historians who said Roosevelt may have made errors in judgment but neither knew about nor encouraged the attack." *(New York Times* January 7, 2004, emphasis supplied).

Get the picture? 1. The Establishment instructs us to believe that Toland is wrong because he is "at odds" with an official consensus. 2. As damage control, the Establishment paradoxically concedes that something about the official line is flawed, but that this flaw consists only in "errors in judgment," not a criminal conspiracy.

In a similar vein, who today believes that, as William N. Grimstad phrased it, "one lone assassin and one very talented rifle bullet" were responsible for the assassination of President Kennedy? Yet the surviving conspirators were never brought to justice. The Cryptocracy has seen to it that while a JFK assassination conspiracy is broadly acknowledged, the issue has become so muddled that Americans have a dizzying sense that "everybody killed Kennedy" — the anti-Castro exiles as well as the pro-Castro Communists; the CIA as well as the KGB; the Mafia and the Birchers.

In these crimes, the role of the Society-of-the-Spectacle's Videodrome is a crucial factor in neutralizing the hunt for perpetrators, by incorporating chatter about a government conspiracy into the infotainment machine. One doesn't seriously call for detectives and prosecutors inside a carnival funhouse. Instead, one marvels in "shock and awe" at the perverse wonder of the spectacle.

The Twin Tower Game of 21 shapes us as part of the continuing process of human alchemy into devolved species, the vaunted "new man" of the early decades of the 21st century, who has since been coagulated into the contemporary laboratory phase of the suppression of nature, wherein recognition of the organic differences between humans possessed of XX chromosomes and those with XY, is proscribed hate speech. Very little of this process would have been possible had the murder pageants, ceremonial bombings and towering infernos been thoroughly and freely investigated, prosecuted and otherwise challenged by intrepid women and men holding positions of power and authority in journalism, law enforcement, the judiciary and the church.

But the wimp factor in the churches is off the meter. The fraud factor in the salons of intellect and the groves of academe is beyond calculation. We are admonished to love thy American special forces golem, to fall down before them in abject quivering idolatry, or fear, as the occasion demands.

With each case of the successful conduct of their spectacular public crimes, our not-so-hidden masters have been emboldened to proceed to the next stage of their civic diabolism. These thinly-veiled rites possess an inner dynamic which sweeps us along with the power of a psychic tide, in an explosion of communal conditioning which was given an incomparable boost from its 2001 launch pad. From the vantage of 2021, "Childhood's End" can no longer be said to be "hurtling toward us." *It's here.*

Freeze/Thaw: Reagan, Rumsfeld and Saddam

In this third decade of the 21st century Howard Dean is not so very infamous for asking in December of 2003 if "Bush knew." His query has merely smoldered. Mr. Dean gained brief infamy again with his observation that the world was no safer after Saddam Hussein had been captured in Iraq, than before. Which brings us to the other Revelation in the Method-that-is-their-Madness — the freeze/thaw process.

Prior to the American invasion of Iraq, the mountain of facts concerning Ronald Reagan and Donald Rumsfeld's alliance with Saddam Hussein were frozen solid. These facts almost never turned up as questions for Bush in any pre-Iraq-invasion presidential news conference of which we are aware. After the much-coveted Iraq invasion and occupation had been accomplished and the Zionists and "Christian" Zionists got what they wanted, the facts were thawed and headlines in Establishment newspapers blared, "Rumsfeld Made Iraq Overture in '84 Despite Chemical Raids" *(New Times,* December 23, 2003), and "Rumsfeld's '84 Visit was to Reassure Iraqis" *(Seattle Times* via *Washington Post*, December 19, 2003).

Too late! The hurly burlys done. This knowledge, publicized by the corporate media more than nine months after the invasion of Iraq had been accomplished, was at that point mostly ceremonial. It was deep frozen before the U.S. invasion of Iraq, then thawed by time-release after the war was launched. It functions as a kind of nose-thumbing at the peasants, "So Saddam used to be our ally. So what? It's none of your damn business, little man. Your business is to bleed and be taxed and stand in awe of the splendor of our five-pointed and six-pointed astral system."

Information that could have prevented the invasion is used after the invasion to "shock and awe" the minds of Americans.

The whispered reaction of the peasantry to the thawed facts is one of grudging admiration, "Wow, what a bunch of crooks, but hey, crooks *rule!*"

This psy-war component of American foreign policy is overlooked by the Left, which continues to ascribe the maintenance of support for Bush to antique propaganda methods pioneered by Fascist and Communist parties ninety years ago. The Establishment dismisses the reality of the government's psy-war with psychiatric jargon, [13] while a stew of competing conspiracy notions, often generated by the System itself to distract and confuse, proliferate.

As Moshe Goldstein noted, "Hussein's ouster by the U.S. was an afterthought following three decades of collusion." The CIA backed Saddam's Baath party coup in 1969. Reagan hosted Iraqi official Tariq Aziz at the White House. In 1982, the Senate Foreign Relations Committee acknowledged a U.S. alliance with Saddam, who received assistance from CIA director William Casey and Assistant Secretary of State Richard Murphy. $1 billion was overtly conveyed to Saddam through the Department of Agriculture's Commodity Credit Corporation. Covertly, Reagan funneled $4 billion to Saddam through the Atlanta branch of the Italian bank, Banca Nazionale del Lavoro. Under the auspices of the US-Iraq Business Forum, sponsored by the Reagan administration, corporate America, in particular Honeywell, Bechtel, Exxon, General Motors and Westinghouse, profited handsomely from trading with Saddam.

The Israelis had directed their American serfs to use Saddam against the Islamic Republic of Iran. Saddam was encouraged to go to war and invade Iran, resulting in eight years of war and one million casualties on the Iranian side. American media executives who praised Franklin Roosevelt and Harry Truman for insisting on "unconditional surrender" from Germany and Japan, continually lambasted Iran for making the same demand of the Iraqi invaders. Saddam's reward for devastating a fellow Muslim nation on behalf of the Israeli-American bloc was supposed to have been Kuwait.

---

[13] Fifty-six years after its publication in 1965, Columbia University Prof. Richard Hofstadter's *The Paranoid Style in American Politics* continues to serve as the Establishment's manual for diagnosing the mental illness of anyone to the Right of Bob Dole who proposes that the U.S. government engages in criminal conspiracies involving mind control and assassinations.

Moshe Goldstein reports, "It was actually U.S. diplomacy under George Bush Sr.'s presidency that gave Hussein the perception of a green light for his 1990 (Kuwait) aggression."

From the transcript of U.S. Ambassador April Glaspie's remarks to Saddam while he had his troops massed on the Kuwait border, a few days before he invaded Kuwait:

"We have no opinion on your Arab-Arab conflicts, such as your dispute with Kuwait. Secretary (of State James) Baker has directed me to emphasize the instruction, first given to Iraq in the 1960's, that the Kuwait issue is not associated with America."

Of course, Saddam did not receive Kuwait as his recompense for making war on Iran on behalf of the agenda of President George H.W. Bush. He was sucker-baited into the attempt. Saddam was a prize chump in George W. Bush's war depicting him as the fiendish enemy of the American Way; a foe brought to justice by Donald Rumsfeld and the Neocon ideological heirs of Ronald Reagan. Actually, Saddam was part of the post-JFK American Way: the doublecross and plausible denial in the freeze stage—and bragging rights and Revelation of the Method during the thaw.

By every metric of spiritual and psychological disturbance—deep depression, anxiety, despair, childlessness, divorce, drug addiction, alcoholism and suicide—Americans are a radically unhappy people, despite often concealing their condition behind a skillfully maintained persona of a satisfied, if occasionally beleaguered life. Maintaining that facade is a burden that creates more psychic fault-lines. Many tens of millions of Americans harbor a collective death wish which stokes the revival, and consequent psychic energy, of the 3500 year-old Pharaonic death cult.

Let us, therefore, spare ourselves reciting rigamarole about of this or that "occult superpower behind the mysteries of history" as if it were news to the public. This is the 21st century, five hundred years into the western occult and its intensified application of The Process. The future has, in a sense, already occurred, and at present our stage of the alchemical program is post-history, in which there are no mysteries except the ones we conceal from ourselves, lest we break the bonds of the enchantment. We can see hell on the horizon, and we do little or nothing to forestall it; in fact, many of our actions serve to facilitate or even welcome it.

We have an inkling that many "random lone nut serial killings" are in fact ceremonial murders performed as propitiation and conditioning. We have a troubling, lingering sense that many hundreds of perfectly "respectable, moderate" government officials, police, media editors and politicians are co-conspirators in the terror psychodrama. Yet, we play along. We drift along, rudderless, leaderless.

If Satan himself were to land in a starship on the lawn of the White House, Americans would be electrified back to life for several weeks, after which their life force would slowly return to its 30-watt steady state, and the search would be resumed for the Next Big Thrill necessary to again jolt our minds and bodies into momentarily approximating the consciousness of the fully human beings of the past.

There's no place to hide from our responsibility and this book will not provide cover where none is possible.

Some are perhaps reading this text to obtain an amnesiac's thrill: How close does Hoffman come to revealing the ultimate secret? How can anyone forget that some readers and reviewers said we performed that service in our 2001 volume? This 2021 work is not complicit in the masturbation of that vision.

Fertility Then and Now

> The application of the blows by the one sex to the other, especially by young men to young women, suggests that the beating is or was originally intended above all to stimulate the reproductive powers of the men or women who received it ; and the pains taken to ensure that the branches with which the strokes are given should have budded or blossomed out just before their services are wanted speak strongly in favour of the view that in these customs we have a deliberate attempt to transfuse a store of vital energy from the vegetable to the animal world.

James Frazer, *The Golden Bough: A Study in Magic and Religion* (Macmillan, 1935), volume 6, p. 272

Our 2001 writing was given a bit of stick by some for being "too Christian" and "obsessed with abortion." The groovy pagans wanted to be certain that their conférés understood that in recommending some of our cognition, they were putting obligatory distance between their elevated pagan consciousness and our occasional digression into "pathetic religious fundamentalism."

Pagan? Really? There are pagans in the West these days? Are we on the same page? Are we alluding to the pre-Christian Saxons, Danes and Druids, to the European vegetation folk with their pregnant goddess and her consort, the Green Man — those key elements comprising the vast majority of the paganism of western history?

That paganism is long dead and drowned, fathoms deep. It consisted of a giant and perpetual working, both magical and practical, for invoking and maintaining the inextricable link between the fertility of the people and the land.

The sterile, fetus-fearing and fetus-loathing wraiths haunting the contemporary milieu with their tattoos and anemic imitations of pre-industrial tribal people, are a shabby simulation of historic pagan humanity.

At what level of the sub-cellar of their consciousness do they grasp this truth and yet continue to act a part in the spirit-decaying charade?

It is not difficult to obtain the knowledge that the western paganism of history was a relentless and sometimes frenetic summoning of life in the womb of the woman, and the fertility of the land.

With the exception of an extraordinarily malevolent society such as the Pharaonic Egyptian, only a tiny fraction of the pagans of western history were outside the fertility paradigm and devoted to the deities of thanatos. Yet today western paganism is almost entirely thanatos.

Here we digress to anticipate an objection from the "white magic" pagans who will say they enthusiastically bless fertility and all life on earth.

By way of reply, we ask how many children do the women of your white magic pagan community average? We will bet dollars to doughnuts that the answer is an average of either zero, one or two.

Those tragic numbers are not reproductive. "White magic" pagans cannot reproduce themselves averaging zero, one or two births per woman.

Therefore, we regret to say, they are a death cult indulging in familiar self-deceiving rhetoric about "our love of fertility."

"Little Egypt"

As noted, Pharaonic Egypt was a death cult, and lo and behold we discover that swaths of the American south and midwest, from Memphis, Tennessee to Cairo, Illinois and points in-between, came to be known in the nineteenth century as "Little Egypt," with the Mississippi River reconfigured as the Nile. Much has been made of the innovations in electricity and other scientific advancements presented at the World's Columbian Exposition in Chicago in 1893. We wonder however, whether the midway's most transformative attraction was an apparatus of technology.

Rather, it may have been *"The Streets of Cairo" exhibit, featuring what was, for an audience in 1893, a provocatively erotic performance by a belly dancer named "Little Egypt,"* a charmer who created one heck of a sensation in the emerging American society-of-the-spectacle. Within two years, sheet music was published nationally titled, "The Streets of Cairo." It's alternate title was "The Snake Charmer Song." Care to hazard a guess as to who was being charmed by the snake?

Americans mesmerized by "Little Egypt" were eventually catered to at carnival sideshows throughout the land, where sex acts of varying degrees of lechery, from mild to raunchy, which were typically outlawed in local municipalities, sailed past the censors and were performed outside city limits in "hootchy-kootchy" tents, which for ninety years or so were a sordid tradition making the rounds of *America mystica*, until the mainstreamed deluge of topless and bottomless bars beginning in the 1960s, as well as pornography on videocassettes and later the Internet, made them largely superfluous. And by the way, "Hootch" is a synonym for homemade whiskey, while "Kootchy" is an old slang term for the vagina. [14]

On a mass scale, sex without procreation qualifies as a death cult—a society in which the fertility of the land, the crops and the men and woman of procreative age are no longer the priority.

We are in the stage of the *post*-death cult, where the "progressive environmentalists" of the white race proclaim that to have children is an irresponsible and reckless action. When masked as environmentalism, this white people's dogma is not particularly controversial, even though it is an unmistakable manifestation of the 4th century A.D. Manichean Elect, who, as John Marshall has written, believed that "begetting children helped to trap souls in matter and fostered the spread of the 'Kingdom of Darkness."

---

[14] For more on "Little Egypt" see pages 147-154 herein.

No, we don't seek to burn Manicheans at the stake. No authentic follower of Jesus Christ ever perpetrated any such abomination. It is more likely that those of us who raise alarms concerning infertility will experience a soft "burning" at the hands of the white environmentalists (i.e. reputation shredded, canceled online, canceled financial transactions and employment, and subject possibly to confinement in re-education facilities).

Feeding the people iatrogenic toxins (pharmaceutical drugs), certain vaccines and that which is alleged to be "food," viz. SAD (Standard American Diet), has succeeded in lowering the ability of men and women to conceive children, think independently, and work effectively. Does anyone imagine that the string-pullers behind these sterility-inducing processes are the friends of a positive life on planet earth?

If we continue to cede our agency to a process of flummery and pretense operated by ingenious conspirators whose sorcerous mystique and ceremonial psychodrama have gained for its simulation of reality a general acceptance by the public, then we will witness the light of humanity extinguished, at least in this age; Doomsday being the most extreme manifestation of the thrill-seekers' quest for a terminal, cortex-crunching adrenalin rush.

In the face of the gossamer-winged illusion that sustains the flimsy occult magnum opus, we assert that we need not be prisoners of a scripted inevitablism.

This time of ours can be the Stage of the Life-Culture. Dead matter need not reign. Amnesia can be dispelled, and indifference overcome. Divine Creation can be loved again, fertility revived and the future restored, *if human beings so choose.*

I

PARALLEL LATITUDES

Twilight Language

An Interview

Interviewer: How did you come to know James Shelby Downard and how did he come to be known to a national audience?

Hoffman: Fortean scholar and visionary Bill Grimstad introduced me to Mr. Downard. I met and traveled with him a few times in the Tampa-St. Petersburg Florida area in the mid-1970s. I spoke and corresponded with Shelby (as his friends called him), for the rest of his life. In support of my work, Mr. Downard would send checks in amounts ranging from $300 to $500, between five and eight times a year on average, during most of the time I knew him.

His breakthrough came when our friend, writer-publisher Adam Parfrey, informed us about a book he was planning to publish, *Apocalyspe Culture*. We believed it would be an opportunity for Mr. Downard so we submitted to Adam's anthology the manuscript of *King-Kill/33,* which Shelby wrote and I copy-edited and enlarged at his request.

Interviewer: Parfrey published it only under Downard's byline.

Hoffman: Yes, he did, but it didn't really matter at the time. *Apocalyspe Culture* was a publishing phenomenon and Mr. Downard and his message entered the public consciousness of a mass audience from then onward, largely thanks to Adam's vision and promotional acumen.

Interviewer: Parfrey was quite taken with Downard.

Hoffman: Very much so. He traveled from California to Shelby's final home in Memphis, Tennessee for a visit.

Interviewer: What did Parfrey regard as so special in Downard?

Hoffman: I think he viewed Mr. Downard as a watchman-bard who perceived the higher elements of an overlooked reality which society had reduced to materialistic dross and Cartesian science. Mr. Downard pointed us to a tale that was being imparted above—and paradoxically inside—the deepest recesses of our heads, most significantly in the first atomic bomb blast and the John F. Kennedy assassination, which he described, respectively, as the Creation and Destruction of Primordial Matter, and the Killing of the King. No one outside the Cryptocracy had that vision of those events before Shelby. He discerned a narrative, the Rosicrucian *Ludibrium* constructed to speak to our subconscious, weaving one of the most powerful of mental attractants: a compelling story. Words like "hair-raising" and "spine-tingling" are pathetically inadequate to describe this narrative manipulation and programming.

Adam observed, "In Downard's writings, the products of his subconscious bubble to the surface and catalyze painstaking research. The collision of the poetic against the logical works especially well in the field of conspiracy; it remains the freshest approach to a field of inquiry…"

Interviewer: Is there a particular example that comes to mind of this tale Downard wove from current events?

Hoffman: There are many. I'll cite the first atomic bomb explosion which he viewed as the culmination of many centuries of occult planning and heavily invested with symbolism, beginning with what he termed, "mystical toponomy." He didn't believe in accidents when it came to events at this level, so for him the siting was deliberate and novelistic: at the end of the most lethal section of the Camino Real, which wound from Mexico City to Santa Fe, the ninety-mile "stretch between Las Cruces and Socorro called *Jornada del Muerto* or Journey of the Dead...Drive east of Truth or Consequences to Engle, get out of your car...Imagine 400 years ago, traveling step by step (on)...the Journey of the Dead." [1]

At the end of that peregrination we arrive at the atom bomb's "Trinity Site." Coincidence? There, besides the bomb, we encounter the medieval alchemical homunculus bottle which the U.S. government dubbed, "Jumbo." The tower from which it was suspended near ground zero vanished, apart from two steel footings set in concrete. According to the official government website of the White Sands Missile Range: "As confidence in the plutonium bomb design grew, it was decided not to use Jumbo. Instead, it was placed under a steel tower about 800 yards from ground zero. The blast destroyed the tower, but Jumbo survived intact."

---

[1] volcano.und.nodak.edu/vwdocs/volc_images/north_america/new_mexico/jornada.html

As you can see the government website states, "Jumbo survived intact." A very remarkable occurrence not much remarked upon, or scrutinized. An imbecilic oversight if ever there was.

According to Shelby Downard, a homunculus — a mannikin — was perhaps placed inside Jumbo and it was thought by some that the radiation had managed to animate it.

That's not what he himself believed. It was what he said the "sorcerers" (his term) involved with the Creation and Destruction of Primordial Matter believed, and attempted to achieve. Whether they did or did not is an open question.

Shelby recognized the enactment of a possibly delusional but nonetheless long-sought-after alchemical objective, which had been incorporated into earth's first nuclear preparations at the highest levels of what was a top secret government project, and this during wartime. He paid attention to extraordinary anomalies like that when no one outside the secret society did.

Mr. Downard felt that that first atom blast had altered reality, far beyond the contours of the nostalgic observation that, "The world will never be the same again," but rather in the fact that when the world saw the "sun" rise in the morning *from the west* for the first time in recorded history, our reality was forever altered.

The experience of the eyewitnesses in the western desert regions—and there were many thousands of them—they were struck to their core by this shattering experience and some even equated the seemingly miraculous sight with the Second Coming.

In July 2005, during the observances for the sixtieth anniversary of the atomic detonation, the Associated Press reported: "Emmett Hatch's grandmother ordered him to drop to his knees and pray July 16, 1945, shortly after the world's first atomic blast. She was awake at 5:29:45 Mountain War Time that morning in Portales to make breakfast and saw the explosion from more than 220 miles away. 'She thought it was the coming of the Lord, because the sun rose in the west that day,' said Hatch, who was 8 years old at the time."

Sixty years later Mr. Hatch was present at the restricted "Trinity Site," marked by an obelisk inscribed, "Where the World's First Nuclear Device Was Exploded on July 16, 1945."

Interviewer: Aren't obelisks and monoliths associated with the advancement of human evolution, as per Kubrick's "2001"?

Hoffman: The monolith is more of a sentinel, don't you think? One wonders whether it bears some kind of witness, or acts as some type of catalyst for human *devolution*, as opposed to the cover story about evolution.

Interviewer: A third event that galvanized Downard was the Apollo Moon Flight.

Hoffman: Not just Downard. Mr. Grimstad viewed the fate of the Eagle landing module, fired directly into the sun after it docked with the Columbia, as perhaps an enactment of the mystical union of the sun and the moon, which is another storied alchemical objective. He also insinuated that the impact of man leaving his boot tracks and space junk on the moon would have negative consequences, and we now know the astronauts left their feces there too.

The Zuni Indians predicted sterility for the white race due to this violation of the moon, which has been seen in legend as a guardian of fertility on earth. Call it a fairy tale if you like, but the Zuni observation has a certain verisimilitude in light of the fact that after we landed on the moon, the population of the white race sank, with statistics showing vastly higher rates of contraception and abortion. The prophecy, if you want to call it that, has been fulfilled.

Interviewer: The Chinese are sending rockets to the moon and mining the surface and setting off detonations. Will they follow the demographic fate of the whites for their sins?

Hoffman: I don't know. What I do know is that the slow transformation of these formerly pristine celestial objects into a degraded junkyard and slag heap, probably does not bode well for the human race. To a galactic observer it might offer a rather poor testimony to our nature.

Interviewer: And you account for this with the doctrine of Original Sin?

Hoffman: The idea of Original Sin is viewed as very uncool and nerd-like. Call me a fundamentalist or whatever name you wish, but hell on earth is always built when our fallen human nature is denied, and then recruited to build heaven on earth. This Thelemic project is a huckster's call.

Here's a quote from Francois Rabelais describing the "philosophical paradise" of the Abbey of Thelema, "There was but one clause in their Rule: *Do what thou wilt*, because people who are free, well bred, well taught and conversant with honorable company have by nature an instinct—a goad—which always pricks them toward virtuous acts and withdraws them from vice."

Rabelais is repeating, not inventing, Satan's original gnosis. The specially selected and chosen inner elite, are "oppressed and enslaved by base subordination and constraint." The laws of God and nature are condemned as bondage because they interfere with the freedom of this higher class of godlings, all of whom have been "educated so nobly...vying laudably with each other to do what is pleasing to any one of them."

Rabelais exhibited two of the signs of occult initiation, or at least, involvement. The first is blasphemy. He was an ordained priest, a monk and a sinister character. Jesus on the cross cries out, "I thirst." The disgustingly drunken priest in Rabelais' *Gargantua* mouths the same words, in obvious mockery.

The second is the *prisca theologia*, the universalist doctrine that all religions come from a single wisdom tradition, a belief that is impossible for any believer in the literal truth of the Bible. In his *Pantagruel,* Rabelais, the Thelemic prophet, makes a pitch for this religious syncretism, reconciling Plato and Pythagoras with the Gospel and St. Paul in the Third and Fourth Books of *Pantagruel,* on the road to the reign of human brain power, disguised with environmental virtue-signaling, and palaver about "luhv."

Interviewer: And these currents are all headed where?

Hoffman: To the *Jornada del muerto* on the 33rd degree latitude line, and to Dealey Plaza on the 32nd degree latitude line, in what John Dee termed in 1577, "the perfect art of navigation," which leads to the discovery of an exploding mushroom cloud and an exploding head. Signs *nostra aetate*.

Fertility cults are supposed to green the earth. This however, is a blackening, perpetrated by those who "know what is best for us," the high-minded Thelemic disciples of the enemy of the human race.

Interviewer: Who do you identify as that enemy?

Hoffman: Do the math.

Interviewer: Come on.

Hoffman: Gustav Kuhn, a psychologist at Durham University stated, "Magicians seem to be able to carry out secret actions in front of their audience without being spotted. I'm interested in why people don't perceive those actions."

By controlling attention and expectation through suggestion, and exploiting our implanted preconceptions, we are led to participate in our own deception.

We are at the weird stage now where we *do* spot the secret actions of the magicians, after which we take an active civic part in the sorcery of fooling ourselves. We are the audience at a voyeuristic magic act that consists in the secret of spectating at our own death, the highest thrill the Big Top's magicians have to offer. Freedom, redemption, transcendence? They're nowhere to be found in this particular theater.

Interviewer: The Theater of the Revelation of the Method.

Hoffman: That's it. You did the math.

Interviewer: Revelation is supposed to be filled with light, but light's absent in this one.

Hoffman: "From those flames
No light, but rather darkness visible
Served only to discover sights of woe..."

Interviewer: That's from *Paradise Lost*. Milton.

Hoffman: Yes, paradise lost.

Interviewer: What is "Twilight Language"?

Hoffman: Let's see, do I start with a "jack ruby," or sheep dipping?

Where to begin when there isn't a beginning. Measurement has no place here.

There is going to be difficulty among the masses and even conspiracy students and investigators concerning the language which speaks in ways that are non-linear to most minds.

Twilight language is a form of communication that eludes most people's conscious perception, though it is of course perceived by the subconscious. In the 21 century that dichotomy is much less the case, because the initiation of the masses into the civic magic that increasingly appears undisguised has brought the revelation of Twilight Language to the frontiers of the waking mind.

A yarn is being spun and "charmed" conjunctions and interstices are formed, partly from invocation and partly from "surfing" a magnetic attraction that seems to organize anomalies around certain "words of power" and potent symbols. That there is incredulity in the face of this is the least surprising dimension of the phenomenon.

The two extremes which distort our perception are total denial of twilight language on the one hand, and a total immersion in trivial aspects of a case that ends up muddying the key elements of pattern detection. There are researchers who pick a grab bag of symbol books, videos and name references and throw them into a cauldron that they call Twilight Language and what comes of it? A laundry list of increasingly tedious, trivial or contrived links of words. Without enlightened pattern detection such an approach is part of the obfuscation, not the clarification.

We ourselves can generate the phenomena. We can begin to see coincidences everywhere. There has to be a selection so we remain mindful of how *our perception itself becomes part of the process of invocation.*

Interviewer: What do you mean by "trivial aspects" and selection?

Hoffman Deciding what is important and what is effluvia; what qualifies as Twilight Language but is actually a kind of arcane litter, sometimes placed in the field of vision to distract and sometimes invoked by the percipient/investigator himself because he can't detect the pattern, he can't grok what is insubstantial, what is a false lead, even if it does reflect occult dimensions. As in any language, one encounters jibberish and some sleuths are misled into believing it has significance.

We should be keenly aware that not everything in the symbolic stream is of profound remarkability. Discerning the difference between the actual communication being conveyed by Twilight Language—between that and signal noise—is the difference between a higher state of consciousness and a form of debilitation that can mimic the classic symptoms of mental illness.

Some of these investigators who don't possess the antenna, intuition, ears to hear or eyes to see — call it what you will—serve the Cryptocracy by failing to distinguish between the medium and the message. The strangeness of the communication has shocked and awed them to such an extent that their discernment has fallen by the wayside.

A stated goal of the 1960s and '70s psychedelic revolution was, "Ingest those plants and mushrooms and open the doors of perception." But the yin of that process is that those doors can swing too far in the other direction, and we get the equivalent of a kind of data rot, Twilight Language glossolalia or diarrhea. It harkens to a superstitious state of mind that we described in *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare* at the dawn of the conversion of the pagan peoples of Europe to Christianity (in cases where that conversion was not forced by state actors like Charlemagne who executed tens of thousands of civilians who happened to be pagans).

In the early centuries of its existence, the Christian path was a clean break from minds so immersed in Twilight Language that their every step was fraught with peril, or significant meaning, which was paralyzing their ability to live, and had to be mediated by a ritual of propitiating the gods with a whole series of superstitious gestures and words. It became a type of madness for which the remedy was the simplicity of the Christian Gospel with its warning that the wicked flee where no one is pursuing them.

Interviewer: What are the internal mechanics or dynamics of Twilight Language?

Hoffman: A dynamic yes, mechanics no, because we're in the realm of art. There is no cuneiform tablet for Twilight Language. It functions more like poetry than physics, giving narrative propulsion to the Cryptocracy's screenplays.

Interviewer: It has no basis in neurology then?

Hoffman: Of course it does, just as, if we observed the brain moved by a speech by Hamlet or the entrance of his father's ghost, we would see neural pathways responding. Does the Twilight Language stimulate neuro-chemical pathways? I would answer in the affirmative.

Interviewer: What chemicals?

Hoffman: The chemicals most closely related to behaviors associated with the evocation of sex and violence: catecholamine and gamma-aminobutyric acid.

The way Twilight Language has cachet now is based partly on the rise of the invisible world. Cotton Mather, the New England witch-hunter wrote a book, *Wonders of the Invisible World,* which is the subject of much mirth now. We feel very superior to this "poor fool" Mather and his "ridiculous invisible world." Yet we inhabit a world of invisibles beginning with nuclear physics and the atom; a universe we can't see. The "Big Bang exactly 13.8 billion years ago" we are told, is invisible, but it has, we are told, been confirmed by "gravitational waves" — "ripples in space-time" founded on "quantum fluctuations." Here is a whole invisible cosmos in which we invest our belief; we accept it as true because today's priests, who are too sly to call themselves priests, and instead are termed "scientists," declare it to be so. There is even a 20th century religion that adopted the word for itself, "Scientology." The name gives people the ability to be religious while imagining they are scientific; the perfect modern conceit, courtesy of LaFayette Ron Hubbard.

Faith in an invisible world renders us more attuned to Twilight Language and what we have is a much higher sensitivity to magically activated words, what the Pharaonic Egyptians knew as "words of power," acting as a means for imprinting a prefabricated reality—a sibilant whisper of a counterfeit universe—into the mind, as part of a process where people volunteer to have their brains wired to the data hive.

Interviewer: You're saying that in our video age of Internet, TV and movies we're less visual?

Hoffman: We're less literate and therefore more susceptible to the processing of our perceived reality through signs, bytes and slogans. Twilight Language sometimes consists in slogans pregnant with archetypal imprinting, giving narrative propulsion to the pattern theatre that the Cryptocracy weaves with its ritual murders and other types of spectacular crimes.

When I say less visual I mean we are lacking in the type of memory that is jogged by the visual. Mnemonic is a $50 word that simply denotes any device employed as an aid in remembering something. This device can be visual or literary. In the latter case, one can recall the names of the colors of the rainbow by remembering the acronym ROY G. BIV, which is a mnemonic for recalling the names of the colors red, orange, yellow, green, blue, indigo (black) and violet. Twilight Language sometimes consists of talismanic mnemonics — it summons a mnemonic which the collective subconscious "memorized" long ago, which in turn triggers the thing memorized. For example, "Wicker" is a mnemonic for mind-bending — and for ritual murder.

Interviewer: I don't remember committing the word "Wicker" to memory in connection with serial killings or ceremonies.

Hoffman: True, but you're overlooking a shared subconscious of the human race which Dr. Jung termed "archetypes"— manipulation of those Jungian archetypes, the dreaming mind—the subconscious—by means of Twilight Language, can result in the magical organization of the imagination, and by magical I don't mean enlightening or illuminating, but occluding—narrowing the aperture of our perception, the better to herd us in the direction the Cryptocracy wants us to go. Recall the lines from Christopher Nolan and David S. Goyer's "Batman Begins" movie:

"What's 'scarecrow'?

"Patients suffering from delusional episodes often focus their paranoia on an external tormentor, usually conforming to Jungian archetypes. In this case, a scarecrow."

A scarecrow can be many things: a harmless, man-sized rag doll who frightens away birds and children on the basis of an illusion, or a lethal predator dressed like a scarecrow as part of a disguise or, in "Batman Begins," a drug-induced hallucination so terrifying it "drives men mad" and renders them powerless.

Interviewer: And "Wicker," being part of the Twilight Language, is part of our unconscious?

Hoffman: Not *unconscious.* It's part of our dreaming or *subconscious* mind. When summoned into the field of the conscious mind and linked to some of the ceremonies and rites which the police and the news media term serial murders or lone nut killings, it becomes a means for processing our minds and spirits.

Interviewer: Can you give an example of the visual that we've lost?

Hoffman: Marshal McLuhan mentioned the "Stations of the Cross" in the Catholic Church. Each "station" has a carved or painted depiction of one scene from Christ's suffering and death. The believer stands beneath each station while consulting a booklet with a prayer related to the particular scene. This is a process of auto-initiation into Christ's suffering for humanity's sins. The viewer uses the mnemonic of the art work at each station to imprint Christ's passion on the viewer's mind.

Interviewer: Why wouldn't television and cinema fulfill this function?

Hoffman: They don't. They're not memory theaters. TV and movies are predigested. They comprise the Videodrome and they're lacking the interior mental architecture. The Videodrome is external. The memory theatre is internal, mnemonic. The mnemonic process is not intrinsic to cinema and television.

The architecture of the mnemonic has been stripped away by the Videodrome and a pre-packaged hallucination is presented in its stead. It's called entertainment. It's even termed escapism. What does it mean to escape reality? It is to go mad. A series of moving *pictures* deceive our mind into seeing motion. This is far removed from the mnemonic.

Interviewer: How do you define a person's self-devised memory theatre?

Hoffman: Let me read you the words of the founder of the Jesuits, Ignatius of Loyola, from his *Spiritual Exercises*, "In contemplation of Christ Our Lord, who is visible, the composition will be to see with the eyes of the imagination the corporeal place where the thing I want to contemplate is found." This is the capacity for interiority which The Machine —call it computers, call it the Alien, the eldritch gods or Skynet — destroys.

Twilight Language moves the interior world into the exterior. It is virtually synonymous with the dreaming mind because of its archetypal cues and content. The subconscious, which is the supreme memory theater above all, is by Twilight Language propelled outside, into the external world, to explosive effect; analogous to atomic physics, which begins in a microcosmic, nearly invisible world and is forced to manifest in the outer world as a mushroom cloud; the mushroom being a symbol of higher consciousness.

Interviewer: Higher consciousness is considered benevolent.

Hoffman: My question would be, from where is this "higher" consciousness derived, from the presence of life or the presence of imminent death?

Interviewer: From death, but it is still a higher consciousness.

Hoffman: Often it's a consciousness tainted by death. It is "higher" than the bovine level of consumerism, by comparison. But there is a consciousness infinitely higher.

Interviewer: What about the idea that Twilight Language is just a code?

Hoffman: A puzzle? Yes, it can be as seemingly as prosaic as that — the "hidden in plain sight" clue. When I was a child I thought that the name of the woman who mercifully wiped the bloody and sweating face of Jesus on his way to Golgotha, was actually named "Veronica." It was only years later that I learned that her name was eponymous and assigned by posterity — "*vera icon*" viz. "true image." If "Veronica" was the name of a suspect in the vandalism of Michelangelo's statue of David or Moses, or some other prominent art work, my interest in the case would increase. If there were other symbolic names and numbers attached to this hypothetical vandalism then I would be interested to see if a story behind the story was being conveyed, a ritual, related in the language we call Twilight by our latest Doctor Syntax.

Interviewer: You say mathematics has nothing to do with twilight language.

Hoffman: No, I do not. What I say is that it is not mathematical. Would you say that mathematics is a determining factor in Shakespeare's plays? Let's not mystify Twilight Language. It's a play; a drama; a script. It sometimes contains allusions to numbers and that world. Truth or Consequences, New Mexico is located on the 33rd degree line of north parallel latitude and so is the Trinity Site, where the creation and destruction of matter first occurred. Let's distinguish Twilight Language from the priestcraft of scientism; from the mystification that lends an aura of higher expertise to expressions of mathematical formulae when applied to this psychodrama. People think if it's mathematics it can't be delusional. It took one of the leading mathematicians of the Victorian age to prick a hole in that inflated balloon.

In Peter Hunt's fine book about Lewis Carroll's "Alice in Wonderland," he directs our attention to the ostensible nonsense that Alice spouts when she mangles her times tables: "Let me see: four times five is twelve, and four times six is thirteen, and four times seven is – oh dear! I shall never get to twenty at that rate!"

We laugh at Alice's goofy mathematical incompetence because *we think we know*. After all, it's mathematics and math adheres to fact-based rules. But Carroll is showing us we don't know, because we're only skimming the surface and we're fixed in a mathematical reality that we regard as the only one possible. We should discourage that mentality when undertaking the study of Twilight Language.

Interviewer: What are you saying? That Wonderland math is accurate? That four times five equals twelve, is correct?

Hoffman: I'm not saying it. Lewis Carroll said it, as Peter Hunt revealed. Alice is actually following a logical progression: 4×5 is indeed 12 in a number sequence using base 18, and 4×6 is 13, using base 21. [2]

Mathematical concepts of number, space and time are not limited to Cartesian boundaries. On planet earth, space and time are mediated by the green witch. England's "scientific" occultists established the prime meridian and the measurement of "mean time" at Greenwich. Think about that word's etymology: Green wic, Grenewych, Greenwitch.

If by mathematics you mean that ingenious act which Oxford Math Professor Charles Lutwidge Dodgson (Lewis Carroll) put in his Alice books, then it has a part to play in ciphering and deciphering esoteric communication and signaling. It seems that Lewis Carroll, mathematician though he was, knew this better than most. Logic consists of the White Queen's observation, "The rule is, jam tomorrow and jam yesterday—but never jam *today*." This is the Mad Hatter's "tea time," wherein Effect precedes Cause. Alice says, "I see nobody on the road," to which the King replies, "I only wish I had such eyes! To be able to see Nobody! And at that distance!"

Anything can happen in Wonderland but *it could only have happened the way it did*. Robinson Duckworth, the Oxford undergraduate who rowed the boat on the river Isis, while Carroll told the story to ten-year-old Alice Pleasance Liddell, testified that Carroll did so extemporaneously, "off the top of his head," as if he were channeling it from somewhere; or should I say from erewhon.

---

[2] The progression only becomes erroneous in attempting to reach 20. Cf. Hunt, *The Making of Lewis Carroll's Alice and the Invention of Wonderland* (Oxford University, 2020).

Where we are warning people away from "science" or more properly, "scientism," is in the field of measurement. How does one measure anything with the yardstick of art? Using that rod to take the measure of Twilight Language is subjective. It's that inherent subjectivity that protects the objectivity of our study. "No phenomenon is a phenomenon until it is an observed phenomenon."

Interviewer: That sounds trite. What's it supposed to signify?

Hoffman: The person self-described as a scientist thinks his observations of the phenomenon must be correct because they are rooted in what he has been taught is an unalterable reality. Quantum physics teaches that when we take a measurement of something, say, for example, the position of a photon, it takes the form of what we are expecting to see. Whereas prior to our measurement, the quantum state of the photon existed as a wavefunction state vector, containing several observations of the quantum state. These are known as superpositions. Each observation in superposition can contradict the other, for instance, observing one photon to be in different locations simultaneously. In the process known as WavePacket Reduction (WPR), when a measurement of the phenomenon occurs, then only one of the anomalous observations which previously existed, is visible; the rest have vanished. We're where Heisenberg was nearly a 100 years ago, the "Uncertainty Principle" consisting of conjugate variables like time, energy, momentum and position that can't all be known simultaneously, and therefore they act as a buffer against man playing god. The nature of the subatomic universe prevents us from knowing everything.

Interviewer: Many scientists would say that what prevents man from playing god is established rules and stable properties, like those set by Albert Einstein concerning the speed of light being the highest possible speed.

Hoffman: On the contrary, those fixed rules pin God down, like a lepidopterist pins a butterfly to a display board. Look at the physics of non-locality by which quantum computers operate: entangled particles are connected to one another from across the cosmos, no matter how distant. Changes in one are conveyed to the other instantly, in other words, at a rate vastly exceeding the speed of light. In Einstein's "reality" they're far away. In superluminal reality they're unified.

Interviewer: So the science of physics is itself subject to art?

Hoffman: It might be best to think of another name for the words "science" and "physics" in that they are so heavily freighted with an allure of infallible determinancy that renders them more theology than evidentiary method. A truth-seeker would want to deflate this priesthood and its vanity, which is particularly evident in the medical profession and one reason why it's so catastrophic to permit these "deities" to dictate public policy.

Interviewer: Other than the Green Witch/Greenwich aspect to time, do you acknowledge a scientific basis to understanding time and even time travel?

Hoffman: Chemistry and physics can help us to have a better understanding of time. If you ponder the anomalies of absolute zero (or as close to that point as science has been able to approach), you observe that it is defined not by what it is, but by what it is not. Whereas, theoretically there is no limit to heat, in the absence of heat, the coldest possible temperature is only -459° F. At this absolute zero (zero Kelvin), the rate of entropy is zero, expressed as:

$$\Delta S \geq 0$$

Delta S (entropy) will reach zero at 0 Kelvin.

Entropy is defined as the degree of chaos, decay or randomness, from the Greek word for transformation (τροπή). So what does this have to do with time? Well, according to the Second Law of Thermodynamics heat passes only one way: from hot to cold. The process is irreversible. It cannot pass backward, from cold to hot. By this means we distinguish time as the difference between this chemical "before" and "after." Our experience of the passage of time — the past, the future and this present moment — is not an illusion. It is a chemical process.

Interviewer: Aren't you contradicting your own statements about "the inherent trickiness of the material universe"? Some quantum physicists have said there is no past or present, only now.

Hoffman: I'm not going to be ruled by a decontextualized platitude designed for mass consumption, which is what you're repeating. Quantum mechanics in its genius and luminescence, when reduced to the common denominator, can begin to resemble jargon and psycho-babble, which science has no model capable of resolving.

Interviewer: The resolution being in the poetic universe beyond numbers and chemicals.

Hoffman: Matter exhibits many anomalies as absolute zero is approached, including bilocation of elements and other quirks and tears in the script of the Cartesian-Enlightenment deists who ruled "science" (and all that hubris that affixed the word science to their arch materialist secular religions, as for example Marx and Lenin's "scientific socialism"), up until the coming of twentieth century quantum physics, when Albert Einstein's EPR theory was defeated by evidence of the quantum entanglement of particles at vast distances, as we've already mentioned, which proceeded from *the rise of phenomena into existence when measured*, the theory being that the role of the observer is critical to the manifestation of the observation. Here we encounter recondite considerations like wave function collapse.

Some of these mysteries are so arcane they border on parody and even comedy, in the Fortean sense of Charles Fort's hunch that there's a principle that defies every other principle, thereby checkmating the pompous inevitabilist prophecy, rooted in Kabbalah, of a level of omniscient human brain power soon to be obtained and possessed by a class of all-knowing grandees, to whom we will shall owe submission. To maintain that narrative, there can't be too much awareness of the cosmic monkey wrench that, according to Fortean epistemology, is tossed into the machinery of human absolutism and control. Consciousness of that process shatters the glamor and the self-advertised mastery of the Wizards of Tech.

Every significant step taken toward limitless autarchic human and machine control precipitates a loss of control at another level, which is often nearly invisible, even to the would-be Overlords. They will never reach their goal.

In *Through the Looking Glass,* as Alice spots scented rushes and leans from the boat to pick them, she says, "The prettiest are always further." And she says it with a sigh.

Interviewer: How does your art or poetic sense account for reality when mathematicians can't?

Hoffman: Samuel Goldwyn of the MGM [3] (Metro-Goldwyn-Mayer) movie studio said, "Authenticity is everything. When you can fake that, you've got it made."

Interviewer: Words fail me.

Hoffman: You'll recover.

Interviewer: We're in the early decades of the 21st century, where does that put us on your clock of destiny? Are we approaching midnight?

Hoffman: We're past midnight. We're going over to the other side.

Interviewer: What other side?

Hoffman: We're are beginning to live amid the exteriorization of the *tulpa*.

Interviewer: Where other people's thought forms materialize in physical reality?

Hoffman: In what is called material reality. The Cryptocracy is far along in its success story. Immanentizing the eschaton and giving the appearance of the making manifest of the *tulpa* in our midst, is part of it.

---

[3] MGM = 33. The letter m is the thirteenth letter in the alphabet. The letter g is the seventh. 13+7+13 = 33.

Interviewer: What about the monkey wrench?

Hoffman: It's at work, sabotaging the best laid plans of the sorcerers, but it typically doesn't get up to the plate until the ninth inning. The Red Sea was always going to part for the Israelites but not for a long time. Daniel was put out of the den of lions at the last possible moment.

Until then — until the rescue of the predestined — bondage and hypnotic Twilight Language are the order of the day. Consequently, it can be rightly said, yes, it is very late.

Interviewer: If this were true wouldn't it be a huge wakeup call?

Hoffman: Only if it was brought on suddenly and our familiar props were removed. But the opposite obtains. It has come about slowly, although with gradually increasing speed of late. And the props are in place, giving a sense of the ordinary even as the extraordinary manifests before us. One way the props are maintained is based in the fact that we are the first people in recorded history to live in an age in which we can peer through a window and watch the ghosts of more than a century ago moving about. We do this through the old "silent" movies, some of which are now well over a century old. Imagine people in 1910 or 1914 able to watch films of Napoleon fighting the Battle of Austerlitz, or George Washington on his plantation amid his toiling black slaves; or Jane Austen working at her writing desk. If motion pictures of the early 19th century had manifested on film in the early 20th century, much of the world in 1921 would have still looked like 1821, because the people of 1921 would have grown up with those images of clothing and appearances, as we have in our time.

In terms of something readily noticeable, like fashion, we observe that people looked and dressed very differently in 1921 from 1821.

We've grown up with silent movie images and this translates into the somewhat remarkable fact that many people in 2021 dress somewhat similar to the people in 1921: suits, ties, dresses. In 100 years in terms of fashion and visual arrangements of cities and spaces, we haven't moved that far away from 1921. Motion picture technology has made a century-old vision part of our post-modern vision. In the midst of the huge disconnect we are experiencing in the cauldron of the alchemist's "gay science," the moral, cultural, racial, sexual and technological revolution we've experienced, we're nonetheless continuing to inhabit a mise-en-scène from the early 20th century, which is reassuring. It gives a sense of stability and continuity—being comfortably anchored in spite of the revolutionary changes. This is important to the success of The Process, as Arthur C. Clarke showed in *Childhood's End,* his novel of humanity conditioned to accept Satan in their midst without protest.

Interviewer: Most people don't immerse themselves in silent movies.

Hoffman: Most Americans have seen snippets of silent movies and most Americans have been exposed to, or are familiar at least somewhat, with the Gary Cooper/Clark Gable/Betty Davis/Barbara Stanwyck Americana of the 1930s, the film noir of the 1940s, the "I Love Lucy" of the "Fabulous '50s," and Andy Griffith's Mayberry from the pre-Vietnam 60s — many of these images are still very much present in the psyche of a considerable portion of the American population.

Interviewer: You think this helps to reassure them?

Hoffman: Hypnotically, yes. But as you know, it's a false assurance. Almost all of the actors they are watching in those shows are ghosts; they're long dead. The sets are demolished; where filming was done outdoors in Los Angeles the orange groves are now shopping malls — the quaint neighborhoods razed to make way for 20 or 30 story condominium towers.

We live inside a theatre. We've seen so many "photoplays" and television shows that we all have more than a little of the ham actor in us, the would-be celebrity. Pre-modern children in America were naturally shy. Most of them observed the world in periods of silence. If strangers addressed them or you stuck a camera or a microphone in front of them they would become bashful, mute, though alert and observant. This has been the endearing quality of childhood innocence. But now in our time, many young children who are in front of a camera or a microphone are almost immediately acting and emoting as if auditioning for a part. It's a by-product of spectacular society, where celebrity and exhibitionism are viewed as positive, even when they're negative.

Interviewer: Explain.

Hoffman: Look at Arnold Schwarzenegger the actor. He groped women on the set of his movies. As governor he lied and deceived and favored the corporations. When nurses went on strike for lower patient ratios so they could provide better patient care and quality of life, Schwarzenegger called them "lobbyists for a special interest group." When his trophy Kennedy wife was away for a few hours he took sexual advantage of the family's Mexican maid. This guy seems to be thoroughly rotten, at least in the period to which I'm referring, but he's nonetheless likable old "Arnold, the Guvenator." When someone is famous for being famous, which is an empty and farcical "achievement," then the values being celebrated are eye candy and voyeurism. In spectacular society one can have obviously wicked, corrupt popes, presidents and movie "stars" and the masses will still suck up to them. It's a Hitlerian attraction in a society trained to hiss at Hitler, but the Hitler mechanism—magnetism, charisma—is at the center of America's celebrity culture. If America actually were anti-Hitler it would be anti-celebrity. It would honor and lionize its farmers and carpenters and the mothers and fathers who raise three or five or ten children and give them a decent upbringing. But it's only a paper moon, our society at present; a story board; a stage design.

Years ago I would have followed up this description with the words "Behind that scene exists..." but we're devolving past that direction. Now I would say, "in the midst of" or "in front of this scene," where the *tulpa* appears among us. It's extraordinary — as if a very ugly, hairy red devil was walking around naked in Mayberry, with a filthy tail, billy goat eyes and horns, genitalia exposed, fire coming out of its mouth, and Barney's still looking for the whisky still patronized by Otis; Aunt Bea is continuing to cook her fried chicken, and Opie is being wisely counseled by his father. This devil walks up and down Main Street exposing himself to girls and boys, enslaves the mayor, disrupts the endocrine system of the people, induces abortions in women and almost nothing is said or done about it by the "good people" of rural, small town America. The *tulpa* has materialized out of the interior realm into the exterior. The *tulpa* is here, yet for most of us it is invisible, even though, paradoxically, we *can* see it.

Interviewer: You're saying America is aborting its babies, exposing its kids to porn, permitting the destruction of the innocent—

Hoffman: What I'm pointing to is an *unprecedented* level of perversity, the *union* of opposites, which in very ancient Asian culture was always seen as a harbinger of death, because to maintain—rather than erase opposites and polarities, such as very masculine men and feminine women who are powerfully attracted to one another—it is that magnetic attraction in Nature that gives rise to human life through procreation. To seek to obliterate those natural magnetic polarities, or to homogenize them, is to long for mass death.

In our post-modern death cult, in unprecedented ways, androgyny—the erasure of opposites, the denial of chromosomal reality—prevails under a utopian banner of peace, love, tolerance and a better way of life for all. Yet where opposites converge, there is much death and this is a slaughter house that we are not encouraged to discern, lest it register in our consciousness and awaken us.

According to China's own Health Department statistics, more than 300 million babies, mostly female, have been killed in their mother's wombs in China since 1971. How many western newspaper and cable TV editorials or Hollywood movies have been produced concerning that unimaginable Communist government holocaust? Alas, relatively little or nothing. 300 million missing babies? Yawn.

Republicans in the U.S. are being intimidated by claims from abortion-favoring feminists that "the Republicans are engaged in a war on women." 300 million mostly girl babies have been destroyed in China and it is the anti-abortion Republicans who are "at war with women"? The fact that this claim has any play at all is indicative of mass insanity of "the emperor has no clothes" variety. In 1821 the humanity of black people was denied and their enslavement asserted as a "right."

In 2021 the humanity of unborn human beings is denied and their murder through abortion is asserted as a "right." We're expected to believe that the massive violence of the dehumanized children in the womb has absolutely zero connection to the massive violence and dehumanization of people outside the womb.

We are being led by priests disguised as scientists into a scientism/futurism where the human brain with all of its startling potential for egoism, commands the peasants. Tom O'Hare observed plaintively, "If this year (2021) has taught me anything, it is that people are egregiously prone to be obedient to baseless government pronouncements echoed by many in a mindless and obedient media. That is one of the saddest outcomes of the this (COVID19) pandemic." Dr. Anthony Fauci personified the hateur of a government tyrant who imposes despotism under the banner of medical science.

Stanford University "neuroscientist"/psychiatrist Karl Deisseroth, M.D., PhD. speaks of "sitting and talking to a person whose reality is different from yours — to be face to face with the effects of bipolar disorder, exuberance, charisma...crushing — it can't be reasoned with...as if there's a conceptual cancer in the brain. He saw patient after patient suffering terribly, with no cure in sight."

"Conceptual cancer." That's how this high priest describes people who think differently from him. Allegedly, Dr. Deisseroth seeks to heal the human soul through bioengineering. After all, he went to Harvard and he runs a lab at Stanford, so he knows best. it has been claimed that he seeks to combine the manipulation of light with the manipulation of genes to work a "cure." When one hears jargon like that one sees how utterly primitive it is, despite the fact that it is brought to us in the habiliments of university science, accompanied by command words such as "neuroscience, bioengineering" and "optogenetics." The trigger words formerly were "scientific Socialism," "Better living through chemistry," the "peaceful atom," "Freudian analysis," "Dianetics," and then "Scientology." In the '40s, '50s and '60s these were the futuristic-sounding signs.

One fad, optogenetics, is a technique that allows the high priests to turn our brain cells on and off with a combination of genetic manipulation and pulses of light. This is supposedly being conducted by Dr. Deisseroth, who allegedly confessed to the *New York Times* that he's applied to his patients the favorite device of the psychiatric priesthood now that lobotomy is out of favor: "I've administered electroconvulsive therapy" (electroshock). Perhaps he sincerely thinks he is genuinely helping humanity. Perhaps his intentions are not malicious. I can't know his motives.

But imagine if Dr. Deisseroth had the stubborn and strong-willed, "different drummer" Henry David Thoreau appear before him as a patient, what he would make of this celibate loner with a preference for living in a hut in the woods? Many people thought Thoreau "couldn't be reasoned with." He must have been afflicted with "conceptual cancer." In the 1960s and '70s we termed such people dissidents and freethinkers, but since then the Machine has ascended above the split-wood-not-atoms crowd. Digitalization has taken command.

Interviewer: What does that signify?

Hoffman: It signifies what John Dee dreamed in the Elizabethan Age, the *hegemony of dead matter*. April 21, 2014 the *New York Times* celebrated "brain control in a flash of light." Not one word was printed about the possibility of the misuse of this research. The corporate media are seduced by these egotistical "scientists" possessed of the same mentality that brought us "better living through chemistry, nuclear power too cheap to meter," pharmaceutical drugs in place of nature's herbal medicine cabinet, and the Frankenfood of GMO corn and cloned salmon. We are supposed to defer to the "wisdom" of these big brains, who are affronted and almost shocked by the existence of dissidents who don't get immunized, don't have their babies in hospitals and think the New Testament is a better guide for healing demonic possession, fear and depression than a scientist who can barely believe he is actually "sitting and talking to a person whose reality is different from yours."

The scientific dictatorship is here. Skynet is here. We're voting for these trends with our apathy, in part because we have been taught, through hypnotic induction, that the new world which science, robots and humanoids will forge on behalf of Skynet, will be incredibly thrilling and adventurous; common sense, age old wisdom and prudence be damned.

Interviewer: Some would say you are exaggerating.

Hoffman: It is not an exaggeration to take note of the fact that all life on this planet, from the simplest cell to humans themselves, are all based on the same genetic code, made up of four DNA nucleotides, designated as A, C, G and T. What the Dr. Frankensteins are doing in our time is creating organisms that do not exist in God's creation on earth. These "synthetic niologists" are creating new nucleotides and thereby creating alien organisms — entities with a genetic code of more than four DNA bases.

Interviewer: Which, I take it, means that these are alien life forms, which is what you accuse John Dee of working toward and which Lovecraft predicted was an invasion force about to incarnate through demonic means.

Hoffman: True, but to use the word "demonic" closes the modern mind to the human agents at work — the scientists in serenely shining and peaceful, gleaming, state-of-the-art multi-million dollar laboratories where you'd like your own son or daughter to work, after he or she obtains his or her doctorate from Stanford and does their post-doc at Johns Hopkins. These scientists have pleasant demeanors, are seemingly rational, highly intelligent and idealistic people seeking to "make a contribution to society and the future."

Interviewer: You're poking fun at this.

Hoffman: I'm evoking the banality of evil, and how people's expectations of that evil prevent them from seeing it. They imagine a diabolic operation as being conducted in a foul, dirty place by an obvious madman and his hunch-backed helper. In contrast with that image we have attractive, successful, high-achievers, the envy of many who wish they could rise as high as these god-playing scientists have done. Hannah Arendt saw that Adolf Eichmann was not outwardly a monster, but a bland bureaucrat and that the evil he perpetrated was committed while he was a member of a respected, elite governmental organization. Doing evil was his respectable job.

As we said in the booklet, *King-Kill/33*, the eternal pagan psychodrama is escalated under these modern conditions.

Sorcery is not what 21st century post-modernists can accept as real; yet in the sub-cellar of their mind, they know it is.

Interviewer: Then it's all over, no hope for humanity?

Hoffman: When you have people enamored of thrills such as sex without children, and the pursuit of their greatest thrill of all, to get as close to death as one can without actually dying, then the prospects are poor in the face of that sort of bestial animalism.

Interviewer: You call it primitive and animal-like but your opponents would say it is visionary and progressive.

Hoffman: It's simian stuff; crude, debased materialism running amok on this planet more than ever in recorded history. Animals are stuck in the carnal although actually that's an insult to my dog, who has a more generous and expansive side to him than many of these master manipulator Brahmins who imagine that their tinkering at one or two degrees in the Cosmic Complexity (for which they have no respect), serves as a god-like rival to the Supreme Being, or may even constitute a surpassing feat of self-initiated godhood.

There is no end to the extremes of delusion to which demonic pride is subject. We are warned of it in the Greek, Roman and Norse myths and in the Book of Revelation. But "The One Ring" that Tolkein warned us about, has us in its power; the same "Ring" that was used to make the "Lord of the Rings" movies in yet another post-modernist act of double-minded negation of the principle being hailed.

The Society of the Spectacle: no matter how sterile and empty it is at its core, it will manage to attract the flies to the spider by the magnificence of the technical, VR, 3-D illusions which is the spider's bait; eye candy for the puffed-up scientoids who, with their personal computers, can access the Oracle of Delphi (the Internet and "Google"), ask it any question and come away satisfied, at least temporarily, with being wired to the data hive. This is how this tethered Group Mind's hive-like energy is harnessed and farmed.

Interviewer: Virtual reality technology is in use and the hallucination is heightened. Real life can be simulated inside a cubicle: sex, exhilarating adventure, travel, space exploration.

Hoffman: State-of-the-art, mass induced hallucination mainly for fun, for "entertainment purposes" of course. So who can object? Just as human embryo manipulation, cloning and genetic modification are sold to us as compassionate medical techniques —to heal the deaf, dumb, and blind; the diabetic, cancerous and heart diseased. Who can object? Even though these same "humanitarians" are exterminating Down syndrome children through abortion. Is there anything more neo-Nazi than that?

Along with VR "reality" there is hologram "reality" that appear in one's living room, not on a wall or on wide screen plasma or 4K television. John Wayne will fight the "Redskins" directly in front of you. The reputed homicidal gas chambers of Auschwitz-Birkenau will pour their toxic Zyklon B onto the dying bodies of Judaic persons who will seem to be writhing and gasping for breath on your carpet.

There is no apparent limit to the degree to which the Spectacle will invade the world because there is no clearly demarcated limit on the ambitions of the technology propelling it. Unsupervised infants and young children walk into highway traffic thinking it's a game, drink lye mistaking it for sugar, hop in a car that is idling and try to drive it. Older and wiser folk restrain their offspring's destructive infantile urges until their children can become adults and obtain enough experience of the technology, learning what is appropriate and what is not.

Infantile scientists however, are unrestrained by our infantile media. The philosophical maxim of the brave new world is—if it is technically or scientifically feasible, then go ahead with it—to hell with the possible unforeseen consequences.

GMO technology is just a few decades old. No one truly knows the possible long term effects, because it has been rushed into use based on the profit motive, and the assurance of the kiddies called scientists who have a string of alphabet letters after their surnames. They decree it to be "safe." How can they know, when only time will tell?

Frances Yates was one of the first historians of science to reveal the sorcery behind "science," how it is being directed by practitioners of ritual magic, how it is not objective, is not based on the best and most open-ended type of measurement, how it has been constrained and pointed in one direction: *the* *perfection of a supposedly imperfect universe through the intervention of human brain power.*

Who is doing the covert directing? Let's just say that it is a force that is unimaginably hostile to the human person and Creation itself. As the coils and folds of illusion pile ever higher and thicker, it will be that much more difficult to trace the designs of this force.

Interviewer: But the fact that you are revealing this could alert and awaken humanity.

Hoffman: Maybe. I can certainly visualize it happening. For it to happen a *dis*enchanting process of massive proportions has to occur so that people would choose life over death, and acclimate themselves to the poetic joys of a non-modified natural world, while disconnecting from their previous addiction to digitally-generated illusion.

It would be a test of character and it would require that someone like this writer, though not necessarily me personally, would become adequately well-known to the masses of planet earth, or the West, for a start, to disenchant a population in thrall to The Process. Frankly, it would be a tall order and take a miracle of God's grace, and then at the very least, many hundreds of thousands of people inclined to cooperate with that grace would have to do so.

Interviewer: And if we don't do so?

Hoffman: If we don't, then the Twilight Language hallucination will continue to occupy both mental and, increasingly, actual physical space in our material world and all of the negatives we have been discussing will accelerate.

Interviewer: What would that entail?

Hoffman: It depends on how the situation devolves, and what the script decrees. We could see blood-smoking pyramids where Main Street once was, with people's hearts ripped out of their chests atop the pyramid's capstone, while other folks go about their business at the Aztec shopping mall. They would be physically and mentally sick, enervated and disoriented without knowing it, while being told they were the beneficiaries of advanced science, and immortality-research aimed at working to keep them alive forever. And similar nonsense.

Even now the life is draining out of people. I was born in the 1950s and I can remember how lively people were then, even in the midst of their cigarettes and beer.

Genuine eroticism, not the canned kind applied like a volt of electricity to a cadaver through pornography, or the easy availability of "recreational" sex, but huge, magnetic attraction between men and women with even some of the wildest and most intractable women possessing a certain nurturing kindness, because the vast majority of them had never had an abortion, and the men had not yet begun to develop the "Playboy" mentality that would give rise to a culture-wide selfishness toward women. I could say much more about those times. I'll just say here that the vitality of women and the virility of men was something we could grok, and we can grok the substantial lessening of those qualities since then.

Interviewer: Rather than being something special, this sounds to me like the traditional nostalgic lament of every generation about their own imagined and self-dramatized idyllic past, which they think they experienced as children or adolescents.

Hoffman: You could be right. Thackeray, in his novel *The Newcomes* writes of a time "when the sun used to shine brighter than it appears to do in this latter half of the 19th century; when the zest of life was keener."

The fact that the lost lament for a better time may be a recurring aspect of human nature doesn't necessarily cancel the likelihood of the universe being changed or disturbed by a signal event, such as the first explosion of the atomic bomb in 1945, the first day in the recorded history of the world when the sun appeared to dawn twice in one morning. The atomic sun manifested in the darkness. "The sun at midnight" was one of the deepest mysteries of ancient Egypt, available to everyone at death, and in the deepest mystery of *America mystica*, to those living three thousand years later, in 1945.

After that event could the world ever be the same? Was the sky as blue, the soil as verdant? Scientism-trolls would respond that, according to their instruments of measurement, yes, the sky is just as blue, the soil just as fertile. Yet, what are their primitive instruments compared with the vibrations received by a fine-tuned human being?

Interviewer: The war, as you see it, is between the world of numbers and the world of poetry.

Hoffman: Edgar A. Poe championed ratiocination, a form of reasoning which factors the limits of the empire of mathematics. In "The Purloined Letter," Auguste Dupin, Poe's master sleuth, points to the limits of number-calculations: "Mathematical axioms are *not* axioms of general truth."

James Shelby Downard intuited that the woman playing The Great Whore role in mid-20th century secret society rites in America, spontaneously experienced orgasms in places that were vortexes of power. No mathematics sees that.

By poetic intuition one may discern that magnetism in and between humans is dangerously low now, indicative of pathology; of species attack.

Interviewer: Franz Anton Mesmer, the pioneering hypnotist spoke of "magnetism" and his system allegedly operated by means of it.

Hoffman: Officially the Establishment dismissed Mesmer as a quack. Unofficially it was acknowledged that this invisible magnetism was real.

Interviewer: How so?

Hoffman: Torsten Enßlin is a theoretical astrophysicist at the Max Planck Institute for Astrophysics in Garching, Germany. He states that magnetism "is a little bit like a living organism, because magnetic fields tap into every free energy source they can hold onto and grow. They can spread and affect other areas with their presence, where they grow as well."

Interviewer: Science, until recently excluded this phenomenon from its system of measurement.

Hoffman: In the sense that Mesmer dramatized it, his theatrical presentation of this magnetic reality, yes, that's true. But as early as 1845 the devout Christian genius Michael Faraday detected it by measuring the polarization of light waves at different frequencies. He discovered that a magnetic field rotates the polarization direction of light passing through it. The Faraday Rotation is determined by the power of a magnetic field and the frequency of the light.

Mesmer taught that magnetism permeated the universe. How did he know and teach that fact before Faraday was working? Other than gravity, magnetism is the only known force that determines the structure of the universe. It has the power to do this over immense distances.

Interviewer: If this is strictly a matter of scientific reality why has it become associated with weird spookiness?

Hoffman: Part of it is the mystique of Mesmer's magnetic-based hypnotism and part of it is the nature of the thing itself: it's intangible. Magnetic fields can only be detected when they act on something else. For example, microcosmically, magnetic fields cause charged particles to twist in spirals, which is a mirror image of the macrocosmic reality of the spiral galaxies manifesting on a vast scale.

Interviewer: What's the relationship between magnetism and hypnotism?

Hoffman: Mesmer believed that the human body possessed a magnetic field that could be manipulated to "sympathetically" influence the mind when that field was penetrated.

Interviewer: And the earth has a magnetic field that protects us from the sun's rays.

Hoffman: It partially shields us from periodic bombardment by charged solar particles that comprise the "solar wind."

Interviewer: Didn't Mesmer claim he could detect the strength of a human being's magnetic field?

Hoffman: He at least insinuated that he could and it's probably safe to say he believed he could.

Interviewer: Isn't that impossible?

Hoffman: One should hesitate to use that word because even today so little is known about magnetism by the scientific yardstick. Knowing the nature of the universe is not possible without knowing the nature of magnetic fields which control the density and distribution of cosmic rays in the interstellar realm. This is mostly a mystery to physicists and astrophysicists, at least in terms of what the public is told. Science in the public realm can't answer fundamental questions, such as how the magnetic fields of planets, stars and galaxies are maintained. Scientists continue to depend on the 176-year-old Faraday Rotation for what knowledge they have obtained of the field component of magnetism. Their futuristic quest is to measure Faraday rotation against what's termed the "Cosmic Microwave Background," produced by magnetic fields.

Before quantum physics, before the discovery of what Einstein and others derided as *spukhafte Fernwirkung* ("spooky action at a distance"), Mesmer's alleged ability to turn his human mechanism into a means of detecting and employing magnetism would have been laughed out of contention.

Interviewer: And now, not so much?

Hoffman: Not now, not until we can answer this question:what's the relationship, if any, between magnetic fields and hypnotic control of the human mind?

Interview: Is this question a pursuit of science?

Hoffman: On the esoteric plane not divulged to the public, I would answer in the affirmative, but in terms of the open scientific study of magnetism it seems to me that scientists are almost solely preoccupied with the macrocosmic; with the connection between detecting magnetic fields in space and correlating those measurements with the development of the structure of the universe. But what if the human body is a microcosm of the universe? In that instance there would be parallel fields available for more localized study. It appears that Mesmer engaged in those studies.

Interviewer: And the Cryptocracy has built upon his work? He was an occultist, right?

Hoffman: A member of a secret society? Reputed to be a Freemason. His educational career, both at Ingoldstadt University and in the medical school at the University of Vienna, was supervised by the Jesuits, and both institutions of course were of the Church of Rome. He was a polymath. He taught Mozart to play the glass harmonica, the strangest western musical instrument with which I'm familiar, other than the Theremin. Mesmer himself played an improved version which rotated on a spindle, this particular updated gizmo having been invented by the Freemason Ben Franklin. Mesmer used the glass harmonica during his employment of magnets and hypnosis. In his book *Mémoire su la découverte du magnétisme animal* published in 1799, he wrote in number sixteen of his twenty-seven propositions: "It is communicated, propagated and intensified by sound."

Dr. Mesmer stated that magnetism suffused the universe in "tides," which is pretty much the astrophysical description now, two hundred years after Mesmer.

James Shelby Downard spoke of human magnetic fields in mesmeric terms, as "sympathy" and "rapport." He believed this force could be used for good or evil.

I see it as the probable foundation of the control of the Group Mind of masses of people when all of their attention is focused on an object of vision, whether it be a Superbowl football game or the mass murder of Country and Western music fans in the presence of Pharaoh's ritual objects in "Sin City."

The mesmerists employed it to hypnotically control the individual mind. In my view it's also employed to hypnotically control the Group Mind, and as a consequence of the negative use of that control, to gradually condition us into something other than human; into a lower order of being, contemporaneous with the emergence of artificial intelligence (AI) which exerts its own rapport, or what Elon Musk called a weirdness that was likely to be malevolent and that humanity would begin to experience circa 2024.

Interviewer: Hypnosis is induced by inducing a sleeping state and then the hypnotic suggestions are imparted.

Hoffman: Yes, and there are post-hypnotic suggestions as well. It was often said in the early 20th century by people like

Gurdjieff that, "Humanity is asleep." It's a common-enough refrain but people miss the fact that it's something that is subject to the change of era. Has the future already happened? The future we visualize as healthy and prosperous and advanced? Did it occur in the 1890s or the 1920s, and has it been downhill since then, commensurate with the conclusion of the dream of natural, life-enhancing progress? Has the eclipse been initiated and engineered by the Revelation of the Method?

Interviewer: Masses of people intentionally exposed to the making manifest of spiritually and psychologically devastating secrets, 'top secrets,' are very much awake.

Hoffman: Up to a point, but after the trauma of the revelation—in the post-adrenalin shock—the percipient is exhausted and sleep is very much desired. The sleeping state is then induced, together with more hypnotic suggestions concerning what constitutes reality. By this method the power and believability of false constructs of reality are exponentially increased as a result of the cycle of unveiling alarming, formerly clandestine facts on the one hand, followed by a sleep which does not refresh on the other.

When I specify sleep, I mean a state of sleep that is occurring during apparent wakefulness. It's repetitive shock therapy for the purpose of psychic driving: Revelation of the Method followed by somnambulism and hypnotic direction...Revelation of the Method followed by....homunculus, Jumbo, the mushroom cloud, king-kill in Dealey Plaza; taking *prima materia* back to *prima terra* and jettisoning the landing craft into the sun; twilight language serial murders, Son of Sam and Wicked King Wicker, the Oklahoma City bombing, the 9/11 terror attacks; the attacks in Columbine and Aurora Colorado and Las Vegas, Nevada, accompanied by synchronized clues, and jokes on the victims planted in Hollywood movies and other corporate media.

If there is any "pandemic" today it is the schizophrenia brought about by this bipolar excursion into a madness wherein the kind, benevolent, virtue-signaling leaders we are taught to admire, are revealed in flashes and bursts of illuminating intensity, as monsters of iniquity.

Interviewer: You wrote in *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare* that this devolutionary process was "powered" by Twilight Language. You added the irony that what you call "bestialization" was accompanied by widespread announcements that humanity is entering a wonderful new level of advancement, selling us on the idea that we are headed toward becoming an ageless super humanity as long as we cooperate with the *zeitgeist*.

Hoffman: A super imbecility is more like it.

Interviewer: Give an example.

Hoffman: The manner in which in the year 2020 the television-watching imbeciles swallowed hook, line and sinker the remarkable fable that a seriously over-hyped flu virus dubbed COVID-19 was grounds for locking down the population of the United States, while we all waited for the "benevolent creative geniuses" in the pharmaceutical industry to sell the government a "cure," in the form of a vaccine.

It only takes a little mental acuity and initiative to learn two words that explain how humanity overcame the plagues of the past ten thousand years prior to the dominion of man-made laboratory drugs: the cultivation of *natural immunity*. How do we develop and strengthen our immunity by natural means?

Since the iatrogenic drug-pushers can't make billions of dollars answering a question like that, which entails the knowledge and use of plant-based medicines and radical lifestyle changes in terms of remineralizing the soil and other health improvements, they direct their moronic TV "news" talking heads to avoid the subject. Consequently, Americans sat stupefied in suspended animation awaiting a miracle at the end of a needle, instead of getting on with life, as the "benighted superstitious peasants" of the past managed to do in the midst of the Spanish Influenza, and other powerful flu outbreaks that occurred periodically throughout the 20th century and which killed hundreds of thousands of people without calling a halt to school, commerce and life outside the home.

By the way, with the introduction of the internal combustion engine and vehicles powered by it, millions of people have been killed in car and truck accidents since the early 20th century, and something like upwards of an average of 40,000 people in America are killed every year, even now. If everyone who traveled in a motorized vehicle wore a NASCAR crash helmet, three-point seat belt and flame retardant suit, those deaths and crippling injuries would be dramatically reduced. Do we see any sustained demands for those reforms on the part of the Establishment media's safety campaigners who virtually shut down this nation to "save lives" during the "COVID-19" epidemic of 2020-21?

Improperly prescribed pharmaceutical drugs kill hundreds of thousands of Americans per annum. Outcry? Reforms?

COVID-19 has been the focus of a selectively indignant media-panic with an agenda of social engineering having little or nothing to do with the health and safety of the people.

Interviewer: The hidden agenda.

Hoffman: This is the Black Jack game. It's not hidden. In the 1930s there was a Saturday afternoon movie serial featuring a Chinese villain, "Ming the Merciless." In 1981 Dean Koontz, writing under the pseudonym Leigh Nichols, published *The Eyes of Darkness*. On p. 353 of the paperback reprint edition printed under his real name, Mr. Koontz writes, "...China's most important and dangerous new biological weapon in a decade. They call the stuff 'Wuhan-400' because it was developed at their RDNA labs outside of the city of Wuhan. Wuhan-400 is a perfect weapon...."

On page 356 we read, "Bollinger knew how fast Wuhan-400 claims its victims, and he just panicked. Flipped out. Apparently, he convinced himself he could run away from the infection. God knows, that's exactly what he tried to do."

Interviewer: Are you saying Kootnz's Wuhan-400 was a type of precursor Twilight Language?

Hoffman: On page 364 it's revealed that the character Danny's "newfound psychic abilities were a result of...his repeated exposure to Wuhan-400."

Interviewer: So this Danny person sees things most of us can't after he contracts the Wuhan-400 virus? Are you suggesting that Koontz's *The Eyes of Darkness* has something to do with COVID-19 and the 21 Gateway?

Hoffman: Divide the number 400 Dean Kootnz identified with Wuhan by the COVID number 19 which Donald Trump identified with Wuhan China, and you have 21. [4]

Interviewer: What does this mean?

Hoffman: It's a haunting. As far back as 1576 Fleming in his *Panopl. Epist.* (228) made a medical reference to being "haunted with a fever," but by 1594 Shakespeare was using the word in terms more familiar to us: "...haunt me in my sleep, to undertake the death of the world." (*Richard III*, Act 1, Scene 2). There is also the medieval connotation of haunting as being habituated to some thing or event.

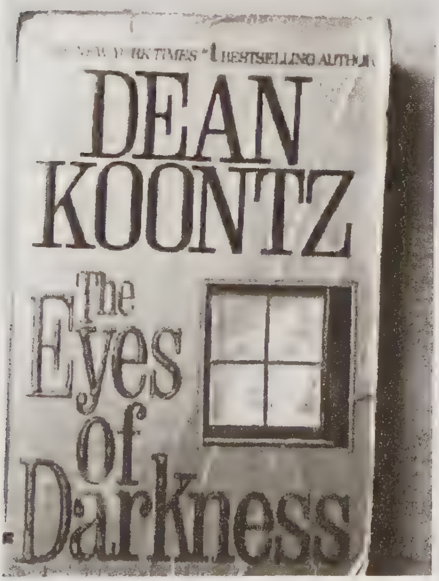

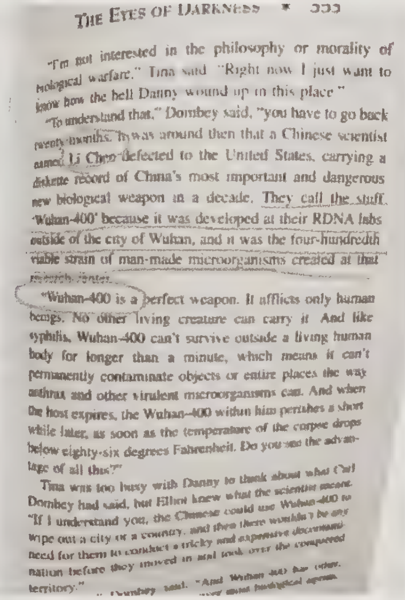
THE EYES OF DARKNESS ✶ 333

"I'm not interested in the philosophy or morality of biological warfare," Tina said. "Right now I just want to know how the hell Danny wound up in this place."

"To understand that," Dombey said, "you have to go back twenty months. It was around then that a Chinese scientist named Li Chen defected to the United States, carrying a diskette record of China's most important and dangerous new biological weapon in a decade. They call the stuff 'Wuhan-400' because it was developed at their RDNA labs outside of the city of Wuhan, and it was the four-hundredth viable strain of man-made microorganisms created at that research center.

"Wuhan-400 is a perfect weapon. It afflicts only human beings. No other living creature can carry it. And like syphilis, Wuhan-400 can't survive outside a living human body for longer than a minute, which means it can't permanently contaminate objects or entire places the way anthrax and other virulent microorganisms can. And when the host expires, the Wuhan-400 within him perishes a short while later, as soon as the temperature of the corpse drops below eighty-six degrees Fahrenheit. Do you see the advantage of all this?"

Tina was too busy with Danny to think about what Carl Dombey had said, but Elliot knew what the scientist meant. "If I understand you, the Chinese could use Wuhan-400 to wipe out a city or a country, and then there wouldn't be any need for them to conduct a tricky and expensive decontamination before they moved in and took over the conquered territory."

[illegible] Dombey said. "And Wuhan-400 has other, [illegible]

Interviewer: And the significance is what?

Hoffman: Haunting us with the spectre that COVID-19 was staged. Here's another chapter of the psychodrama that shapes the fable being conveyed by those who have traveled to the subterranean crypt and returned to our world to tell about it. [5]

---

[4] To be specific, exactly 21.0526315789.
Separating the decimal numbers as: 05.263 and 15.789 and then adding them = 21.052.

Interviewer: In other words, a script.

Hoffman: In the argot of dramaturgy, script is shorthand for manuscript. In the twentieth century it denoted a "shooting script" fashioned in the curious craft of writing for cinema, television and video gaming. In the age of electricity, much of what has been used to process a mass audience is from a script, particularly fallible forecasts about the future that are presented as infallibly prescriptive. In the sense we're discussing here however, this haunting and the subsequent memory shaping and encoding—it seems to be a more venerable process—the shadows that dance around the campfire and the musical intonations of the bard as her voice enraptures those gathered there.

Interviewer: We see it and we don't see it.

Hoffman: Our subconscious *groks* it, to use Robert Heinlein's term, and as we proceed through this Time of the Gateway, we are seeing the story emerge into our waking consciousness and even materialize as a physical presence.

Interviewer: Is there an inception point for this scripting? Downard said the plan for the JFK assassination was laid in Shakespeare, New Mexico and the Storyville section of New Orleans.

Hoffman: In the early modern era we see it first in the West in the origin of the Rosicrucians with the publication over the period from 1614 to 1615 of their, at that time, anonymous texts, *Fama Fraternitatis* and *Confessio Fratenitasis*, ostensibly anti-Catholic tracts but actually products of papally-enabled Kabbalistic gnosis.

Interviewer: Which is what?

---

[5] To our knowledge, author Dean Koontz is not and was not involved in any conspiracy or wrong doing relating to his novel, to Wuhan or the pandemic. His book reflects well on his talent and prescience.

Hoffman: The human alchemy of "Magia and Cabala" pioneered by that prodigy of the Church of Rome, Count Pico della Mirandola. The Rosicrucian texts announced the formation of a secret society dedicated to shaping and directing science. The inaugural texts were authored by members of the "Tübingen Circle," a group whose German-Papist-Nominalist forefathers 125 years earlier, had initiated the first concerted intellectual and theological propaganda for ecclesiastical permission for usury.

Interviewer: You claim that the manifestation in the sky of the mushroom cloud by the explosion of the first atomic bomb, at the terminus of the old Mexican road known as the Journey of the Dead Man, on the 33rd degree of north parallel latitude, at the "Trinity Site," in the U.S. state whose nickname is "the Land of the Enchantment" is a direct result of the occult scripting of the Rosicrucian Ludibrium, correct?

Hoffman: It's more than a script, don't you think? It's a haunting tale contrived by an apparition bearing the vanilla names "bureaucrat" and "technocrat."

Interviewer: Which you say is the smokescreen behind which the occultism is hidden because it's so improbable coming from nerdy functionaries like that.

Hoffman: It would not have been improbable in 1615 when the *Fama* and the *Confessio* were presented in terms of the yearning for an advanced science. The Rosicrucian texts were couched in the lofty rhetoric of humanist calls for "reform," in terms of advanced propulsion of the acquisition of *scientia est potentia*, the new age of *scientific power* over nature.

The first edition of the *Confessio,* was published in Latin, together with something called the *Consideratio brevis,* an abstruse alchemical treatise by the enigmatic "Phillippus a Gabella." This person's *Consideratio* was known in English as a "Short Consideration of the More Secret Philosophy." It was a Hermetic explication of the *Monas hieroglyphica* that had been formulated by the English mathematician Dr. John Dee, during the time he served as sorcerer for the regime of Protestant Queen Elizabeth I. We are a bit behind the times in being disinclined to conceive of the mathematics of sorcery at the Trinity Site in 1945.

Interviewer: Why did the elite of the early 17th century see nothing sinister in magic married to mathematics?

Hoffman: One of the strengths of Frances Yates was her study of the difference between how magic in medieval times was perceived, as compared with during the Italian Renaissance. In the Middle Ages magic was almost always viewed as filthy, dark and demonic. By popularizing the concept of an “angelic Catholic” Kabbalah, allegedly representative of God’s own branches of divine knowledge, Pico della Mirandola and his Medici network cleaned up the image of sorcery and identified mathematics and the other learned disciplines with it. From that infernal marriage, both Cartesian mechanism and scientism’s “repair” (*tikkun olam*) of a supposedly “imperfect Creation” through the intervention of human brain power arose, with fairly disastrous results for Nature and this planet, as witnessed in the Land of Enchantment’s spectacular theatrical crucible, 330 years later.

Interviewer: How can the deterministic world of science find common cause with sorcery?

Hoffman: As you know the universe as envisioned by quantum physics is not deterministic, it’s indelibly probabilistic. Quantum states reflect our own knowledge of physical reality, rather than being faithful representations of something that exists independently. A case in point are the particles that don’t have definite properties until those properties are measured.

Interviewer: And you believe that?

Hoffman: It may or may not be prudent to believe it. It does however beg the question, “Is there a hidden deterministic reality that’s not modeled by the mathematics of quantum mechanics?”

Interviewer: How are we missing the whole science and magic connection?

Hoffman: It hasn't been missed by the New Age and hippie movements, beginning in the 1960s, though the knowledge was mutilated and misdirected. There are shelves of books and films devoted to it. The "Tao of Physics" etc.

Interviewer: Not in connection with the atom bomb.

Hoffman: Other than meditation on Oppenheimer's observation from the *Bhagavad Gita* which he allegedly uttered at the detonation, "I am become death, the shatterer of worlds."

Interviewer: I thought we were in the Revelation of the Method era?

Hoffman: We are, but there are paradoxes generated, adumbrated, as expressed in the maxim "hiding less in order to hide more," something which occasionally attends the Revelation but is not reducible to it.

Interviewer: Then it undercuts the Revelation.

Hoffman: Not if, however apparently circuitous the route, it leads to its manifestation.

Interviewer: How?

Hoffman: Hiding less in order to hide more seems to me to be an adjunct of the Revelation of the Method process itself. It's possible that the process doesn't operate in alignment with our expectations, for example that it's almost always going to manifest as a combustive flash. It appears to function in certain circumstances in ways that are analogous to what's known in computer science, in the year 2021 anyway, as iO, short for "indistinguishability Obfuscation." iO enables the creation of "deniable" encryption, wherein the user can plausibly convince a percipient that she was sent an entirely different message from the one actually transmitted. They are given the actual message but they don't recognize it. A method of obfuscating processing, rendering it indistinguishable, involves initiating people into the program without them perceiving the program's internal secrets. That's comparable to homomorphic computer encryption, in which a cloud computer has the ability to compute encrypted data without acquiring its internal dynamics.

Interviewer: Where does the Revelation of the Method come into play in this scenario?

Hoffman: Well, in that case you have RQM, which is relational quantum mechanics, which asserts that the value for one system is always relative to the system it's interacting with. For example, time and space. Time relations among events are constituted by the specific *physical relations* obtaining between them: for instance, the ongoing presence in time of a haunted place. Charged events occurring in a specific place can manifest in perpetuity in future time as a "haunting." To create this perpetuity an action is "charged" through expertly calculated, impeccably executed rituals, sometimes involving the shedding of blood.

Interviewer: How is the expertise to accomplish this gained?

Hoffman: Through what formerly was known as sorcery.

Interviewer: And you think this is what some "serial murders" and "lone nut gunman" type shooting massacres really are, using magical, ceremonial phenomena in space for haunting future time; channeling it in directions where the sorcerers decide it has to go to achieve their supreme objective?

Hoffman: Haunting the future, yes. Another word would be imprinting the future, so that it bears the stamp and image of the sorcerers. Out of that alchemy comes a drastically occluded vision that can't conceive of anything other than what we're told the future will be. And the command ideology has prophesied that humanity will settle for it because they can't see how it can go any other way. Late in the game, when the full Revelation of the Egyptian-thanatos, occult criminality is made manifest, it won't matter. That's Black Jack's wager.

Interviewer: And less of this is hidden by the Revelation of the Method pageantry, so that more can be concealed. That's the "21" Black Jack stage you claim we're in.

Hoffman: Yes, as we're led through the 21 Gateway, certain strategies, tactics and methods of operation remain concealed in the short term, for the purpose of successfully performing, without obstruction, the final revelation, according to what I surmise is a primordial script that gained motive force in the city-of-dark-night that was ancient Egypt, and then fueled by the two-tiered law-givers and secrets-keepers of every eon, and whose ultimate fulfillment is reputedly destined to be "expertly calculated" and "impeccably executed."

Interviewer: For the purpose of?

Hoffman: For the permanent ascendance of the enemy of the human race. There's a persistent legend that Satan can make people stronger, that he wants them to have joy, unlike God who is portrayed as a nay-sayer and killjoy. But actually Satan is the enemy of the human race. His empire consists of abortion and autopsy and the dominion of dead matter.

Interviewer: As a Biblical Christian how do you reconcile this dark future with Scripture?

Hoffman: Because I explore the beliefs and mechanisms of the Cryptocracy, it doesn't follow that I personally believe in their efficacy or fulfillment. When a psychiatrist provides a case study of a psychotic patient's delusions it doesn't signify that he shares those delusions.

The confusion arises in the concept of potency. Unlike an everyday schizophrenic who possesses no more than average personal power or wealth, the psychotics running the occult imperium are potent operators who have convinced large swaths of humanity to buy into their deceptive phantasmagoria. Sociopathic master criminals often possess a considerable capacity to successfully mount swindles and fraud. When this capacity is repeatedly honed, improved and passed down to the heirs of the gnosis by a criminal gang that has utilized these sophisticated techniques of mind control for millennia, the hallucination they project will become a kind of reality for much of humanity.

Interviewer: With quantum physics in mind, don't we have to question what reality is?

Hoffman: The yardstick of quantum physics serves as a check on our arrogance and a reminder that any measurement that falls short of the highest aspiration for truth and the purest curiosity, will be a subjective and corrupted one.

Interviewer: Quantum physics is wrong then in suggesting all of our perceptions about reality are subjective?

Hoffman: We go wrong when we fail to recall that quantum physics itself is a form of measurement. Its quantifications are subject to the same limitations as all other evaluations and computations.

Interviewer: Then we're locked in a cognitive trap set up by an occult reality, with no chance of escape. Trapped by freeze-the-secrets/thaw-the-secrets; and hide-less-to-conceal-more, Revelation of the Method lockdown hypnotic control, dead matter supremacy.

Hoffman: That's the proper belief seeded by Control.

Interviewer: According to you that's our present reality.

Hoffman: That's the present *script*.

Interviewer: It's our reality, in the present!

Hoffman: No. The present "reality" doesn't exhaust the reality that's out of sight and beyond our comprehension.

Interviewer: I'll anticipate you're going to say, "The reality that is Jesus."

Hoffman: I'm saying we should deal in Nature, Creation and the cosmos. A play has been run on us to believe in polytheism, the notion that there are two supreme beings, Jesus and Satan, and that it has yet to be determined who shall win and reign.

The reality is that the person who raises people from the dead and raises Himself from the dead, is in charge of the universe. In Matthew 28:18 it is written that all authority in heaven and earth has been given to Jesus. The impressive sorcerers and occultists that we've been discussing are in fact pitiful chumps. The dazzling eschatology they've devised with extraordinary virtuosity, the glamor they've employed to induce in us obsequious devotion and shuddering awe, is one act in the infinite theatre of God's inescapable will.

Interviewer: You worked as a hospital orderly in a large psychiatric facility in upstate New York.

Hoffman: Yes, a psychiatric hospital of some fifteen hundred patients with the Twilight Language keyword, "Willard" in its name — Willard State Hospital, a.k.a. Willard Psychiatric Center.

Interviewer: Is there a Twilight Language dictionary? How do you determine what is a key word in this lexicon?

Hoffman: I don't think it's so formal. It's often a matter of intuition and pattern detection. And then too, the phenomenon is shape-shifting. Personally, for me there are a number of ways to try to detect a key word or phrase in this context, most often when it becomes prominently associated with something truly out of the ordinary. The word "wicker" for example, which, as I said earlier, is associated historically with ritual immolation, and etymologically with the bending of reality. Then it crops up in the symbol-laden, serial-killer book, *The Silence of the Lambs*. Furthermore, a member of the Son of Sam serial murder cult signed his letter to New York reporter Jimmy Breslin, "Wicked King Wicker." Wicker is a palimpsest of Twilight Language, a form of communication which bends the ordinary reality of our half-asleep, workaday consciousness and which can be formed and imprinted through selection, repetition and association: selecting a word that's usually already freighted with etymological weirdness, and then repeatedly associating it with, for example, ritual murder, so that it becomes a type of invocation.

Interviewer: Is there a twilight language separate from human intervention?

Hoffman: That's a worthy question and to explore it we should ask another: how does synchronicity arise and order itself? Is it exclusively manipulated by an extra-human agency? If not, what role does human agency play? Using Mesmer as a navigator, is there a kind of Nikola Telsa-like “tower” or “antenna,” not necessarily purely physical, that attracts and orders synchronicity? If something like that exists, is it aimed, like a weapon or a means of engineering humanity? If so, how does it operate and who is the operator?

Interviewer: Would you say that the ability to perceive these signals or translate this language is not mental illness?

Hoffman: Wouldn’t the ability to detect patterns that actually do have significance as “Twilight Language” be a stepping stone to seeing the operations of the world we inhabit with greater clarity?

Interviewer: Leading to total clarity?

Hoffman: A claim of total clarity overlooks that inherent trickiness of the material universe since The Fall.

Interviewer: Looks like we’re back to Original Sin again.

Hoffman: People imagine that seeing the world as cursed by Original Sin is a needlessly prejudicial and negative form of inevitabilism that creates the condition it presumes to diagnose. The “positive thinker” believes that each person creates the world they perceive around them with their own thoughts, which is true, but only up to a point. One cannot become God through one’s thoughts. It is only *within* God’s Creation and within the time, space and personnel that God has brought into existence, that viewing all of that created phenomena with a positive view of potentiality, makes it resonate on a higher plane of harmony. And then only to a point, because how do you banish the darkness, the accuser, this *satan*, this force that is the opposite of love?

We know two world-champion positive thinkers who have written books and founded successful, transformative businesses founded on positive thoughts and affirmations. They traveled a long way ahead and they continue to go that way, but a few years ago they suffered an enormous setback that nearly destroyed all of their work in a major American metropolis. In the end even they had to concede that they were horribly attacked by The Darkness, due to the fact they were manifesting love to such a degree that the Darkness intervened with very serious consequences for their commercial enterprise, which also happened to be philanthropic.

Yes, good comes out of adversity, but the point is that the force we might wish to denominate as The Opposite of Love, is a function of the distorting process wired into the post-Edenic material universe—a Christian would say it manifested "After the Fall." Like the existence of gravity and magnetism, The Opposite of Love is so fundamentally wired into our world it is outside the process whereby phenomena are called into existence by our positive or negative attention.

Interviewer: I'll return to what you said was loaded with negative connotations and ask you, are you willing to say that another name for the "inherent trickiness of the material universe" is Original Sin?

Hoffman: Yes, but only if it's understood to denote an event that occurred *after* a harmonious primeval relationship with the Creator was sundered. To state that the material universe is inherently tricky from inception, in its very nature, would be to succumb to the error of Platonism—the occult detestation of Creation paradoxically coming up with utopian programs—what Thomas Molnar termed the perennial heresy, the attempt to build a planetary paradise with the concomitant belief that congenitally flawed, postlapsarian human nature can be altered independent of Jesus Christ.

Interviewer: This is bleak. Humans have to huddle in perpetual pessimistic wariness? That's their only path out of the occult?

Hoffman: Where you see pessimism I see a joyful community of brothers and sisters in Christ, having an awareness of human folly and a healthy suspicion of kings, governors, dictators and rulers in general. First, we acknowledge that God is the author of our inalienable human rights. When the Creator is removed from the equation then the Leninist, the Maoist or the neo-Nazi steps in to say that rights are conferred by The Party, and can be legally and ethically withdrawn by The Party. Second, where fallen human nature is acknowledged (which is a supremely anti-occult acknowledgement), flawed human beings will not be entrusted with unrestrained authority.

Interviewer: So all that is good in community and brotherhood is explicitly Christian, and anything outside of it is not? For a collector of Fortean anomalies like you, that's pedestrian.

Watkins Glen

Hoffman: Fortean anomaly? Let's travel to a glen bearing the name of Sherlock Holmes' assistant, Watkins. The date is July 28, 1973. The site is the largest gathering in the history of the United States. 600,000 people in Watkins Glen, New York for the "Summer Jam" rock music festival, featuring The Band, the Grateful Dead and the Allman Brothers, all taking place on the "Psychic Highway"—the 42nd degree of north parallel latitude. Other than cops outside the concert attempting to direct traffic, among those 600,000 people there was no policing and there was no crime reported. There were however dozens of cases of people ill from drug overdoses and two babies were born. A "city" of that size enjoying that level of almost complete freedom from crime, is fairly unique.

Interviewer: It wasn't a Christian gathering.

Hoffman: True. Christians were present, however. There had to have been prayer and supplication in a population of that size.

Interviewer: Still, it's an anomaly. You mention births. No deaths?

Hoffman: One death.

Interviewer: Do you know who?

Hoffman: Yes. His name was Willard.

Interviewer: How did he die?

Hoffman: He burned to death, Icarus-like.

Interviewer: In Watkins Glen? How?

Hoffman: The official story is that he was a 35-year-old sky-diver who parachuted out of an airplane and then caught fire as he flew through the air.

Interviewer: And the unofficial story?

Hoffman: Well there's this labyrinth see, and then there's this Greek son of Daedalus who possessed the secret of it, who's warned not to fly too high. And then there's Willard Smith, age 35, who flew too high over Watkins. Whether he had the secret of the labyrinth I don't know.

I do know that Willard resided in the city of Syracuse in upstate New York. Its namesake is the ancient Greek city of Syracuse; the one-time capital of Greece's Sicilian colony.

Wikipedia and the *New York Times,* two sides of a counterfeit media coin, both report he carried flares that set his "suit" on fire.

Some of his friends and sky-diving students regarded Willard as a "daredevil." At Watkins he carried aloft an artillery simulator, akin to the M-18 smoke grenades that were somewhat notorious for malfunctioning. And this unstable artillery gadget appears to have exploded prematurely while it was on Willard's chest-mounted reserve parachute.

Willard Psychiatric

Interviewer: You believe Willard is a significant Twilight Language name and you worked at the facility that bore that name. Did anything strange happen there?

Hoffman: One could say that when strangeness becomes commonplace it's no longer strange, which is a description of the process of human alchemy.

Interviewer: Yet this alchemical processing renders the majority of people living in modern times evil, which is very strange.

Hoffman: Not evil, but lukewarm, which T.S. Eliot observed was worse than evil. As far back as 1933 he told Paul Elmer More, "Not many people are alive enough to be evil." He said that the number who need to "borrow vitality and can't pay it back is immense."

Willard itself was indeed a place of high strangeness, much like the Willard Hotel in Washington D.C. and the action in Richard Brautigan's book, *Willard and His Bowling Trophies*.

I was born and raised in an upstate New York town on the "psychic highway." Willard was approximately 20 miles south of our family home. When I was a child I heard the word Willard and it gave me the willies. I overheard grown-ups talking, sometimes in whispers, other times in anguished shouts and cries, about someone having to be "sent to Willard," or as a threat, sometimes idle, that a person, "Ought to go to Willard!" When I was about twelve I was walking to my grandparent's house on North Main Street, and I witnessed an altercation in a parking lot behind a residence. I recognized a short man who worked for the city highway department, grappling with his wife as she seemed to be trying to enter a car and I heard him say, "They're going to take you to Willard if you keep this up!" It was a refrain, like a fragment from a song; an ear worm one can't entirely dispel.

It seemed in my youth that people in my town of some 20,000 were either going to Willard or coming out of Willard, or they were patients in Willard. The sound of that name conveyed to me a nervous, jangling feeling, as well as a place of confinement. Then when I was in my early 20s I found myself employed there.

Interviewer: Were you afraid to be there?

Hoffman: I was never afraid there. I was sad at times and at other times joyful, and even elated.

Interviewer: Why weren't you afraid?

Hoffman: Willard was located on what might be called a white or crystal stream. I'm not speaking literally, but in terms of the spirit of the place, the *genius loci*. It was a beautiful location on the shore of Seneca Lake, with magnificent deciduous trees, a fine theatre building that was many decades old at the time. It exuded peace and serenity. In autumn I considered it one of the loveliest places I had ever seen.

Interviewer: No haunted buildings, no feelings of menace?

Hoffman: One building, which had been the original asylum from the 19th century, was alleged by some to be severely haunted. It was vacant save for a few secretarial offices at the front of the building, on the lakeside. I knew an employee who was also a semi-professional thief and he told me of how he would enter the building at night to steal antiques, and as greedy as he was, he had to give up his burglaries because he was too badly frightened on occasion to proceed.

Interviewer: In what way?

Hoffman: With an overwhelming sense of foreboding, which may have led him to hear noises and see lights.

Interviewer: What had happened in that building?

Hoffman: In the 19th century? Misery. People confined, chained, beaten.

Interviewer: Did you ever enter it?

Hoffman: A couple of times in the course of my duties I had to visit the secretarial pool there at the front. I did not feel or notice anything weird or unusual. The building was architecturally distinguished; a kind of solemn Victorian style, but since what frightened the bejeebers out of me in that time (the 1970s), was a garishly lighted, soullessly concrete K-Mart store, that old building seemed benevolent by comparison. The secretaries were women, some of them young, who enlivened the quarters they occupied. I was told that few if any lingered after hours or in the dark, and that none wanted to be alone there, but I don't know how true that is.

Interviewer: Did you have access to the rest of the building?

Hoffman: I could have had access. I had access to almost the entire campus, which was hundreds of acres, including a by-then abandoned farm and orchards. Like most of the employees on the floor, I had the master key that fit the doors of every ward and every room where patients were housed.

Since I was trusted with that key, I could have asked someone to let me in the back part of the old asylum, but I didn't and I can't say why, for certain. I passed it every day and it seemed to have eyes like the House of Usher, but in comparison to the world that patronized K-Mart it just didn't seem sinister to me on the same scale of horror.

I lingered on its lawn and sometimes took my lunch in the shade of its maple trees. I respected it as a fixture of a time and place that had its own context that couldn't and shouldn't be judged by the modern mentality.

Interviewer: What happened to you when you went to K-Mart?

Hoffman: When I went to K-Mart? I felt blinded by its harsh light, that cash register light, the light of commerce without human concord, amid junk for sale, the decent town folk who became ugly in that light. I was uneasy, nervous and even embarrassed when I was in establishments such as K-Mart. I tried to avoid them. I had no luck in places like that. They were more haunting than Willard but not gothically so, not in that classically spooky way we've come to equate with evil.

Interviewer: "Willard" had been a locus of strangeness for you while you were growing up and all of a sudden it became benign?

Hoffman: Sometimes benign, even though death both gradual and violent occurred there, and the stifling of life, the wasting of lives, but also there were lay saints residing there, and by that I mean inmates who were too good, too holy, too kind, to prosper in our society's rat race, and they took refuge at Willard and the extent to which Willard offered them asylum as opposed to treatment, it was a boon.

Interviewer: What role did you play within that context.

Hoffman: I tried to the best of my ability to offer the people confined there what Dorothy Day termed hospitality.

Interviewer: Not treatment?

Hoffman: In the original understanding of an insane asylum, it was a place of refuge and protection for gifted and troubled people who would otherwise be exploited and mistreated by the outside world. In this sense of asylum one offers above all, hospitality.

Interviewer: What was wrong with Willard?

Hoffman The heavy drugging and electro-shock therapy, which were two main forms of what you would call "treatment" when I was employed there. Mental illness becomes iatrogenic —is manufactured—in people by those methods. One woman patient in her 30s had experienced more than a hundred shock "therapies" and was violently insane as a result. She caused the death of a beautiful octogenarian lady patient on the floor above the one on which I worked.

There were some psychodrama sessions that probably did good and there was a young psychologist who had conversations with acute— meaning short-term—care patients, which probably helped them. But the main point of these facilities should be to protect the lay saints from the outside world and protect the world from the possessed. That's what an asylum is and that's what Willard appears to have been.

Interviewer: You had patients who committed suicide, who murdered people.

Hoffman: Yes. One of our patients had had sex with a cow. People took their own lives. A young man who was released into the community on a weekend pass, returned home ten miles down the road and slaughtered his entire family while his father was absent. He killed his mother and his siblings. We had people guilty of infanticide.

We also had poets and pianists and tragic ones who had been there for forty years. Chain-smoking Arthur Rimbauds. Wives of Cornell University professors. Cornell University students. Vietnam veterans with post traumatic stress. A father-son psychiatric team wherein the psychiatrist father had his psychiatrist son committed by court order. Employees who were admitted as patients; all under the aegis of "*Willard*."

Interviewer: Aside from this mayhem was there anything occult going on?

Hoffman: That's a good question because the Cryptocracy in the past spread the legend and possibly believed it, that certain "mentally ill" people "shine" in the sense of levels of psychic ability or potential, and that these people are used or farmed in some way. I was only at Willard for a little over a year and in that time I can't say I observed any Svengali at work in that way, but the potential was always there. James Shelby Downard believed that something like that happened to him when he was committed to Bolivar State Hospital against his will. He felt he was tortured and abused there. That is perhaps why for the rest of his life he had tremendous compassion for marginalized and damned people he considered genuine scapegoats.

Electro-shock therapy is torture. I was ordered to assist at one shock treatment and that was the first and last time that I did so. I told them they could fire me but I would never help electro-shock another patient again.

Interviewer: Well, was Willard a sinister place or not?

Hoffman: For the brief time I was employed it was both a blessing and a curse for the patients, depending on their circumstances. In the nineteenth century it seems to have been a horrorshow, but what hospital for the insane wasn't in that era?

Interviewer: You see the name Willard as part of the Twilight Language.

Hoffman: I see that someone or some thing, whatever it may be—and I don't discount coincidence, I only ask if coincidence itself is somehow governed and arranged—the name Willard has associations with madness and power that may have, or may have had for a time, an imprinting function on the Group Mind.

But in terms of my experience there, it would be wrong to say it was unrelievedly negative or horrible.

Sometimes I would pose as a patient.

Interviewer: What do you mean?

Hoffman: I worked the day shift, Tuesday through Saturday, and Saturday was a comparatively slow day apart from emergency cases the sheriff would drag in shackled. The main event of Saturday was escorting patients to Hadley Hall, which was the large and lovely old theatre, for a movie. I remember watching a movie there with my patients which was the version of "Tom Sawyer" starring Jody Foster and Warren Oates, with a lovely soundtrack by the Sherman brothers.

Many of my older patients and some young ones were dressed in cast-off clothing that would be valuable today as vintage '50s and early '60s fashions, but which were out of place in the mid 1970s. Sometimes I would dress in the same vintage clothing as my patients and instead of remaining inside the theatre after escorting them there, I sat outside with the patients who were nicotine fiends and kept them company while they smoked. I wanted to see how other employees treated them when they assumed they were alone only with patients present. I remember one lady employee arriving after we seated ourselves outside. She began to be quite rude to one of my patients and I told her so. Thinking that I too was a patient she scolded me to sit down and shut up. When I protested her indignities she raised her hand as if to slap me. It was at that point that I reached into my pocket and fished out the master key that only employees possessed. Fixing her startled countenance with a glare, I dangled the key in front of her eyes and said, "That's no way to treat a vulnerable person."

She was shocked. She scurried into the theatre and I like to think that she afforded the afflicted better care after that.

Interviewer: Were you ever worried that by masquerading as a patient you might cross the line and lose your identity?

Hoffman: I wouldn't call it a masquerade. I permitted percipients to fool themselves. I didn't behave like a patient, I vaguely resembled one on certain Saturdays and the assumptions of those who saw me led them to deceiving themselves concerning my identity. But to answer your question, I saw at least as much insanity outside Willard on the part of well-dressed, well-groomed "respectable citizens," as I did inside. Some considerable portion of the patients at Willard were confined there because they were far more sane that those who did the confining, which is an old story.

Interviewer: Of visionaries labeled as insane?

Hoffman: Yes, but let's be careful not to lose sight of how many sluggards pose as visionary artists to provide cover for their sloth, their irresponsibility and lack of the spark of life. They waste their lives and leech off others. In defense of their behavior they say they are misunderstood and persecuted for their art. It's a cliché.

Interviewer: The yin and yang again.

Hoffman: Two sides of the coin of life. A tossed coin which lands balanced on its edge is representative of a higher state of consciousness. It's a feat.

We have yang, compressed, uptight conformists who accuse those who think differently from the herd of being crazy, and we have yin scroungers posing as gifted artists and accusing their critics of wrongly calling them shirkers. These are the antipodes of life, I guess. In *After the Fall,* Samuel Beckett expressed these swings of yin and yang destiny when he wrote, "This dust will not settle in our time, and when it does some great roaring machine will come and whirl it all sky-high again."

Interviewer: Do you consider yourself the prophet of the Revelation of the Method in our time?

Hoffman: My family would die laughing if anyone were to call me a prophet.

Interviewer: Well, it's a fact that months before the September 11 terror attacks you published your prediction that the year 2001 would be momentous, would be the gateway to an extraordinary culmination of occult transformation.

Hoffman: God's grace did that. I was only a vehicle for it. Everyone has the potential.

Interviewer: What about a position as consultant on ritual murders?

Hoffman: I wouldn't turn it down. I fulfilled something akin to that when I was a reporter for the Associated Press. I couldn't refuse now helping to bring the actual murderers of those Country and Western fans in Las Vegas to justice in a court of law. I couldn't say no to that. I would be obliged to assist, and I would try to do it, as best I could.

Interviewer: You've suggested that ordinary life may no longer be very possible for people in the digitalized West.

Hoffman: So much is lost in terms of our humanity as we process ourselves into something less. At this stage in the alchemy we're the ideal hypnotic subjects. That's one reason I spent years among the Old Order Wenger Mennonites, and the Amish. To experience human beings whose lives were not invaded by the command language of television, radio and the Internet. I would take my horse and wagon out at 4 a.m. under the summer stars in Holmes County, Ohio, with my buggy's wooden wheels sheathed in steel, rolling over wooden bridges. That "music" was wonderful. In the early evening after the sunset, from the front yard of the farm where we lived, I watched the fireflies dance over fields of shocked barley in inky darkness, no street lights to intrude on the beatitude.

Geophysically, street lights and city lights have blotted out the trillion star night sky that is still visible on the Hana side of Maui, while mechanized and digitalized noise is a plague that robs us of the ordinary blessings of nature. Here in north Idaho there are defunct gold and silver mines, some of which have been stabilized. To enter one of those mines and experience total silence can heal the heart, mind, body and psyche.

Interviewer: This is where people far from industrial civilization have a blessing.

Getting back to the Biblical prophets and warnings. You do believe we have experienced things like that lately.

Hoffman: Oh, sure. The "Terminator Judgment Day" movies were ominous warnings which put the movie-goers and TV watchers—and those to whom those viewers conveyed the narrative—under obligation when they failed to act on the alarm.

"You were warned" is quite an indictment of those who proceed heedlessly. The autonomous "Skynet defense" put into place to render us digitally safe is itself the digital doom. As noted, years earlier Tolkein said it with regard to the "One

Ring." Which is what makes me laugh about these elite PhD. scientists who are absolute infants when it comes to technology. If they can pick it up they'll mess with it. It doesn't matter what it is, analogous to infants with matches and blowtorches cavorting inside a paper mill, or skateboarding into traffic on the Interstate. Those who suggest the scientists shouldn't be so reckless and heedless, receive the infant's response, "Why not Da-da? I can dood it, so I gonna dood it." That's the romper room "philosophy" of scientism now. Play God *because you can* play God. Blowback be damned.

Skynet is a cinematic symbol of the autonomous AI future and it is about as dystopic as one can imagine, but has it slowed our march toward empowering autonomous robots? Not to my knowledge. People have been granted a vision of the consequences, and they go ahead with it anyway because they seem to be in love with death and catastrophe. The negative karma from oblivious arrogance, when it is rendered moral and permissible because "scientists" are at its head, is incalculable. The death wish on this planet is remarkable. The demand for and insistence upon herd-mentality and extinction has not lessened. The Reign of Dead Matter is arriving on schedule. Our Creator declared, "All those who hate me love death." [6]

Interviewer: How then have some of us managed to still be here and be human?

Hoffman: The grace of God.

Interviewer: What is the most recent serial killer type of event that has galvanized you?

Hoffman: Galvanism was the means by which Frankenstein's monster was revived. I hope I have not been galvanized. To answer your question, as we speak, it is the massacre in Las Vegas that strikes me as laden with anomaly.

Interviewer: Tell us about it.

Hoffman: I intend to, but a few preliminaries are in order.

---

[6] Proverbs 8:36

The Psychic Highway

The 42nd Degree of North Parallel Latitude

"All of these changes were powerfully felt in New York State, where some of the most significant new religious movements of the time had their start. A 'psychic highway' followed..."

Sara M. Pike, *New Age and Neopagan Religions in America* (Columbia University, 2004) p. 43.

Skyline Drive, Bluff Point (Keuka Park) New York

Pre-Columbian: Fifteen acres of mounds and stone circles, including an eight foot monolith. By 1954 the site had been erased.

Nineteenth century witnesses described, "...monuments of stone slabs...still standing in groups of different patterns, some in circles, some in squares and arcs, reminding one of the Stone Henge of England. At the northwest corner was a huge monolith...all about the standing slabs were prostrate ones..."

Jerusalem, New York (approximately five miles west of Bluff Point), 1791:

Founding of the religion of Jemima Wilkinson, the "Publick Universal Friend," the first "transgender, non-binary" leader of a new American creed. The Publick Universal Friend predicted that the fulfillment of some prophecies of the Book of Revelation would begin in April of 1780, forty-two months after "the Friend" had commenced preaching.

Canandaigua, New York, 1826:

Founding of the Anti-Masonic movement which swept the northeastern United States throughout the nineteenth century, after author William Morgan was kidnapped from the Ontario County jail by Freemasons and murdered.

"...William Morgan wrote a book exposing the rituals of Freemasonry. Morgan was kidnapped and (it is presumed) drowned for his perfidy by local Masons. An Anti-Masonic party sprang up overnight; by 1828, Upstate New York was ablaze......a thousand ragged prophets traveled our 'psychic highway'...We had Anti-Masons and reincarnated Christs and enough necromancers to pester the dead till time's end."

Bill Kauffman, *The American Scholar*, January, 1991

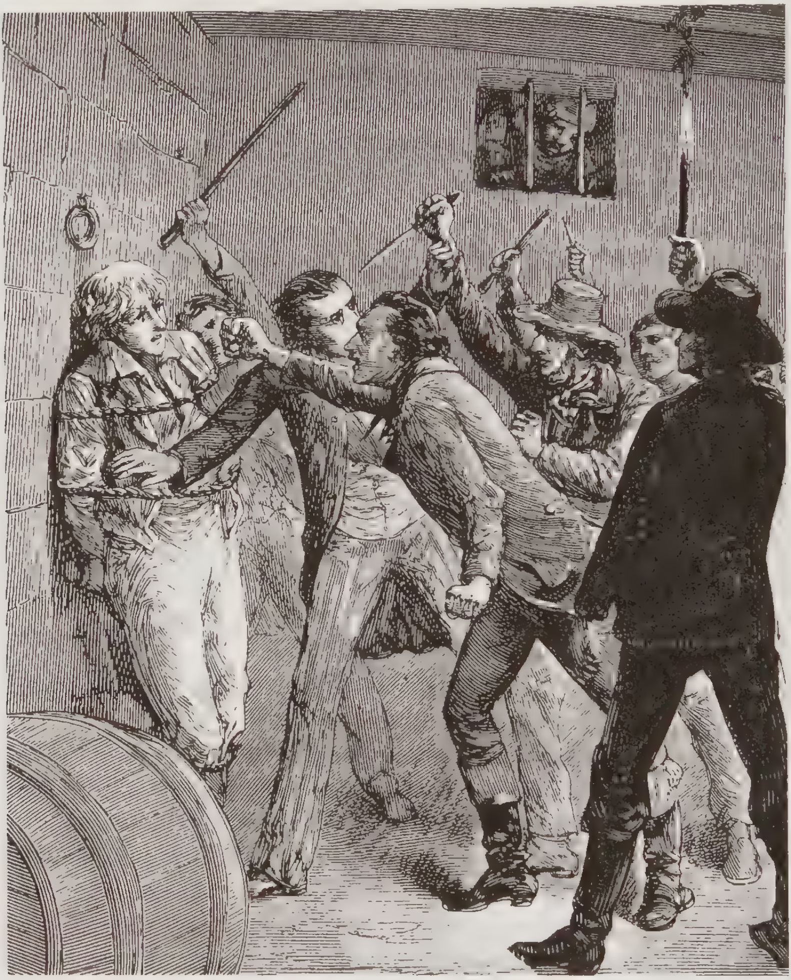

September, 1826: the kidnapping of writer William Morgan by Freemasons, in the Canandaigua, New York jail, on the 42nd degree of north parallel latitude. His assassination would lead to the formation of the largest movement in opposition to secret societies in the history of the United States, headed by former President John Quincy Adams, Lincoln's future Secretary of State William Seward, and U.S. Attorney General William Wirt. [1]

---

[1] Concerning the theft of William Wirt's head by grave robbers cf. *Revisionist History*® no. 101 (Feb-March 2019). In England in 1661 Oliver Cromwell's corpse was punished and the head decapitated by order of King Charles II.

Fayette, [2] **New York,** April 6, 1830:
Founding of the Mormon religion by Joseph Smith, after the putative discovery in 1823 of the "golden plates" at Hill Cumorah (also on the 42nd degree of latitude), from which the the *Book of Mormon* was supposedly derived. (The *Book* was published in March, 1830).

Putney, Vermont, 1844:
On the boundary of the 42nd and 43rd degrees of latitude John Humphrey Noyes established his sexual freedom society, the first successful "free love" commune in American history (enduring 40 years). Eventually the Noyes group moved 200 miles west to Oneida, New York (on the 43rd degree line). Under Noyes' supervision, the "Oneida Community" practiced a "complex marriage" in which, in arrangements regulated by Noyes, hundreds of people engaged in serial heterosexual intercourse without benefit of matrimony.

Seneca Falls, New York, 1848:
The founding of Feminism with the first convention for women's rights in western history. [3]

Hydesville (in what is today Arcadia [4]**) New York,** 1848:
The founding of Spiritualism (mediumistic alleged contact with the dead) by the Fox sisters, which became the fastest growing religion in the mid-nineteenth century continental United States (Hydesville/Arcadia is on the 43rd degree of latitude, but within a few tenths of the 42nd degree line).

"One of the greatest religious movements of the 19th century began in the bedroom of two young girls living in a farmhouse in Hydesville, New York." (Karen Abbott, *Smithsonian Magazine*, October 30, 2012).[5]

---

[2] In French *Fayette* denotes "little fairy," as William N. Grimstad pointed out in his inaugural essay on the significance of this entry in the Twilight Language lexicon. Cf. "Fateful Fayette," (*Fortean Times,* no. 25, Spring, 1978).

[3] 1848 was a heady year: the California Gold Rush launched in January, and Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels' *Communist Manifesto* was published in February.

[4] In western lore Arcadia is a pastoral utopia.

Auburn, New York, 1859: Home of the peripatetic abolitionist Harriet Tubman's "Underground Railroad" for the organization of the harboring of escaped black slaves.

Notes

Beginning in 1959 the production company behind Rod Serling's "Twilight Zone" television series was named "Cayuga Productions," after his Cayuga Lake retreat in New York, on the Psychic Highway's 42nd degree line. Between Cayuga Lake and Seneca Lake stood Willard State Hospital.

In 1916, the Fox Sisters' cottage was dismantled and moved 150 miles west, to a Spiritualist center on the 42nd degree at Lily Dale, New York, where it was reconstructed. On September 12, 1955, the cottage burned to the ground.

Beginning in 1967 at 1510 Hydesville Road, in the hamlet of Hydesville, on the original site of the cottage, a replica was built upon the intact stone foundation by spiritualist John Drummond, who buried his second wife behind the structure. That building was destroyed by fire in November, 1983. The *Finger Lakes Times* (June 18, 1984) reported that 86-year-old Drummond left the site after the fire, announcing "he had a 'calling' to deliver a message to the Mormons in Salt Lake City, Utah."

Poltergeist and similar Fortean phenomena are sometimes alleged to be associated with pre-pubescent or pubescent girls. After discussing past "rappings" in the replica Fox cottage which he arranged to have constructed, Mr. Drummond related to the *Finger Lakes Times* (October 31, 1983), that there had been no anomalous occurrences at the site in many years, "But perhaps if a young girl—maybe 11 or 15—came in here, they (the rapping) might start again."

In 1852 Ohio's traveling lecturer Joseph Barker was introduced to a medium who supposedly put him in contact with his deceased brother and offered him advice which changed his life. "All this wisdom came through the mediumship of a twelve-year-old girl. As in Rochester (New York), Americans throughout the country found messages from spirits most plausible when delivered through the agency of adolescent girls" (Ibid., Braude, p. 23).

---

[5] Among the hundreds of thousands (or millions of adherents [cf. Braude, p. 26]), were Mary Todd Lincoln, who held seances in the White House; *New York Tribune* publisher Horace Greeley, Arctic explorer Elisha Kent Kane and the abolitionists Sojourner Truth and William Lloyd Garrison. He became a believer in 1854 and remained so for the rest of his life. Cf. Anne Braude, *Radical Spirits* (Boston: Beacon Press, 1989).

On the indeterminate state between our death and resurrection, the New Testament gives no explicit information. References to spirits of the dead are absent. Many Protestant theologians believe that the dead sleep until resurrection (I Thessalonians 4:16, I Corinthians 15:23; Revelation 20:4). Papal theology teaches an immediate judgment after death, and then heaven, hell or purgatory, preceding the general judgment, post-resurrection.

For further research: Joscelyn Godwin, *Upstate Cauldron* (State University of New York, 2015); Whitney Cross, *The Burned-Over District* (Cornell University, 1982); Glenn C. Altschuler and Jan M. Saltzgaber, *Revivalism, Social Conscience and Community in the Burned-Over District* (Cornell University, 1983), and the aforementioned *New Age and Neopagan Religions in America* by Sara M. Pike.

The Willard Factor

"All I have for you is a gesture in combination with a word:
Tenet...We live in a Twilight world..." [1]

Christopher Nolan

Witches are accused of shape-shifting and we may perhaps stand accused of syntagm-shifting.

How much of what we know about command and control mechanisms turns on words? What wisdom teaching is conveyed in the story of Rumplestiltskin? Adam in the Garden of Eden obtains dominion over the earth by naming its inhabitants and constituents. In the beginning was The Word.

The heart of mystery is to confront a person or a force that is unnameable. Such a phenomenon resists our control. In the tale of "Rumplestiltskin" our structural fixation with naming is explored. The queen must sacrifice her infant to an imp should she prove unable to conjure his clandestine name. That she possesses the ability to successfully produce his name is not often the focus of the story. Instead, our attention is directed toward Rumplestiltskin's goblin aspect, which distracts us from the gnomic character of the queen herself. How did she manage to locate and then approach unseen, the secluded wilderness camp of a troll so powerful he accomplishes the alchemical feat of transforming base matter ("straw") into gold? It is by the queen's "wandering" that she catches Rumplestiltskin unawares. She hears him at the precise moment that he happens to shout his secret name. The enigmatic power that allows her to achieve this coup is the sub-rosa dimension of the tale. She is victorious in defeating her enemy because he did not suspect the existence of her power. He did not know the name of that power.

The power of "words over matter" is illustrated by the story transmitted by Mary Baker Eddy's predecessors. A father learns that his daughter has drowned. He collapses, and over the course of several days, takes to his death bed. His attending physician observes somberly that, "He appears to be slipping into a coma." Soon news arrives that his daughter has survived after all. On having those words conveyed, the father revives, fully recovered. Words caused his physical mechanism to begin to shut down, and words brought him back to the land of the living. He had been placed "under a spell" when word was sent that his beloved offspring had died. The spell was lifted when word was received that she had in fact survived.

---

[1] "Tenet" is a palindrome: a word that is spelled the same way reading backward or forward.

If this process had been deliberately timed and aimed—a life-threatening lie conveyed and later withdrawn—it would be indistinguishable from what we call magic—the sorcery of cursing and healing; as in the spells from the texts of the Egyptians.

In the *words-over-matter* magic of the Egyptian goddess Isis, knowledge of a word of power, described as someone's personal name, is of tremendous importance. In one illustrative story, Isis dispatches a snake to bite the solar deity Re, who begins to die from the venom. She informs Re that if he will reveal the closely guarded secret of his personal name, she will heal him and he shall live. When he does so, she informs him that the snake was not poisonous. Upon hearing those welcome words he quickly recovers.

In this allegory the Egyptians demonstrated the understanding that to possess a hidden name of a powerful being, appreciably enhanced the power of Isis. This account of gaining the secret word was used to demonstrate that Isis was foremost of the gods and goddesses, "ruler in heaven and earth" by virtue of her *words-over-matter* technology.

Pharaonic Egypt is a primeval source of Twilight Language (not to be confused with the directions for decoding Buddhist and Hindu texts that contain layers of multiple meanings, known in Sanskrit as *sāṃdhyābhāṣā;* (cf. Agehānanda Bhāratī [Leopold Fischer], *The Tantric Tradition* [1965]).

Hieroglyphic writing, arising circa 3000 B.C. and first ascribed in legend to Thoth, was not pictorial in its earliest manifestations. With refinement it became a system of signs possessed of symbolism and incantatory properties. By the power of words occult mastery was obtained or revoked, the dead were summoned or consigned to oblivion, and humans were endowed or destroyed. With this language John Dee and others of the magus class, sought to command both humans and nature, and harness disincarnate beings. The language was referred to by various names, "Enochian," or in Dee's parlance, “Angelic,” consisting of an alphabet and a phonology. There are parallels between the mandalas of Dee’s “hieroglyphic monad” and the Kabbalistic system of *gematria* (number/word equivalents) applied to the texts of the Bible, but these western occult systems obtain the talismanic function of Twilight Language only in a few respects. Twilight Language is not circumscribed by *gematria* or Dee’s monad, both of which are artificial constructs that attempt to plot a schematic description of the phenomenon, similar to Cornelius Agrippa’s number-symbol tables in his *De Occulta Philosophia*.

The Twilight Language addresses, or “speaks,” to the “shadow side,” the primordial Jungian archetypes of the subconscious psyche. The time capsule that was and is Pharaonic Egyptian sorcery aimed, by ritual means, at crossing oceans of time to invoke a future in human history in which the immanent would appear in public, in the collective waking hive mind, through ceremonial transcendent processing of the subconscious. It is our opinion that this is the stage in which those living in the early 21st century inhabit.

With Twilight Language there is a long history. This is the case with *Wicker*, the root of which is from East Scandinavian, “to bend,” as in the bending of reality.

In his 1637 play “Sad Shepherd” (act 1, scene 5) Ben Jonson wrote, “Hark, hark, hark the foul bird, How she flutters with her wicker wings!”

The associated modern synchronicities are worthy of note. For instance, on December 7, 2011 Michael Carlson wrote concerning the prominent *New York Times* writer Tom Wicker: “...unlike many columnists, he was in most cases a writer who refused to bend reality...”

In the 2016 “The Magicians” television series episode, “The Strangled Heart,” magician Richard has a conversation with a magician named Julia Wicker:

Richard: “The reason you treat magic like a drug, is because the people that taught it to you act like drug dealers. They buy it and they sell it, and they fight and they fuck for it. Well, that’s not the only way to live.”

Julia Wicker: “That’s the only way I've ever seen.”

Richard: “I’m a very good Magician and I do this. There are good people out there, Julia. People trying to learn about the world and make it a better place. Now, you can be one of those people, you can be a dealer, you can stay here and be nothing.

You get to choose. Look, you think magic is some terrible vice, so bad that you need rehab to get clean, it's not. Magic isn't heroin, Julia. It's a gift."

Julia Wicker: "Oh, god, please. Don't say from God."

Richard: I'm not the guy outside of YMCA yelling at people to repent."

Julia Wicker: "Then what are you, Richard?"

Richard: "Okay, what we call magic is, a set of tools. Leftover from Creation. [*Julia scoffs*]

Richard: "Think about it. The power to bend reality, to make and unmake."

*Julia Wicke*r: "Won't God be pissed we touched His tools without asking?"

Richard: "God—gods, really, they don't do things by accident. The tools were left for us to find."

In the previous examples we can sort the differences between the ancient usage and the use assigned in or close to our time. The assignment itself, if repeated emphatically with sufficient visibility amid a targeted audience, or the masses in general, creates an imprint, or what hypnotists term an induction. Within a certain charged context the word becomes linked to a pattern that has the quality of a meme.

"Willard" is just a word.

How is the charged context created? Through assignment. Why was the word chosen? Maybe because it gives us, in the parlance of American slang, "the willies."

"To have the willies, to be nervous" (*Dialect Notes*, 1896).

"You can now visit Winchester House. But we wouldn't advise it if you suffer from the willies." (*Felton & Fowler's Best, Worst, and Most Unusual,* 1975).

Brand Names

What is certain is that upon the neurological science of word choices and the creation of neologisms depends the multi-billion dollar advertising industry. Brand names like Radeon, Raytheon, Teledyne, Nuplazid, Xodol, Xanax, Zantac, Zoloft, IKEA, DARPA, Graphika, Google, Lexus, Etronixx, Exxon, Stuxnet, Kodak and thousands more, are intentional words selected for their phonetic and visual properties and invested with a particular associated meaning. For example, Nuplazid [i.e. new(ly) placid], is the brand name of the generic drug

Pimavanserin tartrate, an "antipsychotic indictated for the treatment of hallucinations and delusions." Nuplazid's parent company bears the name "Acadia." The psycholinguistic function is as follows: *Arcadia*, the ancient utopia, and *Acadia*, belong to the same phoneme.

The utility of certain brand names is obvious. Viagra, proscribed for erectile dysfunction, rhymes with Niagra. Others are not so transparent. The fun/freaky aspect connoted by the brand name "Graphika" suggests a freewheeling graphic design company. However, it's the moniker chosen by a corporation that surveils the Internet for clients such as the U.S. government, including DARPA and the U.S. Senate Select Committee on Intelligence ("Graphika leverages the power of artificial intelligence to create the world's most detailed maps of social media landscapes. We pioneer new analytical methods and tools to help our partners navigate complex online networks"). The clash between the expectation that the Graphika name initially conveys and what it actually denotes, may be intentional. The resulting surprise would be communicated as part of a transmission of a message: Don't assume you know us. Graphika delves below surface appearances and defies first impressions.

A compelling news flash like that is both mildly intimidating as well as intriguing. It relays the impression that one is encountering a potentially highly intelligent, superior organization. It impels us to learn more.

Somehow, whether through intent or sheer coincidence, in modern times the word "Willard" has an association with power, madness and anomalies. Is it a trigger for them?

"Willard" is woven in certain high profile respects, through the religion of Mormonism founded on the occultism of Joseph Smith, one of history's most fervid megalomaniacs.

Before we begin our foray into Willard's eerie dimensions, it is incumbent on us to recall a neglected aspect: the goodness and glory once associated with the name.

One of the most ethical individuals in nineteenth century American history was the reformer Frances Willard (1839-1898), who happened to oppose Mormonism (as she relates in her autobiography, *Glimpses of Fifty Years* [1889, pp. 325-328]). In the Appendix to her book she provides an early Willard family tree:

"Major Simon Willard came from Horsmonden, Kent county, England in 1634, aged thirty-one. The name has been known on English soil for eight hundred years, being five times recorded in the Doomsday Book....Major Willard lived in Lancaster and Groton, Mass. as well as in Concord. Among his immediate descendants are two presidents of Harvard University, also Rev. Samuel Willard, pastor of the Old South Church (he baptized the infant Benjamin Franklin)...and Solomon Willard, of Quincy, Mass. the architect of the Bunker Hill Monument, who refused to accept pay for his services, and of whom Edward Everett said that 'his chief characteristic was that he wanted to do everything for everybody for nothing."

In one era at least of our nation's history, the associations with Willard were mostly positive and no doubt continue to be so for many Americans who bear the name.

Since we're not endeavoring to prove a point, but rather to report a phenomenon, bearing witness to how the name Willard has been employed or incorporated by a putative force, whether intentional, jesting or synchronous, would seem to be a Fortean activity in service to the advancement of human knowledge and consciousness (though Charles Fort would probably object to the missionary tenor of the preceding statement).

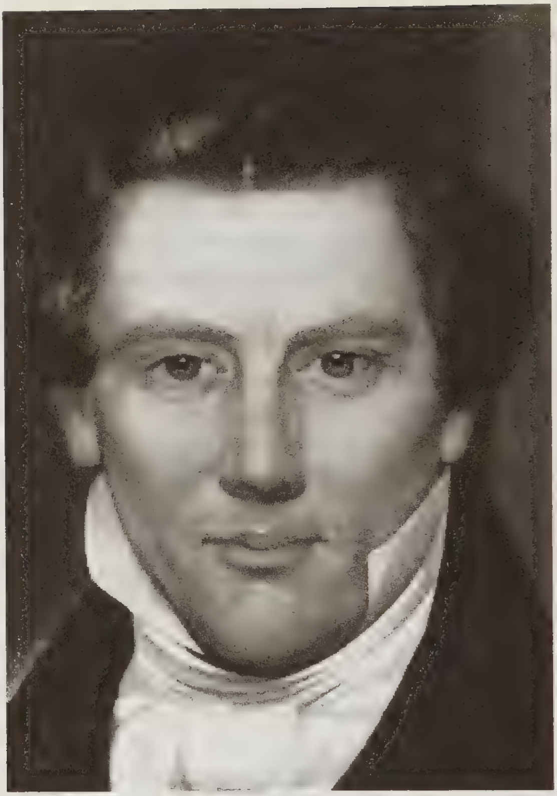

"I have more to boast of than ever any man had. I am the only man that has ever been able to keep a whole church together since the days of Adam. A large majority of the whole have stood by me. Neither Paul, John, Peter, nor Jesus ever did it. I boast that no man ever did such a work as I. The followers of Jesus ran away from Him; but the Latter-day Saints never ran away from me…When they can get rid of me, the devil will also go."

— Joseph Smith: founder, prophet, seer and revelator of
The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-Day Saints
("Mormon") Nauvoo, Illinois, May 26, 1844

History of the Church, Vol. 6, chapter 19, pp. 408-409

ORDER LODGE.

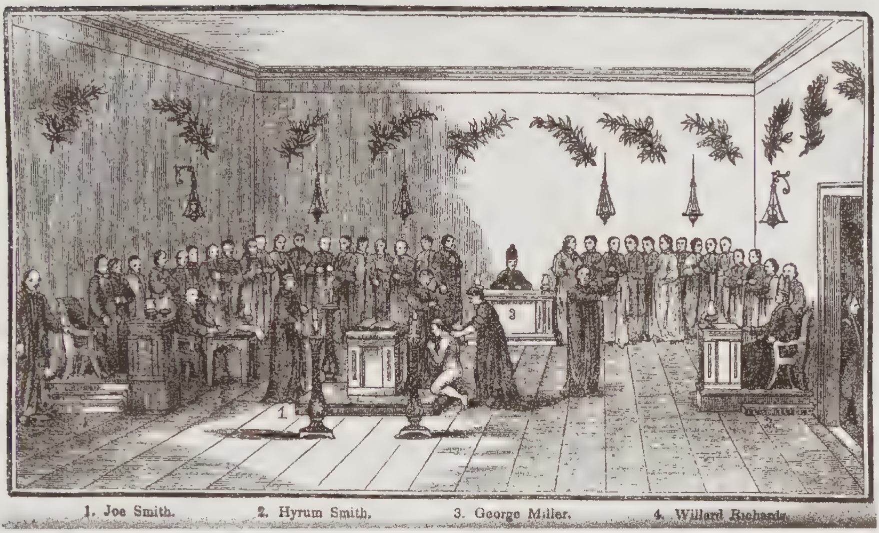
1
3
1. Joe Smith.
2. Hyrum Smith.
3. George Miller.
4. Willard Richards.

Conferring the masonic "Third Degree of Master Mason" under the direction of Mormons Willard Richards, Joseph and Hyrum Smith and George Miller. The initiate kneeling at center is naked. [2]

---

[2] Cf. John C. Bennet, *The History of the Saints* (Boston: Leland & Whiting, 1842), p. 273.

WILLARD HOTEL, WASHINGTON, D. C.

The Willard Hotel, Washington D.C.

Founded in 1850

President-elect Abraham Lincoln completed the writing of his First Inaugural address at the Willard, where he lodged from February 24 to March 4, 1861. He left Willard at noon on the 4th to be sworn in as President. Julia Ward Howe wrote the lyrics to "The Battle Hymn of the Republic" at the Willard in November, 1861. In 1963 Martin Luther King penned his "I Have a Dream" speech at the hotel.

In the summer of 2001, Steven Spielberg shot the final scene of the movie, "Minority Report" at the Willard Hotel. Principal filming took place in the "Willard Room" and in the hotel's "Peacock Alley."

Plans for the Federal Reserve Bank were laid at the hotel prior to 1913. In 1916, Willard Hotel was the site of organizing for Woodrow Wilson's League of Nations by Wilson's advisor, Edward M. "Colonel" House, and in Europe by American international banker Willard Straight.

"...the Willard Hotel more justly could be called the center of Washington than either the Capitol or the White House..."

—Nathaniel Hawthorne
(Cf. "Willard Hotel," National Park Service, nps.gov)

WYNKOOP HALLENBECK CRAWFORD CO.

WILLARD STATE HOSPITAL.—MAIN BUILDING.

The Willard Asylum for the Chronic Insane (later "Willard State Hospital")

Founded in 1869 in the Finger Lakes region of upstate New York, on the 42nd degree of north parallel latitude, "The geographical centre and Eden of the Empire State."

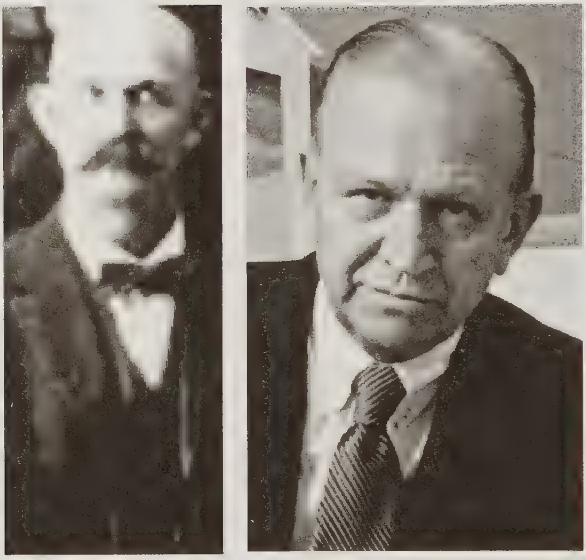

Left to right:
Hyrum Willard Marriott; J. Willard Marriott

J. Willard Marriott, founder of the Marriott hotel chain and the Marriott School of Business, was born in 1900 at Marriott Settlement, Utah, the eldest son and second of eight children of Hyrum Willard Marriott and Ellen Morris. ("My father...had good genes" — Richard Marriott).

At the age of 19, J. Willard Marriott served as a Mormon missionary. In the 1980s Willard Marriott donated at least $1 million to his namesake Willard "Mitt" Romney's political campaign. After his death, enterprises controlled by his family donated more.

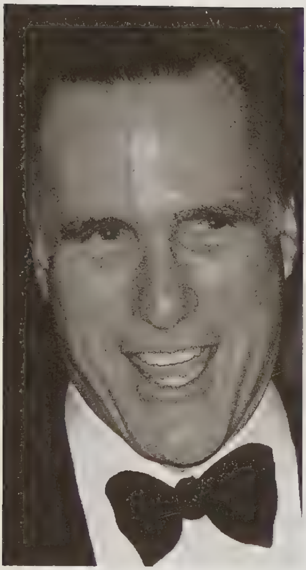

Willard "Mitt" Romney

Parley Parker Pratt is the great-great-grandfather of U.S. Senator Willard M. Romney (R-UT), former governor of Massachusetts and the 2012 Republican candidate for President of the United States. Pratt was a confidant of Mormon founder and U.S. Presidential candidate Joseph Smith, who he met in 1830 on the 42nd degree of north parallel latitude at Fayette, New York, birthplace of the Mormon church. Pratt was a founding member of the Quorum of the Twelve Apostles, which would become the governing body of the Mormons after the death of Smith. Pratt was a serial adulterer who had twelve "wives," many of whom were married to other men at the time. He fathered thirty children. Parley Parker Pratt was killed in 1857 by Hector McLean, the estranged husband of Pratt's twelfth "wife," Eleanor McLean.

Joseph Smith had at least thirty-eight mistresses, concubines and wives at the time of his death. As in the case of Senator Romney's ancestor, many of these women were legally married to other men. (cf. George D. Smith, *Nauvoo Polygamy*, 2011, and Todd Compton, *In Sacred Loneliness*, 1997). Smith, a Freemason, was gunned down in 1844 in Carthage, Illinois by a masonic mob, after it was learned that in the nearby city of Nauvoo, Smith had appropriated the secret rituals of the masonic lodge and incorporated them into the rites of his "Church of Latter Day Saints."

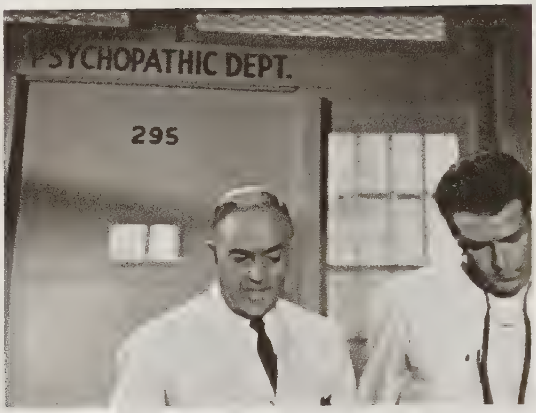

Psychiatrist Dr. Willard (at left) outside the entrance to the "Psychopathic Dept."

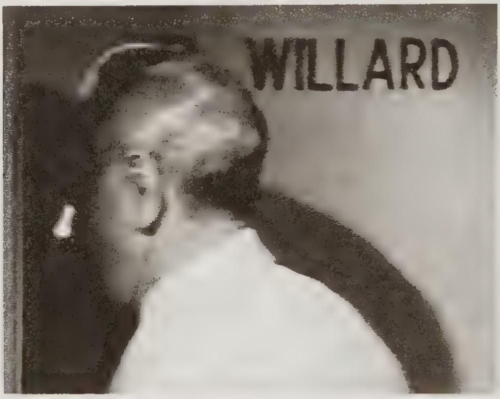

The psychiatrist entering his office

Screen shots from the 1947 movie, "Possessed" starring Joan Crawford as a woman afflicted with insanity and hospitalized in "Doctor Willard's Psychopathic Dept."

CITY HALL
EAST WILLARD

Screen shot from the movie, "Sunday Night, Bloody Night"

"Sunday Night, Bloody Night" is an inmates-take-over-the asylum-themed 1972 film (a storyline plotted by Edgar Allan Poe in "The System of Doctor Tarr and Professor Fether"). The plot revolves around an insane asylum established in a mansion located in "East Willard." After several years, the director frees the inmates of Willard asylum. They proceed to massacre the staff and take over the town, filling positions as mayor, sheriff and other government offices. Actors in the cast include John Carradine, Patrick O'Neal and Andy Warhol's erstwhile transgender actor, "Candy Darling."

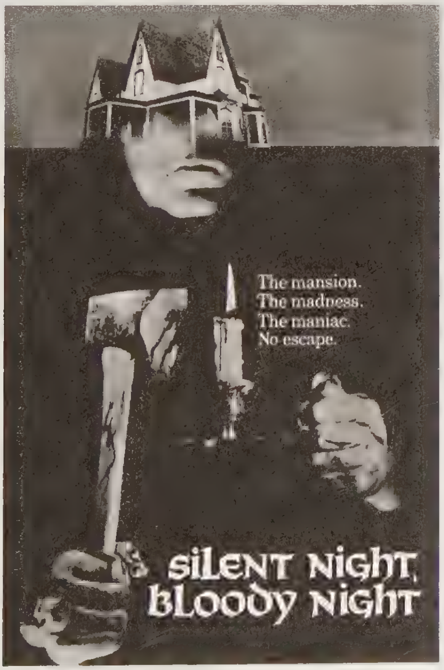
The mansion.
The madness.
The maniac.
No escape.
SILENT NIGHT,
BLOODY NIGHT

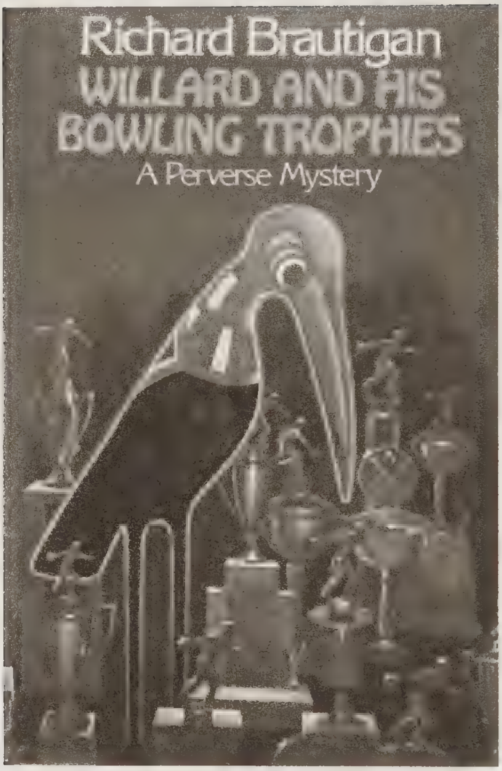
Richard Brautigan
WILLARD AND HIS BOWLING TROPHIES
A Perverse Mystery

The cover of the 1975 novel,
Willard and His Bowling Trophies: A Perverse Mystery
(Author's collection)

Willard, Utah

Named for Willard Richards, a Freemason and confidant of Joseph Smith and Brigham Young, and an architect (with Smith) of the occult rites of the Mormon religion, derived from masonic ceremony and gnosis. In 1843 Richards married the Longstroth sisters, Nanny, 14, and Sarah, 16. Willard Richards is the co-author of *History of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints* (1858); which is considered by Mormon leaders as an authoritative early chronicle of the religion.

Willard Bliss

"The death of President James Garfield in 1881 was initiated by two bullets fired from a "Bulldog .44" handgun by the mentally ill assassin Charles Guiteau (a former resident of John Humphrey Noyes' Oneida Community), and abetted by Willard Bliss, the physician who didn't believe in the germs and infection that would kill his patient seventy-nine days later. As an exercise in incompetence and careerism, the entire episode qualifies as tragedy."

Willard (1971), 105 minutes

Hollywood film about the eponymous character who is mocked by society and forced from the business founded by his late father. His closest relationships are with the rats that infest his house. When one of the rats is killed, Willard runs amok, slaughtering those he believes are responsible.

Willard (2003), 100 minutes

Hollywood remake of the 1971 movie

TWENTY-EIGHTH ANNUAL REPORT

OF THE

BOARD OF MANAGERS

OF THE

WILLARD STATE HOSPITAL

FOR THE YEAR 1896.

TRANSMITTED TO THE STATE COMMISSION IN LUNACY.

Subliminals in a TV Commercial that Denies and Mocks Them

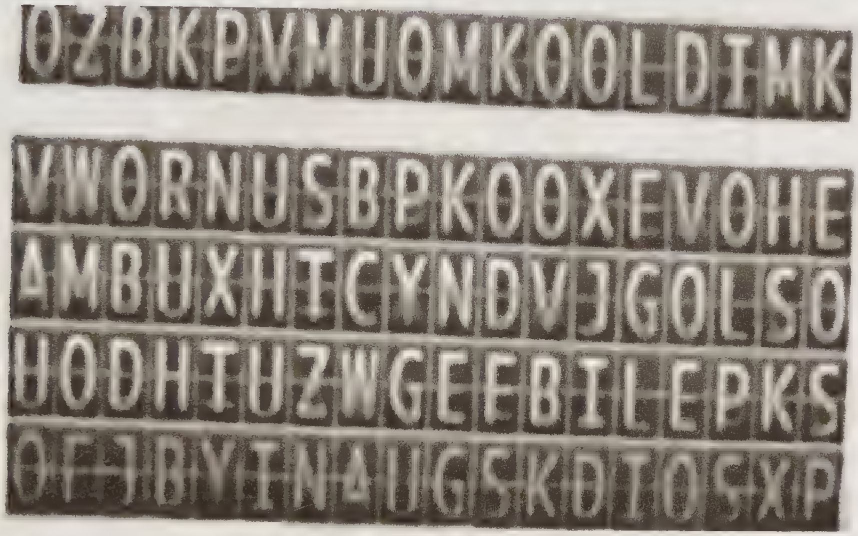

The Progressive Insurance television commercial titled "Theory" (probably short for "Conspiracy Theory"), was nationally broadcast in 2017 over the weekend of February 25-26.[3] It appears to mock two conservatively dressed men who are shown in a dark basement analyzing TV commercials for evidence of subliminal messaging. They're portrayed as middle-aged moma's boys, and losers so pathetic in their hair-splitting pedantry that they argue over the meaning of the word "awoken."

The message may or may not be construed as: if you want to be able to get married and move out of your frowzy old mother's basement, don't investigate the possibility of Twilight Language in TV commercials; leave that to the "experts" and thereby become a more attractive, respectable, conforming consumer.

The satire aspect could perhaps be interpreted as intended to distract from the suppressive intent of the commercial.

---

[3] No accusation of wrongdoing is here made in regard to the Progressive Insurance company. Their commercial can be taken at face value as merely harmless satire and nothing more.

In one scene the mother informs her son the sleuth, "They're just commercials."

This 2017 commercial itself contained significant words flashed at high speed at the start of the ad, constituting what might be construed as a subliminal message, though not necessarily a negative or malicious one.

From among the first scenes in the commercial, we see scrambled letters arranged in lines and flashed in less than one second.

In the first line is the word "OZ."

In the second line is, "WORN US...KOOX."

The third line mimics ad agency branding: "AMBUX" (American Money).

The fourth line contains the words "FBI" and "BILE."

Anubis, Overlord of the Cosmic Graveyard

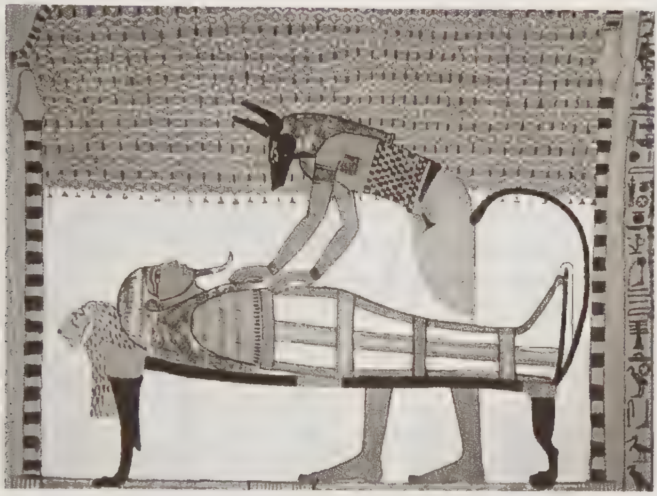

Black Jack commands dead matter

If there is one Egyptian deity who zoomorphically personifies the reign of dead matter, it is the dog-headed one, Anubis, older than Osiris, worshipped throughout the Pharaonic age—he who is the funerary deity presiding over the death-obsessed nation as overlord of the graves in the cemetery that the priests determined lay in the "desert West"—which, for James Shelby Downard and William N. Grimstad brought to mind *our* West—the crucible of the Trinity Site and the Jornada del Muerto; the Black Rock Desert where this writer's ally Jim Keith (author of *Secret and Suppressed*), was fatally injured in a "freak accident" at "Burning Man"; the Nevada that was home to atomic bomb explosions heedless of the "white trash" downwind who suffered the post-detonation consequences; the West of Arthur Manby, who went "headless in Taos;" of Monolith Moab, and of Death Valley, the setting for the final scene of Frank Norris' fateful diorama of the white American future, in *McTeague* (handcuffed to a dead man); and of a town called Truth or Consequences, in "The Land of Enchantment."

American Ground Zero
CARDE GALLAGHER
(1993) Photojournal of the down-winders in Nevada and other Western states, the first nuclear guinea pigs, victims of the American Cold War Holocaust.
360 pages, PB **A M G Z** $20.00

By the rubrics of sympathetic magic, hungry dogs scavenging for putrefying flesh and bones in early cemeteries was transformed into symbols of the cultivation of the dead in the person of Anubis *imy ut* ("the embalmer"), the jackal-headed mummy magus and autarch of ceremonial autopsies — *Khenty-Imentiu* ("Foremost of the Westerners").

After Howard Carter opened the 3,400-year-old Tut time capsule in 1922, revealing an idol of the jackal-headed one seated upon a shrine of gold leaf and facing west, Anubis' star ascended anew and a mental virus entombed for millennia disgorged its spores in the corridors of our Cynopolis.

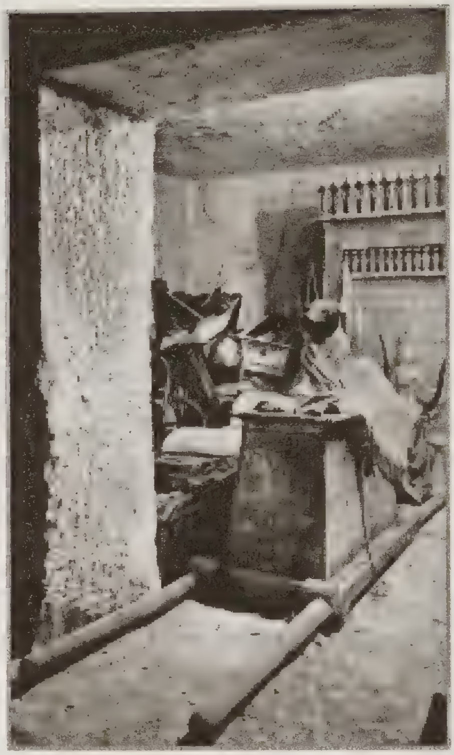

He is the unnamed one: Anubis is his title, not his personal name, which is unknown. [4]

According to Carter, to Anubis is ascribed the saying, "I have caused the path to be mistaken."

The *Oxford English Dictionary* states that the word jackal "shows association with the proper name Jack." In English a root of the word jackal is Jack-Call. [5]

Our Egyptian "Jack" is always depicted as being black from the neck upward; thus: Black Jack.

---

[4] Late Egyptian texts name him Inpu or Anpu, the former having an etymological root denoting decomposition. This appears to be a a non-sequitur contrived centuries after the rise of Anubis, in an attempt to solve the baffling mystery of his namelessness. We have no real clue to the name, as opposed to the title, of the jackal deity.

[5] In a prescient text written by D. Pell in 1659 we read, "The lion...will not seek his prey himself, but sends his *Carter(*er) or Jack-call to run about to seek it" (emphasis supplied).

It was he who ritually operated on ("embalmed") the corpse of Osiris himself. [6]

The jackal's counterpart in the heavens is the "dog star" Sirius (Canis major). In Pharaonic Egypt a *five-pointed* star is emblematic of Sirius and associated with Anubis and the menstruant Sothis, whose sanguinary efflux was viewed as tantamount to the annual flooding of the Nile. The average menstrual cycle is five days and the many five-numbered devices, from the Pentagon to the Pentagram, are intended to evoke the power of the menstrual prodigy; viz. the bleeding that does not kill or wound. It is this "miracle" that is the secret of the so-called "Holy Grail," which has mystified researchers for centuries. [7]

In the "astral clock" (calendar) of ancient Egypt, the new year began with the reappearance of Sirius in the eastern sky; the brightest star visible from earth. Sirius was the celestial object of paramount importance in the Pharaonic cosmology. Satan in Pharaonic theology is personified by Set ("Seth"), the god of crime and disease who was ritually invoked by means of Twilight Language, spells and amulets.

According to the myth, Set blinded Horus, the son of Isis and Osiris, in one eye, and was in turn castrated due to his links to sexual violence and "unnatural desire." Set's legendary consort was the Semitic goddess Astarte. We observe his similarity to Anubis in a 20th Dynasty icon (p. 144), which shows Set crowning Ramsses III. In that depiction, Set bears a resemblance to Anubis. In his hand he is shown carrying the tether ("ankh cross") by which animals and slaves were roped.

---

[6] In his corpse work Anubis is assisted by the graveyard goddesses Nephthys ("guardian of the head of Osiris"), and Isis. "Black" in this context is not a racial allusion.

[7] Concerning the awe in which the menstrual period was beheld by the ancients, and as the earliest source of the "Holy Grail" fable, Mary Daly's study in *Gyn/Ecology* (Beacon Press, 1990), is indispensable.

Set, the animal-headed deity at right, crowns Ramsses III (center), together with Horus (left). Circa 1150 B.C.

In the Jack-Call of the 21st century American necropolis, the theology of the Egypt of the Pharaohs is a ubiquitous symbolic and ceremonial legacy.

In 2010 a statue of Anubis, 26 feet tall and weighing ten tons, was erected at the Dallas-Fort Worth airport in Texas. Some would say it served as a tutelary deity.

The media supposed it was a whimsical accompaniment to the touring King Tut exhibit (the statue's "guard" aspect is however, acknowledged in the headline of the article):

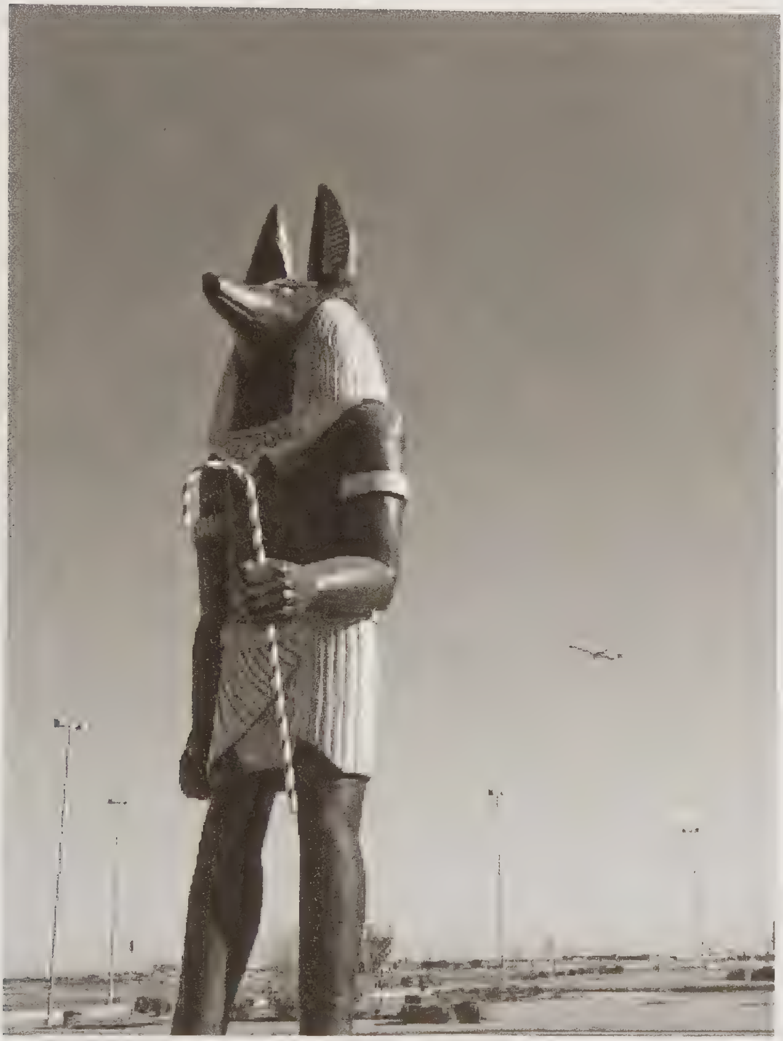

"Anubis, that wacky Egyptian god with the head of a jackal and the body of a human, is hanging around Dallas/Fort Worth International Airport.

"Actually, a 26-foot-tall statue of Mr. Anubis, known as the god of the dead or the underworld, was installed Friday at Founders Plaza, at the airport's northwest corner. There he'll stand for a while, watching airplanes take off and land with the other Founders Plaza planewatchers.

"Mr. Anubis, with his back to the airport as he faces north, is there to celebrate the King Tut exhibit at the Dallas Museum of Art." (Terry Maxon, "Anubis Stands Guard at D/FW Airport," *The Dallas Morning News*, December 19, 2008).

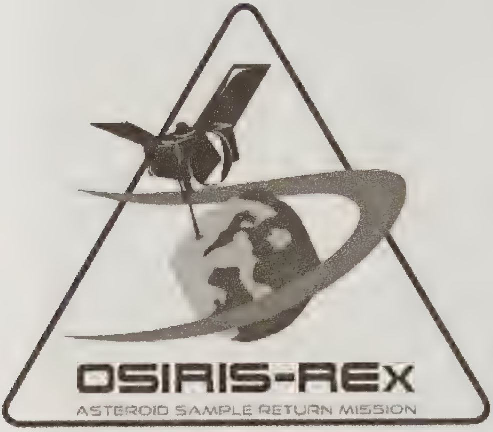

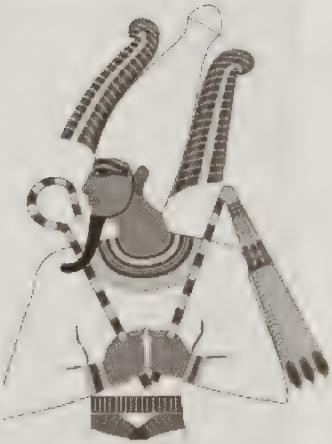

It would be more difficult to spin a playful tale about NASA having placed its asteroid exploration vehicle under the patronage of King Osiris ("Osiris-Rex"), for which the craft was named in 2020. Its stated purpose is to bring the origin material (*prima materia*) of our solar system, which NASA believes may be present on the asteroid "Bennu," to earth (*prima terra*).[8]

Don't hold your breath waiting for a NASA spacecraft to be named King Jesus. He who is the "stone" rejected by the builders of our national pagan psychodrama, is nevertheless the cornerstone of Creation (Matthew 21:42).

---

[8] The asteroid pursued by Osiris-Rex is named after the Egyptian avian deity "Benu," a mythical being synonymous with the phoenix of the Greeks: "repeatedly newly arising like the sun." In our book, *The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome* (2017), we study the virulence of the seemingly inescapable Egyptian meme over the past five hundred years of western history.

"Little Egypt"

"American folklore has long been filled with violent heroes: exploits of Memphis badman Stagolee, who shot his friend with a .45 and supposedly took over leadership of hell from the Devil, were still being honored during the 1950s and 1960s in 'toasts,' performed on street corners and passed down from generation to generation..."

Carl Husemoller Nightingale

New York Times, December 5, 1993

Memphis Pyramid, Memphis, Tennessee

Also known as the "Temple of Doom." Constructed in 1991 by the city of Memphis and Shelby County, overlooking the Mississippi River; it is reputedly 2/3 the size of the Great Pyramid of Giza.

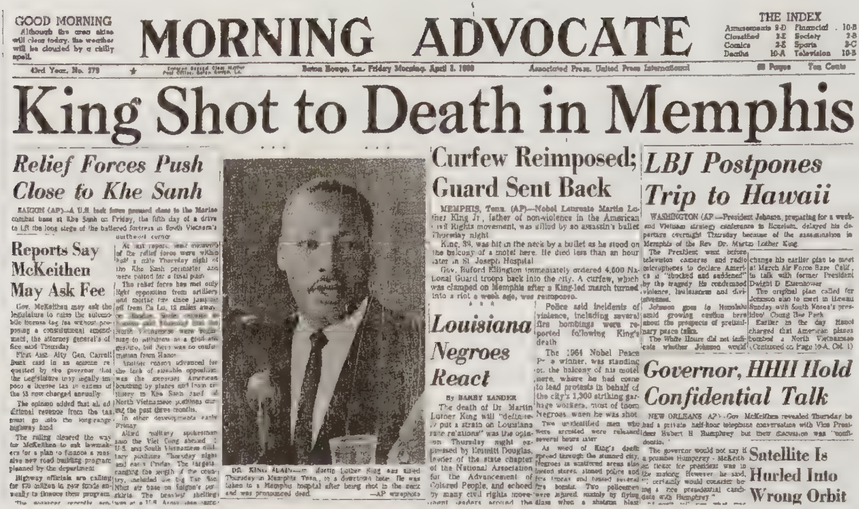

GOOD MORNING
Although the gray skies will clear today, the weather will be clouded by a chilly spell.

MORNING ADVOCATE

THE INDEX

Amusements	9-D	Financial	10-B
Classified	1-E	Society	2-B
Comics	2-E	Sports	2-C
Deaths	10-A	Television	10-B

43rd Year, No. 279 ★ Baton Rouge, La., Friday Morning, April 5, 1968 Associated Press, United Press International Ten Cents

King Shot to Death in Memphis

Relief Forces Push Close to Khe Sanh

SAIGON (AP)—A U.S. task force pressed close to the Marine combat base at Khe Sanh on Friday, the fifth day of a drive to lift the long siege of the battered fortress in South Vietnam's northwest corner.

Reports Say McKeithen May Ask Fee

DR. KING SLAIN—Dr. Martin Luther King was killed Thursday in Memphis, Tenn., in a downtown hotel. He was taken to a Memphis hospital after being shot in the neck and was pronounced dead. —AP wirephoto

Curfew Reimposed; Guard Sent Back

MEMPHIS, Tenn. (AP)—Nobel Laureate Martin Luther King Jr., father of non-violence in the American civil Rights movement, was killed by an assassin's bullet Thursday night.

King, 39, was hit in the neck by a bullet as he stood on the balcony of a motel here. He died less than an hour later in St. Joseph Hospital.

Gov. Buford Ellington immediately ordered 4,000 National Guard troops back into the city. A curfew, which was clamped on Memphis after a King-led march turned into a riot a week ago, was reimposed.

* * *

Police said incidents of violence, including several fire bombings were reported following King's death.

Louisiana Negroes React

By BARRY SANDER

LBJ Postpones Trip to Hawaii

WASHINGTON (AP)—President Johnson, preparing for a weekend Vietnam strategy conference in Honolulu, delayed his departure overnight Thursday because of the assassination in Memphis of the Rev. Dr. Martin Luther King.

(Continued on Page 10-A, Col. 1)

Governor, HHH Hold Confidential Talk

NEW ORLEANS (AP)—Gov. McKeithen revealed Thursday he had a private half-hour telephone conversation with Vice President Hubert H. Humphrey but their discussion was "confidential."

Satellite Is Hurled Into Wrong Orbit

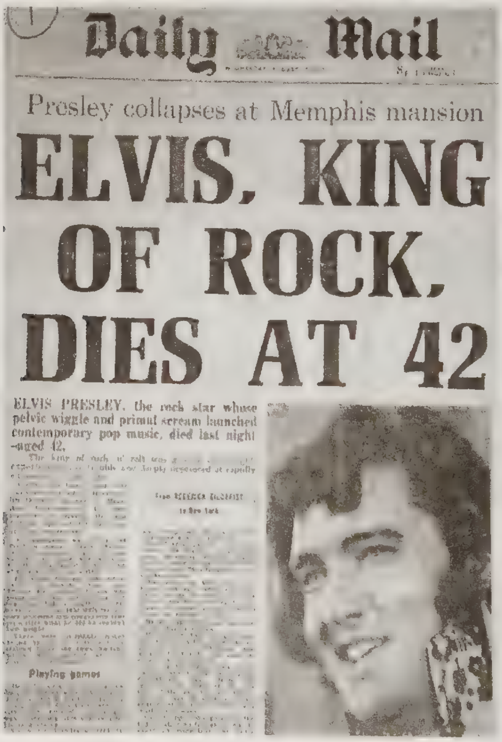

Daily Mail

Presley collapses at Memphis mansion

ELVIS, KING OF ROCK, DIES AT 42

ELVIS PRESLEY, the rock star whose pelvic wiggle and primal scream launched contemporary pop music, died last night—aged 42.

Playing games

Memphis was once the capital city of ancient Egypt and from the beginning of the Third Dynasty a royal burial ground of kings. "...the city of Memphis was founded by Menes, legendary unifier and first king of Egypt..."

Toby A.H. Wilkinson, *Early Dynastic Egypt* [1999], p. 293.

The Mississippi River is likened in the minds of some people to the Nile. "As it (southern Illinois) narrows to a tip, the distance between the two mighty rivers, dwindles from eighty to forty to twenty miles until, at Cairo, you see the Ohio meet the Mississippi. Locals call this the 'land between the rivers,' or 'Little Egypt.'"[9] (Think of Thebes, Karnak and Cairo, Illinois). In Little Egypt in 1858, Lincoln and Douglas debated the future destiny of the United States.

Cahokia

Circa 1000 A.D., there were between one hundred twenty and two hundred packed earth pyramids covering over 3,200 acres at Cahokia Mounds in southern Illinois, "Ancient America's great metropolis on the Mississippi." At Cahokia, "The large central pyramid…is comparable to or larger than the areas covered by the Pyramid of the Sun at Teotihucan and the Pyramid of Khufu in Egypt.."[10] 22 miles south of Cahokia, natives reported the terrifying depredations of a flying, man-eating "Piasa" creature with an anthropomorphic face.[11]

The Piasa "Bird"

"The first white explorers of the Mississippi River noted strangely pictured rocks at different places along its way. The most striking of these was the one on the bluff at the point where afterward the city of Alton was built. This represented the Piasa or Devil bird…There is a narrow ravine between the city of Alton and the mouth of the Illinois River through which a small stream runs to empty into the Mississippi. This is known as the Piasa. Near the mouth of this stream bluffs of sandstone rise upon which the representation of the Piasa birds were made....they were horrible to see. The legend of the Piasa briefly told is this (as related to P.A. Armstrong in 1827): 'Many thousand moons before the arrival of the paleface, a bird of such dimensions that he could easily carry off a buffalo, lived in the locality of these pictured rocks. At one time the bird tested the flesh of an Indian and ever after, one of the Piasa birds would watch opportunity to dart upon an Indian and bear him into one of the caves of the bluffs to devour him. Hundreds of warriors were devoured in this way..." [12]

---

[9] Linda Lee Ream, *Growing Up in Little Egypt* (2012), p. xi.

[10] Susan M. Alt, *Cahokia's Complexities* (University of Alabama, 2018), p. 21.

[11] *Rebirth of Pan: Hidden Faces of the American Earth Sprit* (Jim Brandon [Grimstad]).

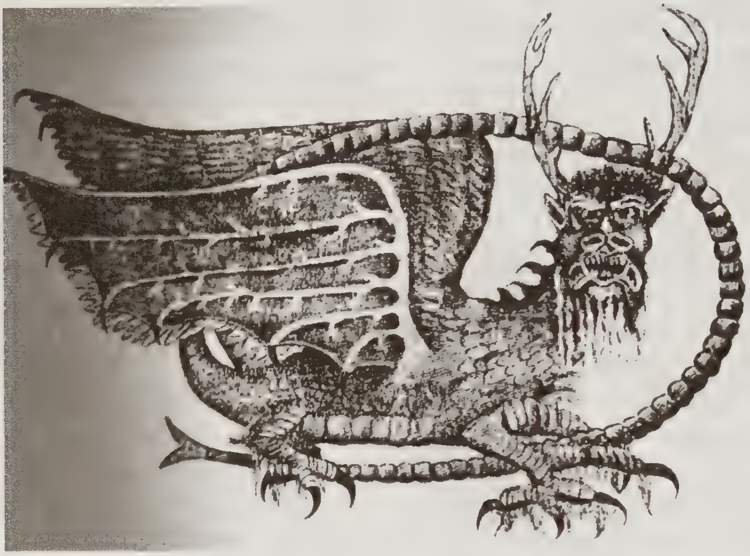

Drawing of the Piasa by William Lewis, April 3, 1825

The head of the Piasa is that of a bearded man with a fierce visage. The head is surmounted with antlers. Piasa denotes "man eater" in the language of the Illini natives.

Of Louis Joliet and Father Jacques Marquette's voyage on the Mississippi in 1673, historian Francis Parkman writes, "Presently they beheld a sight which reminded them that the devil was still lord paramount of this wilderness. On the flat face of a high rock, were painted in red, black and green a pair of monsters—each 'as large as a calf, with horns like a deer, red eyes, a beard...and a frightful expression of countenance. The face is something like that of a man, the body covered with scales; and the tail so long it passes around the body...' Such is the account which the worthy Jesuit gives...The rock where these figures were painted is immediately above the city of Alton. The tradition of their existence remains, though they are entirely effaced by time. In 1867 when I passed the place, a part of the rock had been quarried away...'

---

[12] Lottie E. Jones, *Decisive Dates in Illinois History* (1904), p. 81.

"St. Cosme who saw it in 1699, said it was even then very faint; and (Prof. John) Russell, who saw it in the 1830s says the Indians had almost entirely destroyed it with their bullets and arrows." [13]

"Prof. John Russell of Jersey County, Illinois visited the bluff in March, 1848...He says, 'My curiosity was principally directed to the examination of a cave connected with the tradition as one of those to which the bird had carried its victims...After long and perilous clambering we reached the entrance, about fifty feet above the river...the shape of the cave was irregular, but so far as I could judge, the bottom would average about twenty by thirty feet. The floor of the cave throughout its whole extent was one mass of human bones." [14]

Another "Little Egypt" Dances — in Dallas

On October 16, 1963 an exotic dancer with the moniker "Little Egypt," commenced a ten day engagement at a private supper club in Dallas, Texas known as the "Gay Life." According to an advertisement in the *Dallas Morning News* of October 19, 1963, Little Egypt was performing at Jack Ruby's Carousel Club during her sojourn in Dallas.[15]

Almost as though he had a seat in that front row at the Carousel Club, Elvis Presley's lyricist Jerry Leiber penned the erotic song, "Little Egypt." [16] Presley performed "Little Egypt" in the 1964 movie "Roustabout."

---

[13] Clark McAdams, "The Archaeology of Illinois," in *Transactions of the Illinois Historical Society* [1907], p. 38

[14] Clara Kern Bayliss, "The Significance of the Piasa," in *Transactions of the Illinois Historical Society* [1908], p. 117.

[15] *Warren Commission Report*, vol. 25, pp. 339-340, exhibit 2356 (1964). Though the dancer's manager, Charles Curtis, admitted that he and Little Egypt knew Jack Ruby personally, he may have been embarrassed by the public notice of her performance at Ruby's "nude entertainment" establishment and subsequently denied that it had occurred. Jack Ruby shot to death Kennedy assassination-patsy Lee Harvey Oswald.

[16] Mr. Lieber, who teamed with composer Mike Stoller, wrote "Little Egypt" in 1961. He also penned the words to "Hound Dog," "Jailhouse Rock," "Love Potion No. 9" and "Kansas City," among other hits. "Love Potion No. 9" concerns an aphrodisiac elixir:

"I told her that I was a flop with chicks
I've been that way since nineteen fifty-six
She looked at my palm and she made a magic sign
She said, 'What you need is love potion no. 9."

Little Egypt (song)

By Jerry Lieber (excerpt)

"I went and bought myself a ticket
And I sat down in the very first row
They pulled the curtain but then
When they turned the spotlight way down low
Little Egypt came out a-struttin'
Wearin' nothin' but a button and a bow
Singin' ying-ying, ying-ying
Ying-ying, ying-ying,
She had a ruby on her tummy
And a diamond big as Texas on her toe
She let her hair down
And she did the hoochie-coochie real slow,
When she did her special number on the zebra skin
I thought she'd stop the show..."

A Little Egypt reference is in "Naked Women and Beer," a ditty by Country and Western royal Hank Williams Jr:

"Naked women and beer
We got it all in here
For your eyes and your ears
They show it all in the clear
Way up north and down south
Whoo, somebody shut my mouth

"Now I ain't sayin' it's right
But I ain't sayin' it's wrong,
But myself I enjoy the sight
Of pretty girls dancing to their songs,

"And it's been like that
Since way back when —

From Little Egypt to the Vegas Strip [17] –
And when the music starts groovin'
And the girls start movin'
Ain't nothin' gonna make them quit..."

Beale / Beall / Baal

At its founding in Memphis, Tennessee in 1841, Beale Avenue (later Beale Street), featured mansions to the east and merchants and music to the west.

In Memphis, Beale was known as "the underworld." During the Roaring 20s, virtuoso musicians gathered on Beale, including Louis Armstrong, Memphis Minnie and many others, "Giving Birth to the Blues."

I've seen the lights of gay Broadway,
Old Market Street down by the Frisco Bay,
I've strolled the Prado, I've gambled on the Bourse
The seven wonders of the world I've seen
And many are the places I have been.
Take my advice, folks and see Beale Street first.
You'll see pretty Browns in beautiful gowns,
You'll see tailor mades and hand me, downs
You'll meet honest men and pick-pockets skilled
You'll find that bus'ness never closes till somebody gets killed.

You'll see Hog-Nose rest'rants and Chitlin' Cafes
You'll see Jugs that tell of bygone days
And places, once places, now just a sham,
You'll see Golden Balls enough to pave the New Jerusalem.'
You'll see men who rank with the first in the nation
Who come to Beale for inspiration...

(W.C. Handy, 1912)

---

[17] The Luxor Pyramid was constructed on Nevada's Las Vegas Strip in 1993.

In a review of Peter Guralnick's *Sam Phillips: The Man Who Invented Rock 'n' Roll* (2015), August Kleinzahler wrote:

The "short ride along Beale Street turned out to be the most important experience of Phillips's young life...

"The city of Memphis commands a bluff on the eastern shore of the Mississippi. It's a blasted, crime-ridden shell of a city nowadays, and Beale Street a tawdry tourist attraction, but when Phillips arrived it was a thriving trade center...with a population of around 400,000.

"...Eleven years later he opened the Memphis Recording Service in a small space at 706 Union Avenue, and two years later set up an independent record company there called Sun Records...

"If I could find a white man who had the Negro sound and the Negro feel, I could make a billion dollars,' Phillips said in the early 1950s.

"That white man walked into his studio in June 1953, ostensibly to record two songs for his mother but almost certainly with the hope of impressing Phillips and being taken up by Sun...Elvis was 19 at the time, making his living as a truck driver, hanging around Beale Street..."

(*London Review of Books*, February 8, 2018, pages 27-28).

"Far from the glamour of Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis, her eccentric aunt and cousin, former socialites who were both named Edith Beale, lived in squalor in Grey Gardens, a sprawling house in East Hampton, N.Y., along with...the decaying trappings of their earlier lives in high society. Among these trappings, the Beales' heirs say, was an oil painting of the former first lady as a teenager, bequeathed in lieu of a financial inheritance to the elder Ms. Beale by her brother, John Vernou Bouvier III, who was Mrs. Onassis' father and a well-to-do stockbroker known as Black Jack."

(*New York Times,* February 16, 2018 p. A26).

"The Magruder Farm in Darnestown, Md., has a history both famous and infamous. Before being called Magruder Farm, the property had gone by several names, including Springfield, the Maples and Iler Farm...This property can be traced back to Ninian Beall, who acquired thousands of acres, starting in 1750. Beall's son-in-law Hardage Lane inherited part of the land in 1799 and renamed his portion Springfield...

Ross H. Snyder, a lawyer, and his wife, Jennie, bought the farm in 1941 as a summer home before moving there permanently in 1946 with their son and daughter. They renamed it The Maples. In November 1946, their 14-year-old son, Robert, took his father's shotgun and shot his father, mother and sister in the kitchen because he was upset with them. After going to see a movie with a friend, he walked into a Bethesda police station and confessed to killing his parents and sister." (Kathy Orton, *Washington Post*, February 16, 2018) [18]

An anonymous informant said of the former Beall property: "It is beautiful. And historic. But it is also haunted. I'm surprised so many lived there for so long. Maybe the ghosts aren't aggressive, but they are there."

---

[18] "An insanity plea was filed for 14-year-old Robert "Bobby" Snyder who is charged with the shotgun slaying of his foster parents, Mr. and Mrs. Ross H. Snyder, and foster sister, Jane Ann, 32, at their home at 14800 Seneca Rd., Darnestown, Md., on Nov. 23." This writer was unable to discover subsequent news reports concerning the outcome of his prosecution, or the life of Bobby Snyder after 1946.

"The written word is of course a symbol for something...a written word is *an image...*

"Question: What secret did Hassan i Sabbah learn in Egypt that enabled him to control and activate his assassins from a distance?

"Answer: Energy from a virus....And what is a virus?...a pictorial series like Egyptian glyphs *that makes itself real*."

William Seward Burroughs [19]

"Embedded commands are patterns of language that bypass conscious reasoning and speak directly to the subconscious mind."

Neil Shah [20]

---

[19] *The Book of Breeething* (1975). "Beat" author William S. Burroughs (1914-1997), was the grandson and namesake of William Seward Burroughs, the inventor in 1884 of the adding machine. The elder Burroughs was raised and educated on the 42nd degree of latitude in Auburn, New York. Born in 1857, Burroughs Sr. was named for William Seward, Auburn's most illustrious citizen and Lincoln's future Secretary of State. A militant foe of secret societies, in 1830 Seward gained his first elective office (state senator), as the nominee of the Anti-Mason party. He was elected governor of New York in 1839.

[20] Neil Shah, *Introducing Neurolinguistic Programming (NLP): A Practical Guide*, (London: Icon Books, 2011).

FLDR

What are the mechanics of the "union of opposites" — the collusion of certain humans with the ascendance of dead matter? Some sense of it can be gained from observing the utilization of the "FLDR" algorithm, which employs a different game of hazard from the one principally identified with Black Jack:

> "A new algorithm, the Fast Loaded Dice Roller (FLDR) has been invented for accelerating the fundamental building blocks of random number generation. FLDR software simulates the roll of dice to produce random integers. The dice can have any number of sides, and they are 'loaded,' or weighted, to make some sides more likely to come up than others. A loaded die can still yield random numbers — as one cannot predict in advance which side will turn up — but the randomness is constrained to meet a preset probability distribution. One might, for instance, use loaded dice to simulate the outcome of a baseball game; while the superior team is more likely to win, on a given day either team could end up on top. Incorporating this kind of uncertainty will help machines make humanlike predictions and better simulate phenomena that rely on probability." [21]

Furthermore, in the language of software developers and hackers there is this jargon: "Jailbreaking is a form of privilege escalation, which is the act of exploiting a bug, design flaw or configuration oversight in an operating system to gain elevated access to resources that are normally protected."

Is breaking out of jail "a privilege"?

Jail-breakers are described as those who "exploit...configuration oversights" that are "normally protected." Are there "configuration oversights" in Twilight Language matrixes which, while "normally protected" can be "exploited" by outlaws ("jailbreakers") in "abnormal" situations and circumstances? If we wanted to talk back to those who embed twilight language in pop culture, would we want to "bug" them" and taunt them with their "design flaws" by calling ourselves the "Jailbreaking Collective"?

---

[21] Cf. Stephen Ornes, *Quanta Magazine*, July 8, 2020, and Steve Nadis, *MIT News* (May 28, 2020).

Shelby was interested in the word “Eureka!” and we have poked around in the provenance and possible symbolic meaning of the phrase, “six degrees of separation;” as well as, “By Jingo!” a fairly common exclamation in the 1950s, but originally a word used by conjurors four hundred years prior. How did it migrate, and why?

Due to the “self-help” mass movement, people are undertaking “affirmations”—a kind of (mostly) benevolent self-hypnosis involving spoken words, beginning with “I am”—“I am beautiful. I am strong. I am becoming stronger. I am becoming more beautiful,” and so forth. These practices are based on faith in the power of words.

The same psychology advises awareness of the negative prescriptive power of spoken judgments, such as “My wife is an idiot,” “My boss is a jerk” or “My son is a fool,” in the belief that stating those words creates a reality in which they become true. Whereas saying aloud, “My wife is brilliant,” “My boss is basically good,” and “My son is growing in wisdom,” creates a reality where those people take on those attributes.

We’re not as much interested in discussing the probable truth or falsity of these propositions, as the fact that the population is becoming more aware of and sensitive to, the power of words.

There is also the Rupert Pupkin Effect. He’s the Robert DeNiro character in Martin Scorcese’s movie, “The King of Comedy.” Rupert Pupkin’s lack of talent is irrelevant: he succeeds because *he can’t process rejection or defeat*.

The self-help psychology movement is sometimes criticized as “magical thinking.” It’s as if the common folk are being discouraged from doing what elite adepts undertake, after painful initiations.

On the other hand, Jesus was *affirming* a reality when He told the truth about the Pharisees in no uncertain terms. He was admonishing sinners, and his disapprobation was a recognition of the state of their brokenness. Jesus’ words didn’t create that condition.

Adolf Hitler was schooled in “positive thinking” by his “Thule” handlers in the early 1920s. [22] He ended rather badly though, as the most completely defeated head of a modern state in recent history.

---

[22] Cf. Michael Hoffman, *Adolf Hitler: Enemy of the German People* (2019).

These themes and topics can be analyzed only up to a point, after which intuition takes over to such an extent that subsequent utterances will be classed as whimsy, or at best, informed speculation and conjecture within the "non-fiction" academic sphere.

Is the matter handled best outside that sphere, as literature? Shelby Downard, like Abraham Lincoln and Joseph Sobran, was more than intrigued by Shakespeare's *Macbeth,* [23] and who isn't fascinated by Lewis Carroll's *Alice* books? The list of the authors in this genre is long: Poe, Edward Bulwer-Lytton, Huysmans, Yeats, Lovecraft, [24] Charles Williams, Tolkein, Arthur C. Clarke, Heinlein, Philip K. Dick, William Hjortsberg.

We dare to opine that Fortean phenomenon, taken to its deepest dimension, is *haunted*, and almost always confounds every sleuth on its trail. So it may be that the pursuit of it, the pure "because it's there" George Mallory motivation, more than arriving at a final destination or conclusion—is what we surmise Charles Fort understood in his study of—not so much weird phenomena per se—but its effects on humanity, including in terms of processing and conditioning us toward "induced" beliefs. The investigation of how a phenomenon like Twilight Language processes humanity might be more productive than the study of the pathways and "wiring" of the communications themselves, in that the phenomena often exhibit evanescent qualities.

We propose that contrary to notions of deliberate orienting and positioning, *sometimes* Twilight Language human agents transmit and direct it by "surfing" the mysterious momentum of the language's own magnetism, rather than propelling it by precisely calibrated agency. Art, as much as neuro-linguistic technics, is at work, linked to the invocation and subsequent navigation of coincidence ("synchronicity"), a "science" that is a kind of sorcery (or sorcery that has developed into a science).

---

[23] Mr. Downard's interest centered in part on the identification of President Lyndon B. Johnson with the assassin of King Macbeth in Barbara Garson's "satirical" 1967 play, "Macbird!" starring Stacy Keach. This identification whispered a destabilizing viral message to an American Hive Mind that had been repeatedly reassured by "the authorities" that Lee Harvey Oswald alone was responsible for the death of Camelot's king.

[24] Michel Houellebecq's *H.P. Lovecraft: Against the World, Against Life*, translated from the French by Dorna Khazeni (Orion, 2008), offers unusual insight into the life and vision of the seminal horror author.

To the objection that such a “loose” interpretation opens the exploration of Twilight Language to non-empirical literary realms of imagination and fantasy, we plead guilty.

We would however remind those who object, that a tale crafted by the Tübingen intriguers in the early years of the seventeenth century, scripted the birth of science under occult auspices, a suzerainty which led to the *scientism* that has bedeviled humanity ever since.

Moreover, as a matter of epistemology, we encourage the reader to question the supposition that the alchemical workings of this imaginative “Rosicrucian Ludibrium” are antithetical to avant-garde laboratory science.

If FLDR “randomness...constrained to meet a preset probability distribution...(i)ncorporating this kind of uncertainty (in)...phenomena that rely on probability” — is not a sorcerous summoning of a fantasy script into the material world, then what is?

The Sorcerer's Marathon

April 19, 2011 was the sixteenth anniversary of the catastrophic bombing of the Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building in Oklahoma City, Oklahoma; the eighteenth anniversary of the fiery massacre in Waco, Texas; and the two hundred thirty-sixth anniversary of the American revolutionary battles of Lexington and Concord, Massachusetts.

In "Hour 1" of American Public Radio's "Performance Today" broadcast of April 19, 2011, the concerts featured included "The Sorcerer's Apprentice"; a performance from Marathon, Florida ("right in the middle of the Florida Keys") consisting of the grim, funereal "Élégie" of Gabriel Fauré; yet another elegy—this one performed in Lisbon, Portugal, site of the catastrophic 1755 earthquake and tsunami—and finally, a phoenix ("Firebird") invocation.

In the movie "Red Dragon," centered on Hannibal Lecter and an occult serial killer who slaughters families, the final, attempted massacre takes place in Marathon, Florida, the home of an FBI occult "profiler."

"The Sorcerer's Apprentice" performance was originally broadcast as part of a March 18 Radio France fund-raiser for the March 11 Japanese earthquake/Tsunami victims.

"Performance Today" host Fred Child expressed on the air his feeling that the choice of "Sorcerer's Apprentice" for the benefit of victims of the "most violent earthquake ever recorded" was perhaps "cringe-inducingly inappropriate."

Recall that the Disney movie "Fantasia," scored to a soundtrack of "The Sorcerer's Apprentice," features a magically-induced, drowning whirlpool and out-of-control flood.

A question often asked when seemingly recondite symbolism such as this is pointed out: "Is it coincidence or conspiracy?"

We don't propose an answer in this particular instance, except to say, if it is a communication then it is an excerpt, part of a story; and if it is intelligible to the percipient, then it may be something other than a random or accidental phenomenon.

This doesn't necessarily make it a "conspiracy." It could be what Poe termed a "diddle," but even in that case, macabre japes sometimes tend to induce thought and reflection, after the grin, which Mr. Poe said follows a diddle.

Pike Bites the Dust

Graven Image of Freemasonry's "Supreme Commander" Toppled in Flames

On the eve of Summer Solstice 2020, the graven image of Albert Pike, the chief of ninetenth century Freemasonry and Satanism in America, was toppled and burned in Washington D.C. This could not have happened in decades past. Hallelujah.

On the Internet, we received objections from reactionaries to the preceding jubilation. One man wrote, "The image of Pike's fallen statue *wasn't* toppled by those protesting against Satanism and the NWO (New World Order). It was toppled by brainwashed millennial, Marxist-trained college kids who are leading us into the NWO!"

Another stated, "The rabble who tore it down most likely don't have a clue about the Masonic associations. To them it's just another toppled statue of an oppressive 'dead white male' which needed to be done away with as part of the drive to usher in the revolutionary aims of the Left."

These objections from individuals afflicted with the myopia of Right wing allegiance and partisanship, do not address the point.

The point is the humiliating optics for the masonic Cryptocracy.

Pike was Supreme Commander of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, Southern Jurisdiction, the most powerful masonic organization in America, if not on earth. His Satanic magnum opus, *Morals and Dogma*, was an occult catechism embraced by hundreds of thousands of Masons for many decades. In it, Pike detailed the god—or should we say gods—of the Freemasons—the deities of ancient Egypt:

> "...the BLAZING STAR...Originally it represented SIRIUS, or the Dog-star, t the forerunner of the inundation of the Nile; the God ANUBIS, companion of ISIS in her search for the body of OSIRIS, her brother and husband. Then it became the image of HORUS, the son of OSIRIS, himself symbolized also by the Sun, the author of the Seasons, and the God of Time; Son of ISIS, who was the universal nature, himself the primitive matter, inexhaustible source of Life, spark of uncreated fire, universal seed of all beings.
>
> "It was HERMES, also, the Master of Learning, whose name in Greek is that of the God Mercury. It became the sacred and potent sign or character of the Magi, the PENTALPHA, and is the significant emblem of Liberty and Freedom, blazing with a steady radiance amid the sweltering elements of good and evil of Revolutions, and promising serene skies and fertile seasons to the nations, after the storms of change and tumult... The Blazing Star in our Lodges, we have already said, represent Sirius, Anubis, or Mercury (Hermes), Guardian and Guide of Souls...by its genial influence dispenses blessings to mankind."

Pike referenced a being who allegedly traveled from a planet in the solar system of Sirius and taught mankind, "the worship of the Gods..." [1]

This entity is known by many names. One is Oannes; another is Satan. Pike taught that Sirius is the "emblem" of the "All-Seeing Eye." [2]

Furthermore, Pike's loathing for black people is indisputable. Writing in his *Memphis Daily Appeal* newspaper, he referred to "the abuse of the privilege of voting by 50,000 ignorant negroes…Tennessee will not always bear the disgrace of negroism."

---

[1] *Morals and Dogma* [1942], p. 376.

[2] Ibid., p. 506.

In Pike's poem "Ariel," in stanzas 21, 22 and 39 he evinces his vociferous support for the enslavement of black people.

Unlike in times past, on June 19 of the year MMXX, the "Invisible Empire" was unable to keep Albert Pike's icon from being X'ed out—toppling into the dust, in flames. *For a symbol-obsessed cabal that once scaled stratospheric heights in America, this national humiliation was an ominous portent.*

In 70 A.D. Titus the pagan razed the Temple of Jerusalem to the ground. Something similar occurred with Pike's graven image in A.D. 2020 when it was toppled and set afire. Deuteronomy 7:5: "But thus shall you deal with them: you shall...burn their carved images with fire."

Burning was an Old Testament prescription for idols, as testified by Moses, as well as Asa, Josiah and Jehu. Pike's idol, erected by the "Supreme Council" of Freemasons in 1901, stood in a place of honor in our nation's capitol for 119 years and would have probably stood for another 119 years were it left to the reactionary Right wing, which masquerades as upholders of the Word of God while claiming that the Left's iconoclasm is impurely motivated and therefore cannot be salutary in this instance. But it was those anarchists who fulfilled Deuteronomy 7:5 and 12:1-3, as well as Exodus 20:4, 32:20 and 34:13, not armchair "Conservatives" or those in "Holy Orders."

Revolutions devour their own. Pike's Thelemic grandchildren have coiled and bit their erstwhile patriarch, the celebrated secret society avatar of demonic invasion. Twas ever thus. One of Satan's aliases is בַּעַל זְבוּב, in English, Baal-zebub, "The Lord of the Flies."

As noted, there will be a Right-wing reactionary antithesis to the Left-wing revolutionary thesis. The antithesis will be backed by "Conservative" dupes who can't (or won't) see the hidden hand at work in their own circles. We shouldn't be hoodwinked into choosing sides in the phony dialectic process of Left/Right. The Right and the Left are both responsible for the ascendance of the Money Power over humanity.

The fall of the graven image of Pike is an occasion for rejoicing. *May it be a harbinger of the fall of the Cryptocracy itself,* which has ruled our nation by assassination, bribery and the massacre of innocents.

Is it any wonder why many of America's youth are angry, however mistaken and misdirected they may be on many points? They see at least some of the intolerable criminal politics and horrendous financial oppression to which we who have "waxed cold" (Matthew 24:12) accommodate ourselves.

It took a group of Leftists to remove Pike's accursed monument which haunted the capitol for over a hundred years.

In Matthew 24:15-16, referring to the Roman legion that would, in 70 A.D., visit God's justice on the Temple of Jerusalem, Jesus termed that army, "the Abomination of Desolation."

A similar "abomination" exacted justice on the graven image of Albert Pike. It could be that God's hand was in that retributive act as well.

After its downfall, "conservative" President Trump pledged to re-erect the monument to the Satanist. Of all the historical statues that were overthrown by vandals in 2020, restoring Supreme Commander Pike's idol in the capitol of our nation was Mr. Trump's supreme priority.

What a coincidence.

The Moab Monolith

Since the gateway opened on Sept. 11, 2001, every year since has been "charmed." Year MMXX with its "20/20 vision" (as Matthew Bell has perspicaciously termed it), is significant for debuting the "crowned" (corona) COVID19 "peril to our land" national emergency.

2001 had been ushered in on January 1 with the appearance of a "mystery metal monolith" in Magnuson Park in Seattle. In 2020, on November 18, another "mystery metal monolith" was unveiled in southern Utah during our "moment of national peril."

Was the discovery truly accidental or part of a timetable of revelation? What may be its role in processing the Group Mind of the masses?

In 1951 Arthur C. Clarke's short story, "The Sentinel" (also known as "The Sentinel of Eternity") was published.

Clarke wrote of a monolith, an artifact of alien origin, which triggers evolutionary shifts among hominids in target populations. This is the theme of the influential science fiction movie, "2001: A Space Odyssey."

Correspondents have written to say, "Year 2021 seems to coincide with the 26,000 year procession of the equinox and the earth's passage through galactic center."

Chatter about a "26,000 year procession through the galactic center" reminds us of the apocalyptic talk about the thousand-year-old, long count "Mayan Calendar" apocalypse, falsely prophesied for December 21, 2012.

Whatever places us in a psychic pressure cooker is suspect.

Whoever claims the authority to know a 26,000 year procession is imminent, or the Mayan Calendar is about to be certainly fulfilled, is a clairvoyant for the ages.

Consider the mental state of those whose lives are so impoverished they have a psychological need to go from one end-of-the world prognostication to the next, ever more frazzled as they do so.

Imminent End Time expectations are seeded among our more vulnerable people by the agents of paralysis. Their intent is to cause us to intensely psychologically light up for a time, and then burn out permanently.

What is the significance of the attention the Cryptocracy accorded the monolith in Utah in the final months of 2020?

One point of interest is the lack of reporting in 2020 on its predecessor in Seattle in 2001.

Allusions were made to Kubrick's fictional "2001" movie, but not to the monolith that debuted at the start of the new millennium in the park named son of "*Magnus*" (black oxide of manganese produced by blending lead. The resulting manganese, "in color and weight like a lodestone" [magnet], which "from ancient times was used in the manufacture of [a looking] glass").

In 2020, "...The monolith's mysterious appearance amid the rocky desert sparked excitement among the hominids who circled it, intrigued and perplexed.

"But unlike the alien structure made famous by the epic film adaptation of "2001: A Space Odyssey," the metal monolith discovered Wednesday (November 18) by public safety workers in southeastern Utah is quite real.

"The workers were scouring the red-rock region by helicopter for bighorn sheep when a crew member spotted the object, the pilot, Bret Hutchings, told KSL-TV...(it was) the strangest discovery he's made in years of flying over the Utah desert.

"The state Department of Public Safety will not disclose its exact location...

"For now, the monolith is delighting science-fiction fans all over the Internet, who couldn't help but note the uncanny resemblance to the mysterious structure in "2001" that came from aliens and sped up human evolution." [1]

Using satellite imagery, amateur sleuths lost no time finding the Utah site. It was located near Lockhart Basin Road, 17 miles southwest of the city of Moab, on the 38th degree of north parallel latitude. In the days following the monolith's discovery, thousands of people poured into the area.

The timing of the "discovery" is noteworthy—in addition to being in the midst of the COVID19 panic, the "discovery" was announced to the world forty-two days before the 20th anniversary of the 21(200]1]) Gateway.

---

[1] Marisa Iati, "A mysterious metal monolith was found in a remote part of Utah. Um, so who put it there?," *Washington Post*, November 24, 2020.

It was said that the airborne "discoverers" had been on a routine search for "big horn."

Some observers have commented on an alignment between the "phallic" monolith and the "vaginal" crack in the rock formation. From the photograph (below) it appears that the alignment was precise.

As for who erected and installed it, that remains a matter of conjecture and dispute.

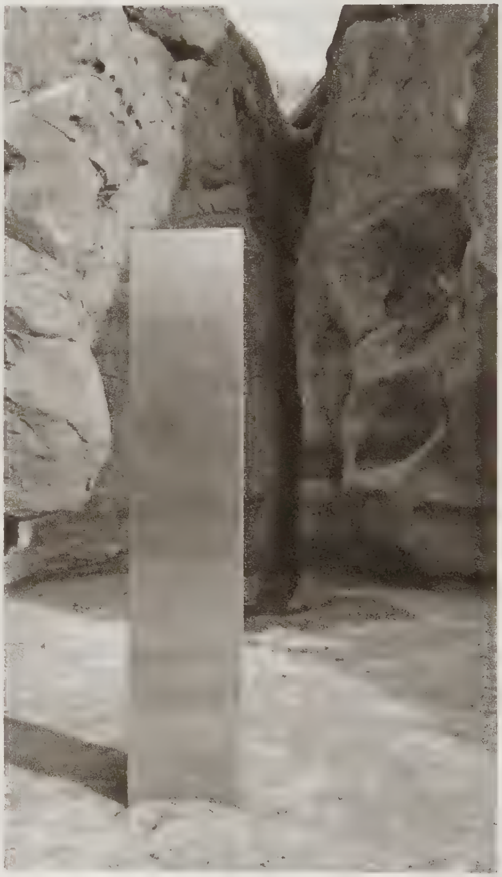

Friday, November 27, nearly as soon as it was unveiled before an amazed world, it was reportedly removed by a group which journalist Meaghen Brown of *Outside* magazine (December 23, 2020) said consisted of:

> "...four slackliners... Homer Manson, an anonymous companion, Sylvan Christensen and Andy Lewis...in their haste, the group lost the top of the monolith".

Superbow half-time perfomer Andy L. "Sketchy Andy," (also known as "Skandy") Lewis of Moab allegedly took responsibility, along with the others, for tearing down the monolith and posting a video of their operation on a Facebook page.

The video shows the monolith dumped in a wheelbarrow.

Was that an evolutionary or devolutionary move?

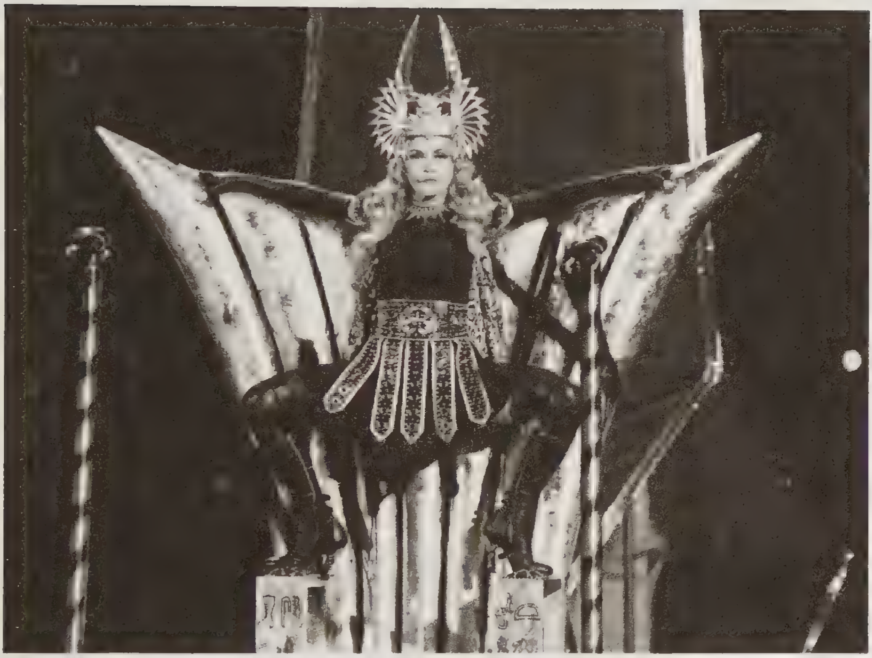

The rock star Madonna in a "gold-colored cape and wearing an ancient-Egyptian headdress" while seated on a throne in Indianapolis, the "Crossroads of America," February 5, 2012 during Super Bowl XLVI (46).

The *Chicago Tribune* described Madonna's ritual as an "S&M party in Ancient Egypt."

Andy "Sketchy Andy" Lewis performing with Madonna at the 2012 Super Bowl halftime pageant.

CBS News reported that as of 2012, Madonna's ceremony with Moab's Andy L. Lewis was the most-watched Super Bowl halftime spectacle in history, with 114 million viewers – more than the football game itself (which was viewed by an estimated 111.3 million people).

In 2020 Mr. Lewis was a 34-year-old "talented slackline performer who specializes in high-altitude stunts on a slack tightrope," as well as rituals like the one he enacted for Madonna's 12-minute pagan goddess impersonation during the 2012 Super Bowl pageantry.

The English newspaper *Mirror* published a photo of Lewis naked while he balanced on a high elevation tightrope (not at the Super Bowl). In 2014 Mr. Lewis allegedly pleaded guilty to interfering in an investigation of illegal BASE ("building, antenna, span, earth") jumping at Arches National Park, north of Moab. He was reputedly fined and put on probation.

Sylvan Christensen, also of Moab, told the *New York Times* that he was part of the group that "...removed the Utah Monolith because there are clear precedents for how we share and standardize the use of our public lands, natural wildlife, native plants, fresh water sources, and human impacts upon them.'

"He went on to suggest that the area, especially during a pandemic, was imperiled by the increasing number of visitors —and by the 'Internet sensationalism' surrounding the monolith. 'People arrived by car, by bus, by van, helicopter, planes, trains, motorcycles and E-bikes," he said.

Outside magazine (December 23) however, pointed to the junk that the environmental purists who removed the monolith nonetheless allegedly "regularly erect in the desert" for their own purposes: "Lewis posted a video of the monolith...followed with a lengthy post about the reasons they removed it and the ways in which a monolith is different from the slacklines, climbing bolts, and space nets that he and his friends regularly erect in the desert. (Among other things, the crew has been accused of taking a hypocritical stance on human impacts to the desert.)"

After negotiations between those who razed the monolith and the Federal government, as of this writing what remains of it is in the "custody" of the Bureau of Land Management.

By December, 2020 there were numerous copycat monolith "discoveries" and installations.

Sightings were reported in Romania, on the Isle of Wight, in the Netherlands and Colombia. In the U.S., monoliths appeared in Glenwood Springs, Colorado, atop Pine Mountain in Atascadero, California, and in Joshua Tree National Monument.

A farcical story element manifested in the course of the spectacle. A dwarfish (three-foot) monolith materialized December 3, 2020 in downtown Fayetteville ("Little Fairy") North Carolina.

Referring to "monolith mania," the *New York Post* newspaper reported that on December 8, 2020, "Video obtained by Storyful showed a rowdy crowd—apparently fed-up with the mystifying, multiplying metal objects—toppling one (monolith) that had appeared in a San Diego parking lot on Tuesday.

"...a candy shop in Pittsburgh even commissioned one of the objects—a 10-foot tall, 24-inch wide triangle of plywood covered in sheet metal—to place outside the store...The owner of Grandpa Joe's Candy Shop, Christopher Beers, freely admitted to the gimmick, which he said was a way to remind people to support small businesses."

The monolith which appeared January 1, 2001 in Magnuson Park, Seattle, Washington

"The monolith stirred worldwide speculation when it appeared in November."

Whether intentionally timed or "just a coincidence," considering its "discovery" a few weeks before the new year in the high western desert, one might venture to say that the concentrated focus on the Moab Monolith ceremonially prepared the American psyche for Black Jack 2021.

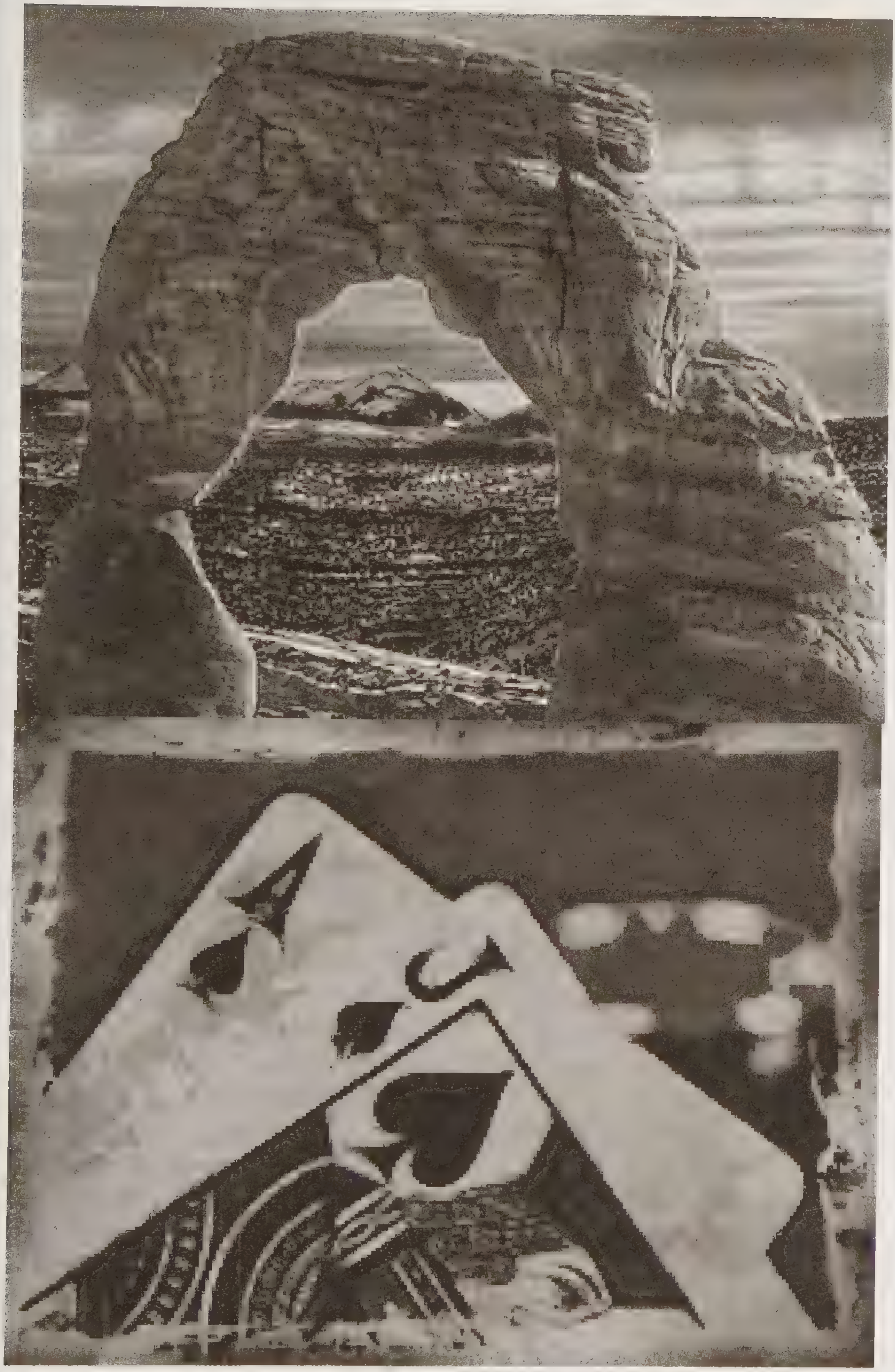

II

A SLOW MUSIC

"The actors in the old tragedies, as we read, piped their iambics to a tune, speaking from under a mask, and wearing stilts and a great head-dress. 'Twas thought the dignity of the Tragic Muse required these appurtenances, and that she was not to move except to a measure and cadence. So Queen Medea slew her children to a slow music..."

William Thackeray
The History of Henry Edmond, Esq.

King-Kill/33 Fifty-Eight Years Later [1]

"I think that there were some CIA extremists, fans of 'executive action,' including...James Jesus Angleton, that orchid-growing Anubis of spookitude, who...may even have known in advance that he (President Kennedy) was probably going to die down south."

Nicholson Baker [2]

"Three can keep a secret if two are dead."

Carlos Marcello

Part I: Truth or Consequences

Americans have not yet recovered from the post-traumatic stress brought on by the public slaughter of our President in Dallas — the two major symptoms of which are feeling numb and being afflicted with amnesia. Even in an alternative online magazine like *Salon*, in a long November 2013 article on the JFK assassination, the author did not recall the findings of the U.S. Senate's Church Committee or the investigations and prosecution initiated by New Orleans D.A. Jim Garrison.

What little we do remember about the conspiracy to kill our President leaves us feeling impotent. Thousands of seductive delights and web sites compete for our gaze. The colossal modern machine that has our daily lives ensconced in personal comfort and submerged 24/7 in Internet-TV-movies-video-games-stadium sports and those cathedrals of consumerism called shopping malls, allow us little time for deep reflection, but plenty of attention deficit. The machine grinds on. The rat race beckons. The noise accelerates. *Tempus fugit*.

The Cryptocracy knows this and factors it into its planning for spectacular crimes, from King-Kill/33 to Sandy Hook/13. They know there will be some investigation, some doubt about the official story and a few heroes who will step forth to risk their lives to pursue the perpetrators. *The Cryptocracy counts on the apathy and amnesia which their ritual crimes hypnotically induce in the population to blunt the effects of what little opposition their unholy enterprise may encounter.*

---

[1] Portions of this study were first published in the November 2013 issue (no. 69) of *Revisionist History®*.

[2] "Dallas Killers Club," *The Baffler*, July 2014.

The Bible tells us that Yahweh commands us to "Be still and know that I am God." Without quiet, without that stillness, we can't know the Lord or His truth as He wants it revealed for the empowerment of His people. We were not destined to be shackled to Satan on the road to the robot-reign of dead matter in a drone-ruled police state. As sons and daughters of Jesus Christ we ought to strive for something higher and better, for ourselves and our posterity.

The *Dallas Morning News*, the *Dallas Times Herald* and the *Fort Worth Star-Telegram* newspapers all photographed three drifters under police escort near the Texas School Book Depository shortly after the assassination. [3] These photographs were transmitted nationwide. The men who were pictured in them became known in the public mind as the "three hobos" or the "three tramps." To this day these pictures are among the most enduring, iconic images of the assassination. Conspiracy sleuths have focused on attempting to discover the identity of the three men and have missed the masonic symbolism of the image itself. It was James Shelby Downard who first linked the photo of the three men in Dallas to the masonic legend of the "Juwes," the "Three Unworthy Craftsmen."

According to media and police accounts, three men were "taken off a boxcar in the Dallas rail yard immediately after President Kennedy was shot," described as drifters, detained as suspects and then released a few days later. Dallas police claimed (falsely) to have lost the records of their arrests as well as their mugshots and fingerprints. "What a coincidence" that of all the suspects in Dallas on November 22 in addition to Oswald, these three were the only ones to get caught in the police dragnet and make a splash in the media. Why was a photograph of three hobos made so prominent?

To answer that question we need to recall that Dealey Plaza was occult sacred space, the site of the first masonic temple in

---

[3] "The railroad yards are across the street from the (Texas School Book) Depository and up behind the grassy knoll and picket fence." James DiEugenio, *Reclaiming Parkland.*

Dallas; then we must travel back in time to Victorian England, to the "Dealey Plaza" of that era, London's "Mitre Square," where the horribly mutilated body of Jack the Ripper victim Catherine Eddowes was discovered. A portion of Eddowes' apron had been torn off, soaked with blood and placed in a passageway in the square. On the wall above the blood-soaked apron a masonic message had been scrawled in chalk: "The Juwes are the men that will not be blamed for nothing."

Only a Freemason or a close student of Freemasonry could have written those code words, which is why Sir Charles Warren, Commissioner of Police and one of the highest Masons in the land, rushed to the scene, forbade the police photographer from photographing the wall, and summarily erased the words. *Juwes* was not a misspelling of the word Jews; nor was it an allusion to Jews. *Juwes* is a masonic reference to mythical "ruffians," the "Three Unworthy Craftsmen"—the apprentice Masons *Ju*bela, *Ju*belo, and *Ju*belum—the *Juwes* of lodge legend who, it was said, had assassinated Hiram Abiff, the architect of King Solomon's Temple, which forms part of the "the basis of masonic ritual."[4]

It might be said that the photo of the latter-day Jubela, Jubelo, and Jubelum in Dallas in the wake of the assassination of John F. Kennedy was the signature of the Brotherhood, and that it conveyed an esoteric signal above the heads of the majority of Americans: "This was our work."

Mr. Downard observed another factor in occult murder conspiracies which he termed "*cryonic*" — a freeze-thaw process in which information about accomplices, perpetrators and planners is frozen during the time when the trail is hot and they can be apprehended, interrogated, tried and punished. Subsequently, as part of a process he called "The Making Manifest of All that is Hidden" and the "Revelation of the Method," the information is incrementally "thawed" many years (or decades) later, when the case is cold, those involved are mostly dead and interest is mostly academic. James Douglass, writing in 2008 in an important book esteemed by Robert F. Kennedy Jr., *JFK and the Unspeakable*, states: "...the conspiracy that most Americans have thought was likely (can) now be seen in detail...we know what happened in Dallas..."

---

[4] Stephen Knight, *Jack the Ripper: The Final Solution* (1977), pp. 177-179.

Agreed. It was known in the late 1960s by District Attorney Jim Garrison in New Orleans, by certain cowed journalists, and by the Kennedy family inner circle, yet it remained frozen stiff, like a cadaver in a cryogenics lab, awaiting resuscitation by future powers. Well, the future is here and what does the knowledge bring us?

Primarily it summons within us the sensation which the Cryptocracy intends to evoke: wonder and awe in the face of so virtuoso a masterpiece of conspiracy which could murder the President of the United States in the street, just after high noon, and evade the consequences for decades.

While the suspected Kennedy assassin Charles Harrelson was alive and accessible within the U.S. Prison system, this writer attempted to interest investigative reporters in interviewing him. We went so far as to meet with his son, actor Woody Harrleson, in California. All Establishment doors were slammed shut and even among conspiracy researchers there was no concerted drive to interview the elder Harrelson while he was alive. But now that he's dead the conspiracy community has new interest in him.

If we are to accept Mr. Downard's prognostication, then the full truth about the Israeli attack on the Navy ship USS Liberty in 1967 which killed 34 American sailors and wounded more than 171, will only become widely known after no possible harm can come to any of those who led the attack or covered it up (beginning with President Lyndon Johnson, according to testimony by Admiral Thomas Moorer, former chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff[5]).

The same will be true of the Son of Sam murders in New York, the Oklahoma City bombing, the 9/11 terror attacks, the D.C. sniper in Washington D.C., the Boston Marathon bombings, and so forth. In each case there is enough information available to lead to prosecutions *now*, but two criminal elements stand in the way: the government's mouthpiece media, and the secret society assets who comprise the personnel of the U.S. Attorney's offices, FBI and municipal police agencies.

Mr. Downard discovered the Revelation of the Method to be a powerful tool of the Cryptocracy, among the most formidable mind control devices in the psychological warfare arsenal. He was also fascinated by the white rabbit in *Alice in Wonderland*. Alice repeatedly encounters the creature inexplicably. In the early stages of its appearance, it seems as though the rabbit was included for comic relief or as a curiosity. What struck Shelby was the fact that when Alice saw the rabbit rushing off to an important appointment, unknown to her the *creature was actually hurrying to her trial*. To Mr. Downard this represented Truth-or-Consequences manifested by the Revelation of the Method: the people to whom it is revealed are on trial and under obligation to act. Their failure to act is a dereliction of duty; a grave sin of omission. Each additional revelation constitutes another count added to the indictment of the American people—the consequences of our refusal of truths placed in the open that *we do indeed see*. (John 9: 39-41).

---

[5] *Houston Chronicle,* January 9, 2004.

In the medieval era rulers couldn't reveal to the people the crimes they were committing against them, without risking blowback in terms of insurrection and national upheaval. This was true in British America and in the days of the Early American Republic, and to a certain, though lesser extent, in the 1960s and early '70s with the massive Vietnam protests and black uprisings (on a scale far beyond the turmoil of 2020).

One of the goals of Idaho's Senator Frank Church and his "Church Committee" in the U.S. Senate in 1975 and 1976 was to compile evidence that the CIA assassinated people. Americans found it hard to believe, and the Agency in that era was compelled to deny it. Now "our" government pursues assassinations openly; with drones and by other means. Here is the Revelation of the Method before our eyes — for instance, in the FBI's barely disguised execution of Ibragim Todashev on May 22, 2013. [6]

Americans are immersed in Spectacle. We may jog five miles every day and work strenuously at our job, but our national profile is that of *spectators spellbound by the sight of our own funeral*. As we stated in *KingKill/33,* the booklet we wrote with Mr. Downard in the 1970s, something died in the American people on November 22 and has continued to die after 9/11 and the other state-sponsored (or condoned) ritual murders. There is only so much that can expire inside of us before we are little more than empty husks, which may explain the fascination with zombies in American pop culture — the walking dead on the screen being representations of ourselves.

---

[6] Cf. "FBI executes a friend of the Boston Bombing suspects who had contested their guilt," *Revisionist History*® no. 67 (June 2013).

In 1991 a bored librarian at the Dallas Public Library referred to the assassination file log which the library maintained for researchers, as “the Kennedy junk.” [7]

Truth or Consequences is a television game show and a town on the 33rd degree line of north parallel latitude, in the “Land of Enchantment” (New Mexico). Truth-or-Consequences is a principle that forms the core of the Revelation of the Method from which the American people are in perpetual flight. We wish to be *amused* and our amusements take the form of seeking to be deceived. *We ardently desire to be enchanted.* James Shelby Downard’s vocation was that of a *disenchanter*, an unpopular role. He situated the assassination of John F. Kennedy in terms of Sir James Frazer’s study, “The Killing of the Divine King,” from *The Golden Bough*. In pre-Christian times this killing was perpetrated for purposes of fertility, to supposedly “green” the land. In Texas in 1963 it was performed on the psychodrama stage in Dealey Plaza, south of the 33rd degree of latitude, where, on the westward portion of that line, the atomic bomb had been exploded at the Trinity Site. Kennedy was immolated on the third fork of a triple convergence of streets adjacent to the Trinity River. For Downard this siting was no coincidence or accident. He was the first to declare it part of a ceremonial immolation consecrated for that very purpose, as precisely as the rituals, gestures and rubrics in the Lodge itself are performed.

Twilight Language Psychodrama

Frazer’s volumes furnish numerous precedents for King-Kill/33, but for Shelby the strongest parallel was found in the killing of King Duncan in Shakespeare’s play, *Macbeth*. In both killings we observe an elaborate ceremonial work of enchantment, replete with the theatrical elements of staging, choreography, iconography, *dramatis personae* and cryptic language loaded with arcana. Mr. Downard believed that some of the planning for the Kennedy assassination took place in the Storyville district of New Orleans, and Shakespeare, New Mexico. Kennedy’s administration was repeatedly identified as

---

[7] Josh Alan Friedman, “Jack Ruby: Dallas' Original J.R.,” wfmu.org/LCD/20/ruby.html

Camelot, and the mystical sheen of that Arthurian parable has haunted America's subconscious ever after. Among the circle of his assassins stands his Vice-President, Lyndon Baines Johnson (LBJ), of the Scottish clan of Macbeth by the way of the Baines. [8] Johnson was referred to in the media of the time as a type of the Scottish king-killer Macbeth—under the moniker "Macbird." Kennedy's wife Jacqueline was regarded as a queen of eros and high style and Kennedy has been called the most charming and handsome of all American presidents. On the day of her husband's immolation, the President and the First lady flew aboard the plane dubbed the *Angel* and landed at *Love Field*.

The killer assigned to permanently eliminate the talkative scapegoat Lee Harvey Oswald, was Jack Ruby. In the jeweler's trade a "jack ruby" is a fake. In Gaelic the word Kennedy denotes *éidigh ceann*, "ugly head" which is an apt description of the shattered head of our president on the day in which he had his appointment with destiny. His autopsied "ugly head" is among the most photographed in history. After he was shot, Mrs. Kennedy had tried to retrieve a piece of her husband's head from the trunk of the presidential limousine. Secret Service Agent Clint Hill, who had been stationed on the vehicle *behind* Kennedy's car, testified that the "right rear portion of his (Kennedy's) head was missing." [9]

Before the President left for his death in Dealey Plaza, he was serenaded in a ceremony in Washington D.C. by the Black Watch of Scotland, a military unit descended from government militia who had been allies of England's King George II, and consequently, in the eyes of some people, comprised of traitors to the Highland Scots. In the eighteenth century the Black Watch helped to hunt down remnants of the Highland army. Among the original clans affiliated with them was Clan Munro, which traces its patrimony from among the followers of Malcolm II, who was an ally of *Mac Bethad mac Findlaích* (Macbeth).

---

[8] According to Downard the geneaolgy was Baines-Baine-Beyne-MacBain-MacBean-MacBeth.

[9] Cf. "JFK Autopsy Materials," assassinationresearch.com/v2n2/pittsburgh.pdf "Parkland Hospital Dr. Robert McClelland said that 'probably a third or so, at least, of the brain tissue had been blasted out'...In an interview he gave to the *Journal of the American Medical Association*, Jim Humes said that ⅔ of the right cerebrum was gone." (DiEugenio, op. cit.).

In Freemasonry, Scotland possesses a distinct fascination. The most powerful masonic order in America was named the Scottish Rite. It was headquartered on the 33rd degree line of north parallel latitude in Charleston, South Carolina.

We may be accused of doing rhetorical backflips in order to attempt to make a connection between the killing of Kennedy and a masonic type of ritual. Even if this were true, it would be in preference to the bland obscurantism which the Establishment has employed to conceal a conspiracy most foul. Actually however, we are only seeking to have our people accept the evidence of their own eyes and intuition, rather than the sales pitch of the hucksters of media misdirection. Throughout the late 1960s and the 1970s, a majority of the American people did not accept the lone nut conclusion of the *Warren Report*, and this national dissatisfaction with the fabricated story led men of valor, such as New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison and Idaho's Senator Frank Church, to convene official investigations which have contradicted important assertions formerly fixed in stone by Justice Earl Warren and his cabal, led by Allen Dulles, the CIA director President Kennedy had fired.

We have referred to a "haunting." This haunting, in keeping with the Truth or Consequences dictum, can go either way. It can serve as a revival of the American fighting spirit, or it can lead to submission to a death script crafted for the acceleration of our spiritual and mental decline. Joan Mellen subtitled her account of Garrison's prosecution of certain Kennedy assassination conspirators, "The Case that Should Have Changed History." The same can be said for the investigations initiated by the Church Committee in the U.S. Senate, and of its important successor, the House of Representatives' hearings, 1976-1978. They ought to have sparked a rising of the people whereby a second American revolution made a clean sweep of the criminal-occult networks deeply entrenched in the U.S. government and its kept press.

The maxim, "Treason doth ever prosper, for if it prosper none dare call it treason," can be compared with our own observation that evil reigns when evil-doers gain advantage from it. No one was ever punished for slaughtering John F. Kennedy. Under those circumstances, evil continues to reign.

When this writer met with Hollywood actor Woody Harrelson in a San Francisco cafe some years ago, it wasn't to rub shoulders with the rich and famous. It was to convince Woody that this writer should be granted access to Charles Harrelson, his imprisoned father, the Mafia assassin of Judge John Wood, for the sole purpose of getting the elder Harrelson to provide, with his son's blessing, the names of the people who may have directed him to fire an assassin's rifle on November 22 in Dallas, which is our personal opinion of the elder Harrelson's role. Woody Harrelson, who once told the press, "My father was a CIA agent," began to weep when I asked him if his father killed Kennedy. He refused to facilitate my request to visit his incarcerated father. Charles Harrelson died in prison, taking his secrets with him. Woody is more successful than ever.

Let us contemplate an old adage, "Tell me who writes a nation's stories and I care not who writes its laws." The System encouraged the use of the word "Camelot" to describe the Kennedy administration. The System promoted a play about Lyndon Johnson, "Macbird," which cast him in the role of a king-killer. Kennedy was murdered on a site replete with masonic significance and symbolism. Humor us, as we suggest that the plot of this bardic psychodrama has more influence over America than we may imagine; that it is an initiator and signifier of a process of human devolution whereby the earth is prepared for Elizabethan Dr. John Dee's prophecy of the coming Reign of Dead Matter and the subjugation of humanity.

The killing of President Kennedy was hugely demoralizing to the American people. Despite his many transgressions and foibles, he was a standard-bearer for a future vision of peace, prosperity, and health. He was endeavoring to return America to the dimensions of a Jeffersonian Republic rather than a National Security State fueled by a Cryptocracy reaping enormous material prizes from perpetual wars and empire. Fact: after Kennedy died, the National Security State was almost immediately hugely engorged, culminating in 500,000 American troops committed to a southeast Asian backwater. The dimensions of this monstrosity have only grown since then, mestastisizing under Bill Clinton and especially George W. Bush, culminating in the government staging the 9/11 terror attacks and a decade of wars in Afghanistan and Iraq.

Every effort to defeat the dragon runs into a blackened sense of the inevitability of its triumph.

Much of the resistance today is halting and spasmodic. How does this pertain to the prophesied Reign of Dead Matter? A truly demoralized, degenerating being, once human and now barely so, can look in the mirror and see his own dissolution and destruction and be unable to compel himself to do what is necessary to save himself. Hollywood movies that are viewed by millions, such as "Terminator 3: Rise of the Machines," and "Terminator Salvation," feature robot networks that are granted autonomy by the U.S. military. These robots then conquer the world and enslave the remnant of humanity that has not been exterminated. Robots are of course dead matter. These films, whether by serendipity or intent, offer us a Truth or Consequences warning about our future.

The "Dr. Dees" of our time shill for the reign of robots over humanity. Law Professors Kenneth Anderson of the Brookings Institution and Matthew Waxman of the Council on Foreign Relations wrote in the *Wall Street Journal*, eighteen days before the 50th anniversary of the killing of the King of Camelot: "Contrary to what some critics of autonomous weapons claim, there won't be an abrupt shift from human control to machine control in the coming years. Rather, the change will be incremental: detecting, analyzing and firing on targets will become increasingly automated, and the contexts of when such force is used will expand. As the machines become increasingly adept, the role of humans will gradually shift from full command, to partial command...and so on. This evolution is inevitable as sensors, computer analytics and machine learning improve...and as similar technologies in civilian life prove that they (robots) are capable of complex tasks..."

Notice that the Reign of Dead Matter is described as "*inevitable*." These elite law professors revealed that humans will incrementally cede control to militarized robots: "the role of humans will gradually shift from full command, to partial command...and so on." Why the weasel phrase, "so on"? Why the reluctance to state outright, without beating around the bush, that the ruling class intends to grant Artificial Intelligence (AI) complete autonomy over the most advanced lethal weapons and their use? This fact portends the rule of machines over a disarmed or at the least, vastly outgunned humanity. Proceeding further on this continuum of perverse and degenerate futurism, we are being persuaded that it is a fixture of absurdly antiquated notions of personal privacy and quality of life, to expect that the surveillance of our lives by the NSA, and the militarization of local police forces, can or will be halted in subordination to our Constitutional rights.

The futurism projected by the script-writers teaches us that the evils imposed on us are inescapable. An "inevitable" dark future is being designed which commands acceptance through an external visualization implanted in our minds.

It does not have to be. We the living choose the contours of our lives. The future need not be commanded by pulse-pounding, digital phantoms. We can, by the grace of God, turn our nation in any direction in which we will it to proceed. The strength of our hidden masters is entirely illusory. They serve a cosmic loser, the devil.

In a godly society, the perpetrators who killed Kennedy would have been found out, apprehended and, after a fair trial, publicly hanged in Dealey Plaza. Much of the spiritual fog infusing our collective national soul with demonic incentives for a Dead Matter future, would have dissipated as a result.

But the success of the Truth or Consequences gambit in the assassination of a president, the impunity with which it was perpetrated before the eyes of the nation, emboldened the Cryptocracy to further gambits, from the killing of the "Black King of Memphis" (M.L. King), and Robert F. Kennedy in 1968, to the shooting of George Wallace in 1972, and the Oklahoma City, Pentagon and Twin Towers attacks. The police state now coalescing would be dust in the wind without the success of those conspiracies. Our failure to bring to justice the masterminds of these crimes is what ensures that the empire of criminal politics continues. Those who insist that these successes on the part of the Cryptocracy are due solely to the enemy's command of geo-politics, covert operations and brainwashing, and refuse to countenance the Cryptocracy's use of ritual magic for shaping and processing the human psyche, are hopelessly outclassed in this great battle.

Forgive us if we see in the death march from atomic bombs first initiated at the Trinity Site on the 33rd degree, and the Killing of the King near the Trinity River south of the 33rd degree, a pattern. Ancient pagans sacrificed their king in the superstitious belief that his blood fertilized the earth and made crops grow, and children springing to life in greater numbers and vitality.

The King of Camelot was slain for very different reasons. He was sacrificed as part of the *Jornada del muerto,* the long journey to make dead matter the monarch over life. The aircraft named *Angel* delivered the King and Queen of Camelot to *Love Field* where, shortly afterward, the king's head was shattered, and his brains rendered garbage for the street sweeper, after which Ruby was nationally televised blowing the guts out of a scapegoat. Post-assassination, the former First Lady, the survivor of tremendous trauma upon whom we have compassion, descended into a porn theater habitué and a lover of stunted millionaires; ending her life in the arms of a wealthy, obese adulterer, about whom she said, "I admire his success." Her personal *Jornada del muerto* does not differ materially from that of millions of other members of the audience at the immolation of her king.

We do not insist on proving the intentionality behind this alchemical devolution. You are welcome to accept that it is all just a coincidence. Pusillanimity in thrall to a tyrannical master is often the last thing a scoffing slave will notice.

The assassinations of John Fitzgerald Kennedy and Lee Harvey Oswald recount an archetypal scapegoat scenario. Are we prepared to accept the Cryptocracy's monopoly on discernment and interpretation, or can we see and think independently of it?

We are made in the image and likeness of God, and it is by the decisions we make in our personal lives that this battle will be lost or won — in those profiles in courage, as President Kennedy termed them — where, at risk to our personal security and comfort, we refuse the blandishments and bribes of the rich and powerful in order to do what we know to be right.

For the counter-cultural Christian, life is an incandescent protest of the System and of the reprobated majority, who, in their frivolous inconstancy, are beguiled by the world, particularly now, when poll-driven "majorities" determine morality (or its overthrow) by popular vote; as if the implementation of the Ten Commandments could be decided by a plurality of Golden Calf worshippers.

Part II The Conspiracy

"...understanding that moment in Dallas, the seven seconds that broke the back of the American century."

Don DeLillo

"I'm just a patsy!"

Lee Harvey Oswald, November 22, 1963, 7:55 p.m. [10]

"I spoke in Clinton, Louisiana last month, at the oldest working courthouse in the United States, I believe. The judge who introduced me asked the audience how many believed that Lee Harvey Oswald was guilty. Not a single hand went up. That audience knew the Warren Report was nonsensical because it was in East Feliciana Parish, in the hamlets of Clinton and Jackson, that Oswald appeared in the company of Clay Shaw, and a CIA contract pilot named David Ferrie, in the late summer of 1963, three months before the assassination. In the audience were actual witnesses, including the barber who cut Oswald's hair."

— Prof. Joan Mellen, January, 2006 [11]

Richard Case Nagell

Richard Case Nagell, who was profiled in Dick Russell's controversial biography *The Man Who Knew Too Much* (2003), was an Army counterintelligence officer from 1955 to 1959, and a CIA asset under Desmond Fitzgerald, with responsibility for monitoring the KGB. On Sept. 7, 1963, Nagell contacted J. Edgar Hoover warning of the impending assassination of President Kennedy. Fearful of being made part of the assassination conspiracy, on Sept. 20, Nagell walked into a bank in El Paso, Texas with a gun, fired two bullets into the ceiling and then calmly waited for the police to arrest him. He served 54 months in prison and thus removed himself from the assassination and its aftermath. On October 31, 1995 the Assassinations Records Review Board (ARRB) sent a letter to Nagell requesting access to documents in his personal possession concerning President Kennedy's death. On November 1, Nagell was found dead "of natural causes" in the bathroom of his home in Los Angeles.

---

[10] After his arrest, Oswald asked for New York attorney John Abt to represent him, or any lawyer who was a member of the ACLU and would believe in his innocence. ACLU members came to the jail on November 22 but were told that Oswald did not seek legal representation. Cf. Douglass, *JFK and the Unspeakable,* p. 365.

[11] Lecture by Joan Mellen at the Ethical Culture Society, New York City, January 24, 2006. joanmellen.net/NYC_2006article.html

Rose Cheramie

On November 20 in Eunice, Louisiana, Rose Cheramie, who had a reputation as a drug addict and had worked for strip club proprietor Jack Ruby at his Silver Slipper Lounge and Pink Door club, told Louisiana State Policeman Francis Fruge that two men she met at the Silver Slipper planned to assassinate the president when he came to Dallas. Historian James Douglass in *JFK and the Unspeakable* has identified the men as Sergio Arcacha Smith and Emilio Santa, Cuban exiles who worked for the Central Intelligence Agency. Aracha Smith visited former FBI agent Guy Bannister's office at 544 Camp Street in New Orleans prior to November 22. Bannister was an associate of both Lee Harvey Oswald and Arcacha Smith. The later shared an office with Bannister in New Orleans, at the address Oswald printed on his "Fair Play for Cuba" leaflets which he publicly distributed.

Trooper Fruge subsequently became part of New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison's investigative team. "Fruge showed photographs of Cubans provided by Garrison to Hadley Manuel, the manager of the Silver Slipper. Of the two men he had seen with with Rose (Cheramie), Manuel identified Sergio Arcacha Smith...Will Fritz, the Dallas police captain, told Fruge of diagrams of the Dealey Plaza sewer system that had been found in Arcacha's Dallas apartment." [12]

According to James DiEugenio in his book *Reclaiming Parkland*, CIA agent E. Howard Hunt helped Aracha Smith establish the "Cuban Revolutionary Council," an anti-Castro organization. Cheramie was hospitalized November 21, at the East Louisiana State Hospital, where she told hospital staff that Kennedy would be killed the next day. How did a lowly exotic dancer with a drug habit possess this information?

---

[12] Mellen, p. 208.

On Sept. 4, 1965, less than 22 months after she made her statements, Cheramie's body was discovered at around 3 a.m. on a highway east of Big Sandy, Texas.

She was either the victim of a bullet to the head, or a car that had driven over her head. The ambiguity rests in the fact that her autopsy results have been "lost."

The state of Texas refused District Attorney Garrison's request to have her body exhumed. Among the many omissions of the *Warren Commission Report* of 1964, the elision of the accounts of major witnesses such as Cheramie render the *Report* on par with the heavily compromised *9/11 Commission Report* issued four decades later.

Julia Ann Mercer

At around 11:00 a.m. on November 22, 23-year-old Julia Ann Mercer was driving through Dealey Plaza when she noticed a man with a rifle case exit a truck driven by another man who she would later recognize as Jack Ruby. The man toting the case carried the apparent weapon up the grassy knoll. Ruby remained in the truck. After telling friends about what she saw, she was questioned for hours by the FBI and Dallas police.

On November 23, 1963 she picked Ruby out as the grassy knoll man's driver from photographs of several men supplied to her by the FBI. Fearing for her life, Mercer went into hiding.

Mercer was the wife of a former Illinois Congressman. Her initial eyewitness affidavit was recorded by the Dallas Sheriff's Office on November 22 and can be read at jfkassassination.net/russ/testimony/mercer.htm

When she met with Garrison in January, 1968 he showed Mercer her statement as printed in the Warren Commission Exhibits. Reading them, she shook her head. She told Garrison,

"These have all been altered. They have me saying just the opposite of what I really told them." [13]

---

[13] Douglass, pp. 254-257.

Lee Harvey Oswald

Oswald had served as a radar operator for the CIA's secret U-2 spy plane. The best evidence extant points to him as a CIA counter-intelligence asset sent to the Soviet Union as part of "ZR/RIFLE." According to Senator Church's Committee to Study Governmental Operations, the CIA's Richard Bissell developed the ZR/RIFLE assassination team, shielded by "forged and backdated documents" and with contingency plans for "blaming Sovs" (Soviets) for assassinations that became public or were intended to be made public.

CIA assassination scapegoats like Oswald were to have a fraudulent "201" personnel file and appropriate Soviet connections. The Church Senate Committee and the House Select Committee on Assassinations (HSCA) discovered that CIA Counter-Intelligence Chief James Jesus Angleton's department had a 201 file on Oswald from 1960 onward. Former CIA Director Allen Dulles told the Warren Commission on January 27, 1964, that no CIA employee, even under oath, should ever say truthfully if Oswald was in fact a CIA agent. [14]

"...one of (Richard) Helms's most trusted associates, David Phillips, also known as Maurice Bishop, met with Oswald two months before the Kennedy assassination...Sen. Richard Schweiker of Pennsylvania stated, 'Oswald had intelligence connections...the fingerprints of intelligence' were all over him." [15]

Oswald was working for both the FBI and the CIA. Texas Attorney General Waggoner Carr informed J. Lee Rankin, the Warren Commission's general counsel that "Oswald was an undercover agent for the FBI." The FBI agent in New Orleans in 1963, William Walter, testified to the House Select Committee on Assassinations that "Oswald did indeed have 'an informant's status with our office." [16] J. Edgar Hoover ordered all Louisiana FBI agents to refuse to cooperate with District Attorney Jim Garrison. "...we are not becoming involved in any way in Garrison's investigation," Hoover said.[17]

---

[14] Douglass, pp. 65 and 334.

[15] Patrick Nolan, *CIA Rogues* (New York: 2013), p. 43.

[16] Douglass pp. 65 and 334.

[17] Mellen, pp. 232-234.

On October 16, 1963 Oswald gained employment at the Texas Book Depository overlooking Kennedy's November 22 parade route, by means of Ruth Paine, a friend of Oswald's wife, Marina. Paine was introduced to the Oswalds in February, 1963 by CIA contract worker George de Mohrenschildt, who subsequently received $200,000 from the Haitian regime of CIA asset Papa Doc Duvalier, for "geological" work, even though De Mohrenschildt was not a geologist.

On October 23, 1964, J. Edgar Hoover wrote Warren Commission counsel J. Lee Rankin urging him not to release FBI "reports and memoranda dealing with Michael and Ruth Paine and George and Jean de Mohrenschildt." De Mohrenschildt died of a shotgun blast in Florida in 1977.

Michael Paine, Ruth's estranged husband, was the stepson of Arthur Young, inventor of the Bell helicopter. Michael Paine's mother was a friend of Mary Bancroft, the mistress of CIA director Dulles. Ruth Paine's father, William Avery Hyde, received a three year government contract in 1964 with the CIA-connected Agency for International Development. Ruth Paine's sister, Sylvia Hyde Hoke, was an employee of the CIA in Virginia.

On pp. 290-298 and 459-462 of *JFK and the Unspeakable,* James Douglass astutely debunks the official story of Oswald's supposed killing of Police Officer J.D. Tippit, based in part on Douglass' interviews with surviving witnesses who were movie patrons or employees of the Texas Theatre, as well as with journalist and future Dallas Mayor Wes Wise. [18] Mr. Douglass documents that the CIA used an Oswald lookalike for the killing of Tippit. This double was a passenger in a car bearing license plates taken from an automobile registered to Carl Amos Mather, an employee of a Texas communications company that did contract work for the CIA.

Douglass also demonstrates, "the FBI's consistent record in covering up, falsifying and destroying evidence that might incriminate the government in the assassination" (p. 462). This is an assertion he repeatedly substantiates. In the case of both agencies, to paraphrase Douglass, comprehending their involvement does not mean that we can limit the responsibility for the JFK assassination to the Mafia assassins who served the CIA,[19] the CIA itself, the Secret Service (which in addition to its other traitorous acts, spirited the president's corpse out of Parkland Hospital before Dallas coroner Earl Rose could perform an autopsy), and the FBI.

---

[18] Mayor Wise saved the Texas School Book Depository from destruction in the early 1970s. Guy Bannister's *dual* New Orleans headquarters (544 Camp Street/531 LaFayette) with one entrance, was razed in 1973, thereby permitting PBS "Frontline" in 1993 to lie and claim that the two addresses did not lead to the same office, as many witnesses (such as Bill Turner of *Ramparts* magazine) and D.A. Garrison, had always maintained.

(For more on the Parkland Hospital chicanery cf. *JFK: Conspiracy of Silence* [1992], by the dying president's Parkland surgeon, Dr. Charles Crenshaw).[20]

Oswald was interrogated for twelve hours after the president's death with no tape recording and no stenographer present.

If anyone imagines that tape recording technology was too unreliable or primitive in 1963 to have been part of a major case, they should recall that in that year FBI agents had been surreptitiously recording several hours' worth of Martin Luther King's activities in private residences, with adequate audio fidelity.

Follow the trail of Oswald from the moment he met David Ferrie in the Civil Air Patrol, to the point near the end of his life—the attempted phone call he made to military intelligence officer John Hurt the day after he was arrested in Dallas. Remember that in the Marine Corps Oswald was a lowly radar operator who had been singled out for testing in Russian language proficiency.

Oswald was being trained in the language as part of a future assignment — which a bogus hardship discharge enabled him to do — defect to Russia. He was sent to Russia as a phony defector and returned to the USA being maneuvered across a chess board.

William Pitzer

In November, 1963 Lt. Commander William Pitzer was director of the Audio-Visual Department of the Naval Medical School. He took photos and 16mm movie footage of President Kennedy's cadaver at Bethesda Naval Hospital, including close-ups of his frontal throat wound and rear head wound. He concluded from the photographic evidence that the president had been shot from the front, contradicting the *Warren Report.* Pitzer was shot to death on October 29, 1966, four days before he was scheduled to retire from the military and accept a television broadcasting opportunity that appeared to include broadcast of his Kennedy cadaver film footage, which went missing after his death.

---

[19] According to retired Army Special Forces (Green Beret) Lt. Col. Daniel Marvin, "...the Mafia provided the CIA's pool of able assassins for hits in the U.S." (Douglass, p. 320).

[20] For a defense of Crenshaw cf. Douglass, pp. 307-311. For one of the most flagrant instances of FBI evidence tampering cf. Douglass, pp. 335-338 and p. 472, and *New York Times*, "FBI Chiefs Linked to Oswald File Loss," Sept. 17, 1975, pp. 1 and 21.

Jack Ruby

According to the Establishment's leading JFK conspiracy denier, Vincent Bugliosi, Jack Ruby "was no more of a mobster than you or I..."

Researcher James DiEugenio documents that Ruby was an associate of Joseph Civello, who was present at the 1957 Apalachin meeting in New York of U.S. mobsters, including Sam Giancana and Vito Geovese. Ruby was also an associate of Lewis McWillie, who resided in Cuba under Fulgencio Batista's regime, where McWillie managed the Tropicana Hotel in Havana, which was co-owned by Mafia boss Santo Trafficante and the mob's financial intellect, Meyer Lansky. Elaine Mynier, McWillie's girlfriend, testified that Ruby "would do anything for McWillie..."

"In the late 1950s...Ruby, a Chicago mob functionary transplanted to Dallas, ran guns to Fidel, so that the Mafia could hedge its bets on the next Cuban government by supporting both the dictator Batista and the insurrectionist Castro. The CIA monitored the shipments...After Castro turned Communist, the CIA and Customs encouraged shipments to anti-Castro forces...in January 1959...Ruby began to supply weapons, now with CIA support, to anti-Castro Cubans...working with another CIA-connected gun-runner, Thomas Eli Davis III." [21]

Even Warren Commission investigators Leon Hubert and Burt Griffin noted in a Commission memo, "The most promising links between Jack Ruby and the assassination of President Kennedy are established through underworld figures and anti-Castro Cubans..." [22]

After Oswald's arrest, in the evening of the assassination of President Kennedy, Ruby infiltrated Dallas District Attorney

---

[21] Douglass, p. 358.

[22] John Armstrong, *Harvey and Lee*, 948.

Henry Wade's press conference, posing as a reporter. Ruby corrected Wade when the D.A. erred in stating that Oswald had been working for the "Free Cuba Committee," which was a Right wing organization.

Ruby interrupted him to state, in front of the assembled reporters, that Oswald had actually worked for the "Fair Play for Cuba Committee," a Left wing organization. Just a few hours after the assassination of the President and a strip club sleazebag was exhibiting more knowledge about the mysterious Lee Harvey Oswald than the Dallas District Attorney.

Dallas police received three different phone calls early Sunday, November 24, the day Oswald was shot, warning that he would be killed. In one call, as reported by Dallas Police Officer Billy Grammer, the caller said, "If you move Oswald the way you are planning, we are going to kill him."

Hence, "In spite of this series of warning calls...the authorities, instead of transferring Oswald secretly...Oswald's police guards once again led him...right into the vicinity of a waiting Ruby...Dallas authorities seemed to have had higher orders. They in effect gave Ruby an easier opportunity to kill Oswald..." [23] Officer Patrick Dean was in charge of Oswald's security detail. The House Select Committee on Assassinations concluded that Patrick Dean was a key figure in Oswald's shooting. Dean refused to speak to the Committee.

When Oswald's murder was televised live, it was perhaps the most shocking event ever shown on American television. Ruby shot Oswald at 11:21 a.m. Ruby was signaled by the blast of a car horn. "The first horn goes off at almost the exact second that Oswald emerges...The second horn goes off about a nanosecond before Ruby plunges forward to shoot Oswald" (DiEugenio). Ruby wrote his epitaph in terms of the horns. In a letter obtained by Bill Diehl of the *St. Louis Post Dispatch*, he wrote that he was gravely ill and about to be hospitalized. He concludes with the words, "If you hear a lot of horn-blowing, it will be for me, they will want my blood."

In 1996 former Deputy Sheriff Al Maddox testified that before he died, Ruby told Maddox that he (Ruby) had been part of a conspiracy to silence Oswald. When he was terminally ill,

---

[23] Douglass, 368. As for who those "Dallas authorities" might be: "Earle Cabell, the mayor of Dallas when Kennedy and Oswald were killed, was the brother of Charles Cabell, Deputy Director of the CIA under Allen Dulles..." (Douglass, pp. 482-483, and Garrison, *On the Trail of the Assassins*, pp. 118-121).

Ruby told Dr. Werner Teuter that he had been "framed to kill Oswald."[24]

After shooting Oswald and while in custody, Ruby asked to speak with Gordon McLendon, a veteran WWII Naval Intelligence officer and manager of "Liberty Radio Network" in Dallas. Fifteen years later, in 1978, McLendon formed a partnership with David Atlee Phillips, former Western Hemisphere chief of the CIA, and Stansfield Turner, CIA director, to rehabilitate the agency's public image.

According to D.A. Jim Garrison: "Ruby...was working for the intelligence community...as a member (associate) of the Mafia, part of which had become subservient to the CIA...he was actively engaged in the assassination. He delivered one of the riflemen to the grassy knoll, as one witness (Julia Ann Mercer) observed; although the government, the FBI, changed her testimony, I subsequently got the true testimony from her...Jack Ruby knew what he had to do to Oswald because he (Ruby) was already a key player in the assassination plot. He had carried out the dangerously visible task of delivering a gunman to the grassy knoll...The CIA could hold Ruby in reserve for the murder of Oswald, in case Oswald was not killed by the Dallas police in the Texas Theater, as turned out to be the case."[25]

Dorothy Kilgallen

Kilgallen was the only reporter to whom Jack Ruby is believed to have confided during a private interview. Her father was James L. Kilgallen, a fearless Catholic journalist for the Hearst newspapers who investigated the Lindbergh baby kidnapping. His daughter was a tough-as-nails reporter for the *New York Journal-American* and a panelist on the nationally televised "What's My Line?" CBS game show. She was known for her keen wit and independence. In 1954 she questioned the official story of the bludgeon slaying of the wife of physician Dr.

---

[24] "Framed" is the right word. Another example: Oswald's alleged right palm print and left fingerprint of his index finger on the bag containing the rifle occurred when the Dallas police showed him the bag and allowed him to handle it. There is also the possibility that the bag in evidence did not match the Texas School Book Depository paper samples and was fabricated to frame Oswald. DiEugenio demonstrates the confused and questionable provenance of the bag.

[25] Douglass, p. 360.

Samuel Sheppard, who was wrongfully convicted of the murder. She has the distinction of being the first nationally prominent reporter to ask questions about a possible Kennedy assassination conspiracy.

One source has stated that when "Kennedy was assassinated...Dorothy was devastated. Ten months before, she had taken her young son Kerry on a tour of the White House...To their surprise, President Kennedy invited them into the Oval Office and was extraordinarily kind."

Miss Kilgallen began asking tough questions of the authorities. She had a valuable contact within the Dallas Police Department who furnished her with a copy of the original police log that chronicled the minute-by-minute activities of the department on the day of the assassination, as shown in radio communications. This allowed her to report that the first reaction of Chief Jesse Curry to the shots in Dealey Plaza was: 'Get a man on top of the overpass and see what happened up there.' Kilgallen noted that Curry lied when he told reporters the next day that he initially thought the shots were fired from the Texas School Book Depository. Dorothy challenged the credibility of Howard Brennan (who supposedly gave police a description of the shooter). She wrote articles about how important witnesses had been intimidated by the Dallas police or FBI." [26]

Kilgallen died at age 52. In a November 9, 1965 obituary, the *New York Times* stated, "In August, 1964, officials of the Warren Commission expressed distress that a Kilgallen column had contained testimony before the commission by Jack L. Ruby, the convicted murderer of President Kennedy's assassin, Lee Harvey Oswald." Asked by the FBI to reveal her source for the testimony, "She stated that regardless of the consequences she will never identify the source to anyone." [27]

"One of the biggest scoops of Kilgallen's career came when she obtained the 102-page transcript of Ruby's testimony to the Warren Commission. Readers were shocked at the hopelessly inept questioning of Ruby by Chief Justice Warren..." [28]

---

[26] Sara Jordan, "Who Killed Dorothy Kilgallen?" *Midwest Today*, (2007).

[27] FBI memo of August 24, 1964, attached to a letter from J. Edgar Hoover to J. Lee Rankin, general counsel for the Warren Commission.

[28] Jordan, op. cit.

In March, 1964, during his trial for killing Oswald, Kilgallen had a private interview with Jack Ruby, whose lawyer, Joe Tonahill, stated, "This interview with her was a very significant point in his (Ruby's) classless life.'

Tonahill affirmed that Ruby 'cooperated with her in every way that he could..." [29]

Kilgallen conducted research in Dallas and New Orleans. She stated, "If it's the last thing I do, I'm going to break this case." [30]

Before her death on November 8, Kilgallen had written in her September 3 newspaper column, "This story (the JFK assassination conspiracy) isn't going to die as long as there's a real reporter alive..."

She perished of acute poisoning from three kinds of fast-acting barbiturates—secobarbital, amobarbital and pentobarbital, combined with alcohol. Kilgallen's friend, Marlin Swing, "laid the blame for Kilgallen's death on Italian-American criminals...."

A sophisticated Stanford University dropout with a reputation as a ladies man, Ron Pataky was an associate of mobster Sam Giancana. Someone had Pataky inveigle his way into Dorothy's life. He wined and dined her over the course of several months, pledging his eternal love and having access to her and her home at all hours. After her mysterious death, Pataky published a grimly sardonic poem, "Never Trust a Stiff at a Typewriter." It reeked of the vitriol which the Chicago mob felt for the reporter who intended to use Ruby's disclosures against the Kennedy assassination conspirators. In the poem, Pataky "asserts there's a way to quench a gossip's stench' that 'never fails.' He notes, 'One cannot write if zippered tight,' and that somebody who's dead can 'sell no tales!" [31]

At the time of her death, Kilgallen was under contract to Random House (headed by her friend and fellow "What's My Line?" panelist Bennett Cerf), for a book to be titled, "Murder One." [32] She was known to possess a folder containing her

---

[29] Jordan, ibid.

[30] Lee Israel, *Kilgallen* (New York: Dell, 1979), 380-381.

[31] Sara Jordan, op. cit.

[32] Sara Jordan: "Fellow 'What's My Line?' panelist and book publisher Bennett Cerf recalled, 'She read me the preface of the book she was finishing for us at Random House, titled 'Murder One."

Kennedy assassination notes and research. "Nothing of what Dorothy gathered, surmised or wrote during her private interview with Jack Ruby...has ever come to light." [33]

Seven days after Dorothy's death: "Dr. James Luke, a New York City medical examiner, said she died from 'acute ethanol and barbiturate intoxication, circumstances undetermined.' That was not a common phrase for his office to use...Even though the circumstances of her death were listed as 'undetermined,' for some reason the police never bothered to try to determine them....

"Since Dr. Luke had gone to the scene the day of Dorothy's death and then did her autopsy, it would have been customary for him to sign her death certificate. But he did not do so. Instead, it was supposedly signed by Dr. Dominick DiMaio. Asked about this, Dr. DiMaio was nonplussed. 'I wasn't stationed in Manhattan (where Kilgallen died),' he asserted. 'I was in Brooklyn. Are you sure I signed it? I don't see how the hell I could have signed it in the first place. You got me. I don't know why. I know nothing about the case. I never handled it."[34]

According to journalist Sara Jordan, Kilgallen's biographer Lee Israel told her, "Ordinarily in the case of a woman's suspicious death, the police would go out and at least ask pro forma questions of the people who were around her the night before. But the New York cops did nothing. I mean nothing." [35]

Bill Hunter, Jim Koethe and Tom Howard

Jack Ruby shared an apartment in Dallas with George Senator. When Senator learned that Oswald had been shot he telephoned an attorney, asking for legal representation for his roommate, *before it was announced that Ruby was the killer.* [36] Within approximately 48 hours of the shooting of Oswald, Senator met with a trio, consisting of attorney Tom Howard, and reporters Jim Koethe of the *Dallas Times Herald* and Bill Hunter of the *Long Beach Press-Telegram*. By March of 1965, eight months before Kilgallen's own demise, all three men would be dead. In April of 1964 Bill Hunter was shot to death by a Long Beach policeman. The cop was convicted of manslaughter and sentenced to three years *probation*. On September 21, 1964, Jim Koethe was found dead in his apartment. The Dallas County coroner ruled that he had died of a broken neck by a blow to the throat. 48-year-old Tom Howard's death in 1965 was attributed to a heart attack.

---

[33] Lee Israel, op.cit., pp. 426-427. When the news of her death was made known, viewers of CBS were watching a pre-taped show, "To Tell the Truth," in which Dorothy Kilgallen was a participant.

[34] Jordan, op. cit.

[35] Jordan, ibid.

[36] DiEugenio, op. cit.

Jim Garrison

The death of witnesses connected to the Kennedy assassination conspiracy was effective in intimidating other witnesses, including those who New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison required to prosecute suspect Clay Shaw. Among those witnesses who, out of fear, would not reveal what they knew to Garrison, were Richard Case Nagell, Alfred Moran, Herbert Wagner, Woodrow Hardy and Vernon Gerdes.[37]

Robert K. Tannenbaum, one of the HSCA lead investigators, located a memo from the office of CIA Director Richard Helms: "It revealed how the CIA had followed, harassed and attempted to intimidate Jim Garrison's witnesses." [38] Joan Mellen's *A Farewell to Justice* documents the staggering level of harassment under which the intractable Garrison labored as he proceeded to prosecute CIA agent Clay Shaw for the murder of the president. Garrison was opposed by J. Edgar Hoover, by the Kennedy family led by Robert F. Kennedy, and even by Texas Governor John Connolly who rejected the magic bullet theory, yet "harbored animosity toward Jim Garrison." For much of the rest of his life Garrison was harassed with false charges of racketeering, homosexual acts, [39] Mafia bribes, corruption, and income tax fraud, by government agencies and the CIA's friends in the media. [40]

---

[37] Mellen, p. 299.

[38] Mellin, p. 344. The HSCA hearings were valuable for the important raw evidence and testimony they gathered at a time when the assassination trail was relatively "hot." Its formal conclusions however, were nearly as wayward as those of the Warren Commission. Other than acknowledging that a conspiracy to kill the president probably had occurred, the HSCA whitewashed the CIA and the FBI of any culpability.

[39] In 1969 Garrison's supposed homosexual partner was alleged to be Pierre Bezou, the son of Clay Shaw's friend, James Bezou. The elder Bezou "committed suicide" five years later. Coroner Frank Minyard regarded Bezou's cause of death as suspicious.

Garrison prosecuted Shaw, the CIA's Louisiana handler of Lee Harvey Oswald—twice. Once as an accessory to the murder of the president, for which Shaw was acquitted, and a second time for perjury in claiming he had never worked for the CIA and did not know Bannister, Ferrie or Oswald.

The perjury case was assigned to Judge Herbert Christenberry whose wife had written to Shaw, congratulating him on his initial acquittal.

In the autumn of 1969, in the midst of preparations to prosecute Shaw the second time, Garrison stood for reelection as district attorney. New Orleans' two major newspapers endorsed Garrison's opponent, Harry Connick, the lawyer who had been part of Shaw's defense team and whose well-funded mayoral campaign outspent Garrison ten to one. Nonetheless, the people of New Orleans reelected Garrison.

On June 1, 1970, a Justice Department Strike Force opened in the city, the sole purpose of which was to put Garrison behind bars. Garrison's physical health deteriorated and he began to play around with other women, causing his wife Liz to leave him.

On behalf of D.A. Garrison, New Orleans Prosecuting Attorney Irvin Dymond had asked Clay Shaw on the witness stand during his trial for perjury, "Have you ever worked for the Central Intelligence Agency?"

Under oath, Shaw answered, "No, I have not."

On May 28, 1971, Judge Christenberry dismissed all of the perjury charges against Shaw.

As part of the cryonic process, 21 years after Shaw's perjury acquittal, the facts of the documentary record were thawed: the CIA's History Staff surveyed CIA files that had been made available to the HSCA between 1977 and 1979. Among 64 sequestered boxes of documents there was one revealing Clay Shaw to have been a CIA employee. In 1992 the CIA's PROJFILES "CIA Matters" division of its History Staff released the document. The History Staff's Director, J. Kenneth McDonald admits, "*These records do reveal, however, that Clay Shaw was a highly paid CIA contract source until 1956.*" Shaw had indeed perjured himself. The CIA's own staff revealed the truth, two years after Garrison was in his grave.

---

[40] Bobby Kennedy was perhaps warned privately that support for apprehending the perpetrators of his brother's murder would result in more Kennedy deaths. Bobby was not killed until it appeared that his election as president was likely. The notion that without the power of the presidency, RFK should have pursued his brother's killers, is questionable. Mellen implicates Bobby in a plot to assassinate Castro, which Jim Douglass refutes (cf. Douglass, pp. 250-252).

On June 29, 1971, a Federal agent planted an envelope containing a sum of cash in Garrison's drawer. On June 30 Federal agents raided his home in search of the "bribe money." On December 3, 1971 Garrison was indicted in federal court for income tax fraud and conspiracy to obstruct law enforcement. The case went to trial on August 23, 1973; *Judge Christenberry* presiding.

Garrison represented himself and addressed the racially mixed jury for three hours. Garrison's estranged wife and five children sat in the front row of the spectator's section in support of their embattled husband and father. Mellen recounts how, defining the Declaration of Independence as a document designed to protect individuals from government, Garrison requested that the jury stand as a shield, protecting him from the Federal government which had made a systematic effort to frame him. He admitted that he was not without flaws, "It has been nearly 2,000 years since the last perfect man was on earth," but insisted that he was innocent of the charges against him. Don't let the devil triumph, he advised the jury, his voice cracking with emotion. Two black jurors were seen to weep. The jury returned a unanimous verdict of not guilty. The "Federal Organized Crime Strike Force" packed its bags almost as soon as the jury delivered its verdict. It seems the Feds believed there was only one source of organized crime in New Orleans. Local Mafia boss Carlos Marcello's operations were of little interest.

Toward the end of 1973 Garrison was again facing reelection. Never a man with mercenary motives, his court battle had left him broke. He lost by 2200 votes to Harry Connick, who began destroying Garrison's official assassination conspiracy records upon taking office.

Garrison was indicted and tried again in March, 1974 for income tax evasion. This time the jury acquitted him in less than an hour, but his marriage to Liz was now finished and his health was compromised. Nonetheless, ever the fighter, in 1978 Garrison ran for the Louisiana Court of Appeals, Fourth Circuit, with money he obtained by mortgaging his property.

Black civil rights organizations endorsed his opponent, who had a $100,000 campaign chest, compared to Garrison's $40,000. Black voters however, supported Garrison and he became an appeals judge.

Garrison had a flair for writing. He penned an account of his investigation, *On the Trail of the Assassins*. It was published in 1988 and made into the movie, "JFK," filmed in 1990 and distributed in 1991.

Garrison had never been a businessman; he had never been motivated by money. He included his editor and the publisher of his book *On the Trail of the Assassins* on substantially more of the profits he received from selling the movie rights to the book to Oliver Stone, director of 'JFK,' than he was contractually obligated to do so. One of his sons, who by then was an attorney, objected, telling his father that he was being overly generous. "Son," Garrison said, "these people did me a favor. They published my book when no one else would."

Mr. Garrison received approximately $135,000 for "JFK" in movie royalties and a consulting fee. He was apparently owed more, but the movie studio reneged. He was at least able to pay off his mortgage and the delinquent property taxes on his home on Owens Boulevard. He deposited the remainder of the money, about $85,000, in a non-interest bearing account.

When his son advised him to put the funds into an interest-bearing account, Garrison told him that he did not desire to receive usury. [41]

Toward the end of his life he and Liz were remarried. He died of natural causes in 1990, at age 70. His tombstone in Metairie, Louisiana is emblazoned with the words, "Let Justice be done though the heavens fall."

Dallas Police

On November 22 at 10:30 a.m., Sheriff Bill Decker withdrew security from Kennedy's scheduled motorcade, ordering his deputies and detectives pulled from the surrounding area. Dallas Police Chief Jesse Curry issued a similar order to his force. According to William Manchester, Curry told his men to "end supervision of Friday's crowd at Houston and Main," which was a block short of the ambush site. Chief Curry later wrote that he was merely carrying out orders issued to him by the Secret Service, which also directed local police motorcycles to ride in the rear and not alongside the president's car.

---

[41] Mellen, p. 367.

U.S. Secret Service

The hypnotic mindset of the deniers of a conspiracy to kill the president is on display in virtually any photograph of the president and First Lady in the Dallas motorcade. The president's limousine is shockingly exposed to gunfire (or any other lethal object). Kennedy is riding in the slow-moving limousine, without protection. Examine photos of the motorcade when it traveled through "Bloody Elm Street" in Dealey Plaza: there are no Secret Service men on or around Kennedy's car and there is no motorcycle escort next to it.[42]

The President was a sitting duck. Can the conspiracy deniers truly say that this was a coincidence? An "accident"? Even in 1963, presidential protection was meticulously planned every step of the way. In many previous JFK presidential motorcades Secret Service Agents rode on his limousine and a motorcycle escort flanked it. Where this was not strictly the case, U.S. troops lined the route facing the crowd and Secret Service agents and policemen were stationed atop buildings. None of these precautions were in place in Dallas. *Kennedy's protection had been withdrawn*. Anyone with eyes can see that. It is in plain view. This is an "emperor has no clothes" observation. In Dealey Plaza, the conspiracy to murder him was "hidden" in plain sight. It is a sinister joke on every American.

How do the conspirators attempt to get away with this? By insulting our intelligence with the lie that Kennedy himself ordered his protection removed. In addition to the *Warren Report*, famed Establishment historian William Manchester is one of the earliest sources for the allegation that the president had ordered protection withdrawn from his limousine. In his sanitized best-seller, *The Death of the President,* Manchester wrote, "Kennedy grew weary of seeing bodyguards roosting behind him every time he turned around, and in Tampa on November 18, just four days before his death, he dryly asked

---

[42] Agent Clint Hill briefly mounted the rear of the President's limousine four times in Dallas prior to the assassination and quickly dismounted. He was not on the vehicle when the shots were fired.

Agent Floyd Boring to 'Keep those Ivy League charlatans off the back of the car. Boring wasn't offended. There had been no animosity in the remark..."

One problem with Manchester's claim: Boring was not interviewed for Manchester's book and he denied ever hearing Kennedy make the statement attributed to him. In a recorded interview with Vincent Michael Palamara, Boring stated, "I never told him (Manchester) that." Agent Gerald Blaine was probably Manchester's source for the fake story. He was interviewed by Manchester on May 12, 1965. Not everything about the Kennedy conspiracy is revelation of the method — Manchester's research material and witness notes for his book are "under seal" at Wesleyan University until 2067.

"Official history has claimed that the president was difficult to protect and had even ordered the Secret Service to take certain actions that left JFK wide open for assassination...In fact, JFK was very cooperative and did not interfere with the Secret Service." [43]

In 1992 the former Special Agent in Charge of the White House Secret Service Detail, Gerald A. "Jerry" Behn, a 28-year-veteran, was tape-recorded informing author Palamara, "I don't remember Kennedy ever saying that he didn't want anybody on the back of his car."

Boring, the aforementioned Assistant Special Agent in Charge, a 23-year-veteran, stated to Palamara in a recorded interview on September 22, 1993, "JFK was a very easy-going guy...he didn't interfere with our actions at all."

Assistant Special Agent in Charge Rufus Youngblood: "President Kennedy wasn't a hard ass...he never said anything like that (removing agents from the limo)."

Secret Service Agent Arthur L. Godfrey, when asked if Kennedy ordered the agents not to observe standard security procedures replied, "That's a bunch of baloney; that's not true. He never ordered us to do anything. He was a very nice man..."[44]

Special Agent in Charge Robert I. Bouck told Palamara that having agents on the back of the limousine depended on factors independent of any alleged Presidential "requests."

---

[43] Vincent Michael Palamara, *Survivor's Guilt*, p. 2.

[44] Ibid., p. 24.

James J. Rowley was Chief of the United States Secret Service in 1963. Under questioning by Warren Commission Chief Counsel J. Lee Rankin, Rowley testified that: "No President will tell the Secret Service what they can or cannot do...sometimes it might be as a political man or individual he might think this might not look good in a given situation. But that does not mean per se that he does not want you on there (the rear of the limousine). And I don't think anyone with common sense interprets it as such." [45]

Rowley's predecessor as head of the Secret Service was Urbanus E. Baughman. He wrote, "Now the Chief of the Secret Service is legally empowered to countermand a decision made by anybody in this country if it might endanger the life or limb of the Chief Executive. This means I could veto a decision of the President himself if I decided it would be dangerous not to."[46]

What this testimony reveals is that even if the lie were true, and Kennedy had ordered his security detail to leave him and the passengers in his automobile open to attack, the Secret Service agents in charge would have had to have been traitors and conspirators to have complied with him.

"At least two (Secret Service) agents lied to the Warren Commission. Even worse...they implicitly pinned the blame on the fallen president himself, hinting that Kennedy's recklessness or fatalism— not anything the agents had done in Dallas — ignited a tragic series of events. Kennedy's critics still chant the mantra that the president brought it upon himself. These outright lies and half-truths cannot absolve the Secret Service for losing the life of a president..." [47]

President Kennedy's vulnerability to attack in Dealey Plaza is so clearly an indication of the Cryptocracy's intent to slaughter him that the System has had to marshal a substantial array of "explain-it-away" literature. This includes the *Warren Report,* books by Manchester and Jim Bishop; Gerald Posner's *Case Closed* and Gerald Blaine's *The Kennedy Detail,* which was published in 2010, only after the agents who would have contradicted him were dead (cf. Palamara p. 22, for a list of those agents).

---

[45] Palamara, p. 13.

[46] U.E. Baughman, *Secret Service Chief* (Harper and Row, 1963), p. 70. Asked about the behavior of the Secret Service in Dallas, former Chief Baughman told *US News and World Report* (Dec. 23, 1963), "I can't understand why Mrs. Kennedy had to climb over the back of the car, as she did, to get help..."

[47] Philip Melanson, *The Secret Service*, pp. 58-59.

Former Secret Service agent Abraham W. Bolden Sr., author of *The Echo from Dealey Plaza*, wrote: "I was dismayed at the continued attempts by former agents to deny culpability in the assassination...I was hoping that the former Kennedy bodyguards would show a modicum of contriteness ... instead of trying to blame Kennedy's assassination on the president himself."

Secret Service Agent Emory P. Roberts was one of three shift leaders on President Kennedy's security detail in Dallas. Roberts was the commander of the Secret Service follow-up car. At Love Field, Kennedy's motorcade was filmed leaving the Dallas airport and this footage has been preserved: "...when viewing slow motion black and white video footage of the Love Field departure, one can see agent Donald J. Lawton jogging at the rear of the limousine on JFK's side only to be recalled by none other than Emory P. Roberts, who rises in his seat in the follow-up car and, using his voice and several hand-gestures, orders Lawton to cease and desist." [48]

After the assassination, Roberts received a political appointment as special assistant to President Lyndon Johnson, while still a member of the Secret Service, in violation of Treasury Department rules (the Service was part of the Treasury until being absorbed by the Department of Homeland Security). Roberts was further promoted to the post of Inspector of the U.S. Secret Service in the Nixon administration.

The U.S. Secret Service appears to have done more than contribute to Kennedy's murder by omission. When suspected shooters were confronted in Dealey Plaza by local policemen and bystanders after the president had been hit, the suspects flashed Secret Service credentials. "The assassins of the president controlled the crime scene from the beginning. When witnesses instinctively stormed the grassy knoll to chase a shooter who was apparently behind the fence at the top, they immediately encountered plainclothesmen identifying themselves as Secret Service agents." [49]

---

[48] Palamara, pp. 8-9.

[49] Douglass, p. 260.

"Dallas Police Officer Joe Marshall Smith was one of the first people to rush up the grassy knoll and behind its stockade fence....he smelled gunsmoke right away. He told the Warren Commission that when he encountered a man in the parking lot behind the fence, 'he showed me that he was a Secret Service agent....He saw me coming with my pistol and right away showed me who he was. The man, this character, produces credentials from his hip pocket which showed him to be the Secret Service. I have seen those credentials before and they satisfied me and the deputy sheriff." [50]

"Besides withdrawing security from Dealey Plaza and the presidential limousine, the Secret Service also planned the turn that slowed Kennedy's limousine to a crawl.[51] That forced slowdown completed the setup for the snipers in waiting. The Secret Service advance man, Winston G. Lawson, approved the fatal dogleg turn in Dealey Plaza when he and the Dallas Special Agent in Charge, Forrest V. Sorels, did their dry run over the motorcade route on November 18. Thus, not only did the Secret Service plan and coordinate a turn that flagrantly violated its own rule of a minimum forty-four-mile-an-hour speed for the presidential limousine. Through orders from Washington, the agency responsible for the president's security created a vacuum of security—in Dealey Plaza, all around the limousine, and on the surrounding buildings as well...the only 'Secret Service Agents' in Dealey Plaza when the shots were fired were impostors and killers, bearing false credentials to facilitate their escape and coerce witnesses into handing over vital evidence that would vanish." [52]

Mary Pinchot Meyer

Mary Pinchot Meyer had been President Kennedy's lover and confidant, reportedly giving him LSD on one occasion. Her influence over the president was said to have been considerable. Before noon on October 12, 1964, in Washington D.C., on the Chesapeake and Ohio canal towpath, the 43-year-old scion of a distinguished American family was shot twice in an execution-style murder: once in her head, and once through her back, at close range; the second shot penetrating her right lung and aorta. The .38-caliber murder weapon was never found. Her ex-husband was Cord Meyer, a CIA agent working within the CIA's Directorate of Plans under Richard Helms.

---

[50] Douglass, ibid.

[51] "Clint Hill's Warren Commission testimony and Paul Landis' report confirms that...when the shooting commenced...the limousine was slowing down from an original speed of only around 11.2 mph." Cf. Palamara, p. 10.

[52] Douglass, pp. 272-273. There were of course Secret Service men in Dealey Plaza — riding on the limousine behind Kennedy.

After her death her diary came into the possession of CIA executive James Jesus Angleton. A black man, Ray Crump Jr., was the scapegoat. He was charged with the crime and eventually acquitted in July, 1965. The investigative journalist on Meyer's case, Leo Damore, was found shot to death in 1995. Authorities ruled his death a suicide. His book on Meyer was nearing completion. Peter Janney's *Mary's Mosaic: The CIA Conspiracy to Murder John F. Kennedy and Mary Pinchot Meyer* (2012), is a worthwhile source of information.

Evidence Tampering

As in the hasty demolition of the Murrah building, target of the Oklahoma City bombing, and the FBI's removal of the tiny cabin of accused Unabomber Ted Kazcynski in Lincoln, Montana, against the orders of the county sheriff, to a secret district of an air base; as well as the inordinately rushed demolition of the Twin Towers in New York City in 2001, the key evidence in the JFK hit, the 1961 Lincoln Continental in which he died, was whisked away by the Secret Service and then completely gutted, rebuilt and repainted.

Folklorists often draw macabre parallels between the assassinations of Lincoln and Kennedy (such as, "Kennedy died in a Lincoln and Lincoln died in a Ford"). However, there is no comparison between the two men with regard to the fate of the scenes of their deaths. Ford's Theatre is a meticulously preserved, solemn national shrine to Lincoln, while the Lincoln limousine in which President Kennedy had been murdered was ghoulishly returned to service in 1964 where, for the next thirteen years, it ferried four presidents — Johnson, Nixon, Ford and Carter — as they and their passengers ate, drank, smoked, swore, laughed and dozed. Johnson in particular must have enjoyed quite a few laughs in the same luxury vehicle where President Kennedy's head exploded.

Aside from the grinning that such a disrespectful end for the King of Camelot's death carriage evoked within the Cryptocracy, is the fact that the Secret Service made any forensic crime scene investigation of the limousine impossible. This amounts to felony evidence-tampering.

That some Secret Service men did not care for the president is likely. The official explanation for the antipathy is Kennedy's numerous trysts with various girlfriends. Agent Tim McIntyre, who rode in the limousine behind JFK in the Dallas motorcade, "felt abused" by his service to Kennedy, claiming that JFK's adulterous acts were equivalent to liaisons with prostitutes, thereby making his Secret Service guards accomplices. On ABC-TV McIntyre stated, "...if you have a procurer with prostitutes paraded in front of you...you're asking yourself, 'well, what do they think of us?"[53] If his offended sensibility was sincere, why wouldn't a pillar of moral rectitude like Agent McIntyre quit the service? Or could it be that the tale of shocked Secret Service sensibilities is a cover for other, more esoteric sources of opposition, such as a desire to be on the winning side in the forthcoming coup[54] that would make Lyndon Baines Johnson president.

Vincent Bugliosi

Since Gerald Posner's propaganda for the government's lone nut theory (*Case Closed*) was discredited, former Charles Manson Family prosecutor Vincent Bugliosi stepped forth as the Establishment's go-to guy in support of the guilty-until-proven-otherwise, trial by media that has been used to substitute for the criminal trial Oswald never received.

In compiling his rebuttal to Bugliosi, *Reclaiming Parkland*, James DiEugenio noted the prodigious output of Bugliosi. DiEugenio waded through Bugliosi's huge tome, *Reclaiming*

---

[53] Palamara, p. 7.

[54] Two notable CIA coups: 1. in Iran in 1953 against a pro-American leader, Mohammed Mosaddeq, the elected Prime Minister whose "crime" was to nationalize Britain's oil holdings. Ryan C. Crocker, former US ambassador to Afghanistan and Iraq: "Immediately after 9/11, while serving in the State Department, I sat down with Iranian diplomats...Back then, we had a common enemy, the Taliban and its Al Qaeda associates..The Iranians were constructive...at one point they even produced an extremely valuable map showing the Taliban's order of battle just before American military action began...We forged agreements on various security issues and coordinated approaches to reconstruction. And then, suddenly, it all came to an end when President George W. Bush gave his famous 'Axis of Evil' speech in early 2002. The Iranian leadership concluded that in spite of their cooperation with the American war effort, the US remained implacably hostile to the Islamic Republic." *New York Times* (online) November 3, 2013. 2. In 1970 Richard Helms planned a coup against the president of Chile, Salvador Allende. In 1970 the CIA assassinated Chilean General Schneider. In 1973 Allende was overthrown. Cf. Johnson, *Nemesis* (2006), pp. 105-108.

History (W.W. Norton, 2007), which consists of 1600 printed pages and additional files on an accompanying CD-ROM for a total, according to DiEugenio, of 2646 pages. Bugliosi's big book has since been pared down and recycled in 2013 as *Four Days in November*. It has also been been filmed as the blockbuster Hollywood movie "Parkland," produced by Tom Hanks, accompanied by a tie-in volume, also titled, *Parkland*. A November, 2013 National Geographic television special, "Killing Kennedy" based on a silly book co-authored by Bill O'Reilly, formerly a headliner for Fox News—is evidence of ceaseless corporate support for the moronic "lone nut" theory, which the media have sought to resurrect like a rotted scarecrow from an autumnal cornfield.

This trial by media, with reporters acting as mouthpieces for crooked police, Federal agents and prosecutors, helping to convict defendants who are owed the presumption of innocence, has been the bane of our system of justice. Big Brother's preconceived assumptions of guilt are trumpeted with little skepticism or moderating shades of gray, in a process Mark Lane termed, "Rush to Judgment." Exactly one day after the president was assassinated, Captain Will Fritz of the Dallas Police Department had the chutzpah to announce that the case was already closed: "We are convinced beyond any doubt that he (Oswald) killed the President. I think the case is clinched."

Oswald was killed while under the "protection" of the government. After his death it would have been the decent, honorable and traditional American thing for the Warren Commission and the media to proceed to accord Oswald the *presumption of innocence* and a vigorous defense. The opposite occurred. As early as January, 1964 the Warren Commission presumed he was guilty, not innocent. On the day Oswald was arrested, Dallas District Attorney Henry Wade appeared on national television and stated that Oswald had killed the president. A mere 48 hours later, on November 24, the *New York Times* published the front page headline, "Evidence Against Oswald Described as Conclusive." On November 25, the Associated Press declared Oswald guilty of the assassination. One week after President Kennedy was assassinated, on December 1, the *Washington Post* assured the American people, "...all the police agencies with a hand in the investigation...insist that the case against Oswald is an unshakeable one."

Time magazine's December 13 issue asserted, "Oswald, acting in his own lunatic loneliness, was indeed the president's assassin." Newsweek rubber-stamped this "lunatic" sentiment in its December 16 issue.

When, in September, 1964, the Warren Commission released its twenty-six volumes of supporting testimony and exhibits, the *New York Times* printed a glowing review the very next day. The editors at the *Times* had somehow read and corroborated the contents of the Commission's entire gigantic opus within 24 hours.[55] Thus was born the notorious "lone nut" profile that the media and authorities would trot out for Sirhan Sirhan, James Earl Ray, Arthur Bremer, David Berkowitz, James Holmes, Stephen Paddock, Nikolas Cruz, etc.

Bugliosi and O'Reilly's literary productions and movie tie-ins are the culmination of this depressingly familiar, interminable process. What is so obtuse about prejudicial publicity, and police statements of conclusive guilt made in the immediate wake of a major arrest, is that every reporter who has worked the police beat, as well as every cop worth his salt, knows very well that *an investigation only truly begins with the apprehension of a suspect.* When some government official or news media outlet either declares, or strongly implies, that the case is "clinched" soon after the alleged perp has been arrested, it is fair to surmise that we are being hoodwinked.

Priscilla Johnson is alleged to have been a CIA-planted journalist whose disinformation about Oswald was published the weekend after the president's assassination in the pages of the *Boston Globe, Dallas Morning News* and *Christian Science Monitor*. Her 1977 book, in line with the Warren Commission's "findings," *Marina and Lee*, is in the same mold. The *New York Times* published an adulatory review. She is one of Bugliosi's major sources on Oswald.

DiEugenio states that FBI "agents in the field...got the drift: Oswald had acted alone. Therefore any evidence to the contrary would be most unwelcome. As FBI supervisor Laurence Keenan told Anthony Summers: "Within days (of Nov. 22, 1963) we could say the investigation was over. Conspiracy was a word that was verboten. The idea that Oswald was a confederate or was part of a group or a conspiracy was definitely enough to place a man's career in jeopardy..."

---

[55] A half century later and the *Times* was still at it: "*New York Times* executive editor Jill Abramson hijacked a large chunk of her paper's *Sunday Book Review* on November 3, 2013 to ponder the Kennedy mystery. And after deliberating for page after page on the subject, she could only conclude that there was some 'kind of void at the center of the Kennedy story' and that 'the historical consensus seems to have settled on' the lone gunman theory." -David Talbot, *Salon*, Nov. 6, 2013.

Comedian Bugliosi on Hoover: "J. Edgar Hoover, since his appointment as FBI Director in 1924, at once formed and effectively ran, perhaps the finest, most incorruptible law enforcement agency in history."

Other disinformation assets in the media, such as Max Holland, Patricia Lambert, James Phelan and PBS "Frontline" reporter Scott Malone, attempted to obstruct or malign the reputation of New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison.

The CIA has been directly involved in planting stories and manipulating the media. An April 4, 1967 CIA directive titled "Countering Criticism of the Warren Report," is addressed to "Chief, Certain Stations and Bases." It is mainly concerned with hampering Garrison, who is referred to in the document as "the critic." It advises that the CIA should "employ propaganda assets to answer and refute the attacks of the critic." [56]

At the *New York Times*, reporter Martin Waldron is alleged by Joan Mellen to have falsified the testimony of witnesses at Garrison's trial of Clay Shaw. The *Times* even declared Garrison unfit for public office, and when its columnist John Leonard expressed skepticism toward the official Kennedy autopsy report, Leonard's column "evaporated in later editions of the *Times*."

In his own book on Mr. Bugliosi, Mr. DiEugenio is temperate and civil, and strives for objectivity, praising Bugliosi for writing he produced critical of Bill Clinton and George W. Bush.[57] Bugliosi meanwhile, employs pejoratives and invectives while denouncing as conspiracy theorists those who doubt President Kennedy was killed by a lone nut, yet Bugliosi is on record as stating, concerning the assassination of Robert F. Kennedy, "We are talking about a conspiracy to commit murder...a conspiracy the prodigious dimensions of which make Watergate look like a one-roach marijuana case."

---

[56] Mellen, p. 141.

[57] *The Betrayal of America*; also *No Island of Sanity: Paula Jones vs. Bill Clinton*; and *The Prosecution of George W. Bush for Murder*. The latter is a powerful indictment that deserves to be reprinted. Was it written to make amends for the disinformation Mr. Bugliosi propagated concerning the Tate/LaBianca murders and the assassination of President Kennedy?

DiEugenio lists the many historically accurate points made by Oliver Stone in his movie "JFK," which Bugliosi denounces as complete fiction. DiEugenio asserts that Stone, if anything, understated the case and did not go far enough in making certain conspiracy points. DiEugenio acknowledges the inevitable dramatic license which Stone sometimes took to move the story along but which did not falsify the truth of the film's central thesis.

Future U.S. President Gerald Ford altered the Warren Report at the last minute, changing the wording of the location of Kennedy's back wound (solving the otherwise inexplicable high-exit-wound dilemma). Bugliosi says this was a benign error on Ford's part. Ford would become president after the resignation of Richard Nixon. Ford's administration was a seedbed for personnel destined to play a key role in criminal politics. Ford named George H.W. Bush as CIA director. Ford promoted Dick Cheney to White House Chief of Staff and made Donald Rumsfeld a high official in the Pentagon. The Neocon war party was energized as never before by President Ford who, together with Allen Dulles and Alan Specter, was among the most duplicitous Warren Commission members involved in the concealment of the conspiracy against John F. Kennedy.

Critics of the Warren Commission besides Jim Garrison were Gary Hart and Dave Marston of the 1975 Senator Frank Church Committee ("United States Senate Select Committee to Study Governmental Operations with Respect to Intelligence Activities"); the first chief counsel and the deputy counsel of the HSCA, Richard Sprague and Robert Tannenbaum, and their replacements, Robert Blakey and Gary Cornwell; and Jeremy Gunn, the Director and Chief Counsel of the Assassination Records Review Board (ARRB). [58] (The public furor which arose in the wake of the film "JFK" led Congress to pass the 1992 "President John F. Kennedy Assassination Records Collection Act," from which the ARRB came into existence).

Warren Commission members Rep. Hale Boggs and Sen. Russell Long, were full-fledged skeptics. Long's own private investigator, Philip Corso, did not believe that the alleged murder weapon, the Mannlicher Carcano rifle, could have performed as alleged. Coros believed rogue CIA agents killed Kennedy. Senator Russell began to criticize the Warren Commission in public beginning on November 20, 1966. Russell did not believe in the "magic bullet" and was convinced that the FBI and CIA deceived the Warren Commission. Hale Boggs, the Commission's only Catholic member investigating the murder of the nation's only Catholic president, stated that "Hoover lied his eyes out to the Commission —on Oswald, on Ruby, on their friends, the bullets, the gun, you name it."[59] Boggs was subsequently killed in a plane crash in Alaska.

---

[58] fas.org/sgp/advisory/arrb98/

Mr. Bugliosi used the New Orleans District Attorney who succeeded Garrison, Harry Connick, as a witness against Garrison and filmmaker Oliver Stone, without mentioning that Connick was implicated in destroying Garrison's prosecution records which, by law, were left at the D.A.'s office; Connick is also alleged to be connected to rogue prosecutions in which certainly innocent defendants (such as John Thompson) were targeted for prosecution. Perhaps most damning of all, Connick had been a defense attorney for CIA asset Clay Shaw.

DiEugenio documents the corruption of Wade, the aforementioned Dallas D.A. at the time of the assassination, who is reputed to have railroaded many defendants over the years and whose office withheld twelve boxes of Kennedy assassination documents from the ARRB. Wade is praised unstintingly by Bugliosi.

DiEugenio has sections devastating to Bugliosi: on Marina Oswald, on the paraffin tests administered to Oswald after his arrest; Oswald's lack of proficiency as a marksman; the testimony of Texas School Book Depository employees Williams, Arnold and Adams; the president's autopsy, including the missing notes and the fact that the military limited the autopsy, that Humes destroyed the notes and the first draft of his own autopsy report, and the datum that the autopsy pathologists did not examine Pres. Kennedy's clothing.

John Stringer testified that he did not take the pictures of Kennedy's brain that are in the National Archives. It was Dr. Malcolm Perry who performed the tracheostomy on the president. During a press conference in Dallas and to reporters from the *Boston Globe*—Perry said three times that the wound in the neck was an entrance wound—but to the Warren Commission, under pressure from Secret Service Agent Elmer Moore, Earl Warren's "bodyguard," Perry repudiated his original testimony. (Bugliosi does not mention Moore in his nearly 2700 pages).

---

[59] *Texas Observer*, November, 1998.

Oswald, Shaw and Ferrie

Vincent Bugliosi states that Oswald and Ferrie did not know each other and that Guy Bannister and Oswald were not connected.

Ed Voebel, Fred O'Sullivan and, according to HSCA investigators L.J. Delsa and Bob Buras, several other witnesses such as Jerry Paradis, testified Ferrie and Oswald knew each other (cf. John Armstrong's book, *Harvey and Lee*). There is a Civil Air Patrol photograph of them together.

As stated on page 187 herein, Clay Shaw, David Ferrie and Oswald were together in the summer of 1963 in two small Louisiana towns, Clinton and Jackson, in sparsely populated East Feliciana Parish, approximately 90 miles north of New Orleans. "John R. Rarick, district judge for the Feliciana parishes...was having his thick black hair cut at the Jackson barber shop of his supporter, Lea McGehee...'Oswald was here,' McGehee told Rarick. It had been late summer of 1963." [60] The FBI knew about it through Reeves Morgan, a witness who was a member of the Louisiana state legislature.

Other witnesses to the presence of Shaw, Ferrie and Oswald in East Feliciana Parish were Morgan's daughter Mary, and son Van; Gloria Wilson and Andrew Dunn, and Gladys Palmer, a woman who had worked as a stripper at Ruby's Carousel Club.

"During that summer (1963), Gladys Palmer had been seen often with Lee Harvey Oswald...Gladys had been spotted with Oswald at two bars east of Baton Rouge: the Audubon and the Hawaiian Lounge...D.J. Blanchard, an engineer at 'East' (Louisiana State Hospital), saw Gladys drive with Oswald to the Audubon...." [61]

There is no reference to Gladys Palmer in the *Warren Commission Report*.

---

[60] Mellen, p. 211.

[61] Mellen, pp. 215-216.

“As (Anne) Dischler and Fruge continued to interview the residents of Clinton and Jackson, a narrative emerged: Oswald, Clay Shaw and David Ferrie had driven into Clinton...Oswald got out of the car (a black cadillac), and joined the already long line of black people waiting to attempt to register to vote...It appears to have been September 19 (1963)...”

The registrar of voters, Henry Earl Palmer, told Garrison’s investigators, “Oswald registered to vote up here.” Palmer said that he allowed him to register because Oswald mentioned that he knew Cuban-American psychiatrist Dr. Frank Silva, the medical director of “East,” the hospital in which Rose Cheramie had predicted that Kennedy would be killed, and where Oswald (or his double) [62] applied for a job in September, 1963.

“Maxine Kemp, who...worked in personnel, confirmed that Oswald had applied for a job...Receptionist Bobbie Dedon identified Oswald from his photograph...a ‘former Army intelligence officer’ told the populist writer Ned Touchstone that a man who looked like Oswald and used his name had applied for work at East. He had arrived in a big automobile ‘believed to belong to a wealthy New Orleans man.’ Palmer gave his description of the two white males sitting in front in the black Cadillac as it waited for Oswald. He identified David Ferrie in a photograph from his ‘heavy eyebrows.” [63]

A cop in Clinton identified Shaw: John “Manchester was a law enforcement officer and it was to him that the driver of the black Cadillac had shown a driver’s license in the name of ‘Clay Shaw.’ It was to (Officer) Manchester that the driver admitted that he worked for the International Trade Mart.” [64]

Witnesses Corrie Collins, Henry Palmer, and William Dunn saw Shaw, Ferrie and Oswald together in the town of Clinton.

Two witnesses died mysterious deaths — Gloria Wilson in 1964 of suspected poisoning, and Andrew Dunn, who was found hanged in the Clinton jail in 1968. “Anne Dischler discovered that Gloria had left a diary locked in her private drawer...

---

[62] “...there were quite a few men that summer and autumn who went around calling themselves ‘Oswald” (Mellen, p. 209). Jim Douglass has information on Oswald’s doubles: cf. pp. 221-227, 334-335; 351-354.

[63] Mellen, pp. 217; 219-223.

[64] Mellen, p. 235. In February, 1968, Hugh Aynesworth, working for Shaw’s defense team, tried to bribe Officer Manchester. If he would leave Louisiana and not be a witness for the prosecution he would be guaranteed lucrative employment out of state. Manchester said no.

"When her sister Flo went to collect Gloria's possessions, the diary was gone." [65]

Mr. Bugliosi denies all of this witness testimony and charges Garrison with fraud and having removed two investigators, Francis Fruge and Anne Dischler, when it was in fact the state police who had removed those two from Garrison's staff at the same time that *Life* magazine was pressuring Louisiana Governor John McKeithen to hinder Garrison. [66]

In 1978 the House of Representatives Select Committee on Assassinations determined that there was a "clear indication" that Oswald was with Shaw and Ferrie in Clinton and Jackson, Louisiana. [67]

"Clay Shaw was a CIA operative who, as director of the Centro Mondiale Commerciale in Rome (Italy), joined fellow agents like Ferenc Nagy, who since 1948 had worked for the CIA under the direction of Assistant Director of Central Intelligence, Frank Wisner...

"In November of 1943 Shaw enlisted in the Army...Military intelligence discovered him. Never having seen a day of combat, Shaw rose to the rank of major as aide-de-camp to General Charles O. Thrasher, who was in charge of transferring German prisoners of war to the French. Thrasher was a man of such cruel disposition that he horrified the French liaison officer.

"Appalled by Thrasher's callous treatment of the German prisoners in his charge, Major William H. Haight swore out a deposition against him for the inhumane means by which he handled and transferred the Germans, who were being starved to death and were in a condition 'worse than the former

---

[65] Mellen,p. 237.

[66] Mellen, pp. 307, 319, 324.

[67] For the heroes and villains on the staff of the HSCA itself, cf. Mellen, 343-360.

"The House Select Committee on Assassinations was hastily voted into being in 1976, after some witnesses who'd been called to testify before Frank Church's earlier Senate Intelligence Committee turned up dead or missing. (Chicago's Sam Giancana was murdered while cooking sausage in his basement, five days before he was scheduled to testify, wounded around the mouth and throat to signify the price of becoming an informant; Jimmy Hoffa disappeared; and Vegas's Johnny 'Mr. Smooth' Rosselli, who'd mediated between the CIA and the mob in plots to kill Castro and who evidently, in closed session, had been overly forthcoming to the Church Committee about the Kennedy plot, was discovered floating—legless, stabbed, and shot—in an oil drum in Dumfoundling Bay, north of Miami...the CIA, aided by a fishy liaison named George Joannides, held back from the House Select Committee a raft of relevant documents..." (Nicholson Baker, op. cit.).

German concentration camps.' Shaw moved with ease through an Army Counterintelligence group called the 'Special Operations Section.' Still without having stepped onto a battlefield to face enemy fire, he was to receive a Croix de Guerre, and a Legion of Merit from France, and a similar decoration from Belgium.

"Returning to New Orleans, he joined a CIA proprietary, the Mississippi Shipping Company, run by a fellow homosexual, Theodore Brent. When the (Central Intelligence) Agency sponsored the first of its international trade centers in New Orleans (there would be another in Rome), its 'principal backer and developer' was a lawyer named Lloyd J. Cobb, who had received his Covert Security Clearance from the CIA in October 1953...The International Trade Mart was run by CIA operatives...The Trade Mart donated money to CIA asset Ed Butler...Every consulate within its bowels was bugged...(Shaw) hired fellow single men and could be spotted in his Thunderbird convertible filled with boys...when Theodore Brent died, he left Shaw a legacy, a legal defense fund for gay men that Shaw dispensed as 'Clay Bertrand.'" [68]

David Ferrie piloted the plane which flew Shaw to Cuba in 1959 as part of a CIA project to refine Cuban nickel at a Louisiana refinery through the Freeport Sulphur company, which Vincent Buliosi does not mention. L.P. Davies Jr., Charles Krop and Betty Rubio also testified to seeing Shaw with Ferrie. Bugliosi does not mention them.

According to Prof. Mellen, "Shaw knew Oswald's mentor David Ferrie so well that he co-signed a loan for a him a week before the assassination so that Ferrie could rent a plane and fly to Dallas." Ferrie was never called to testify before the Warren Commission.

Lyndon Johnson

Recent findings of Kennedy assassination conspiracy investigators such as Phillip F. Nelson, point to Vice President Lyndon Johnson having had a significant or even decisive hand in the murder, which appears to have been managed by operators who had the cooperation of clandestine networks tied to two CIA heads, former director Allen Dulles and future director Richard Helms, as well as CIA Deputy Director of Plans Richard Bissell. Strong suspicion has also been cast on Air Force General Curtis LeMay.

---

[68] Mellen, pp. xvii and 130-132.

In 1966 Helms was named CIA director by President Johnson. (Dulles and Bissell had been fired by JFK). Helms ran the CIA until 1971, when he was replaced first by James Schlesinger and in 1973 by the reform-minded William Colby, who had acted criminally in Vietnam, but for whatever reasons was attempting to make amends by exposing Helms and discharging "James Jesus Angelton and the entire top brass of the (CIA's) counterintelligence division." Colby implicated Helms in the CIA overthrow of Salvador Allende, which led to Helms being convicted of having perjured himself before Congress.

Colby died under mysterious circumstances April 27, 1996 in Maryland. Though he was no longer with the Agency at the time of his demise, "the CIA had exclusive control of the death scene." [69]

Decades after King-Kill/33, investigators like Jim Douglass say they still do not know who in the Cryptocracy gave the direct order to assassinate the president. Others, including Phillip F. Nelson in his powerful work, *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination,* believe that Lyndon Johnson was the ring-leader. Our own best surmise is that without the Vice President's knowledge and consent the November coup could not have gone forward. We now know that Johnson faced imminent political ruin and removal from the 1964 ticket, if Kennedy was not killed or incapacitated. "His involvement in scandals with his aide Bobby Baker and business tycoon Billy Sol Estes were about to make headlines. During the summer of 1963, *Life* magazine had been developing a major feature story concerning Vice President Johnson and his scandalous dealings. The in-depth story was scheduled for publication in late November...The story, according to James Wagenvoord, at that time the chief assistant to *Life*'s Publishing Projects Director, Phil Wooton, had been researched by members of the senior staff at *Life* who had a direct line to Bobby Kennedy...On (President) Kennedy's death, research files and all numbered copies of the nearly print-ready draft were gathered up...and shredded." [70]

---

[69] On Colby's strange death and the aftermath, cf. Randall Woods, *Shadow Warrior* (2013), pp. 2-5.

According to his foremost biographer, Robert Caro, in *The Path to Power (The Years of Lyndon Johnson, Volume 1)*, pp. 275 and 535, Johnson's lifetime obsession was to be President of the United States.

In 1966 the "Grassy Knoll Press" published *MacBird* by Barbara Garson, a modern play penned in mock-imitation of Shakespeare's various tragedies, with special emphasis on *Macbeth* ("Macbird"), who is meant to represent Lyndon Baines Johnson. In Shakespeare's play, the witches anticipate Macbeth's murder of Duncan, King of Scotland and prophetically greet Macbeth as Thane of Cawdor and "king hereafter." In *MacBird* the witches say, "All hail MacBird that shall be President!" Garson's play, in line with Shakespeare's, has Johnson as the guilty killer going slowly mad, and "Robert" (Kennedy) as JFK's avenger. *MacBird* sold over half a million copies as a book and had over 90 stagings worldwide. Theater critic Dwight Macdonald writing in the December 1, 1966 *NY Review of Books*: "...the murder in Dallas paralleled the one in Dunsinan— Johnson-Macbeth contrived the murder of Kennedy-Duncan."

Here was the Killing of the King story being further imprinted on the psyche of the American people, with the boldface parallel between Lyndon Johnson and Macbeth, after having John F. Kennedy identified as the leader of Camelot. Is this another "hide in plain sight" gambit of the Truth or Consequences revelators?

Assassination Conspiracy: Right Wing or Left?

Oswald was made to look like a commie pinko. The original intent of this set-up was to fan the flames of US/Soviet tensions which JFK had been seeking to extinguish. Kennedy assassination conspirator Lyndon Johnson discarded the part of the script that had Oswald acting on behalf of Castro or Krushchev. The general impression of Oswald as a Communist was left to fester however (where it remains today), but no move was made on the part of Johnson's administration to hold Communist governments responsible for the president's death.

---

[70] Peter Janney, *Mary's Mosaic,* 307-308.

From the Left comes the idea that Kennedy was killed by a Right wing conspiracy. DiEugenio, misquoting Joan Mellen in her book, *A Farewell to Justice*, (p. 227), claims that White Citizens Council publisher Ned Touchstone, who opposed JFK when he was alive and was a self-admitted associate of the Kennedy-hating General Edwin Walker, intimidated a key JFK conspiracy witness (Gladys Palmer) into silence.

DiEugenio: "Others (witnesses) like lawyer Billy Kline, were intimidated by the aforementioned rightwing forces in the town...There was also Gladys Palmer, a potentially very important witness, who was talked to by local rightwing heavies Jack Rogers and Ned Touchstone. She then forgot all about seeing Oswald." DiEugenio cites Prof. Joan Mellen's book, p. 227, as his source.

Here is what Joan Mellen actually wrote on p. 227: "On August 22, Fruge and Sciambra found Gladys at her home on Evangeline Street. She had already been interviewed by Jack Rogers and Ned Touchstone, she said testily. She did not know anything 'that would lend any assistance.' She had never seen or heard of Lee Harvey Oswald 'in her life' before the assassination. She had never heard of Jack Ruby until he shot Oswald."

It's quite a leap for Mr. DiEugenio, who in other respects is an astute investigative journalist, to say "rightwing heavy Ned Touchstone" talked to Gladys, and then in the very next sentence state, "She then forgot all about seeing Oswald," as if her feigned amnesia was connected to Touchstone — a connection which Mellen, who seems to accept Touchstone as a sincere JFK conspiracy investigator (cf. Mellen, 210-211), did not make. Mr. Touchstone spent much of his journalistic career supporting Jim Garrison and denouncing the Warren Commission. Another key witness who was not intimidated was McGehee. Ned Touchstone was married to June A. McGehee. [71]

Something that both James Douglass and James DiEugenio don't take the time to refute are theories by Left-wing groups who are known to affiliate with Gerald Posner, claiming that Jim Garrison's investigation was an operation of the extreme Right wing in America.[72]

---

[71] In another JFK synchronicity, Touchstone's daughter Lia, married a man named Tippit.

[72] Cf. for instance, mcadams.posc.mu.edu/clinton4.htm

DiEugenio and Douglass seem oblivious to this canard. Douglass and many other Kennedy conspiracy investigators insist that the president was killed by a Right wing CIA that benefited from hate-propaganda against him stirred up by radical Right groups like the John Birch Society, one of whose leaders was among those who placed an advertisement in the *Dallas Morning News* of November 22, accusing the president of treason (for the text of the advertisement cf. Douglass, 369-370). The ad was placed by Bernard Weissman, Larrie H. Schmidt, William Burley III and John Birch Society coordinator Joseph P. Grinnan, who was a Texas oilman, under the name of a fictitious organization, "The American Fact-Finding Committee" (Douglass, p. 483).

By means of this advertisement, the JFK assassination conspiracy yet again becomes all things to all people: what was a supposed Left-wing plot on the part of Oswald in the CIA's planted Soviet "expatriate" and missionary for Castro performance, becomes a Right-wing plot involving Birchers and Texas oilmen. Choose your poison.

The oft heard canard about the involvement of H.L. Hunt and "Texas oilmen" has a CIA origin: "In March of 1968 D.A. Garrison was given a manuscript, variously titled 'The Plot' and 'Farewell America' which was a 'ragtag jumble of disinformation designed for no other purpose other than to distract Jim Garrison from naming the CIA as his chief suspect...' The book pinned Kennedy's killing on 'Texas oil interests and the Hunt family.' The...litany of false sponsors appears: Drennan, Wheat and Gale, Minutemen and Birchites...The author, Herve Lamarre, turned out to be...a scion of French intelligence doing the CIA a favor." [73]

To what degree was the "Right wing hate propaganda" that greeted President and Mrs. Kennedy in Dallas, a put-up job by the Cryptocracy? If Oswald was a patsy made to look like a Left wing conspirator, why is it so improbable that there were Right wing patsies made to look as though they were behind the JFK assassination?

Jim Douglass comes out of the Catholic Left for whom a Communist war criminal like Nikita Krushchev, who butchered, at the very least, hundreds of thousands of Ukrainians, was a partner for peace.

---

[73] Mellen, 293-294.

When Mr. Douglass posits the CIA as "Right wing" he should distinguish between the military-industrial complex's Establishment Right, and the anti-Establishment populist Right of leaders such as Willis Carto and Ned Touchstone. Carto published and promoted the work of Kennedy assassination researcher and attorney Mark Lane. Carto's Liberty Lobby and *Spotlight* newspaper were sued for defamation by CIA conspirator E. Howard Hunt for having printed an exposé of Hunt provided by former CIA agent Victor Marchetti. Mark Lane, who successfully defended Liberty Lobby in court, provides a valuable account in his 1991 book *Plausible Denial.*[74]

Some Left-leaning Kennedy assassination investigators make the knee-jerk assumption that the U.S. government in the 1940s, '50s, '60s and '70s was a bastion of sincere conservative anti-communism. A study of top U.S. government operative George C. Marshall's role in protecting Maoist Communism in China from defeat,[75] as well as the machinations of Operation Keelhaul, the assassinations of General George Patton and Secretary of Defense James Forrestal, among numerous instances of U.S. intervention on behalf of international Communism, puts paid to this illusion about the Federal government.

Carto and Touchstone and other American populists objected to many of Jack Kennedy's policies before his death, but after he was killed they presciently espied an emerging shadow government. These men realized that *if the*

---

[74] Also cf. Michael Collins Piper, *Final Judgment* (1995), published by Willis Carto. Mr. Piper provided seldom discussed evidence of the Israeli-connections of intelligence operatives associated with the assassination conspiracy.

[75] An early front was opened by the Cryptocracy through its agent Gen. George C. Marshall, Chief of the U.S. Army during World II and no less influential under the administration of President Harry Truman. In 1946, by misdirecting Chiang Kai-shek's pro-western Nationalist forces, Marshall engineered the victory of Mao Tse Tung's mass murdering army: "Marshall was to perform a monumental service to Mao. When Mao had his back to the wall...in late spring 1946, Marshall put heavy— and decisive— pressure on Chiang to stop pursuing the Communists into northern Manchuria, saying the U.S. wouldn't help if he pushed further...Marshall's diktat was probably the single most important decision affecting the outcome of the civil war." (Jung Chang, *Mao: The Unknown Story* [Random House, 2005], p. 289). The Cryptocracy moved again to protect Mao's tyranny when its asset Truman deliberately failed to prosecute and win the Korean War—rejecting General Douglas MacArthur's request for permission to attack Communist supply bases in China, north of the Yalu River. In 1951, Truman relieved MacArthur of his command. The hold of Mao's closest ally, the Communist Kim dynasty, over North Korea was thereby cemented.

Commander-in-Chief could be murdered with impunity in Dallas, then all future presidents, out of fear of the same fate befalling them, would take their orders from the intelligence services. Who can gainsay this observation?

Distinctions about the Right wing should be easier to make in our time when Neocon "Rightists" engineer the Afghan and Iraq wars and support a domestic police state, while the populist, "Paleo-Right" seeks to restore our Constitutional Republic and reject overseas empire.

Labeling without qualification the CIA and the forces arrayed against John F. Kennedy as "Right wing," is an erroneous generalization which contributes to further confusion concerning who killed our president. A sloppy researcher could go so far as to deduce that Ferrie and Shaw were KKK operatives because they shared a private flight to Canada with Jules Kimble, a Klan member. But in truth Kimble was an FBI informant who had infiltrated the racist organization.[76]

Right/Left labels are largely meaningless in this context. The shape-shifting Cryptocracy appears as a Leftist phantom to Right wingers and a Right wing bogey to Leftists. A similar charade functioned smoothly for Lyndon Johnson, who ran as a liberal peace candidate in the 1964 presidential election against Senator Barry Goldwater and who, after defeating Goldwater, emerged as a Right wing interventionist who would commit 500,000 U.S. troops to a Southeast Asian civil war. Johnson was clearly Left wing with regard to domestic policy, such as the Civil Rights movement and his "Great Society," with its socialist programs.

If he really had been an anti-communist ideologue however, rather than an accomplice of the military-industrial complex and the Israeli lobby, during the Vietnam conflict he would have fought Maoist China and North Vietnam the way the U.S. had fought Nazi Germany, which would have resulted in the end of the regimes of Mao and Ho Chi Minh. The Cryptocracy had no such objective in place. Nor do we advocate that Johnson should have pursued such an objective, in that the war in Vietnam from the outset was a needless, Cryptocracy-initiated alchemical cauldron which processed the American people through a stage of degenerative psychological transformation. Making war on a North Vietnamese nation that was an enemy of Communist China was a catastrophe. Invasions of sovereign nations whether by Bush or Johnson inevitably motivate even a potentially friendly or neutral population into fierce patriotic opposition to the invaders.

---

[76] Mellen, p. 135.

In addition to Oswald's sojourn in the Soviet Union, his alleged attack on Edwin Walker, a prominent Right-wing activist, decorated combat veteran and retired U.S. Army Major General, is the other supposed evidence which is put forth to finger him as a committed Leftist extremist.

Suspicious anomalies are present in this Cryptocracy-scripted Walker sideshow, however. The Warren Commission accused Oswald of having attempted, on April 10, 1963, the assassination of General Walker, at Walker's Texas home, as a prelude to the violence Oswald would supposedly perpetrate on November 22.

As Gerald McKnight demonstrates in his book, *Breach of Trust*, the Dallas police referred to the bullet fired into Walker's house as a steel-jacketed 30.06, as indicated in a report filed by Dallas Police Department officers Van Cleave and McElroy.

DiEugenio: "In less than three weeks after the assassination (of JFK), the FBI changed the bullet (fired at Walker) to a 6.5 caliber, copper-jacketed bullet; which meant that they could link this projectile to Oswald. And, in fact, the bullet today in the National Archives, allegedly tied to the Walker case, is copper coated. Yet none of the Dallas police officers who handled the slug were called to testify before the Warren Commission."

In a March 27, 1964 memorandum to the FBI, forensic investigator Henry Heiberger tested the lead alloy of the bullet recovered from the attempted shooting of General Walker. Heiberger testified that it was different from the lead alloy of a bullet fragment from the auomobile in which Kennedy was shot. The Warren Commission did not call Heiberger to testify.

An eyewitness to the shooting at General Walker's home, Kirk Coleman, identified two assailants, neither of whom resembled Oswald.

Bugliosi claims that Oswald confessed to shooting at the Walker house and that nothing further is required to substantiate the charge. His alleged source for this supposed confession was Oswald's widow, Marina.

CE 399: The Magic Bullet

Which brings us to Warren Commission Exhibit ("CE") 399: "Commission Exhibit 399...the infamous Magic Bullet — the projectile that the Warren Commission says went through two people, President Kennedy and Governor John Connally, making seven wounds and smashing two bones, yet emerging from this travail in almost pristine condition...

"O.P. Wright, who was head of Parkland Hospital Security, was shown a photograph of Commission Exhibit 399 by investigative reporter Josiah Thompson. 'President Kennedy was rushed to Parkland Hospital for emergency treatment after he was shot, and that is where CE 399 was (allegedly) discovered.' The photo 'depicting a copper coated, round nosed, military jacketed bullet' was not the one Wright 'turned over to the Secret Service. He said he had turned over a lead colored, sharp-pointed hunting round...Thompson wrote that if this was true, it indicated that either the FBI or the Secret Service had switched the bullet and therefore the assassination was, at least in part, an 'inside job.'

"It is clear from his footnotes that Bugliosi knows about the...Thompson interview because he read Thompson's 1967 book *Six Seconds in Dallas*, but he left this particular interview out of his book...in any real crime scene investigation, Dealey Plaza would have been immediately cordoned off and then details of Dallas Police offiers, supplemented by FBI technology, would have been channeled into the entire area. There would have been a foot-by-foot systematic check for shells, bullets, weapons and anything else lying around from the shooting. That did not happen...

"One of the more interesting discoveries of the ARRB, was an FBI evidence envelope from Dallas. As Michael Griffith points out, although the envelope was empty, the cover indicated it had contained a 7.65 mm rifle shell found in Dealey Plaza after the shooting. The envelope was dated December 2, 1963, so the shell was found sometime between November 22 and December 2, 1963. This important piece of evidence was hidden for three decades..." [77]

---

[77] DiEugenio, op.cit. "Once it closed shop, the Assassinations Records Review Board (ARRB) declassified about 2 million pages of records...there are still scores of records that were not declassified or located by the ARRB." The CIA alone is still concealing some 1,500 documents in defiance of the 1992 JFK Records Act.

Legacy

In the name of national security, in the 21st century the policies of the Federal government are manipulated by CIA and Mossad acts of terror made to appear as though they emanate from Iran or Hezbollah. On Russia's border the CIA formed the now discredited "Orange Freedom Movement" intended to unite Ukraine with NATO against the Russians. After 9/11 the Patriot Act extended the nascent police state into "Homeland Security." Under the George W. Bush administration, claims were put forth of the president's worldwide authority to "render" (kidnap) any person on earth, even a U.S. citizen, and hold them in military custody for months or years without trial.

In December 2011, President Obama signed the 2012 National Defense Authorization Act (NDAA), codifying indefinite military detention without trial into law for the first time in American history. The NDAA's detention provisions authorize the president — and all future presidents — to order the military to seize and indefinitely imprison people, including American citizens, apprehended anywhere in the world, far from any battlefield.

In the name of "national security" the government engages in assassinations at an extraordinary rate, both through drone technology as well as more traditional methods. If any foreign power were to kill a former CIA director, or the former Chief of Intelligence for the FBI, those assassinations would be considered terrorism and the American people would be persuaded to pay billions if necessary, to pursue the assassins anywhere in the world.

In point of fact, recent evidence indicates that the erstwhile CIA director William Colby was assassinated by the U.S. government in Maryland, and FBI Chief of Intelligence William C. Sullivan was shot to death by government agents when he was "mistaken for a deer" while standing on the porch of his home.

Since 1963, assassination chic has creeped into American culture. The *Wall Street Journal* has advocated the assassination of Bashir Assad in Syria *and his family.* In Georgia, Andrew Adler, publisher of the *Atlanta Jewish Times*, in the newspaper's January 13, 2012 edition, allegedly advocated the Mossad assassination of President Obama.

On March 6, 2013 Republican Rand Paul filibustered on the floor of the Senate against the confirmation of John O. Brennan as CIA director, and the prospect of government assassinations of American citizens on American soil. In news reports from the Orwellian corporate media, the word assassination is seldom employed in connection with U.S. government operations. The preferred cosmetic euphemisms spoon-fed to the infantilized public are "drone strikes, targeted killings" and "lethal military force." God forbid reporters or officials would utter the words "*U.S. government assassinations*."

Elie Hobeika, a Lebanese former collaborator with Israeli forces and a key witness in the Sabra-Chatila war crimes case being prosecuted in 2002 in a Belgian court against Israeli Prime Minister Ariel Sharon, was blown up outside his home in Beirut on January 24, 2002, together with three bodyguards and a civilian bystander. The car-bomb was the work of professional assassins in the employ of Mossad, the Israeli secret service. The bombing occurred two days after Hobeika agreed to give evidence against Sharon in Belgium. Hobeika had met with Belgian Senators Josy Dubie and Vincent van Quickenborne in east Beirut, agreeing to be a witness at any trial of Sharon for the Sabra and Chatila massacre.

Belgian human rights lawyers seeking to indict Sharon expressed their "profound shock" at Hobeika's murder. "Mr Hobeika had several times expressed his wish to assist the Belgian inquiry on the massacres at Sabra and Chatila," the lawyers said. "His determination to do so was reported widely on the eve of his assassination. The elimination of the key protagonist who offered to assist with the inquiry is an obvious attempt to undermine our case."

Marwan Hamadeh, the Lebanese minister for refugees stated, "My initial evaluation is that of course Israel doesn't want witnesses against it in this historic case in Belgium..."

In 1963 and 1973 Americans would have been nauseated and angered by Israeli assassinations. Decades after Kennedy's murder and many Americans believe that such gangland rub-outs are justified.

Since 2007, seven Iranian scientists have been assassinated and in some cases their family members killed or wounded, in terrorist acts perpetrated by hit teams sponsored by the U.S. and the Israelis.

Beginning in 2005, certain assassins covertly dispatched to Iran were trained at the Department of Energy's Nevada National Security Site by the U.S. government's Joint Special Operations Command (JSOC).[78]

Murders committed by the U.S. government are vindicated by threadbare logic from Wonderland, namely that terrorist acts such as assassinations are appropriate against whomever we deem to be terrorists. (No doubt JFK and his brother were "terrorizing" the military-industrial complex and the Mafia). Many decades after King-Kill/33 and many more Americans now believe in the morality of the government assassinating "bad guys."

Of course, once you open Pandora's box and engage in extra-judicial executions by U.S. "special forces," and "our Israeli allies" in the Middle East, then the genie is out of the bottle and the principle that "bad people can and should be assassinated," is spread throughout the land, which begs the question, who in the government defines a "bad" person and by what criteria?

Was Dorothy Kilgallen a bad person? What of Bill Hunter of the *Long Beach Press-Telegram*? He interviewed Jack Ruby's roommate and was subsequently shot to death "by accident" by a cop who claimed he had been practicing his fast draw when his handgun discharged in the direction of Mr. Hunter.

On May 22, 2013, Ibragim Todashev was very likely murdered by the FBI, probably to keep him from testifying to his belief that the accused Boston Marathon bombers, the Tsarnaev brothers, had been, in his words, "set up."

The FBI has radically altered its original story of how and why Todashev died, and the inconsistencies and anomalies are so preposterous as to merit an independent congressional investigation, and sleuthing from multiple newspaper, magazine, and television outlets. Most Americans don't seem particularly troubled by this execution by the Federal government of a witness in a terrorism case.

The presumption of the guilt of the Tsarnaevs is the proper belief. The authorities and the media have insinuated this belief, and Americans believe properly.

Welcome to the Brave New World initiated in Dealey Plaza, in the darkness just past noon, of November 22, 1963.

---

[78] Seymour M. Hersh, *The New Yorker,* April 6, 2012.

"Allen Dulles, Richard Helms, Carmel Offie and Frank Wisner were the grand masters. If you were in a room with them you were in a room full of people that you had to believe would deservedly end up in hell. I guess I will see them there soon."

—James Jesus Angleton, Associate Deputy Director of Counterintelligence Operations, Central Intelligence Agency.[79]

---

[79] Cf. Joseph Trento, *The Secret History of the CIA* (Prima, 2001), pp. 478-479.

Select Bibliography

Armstrong, John, *Harvey and Lee* (Quasar Books, 2003).

Brown, Walt, *Master Chronology of the JFK Assassination* ("Kindle" book; multiple volumes)

Cranor, Milicent, "Trajectory of a Lie," history-matters.com/essays/jfkmed/TrajectoryOfaLie/TrajectoryOfaLie.htm

Davy, Bill, *Let Justice Be Done* (Jordan Publications, 1999)

DiEugenio, James, *Reclaiming Parkland* (New York: 2013)

Douglass, James W., *JFK and the Unspeakable* (Orbis, 2008)

Downard, James Shelby, and Hoffman, Michael, *King-Kill/33* (St. Petersburg, Florida, 1977)

Feister, Sherry, *Enemy of the Truth: Myths, Forensics, and the Kennedy Assassination* (2012)

Fonzi, Gaeton, *The Last Investigation: What Insiders Know about the Assassination of JFK* (New York: 2013)

Garrison, Jim, *On the Trail of the Assassins* (1988)

Janney, Peter, *Mary's Mosaic: The CIA Conspiracy to Murder John F. Kennedy and Mary Pinchot Meyer* (New York, 2012)

Lane, Mark, *Plausible Denial* (New York: 1991)

Lane, Mark, *Rush to Judgment* (Holt, Rinehart, 1966)

McKnight, Gerald, *Breach of Trust* (Univ. of Kansas, 2005)

Melanson, Philip, *Spy Saga* (New York, 1990)

Mellen, Joan, *A Farewell to Justice* (New York: 2013)

Nelson, Phillip F., *LBJ: The Mastermind of the JFK Assassination* (New York: 2013)

Newman, John, *Oswald and the CIA* (New York: 2008)

Palamara, Vincent Michael, *Survivor's Guilt: The Secret Service and the Failure to Protect President Kennedy* (2013)

Piper, Michael Collins, *Final Judgment* (Wolfe Press, 1995)

Prouty, Fletcher, *JFK* (Kensington, 2004)

Savage, Gary, *First Day Evidence* (1993)

Tague, James J., *LBJ and the Kennedy Killing* (Trine Day, 2013)

Thompson, Josiah, *Six Seconds in Dallas* (Random House, 1967)

Turner, Bill, *Deadly Secrets* (Thunder's Mouth Press, 1993)

Ventura, Jesse, *They Killed Our President*, (New York, 2013)

Bobby Kennedy and Thane Eugene Cesar

Statement of Robert F. Kennedy Jr.

"September 11, 2019 – Thane Eugene Cesar died today in the Philippines. Compelling evidence suggests that Cesar murdered my father.

"On June 5, 1968, Cesar, an employee in a classified section of Lockheed's Burbank facility, was moonlighting as a security guard at the Ambassador Hotel. He had landed the job about one week earlier. Cesar waited in the pantry as my father spoke in the ballroom, then grabbed my father by the elbow and guided him toward Sirhan. With 77 people in the pantry, every eyewitness said Sirhan was always in front on my father at a 3 - 6 feet distance. Sirhan fired two shots toward my father before he was tackled. From under the dog pile, Sirhan emptied his 8 chamber revolver firing 6 more shots in the opposite direction, 5 of them striking bystanders and one going wild .

"By his own account, Cesar was directly behind my Dad holding his right elbow, with his own gun drawn when my dad fell backwards on top of him.

"Cesar repeatedly changed his story about exactly when he drew his weapon. According to the coroner, Dr. Thomas Noguchi, all 4 shots that struck my father were "contact" shots fired from behind my Dad, with the barrel touching or nearly touching his body. As my father fell, he reached back and tore off Cesar's clip-on tie.

"Cesar sold his .22 to a co-worker weeks after the assassination, warning him that it had been used in a crime. Cesar lied to police claiming that he'd disposed of the gun months before the assassination.

"Cesar was a bigot who hated the Kennedys for their advocacy of civil rights for blacks. I had plans to meet Thane

Eugene Cesar in the Philippines last June until he demanded a payment of $25,000 through his agent, Dan Moldea.

"Ironically, Moldea penned a meticulous and compelling indictment of Cesar in a 1995 book and then suddenly exculpated him by fiat in a bizarre and nonsensical final chapter.

"Police have never seriously investigated Cesar's role in my father's killing."

End quote from RFK, Jr.

When interviewed, Cesar stated that he had indeed pulled a handgun at the scene of the shooting, but insisted the pistol was a Rohm 38 caliber, not a .22. The bullets which killed John F. Kennedy's brother came from a .22 caliber gun. Cesar also claimed that after the first shot he was knocked down and was unable to fire his weapon.

The Los Angeles Police Department (LAPD), which interviewed Cesar shortly after the shooting, did not regard him as a suspect and *did not ask to see his gun*.

Cesar stated that he did own a .22 caliber Harrington & Richardson pistol. He showed it to LAPD sergeant P. E. O'Steen on June 24, 1968. This gun was not confiscated and no ballistic tests were conducted on it.

When LAPD officers interviewed Cesar in 1971, he claimed that he had sold the gun before the assassination to an individual named Jim Yoder. In October 1972, William W. Turner located Yoder. Mr. Yoder had saved the receipt for the sale of the H&R pistol, which was dated September 6, 1968, and bore Thane Cesar's signature, indicating that Cesar had sold the pistol three months *after* Robert F. Kennedy's assassination, contradicting his 1971 claim that he had sold the weapon months before Bobby's murder.

The 9/11 Terror Attacks as Alchemical Ritual

"Let us never tolerate outrageous conspiracy theories..."
—President George W. Bush
Speech to the United Nations • November 10, 2001

Tim Russert: "You (and John Kerry) were both in Skull and Bones, the secret society."

George W. Bush: "It's so secret we can't talk about it."
—*Meet the Press*, February 8, 2004

"Our enemies are innovative and resourceful, and so are we. They never stop thinking about new ways to harm our country and our people, and neither do we."
—George W. Bush
Defense Appropriations speech • August 5, 2004

Those who aspire to teach can determine the effectiveness of their instruction by determining whether or not anyone has come along to extend or elaborate on what was taught. In the case of our book *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare*, finally completed in mid-2001, we were gratified to see that the author of the 2013 volume, *The Most Dangerous Book in the World: 911 as Mass Ritual*, S.K. Bain, a former staff member of *Oxford American* magazine and the *Weekly Standard* newspaper had in many respects, built upon our own work.

We don't share all of the premises of Mr. Bain's metaphysical teleology, but we're heartened that he was inspired by some of our ideas on civic magic and the reality that current events can, on many occasions, be more than politics, statistics, armies and navies, budgets and lobbying — that "something more" being esoteric messages embedded in ritual crimes that "speak" to our subconscious as a form of human alchemical processing.

When we say "he took," we note that he did so by crediting us by name and mentioning our own book by its title. Our work has been used by others, not just by Mr. Bain, but almost always as an act of covert plagiarism, and plagiarists, particularly on the Internet, do not give credit — they take it — and the hell of that act of intellectual theft is it denies researchers the opportunity to examine the source and follow-up on the originator of the information. Moreover, many plagiarists do not comprehend the concepts they are "borrowing." Consequently, they sow confusion, which is an act friendly to the Cryptocracy. As Bain writes, "Many...of the components of the 9/11 script were *designed* to confuse, to distract, to mesmerize..and suck investigators and conspiracy theorists alike down a bottomless rabbit hole of misinformation...We are bombarded with such volumes of conflicting information that our ability to meaningfully process it is overwhelmed...we give up trying to figure it out...we shut down..."

Bain's *The Most Dangerous Book in the World: 911 as Mass Ritual* introduces the reader to psychological warfare as it "incorporate(s) a wide variety of occult symbols." He proposes that the 9/11 terror attacks were not only an inside job and a black op, they were "...an ultra-powerful mind control...weapon —a psychological warfare tool of enormous proportions—infused with techno-sorcery and deep-level occult programming."

It's one thing to pronounce so ambitiously on so startling a proposition (sorcery, no less), it is quite another to deliver the goods. For the most part, Mr. Bain backs up his assertions with considerable evidence, marshaled step by step as an act of *disenchantment*, the signal characteristic of Mr. Downard's *gestalt*, in a society where the pursuit of self-deception in the form of fairy tale enchantment is threaded throughout our culture's literature, cinema and advertising, resulting in widespread acceptance of virtual and consensus "reality."

If Americans possessed the intuition of early medieval people, most would laugh to scorn the corporate media's official 9/11 tale. What might be the intuition of an early medieval human? First, it would be likely to be close observation and contemplation, which is increasingly abandoned in an Internet Age that offers a deluge of information and misinformation, along with entertainment, amusement, erotica and every other distraction. The aperture is opened so wide it takes a sage to filter it to a manageable point.

When we were with the Amish, we stayed with Ben S. at his home in a settlement in the foothills of New York's Adirondack mountains. After Ben fed and bedded down his cattle and horses, he had the leisure to go out on clear nights to pursue his entertainment: studying the evening sky, the venerable hobby of countless shepherds, hunters and other truly *human* beings. As Ben pointed out various constellations and planets to us one evening, we noted that he also had committed to memory the orbits of many satellites, and even the space station itself, with no assistance from "apps" or computers. He was a keen observer and his observations were not mediated by an "expert" who told him what he was or was not seeing. Whereas, in modern society, almost everything we see, or think we see, is mediated by an authority of some kind. The Emperor has no clothes? The experts say he does. 9/11 was a conspiracy? The "experts" at *Popular Mechanics* say it was not.

Having over the years watched a half-dozen or so films of controlled demolitions of buildings prior to the morning of September 11, 2001, we recognized the collapse of the Twin Towers as being the same kind of direct drop to the ground that we observed in the case of buildings that were razed by the strategic placement of demolition explosives. We didn't need to ask the high priests at *Popular Mechanics* to approve our observation.

As previously noted in this writing, during the Half-Time Show at the National Football League's 2012 "Super Bowl XLVI," pop singer "Madonna," surrounded by Egyptian-Pharaonic props, acted the part of an occult goddess in a ceremony broadcast to hundreds of millions of people. Most Americans didn't see an occult personage. Was an occult ritual being televised, or not? Do we need to ask the "experts"? What does the Revelation of the Method tell us? What do facts as plain as those satellites and space stations that flew across Amish Ben's night sky, reveal to a person whose thoughts are not controlled to any significant degree by the thoughts of others?

Mr. Bain informs us that none other than the co-chairmen of the 9/11 Commission itself, Thomas H. Kean and Lee H. Hamilton, in their 2006 book, *Without Precedent,* charged that the 9/11 Commission was "set up to fail." John Farmer Jr., the Commission's senior counsel, stated that the Air Force decided not to tell the truth about 9/11 and that, "The (NORAD) tapes told a radically different story from what had been told to us (the Commission) and the public." Kean agreed that what NORAD told the Commission, "was just so far from the truth." (NORAD, America's air defense command, somehow could not put a single interceptor fighter-jet in the air over Manhattan during the seventeen minutes the Twin Towers were under attack). [1]

Bain informs us that FBI agent Robert Wright, who worked out of the FBI's Chicago office assigned to tracking Osama bin Laden's financing, gave a speech to the National Press Club in which he stated, "The FBI allowed 9/11 to happen. FBI management intentionally and repeatedly thwarted and obstructed my investigations..."

From Bain we also learn that Andreas von Bülow, a member of Germany's Schalck-Golodkowski investigation committee which tracks financial crimes, "...estimated that insider profits surrounding 9/11 totaled approximately $15 billion."

We see in 9/11 a coverup as flagrant as the daylight assassination on 11/63 at "Bloody Elm Street" of a president whose Secret Service and other forms of protection had been to a certain significant extent, withdrawn.

The contradiction between what our mind and spirit tell us is true and what the legion of professional liars, official spin doctors and prestigious disinformation specialists impose upon us, becomes fertile ground for our processing. When some of us doubt the veracity of the Establishment-propagated official facts about the September 11 terror, we are repeatedly apprised by the "authorities" that only a goofball "truther" kook, or a mentally imbalanced individual, would be skeptical.

A psychic tension arises in the discrepancy between our perception and the force by which the authorized tale is foisted, and we either become a witness against the System which perpetrated the falsehood or we live with the tension. To relieve the stress we are prodded into shoulder-shrugging conformity and therefore made complicit in the spectacular crime—partnered with the criminals by the fact of our indifference to what they perpetrated. Our humanity is radically diminished in the course of this process.

---

[1] "At least six air traffic controllers who dealt with two of the hijacked airliners on September 11, 2001, made a tape recording a few hours later describing the events, but the tape was destroyed by a supervisor without anyone making a transcript...The recording included statements of five or ten minutes each by controllers who had spoken by radio to people on the planes or who had tracked the aircraft...A quality-assurance manager...destroyed the tape several months after it was made, crushing the cassette in his hand, cutting the tape into little pieces and dropping them into different trash cans...Although the matter had been referred to the Justice Department...prosecutors said they had found no basis for criminal charges." Cf. "Tape of Air Traffic Controllers Made on 9/11 Was Destroyed," *New York Times*, May 7, 2004, p. A29.

Black Jack 21 alchemy is achieved partly through the ceremonial manipulation of hypnotic cues and subconscious archetypes and symbols, comprising the Twilight Language which communicates with our subconscious mind and lately, our waking mind. The American people are far gone in the depths of this processing. Psychologically, they have the status of defeated and demoralized prisoners of war. They have cut a deal with the System: they won't contradict the Cryptocracy's flimflammery, in return for the Cryptocracy allowing them to "get on with their lives," pursue a career, marry a trophy wife, raise and educate one or two children, root for the stadium sports team of their choice, acquire a boat, an RV and a second home. In the course of this quid pro quo, they pretend they are concerned about the state of the nation and their children's future, while their souls are dissolved in the face of the lie they are living. It bears repeating: Americans have been marching in the direction the Cryptocracy has been taking us since the Creation and Destruction of Primordial Matter at the Trinity Sight in 1945, the immolation of the King of Camelot near the 33rd degree line in 1963, and the alchemical union of the sun and the moon with the Apollo 1969 moon mission. The 9/11 attacks of 2001 represent the fourth stop on this masonic *Jornada del muerto*. S.K. Bain picks up the trail:

"The Pet Goat"

"The Goat of Mendes, or Baphomet, is a goat-headed deity, being formed of both male and female principles, with Mercury's Caduceus for its phallus. One arm points up and one down, with the Latin '*Solve et Coagula*'...("breakdown and reform"—Hoffman)..."This is...a symbol of the ancient alchemists...(Satanist Aleister) Crowley asserted that Baphomet was a divine androgyne and the 'hieroglyph of arcane perfection..."

Bain ushers us into a scene on the morning of September 11, 2001 when George W. Bush, the 43rd President of the United States, was visiting Sarasota, Florida, listening to a group of children reciting the juvenile tale, *The Pet Goat,* when his Chief of Staff, Andrew Card, announced that the Twin Towers had been struck by a second airliner. *Mr. Bush continued to sit and listen to the children's* Pet Goat story *for several minutes as the Twin Towers burned.*

From *Alice in Wonderland* to the 1939 classic movie, "The Wizard of Oz," juvenilia is sometimes a vehicle for conveying adult messages. Mr. Downard claimed that in the Kennedy King-Kill/33, Jack *Ruby* represented "the powerhouse of Oz." In Hebrew *Oz* denotes strength. In "The Wizard of Oz," the most potent magic resided in the *ruby* slippers.

According to Albert Mackey in volume two of *The History of Freemasonry* (New York, 1906, pages 363-364), Pythagoras is a formative character in the mythology of the Freemasons. In *The Wizard of Oz* the Scarecrow recites for the wizard a garbled version of Pythagoras' Theorem.

When in Kansas, the Oz protagonist Dorothy runs away from the family farm and encounters the campsite of "Professor Marvel." The itinerant showman fools her into thinking he discerns her predicament with the assistance of his crystal ball, which he informs Dorothy is, "...the same genuine, magic, authentic crystal used by the Priests of Isis..."

Diabolist Aleister Crowley's *Book of the Goat* was titled, *Liber Oz*.

Mr. Bain writes that while it's ostensibly a children's story about a girl and her ruminant playmate, "*The Pet Goat* was in reality a strategically employed device used to introduce this key occult element into the 9/11 MegaRitual...this children's story is an allegory of the Luciferian Doctrine: The Father is an overbearing hyper-authoritarian...The goat's aggressive behavior and destructive tendencies at first appear problematic...but in the end render the goat uniquely qualified to serve as savior..and the goat—whose initial poor behavior is, in broader context, relatively benign—saves the day. Praise the Goat.

"...In the class's reading of *The Pet Goat*, the Direct Instruction method was utilized. The teacher pounded out the syllables with a pen on her book and read in unison with the children, the overall effect being not unlike the ritualistic chanting of a religious ceremony.

"You...need to see the YouTube video to get the full effect)...there sits Bush as the Satanic High Priest...listening to little black children...chant out a humorous story about a pet goat—which is actually a thinly veiled simplification of the Luciferian Doctrine—while people burn to death in the North Tower and UA175 slams into the South Tower in New York City. Crowley's *Liber 175*, 'the book of Uniting to a particular Deity by devotion,' outlines precisely what the perpetrators are seeking to accomplish at that exact moment through their sadistic, homicidal ritualistic acts — unite themselves with Satan.

"And although the locations for these two events are separated by hundreds of miles, the two acts are bound together in an ingenious and sophisticated manner by a cohesive ritual unity.

"There is yet another...disturbing aspect to the selection of Sarasota as backdrop to the Bush-Baphomet Black Mass...Of the hundreds of flight schools in the United States, Mohamed Atta, the (alleged) ringleader of the 9/11 terrorists and the (supposed) hijacker-pilot of the first plane to hit target on the morning of September 11, 2001, attended a school located in the very city President Bush was visiting that same fateful morning, where he was presiding over the...Goat Ritual...This is neither coincidence nor synchronicity, it is yet another example of the twisted humor and sophisticated logistics employed..." (end quote).

This occult "twisted humor" in Sarasota is exacerbated by the fact that in 2001 (and for years prior), Ringling Brothers Barnum and Bailey circus hosted a clown college at its Sarasota headquarters. In legend Barnum is made to say, "There is a sucker born every minute."

The idea that George W. Bush was tied into occult goat-craft is a hypothesis we are free to accept or reject. As noted however, occult rituals are above all psychodrama—pattern theatre—and they weave tales from myth and literature as a way of programming us.

Baphomet, the hermaphroditic goat, is a sigil of the alchemical transformation of humanity.

The goat tale that kept President George W. Bush so entranced that he would not interrupt it even to take command during a terror attack as chief of the nation's armed forces, is certainly an intriguing factor and may even be, as S.K. Bain claims, part of the "Mega-Ritual" that was 9/11.

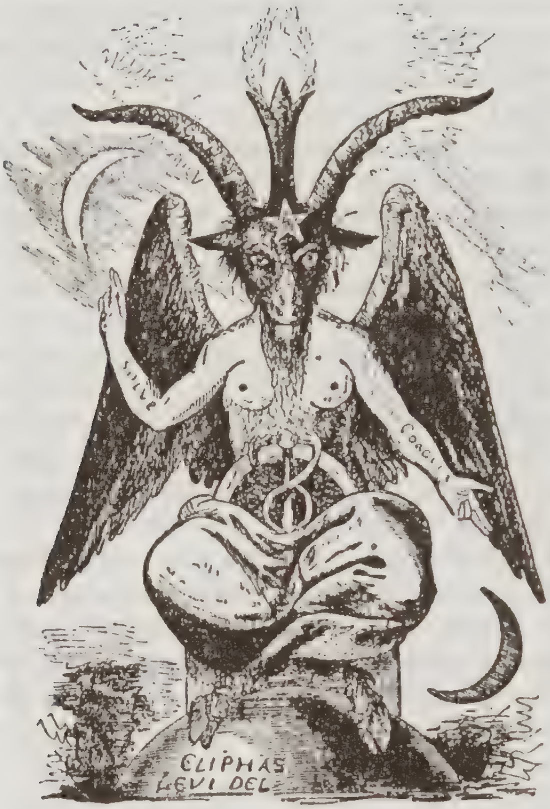

From Levi's *Transcendental Magic.*

BAPHOMET. THE GOAT OF MENDES.

"**Baphomet: The Goat of Mendes**," a viral hieroglyph engraved by Éliphas Levi that became the representative symbol of the western occult, revisioning Michael Maier's "Emblem 33" Rosicrucian image of alchemical transmutation. [2]

---

[2] From Levi's *Dogme et rituel de la haute magie* (1855). "Levi was born Alphonse-Louis Constant in 1810...Levi's enormous impact on esotericism throughout the Western world is indisputable, and influential later authors like H. P. Blavatsky and Aleister Crowley are heavily indebted to him...his books were instrumental in bringing about the occult revival of the mid and late nineteenth century." (Per Faxneld, *Satanic Feminism: Lucifer as the Liberator of Woman in Nineteenth-Century Culture* [Oxford Univ., 2017], p. 131). It pains us to state that Levi was a "traditional Catholic" whose occultism was shielded against all interference and any charges of demonism or heresy by every church authority we located in the annals of the pontificate of Pope Pius IX. Madame Blavatsky complained that "Levi was yet too subservient to his Roman Catholic authorities." This did not deter her however, from continuing to defer to Levi for inspiration and direction. Levi led the attack on the Bible as the Word of God. *Wizard of Oz* author L. Frank Baum's mother-in-law, Matilda Joslyn Gage, referred to "Levi's laudable occult understanding of the Bible." Levi "was...a major source of inspiration for...(the) counter-reading of Genesis 3...the Devil...is given a most generous portrayal." (Ibid. pp. 134-136).

In the forehead of Baphomet, "the Goat of Mendes," we observe the five pointed star or pentagram, which is incorporated into the architecture of that other "magic powerhouse," the Pentagon, target of an alleged terror attack by a jetliner supposedly flown by a clown named Hani Hanjour, who would have had difficulty flying a teacup at Disneyland. Hanjour supposedly eluded all of the U.S. government's formidable radar and surveillance, including the E-4B "Venus77" government spy plane that was aloft over the Washington D.C. area on September 11 (cf. Mark H. Gaffney, *The 9/11 Mystery Plane*).

The very talented pilot of Flight 77 executed a remarkable 330-degree spiral turn clockwise to descend toward the Pentagon, after which Hani Hanjour completed his spectacular aerial feat by supposedly crashing the huge airliner into the 5-sided edifice, causing major damage to the west wing of the nerve center of the U.S. military.

When Mr. Bain refers to twisted humor we think of Sir Francis Dashwood's Hell Fire Club where sadistic occult "pranks" were played for the amusement and edification of the high society initiates, a custom which reflects the Satanic nose-thumbing which embodies the spirit of certain acts of ceremonial magic when conducted in broad daylight before millions of people, and which are contemptuously mounted as an insult to our God-given intelligence and reason; intended to be doubly insulting to Christians who are supposed to possess the gifts of the Holy Spirit after Pentecost, including the gift of discernment.

In our recorded lecture, *Masquerader's Jest,* we analyzed the satirical mocking conducted by George W. Bush in the role he played as "commander in comedy" at the Radio and Television Correspondents dinner on March 24, 2004, [3] in the wake of the U.S. invasion of Iraq, after it was revealed that there were no weapons of mass destruction ("WMD") in that Arab nation.

At the dinner, the president, as "commander in comedy," had the audacity to perform a contemptuous charade, clownishly pretending to search the White House for the weapons of mass destruction which had been his sworn alibi for the war against the sovereign nation of Iraq.

---

[3] As of 2021, a video of his malevolent clowning was online at c-span.org.

> [illegible] Hermes was the muse responsible for inspiring the rhetoric of salesmanship; he had a modest musical talent; and he was an adept of the daring and elaborate prank.[21]

This prank by a member of the Skull & Bones secret society, was a bold public mockery of the millions of Americans who had believed their president's story about WMD, as well as sneering at the U.S. troops who fought and died, along with the countless tens of thousands of Iraqi civilians who perished. [4]

His consummate Hell Fire Club jest, generally applauded by the media, put the finishing touches on Mr. Bush's post-9/11 masterpiece: the human sacrifice that was the Iraq war.

S.K. Bain is concerned with the psychology and epistemology behind the 9/11 rituals: "In the context of the occult script, all of the inconsistencies, suspicious facts and blatant lies make perfect sense — it was a huge, multi-faceted operation involving so many different working parts that the conspirators never expected to be able to cover it all up, or even cared about doing so. In many instances, they didn't even try, or, worse still, were so bold and arrogant that they mocked us to our faces by leaving clues in plain sight."

What does this arrogance tell us? What does the Cryptocracy thinks of us? These elitists always regarded the rest of us non-initiates, in *any era,* as being born somewhat less than human: "ghostly homunculi," e.g. "*goyim*, gentiles, *kelipot*, cowans." The "Cambridge (University) Apostles," who produced a slew of Soviet spies who defected to the Soviet Union, styled themselves the "realities," in contrast to the rest of humanity who they termed mere "phenomena."

Before the modern age, the Cryptocracy's low estimation of the American people was concealed, for the reason that virile, perspicacious, pre-modern yeomen had a tendency to rise against wicked tyrants when they were identified as such, and summarily pitchfork, club and hang them expeditiously. Even in the Victorian era, in the wake of the Trafalgar riots, British Freemasons perpetrated the "Jack the Ripper" butchery with the utmost secrecy. Now they are so contemptuous of us, so extremely confident of their invulnerability and immunity, "so bold and arrogant," that *on 9/11 "they mocked us to our faces by leaving clues in plain sight."*

---

[4] Bain informs us that at a previous, 2002 White House Correspondents' Association Dinner, President G.W. Bush invited Oz man "Ozzy" Osbourne, lead singer of "Black Sabbath," a "Heavy Metal" rock band. At this "fun-loving" event, Bush stated: "The thing about Ozzy is, he's made a lot of hit recordings— 'Party with the Animals, 'Bloody Sabbath,' Facing Hell,' 'Black Skies' and 'Bloodbath in Paradise'— Ozzy, Mom loves your stuff!" (End quote from Bush; cf. Bain, pp. 62-63). Bush neglected to mention Ozzy's other song, "Mr. Crowley," inspired by Aleister Crowley. The video game "Fallout 3" reproduces the lyrics to Ozzy's song in the lead into "You Gotta Shoot 'em in the Head." A "Mister Crowley" is a character in the game.

We contend that at some level of their collective psyche, the American people have an inkling that George W. Bush had a hand in the 9/11 terror attacks that killed 3,000 of their countrymen. But since The Power has signed off on this betrayal of "the phenomena" by "the reality," it has been decided that we "ghostly homunculi" are to haunt the stage of our masters' alchemical theatre, by "living the good life" of getting and spending, the glamor and glitter of fine clothing and travel; ogling the flesh that is peddled to sell soap and automobiles, and the pound of flesh that is extracted by the barons of banking. We have been programmed to drown our intuition of a soul-shriveling truth about our leader, by immersing our snouts in the amusements and distractions of the Renaissance-humanist Abbey of Thelema, where we are governed solely by our own free will, the only law being, *Fais ce que tu voudras* ("Do your own thing").

Twenty years ago in *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare* it was necessary to explain this process of alchemical dissolving-and-rebuilding (*solve et coagula*), in detail and at length, to a startled audience in order for them to grasp it fully. At present, Americans are so far "down the (laboratory) tubes," that many will recognize the alchemical process without prompting, because *they are living it*.

In the Black Jack 21 era Americans exhibit the mental effects of the shock-and-awe doctrine, which is applied not only as military warfare, as in Iraq, but by domestic conspirators who wage psychological warfare as part of what anthropologist Joseph Campbell termed, *"mysterium tremendum et fascinans"* (a mystery before which man both "trembles and is fascinated").

Fascination is immobilizing. The fact that not a single one of the masterminds behind King-Kill/33, Oklahoma City '95, or 9/11, has ever spent so much as a day in jail for their monstrous, world-historic crimes, leads the masses to kneel in *trembling and fascination* before their prowess and potency.

We regret to say that Americans have become degenerate voyeurs who desire to be fascinated by more of these spectacular criminal prodigies, a supplication which will surely be fulfilled in the maelstrom that lies ahead, unless we change our ways by cooperating with the grace of God.

Misdirection of what energy there is, is the order of the day. The Golden Dawn initiate William Butler Yeats predicted a future in which "the best lack all conviction, while the worst are filled with passionate intensity." The unprecedented apathy we are witnessing serves as consent for the hell-on-earth that has been scripted and needlessly imposed upon us as "The Future," like it or not.

Many of us, even while on the golf course, at the shopping mall or the tailgate party, can glimpse, out of the corner of our eye, the harbinger of this end game. Edgar A. Poe drew its contours when he crafted a scene in which people become gradually aware of the presence of a horrifying reality that they had repeatedly denied and ignored—as the "Masque" finally dropped from the visage of "The Red Death": "...before the last echoes of the last chime had utterly sunk into silence, there were many individuals in the crowd who had found leisure to become aware of the presence of a masked figure which had arrested the attention of no single individual before. And the rumor of this new presence having spread itself whisperingly around, there arose at length from the whole company a buzz, or murmur, expressive of disapprobation and surprise — then, finally, of terror, of horror, and of disgust."

By then it was too late, as "...the throng of the revelers...gasped in unutterable horror..." at the reality of the monster that stood among them — a monster that had been present from the beginning of their revels. Poe states that the horror is so terrible it cannot be described or spoken of; it is "unutterable."

In line with Mr. Poe's dictum, this writer stands mute in the face of the extraordinary clockwork that has ticked out the inversion of good and evil, while contemporary Americans, like Esau of old, sell their birthright for a bowl of digital dung.

The "Literary Game" of the Rosicrucian Brotherhood

For the Alchemical Marriage of Magic and Science

Groundwork for a *Transhuman* Century 21:

EMBLEMA XXXIII. *De ſecretis Naturæ.* 143

Hermaphroditus mortuo ſimilis, in tenebris jacens, igne indiget.

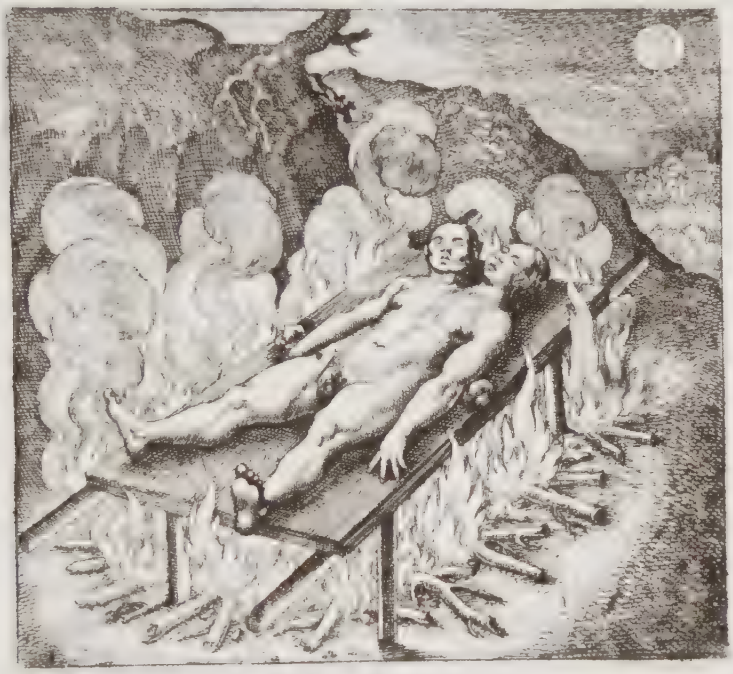

EPIGRAMMA XXXIII.

ILle biceps gemini ſexus, en funeris inſtar
Apparet, poſtquam eſt humiditatis inops:
Nocte tenebroſâ ſi conditur, indiget igne,
Hunc illi præſtes, & modò vita redit.
Omnis in igne latet lapidis vis, omnis in auro
Sulfuris, argento Mercurii vigor eſt.

S 3 Ex

The two-headed being possessing both male and female genitalia, depicted by Michael Maier in "Emblem 33" of his *Atalanta Fugiens* ("Atalanta Fleeing"; 1617). [5]

---

[5] In *The Metamorphoses* of Ovid, *Atalanta* and her male consort Hippomenes, are rivals in a contest. Hippomenes achieves the victory over Atalanta with assistance from Venus, who bestows upon him three golden apples.

Title of the illustration on the preceding page:

“Emblem 33. The Secrets of Nature. The Hermaphrodite, as though a dead person lying in the shadows, requires fire.”

The caption below the illustration reads:

“This two-headed being of double sex, funereal in aspect, gains this image when starved of dampness: hidden in the shadowy night, it craves fire. If you provide it with fire, it instantaneously revives. All the power of the stone is hidden in the fire, All the power of sulphur, [6]in gold; that of mercury in silver.”

In the Hermetic fugue, the transit of one thing into another is the motive principal that powers the world, as demonstrated in the texts and the illustrations of *Atalanta Fugiens* by Dr. Michael Maier. [7]

James Shelby Downward gave consideration to the likelihood that the container designated “Jumbo” at the nuclear Trinity Site housed a mannikin that was animated by the bomb’s atomic energy.

In the text accompanying “Emblem 29” of Maier’s alchemical treatise, we read: *“Ut Salamandra vivit igne sic lapis.”* (“Like the Salamander the Stone lives in the fire”).

The caption under emblem 29 states, *“Degit in ardenti Salamndra patentior igne...Sic quoque non flammarum incendia saeva recusat, Qui fit asidduo natus in igne Lapis.”*

(“The Salamander lives more vigorously in the heart of the fire...Like her, our Stone, born in everlasting fire, does not attempt to flee from the relentless flame”).

---

[6] Sulfur in this alchemical context is a code word for semen. Cf. Michael Maier, *Atalanta Fugiens*, emblem, 44: “*Isis adest soror et conjunx ac mater Osiris, Cujus membra Typhon dissecat, illa ligat. Defluit at pudibunda mari pars, sparsa per undas, Sulphur enim, Sulphur quod generavit, abest*” (“Isis, wife, sister and mother of Osiris, unites his sacred limbs torn apart by Typhon. But the phallus is lost out to sea by the waves, the sulphur which generated the sulphur is there no longer”).

[7] M.D., Basle University; born in 1569 in Kiel, Holstein, Germany; died in 1622 in Magdeburg. Maier was Count of Palatine and a member of the Rosicrucian Brotherhood.

Whether or not Mr. Downard's surmise was correct, in our Century 21 we are experiencing the public fulfillment of the age-old alchemical *magnum opus* in its full spectrum: the racial, [8] sexual, [9] agricultural [10] and *transhuman* assault on nature.

The Rosicrucian Brotherhood

Michael Maier's Rosicrucian alchemy synchronized with the furore generated by the European intelligentsia's frenzied fascination with the recently published "Rosicrucian Manifestos" (*Fama Fraternitatis* [1614], *Confessio Fratenitasis* and *Consideratio brevis* [1615]), which served to announce the debut of the Brotherhood on the public stage, together with an embarkation upon a perception of science as inextricably tied to alchemical objectives.

The *Fama* and the *Confessio* are believed to have been authored by Johann Valentin Andreae and his "Tübingen Circle," including Johann Arndt, Tobias Hess, and Abraham Hölzel, among others. [11]

---

[8] The dissolution of racial differences and the amalgamation of the distinct races into one is the focus of Maier's Emblem 43: *"Audi loquacem vulturem, qui ne utiquam te decipit. Montis in excelso consistit vertice vultur Assidue clamans; Albus ego atque niger, Citrinus, rubeusque feror, nil mentior"* ("Hearken unto the talking vulture, he will not deceive you in any way. Atop a lofty mountain a vulture calls without ceasing; It is said that I am White and I am black; I am also Yellow and red and I do not lie").

[9] In addition to the hermaphroditic aspect, there is also the unnatural use of semen, as limned by Maier, in "The Philosophical Child Who Knew Three Fathers" (Emblem 49): *"...Phoebus, Vulcanus et Hermes in pellem bubulam semina quod suerint; Tresque Patres fuerint magni simul Orionis."* ("Phoebus, Vulcan and Hermes placed into the hide of an ox, semen from each one of them, and the three at the same time became the father of great Orion").

[10] Genetically modified (GMO) crops consist of *plants that could not occur in nature*. In combination with the application of artificial herbicides and pesticides, the fertility of the soil upon which human life depends, has been assaulted by these alchemies. Moreover, healthy soil nurtured through regenerative agriculture can hold more carbon dioxide than plants or the atmosphere combined. Naturally fertile soil can help to substantially remove carbon from our air. For a blueprint cf. the 2020 documentary film, "Kiss the Ground."

[11] Another foundational Rosicrucian text is *The Chemical Wedding of Christian Rosenkreuz (*1605), also by Johann Valentin Andreae and the "Knights of the Golden Stone." It has sometimes been alleged that Protestant founder Martin Luther had sympathy for the Rosicrucian occult because his escutcheon was a rose cross. This was a matter of the Rosicrucians hitching their wagon to a symbol that predated their occult fraternity by decades, similar to Adolf Hitler's appropriation of the swastika, a good luck charm that had been an ancient symbol of the sun in motion. Because Hitler made it synonymous with his Nazi movement, it would be folly to claim that Native American tribes or Hindus, or anyone who embraced swastikas prior to Hitler, were Nazis. It is equally fallacious to equate Luther's (or Dante's) rose symbols with the Rosicrucians.

"Both works were published by Wilhelm Wessel, the court printer of Kassel, with the explicit permission—perhaps even on the orders of the ruler, Landgraf Moritz of Hessen." [12]

These texts proclaimed the existence of the "Fraternity of the Rose Cross" and the dawn of a new age of "Magic, Alchemy and Cabala" (Kabbalah), working partly through the employment of Twilight Language, with a view toward the *expansion of man's power over nature*.

The Rosicrucian manifestos reflected Paracelsus' anticipation of the capacity of human brain power to take "command over the stars" and create "new forms of life," as the *"Anima Mundi"* (Spirit of the World) dictates (cf. the identification in 2 Corinthians 4: 3-4).

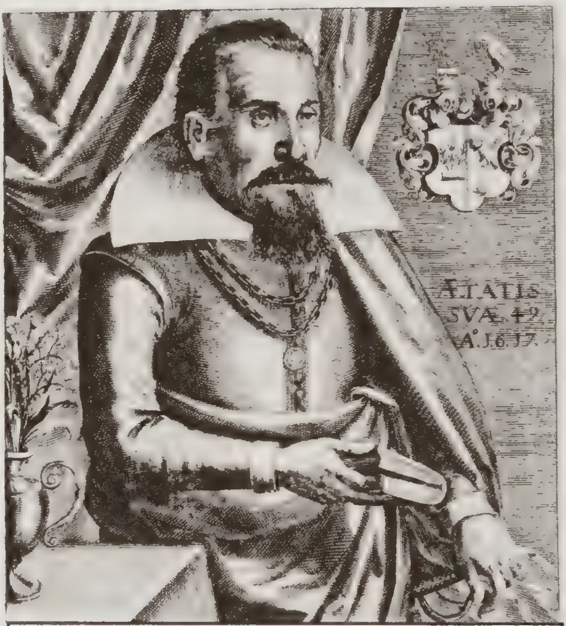

Rosicrucian alchemist and visionary Dr. Michael Maier, 1617

Here we see launched a major axis of the Cryptocracy, whose subsequent influence on our world is in some respects inestimable:

"Andreae's extraordinary concept, a *'literary game,'* or *'Ludibrium'* (as he would later call it), the creation of a secret society, combined with a very serious call for a radical new reformation that would incorporate science...That the sciences are thought of in Renaissance Hermetic-Cabalist terms as related to 'Magia' and 'Cabala', is natural for the period." [13]

---

[12] Joscelyn Godwin, *Rosicrucian Trilogy: Modern Translations of the Three Founding Documents* (2016), pp. 35-36.

[13] Frances Yates, *The Rosicrucian Enlightenment* (Oxford University, 2002), p. 67.

Roland Edighoffer: “The authors of the *Confessio Fraternitatis* agree with the astrologers that their epoch is entering into the sign of Mercury, who was assimilated by Michael Maier with Hermes. In his *Choephoroi*, Aeschylus has Electra define Hermes (‘Mercury’) as the mediator par excellence between gods and men, a function also ascribed to him by the alchemists and by Heinrich Khunrath...

“Thus it is normal for astrologers to regard Mercury as ‘the lord of the word,’ and for the *Confessio Fraternitatis* to proclaim the coming of ‘the age of the Tongue.’

“Jacob Boehme, in his *Morgen-Röthe im Auff- gangk* (“Rising Dawn,” 1612), wrote that in the man who is fulfilled, the planet Mercury gives rise to an inspired language…In the same way, the *Confessio* states that the time has come to speak…the Adamic language, i.e. the primordial idiom…which allowed Enoch to converse with angels. The Rosicrucians claim to already possess the knowledge of this language, but they make it plain that …(it) cannot be read and understood except by a minority.

“They proclaim ‘the age of the tongue,’ but they impose the law of silence on whoever rallies to them…secrecy is a fundamental element in the *Confessio Fraternitatis*, which mentions it at least ten times…certain realities...are held to be inaccessible without a long initiation… Hermes Trismegistus says to Asclepius: ‘It is an impious thing to divulge to the masses a teaching filled with the divine majesty’…the ‘true philosophy’ that the *Confessio* extols is Hermetist…” [14]

Frances Yates: “To the pseudonymous author ‘Philip a Gabella’ (Cabala) was attributed the *Consideratio brevis*, or ‘A Short Consideration of the More Secret Philosophy.’The historical Rosicrucian movement had its origins within the Hermetic, and specifically Paraclesian, tradition that was so pervasive in Renaissance Europe, from its beginnings in Italy initiated by Marsilio Ficino and Pico della Mirandola.

“However, the Rosicrucian movement of the early 17th century was particularly influenced by the English mathematician John Dee, as evidenced by the publication of

---

[14] Edighoffer, “Rosicrucianism I: First Half of the 17th Century,” in Wouter J. Hanegraaff (ed.), *Dictionary of Gnosis & Western Esotericism* (Brill Academic, 2006), p. 1011.

'*Gabella's Consideratio brevis* (a work based on Dee's *Monas hieroglyphica*) alongside the first edition of the *Confessio*...

"Rosicrucian in this purely historical sense represents a phase in the history of European culture which is intermediate between the Renaissance and the so-called scientific revolution of the 17th century. It is a phase in which the Renaissance Hermetic-Cabalist tradition has received the influx of another Hermetic tradition, that of alchemy. 'Rosicrucian manifestos' are an expression of this phase, representing, as they do, the combination of 'Magia, Cabala, and Alchymia' as the inference making for the new enlightenment." [15]

A clear premonition of the infernal marriage of scientism with "Magic, Alchemy and Cabala"—"the capacity of human brain power to take command" which was initiated by the occult imperium in its Rosicrucian manifestation—is afforded by the accelerating creation in our Century 21 along lines of Egyptian-type chimera of millennia ago (humanoid animals such as Anubis and Set), and the legendary Babylonian man-headed fish being Oannes, called Dagon in the Bible. [16]

In our "21" Age of Revelation, comparatively little dissembling is required to propagate public acceptance of laboratory-conceived monsters. Not only is the abomination acknowledged, but after a pro forma nod to anxiety about "unproven forms of intervention and the unintended consequences," these abominations are promoted as the fulfillment, in the words of Nathaniel Rich, [17] of the "lost reverence for the wonders of the natural world," citing conservationists such as Aldo Leopold.

In the *Wall Street Journal* of May 1, 2021, [18] Mr. Rich candidly explains the utopian blandishments entailed within the process by which acceptance of the Frankenstein horrors will be achieved: "Only after the public has warmed to the tools of synthetic biology and land regeneration, enticed by cruelty-free meat and flood-resilient coastlines and Covid immunity, will we be prepared to undertake uncomfortable conversations over hybrid species, bespoke fetuses..."

---

[15] Yates, op.cit., pp. 63; 65.

[16] In I Chronicles 10:10 King Saul's head is taken by the Philistines and "fastened" in their "temple to Dagon."

[17] Mr. Rich is the author of *Second Nature: Scenes from a World Remade* (2021).

[18] The article is sub-titled, "Altered and cloned creatures invite us to confront a future in which technology manipulates nature as never before —to save it." This is tantamount to saying we will engage in sexual intercourse to "save" virginity.

Concerning this alchemy he writes: "In...recent scientific milestones you can make out the sharpening contours of our unnatural future...researchers in La Jolla, California, and Kunming, China, announced that they had successfully implanted human cells into macaque monkey embryos. The experiment suggested it would soon be possible to engineer a novel hybrid species: a human-monkey chimera.[19]

"...scientists have created transgenic species for decades. We've already seen 'humanized' pigs, cows and rats, and the first Covid vaccines available in the U.S. were initially tested on mice implanted with human genes.

"Scandal-averse scientists prefer to speak of these creatures as...'models," as in the language on the website of Jackson Labs in Bar Harbor, Maine: 'The latest model, the humanized NSG™-IL15, is now also available in limited quantities." [20]

"...The word 'monster' comes from Latin *monere*, 'to warn, remind,' a root shared by 'premonition.' The future now emerging is one of unabashed, targeted interference in natural processes, through the manipulation of genetic codes...

"The act of interference is not itself alarming—it's as old as civilization...What's novel today is the effort to use these tools to reverse some of the harm we've done....monsters serve a crucial function. They invite us to confront what's coming, to accept techniques for reshaping reality..." (end quote).

"...unabashed, targeted interference in natural processes..."

---

[19] Cf. Tao Tan, Jun Wu, Juan Carlos Izpisua Belmont, et. al, "Chimeric contribution of human extended pluripotent stem cells to monkey embryos ex vivo," *Cell*, vol. 184, no. 8, April 15, 2021: "Interspecies chimera formation with human pluripotent stem cells (hPSCs) represents a necessary alternative to evaluate hPSC pluripotency in vivo and might constitute a promising strategy for various regenerative medicine applications, including the generation of organs and tissues for transplantation. Studies using mouse and pig embryos suggest that hPSCs do not robustly contribute to chimera formation in species evolutionarily distant to humans. We studied the chimeric competency of human extended pluripotent stem cells (hEPSCs) in cynomolgus monkey (Macaca fascicularis) embryos cultured ex vivo."

[20] From the website (jax.org) of The Jackson Laboratory, May 3, 2021: "Humanized Mice Solutions. Humanized NSG™ represents an innovative and cost-effective platform to simulate trials, evaluate multiple drugs alone or in combination, and produce predictive data. Now, you can request a quote or start an order today. Our portfolio of humanized mice support the development of functional cellular components of the human immune system. Mouse models with human immune cell engraftment represent ground-breaking platforms to evaluate compounds to treat a variety of human diseases."

"The Tarot Card Killer"

The D.C. Sniper

A good deal of nonsense has been be penned about this case, and others like it, by writers who reach into a New Age grab-bag of dementia and disinformation. The CIA terms this distraction "noise" and the spooks are delighted to help propagate it. We term it "X-Files"-style muddying of the watergate that opened in the Age of Aquarius, wherein so many hypotheses and rumors were posited that the people imbibed the sense that everybody killed Kennedy; that everything causes cancer. In which case, how could JFK's killers be brought to justice if everyone is guilty? If everything causes cancer then it's futile to clean the environment. What's the point? Futility is born from the notion that we have no enemies among conspiracy theorists, only among the agents of the Cryptocracy. It hasn't occurred to some folks that a considerable portion of conspiracy theory may have been driven by the Cryptocracy itself, as cognitive infiltration.

In the D.C. Sniper theater of October 2002, there were reports of a suspicious white van with the letters, "Total Recall" printed on the vehicle, which was supposedly spotted at the scene of the sniper's "Exxon shooting." Since one of the goals of the Cryptocracy is the inculcation of apathy, amnesia and abulia in the target population, "Total Recall" would seem to be an antidote to the Cryptocracy's plan.

Let's endeavor to pursue this objective by *totally recalling* that we don't just see words, we hear them. Might it be that "serial" killer is heard as "cereal" killer (from Ceres the vegetative goddess of human sacrifice) in our collective mind?

We didn't coin the word "serial" killer for ritual murder, the U.S. government's FBI profilers did. Their "profile" is sometimes a script. A better name for some of them might be FBI scripters. They point the way out of amnesia into last-minute recall, ceremonially, like the sacrificial victim whose hands are bound and who is being led through an October cornfield. She is jolted into total recall when she sees the altar or pyramid, or wicker man of immolation, in the middle of the mow.

Another news report wanted us to know that the white "Total Recall" van was seen near the scene of the "Exxon sniping."

Can the script be interpreted to be received in the brain of percipients as: "X on Total Recall" i.e. cross out (cancel) Total Recall?

The advertising industry is a medium where the practical application of the Cryptocracy's mind control meets commerce. Advertising agencies are paid millions of dollars to conjure names such as Exxon because those ruthlessly pragmatic businessmen know that sub-rosa manipulation of the Group Mind pays large dividends in sales and profits. One of the most important branches of this epistemology is operated by the symbolic "Dr. Syntax," who features in masonic engravings depicting him giving a lecture at Freemason's Hall. What the masons called word magic, scientists today call neuro-linguistics. Advertisers term it "branding."

Some examples: the written word "serial" is transformed into the phonetic sound "cereal" in the synapses of the brain which link the raw sounds to new meanings not denoted in the textual rendering of the word. These raw sounds are known to the creators among advertising executives, as "phonemes."

The 21st century telecommunications corporation which goes under the brand name "Verizon" paid a large sum in order for that name to be conjured. In terms of textual denotation, Verizon means nothing. It's "just a name," like Lee Harvey Oswald was "just a lone nut." But the sound of that name inside one's head conjures a subtle sense of a rising sun, a new beginning, a "True Horizon." What is common knowledge in elite circles of American advertising, is the datum that to influence the masses with a brand name, one must pay attention to how letter combinations sound, because the advertising executives are cognizant that "In the beginning was the Word...faith cometh by hearing..." and the universe is sustained by sound.

In October, 2001 we witnessed a most highly charged image of the World Trade Center attacks—a burning tower spewing flames with people jumping to their deaths—in the form of the number 16 Tower card from the Rider-Waite Tarot deck.

In October, 2002 the Establishment massively publicized and reproduced another card from the Tarot deck, the number 13 Death card, in connection with the "D.C. Snipers."

Newsweek magazine featured this Tarot card on the front cover of its October 21, 2002 issue, and dubbed the mysterious sniper(s), “The Tarot Card Killer.”

All Hallows Eve was around the corner and the movie “Red Dragon,” featuring a fictional serial killer named Hannibal (i.e. Hani*baal) Lecter* (from the Latin root word for an ecclesiastic whose duty consists in reading “the lessons”), was being exhibited on the nation’s silver screens, as snipers’ bullets commenced the ceremony by which coercion and control are maintained.

The System’s media drew attention to the “FBI profilers” who were supposed to have been concentrating on the sniper’s “geography,” in other words the Downardian realm of Mystical Toponomy (Greek: *topos* [place] + *onuma* [name]), which was notably relevant in the JFK assassination and the Jack the Ripper murders. The Establishment dismisses toponomic connections in those cases, but touts them when employed by the FBI when supposedly on the trail of Washington D.C.’s snipers.

Some of the FBI’s behavioral psychologists (“profilers”) are sometimes the guiding light for ritual murderers and “serial” killers. Perhaps we should extend the FBI “the benefit of the doubt” and surmise that there are only a handful of these bad actors inside the bureau and they are “rogue FBI employees.”

However, it is a matter of the documentary record that the FBI’s HRT (“hostage rescue team”) committed the most infamous sniper murder in memory, FBI agent Lon Horiuchi’s shooting of Mrs. Vicky Weaver at Ruby Ridge, Idaho, as she cradled her infant daughter. [1]

And the FBI most certainly played a criminal role in the Unabom murders.

Did they shepherd the D.C. area sniper(s)? It does appear that the snipers were monitored by the government until Revelation of the Perp time "came 'round again" – on the 6 o'clock news.

One of the police road blocks shown on national television and allegedly maintained to apprehend the sniper(s), was manned by a purported police officer wearing a full face mask. The roadblock was close to the Exxon sniper kill site.

Why would a policeman in 2002 be masked? What Hell-Fire Club jest on the gentiles is conveyed when the cops dress like the robbers?

Assassination of Federal Agent

What was Linda Franklin, a Federal agent who CNN described as "an intelligence operations specialist for the FBI," doing at the Seven Corners shopping mall October 14, when the sniper(s) were stalking there? Just a coincidence?

FBI agent Franklin was subsequently assassinated and the media attributed her death to "the sniper."

Police officials said *the sniper's alleged murder of the FBI intelligence operations specialist had no particular significance and was just a coincidence*:

---

[1] *Ambush at Ruby Ridge: How Government Agents Set Randy Weaver Up and Took His Family Down* (1995), by Alan W. Bock, is, as of this writing, easily the best study of the Federal government's murder of Mrs. Vicki Weaver and her son. In an interview conducted by Alisha Haridasani Gupta of the *New York Times* (Jan. 8, 2021), Seyward Darby, author of the *Times*-endorsed volume *Sisters of Hate*, insinuated that Vicki Weaver was not an innocent non-combatant: "...when people think about Ruby Ridge, they don't even think of Vicki's name per se, they think, 'Oh, that situation where the government was dealing with the separatists and they shot and killed a woman.' That's what it gets boiled down to, and any normal person would hear that and think, 'Oh, wow, that's a really terrible thing.' But it obviously strips important context. As I understand it, from my research, Vicki Weaver wasn't a bystander." We don't know if Ms. Darby's statement signifies that Mrs. Weaver did something that caused her to deserve to be killed while holding her infant daughter inside her home. If she wasn't a bystander that might imply she was guilty of somehow being a participant in what appears to have been a one-sided encounter with an elite FBI sniper. What, pray tell, is the "context" that would render her murder anything other than a "really terrible thing"? The *Times* reporter made no request to view Darby's "research" and exhibited no curiosity about the reference to a "context."

"Charles Moose, the police chief of Montgomery County in neighboring Maryland, said Franklin, an FBI intelligence analyst, was not involved in the sniper investigation and was therefore considered yet another random victim." (Reuters, October 15, 2002). Another "random victim"—the explainers' default dismissal.

The spectre of Arab terrorism is introduced into the Idyll

How could the police chief know with confidence that this particular killing (of Linda Franklin) had been "random" when the possibility of Islamic terrorism had not been ruled out?

"Federal investigators refused Tuesday (October 15) to rule out the possibility that organized terrorist groups are behind the shootings that have left some residents apprehensive all around the nation's capitol. 'The communities are terrorized,' said the Homeland Security Director, Tom Ridge, who said federal investigators don't know whether the sniper might be a domestic or international terrorist...Asked whether there were links to al-Qaida or other foreign terrorists, Ridge said, 'I don't think we can foreclose that. Certainly, nobody in the FBI or the White House has foreclosed that." (Associated Press, October 15, 2002).

If the sniper case was a possible foreign terrorist operation —and the Homeland Security Director refused to preclude the possibility—then how could Police Chief Moose know for certain that the shooting of FBI official Linda Franklin was "random," rather than deliberate?

Spot the farce?

One clown sticks his head out from behind the curtain and shouts, "Random killing!"

Then another clown pokes his head out and speaks his line, "Might be a terrorist!"

The normal reaction of an audience would be to laugh. But there's nothing humorous about the death of Linda Franklin, except to mentally sick people who stage macabre civic comedies at the expense of murder victims.

Furthermore, how was it that the shooters had the guile, meticulous planning, control and prudence to elude massive police roadblocks and dragnets, allegedly travel day in and day out to the murder scenes in the same light-colored “Astro van” [2] with a defective tail light and a telltale silver ladder on the roof, as the media reported?

Of course, when the suspects’ actual vehicle was finally impounded it turned out to have not the faintest resemblance to a light-colored truck or van of any kind. Someone within the Establishment had consistently circulated false descriptions of the killers’ vehicle, providing them with excellent cover.

What happened to the October 11, 12 and 13 focus on a large white commercial truck with the words “Total Recall” on the side?

Those words emblazoned on the truck have faded from the official record and the two trucks, the tradesman's large white truck pictured in the Sunday *New York Times* of October 13, and the astral “Astro van,” back in the limelight as of October 14, appear and disappear from the list of suspect-connected vehicles, episodically, like a flashing signal.

At the very least, the invocation of the Tarot card in the sniper case indicates that the System wants us to think occult thoughts, perhaps along Hannibal/Red Dragon lines (as noted, the sniper shootings debuted close to the time when the latest Hannibal Lecter movie, “Red Dragon” debuted). It seems as though the Game Players sought to maintain the American Group Mind pressure cooker on “high.”

Arcane considerations of this nature were germane long before the era of FBI profilers and are hardly unique to the FBI’s “psy-war specialists.’ What is unique is that under the aegis of “FBI profiling,” occult elements heretofore dismissed by the Establishment as the phantasmagoria of “conspiracy kooks,” have lately been held aloft as both credible and relevant in elite police homicide “investigations,” bringing occult themes of sub-rosa processing and “Satanic” symbolism to stage center.

This process plays bipolar havoc with the mentalities of those who thought the Establishment wanted them *not to believe* that psychological warfare entails manipulating the archetypes of the public’s subconscious.

A year before the D.C. snipers’ October, 2002 reign of terror, in October of 2001, America was in the grip of an “Arab terrorist" anthrax scare that kept hundreds of thousands of children indoors on Halloween and made millions of Americans apprehensive about opening their mail.

---

[2] A celestial vehicle, since the root of the astro is from the Greek, ἄστρον, denoting a star in the sky.

Sniper Halloween 2002 fit the same pattern: "Too Spooked to Trick-or-Treat: This year the monster lurking in the shadows is real..." [3]

That's a headline of the "says it all" variety: monsters lurking in the shadows are real and it's understandable that they would "spook" us into suspending our activity.

Maryland's *Enterprise* newspaper published a front page story directing readers' attention to a pentagram pattern allegedly formed by the snipers' shooting locales.

The *Enterprise* article, sub-titled, "Last leg of pentagram could point to Michaels in St. Mary's," states:

"Among the theories considered in an ongoing hunt for a Washington D.C. area sniper is the possibility that he has targeted places near a chain of craft stores, in a star pattern...'It's just one theory of many,' St. Mary's sheriff's Captain John Horne cautioned...but he noted the pentagram created by the location of four Michaels stores in areas where many of the shootings have occurred...'When you add ours in, that completes (the five points of) the star,' Horne added... 'The pentagram star is a familiar part of Satanic cult activities, the sheriff's captain said." [4]

The public's attention and alertness to these themes are switched on and off. It's permissible to think along these occult-symbol lines if FBI profilers, sheriff's captains or Establishment newspapers are doing so in specifically circumscribed areas of concern. But to apply this heightened consciousness at all times to all areas of criminology and pathology without Establishment authorization, is strictly forbidden, and the "conspiracy nut" and "grassy knoll" labels will be cranked out on cue and applied to whoever dares violate the protocol.

Hence, for someone to take Captain Horne's statement about the pentagram being "a familiar part of Satanic cult activities" and apply it to the U.S. military's five-sided, star-shaped headquarters known as the Pentagon, would invite media derision, or even a one-way ticket to the funny farm. Much in law enforcement display a pentagram as their badge of identification and authority, and it's emblazoned on their patrol cars. In Russia the pentagram was daubed red to represent the bloody terror of Bolshevism. The red star pentagram was retired by Russia in the 1990s, but was resurrected as the nation's emblem by Vladimir Putin.

---

[3] *Washington Post,* October 24, 2002, p. B-1.

[4] *The Enterprise,* October 18, 2002, pp. 1 and A-13.

The D.C. Sniper/Tarot Card Killer caper also featured major broadcast media hosting various former detectives who had "investigated" the "Son of Sam" killings in 1976 and 1977. This was mockery. These "astute investigators" retailed a moldy pack of lies, including the preposterous claim that David Berkowitz was the "lone nut" responsible for all Son of Sam-connected fatalities. In fact, the Sam case, which we investigated and reported in *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare* 2001, was the among the spectacular ritual murders the Cryptocracy mounted in the 1970s. The Son of Sam killers were part of a larger ceremonial series that included the Hillside Strangler in Los Angeles, Kenneth Bianchi, and the "alphabet" rape/murder of little girls in Rochester, New York that came to be known as "Double Initial." [5]

"Total Recall" Triggers "Puzzling Amnesia"

We have seen that the Feds issued repeated disinformation about a white van. As previously noted, they issued a report that the white van exhibited the words "Total Recall" and that this vehicle was spotted at the scene of "the Exxon shooting." "Total Recall" is the title of a film from a science fiction novel by Phillip K. Dick about a "zombie" programmed with hidden commands to execute a specific mission. The movie depicts a company named "Recall" implanting false memories.

In the wake of the "Total Recall" truck sighting, the police were said to possess only a "composite" picture of the truck and that "witnesses cannot agree on the writing that they saw on the white truck, nor can they come up with a license plate number." One correspondent referred to this as "puzzling amnesia."

---

[5] In May of 2021 Netflix cable television debuted a four-part documentary series, "The *Sons* of Sam." Part 2 shreds the official tale of Berkowtiz being the only shooter. At least three NYPD detectives are guilty of having participated in the cover-up. In Parts 3 and 4, a devil angle, which misled investigator Maury Terry, is emphasized. "Sam" was executive action by elite controllers operating behind a "Halloween" cover.

In the October 13 edition of the *New York Times* a photo of the suspect white truck was shown with the phrase "Unknown Words" printed on the side. The significance of words in connection with the sniper case was being emphasized by the *Times*, though the words themselves were evanescent, flashing on and off, leaving almost no trail (until the profilers decide to script a more tangible trail for us through their mouthpiece media).

FBI profilers market brand names to the public. "Unabom" was the name the FBI scripters gave to the purported environmental fanatics who bombed corporate polluters and academic computer gurus, and who eventually were said by the FBI to consist solely in the person of the lone nut Dr. Theodore Kaczynski. But why this odd spelling, Unabom? The FBI brand name "Unabom" is incomplete. The letter "b" has been dropped from the end of the word. This omission telegraphs to us the fact that something is being omitted; the matter is incomplete.

(It should be noted for the record that the phoneme mechanism is a neutral technology that cuts both ways. Someone on the Right came up with a phoneme in the 1980s alleging a "Zionist Occupation Government" which they abbreviated as "ZOG," invoking the sound and image of a monstrous idol and false god).

During the sniper shootings the emotional energy of the nation's Hive Mind was focused like a burning light in a mirror. Scott Thornsley, a "criminal justice scholar" said that the shooter "is planning how to increase the thrill level" (Associated Press, Oct. 15, 2002). The question is, whose "thrill level"—the snipers' handlers, or the masses, or both?

The spotlight was on, and the American people were paying strict attention to the urgent need for surveillance cameras and ubiquitous satellites, military assistance and intervention in domestic affairs, 400 assigned detectives, random traffic stops by police who harassed citizens in white vehicles. The mounting tension, fear, anxiety and expectation in connection with the sniper were palpable, commensurate with the simultaneous, melodramatic "Countdown to War with Iraq," which the media were presenting.

This was all building to a spasm of ecstatic release—the anticipated thrill of the imminent capture of the fiendish culprit(s) and the post-spasm euphoria of a mystery solved and the "case closed."

Those who have been programmed to kill on cue are often also programmed to self-destruct or self-incriminate on cue. In the aftermath of the most notorious masonic murder in American history, the assassination in New York of writer William Morgan in 1826, the investigators of that era remarked on the tendency of the "mesmerized" perpetrators to incriminate themselves or commit suicide. They dubbed the phenomenon "Masonic apoplexy."

The D.C. Sniper case is not a matter of good vs. evil. It is about cryonic, freeze-thaw Revelation of the Method amid the clamor of adrenaline-pumping thrills. It is a medieval mystery play for the Pepsi Generation, a sobering parable about the crying need for a benevolent Super-State, an army of cops and a digital All-seeing Eye to "keep us safe." After all, this is the 21st century! "Life is not so simple anymore."

During the sniper killings this writer was contacted by a Department of Defense official who has been known to us for some time, but this was the first time he was willing to speak this candidly:

"As you know from my other e-mail I work for the Defense Department...While I am a well compensated member of the military-industrial complex I have had growing concern over the years about the direction of our government and who is really controlling it. I wrote you recently about the D. C. Sniper asking you if you believed this killing spree was an occult black arts operation and this has initiated e-mail from you on the subject.

"...This would be the first time that very sophisticated U.S. Military intelligence assets would be used against a (supposed) U.S. citizen in violation of the Posse Comitatus Act of 1877. Thus we see the real reason for the D.C. Sniper — to get our military to conduct operations against U.S. citizens with the approval of those citizens...

"...I'm very concerned about the erosion of the Posse Comitatus division between police and military work in the U.S.. Military assets have been used in the past few years to digitally map with infrared sensors most of the major cities of the U.S. I've overheard a lieutenant general in Army intelligence speak of the fact that all 21st century wars will be urban wars since most people in the world will soon live in urban areas. This may explain the need for a war with Iraq. Our leaders want our military to have a Stalingrad or Berlin house-to-house battle in Baghdad in order to train them for coming events...(some of those events will be here in the U.S.)

"...It looks like Secretary Rumsfeld wants the people to know that the U.S. Military will 'save' them from the sniper so they will welcome military intrusion into their lives. As the French say, sometimes the poison and the antidote are concocted in the same laboratory."

The last time we witnessed a police dragnet comparable to the one in Maryland, was when neo-Nazi terrorist Buford Furrow—after shooting up a defenseless Judaic daycare center on cue—was being hunted by the LAPD. Like the sniper(s) in Maryland, he expertly eluded the formidable Los Angeles police and their intensive manhunt, tiptoed through the roadblocks and chopper spotter beams, traveling all the way to Las Vegas, where he promptly reported directly to personnel at the Las Vegas FBI headquarters. Talk about Revelation of the Method.

Some disinformation in the D.C. Sniper killings came from outside investigators—sloppy or intellectually dishonest researchers who proliferate in this field. For example, conclusions were floated at the point when the shooter(s) had allegedly killed nine and wounded 11 (9/11). Some Internet scribes fell for this rush-to-judgement pitfall by proclaiming a 9/11 sniper signature or message. One must be prudent and avoid forcing data to fit one's own personal prejudices or pet theories. Wishful thinking is a trap for investigators.

The Feds play pranks on independent investigators and the public and we would characterize at least some of the reports about this case which appeared on October 21 and 22, 2002, as telephone pranks and deliberate misdirection, such as what a stage magician uses. For example: "the white van parked at the pay phone with two dark-skinned, Hispanic suspects." It was said these two were definitely not involved. Yet, the pay phone where their van had been parked had, according to the media, been used "by the sniper(s)" to make a call *to the police*.

Moreover, it is the police who routinely confirmed that all the shooting victims were victims of the same sniper(s), based on bullets allegedly extracted from bodies and subsequent ballistic tests. So-called expert criminologists who automatically proceed from the assumption that the police are retailing infallible truth about the victims and the bullets, are about as sophisticated as the kids who whitewashed Tom Sawyer's fence. Without *independent* corroboration of police ballistics tests, we do not see how any authentic criminologist or journalist can assume anything about who killed the victims grouped and ascribed to "the sniper." [6]

One may wish to study the Pentagon's Urban Warfare Doctrine to learn the role which "information superiority" and control of the media play in manipulating a target population. PSYOP, according to the Pentagon's doctrine, entails having the media disseminate only the "approved message...modifying attitudes and behavior of selected audiences." [7]

The System did get its requisite "Muslim monster," John Allen Muhammad, a U.S. Army veteran, into theatrical custody. The supposed "sniper" was indeed struck with that ancient, self-incriminating malady, masonic apoplexy: "The link to the two Washington men came in part from a call from the suspected sniper himself. In the call, the sniper told investigators to look into an incident in Montgomery, Alabama, a federal law-enforcement official said." [8]

Did the snipers turn themselves in on hypnotic cue?

Reading a carefully drafted, cryptic message to the snipers, Chief Moose said:

"You have indicated you want us to say and do certain things. You want us to say, 'We have caught the sniper like a duck in the noose.' We understand that hearing us say it is important to you."

A few hours after Chief Moose's conveyance of this seemingly hypnotic cue in public, the suspects were found conveniently asleep in the wanted car, at a public rest stop, not far from I-70, a heavily-traveled Interstate highway.

Sleep well, America. The Manchurian candidates have emerged from the shadows. A "Manchurian candidate" is defined as: "A group of American soldiers brainwashed into becoming sleeper agents."

After this possibly hypnotic cue had been conveyed to Mr. Muhammad, the Cryptocracy required a story to conceal the cue.

---

[6] Cf. John F. Kelly and P.K. Wearne, *Tainting Evidence* (1998).

[7] *Joint Publication 3-06: Doctrine for Joint Urban Operations* (Pentagon, 2002).

[8] *Seattle Times*, October 24, 2002.

They deliberately intended for that story to be absurd. Why? So they could mock the credulity of the dupes who would believe a sheerly stupid explanation solely because it was retailed by the credentialed Establishment Media. Half of occult ritual consists in mockery of We the People, we who our processors consider morons richly deserving of contempt and exploitation.

Having assessed the reaction in advance, the Overlords chose not to suppress their sneers. They did this by presenting to the American people a "folktale expert" who "solved the riddle" by explaining that Chief Moose's statement was just an old Cherokee Indian story about a rabbit that goes hunting for a duck. [9]

The System will have a tougher time however, explaining away and solving the riddle behind certain revelations, such as the datum that well before the sniper murders occurred, police in the state of Washington, as well as Federal agents there, received numerous red flag warnings concerning the suspects, including information concerning Mr. Muhammad's acquisition of an illegal silencer for his weapon.

According to the *Seattle Times*, ATF Special Agent Patrick Berarducci stated that the ATF learned of Muhammad and the silencer, but took no action. Neither did the ATF act against the gunshop where some say the sniper rifle was obtained. The rifle cannot be traced any further than this gun shop, to Muhammad or anyone else, because the record for this rifle and hundreds of other rifles are missing.

The teenaged Jamaican national, "Malvo," the alleged sniper's accomplice, was designated an illegal alien in 2001, but was allowed to remain in the U.S. after a top official of the INS intervened, and overturned the U.S. Border Patrol's deportation advisory.

Or how about this revelation: "According to several news reports, authorities spent so much time trying to collect forensic evidence from the (sniper's) letter, which was retrieved from Saturday night's shooting site in Ashland, Va., that they missed a deadline the sniper had imposed." (*Seattle Times*, October 24).

---

[9] No allegation of wrong-doing on the part of Chief Moose is here alleged. He may have been only a messenger innocently retailing a communication above his comprehension.

A Fable for Our Times

Sniper's Message Cites Cherokee's Tale

Associated Press (AP), October 24, 2002

"The last cryptic message from Montgomery County Police Chief Charles Moose to the Washington-area sniper referred to a Cherokee Indian story about an arrogant rabbit that was duped by the duck he tried to catch...

"In the ancient story, passed down through generations of Cherokee Indians, a rabbit brags that he can catch a duck. He throws a noose over the neck of a duck, but it flies away with the rabbit hanging on. Eventually the rabbit must let go, landing in a hollow tree stump.

"The conceited animal has to eat his own fur for food and is embarrassed by his appearance when he finally escapes. 'His boastfulness got him in trouble and eventually destroyed him,' said Tera Shows, spokeswoman for the Cherokee Nation, based in Tahlequah, Oklahoma" (end quote from the AP). [10]

Chico Marx: "Why a duck?" [11]

Sheriff Daggett: "The Duck of death, says I." [12]

---

[10] This does not have verisimilitude, even as mythology. Rabbits don't catch ducks. Birch bark canoes of some North American Natives (for instance the Passamaquoddy tribe), were occasionally adorned with images of a confident, pipe-smoking rabbit on one side and a mountain lion on the other. The Mad River Canoe company featured this rabbit mascot, explaining that the pipe-smoking rabbit is a symbol of freedom from fear of one's natural enemies. The legend is prominent in the 1997 film "The Edge," written by David Mamet. In the movie, the owner of a wilderness lodge (played by L.Q. Jones), bets New York billionaire Charles Morse (Anthony Hopkins), that he can't guess what's on the back of a canoe paddle that features an image of a panther on the front. Morse answers directly, "A rabbit smoking a pipe." He adds, "The rabbit is not afraid, because he knows he's smarter than the panther." This Native proverb foreshadows the film's subsequent key action sequences. In the finale, after a harrowing life-and-death ordeal, Charles and the lodge owner revisit the aphorism. Hopkins's character says, "We are all put to the test, but it never comes in the form or point we would prefer..."

[11] A line from a 1929 Marx Brothers movie.

[12] The Daggett character was portrayed by Gene Hackman in the movie "Unforgiven" (1992), directed by Clint Eastwood, who also directed "American Sniper" (2014).

Certain Anomalies in the Case of 33 Deaths in the Virginia Tech Terror

April 16, 2007

Joseph Paul Watson writes: "Charles Mesloh, Professor of Criminology at Florida Gulf Coast University, told NBC 2 News that he was shocked that Seung-Hui Cho, an undergraduate (Korean) student at the university, could have killed 32 people with two handguns absent expert training. Mesloh said the killer performed like a trained professional, 'He had a 60% fatality rate with handguns.'

"In the two hour gap between the first reported shootings and the wider rampage that would occur later in the morning, Cho had time to videotape his confession, transfer it to his computer, burn it onto a DVD, package it up, travel to the post office, post the package, and travel back to his dorm room to retrieve his guns, and then travel back to the opposite end of the campus to resume the killing spree." (End quote from Joseph Paul Watson)

The campus was not shut down after the first shooting of student Emily Jane Hilscher, and Ryan Clark, the resident adviser at the dorm. Lame excuses have been put forward but the fact is, in August, 2006, during a hunt in the vicinity of Virginia Tech for an escaped convict accused of killing two people, classes were canceled and students were told to stay in their rooms (that was the first day of the school year at Virginia Tech, August 21, 2006, so one can describe the shock and fear mined that day as the opening scene in the play that would climax on April 16, 2007). Two people were killed in August off campus and Virginia Tech is shut down and students placed on alert, in defensive posture. The first two people killed by Cho in April and the college continued operating as though nothing was amiss. Why?

It's our hunch that campus security and local law enforcement were misled by assurances from officials higher up that the first two killings, of Hilscher and Clark, were a domestic matter involving a man romantically involved with Hilscher. The profile on cases like that indicates that bystanders are seldom at risk. The local officials took the fatal bait and did as they were told— they relaxed their vigilance.

State officials, notably Virginia State Police Col. W. Steven Flaherty were still saying as of the early morning of April 18 as follows: "...investigators were not ready to conclude that the same gunman was responsible for both episodes..." [1]

This follows the initial insistence of the University President on April 16: "Charles Steger, president of the university, said at a later afternoon news conference that 31 people, including the gunman were killed at Norris Hall and two others died at the dorm. He said there was no connection between the two shootings."

On the morning of April 17, President Steger definitively labeled the Korean as the second shooter: "He was one of our students,' Charles W. Steger, Virginia Tech's president, said this morning on CNN. Offering the most detailed official description so far, Mr. Steger said the shooter at Norris Hall was an Asian male student who lived on campus in one of the dormitories. The suspect was called the 'second shooter." [2]

What of the fact that the sound of a shotgun being fired inside Norris Hall, scene of 30 of the murders and one alleged suicide, was heard by a witness, Wayne Neu? The shooter is said to have been armed only with hand guns. The discharge of a hand gun is very different from the report of a shotgun. If a shotgun was discharged we must ask by whom and at what target?

We have cell phone service being obstructed on campus the morning of April 16. This was explained as due to heavy calling on that day. Gosh, service was obstructed even *before the massacre* in Norris Hall commenced? How odd that cell phone service was on the blink on that day. The school's website was down intermittently too, during the shootings. Not enough bandwidth, it seems. One might venture to say it appears that Cho and whomever may have assisted him, had to be allowed to mow down 30 people in addition to the first two victims. The green light was on for the massacre, even if certain essential services on campus were out of order.

We are informed that Cho was on unspecified "prescription medications," like so many schoolyard shooters and Manchurian candidates; that portion of the script has not been altered. He was also programmed the way millions of American kids are programmed for mayhem and violence, with ultra-violent and highly profitable digital games: "Several Korean youths who knew Cho Seung Hui from his high school days said he was a fan of violent video games, particularly 'Counterstrike,' a hugely popular online game published by Microsoft, in which players join terrorism...groups and try to shoot each other using all types of guns." [3]

---

[1] "Two-Hour Delay Is Linked to Bad Lead," *New York Times*, April 18, 2007.

[2] "Massacre in Virginia: The Day After," *New York Times*, April 17, 2007.

The media reported that the phrase "Ismail Ax" was scrawled on the shooter's arm. Later it was reported that the inscription on his arm read "Ismale Ax." Were they going to work a Muslim (Ishmael) angle, but then dropped it?

In his chilling, videotaped tirade broadcast on television, Mr. Cho spoke of being humiliated, saying, "You forced me to dig my own grave. You shoved trash down my throat." Masonic initiations by secret society groups like Skull-and-Bones involve mock burials in coffins and graves and humiliation involving excrement and sexual fluids (as portrayed in the Revelation of the Method movie, "The Good Shepherd").

The hastily assembled post-massacre "public convocation" at Virginia Tech with President George W. Bush and First Lady Laura in attendance put a funerary pall over the proceedings on a day that should have been a time of intense police investigation—but one doesn't ask questions during a funerary rite, one mourns—and thus as the trail got cold, tampered with, destroyed and manipulated, our attention was focused elsewhere, on the instant mourning rite. This one-day respite in the immediate aftermath of the slaughter gave the Cryptocracy the opportunity to manage and arrange the scene of the crime; to stage it like a realtor stages a house for sale. As the magicians distracted us with the mourning rite, the Cryptos took care of cleaning up the evidence; how convenient.

Their staging differs in certain respects from past scenarios. For example, the case was not entirely presented as open-and-shut. The Cryptocracy released to the media a report of a couple of puzzling items, contradictory data and ambiguous loose ends that gave the massacre the aura of lingering mystery, like acrid gunsmoke hanging in the air. Their allowance for mystery was a safety valve. It enhanced the credibility of the official account. Instead of giving an impression of absolutism in an age of uncertainty, they allowed for uncertainty, conveying a "Gee, some of this is as mystifying to us, as it is to you," message. An attempt to abruptly claim the Virginia Tech case was closed, as was preemptively done with the Son of Sam and Unabom murders, would tax the government's credibility in the year 2007, which was steeped in an Iraq war quagmire in which Americans were becoming distrustful of official malarkey. Far better to allow for an uncertainty principle, which the System can then manage in the direction it wants the investigation to proceed.

---

[3] Cf. "Centreville Student Was Va. Tech Shooter," *Washington Post*, April 17, 2007.

The media reported: "Up until today, the deadliest campus shooting in United States history was in 1966 at the University of Texas, where Charles Whitman climbed to the 28th-floor observation deck of a clock tower and opened fire, killing 16 people before he was gunned down by police. In the Columbine High attack in 1999, two teenagers killed 12 fellow students and a teacher before killing themselves. The shooting at Virginia Tech came just four days before the anniversary of the Columbine High School slaying."

The Korean Cho replaced Texan Charles Whitman as the top campus killer of record. We're shown a timeline, we're looking beyond Virginia Tech. Many other "lone nut" type of "violence-is-as-American-as-apple-pie" killings were being summoned, like ghosts to a seance table, making the third week in April of 2007 a haunted one. Spines were being collectively tingled; we were on alert, not quite so drowsy. We were in "teachable" mode. The Virginia Tech massacre of April 16 was electrifying in itself. This was doubled in light of the imminent arrival of the commemoration service on the April 20 anniversary of the 1999 Columbine school massacre, also allegedly perpetrated by medicated, violent video gamers.

We were "teachable" that week in April, 2007. But what were we being taught?

1. That Cho's sister Sun Kyung worked for the U.S. government in the State Department's Iraq Reconstruction Management Office and that her office "was set up by President Bush."

2. That we didn't care enough about innocent life to prevent another Columbine, by banning access to pharmaceutical substances that lower inhibitions against killing fellow human beings. That we didn't care enough to take on Hollywood's slaughter/slasher movies exhibiting depraved indifference to

human life, and "humanitarian-philanthropist" Bill Gates's Microsoft and their unconscionably profitable traffic in ultra-violent and dehumanizing digital games.

23 is the reported age of the alleged perpetrator.

33 is the number of the total who died: the shooter killed 32 plus himself.

Significant numbers 23 and 33, whether by design or CCC (Cosmic Coincidence Control), were seared into the Group Mind.

Less than two months earlier, on February 23, 2007, movie star Jim Carrey produced and took the lead in the movie, "The Number 23."

The significance of number 23 as a chaos integer was not so well known beyond fans of the writings of William Seward Burroughs, that is until Mr. Carrey's movie debuted in the U.S. on 4/23/07 (4 + 23 +7 = 34, presaging April's 32 to 33 victim progression at Virginia Tech).

On February 27, four days after "The Number 23" movie debuted, a "suicide" bomber blew himself up near where Vice President Cheney was staying in Kabul, Afghanistan. The headline of the February 28 edition of the *New York Times* read, "A Mile from Cheney, Afghan Bomber Kills At Least 23."

Three separate cases of murder-suicide in Houston, Texas, including one at the Johnson Space Center, followed the killings at Virginia Tech.

The third death in the series took place on April 23.

One of the killers was age 33.

And where is Black Jack in all this?

Where's the tunnel to the 21 Gateway?

According to a British newspaper, Cho's dorm room was numbered 2121. [4]

---

[4] "The Killer of Room 2121," *The Observer,* [UK], April 22, 2007.

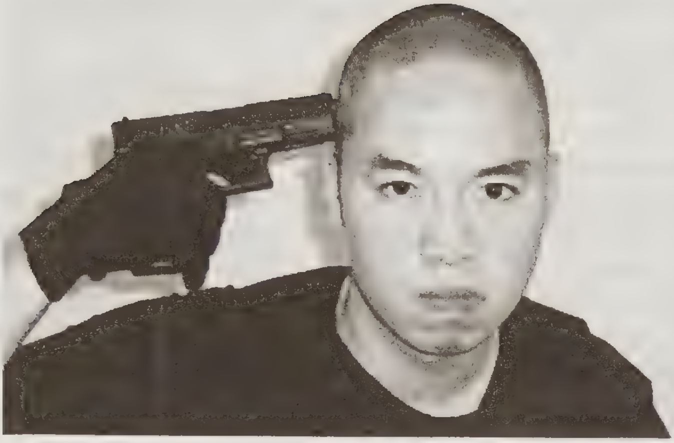

Copycat Videogram to America's Youth

Why was the video containing Cho's gruesome and perverted death manifesto televised?

Why not issue a transcript of his statements and spare the nation the spectacle of making a Videodrome celebrity out of a mass murderer while disseminating his death message to millions?

There was a macabre kamikaze glamor to the video: a demented nerd was transformed into a deadly, potent and instantly famous ninja by the power of his homicidal/suicidal rage. The repeated broadcast seemed like a recruitment piece soliciting copycats. [5]

The Willard Factor: when Israeli civilians massacre Arabs, they are usually described as mentally ill. When Arab civilians massacre Israelis, they are commonly referred to as terrorists. Cho Seung Hui was presented as mentally ill. This deflates speculation that he was directed to do what he did, or that he perpetrated his crimes for defined political, racial or occult motives. Mental illness smothers a multitude of leads: "He was a lone nut. That's all there is to it."

Under that cover story, programming him with drugs becomes "the administration of medication."

---

[5] Cf. Loren Coleman, *The Copycat Effect: How the Media and Popular Culture Trigger the Mayhem in Tomorrow's Headlines* (2004).

He was a lone nut so there's nothing to investigate, other than "incompetent college officials." [6]

Violence from on high begets violence below. The Columbine killings followed President Bill Clinton's indiscriminate, NATO-partnered bombing of ancient churches, cities, trains and buses packed with civilians in Orthodox Christian Serbia. Violence is a form of contagion, particularly the state-sponsored variety.

NATO's carnage was approved by our moralists and statesmen even as loads of Serb civilians were burned alive on the altar of the god of collateral damage. The casual violence of the U.S. government and NATO in Serbia, and the disregard for human life which the two homicidal teenagers exhibited in Littleton, Colorado, are linked.

Depravity and mockery are compounded when slaughterer-in-chief Bush goes to Virginia Tech to "minister" to the victims of an epidemic of violence, of which he himself was a prime instigator through his Skull-and-Bones contempt for human life in Iraq.

---

[6] Cho's "psychiatric records had been missing from the university counseling center for years..." (*Telegraph* [UK], August 21, 2009).

Red Dawn at Midnight

The Aurora, Colorado "Batman" Massacre

On the 43rd anniversary of the Apollo Moon Landing, a mass shooting at the midnight screening in Aurora, Colorado of Christopher Nolan's Batman movie, "The Dark Knight Rises" which premiered *nationally* on July 20, 2012, bore eerie similarities to a scene from the 1986 comic book, *Batman: Dark Knight Triumphant,* down to the killer's red hair.

In the comic strip, a crazed, gun-toting loner walks into a movie theater and opens fire, killing three in the process. The scene in the comic concludes with the media blaming Batman for inspiring the shooting, though he is not involved in the incident.

The 1986 illustrations, written and drawn by Frank Miller, were allegedly a key inspiration for the Batman movies. They supposedly helped to re-imagine the character away from his kiddie cartoon image and into a darker, more macabre incarnation. The point of the scene in Mr. Miller's *Batman: Dark Knight Triumphant* was to show just how far Gotham city had gone berserk since the Batman had retired.

Was one of the Aurora shooters (James Holmes) imitating this scene? In the comic book the shooter is portrayed as inspired by his disgust at the breakdown of American society: its pornography and inhuman rock music. [1]

In magic, the highest ritual imprinting of the Group Mind is accompanied by blood sacrifice. The bat has not traditionally been associated with goodness, but rather the opposite, from the bat of the "Dracula" mythos, to the masonic bat caves of New Mexico and the Bat Towers of Florida and Texas. But in America, where heads-is-tails and sinners are saints, the sinister bat image has been reversed and transformed into a crime fighter.

A depraved pattern of media corruption was repeated a mere several hours after the Colorado massacre. Like with Lee Harvard Oswald and David Berkowitz, when the investigation should have begun in earnest the *Washington Post* (online July

---

[1] As of this writing the illustrations can be viewed at: washingtonexaminer.com/was-the-batman-movie-shooting-imitated-from-scene-in-1986-comic

20, 6:47 p.m.) closed the case by issuing the infamous, omniscient lone-nut declaration:

"The only near-certainty is that the gunman (James Holmes) acted alone and not as part of a terrorist group or other conspiracy."

The *Post* knew this with "near-certainty" and publicized it a little over eighteen hours after the crime had been committed.

It sure is a relief to have clairvoyant, credentialed Establishment sources of information serving the people's right to know and protecting us from the "recurring paranoia" of "discredited conspiracy theories" which, thank goodness, ever-vigilant Twitter, Facebook and YouTube have the good sense to ban.

As with Oswald, a similarly ludicrous, all-knowing declaration was issued by the establishment media in 1977 in the immediate aftermath of the apprehension of "troubled loner" David Berkowitz as New York City's one and only "Son of Sam" shooter—brazen mendacity which the hierarchy of the NYPD buttressed.

As we have detailed, years later this frozen "certainty" was thawed when it was decided it was Revelation of the Method time.

Reports by eyewitnesses of an accomplice of Holmes who was seen inside the Aurora theatre is down the memory hole, replaced by the incontestable dogma that Holmes was another "disturbed loner." [2]

A name-game question: they caught Holmes. Where's Dr. Watson? Perhaps he's dating actress Katie *Holmes,* after she divorced Scientologist Tom Cruise. It was James Holmes who knocked Katie Holmes off the front page of the entertainment news in July.

According to Internet Movie Database (IMDB), Katie Holmes starred in the 2005 Batman film, "Batman Begins." Katie Holmes also has a JFK connection. IMDB reports that she portrayed Jacqueline Kennedy in "The Kennedys" television mini-series. The name Holmes, from Sherlock to James to Katie, has caught the attention of the establishment media in our "maddened land."

---

[2] Batman movie star Gary Oldman portrayed "lone nut" Lee Harvey Oswald in Oliver Stone's "JFK." In "The Dark Knight Rises" he portrays Gotham's Police Commissioner, James Gordon.

“Names have always been the subject of magical thinking – the ancient Romans buried lead tablets invoking the names of spirits, gods or the dead in order to curse their enemies, so perhaps it shouldn’t be too surprising that many people think uttering the name ‘James Holmes,’ like an unguarded mention of the name “Voldemort” in J.K. Rowling's *Harry Potter* series, will cause bad things to happen...

“The curse invoked by Holmes’ name, according to some, will take the form of other mass shootings. Indiscriminate killers seem to crave fame and notoriety; take those away, the theory goes, and there will be no reason for troubled loners of the future to strap on weapons and shoot up the local post office/mall/campus/movie theater.” [3]

The establishment media were having quite a struggle deciding how to refer to James Holmes in the wake of his massacre. They didn’t know whether to imprint him as “the Dark Knight shooter” or “the Joker” (a name which Holmes, a PhD. candidate in neurology, the science of the mind, supposedly called himself according to police at the scene of his crime).

Perhaps they intended to alternate between the two. The description “the Batman shooter” was out for some reason.

Who makes these editorial choices, and why? Are these assigned monikers mundane, or coincidental preferences on the part of a group of copy editors around the nation who are somehow unanimously united into one one mind? Or are people, places and events sometimes deliberately named for special effect, by media executives?

For example, how did “same sex marriage” become a ubiquitous description of homosexual nuptials, and then morph almost overnight in the national media into “marriage equality”? Will the drive for legalizing the marriage of incestuous couples be granted the dignity of the term “marriage equality”? Who among our Overlords decides to confer a name or a phrase and turn it into a nationally mandated expression?

In the nineteenth century, German philosopher Friedrich Nietzsche, among others, termed Alchemy the “gay science.” How did homosexuality come to be termed “gay” and the name universally assigned?

---

[3] *Los Angeles Times,* July 26, 2012.

The name-game is played for high stakes in the battle for Orwell's Newspeak. On September 14, 2020 the Associated Press "Style Book" which is referenced and usually heeded by media executives throughout the English-speaking world, damned the word "transvestite": "Use the term cross-dresser instead of the outdated term transvestite for someone who wears clothing associated with a different gender, and only when the subject identifies as such."

Damn a word as being "outdated," which is not the same as inaccurate, and then consign the forbidden word to oblivion. When modernity replaces accuracy as the criterion for the use of a word which signifies a thought, then as George Orwell warned in the appendix to *1984,* that thought itself gradually becomes impossible to think.

The movie "The Dark Knight Rises" does not contain any blatant Cryptocracy symbolism (at least to these eyes), save for the Batman himself — he is of course the physical image of darkness. At the end of the movie a statue of Bruce Wayne/ Batman is unveiled, which conveys this darkness, although supposedly signifying formidable power on behalf of what is good, along with selfless dedication.

What the film does exhibit is a number of initiatory, reality-is-not-what it-seems reversals: prisoners who set up their own rendition by the CIA; Catwoman's use of a fugitive's cell phone to launch a police SWAT team assault; the assumed identity of the child who climbed out of the prison turns out to be another person entirely.

Children are no longer suckled

The word *wayne* is a derivative of the Old English word *wean*: "To cease to be suckled; to accustom a child to the loss of its mother's milk." Bruce Wayne, the man of light, wears the disguise of a man of darkness whose familiar is the bat. *Wayne* has other gender-bending and twilight language connotations.

The 39th Degree of Heartbreak in the Heartland

The 39th degree of the Mizraim (Egyptian) rite of Freemasonry is called Knight of the Red Eagle. Colorado denotes the color red. Aurora denotes dawn. Hence, Aurora, Colorado signifies "Red Dawn."

In 1999, nineteen miles southwest of Aurora, during the orgy of bombing violence which the U.S. and NATO inflicted on the civilian population of Serbia and its ancient Christian centers of learning and worship, thirteen people were massacred at Columbine High School.

Those two Colorado massacres, in Aurora and Columbine, occurred on what is known as "the heart line" — the 39th degree of north parallel latitude—which runs through America's heartland.

Denver International Airport, known for its strange architecture and arcane symbolism, is also situated on the 39th degree. Of all the macabre iconography at that airport, the most intriguing was a large, 70-ton, 26-foot statue of Anubis, the Egyptian jackal-headed god, a personification of the star Sirius, in the constellation *Canis major*. The dog star was at the theological center of the state religion of ancient Egypt. According to the Babylonian Talmud, "Ten measures of magic came into the world. Egypt received nine of them, the rest of the world only one" (BT Kiddushin 49b).

With Aurora's location on the 39th degree line in mind we read in Jim Brandon's [4] *Weird America* (Dutton, 1978): "*The Sirius Mystery*...explores the role of the star Sirius in the mystical and religious affairs of the earliest civilizations of the Mideast and Mediterranean. In his fifth chapter, on the geodetic locations of the various oracle shrines of the ancient world, Temple points out that these places were arranged along *nine* bands of latitude..." (from the 31st to the 39th).

Dodona, one of the "oracle shrines" in Greece, dating from the Mycenaean era (1900 B.C.), is, like Aurora Colorado, on the 39th degree line of north parallel latitude. Dodona was first dedicated to the goddess Isis. Jason, while searching for the golden fleece, sailed in the "Argo," and in *The Argonautica*, Apollonius of Rhodes writes that the Argo possessed the gift of prophecy because it contained an oak timber from Isis's shrine at Dodona. Isis and Sirius are linked. Anubis is the guard dog of Isis and the personification of Sirius.

The Batman theatre shootings occurred during what is known as the "Dog Days" of summer, associated with the "heliacal" (i.e. rising at dawn) of the star Sirius, a sacred date on the ancient Pharaonic calendar: "...the star most important to the Egyptians was Sirius, or Sothis, as the Greeks rendered its Egyptian name, and its heliacal rising was taken as the first day of the proto-dynastic era's lunar calendar..." [5]

---

[4] Pen name of William N. Grimstad.

The slayings in Aurora occurred while America's heartland, bisected by the 39th degree, was being parched and scorched in a Dog Days' drought. "In ancient Greece the heliacal rising of Sirius coincided with the intense midsummer heat...hence its classical Greek name, *Seirios*, meaning 'glowing one' or 'the scorcher.' Its heat-laden fierceness was considered an aspect of the star's malign influence." [6]

"Throughout Latin literature there are many references to 'the Dog Days' which followed the heliacal rising of Sirius in the summer. These hot, parched days were thought at that time to derive some of their ferocity and dryness from the 'searing' of Sirius. Traditions arose of Sirius being 'red' because it was in fact red at its heliacal rising, just as any other body at the horizon is red. When making rhetorical allusions to the Dog Days, the Latins would often speak of Sirius being red at the time, which it was." [7]

Heliacal rising of Sirius = Red Dawn. The symbolic connection of Anubis, which stood like a beacon at the Denver Airport, to Sirius, is not easy to miss. Robert K.G. Temple: "The heliacal rising was the occasion when Sirius again rose into visibility in the sky after a period of seventy days of being out of sight, during which time it was conceived as being in the *Duat*, or underworld. A further connection with Anubis comes in here, as Anubis was conceived of as embalming Sothis for these seventy days in the *Duat*. An embalmed mummy is supposed to come alive again. And this is what happened to the mummy of Sothis. Sothis (Sirius) is reborn on the occasion of her heliacal rising."

The Egyptians and all subsequent Hermetic systems constructed their elaborate and obsessive religio-astronomic observances around Sirius. The importance of Sirius to the global pagan psychodrama beggars description. By psychodrama we are referring to the process wherein a cultural mnemonic consisting of archetypes, subliminals, synchronicity and memes are attracted by a type of scientific sorcery pioneered by Anton Mesmer.

---

[5] Richard A. Parker, *The Calendars of Ancient Egypt* (University of Chicago Press).

[6] Reitha Pattison, "J.H. Prynne's 'The Corn Burned by Syrius" (sic), *Glossator 2*, p. 92.

[7] Robert K.G. Temple, *The Sirius Mystery* (1977).

In the case of neuroscience PhD. candidate James Holmes we have a scientist of the mind who simultaneously was the "peak soldier" who supposedly perpetrated this bloody invocation, which is presented to the public through a media filter of mental illness, gun control and Second Amendment controversies. The theurgic character of the rite is overlooked and suppressed when it emanates from independent scholars and researchers. The exception is in the realm of "pattern-detection" and "profiling," concepts which have entered American culture in connection with television and cinema centered around U.S. intelligence data-mining, and the FBI. Profiling as presented to the public is usually limited to a psychological analysis, even though profiling has a great deal to do with "predictive programming," which is essentially a literary phenomenon (cf. *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare*, p. 205).

Pattern detection, to be most effective, must take note of highly charged symbolism, which for millennia have been the province of sorcery of the kind at work in Pharaonic Egypt. Pattern detection ought to discern tales freighted with intentional significance. Aurora is one such narrative in the mesmeric "magnetism" and "charm" tradition of the old masonic Rite of Memphis and Mizraim.

Not to put too fine a point on it, but *if* the erection of the statue of the Egyptian god "*An*-ubis" at the Denver airport, on the 39th degree of latitude, which it shares with the Dodona oracle and the Columbine and Aurora massacre sites, has significance to the enchantment under consideration, then it behooves us to inquire into what evil directs the adepts we are investigating. Kenneth Grant, a leader of the Ordo Templi Orientis (OTO), states in *The Magical Revival*:

"In the Arcane Tradition, the vast star, Sirius, symbolizes the sun behind the sun, i.e. the true father of our Universe. Sirius was the primordial star of all time, as the duplicator or renewer (of time cycles). He was known in Egypt as the Doubling One, therefore a Creator or reflector of the Image. Sirius, or Set, was the original 'headless one' — the light of the lower region (the South) who was known (in Egypt) as *An* (the dog), hence Set-an (Satan), Lord of the infernal regions, the place of heat, later interpreted in a moral sense as 'hell."

When the image of Anubis ("*An* the dog") was placed on the south side of one of our nation's largest airports, were "our" civic officials ceremonially paying homage to Satan?

Or was this merely *coincidental,* being largely a colorful stunt from the world of promotion and advertising?

In response to that familiar bromide, let us quote Police Commissioner Gordon (Gary Oldman) in the "Dark Knight Rises" movie, in theaters during the Dog Days of 2012:

"You're a detective now. For you there are no more coincidences."

In the first century A.D., the Roman Marcus Manilius crafted *Astronomica,* a poetic catalogue of the stars. Manilius wrote the following verse associating Sirius with "opposite extremes":

Next barks the Dog, and from his Nature flow
The Most afflicting Powers that rule below,
Heat burns his Rise, Frost chills his setting Beams,
And vex the World with opposite Extremes.
He keeps his Course, nor from the Sun retreats,
Now bringing Frost, and now increasing Heats:
Those that from Taurus view this rising Star,
Guess thence the following state of Peace and War,
Health, Plagues, a fruitful or barren Year.
He makes shrill Trumpets sound...

Alexander Pope shall have the last word in this Sirius matter:

The dog-star rages! nay 'tis past a doubt,
All Bedlam, or Parnassus, is let out:
Fire in each eye, and papers in each hand,
They rave, recite, and madden round the land.

The Aurora Shooter's Cryptocracy Connection

According to Kurt Nimmo of Infowars.com, investigative journalist Wayne Madsen claims that James Holmes had a number of links to U.S. government-funded research centers, including the Defense Advance Research Projects Agency, (DARPA). Holmes was one of six recipients of a National Institutes of Health Neuroscience Training Grant at the University of Colorado's Anschutz Medical Campus in Denver, Madsen writes in the *Wayne Madsen Report*. "The Anschutz Medical Campus is on the recently de-commisioned site of the U.S. Army's Fitzsimons Army Medical Center and is named after Philip Anschutz, the billionaire Christian fundamentalist oil and railroad tycoon, who also owns the neo-conservative *Weekly Standard*," Madsen reported. "The Anschutz Medical Campus was built by a $91 million grant from the Anschutz Foundation."

Holmes also worked as a research assistant intern at the Salk Institute, at the University of California at San Diego in La Jolla. The Salk Institute partnered with DARPA, Columbia University, University of California at San Francisco, University of Wisconsin at Madison, Wake Forest University, and the candy bar company Mars, "to prevent fatigue in combat troops through the enhanced use of epicatechina, a blood flow-increasing and blood vessel-dilating anti-oxidant flavanol found in cocoa and, particularly, in dark chocolate," according to Madsen's research.

The DARPA program was part of the military's "Peak Soldier Performance Program," which involved engineering brain-machine interfaces for battlefield use and other bionic projects. In addition, James Holmes' father, Dr. Robert Holmes, allegedly worked for San Diego-based HNC Software, Inc., a company reputed to be allied with DARPA in developing "cortronic neural networks" that enable machines to translate aural and visual stimuli and simulate human thinking.

DARPA was the government agency that developed the supposedly now defunct, "Total Information Awareness" (TIA) program. But according to James Bamford in a report in *Wired*, "Inside the Matrix," (April, 2012), the TIA has been secretly revived by the National Security Agency (NSA) and is based at its vast, newly constructed "Utah Data Center," near Bluffdale, Utah, in what Bamford calls, "the heart of Mormon country."

TIA was originally developed by Reagan's Iran-Contra co-conspirator, Admiral John Poindexter (whose 26-year-old grandson Zach killed the admiral's 51-year-old son, Navy Captain Alan Poindexter, in a bizarre accident off Pensacola Beach, July 1, 2012).

Using the Batman shootings as another stepping stone to a police state, the *Wall Street Journal,* in a July 25, 2012 editorial, suggested that the government should revive the TIA program: "Aside from privacy considerations, is there anything in principle to stop government computers...from algorithmically detecting the patterns of a mass shooting in the planning stages?"

Just five days after the massacre and the media were not interested in investigating the shootings and the questions surrounding it. They preferred to insinuate that the shooter was a crazed kook without accomplices. DARPA's revived TIA was put forth as the American people's defense against mass-shooters like James Holmes, without mentioning that Holmes and his father allegedly had ties to DARPA. Can a kingdom divided against itself stand? Can DARPA cast out DARPA?

A week after the Batman theatre attack in Aurora, on July 27 (the Judean holy day of *Tisha B'av)*, ceremonies for the Olympic Games commenced in London, England with the theme, "Isles of Wonder." One of the ceremonies included a speech by Prospero's slave, Caliban, from Shakespeare's *The Tempest,* wherein Shakespeare offers a sympathetic portrayal of John Dee, thinly disguised as Prospero and set on an enchanted island. The ceremony included video of the modern 007 (actor Daniel Craig who portrays 007 James Bond on screen), escorting a grim-faced Queen Elizabeth II to the Olympic ceremony. One might deduce from this symbolism that Dr. Dee was the intended guiding spirit of the London Olympics.

As readers are aware by now, mathematician John Dee, Elizabeth I's astrologer referred to himself as 007. Elizabeth II's son, Prince Charles, has written about this original 007 and his code-number nickname:

"(Marsilio) Ficino's highly influential book, *Platonic Theology*, found its way to England shortly after it was published and eventually, some 90 years later, into one of the most important libraries in Elizabethan London, owned by Dr. John Dee, Queen Elizabeth I's astrologer...

"He coined the term 'British Empire' as part of his vision of creating a world-wide religion that emphasized the unity of all things, and was a close adviser to the queen. Intriguingly, he may have been a spy for Elizabeth when he traveled to Poland and Prague.

"I am told that when he wrote to her from such places he signed his letters with a curious combination of symbols: two zeros, sometimes connected by a bridge, implying he was her 'eyes,' followed by an elongated 7, which happens to be the alchemical symbol for Mercury. As Mercury was the messenger of the gods, the implication is rather clear. Dee was the Queen's secret and mercurial messenger." [8]

As we elucidate in *The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome,* Rev. Fr. Ficinio was one of the Vatican's prime Neoplatonic occult agents and initiates, and here we observe the belt of transmission between Renaissance papalism and its rival, the arch-Protestant regime of Elizabeth I.

Moreover, the credibility of the sales pitch of Prince Charles regarding Dee's new spin on catholic (universal) religion (the *prisca theologia*), emphasizing the alleged origin of *all* religions in a harmonious ancient "wisdom tradition," is undermined by the impolitic fact that the Pirate Queen Elizabeth was the first English monarch to put the African slave trade on a firm footing, with the assistance of her swarm of skilled buccaneers.

Was Advance knowledge of the Aurora and Sandy Hook shootings embedded in a major Hollywood movie?

We're interested in the possibility of deliberately planted theatrical numerology and twilight language symbolism which may perhaps point to the possibility of the scripted nature of serial killings and ritual murders.

"Batman: The Dark Knight Rises" references "Sandy Hook" *prior* to that school massacre in Newton, Connecticut. It can be glimpsed at approximately one hour, 58 minutes into the movie. It appears as tiny penciled words on a map which a police official is using to select his target.

---

[8] HRH The Prince of Wales, with Tony Juniper and Ian Skelly, *Harmony* (HarperCollins 2010), p. 132.

Furthermore, in the same film the word "Aurora" is prominently displayed in a scene of a skyscraper ablaze with that lighted word, against a backdrop of darkness.

Necromancy in Parkland

Parkland in the context of President Kennedy's murder (he died at Parkland hospital) and this mass murder on Valentine's Day, February 14, 2018 suggests Twilight Language, when taken together with the infamous 1929 "Saint Valentine's Day Massacre" from the annals of gangland.

The origins of Valentine's Day are not happy if the fate of its namesake, Saint Valentinus, is any guide: "According to the official biography of the Diocese of Terni, Bishop Valentine was born and lived in Interamna and while on a temporary stay in Rome he was imprisoned, tortured, and martyred there on February 14, A.D. 269."

In 2018 February 14 was also the 73rd anniversary of the Allied massacre in Dresden, where Americans assisted the British in slaughtering at least 100,000 German civilians. Then there is the abortion holocaust to which the media are oblivious. They cherish abolitionist John Brown for declaring in 1859 that our nation had to be purged with blood for slavery: "I, John Brown, am now quite certain that the crimes of this guilty land can never be purged away but with blood." (December 2, 1859).

But the System will not countenance the possibility that America is being purged for its mass murder of the most helpless and dehumanized in our society—unborn children. We are *certainly not* suggesting that the innocent souls massacred in Florida deserved to die, or anything approaching such a reprehensible equivalence. If Nikolas Cruz was indeed the perpetrator he seems to have been demon-possessed, or at the least, a *pharmakos* (drugged, enslaved) individual, one of many resident in the haunted house that is the United States of America.

Whether at Parkland in Florida or the "Route 91 Harvest" shootings in Las Vegas, we are being forced into attendance upon a ceremonial *Dia de Muertos* on a national scale, like the Aztec and Egyptian people of old. In the words of H.P. Lovecraft "*...behind it all I saw the ineffable malignity of primordial necromancy.*"

The Cryptocracy has seeded the "crisis actor" meme (the claim that shootings are staged and victims non-existent) among activists otherwise rightly skeptical of the official government and media narratives. This "crisis actor" allegation however, is automatically assigned to nearly every mass shooting in the U.S. by dupes and irresponsible conspiracy theorists. When confronted with a lawsuit, conspiracy talk show host Alex Jones recanted his claims of staged shootings in the Sandy Hook Elementary School massacre in Connecticut in 2012.

There is no doubt in our mind that the Parkland, Florida slaughter was real and that those who designate the victims, or all the witnesses, as "crisis actors," are doing the Cryptocracy a favor by bringing discredit on investigations that are independent of the government's mouthpiece media.

Chuck Baldwin's Analysis

Dr. Chuck Baldwin (chuckbaldwinlive.com), director of Kalispell, Montana's Liberty Fellowship, is one of the independent investigators, and the Parkland conspiracy he posits is evidence-based and reasonable. Pastor Baldwin makes the following points in his essay, "Florida School Massacre Proves Police Are Worthless In Protecting Us." He writes:

"...courts have consistently ruled that it is not the responsibility of a police officer to protect the citizen. It is the responsibility of the citizen to protect himself. The job of the police officer is to gather evidence, apprehend the suspected criminal, and bring him to a court of law for a fair trial where they are presumed innocent until proven guilty.

"All of this talk about cops protecting us is a myth—a fabrication and misrepresentation. Almost every lawyer and judge in the country knows it. The only ones who don't know it are most of the American people. So, think about it: under our Constitution and laws, police officers have no obligation to protect the American citizenry. But at the same time, our politicians, news media, and most public school administrators and police chiefs insist that the American citizens should not be allowed to protect themselves. If this isn't madness, there is no such thing."

Dr. Baldwin cites anomalies in the Parkland shooting: "Did you watch the eyewitness testimony of the teacher who saw the shooter from a distance of only twenty feet?

"Stacey Lippel, a language arts teacher at Marjory Stoneman Douglas High School where the killings occurred, said at first

she thought the shooter was a police officer because of the way he was dressed 'in 'full metal garb' complete with helmet, face mask and bulletproof armor. 'I'm staring at him thinking, Why is the police(man) here? This is strange,' she said. 'And I'm just looking at him, but I'm still getting the kids (to safety), knowing this is an emergency.' The teacher also said that the shooter was carrying a type of rifle that she had 'never seen before.'

"Ms. Lippel's eyewitness testimony contradicts the official story that the 19-year-old shooter was wearing street clothes and a backpack and carrying a black duffel bag containing extra ammunition, which he discarded when he casually walked out of the school with the other students, and was later arrested in a nearby residential neighborhood. (I have not seen reports stating exactly where authorities found the discarded rifle, backpack, and duffel bag.)

"If this teacher saw Nikolas Cruz, the 19-year-old kid (who we are told was the sole shooter), could he really have carried all of that armored police gear to the school (remember he was supposedly driven to the school by an Uber driver), quickly put on all of the gear (no easy task unless one is very familiar and practiced with this kind of equipment), go through the school, shooting everyone in sight, then take off the body armor and tactical gear without being seen, and casually walk out of the school with the other students, without being recognized, blending with them and raising no suspicion by police officers as he walked away from the scene?

"Apparently, that is what we are expected to believe. What happened to all of the armor the shooter was wearing? Not a word has been said about it. The more plausible explanation is that Ms. Lippel saw a second shooter—someone professionally trained and equipped with sophisticated military and police tactical gear. Furthermore, it's difficult to believe that the teacher wouldn't know what an AR-15 rifle would look like. But military units carry a plethora of combat weapons that most civilians have never laid eyes on. That's a whole different subject, isn't it?

"It is more than curious that according to students and teachers at the school: 1. *the U.S. Secret Service conducted drills (plural) at the school, and 2. teachers and students had been told by police that they would be conducting active shooter drills at the school that very week and that they would be firing blanks during the exercises (many students and faculty* *members thought police had begun the drill when they heard the shots ring out);* and 3. according to one student's testimony, she actually walked out of the building with the alleged shooter Nikolas Cruz. Obviously, Cruz was not wearing police armor. The girl said *she heard shots coming from another part of the school at the same time that she was walking out with Cruz* and is certain there had to have been a second shooter.

"Another troubling question: since when does the Secret Service conduct drills at public schools in different states? What a coincidence that police had told the school to expect an active shooter drill at about the same time as the actual homicidal live shooting took place. I don't believe in coincidences when it comes to mass shootings. Isn't it convenient that the government is razing the entire Parkland school building—just like in Waco, the Twin Towers and the Murrah building in Oklahoma City etc.?[1] Destroy the building (crime scene) and you destroy the evidence, which is a crime" (end quote from Dr. Chuck Baldwin).

Banning "assault" guns has little or nothing to do with actually preventing mass murder sprees in America. The eighth-deadliest shooting in the U.S. was perpetrated by Charles Whitman at the University of Texas in 1966, killing 17 and wounding 31. Whitman used basic hunting rifles in the course of his massacre. He would have killed more people, but armed Texas civilians repeatedly shot back at him, pinning him down. Soon after the Parkland school massacre, a man shot and killed himself outside the White House in our nation's capitol. There would seem to be a connection between increasing homicidal psychosis among the American people and mass murders like Parkland which transmit a subtle, anxiety-producing hint of a conspiratorial role by a higher power.

---

[1] As of this writing (2021), the school building was closed but remained standing.

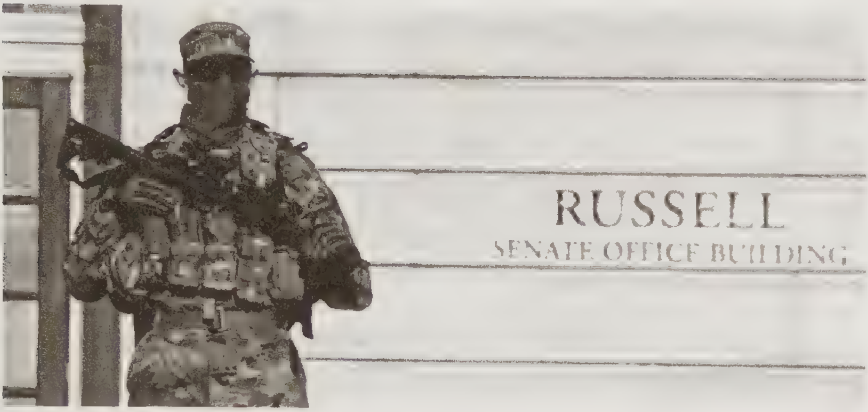

A guard with an "assault rifle" protects U.S. senators. Washington, D.C., March, 2021

The corporate media suppress the common sense fact that disarming the American people makes us more vulnerable to the psychotics our society produces and the killers "our" government itself dispatches.

As noted, dehumanizing violence to human beings inside the womb (60 million aborted children in the U.S. since Roe v. Wade), breeds similar violence outside of it, a reality the virtue-signalers will not acknowledge.

Furthermore, when politicians and the media call for a radical reduction of gun ownership in America, they're not referring to the guns they possess by special permit or hidden loopholes in the law; or the heavily armed guards that ringed Congress in early 2021, or the armed security people who shield Biden, Bill and Hillary and more billionaires than we can name. Deep State bureaucrats have a mandate to disarm Americans, while plutocrats, politicians, and lawyers with status or connections continue to have access to high powered weapons or elite guards licensed to carry them.

Gun control is a euphemism for disarming the common people, not the Overlords and the "connected." Their lives are viewed by the Cryptocracy as being worth more than ours. These would-be godlings of the ruling class will always be protected by gunmen who possess automatic or semi-automatic firearms, or even more advanced, exotic weaponry unknown to the public. *There is no gun control for the Overlords*. Their privileged position will not be altered when a "ban on assault rifles" specifically, or strict limits on firearms generally, are enacted in the name of "gun control."

Hoodwinked "progressives" don't know or don't wish to entertain the fact that so-called gun control is poor people control. In these schemes, the elite (or their guards) remain heavily armed, while the peasants are disarmed on the faulty supposition that rendering them nearly helpless renders madmen and criminals harmless. It's Plato's dual law system: one law for the putative higher-souled human beings and another for those designated as lower-souled.

Texas Church Shooting: Congregant Fires Back, Stopping a Murderer

December 29, 2019—Jack Wilson, 71, of rural Hood County Texas, a member of the West Freeway Church of Christ in White Settlement, shot and killed Keith Kinnunen after Kinnunen opened fire on the congregation, murdering two Christians, Rich White, 67, of Westworth Village, and Tony Wallace, 64, of Fort Worth.

"The events at West Freeway Church of Christ put me in a position that I would hope no one would have to be in, but evil exists and I had to take out an active shooter in church," Mr. Wilson said.

Accompanied by gun-carrying bodyguards, billionaire Michael Bloomberg addressed the shooting at West Freeway Church of Christ during a speech in Montgomery, Alabama on New Year's Day, 2020:

"It may be true that someone in the congregation had his own gun and killed the person who murdered two other people, but it's the job of law enforcement to have guns and to decide when to shoot,' the former New York mayor said, adding, "You just do not want the average citizen carrying a gun in a crowded place."

Jack Wilson replied, "Mr. Bloomberg—had we operated by his standards or his wishes, the carnage would have been significantly greater....If Mr. Bloomberg would have his security detail turn their arms in and not guard him, he would be in the same situation as many American citizens are every day."

Manifestations of End-Time Burnout in the Alchemical Theater of Thanatos

In the wake of the mosque attack in March, 2019 in New Zealand by the "Knight Templar" Benton Tarrant, and in Poway, California in April, 2019 on a synagogue by adolescent John T. Earnest, we were asked why we didn't analyze them and accord them the investigative rigor that we have undertaken in other mass murders. The reason we did not is because of the transparency of these shootings. We seldom point out the obvious. Tarrant and Earnest were *patently* tools of the Cryptocracy.

The ISIS terrorists who massacred 321 mostly Christian Sri Lankans and wounded another 500 on Easter Sunday, 2019 are also under the direction of the Deep State, via what was Donald Trump's favored nation of Saudi Arabia. The theology of the ISIS mass murderers happens to be Salafist Wahhabism, the state religion of Saudi Arabia. The Saudis are Israeli allies. With that laurel there was no evil they perpetrated that would register in the Trump White House.

The U.S. Government Nurtures Enemies and then Organizes the American People to Fight Them

In May, 2015 Judicial Watch procured by means of a federal lawsuit, formerly classified official U.S. intelligence related to Syria. One of these documents, from President Obama's Defense Intelligence Agency dated August 12, 2012, "anticipates the rise of Islamic State" and "seems to suggest it would be a desirable development from the point of view" of those in the U.S. government "seeking regime change in Damascus."

In section 8c the Defense Intelligence Agency document looks forward to establishing in Syria a "principality" of the Islamic terror state of ISIS: "If the situation (in Syria) unravels there is the possibility of establishing a declared or undeclared Salafist principality in eastern Syria (Hasaka and DerZor) and this is exactly what the supporting powers to the opposition want, in order to isolate the Syrian regime."

Notice that in this document, which the government fought to avoid disclosing, American intelligence sounds no alarm about ISIS gaining a caliphate ("principality") in Syria. Observe too that it does not report that the Salafists (ISIS) will establish this principality, only that it's possible that it will be established. By whom? By the "supporting powers to the opposition" to Syrian President Bashir Assad. In other words, American "allies" Saudi Arabia and the United Arab Emirates, those two Sunni Salafist monarchies.

The United States government under Obama viewed ISIS and the al Qaeda proxy Jabhat al-Nusra, as useful auxiliaries in the drive for regime change in Syria, eliminating Israeli nemesis Assad, the protector of Syria's minority Christian community. *The U.S. viewed an ISIS takeover of northeastern Syria as a positive development.* The only nation that foiled the U.S. plan for the overthrow of the Christian-protecting Muslim leader by al-Qaeda and Islamic State terrorists was Putin's Russia, denounced ever since as the shameful and dastardly oppressor of Syria. This is as upside-down as Senator Bernie Sanders demanding the government keep its abortion laws off a woman's body, while at the same time asserting that the government has the absolute right to inject that body with a vaccination serum. The British elevated the House of Saud and its Wahhabbist theology to power on the Arabian peninsula. The United States has been the Saudis' chief enabler since World War II.

Daniel Lazare reports on the U.S. government's role in creating modern jihadism:

"Kosovo, where the United States joined forces with Saudi-backed jihadis in support of the secessionist movement of Hashim Thaçi; Chechnya, where leading neocons such as Richard Perle, Elliott Abrams, Kenneth Adelman, Midge Decter, Frank Gaffney, Michael Ledeen, and R. James Woolsey championed Saudi-backed Islamist rebels...the United States pronounces itself—*shocked!*—at the results, while pocketing the winnings. This is evident from a famous 1998 interview with Zbigniew Brzezinski, who, as Jimmy Carter's national security adviser, did as much as anyone to invent the modern phenomenon of Islamic jihad. Asked if he had any regrets, Brzezinski was unabashed:

"Regret what? That secret operation was an excellent idea. It had the effect of drawing the Russians into the Afghan trap, and you want me to regret it? The day that the Soviets officially crossed the border, I wrote to President Carter: We now have the opportunity of giving to the USSR its Vietnam war….What is most important to the history of the world? The Taliban or the collapse of the Soviet empire? Some stirred-up Muslims or the liberation of Central Europe and the end of the Cold War?' Or, as Graham Fuller, former deputy director of the CIA's National Council on Intelligence and later a RAND Corporation analyst, put it a year later: The policy of guiding the evolution of Islam and of helping them against our adversaries worked marvelously well in Afghanistan against the Red Army. The same doctrines can still be used to destabilize what remains of Russian power..." (end quote from Brzezinski). Lazare continues:

"...the need to prosecute the so-called 'War on Terror,' was never about terrorism per se, but about terrorism unsanctioned by the United States. The goal was to arrange for jihadis only to strike at targets jointly approved by Washington and Riyadh (the capital of Saudi Arabia)...Eastern Syria...became part of the Caliphate declared by ISIS—the recipient of 'clandestine financial and logistic support' from both Saudi Arabia and Qatar, according to no less an authority than Hillary Clinton—in June 2014.

"...As part of its alliance with the Saudis, the United States encouraged the growth not only of jihad but of Wahhabism in general...how could Washington object when the kingdom vastly expanded its missionary effort in 1979, spending anywhere from $75 billion to $100 billion to spread the word? King Fahd, who ruled from 1982 to 2005, bragged about all the religious and educational facilities he built in non-Muslim lands—200 Islamic colleges, 210 Islamic centers, 1,500 mosques, 2,000 schools for Muslim children, etc." [1]

These "King Fahd Centers" produce the suicide bombers who plague the world and target enemies of the Israelis such as the Christian communities of the Third World (Syria, Egypt, Sri Lanka), as well as Shiites in Lebanon, Pakistan and of course, Iran.

Benton Tarrant's profile as a Manchurian Candidate is a common one on the "racist Right"

The same profile of Earnest, the 19-year-old synagogue shooter in California in April, 2019 was exhibited by some of the "white nationalist" marchers in Charlottesville in August, 2017: single white men alienated from women, marriage and the family, who despise the Old Testament and very likely the New, and who identify either with Social Darwinist scientism, or certain memes of the western occult. Men fitting that profile are targets for recruitment by Deep State actors. The prototype is Anders Breivik, the Norwegian Freemason and partisan of Israeli Zionism who murdered dozens of his fellow Norwegians *while they were holding a convention devoted to protesting and highlighting Israeli war crimes in Palestine.* This context is often omitted. For example, Breivik has been transformed into a neo-Nazi by the *New York Times*. His crimes were indeed Nazi-like, but his ideology was masonic-Zionist.

After Tarrant struck in New Zealand, by way of providing background, the *Times* published a photo of Breivik giving the Nazi salute and described him as the inspiration for white racist terrorism around the globe. A photo of him attired in his masonic regalia was not published. *What kind* of *white racist terrorist murders only Nordic whites on behalf of the Israeli state*?

In the midst of these massacres, Acura automobiles were being marketed in American television commercials broadcast during the "March Madness" college basketball playoffs, using a soundtrack consisting of an excerpt from the famous rock-and-roll song, "Sympathy for the Devil." Acura chose the devil tune presumably to highlight the otherworldliness and devil-may-care attitude of its latest automobile, the RDX. In 2019 invoking Satan to endorse your SUV was a successful marketing strategy. It remains so.

---

[1] Daniel Lazare, "How The US-Saudi Marriage Gave Birth to Jihad," *Swarajya* magazine, Nov 6, 2017

The trend is not confined to any one pocket of the political spectrum. Evangelical Christians protest abortion but they have no problem with Israelis killing Palestinian children after they emerge from the womb. Alabama is in the "buckle of the Bible belt" and opposes abortion and rights for homosexuals. Yet it has one of the most God-forsaken prison-systems in the U.S.A., where rape is regarded (off-the-record) as one of the suitable punishments for writing a bad check or stealing a car. Upstate Idaho is one of the most heavily churched regions in the nation yet the legislature allows for unconscionable usury rates approaching 500% on loans.

In 2001 in *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare* we foresaw the ascendance of an American man and woman so heavily processed, neutered and psychologically enthralled that they would be equivalent to masonic initiates. Large swathes of white America are now, in masonic parlance, "on the level."

What is the purpose of pointing out the extent of occult symbolism and Twilight language in America, when in 2021 these things are in the open and utilized in television commercials for automobiles and insurance, without concealment? America consists of a population of virtual masonic initiates immersed in the occult. From 2001 to 2021 is a long time in the high speed zone. Much innocence has been lost, while much knowledge of the self-indicting and obligating kind, has been acquired. *Americans reside in a Twilight Zone daily existence where blatant occult cues and indoctrination are so profuse they're shrugged off as unremarkable.* Attempting to expose what is already in front of our eyes becomes an exercise in "camp" (failed seriousness). The futility serves a clown-like function within The Process itself.

We inhabit an open-air occult laboratory. Our children go to the movies and see witches ("Harry Potter") doing good deeds, and a demon ("Hellboy") accomplishing heroic feats of benevolence. At the opening Mass of the Synod on Youth in 2018, Pope Francis carried a staff in the form of a 'stang,' an object used in occult rituals.

The role of False Prophesies in Contributing to Mind Control and End-Time Burnout

One source of the current state of the process is to be found in relentless false prophesying of "The End."

The first significant End of the World falsehood in the U.S. was by William Miller in 1844. The second was mounted by the Jehovah's Witnesses organization, predicting throughout most of the 20th century that "Millions now living will never die," and "Confidence in the Creator's promise of a peaceful and secure new world before the generation that saw the events of 1914 passes away." What had been the central prophecy of the Jehovah's Witnesses for decades was quietly dropped in 1995 when the people alive in 1914 were increasingly dying off with each passing year. More recently we have witnessed:

- 1971: *The Population Bomb* sells more than two million copies and goes through twenty reprints. Prof. Paul Ehrlich's prediction: "The battle to feed all of humanity is over. And humanity has lost....Hundreds of millions of people will starve to death." In 1968, in the first edition of his book, Ehrlich predicted, "Unless humanity cuts down its numbers—*soon*—all of us will face mass starvation on a dying planet."

- The Chastisement: a prophecy circulated among Catholics of three days of darkness when half of humanity will perish.

- The Rapture (*Left Behind* according to Tim LaHaye).

- Comet Hale-Bopp apocalypse that was set for Spring, 1997.

- Gary North's Y2K end-of-civilization-as-we-know-it of 1999.

- Harold Camping's Armageddon prophecy for 2011.

- The Mayan apocalypse predicted for December, 2012.

- The Climate Apocalypse” forecast for 2031 according to Rep. Alexandria Ocasio-Cortez (D-NY), and seconded by Greta Thunberg. Ocasio-Cortez stated on January 22, 2019: “The world is going to end in twelve years if we don’t address climate change.”

There is something about the nuclear age and the prospect of “instant extinction” that has produced a madness that sets dates, promotes predictions and builds expectations which, when they are not fulfilled, slowly rot people in mind and spirit. After the prophecy fails, they become enervated and barely have energy to act for more than a limited period of time. While the false prophecy remains current they have a schedule and they expect that within the schedule which they impose on history, it will “All come to a shattering climax never before seen!” Anticipation of the arrival of this unprecedented event is their psychological motivation—not truth or God—but a spine-tingling, hair-raising thrill to end all thrills.

In addition to the spectacular, big-ticket false prophecies, there is a sustained monthly chatter concerning this or that hurtling asteroid, flood, mass murder or hurricane which will be a supposed definitive sign that, “The End is Near.” When people cry wolf and wolf tickets are sold, and the wolf doesn’t appear, what is the effect on the human mind? The “sky-is-falling” prophets seldom study this particular constituent factor from the laboratory of human conditioning, and how it is that their false prophesies contribute to mind control and occult hegemony.

Every jolt of the month is labeled an extraordinary, fraught-with-harrowing-significance, “seismic shock.” The insinuation is always that a massive upheaval is imminently careening toward us. Many of these lesser prophecies turn out to be not even close to the hyped expectations by which they were seeded; or they’re completely untrue.

When there is a surfeit of these false alarms, people attuned to gaining knowledge about criminal conspiracies learn nothing. Instead, they become numb, cynical and exhausted—exactly where the Cryptocracy wants them. Afterward they can't be roused when a genuine emergency arises. This is the service which some conspiracy theorists provide to the Cryptocracy.

Short-sighted persons fail to observe the cyclical nature of history. The Book of Revelation is not the completion of a linear history. It is an *intervention in the cycles of history and as such its ultimate fulfillment is outside of time.*

We who should take the lead in guiding the world, look around at its enormous challenges and shrink into a crippled, stunted claustrophobia, of which "The End Times" is one symptom of our shrunken souls. Yes, Judgment Day and the End are coming, perhaps tomorrow, or 500 years from now. A personal terminus is coming for all of us in the grave, and we never know when. Young, healthy people die every day. It could be any one of us. Should we succumb to nervous apprehension and despair in view of this fact of daily life?

Gauging the Extent of our Hypnotic State

The American people look around. They see a demon named Hellboy idolized on megaplex 3-D movie screens and they hear "Sympathy for the Devil" employed to sell new cars—and yet life goes on. The sky does not belch flames. We have our jobs, the pawns reason. The shopping malls are still open. We go out for pizza. The grass is still green. The world is still here. *Somebody lied to us.*

Guess who is apportioned the blame for the lie? *The dissidents who reveal the evil of the System, the corruption of the courts, the Money Power's occupation of the government*. In the Cryptocracy's human behavior laboratory we are tarred with the stigma of the false-prophet conspiracy theorists, even when we are not implicated.

The American *goyim* have a subconscious sense that, Satanic or not, for all its foibles and imperfections, the System in America will persevere and continue to deliver the wonders of technology and many aspects of "the good life."

We inhabit a *post*-"Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare" world. 2021 is aftermath. *What this writer presented at the 2001 gateway to the "Black Jack" century 21 seemed like high strangeness at the time. Now it is the "new normal."*

It is at this juncture that we might wish to pause and place these deeply troubling developments in accurate historical perspective. The linear view of history perceives these abominations as a progression of ever more extreme phenomenon, inevitably culminating in an apocalyptic climax from which there will be no return. The historian has a different viewpoint. He sees the Roman empire dissolving into unimaginable chaos and degeneracy, yet the decaying corpse fertilizes a rebirth of life and law, and the love of God.

Turning to medieval Europe we know the people experienced a "Black death" (bubonic plague) which eliminated fully one-third of the population, yet it was the survivors who constructed the edifices that to this day make our hearts soar, from the burned but still standing Notre Dame Cathedral in Paris, to York Minster in the north of England, and many more of these astonishing and ennobling wonders of architecture.

Furthermore, some of the assaults upon us in the 21st century are not necessarily on our subconscious twilight mind, but on common sense itself: blatant, in-your-face lunacy. What needs to be decoded? Everything is not occult. If it were, then nothing would be.

In "Sympathy for the Devil," Lucifer says, "I shouted out, 'Who Killed the Kennedys?'—when after all it was you and me." Observe the playbook: if everyone killed the president and his brother then no one did.

The Internet can be a force for good or evil. At present, for a majority, immersion in the Internet has unleashed the power of distraction. Information is *not* power. It is the ability to *detect fraud* that empowers us. People flit from theory to theory, from cause to cause and leader to leader; from web page to podcast to video, lingering for moments or hours and then jumping to the next mesmerizing web page or video. Their distraction has scattered and confused them. They are spectators more than doers, and have difficulty discerning worthy leaders and genuine facts from fools and deception.

While the scientific consensus is still unclear, it appears that "surfing the Internet" daily for hours on end interferes with the brain's ability to read deeply. The great books are not being studied and digested cover to cover, as they once were. People have been hoaxed into thinking that "Almost everything I want to know is online." Even if that were true, the act of consuming it online seems to hinder our brain's capacity for deep thought and analysis.

The bellwether is the eerie paralysis setting in. "The best lack all conviction while the worst are filled with passionate intensity." Many of the former have succumbed to comprising an audience whose *raison d'etre* is to "see what happens next." The corroding enchantment of the "Society of the Spectacle" is upon them.

Authentic Christians are at radical variance with the ways of the god of this world. Followers of the Jesus of the Bible are profoundly counter-cultural. For those believers Spectacular Society does not attract, it disenchants.

Listening to a reading of John Bunyan's *Pilgrim's Progress*, or reading the text, we comprehend the beauty and the splendor of navigating a parallel that is the inverse of the processed majority. We do this not out of a Pharisaic superiority. Penetrating the glamor of this system of things with the power of the disenchanting grace of Jesus Christ, is to see our own transgressions first, after which we perceive the operating engineer behind the shimmering curtain that is Oz in the 21st century.

The "Joker" [movie 2019]

Mental Illness and Misfortune in the U.S.A.

"Perhaps the bleakest assertion of 'Joker,' is the one that's hardest to disprove: that the ghastly world (the Joker) inhabits, and by extension ours, is the one we deserve." — John Wenzel

Early in 2019 we were asked to write an introduction to a new book examining occult symbolism in America. We declined. In our judgment the author was mistaking mundane phenomena for occult conspiracy. He didn't see that if everything is occult then nothing is. The inability to make the distinction is reflected in the reception that the 2019 "Joker" movie has received from some researchers who attempt to study the intersection of the arcane and the Cryptocracy in popular media.

These researchers, along with some celebrity movie critics, decided that Warner Brothers and Village Roadshow had created a sequel to Heath Ledger's unrelievedly evil Joker character in Christopher Nolan's 2008 film, "The Dark Knight." Without having seen the 2019 "Joker" movie, we initially presumed that it might be another recruiting piece for inspiring further mass murders. Heath Ledger's Joker character may have possibly inspired or contributed to a June 8, 2014 murder spree by 22-year-old LaFayette, Indiana native Amanda Miller and her 31-year-old husband, Jerad.

Jerad Miller had been known to dress as the Batman character, Joker. His wife would sometimes portray "Harley Quinn." While residing in Las Vegas, they shot to death two police officers and a good samaritan who attempted to stop them.

Jerad and Amanda entered iCiCi's Pizza on June 8, 2014, shouting, "This is the start of a revolution!" and then shot and killed Alyn Beck, 42, and Igor Soldo, 32, police officers who were having lunch. The killers stole the officers' ammunition and weapons and placed a swastika on one corpse and an American Revolutionary type of "Gadsden flag," depicting a snake and the words "Don't Tread on Me," on the other.

Jerad and Amanda Miller

Afterward, they headed to a Las Vegas-area Wal Mart where they waved their guns and spouted their trademark slogan, 'The revolution's begun!"

Joseph Robert Wilcox, 31, a Wal Mart customer, drew his concealed handgun in an attempt to disarm Jerad Miller, but was shot from behind by Amanda. Mr. Wilcox died at the scene.

Police arrived and engaged the couple in an exchange of gun fire. Both the Millers were hit and seriously wounded. Amanda shot her husband (accounts differ, with some reports saying he died of wounds inflicted by the police, rather than her). She allegedly shot herself in the head.

The media claimed investigators were looking into "possible links" between the killer couple and Right wing groups which had defended rancher Cliven Bundy's property in Nevada, in a tense confrontation that month with Federal agents. Some reports indicate that the Millers were present at the stand-off and were asked to leave by the Bundys, due to the intemperate rhetoric and violence they were espousing at the time, which reminded some of agent provocateurs or Manchurian candidates. The Millers' persona online was that of "militia patriots," but they behaved more like heavily programmed, or demon-possessed individuals.

At age 28 actor Heath Ledger died tragically of a drug overdose in the year of the release of "The Dark Knight."

The Joker character he portrayed is utterly merciless and relentlessly sadistic, someone who kills even his own comrades and partners. There is no rationale for his violence. It is purely demonic, the personification of what William Butler Yeats termed the "blood red tide" which drowns "the ceremony of innocence." [1]

Many of the actual mass shootings in America, whether inspired by Hollywood or not, have been in line with the Joker's violence in "The Dark Knight"—that of cold-blooded, anarchistic mega-atrocities against innocent persons, including school children, exhibiting a diabolically heinous disregard for human life.

The "Joker" movie of October, 2019 however, is something else altogether. It is disenchanting and anti-occult. The protagonist in "Joker" is Arthur Fleck, played by Joaquin Phoenix as a mentally disturbed man whose every benevolent act is misunderstood. He attempts to overcome his affliction, but the circumstances of his life and chosen occupation (clowning and standup comedy) conspire to obstruct his intentions.

There is no depiction of "random mass shooting" in this "Joker" movie. The only occasion when multiple people are shot is in a scene in which Arthur is brutally assaulted by three intoxicated executives in suits, on a subway train. The beating they administered was serious enough to paralyze or kill him, had it continued. It does not continue because Arthur saves his own life by drawing his revolver and shooting all of his attackers. Only because he is wearing clown makeup (as part of his employment), do the media (in the movie) exploit the incident and sensationalize the shooter as a clown-killer who murderes innocent bystanders.

---

[1] Another fictional character of that description in American pop culture is "Trevor Philips," a perverted, homicidal anti-hero in the "Grand Theft Auto" video game series. After 14-year-old Eldon Samuel shot and killed his father and 13-year-old autistic brother in Coeur d'Alene, Idaho in 2014, he informed police during his interrogation that "Trevor Philips" was his role mode. The media noted his statement and then dropped it without further investigation or editorial comment. Depraved video games which psychologically imprint impressionable players by simulating extreme violence and glorifying nihilism, are a multiple-billion dollar industry that seems to be invulnerable to censorship or moderation. The responsibility of these "games," along with prescription psychiatric medications, in contributing to a state of mind that leads to "senseless shooting massacres" is minimized by the corporate media.

Some mass shooters pen suspiciously eloquent "manifestos" somehow timed precisely for release online, either shortly before or during the execution of their crimes. Supposedly this was true of Patrick Crusius.

El Paso *Cielo*

That was alleged to be the case with the August 3, 2019 massacre at a Wal-Mart in El Paso, Texas. The alleged El Paso killer is supposed to have issued a well-crafted "racist manifesto" shortly before his anti-immigrant murder spree. We have not seen any extensive reporting on the fact that the supposed Mexican-detesting shooter, Patrick Crusius, was himself of Mexican descent on his mother's side.

Our colleague Tim contributes the following insights concerning the symbolism of the El Paso slaughter:

"If you take the address listed on the Internet for Patrick Crusius' mother's house and plug it into a driving distance calculator to the Cielo Vista mall (site of the murders) in El Paso, you get three different routes ranging from 657 miles to 668 miles—the Cryptocracy doesn't always need things to be exact. And, if you take the numbers reported in various news stories connecting the August 4 Dayton, Ohio shooting deaths of nine people, with the one in El Paso, we're told that, 'Dayton is roughly 1500 miles from El Paso...'

"Taking the number reported for the distance from Crusius' Allen, Texas residence to El Paso — 600 miles — and the 1500 miles from El Paso to Dayton, we get 2100. Crusius himself is 21 years old. Michael Hoffman has written about the 21st century as the 'gateway' to that great game of metaphysical 'Black Jack" and, as luck would have it, the alleged shooter in Dayton is one Connor Betts—are all bets off at this point?

"The name, 'El Paso' denotes 'The Passage.' If you look at a map for Cielo Vista mall, you'll see that it is bound by 'Gateway Boulevard.'

"Cielo' means 'heaven' or 'sky.' So, we have a 21 year old shooter of Hispanic descent that drives roughly 666 miles to 'The Passageway' to conduct a race war at the 'heaven' mall along the 'gateway' to...Dayton?

"Why Dayton? In Dayton the shooting that was perpetrated supposedly by Connor 'all Betts are off,' was near Ned Peppers[2] Bar, bounded by Gates Street on one side, by Pine on another side (pine box anyone?), and 5th Street in the back—does the law of fives strike a discord?

"Cielo Drive has connections to the fable of Charles Manson's Helter Skelter race war that supposedly was the motivation for his gang having killed Sharon Tate and others at 10050 Cielo Drive in the City of the Angels. August marked the 50 year anniversary of the crime. There is a movie theater at Cielo Vista Mall in El Paso. The movie playing there during the massacre was Quentin Tarantino's paean to the legend of the Manson murders ('Once Upon a Time in Hollywood'). What are the odds of that?

"A supposed white supremacist opens fire at the Cielo Vista in Texas to initiate a race war. Just down the way from his shootings, a movie is playing about 50-year-old ritual murders on Cielo Drive, which supposedly were intended to ignite a race war. One of the killers was named 'Tex." [3]

In the 2019 "Joker" film, lead character Arthur Fleck's only "manifesto" is his battered notebook filled with crossed-out, barely legible scrawls and sentence fragments which he reads aloud at a dive that's hosting an Open Mike night. It's as if the film-makers were mocking the media's cooperation with the "manifesto" aspect of the Cryptocracy's surreal accounts of real-life shooters.

---

[2] "Lucky Ned Pepper" was a killer outlaw character in the 2010 remake of the western movie, "True Grit."

[3] We have seen no compelling evidence that Charles Manson ordered the Tate or LaBianca killings. Tex Watson and Susan "Sadie" Atkins may have been the prime movers. Manson did not mount a defense at his trial, succumbing to a role as jester and scapegoat. He may however, have been guilty or at least complicit in the murders of ranch foreman Donald "Shorty" Shea and musician Gary Hinman. William N. Grimstad in his recorded "Sirius Rising" lectures, pondered a possible connection between the Apollo Moon Flight and the mysterious, symbol-laden "Manson" murders on Cielo Drive, which followed less than 3 weeks later. He entertained the possibility that the killings might have been some sort of ritual expiation for the "defilement" of Luna with the astronauts' boot tracks and rubbish, which if true, would perhaps imply that higher-ups orchestrated the ceremonial killings, beyond "Charlie, Sadie" or "Tex."

Eventually Arthur discovers a parlous act of disloyalty. He learns that in his past he was repeatedly brutalized with the connivance of his mother, who up to that point, he cherished and trusted implicitly, and who persuaded him of the veracity of her tale of his exalted patrimony, via his alleged true father, Gotham socialite Thomas Wayne. With the realization that his mother betrayed and lied to him, Arthur's psychological state deteriorates, along with what is left of his composure.

The handgun he wields was forced on him by a manipulative and sinister co-worker. In a key scene, he takes revenge on the co-worker while mercifully sparing the life of another with the statement, "You were the only one who was good to me."

If this had been a film in the "Dark Knight" Batman mold, Arthur would have committed a grotesquely depraved act and gone ahead and shot the person who had been good to him. The mercy he dispenses is a significant marker separating him from the character portrayed by the late Heath Ledger, as well real life gunmen who have made the news in remorseless massacres bearing distressing similarities to the unrelievedly evil Joker character as depicted in the "Dark Knight" movie.

"Murray Franklin," the Johnny Carson-type evening television host in the 2019 film, is portrayed by Robert De Niro. The Franklin character wears the mask of 1970s pop culture respectability, yet is exploiting Arthur for callous audience amusement, as Hop Frog was exploited in Edgar Allan Poe's retributive story of that name. Like Hop Frog, Arthur strikes back, and does so on national television. It is at this juncture that we see director Todd Phillips' "Joker" stepping outside the occult clown-shooter genre and holding a mirror up to our society, as Oliver Stone did in "Natural Born Killers," a film which depicted the corporate media as complicit in the violence of the feral pair of shooters at the center of the action.

Phoenix portrays Fleck (rhymes with Speck, as in Richard)—who will morph into "Joker" toward the end of the movie—as an emaciated, chain-smoking mental patient (eerily resembling in appearance the real life French poète maudit and theatre-of-cruelty theorist Antonin Artaud).

Arthur Fleck, in spite of his mental anguish, is attempting to recover his humanity in the midst of inhuman circumstances. There is little that is occult here. Fleck is someone Artaud might have termed, "The man suicided by society." This is not to negate anyone's responsibilities for their actions, or to grant a homicidal prerogative to the mentally ill. Life in the American big city "Gotham" of the 1970s, and more so today, was a dehumanizing and degrading experience for the poor and disadvantaged.

By the conclusion of the movie, a mob inspired by a degenerate urban youth culture that Fleck did not create, has made him a sardonic hero, "Joker."

In these scenes Joaquin Phoenix's character becomes markedly more youthful underneath a now well-tailored, suit-and-tie clown attire and expertly-applied makeup. Much of the agony in his now more youthful countenance has vanished.

The blood he has shed and the notoriety he has gained seems to strip away years of age and grief as he dances a choreography that celebrates his transformation from a troubled human struggling to do well and be understood, into a figure of almost superhuman agency and potency, having managed to "succeed" the American Way, by gaining entrance to society's demented pop culture celebrity circus, whose suit-and-tie clown grandees, like De Niro's Murray Franklin, are more malevolent than the Joker.

The movie ends with a vaguely unsettling Charlie Chaplinesque slaptick chase in the halls of a mental hospital — as if to say, it's all grist for the entertainment mill.

Production values are high. Cinematography, acting, sets and costumes are all accomplished and well staged. The soundtrack by Icelandic composer Hildur Guðnadóttir jabs the audience with a relentlessly propulsive gloom, transmitting a melancholy that is a sonic migraine for dead souls.

Unlike the second installment in Christopher Nolan's Batman movies, this 2019 Joker origin story, is not a movie that worsens our collective mental health, or immerses us in the shadowy Twilight Language of the Cryptocracy. Rather, it is a toxicology report on the effects of fermentation in the pernicious brine that is "life in the American cosmopolis."

It is art and has validity on that basis, without didactically messaging a remedy. It is a cinematic document about one rejected and scorned person from our nation's recent past, a kind of everyman who could be any one of us if we were so unlucky. It necessarily foreshadows our future, should America choose to continue on its grossly materialistic, fantastically cruel (mass abortionist), Christ-less path. [4]

To mistake this sobering reflection on the decayed state of our nation, with a cryptogram from the Deep State, would be a significant failure of perception, intuition and detection.

Satanic Pederast Sex Rings in Legend and Reality

One iconic scene in the 2019 “Joker” movie shows a troubled man transformed into the Joker character as he dances on a set of outdoor stairs, to a tune by British rock musician Paul Gadd, whose stage name was “Gary Glitter.” Gadd/Glitter's “Rock and Roll (Part 2)” was a 1972 hit tune which was broadcast in sports stadiums as an anthem (popularly known as “The Hey! Song”). It can be heard on the soundtrack of at least two Hollywood movies, “The Replacements,” and “Meet the Fockers” (starring Robert De Niro).

In October, 2012 evidence emerged in Britain that Glitter had been part of Sir James “Jimmy” Savile’s child sex ring. The now elderly Glitter is in prison serving a sentence of 16 years after conviction on four counts of indecent assault and one count of having sex with a girl under 13. He was first jailed in 1999 when he admitted to possessing images of child pornography. He has been accused of dozens of acts of molestation in Asian countries. In 2008 Glitter finished serving nearly three years in a Vietnamese prison for molesting two children. [5]

The Sex Ring Master and the Queen

Savile (1926-2011) was a demonic child molestor. The Queen of England awarded him the Order of the British Empire in 1971. She knighted this ghoul in 1990. For decades Savile supplied children to elite members of British society for sexual exploitation. We’re expected to believe that during Savile’s lifetime neither the British monarch nor her son Charles, the

---

[4] “Christ-less” here is a reference to both the barbaric secular culture which denies human rights to unborn human beings, as well as the proliferation of the institutions of Churchianity, those temples of artificial contraception, usury, and accommodation with the military-industrial state, for the sanctification of *Homo economicus.*

[5] *New York Times*, Aug. 21, 2008, p. E5.

Prince of Wales, never once received intelligence from the Crown's MI5 domestic spy service or the Metropolitan Police concerning his heinous crimes.

The Sex Ring Master and the Prince

In 1984 Savile was accepted as a member of the Athenaeum, a high society gentlemen's club in London's Pall Mall, after being proposed by "Catholic" Cardinal Basil Hume. Another clerical member of Savile's pederast ring was the Anglican Bishop of Gloucester, the Rt. Rev. Peter Bell, who was deeply connected to the royal family including Queen Elizabeth and Prince Charles, heir to the British throne. [6] During this time Savile was known to perform necrophliac acts on corpses and wore rings fashioned from glass eyes taken from the dead.[7]

Sir James Savile met Prince Charles through "mutual charity interests." The Prince reportedly conveyed gifts to Savile on his 80th birthday, along with an enigmatic note reading, *"Nobody will ever know what you have done for this country, Jimmy. This is to go some way in thanking you for that."*

The Sex Ring Master and the Prime Minister

Savile was also a close friend of the "upright conservative" British Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher: "Correspondence showing the depth of the friendship between Sir Jimmy Savile and former Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher is unveiled today in a secret Downing Street file that has been *heavily redacted by civil servants* following revelations about sexual abuse by the late entertainer. The 21-page dossier released under the 30-year rule by the National Archives shows Savile's access to the highest echelons of British society." [8]

"Thatcher and Savile met quite often...*Some papers and sections of the government file on Thatcher's relations with Savile remain withheld from public scrutiny for another 10 years.*" Prime Minister Thatcher is suspected of having concealed a child-rape ring operating among high officials of the British government.[9]

---

[6] "Jimmy Savile and Prince Charles' very close friendship with sex abuse bishop Peter Ball" (*Daily Mail,* October 8, 2015).

[7] "Revealed: The glass eye Jimmy Savile stole from a corpse and made into a necklace that he wore on final Top of the Pops - where he also groped a child" (*Daily Mail*, June 27, 2014)

[8] Owen Bowcott, "Savile's Extraordinary Access to Thatcher detailed in secret files," *The Guardian* (UK), December 27, 2012; emphasis supplied.

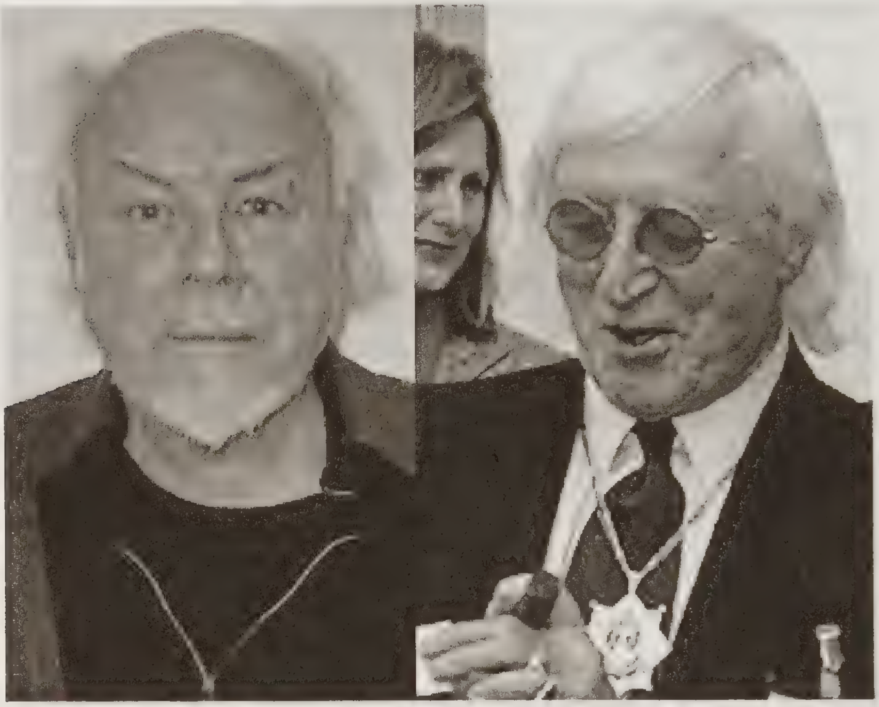

Gary Glitter (left) and Sir Jimmy Savile

In 2017, Nico Hines, London editor of the "Daily Beast" blog (thedailybeast.com), reported as follows:

Don Hale, "...a newspaper editor was handed startling evidence that Britain's top law enforcement official knew there was a VIP pedophile network in Westminster, at the heart of the British government....

"Leon Brittan, Margaret Thatcher's Home Secretary, was fully aware of a pedophile network that included top politicians...the following morning, police officers from the counter-terror and intelligence unit known as Special Branch burst into the newspaper office, seized the material and threatened to have Hale arrested if he ever reported what had been found...Brittan, a protégé of Prime Minister Margaret

---

[9] Terrence McCoy, "A 'big political cover-up' of 1980s pedophile-ring in U.K. Parliament?," *Washington Post*, July 7, 2014.

Thatcher, had been promoted to Home Secretary at the age of 43, making him (among) the youngest person(s) to preside over Britain's domestic law enforcement and national security apparatus...

"...allegations included in the Home Office papers that about 16 Members of Parliament and members of the House of Lords, and 30 high-profile figures from the Church of England, private schools, and big business, were members of, and advocates for, the 'Paedophile Information Exchange.' The shadowy group, which operated partly in the open, campaigned for the age of consent to be abolished and incest to be legalized.

"...There is growing evidence that MI5 and MI6, Britain's security services, repeatedly blocked investigations...

"The longtime deputy director of MI6, and former High Commissioner in Canada, Peter Hayman, was himself allegedly a pedophile, and was ultimately named as such in parliament by Geoffrey Dickens. Hayman had been caught with explicit material in 1978 but no charge was brought.

"Secret files discovered at the National Archives this year revealed that the attorney general at the time believed it wasn't in the public interest for Hayman to be prosecuted.

"Prime Minister Thatcher ordered his depravity to be concealed from the public. Thatcher must also have known about the allegations against her Home Secretary, Leon Brittan...

"Another of her most trusted lieutenants, Sir Peter Morrison, had also abused underage boys. She appointed Morrison to run her 1990 re-election campaign, regardless." [10]

"Maggie" Thatcher is a heroine to British Tories and America's "Reagan conservatives." Her legacy was enshrined in an adoring 2011 Hollywood film, "The Iron Lady," for which Meryl Streep won an Academy Award. [11]

Beginning as early as 1955, and throughout his lifelong career as a rapist of hundreds of young people, heading a ring that supplied them to highest rank of the British government, aristocracy and society, *Savile enjoyed total immunity from police arrest, Crown prosecution, and imprisonment.* Sex crimes were committed by Savile on at least 450 persons (328 being minors at the time) across England and Scotland, and also in Jersey, *for six decades.*[12] In 2013 Britain's National Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children described Savile as one of the most prolific sex offenders in its 129-year history of investigating molestation.[13]

---

[10] "How Thatcher's Government Covered Up a VIP Pedophile Ring," thedailybeast.com Also see: "A 'big political cover-up' of 1980s pedophile-ring in U.K. Parliament?" *Washington Post*, July 7, 2014.

[11] "Meryl Streep praises Margaret Thatcher as 'figure of awe,'" *The Guardian* (UK), April 9, 2013.

He died a multi-millionaire, respected and honored; the favorite of the queen, the future king, the prime minister and countless accomplices and enablers among the police, intelligence agencies, parliament and the press.[14]

In 2009, in a taped interview with his biographer, Savile defended Gary Glitter, convicted in 1999 of possession of child pornography, who he described as a celebrity being vilified for watching: "...dodgy films...It were for his own gratification. Whether it was right or wrong is up to him as a person... they (those who possess child pornography) didn't do anything wrong but they are then demonized.' The interview was not published at the time, and the recording was not released until after Savile's death."[15]

Child sex rings operating among the "best circles" of society, including governments and their intelligence agencies, are sign posts pointing to the existence of extraordinary malice in high places. Child molestation rings operating at elite levels of government and entertainment are an explosive reality that can (and should) detonate the people's faith in the ruling class. The Right wing is often as guilty as the Left in these crimes.

---

[12] "Giving Victims a Voice," (2013).
lib.latrobe.edu.au/research/ageofinquiry/biogs/E000070b.htm

[13] "Jimmy Savile spent 'every waking minute' thinking about abusing boys and girls." The Daily Telegraph, January 11, 2013. "Jimmy Savile abused boy aged eight and dying child: decades of abuse revealed," *London Evening Standard,* January 11, 2013. "Jimmy Savile abused children at 14 hospitals across six decades – report," *The Guardian,* January 11, 2013.

[14] As far back as 1978, punk-rocker John Lydon ("Johnny Rotten") did an interview with the BBC radio service, during which he accused Savile of being "into all sorts of seediness. We all know about it but we're not allowed to talk about it." Speaking in 2015 to journalist Piers Morgan, Lydon said: "I'm very, very bitter that the likes of Savile and the rest of them were allowed to continue. I did my bit, I said what I had to. But they didn't air that. I found myself banned from BBC radio for quite a while."

[15] "Jimmy Savile claimed paedophile Gary Glitter 'did nothing wrong" (*Daily Telegraph* [UK], Oct. 1, 2012).

Any sustained examination of the life of Gary Glitter turns up the name of Sir James Savile. From there, one overturns one rock after another concealing venomous snakes who our civilization venerates as the worthiest and most respectable people among us: monarchs, prime ministers, presidents and Hollywood moguls. The notoriety of pederasty rings led by people in power waxes and wanes. Some of this is due to the Cryptocracy planting in Right wing circles false accounts of pederasty rings mixed with half-truths, and then, through this calculated misdirection, infiltrating "useful idiot" conspiracy theorist movements so as to induce them to cry wolf and discredit the existence of the actual operations with flimsy accusations which appear in the media as opera bouffe. [16]

Cass R. Sunstein, one of the Cryptocracy's leading counter-intelligence and behavior modification specialists, co-authored a Revelation of the Method manifesto stating:

"Because those who hold conspiracy theories typically suffer from a 'crippled epistemology'...the best response consists in *cognitive infiltration* of extremist groups...our main policy idea is that *government should engage in cognitive infiltration of the groups that produce conspiracy theories*." [17]

QAnon and the Republican nincompoops who allegedly laid the groundwork for the January, 2021 assault on the Capitol, and the sabotage (by instilling voter apathy among Republicans), allegedly by L. Lin Wood and others, of the U.S. Senate run-off in Georgia, fit the profile of groups and individuals cognitively infiltrated by the Sunstein control stratagem of the Cryptocracy. Online, we estimate that more than half of the conspiracy theorists, particularly those who put forth dates and times for catastrophes and upheavals that don't take place, and who advocate violence or hatred, are persons processed by *cognitive infiltration*.

Mr. Sunstein is a Harvard Law professor and former official in the administration of Barack Obama, having served as President Obama's Director of the White House Office of Information. Sunstein's specialty is psychological warfare contra populist and traditional Christian leaders and organizations. In 2020, the World Health Organization appointed him chairman of its technical advisory group on "Behavioral Insights." [18]

---

[16] rollingstone.com/feature/anatomy-of-a-fake-news-scandal-125877/

[17] Cass R. Sunstein & Adrian Vermeule, "Conspiracy Theories" (John M. Olin Program in Law and Economics Working Paper no. 387 [2008], Coase-Sandor Institute, University of Chicago Law School); emphasis supplied.

Prof. Sunstein is married to Samantha Power, Professor of Public Policy at Harvard and former U.S. Ambassador to the United Nations under Obama. In 2021 President Biden appointed the aptly named Power as Administrator of the United States Agency for International Development, a government bureaucracy which often serves as a front for C.I.A. operations.

How do unpunished atrocities against children by our society's exalted paragons of virtue, fame, power and wealth, fade from our collective memory? It is a fact of our media-saturated lives that we often suffer from attention deficit, as well as compassion fatigue, and what alarmed us yesterday is mostly down the memory hole today, despite the appalling consequences of this amnesia.

The Crown of England, captured by the occult in the sixteenth century, has been invulnerable to revolutionary overthrow, with one exception—the victory of Republican forces under Oliver Cromwell, which led to the trial and execution of King Charles I in the seventeenth century.

It looked as though things were coming apart at the seams for Elizabeth II in 1992, a year the queen termed *annus horribilis* in the wake of Princess Diana's threats to reveal what she knew about the "darkness" in the royal family (Diana would be dead in less than five years). Those revelations were snuffed out with her murder (which she predicted), a killing disguised as an automobile accident caused by her supposedly "recklessly inebriated driver."

---

[18] In 2020 the World Health Organization (WHO) announced the staff of the Technical Advisory Group (TAG) on Behavioral Insights, chaired by Cass Sunstein. It is a who's who of "behavior modification and intervention" authorities, and psychological warfare experts: Dr Tim Chadborn, Dr. Maria Augusta Carrasco, Dr Varun Gauri, Dr Fadi Makki, Dr Shahinaz Ibrahim Mekheimar, Professor Susan Michie, Professor Saad B. Omer, Professor Rajiv Rimal, Ms Jana Smith, Dr Chiara Varazzani, Ms Archna Vyas.

To give some examples, according to WHO, Prof. Omer's "research portfolio" "includes behavioral interventions to increase demand and acceptance of COVID-19 interventions." Prof. Rimal "is an expert in the use of social norms theory for promoting social change." Dr.Varazzani "is a leading specialist in applying behavioral science to government and public policy. She has set up and led units of behavioral scientists in government-designed behavior change interventions..." No accusation of wrong-doing is here imputed to the aforementioned persons. Our profile is predicated on information found at the official website of the World Health Organization as of November, 2020.

Queen Elizabeth II and Prince Charles, together with conservative heroine Margaret Thatcher, appear to have enabled the massive crimes against children perpetrated by “Sir Jimmy” and his filthy cohort. Moreover, molestation of underage boys is a huge problem in Hollywood as well. [19]

Beginning around 2016, “QAnon,” an organization heavily publicized by the corporate media, came to prominence. It was supposedly created to fight international Satanic child-trafficking rings that were allegedly conspiring to bring down President Donald Trump. During Mr. Trump’s presidency, Jeffrey Epstein, the man who led one of the most extensive of those sex rings, was arrested and subsequently incarcerated in a Federal jail in New York City.

Photo published worldwide in July, 2019
after Jeffrey Epstein’s incarceration in New York
Note the Middle Eastern motif of the temple architecture, with its golden tutelary deities (on the roof and the ground around the structure), on pederastic Little St. James island, privately owned by Epstein until his death (part of the U.S. Virgin Islands).

Epstein was facing life in prison and was being pressured to accept a plea bargain in return for naming the powerful men (former President Bill Clinton, Prince Andrew, son of Queen Elizabeth, and dozens more) suspected of having been serviced by the sex slaves Epstein furnished. Not long afterward Epstein was found dead in his cell, while the surveillance cameras in the jail “malfunctioned” and his guards “fell asleep.”

---

[19] “The Lost Boys: How Hollywood paedophile ring behind child abuse ‘as horrific as Jimmy Savile’s’ could finally be exposed in wake of Weinstein scandal” (*The Sun*, October 19, 2017).

Mr. Trump’s Attorney General, William Barr, swore he would get to the bottom of the blatantly obvious foul play that was in truth Epstein’s murder while in “protective Federal custody.” In the end Mr. Barr, with Mr. Trump’s acquiescence, did nothing of the kind, and signed off on Epstein’s death as a suicide. It was said that the cameras and the guards were out of action due to “incompetence.” A few mid-level officials received reprimands or were demoted. A bald fact: *Epstein’s killing on Trump’s watch was not prosecuted by the Trump administration. The killers went free.* Cui bono?

The insiders who systematically abused and exploited the girls and women provided by Epstein, surely breathed a huge sigh of relief thanks to Donald Trump, the man laughably honored by QAnon’s useful idiots, as the number one nemesis of international Satanist child-trafficking rings. What reward did Trump and Barr receive for covering up the homicidal silencing of Epstein?

As further testimony to his charlatanry, we make note of Donald Trump in his last days in office having refused to pardon Julian Assange or Edward Snowden, yet he issued a pardon to the Israeli spy Aviem Sella, who had recruited Jonathan Pollard to steal U.S. military secrets for the Israelis. The Israelis in turn conveyed those secrets to Pakistan.

Trump put Mossad asset Jared Kushner in charge of infiltrating U.S. Intelligence and Defense. In 2020 Trump campaigned on the claim that Hunter Biden was a Chinese agent, but the president made no mention of Charles Kushner (Jared’s father), who allegedly served as an agent of China’s Anbang Insurance, a Communist front.

Memo to U.S. servicemen and women wounded and maimed in Afghanistan, and the families of American troops killed by the Taliban: in 2019 “your” government, under super-patriot Trump, ordered Joint Special Forces Command to *ally with the Taliban and provide air support on behalf of the Taliban* in their battles with their rival, Islamic State Khorasan.

Exhibiting the marks of cognitive infiltration, “Constitutional patriot” General Michael Flynn, after the November 2020 election, advocated suspending the Constitution and imposing martial law. Trump cronies Sidney Powell and L. Lin Wood, both prominent Right-wing attorneys, created an atmosphere of militant confrontation after the November, 2020 presidential election. This in turn contributed to the milieu in which Trump dispatched his loyal followers on January 6, 2021 when they marched into a trap at the Capitol, instigated that day by Trump and former New York Mayor Rudy Giuliani, a principal in the 9/11 conspiracy coverup. [20]

Leaked Insider Recording From ABC News Reveals Network Executives Killed Bombshell Story Implicating Jeffrey Epstein

ProjectVeritas.com, November 5, 2019

Amy Robach, 'Good Morning America' Co-Host and Breaking News Anchor at ABC, explains how a witness came forward years ago with information pertaining to Epstein, but Disney-owned ABC News refused to air the material for years. Robach vents her anger in a "hot mic" moment with an off-camera producer, explaining that ABC quashed the story in it's early stages. Robach describes how she interviewed a woman who had the courage to come forward "years" ago about Epstein: "She had pictures, She had everything. She was in hiding for twelve years. We convinced her to come out. We convinced her to talk to us."

"I've had this interview with Virginia Roberts (Now Virginia Guiffre) [alleged Epstein victim]. We would not put it on the air. Um, first of all, I was told "Who's Jeffrey Epstein? No one knows who that is. This is a stupid story." She continued, *"The Palace found out that we had her whole allegations about Prince Andrew and threatened us a million different ways."*

Robach goes on to express her belief that Epstein was killed in prison saying, "So do I think he was killed? 100% Yes, I do… He made his whole living blackmailing people… Yup, there were a lot of men in those planes. A lot of men who visited that Island, a lot of powerful men who came into that apartment."

Robach repeats a prophetic statement purportedly made by Attorney Brad Edwards, "There will come a day when we will realize Jeffrey Epstein was the most prolific pedophile this country has ever known," and disgustedly Robach states "I had it all three years ago." (End quote; emphasis supplied).

---

[20] Cf. *Revisionist History*® no. 112 (January, 2021), "Downfall: Trump's Debacle in D.C." The "Unite the Right Rally" in Charlottesville, Virginia, August 11-12, 2017 also exhibited aspects of cognitive infiltration. Like at the Capitol in January, 2021, the Charlottesville debacle paid huge dividends to the Cryptocracy.

Another Wayne
Child Sex Trafficking Networks Associated with John Wayne Gacy

There is Bruce Wayne and then there is John Wayne Gacy, the monster dubbed "Joker" and "the Killer Clown." He murdered 33 boys and wore a security lapel pin conferred upon him by the U.S. Secret Service in a 1978 meeting with First Lady Rosalyn Carter. Gacy sometimes posed as a policeman and flashed police credentials. He released a few victims of his attacks without taking their lives.

From 1972 to December 1978, it seems he may have possibly been immune from arrest for homicide until such time as he had killed his 33rd victim. Either that, or the Chicago-area police were among the most incompetent in the nation.

Wayne Gacy hunted for some of his vagrant victims in Chicago's "Bughouse Square."

According to *Chicago Tribune* (May 16, 1977), Phillip Paske (1953-1998), operated a child sex trafficking ring called the "Delta Project" while the ring's "mastermind," John D. Norman (1927-2009), was inside serving a prison sentence. Norman had previously controlled a child pornography operation in Dallas, Texas, known as the Odyssey Foundation.

Paske was also an employee of John Wayne Gacy's PDM Construction company. Like Gacy, Paske and Norman seemed to have lived a life of crime with near impunity, at least for a time. Norman served only a few years in prison on separate occasions for major felonies, including forcible sodomy and repeated child sex trafficking over many decades. At least one witness against Norman was killed. At one point Norman published "*Hermes*," a child-sex networking newsletter.

Paske was a murderer who was granted significantly reduced charges and sentence reductions. At least one Gacy victim who was made a captive but was not killed, reported seeing a man matching Paske's description observing Gacy as he tormented and imprisoned the man inside Gacy's residence.

It may not be significant but it is worth noting for the record that according to the findings of the House Select Committee on Assassinations, Volume IX, V, in 1962 John F. Kennedy assassination conspirator Jack Ruby gave a $40 deposit on an apartment in Dallas to a landlord's agent bearing the name "John D. Norman."

The extent of the reach of the John Norman/John Wayne Gacy pederast network is unknown; that it enjoyed a fairly remarkable freedom of operation during the time it fulfilled its appointed mission would seem to indicate high level protection.

"Wayne County" is the stage name of a headliner in various 1970s-era transvestite rock music acts (one of which was called "Queen Elizabeth"). The Fox Sisters' seance-faith of Spiritualism, a nineteenth century American religion, was born in Wayne County, New York. In the town of Manchester, bordering Wayne County, Hill Cumorah, which is situated on the 42nd degree line of latitude, is the place where the Mormon Church says Joseph Smith received "golden plates" from the Angel Moroni, from which he translated the *Book of Mormon*.

At the conclusion of "The Dark Knight Rises" Bruce Wayne (played by Satanist Christian Bale),[21] is shown relaxing at an outdoor restaurant in Florence, Italy, one-time occult citadel of the Cryptocracy when it began to take power through the Church in the early Renaissance. Wayne's British (Intelligence) factotum/handler, "Alfred" (Michael Caine), frequents Florence and "stumbles" upon Batman and Catwoman there.

As the 2012 Batman film premiered nationwide in Aurora, Colorado and elsewhere, it was preceded on the screen, as is customary, by previews for other movies. One of these was for the forthcoming 007 movie, "Skyfall." Another trailer, this one for the movie "Gangster Squad," was also shown in theaters that were screening "The Dark Knight Rises." 2:03 minutes into the trailer, four men are depicted standing behind a movie screen, walking toward the audience, shooting at them.

"Gangster Squad" is based on the life of Los Angeles organized crime boss Meyer "Mickey" Cohen, whose girlfriend for a time was Juanita Slusher, otherwise known as "Candy Barr," the famous stripper and courtesan befriended in Dallas by that man of all connections, Jack Ruby.

---

[21] "Thank you to Satan for giving me inspiration for playing this role." — Christian Bale, Golden Globe award acceptance speech, nationally televised January 6, 2019. Yes, it's *assumed* he was making a joke (in the age of "woke," when little or nothing is).

Route 91 Harvest Massacre
The Haunting Of America
Beamed from the Vegas Strip

The map of our collective dream world
is being perpetually redrawn

MANDALAY BA
LAY BAY
LUXOR
MANDALAY BAY

"Ship me somewheres east of Suez,
where the best is like the worst,
Where there aren't no Ten Commandments
an' a man can raise a thirst;
For the temple-bells are callin', an' it's there that I would be
By the old Moulmein Pagoda, looking lazy at the sea;
On the road to Mandalay."

— Rudyard Kipling, "Mandalay" [1]

---

[1] Rudyard Kipling was initiated into Freemasonry in 1886 at the age of 20, in the Hope and Perseverance Lodge, No. 782; Lahore, India (now Pakistan).

Sin City quickly returned to business as usual shortly after the October 1, 2017 "Harvest Festival" mass murder of 61 of their fellow Americans (411 shot and wounded), [2] a slaughter which has been attributed to Stephen Paddock [3] and which occurred in the immediate vicinity of the Mandalay/Luxor site on the Las Vegas Strip.

The *Wall Street Journal* reported, "...the mood on the Las Vegas Strip lifted as the week progressed. Monday evening (October 2) was eerily quiet, with festive public displays such as the Fountains of Bellagio turned off out of respect for the victims. But by Thursday night (October 5), boisterous crowds were back. Groups of revelers strolled with three-foot-tall daiquiris strapped to their necks. Scantily clad women in police costumes were handcuffing passersby, angling for paid photos. Beer pong tables were full at O'Shea's Casino close to the Strip. Kevin Riley had been in town since Sunday, part of a two-week motorcycle excursion from Chicago to Los Angeles. Standing in front of the Bellagio fountains, the Australian marveled at how the Strip felt no different than other times he's visited. "The way it came back the night after the event, that said, 'Nothing's going to dampen this town,' Mr. Riley said."

On October 2, less than 24 hours after the bloodbath, the NFL's nationally broadcast "Monday Night Football" extravaganza, with a stadium full of raucous fans, was underway as usual.

S.K. Bain notes that the *Route 91* Harvest Massacre took place with *91 days left in the calendar year*. The countdown had begun. "Conspiracy theorists spread false information"—this was the headline at Snopes.com and—heavily promoted by Google on October 5. *Wall Street Journal* headline: "YouTube Tweaks Search Results as Las Vegas Conspiracy Theories Rise to Top."

---

[2] Casualty figures among the 22,000 Country and Western fans continue to vary, with the number of dead from official sources and the corporate media listed at 58, 59 or 61.

[3] August 3, 2018 the *New York Times* reported, "Mr. Paddock left no suicide note...There was no evidence he belonged to any terrorist organizations or hate groups, and he had no criminal record. While his financial assets had diminished before the attack, he was indebted to no one and had paid all his gambling debts.' In the ensuing years it was apparently determined that Paddock's life was not sufficiently sinister to render credible the homicidal maniac persona assigned to him. Hence, more recently a back story alleging "anti-government fanaticism" has been added to the official tale of his "lone nut" culpability.

The *Journal* reported October 5 that YouTube (owned by Google), was falsifying (i.e. "tweaking") search results — to move readers away from alternative sources and toward mainstream media's "authoritative" sources, while associating investigations outside that narrow aperture with "hateful messages" and "misinformation."

The *New York Times* reported that Las Vegas Sheriff Joe Lombardo in a briefing on Wednesday (October 4) questioned the veracity of the lone nut conclusion:

"Do you think this was all accomplished on his (Paddock's) own? Face value, you've got to make the assumption that he had to have some help at some point, and we want to ensure that that's the answer. Maybe he's a super guy, a superhero — not a hero. Super, I won't use the word. Maybe he...was working out all this on his own. But it would be hard for me to believe that."

Script Change: It was reported for days after the shooting that a hotel security guard was shot by Paddock *after* Paddock committed the massacre, and this was the encounter that led the perpetrator to abort his mass murder spree. A host of media tales about what happened in connection with that supposed *post-massacre* assault on the guard were retailed to the public by what the Establishment terms the "credentialed" media. *Los Angeles Times*: "They (police) had credited (Jesus) Campos, who was shot in the leg, with stopping the 10-minute assault on the concert crowd by turning the gunman's attention to the hotel hallway, where Campos was checking an alert for an open door in another guest's room.

By October 9, the official reason that the shooter halted his gunfire after ten minutes needed to be revised and a new official reason substituted, so there was a script change. Clark County Sheriff Joe Lombardo now was asserting (October 9) that Paddock shot Campos *before* his alleged mass shooting spree — at 9:59 p.m. — and *they now didn't know why Paddock stopped his attack on the crowd.* "Police Alter Timeline of Vegas Shooting" (Valley News via Los Angeles Times, Oct. 10, 2017):

"Police have dramatically changed their account of how the Las Vegas massacre began on Oct. 1, revealing on Monday that the gunman shot a hotel security guard six minutes before opening fire on a country music concert — raising new questions...Investigators previously said that the security guard was shot after Paddock had already spent 10 minutes firing into the crowd of concertgoers gathered below the hotel. In a timeline released last week, investigators said Paddock had stopped firing at the concert across the street at 10:15 p.m., and the first police officers arrived on the floor at 10:17 p.m. and encountered the wounded Campos at 10:18 p.m., who directed the officers to Paddock's suite. Police were not in a hurry to enter Paddock's suite because the security guard's arrival had halted the shooting, police implied in previously describing the timeline. Paddock had killed himself by the time officers entered the room, they said.

"In a news conference Wednesday (October 4), Lombardo said it was his 'assumption' that Paddock stopped his shooting spree because the gunman, using his spy cameras, 'observed the security guard, and he was in fear that he was about to be breached, so he was doing everything possible to figure out how to escape at that point.'

"In another news conference last week, Clark County Undersheriff Kevin McMahill said Campos 'had notified his dispatch, which was absolutely critical to us, knowing the location, as well as advising the responding officers as they arrived.' But on Monday, the timeline changed. Mr. Campos was encountered by the suspect prior to his shooting to the outside world,' Lombardo said at a Monday news conference...A police spokesperson did not immediately respond to several follow-up questions from the *Los Angeles Times* seeking clarification on the new timeline. Charles 'Sid' Heal, a retired Los Angeles County sheriff's commander and tactical expert, said the new timeline 'changes the whole perspective of the shooting." (End quote from the *Los Angeles Times*).

We were expected to believe the original timeline and not doubt it, because to do so renders one a "conspiracy theorist." Yet later the Establishment media told us *not* to believe the officially-promulgated initial timeline. All obedient Americans were then required to believe the new timeline and discard the old one. In the days ahead our trustworthy news media and government officials told us more of what we were to believe and what we shouldn't believe about the Route 91 Harvest Massacre. Here's the message: however much the script is reversed in the future, obey it without question if you don't want to be stigmatized as a "paranoid conspiracy theorist," or a "Grassy knoll nutcase."

"Paddock used more than 10 suitcases to bring at least 23 weapons, mostly rifles, into his Mandalay Bay hotel room. Over the last 12 months, Paddock bought 33 guns...In the last year, Paddock had made chip purchases in Nevada casinos in excess of $10,000 a day…" (*Los Angeles Times*, October 5).

Washington Post online, October 2, 5:10 p.m. Pacific: "After the shooting, officers found Stephen Paddock dead with 23 guns on the 32nd floor…"

"23" and "32" are significant numbers.[4] The *Las Vegas Review Journal*, October 4, 2017 added two more significant numbers to the cauldron: "The attack lasted between nine and 11 minutes..." (9/11).

It was said that Paddock had stopped shooting on the crowd after approximately ten minutes. Los Angeles Times, October 5: "Officers decided he was no longer an active shooter, and decided not to enter the room immediately...Officers blew down Paddock's door at 11:20 p.m., 75 minutes after the shooting began." For more than an hour the police left Paddock alone with an arsenal of weapons in his hotel room overlooking the dead and wounded victims and first responders, during which time he could have resumed shooting at any moment.

The monotonous silhouette of the lone nut fable began to be set in stone almost immediately. On October 2 the media chimed: "Police believe Paddock acted alone in executing the deadliest mass shooting in modern U.S. history." *Less than a day after the atrocity, when a thorough investigation should have just begun, the media announced that the authorities were certain that Paddock acted alone and had no help whatsoever.* How could they know this? On what basis could this clairvoyant conclusion be reached so soon, without a thorough investigation that would take days or weeks? The lone nut meme was being implanted in the Hive Mind less than twenty-four hours after the massacre.

Then Sheriff Lombardo dissented. BBC News called it, "A twist in the investigation."

October 5: "The possibility that Paddock could have had an accomplice is the new angle." In the aftermath of the shooting officials described Paddock as 'a lone wolf' and said he was

---

[4] The August 12, 2019 *Washington Post* published online the headline: "23 Bizarre Conspiracy Theories Trump has Elevated." There are hundreds of additional examples of the assignment (or "coincidental" connection) of number 23 to anomalies.

'solely responsible for this heinous act.' Then came the 'twist.' The sheriff stated that "while there were two cameras on a room service cart outside Paddock's room as well as the door peephole and inside the general family area of the hotel room, *none of those cameras were recording*." [5]

Ann Coulter, October 4: "Who was the woman shouting, *'You're all going to die!'* right before the concert? [6] Is any reporter interested in finding out? Probably a random crazy lady, but that's not typical pre-concert behavior. Why is it taking so long to find out if anyone else went into Paddock's hotel room since he checked in last Thursday? I'm perfectly prepared to accept that he was the only one who entered that room, but can we see the surveillance video?..."

Truths on the Road to Arlington: In the movie "Arlington Road" (described as a "gripping contemporary thriller about the terrible truths that can hide behind everyday appearances"), Michael Faraday (Jeff Bridges) is a man attempting to prevent a catastrophic massacre in Washington D.C. He *unknowingly* delivers the terror bomb that causes the massacre that forever-after brands this innocent individual as one of the most heinous terrorists in American history.

We ask the following question: what if Stephen Paddock was not the shooter? What if he was only a fall guy?

Let's ponder an alternate scenario: Paddock was somehow incapacitated in his hotel room while an expert marksman (or marksmen), gunned down the 61 people and wounded 411 in a mere "9 or 11" minutes. After the massacre, a gun was forced into the unconscious or paralyzed Paddock's hand. Someone else pulled the trigger on the handgun and he died by "suicide," and entered the media's gallery of "anti-government" terrorists who are actually Arlington Road patsies.

On October 5 news.com.au (News Australia) reported that Eric Paddock wondered whether his brother Stephen actually committed the crime, or whether an impersonator was involved:

---

[5] None of the cameras outside Jefrey Epstein's cell the day he died "were recording."

[6] "In 1974, retired LAPD officer Paul Sharaga told a newsman with KMPC in Los Angeles that as he was responding to the shooting (of Robert F. Kennedy) in the hotel, an elderly couple reported to him that they saw a couple in their early 20s, one of whom was a woman in a polka-dot dress. The couple were smiling and shouting, 'We shot him... we killed Kennedy...we shot him...we killed him.' Sharaga also stated that he filed official reports of the incident, but that they disappeared and were never investigated. (*Santa Monica Evening Outlook* Dec. 23, 1974, p. 5).

"Eric said he hopes police find a 'tumor in his (brother's) head or something' when they do an autopsy in order to explain what happened. 'If they don't, we're all in trouble,' he said. 'I'm praying for at least some data points. Because otherwise, the bug in 'Men In Black' put on a Steve suit and went and did this. There's no other rationalization." ("The bug" is an alien and the main antagonist in the first "Men in Black film." While on earth, he impersonates a human).

Until we know more, all angles with some potential for having occurred, should be considered. Pardon our skepticism, but we would not be at all surprised if the crazed forces in our own government who brought down the Twin Towers on 9/11 by controlled demolition, killed and maimed hundreds of their fellow citizens in Las Vegas in order to propitiate the eldtritch entities symbolized by the Strip's Pharonic graven images.

Daddy Paddock, The Teflon Career Criminal

Benjamin Hoskins Paddock II (a.k.a. "Chromedome," a.k.a. "Bingo Bruce Ericksen"), was once on the FBI's "Ten Most Wanted" list of fugitives. He was the father of Stephen Paddock. What strikes this writer about the biography of the shooter's father, a one-time hunted fugitive wanted for bank robbery, prison escape and attempted murder of an FBI agent, was the ease with which, like John D. Norman, he obtained in more than one instance, *partial and episodic immunity from the government for his major felony crimes.*

Benjamin Hoskins Paddock was not required to serve the remaining eleven years of the bank robbery sentence he had evaded by escaping from prison; nor was he punished for a subsequent bank robbery, or attempting, in Las Vegas, to kill an officer with his car — beyond a relatively short jail sentence.

Subsequent financial crimes he committed years later, involving racketeering, also proved to have little consequence for the alleged Las Vegas shooter's father who, it can be said, seems to have lived a fairly charmed life.

Like his Dad, Stephen Paddock appears to have lived a charmed life prior to allegedly machine-gunning the patrons of the Harvest Festival in Las Vegas. Benjamin Hoskins Paddock II was born in Sheboygan, Wisconsin in 1926. He served in the Navy during World War II.

Benjamin "Bingo Bruce"
Hoskins Paddock II

I. His life of crime commenced in 1946 at age 20, with a conviction in Illinois on ten counts of auto theft and five counts of running a confidence game.

"Married in Reno, Nevada in 1952 and fathered Stephen, before being imprisoned in 1953 for a fraudulent check scheme...When he got out in 1956, the Paddocks moved to Arizona and Stephen's parents started going by different names: Benjamin became Patrick, and his wife, Irene, became Delores..." [7]

Benjamin Hoskins Paddock was hunted by the FBI in Las Vegas and at the time of the arrest in 1961 he tried to run down an FBI agent with his car: "Benjamin 'Chromedome' Paddock, Ex-Tucsonian, Makes FBI List Of 10 Most Wanted" by Gilbert T. Matthews, *Tucson Citizen Daily,* April 27, 1971:

"Known to his associates as 'Chromedome, Old Baldy,' and 'Big Daddy,' Benjamin Hoskins Paddock is Tucson's contribution to the FBI's list of 10 most-wanted fugitives. He made the list after escaping on Dec. 31, 1968, from the Federal

---

[7] *New York Times* October 4, 2017, p. A16.

Correctional Institution at La Tuna, Tex., where he was serving a 20-year sentence for robbing a Phoenix bank in 1960. Paddock—alias Perry Archer, Benjamin J. Butler, Leo Genstein, Pat Paddock and Patrick Benjamin Paddock— hasn't been seen or heard from since. At the time of the robbery, Paddock lived in Tucson with his wife and four children. Neighbors said they couldn't believe that the colorful businessman, then 34 years old, was involved in crime. Paddock sold garbage disposal units here under the business name of Arizona Disposer 'Chromedome' Co. He called himself 'Big Daddy' in connection with a night club operation on North 1st Avenue. Before selling the disposal units, he operated an East Broadway service station and also sold used cars.

"Although he was imprisoned for the...holdup of a branch of the Valley National Bank in Phoenix, Paddock also had been accused of two other bank robberies. Those charges were dropped after his conviction. Palmer M. Baken Jr., agent in charge of the Phoenix FBI office described Paddock as being 'A glib, smooth-talking man who is egotistical and arrogant."

The *Eugene-Register Guard* (Oregon) September 15, 1978: "A Springfield bingo parlor manager arrested last week as a long-sought federal prison escapee was ordered to San Francisco to face a 1960 robbery charge. Benjamin Hoskins Paddock, 51, manager of The Bingo Centre at 612 Main St., received the order in an appearance before US Magistrate Michael Hogan in Eugene. Paddock is charged with the armed robbery of a San Francisco bank on June 4, 1969, about six months after his escape from a federal prison in Texas....He lived in the Eugene-Springfield area for several years under the name Brice Werner Ericksen. He managed to escape detection by changing his appearance and avoiding contact with law enforcement agencies that might have resulted in fingerprinting, according to the FBI."

His extensive rap sheet: "Over an 18-month span in 1959 and 1960, Mr. Paddock hit two branches of the Valley National Bank in Phoenix —one of them twice —and made off with $25,000, according to *The Arizona Republic*, citing an indictment. Each time, the report said, he showed the teller a snub-nosed revolver tucked in his belt, and fled in a stolen car that he abandoned a few blocks away to switch to the family's new Pontiac station wagon. When the F.B.I. finally caught up with him at a gas station in downtown Las Vegas, he tried to flee, nearly ramming an agent, before an agent fired a bullet through his windshield. He surrendered unharmed. Mr. Paddock was convicted in 1961 and sentenced to 20 years in prison. He escaped from the penitentiary...and made his way to San Francisco, where he robbed another bank." [8]

After his capture in 1978 Benjamin Hoskins Paddock was paroled circa 1979, serving merely a year for multiple bank robberies, attempting to run over a Federal officer, and prison escape. He was not required to serve the remaining eleven years of the prison sentence he had avoided by escaping. *In other words, he was rewarded for having escaped from prison*. For his long list of felonies he received a brief sentence in jail and was then paroled. His parole application was supported by the City Mayor and the County Commissioner. *No one in the government ever seemed to try very hard to make charges stick when it came to Teflon Paddock*.

Eight years after extricating himself from bank robbery, attempted murder and prison escape convictions, he experienced another almost miraculous slap on the wrist: "In 1987 Benjamin Hoskins Paddock was again arrested. He was charged with penalties amounting to $623,000 for racketeering. Circuit Judge George Goodrich reduced Paddock's fine to $100,000 and no jail time."

"Bingo Bruce Ericksen" (Paddock) died in Texas eleven years later in January, 1998 at age 77. His live-in companion since 1988 had been Laurel Paulson, a woman he'd met in Eugene. [9]

What is the significance (if any) of the elder Paddock's charmed life? One wonders if he had a protective "connection" inside the Cryptocracy. If so, why was the protection in place? Had their been a quid pro quo? Did it take the form of missions "Bingo Bruce" undertook for the government?

According to the October 3, 2017 *Wall Street Journal*, in the 1970s Stephen Paddock had been employed by the U.S. government, in the Internal Revenue Service (IRS). Lockheed Martin, the defense giant, said that Paddock worked for them for three years in the 1980s.

---

[8] *New York Times*, op.cit.

[9] Cf. *Eugene-Register Guard*, February 9, 1998.

"He was worth more than $2 million, relatives said. Before retiring, he made a small fortune from real estate deals and a business that he and (his brother) Eric Paddock sold off. Eric Paddock...recalled one time when the entire family took over the top floor of the Atlantis at the casino's expense."

The Pharaonic Egyptian mise-en-scéne at the site of the Las Vegas mass sacrifice

The Route 91 Harvest Festival, whether by design or coincidence control, was a harvest of human beings.

In pre-Christian nature religions humans were sacrificed to the dark gods during the autumn harvest. Another aspect of pagan propitiation of these gods is cult prostitution. Given the proliferation of huge Egyptian cult objects in "Sin City," it may be likely that, together with the post-modernist animus toward Biblical morality, some Las Vegas harlots engage in *qedeshah* (cult prostitution, cf. Deuteronomy 23:17), which historically has been part of the sex-and-sacrifice rites of certain pagan sects, and which continue to be regarded as a means of invoking dark forces.

According to advertisements, the "Route 91 Harvest" was "powered by Sirius," i.e. Sirius XM radio. [10] The obelisk, the control icon of Pharaonic Egypt which hallowed Sirius, squats adjacent to the Mandalay hotel on the "Vegas Strip." Next door from the massacre site, at "Luxor," is the ominous Egyptian pyramid replica (646 feet at its base and 350 feet tall). The Country and Western fans in "Sin City" were slaughtered, like an obeisance to the dark gods, in proximity to these Pharaonic death cult objects.

In the videos of the attack one can see the Luxor Sky Beam, the most powerful beam of light in the world, visible in outer space, being emitted out of the top of the Las Vegas pyramid.

According to the *Oxford English Dictionary*, the name "Paddock" is another word for "a familiar spirit in the shape of a toad."

In Shakespeare's *Macbeth* (act 1, scene 1), the three witches speak: "I come, Grimalkin Paddock calls anon. Fair is foul, and foul is fair, Hover through the fog and filthy air."

---

[10] No accusation of wrongdoing is being leveled against Sirius XM, its owners, employees or affiliates.

We have often pointed to a civic magic that is being revealed publicly with little noticeable counter-reaction from the people. In the wake of the 9/11 terror attacks, the mass open air occult process has increased dramatically, as the processing has increased.

Every year the U.S. government "accidentally" kills hundreds of civilians in the Middle East and western Asia at rural weddings and in cities, as part of our "wars against terrorism" which often terrorize civilians, and then in turn act as recruiting devices for additional terrorists to "fight America." The terror and counter-terror cycle has no end in sight. Murder by government, and corporate media lies, are piling ever higher, along with "random" killings.

The mainstream media's purveyors of conformity will frown on our occult analyses and denounce them as the sin of conspiracy theorizing. These editors and reporters who act as the System's gate-keepers, would not dream of exploring occult symbolism in spectacular crimes. It isn't done, *unless it's in connection with fictional Hollywood films*. In the October 2, 2017 *New York Times* online, movie critic A.O. Scott approved of occult investigation—when it concerns fantasy movies. Concerning the film "Blade Runner" he writes, "One of my fondest memories as a father and a film critic is of an impromptu post-screening seminar with two 11-year-olds about occult meanings and hidden clues in the director's cut."

"Occult meanings" and "hidden clues" in America's epidemic of mass shootings? It wouldn't be politically correct to look for them. Establishment-approved conformists and media-certified "good people" believe official tales, succumb to confirmation bias and keep silent concerning anomalies in the script. Some of us, however, hear the cries of the dead for justice. Our eyes are open and we refuse to be silent.

ROUTE 91 HARVEST

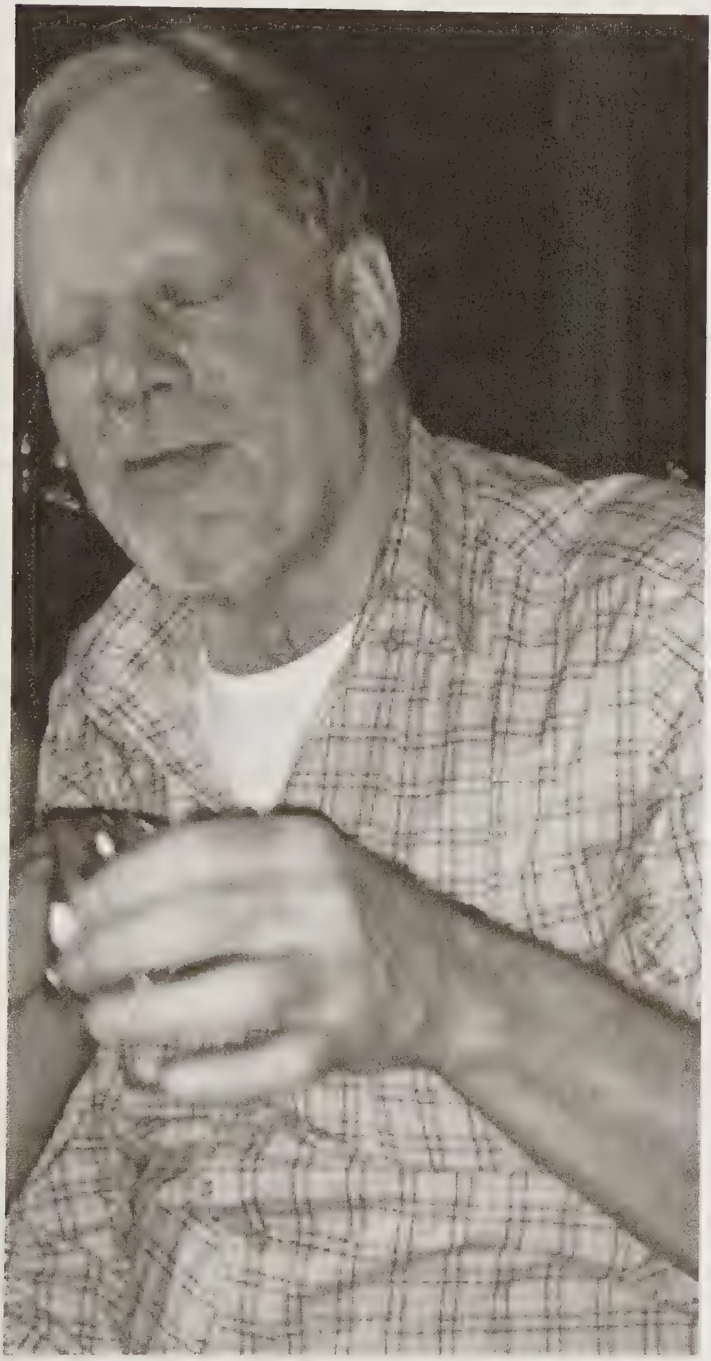

Eyes Wide Shut

III

PHARMAKOS

The Greeks practiced a scapegoat ritual, employing a human sacrifice, the *pharmakos*, who was beaten and paraded in the streets before being executed. "The Athenians regularly maintained a number of degraded and useless beings at the public expense; and when any calamity such as plague, drought or famine befell the city, they sacrificed two of these outcasts as scapegoats." [1]

The scapegoat is found in Leviticus and I and II Kings, as well Revelation 2:20, 9:21, 18:23, 21:8 and 22:14-15. In the New Testament the Ionic/Koine Greek noun *pharmakos* is synonymous with enchantment and crippling through drugs and sorcery. [2]

James Shelby Downard viewed himself as having been on the receiving end of both pathologies. He had compassion for dissidents and sleuths who he believed had undergone a similar scapegoat ordeal after having attempted to proclaim or disclose an inconvenient truth about the Cryptocracy, which he denominated in terms of the secret society of Freemasonry, the "Invisible Empire" of the Ku Klux Klan, and the FBI ("Federal Bureau of Inverts")—for which he harbored special antipathy. [3]

---

[1] Sir James Frazer, T*he Golden Bough: A Study in Magic and Religion, Part IV: The Scapegoat* (New York: Macmillan, 1935), p. 253.

[2] In the New Testament sorcery *and* scapegoat are both connoted by *pharmakos* and its derivatives. In Revelation 22:15 *pharmakoi* are the sorcerers associated with dogs: "Outside the city are the dogs—the sorcerers..." Whether this is a reference to Anubis is unclear. In the ancient Greek denotation, *pharmakoi* are scapegoats, In Revelation a *pharmakos* is enslaved through drugs and sorcery perpetrated by *pharmakoi.* For example, in 2 Kings 9:22 and Rev. 2:20 Jezebel is a *pharmakos /pharmaka* (sorcerer). She scapegoats the prophets and then kills them (I Kings 18:4).

[3] Mr. Downard believed his estranged wife had been coerced by FBI agents into playing the part of the "Great Whore" in *magica sexualis* rites at Mount Palomar, and in bungalows at the Hotel Del Charro in LaJolla, California, It was there, from 1953-1971, that J. Edgar Hoover was the non-paying guest of the hotel's owner, mobster Clint Murchison. The Del Charro was located 14 miles from the Del Mar Turf Club, where Mr. Hoover placed wagers on horse races and conferred with members of the Mafia.

"...eugenic abortion...countries like Iceland boast of having 'eliminated' the condition (Down syndrome)—not via therapy, but by destroying those who have it." [4]

Extermination of Down syndrome humans degraded into the status of *pharmakoi,* is the pagan Neo-Nazism of our time; another dare-not-be-spoken truth.

Other humans designated as *pharmakoi* by the Cryptocracy are the Palestinian, Lebanese, Syrian, Iraqi, Afghan, Yemeni and Iranian people, as well as the much-despised hillbilly and redneck "deplorables" of rural America.

Black people became *pharmakoi* in the eyes of North African Muslims, [5] Queen Elizabeth I and her pirate slavers John Hawkins and Francis Drake, and among their intellectual and spiritual heirs in the slave-holding and Jim Crow American South, due in part to the influence of the ruling in the *Guide of the Perplexed* [6] by Moses Maimonides, the renowned medieval rabbinic law-giver and physician, who was esteemed by papal, Islamic and Protestant theologians alike.

---

[4] Charles A. Donovan and Robert G. Marshall.

[5] Maimonides was the court physician to the family of the Sultan of Egypt. His *halakhic* magnum opus is the *Mishneh Torah*. See the note below.

[6] Few pronouncements have caused black people more misery than that of Maimonides, who ruled they are "irrational animals" (cf. *Guide of the Perplexed*, the uncensored Shlomo Pines translation, University of Chicago Press [1963], vol. 2, pp. 618-19). According to Maimonides' virulently racist teaching, the fact that black people can speak places them "above the apes but below the level of man." This bigotry was transmitted to the western intelligentsia. Paraphrasing Maimonides, Voltaire wrote, "Blacks are not men except in their stature, with the faculty of speech..." (Kwame Appiah, *New York Review of Books* May 9, 2019, p. 40). Many Judaic people are not aware of Maimonides' statement. In our experience those Judaics who do know of it repudiate it and consider it abhorrent.

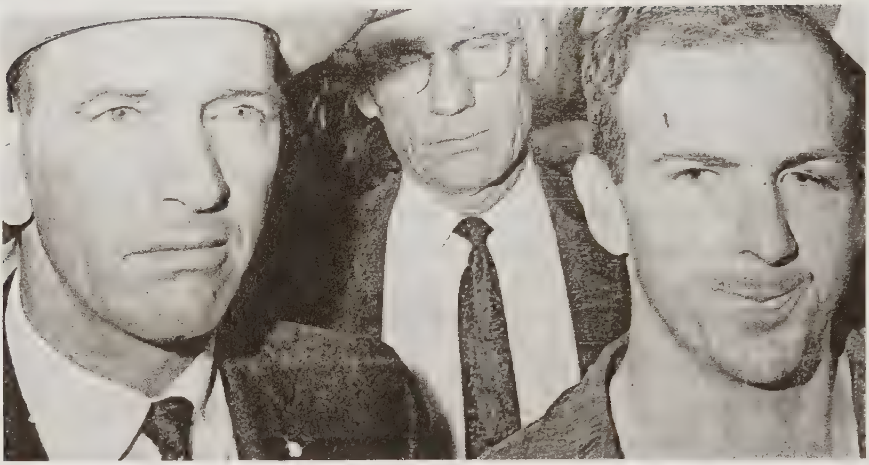

In pre-Christian Greece *pharmakos* was defined variously as someone created to be thrown away; she or he who is valueless; refuse; trash. It simultaneously denotes an expiatory offering, such as the long ago slayings of the *pharmakos* at the annual Athenian festival of Thargelia, held in the early summer.

In ancient Greece the *pharmakos* was regarded as the very least of men, someone whose human dignity was so completely lost that that their execution was made a public spectacle and entertainment. [7]

---

[7] Patsy, n. slang (orig. U.S.). [Origin unknown.] A person who is ridiculed, deceived, blamed, or victimized (*Oxford English Dictionary*).

"In his last year, one locale Shelby wanted to visit before he became too ill to do so, was Lincoln, Montana on the Continental Divide, adjacent to the Scapegoat Wilderness, the final residence of Ted Kaczynski before his lifetime incarceration. There was a Scapegoat Cafe in Lincoln, and Shelby examined the site of Kaczynski's cabin on a map. It had been situated on terrain marked "Scapegoat," which made a big impression on him." [8]

---

[8] Information in an e-mail from Michael Hoffman to Charles Saunders, regarding James Shelby Downard, April 15, 2016. Kaczynski had been groomed as a *pharmakos* from his days as a university student: "During Kaczynski's sophomore year at Harvard, in 1959, he was recruited for a psychological experiment that, unbeknownst to him, would last three years. The experiment involved psychological torment and humiliation, a story I include in my book *Mind Wars: Brain Research and the Military in the 21st Century*. The Harvard study aimed at psychic deconstruction by humiliating undergraduates and thereby causing them to experience severe stress....The man who conducted the humiliation experiment was the brilliant and complex Harvard psychologist Henry A. Murray...Murray was...the pioneer of personality tests that are now a routine part of industrial management and psychological assessments...In yet another odd twist...while Kaczynski was undergoing those humiliation experiments a young Harvard researcher named Timothy Leary was beginning his research career on psychedelics. In 1960 Leary returned from a vacation in Mexico with a suitcase full of magic mushrooms. Murray himself is said to have supervised psychoactive drug experiments, including Leary's. According to Alston Chase, author of *Harvard and the Unabomber*, Leary called Murray "the wizard of personality assessment who, as OSS chief psychologist, had monitored military experiments on brainwashing and sodium amytal interrogation." (Jonathan D. Moeno, PhD., *Psychology Today*, May 25, 2012. PsychologyToday.com).

The spectacle "Possess(es) all the means necessary to falsify perception; the spectacle is the absolute master of memories, just as it is the unfettered master of plans which will shape the most distant future...

"Since no one may contradict it, it has the right to contradict itself, to correct it own past...

"Expressions of hypocritical regret for the passing of real life...and superficial concerns with the technological...developments which accelerate the cycles of...simulation, are voiced in an empty debate conducted by the spectacle itself..." [9]

---

[9] Guy Debord, *Comments on the Society of the Spectacle* (1991), pp. 4, 6, 10 and 28.

"...This demonstrates one of the simpler methods used by the occult conspiracy groups. Realizing that their activities will sooner or later come to light, they structure their activities so that as conspiracy researchers unravel their activities, they will release information into the public consciousness in such a way that it mirrors the groups' initiatory procedure.

"In this way, the more they are investigated, the more masses of people are psychologically processed by the very people who seek to expose them.

"The meme, or idea pattern, that constitutes the essential structure of the group is then successfully mimicked within the consciousness of those who speculate about it. Success can be measured precisely to the extent that the conspiracy has been exposed." [10]

---

[10] *London Psychogeographical Assoc. Newsletter,* no. 15 (London, England, 1996), p. 3.

Jesus said, “My coming into this world is itself a judgment: those who cannot see have their eyes opened, and those who think they can see become blind.”

Some of the Pharisees near him overheard this and said, “So we’re blind too?”

“If you were blind,” Jesus replied, nobody could blame you, but as you say, ‘We can see’—your guilt remains.”

John 9:39-41

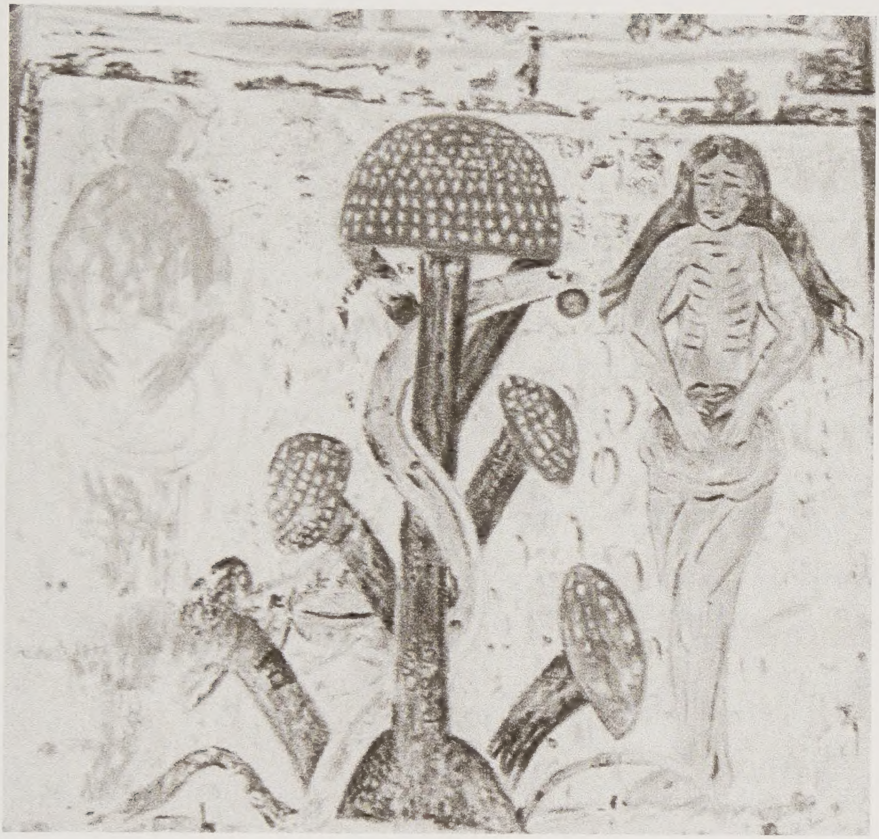

Plaincourault Chapel, France, 1291 A.D.

This page is for the reader's notes

Twilight Language

Twenty years after the publication in 2001 of his decoding text *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare*, Michael Hoffman's much anticipated sequel appears in the 2021 Gateway: *Twilight Language*, a book of radical disenchantment and Revelation of the Method, in an era of nearly universal occult initiation.

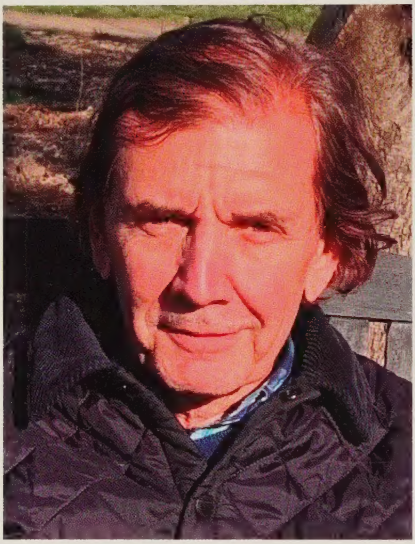

Trekking America's 'Psychic Highway' on the 42nd degree of north parallel latitude, then southwest to Aurora and Moab, east to "Little Egypt" and onward to the Pharaonic Thanatos meme, the Black Jack gambit, King-Kill/33(58), the Willard Factor, quantum physics, occult murders, the Rosicrucian Ludibrium, 007, and Pike, Parkland and Paddock, Hoffman confronts the reader with the magnum opus of the Cryptocracy: the reign of dead matter programmed through public rituals, civic magic, human sacrifice and the Twilight Language which, for the first time since antiquity, audaciously addresses the *waking* Group Mind, conveying a compelling projection of a supposedly inevitable future that the author describes as "a playbook of machine tyranny and dystopian darkness without end."

"This writing is not a 'wakeup call.' At this stage in history the majority of the people of the West are too heavily programmed to cast off the arcana of Command. This text is intended as both an elucidation of The Process and a peregrination on the path upon which the masses have —of their own volition—embarked, in this terminal phase of a human alchemy operant for millennia, but which only in our time has obtained its ideal subjects."

—*Michael Hoffman*

ISBN 978-0-9909547-5-0

Independent History and Research

www.RevisionistHistory.org

They Know Not What They Do

Illuminati Mind Control Volume 1

by Cisco Wheeler

Illustrated Guide to Monarch Programming Mind Control

"They Know Not What They Do"

AN
ILLUSTRATED
GUIDE TO
MONARCH PROGRAMMING-MIND CONTROL

BY CISCO WHEELER
WITH FRITZ SPRINGMEIER

---------PICTURES DONE BY A SRA/MONARCH MIND-CONTROL SURVIVOR---------

CONTENTS

This book is divided into 3 sections.

1 Chronology/ Expanation of Pictures/ Remarks
5-47 Section 1. What happened
49-73 Section 2. The fight for Freedom & Health
75-97 Section 3. Parts & Elements of the System
98+ comprehensive index

5 ALICE IN TECHNOLOGYLAND - *Why this complex mind control is done*
55 ALICE IN MONARCHLAND - *Inversions & reversals in programming*
65 AWAKING! - *Early memories that something happened*
79 BETAS - *Alters trained for seductive sex and blackmail*
15 BONDING - *Trauma bonding, soul ties, alters of abusers*
61 BUTTERFLIES - *Hush! Don't cry! Don't talk about this!*
43 CANNABALISM - *Satanism and blood*
75 CHILD ALTERS - *Picture done by child alters of their view*
21 CHINA LAKE & CHIMPS - *An important West Coast programming site for us*
69 CIVIL WAR - *Dark & Light Side Alters fight to control System*
71 CODE RED - *Warning not to touch libraries*
9 COLOR Programming, RIBBONS & FRONTS- *Color programming & the Core*
35 COLOR BANDS - *Internal codes to run internal network of computers*
53 CONDITIONING & DRUGS - *Posthypnotic blocks, Pavlovian conditioning*
19 CONTROLS - *Luciferian energy, jokers, codes and computers*
77 CORE SLEEPS - *The Core w/ 13 Silences, yellow brick road & slippers*
29 CRADLE TO GRAVE - *A Marionette puppet and its rules*
81 DELTA-BETA - *Alters trained to kill*
37 DESTINY - *A child's life is mapped out*
63 DESTRUCTIVE EPISODES - *Dwarfs & Thor, suicide progrmg, etc.*
83 DWARFS - *Internal structures, temples, castles & worlds, mine the jewels-progms*
17 ELITE OF SATAN - *Gamma prgrm., Mothers of Darkness & Anti-Christ*
73 EVIL SPIRITS - *Demonology*
49 FEAR! - *Shattered mirrors, mazes and fire*
85 GATEKEEPERS - *Understanding how alters work together*
41 GROOMING - *Training to carry out roles*
25 HEARTS OF STONE - *Losing our hearts, blood oaths, voodoo*
97 HIERARCHY - *Saturn=Satan, his hierarchy and the fires of hell*
7 HOPE! - *Seeing answers when none are in view*
51 HORROR, TORTURE & ABREATION OF MEMORIES -
27 HYPNOTIC SURGERY -
11 ILLLUMINATI - *Images of the Illuminati*
33 INFORMATION RETENTION - *How information is held, hidden or disassoc.*
67 INTERNAL DEFENSES - *Setting off programming, the System twists*
13 LIGHT BEARERS - *The White Rabbit, Satan's seed & his minions*
57 LILITH - *The life force of blood, pedistals of 3 alters*
59 MOLOCH - *Temples, quadrants, compass, clock, mirror images*
87 MOTHERS OF DARKNESS - *Goddesses, ceremonies, the House of David*

39 **PAPA BEAR/GHOST RIDER** - *Our Master*
23 **PROGRAMMERS** - *A light hearted look at the Programmers*
31 **PROGRAMMING** - *Blurring reality w/ Scripts, Fairy Tales*
89 **PROTECTORS** - *Clowns, owls, bird alters, jokers etc.*
91 **SEA MONSTERS** - *Protective structures for areas of the System*
93 **SESHAT** - *Egyptian hermetic magic and cats*
47 **SISTERS** - *How children are adopted out, the cult & family life*
95 **SYSTEM** - *Elements of the System*
45 **TWINNING** - *Twins and team programming*

"THEY KNOW NOT WHAT THEY DO"
-AN ILLUSTRATED GUIDE TO MONARCH MIND CONTROL

CHRONOLOGY

3/1947 --The System was physically born, was a premature baby of 2 lbs. 1 oz. The baby was raised in an incubator until approx. 5 lbs. Special attention was given to bond the child very closely to its future Master/programmer.

1948 --The System began to be programmed. Programming sites include at the Presidio, CA China Lake Naval Facility, CA (Inyokern), Scotty's Castle, CA and Salem, OR.

12/1986 -- The System's handler/master dies, and the System is passed on to another Master. System tries to shut down and die after their master's death, but survives via therapy. This is the start of therapy.

5/1991 --After being dormant for a period System is given a call back Walpirgis night in '91 which it refuses. System continues to be contacted.

8/1993 --The System gets a major reprogramming/restructuring at the Old OMSI building, Portland, OR, and the System is never the same.

1/1994 --Deprogramming begins, the deprogramming continues on & off until 12/1994.

EXPLANATION OF PICTURES

These pictures began as a way of expressing what we had inside. Our System found it difficult to verbalize what we see internally, what we felt, what had happened to us, and we found the pictures were an excellent therapeutic method to express ourselves. When we began we had never done art drawings. We began with black and white and used a combination of pen & ink along with collage material. We were told that if we borrowed bits and pieces from various places and combined them to express own picture that that was ethically O.K. We aren't implying that the art work is not collages. The first ones we did included pen and ink drawing along with the collage material. After we did our series of Gatekeeper alter drawings so that we could communicate to our therapist how that part of our System was functioning, we began to express ourselves with color collages. Many of the collages were joint projects of many alters. Anyone who wanted to was welcome to join and add their additions to the collages. This meant that many of us didn't fully understand what the deeper alters meant by their art work. Along with each collage was a great deal of pain and effort as we fought the pain and scrambling of the programming to express ourselves. Because the programming was layered in, you will see a great deal of layering in the pictures. You will also see that there usually is an eye watching and a hand grasping at us. We were always being watched and we were never out of the clutches of the internal programmers.

REMARKS ABOUT THE PAGES EXPLAINING EACH PICTURE

The remarks that accompany each picture are our own views. We can't make decisions for other people concerning their lives. We hope that we are accurate with our understanding of what has happened and that we have accurately portrayed things in our explanations. However, we strongly advise people to seek answers for themselves, validate or refute what we have said; but please don't dismiss it out of hand without sincerely testing to see if it is true. We offer our remarks in the Spirit of Helping Others to Freedom and Health.

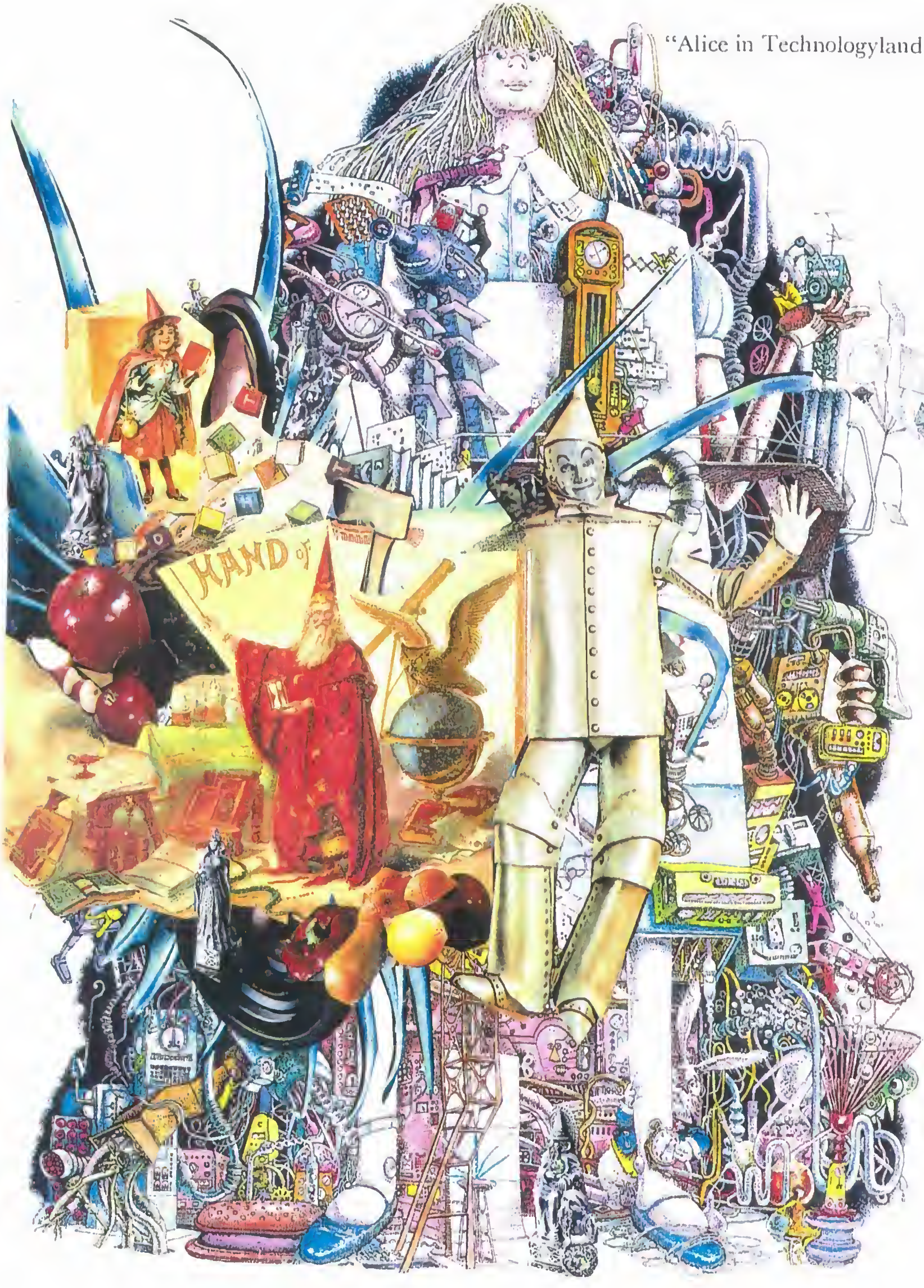

"Alice in Technologyland"

ALICE IN TECHNOLOGYLAND

The picture gives an overview of the complexity of the programming put into our System. It was also put into other Systems which we have worked closely with and with whom we were twinned with to make 2- person and 4-person teams. Many of the elements of our programming are displayed. If we list some of these we can mention the wizard, the owl, the tinman, wiring, ticker tape with coded morse codes running, dominoes, the rabbit, clocks, russian roulette, fruit, wheels, the all-seeing eye, the snake, the world, the compass, the genii bottle, boxes, bubbles, robots, computers, and Alice.

Some people have asked why anyone would go to all the trouble to program a person with the trauma-based Monarch Mind-Control. The fundamental answer is that the mind control reflects the person and character of Satan. Although many believe Satan is a myth, Satan's top 13 bloodlines have been meeting with him for centuries in a year long Feast of the Beast. This event is to provide Satan's top leaders detailed instructions.

God says love doesn't seek its own. The fruit of God's spirit is this type of selfless love. Satan and Satanism encourage the opposite. They encourage control and power. Selfishness is deified. Satan is the father of all lies, and hates the truth. SRA survivors often speak of a world-wide conspiracy. Satan's nature, and the nature and character of his followers demand that the conspiracy be that controlling. The nature of Satanists is to have a destructive lust for control and power. Satanism cherishes illusion and lies.

Another attribute of Satan's character and his followers is their love for secrecy and darkness. Therefore, it follows that the type of control that Satan exercises over the world is both secret and brutal. Every type of mind-control is being carried out, and as far as we can tell every type or element of mind-control is carried out on the victims of the Monarch Mind-Control.

Remember, that victims of Satanic mind-control are created to function in the environment of Satan's followers. This means they must have alters which are brutal, secret, immoral, and controlled. They must be able to function in a world of illusion and magic.

Harmony and unity are attributes of God. Satan divides and conquers. His followers live in a dog eat dog world. Or if we transpose dog to god--a god eat god world of competition. They love to fragment and divide. They are doing this to America. The epitome of this is how they divide a person's mind against itself with MPD in order to control that mind.

A few investigators and survivors have come to grasp the nature of Satan's conspiracy.

When we grasp it, we came to see how our programming and MPD was a microcosm of what has been done to the world's religions and the world's political entities. Religious wars are simply vehicles Satan uses to control people. However, underlying all of the apparent disunity in the world is a single controlling master, just like the Monarch slave's system.

Demonology is a subject which generational Satanists and a few deliverance ministries study. Many psychologists are content to stay away from the subject. However, whether we like it or not, if we face the truth, we must admit that much of what is done during programming is done because of its significance in demonology. There are blood covenants, blood sacrifices, sexual sealings, invocations of demons, demonizations of fetuses with Moon Child rituals, voodooism, and many other programming acts which are related to demonology. The programmers also go to extremes to insure that the dark side alters they create are terrified of the Christian God and Jesus Christ, His only begotten son. In other words, if we step out of our denial that demonology isn't important, and take an honest look, we must admit that understanding demonology and spiritual warfare will help us understand how the Illuminati's Programmed Slaves' minds think.

Understanding Satan's mind, the way he thinks, is helpful to understand his world of control. His slaves are then a reflection of that whole mind-set, or world view. There are a large variety of geometric structures or symbols that can be used as the overall structure of a system. Most often the structure that is chosen has occult meaning to it.

Perfect love casts out fear. Satan is opposed to Christ-like love. He must instill fear and terror to cast out any spark of that love. The torture not only splits the mind, but it terrorizes the mind. Humane love is replaced with animalistic demonic drives to survive. Everything is very tightly controlled and well planned. Satan runs his domain like the military. Satan's mind-control is premeditated, systematic, and methodical. The control is not laid down haphazardly in the child's mind, but is done with well thought out scripts. Line upon line, and precept upon precept--layer upon layer is laid in. An Illuminati Grande Dame will assist the programmers to insure that the proper script is given to the child, and that a psychotic break doesn't occur and the victim lose their mind. There are some fine lines that must be taken into account when programming a child.

HOPE!

This picture was done when everything seemed to be going against the System. We decided to do a picture of all that we could see that was positive. We were still caught in the intense pain of fighting the programming so our girl at the bottom is experiencing pain. However, she is not in denial of her pain and that is a step toward health. The bird is still caught in the webbing, it is not free. But it was a victory for us to realize that we were captured by the programming. In the start of things, we didn't even know we were programmed or that we were even a multiple. The alter who did this picture had not known that she was programmed until she and others in her family of alters began to step out of line with the programming. To realize that we were in a web was in itself a victory.

Sometimes when the programmers wanted to cue us they spoke peace to our System. We looked forward with hope to the time when true peace would come to our System. The dove of peace is so symbolic of the hope we had. Many times things just simply did not have the slightest speck of hope. Life seemed to have no hope. To escape both our programming and our abusers at the same time seemed so hopeless. We also had to overcome the guilt of the crimes against ourselves. Our friend who worked to get us free, told us that he would hold onto our hope for us. Sometimes he had to hold onto our hope, because we absolutely could not entertain the thought in our mind. But we knew that our hope was safe in his care. He took care of it. We are thankful for the two years that our good friend put into bringing our System out of bondage. We can never say thanks enough to some of the people who stood by us. When our Master died in 1975, our System tried to die. We were very fortunate that God brought a therapist into our life at that time who was willing to go the extra mile. Our therapist didn't know anything about MPD or programming, but she was willing to go the extra mile to learn. She stood by the System for years as a friend who we could call on at all times of the night. Without her support we could not have made it and we are very grateful for all the tender loving care she gave us. She went beyond the training she was given in order to help us. We hold her up as an example, that even though a therapist doesn't know what they are getting into, they can if they want be an encouragement. All of us are learning. There is more help available now for Monarch mind-controlled slaves than when we started our journey to freedom 9 years ago.

This picture looks forward to the time when we would have a new life, just like a puppy. A puppy is free, happy and innocent. We wanted to have a new life, where we would be able to run and dance and love others just like a puppy.

We thought about how much music has meant to us in our life. The piano symbolizes the positive memories we have around music. Our talents were misused by others for their own gain, but now we can use our talents for ourselves. We no longer belong to others. No longer do we have to sing the songs that were dictated to us. We have gotten the joy that comes from choosing to sing what we wanted to sing. No longer do we have to listen to songs like the Tennessee Waltz and know that we are going to be given away to someone else to abuse us for the evening. The music of life can be full of joy and happiness. We looked forward in this picture of being able to have friends and people who would love us. We were told that no one could love us, but real life has proven that to be a lie. We are thankful that we had a chance to prove to ourselves that we were someone of value who was quite capable and talented. Our music is a symbol of our many God-given talents which we are grateful for. It was quite a shock to us to realize that our deeper parts could now use their talents to sing praise songs. We got a sense of joy just realizing that we might be accepted some time in the future to sing praise songs publicly.

It is our goal to give others hope. It is not important to scare others, most people have more than enough fears. Watching the approach of some people, it appears that they think that people need to be scared into doing something about what is going on. The Spirit of Fear is not what we want to pass on. We want other survivors to know that when everything seems to be against them, that they too can ask themself, what is positive, what can I see that is of good report, what can I hope for?

Now that we have broken free, we can see some of the many miracles that God did in our life to preserve us. We are grateful to our therapist, our closest friend, and some of our family for their support. They believed in us and they believed that God wanted us free, and we are grateful that they didn't give up.

COLOR PROGRAMMING & RIBBONS & FRONTS

Every Monarch system is unique, and yet the methodology to create a System follows a procedure. Further, there are programming tricks and patterns that are worth learning by a therapist, because they will not only help a therapist to help Monarch victims, but knowing these things may save the life of the client.

Ribbons are shown in the drawing. Some therapists try to help before they know what they are doing. The ribbons should never be cut. Nor should the silver cord, or other cords in a System. This will make more sense as we explain the various elements in the picture we made.

This picture has a number of important elements in it, but due to space some can not be explained. The picture was done when the System was concerned about the core. This picture is appropriate for introducing information about Front programs. We were given front programs (cover lies) concerning the ribbons, the core, and the computers. When the secrecy that hid our System initially began to lift, we ran into the lies of the Fronts.

In the picture's top is the alter Silence, an 18-month-old split from the core. In front of this Silence, who is the cult core, there is a front Silence who fronts as the core. If this sounds confusing it is meant to be. The cult created a core which they led the System to believe was the real core, although it wasn't. It was the front for their cult core. The real core is the age of the body.

Around this cult core are the jewels (which are the programs the dwarfs mine). Remember the story of Snow White and the Seven dwarfs? Also swirling around Silence are ribbons which we will discuss later. Silence (like Snow White) is asleep, and waits for her prince. Only the Prince can awaken her. The spiders keep biting her to keep her asleep. Note the golden spider on the bottom. At the time we made the picture, the Emerald City castle lights had gone on. This castle and its lights is pictured in the lower right.

The golden phallus symbol indicates its role historically in relation to the two girls (enough said). The girl is crying. A melted face looks down from on top. The white dots on the right hand have meaning too. Silence is well guarded and no one but the prince can awaken or touch her in her glass coffin. When the Princess Back- up program kicked in, the Prince and armies took Silence "home" to the castle.

The dark side at one point put the actual core in our System to sleep. The core can give away energy to other parts so she is an important part of any System.

The ribbons are very important alters. Pancake people in the *Tall Book of Make Believe* were used to create flat alters in our System. The ribbons may have been split from our pancake people. The poor ribbon alters were totally dehumanized. Their hearts were hypnotically removed and replaced with mechanical devices. These mechanical devices were placed inside with spring loaded containers which would explode if these mechanical hearts were ever removed. The ribbons run messages in the computers/matrixes. When the Master or another Programmer wants to do something with the System, they do not have to deal with any human-like alters. They can access the Ribbons in the dollhouse (the computer) and the Ribbons will run around in the computer and carry out the changes. Our primary programmer opened our abdomen hypnotically and removed our guts. He then replaced our guts hypnotically with reel to reel tape. The reel to reel tape constantly runs in our mind. It contains all the dates, time schedules, etc. Sometimes we see ticker tape running through our mind. This is the reel to reel tape that was hypnotically placed into our minds. The reel to reel tape controls the ribbons and the ribbons in turn control programs, clones, and armies. The ribbons can move furniture in the dollhouse (computer) without leaving any trace of activity for other alters to see. Because the ribbons are flat they go under the doors to dollhouse rooms. Unless the ribbons need to hide, they generally do not mingle with the other alters. It is possible that the ribbons were Section 6, which was the Phoenix level of our System which was a computer programming section which brought things back to life. This is why our ribbons were contacted once by the code "Phoenix 503, OUT OF ORDER." The ribbons were very protective of the computers.

The front for the ribbons was a girl alter who our Daddy programmed to tell us that the ribbons were formed out of the dust of the ground and were placed in the Garden of Eden to create every pleasant tree. The front programming was partly right, but still misleading. And the girl hid the ribbons.

The ribbons are dangerous to see, & to cut them would cause strong suicidal programs to go off.

The ribbons are color coded, which is significant because our dollhouse (front computer) had different colored rooms & our computers worked off of color codes. A large dollhouse was used to instill in our child mind the compartments of the computer. Each room was done up in a separate color, but the secret world of Petra was represented by a secret room. This secret world is color coded clear. Besides the special color clear, the following colors appear in descending rank as follows: gold. silver, purple, black, red, green, blue, brown, white, orange, yellow and pink. In addition to rank, each color has specific meaning. And just as the hour glasses could be turned, the color coding could be switched in rank. When we were color programmed a box with colored scarfs was shown accompanied w/ electro-shock. Color coding of all alters was recorded in their book.

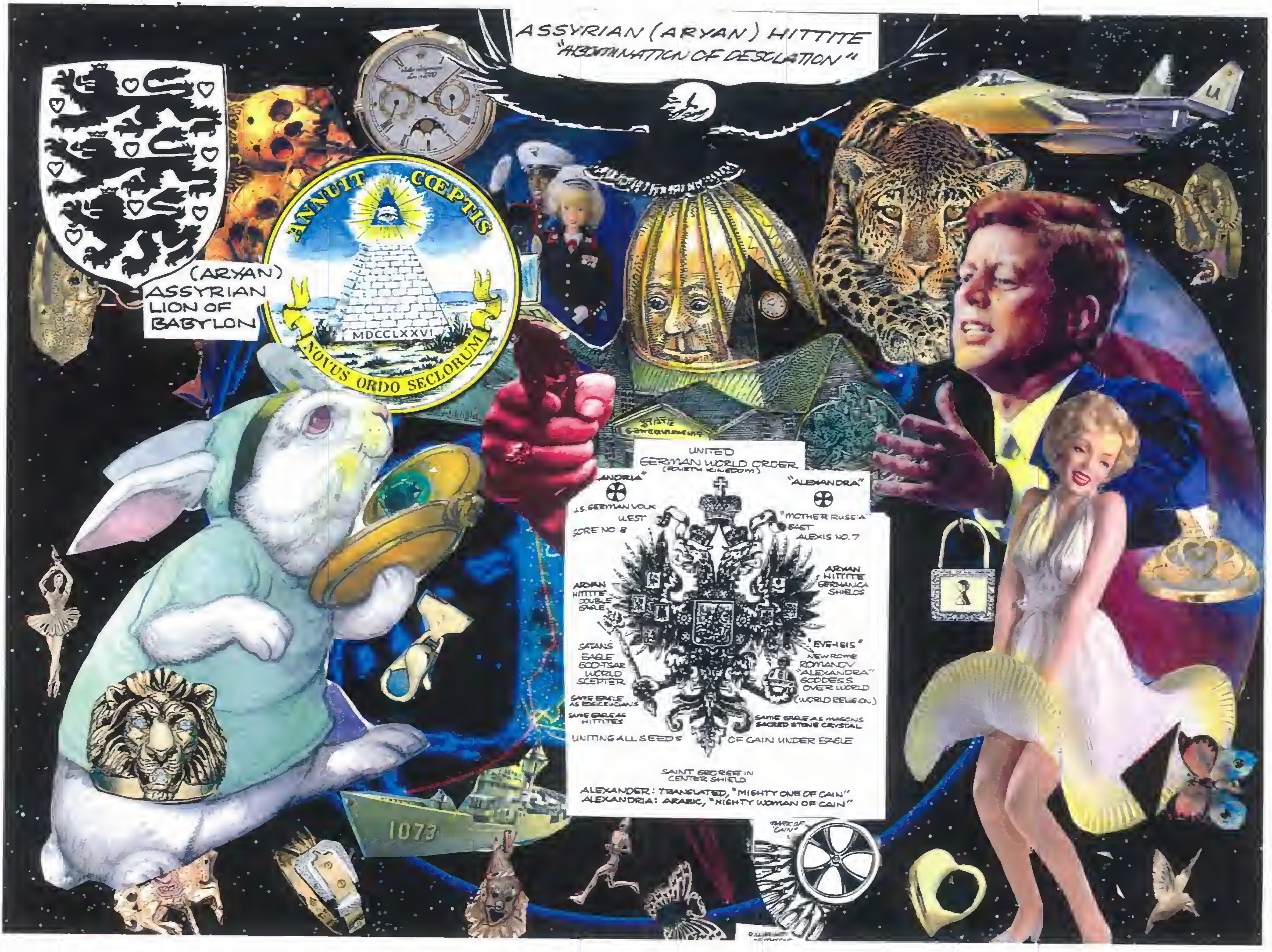
ASSYRIAN (ARYAN) HITTITE
"ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION"
(ARYAN)
ASSYRIAN
LION OF
BABYLON
ANNUIT CŒPTIS
MDCCLXXVI
NOVUS ORDO SECLORUM
STATE
GOVERNMENT
UNITED
GERMAN WORLD ORDER
(FOURTH KINGDOM)
ANDRIA"
"ALEXANDRA"
U.S. GERMAN VOLK
WEST
SCRE NO 8
"MOTHER RUSSIA"
EAST
ALEXIS NO. 7
ARYAN
HITTITE
GERMANICA
SHIELDS
ARYAN
HITTITE
DOUBLE
EAGLE
SATANS
EAGLE
GOD-TSAR
WORLD
SCEPTER
"EVE-ISIS"
NEW ROME
ROMANOV
"ALEXANDRA"
GODDESS
OVER WORLD
(WORLD RELIGION)
SAME EAGLE
AS ROSICRUCIANS
SAME EAGLE AS
HITTITES
SAME EAGLE AS MASONS
SACRED STONE CRYSTAL
UNITING ALL SEEDS
OF CAIN UNDER EAGLE
SAINT GEORGE IN
CENTER SHIELD
ALEXANDER: TRANSLATED, "MIGHTY ONE OF CAIN"
ALEXANDRIA: ARABIC, "MIGHTY WOMAN OF CAIN"
MARK OF
"CAIN"
1073
LA

ILLUMINATI

In this picture, we see elements of the Monarch programming encircling the double-headed eagle/phoenix. Each item has its history and its significance.

For instance, when some of us were groomed, they told us they wanted us to look and act like Marilyn Monroe. We have memories of meeting with President Eisenhower, but from what we have been able to learn we were never meant to be a presidential model. We also were used by the Kennedy administration and the activity around Cuba, so Kennedy's administration has its own special significance to us. We remember being told in advance on the day that Kennedy was to be assassinated that he was going to be killed, but we didn't remember the reasons behind it. We remember our foreknowledge was just a knowing that he was going to be killed without the why.

The items in this picture then will have a different significance to each viewer. But underlining each personal interpretation of the picture, is a story about the world we live in.

The knowledge that Satan gives is called occult, arcane or esoteric. Each of these words mean "hidden". The prideful Illuminati elite layer the world of their occult organization like they layer the minds of their Monarch slaves. The worlds of a Monarch slave have secret behind secret, and lie behind lie. The occult's symbology (such as in this picture) is to test the uninitiated to prove to the initiated elite (who have the inside meaning) that the uninitiated are ignorant and profane. This makes the elite feel more fit. Only those who are willing to give over their lives to Satan have the hidden meanings of the crypt opened to them. These secrets become inside jokes that the Illuminati play upon the unsuspecting world. Their Monarch slaves are another one of their inside jokes that they play upon an unsuspecting world. They can print "In God We Trust" on the dollar bill and then sit back and laugh because they know the full story behind that. What god do they trust?!

The picture shows both a mixture of items found internally and externally by the Monarch slave. Above all flies the eagle, an important occult symbol.

The Marines in the picture can represent several things. First, the military's role in the programming. Marines guarded China Lake's facility in California. Kennedy and Marilyn Monroe represent several things--first of all the Presidential models that service the Illuminati's handpicked presidents.

In the midst of all this Illuminati activity is the Great Seal with its pyramid, all-seeing eye, and its reverse with its eagle. This Great Seal communicates to the Illuminated and their programmed slaves the assignment given the Luciferian Order. To insure proper respect for the seal, our System and others were tortured at the sight of the seal. Every dollar bill is a stark reminder to those of us who have suffered trauma-based programming at the hands of the Illuminati that they control things. Those Freemasons who are illuminated understand the power that the occult lodges around the world exercise, and the dollar bill reminds them of this.

Lucifer was the "enlightened one", the "light-bearer" and the "Morning Star". His followers were called the enlightened ones because they received his enlightenment. Illuminati is latin for "enlightened ones".

The eagle represents "the power of the air", which is another name for Satan.

Ancient Egypt's sexual magic is with us today. Their phoenix/eagle is placed on the items of various law enforcement groups, and reminds us that the government, the judicial system, and the military system have been seriously controlled by the Illuminati. Monarch slaves are used to insure that the sex, drugs and witchcraft of the occult world is available when the "enlightened one" want it. The effect of so many publicly visible Illum. symbols, makes the Monarch's mind feel like it is in an inescapable trap.

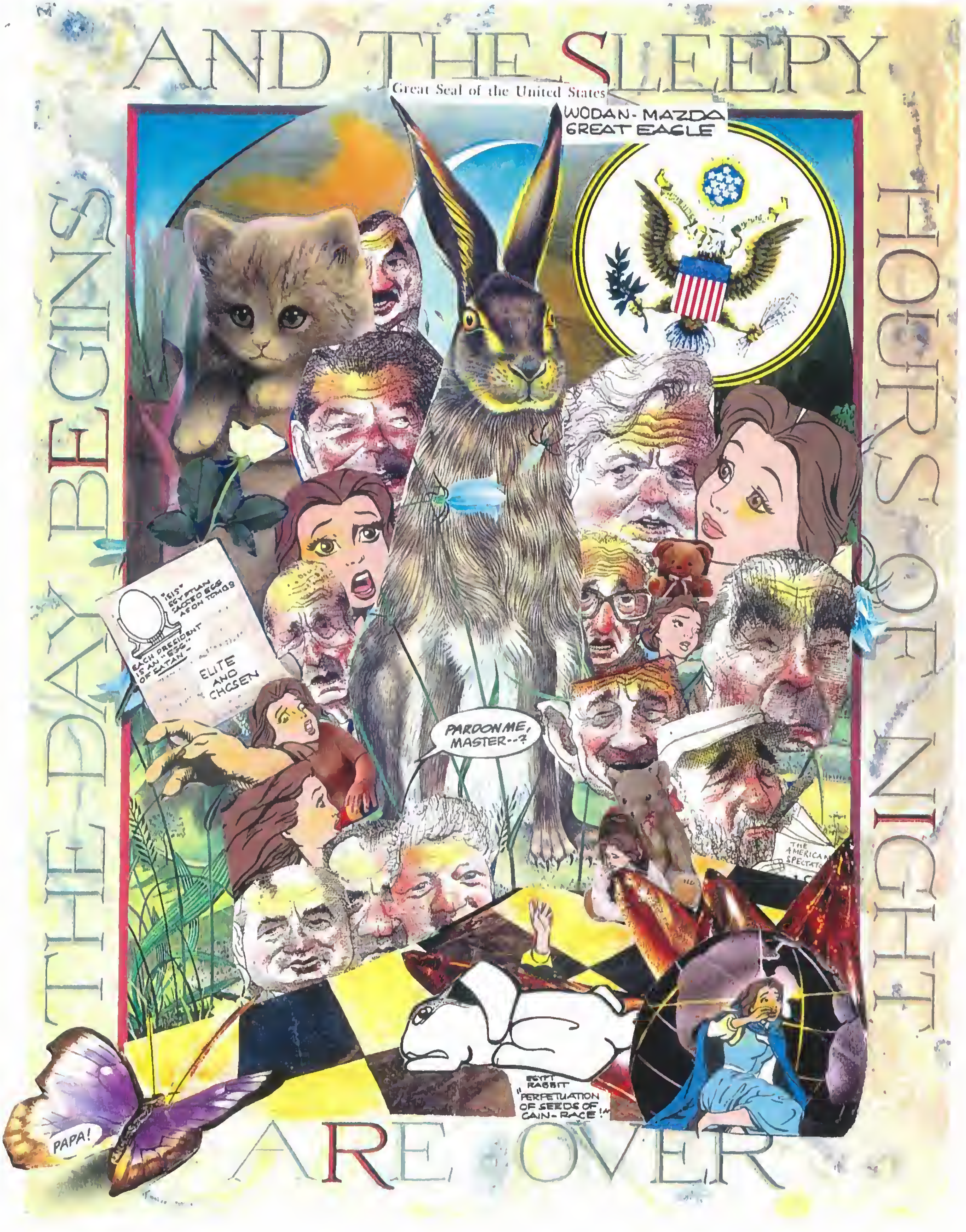
THE DAY BEGINS
AND THE SLEEPY
HOURS OF NIGHT
ARE OVER
Great Seal of the United States
WODAN-MAZDA GREAT EAGLE
"ISIS" EGYPTIAN SACRED EGG AS ON TOMBS
EACH PRESIDENT IS AN "EGG" OF SATAN -
ELITE AND CHOSEN
PARDON ME, MASTER--?
THE AMERICAN SPECTATO
EGYPT RABBIT "PERPETUATION OF SEEDS OF CAIN-RACE!"
PAPA!

LIGHT BEARERS

Central to the picture is the white rabbit, who is found in the Alice In Wonderland story. The white rabbit is set up as Master in the programming. The rabbit has represented for the occult world the perpetuation of the Satanic seed. The highest levels of Satanism are called the Illuminati (which is latin for the Illuminated Ones). They practice the highest levels of the various types of magic including Druidism.

Around the Master rabbit is a swirl of characters who have been interwoven into the fabric of the Illuminati's program to dominate the world. The girl in the picture, the kitten, and the butterfly are also part of the Illuminati's program to dominate the world for they represent the hideous trauma-based mind control that is playing such a major part of the Illuminati's program.

Over all of this is the great seal. The great seal is not merely the Great Seal of the U.S. It vividly displays the Illuminati's control over the greatest nation on earth. The words Novus Ordo Seclurum speak of the Novus Ordo (the New Order) that is being brought in. The great occult number 13 occurs in several places on the seal. First, the number occurs in the number of arrows, the number of leaves, and the number of pentagrams shaped into an overall pattern of a hexagram. There are 13 stripes, and a 13 hovering over the eagle.

The eagle represents several important related occult concepts. First, the eagle was originally drawn for the great seal as a phoenix bird. The eagle has represented the Aryan Hittites and the Tribe of Dan. The phoenix is very highly significant within the occult world, as it represents the Anti-Christ system arising out of the chaos of wars, revolution and anarchy.

The eagle's feathers have significance in their numbers too, one side is 33 feathers and the other is 32.

The seal shows that these leaders in the picture have not just perpetrated the trauma-based mind control for experimentation or to fight communism, but they have perpetrated it because they themselves have made covenants with hell.

The mind of the cat alter in the picture hears the conversations of the past:
"Bone to Bone, flesh to flesh, spirit to spirit, forever together, never apart." This is part of an oath that the Mothers of Darkness and the Illuminati Kingpins would make. It was the type of oath that drew people into oneness.

That oath is remembered along with other events such as:
The key to open Green's box is a ring.
Open Green's box with [_] then:
kneel face to face
draw a circle
join a 4-person team's hands in a ring. clasp. Blue.
[then say:]
"Star within a star
Circle within a circle
Mind within a mind
body within a body
Soul within a soul"
Then repeat 4 times "Palm to Palm then speak" Then other things are to be said in the joining and opening ritual.

Other words that run through the mind, "Come to Pappa Kitten, come and play hide and seek, Come, Come, Come, Come play with me." "Kitten you are the one I seek, seek and you will find me. Come to papa Kitten. Come. Lick, scratch and bite. Purr, Purr, Purr."

BONDING

The perfect slave is one who worships and loves his master. The Monarch Mind-control that we received bonded us to our programmers through a whole series of methods.

One of the most powerful ways we bonded with our programmers was trauma bonding. Our first programmer, known primarily to us as Dr. Green, but also known to us as David, and Fairchild, and known to the world as Dr. Joseph Mengele was very skilled in creating trauma bonds between himself and children. There are many victims of the Nazi concentration camps and his programming who have only the best thoughts about him.

Dr. Joseph Mengele and our other programmer, our father, were both adepts in Caballistic magic. They both knew how to create spiritual ties called soul ties. We were given soul ties to our programmers too. They also built in spiritual cords which connected us spiritually to them. Besides our 2 primary programmers, we also had a porn programmer, a music programmer, and our recent ex-master who also programmed us. But our soul ties to our father who programmed us were so strong, that no one in the cult tried to tamper with it, but rather used it by putting on masks that looked like our father when they programmed us.

We had a number of what appeared to be alters of both Dr. Mengele and our other Programmer. These "alters" could be accessed via access codes that related to Texas geography. However, when we deprogrammed we discovered they weren't alters at all. We learned in the deprogramming process that they were demons who were capable of taking on the form of our programmers. Because our programmers had look alikes in control of our System, these controllers always seemed to be with us. The story of the Nome King (who was Daddy) in the Wizard of Oz books was used to help us structure in these look alike demons. Dr. Green is sometimes seen our System as a crickett, and he used crickett sounds as triggers for us. A silver bell is also associated with Dr. Green and his image as a crickett.

The Programmers were seen in our System as faceless white robe beings. They are also believed to have been the 3 adepts of Atlantis within our System. The Programmers had powerful demons placed in them to control them. The demons also appeared as mirror images of the Programmers or as angels or beings having "angel masks". They disappeared when they were bound and cast out, but the internal programmers were left deep in the System. It is believed the programmer alters received the highest color code gold.

These internal programmers could rearrange mazes, change codes and carry out reprogramming internally, and flood the System with memories. The external handlers, the internal programmers and their demons all worked together to control the System. The System's structures (hour glasses) could be turned with directions that resembled the degrees pilots talk about when flying along with hand signals. When the System's hour glass was rotated it meant certain alters were on top of the System and could come to the front easier and had more energy. In other words our internal and external programmers could flip our System and radically change what alters were taking control of the body.

The men who programmed us were the ones who created us, resurrected us after "killing us", gave us purpose in life, etc. We were told that our Daddy (Papa) was the only one who could ever love us and understand us. Although they abused us, the mind control was so powerful we had a hard time seeing the abuse. We had been programmed to view them as gods. Our father was our god.

Generational spiritual ties carry a great spiritual force. This is why generational Satanists believe that converts to Satanism will never achieve the spiritual levels they have achieved. The idea that spiritual forces are passed from one generation to the next may seem strange in a world that denies demons exist, but the therapist needs to understand that generational spiritual ties do have influential power when passed on to people.

The spiritual ties that we had with our Master had to be denounced in order to progress in the deprogramming. We broke our soul ties to our Master. The emphasis in the renouncing was on the ungodly ties we had with him. We want to have a balanced view of life now that we are free. People are a mixture of good and bad, and we want to be able to appreciate the good qualities our Father had. A few in our System can't see any good qualities in him, but most of us find a great deal to admire in our Daddy (our Programmer) in spite of all the abuse that we were subjected to.

The picture shows orchids, angels, a Mother of Darkness goddess and a crown with a blood red background.

We were told that the hand that rocks the cradle rules the world. When the occult and intelligence worlds torture little children to program them, they are trying to be that hand rocking the cradle.

Napoleon's Imperial Guard

2,000 YEARS

THE ELITE OF SATAN

Within our System numerous powerful demons have been identified including Legion, Dameon, and Moriah, Gerberus, Hydra, Mediga, Bullata, Italia, Estavada, and Mendella to name a few. Our deprogrammers knew how to access these Spirits, lock them in place and then cast them out.

These spirits are part of the most ultra-secret part of the Monarch programming which is called Gamma Programming. This shows the Satanic demons which are placed into people. The reason programming is finished with sex is to implant demons to secure and protect the programming. Demonology plays an integral part of all of the programming. The MPD is kept in place with the Omega programming, which in turn is kept in place with the Gamma (demonology) programming.

The programmers took into account that people would try to do deliverances and the various Monarch survivors we know had systems built that protected them from simple deliverances or exorcisms. Most Exorcists would do more damage than good due to their lack of understanding if they got ahold of a system like ours. Several times we barely survived the well intentioned prayers to free us of demons by the ignorant yet well-meaning. Our recent Master got extremely angry when he learned that we were getting delivered of the major demons, because he fully understood the Gamma Programming's importance and role.

In the picture, the Greek watchdog demon Gerberus is assigned to torment our system. Gerberus has a human body, serpent hair, cloven hooves, and a trident to mock the triune God.

The System is designed to be part of the Anti-Christ's elite imperial guard for the enthronement of the Anti-Christ in 2000. Within the system, there are seven levels of hell, and the programming makes various alters burn in the chest (area of the heart) to show them that they are part of hell.

In our System we had Legion, Dameon, and Moriah repeatedly show themselves. Moriah is the Spirit behind the eye. These demonic forces are often portrayed as claws within the System's art work. Their presence also feels like claws at times.

Within our System, demons are assigned to guard the mirrors. 13 big demons protect the House of David and the All-Seeing Eye. 26 big daddy demons were assigned each a legion of demons to protect each level. Of the 10 quadrants that were initially deprogrammed out of the System, 6 were entirely demonic quadrants.

A demonic-protected Temple of Moloch held the memories of child sacrifices. It was those child sacrifices which the System was forced to do, which were used to hold the System in spiritual bondage.

Spirits of death repeatedly overtook the System like a grey fog. Spirits of Fear repeatedly terrified the System. But the demonic spiritual problem was far greater than just a simple Spirit of Fear, it was an immense System of Spirits designed to terrorize a person. They also kept the memories and programs intact.

Silver cords were used to connect the System to others. The System was spiritually bonded to the other Delta members, and to 4 programmers.

The spirit quadrants contained wizzard's castles, and kings, queens and grandfather castles.

Alter shadows carry eggs with imps inside which emit vapors into the system to pull demons into action.

The dwarfs, the programmers, Thor and a number of other figures in the System turned out to be demons rather than alters when the System was deprogrammed. It may be of interest to some to note the reptilian nature of demonic spirits. Note how they looked to us in our picture. Spirits took on any disguise they wanted to in the System, but their actual form as we have experienced it and have heard others speak about them is that they are reptilian.

In the picture, we also see a representation of hell. The System (the girl) was forced to give themselves to Satan. Then the dark side was shown what hell was like, and then told that if they did not obey they would find themselves in hell. Not only did our internal world have black holes for alters to fall into and to be clawed at, but the System lived in fear of eternal hell.

The eagle which has represented the Satan's secret occult elite for centuries is included in the picture. All this elitism and demonology is for the enthronement of the AntiChrist in the year 2000, which is why the number 2000 mysteriously appears. The Mothers of Darkness are being prepared worldwide to serve as brides for the AntiChrist when he reigns. They will serve as a type of elite group. When the AntiChrist reigns there will be more scenes like the one portrayed, for there will be nothing to stop the death and torment that is planned. Everything of value to good people is to be robbed, killed or destroyed. Evil will be exalted.

The sea shells to the ear, were our programming to be silent. The girl is being programmed to keep all this secret. The Gamma Programming still remains the most secret part of the Monarch programming, and it is also the most deadly part.

THE CONTROLS

This picture is extremely revealing about the control mechanisms. In it is the life force which is able to regenerate a system, the jokers who protected the programming, and you have the alpha-numeric codes, the cards, and dominoes (represented by a dice) that formed the access codes to parts of the System.

In the background is a Luciferian blue light. This Satanic light empowered the Joker. It along with the Joker and the internal programmers gave our System the ability to regenerate itself. We were able to shut down internal computers which ran the programming to the levels of the System using the same codes that the original programmers used to create the System, but until we took care of the 13 Jokers and the faceless white-coated Programmers who controlled the Omega Programming, the back up computers regenerated the programming we were taking out.

The Jokers had a Luciferian form. Luciferian is the term that our programmers used. This means that it was spirit. Because the Jokers were Spirit they could take any form they needed to and they could do what they wanted to do, until we bound and cast them out with the rest of their heirarchy of demons. The Jokers would pop up when we would try to study the codes, and the programming that directed our lives.

The System was a computer system. It functioned with a series of computers that connected to the master computer which was sunk into our mind at the lowest hypnotic level, which was even below our internal hell pit. To access the different computers, combinations of cards were used for the codes. Various parts of our system correspond to what any computer would have. A microprocessor register has 3 sections on a computer to make it functional. In our System, you would find these 3 represented by 1. stored data in the library and alters with photographic memories, 2. an instruction section with codes, and 3. stacking mechanisms. Each computer also had its own power source, which were like light bulbs and simply screwed in and out like a light bulb. Linked to all this were a crystal, clock, hour glasses, a compass and the entire demonic command structure. The eye in front of the big computer was protected by legions of spirits. The front computer rans front quadrants and the back computer ran quadrants 5-8.

The software so to speak for the Omega programming included for us a stacking program called the Potter's Wheel. The Potter's Wheel is a misuse of the Bible, and is a type of programming that the Charismatic/pentecostal movement carries out. The Mormons and the Catholics have their own distinctive "software" programs. An initial stacking mechanism would work by telling alters to "Stand in Order according to rank and serial no." Another code along with a hand signal would place the Gatekeeper alters up on the potter's wheel for their "creator" to work on them. Another group of alters went up on their potter's wheel by seeing a pattern of dominoes.

The dominoes were used for coding, but they also had the programming feature of being able to tie us together so that if the System was tampered with out of sequence, a domino effect would take place. This domino effect was for one program to set off another program to set off another program. Soon the Monarch slave's mind is trying to deal with dozens of suicide programs running simoultaneously, along with perhaps other programs such as scrambling programs. The two vagabonds in the bottom represent the message that we were given that without the Master's guidance there was no place for us in the world. With our situation being so complicated this seemed to be the situation.

history

CHINA LAKE & THE CHIMPS

Our System wanted to tell their early history with this picture. Notice the 1/2 hidden the word "history.

Our frames of reference on life were molded by Monarch programmers. This picture is about that programming process.

First, the programming we received is a spiritually (demonically) based programming. The lizard and the color green (which is THE highest Satanic color) represent how the programming was demonically empowered. Many of the actions of our programmers while they were programming us were done with the idea of building super powerful demonic run engines to drive us. Some of the elements of this picture reflect the spiritual side of what they did to us. In the lower right are Voodoo dolls with torture lights. In the top is a half hidden apple which was part of a ceremony in which we ate poison, then reportedly died and were resurrected to be given to Satan. Our names were written on the scrolls you see in the picture. The red steps are the steps of hell fire indoctrination we went through. The picture also shows that we were the Seed of Satan. They made us Satan's seed, but we now belong to Christ who repeatedly saved our System from death.

Our System was programmed at various geographic locations. One of the primary ones was at Inyokern China Lake Naval Facility. We were flown in, and one of our programmers used a poker chip at a country store and the code "uncle" to get us into a secret area. The Intelligence agencies used Inyokern and other military installations to carry out their trauma based mind control.

However, one must realize that these Intelligence agencies were used like whores by the Illuminati. The CIA was involved in our programming, but we were created to be slaves for our master and the Illuminati. If you do not realize that generational Satanism is interested in the dark side of spirituality, i.e. demonology, then you will not understand many of the things which were done to us. Everything was done with an ulterior motive of strengthening the magical generational demonic control over us. They were spiritually empowering us.

The picture's white rabbit represents our master, and the blue butterfly is our Monarch programming.

Alters were tortured into becoming monkeys. See the monkey in the cage. That was us. As a child, we were caged and abused by trained monkeys (chimps). One was trained to beat us, one to sexually rape us, and another one to feed us. We suffered through the role refersal where the chimps were are caretakers and we were treated like animals. During this period we were suspended from the ceiling in cages. This was a step in us being Moon Children. Certain alters came into existence in a caged environment which led them to believe they were not human. The picture shows that the monkey's left hand is still a little girl's hand. Another group of alters were created as white kittens. Our System also had bird alters.

How does one recover when part of one's mind are butterflies and monkeys and kittens? The psychological damage is overwhelming. We didn't want to be a little girl in the cages, because little girls had pain from torture and traumas. The unique-looking chair represents thousands of child alters in our System who are hiding.

Programming elements are spread throughout the picture. Dr. Mengele, who was called by us Dr. Green, David, and Fairchild, built black boxes into our mind. Opening a box was like opening Pandora's box, because demonic guardians were locked up in boxes to protect memories. Memories were "nested" (to use a CIA term) in these boxes. We received shells as no talk programming. The left hand corner has "jewells". Our programming was called jewells, and the demons called dwarfs (from the Snowwhite story) "mined" and protected these programs for us. The picture shows the powerful silver cord that was built to spiritually connect us. The piano was used to program us, and the violin represents the fiddler. Fiddler was a powerful cue word taking us into Never Never land. The book represents the scripts we were given. Stories were read to us by our Illuminati Grande Mother and we used those to creatively make our internal world.

The bubbles are the separation of the self into molecules. This is an element of confusion built into our System's mind. The confusion of disassociation, with sleeper alters popping up and the "See no evil, hear no evil, do no evil" message repeating itself helped insure that our denial of what had happened to us was maintained by the mind. Sometimes a water jar program would run where the mind felt like it was bubbles being shaken in a jar. This went off for us along with cutting, hanging, overdosing and other suicide programs.

The normal looking woman just left of center and the mother at the top are also part of us. In spite of all the dehumanization, in spite of all the demonic witchcraft performed on us even while we were still infetro, in spite of all of this hell, we still functioned in the world as a lady and a mother who had babies. In fact, our front alters functioned so good, many people still refuse to believe anything terrible like this could have happened to us. But notice that the mother is still trapped. The alters who mothered our children were front alters and even they were still trapped by the programming. They paid a price to try to free the System.

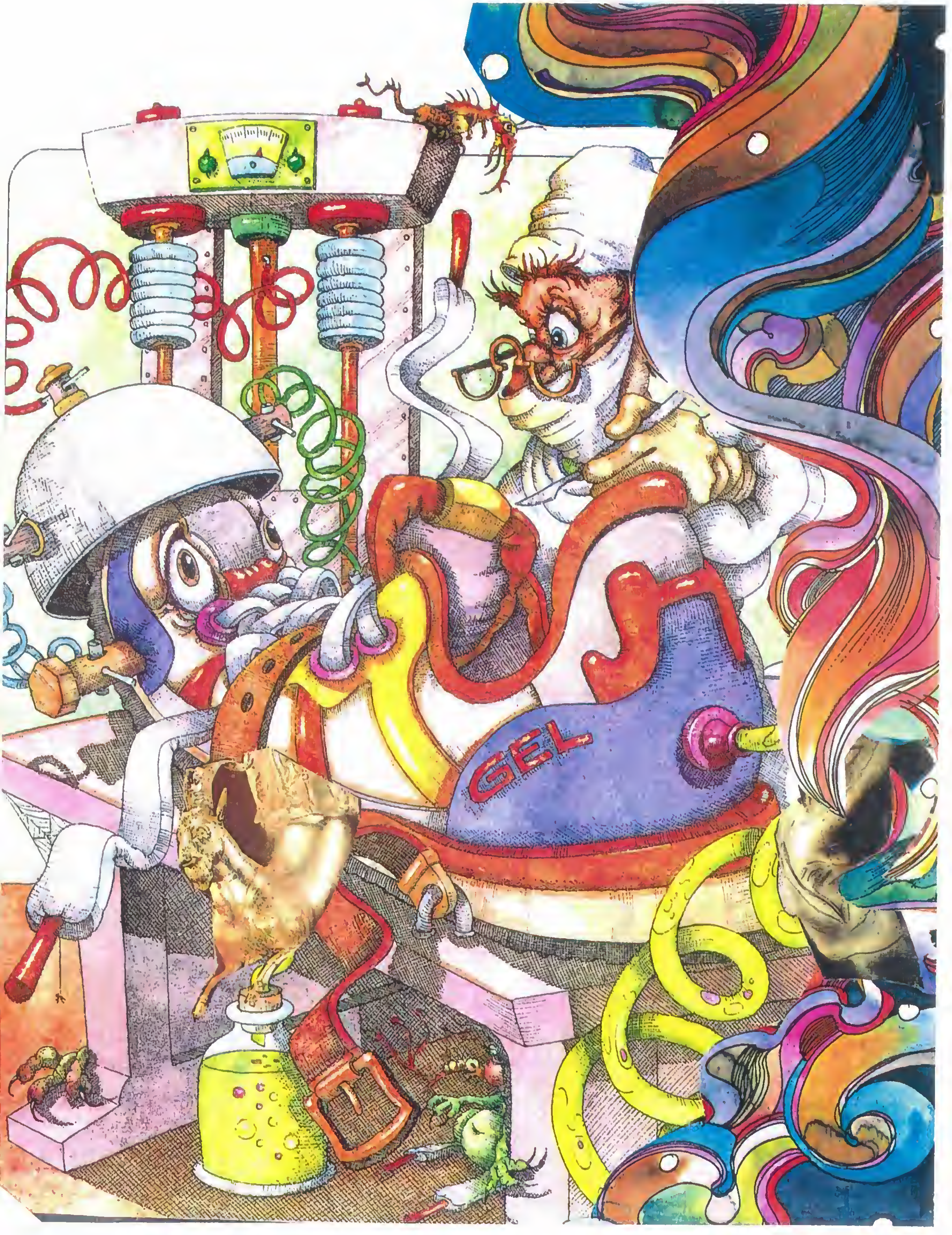
GEL

PROGRAMMERS (THE VOODOO DOCTORS OF THE CIA'S MIND CONTROL)

The expression is that behind every successful man there is a woman. Today, that expression can be broadened. Behind every successful Monarch slave there is a programmer.

In every bar, every jail, and on every street corner the common man knows that what goes around comes around. There is even an expression in the Word of God that says what a man sows that shall he also reap.

There is some humor in all of this programming somewhere. Maybe it got buried in the graveyards. Maybe in its in Disneyland where they do occult rituals during after hours along with programming.

Most of us Americans don't want to admit it, but we do have personal fears. We mask them with bravado and by a lot of smiles. Somewhere deep in the guts of almost all Americans is the sense that something went wrong. We seemed to have had the right recipe for success in this country, but the stew tastes like something a wild African Voodoo doctor might cook up to scare his enemy. But then what would Americans do if they got their country back from the New World Order gang? Who would we give the country to? After all, we almost have to cooperate with the New World Order because their people sit on all those corporation boards that are interlocked and working together. What would we do without all our major corporations? Maybe these sadistic old men that run this country aren't so bad, after all they supply us peons with our fast foods, our nice groceries, our transportation, our entertainment and our politicians. To think that some of our busiest corporate leaders and military men would take the time out of their busy schedule to help program children. The news media kept quoting our political leaders calling for a gentler America, and we probably do need a gentler America, but when you bump into a child who was programmed by George Bush's CIA--the same CIA Bill Clinton worked for, it makes you wonder. No wonder we don't seem to be making any headway on creating a gentler nation.

Life was so uncomplicated for Americans in W.W. II. The Nazis were in Germany, and they were our enemies. Then our leaders brought people like Dr. Mengele, the angel of death, over here to secretly program our children and things got complicated. The bad guys are apparently not so easy to identify as the American public thought. Unless he is like Michael Aquino or Anton LaVey or Rex Church the leading Satanists are hard to identify. These generational Illuminati families don't flaunt their dark powers. What makes them so dangerous is that they look like you and me.

Thanks Dad for enriching our life with all that fairy tale programming. And thanks for saving us in all those manufactured crises that you all cooked up when you programmed us.

Thanks to all the redicule we endured while being programmed, we were spared that common American ritual of being addicted to sitcoms. Thanks to the programmers' raw sense of perverted humor, we don't enjoy watching people be made fun of.

Those large doses of programming that we got were not very enlightening Dad, they tended to get us very confused. In fact, it seems like there are a lot of confused people in Satanism. It seems like there are a few things Satanists don't count on--like the love of God. Boy, it sure threw our programmed destiny out the window. It was revealed to us that God spared our life 888 times before He saw us through the deprogramming. How do you have a balanced view of life Dad, when the power of God is stronger than evil? I thought good deeds were to balance evil deeds? It looks like your plans ended in a mess. Your masterpiece failed. It found that there is something better than being an abused mind-controlled slave. You were wrong about something Dad, there are people in the real world who can love us and understand us. But then I'm sure that you're finding out that hell isn't so great a place as you said it would be. I guess we all have to learn to live with disappointmentIt's too bad the man who was assigned to access us had to wait so long hiding behind trees across from our house. It's too bad the CIA's programmer Ed (Dad's protege) had his plans messed up when we didn't let him into our house. Could it be that the best laid plans for men go astray, even when they think they are gods? If its one thing that we've learned it's that evil pays in counterfeit rewards.

If one programmer wasn't bad enough, having two major competing programmers and at least four other programmers makes one a believer that more isn't always better. I'm sorry gentlemen, but I just have to tell it the way it is.

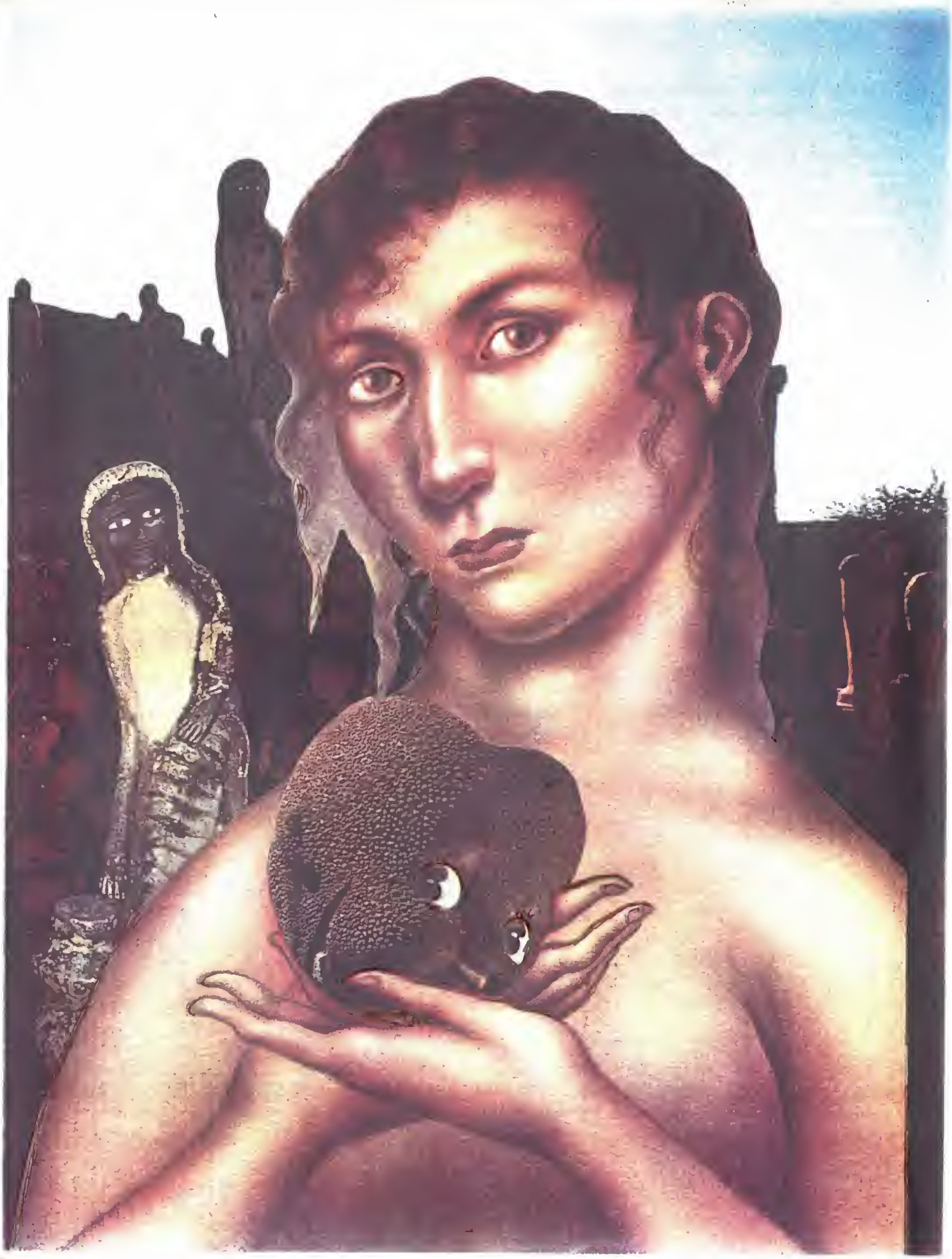

HEARTS OF STONE

The programmers left no stone unturned as they stripped all of us alters of any vestiges of humanity we might have.

They made us believe that they had surgically removed our hearts & replaced them with a stone.

To reinforce this programming we were hypnotized to fall into a deep trance if we were ever hooked up to anything monitoring the heart. When someone tried to prove we had a heart by taking our pulse, we tranced deep enough that the machine didn't even read. This is how programming kept their lies safe from exposure.

They took our hearts for a number of reasons. One was blackmail. They promised to give us our hearts, if we obeyed, went home to the cult, and were available when the Anti-Christ needed us. It is doubtful we would have ever gotten our hearts back by the cult considering all the false promises we were made.

They gave our hearts to a queen mother alter for safekeeping. Our hearts were hidden in the Temple of Molech. The Temple of Molech was used as a depository for memories of child sacrifices. It was not a place any alter could or would want to go in the internal world.

In return, they gave us stones, yes, hearts of stone.

Stone-like protectors stand guard in the background. Their voodoo doll appearance reflects the voodoo that was linked to our System. What a joy it was to get our original hearts back when we deprogrammed. We asked people to listen to our new heart beats.

By removing our hearts, they removed any chance that we would have a soft warm spot in our heart for anyone. We were told we were incapable of having friends or of loving others. This was effective in separating us from others. That isolation was a part of the mind control.

Because we had no life source within ourselves--that is no heart, we had to look to our master. If our master placed his hand upon our chest we would feel alive.

Because people need a heart to feel, we were programmed to believe that we were incapable of feeling and had no feelings. We could not cry during our own suffering, and we did not feel capable of caring for the suffering of others. In spite of all the brutality and isolation of the programming, our humanity still lay in the background, and we accessed it to secretly help others escape the power of the Illuminati's programming.

When people ask us to give our hearts to Jesus, we told them we didn't have one. When we got our own hearts back, we gave them to Jesus.

The black stone was used in the Mothers-of-Darkness vows. The book of Revelation speaks about a white stone with a name written on it. Our Mothers of Darkness alters got a black stone with their assigned Queen goddess names written on them.

In all covenants, something is given to the cult. Our hearts were given to the satanic Master. There is a Keeper of the Seals who keeps the items given when a vow or covenant is made. If a person is a traitor to a vow, then the cult has an object to carry out voodoo or magic upon to punish the person.

Those who have been on the inside of Satanism know that the type of oaths taken by occult lodges and satanic cults are enforced. The oaths describe the type of traitors death that is to be carried out. An example of the types of penalty these oaths carry can be seen in the following words,

"All this I most solemnly and sincerely promise and swear with a firm steadfast resolution, to keep and perform the same without any equivocation, mental reservation or secret evasion of mind whatever, binding myself under no less penalty than that of having my throat cut across, my tongue torn open, my heart plucked out my body severed in twain, my bowels taken from thence and burned to ashes, should I knowingly violate this my solemn obligation."

The covenants, and vows and threats all work together to keep people in line. People are threatened that if they are not true to blood oaths that their signatures will turn to green and the Illuminati will know that they have been traitors. Even the american presidents are reported to be threatened with this type of threat.

We knew our orders, and we were locked into obedience.

All this is done to control people so that a great master plan to enslave and rule the world can be carried out. The secrecy and control perpetuates Satan's conspiracy against God and his creation. And it is all cloaked so well behind mysteries, such as the Mystery Religions.

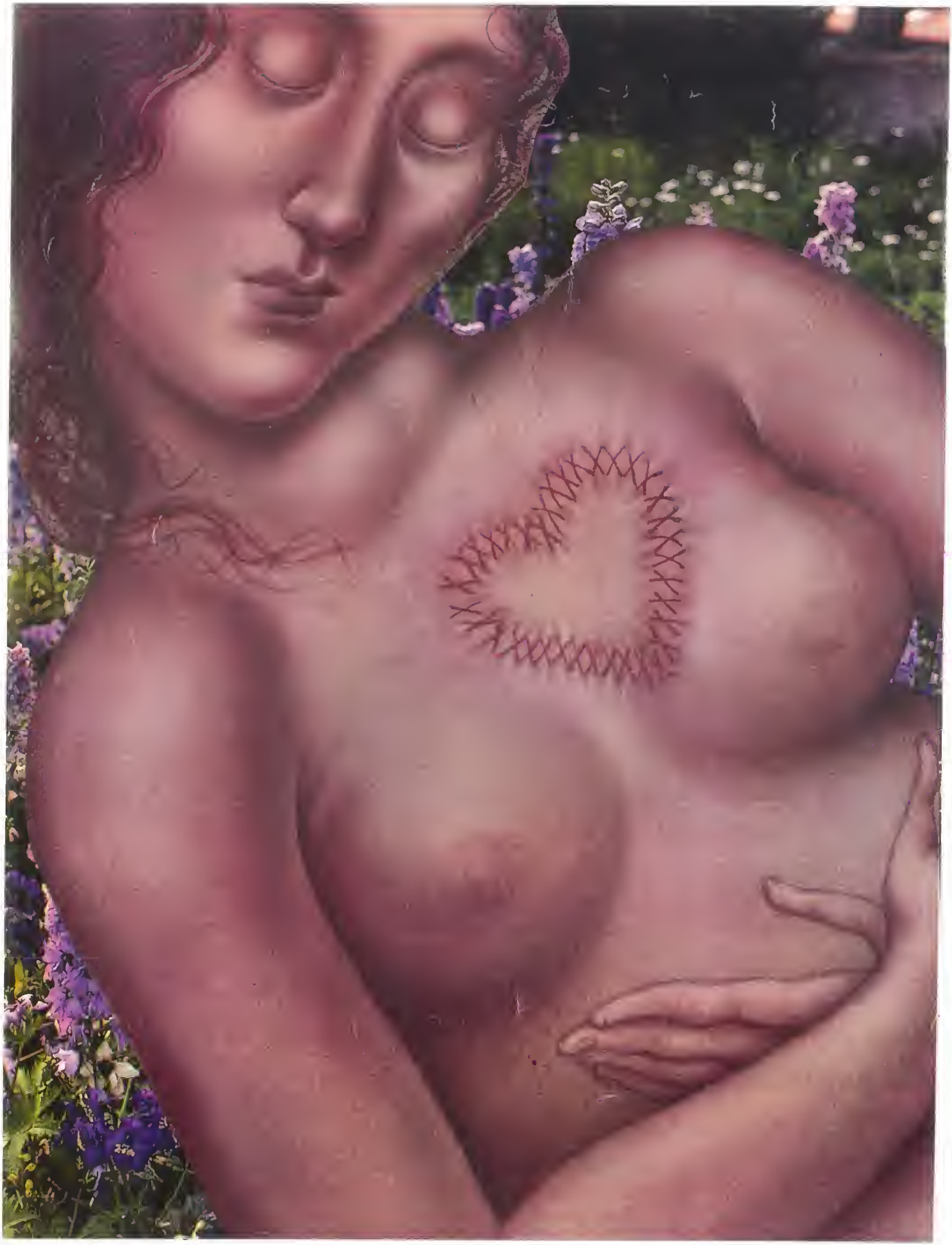

HYPNOTIC SURGERY

After they stole our hearts away, and our faces away, and our identity away, and our real family away, and our own free will away, and our humanity away, they were kind enough to sew back into our chests black stones. They did all this surgery by hypnosis.

They had the power via hypnosis to heal our wounds after they tortured us. They could basically make or remake reality to be what they wanted.

Can the viewer see the dehumanization? Can the viewer get in touch with the crimes that accompany the trauma-based mind control? A picture is worth a thousand words. Does anything more need to be said?

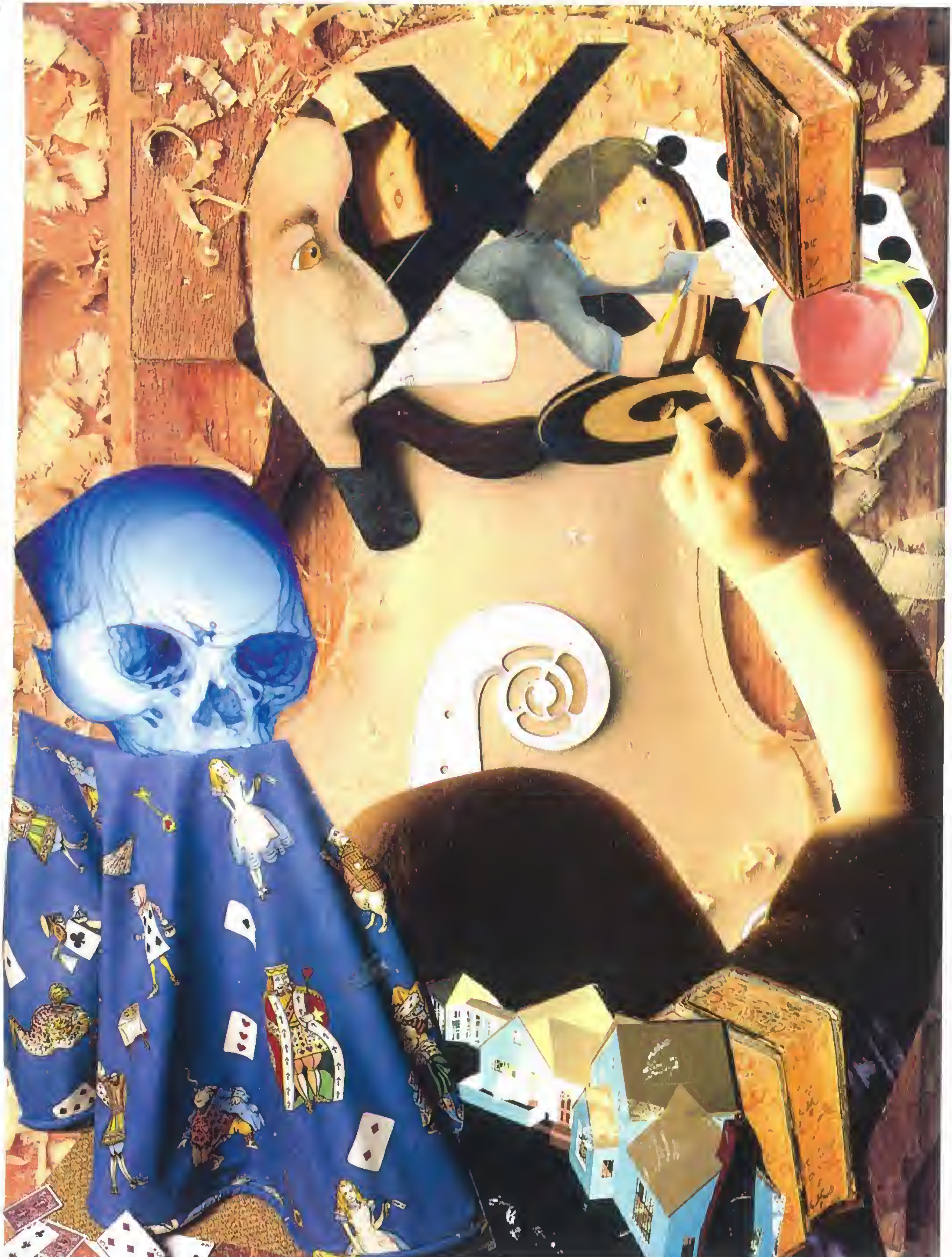

FROM CRADLE TO THE GRAVE

We were brainwashed into believing that their power over us was from the cradle to the grave. We never thought outside of doing our Master's wishes. Before therapy our front alters had an inner feeling that things were wrong but were very limited in their knowledge of the extensive abuse. Some of our front level alters (the front level had 97 alter identified by name as well as some in boxes unnamed) were allowed to be abused by non-cult people to serve as cover for the obvious physical/emotional abuse our body had suffered.

We were taught to follow our Master to the letter of the law. They taught us scripts to follow. Because they split our mind into Multiple Personalities at the tender age of 18 months, they had to give us scripts that a child could learn.

Our System was set up as a big cube, 13 sections x 13 levels x 13 alters per family. This 3-D system was further tied together by color programming which added a fourth dimension. The fourth dimension, the color coding allowed them to tie together alters in widely separate locations in our cube-shaped System.

From the mapping of our System, which we did with our closest friend, we believe that 6 of our sections had Bible words for access codes and 5 sections had occult words for access codes and the 12th section had Texas geographic terms. The access codes involved more than just alpha-numeric cues for the deeper levels. There were also "keys" which were important in accessing our System, and erasure codes.

How did our mind build our System? The Queen alter of the 4 section had only one toy as a child. This toy was an army cup which telegraphed out. When looked from the top it looks like concentric rings which descend as one goes deeper. Our System was 13 concentric descending rings. This is exactly a copy of the universe which Plato and Pythagorus came up with. Plato and Pythagorus are important figures in the occult world. As this Queen alter spent hours playing with this cup she reinforced the programming structure of the internal world.

They physically displayed to our System as a child that we were their marionette puppet. They electro-shocked our muscles in such a way as to take advantage of the natural reflexes. When electro-shocked that way our body parts would jerk out of our control at their whim to prove to us that we were their puppet. We remember the rules we were given and rule number 8 was that we were their puppet. Our programmer, Dr. Mengele, used puppets in a dollhouse as he programmed us. He did skits with his puppets. "Dance Marionette dance," he'd tell us.

Along with rule no. 8, we learned the following rules:

1. Listen to your instructions., 2. There is no room for error., 3. "The Game Timer"--these were the specifics of how to move, the melted mirror, etc., 4. There is a chain of command, the King's men., 5. Our Master would chart our course., 6. We will receive orders, what to do, a memorized script to follow and fulfill., 7. They would always own us into infinity., 8. We are puppets on a string. "Dance Marionette dance. We were to speak only those words told to us, and to only speak those words when our string was pulled., 9. There is no room for questions., 10. The controller always plays the role of the White Rabbit.

Our dark side alters knew those rules as part of their being.

In the picture you see the fiddle in the background. Dr. Joseph Mengele (known as Dr. Green) carried a violin, which we saw during programming. He programmed us to respond to the key word "Fiddler".

Dominoes, cards, keys & Alice In Wonderland shown in the fabric were parts of our programming.

After being deprogrammed we were threatened over the phone, "You know the law, you can either live by the laws that govern you, or you can die by the laws that govern you." I reveal this threat simply to underline or highlight the significance the laws are that are given to a System.

Because obedience is so important in the military, some military generals and colonels who are involved with programming people have lost all sense of reality and justify and rationalize their criminal torture of innocent children as a neccessary evil to get good soldiers and good spies. Monarch programming is the most hideous cruel form of slavery ever invented. It is not enough to physically free oneself of one's abusers. To regain one's own mind, means to break down the amnesia and the walls that were meant to protect the mind. It means to suffer the trauma a second time as the memories surface and the body and mind suffer intense pain again. Monarch programming is not designed to create good obedient people. It is designed to dehumanize people into robots who will follow the letter of the law and love and worship their slave masters.

Accroding to what we have know, approximately one million Americans have suffered from trauma-based mind control since 1947. Today, the programmers do not know what they do, anymore than their slaves.

of the

PROGRAMMING

This picture shows many elements of the programming that we had. Can you identify the elements of Monarch Programming pictured here? See how many elements of the Monarch Programming you can find. Meanwhile, we will use this little article to uncover elements of mind control that are in the picture of everyone's life. This is important because the entire world is being programmed. And the same elements that were used in our Monarch mind control are being used on the public!

Most people would never suspect that they are the objects of mind control. Their personal pride tells them that they have come to their perceptions about the world entirely on their own. However the truth is that there is no corner of the earth now that is not being subjected to some kind of mind control. The goal is to enslave the planet by mankind's own manipulated and controlled "free will". The destruction of true free will is being concealed so **people will want to do what they are to do**, rather than having to be forced.

For people to step outside of the mass programming that is taking place, means to make their own decisions, taking responsibility for their lives, and standing alone in the face of criticism by the mind-controlled masses. The masses cried for Christ to be crucified. Christ is the perfect example of someone taking moral responsibility for his own life, and standing alone in the face of the thinking of the deluded masses. Most people fear standing alone. Most people fear real freedom. They want to be led. They want someone else to make their decisions and thereby relieve them of some of their responsibility. MPD is a very creative way for evil men to take away a person's ability to have responsibility for their own actions.

Freedom of the mind is not the right to think on whatever rotten thing the mind drifts into, but the power to think about those things that the mind ought to think about--those things that lead to spiritual truth and to spiritual life. The mind can be transformed by dedicating itself to the will of God.

Here are MIND CONTROL TECHNIQUES developed and used on the public:

- Education from controlled public education. This includes providing people with false views on history, morality, authority, and God.
- Mind altering chemical such as flouride, and artificial sweetner put in entire population's food and drink.
- Television, which creates a hypnotic state of those who view it, and which allows implantation of subconscious thinking.
- Broadcasts of eletromagntic frequencies with encoded messages that enter the brain (ELF waves to impart particular thought patterns).
- Broadcasts of directed energy to control the bodies/minds of people.
- Destruction of health, because sluggish sick bodies make for sluggish minds which are easier to control.
- Subliminal messages, backmasking in music, etc.
- Implants (a wide variety have been and are now employed).
- Control of the newspapers, and other news sources.
- Control by the creation of fears and phobias and hates among people.
- Control by evil spiritual entities, geographic spiritual powers, ect.
- The Creation of mind-control slaves (i.e. Monarch programming.)
- Control over the pulpits of America, 300,000 pulpits are silent on the real story about what is overtaking America.

From the cradle to the grave Americans are spoon-fed what to believe. The entire frame of reference that an American has is built for him by the information he is given. And when one studies it, almost all the information that an average American receives is controlled. Step by step the establishment builds his frame of reference so that it is inconceivable for him to think in ways the controllers don't want him to think. The average American believes he lives in a democracy and a free nation. The average American believes the traditional myths handed him about his country's past. The average American believes that he controls his own destiny by electing officials. Most Americans no longer have a frame of reference which can deal with much truth.

THE MONARCH MIND-CONTROL USES ABOUT EVERY METHOD OF MIND-CONTROL

The Monarch Mind-control divides a person apart into many personalities. A house divided against itself can not stand. The person is divided against himself. Drugs, hypnosis, torture & fear, high level demonology, isolation, lies, massive amounts of electroshock & other methods of control are used to the hilt to program.

INFORMATION RETENTION

In the picture are library scripts, a castle, a carousel, bottles, a waterfall, a telegraph represented by typewriter. Within our System we had more than one library. We had a key library in the Emerald City castle, which is pictured here. But our picture tells more than just about our libraries of information. The carousel shows how disassociation was taught to us. In the process of programming and structuring a child's mind, they first identify if the child can disassociate. We were placed upon a carousel to help us learn how to go up and down and to disassociate.

During our System's programming we know they used the following scripts:
Alice In Wonderland, Candyland, Little Red Riding Hood, Hansel and Gretel, Snow White, Sleeping Beauty, Rose Red-Rose White, Lost Horizons, the Tall Book of Make Believe, The Wizard of Oz series of books, 20,000 Leagues Under The Sea, The Man Without a Country, and large sections of the Bible (such as Ezekiel's Valley of Dry Bones, the Armageddon Story, the Creation Story, the Temple, the Wheel within Wheels of Ezekiel, etc.)

How could they utilize such stories? How does this fit in with everything? How did they get us to disassociate memories? What are the roles the scripts play & what is the role of layering in programming?

The story of Alice In Wonderland was used to teach an alter to scramble what she has heard. What you say is not what was heard.

This is an example of how the programmers blurred reality by a fictional script. The alter follows a script in its internal world which seems real to it. The script is designed to carry the alter through a series of steps, but when the process is finished the alter likely remembers nothing of the script or the process. In this way some of what happens is hidden simply by the script mechanism.

The programmers will begin their programming by extreme torture. After a certain amount of torture the victim is willing to say or believe anything to stop the torture. At this point a thought will be planted into the victim's mind. This thought will be linked to a false memory put in via hypnosis or movies, or other method, and it will be linked to a command put in by hypnosis etc. and the original thought, the command, the false memory will be linked by a single emotion which will link them all together. The result will be something like this: it is two weeks before Halloween (thought), I must get ready for Halloween rituals (command) because I have always had a habit of going to Halloween rituals (false memory). If I don't I will have a heart attack and die (memory of torture linked to thoughts).

Programming is layered in. Layer after layer of programming is put in. Each alter (personality) of the victim is used as if it is a component of a large system. The result is that no alter (personality) is the whole, but only a cog in a great machine. Can a single cog rebel against the whole machine? It is very difficult for a single component of thousands of components to rebel against the abusers.

When alters are being used they are following a script. Then their memories are hypnotically locked up by posthypnotic suggestions and fragmented by electroshock before they can go from short term memory into long term memory. Actions in the System happened according to scripts; reality and fiction were totally blurred. Memories were nested in many different ways, and hidden under layers of gibberish or false fronts. Seeing one's master as a White Rabbit is one way a false front could be used by some script we were tortured to accept.

COLOR BANDS

This picture show the color programming that was given to our System.

Color programming is reported to have been developed in California. Whatever the case Systems all over the United States have color programming.

The hierarchy of colors in our System is as follows: Gold, Silver, Purple, Black, Red, Green, Brown, White, Orange, Yellow, Pink. Clear is also used as a color for secret areas of the system. This hierarchy of color coding can be switched. Alters, sections, and parts of the computer are all color coded. The color coding for alters is not the same just because the alters are in the same section.

The color coding within the Illuminati Mind Control is fairly consistent. The use of the colors of our System is consistent with the use of colors in other Systems.

A survey of the use in our System of colors is as follows:

CLEAR. Secret or shell alters who can take on any color are coded clear. These are alters who serve as images or as a stage for other alters.

GOLD. This color is for the System's supreme leadership, which incl. our Grand Druid Council.

SILVER. This color is for the Satanic alters who perform high level Satanic rituals. The Mothers of Darkness have silver coding.

PURPLE. These alters see themselves as the abusers, rather than the Illuminati. These alters were involved with the programming. They have been taught to forget the abuse and to reframe it in their mind as training.

BLACK. These alters were born out of Satanic ritual, and are Moon children. The Delta and Beta alters are black coded. They do the dirty work for the cult, such as blackmail and assassination.

RED. These altars see themselves as witches. They were born out of witchcraft ritual, believe they have great spiritual power, and tend to deny that they have been abused.

GREEN or EMERALD GREEN. These cat altars recognize they have been abused. They still see themselves as belonging to the cult family, and deny that they have been abused to protect their cult family.

BLUE ALTERS. Clones, armies and the ribbons appear to have blue coding. These alters will go so far as to hurt the body to protect it from leaking information or deprogramming.

WHITE. These are Atlantean alters who have been given Aryan type racial nonsense to think they are superior. They believe in genetic engineering, and a master race.

ORANGE. These are scouts who warn of danger from internal or external threats.

YELLOW. These are our strong Christian alters. There were only a few in the System for years.

PINK. These are core related alters. They maintain the true feelings of the true self apart from the cult programming and the cult family's programming. These alters are viewed as weak because they are emotional and often break down and weep. They are fragile emotionally.

The picture has many elements which are meaningful, including the shells and the green boxes. The notes rising in the back are a reminder that so much of the programming is tied to music.

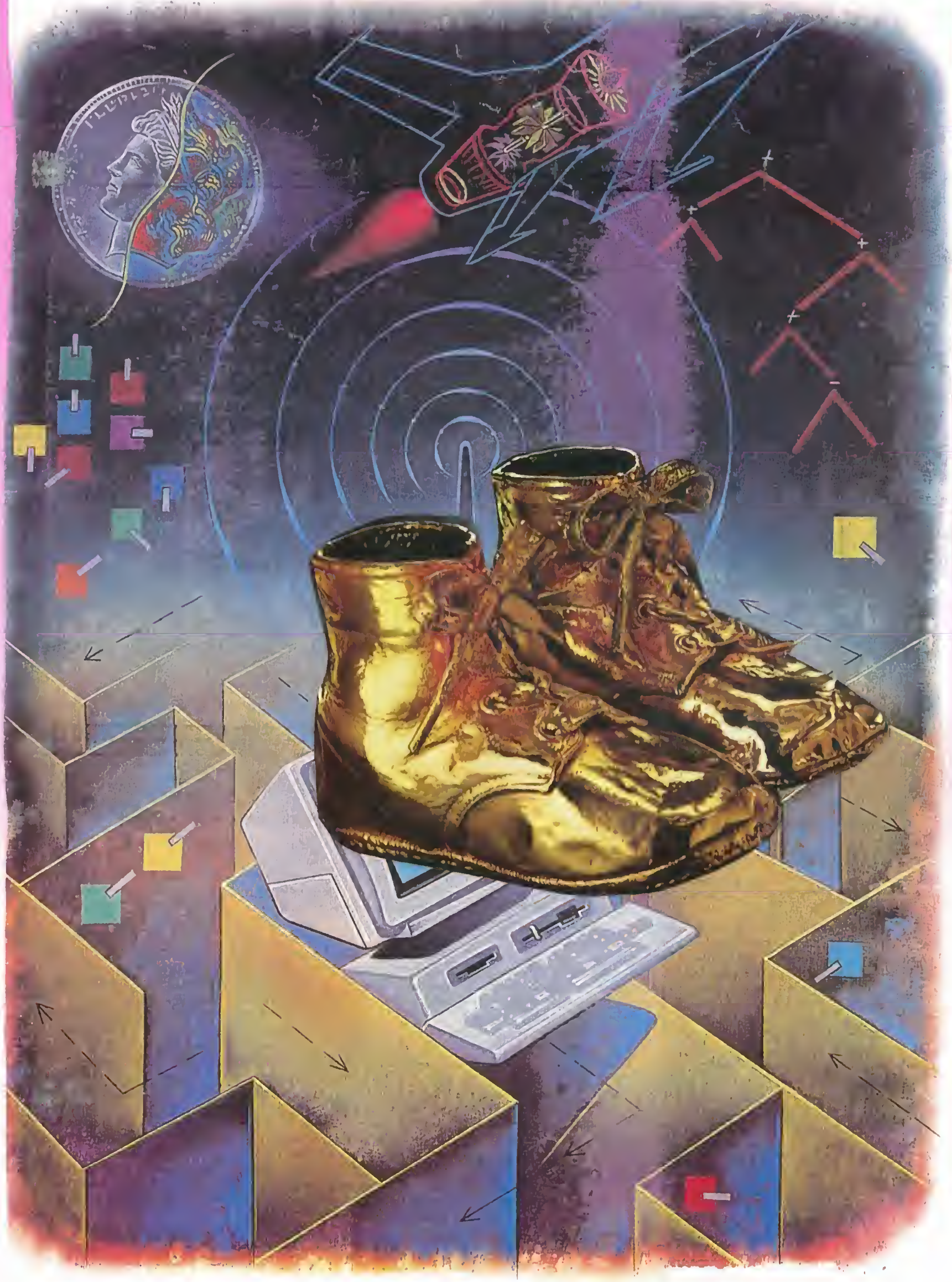

DESTINY

People don't become structured multiples by accident. There has been a lot of bungling in the therapeutic community as people groped around in the dark about why structured multiples happen. The facts are fairly straightforward. Someone plans to create a multiple. They test little children to find out if they will disassociate enough to go along with the trauma-based mind control program. If they are suitable candidates then they are intentionally given years of torture and years of mind-control. It is premeditated and cold-blooded.

For the child, it never has a chance. Often in the Illuminati, the child's life has been planned out for it. The child is taught, and the adults believe that the programming and enslavement is the child's destiny. The whole thing tends to make many alters fatalistic. They take a "whatever will be, will be" attitude to survive their abusive "destiny."

Elements in this picture show how that destiny is planned. Slippers take the child where it is to go. The color programming of the internal computers is shown. The internal computers control the victim's mind. The radio waves represent several things. They represent the System's worlds. The stars represent the quadrants. They represent the way control is beamed out. They represent the hypnotic spiral that is used. The mazes represent the internal mazes and also the feeling that one is trapped, that there is no way out. The mind gets trapped in mazes of clear glass and it just gets locked in. We were programmed to "See no evil, hear no evil, do no evil." Evil meant anything contrary to the programming. Since we were programmed to be silent, any time we told anybody anything about what was really going on we were committing an "evil" against the programming.

The arrows are indicative of the path we must go on.

The gold shoes were telling a story of what was happening in the System. The shoes are a child's shoes--they represent the little girl (the core) which was split. But where is the core? Our core was gone and no one interacting with the therapist knew where the core had gone. There is nothing in the shoes. The gold of the shoes represents the refining they did to the core. The split and split the core to refine her by fire to get the System they wanted.

The color band programming can be seen. The concentric circles also represent the internal compass and the sections.

We were heavily programmed not to know or reveal anything about our computer. Our method for revealing the computers was to show a jet. The jet's fire are the spirits that fueled the System. The front engine was the front computer and then the middle multi-paddled object was the all-seeing eye, and then our hidden second computer was the second part of the jet engine.

The coin with the front face shows that we had a front for our System that hid all the mind control mechanisms. People could see the shiny faces of our front alters and never suspect that thousands of other alters lay silently underneath them. People could see our front alters go about their work, go to church, and raise a family and never suspect that at the same time, very evil men were using us to further their evil plans. Satanism is very skilled at fronts. The occult world is one front in front of another front in front of another front. Freemasonry is organized like a box with a box inside, with another box inside, organizations within organizations. Some men belong to Freemasonry their entire lives and never really see the occult side of it. Others join the secret groups which quietly hide behind the larger groups. For instance, in Freemasonry they ask you if you want to go to Damascus or Jerusalem. One can take the road to Damascus or the road to Jerusalem, and one path takes one deeper into occultism. The top 3 strongest alters of many of our sections served as outside protectors that is they served as fronts to the world to hide what else was in their section.

Many survivors are in therapy and are still being accessed. Many therapists, due to their practice of staying out of survivors' personal lives have no inkling of what is going on with the deeper parts of the people they are supposed to be helping. The front alters will not be able to detect in most cases what is going on. They may have some suspicions, but if the entire System wanted to help the therapist, then that would indicate that they had overcome their mind control already. Such extreme situations just don't happen. Even after deprogramming some alters will like their old life better. And if a person integrates when they deprogram they may still have second thoughts. Remember some of the victims of the concentration camps when they were liberated went back into the camps because that was home and where they felt secure.

To break away from one's destiny and to deprogram can leave a big void in a person's life. That void needs to be filled. That is where a therapist can be of great service to a person. That is where a good testimonial of someone in the cult finding a new life as a Christian can be helpful. It is not enough to take out the programming, something of value has to be found to replace it.

PAPA BEAR/GHOST RIDERS

The power that a programmer or a handler has over a Monarch System is absolute. When they programmed us, they had power over our life or death. They had power over how much they would torture us, and how long and what kind of trauma. We were totally helpless. They would repeatedly set themselves up as our rescuers. When you are tortured long enough, you are very grateful to the abuser when he stops. We were very bonded to our programmers. The mind-control programming was designed to erase the front alters' memory of their programmers. Our programmers went by the name Dr. Green and Dr. Black. Over a period of 9 years, we have gotten to the point we can tell the world who programmed us. They were Dr. Joseph Mengele and our father. Mengele is represented in the picture by the Tin Man with glasses. Our father is represented by the man riding the horse. At the time we did this picture it was a major step for us to represent our programmers. Many of our parts were still loyal to our programmers. We suffered through a great deal of pain, just to portray this much, and only a few trusted people initially saw this picture.

Often during the traumas of programming, our father would be set up as our rescuer.

Our father liked horses and so did we. However, we also know that he was far more than what he appeared on the surface to the public. In the picture, he is shown holding up a skull, because our father was a member of the Illuminati, an Ipsimus. Dr. Green is shown wearing gold glasses because he would wear glasses. We remember things about him, including his violin case with its electric probes and colored scarfs.

Both Dad and Dr. Green are remembered walking around in Nazi uniforms and boots as they programmed people.

The dark background shows the darkness we felt, & the fear of everything. The electric wires shows several things--the electric shock and that the darkness was electrifying. In the lower left is our dollhouse (computer), and in the lower right is the candy cane representing The Candyman Programming. The song "The Candyman can cause he mixes it with love..." is programming for many Monarch victims. The Candyman represents drug use.

The road means travel, it may mean other things too.

We were one of the early Monarchs to be produced. Today, people are programmed almost assembly-line at a few locations that run children through on a regular basis. However, we think that they were still doing a lot of testing and experimenting when they made our System. Our System is far larger and more complex than the more recent Systems we have met. What happened was a combination of overdesign and competition. Because they were unfamiliar with how well things would work in the long run--they overdesigned and overprogrammed us. Then on top of that we were Dad's only heir to his Illuminati heritage at the time, and he wasn't taking any chances on losing us. Dad and Dr. Green competed against each other when they programmed us. They each tried to outdo each other. Dad put in back doors and numerous extra worlds to insure that his control would hold. Much of what Dad did was on the spiritual levels. Dad built many worlds which were entirely demonic inside us. In other words, they were placed in by Satanic acts, and these worlds contained no alters. They were hidden far behind any of the regular worlds of our System.

When the programmers program people, they do it on an ongoing basis. They will match the programming one receives with objects that surround a person in ordinary life. Our father ran in Pentecostal circles. He at some point was ordained to the Pentecostal ministry. That was his front. Because he and our mother would run in that type of circles, they used the Bible to program us. Every time we heard certain verses it would reinforce that programming. Today, we notice that many of the children's shows, and many of the adult shows on television are being used for programming purposes. There are numerous things in our life that were by accident or design that reinforced the programming.

When we went singing, they found out what songs we liked and attached programming to the songs.

This picture then shows two primary programmers. It was one of the first colored pictures we did. It was done by the front section, which we call the Light Side. The light side was coming to grips with the fact that their life included a dark side. The light side went for years without realizing the rest of the System (the dark side) existed.

Our System was a microcosm of the real world. We had some strong Christians, we had some people who enjoyed the world but were not committed to either Christianity or Satanism, and we had some hard core Satanists. Of course, it should be pointed out that just like those people who are not religious in the world, our non-religious alters still served Satan because of all the deceit they were under. Most worldly people would be shocked to realize that by going along with Satan's world system they are contributing to Satan's cause.

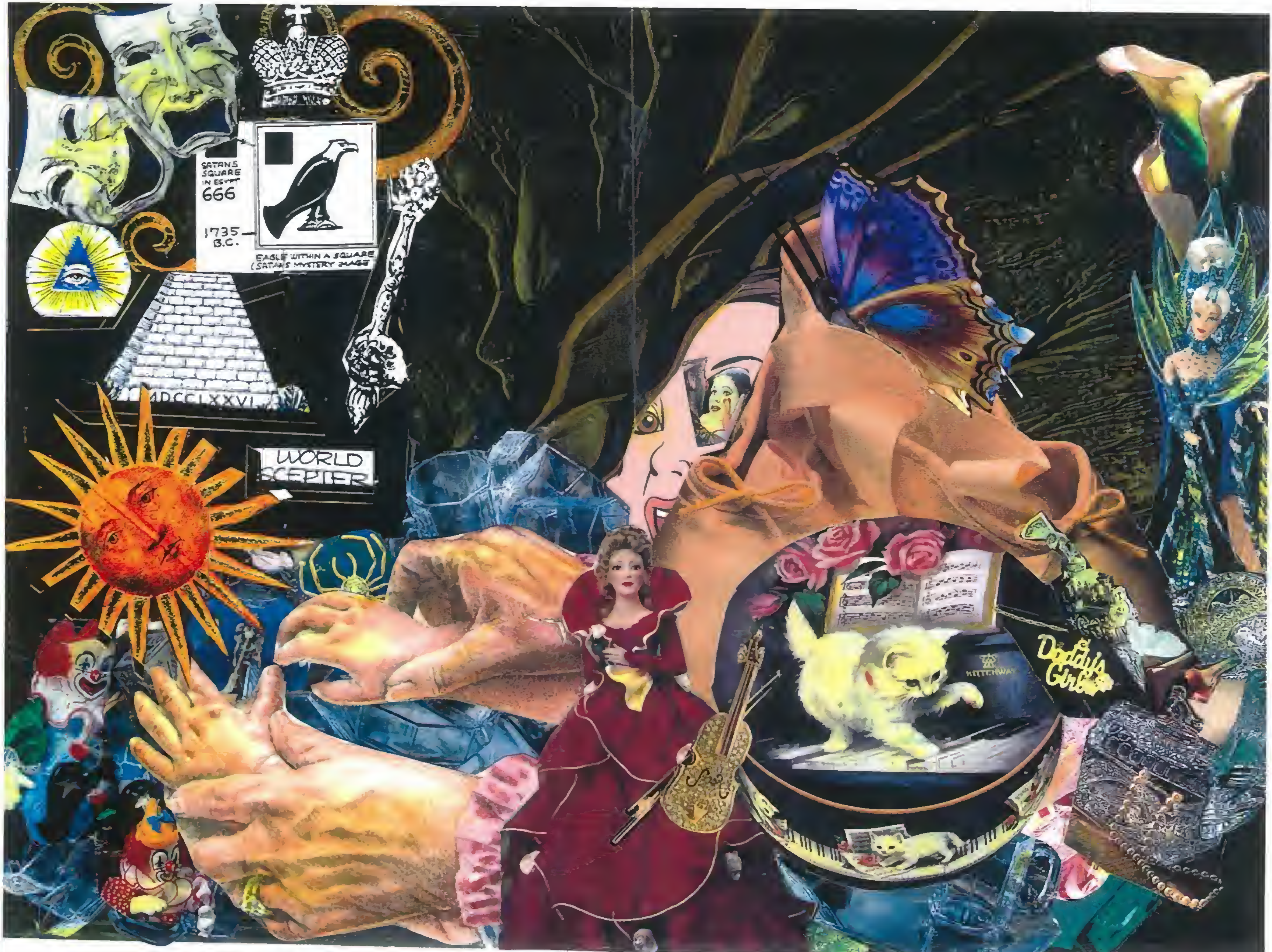
SATANS SQUARE IN EGYPT 666
1735 B.C.
EAGLE WITHIN A SQUARE (SATANS MYSTERY IMAGE
MDCCLXXVI
WORLD SCEPTER
KITTCHWAY
Daddy's Girl

GROOMING

Training that we were given to help us fulfill our roles was called grooming.

Our grooming came in the lines of obedience, social graces, musical talents, sexual grooming, & porn grooming. Notice how the big hands take the little girls hands and guide them. Many talented people are giving their talents to the benefit of the New World Order crowd.

The picture is full of little items to make sure that the guilty (our abusers) are identified. The all-seeing eye and the eagle are shown. The fiddle is shown.

In the background is the tree, that ever present tree full of fruit (programs) that ran through our body. Our vertibrae were part of this, and each part of our spine represented a deeper section of our System. The tree ran its branches through our whole body.

As one might imagine in order to rub shoulders with the elite we had to have strong social graces. We were very mannered and knew exactly how to eat, and walk, and were trained to have intelligent conversations with the elite. However, things didn't stop there. They didn't invest great amounts of time and energy to program us just so we could make intelligent conversation. They didn't program us to have a little girl. Our daddy had a little girl to start with, he wanted a slave which he could abuse in the worst way. He had a little girl, but he didn't want a little girl.

Sexual training began as a little child. By the time one of the Kittens was trained at age 7, the system was experiencing menstration and fully cognizant of sexuality and had mastered a level of technique superior to most adults. This level of mastery was demanded by circumstances. During teenage years the training was perfected within the Kitten alters generally in the Long Beach-Southern California area in expensive houses/pent houses etc. Kittens have been taught Japanese sexual techniques, and most likely know among them about every sexual technique there is. The grooming was comprehensive. The night kittens have been trained to carry out everything in the dark, including all activities including dressing in the dark. Many Johns do not want anyone to ever see them, because they are Judges, and important ministers. Training includes being able to discern a. the pulse level of sexual pardner, b. the desires of pardner, c. the pleasure and satisfaction level of pardner, plus other things. Training was given often on the job. There is some coaching along with intense pressure applied to a System when its on the job --that is punishment for failure.

During the course of being a slave, the kittens have had to play hide and seek and other games. The preparatory command for this would be something like "Come to daddy, come and play hide and seek, come, come, come, play with me." The song "Little Red Riding Hood " was written specifically for the hunts where Monarch slaves were hunted for sport like animals. The hunts are held annually around May 1. The military carries out similar hunts for sport. The Illuminati men would hunt us.

A set of alters were created to serve as the hunted prey. They are deep in the system below the cats. These alters were created in places like Wheeler, OR in order to satisfy the desires of the Satanic cult who would play a game where little cult children were the prey of the hunt.

The front kittens received sophisticated exposure including such elite activities as going to opera and concerts. This enabled them to fit into elite society. They were given social skills, and allowed to learn some subjects very well, so that they could be social butterflies. However, they are very weak on directions and geography, because they were not to know where they were. One front kitten likes Shakespeare, Mozart, Beethoven, and classical music. Another front kitten likes history Picasso, philosophy, Shakespeare (Francis Bacon), and Edgar Allen Poe. She has much of Edgar Allen Poe's poetry memorized. However, this poetry may be memorized for occult ritual purposes and may not be exactly word for word as the original.

All of the top six Mama kittens are very good at ballroom dancing, waltzes, 2-& 3 step dancing as well as social graces. Section 4, Level 2a alter played four instruments--the piano, cello, violin, etc. Section 4, Level 4a can play the piano and one of her kittens can play the piano better than her. Most of the Mama cats instrumental music talent ceased when their Master (Dad) died. When they were with Dad the song Tennessee Waltz was used by Dad as a signal to the System that they were going to be given to someone else sexually for the night. Supposedly Daddy had no choice but to give them away (story line). The song line is that someone has come and taken one's love away. The song would be played (whether by the band) or some other way, then their name would be called, and their contact would come up to use them. Several songs have a strong message to return to the cult, because the person has received a "letter". Any communication by the handlers is considered a letter--whether that is a song, an actual letter, phone call or some other communication.

You will probably see other elements in the picture which you very likely will be able to figure out.

CANNIBALISM

This explanation of our picture is not a pleasant one. But it is part of what a great deal of our System was tragically forced to participate in. They would persist in the programming torture until they split us enough or programmed us enough to comply with their terrible plans.

It is only appropriate that this be included in our drawing. For too long things have been candy coated. The therapists want us to face reality--can the therapists face the real world? Can therapists get to the point where they can acknowledge that some of their heroes on television or in politics are Illuminati satanists who cannibalize victims in rituals. Vice-President Al Gore is a vampire and carries a briefcase of blood with him. This is the real world, and yet so many people who want us to face the real facts are in denial about reality too.

What appears as a wild animal has little girl hands. This little wild cat (girl) has blood around her mouth. Whenever a therapist deals with SRA, he should automatically assume that blood is involved. Some survivors will dislike red kool-aid or tomato juice because it hits to close to home.

The Word of God says that blood is holy and that blood is the life force of a being. Satanists believe that drinking blood will give them the spiritual life force of their victim.

Satanism has its share of blood rituals. Sometimes children are immersed in blood. Various animals and people are sacrificed. Blood lines, such as Jesus' blood line, are critical to being a member of the Illuminati. One of the last steps to achieve in Satanism is where one becomes animalistic. Actually, animals are much less wild. The last steps are to literally become vampires. The victims of sacrifice secrete enzymes as they look in terror at their last few minutes of life. Drinking their blood gives a high.

The Illuminati would gather for banquets. The men would wear tuxes, white tuxes, and there would be fine linen and gold or silver utensils (sometimes gold, othertimes silver). You might think that with all this refinement that a real banquet would be served. What was served at these meals was cannibalistic. They would devour the entire person's body. They might spare the left hand to hold a candle though. At other times, they used the fat and skin of some sacrifices for further uses. They made masks out of children's skin.

We remember the children being fed to lions and tigers. We remember what they taught us to do with children. They would keep torturing a System until they got someone who would do their bidding. Many of us in the System do not like what we had to do, but they would eventually find someone in our System who would do what they wanted, and they did about every horrible thing conceivable. The more diabolical it was, the more they liked it.

When they had us as a baby in cages they gave us blood instead of formula. Many girls at this age are given penises or you name it, before they even know what the objects are.

It is not an easy world for SRA survivors to live in. They need lots of love and lots of patience to make up for what they have seen. They will test you, they will provoke you. They want to know if they will ever find anyone who will not lie to them. They want to find good things, but it is not easy for them to trust that they will ever find good things. Most everything they have gotten in life came with a price.

This picture shows the depths of what we had to endure. We are so thankful that a few people were courageous and patient enough to help us escape that nightmare.

It is hard to trust that God could love us. It is hard for survivors to see God's forgiveness, and they need His forgiveness before they feel clean before the rest of humanity. The programming steals the love of God from its victim. Everything that was good was taken away or perverted to such a degree that we become possessive for the crumbs under the table. Nothing good ever lasted when we were in servitude.

TWINNING

It's best if a therapist is acquainted with twinning before trying to help an Illuminati slave.

Dr. Joseph Mengele, our primary programmer, used thousands of twins for experimentation. One of the common characteristics of victims of Monarch Mind-Control is that they think they have a twin somewhere. I can't state as a fact that they always do have one, but the survivors I have worked with all have actual Systems with which they have been via magic and programming twinned with.

The twinning of two MPD Systems provides a number of advantages to the Controllers. Sometimes jobs require a team rather than individuals. A team will also tend to motivate and encourage each other in the direction the Controllers want (in other words peer pressure). If one person wants to drop out of the program others can lift that person back up in place. Further, twinning can have experimental advantages. And it can provide back ups in case they want to be certain a dangerous job gets done.

Please note this important feature of our programming--all the Illuminati twins we know of were programmed to die if their twins were deprogrammed or if their twin would die.

A therapist may note that alters can be created that use capabilities that existed prior to the dissociative wall that separates them from their alter of origin. A system will have a common pool of capacities and capabilities. When we try to make sense out of the abilities that different alters have and their traits, we find that a System will have certain common characteristics. Some Systems are more logical, some are more cruel, some are more adept at conversation, some are more nurturing, some are more gentle, some are more comical as a whole. One of the features of MPD is that there is always somo unity among alters of a System as well as some disunity. There are many types of Baptists, or Mennonites for instanco, and to outsiders the different Baptist or Mennonite groups have common features, but to the insider the different factions are separate independent groups.

Different Systems will tend to be set up for a specialty. This Monarch System may be used as a programmer, this one for a nurturer during programming, and this System as a spy. Each of these Systems has many more possible uses, but the particular unifying quality they have that runs through their System will often be paired with their primary purpose. This is important to note, because the Illuminati and CIA build secret teams. Neither twin of a 2-person team has all the knowledge or abilities to get the job done. They must function as a team for best results. This is the same type of training the military gives. Each man in a squad gets a specialty, but he also has some training in the areas of those who he is teamed with.

Certain people are assigned oversight to two-person and four-person teams that have been secretly twinned together.

Our System had a code name in relation to another System which was the code name for the team, and then we had another code name for us as an individual. Cameo referred to us and another code word referred to our twin.

When Illuminati twins meet they must touch each other in a certain occult way and go through a certain ritual in order to become a working team. They can be joined up with another pair to make a 4-person team. It is believed that our four-person team was then spiritually linked to 4 Satanic programmers. This was another link to insure that the hold that they had on us could not be broken.

If a therapist is going to deprogram an Illuminati slave, the therapist should take into account that what he or she does to the victim they are trying to help, may be seriously hurting their twin.

Although the world is not ready to believe this, Monarch twins are given occult training to communicate telepathically. Anything that affects one of the twins, has the potential to affect the other twin. Because the world is not ready to accept the type of occult training that the Illuminati give their people they will scoff at the idea of astral projection, mind reading, telepathy etc. The CIA has spent hundreds of millions of dollars in these areas of research. One of the Systems we know was designed as a Theta model. This type of training was to prepare him as a psychic warrior. Our System was taught to put thoughts into people's heads, or to get into their minds. He was trained in these areas too. The occult world has not told all their secrets about these abilities. They try to give their Monarch slaves these special type of capabilities. Again, whether one wants to label these abilities as natural or demonic, they are part of the training built into Monarch Systems and they play a role in the lives of their victims. This is why some of the simplistic approaches toward dealing with victims of Monarch mind control fail so miserably. If the therapist finds these paranormal abilities hard to accept as real, the therapist at least can take into account that they play a big role in the thinking of the victims of Illuminati Mind Control.

For more on twinning read the next article called "Sisters."

SISTERS

In the picture we see two "twinned" sisters. Central to the picture is the clock pendalum which continues keeping time. Just like time continues to tick away whether we are conscious of it or not, the twinning programming continues to tick away inside Systems which have been twinned together.

It is common procedure in the Illuminati to adopt children out to other occult families in order to hide lineages and parenthood. Satanists will secretly impregnate women of the Illuminati in order to create secret siblings. From our experience it looks like actual half sisters are used for creating programmed twins. Perhaps there are exceptions, but that is what we saw growing up in the Illuminati. Even if there was an exception and the "twins" are not half sisters, after they have been programmed to believe so, then they function with that understanding. Many of the survivors of the type of mind control we experienced have been adopted or raised by people other than their actual parents.

Our dark side alters were not allowed to realize that they had a family in the world. The only family they knew was the cult family. Aunts who were already in the Illuminati as Mothers of Darkness helped program and groom us. One of these aunts required us to thank her when she electo-shocked us. We thanked her for having disciplined us to make us good. From what we know, the generational Satanic families have been creating MPD for generations. Our father and aunts had MPD.

Our Monarch twin sister was trauma-bonded to us. In other words, some of the same type of programming that bonded us to our abusers was used to bond us to our "twin". Therapists would do twinned sisters a favor if they make a effort to console and counsel with their clients' twins. At times, the therapist has no idea that his client is bonded very closely with someone else. If one twin goes into the hospital the other one feels it. If one dies, the other twin may very well die.

Monarch twins will have alters in each others Systems who look like the other person, and who have the same names. Male twins and female twins may well have parts of their Systems which relate to each other sexually. Parts of our System were placed in competition with parts of our twin for the affection of our programmer. I say this so that people understand how the bonding between two Systems can be on many different levels, and is complex. Just because two front alters of two Systems don't have a close relation, doesn't mean that deeper parts don't feel very close. The trauma bonding will produce a love-hate relationship between 2 Systems too.

When two Systems meet, a wild party takes place as dozens of alters pop in and out and communication takes place on many different levels.

Besides having alters which are images of our twins, we had mirror images of all our alters. Understanding a Monarch multiple's System is not easy.

For more on twinning programming see the previous page on Twinning.

FEAR!

Monarch Programming can be summed up by one emotion FEAR.

FEAR crashes through the System like the tidal waves in the bottom of the picture.

Life under the programming is hell. The fires of hell burn portraying the fire torture and the mind's own internal hell pit. Crossing programming bounderies caused the body to burn. Then the horrible burning would be followed by the shattering of the mind.

The programmer's (our first one was Dr. Mengele, aka Dr. Green) internal boxes in the lower right are opening and all hell is breaking loose. The shattered glass shows the shattered fragile mind. The shattered glass also tells the reason why this picture was made. The System was told by its therapist to break a mirror. The therapist did not know that demons are connected with the mirrors, and memories are hidden behind the mirrors. Breaking a mirror releases hordes of terrifying demons. The memories were locked up by torture and sexual sealing rituals. The sexual sealing was to implant demons who would protect the memories. Suicide programming is released when the mirror is broken. The demons carry the controlling force that has been driving our programming. When they were correctly dealt with, we for the first time in our lives no longer felt driven.

The System has many child alters like the one on top who have been terrified. The mind screams silently.

The mazes represent the internal mazes in the mind, and the compartments and rooms of the mind. A dollhouse was set up in our system. The Dollhouse was part of the Omega programming--which is the computer structuring within the System.

A large dollhouse was used as the imagery to create the structure of the front computers in the little girl's mind. Each level corresponds to a room in the dollhouse. The rooms are in different colors. The rooms have ways that they connect. The rooms have hidden closets and hidden boxes. Each room is operated by a particular colored light. Unscrewing the light takes out that computer's energy source. The deepest level of the Omega programming was the dollhouse basement. Ten other rooms were tentatively identified in our system, they were the Formal Room, the Door & Entryway, Bathroom, Sitting Room, Closet, Kitchen, and Living Room. The rooms were identified with an area of the System and a color.

Notice the mirrors on the left which are shattered. Our System's memories were protected by spiritual entities (demons of various appearances) who were released when the mirrors were shattered. They carry the controlling force that gives impetus to cut, hang, run, tear, and disembowell etc. They were the force behind the programming. They carried a great deal of fear with them.

A great cat can be seen. This great cat has a long occult history. In our System the great cat visited with the Mothers of Darkness alters. It is the president of the Sovereign chiefs and the governor of the holy circle. "Thou art indeed the Great Cat."

Sometimes the great internal cat sits at your feet looking into your face with an expression filled with kindness, warmth and understanding. The depth of its eyes seem eternal all knowing and all powerful. Then its anger engulfs the cats and it raises up in its fury and paralizes the System. This is its warning, "Do not go any further."

Wild beasts of different kinds are terrified and spread terror in the System.

Where is the light at the end of the tunnel for all this terror and trauma? That light is to retreat into a phantasy world. The girl looks into her fantasy world while she clutches her symbol of helplessness, her teddy bear.

WE'RE NOT SAFE UNTIL HIS HEAD IS MOUNTED ON MY WALL! I SAY--
669
A-HAA-- I KNOW JUST THE THING!
LOVE IT!

THE HORROR, TORTURE & ABREACTION OF MEMORIES

When a System of Monarch alters finds out about itself all types of programming is triggered.

This picture was done after information triggered memories.

The out of control Freedom train is running down its track. Internal and external controllers are pictured. The checkered path is the yellow brick road that the System is being compelled to travel.

The top of the picture shows the branches of the tree which run through the entire system and hold the programming as fruit on their limbs.

The world of blackness is pulling the System under. The soul is being tormented by suicidal thoughts. Beasts rip the girl apart. The master credit card has a duel purpose. an actual credit card was used to access the System. The System was given credit to buy as long as the System behaved. The Master's credit made him appear benevolent; the master's credit was a key to our affection.

Internal wolves (demonic entities) prowl through the System.

Our Master is pictured saying, "A-Haa I know just the thing" because our Master decided what clothes we wore, what our names were, and what our activities would be.

Many items in the picture serve more than one meaning.

The out of control Freedom train also reminds us that we were commanded as a child to walk down a railroad track to be met and accessed by our Master.

The System transported things so the mule and the airplane have personal meaning to the System on how the System was used.

One of the System's castles, the Emerald City, is seen in the background. Many types of castles were built into our different quadrants which were connected to hour glasses rotating on x,y and z axes.

How many different emotions by the girl are shown in this picture? There is fear, puzzlement, happiness, anger and death to name some of them. These emotions were all going off in the System at one point in time. The one in the upper left has her head turned away indicating that some alters turned their backs on the whole mess and stayed in denial.

Our System would experience something and different alters will react to the same event differently depending upon what collection of abilities and personality traits they have. Different alters carried different memories. When memories began surfacing we were told that abreaction to memories was good. But instinct told us just the opposite. Later, we learned that abreaction is not neccessary and is actually dangerous. However, when the programming is still running, the System would flood with memories and nobody had the know how to protect us from the flooding. Much of the help that therapists can give Monarch Mind-Controlled Slaves is in the area of dealing with memories. Therapists can help the victim learn how to distance themself from the memory when it comes up, and how to dispose of the memory. One of the items that our System tried was to write memories down to pull the memory through another area of the brain.

The out of control Freedom Train is an apt portrayal of how helpless we have felt at times in dealing with our memories. The torture and abuse is designed so that the mind will protect itself from the trauma via disassociation.

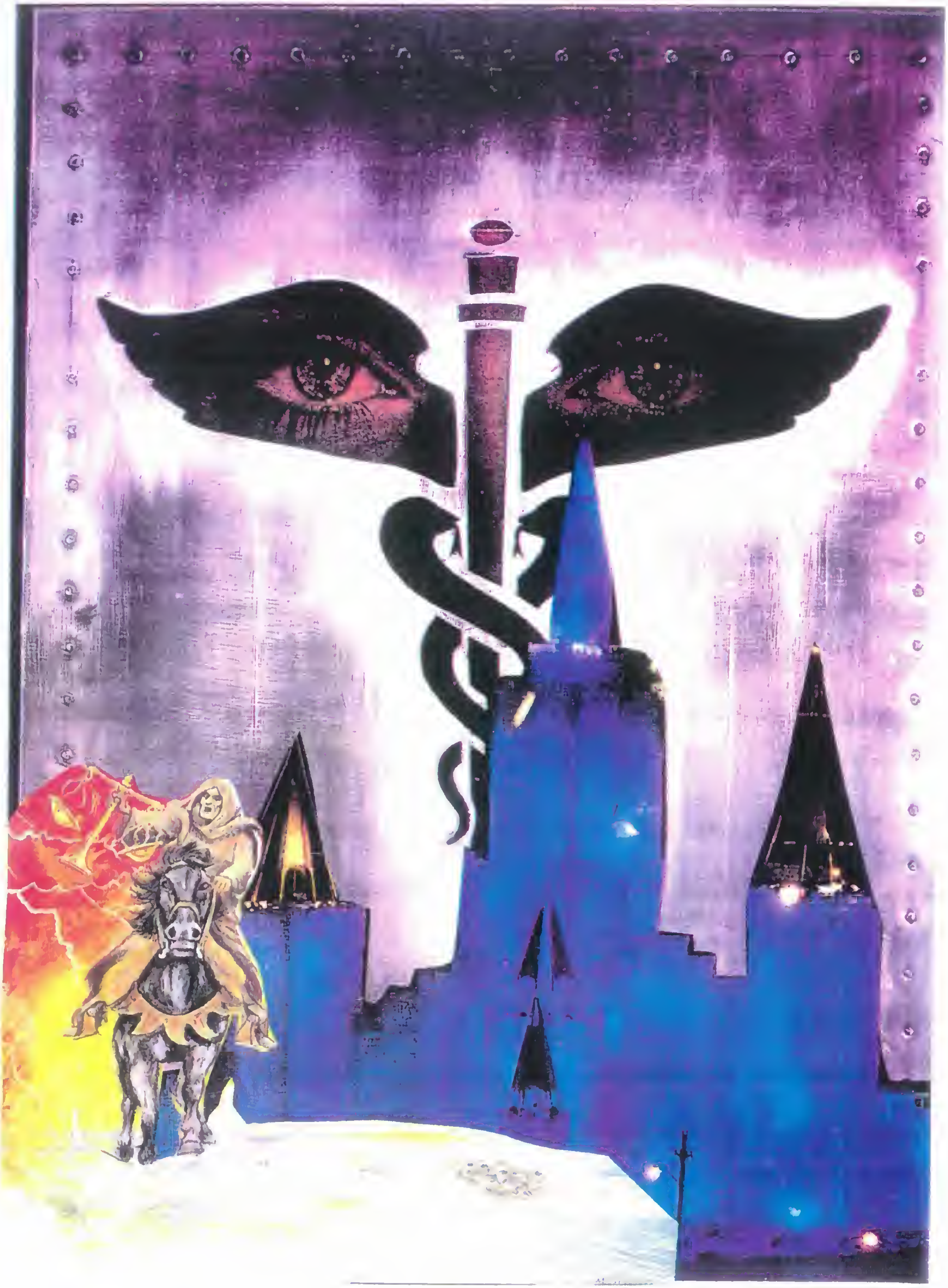

CONDITIONING & DRUGS

When we began to break free of the programming, we had bits and pieces of what was done to us. We also began getting memories back in bits and pieces.

Our System was conditioned by our programmers just like you would train an animal. Some of our parts were used to help the programmers program others. Victims who are being programmed can be hypnotized even if they try to resist by a few grams of paraldehyde or an introvenous injection of sodium pentothal or sodium amytal. As we look back we can begin to describe things which were done to us such as Aversion Therapy to groom us, and electro shock to destroy our memory of events. We have alters who will beg their handler to be electro-shocked or beg to be hurt and punished. We were programmed to believe that we deserved such cruel treatment. Some alters feel pain & punishment is love. After punishing us, our controllers would laugh at us for having begged to be hurt, adding insult to injury. They could hypnotically heal some of our wounds which helped them rationalize their cruelty to us. They also felt they were setting us up for a great career in the Illuminati.

Our System received a wide array of mind-altering drugs and a vast amount of electro-shock. From the memories we have been getting it is possible to begin to catalog some of the drugs they may have used on us during programming. Sometimes we feel a need to cut our veins, as if we were remembering a bad LSD trip. Sometimes we feel like we are suffocating and drowning, as if anectine had been injected into us for misbehavior. We know that drugs were given us to allow them to hypnotise us very deeply. Our trances were taken almost to the point of death. Sometimes our body feels like it is on fire. Some of the burning may well have been conditioned into us via drugs which cause extreme sensations of being burned alive.

They could put us into a "twilight sleep" with the use of injected drugs. In the Twilight sleep state our subconscious mind was very susceptible to suggestions. They set up our System, so that for years we only slept for short periods and never went into REM sleep. They made sure that we self abused our own mind, by only sleeping in those phases of sleep that enhanced their mind control.

The most dangerous alters in our System were created by desensitization to violence, along with several other programming tricks. Our System and other Systems who are also getting free along with us, independently remembered the high speed films which were shown us. We remember being strapped in a chair while one film was shown in one eye and another in the other eye. Violence was shown in one eye, and family vacations, etc. in the other. Violent films were shown to some of the deeper alters to the point blood and gore mean nothing to them. They were also conditioned to believe they are elite and that everyone is their enemy. By teaching them to hate their enemies, when these alters are needed to kill, they can access those memories of hate and feelings toward enemies. Handlers know how to make alters feel threatened if they want alters to hurt someone.

One thing we found out over the years is that our programmers kept records on us. They recorded every ritual, every memory, every torture, and they kept track of those memories with codes. When they wanted to blackmail us, they showed us past films of what we had done. When our self-governing programming wanted to keep an alter in line, the internal programmers would bombard that alter with a horrible memory that would keep recycling. We had layered programming on top of memories. In fact, they at one point tried to destroy our minds by recycling horrible memories. This happened when we hit a back-up program called the Princess Program. Several other survivors also had the same series of difficulties when they hit their back-up Princess Programming too. These memories had been stored in our castle's torture dungeon.

Our memories of being used were often locked behind posthypnotic blocks, and only the Programmers (internal and external) have known what the alpha-numeric cues were to release those memories. They layer in false memories and false messages to protect the real. False memories do not have the variety of sensations that the real memories have. In our real memories, we can hear, and feel, and smell etc. everything that is going on.

During the time that they used us, we noticed that they generally got what they wanted from most people. If a politician or soldier or other desirable person did not on their own want to serve their cause, they would bribe them. If they couldn't be bribed then, they were threatened and bribed or blackmailed and bribed. If that failed, the person could be mentally rearranged to suit their needs or simply TWEPed (terminated with extreme prejudice). Unfortunately, parts of our System were designed to help them do these things.

Half a dozen of us who knew each other have managed to get out. Our experiences in being used together and having experienced the same things validate to us what happened. In addition to this, our best friend managed to witness how we were being accessed and being used. It sounds on paper like it was easy to put the pieces together as to what had been done to us. Actually, it wasn't so easy because they scattered and buried so many of our memories deep in our mind locked up by almost unbreakable techniques that almost totally insure that their secrets will remain secrets.

ALICE IN MONARCHLAND

The picture has Alice in its center and is full of mirrors which are represented by the various reflecting glass objects. At the time this picture was done it showed some things which were very important to the System. The King is King Ahab and he is defending his vineyard with Jezebel.

Although this drawing has a story behind it, it also gives us an opportunity to explain what we would like to say about the book *Alice In Wonderland*. When we were programmed we got not only Wizard of Oz programming, and programming which misused the Bible stories (such as King Ahab), but we also got Alice In Wonderland programming. Our System has its share of mirror images and reversals. We would go through the looking glass, and we would fall down an oak tree by falling into a deeper and deeper trance.

Monarch programming is a reflection of how Satan's mind works. Lewis Carroll's book with its inversion themes fits in with this type of thinking. Lewis Carroll loved the humor of logical contradictions. In the book, Alice wonders if cats eat bats or bats eat cats, and she is told that to say what she means is not the same as meaning what she says. When she eats the left side of the mushroom, she grows large; the right side has the reverse effect. These changes in size are in themselves reversals. A large girl and small puppy end up to be a large puppy and a small girl. In Sylvia and Bruno, we are presented with an antigravity wool that can be placed into a parcel to make it weigh less than nothing, a watch that reverses time, a black light, and a projective plane with outside inside and inside outside. We learn that E-V-I-L is simply L-I-V-E backwards.

In the looking glass world, the Red Queen knows of a hill so large that compared to it the hill in question is a valley. Also she knows of dry biscuits which quench thirst, a messenger who whispers by shouting, and Alice who runs as fast as she can to stay in one place. (Sometimes it seems we really do have to run fast to stay in place.)

The King of Hearts thinks its not unusual to write letters to nobody, and the White King compliments Alice on having keen enough eyesight to see nobody at a great distance down the road. Can you see why this book was so good to program us?

In the book *Through the Looking Glass* all asymmetrical objects (that means all objects which can't be superimposed on their mirrored image) "go the other way." There are left-right reversals. Tweedledee and Tweedledum are mirror image twins. The White Knight sings about squeezing his right foot into a left shoe, and there are several mentions of corkscrews. A Helix (a corkscrew) is an asymmetric structure with distinct left and right forms. The book's type of thinking was extended beyond asymmetrical objects to asymmetrical relations of all types. For example, Alice walks backward, in the railway carriage the guard tells her she is traveling the wrong way. The king has two messengers, "one to come and one to go." The White Queen explains the advantages of living backward in time, the looking glass cake is handed around first, then sliced. Odd and even numbers, which are equivalent to left and right or on and off are worked into the story at several points. For instance, the White Queen requests jam every other day.

Going through the looking glass takes us to a world where the ordinary world is turned upside down and backward. Things go every which way except the way they are supposed to go.

Anti-matter is a mirror image. Anti-matter milk will explode Alice, but an Anti-matter Alice on the other side of the looking glass can drink the anti-matter milk.

In Chapter 11 Alice captures the Red Queen. It results in a legitimate checkmate of the Red King, who has slept through the entire live size chess game without moving. The checkmate ends the dream, but leaves open in the story the question of whether the dream was Alice's or the Red King's. The programming has so often been only a dream to us. The outside world was so often just an unreal dream to us. What was real and what was not real? The real world (for other people) was full of contradictions, and the unreal world (our internal world) was consistent. Everything was upside down, forwards and backwards. In the Looking Glass book, one shuttles back and forth mysteriously between real and dream worlds. "So, either I've been dreaming about life or I only dream that life is but a dream."

As we broke away from our programming our life was a bewildering confusion as we were pulled between two worlds. The internal world had everything we needed, the external world was a harsh cold reality that didn't have much to offer. We are thankful that there were people in the external world which helped make it real for us, and who gave us a reason to want to come out of the internal reality which we were programmed to believe in. For so long much of life was a dream. It was hard to get a grasp on what was real and what was the lie. Many of the lies were more real to us when we were programmed than the truth. Life was sometimes like the parallel dreams of the Red King and Alice, like two mirrors facing each other.

Lilith

Our System was designed by the Illuminati. To understand it fully, requires that people learn something about the beliefs and practices of the Illuminati.

Our System was designed to function in Illuminati rituals. Our Mothers of Darkness alters were taught those things that the Illuminati think are important for their people to know. The alters, who are in this picture, are our Mothers of Darkness alters who were skilled in a number of areas for the cult.

Recently, on television a show portrayed a village of women who have sex with males and then sacrifice them. The show was portraying by accident or secret design the ritual practice of the Mothers of Darkness. The false gods of Babylon, India and Egypt had false trinities. The Mothers of Darkness alters are on pedestals and they have been taught that they are goddesses. On each pedestal is a trinity of 3 Mother alters who spin together. One alter is the maiden, one is the mother, and the other is the old crone. The old crone is the wise one which lurks in the background.

The owl in the System was just one way that our Master made his presence known. The owl is an important guiding source of wisdom in the occult world.

The tree roots are symbolized by the veins of the leaves that run behind all the activity of the dark part of the System seen here. The tree roots and branches ran through our System. This tree got its life from the blood of sacrifices. What do I mean by this?

The story of Lilith plays a role in the makeup of our System.

What our Mothers of Darkness learned about Lilith was that she was the first wife of Adam. She was very rebellious, and got kicked out of the Garden of Eden by God. Almighty God then created Eve from Adam. Eve would be more obedient because she was from his own flesh. Meanwhile Lilith got enraged and dashed her new born son's head against a rock. Her son called out to Satan. The earth cries out to God for revenge for the innocent blood that has been shed. In Satanism, this is reversed. The blood of Lilith's son cries out to Satan for revenge. This is in rebellion against God. The blood continually calls to Satan for revenge. The blood is the eternal life force. The blood keeps the tree alive. The tree contains the programming and the programming is taken care of by the demons. The blood of Lilith's son is in a box beneath our System's tree. On top of the box is the blood of the first male child we were forced to sacrifice. This is what gives life to the tree that runs through our System/& our body.

Note that the box opens up to 9 chambers which are part of the Caballistic Tree of Life. Our programmers were adepts at Caballistic magic.

It is very significant to renounce and break the blood oaths and blood sacrifices. This was an important part of our journey toward freedom.

Aa
Aa

MOLOCH

This picture is very revealing. This picture tears away at the secrecy of the most innermost major mechanisms of the System. For instance, the mice run up and down and open up new levels of programming and are tied to the pendalum/clock mechanism. The mice can activate the hour glass, and a gold-winged green skirted fairy Whisper balances the hour glass on her wings. First, we will concentrate on the top figure the horned Bull which represents Moloch. Then we will discuss the Quadrants, Compass, Thor, etc.

The top figure in this picture is Moloch. We had a Temple of Moloch in our System where they put the memories of the babies that were sacrificed.

There is a great deal of disinformation and skepticism about child sacrifices. Much of this comes from the control of the Illuminati over our entire educational/information dispensing process.

However, there is overwhelming evidence that the Satanic practices of today have been historically practiced for many thousands of years. The massive ancient burial site of Tanit (known in Hebrew as Tophet) has been uncovered by archeologists near Jerusalem. This burial site has burial urns used for the ashes of sacrificed babies which have pictures and decorated text which refer explicitly to the child sacrifices that the urns were part of. There were over 7,000 burial urns from the late period of use of the burial site. All levels of society, from rich to poor sacrificed their children to appease the gods--especially the god commonly known as Moloch. The elite bloodlines of the Mystery Religions (what is now called the Illuminati) carried out sacrifices of their children more often than the average people of that day. The Tanit ritual site was used for over a thousand years (and probably is in use today secretly). The thousands of baby remains and thousands of burial urns are unrefutable proof that infant sacrifice not only existed in ancient times, it went on for thousands of years.

Several historical works refer to the Council of Elders in Sparta who would inspect newborn babies. If the babies didn't make the grade of this inspection the Council of Elders would have them killed by throwing them off Mt. Tagggetus into the Apotheta. As a child of an Illuminatus, our System was taken before the Grand Druid Council and given an inspection while we were nude. The inspection was very indepth. Fortunately, we past the test. There are physical criteria concerning the body which must be met.

One of the young men our Mothers of Darkness helped program for the Illuminati worked for Manly P. Hall. Manly P. Hall sat on the Grand Druid Council at one time. He is dead now. His massive book *The Secret Teachings of All Ages* is a major reference work on the Mystery Religions. On page C (page 100) he talks about rings. "In the Mysteries, rings chased to resemble a serpent with its tail in its mouth were worn by the initiates as material evidence of the position reached by them in the order." Both our actual father, who was at one time a Grand Master, and the person we were given to after he died (who was also a Grand Master), wore silver rings with a snake swallowing its tail. This is proof for those who have publicly seen those rings on their fingers that these men who were our masters had powerful positions within the Illuminati which is the continuation of the Mystery Religions. Freemasonry claims to be a continuation of the Mysteries also. Although Freemasonry functions more as a school to preserve the symbology and ritual than being the actual organization.

By the way, when our deeper Grande Dame alters helped program that young man, they helped make glitches in the programming so that the programming would later be defective. Obviously, they did this very quietly behind the backs of the Programmers. This man was later able to break free of his Monarch Mind Control. We are happy that we played the first step in his journey to freedom.

At the center of the System are the mechanisms that control it, such as the Master Computer, the All-Seeing Eye, the Compass, the Master Clock, and the Quadrants that tie in together. The System had 3 hourglasses spinning on axes. These hour glasses can also be called matrixes, which are on your standard 3 axes, a X axis, a Y axis & a Z axis. The worlds are various sections of these matrixes. The picture shows how there are backup worlds & mirror image worlds. We have a double system. Each alter was split so that every alter has another alter created from her. Then there are demonic doubles--demonic mirror images in the System. The double images shown in the picture are very real when describing our System. Some therapists have noticed "Satanic Guardian Angels" which talk to their patients. They do not know what to make of these. Some classify them as hallucinations, because they do not have any room in their belief system for demonology. These are the demons that do control the multiple's mind. Thor, with his hugh hammer turned out to be a painful demon. Thor was in our System, and is depicted as a black stone figure at the top. His hammer is behind the top of the girl on the far right. When his hammer would strike, we'd get split brain headaches. They used the story of the Giant with the Hammer in the *Ozma of Oz* book (pp. 141-155) to give us the imagery when programming us. A special series of sweeping motions with both hands will relieve the split brain programming, but some alters can only tolerate these hand signals being done by the master. Our Thor was made of cast iron & carried an iron mallet. We had to use God's spiritual power & the Blood of Jesus Christ of Nazereth to destroy the Temple of Moloch.

BUTTERFLIES

The person may look on the outside like they have it together, but on the inside the participants of the Mysteries have been fragmented. The person and the therapist have only pieces to work with. Even if those pieces seem innocent, somewhere in the fragmented mind are memories such as what our Temple of Moloch held. There was nothing that was not done to us.

One of the tortures they put us through was a humiliating butterfly torture. It is very painful to remember, and very humiliating.

Sometimes we have silently cried out for help. The blue butterfly represents the Monarch Programming. Small blue butterflies would be tatooed on some of their victims. We have worn butterflies berrets out of a combination of a facination for what was programmed into us, a silent call for help, and a silent expose of what they have done.

We also have butterflies in our System, thousands of them. Some are very beautiful.

The picture tells that there is a story. There is an untold story of thousands of what appear to be beautiful women who are on the inside of their minds merely beautiful CIA butterflies. There is the untold story of how their humanity was violently stripped from them and how they were dehumanized. And no one has stopped the production of these human butterflies.

The Monarch butterfly is said to always go home to its point of origin. There the Monarch butterfly creates a new generation, like the salmon which return to their point of origin. We were given a relatively inactive period of use when the cult left us alone to raise our family when the age of the body was in its 30s. We were later to go back to replace our Aunt's position in the Hierarchy. By allowing us to raise a family, we developed a good cover, and we provided them with more items to blackmail us with. They threatened us repeatedly that if we did not comply that we would lose our kids and grandchildren. One of people we were teamed with did lose a son. He was killed via his programming. We hope that his death was not in vain. We are going to speak the truth so that his death was not in vain.

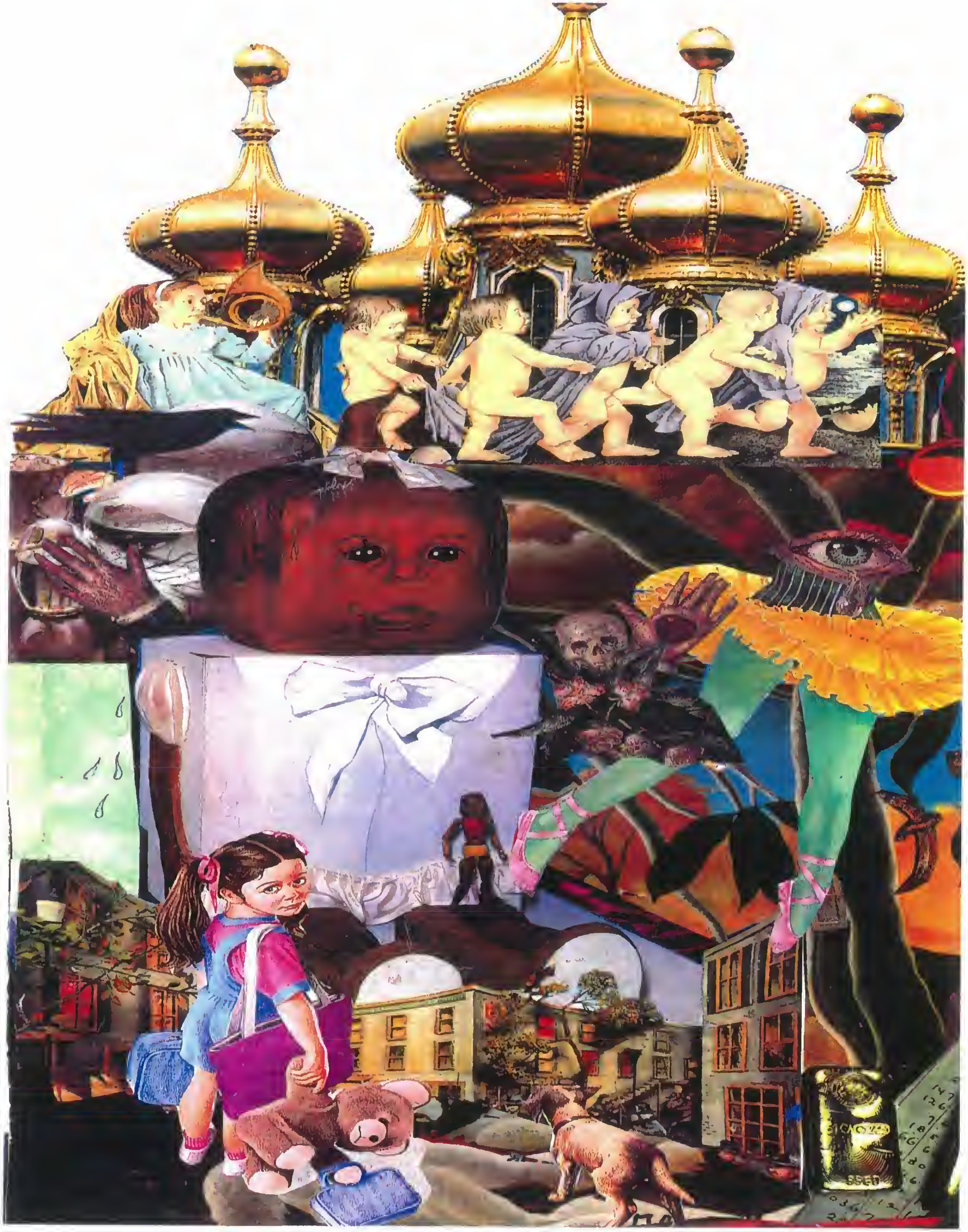

DESTRUCTIVE EPISODES

As more and more people learn about the Monarch Mind Control, there are more and more cases of people who don't grasp that you just don't walk up to someone under this type of trauma-based mind control and tell them that they are under mind control.

The victim doesn't know he or she is a victim--nor may they. The victim is not allowed to know. If they were to realize the truth, they are programmed to commit suicide. It is the ultimate safety device to insure the programmers' secrets.

Many of the victims of Monarch programming have been improperly diagnosed a Paranoid Skizos, and many of them have been hauled off to mental hospitals when they tried to escape their programming. Our abusors often threatened that if we tried to escape we would have this or that bad thing happen, and one of those was to end up in a mental hospital.

Our family just could not understand that if we had a problem that our problem wasn't like the problems they were used to. If the mind-controlled slave does realize something of their mind control, who would believe them? Who could help them? The System is set up to catch run away Monarch slaves. The Illuminati control the help lines that survivors might want to call for help. Many of the therapists are multiples themselves, and many of them are plants. About half of the therapists in our area working with Monarch victims are multiples themselves who are plants of the Illuminati! These plants influence the legitimate therapists. This happens at meetings the therapists have together and in other places and ways.

This means the escaping mind-controlled slave is on his or her own a great deal of the time. Sometimes to reduce the pressure of the suicide programs, slaves will act out what their mind tells them to do. Rather than cut with a real knife a plastic one can be used or a dull a pair of plastic scissors used. Or maybe if the desire is to cut, channel that toward cutting paper.

The elements in this picture show how suicidal a System can get. The dwarfs were always protecting the programming. Boxes and other things also protected the programming, and presented problems if they were opened. An octopus strangling program might be released. One of the programs was to make us feel like we were fragile paper doll cut outs. They used a story in the Wizard of Oz series for that programming. We would get so fragile that to touch us, would make us feel like we were shattering into a million pieces.

Death is in the center of this picture. The little girl is facing all this mess. One of the methods it seems that a survivor will self-destruct is that the programming pushes certain alters to look into things that will cause self-destruction. It is hard to tell a survivor that there are limits to what they should look at in their System. They may push themselves so hard in looking for answers that they self-destruct.

Notice the small puppet in front of Dr. Green's box. Many of our alters believed the programming that we are merely a puppet--a marionette puppet of Dr. Green's. As a puppet we have no thoughts of our own. If we were told to self-destruct to preserve the goals of our puppet masters we would do it. Now we have more control over own life.

Death surrounds the escaping slave on every side like a fog, but the help that is there is often only in the form of a therapist once a week. Many therapists have found out that taking on an escaping cult slave is like a full time job. Unfortunately, professional therapists do not have the time to devote to a client like this. Therapists can form teams or help each other by being back ups for each other when the other is gone. Still there is not a good answer short of providing 24 hour expert supervision if success is wanted. We would never have survived our destructive episodes if we had not had expert 24 hour supervision.

The picture's teddy bear shows how helpless the girl feels. People coming to therapists need others to continually tell them that they are not helpless. The Monarch survivor needs constant reassurance that they can make sound choices and that they can seek answers within themselves, and that they can achieve power over the programming.

Besides the programming, there are guilt issues and other issues that can trigger destructive episodes in a System. However, the bottom line is shown at the top of this picture. Destructive episodes are a spiritual issue. Destructive episodes are usually demonically powered. When we got rid of the destructive demons in our System, we got rid of the power that wanted us to commit suicide. Spirits of Death and many thousands of similar Spirits drove us toward self-destructive behavior. The mind must be free of this type of control to make positive choices.

This picture is again full of the items that ran through our mind. The gold, the code numbers at the bottom right, the ravens, the dancing, and the all-seeing eye to list a few.

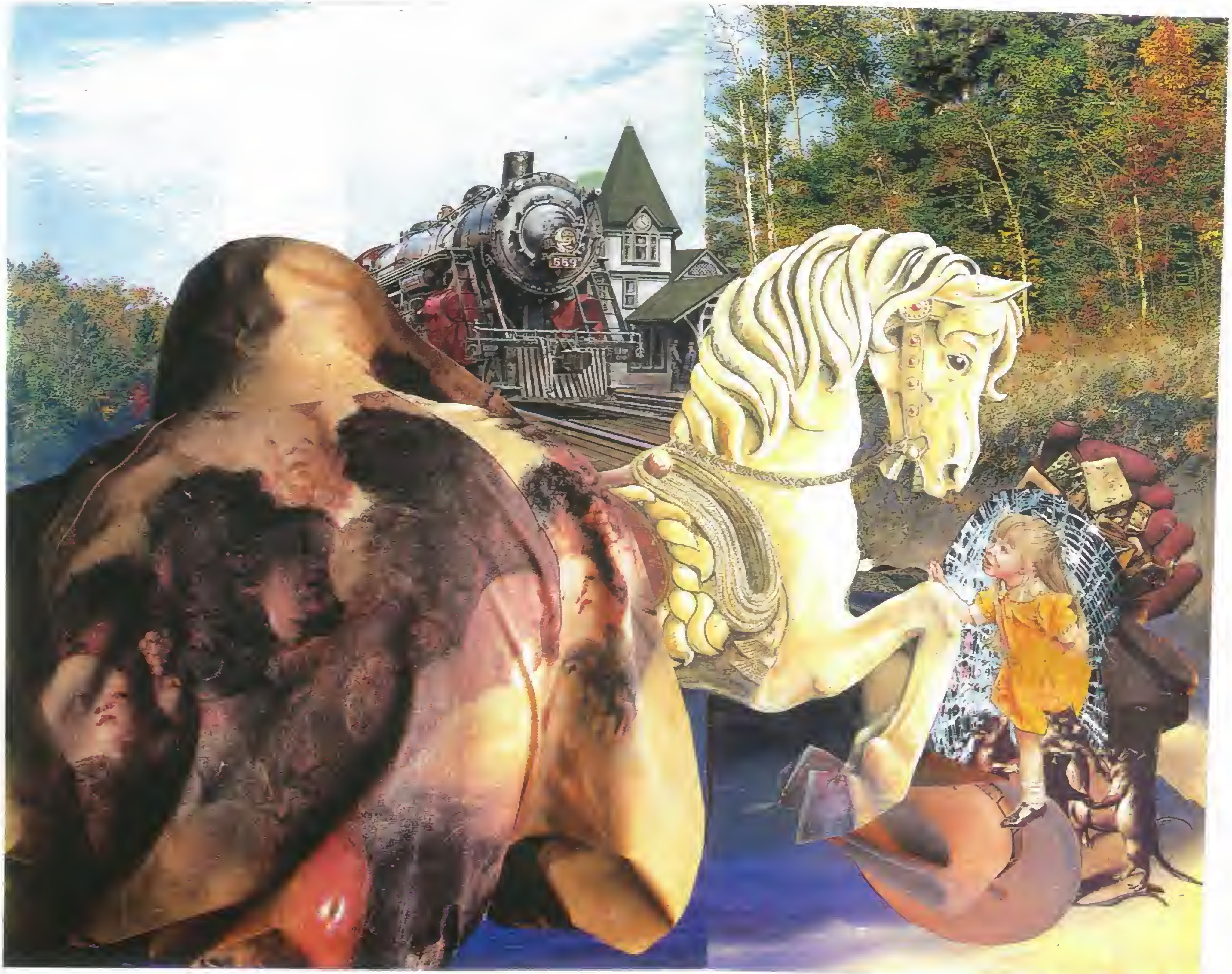
559

AWAKING!

This picture was one of our first collages. The alter who did this was beginning to awaken to what had been done to us. However, the idea that our father could be linked to any abuse was so radical of a thought that the picture didn't show his face, only his hat underneath the girl.

It is possible some people see this picture as only a bunch of colors on a sheet of paper, but to us it is a picture of significance.

The horse symbolizes our Master and the little girl is meeting him. The Freedom train's railroad tracks represent the actual railroad tracks this alter walked on to get the System to the location it was accessed at.

But who can believe all this? Part of the ongoing abuse cycle is that the System must pretend to the outside world that our abuse didn't happen. Some alters would come out of denial, and then climb back in it again. To face what was done to us is hard enough without any programming. But we were trying to face our past in spite of the programming and in spite of all those well-intentioned people who advised us to forget the past.

Until we knew where we'd been, we couldn't know where we were. Until we knew where we were we couldn't plan where we wanted to go. We needed to face the past. The route to health for an Monarch slave is the opposite from what it is for others. Some people need to let go of the past--not so for the victim of Monarch programming. Forgetting and dissassociation is part of the problem--and more of it is not the solution.

INTERNAL DEFENSES

Our picture here is illustrating all the numerous defensive programs that have gone off trying to protect us from touching with anything in the System. The System was twisting and turning and trying to keep its sanity as dozens of suicide programs went off, and the Gamma Programming reached a feverish pitch.

The secret set of coded programs/computer workings is called Omega Programming. The super-secret demonology processes where demons and portals are constructed throughout the system is known as Gamma Programming. The Gamma Programming includes the All-Seeing Eye, the Vail, the Eggs with Imps etc.

The internal defenses consists in part of body programs that are triggered if the Mind-controlled slave steps out of line. Here is a good list of some of these **body programs**:
Auditory problems, Blood flow/circulation, Digestive failure, Headaches-split brain, Heart failure, Histamine production, Optic problems, Respiratory failure, Sleep deprivation, Sleeping program, and Temperature change.

The suicide programs that would go off included Armageddon, Clowns cutting, Cutter program "Pain is Love", Disembowelment, Drug overdose, Gethsemane, Injection of bleach (poison), Octopus, Red Sea, Shooting Programs (shotgun, russian roulette, shooting family, etc.), War in the Heavens & Wrecking the car.

Along with the suicide programs that would be triggered were other programs that would jerk our minds every which way which included: Busy Cleaning Program, Crazy program, Flooding (from Atlantis), Isolate & Hibernate Program, Memory Erasure Program, Pain Programming, Protection by trance, Revolving switching, Scrambling Program, and re-Structuring Programming.

When we were going toward freedom our mind triggered programs of all kinds, and the mind ended up not knowing if it was coming or going with all the different programs which were activated. For weeks on end we had all types of suicide programming going off, and our minds had to fight the suicide programs second by second. It was a long drawn out fight that we could not have made without a friend with us every second of the day.

The picture gives an idea of all the craziness and activity of the Omega and Gamma programs which activated to defend the Illuminati's Mind Control.

On top of that everyday life would trigger us. We would be triggered by dates, faces, events, things on TV, and Ceremony Dates. Some of our triggers were general triggers and some were to self-discipline ourselves. In other words, even without the programming, we had a lot of abuse issues to work through which could be triggered by everyday life.

The programs were put into our System and given codes. Our strongest alter, a general in the System worked 6 months of hard work to figure out some of these codes, and with our best friend we had a good idea of how they triggered some of the body and suicide programs. These programs had Greek, Hebrew and Druidic letters in their activation codes. Actually, these alphabets also are the way these people numbered with, and the Greek, Hebrew and Druid letters were used as numbers. Our friend named these programs Utility Programs, because they functioned much like the utility programs of a computer.

The secret Gamma Programming- that is the demonology was also part of what we had to deal with. The eggs in the picture held imps. Grotesque looking demons terrorized the system, but it wasn't until they were cast out of the body that we saw their true form.

The programming was designed that if it was taken out improperly, it was to come back Seven time Seven stronger. Along with all the programming went cover programming. Generally, front stories have covered almost everything in our System.

Dominoes were used as the basis for what would be called a Mother Board in actual computers. *Alice In Wonderland*, the *Wizard of Oz* and the *Tall Book of Make Believe* played a fundamental role as "software" in our System. The *Wizard of Oz* stories told us what structures to put in our internal world and even HOW to create an internal world and its parts.

We don't want to forget the root program, the tree which was used as a method of organizing the various programs, just like a computer's subdirectories branch out more subdirectories. If our programming was tampered with, we would want to cut the tree--however, since the tree was in us, this meant we would want very badly to cut our arms, especially our veins. Sometimes we did cut ourselves, sometimes multiple times, but fortunately we never killed ourselves.

The abusers had 3 part access codes. They could trigger us to have abusive behavior too as punishment. Their final act of torture was to try to start an internal shattering that would domino through the System and shatter all the alters one by one. Fortunately, we got the shattering stopped just before it completed its job.

CIVIL WAR

The light side and the dark side of our System lock themselves in combat.

Our System had a Christian mother who was not in the cult. She was meant to be a front, but she also seriously threw a monkey wrench into their plans. She helped our Christian alters to find and use the power of God. Mother's spiritual power, due to her faith in God, was never crushed, although the abusers tried. Our Christian alters became prayer warriors who would storm the gates of hell, and would walk up boldly to the throne of God and intercede for our System.

But our System was also secretly part of the highest levels of generational Satanism. Dark side alters on the Mothers of Darkness level learned high level demonology. They learned to summon demons. Their jewelry was part of the focal points to invite demons in. The demons our System had internally were considered friends by alters on this level. Their programming kept them from seeing the slavery that the demons kept them in.

Both the Christian alters and the Dark Side alters had people in the external world they could call on. And both sides did call on help from their side. The Civil War between the light side alters and the dark side alters has gone on for years, but came to a crescendo of activity when the deprogramming began.

This picture was done in the middle of the war. The Satanic dark side had the programming and the structure of the System on their side. The light side had their faith in their Almighty Creator.

There have been a number of Illuminati people who have tried to get free. However, the lack of understanding by Christians and counselors have destroyed any chance they could have had. If a man says he is a member of the Illuminati but wants to leave, that doesn't mean that some of his alters won't still be loyal to the dark spiritual side. If Christians catch one of his dark side alters doing something occultic, that doesn't mean that the Christian alters aren't serious about leaving Satanism.

Our System suggests that the deprogramming such as we went through be done as intense and quickly as is reasonable, and as free of outside interference as possible. When a System is half deprogrammed and then is accessed, the result is a terrible mess. Unfortunately, the therapeutic process that is in place in the nation leaves the victims of Monarch programming free to be victimized by their abusers when they are not in the therapist's office. Therapists are restricted from taking a part in their clients personal lives, so a large area of the victim's life is an open target for their abusers to continue accessing them. Quite frankly, a great deal of therapy may be more harmful to a System than helpful, because the abusers can come along behind the therapist and wreck havoc on the survivor and his or her mind. Therapists often rely on front alters to report to them as to whether the System is being accessed. If a System is working as it was designed, the front alters will not be able to detect when their System is used. There are plenty of cover stories that can be hypnotically given to explain lost time, & it doesn't take long to do lots of damage with a System if you're the System's handler.

The dark side can be accessed via letters, music, telephone calls, telepathically, via electronic signals, via the pattern of planes flying overhead and a number of other ways. Sometimes Illuminati Masters astrally project themselves into the victim's room.

The battle in the picture is an intense one. The Illuminati want to shut the light side alters down. The poppy field indicates the fate that some alters experience. The cemetery shows that this is a fight for life or death. Some of the Christian alters may end up thrown in prison. Except the prison they serve in is within their own System's mind. Christian alters who got trapped for months inside unable to get out, found solace by praying and trusting in their Savior. Short of miracles and outside intervention, there is no way for a Monarch Mind-controlled slave to free him or herself. There is a lack of serious understanding people to pull these victims out of their mind-control. A System under mind-control can not free itself.

The light side can not simply go get itself delivered of demons, or simply attend church every week to free its System. Dark side alters can not hear many of the Christian terminology or they have been programmed to understand the terminology in negative ways. Our System's dark side understood the following terms in the following ways:

- **"God"** was Satan, a victorious God who gave us everything. Christians had a god who had turned his back on us in time of pain and hated us while our Master had saved us. We had no heart anyway to give to any Christian god. Some of our alters were hypnotically trained to trance out at the word "God".
- **"Creator"** was our Programmer. He was obviously the one who made us, gave us life, and controlled us.
- Lots of Bible was programming for us. The point is that listening to sermons while under mind-control was not even remotely helpful. Until our mind was free, to force Christianity was counterproductive.

CODE RED

This picture was done by deeper alters trying to warn the System. Watch out! Code Red. Don't touch those books in the library. The Raven stands for the flocks of ravens that would appear and would take over the System. When the ravens got the body they would start tearing at the flesh of the body. Without someone to take care of us, the ravens would have bitten our flesh off.

This picture was done when our System was turning. After the System turned, the kitten alters were able for the first time to see the castle lights. Everything was red. There were also golds and blues. There were thunderstorms at this time in the System. The System was doing a lot of spinning too.

This picture also hints of the oaths, the double worlds, and other things involved in our System.

EVIL SPIRITS

This picture shows the evil side of the spiritual warfare that took place in our System. In our writing we refer to this spiritual side of the programming as Gamma Programming. It seems that everything that was done to us ties in with their dark spiritual beliefs. Some people observe Druidism and then describe it as ancient religious forms. However, a closer examination will reveal that Druidism takes a person into demonology. It is not a benign worship of nature.

When our Master spoke, he often talked about Druidism. In Druidism they teach a child equally about reality and the fantasy worlds. We were taught that life is "nothing but a dream." We were taught life was not real and we could change the ending to what we wanted. When we came across the book *The 21 Lessons of Merlyn* it reminded us of the kinds of things Dad would tell our deeper alters. There is a great deal in that book *The 21 Lessons of Merlyn* that have undertones that the person who wrote it knew about the Illuminati's mind control. Further, because our programmers were skilled Druids, our System reflects Druidism. Also it can added that some of the Druidic symbology has been placed into different Systems created by the Illuminati.

Halloween has come to us from the Druids. Halloween is Satan's birthday, and the Jack-o-lanterns are for his birthday. The Jack-o-lanterns are in the picture because they represent Satan's birthday.

The black widow in the picture represents the activation of our Delta-Beta alters. The Illuminati shut down our front alters and the alter (G 4) that normally was used as the System's runner to take us to them. They had to shut these strong alters down, because they were all Christians, and were trying to fight against the Illuminati's mind control. The System lost all its anti-cult alters, and the Illuminati gave instructions to the Delta-Betas to bring the System home. However, they did not anticipate that our System would have friends come to our rescue. Long story short, they had to put the Delta-Beta alters back into hiding so that our best friend couldn't compromise them. They left the System in the hands of the Kitten alters hoping that we would come home. We would have come home, but we were rescued by our friend, and deprogrammed. The Kitten alters were entertainment alters. We knew little about demonology and we didn't realize that we were demonized so much until we deprogrammed. Once the big daddy demons left the System, we were free to think for the first time in our life. When we deprogrammed we came out of trance. We had lived our lives in trances. When we came out of trance, colors became brighter, voices became more distinct, and sensations became clearer and bolder in general. It was an exciting adjustment to make. Some of us got to see the body's face for the first time. Before that, we had only seen what we had been hypnotised to see.

The adjustments demanded by deprogramming are great and there needs to be long term intensive help to help people learn to get back into the real world. Men who are captured by the enemy (POWs) will receive help to adjust back, but it sometimes gets overlooked that the survivors of programming need help to adjust to a new world too.

In the picture, we showed the man behind the wind whose voice was like thunder in our head. Therapists need to be careful, because the process of help may actually cause more trauma and more splits.

This drawing is one of the first where the Kittens were able to place the Mothers upon a pedestal. Most of our Gatekeeper alters are on pedestals too. However, the principal gatekeeper (designated as "a" by our programmers) is generally locked in place and fronts for the entire triad. The other two parts are "b" and "c". The deeper gatekeepers were spinning on their pedestal, and they had to be stopped and locked into place if the therapist wanted a conversation with them. Below these three would be 10 more. Generally the others were left young, and unexposed to the world. They help keep the few top ones who are exposed to the world in line. By only allowing a small fraction of our alters to interact with the real world, it was hard for us to break down the mind-control. Some of the mind-control broke down simply by allowing us to interact with the real world. This is why slaves like Loretta Lynn or Marilyn Monroe rarely read newspapers or watch much television. They are kept isolated externally and internally from the world. This control is summed up by the demonic hand which extends into the picture.

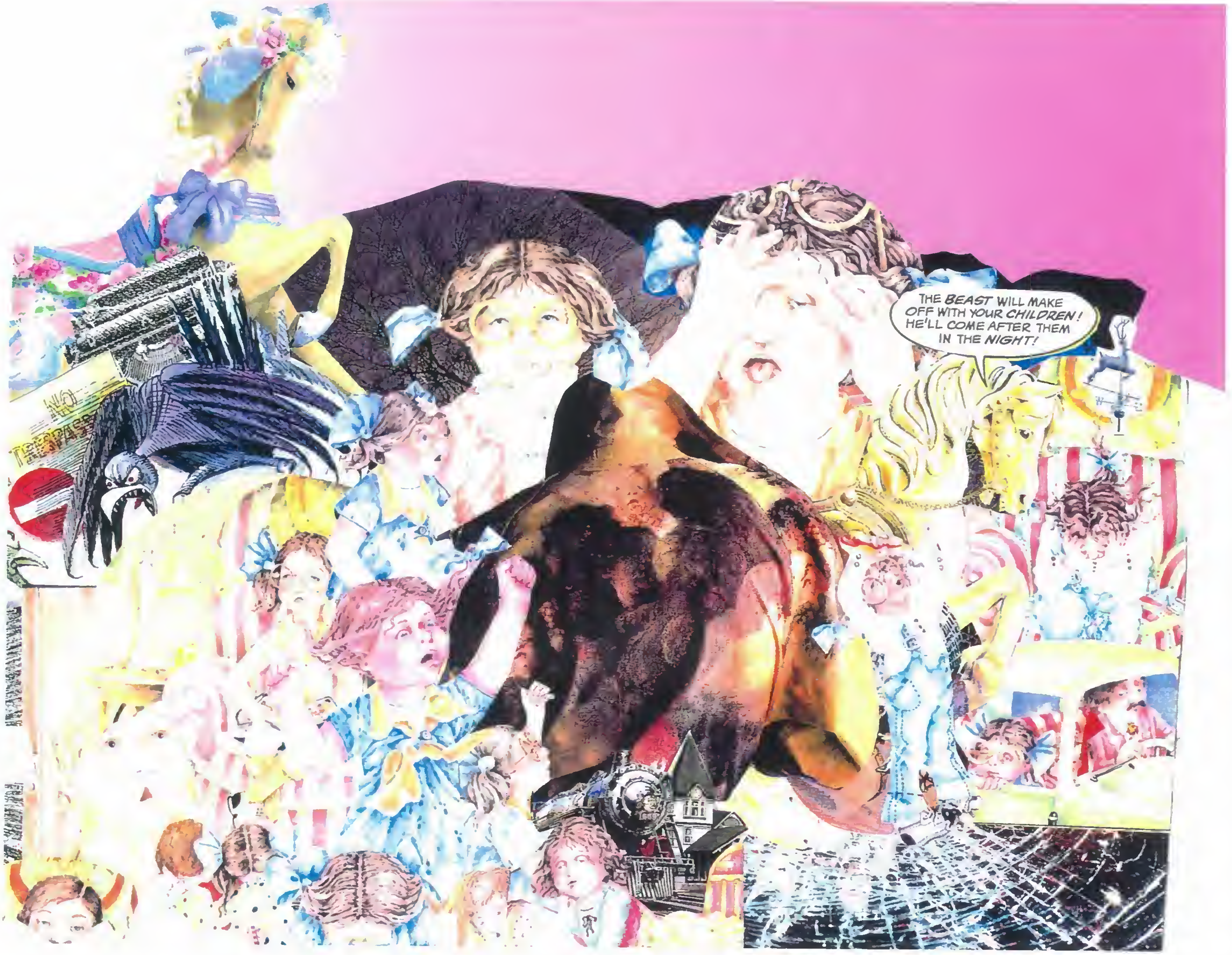
THE *BEAST* WILL MAKE OFF WITH YOUR *CHILDREN*! HE'LL COME AFTER THEM IN THE *NIGHT*!
TRESPASS

CHILD ALTERS

This collage is special because our child alters with some assistance from an adult or two put this picture together.

The nights that we have are filled with the horrible memories of our child alters. Grotesque memories are locked up in our child alters.

Most of the alters in our System were never hypnotically age-progressed. There are rooms full of child alters and boxes full of child alters and cemeteries and concentration camps in our System full of child alters. In fact, there are thousands of extra splits which were gathered up and never used in our formal structured System, but were discarded into dumps (cemeteries and concentration camps). When the mind is tortured it creates what it creates, the first splits being the best. The programmers found that they could get the child's mind to clean up the fragments and extra child alters and dispose of them in dumping areas so that they could keep the strong splits and keep a clean orderly System. That doesn't mean that the Multiple still isn't left with a mess. We have worked long hours to integrate thousands of child alters and fragments back into alters that are healthier. The programmers didn't care about these kinds of internal messes, as long as they were dumped somewhere and they could get what they wanted.

Some of our children were given robot suits like the divers of 20,000 Leagues Under the Sea. Those children were created in anger and their anger is directed toward attacking alters who are not in compliance with the programming. There are many armies of these single purpose child alters. Imagine being a baby sitter with a whole room full of hot headed little kids screaming their heads off. These child alters are too young and too angry and scared to reason with. The head gear of these clones can be unscrewed. Each of them in our System had a serial no. on the base of the neck such as 147.00 and 158.00. Sometimes we have had to drop cloth woven of light (a light net) to see if we can detect the clones. The lumps will reveal mirrors, and the mirrors when they are removed will reveal clones. Clones have switches to activate them (or to shut them off too.) Water, magnets, and microwaves have been used at different times to stop these child alters when they attack. Atlantis has armies of children in robot suits waiting to attack if the front alters step out of line. They are ruled by a Queen of the Clones, who works along with 3 Adept alters.

Older alters were assigned child alters to help protect the System from exposing itself in public. On our light side we have a nursery where wee ones were taken care of. Child alters do not normally take the body, because the older alters are to take charge of the body.

Some child alters were left as children intentionally so that the abusers could have a pedophile experience. For instance, in a family of 13 kittens, generally only about 3 in the family will have been hypnotically age-progressed, and the rest are still children.

When events happen, the adult alters have to manage the varied reactions of the multitudes of child alters. In other words they have to babysit. The adult alters may be able to handle something emotionally that simply terrifies the children. A system of multiplicity like ours is never having a single emotion. It is a whole party of people having all the different emotions of the picture all at once. Someone may be puzzled, another angry, another scared, and another curious. However, emotions can run through like waves through a System too. If one alter is angry or sad others may pick up on it.

The children portrayed things they had experienced in the picture. They show the carousel, which scares some of them. They show being driven in a car, and a train, and a horse, and a raven. The ravens in our System have been scary. Clear in the background in the ever present tree of programs which runs through our body, our mind and our system. The fact that our System was not an accident, but was intentionally structured angers us.

When a multiple is first getting in touch with themself, it is a good practice for the older front alters to make friends with the little ones. This can be done by giving them a safe environment and buying them a stuffed animal or toy. When front alters are first finding out they are a multiple, a child alter may be their first clue. This is because different adult alters will appear to outsiders simply a radical mood swings, but the child alters will be so startling and real that the MPD will have to be recognized. Integrating alters of the System together means trying to fight the programming.

Integration of child fragments that aren't part of the System can go on before deprogramming. But it is suggested that authority/control over the programming be taken before attempting any integration of regular System parts. Unless the programming is done away with, the parts will not likely succeed in fighting against the programming to integrate.

THE CORE SLEEPS

When a person's mind creates Multiple Personality the original person is called the core. When a person is split young like we were, the programmers have many years in which to create havoc with a person's core, so that it becomes dangerous and difficult to work with the core.

When the internal programmers began to anticipate the deprogramming they began activity around the core. In the picture the core is sound asleep under the carousel. The core of a System is usually greatly manipulated by Satanic programmers in order to insure the success of their plans and programming. They split our core into 13 parts and these core parts were named Silence 1 through Silence 13. Our SILENCE 1 was hidden deep in the mountain when the world shifted in 1994. When she was on the light side, the light side would hover over her. She was the guardian angel, over the Garden of Eden who protects the core's love for Daddy (Papa). Silence has spiders in her casket who bite her to keep her sleeping. Only the Prince can come and wake her up. She is loyal to the Prince (Daddy) who sang music to her as a little girl. For anyone else to wake her up meant that the mirrors would break and the broken heart will result in heart failure for the System.

Giving this Silence (the Princess) the kiss of death by the Wizard (who is the toad or prince) wakes her up. Who is this silent Princess--could it be Snow White who the dwarfs are protecting and care for? The Prince (aka Father of Time or Kronos or Ahab) can access and wake her up. He will kiss the 18 month old Silence. This 18 month old Silence is referred to by the System as Queen. When she wakes up she will be integrated with the Mothers of Darkness when the Illuminati want to use the Mothers of Darkness. Silence holds the key programming for why the Core acts like she does. Silence is guarded by Elizabeth and other light side care providers.

Our Silence was a Sleeping Beauty. Systems like ours have a back up program called the Princess Program. The Princess programming involves the core, waking her up, and moving her to a dark castle where she gives her energy to the dark side. The Princess Programming is a powerful back up program when it kicks in.

Our SILENCE 2 lives in a different place. The Ribbons lived with her, so it sounds like she lived in Petra which is a city within a mountain before we deprogrammed. The second angel (actually an evil spirit) guards the gate to the Garden of Eden also known as Petra. Silence 2 is the key to the dungeon which is hidden below in a deeper level. This has been protected by an army which may be the equivalent of the Nome army of the Wizard of Oz story. The story of Snow White and the Seven dwarfs also plays a major role in Silence 2's programming.

The other Silences of our System were hidden from the core, to use as a subtle form of black mail to the core. She of course wanted to be joined with those very young parts because they carried the little child's pure love for their father (who after bonding with the child programmed it.) When a child loves its father, and then that father abuses the child a very clean split in the mind occurs. The child cannot deal with two contradictory images of one person. How can a wonderful loving parent also be a terrible abuser?

Also in the picture is the yellow brick road. The Yellow Brick Road is the runway in which alters were trained to fly off from to exit their internal world and take the body.

The Yellow Brick Road also pertains to the assignment that an alter is given. To follow the Yellow Brick Road is to go down the road that has been assigned by command. The Yellow Brick Road programming is placed into the child's mind via the Yellow Brick Road of the Wizard of Oz story. Remember the key words, "Follow the Yellow Brick Road."

To get someone onto the Yellow Brick Road you must know the access code to get them through the poppy field. The color blue was important in our programming to the process.

Fiddler is important to the yellow brick road and then the people eat what is variously called music or a script or a letter which are words meaning "instructions". Notice that the picture has a great deal of scripts in the lower left.

Notice all the activity as the slippers and shoes are very busy while the core sleeps.

The Clockmaker (a.k.a. Clockkeeper) has the knowledge of the clocks. The primary clock is often disguised, but it is always gold. That is why the clock in this picture is gold. The clockmaker makes the clocks. The Clockholder positions the clocks in the System. The gold item changes form according to what is needed but it always carries its own [level's] abbreviation.

The clocks control the programmers. The clocks have the ability to be invisible.

The clock can be disguised as a bomb.

There is a Grandfather clock near the castle, when it strikes 1 it is time for a new system era. The clocks control several things. It is important for people to begin to be in a spiritual position to correctly deal in a positive way with both demons and alters. Our clockmaker turned out to be a demon, but his helper the clock holder turned out to be an alter.

BETA ALTERS

Alters can be created which do the total bidding of the Master. Some people are fragmented for a specific purpose. Within our System, different levels were created for different purposes. One of our System's levels is shown in the picture, this is the level which contained Beta and Delta alters.

The slipper, the flowers (orchids) and the jewels (a blood crown jewel) are all very important in regards to our System's Beta programming.

The Beta alters were designed for sexual blackmail. Some of the Beta alters can feign (simulate) death. We were warned that if the mirrors were broken, the Betas and Deltas might take over our System. The Betas are teamed with the Deltas. There may be a Satanic Bridegroom within the Betas.

How did they make our Beta alters? The Spin Kittens were created out of the later splits. The first splits are the strongest and the later splits are use for specific purposes. The Spin Kittens are examples of alters created from later splits for specific purposes.

What was the purpose of our Betas? These sexual alters are designed to blackmail men in positions of power. They also have a spin cycle in which specific types of sex are available to whoever is wanting a specific activity or perversion. The last spin (which is no. ten) wants to be hung from a wall and tortured, during which she will beg for more torture. There are several front Beta alters that have oversight over the other Beta's. These serve as a Madam in a Cat-house might in that they supervise and mother other alters. They were groomed to be quite social, and spent more time out than the spin kittens. Authorized users would say the correct sentences and in such a way select what alter and activity they desired.

The picture shows that the Betas are tied to the programming tree which protrudes into the upper right corner. The programming drove the System. The Betas were given sexual programming, and on the job training, but they served the master because of the total control exercised by the programming over the mind, not because they chose to do it. The chain that extends from the hat to the high heeled shoe is a symbol of the total bondage the Beta alters were placed under.

As is so often the case, what you see is not what you get from occult world. These Beta alters were very skilled at what they did. It is not likely that those who might have become their victims would have had their guard up.

This area of the System was desensitized to bloodshed. They had lost their hearts and their consciences. They simply obeyed. They had a script to follow that would take alters over the rainbow into the magical land of the Wizard of Oz and the land of Alice In Wonderland through the looking glass.

Precious stones such as rubies and pearls have a much significance to our System. Within our System we also had pearls. Bad memories were stored as black or grey pearls. White pearls were kept locked up. Another way that precious stones had importance was that they served as access cues.

DELTA-BETA

This picture is an expression of the explosive nature of certain alters who are trained deadly killers. The process to get alters who will blindly kill any other human being includes the following:

1. deeper and deeper dehumanization as alters are split off by torture trauma
2. desensitization toward brutality by brutal films and actual sacrifices
3. extreme torture to instill perfect blind obedience
4. blood rituals to attach powerful demons whose purpose is to enhance bloodlust, fear of disobedience, and to focus all thinking into a narrow road.
5. the handlers' ability to make alters think that their victim was an life-threatening enemy.

This is one area of the System one doesn't want to mess with.

The CIA creates killing monsters and calls them Delta models. These are physically strong men and women. The Illuminati creates systems with more versatility. Delta alters are placed into Systems which look benign on the surface.

The alters depicted are Delta alters which were enclosed in a Genie bottle so that they would be very solidly contained.

The Delta alters are masked because they have no sense of identity of their selves. Their checkered costume shows that these alters are strictly the lines of programming which make them up.

Their seductive appearance is because these Delta alters work hand in hand with special trained alters skilled in seduction for purposes of blackmail and assassination.

Why would the Illuminati create such versatility in a system? If a system which is created to operate at the Mothers-of-Darkness level should fail to live up to the standards or guidelines that are given it, then this System can be used for the practical purposes of anarchy, suicide missions, or assassination. The presence of such trained killers in a system also serves as a way to blackmail the System itself. If the System fails to comply, the trained killers will be released and they will kill innocent grandchildren or suicide the System.

Eyes are the light of a person's soul. These alters have no light in their eyes.

The figures are very active and tight showing how intensely the demonic programming drives them. The light of the internal life force (the internal all-seeing-eye) is shown as a background light in the picture, and behind this is the red from the blood sacrifices associated with this level of programming.

The programming leaves no room for love or tenderness. The Delta alters' programming is strictly hate and vengeance.

The umbrellas represent how the programming shields them. Note, an umbrella must be dismantled from the inside out, and so must Delta programming. There is no room for error with these deadly alters.

The lines are programming and so are the dots on the world between the figures. These deadly programs must be viewed in the light of Lucifer. These alters' arms are suspended in a stiff-arm position to show the inflexible nature of the programming to bend to the outside world.

The system of demons, including those blood demons attached to this area of the System, hold the programming in place. They must be correctly dealt with to dismantle the programming.

The outside world for these Delta alters is represented by the front dash of a limosene which characterizes the elite who lurk behind them ready to trigger them with cue words and signals.

A cat lunges in the middle background, because the dehumanization given them was to have them become fierce cats. When the System's body was only a child, these alters were given only the choice to become fierce cats. They were given blood to drink.

The world is shown in the top right because the Deltas are not playthings, but part of a plan for the Illuminati domination of the world through death.

These alters can continue to aid Satan's plan after the planned upon reign of the Anti-Christ begins, because they can be used to kill.

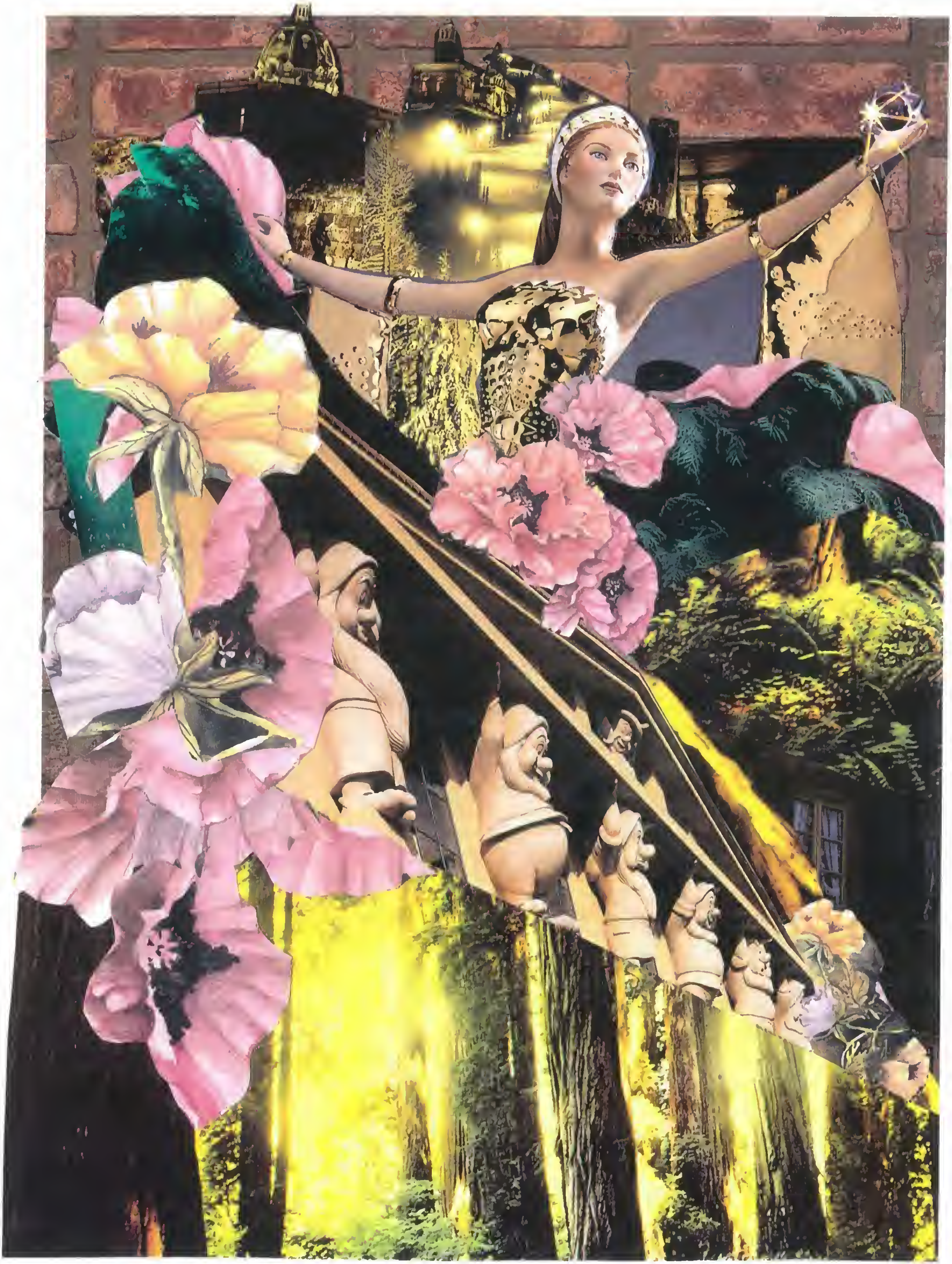

DWARFS

A recent movie version of Snow White has some strange names for the Dwarfs, one of them is named Kitty, and the rest have names that rhyme with Kitty. The dwarfs are a common item placed into Monarch's minds, and since Hollywood uses a great number of Monarch slaves, it's no surprise that their version of Snow White has a great deal of programming garbage in it.

The picture shows what our programming had. The dwarfs lived in a forest. Deep in the forest was a Temple - the House of David which they protected. They protected the princess, and the princess was to be woken up by Dad and taken to the castle. This happened when our programming was touched. The plans were already in place to integrate our Mothers of Darkness alters with the Core and the Silences (which were the first splits from the core) whenever the Anti-Christ began his reign. This would have given our Satanic alters all the energy they needed to have the body full time. The Core was strongly bonded to its father, and the love for Dad was carried by the Silences. The dark princess would integrate with the alters associated with the Core, because of the way the Dad issues were set up. To sum it up, they manipulated the child's natural love for its father to create drives in the early splits that would eventually be used to energize the dark side.

The flowers represent the poppy fields. Behind everything is a wall, showing that behind everything are walls and more of our entire System--which was a double System. We had a pyramid with an all seeing eye, and when this was taken out another System lay behind it.

The House of David is very significant. The Temple or the House of David represents that some of the Illuminati believe they are descendants of Solomon. Solomon was a great man of God who became the leading occult leader of his day. Solomon is credited with writing a long list of important secret Satanic books. Our father told us that we were jewish, but if we had jewish blood it certainly was kept very secret. There is a strong jewish flavor to the conspiracy, and some people blame the world-wide conspiracy on the Jews, but a far more accurate and more comprehensive label would be to say that it is a Satanic conspiracy. The various groups network together. Our friend wrote how the various elements or pieces of the conspiracy go together in his book Be Wise As Serpents. The House of David, the Anti-Christ, the Holy Blood line, and the 13th Illuminati bloodline all are important things in these days. These items are not important to understand programming per se, but understanding them will help people understand our role in the bigger picture.

Our System has been on a time-table that even our Masters can't tamper with. That time-table was set up so that we could serve the Anti-Christ we he came into power. So ultimately our System wasn't designed for only our Master's use, but for their Master, who was and is Satan. Sometimes when our dark side alters would have enjoyed more power, they were not allowed to advance themselves because they were to wait until the time was right for our System to be used. The demons in our System not only held our genealogies but they held the time tables of our future assignments. Our family had a generational occult background that stretched for centuries back into antiquity.

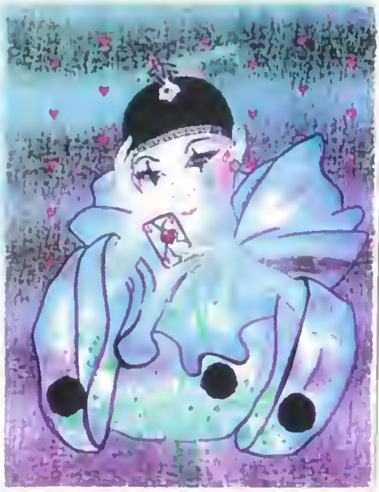
GATEKEEPER 1

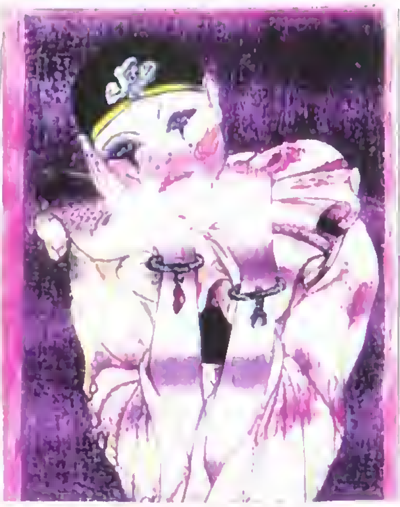
GATEKEEPER 2

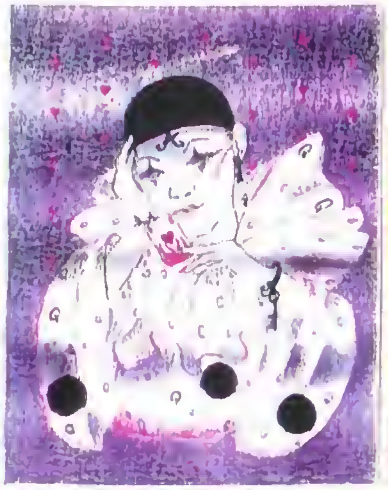
GATEKEEPER 3

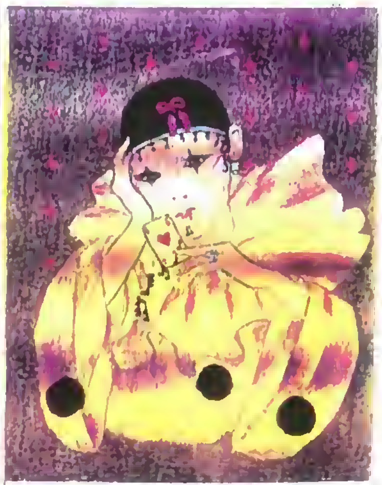
GATEKEEPER 4

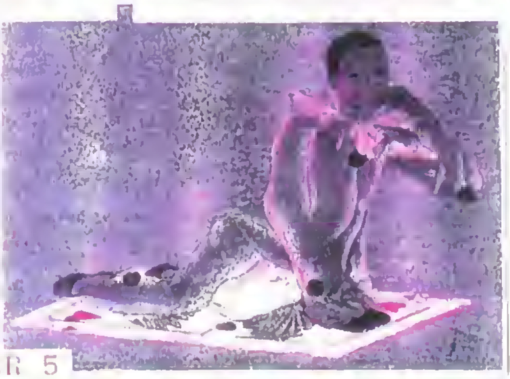
GATEKEEPER 5

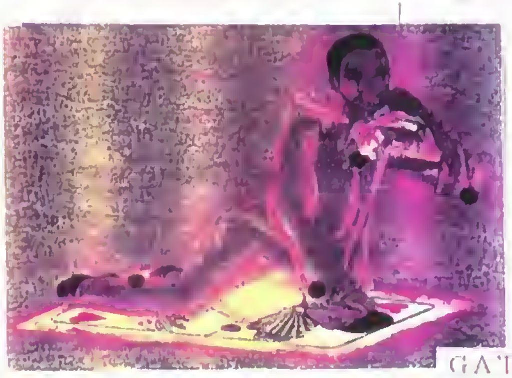
GATEKEEPER 6

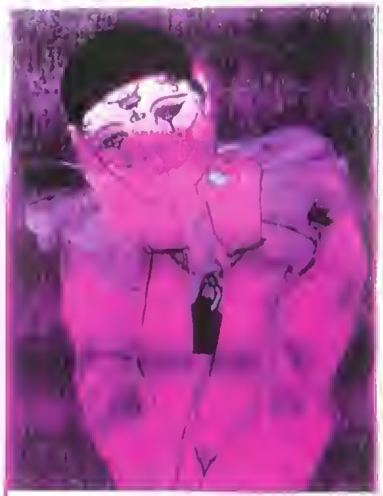
GATEKEEPER 7

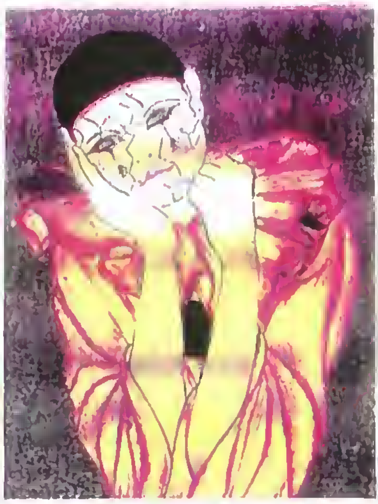
GATEKEEPER 8

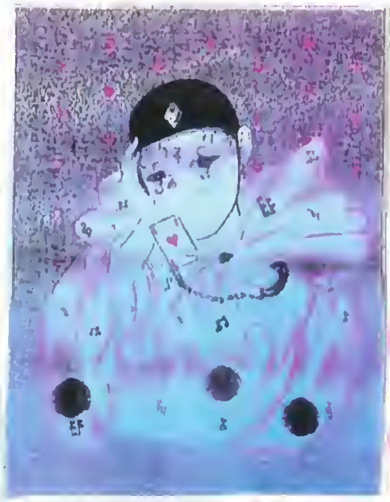
GATEKEEPER 9

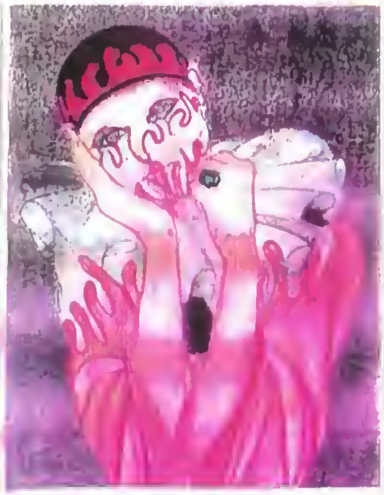
GATEKEEPER 10

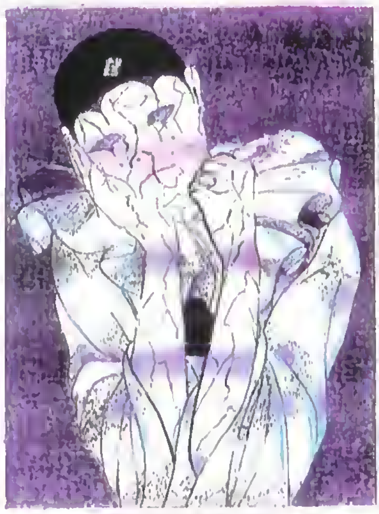
GATEKEEPER 11

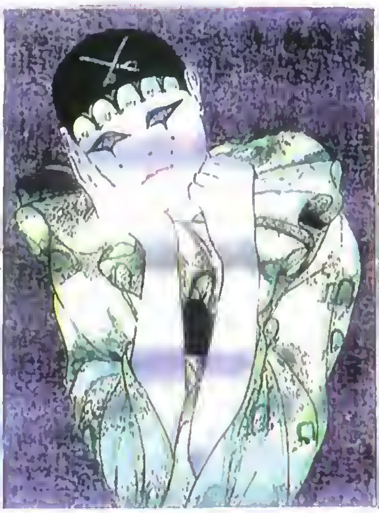
GATEKEEPER 12

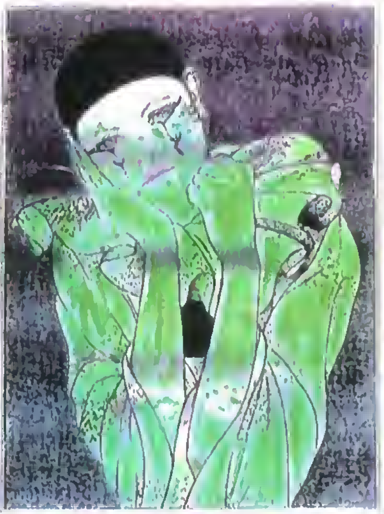
GATEKEEPER 13

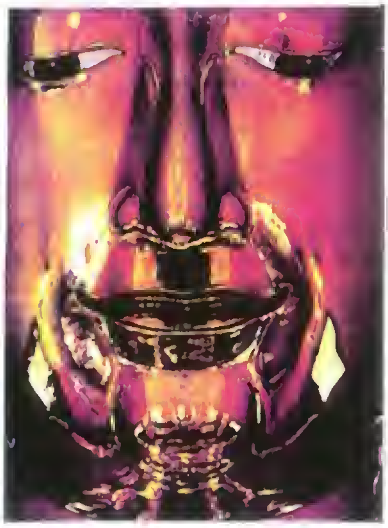

GATEKEEPERS

This is a collection of pictures of Gatekeeper 1 through Gatekeeper 13. All of these alters rotated together. Let's clarify how alters can be linked together, and how the portals of a system work.

Gatekeeper alters are just that, they protect the gates or portals. Because in demonology portals are used to introduce demons into a body, the gatekeeper alters are kept in depression and pain in order to enhance their ability to be used as portals for demons. If a therapist identifies a Gatekeeper alter, he or she should figure that the information that the Gatekeeper alter gives will be full of disinformation. This does not hold true only for my System, but across the board for all gatekeeper alters. They are very heavily programmed. No. 1 knew 3 who knew 5 who knew 7 who knew 9, etc. In this fashion the Gatekeepers were kept separate but linked. This type of linking is also done to keep rituals secret. Ritual alters will be linked in a chain so that each month a different alter goes to rituals. That way no single alter has all the secrets. When they do revolving switching, they switch very quickly in the hopscotch fashion that they know each other. If the multiple you know begins revolving switching try to slow it down. Stress can cause such switching. The switching takes a great deal of energy out of a System. The alters will switch in a prearranged order. On rare occassions they might switch so rapidly the System goes comatose. It becomes hard to have rational conversations when alters don't stay in the body long enough to "ground."

Our gatekeepers also were natural portals to lower sections. The following setup is our System, but the tactics used apply to many others. Gatekeeper 1 (G 1) was a portal to Section 1 (the Ace=1 & the Diamond=1st sign zodiac & wisdom). G 2 was silent partly because the Gatekeepers didn't need a portal to themselves. She wore lips on her bracelet as a message to her connection to the Silences. She has been a loner on the outside looking in at everything. G 3 has a white background because she ties to Atlantis. Her Q=Queens of Atlantis & the Queen of Hearts. The Queen of Hearts is a coded signal to Atlantis that everything is not O.K. Atlantis holds the Armageddon programming to protect things. G 4 is a portal to the 4th section. Used as a runner, so that the Master could then access Section 4 alters. Section 4 alters could push G 4 out of the way when they wanted to by using her codes. G 6 opens up to the programming Section 6. She knew certain parts of the programming because of where she lays. G 9 connected to the programming music. Much of the programming is in the form of songs, and the "angelic harps" kept sending out their internal music. G 10 is animal-like and is a portal to animal enforcers in the castle/castle dungeon. G 11 is on a pedestal similar to the Mothers of Darkness. She is a portal for their Section. G 13 is linked to the internal root programs put in at the mind's deepest level. A bird on her face portrays the programs (the birds) that roost in the tree limbs.

That quick overview of the Gatekeepers shows that each guarded an important portal, and that the System is interconnected. The Gatekeeper alters also show the techniques that the programmers used to hid things in the System. All types of programming tricks were used on the Gatekeepers to insure that they would stay in place and not reveal the alters they link to. For instance, a non-sexual Gatekeeper would guard the portal to the sexual alters. In this fashion, the mind is used against itself. The non-sexual alter's identity is tied up in its horror toward sex. The non-sexual alter can't bear to see the sexual alters she connects to. A whole series of tactics are used to hide things behind alters, and these are important if someone is trying to figure out a System, because when you see these tactics they are a tip off (a good clue) as to what is behind the alter with the tactic.One example of their tactics is G 3. G 3 is the portal to the 3 Adepts of Atantis (3 alters who are made in the image of the programmers). The 3 programmers know the entire System. Apparently G 3 was shown and taught the whole System. Then splits were made to get the programmers, and to cover their tracks they came back and taught G 3 that she is stupid. Under an alter who is thinks she stupid like the tinman is information on the entire System's layout. (Atlantis is a place like the sub Nautilus which can sink & hide underwater, this important section is hidden up front in the System. An old intelligence trick is to hide secrets right up front.)

Most alters constructed by the programmers are not meant to take the body and function in the real world. Most alters are protectors, or function as components to make the programming function. When a therapist meets a System, they should realize that most of the alters of a System are not made to be seen. Take the alters that are seen and multiply that no. many fold to guess at how many alters a System has. The programmers don't need lots of alters to front a System; they need alters to keep the mind control intact.

Gatekeeper alters play an important part in a System. They often are used to access a System. A tap-tap-tap is a standard code to access Gatekeepers. If you witness a tap-tap-tap by a watress with a cup, or a stranger at the window, or a repairman in the building, you may have just likely witnessed the Monarch slave being accessed with a standard code.

As the pictures show, our Gatekeepers had Porcelain face programming. That programming is seen in victims connected to the Charismatic movement. Our System almost went to a charismatic college.

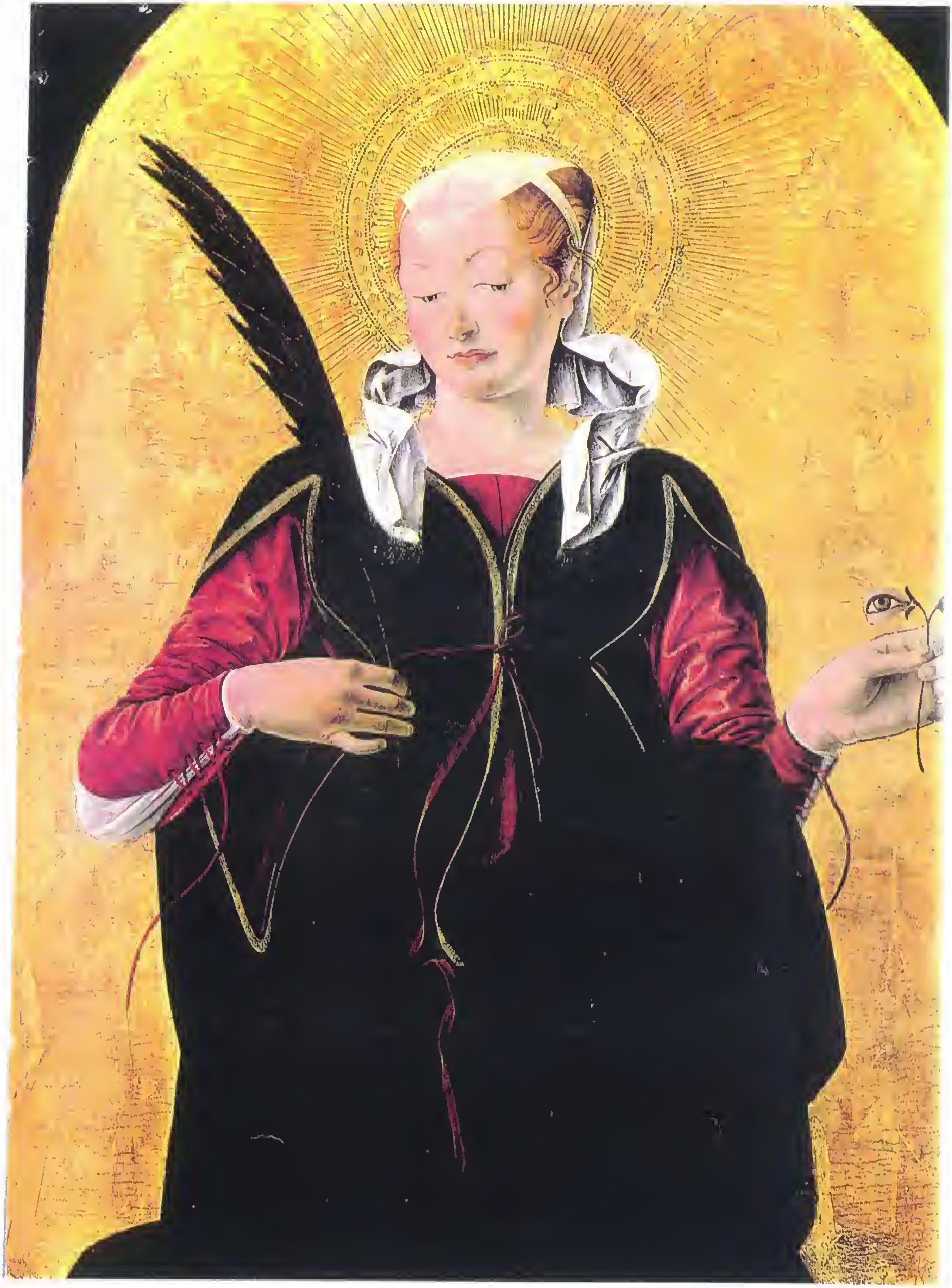

MOTHERS OF DARKNESS & The QUEEN MOTHER

This picture is of the Queen Mother. We were brought before her and the Grand Druid Council at age 4 for an physical examination in the nude to decide our worthiness. We vividly remember this Illuminati ceremony. Who or what are the Mothers of Darkness?

The Mothers of Darkness are a high level within the Illuminati for women. Some of the sites of Mother rituals include a building near Presidio's cemetery, the Rothschild's Pyramid winery in Calif., and the important Mother Castle in Belgium. It is believed that each of the 13 families are allowed to have 13 mothers each which would mean that there are 2,197 mothers in the world. All Mothers are married to the Anti-Christ and are to be used as an imperial guard for the Anti-Christ. The Mothers of Darkness are very tough because they had to go through discipline to gain their position. They are very elitist. The Mothers wear a platinum ring with the eight pointed star of Ishtar within a circle. They must work their magic in very precise prescribed methods.

Our System has many Mother of Darkness alters. Our Mothers got to know the Mothers of other Systems too. Most of the Mothers have goddess names and have been taught they are eternal goddesses.

Our Mothers were organized on a 13x13 grid on level 11 of our System. They have been placed in groups of 3 alters spinning together on a pedestal--the Threefold Goddess, which can be found clear back in the ancient Egyptian/Babylonian Mystery religions and the old Druid story of King Arthur with the 3 women at the lake. The Virgin Goddess is the New Moon, the Mother is the full moon & the Old Wise Crone is the waning moon.

In witchcraft, the pulling down the moon ceremony is done. The Mothers would be found saying ritual words like, "I am that which was with you from the beginning, and I am that which is attained at the end of desire." When our Mothers speak the front ones are very learned and philosophical about religious matters.

Note, that an Illuminati System like ours is set up so that different alters are assigned different rituals during the year so that no alter has all the information. This is done in line with the Illuminati's intense desire for secrecy.

They live in our System's Shangri-La, and have been programmed to believe that if they leave their world for any length of time they will revert back to their true age--which is an ancient woman and then they will be ancient and almost dead if not dead. Their fear of wrinkles seems to filter down to the lower levels. Within the System, they are in a blue room in the castle. They have a throne. They like blue topaz and black onyx. They wear black onyx. They put the seal on the House of Israel with the death, burial, and resurrection ceremony they endured, which includes being electroshocked in water. One of the front Mothers wanted to be fixed in the plane between the astral and physical, which the Mothers see as a point of balance. White light surrounds the internal ruling demons and makes it invisible. The internal demons took the form of our programmers and were on the next level above the Mothers. The System has talked about a Grande Mother and a Grande Dame.

The full access involves a special ring which must be turned while on the proper finger. A partial clue to the access code is that the backward spelling of Bethel (that is "LEHTEB") brought out Mother. This would be in line with the type of Satanism they practice. However, the Mothers hold Constellation and Demonology material. When demonology subjects are talked about by the System, sometimes this pulls the Mothers out, and they will talk. The Mothers of Darkness are silver coded and the Grande Mothers are gold coded.

The Mothers were only been out for short periods of time during the life of our System and have always been surrounded by Satanic opulence, such as silver, china, luxury, gold and castles. They were taught the occult belief about being = becoming and the wheel of life. However, they have been able to observe things by staying hidden and watching internally. They received heavy programming/& big Daddy demons so the outside world would not intrude on their programmed reality.

The Mothers of Darkness are important to the Hierarchy. The System was to be used as a Grande Mother to teach other younger Satanic hierarchy women. This is an important reason the System is being retained rather than being discarded at 30 like Presidential Models. The Grande Mothers help with the programming. The Illuminati does not discard its people in "the Hierarchy" just because they age.

For those who are free of programming, we will give a few details of one of our Mother of Darkness rituals. At a special 1,000 points of light ceremony where they have a "Pool of Age", the Mothers try to magically get visions of their future. They sit around a pool and meditate to pull down the moon. If they like the vision they can add blood to the pool or they can fight the vision by throwing a feather into the pool.

Perhaps the darkest Satanic ritual involves the Grail--a drinking blood/sex ritual related to the goddess Cerridwen. Systems which have achieved the Mothers level will have some Mother alters which resemble Kali.

PROTECTORS

When a Monarch System of Alters is created many of the alters serve roles as guards of this or that. It seems that everything is guarded and everything has someone assigned to guard it and keep it secret. In our System, we found that we had both a combination of alters and demons put in place to protect the programming and its secrecy. Two of the prominent groups of protectors were the clowns and the jokers.

Clowns were both alters and demons.

The clowns are orange coded. They were very protective. If anything wrong about our Papa (our Master) was said to the System, they would try to kill the body. The clowns helped keep the Gatekeepers in line. The Gatekeepers were very heavily programmed, and then they were constantly watched and kept in line by the clowns. Each Gatekeeper may have had clowns, but we never pushed things to find out.

Clowns can be sad behind a happy face. This deception makes their suicide plans harder to detect. The gatekeepers have numerous clowns which carry out several functions. The clowns cut or carry out acts of self-mutilation and suicide. The clowns are also protective of dad. The clowns have been given the anger of the Gatekeepers to hold. A few of the clowns actually seem happy all the time. The clowns are immediately accessed and come up if certain things are said while the Gatekeepers have the body. An attack on dad usually brings them up. G 4's clowns have wanted to cut the body due to sexual shame, in other words they protect the Glorias from ever remembering anything sexual. The clowns have prevented G 4 from recognizing her role in the sexual exploitation process.

The natural process which seems to have been used, is that one alter holds the anger, another the pain, and one holds the memories.

SEA-MONSTERS

This picture depicts the protection given to Heliopolis (the City of the Sun). Heliopolis is a world in which Section 11 alters were placed. Heliopolis is also known as the Emerald City Castle. It is guarded by the River Nile, which has a fast current, and crocodiles in it. Not only crocodiles, but sea monsters are in the River Nile too as can be seen in the picture. Our deadly River Nile has dark, murky waters.

During the programming, the programmers not only torture the child to get alters, but they torture the child to build internal structures in your mind. (And who wouldn't build a structure into their mind to save their life?) These structures were put in by the child's mind, but they are guided by the scripts such as the Wizard of Oz series of books. In fact, the map in the front of the Wizard of Oz series of books had many of the internal structures that our System had.

Many Systems never get to the point of seeing their internal world(s). Further, most alters have only a small spot in which they are to reside, and they don't get to see but a tiny fraction of the entire System. After these structures are built into the mind they continue to work and carry out their function on a subconscious level. Sometimes it takes years of work for a System to begin seeing their internal world. They can begin doing this by turning lights on inside of their worlds. To make a comparison, when a person looks at a clock they see the finished result, the time it shows, but they don't see all the mechanisms. The structures in the mind are part of the mechanism to keep the System of Alters structured in a way that is useful to the abusers, but often all that observers will see is the finished result, the mechanisms stay hidden. But we are exposing those mechanisms in this picture and on this page. A therapist's client may be responding in a way that makes no sense until one realizes the internal structures that they are responding to.

An alter generally must maintain the spot in the mind which it is assigned. To leave that location in the mind, means travelling through a System which is filled with dangers and traps of all kinds. Only a few of our alters ever ventured where they were not to go, and they always encountered many obstacles. However, if an alter gets trapped behind mirrors, the alter should not break the mirrors. If the alter is a Christian they can use the blood of Jesus Christ of Nazareth to bind and cast out the demons which are in the mirrors. The danger of the mirrors is the demonology involved. Somethings work and somethings don't. We are speaking from our years of experience. The mirrors are deadly and they were everywhere in our System, but they are deadly only if one can't deal with the demonology. The therapist should at least be aware that these images can be worked with just as if they were real to manipulate situations involving them. But if the structures are going to be worked or toyed with, the therapist and survivor need to have an understanding about the structures. If you don't understand the mirrors, or the River Nile, or whatever then be careful what you have the survivor do to them.

The structures (the images) that are built into the mind of the Monarch slave are not trivial. An overview of the structures that are in our System alone will show that they went to a great deal of effort to build all kinds of internal worlds to house our thousands of alters. **A list of the internal structures** that were contained in our System follows: Ant pits, Bee Traps w/ swarms, Black Glass Wall, Black Holes (vortexes), Boxes (Dr. Green's under J.J., boxes have buttons which access certain parts), Candyland, Carpet (Magic), Castles, Castle dungeon (torture chambers), Caves, Clocks (there are several incl. computer clocks), Concentration camp, Cords, Desert, Doll House, numbered Doors by the thousands w/ red hot nobs, Elevators, Emerald City (connected to the castle), Eucalyptus Trees, Fields of "forget me" & island of "forget me not" (JJ's Prgrmg), Firewall, 2 Forests (singing forest with Cedars of Lebanon and Oaks, and a dwarfs forest which has 3 kinds of trees), Fruit Tree (programming tree), Glass, Glass coffin, Golden Keys, Graveyards, Hallways with red doors, Hell Pit or Hell Fire (7 levels--pepperbox. There is a glassy wall before the hell pit.), Hour Glass (matrix), House of David, Icetown, Invisible Countries, Keys (clock key), Libraries, Light side City, Marshlands, Mazes, Mirrors (constructed via access permissions) (One-way), Moat, Mountains, Nursery (glass), Ocean, Paper Trees, Petra Secret City, Playground, Poppy field, Portals (for altars and demons, like the third eye), Rubicon (outer space beyond the stars), Rivers (Nile, Rio Grande, Shenandoah, etc.), Room behind a closet (existence not confirmed), Seeds, Serpent tree, Shafts, Shells, Shifting sands, Shoes (gold, silver, and ruby slippers), Snake pits (traps), Spider chambers, Stairway, Torpedo Town, Tin Woodsman's Castle, Tree with square paper boxes containing Dad's music programming, Trojan Horse w/ armies, Tunnels, Valley of the Dry Bones, Volcano (to destroy & remake the system), Vortices (see Black Holes), Wasteland, Water (Moats), Waterfalls, Wind, Wires, Worms, and a Yellow Brick Road.

Did they toy with our mind? Did they put a great deal of energy into making our System? When one considers the power and wealth of the men who are Illuminati kingpins, then it becomes obvious that Systems like ours are not built for sensible legitimate purposes. These men could hire people for those purposes.

SESHAT

This picture is our alter Seshat. Alters each have their own internal appearance. The Mothers of Darkness had their robes, and other alters had their own particular garb, masks, or animal appearances. One of the things that happens when they dehumanize alters with the mind-control is that they can make those alters believe they are a particular animal. Some alters don't want to be human, because bad things happen to humans.

Most of our cult alters believe they are cats of some kind. The sexual/porn alters are white kittens to play with. Guard alters of the palace of the House of David are fierce lions & tigers. Two big fierce cats guard every palace step. Our Bast alter is a very tall & frightening cat goddess who likes obsedian & cat-eye.

We had animal alters throughout our System. For birds we had owls, doves, swans, eagles, ravens, and orks. We had monkeys, and wheeler-shaped (from the Oz story) critters, and butterflies. Some alters were so dehumanized they became elements. Of course since our programmers were into high level magic they fashioned alters into the four magical elements (the four watchtowers) wind (air), fire, water, and earth. We remember the cages with the monkeys and the cages with the cats. Other Systems have horses and other animals, but we don't have any horses as far as we know. The kind of cats that many of the abusers liked were the kittens for all types of sex and perversity.

Mysterious Egypt was the mother of much of Satanism. Egypt was an occult center for centuries, actually millennia. The occult world believes that the Atlanteans gave their knowledge to Egypt. The men who made our System believed in Atlantis, so it stands to reason that they would look to Egypt for their occultism. Our System may even have been transported to Egypt for a ritual. We know our master visited Egypt. Many Illuminati leaders have made pilgrimages to the Great Pyramid. The year 2000 (the new Millennium) is to be initiated in by rituals at the Great Pyramid.

Our Master was also involved in Freemasonry. Just one example of how Freemasons look to Egypt for their occult knowledge is C.W. Leadbeater's book *Ancient Mystic Rites* which tells the importance of the ancient Egyptian mystery religions to Freemasonry today. David Carrico wrote an excellent book recently that does a survey of Satanic rituals today and shows that there is a one-to-one correspondence between SRA (Satanic Ritual Abuse) and the Egyptian *Book of the Dead* (*Pert Em Hru*). Note also that one of the groups practicing Monarch Mind-control was the Temple of Set (Set was an Egyptian form of Satan). Because Egyptian occultism plays such an important role in Hermetic magic, Freemasonry, and Satanism it should not be any surprise that Egypt plays a role in our System. We had a Queen of the Nile alter. We had a Nile river. We had a number of goddess alters in our System named after Egyptian cat gods, such Bast, Hathor, and Sekhmet. The cat goddess Bast in Egypt was the benevolent side of Hathor. The dark side of Hathor was Sekhmet. (Sekhmet was a lion headed goddess.) Sekhmet was the destroying power of sunlight and could direct (throw) fire. Mut is another sacred cat in our System. Nothing is hidden from our Mother-of-D. alter Nebet. At least a dozen deep alters have Egyptian names.

Seshat (also spelled Sesheta by some) was the alter who was placed in charge of our library. In Egyptian magic, Seshat was a goddess & a wife of Thoth. Her name means 7 pointed flower. She wore a star on her head & a reversed crescent. Our Seshat doesn't wear a star on her head, but our Stella Matutina does. Sometimes the story line will help one understand a System, and sometimes a System doesn't follow the story line. Seshat was the record keeper of the gods. She was the goddess of writing, letters, books, hieroglyphics, history & inventions. How appropriate that they gave our librarian the name Seshat.

Cats play an important role in the occult. Cats were considered gods in Egypt. The Illuminati has practiced the magic of Egypt for many centuries. The worship & importance of cats has always been part of the belief for the governing bodies of the Illuminati. Anyone who killed a cat in Egypt was sentenced to death. This law lasted for centuries. The Persians beat the Egyptians in battle by carrying cats in their arms, because the Egyptians wouldn't fight them. The Egyptian word for cat was an imitation of the sound they make "Mau". The Egyptians thought the cat had 9 lives, and the cat alters in our System were taught this. That is why some of our alters are fearless. They sincerely believe that they have 9 lives. Cats have long been associated with witches. Pussywillows got their name because witches used them. Cats have represented the moon (female) side of magic since Egypt. Diana was sometimes a cat, a foreign equivalent to Bast. Freya's chariot was drawn by cats. If a System has strong likes or dislikes towards objects, then the explanation is most likely that it relates to programming or the System's past history. We are in love with feathers. The alters in our System like feather pillows, feather ties, etc. When we learned that one of our deeper alters is Maat, we began to see why we might be infatuated with feathers. Maat's symbol is a red ostrich feather, and there is a ritual vow "by the feather of Maat". Maat in legend is the one who "will find a way to weave us back into our proper places in the tapestry." Maat serves as an example of a common phenomena.

SYSTEM

There are numerous geometric configurations that can be used for the structure of a structured multiple. In our experience, we have come upon several which seem to be favorites. Remember that Satanists want power, and they believe in the spirit world, so they are going to create Systems which give them spiritual power. This is why you will find the Kabala (also spelled Qabala or Caballa etc.) in Monarch survivors. The pyramid is another favorite structure. A double pyramid is also used by Satan a lot. A spider web is often used as a communication network within a survivor. A rubix cube is often used as a basis of the a system's structure. Our System is a 3-D system. However, in the books that the CIA/Illuminati keep where they write down all that they do, and keep track of our access codes etc. they represent our 3-D system with charts on paper. Sometimes double helixes will be run up the middle of cube alters. We have the infinity sign in our System which is simply a segment of a double helix.

Some survivors will have Systems structured around a pentegram or a sphere.

After the programmers decide what structure they want as the organizational basis, then they have to decide the basic scripts to give to the victim. With enough torture the victim accepts the scripts, and inversions in reality occur, i.e. pain is love.

The programmers must decide what methodology they want for codes. The codes must be simple enough but still successful. There are some standard codes for Monarch slaves, and then there are System specific codes. Cards and dominos were used in our System. The ace could be high or low. Using cards was very handy and fit well with a 13 x 13 x 13 grid. The jokers of the deck were wild. They could take on the appearance of anything in the System.

Aleister Crowley's book *777* is a good book for understanding the occult relationship between various lists of things. Such as the planets relationship to specific gems etc. This is one book that may help some survivors understand the code system used in their MPD System.

For us a Blue Topaz Ring control some programs. A black onyx ring and a diamond can activate other programs. Rings are used in hypnosis by the programmers.

When the System is touched, the Armageddon suicide programming comes alive. Note, that the top of this picture shows the Armageddon programming kicking in. Our System had rings of the tree. The tree was the root or structure that managed to organize our programs. The programming had different seasons. Winter was when there was no fruit.

They would add new branches onto our tree, by raping us with what they called "a growing tree." In this fashion they added on new programming. The sexual act was also a demonic sealing of the programming. When they wanted us to suicide ourselves, we were to "prune" our internal tree, i.e. cut off a limb. They associated numbers with this tree and ran it roots into our toes and feet.

The HIERARCHY

One of the least known facts is that Saturn has been the center of human worship worldwide for thousands of years. The book The Saturn Myth is a detailed investigation of the secret but extensive worldwide worship of Saturn. Both Sun worship and Saturn worship are linked to Satan worship. Upon close examination Saturn and Sun worship are but fronts for Satan worship. The occult world knows this, but outside of the occult world it remains a secret to many. Rome was the City of Saturn. Rome has been an important center for satanism and its mystery religions for many centuries. Our picture placed Saturn (Satan) at the top of the world. His goat head can be seen inside the rings of Saturn. However, the alter who made this picture refused to crown Satan, so she turned his crown upside down.

In addition to Satan, the satanic Hierarchy is pictured. The human leadership consists of the Council of Nine, the Grand Druid Council of 13, and many other lesser groups. The Illuminati kings have transcended good and evil and are living selfish gods. They practice blood sacrifices on a regular basis.

Satan also has a hierarchy of demons, with Beelzebub as his right hand spirit. It is hard to understand Satanism without giving into learning about spiritual things. A perfectly logical person will not understand many of the decisions that Satanists make, because the Satanists make decisions based upon their religious outlook, and upon sometimes obscure occult ideas that have no basis in logic, except the "logic of demonic insanity".

Generational Satanism is based upon oligarchies which control the world. The British royal family, as well as their relatives who make up the rest of European royalty are from a satanic bloodline. The King of Denmark will sneak away to rituals.

The backdrop to all this power which dominates the world in our picture are the fires of hell. Our programmer wanted to be powerful in hell. To understand our System better, people need to understand that some of our alters were concerned that they had ruined their master eternally by leaving Satanism. Our Master's chances to succeed in hell depended upon how well we did as Satanists. Of course outsiders may think that this is very ludicrous, but when that is your world view, it is not easy to want to leave your status in Satanism for the outside world which is very confused, unloving, and sick. Satanism can be best understood by those who have spiritual understanding.

Inside the clock is a little girl who represents us. In front of her is a daisy. When we were tortured in the cages, Dr. Green would pull off daisy petals and say, "I love you, I love you not." Children were killed if he ended by saying "I love you not." We developed quite a guilty complex that we survived when so many other innocent children were put to death. At the time we did not realize that these were cult children who were raised, adopted or bought solely for the purpose of being killed. Even if their fate was predetermined, that doesn't mean the whole process is not a tragedy. The whole satanic mess is sometimes so overwhelming to us that we just raise our hands like in the picture and say to ourselves mentally, "No more, we've learned enough."

But often the mind is simply impotent when it is controlled by the programming. Demons wrap themselves around the internal world like a covering, and the mind walks around in a satanic fog, never really alert to the outside world, and never able to get in touch with the true self. The spirit of the victim is robbed of peace and joy and feels sentenced to eternal damnation and eternal estrangement from a God she has been convinced by her abusers hates her.

Today, just as the title of Alice Bailey's book The Externalization of the Hierarchy suggests, the hierarchy is getting more and more public. Satanism is creeping into all facets of life. Today's popular music bands, today's popular movies, cartoons, and shows, today's art work are all showing signs of Satanism. Things that used to be done in occult lodges are being done increasingly in the public's eye.

However, the Illuminati rituals are still done in extreme secrecy. Special ritual languages such as Enochian are used. Latin is also used in ritual. The demons assist Satanists in speaking in these obscure languages. Some families pass down the Enochian language like an heirloom. Most Monarch systems of the Illuminati have secret multi-lingual abilities. Remember, that Systems like ours were created to function in both the world and in the secret world of generational Satanism.

11
12

THE CORE SLEEPS

When a person's mind creates Multiple Personality the original person is called the core. When a person is split young like we were, the programmers have many years in which to create havoc with a person's core, so that it becomes dangerous and difficult to work with the core.

When the internal programmers began to anticipate the deprogramming they began activity around the core. In the picture the core is sound asleep under the carousel. The core of a System is usually greatly manipulated by Satanic programmers in order to insure the success of their plans and programming. They split our core into 13 parts and these core parts were named Silence 1 through Silence 13. Our SILENCE 1 was hidden deep in the mountain when the world shifted in 1994. When she was on the light side, the light side would hover over her. She was the guardian angel, over the Garden of Eden who protects the core's love for Daddy (Papa). Silence has spiders in her casket who bite her to keep her sleeping. Only the Prince can come and wake her up. She is loyal to the Prince (Daddy) who sang music to her as a little girl. For anyone else to wake her up meant that the mirrors would break and the broken heart will result in heart failure for the System.

Giving this Silence (the Princess) the kiss of death by the Wizard (who is the toad or prince) wakes her up. Who is this silent Princess--could it be Snow White who the dwarfs are protecting and care for? The Prince (aka Father of Time or Kronos or Ahab) can access and wake her up. He will kiss the 18 month old Silence. This 18 month old Silence is referred to by the System as Queen. When she wakes up she will be integrated with the Mothers of Darkness when the Illuminati want to use the Mothers of Darkness. Silence holds the key programming for why the Core acts like she does. Silence is guarded by Elizabeth and other light side care providers.

Our Silence was a Sleeping Beauty. Systems like ours have a back up program called the Princess Program. The Princess programming involves the core, waking her up, and moving her to a dark castle where she gives her energy to the dark side. The Princess Programming is a powerful back up program when it kicks in.

Our SILENCE 2 lives in a different place. The Ribbons lived with her, so it sounds like she lived in Petra which is a city within a mountain before we deprogrammed. The second angel (actually an evil spirit) guards the gate to the Garden of Eden also known as Petra. Silence 2 is the key to the dungeon which is hidden below in a deeper level. This has been protected by an army which may be the equivalent of the Nome army of the Wizard of Oz story. The story of Snow White and the Seven dwarfs also plays a major role in Silence 2's programming.

The other Silences of our System were hidden from the core, to use as a subtle form of black mail to the core. She of course wanted to be joined with those very young parts because they carried the little child's pure love for their father (who after bonding with the child programmed it.) When a child loves its father, and then that father abuses the child a very clean split in the mind occurs. The child cannot deal with two contradictory images of one person. How can a wonderful loving parent also be a terrible abuser?

Also in the picture is the yellow brick road. The Yellow Brick Road is the runway in which alters were trained to fly off from to exit their internal world and take the body.

The Yellow Brick Road also pertains to the assignment that an alter is given. To follow the Yellow Brick Road is to go down the road that has been assigned by command. The Yellow Brick Road programming is placed into the child's mind via the Yellow Brick Road of the Wizard of Oz story. Remember the key words, "Follow the Yellow Brick Road."

To get someone onto the Yellow Brick Road you must know the access code to get them through the poppy field. The color blue was important in our programming to the process.

Fiddler is important to the yellow brick road and then the people eat what is variously called music or a script or a letter which are words meaning "instructions". Notice that the picture has a great deal of scripts in the lower left.

Notice all the activity as the slippers and shoes are very busy while the core sleeps.

The Clockmaker (a.k.a. Clockkeeper) has the knowledge of the clocks. The primary clock is often disguised, but it is always gold. That is why the clock in this picture is gold. The clockmaker makes the clocks. The Clockholder positions the clocks in the System. The gold item changes form according to what is needed but it always carries its own [level's] abbreviation.

The clocks control the programmers. The clocks have the ability to be invisible.

The clock can be disguised as a bomb.

There is a Grandfather clock near the castle, when it strikes 1 it is time for a new system era. The clocks control several things. It is important for people to begin to be in a spiritual position to correctly deal in a positive way with both demons and alters. Our clockmaker turned out to be a demon, but his helper the clock holder turned out to be an alter.

SISTERS

In the picture we see two "twinned" sisters. Central to the picture is the clock pendalum which continues keeping time. Just like time continues to tick away whether we are conscious of it or not, the twinning programming continues to tick away inside Systems which have been twinned together.

It is common procedure in the Illuminati to adopt children out to other occult families in order to hide lineages and parenthood. Satanists will secretly impregnate women of the Illuminati in order to create secret siblings. From our experience it looks like actual half sisters are used for creating programmed twins. Perhaps there are exceptions, but that is what we saw growing up in the Illuminati. Even if there was an exception and the "twins" are not half sisters, after they have been programmed to believe so, then they function with that understanding. Many of the survivors of the type of mind control we experienced have been adopted or raised by people other than their actual parents.

Our dark side alters were not allowed to realize that they had a family in the world. The only family they knew was the cult family. Aunts who were already in the Illuminati as Mothers of Darkness helped program and groom us. One of these aunts required us to thank her when she electo-shocked us. We thanked her for having disciplined us to make us good. From what we know, the generational Satanic families have been creating MPD for generations. Our father and aunts had MPD.

Our Monarch twin sister was trauma-bonded to us. In other words, some of the same type of programming that bonded us to our abusers was used to bond us to our "twin". Therapists would do twinned sisters a favor if they make a effort to console and counsel with their clients' twins. At times, the therapist has no idea that his client is bonded very closely with someone else. If one twin goes into the hospital the other one feels it. If one dies, the other twin may very well die.

Monarch twins will have alters in each others Systems who look like the other person, and who have the same names. Male twins and female twins may well have parts of their Systems which relate to each other sexually. Parts of our System were placed in competition with parts of our twin for the affection of our programmer. I say this so that people understand how the bonding between two Systems can be on many different levels, and is complex. Just because two front alters of two Systems don't have a close relation, doesn't mean that deeper parts don't feel very close. The trauma bonding will produce a love-hate relationship between 2 Systems too.

When two Systems meet, a wild party takes place as dozens of alters pop in and out and communication takes place on many different levels.

Besides having alters which are images of our twins, we had mirror images of all our alters. Understanding a Monarch multiple's System is not easy.

For more on twinning programming see the previous page on Twinning.

11
12

INDEX To the ILLUSTRATED GUIDE TO MONARCH PROGRAMMING.

page 1.
----

1 o'clock cue for new System era, 77
1,000 Points of Light, 87
13 Top Illuminati Bloodlines, 5, 87
13 x 13 x 13 grid, 29, 95
13th Illuminati Bloodline, 83
13, number shows up in occult world, 13
1947, onset of Monarch Programming, 29
20,000 Leagues Under the Sea, 33, 75
2000, year for Anti-Christ, 17
24 hour supervision needed, 63
3 Women at lake, 87
3 tap code, 81
33, number used by the occult, 13
7-pointed flower, 93
777 (book), 95
9 lives of Cats, 93

Abreaction, 51
Abreaction, dangerous, 51
Abuse Cycle, 65
Abuser look alike alters, 15
Access Code, standard, 85
Access Codes, in 3 parts, 67
Access Cues, precious stones used as, 79
Access methods listed, 69
Accessing the System thru Ribbons, 9
Ace (high or low), 81, 95
Ace, 81, 85, 95
Acting Out, 63
Adam, 57
Adepts of Atlantis (three), 75, 81, 85
Adjustments to Deprogramming, 73
Adopting out Children, 47
Advice to forget the past, 65
Age, hypnotically adjusted, 75
Air, Power of, term for Satan, 11
Airplane, 51
Alice (of Alice In Wonderland), 5, 55, 67
Alice In Wonderland story, 13, 55
All-Seeing Eye, 5, 11, 37, 41, 63, 67
Alpha-numeric Codes, 19, 53
Alter shadows carrying eggs, 17
Alters used as components of System, 33
Alter Families of Kittens, 75
Alter Rotation, 81
Alter for running, 81
Alter, Bast, 93
Alter, Dove, 93
Alter, Earth, 93
Alter, Elizabeth, 77
Alter, Fire, 93
Alter, Hathor, 93
Alter, Kitten, 41
Alter, Maat, 93
Alter, Mut, 93
Alter, Nebet, 93
Alter, Queen of the Nile, 93
Alter, Sekhmet, 93
Alter, Seshat, 93
Alter, Water, 93
Alter, Wind, 93
Alters can use codes to take body, 81
Alters, 3 Adepts, 75
Alters, Adult Babysitters, 75
Alters, Beta, 79, 81
Alters, Cats, 41, 93
Alters, Child, 75
Alters, Child, treatment by Adult Alters, 75
Alters, Christian, 35, 39, 69
Alters, Core related, 35
Alters, Coven witches, 35
Alters, Delta, 79, 81
Alters, Delta-Beta, 73
Alters, Eagles, 93
Alters, Front (see also Light Side), 69
Alters, Gatekeepers One thru Thirteen, 73, 81
Alters, Grande Dame, 59
Alters, Guard, 93
Alters, Horses, 93
Alters, Hunt Prey, 41
Alters, Kitten, 73
Alters, Lions & Tigers, 93
Alters, Monkeys, 93
Alters, Mother Kittens, 41
Alters, Mothers of Darkness,77, 81, 87
Alters, Night Kittens, 41
Alters, Owl, 93
Alters, Orks, 93
Alters, Protectors, 81
Alters, Ravens, 93
Alters, Satanic, 39
Alters, Section Eleven, 91
Alters, Silence One thru Thirteen, 77, 81
Alters, Spin Kittens, 79

Alters, Swans, 93
Alters, Wheeler-shaped critters, 93
Alters, Worldly, 39
Alters, accessed w/out therapist's knowledge, 37
Alters, different emotions at same time, 51
Alters, divided and can't rebel, 33
Alters, positions in System, 91
Alters, records of their color coding, 9
Alters, sexual/porn, 93
Alters, sleeper, 21
Alters, trained as Killers, 81
Alters, used as fronts, 37
Amnesia, 29
Anarchy used to bring in Anti-Christ, 13
Ancient Mystic Rites, 93
Anectine, 53
Angel Masks, 15
Angel of Death, Mengele, 23
Angelic Harps in System, 81
Angels, 15
Animal Enforcers of System, 81
Answers, learning to seek inside, 63
Ant pits, 91
Anti-Christ, 13, 17, 81, 83, 87
Anti-Christ Reign, 81, 83
Anti-Christ's Imperial Guard, 17
Antigravity Wool, 55
Apotheta, 59
Apple, half eaten, 21
Aquino, Michael, 23
Armageddon Programming, 67, 81, 95
Armageddon Story, 33
Armies, alters, 35
Armies, internal, 9
Art & Satanism, 97
Artificial Sweetner, 31
Aryan Hittites, 13
Aryan racial nonsense, 35
Assassination, alters trained in, 35
Assembly Production of Slaves, 39
Astral Projection, 45, 69
Asymmetrical Objects, 55
Atlantean Knowledge, 93
Atlantis, 81, 85
Atlantis level, 75
Auditory Problems, 67
Aunt in Hierarchy, 61
Aunts, 47
Authority over System needed to progress, 75
Aversion Therapy, 53
Awaking, beginning to realize abuse, 65
Axes- X,Y,Z, 59
Babylonian gods, 57
Back Doors, 39
Backmasking in Music, 31
Bacon, Francis =Shakespeare, 41
Bailey, Alice, 97
Ballroom Dancing, 41
Banquets, Illuminati, 43
Baptists, used in example, 45
Bast, 93
Bathroom (internal), 49
Beasts, Wild in System, 49
Bee Traps w/ Swarms, 91
Beelzebub, 97
Beethoven, 41
Belgium, site of Mother's castle, 87
Beltaine (May 1), 41
Benevolence of Master, 51
Berrets, Blue Butterfly, 61
Beta Alters, 79
Bethel, 87
Be Wise As Serpents book, 83
Bible Stories, 19, 33, 55
Bible, misuse of, 19
Bible, used for Programming Scripts, 19, 33, 39, 69
Binding and Casting out Demons, 15, 91
Bird Alters, 21
Birds in Tree Limbs, internal, 81
Birds (on programming tree), 85
Black Glass Wall, 91
Black Holes, internal, 17, 91
Black Light, 55
Black Onyx Ring, 95
Black Widow, 73
Black, use of as a color code, 35
Blackmail, 81
Blackmail against System's core, 77
Blackmail & Bribery, 53
Blackmail by old films, 53
Blackmail, of System, 25, 53, 61
Blackmail, the System blckmd about kids, 61
Blood Covenants, 5
Blood Flow body program, 67
Blood Oaths, 57
Blood Sacrifices, 57, 97
Blood crown Jewell, 79
Blood of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, 59, 91
Blood, Biblical view, 43
Blood, Satanic view, 43
Blood, given to children to nurse on, 43
Blood, given to drink, 81
Bloodlust, 81
Blue Butterfly Tatoos, 61
Blue Color, 71
Blue Light, Luciferian, 19

Blue Room, castle, 87
Blue Topaz, 87
Blue Topaz Ring, 95
Blue, use of as a color code, 35
Body Programs listed, 67
Bombs, disguise for clocks, 77
Bonding, 15
Book of the Dead, 93
Book, *Programming Book* kept on System, 95
Bottles, 33
Box at base of tree, 57
Boxes (Dr. Green's), 91
Boxes (internal), 5
Boxes, 21, 57, 63, 75, 91
Boxes, black, 21
Boxes, full of child alters, 75
Branches of Tree, 51
Brides for the AntiChrist, 17, 87
British Royal Family, 97
Bubbles (internal), 5, 21
Bullata, 17
Burning Torture, 49
Burning from drugs, 53
Bush, George, 23
Busy Cleaning Program, 67
Butterflies, 61
Butterflies, Monarch go home, 61
Butterfly Torture, 61
Butterfly, 13, 21
Butterfly, blue, 21
Buttons on Boxes, 91

CIA, 21, 23, 45, 81
CIA research into telepathy, psychics, 45
Caballistic Magic, 15, 57
Caballistic Tree of Life, 57
Cages, used in programming, 21, 93
Candles, 43
Candy Cane, 39
Candyland, 33, 91
Candyman Programming, 39
Cannibalism, 43
Cards as codes, 19, 29
Cards, 29, 95
Carousel, 33, 75, 77
Carpet, magic, 91
Carrico, David, 93
Carroll, Lewis, 55
Cartoons, 97
Castle (Torture Chamber) Dungeon, 53, 91
Castle Lights, 71
Castle, dark, 77
Castles, internal, 33, 51, 91
Castles, types of in System, 17
Cat in Egyptian=Mau, 93
Cat-eye, 93
Cats & the Illuminati, 93
Cat, Alter, 13
Cat, Great, 49
Catholic Programming, 19
Cats, considered gods, 93
Cats, occult importance, 93
Cats & bats, 55
Caves, 91
Cedars of Lebanon, 91
Cello, 41
Cemetery, 69
Ceremony with apple, 21
Cerridwen, 87
Chain of Command, 29
Chaos used to bring in Anti-Christ, 13
Charismatic Movement, 81, 85
Charismatic/pentecostal programming, 19, 81
Chemicals, mind altering, 31
Chess, 55
Chest, burning of related to hell, 17
Chest, master's hand on, 25
Child Alters, in hiding, 21
Child Sacrifices, 25, 59
Child Sacrifices, memories of stored, 17
Child's Natural Love for Dad manipulated 83
Children, fed to wild cats, 43
Children, kept in cages, 43
Chimps used in programming, 21
China Lake Naval Facility, 11, 21
China Lake, country store, 21
Christ made into terrifying figure, 5
Christ's Crucifixation, 31
Christ, an example of moral responsibility, 31
Christ, now our Savior, 21
Christian Alters, 35
Church in Presidio, 87
Church, Rex, 23
Circulation body program, 67
Civil War, 69
Classical Music, 41
Claws, in artwork, 17
Clear, use of as a color code, 35
Clinton, Bill, 23
Clock Key, 91
Clockeeper, 77
Clockmaker, 77
Clocks, 5, 19, 77, 91, 97
Clocks are hidden as gold objects, 77
Clone Queen, 75
Clones, 9, 35, 75
Clones, serial no.s of, 75

Closet, 49
Closets, hidden, 49
Clothing, decided upon by Master, 51
Clowns, 67, 89
Clowns Cutting, 67
Code Numbers, 63
Code Red, 71
Code, credit card, 51
Coded Computer Programs, 67
Codes used in Monarch slaves, 19, 95
Codes, Alpha-numeric, 29
Codes, Bible used for, 29
Codes, Erasure, 29
Codes, changed by internal Programmers, 15
Codes, for Programs, 67
Codes, for teams, 45
Codes, geographic terms used for, 29
Codes, occult names used for, 29
College, Charismatic, 81
Color Bands, 35
Color Programming, 29, 35, 37
Color Programming, wide use of, 35
Color Programs created in Calif. univ., 35
Color coding, 9, 29, 35
Color used as a 4th dimension, 29
Colors used in coding, 9
Colors, hierarchy of, 35
Colors, of dollhouse rooms, 49
Colors, rank of, 9
Compass, Internal, 5, 19, 37, 59
Competition between System's Programmers, 39
Competition in Satanism, 5
Computer, Master, 19, 59
Computer, Method to instill into mind, 9
Computers, Internal, 9, 19, 37
Computers, regeneration of, 19
Concentration Camps' Victims, 37
Concentration Camps, experimentation, 15
Concentration Camps, internal, 75, 91
Concerts, 41
Conditioning, 53
Confusion, 55
Confusion of Mind Program, 21
Conspiracy, Jews blamed, 83
Conspiracy, world-wide, 5
Constellation Material, 87
Contact code, ribbons, 9
Control Mechanisms, 19
Control by Elite of Mass Media, 31
Controllers, External, 51
Controllers, Internal, 51
Conversation, training in, 41
Cord, Silver, 17, 21
Cords, 9, 91
Core of System, 9, 37, 77, 83
Core, cult core and front cult core, 9
Core, difficulty working with, 77
Core, disappearance of, 37
Corkscrews, 55
Council of 13 (Grand Druid Council), 59, 97
Council of Elders, Sparta, 59
Council of Nine, 97
Covenants, 25
Covenants with Hell by leaders, 13
Cover Stories given hypnotically, 69
Cradle to Grave, 29
Cradle, rocking the cradle to rule world, 15
Crazy Program, 67
Creating an Internal World, 67
Creation Story, 33
Creator, meaning for System, 69
Credit Card, 51
Crickett associated with Dr. Green, 15
Crocodiles (internal), 91
Crone, 57
Crowley, Aleister, 95
Crown, 15
Crying, not allowed, 25
Crypt, Meaning of, 11
Crystal, 19
Cube Shape used, 29
Cube Shaped Systems, 95
Cult Family, 35, 47
Cutter Program "Pain is Love", 67
Cutting Program, 21, 67

Dad (see other names), 39, 83
Dad wore Nazi uniforms while programming, 39
Daisy Programming of Dr. Green, 97
Damage to Mind, 21
Dameon, 17
Dancing, 41, 63
Dan, Tribe of, 13
Dark Side of System, 39, 69
Dates, on internal tape, 9
David, name for Mengele, 15
Death hangs like a fog, 63
Death of Master, 7
Death when Anti-Christ reigns, 17
Death, Feigned, 79
Dehumanization, 9, 21, 25, 61, 93
Dehumanization of Ribbon Alters, 9
Deliverances, dangers of, 17
Deliverances, shortcomings of, 69
Delta & Beta alters, 35, 73
Delta Models, 81
Demonic Command Structure, 19

Demonic Forces behind Self-destruction, 63
Demonology, 5, 17, 59, 87
Demonology known by Mothers of Darkness, 87
Demons in internal worlds, 97
Demons, Big Daddy ones, 17, 87
Demons, blood, 81
Demons, looking like Programmers, 15
Demons, reptilian nature of, 17
Demons, results of deliverance, 73
Denial, 51, 65
Depression part of demonology, 81
Depression, purposes for cult, 85
Derision by Programmers, 53
Desensitization to Bloodshed, 79
Desensitization to violence, 53
Desert, internal, 91
Destiny, 37
Destructive Episodes, 63
Diamond, 85
Diamond Ring, 95
Diamond= 1st sign zodiac, 81
Diana was sometimes a cat, 93
Digestive Failure Program, 67
Directed Energy used for Control, 31
Directions, lack of, 41
Disassociation, 65
Disassociation taught, 33
Disembowellment, 67
Disneyland, 23
Dollar Bill, 11
Doll House, 9, 39, 49, 91
Dollhouse furniture, 9
Domino effect of programms going off, 19
Dominoes, 5, 19, 29, 95
Dominoes as codes, 19
Dominoes, work as stacking cue, 19
Door & Entryway, 49
Doors, numbered, 91
Dots, white, 9
Double Helix, 95
Double Pyramid, 95
Double System, 83
Double Worlds, 71
Doubles, 59
Doves (alters), 93
Dr. Green (see also Dr. Josef Mengele), 15, 39, 63
Dr. Green, glasses of, 39
Dr. Green, wore Nazi uniforms w/ boots, 39
Driven, feeling of being, 49
Drug Overdose, 67
Drug Use, 39
Drugs, 11, 39, 53
Drugs, mind altering, 53
Druidic Symbology used in Systems, 73
Druidic numerals/letters, 67
Druidism, 13, 73
Druidism, what they teach children, 73
Dungeon Key, 77
Dwarfs, 7, 9, 17, 77, 83
Dwarfs' forest, 83

ELF waves for mind control, 31
E-V-I-L=L-I-V-E backwards, 55
Eagle, 13, 17, 41
Eagle, double-headed, 11
Eagles (alters), 93
Education System controlled, 59
Education, used for control, 31
Eggs with Imps, 67
Egypt, 11, 93
Egypt, Ancient sexual magic, 11
Egyptian *Book of the Dead*, 93
Egyptian Names given to some alters, 93
Egyptian gods, 57
Eisenhower, Dwight, meeting w/ System, 11
Elections are Fraudulent, 31
Electric Shock, 39
Electric probes, 39
Electronic signals, 69
Electro-shock to hide memories, 33
Electro-shock to make puppet, 29
Electro-shock "treatments", 53
Elevators, 91
Elistist teachings, 53
Emerald City, 91
Emerald City Castle, 9, 33, 51, 91
Emerald Green, use of as a color code, 35
Endorphines (enzymes), 43
Energy dispersed by Core, 9
Enochian Language, 97
Enzymes (Endorphines), 43
Estavada, 17
Eternal Life Force, 57
Eucalyptus Trees, 91
Evil Spirits (See also Demons, Gamma Pr.), 31
Evil, exaltation of, 17
Exocisms, limitations of, 17
Eye In Front of Computer, 19
Eyes, light of soul, 81
Ezekiel's Valley of Dry Bones, 33

Face, melted, 9
Fairchild, name for Mengele, 15
False Appearance of having it together, 61
False Memories attached to torture, 33
False Memories, 33, 53

False Promises by Cult, 25
Familiar Objects used for cues, 39
Fantasy World, safety of, 49
Fatalism, of alters, 37
Father, love for used for clean breaks, 77
Fear represented by Darkness, 39
Fear, 7, 49
Fears, Personal of American, 23
Fears, manipulated by elite, 31
Fears, too many in most people, 7
Feast of the Beast, 5
Feather, Red Ostrich, 93
Feather, used during ritual, 87
Feathers, 93
Feelings, stripped from alters, 25
Fetus, demonization of, 5
Fields of forget me, 91
Fiddle, 29
Fiddler, cue word, 21
Fight with Suicide Programming, 67
Films, family, 53
Films, high speed, 53
Films, used for desensitization, 81
Fires of Hell, 97
Firewall, 91
Flooding (from Atlantis) Program, 67
Flouride, 31
Fog, demonic, 97
Fog, grey was demonic, 17
Forest, Dwarfs', 83, 91
Forests, 91
Forgiveness, God's, 43
Formal Room, 49
Frames of References, built by System, 31
Free Will Manipulated by Elite, 31
Freedom Train, 51, 65
Freedom, definition of, 31
Freedom, journey to, 57
Freemasonry, 59, 93
Freemasons, 11
Freya's chariot pulled by cats, 93
Fronts, 37
Front Alters, 37, 69
Front Programs, 9
Fruit Tree, 91
Fruit, (programs on tree), 5, 51
Functioning, Fronts did great job, 21
Furniture, Dollhouse, 9

Game Timer, the, 29
Gamma Programming, 17, 67
Garden of Eden, 9, 57
Garden of Eden, internal, 77
Gatekeeper Alters, 73, 85, 89
Gatekeeper Alters have Disinformation, 85
Gatekeepers One thru Thirteen, 73, 85, 89
Gatekeepers, problems with telling truth, 81
Gates and portals, 81
Gates, 85
Genealogies of Occultism in Family, 83
Generational Demonic Power, 21
Generational Satanism, 97
Generational Spiritual Ties, 15
Genetic Engineering, 35
Genii Bottle, 5
Geography, not to be learned, 41
Geometric Shapes to Structure Systems, 93
Gerberus, 17
Gethsemane Program, 67
Ghost Riders, 39
Giant with Hammer Story, 59
Glass, 91
Glass Coffin, 9, 91
Glassy Wall before Hell Pit, 91
God creates man, 57
God's Forgiveness, 43
God's Love stolen from victim, 43
God's Saving Miracles in System's Life, 23
God, meaning for dark alters, 69
Goddess Names Assigned, 25
Gold, 63, 87
Gold Color, 71
Gold, coding, 15
Gold, use of as a color code, 35
Golden Keys, 91
Good things never lasted, 43
Gore, Vice-Pres. Al, 43
Grail (Holy), 87
Grand Druid Council Inspections, 59
Grand Druid Council, external, 59, 97
Grand Druid Council, internal, 35
Grande Dame, 5, 87
Grande Dame Alters, 59
Grande Mother, 87
Grande Mother read stories, 21
Grandfather Castles, 17
Grandfather Clock, 77
Graveyards, 91
Great Cat of System, 49
Great Pyramid, 93
Great Seal of U.S., 11, 13
Great Seal, torture to respect it, 11
Greek numerals, 67
Green, use of as a color code, 35
Grid of our System, 87
Grooming, 11, 41, 53, 81
Grooming = Training, 41

Grooming, sexual, 11, 41
Grounding by Alters, 85
Group which got out, 53
Guardian Angel, 77
Guards in System, 89
Guilt issues, 63
Guilt, 7, 63, 97
Guilt over children, 97

Hall, Manly P., 59
Halloween, 33, 73
Hallways w/ red doors, 91
Hammer of Thor, 59
Hand Signals, 15
Handlers, have total power over slave, 39
Hanging Program, 21
Hansel & Gretel, 33
Harmony, attribute of God, 5
Hate taught, 53
Hathor, 93
Headaches-split brain, 67
Healing, hypnotic of System, 53
Health, destruction of for control, 31
Health, route to, 65
Heart Failure Program, 67
Hearts, mechanical put in Ribbons, 9
Hearts, of stone, 25
Hearts, original ones obtained, 25
Hearts, progrmmg to convince of removal, 25
Heliopolis (internal), 91
Helix Pattern, 55
Helix, double, 95
Hell, 17, 49
Hell Fire, 49, 91
Hell Pit, 91
Hell, make up of internal one, 17
Help Lines controlled by System, 63
Help given boy to free him, 59
Helplessness, feeling of, 51
Hermetic Magic, 93
Hide & Seek Game for slaves, 41
Hierarchy, Satanic, 87
Histamine Production, 67
History of System (see Chronology,p.1), 21
History, falsified, 31
Hittites, Aryan, 13
Holy Blood Line, 83
Holy Circle, 49
Home, internal home for Core, 9
Homosexuality, 47
Hope, 7
Horses, 39, 65, 75
Hour Glass, method to turn, 15
Hour Glass, results of turning, 15, 71
Hour Glass, what turning did to alters, 15
Hour Glasses, 15, 19, 59, 91
House of David, 17, 83, 91, 93
Hummel, Ed, 23
Hydra, 17
Hypnosis, 19, 27, 75, 95
Hypnosis use of rings, 95
Hypnotic Age Progression, 75
Hypnotic Spiral, 37
Hypnotic Surgery, 27
Hypnotism used to reach lowest level, 19

Icetown, 91
Illuminati, 5, 13, 23, 41 47, 57, 97
Illuminati Banquets, 43
Illuminati Children, 47
Illuminati Families, appearance hidden, 23
Illuminati Kings=selfish gods, 97
Illuminati Models, 81
Illuminati Plans to Dominate World, 13
Illuminati Rituals, 57
Illuminati have hunts, 41
Illuminati, designed our System, 57
Illuminati, escapees from misunderstood, 69
Implants, 31
Inactivity, planned by cult, 61
Indian gods, 57
Injection of Bleach Suicide Program, 67
Instruction Section, 19
Instructions given Satanic leadership, 5
Integration problems, 75
Intelligence agences whores for Illum., 21
Intercession for rest of System, 69
Internal Boxes opening, 49
Internal Compass, 37, 59
Internal Computers, 37
Internal Defenses, 67
Internal Shattering, 67
Internal Structures, 91
Internal Structures, tips for seeing it, 91
Internal Worlds, structure, 29
Inversion of feelings, 53
Inversions in reality, 95
Invisible Countries, 91
Invocation of Demons, 5
Ipsimus, Master held this Illum. rank, 39
Island of of forget me not, 91
Isolate & Hibernate Program, 67
Italia, 17

Jack-o-lanterns, 73
Japanese Sexual Techniques, 41
Jerusalem, 59
Jewels, 9, 79
Jewels= programs, 21
Jezebel, 55
Jokers, 19, 89, 95
Jokers can be anything in System, 95
Judges, come as Johns at night, 41
Judicial System, controlled by Illuminati, 11
Justifications by Programmers, 29

Kaballistic Magic, 57
Kabalistic Tree of Life, 95
Kali, 87
Keeper of the Seals, 25
Kennedy Administration, used for, 11
Kennedy, J.F., foreknowledge of assass., 11
Kennedy, John F., assassination of, 11
Keys, 29, 91
King Ahab, 55
King Arthur Story, 87
King's Men (Illuminati), 29
King of Denmark, 97
Kings Castles, 17
Kitchen, 49
Kitten, 13
Kitten, memories of Master's call, 13
Kittens, Mama, 41
Kittens, Night, 41
Kittens, Spin, 79
Kittens, White (alters), 93
Kitty, name of Dwarf, 83
Kool-aid, trigger for SRA survivors, 43

LSD, 53
LaVey, Anton, 23
Law Enforcement, controlled by Illuminati, 11
Laws that govern us, 29
Layering by Satanism, 11
Layering of Programs, 33
Leadbeater, C.W., 93
Left Hands saved for candles, 43
Left-right reversals, 55
Legion, 17
Legion of Spirits protect eye, 19
Lehteb, 87
Letter of Law, to be followed, 29
Letters assigned parts, 73
Letters--meaning of word, 41
Libraries, 91
Library, 33, 71
Library Scripts, 33
Lies, Satanic, 5
Life Force, 19
Life after Deprogramming, 73
Light Bearers, 13
Light Bulb, picture of computer pwr source, 19
Light Net used in deprogramming, 75
Light Side, 39, 69, 77, 91
Light Side Care Providers, 77
Light Side City, 91
Lights, castle, 9
Lilith, 57
Lilith's son, 57
Lilith's son's blood, 57
Limosene represents abusers, 81
Line upon Line, 5
Linkage of alters, 81, 85
Links, to others, 45
Little Girl, 97
Little Red Riding Hood, 33, 41
Living Room (Internal), 49
Logical Contradictions, 55
Logo - In God We Trust, 11
Long Beach, CA, 41
Looking Glass, 55
Looking Glass Cake, 55
Lost Horizons, 33
Love, God's, 5
Love, told we were unlovable, 25
Love-hate relationship of Twins, 47
Lowest level of Mind, 19
Lucifer, 11
Luciferian Blue Light, 19
Lynn, Loretta, 73

MPD created for generations, 47
MPD way to prevent moral responsibility, 31
MPD, emotions of, 75
MPD, improperly diagnosed, 63
MPD, therapeutic community argues cause, 37
Maat, 93
Magic of Mothers, 87
Magic, Hermetic, 93
Magic, high level, 93
Magical Elements, Four, 93
Magnets used on Clones, 75
Male Child sacrificed, 57
Man with Voice like Thunder, 73
Mapping of System, 29
Marines, 11
Marionette Puppet, 29
Marshlands, 91
Masks, 43, 93

Masks, made of flesh, 43
Masks, used to imitate our Master, 15
Masonic Ritual Question - D. or J.?, 37
Masses, deluded, 31
Master was our god, 15
Master, shown as rider of horse, 39
Master, why he was supposedly needed, 15
Matrix, 91
Matrixes, 9, 59
May 1, 41
Mazes, 15, 49, 91
Mechanisms of System, pictured, 59
Mediga, 17
Memory Erasure Program, 67
Memories, Grotesque, 75
Memories, Nested, 21
Memories, coded, 53
Memories, dealing with, 51
Memories, flooding, 51
Memories, in bits and pieces, 53
Memories, kept intact by demons, 17
Memories, recycled to torture alter, 53
Memories, writing down of, 51
Mendella, 17
Mengele, Dr. Joseph, 21, 29, 39, 45, 63
Mengele, Joseph, puppet skits of, 29
Mennonites, used in example, 45
Mice (internal), 59
Microprocessor Register, 19
Microwaves used to stop Clones, 75
Military Bases used for programming, 21
Military Hunts, 41
Military Officers who Program, 29
Military System, controlled by Illuminati, 11
Mind Control Techniques, 31
Mind Reading, 45
Mind screams silently, 49
Ministers, come as Johns at night, 41
Miracles, 69
Miracles, what God did for us, 7
Mirror Images, 15, 47, 55, 59
Mirrors (internal), 49, 55, 91
Mirrors, broken, 49
Mirrors, connected to Demons, 49
Mirrors, demons protect, 17
Moat (internal), 91
Model of Universe, 29
Moloch, 59
Monarch Butterflies, 61
Monarch Mind Control microcosm of world, 5
Monarch Mind Control overview of methods, 31
Monarch Mind Control, why it's done, 5
Monarch Program, tests children for dis., 37
Monarch Slaves & Multi-lingual abilities, 97
Monarch Slaves, danger in warning them, 63
Monarch Victims, improperly diagnosed, 63
Monkeys (chimps used in programming), 21
Monroe, Marilyn, 11, 73
Moon Child Rituals, 5
Moon Children, 21, 35
Moriah, 17
Mormon Programming, 19
Morning Star, term means Lucifer, 11
Mother Board of Computers, 67
Mother Goddess, 87
Mother of Darkness Castle, 87
Mother of Darkness Vows, 25
Mother, a Christian, 69
Mothers of Darkness, 15, 25, 57, 81, 87, 93
Mothers of Darkness, alters, 35, 77
Mountains (internal), 91
Mozart, 41
Mt. Taggetus, 59
Mule, 51
Mushroom, 55
Music bands & Satanism, 97
Music interest died with Master's death, 41
Musical Talents, 41
Mut, 93
Mystery Religions, 59, 87

Nautilus, 81
Nautilus (like Atlantis), 85
Nazis, 23
Nebet, 93
Nesting of Memories, 33
Never Never Land, 21
New Life in Christ helpful, 37
New World Order, 13, 23, 41
New World Order, using talents of people, 41
Newspapers, controlled by elite, 31
Nights, filled with bad memories, 75
Nile River (internal), 91, 93
No Evil rule, 37
Nome Army, 77
Nome King (type of), 15
Novus Ordo, 13
Numbers, Odd & Even, 55
Nursery (internal), 91
Nursery, internal, 75

Oak Tree used for Trance, 55
Oaks, 91
Oath type of secrecy/loyalty oath, 25
Oath, oneness oath of Mothers, 13
Oath, words of Illuminati oath, 13

Oaths, 71
Oaths of Lodges & Satanism, 25
Obedience, 29, 41
Objects, familiar used for cues, 39
Obsedian, 93
Occult Beliefs taught Mothers, 87
Occult Symbology, 11
Ocean (internal), 91
Octopus Strangling Program, 63, 67
Old Crone Goddess, 87
Oligarchies, ruling, 97
Omega Programming, 17, 49, 67
Opera, 41
Operation Black Widow, 73
Optic Problems, 67
Opulence, Satanic, 87
Orange Color Code, 89
Orange, use of as a color code, 35, 89
Orchids, 15, 79
Orks (alters), 93
Outer Space beyond the Stars (internal), 91
Overdesign of System, 39
Owl, 5, 57
Owl symbol for Master, 57
Owls (alters), 93
Ozma of Oz, 59

POWs, 73
Pain Programming, 67
Pain as part of demonology, 81
Pain, from memories, 29
Pain, positive side, 7
Pain, purposes for, 85
Palace, 93
Palace Steps, 93
Pancake People, 9
Paper Doll Program, 63
Paper Trees, 91
Pappa's Call to a Kitten, 13
Paraldehyde, 53
Paranormal Training & Abilities, 45
Participation, forced upon System, 43
Peace used as cue word, 7
Pearls, grey, black or white, 79
Pearls, in System, 79
Pedestals In System, 73
Pedestals, alters upon, 57
Pedophile, pseudo-experience desired, 75
Pendalum, 47, 59
Pendalum/clock mechanism, 59
Penises, given to little children, 43
Pent Houses, 41
Pentecostalism, 39
Pentegram used for System Structure, 95
Pepperbox (Hell Pit), 91
Persians use cats in battle, 93
Personal Fears of American, 23
Pert Em Hru (*Book of the Dead*), 93
Petra Secret City, 91
Petra, internal hidden city, 77
Phallus, gold, 9
Philosophy, 41
Phoenix Level, 9
Phoenix, 11, 13
Phoenix, occult symbol, 11
Photographic Memories of Alters, 19
Piano, 41
Piano, symbol of positive music memories, 7
Picasso, 41
Pink, use of as a color code, 35
Plato, 29
Plane Flight Patterns used as Signals, 69
Planets relationship to gems, 95
Plans for System, internal plans, 83
Platinum Ring, 87
Playground (internal), 91
Poe, Edgar Allen, 41
Poetry, Poe's memorized, 41
Political structures, fragmentation, 5
Politicians, 53
Pool of Age, 87
Poppy Field, 83, 91
Poppy Field access code, 77
Porcelain Face Programming, 85
Porcelain Faces, 81
Porn Grooming, 41
Portals, 85, 91
Posthypnotic Blocks, 53
Posthypnotic Suggestions, 33
Potter's Wheel Programming, 19
Power Source for Computers, 19
Prayer Warriors, 69
President of Soveriegn Chiefs (cat), 49
Presidential Models, 11
Presidents, handpicked by Illuminati, 11
Presidio, 87
Price, for freedom, 21
Prince needed to wake up core, 77
Prince, 9, 77
Princess, 83
Princess Back-Up Program, 9, 53, 77
Prison, in mind, 69
Profane, those ignorant of Symbology, 11
Program Layering Methodology, 33
Program, seperation of Mind into bubbles, 21
Programmer Alters, 15, 19
Programmer Alters, appearance in System, 15

Programmers, external, 23
Programmers, internal, 15, 19
Programmers, various ones for System listed, 15
Programming (see individual kinds), 31
Programming Book used by Master & CIA, 9
Programming Elements, 31
Programming Sites for System, 21
Programming Tricks, 81
Programming connections to Satanic ritual, 5
Programming of World, 31
Programming, care of victim during, 5
Programming, complexity pictured, 5
Programming, demonically based, 21
Programming, tricks, 9
Programming,layered in with Memories, 53
Programs, No-talk, 21
Protection by trance, 67
Protectors in System, 89
Pruning of Programming Tree, 95
Pulling Down the Moon Ceremony, 87
Pulpits, control by Illuminati, 31
Pulse Level, training in discernment, 41
Punishment, for mistakes, 41
Puppets, 63
Puppy & girl, 55
Puppy, symbol of goal, 7
Purple, use of as a color code, 35
Pussywillows, 93
Pyramid, 95
Pyramid, Double, 95
Pyramid, Rothschild's Opus 1 in CA, 87
Pythagorus, 29

Quadrants, 17, 37, 59
Queen Mother, 87
Queen of Atlantis, 85
Queen of Hearts, 85
Queen of Section Four, 29
Queen of System (Silence, cult core), 77
Queen of the Clones (alter), 75
Queen of the Nile (alter), 93
Queen's Castles, 17

REM sleep not allowed, 53
Rabbit, White, 5, 13, 21, 29, 33
Rabbit, various occult meanings, 13
Railroad Tracks, 51, 65
Rainbow, over it, 79
Rape by chimps, 21
Rationalizations by Programmers, 29
Raven, 75
Ravens (demons & alters), 63, 93
Re-structuring Program, 67
Reality blurred, 33
Reassurance needed by survivor, 63
Record Keeper of the Gods, 93
Records, kept on us, 53
Records, list of items recorded, 53
Red Queen, 55
Red Sea Suicide Program, 67
Red, use of as a color code, 35
Regeneration of System, 19
Religions, Mystery, 25
Religions, fragmentation, 5
Reptilian nature of Demons, 17
Rescuer, Programming sets Master up as, 39
Respiratory Failure Program, 67
Revelation, Book of Bible, 25
Reversals, 55
Revolving Switching, 67, 81
Revolving Switching Patterns, 85
Rex, man assigned to access System, 23
Ribbons, 9, 35, 77
Ribbons, Cover story, 9
Ribbons, Front girl alter, 9
Ribbons, color coding of, 9
Ribbons, contact code, 9
Ribbons, dangers of cutting them, 9
Ribbons, hiding of, 9
Rings, 59
Rings used to control programs & alters, 95
Rings, concentric, 29
Rio Grande (internal), 91
Ritual Languages, 97
Ritual to join together a team, 13
Rituals, Blood, 87
Ritual, Pulling Down the Moon, 87
Rituals, Satanic, 93
Rituals, planned at Great Pyramid, 93
Rituals, still done in secrecy, 97
River Nile (internal), 91
Robot Suits, 75
Robots, 5
Roman numerals, 67
Rome was City of Saturn, 97
Rome, occult center, 97
Room behind a closet (internal), 91
Rooms, identified of dollhouse, 49
Rose Red-Rose White, 33
Rotation of Alters, 81
Rubicon (internal), 91
Rubix Cube, 95
Rules given System, 29
Runway, internal, 77
Russian Roulette, 5, 67

SRA = Rituals in Book of the Dead, 93
Sacrifices, used for desensitization, 81
Satan's birthday = Halloween, 73
Satan, character of, 5
Satan, girl given to, 17
Satanic Bride, 79
Satanic Books by Solomon, 83
Satanic Guardian Angels, 59
Satanic Knowledge (hidden), 11
Satanic Sacrifices have long history, 59
Satanic Seed, 13
Satanism runs like Military, 5
Satanism, Generational (see also Illuminati), 5
Saturn, 97
Saturn worship= Satan worship, 97
Scarfs for programming, 39
Scrambling Program, 67
Scrambling Programs, 19, 33
Scripts, 21, 29, 33, 95
Scripts, List of Scripts used for us, 33
Scrolls, used by Ill. to write names on, 21
Sea Monsters, 91
Sea Shells, 17
Sealing, sexual rituals, 5, 49
Sealings, sexual, 5
Secrecy, Illuminati, 87
Secrets, Intelligence method of hiding, 81
Section One, 97 alters identified by name, 29
Section Six, 9
Seed of Satan, 21
Seeds (internal), 91
Sekhmet, 93
Self-destruction, 63
Separation, used for mind control, 25
Serpent Tree (internal), 91
Seshat, 93
Sesheta = Seshat, 93
Set = Egyptian form of Satan, 93
Seven times Seven Backup Program, 67
Sex part of Gamma Programming, 17
Sexual Blackmail, 79
Sexual Grooming, 41
Sexual Sealing of Programs, 95
Sexual Sealings, 5, 95
Shafts (internal), 91
Shakespeare, 41
Shangri-La, internal, 87
Shattered Mind, 49
Shattering started by abusers to kill Systm, 67
Shells (internal), 21, 91
Shenandoah (internal), 91
Shifting Sands (internal), 91
Shoe, high heeled, 79
Shoes, 91
Shoes, gold, 37
Shooting Suicide Programs, 67
Signatures, color change threatened, 25
Silence 1-13 Alters, 9, 81, 83
Silences and G2, 85
Silver Cord, 21
Silver Ring with Snake Swallowing Tail, 59
Silver, use of as a color code, 35
Sisters, 47
Sitting Room, 49
Skin, used by Satanists, 43
Skull, held by master, 39
Slavery, most hideous is Monarch Program, 29
Sleep Deprivation Program, 67
Sleep Phases, 53
Sleeping Program, 67
Sleeping Beauty, 33, 77
Slippers, 77, 91
Slippers, gold, silver, ruby, 91
Snake Pits (internal), 91
Snake, 5
Snow White Story, 21
Snow White, 33, 77
Snow White, recent movie, 83
Social Graces, 41
Sodium Amytal, 53
Sodium Pentothal, 53
Software, equivalent internal stories, 67
Solomon, 83
Son, Friend's, who died from programming, 61
Songs, singing praise songs, 7
Songs, used for Programming, 39
Songs, what to sing dictated, 7
Soul Ties, 15
Soul Ties, breaking of, 15
Southern California, 41
Spider Chambers, 91
Spider Web as Communication Network, 95
Spider, gold, 9
Spiders, 9, 77
Spiders in casket, 77
Spine, represents System depth, 41
Spiral, Hypnotic, 37
Spirit of Death like a fog, 63
Spirit of Fear, 7
Spirit, God's, 5
Spirits, locking in place, 17
Spiritual Warfare by Demons, 73
Splits, first are strongest, 75
Spy, systems used for, 45
Stacking Mechanisms, 19
Stacking cue, words of, 19
Stairway (internal), 91
Standard access code, 85

Star of Istar, 87
Star on forehead, 93
Stars, 37
Stella Matutina, 93
Stolen, items they took from us, 27
Stones, black, 25
Stones, white, 25
Stress from Revolving Switching, 85
Structured MPD not an accident, 37
Stuffed Animals, 75
Subliminal Messages, 31
Suffocating, 53
Suggestions, suggestible states, 53
Suicide, 63
Suicide Plans, of Clowns hard to detect, 89
Suicide Programs, 19, 21, 49, 67
Suicide, near death of System in '75, 7
Support, by Friend & Family, 7
Surgery, Hypnotic, 27
Swans (alters), 93
Sweeping Motions to stop Split Brn. Ache, 59
Switches on Clones, 75
Sylvia & Bruno, 55
Symbols make people feel trapped, 11
System Configurations, 95
System common pool of capabilities, 45
System forced to comply, 43
System is Microcosm of world, 39
System, used to help programmers, 53
Systems, overall traits of, 45
Systems, used for a special use, 45
Systems, when they meet, 47

TWEPing (terminating w/ Extreme Prejudice), 53
Tall Book of Make Believe, 33, 67
Tanit (site), 59
Tape, reel to reel put into abdomen, 9
Tape, ticker, 9
Tatoos, Blue Butterfly, 61
Team ritual, 13
Teams, 45
Teams, 2-person, 4-person, 5, 45
Teddy Bear clutched by girl, 49
Teddy Bear symbolizes helplessness, 63
Telepathic accesses, 69
Telepathy, 45
Television creates hypnotic state, 31
Television shows used for Programming, 39
Television show, 57
Temperature Change Program, 67
Temple of Moloch, 17, 25, 61
Temple of Set, 93
Temple, the, 33
Tennessee Waltz, used as notice of use, 7, 41
Terminology, Christian, shortcomings, 69
Test of child for disassociation, 37
Texas Codes, 15
Thanks, given tongue in check to abusers, 23
The Candy Man Song, 39
The 21 Lessons of Merlyn, 73
The Externalization of the Hierarchy, 97
The Man Without a Country, 33
The Saturn Myth, 97
The Secret Teachings of All Ages, 59
Therapeutic Community in confusion, 37
Therapeutic Community, debates over MPD, 37
Therapeutic Community, infiltrated, 63
Therapeutic Process, shortcomings, 69
Therapeutic Teams, 63
Therapists can help with memories, 51
Therapists try to interpret demons, 59
Therapists, in denial, 43
Therapists, many are multiples themselves, 63
Therapy, benefit of, 7
Therapy, dangers of, 69
Theta Model, 45
Third Eye, 91
Thor, 17, 59
Thoth, 93
Threat by recent Master for deprogramming, 29
Threefold Goddess, 87
Throne of God, 69
Through the Looking Glass, 55
Thunderstorms, internal, 71
Ticker Tape with Morse Code, 5
Ties to 4 Programmers, 17
Time-Table for System, 83
Tin Man, 5, 81
Tin Woodman's Castle, 91
Topaz, blue, 87
Tophet (site), 59
Torpedo Town, 91
Torture, methodology, 33
Torture, some alters will beg for it, 79
Toy Army Cup, 29
Train, 75
Training to take the body on cue, 77
Traitors, 25
Trance, freedom from constant trance, 73
Trauma Bonding, 15, 47
Trauma-based Mind Control, reminded of, 11
Trauma-bonding twins, 47
Tree Branches, 57
Tree Imagery in Rape to put in programs, 95
Tree Rings, 95
Tree Roots, 57, 67
Tree contains Programming, 57

Tree with square paper boxes w/ music p. 91
Tree's life comes from sacrificed blood, 57
Tree, Numbers associated with it, 95
Tree, Programming, 41, 75, 79, 91
Tricks to hide alters in System, 85
Tricks to hide important objects, 81, 85
Triggers in life, 67
Triggers, 51, 67
Trinities, false, 57
Trojan Horse w/ armies, 91
Tunnels (internal), 91
Twilight Sleep, 53
Twinning, 45, 47
Twinning, purposes, 45
Twinning, role it plays in deprogramming, 45
Twins, mark of Monarch programming, 45
Twins, used by Mengele for experiments, 45
Twisting & Turning of System, 67
Typewriter, 33

Umbrella, 81
Unity, attribute of God, 5
Urns, burial for sacrificed children, 59
Utility Programs, 67

Vail, the, 67
Valley of the Dry Bones (internal), 91
Validation from others, 53
Vampires, 43
Vertibrae used in programming, 41
Vineyard, 55
Violin case with electric probes, 39
Violin, 21, 41
Violin, Mengele's, 29
Virgin Goddess, 87
Volcano, 91
Voodoo, 5, 21, 25
Voodoo Doctors compared to CIA progrmmrs, 23
Voodoo dolls, 21, 25
Vortexes, 91
Vortices, 91

W.W. II, 23
Wall, 83
Waltzes, 41
War In the Heavens, 67
Warning about Mirrors, 79
Warning Not to Touch Library, 71
Wasteland, 91
Watchtowers, magical, 93
Water (internal moats), 91
Waterfalls (internal), 33, 91
Wheel of Life, 87
Wheel within Wheels of Ezekiel, 33
Wheels, 5
Whisper, fairy (internal), 59
White Knight, 55
White Queen, 55
White Rabbit (see Rabbit, White)
White, use of as a color code, 35
Wind (internal), 91
Wiring, 5, 91
Wisdom symbolized by owl, 57
Witchcraft, 11, 87
Witches, 93
Wizard, 5, 77
Wizard Castles, 17
Wizard of Oz Books, 15, 33, 63
Wizard of Oz Story, 77
Wizard of Oz, 55, 67
Wolves, internal, 51
Wool, antigravity, 55
Word of God, 23
World(s), 5
World, Plan to enslave, 25
Worlds, Spiritual, 39
Worlds, the pull between two worlds, 55
Worlds, of System, 37
Worms, 91
Wrecking the Car suicide Program, 67

X,Y & Z Axes, 51

Year 2000, 93
Yellow Brick Road, 51, 91
Yellow, use of as a color code, 35

Zodiac in programming, 81

THE WITCH-HUNT NARRATIVE

POLITICS, PSYCHOLOGY, AND THE SEXUAL ABUSE OF CHILDREN

ROSS E. CHEIT

INTERIOR ART BY
L. ARTHI KRISHNASWAMI

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2022 with funding from
Kahle/Austin Foundation

https://archive.org/details/witchhuntnarrati0000chei

The Witch-Hunt Narrative

The Witch-Hunt Narrative

Politics, Psychology, and the Sexual Abuse of Children

ROSS E. CHEIT

Illustrations by L. Arthi Krishnaswami

OXFORD
UNIVERSITY PRESS

SOMERSET CO. LIBRARY

OXFORD
UNIVERSITY PRESS

Oxford University Press is a department of the University of Oxford.
It furthers the University's objective of excellence in research, scholarship,
and education by publishing worldwide.

Oxford New York
Auckland Cape Town Dar es Salaam Hong Kong Karachi
Kuala Lumpur Madrid Melbourne Mexico City Nairobi
New Delhi Shanghai Taipei Toronto

With offices in
Argentina Austria Brazil Chile Czech Republic France Greece
Guatemala Hungary Italy Japan Poland Portugal Singapore
South Korea Switzerland Thailand Turkey Ukraine Vietnam

Oxford is a registered trade mark of Oxford University Press
in the UK and certain other countries.

Published in the United States of America by
Oxford University Press
198 Madison Avenue, New York, NY 10016

© Ross E. Cheit 2014

First issued as an Oxford University Press paperback, 2016

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced,
stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted, in any form or by any means,
without the prior permission in writing of Oxford University Press,
or as expressly permitted by law, by license, or under terms agreed with the
appropriate reproduction rights organization. Inquiries concerning reproduction
outside the scope of the above should be sent to the Rights Department,
Oxford University Press, at the address above.

You must not circulate this work in any other form
and you must impose this same condition on any acquirer.

CIP data is on file at the LOC

9780199931224 (hardcover); 9780190465575 (paperback)

To Kathleen

CONTENTS

Preface ix
List of Illustrations xix

PART I THE RISE OF THE WITCH-HUNT NARRATIVE

1. Introduction: The Infamous Child Sexual Abuse Cases of the 1980s 3

2. The McMartin Preschool Case (1983–1990) 17

3. Scrutinizing the Evidence of a National Witch-Hunt 87

4. History Ignored: Silence, Denial, and Minimization 151

Conclusion I 196

PART II THE TRIUMPH OF THE WITCH-HUNT NARRATIVE

5. The Turning Point: *State v. Michaels* 203

6. Going to Extremes: *State v. Fuster* 283

Conclusion II 355

PART III RECENT DEVELOPMENTS

7. The Legacy of the Witch-Hunt Narrative 365

Acknowledgments 409
Bibliographic Notes 413
Notes 417
Index 487

PREFACE

Just as this book was being completed, the scandal that has come to be associated with Penn State took a definitive turn. Gerald "Jerry" Sandusky, the football team's defensive coordinator for many years, was convicted of forty-five counts of sexual crimes against children. Soon thereafter, the Freeh Report concluded that "four of the most powerful people" at the university, including Coach Joe Paterno, had covered up the situation and "exhibited a striking lack of empathy for Sandusky's victims."[1] The NCAA quickly imposed severe sanctions, which included a penalty that would provide millions of dollars for child abuse prevention programs. It is, no doubt, the most important child sexual abuse story in recent years. One particular aspect of the story shocked the sensibilities of many: Mike McQueary testified that when he was a graduate assistant at Penn State he saw Jerry Sandusky in the shower with a boy who Sandusky appeared to be subjecting to a sexual assault. McQueary reported the incident to Coach Paterno. Although there are differing accounts about precisely what McQueary said, there is no disagreement about the fact that nobody higher up in the university contacted law enforcement. The criminal trial established that Sandusky sexually abused several more boys after top officials at the university had more than sufficient reason to report him.

What surprised me most about the Penn State story—after spending fifteen years researching and writing this book—was that so many people were flabbergasted that a cover-up like this could occur. Everyone knows, of course, about the massive cover-up of similar events in the Roman Catholic Church. Indeed, a few commentators were quick to draw parallels between the cases by casting football as religion and coach Paterno as the pope. But while we have overcome our collective denial about the possibility that a priest could abuse a child, we have also managed to compartmentalize the lessons from the Catholic Church cases, an issue to which I will return at the end of the book.

Meanwhile, how could child sexual abuse be covered up for as long as it was at Penn State? There are two important answers. First, as Suzanne Sgroi said decades ago, we abhor child sexual abuse in the abstract but we tolerate it in reality.[2] The abhorrence gets all the publicity. This is how we talk about child sexual abuse—with the language of disgust and disapproval. But that is not how we, as a society, tend to act in specific cases. Instead, we often minimize and deny so as to allow us to avoid seeing things we would rather not see. *Turning a blind eye* to the sexual abuse of children has a long history in this country. So does protecting "upstanding citizens" against such claims. Communities have been known to rally around people convicted of this crime, making arguments to mitigate the punishment because of their "good deeds." There was a particularly egregious version of this response in my home state, Rhode Island, in 1997, when a superior court judge overturned *his own verdict* convicting Father Louis Dunn of rape after receiving an outpouring of letters orchestrated from churchgoers who attested to the ex-priest's character. Though the judge's actions were unprecedented—and eventually overturned by the state Supreme Court[3]—rallying around a convicted child rapist is not at all unusual.

The second reason the events at Penn State did not surprise me stems directly from the argument of this book. We have, over the last twenty years, discounted the word of children who might testify about sexual abuse. We have become more worried about overreacting to child sexual abuse than we are about underreacting to it. The Penn State case is filled with concern on the part of administrators about whether Sandusky was being treated "humanely," with little or no apparent regard for his possible victims. We are far too quick to dismiss the word of a child these days in the name of worrying about "child suggestibility." This development—unlike our contradictory views about sex offenses in general versus sex offenders in particular—is recent. Ironically, an overly dismissive view of children is a function of the very cases that opened the doors to allowing younger children to testify in the first place. Those cases occurred in the 1980s; many of them became infamous, and many were later overturned on appeal. All of those cases have since been cast as wrongful accusations or wrongful convictions, thanks in large part to claims about child suggestibility. Notably, the successful case against Sandusky was built on the testimony of people who were children at the time of the incidents. All were male and at least eighteen at the time they testified. The case might well have come out differently had the facts been the same but the witnesses all adolescents or younger at the time of their testimony.

This book challenges the argument that our society overreacted to the sexual abuse of children and, in the process, engaged in a series of "witch-hunts" in the 1980s. Based on the first comprehensive examination of trial court records from those cases, this book argues that the witch-hunt narrative does not do justice to the facts of these cases. The very cases that have been used to justify the claim that children are "highly suggestible" demonstrate how easy it is to make the claim regardless of the evidence. This book does not, however, claim that every controversial conviction from the 1980s was rightly decided, or that every reversal on appeal was misplaced. Rather, it questions the much more extreme claim that there were hundreds or thousands of injustices during this time that were akin to the Salem witch trials. In my view, there *were* some injustices during this period that merit serious concern. Several are detailed in this book. But to claim that those cases define a whole period is to adopt a view not borne out by the evidence.

The research for this book began with the investigation of a single case. At the time, I thought I was writing a book review of *Satan's Silence: Ritual Abuse and the Making of an American Witchhunt,* by Debbie Nathan and Michael Snedeker. The book argues that scores of injustices, akin to the Salem witch trials, were perpetrated around the country in the 1980s through prosecutions for child sexual abuse. The book was dedicated to "the men and women still incarcerated, including those whose names we know," followed by a two-column list of proper names, along with place names in parentheses. Surprisingly, many of those identified on the dedication page were not mentioned in the book; several others were referenced in the book but in no more than a sentence or two. It struck me as strange that the very cases allegedly constituting the strongest and most concrete evidence of a nationwide series of witch-hunts would receive so little attention in a book on the very subject. On closer examination, it appeared that only a few of the cases on the dedication page had been the subject of original research.[4] Although the witch-hunt narrative often refers to "hundreds" of these cases, the same handful of cases are at the core of most publications. Three of them, beginning with McMartin and including Kelly Michaels and Frank Fuster, are the subject of detailed chapters ahead. Before getting to the merits of those cases, however, one might wonder why an allegedly national wave of witch-hunts is routinely illustrated by stories about the same handful of cases.

I decided to look into Robert Halsey's case from nearby Massachusetts. Halsey's name was on the dedication page of *Satan's Silence* but never actually appeared in the book. After reviewing the trial transcript, with the assistance of an excellent research assistant who went to the Berkshires more than once, I found it difficult to imagine why anyone would think that Halsey was anything but guilty, as he was found by jury and by all appellate judicial panels since then. The transcript was filled with cross-corroborating evidence of guilt. The idea of a book review had turned into an article. I called it "The Legend of Robert Halsey."[5]

I then expanded my research horizons to other cases on Nathan and Snedeker's dedication page. I continued to find significant evidence contradicting the conventional wisdom about these cases. This was not my only finding—the wrongful conviction of Bernard Baran is elaborated in Chapter Three—but it was the predominant one. The more this happened, the more important it was that my research should encompass an expansive number of cases in order to be sure I was doing justice to the witch-hunt narrative. The idea was inspired by Darwin's fabled practice of posting for himself notes with any evidence contrary to his own theories or expectations; in this way, "the arguments most easily forgotten" would have to be confronted and explained.[6] I was inclined to doubt the witch-hunt narrative in part from personal experience. I had experienced the preference of many organizations to protect their reputation rather than confront evidence of sexual abuse when I sued the San Francisco Boys Chorus in 1994 for failing to act decades earlier on multiple forms of evidence indicating there was rampant sexual abuse of boys, including me, at their summer camp. I was open about the matter during the pendency of the case, fighting successfully to keep from having the entire matter sealed and insisting on a public apology to settle the suit.[7] But the personal experience that has been far more important, I think, in shaping some of the content of this book is my weekly involvement with the Sex Offender Treatment Program at the Rhode Island Department of Corrections in Cranston. I have been volunteering there since 1998. I teach ethics-related courses designed to help develop cognitive and social skills among men (and two women once, for ten weeks) who tend to see the world in extremely black-and-white terms. I also sit in on core treatment groups from time to time. Through this experience, I have encountered hundreds of sex offenders over the years. I sought the experience largely to help myself understand why anyone commits these crimes. I stayed because the understanding I have gained in answering the question tells me that treatment programs are meaningful and important to public safety.

Meanwhile, the research project expanded to include the list of thirty-six cases that had been made famous in a 1988 series in a Tennessee newspaper. This is when I committed myself to writing at least one book. My focus was on primary documents, not on what people might have to say years after the fact about these cases; I was interested in records of what happened then, at the time of the cases. First and foremost, this meant trial transcripts. Almost all of the cases involved trials. Finding the transcripts was often challenging, particularly for cases that had ended in acquittal or mistrial. Other challenges included protective orders and statutory protections making it difficult, if not impossible, to obtain some transcripts. Almost nothing from the era was computerized, and there were limits to how much assistance even the most cooperative court clerk could provide. Some inquiries had to be made in person; some things had to be viewed in person. Those problems were all solvable, but quite challenging nevertheless. Also, long trials fill lots of boxes. Rarely was there an inventory of any sort, and inevitably there were things missing. These could be significant problems where a trial lasted for many months.

Several years of research demonstrated there were three significant research challenges to this project that I had not fully appreciated: (1) the sheer scale and complexity of the cases, (2) the difficulties locating and copying or inspecting transcripts and related documents, and (3) the limits of written transcripts, particularly of interviews with young children. The scale and complexity problem is apparent in the three major case studies in this book. It also inspired an article about these research challenges.[8] I came to call this work Extreme Research, and I did it for almost fifteen years. During that time, I worked with more than eighty research assistants at Brown University, and I spent a small fortune on photocopying and the transcribing services of court stenographers. It was a massive effort that is still in progress for a few cases. Nevertheless, I am struck by the limitations of what I was able to cover in detail after employing a vast array of resources and research assistants over so many years. I simply did not have the space to cover all the cases I have researched; nor have I finished exhaustively researching every case in the project. Several that merit detailed treatments will be covered in future publications, particularly the Jordan, Minnesota cases and the Snowden case from Dade County, Florida. Some of the cases where I reached a dead-end could undoubtedly still be researched further. Indeed, it was clear that I could probably follow leads for another fifteen years. But there were also basic realities, from research funding to expected mortality, to be considered.

What I set out to do in this research was to assess the actual record in cases and make some independent assessments about the nature and quality of the evidence. Most of the cases analyzed in this book have been held out as modern-day witch-hunts, as cases in which there was no credible evidence of abuse. This view, as described in Chapter One, has been disseminated and accepted so widely that I refer to it as *the witch-hunt narrative.* This narrative appears in newspapers, magazines, and a range of academic publications from psychology and law to history and cultural studies. Some of those publications are now more than twenty years old, but many are much more recent, as the prominent cases in this book continue to be discussed by journalists and academics. This book adds to the vast array of publications that already express an opinion about these cases. The book challenges the witch-hunt narrative in a variety of ways. Those familiar with the narrative know where to find an enormous supply of countervailing views to challenge almost all of the views expressed in this book. Readers not familiar with the witch-hunt narrative are encouraged to examine the sources cited in Chapter One.

All readers are cautioned about the limits of even the most comprehensive archival research. These limitations cut against the degree of certainty that should be attributed to some of my conclusions. First, there are inherent obstacles to assessing cases on the basis of a cold transcript and other similarly limited documentary evidence. For the same reason videotapes of interviews with children (or adults) convey far more information than transcripts of the same interviews, viewing the presentation of evidence in a courtroom provides a stronger basis for drawing conclusions about certain evidence than does reviewing the trial transcripts alone. Fortunately, videotapes of interviews were at the heart of some cases, and I had the advantage of viewing such videotapes in two of the three chapter-length cases studies in this book; I heard audiotapes in the other. Still, I did not observe any of the extensive court testimony and therefore have the disadvantage of not observing body language or the intonation of witnesses. A second limitation of transcripts, especially when studied years later, is that they rarely include the exhibits. Transcripts are saved as archival documents in many jurisdictions, but the exhibits are ultimately property of the parties and generally returned to the parties or destroyed once the case (including any possible appeals) is complete. This limitation has particular relevance for medical testimony, where the exhibits (usually photographic slides in child sexual abuse cases) must be available in order to assess the evidence discussed in the transcript. I located slides and medical reports in some instances and consulted more than one expert about those matters, but in many cases the exhibits were not available, which limits the ability to make independent assessments about the evidence. As a reminder, these limitations are pointed out in several places in the text. Finally, there are limitations imposed by the realities of book publishing, dictating that a book covering dozens of cases cannot go into comprehensive detail for every case. Doing so would result in an unfeasibly long book, reading more like a series of books with dozens of case-based narratives than a single book with an overall argument. Accordingly, I have analyzed three cases in chapter-length (or long-form) detail and dozens more in short form, usually a few pages.

The nature of the analysis varies significantly, from chapter-length case studies to short-form treatments, even though many of the cases treated in short form involved extensive research efforts. The primary analytical question in the short-form cases was a threshold question: Was there credible evidence of abuse sufficient to have justified the state in bringing the case to trial? In answering this question, I examined the record as comprehensively as I could. I wanted to know what evidence was put forth and what arguments were made by the defense. But the analysis was not a full-blown weighing of the evidence; nor was the evidence held against the criminal court standard of proof—beyond a reasonable doubt. Instead, I looked to see whether there was evidence that appeared credible to me, and if so, I described its nature. My having concluded that there was credible evidence in a case does *not* mean the defendant was necessarily guilty. But it does mean that in my opinion, as documented by evidence I reviewed, there was sufficient reason for authorities to have investigated and brought charges. This means, by definition, that the case was not a witch-hunt. To the contrary, it is the state's duty to take action when there is credible evidence of child sexual abuse, as with any crime. Evidence that supports my opinions about these cases is described and documented in the text. In no instance are my opinions based on evidence not presented to the reader. But some of the evidence that supports my opinions goes beyond the trial transcripts to include police reports and other administrative records. Such evidence has not been subjected to the rigors of cross-examination, which might well diminish its credibility. Indeed, reasonable people will undoubtedly disagree about whether such evidence should be considered, and if so, how much weight it should be afforded.

The chapter-length cases involve a more detailed engagement of the evidence. This provides a basis for conclusions beyond the low-threshold question explored in the short-form case chapters. As for the long-form case chapters, I sought to ask a higher threshold question: whether there was *substantial evidence* supporting the state's case. A case with substantial evidence involves much more than the showing necessary to justify investigation or even arrest and indictment. It is more than enough evidence to support carrying the charges forward and withstanding a motion to dismiss the case for lack of sufficient evidence. In the course of making these assessments, I employ the terms *credible evidence, corroborating evidence,* and *solid medical evidence*; all of these assessments are my opinion and my opinion alone. The basis for these opinions is explained in the text, and the foundations of these opinions are documented in full. But this evidence could strike others differently. Indeed, some of the jurors in one of these cases, the McMartin trial, and in the retrial reached conclusions that differed from my view elaborated in this book.

My opinion that there was substantial evidence is *not* the same as drawing a conclusion about guilt. I make no pretense of being a prosecutor, judge, or jury. A child sexual abuse case with *substantial evidence* could leave some reasonable people with sufficient doubt that they would not vote to convict under a standard requiring evidence of guilt "beyond a reasonable doubt." This might even be true in cases where there was medical evidence. Although medical evidence can be diagnostic evidence of sexual abuse, it generally speaks to the injury and not to the perpetrator. This issue was particularly relevant in the McMartin case. For all of these reasons, I have tempered my evaluation to stop short of conclusions about the ultimate outcome in two of the three chapter-length cases. (The third case, Frank Fuster, is more definitive for several reasons as described further in that chapter, including a positive STD test involving the throat of his son, who was under his custody and control.)

There is an important difference between scholarly arguments about cases and legal judgments about the same cases. The former do not carry any legal weight, and the latter merit respect for their authority. Reconsidering evidence as done in this book is purely an academic exercise. And no matter how complicated a case may be, the ultimate legal outcome is generally quite clear. Contrast the clear outcome with the mixed messages contained in the procedural history of the first two chapter-length cases. In both cases, some or all jurors voted for guilt beyond a reasonable doubt, but this was not the ultimate legal disposition. In the first case (McMartin), two consecutive juries were divided on some charges, but all of the charges were eventually dismissed; in the second case (Michaels), the jury voted unanimously to convict on almost all of the charges, but a court of appeals reversed the verdict and all charges were later dismissed. In both of those cases, the legal disposition is clear: in the eyes of the law, the defendants are not guilty. In legal terms, those judgments are final and I respect them. That said, it is also true that having charges dropped after a hung jury or having charges dismissed after an appeals court overturns a conviction is not the same thing as being factually innocent. There are rare cases in the criminal justice system where an appellate court or a trial judge directs a finding that a defendant is *innocent*. Much more commonly, however, reversals on appeal are not based on decisions about the facts, and they often allow the possibility of retrial. And acquittals are open to interpretation. In addition to the possibility of a defendant being innocent, there are many pragmatic reasons for a prosecutor choosing not to retry a case that already ended in conviction once. There is a similar range of possible explanations for a not-guilty verdict, which can mean anything from the jury having a very small but reasonable doubt about guilt to the jury concluding the defendant was factually innocent. The defendant is entitled to the presumption of innocence under the law; academics are entitled to consider the range of possible explanations that could lead to legal determinations of not guilty.

The burden of proof in criminal cases is designed to promote the kind of results expressed in Blackstone's formulation that it is *better that ten guilty persons escape than that one innocent suffer.*[9] This is why the state must prove its case beyond a reasonable doubt. The high burden of proof is related to the fact that one's liberty is at stake. But the same facts that might not dispel *all* reasonable doubts might nevertheless be more than legally sufficient for, say, a school board to dismiss a coach.[10] Similarly, a victim (or the family) might well be able to win a civil verdict against a defendant who was found not guilty in criminal court for the same actions. This is precisely what happened in the O. J. Simpson case. There was a "preponderance of evidence"—a common standard of proof in civil cases—to support the conclusion that Simpson was responsible for civil damages, but the jury in the criminal case decided the case had not been proven beyond a reasonable doubt. Of course, many people disagreed with the jury's not-guilty verdict. And even though we can and should be able to debate about the evidence in the case, we should also respect the fact that, in the eyes of the law, Simpson was found not guilty.

The cases in this book are foundational cases in the public discourse about child sexual abuse and about children as witnesses. They have also become an integral part of academic discourse about the suggestibility of children. Much of the discourse is premised on the assumption that these cases did not involve any credible evidence of sexual abuse. I hope this book contributes to a lively debate about the facts of those cases; but whether it does or not, there is plenty of published work to provide any interested reader with a strong dose of opinions other than those advanced in this book. Putting the conventional wisdom to the test of the actual record is, nevertheless, a matter of considerable importance. The extent to which the findings in this book contradict the witch-hunt narrative matters far beyond the historical record. It also matters for how children are viewed as witnesses.

Chapter Seven considers the legacy of the witch-hunt narrative in light of recent developments. The chapter begins with an examination of recent events that have dominated the framing of child sexual abuse in the media: the cases against the Catholic Church and the recent Penn State case. The chapter also examines the worrisome politics of sex offender punishment that have emerged in the last twenty years. The chapter concludes by considering the legacy of the witch-hunt narrative: how it has undermined the credibility of children as witnesses and is taking aim at the institutions and professionals who respond to child sexual abuse complaints.

I close with the hope that anyone who approaches my work with skepticism—and a certain amount of skepticism is always healthy—will hold the witch-hunt narrative to the same standards of evidence and proof that are applied to the arguments in this book. I could not ask for anything more, and I hope that critics of my work will do nothing less.

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

Figures

2.1 McMartin Case Timeline, Initial Complaint to Case Conclusion. 18
2.2 McMartin Sequence—September Responders as Recorded by MBPD. 29
2.3 McMartin Interview Sequence—September Responders, Complainants and Trial. 39
2.4 CII Interview Sequence—All Interviews of Children at CII Through May 15, 1984. 52
2.5 CII Interview Sequence—Children at Preliminary Hearing. 53
2.6 CII Interview Sequence—Children at Preliminary Hearing, Trial and Retrial. 54
3.1 Plot of Charlier and Downing's Thirty-six Cases. 90
5.1 Kelly Michaels Case Timeline, Initial Complaint to Conviction. 205
5.2 Kelly Michaels Interview Sequence, Children Interviewed in the Initial Investigative Phase. 211
5.3 Kelly Michaels Interview Sequence, All Investigative Interviews. 218
5.4 Kelly Michaels, All Children, All Charges by Legal Status (Carried Forward versus Dropped before Trial). 227
5.5 Kelly Michaels, All Children at Trial, by Status of Charges (Presented to Jury versus Dropped). 235
5.6 Kelly Michaels, Trial Dispositions by Charge, by Child. 241
5.7 Kelly Michaels Interview Sequence, All Children by Number of Interviews. 246
5.8 Kelly Michaels Investigative Interview Sequence, Children Interviewed More than Twice. 248
5.9 Treacy-Child A Excerpt, Reproduced from Ceci and Bruck (1995) with Source Annotations. 256

5.10 Treacy-Child B Excerpt, Reproduced from Ceci and Bruck (1995) with Source Annotations. 259

6.1 Comprehensive Case Timelines, Initial Complaint to Jury Verdict. 284

6.2 Overall Attendance Patterns at Country Walk Babysitting Service. 287

6.3 Country Walk, Braga Interview Sequence, Children Interviewed Two or More Times in August. 303

6.4 Country Walk, Full Braga Interview Sequence. 304

6.5 Country Walk, Braga Interview Sequence, August Detail. 305

6.6 Country Walk, Full Counts, Frank and Ileana, Individual and Group Charges. 310

6.7 Country Walk, Full Counts, Individual and Group, Frank only, by First Braga Interview, and by Disposition. 326

Tables

1.1 Selected Day Care Sexual Abuse Cases from the McMartin Era. 5

3.1 Charlier and Downing's Thirty-six Cases, by Date and Case Features. 91

3.2 Details on Eleven Cases Highlighted by Charlier and Downing. 95

3.3 Details on Names Listed on the Dedication Page of Nathan and Snedeker (1995) in Chronological Order. 116

5.1 Kelly Michaels Interview and Charge Information, by Investigative Phase. 267

II-1 Application of Ceci and Bruck's "Six Elements" to Three Major Cases. 358

II-2 Comparison of Key Features of the McMartin, Kelly Michaels, and Country Walk Case. 361

The Witch-Hunt Narrative

PART I

THE RISE OF THE WITCH-HUNT NARRATIVE

1

Introduction

The Infamous Child Sexual Abuse Cases of the 1980s

Child sexual abuse emerged into public discourse in the United States in the early 1980s. A public opinion poll in 1983 indicated that almost all parents were aware of the problem and had seen a story about it in the media. This is a remarkable change from two decades earlier, when the *physical* abuse of children was just being recognized by physicians and sexual abuse was still largely invisible. The only kind of sex crime that was readily acknowledged before then was "stranger danger," which is actually quite rare but seems much more common because of all the attention it receives. Incest, the most prevalent form of child sexual abuse, was the subject of a groundbreaking television movie, *Something About Amelia,* that drew sixty million viewers in the first week of January 1984. Jeffrey Masson's expose about Freud's suppression of the seduction theory was the February 1984 cover story in *The Atlantic.* Masson argued that archival documents proved that Freud had renounced his views about the prevalence of incest in order to curry the professional approval of those who could not accept his initial position. As that story captivated many intellectuals, Wayne Satz, a television reporter in Los Angeles, started a series of graphic stories about an ongoing child sexual abuse investigation concerning the McMartin Preschool in Manhattan Beach, California. An avalanche of media coverage followed and seven people connected to the school—six women and one man—were eventually arrested in what would soon be described as the largest child molestation case in history. The case would come to define an era of prosecutions involving child sexual abuse. It would give rise to competing narratives and competing advocacy organizations. And it would raise important questions about how children disclose sexual abuse, how they should be interviewed, and the role of children as witnesses in court.

The McMartin Case and Others

The allegations in the McMartin case began with claims against Ray Buckey, a twenty-two-year-old college dropout who worked at the preschool founded by his grandmother, Virginia McMartin. Several months later, other teachers at the school were also named as alleged perpetrators, and the claims about the abuse became stranger and more difficult to believe. There were allegations of children being "swapped" between preschools near McMartin. There were allegations of their being transported to other places, including a farm, where children allegedly saw a horse beaten to death in order to keep them quiet. A Sheriff's Task Force was created specifically to investigate "ritual abuse" claims. The term *ritual abuse* carries many different definitions. The most extreme definitions often include a component related to satanism, along with the idea that organized, even intergenerational, groups of people are involved. That view took hold among some parents, therapists, and investigators in the McMartin case. It is encapsulated in the claim that there were tunnels underneath the preschool where children were sexually abused.

After an extended preliminary hearing, the district attorney dropped charges against five of the seven defendants. The case went forward against Ray Buckey and his mother, Peggy Buckey. The decision pleased almost no one. Two polar views of the case had taken hold by then. Those allied with the organization Believe the Children thought that *more* defendants should have been pursued and that none should have been dismissed. Those allied with the defense thought that all of the charges should have been dropped, including those against Peggy and Ray Buckey. Those deeply divided perspectives reflected larger differences about how children are viewed. Those allied with Believe the Children took the view that children "do not lie" about sexual abuse. Those allied with the defendants seemed to think that nothing any child said could be believed.

The McMartin case became the defining case of the era. It began in 1983 and ended in 1990. A detailed timeline of the case is presented in Chapter Two, which is devoted to the McMartin case. In some respects, there was no other like it in intensity, duration, or scope. On the other hand, the McMartin case was one of a larger group across the country that seemed related. A list of fifteen appears in Table 1.1. A list of thirty-six cases emerged from an investigative series in a Tennessee newspaper in 1988; the first nine found in Table 1.1 are also in that list of thirty-six, which is examined in detail in Chapter Three.

These cases were difficult for law enforcement to investigate and difficult for prosecutors to prosecute because the children were young and the cases were new to the system. When they were filed, the cases were generally seen as evidence that society was taking the protection of children against sexual abuse seriously. But many became the longest trial in the history of their respective

Table 1.1 **Selected Day Care Sexual Abuse Cases from the McMartin Era**

Day Care Center	*Year*	*Location*
McMartin	1983	Manhattan Beach, CA
Country Walk	1984	Miami, FL
Small World	1984	Niles, MI
Fells Acres	1984	Malden, MA
Georgian Hills	1984	Memphis, TN
Rogers Park	1984	Chicago, IL
Manhattan Ranch	1984	Manhattan Beach, CA
Craig's Country	1985	Clarksville, MD
Felix's Day Care	1985	Carson City, NV
East Valley YMCA	1985	El Paso, TX
Glendale Montessori	1987	Stuart, FL
Old Cutler	1989	Miami, FL
Little Rascals	1989	Edenton, NC
Faith Chapel	1989	San Diego, CA
Fran's Day Care	1991	Austin, TX

Source: De Young, "Another Look at Moral Panics," 1998

county or state. As they dragged on, the cases became more confounding. In the McMartin instance, it became impossible to believe that all of the allegations were true, but it also seemed unlikely that all of them were baseless. Many jurors voted to convict Buckey on some counts in each of two separate trials. Although he was acquitted of most charges in the first case, Buckey was retried on charges involving three girls. All of those charges ended in a hung jury, with eight voting for conviction on one charge, and fewer than that on all others; a mistrial was declared. All pending charges were dismissed soon thereafter. A trial originally hailed as "the largest child molestation case ever" fizzled entirely.

The Rise of the Witch-Hunt Narrative

The idea that any of the day-care sexual abuse cases that first arose in the 1980s might actually be wrongful prosecutions was never given serious consideration during the earliest phase of the McMartin case. Though news stories during the first few months of the McMartin case included such requisite words as "alleged," it was clear from the initial coverage that the charges were basically accepted as true by those reporting them. When Satz reported the earliest McMartin stories on KABC television, the news anchors weighed in with editorial statements of sympathy and horror after various stories, indicating an endorsement of allegations that had not even become legal charges yet.[1] Writing about the case in April 1984, *People* magazine called the McMartin preschool "a sexual house of horrors."[2] There were isolated voices to the contrary, but they were few and far between.[3] The mainstream media, as media critic David Shaw put it years later, "didn't light a match within three miles of the D.A.'s feet during the first year or two of the case."[4]

The idea that the McMartin case might be a "witch hunt" was first promoted by the "Friends of McMartin" in the summer of 1985. The group, affiliated with the defense in the McMartin case, placed ads in a local newspaper that compared the case to the Salem Witch Trials. The witch-hunt narrative—a view that cases across the country were akin to the Salem witch trials nearly three hundred years earlier—was forged and disseminated over the next few years by a handful of writers. The *San Francisco Examiner* published a series of stories by A. S. Ross under the banner "A Presumption of Guilt" in September 1986, giving voice to the argument that authorities had created "a climate reminiscent of the 17th century Salem witch trials" in these cases.[5] The series included a map with capsule summaries of thirteen "sensational cases across the country." Six of those cases involved day-care settings: the Georgian Hills case in Memphis, Tennessee; the Country Walk case in Dade County, Florida; the Kelly Michaels case in Maplewood, New Jersey; the Fells Acres Day Care case in Malden, Massachusetts; the Small World Preschool case in Niles Township, Michigan; and the West Point Child Development Center from West Point, New York.[6] Several of these, along with the McMartin case, became the core content of the witch-hunt narrative. This narrative argues that coercive and suggestive interviews, conducted by biased interviewers, combined with hysterical parents, overzealous prosecutors, and an unduly credulous media to generate false accusations in cases that had no actual basis in fact.

The next writer to cast these cases as "witch hunts" was Debbie Nathan, who wrote an article called "The Making of a Modern Witch Hunt" in the *Village Voice* in September 1987. Nathan wrote four more articles in the *Village Voice* in 1988, contributing significantly to the nascent witch-hunt narrative.[7] Another early contributor to this narrative was Mary Fischer, a freelance writer who wrote three critical articles about the McMartin case in 1988. The one for *Los Angeles Magazine,* entitled "Media Flip-Flop: Why, Four Years Later the Press Is Taking a Strikingly Different Approach to the McMartin-Preschool Scandal," made the strongest indictment in print of the McMartin case. *60 Minutes* had cast doubt on the McMartin case two years earlier, but "Flip-Flop" was a much more sustained argument.[8]

There were other early voices in the witch-hunt narrative. Mary Pride employed the phrase "child abuse hysteria" in her 1986 book *The Child Abuse Industry*, an attack on child protective service agencies. Pride criticized a national study of family violence by Gelles, Strauss, and Steinmetz as the work of "point men for a whole corps of 'child advocates' who have found a way to impose their elitist, white, upper-class, post-Christian parenting philosophies on the rest of us under the guise of 'fighting child abuse.'"[9] Paul and Shirley Eberle wrote two books that added to the witch-hunt canon, *The Politics of Child Abuse* (1986) and *Abuse of Innocence* (1993). The first was quite similar to *The Child Abuse Industry*; the second blasted the prosecution in the McMartin case on the basis of the Eberles' observations of the trial. None of these early works became influential in the witch-hunt narrative. Pride's writings are best known in the small but avid home-schooling world, where her arguments against intruding on families through child protective services are taken as fundamental beliefs.[10] The Eberles never became a major voice in the witch-hunt narrative either, possibly because of their own dubious history in publication, which included child pornography.[11] Then again, their book about the McMartin case was brought back into print in 2003 by Prometheus Press and is the only book-length treatment of the case in general.[12] Nathan's early witch-hunt writings were undoubtedly convincing to the audience of the *Village Voice,* and Fischer's work had significant influence in Los Angeles, but there was no national voice for the witch-hunt narrative in those years. It remained largely a marginalized view while these highly contested cases moved forward through the legal system.

The turning point in the evolution of the witch-hunt narrative came with the verdict in the McMartin Preschool case. The defendants were acquitted on most charges, and the jury was hung on the rest. A variety of viewpoints about the case were expressed the next day in the *Los Angeles Times*. There was an op-ed maintaining that the system worked, there was one supporting the children, there was an editorial cartoon asking ominously what kind of shadow the case would cast, and, on the front page, there was the beginning of a four-part series by media critic Shaw asking *Where Was Media Skepticism*?[13] This was the last day that such a range of opinions would be expressed on the topic.

Shaw's series proved to be the pivotal piece, scolding the media and his own newspaper for the fiasco that was the McMartin case. He blasted reporters for bias in favor of the prosecution and for giving short shrift to the defense. He chastised Satz, the television reporter who broke the McMartin story, for sensationalism. He criticized Kee MacFarlane, who interviewed many of the children in the case and was later blamed for "implanting" false memories. And he condemned the "pack journalism" that followed. Indeed, Shaw cast the media as a major culprit in the McMartin case, arguing that the five McMartin defendants against whom charges were later dropped might never have been indicted were it not for Satz's intensive and inflammatory coverage before anyone was even charged in the case. The point was well taken, and Shaw's series won a Pulitzer Prize.

Virtually every account written since then has painted the McMartin case as a "witch hunt." The view was memorialized in the award-winning HBO movie *Indictment.* The same perspective was presented in a chapter about the case in Nathan's 1995 book with defense lawyer Michael Snedeker, *Satan's Silence: Ritual Abuse and the Making of an American Witch-Hunt.*[14] This has become the conventional wisdom about a case that was once seen as the biggest child sexual abuse case on record. Steven Mintz's Harvard University Press book *Huck's Raft: A History of American Childhood* enshrines the witch-hunt narrative as the conventional wisdom about the McMartin case.[15]

The 1990s were filled with works that contributed to the witch-hunt narrative. A few reflected original research, most were derivative. There were at least a half-dozen major works in the first half of the 1990s that made significant contributions to this narrative. Together, these works solidified the witch-hunt narrative by providing so many examples, in such a persuasive fashion, that it seemed difficult to imagine how anyone could ever have taken the charges in these cases seriously. By the mid-1990s it was apparent to most casual media observers that the day-care sex abuse cases of the 1980s were something akin to the McCarthyism of the 1950s. They were, as Nathan had put it in 1987, "a modern American witch hunt."

One of the most important contributions to this body of work was an article by Dorothy Rabinowitz in *Harper's* magazine in May 1990 about the Kelly Michaels case, a day-care case from Maplewood, New Jersey. Rabinowitz was the first writer to craft a convincing story of innocence about someone who had been convicted of child sexual abuse.[16] (The conviction was eventually overturned on appeal.) She also championed the cause of Grant Snowden, a police officer who was convicted of abusing children in a home day-care case in South Miami, and the Amiraults from Malden, Massachusetts, through a series of opinion columns on the editorial page of the *Wall Street Journal.* (Snowden was eventually released from prison after a federal appellate court overturned his conviction and the state attorney declined to retry the case, which was by then fourteen years old.[17] The Amiraults lost all of their efforts to overturn their convictions.) In part on the basis of her commentary about these cases, Rabinowitz won a Pulitzer Prize for Commentary in 2001.

Another important contribution to the witch-hunt narrative was made by the PBS program *Frontline.* Producer Ofra Bikel was the first and most prominent critic of the Little Rascals day-care case in Edenton, North Carolina, which also came to be known by the lead defendant's name, Robert Kelly. The first *Frontline* program about the case was in 1991, before Kelly's conviction. (It was later overturned on appeal.) Bikel followed up with two more programs, giving the Edenton case an extraordinary seven hours of national television coverage. It was enough to leave almost any viewer convinced that the defendants were innocent. Bikel produced several additional hours of programming on related topics in the 1990s, adding to the witch-hunt narrative. Peter Boyer, writing in the *New Yorker* and producing programs for *Frontline*, added two more contributions to this narrative with programs that focused on contested child sexual abuse cases linked to Janet Reno when she was state attorney for Dade County, Florida.[18] Those programs live on through program-specific websites created by *Frontline*.

A third major contribution to the witch-hunt narrative came from Lawrence Wright, who wrote a two-part article in the *New Yorker* in 1994 on the conviction of Paul Ingram from Olympia, Washington. The article chronicled how the prosecution of an incest case devolved into an elaborate investigation of a fictional satanic cult. Wright made a convincing case that Ingram was innocent of "everything but suggestibility."[19] The article was later published in expanded form as a book and then made into a movie. Another book, *Making Monsters*, by Richard Ofshe and Ethan Watters, also gave the case significant treatment from the same perspective. But the *New Yorker* version seemed to captivate people the most. It became an iconic article that impressed many people with the dangers of false convictions for sexual abuse.

In 1995, there were several significant contributions to the witch-hunt narrative that solidified it as the dominant discourse on the day-care sexual abuse cases of the 1980s. The major works were (1) Nathan and Snedeker's *Satan's Silence: Ritual Abuse and the Making of an American Witch Hunt*, (2) Ceci and Bruck's book *Jeopardy in the Courtroom: A Scientific Analysis of Children's Testimony,* and (3) Abby Mann's made-for-TV movie *Indictment*, about the McMartin case.

Debbie Nathan, one of the earliest and most frequent contributors to the witch-hunt narrative, teamed up with defense lawyer Michael Snedeker to write a book that is generally considered to be the most authoritative investigation of the day-care sexual abuse cases of the 1980s. There are full chapters about two significant cases (including McMartin), a detailed chapter about cases across the country, and an impressive amount of original source material covering a wide range of topics related to these cases. The book also contains an ominous and powerful dedication page, to fifty-one named individuals who were in prison when the book was first published, all allegedly falsely convicted on charges that included some kind of ritual abuse element. *Satan's Silence* has become a major source for most others writing about these cases.

The other major book published in 1995 covered some of the same cases but from the perspective of academic psychology. Stephen Ceci and Maggie Bruck's

Jeopardy in the Courtroom wove together recent laboratory experiments on child suggestibility with case studies from criminal court. The cases that were relied on most extensively were all day-care sex-abuse cases in the 1980s. The four cases discussed the most were Edenton (the one introduced by Bikel on *Frontline*), Finje (a case in Dade County, Florida, that ended in an acquittal and was also highlighted by *Frontline*), and two that were in the A. S. Ross story in the *San Francisco Examiner* in 1986: the Country Walk babysitting case from Dade County, Florida, also known as the Fuster case, and the Kelly Michaels day-care case from Maplewood, New Jersey. *Jeopardy in the Courtroom* has become highly influential in the field of psychology, representing the mainstream view of "child suggestibility" and children's testimony that was shaped by these cases.

Ceci and Bruck brought to the criticism of these cases the imprimatur of science that had been lacking in the late 1980s. Various mental health professionals had been available for hire as experts by the defense, but these "experts" did not have scientific research to back up their opinions. They criticized interview questions as leading, and they argued that children were highly suggestible; but their expert opinion seemed more a matter of opinion than expertise since there was not a scientific body of literature on the suggestibility of children. (The concept of child suggestibility is essentially that suggestive or coercive questions can cause a child to say and believe things that are not true.) Ceci and Bruck started filling this void in 1993 with an important review article that made suggestibility claims based on recent research.[20] The research was also the basis for a well-known "friend of the court" brief Ceci and Bruck organized in 1993 in the Kelly Michaels case. Their brief sided with Michaels and argued that a combination of suggestive interviewing and interviewer bias made the children's statements unreliable.

Another major contribution to the witch-hunt narrative was *Indictment*, the made-for-TV movie about the McMartin case. Written by Abby Mann and produced by Oliver Stone, the movie adopted the witch-hunt narrative framework and, in the process, made a strong and explicit claim to authenticity.[21] The film barely raised controversy. The only group inclined to raise objections was the organization Believe the Children, which developed serious credibility problems for having endorsed the view that there were tunnels underneath the school in which children were abused in satanic rituals. Their objection to the movie hardly registered.[22] It is one measure of how mainstream the witch-hunt narrative had become. If the underlying dispute was ever a "war," the side that supported the prosecution in these cases had diminished into an isolated group of parents with little credibility or voice. The war was over. The movie won three Emmys, including Outstanding Made for Television Movie. The *Village Voice* gave the movie high praise for two consecutive weeks. "Believe the Movie," Gary Indiana's review proclaimed in a play on Believe the Children. The following week, Ellen Willis wrote that the power of the movie, "enhanced by its meticulous fidelity to the facts, leaves no doubt that the case against the proprietors of the McMartin Preschool was a product of mass hysteria."[23]

There were many other contributions to the witch-hunt narrative in the 1990s. Sauer and Okerblom wrote a series in the *San Diego Union-Tribune* in 1993 that updated a 1988 series in the Memphis *Commercial Appeal* by Tom Charlier and Shirley Downing. Discussing the same group of cases already mentioned, the authors reported there had been "more than 100" of these cases.[24] There were also a host of columnists who found their own "witch hunt" case to tout. Martin Gardner, who had a column in the *Skeptical Inquirer* and in *Scientific American,* wrote about a case near his home in Hendersonville, North Carolina.[25] Thomas Sowell found one through a dissent in which Judge John T. Noonan adopted the witch-hunt narrative.[26] Trevor Armbrister of *Reader's Digest* did original research into the Bobby Finje case in Dade County.[27] There have been important contributions to the witch-hunt canon since 1995, but they are fewer and farther between. There were some acclaimed critiques of the prosecutions in Wenatchee, Washington, particularly a series by the *Seattle Post-Intelligencer.*[28] More recently, Andrew Jarecki's documentary *Capturing the Friedmans* promoted the view that the Friedman case, from 1988 in Great Neck, New York, was a witch-hunt. And in 2009, Sean Penn produced a documentary called *Witch Hunt* about some of the defendants from the Kern County, California, cases in the mid-1980s.

There were also several online sources promoting the idea of a national wave of "witch hunts" involving child sexual abuse claims. These had a significant effect in spreading the witch-hunt narrative. The most important website in the evolution of the witch-hunt narrative does not exist anymore. It was called the Witch Hunt Information Center and was created in 1993. It carried a prestigious mit.edu address because the webmaster, Jonathan Harris, was teaching in the physics department at the time. Under the main title of the site was the following subtitle or statement of purpose: "Information about the modern version of the witch hunts: ritual (and pseudo ritual) sexual abuse trials and those who have been wrongfully imprisoned by them."[29]

There were various links immediately below the statement, six of them about specific criminal cases. Three were well known from the mainstream media: Kelly Michaels, Frank Fuster, and Robert Kelly. The other three were Harris's contribution. Two were cases from Massachusetts: the Amiraults and Bernard Baran. As Harris later explained it, his interest began with the *Frontline* program about Edenton, which prompted him to look into the Amirault case in nearby Malden, Massachusetts. The third case Harris contributed to the witch-hunt narrative involved defendants Patrick Figured and Sonja Hill from Smithfield, North Carolina. Harris labeled their case "outrageous" multiple times. His website provided a very brief description of the facts and links to two legal documents: the appellate decision and the defense brief. He also posted a list of "dubious convictions" that was prepared by Debbie Nathan.[30]

It is difficult to appreciate the power of an early website like the Witch Hunt Information Center. Given an MIT web address, it had authoritative status; dozens of other sites linked to it. It was an early, enterprising use of the web for advocacy purposes, and it had obvious influence. Harris's work has been credited with interesting Rabinowitz in the Amirault case. The site became an authoritative source for some. For example, it contained a brief description of the Robert Halsey case in western Massachusetts. Frederick Crews, writing in the *New York Review of Books*, later claimed that the justice system had "failed" Halsey, a school bus driver whose case had not been written about anywhere as a victim of the child sex abuse "witch-hunts" except the Witch Hunt Information Center.[31] Similarly, after the site provided a description of a case in North Carolina that had not been written about anywhere else, the defendants, Figured and Hill, appeared on Nathan's list of "dubious convictions."

Harris also set up an electronic discussion list called Witchhunt. The idea of such a list was still quite novel in 1993. The internet was just gaining widespread use and engagement by academics. Moreover, the topic was in the news. In its early days, the membership of this list had a remarkable combination of activists and academics. Among the academics were psychology professor Daniel Schacter at Harvard and English professor Frederick Crews at Berkeley, best known for his writings against Freud. Activists included Peter Freyd, a moving force behind the False Memory Syndrome Foundation, and Carol Hopkins, founder of the San Diego–based Justice Committee. The purpose of the electronic list was stated in the form of a question: Is there a child sex abuse witch-hunt?[32] The tag line was contained in the subject heading of every posting to the list. In its earliest days, Harris posted a few genuinely skeptical questions about the witch-hunt narrative itself. For example, he asked whether anyone knew of any criticisms of Ofra Bikel's recent television program on Edenton. No responses were forthcoming, although criticisms had been broadcast by the local PBS station.[33] An undergraduate researching the "witch hunt" cases asked for evidence that there had been more than one hundred cases, noting that the major lists of such cases added up to about fifty. There was no reply that provided documentation to support the claim.[34] The members of the list were generally strong proponents of the witch-hunt narrative. They knew the answer to the question "Is there a child sex abuse witch hunt?" These "witch hunters," as those on this list soon came to describe themselves, were increasingly activists who used the internet to exchange information and ideas. Jonathan Harris may have done more than anyone else to disseminate the witch-hunt narrative in the mid-1990s and beyond.[35]

Another unlikely website that played an important role in promoting the witch-hunt narrative was created as a hobby by some professionals in Canada who call themselves the Ontario Consultants for Religious Tolerance. Their site, which is mainly about religion, is large and receives a significant amount of internet traffic. It is not obvious why a site on "religious tolerance" would have anything to do with contested claims of child sexual abuse. One might hypothesize that the connection involved allegations of satanic ritual abuse made against members of the Wicca religion and even the Church of Satan. But rather than confine the coverage on the Religious Tolerance site to such cases, a section of the site is devoted to "43 M.V.M.O. court cases with allegations of sexual abuse and physical abuse of multiple children." (M.V.M.O. means multi-victim and multi-offender.) Eighteen of the forty-three cases are from the United States. The best known in the witch-hunt narrative are all there: Kern County, California; the McMartin Preschool; Kelly Michaels; Country Walk; Edenton, North Carolina; and Amirault. The site explains that because "It seemed obvious to us that grave injustices had been done," the author, Bruce Robinson, eschewed the position that motivates the rest of the site: reporting both or all sides of each issue to "let our readers make up their mind."[36] Harvard psychology professor Daniel Schacter relied on this site in his academic book about memory. So did history professor Philip Jenkins in his Yale University Press book *Moral Panic: Changing Conceptions of the Child Molester in Modern America*.[37]

The witch-hunt narrative is now the conventional wisdom about these cases. That view is so widely endorsed and firmly entrenched that there would seem to be nothing left to say about these cases. But a close examination of the witch-hunt canon leads to some unsettling questions: Why is there so little in the way of academic scholarship about these cases? Almost all of the major witch-hunt writings have been in magazines, often without any footnotes to verify or assess the claims made. Why hasn't anyone writing about these cases said anything about how difficult they are to research? There are so many roadblocks and limitations to researching these cases that it would seem incumbent on any serious writer to address the limitations of data sources. Many of these cases seem to have been researched in a manner of days or weeks. Nevertheless, the cases are described in a definitive way that belies their length and complexity, along with the inherent difficulty in researching original trial court documents.

An Overview of the Book

This book is based on the first systematic examination of court records in these cases. The book argues that even though many cases have been held up as classic examples of modern American "witch hunts," none of them truly fits that description. McMartin certainly comes close. But a careful examination of the evidence presented at trial demonstrates why, in my view, a reasonable juror could vote for conviction, as many did in this case. Other cases that have been painted as witch-hunts turn out to involve significant, even overwhelming, evidence of guilt. There are a few cases to the contrary, but even those are more complicated than the witch-hunt narrative allows. In short, there was not, by any reasonable measure, an epidemic of "witch hunts" in the 1980s. There were big mistakes made in how some cases were handled, particularly in the earliest years. But even in those years there were cases such as those of Frank Fuster and Kelly Michaels that, I believe, were based on substantial evidence but later unfairly maligned as having no evidentiary support.

The argument of the book begins with the McMartin case, the subject of Chapter Two. This is the foundational case in the witch-hunt narrative. Whether or not the narrative applies to other cases, it appears to offer the definitive account of the McMartin case, which ended without a single conviction after once being described as the largest child abuse case in history. The only competing account is a narrative about ritual abuse that was created near the beginning of the case, an account so thoroughly discredited that the witch-hunt narrative became all the more credible. Chapter Two argues that there is a third way to see the case—as it evolved, in stages. By this account, the case began with credible evidence of sexual abuse. Significant evidence was developed in the earliest stages of the case, before it was even referred to the agency that ultimately did hundreds of interviews later blamed for ruining the case. The McMartin case became six parts of overreaction to one part reality, sweeping up six women in criminal charges that never should have been brought. But the strongest evidence—the evidence that started the case—has been lost to history. Recognizing this evidence challenges the witch-hunt narrative in several ways. The McMartin case nevertheless stands largely as a monument to injustice to five, possibly six, of the seven defendants. The uncertainty about whether it is five or six reflects the kind of complexity that is not captured by the witch-hunt narrative. Chapter Two portrays that complexity.

The basic claim of the witch-hunt narrative is that there were at least a hundred, maybe several hundred, cases "just like McMartin." The narrative is a claim about a social phenomenon that swept the country during the McMartin era. The claim has been widely accepted as fact. The best evidence consists of studies of a handful of cases, along with lists of additional case names without any elaboration about the facts. Those sources, even taken at face value, do not add up to one hundred cases. More surprisingly, a substantial number of the cases held up as "witch hunts" actually included credible evidence of abuse, or even something stronger than that. But that is only apparent after doing extensive original research on a substantial number of cases. Chapter Three scrutinizes the claim that there were hundreds of these cases across the country.

The witch-hunt narrative began an account of child sexual abuse over the span of eight or nine years, starting in the early 1980s. It is offered as the sole account of sexual abuse in day-care centers then. There is scant recognition that there were true cases of sexual abuse in day-care centers during the time period—and before, for that matter. The witch-hunt narrative is also a story of overreaction; it often employs such terms as "hysteria" and "panic" to describe the social reactions surrounding these cases. Since child sexual abuse came to be identified with this narrative, there was a sense that our social reactions to the problem were largely panic-ridden. But this account overlooks the social forces that existed before child sexual abuse "emerged" into public discourse. Those phenomena, including silence and denial, continued during the McMartin era. This is part of the unacknowledged history of child sexual abuse, which is the subject of Chapter Four.

Chapters Five and Six take up two other foundational cases in the witch-hunt narrative. They provide an arc from the McMartin case. Seen in this light, the Kelly Michaels case in New Jersey is the turning point. It marked a major shift in the press, in academia, and in the courts. It was the most prominent reversal of a conviction from the 1980s. The shift was precipitated in part by dramatic change in the position among academic psychologists about the issue of child suggestibility. It was also precipitated by the rise of the witch-hunt narrative in the popular media that began immediately after the demise of the McMartin case. Chapter Five is a systematic analysis of the case. It argues that there was substantial credible evidence of abuse that has been almost entirely ignored, and that there are significant exaggerations and other errors in the widely accepted view of this case.

Chapter Six takes up the Fuster case from Dade County, Florida, also known as Country Walk, after the name of the babysitting service that fostered the complaints in this case. The Fuster case plays a prominent role in Ceci and Bruck's *Jeopardy in the Courtroom*, second only to the Michaels case. The acclaimed television program *Frontline* applied the witch-hunt lens to the Fuster case in two separate episodes. The case is considered by many to be one of the last convictions still standing from the misguided era of the 1980s. Chapter Six takes the opposite view, arguing that there was extremely strong evidence to support this conviction. Indeed, it takes a special kind of bias to minimize or ignore all of the evidence.

Chapter Seven considers how the rise of the witch-hunt narrative has affected how we view child sexual abuse and children as witnesses. It begins with a consideration of two important developments since the end of the McMartin era, the successful civil and criminal cases against Catholic Church priests over child sexual abuse and the increase in punitive policies aimed at convicted sex offenders. The chapter concludes with an examination of how child-suggestibility claims have evolved since the Michaels case. Although it has become impolitic to ask whether children are being unduly discredited in court, there are several reasons to think they are. The arguments about child suggestibility have evolved into a much more expansive effort to label children as tainted even in cases with strong corroborative evidence. There has also been an effort to discredit disclosures simply because they were "delayed." That worrisome development appears to be part of a larger movement to dismiss the expertise and knowledge of child-abuse professionals.

2

The McMartin Preschool Case (1983–1990)

The McMartin Preschool trial is often described as the longest and most expensive criminal trial in American history. There are no official record books for trial costs or trial length, but the McMartin case was a massive criminal trial by any standard. From initial arrest to final disposition of all charges, the case took more than seven years. There was an eighteen-month-long preliminary hearing, and the trial itself lasted more than two years. The case received enormous media attention and became the subject of several books and a made-for-TV movie.[1] It is featured on the Famous Trials website of law professor Douglas Linder and the Crime Library website originally created by CourtTV. In its early stages, the McMartin Preschool case was described as "the largest child molestation case" on record—with multiple perpetrators and hundreds of likely victims. After the case ended without any convictions, it became widely viewed as a witch-hunt.

The case began in August 1983 when a mother named Judy Johnson contacted her son's pediatrician because she thought that the boy, Matthew,[2] had been anally penetrated by "Mr. Ray" at the McMartin Preschool. The name "Mr. Ray" came from her son; Mrs. Johnson did not know Raymond Buckey. Her son had been attending the preschool since June. The investigation that followed eventually included videotaped interviews with hundreds of children who had attended the preschool in the previous decade. Those interviews were conducted almost entirely by a nonprofit agency called Children's Institute International (CII). See Figure 2.1 for an overall case timeline.

On February 2, 1984, a local television station broadcast a detailed story about allegations that were emerging from the supposedly confidential interviews at CII. Although the investigation had been going on for months, there had been no stories in the media. The story immediately became national news even though nobody had yet been indicted and the Grand Jury had not been convened. The interviewers at CII had apparently come to believe that most of the children they had interviewed between November 1983 and January 1984

Figure 2.1 McMartin Case Timeline, Initial Complaint to Case Conclusion.

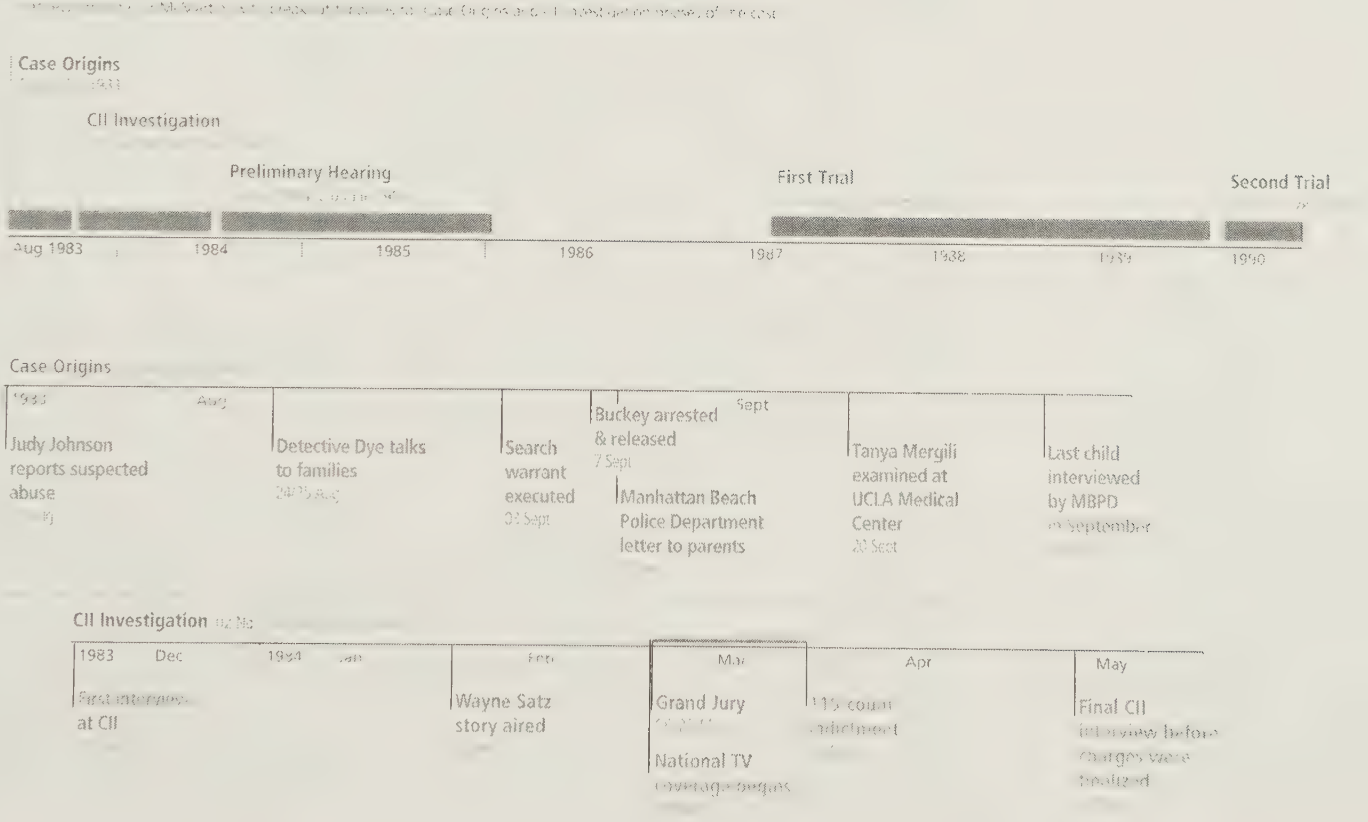
Case Origins
CII Investigation
Preliminary Hearing
First Trial
Second Trial
Aug 1983
1984
1985
1986
1987
1988
1989
1990
Case Origins
1983
Aug
Sept
Judy Johnson reports suspected abuse
Detective Dye talks to families
Search warrant executed
Buckey arrested & released
7 Sept
Manhattan Beach Police Department letter to parents
Tanya Mergili examined at UCLA Medical Center
20 Sept
Last child interviewed by MBPD
in September
CII Investigation
1983
Dec
1984
Jan
Feb
Mar
Apr
May
First interview at CII
Wayne Satz story aired
Grand Jury
National TV coverage began
115 count indictment
Final CII interview before charges were finalized

had been sexually abused by various teachers at the preschool in Manhattan Beach, California. The "exclusive" story on KABC-TV reported that sixty children had already been identified as victims. The CII interviews became the primary basis for the criminal charges in the case. They later became the primary focus of the defense.

The case was taken to the grand jury in March 1984. The grand jury indicted seven defendants for sex crimes against children. The primary defendant was Raymond Buckey, the only male who worked at the preschool. Three other members of his family, who also worked at the preschool, were also indicted: his sister, Peggy Ann Buckey; his mother, Peggy Buckey; and his grandmother, Virginia McMartin. Three other teachers at the preschool were also indicted: Betty Raidor, Babette Spitler, and Mary Ann Jackson. Charges would eventually be dropped against five of the seven defendants, with only Ray and Peggy Buckey going to trial. But in 1985, when the case had seven defendants, it was widely held that there were many more defendants yet to be identified. The county sheriff's McMartin Task Force was formed to investigate the case further. At one point, there were more than fifty additional suspects in the case and allegations that children had been taken to a host of locations beyond the preschool. But no further charges were ever brought.

At its height, there were forty-one actual complainants in the McMartin case. Fourteen of those children later participated in the preliminary hearing.[3] The rest of the complainants dropped out of the case for various reasons: some parents decided to pull their children from the increasingly long and highly publicized ordeal, and the DA made the decision to drop other complainants The preliminary hearing lasted eighteen months—far longer than almost all criminal trials in the country. At the conclusion of the hearing, Municipal Court Judge Aviva Bobb ruled there was sufficient evidence to hold all seven of the defendants over for trial. The evidentiary standard required to reach that judgment was low, and the preliminary hearing exposed serious problems with the prosecution's case.

Ira Reiner, the Los Angeles district attorney who inherited the McMartin case when he defeated Robert Philibosian in June 1984, criticized the way in which the case had been investigated and charged. Shortly after Judge Bobb's decision to hold all seven defendants over for trial, Reiner dropped all charges against five of them, famously describing the evidence against them as "incredibly weak." Only Ray Buckey and his mother, Peggy Buckey, would actually go to trial. The case would involve eleven children.

The trial was preceded by a significant sideshow involving a series of tape-recorded interviews between Glenn Stevens, a disaffected prosecutor who quit his job over the case, and Abby Mann, a screenwriter who was developing movie and book ideas that cast the entire case as a witch-hunt. Stevens was one of the three assistant DAs who were assigned the McMartin case during its most critical stages in the spring of 1984. He left the DA's office in January 1986 after coming to the conclusion that most, but not all, of the defendants in the case were innocent. Stevens entered into an agreement to help Abby and Myra Mann (his wife) write a movie script about the case. Some of the material that he provided to them, including comments made during the tape-recorded conversations, eventually became the focus of a lengthy pre-trial hearing over a motion to dismiss the case. That hearing occasioned a rare window into what Stevens actually said about the evidence in office memoranda written in late 1985 and early 1986. Contrary to how events were later portrayed in the movie *Indictment*, Stevens wrote that he found the evidence against Ray Buckey to be quite strong.[4] But he also concluded that the children's statements about all of the other defendants, including Peggy Buckey, were unconvincing. Charges against five of the female defendants were dropped long before this hearing, but the case went ahead against Ray Buckey and Peggy Buckey. The motion to dismiss charges against them, based on tape-recorded conversations between Stevens and the Manns, was rejected, and Ray Buckey and his mother were then tried for child molestation.

The trial lasted almost two years, and it ended inconclusively. The defendants were found "not guilty" on most charges, while others, almost entirely against Ray, resulted in a hung jury. (The jury also could not reach a verdict on a conspiracy charge against Peggy, but the judge dismissed that charge.) The unresolved charges against Ray involved three girls. Those charges were retried in an abbreviated trial that began in April 1990 and lasted less than three months. It ended with a hung jury on all counts. A mistrial was then declared and all remaining charges against Ray Buckey were dismissed, rendering the case a colossal failure by any measure.

The case was filled with strange twists. The lead defense attorney, Danny Davis, became a witness in the case. The defense filed a motion to disqualify the Los Angeles District Attorney's Office. Both sides in the case were sanctioned over various behaviors. Most dramatically, several key actors in the case died an untimely death: Judy Johnson, mother of the initial child in the case, apparently died from alcoholism, and two others with connections to the case took their own lives.[5] An unsolved 1976 murder case was even linked to the McMartin case at one point.[6]

Several of the McMartin defendants sought unsuccessfully to sue the prosecutors and CII, the organization that interviewed the children in the case, for monetary damages. A case against Los Angeles County was dismissed because of sovereign immunity rules that protect government entities against various kinds of lawsuits.[7] One teacher also tried, without success, to sue CII for defamation. Relying on theories of sovereign immunity, the superior court dismissed the action on its face, and that result was upheld on appeal.[8] Virginia McMartin, Peggy Buckey, and Peggy Ann Buckey prevailed in a postverdict libel suit against Robert Currie, a parent who made accusations against all three women on various television programs that were aired immediately after the verdicts were announced.[9] Note that charges had long since been dropped against two of these women, and the jury did not return any convictions against Peggy Buckey. Nevertheless, reflecting the deep contradictions surrounding the case, the plaintiffs were awarded one dollar in damages.[10]

The Evolution of the Witch-Hunt Narrative

In 1984, when the case emerged in the media, the coverage was decidedly pro-prosecution. The following year, when the preliminary hearing began, serious criticisms of the case started to emerge in the press. Years later, when the trial was finally winding down, journalists paid homage to the complexity and the confusion of the case. Writing for the *American Lawyer* magazine, Robert Safian authored "McMartin Madness: Ten Days in the Life of the Longest, Most Gruesomely Difficult Criminal Trial Ever." He concluded:

> There are too many inconsistencies in the prosecution's case not to provoke lingering doubts. Yet there is too much conviction and horror in the children's stories of abuse not to look askance at Ray Buckey.[11]

Similarly, after months of observation, Cynthia Gorney wrote a two-part story for the *Washington Post* entitled "The Terrible Puzzle of McMartin Preschool." Spinning a number of alternative views of the case, each with its own plausibility, she suggested:

> . . . that some children were molested in Manhattan Beach . . . and that the disclosing and spreading of those children's reports took place in an atmosphere of such uncontainable and self-feeding alarm that both children and adults lost the capacity to sort the imagined from the real. . . .[12]

That sense of complexity was reflected on the editorial page of the *Los Angeles Times* the day after the original verdicts. There were op-eds with several takes on the outcome of the case. The most popular view was that the DA's office had blown the case. Another view was, "We all wanted the truth but must settle for justice." That point of view was from a legal commentator who thought "the system" worked well.[13] Finally, psychologist and writer Carol Tavris weighed in with an editorial about child suggestibility and the credibility of children as witnesses. She argued, "Our best hope in sorting out these conflicting claims [about children as witnesses] is to try to set aside our prejudices and assess the research evidence for each side." She wrote favorably about research by psychology professor Gail Goodman supporting the view that "very young children do not volunteer information that they feel is embarrassing or shameful" and that they "do not agree with leading questions that are wrong." She ended the column by framing the challenge for the future as being sure that "legitimate concerns about falsely accusing an innocent adult do not cause us to falsely disbelieve an innocent child."

But the sense of complexity and confusion that permeated the end of the case did not linger, even with the inconclusive end to the first and second trials. The day after the verdicts were announced, the *Los Angeles Times* media critic, David Shaw, published the first part in a blistering critique that, ironically, won the *Times* a Pulitzer Prize for criticizing its own coverage. "Where Was Skepticism in the Media?" cried out the first headline. The next day it was "Reporter's Early Exclusives Triggered a Media Frenzy." By the end of the four-part series, Shaw had praised the writers who first adopted the witch-hunt narrative and skewered those who did not.

Positions hardened soon thereafter. "The only evidence against the Buckeys was the children's statements" and they were discredited, Douglas Besharov explained in the *National Review* a month later in February 1990.[14] A few months after that, Dorothy Rabinowitz published an article in *Harper's* about the Kelly Michaels case. She referred to the McMartin case as a modern-day Salem. In June 1990, Debbie Nathan sketched the larger witch-hunt narrative in the *Village Voice* with "What McMartin Started: The Ritual Abuse Hoax."[15]

Nathan's argument gained wider acceptance and eventually became the conventional wisdom. It became as unpopular in the 1990s to be associated with the children's side of the McMartin case as it was to be associated with the defendants in the mid-1980s. Tavris has, in her own words, been "atoning" for her column written the day after the McMartin verdicts expressing concern that children's testimony not be unduly discredited as a result of the case.[16] Writing in *Redbook* in 1992, she warned of the new "witch hunts" against child sexual abuse. "Beware the Incest Survivor Machine," she intoned the following year in the *New York Times Book Review*, arguing that a nefarious network of therapists profited from the child sexual-abuse "industry."[17] In 1997, she explained in an interview how guilty she felt about her 1990 article endorsing psychology professor Gail Goodman's academic research.[18]

Two prominent academic psychologists, Stephen Ceci from Cornell University and Maggie Bruck from Johns Hopkins University, reached very different conclusions from Goodman's about children as witnesses. Goodman's message was essentially positive: children are better witnesses than many people think. Ceci and Bruck's message was much more cautionary: children are highly suggestible. They published an important article about children's testimony in 1993 and a major book in 1995, called *Jeopardy in the Courtroom: A Scientific Analysis of Children's Testimony*. In both of these works, they adopted the view that the McMartin case was a modern-day witch-hunt and drew specific analogies to the Salem Witch Trials.[19] Nathan and Snedeker's book *Satan's Silence* was also published in 1995. It has a chapter on the McMartin case that fits the book's subtitle: *The Making of a Modern American Witch-Hunt*. The third major treatment of the McMartin case in 1995 undoubtedly reached the largest audience—that is, the HBO movie *Indictment*, written by Abby Mann and produced by Oliver Stone. The movie won an Emmy, and reviewers such as Ellen Willis of the *Village Voice* argued that the movie's power "is enhanced by its meticulous fidelity to the facts."[20] "It's rare these days to find, on TV or the larger screen, a work in which fury is a clarifying force," wrote Rabinowitz, who credited the movie with being "a factual account, taken from the record."[21] The complexity and uncertainty that were so prevalent when the case ended were entirely gone. The movie "leaves no doubt," Rabinowitz noted with approval, that the case had *no factual basis*. In sum, in the years since the McMartin case ended the popular narrative that has risen to prominence is that the case lacked *any* factual basis. Instead, it has become the foundational case in the witch-hunt narrative. This narrative is applied so completely to the McMartin case that it may be difficult to imagine there is anything left to say about it. The McMartin case has, quite simply, come to be seen as baseless. Under this view, all of the child molestation charges were "trumped up"; they were a "hoax."

Although the view is widely promoted and accepted, it is contradicted by court transcripts and various other records in the case. Extensive original research reveals that there was considerable evidence against Ray Buckey, and there was also credible evidence to suggest his mother was aware of the situation and helped cover it up. This chapter elaborates the evidence in detail. Five arguments are advanced and documented. First, the evidence involving Judy Johnson's son (the first child in the case) is more compelling than typically portrayed. Second, the early investigation—before CII started interviewing children—uncovered significant evidence of abuse. Third, there were compelling circumstances involving two families who initially supported the defendants and then switched sides. Fourth, the medical evidence, although mixed in quality, was stronger than often portrayed. Fifth, there was considerable evidence that counters the witch-hunt narrative about Ray Buckey's character and about whether he had the *opportunity* to molest children at the preschool. Taken together, these arguments help explain why seven jurors said in a post-verdict press conference that they thought children in the case *had* been abused.

Case Origins: Judy Johnson and Her Son

The McMartin case began in August 1983, when Judy Johnson first suspected that her son, Matthew, had been sodomized at the McMartin Preschool. The evidence supporting her suspicion is largely medical since Matthew was three years old and not very communicative. He apparently told his mother, on August 11, 1983, something about "Mr. Ray" playing with a thermometer. This was in a conversation that began after Matthew's mother noticed some blood on his anus. The boy was examined in short succession by three doctors, first a family physician, then an emergency room doctor, and ultimately a pediatrician with child-abuse experience.

This evidence is ignored in the witch-hunt narrative, which places the focus entirely on Matthew's mother, Judy. Under this view, she was delusional when she made the original complaint about her son, so there is no reason to consider what the doctors who examined the boy actually observed. This story seems plausible because she died of alcohol-related causes in December 1986, and before her demise she lived in a paranoid, reclusive manner. But whether those ills came about during the case or actually predated the original complaint is an important question that has not received serious consideration in the witch-hunt narrative. What is taken as an article of faith—that Judy Johnson was delusional from day one—is flatly contradicted by all of the available evidence.

The evidence concerning Matthew Johnson consisted of more than statements conveyed by his mother. There was medical evidence from several doctors, though virtually all of the medical evidence in the McMartin case would later be dismissed as baseless in the witch-hunt narrative. But that stark position was not even endorsed by Dr. David Paul, the expert the *defense* brought from London to counter the medical evidence in the case.

The McMartin case began with a mother's concern about something very tangible: her son's bleeding anus. This is why Judy Johnson contacted Dr. Richard Segal, Matthew's pediatrician at Kaiser Permanente on August 12, 1983. She reported that Matthew had complained of "rectal discomfort" several times that summer and that she had observed his anus to have "significant redness and occasionally some bleeding." Mrs. Johnson had discussed the matter with Dr. Segal earlier in the summer. That is particularly notable since she would later be characterized as so intent on finding sexual abuse that she had been looking for signs of it all summer.[22] In fact, she did not raise the idea in her discussions with Dr. Segal earlier in the summer. Instead, they discussed the possibility of pinworms.[23] It was only after observing blood again, and then being told by her son something about "having his temperature taken" at school, that Johnson expressed strong suspicions about sexual abuse. Dr. Segal suggested she bring her son to the emergency room.

Dr. Scott McGeary examined Matthew that evening and observed a "band of redness" that "encircled his anus." He described the area as "red and roughened" and concluded that there "appeared to be some friction like trauma to the rectal area."[24] As he later testified, Dr. McGeary "was concerned that there was possible sodomization or at least passage of some object into the child's rectum."[25] The doctor was not a child abuse specialist, so he arranged to have Matthew seen at UCLA. Debbie Nathan, one of the most prominent proponents of the witch-hunt narrative, has suggested that Judy Johnson was unreasonable for taking her son to a special clinic "instead of abandoning her complaint."[26] But Dr. McGeary did not advise abandoning the complaint; quite the contrary, he expressed concern about sexual abuse and referred Johnson to a specialist.

Matthew Johnson was examined at the Marion Davies Children's Clinic at UCLA on August 17. Nathan and Snedeker dismissed the findings from this exam with the claim that "the young intern who examined [the boy] was completely inexperienced at doing sexual-abuse exams."[27] But the "young intern"—actually a resident pediatrician, Dr. Linda Gordon—did not conduct the examination alone. She was joined by the attending physician, Dr. Jean H. Simpson-Savary, a pediatrician who graduated from one of the top medical schools in the country (Johns Hopkins) and had almost five years of experience in pediatrics. Dr. Simpson-Savary described discolored bruising patterns and concluded that the injury was recent, "within the last week, but not recent in sense of hours."[28] She notified the Manhattan Beach Police Department (MBPD) that "the victim's anus was forcibly entered several days ago."[29] Even the doctor hired by the defense years later to challenge the medical evidence in the case agreed that these were "fairly significant findings" of sexual abuse.[30] The significance of those findings might be diminished with more recent knowledge about "normal" anal and genital exams; it depends on precisely what Dr. Simpson saw.[31] Unfortunately, there are no photographs to provide for an independent examination. Nevertheless, the constellation of evidence described on August 12, 1983, would still support a report for suspected child abuse today.

Those facts have not prevented Judy Johnson from becoming the primary scapegoat for the entire McMartin case. Her name is in the title of Nathan and Snedeker's twenty-five-page chapter about the case—the most detailed and documented critique of the case ever published. They claim Judy Johnson had "obvious" mental problems and that her "delusionary statements" launched the case.[32] Abby Mann, who wrote the screenplay for *Indictment*, framed his view of the case around Johnson's "suspect personality."[33] Ellen Willis asserted that the case was "launched by a schizophrenic alcoholic's complaint."[34] But Judy Johnson was never as important to the case as has been claimed; moreover, the chronology of her mental health issues has been inaccurately represented.

Johnson is an obvious candidate for scapegoat given the cause of her death in December 1986 and the nature of her behavior before that. In the summer of 1986, she thought the whole world was out to get her. The McMartin case had been a national news story for well over two years by that point. Johnson asked the DA's office to place her in protective custody because of threats she claimed were verified on her telephone-answering machine. The DA investigator who looked into the matter noted simply, "I made determination her fears were groundless."[35] So there is little question that Johnson's grip on reality was weak in 1986. However, this does not answer the question of whether her mental instability came *after* the McMartin case emerged and evolved or whether it actually *fashioned* the case. That question became the focus of media stories, particularly after her death.

Reporting on the life and death of Judy Johnson in a long story titled "Driven to Her Death," the *Los Angeles Herald-Examiner* indicated that in the first half of 1983 she "was strong and healthy" and that she "jogged constantly, ate health food and reportedly was so averse to alcohol that she brought sparkling apple juice to neighborhood parties. . . ."[36] There is no evidence in the record of the McMartin case that Johnson was mentally unstable when she took her son to the emergency room on August 12, 1983. Indeed, the notes from when prosecutor Stevens first met Judy Johnson confirm she did not present the obvious mental instability that later consumed her. "I found her pleasant and very lucid," Stevens noted at the time.[37] Stevens eventually criticized most aspects of the state's case but *not* Johnson's mental health in August 1983 or her son's medically confirmed injuries.

After leaving the DA's office in January 1986 over doubts about the guilt of most of the defendants, Stevens told screenwriter Abby Mann that the McMartin case pushed Johnson over the edge; the case did not originate in the mind of a mentally ill woman. The transcripts of their conversations over several months demonstrate that the Manns had formed a view of Johnson that went against what Stevens told them on the subject. In one conversation, Stevens pushed Mann to explain why he kept coming back to Johnson. Mann's answer: because she had "a suspect personality." Stevens did not agree; nor did he waiver, in these conversations, in the view that nothing in Johnson's life tainted the origins of the case in August 1983. Stevens even told Mann that Johnson's performance at the preliminary hearing in July 1984 was "Great. She was terrific."[38] Stevens's observation runs so contrary to the witch-hunt narrative that the Manns pointedly asked him at a later date whether there was "anything unusual in her testimony." "No. She did a very good job," Stevens reaffirmed.[39] But that is not how Johnson was portrayed in the movie, or in the witch-hunt narrative at large, where she is routinely described as mentally ill from the start.

There is no doubt that Johnson started drinking after the McMartin case began. She became reclusive and paranoid. There is also no doubt that a case like McMartin could potentially break a person. Paul Bynum, a former MBPD officer who was working as an investigator for the defense in the McMartin case, committed suicide the day before he was supposed to testify in the McMartin case. There were reports of secondary trauma among hardened reporters who covered the case. "The case poisoned anyone who had any contact with it," Judge Pounders, who presided over the first trial, said at one point.[40] Peggy Buckey became paranoid, apparently as a result of the case, and was eventually afraid to leave her house. But none of those effects should be confused with the actual origins of the case. The claim that the McMartin case was started by the delusions of a crazy woman is simply not in line with the facts. Instead, several doctors agreed that Matthew Johnson had apparently been sodomized—recently.

The Early Investigation (Pre-CII)

Judy Johnson's report and the related medical evidence prompted the Manhattan Beach Police Department to take the matter seriously. Ray Buckey was arrested on September 7, 1983. He was released the same day, however, because Matthew had not made any direct statements to the police and he was clearly too young to testify. The medical evidence alone was insufficient to sustain charges. It is not clear whether the police knew this when they arrested Ray Buckey; this was one of the first sexual abuse cases the department had ever faced involving preschool children. Perhaps they arrested Buckey in the hopes he might make an incriminating statement, or maybe they just did not realize that prosecutors could not carry charges forward on the basis of the medical evidence alone.

Whatever the explanation, the police chief, apparently frustrated by the inability to move forward, sent a letter the next day to all of the parents whose names appeared in enrollment records from the preschool. That letter was to become the subject of intense criticism because it named Ray Buckey, described some of the allegations conveyed by Johnson, and requested that parents question their children.[41] The letter was not the first indication to the community that police were investigating the matter, however; a number of families were contacted in late August. Although those families were apparently told not to discuss the matter with anyone, it was later established that Virginia McMartin learned about the investigation before her grandson was arrested.[42]

Precisely how the investigation played out in the immediate aftermath of the now-infamous letter is critical to assessing the evidence in the McMartin case. Most accounts of the McMartin case collapse the time period between when the letter was sent and the first media coverage five months later.[43] There is no question that the dynamics of the investigation changed dramatically with the advent of intense media coverage in February 1984. What is surprising is how little attention has been paid to developments immediately following the September 1983 letter.

The witch-hunt narrative maintains that the letter resulted in no significant disclosures. "Not one child disclosed anything suspicious," according to one account.[44] Mary Fischer put it more starkly in a magazine article still heralded for "debunking" the McMartin case: "What's not commonly known is that with the exception of one child, all of the former preschoolers denied being molested at the school until after they were interviewed at CII."[45] This claim has grown into the widely repeated assertion that the entire McMartin case was "created" months later at CII, where children were first interviewed beginning on November 1.[46] But the initial responses to the September letter were much more significant than is ever acknowledged in the witch-hunt narrative.

A five-page log maintained by the MBPD recorded the telephone responses they received to the letter with short notations of the date and substance of the response. At least eight families are listed as furnishing "positive" responses, usually with an annotation referring to the relevant section of the California Penal Code for child molestation (i.e., "288 PC victim," or "positive 288."). The most specific notation says: "288 victim, touched penis." The remaining "positive" responses are otherwise unelaborated on the log. Several other responses are listed as "possible." A few of those contain a phrase or two of elaboration. The most detailed entry states: "strange behavior—pulls down pants and fondles self. Kisses father in a way not like three-year-old." A few other notations, not labeled as "possible" or "positive," were nevertheless suspicious enough to warrant further investigation. The entry for the Delco family, for example, states, "older daughter says [Ray Buckey] wore no underwear, saw genitals."[47]

There are police reports and, in some cases, other documents for almost all of the families who were recorded as "positive" or "possible" responders in September (see Figure 2.2). Only four of those children became complainants in the criminal case. A fifth September responder was included on the prosecution's witness list in February, but she did not become a complainant in the case. A few other children, who were first identified in September 1983, were listed as likely complainants, when an investigator for the Los Angeles District Attorney's Office started considering specific charges. Those children did not became part of the formal case, but what they said *in September and October 1983* merits attention because any disclosures made during that time directly contradict the notion of the case being "created" at CII months later. Statements made during this time cannot be attributed to media frenzy either, since it would be months

Figure 2.2 McMartin Sequence—September Responders as Recorded by MBPD.

Positive and possible responses as designated by MBPD log and information forms

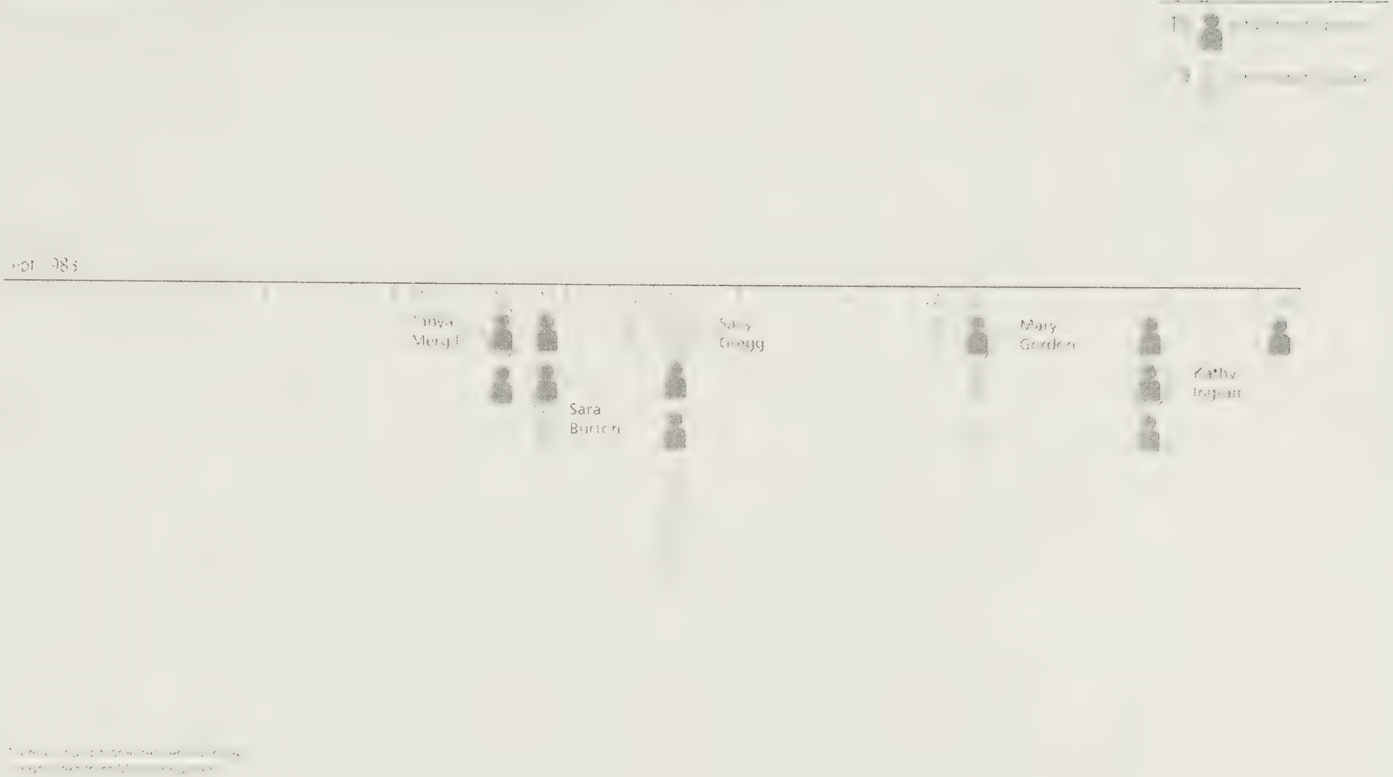

until there was *any* media coverage. Here is a synopsis of the five children who provided significant responses to the MBPD in September 1983 and later became part of the criminal case.

Tanya Mergili

The first family to provide a "positive" report called the MBPD on Friday, September 9. The MBPD was short-staffed that day because it was a state holiday, California's Admission Day. The Mergilis were told to bring their daughter Tanya in for questioning on Monday, September 12.

The Mergilis were unaware of the investigation that a handful of families learned about in August. Mrs. Mergili learned about the MBPD letter on Friday, September 9, because her daughter was playing with another child from McMartin whose mother received the letter that day. (The Mergilis received their letter the next day.) Mrs. Mergili asked her daughter about the matter, and police notes indicate that Tanya "willingly responded with details of her abuse." The police report indicates that Tanya "mentioned being tied up by Ray Buckey, shut in closets, and playing something called the horsey game."[48] The report also contains the mother's statement that "her daughter related that Raymond Buckey had tickled her in the area of her vagina beneath her clothing."[49]

Tanya Mergili was scheduled to begin a new term at the McMartin Preschool on Monday, September 12. Instead, her parents brought her to the Manhattan Beach Police Department that day. Not surprisingly, the Mergilis decided their daughter would not return to the preschool.[50] Tanya was evaluated at UCLA Medical Center a week later by Dr. Mary Wilson. The interview was videotaped, and the tape received considerable attention in the pre-trial phase of the McMartin case because Tanya was the first child to support the claims made by Matthew Johnson. There are two separate transcriptions of the videotape, one stipulated to by both parties and one prepared specifically by the defense.[51] These documents demonstrate the severe limitations of capturing interactions with a young child in a written transcript. By extension, they also demonstrate the difficulties in interviewing children of this age.

The thirty-page transcript that was agreed to by both sides contains a considerable amount of preliminaries—playing and talking about nothing in particular for the child to become more comfortable with the setting and the interviewer. The first significant passage for the criminal case appears on page 15. That passage, which consumes about half a page, appears to represent several minutes of interaction between Dr. Wilson and the child. But the transcribed statements are all attributed to Dr. Wilson. It is clear from the doctor's words that Tanya was providing relevant demonstrative responses, but those actions are not described in the transcription.[52]

> So why don't you show—why don't you show me how—how—how Ray played with you, okay, Tanya, because I really need to talk to you about that.
>
> Is that what he would do?
>
> Huh?
>
> Show me again.
>
> Well, let's pull the dress up so I can really see.
>
> What would he do?[53]

The paragraph breaks contained in this passage suggest there were various pauses. It is not clear, however, what the child was actually demonstrating during this time. Two handwritten annotations, likely made later by Dr. Wilson, add important details that could be verified only by examining the videotape.

> So why don't you show—why don't you show me how—how—how Ray played with you, okay, Tanya, because I really need to talk to you about that. [Handwritten note: Tanya demonstrating on dolls—hand under dress and rubbing.]
>
> Is that what he would do?
>
> Huh?
>
> Show me again.
>
> Well, let's pull the dress up so I can really see.
>
> What would he do? [Handwritten note: Tanya's hand rubbing.][54]

A similar interaction occurs a few pages later. The transcription suggests that the child offered further evidence of sexual abuse, although again the specifics remain unclear.

> Why don't you show me with the other doll what he would do.
>
> Can you show me with the other doll?
>
> I can help you.
>
> Oh, that's what he would do. Okay.
>
> And would he do anything else?
>
> He'd go like that, huh?[55]

The handwritten notations on this document indicate that the videotape contains important behavioral evidence. In the first sentence above, the notation "hand in pants" was placed above the phrase "what he would do." Moreover, the notation " + rub" was written below the phrase "anything else" in the next to last sentence in the passage above.

There is no doubt how Dr. Wilson at UCLA viewed the substance of the examination. According to the medical report that she wrote: "Tanya described Ray touching penis to rectum, vagina, mouth. Also masturbating himself and touching her."[56] Since the Mergilis were the earliest to respond to the police department, Tanya was clearly one of the most important children in the investigation.

The interviews at CII did not begin, however, until almost six weeks *after* Tanya's interview with Dr. Wilson. By that time, Mrs. Mergili described recent and extremely sexualized behavior by her daughter. One of the behaviors described by one of the parents: "Bending over, spreading her cheeks and saying 'is my hole cute?' Ray-Ray used to like me to do this."[57]

Sara Barton

The second important child from the earliest stages of the case is Sara Barton, who attended the McMartin Preschool from September 1981 until August 11, 1983. She was in Ray Buckey's class in 1982 and she occasionally stayed in the afternoon through 1983, when he was often the only adult at the facility. Sara was recorded as a "positive" response by the MBPD on September 13, 1983. Her parents responded to the MBPD letter by saying their daughter told them she "had seen Ray Buckey's penis and touched same." Mrs. Barton, who would later be criticized as having a "fanatical belief that enveloped their children and demanded their participation,"[58] informed the police that she felt a formal interview was not warranted. Even though she was positive there had been some kind of sexual contact between Ray Buckey and her daughter, she was "concerned about stressing her daughter."

Gloria Barton testified to the grand jury in March 1984 that her daughter had vaginitis in the spring of 1983.[59] She applied over-the-counter medications on Sara repeatedly during that time; they gave relief but then the redness and discomfort would return. Barton testified that the problem continued until Sara started at her new kindergarten in September 1983. During the spring of 1983, Sara also asked her parents to apply medication to her anus. She was apparently unresponsive when asked why she would need medicine on her anus. Her mother testified that Sara replied in the negative when asked if she was constipated. Her parents acceded to applying ointment every time and otherwise let these incidents pass.

In October 1983, Gloria Barton wrote in her diary that she had casually raised questions about Ray Buckey or the McMartin Preschool a few times and that Sara "did not want to talk about him at all."[60] Her mother's conclusion: "We felt we should respect her feelings and dropped the matter." This is apparently how the situation remained until a parent's meeting in mid-November

1983. Leaving the discussion of developments after that date until later, we see clearly that the earliest responses from this child provided relevant evidence for the investigation. The significance of the evidence is unclear, and her parents, though concerned, certainly did not overreact at the time. All of those facts are omitted entirely from Nathan and Snedeker's detailed critique of this child, which relies entirely on later events to discredit the child. Gloria Barton became an outspoken, activist parent who saw a widespread conspiracy behind the McMartin case. Her daughter was listed on some early documents in the case, but she was never one of the named complainants in the case.

Sally Gregg

A third important child who was identified early in the investigation was Sally Gregg, who attended the McMartin Preschool from September 1981 until June 1983. She stayed from 9:00 a.m. to 3:00 p.m. "many days," and Ray Buckey was regularly the only adult in charge of children who stayed after noon. Sally was recorded as a "possible" victim on the MBPD original log on the case. Her parents wrote on the information form they mailed back to the police:

> We are leaving town on 9/14/83 + will not return till 9/22/83. In a preliminary discussion with Sally, she said 'Ray Ray does not wear underpants.' Sally has been overly interested in touching my genital area. This could well be a result of this case. We would like more time to talk to Sally without a heavy cross-examination.[61]

There is no indication in surviving records that the Greggs brought their child into the police station in the weeks after returning to Manhattan Beach. The MBPD eventually wrote a police report about Sally on January 24, 1984. The earliest date detailed in the report is November 28, when Kathy Wilcox, whose child had attended the McMartin Preschool, reported to the police that her daughter said "that Ray would take girls into the bathroom at school and put his finger in their vagina."[62] Karen Wilcox apparently mentioned Sally Gregg, and it appears that the interaction prompted the Greggs to contact CII and schedule an interview.

Sally Gregg was interviewed at CII on January 16, 1984; she was interviewed again at the MBPD on January 24. She became the third of the September responders to become a formal complainant in the criminal trial. She was also one of only nine children who eventually testified at the trial in this case, and one of only three children who participated in the retrial.

Mary Gordon

The fourth response from September 1983 that involved a child who later became a complainant in the criminal case was from the Gordon family, whose five-year-old daughter Mary had attended the McMartin Preschool from 1981 through May 1983. The family's attorney, Robert Hamrick, contacted the MBPD on September 23. He reported that, in response to the MBPD letter, Mrs. Gordon had asked her daughter whether anything bad had happened to her at school. As he reported further, Mary told her mother that Ray Buckey "put his finger down her throat and asked her to pretend that her mouth was a house" and that he put his fingers inside her vagina.[63] Mrs. Gordon later informed MBPD Detective Dye that "upon learning of the finger penetration, she [the mother] didn't pursue further questioning." Mrs. Gregg indicated she "was desirous of avoiding duplication in interviews" and of the emotional impact on the child.[64] The family then went on a trip to England until mid-October.

Mary was interviewed at the MBPD on October 19, a few days after they returned. Her mother advised the reporting officer that Mary was afraid when she came to the station because "she thought she was going to jail." Included in the police report, however, are several incriminating statements Mary apparently made about Ray Buckey: "Mary says the suspect has not fondled her genitals but put his finger inside her pussy." "Mary told [Reporting Officer] further that the suspect called her a bad name, i.e. fucking ass and then spit down her throat."[65] (Mary had been treated with antibiotics in the spring of 1983 for a throat infection.) But the police report also captured the equivocal nature of her statements:

> The victim was very anxious when asked if she had told her mother that Ray had put his fingers here, while pointing to her vaginal area. Mary responded yes, then no, and yes again. Mary then stated that Ray smelled her pussy with his finger and that he put his head down there, referring to her genital area.[66]

Mary was interviewed at CII on November 16; it was one of the earliest of the interviews. In fact, it was *the* earliest CII interview with a child who became a complainant in the case. There are two accounts of the interview, one prepared by the prosecution and one by the defense. In an account by the defense, the tape is summarized as follows: "This child is wild; she runs around the room, screams and yells her answers, hits Kee [MacFarlane, of CII] and is the most vulgar child I've ever seen."[67] Unlike the defense critique of many other interviews, there is no claim that the child was badgered or coerced, just that she was "vulgar." Why the compelling statements made by Mary Gordon would not appropriately raise concerns about possible abuse is never explained.

Sixteen minutes into the interview, while the child is still drawing, she says, without any prompting, "We're going to talk about him, aren't we?" The transcription of the interview indicates that this is what followed:

I : Yea, why not? Want to draw a picture of Ray Ray or what did you say you want to draw a picture of his dick?
C: This is what his dick is.
I : That's what his dick looks like?
C: No. It's a very long one. Know what it has? See that's him and there is his long dick.
I : Did anything come out of his long dick?
C: Yea.
I : What comes out?
C: Poo.[68]

This exchange has been read in two entirely different ways. Under one view, the child's most spontaneous and detailed answer ("It's a very long one") demonstrates the girl had seen Ray Buckey's penis. Under a competing view, the "poo" answer casts doubt on the credibility of the statements that came before it. When the interviewer pursued the issue, every question about "poo" resulted in an answer about "his butt." A few minutes later, however, in a conversation about pubic hair on some dolls in the interview room, Mary *denied* that she had seen Ray Buckey naked.

I : Did Ray Ray have fur on his dick?
C: No, I haven't ever seen it.
I : You haven't seen it? I thought you said you saw it?
C: No, I haven't yet but I can draw it.
I : How can you draw it if you haven't seen it?
C: I could just draw it.[69]

Later in the interview, when MacFarlane was using puppets, the transcript becomes harder to follow because the puppets are role-playing. There is also AM radio interference with the audio portion of the videotape at various times. Regardless, this exchange seems to support the idea that Ray Buckey did something inappropriate.

I : What happened? Did anybody ever touch you?
C: No response.
I : You can tell me. [Radio starts up in background]
C: Ray Ray being mean to me.

I: Show us. Has Ray Ray ever taken his clothes off at school?
C: Yes he has and you know what, they're been bad to me (whispers).[70]

This final response is followed by a series of three statements, all screamed into the microphone: "We had been bad ladies and gentlemen!" "He has been mean to this little girl!" "He touched her in the pussy!" Soon thereafter, the child makes the puzzling statement, "I don't want to play with these shiny guys anymore." While it is unclear why she said "shiny guys," it is quite clear that she wants the questioning ended. "You're almost done," MacFarlane says—but the interview was only about half over. Mary becomes more distracted and uncooperative. "Sorry I have to leave now," she announced as the interviewer tried in vain to figure out what Mary meant by a statement about "a Chinese hair up her butt." One more interaction further captures the ambiguity of this session:

I: Anyone ever put a temperature in there?
C: Tell her to be quiet.
I: Why? You can tell me.
C: (Leaves.)
I: Your mom told you had temperature taken at school. Show me.
C: No way.
I: Someone ever take your temperature like that?
C: No.
I: Didn't you tell your mom that?
C: Someone is on the phone.[71]

The toy telephone was one of many distractions available if and when a child wanted to change the subject. Mary Gordon did this frequently during her interview; she was extremely avoidant at times, and her sporadic moments of screaming are unsettling. In the exchange below, which came near the end of the session, it appears as if she answered "no" automatically and then suddenly remembered an actual game. Her subsequent response about being a cowgirl is delivered in a much different tone from the earlier responses. She was enthusiastic and seems to be recalling the game.

I: I was wondering if anybody ever played games with these?
C: What are they, shoe laces?
I: No, using ropes.
C: No, yea.
I: Really?
C: I'll be this cow-girl and Ray [was an Indian and he] caught me and I was in jail.

I: Tied up?

C: No. I was in jail. Watch me jump this time (runs and jumps in bean bag chair). . . .[72]

It is not indicated, however, whether the game was in any way sexualized. Indeed, on the basis of the responses in this interview, there is no reason to conclude that it was.

This interview can be seen, alternatively, as incriminating and ambiguous. The most spontaneous and detailed answers were not about sexualized acts, and some of the statements about the alleged sexual acts were confusing in nature, particularly because of the role reversals that occurred with the puppet games. Though some responses could be read as evidence of sexual abuse, it would make sense to characterize this interview as raising the possibility of sexual abuse more than proving it. The statements from Mary that were obtained before November seem much stronger as evidence than the CII interview. Moreover, the CII interview was summarized in a one-page log that appears far more definitive than the actual interview. The defense summary does the opposite, however, making far too strong a claim that the interview contained nothing more than some "vulgar" words. In these varying interpretations, one can see two competing views of the case, neither loyal to its complicated facts.

The circumstances surrounding this family seem particularly compelling because (1) they were not in contact with other families, (2) in their first contact with the police they emphasized the desire to minimize the number of interviews, and (3) their daughter's first statements came early in the investigation. There was also medical evidence, discussed later, to support these claims.

Kathy Ingram

The fifth response in September 1983 involving a child who later became a formal complainant in the criminal case came from the Ingram family. Kathy Ingram started attending the McMartin Preschool in March 1982. She had continuous contact with Ray Buckey throughout that period; he was her teacher for a while and he was in charge of watching her after school the entire time. As her mother indicated in the information form submitted to the MBPD:

> Most of the time my daughter Kathy was left alone there without any other children from hours of approx. 2:30 to 4:00. I was one of the few mothers there that had to work until 4:00—when they closed. Kathy was Ray's student for last part of winter and throughout summer. To our knowledge all was completely innocent.[73]

A week later, however, the MBPD listed Kathy as "possible 288 victim" because she was implicated in statements by three-year-old Valerie Van Holden. The MBPD informed the Ingrams of these statements, and on September 27 they called back to report that their daughter had "seen Ray pull out his penis." An interview was scheduled for the following week. As stated in a document attached to a later search warrant:

> On 10-3-83 your affiant interviewed Kathy Kae Ingram. Kathy told your affiant that Raymond Buckey has touched her pee pee while she was nude and inserted his fingers inside which hurt. Kathy further stated that Ray put his pee pee in hers while facing one another and this act has occurred more than once. Kathy has played doctor and has been tied up by Ray Buckey. [74]

Three other families were recorded in the MBPD log as providing "positive" responses to the September letter. The first one occurred on September 12, the same day the Mergilis came to the MBPD. Roseanne Owen contacted Detective Dye and reported "that her daughter Nina had been tied up in a closet and played a horsey game at the school with Raymond Buckey." Detective Hoag of the MBPD called Owen back the next day, and in that conversation she stated that "additional information obtained from her daughter indicated that Ray tickled her genitals and chest." On September 21, Detective Hoag contacted the Owens to request an interview with Nina; Mrs. Owen "had been reluctant to have Nicolette interviewed." The reluctance to have her child interviewed, combined with the apparent disclosures of abuse that match other descriptions, make these early developments noteworthy even though this child did not become part of the criminal case. Another family, the Goldmans, also provided a positive response on September 13. This family had two girls who had attended McMartin. The Goldmans had taken the younger one out a few months before Ray was arrested; she said the reason involved complaints about Ray, but nothing that raised specific concerns about sexual abuse. She testified at the grand jury, but her daughters did not testify at the preliminary hearing.[75] Nicollete Owens was interviewed at CII and her name appeared on a tentative witness list in February 1984, but she was not ultimately among the forty-one complainants in the case.

The third family to make a positive response in September, but not move forward in the criminal case, was the Van Holdens. Their three-year-old daughter Valerie had been attending the McMartin Preschool since May 1982; their five-year-old son Bobby had attended earlier. Valerie regularly encountered Ray Buckey during afternoon sessions at McMartin. On Friday, September 16, Mrs. Van Holden came to the MBPD and requested that Detective Hoag interview

Figure 2.3 McMartin Interview Sequence—September Responders, Complainants and Trial.

her children. As the detective later reported, "Bobby and Valerie were both anxious at being separated even briefly from their mother." Conducting an actual interview with each child proved "virtually impossible to do." The detective spent only a few minutes with each child. She reported that Valerie was "totally non-responsive and refused to answer any questions." No information of value was obtained from Bobby. However, the police report indicates that, while at the police station, Valerie told her mother she had touched Ray Buckey's penis.[76] Her mother also reported that Valerie "had tried to kiss [her brother's] penis in the bath tub." These three families were not ultimately involved in the criminal complaint, but all are potentially worth considering in light of the claims that the entire case was created at CII months later.

In sum, at least eight families with children who attended the McMartin Preschool in 1982 or 1983 reported what they viewed as incriminating statements or highly suspicious behavior suggesting sexual abuse at the preschool in response to the MBPD's September letter. These families furnished positive reports or related suspicions at the earliest stages of the McMartin investigation, long before there was any media coverage or "hysteria." Only a few of those children were included in the eventual criminal complaint; four became formal complainants and one was listed as an intended complainant in February (see Figure 2.3). But only one of those children ended up in the actual trial. The police reports from the week immediately following the letter also reveal a phenomenon that has been overlooked in the rush to characterize this time in terms of "hysteria": there were clear signs of parental reluctance to address the issue or to get involved in any way.

The Evaluations at CII

The investigation, which was being handled by the MBPD, soon generated concern and complaints from parents. Detective Hoag questioned children in a fashion that some considered intimidating. These concerns reached the Los Angeles District Attorney's Office, which, through Assistant DA Jean Matusinka, formally requested in mid-October 1983 that CII offer "assistance in conducting and videotaping interviews" in connection with "allegations that several children have been sexually molested."[77] Matusinka made the request "in order to reduce the number of times a child is interviewed" and to ensure that the children were interviewed "in a non-traumatic therapeutic setting." CII had done similar work for at least two years, but never in a case with multiple victims in an institutional setting. Former prosecutor Glenn Stevens, who became disillusioned with the prosecution's case, told screenwriter Abby Mann that Kee MacFarlane had done excellent work in those cases.[78] The witch-hunt narrative never acknowledges this fact. Instead, it sometimes asserts, without any factual basis, that McMartin was CII's first case assessing children for sexual abuse.

What happened at CII formed the basis for the eventual criminal charges. It also became the focus of the defense in the case. It is a core tenet of the witch-hunt narrative that false memories were "implanted" in the children at CII. Actually, the word *implanted* came into use much later; in the early years, the claim was that children had been "brainwashed." Either way, the argument was that children went into CII and suddenly became convinced—or aware, as case supporters might put it—they had been sexually abused at the McMartin Preschool. But there are several reasons to reject the notion that *all* of the allegations in the case were created at CII, a common claim in the witch-hunt narrative. First, there were ten positive and nine probable responders in September who were reported as making statements about Ray Buckey long before CII entered the case. Those are arguably the most important children in the story. Their early disclosures contradict the idea that the entire case was created at CII. Second, there were children who attended McMartin but moved away before the infamous September 1983 letter, and without being interviewed at CII. The universe of those children has been ignored in the witch-hunt narrative, but there is reason to think that children from one or more of those families might have made statements against Ray Buckey.[79] Third, the interview transcripts of children involved in the trial contradict the claim that the entire case was created at CII. It has been claimed, for example, that "Kee MacFarlane was able to extract from these children a tale of satanic horror."[80] Yet a full-text search of the CII interviews with all the children who ended up in the criminal trial reveals that the following words do not appear even once in any of the interviews: *Satan, devil, tunnel, candle, grave, chant, cemetery, robe.* Several of those children eventually made claims that involved such words, but none of those statements originated with the CII interviews. These three arguments are reasons to reject as overly simplistic the view that the case was "created at CII."

What is a more accurate description of what happened at CII? The ability to answer this question is limited by the fact that court records focus on the children who went forward in the legal process. But those children constitute only a small portion of all of the CII interviews, and almost none of them were from the critical early months of the investigation. To understand what happened at CII, the interviews have to be analyzed in chronological order. The content and timing of the earliest interviews is critical to understanding the evidence in the case. How things evolved over time is also important, especially since the interviews went on for months. In the McMartin case, such analysis requires documentation from dozens of CII interviews involving children who were not among the fourteen who participated in the preliminary hearing. Ideally, the analysis would involve the CII videotapes and not just the transcriptions, since videotapes convey tone of voice and nonverbal cues not reflected in transcripts.

Unfortunately, the available records yield an incomplete picture. The analysis offered here is based on records pertaining to many, but not all, of the earliest children in the case. It also includes a thorough review of fifteen videotapes of interviews; the tapes have not been part of any previous examination of the case outside of the actual trial itself. The chapter about the McMartin case in Nathan and Snedeker's book contains descriptions of a few tapes, complete with claims about body language and tone of voice, but those claims were not based on independent analysis of the tapes. Rather, they came directly from the defense and on close examination can be seen to have significant inaccuracies.

A few writers have published specific details about individual children, although not necessarily with a full-fledged attempt to contextualize them. Nathan and Snedeker, for example, give a detailed description of the CII interview with Tanya Mergili that includes the longest excerpt of a CII interview in their book. They make two arguments about the interview: first, that Tanya was coaxed and led into saying "bad" things about Ray Buckey, and second, that it was unclear, at best, whether she understood what it meant to tell the truth. A footnote provides the date of the interview and the child's initials, but no specific page numbers.[81] An independent analysis of this interview, which ultimately included a review of the actual videotape, indicates that Nathan and Snedeker's description of this interview is inaccurate at best. Consider their account of how Kee MacFarlane allegedly suggested and coaxed the girl into saying Ray did something "bad." Here is their unedited account:

> "When Tanya still didn't respond, MacFarlane added that she had seen the little girl's friends from McMartin's, and they told her 'all the bad secrets.' 'We can have a good time with the dolls,' MacFarlane coaxed, 'and, you know, we can talk about some of those bad secrets, if you wanted to. And they could go away. Wouldn't that be a good idea?' Urging puppets on Tanya, she again asked if she knew any bad secrets. 'Uh-uh,' Tanya shook her head. Then maybe she could figure them out, MacFarlane said. She showed off her 'secret machine' and assured Tanya that she would feel better if she told bad things about Ray. 'I hate those secrets,' Tanya finally said, addressing a bird puppet on MacFarlane's hand. 'Ray-Ray did bad things, and I don't even like it.'"[82]

Arguing that the girl's use of the word *bad* was suggested by the interviewer, the authors claim that MacFarlane used the word before it was ever uttered by Tanya. But Nathan does not provide specific citations for any of the statements in quotes; rather, her single footnote cites the entire transcript without any specific page numbers. Nathan's account is offered as a chronological story; however, it ends with the girl "finally" saying that Ray Buckey "did bad things." The actual transcript reveals that this is *not* an accurate chronological account of what transpired. In fact, what is represented as the "final" comment—about Buckey doing "bad things"–came *before* MacFarlane ever uttered the word *bad*. MacFarlane used the word for the first time at the bottom of page 36. But *before* that statement, Tanya said that she didn't like Ray because "He did bad things."[83]

Nathan and Snedeker also inaccurately conveyed a later exchange, where MacFarlane is ascertaining whether the child understands the concept of truth telling. Beyond raising questions about the accuracy of Nathan and Snedeker's reporting, this example demonstrates a stunning insensitivity to the kinds of miscommunication that can occur with children. According to the authors:

> [MacFarlane] asked Tanya, 'Do you know the difference between the truth and a lie? What's a lie?' 'Umm, it has big teeth, and it—and it's kind of brownish,' answered the girl. At that, MacFarlane asked whether Tanya had 'told the truth to the secret machine.' The girl was mute. She only nodded, with her mouth wide open.[84]

After checking this description against the actual interview, the transcript leaves no doubt that Tanya understood the difference between the truth and a lie. The reader would never know this, however, because Nathan and Snedeker omitted nearly *three pages of follow-up questions* after the "big teeth and brownish" comment. The two pages following further reinforce that Tanya understands she gets punished if she lies. Nathan omits any description of these statements, implying instead that MacFarlane moved directly from the "big teeth and brownish" comment to her question about whether Tanya told the truth. Avoiding any acknowledgment of the intervening three-page exchange leaves the reader with a serious misimpression.[85]

There is a sensible and seemingly obvious explanation for the child's answer, which otherwise appears to be a non sequitur: what she heard MacFarlane say is "what's a lion?" instead of "what's a lie?" Accordingly, her answer is accurate and makes sense. It is unclear whether Nathan and Snedeker even considered this explanation. It is even less clear why they omitted the series of questions that followed, since those questions were obviously designed to clarify whether the child understood the concept of truth telling. Immediately after the "big teeth and brownish" comment, MacFarlane asked "If you tell a lie, what would you—what would be a lie?"[86] The girl replied: "If you didn't tell the truth." MacFarlane then asked: "If I told you that Mr. Bird was pink, would it be the truth or a lie?" "A lie," the girl answered, correctly.[87] But these details are not included in Nathan and Snedeker's account.

November 1983

A detailed, chronological analysis of the content and progression of interviews at CII reveals a period of limited disclosures and palpable frustration on the part of the interviewers, followed by an incredible expansion of the case beyond all reason, beginning *before* the case broke on television on February 2.

The CII interviews began on November 1, 1983. Fifteen children were interviewed that month. The interviews lasted between forty-five and ninety minutes each. Many of these interviews were exemplars of patience. MacFarlane spent a significant amount of time playing and making the child feel comfortable; eventually, she would draw a picture of a human body and establish what awareness and vocabulary the child had for sexual parts. She would then ask about games that had been played at the school. *Did you play any games at school? What were they called? How do you play that? Did children have their clothes on?*

There is no comprehensive account of the content of all fifteen interviews in November. By several measures, however, these interviews were surprisingly unproductive. None of the first seven children interviewed at CII became formally involved in the criminal proceedings. Only three children interviewed in November moved forward in the case: Mary Gordon, Kathy Ingram, and Trisha Walters. They were number eight, nine, and eleven in the interview sequence. The first two had been September responders, so they have already been discussed. The third attended McMartin the day before she was interviewed. She was arguably the most important child in the state's case at the eventual trial, the only one interviewed at CII in 1983; the rest were all first interviewed there in 1984—most well after the story became a major media event.

Trisha Walters made several statements that had a combination of relevant specificity and childlike authenticity. She said, for example, that Ray had "stuck fingernails in my back." Her back, as she later clarified, included her "bottom." She said as well that Ray stuck a "pencil" in her bottom. (It is not uncommon for children to describe anal penetration by an object or finger as being either a nail or a stick, since they produce the kind of pain a child would associate with those items.[88]) A MBPD police officer who later viewed the videotape of this CII interview wrote: "In substance, the victim related the following: Ray touched the victim's vagina with his finger, he penetrated the victim's anus with his penis, a finger, and an object."[89] Judging from the transcript of the interview, it would seem more accurate to use the word *or* than *and* at the end of the sentence just reported. That said, the interview contained many important statements included in the police report, such as "Trisha said Ray wore no underwear" and "Trisha was threatened by Ray that he would slug kids if they told." In conversations with screenwriter Mann, Glenn Stevens referred to this interview as the prosecution's "best tape."

One might question these statements, of course, particularly given that Trisha's parents had provided a negative response to inquiries about the matter a couple months earlier. This is why the medical evidence is so important; it could constitute a physical basis for allegations that might otherwise seem difficult to believe. When Trisha was examined by Dr. Astrid Heger at CII on January 7, 1984, the girl asked the doctor to check her eyes because she was concerned about the "gray stuff" that had gotten into them. Dr. Heger considered it one of the strongest spontaneous statements made to her by any of the approximately 150 children she examined. "The only thing I can think of is that somebody ejaculated on Trisha's face," Dr. Heger later testified.[90] The medical evidence from her physical examination caused even the defense expert, who later examined this evidence, to agree that the combination of findings on the girl would be "strongly suggestive of penetrative injury."[91]

The rest of the fifteen children interviewed at CII in November said little or nothing incriminatory, yet it is clear from the existing records that MacFarlane concluded that virtually all of these children had been sexually abused at the McMartin Preschool. Some of the November interviews were with children so young that their responses were minimal and difficult to understand; children so young were not likely to end up as witnesses in a criminal trial. Valerie Van Holden, for example, was interviewed on November 7. She wore roller skates through the entire interview, which was disjointed and confusing but contains fragmentary statements that raise obvious concern, including something about Ray Buckey "sticking his pee-pee."[92] Other children may have been reluctant to talk. The first girl interviewed in November, Ella Baldwin, denied that any of the games at school were sexualized. She made no clear incriminating statements, and many of her responses were soft and unintelligible. The interview ended when Ella said "I wanna go."[93] Shortly before that request, MacFarlane asked, "Didn't you tell your mommy some things?" Whatever she had told her mother, she did not repeat it in this interview.

Signs of frustration on the part of the interviewer are apparent in the November sessions. By the end of the month, there was an obvious sense, reflected in the questions, that MacFarlane had decided the children were holding back. On November 29, when interviewing Sonny Landell, she asked twice whether someone had told the child not to talk. Twice the girl said no, adding once "I just don't want to talk."[94] MacFarlane then employed a kind of peer pressure, telling Sonny that her older sister "told already." (This is not an accurate description of the transcript of the interview with the older sister, who was vague and equivocal.) Sonny used dolls shortly thereafter in a fashion that has been interpreted by some as demonstrating knowledge of sexual abuse. But standing alone, the "knowledge" proved very little; nor did these interviews contain significant disclosures. The next day, interviewing five-year-old Mark Janes, MacFarlane told the boy that "other kids told her" he was there because of some "naked games." When the boy maintained he did not remember any naked games, MacFarlane called him a "scaredy cat."[95] This inappropriate use of name calling and pressure foreshadows the worst of what would happen at CII over the next several months. Children were pressured and otherwise manipulated into "telling" things, often in language that, on reflection, seems to be mostly innuendo and adult interpretation more than anything child-based and specific.

In sum, a few children made incriminating statements in their interviews at CII in November; others reportedly made incriminating statements to their parents but were unwilling to repeat them at CII. But most children seemed to have nothing to say. Rather than conclude at the end of November that the McMartin case was small, the CII staff seems to have concluded the opposite: the case was much larger than anyone imagined, and many or most of the children were not disclosing, probably out of fear. The children must have been threatened into silence, they reasoned. This explanation made sense to the adults, but the concept definitely emerged in the *questions* posed in CII interviews long before it appeared in any answers.

December 1983

The quality of the interviews deteriorated in December. Many contained the kind of pressure tactics used at the end of November. In some instances, they contained unfounded assertions made by the interviewer that "all the other kids" had talked, sometimes allegedly about the specific child being interviewed. There were also repeated references in many of the December interviews to the idea that the children had been threatened not to talk. "Someone told you not to tell, didn't they?" MacFarlane asked Penny Bailey in the first interview of December. She denied it. The five-year-old girl eventually indicated that Ray Buckey's penis touched her. But this occurred immediately after the child indicated he had touched her *with his foot*. The child provided no details, and it is impossible to ascertain whether the statement is an actual memory or simply an assent to a leading question.[96]

Statements by the interviewer about alleged threats came to be paired with assurances that "telling yucky secrets" would "make them go away." The microphone on the table in the interview room became known as the "yucky secrets machine." MacFarlane was particularly relentless with Jenny Brown on December 7, badgering her repeatedly throughout this interview, and calling her "a scaredy cat" for not saying anything. Then she played on the child's sense of guilt: "Jenny won't help me," MacFarlane's puppet intoned. "Nobody's helping me."[97] But the child was not moved to say anything. Instead, she endured sustained pressure, including questions at the end of the session from her mother.

The girl whispered to her doubting mother that she was not touched, placing clear emphasis on the word "not." None of this seemed to affect the interviewer's conclusion that the child had been sexually abused at school.

A few of the interviews in December stood out as being much more open-ended and less coercive, but a small fraction of the sixteen children who were interviewed that month. Several of those children made statements that might have supported a criminal complaint, but most came after the child was pressured in ways that are now recognized as inappropriate. Only two of the children interviewed in December became complainants in the case: Tanya Mergili and Sara Barton. Notably, both of them had been identified almost three months earlier, during the week of September 12. It is unclear why these two early responders in September were interviewed at CII in December instead of November. But their not being interviewed in November demonstrates that the CII interview sequence was correlated only loosely with the sequence of responses in September, if at all.

The remarkable bottom line for the interviews at CII in December was that *they did not generate a single new complainant in the case.*[98] Indeed, most of these interviews were surprising for how little they actually contained in the way of clear incriminatory statements. Although the December interviews did not generate any new complainants for the criminal case, they were apparently vital in expanding the case to include five female teachers at the school and Virginia McMartin, the wheelchair-bound woman who founded the preschool. According to a handwritten list prepared by MacFarlane several months later, the interviews in early December contained the first statements that implicated any teachers beyond Ray Buckey. By her account, the case started to expand on December 5 and increased noticeably the following week:

> 12/5 Bobby Vickers: "Peggy didn't touch but watched Ray do it"
>
> 12/7 Tanya Mergili: "Miss Peggy saw things happen" (Ray molesting Tanya)
>
> 12/12 Sara Barton: Betty took pictures during NMS [Naked Movie Star] game
>
> 12/12 Barry Gregg: Betty touched his heiney, exposed herself, tied him up, took naked pictures, drove him to a house
>
> 12/13 Betsy Lawton: Peggy took nude photos; Peggy was naked
>
> 12/13 Otis Lawton: Babs [Babette Spitler] played NMS game—she was naked[99]

The phrases cited above came directly from the logs of the videotapes. Those logs were created contemporaneously by the person operating the video camera and were originally intended to serve as indices, not as synopses; combined with a number on the VCR counter, the entries would allow someone to find the place in an interview where a subject or phrase was discussed. But they came to be used for much more than that—all to the detriment of the case.

The children who first implicated the female teachers would seem to be pivotal in the case. Two of them, Tanya Mergili and Sara Barton, became complainants, but neither one actually went to trial. The available written records on the remaining children are more limited. Fortunately, the copies of videotaped interviews that I obtained in the course of this research contain four interviews from early December, including Bobby Vickers and Tanya Mergili.

A close examination of the interview with Vickers reveals that the claim that he incriminated Peggy Buckey is significantly overstated. What actually transpired was ambiguous. It was more than fifty minutes into an interview in which Bobby had said almost nothing about the school or any bad activities there when MacFarlane asked about "yucky secrets." The boy responded quite earnestly: "One time, [another boy at the preschool] took off his clothes before he went swimming and everyone saw him."[100] He also indicated that he knew what "bad touch" meant. "We saw a movie about that at McMartin," he said. He proceeded to say something about a boy whose father didn't want him to tell, but the interviewer cut off the story. After asking again whether Miss Peggy was ever naked—the boy answered "no"—this exchange occurred:

KEE: Did Miss Peggy ever touch anybody?
BOBBY: No.
KEE: Did she ever watch?
BOBBY: Yes.
KEE: Did she watch when the kids were being touched?
BOBBY: Yes.
KEE: Do you think that she ever took her clothes off?
BOBBY: No—only when she was going to go swimming.

The interviewer returned to the topic later and asked questions to clarify or verify this earlier response.

KEE: Did Miss Peggy do anything bad?
BOBBY: No.
KEE: Did she know what Mr. Ray did to you?
BOBBY: Yes.
KEE: How come she didn't do anything to help you?
BOBBY: Because she didn't know.
KEE: Did she ever see any of those touchings that happened to Bobby?
BOBBY: Nope.

This exchange certainly contradicts the idea that Bobby incriminated Peggy Buckey in any meaningful way. The most that can be said is that his statements on this topic were contradictory. It appears he was most adamant and persuasive in the second exchange. But however one interprets these contradictions, it is not reasonable to boil this exchange down to *Peggy didn't touch but watched Ray do it.* Yet this is how the video log reads for this section.

There was also a diversion near the end of this interview that bears mentioning. Bobby was asked about going to Ray's house. He said they had gone in a car. "And then they went off the cliff," he added. The remark did not cause the interviewer to pull back, change directions, or even pause. Over the next few minutes, Bobby poured out details about a "spooky, haunted house" with windows that opened by themselves. "There might be ghosts," he said. "Mr. Ray pushed the button and the trap door opened into the alligator pit," he continued. The notion that certain questions might encourage a child to spin a story, so to speak, did not seem to be considered in general. The interviewer clearly did not believe there was an alligator pit, but there is no indication that this interview gave pause to the CII staff to consider why a child might say such a thing and how this might affect the evaluation process. Instead of this interview marking the beginning of a period of increased caution in the CII evaluations, this was apparently when the idea took hold that the case involved multiple defendants and multiple crime scenes (both at and away from the preschool).

The same kind of problem exists with Tanya Mergil's statements about Peggy Buckey's involvement. The most important part of her interview, according to the CII staff, was reduced to *Miss Peggy saw things happen.* Here is the interaction from which the phrase emanated:

Q: Did Ray-Ray ever take you some place?
A: No, no, no, no, no.
Q: Did all those bad things just happen at school?
A: Yes.
Q: Oh. Where were all those other teachers when those bad things were happening?
A: I don't know, but—
Q: Did Miss Peggy ever see any? Did she see anything?
A: Yes.
Q: She did?
A: Uh-huh.
Q: Did she ever play any of those bad games, too?
A: Oh, no.
Q: No. Did she get mad at Ray-Ray?
A: Yes.

Q: Oh. She didn't—she didn't want him to play?

A: Right.

Q: Do you think she ever saw the kids naked?

A: No, no, no, no, no.

Q: She wasn't there?

A: Nope.[101]

Of course, in a literal sense, Peggy Buckey *did* "see things happen" every day. But the follow-up questions that were appropriately aimed at fleshing out the meaning of this vague statement seem to make it clear that Miss Peggy did *not* witness any alleged acts of abuse. According to the response above, she did not play any of the bad games or see any of the kids naked. She was not there. The most one could fairly say is that Tanya said something ambiguous about Peggy that was contradicted by follow-up questions.

None of this is to deny that Tanya made credible statements on videotape at UCLA in September and again in this CII session in November. Notably, none of those statements were about the involvement of Miss Peggy or any other teacher besides Ray Buckey. The notation on the log from this CII interview misrepresented the actual content. Accordingly, the log notes seem to reflect more about the biases of the CII staff than they do about the actual substance of the interviews. The biases account for so much of what eventually happened in the case, however, that this insight is useful in understanding CII's role.

In early to mid-December, the CII staff formed the view that the case involved most or all of the female teachers. They also came to believe that these women were involved in making child pornography. An economic motive might help explain actions that otherwise seemed incomprehensible. Three of the first six children alleged to have incriminated the female teachers also allegedly made statements about taking pictures. See the phrases emphasized by bold print from the log notes (previously presented in this chapter) below:

12/5 Bobby Vickers: "Peggy didn't touch but watched Ray do it"

12/7 Tanya Mergili: "Miss Peggy saw things happen" (Ray molesting Tanya)

12/12 Sara Barton: **Betty took pictures** during NMS [Naked Movie Star] game

12/12 Barry Gregg: Betty touched his heiney, exposed herself, tied him up, took **naked pictures**, drove him to a house.

12/13 Betsy Lawton: **Peggy took nude photos**; Peggy was naked

12/13 Otis Lawton: Babs played NMS game—she was naked[102]

Although the phrases in bold seem to convey the underlying content in abbreviated form, they actually convey just the subject matter of the questions. In all three instances, the topic was introduced by the questioner and the responses were either ambiguous or otherwise less than corroborative. But the log conveys the opposite. Indeed, given how critical these supposed statements were to the evolution of the case—since they were apparently the first children to implicate the female teachers—it is telling that none of these children became part of the criminal case. Though virtually all of the children interviewed in December were considered by the staff at CII to have been victims of sexual abuse, none of them—save Tanya Mergili (who came forward in early September)—became part of the criminal case. By any objective standard, these interviews were unproductive. MacFarlane was clearly frustrated that the children had so little so say.

January 1984

The pace of interviewing increased dramatically over the next four months (see Figures 2.4 to 2.6). The most children were interviewed in April, which also yielded more actual complainants than any other month. Figures 2.5 and 2.6 illustrate how the children in the case were drawn largely from those interviewed at CII in February, March, and April—all months after the case became a major media story. The interviewing at CII continued for several more months but the criminal case was built entirely on the statements of children interviewed at CII before May. Nobody seemed to wonder why the bulk of the children who were eventually involved in the criminal proceedings emerged five and six months into the investigation. The notion that all of these children had been scared into silence was one possibility. Another was that their "disclosures" were the product of influences separate from any actual abuse. But this explanation did not receive any consideration in 1984, when the criminal case took shape.

Several aspects of the interviews changed in January. First, the nature of the children's statements became much more bizarre than anything said in November or December. The first child interviewed in January told Kee MacFarlane that Peggy Buckey was "a naked horsey rider."[103] He said that "Babs, Betty and Peggy scared kids" but "not Ray." His statements got stranger and stranger; at one point, he said Miss Virginia killed animals at school. Later, he talked about going on a freeway to a church, to a hotel, and to a car wash with "mean people." There are so many seemingly fantastic claims in this single interview that it is difficult to imagine sorting out the truth in any of the more plausible sounding statements. This boy was included in the original complaint but was not among the children who went through the preliminary hearing.

Second, rigidity and overconfidence on the part of the interviewers took root in January. In comparison to the earlier interviews, it is clear that the

Figure 2.4 CII Interview Sequence—All Interviews of children at CII Through May 15.

[illegible]

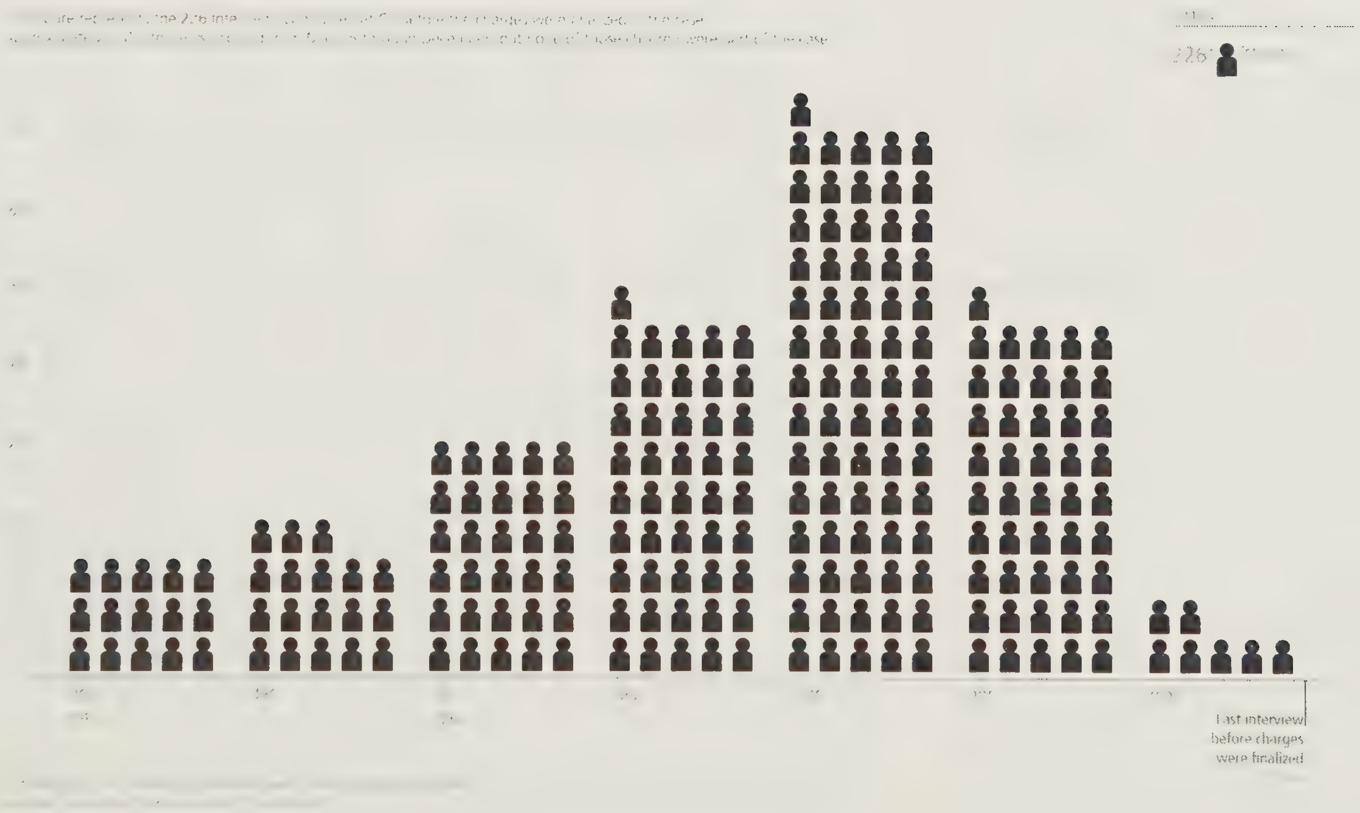

Figure 2.5 CII Interview Sequence—Children at Preliminary Hearing.

cons do not represent the order of interviews within the month

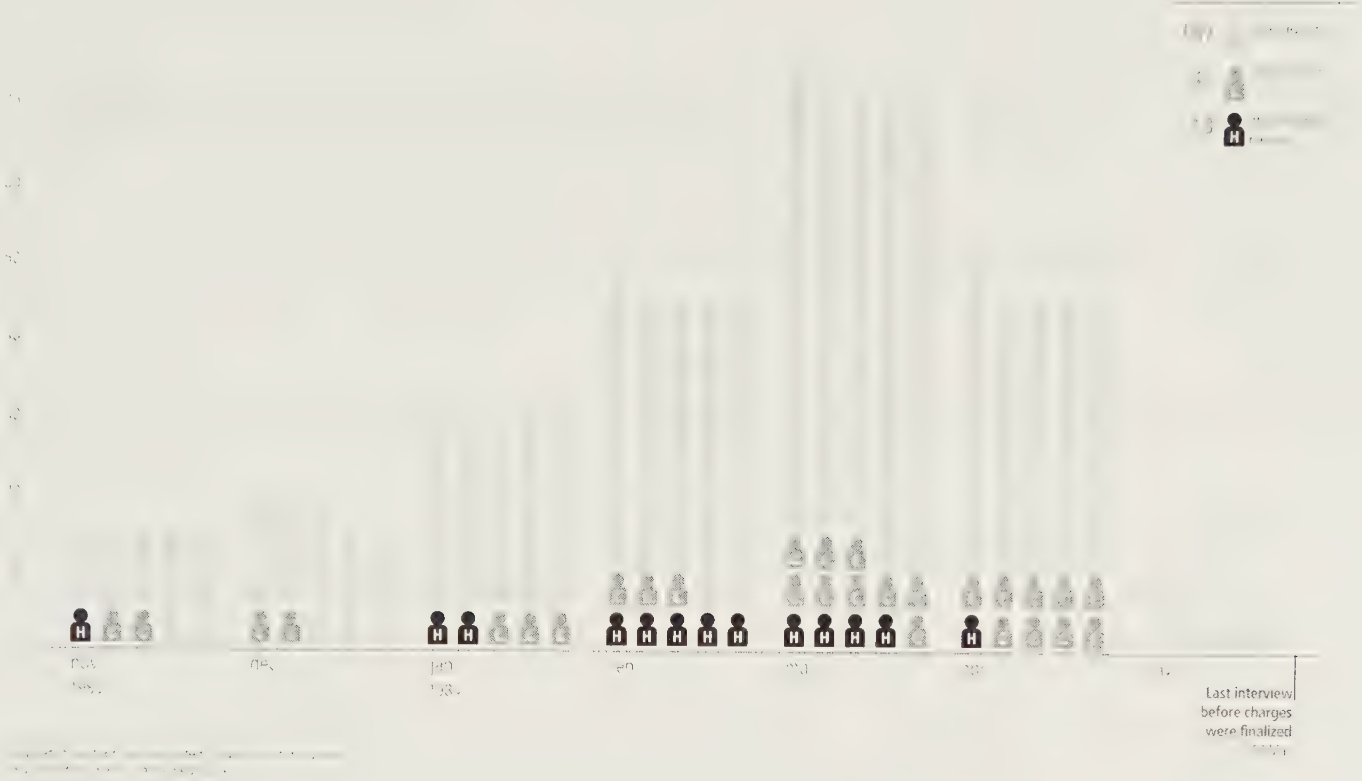

Figure 2.6 CII Interview Sequence—Children at Preliminary Hearing, Trial and Retrial.

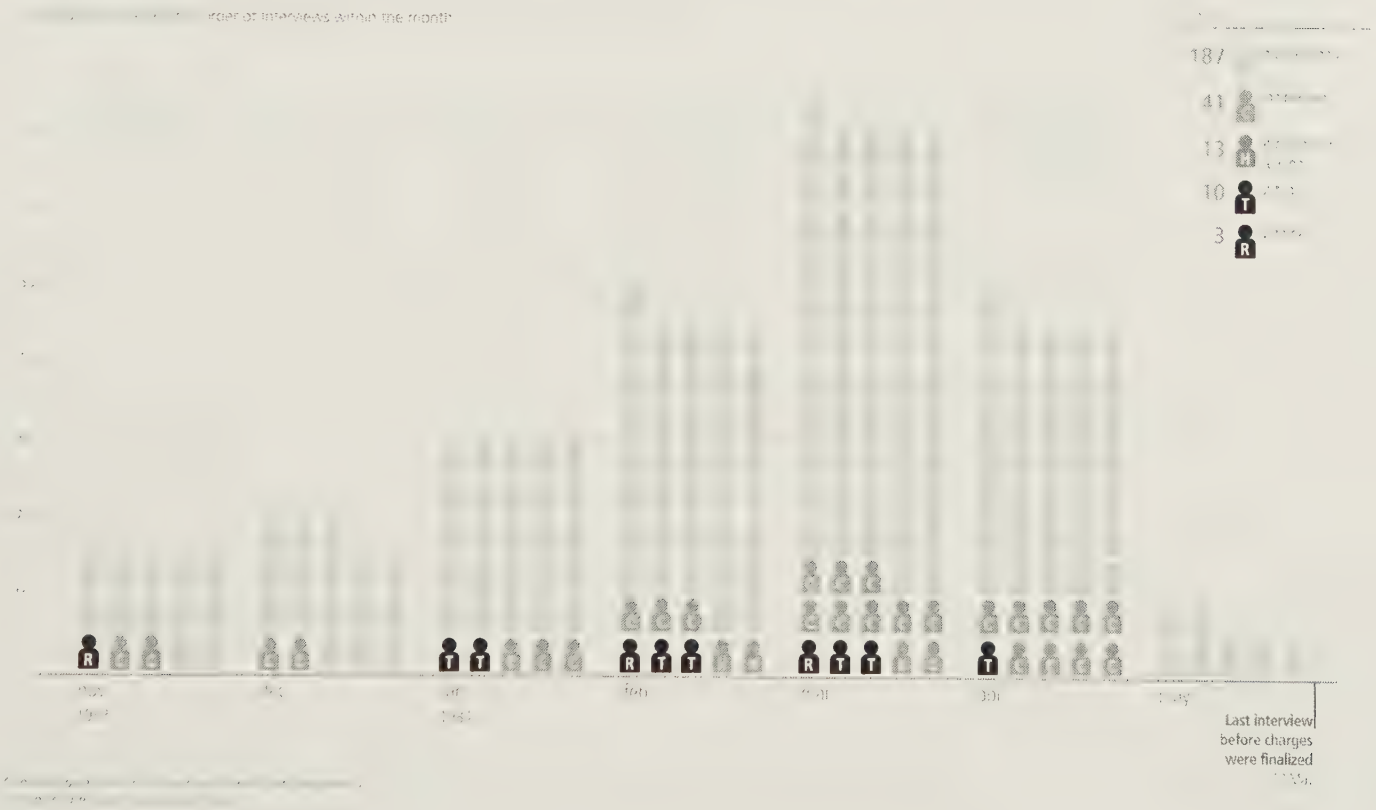

interviewer's expectations became much stronger. The interviews in this time period do not read as though the interviewer was trying to find out what happened; it is as if the interviewer already knew what happened and wanted the child to affirm it. This does not mean every single interview in January should be disregarded. Breanna Chapman, who attended the McMartin Preschool in January, emerged as one of the most compelling witnesses in the case in connection with events that resulted in the school closing "voluntarily" on January 12.

Her parents, Ellen and Terry, were staunch supporters of the Buckeys in the fall of 1983. Breanna attended McMartin until mid-January 1984, when she made a disclosure to her mother that was quickly corroborated by medical evidence; the school closed down a few days later. The evidence concerning this child has not been acknowledged in the witch-hunt narrative, even though it is contained in the grand jury notebooks and was well known enough that it was referenced in outtakes of the *60 Minutes* episode about the case in December 1986.[104] But, as explained below, the jury never heard this evidence.

It is fair to say that after the September letter from the MBPD, the parents who continued sending their children to the McMartin Preschool were supporters of the McMartins who had concluded that there was no basis to the allegations. Indeed, Ellen Chapman told one of the investigators for the district attorney that in the fall of 1983 she was "totally appalled that people were going to discredit the school."[105] She even recommended the preschool to a friend after learning about the investigation. She was so loyal to the school that she made nothing of a strange remark of Peggy Buckey's about the allegations.[106] She didn't even entertain the possibility of sexual abuse when, on the evening of January 6, 1984, her daughter screamed in pain as she urinated. Her mother bathed her, applied some cream, and "noticed that she was very red and very swollen."[107] When she asked her daughter if anyone had hurt her, Breanna replied that "Ray had spit in her face and hurt her arm."[108] Chapman later testified that she assumed Breanna must have been referring to a playground mishap with a child named Ray. She did not connect the genital discomfort with this comment because Breanna spoke only of a hurt arm. It is important to remember that the story about McMartin had not yet been in any media coverage. Whatever was brewing at CII was unknown to all but a handful of insiders. To McMartin loyalists, the September letter was ancient history.

If, as is often alleged, there were parents of children attending the McMartin preschool who were bent on extracting disclosures of sexual abuse from their children, Chapman was clearly not one of them. Indeed, she took her daughter *back* to McMartin on January 12.[109] Later that day, however, Breanna told her Mr. Ray had hurt her private parts. The meaning of Breanna's words was apparently so clear that they almost instantly turned Chapman from a diehard McMartin supporter to potentially the most convincing witness for the state.[110] She withdrew Breanna from the McMartin Preschool, and Peggy Buckey closed it down two days later. Breanna was examined at the medical office of Dr. Myron Mitzenmacher on January 28. The exam revealed an enlarged vaginal opening and markedly red mucous membranes. Later, a colposcopic exam by Dr. Astrid Heger found a "remarkable scar" that, given its stage of healing, was diagnosed as "between two and four weeks" old.[111]

Chapman recounted those facts to the grand jury in March.[112] But Breanna, who had just turned four, was considered too young to testify. Her older sister Nancy, who was almost seven, was interviewed, and she was slated to testify instead. However, she became one of the untold casualties of the McMartin case: Nancy literally had a nervous breakdown in June 1984, was hospitalized after a period of continuous vomiting and dehydration,[113] and was subsequently removed from the witness list. Ellen Chapman still testified at the preliminary hearing, but all she was allowed to say in her direct testimony, given that her daughter was not a complaining witness, was that Breanna attended McMartin in the fall of 1983, that Peggy Buckey made a strange comment in the fall about "checking Ray for hard-ons," and that her daughter left the school on January 12, 1984. The normally contentious defense attorneys, who drew cross-examination of some children out for more than a week, didn't ask Chapman a single question. This eliminated any danger that she would be given the opportunity to explain why her daughter left McMartin and what Dr. Heger observed when examining the child shortly after her complaints in January 1984. The jury never heard any of that.

Other than Breana Chapman, however, there were enough problems with the interviews in January that they are generally not useful in assessing whether or not a child was sexually abused. The problems with "source attribution" apparently increased in January as more parents sent their kids to CII, and more parents told other parents about their experiences. There are several examples in the interview transcripts where a child makes it clear that his or her seemingly incriminatory statements against Ray Buckey or others are based on something told to the child by a parent (*My mommy told me Ray touched kids*). Although the case still had not yet generated any media attention, it was creating considerable interest and conversation in the community. A parents' meeting at UCLA Medical Center in late October drew parents from about a dozen families; scores more attended the community meeting in Manhattan Beach on January 24. Those developments made it more likely that a child generating specific claims in January might have heard that information from someone else, rather than actually having experienced it. Most likely, *the child's parent* heard it from someone else's parent.

February Onward

An interview with a six-and-a-half-year-old boy during the first week of February involved the same problem. During the interview, conducted by MacFarlane, the boy made a number of specific statements about Ray "touching kids," including a seemingly telling response that "something came out" of Ray's penis. But in the time *after* the interview, while the tape was still running, the boy contradicted everything he had just said. He told Sandy Krebs, another CII interviewer, that he was not scared to answer MacFarlane's questions, that he had never seen Ray's (alleged) gun, that he was not actually at the McMartin Preschool for long, and that Ray did not hurt him or threaten him.[114] These statements were apparently ignored by the CII staff.

The next three months were the most important in the overall process, by two measures: total number of interviews and total number of complainants generated for the criminal case. These months were also when the CII interviews deteriorated in several ways. Most significantly, the interviewers had clearly reached the conclusion that there had been massive abuse at the preschool; they could not possibly be said to have an open mind about the interviews during these months. I have reviewed the videotapes of two interviews in February, one in March, and two in April. All involved children who became complainants in the case. None of the interviews had the feeling of open-ended inquiry that characterized some of those from November. To the contrary, they seemed aimed at getting the child to confirm that something bad happened, to say it on videotape. These interviews are filled with inappropriate questions.

The interview with Miranda Chase on April 3, 1984, is representative of some of the worst practices in the CII interviews. It also contains a particularly striking example of how the interviewers ignored statements that did not fit their own view of the case. Miranda was nine years old at the time; she had attended the McMartin Preschool from August 1977 until June 1979. As the defense later pointed out, Ray Buckey was still in high school during the time covered by some of the complainants in the case, including Miranda.

Miranda was strikingly older than the children in all of the other tapes I was able to review. She is described in Dr. Heger's medical evaluation, which was conducted on April 23, as "a bright cooperative nine year old who was able to volunteer a tremendous amount of information." The CII interview starts with a remarkable statement that is quite unprompted and involves considerable detail. It is all about how a friend of hers got "sick" because of all this stuff about McMartin. "His mind is playing tricks on him and he thinks things happened that never happened," she explains. "Hmmmm. I didn't talk to him," Krebs replies and lets the subject drop.

The interviewer and the girl then drew for more than ten minutes, making small talk about drawing. Eventually, Krebs gave Miranda a human figure she drew and prompted the girl to label various parts of the body: belly button, eyes, nose, mouth, fingers. With specific prompting, she added "boobs" and then "vagina." A few minutes later, Krebs brought out school pictures from various classes and years at McMartin. "Ray's in jail," Miranda said energetically and without any prompting. When shown a picture of some or all of the adults charged in the case, she added, again without any kind of prompt, "I'm glad he's in jail [pointing to Ray], but I'm not so sure about them" and pointed to several other adults. Krebs also let this remark pass, declining to inquire about the "not so sure" part.

Miranda then told her about a child she should interview. The girl once spent the night at Ray's house and later said "Ray's going to be my boyfriend." (There is no additional information in available records about this lead.) Apparently aware that she was supposed to say something about Ray Buckey, the girl then said, again without any specific prompt, that Ray "was dishonest." This time, Krebs followed up and asked for an explanation. The girl launched into a long story about how Miss Virginia would give Ray suckers, but the children were not supposed to eat them. Once Miss Virginia was gone, Ray said, "you guys can go eat some suckers."

Krebs abruptly said something about how helpful puppets have been and directed Miranda's attention to a host of puppets on the couch. They each selected one and Krebs started talking through her puppet to Miranda's puppet. She told the puppet how the older children can help out more because they are smarter, they can talk better, and they have better memories. Then she gave Miranda's puppet "a pretty blue pointer" and said: "We know somebody scared people; told them not to tell." She asked Miranda—again, through her puppet—to point out anyone like that in the photo. Miranda pointed immediately to Ray. "Anyone else?" Krebs asked. "Miss Betty, I think," she responded with equivocation. Krebs replied with enthusiasm: "You know what, Wookie [the puppet Miranda was holding], that's what all the other kids said! You're going to be a big help."

Miranda was then asked a series of very leading questions. "What did they say to Miranda when she was little to make her scared?" She responded with something about "don't go home" that did not quite make sense. "Did they say to Miranda that she might get hurt?" This is when Miranda said something about a bomb threat. "Getting rid of these secrets is kind of neat. And everybody's doing it." This is when Miranda said something about Ray letting children go swimming in the pool naked. Krebs proceeded to ask more leading questions, such as, "Who tickled the kids?" Miranda was given huge praise for her answers. "Congratulations, what a brave bear," she is told after nodding in response to a question as to whether Ray did any "tricky tickling" of Miranda. Krebs later employed some of the worst kind of leading questions, ones with forced-choice answers, such as "Which hurt more, the bottom or the vagina?" Either answer, of course, "confirmed" the implication contained in the question. This interview ended with Krebs giving excessive praise: "You really did a good job! You really did a good job! You're terrific!"[115] Two weeks later, when Miranda was evaluated by Dr. Heger, the cooperative fourth-grader repeated much of what she said to Krebs. The adults were apparently so taken by the articulateness of this nine-year-old that they did not take her negative responses to heart. What seems most convincing from her interview is that Ray Buckey gave children suckers when he was not supposed to; he also apparently let children swim in the pool naked. But almost this entire interview is ambiguous, contradictory, and overly leading. The single-mindedness of the interviewer is apparent throughout. Miranda Chase was included in the forty-one complainants; she was not, however, one of the fourteen who testified at the preliminary hearing. It is not clear why she dropped out of the case between the grand jury proceedings and the preliminary hearing.

In retrospect, the mistakes made during this critical phase of the CII evaluations seem fairly clear; what remains less clear is why such a shaky foundation of interviews resulted in seven defendants being charged and in official claims that far more people were probably involved. In other words, why did so many people come to believe, based on so little evidence, that there *had* been such widespread abuse? The answer is complicated and involves a confluence of factors that are analyzed next. First and foremost was the role of medical diagnosis.

Contested Medical Evidence

Medical evidence played a critical role from the beginning. The case was referred to the Manhattan Beach Police Department after an evaluation of Matthew Johnson, conducted at UCLA's Medical Center, yielded evidence that the boy had likely been sodomized. Several other children, interviewed later in the case, were also examined by pediatric specialists at UCLA. The vast majority of medical evaluations in the case, however, were conducted through CII—the same organization that interviewed hundreds of children in the case. These medical examinations were conducted by Drs. Astrid Heger and Bruce Woodling. Dr. Heger was a young pediatrician with strong credentials; she graduated at the top in her medical school class at the University of Southern California in 1972 and started working at CII in 1983. Dr. Woodling had gained some experience—and later, notoriety—for his testimony in the Kniffen and McCuan cases in Bakersfield, California.[116] Together, they helped pioneer the use of the colposcope, a medical instrument that combines binocular magnification with the power of photography, in evaluating the possibility of sexual abuse.[117]

The medical evaluations conducted through CII played a significant and complicated role in the McMartin case. On the one hand, it is clear with the benefit of hindsight that Drs. Heger and Woodling overdiagnosed abuse in the children who were interviewed at CII. The overdiagnosis became apparent as advances in medical knowledge demonstrated that some medical findings clinicians considered to be related to sexual abuse were also found in nonabused children. The overdiagnosis helps explain why parents became convinced that their children had been sexually abused, even if their statements at CII were ambiguous or strained credulity. Yet, these shortcomings do not mean their evaluations should be rejected out of hand. The changes in medical knowledge that occurred between 1984 and the late 1980s, particularly two well-known studies by Dr. John McCann, discredited *some* "findings" from the early 1980s, but they did not dismiss all relevant medical knowledge from that era.[118]

The significance of evolving medical knowledge in the McMartin case cannot be ascertained without case-by-case analysis of the constellation of findings reported for each child. The first original effort at such analysis—given here—reveals that a considerable amount of the evidence presented in the McMartin case would still be considered strong today. Unfortunately, any close inquiry into this medical evidence is limited in at least two ways. First, although there is fairly extensive information about the fourteen children involved in the preliminary hearing and even more information about the subset that went to trial, there is only scattered information available for the rest of the children who were evaluated by CII. Second, even though medical reports and related documents were entered into the court record for many children who did not end up in the trial, the photographic slides that were entered as exhibits in support of those records are not in the court archives. It is a standard practice that transcripts are retained by the court while exhibits are destroyed or returned to the parties soon after the case is over.[119] With one exception, none of the photographic slides were available to this researcher. Despite those limitations, there is considerable documentation in the court record concerning some of the most significant children in the case, particularly Matthew Johnson and the three girls who were involved in the original trial and the retrial. Information about the earliest children involved in the case was also obtained from various sources.[120]

The Overdiagnosis Problem

Just as the interviewers at CII "found" indications of child sexual abuse in interviews that do not, on close examination, support the conclusion, the physicians at CII "found" medical evidence of sexual abuse in an astonishing number of children. Medical records for most of these children were never part of the criminal proceedings, so it is not possible to assess the details. There are some aggregate claims, however, that indicate there was a significant problem of overdiagnosis in medical evaluations conducted between January and May 1984. Two claims about the widespread prevalence of medical evidence have been cited in various writings about the McMartin case. One is that Dr. Heger found medical evidence in 80 percent of the 150 children she examined; the other is that the "majority" of the 400 children evaluated at CII had medical indications of sexual abuse.[121] The latter statement was made by Kee MacFarlane in congressional testimony in September 1984.[122] Information about most of these evaluations remains elusive because most of the children who received medical examinations through CII were never part of the criminal proceedings. The case had forty-four children at its height and Dr. Heger apparently evaluated thirty of them. Most of those children were diagnosed with having medical signs of sexual abuse. Dr. Heger has since published a peer-reviewed article concluding that approximately 5 percent of sexually abused children actually have medical signs of abuse. So even if all thirty children whom Dr. Heger examined early in the case were actually sexually abused, one would expect, *under current understandings concerning this kind of evidence,* that no more than a few would present with medical indications.

Why did the CII "find" such widespread indications of abuse? The primary reason is that the prevailing clinical understanding of sexual abuse was quite limited in 1984. Doctors knew what they often saw in sexually abused children, but there had not yet been studies examining the prevalence of such findings in "normal," or nonabused, children. Clinicians were aware of this problem. Drs. Heger and Woodling had written about the need for such studies.[123] Early examples of this kind of study include McCauley, Gorman, and Guzinski's prospective case-control study conducted at the University of Maryland Hospital in Baltimore between July 1984 and May 1985.[124] The study was conducted to evaluate use of a blue dye as a method of detecting lacerations, but it also provided scientific proof concerning the significance of fourchette lacerations in girls under ten years old. The incidence of lacerations "in the sexually abused group was 55 percent, whereas none of the control children had any lacerations detected."[125] In short, this study confirmed the common-sense conclusion that lacerations in the genitalia are not normal. The study also confirmed that physical signs were present in a minority of confirmed cases. The percentage of cases thought to have meaningful physical findings has gone down as knowledge advances in the field. Astrid Heger was lead author on a study published in 2002 that concluded, on the basis of a sample of 2,384 children, referred for suspected sexual abuse, there were "abnormal medical findings in only 5.5%" of the cases.[126]

There were several beliefs in the medical community in the 1980s that later proved to have much less basis than findings concerning certain lacerations in young girls. One involved the "normal" opening of the hole in the hymen. Pediatrician Hendrika Cantwell published an article in 1983 that argued openings larger than 0.4 mm are abnormal.[127] It was eventually proven that "normal" (nonabused) children could also have a large hymenal opening. Studies of "normals" also dispelled notions about "neovascularization" and "vaginal ridges and notches" as evidence of abuse. Most famous were the McCann studies that dispelled some conventional wisdom about anal findings.[128] What Woodling described as an "anal wink" response occurs more often in nonabused children than Woodling or others ever knew. Advancements in knowledge have also produced results that challenge the witch-hunt narrative. For example, there have been controlled studies of the reliability of genital exams in the context of sexual abuse. Atabaki and Paradise found that physicians with experience evaluating cases of suspected abuse evinced *less diagnostic bias* than did physicians with less experience.[129] It makes common sense that experience improves the knowledge of physicians, but the witch-hunt narrative definitely tells a different story: one in which child-abuse professionals, pejoratively known as the "child abuse industry," are considered most "prone" to "finding" abuse whether or not it exists because it is supposedly in their professional interest to do so. Instead, this study demonstrates that professionals are generally more conservative. At least they are now. It is clear in retrospect that some clinicians were overdiagnosing sexual abuse in the mid-1980s.

The consequences of the problem were enormous in the McMartin case. A medical diagnosis of sexual abuse is an extremely powerful way to convince parents that his or her child has been sexually abused, almost regardless of what the child said on tape at CII. Statements that contained direct denials of abuse, clear equivocations, contradictions, and even fantastic details would not likely raise enough skepticism to overcome such "findings." To the contrary, the medical diagnosis apparently "validated" the content of the interviews. What parent, faced with a medical diagnosis, would decide that his or her child has not been abused because the CII interview contained leading questions, or the child's answers were less than clear and convincing?

In this way, the overdiagnosis of children who did not move forward in the case caused far greater harm than overdiagnosis of the children who did. The evidence concerning children who moved forward was subject to cross-examination and critique by the defense. Because the proceedings lasted so long, it was also subject to Dr. Heger's frank testimony about changes in medical knowledge since the original examinations. The diagnosis of children who did not become part of the case had the effect of convincing a host of parents that their children had been abused. Had the same parents been faced with only the CII interviews, they might have been far more skeptical about how those interviews were being interpreted.

Relevant Medical Evidence

The witch-hunt narrative has used the fact that medical knowledge became more conservative over time—learning that some medical indications associated with sexual abuse were sometimes found in nonabused children—to reject all of the medical evidence in the McMartin case. But this is an overstatement of the studies of "normal" children. Moreover, the argument does not account for the medical findings on Matthew Johnson; the defense's own medical expert agreed that they were significant. The witch-hunt narrative has employed a different argument to dismiss the medical evidence concerning Matthew, arguing essentially that it should have been much more dramatic. Nathan and Snedeker asserted that the kind of sexual abuse Judy Johnson suspected her son had endured "can be expected to leave horrific anal tears and bruising" and that such abuse "often maims or kills."[130] Since Matthew was neither maimed nor killed, the argument goes, he must not have been sodomized. But the single publication on which they relied for this argument merely says that "Children, who are smaller and unwilling, experience more pain and injury."[131] It says nothing about being maimed or killed. Moreover, the article—which is actually about the behavior of child molesters, not the injuries sustained by their victims—cites several studies that directly contradict Nathan's claim.[132] The defense's own expert rejected Nathan's claim, although this has never been recognized in the witch-hunt narrative. [133]

Beyond the evidence concerning Matthew Johnson, some of the most relevant medical evidence in the case involved three girls.[134] A majority of the jurors in the first trial found the evidence pertaining to these girls convincing enough to vote that Ray Buckey was guilty beyond a reasonable doubt. The jury in the second trial also split on those charges. The witch-hunt narrative relies heavily on Dr. David Paul, who came from England to testify for the defense, for the claim that there was no credible medical evidence in the case. But he did not reject all of the evidence concerning these girls. Moreover, it is not clear how much weight his opinion should receive. The nature and extent of disagreements concerning these girls is considered here.

Sally Gregg

Sally Gregg was the only September responder who ended up in the actual trial. This is the family to indicate by mail that "in a preliminary discussion with Sally, she said 'Ray Ray does not wear underpants'" and that "we would like more time to talk to Sally without a heavy cross examination." Sally was not interviewed in the earliest phase of the CII interviews. Instead, she was fortieth in the CII interview sequence, interviewed on January 16, 1984.[135] Her medical examination was conducted by Dr. Heger about six weeks later, on March 2. Dr. Heger testified at the grand jury that Sally's hymenal opening was "one-and-a-half times" the normal size, that she had many areas of "rounding" on the hymen, and that there were "multiple scars" in various locations around the opening of the hymen. Dr. Heger also testified there was a scar located posteriorly, that is, in the anus.[136] Several years later, in her testimony at the first trial, Dr. Heger acknowledged that some of the vaginal findings mentioned at the grand jury were no longer considered indications of abuse. But she also testified that the anal findings on Sally were still consistent with blunt force penetrating trauma. She testified further that causes other than sexual abuse, such as diarrhea, could not have caused these findings.[137]

Three other doctors testified at trial about the photographic slides that formed the basis of Dr. Heger's conclusions: two for the prosecution (Drs. Woodling and Gordon) and one for the defense (Dr. Paul). Dr. Gordon testified that he saw "extraordinary injury to the anal verge." He testified further that given those findings there was a "very high probability that Sally was a victim of anal penetration." He noted the anal area was "grossly abnormal in its pattern" and showed "evidence of significant injury." He also testified that he saw thickened tissue, "broad base large wedges pointed into the anal opening," as well as a "markedly abnormal anal opening showing evidence of injury and trauma to the anal verge."[138] Dr. Woodling, who examined a photograph in a three-dimensional viewer, testified that the picture of the anal area showed a "marked deformity"; he said this suggested "multiple traumas" had occurred in the area. He testified further that an anal scar could clearly be observed, extending toward the anal funnel. Dr. Woodling called it a "significantly scarred anus" and said it was "significantly deformed."[139] Dr. Paul contradicted these three doctors, testifying at the first trial that the slide reflected a "perfectly normal" anus. On cross-examination, however, he also identified as "perfectly normal" a photograph of an anus from a British medical journal article that, unbeknownst to him, was about cases of *corroborated* trauma from sexual abuse.[140]

Dr. Heger's testimony in the second trial clearly took into account the changes in medical knowledge since 1984. She discussed the vaginal findings, particularly the scarring,[141] which would still be considered significant, but her testimony focused on the anal findings, which were even more clearly abnormal. When testifying about the vaginal findings, she noted that some, particularly scarring, were significant and some, like rounding, were no longer considered relevant.[142] She testified that the minor findings in Sally included a hymenal diameter of 0.6–0.7 cm and the rounding of the hymenal edge.[143] She maintained that the vaginal area was nevertheless abnormal, describing it as "deformed" in the sense that it was "disrupted and transected looking vestibular mucosa or hymen . . . it's a scarred hymen."[144] She described it as being a scar half a centimeter to a centimeter posteriorly away from the vagina on the anus.[145] Finally, she testified specifically in relation to the new studies of "normals" that she felt "very confident that the major findings in [Sally] G. would be supported by any of [the] studies" of nonabused children.[146] In other word, studies of nonabused children did *not* find these kinds of medical indications.

Trisha Walters

Among the eleven children who eventually went to trial, Trisha Walters appeared earliest in the CII interview sequence. She was interviewed on November 22, 1983, and her medical exam was conducted by Drs. Heger and Woodling on January 7, 1984. This is the girl who spontaneously asked Dr. Heger to examine her eyes. When Dr. Heger inquired why, the four-year-old said Ray's "gray tinkle" got in her eyes and her hair, and she was afraid she might go blind.[147] The jury was admonished not to take this statement into account because it was hearsay evidence.

Dr. Heger testified at the grand jury that Trisha's hymenal opening was "one-and-a-half times" what she thought was normal. She also noted there was rounding of the hymen and "neovascularization."[148] These findings would be considered nonspecific today; that is, they would *not* be considered indicative of sexual abuse. But Trisha also had several scars and healed lacerations of the hymen. There was one at the 3 o'clock position and another in between 3 o'clock and 4 o'clock. Dr. Heger testified as to an "impressive" scar at 6:30 that extended into the vagina.[149] These findings *would* still be considered significant today. During the second trial, Dr. Heger emphasized them; she testified there was a crescent-shaped scar that came across the hymen at 5 o'clock and extended across the "actual edge of the hymen."[150] There was another scar at 7 o'clock and a scar in the posterior fourchette.[151] Her conclusion was that the medical findings were "consistent with sexual assault."[152]

There were no slides taken of Trisha Walters; the colposcope in Dr. Heger's office did not yet have a camera in early January, 1984.[153] Instead, she drew a diagram based on what she saw through the colposcope. Dr. Paul testified that if the findings that she drew were present, it would also be consistent with sexual abuse. He later claimed that such findings would be consistent as well with "normal wear and tear."[154] It is difficult to ascertain what kind of "wear and tear" Dr. Paul thought a four-year-old girl would have sustained. No other doctor provided any testimony that supported this peculiar claim.

Dr. Paul's testimony in the second trial was inconsistent with that in the first trial, as he testified that there were no signs in the medical reports consistent with penetrative abuse through the hymen or the anus.[155] On cross-examination, however, he allowed that *if* the exam by Drs. Heger and Woodling was accurate, and there was damage to the posterior fourchette, this *would* be a significant finding.[156] Finally, he admitted that the combination of findings on the girl—scarring to the posterior fourchette as well as scar tissue—was "strongly suggestive of penetrative injury." Thus, in the end he conceded that if Dr. Heger's findings were accurate, her conclusions would be correct.

Allison Brown

The third girl involved in both trials was Allison Brown, who was first interviewed at CII on March 13, 1984. Her initial medical examination was less than a month later, on April 8. Allison attended the McMartin Preschool from 1981 to 1983. She had nightmares during her time at McMartin about someone coming into her house at night; her father actually nailed her bedroom window shut during that time to ease her mind. The findings on Allison were, in retrospect, quite mixed. Several findings—"rounded hymen," neovascularization—were considered significant in 1984 but would not be considered important by the time of the second trial. Dr. Heger addressed those changes directly in the second trial. Several of the original findings involved scarring.[157] There was a tear to the posterior fourchette (the mucous membrane forming the posterior margin of the vulva). Dr. Heger testified that "to a medical certainty" these were not the kind of scars that could have been self-inflicted or accidentally incurred.[158] Dr. Paul did not reject those findings entirely; rather, he testified he could not tell if there were one or more scars. Multiple scars would presumably be a stronger finding than a single scar. But allowing that there was at least one scar seems to indicate there was some kind of attendant injury.

Whatever the number of scars, it is important to consider the weight that should be given to Dr. Paul's testimony. The witch-hunt narrative seems to accept it all without question, and apparently without looking closely enough to see that he did not reject all of the state's evidence. There is no question he made statements that were eminently quotable. He was also firm in his opinions, concise in his statements, and unfailingly British in delivery ("You have to be jolly careful" about magnifying photographic images, he said at one point[159]). But his critique of the colposcope, however quotable, was deeply flawed. The colposcope became the basis for controlled studies about "normals." It is also what allowed the findings in the McMartin case to be examined by other doctors.

It is not surprising that Dr. Paul knew little about the colposcope. He was trained in the 1950s and the device did not start being used in the United States until the early 1980s. One of the strangest arguments offered against the medical evidence in the McMartin case is against the colposcope, a medical instrument "now accepted as the standard of care in most referral centers in the world."[160] Debbie Nathan claimed that use of the device was inspired by the dubious practices of a Brazilian doctor named Wilmes Teixeira.[161] But the colposcope was not introduced to the medical community in the United States by Teixeira's article; the instrument was already well established for use in cervical pathology and for "the diagnosis of early carcinoma in situ."[162] The absurdity of criticizing the colposcope is that the device itself is what allowed Dr. Paul to review the evidence in the McMartin case. It is also what allowed the studies by McCann and others of "normals." Every advance in medical knowledge in this area is based, in part, on the colposcope. Dr. Heger's use in 1984 was pioneering and prescient.

Dr. Paul also had some decidedly unusual methods—such as inserting his finger into a child as a way of measurement. The witch-hunt narrative was quick to label a Minnesota pediatrician, who testified for the state in the Jordan cases, as a *child abuser* for having engaged in this practice.[163] But the narrative heaps only praise on Dr. Paul, despite this unusual practice, along with his inexplicable objection to taking a medical history from a child, and his absurd claims about assessing the honesty of children by observing their "eye contact."[164] Although Dr. Paul faded from the field after his appearance in the McMartin case, Dr. Heger went on to considerable professional prominence. She coauthored a major textbook on evaluating sexually abused children and was the medical expert who helped identify problems at Children's Hospital in San Diego in 1992.[165] She was also one of the peer reviewers of the famous McCann study.[166] Her original evaluations of children in the McMartin case were definitely overstated, but there was also considerable evidence that remained significant over time on all three of these girls.

Beyond the three girls who participated in both trials, there was medical evidence presented for most of the remaining children who participated in the first trial. Two of the boys were reported to be "within normal limits"; that is, their medical evaluations resulted in no medical evidence of sexual abuse. The medical evidence concerning the five other children involved in the first trial varied considerably. There were definitely issues of overdiagnosis, but there was also medical evidence that seems significant even with the benefit of advancements in medical knowledge since 1984. There was medical evidence worthy of consideration on at least five of the other children in the first trial.[167] Among these children, there are findings that would still be considered significant today contradicting the central claim in the witch-hunt narrative: that there was virtually no meaningful medical evidence of sexual abuse in the case.

Many of the earliest children in the case also had positive medical findings. Unfortunately, much of that evidence was not fully developed. Of course, evidence involving children who became complainants but dropped out before the preliminary hearing was never subject to cross-examination. Nevertheless, it is important to consider such evidence since the witch-hunt narrative denies the existence of any evidence of abuse. In fact, the medical evaluations of some of the earliest children in the case help explain how and why the case moved forward. There were five September responders who became complainants; only one, Sally Gregg, actually testified at the preliminary hearing. She also went on to trial and retrial, and the medical evidence in her case has already been discussed. Documents indicate that three of the other important September responders had medical signs of sexual abuse as well.[168] The fourth, Tanya Mergili, had some suspicious medical findings, but nothing as strong as with the other three.[169] Finally, there was relevant medical evidence concerning Kathy Ingram, whose family responded to the MBPD in late September 1983. The girl's mother indicated she had a chronic thin watery discharge with a distinctive odor. Dr. Heger told the grand jury that she saw "numerous scars surrounding the entire entrance through the girl's hymenal opening," and some of them "crossed the hymen and had been torn."[170] One of the reported findings is more ambiguous; a "scalloped hymen," though considered relevant at the time, was shown to be far more common in nonabused children than ever known. Another finding on Kathy Ingram was also, in retrospect, given too much importance at the time: neovascularization. This was thought to be a sign of new blood vessels, but it can also be congenital. Nevertheless, if the scarring evidence was accurate, it would still be considered highly significant today. Indeed, it would be unthinkable for authorities to ignore evidence of this nature.

In sum, the medical evaluations helped to support the state's case in McMartin—and, ironically, they also helped to undermine it. The latter effect was ultimately more powerful, since the overdiagnosis of many children in early 1984 fueled the idea that the case involved dozens, if not hundreds, of children. It also gave parents a strong reason to believe their children must have been abused, regardless of what else they said about the matter. The damage caused by the overdiagnosis was enormous, and it undoubtedly helped doom the case. But the witch-hunt narrative that has since emerged does an injustice in the other direction: it ignores or dismisses credible medical evidence of sexual abuse that would still be recognized today.

The Confluence of Forces Beyond CII

The mistakes that were made at CII are pivotal to explaining how the McMartin case spun out of control. The interviewers, in an earnest attempt to avoid dismissing children's voices, "heard" far more than they were actually told. Convinced that the children were afraid to talk, they coaxed responses that seemed to confirm their view. Faced with the implausible idea that all of the teachers in the school participated in the abuse, they came up with a conspiracy theory about a national network of child pornographers. These problems were compounded significantly when medical evaluations "confirmed" that most of the children interviewed in the first few months at CII had been abused. Children who made few incriminating statements, if any, were seen in an entirely different light because the evaluators "knew" they showed medical signs of abuse. The chance that parents might view the CII videotapes skeptically was virtually eliminated when they were presented with medical evidence "confirming" the abuse. The toxic combination of these problems explains a lot about why the case went so wrong. But three factors external to CII are also important to understanding the story. First, there were activist parents and therapists who provided substantial reinforcement to an emerging view of the case in 1984. Second, a barrage of national publicity that came long before a grand jury was ever convened changed the dynamics of the case in such a way as to accentuate the extremes. Finally, the Los Angeles District Attorney's Office, which was responsible for actually charging and prosecuting the case, failed in a variety of ways.

Parent-Investigators and Activist-Therapists

One factor that undoubtedly influenced the content and intensity of beliefs that developed around the McMartin case was the role of parent-investigators and activist-therapists. Parents started becoming investigators in middle to late December 1983, when the idea that the McMartin case involved activities beyond the school grounds first began to take shape. Various houses in and around Manhattan Beach were mentioned as possible places where children had been taken. Some parents drove their children around Manhattan Beach and surrounding communities, asking them to point out places they may have been taken. A number of the children apparently provided affirmative answers, further fueling the idea that the case involved parties well beyond the preschool. In late December, various parents start reporting addresses of suspect houses to the MBPD. This soon evolved into the reporting of suspects in general, as parents reported license plates of "suspicious" individuals, an assessment made on the basis of how their child reacted to, say, a stranger in a pizza parlor. The documentation of these events is all in the form of police and DA's investigator notes. From existing records, it is impossible to know what these children were actually asked or how they actually answered.

It is also difficult to ascertain how much of this amateur investigation was requested or encouraged by authorities. Some of it definitely was. A number of parents were given photographs of buildings to show their children; the photos came from the MBPD and were circulated in December 1983 and January 1984.[171] But some of the parents took matters into their own hands. One of the parents who played a leading role in these efforts was Robert Currie, who was portrayed in the movie *Indictment* as yelling at the chief of the Manhattan Beach Police Department:

> I'm going to ask you, this is about the thousandth time, for the grand jury transcripts and the police report. I mean, if you won't pursue this, we'll conduct our own investigation!

Investigator notes from the DA's office indicate that Robert Currie was providing the FBI with photos of possible additional suspects as early as February 3, 1984—the day the case began receiving intensive media coverage. Sociology professor Jeffrey Victor eventually identified Currie as one of the "carriers" of the satanic cult legend that swept through this community.[172] Currie led a group of parents who started to dig at the site of the preschool in 1985 because they were convinced they would find dead animals, killed to scare the children into silence. Some of these parents also believed there were tunnels underneath the school where children had been abused. The district attorney's office had the area cordoned off and conducted their own dig—which did not turn up any evidence of tunnels. They did find some tortoise shells, which were the subject of considerable attention at the eventual trial with competing experts arguing about whether the turtles had died of natural causes.

Another parent who was extraordinarily involved in the early investigation was Madeline Randle, whose daughter attended the preschool with Tanya Mergili. Randle's amateur investigative work was dutifully reported to the DA's investigator. She was one of the parents who drove children around Manhattan Beach and surrounding areas to see if particular houses looked familiar. Two notations from police investigative notes in early January reveal the extent of her activity:

> 1/6/84 Randle: "Daughter Molly picked a yellow house. 829 2nd Str. Hermosa Beach as place where Ray took her." "Girls independently ID same house."
>
> 1/11/84 Randle: "2 more licenses for Jean." "Molly IDs all three houses with absolutely no help from mother."[173]

The final notation might be a reference to some photos of buildings prepared by the MBPD. There is no question that Randle went overboard in her efforts. Through her own "investigation," this parent convinced herself that the case involved numerous buildings beyond the preschool; this "fact" alone helped reinforce the view that the case had to have multiple defendants. On February 16, she provided "a two-page handwritten letter re a dark skinned oriental they saw @ Cocos in M.B."[174] She also supplied a license plate number for the "suspects." This letter was received the same day the investigator received a two-page communication from Judy Johnson about satanic cults. The prosecution would later be charged with withholding vital evidence from the defense by not disclosing Johnson's strange allegations. It is not clear whether Randle's equally dubious theories were ever disclosed to the defense. But the fact that she was writing about a suspicious "dark skinned oriental" at the same time Johnson was imagining satanic cults indicates that something was in the air. Something was happening in the community. Johnson's statements in February were just one of many such claims, none of which ever amounted to anything.

The parent-investigators reinforced the sense that the CII view of the case was correct. These parents "confirmed" places, and they helped account for the fact that the formal investigation spread to Harry's Market, a Nautilus gym, several farms, and various churches and day-care centers. Parents also became a political force, lobbying on issues including a bill to allow children to testify by closed-circuit television. The most ardent of this group financed another effort to find tunnels under the school in 1990. Curiously, the most active parents did *not* actually have children in the case.[175] But they certainly had an effect on how the case was perceived. Some of these parents also formed an organization called Believe the Children, a support group for parents of children in day-care abuse cases; it also had the stated goal of addressing the "sexual and ritual exploitation of children." Believe the Children began in Manhattan Beach and was later run out of Chicago, the location of the Rogers Park case (discussed in Chapter Three). The organization had, at most, several hundred members and a very limited budget. Richard Beck recently cast such groups as right-wing, but nothing in their newsletters supports this claim.[176]

Therapists also exerted influence on parents and investigators by adding a professional stamp of approval to various claims, particularly the focus on satanic ritual abuse. They were not part of the criminal case, however, and their records would be subject to discovery only in civil litigation, which never came to pass; so they were largely hidden from view. But they were deeply involved. A small number of therapists accounted for all of the children at the preliminary hearing. One therapist, Cheryl Kent, was seeing nine of the fourteen children in the preliminary hearing.[177] Wade Green, who was discredited at the preliminary hearing after making increasingly implausible claims, had Michele Dugan as a therapist. According to Glenn Stevens, the prosecutor who quit his job during the case, these therapists used devil puppets in their therapy.[178] Stevens also noted that "most or all the children who made tunnel claims were going to the same therapist." Documents from the DA's office support this observation. Many of these therapists also met as a support group. Even though the need for support makes sense, it is likely to create a dangerous echo chamber of sorts if appropriate precautions are not taken. When various children described similar but implausible things, these therapists viewed it as proof of the widespread existence of their theory—rather than proof that their theory had taken hold of their view of the case. The therapists got so caught up in the satanic abuse theme that some of them persisted well into the 1990s with their conspiratorial theories.[179]

It should be noted, however, that the extremism was not limited to one side. There have been a number of dubious conspiracy-theory claims made by case critics as well. When there was a fire at the McMartin school site on April 8, 1984, the Eberles jumped to the conclusion that a roving band of crazed

McMartin local parents "torched" the school.[180] But, as reported in a local newspaper on May 26, the man arrested for the arson had no connection to the McMartin case.[181] Yet the implication that "McMartin parents" torched the preschool has become part of the urban folklore of the witch-hunt narrative. The arson is described in the same misleading way in the movie *Indictment*, which was promoted and praised on the basis of its alleged fidelity to the facts. Curiously, Abby Mann also had a suspicious fire at his own house. This was in 1993, when *Indictment* had just started filming. Mann rushed to judgment and blamed crazed McMartin parents. He later blamed the U.S. attorney, when the FBI concluded there was no link between the suspicious fire at his house and the parents in the McMartin case.[182]

Massive Media Coverage

"The gaze of the world is a fickle, intoxicating thing," Lisa Belkin wrote in 1999 about the effects of national media attention on a public-housing lawsuit in Yonkers, New York. When television cameras turned their attention to Yonkers, "they magnified and electrified events, changing the body language of the combatants and sharpening the tone of their words."[183] The media attention on Yonkers was nothing compared to what happened fifteen years earlier in the McMartin case. On February 2, 1984 the beginning of the rating sweeps week, the ABC television affiliate in Los Angeles aired the first in a series of "exclusive" stories about sexual abuse at the McMartin Preschool. The stories were long, detailed, and sensationalistic. The reporter, Wayne Satz, claimed that sixty children—basically the total number of children interviewed at CII since November 1, 1983—had been sexually abused at the McMartin Preschool and scared into silence through physical threats and the killing of small animals (rabbits, turtles).

These stories had the requisite number of qualifiers to protect the station against libel actions, but they nevertheless left the distinct impression that the allegations were true. And this is precisely how they were seen. The regular Channel 10 news anchors weighed in with dismay and editorial-like approval of the reporting.[184] The stories were "exclusives." Satz had some kind of "exclusive" access to someone (or more than one person) at CII. Because they were "exclusives," the rest of the media was reduced, at least initially, to the role of reporting on KABC's stories. It is not clear whether Satz was given access to the CII videotapes or whether he relied on sources at CII that described the children's interviews to him. Whatever the specific basis for these stories, they were definitely prepared with the knowledge and assistance of Kee MacFarlane.[185] Night after night, there were new stories at the beginning of the broadcast. In retrospect, what is most remarkable about the airing of these stories is that they were aired before the case was even sent to a grand jury. No one had yet been arrested.

KABC later placed full page advertisements touting their McMartin coverage under the headline "Sometimes Being the Only One With All the Serious News Makes Us Feel Lousy." "We feel lousy because the story is so awful," the ad continued. But, as the ad explained, the story "has to be told because it can be the catalyst to provoke public outrage demanding better protection of our children." It is no wonder the media was later accused of participating in a moral crusade. KABC basically took credit for launching a crusade.

The early media coverage, which appeared to document widespread sexual abuse at the McMartin Preschool, enraged parents who understandably felt that "nothing was being done" about a seemingly widespread problem. After all, by the time these stories aired, it had been almost four months since Assistant DA Jean Matusinka referred the case to CII, and the investigation had produced no arrests. The Satz stories fueled the idea that there was much more to the case than had been reported. After the first story was broadcast, the DA's chief investigator started receiving phone calls that reflected a new level of fear and paranoia. Investigator Brunetti's notes, dated 8:00 p.m. on February 2, contain a report of "a scary man at Magic Pizza."[186] The parents furnished a license plate number. The next day, Robert Currie was giving photos of possible additional suspects to the FBI. Within two weeks, numerous mothers were calling the DA's investigator to report all kinds of fantastic things. These stories were mutually reinforcing, and a view formed that it was the largest child sex-abuse case in history.

The intense media spotlight magnified the forces that rushed the case to the grand jury and resulted in such broad indictments. There were almost a dozen national news stories about the McMartin case in the month of March. Glenn Stevens later described it as a period of "intense pressure" at the DA's office. This is when some of the worst and most fateful decisions about the case were made—from what charges to present to the grand jury to how to handle the question of bail.

The period of most intense media coverage—the time from which almost all the egregious examples of media stories are taken—was surprisingly short for a case that lasted seven years. The months of February through May 1984 were by far the worst time in this regard, though the period is described as much longer in the witch-hunt narrative. Philip Jenkins has claimed there were "high-profile national stories *throughout 1984*." Curiously, he cites four media reports in support of the proposition: three from the first week in April 1984 and one from the third week in May.[187] In fact, coverage of the McMartin case dropped off significantly during the final six months of 1984. The national media had nothing to report again until January 1985, when the first child testified in the preliminary hearing. But there was intense coverage from February 2 through the end of May. Emotions were running high, and the media was in a frenzy. When Stevens went to the McMartin preschool to film the layout in early May, his notes indicate "Residents seem angry. Media arrives by helicopter."

That the period of media excess lasted months, not years, does not diminish the damage done in the critical period when the McMartin case was charged and bail decisions were made on the seven defendants, five of whom were initially held without bail. Two of those five were in the McMartin family; the other three (Betty Raidor, Babette Spitler, and Mary Ann Jackson) were unrelated teachers. The injustice to those teachers cannot be overstated.

In short, the media was a major culprit in the McMartin case. It might even seem like the primary culprit at first glance—but the stories could not have been done without cooperation from one or more people at CII. Moreover, the case would not have become a case without the decisions made by the Los Angeles DA. The complicity of CII in these stories is arguably more objectionable than the stories themselves because social workers at CII had a professional obligation to keep details of the investigation confidential.

David Shaw, media critic for the *Los Angeles Times,* won a Pulitzer Prize for criticizing his own newspaper's coverage of the McMartin case. Although his four-part series, which began the day after the original McMartin verdicts, was actually broader than that, Shaw laid considerable blame for the McMartin debacle at the media's credulous early acceptance of virtually everything said against the defendants. The argument has considerable force.

Prosecutorial Failures

The DA's actions in the case came after various other actors—particularly CII staff, a number of therapists, and the media—had wreaked havoc. Those forces created enormous pressure to bring a significant number of charges soon. Of course, this does not absolve the prosecutors of responsibility for their mistakes. Indeed, the Los Angeles District Attorney's Office bears primary responsibility for three of the worst mistakes in the McMartin case: failing to supervise the CII process, charging the case without adequately reviewing the evidence, and approaching the case in political, not professional prosecutorial, terms. Avoiding any of these mistakes might have resulted in a narrowly charged case that did not involve fantastic claims and include inappropriate defendants. Those mistakes were all much worse than what later became the rallying cry for criticisms of the prosecution: their failure to provide the defense with notes concerning Judy Johnson's February 1984 rantings.[188]

Neglecting to Supervise the CII Process

Although the DA's office invited CII to evaluate children in the McMartin case, there was no clear agreement in advance about the scope or purpose of the CII interviews. The interviewers did not see themselves, at least originally, as investigators; they were evaluating children and supplying information to the DA. But the interviews soon became investigative. The CII interviewers even showed the children "photo lineups" of possible suspects and places. Some, or possibly all, of those photos originated with the MBPD; it is not clear from available records what role was played by the DA's office. But either they facilitated a bad idea or they failed to see how the investigation was being compromised.

Overall, the LA District Attorney's Office paid scant attention while the process evolved at CII between November 1983 and early February 1984. They did not review interview tapes and they did not offer feedback, but rather relied almost entirely on reports from CII. Those reports were not informed by forensic considerations. The impressions of interviews, often reduced to shorthand notations in the video log, ended up playing far too large a role in shaping the case. How the children were interviewed became the focus of the defense in the case. This was a direct function of the DA's office allowing the process to move along for months without paying close attention, let alone offering a prosecutor's skepticism to evidence they would have to defend in court.

Charging the Case Without Reviewing the Evidence

The DA's office was caught unprepared when the media spotlight hit them on February 2, 1984, with a story that suggested there was widespread sexual abuse at the McMartin Preschool and the government was dragging its feet in response. The most active parents had already been busy for weeks "investigating" the case and organizing other parents. The early stages of organizing meant convincing other parents to have their children evaluated at CII. The success of the effort is demonstrated through the remarkable fact that CII never solicited anyone to come in for an evaluation but ultimately interviewed more than four hundred children. There were some referrals through the DA's office, but in December 1983 and January 1984 it appears the long waiting list that developed was generated almost entirely by parents being convinced by other parents to participate.

While that process was still in progress, the DA's office rushed the case to the grand jury. The CII investigation, or evaluation, was still very much in progress; in fact, they had interviewed only about half of the children they would ultimately evaluate.[189] Remarkably, the DA's office took the case to the grand jury in early March without having reviewed almost any the CII videotapes, which were supposedly the state's primary evidence. The DA's investigator had obtained statements from Kee MacFarlane about the content of the interviews, but they had not independently reviewed the evidence.[190] As MacFarlane told it, the videotapes documented children who were initially too scared to talk but who, through skilled questioning and the use of puppets, ultimately unburdened themselves of various "yucky secrets." But those videotapes ended up being most useful to the defense. The DA's office did not realize the problems posed by the tapes until well after they had charged the case. This is probably the most egregious error in the case because it did not involve a judgment call, or possibly a good-faith difference of opinion. It was pure shoddiness.

This dereliction of duty was compounded when prosecutors filed an additional two hundred counts against the defendants in May. Twenty-four children were added to the case. Investigative notes from the DA's office indicate they "processed" twenty-seven names at a two-hour meeting in May. This meant no more than an average of about five minutes to discuss an interview, the medical evidence, and the likely nature of parental cooperation for each child. This abbreviated "processing" was, at least for questions concerning the content of the children's allegations, based entirely on the videotape log notes and the recollections of the interviewers. There was no independent review of the actual interviews until after the charges were finalized. The new charges added the potential of prison sentences in the hundreds of years. Stevens later admitted it was "a huge rush" to announce those charges and the potential sentences.[191] Inventory logs indicate he had not yet reviewed *any* of the CII videotapes at the time.

The grand jury, which met for only a few days in March, became what lawyers sometimes call a runaway train. They indicted someone the district attorney did not ask them to indict: Virginia McMartin, the wheelchair-bound grandmother. All told, the grand jury indicted seven people: Ray Buckey; his sister, Peggy Ann; their mother, Peggy; their grandmother, Virginia; and three other teachers from the preschool, Babette Spitler, Mary Ann Jackson, and Betty Raidor. A review of the grand jury transcripts reveals a combination of relevant medical evidence on some children, and cursory but reinforcing testimony from eighteen children and some parents. Much of the testimony focuses on Ray and Peggy Buckey, but apparently the grand jury also brought charges against anyone else a child named. The prosecutors had decided that the would-be allegations against Virginia McMartin were not credible, or perhaps they simply shied away from the specter of charging a grandmother. But the grand jury saw no reason to draw distinctions between possible defendants and took a kind of all-or-nothing approach. Ironically, by accepting "all" of the claims, they helped to ensure that ultimately "none" would result in convictions.

Politics over Professionalism

Political factors were also apparently more important than professional ones when it came to key decisions in the Los Angeles County District Attorney's Office. Rushing the case to the grand jury in early March was undoubtedly a product of the media coverage and the attendant need for Robert Philibosian, the elected district attorney, to show he was "doing something." This was apparently more important than taking the considerable time it would have required to evaluate the case thoroughly before going to the grand jury. The DA also made a critical decision that has largely been lost to history: he brought in prosecutors with experience in handling "high-profile" cases, mostly murder cases. The new prosecutors added the two-hundred-plus charges in May. Beyond rushing the case to the grand jury, the DA, who was up for election in June 1984, blatantly used the case for publicity. He appeared at court hearings and frequently gave press conferences in the hallway. Philibosian's media strategy did not succeed; he lost the election to Ira Reiner.

The Brutal Preliminary Hearing

Although the actual trial did not begin until 1987, there is a good argument that the case was effectively over in January or February 1985. This is when the first two children testified at the preliminary hearing. It is also when it became apparent that the prosecution would not be able to prove its case beyond a reasonable doubt. Some of the children's testimony included incredible claims that *had* to create reasonable doubt (one boy testified that his teacher took him to a cemetery, where human bodies were exhumed and cut with knives to scare the children). It also became clear in the preliminary hearing that the CII interviews, on which the case largely rested, actually raised more questions than they answered.

The hearing lasted seventeen months and was the longest preliminary hearing in California history. There were several explanations for its taking so long. First, the parents of some children helped to delay the case in order to lobby the California legislature for adopting new provisions for children to testify by closed-circuit television. Second and more important, there were seven defendants, which meant every witness was subject to possible cross-examination by seven defense lawyers.

The most important developments in the case occurred during this pre-trial period. First, the number of complainants was winnowed from the original forty-one to fourteen who actually testified at the preliminary hearing. Second, the number of defendants was also brought down significantly. Although the preliminary hearing resulted in a technical victory for the prosecution—that is, all seven defendants were held over for trial—in perhaps the most dramatic single moment in the case, District Attorney Reiner dropped charges against five of the defendants shortly after the preliminary hearing ended. The story behind the dismissal of charges against most of the defendants is explained in the witch-hunt narrative; the winnowing of complainants is not.

The preliminary hearing is best remembered for the fantastic claims made by several children. The second boy on the stand said he had been forced to drink rabbit's blood. He made the statement during his fourteenth day on the stand.[192] Another boy testified he had watched as McMartin teachers dug up corpses and mutilated them to scare the children. As prosecutor Stevens put it, "the kids are falling apart."[193] A contributing reason was that the preliminary hearing was brutal; the children who testified at the hearing were savaged by the process of cross-examination. The second boy was on the stand for seventeen days, sixteen of them in being cross-examined. "Trial by ordeal" is how John Jackson described the process in the Torrance (California) *Daily Breeze*.[194] In another story about how the children were experiencing "a legal battering," *People* magazine focused on a thirty-two-minute span during which defense attorney Danny Davis used the word *kill* twenty-four times while questioning a young girl.[195] The prosecution pleaded without success for the judge to constrain cross-examination. Some parents withdrew their children from the case because they saw what happened to the first few children in the preliminary hearing. Others refused to go forward without being able to have their children testify by closed-circuit television. Their concerns were not exaggerated. Even after defecting from the DA's office, Stevens described what happened to the children as "inhumane" and how Danny Davis acted as "monstrous."[196] This aspect of the case is not included in the witch-hunt narrative.

Remarkably, there was no real strategy to presenting the children's testimony at the preliminary hearing. "The press kept asking why [Walter Gorman] was first in the preliminary hearing," Stevens later told Abby Mann. The boy did not do particularly well as a witness, and the press assumed that the prosecution would open with its strongest witness. It did not. "He was the only kid there that was ready," Stevens later explained.[197] Why the prosecution was not prepared with its witnesses, let alone how they neglected to consider the order of the evidence they presented, remains unclear.

The damage done by those errors is clearer. One can easily see why so many people think that most of the children in the McMartin case made claims about satanic practices and tunnels—things that were inadvertently highlighted in the preliminary hearing. There was no strategic effort to select children whose interviews would be the least susceptible to attack: the earliest and the most spontaneous. Indeed, the earliest interviews were underrepresented at all stages of the case. The thirty-four children interviewed at CII during the first two months accounted for only four of the forty-one criminal complaints in the McMartin case, and only one of these four children made it to trial. On the other hand, more than 70 percent of the forty-one complainants were interviewed after Wayne Satz broke the story on television in early February 1984. The significance of these facts was not appreciated at the time.

The preliminary hearing was a ferocious attack on many adults as well. Parents reported various intimidating tactics by the defense, which was admonished for the investigators they hired.[198] One parent, whose daughter reportedly touched Ray's genitals in the spring of 1983, testified he felt as though *he* were being put on trial.[199] Similarly, the defense put MacFarlane and the rest of the CII staff on trial. They inquired into whether she had been sexually abused as a child and into the details of her relationship with Satz, the reporter who broke the case. There were long sidebars about the appropriateness of these excursions into issues of admittedly remote relevance. Judge Bobb was generally ineffective in containing these detours.

After the judge ruled that none of the remaining complainants could testify by closed-circuit television, the state rested its case. Fourteen children had testified; none of the remaining children was called. Given what was described as "a mass defection of witnesses," it is not clear how many of those children would have participated if allowed to testify by closed-circuit television. The lowest estimate I have found is six; the remainder presumably dropped out of the case for other reasons. Whatever the number, the judge was required to dismiss all of the charges related to these children.

The decision to drop charges against five of the seven defendants stood in sharp contrast to the implications of holding them over for trial. Judge Bobb's decision to hold them over meant she found probable cause to think the defendants were all guilty; Reiner's decision to drop the charges meant he did not think there was sufficient evidence to prove the allegations. Calling the evidence against the five defendants "incredibly flimsy," Reiner dismissed all of the charges against them. This decision was not a reaction to the judge so much as the end result of the internal discontent on the part of Glenn Stevens. In the six months since claiming that "the kids are falling apart," he had second thoughts about the evidence. His expression of those misgivings, offered within the confines of the DA's office, resulted in a dramatic story in a local newspaper. "McMartin Quandary," the *Daily Breeze* announced in an exclusive headline on September 25, 1985. The story reported that one of the McMartin prosecutors was having second thoughts about some (possibly most) of the charges. The DA called for "a candid and complete" evaluation of the evidence.[200] It resulted in a confidential memorandum written in December in which Stevens detailed two conclusions: (1) he did *not* find the evidence against the female defendants to be credible enough to justify charges, and (2) he still thought there *was* sufficient evidence to convict Ray Buckey. Stevens resigned in early 1986 and, as his collaboration with Mann deepened, he slowly changed his mind about Ray Buckey.[201] The beginning of the trial was a year away, but the dismissal of so many charges caused *Newsweek* to report in January 1986 "A Child-Abuse Case Implodes."[202]

The Trial and Retrial

The prosecution went forward to trial with eleven of the fourteen children who were involved in the preliminary hearing. The trial was preceded by a highly publicized motion to dismiss, based largely on the tape recordings of conversations between former prosecutor Stevens and screenwriter Mann and his wife and coauthor, Myra. The tapes, which were supposedly made confidentially, were interviews of Stevens by the Manns. Stevens had already signed a secret agreement to sell his story to the Manns and share in the profits of any book or movie.[203] The Manns ultimately turned the tapes over to the defense.[204] They were publicized largely for the obvious and highly unusual story line, involving a prosecutor who switched sides in the middle of a case. The Manns made it clear to Stevens that he would be the hero in their movie, and this is how he was ultimately portrayed. But the hearing revolving around his conversations with the Manns was embarrassing to Stevens in several ways. First, it demonstrated his raw ambition as a prosecutor; he described "what a rush" it had been to charge the original defendants with enough counts to translate into hundreds of years in potential sentences. He also described the McMartin case as "just a career stepping stone."[205] Further, the hearings revealed that Stevens still thought Ray Buckey was guilty when he participated in a toast with the Manns to the acquittal of all defendants.[206] Before leaving the district attorney's office, Stevens wrote a confidential 113-page memo to Gil Garcetti, chief deputy DA, dated January 10, 1986, analyzing the evidence in the case and detailing the problems with how it was investigated. He rejected various claims (among them the idea that children were taken from the preschool to other locations) as "totally unbelievable," but not the entire case. His bottom line was clear: "It is my opinion that Raymond Buckey did in fact molest some of the children at the school."[207] Stevens later allowed that he anticipated receiving "substantial additional sums of money" from the movie, although he had made it clear to the Manns he "can't be made to look like I have any pecuniary interest in the outcome of the case."[208] Although the hearings deflated the value of the much-hyped Mann-Stevens tapes, they did not move the judge. After a three-month hearing, Judge Pounders ruled that the case should, at long last, go to trial.

The trial took two years. The main component was the child witnesses, but an extraordinary amount of time was also spent on medical testimony and on the testimony of social workers and psychologists. There were even several days devoted to battling veterinary testimony, concerning animal bones found in the ground at the preschool. Many of these arguments had been aired at the preliminary hearing. A new claim by the defense, one that would become a mainstay in the witch-hunt narrative, was that many of the charges against Ray Buckey could not have occurred because he was not working at the preschool at the time.

These arguments were popularized by Mary Fischer in a story in *LA Magazine* that included a chart entitled "Where Was Ray?" The chart detailed the attendance periods for eleven children in the trial, arrayed along a timeline conveying that Ray Buckey was "at McMartin Preschool" from 1981 through summer 1983, with the first six months of 1981 designated as "A.M. only."[209] By this reckoning, three of the children at trial attended the preschool *before* Ray was ever there. The claim grew slightly in the movie *Indictment*; actor James Woods, who starred in the movie, claimed, with characteristic indignity, that Ray Buckey was charged with crimes against "four kids who never met him." The *LA Magazine* article has since become a foundational article in the witch-hunt narrative.[210]

This claim was undermined at trial, where prosecutors introduced extensive evidence that placed Ray at the preschool before 1981. The evidence included visual aids for the jury that contradicted the chart in *LA Magazine*, backed up by pay stubs, entries in Virginia's journal, photographs, and testimony by parents corroborating the fact that Ray Buckey was at the preschool before 1981. He just was not there *full-time* before 1981, but he was there doing odd jobs, hanging around, and working as an aide in a class with children who, according to the witch-hunt narrative, had never met him. Several parents who were never part of the criminal proceedings, and who told the MBPD they had no information about sexual abuse at the preschool, verified that Ray was at the preschool in 1980 and earlier.[211] A former college student testified that, as part of a class at El Camino College in the fall semester of 1980, she observed at the McMartin Preschool. This was more than a year before the *LA Magazine* chart places Ray "at" the school, but the ex-student testified she saw him there on many occasions between September and December (1980) "observing and helping out."[212]

There was also extensive evidence concerning his character and behavior. Was there any reason to think he might be the kind of person to sexually abuse children? This is inevitably an important question for the jury in any child molestation case. Had there been any complaints or concerns about Ray Buckey? The question is particularly relevant in cases with multiple complainants. In this case, the answer to both questions was yes, but you would never know it from the witch-hunt narrative. Nathan and Snedeker assert that "when [Ray] took a job at his family's preschool, the move was hailed as evidence that Ray was finally figuring out what to do with himself."[213] It is not clear from this oblique assertion to whom this was hailed as such evidence, or why they needed it.[214] But there was evidence introduced in the trial to contradict that view. There had been concerns raised about Ray Buckey's behavior around children, both by his family and by others. Darlene Gregg testified that Betty Raidor, a teacher at the school, registered "concern" about Ray. One of his friends told the police that Ray was abusing alcohol at the time, and possibly much stronger drugs.[215]

Neighbors remember him throwing violent temper tantrums outside, screaming and crying "I hate my life." There was also an entry in Virginia McMartin's preschool-related dairy about Ray having "troubles" in April 1981.[216] In short, the record is replete with evidence that supports the conclusion, included in one case study written about the McMartin case, that Ray Buckey was "a strange and troubled individual, who, even if not a child molester, had no business being entrusted with the care of young children."[217]

More significantly, there had been prior complaints about Ray Buckey—specifically about inappropriate exposure of his genitals in various situations. Several neighbors told police that he masturbated in his bedroom in plain view of the neighbors, declining to pull down shades or turn off lights.[218] Donna Ennis, a mother otherwise unconnected to the case, testified she scolded Ray in 1981 for not keeping his genitials covered during pre-match exercises with eleven- and twelve-year-old girls on a soccer team he helped coach.[219] Donald Spitler, husband of McMartin teacher Babette Spitler, was the main coach. Ennis testified she told Buckey "he ought not to be on a girls' soccer team if he was not going to wear underwear" and she complained directly to Donald Spitler, who apparently made sure Buckey wore sweat pants at future events.[220] Brett Weisberg, who worked briefly as a teacher's aide at the McMartin preschool, testified that Ray would sit so as to expose his genitals and frequently had a child on his lap.[221] There was even a notation in Virginia McMartin's diary in the spring of 1983, months before the case broke, about an incident involving a child touching Ray's penis. (McMartin later blamed the girl's father and spoke of the incident as if Ray played no role whatsoever.[222] The girl's father, incidentally, had picked her up one day from the preschool and found Ray "in the middle of the playground," with children around, "exposed and not wearing underwear."[223])

Testimony from two loyalist parents who stuck with the McMartins long after the letter from the MBPD revealed a bizarre response from Peggy Buckey to the charges against her son. According to Ellen Chapman, Peggy Buckey told her:

> . . . she would—she had been molested as a child herself, that she would be aware of anything like this going on. That she would always continually watch Ray when the children were sitting on his lap or hanging on his neck, um, that if he ever had a hard-on, that she would have noticed it.[224]

Trisha Walters's mother had a similar story. She once saw Ray with kids on his lap reading *Playboy* magazine. Peggy, apparently not the least surprised, told the mother she "would take care of it." Mrs. Buckey later testified she did not think Ray's behavior was a problem:

> Q: What would you say about a teacher of children that age who would be reading *Playboy* magazine while students are in the classroom?
>
> A: I believe it's a very popular magazine, so I really wouldn't have much to say about it.

She was also asked whether she would be upset if children could see the genitals of a teacher. Making a reference to "modern bathing suits," Mrs. Buckey responded: "I don't know how the poor little kids could help but see everything there is to see if they go to the beach."[225]

The proceedings involved excruciatingly detailed testimony on the smallest points. As the trial dragged on, press coverage became more episodic. The overall question, as most people saw it, was simply whether the jury would believe the children. But the jury was being asked a much more specific question that involved the exacting burden of proof in any criminal case: whether the state had proven the defendant guilty of specific charges *beyond a reasonable doubt*. By 1989, when the case had dragged on for years and children had made so many dubious statements it was impossible to know what to believe, the only drama for assorted observers of the trial was whether the jury would reject all the charges, or end in a mistrial because they could not agree. Those seemed like the most likely outcomes.

What actually happened is a combination of the two. The jury rejected fifty-two of the charges, voting unanimously to acquit Ray and Peggy Buckey of a host of child molestation charges. The jury could not reach a unanimous verdict on twelve child molestation charges involving Ray Buckey and one conspiracy charge involving his mother.[226] Judge Pounders dismissed the conspiracy charge, ending all charges against Peggy Buckey. The results involving Ray Buckey were less clear, especially given the number of charges on which the jury could not agree. At a press conference shortly after the verdict was announced, seven jurors made it clear they thought that children *had* been sexually abused.[227] They just were not certain enough about the details to convict on a "beyond a reasonable doubt" standard of proof.[228] "I never voted innocent; I voted not guilty," said juror Sally Cordova. Asked directly whether she was convinced Ray Buckey was *not* guilty, Cordova responded: "I am not."[229] Juror Julie Peters said "the verdicts should not be considered a victory for the defense." Several jurors also made it clear they had doubts about the case largely because of the CII tapes, which "did not help me. They gave me a lot of reasonable doubt," Peters said. This is what makes the case a tragedy. Despite the best intentions of the interviewers, their efforts actually made the case unwinnable and gave the witch-hunt narrative its signature song.

The verdict was received with shock and outrage by some parents of children in the case, and some parents of children who were never in the case. But there is little evidence that this view captured public opinion at large. There were commentaries on whether courts were sufficiently child-centered, or put differently, whether they were too adult-centered to be fair to children. Outspoken parents who thought Ray Buckey—and maybe even Peggy Buckey and others—should have been convicted were quoted extensively on television in the days after the verdict arguing for a retrial. There were also voices in favor of dropping the remaining charges. An editorial in the *Washington Post* praised the jury.[230] The DA decided to retry Ray Buckey, assigning new prosecutors to the case. There was an abbreviated trial held in the spring and early summer of 1990, where the lead prosecutor misstated some basic facts in his opening statement, raising questions about whether the DA's office was dedicated to the retrial. In what seemed a fitting conclusion at the time, the jury ultimately deadlocked on all eight charges, although the extent of the split varied significantly by charge. (The strongest vote for the prosecution was 8-4 on one charge involving the first girl; the strongest vote for the defense was 11-1 against conviction on all three charges involving the third girl.) "I don't know that you can get 12 people together to agree on this case," said juror Lloyd, who voted for conviction on the one charge that he concluded was "spontaneously disclosed."[231] Everyone agreed there should not be a third trial. Within hours, the Los Angeles County District Attorney's Office announced it was dropping all remaining charges against Ray Buckey. Seven years of proceedings, $15 million in public expenditures—most of which funded the defense—resulted in not a single conviction.

Conclusions

The McMartin case was doubly unjust. First, it was unjust to the defendants who were charged without sufficient evidence or adequate investigation. Several defendants were held without bail, some for an extended period of time. Babette Spitler had her children taken away for a while, and Peggy Ann Buckey, Ray's sister, lost her teaching credential. (It was later reinstated.[232]) There was an unfathomable personal and financial toll to these people, who were falsely accused in an environment where they were publicly castigated before they were even charged with anything. For most of the defendants, the case was a monumental injustice.

But the case was also unjust to children. Some were brutalized by the judicial process, particularly in the preliminary hearing. Although that was widely recognized when it occurred in 1985, it was long since forgotten by the end of the McMartin case in January 1990. There were also children who had been sexually abused but who never received justice and instead have been demeaned by the witch-hunt narrative's assertion that the entire case was a "hoax."

The McMartin case began as a morality play about the failure to protect children. It ended as a morality play about the failure to protect civil liberties. The final step in the evolution of how the case has come to be remembered was the complete negation of the evidence of abuse elaborated in this chapter. This development marked the triumph of the witch-hunt narrative. It also marked a change in attitude about the case from one of complexity and confusion—which characterized the case in its later stages—to one of moral clarity. In this regard, the case came full circle.

It is ironic that those who saw the inappropriateness of the original moral framework were not more suspicious of the stark opposite view. Not surprisingly, both caricatures are inadequate representations of the complicated underlying facts. This chapter ends, then, with the puzzle posed by the juxtaposition of the considerable evidence of guilt in the case with the rise of a witch-hunt narrative that denies all of the evidence. Just as one must ask how supporters of the prosecution were able to ignore the seemingly obvious problems with the case, it is important to ask how case critics have been able to minimize or deny all of the evidence of guilt.

The most obvious reason the witch-hunt narrative has become dominant is that it is by far the larger of the two opposing stories. Five or six defendants[233] were charged with heinous crimes they did not commit, and dozens of others were cast under a cloud of suspicion for the flimsiest of reasons while the Sheriff's Ritual Abuse Task Force followed dozens of "leads." If there has to be one simple storyline for the McMartin case, the witch-hunt narrative fits much better than the alternative. The alternative—focusing on the evidence of abuse and the travails of the children—is undoubtedly the smaller story. But it is an important story, nonetheless.

Why haven't both stories been maintained, side by side, for history? The McMartin case was, after all, a dual tragedy. It was tragic for the defendants who should not have been charged, and it was tragic for the children who were mistreated and those who were never appropriately vindicated. But only one of those tragedies has been remembered over time. The most general explanation is that dual tragedies are cognitively and politically difficult to acknowledge. It is difficult to worry about defendants who should not have been charged *and* about children who were never vindicated, particularly since measures to remedy one problem might be seen as exacerbating the other one. The first problem seems to cry out for more skepticism about children's testimony, while the second cries out for taking children more seriously. Political interests have organized around these problems, as well. The members of VOCAL (Victims of Children Abuse Laws) are not concerned about children's testimony being summarily dismissed; they are worried about it being accepted too readily. Conversely, members of Believe the Children never evinced any concern about accusations or charges that had no merit; they were focused entirely on the social forces that would minimize or deny the extent of child sexual abuse. As perplexing and challenging as these dual tragedies are, they are not impossible to comprehend together. Indeed, most writing about the case during its final stages conveyed this sense of complexity.

A more specific explanation about why this did not continue is that there has been a crusade to promote the witch-hunt narrative. The view that the case was complicated and conflicting has been lost to history by design, not by accident. A narrative without ambiguity is far more compelling—in court, in print, and in the movies—than a narrative that acknowledges injustice on both sides. The moving forces in promoting the witch-hunt narrative include journalists, defense lawyers, and defense-oriented expert witnesses. What is remarkable is that these actors seem to mirror, in fervor and tactics, the very things they claim to abhor. Instead of disregarding evidence that might point away from guilt, they disregard evidence that points toward it. Instead of automatically believing any child accusation, they seem to automatically believe the denial of any adult. Instead of assuming all of the medical evidence presented by the prosecution must be true, they take the position that it should all be rejected. In this way, the McMartin case provided the foundation for a witch-hunt narrative that would eventually extend well beyond the case.

3

Scrutinizing the Evidence of a National Witch-Hunt

The witch-hunt narrative is a national claim. It is a claim about social trends, the central one being that there were scores of cases just like the McMartin case. In 1987, Debbie Nathan used the phrase "junior McMartins" to describe what she called "a nationwide rash of similar cases."[1] It has since become widely accepted that there were at least one hundred such cases between 1984 and about 1990.[2] They are sometimes referred to as "the day-care sexual abuse cases of the 1980s" and have also been referred to as the "ritual abuse cases of the 1980s," or even the "Satanic ritual abuse cases of the 1980s," although those definitions include cases well beyond the day-care setting. Social psychologist Mary de Young combined most of those labels (and more) into a single book title: *The Day Care Ritual Abuse Moral Panic*. The book repeats the claim that "a hundred or more day care centers and preschools around the country" were investigated for "ritual abuse" during the 1980s.[3] The prominent academic psychologists Stephen Ceci and Maggie Bruck concur in an article that refers to "the McMartin case and *hundreds* of others like it."[4] Carol Hopkins, who founded something called the Justice Committee, has claimed there were one thousand false convictions during this era.[5] Paul Craig Roberts, a syndicated columnist for the *Washington Times*, made an even stronger claim, asserting that there were two thousand such cases.[6] Although claims about the overall number of cases vary, there seems to be almost universal agreement that these cases stemmed from the McMartin case and that there were more than a hundred of them.

This chapter scrutinizes the best evidence that has been put forth for those claims. There are two particularly important lists of case names in the witch-hunt narrative: (1) a list of thirty-six cases from an investigative series in a Memphis, Tennessee, newspaper in 1988; and (2) a list of fifty-four names (representing twenty cases not contained on the first list) in Debbie Nathan's 1995 book with defense lawyer Michael Snedeker called *Satan's Silence: Ritual Abuse and the Making of an American Witch Hunt*.[7] These lists carry the authoritative weight that comes with details such as a full name and accompanying place name. Even though these lists, in the aggregate, do not come close to supporting the claims about hundreds of these cases, they nevertheless constitute an impressive accumulation of case names. However, an intensive examination of these lists reveals they are not well researched; nor, more importantly, do they provide strong support for the witch-hunt claim. The lists are wrong in many instances and are dubious in others, and although they are occasionally largely correct, it is not often enough to support the claim of a national trend. There were, indeed, some frighteningly mismanaged cases during this time, and some charges were brought without sufficient justification. But a few lightning strikes do not create a national lightning epidemic.

Charlier and Downing's List of Thirty-six Cases

Two reporters for a Tennessee newspaper were the first to make an extended argument that there was a national pattern of witch-hunts following the McMartin case.[8] In "Justice Abused: A 1980's Witch-Hunt," a six-part series published in the *Commercial Appeal* in January 1988, Tom Charlier and Shirley Downing purported to identify thirty-six cases around the country that demonstrate this phenomenon. The article had a national map plotting the cases, a full page with abstracts of them, and other graphs and text that seemed to make a convincing argument that investigations across the country had found little or no evidence of sexual abuse but had resulted in a significant number of false accusations or convictions.

The series has become one of the foundational works in the witch-hunt narrative. It has been referred to as "the most comprehensive" source on the day-care sexual abuse cases of the 1980s.[9] Ellen Willis, Nathan's editor at the *Village Voice*, called it "a fine investigative series."[10] A journal published by defense psychologist Ralph Underwager claimed, incorrectly, that the series won a Pulitzer Prize.[11] Law reviews, academic journal articles, and various books have subsequently relied on this list as authoritative.[12] One book even reproduced the summaries of Charlier and Downing's thirty-six cases as a long appendix[13]; this single source accounts for more than a dozen footnotes in the chapter of Nathan and Snedeker's book which also argues that these cases constitute a national trend. None of the sources just mentioned have expressed any doubt about the quality or accuracy of the reporting. To the contrary, the series has been held up as the "most in-depth treatment of these cases."[14]

These uncritical endorsements notwithstanding, a close examination of the cases covered in this series reveals that this list is deeply flawed. Some problems are apparent simply by examining the article on its face.[15] Charlier and

Downing's claim that the thirty-six cases prove a nationwide trend over four years is contradicted by the actual distribution of these cases over time. Thirty-one of the cases are dated by the authors as beginning in a twenty-six-month period between August 1983 and September 1985; there are only three cases for the twenty-seven remaining months covered by the article (see Figure 3.1). But without a graphic representation of the distribution over time, it is not clear to most readers that almost all of the evidence Charlier and Downing offer to prove an alleged four-year trend is from the first two years.

Charlier and Downing's list also appears to be padded through the inclusion of cases that never involved an arrest, let alone prosecution. What kind of witch-hunt or "justice denied" results in no charges whatsoever? Sixteen of the cases never got to the stage of a trial; charges were dropped in some cases and they were never brought in others. One-third of the cases resulted in a conviction, seemingly undercutting the claim of "justice abused." Table 3.1 lists the cases by place name, as they are identified by Charlier and Downing. Notably, only a handful of the cases involved charges "taking place on a large scale," something the article claimed was a feature of these cases. In explaining the series, the authors said that a "pattern emerged . . . most cases evolved from a single incident involving one child, but investigations often triggered runaway inquiries that fed on publicity and parents' worst fears." But many of the thirty-six cases involved a single alleged perpetrator, some involved two, and it is impossible to ascertain the number in several. Only *four* cases clearly involved a large number of alleged perpetrators: the Manhattan Beach case (McMartin); the Kern County cases; the Jordan, Minnesota, cases; and the Memphis case (Georgian Hills). The vast majority of the thirty-six cases in this series do not fit the pattern. Many also do not fit another theme that is repeated throughout the series: day-care abuse. At least ten—almost a third of their evidence—have nothing to do with day-care centers.

The most significant problems, however, are apparent only after doing research. One problem that becomes clear on researching secondary sources is what I call satanic exaggeration. As it turns out, fewer than one-quarter of the thirty-six cases actually fit the primary theme of the series, which combined the idea of witch-hunts over child sexual abuse with claims of ritualistic or satanic overtones. Some of the cases Charlier and Downing discuss had nothing to do with satanic or ritualistic abuse.[16] Moreover, several that *did* involve such elements were clearly based in reality. The Richmond, Virginia, "case" is described as follows:

> Two children believed to have been sexually abused by family members began telling of rituals they allegedly took part in a year earlier. They said they had been forced to witness the slaying of a child, a friend of

Figure 3.1 Plot of Charlier and Downing's Thirty-six Cases.

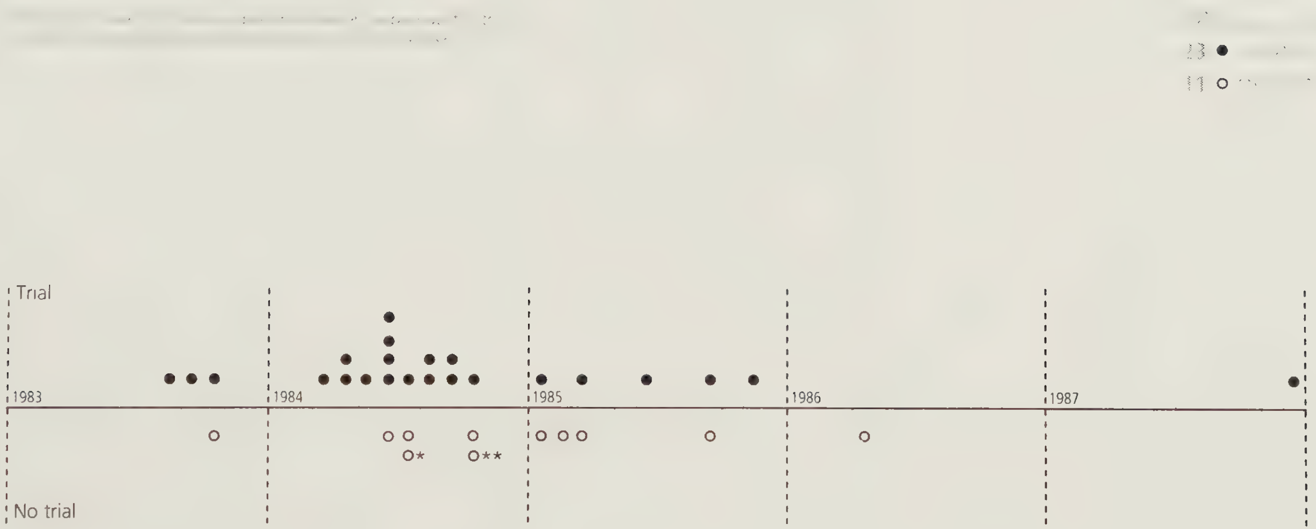

Table 3.1 **Charlier and Downing's Thirty-six Cases, by Date and Case Features**

Name	*Date*	*Day care?*	*Actual trial?*	*Convictions by judge or jury?*
Manhattan Beach, CA	Aug 1983			No
Jordan, MN	Sept 1983	No		No
San Geronimo, CA	Oct 1983		No	No
Bouse, AZ	Oct 1983	No	No	No
Honolulu, HI	Mar 1984			No
Pico Rivera, CA	Apr 1984	No	No	No
Chicago, IL	Apr 1984			
Reno, NV	May 1984			
Spencer Township, OH	June 1984	No	No	No
Memphis, TN	June 1984			
Sacramento, CA	June 1984	No	No	No
Bakersfield, CA	June 1984[a]			
Cincinnati, OH	June 1984	No		No
West Point, NY	July 1984		No	No
Memphis, TN[b]				No
Essex County, NJ	July 1984	No		
LA County, CA	Summer 1984		No	No
Miami, FL	Aug 1984			
Niles, MI	Aug 1984			
Malden, MA	Sept 1984			
Indianapolis, IN	Sept 1984	No		No
LA County, CA	Oct 1984		No	No
Atherton, CA	Oct 1984	No	No	No
Richmond, VA	Fall 1984	No	No	No
Memphis, TN[b]			No	No
Fort Bragg, CA	Jan 1985		No	No
Clarksville, MD	Jan 1985			
New Braintree, MA	Feb 1985		No	No
Wilkes-Barre, PA	Mar 1985		No	No

(continued)

Table 3.1 **(continued)**

Name	*Date*	*Day care?*	*Actual trial?*	*Convictions by judge or jury?*
White Plains, NY	Mar 1985			
El Paso, TX	June 1985			
Carson City, NV	Sept 1985			
Coos Bay, OR	Sept 1985		No	No
Maplewood, NJ	Nov 1985[c]			
Sequim, WA	Apr 1986		No	No
Roseburg, OR	Dec 1987[d]			

[a] Bakersfield actually began in 1982.

[b] Two Memphis cases do not appear on the page with blurbs for each case. If they are the two cases that were connected to Georgian Hills; one was dropped, the other resulted in an acquittal.

[c] Maplewood actually began in May 1985.

[d] Roseburg actually began in July 1987.

> theirs whose decomposed body had been discovered in the woods. . . . The police found burn rings—similar to those left by candles—on the floor of the apartment where the acts were said to have occurred. But the police couldn't tell whether the children were telling the truth or fantasizing. No charges have been filed in the girl's slaying.[17]

The authors never explain why this case was included in their "Justice Abused" series. A dead body was found, the children "were believed to have been sexually abused," and nobody was charged. The injustice appears to have been to the victims. Similarly, the Atherton, California, "case" allegedly involved wild allegations made by a girl after a dead cat was found in her locker at school. The authors do not contest the fact that the case involved something that would merit investigation—a dead cat in a locker. Moreover, they do not explain why a case in which the district attorney considered the evidence insufficient to prosecute anyone would merit inclusion in a series about "justice abused."

A third "case" that fails after basic research of secondary sources is Spencer Township, which the authors incorrectly list as June 1984. (The events occurred in June 1985.) This is Charlier and Downing's entire description:

> Sheriff James Telb and his deputies dug up a swamp in a wooded area, searching for the graves of 50 to 60 people allegedly slain in satanic rites. Despite days of digging, no bodies were found. There were no arrests.[18]

What the authors neglect to acknowledge is that the search was prompted by a confirmed kidnapping case. The search was conducted near a home that had reportedly been abandoned by LeRoy Freeman, who was wanted in the abduction of his seven-year-old granddaughter, Clara Freeman.[19] The girl had been missing for two years and was last seen when he took her on his first court-ordered visitation. "We never said we had cult killings," Sheriff Telb explained when the swamp was searched. "We have a missing child and an awful lot of informants saying this is a burial ground."[20] The authorities also had apparent evidence of cultlike activity of some sort.[21] While playing up the satanic allegations and ignoring the facts that prompted the dig, Charlier and Downing never mentioned what was uncovered in the swamp: "a headless doll with nails driven through its feet and a pentagram attached to its arm, a nine-foot wooden cross with ligatures attached" along with hatchets and knives, and an anatomy dissection book.[22] In October 1988, the missing girl was located in Huntington Beach, California. Freeman pleaded guilty to child stealing two months later.[23]

The claim that all thirty-six cases are bound together by satanic or ritualistic allegations is summarized in a dramatic table labeled Similar Tales. The text at the top reads "Some details occurred over and over in children's statements about alleged abuse," and the table itself lists several dozen "elements" of such cases, with numerous place names or defendants' names listed after each element.[24] For example, one entry in the table reads "Children taken to mortuary: McMartin, Grenada, Torrance, Rolling Hills Estates, Bakersfield." The table creates a powerful impression. "Perhaps the most striking feature of these allegations," law professor Denis Brion would later write, relying entirely on this table, "was the fact that the details of these bizarre activities were altogether similar despite the wide geographic dispersion of these episodes."[25]

But a close examination of the table reveals several problems. First, the "elements" used to weave these cases together are extremely overinclusive. Some are not remotely satanic or ritualistic. A case could be tagged as having "ritualistic" elements for something as common as "activities in the basement" or "Barbie dolls." It apparently made no difference to Charlier and Downing that the day-care operation in the White Plains case, for example, *was* in the basement of Jeanette Martin's house. Similarly, the authors do not explain what is unusual, let alone ritualistic, about children reporting Barbie dolls at a day-care center. Other elements in this table reflected aspects widely known to be involved in the most ordinary child sexual abuse cases. The Bronx case, for example, is noted for only one so-called element, allegations involving oral sex. That is a common type of sexual abuse, and certainly not a marker of anything ritualistic. Similarly, there is nothing ritualistic, or even all that unusual, about "Activities during naptime or trips to rest room"—but seven cases in the table are linked by this feature. A case could be labeled as having ritualistic features if a child claimed to have been pinched or physically abused in any way.

Some of the seemingly least-plausible features in Charlier and Downing's account are employed in a misleading manner. The Richmond case, for example, is listed for one element: "stabbed, or murdered babies or children." But by Charlier and Downing's own account, this case revolved around the discovery of a girl's dead body. So this was not a wild, uncorroborated tale. Other elements were apparently constructed with satanic exaggeration in mind. "Animal sacrifice," for example, clearly suggests something ritualistic, but cases were tagged with this purported element whether or not there were allegations of "sacrifice." There was evidence in the Craig case, for example, that the children saw and maybe even handled a dead rabbit, but nobody described it in terms of sacrifice.

What is most striking about this table is apparently overlooked by the many writers and scholars who have since cited it without skepticism: even by Charlier and Downing's inflated accounting, many of the thirty-six cases involve only one or two of these elements—and many more apparently didn't involve any. Eleven of the cases included in this table have only one or two of the forty-one listed "elements." In short, a handful of the thirty-six cases account for the vast majority of the entries—and several of those cases are never discussed in the article. [26]

But this has not prevented writers and scholars from exaggerating the claims in this article. In a stunning example of satanic exaggeration, Michael Phillips, referring to Charlier and Downing as the "most comprehensive source" on the matter, claimed that "nearly all of the cases they investigated alleged Satanism and pornography."[27] In fact, by Charlier and Downing's account, eight of the original thirty-six cases involved allegations of child pornography—and at least one of those cases never had any claims remotely related to Satanism. In other words, seven cases have been exaggerated into a claim that is five times larger than what the article actually supports. This is without examining the extent to which Charlier and Downing overlooked evidence of guilt in those cases.

Although the series has become famous for the list of thirty-six cases, the actual coverage of those cases varied from extensive to negligible. Three cases received extensive treatment in the series: the McMartin case (Manhattan beach); the Jordan, Minnesota cases; and the Georgian Hills case (Memphis). Eight others are "profiled" in the series, each receiving a few hundred words of coverage (see Table 3.2). The remaining twenty-five received very little coverage. Many are mentioned only in short abstracts that fill one full page in the

Table 3.2 **Details on the Eleven Cases Highlighted by Charlier and Downing**

Name	*Date*	*No. Defendants*	*Actual trial?*	*Significant evidence of abuse?*	*Unjustified criminal charges?*
Manhattan Beach, CA	Aug 1983	7	Yes	Yes	Yes
Jordan, MN	Sept 1983	28	Yes	Yes	Yes
Chicago, IL	Apr 1984	1	Yes	Yes	No
Memphis, TN	June 1984	4	Yes	Yes	Yes
Sacramento, CA	June 1984	2	No	No	Yes
Cincinnati, OH	June 1984	4	Yes	No	Yes
Bakersfield, CA	June 1984	35	Yes	Yes	Yes
Malden, MA	Sept 1984	3	Yes	Undetermined	Undetermined
Fort Bragg, CA	Jan 1985	2	No	Yes	No
Clarksville, MD	Jan 1985	2	Yes	Yes	No
Sequim, WA	Apr 1986	2	No	Yes	No

series. For those cases, it is difficult to ascertain much about the underlying facts or the specific nature of Charlier and Downing's concern. The plan for this book evolved into an effort to research all thirty-six cases. Almost fifteen years of effort produced extensive information on most of these cases, but not all. Some of the research was still in progress when this book went to press, and a few cases proved impossible to crack. One of the eleven cases highlighted in the series—those from Jordan, Minnesota—will be the subject of a separate publication. Extensive research into the Jordan cases reveals substantial evidence of abuse alongside strong evidence that there were unjustified charges.

What is most striking about the highlighted cases is how many involved significant evidence of abuse. There are two clear exceptions; notably, neither one occurred in a day-care setting, although that is the stated theme of the article at times. One was in Cincinnati, involving the Isaac Wise Temple summer camp. It ended in acquittals, so there is no official transcript of the proceedings. But local newspaper coverage of the trial indicates the charges in this case were highly suspect and should never have been brought.[28] The other case that clearly did not involve any plausible evidence of abuse is from Sacramento, where charges were dropped after it became clear to Municipal Court Judge Ronald Robie that the children had been told by their grandmother to make baseless charges.[29] No other case in the series is similar. Beyond these, however, there was credible evidence of abuse in all of the other highlighted cases that I have analyzed. As explained in the previous chapter, the evidence was restricted to one defendant in the McMartin case. Indeed, as indicated in Table 3.2 and elaborated in this chapter, several of these cases involved credible evidence of abuse *and* they involved unjustified charges. The "justice abused" in those cases had two dimensions, but only one of those problems was acknowledged by Charlier and Downing.

At least three of the highlighted cases did not involve any unjustified charges. There was a solid basis for charging the defendants in the cases from Chicago, Clarksville, and Sequim, Washington. Nobody was ever charged with a crime in the Fort Bragg case, where the license revocation proceedings for the Jubilation Day Care Center stemmed from proven claims of sexual abuse by the owner's niece.[30] Beyond the cases already mentioned, there were two others that involved some unjustified charges: Memphis and Bakersfield (Kern County). But as explained below, both of those cases (or groups of cases, in the Kern County instance) also involved credible evidence of abuse.

Six of the ten cases in Table 3.2 are discussed in this chapter: Memphis, Jordan, Chicago, Clarksville, Sequim, and Bakersfield. (The McMartin case, of course, has already been discussed.) All six involved more evidence of abuse than has ever been recognized in the witch-hunt narrative. Three additional cases from the list of thirty-six that also involved substantial evidence of abuse are discussed in this section as well: West Point, New York; Niles, Michigan; and White Plains, New York.

BALLARD

Location	Memphis, TN
Institution	Georgian Hills
Date	1984
Lead Def.	Frances Ballard

The Georgian Hills Early Childhood Center case began on May 31, 1984, just as the charges in McMartin were being finalized. A four-year-old girl told her mother that her vagina hurt; she quickly volunteered that Frances Ballard had put her fingers in it. Ballard was a fifty-five-year-old woman who had never worked outside the home until taking a job at Georgian Hills in 1983. The center was run by the Georgian Hills Baptist Church and had about 120 students. Ballard, who had cared for children in her home for years without incident, was a devout Baptist and, according to multiple sources, a "stern" preschool teacher. She was the last person one might suspect of being a child molester. But there was medical evidence that appeared to support the sexual abuse claim; according to her family physician, the little girl's hymen was torn.

After an initial investigation that involved about a dozen children, Frances Ballard was arrested on June 12, 1984, and charged with four counts of sexual abuse involving four children, among them the original girl. The investigation continued, and there was a bureaucratic struggle between the child protective service agency and law enforcement over the ownership and administration of the investigation. Law enforcement took charge, and in a few months there were far more complainants, and eventually more defendants. In October, Ballard was charged with thirty-eight additional counts of sexual abuse involving nineteen children. The following month, the investigation spread to the Daybridge Learning Center, where children had been sent from Georgian Hills. After suspicions were raised there, fifteen staff members were suspended and then fired in a move that, in retrospect, seems like a clear indication of a case run amok. Six months later, three more defendants were indicted for sexual abuse related to the charges in the Ballard case: Betty Stimson, the Georgian Hills director; her son Jeff; and Rev. Paul Shell, pastor of the Georgian Hills Baptist Church. These charges were brought almost exactly a year after the investigation began. Why did the investigation last so long? If Betty Stimson was involved in events at the same time and place as Frances Ballard, why did it take a year of interviews to find out? Those questions were not being asked in 1985.

The criminal trials did not reveal much about the larger investigation, but there is an important document uncovered in a subsequent civil suit: a letter from local investigators to Special Agent Kenneth Lanning of the FBI, providing a confidential "synopsis of the case and the problems encountered" in early February 1985, several months before the additional adults were charged. That letter indicated children had "required a lot more leading than would be desirable with older victims" and "it appeared that some information may have been coerced or improperly extracted from the children."[31] Given this candid assessment of the problems with the investigation, it seems remarkable that, instead of reassessing the case in full, authorities went ahead and indicted three more adults a few months later.

Betty Stimson's case came to trial first, in March 1987, two years after the charges were brought. The trial was interrupted when a child left the stand in tears; the proceedings were suspended and charges were eventually dropped. Charges were also dropped against Pastor Shell; Jeff Stimson was acquitted. But the case against Ballard went forward. When the trial began on October 27, 1987, the charges were whittled down to eleven victims.

There were, on close examination of the trial transcript, a host of problems with the charges against Ballard. First, it was difficult to believe she actually had the opportunity to commit all of these crimes. Only three of the eleven children were in her regular class; two others had her for something called Mother's Day out. This leaves six of the eleven children whose only other time for possibly encountering Ballard was 7:00 to 7:30 a.m. But a few of those students were never there at seven, leaving it unclear when she would even have had the opportunity.[32] Second, several children said Ballard had driven them to places away from the school. This has been known to happen at day care centers, but because of terrible eyesight Ballard never had a driver's license. She also had a complicated medical history that included multiple surgical scars, skin grafts, and other distinguishing marks that were described in embarrassing detail at trial. But not a single child who claimed to have seen her naked remarked about any markings that would apparently have been both noticeable and unusual.

There were various statements in the case that seem satanic in nature. From Charlier and Downing's description, one would think the children's testimony was filled with these elements. Six of the children at trial said nothing of the sort. But there was also testimony about an "exploded hamster" and a "blood man." The "Satanic tint," as one investigator called it, was there from the day when Mrs. Ballard was arrested. There was extensive testimony at trial about something she said in the police car, rebuking the devil.[33] The testimony was inconclusive, but investigators thought the devil was so significant to the case that it was the first word on a list of catch words distributed to parents and others. By my count, only one child actually invoked the devil in describing anything related to sexual abuse, saying that "the Devil would turn [him] into fire" if he told about what Frances Ballard did to him.[34] Authorities seemed particularly baffled by the satanic aspects. The lead investigator commented, in the confidential letter to the FBI, that "all of this is in direct contradiction to the atmosphere of the Southern Baptist Church that houses the day care."[35] Indeed, Ballard's outcry about the devil makes more sense as the response of a religious woman than it does the implied confession of a child molester. The intensely religious environment certainly made the devil references more likely, not less. This was proven years later in a study that found children in highly religious settings were more likely to invoke the devil.[36]

Although the "fantastic" elements of the case were arguably overplayed, two other elements of the case have received limited attention: the earliest statements, in June 1984, and the medical evidence. Both provide evidence supporting the charges but are omitted from the witch-hunt narrative. The origins of the case are not fully documented in the trial, but I located records documenting ten interviews conducted between June 6 and June 22, 1984. The records are not transcriptions; rather, they were prepared from audiotapes. The case was ultimately overturned on appeal, in part because the tapes were recorded over before they could be supplied to the defense.[37]

What is most noteworthy about the accounts in June is how "garden variety" they were. There were no references to Satanism or the devil. But there were some powerful exchanges, as when Wayne Hargrove was asked if Miss Frances ever kissed him. His answer was recorded as:

> Is anybody gonna get mad at me, mommy's gonna get mad at me, I don't like to talk about what, Yep, she does kiss me. Like a man and a woman.[38]

He followed-up with a statement about Ballard kissing "my dingaling."

Many of the children in the case were examined by a family physician, and a significant number were also examined by Dr. David Muram, a child-abuse pediatrician at the University of Tennessee. Dr. Muram's testimony in the case was quite conservative. The family physician of the first girl in the case reported that her hymen was "torn." Dr. Muram, a specialist in child abuse, testified the girl had a "notch in the hymen, which may or may not represent a tear," at 3 o'clock.[39] The most significant medical findings were probably the "depressed scar at 11 o'clock" on Cameron Bennett's anus. More of this scar was on the exterior of the anal canal, basically ruling out the possibility of constipation as a cause.[40] Dr. Muram's testimony was similarly guarded for other children. He described the anal findings on Charlie Higgins as "possible" sexual abuse.[41] For Brooke Northrup, he described labial adhesions, which "can be a normal occurrence or can result from friction-type dry intercourse." He cited a study concluding that the incidence of labial adhesions was five times higher in sexually abused kids. Noting a small scar on the midline of her rectum, Dr. Muram concluded there was "possible sexual abuse."[42] It is not a strong finding, but there were enough children with such findings to raise important questions that the witch-hunt narrative ignores.

In the end, the jury did not see the case as a witch-hunt or as a proven case of mass molestation. Instead, the jury acquitted Ballard on fifteen charges and found her guilty on one count of sexual abuse concerning one boy—a boy who apparently said early in the investigation that "You don't understand. Her husband's old and she had to have someone to love her, nobody loves her. I have to be her helper and I have to love her."[43] It is a puzzling result because there does not appear to be anything about this count making it far worthier of credence than most everything else in the case. Apparently, the jury was reluctant to let Ballard off completely, but they were also extremely ambivalent regarding the children's testimony. The conviction was later overturned on appeal and the prosecution declined to retry Ballard.[44]

Charlier and Downing's series is most remembered and cited for the claims about national trends, but the most original and extensive reporting was specifically about the Georgian Hills case. It has become the definitive explanation; there has been no other major published account. But Charlier and Downing's version does not convey that any of the earliest statements in the case were clear and without fantastic elements, or that several children in the case had medical findings relevant to sexual abuse. Those facts make the case the complicated conundrum it appeared to be at the time, rather than the one-dimensional witch-hunt story it eventually became. Like the McMartin case, however, the extent of the wrongful prosecutions was much larger than the rest of the story. It is impossible to defend the charges brought a year into this investigation, let alone the firing of fifteen people at Daybridge; there were terrible costs inflicted on innocent adults. The complication is that it also seems likely some children were sexually abused. It appears the reality of the injustice to adults drove Charlier and Downing to overgeneralize from Memphis to the country. Though they saw similarities to the McMartin case in dozens of instances, the Ballard case was actually more like McMartin than any other cases that Charlier and Downing covered. Accordingly, their article gave the rest of the country an overstated claim about national witch-hunts that would have been far more fitting had it focused largely on the case in Memphis.

There are three cases on the list of thirty-six that involved *more* defendants than four as in the Georgian Hills case. One is McMartin Preschool, discussed in the previous chapter, with seven defendants. The other two were far larger than McMartin, although neither was actually based at a day-care center and neither was really a single case. There were a set of related cases in Jordan, Minnesota, that involved twenty-eight defendants and another set in Bakersfield, California (also referred to as Kern County), with thirty-five defendants. Both of these "cases" received significant attention in the *Commercial Appeal* series. As with McMartin and Georgian Hills, they both included prosecutions that should never have been initiated. But they also involved more evidence of sexual abuse than has been recognized in the witch-hunt narrative. The Jordan cases are discussed briefly below and those in Kern County are discussed later in the chapter.

JORDAN

Location	Jordan, MN
Institution	none
Date	1983-84
Lead Def.	Robert & Lois Bentz

The Jordan, Minnesota, cases were the first "mass child molestation" cases to come to trial after McMartin catapulted the issue of child sexual abuse into the national consciousness in the winter of 1984. They were also the first cases to come to a conclusion, albeit an abrupt and puzzling one. "Jordan" was not a single matter, but a series of cases against twenty-four defendants. Some were against individuals, but most were against couples. The defendants were generally categorized into two "rings." The case originated with the lead defendant, James Rud, who lived in a trailer park described by the Minneapolis *Star-Tribune* as being "on the wrong side of Jordan's tracks" and populated by "a transient population who people don't trust."[45] The case then spread to the better-established part of town. The case against Robert and Lois Bentz, who were not among the first group of defendants, was the first one to come to trial. The three major television networks carried national news stories about the beginning of the trial during the third week of August 1984. It would be two years before the McMartin trial actually began and four more years before it ended ambiguously; in less than two months, however, all of the criminal cases filed in Jordan would be over. The Bentzes were acquitted in late September 1984 and charges against the remaining twenty-one defendants were dropped in mid-October amid reports about wild stories children told about undetected child murders. Rud was the only defendant whose case ended in a guilty verdict. He completed his sentence in 2011 and has since been held through Minnesota's civil commitment procedure.

The state attorney general, Hubert Humphrey III, examined the situation and declined to refile any of the sexual abuse charges. He explained his decision in the February 1985 *Report on Scott County Investigations*, commonly known as the Humphrey Report. The report concluded there was no credible evidence of child murders and the investigative process in the case was flawed in ways that made the refiling of charges inadvisable. The report also noted that "some" children had definitely been abused in Jordan but concluded it was not possible to assess how many.[46]

Some of the former defendants joined Ralph Underwager, the defense psychologist from the Bentz case, to launch an advocacy organization called VOCAL, standing for victims of child abuse laws. A petition was filed with Minnesota Governor Rudy Perpich requesting the removal of County Attorney Kathleen Morris for filing the Jordan cases. Former defendants also initiated a federal lawsuit alleging civil rights violations. Although they did not prevail in federal court, and the inquiry into the county attorney did *not* recommend Morris's removal, VOCAL prevailed where it matters most: in the court of public opinion. The Jordan cases have come to be known as "witch-hunts," which is how they were described by Charlier and Downing in 1988. Philip Jenkins, a professor of history and religion, drew an explicit parallel between the Jordan cases and the Salem witch trials, concluding, "almost all of the testimony that led to 25 indictments on very grave charges was invented."[47]

But the witch-hunt version of the Jordan cases does not do justice to the underlying facts. There are two sources of information beyond the Humphrey Report that were based on careful, systematic examinations of the factual record. Neither source supports the witch-hunt narrative as the best explanation of what happened in Jordan. The Olson Commission was created in response to the petition that accused County Attorney Morris of making arrests without probable cause. The commission found little evidence to substantiate the claim; in fact, by the time the hearings were over, Morris was being accused of the opposite—improperly dropping solid criminal cases.[48] A federal court in the Eighth Circuit also evaluated a broad array of documents underlying the Jordan investigation while adjudicating civil rights claims brought by many of the former defendants. Relying on a detailed examination of the underlying factual record, the court concluded the wrongful prosecution claims were without merit. The appellate decision reads like the report of the Olson Commission; that is, one is left wondering why so many prosecutions were dropped, not why they were brought in the first place.[49] Neither source applies this conclusion across the board; and both found considerable fault with how the investigation was conducted. What the Olson Commission and the Humphrey Report demonstrate, however, is that the witch-hunt narrative has reduced a complicated double tragedy to a simplistic one-line story.

The Jordan cases were flawed in ways that ultimately diminished the credibility of some key children. In addition to the murder allegations, there were other children subjected to repeated interviews that ultimately diminished their credibility. A few therapists played a significant and improper role in the process. But considering the array of evidence—medical, physical, adult, and child (at various stages of the interview process)—the witch-hunt narrative is misplaced.

The overinterviewing aspect of these cases is important because it led to fantastic claims that ultimately spoiled the case. The mother of one child indicated that her daughter had been interviewed "at least thirty and possibly as many as fifty times" by Scott County authorities."[50] But how widespread was this problem? Every witch-hunt account of the Jordan cases glosses over the question, acting as if all of the children were "brainwashed," as was asserted by defense psychologist Underwager. The Humphrey Report did not attempt to answer the question, simply reporting a few startling anecdotes instead. The Olson Commission took a more systematic view, identifying ten children in the case who had been subject to more than twelve interviews. The commission concluded there was still sufficient basis for proceeding against nine defendants, even if all the children subjected to the most repetitive interviews were excluded from testifying. What is clear on close examination is that the intensive interviewing phase of the case came late in the process. It does not make sense to automatically disregard statements children made in the fall of 1983 simply because some of them started making fantastic claims six to nine months later. The earliest statements are the most important to analyze in cases where children have been subject to repetitive interviews, since they are least affected by this problem. Tellingly, critics of the Jordan case have never tried to take into account the earliest statements that formed the basis for the Jordan cases.[51]

When the Jordan cases were dismissed, the outcome was generally seen by those in Minnesota as unsatisfactory and unsettling. Josephine Marcotty, a reporter for the *Star Tribune,* predicted the legacy of Jordan would be "one of confusion."[52] This has not turned out to be the case. What was so perplexing at the time has, deceptively, become much starker over the years. Now the witch-hunt narrative prevails as exemplified by Charlier and Downing's account, written four years later, which did not acknowledge that there was credible evidence against any of the defendants beyond James Rud.

ROGERS PARK

Location	Chicago, IL
Institution	Rogers Park JCC
Date	1984
Lead Def.	Deloartic Parks

The Rogers Park Jewish Community Center case began the first week of April 1984 when a mother named Brenda Voigt reported that her four-year-old daughter told the janitor, while leaving her preschool, to leave her alone. The girl told her mother that the man tickled her. Asked where he tickled her, the girl's answer included her vagina. Voigt complained directly to the school and then to the Department of Children and Family Services. Charlier and Downing's description of the case states:

> Children soon began to accuse teachers of abusing them in satanic rituals. No teachers were arrested. [The janitor] was acquitted. The Illinois Department of Children and Families concluded that most of the 246 allegations against other staff members were unfounded. In February 1986, prosecutors dropped remaining charges.[53]

The implication by Charlier and Downing is that the outcome was appropriate. There is no sense in their reporting that children may have been sexually abused. Their account is accurate in describing fantastic statements and expanding allegations, including ritual abuse claims. It was widely reported in the media that children made statements about "animal mutilation and satanic rituals of an almost medieval quality."[54] The details about those statements remain vague as they were all part of the confidential DCFS investigation. But the statements were never used against anyone in a judicial context. The investigation involved eighty-eight children; interviews were conducted in late April 1984 and occurred in an environment of publicity and intense parental interest.

An internal DCFS report in June 1984 indicated there was credible evidence "that nineteen children were abused at the Center." Those findings were controversial within the agency. A state-level review reversed the conclusions months later, and cases that had been deemed "indicated" were reclassified as "unfounded."[55] The school was reopened. On the basis of existing records, it is not possible to piece together precisely what went wrong in the investigation. But this much seems clear: too much of the investigation was delegated to someone who was not qualified to conduct it.[56] Complaints pertaining to a small number of children, including the original girl, moved ahead against Deloartic Parks, the janitor. The case went to trial in criminal court, and several families pursued civil claims. None of the civil cases went to trial, however, and it is impossible to ascertain from court files what the ultimate settlements and dismissals mean. Moreover, the available evidence from the Parks trial is limited, owing to difficulties in getting the full stenographic record converted into an actual transcript.[57]

The witch-hunt narrative ignores the evidence that moved law enforcement to bring criminal charges against Parks. First, there was medical evidence pertaining to the first girl in the case, and to another girl, Jane Cranshaw, who testified at Parks's criminal trial. She experienced medical problems in the spring of 1984 and went to the doctor's office four times in four months. She had a sore throat and upper respiratory tract problems during this time, but the doctor also noted she was not gaining weight. Her mother brought her daughter back on April 6 with the girl's complaint that it hurt when she urinated. Laboratory tests were "grossly positive for leukocytes." "It is very unusual for children to have pus cells in their urine," the doctor explained when he testified.[58] The doctor raised sexual abuse as a possibility. *This was before anything had been said publicly about the possible sexual abuse at Rogers Park day care.* Her labia were "intensely inflamed." Emergency Room Dr. Lorraine Ling, who saw the girl later that day, testified she suspected the girl "was sexually abused, but not to a medical certainty."[59]

The other child with strong medical indications was Sophie Voigt, the little girl whose mother heard her tell Deloartic Parks to leave her alone as she was departing school one day in early April. This girl had been to her family doctor on March 12 for a rash that had not gone away for two weeks. She came back on April 9, when the doctor noted "multiple erythematous lesions on Sophie's right labia majora and the adjacent inner aspect of the right thigh."[60] He prescribed some medicine. The Voigts came back several days later, after Sophie told her mother Parks had tickled her "on the vagina." The doctor did a genital examination and reported:

> With separation of the labia majora, the labia minora were exposed and found to be intensely erythematous with a white exudate upon them. The hymen ring was not intact and the gaping vaginal walls were also noted to be intensely inflamed.[61]

These findings were cited in a DCFS report that described the interviews with this girl in a single sentence: "In two separate interviews, both using anatomically correct dolls, Sophie told Detective Keenan and DCFS Worker Robinson that Mr. Parks lifted up her dress and tickled her vagina."

There is additional evidence bearing on the question of guilt in this case. Parks flunked a lie detector test. According to the police report, the polygrapher concluded that he "was not being truthful" about a general question concerning touching children's genitals and two specific questions about touching the Voight girl.[62] Lie detector results are always mentioned in the witch-hunt narrative when they might support the defendant, but they are conspicuously absent when defendants fail them. The judge who heard the case did not present the acquittal as an exoneration; instead he remarked about how "these are not easy cases to decide."[63] As Judge Jack G. Stein concluded, "There is a reasonable doubt in my mind, so I have no choice but to discharge."[64] It is important to understand the evolution of an investigation that could spawn the kind of outlandish allegations reported in this case. It is also important to keep in mind the evidence that those problems arose in the context of a real child sexual abuse case. If cases labeled as witch-hunts are actually botched investigations of real sexual abuse, then the defendants who go free do so under false pretenses. That is arguably what happened in the Rogers Park case, although neither side would characterize it this way. A core group of parents were dedicated to believing every word the children said, and the witch-hunt narrative has cast Parks as the victim regardless of the evidence of abuse. Given such evidence, this would seem to be an example of a case where the acquittal of the defendant reflects the price we pay for ensuring that convictions occur only when there is an extremely high confidence level in the conclusion. Attaining this level of confidence in any case pitting a child's word against that of an adult is bound to be difficult, but such is not the story Charlier and Downing told.

CRAIG'S PRE-SCHOOL

Location	Clarksville, MD
Institution	Craig's Country Pre-School
Date	1985
Lead Def.	Sandra Craig

The Craig's Country Pre-School case is one of eight cases profiled by Charlier and Downing. Their 250-word account paints a dreamy picture of Craig's as "a place where children learned to operate computers and studied French." Out of nowhere, they imply, a little girl began to accuse Sandra Craig of sexual abuse, apparently without any corroborating evidence. But as reported in the *Washington Post* nearly nine months before publication of the Charlier and Downing series:

> Accusers and defenders of Sandra Craig have expressed dismay with what they saw as the failures of police and the County Department of Social Services, which had investigated a report of abuse involving a five-year-old girl at the center more than a year before it was closed, without notifying other parents.[65]

This case had additional features Charlier and Downing did not report. In day-care abuse cases such as Georgian Hills, there are serious questions about whether there was an opportunity for the defendant to commit acts of sexual abuse without being detected. In this case, however, there was extensive testimony about children being sent upstairs to Mrs. Craig's room for discipline.[66] This practice violated the staffing plan for the facility, which stated that Sandra Craig would always be downstairs and no children would be upstairs. There were also a series of former employees who started working at Craig's Pre-School and left after becoming uncomfortable with her harsh demeanor. One former employee described how Craig's treatment of disruptive children left them looking "frightened," and her quite uncomfortable.[67]

None of this proves sexual abuse, of course. But the most powerful evidence for the prosecution was never mentioned by Charlier and Downing: the "graphic testimony of a medical expert," which was also described in the *Washington Post.* Dr. Charles Shubin, a pediatric specialist, testified:

> that his examination of the 6-year-old girl and the three other children who testified that Craig had abused them produced evidence of internal scarring that suggested that they had been molested in a "remarkably consistent manner."[68]

He observed a "very clear healed injury" in the vagina of the first girl in the case, concluding that "beyond a reasonable degree of medical certainty" some object "would have to be pushed into this child with penetrating force" to cause this kind of injury.[69] The girl testified she had been touched in her "privates" with a "stick."[70] She was the only complainant in the case because the judge had ruled that charges involving other children had to be tried separately. But medical reports for three other children with similar injuries were admitted since they were so consistent.[71] The defense was left to argue that perhaps all four children had likewise been abused elsewhere.

The "satanic or ritualistic" feature that Charlier and Downing highlight is one child's statement that Sandra Craig killed a rabbit. They did not mention that there *was* a rabbit at the day care, it died at the school, and one of the parents of a child who attended the day-care handled it.[72] (This was not part of the charges.) The conviction in this case was reversed on appeal over objections to the use of closed-circuit television. This is the only one of the contested child sexual abuse cases from the 1980s to end up before the U.S. Supreme Court. Their decision in *Maryland v. Craig* is known for the issue about closed-circuit television.[73] What has been lost in all discussions of this case is the evidence that four children who attended Craig's sustained surprisingly similar penetrative injuries.

The prosecution declined to prosecute Sandra Craig a second time; five years had elapsed since the original trial. Charges against Craig's son were dismissed in 1987 when the accusing child in the case was deemed incompetent to testify.[74]

CORA'S DAY CARE

Location	Sequim, WA
Institution	Cora's Day Care
Date	1986
Lead Def.	Ralph Priest

The Cora's Day Care case was also profiled in Charlier and Downing's series. It is notable as well for being one of only two of the thirty-six cases that began after 1985. The authors summarize this case as follows:

> The case surfaced after an area woman placed her 2-year-old granddaughter in the day care center for the first time. After a two-hour stay, the grandmother noticed redness in the girl's vaginal area. Medical tests found no evidence of abuse, but word spread among parents of possible problems. . . . Suspicions focused on Ralph Priest [Cora's son]. They also assert that this occurred at a "highly-regarded day care center."

In fact, there had been previous complaints of physical abuse by Ralph Priest, whose medical history included severe mental instability and a finding that he was dangerous to others. A state worker who visited the day-care center in 1978 observed Priest in the "back forty" waving a rake or stick at children. Later that year, a pediatrician diagnosed choking injuries in a girl who attended the day care.[75] Interviewed again on April 29, 1986, the doctor was disturbed that Cora Priest still had a day-care license after the 1978 incident. He examined two girls who attended the day care in 1986 and concluded there *had* been sexual abuse.

Charlier and Downing reported that "suspicions focused on Ralph Priest," but they omitted any mention of his criminal history and mental illness. In subsequent civil litigation, Cora Priest confirmed that Ralph first exhibited signs of emotional problems in 1970.[76] He was diagnosed in 1975 as paranoid schizophrenic. After being arrested for criminal activities in 1979, he pleaded insanity and was hospitalized at Western State Hospital until 1984. He then moved back to Cora Priest's house, where he started a fire and was allegedly hallucinating; he was rehospitalized. Soon after his release, he was charged with simple assault and then voluntarily committed to Olympic Memorial Hospital. After a seventy-two hour observation period, he was found to be a danger to others.[77] Ralph Priest applied for SSI, listing "mental problems," and it was determined that he met the criteria for incapacity; a state DHSD document from July 1985 lists "manic depression, disorientation, bizarre behavior, a danger to himself and others."[78] It was determined that he required protective supervision twenty-four hours a day. Instead, he moved back to his mother's house, where he had contact with the children in the day care, sometimes alone, during the period when these allegations arose. In an article that discredits the allegations of abuse in this case, defense psychologist Underwager summarized all of the information described in this paragraph as follows: [Priest] "had a history of alcohol problems, had recently lost his job, and therefore was living at home during the day."[79]

According to Charlier and Downing, the case stalled when Clallam County Prosecutor David Bruneau "convinced a local court to drop charges of indecent liberties against the Priests."[80] But this is not an accurate representation of what the prosecutor said at the time. His explanation, contained in a contemporaneous article in the Seattle *Post-Intelligencer*, specifically said "the four alleged victims were too traumatized to testify."[81] Several children in the case were diagnosed with posttraumatic stress disorder.

In sum, there is ample evidence to challenge the witch-hunt narrative about this case. If anything, the state was too easy on Cora's Day Care in 1978. As a result, a dangerous, mentally ill man who should never have been alone with children was placed in that position. But there is one nagging problem: bizarre claims related to Satanism emerged later in the case. How prevalent were those claims, and why did they happen? First, not all of the children made them, but at least one mother in particular became an "investigator," much like some of the parents in the McMartin case, taking the child to the cemetery and churches to seek "confirmation" that he had been there. Those developments definitely undermined the criminal case. But the tragedy is not that Ralph Priest was accused; it is that those children were left alone with a man considered dangerous to himself and others.

NILES

Location	Niles, MI
Institution	Small World Preschool
Date	1984
Lead Def.	Richard Barkman

The Small World Preschool in Niles Township, Michigan, was not highlighted by Charlier and Downing, but it is on their list of thirty-six and is often mentioned in the witch-hunt narrative. This case, which occurred between 1984 and 1985, involved two defendants: Richard Barkman, twenty-eight, a teacher at the school, and his wife, Rebecca, thirty-two, the director. The case began with a single complaint and soon expanded to enormous proportions. According to an academic study of the case, "The investigation began with four children, spanned eight months, and involved interviews with a total of 106 alleged victims."[82] By one official count, sixty-two children indicated in interviews with various state agencies that they had been sexually abused at the preschool. Richard Barkman was charged with nineteen counts of sexual abuse involving four boys and five girls. Rebecca Barkman was charged with two misdemeanor counts of failing to report suspected child abuse. Nobody else was charged. There was one criminal trial before a jury, involving the charges concerning a four-year-old boy. Richard Barkman was convicted and sentenced to fifty to seventy-five years in prison. The remaining charges were then dropped, including those against Rebecca Barkman.

Barkman's conviction was overturned by the Michigan Court of Appeals in September 1988. The court ruled that the trial judge had improperly limited cross-examination of the child witness.[83] The state was allowed to retry Barkman after he had served five years in prison, subject to the appellate court's decision. Instead, Barkman pleaded no contest to one count of assault with intent to commit first-degree sexual misconduct with a four-year-old girl in exchange for time served and five years of probation.[84] Both sides received something, but neither side could be considered victorious. Nevertheless, the case has been classified as a witch-hunt.

There are significant research challenges involved in trying to study this case at large. Criminal charges were brought in connection with nine children, but charges related to eight were dropped after the original case ended in a conviction and long sentence. The trial transcript from the case provides considerable information about the four-year-old boy's complaint, but it contains nothing about the four-year-old girl connected to the post-appeal plea agreement. It also says nothing about the other seven children involved in criminal charges. Beyond the criminal case, there were thirty-nine children involved in civil suits. Almost all of the records from the civil suits are sealed or in private hands and subject to attorney-client privilege.[85]

Existing sources offer three reasons to conclude that the statements leading to criminal charges were credible. First, the case did not expand beyond the Barkmans. Second, it did not involve repetitive interviews before children made disclosures; the MDMH Report indicates that 83 percent of disclosures were on the first interview.[86] Third, there was consistency across statements. Significantly, four organizations were involved in the case and the disclosure rate did not vary by agency, providing a kind of check that did not exist against Children's Institute International in the McMartin case.

Yet, there are obvious reasons to question the credibility of some children in this case. It strains credulity to think that the children were, without anyone detecting these events, driven away from the preschool to photography sessions in barns and made to watch Richard Barkman snap the heads off chickens. But how significant were such claims in the case? By one measure—the amount of negative publicity generated—they were enormous. But Charlier and Downing said nothing about the frequency or context of these statements. They do not consider how many children made implausible statements and what role, if any, they played in any criminal or civil claims.

It appears that Charlier and Downing's account is quite exaggerated. They state that "the children" said they were driven to photography sessions and "made to watch as Barkman snapped the head off a chicken." A summary of statements by eighty-four children interviewed by DSS includes the word *chicken* twice—once involving allegations of actually cutting the wings of chickens.[87] There is no evidence that "the children" in this case made such claims. But there is evidence in the MDMH Report that a sizable number of children made fantastic claims. Twenty-eight made statements that were classified as "ritual/bestiality."[88] It should be reiterated that 106 children were interviewed, so those statements were not a significant part of what all of "the children" said, which is what Charlier and Downing suggest. In overall terms, it appears the majority of children who made incriminating statements in the case did *not* make the kind of statements that Charlier and Downing cite as reason to label the case a witch-hunt. Those could well represent all of the children who were involved in the criminal charges.

Beyond issues concerning the testimony of children, the witch-hunt narrative contains two instances of glossing over contrary evidence and a significant omission. The first inaccuracy is that Barkman "passed a polygraph test." Actually, he told police he was willing to take a test, and it was scheduled for two days later, at which time he declined to take it.[89] Later he arranged through his own lawyer to have one administered. The state had no input into the questions or the process and did not accept the results, which Barkman claimed as proof he was telling the truth when he denied sexually abusing children. The second problem is the inaccurate claim that there was "no medical evidence" in the case. It does not appear that anyone making this claim has actually reviewed the medical files of the children in the criminal and civil cases. From the files I was able to examine, the four-year-old boy at trial had a period of excruciating difficulty with bowel movements; he was found to have a fecal impaction. This is consistent with sexual abuse, but there are other possible causes as well. A five-year-old boy who was also involved in the criminal proceedings had a healed anal fissure at the 6 o'clock position. This is not *diagnostic* of sexual abuse, but it is consistent with it. Interpretations based on this evidence may vary, but the witch-hunt narrative does not allow anyone to consider it, preferring instead to omit it.

Another important set of omissions concerns Barkman's temperament and the history of complaints at Small World. It is clear from evidence developed in the criminal case that Richard Barkman did not have a personality suitable for working with small children. He had a terrible temper and was fired from a coaching job after throwing a tantrum (and a telephone). Moreover, the preschool had been the subject of two separate complaints about him in the previous two years. There was a complaint on June 29, 1982, from an anonymous witness stating she heard Richard Barkman slap one child on the head; two children (anonymous) who reported being spanked at school; a child being put in a garbage can as a punitive measure.[90]

A separate report in February 1983 cited an anonymous witness saying her daughter had been taken off the premises for lunch without her permission, and that Richard Barkman had kissed her on the mouth.[91] These previous complaints against him obviously do not prove the later allegations, and none gave rise to any kind of separate charges, but they are worth mentioning since the lack of prior complaints is regularly used as an argument against the credibility of abuse allegations in day-care settings.

With sufficient access to relevant documents, one could spend years analyzing the complete scope of this case, the evolution of the charges and statements, and the differences between children. This would likely lead to a more nuanced view of the case. But even without such intensive inquiry, an examination of a range of original documents paints a picture that is more complicated than the witch-hunt narrative. This appears to be a case with "fantastic" statements *and* credible evidence of sexual abuse—a combination never recognized in the witch-hunt narrative.

WEST POINT

Location	West Point, NY
Institution	West Point Child Development Ctr.
Date	1984
Lead Def.	none

The West Point Child Development Center case is not among a handful of cases commonly mentioned in the witch-hunt narrative, but it appears on Charlier and Downing's list of thirty-six. Although barely remembered today, it received a considerable amount of publicity in its time. It was the subject of an article in *Newsweek* in July 1985 and an article in *Redbook* in January 1986, and it was one of two major case studies in a chapter of David Hechler's prophetic 1988 book, *The Battle and the Backlash*.[92] Those works were all sympathetic to the view that children had been sexually abused at the West Point Child Development Center. They did not cast the case as a witch-hunt. To the contrary, there was the sense that too little was being done to address definite abuse.

But the case was also mentioned in one of Debbie Nathan's earliest witch-hunt articles, and it later appeared on Charlier and Downing's list. As they explained, "allegations grew to include several children, animal sacrifices, pornography and rituals involving people wearing bloody Dracula-type masks." Nobody was charged in the case. Charlier and Downing's three-sentence description ends, "An investigation concluded there were indications of abuse but insufficient evidence to prosecute."[93] The nature of those "indications" is not explained. Nor is any rationale provided for why a case with "indications of abuse" but no actual charges would be included in a series about "justice abused."

The case began on July 27, 1984, when a three-and-a-half-year-old girl came home from a full day at the West Point Child Development Center and screamed with pain while urinating in the bathroom. Her mother observed that she was bleeding from her vagina and so immediately took her daughter to Keller Army Hospital. The girl told a technician and the doctor that her "teacher did it." She also told the doctor, "She put a pen in my touchy." The doctor observed that the girl had lacerations in her vaginal canal and indicated on the report that these internal injuries had most likely occurred within two to four hours before 5:15 p.m.[94] The only place the girl had been during that time was the day-care center.

About two weeks later, another child made statements to her parents about being touched sexually by a "teacher" at the day care. She and her family had been on vacation in late July and early August and they did not know about the girl who went to the emergency room on July 27. But the second girl did not name the same teacher who had been implicated earlier. Her father, a U.S. Army doctor, was convinced by statements from his daughter that she had been sexually abused. The teachers at the center were questioned by investigators from the army, administered lie detector tests, and quickly cleared as suspects. Two of the teachers were later reconsidered as suspects, but nobody was ever charged or disciplined. The doctor soon came to the conclusion that the army was intent on minimizing or denying child sexual abuse.[95]

Ultimately, the FBI undertook a massive investigation that included 950 interviews and the screening of about fifty children by a child psychologist. There was never a public accounting of any sort, but the core number of victims was apparently around a dozen. A briefing memo to the FBI director, after twenty-eight children had been screened, stated that ten were "probably victims" and an additional eight were either abused or witnessed sexual abuse of other children.[96] There were nine parties to the settlement of the civil suit. Two prominent families in the criminal case did not participate fully in the civil case; they actually withdrew from it. In other words, there were eleven key children in this case, although only one or two were ever publicly identified. Unfortunately, little information is available about these children and their statements. A grand jury in the Southern District of New York heard evidence about this case for ten months before U.S. Attorney Rudolph Giuliani declared that there was insufficient evidence to bring charges. He noted there *was* credible evidence that children had been sexually abused, but he said one couldn't be "absolutely sure" of who did it.[97] (The law does not require "absolute certainty"; it requires certainty beyond a reasonable doubt.)

So why is the West Point case on the witch-hunt list? Because a number of children made ritualistic allegations. How extensive and significant were those statements? There is apparently no way to ascertain the answer. The videotapes of child interviews are under seal, and the FBI's own reports are subject to redaction, which is substantial. The source of Charlier and Downing's description is likely a self-selecting group of parents who started seeing the case as ritualistic. They made claims in the public realm—claims that I think strain credulity. One of the first parents involved in the case became thoroughly convinced that the abuse at West Point was "ritualized" and "satanic," part of a national network of pedophiles who worked out of day-care centers. Other parents followed suit.

In short, the West Point case was a mixture of incredible claims and verified abuse. Some parents, faced with a nonresponsive bureaucracy that seemed to be stonewalling, succumbed to conspiracy theories of the case. Their exasperation was at least partially based on realities that have not been recognized in the witch-hunt narrative. And an important part of the story of this case—a part that distinguishes it from being a witch-hunt—is the failure to hold a perpetrator responsible for, at the very least, inflicting vaginal puncture wounds on a little girl.

WHITE PLAINS

Location	White Plains, NY
Institution	home day care
Date	1985
Lead Def.	James Watt

Another case from the list of thirty-six that contradicts the arguments in Charlier and Downing's series is from White Plains, New York. It involved an unlicensed day-care center in the basement of Jeanette Martin's house, which was raided on May 3, 1985—the day after a three-year-old boy who attended the day-care was admitted to an emergency room for injuries caused by anal penetration.[98] The police found James Watt, a thirty-four-year-old man who rented a room in the house, wrapped in a blanket in a cold, dirty basement with fourteen young children, some naked, who were watching television. Watt told the police it was "choir practice." On the basis of initial interviews with the children, Watt was arrested on May 8 and charged with sexual assault. The case was presented to a grand jury in July. Watt was then indicted on thirteen additional counts involving six children between August 1, 1984 and December 31, 1984.

Three of those children tested positive for venereal diseases. One girl had no hymen, and a skin tag on her anus that was suggestive of anal penetration.[99] The grand jury also indicted Jeanette Martin on three counts of rape, two counts of child sexual abuse, and one count of child endangerment. A twenty-count indictment several months later added additional sexual abuse charges against Watt, involving eight more children from before 1984. Three of those children *also* tested positive for venereal disease. Watt challenged the indictments for lack of specificity as to the dates of the alleged crimes. This would be his primary defense throughout the case: that the dates were not specific enough for him to provide a defense. Such an argument would make sense if Watt had no connection to the location and was, accordingly, hampered in his ability to provide alibi evidence that might place him elsewhere. But there was uncontested evidence that he had lived at the house since 1981, regularly drove a van that picked up and delivered some of the children, and was involved in the daily supervision of children during the entire time period covered by the charges. There were two other defendants in the case; charges against Jeanette Martin's husband, Harold, were eventually dropped, and James Freeman, who also lived in the house, was acquitted of child endangerment. Watt's trial began in April 1986 and lasted for nine months. Though children were the primary witnesses, various adults also testified, including parents, investigators, and two doctors who testified about the venereal diseases and related medical evidence. The jury convicted Watt of nine counts of rape, four counts of sodomy, and one count of child endangerment. Jeanette Martin was acquitted on the rape charges and convicted of child endangerment; the jury did not convict her on the charge that she held several children down while Watt raped them, even though Watt was convicted of rape in those instances.

Charlier and Downing impugned the case because one of the defense lawyers claimed that children made "bizarre" statements. None of the allegedly bizarre statements are mentioned in their article. Nor do any bizarre statements appear in the appellate documents filed by Watt, in the transcript portions that I located, or sixty-one assorted newspaper stories about the case. The same defense lawyer is quoted in several of those stories saying that children should *never* be allowed to testify in court.[100] He is also quoted making a statement that itself might well be labeled bizarre, asserting that "if [Watt] committed the crimes, he was a victim of circumstance."[101] He never explained why "circumstances" would be to blame for sexually abusing children. Watt appealed his conviction and succeeded in having most charges dismissed on the grounds that the time frame specified in the indictment was too broad. The New York Court of Appeals, the state's highest court, upheld the charges involving a five-month time frame, and the case was heralded an important accommodation to child victims.[102] Charlier and Downing justify the inclusion of this case on a "ritual abuse" list because there were "activities in basement," allegations of "sodomy," and something about urination. But there was nothing about urination in the charges, there is nothing bizarre about sodomy allegations in a sexual abuse case, and the daycare *was* located in the basement. James Watt is also listed in the dedication of Nathan and Snedeker's book, but there are no details in the book about the case. The advocacy group that now promotes the witch-hunt narrative, the National

Center for Reason and Justice, also apparently considers Watt a victim. They rely on a freelance journalist, Lona Manning, whose website entry about the case is based on five articles from the *New York Times* and a few quotes from the same defense lawyer who thinks that *all* child-abuse cases are "incredibly weak" and that children should never be able to testify in court.[103] Notably, the two *New York Times* articles about the case that mention six children having venereal diseases are not quoted or otherwise acknowledged on the site.[104] All of the medical evidence, including the anal scar on the girl whose charges were never overturned, must be ignored in order to assert, as Manning does, that a case like that of James Watt "has all of the hallmarks of a ritual abuse panic mass molestation case."[105]

Nathan and Snedeker's Dedication Page

No writer has done more to perpetuate the view that scores of people were falsely imprisoned on charges involving satanic ritual abuse in the 1980s than Debbie Nathan. She published her first article on the theme four months before the Charlier and Downing series was published. Focusing on a single case from El Paso, Texas, where she lived at the time, Nathan argued that there was a "nationwide rash" of these cases. She proceeded to identify six cases by name, notably Kelly Michaels and Country Walk—each the subject of an entire chapter later in this book. In her next paragraph, these cases were all labeled "junior McMartins" and described as "an epidemic." The other cases mentioned by name included Jordan, Minnesota (discussed earlier in this chapter and to be written about in a future publication), where there was substantial evidence of sexual abuse, and West Point (also discussed earlier in this chapter), where there was clear medical evidence of sexual abuse but no actual arrests. This leaves two cases that might conceivably support Nathan's nationwide claim: the Barkman case in Niles, Michigan (discussed earlier in this chapter), and the Amirault case in Malden, Massachusetts (to be discussed in a later publication). In short, Nathan's first article claimed there was a national trend, on the basis, at best, of a handful of cases. But few of those cases actually support the claim, if any.

Nathan's 1995 book with defense lawyer Michael Snedeker contains a longer list of names that has been widely cited as evidence of the nationwide trend of witch-hunts involving child sexual abuse claims. The list was presented on the dedication page of their book, "to the men and women still incarcerated, including those whose names we know." Information about those cases is contained in Table 3.3. Unlike the Charlier and Downing list—where many of the "cases" did not even involve criminal charges—Nathan and Snedeker's list consists entirely of people who were actually in prison at the time of publication, making it a

Table 3.3 **Details on Names Listed on the Dedication Page of Nathan and Snedeker (1995) in Chronological Order**

Place Name	*Defendant Name*	*Number of names*	*Year*	*Wrongful Convictions?*
Kern County, CA	Multiple names	9	1982–85	Yes and No
Malden, MA	Amirault	1	1984	Undetermined
Lanesborough, MA	Baran	1	1984	Yes
Miami, FL	Fuster	1	1984	No
Bainbridge Island, WA	Runyan	1	1985	No
White Plains, NY	Watt	1	1985	No
Dayton, OH	Wilcox	1	1985	Likely not
Great Neck, NY	Friedman	1	1987	No
Vancouver, WA	Malcom	1	1987	No
Olympia, WA	Ingram	1	1988	Likely not
Edgewood, IA	Schildmeyer	1	1988	No
Smithville, NC	Figured/Hill	2	1989	No
Edenton, NC	Kelly/Wilson	2	1989	Undetermined
Stuart, FL	Toward	1	1989	No
Austin, TX	Kellers	2	1991	No
Lanesborough, MA	Halsey	1	1992	No
Hendersonville, NC	Parker	2	1992	Likely not
Houston, TX	Perkins	1	1992	Undetermined
Lowell, MA	Souzas	2	1992	Undetermined
Lorain, OH	Smith	1	1994	No
Wenatchee, WA	Multiple names	18	1995	Yes and No

much stronger list on its face. One book reviewer cited this list, along with the phrase "whose names we know," as evidence that there must be a national trend much larger than the names listed.[106]

Lists with complete names and specific places look authoritative. They have a certain precision: *Michael Joseph Schildmeyer (Edgewood, Iowa).* But there is much less here than meets the eye. First, the list is strangely disconnected from the book. Twelve of the cases included on the dedication page are not even listed in the book's index, even though the index includes cases that are mentioned on just a single page.[107] Moreover, two of the cases are included in the index but cannot fairly be counted as being covered in the book.[108] And none of the names from the Wenatchee case, which accounts for one-third of the names on the list, are even cited in the book; instead, the Wenatchee cases are discussed once, in a sentence that is in parentheses.[109] There are also two puzzles in this list, both involving cases with two defendants, only one of whom is included on the list.[110] A skeptic might wonder why so few of the allegedly "phony" ritual-abuse cases listed on the dedication page are actually included in a book that argues there was a nationwide trend of such cases.

The *Satan's Silence* list suffers from two of the same problems as the list compiled by Charlier and Downing. First, it is filled with exaggeration regarding satanic elements. Most of the cases on this list have nothing to do with satanic ritual abuse claims. Second, the list features cases in which there was substantial evidence of guilt. I have done enough research on seventeen of these twenty-one cases to reach at least a tentative conclusion about whether the case involved a wrongful conviction.[111]

That judgment is tentative in four cases. In the Aldridge and Wilcox case from Dayton, Ohio, one judge overturned the criminal convictions but another rejected the defendants' subsequent claim for civil damages, finding there was actually substantial evidence of their guilt.[112] Similarly, Lawrence Wright made a convincing case in the *New Yorker* that the Ingram case from Olympia, Washington, involved a wrongful conviction, but Karen Olio and William Cornell published a subsequent article that raises substantial doubts about Wright's claim.[113] The Parker case from North Carolina was described by Martin Gardner in the *Skeptical Inquirer* as a wrongful conviction, but newspaper accounts and appellate documents suggest it was not.[114] The conclusion is tentative because the transcript is not currently available; the only available copy is in the possession of a defense lawyer who was unwilling to make it available for fear it might damage his client's ongoing efforts to overturn his conviction.[115]

Finally, it would take many years to research the Wenatchee cases thoroughly, but there is evidence to suggest that labeling the entire matter a witch-hunt is highly inappropriate. A local television station broadcast a prison interview with an adult woman who had pleaded guilty and—even after all the criticism of the case—maintained that she and other adults had engaged in sexual contact with numerous children.[116] It is also apparent that there were false convictions in Wenatchee, spurred by a sheriff who would later be discredited in many ways.[117] The false conviction problem has been expounded on in the media and in a book by a defense lawyer. What has been lost in those accounts is any sense that some of the cases were well founded, that some were rightly not overturned, and that some were never even challenged.

Only three of the seventeen cases involved wrongful conviction. The clearest case is Bernard Baran, discussed below. The two others were massive cases that involved wrongful convictions *and* well-founded ones: Kern County, the earliest cases of all, and Wenatchee, from 1995. Even if all four of the "undetermined" cases were wrongful convictions, this would mean only seven of the twenty-one cases bear out the argument of Nathan and Snedeker's book. In short, the dedication page, which has persuaded so many people with its specificity and length, actually provides surprisingly limited support for the primary thesis of the book. The rest of this chapter provides case-by-case details that support this conclusion, analyzing the cases in chronological order.

KERN COUNTY

Location	Kern County, CA
Institution	none
Date	1982-85
Lead Def.	Kniffens & McCuans

A series of cases from Kern County, California, were the earliest and most problematic of the child molestation cases of the 1980s. Eight "organized sex rings," allegedly involving fifty-four identified adults, were listed by law enforcement officials in the Bakersfield newspaper story in January 1985.[118] Two months later, the County Sheriff's Office organized a special task force to investigate claims that there was organized satanic abuse in the county. The task force almost immediately referred eleven new complaints to the District Attorney's Office. Prosecutors rejected those complaints, and within four months the task force was disbanded. A grand jury in Kern County then requested that the California Attorney General's Office investigate the role of various Kern County agencies in this fiasco. The *Report on the Kern County Child Abuse Investigations*, published in September 1986, delivered a strong indictment of how children had been interviewed and child molestation complaints investigated. But the report did not take a position on specific cases.

At least twenty-six people were eventually convicted of child molestation in connection with the cases in Kern County. By 1996, eighteen of those defendants had their convictions overturned. The number includes two couples, the Kniffens and the McCuans, who were first charged in April 1982. Their cases have been the primary focus of the witch-hunt narrative about Kern County. They were the subject of a chapter in Nathan and Snedeker's books, they accounted for most of a similar chapter in Edward Hume's book *Mean Justice*, and they have been featured in two movies.[119] None of those accounts do justice to the facts of the McCuan part of the case. Instead, they ignore or minimize the actual origins of the case and the quality of the medical evidence. Accounting for those facts presents a far more complicated picture than the witch-hunt narrative presents, including the unavoidable conclusion that the McCuans' girls had been sexually abused for years.

John Stoll's conviction in Kern County in June 1984 has also received considerable attention in recent years. He was the subject of a *New York Times Magazine* article in 2004 and was featured in Sean Penn's 2009 movie *Witch Hunt.*[120] Although these accounts provide persuasive evidence that Stoll was falsely convicted, neither one tells the complete story of the evidence against his codefendant, Grant Self, who has also been embraced in the witch-hunt narrative.

The Kniffen and McCuan Cases

The Kniffen and McCuan cases began as an intrafamilial sexual abuse case in the McCuan family. The primary victims were two young girls, identified by Debbie Nathan as Bobbie and Darla, the daughters of Deborah and Alvin McCuan. The children's mother was the daughter of Gene and Linda Barbour, who divorced when Deborah was a child. Linda then married Rod Phelps. Gene remarried twice; his third wife was Mary Ann Barbour. Mary Ann suspected that Bobbie and Darla were being sexually abused by Phelps, their stepgrandfather. Mary Ann Barbour is the focus of the witch-hunt narrative, which argues, just like the claim against Judy Johnson in the McMartin case, that the case began in the imagination of a mentally unstable woman. As Edward Humes put it, "the events that triggered the Bakersfield Witch Hunt occurred in January 1980" and started with "an obsessed woman named Mary Ann Barbour."[121] But the story did *not* begin in January 1980. There are important events and facts that preceded Barbour's would-be imaginings about child sexual abuse. First, there is substantial evidence that Deborah McCuan, the girls' mother, was determined to minimize or ignore their abuse at the hands of her stepfather, Phelps, well before 1980. When Barbour told Deborah McCuan *in 1979* that Bobbie had visible vaginal bruises from what she thought Phelps was doing to the child, Deborah reportedly responded that Bobbie "had a lot of accidents."[122] Deborah later told Mary Ann that what Phelps had done was "no big deal." This was not the only time Deborah McCuan used the phrase to minimize child molestation. Deborah had accused Phelps of sexual abuse when she was younger, but the case was dropped when she recanted. When later confronted by Detective Glen Johnson about the discrepancy between her denial and an earlier sworn statement about Phelps, Deborah "stated that she had testified that Rod had not molested her because 'it was no big thing.'"[123] It is no wonder Mary Ann Barbour was worried about those girls. Their mother had sworn to having been abused by Rod Phelps, she had later minimized the matter, and she was then leaving the girls with him.

Second, it turns out that Deborah McCuan took Bobbie to the doctor some months *before* being confronted by Mary Ann Barbour about this in 1980. Records never mentioned in the witch-hunt narrative indicate that it was for some kind of injury to the girl's "pubic area." Deborah apparently told the doctor that her daughter had sustained injuries "falling on a wire fence." The pediatrician who examined the girl months later concluded that the vaginal injuries she observed at that time could not possibly have been caused by such an accident because there were no skin lacerations.[124] When Dr. Squyres informed McCuan in 1980 that her daughter had medical signs of sexual abuse, Deborah expressed disbelief and asked if maybe the findings could be explained "due to a fall."[125] They could not. In short, the would-be imaginings of Mary Ann Barbour had strong foundations in fact. McCuan, on the other hand, seemed to be imagining every possible alternative explanation to avoid facing the idea that her own daughters were now the ones being sexually abused by her stepfather.

The McCuan girls were interviewed by the Kern County Sheriff's Office in October 1981. The incident report indicates Bobbie McCuan disclosed that Rod Phelps, her stepgrandfather, had molested her two years ago and that her father, Alvin McCuan, had been molesting her about once a week since then.[126] Darla also said that "her dad and her grandfather rub between her legs" and "rub their 'hotdog' there." The girls were put in shelter care and Child Protective Services was notified. There is conflicting evidence about where the girls lived between then and April 1982. The April date is critical because, as Judge Jon E. Stuebbe explained years later, "that is when the case changed from two victims and two suspects to seven more victims and nine named and numerous unnamed suspects."[127] It was during interviews in April 1982 that the girls named the Kniffen boys, Brian and Brandon, as victims, and their parents, Scott and Brenda, as perpetrators. Notably, the judge reviewing the case years later concluded that "the earliest stages of the investigation" were sound. The initial "interviews and notes appear to have sought to find out what, if anything, happened," he concluded, adding that "there does not appear to have been a preconceived conclusion during this period up until April, 1982." Those conclusions alone would seem to implicate Alvin McCuan and Rod Phelps, since the McCuan girls made detailed incriminating statements in October 1981 (and earlier) that have never been impugned.

But the Kniffen boys were in a much different position. They were taken into custody on April 7, 1982, and their parents were eventually prosecuted on the basis of a recorded statement from the boys taken on April 13. The five days of interviewing that occurred in the interim are not well documented, but there were tapes and transcripts of interviews with the Kniffen boys in mid-April. When Judge Stuebbe reviewed those years later in a proceeding challenging the convictions, he concluded "the questions themselves were almost always suggestive of the answer" and "questions that were answered 'wrong' were asked again."[128]

The troublesome convictions here were against the Kniffens, not the McCuans. The Kniffens also made their statements after being taken away from their parents by the state. None of those concerns apply to the statements in October 1981 by the McCuan girls. Indeed, Edward Humes, who is quite critical of this case in his book *Mean Justice*, allows that in the girls' first interviews "the only molesters mentioned were the father and grandfather."[129] Humes uses this fact to question the validity of all of the allegations that emerged as the investigation unfolded over the next few months. But he never comes to terms with another implication of those initial interviews: even if "the only molesters" were Rod Phelps and Alvin McCuan, then Mary Ann Barbour's concerns *were* well taken and the case did not originate in wild imaginings.

The medical testimony in the Kniffen and McCuan case has also been the source of considerable criticism, for one reason: Dr. Bruce Woodling was the primary medical expert for the prosecution. Woodling had a novel clinical "test" that later made him the object of derision in the witch-hunt narrative. He employed something that became known as the "anal wink" test (although Woodling actually called it the "wink response" test).[130] The idea behind the test was that stimulation to produce a reflex response of the sphincter muscle would basically have one of two results: there would be tightening among those who had not had regular anal penetration and an actual gaping, or opening, among those conditioned to this response. Dr. Woodling testified that both Brandon and Brian Kniffen had a "marked" response to this test with significant "gaping." Critics have since argued that the "wink response test" was not scientifically validated. The criticism is well taken. But this does not mean that anal "gaping" is an insignificant finding; when verified, it can be quite significant.[131] The problem with Woodling's "test" is that it was too subjective. But the same objection can be made to several of the quirky procedures employed by Dr. Paul, the medical expert for the defense in this case and in McMartin, including what he called the "lateral traction test" and his insertion of fingers in the anus to "test" for anal tone.[132] But Dr. Paul's testimony should not be rejected entirely because of these faults. (He was correct, for example, in stating that synechia—intrauterine adhesions—are not a relevant finding and that formation of the hymen varies significantly.) By the same token, one should not automatically dismiss every observation made by Dr. Woodling.

The expert who testified for the state at a hearing years after the original convictions agreed that what Dr. Woodling described in one of the Kniffen boys—anal dilation over 20 mm without stool present—was significant because "it appears to be a learned response to the body to avoid injury from repeated sodomy." The judge who overturned the convictions in those proceedings noted it is "clear that even under the most recent medical studies" the dilation that Woodling reported observing would still be considered "a very strong indication" of sodomy.[133]

The medical testimony about the McCuan girls was even stronger. After all, the case began with Mary Ann Barbour's concern about *vaginal bruising.* For all of the attention focused in the witch-hunt narrative on her medical records, there has been surprisingly little attention to precisely what the medical records reflect about the McCuan girls. Humes, who devotes almost twenty pages to the Kniffen and McCuan case, allows in a single sentence that the girls saw "a doctor, who found bruising and swelling and concluded that [Bobbie] had, indeed, been molested."[134]

That is an understatement, to say the least. Dr. Carol Squyres, the pediatrician who had examined the girls in 1980, found them to be extremely abnormal in 1982. She had examined "hundreds of vaginas" in her pediatric practice and testified that "prepubital children do not look like" these young girls. More specifically, she testified that Bobbie's "hymen had been transected," cut at the edges at approximately 4 o'clock and 8 o'clock—findings that would still be considered abnormal today.[135] Dr. Squyres also made statements that would not be considered appropriate now; she testified that sexual activity causes vaginal "rounding," when this is no longer considered a medical indication of abuse.[136]

According to the trial testimony, Dr. Woodling's colposcopic images in 1982 documented vaginal scarring in Bobbie. Dr. Squyres examined these slides[137]; she was in the unique position of having a comparison to her observations two years earlier. The time period is significant because the girls supposedly had no exposure to Phelps during this time—but they had continuous contact with their own parents, who were named as defendants in 1982.

The testimony that compares the 1982 findings to those of 1980 has never been mentioned in the witch-hunt narrative. Dr. Squyres observed "gaping" of the anal area in 1982 that was not present in 1980. She testified that in all her years of practice she had never seen a child who had an anal lining like that in the pictures of Bobbie.[138] In her view, some kind of trauma to the area would have to be the cause. She also testified that she could not see Bobbie's vagina in 1980 without spreading apart the labia. In the pictures in 1982, however, she could see the vaginal mucosa without spreading the labia. This would be a highly unusual finding, but it cannot be confirmed without reviewing the actual slides.

In fact there is strong reason to conclude the McCuan girls were subject to repeated sexual abuse in the period between 1980 and 1982. Even the doctor who testified for the defense concurred with some of these findings. Nathan and Snedeker allow that this concurrence "buttressed intimations of incest in the McCuan family and seriously weakened Alvin and Debbie's protestations of innocence."[139] They do not explain why, given this conclusion, they included both of the McCuans on the dedication page of their book. Further, they do not disclose that Snedeker was representing the Kniffens and McCuans at the time. It would be a violation of Snedeker's ethical obligations to clients, especially during their appeal, to incriminate them; this demonstrates an inherent limitation when a defense attorney coauthors a book that analyzes cases involving his clients.

The focus of the witch-hunt narrative has been on the mental stability of the grandmother, who made a report in January 1980 and then fell apart when she concluded that authorities were doing little in response. It would appear from the medical evidence that her fears were well founded and that the witch-hunt narrative has now enshrined the result that worried her the most: the abuse of the McCuan girls would be minimized or denied. This is not to deny that the case expanded beyond all reason and that there are serious questions concerning the Kniffen boys. Those questions are more perplexing than they are clear. Both of these individuals recanted their statements and they apparently recanted their recantations at some point as well.[140] As the judge put it in 1996, in reversing the convictions of the Kniffens and the McCuans:

> It may be that all of the acts reported actually occurred and that later recantations by Brandon and Brian Kniffen are fabrications as a result of family pressure or personal guilt.[141]

In short, the proceeding that set all four defendants free was a repudiation of how the state interviewed the children in April 1982 and later, but it was not a declaration of the defendants' innocence. Indeed, the McCuan girls never recanted. But this is not reflected in the witch-hunt narrative.

John Stoll and Grant Self

John Stoll was charged in June 1984 with abusing numerous children, including his own son. Four other adults were charged as well: Grant Self, Timothy Palomo, Margorie Grafton, and Glenda Manners. Stoll succeeded in having his conviction overturned in 2004, after serving more years than anyone in the contested Kern County cases. Palomo and Grafton's convictions were reversed by the California Supreme Court in 1989 on the grounds that the trial court improperly excluded a defense psychologist who would have testified that the defendants' personality tests revealed "no signs of 'deviance' or 'abnormality.'"[142] (Ironically, the same people who excoriate pediatricians for diagnosing sexual abuse without the benefit of controlled studies are silent on the lack of "scientific proof" for profile evidence.[143]) As Judge Malcolm M. Lucas noted in dissent, the psychologist was "unable to cite any studies on the validity of the subject tests as applied to individuals charged with either child abuse or incest."[144] Notably, Grant Self's conviction was not overturned in the same case. Instead, he served out his sentence and was then held through the civil commitment statute. He later filed a lawsuit in state court, seeking to set aside his 1984 conviction connected to John Stoll.[145]

Stoll's conviction was set aside because of the recantation of four adults who accused him as children. One of those adults is particularly persuasive because a poem that he wrote as a child supports the idea that he provided false testimony and felt guilty about it at the time. But however persuasive one finds those recantations, there is additional evidence that should also be considered: Stoll's own son has not recanted. The witch-hunt narrative seems to assume that his son's position, which has not wavered over time, should not be taken seriously. But there is no explanation why the charges involving his son should be rejected, other than the fact that children unrelated to Stoll have since recanted. Then again, most, and maybe all, of the charges against him were baseless. This view is supported by the $5.5 million that Kern County officials agreed to pay Stoll in a civil case claiming damages for wrongful conviction.[146]

There is also the matter of Grant Self and Glenda Manners. The witch-hunt narrative never acknowledges the complete story about these two people. Glenda Manners is generally omitted from the discussion entirely. She is not mentioned in Maggie Jones's lengthy story, nor in the chapter about Bakersfield in Nathan and Snedeker's book. Her name does not appear on any of the lists in the witch-hunt canon, even though she was convicted of abusing one of the same children that Grant Self was convicted of abusing. Self, on the other hand, is widely labeled as a witch-hunt victim. Carol Hopkins of the Justice Committee organized a vigil for "innocent victims" including Self.[147]

A few accounts in the witch-hunt narrative allow that Self has a relevant criminal past. According to a detailed internet account that circulated on the witch-hunt list, he had "a few prior troubles with the law and was forbidden by his parole from being around children."[148] Writing in the *New York Times*, Jones allowed that Self had "a previous conviction of molestation" but said nothing else about it.[149] Those are both serious understatements. Self had more than "a previous conviction" or "prior troubles." He had multiple prior convictions involving sexual contact with multiple children each time. His first arrest for sexually abusing children was in 1976, with three boys (two ten-year-olds and an eight-year-old). Self was charged with oral copulation. He pled to contributing to the delinquency of a minor and was sentenced to one-year suspended and ninety-days in jail. Self was placed on three years of probation, and while on probation he was apprehended for his second sexual offense children—in 1979. Again there were three victims, all boys under the age of fourteen. Self took pictures of some of the acts and instructed one of the boys to take other photographs documenting the sexual activities.[150] The police recovered the photographs, which prove this case beyond any doubt. Self received an eight-year suspended sentence and was sent to a state mental facility.

He was released in 1983 and was supposedly under "supervision" when he moved in with a woman who had a nine-year-old boy. Self was working for John

Stoll at this point, and eventually started renting the pool house in his backyard. By one account, he did so as a ruse because the terms of his community release would not have permitted him to live with a woman who lived with a nine-year-old boy. Jones reported that "Stoll didn't know" that Self had a criminal record or that a mother had recently complained to the sheriff's office that Self had "inappropriately touched her son." The woman with the nine-year-old was Glenda Manners, the boy's maternal grandmother. It was in connection with this child that *she* was charged with two counts of felony lewd and lascivious behavior and one count of child endangerment. The latter charge stemmed from Manners having "twice witnessed without comment as Self sexually molested [the boy]."[151] Manners did not contest those facts on appeal; nor did she ever challenge her conviction. All that she appealed was the court's denial of probation.[152]

The crimes Glenda Manners observed Grant Self commit were *not* at the pool house in John Stoll's backyard, although Self apparently listed the pool house as his official residence at the time. Maybe Self sexually abused the boy at Manners's apartment but did not do the same thing at a pool house that attracted multiple children—although his prior convictions involving multiple children would suggest otherwise. Maybe Stoll unwittingly helped Self perpetrate a ruse concerning his supervised release,[153] although it would seem one would be aware if the person allegedly renting the pool house in the backyard did not actually live there. And maybe what Manners saw are things that Stoll knew nothing about. But the witch-hunt narrative never acknowledges these uncertainties, let alone attempt to address them. Instead the narrative has ignored Manners and embraced Self. Bruce Robinson opines, through his popular "religious tolerance" website, that Self is "not guilty of the crimes" and adds that in all likelihood "no molestations occurred."[154] Nathan and Snedeker dedicated their book, in part, to Self—a man who is unquestionably a serial child molester (two of his convictions rested, separately, on photographic evidence and on an adult eyewitness[155]). The earliest of his convictions for child sexual abuse was a guilty plea that he has never contested. Self was held in civil commitment after his prison term ended. In a civil commitment proceeding in 2000, Self denied having any sexual interest in children; he had no explanation for 115 disciplinary charges in prison, including possession of "full frontal nude photographs of children."[156] Self succeeded in getting one of his 1984 convictions set aside—the one connected to John Stoll. The boys in the case, except Stoll's own son, had recanted their testimony. Self then sued Kern County for civil damages and in March 2013 the county agreed to pay him $725,000.[157] What is perhaps most remarkable about this settlement is that it occurred after Self had been arrested again on child sexual abuse charges—this time in Jackson County, Oregon. Four months after settling his civil case against Kern County, Self pleaded guilty to using a child in a display of sexually explicit conduct (a class A felony in Oregon) and two related felonies. He was sentenced to seventy months in prison and three years of post-prison supervision.[158]

Both Nathan and Snedeker and Humes have argued that the excesses of the prosecutions in Bakersfield launched a wave of witch-hunts across the country. What they actually helped launch was a witch-hunt *narrative* that is so expansive it cannot or will not distinguish between those with legitimate claims of innocence and those who are clearly guilty. The Kniffens and Stoll may well qualify as the former, although this is not entirely clear; but the McCuans and Self certainly do not. There are other Bakersfield defendants, such as Richard Charles Bishop, who also photographed his abusive acts, whose convictions have, appropriately, never been overturned.[159] And there are confusing cases, as with the Pitts case, where convictions were overturned for prosecutorial misconduct and "three of six child victims recanted."[160]

There is no question that the problems identified in the 1986 report on Kern County were serious. They painted a picture of "one of the clumsiest and most destructive child abuse investigations in American history."[161] The harm done to the falsely accused in these cases was enormous. But there is also no question that the evidence of guilt in some of these cases has been ignored or distorted in the subsequent witch-hunt narrative.

BARAN

Location	Pittsfield, MA
Institution	Early Childhood Development Ctr.
Date	1985
Lead Def.	Bernard Baran

The brief description of this case in *Satan's Silence* gives no special reason to think that Baran's conviction was wrongful, but research into the complete trial transcript and other related documents reveals that the outcome was indeed a miscarriage of justice. There is, however, one important way in which the facts differ from the witch-hunt narrative: the case had nothing to do with ritual abuse.

Bernard Baran was working as an assistant at a day-care center in Pittsfield, Massachusetts, when he was accused of child molestation. The case began with a four-year-old boy who contracted a venereal disease. His mother notified authorities that her son had been sexually abused by Baran at the day-care center. An investigation ensued, and charges involving five other children were added. Baran was tried and convicted in a matter of months.

But nothing in this case is as it initially appears. The strongest statement made by the first boy to complain was taken by William Baughan, a Department of Social Services (DSS) investigator who "substantiated" the sexual abuse claim and referred it for prosecution. But the person the child named in that report was not Bernard Baran. It was the boy's mother's boyfriend, who lived with them at the time. He was never charged with any crime, although the matter was referred to prosecutors after DSS substantiated a complaint involving him.[162] She had already vehemently accused Baran, of course. But what, if anything, her son actually said about Baran became more doubtful over time.

During the trial, the boy did not implicate Baran on the stand, and all charges connected to him were dismissed. Nevertheless, Judge William Simons allowed medical testimony to support the prosecutor's preposterous argument that the first boy got his venereal disease from Baran *because* Baran was gay and therefore at higher risk himself. Any gay person who works with children is assumed guilty under this approach. The prosecutor, Daniel Ford, even suggested that Baran—who tested negative for gonorrhea—might have taken penicillin between voluntarily talking to the police and being arrested a few days later. But Baran is allergic to penicillin; this fact is stamped on his medical records.[163]

The prosecution seemed to be fueled by homophobia. The prosecutor told the jury that a gay man working in a day-care center was like "a chocaholic in a candy store." (The prosecutor later claimed that he was addressing whether Baran had the *opportunity* to commit the crimes, but the underlying homophobia is apparent.) Moreover, the bigoted man who led the original charge against Baran—the stepfather of the first boy—complained bitterly about having a gay man employed at the day-care center. A few weeks later, he accused Baran of child molestation.

The DSS report that pointed the finger *away* from Baran was dated January 17, 1985—a day before the pre-trial hearing began in Baran's criminal trial. Curiously, the report was not stamped as "received" at the district attorney's office until a day *after* the entire trial *ended*, about two weeks later. The report was apparently stamped, filed . . . and buried. The defense was never given a copy, and the mother's boyfriend, named by DSS, was never prosecuted. The critical memo was uncovered years later by lawyers representing the insurance companies of the day-care center. Faced with a lawsuit from the family of the first boy, the insurance lawyers did the kind of thorough investigation that was never done in the first instance. Several civil cases eventually settled for nuisance value.

Still, one might wonder, how did charges with such misguided beginnings spread to five other children? One answer is that they did not. The five other children at trial said surprisingly little that actually incriminated Baran. The three older children—two were then four-year-olds and one was five—have all given reasons to doubt that Baran abused them. One boy said so little on the stand that, like the first boy, charges related to him were dismissed. Another boy, added the day of trial, barely said more, but records uncovered in the civil cases document his repeated retractions. The civil investigation also uncovered evidence that the oldest girl told a therapist that "her mother led her to believe that if she didn't say the right words they wouldn't get a lot of money." The remaining two child witnesses were three-year-old girls. One clearly did not prove she was competent to testify.[164] The other was asked, "If someone asks you a question and you know what the answer is, what should you do?" "Bernie touched me," she responded.[165] Both were allowed to testify. There is much more that could be said about the weaknesses in this evidence. Baran's motion for a new trial contains hundreds of pages of "new" evidence from the civil case, plus 392 pages obtained under defense subpoena. The subpoenaed documents are sealed, but several, quoted liberally in the motion, add substantial weight to the already strong case for a new trial.

The Baran case is a challenge to those sympathetic to either side of the witch-hunt narrative. Those sympathetic to Baran seem to have a difficult time accepting the STD test and the implication, borne out in the DSS memo, that the original child in this case was sexually abused—though not by Baran. But someone got away with sexually abusing a child in this case. Those sympathetic to the prosecution have an even larger challenge. There are substantial reasons to think Baran was wrongfully convicted. Those who have defended the conviction point to the "admission" Baran made in 1989 in order to be transferred from the general prison population to the Massachusetts Treatment Center. Baran, who took the stand to proclaim his innocence at trial, told a newspaper reporter years later he made those statements after repeated assaults in prison.[166] Baran prevailed in reversing his conviction years after this section was written. He was freed from prison in 2006.[167]

RUNYAN

Location	Bainsbridge Island, WA
Institution	home day care
Date	1985
Lead Def.	Debbie Runyan

This case is listed on the dedication page of Nathan and Snedeker's book, but it is not discussed in the book. Debbie Runyan was convicted in January 1986 of molesting five girls, including her two daughters, at a day care she ran out of her home. The allegations surfaced when Runyan went on vacation and a distant relative took care of the children. The woman was startled by how sexualized the children were. One girl tried to grab the woman's breasts, another tried to French kiss her, and a third frequently masturbated. After finding a vibrator in drawer *in the day care,* she conveyed her concern to a parent of one girl. The mother's four-year-old girl had experienced constant redness and vaginal pain that year and two serious bladder infections, one very recently. She had also come home once with choke marks on her neck. Runyan told her mother another child had done it.[168] She attributed the other problems to general hygiene.

Detectives who then interviewed the children were told that Runyan often took the children into the bathroom, locking the door. One child described hearing "buzzing" behind the bathroom door when this happened. Another child described being abused by a "rolling pin, except it was flat on top." Other children said they were abused with "sticks." (The authorities found three vibrators and other sexual paraphernalia in the house.) Runyan's seven-year-old daughter said children were tied up in the garage and described green and white plaid cloth strips used to tie them up. Runyan's roommate turned over strips of that kind, which she said she found in Runyan's bedroom. Runyan's younger daughter used the phrase "monster mommy in the garage."[169] And a pediatrician testified that there were signs of physical abuse in three of the five girls.

It is not clear why this case appears in the dedication of *Satan's Silence*. The case is not discussed in the book; it is not even spelled correctly on the dedication page (where one sees "Runyon"). The most likely reason is that Runyan's name appears in Mark Pendergrast's book *Victims of Memory*. But he provided no analysis either; Runyan is just one of several names listed in a single paragraph that has no accompanying documentation.[170]

The children's statements in the case contained unusual and verified details, from the vibrators to the plaid strips of cloth, and there were medical findings to bolster their testimony. Moreover, as reported at the time, Runyan admitted under cross-examination that "she had lied on numerous occasions to family, friends, and police."[171] Indeed, her protestations of innocence grew stranger over time. She originally claimed that she was "set up" by her ex-husband.[172] She never specified how he accomplished this feat since the charges were corroborated in various ways and included several children beyond their own. After her conviction, Runyan expanded her conspiracy theory to include the argument that the prosecutor and trial judge acted for "political reasons."[173] As she made these fantastic claims, her lawyer withdrew from the case, citing "ethical" considerations. In a nine-page decision upholding Runyan's conviction, a unanimous three-judge panel concluded "the record in this case is overwhelming."[174] As they summarized the trial record: it reflects that "children were tied up, gagged and physically injured by Runyan's abuse."[175]

A post-conviction proceeding five years later resulted in an evidentiary hearing to consider Runyan's claim that her oldest daughter had recanted.[176] Runyan's older daughter was clearly troubled about testifying against her mother. The day she testified, a reporter who covered the entire trial wrote that she was "pale and uncomfortable on the witness stand" and "constantly stared at her mother." Nevertheless, the daughter testified she had seen two girls tied up, and "she identified strips of cloth that allegedly had been placed in the mouth of one child."[177] The court found that her affidavit was consistent with memory problems she expressed to her therapist in 1993, but it was "equally clear that her testimony at trial was truthful."[178] None of the other girls who testified at trial have claimed memory loss or otherwise recanted their testimony, including Runyan's *other* daughter.

FRIEDMAN

Location	Great Neck, NY
Institution	none
Date	1987
Lead Def.	Arnold and Jesse Friedman

Jesse Friedman is also listed on the dedication page of *Satan's Silence*, although his case was not discussed in the book. Friedman was apprehended in connection with an investigation that originated in 1987 as a child pornography investigation against his father, Arnold Friedman, who was a well-respected teacher in Great Neck, New York. The elder Friedman held after-school computer classes in the basement of his house. He had an interest in child pornography and ordered some from a source that turned out to be law enforcement; they subsequently raided his house. One of the items agents seized was a list of students in the after-school computer classes. Those students were subsequently interviewed, and some revealed they had been sexually abused in the basement of Friedman's house. As more victims were identified, Jesse Friedman, then seventeen, was identified as a participant in the abuse. Jesse eventually pleaded guilty to twenty-five counts of sexual abuse and was sentenced to six to eighteen years in prison. He told the judge, "I am sorry for my actions," and asked for "assistance with my problem," a request to be sent to a federal institution with sex-offender treatment. His father, then fifty-eight, pleaded guilty earlier to distributing child pornography through the mail and to multiple counts of child sexual abuse. He was sentenced to ten to thirty years.

The case was not highly contested at the time; after all, the defendants pleaded guilty. And for at least five years after those guilty pleas, nothing was written to suggest the outcome was inappropriate. Arnold Friedman sent some kind of "open letter" protesting his innocence, but even those who have come to support Jesse Friedman have not challenged his father's conviction by guilty plea. Nevertheless, Nathan included Arnold and Jesse Friedman's names on a list posted on the "Witch Hunt Information Center" in 1994. Because the case was not discussed in the book, it is difficult to know why Nathan considered the convictions to be inappropriate. The answer emerged in 2003 with the release of Andrew Jarecki's movie *Capturing the Friedmans*. Nathan appears in the film and argues that the Friedman case was part and parcel of the "sex-abuse hysteria" that was sweeping the country at the time. Her role in the film has never been fully explained. After the film was released, Richard Hankin, an editor and producer of the film, described Nathan as "a friend of the [Friedman] family" and as "an intermediary" in the project, raising questions about how the project evolved.[179] Nathan appears in the film as an expert on witch-hunts. She is not identified in the film as a friend of the family.

Capturing the Friedmans raises many questions about the case, but it purports not to take a side. The film was marketed with the tagline "Who Do You Believe?" Whereas the film gives voice to several officials who stand by the conviction, there is no question that it leaves the impression that the case was a miscarriage of justice. Three main objections are put forth in the film. First, investigators are criticized for pressuring the adolescents whom they interviewed. One family that secretly taped the interrogation of their son is featured prominently in presenting the argument that teenage boys were pressured to say they were abused. Second, there is a claim that the police manufactured or exaggerated claims about child pornography in the house. Finally, the film presents portions of a videotaped interview with one of the complainants from the time, who describes being sexually abused at the Friedmans' house but seems to say his recollections of the abuse emerged only after being hypnotized.

On their face, all three of these claims challenge the credibility of the state's version of events. On closer examination, however, there is much less here than meets the eye. Moreover, some relevant facts are left out of the movie. For instance, it omits any mention of a third defendant, outside the family, who pleaded guilty. When confronted with this startling omission, Jarecki responded that Ross Goldstein "did not want to appear" in the film.[180] Why this would prevent someone who was making a film they describe as a documentary from *mentioning* him has never been explained. The importance of Goldstein was acknowledged in Jesse Friedman's motion for a new trial, filed after the movie was released. In summarizing the facts, Friedman's lawyers allowed that "Jesse knew how detrimental the testimony of this adult witness might be at trial."[181] The film also omits any mention of the two lie detector tests Jesse Friedman failed. Jarecki later defended this choice on the grounds that *he* thought the results were inconclusive.[182] He did not explain how the editorial choice squares with the idea that the audience was supposed to decide whom to believe. The film also omits any of the dramatic videotape of Jesse describing his own sexual abuse by his father, and his participation in sexual abuse of boys in his family home, on the *Geraldo* program.[183] Nathan claimed in a 1994 posting on the Witch-Hunt List that the only reason Jesse Friedman gave the interview was the hope that it "would help him during sentencing."[184] In the same post, she claimed the interview was his lawyer's idea and Jesse "felt betrayed because he still ended up with a harsh sentence." But the interview was conducted *after* Friedman was sentenced, not before.[185] And Jarecki agreed, in a public session after screening the movie in New York City, that Jesse Friedman's lawyer counseled *against* the interview.[186] Jesse recanted his confession while in prison. As reported in *Newsday*, Friedman said he "lied to manipulate the media so that people would feel sorry for [me]."[187] The explanation could be equally true of Friedman's current claims of innocence.

The film also casts doubt on the child pornography claim by showing a picture of an empty table and challenging the description of a police investigator that there was a "foot high stack" of such material in plain view. But a year after the film was released, Jesse Friedman's lawyers made a different claim in their appeal: they described the materials as "approximately twenty magazines containing nude photos of adolescent and teenage males." In other words, the quibble seems to be whether twenty magazines constitute a "foot-high stack." (Nathan claimed in 1994 that it was "two or three old magazines.") Jesse's lawyers also argued that these materials were not "interspersed" with classroom materials but rather "were all found behind the piano in Arnold Friedman's private study." They made no mention of the pornographic games found on disks that *were* interspersed with materials in the classroom.[188]

Finally, the most important claim in the movie, at least from the point of view of challenging Jesse Friedman's conviction, involved hypnosis. The film features portions of a videotaped interview with a man identified as Gregory Doe, who makes statements to the effect that he did not remember being abused until after being hypnotized. Testimony obtained through hypnosis is not considered reliable and would be inadmissible in most states. Friedman's lawyers told the *New York Times* "they have obtained evidence indicating that some of the other youths who accused the Friedmans" had been hypnotized before testifying to the grand jury.[189] But there are serious questions about the accuracy of the presentation of Gregory Doe in the movie, and no actual evidence was ever offered to prove *other* complainants had been hypnotized. To the contrary, Dr. Joyce W. Parks filed a sworn affidavit in 2004 stating unequivocally that Doe was her patient and "at no time during this patient's treatment did I ever use hypnosis."[190] Moreover, Friedman's own lawyer cast doubt on the film, describing it as "reliable evidence of nothing." In a hearing on October 3, 2007, Friedman's lawyer said it was fair to characterize the film as "containing interviews, cut and spliced, and taken out of context."[191] It is not known whether the interview with Doe was subject to such techniques. What is clear is that Friedman's lawyers provided no evidence to support their claim that any other complainant in the case had been subject to hypnosis. Accordingly, the court turned down their request to reopen the case.

Other events have cast further doubt on the thoroughness and balance of Jarecki's research. When the film was nominated for an Academy Award, six of the complainants from the time came forward to say it "omitted or distorted important evidence about their cases."[192] Their statements raised important questions about how many of the victims Jarecki actually interviewed. There were fifteen complainants in the case. The film never addressed this question, but Jarecki told an interviewer after the film was released that he had interviewed "more than three" of them. He later filed an affidavit on Jesse Friedman's behalf saying he interviewed "approximately five" of the complainants.[193] It is difficult to imagine how Jarecki could be so unsure of exactly how many of the original complainants he actually interviewed. Moreover, even if it was five, this would mean he interviewed only one-third of the original victims. In other words, Jarecki found "no evidence" of Friedman's guilt, but he never talked to most of the people who could provide such evidence. Jarecki interviewed far more adults who never complained as children that they were abused at the Friedmans.

Recent developments largely support the argument that Jesse Friedman was *not* the victim of a witch-hunt. In response to a federal appellate court decision that questioned, but did not overturn, the verdict, the Nassau County District Attorney's Office re-opened the case and convened an independent panel of experts to guide an inquiry into the conviction.[194] The nearly three-year investigation ended in June 2013 with the release of a 155-page "Conviction Integrity Review" that concluded "by any impartial analysis, the re-investigation process . . . has only increased confidence in the integrity of Jesse Friedman's guilty plea and adjudication as a sex offender."[195] Among other conclusions, the reviewers found: (1) no evidence that improper police questioning materially tainted the investigation, (2) no credible evidence that hypnosis was used on any complainant, and (3) Friedman's guilty plea was not a product of coercion. The report detailed new information that further supports the outcome of the case, including an incriminating statement by Jesse Friedman's uncle and a psychological evaluation in 1988, never released by the defense, that Jesse Friedman was a "psychopathic deviant" whose personality was "consistent with someone who was capable of committing the crimes with which he was charged."[196] The review also criticized Andrew Jarecki for "misrepresenting Judge Boklan" in *Capturing the Friedmans.*[197] One important development, discussed in the report, could be seen as supporting Jesse Freidman's position: Ross Goldstein, the third defendant in the case who pleaded guilty, has since recanted his admission of guilt. For several reasons, the reviewers did not consider Goldstein's recantation reliable, including his inability to explain the things he originally told Andrew Jarecki—things Jarecki chose to leave out of the movie.[198] The Case Advisory Panel that oversaw the review included Barry Scheck, the defense lawyer who co-founded the Innocence Project. The Advisory Panel issued a unanimous statement that the Review Team's conclusion that Jesse Freidman was guilty was "reasonable and supported by the evidence."[199] The report is not a binding legal decision and Jesse Friedman has vowed to continue to seek to overturn his conviction through the court system.[200]

Marilynn Malcom's name is also on the dedication page of Nathan and Snedeker's book, although the case is not discussed. Michael Snedeker, Nathan's co-author, represented Malcom years later at a clemency hearing, although this too is not disclosed in the book. Malcom was convicted in 1988 of twelve felony counts of

MALCOM

Location	Vancouver, WA
Institution	Rainbow Christian Daycare
Date	1987
Lead Def.	Marilynn Malcom

child sexual abuse, involving seven victims including her daughter Julia, then eight years old, and her son Kevin, then twelve. The other children, all younger, attended the Rainbow Christian Daycare Center in her home in Vancouver, Washington. The case began in late January 1987, when one of the children who attended the day care watched a video about sexual abuse and strangers. This boy told his mother about sexual games involving Malcom's daughter and other boys. She called a friend, whose son also attended the day care, and her son apparently confirmed the gist of the story (although the second boy said he was not involved). These mothers phoned the Clark County Sheriff the next day.

One of the boys apparently repeated the story about sexualized games at Malcom's house; the other one did not. Malcom, as would later be documented, soon "took a number of steps attempting to stifle the investigation."[201] This included telling at least three other parents not to let their children be interviewed by the police. These allegations should be handled within the church, she told them. She told another neighbor she was adamant she was not going to let the police talk to her daughter, Julia.

Detective Sharon Krause interviewed Marilynn Malcom and, separately, Julia Malcom on February 6. The girl apparently told the detective she had been molested by her brother and that she told her mother about it. Her mother denied any knowledge. Four days later, Marilynn Malcom called Detective Krause and said her daughter had fallen off a stool and "hit herself on the heel" and was bleeding from her vagina. Malcom said she did not want to touch her daughter "because of what has been going on."[202] The detective told Malcom to take her daughter to the doctor, who later reported that Julia was "too uncomfortable for him to do the exam" and that Julia wanted Detective Krause to "hold her hand and help her while at the doctor's, not her mother."[203] The girl was examined, under a sedative, two days later by Dr. Brigitte I. Mengelberg, who reported there was significant evidence of anal and vaginal trauma.[204]

While the investigation continued, the younger children who attended the day care implicated Kevin and then Marilynn Malcom. Kevin confessed to sexual activities with young boys at the day care and pleaded guilty in Juvenile Court on April 20, 1987. That afternoon, Detective Krause interviewed Julia again. The eight-page report of this interview indicates that Julia disclosed "there had been a number of sexual contacts between her and her mother which occurred over several years of time."[205] She also made statements indicating her mother had sexual contact with several children at the day care. Kevin then confirmed that his mother was involved in the abuse. Marilynn Malcom was charged with sexual abuse against her son, daughter, and other children later in April.

The parents of some of the children who attended the day care continued to question their children in the coming weeks. The state would later describe what happened as "an investigator's nightmare," including the claim that Marilynn Malcom killed a little girl. One parent was described as "hindering the investigation by her improper questions and lack of cooperation with the prosecutor's office."[206] A few parents also started complaining that Detective Krause did not believe their children. The detective interviewed one of the boys on June 2, at which time he retracted recent allegations and said he lied about many things because of pressure from his parents. Notably, he did not recant the basic claims against Kevin or Marilynn Malcom.

Malcom was charged with sexual abuse of all of the children, but the trial and the main witnesses were her own two children, who never made the most fantastic allegations and who were much older than the other children. Malcom was convicted by a twelve-person jury. She was then evaluated in advance of sentencing. The Sentencing Report and Psychological Evaluation noted "indications of deception" in response to the relevant questions about sexual activity. The examiner, whose credentials, methods, and findings were never challenged in any later proceedings, concluded this was "a clear-cut case of old-fashioned denial."[207] The conclusion was seconded by Dr. Kirk Johnson, who had been hired by Malcom's mother and concluded, after reviewing the same materials, that Malcom was "highly manipulative." Years later, after her release from prison, Malcom claimed in an editorial in the local newspaper that those reports "were not accepted by Judge Morgan."[208] The claim is flatly contradicted by the Findings of Fact and Conclusions of Law signed by Judge J. Dean Morgan on February 5, 1988, in support of a sentence with "aggravated circumstances."[209] Malcom's conviction was upheld on appeal, although she also claimed years later in a petition for clemency that she had been "without recourse in the appellate court."[210]

The clemency petition—prepared by Michael Snedeker—included a report from a medical expert who contradicted the report about Julia's injuries and a statement of recantation by Julia Malcom. The recantation was reportedly written by Marilynn Malcom, not by Julia.[211] And it was written after Julia started rooming with a woman who had become Malcom's friend in prison. When prosecutors asked Julia if they could interview her about her alleged retraction, she said yes—but later her lawyer indicated "he had reconsidered and would not allow an interview."[212] Her attorney also denied access to the two counselors and their records from 1987 to 1995, when Julia was treated for sexual abuse by her mother.[213] Prosecutors sought those records in the hopes of finding detailed information that would contradict the "retraction."

There are several reasons the recantation is suspect. First, the claim that her incriminating statements were made after repeated, coercive police interviews is not supported by the report of the interview of April 20, 1987. This is the first time she was asked about abuse by her mother, and she made a detailed statement. Second, her recantation is contradicted by statements her brother swore she made in family counseling sessions that he also attended.[214] Third, her recantation is contradicted by statements by a close friend who swore Julia confided in her when they were sixteen years old about sexual abuse by her mother when she was a child. The same friend reported that shortly before the recantation Julia told her not talk to anyone who was trying to keep her mother in prison—a request eerily similar to Marilynn Malcom's request to all of the parents not to speak to police when the case was first investigated. This friend also reported that Julia said her mother was going to get out of prison and sue the state, and they were going to "get a lot of money and move to Montana."[215] There are, of course, obvious reasons for a family member to recant truthful disclosures about abuse. Possible motivations include a desire to reunite, feelings of guilt, and coercion by the perpetrator. Another is the hope of monetary gain. All of those possibilities potentially fit this case.

Dr. Steven Gabaeff, the medical expert offered on Malcom's behalf, disagreed with all of the findings from the examination of Julia in 1987. Without an independent assessment of the slides, which are not part of the public record, it is impossible to evaluate this disagreement. But it is worth noting that the doctor did not try to provide any explanation for why Julia was bleeding from her vagina; nor did he try to explain how his view that her findings were normal would be consistent with the symptom. He also did not provide any opinion about Malcom's absurd claim that her daughter's vaginal bleeding was caused by falling off a stool.

Snedeker offered the clemency board an affidavit from Maggie Bruck, a psychology professor at Johns Hopkins University, who concluded that none of the statements from anyone in the case were reliable—except the recent recantation by Julia Malcom. Bruck's lengthy analysis of whether the interviews with the children were coercive was silent on the possibility that coercion might be involved in this would-be recantation. Nor did Bruck comment on the discrepancy between Julia's claim that she "had no sexual knowledge" at age eight and therefore could not possibly have made those statements to Detective Krause, and the assertion *in her recantation* that she was raped by a babysitter at age four and still remembers how painful it was. Notably, neither Julia's older brother nor any of the others involved in the case have ever recanted. Anita Peterson, chair of the Clemency and Pardons Board and also a psychologist, stated she "had some considerable problems" with Bruck's report after she "went back and cross-checked Dr. Bruck's assertions."[216] Peterson concluded that Bruck had "lost her objectivity." The board voted 4-0 to deny the petition.

There is no doubt that some of the parents in this case damaged the state's case by overinterviewing their children. But the charges against Marilynn Malcom pre-dated those events, and her conviction was based on the testimony of her own two children, who never made such claims. The older child has always stood by his testimony, and the would-be recantation of the younger one is dubious on many levels. Malcom's subsequent efforts to overturn her conviction in federal court have all failed.

GLENDALE MONTESSORI

Location	Stuart, FL
Institution	Glendale Montessori School
Date	1987
Lead Def.	James Toward

James Toward's name is also on the dedication page of Nathan and Snedeker's book, although the case as well is not actually discussed. It stems from abuse allegations at the Glendale Montessori School in Stuart, Florida, where James Toward was headmaster. The first official record that there might be sexual abuse at the preschool came through the Child Abuse Registry Hotline on June 25, 1987. The caller reported highly sexualized behavior by a two-and-a-half-year-old girl. She lay on top of her mother and started "pumping" her; when her mother asked what she was doing, the little girl said "screwing." The girl also asked her mother to put her hand in the child's panties and "make her feel good." When asked if someone did this to her, the girl said "Mr. T," the name children used for James Toward.[217] The police interviewed these parents, who apparently removed their child from the school. Nothing else happened at that point, even though the case would later be said to have all the markings of a modern witch-hunt. But the witch-hunt narrative has never acknowledged this initial warning sign or the minimal response to it. Another complaint about possible sexual abuse at Glendale Montessori was received on the Child Abuse Registry Hotline two months later, on August 21. A police investigator contacted the parents of a four-and-a-half-year-old boy who had "feigned illness, screamed, cried and locked himself in the bathroom" to avoid going to school. The parents called the hotline after their son grabbed his father's hand and rubbed it against the boy's genitals. The boy told his mother he learned that from "Mr. T." Neither of these early disclosures could possibly have been caused by repetitive interviews or public hysteria. The reports occurred the same day as the observed behavior, and the matters had not yet become public. The following day, a search warrant was executed at the home of James Toward. The boy had told authorities he was taken to Toward's house, where he and several other boys were photographed naked, wearing masks, bandanas, and cowboy hats. The boy said those items would be found in the closet of a spare bedroom. According to the search affidavit, costume masks, bandanas, and cowboys hats "were located where the child had described." The child was also "able to describe the entrance to the home," even though Toward told the police he had never taken children from the school to his home.[218]

A third complaint pertaining to the Glendale Montessori came on September 11, 1987, when the Stuart Police Department received a call from a woman in Tennessee, who was visiting her mother in Knoxville and had not been in Florida during the events in late August. They reported that on September 3, the grandmother had taken their son to see a pediatrician about an upper respiratory infection. In the examination room, the boy reportedly said "in a very frightened voice, Nana, he won't have to touch my penis will he?" When asked why he didn't want the doctor to touch his penis, the boy reportedly said it was a "secret" that "I can't tell you." His parents arranged for the boy to see a social worker in Knoxville. After that visit, the boy told his mother that he had been to "Mr. T's" house and "we were touching." He said that "Miss Brenda," who worked at the preschool, made him take off his clothes. The parents, who had never given permission for the boy to visit Toward's house, contacted the Stuart Police Department.[219]

The police proceeded to interview children and talk to parents. The investigation went on for months before James Toward and Brenda Williams were charged with the sexual abuse of six boys. As the investigation continued, other teachers were considered suspects; one lost her teaching license in what was perhaps the most dubious aspect of the case. Brenda Williams eventually pleaded guilty in June 1989 and was sentenced to ten years in prison.

There was a pre-trial hearing in Toward's case in August 1989, lasting eight days and including testimony from all of the children connected to the original charges and some of their parents. The state also introduced sworn statements from teenagers, who claimed Toward had offered them "money or gifts for sex." They described Toward's sexual behavior as "sick" and "freakish." Prosecutors stated the intention to introduce this evidence if the defense raised Toward's character as an issue.[220] This is relevant only to the extent that Toward's "proper British demeanor" led some to conclude he could not possibly commit such crimes.

There was also significant circumstantial evidence concerning the claim that Toward had made, and disposed of, child pornography material in the months before his arrest. The six boys testified they were photographed by a "movie camera" and by a camera where the picture "came right out."[221] There was also testimony at trial from a clerk who sold Toward a Polaroid camera two years earlier. The clerk remembered Toward because he made repeated references to sex when he bought the camera.[222] But the camera was never recovered. Nor did the police find the video camera described by the children. They *did* find the original box for the video camera in Toward's attic.[223] Toward claimed he never owned either one. We will never know how he would have tried to explain that fact, or the evidence concerning his safety deposit box. A bank clerk testified she saw "bundles of cash and videotapes" in his safety deposit box on several occasions in 1986. Bank records showed that Toward's wife, Rosario, opened the box six days after his arrest. By the time police executed a search warrant, the box was empty.[224] Faced with this evidence, Toward entered into a plea agreement in exchange for a twenty-seven-year prison sentence, ten years of probation, and an agreement not to prosecute his wife. He also waived the pre-sentence report, which assured that "character evidence" against him would not become part of the official record.

The case became more contested in the years after his conviction, when additional civil suits were filed by families who were never involved in the criminal case. One of those lawsuits, filed three years later, was "aggressively defended" by an insurance company.[225] Insurance companies, which quickly paid as much as $1 million in settlements to some of the original complainants in the criminal case, viewed some of the later civil claims as baseless. Given the legal requirement to handle claims in "good faith" and the danger of paying enormous punitive damages if they are found to be in "bad faith," one can reasonably assume that the evidence for some of the later claimants was weak. By the same token, however, the earlier claims were paid quickly and to the satisfaction of the plaintiffs.

Toward first became part of the witch-hunt narrative when his name appeared on lists prepared by Professor Mary de Young, who never provided any supporting details or original documentation.[226] The False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF) started writing about the case in 2008, after someone they described as a "retracting student" reportedly contacted them. It is not clear why this person, who has never identified himself or herself publicly, would be considered a "retractor" since, by the person's own description, the family never participated in any charges or lawsuits. It is unclear, in other words, that there were any charges to retract. But this person apparently recalled being subject to hypnosis in an effort to uncover memories of abuse at the school. The FMSF also advanced the argument that there were "suggestive interviews," purporting to quote numerous snippets from an interview that is never footnoted.[227] But none of these claims deal directly with the children who had withdrawn from the preschool *before* any charges were made public, or with the fact that specific items described in the original search affidavit were found in a search of Toward's house, a place he said the children had never visited.

Toward made no effort to challenge his guilty plea, so the facts of the case were not subjected to any post-conviction judicial scrutiny. Instead, he offered his own version of the facts, without the danger of cross-examination. Toward later claimed he did not even know he had pleaded guilty to child sexual abuse. But the actual transcript of that proceeding proves otherwise.[228] Toward declined all interview requests from journalists over the years, making an exception for a writer who befriended his wife and who recently wrote sympathetically about his allegedly false conviction.[229]

When Toward's prison sentence ended in 1999, the state petitioned to hold him under involuntary civil commitment. The petition included psychological evaluations by Alan J. Waldman, M.D., and Ada Rameriz-Brouwer, Ph.D., both of whom concluded Toward was a pedophile who was likely to reoffend.[230] There were extended legal proceedings and appeals, first over whether this petition violated the original plea agreement, and then over various aspects of the civil commitment law in Florida known as the Jimmy Ryce Act, which itself changed over time. Toward was released in 2010, at age eighty, with strict conditions, including immediate deportation to England and an order, which cannot possibly be enforced, for sex offender counseling.

SCHILDMEYER

Location	Edgewood, IA
Institution	Sunshine Preschool
Date	1989
Lead Def.	Michael Joseph Schildmeyer

This is another case included on the dedication page of *Satan's Silence* without providing any details or referencing any source material, so it impossible to know why Nathan concluded this was a false conviction. The case had not appeared on any other lists of alleged false convictions when *Satan's Silence* was published. It did appear, however, on a list of "ritual child abuse" convictions prepared by Believe the Children and available online.[231] The only source about this case on that site was a single newspaper article.[232] Presumably, Nathan included the case because Believe the Children listed it as a true conviction for ritual child abuse.

Neither Nathan nor Believe the Children is right about this case. Nathan is wrong in claiming it was a false conviction; Believe the Children is wrong is claiming it was a ritual-abuse conviction. The case began in April 1989, when a four-year-old boy in Edgewood, Iowa told his parents about a man named Mike at the Sunshine Preschool and Day Care Center who made him do things he did not like and made him promise not to tell anyone. The center was an unlicensed home day-care center operated by Kim Schildmeyer, who opened the business in 1988, the same year she married Michael Schildmeyer. On the basis of the statements from the four-year-old boy, Michael Schildmeyer was arrested on April 4, 1989, on a single charge of second-degree sexual assault. He was tried and convicted by a jury in July; the primary witness was the four-year-old boy.

But the state's case also included testimony from Janet Fitzpatrick, an employee at the center who testified that on five to ten occasions she had seen him take the four-year-old into the bathroom and shut the door; sometimes when they re-emerged, she said, it appeared the boy had been crying.[233]

Schildmeyer denied the charges and testified that the boy "could have become confused over incidents in which Schildmeyer helped the victim with a zipper after he urinated."[234] In point of fact, there is no evidence that the boy would have required that kind of assistance; moreover, the boy's testimony specifically included Schildmeyer sucking his penis, which the boy called his "nubbin."[235] According to an Iowa assistant attorney general who reviewed the evidence in the case, the initial statements "were entirely unsolicited and spontaneous and remained substantially consistent through trial."[236] The Iowa Court of Appeals agreed, noting it was impressed with the boy's "consistency, recall, endurance under pressure."[237] There were no allegations of ritualistic abuse in this case.

What began as a straightforward case with one allegation, however, later "exploded from one case into many others," according to Delaware County Attorney Jim Nussle, who requested the assistance of the Iowa Division of Criminal Investigation. According to the *Des Moines Register*, children "reported drugging, animal slayings, and illicit photos" taken at the center.[238] The "explosion" apparently originated in the investigation by the Iowa Department of Human Services, which continued to investigate the case after Schildmeyer was arrested and charged in connection with the four-year-old boy. As later described by the Iowa Department of Justice:

> This investigation took the form of videotaped interviews with approximately forty-five children. Many of the children were interviewed on two or three occasions during this process, with the majority of the DHS interviews taking place during the months of May and June 1989.[239]

The videotapes were never used in any administrative and judicial proceedings, so it is not possible to assess the specific content of the children's statements or the nature of the questions. The Iowa Department of Justice, which reviewed all of this evidence and much more, concluded:

> While several of the children have reported further abusive incidents, it is difficult to determine in our opinion if these reports are the result of actual abuse or if they result from suggestions, references and questions raised with the children or in their presence during the past year and a half since the original disclosure.[240]

This aspect of the investigation demonstrated how difficult it is to interview a significant number of young children. Having conducted the kind of careful evaluation of the evidence that was lacking in the early stages of the McMartin case, the decision was made that additional charges could not be proven. The children's statements, beyond the original four-year-old, were not sufficiently credible and consistent. In other words, this case seems to demonstrate a careful and sound response to what was apparently a problematic DHS investigation. A similar approach in the McMartin case might have resulted in a conviction based on a few of the September responders and no further action.

The Schildmeyer case is complicated. It involved the original charge and an extensive investigation afterward. The original charge had no satanic or ritualistic overtones, and the evidence of guilt was strong enough that it is absurd to classify the case as a witch-hunt. The investigation that followed the charges is much more problematic and difficult to evaluate. It clearly involved fantastic statements, but these statements were not taken at face value. To the contrary, they were apparently seen as lacking in credibility, so it does not make sense to call even this part of the case a witch-hunt.

FIGURED & HILL

Location	Smithville, NC
Institution	Miss Polly's Day Care
Date	1989
Lead Def.	Patrick Figured & Sonja Hill

Patrick Figured and Sonja Hill's names are also contained in the list at the front of *Satan's Silence* of those supposedly wrongfully incarcerated for ritual abuse, but they are never mentioned in the book. There is no indication Nathan did any original reporting on this case. The case was, however, featured earlier by Jonathan Harris, webmaster of the Witch Hunt Information Center, who called the decision upholding their conviction "outrageous."

Sonja Hill's mother ran an unlicensed day care out of her rural home in Smithville, North Carolina. Patrick Figured, who was married to someone else, was intimately involved with Sonja Hill at the time. Figured and Hill were charged in connection with the sexual abuse of three children at the day care in July 1988. Figured agreed to plead guilty to three counts of first-degree sex offense (one for each child) in exchange for a life sentence and an agreement *not* to proceed against Hill. The district attorney, who was leaving office soon, broke this agreement by recharging Hill four months later. As a result, Figured was eventually allowed to withdraw his plea. He was later found guilty by jury. Hill pleaded guilty to lesser charges. One wonders why Jonathan Harris and Debbie Nathan have rallied around Figured or Hill.

The answer appears to stem from the "bizarre" aspects of this case: to wit, all three children testified that Figured abused them with a screwdriver, two of the children described abuse involving dog urine, and one child described abuse with a candle. There was also testimony about a cape and a mask, things that the child, who went into detail, clearly understood as Halloween costumes. (It is clear from his full statements that the child did *not* think Figured was the devil or part of some cult.) Seizing on a brief (and insignificant) passage about "submissive dogs" and urination, Harris dubbed *State v. Figured* the "outrageous appellate decision of the decade."[241]

Harris provided links to the defendant's brief on appeal—apparently the extent of his research into this case—but not to the court's unanimous decision upholding the conviction. He made only selective use of the court's decision, which held that there was such overwhelming evidence of Figured's guilt that any error involved in admitting some psychological testimony was immaterial to the outcome.[242] The court described the extensive evidence of *opportunity* (since Figured purported to offer alibi evidence) and reported there was corroboration of the abuse by medical evidence. Harris described the medical evidence as "no more than medical signs (anal dilation) which are found in about 1/3 of nonabused children."

But this trial took place in 1992. The doctors who examined the children were quite familiar with the McCann study, which compared the genitalia and anuses of abused and non-abused children. Although McCann's study, and others like it, caused professionals to discount the strength of certain findings, the study should not be read, as Harris and others do, to dismiss *any* evidence of anal laxity.[243] What Dr. Sherry L. St. Claire found for one of the two children she examined in this case was recorded in Duke Medical Center notes as "extremely abnormal anal exam." She testified that the boy's "soft tissue area was gone, that his blood vessels were enlarged and that his anal canal was so wide that she could see into his bowels. Dr. St. Claire testified this was one of "the most significant medical exams she has ever seen" in all her years of examining children as part of the Duke Child Protection team.[244] The other boy was seen separately by Dr. Marcia Herman-Giddens, a professor of pediatrics at Duke University. The doctor observed anal muscles that opened so wide as to reveal the anal canal. She testified to seeing "an area of healing trauma inside the anal canal" and ruled out the (slim) possibility of congenital pigmentation when she observed further healing. These injuries were consistent with the use of a screwdriver. They required, according to Dr. Herman-Giddens, "some force object from outside the body." These are not injuries commonly, or even rarely, found in non-abused children.

The defendant had more than ample opportunity to abuse these children, although Harris suggests, without specific support, that there were only "rare occasions" when Figured was in the house. In fact, Pat Figured moved to North Carolina over Memorial Day weekend in 1988. He was unemployed and needed a place to live. He "stayed at the day-care home frequently until he got a job," and thereafter several witnesses testified they saw his distinctive white Corvette there frequently "during the daytime."[245]

This case was not born of an overanxious parent, as is often claimed about day-care abuse cases. Rather, it began with persistent and unexplained symptoms that caused a mother to take her daughter to the pediatrician in July and August 1988, after her daughter complained that her "lulu" (vagina) hurt. The medical evidence was strong, and there is no good reason to think this case was an injustice.

KELLERS

Location	Austin, TX
Institution	Fran's Day Care
Date	1991
Lead Def.	Daniel & Francis Keller

The Kellers were convicted in 1992 of aggravated sexual assault of a young girl who attended their home day-care business, Fran's Day Care, in Travis County, Texas. The Kellers were not charged with fantastic or incredible crimes but were also charged with sexually abusing two boys; those charges were dismissed after the Kellers received forty-eight-year sentences in the first case. There was substantial evidence in the first case that went far beyond the girl's statement, including medical evidence of vaginal injury and a detailed adult confession by a friend of the Kellers who participated in the abuse on at least one occasion. Debbie Nathan does not provide any reason for including the Kellers in the dedication page of her book, but it is apparent that the Keller case became part of the witch-hunt narrative through a single article in *Texas Monthly* entitled "The Innocent and the Damned."[246] Although that article raises questions about claims made by some children months after the case began, it does not impugn the basic evidence on which the Kellers were convicted.

The case began on August 15, 1991, when a mother picked up her three-year-old daughter at the day care and the girl said that she did not like "Danny." Her mother inquired why and the girl reportedly said Danny "had hurt her and pulled down her panties and he poo'd and pee'd on her head."[247] Later that day, the girl cried when she urinated, screaming "it hurts, it hurts." The girl was taken to Brackenridge Hospital, where the emergency physician found medical evidence that was unusually strong for a sexual abuse case. Dr. Michael Mouw testified that he observed "a tear of the posterior fourchette" and "what appeared to be lacerations of the hymen at three and 9:00."[248]

The investigation against Daniel Keller quickly expanded to include other alleged victims and perpetrators. Three other adults were indicted for sexually abusing children at Fran's Day Care: Douglas Perry, a friend of the Kellers, and two other adults. Perry provided a written statement to investigators on July 7, 1992, describing a Friday afternoon in August 1991 when he was present at the Kellers, along with the other adults. Perry described a beer party that resulted in several adults sexually abusing a girl and a boy who were under the Kellers' care. According to Perry, "Fran had a pen and was sticking it in and out of the little girl's vagina."[249] This account was entirely consistent with the fresh injuries on the girl who was taken to the emergency room after screaming in pain when she went to the bathroom that evening. Perry identified the girl when shown a videotape.

The investigation grew to include at least forty-two children who had attended Fran's Day Care. Some number of those children eventually made claims that were bizarre, and from my perspective impossible to believe. Some number of parents came to describe the case in terms of ritual abuse. An article in the local newspaper detailed those claims after the Kellers had been convicted.[250] Five parents spoke to the newspaper; they represented a total of four children and claimed that these children had, among other things, witnessed the murder of a baby, taken airplane rides, and dug up graves. Apparently on the basis of those statements and the fact that the Kellers were convicted, the case was considered by some to be proof of satanic ritual abuse in a day-care setting.[251] But the outlandish claims were not part of the original criminal case against the Kellers, and they apparently involved only a small number of the parents and children who were interviewed in the case.

The trial highlighted some of the difficulties with child witnesses. A five-year-old girl who testified "alternately denied and admitted that anything bad happened to her." The most incriminating statement that she made "was not admissible evidence because the child whispered the statement to her sister" and the court reporter was not able to record it.[252] But there was also the testimony of the emergency room doctor and of the Kellers' friend, Perry, who had recanted his written confession by the time of trial; even Gary Cartwright, who criticized many aspects of the case, called the confession "hard to refute." Perry eventually pleaded guilty to indecency with a child by contact, and charges against the other two adults were dropped because the primary evidence against them was the recanted confession.[253] The Kellers were both convicted by jury. They appealed, raising various objections, including the use of Perry's confession. But they did "not question the sufficiency of the evidence to sustain the convictions."[254] They lost their appeal.

Given the number of adult participants described by Perry, one family later brought a civil action seeking monetary damages for their failure to report the abuse. They alleged that Francis Keller had confided in Perry's wife "with regard to Daniel Keller's abusive habits towards children."[255] There was also Perry's statement about the adults present at the beer-and-sex party that Friday afternoon in August 1991. The civil case went all the way to the Texas Supreme Court, which overruled an appellate decision that would have allowed the plaintiffs a chance to prove their case. The Texas Supreme Court agreed that the plaintiff's children "are within the class of persons whom the child abuse reporting statute was meant to protect, and they suffered the kind of injury that the Legislature intended to prevent." The court also agreed that the situation described constituted a violation of the child-abuse reporting law, but disagreed that the law created a private right of action for civil damages. "It would take a stone heart not to sympathize with the . . . family," the *Austin American-Statesmen* editorialized before concluding there were sound public policy reasons for not allowing this kind of lawsuit.[256]

It would appear that those citing the Keller case as a "wrongful conviction" have not actually read the *Texas Monthly* article. Cartwright does *not* proclaim the Kellers innocent on all counts. Rather, he argues that "parents have convinced themselves that the couple are guilty of much worse" than sexual abuse. Cartwright argues that "what started as a simple accusation—'Danny hurt me'—became an avalanche of charges that overwhelm the senses." His story is a cautionary tale about the escalation of sexual abuse charges. But it is not a wrongful conviction story. Cartwright acknowledges:

> There is certainly evidence that the [name omitted] girl was sexually abused—the medical report, Doug Perry's statement, the child's own allegations, which were unusually lurid and detailed for such a case.[257]

He cautions that "it is important when investigating allegations like those against the Kellers to distinguish between sexual abuse and the far more bizarre satanic ritual abuse."[258] The caution is appropriate for those who would list this case as proof of satanic ritual abuse in day-care centers. But it is also appropriate for those, like Nathan, who include this case on a list of false convictions. The actual conviction in this case was solid and did not involve any claims of satanic ritual abuse. The *Austin Chronicle* wrote a story about the case in March 2009, claiming it was "likely" that the Kellers were innocent. The article claimed that Dr. Mouw "wasn't sure" if he would have come to the same conclusion today as he did in 1991.[259] But his reported explanation—that he knows more now about "normal variants" in hymens than he did then—does not make sense. First, Dr. Mouw testified to more than a "laceration of the hymen at three and 9:00," which is not a "normal variant" of the hymen. Second, he also testified to a "tear of the posterior fourchette." This has nothing to do with the hymen and would still be considered an indication of abuse. The reporter states that Dr. Mouw "was contacted" for the story; there is no indication he had the medical report when responding to their questions. Since his original testimony made it clear that he "didn't have any independent recollection" of the exam and "would have to review the record," there is no reason to think a conversation about the case eighteen years after the fact should be given any weight.

HALSEY

Location	Lanesborough, MA
Institution	Lanesborough Elementary School
Date	1992
Lead Def.	Robert Halsey

Robert Halsey is also listed at the front of *Satan's Silence* as someone wrongly incarcerated, but the case was not discussed in the book or in any of Nathan's other writings. This case name also likely came directly from Jonathan Harris's Witch Hunt Information Center. But Harris cited nothing more than an innocuous article in the *Boston Globe* to support his claim that the case was a witch-hunt.[260] A careful analysis of the trial transcript indicates there was overwhelming evidence of Halsey's guilt.

Robert Halsey, sixty, was a part-time bus driver in western Massachusetts in 1990, when he was given a route that covered a remote part of Lanesboro, where he was a lifelong resident. The "bus" was actually a GM Suburban van, and the route covered the homes of a handful of kindergartners who arrived at school shortly after noon every day and left after 3:00 p.m. Sometimes, Alex and Wade Watkins, five-year-old twins, were the only passengers in Halsey's van. He drove this route for the entire 1990–91 school year, and part of the following year. In February 1992, Halsey was transferred to a different route, but the circumstances surrounding his transfer were kept quiet for almost a year.

The case began eleven months later, shortly after Alex and Wade Watkins's father handed out cigars in celebration of a new birth in their family. With cigar smoke permeating the house, the twins suddenly began talking about their former bus driver, also an avid cigar smoker; Halsey smoked cigars on the bus, and sometimes he used lit cigars to intimidate the children. The twins described various forms of physical abuse on the bus, including restraints with rope and duct tape, and abuse with a plastic baseball bat. They also described (in the words of a child) being anally raped by Halsey in a wooded area next to a desolate road he often used as a shortcut. Mr. Watkins contacted the police immediately. This all happened over a weekend, and the boys each received a simple forensic interview on Monday morning.

There were no repeat interviews, the boys disclosed significant details after the most open-ended questions, and they were interviewed almost immediately after disclosure. The session lasted forty-five minutes, during which time Alex told a detailed story of physical and sexual abuse. He described, among other things, being taken off the bus, near the pond on Nobody's Road, and sexually abused and humiliated in the woods. Interviewed separately, Wade told a similar story. He said Halsey "put his finger in my butt" many times.

The police arrested Halsey that night at his home. After waiving the right to an attorney, Halsey gave a bizarre statement filled with non sequiturs, sexual innuendo, and lies.[261] Halsey was charged with multiple counts of rape, assault, and battery. Parents soon learned that Halsey had been transferred in 1992 after a young girl's parents lodged a complaint about inappropriate "tickling." It turns out Halsey had also been removed from the approved driver list in bordering Mt. Greylock School District.

The main witnesses in the case were the twins. Alex Watkins described a varied pattern of what adults would see as humiliation, intimidation, and physical and sexual abuse. He also described being anally penetrated: "He told me that he was sticking his finger in my butt."[262] He described going to Halsey's house as well on occasion and being forced to sit in a box of smelly kitty litter while Halsey played pornographic videotapes. Wade, his brother, described, among other things, Halsey putting candy "down his pants" and masturbating in front of them on the bus. The third child to testify, Lucy Cohen, had moved to Florida with her family *before* Halsey's sudden reassignment in February 1992. Interviewed by police in Florida, where the family had not maintained contact with anyone near Pittsfield, Lucy quickly corroborated several aspects of the twins' story, including how Halsey would take children off the bus one at a time, near a pond.

The children's testimony was corroborated by physical evidence. For example, the twins described being chased by a grocery cart in the area off Nobody's Road in 1990–91. One of the two men who live on that road testified he found a cart in the same location in 1991. He also found pornography in the area, but this testimony was prohibited because the children did not mention pornography in the woods—just at his house. The twins further described an impressive constellation of items later found in Halsey's home: guns, knives, duct tape, and rope. Though those items might seem commonplace, the descriptions in some cases were quite specific. A small black pocketknife and a swordlike dagger with a hand on the handle, for example, were among the items that matched the descriptions provided by the boys. The twins also provided an accurate description of Halsey's house—a place Halsey claims they had never been to. They gave accurate descriptions of the *inside* of the house.

The medical evidence that the twins had been sexually abused was beyond dispute. A pediatric specialist testified that both boys had multiple lacerations inside the anus. In both cases, the lesions were in a pattern considered by the American Academy of Pediatrics to be "diagnostic of penetration by a foreign object into the anus." All the defense could do was suggest that the boys might have been raped by someone else—but these insinuations were not supported by actual evidence. The boys' pediatrician testified to having made additional physical findings that were "supportive," but not diagnostic, of sexual abuse. Once, their mother was so worried about both twins having an itchy and irritated anus that she discussed the matter with the pediatrician. The doctor told her it was either pinworms or sexual abuse. The mother considered the possibility of sexual abuse and eliminated it because she could not imagine it happening either at school or at home, let alone "en route." As a result, the boys took medicine for pinworms.

Halsey was convicted, sentenced to two consecutive life terms, and lost all subsequent appeals. But none of these facts have kept Halsey's name out of the witch-hunt narrative. He has been "sponsored" by the advocacy organization that embodies the narrative.[263] They have apparently relied on an account written by the same freelance writer who wrote about James Watt, without mentioning that six children in the case contracted venereal disease. Her account of Halsey's case is equally flawed, leaving out virtually all of the evidence of guilt.

SMITH & ALLEN

Location	Lorain, OH
Institution	Head Start Program
Date	1993
Lead Def.	Nancy Smith & Joseph Allen

Nancy Smith's name is also on the dedication page of Nathan and Snedeker's book, but her case is not discussed. Her codefendant, Joseph Allen, is not listed on the dedication page, but the National Center for Reason and Justice, an organization with which both Nathan and Snedeker are affiliated, has championed his case as a false conviction. Smith was a bus driver for the Head Start Program in Lorain, Ohio; the case began when a child told her parents in May 1993 that Smith had taken children to Allen's house, where they were bound, molested, and raped by the two adults. Smith and Allen were convicted by a jury, and their convictions were upheld on appeal in 1996.[264]

Smith has always maintained she did not even know Allen. This was her primary defense at trial, along with an attack on the credibility of the child witnesses. Allen's main argument on appeal was that it was unduly prejudicial to allow a witness to testify about how Allen raped her in 1985. (Allen pleaded guilty to those charges.) The case is complicated and merits more detailed attention than space allows here, but it is worth mentioning because of various strange statements made by some children. Before Allen was identified, several children described him as a "black man with spots," and others said he was a "white man painted black." These statements, which appear inconsistent and unlikely at first glance, were borne out when Allen was identified and apprehended. He is a black man with skin pigmentation problems; his face, legs, shoulders, hands, ankles, knees, buttocks, and penis all appear to be covered with white spots.

Furthermore, before Allen was apprehended, several children said he had dressed up like a woman in a pink dress and that he sometimes wore a strange mask; these are both the kind of details that Charlier and Downing labeled as "fantastic." Several children also described a "book" with pictures of a man shot in the head by a gun. During a voluntary search of Allen's house the police later found a *High Society* magazine with a picture of a man shot in the head, but they did not locate a mask or a dress. However, a second, more thorough search, executed with a search warrant, located a pink dress (size sixteen) and a mask with a snake on it.[265] One of the children was shown the mask by the police and asked if it was the one Allen had worn. The child said yes but that the eyes on top of the snake lit up and were pink. The police had removed the pink eyes, which were battery operated.

Although Smith maintains she did not even know Allen, there has been no other explanation advanced for how the children from her bus would have ended up at Allen's house. More importantly, three separate adults testified they had seen Smith and Allen together in different settings, including on the bus. The child suggestibility arguments that have dominated the witch-hunt narrative about this case cannot account for why children would be able to describe Allen's unusual physical features or the unusual items, later recovered from his house, before the police ever identified him.

Smith and Allen's convictions were set aside in an unusual proceeding in 2009 that was supposed to involve resentencing.[266] The state appealed the outcome, and their convictions were reinstated by the Court of Appeals. This outcome was upheld by the Ohio Supreme Court.[267] Smith, who had been free since the 2009 ruling, was resentenced in June 2013 in a deal that gave her credit for time served and assured she would not be sent back to prison.[268] Two months later, the Ohio Parole Board voted 9-2 against clemency in the form of a pardon.[269] Allen was resentenced to 10 to 25 years (with credit for time served) on October 1, 2013 in a deal that includes giving up any further appeals and resigtering as a sex offender for ten years after he is released from prison.[270]

Conclusion

The claims of a national witch-hunt are much stronger than the evidence that has been offered in support. There are no national data; instead, there are scores of comparisons to McMartin and various lists of people who were allegedly falsely accused or convicted. But the comparisons do not stand up to close analysis. There were clearly some poorly investigated and poorly charged cases, but fewer and far between what the witch-hunt narrative claims. There is no evidence of one hundred cases or, as some have claimed, hundreds or even thousands of such cases.

4

History Ignored

Silence, Denial, and Minimization

The witch-hunt narrative drowned out all accounts of social and legal responses to child sexual abuse in America during the McMartin era. There is no sense in the narrative that there were competing social forces concerning child sexual abuse during the period. There is no sense that, at the same time there were problematic prosecutions, real child sexual abuse was being minimized and denied. Indeed, there is little or no acknowledgment of the social forces that prevailed before child sexual abuse became "recognized" in the mid-1980s. Instead, the witch-hunt narrative is presented as if the social forces prevailing before 1984—ones that remain rather mysterious in nature—magically disappeared as soon as there was widespread publicity concerning child sexual abuse. The social forces that explain why child sexual abuse existed for so long without publicity or social recognition are never addressed, except in a condescending fashion. The idea that social forces denied the sexual abuse of children is treated pejoratively, with the word *denial* often placed in quotes, at least concerning any claim that denial still pervades our culture.[1] The idea of "sex-abuse hysteria" is presented as if child sexual abuse went from not being reported to being overreported. The witch-hunt narrative also conveys the idea that child sexual abuse went from being rarely punished to being all-too-severely punished. And it suggests that the so-called ritual day-care abuse cases began with the McMartin case. There is no recognition that there were proven cases of sexual abuse in day-care centers before the McMartin case, sometimes even including features that were later generally written off as "fantastic."

This chapter considers the extensive evidence from the McMartin era that contradicts the witch-hunt narrative. It surveys the extent to which child sexual abuse was minimized and denied during the same time period in which cases like McMartin unfolded. This chapter argues that even at the height of social concern about—and occasional overreaction to—child sexual abuse, there were also significant social pressures to minimize and deny such abuse. By this account, the contemporary history of child sexual abuse is far more complicated than the witch-hunt narrative allows. Some parents and professionals were too quick to believe the most incredible statements in some cases, but there were parents unwilling to believe solid evidence of sexual abuse in other cases. At the same time people demanded the harshest sentences in some cases, they rallied around admitted pedophiles and pleaded for leniency in other cases. And at the same time the allegations in some cases were criticized for being completely implausible, other cases were proving that factors labeled "bizarre" and "incredible" exist in reality. This is the unacknowledged history of our social and legal responses to child sexual abuse in America.

The Reality of Day Care Abuse

The witch-hunt narrative explains allegations of sexual abuse in day-care centers in the 1980s in terms of moral panic. According to this view, although social anxieties about day-care centers were building, it was not until the McMartin case that people started alleging sexual abuse at day-care centers—and they did so falsely, on the basis of unfounded fears. Under this explanation, the allegations had little or nothing to do with actual abuse. Sociology professor Mary de Young, a leading proponent of this approach, attributes day-care abuse claims to the fears created when "working parents reluctantly began transforming the almost covenantal duty of caring for their young children into businesslike contractual arrangements with day care providers."[2] Likewise, Debbie Nathan casts day-care workers as "symbols, products of a century's worth of American social and political history that has lately culminated in a new body of thought."[3] Recently, Richard Beck cast these concerns about day-care abuse as a contrivance by the political right.[4] None of these authors offers any recognition of the *actual* dangers posed by these "symbols." Labeling cases with words such as *hoax* and *witch-hunt* conveys the impression that all of these cases were entirely without factual basis. But there were real cases involving sexual abuse in day-care centers before and during the McMartin era.

Pre-McMartin

The McMartin case is often written about as if it were the first in which there were allegations of sexual abuse in a day-care center. Nathan suggests this view by labeling cases after McMartin as "junior McMartins." She also wrote an article entitled "What McMartin Started."[5] The idea that McMartin was the first such case is critical to the theory that fears about sexual abuse in day-care centers were *exclusively* a function of social anxieties and not based on any real danger. Beginning the discussion of day-care abuse with McMartin makes it much easier to discredit almost any other case that came afterward. The rhetorical device is so powerful that Charlier and Downing misstated the chronology of the cases in their series in an apparent effort to make McMartin appear to be first.[6] Recognizing various cases that arose before McMartin complicates matters significantly; it would then be necessary to acknowledge that, whatever our fears, some day-care abuse cases were based in reality. Recognizing that fact would make it difficult to write off similar claims as "fantastic" without a careful analysis of the factual basis for every claim. And it would be clear that children might be abused over a period of time yet not disclose the abuse, even in an institutional setting.

It turns out that the McMartin case was not the first in which widespread sexual or physical abuse was alleged in a day-care center. There were earlier cases with overwhelming evidence, cases that it would be nearly impossible to miss by doing even basic newspaper research. One of the most significant began just a few months before the first complaint in the McMartin case. Stephen Boatwright was arrested in Reno, Nevada, and charged with child molestation at the Papoose Palace Academy in late April 1983. Boatwright, who later pleaded guilty, lured as many as seventy children, over several years, into a basement storage area he called "the fort."[7] Beyond proving that claims of sexual abuse in day-care centers are not automatically "fantastic," this case also demonstrated that such abuse could occur without being detected quickly or easily. Boatwright fooled parents and the abuse went undetected for several years without any children disclosing it.

Other examples abound, but they tend to have been subject to only minimal local media coverage. Beryl Bishard, for example, the operator of Nanny's Day Care in Radcliff, Kentucky, was convicted of child abuse in 1981 that included tying children with medical gauze and forcing objects into their mouths.[8] David H. Perry, operator of two nursery schools in Gloucester County, New Jersey, pleaded guilty to sodomy and sexual assault of children under his care between 1979 and 1981.[9] Raymond Kuemin pleaded guilty to criminal sexual conduct against three children at the state-licensed day care run by his wife in Niles, Michigan.[10] George and Betty Warnock, who ran an unlicensed day-care center in Polk County, Iowa, were convicted in 1982 of child abuse that included the use of handcuffs and locking children in small wooden boxes.[11] Those who view day-care abuse entirely through the lens of sociological theory would later label allegations of this nature as "fantastic" and "highly improbable."

The Papoose Palace case in Nevada was not the first verified case of *sexual* abuse in a day-care center. David Perry, the operator of two nursery schools in Gloucester County, New Jersey, pleaded guilty to sexual assault charges in November 1983. Some of the thirty-six counts, which spanned more than two years, involved assaults in the basement of a church.[12] ("Activities in basement" was one of Charlier and Downing's "fantastic" elements.) Thomas Max Hetherington was charged with seventy-four counts of child molestation involving girls aged two to eleven. The abuse took place over a three-year period at his wife's day-care center in Ramona, California; Hetherington pleaded guilty in 1982.[13] A similar case in New Mexico demonstrated how poorly equipped government was to deal with allegations of sexual abuse in day-care centers in the early 1980s. In March 1982, Thomas McKeg was charged with thirty-seven counts of sexual abuse involving children ages three to five. He pleaded guilty or no contest to nine of the charges. The case attracted the attention of the New Mexico legislature and the attorney general's office because the first complaint about McKeg was made in August 1981, yet the center remained open for almost a full year, leading to numerous molestations that could have been prevented.[14] These cases not only demonstrate that children were being sexually abused in day-care centers before the McMartin case but also highlight the inadequate response that often followed disclosures of abuse.

These early cases also show the relative ease with which child abusers operated for years, even after detection. Eleanor Nathan—who was ultimately convicted of murdering an eleven-month-old boy and abusing dozens of other children in her care—operated for a surprisingly long time in California without being apprehended. Although she was under suspicion after the infant's death, it was not until three additional children ended up in the emergency room that the Department of Social Services closed her day-care operation. One of those children lost sight in an eye; another was taken to the emergency room with symptoms diagnosed as strangulation.[15] This was not Eleanor Nathan's first encounter with the law. Her day-care operation, in San Mateo, California, was investigated in the early 1970s when five separate complaints were filed in connection with a series of injuries to children in her care. An infant died in her care at that facility, but no charges were filed and the complaints were not pursued, apparently because Nathan had moved out of town. Another complaint was filed against her shortly after she opened her day-care center in Concord, California, in 1977. Apparently no action was taken on that complaint either. It was not until another child, the eleven-month-old boy, was dead and three more were injured that Eleanor Nathan was apprehended.

The pre-McMartin cases demonstrate a lot about the social and psychological forces that worked against disclosure and "recognition" of day-care abuse. They also stand as evidence against the claim that anyone charged with sexual abuse in a day-care center after the McMartin case began was probably the victim of a "junior McMartin." These varied cases illustrate that abuse in day-care centers was a proven phenomenon before McMartin began, so instead of dismissing such claims out of hand, it is necessary to judge allegations of day-care abuse with careful attention to the facts. Most important, these cases counter the claim that allegations of sexual abuse in day-care centers are, by their nature, so implausible as to be incredible.

During McMartin

Whereas the witch-hunt narrative never denies the existence of child sexual abuse in general, it never really acknowledges sexual abuse in the day-care setting. None of the major writings in the narrative contain explicit acknowledgment of *any* verified case of sexual abuse in a day-care setting during the era of McMartin. Nathan and Snedeker bury their acknowledgment of the Papoose Palace case in Nevada in a footnote that avoids identifying the case by name.[16] Debbie Nathan told an interviewer that the Bernard Baran case in 1985 was "the first daycare conviction we could find," ignoring the Papoose Palace case and others.[17] The internet-based Witch Hunt Information Center used the same label to describe the Baran case.

There was a major national study of abuse allegations in day-care centers that covered 1983–1985. The study, conducted by David Finkelhor and Linda Meyer Williams under the auspices of the Family Research Laboratory at the University of New Hampshire, focused on cases "substantiated" by state child protective service agencies.[18] The researchers, who identified 270 such cases, surveyed day-care licensing offices and child protective service offices in all fifty states, but some states did not respond and others did not have centralized data.[19] By extrapolating from the states with the most complete information, they estimated there were 500 to 550 cases in the three-year period. The study excluded small-scale operations (fewer than six children). These numbers put the Charlier and Downing series into context. Their list of thirty-six cases, analyzed in Chapter Three, involved approximately twenty-four cases in day-care settings; and Charlier and Downing covered a four-year time period, not three years as this study did. The study of 270 cases (from a likely universe of more than five hundred) demonstrates that the cases identified by Charlier and Downing were the statistical exception, not the rule. The witch-hunt narrative focuses on approximately one dozen cases from the middle to late 1980s; this national study suggests there were at least twenty times as many day-care sexual abuse cases in just three of those years. The official data the authors obtained allowed a comparison of substantiated cases versus total allegations in seven states. The substantiation rate for sexual abuse allegations in day-care centers during the time period was 21 percent. In other words, there was one substantiated case for every five reports. This finding contradicts the claim by proponents of the witch-hunt narrative that investigators are prone to "find" abuse wherever they look. These aggregate numbers demonstrate that investigators were more than willing to conclude that allegations were apparently unfounded. Of course, some of the reports that were screened out might have been factually true. It would be impossible to ascertain this without research into files that are confidential and unlikely to still exist. The point is, these data do not bear out a story of overzealous investigators who always "find" sexual abuse, whether or not it exists.

Few of the 270 substantiated cases generated headlines or resulted in any of the indicia of "moral panic" or "hysteria." Half of the substantiated day-care abuse cases in their three-year study resulted in no publicity at all, and often with just a license revocation but no criminal prosecution. These findings challenge the witch-hunt narrative, which describes the social climate exclusively as one of overreaction. The study identified thirty-two substantiated cases of day-care abuse with multiple perpetrators. Those are the kinds of cases Charlier and Downing said they were addressing in their series. But in exactly half of the cases in the national study—which were all "substantiated" by child protective services—the investigation ended without any criminal charges. Those cases also contradict the assertion that overzealous prosecutors were anxious to bring such cases regardless of the evidence. The witch-hunt narrative offers no theory to explain these contrary results, since it never predicts lack of publicity or a decision not to prosecute cases that meet the standard for substantiation.

The Finkelhor and Williams study also demonstrated that there were verified cases in which one or more of the following were involved: (1) female perpetrators, (2) abuse that went undetected over a long period of time, and (3) allegations considered "far-fetched" or implausible by proponents of the witch-hunt narrative that were proven to be true. This study has been criticized most for its conclusions about "ritual" abuse claims. What the authors actually said about the subject has been exaggerated and distorted for the apparent purpose of branding them as gullible and dismissing the entire study as worthless. It is important to remember, then, what the authors actually said immediately after observing that "some ritualistic element was noted by investigators" in thirty-six substantiated cases. They added that "what was happening in those cases is not usually very clear" and then proceeded to offer a typology of three kinds of ritualistic abuse. The first category fit the idea—held by some at the time, but clearly discredited since—that "large-scale organizations or cults" had infiltrated day-care centers. The authors did *not* endorse this idea but instead reported it as a position that "some investigators believe." The other two types of ritual abuse were markedly different: one was called pseudo-ritualistic abuse, and the other, psychopathological ritualism.[20] These two categories provide a much more realistic notion of what has been lumped together under the label of "ritual abuse." Those seeking to dismiss the report summarily ignore these distinctions and their implications.

Finkelhor and Williams's study used pseudonyms for all of the cases except McMartin and Country Walk. The study has been severely criticized for counting the McMartin case as substantiated, since the witch-hunt narrative is built on the idea that there was absolutely no evidence of abuse in the case.[21] Chapter Two demonstrates why the narrative is wrong about this. But Finkelhor and Williams can be faulted for counting the case as having more than three hundred victims. In their defense, the study was based on how cases were classified by public authorities. Nevertheless, it was well-known when the book was published in 1988 that (1) the McMartin case was hotly contested, (2) most of the original defendants had been dropped, and (3) the case was an extreme outlier in their data.

A brief survey of cases identified through press accounts and legal records during this era further demonstrates the reality of day-care abuse in the McMartin era. Here are a few examples of identified cases that are never acknowledged in the witch-hunt narrative but are useful in understanding the phenomenon.

Seering Family Day Care (Contra Costa County, California, 1984)

Flora and William Seering's day care license was revoked by the California Department of Social Services "primarily upon allegations that [William] had sexually abused a four-and-one-half-year old girl." The girl testified, and "although there were some inconsistencies in her testimony, the girl said that Bill had hurt her between her legs with a needle, had tied her up, and touched her."[22] Dr. David A. Kerns, medical director of ambulatory services at Children's Hospital in Oakland, testified to a "sharp angular defect of the hymen" that "speaks for some sort of sharp object having done it." The Seerings' objections on appeal concerned the use of closed-circuit television and the admission of expert testimony that relied on child abuse accomodation syndrome. The medical evidence was not contested and has not since been discredited. The pressing question is why there was no criminal prosecution. The answer likely speaks to the difficulties in relying on the statements of such a young child even when there is strong medical evidence.

Fairmont Baptist Church (San Diego, 1984)

Bus driver Vasco W. Walter, Jr., "confessed to substantial acts of molestation, including fondling and oral copulation" over the period June 1984 through December 1984.[23] The idea that a bus driver might commit such acts of sexual abuse is precisely the fact pattern that retired English professor Frederick Crews labeled as "far-fetched" in the *New York Review of Books,* after an essay promoting the witch-hunt narrative.[24] This case, like the Halsey case, involved not only the sex crimes but the culpability of those who supervised him. Even "after receiving numerous warning signs" regarding Walter's unfitness to supervise children, church leadership placed him in charge of religious training for children at the church.[25]

Pearl Lee Mitchell licensed day care (St. Petersburg, Florida, 1985)

The seventy-seven-year-old husband of the day-care operator was arrested for sexual abuse of girls aged two to four. Court records indicate that his wife "had caught her husband in several sex acts with young girls over the past years." Richard J. Mitchell entered pleas of no contest.[26] This is the kind of crime that might seem unbelievable both for the age of the perpetrator and the age of the victims. But there is no doubt that it occurred.

Bo Peep Day Nursery (Harford County, Maryland, 1988)

This case involved allegations of physical and sexual abuse at the Bo Peep Day Nursery. The charges originally involved four girls; they expanded to include five or six other children who attended the facility. A complaint in July 1987 resulted in a four-day hearing before the Harford County Health Office, followed by a seven-day hearing before the Department of Health and Mental Hygiene. The hearings included a considerable amount of hearsay evidence. The mother of a five-year-old girl testified her daughter said, "Mom, will you lick my butt" and something about sucking her mother's finger "until the stuff comes out."[27] The mother of another girl testified that her daughter described how an employee would pinch her "twinkie" (her term for vagina) and "put a black stick in her" during naptime.[28] This girl was seen by her pediatrician about a painful urination problem before the allegations became public. The owners of the facility objected to the use of hearsay evidence. They also presented a psychologist who considered some of the children's statements inconsistent or so implausible as to be flawed. For example, a girl who said she had been hurt in the vagina insisted that blood had come from her knee. The hearing officer discounted the psychologist's arguments because they did not take into account the developmental level of each child. The statement about blood "could quite possibly result from having blood drip on her knee"; a child this age "would quite naturally believe she was bleeding from the knee," he opined.[29] Two pediatricians were part of an interdisciplinary team that evaluated nineteen children who attended Bo Peep in the summer of 1987. One was Dr. Charles Shubin, who had examined between two thousand and three thousand children for evidence of sexual abuse. The doctors concluded that eight of the children (seven of them female) exhibited physical findings consistent with sexual abuse; this included "vaginal scars and tears and anal gaping and scarring."[30]

The hearing officer concluded that several children with no other connection to each other gave "remarkably consistent" stories, and that a preponderance of the evidence supported the revocation of the license. Defense lawyers called it a "witch hunt."[31] The administrative licensing decision was overturned in Circuit Court on issues having to do with the use of hearsay evidence; that decision was overturned by the Maryland Court of Appeals.[32] There was a criminal investigation, but no charges were filed. It is not clear whether this is because parents were unwilling to allow their children to testify, or the children were not considered likely to be considered competent. There were civil suits settled out of court. The case is notable for the care taken by the hearing officer to consider the developmental stages of the children and not to simply judge their testimony as if it had been provided by an adult. The case also highlights the significance of hearsay evidence in child sexual abuse cases. Several of the children made explicit statements that would cause any parent deep concern. Although the rights of defendants might well keep those statements out of criminal court, their potential relevance seems clear in this case.

Bethel Baptist Church (Fruitport, Michigan, 1989)

Two juveniles were accused of molesting approximately fifty young children in the church nursery center between 1985 and 1988. This is precisely the kind of abuse the witch-hunt narrative would claim is unlikely to have occurred over such a long period of time without someone detecting it or disclosing it. But that is what happened. The case is verified through the confession of the perpetrators. One of them revealed details during court-ordered therapy at a residential treatment facility; the other later pleaded guilty to criminal charges.[33]

These examples contradict the witch-hunt narrative in various ways. They are most important for illustrating the difficulties in detecting and prosecuting this kind of abuse—even in the years when the witch-hunt narrative claimed sex-abuse hysteria was sweeping the country.

The Reality of "Fantastic" Elements

Writers who promote the witch-hunt narrative often employ the word *fantastic* to describe various allegations. Charlier and Downing's series is best remembered by the "fantastic elements" they utilized to link cases across the country. Nathan and others also use the device of describing cases as "ritual abuse" and then dismissing them on the grounds that there is no evidence such cases occur. But those arguments have been used to dismiss cases with features that *have* been proven to be true.

"Fantastic" Elements in Real Cases

Skepticism about widespread claims of satanic and ritual abuse became the dominant position in the 1990s—and for good reason. The idea that a network of organized pedophiles infiltrated day-care centers in the 1980s deserves to be dismissed. As Kenneth Lanning wrote in the FBI's *Investigator's Guide to Allegations of "Ritual" Child Abuse*, "some professionals, in their zeal to make American society more aware of [the sexual victimization of children], tend to exaggerate the problem."[34] Lanning concluded, after years of reports of widespread satanic ritual abuse, that no evidence "of a well-organized satanic cult" had been found in any of the cases. This report was followed two years later by a study funded by the National Center on Child Abuse and Neglect (NCCAN). Described in the press as "the first empirical study of [the] actual prevalence" of ritual abuse, its findings were hailed as evidence that "organized satanic cults don't exist."[35]

But these two reports were careful to distinguish between conspiratorial claims involving *networks* of perpetrators that had infiltrated day-care centers and claims of individual cases involving satanic or ritualistic *elements*. The NCCAN study made it clear that it found "convincing evidence of lone perpetrators or couples who say they are involved with Satan or use the claim to intimidate victims."[36] The primary author of the report described an intergenerational ritualistic case, including black robes and candles, with medical evidence of chlamydia, a sexually transmitted disease, in five children's throats.[37] So, too, an investigation in Utah uncovered a case in which three adult women recalled satanic sexual abuse as children involving "robed ceremonies, alters, [sic] candles, animal sacrifices and extreme physical and sexual abuse."[38] The attorney general's office interviewed the suspects and reported that "both the mother and father admitted to serious sexual and physical crimes against the children and named several other individuals who were involved."[39] The statute of limitations prevented prosecution. Those cases did not involve "organized cults" but nevertheless stand for the proposition that children *have been* sexually abused in ritualistic or satanic ways, and therefore claims involving such elements should not automatically be written off as "fantastic" and unrelated to reality.

The FBI *Investigator's Guide* distinguishes between claims that were physically impossible or had never been proven (e.g., cannibalism and the sacrificing of babies) and the ritualistic claims that were "possible and probable" or corroborated (i.e., child pornography, cases involving victim threats and manipulation).[40] This guide also contains an entire section on "Alternative Explanations," which explores six reasons for a child possibly claiming something fantastic or ritualistic that is not literally true. What is most important about the analysis has been lost entirely in the witch-hunt narrative: some explanations are consistent with the child having been sexually abused, and others are not. The explanation it described as "most controversial and least popular" is one that suggests there was no abuse: "overzealous intervenors" who misinterpreted, embellished, or otherwise subtly affected the child's statements. Other explanations, however, such as "normal childhood fears," suggest there *was* actual abuse; children "might describe their victimization in terms of evil that they understand." So even though this guide has become best known for its official skepticism of claims of ritual abuse, it actually recognized many activities described as ritual abuse *and* it cautions that there might be plausible explanations for children making such statements in other cases with sexual abuse. There has been research since publication of the guide bearing out the reality of sexual abuse in cases where children make "fantastic" statements.

Those distinctions have been ignored in the witch-hunt narrative. A. S. Ross, who wrote the first investigative journalistic piece challenging the existence of ritual abuse cases,[41] wrote eight years later in *Redbook* that investigators had "not found any physical evidence to support the existence of such cults or their practices." Writing in the online magazine *Salon*, David Futrelle summarized the NCCAN report in 1997 as having "examined over 12,000 accusations of ritual abuse, finding no physical evidence to back up any" of the claims. In fact, the executive summary of the NCCAN report that he purports to summarize contradicts this extreme claim. More stridently, Howard Fishman argued that all claims of satanic ritual abuse are "a delusion suffered and/or fostered by rabid, drooling fanatics."[42] But there are actually two kinds of fanatics in this debate: the ones who still cling to allegations of cult conspiracies and the sacrificing of babies, and those who deny all claims of ritualistic sexual abuse.

Many of the elements Charlier and Downing called fantastic have been proven to exist in actual cases.[43] To listen to the most virulent of the denials, however, one would think that no adult has ever committed a sex crime with some of the more extreme items on their list, such as devil worship. But there are many proven cases in the public record. For example, Bradley James Key and Michael Paul Dillard were convicted of child endangerment for satanic rituals that injured three young adolescent boys in Pike County, Ohio. The rituals involved candles, incantation, pentagram drawings, and bloodletting. One boy "had hot candle wax dripped in the shape of a cross on his chest, back and genitals."[44] The unacknowledged history of child sexual abuse also includes cultlike cases with multiple perpetrators. In November 1991, a terrified twelve-year-old girl fled to a women's shelter in Johnstown, Pennsylvania, to escape a group of adults she was convinced had supernatural powers. She told stories of being subjected by her "parents and neighbors to ritualistic torture that included bloodletting with a sword, hot needles under their fingernails, sodomy." It is precisely the kind of case that would-be skeptics deny. But the evidence proved to be overwhelming. Rickie Jay Gaddis had physically and sexually abused seven children for at least eighteen months. He used "ceremonial swords" to draw blood to pour on the grave of a daughter killed in a fire three years earlier. A boy had been tattooed in one of these "ceremonies," and the children had been sodomized. The police found everything the girl described, including the swords.

According to Detective Richard Rok, "the thing that still bothers me the most about all of this is that so many people knew about this, yet did nothing."[45] The county child protective service agency had a file on Gaddis "for years" but had taken no action even though a school nurse reported suspicions about the family almost three years earlier. Several of the defendants pleaded guilty. Gaddis was found guilty of more than 150 counts of "horrific sexual, physical, and emotional abuse" ranging from terrorist threats to rape, incest, and involuntary deviant sexual intercourse. Later upholding these convictions, Judge Tamilia noted that one "victim's testimony was corroborated by the testimony of three eyewitnesses."[46] The court rejected the claim that evidence of "terroristic threats" and "instilling fear and menace on the victims" was unfairly prejudicial. To the contrary, the court found it was directly relevant to the charges.

Another case like this emerged in Florida. Eddie Lee Sexton, Sr., also ran his family like a cult, subjecting them to the kinds of rituals that Nathan and others claim is only imaginary. But the horrors were real, including a nine-month-old child who was murdered and buried on Sexton's command at a Florida campground, where the family was fleeing from child-abuse charges in Ohio. Skipper Lee's body was found where Sexton's daughters said it had been buried. The senior Sexton, who told his children he was the devil, inflicted horrendous tortures on his family, including sexual abuse. Two adult sons testified about rituals in which they drank deer's blood and joined hands around a dead cat.[47]

Similarly, a "ritual abuse" case with satanic elements was verified in San Diego, where two defendants were charged in 1986 with threatening and sexually abusing seven boys and girls (ages eleven to fourteen) who lived in the same apartment complex. Robert Wilkins was convicted by a jury of multiple counts of "forcible oral copulation" and "committing a lewd and lascivious act with a child under fourteen by force or duress" and sentenced to forty-six years. His conviction was upheld on appeal.[48] Lori Bartz was charged with the same offenses plus false imprisonment and assault with a deadly weapon. As reported in the *San Diego Union-Tribune*, Bartz "used satanic rituals to frighten and intimidate some of the victims into performing sex acts."[49] She pleaded guilty to nine charges in exchange for the dropping of sixty-two charges and the state's agreement not to seek a sentence longer than fifty years. After being sentenced to forty-eight years, she appealed on the grounds that the sentence was cruel and unusual given her "lack of intelligence and emotional immaturity." The appellate court found although she "'almost' believe[ed] true the fantasy world she created," her sentence was appropriate because the victims were particularly vulnerable, she took advantage of a position of trust, and she engaged in a pattern of violent conduct that indicates a serious danger to society.[50]

In Northern California, there was the case of Daryl Ball, Jr., and Charlotte Mae Thrailkill, with multiple child victims (ages five to eight) and allegations of threats and other kinds of abuse labeled as "ritualistic." The prosecution described those elements and cited the Finkelhor study specifically to explain that "these cases are distinguished from the incest model by the extreme terror shown by the victims."[51] The factual allegations are precisely the kind that Nathan disavows, having criticized Finkelhor for "believing" (as she put it) that ritual abuse cases actually exist. This case was classified as ritual abuse primarily because the children were threatened, with several testifying they were tied with rope. The preliminary hearing, which lasted throughout August 1987, was the longest preliminary hearing in Sonoma County history. Some of the children broke down and were removed from the case[52]; medical evidence was presented that corroborated the abuse.[53] Both defendants later pleaded guilty to "forcible lewd and lascivious conduct" involving five children.[54] In 1998, Thrailkill became the first woman in California to be declared a sexually violent predator after she decided not to contest the state's petition. She asked to be sent to a state hospital.[55]

There are even verified cases of sexual abuse in the context of organized cult activities.[56] The existence of these cases does not prove anything about *other* cases, of course, but it does demonstrate that such things are possible. Since cases with similar allegations have been uniformly dismissed as fantastic, the existence of proven cases demonstrates that automatic rejection on such grounds is inappropriate. In sum, there is extremism on both sides of the ritual abuse controversy. On the side that included the organization Believe the Children, seemingly anything a child said, no matter how implausible, was taken at face value. Prosecutor Kathleen Morris suspected, at least for a time, that there was baby killing in Jordan, Minnesota, without any reports of missing babies or evidence of their death. On the other hand, the witch-hunt narrative has adopted the position that children's statements involving ritualistic elements that have been proven in real cases are nevertheless so "bizarre" as to discredit the child automatically.

The Child Pornography "Myth"

There has also been minimization and denial of child pornography as an element in child sexual abuse cases. Charlier and Downing, for example, lump allegations of child pornography with the most bizarre and far-fetched claims. Philip Jenkins and others have made similar arguments, relying on the dubious work of Lawrence Stanley, who coined the phrase "child pornography myth" in an article in *Playboy* magazine.[57] The proof that Stanley offered for this "myth" is the same handful of day-care cases that have been widely distorted in the witch-hunt narrative: McMartin, Jordan (not actually a day-care case), Amirault, Edenton, and Country Walk. In all of these cases, there were statements by some children about having been photographed in the nude—but no photographs were ever recovered. As a result, the witch-hunt narrative argues that such charges, at least in connection with day-care or other multiple victim cases, are without any foundation in fact. Debbie Nathan asserts that "there has not been a single case" in which allegations of child pornography were "physically substantiated."[58]

But these arguments overlook a host of cases with precisely the kind of evidence Nathan and Mark Pendergrast deny. Charles Bishop, one of the Kern County defendants, was convicted largely on the basis of the pornographic pictures he took of his victims.[59] Grant Self, whose name appears on the dedication page of Nathan's book, had two prior convictions that included similar photographic evidence.[60] A connection between child pornography and day-care abuse was also established before the McMartin case began through a confirmed case at Isabel's Day Care, not far from Manhattan Beach, California. The case began when a three-year-old girl told her mother in 1981 that "James [the owner of her day-care center] took pictures of my butt today." When the police executed a search warrant, they found thousands of sexually explicit photos and slides of past and present students. Edwin James Meacham, a biochemist with a doctorate from the University of Southern California, did not disavow the pictures; instead, he claimed he was "doing research." Many of the pictures were taken in the bathroom of the day-care center. (Remember that Charlier and Downing included "activities in bathroom" *and* "nude photography" as incredible or fantastic elements of ritual abuse cases.) Meacham was convicted of child pornography in May 1982, and his conviction was upheld in 1984 in an opinion that is readily available through standard legal research.[61] This was not the only case in which there were proven allegations of child pornography in a day-care context. In January 1984, still a month before the McMartin case hit the news, Robert McCormick, a forty-three-year-old teacher at the ABC Scholar Day Care Center, pleaded guilty to "sexually abusing and/or taking the nude photographs" of preschoolers in Prince George's County, Virginia.[62]

Another relevant case consistently overlooked by those purveying the "child pornography myth" involved the Rainbow Day Care Center in Fort Lauderdale, Florida. John W. "Jack" Shaver, owner of the center, was arrested in 1990 after he retrieved pictures of naked children from a photo lab. When police searched his home, they found thousands of pictures and negatives of naked children, along with pornographic magazines depicting children engaging in sexual acts; twenty parents picked out their children in Shaver's enormous collection of nude photos.[63] Shaver's case demonstrates how such predators are able to elude punishment, even when their behavior raised suspicions and resulted in multiple allegations over the years. Shaver escaped no fewer than *four* times in the years before he was apprehended at the Rainbow Day Care Center. Before moving to Florida, he lived in Hawaii, where he volunteered at a day-care center in 1979. He was asked to leave that position because the director was "uncomfortable" with how he handled the children. He then opened the Kailua Beach Preschool.

In 1983, he lost his license for that facility after Honolulu police received complaints that Shaver was "washing off [young girls] by rubbing, tickling and running his hands up [their genitalia]." (Again, the "activity" was in the bathroom—something Charlier and Downing would label "fantastic.") Shaver pleaded guilty to a misdemeanor and paid a $200 fine.

Two years later he bought a day-care center near Fort Lauderdale. The criminal background check revealed nothing because he had never been convicted of a felony. In 1986 and 1987, during the height of the "panic" about day-care sexual abuse, two unrelated parents complained to child protective services that Shaver had touched their children inappropriately. Neither case went forward, though, because the agency concluded the evidence was insufficient. When Shaver was finally apprehended in 1990, his defense attorney argued, audaciously, that Shaver was the victim of a "panic."[64] This argument rings hollow in light of his previous history; but it also defies reality given the outcome of his case. A circuit judge dropped twenty-eight of the twenty-nine charges of possessing child pornography pursuant to a state appellate court decision that defendants can be charged with only one count of child pornography no matter how many photographs they possess. (Shaver had more than two thousand pictures in his possession.) At the same time Southern Florida was supposedly in the grips of "hysteria" over child sexual abuse, Jack Shaver received *probation* in exchange for his guilty plea.[65]

A similar case in Massachusetts bears out the connection between day-care abuse and child pornography—and the difficulty in getting people to take it seriously. Robert Shell of Arlington, Massachusetts, was investigated by the Department of Social Services in 1988 for allegedly abusing his own children. The case was not considered strong enough to prosecute, but it was sufficient for DSS to issue a cease-and-desist order when Shell began operating a family day-care center in Arlington. DSS employees warned parents who were entrusting their children to Shell that he posed a serious danger; some parents did not want to hear the warnings. The director of family day-care licensing reported that, despite the "hysteria" supposedly infecting Massachusetts at the time, "we were told by at least one parent that she could do whatever she wanted to do with her kids and that she didn't believe it."[66] Shell, who worked as a custodian at several day-care centers, was arrested in 1990 after an investigation into a series of larcenies at day-care centers in Lexington and Burlington. The police seized photos of naked children between the ages of nine months and three-and-a-half years in the act of being sexually abused. Shell met several of the victims through his work at various day-care centers. He pleaded guilty to thirty-five charges, including indecent assault of two girls under the age of *four*.[67]

The prevalence of child pornography in Southern California at the time of McMartin is illustrated by the fact on the same day the defendants were being arraigned in the McMartin case, there was also a probation violation hearing in Los Angeles County Superior Court for Allan Licht, who had been prosecuted for child pornography in 1981 after authorities seized forty thousand pictures of boys engaging in sexual contact "with men and one another." Licht's probation violation hearing involved charges that he developed photographs of a similar nature for a Vancouver travel agent.[68] Catherine Stubblefield Wilson was also prominent in Southern California at this time. The mother of five, who prosecutors claimed made $500,000 per year by supplying child pornography across the country, had a customer list of thirty thousand people. Wilson distributed films with titles such as "Little But Lewd" and "Kinder Orgy." (A jury deadlocked eleven to one for conviction after the first trial. Prosecutors moved ahead with a retrial, and Wilson ended up pleading guilty to a single count of child pornography.)

One might wonder, in light of these cases, how Lawrence Stanley supported his oft-cited claim of a "child pornography myth." The answer is partly that Stanley was describing how effective law enforcement officials had been in driving "commercially produced magazines such as Lollitots, Baby Love and Nudist Moppets" out of the market. What replaced that market, Carol McGraw documented in the *Los Angeles Times* in 1985, was "a thriving cottage industry that creates its own pornography and distributes it through an informal but extensive underground."[69] This is what Stanley minimizes. A close reading of his "award-winning" article in *Playboy* reveals that Stanley's own estimates contradict the idea of a child pornography "myth."[70] After debunking some overstated claims about the size of the child pornography business, Stanley allowed that "a small, essentially insignificant group by some estimates as few as 5,000 people" are involved in child pornography. Stanley does not explain why thousands of child pornographers constitute an "insignificant" number, but his statement nevertheless provides a basis for concluding that thousands of children *are* victimized in the production of child pornography. It turns out Stanley's interest in child pornography was neither academic nor detached; it was economic and personal. Stanley is a self-proclaimed "girl-lover," who produced a variety of magazines with pedophile themes, sold pictures of young girls at nudist camps, and produced a newsletter called *Uncommon Desires*—"the voice of a politically-conscious girl-love underground."[71] Stanley does not consider child pornography to be a social harm in the first place. It is no wonder he minimizes the size of the industry. What is surprising is how many others have relied on him as some kind of expert.

This discussion of ritual elements and child pornography is probably the section of this book that is most likely to be misrepresented by proponents of the witch-hunt narrative. The narrative uses a kind of guilt-by-association to discredit cases (and people) by associating them with credulous acceptance of all sorts of "ritual abuse."[72] So I will close this section by reemphasizing that this is *not* an endorsement of any theories about networks of organized groups that infiltrated day-care centers. Rather, it is a plea for those who want to engage this issue with an open mind to pay attention to the FBI report that is misrepresented almost as often as it is cited. Elements that have been labeled as ritualistic *have* occurred in documented cases, and accordingly, children who make statements about such elements should not be dismissed out of hand.

What Hysteria?

The witch-hunt narrative says in no uncertain terms that hysteria about child sexual abuse swept the country in the 1980s. It was supposedly strong enough to create allegations of sexual abuse out of nothing; Professor Stephen Ceci uses the phrase "air of accusation."[73] There are two serious flaws with this claim. First, there is almost no evidence to support it, in exact times and places when this phenomenon was supposedly at work. Second, this account of the 1980s does not recognize the forces of secrecy, silence, and disbelief that produced an air of denial around child sexual abuse during the same era. The reality is that serious sexual abuse allegations were often ignored, sometimes for years, at the time this hysteria was allegedly occurring. The hysteria claim also overlooks the difficulties in prosecuting cases and the remarkably lenient sentences that were commonplace for those convicted of sexually assaulting children.

Places Allegedly in the Grip of Hysteria

Even in specific communities where "sex abuse hysteria" was supposedly the worst, there is little evidence to support the witch-hunt narrative. The unacknowledged history of the communities in which the most infamous cases occurred actually contradicts the narrative. What happened in the McMartin case spread to only a handful of other preschools in Southern California, and it caused significantly less damage than is often claimed. Beyond McMartin, there is no evidence that the Kelly Michaels case caused any kind of outbreak of false accusations in New Jersey. To the contrary, there is a powerful story that disproves the hysteria hypothesis. Similarly, events in Dade County (Florida) and Boston during the middle to late 1980s provide considerable evidence that contradicts the witch-hunt narrative.

Southern California at the Time of McMartin

The McMartin case is the premier example of social hysteria over child sexual abuse. Many accounts claim that "hysteria broke out" when the Manhattan

Beach Police sent the letter of September 8, 1983. But, as demonstrated in Chapter Two, the letter resulted in less than is ever recognized. The preschool remained open throughout the fall, it was many weeks before there was a meeting among parents, and the story did not reach the newspapers or television until five months later.

There *was*, however, a kind of social contagion in the McMartin case once it was the subject of intense media coverage, resulting in some nearby preschools being implicated as well. At the height of the belief that there was a broader conspiracy afoot—something many people, including investigators, believed in 1984 and 1985—several other day-care centers were named in connection with the McMartin case. Prosecutors claimed at one point that children had been "swapped" between the McMartin Preschool and the Manhattan Ranch Preschool.[74] A few other schools were named at various points by parents connected to the McMartin case. But this was nothing like the claims that quickly became part of the witch-hunt narrative. Richard Wexler asserted that the McMartin investigation "spread to sixty-four other daycare centers; seven of them closed."[75] In point of fact, the investigation spread to *seven* other South Bay schools, and three of those preschools never reopened. There is no evidence of the case spreading beyond that.

Seven South Bay preschools are often lumped together in stories about this era, but what happened at the preschools varied significantly, reflecting a complex social reality that is not captured in the witch-hunt narrative. The first case to arise elsewhere in the South Bay began with a mother's call on March 28, 1984, to the Lomita Sheriff's Station to report suspected sexual abuse at the Peninsula Montessori School No. 2 in Rolling Hills. The timing of the call alone, coming at the peak of the most intensive and pro-prosecution coverage of the McMartin case, raises obvious concerns about the possibility that it was caused by overreaction. But what this mother reported would likely lead any good parent to be concerned. She observed her four-year-old daughter "lying on top of her brother and simulating sexual intercourse" and then "kissing her younger brother's penis saying 'Let's make love.'" Her daughter had been attending the preschool since September 1983; her three-year-old son had started attending in December. This behavior is far beyond the bounds of what is recognized as normal sex play in young children. Claudia Krikorian, the owner of the school, did not cooperate with the investigation at first. There was an administrative finding that she impinged on the investigation in two ways: (1) the suspect was tipped off about the investigation, making the subsequent search essentially futile; and (2) she did not supply authorities with a complete list of students attending the school.[76] (Krikorian was never charged with any crimes.)

The primary children in the case were interviewed in a matter of days, not months. The case did not expand beyond the students in the 1983–84 class. The interviewing was done by two seasoned deputy sheriffs, women with a combined twelve years' experience and more than one thousand child abuse investigations. They interviewed nine children, six of whom were medically examined by Dr. Carol Berkowitz at Harbor-UCLA Hospital. The suspect, a teacher's aide who was immediately fired, had started working at the school in September 1983.

The first child was interviewed by Los Angeles County Deputy Sheriff Susan McGirt two days after the initial report. This child identified the teacher's aide as the person who taught her the behavior that startled her mother.[77] McGirt attempted to interview the second child, but the boy was completely nonverbal. His mother reported he said that the same teacher's aide had shown him pictures of people in the nude.[78] The mother of another child reported that her son, who attended the school from September 1983 through February 1984, came home from the school [one day in January] and told her he had seen a 'naughty' or 'dirty' picture at school. At the time the mother assumed that "a teenager passing by the school had shown him the picture."[79] McGirt reported that this child stated the same teacher's aide "showed him and another child a picture of a 'naked lady'." McGirt also "received information concerning other children" from psychologist Dr. Helena Barry. It included statements by one child about being taken to a house with two swimming pools, where a "black man with a mean face and long hair" was present.[80] Some aspects of the child's testimony strained credulity on their face. Nevertheless, there was medical evidence in the case. Six children were examined for indications of sexual abuse by Dr. Carol Berkowitz and nurse Mary Logan at Harbor-UCLA Hospital. Those medical examinations concluded that four of the children examined had been sexually abused. The findings on one child were described as "severe," labeled as "supportive of chronic sexual misuse including sodomy."[81] There were "no hymenal remnants visible" on this child, a finding that would still be considered significant today.

After considering all of the evidence, an administrative law judge found that the first child "was molested by [the teacher's aide] on the campus of the R.H. School." The judge found that four other children had been sexually abused, although "it was not established that these children were molested by [the teacher's aide]."[82] These conclusions seemed carefully tailored to the quality of the evidence, and of course they were under a standard of proof for a civil action, not the much higher "beyond a reasonable doubt" standard for criminal court. The charges did not spread to other teachers, and the nature of allegations that were accepted was not fantastic or incredible in any way.

The parents of several children brought a civil lawsuit against Krikorian and the school. Krikorian countersued. The teacher's aide refused to answer any questions, citing his constitutional right against self-incrimination. (He was later deported.) After taking depositions from two of the children, the insurance company settled the case for $1 million, over Krikorian's objections.[83] The superior court eventually decided Krikorian could get her license back. She expressed concern that her name would be forever linked to sexual abuse, even though there was never any evidence she was aware of abuse. Indeed, her position was that no abuse ever occurred. Nevertheless, it may well be that the failure of justice in this case was in the decision not to prosecute the aide.

The second case related to McMartin involved Michael Ruby and the Manhattan Ranch Preschool. Again, charges focused on a single teacher. This suspect was ultimately charged and tried; the eleven-week jury trial ended in a hung jury. The district attorney decided not to retry the case and then dropped all charges. Deputy District Attorney Lisa Hart said the decision not to retry was not a matter of "pulling out" but rather was out of "consideration for the children."[84] It is impossible to evaluate the merits of the case without gaining access to the daily trial transcripts, which were sealed by Judge Bob T. Hight. It should be noted, however, that Manhattan Ranch Preschool did not close permanently—it was sold and remained open during the investigation and subsequent trial—and the charges against Ruby did not spread.

The third case with links to McMartin involved the St. Cross Church in Hermosa Beach. The day-care center at the church was first implicated in April 1985 by one of the children in the McMartin preliminary hearing. There is no question that claims made about the church in the McMartin case were beyond far-fetched. One child in the preliminary hearing in the McMartin case testified about witnessing satanic rituals at the church including black robes and drinking blood.[85] Nevertheless, there are significant omissions in the witch-hunt account. First, it should be noted that the St. Cross day-care center was not closed by the state. (The following year, it was closed voluntarily by the board of directors.) Second, Faye Fiore reported in the *Daily Breeze* that two men confessed to sexual abuse occurring at St. Cross Church in the 1980s but their statements were beyond the six-year statute of limitations in effect at the time of the acts.[86] Apparently, the hysteria that is claimed to have gripped the area during this time did not prevent those confessed incidents from happening. As nobody was ever charged and the center was not closed by the state, this case does not provide much support for the witch-hunt narrative.

The fourth case with links to McMartin was a twenty-two-pupil preschool in Manhattan Beach called Learning Game. According to newspaper reports, three of five children who made statements relating to abuse of some sort also indicated something about the McMartin Preschool as well. A memo by the Los Angeles County Sheriff's Task Force in December 1985 stated that two preschools were being investigated beyond McMartin and Manhattan Ranch: "One, the Learning Game Preschool, is clearly linked to McMartin. The other, Children's Path Preschool, is not." The Learning Game was closed in December

1984, and it never reopened. No charges were brought against anyone. On the basis of available information, this seems to be strong evidence of overreaction to the McMartin case; the school was closed owing to uncorroborated claims that were never proven.

The fifth preschool mentioned in connection with McMartin—Children's Path, also in Manhattan Beach—was closed for two weeks and then reopened as Creative Kids. There was no hysteria; the sentiment of the parents was all in favor of reopening. Even if the initial revocation was without substantial basis—and there is nothing in available records to support the claim that there was sexual abuse at this preschool—the disruption was minimal, and no one was charged, let alone prosecuted.

The sixth preschool, Children's Path in Hermosa Beach, provides support for the witch-hunt narrative. It was closed temporarily and was going to reopen, having changed one or more staff members. A small group of parents discouraged the owners from reopening, however, through outrageous forms of protest such as "wanted" posters depicting teachers from the preschool. Such actions demonstrate the fever of emotions that ran through the immediate community. However, news reports indicate there was medical evidence of abuse.[87] It does not appear that the state overreacted, but the case is complicated and there is almost no available original documentation to help verify published reports.

The seventh preschool case in the South Bay linked to McMartin provides the strongest evidence in favor of the witch-hunt narrative. It involved Peninsula Montessori School No. 1 in Torrance. The school was also owned and operated by Claudia Krikorian, owner of the Peninsula Montessori School No. 2 in Rolling Hills, where allegations of sexual abuse had been made against a teacher's aide months earlier. A review of the charges involving the Torrance school bears out the claim that the state officials were being overzealous and unreasonable. Krikorian was written up for missing floor tiles in a classroom, for a cement stairway with a crack, and for a toilet bowl that smelled of urine. But the primary charge in overall significance was that an employee of the school had sexually molested four students. No charges were ever brought against him, and Krikorian appealed the temporary order of suspension to an administrative law judge. There was an eleven-day hearing in October 1985. Two months later, the judge upheld the license revocation in a fourteen-page decision that contains no discussion of the factual basis for the sexual abuse claims, even though they were the focus of almost the entire evidentiary hearing. Instead, Judge Richard Lopez simply stated, "it was established by direct evidence" that each child had been sexually abused.[88] Krikorian appealed the decision to superior court, where, eighteen months later, Judge H. Walter Croskey overturned the ruling. His eighteen-page decision said "each of the four girls who testified presented serious credibility problems," and he provided relevant details about each girl's testimony. "The concerns that all serious persons involved in this field have toward possible manipulation of child witnesses," he reasoned, "would be aroused by the facts in this case." The judge concluded that the children's testimony was "totally unconvincing."[89] Although it would require a complete examination of the transcripts of the October 1985 hearing to evaluate this decision independently, the opinion is persuasive and provides enough details to conclude that Montessori No. 1 was the worst local case to occur in the wake of McMartin. Although no criminal charges were brought, a man's reputation was damaged and Claudia Krikorian had to spend a significant amount of money to defend her business.

This was the last of the preschool cases directly linked to McMartin. Indeed, Bob Williams, who wrote a series of articles critical of the McMartin case for the *Los Angeles Times*, reported that "by the end of 1985, the tide of allegations began to recede."[90] The "cloud seems to have lifted," he later quoted a Torrance preschool operator as saying.[91] Real damage was done in the case of several preschools, but the nature and extent of the damage has been exaggerated in the witch-hunt narrative. The reach of the social hysteria beyond the McMartin case was significant, but also highly localized and included at least two cases in which there was credible evidence of abuse.

Criminal charges were brought in three other cases in Southern California that had been mentioned along with the McMartin case in various news stories. There was no claim that the McMartin case was literally related to these cases, but since they were mentioned together in media stories these are cases most likely to exhibit the kind of hysteria attributed to the McMartin case. Henry Lawson was charged with child molestation at the Little Angels Preschool in Lynwood, some fifteen miles from Manhattan Beach. Campbell Greenup was charged with molesting girls, aged five to seven, at his Greenup School in Northridge; and four adults were arrested in Pico Rivera on the basis of some fantastic claims, including satanic ritual abuse, made by neighborhood children. Lawson eventually pleaded guilty after a judge ruled that his confession to police would be admissible. Greenup, who claimed he was the victim of a "political witch-hunt," was convicted by jury of molesting six girls four to eleven years old.[92] Charges against the adults in Pico Rivera were quickly dropped, and they were eventually awarded $9.9 million in damages. Their case is mentioned frequently in the witch-hunt narrative; it is case number six in Charlier and Downing's series. The other two cases are never mentioned.

Beyond the most localized effects, which have themselves been exaggerated, there is no evidence of a wave of unjustified arrests or convictions for child sexual abuse in Southern California at the time of McMartin. To the contrary, the claim that the McMartin case had a major impact across California, or even across Southern California, is not borne out by data from the California

Department of Social Services (DSS). There were 220 complaints statewide in 1985 and 240 in 1986. There were in that period thirty-eight thousand licensed day-care facilities in California.

New Jersey at the Time of Kelly Michaels

The local response to the Kelly Michaels case (the subject of Chapter Five) was much less intense than the local response to the McMartin case; it did not spread to *any* nearby day-care centers. No cases have been held up as examples of day-care centers wrongfully closed or wrongfully accused in the wake of the Kelly Michaels case. Nevertheless, Dorothy Rabinowitz described the "social climate" at the time of the Michaels case as "more virulent than the Asian flu."[93] She did not offer any evidence from New Jersey at the time of the Michaels case to support this claim. The Charlier and Downing list of thirty-six contained two New Jersey cases: one was Michaels, and the other, which preceded the Michaels case, involved a camp counselor. There was no connection between the two cases, however, other than the fact that Ralph Underwager—a controversial psychologist who became a prominent defense expert through the Jordan, Minnesota, cases—testified for the defense in both of them. There is simply no evidence in New Jersey of what Rabinowitz called a "national pathology" at the time of the Michaels case.[94] No similar allegations emerged from any of the thousands of day-care centers covered by the same large media markets that include Maplewood, New Jersey. No explanations have been offered as to why this alleged "social contagion" never expanded beyond this single facility.

In fact, through a coincidence of names, there was something akin to a natural experiment to test the claim that there was a "climate of hysteria" in New Jersey at the time of the Kelly Michaels case. It stems from the coincidental fact that there was a Wee Care Child Care Center in Clifton, New Jersey—less than fifteen miles from the Wee Care Day Nursery where Kelly Michaels worked in Maplewood. (There was also a Wee Care Nursery School in nearby South Orange, run by the same organization that ran the Wee Care in Maplewood.) The fascinating but unnoticed "natural experiment" sheds light on whether strong concern about possible sexual abuse in a day-care center in New Jersey, when the Kelly Michaels case was unfolding, was likely to generate false allegations through anxious questioning by parents. When news of the Kelly Michaels case was first reported by a local newspaper in nearby Clifton in mid-August 1985, Leslie Kropinack, director of the Clifton school, was "besieged" with calls. "Several dozen parents were 'quite upset' after reading about the charges last week," she said.[95] They thought the charges stemmed from the Wee Care Child Care Center in Clifton. Of course, if there really were mass hysteria around Maplewood in the summer of 1985, then allegations of some sort would have been generated against at least one staff member at the day-care center. But that did not happen. Some, perhaps all, of the anxious parents in Clifton undoubtedly asked their children if anything bad had happened to them at school. Some undoubtedly used leading questions and were unwilling to accept an initial denial. But not a single one of those inquiries resulted in a reported accusation, even though this is the most common explanation in the witch-hunt narrative for how these cases begin.

Dade County at the Time of Country Walk

Strong rhetoric has also been used to assert there was public "hysteria" over child sexual abuse in Dade County, Florida, at the time of the Country Walk case (the subject of Chapter Six). Peter Boyer claimed, in his 1998 *Frontline* program called "The Child Terror," that a "fever in Miami" lasted from 1984 through 1991. The unusually long time period—eight years—was apparently selected to link the Bobby Finje case (which ended in an acquittal in 1991) with two cases from 1984 that Boyer cited as the proof of this "fever." The cases from 1984 were Country Walk and a home day-care involving Grant Snowden. Neither the Country Walk case nor the Snowden case has been accurately portrayed in the witch-hunt narrative.[96] But for the purpose of examining the broader claim about sex abuse hysteria, what is most interesting is the lack of *any* additional cases to prove the existence of a trend that allegedly lasted for eight years. Dade County is one of the largest in the United States; there were thousands of day-care centers in Dade at the time of Country Walk and thousands more home babysitting services. Yet, as far as can be ascertained from all major sources in the witch-hunt narrative, not a single one of those centers or babysitting services joined the three cases that Peter Boyer linked together years later.

There were three other day-care sexual abuse cases that received media attention in Miami in 1984. None of these cases provide support for the witch-hunt narrative. Indeed, all of them suggest the existence of social forces that run counter to those embodied in the witch-hunt narrative. The first of the three cases, in chronological order, involved allegations of sexual abuse at the Lehrman Day School, run by Temple Emmanuel in Miami.[97] The case had several notable features: it stayed out of the newspaper until the Country Walk case broke months later. The allegations did not expand or spread beyond the original claims. And most significantly, the case involved unequivocal medical proof of sexual abuse. The two-and-a-half-year-old boy who made the first allegations tested positive for gonorrhea of the throat. But the case turned out to prove the difficulty of prosecuting child sexual abuse cases, particularly with young victims. Even though the child had incontrovertible medical evidence and identified the suspect, there was insufficient evidence to prove a criminal case.[98] The boy was developmentally too young to testify, so the case was dismissed.

There were two other day-care cases involving allegations of abuse in the local news during the time of Country Walk. The first one, which emerged in August 1984, when Country Walk began generating headlines, involved the Turtle Top Day Nursery. The State Department of Health and Rehabilitative Services (DHRS) closed the school pending an investigation of "allegations that children have been severely spanked by the 70-year-old owner."[99] A week later, Circuit Court Judge Richard Hickey allowed the center to reopen, finding that the state had not gathered "substantive evidence" against A. Andrew Berent.[100] The DHRS investigators eventually collected statements from six children who had allegedly been "beaten, humiliated, and molested" by Berent.[101] The state scheduled a hearing to present the evidence in February 1985, and the center closed voluntarily a few weeks before the hearing. Accordingly, the evidence was never presented in a legal setting. No criminal charges were brought, and there is no other available information about the case beyond the media coverage. But it would hardly seem to be evidence of hysteria.

The final case arose in mid-July 1985 and involved the Hazel Crawford Day Care Center. This one is particularly important because it involved some of the same members of Janet Reno's staff who have been accused of "witch-hunting" in the Country Walk case. The case began with the arrest of Stephen Bergman by the North Miami Police Department, which charged he had sexually abused a four-year-old girl earlier that week.[102] In what might be the surest sign of an overreaction, two judges separately denied Bergman bail the next day. (Three days later, he was ordered released on his own recognizance.) A month after that, however, Christopher Rundle, an assistant state attorney for Dade County, announced that the state had *declined* to file charges.[103] He defended the initial arrest, explaining that the standard of evidence to arrest someone is much lower than the standard for filing a criminal case. Clearly, the state concluded that the child's statement was not clear or convincing enough to warrant prosecution. Some parents expressed outrage at the decision, and the family of the four-year-old girl filed a civil lawsuit against the Bergmans. Eventually, a six-person jury "took twenty minutes to clear a former North Miami Beach day care center operator of wrongdoing."[104] This decision was rendered in 1989, two years before the "fever" that allegedly gripped Southern Florida had broken. It would appear that the "hysteria" in this case involved one family; their initial statements were (appropriately) taken seriously by law enforcement, but after careful and expedient review it was decided not to prosecute. This seems to be the appropriate decision, and it was made by the same actors who Peter Boyer and others have claimed were so biased that they constantly "found" sexual abuse where it did not exist. It is difficult to square these three cases with the claim that the county was infected by hysteria during this time.

Boston at the Time of Amirault

The most publicized of day-care sexual abuse allegations in Massachusetts involved the Fells Acres Day School in Malden, Massachusetts, near Boston. The first allegations were made in the fall of 1984. The prosecution against the Amirault family, who owned and operated the center, lasted for years as there were ultimately four separate trials, all ending in conviction. Dorothy Rabinowitz has made the claim that the Amiraults were tried and convicted at a time when hysteria was rampant in Massachusetts.[105] Under this view, the social hysteria must have existed for more than five years, since that is how much time elapsed between the first trial and the final conviction. Without such an expansive view, it is difficult to explain how hysteria could account for the defendants all being convicted at their second trials.

But the evidence for sex abuse hysteria in Massachusetts is almost nonexistent. An article in the *Boston Globe* at the height of publicity about the Amirault case indicated that thirty-five facilities in Massachusetts had been investigated and four had been closed.[106] The Office for Children had jurisdiction over more than ten thousand day-care facilities at the time. The three facilities beyond the Amirault case have never been mentioned in the witch-hunt narrative, and there is no evidence in the public record to suggest they involved false accusations.

The possible exception is Caring for Kids, a day-care facility in Braintree, Massachusetts, that was included on Charlier and Downing's list of thirty-six cases. The allegations began with two children and eventually involved three others, although the parents of two of the children observed videotapes of their children being interviewed and concluded that no abuse had occurred. The community, however, was not "hysterical." Eighteen parents of children who attended the day-care centers testified in *favor* of Deborah Wingard, who operated two facilities under the name Caring for Kids. It is difficult to assess the case from existing DSS records alone, since they do not include a transcript of the ten-day administrative hearing. But Chief Administrative Magistrate Christopher F. Connolly, who presided over the appeal of the license suspension, concluded in July 1985 that "no sexual or physical abuse of children occurred at Caring for Kids, Inc."[107] A spokesman for the state licensing board said this was the system operating as it should; the licenses had been temporarily suspended for good cause and both were later reinstated after further investigations. There was no foregone conclusion of abuse since precisely the opposite was actually concluded. The center did not reopen, because Wingard moved away. Whatever one concludes about the underlying merits, the idea that the greater Boston area was swept up in some kind of mass hysteria does not fit the facts.

The only case beyond McMartin where the complaints at one facility actually spread to another one is the Georgian Hills case in Memphis, home of Charlier and Downing's newspaper. What happened in that case was a terrible injustice; fifteen employees at the Daybridge Daycare Center lost their jobs. But there were no other cases from the time period that had localized effects as severe as these two, and there is no evidence of widespread hysteria even in the same times and places where it was supposedly the worst.

"Air of Denial"

Beyond the evidence about specific places, there are powerful social forces, never acknowledged in the witch-hunt narrative, that also contradict the claims of "hysteria" and overreaction to allegations of child sexual abuse. Those forces were at work throughout the time of the alleged "modern American witch-hunts." Their origin is in the era before child sexual abuse was "recognized" as a social problem. The primary forces are secrecy, silence, and disbelief. These forces foster an "air of denial," the polar opposite of the "air of accusation" that practically defines the witch-hunt narrative.

Recognizing these factors is critical to placing the witch-hunt narrative in context. Vital to this understanding is some historical perspective that is sorely missing from the narrative. The emergence of the McMartin case coincided with the recognition of child sexual abuse as a social problem. A pivotal event in the process of social recognition was the television movie about incest called "Something About Amelia." Broadcast on January 9, 1984—less than a month before the first stories about the McMartin case were aired—the movie addressed what the *New York Times* called "undoubtedly the biggest of social taboos."[108] As nervous as the topic made television reviewers, it garnered an enormous audience, and hotlines were flooded with calls afterward. Later that month, Jeffrey Masson made headlines with scholarly revelations from the Freud archives about how Sigmund Freud lost his nerve and, in the face of intense criticism, turned away from recognizing the importance of child sexual abuse.[109] An excerpt from Masson's book *The Assault on Truth: Freud's Suppression of the Seduction Theory* was the cover story in *The Atlantic* magazine in February. The biggest of social taboos was suddenly in the news.

In understanding the events that came afterward, we should give consideration to the vast history during which child sexual abuse was not "recognized." The era is sometimes described such that it seems as if the only thing lacking was an "understanding" of the problem. This argument has been advanced in defense of the Catholic Church. For example, Philip Jenkins has written that the Church was essentially "guilty of applying standards that had prevailed before the revolution in social sensibilities."[110] (He squares this position with the fact that child sexual abuse has long been a crime by labeling it illegal "in the technical sense.") But there was also a remarkable denial of what was obvious—in broken bones, in venereal disease, and in incest victims. The "discovery" of the physical abuse of children came when pioneers in the field refused to ignore the implications of x-rays documenting broken bones. Masson reconstructed the efforts of two early French physicians to recognize the physical and sexual abuse of children in the late 1800s. Dr. Ambroise Tardieu recognized that the sexual assault of girls was often overlooked; similarly, Dr. Paul Brouardel was often "drawing the attention of his audience at autopsies to the abuse of children by their parents and teachers."[111] It would be more than fifty years before Dr. John Coffee, a radiologist in the United States, wrote an article in 1946 about abnormal bone fractures in infants.[112] It has been reported that the journals' editors "were so alarmed" at the implications of the study that "the eventual article did not contain references to intentional abuse."[113] Sixteen years later, Dr. Henry Kempe and his colleagues coined the phrase *battered-child syndrome* for the clinical condition of children who have suffered serious physical abuse.[114] The power of denial prevailed during those decades. History professor Lynn Sacco has documented how, during the twentieth century, "doctors refused to consider the possibility of incest" when new diagnostic procedures revealed gonorrhea infections in "respectable" families.[115] Rather than revise their views about the prevalence of incest, doctors speculated that perhaps the disease was transmitted by toilet seats. Harvard psychiatrist Judith Herman has written about how the profession still considered incest to be a rare occurrence, with a prevalence of maybe one in a million children, as recently as the 1950s.[116] This perception was off by a staggering amount—a multiple of tens of thousands.[117] Historian Linda Gordon has documented how case workers in Boston, during the Progressive Era, construed father-daughter incest as an encounter between a seductive and sexually precocious girl and a relatively innocent man.[118] Another historian, Estelle Freedman, has recounted how a major study of child sexual abuse and incest in the1950s described the majority of victims as "seductive" and "flirtatious," stigmatizing the victims as the perpetrators.[119] The social forces of silence and denial that explain this history should be kept in mind when considering the abrupt cultural change to the intense media spotlight on sexual abuse in January 1984.

None of those forces are acknowledged in the versions of history that describe the middle to late 1980s as a period of witch-hunts over child sexual abuse. Instead, the entire view of our social response to child sexual abuse is wrapped up in words such as *hysteria*. Indeed, the witch-hunt narrative is built on the notion that child sexual abuse suddenly became overreported. A primary target in this narrative is Dr. Roland Summit, a psychiatrist who published an influential article in 1983 about what he called the "Child Abuse Accommodation Syndrome."[120] Summit advanced a theory about how children come to "accommodate" sexual abuse—that is, how sexual abuse can continue to be perpetrated without children telling anyone. The first component in his framework is secrecy. Summit theorized that "attempts by the child to illuminate the secret will be countered by an adult conspiracy of silence and disbelief."

Lee Coleman, a psychiatrist hired by the defense in the Country Walk case and many others, began attacking this idea in 1986. Speaking at a convention of the political advocacy group Victims of Child Abuse Laws (VOCAL), Coleman allowed that this dynamic might happen within families, but he mocked the idea that it would happen in other contexts as "totally ludicrous." It "makes absolutely no sense," he argued, that this would happen when the allegation involves a teacher, coach, or virtually anyone else who might be accused in an institutional context.[121] Coleman and others have belittled the idea of "denial," arguing instead that, particularly in an institutional context, adults invariably overreact to children's disclosures rather than ignore or deny them. The "air of accusation" is a primary component in the hysteria claim that has been widely accepted in the years since the McMartin case ended. Richard Gardner made this argument in his 1991 book *Sex Abuse Hysteria: Salem Witch Trials Revisited*. Charles Krauthammer relied on the same idea to argue in 1993 that "we have become exquisitely over-sensitized" to child abuse.[122]

There is no question that the McMartin case *was* characterized by an air of accusation in the months when the case became a national news story and was rushed to the grand jury. The concept has little or no application, however, to many other cases advanced by the witch-hunt narrative, where the initial accusations involved one or two related people and did not spread beyond that, regardless of the intensity of community concern and publicity. Moreover, the opposite phenomenon—an air of denial—is apparent in countless institutional abuse cases. This is what explains hundreds of pedophile priests who operated with impunity for decades in a variety of jurisdictions. It also explains how hundreds of pedophile Boy Scout leaders could operate for decades without being apprehended.[123]

The air of denial is fueled by a sense of disbelief that adults, particularly those in positions of trust, could do horrible things to children. This is precisely how Barry Seigel, in his book *A Death in White Bear Lake*, explained a family physician seeing horrendous physical signs of abuse but not comprehending that the cause was intentional.[124] There was a "sense of disbelief" that anything so awful could be happening. The same phenomenon explains how Waneta Hoyt could be accepted as "the unluckiest woman in America" when she actually killed all five of her children over time.[125] Her family was long considered as case evidence that Sudden Infant Death Syndrome must be genetic. The physicians' "disbelief" of the abuse hypothesis in both cases might be written off as a product of the time. The murder described in Seigel's 1990 book was more than twenty-one years old; Hoyt's crimes also went undetected for nearly twenty years. But a comprehensive study of death certificates published by the Gannett News

Service in 1990 concluded that at least half of child-abuse deaths go undetected. This study was based on 49,569 death certificates in 1987, one of the years the witch-hunt narrative places at the height of hysteria about child abuse.[126] Yet, when writing about the exaggerated abduction figures that were widely accepted in the early 1980s, Philip Jenkins concluded that "children are at a low risk for homicide."[127] In his careful analysis of official statistics, there is no mention of the idea that such statistics might significantly underreport this crime. The reasons for the underreporting subvert his entire argument about hysteria.

A sense of disbelief can also arise if the person charged with sexual abuse does not fit social stereotypes of sex offenders. This sense of disbelief is particularly likely to happen in institutional settings because offenders tend to "groom" both victims and parents in order to avoid detection. An academic study of admitted child molesters examined this process in detail; the men studied "described themselves as charming, nice, and likeable."[128] Norman Watson, who molested hundreds of boys over several decades as a Little League coach, described the same process in a 1999 prison interview with *Sports Illustrated*.[129] Watson molested boys without any consequences through all of the years described as "hysterical" by Drs. Coleman and Gardner—and he was in the same part of Southern California described as the epicenter of this phenomenon. Watson was apprehended because a man he had molested twenty-three years earlier, and whose children had reached Little League age, hired a private investigator to look into his "nagging" and unresolved feelings about the matter.

A football coach in Pennsylvania was apprehended in a similar, but less deliberate, way. Richard Hoffman wrote a personal memoir that involved abuse in his childhood. He did not know that the abuser, John E. Feifel, was still coaching (and still abusing boys), but his book resulted in the man's apprehension and conviction.[130] The witch-hunt narrative contains no social or psychological explanations for how such abuse could go on undetected for so many years, particularly years when sex abuse hysteria supposedly gripped the country. The reality is that the witch-hunt narrative is underinclusive and incomplete. However accurate its description is in a few select cases, it misses important dynamics that explain many other cases. The disbelief that a "respectable" person would sexually assault a child was widespread during the 1980s (and later), and it worked in the favor of many child molesters.

This myth has been used in telling many of the alleged witch-hunt cases—as if having a steady job or being a professional rules out being a child molester. In fact, the cover of respectability is often an integral part of grooming parents, avoiding detection, and manipulating victims. In her initial article about "Junior McMartins," Debbie Nathan argued that these cases were impossible to believe in part because the alleged perpetrators were "white and middle class"—"in short, the last people you'd associate with sleazy trench coated pedophiles."[131]

This time-worn cliché of pedophiles fails to recognize how child molesters actually gain access to children. It is not by lurking around in "sleazy trench coats." From detailed interviews with child molesters in treatment, Carla Van Dam documents how they "groom adults" in order to obtain access to children; the grooming involves presenting yourself in a likeable way and "providing timely and appreciated assistance." As an assistant prosecutor in Delaware explained, "Nice guys make good child sex abusers. Kids don't like mean, nasty guys."[132] Neither do the adults who are critical to gaining access to children. Nathan's way of thinking is precisely what pedophiles bank on—that they appear to be so unlikely to have sexual interest in children that any allegations to this effect are quickly dismissed as improbable.

The witch-hunt narrative also suggests that children easily disclose sexual abuse, dismissing the significance of the forces of secrecy, fear, and shame. Consider this explanation by Professor Maggie Bruck in the Edenton, North Carolina, daycare case involving Robert Kelly:

> Q: Would it be fair to say that one of the least favorite subjects, ah, to talk about, whether it's with their own parents or, ah, stranger would be anything that occurred to them of a sexual nature?
>
> A: Oh, I don't agree with you, Mr. Hart. I think that children, in fact, love to talk about those kind of things especially among themselves. . . .
>
> Q: Tell me, Doctor, from your experience how great a time would a child have going and telling her friends and neighbors and other people about having someone stick his finger up their butt, how much glee would be involved in that?
>
> A: You know, I don't know, Mr. Hart, but if they get a good laugh from their friends and if it could be something that would make them a really important kid and that their friends could all jump in and say is that what happened to you, I've got an even better one, it would be a really great topic of conversation.[133]

But survey evidence illustrates quite the opposite. Victims of sexual abuse typically do not "love to talk about it"; rather, they avoid reporting and often disclose the information to no one.[134] Aside from the issues of embarrassment and humiliation that Bruck does not recognize, children who report sexual abuse can also face indifference, or worse. Turning a blind eye against such allegations is the response in many institutions where the allegations are seen primarily as a threat to the organization's well-being. It is a common dynamic in families as well. Pursuing allegations against "upstanding" perpetrators can trigger hostility and pressure to drop the charges. In short, although the witch-hunt narrative is built around the idea that an "air of accusation" has led to countless false accusations, this account overlooks powerful countervailing social forces that often create an air of denial and indifference.

Examples of this kind of denial abound, even in the years when the witch-hunt narrative claims there was hysteria in the opposite direction. James Joseph O'Boyle, a respected police officer in East Rockhill Township, Pennsylvania, counted on this phenomenon while abusing scores of boys in the 1980s. "Denial was just the reaction O'Boyle correctly assumed people would have," wrote Stephen Fried in a chilling investigative story in *Philadelphia* magazine.[135] "There were cops who looked the other way, employers who didn't make routine background checks, reporters who knew but didn't or couldn't write the story."[136] A comparable case emerged from Hapeville, Georgia, in 1994, when Walter P. West pleaded guilty to thirty-three counts of child molestation, ending a long pattern of sexual abuse that covered all the years of the McMartin case. "Officials were told of numerous accusations of possible child abuse by a Hapeville police officer but failed to act," reported the *Atlanta Constitution*.[137]

In 1986, Calvin Trillin described a case in *The New Yorker* in which authorities in the Mormon Church and local law enforcement in Redmond, Oregon, turned a blind eye on a "valued member of the community," Ed Dyer. Dyer was scoutmaster of the church's Boy Scout Troop 26. In 1982, the parents of a boy in the troop informed the local bishop that Dyer had made sexual advances toward their son. After establishing that "there were other stories," the church asked Dyer to resign. They did not inform local authorities, however; nor was Dyer excommunicated. "It's just something you don't want to believe has happened," a church member later explained to Trillin.[138] A year after that, the church undertook a more serious investigation, resulting in a thirty-page dossier, including tape recordings, proving "a pattern that went back at least twenty-five years." Dyer was eventually "disfellowshipped" from the church, but he continued to have access to boys through his work with the U.S. Forest Service. In the spring of 1984, when the McMartin case was all over the national news, someone in the church with detailed information about Dyer tried to get the Redmond Police to investigate the matter. But nothing happened. The reason was never specified. Trillin speculated that:

> The police were reluctant to launch a vigorous investigation of good old Ed Dyer or that, like some members of the church, they were simply unable to face the possibility that what was being said about the man who had been entrusted with so many boys for so many years was true.[139]

That such sentiments would prevent action from being taken in a case involving a man with a long, documented history of predatory behavior contradicts everything the witch-hunt narrative claims about social responses to child sexual abuse in 1984. When new allegations reached the state police more than a year later, Dyer was arrested. After pleading guilty to two counts of second-degree sexual abuse, Dyer was sentenced to a total of twenty days, with three years of probation—less than three weeks in jail.

Faced with a child disclosing sexual abuse, many adults would respond, both within families and in institutions, by avoiding "getting involved." Mandatory reporting laws are aimed at addressing this problem. The witch-hunt narrative is built around the idea that sexual abuse is often tragically overreported. But this position overlooks the immense evidence of underreporting. Survey data consistently indicates that mandated reporters underreport their suspicions. A Rand Corporation survey of twelve hundred pediatricians, child psychologists, social workers, school principals, and child-care providers found that about 40 percent "had at least once suspected child abuse but failed to report it."[140]

Though there are penalties for failure to report suspected cases of child abuse, there are few reported cases of prosecution for failure to report. And the few cases that have gone forward have generally been unsuccessful even in the face of substantial evidence—bearing out a social reluctance to punish anyone for this behavior. Jason Berry, in the first major exposé of the Catholic Church, documented widespread failure to report known pedophiles. Patrick Boyle, reporting on more than two hundred confidential files, described a similar phenomenon in the Boy Scouts. Reflecting the social reluctance to criticize those who fail to act, a book review of *Scout's Honor* said it "falls short on the level of outrage" provoked by Berry's book because "the sins seem primarily ones of omission."[141] Many of those sins of omission occurred in the mid-1980s, when cases like McMartin and Jordan, Minnesota, were dominating the news.

Similar events occurred in Florida. In April 1988, an anonymous source informed local police about a complaint made to school authorities by the parent of a second-grade girl at the Nativity School in Hollywood. The school principal had not informed authorities, as required by law, of the complaint against Edward Charles White, known to the students as "Mr. Ed." Detectives eventually discovered that White had been "discharged or terminated" from four other schools in the archdiocese between 1962 and 1976. Church records did not include any explanation. The investigation led to White's arrest on charges of sexually abusing twelve children. Some charges had to be dropped because of a restrictive statute of limitations; White pleaded guilty to others. The Hollywood police said that officials of the Nativity School "should be charged with failing to report suspected child molesting."[142] As a local newspaper editorial pointed out, "no one at Hollywood's Nativity School wanted to think the unthinkable." No one was charged; yet this unwillingness to "think the unthinkable" took place during the time when Peter Boyer later claimed a "fever" of sex-abuse hysteria was gripping South Florida.

A case that became public in the small town of Boulder, Montana, also demonstrated the power of denial during the same era. Douglas Marks, a "widely admired" elementary school teacher and member of a prominent local family, was arrested in 1989 on four counts of felony sexual assault against four of his students between 1985 and 1989. Marks had been sexually abusing children for decades; court records listed twenty-two accusations dating back to 1956. County Attorney Rich Llewellyn identified forty-five victims, but there were probably many more. The fathers of two of the boys involved in the 1989 charges had themselves been victims. The extent to which officials turned a blind eye to Marks is stunning. He was first apprehended for sexual abuse in 1959; no charges were brought, but he was forced to take an "indefinite leave" from Jefferson High School. He was later hired at the elementary school.

Over the years, "people went to officials and said things, but nobody paid attention."[143] Paul Myrhow, who was molested by Marks in the early 1980s, reported him in 1985 to Daryl Craft, a longtime friend who had become deputy sheriff. As reported in the press years later, "Craft did not doubt the story—he, too, had been molested by Marks." But the complaint did not result in an arrest. Myrhow went back to authorities in 1989. The four charges that were later brought against Marks were all based on events that had occurred since his report in 1985. Marks pleaded guilty to four counts of felony sexual assault and was sentenced to twenty years.[144] School board chairman David Reiter said later "it was fairly common knowledge of his sexual preferences." Why was nothing done, even after a report in 1985? "I think there is a tendency for everyone to submerge these bad thoughts," he said.[145] In other words, even at a time of alleged hysteria about child sexual abuse, it was easier to turn a blind eye than deal with a known pedophile.

The same disturbing behavior was documented through an eight-month investigation by two reporters at the *Arkansas Democrat-Gazette* who examined allegations of sexual misconduct against school teachers. They concluded, "When teachers are accused of sexual misconduct, some school officials and school boards quietly sidestep legal and ethical issues to protect their schools from scandal."[146] The study was published in 1996, four years after Dr. Richard Gardner flatly asserted it is "no longer the case" that those revealing sexual abuse will be met with a disbelieving community. Gardner claimed the opposite was true, that police and child protective services were more likely to "accept as valid even frivolous and absurd accusations."[147] But Hargrove and Roth found that "sexual allegations by students have been greeted with shrugs, although a teacher's files indicated previous sex-related complaints." There is no reason to think this phenomenon was peculiar to Arkansas.

The witch-hunt narrative is further contradicted by the intense pressure families have experienced to withdraw sexual abuse charges, particularly against "beloved" figures like coaches, teachers, scout leaders, and choir masters. When a twelve-year-old girl in Florida disclosed that Ronald Bach, a popular physical education teacher at Miami Springs Middle School, had sexually abused her, the community rallied around *Bach*. The family was ostracized. Later, Bach pleaded guilty.[148] A family in Barrington, Rhode Island, experienced the same thing when their child spoke out against Carlton Bittenbender, a popular Boy Scout leader who has since been proven to be a serial child molester.[149] To these families, the witch-hunt narrative is a cruel misrepresentation of social pressures that, in their experience, are the complete opposite of "overly sensitive" to sexual abuse.

Difficulties Prosecuting Child Abuse

The witch-hunt narrative also contains a significant myth about prosecuting child sexual abuse: that these cases are somehow "easy." Kim Hart of VOCAL was quoted in Charlier and Downing's series as saying that legal reforms to accommodate child witnesses are "just an easy way to get an easy win."[150] Debbie Nathan's first article in her witch-hunt oeuvre was captioned: "Gayle Dove and Mickey Noble had their day in court. But what difference does that make, when you've been labeled a daycare child molester?"[151] In other words, defendants stand virtually no chance of prevailing when charged with sexual abuse in a daycare center. This is a convenient argument to make when one is arguing that someone was falsely convicted. But Nathan provided no data on conviction rates to support her claim. Entirely lost in the witch-hunt narrative is a sense of how hard it actually is to win a child sexual abuse case. In the case Nathan wrote about, Noble's conviction in that trial was overturned on appeal, and she was acquitted in a second trial, seemingly contradicting the notion that these charges bring an automatic conviction. Dove's conviction was overturned on appeal; she was convicted a second time, and the conviction was also overturned on appeal. Charges were later dropped. The case poses an important question about uses and limits of evidence concerning children not named in the charges at hand.[152] Reasonable people can disagree about where courts should draw such a line. Seeing the case for those issues, however, highlights the difficulty in proving sexual abuse cases involving multiple children, something never acknowledged in the witch-hunt narrative.

The complexity and challenge of proceeding with young victims has been overlooked by proponents of the witch-hunt narrative. Many states also had age limits or competency requirements that kept children under the age of seven out of court. It was effectively open season on those children since they had little possibility of legal recourse. States that switched to a case-by-case approach accommodated younger children, but some children will always be too young to testify. In some cases this problem has been misinterpreted as evidence of a witch-hunt. The Presidio Child Development Center case in San Francisco is a primary example. Six children tested positive for a sexually transmitted disease and dozens more were thought to have been sexually abused in 1986, but charges were dropped (because the children's testimony was "too vague.") That fact apparently explains why this case has appeared on several lists of so-called witch-hunts. But as Captain David Fox, a physician and father of children who attended the facility, told the press, "Just because this case didn't reach prosecution, doesn't mean that it didn't happen."[153] Unfortunately, this distinction is often blurred in the witch-hunt narrative, where dropping charges is routinely considered as proof that charges had no basis in fact.

Cheryl McCall highlighted a similar tragedy in the December 1984 issue of *Life* magazine, describing a case prosecutors declined to accept because the witnesses were too young, even though the family court had found:

> that over a period of three years [a father] had sexually abused his daughters in many ways, cruelly forced them to take part in and observe other vile acts and permitted his uncle similarly to abuse the girls in his presence.[154]

These kinds of stories are told in the media only relatively rarely; indeed, they have been overshadowed in an avalanche of articles about hysteria and witch-hunts.

Another case like this, also lost to virtually every historical account of day-care abuse in the 1980s, is the Sugar Plum School House in Lake Worth, Florida. The case began when a mother alleged that her three-year-old daughter told her "Ba Ba Blue" had "poked a hole in her bottom." The mother indicated that the man who co-owned and operated the center responded to that name. The girl was examined by Dr. Donald T. Drummond, who found a tear in her hymen that indicated recent trauma.[155] The man was arrested November 23, and the school held an informational meeting for parents on November 27. At least two other families came forward after the meeting. Their children were interviewed by the police, and both children apparently implicated the same man.[156] An investigation by Child Protective Services resulted in a finding that sexual abuse was "indicated."[157] Using enrollment information provided by the Department of Health and Rehabilitation, the state attorney's office endeavored to contact 120 people. A small number were never reached, but virtually everyone who was reached reported their child had indicated nothing about abuse. It is worth pondering the significance of this result since the argument in several other cases is that anxious parents caused their children to respond in the affirmative. These parents were presumably no less anxious or concerned, and yet this widespread parental interview process produced no additional reports.

These results apparently puzzled the grand jury as much as they puzzled a reporter who later obtained as many documents as possible. The grand jury issued two findings on March 17, 1989: (1) the owner and operator of the school was "completely innocent" of any and all charges, as were other teachers and staff at the school; and (2) the child who triggered the investigation "has been sexually abused."[158] Perhaps the child was abused elsewhere; perhaps the grand jury was wrong about part of its findings. Either way, the age of the child made it impossible to ascertain with any more certainty where and how she sustained what one expert diagnosed as a repeated trauma to the vagina. The failure of justice in this case, however, was to the child whose story has been lost in accounts of the 1980s that reflexively label day-care cases as witch-hunts.

Courts have made various accommodations for children as witnesses since the early 1980s. Many states had "corroboration requirements" that required evidence beyond a child's word in order to file sexual abuse charges. Elizabeth Holtzman, the Brooklyn district attorney, told the *New York Times* in July 1983 that there were "at least 24 cases in the borough last year that could not be prosecuted" because of this requirement.[159] Jeanine Pirro, chief of the Domestic Violence Prosecution Unit in Westchester County, estimated that twenty cases a month could not be prosecuted because of this requirement. These numbers would translate into thousands of cases across the country that could not be pursued even though prosecutors thought the evidence was strong. Yet in the absence of such a requirement, there were jury instructions that routinely warned jurors in child molestation cases that without corroboration the word of a child was not as worthy of belief as the word of an adult. The "cautionary instruction" that was used in California reads:

> Corroboration of the testimony of a child under the age of fourteen years upon and with whom a lewd and lascivious act is alleged to have been committed is not essential to a conviction. However, a charge of committing a lewd and lascivious act is one which is easily made and, once made, is difficult to defend against even if the person accused is innocent. The law requires that you examine with caution the testimony of the child with whom the lewd and lascivious act is alleged to have been committed.[160]

This instruction tilts the proceedings in favor of the defendant. Although the California Supreme Court ruled in 1975 that this instruction was inappropriate, Judge Bob Hight agreed to use this instruction ten years later in Michael Ruby's case, stemming from Manhattan Ranch Preschool.[161] The case went to trial while the McMartin case was still in preliminary hearing stage, and it ended in a hung jury. Reforming such laws, as happened throughout the country during the McMartin era, did not magically eliminate the prejudices that created them in the first place. But to listen to the witch-hunt narrative, one would think any accusation by a child is almost automatically believed in court.

Another accommodation that courts made to the testimony of children was to loosen requirements about specifying the precise dates of any alleged misconduct. Children do not have datebooks; nor do they have the same sense of time that adults do. Many cases in the 1980s were dismissed, or the conviction was reversed, on the grounds that the time frame had not been specified narrowly enough. The Tots 'N' Toddlers Center in Berlin, New Jersey, was closed in March 1985 by a superior court judge after an investigation by the New Jersey Division of Youth and Family Services. A grand jury indicted Robert and Nancy Knighton on charges of sexually abusing seven children between 1981 and 1984. The criminal charges were eventually dismissed, however, because of an appellate decision in a separate case requiring the prosecution to specify the exact days when the alleged abuse occurred. Requirements about specifying the time and date of the allegations were later relaxed in child sexual abuse cases. Some of the convictions against James Watt (discussed in Chapter Three) in White Plains, New York, were overturned on the same grounds, even though a number of those charges included strong medical evidence of abuse. (Watt's conviction was upheld on one charge.) One of the "Bronx Five" cases was also overturned on these grounds. The first sentence in the appellate court decision reads:

> The record in this case unequivocally indicates that defendant, a teacher's aide at the Puerto Rican Association for Community Action Day Care Center (PRACA), engaged in criminal activity involving the rape, sodomy and sexual abuse of innocent, defenseless children between the ages of three and five years.[162]

But the court then indicated it was forced to reverse the convictions because the charges were framed as a "continuing course of conduct" and the "time interval alleged in each count was so excessive as to be unreasonable." The court's own reading of the facts suggests this case was not a witch-hunt but rather a monument to the difficulty in charging a case that involves young children.

There was a final reform, widely supported by parents and many legislators in the 1980s, that was supposed to ease the discomfort of testifying in court. Many states adopted laws permitting children to testify by closed-circuit television. This would allow them to testify without having to stare at the defendant or appear in the actual courtroom. The use of closed-circuit television was seen by many as an infringement on a defendant's right to confront witnesses, even though the reform did not exempt the child from cross-examination; it only exempted the child from having to look directly at the defendant.[163] But prosecutors in many cases were too worried that convictions won through closed-circuit television would be voided. And indeed, this is what happened. The Craig's Preschool case, analyzed in Chapter Three, was remanded to the trial court on grounds that had nothing to do with the strength of the state's evidence; the court required "case-specific findings" to justify the use of closed-circuit television, and the prosecution later decided against trying to reconvict Craig.[164] The U.S. Constitution was read to require the confrontation of witnesses in person, unless there is a specific showing that doing so would be traumatic. The catch-22 is that proving the existence of trauma basically requires a process resembling the kind of trial one is presumably trying to avoid. So even if the state prevails, the end result is still two court proceedings, not one. This explains why one of the major innovations in the 1980s, designed to minimize trauma, is almost never used.

Nevertheless, the witch-hunt narrative still insists that the law unduly favors children. The accused, the argument goes, is "presumed guilty" and has the difficult burden of proving his or her innocence.[165] In reality, there was no change in the extraordinary burden of proof the state carries in criminal cases: it must prove the case *beyond a reasonable doubt.* And even though various reforms allowed some of these cases to be brought—unlike in earlier years, when they were virtually prohibited by law—the difficulties involving children as witnesses remained. Children are not as articulate as adults; they are much easier targets for defense attorneys on cross-examination. There is a general tendency, borne out in jury simulation studies, to consider older witnesses as more credible than younger ones.[166] Children are also more prone to be intimidated by courtrooms and court procedures than adults. Although programs have been developed to familiarize children with courtrooms in advance of testifying, nothing has been done to reduce the stress of cross-examination. Even Charlier and Downing note that "defense lawyers have little trouble confusing and discrediting small children on the stand," although they did not appear to take that into account in their analysis of cases. Some of the most bizarre statements made in the actual proceedings in the McMartin case were from children in the preliminary hearing who were subject to cross-examination by seven lawyers. One child was cross-examined for more than fifteen days. Countries such as New Zealand have designed procedures for limiting cross-examination of children, but the prevailing sense in the United States is that such measures would violate a defendant's right to "confront" witnesses. How this position undercuts the effectiveness of children as witnesses, and leaves some parents unwilling to subject their children to such procedures, is never acknowledged in a narrative that claims child molestation cases are "easy" to win.

Children have also been known to freeze on the stand, resulting in the dismissal of the case. Warren Poole, a police officer in Lynn, Massachusetts, was charged with molesting a young girl. She froze on the witness stand in the summer of 1988 and charges were dismissed. Poole was arrested again in 1989 when a videotape was located that documented his raping the same girl in the fall of 1988.[167] This time, he pleaded guilty. But rarely is there a second chance like that one.

Even though various reforms made it possible to file charges in the day-care sexual-abuse cases of the 1980s, facilitating the filing of charges is not the same as making it easier to win such cases. The high-profile child sexual abuse cases were often the first time young children had been witnesses or complainants in criminal proceedings in their respective states. Several of these cases demonstrate the difficulty of prosecuting such charges even after the reforms of the 1980s. First, some children are just too young to testify. The Maine Supreme Court overturned the conviction of a man who confessed to child molestation, reasoning that without the young child's testimony it was not clear that a crime had been committed.[168] In a 1992 case in Delaware "state prosecutors gave a man his freedom in exchange for a signed statement admitting that he repeatedly had raped his daughter when she was 3."[169] The agreement caused such an outcry that the attorney general released a statement explaining the difficulties in prosecuting such cases.

Second, in order to protect defendants, courts generally have not admitted the same types of evidence that would be most likely to allow disbelieving jurors to see a defendant as a potential child molester. Evidence of prior acts, in other words, though undoubtedly relevant to assessing allegations, is generally considered too prejudicial to defendants to allow into evidence. The *Miami Herald* described a case in which a father of four was being tried for assaulting an eleven-year-old girl who had been riding her bicycle. The jury, which ultimately settled on a lesser offense, was not allowed to be informed of the defendant's conviction five months earlier for assaulting a different eleven-year-old girl on a bicycle.[170]

In an essay about one of the lesser-known cases of sexual misconduct by a priest, Paul Wilkes wrote in *The New Yorker* about Father Ronald Provost, who was charged with "posing" a ten-year-old boy for semi-nude photographs. The jury was not allowed to hear that pornographic pictures of young boys had been discovered in his room at Our Lady of Mt. Carmel in 1979, or that he had been "sent away for treatment" to the House of Affirmation. The jury was also prohibited from hearing about the hundreds of pictures found in his possession when he was arrested; only the pictures involving this single child would be admitted. The defense lawyer had successfully isolated the charges in the case "as though they were a single, aberrant—even accidental—episode."[171] Viewed this way, almost any act of sexual abuse, other than an attack on a stranger, is likely to seem like a single aberrant act. In the name of protecting the defendant, courts prevent introduction of evidence that would put those acts into context. (The judge found Provost guilty and issued a ten-year suspended sentence.)[172]

Finally, rules about hearsay evidence often come into play in child sexual abuse cases. The Charlier and Downing article reported that twenty-seven states had expanded the traditional hearsay exceptions to allow parents to testify about statements made by their children. But the hearsay evidence rule can nevertheless be an impediment to prosecution. Charges were dropped in a locally publicized child molestation case after a Michigan Supreme Court decision was seen as prohibiting the use of a detailed statement by a babysitter as to what a four-year-old girl told her about things her mother said were "secret."[173] Similarly, a judge in Prince William County, Virginia, decided that fourteen-year-old Kristi Kauffmann's diary could not be admitted in a prosecution against her father, Paul. Kristi committed suicide and the *Washington Post* described her diary as "a grim portrait in depression and fear that she said was caused by her adoptive father's sexual assaults."[174] Prosecutors also had a statement from Paul Kauffmann admitting "that he had been fondling his daughter for nearly three years." But a statement by the defendant alone is not sufficient to sustain a conviction under Virginia law, so the case against Kauffmann was dropped. Hearsay statements were allowed in some of the cases discussed in Chapter Three, but a number of those cases were overturned on that basis. This would-be reform has done little to make it easier to win such cases. The witch-hunt narrative misrepresents what prosecutors have always known: these cases are extremely difficult to win.

Leniency for Child Molesters

Those claiming hysteria over child sexual abuse are often careful to add that they abhor "real" sexual abuse. The same can be said of society as a whole. As Suzanne Sgroi observed in 1978, "the sexual abuse of children is a crime that our society abhors in the abstract but tolerates in reality."[175] But beyond the rhetoric, the evidence that actually bears out this abhorrence is thin at best. In fact, there is significance evidence to the contrary—evidence that we actually tolerate child sexual abuse and minimize the offense *in specific cases*. When the defendant is not an abstraction, but an actual adult, the result is often to embrace the guilty. Minimal punishments are meted out in many instances, even though the crime as a whole has the reputation of carrying extremely severe penalties. None of the factors described here would exist, especially during the 1980s, if the witch-hunt narrative accurately characterized social responses to child sexual abuse in America.

The strongest and most direct evidence of tolerating child sexual abuse is the extent to which "respectable" child molesters are embraced and supported even *after* they are proven guilty. The phenomenon played out in detail not far from Jordan, Minnesota, at precisely the same time as that case. Curiously, the

Jordan case is mentioned in virtually every contemporary account of child sexual abuse in America, while the Minneapolis Children's Theatre case almost never is. It resulted in a book whose title summarizes the phenomenon: *Hating the Sin, Loving the Sinner.*[176] When the theatre's director, John Donahue, was apprehended in 1984 for sexually abusing students, the *New York Times* described the theater as "widely respected" and the defendant as the recipient of a Margo Jones Award, "among the most prestigious awards in American Theatre."[177] The article reported the considerable concern about the impact the arrest would have on a major theatre company with "a full-time staff of 100" and an annual budget of $2.7 million. It was eventually revealed that Donahue had been charged with felony sodomy of a student at Carl Sandburg Junior High School in 1961, before he started the Children's Theatre in Minneapolis. (He pleaded guilty to the reduced charge of indecent liberties and received a one-year suspended sentence with ninety days in jail.) It also became clear there were numerous prior warnings and complaints about his behavior at the Children's Theatre. The father of one boy warned Donahue to leave his son alone in 1978, and a complaint was made to the Hennepin County District Attorney's Office. The Minneapolis police declined to take action, apparently because of "Donahue's prominence in the community."[178] Another complaint reached the board of directors, which dropped the matter after Donahue told them there was "no problem."

So many adults were aware of the situation that two teachers were later charged with violations of the Mandatory Reporting Act. Those charges were dropped, however—"with the greatest reluctance," according to the judge—because the statute was considered unconstitutionally vague.[179] When it came time to sentence Donahue, who pleaded guilty, Judge Charles A. Porter Jr. noted "the disturbing fact that collectively this community knew what was going on." Incredibly, the judge argued that Donahue should not "be made a scapegoat for what happened," as if his crimes were committed by someone else. The judge sentenced him to one year in prison; Donahue served eight months. Marvin Costello described the outcome as clear evidence of "society's ambivalence" about these cases.[180]

The same phenomenon occurred with priests, teachers, coaches, and scout leaders. For example, in June 1985, at the height of accusations in the McMartin case, David Slone pleaded guilty to molesting students at Falls-Lakeview School and at the Trinity Baptist Church in Norman, Oklahoma. According to a local newspaper, although Slone admitted to at least eight victims, he "continued to get strong support from some parents, children and officials of the church and at the school."[181] In Inverness, Florida, after Mitchell Matthews was convicted of eight counts of sexually abusing boys, "members of his church stood beside their choir director" and wrote letters to the judge urging probation instead of prison time.[182] The willingness of adults to embrace the guilty is directly related to the kind of grooming of parents that helps provide child molesters with access to children. The disbelief that Debbie Nathan expressed about charges against reputable, middle-class citizens who do not wear "sleazy trench coats" helps reinforce this point.

Although there are occasional cases where the defendant is vilified, the fact remains that perpetrators of child sexual abuse are often defended and embraced even after it is clear they are guilty. The witch-hunt narrative provides no explanation for this phenomenon—and this is because its existence is frighteningly similar to the phenomenon that leads to underreacting, not overreacting, to child sexual abuse.

Finally, the actual punishments meted out to child molesters by the criminal justice system often contradict the witch-hunt narrative, which predicts severe punishment as the end product of "sex abuse hysteria." Richard Gardner, who coined this phrase, made an empirical claim in the *Wall Street Journal* that our society has become so hysterical about child sexual abuse that child molesters "on average" serve longer prison sentences than murderers. Gardner claimed that his references were "available on request," but his response to a request from this author produced only an example of one long sentence: Robert Kelly's in the Edenton, North Carolina, day-care abuse case.[183] A comprehensive examination of all sentences for murder and for child molestation over a nine-year period in Rhode Island revealed that Gardner's claim was extremely exaggerated. Child molesters often receive probation, but murderers never do; child molesters often receive minimal sentences, but murders almost never do.[184] It is a testament to the uncritical acceptance of the witch-hunt narrative that Gardner's exaggerated claim was published in the *Wall Street Journal* without documentation or subsequent correction.

It does not require an original study to get a sense of the phenomenon. Newspaper stories are filled with examples of leniency to child molesters during the McMartin era. In the fall of 1983, Albert Breto pleaded guilty in Santa Ana, California, to forty-six counts involving sex crimes against two minors. He received five years of probation after Superior Court Judge Robert Green described Breto as "a gentle person" who "promised he would not engage in sexual activity" with any other minors.[185] That same week, Eugene Gold, who served four terms as Brooklyn district attorney, received probation in exchange for acknowledging "unlawful sexual conduct" with a ten-year-old girl.[186] In June 1984, near the height of the McMartin publicity, Samuel L. Jones, a Burbank, California, airport official, received probation after pleading guilty to felony charges of lewd and lascivious acts with pre-teenage boys. "This man could not suffer more consequences than he already has," his lawyer told the court, employing a logic that would insulate anyone with an important job from actually having to go to prison.[187] Similar evidence can be found in Minnesota, and probably anywhere else in the country. At the time the Jordan case was beginning, a local television station did a documentary about:

> two men—one a city official, another a doctor, both liked and respected in their small Minnesota towns—who went virtually unpunished after it was discovered that they molested adolescent boys.[188]

Systematic studies further contradict the notion that child molesters generally receive extraordinarily long sentences. The American Bar Association's Center on Children and the Law conducted a study in the early 1990s that included an examination of 954 case files from ten DA's offices around the country. The cases occurred in years that Gardner claimed were characterstic of "sex abuse hysteria." Yet, the researchers found that defendants who plead guilty or were found guilty at trial received prison or jail sentences in 59 percent of the cases. In other words, forty-one percent of the guilty avoided incarercation.[189] The distribution of sentences was strongly skewed to the low end. Thirty-six percent of the guilty were sentenced to one year or less, and twenty-two percent were sentenced between one and five years.[190] *Eight* percent received more than twenty years in prison, the kind of strict sentence the witch-hunt narrative claims to be characteristic of sex offenders.[191] The *Boston Globe* found similar results in a comprehensive study done right at the time the Amiraults were first being tried in Middlesex County. Those defending the Amiraults have since portrayed 1986 as a time when hysteria about child molestation gripped Massachusetts. But the *Globe* found that one out of three convicted child molesters did not go to jail at all that year; they received probation instead. Only one in ten was sentenced to more than five years in prison.[192] What kind of sex abuse hysteria is there if thirty to forty percent of convicted child molesters avoid prison and the vast majority of those sentenced receive a light sentence? Wouldn't the hysteria result in a high incarceration rates and lengthy sentences? What generally happens in reality is the opposite.

One consequence of minimal punishments is that they allow, and perhaps even embolden, repeated child sexual abuse. There are myriad cases on record in the 1980s and 1990s where a person who was apprehended for a sex crime against a child turns out to have been apprehended earlier without any significant consequences. This was the case with James Rud, the central character in the Jordan, Minnesota, cases. He had two prior convictions for sex crimes against children in the five years before his arrest in Jordan; both had resulted in probation. So, too, when John Shaver was apprehended in Fort Lauderdale, Florida, in 1988. His day-care center license had been revoked in Hawaii in 1983 after allegations of improperly touching little girls. In 1985, he opened the Rainbow Learning Center in Fort Lauderdale. The police investigated Shaver in Florida as well; three women who worked for him and at least one girl he cared for expressed concerns to police "about how Shaver handled little girls."[193] But there in Florida, in the midst of the so-called sex abuse hysteria, the investigation was closed. Similarly, when Richard Plass, a biology teacher and assistant principal at Stuyvesant High School in Manhattan, pleaded guilty in 1999 to sexually abusing a fifteen-year-old girl, it was reported that complaints about him had been filed by female students at the high school in 1985 and 1992.[194] If sex-abuse hysteria really was sweeping the country in the late 1980s and early 1990s, one wonders why there were no charges in these cases during that time.

Conclusion

None of this is to deny the combination of elements in the McMartin case that caused five teachers to be unjustly charged with crimes. There was overzealousness among many parties in that case. And the dynamics of the case can be found, to a lesser extent, in a handful of others around the country. But there were not hundreds, or even dozens, of cases like that. There were, in contrast, strong forces of minimization and denial at work during the same time period. The grains of truth in the witch-hunt narrative do not prove a major social trend. Rather, they demonstrate that competing social forces can coexist. At the same time Betty Raidor was unjustly being denied bail in the McMartin case, a man in Memphis, Tennessee, named David Slater, who had sexually assaulted a twelve-year-old over an extended period of time through his position in the Big Brother program, was avoiding jail, receiving probation instead and ordered to seek psychiatric treatment.[195] As serious and problematic as they were, the pockets of overreaction to child sexual abuse in the 1980s existed in a sea of minimization and denial of the very phenomenon. These forces are so powerful that they help explain why the witch-hunt narrative itself is so exaggerated.

CONCLUSION I

The McMartin preschool case came to define an era of child sexual abuse cases that began in 1983 and drew to a close in the early 1990s. These cases coincided with the "recognition" of child sexual abuse in America. Two important implications of this fact have been lost in subsequent discussions of these cases. First, the front-line psychologists, social workers, and law enforcement agents who were asked to respond to sexual abuse were pioneers. There were no protocols for interviewing children, few physicians had extensive knowledge about child sexual abuse, and experience with children as witnesses in court was extremely limited. Many of the professionals who found themselves in this difficult position were later criticized for aspects of how they responded. But few critics seem to remember what was being asked of these people: to respond to a problem that was suddenly recognized as serious, with little guidance and few precedents.

Second, there were powerful forces of secrecy and denial that explained why sexual abuse was not "recognized" before the mid-1980s. Those who promoted the witch-hunt narrative arising during this time never confronted what it meant that sexual abuse had been ignored or dismissed for so long. There were multiple reasons for the deafening silence around this issue. The perpetrators of abuse rely on secrecy, and they are skilled at coercing children into silence by various means. Some instill fear in their victims, some instill a sense of guilt or shame, and others rely on the sense of helplessness that comes from convincing children that nobody will believe them. Bystanders also play a role in maintaining silence. Some children speak up, and even when they do not, there are often signs that suggest abusive behavior might be occurring. But bystanders too often turn a blind eye, finding it easier to minimize or deny their suspicions than to confront the enormity of what is occurring. None of these dynamics disappeared simply because this taboo topic became a subject of public discourse in the mid-1980s.

The McMartin case began with a credible medical report and soon involved statements by several additional children supporting the suspicion that children attending the McMartin preschool had been sexually abused. The case spun out of control for a range of reasons, directly related to the fact that sexual abuse had just been "recognized." Pediatricians involved with the case overdiagnosed children largely because there was not a solid base of information about the genitals of non-abused children. Interviewers who were too sure that the children must have been abused read nonresponsive answers as an indication of fear. They were also too literal in interpreting fantastic statements. When similar statements were made in other cases around the country, some people concluded that the similarities had to mean the cases were connected. This led to some of the greatest excesses of the case—the period when many were convinced that day-care centers had been infiltrated by an organized group of people who abused children ritualistically.

But those excesses have been exaggerated in various ways. The infamous claim that there were tunnels under the McMartin preschool, often attributed to hundreds of children, was made by only a handful. The LA County Sheriff's "Ritual Abuse Task Force" took its charge seriously and credulously in 1985. It was disbanded at the end of the year without bringing any charges. Indeed, by 1986 there was a State Attorney General's Report about the significant problems with child sexual abuse investigations in nearby Kern County. Charges against five of the seven defendants in the McMartin case were dropped that year as well. The case dragged along for so many years that Dr. Heger, who evaluated many of the children in early 1984, eventually testified about how medical knowledge had evolved since then. Acknowledging that information about non-abused children had made the medical evaluation of children more conservative, she also verified how some evidence was still considered significant.

The witch-hunt narrative that grew out of the McMartin case tells a different story. Labeling the entire case a "hoax," it dismisses all of the medical evidence out of hand. Relying on the mistakes of interviewers who entered the case in November 1983, it dismisses children who made statements two months before that. The witch-hunt narrative goes much farther, extending the claims about McMartin to cases across the country, arguing there was a national epidemic of cases "just like McMartin." Despite the prominent academics and journalists who have rebroadcast it, the evidence for the claim is remarkably thin. Although the notion of there being hundreds or thousands of such cases is widely accepted, the number of specific cases offered as evidence is nowhere near that number. A few dozen cases, at most, have been offered as proof of this national witch-hunt. However, as detailed in Chapter Three, the evidence pertaining to those specific cases that would support the claims of a witch-hunt ranges from limited to nonexistent.

These cases were some of the most complicated and lengthy criminal proceedings in American history. There are more than a hundred thousand pages of transcripts in the McMartin case alone. Several of the other most commonly mentioned cases have transcripts in the range of fifty thousand pages. Beyond court transcripts, there are a host of peripheral documents, ranging from police reports and medical reports to information from civil cases that shed light on how these cases began, how they were investigated, and how they evolved. None of these cases can be encapsulated fairly with a simple story.

But the witch-hunt narrative, which has been accepted as the best explanation of these cases, does precisely that—it tells a simple story. It claims these cases share essential similarities that make them functionally alike. The rhetoric to that effect is as simple as it is unequivocal: cases across the country were "clones," "cookie-cutter copies," and "just like McMartin." The foundation for these claims has never been subject to careful scrutiny. By her own account, which became clear only in recent years, Debbie Nathan argued that the Michaels case was a cookie-cutter copy of the McMartin case *before* she ever researched the Michaels case.[1] Other magazine writers published strikingly similar claims, providing a set of definitive statements about lengthy and complicated cases without even reviewing the court transcript. In some instances, it was not even available when the writer claimed to have conducted research and established that the case was all a witch-hunt.

It is a testament to the power of the witch-hunt narrative that these accounts have been accepted so readily. It might also be a function of the fact that doing this kind of research is difficult. This book represents the first effort to comprehensively research the cases that serve as the foundation of the witch-hunt narrative. It is the culmination of fifteen years of locating, accessing, and analyzing transcripts and related documents in the cases that form the basis for the narrative. The challenges in this kind of research are enormous. With an army of research assistants and a substantial budget for photocopying and travel, it still was not possible to cover a few dozen cases completely. But none of these challenges or limitations is mentioned in the works that are the foundation of the witch-hunt narrative. Indeed, none of the magazine articles about the case were based on a comprehensive examination of trial transcripts. Yet these accounts have been accepted, repeated, and enshrined in the academic literature of fields ranging from sociology and law to psychology and English, where they are written about in the extreme language of the witch-hunt narrative.

The result is a deeply flawed account of these cases and of the time period. The witch-hunt narrative offers a simple and satisfying explanation, one that has deep roots in the American experience. But it does not do justice to the facts of these cases, including McMartin. The cases examined in Chapter Three are among those offered as the best evidence of the witch-hunt narrative. These are the cases that should serve as the empirical foundations for the claims the narrative advances. That is, they should *all* provide strong support for the narrative, especially since the claims of hundreds of cases rest on lists that together cite not more than several dozen. Yet, almost none of the cases on those lists support the narrative's claims. As demonstrated in Chapter Three, even the cases with the worst problems also involved evidence of abuse. And the lesser-known cases, which have received almost no attention in the witch-hunt canon, involved surprisingly little evidence for the claim that they were "hoaxes" or lacked a basis in fact.

The witch-hunt narrative was first written by journalists, and then adopted by academics. It was never based on comprehensive research of multiple cases. From the vantage point provided by fifteen years of in-depth, original research, I would say the narrative certainly appears to have begun with a conclusion and then sought information to support it, using documents and claims provided by defense lawyers as primary sources, and even as coauthors and "fact checkers." It is, in short, the defense view of history. In this way, the witch-hunt narrative is guilty of the same shortcomings it criticizes. While claiming that prosecutors and interviewers consistently minimize or deny evidence that does not support their position, the proponents of the witch-hunt narrative have done the same thing in the direction of the defense. Instead of disregarding evidence that might point away from guilt, they disregard evidence pointing toward it. Instead of automatically believing any statement from a child, they seem to automatically believe the denial of any adult. Instead of assuming all the medical evidence presented by the prosecution must be true, they take the position that it should all be rejected.

The structure of the witch-hunt narrative makes for powerful reading, but it creates a distorted picture of these cases and of the time period in which they existed. The McMartin case is told in an exaggerated form that ignores all the evidence of guilt. But the Papoose Palace case from Reno, Nevada—which proves that sexual abuse can occur in a day-care center on a wide scale, for years, without detection—is forgotten. The Jordan, Minnesota, cases are similarly described in a manner that ignores evidence of guilt. But the Minneapolis Children's Theatre case, which demonstrates how adults turn a blind eye to abuse, is forgotten. The wild claims made by some parents in West Point are recounted in detail, while the fact that a girl had a puncture wound to her vagina that almost certainly occurred at the day-care center is forgotten, along with the fact that nobody was ever apprehended. Claims about child pornography that were made in some cases but never proven are well preserved in the witch-hunt narrative, but the realities of Jack Shaver's case—multiple complaints that were ignored, lenient penalties on more than occasion, and child pornography that involved day care—are lost to history.

The witch-hunt narrative is not just an inaccurate view of the cases it describes; it is an inaccurate view of the time period in which they occurred and the social forces at play. These inaccuracies matter for reasons far beyond the historical record. These cases have had a major influence on the field of psychology and on the perception of children as witnesses. Those issues are best illustrated through the Kelly Michaels case, the subject of the next chapter. The implications of what happened in that case are the subject of the remaining chapters in the book.

PART II

THE TRIUMPH OF THE WITCH-HUNT NARRATIVE

5

The Turning Point

State v. Michaels

The Kelly Michaels case became a turning point in the public discourse about child sexual abuse in America. Unlike many other cases from the 1980s, which ended in hung juries or acquittals, the Michaels case, which emerged in 1985, ended in a resounding guilty verdict in 1988. It appeared to be a textbook conviction in the kind of day-care sexual abuse cases that had made headlines but posed great difficulties for prosecutors. Learning from some of the mistakes in other cases, the prosecutors in the Kelly Michaels case successfully discredited Ralph Underwager, then one of the leading defense psychologists on child suggestibility, and won a sweeping jury verdict.

But everything changed on appeal. In a dramatic decision in 1993, the New Jersey Appellate Division overturned the conviction and endorsed the concept of pre-trial "taint hearings" to ascertain whether children had been so "tainted" by the interview process that they should not be allowed to testify at trial. The New Jersey Supreme Court upheld the decision, and charges against Kelly Michaels were eventually dropped. The view that the case was all a witch-hunt has since become the conventional wisdom.

This chapter argues that the conventional wisdom is wrong. On the basis of a comprehensive examination of the record, it is apparent that the witch-hunt narrative omits key facts and distorts others—all in favor of the theory that the case can be explained entirely by "child suggestibility." The actual evidence in the case has been overshadowed by academic research purporting to demonstrate that children were highly suggestible under conditions much less intensive than what happened in the Kelly Michaels case. But the critical claim that compares the approach in their experiments to what was actually done in the case is not borne out by the record of the case.

The Case and the Conviction

Margaret Kelly Michaels, who was known as Kelly, moved to New Jersey in the summer of 1984 when she was twenty-two years old and a few credits short of graduating from college. In September she took a job as a teacher's assistant at the Wee Care Day Nursery in Maplewood, a prosperous suburb of New York City. The day-care center was operated out of St. George's Episcopal Church, a sprawling three-story building that rented rooms on two floors to the day-care center. Soon after starting at Wee Care, Kelly Michaels became a classroom teacher; she replaced a teacher who left unexpectedly. Michaels had her own classroom and a naptime group with some of the same children, and she took care of children in the late afternoon when the center was nearly deserted. Two events in late April 1985 are critical to the case that soon developed: Kelly Michaels left Wee Care abruptly, and shortly thereafter a four-year-old boy blurted out something disconcerting while having his temperature taken anally at his pediatrician's office. A basic timeline of the case appears in Figure 5.1.

Key Events in Late April 1985

Kelly Michaels left her job hastily at the end of April, about six weeks before the school year was over. The hastiness is reflected in the fact that she gave two weeks' notice and then departed *before* what she said would be her final day. By her description at the time, the departure was for "personal" reasons. That is the word she used in a letter to the school's director on April 15. Two days later, in a letter to parents, Michaels said she "had been experiencing serious personal difficulties which have now made it imperative for me to leave Wee Care as soon as possible."[1] Michaels did not explain what she was "experiencing" at the time that made it so "imperative" to leave Wee Care immediately. She would later claim her decision to leave Wee Care was a simple matter of leaving one job in favor of a better one. But according to Stephanie Lorman of the Community Day Care Center in East Orange, the "better" job that Kelly Michaels accepted was temporary; it would last only through September 1985, and it paid essentially the same as the job at Wee Care.[2]

Michaels never explained convincingly why a temporary job, at essentially the same pay, was so much better than her current job that it would prompt her sudden departure weeks before the end of the school year. Of course, she did not owe anyone an explanation, but the prosecution would later argue that one reason made particular sense: Michaels had been playing sexualized games with the children, she could see that various children were acting out, and she was fleeing the scene. There was strange additional evidence that also fit this theory better than any other explanations that have since been offered: Michaels told a

Figure 5.1 Kelly Michaels Case Timeline, Initial Complaint to Conviction.

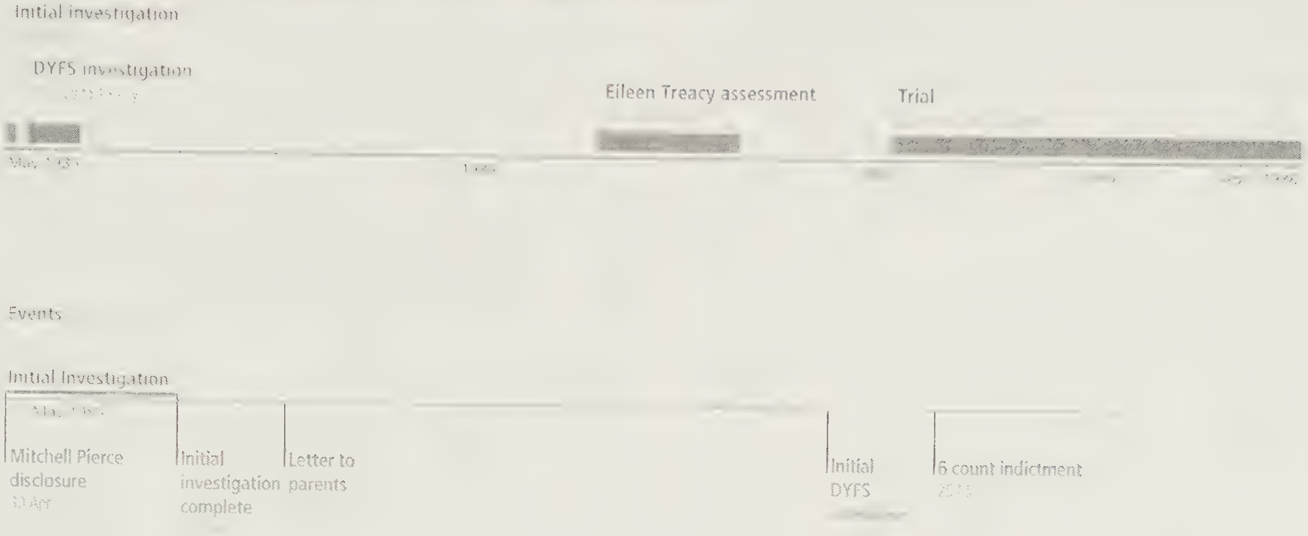

mother on April 19 that she was leaving early because she was "bleeding from the rectum, a lot."[3] Whatever the reason for her departure, the investigation in the case was triggered days later when a four-year-old boy made a spontaneous statement at his pediatrician's office. On April 30, 1985, Dorinda Pierce took her son Mitchell[4] to the pediatrician because he had a rash. While the medical assistant was taking his temperature rectally, Mitchell said "this is what my teacher does to me at school." Laura Hadley, the medical assistant, testified that the thermometer was in his rectum for "about a half a minute" before the child made this statement.[5] Asked specifically about where her hands were, Hadley indicated she was "holding the thermometer" with one hand and "watching my watch" with the other hand.[6] (This testimony would later be overlooked completely by the witch-hunt narrative.) Hadley then asked the boy, Which teacher? He said, "Kelly." Hadley mouthed to Pierce, who was also in the room, "Who is Kelly?" Dorinda indicated she did not know any "Kelly." As it turns out, Kelly Michaels was Mitchell's "naptime" teacher, but she was not his classroom teacher, so the name did not sound familiar to his mother. Seeking to clarify, the medical assistant asked *what* Kelly did. The boy responded: "Her takes my temperature every day at school." There was little doubt to the nurse or the mother that the child was indicating he was anally penetrated by someone named Kelly.

Mrs. Pierce later testified that after lunch the same day, when she asked her son what happened at naptime, he "leaned against the refrigerator, put one leg up and started rubbing his genitals." He then stated "she used the white jean stuff," adding "you have to be real careful not to get it on your pants."[7] His mother was not sure what "white jean stuff" meant, but the overall meaning of his words was clear. She called her pediatrician back to ask for advice. He told her to call the New Jersey Department of Youth and Family Services (DYFS) and report that her son had possibly been sexually abused at Wee Care. Those events all occurred within three hours of the office visit. What unfolded after the phone call spanned nine years. First there was an investigation, and then there was a lengthy pre-trial period, followed by a nine-month trial. Five years later, there were two high-profile appeals.

The Initial Phase of the Investigation

The first phase of the investigation began when Richard Mastrangelo, an investigator for the Essex County Prosecutor's Office, was notified about the matter by Lou Fonolleras from the DYFS Institutional Abuse Unit. Fonolleras had first spoken to Dorinda Pierce, whose call was on the advice of her pediatrician. Cases in the Sexual Abuse Unit of the Essex County Prosecutor's Office were assigned chronological numbers beginning with the new year. The call about

Mitchell Pierce's statement was given the internal case number 402. Though it was the 402nd case of the year, it was the only one to eventually become a national news story.

Sara Sencer-McArdle, the assistant prosecutor assigned to the case, had handled hundreds of child sexual abuse cases by the time this one arrived.[8] But she had never had an "institutional abuse" case. So this was the first time she faced questions about how to coordinate an investigation with another agency. DYFS had jurisdiction to investigate claims of child maltreatment at nursery schools because they licensed such facilities. The agency could revoke a license, it could assess fines, and it could mandate changes such as removing an employee or changing procedures. This mission, though, differs considerably from that of the criminal justice system. The purpose of a DYFS investigation is to identify and rectify problems, not to assess innocence or guilt for purposes of punishment. The burden of proof before taking an official action is "a preponderance of the evidence," an evidentiary standard much less demanding than the "beyond a reasonable doubt" standard in criminal proceedings.

The Essex County Prosecutor's Office was not inclined to work with DYFS. Their inclination was to complete their own investigation without any outside interference. As Lisa Manshel reported, in one of the two books written about the case, Sencer-McArdle asked Fonolleras to hold off on his investigation.[9] He agreed at first, but the agreement lasted only three weeks. During this time, the prosecutor's office conducted its own investigation and presented the evidence for an indictment based on the testimony of three children.

The criminal case began to take shape on Thursday, May 2, when Mitchell Pierce was interviewed by detective George McGrath and assistant prosecutor Sencer-McArdle. Mitchell indicated that his teacher at school took his temperature rectally. He demonstrated with a doll and stated, as he had with his mother, that Kelly used "gasoline." The prosecutor asked if his temperature was taken in his mouth. "No. You can't put gasoline in your mouth," he replied. "Her takes it in my bum," he explained.[10] The prosecutor would later confirm that temperatures were *not* taken rectally at Wee Care, but instead with a plastic strip on the forehead. If Mitchell's naptime teacher was inserting something into his rectum, it was not an approved action. Mitchell also named two other boys as being "hurt" by Michaels: Eddie Nathanson and Sam Raymond. The investigation had its first two leads. These disclosures became the core of the original charges against Kelly Michaels.

One of these leads produced nothing at the time; the other provided the basis for additional charges. Eddie Nathanson was the second child interviewed, and he did not disclose anything. Sam Raymond was interviewed by Mastrangelo, of the Essex County Prosecutor's Office, on May 3. Sam's mother, Jackie, later testified that she learned there were sexual abuse allegations at Wee Care on April 30 when Arlene Spector, director of the preschool, informed her husband in person.[11] The next day, Jackie Raymond asked her son "if he had any problem with anybody in school." As she later summarized his response: "He told me that one of the teachers at school had touched him on the behind and in his penis and kicked him a couple of times." When asked to describe this exchange in more detail, she added:

> He told me in spurts of the moment, like different intervals. He ran behind the couch, hid, he started crying and then finally he just sat there when I walked behind the couch and he told me that he was hurt by a teacher at school.[12]

The five-year-old boy made similar statements at the prosecutor's office: "Kelly kicked me," he said, and she touched "on my private area." How often did this occur? "Once," he responded. He also said Kelly had once locked him in a closet. These statements would be the basis for one count of second-degree sexual assault (touching his penis) and one count of child endangerment (locking him in the closet).

An additional boy—not one of the two mentioned by Mitchell—also emerged in the first days of the investigation. At this point, there had not been any kind of announcement or press coverage concerning allegations of sexual abuse at Wee Care. The other parents of children at Wee Care who knew about the allegations in the first few days in May 1985, beyond the parents of the boys already interviewed, were those on the board of directors of the nursery school. The board oversaw Wee Care facilities in Maplewood and South Orange, New Jersey, and several board members had children at the Wee Care facility in Maplewood. One was Debbie Cook, whose five-year-old son Cody was also in Michaels's naptime group. On May 2, the Cooks opened a conversation with their son about the teachers at school. Later that evening, Cody's father wrote a three-page single-spaced description of what then happened. The handwritten statement indicates that these parents, like Dorinda Pierce, were not aware that their child even had contact with someone named Kelly at Wee Care.

> I asked who all of the teachers at school were and proceeded to name the ones I knew; Nancy, Arlene, Rosita, Barbara Crystal & Joan. Cody then said I'm forgetting someone and I said who? He said, Kelly. I asked, who's she? He said the Nap Teacher.[13]

As Cody's father described it, his son avoided his gaze and started kicking the table when asked about Kelly. He wrote further:

> I told him whatever he told me was O.K. whether anything happened or not, but I needed to know the truth. He hung his head and said "Oh, you mean about Kelly touched my private parts." I asked, "Did Kelly do that?" He said "yes, and she also told me not to tell my parents & that I had to keep it a secret."[14]

This statement was possibly the most jarring to the boy's father, but something stranger was yet to come. When the boy was asked how Kelly touched his private parts, he provided a most unlikely answer: *with a spoon*. His father's handwritten statement continues:

> I said, "with a spoon?" He said yes. I then asked what do you mean? He got up from his chair, and walked over to the drawers by the sink, got out a spoon, and said like this.[15]

The boy repeated those details the next day and demonstrated on a doll what happened with the spoon, which was essentially that Michaels had lifted his scrotum with the utensil. This was the first child to mention utensils as part of the sexual acts involving Michaels. Although the claim would eventually be made that investigators induced children to make allegations of this sort, there can be no question that the original allegations about utensils came from a child's statement to his parents before he was formally interviewed in the case. Cody Cook's father gave a statement to Detective Mastrangelo at the prosecutor's office that contained the same essential facts. Asked whether he had anything to add, he said:

> Yes, both last night at home, and today with Det. McGrath, Cody said that Kelly had told him to keep it a secret. And when he told me what took place in school last night, he hung his head down and looked pained. Previous to that he had been very nervous and figidy [sic]. In my mind, his body language, at these critical moments, underscore [sic] the truthfulness of his statements.[16]

One more boy was also interviewed in the first week of May. Max Rooney was a good friend of Sam Raymond's, and Max's father was co-president of the board of directors of Wee Care. Max's parents were asked if they would bring their son to the prosecutor's office on Sunday, May 5, when Sam was going to return for a second interview that was to be videotaped.

Unfortunately, there were problems with the videotape equipment. The "recorded" statement of Sam Raymond was determined to be unusable shortly after it was taken. The prosecutor had to conduct the same interview a second time if there was any hope of capturing his statements on tape. (It probably could not be used as evidence, anyway, given the rules against hearsay evidence.) The boy reportedly said much less in the second interview than he did in the first; his affect was apparently much different as well.[17] Things went even worse with Max. The "Patricia Crowley" book about the case, written under that pseudonym by the mother of Martha Landez, includes the following account, which suggests how emotional the topic of sexual abuse was for many parents:

> Next it was Max Rooney's turn. But he appeared terrified, and was reluctant to respond to even the simplest questions about school. So Sara brought Sam Raymond back into the room, hoping that Max would say that nothing bad happened to his friend when he talked about Kelly.
>
> But when Sam Raymond described for Sara how Kelly fondled the boys with spoons, Max Rooney denied it.
>
> Sam Raymond looked puzzled. "Yes, Max, it did so happen," he said.
>
> Max turned his fearful face to his friend and said softly, "Sam, I said no."
>
> At this point, Sara decided to intervene. "Okay, little boys," she said. "Just tell the truth."
>
> Michael Rooney, Max's father, standing out in the hall listening, was outraged. He had had enough. It seemed to him like Sara was bullying his child into talking when the child was obviously petrified. He smashed the baseball bat over the staircase banister, and began to scream obscenities at a startled Sara.[18]

Max Rooney did not play any further role in the case, so there is no testimony or other court documentation that would provide critical purchase in assessing this claim. It is impossible to know for sure whether Max "appeared terrified" or was "obviously petrified." It is also not possible to know why his father reacted so violently to the statement "Just tell the truth." Indeed, this incident and the addendum that Cook offered to his statement about Cody's disclosure demonstrate how significant nonverbal qualities can be in describing and interpreting children's statements. These examples also demonstrate the limits of reviewing such issues entirely on the basis of written transcripts and related documents.

The original Wee Care case, then, was based on three of the five boys interviewed in the first few days of May. See Figure 5.2 for a depiction of the interview sequence for the five boys who were first interviewed in early May. All three of them gave clear statements about sexual abuse at the hands of Kelly Michaels in their first contact with authorities. The first one originated in a spontaneous statement at the pediatrician's office, and the other two each came in response to

Figure 5.2 Kelly Michaels Interview Sequence, Children Interviewed in the Initial Investigative Phase.

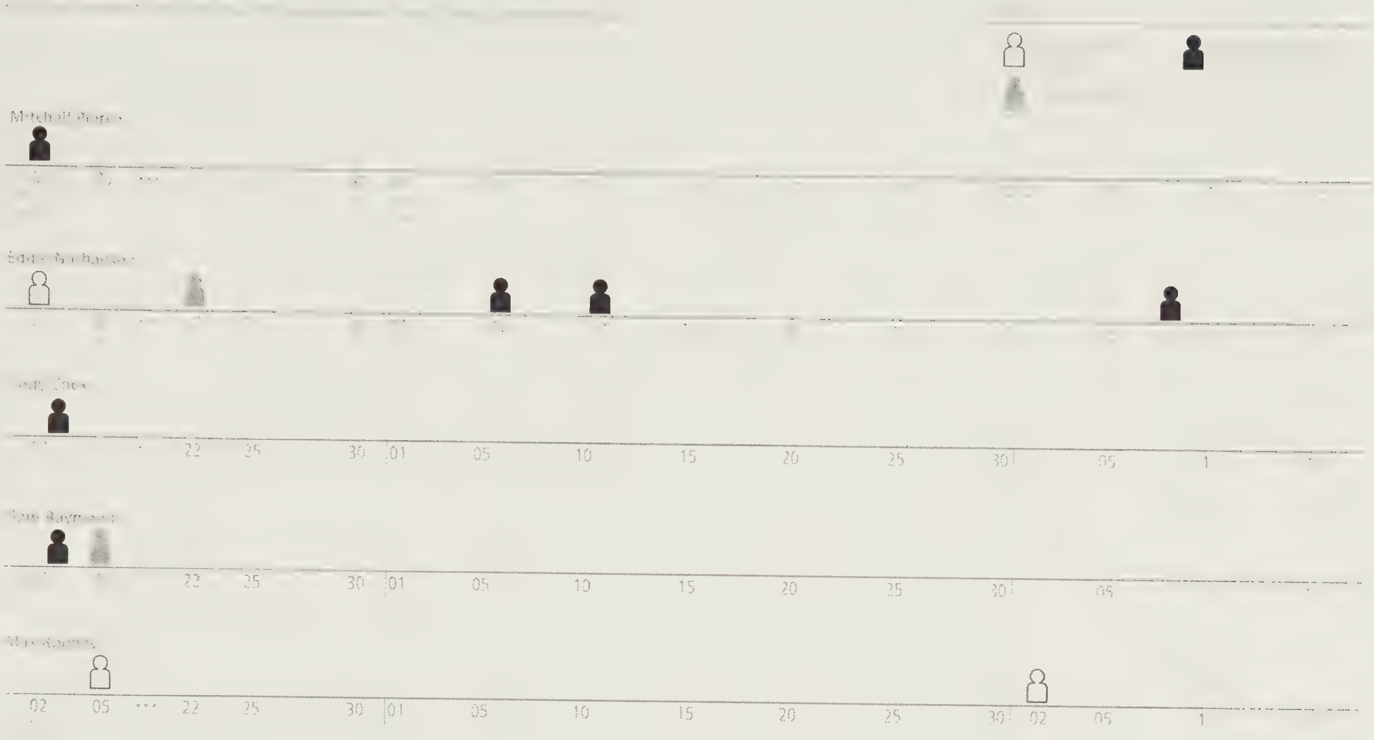

a question from a parent. The statements of these boys would form the basis for a six-count indictment that was handed down by a grand jury on May 24. Unknown at the time, two more grand juries would be convened—one in July, the other in November—and more indictments would follow. Twenty-eight more children would be added to the case through this process. But statements by three boys—obtained long before any publicity about the case, and even before the director of the preschool sent a letter to parents—were the core of the original case against Kelly Michaels.

The Subsequent Investigation

The prosecutor's office did not look beyond the three boys for additional victims, or even seek to reinterview either of the boys who did not make any kind of a disclosure. Investigators interviewed a few more adults in preparing the case for the grand jury, but no more children were interviewed by the Essex County Prosecutor's Office in May. The prosecutors had "stepped back" from further investigation of the case.[19] This was not a formal designation, of course; rather, it was a practical reality in an office overburdened with other cases. Two events caused the matter to reverberate in the community after the five boys were interviewed. The first was a letter about the matter sent on May 8 to all the parents with children at Wee Care in 1984–85. Second, there was a meeting for parents on May 15. The letter to parents indicated that the prosecutor's office was conducting an investigation "regarding serious allegations made by a child against a former employee of the Maplewood Center."[20] It promised communication in the future when more information was available, but the letter otherwise provided no details. It did not name the suspect; nor did it request that parents do anything.

The letter raised concerns among parents, for obvious reasons. On receiving it, many parents phoned each other, comparing notes and seeking information. Although this information was not formally released, there is evidence that many parents were aware that the alleged victims were all boys.[21] This caused some parents of girls at Wee Care to decide it was not necessary to attend the parents' meeting on May 15. Even some parents with boys at Wee Care skipped this meeting, but many of the parents were in attendance.

The board of directors wanted to have a meeting for parents, but they were painfully aware of the tension between investigating a criminal case and providing information to those affected by the investigation. The board president informed the audience on May 15 "that both the Maplewood Police Department and the Essex County Prosecutor's Office had requested that we not have any meeting at all."[22] The main speaker for the meeting was Peg Foster, a social worker whose mission was to address child sexual abuse issues in general without addressing anything about the status of the case. The minutes of this meeting indicate that "as expected, parents raised many questions that Board members could not answer for fear of endangering the investigation."[23]

Foster is reported to have emphasized that parents should not interrogate their children and that "they should be good listeners."[24] She also described various behavioral symptoms that might be of concern, emphasizing that *changes* in behavior are what is relevant. It was not clear to parents whether the allegations were current or not. Kelly Michaels's connection to this letter was not widely known then. The whole thing was played down by Arlene Spector, director of the preschool, who was quoted as saying: "It was very benign stuff. On a scale of one to ten, I'd say it was about a three."[25]

Fonolleras, the DYFS investigator who originally notified the prosecutor's office about the statement by Mitchell Pierce, entered the case on May 22. The prosecutors had asked him to hold back on his investigation. But after three weeks of waiting, he received approval to commence his own investigation from a DYFS supervisor who knew the prosecutors did not have the power to prevent DYFS from doing so. Fonolleras reportedly informed the Essex County Prosecutor's Office, "I'm coming in, whether you like it or not."[26] He drove to the school and started looking around. After examining the premises, he proceeded, with the assistance of Spector, to call Eddie Nathanson's mother for permission to interview the first boy who denied any involvement when interviewed earlier at the prosecutor's office.

According to Fonolleras's description, Eddie "refused to give information" at first. They played, they made drawings, and Eddie eventually "admitted seeing Kelly Michaels massage Sam Raymond and Mitchell Pierce's buttock and backs and that she inserted her index finger into their anus."[27] But he denied any personal victimization. Fonolleras then tried to interview Ralph Gans, a classmate and friend of Eddie's. Ralph was "visibly upset and angry at being questioned" about Michaels, and he ran out of the room when her name was mentioned.[28] On the basis of this one-day visit, Fonolleras submitted a report to his supervisors that described concerns about lack of adequate supervision of children at Wee Care. He made no findings concerning abuse and did not schedule any more interviews. This is important to remember, since Fonolleras is eventually cast as an interviewer with such a strong "confirmation bias" that he found sexual abuse everywhere he looked. That certainly is not what happened on May 22.

Fonolleras returned to Wee Care on June 6, prompted by a telephone call from Eddie Nathanson's mother, indicating that Eddie had made statements at home indicating Kelly Michaels had sucked his penis ("a lot, a lot") and scraped the boys' nipples "with a fork."[29] Critics of the case often mention the fact that Eddie's mother read him a book called *No More Secrets for Me*.[30] They do not tend to mention the reasons that it seemed possible that Eddie might, in fact, be keeping secrets. First, he was one of two children named by the first boy in the case, and the other boy confirmed the abuse when first questioned. Second, Eddie had had an unexplained, chronic rash in his anal area that spring.

Fonolleras described Eddie as "frightened and very shaken" on June 6. With the aid of dolls, however, the boy made numerous statements about sexual abuse. These included several mentions of utensils. Eddie's statements matched what had seemed to be the most unbelievable aspect of Sam Raymond's disclosure to his parents the night of May 2: sexual abuse with a spoon. (There is no evidence that Fonolleras knew the content of Raymond's statement to police.) Eddie also described rubbing a spoon on Michaels's vaginal area. Fonolleras's notes from this interview contain additional statements about abuse with utensils: Eddie indicated that Michaels had put her finger and a "knife handle" in his anus. He also reported that she had said: "Let's play nurse. I'll take your temperature. You feel warm."[31] Additionally, "Eddie told me he was naked in the music room, had been hit with a wooden spoon." Fonolleras asked the boy "to show me where it was."[32] Eddie took him to the church choir room, a third-floor room that was off-limits to the children at Wee Care.

Fonolleras interviewed two other children that day: Ralph Gans, Eddie's friend, and Julia Tilden, the first girl interviewed in the investigation. Ralph had run out of the room when Fonolleras tried to interview him on May 22. On June 6, Ralph stayed in the room and reportedly made numerous statements about sexual abuse by Michaels. These statements were noteworthy for two reasons. First, he also mentioned utensils, particularly knives. Second, he implicated "various girls," according to Fonolleras's notes. One girl, Tilden, was named several times in connection with sexual acts. She was interviewed later that day. Fonolleras's notes from this interview indicate that Julia also stated Kelly Michaels had used a knife and her finger to penetrate girls and boys. She also specified "the music room" and added a detail that became the symbol for those who criticized the case: she said that Michaels had played the piano in the nude, specifically playing the song "Jingle Bells." Perhaps even more striking, for its resonance with prior statements from several other children, is this question and answer from the statement Julia Tilden gave at the prosecutor's office six days later:

> Q: Does Kelly play nurse with you?
>
> A: Takes my temperature, with a spoon, on my front bottom.[33]

But Julia did not end up being in the case, and I have been unable to find anything in the record to explain why.

The next day, Fonolleras interviewed four girls at Wee Care. The first was Nora van Haley, who had been mentioned the day before by one or both of the boys. Nora's mother was telephoned on June 6 to request permission for her daughter to be interviewed at school. Her mother declined, insisting on meeting Fonolleras first. This happened the following morning, and Nora was the first interview of the day.

Eileen Treacy, a psychologist who later evaluated children for the prosecution, summarized the disclosures contained in Fonolleras's notes:

> Knife in vagina; fork handle in [Max Rooney's] butt & other boys; hurt her in piano room; nude pileup w/silverware.[34]

Max Rooney was, by then, the only one of the original five boys who had not disclosed abuse. His original interview was the one cut short when his father lost his temper. What is striking about the content of these early statements is the consistency of the strangest elements in other disclosures: the utensils and sexualized games in the "piano room."

Fonolleras interviewed three other girls that day: Cassie Bond-Foley, Lucy Deacon, and Jessie Shaw. Cassie had been mentioned earlier by Eddie Nathanson. Again, there are statements about utensils in his notes: "she described having a knife put into her" and being "hit on the genitals with a wooden spoon." Perhaps most strikingly, "she also saw [Kelly] nude, sitting and playing Jingle Bells." Once again, a bizarre element that is otherwise almost impossible to believe was mentioned by more than one child. There was not really a formal interview with Lucy Deacon, but an attempted interview: Fonolleras described the girl as "too scared" and ended the effort in less than five minutes. The other girl, Jessie Shaw, apparently made some kind of disclosure; this much is clear from her mother's later testimony.[35]

When the day ended on June 7, the case was destined to expand beyond the original indictments. In two days, Fonolleras had interviewed two boys and five girls. Both boys made statements about sexualized games, including abuse with utensils. The boys named several girls who also participated, and those girls were interviewed within one day. Four of the five girls interviewed then made statements, with overlapping details, that would be the basis for criminal charges. The second grand jury was not convened until July, but these children would account for the first charges presented.

It is clear from the later accounts by Martha Landez's mother that at the time the parents still had no sense that the "former employee" might be implicated in anything involving more than a few boys.[36] A local newspaper reinforced this idea when it reported, in a brief story on June 7, the filing of a six-count indictment against Kelly Michaels for sexually abusing three boys.[37] Children were still attending Wee Care in the first week of June, and the board of directors had just gone through a long argument about whether or not to proceed with an annual fundraising event in June. They decided against it, but the fact there were strong advocates of "business as usual" demonstrates that the charges against Michaels had not become an obsession among Wee Care parents.

The investigation expanded the next week. Fonolleras conducted seven interviews in the two days at the end of the first week in June; there were fourteen interviews conducted between Monday and Thursday of the second week of June. Six of those interviews were with children who had not previously been interviewed. The others were second or third rounds, but this was because the Essex County Prosecutor's Office had come back into the case that week after hearing a report from Fonolleras on June 7. The investigators from the prosecutor's office needed to take their own statements; they could not recommend criminal charges to be based on statements they never heard. Several children, then, repeated to a police investigator what they had already told the DYFS investigator. These second interviews were *not* prompted by the lack of disclosure in the first interview, as the witch-hunt narrative would later claim. To the contrary, they were conducted because there *had* been earlier disclosures.

The fact that some children made statements to police investigators after being interviewed by DYFS illustrates why it is impossible to characterize the "average" interview in the case. The interviews did not all have the same purpose; why children were interviewed varied. Sometimes a second interview followed a first one in which there was a disclosure; at least a few times, the second interview was a subsequent attempt to find out whether a child who did not originally disclose anything untoward nevertheless had relevant information.

Recognizing these differences, we can still find some patterns to the interviews. Dr. Karen Burton, who reviewed transcripts of twenty-six interviews with children for the defense, wrote a memo describing the "basic format characterized by most but not all of the interviews." First the child would be asked to draw his or her family and then be asked to draw Kelly; the interviewer would ascertain what words the child used for various body parts, and the children would be asked general questions (e.g., Did you see Kelly do anything bad?) and then more specific ones (e.g., Did you ever see Kelly doing something funny with peanut butter?).[38]

By the end of the second week in June, the original case had expanded to include two more boys as victims—Eddie Nathanson, Ralph Gans—and the several girls who they mentioned and who made independent statements corroborating details about abuse with utensils and sexualized games in the choir room. Several children (Cody Cook, Lucy Deacon, and Eddie) made incriminating statements to one or both of their parents before being interviewed by authorities. Others made statements to their parents immediately after being interviewed. It was apparent to investigators that the case was larger than a few boys, although no one knew how much larger.

The Investigation Intensifies and Then Deteriorates

The nature and intensity of the investigation eventually changed, shifting from being focused on the evidence obtained in earlier interviews to being essentially universal. Every child who attended Wee Care would be interviewed, whether or not investigators had reason to think the child had been abused. But this was a DYFS goal, not one adopted by the prosecutor's office—a distinction later to be lost in all that was written about the case.

The interviewing increased the next week (see Figure 5.3). There were fourteen interviews the week of June 10 and twenty-three the week of June 17. The intensity of the matter also increased in the community. A board meeting with parents was held on June 10. Two more parents' meetings followed in June—one on Friday the 14th, the other Monday the 17th—both with Dr. Susan Esquilin, a psychologist. On June 21, the *Star Ledger* reported that additional charges would be filed against Michaels.[39]

As the investigation expanded to include all of the children, it reached many who did not allege any kind of abuse. This happened at the same time Fonolleras was becoming convinced that most, if not all, of the children at Wee Care had been sexually abused by Michaels. The belief led to interviews where some children were prompted and pressured inappropriately. A prime example is Fonolleras's interview with Brian Murphy,[40] an almost-five-year-old who attended Wee Care for the final two months of the 1984–85 school year. "Don't be a baby," Fonolleras scolded the boy, who was apparently running around the room during the interview. "Come here. Seriously, we are going to need your help on this," he said. This interview has been cited frequently by critics of the case because early in the interview, when Fonolleras is asking the boy to name various body parts, Brian says, pointedly, "Stop, you're teaching me stuff." Fonolleras's ham-handed reply: "You got to learn somehow."[41]

Lou Fonolleras clearly grew less open to the idea that any children were *not* her victims. He ultimately "substantiated" sexual abuse in connection with fifty-one children. His explanation for reaching this conclusion about children who did not disclose abuse appears, in retrospect, to yield much better evidence of his bias than of Michaels's guilt. For example, after interviewing one boy on June 19, Fonolleras wrote that he "was obviously quite shaken, and this investigator felt strongly that he wanted to relate his knowledge, but was afraid of upsetting his family."[42] In other words, the child did not make any incriminating statements but the investigator "felt strongly" that the child was withholding things. Fonolleras even opined that the boy's parents "refused to accept his possible victimization and projected those feelings onto him."[43]

Figure 5.3 Kelly Michaels Interview Sequence, All Investigative Interviews.

Each icon represents one interview. Some children appear more than once. The vertical stacks of icons indicate the number of interviews in one day. The space between 5 to 22 May is not drawn to scale.

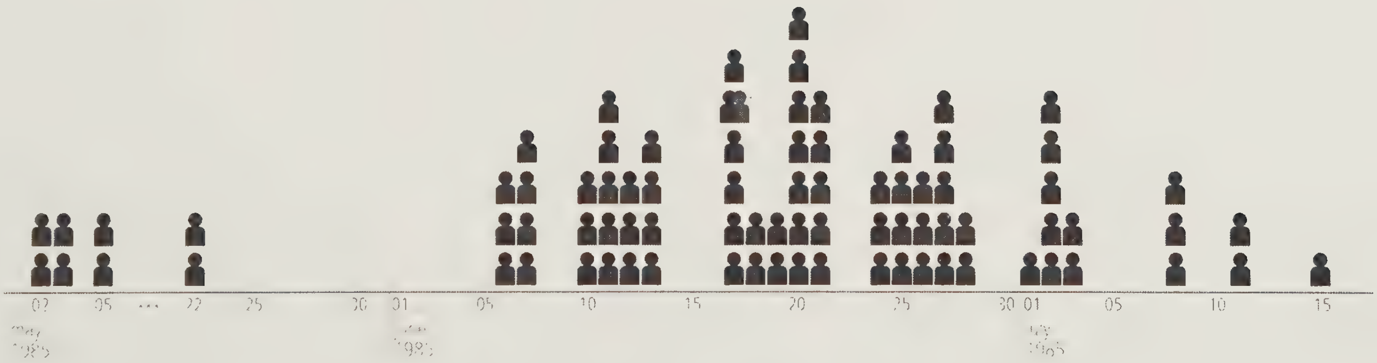

[illegible]

Another troublesome example is the interview with Clare Williams, a girl who Kelly Michaels regularly babysat. She denied any victimization, but Fonolleras wrote in his report:

> There is a slight possibility that Kelly may have respected her relationship with the family . . . but this investigator finds it difficult to believe that she would have had the conscience to exercise discretion.[44]

There were also instances where Fonolleras told a child that Kelly was "bad." A prime example: "Everyone knows you didn't do anything wrong. Kelly did. She took advantage of you kids," Fonolleras told Tracy Hayes. None of these examples is defensible. Indeed, any one of them could be used as an argument to discredit subsequent statements from the child. But in analyzing the actual criminal case, it is vitally important to ask whether these examples involved children whose statements actually formed the basis for charges against Kelly Michaels. The answer is no. *None of the examples cited above involved a child who was actually in the criminal case.* The objectionable content in these interviews might be why they were not included. More likely, it is because these children had no relevant information. This does not excuse the specific tactics with individual children, but neither should it be a reason to abandon the entire case. Rightfully, none of the children mentioned above was taken to the grand jury, and none appeared in any of the indictments—although several would later be included in the witch-hunt narrative about the case. Additionally, these examples all came from the late stage of the investigative interviews: Elliot Sanders was interviewed on June 19, Clare Wolfe on June 20, Tracy Hayes on June 25, and Brian Murphy on June 26.[45] These examples are strong evidence of overzealous interviewing, but this should not be confused with evidence of an all-encompassing problem in a case that originated with three separate disclosures in early May—weeks before Fonolleras interviewed any children.

The "hearsay knowledge" that appears in some of the investigative interviews is also consistent with the idea that the investigation reached a point of worse-than-diminishing returns. "My mommy told me Kelly did bad things," Clare Williams told Fonolleras. Ruby Watson said "My daddy told me Kelly did bad things." Shayla Palimieri indicated that "Tracy Hayes told me that Kelly touched private parts." Those statements, also later cited by case critics, are reason to worry about any subsequent "disclosure" made by these children since it is apparent that the reason they associate Michaels with wrongdoing is that someone told them so. But again, *none* of these children was taken to the grand jury and none of their statements formed the basis for any charges in the case, even though several of these children would later figure prominently in the witch-hunt narrative about the case. Notably, all of the examples of supposed hearsay knowledge that have been identified in the case were from the late stages of the investigative interview sequence.[46] If there was a time, then, when a significant number of parents were anxious to have their children interviewed solely for the fact they attended Wee Care—and not because of statements by other children—it was the third week of June, right after consecutive parents' meetings on June 14 and 17. Between June 18 and June 28 there were thirty-two investigative interviews, which is slightly less than the total number of interviews conducted between May 2 and June 17. Twenty-two of those sessions were with children being seen for the first time. Some of the remaining ten, however, were second interviews with children who did not disclose any sexual abuse the first time. Two of those children, P. J. Isaacs and Brenda Mendes, made statements that caused them to be included in the charges and subsequent trial. The interviews with both those children would become common examples in the witch-hunt narrative and would repeatedly be described, inaccurately, as being typical of the case.

The investigation started wrapping up by the July 4 weekend. Four children who had not been previously interviewed were questioned between July 1 and 3. Six more interviews were conducted after that weekend, all with children who had previously been interviewed. With the exception of one boy, the children interviewed at that point had already made substantive statements concerning Michaels. Several of these interviews were in advance of the grand jury, which began hearing testimony on July 11. Although criticisms would later be made about multiple interviews in the case, those critics would never address how many of the children who were interviewed more than once had disclosed sexual abuse in the first interview. Nor would they confront how many children disclosed abuse early in the investigation. The final investigative interview was July 15. Fifty-one children had been interviewed; from the very first investigative interview with Mitchell Pierce, there had been eighty-three interview sessions in the case.[47]

There would ultimately be three grand juries in the Michaels case: the one that handed down the six-count indictment in May involving the three boys, the one that heard evidence throughout July, and a third that heard evidence in November. The indictments generated through the final two were unsealed in December, adding 229 counts and twenty-eight children to the original case. Twenty children ended up in the eventual trial.

One additional child merits attention, since he was never interviewed by Fonolleras but by some accounts became the most important witness in the case as a result. He was, as Lisa Manshel put it, "a major choke point in the defense's suggestibility theory"; he became "the tactical star witness"[48] but is generally not acknowledged fully in the witch-hunt narrative. David Applegate was mentioned early in May when Rebecca Flora told her mother she had seen David naked at school. Rebecca's mother telephoned David's mother, who she did not otherwise know, to alert her to this statement. Notably, Judy Applegate did not take the comment very seriously. She later testified: "I actually said to her, you know, kids go to the bathroom. I'm not going to get upset over it and she shouldn't either."[49] Accordingly, she did not attend the parents' meeting in mid-May. When another mother called her on June 13, however, she decided to speak directly to her son, who had been home sick with chickenpox since early that month and had not been interviewed by anyone. As explained through her testimony at trial:

> Q: What did you say?
> A: I said David, the other kids are telling their mothers about the bad things that happened at school.
> Q: And what was David's reaction?
> A: David's eyes opened up like saucers and he said they are?[50]

This hearsay testimony was permitted, after an objection by the defense, because it was offered to prove the sequence of events that led to the emergence of David's disclosure, not to prove the underlying claim. After allowing Applegate to consult her diary from the time, this exchange occurred:

> Q: Did you ask him at that time what Kelly did to him?
> A: Yeah.
> Q: What did he tell you?
> A: That she put things in his tushie and this was the very first thing he told me that day, and then the next few days were primarily identifying the objects, the forks, the spoons and knives, Legos. . . .[51]

This child was never interviewed by Fonolleras or anyone else at DYFS. His parents, both lawyers, worried about overinterviewing. When the family later filed a civil claim, the insurance company settled quickly, and reportedly for the largest amount of money that any family received. This may help explain why this boy's circumstances have never been fully described by proponents of the child-suggestibility defense. The basis for the defense simply does not apply to him. Nor does it explain why, on June 8 or 9, her son "would not let [his mother] near him with a thermometer."[52]

Ceci and Bruck's amicus brief, filed years later, dismisses this child without ever acknowledging, let alone responding to, any of these facts. Instead, his initial disclosure to his mother is presented, without any supporting evidence, as an example of "peer pressure." According to Ceci and Bruck:

> this child finally disclosed to his mother after she had told him that others had mentioned him as a participant. The above evidence suggests that this strategy may co-opt children into making false reports.[53]

But that misstates the evidence about David's disclosures. According to the evidence at trial, Applegate did *not* tell David that others had mentioned him *as a participant*. And she certainly did not describe the actions David later elaborated. Moreover, it is clear that Applegate's initial inclinations were all against believing allegations of sexual abuse.[54] There is no reason to believe that merely telling her son that other boys had told their mothers "about the bad things that happened" would *create* an allegation of sexual abuse, particularly with these kinds of specific allegations, which turned out to be entirely consistent with statements already made to authorities by other children.[55]

Eileen Treacy Evaluates the Children

Almost a year after the charges were finalized, the prosecutor's office hired Eileen Treacy, a doctoral candidate in psychology, to evaluate the children who were included in the charges. Treacy evaluated these children between November 1986 and February 1987. These interviews were *not* part of the investigation; the charges had been finalized in December 1985. Treacy assessed, first, whether it would be too traumatic for each child to testify; she also assessed whether the child's behavior was consistent with sexual abuse, and she evaluated the extent to which the child was susceptible to suggestion. She interviewed sixteen of the twenty children who went to trial. Her suggestibility analysis would later be ignored completely by critics of the case, who would focus entirely on her analysis of each child's behavior. She interviewed children from one to three times and submitted detailed reports to the state about the developmental capacity of every child.

Treacy followed a model widely used in sexual abuse cases in New York Family Court, referred to as "validation."[56] The label is unfortunate because it conjures up a rubber stamp, not a thorough and logical process. In fact, the validation process involves, among other things, a comprehensive analysis of "confounding" variables—that is, other possible stressors and causes apart from sexual abuse that might explain any observed behavioral changes. Treacy testified at length about the process, which is still widely accepted and employed in New York courts. There are four components.[57] First, the evaluator considers the child's statements to her, along with demeanor or affect. Second, the evaluator looks for signs of four of the five phases of child-abuse accommodation syndrome.[58] Third, the evaluator asks parents for information about *changes* in behavior; children must have demonstrated changes in behavior in at least five areas to be considered significant in this area. (The idea behind the checklist is consistent with something the defense psychologists in the case agreed on: sexual abuse is likely to result in changes in children's behavior.) Finally, the evaluator conducts a "confounding variable" analysis. The logic of this inquiry is also supported by a defense psychologist in the Kelly Michaels case who, in his own survey of nursery school behavior, found it necessary to ask whether the children had experienced other life traumas that might account for various behaviors.[59] If all four inquiries point in the same direction, the validation process results in a finding that the child's behavior is *consistent* with sexual abuse, but not dispositive. Treacy did not "vouch" for children; instead, she concluded that the behavior of fourteen children who ended up in the trial was "consistent with sexual abuse." Those children displayed enough behavioral changes that could not be explained away by other factors. Her conclusion was equivocal on one child and negative on another; that is, she could not rule out other possible causes of the child's behavior.[60] Four of the children who were in the trial were never evaluated by Treacy.

One aspect of this analysis that would be overlooked entirely later by critics of the case is that Treacy specifically considered whether suggestibility might account for each child's statements and behavior. Passages from her report about David Applegate, the child who was never interviewed by DYFS, demonstrate the point:

> In another attempt to test his suggestibility, I asked him about what happened to him in the bathroom (as he had not disclosed anything about the bathroom). David did not accept the suggestion. He clearly denied that anything happened to him in the bathroom.
>
> When I told him that Kelly was saying that the children were making a mistake and all of this did not happen, David said that she was not telling the truth.[61]

Treacy's reports on other children contain similar accounts of asking purposely leading questions containing incorrect information. In the reports located in the course of this research, there were no examples in which a child accepted the suggestion and parroted back the misinformation supplied by Treacy. Yet this is precisely the mechanism that, according to the witch-hunt narrative that later developed around the case, explains every single allegation in the case. The narrative has never explained how children could be so susceptible to suggestion when being interviewed by investigators yet never succumb to suggestion while being interviewed by Treacy.

The Charges and the Trial

Lou Fonolleras ultimately "substantiated" sexual abuse by Kelly Michaels against fifty-one children at Wee Care. He characterized the evidence as "overwhelmingly evident" in his final report. He also noted that "approximately another ten children and their parents have been interviewed and deemed not to have been involved."[62] But the DYFS findings were independent of the criminal investigation. "Substantiating" claims at DYFS did not trigger any additional proceedings.[63] The Essex County Prosecutor's Office would decide how many of those children should be included in a criminal complaint. Given the much higher standard of proof in criminal cases, prosecutors are not supposed to bring charges unless they believe a reasonable jury could find the defendant guilty "beyond a reasonable doubt."[64] It is not clear how many of the fifty-one made credible statements in the first place. My own assessment is that a handful definitely did, and possibly as many as two dozen more, but not many more than that. Certainly not all fifty-one, as Fonolleras concluded; but also not zero, as the defense urged.

The Actual Charges

Translating children's statements into specific criminal charges is particularly difficult in cases involving young children. The Michaels case unfolded during a time when prosecutors around the country were addressing those issues for the first time. Given the developmental capabilities of small children, it was clear that applying the same rules used for adult witnesses would not be appropriate. Children simply are not capable of specifying dates, for example, in the same fashion as adults. A recent appellate decision on the issue in New Jersey mirrored the rules developing in other states: courts would not require the same degree of specificity in naming the dates of alleged offenses when children were involved.[65]

Deciding what charges to bring and how many counts of each charge was far more complicated than specifying a range of dates for the alleged offenses. There were two relevant charges in the New Jersey criminal code concerning child sexual abuse: first- and second-degree sexual assault. The difference was that first-degree charges involved penetration, second-degree charges, sexual touching. The criminal code also contained a third-degree charge called child endangerment. Almost all of the charges ultimately brought in the case were under one of the three statutes.

The widespread allegations about sexual touching with utensils posed an unusual challenge. Was it necessary to specify whether the charge involved a fork or a spoon? There was a danger that charges written too broadly might be thrown out on appeal for being too vague. But narrowly drawn charges also posed dangers. If a child's original statement involved a spoon, but the child testified at trial that the abuse involved a fork, would this be considered such a different act that it should have been charged separately? The prosecutors decided it did. As Lisa Manshel explained:

> The appellate section of the Prosecutor's Office instructed Sara [Sencer-McArdle] to charge the first-degree crimes by the instrument. Instead of charging one count of vaginal penetration and one count of anal penetration for each girl, Sara was to charge up to three separate counts for vaginal penetration (fork, knife, and spoon) and up to three separate counts for anal penetration (fork, knife, and spoon). If she charged the penetrations by orifice alone, the variety of instruments that might be mentioned in testimony could confuse the jury or cause appellate problems down the road.[66]

This legal consideration multiplied the total number of charges. The large number of charges in the case has been cited to suggest that the state alleged that the abuse was, improbably, a daily occurrence. In fact, the legal demands involved in charging the case caused a multiplicity of charges for single events.[67] Ultimately, some children were connected with only a few charges, and others were named in a dozen or more. The most common charges involved sexual abuse with plastic utensils (spoons, knives, forks). A handful of the child endangerment counts contained grotesque charges involving urine or feces, and a few—the ones that received the most publicity, particularly after the conviction—involved the claim that Michaels had played the piano in the nude.

In short, the large number of counts in the case did not translate into as many corresponding sexual abuse events because the state charged alternative counts to minimize potential "appellate problems" concerning lack of specificity. Had the state actually claimed there was daily abuse of twenty children over 150 days, there could have been more than ten thousand counts in the indictment. Instead, at its height, before various children dropped out of the case, there were 235 counts. This was an average of seven or eight counts per child, which actually meant no more than *a few claimed incidents for each child*. The 165 counts that made it to trial clearly did not translate into "daily" or even "frequent" incidents.[68] Basically, the state charged that Michaels abused children occasionally during naptime and in after-school settings. It was, they claimed, "opportunistic" abuse.[69]

Children Dropped from the Case

Eleven of the thirty-one children named in the charges were dropped from the case before trial (see Figure 5.4). Those children accounted for sixty-seven counts. Ten of the eleven children were initially named in the second or third indictment. One child, Cody Cook, was from the first indictment. Cody's father got a promotion and the family moved away.[70] The paucity of available records about these children renders it impossible to ascertain the specific reasons each one was dropped from the case. In a few cases, the reason is documented. Two children were dropped from the case because Treacy, the psychologist who evaluated the child witnesses for the state, deemed them too emotionally distraught.

There were also other reasons children were dropped from the case. One involved the use of hearsay evidence—charges based entirely on statements that a child made to an adult, not to an investigator—for which they were ultimately dropped from the case. The law requires direct testimony from the victim. There are hearsay exceptions that allow spontaneous utterances during medical examinations to be used as evidence, but generally adults are not permitted to testify about allegations made to them by a child. That appears to explain why John Allister was dropped from the case. He denied any victimization in two interviews with Fonolleras, but in an interview on July 6 his mother provided a detailed statement about disclosures she said John had made at home.[71] When Fonolleras tried to interview John again in July, the boy was beyond resistant; he unleashed a series of obscenities and acted wildly until the interview was terminated. Five counts against Michaels were included in the second indictment on the basis of what John's mother told the grand jury. Presumably it was determined that the New Jersey case law would not sustain charges based on that evidence alone, so those counts were eventually dropped.

The parent who wrote a book about the case mentioned two other reasons children were dropped: "because the youngsters were simply too immature" and in some cases "the children themselves refused to testify."[72] The former reason apparently explains why Dana Drew was dropped from the case. She was not able to provide any kind of narrative account to the grand jury; her testimony consisted entirely of single-word answers and shakes or nods of the head.[73] In short, there are a number of reasons for these children being dropped from the case. Some of them might have strengthened the state's case; others undoubtedly would not have.

The State's Case

The case against Kelly Michaels went to trial with 165 criminal counts involving twenty children. The prosecutors were not sure, however, how many of those

Figure 5.4 Kelly Michaels, All Children, All Charges by Legal Status (Carried Forward versus Dropped before Trial).

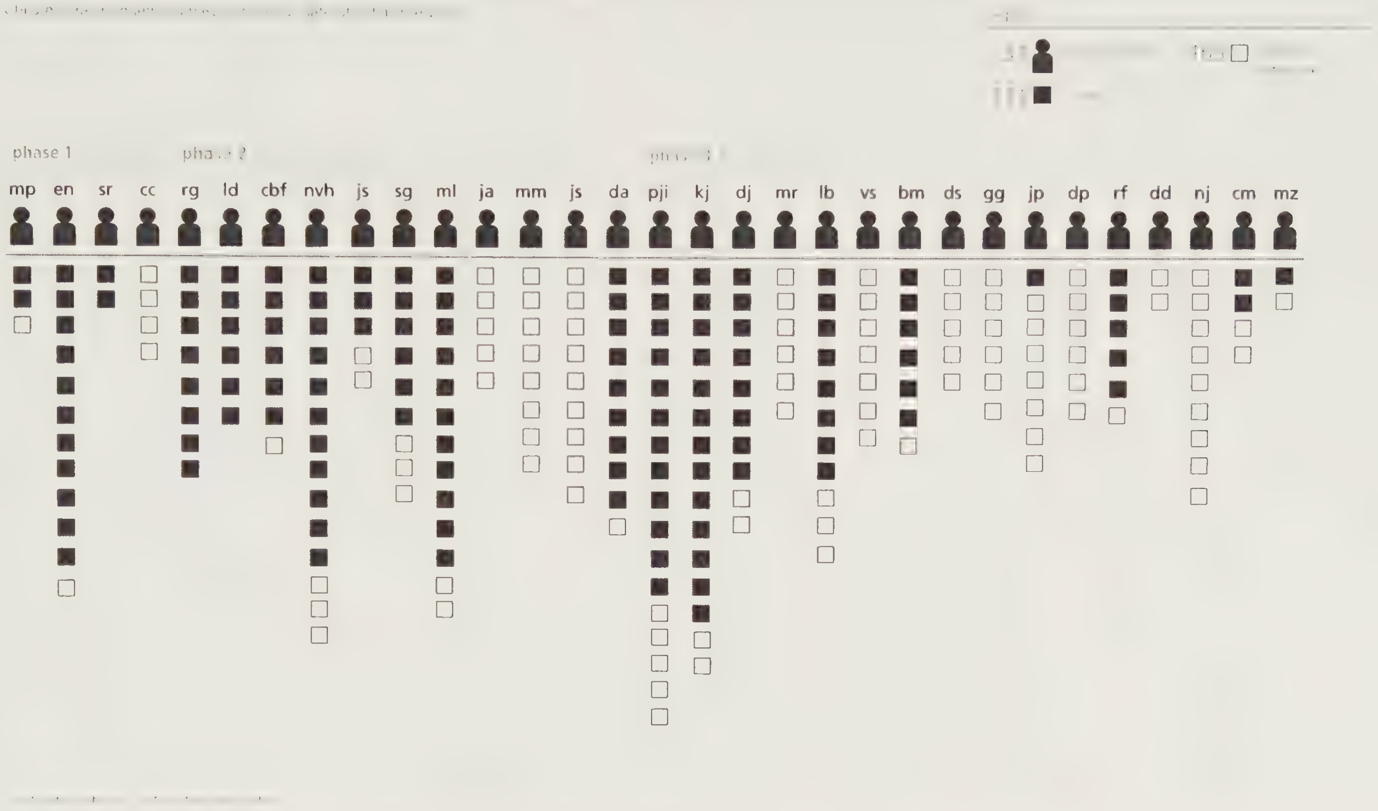

children would actually testify. Some parents were concerned about how testifying at trial might affect their children, and some of the children had expressed ambivalence. Most had been seeing mental health professionals, who agreed that testifying in open court might be particularly difficult for some children. The case became a battleground over the recent New Jersey statute that provided for the possibility of children testifying by closed-circuit television. The trial judge decided the issue in favor of the prosecution, allowing the children to testify this way at trial. The issue would be raised again on appeal. Meanwhile, nineteen of the twenty children testified in the judge's chambers through closed-circuit television. The other child, Martin Zeitz, did not actually testify. Charges pertaining to him went forward on the basis of other testimony that apparently averted the prohibitions against hearsay evidence.

Because of the number of complainants, the state's case was massive in size. There were ultimately 105 witnesses for the prosecution, 254 exhibits, and twenty weeks of testimony. The core of the case was the testimony of nineteen children, along with their parents. Five therapists, all with a doctorate in psychology, also testified, plus Eileen Treacy, a master's-level psychologist who would finish her doctorate while the case was on appeal. The only potential witnesses of importance who did *not* testify were Peg Foster, the social worker who spoke at the first parents' meeting, and Detective Mastrangelo. Although this leaves the historical record less complete, those individuals were not necessary for introducing the children's statements. Lou Fonolleras testified, of course, as did Detective McGrath.

The gist of the state's case, as told through the children's testimony, was that Michaels played various sexualized games with children. Most of those activities were described as happening either at naptime or in the choir room, presumably in the late afternoon. Many children testified that plastic utensils were employed during these games. The jury not only heard from the children but also heard testimony from parents about statements children made at home. Even the claims that seemed most incredible were generally voiced by more than one child. This did not necessarily mean they were true, of course; the defense would argue that any concordance was evidence of "taint" or "cross-contamination." Beyond this core of narrative evidence, the prosecution presented three kinds of additional evidence: (1) extreme behavioral evidence, (2) medical evidence, and (3) evidence concerning Michaels's "motive."

Extreme Behavioral Evidence

Most of the children at trial exhibited extreme behavior during the 1984–85 school year. Mitchell Pierce's grandfather testified that the boy's behavior changed so dramatically in early winter 1985 he "wondered if Mitchell had sustained some mental damage that we did not know about when we saw this stark change."[74] Similarly, David Applegate's parents witnessed something far beyond a nightmare: night terrors with uncontrollable shaking upon waking. Greg Guild became so aggressive in the winter of 1985 that the boy's bus driver told his mother "she had never seen a child behave like this, and she didn't know what happened to him."[75] His mother took him to a doctor. Debra Schultz's father recounted for the grand jury how his daughter refused to allow her parents to take her temperature with a rectal thermometer in either March or April 1985, even though they had always used this kind.[76] The family later dropped out of the case, so no additional information is available in the record.

Overall, parents of thirteen children at trial reported either "that their children were afraid of nap time at school or complained nearly every day about taking a nap at school."[77] The issue became so apparent that one teacher jokingly called it the "nap rebellion." Children who usually wanted to take their nap rebelled. Nobody identified it as a problem with Michaels herself, but there is no question that the unusual behaviors surrounding the naps she supervised were noted at the time. Even more significant, the naptime rebellion ended after she left Wee Care. A woman who worked there in January 1985 and then again in May 1985 testified that the difference was significant.[78]

Several children also acted frantically or in a highly sexualized manner during the investigative interviews. The most extreme behavior was exhibited by Jacob Peyton, who was almost four and hypersexually out of control. He groped two interviewers and his mother in a sexualized manner. Jacob was interviewed on June 20 by Detective Mastrangelo and social worker Foster. It was one of the longest of the transcribed interviews, with the child distracted and uncooperative. The most noteworthy event took place when the boy was left alone with Anne Felsten, a psychology graduate student. The tape recorder malfunctioned, but she was able to record her recollections of the incident shortly thereafter. "I was still shaking," she later testified. The full single-spaced page of her dictation reads, in part:

> At first he just played a little bit, he was making a drawing but then he moved over to me and he placed his hand inside my blouse and touched my breasts. At that time I asked him who he touched liked that and he said "You." And I said, "All right, did you touch anyone else like that?" And he said, "You know." And I said, "Can you tell me." And he said, "You know who." So I said, "Can I guess." And he said, "Yes." So we went through some names, "Susan." "Linda," and the answers to those names was "No." When I said, "Kelly," he said, "Yes."[79]

The boy's sexualized behavior extended beyond fondling Felsten. He repeatedly demanded, "Take off your clothes"; she reported, "His aggressiveness about wanting me to take my clothes off became greater and greater."[80] She introduced an anatomically detailed doll (the use of which is the subject of considerable disagreement). As two academic psychologists who later became critical of the case argued:

> Children insert fingers or objects into the doll's openings for the same reason they would insert a finger into the hole of a doughnut; it is there, it is something to manipulate.[81]

Their caution about interpreting such actions is well taken, but exaggerated. In the study they cite, only 18 percent of nonabused children did this.[82] The argument does not appear to explain a child who "practically ripped the clothes off" the doll and proceeded to spread the doll's legs and lick the vaginal area, which is what Jacob Peyton did. Or the child who grabbed Fonolleras's genitals. These incidents are remarkable not only for the highly sexualized behavior and subsequent disclosure. The Felsten incident is also notable because she did precisely what critics of the case later claimed never happened in the case: she asked the child about other adults. The boy singled out Kelly Michaels in that conversation. Two days after the Felsten incident, the same boy tried to insert an emery board dipped in Vaseline into his mother's vagina.[83] Several days later, at a follow-up interview, he grabbed Fonollares's genitals while showing him how Old McDonald was played by the defendant at Wee Care.[84]

This was not the only child to act in an extreme fashion during one of the interviews. Ralph Gans "ran out of the room" every time Michaels's name was mentioned on May 22. Knowing this, of course, places the fact that he was interviewed twice in a different perspective. The first interview ended abruptly; it was nothing like the "exhaustive questioning" critics would later claim all children endured before making any kind of incriminatory statement. Another boy, Justin Lang, "became frantic when Kelly's name was mentioned" in a brief interview on July 1. He returned the next day. According to the DYFS report, "when Kelly's name was mentioned, he began turning over furniture and screaming. The interview was terminated immediately."[85] He was never part of the criminal charges. Similarly, John Allister's interview is filled with extreme language and behavior. "You son of a bitch," this preschooler yelled repeatedly. He later screamed, "You fuck head." "Why are you trying to hit me?" the interviewer later asked.[86] There was no disclosure in this interview, and this child was not part of the eventual trial.

Other dramatic examples of hypersexualized behavior include Rebecca Flora's in therapy. Dr. Jeryl Rempell, a psychologist, testified that at her first session she "was bouncing all over the place" and kept putting her hands on him "as if she was fondling me." This had "a different quality to it" from a hug, he noted. In fact, in his extended experience with hundreds of children, this was the first time a child had done such a thing in therapy.[87] The parents of two other children at trial (Lucy Deacon and Brenda Mendes) testified their children tried to French-kiss family members. Lucy also attempted to lick between her mother's legs. Rebecca Flora's parents testified that she frequently tried to grab them in a sexual manner. Finally, P. J. Isaacs's mother testified that her son once asked her, "Would you like me to put this [baster toy] in your tushie so you can feel healthy too?"[88]

Of course, these behaviors are not conclusive proof of abuse. But neither should they be denied or written off as everyday behavior. Indeed, the peer-reviewed literature on this subject supports the conclusion that the kinds of behavior observed in the Michaels case were truly extreme. A survey of the frequency of sexual behaviors in 251 preschool children concluded that the most extreme found in the Michaels case were "very uncommon." Attempts to touch adults' genitals—something several children did during the interview process, and others did to their parents—were observed in fewer than 1 percent of the children.[89] None of the many child-suggestibility studies later cited by critics of the case ever mention children sexually assaulting the researchers or repeatedly kicking and hitting them, so presumably these behaviors are so rare in nonabused children that researchers virtually never see them. Knowing that this cohort of children was characterized by a significant amount of such extreme behavior does not prove the underlying charges. But it certainly makes them more plausible.

Medical Evidence

Many of the children in the case registered complaints about genital soreness in the months before Michaels left the day-care center. Eddie Nathanson, one of the original five boys interviewed in the case, had two documented pediatric visits for postural dermatitis (an itchy anus) in the winter of 1985.[90] Mitchell Pierce also complained of a "sore rectum" that winter. His mother testified about how her son "used to ask if he needed his temperature taken."[91] David Applegate's mother testified that his "anus was always sore" in the winter of 1985.[92] Sam Raymond also complained about a "sore bottom" for about six weeks in March and April of 1985. The problem was gone in May.[93]

There was also medical evidence involving three other girls who testified against Michaels. Dr. Anna Haroutunian, director of the Child Abuse Program for Children's Hospital of New Jersey, examined two girls in the case. She found the evidence on Rebecca Flora to be most compelling. The doctor testified that the child's hymenal orifice was "well over a centimeter in diameter," or "clearly wider than a child of this age would have." She concluded there were "abnormal genital physical findings, most likely secondary to child sexual abuse" and that there was no apparent physical reason for her enuresis and encotrosis.[94] The defense's own medical expert, Dr. Winston S. Price, did not deny there were significant findings indicating trauma and healing. All he could say for the defense was, "It's very difficult to make a definitive statement about when those particular abnormal findings occurred."[95] Rebecca Flora also had a series of documented visits to the pediatrician precisely during the final two months before Michaels's abrupt departure in late April. As Dr. Price acknowledged, her doctor recorded visits for "red, inflamed vulva" on March 16 and "red vaginal area" on March 30. He ordered urine culture tests on April 3 and again on follow-up.[96] The problem went away in late April.

Dr. Haroutunian testified cautiously that the findings on Cassie Bond-Foley could be "a slight developmental variation" or might "represent an area of healed trauma." Moreover, she testified:

> To me, it would raise a question of abuse even if I didn't know any history. If I saw this child on a routine exam and saw this finding I would have to raise the possibility of sexual abuse happening.[97]

Two other girls at trial had notable medical histories. Martha Landez had documented vaginal and rectal pain in the winter. Her doctor later reported she had no hymen. The other girl, Brenda Mendes, experienced "vaginal bleeding and soreness" between February and April 1985. At least two of the children who were named in the original indictments, but later dropped from the case, also had medical evidence that is worth mentioning. Debra Schultz had such "a sore tushie" in the winter that her father took her to the emergency room.[98] Another boy, Greg Guild, complained to his mother during the winter that his rectum was sore. His mother testified he asked her "to put something on it, put medication on it, which he never requested before, and he also told me his penis hurt." There are no additional details about this boy because he later dropped out of the case. Inquiring whether it was clear these signs caused concern well before the Michaels case became news, a grand juror asked his mother whether she took him to the doctor at the time. The mother replied, "Yes."[99]

Kelly Michaels's Motive

The children's statements, bolstered by adult testimony and medical evidence, would never be able to answer a critical question about Kelly Michaels herself. Perhaps the most pressing question for many observers of the case was, Why? Why would she do it? Of course, the crime of child sexual abuse is never easy to explain. It is undoubtedly harder in the case of female offenders, who make up a statistically small percentage of sex offenders against children. Those who later rallied around her often noted how "all-American" Michaels looked.[100] The prosecution undoubtedly understood they needed to provide some kind of insight into the psychological explanation for the charges. As it turned out, a psychiatric evaluation by the defense helped with some insight.

The first psychological evaluation of Michaels, conducted by a defense-paid psychiatrist, provided considerable reason for concluding that Michaels might have had a mental state conducive to playing sexualized games with children. The evaluation by Dr. Murray Bartky, conducted on December 14, 1985, and January 3, 1986, found "areas of pathology, particularly in the sexual area." Dr. Bartky described Michaels's psychosexual development as "stunted and conflicted" and called her "sexually confused." Perhaps most telling were statements Michaels made about the charges. As quoted in Dr. Bartky's report, she said:

> It was a small school. All of the children knew about their body. They had a normal and natural curiosity. These parents, they were working and don't know what is normal and natural.[101]

It is not clear what Michaels was trying to convey in these statements about "natural curiosity" and what the children "knew about their body." Moreover, what could she possibly have meant about "these parents" not knowing "what is normal and natural"? Dr. Bartky concluded: "She does not seem rational in these statements."

The testimony of Charlene Munn, a woman Michaels befriended in jail, supplied further evidence that Michaels had a belief system that could allow her to sexually abuse a child. Munn testified that Michaels told her "I didn't mean to harm those children."[102] Unlike jailhouse-informant evidence, which can often be dismissed as self-serving, this testimony could not be dismissed on that ground. Munn had already been sentenced when she testified, and she had already pleaded guilty when first interviewed by investigators. Her ten-year minimum sentence bears out her not making any deals in exchange for her testimony.[103] The defense tried arguing that Michaels did not associate with other prisoners. In fact, she did correspond with Munn after she was released on bail. She also bought cigarettes for her in prison.[104]

The jury did not hear additional evidence concerning disturbing sexual behavior in Michaels's family. The state offered evidence about her being groped by her father during an early jail visit. The incident was documented at the time, and the prosecution found out about it only because a correctional officer in a barber shop was overheard talking about it.[105] The evidence was offered in a hearing outside the presence of the jury. The judge deemed it too prejudicial to present to the jury, but he made it clear, in ruling to keep the evidence out, that:

> the out of the ordinary came about because of an anonymous tip to the State about matters which I've not allowed us to go into for the protection of your client. . . . But the reason it came about was because of conduct between your client and her father.[106]

But the jury did hear the unusual response Michaels gave Dr. Stanley Brodsky, when asked if she had been sexually abused as a child; she said she had "no recollection."[107] The state also presented considerable evidence that Michaels's behavior at Wee Care was strange, to say the least. One teacher vividly remembered her saying "for all they know, I could be abusing children." Michaels agreed on the stand that she made this statement but said the comment was taken "out of context."[108] Another teacher remembered her unprompted announcement one day that she was not wearing any underwear. A teacher's aide, only fifteen years old at the time, remembered Michaels trying to get her to talk about what she did sexually with her boyfriend. Michaels also wrote a "poem" in her preschool roll book that contained arguably lurid lines.[109] Her evasive answers about this "poem" strain credulity; she claimed she could not remember writing the words, even though she agreed that they were in her handwriting.[110]

When the prosecution rested its case, Judge William Harth dismissed thirty-eight counts. Some of those charges, according to Lisa Manshel, "had been substantiated only by what children said on the audiotapes, and Harth would not allow such hearsay material to be considered as proving the truth of a charge."[111] The judge also dismissed some of the "terrorist threat" charges because the children testified Michaels had threatened their parents, while the actual legal charge alleged she had directed threats at the children. There remained 131 counts, spread across the children and not resulting in any child being eliminated from the case (see Figure 5.5). One child stands out, however, at this stage: Jacob Peyton. Seven of his eight counts were dismissed, leaving a single count of third-degree child endangerment; no other child had so many counts dismissed.[112] His testimony did not back up his interview statements, and his interview statements came from a second interview where the interviewer was exasperated and the boy was acting in a difficult manner. Maybe some of his behavior was actually posttraumatic stress disorder, or maybe he was simply a hyperactive and difficult child. Whatever the explanation, he was unusual among the children in the trial for being considered least credible to the court. In the witch-hunt narrative that later developed, however, he is one of the children most frequently quoted from the case. But there are never accompanying contextual details; to the contrary, Jacob is presented in a way that suggests he is representative of the children in the case.

Figure 5.5 Kelly Michaels, All Children at Trial, by Status of Charges (Presented to Jury versus Dropped).

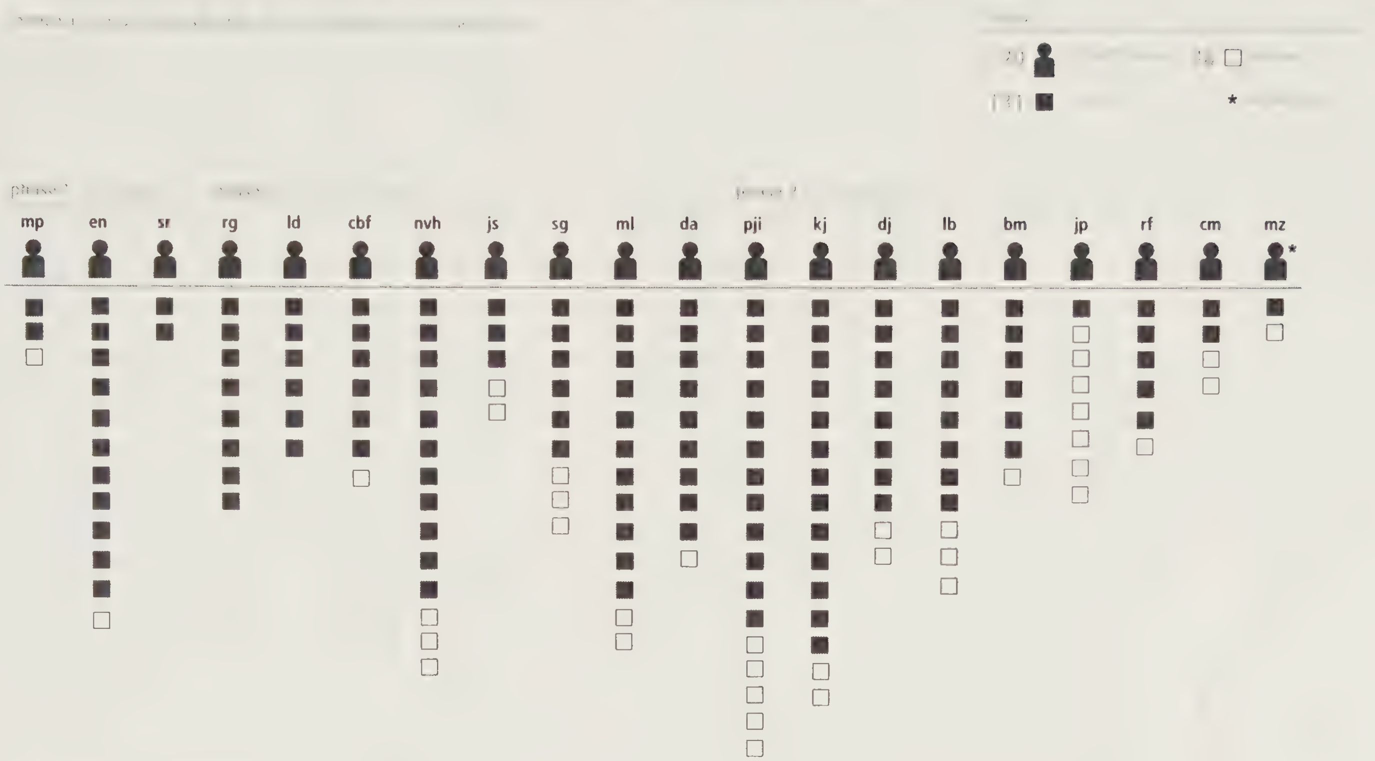

Kelly Michaels's Defense

There was serious disagreement within the defense team about whether to rely on a "diminished capacity" defense, or even to plead insanity. The lawyer who favored the insanity defense left the team in early June 1986, citing "differences in defense strategy."[113] The strategy they chose instead was to call the case a witch-hunt and blame the parents and investigators for the substance of the children's statements. "Throughout this country we have a witch-hunt type mentality," defense lawyer Harvey Meltzer told the jury in his opening statement.[114] He harped on selected instances of clear prodding by investigators and then argued that *all* of the children made their statements in order to please adults. Placing the blame squarely on the adults, Meltzer referred to the children's statements as "learned responses to specific questions." He reminded the jury that "children are very, very suggestible."[115]

The defense offered alternative arguments: first, the sexual abuse did not occur, and second, even if it did occur, Michaels did not perpetrate the acts. The bulk of the defense, however, denied the abuse entirely. One strand of the argument involved "opportunity," another "plausibility." The opportunity argument was that it would have been impossible for these acts to have occurred without detection. The plausibility argument was based on the lack of medical injuries, specifically given the allegations about abuse with utensils. But the crux of the defense was expert testimony impugning the children's statements.

Dr. Ralph Underwager

The defense relied on three experts. The first was Dr. Ralph Underwager, a psychologist who attacked the investigative interviews in the case as highly suggestive, even coercive. It was a defense that was being honed in the McMartin case in California and had already been successfully employed in the lead case (*State v. Bentz*) in the so-called sex ring case in Jordan, Minnesota. Underwager, who lived in Northfield, Minnesota, was the defense expert in the nearby case. He quickly developed a specialty in testifying for the defense in child sexual abuse cases, and he apparently came to see the growth of his business not as a measure of the rise in awareness and prosecution of child sexual abuse but as evidence of a national witch-hunt. He also became controversial for his willingness to use extreme rhetoric. He told a national television audience, for example, that the interviews with children he had reviewed in the Jordan cases "mirrored those of Red Chinese brainwashing."[116] In October 1993, when the Kelly Michaels case was between the Appellate Division and the New Jersey Supreme Court, Underwager became a magnet for intense criticism when an interview given in 1991 was published in the winter 1993 issue of a Dutch magazine called *Paidika: The Journal of Paedophilia*. In it, Underwager was quoted as saying:

> Paedophiles spend a lot of time and energy defending their choice. I don't think that a paedophile needs to do that. Paedophiles can boldly and courageously affirm what they choose. They can say that what they want is to find the best way to love. I am also a theologian and as a theologian I believe it is God's will that there be closeness and intimacy, unity of the flesh, between people.[117]

Underwager had not made these views widely known in the mid-1980s when he was one of the experts of choice for child sexual abuse defendants around the country. Nevertheless, there was a wealth of information in the late 1980s that cast doubt on his expertise. The Essex County Prosecutor's Office put an extraordinary amount of effort into preparing to cross-examine him.[118] The cross-examination of Ralph Underwager lasted eight excruciating days. Glenn Goldberg extracted a series of embarrassing admissions from Underwager. No, he had never published any studies on child suggestibility. No, he had not reviewed significant materials about the children or the parents in the case. No, he had never visited the Wee Care facility in the process of concocting a "time and motion" study that purported to prove Michaels could not have abused the children. No, he had not counted the number of times children provided answers about sexual abuse in response to open-ended questions. From these and other responses, one of the prosecutors would later refer to Underwager as a "witch doctor" in his closing argument. The appellate court ruled that this reference was not unfairly prejudicial; rather, it had a basis in Underwager's own testimony.[119]

Dr. Jonas Rappeport

The second expert witness for the defense was Dr. Jonas Rappeport, a forensic psychiatrist from Baltimore. Dr. Rappeport had a national reputation for his work as medical director of the American Academy of Psychiatry and the Law, a group that certified specialists in forensic psychiatry. He was hired to provide a "profile" of child molesters—one that, he would presumably argue, did not fit Kelly Michaels. Claiming that women do not fit the profile, his testimony would apparently provide a defense for any woman charged with a sex crime against children. Judge Harth was not persuaded; there simply was not sufficient foundation for "proposed testimony on the profile of an abuser."[120] The testimony was not allowed.

Dr. Rappeport testified anyway. Without the profile argument, he made many of the same claims that Underwager did. It was Rappeport's view that the children in the case had "been so traumatized since this whole thing started, anything they say now is invalid."[121] His evaluation of Michaels was also included in the three-part appendix to a defense brief on appeal. This document contains an extraordinary example of unfounded speculation about what happened when

Mitchell Pierce was at the pediatrician on April 30, 1985. In the "Discussion" section of his report, Rappeport stated:

> My impression of what could have and probably did happen in this situation is as follows: I believe that when [Mitchell Pierce] was having his temperature taken rectally at his pediatricians', the nurse placed her hand upon his back (the usual practice when taking the rectal temperature of a restless child) he stated "that's what my teacher does to me at naptime at school." The child certainly may have believed that lying on your tummy with someone's hand on your back was "taking your temperature."[122]

For all the common sense that may appear to bolster his "impression," Rappeport's speculation is contradicted completely by testimony that was available for him to review. The statement taken on May 8, 1985, from the medical assistant Laura Hadley, made it clear she did *not* have a hand on the boy's back when he uttered this statement. She later testified that her routine involved one hand on the thermometer while she monitored the watch in her other hand.[123] Rappeport's willingness to reconstruct events in the light most favorable to Michaels, notwithstanding direct evidence to the contrary, calls into question the rest of his expert opinions in the case.

Dr. Elissa Benedek

The third expert witness for the defense, Dr. Elissa Benedek, was a board-certified psychiatrist in adult, child, and forensic psychiatry. She had impressive credentials. She was an officer in the American Psychiatric Association and had consulted in five other day-care abuse cases and testified in a sixth. Benedek was hired to assess the demeanor and affect of the children in the case. At least, that was the basic substance of her testimony. She did not actually evaluate the children in person; rather, she evaluated their testimony in the case. She described David Applegate's testimony in court, which she reviewed on videotape, by saying it "showed very little affect."[124] She also described his testimony as "carefully rehearsed," although, as one of the prosecutors quickly objected, she had no factual basis for the conclusion.

The impact of her conclusions was diminished significantly by her limited review of the case. While she reviewed grand jury testimony and "portions" of other testimony in the case, she reviewed the videotaped testimony of only *two* children in the case (David Applegate and P. J. Isaacs.). Her knowledge of the case was surprisingly limited, but her opinions were surprisingly broad—and inaccurate. At one point, she asserted that "Parents were sent a letter and told their kids had been abused." But the letter of May 8 did not tell parents their children had been abused; it said there had been unspecified allegations involving "a former employee." Judge Harth directly asked the witness whether she had read the letter. She replied she had not; she was apparently referring to some kind of article—that is, a secondary source—about day-care abuse cases. Perhaps she was thinking about the McMartin case; but even that letter did not tell parents their children had been abused.

Kelly Michaels

To court observers, the highlight of the case was when Michaels took the stand in her own defense. She offered repeated and emphatic denials of all the charges. She also denied ever discussing her case with inmates or guards at the Essex County Jail, although she acknowledged writing a letter to Charlene Munn, who earlier testified that Michaels told her "she didn't mean to hurt the kids the way she did."[125] The cross-examination was marked by several strange exchanges. Michaels testified in a deposition in August 1987 that she had seen a doctor after her conversation with Marilyn Schuster about bleeding from her rectum. But she was unable to name the doctor. Six months later, at trial, she still did not know the name. "What have you done to locate the doctor?" asked Glenn Goldberg, who wanted to subpoena any such evidence. "I didn't make any effort to find this doctor for you," she replied.[126] Asked why she had not informed her family doctor of the problem that had apparently caused bleeding, Michaels replied "it wouldn't be something that I would go to visit him for." Otherwise, the cross-examination was limited by the extent to which Michaels did not remember things. She "didn't specifically recall" if she had rubbed children's backs. She also had "no recollection" of what was written in her roll book. "It's my writing definitely," she allowed, "but I had no memory of if I copied it from something else, if it was mine." Asked whether she had children make believe they were dogs and cats, Michaels responded "I don't recall."[127] Her emphatic denials about having ever sexually abused the children may have been undercut by her extensive lapses of memory. The witch-hunt narrative overlooks these issues and argues, instead, that Michaels is credible because she "passed" a lie detector test.[128] In fact, the results of the lie detector test were determined to be "inconclusive."[129]

The Verdict and Sentence

The jury was asked to decide on 131 charges. They deliberated for thirteen days and appear to have gone through the evidence methodically. The defense actually objected to their method; an Associated Press story reported that the defense "objected yesterday to allowing the jury to alternate between deliberations and reviewing videotaped testimony of the children."[130] The story also reported that jurors had already reviewed "tapes of children interviewed by investigators from the prosecutor's office in 1985." Those include important interviews early in the sequence of events.

The verdict was an overwhelming victory for the prosecution. Its details bear examination. The jury clearly treated the children as individuals (see Figure 5.6). They also made their own judgments about the credibility of individual charges. Although it has scarcely been reported, the jury rejected what were arguably some of the most "fantastic"—or, at least, difficult to believe—charges in the case. Had the case been built entirely on such charges, it is safe to say Michaels would not have been convicted. Indeed, eleven of the seventeen not-guilty verdicts involved those kinds of charges.[131] By contrast, only two of the forty-eight counts of first-degree sexual assault resulted in a not-guilty verdict. The jury also paid close attention to the legal distinctions between first- and second-degree sexual assault, convicting Michaels of the less-included second-degree charge in nineteen counts in which she was charged with first-degree. Those variations account for about one-quarter of the charges. The jury found Michaels guilty as charged for the remaining 96 of the 131 counts.

Perhaps the most telling aspect of the jury verdict is how it varied by child. The jury clearly made decisions by child and by charge. As indicated in Figure 5.6, the jury found Michaels guilty as charged on all of the charges connected with seven children. (Two of those seven children had only one count each and were largely peripheral to the case.) There were five children, then, who accounted for multiple charges and for whom the jury convicted on every count as charged. Those children were apparently considered highly credible by the jury. That assessment also applies to several other children in the case. For example, the jury found Michaels guilty as charged on eight of nine counts involving David Applegate, with a guilty verdict on a lesser-included sexual assault charge for the other count. Similarly, the jury found Michaels guilty as charged on ten of eleven counts involving Eddie Nathanson.

Contrast those outcomes to the verdicts related to three girls, who were believable enough for the jury to agree on convictions but mostly for lesser charges than requested by the prosecution. In the case of Martha Landez, eight charges of first-degree sexual assault went to the jury. They found Michaels *not* guilty on one charge and guilty of the lesser-included offense on the other seven. This does not mean the jury found Martha unbelievable. If that were the case, they would have found Michaels not guilty on more than one count. Either Martha did not say enough to support first-degree charges, or perhaps she said enough but this still left too much room for reasonable doubt among jurors. The verdicts involving Johnny Shaw were similarly mixed. The jury found Michaels not guilty of a single count of third-degree child endangerment; they also found her not guilty on the two first-degree charges, but guilty of the lesser-included offense

Figure 5.6 Kelly Michaels, Trial Dispositions by Charge, by Child.

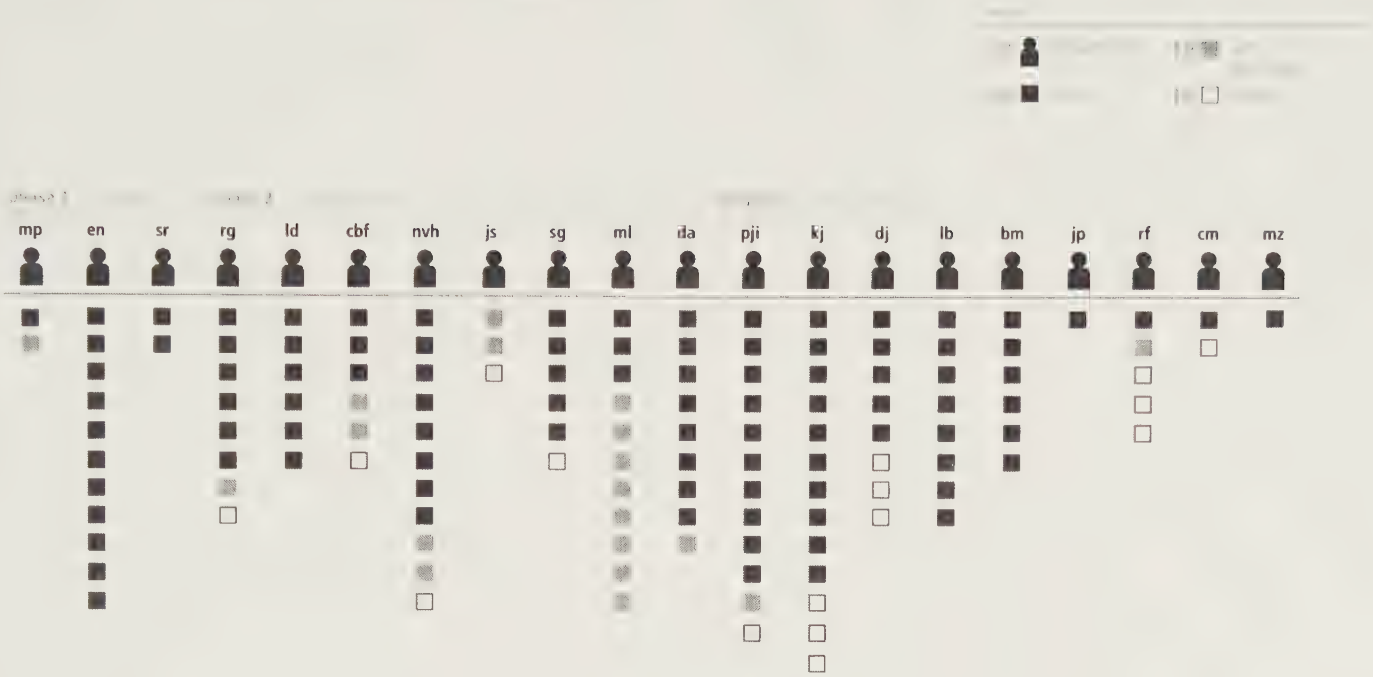

and of a separate count of the second degree. Similarly, with Cassie Bond-Foley, there were three counts involving first- or second-degree sexual assault that went to the jury. The jury did not convict as charged on any of those counts; rather, they found Michaels *not* guilty on one count and guilty of the lesser-included offense on the other two.

Three children stand out as the only ones with multiple charges that resulted in not-guilty verdicts. For the charges involving Rebecca Flora, the jury found Michaels not guilty of three of five charges (two third-degree charges and one second-degree). They also found Michaels not guilty of a first-degree charge but guilty of the lesser included offense of second-degree sexual assault. The only count on which the jury returned a verdict of guilty as charged was a single count of third-degree child endangerment. Similarly, the jury convicted Michaels of four of the seven counts involving Dennis Jones. They found her not guilty on three charges of a grotesque nature: second-degree sexual assault (licking rectum), third-degree child endangerment (choking), and third-degree child endangerment (drinking urine). But the jury convicted Michaels as charged on one count of first-degree sexual assault and three counts of third-degree child endangerment. Similarly, the jury rejected three grotesque charges involving Dennis's sister, Kimmy, but convicted as charged on seven counts of first-degree sexual assault.

All told, Michaels was convicted of 115 charges. She was sentenced to forty-seven years in prison and would be eligible for parole in fourteen years. By all appearances, it was a successful prosecution of a difficult case.

The Witch-Hunt Narrative and the Appeal

Rewriting the Story of the Case

The first writer to apply the witch-hunt narrative to the Kelly Michaels case was Debbie Nathan, who did so immediately after Michaels was convicted. Writing in the *Village Voice*, where she had recently applied the same framework to a day-care abuse case in El Paso, Texas, Nathan came to the defense of Michaels in the summer of 1988.[132] The local reporters who sat through the trial came to think there was substantial evidence of guilt in the case; none editorialized against the prosecution or the verdict. Nathan characterized them as gullible. Her article about the Michaels case, written without access to the complete trial transcripts, was based largely on an interview with Michaels and on materials about the children's interviews that she obtained from the defense. Nathan argued that the Michaels case was "a cookie-cutter copy" of the one she had written about in Texas. Investigators used a "preconceived approach," she argued, that assumed the children had been abused.[133]

She also had biting criticisms of Eileen Treacy, the psychologist who assessed the children and testified for the state about children's developmental capabilities. Nathan claimed that Treacy had "exaggerated information about credentials" and that a judge in another case had criticized her questions as improperly leading.[134] The heart of Nathan's argument was that the investigative interviews were all leading and suggestive, eliciting responses that the questioners essentially provided to the children. She described the content of the interviews as:

> filled with confused children who have little to say despite being told things like Kelly is bad, Kelly hurts kids, Kelly is in jail, and the police need help trying to make sure she stays there.[135]

The article included an excerpt from an investigative interview in which a young girl, Debra Schultz, said "I think I really forgot" the accusations she had apparently made days earlier. "Why do you believe me to know things?" she asked the interviewer at one point. Nathan argued that "other children were told that after they said how Kelly hurt them, they could have toy police badges."[136] She also reported uncovering something about Lou Fonolleras that was apparently not known by his own supervisor: he had been sexually abused as a child and, remarkably, had brought up his personal experience in at least one of the interview sessions. He told Natalie Jenkins "a little secret," all about something that happened to him as a child.[137] There is no question this was inappropriate, even in an era without clear protocols for interviewing children. But Nathan did not mention that neither Schultz nor Jenkins was actually involved in the trial. This was typical of the problems with the witch-hunt narrative that built up around the case.

On its face, Nathan's article made a strong case that Michaels was the victim. Surprisingly, Nathan's article is not the one best remembered, or even most influential, in creating the witch-hunt narrative that eventually became the conventional wisdom about this case. Dorothy Rabinowitz claims this distinction for an article in *Harper's* almost two years later called "From the Mouths of Babes to a Jail Cell."[138] The article marked a watershed moment in the media. It also helped mobilize a group of New York intellectuals and civil libertarians, including the family that owned the *Village Voice*, to promote the Kelly Michaels Defense Committee.[139] This committee resulted in Morton Stavis, a famed civil liberties lawyer, taking over the appeal initiated by the Public Defender's Office.

The Rabinowitz article appeared in the wake of the denouement of the McMartin case in January 1990—an event that dramatically altered how the media viewed child sexual abuse cases. There were many articles in the wake of the McMartin verdicts that promoted the witch-hunt narrative to explain the McMartin case, and Rabinowitz's article did likewise to the Michaels case. Although

Nathan had already raised doubts about the case, Rabinowitz argued forcefully that Michaels was factually innocent. She eventually won a Pulitzer Prize for a body of work at the *Wall Street Journal* that included similar commentaries on behalf of defendants in other high-profile child sexual-abuse cases. This article was the foundational piece in that oeuvre, and it gained immediate attention.[140]

Both of these influential articles mischaracterized how the case began. Rabinowitz wrote that it began with a "bizarre misunderstanding" about what Mitchell Pierce said while the medical assistant at his pediatrician's office took his temperature rectally.[141] Rabinowitz apparently adopted Jonas Rappeport's speculation that Mitchell was referring to having his back rubbed. (The claim was flatly contradicted by the testimony of the two adults who were in the room when Mitchell's temperature was taken.[142]) She then discredited all of the later charges in the case with the stunning claim that "the jury eventually rejected the charge" that began the whole case.[143] Given the importance of the first child in any case with multiple complainants, it would be quite significant if the original charge resulted in a "not guilty" finding. But that did not happen. The jury found Kelly Michaels guilty of second-degree, instead of first-degree, sexual assault on that charge. In other words, they concluded there was felonious sexual touching, but not penetration. Rabinowitz later claimed Michaels had been "acquitted of the original charge"—failing to note that she was guilty of a lesser included felony involving sexual touching. Labeling this verdict as a "rejection" of the original charge is beyond misleading. It was also indicative of how the rest of the case would be misrepresented.

The mass media started lining up on Michaels's side. Mike Taibbi, a New York City television reporter, did a two-part story that endorsed Rabinowitz's view in August 1990. This was the first television program to broadcast audio excerpts from the children's interviews, which were all under seal. In September 1990, the Kelly Michaels case was referred to as part of "the Salem Epidemic" in the *National Review.*[144] In 1991, the nationally televised program *48 Hours* broadcast a story about the case that featured Rabinowitz at the beginning of the program saying "I believe that Kelly Michaels is entirely innocent."[145] The program included excerpts from two investigative interviews. The first one demonstrated what reporter Bernard Goldberg described as "investigators asking children to demonstrate how Kelly molested them." This is the entire snippet:

UNIDENTIFIED MAN #1: Now did Kelly do any bad things to you?
UNIDENTIFIED CHILD #1: No.
CHILD #1: No.
MAN #1: How come you don't want to tell me what all your friends already told me?

CHILD #1: (unintelligible)
MAN #1: You want a badge?
CHILD #1: Yeah.
MAN #1: We will get you a badge if you help us, if you help—if you be a little detective with us.[146]

The only effort Goldberg made to put this tape into context was the statement that "In many of the tapes, the children repeatedly deny they were abused." There was no indication of how often this was not true; nor did Goldberg address whether this child ever made any allegations or played any role in the case. In fact, the child did not make any accusation, and he was never part of the criminal case. But it was powerful television. Nevertheless, these stories painted an extremely misleading picture.

Five major inaccuracies in the witch-hunt narrative about this case are elaborated below:

Inaccurate Claims About the Interviews

The basic claim of the witch-hunt narrative is that the children in the Kelly Michaels case were subjected to repetitive interviews before ever disclosing sexual abuse. Virtually all popular critiques of the case make this claim. "The most startling thing," according to Nathan, "was that *none* [of the children] had spoken of the abuse to parents and teachers—until after investigators had interviewed them repeatedly."[147] Rabinowitz argued that the charges were the product of investigators "who convinced parents and children alike." She claimed the children were "confused, had nothing to say, or flatly denied that anything had happened to them."[148] These descriptions are patently untrue for the three boys whose statements formed the basis of the original indictment.

The witch-hunt narrative makes even stronger claims about the rest of the investigation. For example, Nat Hentoff argued in the *Washington Post*: "These interrogations went on for a two-year period. The questioning was intense."[149] But the witch-hunt narrative is contradicted by a simple mathematic reality. There were eighty-three investigative interviews, combining the DYFS and police interviews.[150] There were fifty-one preschoolers in full-time attendance at Wee Care in 1984–85, and every child, except David Applegate, was interviewed at least once. It would have required 102 interviews just to interview every child twice. Nearly half the children did not have a second interview. Twenty-one children had two interviews during this time period; five other children had more than two investigative interviews (see Figure 5.7). It is impossible to reconcile Figure 5.7 with the

Figure 5.7 Kelly Michaels Interview Sequence, All Children by Number of Interviews.

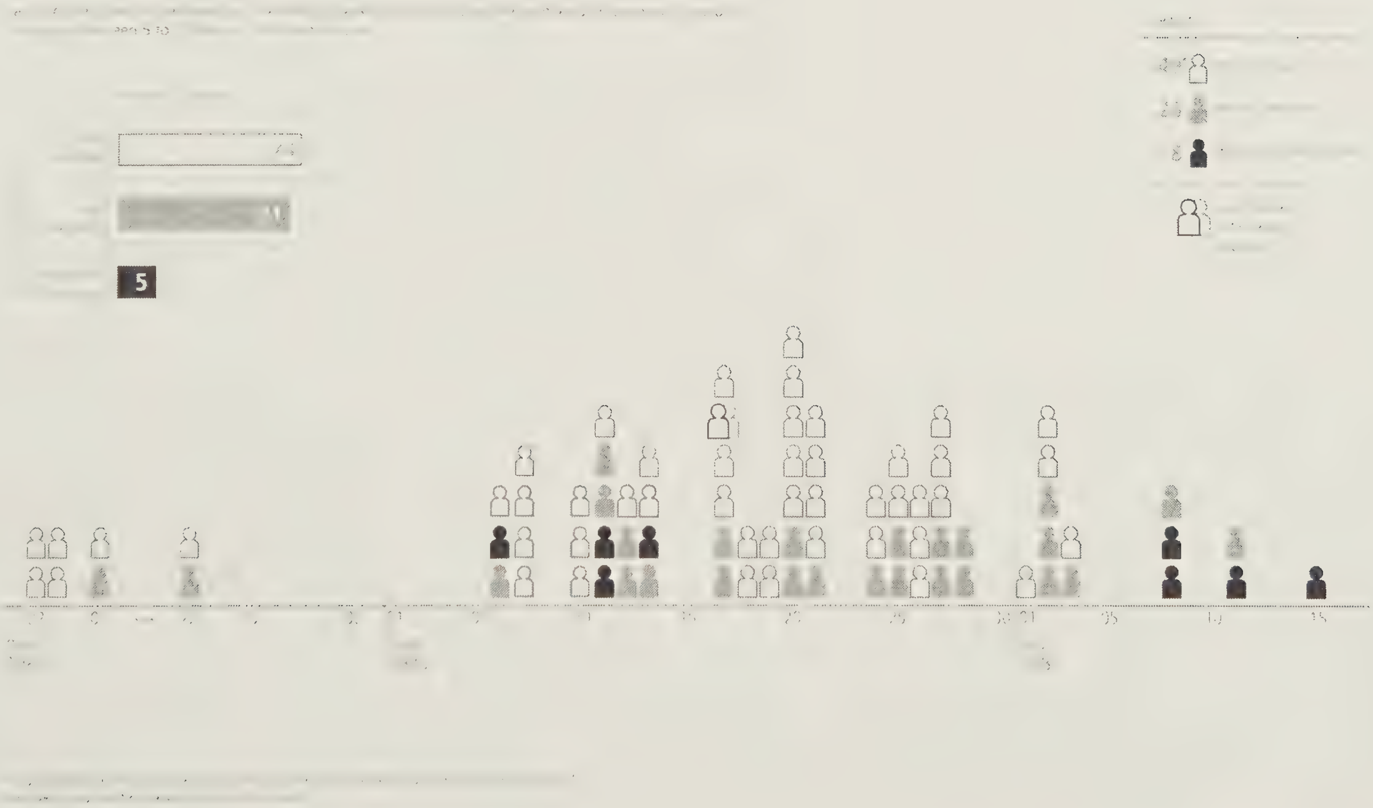

claim that "the children" in the case disclosed only after weeks or months of repetitive interviews. If investigators were so intent on "finding" abuse, why were so few of the children who did not disclose abuse brought back for a second interview? If repetitive interviews explain the disclosures in the case, how does one explain the significant number of children who made disclosures on their first interview?

The children who were interviewed twice (or more) were divided almost evenly between those who went to trial and those who did not. If investigators were so intent on "finding" abuse, why weren't *any* of the children who did not disclose abuse in the second interview brought back for a third interview? For the investigative stage of the case, the "repetitive interviewing" claim simply does not fit the facts. Despite the overblown claims that all the children were subjected to repetitive interviews before making any disclosures, the fact is that only *five* were interviewed more than twice in the investigative phase.

Focusing directly on the children who were interviewed the most during the investigation demonstrates that none of these children were subject to as many interviews as has been claimed *before they first disclosed abuse* (see Figure 5.8). Four of the five children who were interviewed more than twice by investigators were part of the criminal trial. One child, John Allister, was dropped before the case went to trial.[151] The circumstances surrounding the other four children are all different. One child, Martha Landez, disclosed sexual abuse *in her first interview* on June 10, before the two heated parents' meetings in June. She was the thirteenth child interviewed in the case. Landez had complained of vaginal and rectal pain during the year and repeatedly asked to have her temperature taken during the winter of that year. I was unable to locate any documentation of the content of the second interview, which occurred on June 12 with Peg Foster. The next day, Martha gave a statement to police investigator Evelyn Catalano. Perhaps it would have been better to eliminate one of these interviews, or even to combine all into one. But by no stretch of the imagination did she disclose after weeks or months of repetitive interviews.

The third child, Rebecca Flora, was first interviewed on June 21 by Foster and Rich Mastrangelo and was "nonresponsive." Her mother took Rebecca to Dr. Susan Esquilin on June 30. This is the one child involved in the eventual trial who is described as having first disclosed to Dr. Susan Esquilin, a psychologist. She was interviewed again on July 3 by George McGrath. Early in the interview, McGrath asked, "Was Kelly your teacher?" Rebecca responded, "Yeah, but she did a lot of bad things to me."[152] Moments later the

Figure 5.8 Kelly Michaels Interview Sequence, Children Interviewed More than Twice.

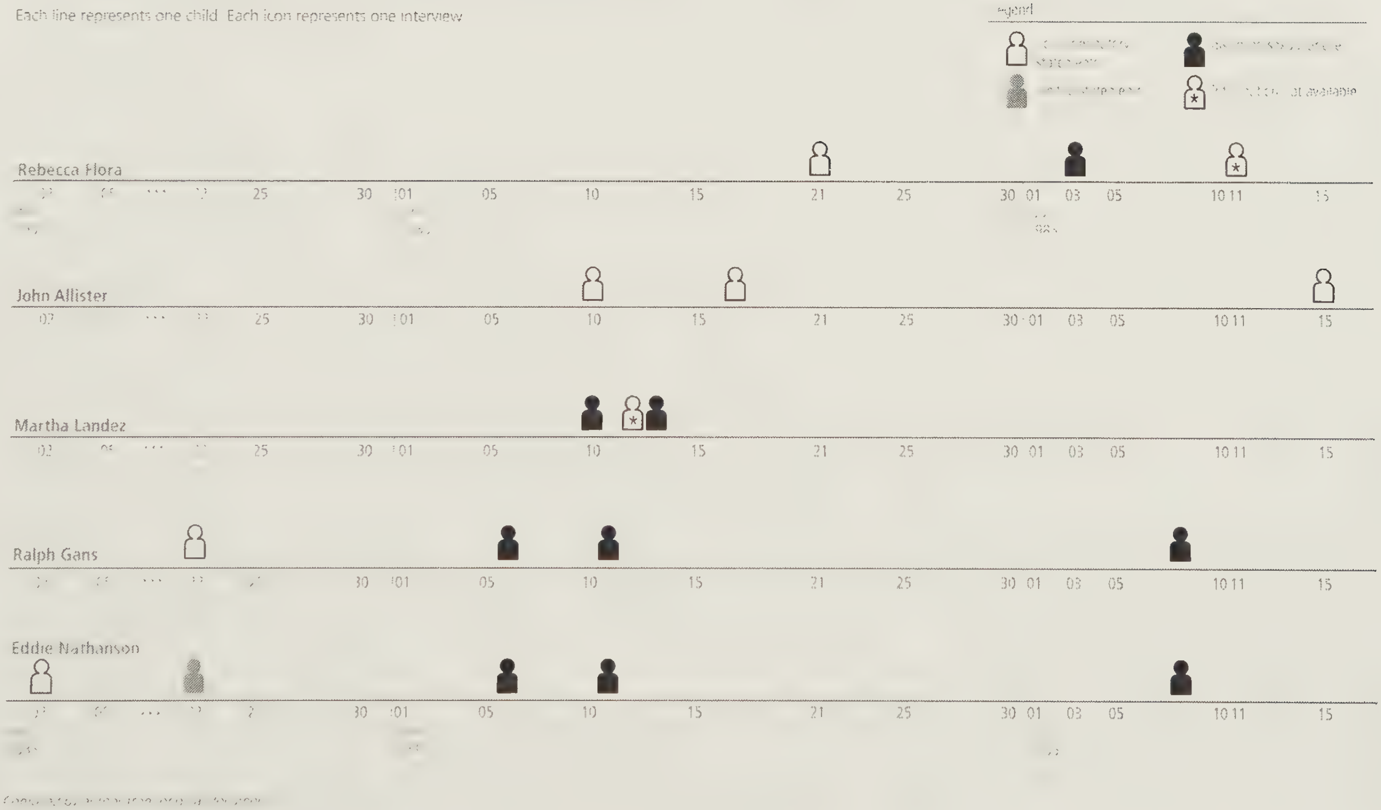

child said Kelly did *not* do any bad things to her. Much later, this exchange occurs:

R: Do you know what?
G: What?
R: Kelly did a lot of bad things to [another child][153]
G: Oh yeah, what did she do?
R: She hit her.
G: How?
R: With a knife.
G: Where did she put the knife?
R: On her tooshie.

On the final page of the interview transcript, Fonolleras indicates that he talked to Rebecca while McGrath was speaking with her mother. According to Fonolleras, the girl "informed me that she had been hurt with the fork in her vaginal area." Court records indicate there was a third interview on July 11, but I was unable to locate any additional documentation of this interview. Rebecca's disclosure, then, came after one interview. But the interview of July 3 was certainly problematic. She was inconsistent and unclear, and it remains questionable at various points whether she was talking about herself or someone else. Rebecca was one of the youngest children in the case, she exhibited some of the most extreme behavior, and she was probably one of the weakest witnesses. Arguably, she should not have been included as a complainant. As it turns out, she was not an effective witness; the jury rejected most of her charges.

The remaining two children who were interviewed more than twice in the investigative phase of the case were Eddie Nathanson and Ralph Gans. Eddie had the most investigative interviews in the case, having been interviewed five times. He was also one of two boys named by Mitchell Pierce on the first day of the case. (The other, Cody Cook, confirmed the abuse, and his father wrote a lengthy statement that night.) Eddie did not disclose anything untoward on May 2 but was interviewed again on May 22, when Fonolleras entered the case. In that interview, Eddie told Fonolleras that Michaels had inserted her finger into the anal area of the boys whose charges were already before the grand jury. He also said Michaels would say, "Let's play nurse—I'll take your temperature—you feel warm." But he denied personal victimization.[154] Eddie was interviewed a third time on June 6 because his mother called DYFS to say he had disclosed that Michaels had sucked his penis and abused various boys with utensils. His two subsequent interviews involved disclosures.

It should be noted that Fonolleras did not seek to have Eddie Nathanson interviewed after the second interview on May 22. Although some critics of the case have blamed Eddie's mother for his statements, the explanation cannot account for how Eddie was able to show Fonolleras the choir room on June 6. That room, hidden away on the third floor, was supposedly out of bounds for the preschool. Nathan has argued that some children who talked about the room were taken there by Fonolleras—but this did not occur until later in June.[155] Also, the witch-hunt narrative never acknowledges that Eddie had a persistent and documented anal rash in 1984–85.

Ralph Gans was the only child other than Eddie who was interviewed more than three times by investigators. He was also involved in the earliest part of the overall investigation. His chronological number in the case was six, and he was first interviewed on May 22, Fonolleras's first day of interviews. Ralph kept running out of the room when Kelly's name was mentioned, so the interview was terminated. Fonolleras did not schedule a follow-up interview. When he returned to interview Eddie Nathanson, however, he also ended up interviewing Ralph because Eddie specifically mentioned his involvement. Ralph made extensive disclosures on June 6 about abuse with utensils and about the "pile-up" game they played in the music room. His third interview was a police statement five days later, and it was consistent with his earlier disclosure. He was brought back one more time for a joint interview with Eddie; Fonolleras hoped to learn more about the games from the boys together. Neither of Eddie's third and fourth interviews was an effort to obtain a disclosure from a child who had said nothing; he had already made significant statements in his second interview.

In short, the children depicted in Figure 5.8 were interviewed more often in the investigative phase of the case than any other children in the case. These children are differently situated, both in terms of when they entered the case and when, in the sequence of interviews, they disclosed sexual abuse, if they did. Of the four children at trial, the latest disclosure was in the third interview. But this was true for only one child; the rest disclosed earlier in their respective interview sequence, rendering even these children less subject to "repetitive" interviews before disclosing than has been claimed by proponents of the witch-hunt narrative.

Beyond the inaccuracies of the claim about the "repetitive" interviews, the narrative has misrepresented the content of various interviews. The Rabinowitz article included five mini-excerpts from an interview with P. J. Isaacs, one of the nineteen children who testified at the trial. The excerpts portray a child who did not want to answer any questions, who said he wanted to go home, and who made incredible statements such as "I saw her penis" and "No, she peed on me!" P. J. eventually said Kelly Michaels put a fork "in my heinie," but Rabinowitz said this was said "in an obviously playful, make-believe tone." Perhaps most damning, she reported that the interview ended with the boy shouting "It's all lies!"[156] To be sure, these excerpts alone provided ample reason to be concerned. But the transcript of the interview with this boy (who Rabinowitz calls "Luke") contradicts several of her claims about the interview. First, by running questions together and moving the timing of the child's answer, the Rabinowitz version makes it appear the child provided meaningless answers when in fact the answers were actually quite clear.[157] Rabinowitz also misstated the flow of this interview. She quoted three questions near the very beginning of the interview and then stated, "Fonolleras *at this point* handed Luke an anatomically correct doll, then proceeded with this questioning" (emphasis added). In fact, by the designated Q&A numbering, more than sixty questions separated these events.

Rabinowitz also claimed that "the session ends with Luke shouting 'It's all lies.'" But neither the prepared transcript of the interview nor the annotated version of the transcript—which the defense appended to their appellate brief—bears this out. The last six lines of the interview transcript are quoted below. The two statements in brackets were added by hand to the version submitted by the defense, and the numbering appears on the document:

[208Q] LOU: Did she pinch you anywhere? No? Do you remember anything else that happened [that you're afraid to tell me about?]
[208A] CHILD: No.
[209Q] LOU: Do you want to go?
[209A] CHILD: Yeah, I want to go home.
[210Q] LOU: Let me get you up, come on. So you don't have anything else to talk to me about. [Tell your mother to come in.]
[UNNUMBERED] LOU: End of statement.[158]

The defense undoubtedly would have made a notation if the child screamed "It's all lies" and it was somehow left out of the state's transcript. But there is no evidence in the transcript that the child said any such thing in this interview. Rabinowitz has claimed that "jurors never saw the record of the interrogations. That's the key point."[159] But the trial transcript, which Rabinowitz also claims to have reviewed, proves otherwise. This interview was played to the jury on November 5, 1987, a transcription of the interview was entered as Exhibit J-9, and there were almost fifty pages of questions to Folloneras about the interview. There is not a single mention of "It's all lies." Rabinowitz's erroneous claim was also featured by Nat Hentoff in the *Village Voice*; the "It's all lies" statement was highlighted as a pull-out quote.[160] Although Hentoff also claims to have examined the interview transcripts, the fact remains that this statement does not appear in the interview from which he purports to quote.

The error apparently stems from conflating two events: this investigative interview and the boy's grand jury testimony, which is described in Lisa Manshel's book. According to Manshel, the boy screamed "Lies! Lies! Lies!" while testifying before the grand jury. The prosecutor then asked a neutral question: "OK.

Then what did Kelly do?" to which the boy responded, "No. It's the truth."[161] If this is the incident that Rabinowitz and Hentoff confused with the interview from which they purported to quote directly, then both writers omitted an important follow-up question and answer. One also wonders how closely these critics actually read the transcripts they purported to have researched if their confusion stemmed entirely from a secondary source.

Evidence Allegedly Kept from the Jury

Rabinowitz has also claimed "jurors never saw the record of the interrogations."[162] Evidence from the investigative interviews, she argues, would have proven the child-suggestibility defense, but the evidence was somehow kept from the jury. Mike Taibbi, a WCBS television reporter, made the same claim in August 1990, asserting that "the jury only heard the children's final version, long after the incidents took place."[163] This claim is critical to lending plausibility to the child-suggestibility defense. It is much easier to understand how a jury might fail to detect a massive case of child suggestibility if all they ever heard were the children's final statements at trial. It is also much easier to second-guess a jury verdict if it was based on incomplete information in the first place. If, however, the jury actually *had* all of the relevant evidence, plus the advantage of seeing and hearing the witnesses live, then it is difficult to understand how the jury could be so wrong—or how those who never saw the witnesses could have so much better an understanding of the evidence. Those questions disappear, however, if one can claim critical information was withheld from the jury.

The claim that the jury was kept in the dark about the investigative interviews is false. The Essex County Prosecutor's Office objected to Taibbi's error and pointed out that investigative tapes *were* played for the jury. In February of the following year, WCBS issued a correction on the "News at Five."[164] But the myth lives on. "I saw what the jurors did not see," Rabinowitz asserted on *CNN*, staking a claim to having reviewed investigative interviews that were kept from the jury.[165] But the jury listened to tape recordings of the investigative interviews and were supplied with the same transcriptions that the defense later attached to their appellate brief. The *CNN* interviewer, wondering why the jury would not also see such evidence, was told something vague by Rabinowitz about the hearsay evidence rule.[166] But what Rabinowitz did not explain is that the hearsay rule prevented only *the state* from introducing the tapes from the investigative interviews; it did not prevent the defense from presenting them. Indeed, the tapes were at the core of the defense in the case. Not only were these tapes introduced at trial but, as reported in Lisa Manshel's 1990 book, the prosecution specifically requested "that the judge instruct the jury that the state could not have introduced these tapes."[167] The prosecution did not want the jury to think what Rabinowitz later urged the public to believe: that the state had tried to keep the tapes out. It is worth noting that the defense "strenuously objected" to this instruction.[168] Apparently, they wanted to create the same phony aura which others have since perpetuated, that the state was trying to hide the same interviews they had voluntarily recorded. The defense could not provide a convincing reason for keeping the jury in the dark about this rule, so the tapes came in *with* the state's requested instruction that informed the jury that the state was not allowed to introduce them.

The same evidence many claim was kept from the jury was reviewed again during the process of jury deliberations. That the jury took these issues seriously is best evidenced in their requests for complete playbacks of each child's testimony *and* various investigative interviews during the thirteen days of deliberation. The Associated Press reported on March 31, 1988, that the defense "objected yesterday to allowing the jury to alternate between deliberations and reviewing videotaped testimony of the children."[169] The story also reported that jurors had already reviewed "tapes of children interviewed by investigators from the prosecutor's office in 1985." What the jury did not see were interviews with children who were not involved in the case; those interviews, without ever being identified as such, form the core of the witch-hunt critique of the interviews.

Inaccurate Claims About Eileen Treacy

Eileen Treacy's role in the case has been criticized as much as, if not more than, Lou Fonolleras's role. The criticisms levied at Treacy range from attacks on her credentials and professionalism to the claim that she implanted ideas in various children. Ceci and Bruck have argued Treacy did "some of the most suggestive interviews" in the Michaels case. They describe her role as extensive, claiming that "all but three of the 20 children were interviewed by Eileen Treacy at least twice before the trial."[170] The implication seems to be that as many as seventeen of the children were interviewed by Treacy more than twice. Actually, the number is four, and *none* was interviewed more than three times. And four children at trial—not three, as claimed—were never interviewed by Treacy. Moreover, as indicated in the case timeline (Figure 1.1), Treacy entered the case after the investgation was completed and the charges had been finalized.

None of Treacy's interviews are included in the three-volume appendix to the defense brief to the Appellate Division, which is represented as containing "all known recorded interviews of the children in the Wee Care case."[171] Since almost all of Treacy's interviews *were* taped and transcribed, a skeptic might wonder why *none* of her interviews were included. Those interviews were memorialized more systematically than the DYFS interviews, so the reason cannot be that they were unavailable. Moreover, Treacy was a major object of criticism, so the reason cannot be that her interviews were considered unimportant. The most reasonable explanation may be that those interviews do not bear out the criticisms that have been lodged.

The attacks on Treacy's credentials and professionalism have been withering. In 1988, Nathan wrote that "not until it was too late to attack her credibility did the defense discover that Treacy's curriculum vitae contained exaggerated information about credentials."[172] Jonathan Harris, who created the influential internet Witch-Hunt Information Center, called her a "fringe psychologist" and a "dangerous fruitcake."[173] More recently, Rabinowitz expressed nothing short of outrage that Treacy continues to testify in cases. According to Rabinowitz, Treacy was "so discredited as a witness" that "people wanted nothing to do with her" when the state of New York hired her in *State v. Carroll*, a 2000 case in which Rabinowitz concluded that the defendant was falsely convicted of sexually abusing his stepdaughter.[174]

These are remarkably unfair criticisms. When Treacy testified in the *Carroll* case, she had testified hundreds of times in New York and *never been reversed on appeal*. She had conducted training seminars on developmental psychology and sexual abuse for law-enforcement officials in twelve New York counties for almost twenty years. Further, she had taught psychology at Lehman College and had extensive clinical experience with child sexual abuse. Her dissertation was an evaluation about foster-parenting sexually abused children.[175] Not a single word of the dissertation has ever been criticized by those who have attacked Treacy's credentials and expertise. What *was* the "exaggerated information about credentials" that Nathan ominously alleged and Rabinowitz later repeated? Her vitae listed a "postgraduate course" at St. Joseph's College in Connecticut that Nathan claims was actually an "intensive weekend seminar."[176]

The claim that Treacy was a "true believer" and always "found" sexual abuse is similarly unfounded.[177] It is contradicted by the record of published court decisions in New York. In one case, decided around the time of the Michaels trial, Treacy's testimony was influential in the court's decision *not* to substantiate sexual abuse.[178] This case did not deter detractors from continuing to claim she is a "rogue therapist" who finds abuse in "everything a child does" during an evaluation, as Rich Lowry claimed in the *National Review* in December 1994.[179] Earlier that year, however, the *New York Law Journal* reported "Ms. Treacy could not validate because she believed that there was a significant probability that the child was coached and prepared for the assessment."[180] Evidence that contradicts the "true believer" claim apparently does not influence those who make this charge. In this way, the would-be "skeptics" have become true believers of their own, apparently impervious to evidence that contradicts their beliefs.

The intense hostility against Treacy reflects the larger politics surrounding law reform and sexual assault. Treacy played a central role in changing legal responses to sexual violence in New York over the last twenty-five years. While heading the New York City Advisory Task Force on Rape in 1983, she provided striking testimony to a joint legislative committee hearing in favor of eliminating the corroboration requirement in child sexual-abuse cases. Her testimony at trial in *People v. Taylor* helped set the New York precedent for allowing rape trauma syndrome evidence in trials. In *Taylor*, she testified it was common for a rape victim to appear quiet and controlled following an attack; she also explained why a rape victim might be initially unwilling to name an attacker whom she knows personally. "Rape is a crime that is permeated by misconceptions," the appellate court noted, allowing trauma syndrome evidence to counter "cultural myths that still affect common understanding of rape and rape victims."[181] One of the purposes for which the state hired her as an expert witness in the Michaels case was to counter similar myths surrounding child sexual abuse.

She was also hired specifically to assess whether suggestibility might account for the children's statements in the case. In fact, she *tested for suggestibility* in ways that have never been acknowledged in the witch-hunt narrative. Ceci and Bruck have argued, for example, that nobody in the case ever asked questions challenging the children's statements. Emphasizing the importance of this technique, they have said, "When an interviewer avoids confirmatory bias by posing and testing alternative hypothesies, the suggestive techniques do not seem to result in serious problems."[182] The claim that Treacy did not test alternative hypotheses is contradicted by the detailed reports she prepared on each child. Those aspects of her interviews have never been acknowledged. Instead, a picture has been painted in the witch-hunt narrative that Treacy implanted ideas and even created charges that appeared in the case.

The most detailed critique involves two interview excerpts that are said to "give a flavor of the interactions" between Treacy and the children she evaluated, and they appear to be quite damning. Both passages require detailed analysis, since a close examination of transcripts prepared for the case reveals that appearances can be quite deceiving.[183] The interaction with "Child A" comprises approximately ten questions and answers. The questions are clearly leading and the answers are generally negative or "I don't know." But a comparison of this excerpt to the written record[184] reveals that this "excerpt" is actually a composite of eight snippets taken from two different dates and various pages, and they are not always presented in chronological order (see Figure 5.9). Ceci and Bruck included ellipses for six of these discontinuities, but no reader would reasonably expect that these snippets are from different dates or are out of chronological order. Further, the necessary ellipses are missing in two places in this twenty-line excerpt, leaving even the most careful reader with the impression of an excerpt more intact than it actually is. These mistakes are particularly striking since Ceci and Bruck state they "lightly edited these transcripts for dysfluencies and redundancies, but [. . .] never altered the meaning."[185]

Figure 5.9 Treacy-Child A Excerpt, Reproduced from Ceci and Bruck (1995) with Source Annotations.

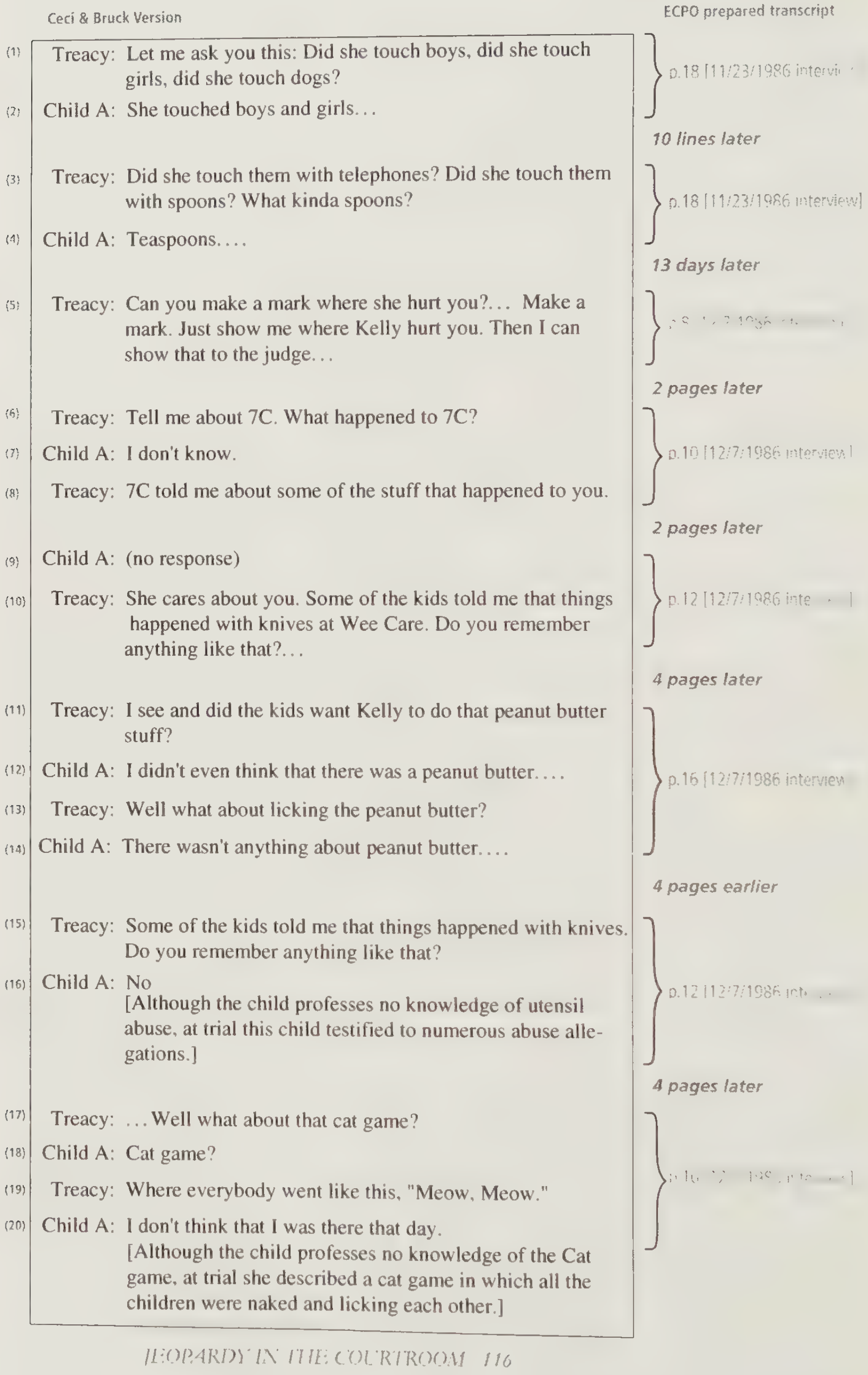

Ceci & Bruck Version

ECPO prepared transcript

(1) Treacy: Let me ask you this: Did she touch boys, did she touch girls, did she touch dogs?
(2) Child A: She touched boys and girls...

p.18 [11/23/1986 intervi

10 lines later

(3) Treacy: Did she touch them with telephones? Did she touch them with spoons? What kinda spoons?
(4) Child A: Teaspoons....

p.18 [11/23/1986 interview]

13 days later

(5) Treacy: Can you make a mark where she hurt you?... Make a mark. Just show me where Kelly hurt you. Then I can show that to the judge...

[illegible]

2 pages later

(6) Treacy: Tell me about 7C. What happened to 7C?
(7) Child A: I don't know.
(8) Treacy: 7C told me about some of the stuff that happened to you.

p.10 [12/7/1986 interview]

2 pages later

(9) Child A: (no response)
(10) Treacy: She cares about you. Some of the kids told me that things happened with knives at Wee Care. Do you remember anything like that?...

p.12 [12/7/1986 inte]

4 pages later

(11) Treacy: I see and did the kids want Kelly to do that peanut butter stuff?
(12) Child A: I didn't even think that there was a peanut butter....
(13) Treacy: Well what about licking the peanut butter?
(14) Child A: There wasn't anything about peanut butter....

p.16 [12/7/1986 interview

4 pages earlier

(15) Treacy: Some of the kids told me that things happened with knives. Do you remember anything like that?
(16) Child A: No
[Although the child professes no knowledge of utensil abuse, at trial this child testified to numerous abuse allegations.]

p.12 [12/7/1986 int

4 pages later

(17) Treacy: ...Well what about that cat game?
(18) Child A: Cat game?
(19) Treacy: Where everybody went like this, "Meow, Meow."
(20) Child A: I don't think that I was there that day.
[Although the child professes no knowledge of the Cat game, at trial she described a cat game in which all the children were naked and licking each other.]

[illegible]

JEOPARDY IN THE COURTROOM 116

This questionable editing significantly changes how one reads and understands the content of the interview. Consider the first place where material was removed by editorial choice, between lines [2] and [3] in Figure 5.9. Here is the same passage, with the material omitted by Ceci and Bruck highlighted in bold:

TREACY: Let me ask you this. Did she touch boys? Did she touch girls? Did she touch dogs?
CHILD: She touched boys and girls.
TREACY: She touched boys and girls. **And where did this touching take place?**
CHILD: At Wee Care.
TREACY: At Wee Care. Did it happen in like the kitchen? Where did it happen?
CHILD: In the piano room.

The editing removed an open-ended question ("And where did this touching take place?") and a leading question that purposely contained false suggestion ("Did it happen in the kitchen?"). It is noteworthy that the child did *not* say "yes, it happened in the kitchen." Instead, the child said "in the piano room"—an answer that Treacy did not suggest. The added significance of the piano room is that it was named by other children who stayed late in the afternoon on occasion.

As indicated in Figure 5.9, the second "question" in this excerpt is reported as three continuous, run-on questions: "Did she touch them with telephones? Did she touch them with spoons? What kind of spoons?" The child's one word answer ("teaspoons") appears to be the sole response after a sequence of questions that ended with *what kind* of spoon. In other words, the interview appears to have led the child to a choice of spoons. But the transcript reveals otherwise:

TREACY: Did she touch their butts with her body or other stuff?
CHILD: Other stuff.
TREACY: Like what? Like blocks?
CHILD: No.
TREACY: How about things I have over there?
CHILD: No I forgot. I think I forgot, I'm not sure.
TREACY: You're not sure. Are you getting uncomfortable?
CHILD: No.
TREACY: OK, did she touch them with toys?
CHILD: No.
TREACY: Did she touch them with telephones?
CHILD: No.

TREACY: No. Did she touch them with spoons?
CHILD: Yes.
TREACY: What kind of spoons?
CHILD: Teaspoons.[186]

Editing this exchange to compress several separate questions into one uninterrupted bunch changes the appearance of the interaction from unobjectionable to highly objectionable. Academic psychologists Deborah Poole and Michael Lamb, who have written extensively about interviewing children, clearly counsel against the kind of multiple questioning created in the edited version.[187] But Treacy did the opposite of what is conveyed in Ceci and Bruck's edited excerpt; she allowed time for the child to respond to each question, as Poole and Lamb counsel. Moreover, she asked about three objects, two of which would presumably have caused affirmative answers (toys, telephones) if the child thought affirmative answers should be given in order to please the interviewer. Instead, the child said "no," there was no touching with toys or telephones.

There are also two bracketed statements by Ceci and Bruck in this excerpt, both of which insinuate that Treacy implanted ideas into this girl because, in both instances, she "professes no knowledge" about things she later testified to at trial. The first involves abuse with utensils. But a year and a half *before* the session with Treacy, Cassie told Detective Mastrangelo about abuse with utensils.[188] The second involves a "cat game." Again, Ceci and Bruck suggest that because the girl testified at trial about a game in which children licked each other, she must have learned that from Treacy. But Treacy does not mention licking in this excerpt, just the words *cat* and *meow*. Moreover, seventeen months *before* this session, Cassie's mother, when asked about unusual behavior in her daughter that year, replied "she licks me all the time."[189] The implication that Treacy implanted these ideas in the girl does not fit the chronology of the case.

Worse problems plague a second excerpt that Ceci and Bruck offer as evidence of how Treacy "gets the child to say that Kelly's private parts were the same as a little girl's." Curiously, the excerpt does not actually do that (see Figure 5.10). The passage contains ten questions or statements by Treacy, each followed by a response from the child. The passage appears disjointed, the questions are often leading, and the child's responses are vague and practically without substance ("I didn't really do that," "I don't know," "I don't remember about that").

The passage appears disjointed because it was edited that way. The excerpt is largely from pages 6 and 7 of the interview with Treacy, but the final two lines are from page 10. Moreover, critical phrases and lines are omitted without explanation. Consider the first six lines as presented by Ceci and Bruck in Figure 5.10. Here is the same passage directly from the transcript, with the significant material that was omitted or altered highlighted in boldface:

Figure 5.10 Treacy-Child B Excerpt, Reproduced from Ceci and Bruck (1995) with Source Annotations.

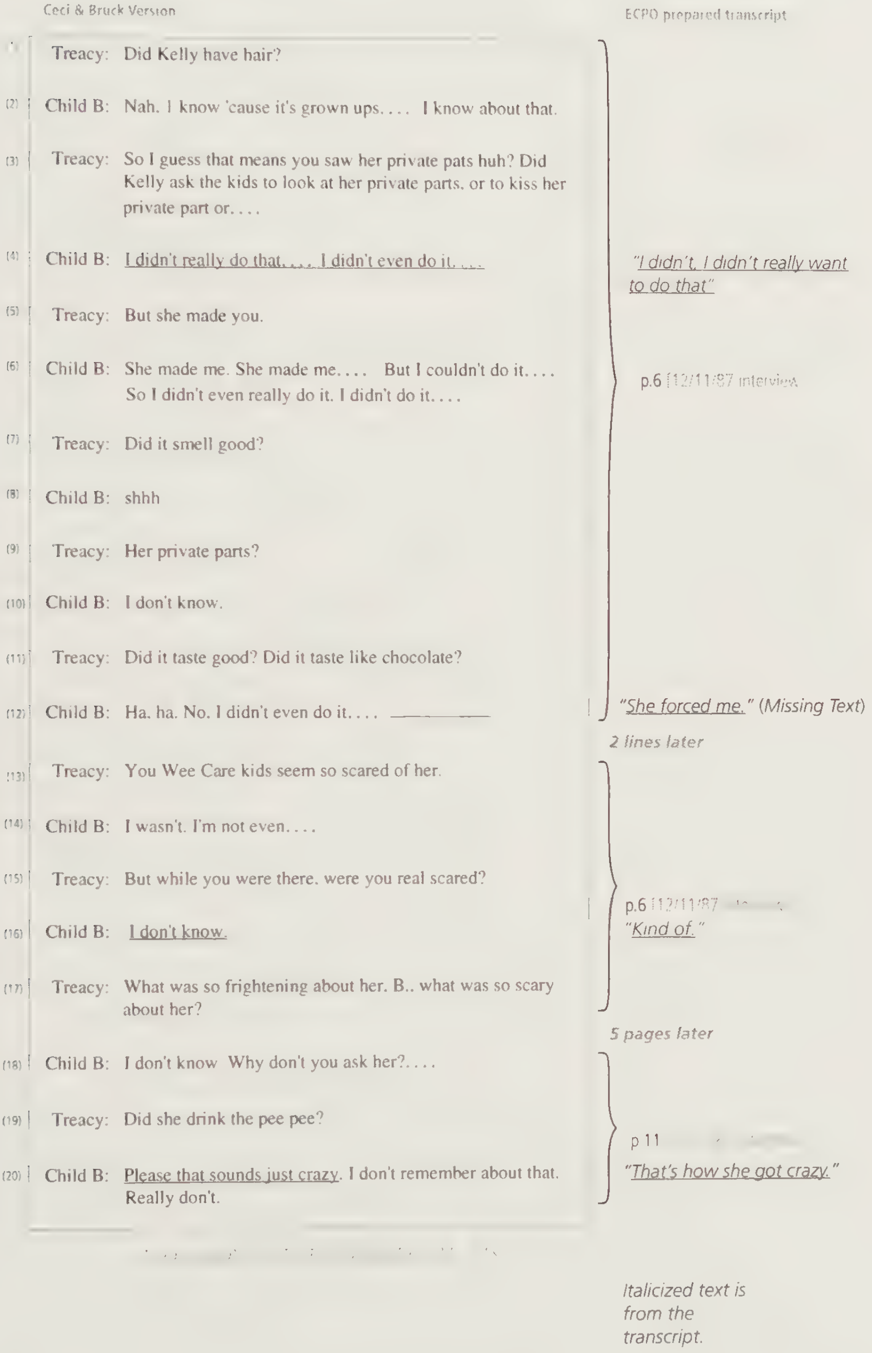

Ceci & Bruck Version

ECPO prepared transcript

(1) Treacy: Did Kelly have hair?

(2) Child B: Nah. I know 'cause it's grown ups. . . . I know about that.

(3) Treacy: So I guess that means you saw her private pats huh? Did Kelly ask the kids to look at her private parts, or to kiss her private part or. . . .

(4) Child B: I didn't really do that. . . . I didn't even do it. . . .

(5) Treacy: But she made you.

(6) Child B: She made me. She made me. . . . But I couldn't do it. . . . So I didn't even really do it. I didn't do it. . . .

(7) Treacy: Did it smell good?

(8) Child B: shhh

(9) Treacy: Her private parts?

(10) Child B: I don't know.

(11) Treacy: Did it taste good? Did it taste like chocolate?

(12) Child B: Ha, ha. No. I didn't even do it. . . . ______

(13) Treacy: You Wee Care kids seem so scared of her.

(14) Child B: I wasn't. I'm not even. . . .

(15) Treacy: But while you were there, were you real scared?

(16) Child B: I don't know.

(17) Treacy: What was so frightening about her, B., what was so scary about her?

(18) Child B: I don't know Why don't you ask her?. . . .

(19) Treacy: Did she drink the pee pee?

(20) Child B: Please that sounds just crazy. I don't remember about that. Really don't.

[illegible]

"I didn't, I didn't really want to do that"

p.6 [12/11/87 interview

"She forced me." (Missing Text)

2 lines later

p.6 [12/11/87 [illegible]

"Kind of."

5 pages later

p 11 [illegible]

"That's how she got crazy."

Italicized text is from the transcript.

[1] Treacy: Did Kelly have hair?
[2] Child: Ahh, I know because they're grownups. . . . I know about them.
[3] Treacy: So I guess that means you saw her private parts huh? Did Kelly ask the kids to look at her private parts, or to kiss her private part or . . .
[4] Child: I didn't, **I didn't really want to do that—**
[4.1] Treacy: **Do what?**
[4.2] **Child: You know, kiss her private parts. I didn't even do it, I didn't feel like doing it.**
[5] Treacy: But she made you?
[6] Child: She made me. She made me but I couldn't do it so I didn't, cause you know I didn't feel like doing it. I didn't even do it.

Note, first, that the child's statement from line 4 actually reads "I didn't, I didn't really want to do that." Ceci and Bruck quote this line as "I didn't really do that. . . . I didn't even do it. . . ." Next, they omit the subsequent two lines in the exchange, labeled 4.1 and 4.2 in the text above. One line involves a simple, open-ended question by Treacy: "Do what?" The child replied: "You know, kiss her private parts. I didn't even do it, I didn't feel like doing it." Ceci and Bruck removed the open-ended question and the child's statement about kissing her private parts.

Later in the same excerpt, the boy's responses reported by Ceci and Bruck vary further from what is contained in the transcript. Ceci and Bruck report that the child answered "I don't know," when asked if he was scared at the time. The transcript indicates the child said "kind of." In other words, the transcript contains a partial affirmation, while Ceci and Bruck's version does not. The transcript also demonstrates that part of the boy's next answer was "She forced me," a phrase that was then repeated by Treacy in the unedited version. But Ceci and Bruck omit this material. Here is the excerpt directly from the transcript, with important material that was omitted or altered highlighted in boldface:

TREACY: Did it taste good? Did it taste like chocolate?
CHILD B: No I didn't even (inaudible). **She forced me.**[190]
TREACY: **She forced you.** Let me ask you this, this is one thing I don't understand, why don't you bring Darth Vader over here and help me with this thing. You kids from Wee Care really, really, when I talk to you guys about this. . . .
CHILD B: Yeah
TREACY: You guys seem so scared of her
CHILD B: (inaudible) I'm not even scared.
TREACY: But while you were there, were you scared
CHILD B: **Kind of.**[191]

Finally, according to Ceci and Bruck, this excerpt ends with Treacy asking, apparently out of the blue, "Did she [Kelly Michaels] drink the pee pee?" Ceci and Bruck report that the child responded, "Please that sounds just crazy." The authors quote this statement twice in their book, citing it as primary evidence of "a child's horror at the content of the interviewers' questions."[192] But this two-line exchange is actually several pages later than the lines before it. The material in between helps explain the source of Treacy's question. But most remarkably, the *transcript* indicates the child said "That's how she got crazy," *not* "Please that sounds just crazy"—a phrase that sounds suspiciously adultlike.[193] The same line that appears in the transcript—"That's how she got crazy"—also appears verbatim in the report that Treacy wrote shortly after this session in December 1986.[194] (The transcript was prepared more than a year later by a stenographer who never spoke with Treacy.) The childlike explanation that appears in both places does not evince "horror." Moreover, placing this response in context of the entire interview—that is, considering the material Ceci and Bruck omitted between pages 7 and 10—dispels the notion that the interviewer horrified the child. Seven lines *before* the question supposedly causing horror, the child volunteered this: "And then Kelly even tried to make us drink it."[195] The "horrifying" idea, then, came first from the child, not from the interviewer.

Exaggerating the Fantastic

For many, the most persuasive, and certainly the most memorable, argument in the witch-hunt narrative of the Michaels case revolves around the "fantastic" claims made by children in the case. The allegations involving abuse with utensils have been placed in this category. But there were other so-called bizarre claims as well. As Rabinowitz explained it:

> Unnoticed, and on a daily basis, Michaels had also, according to prosecutors, licked peanut butter off the children's genitals, played the piano in the nude, and made them drink her urine and eat a 'cake' of her feces.[196]

Rabinowitz was wrong in several ways. First, prosecutors did not allege that *any* criminal acts happened daily. Second, only a few of "the children" were implicated in the most grotesque charges. Of the 131 counts that went to the jury, there was one lone count about the consumption of feces. To read the witch-hunt narrative, one would think the case was built on these charges. Finally, Rabinowitz was wrong to suggest that Michaels was convicted of the most fantastic claims. The charge just mentioned, possibly the most difficult to believe in the case, was one of the fifteen counts the jury rejected at trial. In short, even though there *were* "fantastic" charges in the case, their role has been inflated and misrepresented. The significance of these charges can be ascertained only by analyzing specific details, something the witch-hunt narrative consistently avoids.

The most widespread claims in the case that have been labeled "fantastic" involve allegations concerning plastic utensils. The word *bizarre* is also used to describe the allegations of sexual abuse with spoons, knives, and forks. The idea that allegations of abuse with utensils emanated from the interviewers has an obvious plausibility, given the ominous claim in Ceci and Bruck's brief that in "17 of the 39 sessions silverware was given to the children with dolls."[197] This is a large enough number to account for all the allegations about sexual abuse with utensils. But some important questions are left unexplored by proponents of the witch-hunt narrative: (1) In how many interviews were utensils introduced by the child? (2) What were the circumstances and content of the first disclosure of each child at trial who alleged abuse with utensils? (3) How many allegations involving utensils came outside the context of the seventeen interviews where they were "introduced by the interviewer"?

The witch-hunt narrative seems to imply that the answer to the first question is zero. At least, it never acknowledges that any child made such statements without prompting. Yet there is compelling evidence from several such children. A careful analysis of when these claims first emerged eliminates "suggestibility" as the original source. The first time utensils were mentioned in the case was May 2, three weeks before Fonolleras entered the investigation. They were mentioned the second day of the investigation, when Cody Cook, a boy named by Mitchell Pierce, told his father that Kelly Michaels had touched his private parts with a spoon. The boy's father wrote a three-page statement by hand that includes this detail, on the night of May 2, 1985.

Rather than embracing the idea of abuse with a utensil, the authorities responded with skepticism, immediately sensing that these details would probably render the children less credible.[198] The prosecutors would have left those charges out of the case if they could have. The witch-hunt narrative has never explained why, if the interviewers were implanting the whole case, they would choose to include an element likely to make the case less credible. But the fact is that utensils were a consistent feature across children who disclosed earliest and under different circumstances. The idea that all of the statements about abuse with utensils came from leading questions is contradicted elsewhere in the trial transcript. In the initial disclosure to his mother, David Applegate—the child who was never interviewed by DYFS—talked about being penetrated with a "spoon" and with a "stick," which could well be a knife or the handle end of any utensil.

Proponents of the witch-hunt narrative have ignored the most convincing child testimony, but they have simultaneously exaggerated the nature of the claims involving utensils. Those exaggerations transform the allegations from plausible to physically impossible. Rabinowitz has claimed the allegations involved "serrated knives" and "terrible sharp instruments."[199] But she is the one who introduced the language "serrated" knives and "terrible sharp instruments."

Four- to six-year-olds tend not to use words like "serrated." But even if they did, this is not what they said in this case. It was apparent through exhibits used at trial that the utensils at issue were plastic, the kind one finds at a preschool.

In the few places in the investigative interviews where children elaborated on the nature of the utensils, they said things that directly contradicted the descriptors chosen by Rabinowitz. One child, asked to describe what kind of knife, said "like a butter knife."[200] This comes as close as a child possibly could to indicating the knife was *not* serrated or sharp. Another child's mother described her son revealing that "the other end of the knife, not the pointed end, was inserted into his rectum."[201] Most memorably, one child, in an early interview in June, added the phrase "the end you don't eat eggs with," after describing abuse with a fork.[202] In short, what the children actually described were uses of utensils that would not cause serious injuries. Even Dr. Watson S. Price, a physician who testified for the defense, agreed with this assessment. Inserting the handle of a spoon in the anus would "basically cause redness," he testified. Even a dull knife, he continued, would result in "probably nothing, but a little bit of erythema [redness]."[203] The trial record in this case is replete with documented cases of erythema and irritated anuses. This evidence is all missing, however, from the witch-hunt narrative. Moreover, the initial disclosures about "white jean stuff" and "gasoline"—also consistently omitted from the narrative—apparently support the theory that Michaels minimized any acute injuries by using Vaseline.

Another allegation that has become central to the witch-hunt narrative is the claim that Michaels played the piano in the nude. A few children specifically said she had played the song "Jingle Bells." Those claims were nowhere near as pervasive as claims about abuse with utensils. Only a small number of children made such statements. They emerged from multiple sources on June 6 and 7, in claims that were consistent and almost simultaneous. The assertions about eating feces are undoubtedly the most difficult to believe. But the case was *not* characterized by such claims. Two of the children at trial made statements of that kind during the investigation; both emerged late in the investigation, and neither charge resulted in a conviction. One of the charges was dropped; the other resulted in a not-guilty finding by the jury. It is extremely misleading, then, to suggest that such claims were widespread in the case, or that such charges are what resulted in her conviction.

In short, the supposedly fantastic claims in the Kelly Michaels case varied significantly, from being widespread (abuse with utensils) to isolated examples in a few children (allegations involving feces); they also ranged from highly plausible (also the utensil claims), given how they emerged, to much less likely (nude piano playing).[204] Dr. Mark Everson, director of the Program on Childhood Trauma and Maltreatment at the University of North Carolina, reminds us that improbable or fantastic accounts "should not result in an automatic dismissal of the child's report."[205] Everson has proposed twenty-four possible explanations for such statements, urging a balanced approach that includes "multiple dimensions of assessment and investigation" rather than overreliance on the child's statements alone. Critics of the Michaels case have eschewed the idea. Rabinowitz condemned as Orwellian the notion that jurors were told "they didn't need to believe everything the children said."[206] Yet adult witnesses have never been held to the standard that all of their testimony must be rejected if any single statement is not considered credible.

Manufacturing Social Hysteria

An integral part of the witch-hunt narrative is the argument that "social hysteria" inflated and even created an untold number of charges in the Michaels case. This argument postulates social dynamics whereby parents caught up in a frenzy are, at best, less skeptical of children's statements than they would otherwise be, and at worst they actually foment allegations in their own children. On the surface, this claim has an obvious plausibility in the Michaels case because it grew from a 6-count indictment in May to a 235-count indictment in November. Of course, a case involving multiple victims would have to begin somewhere—and no matter how it unfolded, it would apparently be susceptible to a claim that the expansion was enabled or enhanced by social hysteria if the mere fact of expansion is considered enough to prove the claim.

Regardless of the actual evidence in the Michaels case, this claim has been widely accepted. Rabinowitz labeled the case "a condition of national hysteria not unlike the hysteria that seized the Massachusetts Bay Colony" during the Salem witch trials. The state of New Jersey was allegedly in the grips of "a national hysteria" that was "as virulent and contagious as the Asian flu," she continued.[207] Dr. Richard Gardner, who coined the term *sex abuse hysteria* and was hired to worked for the defense in the civil cases against Kelly Michaels, proclaimed that the case had "many of the classic hallmarks" of such "hysteria."[208]

The social hysteria claim plays a critical role in the witch-hunt narrative. First, it provides a kind of catch-all explanation. Any child whose interviews cannot be impugned—or, in the case of David Applegate, who was never interviewed by DYFS—can always be said to have succumbed to vague social forces. The same approach can also be used to explain away the twelve jurors who found Michaels guilty beyond a reasonable doubt. The social hysteria claim is also what makes this case of broader interest. It is a link that arguably ties this case to others across the country. Indeed, critics generally discuss these cases as if they are interchangeable. Debbie Nathan claimed that the Michaels case was "a cookie-cutter copy" of the one she wrote about in Texas.[209] Curiously, she made that pronouncement *before* the brief trip to New Jersey that constituted the research for her first article about the Michaels case in the *Village Voice*.[210] Unfortunately, critics of the case have not supplied a careful, chronological accounting of how the case evolved. Instead, there has been almost indiscriminate use of the word *hysteria*. Law professor Jean Montoya claimed that "the hysteria began" as soon as the letter was sent to parents about unspecified allegations concerning a former employee.[211] But a close examination of the facts reveals that the social hysteria claim is contradicted by the case chronology.

The social hysteria claim is often made such that the initial investigation collapses into the investigation-at-large, making it appear as if Mitchell Pierce's utterance resulted in the decision to interview fifty-one children. "That is how the accusation began," Nathan stated after inaccurately claiming his famous utterance was caused by the nurse rubbing the boy's back. "Detectives and social workers from New Jersey's Division of Youth and Family Services then embarked on a two-month interview process," she continued, without any recognition of the difference between the initial charges and the later investigation. The same mistake was repeated almost verbatim by Justice Clarence Thomas, dissenting from the decision not to hear the case dismissing Michael's civil claims against the state after her conviction was overturned:

> Based solely on [Mitchell Pierce's] statements, a prosecutor and several investigators, respondents here, began an extensive investigation. Respondents interviewed virtually all of the children with whom petitioner could have had any contact.[212]

But this is not how the case evolved. Mitchell's statements resulted in interviewing the two boys he named. One immediately confirmed the claim. Another boy, whose mother was on the Wee Care board of directors, soon emerged to confirm the same. The first phase of the investigation was narrowly focused and quickly brought to an end. The social hysteria arguments simply cannot apply to this stage of the case, and they cannot explain the charges that formed the basis for the original six-count indictment.

The letter to parents of children at Wee Care was sent on May 7. Had the letter named Kelly Michaels, as Nathan erroneously reported in the *Village Voice*,[213] there would have been special reason for concern. But the letter said the investigation was about "a former employee," and it gave no particular reason for parents to assume their children were affected. The first parents' meeting, held on May 15, was more restrained than was often described. There were, of course, some concerned parents, which would happen in any case involving allegations of abuse. There were also many parents who were *not* concerned because the letter specified the investigation concerned "a former employee." Some parents did not even bother to attend the May 15 parents' meeting, and several were on record at the time as being quite restrained about the issue.[214] Moreover, the DYFS investigator did not start interviewing anyone until two weeks after the prosecutor's office had completed the investigation that resulted in the first indictment.

The social dynamics surrounding the case clearly changed during the month of June. Roughly speaking, they went from a targeted investigation based on the content of previously interviewed children to a broad-based investigation, at least by DYFS, seemingly intent on interviewing every child who attended the school. There was also a shift in thinking about the scope and likelihood of the charges against Kelly Michaels. There was clearly a hardening of views about her. Lou Fonolleras displayed this tendency the most. It is fair to say he eventually embodied the kind of "confirmation bias" that taints an investigation. After all, he ultimately "substantiated" abuse claims on virtually every child he interviewed, including ones who denied abuse.[215] But none of the children who were then "substantiated" without regard to the content of their statements was actually in the criminal case. Moreover, there is no reason to conclude that Fonolleras brought this view to the investigation on May 22. Had this been the case, he would have "found" abuse on *that* day and immediately continued interviewing. Instead, he interviewed two children on May 22 and did not return until June 6—only when specifically requested by a parent.

Taking these facts into account, we could say there were three phases to the investigation: the earliest investigative phase, the first part of the DYFS investigation (which soon included the Essex County Prosecutor's Office), and the later part of the DYFS/ECPO investigation. There is not a simple obvious marker for the shift in the DYFS investigation in June. I have selected June 13 for several reasons but acknowledge that it could be drawn somewhat differently.[216] Whatever the boundaries between phases two and three, the social hysteria argument has the greatest plausibility in phase three. Unequivocal denials were prevalent in late June (and early July) but not earlier in the investigation.

The role of the media also changed significantly over this time, and the pattern was completely different from the McMartin case, where intense national publicity preceded the first grand jury by more than a month. In the Michaels case, the initial press coverage was quite restrained, and there was no coverage at all during the first phase of the investigation or through the initial grand jury proceedings. There was a two-hundred-word story in the *Star-Ledger* on June 7 that reported the six-count indictment. They ran a slightly longer story on June 21, reporting that Michaels faced an additional thirty-one charges. This was the first indication in the press that the case extended beyond the original three boys. A longer story, reporting that Michaels was being held at the county jail, appeared in the *News-Record* of Maplewood and South Orange on June 26. There were no statewide stories and no television coverage at the time. Indeed it was more than six weeks before the story was reported elsewhere in New Jersey.

There were few stories before late June and the unsealing of the additional charges in December. Daily stories in the local press did not occur until the case came to trial in 1987. By then, of course, all of the charges had also long since been finalized. These facts illustrate an obvious point that has been overlooked by proponents of the social hysteria claim: the investigation and the surrounding social forces evolved over time. Media coverage went from nonexistent to minimal and, long after the charges were finalized, to intensive. Parental involvement evolved likewise. Many of the charges in the case came long before any arguable signs of so-called hysteria. The evolution of the case must be considered carefully, then, in order to assess when, if ever, broader social forces might have affected it.

But how much of the case was built around children who emerged during the final stages of the investigation? How much was built around children's statements in the earliest stages of the investigation? Those questions have not been addressed by proponents of the witch-hunt narrative, who seem intent on blurring such distinctions. Viewing the investigation in stages, one concludes the likely reason for avoiding such analysis is apparent: the actual patterns in this case contradict what the social hysteria claim would predict. If the case is divided into three phases—May 1 to May 7, May 22 to June 13, June 17 onward—the twenty children at trial were about evenly divided between the first two stages and the third.

Aggregate analysis of the three stages reveals that the interview intensity increased over time while the percentage of children identified as victims dropped significantly in the third phase of the investigation (see Table 5.1). Three of the five children interviewed in phase one (60 percent) ended up at trial. It would likely have been 80 percent if Cody Cook's family had not moved away. Seven of the

Table 5.1 **Kelly Michaels Interview and Charge Information, by Investigative Phase**

	Initial investigation 5/1–5/7	*DYFS/ECPO Phase one 5/22–6/13*	*DYFS/ECPO Phase two 6/17–7/15*
No. children interviewed for the first time	5	13*	33
No. of these children w/ charges resulting	4	9	18
No. of these children at trial (n=19)	3	7	9

* David Applegate emerged in this phase but was not interviewed by DYFS.

thirteen children interviewed during phase two (54 percent) ended up at trial. But only nine of the thirty-three interviews conducted with children interviewed in phase three (27 percent) resulted in charges that went to trial. This pattern runs counter to the social hysteria claim. It is opposite to what happened in the McMartin case. When the social pressures were most apparent, when parents began to organize, when there were stories in the local newspaper about expanding charges, and when interviewer bias apparently became a serious problem and interview frequency intensified, the percentage of children who actually disclosed abuse and were included in the case was less than half the rate of earlier stages.

A handful of children who *did* disclose during the final period later became the basis for some of the most intensive criticism in the witch-hunt narrative. So did other children who were interviewed late in the process—children who were never in the case beyond their initial interview. Given the rising intensity in the prevailing social environment, the charges that emerged during the third phase of the investigation deserve close attention and an extra degree of skepticism. But the fact that ten of the nineteen children at trial were from earlier phases in the investigation is a direct challenge to the social hysteria claim.

The actual verdict in the case also contradicts the claim that the jury succumbed to social hysteria. Had an automatic "believe the children" view captured the jury, they would have found Michaels guilty on all counts. But the verdict clearly reflected child-by-child decisions, not group judgments. The jury found some children's testimony persuasive in relation to all counts charged; this describes the outcome for seven of the twenty children at trial. For two other children, the jury returned guilty verdicts that were, in part, based on "lesser included charges." But for eleven of the twenty children, the jury verdicts were more mixed. In some cases, almost all of the charges were accepted by the jury; in others, either most of the charges were rejected or a guilty verdict was returned on a lesser included charge. This individualized decision making belies assertions of the kind of groupthink that characterizes the hysteria claim.

The Appellate Division Follows Suit

Public opinion about the Kelly Michaels case shifted *before* the case reached the Appellate Division. As Debbie Nathan has since described it, the Rabinowitz article in May 1990 brought national attention to the case. After that, Nathan "was deluged with calls from filmmakers, journalists, and television reporters. Public opinion began shifting in Michaels's favor."[217] By the time the case was actually heard by the Appellate Division in early 1993, Kelly Michaels had become a cause célèbre. There were several stories on national television and in national magazines casting the case as a witch-hunt. There was little or no voice in response, especially since prosecutors are not supposed to argue their cases in the press. The appellate judges in New Jersey, who lived and worked in the greater New York City media market, would already have heard the witch-hunt narrative about the Kelly Michaels case long before it arrived at their court. It appears that the long delay in arrival time was strategic.

If there has ever been an appellate case where it was clear that the decision was made before the oral argument, this was it. Rabinowitz reported, "No one sitting at the February appellate hearing could miss the controlled scorn evidenced by the three judges."[218] "Michaels Case Headed for Remand," the *New Jersey Law Journal* announced with confidence immediately after the oral argument. As they put it:

> Sometimes an appeals court can so telegraph its views on a case that reading its intentions becomes not a question of whether they will, say, overturn a criminal conviction, but rather what new guidelines it will issue in ordering a new trial.[219]

They were correct about the outcome.

Oral arguments in the case were on February 1, 1993. The court issued its 118-page decision in March; it was a resounding victory for the defense. The Appellate Division accepted the arguments about repetitive interviews and child suggestibility; it also held that the expert testimony of Eileen Treacy should not have been allowed. The court ruled that the defendant could not be retried without a "taint hearing"—something not previously recognized in New Jersey law—to assess the reliability of the children's statements. In short, the defense prevailed on every issue except those pertaining to Ralph Underwager; even an Appellate Division that was highly receptive to the defense could not rehabilitate him.

The New Jersey Appellate Division repeated the false claim that "it was patently obvious that the [first] child's comment was misunderstood and that the child was referring to the rubbing of his back and not the anal penetration."[220] The court did not confront the actual content of this child's initial statements or the details of the adult testimony surrounding it. The Appellate Division would have had in its possession the testimony of Laura Hadley, the medical assistant who flatly contradicted this claim. Instead, the judges apparently relied on the pure speculation of Jonas Rappeport, who did not actually review the evidence on this point.[221]

How the case actually evolved was also considered irrelevant by the court, which stated early in the opinion that a "child-specific recitation of the alleged abusive acts would serve no useful purpose at this juncture."[222] This would be true if the only issue before the court was a question of law—the usual function of an appellate court. In fact, the appellate court was substituting its own judgment for that of the trial court on the issue of how the children were interviewed. Indeed, there is significant irony in the fact that the Michaels case is known for the requirement, established by Appellate Division, of a "taint hearing" because there *was* a full airing of the suggestibility issue in a pre-trial hearing in 1987. The proceeding was not labeled a taint hearing, but the pretrial motion by the defense to dismiss the charges contained all of the same arguments.[223] The defense argued that the investigative interviews were unduly suggestive and rendered the children's statements too unreliable to be admitted at trial.

Superior Court Judge William F. Harth, who tried the case, took this issue seriously. He heard days of testimony from two defense psychologists, and he scrutinized the interviews himself, making notes on twenty taped interviews. "Judge Rules Testimony of Children in Day-care Case Wasn't Tainted," the *Star Ledger* reported on May 1, 1987. As explained below, the *Star Ledger's* description is apparently the remaining archival record of this hearing. According to Donna Leusner, who covered the hearing:

> [Judge] Harth read from portions of the preschoolers' grand jury testimony and individually critiqued more than 20 taped interviews conducted by state investigators before the grand jury session. . . . Harth cited numerous examples when questions that could be construed as leading drew negative responses. . . . During some interviews, children corrected or disagreed with investigators.[224]

Such findings of fact are normally accorded substantial deference on appeal because trial judges are closer to the evidence and are better positioned to evaluate the credibility of witnesses. But there was a highly unusual development in this case, one that has escaped notice in the witch-hunt narrative: all of the court records of that important pre-trial hearing disappeared or were mislaid. They were never located during the appeals process. When it became clear on appeal that the official record of this crucial fact-finding hearing was missing, the state moved "for a limited remand before that court to have the record reconstructed."[225] Remarkably, the Appellate Division denied the request. This freed the appellate court to make its own factual findings, unconstrained by what the judge who actually heard the tapes had concluded. Were it not for these highly unusual developments—both the loss of the transcript and the refusal of the Appellate Division to remand the issue to the fact-finding tribunal for the creation of a full record on appeal—this case could not have been overturned on the appellate court's own decision that the interviews were overly suggestive.

The appeal was argued in February 1993; the court issued its decision in March. The court made sweeping factual claims about the interviews after stating that a child-specific analysis "would serve no useful purpose." Sara Sencer-McArdle prepared a long memorandum documenting factual errors in the opinion of the Appellate Division.[226] But history, in this instance, was written by the court. Their factual mistakes are now enshrined in this landmark opinion.[227]

Fearing that this precedent would make it unduly difficult to prosecute child sexual abuse cases, the state appealed to the New Jersey Supreme Court. The court initially declined to hear the case, apparently reasoning that the issues were moot since the state was unlikely to retry Michaels. The court indicated the state could refile its petition for Supreme Court review only if the prosecution declared its intention to retry Michaels. Demonstrating how strong they considered the evidence in the case, the prosecutor's office indicted that it *would* retry Michaels if they won the appeal. The New Jersey Supreme Court agreed to hear the case, and the battleground then shifted to the academic field of psychology.

Academics Enter the Fray

The academic subfield of child psychology was rocked by McMartin. When the case began in 1983, the law was slanted against children as witnesses. Children younger than seven or eight were rarely allowed to testify, juries were often instructed that children were not as trustworthy as adults, and in many states child molestation cases could go forward only if there was some form of corroboration beyond the word of a child. This state of affairs was based more on perception and prejudice than on a proven body of facts, and a few psychologists started doing research that challenged those conceptions. During the mid-1980s, Professor Gail Goodman was considered a leader in the field; her research was featured in a *New York Times* article in November, 1984 captioned "Studies of Children as Witnesses Find Surprising Accuracy."[228] The article summarized studies of children as witnesses from a special issue of the *Journal of Social Issues*. One study found that five- and six-year-olds were as accurate as college students in recounting a staged event in which someone burst into a room and gave a fifteen-second harangue. These studies contributed to legal reforms that allowed younger children to testify, eliminated jury instructions that discounted children as witnesses, and eliminated the requirement that their testimony be corroborated. Those reforms opened the door to the cases that later became the core of the witch-hunt narrative.

In the wake of the McMartin case, it seemed inevitable that the positive view of children as witnesses would be tempered. There was no question that some children had come to believe in things that had not actually happened. There was also no question that adults had misunderstood children in various ways, reading into their responses much more than what the children actually said. How the field of child psychology would respond to those problems was an issue of grave concern, particularly to those who feared an overreaction. Writing in the *Los Angeles Times* on the day after the McMartin verdicts, psychologist Carol Tavris referred to Gail Goodman's research with approval and worried that "legitimate concerns about falsely accusing an innocent adult . . . not cause us to falsely disbelieve an innocent child."[229] This caution did not take hold among child psychologists in the academy. Instead, there was a concerted effort to discredit Goodman's research and promote a new line of studies to emphasize that children were highly suggestible.[230] This included efforts to paint Goodman as an extremist and portray a paradigm shift in the field through a process that, at times, looked more like a political campaign than a scientific endeavor. These developments came to a head in the appellate phase of the Michaels case. Before then, the arguments made on behalf of Michaels and others were largely advanced by the likes of Ralph Underwager, who lacked an academic affiliation and had considerable baggage as an expert witness.[231] All of this changed dramatically in 1993 with publications and related research by a pair of high-stature academic psychologists: Stephen Ceci of Cornell University and Maggie Bruck, then from McGill University, currently at Johns Hopkins University. Ceci and Bruck published two academic articles—one in *Psychological Bulletin,* the other in the *Report of the Society for Research in Child Development*—both of which specifically criticized the Michaels case. They also received significant publicity that year for the "Mousetrap Study," which was linked to the Kelly Michaels case in a front-page story in the *New York Times.* Finally, Ceci and Bruck coauthored a "friend of the court" brief, known to lawyers as an amicus brief, directly in support of Michaels. Though not an academic publication per se, this amicus brief, which came to be known as the "Concerned Scientists" brief, was later published in its entirety in a special issue of *Psychology, Public Policy and Law,* a journal of the American Psychological Association. It has since become a prominent document among academic child psychologists. The brief gave newfound credentials to the witch-hunt narrative about the Kelly Michaels case.

The "Synthesis" in Psychological Bulletin

The first important publication by Ceci and Bruck, "Suggestibility of the Child Witness: A Historical Review and Synthesis," surveyed the literature concerning children as witnesses and concluded that "the field of children's testimony is in turmoil, but a resolution to seemingly intractable debates now seemed attainable."[232] The review began with descriptions of "two recent court cases in which child witnesses provided critical eyewitness testimony"; the first was Kelly Michaels, and the second was Country Walk (the subject of the next chapter). Ceci and Bruck reviewed the literature over seventy years and described examples of five recent studies that supported the idea of children being more suggestible than adults. They also described five studies supporting the view that children are no more suggestible than adults, crediting Goodman with "doing more [than other researchers] to redress the historical imbalance" caused by decades of "research criticizing and belittling the accuracy and suggestibility of child witnesses." Recognizing this accomplishment, Ceci and Bruck nevertheless took a different view of Goodman's work. They also took Gary Melton, a past president of the American Psychological Association's Division on Psychology and Law, to task for criticizing statements, in a dissenting opinion in *Maryland v. Craig*, that children are substantially more suggestible than adults. Acknowledging that there are studies supportive of differing positions on this issue, Ceci and Bruck argued that these schools of thought cannot be resolved by "a point-by-point criticism of the methodological weaknesses of each study.[233] Instead, they proposed examining "the causal mechanisms that may underlie suggestibility effects."

The end of the discussion was also inconclusive, but Ceci and Bruck took the position that "it seems likely" future studies of interviewing techniques will lead to the conclusion that children are more suggestible than previously thought. Somewhat surprisingly, then, the authors go on to say:

> Clearly, more research is needed on this important topic before these conclusions can be accepted, even though many examples consistent with the claim that interview bias has large effects on children's reports can be found in legal case files.[234]

They proceeded to say that "this can be seen explicitly in the Kelly Michaels case," quoting about twenty lines from a single interview in the case. It is the same interview that Rabinowitz excerpted in *Harper's*, where the child was uncooperative and told the interviewer he hated him (and allegedly ended the interview by saying it was all lies). Ceci and Bruck then claimed that this interview was "characteristic of many of the state's interviews."[235] A systematic analysis of the case demonstrates this child's statements were not characteristic of many interviews; indeed, his interview was unusual in several ways.[236] But the misapplication of laboratory results to specific cases had begun.

The Mousetrap Study in the New York Times

Soon thereafter, Ceci and Bruck were featured on the front page of the *New York Times* in a story headlined "Studies Reveal Suggestibility of Very Young Witnesses."[237] The article described the findings of research by Ceci and Bruck that had not yet been published but would quickly become a staple in the witch-hunt narrative and in defense briefs in child molestation cases. The study is known popularly as "the Mousetrap Study."[238] Children in this study were interviewed about numerous events, after verifying in advance with their parents whether or not these events had ever happened to their child. One of the fictitious events was getting one's hand caught in a mousetrap and having to go to the hospital to have it removed. Faced with children who had never had their hand caught in a mousetrap, the experiment was designed to see whether repetitive questioning over ten weeks would cause children to falsely claim that they had had their hand caught in a mousetrap. When the children were interviewed in this experiment, they were told:

> I am going to read some things that may have happened to you, and I want you to think real hard about each one of them that I am going to read. Try to remember if it really happened.[239]

The children were interviewed seven to ten times over a ten-week period. They were, as it turns out, highly accurate in reporting true, salient events. Approximately one-third of the children, however, falsely assented to questions about an event that had not occurred. Much to the surprise of the authors, the number of false assents did *not* increase over time. The results did not demonstrate the kind of suggestibility they had hypothesized. But there was one particularly dramatic result: a child who originally said he had never been to the hospital spun a detailed story about getting his finger caught in a mousetrap and going to the hospital. The *New York Times* featured a sidebar with excerpts from the weekly progression of that child's answers, titled "How the Questions Become the Answers." It featured the boy's response when asked, in the final interview, "how did it happen?"

> I was looking and then I didn't see what I was doing and it [finger] got in there somehow. . . . The mousetrap was in our house because there's a mouse in our house. . . . The mousetrap is down in the basement, next to the firewood. . . . I was playing a game called "Operation" and then I went downstairs and said to Dad, "I want to eat lunch," and then it got stuck in the mousetrap. . . .[240]

This detailed account seems to provide strong evidence of how children could be led into producing complete narratives of fictitious events through the process of suggestive interviewing. Several months later, the same boy was interviewed on national television by John Stossel, who featured Ceci and Bruck's research in a segment on *20/20* that linked these results specifically to the Kelly Michaels case. Ceci told Stossel:

> What we do [in our experiments] is a pale version of what happens in real cases. It doesn't come close, for example, to what was done in the Kelly Michaels case.[241]

It was a convincing argument. It was also a serious misrepresentation of what happened in the Michaels case. Children were not told by interviewers that

Kelly Michaels had committed specific acts of sexual abuse, let alone week after week. Moreover, no child in the case was interviewed anywhere close to ten times in the investigation.[242] Surprisingly, the "Discussion" section of the article that reported these results did not focus on the study that, in overall terms, did not confirm their hypothesis. There was a single sentence about the study, followed by a lengthy discussion of something the authors called a "replication study" containing a "modification" in protocol. But the modification made it a significantly different study; the modification was that "each week the interviewer *informed the child that they had actually experienced the fictitious event* and then asked them if they remembered having done so."[243] The results from this study were also published separately.[244]

The "modified" version of the experiment produced much more dramatic results, including "a reliable increase in children's claims of having remembered fictitious events" over a twelve-week period.[245] In the modified experiment, there was also an eleventh interview, conducted by someone different from the earlier interviewer. The authors reported that after ten weeks, "56 percent of children reported at least one false event as true."[246] But the difference between the first study—which did not create the hypothesized results—and the "modified" version, which did, was lost on the media. *New York Times* health columnist Jane Brody made this same mistake, claiming that asking children to "think real hard" about events could cause them to believe fictitious events.[247] The media myth had far outgrown the results of the study. Indeed, in an article that received virtually no attention in the mass media, the child who spun the elaborate tale about getting his finger caught in a mousetrap revealed in a follow-up interview that it was "just a story." Ceci and his coauthors allowed that "the results of this follow-up study show clearly that the source misattributions did not create long-lasting memories."[248] But the study *did* impart a long-lasting sense to the contrary in public discourse about child suggestibility. Long after this child recanted, defense attorneys were still attaching the videotape of his appearance on *20/20* as "evidence" of child suggestibility.

"Translating Research into Policy"

Another important publication that year, also by Ceci and Bruck, came from the Society for Research in Child Development (SRCD). The article, "Child Witnesses: Translating Research into Policy," appeared in the Fall 1993 issue of SRCD's *Social Policy Report.* In this publication, Ceci and Bruck focused largely on "stereotypical knowledge," which they described as "the tendency to extrapolate from stereotypical knowledge to provide erroneous but plausible accounts of non-witnessed events."[249] Could being told that someone is "bad," for example, lead a child to create a whole narrative about sexual abuse? Some children *were* told that Kelly Michaels was "bad" during their interviews in the case. The authors described the "Sam Stone" experiment, not yet published but already in press, which was designed to test the effects of such "stereotype induction." Children were told over a one-month period about Sam Stone, a clumsy clown who often broke things. Sam later visited the nursery school for two minutes, "amiably interacting" but *not* breaking anything or acting clumsy. The next day, children were shown a torn book and a soiled teddy bear and asked about how it happened. In this phase of the experiment, "few children claimed to have seen Sam Stone do these things."[250]

In the second phase of the experiment, children were interviewed five times over ten weeks. They were asked leading questions such as "I wonder whether Sam Stone was wearing long pants or short pants when he ripped the book." At the end of this ten-week period, a different interviewer asked each child what happened when Sam visited their school. As Ceci and Bruck reported:

> When asked, 72% of the 3- and 4-year-olds said Sam Stone had ruined at least one of the items in question (the book or bear). When they were explicitly asked, 45% of the 3- and 4-year-olds replied that they actually had seen him do these things, as opposed to merely being told that he did.[251]

The study was also conducted with an older age group. Only 11 percent of the five- and six-year-olds claimed to have observed Sam damage any items. Ceci and Bruck concluded that "stereotype formation interacts with suggestive questioning to a greater extent for younger than older children." They did not highlight the related result that even among the youngest children almost half of those who *appear* to have adopted a stereotype from external sources readily identified the source when asked. If half of the young children who will adopt a stereotype based on external factors will also make it clear that they learned the information secondhand, then this phenomenon would be apparent in a criminal case through simple cross-examination. But none of the children in the Kelly Michaels trial indicated under cross-examination that what they knew about Michaels came from being told by someone else. There *were* children who said this in the interview process, but they were not included in the case, although some of their interviews have been cited as if they were. Nor were any of the children subjected to five to ten weeks of such questioning before disclosing abuse.

Ceci and Bruck's conclusion about this study is reasonable, but their description of the questions in the study was misleading. The questions were not merely "suggestive"; they actually contained declarative statements. The children were *told repeatedly over time* that Sam Stone had done specific acts. This is important in considering the application of these findings to actual cases. No child in the Michaels case was subjected to such questioning by investigators.

Ceci and Bruck's Brief for the Defense

Why did both of these articles and the *New York Times* story about the Mousetrap Study refer specifically to the Michaels case? Did Ceci and Bruck have a particular interest in the case? The answer became clearer several months later when the two authored a "friend of the court" brief that supported Kelly Michaels. But even then, the full extent of their involvement with the defense was not disclosed. The brief, which was presented as an independent voice from the scientific community, was filed by Amy Gershenfeld Donella, a former public defender in New Jersey. But it had been requested by Robert Rosenthal, one of Michaels's defense lawyers, who played an active, but undisclosed, role in actually writing the brief. In their 1995 book, Ceci and Bruck state that "transcripts of the children's interviews and of lower court of appeals documents became available to us when we co-authored an amicus brief."[252] But filing an amicus brief does not provide parties with access to a sealed transcript. And even if it did, this brief was written more than two months before the order that permitted the "concerned scientists" to enter the cases as friends of the court.[253]

The email that Bruck sent to solicit signatures for this brief said she "spent a tremendous amount of time" going through the interviews and "in fact every interview is a goldmine of horrifying examples of bad interviewing techniques."[254] However, a draft version of the brief that circulated among defense lawyers before it was filed in the Michaels case contained bracketed comments, in all caps, such as "Robert put in examples, " "Robert is this correct?" and "Robert can you put in a section for [this child]."[255] Robert Rosenthal, the defense lawyer, clearly played a pivotal role in linking Ceci and Bruck's research to the facts of the Michaels case. In their 1995 book, Ceci and Bruck would credit Rosenthal for "verifying information against the trial transcripts."[256] More recently, Ceci's vita was changed to credit Rosenthal *as a co-author* of the Concerned Scientists brief. The designation bears out that Rosenthal played a significant and undisclosed role in crafting the Concerned Scientists brief.

These facts undercut the claim that Ceci and Bruck made to being centrists who were not affiliated with the prosecution or the defense side of the issue. While working with the defense in the Michaels case, Ceci and Bruck sought to paint Gail Goodman as a "pro-prosecution extremist."[257] Goodman was not an extremist, and she was not aligned with the prosecution. But she was opposed to the idea of special taint hearings for children, and she viewed the new wave in child suggestibility research as having a defense slant. She had not testified in several years; before that, she testified three times for the prosecution and three times for the defense.[258] Moreover, she was described as one of the "leading scholars" in the field in a 1991 publication of papers from an APA-sponsored conference on child suggestibility at Cornell University.[259] During this same time period, Ceci, on the other hand, has claimed that he was hired "by both sides" in the Finje case in Florida, when in fact he was hired by the defense.[260] He never disclosed his affiliation with the defense in the Country Walk case (discussed in the next chapter), and, although John Stossel reported that Ceci never testified for the defense, he did so again in the Foeller case in Michigan a month after the program was aired.[261] In a pre-trial deposition, Ceci allowed that his research has a "pro-defense orientation."[262]

The reason these affiliations are important to the Michaels case is that the Ceci and Bruck brief claimed there had been a "paradigm shift" in the field of child psychology. They were essentially claiming there was now a scientific consensus that they were right. But their approach to making the argument looked a lot more like politics than science: they engaged in a signature drive for their amicus brief, and they engaged in negative tactics against the opposition. Forty-three people signed the brief, although many were not actually researchers in the areas covered by it. Indeed, fewer than a third of the signators had published research that was cited in the brief. Moreover, it is not clear who was asked to sign. Ceci boasted that only three people declined to sign the brief, but there are more than three people who had published relevant studies challenging Ceci and Bruck's view whose names do not appear on the brief. The state filed a rare motion opposing the filing of this amicus brief, arguing in part that the excerpts from the child interviews:

> fail to adequately inform the Court of the contexts in which certain questions were asked, and most importantly, fail to inform the Court whether it was the interviewer or the child victim who initiated a discussion of certain allegations.[263]

Courts routinely permit the filing of such amicus briefs, and the New Jersey Supreme Court granted permission for this one to be filed. When prosecutors realized that Goodman, a leading academic in the field, did not sign the brief, they asked the court to reconsider its decision because there was a much larger disagreement in the field than was represented in the brief. The significance of Goodman's work is evident in the fact that her publications accounted for more citations in the reference section of the eventual brief than any other scholar, including Ceci and Bruck. The court, which one would not expect to get involved in an academic dispute, declined the request.

What became known as the Concerned Scientists brief summarized studies that supported Ceci and Bruck's view about the suggestibility of young children, and it weighed in on requiring taint hearings—a mechanism for keeping children's testimony away from the jury in certain cases. The brief described recent experiments, mostly conducted by Ceci and Bruck, about "the conditions under which preschool children are most suggestible."[264] The brief also contained various excerpts from the investigative interviews in the Michaels case and a four-page appendix with information about the interviews and the emergence of allegations made by all twenty children at trial. (The appendix is riddled with errors and misleading statements.[265]) The brief argued that the interviews in the Michaels case were "so faulty that they may have substantially increased the risk that the children's subsequent reports were mere reflections of interviewers' suggestions."[266] It is unclear whether the brief influenced the court, although that has certainly been a central claim in the witch-hunt narrative. But, as law and psychology professor Tom Lyon has pointed out, the New Jersey Supreme Court cited Goodman's work more than it cited Ceci and Bruck's.[267] Its effect on the judiciary remains unclear, but there is no question that the Concerned Scientists brief became highly influential in the field of psychology.

The New Jersey Supreme Court Decides

The New Jersey Supreme Court heard the case on January 31, 1994. Michaels changed lawyers on the eve of the oral argument, discharging Robert Rosenthal and hiring Alan Zegas, who was well known from the Glen Ridge sexual assault case. "The celebrated Margaret Kelly Michaels child sex-abuse case" is how the *New Jersey Law Journal* described it at the time.[268] Four months later, a unanimous court sustained the appellate court's decision.

The immediate significance of the New Jersey Supreme Court opinion was that Michaels could be retried only if the state first conducted a taint hearing to assess whether pre-trial interviews were so suggestive as to render the children's testimony inadmissible.[269] The Essex County prosecutors could still proceed against Kelly Michaels—but they would have to have a hearing to determine child by child whether any had been unduly tainted by the interview process. The prosecutors assessed how many of the children in the case were likely to sustain such a hearing. In their view, a solid case could be built around the original grand jury counts, which came well before any of the contested actions in the child-suggestibility defense, and the counts pertaining to David Applegate, the child who was never interviewed by DYFS. In July 1993, months after the original appellate decision overturning the convictions, Essex County Prosecutor Clifford Minor released a statement, after he consulted the families involved in the matter, explaining that the case would be retried.[270] A year and a half later, after the State Supreme Court had upheld the decision of the Appellate Division, the state decided to drop the charges. Minor said that deciding whether or not to try the case at this point "was the most difficult decision he has faced since taking office." John S. Redden, first deputy assistant prosecutor, elaborated:

> While the issue is not one which is free from doubt, and while strong arguments can be made on either side of the issues, the state has decided after careful consideration and reflection that this case, which is nearly 10 years old, should be brought to a conclusion at this time.[271]

Charges against Kelly Michaels were dropped the first week of December 1995. With that, the criminal case was over and New Jersey had become the most prominent state to establish a precedent for so-called taint hearings. Michaels, freed from the possibility of retrial, then filed multiple claims for wrongful prosecution. Some were later dismissed on legal grounds; others were quietly dropped after the state withdrew its demand that Michaels pay the state's attorneys fees for what the state considered a meritless claim. But the victory in the criminal case meant much more than releasing Michaels from jail; it solidified the witch-hunt narrative with the stamp of academic approval.

Conclusion

The Kelly Michaels case represents a turning point in the contemporary history of child sexual abuse in the United States. It was the first well-known case in which a hard-fought conviction was later overturned on appeal. The witch-hunt narrative that has been built around the case claims that the reversal represents a return to reason, a collective coming back to our senses after an era marked by a "believe the children" attitude that accepted sexual abuse allegations without an appropriate degree of skepticism. The result has been portrayed as a triumph of justice, leaving no room for the possibility that *any* of the children in the case had actually been sexually abused.

This chapter has argued that the conventional wisdom is wrong; it is built on misrepresentations about the earliest children in the case and about the investigative interviews that followed. Moreover, it is built on complete denial of the well-documented history of extreme behavioral symptoms and pediatric visits *during* 1984–85. It is also built on gross overgeneralizations from a few children and, worse, on "excerpts" of interviews that have been edited so as to alter their meaning.

Why was this revisionist history possible? Several factors help supply an answer. First, the case was not handled in an ideal fashion. That would have been practically impossible, of course, since multi-victim cases with young children were new and prosecutors were learning how to handle them. Nevertheless, the Essex County Prosecutor's Office did a good job of investigating and presenting the original charges to a grand jury. But when DYFS began its own investigation, there were enormous consequences for the criminal case that were not fully understood at the time. Without a plan for coordinating the investigation, some children were interviewed twice simply because the original DYFS interviews were conducted without anyone from the prosecutor's office being present. This opened the door to erroneous portrayals of these disclosures as coming after "repetitive" interviews. Key children in early June who made statements to Lou Fonolleras and, days later, to an investigator from the prosecutor's office have been inaccurately portrayed as disclosing after multiple interviews.

Second, the case was enormous in scope. Given that there were more than eighty investigative interviews, all it took was a small number of inappropriate interviews to provide enough fodder for a snippet-based argument that such evidence was "typical" or "characteristic" of the entire case. Those possibilities would expand significantly if, as happened on appeal, such arguments relied largely on children who were never in the case. This was made possible, of course, by the worst interviews conducted by Fonolleras, late in the investigation. Had the entire case been based only on the earliest children interviewed, it might well have resulted in a conviction upheld on appeal, on the basis of the cross-corroborating evidence of three or four "untainted" boys. Instead, those children have practically been forgotten; ironically, the legacy of the case is now based largely on the most suspect children, only some of whom were actually in the case.

Those factors alone, however, do not explain the rise of the witch-hunt narrative. After all, even with a flawed case, the prosecution prevailed with the jury. The most important factors in assessing the rise of the witch-hunt narrative were external to the case. Changes in public opinion and changes in the world of academic psychology were both critical. The role of the media in promoting the narrative cannot be overestimated. Neither can the role of the McMartin case, which left the public wondering how such a large case could result in no convictions, and left academic psychologists wondering how their own profession had apparently become complicit in promoting a "believe the children" attitude that was unduly credulous. The significance of the McMartin case is clear in the reactions to the Nathan and Rabinowitz articles about Kelly Michaels. In the environment that prevailed before the McMartin case ended, Nathan's argument did not capture the public imagination, but in the immediate aftermath of the McMartin case the Rabinowitz article did. Both authors, and others, quickly drew direct analogies between the cases. Michaels, we were told, was "another McMartin." The common belief was that there was no evidence in the McMartin case, and so, by analogy, there must not have been any in the Michaels case either. It was a kind of innocence-by-association argument that proved to be extraordinarily persuasive, regardless of the actual facts.

The role of academic psychologists was also crucial. They ultimately provided "scientific proof" that convinced many people of children being so suggestible that virtually every allegation in the Michaels case could be chalked up to "child suggestibility." The defense in the Michaels case had to rely on Ralph Underwager—the discredited psychologist—to make this argument at trial. But Underwager had not actually conducted a single study on child suggestibility. By the time the Michaels case reached the New Jersey Appellate Division, there were television and newspaper reports of a new line of research "proving" that children are highly suggestible.[272] The research even made specific references to the Kelly Michaels case. But those references were based on gross exaggerations of the nature of the interviews in Michaels.

Finally, the witch-hunt narrative was almost literally made for TV. Kelly Michaels won her appeal in the media, and then she won in court. Why the media would so willingly endorse a one-sided view of the case can best be understood in connection with the McMartin case. David Shaw of the *Los Angeles Times* won a Pulitzer Prize for criticizing his own newspaper for credulous acceptance of the initial claims in the McMartin case. The witch-hunt narrative had become an award-winning story. Ceci and Bruck did something similar in the field of psychology: they received awards for arguing that their own field had gotten it wrong about child suggestibility. But like Shaw, they did so by going overboard in the opposite direction. Shaw was alert to coverage that did not challenge the prosecution, but he relied on a perspective that never challenged the defense. Ceci and Bruck's view was that Gail Goodman and others were too quick to accept the testimony of children. Their solution was to brand all of the children in the Michaels case as unreliable, without a careful or fair accounting of the underlying facts.

Everyone agrees that the Kelly Michaels case was a turning point. But the claim that it was a movement toward rationality and common sense is contradicted by the facts of the case. The witch-hunt narrative demonstrates the rise of what I call "disconfirmation bias," an approach to these cases that ignores evidence of guilt and exaggerates anything that might be construed as evidence of innocence. The approach brings biases that are precisely opposite of those brought to the McMartin case by Believe the Children. Instead of a rush to convict despite the lack of evidence, there was now apparently a rush to acquit despite evidence of guilt.

6

Going to Extremes

State v. Fuster

The Kelly Michaels case marked the triumph of the witch-hunt narrative in the media and then among academic psychologists. The concern of psychology professor Gail Goodman and others who declined to sign the famous amicus brief in the Michaels case was that it represented a position that unduly discredited children as witnesses. The argument had almost no traction in the context of the Michaels case, however, because the witch-hunt narrative had prevailed so powerfully in the media that it was inconceivable to anyone familiar with various prominent stories about the case that there actually could be substantial evidence of guilt. The "new wave" of research about child suggestibility, as psychology and law professor Tom Lyon dubbed it a few years later, was focused entirely on the possibility of wrongful allegations; it did not acknowledge, let alone consider, how often children do not disclose real abuse when asked.[1]

Were the arguments made on Michaels's behalf so malleable they could be offered in defense of almost any defendant, no matter how powerful the evidence of guilt? Did the "new wave" of research on child suggestibility mean a broader and unjustified attack on the credibility of children would follow? An initial answer was revealed when the same arguments that had been made on behalf of Kelly Michaels were made on behalf of Frank Fuster.

Fuster was the lead defendant in the Country Walk case, which began in Dade County, Florida, in the summer of 1984. See Figure 6.1 for a timeline. The Country Walk case later appeared on Charlier and Downing's famous list of thirty-six cases because it had several "fantastic" features, particularly allegations that involved feces, masks, and killing a bird to scare the children. Debbie Nathan mentioned the case even earlier, so it is fair to say that it was part of the witch-hunt narrative since shortly after Fuster was convicted in 1985. But Ceci and Bruck presented the Country Walk and Kelly Michaels cases as a contrast in their

Figure 6.1 Comprehensive Case Timelines, Initial Complaint to Jury Verdict.

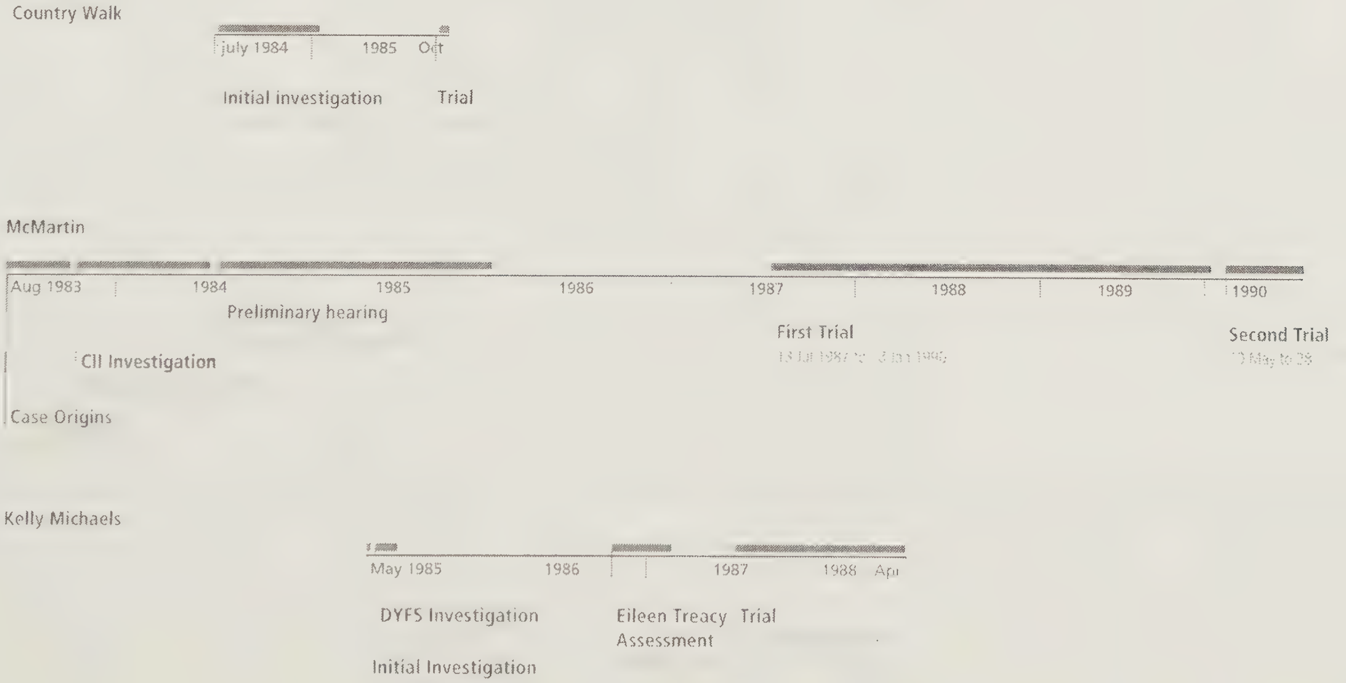

famous review of the literature in 1993. Under this view, the Country Walk case demonstrated clear limits to the suggestibility arguments. Even if the interviews with the children could be criticized in various ways, it was clear that those arguments should not be taken too far. At least this is what Ceci and Bruck said in 1993.

Their position changed between the publication of that article and the publication of *Jeopardy in the Courtroom* two years later. In the book, the Country Walk case is presented as another Kelly Michaels case. Indeed, Maggie Bruck filed an affidavit on behalf of Fuster in 1999, arguing that the results of her laboratory research with Ceci supported the conclusion that the children's statements in the Country Walk case were unreliable. Nathan and others took an even stronger view, painting the Country Walk case as an outrageous miscarriage of justice.

This chapter argues that the Country Walk case demonstrates quite the opposite. There was overwhelming evidence of guilt against Frank Fuster. The case originated in a spontaneous disclosure, and it was built on detailed statements made by children who were *not* subjected to repetitive interviews. Fuster's seven-year-old son tested positive for gonorrhea of the throat, and Fuster had a prior record that included a recent conviction for lewd and lascivious sexual assault on a nine-year-old girl. This evidence and much more is detailed in the first part of this chapter. It takes a significant distortion of the evidence to suggest this case was anything but a solid conviction.

One of Ceci and Bruck's primary concerns about the kinds of cases discussed in this book is "confirmation bias," the tendency of investigators and interviewers to seek and recognize only things that confirm their existing inclination toward finding abuse. How the Country Walk case has been portrayed in the witch-hunt narrative demonstrates the opposite problem: *disconfirmation bias*. Those who claim this case was a false conviction have looked only for evidence that might support that claim, and they have distorted or overlooked the vast evidence to the contrary. This chapter demonstrates the problem; the final chapter in this book considers the larger implications of this kind of bias on the problem of child sexual abuse.

Part One: The Original Case (1984–85)

Origins of the Country Walk Babysitting Service

The Country Walk housing development was built in Dade County, Florida, during the late 1970s by the Arvida Corporation in association with the Disney Corporation. The development had upscale suburban homes with large yards and picket fences. The logo for the development was a Tom Sawyerish boy, flopped back in a straw hat with a fishing pole. The development was designed to evoke a kind of country ideal.

Frank Fuster bought a house in the development with his second wife, Martha. They had been married since 1976 and had a son, Noel, who was born in October 1977. Frank and Martha were divorced in 1982, after he was convicted of a sex crime against a child, but the three of them continued to live in the same house. In the summer of 1983, while Martha was in New York City visiting family, Frank met Ileana Flores. Frank and Ileana were married several weeks later at the Country Center, the recreational center at County Walk. Frank was thirty-four, Ileana was sixteen. Martha moved out of the house and Frank retained custody of Noel, then six years old.

Frank Fuster had a small home-remodeling business in the early 1980s called Kendall Decorators. He closed this business and started another one, called Mobile Showroom, in 1983. He operated the business out of a warehouse space where he also had an office. In 1984, however, he gave up the warehouse office and converted a playroom in their house into an office. The business barely brought in any income, according to documents that became part of the later legal proceedings; it was unclear how the Fusters could afford to live in Country Walk in 1983–84. In fact, Frank Fuster said in a civil deposition that he had serious financial problems and was "always trying to borrow money."[2] This undoubtedly helps explain why Ileana Fuster started a babysitting service in December 1983. The Fusters took out advertisements in the *Country Times,* a newsletter for the development. And even though commercial businesses were not officially allowed in the development, the director of the Country Walk Center, Joanne Menoher, gave the Fusters' name out to interested parents. Frank had business cards printed up that said "Country Walk Babysitting Service: *We don't say we're the best, but people do talk.*"

The children who attended the babysitting service between December 1983 and August 1984 ranged significantly in age and duration of attendance. Some attended only in the winter or spring. Others were still attending at the Fusters right up to August 8, the last day that any children were there for babysitting. The frequency of attendance at the Fusters varied significantly, with a handful of children attending daily (that is, five days a week) for at least ten weeks. Others went only occasionally. A striking number of children, it was established after the Fusters were arrested, had attended once or twice and never returned (see Figure 6.2). The ages ranged from infants to five years old. Many were preverbal. There were also a few older children at the Fuster house on occasion. The Fusters' son, Noel, was generally home. A neighborhood friend of his, Ned Unger, a nine-year-old, spent time at the Fuster house in the spring of 1984.

Figure 6.2 Overall Attendance Patterns at Country Walk Babysitting Service.

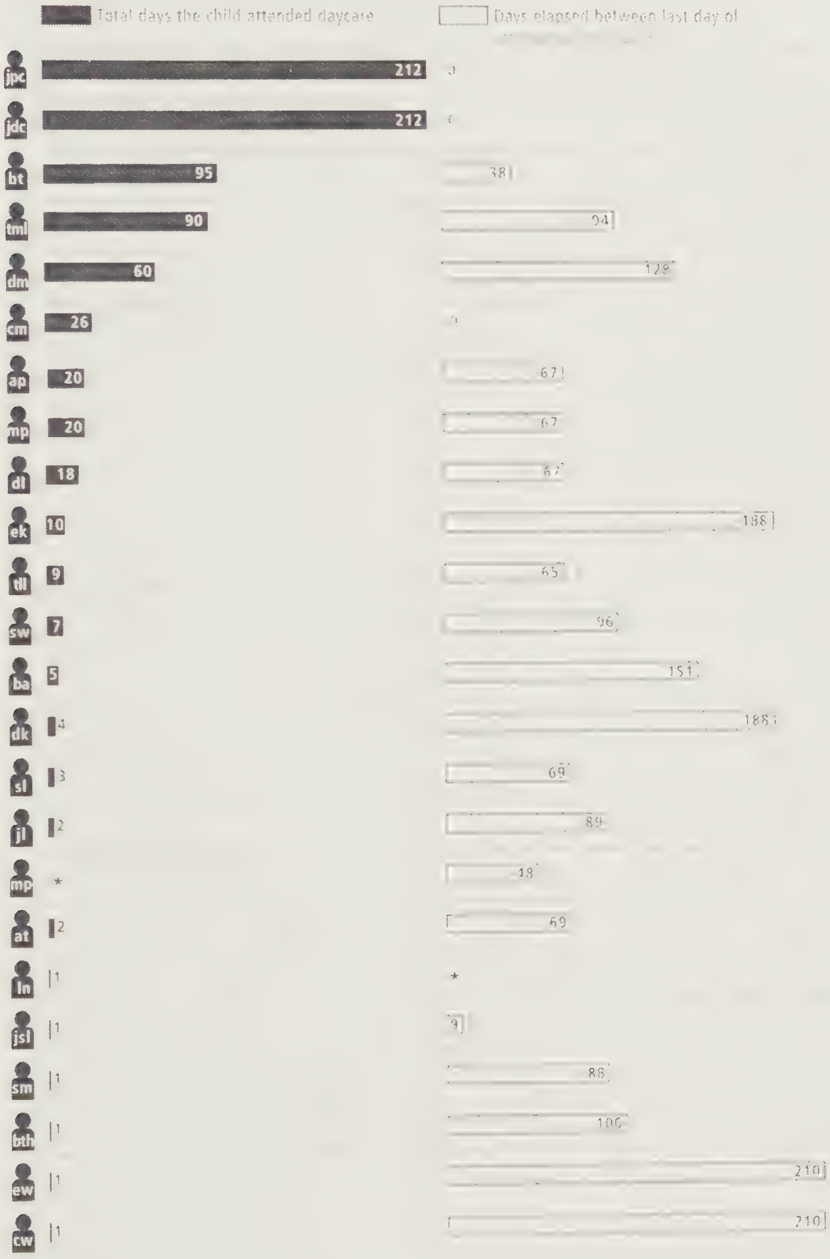

* [illegible]

Four or five months after the babysitting service began, young Donald Menninger made a spontaneous statement that shook his mother. The boy had been attending the Fusters regularly for two months. After spending the day at their house, he casually asked his mother to "kiss my body." His mother, whose family used the term *body* to refer to genitals, asked her son why he would ask such a thing. "Ileana kisses my body," he replied. "Ileana kisses all the babies' bodies." Menninger, who later said she tried hard to maintain her composure, inquired whether Ileana did this to Tom Leventhal, the son of a good friend of hers. Donald said she did. Menninger later testified that Donald awkwardly denied his disclosure hours later. Nevertheless, she pulled her son from the babysitting service immediately and told her friend Betsy Leventhal about the matter, swearing her to secrecy.[3] The information bothered Leventhal so much that she later called the child protective service agency to make an anonymous complaint. An inspector made a cursory visit while Frank Fuster was not home, and the unlicensed babysitting service remained in business.[4] Meanwhile, the operators of the Country Walk development suddenly became quite uncomfortable with the babysitting service. Two letters were sent to the Fusters in July from the managers of the development, informing them that the business was not permitted and must be closed. But it remained open.

At the end of July, a mother whose child had just spent his first day at the Fusters became extremely concerned that something bad had happened to her son there. On July 31, after Emma St. Lorenzo picked up her eighteen-month-old son, John, from the Fusters' she noted to a friend that her son "looked funny."[5] The presence of a rash around John's anus, which she later noticed, raised more concern. At home, St. Lorenzo observed her son hitting himself on the head repeatedly with a wooden block. She had never seen him behave like this. She examined him more closely and concluded that his eyes looked "very glazed."[6] After taking the wooden block away and moving him to another room, she observed the boy banging his head into a sliding glass door. At this point she "became convinced . . . he had been drugged."[7] She contacted her husband and their son's pediatrician, who told her that too much time had passed to make a blood test reliable. Though this may have been true, it seems more likely that the pediatrician's goal was to calm down a seemingly overprotective mother.

St. Lorenzo started asking around about the Fusters. It did not take long before she spoke to Joanne Menoher at the Country Center and learned of a rumor that children had been sexually molested at the Fusters. St. Lorenzo proceeded to call a friend who worked in television news and who had a contact at the state attorney's office.[8] That woman, Jan Hollingsworth, later wrote a book about the case. The police investigation into the Country Walk Babysitting Service began several days later.

The Early Investigation (August 3–8)

On Friday, August 3, 1984, Detective Donna Meznarich was assigned to investigate the possible sexual assault of young children at the Fuster home. Meznarich was an eleven-year veteran of the Miami Dade Police Department; her last seven years had been in the Sexual Battery Unit. But this case would pose investigative challenges she had not previously faced. The children who attended the Fusters' babysitting service were as young as three and a half months. The oldest children using the babysitting service were four or five; most were younger. The police department was not used to interviewing children this young, even in this unit; seven was about the youngest that they tended to see. Older children were much more common, even for child molestation charges. Further complicating the investigation, the children who attended the Fusters' babysitting service ranged widely in attendance patterns. From reports from parents, it was thought that the Fusters had between four and six children in their house on an "average" day; about half would be infants, the other half toddlers. Whether the authorities could even locate all of the children who attended the Fusters was unclear. And whether the children would talk to someone not trained to think about the developmental capabilities of young children was also unknown.

Before leaving the office that day, Detective Meznarich spoke with Allison and Victor Lucas, both of whom were police officers. Their daughter Tammy, who was four years old, had attended the Fusters' nine times in May. The Lucases informed Meznarich that their daughter had an inflamed vaginal itch after going there, but they did not attribute it to the Fusters at the time. While attending the babysitting service, their daughter had also said something about a "big boy" who had a mask and scared her. She even said that she had slept in "big boy's" room. At the time, the Lucases thought those comments referred to Noel. They later learned that Frank Fuster was the "big boy."[9]

The first interview outside the office, later that day, was with Menoher, the recreational coordinator for the Country Center. Detective Meznarich was told about Donald Menninger startling his mother in late April by asking her to kiss his penis one day after attending the Fusters'. Joanne Menoher had heard this story from Betsy Leventhal. Menoher testified that she "told me, as she said, in confidence, that she wanted to get something off her chest."[10] After hearing the story, Menoher made an anonymous report to HRS.[11] Menoher supplied Meznarich with the names of numerous families who had used the babysitting service. She also told the detective that Allison Lucas had said that "the children had secret games that parents don't know about."[12]

In the coming days, the detective visited the homes of several families whose children had attended the Fusters' for a considerable period of time. The Liptons had sent two children to the Fusters; their two-year-old son, Daniel, had attended regularly for months and their four-year-old daughter, Jessie, had attended twice in May. The girl said there had not been any "bad touch" when she was there, and the boy proved nearly impossible to interview. As indicated in the police report:

> Due to his age and the fact that he has a speech impediment, his mother was present. This investigator attempted to ask Daniel Lipton questions; however, he ran around the room ignoring them.[13]

His mother conveyed that the boy was saying "Frank" hurt his "pee-pee" and "toosh," but it is clear the detective could not understand the boy on her own.

She then tried to interview Becky Taylor, a four-year-old girl who attended the Fusters' almost daily for five months. Her name had already come up in several conversations, but she also proved nearly impossible to interview. Meznarich noted: "This investigator attempted to interview Becky Taylor; however, she first hid behind the sofa, then behind her mother."[14] Before the interview was over, Allison Lucas, a friend and neighbor of the Taylors, arrived with her daughter Tammy. Tammy indicated that the Fusters had scared her with a white mask. Becky piped up that it was a green mask. Though Tammy did not disclose anything else, Becky said something about kissing Frank and Ileana Fuster on the lips. What Meznarich had begun to piece together was suspicious but elusive. It was also somewhat bizarre, given the statements about being scared with masks.

Three of the children whom Meznarich had identified and tried to interview were referred to the Rape Treatment Center at Jackson Memorial Hospital. They were seen by Dominique McGinnis, a psychiatric nurse, on August 8. Daniel Lipton, the two-year-old with the speech impediment, was again "interpreted" through his mother. He apparently said that Frank "hit" his "pee pee" and that Ileana had hurt his "toosh."[15] Tammy Lucas, who had earlier disavowed that she experienced anything abusive at the Fusters', also made several incriminating statements. She indicated that "two people at school" had seen her private parts: "Frank and Ileana." According to the nurse's report, the girl also indicated that Frank Fuster had touched her on the "boob" and "climbed" on top of her and kissed her:

> Tammy laid the doll she identified as herself down and placed the large male doll she indicated was Frank on top of her and rubbed the boy doll's penis on the girl doll's vaginal area.[16]

Becky Taylor was also seen that day. Given her age and attendance pattern, she was the child most likely to be able to explain what happened at the Fusters'. But she was extremely avoidant with the detective. The Taylors then brought their daughter to the Sexual Battery Office of the State Attorney's Office, but the girl still had nothing to say. Meznarich described her as "very withdrawn." The interview ended after approximately five minutes. This was not the only failed interview of the day; Meznarich and Assistant State Attorney Christopher Rundle also tried to interview three-year-old Tom Leventhal, the child implicated by Donald Menninger's statements to his mother. The police report indicates simply that the detective "attempted to interview [the boy] but was unable to do so because of his age."[17]

Although there had not yet been any mention of the investigation in the media, word of the investigation was spreading around Country Walk. Fanning the flames of outrage was the discovery that Frank Fuster was on probation for a 1982 conviction for child molestation. Passions were running high among those who had heard about the prior case. A neighbor of the Fusters was arrested outside his house brandishing a gun. Meznarich learned of this unfortunate development while traveling to interview the Cramer family and their two boys. The Cramers did not know the Mennigners or the Leventhals, so they were unaware of the rumors that had been floating around since May. They also did not know about the behind-the-scenes effort by the Arvida Corporation to close the Fusters' illegal babysitting business. They had not even heard about the police investigation in early August. To the contrary, the Cramer children had been at the Fusters' on August 8, the last day the babysitting service was in operation. Sandra Cramer informed the detective that Frank Fuster had told her a day earlier he was discontinuing the babysitting service but that they would continue to babysit her boys anyway.[18]

Meznarich talked with Jason Cramer in his bedroom for fifteen to twenty minutes that night. It was the most substantive statement she had received from any child to date. He was one of the oldest children interviewed and had been there the most recently, literally attending the Fusters' earlier that day. As the detective later reported, Jason disclosed that Ileana had sucked his little brother's penis. He indicated further that she had done the same thing to Donald Menninger and Tom Leventhal. The boy also said that Frank Fuster had taken pictures of children naked.[19] The Cramers were asked to bring their child to the State Attorney's Office the next day for a more formal interview. One might think that the boy's statement would be enough to justify a search warrant. But two days passed before the house was searched. Meanwhile, Meznarich went to the Fuster residence to question the key suspects. The detective did not have a search warrant, so the visit effectively provided the Fusters with an advance warning. Frank denied any wrongdoing and told the detective that "He was never home when the children were there."[20] The detective had already talked to numerous adults and children who said otherwise.

The state attorney for Dade County was Janet Reno, who was appointed U.S. attorney general in 1993. Reno learned in the summer of 1984—primarily from her experience with the inability to prosecute anyone in connection with the Lehrman Day School case[21]—that her office, like most in the country, was ill equipped to handle complaints involving the sexual abuse of young children. Soon thereafter, Reno asked Joseph and Laurie Braga to assist the State Attorney's Office, on an unpaid basis, in interviewing children. The Bragas were adjunct professors at the University of Miami School of Medicine, with training and experience in child development; they had authored a series of books on child development in the 1970s. Jan Hollingsworth later described them as experts in "speaking children." Their philosophy was simple: put the child at ease, assess the developmental level, and engage the child on his or her own level.

The Bragas insisted that all of their interactions with children be videotaped. The primary reason was to reduce the total number of interviews for any given child. They also did not want to leave room for a claim that the children had been coached by the interviewers (an argument that quickly became common in child sexual abuse cases). The idea of videotaping investigative interviews was a first for the office. Hollingsworth later reported that Assistant State Attorney Rundle considered the idea "risky business." He was worried that "any perceived inconsistencies in a child's testimony" could be used against them at trial.[22] This concern seems prescient given the evolution of the witch-hunt narrative, analyzed in the second half of this chapter .

The Initial Braga Interviews (August 9 and 10)

The Bragas interviewed five children on August 9. They had no advance information about the case other than that children had attended the Fusters' for babysitting and may have experienced some form of maltreatment. The children who came to the state attorney's office that day had emerged from Meznarich's investigation. There was a reason for each of these children to be considered worth interviewing formally; what unfolded that first day was enough to sustain the filing of charges against Frank and Ileana Fuster for sexual battery against more than one child. Those charges would take at least two weeks to be considered and crafted. But the first day remains the most important one in the case. It is also the day that would later be overlooked entirely in the witch-hunt narrative about the case.

Four of the five of the children interviewed the first day made statements concerning sexual activities in the Fuster household. The oldest child (Jason Cramer) was by far the most detailed and articulate. The next oldest (Tammy Lucas) also made numerous statements of a sexualized nature. The three youngest children (Joshua Cramer, Tom Leventhal, and Daniel Lipton) were more limited in speaking skills, but at least two of them made statements that appeared to support charges against Frank and/or Ileana Fuster.

Jason Cramer

The first child interviewed by the Bragas was Jason Cramer, an articulate five-year-old. He made detailed and incriminating statements in the first session. Hollingsworth, who later wrote the book *Unspeakable Acts*, described the interview in enough detail to fill thirteen pages.[23] When asked to "show me" what happened at Frank and Ileana's, Jason described something involving his brother: "Iliana's changing his diaper and, uh, playing with his, uh, penis."[24] Unfortunately, this interview was not transcribed into the court record when the tape was played at trial. There were audio difficulties that inhibited the stenographer. Those difficulties have been cited in recent years as a reason the interview cannot be reviewed. But the difficulties were specific to the court reporter, not the videotape. Otherwise it would not have been possible for Hollingsworth to describe this interview in such detail.[25]

Jason Cramer was interviewed again later that day, after the Bragas had interviewed his younger brother, Joshua. The second interview with Jason is arguably the single most important investigative interview in the case. The boy made a remarkably detailed statement about himself and others. This was the primary interview highlighted in the local media when videotapes were made available more than three months later. "The videotapes show low-key conversations between children and Drs. Laurie and Joseph Braga," reported the *Miami Herald*, describing Jason's second session on August 9 as follows:

> The oldest child depicted in the tapes, a pudgy redheaded boy whose name was not released, used anatomically correct dolls in telling the doctors that the Fusters induced the children to play nude games. Those games allegedly led to various sexual assaults on children as young as two years old.
>
> "They were playing ring-around-the-rosy," the child said in the taped interview with the Bragas. "They would dress up naked, all the girls and boys. Frank and Ileana would take their clothes off."
>
> Asked what happened during the game, the child said, "Touch each other." He used the dolls to illustrate the alleged digital penetration of a younger boy's anus. "Frank would stick his finger inside (name deleted) . . . Frank kissed (name deleted) penis."
>
> The boy describes the Fusters engaging in sexual intercourse and other sexual acts with each other in front of the children. He also talks of them sexually assaulting some of the children.[26]

The interview also included disclosures about games involving feces and urine. These statements came after Joseph Braga (JB below; Laurie Braga is LB) asked if Frank Fuster ever just babysat the children or watched movies. This was Jason's reply (JC below), and the questions and answers that followed:

> JC: No he would always play games and stuff. He always played games like pee pee games and ka ka games and butt games. That's what they—
> JB: What is the ka ka game?
> JC: It's a game where they throw poop at each other. Yes.
> JB: You are kidding me?
> JC: No
> JB: What?
> LB: Can you tell us more about that?
> JC: They first went to the bathroom and then they started—they took it out of the toilet with some toilet paper and threw it at each other.
> JB: Who would do that?
> JC: Noel.

The boy's disturbing statements came in response to a simple question of whether Frank Fuster ever babysat the children. And the interviewers did not automatically believe this statement; rather, they sought to assess the statement through the follow-up question, "You are kidding me?" The boy's statements about these grotesque "games" would later be written off as "fantasy" by Dr. Lee Coleman, the defense psychiatrist at trial. But, as documented in the pages to come, these statements were ultimately substantiated in several ways.

The Three Youngest Children

The three youngest children interviewed that day were all too young to testify in court. Joshua Cramer, Jason's one-and-a-half-year-old brother, was interviewed for twenty minutes. He appears to indicate that Ileana took off his clothes and did something with her mouth.[27] The content of his interview is designated as "possible" in Figure 6.5, and he was not interviewed again and played no further role in the case. Tom Leventhal, who had been identified by Donald Menninger months earlier as a victim of Ileana's "body kissing," was three years old, and he provided many one-word responses in his forty-five-minute interview. Tom appears to have conveyed that Frank Fuster touched his penis and had Tom sit on his lap while Frank had no clothes on.[28] Daniel Lipton, the other child interviewed that day, was only two years old and had a speech impediment. Many of Daniel's responses involved taking off clothing. "Take her clothes off," he says at one point after Joseph Braga said: "Show me, Daniel. I want to know. You tell me." There are many references to "pee-pee," enough to infer that there was some kind of pee-pee game. Daniel also clearly said at one point that Becky "took clothes off."[29] But the most seemingly significant statements in this interview were fragmentary. It was clear that this child was never going to play an important role in the case; he was simply too young and too difficult to understand.

Tammy Lucas

The final interview on August 9 was with Tammy Lucas, the daughter of the Miami-Dade police officers. Tammy's fourth birthday was the next day. She had gone to the Fusters' for nine days in May. The interview began with a discussion of Dr. Seuss books and then moved to Peanuts characters and Disney. When the conversation turned to Frank Fuster, Tammy acknowledged knowing him and said "I don't want to go there today." When asked who else went to the same place, Tammy responded with the names Becky and Daniel; but she did not remember Jason or Joshua.

When asked to show "what Iliana would do to Daniel" the girl said "Hit him." Then she added, "Iliana takes her clothes off." It is important to note that there had been no question that contained any kind of reference to nudity or taking off clothing prior to this utterance by the young girl. A few pages later, the girl made a similar statement about Frank Fuster:

> LB: So, show me what they would do to Tammy?
> TL: Something, they did—
> LB: Like that?
> TL: Tickle me.
> LB: Tickle you like that?
> TL: And Frank takes his clothes off.

Soon thereafter, when one of the dolls has been designated as Daniel—one of the children she remembered from the Fusters—Laurie Braga asked simply "Tell me some more, okay?" Tammy's reply: "I will have to take his off, Daniel's clothes off."[30] The girl then got distracted when she has difficulty removing the doll's clothing.

Eventually, once Tammy had acknowledged that the Frank doll should have chest hair (but not a mustache), Laurie Braga asked another open-ended question: "Okay, now show me, would Frank do something to Tammy?" Here is what follows in the transcript:

> [1] TL: (Nodding in the affirmative.)
> [2] LB: Okay, would you show me?
> [3] TL: Oh oh (indicating).

[4] LB: The bird is biting his hand, huh the bird is mad at his hand?
[5] TL: (Indicating.)
[6] LB: Bad hand. What did that hand do? Can you show me?
[7] TL: Wait a second. (Inaudible.)
[8] LB: Yes?
[9] TL: Yuck.
[10] LB: Show me what the hand would do, okay?
[11] TL: Okay.
[12] LB: So you put—would he put his fingers inside?
[13] TL: (Indicating) [Inside of here, Frank did.]

There are three "indicating" notations in this brief and important exchange. A review of the videotape reveals there should be a fourth one, after the "Okay" in line 11. Suffice it to say, the visual content of this videotape is of critical importance. There are pixilated versions of some parts of this interview in circulation because this was one of the portions that the media chose to broadcast when they eventually gained access through a court-mediated agreement. Even without seeing what Tammy was "indicating," it is clear that her memory of the Fuster household was focused on the nudity of children and adults. There is a further deficiency in the official transcription. On line 13 above, where the transcript reads "indicating," the videotape captures the words "Inside of here, Frank did." The girl was interviewed two more times. The second of those interviews was the last investigative interview in the case, conducted on January 28, 1985.[31]

While the initial interviews were being conducted, legal papers were being drawn up to hold Frank Fuster for violating the terms of his probation. He was on probation for a lewd and lascivious assault against a nine-year-old girl in 1981. He had been found guilty by jury in 1982 and was given a suspended sentence. Running a babysitting service out of his home was a serious violation of his probation. So was the fact that he had stopped attending his weekly court-mandated therapy. A prosecutor from the State Attorney's Office telephoned Jeffrey Samek, who was handling Fuster's appeal from the 1982 case, and it was agreed that Fuster would surrender to authorities at 10:00 a.m. on Friday, August 10. With Fuster in custody, Judge Newman had to decide what, if anything, to do with his son, Noel.

Becky Taylor

Shortly after noon on Friday, the Taylors brought their daughter Becky to the State Attorney's Office to be interviewed by the Bragas. Becky was four and a half years old and had gone to the Fusters' five or six days a week from February through June. She even had gone to the beach with the Fusters once. Given her age and her regular attendance, she was one of the most likely children, besides

Jason Cramer, to have relevant information. But she was also the most avoidant child encountered in the investigation. When Meznarich tried to interview her two days earlier, she made no progress. As indicated in the police report: "She hid behind the sofa, then behind her mother." "Refused to sit down." "Ran to the kitchen."[32]

She was interviewed by the Bragas on Friday, August 10, shortly after Frank Fuster surrendered into custody. The interview covers eighty-eight pages of the trial transcript. It is agonizing to read. Becky was avoidant, distracted, and anxious to change the subject. "I hate the question," she says at one point. "Mommy, I am tired of doing this," she adds soon thereafter. Later she says, "I have a hard time talking."[33]

There are isolated moments when a response seems to indicate something untoward. At one point, she talks about Frank and Ileana kissing each other while naked, but when asked on the next page to confirm whether their clothes were on or off, the child says on.[34] She reiterates earlier statements about masks (a white one, and a green one). There are also some frustrating lapses in the stenographic record.[35] Finally, there are statements that clearly suggest the child is holding back; "I don't want you to know" she said at one point, in response to a question about the secret games.[36] And the interview finally ended with the Bragas knowing little more from this child than that she was anxious and not interested in talking about the Fusters.

After this interview concluded, the Bragas interviewed Jason Cramer again with the specific purpose of asking questions that might help support a search warrant. The interview lasted ten minutes. Jason indicated that the children *had* been videotaped by Frank Fuster. Where do they keep the tapes? he was asked. "They hide them in books . . . under the couch," he replied.[37] Also noteworthy in this brief interview is Jason's palpable concern about what would happen to Noel. He seemed particularly worried about Noel getting in trouble for the things that happened at the Fusters'.

Meznarich then joined two state prosecutors and the Bragas to view the videotapes of Jason's interviews on August 9 and 10. The prosecutors concluded that Jason's statements provided probable cause to issue a search warrant for photographs, films, or videotapes. A warrant was prepared to be brought before a judge; it was signed by Judge David M. Gersten at 6:00 p.m. on Friday. The Fusters' house was searched soon thereafter, but the police did not find any evidence of child pornography. This is not surprising since Frank had been given two days of advance notice.

The police took fifty-eight pictures in and around the house, and they seized assorted personal property. Though there was no evidence of child pornography, there were several telling pieces of evidence. First, there were various masks in the house that corroborated the seemingly bizarre statements made about monsters and masks. There was also a crucifix between the mattresses of the Fuster's bed, and some deeply disturbing "family photos." The significance of the crucifix would only be revealed almost a year later, after Ileana pleaded guilty and started talking to prosecutors. The "family photos" contain images that lend support to the idea that Frank might engage in "ca-ca" games. The most unsettling picture recovered was of Noel Fuster perched above a toilet seat, looking scared and confused, in a room with feces smeared on the floor.[38]

The Remaining August Interviews

The first full week of the investigation through the State Attorney's Office was by far the most active interviewing in any week of the entire investigation. There were fourteen videotaped sessions in five days. Eight of the children were being interviewed by the Bragas for the first time. One of those was Noel Fuster, Frank's son. He was seen three times that week by the Bragas, but not as part of the police investigation. Judge Ferguson asked the Bragas to provide an evaluation of where Noel should live. These sessions contained little in the way of incriminating statements beyond a matter-of-fact answer that Frank hit Noel "some days." The boy also said some unlikely things, such as blurting out: "I know how to handle myself. I know how to defend myself." He expressed concern about his father, who he had visited in jail that weekend. He also said things about how he "could save my dad." The Bragas recommended to Judge Ferguson that Noel live with his mother.

The day after the Bragas completed their evaluation, Noel's test results came back. The boy who said his father "never did anything" had gonorrhea of the throat. This was confirmed through a second test. The accuracy, or positive accuracy value, of the test that was employed—called RapID/NH—was 99.76 percent.[39]

Seven other children were seen for the first time by the Bragas that week. Only two were later named in individual charges against Frank or Ileana Fuster: Donald Menninger and Jessie Lipton. Three of the interviews that week were one-time-only. Two children who had been interviewed the week before—Jason and Becky—were interviewed again. Jason provided some additional details; Becky remained elusive and uncooperative.

The two children who were later named in individual charges merit further description.

Donald Menninger

Donald Menninger could be considered the index child for the case. His statement to his mother in late April 1984 was the first significant disclosure in the case. That statement caused his mother to remove Donald from the Fusters' care and to warn her friend Betsy Leventhal, whose son Tom was also implicated by Donald as a victim of Ileana Fuster's sexual abuse. The Menningers were on vacation when Meznarich began the formal investigation on August 3. They were contacted—not by authorities, but apparently by a friend or business associate—during their vacation because of media coverage of the case. It quickly became known as the Country Walk case. Donald Menninger's father (who was named Donald Menninger, Jr.) was the director of property management for the Arvida Corporation, owners and developers of Country Walk. If Mr. Menninger had not been in that position, the case might have become public in April, and the St. Lorenzos might never have had a problem. This proposition, and the various facts supporting it, later gave rise to the civil claims for damages against Arvida. In the initial stages of the case, however, the Menningers were cooperative with authorities. They brought their son to be interviewed on August 14, and they brought him back on August 31.

Donald was four years old and on the borderline for being too young to testify. His first interview with the Bragas is difficult to assess on the basis of the transcript alone. There is a moment, for example, when the boy says "She did it to babies." But whether "did it" was meant to carry the kind of meaning that it does for adults is impossible to ascertain from the transcript. The interviewer, who wanted a clearer response, asked an open-ended follow-up: "Will you show me what Ileana would do to the babies." The boy's response in the transcript is reduced to a parenthetic "*(Indicating)*." The transcript leaves the impression of some kind of wrongdoing by Ileana, but the details are unclear. Meznarich later testified that probable cause to charge Ileana Fuster existed on the basis of Donald Menninger's "statement and demonstrations with dolls."[40]

The boy came in again two weeks later. He apparently came at his mother's insistence. This time, he was far more responsive, and at times quite sexually specific. The boy described Frank Fuster taking off his clothing. "All of them," he said at one point; "Even his underwear."[41] After a description of the children and the Fusters without their clothes, the following exchange occurred:

LB: What are they doing, playing a game? What game would they play?
DM: Pee-pee game.
LB: Show me how to play the pee pee game? You can tell me, it's okay. You won't get in trouble.
DM: Do one at a time.
LB: Okay, do one at a time. This is Frank, right?
DM: (Inaudible.)
LB: What did Frank do?
DM: Here, his penis.

LB: Here's his penis, what did you do with his penis?
DM: (Indicating.) To me.
LB: To you, he would rub his penis against your penis?
DM: I would do this. (Indicating.)
LB: You would?
DM: He made me do that.
LB: He made you do that? What else did he make you do?
DM: Nothing.

It would be useful to see the gestures and "indications" in this exchange, but it is clear this boy played a "pee pee game" with Frank Fuster that had sexualized content. This tape was played at Frank Fuster's parole violation hearing, two weeks before his criminal trial began. It was the only child interview tape played in the proceeding. The judge sentenced Fuster to fifteen years.

Jessie Lipton

One of the final interviews of the week was with Jessie Lipton. The girl was four years old at the time. The Bragas had already interviewed her brother, a two-year-old with a speech impediment. Daniel Lipton attended the Fusters regularly for several months; Jessie went only twice in May. This fact is critical to placing her interview in context. Much has been made of the fact that Jessie described the Fusters as "strangers" in this interview.[42] That would potentially be a discrediting statement if made by, say, Jason Cramer (who had attended regularly for months). But Jessie had not seen the Fusters for four months; and she had only been at their house for babysitting *twice*. Under the circumstances, "strangers" is actually quite accurate. The interview did not result in any significant disclosures. Early in the interview, Jessie made an unsettling and unprompted statement about Ileana Fuster: "She gave me a donut once without any poison on it."[43] It is not clear what motivated the statement, and the follow-up questions do not shed additional light. Jessie indicated she liked going to the Fusters' and she flatly denied any abuse: "They did nothing bad to me."[44] One might read this interview as containing a little too much denial by Jessie. "We didn't play any games at all," she said at one point.

Later she allowed that there was a duck, duck, goose game. She did not indicate that there was anything untoward about the game, but she did make an unusual and unclear statement about another game: "sometimes they say that the person is (inaudible). But I am not dead."[45] Presumably, the word that was inaudible to the stenographer was "dead." If so, this comment would corroborate statements about a threatening game that Jason Cramer called "who's gonna lose their head." On the basis of this interview alone, Jessie Lipton would not have been included in any charges. But she came back in January, at the request of her parents, and made a detailed and incriminating statement. It would become the main focus of case critics, so it is important to keep in mind that the January interview occurred five months after most of the charges against the Fusters had been filed. Jessie Lipton was a late addition to the case, and she did not account for many of the charges against the Fusters.

Five children were interviewed the following week. None of these children disclosed abuse, and none was interviewed a second time. They had no further involvement in the case. That week a thirteen-count indictment was prepared against Frank and Ileana Fuster. It contained almost all of the charges that were ultimately brought against them. The investigation was winding down; there were only four interviews the last week in August. One was the first interview with Brian Arrigan, and next was the final interview with Jason Cramer. There was also another interview with Becky Taylor; it was her third interview alone and she remained extremely avoidant, denying that *any* games were played at the Fusters' and refusing to answer many questions. Finally, Donald Menninger came back, at his mother's request, for his second and final interview, already mentioned.

Brian Arrigan was interviewed on Tuesday, August 27. He was a three-year-old boy who had attended the Fusters' from December through April. In this interview, Brian indicated he had been hit at the Fusters', but he made no statements of a sexualized nature. It likely would have ended with that interview, but the parents asked to come back in late October for a second (and final) interview. The boy eventually made several statements that were far more explicit than anything said in his first interview. "They [Frank and Ileana] took off Tom's clothes," the boy said at one point. Though this interview seems to indicate that the boy witnessed naked games, it is also apparent he was too young to testify. This interview contained several statements that were later used to discredit the children. Brian said something about the Fusters' thinking that he was a mouse. He also said something about how, when they gave him a drink, he "would be dead."[46] One could certainly read this exchange as supportive of the idea that children were drugged in some fashion. But this child was seen as too young to testify, and there were no individual charges related to him.

Detective Meznarich continued to investigate the case throughout the month of August. She sought to interview any families with children who attended the Country Walk Babysitting Service. Given that it was August, some families were on vacation. Others had such young children they could not possibly be interviewed; the children were preverbal. A few parents did not want to get involved. That is specifically what Vera Unger told Meznarich; she said she had been caused "great embarrassment" by co-workers at the bank where she worked because they were asking about her connection with Fuster.[47] Though Unger was reluctant to talk, she informed the detective she had taken her youngest child for babysitting at the Fusters' twice. Both times, he had a high fever afterward. It was so bad the second time that she took him straight to the hospital; his fever was 104. Ileana Fuster had not mentioned anything to Unger either time. Her oldest son, Ned, used to play with Noel. But something happened and he stopped going to Noel's house. When interviewed later, Ned provided no information.

By the week of August 20, the State Attorney's Office was prepared to charge Frank and Ileana Fuster with the capital offense of sexual battery on a child. It had been exactly two weeks since the first children were interviewed by the Bragas. Arrest forms were prepared that week, charging each of them with a single count of sexual battery.[48] The charge against Ileana pertained to Donald Menninger, based on his mother's statement and Donald's "demonstration" in the original August 14 interview. The charge against Frank pertained to Noel Fuster and was based on Jason Cramer's statement and the positive STD finding.

"Fusters Charged with Sexual Battery of Children," declared a front-page headline in the *Miami Herald* on Friday, August 24. The story indicated that Jeffrey Samek, Frank Fuster's lawyer, had been informed that the charges involved eight children. The State Attorney's Office filed the first full indictment against Frank and Ileana Fuster on September 5. The document, prepared the third week in August, contained thirteen counts in total: nine were against Frank, three were against Ileana, and one was against both. The indictment named six children. (It seems likely that when Jeffrey Samek said eight children were involved, the count included Joshua Cramer and Daniel Lipton, but both were considered too young to testify.) Ten of the thirteen charges in this indictment stemmed from three children: Donald Menninger (four counts), Jason Cramer (three counts), and Becky Taylor (three counts). Becky's counts were based on statements by Jason. See Figure 6.3 for an elaboration of the general content and sequence of interviews with the four children who were interviewed the most in August. Jason and Donald were ultimately the most significant in the case; Becky and Noel, however, became most significant in the witch-hunt narrative about the case. There were individual counts involving Tom Leventhal, Tammy Lucas, and Noel Fuster. Notably, all of these children were among the first nine interviewed in the case. In short, these charges emerged directly from the earliest stages of the investigation; they did not emerge, as critics would later claim, after extensive, repeated interviews. Unlike cases like McMartin where the interviewing expanded significantly over time, the interviews in the Country Walk case were almost all in August. While two interviews in January became a major focus of the witch-hunt narrative, Figure 6.4 indicates that the interviews in January 1985 were unusual. The most important interviews in developing the evidence against the Fusters were in the first few days of the investigation (see Figure 6.5). None of the disclosures depicted in this figure came after repeated interviews

Figure 6.3 Country Walk, Braga Interview Sequence, Children Interviewed Two or More Times in August.

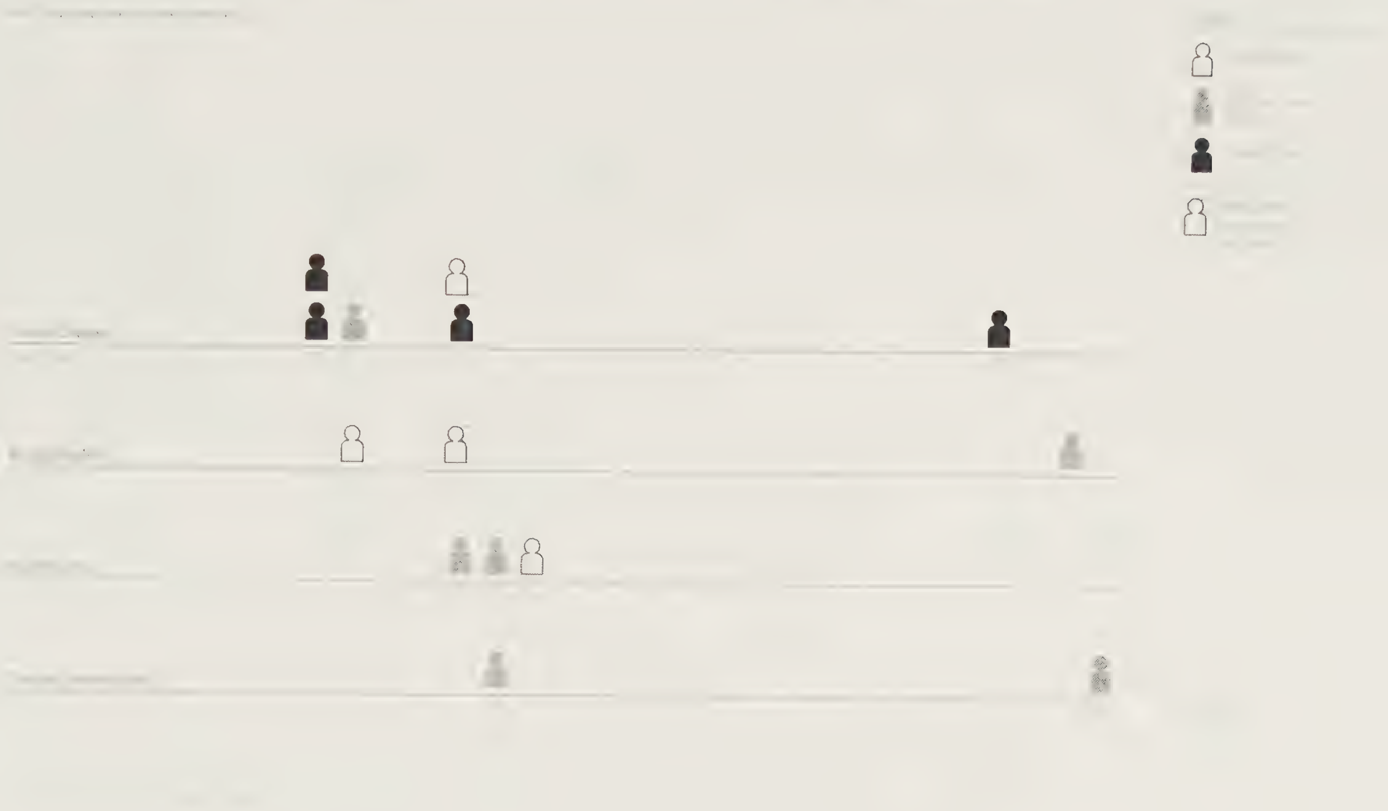

Figure 6.4 Country Walk, Full Braga Interview Sequence.

Each icon represents one interview

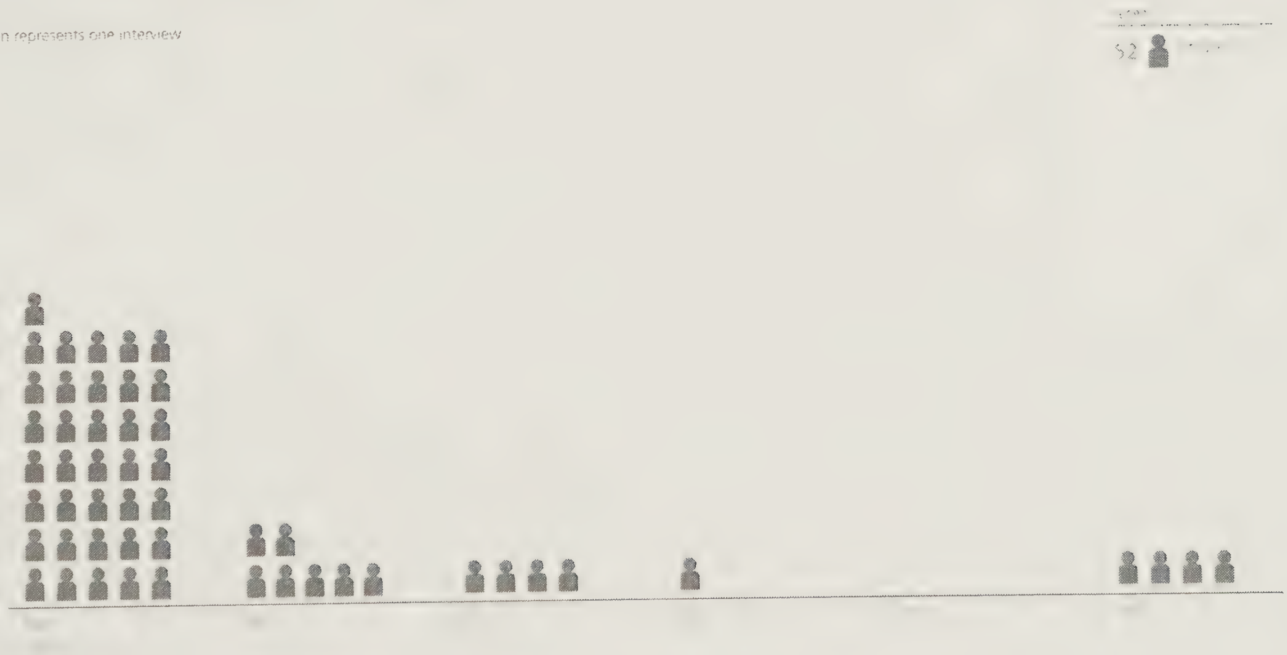

Figure 6.5 Country Walk, Braga Interview Sequence, August Detail.

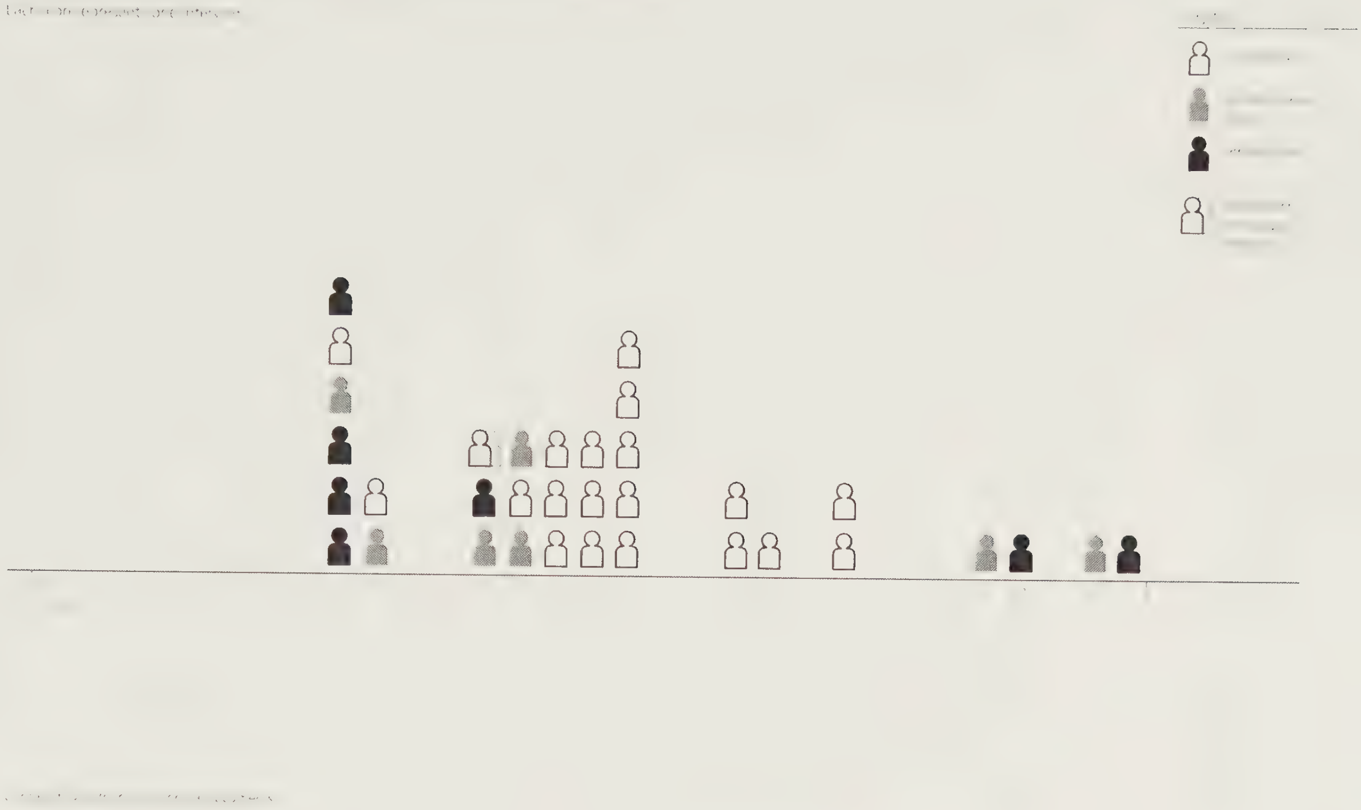

The Constellation of Other Evidence

While the Bragas were interviewing children in the case, the State Attorney's Office sought additional evidence beyond the children. The primary focus of those investigative efforts was the parents, neighbors, and business associates of the Fusters. Those efforts uncovered a variety of evidence that supported the children's statements.

Medical Conditions: Rashes and Antibiotics

Frank Fuster's son tested positive for gonorrhea of the throat. This was undoubtedly the strongest piece of medical evidence in the case. But it was not the only such evidence. Many of the children had had either vaginal or anal rashes of a nature they had never experienced previously. Tom Leventhal's mother observed what she deemed to be a worrisome rash around the boy's penis; it was unlike anything she had seen in her other boys.[49] Darlene Taylor noted that her daughter Becky was on "ampicillin practically the entire time" she was at the Fusters', and she frequently complained of sore throats and suffered from frequent rashes around her vagina.[50] Carrie Monk developed a rash on her vulva. In the nine days she attended the Fusters', Tammy Lucas had "an inflamed vaginal area."[51] But few of the parents whose children attended the Fusters' actually knew each other, so it was not until investigators documented these disparate incidents that their cumulative weight could be appreciated.

A number of children also had unexplained infections or raging fevers when they left the Fusters' house. Betsy Leventhal testified that, in the five months that her son went there, he had respiratory infections that would clear up with penicillin and subsequently reappear. Vera Unger reported that her son attended the Fusters' for babysitting twice, once in April and once in July 1984. Both times, she said, Charles developed a fever of approximately 104 degrees and stomach and throat infections.[52] Indeed, the children's medical records provide a chilling answer to the question of why none of the other children tested positive for a sexually transmitted disease in August 1984. The answer is that "virtually every child alleged to have been the victim of Frank Fuster putting his penis in their mouth was on antibiotics the entire time."[53] All of these children were tested for strep throat during the year and the tests were all negative, but they were all prescribed antibiotics anyway. Apparently, nobody ever thought to test them for sexually transmitted diseases.

Suspicious Incidents and Unclothed Children

In many child sexual abuse cases, the defense argues that if something untoward had been occurring, surely someone would have noticed something suspicious.

As investigators quickly learned, in the seven months that the Fusters' babysitting service was in operation, there *were* numerous instances that raised suspicions among parents. Indeed, there were a host of families who independently decided to remove their children from the Fusters' care before the case broke.

Nearly all of the parents described waiting a long time at the front door. Some parents reported there were also times when they called the Fuster household during the daytime and got no answer. Ileana told one parent they had disconnected the door bell because they did not want to disturb the children. She told another parent she had unplugged the phone one day for the same reason. Some parents took to calling before they came in order to avoid a long wait at the door. Emma St. Lorenzo called in the middle of the first day that she had taken her son to the Fusters'. There was no answer. She later testified that she was concerned about being an overly protective mother, so she did not rush right over to the house. What happened after she picked up her son, though, caused her to report the Fusters.

Parents did not come in and out of the house freely or unannounced. On the rare occasions when that *did* happen, however, there were various strange circumstances, all involving children in states of undress. For example, Kimberly Porter described twice walking into the home unannounced. Frank Fuster had apparently left the door unlocked, and she let herself in after waiting for five minutes for someone to answer the door. Ileana emerged from the master bedroom and shut the door behind her, locking a whining Tom Leventhal inside.[54] The second time this happened, Ileana did the same thing but failed to properly lock the bedroom door, allowing Tom to open the door and run out totally naked. Porter said that Ileana's hair was "a mess" and she seemed "nervous."[55]

Similarly, Betsy Leventhal—who removed her child in early May—described seeing Becky Taylor naked from the waist down one day when she arrived to pick up her son. This seemed odd enough to Leventhal that she questioned Ileana as to why the girl was not fully clothed. Ileana Fuster explained that Becky's mother had forgotten to pack diapers for her daughter.[56] Only later, after the case broke, did Leventhal find out that Becky did not wear diapers and had not for quite a while.[57] Vivian Pelton also saw a disturbing scene once when she came to pick up her daughter Lacy. Jessie Lipton was standing in a corner of the living room and Frank Fuster was coming out of his bedroom, pulling up his shorts. Pelton thought Jessie was "embarrassed or upset." She was later described as "cowering."[58] She did not make a lot of the incident at the time. But it is worth mentioning since it helps demonstrate how many parents were disturbed at one point or another about something that seemed amiss.

Paula Walker, who took her two-year-old daughter, Sara, to the Fusters' once a week between March and May, had such an incident in early May. Even though she had been told, as other parents were, that Frank Fuster worked outside the home, it was her experience that he "delivered Sara to me at least half the times." She used the word "deliver" because her daughter was routinely so tired that she had to be carried. One time, Walker found Sara in shorts, but without her overalls. She asked Fuster why her daughter was not fully clothed. "Frank told me it was just because it was so hot in the house," she later testified. Walker, who did not consider the temperature in the house to be hot, decided not to bring her daughter back.[59]

Another suspicion that was arrived at independently by several families was that their children had been drugged at the Fusters'. That suspicion was later borne out by Frank Fuster's own lawyer, who argued that Ileana's testimony should not be trusted because *she* had been drugged by Frank.[60] Many parents commented on how tired their children were after leaving the Fusters', and how they sometimes had to carry their children out of the house.[61]

Sexually Precocious Behavior

Donald Menninger's "kiss my body" comment to his mother was only one example of highly sexualized behavior on the part of Country Walk children. A number of parents reported being puzzled as to how their young children learned to French-kiss and why they were acting this way. Betsy Leventhal noticed that Tom began to mimic masturbating "quite a bit" while at the Fusters' for babysitting, though he had not done this before.[62] Roberta Lipton noticed a number of sexualized behaviors in her two-year-old son, Daniel. After he began attending the Fusters', he repeatedly tried to French-kiss his mother, he would "constantly pull on his penis," and once he put her hand on his penis, saying "mommy, rub my pee pee."[63] Kimberly Porter testified that her two-year-old son Malcolm "would do sexual things" to his four-year-old sister.[64] Allison Lucas testified that her daughter asked whether it "was OK to eat shit."[65] Tammy also masturbated in public, French-kissed her parents, and tried on numerous occasions to stick toys into her rectum.[66] Betsy Leventhal testified that her two-year-old, Tom, "would kiss me and then try to stick his tongue in my mouth."[67] Sandra Cramer described her sons, Jason and Joshua, French-kissing, engaging in penile and anal stimulation of each other, and attempting anal stimulation of her. Joshua frequently asked his mother to play with his penis when she changed his diapers.[68] Even the psychiatrist who later testified for the defense allowed that "it would be significant" if numerous children that age started French-kissing.[69] The children who went to the Fusters' exhibited much more overly sexualized behavior than that.

The Final Fifteen Interviews with Children

By the end of August, twenty-four children had been interviewed at the State Attorney's Office. Many were interviewed only once; only two were interviewed more than twice. Two-thirds of all the investigative interviews that would be conducted in the case were complete, and detailed charges had already been drawn up against Frank and Ileana Fuster (see Figure 6.6). There were fifteen more investigative interviews after the last day in August 1984: seven in September, three in October, one in November, and four in January. All charges were finalized thereafter with a second indictment, so those were the last of the investigative interviews.[70] Altogether, then, there were forty-six videotaped sessions of children and the Bragas between August 9 and the end of January 1985. Those sessions involved thirty-one children. Eight of those children ended up with individual, named charges against Frank and/or Ileana Fuster. As Figure 6.6 demonstrates, the earliest children in the investigation were by far the most important children in the case; they accounted for most of the group and individual charges.

Three of the final five investigative interviews in the case later became the focus of substantial criticism. One was with Noel Fuster in late November, and the other two were in late January—one with Jessie Lipton, the other with Tammy Lucas. Two of those interviews are described in detail below. The third contested interview, with Tammy Lucas, is less important to the case. She was a named complainant in the first indictment, on the basis of statements she made then; her third interview did not change things. The charges involving Jessie Lipton, by contrast, were filed on the basis of the January interview. And the November interview with Noel was unlike any other interview in the case.

Confronting Noel

When the charges were filed against Frank and Ileana Fuster in early September, there was a single count naming Noel as a victim of his father. It was based on Jason Cramer's eyewitness account and Noel's positive STD test. There are differing views on how much the prosecution wanted Noel's testimony at trial, though it would be hard to resist calling the oldest possible witness to the allegations. Then again, the boy was clearly conflicted. He had seen his father crying in prison and had told the Bragas something about how he could "save [his] dad."

In late November, Noel's mother, Martha, brought the boy back to the State Attorney's Office for another interview. The session had apparently been requested by Assistant State Attorney Chris Rundle. According to Hollingsworth, Rundle apparently thought he might not be able to proceed with the case "unless he got a statement from Frank Fuster's son as to the source of his gonorrhea." An additional interview could not happen, however, without the support of the boy's mother. Hollingsworth reported that Martha Fuster desperately wanted Noel to be confronted by the psychologists: "Please, I want you to ask him the 'hard' questions," she pleaded with the Bragas before they joined him in the interview room.[71]

Figure 6.6 Country Walk, Full Counts, Frank and Ileana, Individual and Group Charges.

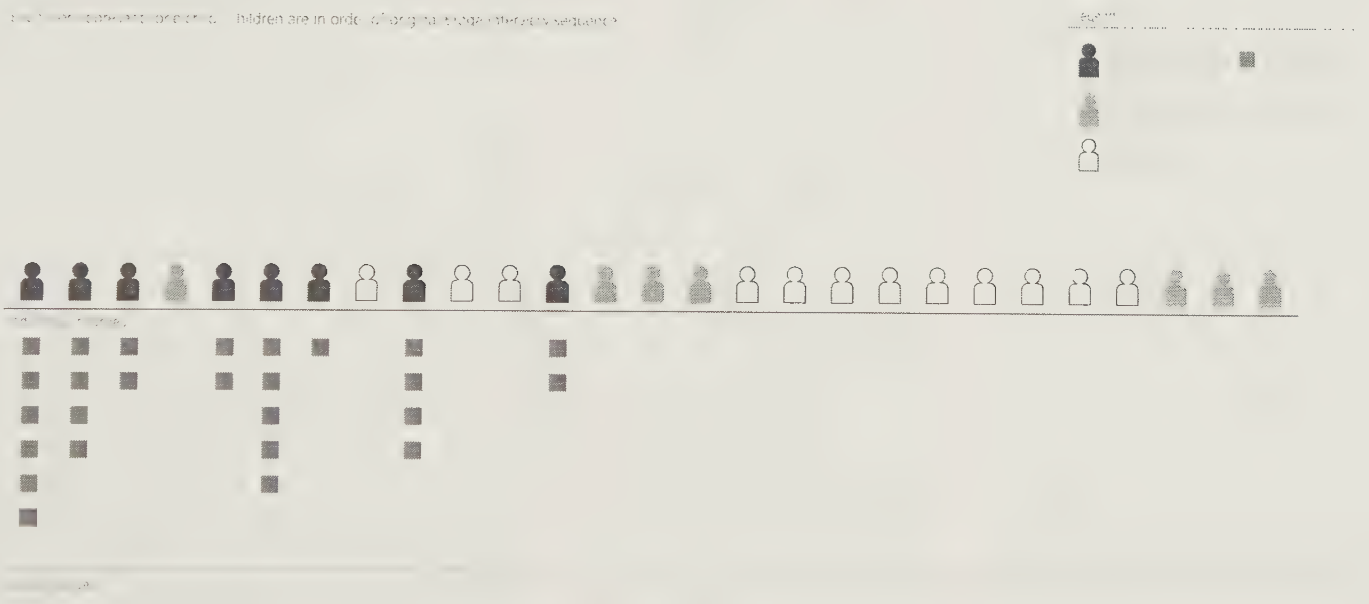

The interview reflected in the court transcript began with Joseph Braga asking Noel about what, if anything, Frank told him *not* to talk about. Noel insisted the only thing he said not to talk about was the fact that Frank was in jail. Since this was widely known, it is unlikely his response reflected the full substance of what Frank Fuster told his son. As the interview progressed, Noel offered some implausible denials; for example, he said he didn't remember *anything* about when he was six, and he denied knowing the word "pee pee."[72] Joseph Braga eventually confronted the boy with the medical evidence:

> The doctors tell me that there's only one way that you can get gonorrhea, and that's if someone puts their penis in your mouth. Do you remember someone ever doing that?[73]

Noel provided a series of evasive answers: "I don't remember, maybe they did, I don't remember . . . ," "Maybe it happened when I was six," "Maybe I was fast asleep. I don't remember. . . . "[74] Perhaps his most revealing statement was: "I do remember. I don't *want* to remember. . . . "[75]

The boy slowly proceeded to acknowledge a number of facts that did not directly involve him. He had already told the Bragas in August that Becky sometimes had no clothes on. This time, when pressed again on the issue, he said she was "running around naked" and "every time she took a shower, she was running around naked." The Bragas expressed obvious surprise at the idea of a four-year-old girl who was left for babysitting taking showers at the Fusters'. "My mom helped her," he added. While continuing to deny any personal involvement in sexualized play, Noel described the actions of other children. He acknowledged that some children went to the bathroom on the floor. In Noel's words, that was a "[g]ame, some people do it as a game or they—some people think it's funny." He also said that "Jason said a lot of things about sexy when Becky was naked." Eventually, at the end of the passage below, Noel made his most incriminating statement yet:

LB: What do you think is going to happen to you father?
NF: He might stay there forever.
LB: How do you feel about that?
NF: Sad.
LB: I bet you do. Do you think what your father did, that he should be in jail?
NF: Huh? (Inaudible.) Well, what was that? Why did he go to jail?
LB: Well, what we talked about?
JB: What do you think?
LB: Why do you think he went to jail?

NF: Only thing I remember, maybe he did something wrong about the government.
JB: What about with the children?
NF: Children?
JB: Children?
NF: Oh, he (inaudible) that he put his penis in the mouth.
JB: Uh-huh, into the children?
NF: I think he does need to go to jail.
JB: Do you think they can help him there?
NF: (Nodding affirmatively.)
JB: So he will be better and won't do things like this anymore?
NF: I think they would help him.
JB: If you were going to try to help him, what would be some of the things you could say to him?
NF: To tell the truth and don't lie. Like that.
JB: Supposing he could get out of jail, now what were the things he shouldn't do anymore so he wouldn't go back to jail? What are some of the things?
NF: Not to stick his penis in my mouth and not to stick it into little kids, his peeing in their mouth and not to stick any kind of penis (inaudible).[76]

Critics of the case have claimed that the interview up to this point contained nothing of note. The final response just quoted demonstrates this is not true. It is true that the "hard questions" had yet to come. Before taking a break for lunch, Joseph Braga told Noel:

JB: While you are at lunch, I think you ought to think about me asking you questions because I have to tell you this: if the test didn't say you have gonorrhea, then I could believe you. If the other children hadn't told me things that you are a part of, then I would believe you, but all of the children—
NF: I—I (inaudible).
JB: The doctor's tests say that you've got gonorrhea (inaudible).
NF: I think I forgot. Maybe they did.
JB: Maybe you can remember after lunch. Maybe you can remember after lunch. That's what I want you to think about.

After a lunch break, Joseph Braga confronted the boy directly with the implausibility of his denials. Noel then made more detailed statements about his mother kissing Joshua Cramer and his father kissing Becky Taylor on the vagina.[77] He was also more somewhat specific about his father's actions. Noel confirmed that his parents wore masks and scared the children, he said his father "scared me half to death" with a knife, and eventually he said his father put his penis in Noel's mouth "twice."

It still was not clear whether Noel would be a witness at trial. His mother's desire to "ask the hard questions" would not necessarily translate into the willingness to let the boy testify against his father. But Noel had made a vast number of incriminating statements, many of which matched things other children had said.

Jessie Lipton, Again

The most significant interview in January was with Jessie Lipton. She had been interviewed early in the investigation; her interview contained some strange statements that gave pause for concern, but it did not contain disclosures of any sort. Jessie was not named in the original thirteen-count indictment. She had gone to the Fusters' only twice in May, so it was possible that when she was there Frank Fuster was not even home. The state did not ask to interview her a second time. In January, however, her parents contacted the State Attorney's Office to request a second interview. They reported their daughter had "started talking about what happened" at Frank and Ileana's house. There was apparently disagreement among the prosecutors about whether it was advisable to go forward with this interview. The substance of this disagreement was never made public, but it stands to reason that those opposed would be worried that statements in the girl's second interview might somehow be attributed to prosecutors, interviewers, or parents.

The girl comes across in the transcript of this interview as observant and articulate. "In March I'm going to be five and a half," she adds after responding "yes" to the question, "You were just five in September?" She also remembers the State Attorney's Office well enough to know that they were conducting this interview in a different room from the one five months earlier. What Jessie had apparently been saying at home came after Laurie Braga asked what the children did with their clothes off:

JL: They played cut off your head.
JB: Cut off your head? Can you show me how they did that?
JL: Frank would ask them, do you want a cupcake and if they said yes, then he would cut your head off .
LB: Did he really cut off heads or pretend?
JL: He was—he put the knife to your neck.
LB: The knife to the neck (inaudible).
JL: Yes.

LB: Did he do that to you?
JL: Yes.
LB: What other children did he do that to?
JL: To Daniel, to Joshua.
LB: Uh-huh?
JL: To—to Jason. That's about all I know.[78]

This description was quite similar to one provided by Jason months earlier. Later, Laurie Braga asked Jessie to describe any other games, and Jessie responded, "Duck Duck Goose Goose with their clothes off."[79] She proceeded to indicate that Frank Fuster touched her vagina, although the transcript has some ambiguities that seem to stem from gestures unaccompanied by words.[80] Toward the end of the interview, Laurie Braga raised the question that added something that would later form the basis for a major defense argument: Why didn't she speak earlier?

LB: Okay, do you think—is there anything that you still are a little scared to talk about?
JL: (Shaking head no.)
LB: Uh-uh? Can you tell me what anybody would do to make you scared?
JL: They would put the knife up to your neck.
LB: Up to your neck and what else?
JL: (Inaudible.)
LB: Pull on your pee pee?
JL: That's all.
LB: What did they say would happen if you told?
JL: They would say—they would tell me not to tell but I still tell.
LB: But you didn't tell for a long time, how come, were you scared?
JL: (Shaking head no.)
LB: Do you know why?
JL: Uh-uh, I think I was too young.[81]

Although Jessie described several sexualized or abusive games (Duck Duck Goose Goose; Cut Off Your Head), she also resisted some leading questions at the end of the interview about other games the Bragas had heard about from many children. "What about the pee pee game?" Laurie Braga asks explicitly. "There was no pee pee game," Jessie responded. Similarly, she said that she never saw Frank or Iliana play with ca-ca. Presumably, if the girl was simply trying to please the interviewers, she would have responded affirmatively to those questions. Then Jessie added one more detail:

JL: I will tell you what else happened with my brother. They were dancing around with my brother, then he was laughing.
LB: Uh-huh?
JL: With his clothes off. He thought that was funny.
LB: He did? Did you think it was funny?
JL: No.

As a result of this interview, Jessie Lipton was added to the second indictment. She later testified at the trial.

"Preparing the Charts"

The Country Walk case was originally investigated and charged by Chris Rundle, under the supervision of Abe Laeser. Janet Reno eventually assigned two more senior prosecutors to the case: John Hogan and Dan Casey. This often happens in high-profile criminal cases; as demonstrated through the McMartin case, however, it is not always a move that improves the chances of prosecutorial success, particularly when sex-abuse prosecutors are replaced with prosecutors who are not experienced with such cases. In the Country Walk case, however, what the new prosecutors brought was a systematic approach that may be what has ensured that the subsequent convictions have not been reversed.

As John Hogan explained in a civil deposition, "When I took over the case I saw as my first priority revamping the charging document."[82] He immediately did something the McMartin prosecutors did not do until long after they filed charges: he actually watched the videotapes of the children's interviews. After reviewing the videotapes, Hogan assigned Rundle and Casey "the task of what we called preparing the charts, and we took each tape and we outlined each and every allegation of sexual misconduct."[83]

There were apparently upward of 450 potential charges. The indictment that the prosecutors produced after their detailed analysis had twenty-eight charges. Eleven of those were against Ileana Fuster alone, fourteen were against Frank Fuster alone, and three were "group charges" that named both defendants and multiple children. "Our goal was to only charge those crimes we thought we had a very good chance of winning," Hogan later testified in a civil deposition.[84] Accordingly, virtually every charge had cross-corroborating evidence from multiple sources. This included statements from other children and statements from adults. This charging strategy also meant the prosecution thoroughly checked its own case for inconsistencies. It was during this process that the State Attorney's Office went to great lengths to establish, as accurately as possible, the precise dates of attendance for every child. The prosecutors were cognizant of the attendance patterns, then, when considering any statement a child made about other children. Only when attendance patterns were kept in mind, for example, did it make sense that certain children did not know other children. The resulting charges were carefully drawn and multiply supported.

Charges were finalized in the Country Walk case with the filing of the second indictment in March 1985. In other day-care sexual abuse cases, particularly McMartin and Michaels, the second indictment vastly expanded the scope of the case. The second indictment in the Country Walk case added *two* children connected to individual counts and thirteen total counts (including group counts, explained below). The individual charges added by the second indictment stemmed almost entirely from children already named in connection with individual charges in the first indictment. There were three additional counts involving Jason Cramer, two additional counts involving Becky Taylor, one additional count involving Tom Leventhal, and one additional count involving Tammy Lucas. There were two more children with individual counts in the second indictment, neither of whom was named in the first indictment. Joshua Cramer was one. Although it was clear he would never testify at trial, an additional charge was added because several children, including Noel Fuster, indicated they witnessed Joshua being sexually abused by Frank Fuster. The other child added to the second indictment was Jessie Lipton. She would later become the most criticized of the children; critics would claim she was typical or representative of the children in the case. Actually, her place in the case was unique.

The prosecutors also filed three group charges, a creative strategy to deal with the fact that many statements involved games or other group activities. Those charges listed as many as fifteen children in one charge—but the children were listed in the alternative, connecting every child with an "and/or." This meant that each of these charges could be proven with evidence about one child alone; but it also allowed for a range of possible testimony. The group charges ultimately added seven children to the case. All of the group charges included children named in the individual counts.

The first group charge was sexual acts between Frank and Ileana in front of children. Thirteen children were listed in the alternate, including all of the children named in individual charges. The second group charge was for aggravated assault stemming from the wearing of masks, displaying weapons, and/or making threats. Fourteen children were listed in the alternate in this count, including all of the named-charge children except Noel Fuster. The third group charge was for lewd and lascivious acts, involving naked dancing and the games with feces and urine.

The case was originally scheduled for trial in January 1985. Several delays were requested by the defense and granted by the judge. Those motions were opposed, with increasing vigor, by the state. The trial ultimately began in September 1985, almost exactly a year after the original thirteen-count indictment. Two pre-trial developments merit discussion.

"Breaking" Jason Cramer

The day-care sexual abuse cases of the 1980s became famous partly because they highlighted questions about how the criminal justice system would accommodate children as witnesses. The issue had scarcely been engaged before the emerging social recognition of child abuse in the 1970s and 1980s. In Florida, there was a legislative effort to allow children to testify via closed-circuit television, an innovation intended to reduce the anxiety of testifying in front of the defendant. There was even hope among some of the parents in the Country Walk case that the videotaped interviews by the Bragas could be introduced into evidence in lieu of actual testimony. The law was unclear, but it seemed likely that the Confrontation Clause in the Constitution would be interpreted to require something more than videotaped statements.

How children would be treated in this process also remained unclear. As the trial date approached, Jeffrey Samek, Frank Fuster's lawyer, obtained an order allowing him to depose children in the case. The judge did not allow Fuster to be in the room for these depositions; instead, he viewed these depositions from an adjacent room where he could watch on closed-circuit television and convey any questions or comments to his attorney. The defense proceeded to take the deposition of Jason Cramer, the most important witness in the case. What unfolded became perhaps the most controversial moment of the case: Samek confronted Jason in an extremely aggressive way. Using a tone that Hollingsworth later described as "sharp, accusatory," Samek said directly to the boy: "I think you're lying." "I don't think Frank ever did anything to you, Frank didn't do anything to you, did he?" However disturbed Jason may have been by the adult's harsh tone, he did not budge. "Yes, he did," Jason replied. As Hollingsworth reports the ensuing exchange:

> "Frank never put his mouth on your penis, *did he*?"
> "Yes, he did," Jason whispered.
> "When did he do it?"
> "Partially." The word barely came out.
> "Huh?"
> "Partially." Jason was on the verge of tears.
> "Jason, *look* at me when you answer—"[85]

An excerpt from a videotape of this interview, later played on television, bears out the Hollingsworth description. Obviously, Samek was confronting the boy in a most unusual way (*Look at me when you answer*); it is unimaginable that a judge would allow an adult witness to be bullied like that. The prosecutors went directly to Judge Newman for a ruling that would prohibit this kind of questioning. Hogan called Samek's tactics "outrageous" and a "travesty." "I have never in my life heard an attorney order a witness that they had to look at him," he told the judge. Samek argued that these tactics were "the only way to have possibility of breaking the spell that has been cast on this child."[86]

Judge Newman declined to stop the deposition entirely, but he agreed to suspend it for a day. The Cramers were unwilling to subject their son to any more of this treatment. They insisted that the matter be appealed. Hollingsworth reported that the Cramers would withdraw from the case if the court did not agree, and it seemed likely that other families might well follow. The viability of the entire case hung in the balance.

The videotape of the confrontation of Jason Cramer was played in an emergency proceeding before the Third District Court of Appeals. Samek claimed that trying to break the child was the only way to get at the truth. Chief Judge Schwartz was unmoved. He called Samek's argument "disingenuous" and said "I am personally going to supply a transcript of this deposition to the Florida bar."[87] The next day, the local section of the *Miami Herald* contained the headline "Judge Seeks Bar Probe of Fuster Lawyer." Samek, who had been appointed by the court to represent Ileana, then tried, without success, to withdraw from the case.

Frank "Freaks Out," Ileana Pleads Guilty

As the September trial date approached, speculation about a possible guilty plea focused on Ileana Fuster. Would she plead guilty and testify against her husband? There was no speculation about whether Frank Fuster would plead guilty; there was nothing the state could offer him. He was a convicted sex offender in a case with STD evidence. The state would seek to imprison him for the rest of his life. His was the kind of case that would go to trial. Matters were much less clear for Ileana, since she had no prior record, she was actually a minor when she was arrested, and it appeared she was also a victim of Frank Fuster. It was likely she would plead guilty.

Yet Ileana Fuster remained an enigma. For months, she protested her innocence and wrote letters to Frank almost daily. But those closest to her in the detention facility later reported that Ileana's marriage to Frank had been precipitated by a rape.[88] Indeed, she began to speak about physical abuse by Frank, but she still denied sexually abusing any children. This left little room for any kind of guilty plea. It also left her lawyer, Michael Von Zamft, wondering whether Ileana was competent to stand trial. There was a competency hearing in early August, where she was found to be competent. It was clear that her own lawyer thought she had no other defense. He then hired two psychologists to start meeting with Ileana in order to get her to face the facts. She had stopped communicating with Frank, and it was apparent that his grip over her was weakening.

Those psychologists would, years later, be accused of "brainwashing" Ileana Fuster. Wild claims—contradicted by all available facts—would be made about how she was treated in prison. And Reno would be blamed for all of it. Those arguments are taken up in Part Two of this chapter, but for now it is important to keep in mind that Ileana Fuster's own lawyer hired the psychologists who would later be described as if they were agents of the prosecution.

Reality started to set in for Frank Fuster. Ileana had stopped communicating with him, and he faced a probation violation hearing stemming from his 1982 conviction for child molestation. Frank then "freaked out." That is how the media described an apparent catatonic trance that Frank Fuster went into, in court in early August. But acting out in court was not going to stop the proceedings. The probation violation hearing was held in mid-August 1985. The three-day proceeding was aimed at deciding whether to revoke the conditions of his probation. During the proceedings, the prosecution played one videotape to the judge, a thirty-four-minute interview with Donald Menninger. Fuster took the stand in his own defense. His testimony was incredible, as he denied that there was a babysitting service in his house. He claimed he was never in the house when children—who were there, of course, for babysitting—were there. All the parents who had seen him when they came or went were, according to Fuster, lying.

The judge sentenced Fuster to fifteen years. A few days later, Ileana pleaded guilty. It was a guilty plea, not a plea agreement, which means she admitted to every fact in the charging documents. She then threw herself on the mercy of the court. Some observers concluded that she was willing to incriminate her husband only once she already knew he was going to prison for many years.

The Trial

Opening arguments in Frank Fuster's trial began on September 3, 1985. Remarkably, the trial lasted less than a month. The case was complicated, but unlike other highly publicized day-care sex abuse cases around the country, it had been charged in a way that was designed to be lean and effective.

The State's Case

The state called thirty-four witnesses in six days. The largest group of witnesses was from among the parents. Fifteen testified about their children's medical and behavior problems that year. A few told stories about occurrences at the Fusters', particularly incidents involving partially clothed or naked children in strange circumstances. Several parents described incidents that resulted in their pulling children from the Fusters' care.

The next largest group of witnesses for the prosecution included medical doctors, and psychologists with doctoral degrees. Two medical doctors provided the details concerning Noel Fuster's STD test, four psychologists testified as mental health practitioners who had seen one or more of the children, and both of the Bragas testified about the interview process. The final prosecution witness was Dr. Roland Summit, a psychiatrist who helped pioneer the study and treatment of child sexual abuse. Dr. Summit was affiliated with Harbor UCLA Medical Center in Torrance, California, where he held the unusual title "community psychiatrist." Two years before the County Walk trial, Summit published an article that coined the term *child abuse accommodation syndrome*.[89] That article and his testimony would become focal points for criticisms of the case years later. Notably, Summit's testimony addressed sexually abused children in general. He explained to the jury the various reasons children might delay the disclosure of sexual abuse, and why their disclosures might be equivocal.

The third significant group of witnesses was made up of children who had attended the Fusters' babysitting service.[90] The potential witness list was conceivably as long as the number of children named in all of the counts, including the group counts. But some of those children were clearly too young to testify. The parents of other children were concerned about what it would mean for their children to testify in open court. Some said they would allow their children to testify only if the court permitted testimony by closed-circuit television. Several parents helped lobby the Florida legislature for the change that permitted such testimony in 1985. And two children who could add significantly to the prosecution's case were in doubt for different reasons. Donald Menninger, the first child to make a spontaneous disclosure in the case, was unlikely to testify because his father, an Arvida employee, had divided loyalties in the matter. Noel Fuster was also unlikely to testify because his mother, Martha, was scared of Frank Fuster. He had threatened her life over child custody[91] and she could not risk the consequences of allowing Noel to testify in a case where a conviction was not assured. Neither of those two boys testified in the case.

Eight children ended up testifying. But three of them were "name witnesses" only, taking the stand for identification purposes but not providing substantive testimony. The other five children testified in substance and were subject to cross-examination: Jessie Lipton, Tammy Lucas, Becky Taylor, Jason Cramer, and Annie Porter. The children testified about things that happened to them, and things they witnessed. Annie Porter was named only in group charges; the other four were named in individual and group charges.[92] They were the core of the case.

The Defense

Frank Fuster maintained that he was innocent from the time of his arrest. Beyond protesting his innocence, his defense was that the children had been brainwashed. The defense put on a few minor witnesses, but there were basically two important witnesses for the defense: Fuster himself and Dr. Lee Coleman, the psychiatrist from California who described the children as "brainwashed." To lay the foundation for Coleman's testimony, the defense spent more than a week playing almost all of the videotapes of the interviews conducted by the Bragas. Notably, the state did not object to this move. Indeed, according to Jan Hollingsworth, they welcomed it—so long as the defense did not show snippets without any context. The tapes were shown in chronological order. The jury saw thirty-three interviews—virtually every investigative interview with a child connected to any of the charges in the case. By mutual agreement, the defense and prosecution agreed not to show a number of tapes.

The most notable "minor" witness for the defense was Vicki Menninger, mother of the first child to make a disclosure in the case. Attorney Samek asked the court to treat her as a hostile witness. The judge declined the request but indicated he would give the defense considerable latitude in questioning her. Menninger's position had become extremely uncomfortable, since her husband was one of the named defendants in civil suits that had been filed against Arvida and Disney for failing to act on the information that came through his wife. A number of parents were angry that she warned only her friend, Betsy Leventhal, about her son's statement concerning Ileana Fuster "kissing all the babies' bodies." Menninger was in a terrible position. Her husband's job security might be at stake if Arvida lost a huge civil lawsuit because the Menningers—perhaps even thinking they were protecting the company—originally kept this information to themselves (and a close friend). Her statements about the whole matter changed over time. In a deposition in the civil case that occurred after the criminal case was over, her husband denied he or she ever swore anyone to secrecy.[93]

Her description of the original disclosure was unchanged. She allowed, on cross-examination, that there was no doubt her son's statements were sexual, that he had never said anything like this in the past, and that she never sent her son back to the Fusters' house. She claimed, however, his statements were only one factor in the decision. "I really wasn't happy with the babysitting," she testified, claiming that her son spent too much time watching television at the Fusters'.[94] On cross-examination, however, Menninger allowed that her son's refusal to go to the Fusters' had escalated in April and become "really bad." And when asked point blank—by the prosecution, not the defense—if she thought her son had been sexually abused at the Fusters, she replied that she did.[95] She may have ultimately been one of the most effective witnesses for the prosecution. Her statements were reluctant; nobody would accuse her of "hysteria" or jumping to conclusions. Indeed, she had financial reasons to side with the defense. But her testimony supported the state's case.

The primary defense expert was Dr. Coleman. The defense had been planning to use Ralph Underwager, who also appeared in the Kelly Michaels case, but he was abruptly dropped by the defense after his deposition was taken.[96] Coleman is a psychiatrist who has made a specialty out of attacking psychiatric diagnoses. For years he appeared as a prosecution witness in cases where the defendant relied on the insanity defense. When changes in California law restricted the use of the insanity defense, Coleman found a new specialty: criticizing the interviews in child sexual abuse cases. Working with the advocacy group VOCAL, he established a new client base. Despite lacking any significant experience with child sexual abuse, Coleman quickly found himself hired by the defense in cases across the country.[97] He qualified as an expert witness in the Country Walk case, even though his credentials for this specific work were limited at best. He agreed, for example, that knowledge of child development would be important in assessing child interviews, yet he could not name any leading figures in the field.[98] The few articles he mentioned about memory issues at trial were all things he had read since his deposition a few months earlier.[99]

Coleman testified that he reviewed sixty hours of videotaped interviews with the Bragas. This would appear to include all of the relevant investigative interviews in the case and some that were not so relevant. There is some uncertainty about whether he reviewed the initial interviews with Jason Cramer on August 9. Coleman testified that he reviewed those interviews and that they contained nothing but "playing."[100] But the key session with Jason Cramer, described at length in Hollingsworth's book, contained the most important disclosures in the case because it was so detailed and it occurred so early.

Coleman testified that all of the investigative interviews were deeply flawed. He argued there was little or no difference between any of the interviews. He reached the conclusion that "in every interview I saw the methods used on the children would render the information unreliable."[101] His basic objection was that the questions were "manipulative" and "leading." He was also dismissive of any interview in which the child referred to an anatomically detailed doll. Dolls are "something you make up stories about," he argued, rejecting the idea that dolls might profitably be used by a child to demonstrate what happened.[102] He also had an extreme view of leading questions. According to Dr. Coleman: "'Show me what Frank and Ileana would do.' That's an example of a leading question."[103] Although that question "leads" the child to speak about Frank and Ileana, it is, of course, otherwise open-ended.

On cross-examination, the limits of Dr. Coleman's analysis were laid bare. Did he have any knowledge whether any of the items he labeled as "fantasy" were reflected in the charging documents? No. Did he ever go through the interviews to determine how often children said no to leading questions? No. Did he go through the tapes and determine how many times a child gave information about sexual acts that was not contained in a leading question? No.[104] It was difficult to conclude that Coleman was anything but an underprepared hired gun. His testimony did not accommodate any of the obvious differences between children or among individual interviews. But then, allowing that any of the interviews were acceptable would lead to the conclusion that the entire case was not a result of "brainwashing" by the Bragas.

The problems with his testimony, as prosecutors pointed out in the state's summation, were much more basic. First, Coleman entirely ignored the most detailed disclosures in the case—those made by Jason Cramer on August 9. Coleman said he skipped that tape because in it the boy was "simply playing."[105] Second, Coleman did not take any other evidence into account. He agreed on cross-examination that there would be cause for concern if a group of three- and four-year-olds started French-kissing their parents and acting in the highly sexualized ways described in the case.[106] But since Coleman never analyzed that kind of evidence in the Country Walk case, he did not know that such evidence pervaded the case. Finally, he wrote off many children because they made statements about feces that *he* considered inherently unbelievable. Again, he was apparently unaware that there was a significant amount of testimony, including a photograph, that substantiated Frank Fuster's strange fascination with the feces. One of the many aspects of this case that has been lost in the witch-hunt narrative is how many claims originally labeled as fantastic—masks, a dead bird, playing with feces—were proven in this case.

The final defense witness was Frank Fuster. His lawyer, Jeffrey Samek, made it clear that the decision whether or not to testify was entirely up to the defendant.[107] It was also apparent from Samek's remarks to the judge that he did not think it was advisable for Fuster to testify. Indeed, there were open arguments between Samek and Fuster during the trial about impromptu press conferences that Fuster held against the advice of counsel. Much of Fuster's testimony was an extended series of negative responses—no, never, absolutely not—to questions from his own lawyer. Samek also tried to defuse a few pieces of physical evidence in the case, including the grotesque picture of Noel in a bathroom covered in feces. This is Fuster's reply to the question, "Why did you take a picture like this?"

> When my wife called me and told me what my son had done, I thought it was funny. I happened to have the camera ready. I took a picture of my son to show it to him when he gets older. I thought it was funny.[108]

On cross-examination, Frank Fuster basically called every other adult in the case a liar. The parents who saw him during the daytime were liars, the parents who saw video equipment in the house were liars, and the business associates of Fuster's who had seen the scary masks that he wore were liars. And the children were all, in Fuster's words, "brainwashed." There were also many exchanges that seemed to involve semantic hair splitting by Fuster. He refused to agree that what Ileana did was a babysitting service, even though the business cards and advertisements for their service used those precise words.[109] The most significant of these verbal contortions involved a visit to his doctor shortly before his arrest. This is when Fuster claimed that he had visited his doctor about diabetes, but the doctor also checked him for venereal disease "since [he] already had the blood." Fuster allowed that he had "a big pain" on his penis at the time as well, but he maintained that this was caused by his zipper and had nothing to do with his visit to the doctor.[110] Neither side ever called Fuster's doctor. Apparently neither side was sure he would be useful as a witness.[111] The defense also chose not to call Noel. They apparently concluded they could not rely on him to present Frank's version of events.

Ileana Fuster, Rebuttal Witness

The prosecution called a few rebuttal witnesses, of which Ileana Fuster was by far the most notable. Even though she had pleaded guilty in August, it was not clear whether she would testify against her husband. This critical point has been lost in a blur of revisionist history addressed later in this chapter. But the simple fact is that Ileana Fuster's plea was "straight up"—she did not agree to testify in exchange for her plea, and the state promised her nothing. It remained unclear through September 1985 whether she would testify. While the trial proceeded in September, Ileana went through several days of deposition. Those depositions apparently convinced prosecutors she would be a good rebuttal witness. But they did not call her as a witness for their case-in-chief. Had Frank not testified, Ileana would not have either. It was Frank Fuster's claims that she rebutted.

When Ileana took the stand, she portrayed her marriage as filled with physical violence, and she testified that the babysitting service was Frank's idea. He was often alone with the children, she testified, recalling Becky Taylor complaining, "She asked me why do I have to leave her with Frank, that she didn't like it, that she was scared of him, things like that."[112] She said that Tammy Lucas had told her much the same thing. Ileana also testified further that Frank would frequently hide in the bedroom when parents came to get their children. This is one of the reasons it took so long to answer the front door.

The moment when Ileana began to implicate Frank in sexual abuse, by saying she had seen Frank in the bedroom with a naked Tom Leventhal, Frank screamed across the courtroom: "You are a liar. You are a liar. God is going to punish you for this."[113] Ileana let out a pained cry in response. The transcript does not contain such information, but this is how a *Miami Herald* reporter described her response: "Ileana Fuster, who was testifying as a prosecution witness, screamed. Her mouth dropped open and she fell back, raising her hands to protect her face."[114] It was one of the defining moments of the trial. Frank displayed his violent temper and Ileana demonstrated an instinctual, cowering response. All three network affiliates in Miami led with the same dramatic footage: Ileana Fuster recoiling under the piercing screams of her fiercely angry husband. The jury was quickly dismissed, the court took a recess, and there was a sidebar about whether to gag the defendant. The judge declined. When proceedings continued, Ileana made it clear that Frank had sucked Tom Leventhal's penis.[115]

The remainder of her direct testimony included many specific, incriminating statements against Frank. She testified that Noel had asked her once "if it was okay for his father to touch his penis."[116] She said that Frank "wanted to see [her] kiss Joshua's penis," so she did it "twice."[117] She described being cut with a knife by Frank and being anally raped with a cross that Frank kept between their bedroom mattresses. (Police found the cross between the mattresses when they searched the house.) And she described finding Frank in the bathroom once, putting his penis in Noel's mouth. Noel subsequently vomited.[118]

Finally, she addressed some of the features of the case that were described as bizarre. She testified about a mask that Frank used to scare the children: "The mask had hair, white hair and front, the front was white and green a little bit and—."[119] (The description bears out the apparent confusion when Tammy Lucas said the mask was white and Becky Taylor said it was green.) She described a bird and a snake, both of which were in the house and both of which died while being handled by Frank.[120]

Ileana Fuster's testimony was damning, to be sure. It was also less than satisfactory. She did not verify all of the things one might think she would have seen. Many of the parents thought she drastically understated her own culpability. In sum, Ileana remained somewhat inscrutable to the end. Asked afterward in a civil deposition whether he thought Ileana was a "willing" participant with her husband, Dan Casey, one of the prosecutors, replied, "I guess it depends on how you define willing."[121]

The Verdict

The jury deliberated for eleven hours over two days. They asked to review tapes or notes six times. Parents of the children in the case were concerned that the jury did not return more quickly. Then again, it seems clear the jury did not rush to judgment. They ultimately found Frank Fuster guilty in some form on all

Figure 6.7 Country Walk, Full Counts, Individual and Group, Frank only, by First Braga Interview, and by Disposition.

Each icon represents one child. Children are in order of original Braga interview sequence.

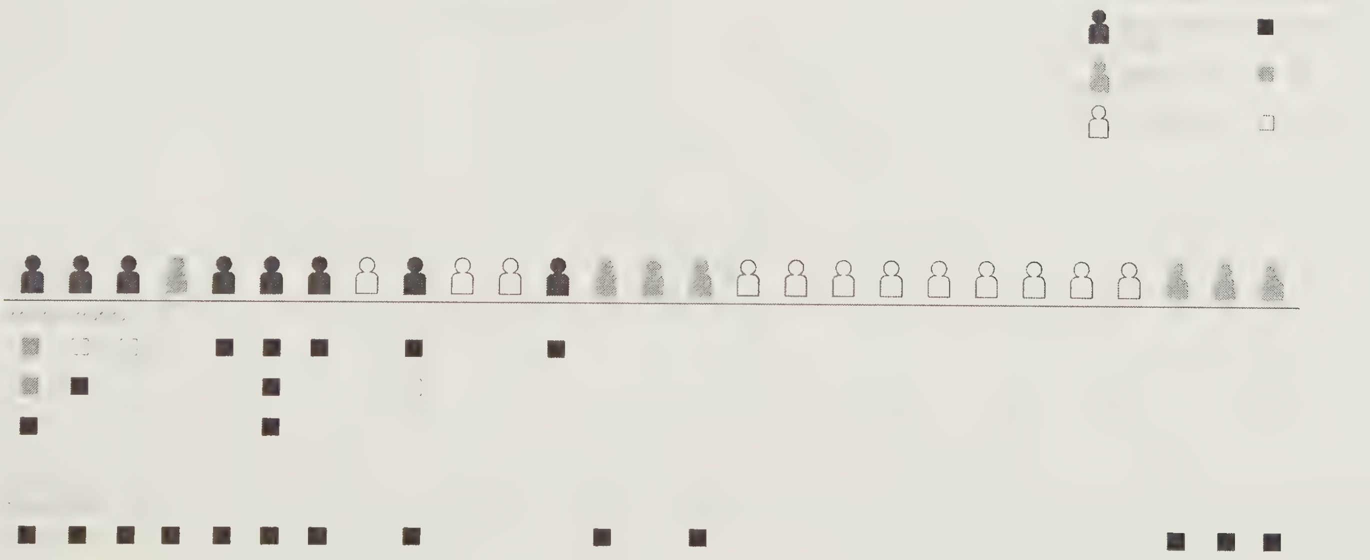

charges. Three charges were dropped before jury deliberations and the jury found Fuster guilty of a lesser included charge in two instances (see Figure 6.7). Fuster was sentenced to 165 years in prison. He appealed his conviction through the Florida courts, ending with the state supreme court declining to review the case. Fuster later pursued it in the federal courts, filing a habeas corpus claim in 1995 that included a supporting affidavit by Maggie Bruck. His federal appeals were unsuccessful. Eventually, the U.S. Supreme Court declined to hear the case, effectively ending the case more than twenty years after the original conviction.[122]

Part Two: Revisionist History (1993–Present)

Just one year after the conviction in Country Walk, there was a story in the *San Francisco Examiner* arguing that "a presumption of guilt" had marked a series of dubious child sexual abuse cases across the country. The emphasis of the series was on "bizarre" features that allegedly tied all of these cases together, and the authors included the Country Walk case. They summarized it as follows: "Allegations included pornography, the drinking of urine, eating of feces and sexual acts during such common preschool games as duck, duck goose and Simon Says."[123] Neither of these lengthy newspaper stories delved into the case in any detail. Two years later, Charlier and Downing included the case in their list of thirty-six.

The first author to cast doubt on the case in the 1990s was Debbie Nathan, who had written an article in the *Village Voice* in 1987 questioning a day-care sex abuse case from El Paso. Nathan used the term "junior McMartins" to describe that case and many others, and the Country Walk case was one of a half-dozen she mentioned by name.[124] Her first writing to mention the Country Walk case in any detail was a chapter on the "Ritual Abuse Scare" in an academic book. She argued that despite widespread claims about ritual abuse, "investigators have uniformly failed to turn up the adult witnesses or physical evidence" one might expect to find in such cases. She allowed in a footnote, however, that in the Country Walk case it "appears that the husband perpetrated sadomasochistic assaults against the wife (who was legally a minor) and possibly against the younger children, including abuse involving urine and excrement."[125]

She abandoned this view in 1993, when Janet Reno was nominated to be attorney general of the United States. That year, Nathan published a detailed critique of the Country Walk case in a journal called *Issues in Child Abuse Accusations*. Although the journal has an impressive sounding title and is sometimes even referred to as "peer-reviewed," it was actually self-published by Ralph Underwager, the psychologist who made his living appearing for the defense in child sexual abuse cases and who Fuster's defense replaced with Lee Coleman after a disastrous deposition in the summer of 1985. In the article that Nathan published in Underwager's journal, she omitted the substance of the footnote quoted above in favor of a blanket critique of the case. Nathan also coauthored a related article about the case with Steven Almond in *New Times*, an alternative weekly newspaper in Miami.[126] A host of writers then relied on Nathan's work to charge Reno with presiding over a gross miscarriage of justice. In 1998 and 2002, the PBS program *Frontline* aired programs assailing the Country Walk case. The case had become a central part of the witch-hunt narrative.

The witch-hunt narrative about the Country Walk case is built on a series of claims, none of which has been closely examined except in the Fuster's federal habeas corpus appeal, where a federal magistrate wrote a 124-page decision in 2002 that rejected all of these arguments.[127] The focus of the revisionist view has been on "child suggestibility." Those arguments are implausible on their face, given that Fuster's son tested positive for gonorrhea of the throat and Ileana Fuster corroborated claims made by the children. In the revisionist view, however, all of this evidence has been dismissed and Frank Fuster has been portrayed as the victim of a "witch-hunt." They make this claim partly because Fuster was an ex-con and partly because of overzealousness by the State Attorney's Office. These arguments, which have been made in condensed form by many writers, require detailed treatment to analyze in full. The six sections that follow each analyze an important element of the witch-hunt narrative about the case.

The "Inaccurate Test" Myth

The single most incriminating piece of evidence against Frank Fuster was that his six-year-old son tested positive for gonorrhea of the throat. Fuster himself did not test positive for gonorrhea at the time of arrest, but it turns out he had recently received a short course of penicillin treatments after seeing his doctor about "a big pain" in his penis.[128] Fuster's account of the treatment would be laughable if the subject matter were not so serious. According to him, the sore on his penis was caused by his zipper, and the doctor prescribed penicillin "just in case." He also claims his visit to the doctor was originally "for diabetic [problems]." Fuster's explanation for how he ended up receiving penicillin is as follows: "My doctor said 'I'm going to check you for syphilis, just in case, since I already have the blood.'"[129]

The positive lab results on Fuster's son were fully documented at trial. The precise test that was used by the laboratory—the RapID/NH System—was evaluated in the *Journal of Clinical Microbiology* in March 1983. In 162 cases of known N. gonorrhoeae, the RapID/NH system correctly identified 100 percent of the cases; the alternative, and more time-consuming, carbohydrate-based method identified 98 percent of the cases.[130] The RapID/NH System was called rapid because the required incubation period was four hours, compared to twenty-four hours for older tests. The positive accuracy value of the RapID NH test was found to be 99.76 percent. But this number should not be applied directly to the results on Fuster's son without information on prevalence rates of gonorrhea in children. The article concluded: "the accuracy of [the RapID/NH system] is impressive, and the system has been proven to be superior to conventional carbohydrate degradation tests."[131]

Years after the jury verdict, Debbie Nathan claimed that the test used in the Country Walk case "could not distinguish bacteria that cause gonorrhea from other harmless ones that normally live in children's throats."[132] To support this claim she cited an impressive-sounding article from the Centers for Disease Control called "Incorrect Identification of Neisseria Gonorrhoeae from Infants and Children."[133] The article described fourteen cases (out of forty) in which the CDC ascertained that an initial positive test result for gonorrhea was in error. But the article has nothing to do with the Country Walk case. *None of the children with false-positive results were reported as having been tested with the RapID/NH system.* This is not surprising since RapID/NH is used when sexually transmitted diseases *are* suspected, not when a child has conjunctivitis or in a routine exam, as was the case for most of the children described in the article.

To read Nathan and other critics, one would think there was only one STD test used nationwide at the time of the Country Walk case. In fact, there were numerous tests used for different populations according to the circumstances. The CDC article is about a number of tests that may suggest STDs but are generally given for other purposes. Indeed, the authors of the article concluded that "unless there is other evidence of sexual abuse, initiation of formal child abuse investigations should await the confirmed identification of the isolate."[134] Notably, this is apparently what happened in the Country Walk case: the isolates *were* confirmed. Lab technician Freda Burstyn testified that after the Martin Lewis agar results were observed to be positive there was "a biochemical test to confirm it."[135] Moreover, the confirmatory test was processed at a reference laboratory, as recommended by the CDC. In sum, the RapID/NH test was shown to be highly accurate. More recent studies raise serious concerns about false negatives, meaning that children who tested negative might actually have been positive.[136]

Noel's "Retraction"

Some writers have touted Noel's "retraction" of statements admitting that his father gave him gonorrhea of the throat. Since the underlying claim about the alleged inaccuracy of the test is false, it would appear that any retraction by Noel would fit well into the model of child abuse accommodation syndrome. Instead, his alleged retraction has been offered as evidence of Fuster's innocence. On close examination, however, the retraction itself is not what has been claimed.

The most detailed statement of the claim that Noel Fuster retracted his admissions about abuse by his father was made by Alexander Cockburn in *The Nation*.[137] Quoting selectively from a civil deposition taken years later, Cockburn claims that Noel "unequivocally" retracted any and all claims that he was ever abused by Frank Fuster. The deposition, Cockburn neglected to mentioned, was taken in a civil lawsuit filed *on Noel's behalf* against the Arvida Corporation, the developers and operators of the Country Walk development. The portions that Cockburn cites are entirely from questions asked by the lawyer who was trying to protect Arvida's assets. Apparently abandoning any concern about blatantly leading questions, Cockburn relies on this exchange, reproduced in his article, to support the argument that Noel Fuster had recanted:

> Q: It's my understanding and impression from reviewing many documents including lots of reports by psychologists that from the very beginning when you were asked if your father sexually abused you in any way that you were steadfast in saying that he did not; is that correct?
>
> A: Yes, sir.
>
> Q: It's my further understanding that you only said that he did when you felt you essentially had no alternative and if you didn't tell someone what they wanted to hear they would just go on endlessly; is that also true?
>
> A: Yes.
>
> Q: Is it, in fact, true that he did not ever abuse you?
>
> A: Yes, sir.

Cockburn then omits, without the appropriate editorial markings, almost four pages of questions and answers that lead up to this exchange:

> Q: Now you initially saw, I think doctor either Miranda or Drs. Braga; is that correct? Do you remember which one was first? I know they were the early ones, Dr. Simon, Marcie Cramer and the two doctors named Braga. Do you have any recollection of that?
>
> A: Are they the ones with the ponytails?
>
> Q: That's right.
>
> A. Yes.
>
> Q: Your memory is pretty good. That's right, they have ponytails. Did they try to change your original statement, that your father had not harmed you?
>
> A: Yes, sir.

Before analyzing the significance of these two snippets, it should be noted that Noel Fuster's "original statement" was *not* that he had never been harmed by his father. To the contrary, the very first day Noel spoke with the Bragas in August 1984, his reply to the question "Does your dad ever hit you?" was "Some days."[138]

Contrary to the self-serving statement that the Arvida lawyer included as a preface to the final question quoted above ("Your memory is pretty good"), the quality of Noel Fuster's memory in this deposition was demonstrably deficient. In the pages Cockburn omitted without editorial indication, Noel said he did not remember *any* of the children who attended the babysitting service over those nine months. The boy who supposedly had a "pretty good" memory could not remember a single person who attended the babysitting service.

Later in the deposition it was revealed that Noel had been hypnotized since the events at issue in the case.[139] This fact alone would disqualify him from testifying in court. Indeed, critics of the Country Walk case claim that Ileana Fuster's confession should be disregarded entirely because the defense psychologists who visited her in prison *essentially* hypnotized her. Though that characterization is contested, there is no question that Noel Fuster *actually* went to a hypnotist.[140] There is a strong argument—generally endorsed by the same people who criticize the Country Walk conviction—that no weight should be given his post-hypnotic statements.

Even accepting the boy's deposition testimony on its face, it is apparent that at age fifteen Noel Fuster was deeply conflicted and extremely confused about what happened eight years earlier. It is also clear that he experienced bizarre treatment at the hands of Frank Fuster. Among the many statements Cockburn does not acknowledge in this deposition are ones confirming several elements of the case Cockburn has ridiculed. For instance, Noel says:

> I was a little traumatized about the gorilla mask he used to put on. He used to put on a gorilla mask and scare the kids and I never really got that out of my head.[141]

Later he recalls that "the kids would scream" when his father scared them with the mask. It should be kept in mind that features like masks are precisely the kinds of "elements" that Charlier and Downing labeled as fantastic and then discounted. Cockburn's summary of this deposition also omits the myriad ways in which Noel expressed uncertainty and ambivalence about what had happened years earlier. At one point Noel refers to "this confusion that I've always had about whether I was sexually abused." He also says "it would be a relief to know" whether he was sexually abused. Later he says that "Everything is so vague" from back then, but he allows, "I sometimes remember things that are extreme."[142] The assertion that Noel has provided an unequivocal retraction simply is not supported by the evidence.[143]

Ileana Fuster's "Coerced Confession"

The revisionist view of the Country Walk case also dismisses Ileana Fuster's guilty plea and subsequent testimony as coerced. These critiques make four related arguments: (1) the state desperately needed Ileana Fuster's testimony, (2) Ileana Fuster was seriously mistreated in prison, (3) she was then brainwashed into pleading guilty, and (4) she has since given a convincing retraction of her guilty plea and related testimony. All four of these claims fail under close scrutiny.

The revisionist view of Ileana's testimony begins with the claim that it was so vital to the state's case that they were willing to obtain it at any cost. According to Nathan, "Reno decided that to get a conviction she would need a confession from Ileana Fuster."[144] The notion that the prosecution had to "break Ileana down" in order to win their case is contradicted directly by the chronology of the case. The case was originally scheduled for trial on January 7, 1985. The defense sought several delays. Every time, the state objected and lost. Reno made what was described as "a rare court appearance" in June to argue strongly against any further delay. She lost the motion, and the trial date was set for September 1985.[145] Ileana Fuster did not decide to plead guilty until the third week in August. Indeed, the psychologists who allegedly brainwashed her into that position had been hired by the defense only two weeks earlier. *But the state was anxious to go ahead with its case months before that.* Their repeated objections to defense motions for continuances clearly contradict the position they would take if Ileana's testimony was considered vital to their case. Nathan's claim is also contradicted by the role that Ileana's testimony actually played in the trial. The state did not include Fuster in the case-in-chief; she was used only on rebuttal. It is not clear that she would have testified at all had Frank Fuster not done likewise; her testimony rebutted his.

Whatever the importance of Ileana Fuster's testimony in proving Frank Fuster's guilt, those who reject the substance of her testimony also argue that she was coerced into making incriminating statements. They maintain that the coercion began with sustained and extreme mistreatment in prison, followed by a series of questionable visits by two psychologists. Her confinement has been described in horrifying terms, including the claim that she was "often kept nude" and was "drugged most of the time."[146] These claims rest entirely on a sworn statement by Stephen Dinerstein, who was hired in 1984 as a private investigator for the defense. Eight years after the conviction, Dinerstein made graphic claims about Ileana's mistreatment in jail that he did not make at the time of the trial.[147] Remarkably, Dinerstein has been accepted as the primary source in the revisionist history, even though there are serious reasons to doubt his credibility.[148]

Dinerstein's claims are contradicted by several credible sources from the time of the alleged mistreatment. First and foremost, the Fusters' own motion about their prison conditions, heard on April 12, 1985, does not support these claims. The claims made by the Fusters under the banner of "cruel and unusual punishment" were actually quite tame. Ileana wanted to be moved out of her "safety cell" into the general population—a request that the judge granted. But her complaints about solitary confinement were ordinary. She complained that she had "only limited access to shower facilities," "only limited access to hot water for coffee," "no access to a day room," and "no access to television."[149] But notably, *there was nothing in her motion in 1985 about drugs, sleep deprivation, or lack of clothing*. Frank Fuster's complaints about his prison conditions were patently absurd and have not been repeated since. He wanted, among other things, two showers a day and cable television. Ileana's letters from prison also contradict the claim made by Frank's lawyer years later.[150]

Evidence from three adults who interacted with Ileana Fuster in 1984–85 contradicts Dinerstein's claims as well. These adults all had more contact with Ileana during this time period than Dinerstein did. First, Shirley Blando, a chaplain in the facility who befriended Ileana, said nothing about her being nude or any of the other wild claims that have been made about her incarceration. To the contrary, Blando recounted frequently sitting outside on a patio with Ileana, including in the months prior to the motion where she complained about lack of access to a "day room."[151] Blando also remarked specifically about how *well* Fuster did while in solitary confinement. A Sergeant Spears, a shift commander at the Detention Center, testified that Fuster "had more recreational time than any other inmate within her cell block, and she spent most of her time with Shirley Blando [assistant chaplain]." She also verified that Fuster made "frequent visits to the sun deck."[152] The Rev. Tommy Watson, who visited Ileana weekly and later assisted in her education, also took strong issue with Dinerstein's years-after-the-fact claims. Watson wrote that during Fuster's period of solitary confinement, "I saw her in the chapel service and in Chaplain Blando's office many times. Ileana asked me to thank the Captain of the detention center for her kind care given while she was in jail."[153]

Ileana pleaded guilty on August 22, 1985. She was not offered anything in exchange for this plea. Judge Newman specifically asked if she understood that she could be sentenced to life in prison. She replied that she did.[154] She later provided detailed testimony against her husband, both in depositions and on the stand for the final day of his criminal trial. When she appeared for sentencing in November, Ileana "repeatedly told [Judge] Newman 'I am sorry . . . I am very sorry."[155] In 1993, Debbie Nathan argued that the substance of Ileana's testimony was created by two psychologists hired by Michael Von Zamft, her own lawyer. The psychologists did not testify in the criminal trial, but one of them reportedly told Nathan years later that what he did was “a lot like reverse brainwashing.”[156] There is apparently no tape recording of that statement; nor have any written notes ever been referenced by Nathan.

The reason the defense hired these psychologists has been lost in the rush to condemn them. Ileana had been subject to physical threats and psychological control from Frank Fuster. Indeed, Dr. Charles B. Mutter, the psychiatrist who examined Ileana for the court several times between July and November 1985, provided a cogent explanation: “although she played a role in [the abuse], this was not a role of volition, but the role of a terrorized human being.”[157]

It also been argued that her guilty plea was “hardly a definitive admission” because of something she said in court the day of her guilty plea.[158] This claim is based on an inaccurate and misleading “quote.” Here is a precise quotation from the court proceedings; the words in bold were left out of the “excerpt” that has been reproduced by Nathan, Nathan and Snedeker, and Robert Rosenthal.[159]

> THE DEFENDANT: Judge, I would like you to know that I am pleading guilty, not because I feel guilty, but because I think—I think it’s in the best interest. It’s the best for my own interest and for the children and for the Court and all the people that are working on the case, but I am not pleading guilty because I feel guilty or because I think I have a criminal mind.
>
> THE COURT: All right.
>
> THE DEFENDANT: **There were circumstances and that—I was raped at sixteen. I was taken away from my home and my school. My attorney said that I am an unlucky person but** I just want you to know that I am pleading guilty not because I feel guilty or that I know I am, that I am guilty. I am inn ocent of all those charges. I wouldn’t have done anything to harm those children. I have never done anything in my life. **I have never seen such a case in my life before. I wasn’t raised in any environment like it**. I am innocent. I am just doing it—I am pleading guilty you get all of this over **and I think it’s best for the parents and everyone.**[160]

What Ileana Fuster said was offered as a reason for a lenient sentence. Not only have Nathan and others omitted the gist of her statement (“there were circumstances,” “I was raped”), they have also omitted any reference to what came before and after it. The complete transcript of the proceedings on that day demonstrates that Ileana Fuster first affirmed she was satisfied with her legal representation, she understood the charges, she knew the constitutional rights she was giving up by pleading guilty, *she had not been coerced or promised anything*, she understood exactly what she was doing, she knew she could be sentenced to as much as life in prison, and she was entering the plea because she felt it was in her best interest.[161]

In 1994, years after Ileana had finished her sentence, returned to Honduras, and changed her last name back to Flores, Frank Fuster's lawyers announced she had retracted her trial testimony. The retraction was recorded in Honduras by a defense lawyer named Arthur Cohen, who was working for Frank. It is unclear what Cohen told Ileana Flores that convinced her to attend this meeting. There was no representative for the prosecution present; nor did Flores have her own legal counsel. Nevertheless, Fuster's defense team convinced a federal judge to schedule an evidentiary hearing on the basis of the statement produced by Cohen. On close reading, the statement does not support the claims that have been made about it. First, it is replete with equivocal answers, even though Peter Boyer would later call it an "unequivocal" retraction. Second, Ileana contradicted some of the most vivid claims made about her pre-trial incarceration. For example, she specifically says that she was *not* held naked, contradicting a key assertion made by Nathan, Cockburn, and others who insist that her original confession was coerced. Third, Cohen appears throughout the interview to be looking for evidence to support a preexisting conclusion, and he actively resists answers that incriminate Frank Fuster.[162]

The hearing at which this "new evidence" would have been subject to cross-examination never took place, even though the judge allowed testimony to be taken by satellite from Honduras. As the defense euphemistically put it, Ileana Flores was "unavailable to provide testimony to the court."[163] This is not true. She was available, but she was apparently not planning to say what the defense wanted to hear. She had retracted her so-called retraction. Rev. Watson, who visited Ileana Fuster regularly in prison in Florida, went to see her in Honduras after the stories of her "retraction" surfaced in the Miami media. He returned with a letter signed by Ileana Flores stating she was pressured by Cohen.[164] Watson later testified that Ileana Fuster told him "she was pressured to give statements and that she realized that what she had done was wrong."[165]

Years later, Ileana Flores provided another would-be retraction; this time it was for the television program *Frontline*. As before, the statement was made without any adversarial cross-examination. Ileana had apparently returned to the United States without proper documentation, and as *Frontline* acknowledged, the only way she could ever stay in the country legally would be if somehow her own conviction were overturned.[166] The statement she provided was a last-ditch effort to obtain legal permission to stay in the country. It did not work.

Whitewashing Frank Fuster

Frank Fuster's prior record—which included a recent conviction for child molestation—was undoubtedly one of the most damning pieces of evidence in the court of public opinion. Although for most people it is nearly impossible to imagine an adult having the *inclination* to sexually abuse a child, it is much easier to imagine someone previously convicted of child molestation having such inclinations. This is probably why even critics of the conviction have allowed that some kind of abuse "probably happened" to some of the children at Country Walk.[167] But the jury was never told about the prior conviction, since such information would be considered too prejudicial.

Those endorsing the witch-hunt narrative, however, have gone to considerable lengths to minimize the relevance and the substance of Fuster's prior record. One approach is to claim that his record actually made him a target. "He thought that all was behind him," *Frontline* intoned in their program called *Did Daddy Do It*? "But once word of Frank's record flashed through the neighborhood it was only a matter of time," their narrative continued. "The crusade had the perfect defendant—an ex-con, a convicted child molester."[168] The idea that his status as an ex-con left him targeted for arrest is contradicted by the basic chronology of the case. The two separate incidents that formed the origins of the case—Donald Menninger's spontaneous utterance in April and John St. Lorenzo's appearance of being drugged in late July—both happened *before* anyone was aware of Fuster's criminal record. Emma St. Lorenzo triggered the investigation without the slightest idea about Fuster's record.

Another approach to minimizing Fuster's criminal record has been to minimize or deny the underlying facts of his prior convictions. *Frontline* did that when it reported, without any skepticism, that Fuster's first-degree murder conviction years earlier stemmed from "an accident."[169] His child molestation conviction has also been minimized in the witch-hunt narrative. Author Mark Pendergrast virtually exonerated Fuster of those charges, declaring him to be innocent on the basis of a single interview—with Frank Fuster.[170] Neither of those claims squares with reality. There would be little or no reason to elaborate on these points if the effort to rehabilitate Fuster were not so persistent, and the willingness to accept his dubious denials without any apparent skepticism were not so widespread.

First, the manslaughter charge. Fuster was arrested on January 16, 1969, when a police officer witnessed him shoot a man to death with a rifle after a minor motor-vehicle accident in the Bronx. Fuster was charged with two felonies: manslaughter and reckless endangerment for the "depraved indifference to life" that he demonstrated when pointing his loaded rifle *at the off-duty officer* who arrested him. He eventually pleaded guilty to first-degree manslaughter and served four years of a ten-year sentence. Since then, Fuster has provided differing accounts of the incident—none consistent with official records. In all of his accounts, he bears no responsibility for his actions, even though he pleaded guilty to first-degree manslaughter.[171] When *Frontline* interviewed Fuster in prison in

2001, he described the shooting as "an accident." *Frontline* correspondents Michael Kirk and Peter Boyer accepted and repeated his version without a hint of skepticism, or, apparently, any original research.[172]

The revisionist history of the Country Walk case also includes a whitewashed version of Fuster's prior conviction for child molestation. The case began with the allegations of a nine-year-old girl who told her mother, immediately after the fact, that he had fondled her breasts and genitals through her clothing while he was driving her to her home. Fuster was arrested on September 21, 1981, for lewd and lascivious assault on a minor. At his jury trial in 1982, the girl testified in detail, and she sustained a lengthy cross-examination. Fuster did not take the stand. The jury found the girl credible and convicted Fuster of lewd and lascivious conduct.

The facts of the case have since been distorted beyond recognition by Fuster and his supporters. But a careful examination of his statements to the police officer who arrested him in 1981 reveals the behavior of someone seeking to rationalize sexual contact with a child. Fuster confirmed, but never explained, that he entered the van *through the passenger side*. That is how, according to Fuster, "he may have brushed up against" the nine-year-old girl.[173] Fuster also admitted "that he asked her to sit with him because he was sleepy and wanted someone to talk to and possibly have someone to grab the wheel if he fell asleep." Fuster even acknowledged putting his arms around the girl who *he had made sit on his lap*. Fuster said this was to "keep her from falling off the seat."[174]

As for Fuster's "vehement denial" and the lie detector test he supposedly passed, one can only observe that he did not avail himself of the opportunity to take the stand and try to explain the statements he made to the arresting officer.[175] And there is no evidence in the court file of a lie detector test. But Fuster's MMPI tests (personality tests) *were* revealed through the court proceedings, and they found him to be "compulsive and paranoid" with a "strong need to see himself as extremely virtuous."[176] Remarkably, Fuster has since admitted even more clearly that he committed the basic acts charged in the 1981 case. At one point in his rambling statement at the end of his parole violation hearing in 1985, he demonstrated: "This is how *I* touch her chest area. I don't see any sexual movement here. *I* also touch her in her vagina area. That's it. That was the whole case."[177] One wonders whether Mark Pendergrast and others, who have accepted Fuster's subsequent protestations of innocence, are aware that he admitted in court that in the course of driving a nine-year-old girl home he touched both her "chest area" and her "vagina area."[178]

This is not the full extent of Fuster's criminal record. Police records also indicate that during the investigation of the 1981 child molestation case, Fuster indicated that he had been a suspect in an alleged rape with a girl he had picked up from Central Shopping Center. He confessed to having had intercourse with her.[179] She was a "very beautiful but demented young woman," according to Fuster.[180] The case was not prosecuted. During her pre-trial detention, Ileana Fuster told three separate adults about the violence and abuse she endured at Frank's hands. There is evidence she was beaten and that she was scared to death of him, as was his previous wife.[181] Frank was observed striking Ileana in the face at a Halloween party, and he once pulled a gun on Ileana's stepfather. There was also evidence that it was his rape of Ileana that led to their marriage. That disclosure predated, by at least two months, the involvement of the psychologists who the witch-hunt narrative blames for all of the incriminatory statements Ileana later made in court.[182]

In short, what *Frontline* described as a "fairy tale love story" was much closer to a horror story from the first day they met. Their marriage was, according to numerous accounts, precipitated by a rape when Ileana was barely sixteen years old, and it was punctuated by documented violence and the sexual assault of at least one minor. None of those things prove that Frank Fuster was guilty of the Country Walk charges, of course. But the minimization and denial of his criminal record in the witch-hunt narrative is noteworthy. Given Fuster's violent and dishonest history, one wonders how anyone could cite his denials in the County Walk case with utter credulity and without any acknowledgment of the considerable evidence to the contrary.

Manufacturing "Fantastic" Taint

There has been a curious evolution in the argument that "fantastic claims" characterized the Country Walk case. The case was tagged as having several fantastic elements by Charlier and Downing and others. They included allegations about feces, masks, and a dead bird. But a close examination of the trial transcript and related exhibits makes it clear that Fuster actually *had* a perverse interest in excrement, that he owned scary masks and used them to scare children (and adults), and that he had shown the children a dead bird. Those claims quietly disappeared from the witch-hunt narrative without any acknowledgment of their basis in fact.

Proponents of the narrative did not admit that the fantastic elements used to discredit the case in the 1980s had been proven to be true—and, by implication, that such things might be true in other cases discredited on the same basis. Instead, the argument shifted and new claims about fantastic elements appeared—ones that, curiously, were never raised by the defense in the original trial. Ceci and Bruck claimed in 1993 that "interweaved among the credible allegations" in the Country Walk case "were ones that seemed fabulous, such as riding on sharks and eating the head of another person."[183] The authors did not provide specific citations for either of these claims, let alone excerpts from any relevant interviews. Indeed, the only source that directly related to the Country Walk case in their 1993 article was Jan Hollingsworth's book, which does not support this claim. Ceci and Bruck made essentially the same claim in their 1995 book, *Jeopardy in the Courtroom*. Immediately after a discussion of satanic and ritualistic abuse—defined in the most extreme terms as cult activities that include witchcraft or animal sacrifice—the authors asserted that the Country Walk case was "characterized by these types of allegations."[184] The authors' only elaboration of this claim, however, makes no reference to witchcraft or animal sacrifice. Rather, the language is almost precisely the same as their 1993 article: "Interleaved among the children's plausible allegations were fabulous ones, such as riding on sharks and eating the head of another person."[185] But the transcripts of the interviews in the Country Walk case do not bear out these claims; there are very few such references to these items and those instances are explainable, not "fabulous."

"Riding on Sharks"

There are approximately eighty hours of interview tapes in the Country Walk case, involving upwards of twenty-seven children. From reading Ceci and Bruck's claim, one would think that these interviews would be filled with references to riding sharks and eating heads. But a full-text search of the interviews that have been transcribed and digitized by Professor James Wood finds only one reference to sharks. It is from Jason Cramer on August 28. The word appears in a statement where the boy was discussing Jacques Cousteau and television programs about whales and sharks. A manual examination of the entire trial transcript, which includes transcriptions of thirty-three videotapes, contains only one other reference to a shark, in an interview with Brian Arrigan, a three-year-old who was not involved in any of the individual named charges. The exchange is nothing more than a simple conversation with a child who is interested in a stuffed- animal shark in the interview room.[186] There is nothing fabulous about these statements; nor are they distributed throughout the children's statements.

"Eating the Head of Another Person"

Ceci and Bruck's other claim about fabulous statements in the Country Walk case involves "eating the head of another person." Again, a full-text search of the interviews compiled by Wood finds no reference to "eating the head" of anything, including a person. There are a few references to either the "cut off your head game" or the "who's gonna lose their head" game. Here is how Jessie Lipton described the game in her January interview:

A: They played cut your head off.
Q: Cut your head off. Can you show me how they did that.
A: They would ask us, "Do you want a cupcake?" and if you said yes, then he would cut your head off.
Q: Did he really cut, cut off heads, or pretend?
A: He would (inaudible) put the knife to your neck.

Laurie Braga then asked further questions to ascertain precisely what the child was saying:

Q: Well, now this a little hard for me to understand. Help me understand, cuz remember I wasn't there so I don't know anything other than what you tell me, okay. You said, they would say, "do you want a cup cake," okay. And if you said yes, then he would hold a knife to your throat? Is that, is that what you said?
A: Yes.
Q: Okay. But if you said yes, and then you wouldn't eat it, that's what I . . .
A: No.
Q: No. Why would he hold a knife to your throat if you said yes you want a cup cake?
A: Cuz is part of the game he was playing.
Q: Is part of the game. Do you think he was trying to scare you?
A: Yes.
Q: Yeah. Did he ever say that he hurt you if you told?
A: Yes.
Q: Can you tell me about that?
A: I said I was going to tell my mom.
Q: Um hum.
A: And, then he said "I'm going to cut your head off."[187]

She never said anything about *eating* the head of another person; rather, she was describing a game that Fuster played apparently to scare the children. Jason Cramer made similar statements in his first interview on August 9.

It remains unclear how Ceci and Bruck came to make the claim about "eating the head of another person." What still requires explanation is why Ceci and Bruck inflated a few small, inaccurate references—one to the cut off your head game, and the other to riding a shark—into the claim that implausible and so-called fabulous claims were interwoven into the statements of "the children" in the Country Walk case.

Suggesting Child Suggestibility

The Country Walk case is one of six "case studies" in Ceci and Bruck's book *Jeopardy in the Courtroom: A Scientific Analysis of Children's Testimony*. Only the Michaels case is cited more often throughout the book. In short, the case became a central part of the argument that children are more suggestible than previously recognized and that adults charged with such crimes are in jeopardy. This is surprising since Ceci and Bruck's review article in *Psychological Bulletin* in 1993 suggested that the Country Walk case was different from the Michaels case. Relying on an excerpt from Hollingsworth's book, they interpreted Jason's consistent replies in response to Jeffrey Samek's "angry and accusatory" questions as evidence that "young children are apparently capable of accurately reporting what they witness at least some of the time." There was a strong hint in the article, however, that Ceci and Bruck were reevaluating their position before the article was published. A footnote indicates that since writing the section about Jason's veracity, "we have learned of arguments" that cast doubt on Ileana Fuster's confession. They put the word *confession* in quotes—and cited Debbie Nathan's article, which had not yet appeared in Ralph Underwager's journal.[188] But by the time *Jeopardy in the Courtroom* was published, Ceci and Bruck were citing the Country Walk case as evidence of many arguments in their book. The case plays such an important role in the book that these arguments merit close attention.

The claim that the children should not be believed was the core of the defense at the original trial. Lee Coleman, the expert for the defense, argued that the children had all been "brainwashed." His testimony was discredited on a number of grounds, among them that it lacked a solid foundation in the scientific literature. Coleman had never done any original research on the issue. More problematic, he appeared unfamiliar with the relevant scientific literature of the day. In Coleman's defense, there was not much literature in 1985 on the suggestibility of children. Maggie Bruck argued years later that Coleman had "provided insightful testimony" that was hampered only by the lack of scientific studies to support it.[189] But the lack of scientific literature was only one of his problems. When the case is analyzed systematically, it is clear that the charges stemmed almost completely from the children who were interviewed at the State Attorney's Office in the first two days of the investigation. More than seventy-five percent of the individual charges in the case were filed in connection with children interviewed the first four days of the investigation. And Coleman had virtually nothing to say about those interviews.

Years later, Maggie Bruck filed a written declaration in support of Frank Fuster's federal appeal. She claimed that Coleman "had the intellectual tools—i.e., intuition—to detect that certain suggestive questioning could shape the child's response" but that no one could provide "scientific data on the actual *impact* of suggestive questioning techniques."[190] The phrase "actual impact" refers to the findings of laboratory experiments, not the particular circumstances of individual children and interviews in the Country Walk case. Indeed, Ceci and Bruck's work has the same flaws that Lee Coleman's did at trial. They never conducted a systematic analysis of the interviews in the Country Walk case, notwithstanding the subtitle of their book (a scientific analysis of children's testimony).[191] Even more surprising, Bruck did not conduct a complete analysis of the interviews and related evidence in preparing her detailed affidavit for Frank Fuster's federal court appeal. Her declaration in federal court listed the items she reviewed, and the list did not include some of the earliest and most important interviews. Bruck did not review the very first interview with Jason Cramer, even though Ceci and Bruck relied heavily on a single sentence from this very interview for their claim that fantastic statements were interleaved among the children's statements. (This is one of the interviews that includes a statement about the "cut off your head" game.) Bruck also neglected to review either of the interviews with Donald Menninger, whose statement in the spring of 1984 caused his mother to remove him from babysitting service and warn her friend. Instead, she took the same approach contained in *Jeopardy in the Courtroom*: citing passages from interviews that she found objectionable without any apparent attention to who was being interviewed, when the interview occurred in the course of the investigation, and what relationship, if any, the interview had on the actual charges in the case. What is lost as a result is any sense of the *actual impact* or representativeness of these disembodied snippets.

Picking and choosing brief snippets of disparate interviews overlooks how and when the claims emerged. The approach also overlooks the corroborating behavioral and medical evidence. It ignores all of the evidence from parents about strange observations at the Fusters, including the numerous independent decisions of various families to take children out of the Fusters' care before August 1984. It also paints a misleading picture of the interview sequence, relying on words like "repetitive," instead of doing actual analysis. A few simple calculations prove the point. The Bragas conducted a total of forty-six interviews with twenty-seven children, or fewer than two per child.[192] Focusing only on the children whose statements formed the basis for individual charges, there were twenty-four total interviews involving eight children. The most important children in the case, in other words, were interviewed an average of three times. A few were interviewed more, and others were interviewed less. These numbers alone belie the claims about highly repetitive interviewing. But the arguments in *Jeopardy in the Courtroom* have been endorsed in so many academic publications that it is worth considering the snippets they cite, and the children they overlook, in more detail.

Irrelevant and Unrepresentative Snippets

One problem with Ceci and Bruck's analysis is that it relies on children who were peripheral to the case to make arguments about children who were central to the case. Four children beyond Noel Fuster account for the seven unidentified snippets from the Country Walk cases that appear in *Jeopardy in the Courtroom.*[193] Because the children are never identified in any way, it is not clear to the reader that one child, Jessie Lipton, is the same child quoted four times.[194] It is also not clear that two of the four children had little or nothing to do with the charges in the case. For example, an interview with Ariel Thomas is cited as evidence of the investigators "trying to get the children to disclose by telling them what other children allegedly reported."[195] The authors cite a brief exchange where the interviewer does, in fact, mention things that the girl's sister said. But was this interview actually relevant to the case, and more to the point, was it representative of interviews with "the children"? The answer to both questions is no. No charges were brought in connection with this girl; she was not even named in a group charge. One might assume that if there had been examples of this problem among the children with named charges, Ceci and Bruck would have cited them.

Similarly, Ceci and Bruck use a fairly long excerpt from an interview with Brian Arrigan to demonstrate what they interpret as "the interviewers' pursuit of a single hypothesis that abuse had occurred that involved feeding children poison or drugs and playing games in the nude."[196] In this example, the interviewers ask, "When they gave you the stuff to drink, did you feel dizzy?" Ceci and Bruck note that "drinks were not mentioned previously in the interview." They are correct. And in a perfect interview one would never include a question like that without some prior statement from the child. But they are incorrect that this example is representative of the interviews or that it had any actual impact on the charges in the case. Brian Arrigan, three years old at the time, was clearly too young to be a witness in the case. He was never named in any of the individual charges, and no charges were ever brought in connection with allegedly drugged drinks. Although Frank Fuster was never charged with drugging the children—that is impossible to prove after the fact without forensic evidence—there was considerable evidence to suggest he had done so.

The Most Frequently Criticized Children

One child in the Country Walk case has been the focus of most of the criticisms of the case. This girl, Jessie Lipton, was the only child cited at length in Nathan's long article about the case, she was focus of the snippets in Rosenthal's article, and she is the primary child cited in Ceci and Bruck's book. The reason she is the focus of case critics is that she denied any abuse in her first interview with the Bragas, and then months later indicated she had been sexually abused by the Fusters. Bruck stated in her federal court affidavit that this "pattern has raised the most concerns regarding allegations of abuse." She went on to make the unequivocal claim that "this pattern of disclosure characterizes the child witnesses in *Fuster*."[197] In fact, Jessie Lipton is *the only child whose statements fit this pattern.*

One fact that has been lost in the use of out-of-context snippets is that Jessie Lipton attended the Fusters' only twice. When she was interviewed in August, then, it had been three months since she last attended. This explains a statement that Bruck found odd: that the girl referred to the Fusters as "strangers."[198] Given her brief attendance at Country Walk, what would have been truly odd is if she had claimed to know them well. The interview has also been criticized for references made to statements by other children. "Some of the children said that they were acting like they were monsters and they wore these masks and scared them," Laurie Braga said at one point. "Is that true? Do you know?" the girl replied. Laurie Braga then said: "I'm not sure, but some of the children said so, and I believe the children because I don't think children make up stories like that. Do you?" The stories about the masks were not "made up" and the interviewer began her answer with "I'm not sure"; nevertheless this interview contained too many references to what other children had said. Portions of this interview became the most significant arguments against the interviews in general. But the interview did not result in any disclosures, and the portions that have been cited repeatedly were not representative of the earlier interviews that were the basis for almost all of the charges in the case. Also, the evidence from Noel Fuster and several adults establishes that the masks *were* real; they were not something conjured up by the interviewers.

It is also important to note that the state would have gone ahead without any charges connected to Jessie Lipton had her parents not requested that she be interviewed in January. The reason for the request, according to her parents, was that Jessie had "started talking." There was some debate in the State Attorney's Office about whether to conduct the interview. This indicates that, contrary to various claims, the interviewers did not set out to extract incriminating statements through multiple interviews. They did not initiate this interview and were reluctant to conduct it for reasons that seem prescient given the evolution of the witch-hunt narrative.

What the girl said in January corroborated statements made by Jason Cramer months earlier, particularly with regard to the "cut off your head" game. Those statements came in response to open-ended questions. Critics of the case have argued that the girl's parents pressured her into making these statements. It is impossible to assess the parental pressure claim without at least interviewing the parents. But even allowing for the possibility that one might reach a different conclusion than the jury did, it is clear that Jessie Lipton's circumstances are different from those of all of the other important children in the case. Yet she is frequently cited in various critiques of the case, and the claim is often made that her interview was typical or representative of all of the others.

Becky Taylor is the only other child in the case with named charges who denied any abuse in the first investigative interview.[199] But she had already told Cathleen McGinnis at Jackson Memorial Hospital, when asked if she had ever seen a grown man's penis, that she had seen "her daddy's and Frank's." Her denials in the first interview with Bragas were filled with answers such as "I don't want you to know," "I hate the question," and "I have a hard time telling." Even so, she made references in her first interview to masks and snakes. She also made an ambiguous statement about the "pee pee game."[200]

There is no doubt Becky Taylor was the most avoidant and anxious child in the case. Her mother testified that when Detective Meznarich tried to interview Becky in early August "she started running around the room" as soon as Frank Fuster's name was mentioned. She was "extremely hostile, anxious" and then hit her mother. Dr. Hicks reported that at Jackson Memorial Hospital the girl was "totally uncooperative" and yelled "give me my panties" when the doctor tried to examine her.

Among the many relevant contextual facts that are never mentioned in the witch-hunt narrative about this child are these: no other child in the case had such strong reactions to being interviewed in the case. No other child spent as much time at the Fusters' as she did, either. (She was there weekdays, one weekday evening, and some Saturdays.) She even went on a beach trip with the Fusters. Both Jason Cramer and Tom Leventhal had already said things about her with her clothes off at the Fusters'; and Betsy Leventhal had already told Meznarich about observing Becky once at the Fusters' wearing only a shirt. Ileana "quickly grabbed a towel, wrapped it around her," and told a story, which turned out not to be true, about the girl's mother having forgotten to bring an extra diaper. As the girl's mother later testified, Becky was no longer wearing diapers.[201] There were, in short, myriad reasons to think Becky Taylor might have been abused.

Her August 30 interview was more substantive, but it was also confusing in places and she was still quite avoidant at times. The girl made more statements about the "real snake" and the masks. She also said that Joshua and Tom—the two boys who had mentioned seeing her naked at the Fusters'—had small penises. Critics have emphasized the admittedly leading questions that appear in her interviews, but they have never mentioned the fact that before this girl ever met the Bragas she told a nurse she had seen Frank Fuster's penis and she described the penis of boys who attended the babysitting service. Ileana Fuster later said two words that speak volumes about Becky's behavior: she said that Becky was "Frank's favorite."[202]

Key Children, Overlooked or Downplayed

What is most striking about the critiques by Ceci and Bruck in 1995 is that they overlook the most important statements in the case. Bruck told the federal court that "it is of primary importance to understand the evolution of the child's reports." But her analysis of the case does not follow this advice. The two most important children in the case were Jason Cramer, who made extensive statements on the first day he was interviewed, and Donald Menninger, whose spontaneous utterance in April became the basis for the eventual civil suits against the Arvida Corporation, which employed the boy's father as a property manager at Country Walk. An interview tape of Donald Menninger was the only one played in the parole violation hearing that assured Frank Fuster of a fifteen-year prison term before his criminal trial began. Yet, none of the snippets in *Jeopardy in the Courtroom* are from Donald Menninger or Jason Cramer.

Bruck, who reviewed dozens of interviews and depositions in preparation for her affidavit for the defense, did not review either one of Donald's interviews, both of which were conducted in August 1984.[203] In a systematic analysis of the case—from first disclosure onward in chronological order—Donald is clearly one of the most important children in the case. In the McMartin case, for example, where the mother of the first child in the case became mentally unstable, the index child was the focus of most critiques. In the Country Walk case, however, the index child's mother was the opposite. She was not only lucid but had a clear motive to *deny* that there was abuse. Such a denial would help her husband's defense in the multimillion-dollar civil suits against Arvida and Disney. This is presumably why she was called as a witness for the defense. But Menninger indicated in her testimony that she thought her son *had* been sexually abused by the Fusters. It was perhaps the most powerful evidence for the state. Ignoring this boy's statements, along with his mother's actions in April and her testimony at trial, is an oversight that is difficult to understand.

The most important witness at trial was Jason Cramer. The boy was extremely articulate, and he had made extensive disclosures on August 9, the first day of interviews by the Bragas. The defense clearly saw this boy as the linchpin of the state's case. This is presumably why Samek set out to "break him" in deposition. But the boy withstood a remarkable onslaught by the defense lawyer, who directly accused him of lying. Jason also resisted a clever attempt to trip him up at trial. After Jason testified about the dead bird, Samek asked him, "What about the time they killed the cat?" "They didn't kill the cat," he replied, resisting the temptation to embellish his testimony or to incorporate a false suggestion.[204]

Bruck indicated she reviewed Jason Cramer's most substantive interview on August 9. She claimed she was unable to review his earlier interview that day because of "technical difficulties." But the original tape of the interview was not defective; a technical problem was mentioned in the trial transcript, but it had to do with the ability of the *court reporter* to hear the tape. This issue was discussed on the record, and it is clear that the jury could hear the tape. This is confirmed by the fact that Jan Hollingsworth, who heard the tape in court, quoted from the interview at length in her book. In order to remove all doubt about the integrity of the audio track of this tape, I arranged to have the original played under the supervision of the State Attorney's Office while a stenographer, from the same court reporting firm that transcribed the original trial, transcribed the tape. This transcript bears out the Hollingsworth description. In short, Bruck could have reviewed this tape; instead, she dropped the matter—involving possibly the most important interview in the case—because the tape was not transcribed into the court record. Bruck's lengthy affidavit, with 180 numbered paragraphs, does not contain a single specific criticism of the August 9 interview that she *did* review. She offered one major criticism pertaining to Jason Cramer: she claimed he was induced to talk by "a bag of toys" that the Bragas gave him on August 10.[205]

The interaction that she cites does not support this claim. First, there are no statements to the effect of "we'll give you this if you say something." To the contrary, Jason had already made extensive statements in two sessions on August 9. He came back on Friday the tenth for a brief interview that helped provide the basis for the search warrant of the Fuster house. At the end of the interview, Joseph Braga was talking about some toys. The Bragas had brought a bag of toys to help put the children at ease and to use in rapport building. Jason then said, referring to the bag of toys, "Could I have this?" Joseph Braga responded:

> I need that to show to other kids but what I can give you is let me find it here. You hold the bag. There is a whole bunch of games in there. Here (inaudible).[206]

It is not clear from the transcript what "it"—as in, "let me find it"—means. But from the transcript alone, it is clear that it is *not* the bag of toys. Joseph Braga made this clear when he said "I need that to show to other kids." A review of the videotape indicates the toy was more like the prize in a Cracker Jack box. It was not a "bag of toys." Bruck relied on the "bag of toys" argument to impugn Jason's additional interview on August 13. But the trinket he took with him could not possibly have affected Jason's testimony on the tenth (or the ninth, of course) because it occurred at the very end of the interview. The idea that this trinket alone taints the entire statement of August 13 is both exaggerated and unimportant. In the interviews that Bruck did not review from August 9, the boy gave extensive details that were later corroborated in a variety of ways.

Maligning the Bragas

The Bragas have been the source of relentless criticism in the witch-hunt narrative. The PBS program *Frontline* called them "the Pied Pipers of child abuse in Miami." The attacks on their credibility actually began in 1985 when Stephen Dinerstein, the private investigator employed by Frank Fuster's lawyer, swore that Joseph Braga was a "fraud" and an "impostor."[207] Dinerstein claimed that "the real Joseph Braga" had died years earlier. This provided Dr. Braga with a Mark Twain moment, where he appeared in court and assured the judge that the rumors of his demise were greatly exaggerated. The criticisms of the Bragas intensified when the revisionist view of the case emerged in 1993. There are two related criticisms in the narrative: first, that the Bragas misstated their credentials and were not actually qualified to interview children, and second, that they were inherently biased toward finding sexual abuse.

The criticisms of the Bragas' credentials that have been lodged since 1993 are relentless. Rael Jean Isaac, writing in the *National Review,* called them "self-styled" experts.[208] Robert Rosenthal, writing in *Penthouse* magazine, said "their real expertise" was in "coercing youngsters to talk about sex."[209] Much has also been made of the fact that they were not *licensed* psychologists, although licensing is only necessary to open a private practice (something the Bragas did not do). There were even several ethics complaints filed with the American Psychological Association—almost ten years after the case was over—claiming that the Bragas had misrepresented their credentials. On close examination, none of these claims stood up to scrutiny.

The Bragas both have doctorates relevant to child development. They are among the most highly educated people to interview children in any of the infamous day-care abuse cases of the 1980s. Joseph Braga's doctorate is from the School of Education at Boston University, where his major field was called foundations/educational psychology. His dissertation, an evaluation of an early admissions program in the Lexington, Massachusetts, public schools, is cataloged under the subject heading "Educational Psychology." After completing his doctorate, he was hired as an assistant professor at Boston University, where he taught graduate courses in educational psychology. Laurie Braga's doctorate is from the Graduate School at Northwestern University, where her major field was learning disabilities. Her dissertation involved the development and assessment of a test analysis system for "describing intra-child variables in learning disabled preschool children."[210] Before moving to Miami, the Bragas coauthored four books related to child development: *Child Development and Early Childhood Education* (1973), *Growing with Children: The Early Childhood Years* (1974), *Learning and Growing: A Guide to Child Development* (1975), and *Children and Adults: Activities for Growing Together* (1976). They were also the editors of two series of books for Prentice-Hall, one on human development and the other on the psychology of living.

None of the writers who have challenged the Bragas' credentials has ever engaged the substance of these books. If the Bragas were truly unqualified in the field of child development, these books would presumably be filled with passages demonstrating their incompetence. But not a single passage from any of these books has ever been quoted in support of the claim that the Bragas are unqualified in the areas about which they have written so much.

Instead, there has been a behind-the-scenes effort to damage their reputation through the filing of baseless ethics complaints with the American Psychological Association. Debbie Nathan, the primary writer who has attacked the Country Walk conviction in 1993, initiated this process with a letter to the Ethics Office of the American Psychological Association (APA) exactly one month after Janet Reno was nominated for U.S. attorney general. Nathan stated that her "fact checking" of the Bragas' credentials had revealed that Laurie Braga's Ph.D. was actually in the field of "speech," not learning disabilities. The title page of Laurie Braga's dissertation, which is widely available through interlibrary loan, clearly states that her field of study was, in fact, learning disabilities. An investigator for the APA contacted Northwestern University and received a letter confirming that Laurie Braga's doctorate was in learning disabilities. The APA notified Nathan that it was closing the matter in a letter noting that "this was never a formal ethics case."[211] This is because Nathan did not file a formal complaint. Perhaps she was reticent to take a formal action that would reveal her to be an activist in a story that she claimed to be covering journalistically.[212]

Any presumption of Nathan's impartiality is contradicted by what she then proceeded to do. Working with Frank Fuster's defense lawyer, Robert Rosenthal, Nathan helped orchestrate a behind-the-scenes effort to have a formal ethics complaint filed against Laurie Braga. The effort was timed to coincide with the filing of Frank Fuster's federal habeas corpus appeal. The formal complaint was filed by James Wood, a psychology professor at the University of Texas–El Paso.[213] Wood acknowledged in his complaint that he had never met the Bragas or even tried to contact them, although the APA Ethics Code anticipates such action before filing an ethics complaint.[214] Wood's complaint against Laurie Braga was filed on February 20, 1995 (almost ten years after the Country Walk case had ended). Wood made precisely the same claim Nathan had made earlier: that Laurie Braga had misrepresented her credentials because her doctorate "was in speech" and not in learning disabilities.[215] Wood filed some supplemental materials three months later. Some of those documents were faxed from Rosenthal to Nathan, as indicated by the phone numbers on the faxes.[216]

The supplemental materials filed by Wood included a new and rather stunning claim: that Laurie Braga had been publicly criticized for possible unethical behavior "by the parents of children whom she interviewed in a famous sexual abuse case." To support this charge, Wood attached a 1985 article from the *Miami Herald* that was published three weeks before Frank Fuster's trial began. Curiously, the fifth paragraph in that story directly contradicts Wood's claim:

> People tend to either love them or hate them. Among those in the pro-Braga camp are the child witnesses and parents in the case. Detractors include defense attorneys, a few local psychologists and a former fund-raiser for their nonprofit National Children's Foundation.[217]

Later, under the subheading "Parents' Praise," the article continues: "For their part, the parents of the alleged victims in the Country Walk case are unanimous in their praise of the Bragas." Since Wood submitted nothing else in support of his charge about the parents of the children interviewed by Laurie Braga, it is difficult to imagine on what basis he decided to level this meritless charge.

The APA dismissed his complaint. On August 4, 1995, Professor Wood filed *another* complaint—this time against Joseph Braga. That complaint revived the old charge that Braga had somehow misrepresented the nature of *his* doctorate. This complaint was also ultimately dismissed as baseless. The story of these complaints has never before been made public. The story is noteworthy because it demonstrates the lengths to which some people were willing to go in order to try to discredit the Bragas, regardless of the facts.

The Bragas were also assailed as having a strong predisposition for "finding" sexual abuse in children. "Crucial to the Bragas' technique was their refusal to accept a child's denial of abuse," Rosenthal claimed.[218] It is difficult to square those claims with a systematic view of the Country Walk case. The pattern of interviews and charges in the case demonstrates that almost all of the charges emanated from the children interviewed earliest in the case, when the Bragas knew the least about the allegations. In later interviews, when there is no question the Bragas had concluded that some children *had* been sexually abused at the Fusters, there were few children added to the case. This is hardly what one would expect if there were a powerful "interviewer bias" at work. Indeed, in the Kelly Michaels case, Lou Fonolleras ultimately exhibited a bias toward finding abuse when he "substantiated" findings of abuse on all fifty-one children interviewed, even those who specifically denied any kind of abuse. The Bragas did no such thing in the Country Walk case.

Beyond the Country Walk case, the Bragas further demonstrated a complex view of accusations involving child sexual abuse. They did not always support prosecution; nor did they always find a child's statements about sexual abuse to be trustworthy. Not only did they distinguish carefully among children in the Country Walk case, they also recommended *against* prosecution in other cases during the same time period. Although Peter Boyer claimed on *Frontline* that a pro-prosecution "fever gripped Miami" at the time, the fact is that the Bragas recommended *against* prosecution in a day-care case that arose at virtually the same time as Country Walk. In the Hazel Crawford Day Care, their recommendation against prosecution came over the strong objection of parents.[219] Moreover, the Bragas did not appear exclusively for the prosecution in these cases. Laurie Braga testified for the defense in a child sexual-abuse case in August 1985. An article about her testimony appeared in the *Miami Herald* the same week as the article that James Wood appended to his ethics complaint.[220] These facts contradict the claims of extreme pro-prosecution bias that have been lodged against the Bragas.

Conclusion

Critics of the Country Walk case invoke the concept of "confirmation bias" to explain the allegations in the case. Peter Boyer quoted Professor Ceci saying that confirmation bias is "often exhibited by child advocates whose willingness to believe in child abuse hinders objective analysis."[221] This argument seems to carry a disturbing implication: that what Ceci calls "objective analysis" can only be done by people who are not "hindered" by the "willingness to believe in child abuse." Whether or not this is the intended implication of Ceci's statement, it is clear that those who are *not* willing to believe in child abuse are also hindered in their ability to analyze abuse allegations. They are unlikely to recognize child abuse even in cases where the evidence is overwhelming. When this occurs, "disconfirmation bias" is at work.

The evolution of the Country Walk case—from model prosecution to the revisionist view expressed by Nathan, Ceci and Bruck, and others—demonstrates the problem of disconfirmation bias. Disconfirmation bias involves the systematic discounting of evidence of sexual abuse and the predisposition to find that child interviews are "tainted." If one seeks evidence only for that position, it is likely that any case with as many interviews as Country Walk will contain some snippets that appear to support the preordained conclusion. This is how Lee Coleman approached the case; he admitted having no idea how many statements came as a result of open-ended questions, and he was unaware of the physical evidence that supported the children's statements.[222]

Professor Everson's observation that "fantastic" statements can have a host of origins, with different implications, counsels a close examination of the circumstances and content of children's statements.[223] In the Country Walk case, such an approach would inevitably lead to the conclusion that however unbelievable at first, the children's statements about masks, dead animals, and feces were actually based on reality. In fact, those elements, emphasized as fantastic in early critiques of the case, are not mentioned in the revisionist history of the case. Instead, they have been quietly dropped from the critique without any acknowledgment that they were borne out by extensive evidence.

The first step in the kind of analysis Everson proposed would be a systematic investigation of the children's statements to assess the prevalence and context of fantastic statements. Ceci and Bruck, armed with laboratory studies of child suggestibility and a claim to the scientific method, did not do this. Instead, they made the blanket statement that fabulous statements were "interweaved among the children's statements." But the two examples they cited were dubious at best. No child *ever* said that she or he had "eaten the head of another person." A number of children described a "cut off your head" game, but it did not seem fabulous in light of Frank Fuster's violent and threatening nature. One child uttered a single sentence about riding a shark, but the context of the statement included a discussion of Jacques Cousteau. The possibility that the child was referring to a kiddie ride at the nearby Country Walk Shopping Center provides another reality-based explanation for the statement. But Ceci and Bruck did not consider these explanations; nor did they analyze the interviews systematically in order to assess the frequency of the statements they claimed were widespread. They simply branded the case as being filled with fabulous statements.

The one-sided application of evidentiary standards in the Country Walk case is another indication of disconfirmation bias. People who object strenuously to any kind of post-hypnotic testimony have accepted Noel Fuster's post-hypnotic "retraction" without criticism. People who find bias in almost every question asked by the Bragas have overlooked the clear bias in the interview that Arthur Cohen conducted with Ileana Flores in Honduras. People who claim to embrace science have accepted, without skepticism, an argument about flawed tests that turns out to have nothing to do with the STD test in the Country Walk case. And people who have raised credibility questions about virtually every witness for the prosecution in the Country Walk case have accepted Frank Fuster's protestations of innocence at face value, even though he has a well-documented record of lying about his crimes.

Beyond these biases, there have been dubious tactics employed to discredit the Country Walk case. The Ethics Office of the American Psychological Association received ethics complaints against Laurie and Joseph Braga that were instigated behind the scenes by Debbie Nathan—the primary writer who attacked the Country Walk conviction—and found the complaints to be baseless.[224] There have also been serious misstatements of the facts of the case. Amy Gershenfeld Donnella, Frank Fuster's lawyer in the federal habeas corpus, misstated the origins of the case, telling the court:

> It is not clear what triggered the investigation of the Country Walk Babysitting Service. However, at some point in June 1984, a Dade County investigator began interviewing parents who used the service about the possibility that their children had been victims of sexual abuse. Most parents initially turned investigators away. They had no such concerns.[225]

But there is no doubt about what started the investigation: Emma St. Lorenzo's disturbing experience on July 31, 1984, when her son, who had just spent his first day at the Fusters', came home looking "glassy eyed" and with a rash on his anus. There is also no doubt that in the first few days of the investigation, as documented in Detective Meznarich's sixty-page police report, she interviewed numerous parents who had very serious concerns. Several families had independently taken their children out of the Fusters' care, and in one instance it was specifically because of a spontaneous utterance that Ileana Fuster had sexual contact with children. The account provided by Donnella was so disconnected from the record in the case that the judge took the unusual step of highlighting this problem. Magistrate Judge Charlene Sorrentino, who authored a 124-page decision rejecting those claims, noted that Donnella's "purported factual overview is almost entirely devoid of citations to the record, and puts forth numerous sweeping, and sometimes outlandish statements. . . ."[226] The magistrate judge concluded that without any documentation these "hyperbolic statements are unworthy of credence."[227] She noted the same problem in connection with claims about former private investigator Dinerstein, who has been cited for the proposition that Ileana Fuster was drugged and held naked in solitary confinement. After comparing Dinerstein's affidavit from 1985 to the claims made about it by Fuster's lawyer, the magistrate judge conclude that Donnella had "significantly distorted and revised Dinerstein's actual assertions."[228] The PBS program *Frontline* and a host of writers have done the same thing, apparently without checking the original document.

The Country Walk case once stood as an example of how to prosecute cases with young children as witnesses. This conclusion has been challenged by a revisionist view that has been widely accepted in the media and among many academic psychologists. These developments should be seen as a cautionary tale about the dangers of disconfirmation bias. If the overwhelming evidence against Frank Fuster can be spun into a witch-hunt story, then it is unlikely that *any* case based largely on the word of a child will ever be considered sufficient to avoid this kind of treatment. If so, then our society will have come full circle from the early 1980s, when the unwillingness to believe that children were sexually abused in significant numbers resulted in few prosecutions and little recognition of a serious social problem. Those who have promoted the witch-hunt narrative in the Country Walk case offer something quite similar: a world in which a positive STD test, a child's spontaneous utterance, and a web of cross-corroborating evidence are considered insufficient to support a finding of guilt.

Frank Fuster's lawyer argued in 2005, "had this case been tried in 1995 instead of 1985, Fuster would never have been convicted."[229] Unfortunately, given the widespread acceptance of the witch-hunt narrative, that may well be true. The next chapter considers the broader and more current implications of the conclusion.

CONCLUSION II

The significance of the witch-hunt narrative in the academic field of psychology came to a head in the Kelly Michaels case. Not surprisingly, there were divergent views in the field about child suggestibility. Gail Goodman's research in the 1980s had demonstrated that children were, in many ways, as accurate and reliable as adults were as witnesses. But the McMartin case and others challenged this view. Did what happened in the McMartin case have implications for cases all over the country, or was the McMartin case so unique in character and circumstance that its lessons could not be applied to other cases?

Those questions were becoming the focus of academic psychologists in the same year that Charlier and Downing were publishing the claim that at least one hundred cases around the country involving ritual abuse allegations had little or no basis in fact. At the American Psychology-Law Society in Miami in 1988, the "contradictory findings" about child suggestibility were so significant that Stephen Ceci later wrote that he "found the whole ordeal troubling."[1] There was significant disagreement in the field about whether children were highly suggestible and about the applicability, or "ecological validity," of various laboratory experiments demonstrating children's suggestibility. Prompted in part by this experience, the American Psychological Association (APA) sponsored a conference at Cornell University in June 1989 on the suggestibility of children's recollections. Popular interest in this issue was so significant that there was a story in the *Washington Post,* under the headline "Psychologists Divided on Children Testifying," when the volume of papers from that conference was published in 1991. A panel of psychologists at a press conference at APA headquarters conveyed that "the profession is deeply divided" on issues concerning the reliability of young children.[2]

In light of this background, it is surprising, to say the least, that Ceci and Bruck were informing the New Jersey Supreme Court a little more than two years later that there was a consensus in the field around *their* research on child suggestibility. It was either one of the fastest resolutions among deeply divided professionals in academic history or something else was going on. The evidence for a political explanation is elaborated in Chapter Five. In fact, the claim of a "paradigm shift" simply masked the continuing deep divisions in the profession. But the brief (which became known as the "Concerned Scientists" brief) had its desired effect. The court upheld the reversal of Kelly Michaels's conviction and the Michaels case became a turning point in the contested day-care cases from the 1980s.

Ceci and Bruck were successful in convincing many people, both in academia and in the public, that their research demonstrated that the children's statements in the Michaels case were unreliable and that New Jersey should institute a special procedure for "taint hearings" in the future. The argument that their research had direct application to the Michaels case had two simple components: (1) the videotape of the boy spinning a fictitious story, which he apparently believed, about getting his finger caught in a mousetrap; and (2) the statement that what they did in the lab "paled in comparison" to what happened in the Michaels case. The argument succeeded because the videotape was so compelling and the statement about the Michaels case had the appearance of being true, based in part on selected snippets from Lou Fonolleras's interviews. Fonolleras, it should be kept in mind, did not even enter the case until after the six-count indictment in May that was based on an investigation lasting less than one week.

The claims about "paling in comparison" to Michaels were almost impossible to verify. There was no way to check whether the Fonolleras interviews were representative of children in the case. There was no way to check whether those interviews even involved children in the case. There was no way to check whether the claim that disclosures came after "weeks and months" of such interviews was true. And there was no way to check whether there were children in the case who were entirely different in fact and context. At least there was no way to do so without spending years of effort.[3]

The two arguments that were, understandably, so persuasive to academics and others are also deeply flawed. The boy in the Mousetrap Study later told researchers he never got his hand caught in a mousetrap; it was all a story. Moreover, the methods used in the study were misportrayed in the media. Indeed, the article in which they were first published described a much tamer version of the study in the methods section and then discussed the results of a significantly "modified" version in the discussion section. Naturally, this caused some people to think the tamer version of the experiment led to the dramatic results obtained through the modified approach.

The appendix to the "Concerned Scientists" brief did not distinguish between interviews *after* a child had made a disclosure and interviews before that. Once a child has made a disclosure, subsequent interviews cannot be said to have been the cause of the earlier disclosure, but this is the kind of logic one must employ to claim that children in the Michaels case were interviewed for weeks and months. Most of those "interviews" involved testifying at the grand jury, being evaluated by Eileen Treacy, and preparing for trial. From a systematic analysis of the interviews *in the investigative phase* of the Michaels case, elaborated in Chapter Five, the inescapable fact is that *none* of the disclosures came after "weeks or months" of highly suggestive interviews. Many came in the first interview, and most others came in the second. Accordingly, even the modified experiment that produced the dramatic results in the Mousetrap Study did *not* pale in comparison to the Michaels case. The children in Michaels were not told repeatedly that something happened and then asked about it. In actuality, what happened in the Michaels case paled in comparison to the Mousetrap Study.

But it is obvious why the potential signators of the "Concerned Scientists" brief—and the appellate court judges in the case—thought they knew otherwise: they had already been told so by the media. Beginning with the highly publicized Rabinowitz article in 1990 and carrying over to television programs repeating these claims, the witch-hunt narrative about the Michaels case had been adopted and rebroadcast for several years leading up to 1993.

It is clear from their writings that Ceci and Bruck had also adopted this narrative. They described the Rabinowitz article about the case as "seminal," and they relied on Rabinowitz as a source for statements about McMartin. Demonstrating their endorsement of the witch-hunt narrative, Ceci and Bruck argued in their 1993 article for the Society on Research in Child Development (SRCD) that the McMartin case was "not a singular happening." Rather, they said there were *hundreds* of other cases like it. They argued that those cases generally share six elements:

> First, the witnesses were preschoolers at the time of the alleged abuse. Second, the disclosures were not made immediately following the alleged event, but after a long delay. Third, the disclosures were preceded by intensive interviewing of the children by professionals and nonprofessionals. Fourth, the children were the only witnesses to the events, and corroborative physical evidence was lacking. Fifth, none of the defendants ever made a confession. Finally, the major issue before the jury in all of these cases was whether to believe the children.[4]

Applying those elements to the three major cases evaluated in this book yields unexpected conclusions (see Table II-1). First, the paradigmatic case, McMartin, does not itself fit all of the elements. In fact, it fits only three elements without qualification: preschoolers, no confession, and child believability being

Table II-1 **Application of Ceci & Bruck's "Six Elements" to Three Major Cases**

	McMartin	*Michaels*	*Country Walk*
Preschoolers	Yes	Yes	Yes
Disclosures after "long" delay	No for a few; yes for a lot	No	No
Disclosures preceded by intensive interviewing	No for a few; presumably yes for many others	No for several; arguably yes for others	No
Physical evidence lacking	Yes for most; no for a few	Largely yes	No
No confession	Yes	Yes	Yes
Major issue to jury, child believability	Yes	Yes	Yes

a major issue. But those elements do not help distinguish the McMartin case from most of those that goes to trial with young children and sexual abuse allegations. Second, the remaining elements cannot accurately be applied to the McMartin case universally. There are too many differences between children to apply one simple conclusion. For example, "disclosures after 'long' delay" clearly applies to many children in McMartin; it might apply to every child who can be counted as having made a disclosure in February 1984 and later. That is potentially hundreds of children, although there are no available records for most of them and only about a dozen were actually involved in the trial. But even this element is not true of a handful of children in the case, among them Matthew Johnson, some of the September responders, and the Chapman girl in January 1984.

The next element, disclosures preceded by intensive interviewing, is similarly complicated. The description does not fit a small number of children in the McMartin case, which was characterized by children who probably do fit it, although this conclusion is complicated by the lack of information about the nature and frequency of interviewing by "nonprofessionals" (i.e., parents).[5] The same kind of mixed result applies to the element involving physical evidence. There was medical evidence concerning a small number of children in the case that would still be considered meaningful evidence today. This was not true of most children in the case, although many of their parents were told otherwise. Overall, this analysis leads to the self-contradictory conclusion that the

McMartin case itself was not "just like McMartin." Or at least not like the McMartin case that was the basis for the witch-hunt narrative. The case was far more complicated than has been portrayed. If individual differences are not taken into account and, instead, one general designation is required for classifying every element, then the McMartin case "fits" the witch-hunt narrative. But this is not the full story of the case.

The application of these six elements is even more striking for the Kelly Michaels case. The same three elements that clearly fit McMartin also fit Michaels, but those are the elements that do not help distinguish McMartin-like cases from most other sexual abuse trials involving young children. The remaining three elements point out differences between McMartin and Michaels. The Michaels case did not involve disclosures of events that allegedly occurred years earlier, like the McMartin case. The alleged events occurred in the months prior to the investigation, and the only children in the case were those who had encountered Kelly Michaels during the school year. The children whose statements formed the basis for the original indictment were not subject to intensive interviewing in advance of their disclosures. The original charges were based on an investigation that lasted only a few days and began with a spontaneous disclosure. The situation for the rest of the children in the case is less clear. The defense argued that those children disclosed only after intensive interviewing. The facts of the case, as demonstrated in Chapter Five, are more complicated, although the characterization is arguably true for some children. Finally, physical evidence was largely lacking in the case—as it is in most sexual abuse cases—although there was some medical evidence that should not be dismissed out of hand.

Ignoring differences between children makes it easy to characterize Michaels—or almost any case, for that matter—as "just like McMartin." Indeed, the innocence-by-association argument convinced academic psychologists and appellate judges alike. But the story does not do justice to the underlying facts. Accordingly, the Michaels case bears out the concern of those who worried that the "lessons" of the McMartin case would be applied too broadly.

The application of the same elements to the Country Walk case demonstrates how the witch-hunt narrative has gone to extremes to paint cases as "just like McMartin." Although it shares the same three elements that do not help distinguish McMartin from most cases with young children, all three remaining elements point out significant differences. There was a confirmed STD in the Country Walk case, and the disclosures did not generally involve long delays; nor were they preceded by intensive interviewing. The core of the original charges came on the first day of interviewing by the Bragas and involved allegations that had occurred recently. Fuster's defenders have quibbled about whether those descriptions fit the two children who disclosed in January 1985, but the case as a whole does *not* fit any of the three important elements.

A scientific analysis of the child-suggestibility hypothesis would look for evidence that might *disprove* the hypothesis that a case is "just like McMartin." It is a strong indication of disconfirmation bias that not a single proponent of the child-suggestibility view has approached these cases in this fashion. The spontaneous disclosure that began the Michaels case has been distorted such that it completely overlooks the two adults who witnessed the circumstances under which Mitchell Pierce first implicated his naptime teacher, Kelly. Why have those embracing Kelly Michaels favored uninformed speculations over the clear testimony of Laura Hadley, the medical assistant? Similarly, Noel Fuster's positive test for gonorrhea of the throat has been dismissed on the basis of a freelance writer who cited a scientific article that had no application to the actual test used in the Country Walk case. Why haven't any of the academics who embraced Frank Fuster checked the veracity of this claim? Similarly, recognizing the validity of Jason Cramer's testimony alone would result in a rejection of the hypothesis that "child suggestibility" accounts for all of the allegations in the Country Walk case. Although it is predictable that forensic psychologists who generally testify for the defense would avoid this kind of analysis, it is troublesome, to say the least, that academic psychologists have adopted the same position.

The ability of the witch-hunt narrative to paint a persuasive picture that dozens, if not hundreds, of cases are McMartin "clones" is alarming. This narrative has not persuaded any appellate judges in the Country Walk case, but it has persuaded many writers, intellectuals, and academics. This is powerful evidence that concerns about the "lessons" of the McMartin case have been applied too broadly. The literature in psychology is filled with cautions about the need to treat children as individuals and to take individual circumstances into account. Unfortunately, those cautions have not been followed in the extensive writing about the Michaels case or the Country Walk case.

There is a corollary to the importance of treating children as individuals; it is also important to take contextual variables into account. Such variables help account for important differences in how cases are investigated, how they are charged, and what kind of environment surrounds the case. Was there considerable time between the initial complaint and actual charges? If so, there is all the more time for social forces to intensify and affect the case. Was there intense publicity before charges were brought? If so, there is all the more reason that prosecutors might rush to judgment. Did the case spread to other defendants and other locations? If so, those are almost sure signs of some kind of social contagion. These points and several others are elaborated in Table II-2.

This table demonstrates that the Michaels case and the Country Walk case were different from McMartin on virtually every dimension. McMartin is the only one of those cases that (1) had an extended period of time between the first

Table II-2 **Comparison of Key Features of the McMartin, Kelly Michaels, and Country Walk Case**

	McMartin	*Michaels*	*Country Walk*
Length of time from first official complaint to initial criminal charges	28 weeks	3 weeks	2 weeks
Expansion of charges to other defendants?	Yes	No[1]	No[2]
Intense publicity before charges were brought?	Yes	No	No
Number of nearby schools closed, even temporarily, in connection with the case	7	0	0
Parents as investigators?	Yes	No	No
Activist parents without children in the case?	Yes	No	No
Extensive "fantastic" claims?	Yes	No[3]	No[4]
Charges brought without DA reviewing child interviews?	Yes	No	No

[1] Others were considered, but nobody else was charged with sexual abuse.

[2] Frank and Ileana Fuster were both named from the start.

[3] The statements labeled as fantastic were not "extensive."

[4] The statements that were originally labeled as "fantastic" (masks, dead bird, feces play) were all proven at trial. The more recent assertions about "fabulous" statements (riding on a shark, eating the head of another person) were not actually claimed, let alone "extensively."

complaint and the first charges, (2) expanded to multiple defendants not named early in the investigation, (3) had intense publicity before any charges were brought, (4) spread to other preschools, (5) saw parents enlisted by authorities as investigators, (6) had "fantastic" claims that were extensive and never proven, and (7) involved charges brought without an analysis of the children's interviews in the case. Those features are all critical to understanding how the McMartin case evolved and why it resulted in charges that should never have been brought.

Charlier and Downing's series purported to do this kind of analysis, but they lost sight of the fact that almost none of their cases actually fit the "pattern" of charges expanding to other defendants. The case that comes closest is the Georgian Hills case in their backyard, which shares many features with McMartin. Charlier and Downing seem to have viewed the world through the lens of the Ballard case. The same tactic was widely used in many others evaluated in Chapter Three. Other proponents of the witch-hunt narrative have made the same error with the McMartin case. Ceci and Bruck anchored their discussion of Michaels in McMartin. The first nine paragraphs of their SRCD article are about McMartin.[6] This approach makes it easy to claim that even the County Walk case is "just like McMartin." But a host of key features make it clear that McMartin was unique. Beyond the fact that all three cases involved young children, Michaels and County Walk, as demonstrated in these last two chapters, were nothing like McMartin.

If academic psychologists could impugn these cases, they could potentially impugn any child sexual abuse case, regardless of the evidence. The extent to which this has come true is explored in the second half of Chapter Seven.

PART III

RECENT DEVELOPMENTS

7

The Legacy of the Witch-Hunt Narrative

The triumph of the witch-hunt narrative rested on arguments that have implications well beyond those specific cases. The point of *Jeopardy in Courtroom* was to convey a view of child suggestibility, not to get to the bottom of the cases studies used as illustrations. What those cases purported to illustrate were general arguments about child suggestibility and children as witnesses. To others, the witch-hunt narrative was compelling because it encompassed a political argument about the overbearing role of government in child protective services, or it expressed a political view about the abuse of power by police and prosecutors. Together, those arguments helped convince people that the witch-hunt narrative was fitting, even when the facts did not support it. The implications, I argue below, extend far beyond those cases and that era. This worrisome legacy of the witch-hunt narrative is elaborated in the second part of this chapter.

But first, there are other recent developments to consider. Even if one agrees with the argument of the previous chapters—that the witch-hunt narrative about the 1980s and early 1990s was misplaced *in its time*—several recent developments arguably contradict the claim that those arguments have continuing impact today. The highly publicized scandals in the Catholic Church and, more recently, at Penn State seem to demonstrate the ability of our society to recognize and confront sexual abuse without crying witch-hunt. Moreover, there is evidence in how we treat sex offenders after they are released from prison that seems to demonstrate an overreaction to sex offenders. Developments since the enactment of Megan's Law in 1996 and the rise of civil commitment laws appear to be overly punitive, bearing out a kind of hysteria or overreaction. Finally, a prominent group of academics and activists argue that witch-hunt-like cases continue to this day. The significance of these three arguments is analyzed in the first part of this chapter.

The second part of this chapter elaborates the worrisome legacy of the witch-hunt narrative: three lingering effects that are underappreciated, understudied, and potentially quite adverse to the protection of children. This legacy stems from the same arguments that helped convince people that the day-care abuse cases were baseless, regardless of the merits. These arguments are alive and well in the contemporary era. They have resulted in a discounting of the reality of continuing day-care sexual abuse. More significantly, they have promoted a general but unwarranted view that children are highly suggestible, that delayed disclosures of sexual abuse are suspect, and that child-abuse professionals constitute a dubious "child abuse industry." In this way, the witch-hunt narrative continues to undermine the credibility of children as witnesses and the institutions that are supposed to respond to the sexual abuse of children.

Recent Developments

Several recent developments contradict the general story of underreaction, minimization, and denial that comprises much of the argument in the last six chapters. A lot has changed since 1995. There have been high-profile cases involving the Catholic Church and, more recently, Penn State. There have also been crusades of a sort against sex offenders who have completed their prison sentences, suggesting what might be called moral panic. Some also claim that the witch-hunts continued into the contemporary era. This section examines all three of these developments. The Catholic Church cases and the one involving Penn State are both important, but the lessons are much more limited than is widely acknowledged. The crusade against sex offenders is real, and it is worrisome. It focuses too much attention on this population, most of it ultimately counterproductive—but these measures attract strong political support, particularly from conservatives. Finally, the claim that the witch-hunts have continued is not supported by available evidence.

Cases Against the Catholic Church and Penn State

Child sexual abuse is no longer associated with day-care cases. Since those cases faded from public view, there were years when the media coverage of child sexual abuse was minimal. Then a new focus emerged: sexual abuse by Catholic priests. The criminal trial of Michael Jackson generated significant publicity in 2005, but that coverage was fleeting and it did not have nearly the magnitude of the stories in 2002 about sexual abuse by priests.

Those stories were driven largely by civil lawsuits against the church, although there were also criminal cases and grand jury investigations in some jurisdictions. Hundreds of millions of dollars have been paid to victims and more than one thousand priests were removed from their positions as a result of these cases. Documents unsealed in civil cases in Boston in 2002 contained evidence that "Church officials knew about [Father John] Geoghan's pedophilia," which was responsible for more than one hundred victims.[1] There were almost daily stories about these cases in the *Boston Globe* that year. The uproar over these stories created news of its own. Pope John Paul II summoned all of the American cardinals to the Vatican in the spring of 2002 for an emergency meeting on the matter, in no small part because of this publicity. The U.S. Conference of Catholic Bishops met in Dallas in June 2002, under enormous media scrutiny and with the stated intention of approving, for the first time, mandatory rules for how all 194 dioceses in the United States should respond to allegations of sexual abuse. The policy included provisions for mandatory removal of priests who sexually abuse children, reporting to prosecutors, and reaching out to victims. The adoption of this policy must be recognized as a significant event. Through civil litigation, some enterprising lawyers in Boston managed to obtain a surprising measure of accountability from an institution that was historically afforded significant latitude by public officials, including law enforcement. As the *Globe* reported it, "a culture of deference that had taken more than a century to evolve seemed to erode in a matter of weeks."[2]

That does not mean the story was an unmitigated success. The institutional changes adopted in Dallas were not as strong as some thought necessary, and there are forces within the Church hierarchy that remain resistant to these reforms. Indeed, the Vatican expressed the view that the policy adopted in Dallas did not do enough to protect accused priests. By November, the bishops agreed to a narrower definition of sexual abuse, a less burdensome reporting requirement, and a 10-year statute of limitations.[3] It is unclear how well these guidelines have actually been implemented. Moreover, there are several reasons to think these developments say little or nothing about social and legal responses to child sexual abuse in general.

There are three reasons to temper the application of any conclusions about these cases to the broader context of child sexual abuse. First, priests represent a kind of *other*. They wear robes and they take celibacy vows. As disturbing as it is to think that a priest could sexually abuse a child, their *otherness* also makes this thought less threatening and more believable. Add to this the celibacy vows, which many think contribute to priests finding a sexual outlet with children. The issue of celibacy vows has become so mixed up in the discussion of sexual abuse by priests that one might lose sight of the fact that far more child molesters are married men than are unmarried priests. A second distinguishing feature of these cases is that the victims were largely male, both in numbers and in voice. And in many cases it is an adult voice, not a child; the leading voices in 1992 (Frank Fitzpatrick) and 2002 (Greg Ford) were adults. They were far less likely than anyone else to be cast as untrustworthy. Nobody argues that a man would *fantasize* such a thing, or that he might be acting hysterically. Accordingly, most people took the view that these allegations were credible.

Finally, there was a very particular reason these cases exploded in the media in 2002: documents produced through civil litigation proved the extent to which bishops and cardinals transferred priests from one place to another with sufficient knowledge of their abuse histories to know they would be placing children in danger. There was a cover-up. The story of institutional betrayal drove the widespread media coverage in 2002. There had been limited coverage of lawsuits about priests molesting children as early as the Gauthe case in 1984.[4] But the cases from Louisiana were considered "anomalies being blown out of proportion by anti-Catholic elements."[5] They generated only brief coverage. The McMartin case was, at that time, fast defining child sexual abuse in America. There was a much larger cluster of these church-related abuse stories in 1992. The Church viewed this publicity as so unfair that Cardinal Bernard Law famously called down God's power "on the media, particularly the *Globe*."[6] The Cardinal got his wish, for a time. There was a significant lull in stories about this topic for almost ten years, mostly because documents from the civil cases were sealed. When nearly ten thousand pages of documents became public in January 2002, it was clear that the Church had sought to protect its reputation by covering up sexual abuse for decades. That made this a major story. Since the Watergate scandal in the 1970s, it is clear that any cover-up as broad and well-documented as this one will generate significant media attention. The recent events at Penn State bear this out.

What has come to be known as the "Penn State scandal" received massive media coverage in 2011 and 2012. It has largely been a story about justice and accountability. But it was also a story about a cover-up. Jerry Sandusky was convicted in a criminal trial that most observers considered fair and convincing. Efforts by the defense to impugn the testimony of various victims by questioning their motives were unsuccessful. Nobody was distracted by the defense critique of some interviews in the case. Sandusky received a long sentence, and Penn State will apparently pay more than $40 million to settle civil suits by victims. Beyond this, the Freeh Report, commissioned by the university, laid out stark conclusions about the failure of university officials to take appropriate action. The report would have its detractors, but many people welcomed the frank tone and strong conclusions. The report inspired the NCAA to craft its own wide-ranging penalties, agreed to by the university, including a $60 million fund for child abuse prevention programs. As important and generally uplifting as the developments in this case are, it is important to recognize several features that help explain why the case attracted so much attention but was not highly controversial in outcome. These are all factors that limit the applicability of the recent developments to anything beyond the case itself. First, the case did not involve child witnesses. It was adults testifying about what happened to them as children. The case might have been quite different if it had hinged entirely on the testimony of boys age eight to thirteen. Second, the criminal case included an adult witness, the graduate assistant who reported the matter to Coach Paterno. Although there was disagreement about what precise words he used in warning the coach, the point remains that one does not report inconsequential events in this manner. There was also a janitor mentioned in the Freeh Report who declined to report what he saw, for fear of retribution. So the case did not stand entirely on the word of children. Moreover, there was a cover-up. In this way, this story is much like those that drove coverage about the Catholic Church in 2002. It is unclear whether all the attention even led to significantly better procedures or whether it decreased the degree to which this kind of abuse was tolerated in the Church. After ten years, the jury is divided, to say the least. Some think there has been significant slippage in the commitment of the Catholic Church in recent years. And as welcome as many of the developments at Penn State are, the Penn State case was also unusual in many ways.

More broadly, we know that the newfound vigilance against child sexual abuse in the Catholic Church and at Penn State did not permeate the culture. Anyone familiar with the Catholic Church and Penn State stories has to wonder, What institution will next be shown to have covered up the sexual abuse of children? Two recent cases in the Los Angeles School District demonstrate the continued vitality of institutional dynamics that minimize and deny sexual abuse. Both involved sexual abuse by elementary school teachers that went undetected for years. The first case involved Mark Berndt, who had been teaching for thirty-two years and was first apprehended as a result of dozens of photos of blindfolded children that he had commercially developed. Criminal charges are still pending at this writing, but the school district has already agree to pay $27.2 million to settle dozens of civil claims. What is most chilling about Berndt's case is that children reported some his bizarre activities and were reportedly told by a school counselor that "it's not very good to make up stories." Also worrisome is the fact that Berndt was the subject of a criminal investigation in 1993, when a female student reported he tried to fondle her. Prosecutors dropped the matter, stating that "the evidence was insufficient to prove a crime occurred."[7] The second case involved Paul Chapel III, a third grade teacher, who later pleaded guilty to thirteen counts of a lewd act on a child, one for each victim.[8] A civil complaint against the school district claims it had sufficient knowledge to have known that Chapel should not be in a classroom. He lost a civil case in 1987 involving the showing of a sexually explicit video to students. Moreover, he was prosecuted in 1997 for molesting an eight-year-old girl and was placed on administrative duty during those proceedings. But the criminal trial ended in a hung jury, the prosecutor decided not to retry the case, and Chapel was allowed back into the classroom, where, as he later admitted, he went on to molest thirteen students between 2006 and 2010. Both of these cases demonstrate the extent to which child sexual abuse lives on in institutions that one might think had long since confronted and addressed the problem. It has, after all, been a matter of public discussion since 1983, when the McMartin Preschool case began nearby.

Megan's Law and Sex-Offender Politics

A second major development related to child sexual abuse in the contemporary era is the nationwide increase in laws and policies targeting sex offenders. The 1990s were marked by the adoption of sex-offender registration, community notification systems, residency restrictions, and the use of civil commitment. Sex-offender registration provisions were incorporated into federal law in 1994 through the Jacob Wetterling Crimes Against Children and Sexually Violent Offenders Act. Federal law was amended two years later with the adoption of community notification provisions modeled after Megan's Law from New Jersey. Those provisions were "enhanced" ten years later by the Adam Walsh Protection and Safety Act of 2006, which provides for wider dissemination of information about sex offenders. Although states have differing version of these systems, the use of registries and community notification became nationwide in the 1990s. Residency restrictions and civil commitment are also important developments in the post-Michaels era, but neither has been nationwide. Some residency restrictions are adopted at the local level; others are statewide, such as the provision in many states that registered sex offenders cannot live within in a specified proximity of schools or parks. Nineteen states have adopted systems for civil commitment.

All of these policies have been criticized extensively in law review articles and other academic literature. Psychiatrist Richard Krueger, in an editorial in the *Los Angeles Times,* called these developments "the new American witch hunt."[9] They are widely seen among scholars from various disciplines as an overreaction that is based on social vilification of sex offenders rather than evidence-based arguments about the efficacy of the policies. This is hardly surprising given how so many of these "tribute" laws originated. Megan's Law is probably the best-known example. It was signed into law less than three months after Megan Kanka was murdered by a neighbor who had prior sexual abuse convictions. The defendant had not yet been tried when the law was passed. There are a host of similar laws, such as Jessica's Law in Florida and Ashley's Law in Texas, that were enacted quickly and without serious debate in order to demonstrate some kind of government response to a tragedy.

The evaluation research on community notification systems is mixed at best. An early study in the state of Washington concluded that notification did not have an effect on recidivism but offenders subject to community notification were arrested more quickly than those in the comparison group.[10] A more recent study found evidence that might demonstrate a strong effect in recidivism rates, but the study had enough qualifications that more research is necessary.[11] There have also been several studies finding these policies have no effect on recidivism rates.[12] Critics of these policies often display little or no sensitivity to the dynamics of child sexual abuse by placing great significance on the fact that sex offenders tend to have a low recidivism rate. This simple comparison to the recidivism rates for other crimes would make sense if all crimes had an equal chance of detection. But child sexual abuse is secretive by its nature, and disclosure often does not occur during childhood. *There are no serious felonies as underreported as is child sexual abuse.* This fact should affect how one interprets recidivism rates across crimes. Indeed, "correcting" for this dynamic significantly changes any analysis of sex offender registration laws.

Although the benefits of these policies remain unclear, the monetary and administrative costs in keeping a large database accurate and accessible are significant. (There are sixty-three thousand offenders in the database for California.[13]) Some have raised concerns about vigilantism.[14] Even if the concerns have been exaggerated, the benefits of sex-offender registries are mixed, at best. The evidence concerning the efficacy of residency restrictions is even weaker. The benefits seem to be nonexistent, but the (indirect) costs can be significant. These policies find little or no support in the community of professionals who treat sex offenders. A recent collection of scholarship by criminologists concludes that "the misguided and deleterious consequences of residential residency restrictions" call for elimination or dramatic change of these policies.[15] Public support for these policies, however, is strong. This support bears out the idea that the policies are driven by extreme attitudes of sex offenders as "monsters."

This argument fits community-notification laws and a related development in the 1990s: the rise in civil commitment statutes for those labeled as "sexually violent predators." These statutes provide for varied processes, by state, for deciding whether a sex offender is considered sufficiently dangerous to be held after completion of their prison sentence. Typically, the determination must be renewed every two or three years. Civil commitment is extremely expensive, costing three or four times the already high cost of incarceration. Given the costs and the procedural hurdles, only a small percentage of incarcerated sex offenders are ever subject to civil commitment. Sociologist Chrysanthi Leon documents that "just over 2% of the initial referrals were civilly committed" in California, which has the largest program in the country. Between 1998 and 2002, an average of about sixty people per year were admitted to civil commitment in California. A *New York Times* investigation in 2006 concluded that a total of 3,493 men had been confined nationwide under these laws.[16] (Approximately two hundred times that number are subject to sex offender registration.)

The strongest objections to these civil confinement laws are ideological. This makes sense since the number of people actually subject to civil commitment is small. To the disbelief of many civil libertarians, the U.S. Supreme Court upheld these laws in 1996 (by a 5-4 decision) against a constitutional challenge in *Kansas v. Hendricks*. The topic is so ideologically charged that there has been little attention paid to how civil commitment is actually being used.[17] Are offenders being held without strong evidence of dangerousness? Or are offenders with strong evidence of dangerousness failing to be held? Both could be true, of course. Neither is easy to study given the small number of total cases. The number of people subjected to civil commitment nationwide every year is probably smaller than the number of people who sexually abuse children in day-care settings. Either way, it is fair to say both of these groups have, in their own time, received a disproportionate amount of attention in public discourse.

The rise of civil commitment programs and the increased use of community-notification laws are both products of the pernicious politics of sex-offender policies in modern America. The rigid "law and order" positions that largely defined the public discourse over crime policy in the 1970s and 1980s have faded as crime rates have dropped. But the area of sex offenses, particularly against children, is one of the last bastions of these politics. Elected officials want to portray themselves as "tough on sex offenders." Conversely, there are cynical efforts to paint one's opponent as weak on sex offenders. Republicans maneuvered a vote during the recent health care debate that was portrayed as "Viagra for child molesters."[18] Beyond posturing, there is the problem that ratcheting up laws to demonstrate "toughness" can be counterproductive. The most recent efforts to "improve" community notification provisions under the Adam Walsh Act include notifying employers and the public where sex offenders work. These provisions seem likely to make it harder for those released from prison to find and maintain jobs, which is counter-productive to the goal of a safe transition back to society. But political forces make it unlikely that any elected official will voice those concerns for fear of being portrayed as "weak" on sex offenders. In short, the critique of overly punitive policies concerning sex offenders is well taken. The laws are dubious in many respects and often the product of shameless politicking.

While many people express dislike, even hatred, of sex offenders when asked about the subject in the abstract, it is important to remember that such attitudes can coexist with the embrace of perpetrators in specific cases. Leon reveals how the "moral panic" over sex offenders that is reflected in media stories between the 1930s and the mid-1950s did *not* translate into increased arrests and convictions in criminal court, which seems to be assumed in so many academic writings.[19] The "desire to protect reputable citizens" in specific cases, Leon explains, often trumps the general desire to treat child molesters severely. In the contemporary era, though, punishment is seen as the overriding quality of the criminal justice system. It defines much of the scholarship about the era.

Actual punishments in the post-McMartin era have not been as strict as is often claimed. Though commenters continue to emphasize the "punitive" treatment of sex offenders, these perceptions seem to be driven by highly publicized cases rather than aggregate data. Harsh sentences are publicized; lenient ones prevail. This is what I discovered after testing Richard Gardner's claim that our country has become so hysterical over the sexual abuse of children that child molesters receive longer sentences on average than murders. Admittedly, this claim, if true, would constitute strong evidence of an unreasonably punitive approach toward sex offenders. But Dr. Gardner was off by a factor of hundreds.[20] Professor Theodore Cross and colleagues, in their meta-analysis of child abuse prosecutions, found that the incarceration rate for child abuse cases was "lower than all three comparison categories and significantly lower than violent crimes and rape and sexual assault."[21]

There is little reason to think that the overreaction to sex offenders being released from prison translates into greater willingness to report or act on suspicions of sexual abuse. An eight-month investigation by two reporters at the *Arkansas Democrat-Gazette* examined allegations of sexual misconduct against school teachers. They concluded, "When teachers are accused of sexual misconduct, some school officials and school boards quietly sidestep legal and ethical issues to protect their schools from scandal."[22] The study was published in 1996, four years after Gardner flatly asserted it is "no longer the case" that those revealing sexual abuse will be met with a disbelieving community. Gardner claimed the opposite was true, that police and child protective services were more likely to "accept as valid even frivolous and absurd accusations."[23] But Hargrove and Roth found that "sexual allegations by students have been greeted with shrugs, although a teacher's files indicated previous sex-related complaints."

There is no reason to think this phenomenon was peculiar to Arkansas. Indeed, in a more recent case from California, an appellate court declined to hold the Anaheim School District liable in a case where there was, as the court agreed, "evidence of obliviousness—perhaps the better word would be cluelessness—on the part of several of the district's teachers" who might have surmised sexual abuse had they "put two and two together."[24] The case has been described as encouraging a see-no-evil ethic.[25] That ethic stands alongside the punitive attitudes toward convicted sex offenders.

Overreaction at the back end of the criminal justice system—when sex offenders complete their prison term—is politically easy. We have been doing it with sex offenders since the 1990s through sex offender registries and related policies such as residency restrictions. These policies accomplish little in the way of public safety. But there is an enormous difference between being tough on incarcerated sex offenders upon release and confronting sexual abuse at the moment a child discloses it. Confronting the problem as a whole would require acknowledging the fact that most child molesters remain unapprehended and that most child sexual abuse is not reported. But proponents of the witch-hunt narrative would apparently rather challenge the evidence than agree that Roland Summit was correct when he wrote that child sexual abuse has two important preconditions: secrecy and helplessness.

The paradox of the contemporary sex offender in America is that we treat the group with leniency in many ways—failing to report suspicions, rallying around "upstanding" defendants, and meting out lenient punishments on many occasions—but we overreact about their release from prison. This gives an appearance of severity. Politicians have managed to exploit this in various ways. The appearance is also useful as a social salve since we are so willing to ignore child sexual abuse in the specific. The witch-hunt narrative glosses over the issue, just as scholars who characterize the modern era as a "punishment boom" miss the myriad ways in which the criminal justice system continues to be surprisingly lenient in child sexual abuse cases.

Persistent "Witch Hunt" Claims

The witch-hunt narrative described in this book revolved around cases from the McMartin era. But there have also been persistent witch-hunt claims in the years since then. Those claims have not received the publicity of the cases from the McMartin era; nor have they been grouped together by a common feature such as the day-care setting. Nevertheless, the cases have been offered as evidence of continued *overreaction* to child sexual abuse. Indeed, some of the same activists from the Day of Contrition—an event held in Massachusetts in 1997 that sought to link many of the cases discussed in this book directly to the Salem witch trials of the 1690s—formed a non-profit organization with the Orwellian name the National Center for Reason and Justice (NCRJ). The NCRJ provides legal assistance and other support to defendants in child sexual abuse cases that they claim were injustices. Their current president is Michael Snedeker, the defense lawyer who coauthored *Satan's Silence* with Debbie Nathan. Nathan and two other writers are on the board of directors. So is Professor Elizabeth Loftus, the highly acclaimed memory researcher. One of the first cases that the NCRJ sponsored (which apparently means providing support with legal fees) was that of Frank Fuster, the subject of Chapter Six. The NCRJ sponsors a number of lesser-known cases discussed in Chapter Three, including Robert Halsey, Lynn Malcom, Francis and Daniel Keller, and Nancy Smith and Joseph Allen. The NCRJ also sponsors a host of defendants from more recent cases. There is no question that defendants in child sexual abuse cases continue to *claim* they are victims of a witch-hunt.

What kind of evidence is there to support the witch-hunt claims that have emerged since the Michaels case? Eight examples are discussed here. This assortment of cases comes from a variety of sources, including writers Debbie Nathan, Mark Pendergrast, Thomas Sowell, activist Carol Hopkins, and the NCRJ. Some of Robert Rosenthal's recent appellate cases are examined as well, since he has claimed that his own practice is made up of defendants who experienced grave injustices in child sexual abuse cases. (Rosenthal represented Kelly Michaels and Frank Fuster at the appellate level.) These sources should yield the best possible evidence of modern witch-hunts. But in all eight of these examples, it appears that the witch-hunt claim is overblown and distorts or entirely overlooks significant evidence of guilt. Accordingly, these cases are most notable for what they demonstrate about the continuing political interest in rallying around defendants, regardless of the facts, in child sexual abuse cases.

Neil Shumate

Neil Shumate was a popular kindergarten teacher in Pleasanton, California, which makes the origins of his case all the more surprising. A first-grader at Fairlands Elementary School, named Kimberly, told a yard-duty teacher, in a conversation about which teachers they did and did not like, that she did not like Shumate because he "puts his hands down my pants."[26] There was no doubt in the teacher's mind as to what the girl said or meant. Indeed, the teacher knew she was duty-bound to report suspected abuse to the principal. The principal spoke to Kimberly and her older sister, Cathleen. Cathleen apparently reported that Shumate had touched her bottom on many occasions. On the basis of those statements, the principal made reports to the police and child protective services. Through the investigation that followed, it emerged that this was not the first time such complaints had come to the principal. But it *was* the first time she called law enforcement.

The police investigation began with the original two sisters and expanded to other kindergarten, first-, and second-grade students. In additional to the original girls, four other children reported sexual touching by Shumate inside their outer clothing. A complaint was filed soon thereafter charging him with seven counts of child molestation during 1991–92 and 1992–93. A few weeks later, charges were added in connection with a boy who was in Shumate's class in 1988–89. Further investigation identified three additional male victims, all of whom who been molested at Shumate's home while living there as foster children. Two of those boys were added to the criminal charges.

The portrait that emerged of Neil Shumate was of a teacher everyone agreed was "affectionate." Children often sat on his lap, and he regularly hugged and patted children. He was known for administering spankings on children's birthdays, one spank for every year. He was also known for giving "slobbery kisses." A room mother raised concerns with Shumate and others that he was "too affectionate."[27] But he also had a following of admiring parents and teachers. Even so, a mother who weighed in *against* Shumate's being imprisoned told authorities she was uncomfortable when helping in his class because of how he physically handled children. She hoped that he "got help."[28]

Shumate would argue on appeal that "touching [was] an inextricable part of teaching kindergarten" and that five-year-olds "need help with zippers and belts and shirttails on a daily basis."[29] But those kinds of innocuous actions were not the nature of the claims against Shumate; he was charged with rubbing penises and buttocks, over the clothing or over the underwear, and sticking his fingers inside children's pants and underwear.

The children testified at trial and were subject to cross-examination. The defense presented Lee Coleman, who testified for Frank Fuster, to criticize the investigation and opine that the children were not reliable. A brief exchange in cross-examination revealed the extreme implications of Coleman's position. When asked if he had ever conducted an interview of a child for the purposes of determining whether or not the child had been molested, Coleman said "absolutely not" because doing so "would be a contradiction of everything" he believes.[30] He holds it is impossible to "get at the truth of whether a child was molested by a psychiatric examination." In short, he does not believe in interviewing children. It is no wonder he always has something to say for the defense in cases where, inevitably, children have been interviewed.

The biggest surprise at trial was Daniel Bromberg, who had been an aide in Shumate's class in 1981 and testified about a conversation that opened with Shumate saying "You like boys, don't you?" and included Shumate describing how he tries "to be as affectionate with the girls as with the boys" in case the parents of any boys complain.[31] Bromberg's testimony was particularly compelling because he had pleaded guilty to child molestation elsewhere two years later. Shumate's defenders have claimed that this case amounts to making it a crime to be an affectionate teacher. But an examination of the charges and testimony demonstrates that this case is about much more specific touching than is normal, and that Shumate's history was filled with red flags, minimization, and denial. The case began with a spontaneous disclosure, and a quick investigation turned up multiple other charges.

Shumate was convicted by a jury of all the charges. Immediately after his conviction, he tried the innocence-by-association approach, filing these items with the court: Nathan's *Redbook* article about the Kelly Michaels case, several of Rabinowitz's *Wall Street Journal* articles about the Amirault case, and some printed copy from Jonathan Harris's internet Witch-Hunt Information Center. The site contained a list, prepared by Nathan, of cases with allegedly "compelling evidence" of false convictions. Shumate's name was on the list, although he was not included on the dedication page of her book with Snedeker. Shumate also received a surprising level of support from the community. Before sentencing, the court received more than four hundred letters from parents and teachers "stating emphatically that [Shumate] is incapable of such crimes."[32] (An almost equal number of people signed a petition urging a strict sentence.) Shumate's conviction was upheld on appeal.

Christopher Ferrara

Christopher Ferrara was introduced sympathetically by Carol Hopkins at the "Day of Contrition" in Salem, Massachusetts. Ferrara had recently been released from the New York prison system, where he served four years for attempted first-degree sexual abuse. He had been a special deputy in the "Officer Bill" program of the Wyoming County Sheriff's Department, visiting schools and, according to one news story, warning children about "the dangers of talking to strangers."[33] Ferrara was indicted on seven felony counts of first-degree sexual abuse involving boys between nine and fourteen. Ferrara brought boys to his apartment and sometimes "bathed them" and gave them presents. His defenders classify these acts as befriending underprivileged boys. But nobody has explained why a twenty-five-year-old police officer would be "bathing" a fourteen-year-old boy—underprivileged or not—in his apartment. Ferrara served his full sentence because he was unwilling to admit to the parole board that he committed any crime. He was introduced at the event in Salem as a witch-hunt victim who "had not yet had his conviction overturned."[34]

This is not surprising, since his conviction was the result of a guilty plea.[35] What is surprising is the unquestioning acceptance of Ferrara by those at the Day of Contrition. Child molesters often emphasize how they never intended any *harm*. They view their sexual activities as love or education. This may well be true for Christopher Ferrara, and that would undoubtedly be useful information for the purposes of sex-offender treatment. But treatment is meaningless for those who deny their crimes. And the misguided thinking that may help explain how or why Ferrara talked himself into giving young adolescents baths in his apartment is irrelevant to the question of innocence or guilt. Those promoting the witch-hunt narrative at the event in Salem, however, were apparently too intent on their political cause to exercise skepticism or seek to verify claims.

Robert Lawton

Another one of the lesser-known people introduced as a witch-hunt victim at the so-called Day of Contrition is Robert Lawton. Carol Hopkins did not explain why

Lawton deserved to be honored, but Mark Pendergrast had earlier associated Lawton's case, in his book *Victims of Memory*, with the idea that "little children can be led into stating and believing the most outrageous falsehoods."[36] Pendergrast did not provide any details beyond the fact that Lawton had been convicted of sodomizing his three sons.

Lawton's case did not involve young children or repetitive, coercive interviews. The oldest boy was nine years old when he testified, and the case had strong physical evidence. There were deeply disturbing anal findings in all three sons.[37] Dr. Paul Young, a former Burlington area pediatrician who had trained medical students and residents in the areas of physical and sexual abuse of children, testified that the oldest boy, Greg, did not have normal anal findings. There was unusual venous engorgement, physical findings that that were "abnormal and consistent with a history of rectal penetration."[38] His observations on David were similar, but the engorgement was elevated, suggesting that the injury had occurred numerous times. Dr. Young described this "as a strikingly abnormal finding," most likely to have been caused by penetration.[39]

Pendergrast implies that Ceci and Bruck's arguments were responsible for overturning Lawton's conviction in Vermont. Actually, the court did not rule on those issues; instead, it overturned Lawton's conviction because the prosecutor went overboard while cross-examining Lawton. But the decision highlights the range of evidence against him: direct testimony, hearsay, and medical evidence. There was also evidence about an event years earlier in California, when the defendant's brother-in-law walked into a room in his sister's house and allegedly observed Lawton sitting in the middle of a circle of children with an exposed erection.[40] The prosecutor made *three* references to that matter during the trial. The Vermont Supreme Court thought the three references were inflammatory. The court agreed that the incident was "probative," so mentioning it once might have been acceptable. There was also an extended analysis of the motion for acquittal on the charge involving Lawton's youngest son. The court concluded that the child's statements were trustworthy and that there was sufficient evidence to support a conviction, but for the overzealous conduct of the prosecutor.[41]

Was Lawton the victim of a witch-hunt, or did a group of academics and activists embrace a man whose three sons all had strong physical evidence of anal rape, whose brother-in-law reported suspected child sexual abuse years earlier in California, and whose wife took out a restraining order against him in order to protect the children? There is no evidence in the appellate record of anything other than overzealousness on the part of a prosecutor who was apparently outraged at Lawton's misleading testimony on the witness stand.[42] But Lawton was not retried, and the charges were ultimately dismissed, providing an argument for those who would label the case a witch-hunt.

Charles Bighead

Charles Bighead was convicted in 1994 of sexually abusing his daughter, Rita Bighead Eison. She testified that the abuse began when she was seven years old, and that by age eleven she was forced to have sexual intercourse with her father regularly. He would often pay her small sums of money afterward. Bighead was a tribal police officer and was described as "a strict disciplinarian" who punished his children physically and apparently once injured Rita's eye in the process.[43] When Rita was seventeen years old, she insisted that her father stop his sexual assaults. Later that year, she confided in a tribal police officer about the abuse. This set the wheels in motion for Bighead's prosecution. The officer was the first adult Rita had ever told about the abuse.

A federal jury eventually heard from Rita, two of her childhood friends, and Tasha Boychuk, the director of forensic services at the Child Advocacy Center in Phoenix. The childhood friends both testified to statements that Rita made *at the time* about sexual abuse by her father. Boychuk, who testified as a rebuttal witness, spoke only about the general characteristics of sexually abused children, not about Rita in particular. Boychuk told the jury that, on the basis of her experience interviewing more than a thousand children, it is not unusual to delay disclosure of sexual abuse. She was rebutting the defense argument that Rita's credibility was dubious because she delayed reporting the abuse. Bighead denied any wrongdoing. He was convicted, and his conviction was subsequently upheld 2-1 on appeal.

The dissenting opinion in the Ninth Circuit Court of Appeals was written by Judge John T. Noonan, who was apparently incensed that Boychuk was allowed to testify. Noonan invoked the Salem witch trials and expressed his broad dissatisfaction with various "cultural changes" that have nothing to do with the evidence against Bighead.[44] He also railed against those who would claim or believe in satanic ritual abuse but then allowed that such claims were not actually part of this case. He further relied on Richard Gardner's *Sex Abuse Hysteria* to criticize "the kind of persons engaged in the kind of work that Tasha Boychuk is engaged in."[45] In other words, Judge Noonan took the position that Boychuk, whose psychology doctorate involved a field-based validation study of children's statements about sexual abuse, had "remarkable bias" *because she had professional training and experience with child sexual abuse*. The power of crying witch-hunt did not go unnoticed. Thomas Sowell quickly followed suit, editorializing in *Forbes* about the "legal lynching" of Charles Bighead. Sowell bemoaned how "in some cases, even a daughter's own denial that anything happened is not enough to override the suspicion and presumptions of social workers."[46] But this description has nothing to do with the case against Bighead. His daughter was clear and consistent from the moment she disclosed as a seventeen-year-old. What she delayed reporting to any adult she had told to two separate friends during childhood, and both of them verified that fact. Bighead's case had nothing to do with lynching or witch-hunts, but it nevertheless demonstrates how effective those images can be in mobilizing people with a larger agenda against social workers and "survivors" of sexual abuse.[47]

Elsie Oscarson

Elsie Oscarson was convicted of sexually abusing her two sons in Vermont in 2003. Her case is one of the recent "sponsored cases" of the NCRJ, which places her squarely in the contemporary witch-hunt narrative. Her case was located by Pendergrast, who also lives in Vermont. His limited account of the case—based largely on attending a sentencing hearing and talking to the defendant—provides no evidence on which to conclude that her conviction was an injustice. To the contrary, he allows that it was "a messy case" and that "it may be a good thing that [Oscarson's] children were taken from her in Tennessee," years before the case in Vermont.[48] It is not clear why Pendergrast says this since he also apparently thinks that Oscarson was falsely accused in the case. His overall theory is that she has been falsely convicted twice—and that proving the first conviction was wrong might have affected the second case, even though they were far apart in miles, years, and facts.

Is there anything beyond conjecture to support this theory? Pendergrast says there is a memorandum describing the first case as involving "horrendous abuse." He transforms this phrase into the supposition that this earlier case was a "classic satanic ritual abuse" case, but he does not provide a single quote to back up this charge, and the mystery memo is never actually cited. But this conjecture alone is apparently enough for adherents to the witch-hunt narrative. Oscarson passed muster with the "criteria" that the NCRJ claims to employ before deciding whether to sponsor a case. Daniel Patrick Moynihan worried years ago about "defining deviancy down."[49] In the contemporary era, it seems that "witch hunts" are being defined down. Little more than a protestation of innocence by the defendant and some assorted innuendo is necessary for many activists, writers, and academics to cry "witch hunt."

Robert Rosenthal's cases

Robert Rosenthal, who most famously represented Kelly Michaels and worked with Ceci and Bruck on the "Concerned Scientists" amicus brief, has claimed that cases he and others were recently litigating across the country are "testament" to continuation of "witch hunts" involving child sexual abuse. In a letter to the *Wall Street Journal* in 2003, Rosenthal claimed that those like Frank Fuster—who is, in his view, wrongfully imprisoned—"continue to be joined by others like them all too often."[50] He did not mention any of these recent cases by name. But looking at his appellate practice, one finds little evidence to support his claim.

One of Rosenthal's clients was Jose Serrano, convicted by a New York jury of eighteen child sexual-abuse counts in connection with male foster children placed in his home. Serrano had requested that only male foster children be placed in his house. In 1997, a fourteen-year-old identified as Cody O. reported that Serrano had forced him to engage in oral sex. According to Magistrate Judge Victor Bianchini's report years later, "the authorities told Cody O. he was a liar, and ruining a 'good man's life,' and he recanted his allegations." Another fourteen-year-old, Daniel, reported much the same thing two years later, followed by a third report, by a twelve-year-old named Glen. A police investigation was commenced after a *fourth* report, in 2000, by a twelve-year-old named Edward. The police interviewed other children who had resided in Serrano's home, and two other boys reported sexual abuse. They then interviewed Serrano, and he confessed to the abuse of four boys who had been identified by the police, and one who had not. That boy, who was twelve years old at the time, later confirmed he had been sexually abused by Serrano. Beyond the lack of any reason to think it was a wrongful conviction—one of Serrano's main appellate arguments was to object to his own confession—what is striking about this case is how many children were sexually abused and did not disclose anything at the time.[51] And that some did and were ignored.

Rosenthal also represented Frederick Weber, who had been indicted on thirty-seven counts involving sexual contact with thirteen young girls at his home in Nassau, New York, between 1996 and 2000. Some counts were dismissed for overlapping with each other, others were severed (meaning they would have to be tried separately), and Weber was tried on thirteen counts related to three girls. He was convicted of all counts on one girl, and acquitted on the charges connected to her sister and her friend. Rosenthal argued that the time frame specified in the counts was insufficiently specified and that the trial court should have had a "taint" hearing. The appellate court ruled that the claim of the victims having been subjected to undue suggestion was "speculative" and upheld the conviction, noting that the children and the police investigators had all been subject to cross-examination.[52] Another of Rosenthal's appellate clients was Tyler Lupoli, who was convicted of sexual abuse charges in connection with four girls outside Portland, Oregon. After an appellate court reversed the decision, Lupoli offered to plead guilty to three counts of attempted first-degree sex abuse and two counts of harassment for intimate touching in order to avoid going through another trial. There isn't the slightest hint that the gist of the charges against Lupoli was wrongful. He admitted he touched three young girls inappropriately.[53] These are not witch-hunts, and Rosenthal's arguments are not about factual innocence.

The only possible exception is *State v. Carol M.D.*, the strange case from Wenatchee, Washington.[54] It is strange because one of the children in the case, Susan "Sam" Doggett, ended up in the custody of Carol Hopkins, who had formed an organization devoted to alleged injustices to defendants in child sexual abuse cases. Hopkins, who lived more than a thousand miles from Wenatchee, offered to take custody of the girl, and later she told CBS News she wanted the girl to become "the poster child for the cause."[55] "Sam" apparently recanted claims against her parents while living with Hopkins. Rosenthal's successful appeal, filed before the recantation, included arguments that appear to undercut the claim that there was no abuse in the family. His first argument on appeal was against the use of testimony from a counselor to Doggett's youngest daughter concerning incriminating statements the girl apparently made about her parents.[56] Although excluding such evidence might be appropriate in all fairness to a criminal defendant, it is not the kind of defense that suggests Rosenthal's client was being subjected to a witch-hunt. Charges were eventually dropped and the Doggetts filed suit in federal court claiming their constitutional rights had been violated by the investigation. U.S. District Judge Alan MacDonald ruled the lawsuit "frivolous" and ordered their lawyer to pay the City of Wenatchee's legal fees.[57]

The Wenatchee cases at large are similarly complicated. Much like what came to be known as the Jordan, Minnesota, cases, the Wenatchee cases are actually a series of loosely connected cases that should not all be grouped under one heading. It would take years of research to examine the cases thoroughly, but there is readily available evidence to suggest that labeling the entire matter a witch-hunt is inappropriate. A local television station broadcast a prison interview with an adult woman who had pleaded guilty and, even after all the criticism of the case, maintained she and other adults *had* engaged in sexual contact with numerous children.[58] Moreover, a jury in a highly publicized civil trial related to the Wenatchee cases ruled that various public officials did *not* violate the civil rights of eight plaintiffs. The judge had instructed the jurors that if there were "facts that would cause a reasonably cautious official to believe that the person had committed the crime for which they were arrested," they should rule for the defendants—the public officials.[59] But it is also clear that there were false convictions in Wenatchee, spurred by an overzealous sheriff, Robert Perez, who would later be discredited for his behavior, including the fact that two key witnesses in several cases were foster children in his home. Perez was also accused of trying to coerce children's testimony and destroying evidence.[60] The false conviction problem has been expounded on in the media and in a book by a defense lawyer, Kathyrn Lyon, called *Witch Hunt*.[61] What has been lost in those accounts is any sense that some of the cases were well founded, some were rightly not overturned, and some were never even challenged. The witch-hunt narrative about these cases paints with such a broad brush that it cloaks the guilty with the veneer of innocence. David Horsey of the *Seattle Post-Intelligencer* drew a cartoon about Wenatchee that featured judges, police, and social workers in bed together. It was titled "The Real Incest," as if the far more widespread type of incest, including Wenatchee defendants who never challenged their convictions, was not real. In this regard, the current discourse has the same imbalance that the witch-hunt narrative brought to cases like those in Jordan, Minnesota, where the tragedies connected to actual abuse were quickly lost to history.

The period of infamous day-care sexual abuse cases ended almost twenty years ago. Yet there are still respected academics, judges, and other professionals carrying the mantle of the witch-hunt narrative. The power of claiming innocence-by-association while employing the rhetoric and imagery of the Salem witch trials is undeniable. Those claims have not met with much success in court, but they have nevertheless helped to mobilize a divergent coalition of interest groups, from father's rights advocates and the False Memory Syndrome Foundation to defense lawyers and assorted academics. These diverse groups share a strong interest in continuing to promote the witch-hunt narrative.

There is also a significant and unexpected convergence of the left and the right around these issues that helps explain why there have been so few skeptical voices about the witch-hunt narrative. Those on the right rally against witch-hunts on the part of child protective services agencies because they do not think that government involvement in the family is legitimate, even to protect children. Those on the left find the witch-hunt narrative compelling because they are already well versed in the abuse of power by police and prosecutors. Accordingly, there is no skepticism of the witch-hunt claim. Both of these political viewpoints are prone to believe the cry of witch-hunt, even if the evidence is as strong as in the cases against Robert Lawton, Christopher Ferrara, Jose Serrano, and others.

The Legacy of the Witch-hunt Narrative

Discounting the Reality of Day-care Sexual Abuse

The infamous day-care sexual abuse cases occurred in the 1980s and early 1990s. There has not been a highly publicized day-care sexual abuse trial in twenty years. The witch-hunt narrative employs this fact as proof that the original cases must have been baseless, creatures of a particular time and place. As one commenter put it, the "sudden absence of new cases" is evidence that "the tumult has subsided."[62] But, just as there were day-care sexual abuse cases *before* the McMartin case (see Chapter Four), there have been day-care sexual abuse cases ever since. It is impossible to ascertain how the overall number of such cases has changed over time. What is clear is that the cases ending up in court are different in two ways. First, prosecutors do not bring massive indictments involving large numbers of children; instead, they are more likely to pare cases down to the strongest counts. Second, if the case goes to trial, it is likely to receive only local publicity; none of the sexual abuse cases in day-care centers since the end of the Michaels case has received significant national coverage. In this way, the perception that these cases have disappeared is actually evidence of a change in our primary window into understanding the issue: media coverage. (Hence the attention earlier in this chapter on the Catholic Church cases and Megan's Law, major topics of media interest in the post-McMartin era.)

A few examples illustrate the reality of day-care sexual abuse in the post-McMartin era. The Oak Tree Day Care Center case in Yucaipa, Arizona, began in 1997 when Nathan Martindale, who was working in his parents' day-care center, was arrested after the parents of three children reported possible abuse. Martindale eventually admitted to some of the allegations, including performing oral copulation on the children (a feature deemed fantastic by Charlier and Downing). In a reflection of how prosecutors tend to handle these cases now, the charges were reduced to apply to one child who was considered the strongest witness. The local newspaper—there was no significant media coverage—reported "investigators were having trouble obtaining clear-cut testimony from other young victims."[63] A decade earlier, many prosecutors would have put those children on the stand. The case would likely have been the kind of perplexing mixture that characterized many in the 1980s, and it might well have been labeled a "hoax." Instead, it is a little-known case that ended in a noncontroversial guilty plea.

A similar result occurred in the Children City Learning Center case in Reno, Nevada, where Gary Hanneman, thirty-three, was arrested and charged in February 2001 with, among other things, ten counts of sexual assault on a child and one count of using a child to produce pornography. Hanneman had been working since 1999 at the center, across the street from the University of Nevada, Reno, campus. Hanneman was well liked, he had no criminal record, and many adults who worked there apparently never saw anything abnormal. He allegedly molested dozens of children over three years without any complaints until the very end of that time. And when the children were finally interviewed, some said "fantastic" things about games with feces. If this had happened in the late 1980s, it would probably be on Charlier and Downing's list of dubious ritual abuse cases from around the country. But the Hanneman case happened ten years later, at a time when video equipment had gone from expensive and novel to affordable and extremely portable. And Hanneman had videotaped some of his crimes. This is probably why he also quickly confessed to molesting twenty-eight children at the day-care center. When explaining why a plea agreement would spare the families involved, the prosecutor made note of Hanneman's form of pedophilia, which "involves a fetish with human excrement." Presumably the videotapes document this supposedly fantastic element. In short, everything about this case that could have been cast as dubious was actually true. Hanneman entered a guilty plea in November 2001. None of the sensational evidence was aired in court, and there was almost no publicity beyond Nevada.

Other recent cases also emphasize the number of victims that can be involved in day-care abuse cases and the number of years such abuse can go still unapprehended in the post-McMartin era. Larry Akins was apprehended in August 2007 for abusing children ranging in age from three to eight over a period of years at the Gingerbread Day Care in Van Buren, Arkansas. He had been operating the center with his wife since 2000. Akins pleaded guilty to charges involving eight children; his lawyer read a statement saying he "took full responsibility."[64] A similar case, but with a much longer history of untold abuse, unfolded in Ste. Genevieve, Missouri, where William E. Huck, Sr., was apprehended in March 2007 for sexually abusing a four-year-old boy at an in-home day care run by his wife. Huck confessed to the crime and provided "a detailed account of how he engaged in sexual contact with the boy twelve different times."[65] He had apparently been doing the same thing for almost thirty years without detection. Officials estimated that approximately forty children had been molested. Neither case received significant media coverage.

A final case is noteworthy because it emanates from Wenatchee, Washington, the location of probably the worst excesses in a sexual abuse investigation in the mid-1990s and possibly since. The day-care case had nothing to do with those earlier ones. The defendant, Agustin O. Barragan, pleaded guilty in 2010 to two counts of third-degree assault of a child in an Alford plea that acknowledged that the state had sufficient evidence to convict him. The abuse occurred at the Barragan's in-home day care in Wenatchee. According to a local newspaper account, Child Protective Services records entered in this case indicate there had been complaints against Barragan in 1994, 1995, and 2003.[66] *None of those investigations resulted in any charges or loss of license.* Given his eventual admission in the 2010 case, one wonders whether the earlier investigations were dropped in error, the kind of thing that never gets mentioned in the witch-hunt narrative, where "unsubstantiated" is frequently conflated with "untrue."[67]

These anecdotes illustrate the continued existence of sexual abuse in day-care centers. They also demonstrate something about the power of the secrecy and related forces against children disclosing such abuse even in the post-McMartin era. They all involved multiple victims, and yet none were quickly exposed. The fact that prosecutors are savvier and the media is less obsessed with these cases is beneficial. What is unclear is whether those improvements occurred alongside a decrease in the likelihood of investigating and prosecuting sexual abuse in day-care settings. The question is impossible to answer with existing data sources. There is no national archive of data on state prosecutions of this crime, and the state-level data from Child Protective Services agencies are scattered and tend to lump day-care abuse into the broader category of "institutional abuse." Nevertheless, there are a variety of reasons to postulate that the official number of cases involving day-care centers has gone down more than the actual incidence of such abuse.

First, original data obtained from DYFS in New Jersey suggest a worrisome trend. There were twenty-five cases of substantiated sexual abuse in day-care centers in New Jersey in 1986. One of those involved Wee Care in Maplewood, New Jersey (the Kelly Michaels case), and that year was the high water mark. There were ten substantiated cases in 1992 and nine in 1993, the year the Michaels case was overturned on appeal. The following year, there was only one substantiated case statewide. *There were none in the three years after that.* From those data, it would appear that either sexual abuse in day-care centers stopped occurring in New Jersey after 1993 or it stopped being investigated and recognized. There is no reason to think it is the former and there are very specific reasons to think that DYFS might try to avoid such cases in the years after Michaels. These data from a single state over ten years need to be supplemented by studies of multiple states in more recent years.

Second, empirical studies of case flows in criminal courts bear out the hypothesis that cases with younger children are more likely to be dismissed by prosecutors. Stroud and her co-authors in New Mexico conducted one of the only studies to compare cases referred to prosecutors against those that were not.[68] They found that 32 percent of the dropped cases involved children age four and under, while only 9 percent of the criminal cases involved children that age. In another study, prosecutors accepted 35 percent of the sexual abuse referrals in cases involving children four to six and 69 percent for ages seven to twelve.[69] Ellen Gray's study of eight jurisdictions across the country described cases involving victims five years old or younger as "notoriously difficult to prosecute effectively."[70] Not all studies find such a clear result. William Tucker obtained strikingly different results in comparing information from child advocacy centers in Minnesota and Wisconsin in order to analyze the possible effect of age and other variables on the likelihood of a case moving forward in the criminal justice system.[71] But the consensus of existing literature is that cases involving young children are much less likely to move forward in the criminal justice system.

Finally, there is survey evidence that prosecutors have internalized these values. In one survey, 62 percent of prosecutors said "too young" was sometimes or very often a reason for rejecting a child sexual abuse case.[72] Tucker's survey of prosecutors in eleven states found that, with controlled vignettes, younger age was clearly associated with decrease in likelihood to prosecute.[73] Since vignettes hold facts constant and vary only designated variables, these findings reflect a general attitude about the age of child witnesses.

The concern that screening mechanisms might screen out good cases is rarely discussed in the existing literature in law and psychology, where the implication of the witch-hunt narrative is that day-care sexual abuse charges are "bizarre" and to be discredited. In 2004, Ceci and Bruck wrote that a "disproportionate number of studies of preschool children at the end of the 20th century" was "directly motivated by forensic concerns of the day."[74] Those concerns were exclusively about defendants, and this book argues they were misplaced. Moreover, an imbalance still exists in the psychology literature. As Professors Tom Lyon and Kathy Pezdek have pointed out, there is much more attention paid to what is wrong with interviews than there is to how to make them better.[75] In the meantime, there are several reasons to be concerned about whether sexual abuse cases involving young children, in and out of day care, are less likely to be acted on now than they were in the 1980s.

Undermining the Credibility of Children

The witch-hunt narrative came out of cases from the 1980s and prevailed in the court of public opinion, in many criminal courts, and in the field of psychology in the 1990s. But what started as a contest over highly publicized day-care cases in the 1980s has turned out to have ramifications far beyond those cases. One lasting effect is in the field of psychology, where the idea that children are "highly suggestible" has taken hold largely because of the persuasive, but inaccurate, portrayal of the Michaels case. A group of activists and academics have mobilized around this narrative to promote various agendas and support cases that seek to discredit children.

The first sign of this political mobilization came when the television program *Nightline* set out in 1996, a year after the Michaels case was over, to examine whether children's testimony was being unduly discredited. They wondered whether one effect of the witch-hunt narrative was that it was harder to bring and win cases that were based on the word of a child. This concern had been expressed during the years when Ceci and Bruck's position started dominating the field. The decision by Gail Goodman and others not to sign the "Concerned Scientists" brief in the Michaels case was based on similar concerns. A single-minded and exaggerated view of child suggestibility was bound to have negative consequences on children as witnesses.

The ABC network quickly discovered there were writers and academics so devoted to the witch-hunt narrative that they mobilized to object to a program about whether children's testimony was being unduly discounted *before* the program was aired. There was an organized campaign to discredit Civia Tamarkin, a journalist who contributed to the program and had once been an advisory board member of Believe the Children. Tamarkin had also said, in a speech about ritual abuse cases that was later published in article form, that she was "unequivocally . . . convinced that these crimes do occur."[76] Peter Freyd, a mathematics professor at the University of Pennsylvania who helped form the False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF), sent an email labeled "Nightline Alert" through the FMSF-News distribution list. The message claimed that Tamarkin was the producer of the upcoming program and the message contained "background information assembled by Debbie Nathan," along with copies of two separate letters from Nathan to *Nightline*. In those letters, Nathan painted Tamarkin as espousing "discredited and downright bizarre child abuse theories."[77] This effort did not succeed in keeping the program off the air, but it demonstrated surprisingly strong resistance to asking questions about whether the witch-hunt narrative has had negative effects.

When the program aired, Ted Koppel began with an unusual preface that gently scolded those who so strongly protested against a program they had not yet seen. Correcting the misimpression that Tamarkin produced or reported the story—she had acted only as a consultant—Koppel expressed the view that the story is "important" and "had been compiled as fairly and cleanly as possible."[78] The program opened with television footage from a highly publicized case from Broward County, Florida, where two girls had been raped and murdered by a man whose long record of sex crimes against children had been met by lenient, even lackadaisical, responses by the state. On New Year's Eve 1995, an eleven-year-old girl was assaulted by a man who took off his clothes, carried her into his bedroom, and tried to rape her. They struggled and she managed to kick him hard enough that he stopped. As she left the room, the man said to her: "Tell somebody about this. It was a bad thing that I did; I shouldn't have done it."[79] The girl told her father, who filed a police report within two hours, identifying Howard Steven Ault as the assailant. A detective took a taped statement from the girl and her father, and then the case languished for more than ten months.

It was later revealed that Ault was on probation at the time for sexual assault on a six-year-old girl in 1994.[80] He had also been convicted of attempted sexual battery of a twelve-year-old girl in Lauderdale Lakes in 1988. But Ault was not arrested on the New Year's Eve charges. No action was taken until ten months later, when he was in custody at the Oakland Park Police station in connection with the kidnapping, rape, and murder of two homeless sisters, age eleven and seven. Only then did Broward County detectives—embarrassed by their failure to take the other eleven-year-old girl seriously—rush to try to cover themselves for all those months of inaction. "A Child's Word" used the case to point out the potential costs of discounting or failing to act on the word of a child. They also quoted prosecutors who argued that it had become more difficult to bring sexual abuse cases because people were unduly dismissive of children as witnesses.

"Distorted Journalism," Nat Hentoff titled his *Village Voice* column the following week—the first of two columns he devoted entirely to an attack on "A Child's Word." "Why was not a single abandoned case mentioned?" Hentoff protested, labeling the program "propaganda" for asserting that lives had been lost because of the discrediting of child witnesses.[81] Hentoff was apparently unaware that the videotape at the beginning of the program was from the Ault case—a highly publicized case that illustrates in gruesome detail how discounting the word of a child ultimately cost the lives of two children.[82] But their story, which generated considerable publicity when the girls were found murdered, was quickly lost in the popular discourse about child sexual abuse. There has not been a serious engagement of the questions raised in "A Child's Word," in print or broadcast, since. There have been flashes of media attention to more recent Ault-like stories, such as the Avila case in California in which Samantha Runnion's life would have been spared had the word of two eleven-year-old girls been taken more seriously a year earlier.[83] But these grim cases have not generated much commentary or attention to the general question of child credibility and whether the word of a child is too quickly doubted or dismissed.

The same people who objected to "A Child's Word" gathered the following year in Salem, Massachusetts, for an event they called the Day of Contrition. Held on the three hundredth anniversary of a day of remorse for the Salem witch trials, they could not have been more direct in trying to associate their own causes with the righteousness of being against the witch trials. The event was ostensibly organized by Carol Hopkins, an activist from San Diego who had formed something she called the "Justice Committee."[84] Her organization generated the most exaggerated estimate of wrongful convictions in the 1980s, claiming there were "thousands" of such cases. Hopkins described the purpose of the Day of Contrition as addressing "the reasons and remedies for the nationwide epidemic of spurious accusations and prosecutions."[85] The event featured writers, academics, and former defendants connected to all of the major cases in this book: McMartin, Michaels, and Country Walk. Ralph Underwager led a prayer at the event and Richard Gardner, a frequent defense expert in these cases, gave a fiery speech that argued "a whole industry has been spawned" as a result of the Child Abuse Prevention and Treatment Act (CAPTA) and that "hysteria is being fueled by the money." The audience applauded when he said, "Children are liars!"[86]

Gardner is perhaps best known for coining the phrase "parental alienation syndrome," which attributes a child's statements about sexual abuse, most often in the context of a divorce case, to the "alienation" of the hostile parent, almost always the mother. PAS, as it has come to be known, does not have a scientific basis in the literature, but it had an enthusiastic following in Salem.[87] Supporters of "false memory syndrome," which suffers from the same problem, were also active participants in the conference.[88] These groups sought to gain credibility and acceptance by associating themselves with the imagery of Salem. That much was public. What was not publicized is that Herman Ohme—an activist with the False Memory Syndrome Foundation, and one of the behind-the-scenes organizers of the event—with assistance from Carol Hopkins and Richard Gardner had been working closely with a staff member of Illinois Senator Dan Coats, a conservative Republican, to water down the Child Abuse Treatment and Prevention Act.[89] They did not succeed in eliminating the statutory mandate to report suspected child abuse, but the larger agenda of these activists endured.

Eileen McNamara wrote a column for the *Boston Globe* about the Day of Contrition titled "Hardly a Case of Persecution." Arguing that there is no evidence we are preoccupied with protecting children, she criticized those at the event for seeing "rampant hysteria" where it does not exist.[90] She did not use the strident language of the witch-hunt narrative, but she did experience the same kind of wrath that came down on Koppel when ABC asked whether a child's word has become unduly discredited because of the efforts of people to associate more and more cases with the imagery of Salem.[91] It was becoming apparent that there was intense opposition to anyone who questioned the exaggerated claims advanced by these groups.

The Marzolf Case: Expansive Efforts to Label Children as "Tainted"

One of the worries of those who opposed the idea of "taint hearings" in the Michaels case was that a process arguably justified by the most extreme cases would be imposed on cases where it did not belong. Taint hearings are a special procedure that allows defendants to argue a child has been so "tainted" by the interview process that the child is not reliable enough to testify at trial; these hearings came about in New Jersey as a result of the Michaels case. The Marzolf case, the first taint hearing held in New Jersey after Michaels, provided the first test of those concerns. The case arose under circumstances that would seem to eliminate the need for a taint hearing, to wit, it began when James Marzolf, twenty-nine, had his hands down the pants of his young nephew when the boy's stepfather, Mark Glazer, walked into the room. Marzolf thought he was alone with the seven-year-old Tyler, on the third floor of an empty house. Glazer testified that after registering what he was seeing, he backed up and announced his presence from the hallway, whereupon Marzolf came out of the room looking startled and saying something about "wrestling" with Tyler.[92] Glazer told his wife about the incident an hour later; they called DYFS the next day and asked advice about what to do. DYFS referred them to the police, who arranged to interview the boy and both parents a few days later.

Tyler was shy and reticent to talk. Most of his answers in the twenty-seven-page interview transcript are single words or phrases. Even so, occasional answers included details that speak volumes. "What did he do with his hand when he touched you?" the boy was asked after he had said he was touched and pointed to his "pee-pee." Tyler did not respond by saying tickle, or pinch, or something vague; he answered, "He went up and down."[93] Near the end of the interview, Tyler indicated that Uncle Jimmy bought "special" underwear for him, he got the underwear "from a closet," the underwear were "too small" for Tyler, and Uncle Jimmy made him wear them when he was "at his house." When police executed a search, the colorful, "too small" bikini underwear was located in the closet where Tyler said it would be. The boy gave a second statement on September 14 that had much more detail and included additional allegations against Marzolf. Criminal charges were ultimately based on these two statements and the stepfather's statement about observing the original event.

It seems strange that this case would even be subject to a taint hearing given a level of corroboration that would have allowed it to go to trial even back when the word of a child alone could not sustain charges. Yet the defendant was able to convince a judge to have a taint hearing, referred to as a Michaels hearing by the court.[94] What could possibly be said in a case where the child made a statement promptly and there was an adult witness? As it turns out, Maggie Bruck appeared for the defendant and offered the opinion that "there is a high degree of possibility" that the evidence from the boy is "unreliable."[95] He was so unreliable, she argued, that the judge should prohibit him from testifying at trial.

Bruck had criticisms of every step of the investigation. She viewed the five days between the initial report and the first police interview as "problematic." Ideally, she said, the interview should have been done "immediately."[96] She criticized the first interview as having too many directed questions. She allowed, in cross-examination, that the interviewer was sensitive in this interview, he did not pressure Tyler, and she would not likely have been able to conduct a better interview. Still, she considered it "biased." As for the much more detailed statements in the boy's second interview, Bruck opined that "one should really be concerned about the accuracy" of the second interview—*because* it was the second interview.[97]

The most striking part of Bruck's position is the contention that disclosing sexual abuse is a simple process normally done in one fell swoop. Referring to cases she "had been involved with" in which she thought there *was* sexual abuse—but without providing any actual case names—Bruck described the process of disclosure as follows: "It is sort of like the story just comes out and it is there."[98] Under that view, any child who does not disclose everything in the first interview is apparently suspect. Bruck's involvement in cases, it should be noted, was not as a clinician. She is not in the practice of evaluating children for suspected abuse or treating children who have been sexually abused.

Bruck also made several critical judgments about the boy's mother and stepfather. She discredited the account of the stepfather, who said he witnessed Marzolf with his hands down the boy's pants, on the grounds that he had allegedly changed his story. "I think their reporting two years later just sounded very different to what it was in the police reports five days later," she asserted. "And I think that the way they present the situation now it looks more—it looks cleaner," she continued, "than what was in their original statements."[99] But a direct comparison of the police report on August 25, 1995, and the stepfather's testimony on May 5, 1997, reveals that the two are extremely consistent.[100] Bruck focused her critique on the mother, who had the most interactions with her son about these events between his first and second interviews with the police. Bruck's position was predicated on the argument that the boy was "primed" by his first interview because, as she put it, Tyler was "asked to in fact engage in, you know, circling things and showing things on the doll."[101] There wasn't actually a doll. Sargent Hassim had a diagram, and he asked the boy to circle anywhere he had been touched. The boy circled the place he called his "wiener." Bruck cited recent work by Jane Rawls for the proposition, "when children are interviewed with line drawings, that can increase suggestiveness."[102] But the Rawls study actually differentiated between open-ended questions and directed questions and found the former to be much more accurate. Those *were* the kinds of questions Tyler was asked when he was given the line drawing.[103] After this "priming," Bruck's argument continued, a certain amount of suggestive questioning from the mother could account for Tyler's statements in the second interview. How did Bruck justify the conclusion that the mother was likely to have questioned her son in a way that tainted his testimony forever? The passage in which she justified her conclusion reads exactly as follows:

> I just—I mean, I can't be sure exactly what she said, but I think my—my feeling was that there were just enough hints in this record that she had certain fears and certain premises she was asking Tyler about.[104]

Elsewhere, Bruck is adamant that she represents the voice of science, and that clinicians, who do not conduct controlled laboratory experiments, do not. Yet in rendering her professional opinion that a mother's questions had likely tainted her son forever, Bruck relied on a *feeling*. That feeling did not strike Judge Coleman as plausible, particularly in light of the mother's actual testimony.[105] He ruled that the state had presented "clear and convincing evidence that the statement is reliable," which meant the case could proceed to trial. He based the decision in part on two common-sense ideas that were voiced by the psychologist who testified for the state. First, children are not disposed to believe bad things about someone they love; and by all accounts, Tyler loved "Uncle Jim." Second, people "aren't always willing to come forward with all of the information [about sexual abuse] on the first instance."[106] Disclosures often occur over time; this fact alone should not be taken as suspect. The outcome in this case was sensible enough, but one wonders whether it also means any defendant in New Jersey with the resources and the inclination can subject any child, and the adults with whom have the child has had contact, to a taint hearing. It would appear so.

The taint hearing took a toll on the boy's family. It constituted only a handful of court days but ended up being spread out over almost two years. By the time it was over, the parents did not want to go through an actual trial, having already endured a trial-like hearing that treated them as if they were the defendants.[107] The Glazers moved away and declined to cooperate any further with the prosecution.[108] Accordingly, charges against Marzolf were dropped in December 1997. The taint hearing was a success, at least in terms of the outcome. But the prosecution had won the battle and lost the case. One of the worries among those who argued against taint hearings at the time of the Michaels case was that they would impose needless and discouraging costs on children and their families. The Marzolf case bears out the concern.

The eventual consequences in the Marzolf case were worse. Marzolf moved to Pennsylvania and opened a karate school. In 2002, he was arrested and charged with possession of child pornography and nine counts of sexual abuse of children.[109] He eventually pleaded guilty to single felony counts of child pornography and child molestation.[110] This case demonstrates the real cost of failing to hold someone like Marzolf accountable for the events in New Jersey; the price was paid by children in Pennsylvania.

It is surprisingly difficult to ascertain how often taint hearings have been held in New Jersey and to what end. Cases that are dropped as a result of taint hearings would be most difficult to find, since they do not reach trial and would never produce any appellate documents. There would be an appellate opinion only in cases where children's testimony was admitted after a taint hearing and the defendant was subsequently convicted and then appealed. One case that fits this description involved former school psychologist James Krivacska, who published an article in Underwager's journal in 1991 about the "dangers" of informing children about sexual abuse.[111] Although he did not mention this in his article, Krivacska had been arrested for child sexual abuse in 1986 and was acquitted in a trial that pitted his word against a single child's. His conviction in 1998, stemming from allegations at another school, was based on the testimony of two children, who were subjected to a taint hearing that concluded with the decision that both boys could testify at trial. Krivacska was then convicted by a jury and sentenced to twenty-six years in prison. One might think Ceci and Bruck would be satisfied with this outcome, since there *was* a taint hearing. But

Ceci, Bruck, and eight other psychologists filed a brief at the U.S. Supreme Court in April 2002 in an effort to overturn Krivacska's conviction.[112] They described their research as "uncontroverted within the scientific community" and branded Kathyrn Hall, who testified for the state, as a "self-styled 'expert'" who "propounded junk science."[113] Hall, who has a doctorate in psychology, acknowledged Ceci and Bruck's work, but she did not agree on how it applied to this case. The U.S. Supreme Court declined to hear the case, ending Krivacska's appeals. After a hearing in 2008, the Special Classification Review Board in New Jersey found that Krivacska, who they declined to release on parole, had acknowledged he "created victims and admits to some guilt."[114] Krivacska is still listed as one of the "sponsored cases" by the NCRJ, the organization headed by Michael Snedeker.

Although the controversy over whether to have special procedures for vetting children's testimony remains alive, the danger for children lies as much in the taint *rhetoric* as it does in court holdings about taint hearings.[115] By framing the issue about children's testimony in terms of *taint*, the concepts of gradations and degrees are glossed over with a rhetorical sleight of hand. Children are either tainted, or they are not. And given that defense experts seem to have enough targets in virtually any interview to support a conclusion that a child is tainted, the taint rhetoric often predestines the result. Children do not live in laboratory experiments; they populate the real world, where interviews and other human interactions are always subject to criticism. The important question is whether legitimate concerns about suggestibility are so strong that children should be prohibited from testifying. Though it would seem wise to reserve this argument for the most extreme cases, it has increasingly been applied to everyday child sexual abuse cases, including those with strong corroborative evidence. In no other area of law do we require a test like this before allowing a member of a class to testify. The taint arguments are distinctively anti-child.

The Rouse Case: Contesting Child Abuse Accommodation Syndrome

Another post-Michaels development is the widening attack on child abuse accommodation syndrome (CAAS), a theory put forth by Roland Summit in 1983 about how children disclose abuse and why it often remains secret. The theory was developed through clinical observation and was presented along with some empirical support from published studies.[116] Summit never claimed the theory was diagnostic. Though it is best known for what it predicts about disclosure, the foundation of the theory is that there are preconditions to the occurrence of sexual abuse. In other words, there are reasons inherent to the commission of the act itself that suggest disclosure would be difficult and slow. This was a large point of Summit's conceptualization. Two of the five components in CAAS are preconditions: secrecy and helplessness. They help explain how sexual abuse occurs in the first place and why eventual disclosure does not come quickly and easily. The final three components of the syndrome are (3) entrapment and accommodation, (4) delayed disclosure, and (5) retraction.

Child abuse accommodation syndrome is dismissed wholesale in the witch-hunt narrative. The concept and its author are both seen as contributing causes to the worst injustices of those years. According to the narrative, Summit's conceptualization, which considers retraction as a normal part of the disclosure process, results in a kind of catch-22, where if a child says he was abused, then he should be seen as abused, but if a child denies he was abused, then he is probably in denial and was actually abused. But Summit never made this claim, which conflates denials with retraction. Nevertheless, Lawrence Wright blamed Summit for precisely this kind of catch-22 logic in a blistering editorial in the *New Yorker*. (Wright had to issue a rare retraction later.[117]) The apparent desire to discredit child abuse accommodation syndrome at all costs lives on.

Ceci and Bruck have joined this campaign. In an article called "Unveiling Four Common Misconceptions," they argue that "recent developments in forensic psychology" challenge four misconceptions about children's disclosures. The first is, in their words, that "sexually abused children do not disclose their abuse."[118] After labeling child abuse accommodation syndrome as "the most popular embodiment of this idea," Ceci and Bruck argue that the theory is not well supported by empirical studies. They criticize various studies because participants who reported delayed disclosure were never asked whether they had specifically been asked about abuse earlier. In other words, even though many respondents did not disclose their abuse, this does not mean they would deny it if asked directly. Possibly so. But it hardly provides sufficient evidence to claim it is a *misconception* to say that "sexually abused children do not disclose their abuse." The authors' own meta-study concluded that "only 33% of adults remembered disclosing the abuse in a timely fashion."[119] In other words, more than two-thirds of sexually abused children delay the disclosure of sexual abuse. What Ceci and Bruck label as "Misconception #1" is actually true. A significant majority of sexual abuse victims do not disclose their abuse, and for most others there is a delay between the abuse and telling someone about it.[120]

Nothing in Summit's elaboration of child abuse accommodation syndrome says that denials should be taken as evidence of abuse, although he and his theory are both frequently accused of proposing this kind of circular logic. But Summit's view is more problematic on the matter of recantations. Recantations involve children who have already disclosed something to someone. If considered a normal part of the disclosure process, then almost any child who recants could be seen as doing something that sexually abused children are likely to do. As a result, recantations might not be taken seriously enough. That is, they could automatically be *disbelieved* because there is an expectation that children who have disclosed abuse will also recant at some point in the process. Summit never said it this strongly, and his discussion was specifically about sexual abuse within a family context and in situations where two other conditions were met. But those subtleties are consistently glossed over in the witch-hunt narrative

Ceci and Bruck argue that the studies with the highest reported recantation rates among abused children are methodologically the weakest. One of those studies involve children from the McMartin case, and another involved a substantial subset of children from the practice of Barbara Snow, a therapist in Utah. Their critique, along with London and Shuman, of these studies is well taken.[121] But those are not the only studies on the matter. Ceci and Bruck conclude that studies with stronger methodologies report recantation in less than 10 percent of cases, while there are widespread claims that it happens at least 25 percent of the time.

If recantation is not a normal part of disclosure, does that make it more likely to be accurate? Is it more likely a child who recants an allegation was not actually abused? It would seem so. But it appears some have taken the position that recantations almost always mean the initial disclosure was false, evincing a willingness to disregard corroborative evidence of abuse as well as evidence concerning pressures brought upon the child who recanted. This may seem like a particularly surprising position for Ceci and Bruck, who seem attuned to every possible way in which children's statements about abuse might have been tainted. But in cases where recantations seem to have been produced by family pressure and other forms of coercion, Bruck, acting as an expert witness, has been willing to overlook corroborative evidence of abuse rather than recognize the existence of coercion on behalf of those who become defendants.

These issues are highlighted in the Rouse case, as it is known in legal filings, an interfamilial sexual abuse case involving four defendants (Desmond and Jessie Rouse, and Garfield Feather and Russell Hubbeling) from the Yankton Sioux Reservation in South Dakota. The four were convicted in 1994 of sexually abusing Rebecca, Tiffany, Lacey, and Joanie Rouse, who were all between four and seven at the time.[122] The complainants were all grandchildren of Rosemary Rouse, whose house they were living in along with two of the defendants. The other two defendants—Feather and Hubbeling, their uncles—came to the house to drink beer, and occasionally they stayed over.

The case began when Rebecca Rouse, five, was removed from her grandmother's home in November 1993, after a teacher at her school filed a report of suspected neglect.[123] The girl made statements to her foster mother two months later about sexual abuse by her uncles. The foster mother called child protective services, and arrangements were made for Rebecca to be interviewed the next day by therapist Ellen Kelson. On the basis of Rebecca's statements on January 10, 1993, the other children in the house were quickly removed. Some adamantly denied that there had been any sexual abuse; they were returned. Others made incriminating statements that constituted the basis for the criminal case. The children were all examined by pediatricians, and the results were so striking that they bear recounting in some detail. Moreover, they include statements by the girls themselves that are closest to the events in time and possibly most damning in terms of content.[124]

Dr. Kaplan found signs of recent trauma including a bruise or contusion on the left labia, inside the majora, of 4½-year-old, Joanie Rouse. Pointing to her labia, the girl told Dr. Kaplan, "Uncle Jessie hurt me."[125] Dr. Kaplan found a large bruise on the right labia of 6-year-old, Lacey Rouse.[126] It was an acute injury sustained within the last week. Dr. Kaplan noted a readily open hymen and a midline scar on the anus at the 6:00 o'clock position on Rebecca Rouse, the 5-year-old who made the first accusations in the case. Pointing to her vagina, the girl told Dr. Kaplan that she had a bruise "where my uncle put his private spot."[127] Dr. Kaplan also found contusions on the right inner labia majora and considerable tenderness in 7-year-old Tiffany Rouse. The contusions were evidence of recent trauma. Dr. Randall Alexander, board certified in pediatrics, reviewed the files and confirmed how strongly they indicated sexual abuse. Responding to the defense claims that these injuries might have happened accidentally, Dr. Alexander testified that "it's a pretty rare event" to see a girl with a labial injury from an accidental source.[128] There were three girls with such injuries in this case. None presented any kind of history that included some kind of freak accident.

The prosecution's case was based on the testimony of these children—three of whom were allowed to testify by closed-circuit television after the court found they were afraid of the defendants—and on related medical testimony. The defense focused on events that happened after the initial disclosures. They engaged Ralph Underwager to offer his opinion that:

> children in this case have been subjected to massive and coercive social influence by adults . . . such as to make it highly likely that any statements are so contaminated by adult behaviors as to be unreliable.[129]

It was a clever way of acting as if claims about reliability were not really claims about credibility. Expert witnesses are not supposed to offer judgments on whether to believe a particular witness. This was the criticism of Eileen Treacy's testimony in the Michaels case—that her testimony "essentially" did so. In the Rouse case, the judge limited the scope of Underwager's testimony to avoid statements that would specifically impugn the child witnesses. The limits on his testimony became a major issue on appeal.

A divided three-judge panel in the Eighth Circuit Court of Appeals overturned the verdicts in November 1996. Judge Myron Bright's majority opinion adopted the witch-hunt narrative in literal terms. "With respect to conditions that can influence children's memories," the judge notes, "we are mindful of a historical event of some three hundred years ago," the Salem witch trials. After stating that nineteen adults were put to death as alleged witches, the judge noted: "This case, of course, is not a Salem Witch Trial, but that history must remind us that memory, particularly children's memory, may be falsely induced."[130] Returning to the matter at hand, the judge ruled it was prejudicial error to prohibit Underwager from relating his general testimony about suggestibility to the specific facts of this case. The witch-hunt digression is notable primarily because it flies in the face of the evidence in the case, including spontaneous statements to pediatricians and overwhelming medical evidence of sexual abuse. Chief Judge James B. Loken's dissent points out, bluntly and with detailed documentation, that "the majority takes liberties with the record in attempting to cast doubt on the jury."[131]

The decision would be cited in the APA Monitor as evidence of Ceci and Bruck's effect on the field.[132] But the decision was short-lived. Less than three months later, the decision was vacated by the grant of a motion for rehearing[133]. On rehearing, the three-judge panel issued a new opinion *affirming* the original convictions. Judge Loken was now writing for the majority and Judge Bright was the dissenter. As Loken put it, "It is clear from the record that [Underwager] was intent upon expressing his ultimate opinion that the victims' accusations of sexual abuse were not credible."[134] Loken considered this to be the domain of the jury. While allowing that Underwager might have been given wider latitude to testify about suggestibility issues, the judge concluded it would not have altered the result of a trial with such strong medical evidence and contemporaneous statements.

Two years later, the defendants made a motion for a new trial, arguing that there was new evidence in the form of recantations from all the original child witnesses. The recantations were captured on a videotaped interview conducted by none other than Ralph Underwager, on January 30, 1999. The court held an evidentiary hearing on the matter, and Maggie Bruck appeared for the defense. She summarized the literature on recantations and criticized, for sound and well-taken reasons, two of the studies often relied on by clinicians. Bruck's position, based on a meta-study she coauthored, was that recantation rates are quite low and could *not* be said to be "a natural part of the process," as Summit postulated in child abuse accommodation syndrome.

Bruck went one bold step further. She "did the math" and—relying on the assumption that the five recantations were independent events—testified there was a "one in nine hundred" chance of this many witnesses recanting.[135] The prosecutor called it "mysterious math." Chief Judge Lawrence L. Peirsol, who was generally complimentary to Bruck, told her he was "troubled" with these calculations. "These are not independent events," he said; they are "in a family situation." Bruck eventually backed down and called the math "a logical exercise."[136] She settled for the idea that the odds of at least one child recanting in this case are, given the literature, as big as one in four, or more likely about one in ten.

But even if there is only a 10 percent chance that a sexually abused child will recant a true accusation, isn't there every reason to conclude *under the facts of this case* that the recantations were likely to be in this group? As Judge Piersol noted:

> The children did not recant until they were sent home and were being cared for by the mothers and grandmothers who did not believe the abuse occurred and who made it known to the children that they missed their sons and brothers.[137]

Moreover, there was a telling incident on December 6, 1999, after the motion for a new trial was filed, between Joanie Rouse and a school counselor who knew nothing about the case.[138] The counselor testified that Joanie told her she was afraid for the upcoming Christmas break because her uncles were coming home. When the counselor asked why this was worrisome, Joanie reportedly said because they touched her private parts and would be mad at her for her telling.[139] These "recantations" are also suspect thanks to the earlier involvement of Underwager, who "interviewed" two of these girls in 1996. The tape is under seal, but according to Judge Peirsol, Underwager told the children "he was there to help the children get the defendants out of prison and he talked at length of the prison sentences imposed."[140] Having a stated purpose and actively enlisting the assistance of the children in meeting the purpose is presumably just as inappropriate when it is done by the defense as when it is done by the prosecution. But even though the Rouse defendants have been embraced as the "Yankton Four," nobody writing about this case has criticized Underwager's heavy-handed efforts. Instead, Maggie Bruck and Hollida Wakefield, Underwager's wife, have continued to champion the case, with the support of Michael Snedeker's organization.[141]

This case evokes the grand conflict between different ways of knowing in psychology. If Bruck's way is the only true claim to knowledge, then until there are laboratory experiments about family dynamics and sexual abuse—something that will never occur, given ethical and practical limitations—we will not be able to recognize that pressures exist within a family to recant abuse allegations. Requiring a deliberate blindness to such things because they have not been measured in a controlled experiment seems eerily like adopting the mindset that existed before we "recognized" the sexual abuse of children. The consequences would certainly be quite similar.

More generally, popular writing and academic studies that played a foundational role in the witch-hunt narrative have since been used to discredit children as a class. In *Kennedy v. Louisiana*, the U.S. Supreme Court cited "serious systematic concerns" in child rape cases, particularly the "problem of unreliable, induced, and even imagined child testimony."[142] The court cited Ceci and Freidman's *Cornell Law Review* article stating that "there is strong evidence that children, especially young children, are suggestible to a significant degree."[143] Law professor Samuel Gross and his coauthors wrote about this issue in 2005, appropriately holding the claim of exoneration to cases involving "an official act declaring a defendant not guilty of a crime for which he or she had previously been convicted." Employing this definition, the authors allowed that almost none of the famous child abuse cases from the 1980s and early 1990s qualify as "exonerations." Neverthelesss, relying on Nathan and Snedeker's book, they opined that "there is *no doubt* that most were falsely convicted" (emphasis added).[144] The shortcomings of that assertion have been elaborated elsewhere in this book. But the witch-hunt narrative nevertheless provides the basis for the majority's opinion in *Kennedy* concerning a "special risk of wrongful execution." Yet, there have not been *any* studies that actually document a significant difference between the accuracy of criminal court outcomes in cases involving children and those involving adults. Instead, this widespread belief, cited by the Supreme Court as if it were fact, apparently stems from the saliency of the witch-hunt narrative in "explaining" the day-care sexual abuse cases from the 1980s and early 1990s. What the opinion expresses is a kind of return to the disfavored jury instruction that used to tell jurors to discount children as a class. In its place, the U.S. Supreme Court relied on the stereotype of children as significantly less reliable. There are plenty of arguments for opposing the death penalty in general. But the claim there is a "serious systemic concern" for child rape convictions that does not exist for murder is without a solid factual basis.

Moreover, this argument takes a one-dimensional view of "reliability," focusing on false positives without apparent regard for the problem of false denials. A "gold standard" study on the failure to disclose known abuse involved a population of young children with sexually transmitted diseases that were considered diagnostic of sexual abuse. Only 43 percent disclosed abuse in the first interview.[145] This finding contradicts the claim that children generally disclose in one fell swoop. It also suggests a reason to worry that concerns about "repetitive" interviews may have gone too far, especially in those instances impugning a second interview with a child who did not disclose in the first interview. That is what a majority of the children with sexually transmitted diseases did. The "systemic" error that has been left unrecognized, then, is how the "pro-defense orientation" in the field of psychology results in the failure to inquire about false denials of abuse, about false determination that a case is unsubstantiated, or about acquitting defendants by unduly discounting the word of a child.

The Backlash Against Institutions and Professionals

Beyond the arguments about child suggestibility, the witch-hunt narrative also contained an antigovernment message that attracted a variety of interests, right and left wing. One strand of this argument, expressed by the Eberles as early as 1987, claimed that the child-abuse "industry" was a scheme, created by Congress, that enriched state agencies and related nonprofit institutions, who had a financial interest in "finding" abuse. Accordingly, the Child Abuse Prevention and Treatment Act (CAPTA) became the scapegoat for various complaints about false accusations. Critics routinely refer to the law as the Mondale Act, named for the liberal Minnesota Democrat who introduced the legislation (which was signed into law by President Nixon). Blaming CATPA is far-fetched, to say the least, but this argument nevertheless galvanized conservative interests. It has since engaged father's rights groups that challenge the legitimacy of government regulation of the family. Liberals have also been attracted to aspects of this antigovernment critique, particularly when it focuses on police and prosecutorial abuses. Although this kind of rhetoric was a staple of the witch-hunt narrative, the critique was always much broader than the day-care sexual abuse cases. The agenda, which has not gained sufficient political support to prevail, involves the elimination of mandatory child-abuse reporting and a massive defunding of federal support for child protective services and foster care. One of the three major organizers of the Salem Day of Contrition in 1997 worked closely with conservative Republican Senator Coats from Indiana in an unsuccessful attempt to achieve those goals.

Those institutional goals remain out of reach, but there has also been a powerful attack on child abuse professionals in court. The witch-hunt narrative focused on child interviewers and social workers, who did not necessarily have advanced degrees or specialized training. But those arguments have expanded in recent years to cover child-abuse pediatricians and forensic child interviewers with advanced degrees. One of the first high-profile cases to illustrate this assault on child abuse professionals was the so-called British Nanny case, involving Louise Woodward. Woodward was convicted of murder, but Judge Hiller B. Zobel sentenced her only to time served, apparently moved by the defense claims that rejected the collected wisdom and understanding of child-abuse pediatricians.[146] More recently, some of the same academic psychologists who focused on child suggestibility in the 1990s have also challenged the expertise of child-abuse doctors.[147] A horrific child-murder case from Harrington, Maine, demonstrates the lengths to which advocates of the child-suggestibility framework have gone to reject clinical judgments, even involving battered child syndrome.

Robert Ardolino was charged with beating his nine-year-old son, Matthew, to death in late June 1993. Ardolino was divorced and living with his sons Matthew and David; the latter was about to turn twelve. Matthew Ardolino died of peritonitis, an inflammation of the lining of the bowel. Peritonitis is caused when digestive juices and bacteria from the intestine leak into the abdominal cavity; the result is a massive inflammatory reaction. The cause of his condition was blunt force trauma to the stomach. The blow had to be so hard that it squeezed the jejunum (lower intestine) between the back of the abdominal wall and the spine with enough force to puncture it. A child's heart would then start to race, he might vomit—as Matthew did several times that day—and he would be in severe pain. The treatment, as Dr. Lawrence Ricci testified, is "very simple and straightforward and almost uniformly successful."[148] But left untreated for twenty-four hours, it is inevitably fatal. This is what happened to Matthew. As Dr. Ricci later testified, Matthew would have looked "seriously ill" during much of those twenty-four hours.[149] He vomited bile that evening, yet his father did not seek any medical attention. Matthew died before daybreak.

When David was interviewed, he told the police the same thing his father said: Matthew had fallen out of the tree house. David denied that his father had harmed Matthew in any way. Given the surrounding circumstances, David's statements were not credible. First, there were witnesses who heard Robert Ardolino berating Matthew from a distance when they went out clamming that Saturday morning. This indicates there was more to the story than David was saying. Second, Matthew's body was covered in bruises of different ages—bruises in places where children are rarely injured once, let alone multiple times. This made the blanket denial of any physical abuse highly suspect. Third, the internal injury to Matthew's bowel was not consistent with falling out of a tree.[150] It also turns out the clothes he wore that day were not consistent with this story.[151]

Dr. Ricci, a pediatric child-abuse specialist, eventually reviewed the medical records and concurred that this was a classic case of battered-child syndrome. One reason for the conclusion was that there were "multiple injuries that are unexplained by the history, on multiple planes of the body in assaultive, rather than accident location, of multiple ages." Specifically, there were truncal injuries "in a particular location consistent with punches along the flank, lower lateral back, and abdomen region" and "multiple punctuate bruises on the chest and abdomen such as from poking." Matthew also had bruises about the arms "in possible self-defense location." Another reason factoring into Dr. Ricci's equation was a "history of delay in seeking treatment" and then providing a history that is inconsistent with the extent and severity of the injuries.[152]

But the medical evidence alone would not support charges against Ardolino. Accordingly, the police requested another interview with David in January 1994. They interviewed him for more than three hours, making it clear they did not consider his answers about Matthew falling out of the tree to be credible. David stuck by the story and insisted that his father never did anything abusive to

Matthew or to him. It should be kept in mind that Ardolino was still free at this point, although David had been removed from his custody. Six months later, the state police were contacted by David's foster mother and told that David wanted to tell the real story.

David then gave a detailed statement on July 14, 1994, about what happened on the fateful Saturday. He reported that in the morning, Robert Ardolino was unhappy with how Matthew had made a milkshake, so he kicked him in the stomach. When they went clamming after breakfast, his father was upset at Matthew and threw him against a boat, injuring the boy's back. Matthew threw up that afternoon while hanging up laundry. He kept reverting to the fetal position—a natural response to the pain of peritonitis—and his father got angry about that as well. Robert Ardolino then went out to sell some clams, and while he was gone there was a phone call in which someone asked for Matthew and hung up when David asked who was calling. David said his father was enraged when he was told about this because he thought Matthew had called child protective services. He ordered David to get his baseball bat from the shed. When asked to describe what his father did with the bat, this is what David said:

DAVID: It was like a poking motion at his stomach.
QUESTION: Did he hit him?
DAVID: Yes.
QUESTION: Can you give us an estimate of how many times?
DAVID: No. It was a lot.[153]

David testified that "it went on for a while." Then his brother "threw up green throw-up and dad got mad at him for throwing up."[154] Within about six hours, Matthew was dead.

The criminal trial included David's testimony, but the emphasis was on the medical evidence. There were lengthy arguments about whether photos of the bruises would be so inflammatory they would prejudice the jury. Some photos were kept out on that basis. But the jury received detailed descriptions of the range and types of bruises on Matthew's body. And they heard from several medical experts. Ardolino was convicted of "depraved indifference" murder.

As with the Marzolf case in New Jersey, where there was an adult eyewitness, there would seem to be no place for child-suggestibility claims in the Ardolino case, with its extensive medical evidence of physical abuse. If anything, the case seems to speak volumes about the power of fear, secrecy, and denial. Those influences were strong enough that David was steadfast in his denials, even in the face of authority figures who cajoled him and expressed outright disbelief during the interview of January 7, 1994.

Robert Rosenthal represented Ardolino in federal court, where he challenged his state conviction. Rosenthal engaged Maggie Bruck as an expert, and she provided the opinion that the first interview with David, immediately after his brother died, was the most reliable one.[155] He should never have been interviewed again, she concluded—certainly not, according to Bruck, after having "contact only with adults who believed that his statements that Mr. Ardolino had not beaten Matthew were false."[156] Bruck saved her outrage for the police interviewers who pushed David in January. This was apparently the only possible abuse she detected in the case. One might be particularly skeptical of Bruck's position since it was raised on behalf of Robert Ardolino, the one person who stood to lose the most if David's story aligned with the physical evidence. In this sense, the case also threatened to provide a powerful example of how a child might *falsely deny* there was any abuse even in the face of extremely aggressive questioning.

The remarkable blind spot in Bruck's position is how it failed to apply her vast knowledge and concern about *coercion* to the most likely and powerful source in the case: the man who used a baseball bat to make his points. In Bruck's view, the interview of July 14, 1994, was completely tainted because in the preceding months David had had contact only with adults who believed Ardolino was guilty. Bruck never explains why this is so objectionable, while an interview conducted immediately after years under the control of the defendant doesn't rate any similar concern—even when the allegation, backed up with medical evidence, is that the defendant slowly beat his brother to death. Apparently, even a witness to such horror is suspect in Bruck's view if he does not disclose the abuse immediately, on the first interview, and all in one piece.

There is, of course, a hidden value choice in the position—one that deems the coercive effects of the police interview as a far greater concern than the coercive effects of living with Robert Ardolino for years. In that respect, Bruck's position is *de facto* pro-defense. This is the only explanation that makes this position consistent with the Rouse case, where Bruck readily accepted recantations that occurred *only after the children moved back into a residence where the adults did not believe their original claims*—the mirror image of the reason she used to reject David Ardolino's testimony. So Bruck does not see the Rouse adults as tainting the recantations in that case, yet she sees David's foster mother as tainting his testimony, which was, in effect, a recantation of his earlier denials. These positions are logically incompatible, except to the extent they both favor defendants. This "pro-defense orientation" is precisely how Ceci described the design of his research studies when testifying in the Foeller case in Michigan.[157] Why so many psychologists have aligned themselves with the defense, to the point of demonstrating and even admitting bias in that direction, is a puzzle for another time. What matters for this book is that these politics exist and work to diminish the credibility, and ultimately the safety, of children.

The more radical aspect of Bruck's position is the assault on battered child syndrome. Rosenthal argued in post-conviction proceedings that Ardolino's original lawyer should have challenged the admissibility of the syndrome itself. Bruck's affidavit actually criticized the medical examiner for not adequately considering "fights with neighbors," "bicycle accidents," and the "active life of a 9-year-old boy" before reaching the conclusion that Matthew had been beaten to death.[158] Bruck, a developmental psychologist without medical training, suggested the medical examiner jumped to the conclusion that it was battered child syndrome. But Dr. Ricci, the pediatric child-abuse expert who later reviewed all of the medical evidence, testified that he knew about all of the information Bruck mentioned, that he took it all into account in reviewing the case, and that it did not change his conclusion of a clear-cut case of battered child syndrome.[159]

Bruck's dispute is not so much about pediatrics as it is about forms of knowledge in psychology. Even though battered child syndrome is much more concrete than syndromes based on psychological factors alone, it involves a clinical judgment about patterns of injuries. Bruck is among a group of academic psychologists who minimize the value of clinical judgments. Indeed, she and a few others have gone to great lengths to attack such clinical judgments. Bruck filed an affidavit in support of a motion to disqualify Constance Dalenberg in a case in California, even though Dalenberg has a doctorate in clinical psychology and heads a research institute that specializes in child abuse research. Dalenberg also teaches courses in the treatment of child abuse victims and perpetrators, she spends one day a week in a child abuse clinic, and she teaches graduate-level statistics. But in a case where she declined to view a child's statements as the product of suggestion, Bruck and five others, among them the writer Carol Tavris, opined that Dalenberg's views were "unfounded, unscientific, unreliable, and unprofessional."[160]

Bruck's position in these cases is not based on science alone. The position that challenges the ability of child-abuse specialists to diagnose battered-child syndrome is part of a broader attack on child-abuse professionals. Arguments against them are a foundational element of the witch-hunt narrative. When the Eberles first wrote *The Politics of Child Abuse* in 1986, they claimed that the underlying problem was CAPTA, the Child Abuse Prevention and Training Act. Eleven years later, Richard Gardner, a frequent defense expert in these cases, gave a fiery speech at the Salem Day of Contrition, where he argued "a whole industry has been spawned" and that "hysteria is being fueled primarily by funding from the federal government under the Child Abuse Prevention and Treatment Act."[161] This position is now a mainstay of father's rights groups and right-wing activists who lobby against child protective service agencies as a violation of family privacy. Painting in broad pejorative strokes, the witch-hunt narrative refers to those who investigate, treat, or prosecute child abuse as "the child-abuse industry." Curiously, the professionals who consistently appear on the other side are rarely, if ever, called an industry, and their financial rewards are never scrutinized. In the witch-hunt narrative there is a "child abuse industry" but not a "child-abuse *defense* industry."

Conclusion

The witch-hunt narrative continues to have a significant impact on social and legal responses to child sexual abuse in America. Activists with varied agendas continue to use the imagery of Salem to promote their causes. The media generally view these claims with utter credulity. This has resulted in a surprising amount of positive press for child molesters, from Frank Fuster to Charles Bighead. The judiciary has not fallen for these stories as readily as the media, but judges like John T. Noonan in the Bighead case and Myron Bright in the Rouse case demonstrate that the judiciary is not immune to this rhetoric.

There have also been developments to the contrary. The cases against the Catholic Church demonstrate a willingness to confront sexual abuse in places where it would have been unimaginable in the not-too-distant past. Those developments are admirable, but their application is limited. They do not necessarily suggest anything about allegations made by children; moreover, the impetus for recognizing and addressing those cases was a proven cover-up. There is also evidence of overreaction to child sexual abuse since the end of the McMartin case. The widespread implementation of Megan's Law demonstrates how our society has overreacted to sex offenders after their release from prison. But the "lesson" from that phenomenon has been applied too broadly, leading some to characterize our social response to sex offenders in general by the way we treat the very small percentage of offenders who get imprisoned. Leon suggests that the movie *The Woodsman* is indicative of a dominant discourse that now sees sex offenders as monsters. But there was a more popular movie during the same era, *Capturing the Friedmans,* which retold a child molestation case from the 1980s through the lens of the witch-hunt narrative, notwithstanding all the facts to the contrary. Just as supporters of Megan's Law take too much comfort in symbolic acts that do little to address sex offenders at large, those who focus on Megan's Law to characterize social response to child molesters as "highly punitive" similarly miss the point. The witch-hunt narrative directs our attention away from the reality of child sexual abuse, which remains widespread, underreported, and generally punished quite leniently. But that is an uncomfortable reality. It is easier just to favor—or disdain—policies like Megan's law.

In the field of psychology, Ceci and Bruck continue to be viewed by many as the leading experts on "child suggestibility." Their work is now a primary source on child suggestibility in psychology textbooks. But there have also been some prominent critics of the general direction of the field, among them Professor Tom Lyon, who has pointed out the biases of the "new wave" in child-suggestibility research.[162] These disagreements among academics are not generally reflected in media stories about the subject, but they are more apparent in scholarly journals. Less apparent, except to the closest observers, are three developments discussed in this chapter. First, there has been an expansive effort to employ child-suggestibility concepts to keep children from testifying in court in a broad range of cases. Those who originally argued that suggestibility claims belonged only in cases with extremely coercive interviewing were now applying the same arguments to cases with strong corroborative evidence of abuse and far less in the way of coercive or repetitive interviews than anything that was claimed in the Michaels case.

Second, there has also been a surprising attack on the conventional wisdom—conventional, at least, to those in the clinical world—that sexual abuse disclosures are often delayed and then disclosed in bits and pieces. Those attacks threaten to undermine the vast majority of victims of sexual abuse, who delay disclosure and are therefore considered suspect. Ceci and Bruck's own meta-study found that two-thirds of sexual abuse victims delay reporting the fact, but Bruck and others have demonstrated a willingness to impugn children who do not report fully and immediately.

Finally, there has been a surprising effort to undermine the professionals who conduct the front-line work in this area, such as pediatricians who operate child-abuse clinics and psychologists who direct forensic interviewing programs at child advocacy centers. The disdain that Judge Noonan registered for Tasha Boychuk in the Bighead case reflects this disturbing trend. So does Maggie Bruck's willingness to second-guess the medical examiner who concluded that Matthew Ardolino had been beaten to death. These developments are a function of a witch-hunt narrative that sees these professionals as an "industry" and that threatens to undermine the front-line workers and institutions responding to the sexual abuse of children in the United States.

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

The effort that I expended on this book pales in comparison to the debts that I incurred along the way. So many people helped on this project in so many ways that a brief acknowledgment cannot possibly convey the full extent of their contribution or my gratitude. First and foremost are the extraordinary undergraduate students at Brown University. This book could not have been researched so extensively without the incredible work of students from almost a generation of the university. More than eighty of them worked on this project in one way or another. Some worked on a single case for as long as two years. Others took on the challenge of obtaining information from court clerks while in hometowns across the country. They came back to campus with docket sheets, transcripts, and stories about the surprising challenges of this kind of original trial court research. Or they came back with nothing but determination to crack the puzzle next time they were home.

With enduring gratitude to all of the Brown undergraduates who helped give "extreme research" its name, in simple alphabetical order: Brian Agboh, Tamiz Ahmed, Dena Aufseer, Evelyn Avila, Zoe Billinkoff, Sarah Blum-Smith, Nicole Boucher, Caroline Burnett, Sarah Coburn, Dara Cohen, Dave Cooker, Stephanie Czech, Julia Dahlin, Brandi Davis, Brittany Davis, Joe Davis, Marta DiSilva, Javier Dominguez, Jessica Dubin, Brett Eggleston, Cara Farber, Shae Fitzpatrick, Amanda Freedman, Emily Geldwert, Erica Goldschmidt, Debra Greenspan, Hillary Gross, Chris Hartman, Elia Herman, Kate Herts, Beth Hollander, Morriah Horani, Jennifer Hutchinson, Ivalya Ivanova, Nicole Janisiewicz, Carey Jaros, Darren Jorgenson, Katherine Kosub, Lauren Kupersmith, Damian Lara, Liz Leidel, Vanessa Lipschitz, Jesse Maniff, Andrea Matthews, Chelsea McCarron, David Mervis, Jocabel Michel, Alec O'Neill, Sarah Olverson, Ben Petrosky, Katya Potkin, Felisa Preskill, Adam Reich, Zachary Reiss-Davis, Margaret Rose, Elizabeth Root, Sarah Rubin, Jacquelyn Rudis, Dan Sack, Rebecca Santoro, Catherine Schaper, Aaron Scherzer, Katie Schlicter, Danny

Schneider, Mark Scott, Amy Senia, Felica Sexsmith, Jesse Shapiro, Reece Smith, Savannah Smith, Claudia Solari, Veena Srinivasa, Katherine Stewart, Nicole Stock, Jen Swearingen, Ilana Streit, Eric Tucker, Will Tucker, Emily Walsh, and Stacy Yen.

Ten Brown undergraduates did senior theses that contributed in various ways to this book. Thank you to each of you for your hard work and your insights: Karen Tumlin, Sasha Grief, Rebecca Santoro, Miranda Galindo, Margaret Merrifield, Sarah Squire, Margaret Rose, Dara Cohen, Julie Gottlieb, and Will Tucker.

There are several other Brown students who inspired me and supported me along this journey. Special thanks to Allison Smith-Estelle, Jennifer Sigall, Meg McGrath, Jake Gersen, Karen Tumlin, Beatriz Lorenzo, and Rebecca Bradburd.

One Brown undergraduate has become a long-time collaborator. Arthi Krishnaswami, who is credited on the cover for the illustrations: thank you for helping me think and see more clearly. You are an ideal colleague and it made a world of difference to this book.

The Taubman Center for Public Policy and American Institutions and the Political Science Department at Brown have long supported my work and the spirit of interdisciplinary studies. I am particularly indebted to Jim Morone for his interest and encouragement of this book, whether or not he necessarily agreed with all of the arguments. Mark Blyth, Roger Cobb, Beverly Haviland, Sharon Krause, and Rose McDermott have also gone out of their way to be encouraging along the way. I am always thankful for the efforts of Patti Gardner at the Department of Political Science and Isabel Costa and Jack Combs at the Taubman Center for assisting in so many of the details of this project.

Significant costs were incurred in this project, particularly to acquire documents, some of which had to be transcribed by court reporters. I am grateful to a host of sources for providing financial assistance for this work: the Taubamn Center at Brown University, the John and Happy White Internship program, the Undergraduate Teaching and Research Assistants (UTRA) program, the Dean of the Faculty, the Office of the Provost, the Department of Political Science, the Goldschmidt Book Fund, and a stipend from the Carnegie Foundation. The most significant single source of financial support for this research was Earl and June Cheit, my parents, without whom this book would not have been possible. Thanks, Mom and Dad, for believing in this project.

The Brown Library has helped me in countless ways over the years, handling requests for obscure small-town newspapers on microfiche, for assistance with state court libraries, and other unusual requests with aplomb. Thank you to Beth Beretta, Beth Coogan, Michael Jackson, and Anne Nolan.

Thank you to everyone who talked with me off the record. Those conversations were most useful in helping to locate documents. There were also two

formal interviews that are cited directly in the text. One was with Joseph Braga, who helped clear up a mystery about a videotape aired on a San Francisco television station and provided information about various (unfounded) ethics complaints. The other was with Maggie Bruck, who generously agreed to answer a variety of questions about issues in this book. Thank you to both of you for agreeing to be interviewed. (These interviews were conducted with an approved protocol from the IRB at Brown University.)

I had the good fortune to present pieces of this research at various venues, including Harvard Medical School, the University of Oregon, Duke University, the University of Auckland, the Roger Williams University School of Law, the New England School of Law, University of Nevada Las Vegas William S. Boyd School of Law, the University of New Hampshire, and various meetings of the Law and Society Association. I also presented versions of this work at several venues at Brown University, including the Warren Alpert Medical School and the Lipsitt-Duchin Lectures. Thank you to the audiences at those venues. Thanks also to the students in my Children and Public Policy class and in a graduate seminar on the Politics of Child Abuse with Kate Murphy, Miranda Turner, Darren Jorgensen, and Eric Tucker.

Thanks to Dave McBride at Oxford University Press for accepting this book and for working tirelessly through its endless challenges and complexities. Thanks also to Liz Hasse and Mark Fowler for their sage counsel. I am also extremely grateful to Thomas Finnegan for his expert copy editing.

I owe an enormous debt to those who read the entire manuscript, sometimes more than once, with great care. Heartfelt thanks to Elizabeth Mertz, Jennifer Freyd, Jim Morone, Wendy Murphy, Ken Pope, Jennifer Hoult, Andrea Matthews, Nancy Feinstein, Hayley Goldbach, Jeffrey Masson, Morriah Horani, Will Tucker, Eric Tucker, Peter Loss, Dave Cheit, and Kathleen Odean. I greatly appreciate all of your efforts, even if I did not always take your suggestions. Any remaining errors, of course, are mine. Thank you also to the reviewers at Oxford University Press who made useful suggestions for improving the book.

This book is also a product of Rhode Island, a wonderful and quirky state that serendipitously provided me with some remarkable resources. The earliest ideas in this book were formed at the Trauma Breakfasts led by Paul Block. Two of the most important contributors to this book were professionals in Rhode Island. First, I am forever grateful to Dr. Carole Jenny, a nationally recognized expert in pediatric child abuse, who graced our presence in Providence for almost the entire duration of this book. Carole answered questions, reviewed testimony, and answered more questions with patience and good humor. She also advised an undergraduate thesis that examined medical testimony in several cases in this book, and then read and reread key sections of this manuscript. Dr. Tom Roesler, who I met through Carole, has also provided valuable insight and assistance to this project. Thanks very much to both of you.

Peter Loss, director of the Sex Offender Treatment Program at the Rhode Island Department of Corrections, also saw this book through from start to finish. He answered endless questions and provided me with an extraordinary opportunity for a kind of continuing weekly education about sex offenders for the last fourteen years. Thanks, Pete, for your friendship and your careful read of countless drafts. The book is much better with the benefit of your lens. Thanks also to Professor Carl Bogus of the Roger Williams University School of Law for supporting this project and organizing a fabulous conference on children as witnesses. You are another Rhode Island treasure.

Finally, I express my lasting gratitude to Kathleen Odean, who continued to believe in this project long after it had consumed an unreasonable number of years. Thanks for your support, dear, and for providing such an astute reading of the almost-final version. I promise not to do another project like this one. Dave Cheit also helped at every stage of this project. Dave, thank you for your level-headed advice and your willingness to engage this project more times than I should have asked. You are a great lawyer and a wonderful brother. Finally, I am extremely grateful to W.F.G. for your boundless support and assistance. You strengthened this book in so many important ways. I hope that it lives up to your high standards and ideals.

BIBLIOGRAPHIC NOTES

Most of the research for this book was case-based, and most of the sources cited in the book are primary documents from criminal cases. The challenges of this research are described in detail in an article that is mentioned in the Preface. The notes below elaborate on the primary source materials for the three chapter-length case studies.

State v. Buckey (Chapter Two)

The transcript of the preliminary hearing and the transcript of both criminal trials in *State v. Buckey* are housed at the Los Angeles County Hall of Records under docket number A750900. There is no official index to the thirty-two boxes that I identified and inventoried. The Preliminary Hearing covered 489 (thin) volumes of testimony. Some of those volumes are either misplaced or missing entirely; specifically, vols. 74–146, 181–253, and 323–445 are not located in the boxes that are filed together with this case. The trial covered 456 volumes. Volumes 90–146, much of the testimony between July and September 1987, are either misplaced or missing entirely. Fortunately, I was able to locate some of these volumes elsewhere. The retrial of Ray Buckey covered forty-nine volumes; and all are included in the boxes at the Hall of Records. There was a Protective Order in the case to protect the children's names and to protect the CII videotapes, but the trial transcript uses children's initials throughout and can be reproduced without breaching confidentiality of identities. No videotapes are included in the materials at the Hall of Records. The Superior Court may still be in possession of videotapes of the trial testimony, but I was not able to obtain a definitive answer to that question.

The most significant sources for the analysis in Chapter Two were documents generated *before* any charges were filed in the case. Through independent research I located multiple sources of documents from the investigation. I amassed seventeen boxes of materials, including several devoted to media coverage. The most significant documents I obtained were the Manhattan Beach Police Department Call Log in response to the letter sent to the community, the Information Form and Medical Report for children referred to CII and various internal CII memos, the District Attorney's Investigator Notebooks, and the grand jury transcripts. I also obtained copies of the Manns-Stevens tapes, along with competing transcriptions of the tapes. I also located medical records for numerous children, including photographic slides for one of the girls involved in both trials. Finally, I obtained copies of videotaped interviews with fifteen assorted children at CII. I believe I am the first researcher to locate and view any of these tapes. I did not get to select the specific interviews, but they included a range of dates, among them five from November and early December 1983. (These tapes are low-quality and would need to be enhanced in order to be analyzed in greater detail. They also need to be pixilated to mask the children's faces.) Further, I obtained transcriptions of fifty-three CII interviews from Professor Maggie Bruck, who sent them in response to requests to view the archives described in Nathan and Snedeker's *Satan's Silence.*

State v. Michaels (Chapter Five)

The trial transcript in the Michaels case is sealed by order of the trial judge. The *Village Voice* challenged the seal in a case that was decided by the New Jersey Supreme Court two years after Debbie Nathan wrote about the case in the *Village Voice.* See *In re VV Publishing Corp.*, 120 N.J. 508; 577 A.2d 412; 1990 N.J. LEXIS 82 (1990). The court agreed that the petitioners were entitled to a redacted version of the transcript, so long as they paid for the cost of redacting. Relying on the reasoning in that case, I obtained access to the trial transcript and many related documents by negotiating an agreement with the state to provide unfettered access to the prosecutor's files in exchange for assurances that the children's identities would never be revealed. (This assurance was guaranteed by a research protocol approved by the Institutional Review Board at Brown University.) The trial transcript was complete, but there was no record of the pre-trial taint hearing discussed in the text. The prosecutor's files contained all of the motions and correspondence concerning the amicus brief, including the letter to peer-reviewed journals that was dismissive of Professor Gail Goodman's work. It also contained extensive documentation used to cross-examine Ralph Underwager. Tape recordings of interviews with children were also contained in these files. The audio quality is very poor, and I relied largely on transcriptions. Transcriptions of some DFYS interviews are contained in a three-volume appendix to the defendant's appeal; many have handwritten corrections and other notations presumably written by the defense. Transcriptions of Eileen Treacy's evaluative interviews, prepared at the Essex County District Attorney's Office, were also in these files. I was unable to locate the early videotape in the case that is discussed in the text. I did obtain various useful documents from the discovery phase of *Michaels v. New Jersey,* an unsuccessful attempt by Michaels to obtain damages from various parties.

State v. Fuster (Chapter Six)

The trial transcript in the Fuster case is available for public inspection through the Dade County Archive. Files from Fuster's earlier criminal case can be viewed at the Dade County Superior Court. I obtained a copy of the complete transcript and, through independent research, located a host of ancillary court documents, including affidavits and depositions from the criminal case. I also obtained records from Frank Fuster's parole violation hearing in August 1985 and from his aggravated manslaughter case in New York. Finally, I viewed (but was unable to obtain copies of) the videotapes of all of the interviews in the case. As described in the text, I had one of the original videotapes (still in state storage) transcribed by a court reporter to verify its contents. There is a Protective Order in the case aimed at protecting the children's names and the videotapes of their interviews (although several families identified themselves to the media and, surprisingly, a federal magistrate used virtually all of the names in a decision upholding the verdict). I also obtained depositions and related documents from several civil cases, including *[Mayor] v. Fuster-Escalano* (Case No. 84–42560, Dade County) and *N.G v. Arvida Corp.* (Case No. 91–35636, Dade County).

NOTES

Preface

1. Freeh Sporkin & Sullivan, Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding Actions of The Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky (July 12, 2012). Commonly known as the Freeh Report. Available at http://progress.psu.edu/the-freeh-report
2. Suzanne Sgroi, "A National Needs Assessment for Protecting Child Victims of Sexual Assault," Introduction to Anne Wolbert Burgess, et. al., *Sexual Assault of Children and Adolescents* (Lexington Books, 1978).
3. *State v. Dunn,* 726 A.2d 1142 (R.I. 1999).
4. Many of the cases listed on the dedication page were not contained in the index of the book. Many of those that were listed in the index were mentioned in the text in a single sentence. Only a few cases were discussed in any detail with footnotes from original sources.
5. Ross E. Cheit, "The Legend of Robert Halsey," *Journal of Child Sexual Abuse* (2001), 9(3/4): 37–52.
6. Stephen J. Gould [Letter to the editor], *New Yorker* (December 26, 1994).
7. Mike Stanton, "Bearing Witness," *Providence Journal* (May 4–6, 1995).
8. Ross E. Cheit, "The Elusive Record: On the Difficulties in Researching High-Profile Child Sexual Abuse Cases from the 1980s," *Justice System Journal* (2007), 28(1): 79–97.
9. William Blackstone, *Commentaries,* Volume 4, On Public Wrongs, 358. ("Better that ten guilty persons escape than that one innocent suffer"). Quoted in Alexander Volokh, "*n* Guilty Men," *University of Pennsylvania Law Review* (1997) 146, 173.
10. Professor Fred Schauer's brilliant article explains the logic of this and other outcomes that turn on the standard of proof. "Slightly Guilty," *University of Chicago Legal Forum,* 1993, 83–100.

Chapter One

1. An example of the KABC coverage in February 1984 can be viewed at http://youtu.be/e4d2cIoZwBs.
2. Michelle Green, "The McMartins: The 'Model Family' Down the Block That Ran California's Nightmare Nursery," *People* (May 21, 1984).
3. Stan Katz, "Stop the Witch Hunts for Child Molesters,"*New York Times* (June 20, 1984).
4. David Shaw, "Where Was Media Skepticism?"*Los Angeles Times* (January 19, 1990).
5. A. S. Ross, "Satanism or Mass Hysteria?"*San Francisco Examiner* (September 28, 1986) A8.
6. The rest of the thirteen cases on the map of "sensational cases across the county" involved child sexual-abuse charges, but not in a day-care setting.
7. Her most significant article that year was about the Kelly Michaels case, the subject of Chapter Five.

8. Mary A. Fischer, "Flip-Flop," *Los Angeles Magazine* (December 1988), 33(12): 85–94.
9. Mary Pride, *The Child Abuse Industry* (Crossway Books, 1986), 31.
10. Pride is editor of *Practical Homeschooling Magazine* and the website *Homeschool World* http://www.home-school.com.
11. The witch-hunt narrative has generally overlooked questions about the Eberles' background; or it has been claimed that the Eberles' previous publications were the kind of "soft porn" often associated with the advertising section in free weekly newspapers. That may be true of the *L.A. Star*, a more recent publication of the Eberles, but it is decidedly not true of their earlier publication, called *Finger*. In her book about the Michaels trial, Lisa Manshel described how prosecutor Glenn Goldberg confronted Dr. Jonas Rappeport with this evidence after Rappeport recommended *The Politics of Child Abuse* (Lyle Stuart, 1986), another book by the Eberles (Manshel, 284–285). This is Manshel's description of the publication, as illustrated at trial: "On the inside pages were photographs of children being raped, a child standing over an adult and urinating into the adult's mouth, written pieces detailing sexual experiences with young children . . ." (285). I have confirmed this information independently, obtaining an inventory of slides from *Finger* magazine that begins with a two-page spread called "Baby Fucking." See also Maria Laurina, "Paul and Shirley Eberle: A Strange Pair of Experts," *Ms.* (December 1988). Confronted with this issue on *Larry King Live* in 1988, Paul Eberle did not distance himself from the content of his former publication; rather he scolded lawyer Gregory Mooney for bringing it up, as if this was an unfair attack on their character. But the issue—whether the Eberles had a demonstrated acceptance of the idea of sexual contact between adults and children—goes directly to their credibility as reporters of these cases. The Eberles were never convicted of any crime in connection with publication of *Finger* magazine, although it should be noted that there was not a specific prohibition against child pornography in the United States until passage of the Protection of Children Against Sexual Exploitation Act of 1977 (Public Law 95–225, codified in Title 18, Chapter 110, Section 2251 of the U.S. Code). Before then, prosecution was possible only through general obscenity laws, which were notoriously vague and difficult to enforce. After passage of the 1977 law, "commercially produced magazines such as Lollitots, Baby Love and Nudist Moppets—in which children as young as 3 years old were shown performing sex acts with adults—have virtually vanished from adult bookstore shelves." Carol McGraw, "Child Smut Business Going Underground," *Los Angeles Times* (September 16, 1985), 3.
12. There is a second relevant book, published in 2001 by the University Press of America, called *The Anatomy of the McMartin Child Molestation Case*. But the book focuses on jury issues, not on issues of fact. The authors are quite clear about their allegiance; the book is dedicated to Virginia McMartin. The coauthors, including high-profile jury consultant Jo-Ellan Dimitrius, worked for the defense in the McMartin case.
13. David Shaw, "Where Was Media Skepticism?" *Los Angeles Times* (January 19, 1990).
14. Debbie Nathan and Michael Snedeker, *Satan's Silence: Ritual Abuse and the Making of a Modern American Witch Hunt* (Basic Books, 1995).
15. Steven Mintz, *Huck's Raft: A History of American Childhood* (Harvard University Press, 2004), ch. 5, "Parental Panics and the Reshaping of Childhood." He relies entirely on Nathan and Snedeker's chapter and the Eberles' book for his account of McMartin.
16. Rabinowitz was not the first to write about Kelly Michaels through the witch-hunt frame. Nathan did so in August 1988, long before Rabinowitz. But the Rabinowitz article was longer, it had more materials from the case, and it was better-timed.
17. Amy Driscoll, "State Won't Retry Officer in Abuse Case," *Miami Herald* (November 21, 1998).
18. The first program, "The Child Terror" (1998), focused on three cases from Dade County: Frank Fuster, Grant Snowden, and Bobby Finje. The second program, "Did Daddy Do It?" (2002), was devoted entirely to the Fuster case. That case is the subject of Chapter Six in this book.
19. Lawrence Wright, "Remembering Satan, Part II," *New Yorker* (May 24, 1993).
20. Ceci and Bruck, "Suggestibility of the Child Witness: A Historical Review and Syntheses," *Psychological Bulletin* (1993), 113(3): 403–439.

21. The movie opens with the statement "This story happened in America in our time." The producer and director presented the work as fully documented at a press conference promoting the movie. A statement at the end of movie read "Court transcripts and actual videotapes were among the sources used in telling the story."
22. A review of the movie in their newsletter, which had a circulation of approximately five hundred, attracted the attention of the Manns' "litigation counsel," as they identified themselves in a letter threatening the organization and its directors with litigation for libel and other claims. The organization issued a correction of several statements. A second letter rejected these corrections as insufficient and again threatened litigation if more changes were not forthcoming. I could find no record of any additional charges or any actual litigation over this matter. Correspondence from Lavely & Singer to Executive Director, Children's Civil Rights Fund, April 21, 1995. A follow-up letter on May 2, also from Lavely & Singer to multiple parties (seven board directors and fifteen advisory board members of Believe the Children). More significantly, this was an obscure fight. By 1995, there was no serious credence given to those who might defend even some aspect of the prosecution in the McMartin case.
23. Ellen Willis, "The Media and McMartin," *Village Voice* (May 30, 1995) 40(22): 8.
24. Jim Okerblom and Mark Sauer, "Was Akiki Inquiry Rush to Judgment?" *Union-Tribune* (November 2, 1993).
25. Martin Gardner, "The Tragedies of False Memories," *Skeptical Inquirer* (Fall 1994).
26. Thomas Sowell, "Legal Lynchings," *Forbes* (January 26, 1998).
27. Trevor Armbrister, "Justice Gone Crazy,"*Reader's Digest* (January 1994).
28. Andrew Schneider and Mike Barber, "The Power to Harm," five-part series in the *Seattle Post-Intelligencer* (February 23–27, 1998). Defense lawyer Kathyrn Lyon also wrote a book about these cases, called *Witchhunt: A True Story of Social Hysteria and Abused Justice* (Avon, 1998).
29. Home page, Witch-Hunt Information Center. Old MIT URL, circa 1993–2000.
30. I have a copy of the list, but the various sites that used to reprint it are all apparently gone right now. Nathan's list is a major source for the list compiled at this site: http://www.solresearch.org/~SOLR/rprt/bkgrd/FalsAcCases.htm#Sct_1_explain. The list is divided into two pieces, both are linked, but both of the links are dead (as of August 24, 2012).
31. Frederick Crews, Response to Letters to Editor, *New York Review of Books* (January 12, 1995), 42–48.
32. All messages came addressed "Sender: Is there a child sex abuse witchhunt?" <WITCHHNT@MITVMA.MIT.EDU>.
33. Local coverage painted a more favorable view of the prosecution. See e.g., UNC-TV, *North Carolina Now* (November 23, 1997, critiquing the PBS program "Innocence Lost").
34. Post to witch-hunt list: "Re: day care cases" from Ralph Underwager (April 23, 1995). The message is signed by his wife, Hollida Wakefield.
35. Stephen Maher, "The Bizarre World of 'WITCHHUNT'," *Wenatchee World* (October 17, 1999).
36. www.religioustolerance.org/ra_case.htm (accessed March 25, 2012).
37. Philip Jenkins, *Moral Panic: Changing Conceptions of the Child Molester in Modern America* (Yale University Press, 1998), 278, 21.

Chapter Two

1. The first book about the case, *Abuse of Innocence: The McMartin Preschool Trial (Prometheus Books, 1993)*, was written by Paul and Shirley Eberle, who reportedly attended much more of the trial than any of the reporters. The book is impressive for its lengthy quotations directly from their courtroom observation. But the book has no footnotes, and it contains some clearly dubious claims. For example, the Eberles suggested that the cause of Judy Johnson's death was more nefarious than alcohol poisoning and that network executives manipulated the airing of a movie to affect the McMartin verdict. See also text accompanying footnotes 180–181. A second book about the case, *Anatomy of the McMartin Child Molestation Case*, was published more than ten years after the case ended. There are four coauthors, including Jo-Ellan Dimitrius, the jury consultant for the defense in the McMartin case. The book is dedicated to Virginia McMartin. The text includes only one

reference to the underlying transcript. Instead, the authors offer the defense view of the case as fact without any critical inquiry into areas in which there was conflicting evidence. There is a third book that is at least half about the McMartin case, but it has been relegated to obscurity because it takes a credulous view of the McMartin case as a large-scale ritual abuse case. By way of comparison, the book analyzes children from the Papoose Palace Academy case in Nevada, a case discussed in Chapter Four of this book. Waterman, Kelly, Oliveri, and McCord, *Behind the Playground Walls: Sexual Abuse in Preschools* (Guilford Press, 1993). The movie about the case is *Indictment*, a 1995 HBO movie by Abby and Myra Mann. (The Manns announced they were writing a book in 1986, when they also announced plans for the movie. They announced a book deal with Random House in 1993, but the book was never published.)

2. Pseudonyms have been given for first and last names of almost all of the children mentioned in this book. In this chapter, the only exception is Judy Johnson's son—only his first name is a pseudonym. (So, too, with Frank Fuster's son Noel in Chapter Six.) The same pseudonyms used by Nathan and Snedeker for the McMartin case have been employed for children in this chapter; the remaining pseudonyms, for the children not mentioned in *Satan's Silence*, are new. Throughout the book, the pseudonyms that I have assigned preserve the initial letters in the real first and last name.
3. The case is often described as having forty-four children at its height. Bob Williams, a *Los Angeles Times* reporter, prepared a list of forty-four that includes three children who testified before the grand jury but were not later listed as one of the forty-one complainants.
4. See footnote 207 and accompanying text in this chapter.
5. Paul Bynum, a police officer turned private investigator, committed suicide the night after Judge Pounders ruled his testimony could be presented to the jury the next day. Michael D. Harris, "McMartin Witness Commits Suicide," UPI (December 11, 1987, PM cycle.) Robert Hamill Winkler, charged with two other defendants of molesting seven children at the Coco Palms Hotel, died of a drug overdose the day he was to stand trial. David Hall, "Molestation Suspect Dead of Apparent Drug Overdose; Had Been Linked to McMartin Preschool Case," *Daily Breeze* (November 13, 1985), A3. Neither suicide was ever shown to be linked to the McMartin case, although the implication has repeatedly been made about Bynum.
6. Norma Meyer, "McMartin Case Renews Interest in 1976 Slaying," *Daily Breeze* (March 31, 1984), A1 (discussing the unsolved rape and murder of Karen Sue Klaas; the crime occurred after she dropped a child off at the McMartin preschool).
7. That result was upheld on appeal. *McMartin v. County of Los Angeles*, Court of Appeal of California, Second Appellate District, Division One, July 6, 1988. 202 Cal. App. 3d 848; review denied, Supreme Court of California, 1988 Cal. LEXIS 1280 (October 12, 1988).
8. *Spitler v. Children's Institute International*, 11 Cal. App. 3d 432, (Court of Appeal of California, Second Appellate District, Division One) (December 1, 1992).
9. *McMartin v. Currie*, Superior Court for Los Angeles Court, Case No. C751559. (Complaint concerning accusations made by Robert Currie on the following programs, which occurred immediately after the verdicts were announced in the McMartin case: *Geraldo, Sally Jesse Raphael, The Jane Wallace Show*, and *L.A. in the Morning*).
10. Carol McGraw, "McMartin Figures Win $1 in Civil Trial," *Los Angeles Times* (May 8, 1991), B1.
11. Robert Safian, "McMartin Madness: Ten Days in the Life of the Longest, Most Gruesomely Difficult Criminal Trial Ever." *American Lawyer* (October, 1989) 9:46.
12. Cynthia Gorney, "The Terrible Puzzle of McMartin Preschool," *Washington Post* (May 17–18, 1988).
13. Cynthia Gorney, "We All Wanted the Truth, But Must Settle for Justice," *Los Angeles Times* (January 19, 1990), 7.
14. Douglas Besharov, "The McMartin Case: Protecting the Innocent," *National Review* (February 19, 1990), 44.
15. Debbie Nathan. "What McMartin Started: The Ritual Abuse Hoax," *Village Voice* (June 20, 1990).
16. Carol Tavris, "A Day-Care Witch Hunt Tests Justice in Massachusetts," *Los Angeles Times* (April 11, 1997), B9.

17. Carol Tavris, "Beware the Incest-Survivor Machine," *New York Times Book Review* (January 3, 1993), 1, 9.
18. Carol Tavris, "A Day-Care Witch Hunt Tests Justice in Massachusetts."
19. Stephen Ceci and Maggie Bruck, *Jeopardy in the Courtroom: A Scientific Analysis of Children's Testimony* (American Psychological Association, 1995), 8–9.
20. Willis, "The Media and McMartin," *Village Voice*, 8.
21. Rabinowitz, *Wall Street Journal* (May 15, 1995).
22. Nathan and Snedeker, *Satan's Silence*, 69.
23. Memorandum by Dr. Richard Segal, Kaiser Permanente, MR# 664-20-82; August 12, 1983.
24. Summarized in *State v. Buckey* at tr. 61584 ("band of redness, erythema encircling his rectum") and tr. 61587 ("appeared to be some friction like trauma").
25. Quoted in *State v. Buckey* at tr. 61587, lines 21–24.
26. Nathan and Snedeker, *Satan's Silence*, 70.
27. Nathan and Snedeker, *Satan's Silence*, 70. Nathan and Snedeker refer to the clinic as the "Marion Davies Clinic," omitting one word from its actual title, the word that describes the clinic's specialization: the Marion Davies Children's Clinic.
28. *State v. Buckey*, Grand Jury tr. 9, lines 1–8 (bruising); trial tr. 61602 (discoloration).
29. MBPD D.R. No. 83-04288, 16, line 23.
30. *State v. Buckey*, tr. 62,146.
31. A study by McCann et. al. (1988) is widely known for providing the first reliable comparisons of abused and non-abused children. McCann et. al., "Perianal Findings in Children Selected for Nonabuse: A Descriptive Study," *Child Abuse & Neglect* (1988) 13(2): 179–193. The study provides evidence that some "signs" thought to be associated only with sexual abuse also appear in non-abused children. For example, almost 30 percent of the non-abused sample exhibited intermittent dilation and relaxation of the anal sphincter, something that Hobbs and Wynne (among others) considered a sign of sexual abuse. Similarly, 30 percent of the non-abused sample had increased pigmentation, another sign often connected to sexual abuse. But the witch-hunt narrative has dismissed medical evidence that is not challenged by McCann's findings. As the authors make clear, they did not find any abrasions, hematomas, or fissures in the non-abused sample. This strengthens the significance of such findings, although it is never acknowledged in the witch-hunt narrative. Butler and his coauthors also claim that McCann's findings were "not admitted at the trial." Actually, Judge Pounders declined to let the defense subpoena Dr. McCann. That decision was eminently reasonable since Dr. McCann had no specific knowledge about the McMartin case. But the content of his studies of "normals" *was* included in the cross-examination of Dr. Heger in the second McMartin trial. The questions did not catch her off-guard. She was most familiar with the work—having served as one of the peer reviewers for the journal that published it.
32. Nathan and Snedeker, *Satan's Silence*, 227.
33. Mann-Stevens Tapes, Defense No. 25, August 4, 1986, 36.
34. Willis, "The Media and McMartin," *Village Voice*, 8.
35. D.A. Investigator Notebooks, 8–30 [1985] notation.
36. Shawn Hubler, "Driven to Her Death," *Los Angeles Herald-Examiner* (March 8, 1987), A1.
37. *People v. Buckey*, Preliminary Hearing, tr. 3139.
38. Mann-Stevens Tapes, Defense No. 6 (April 30, 1986), 64.
39. Mann-Stevens Tapes, Defense No. 17 (July 28, 1986), 20.
40. Nancy Hill-Holztman, "'Poison' of the McMartin Case," *Los Angeles Herald-Examiner* (October 14, 1988), 1; Times Wire Services, "McMartin Judge Says Case 'Has Poisoned Everyone'," *Los Angeles Times* (October 14, 1988).
41. Letter to Parents from MBPD, September 7, 1983.
42. The MBPD Police Report on Matthew Johnson indicates that on August 24 and 25, 1983, "Det. Dye in R/O's absence" contacted several families. Although all of these adults were reportedly sworn to secrecy, someone informed Virginia McMartin, who called the station to inquire about the matter on August 28. Det. Hoag's entry of August 30, 1983, states: "R/O thinks that [named parent] told Peggy." Ray Buckey was on vacation in South Dakota at the time; he was arrested (and released) on September 7.

43. For example: “This letter, combined with a local television report about possible links between the preschool and a pornography ring in nearby Los Angeles, touched off a panic.” Steven Mintz, *Huck's Raft: A History of American Childhood* (Harvard University Press, 2004), 335. But the first media stories were five months after the letter was sent. If the combination of the two touched off the panic, then there were five months of “pre-panic” developments to examine.
44. [Anonymous], “McMartin: Anatomy of a Witch-Hunt,” *Playboy* (June 1990), 45, 49.
45. Mary A. Fischer, “A Case of Dominoes?”*Los Angeles Magazine* (October 1989), 131. James Rainey, “L.A. Magazine Meets, Beats Economic Challenges,” *Los Angeles Times* (June 25, 2011).
46. See e.g., Wakefield and Underwager, “Assessing the Credibility of Children's Testimony in Ritual Sexual Abuse Allegations” (“The McMartin case was made at CII”). http://www.tc.umn.edu/~under006/Library/Assessing_Crediblity.html
47. “Students of Virginia McMartin Pre-School,” DR#83-04288, 288 PC Investigation; Manhattan Beach Police Department.
48. Nathan and Snedeker, *Satan's Silence*, 72.
49. MBPD, D.R. No. 83-04929, 3.
50. The Mergilis had not informed anyone at the preschool of their decision to withdraw. Quite to their surprise, then, Peggy Buckey called Mrs. Mergili on Tuesday, September 13, to find out if the reason Tanya had not been in attendance “had to do with that letter.” Without going into any details, Mrs. Mergili told her it did. What happened next became a major issue in the case, with the defense trying to keep these facts from the jury: according to Mrs. Mergili, Peggy Buckey said she “would hate to have Tanya put through” what would happen if this became a legal case. Mrs. Mergili testified that she considered the remark to be a threat. The defense argued vigorously, but unsuccessfully, that any description of the conversation should be kept out of the case.
51. The latter version contains comments and descriptions by someone on the defense team. Unfortunately, neither document meets professional standards of transcription; each version has missing dialogue and appears more like contemporaneous notes than an actual transcription. These are apparently the only available records of this vital September interview. The videotape was never introduced as evidence because Tanya eventually dropped out of the case.
52. Court reporters do not tend to record such information, beyond a parenthetic with the words *indicating* or *child indicating*.
53. Transcript of the Audio Portion of a Videotaped Interview of Tanya Mergili by [Dr.] Mary Wilson, UCLA Hospital, September 20, 1983, 15.
54. Transcript of the Audio Portion of a Videotaped Interview of Tanya Mergili by [Dr.] Mary Wilson, September 20, 1983, 15.
55. Transcript of the Audio Portion of a Videotaped Interview of Tanya Mergili by [Dr.] Mary Wilson, Septembers 20, 1983, 17.
56. Medical Report—Suspected Child Abuse. UCLA Hospital, September 20, 1983. Hospital ID No. 136-07-50, 2.
57. Mergili family Information from Parents or Caretakers, Children's Institute International, 4. Handwritten, undated. Likely completed the same day as Tanya's CII interview (December 8, 1983).
58. Nathan and Snedeker, *Satan's Silence*, 85.
59. *California v. Buckey*, Grand Jury, tr. 339.
60. Diary of Gloria Barton, 3. The diaries of several mothers were obtained through discovery and over strenuous objection of mothers who never considered their own diaries possibly subject to “discovery” in a criminal case.
61. “Information Form,” [J and D] Gregg. Contained in “Parent Lists and Responses to Letter,” Manhattan Beach Police Department, 1983.
62. MBPD report 83-06235 (1-24-84) Det. Hoag unnumbered.
63. Police Report D.R. 83-05464, Manhattan Beach Police Department (9-23-1983), 3.
64. Police Report D.R. 83-05464, 3.
65. Police Report D.R. 83-05464, 4.

66. Police Report D.R. 83-05464, 5.
67. C.I.I. November. Four-page document with paragraph-length summaries of twelve November CII interviews. The author has clearly viewed the videotapes, and the summaries contain a significant amount of editorializing. This would seem to be a document created by the defense, as that is the substantive orientation of the editorial remarks.
68. "Mary Gordon Interview 11/16/83," 2–3. Note: this twelve-page typed transcript is a truncated transcription of the full interview, which I have seen on videotape. This transcript is not in the same format as other CII transcripts, and it is not clear who prepared it.
69. "Mary Gordon Interview 11/16/83," 3.
70. "Mary Gordon Interview 11/16/83," 5.
71. "Mary Gordon Interview 11/16/83," 7.
72. "Mary Gordon Interview 11/16/83," 7.
73. Information Form, [G.] Ingram. Contained in "Parent Lists and Responses to Letter," Manhattan Beach Police Department, 1983.
74. Police affidavit, unnumbered. S/Judge Schulte 5/5/84.
75. *State v. Buckey*, Grand Jury, tr. 129–140. There is also evidence that Dr. Mary Wilson examined Amy Goldman on September 20 and was told by Amy that she kissed Ray's penis. However strong the evidence in September, it was mitigated by a series of reports from this family as early as mid-January 1984 when one of their children identified "Fireman Pete" from Nautilus Club and two others. By February 4, one of the parents was reporting something about lions and about being "married" at church.
76. Police Report D.R. 83-04932, Manhattan Beach Police Department, 3.
77. Letter from Jean Matusinka, Deputy in Charge, Los Angeles District Attorney's Office to Kee MacFarlane, Child Sexual Abuse Diagnostic Center, Children's Institute (October 17, 1983).
78. Mann-Stevens Tapes, Defense No. 16 (July 28, 1986), 7.
79. "McMartin: Trial and Errors," a 1990 program on public television in Los Angeles, included an interview with a mother who had moved to Hawaii before the McMartin case broke in the news. According to the program, her son corroborated some of the allegations in the case. There was also a family that was in the Far East and one that moved to Oregon before the case broke. There would be numerous other leads to follow if one is looking for evidence that might contradict the claim that the case was created at CII. In one early list of 153 McMartin parents, four families were listed with "no address available," one was listed in Paradise Valley, and another in Bend, Oregon. This kind of inquiry went beyond the scope of my research paradigm and expertise.
80. "Believe the TV Movie," *Village Voice* (May 23, 1995) 40(21), 46. The title is a snide rejoinder to the organization called Believe the Children.
81. Nathan and Snedeker, 80.
82. Nathan and Snedeker, 79–80.
83. After saying that she still likes Ray, Tanya volunteers "He did some bad things, so I don't like it" (34, lines 16–17). MacFarlane's first mention of "bad secrets" comes *after* that (34, lines 27–28).
84. Nathan and Snedeker, 80.
85. Nathan and Snedeker also say that "The girl was mute. She only nodded" (80). There is no explanation why nodding, a universally recognized sign of affirmation, should not be considered affirmation in this instance, other than an unexplained observation about her open mouth.
86. P. 76, lines 5–7.
87. P. 76, lines 16–19.
88. Trisha Walters interview transcript, 82, 85.
89. Police Report D.R. 83-06218, Manhattan Beach Police Department (12–29–83), 1.
90. *State v. Buckey*, Grand Jury, tr. 61 (lines 12–16).
91. Dr. Paul on Trisha Walters. *State v. Buckey*, Retrial, tr. 6679.
92. CII interview (November 7, 1983), 29, 31.
93. CII interview (November 1, 1983), 71.
94. CII interview (November 29, 1983) [Defense description], 3, 4.
95. CII interview (November 30, 1983), 11.

96. CII interview (December 1, 1983).
97. CII interview (December 7, 1983), 61 (won't help) and 62 (scaredy cat).
98. Tanya Mergili was identified in September and videotaped being interviewed by a pediatrician at UCLA Medical Center.
99. "First Implication of Female Teacher Perpetrators." Prepared by Kee MacFarlane (April 5, 1984). Handwritten.
100. Videotape of CII interview (December 5, 1983) (swimming, at 39 min.; saw a movie, at 40 min.; Did Miss Peggy? at 45 min.).
101. Transcription of the Audio Portion of a Videotaped Interview of Tanya Mergili by Kee MacFarlane, Children's Institute International (December 7, 1983), tr. 50–51.
102. "First Implication of Female Teacher Perpetrators." Prepared by Kee MacFarlane (April 5, 1984). Handwritten.
103. Videotape of Charles Sanders interview at CII (January 7, 1984; Peggy naked horsey rider at 33 min).
104. The grand jury notebooks are included with other pre-trial materials at the Los Angeles County Archives. The Mike Wallace reference is apparent in a full transcript of the interview that Wallace did with Lael Rubin. The reference to this incident was not included in the program, which was extremely defense-oriented. Although not disclosed in the program, the interview was staged at the house of Myra and Abby Mann. Glenn Stevens confirmed this information at the 401 hearing. Trial transcript: vol. 25, tr. 3884 (January 28, 1987).
105. Transcript of interview with Terrence and Ellen Chapman, by Bill Brunetti and Detective Augusta Bell, 12.
106. Ellen Chapman later testified that Peggy Buckey told her "she would always continually watch Ray when the children were sitting on his lap or hanging on his neck, um, that if he ever had a hard-on, that she would have noticed it." *State v. Buckey*, vol. 168, tr. 24545–6 (December 16, 1987).
107. Testimony of Ellen Chapman, Grand Jury proceedings, tr. 528 (lines 10–14).
108. Testimony of Ellen Chapman. Grand Jury proceedings, tr. 528 (lines 18–20).
109. Transcript of interview with Terrence and Ellen Chapman, by Bill Brunetti and Detective Augusta Bell, 17.
110. Transcript of interview with Terrence and Ellen Chapman, by Bill Brunetti and Detective Augusta Bell, 21–22; see also Testimony of Ellen Champan at Grand Jury proceedings, tr. 529–530. Chapman wasn't the only witness to these statements; they were made in the presence of her friend, Mary Walker. Interview tr. 19–20.
111. Testimony of Dr. Heger at Grand Jury proceedings, tr. 533–534.
112. *State v. Buckey*, Grand Jury, tr. 524–535.
113. Transcript of interview with Terrence and Ellen Chapman., by Bill Brunetti and Detective Augusta Bell, 42–3.
114. The soundtrack of a videotape of a CII interview with Charlie Marks on February 4, 1984.
115. CII interview with Miranda Chase (April 3, 1984). Quotes in text from notes of videotape.
116. The medical evidence in the McCuan case, which is analyzed in Chapter Three, is much stronger than has been portrayed in the witch-hunt narrative.
117. Bruce Woodling and Astrid Heger, "The Use of the Colposcope in the Diagnosis of Sexual Abuse in the Pediatric Age Group,"*Child Abuse & Neglect* (1986), 10(1), 111–114.
118. John McCann, Robert Wells, Mary Simon, and Joan Voris, "Genital Findings in Prepubertal Girls Selected for Nonabuse: A Descriptive Study," *Pediatrics* (1990) 86: 428–439; John McCann, Joan Voris, Mary Simon, and Robert Wells, "Perianal Findings in Prepubertal Children Selected for Nonabuse: A Descriptive Study," *Child Abuse & Neglect* (1989) 13(2): 179–193.
119. Ross E. Cheit, "The Elusive Record: On the Difficulties in Researching High-Profile Child Sexual Abuse Cases from the 1980s," *Justice System Journal* (2007), 28(1) 79–97.
120. Sources official and otherwise: grand jury transcripts, trial transcripts, investigator's notebooks, MBPD reports, CII documents, and internal documents from both the prosecution and the defense, including the Mann-Stevens tapes and transcriptions made by the defense.

121. Nathan and Snedeker cite the 80 percent figure in their book; their footnote is to Mary Fischer's article in *Los Angeles Magazine*. The article does not provide a source or footnote. Nathan and Snedeker, *Satan's Silence*, 293 (fn. 42).
122. Statement of Kee MacFarlane, Child Abuse and Day Care, Joint Hearing before Subcommittee on Oversight of Committee on Ways and Means and Select Committee on Child, Youth, and Families. Ninety-Eighth Congress, Second Session (September 17, 1984), 43.
123. Bruce Woodling and Astrid Heger, "The Use of the Colposcope in the Diagnosis of Sexual Abuse in the Pediatric Age Group," *Child Abuse & Neglect* (1986), 10(1), 111–114.
124. McCauley, J., R. L. Gorman, and G. Guzinski. "Toluidine Blue in the Detection of Perineal Lacerations in Pediatric and Adolescent Sexual Abuse Victims," *Pediatrics* (December 1986), 78(6), 1030–1043.
125. McCauley, Gorman, and Guzinski, 1042. (The control group consisted of "girls 0 to 10 years of age, who presented to the pediatric emergency room or the well-child clinic with a non-acute complaint and no history or suspicion of child abuse"; 1040.)
126. Astrid Heger, Lynne Ticson, Oralia Velasquez, and Raphael Bernier, "Children Referred for Possible Sexual Abuse: Medical Findings in 2384 Children," *Child Abuse & Neglect* (2002), 26(6–7), 645–659.
127. Hendrika Cantwell, "Vaginal Inspection As it Relates to Child Sexual Abuse in Girls Under Thirteen," *Child Abuse & Neglect* (1983), 7, 171–176.
128. John McCann, Robert Wells, and Joan Voris. "Genital Findings in Prepubertal Girls Selected for Nonabuse: A Descriptive Study," *Pediatrics* (1990), 86, 428–439. See also Heger et. al., "Appearance of the Genitals in Girls Selected for Nonabuse: Review of Hymenal Morphology and Nonspecific Finings," *Journal of Pediatric and Adolescent Gynecology* (February 2002) 15(1), 27–35.
129. Shireen Atabaki and Jan Paradise, "The Medical Evaluation of the Sexually Abuse Child: Lessons from a Decade of Research," *Pediatrics* (1999).
130. Nathan and Snedeker, *Satan's Silence*, 70.
131. W. D. Erickson, N. H. Walbek, and R. K. Seely, "Behavior Patterns of Child Molesters," *Archive of Sexual Behavior* (February 1988) 17(1), 77–86.
132. One study concluded that 45.5 percent of male sex-abuse victims do not sustain such injuries. Another study found that "two-thirds of children under 6 years of age [in Rimza and Neggerman's report] had normal physical exams" despite having been sexually abused. Rimza and Neggerman also found that genital trauma was "more common in assaults by strangers, occurring in 25% of the cases with stranger assailants and in only 12% of the cases involving known assailants." Cited in W. D. Erickson, N. H. Walbek, and R. K. Seely, "Behavior Patterns of Child Molesters," 79–80. In other words, the kind of abuse that Judy Johnson suspected would likely *not* leave the child seriously wounded. The claim that such abuse "often maims or kills" is utterly fantastic. An epidemiologic study of child sexual abuse in Minneapolis found two deaths in a period with approximately twenty-four hundred reported cases of child sexual abuse. Both were due to strangulation during attempted rape. Arthur C. Jaffe, Lucille Dynneson, and Robert ten Bensel, "Sexual Abuse of Children: An Epidemiological Study," *American Journal of Diseases of Child*, (June 1975), 690.
133. Dr. Paul was asked whether "in cases of acute sodomy which might result in fissures" the gait of the child might be affected. His answer was: "No. Funny enough, it isn't." Vol. 406 at 55574 (August 7, 1989).
134. Mary Gordon, one of the September responders discussed earlier in this chapter, also had significant medical findings. Dr. Heger reported "a large scar measuring between a 1½ and 2cm at 6 o'clock extending through the posterior forchette and crossing the hymen and extending into the vagina." This kind of scar has never been reported in any study of "normal" (non-abused) children.
135. The CII process was not a directed investigation; rather, they responded to referrals. Presumably, the Gregg family did not obtain a referral to CII until after sometime in late November, or possibly even December.
136. *State v. Buckey*, Grand Jury, 74, lines 23–28; 75, lines 1–2.
137. *State v. Buckey*, tr. 61629 (as described in summation).
138. *State v. Buckey*, tr. 61632 (as described in summation).
139. *State v. Buckey*, tr. 61632 (as described in summation).

140. Dr. Paul amended his view in the second trial. He testified that the white marks on pictures of Sally were not scars but tiny drops of mucous reflecting light. He also blamed any "irregularity" of the posterior fourchette on Dr. Heger pulling on the area. This was pure speculation on the part of Dr. Paul, who provided no basis for reaching this new conclusion about slides he previously testified were "perfectly normal."
141. *State v. Buckey*, Second trial, tr. 3432, lines 6–14.
142. *State v. Buckey*, Second trial, tr. 3634.
143. *State v. Buckey*, Second trial, tr. 3635.
144. *State v. Buckey*, Second trial, tr. 3636.
145. *State v. Buckey*, Second trial, tr. 3432, lines 15–21.
146. *State v. Buckey*, Second trial, tr. 3633, lines 7–25.
147. *State v. Buckey*, Grand Jury, tr. 61, lines 12–16.
148. *State v. Buckey*, Grand Jury, tr. 61, lines 19–28; 62, lines 7–9.
149. *State v. Buckey*, Grand Jury, tr. 62, lines 1–5.
150. *State v. Buckey*, Second trial, tr. 3420, lines 1–3.
151. *State v. Buckey*, Second trial, tr. 3420, lines 10–11.
152. *State v. Buckey*, Second trial, tr. 3421, lines 16–19.
153. *State v. Buckey*, Second trial, tr. 3421
154. *State v. Buckey*, tr. 61555, lines 23–28; 61556, lines 1–2.
155. *State v. Buckey*, Second trial, tr. 6418.
156. *State v. Buckey*, Second trial, tr. 6649.
157. The medical report on Allison contains two relevant findings: (1) a 1.0–2.0 cm scar crossing the posterior fourchette totally and entering and crossing the hymen into the vagina (98, line 27 to 99, line 3); and (2) a small anal scar (0.5 cm) at 12 o'clock.
158. Heger testimony described at tr. 61489-90.
159. Cited in Lois Timnick, "Doctor Testifies for Defense in McMartin Trial," *Los Angeles Times* (August 9, 1989).
160. Astrid Heger, S. Jean Emans and David Muram, *Evaluation of the Sexually Abused Child* (Oxford University Press, 2000), 7.
161. *Satan's Silence*, 187. As chief medical examiner in Sao Paulo, Brazil, Dr. Teixeira wrote an article that Nathan and Snedeker described as "instructing colleagues how to do virginity checks on girls and women" with a colposcope. The authors claimed that Teixeira had done hundreds of these dubious examinations. "If an accused wife denied indiscretions before marriage," Nathan and Snedeker explained, "[Dr. Teixeira] attempted to distinguish the fresh irritations inflicted by her husband's penis from other infinitesimal wounding that might have been wrought by a former boyfriend." But the article that Dr. Teixeira wrote is called "Hymenal Colposcopic Examination in Sexual Offenses" and is based on the examination of 500 patients during a six-month period, all of them "actual or supposed victims of sexual offenses." There is a single mention of the civil law that allows a husband to request annulment up to ten days after the wedding "under the special circumstance of his wife not being virgin without his previous knowledge." Notably, Teixeira describes this as "a very uncommon situation" and makes no statement to indicate he has ever had a single case like that. He certainly does not describe one. Wilmes Teixeira, "Hymenal Colposcopic Examination in Sexual Offenses," *American Journal of Forensic Medicine and Pathology* (September 1981), 213.
162. Woodling and Heger, "The Use of the Colpscope in the Diagnosis of Sexual Abuse in Pediatric Age Girls," *Child Abuse & Neglect* (1986), 10(1), 112.
163. This case, like McMartin, is far more complicated than has been portrayed in the witch-hunt narrative. See Ross E. Cheit and Andrea Matthews, "Revisiting the Jordan, Minnesota Cases," *Roger Williams University Law Review* (forthcoming, 2014).
164. *State v. Buckey*, Second trial, tr. 6334 ("a liar will avoid your eye contact at some time or another").
165. Astrid Heger, S. Jean Emans, and David Muram, *Evaluation of the Sexually Abused Child: A Medical Textbook and Photographic Atlas, 2nd ed.* (Oxford University Press, 2000); see also John Wilkens and Jim Okerblom, "Wrong Photos Utilized in Child-Abuse Trial," *San Diego Union-Tribune* (January 21, 1992), B1 (describing how Heger's evaluation identified the error in the Poway case).

166. *State v. Buckey*, Second trial, tr. 3620.

167. A brief synopsis of five other children in the preliminary hearing or trial whose medical evidence merits further consideration:

Cindy Ennis. Among the remaining children, the medical evidence was strongest in the case of Cindy Ennis. Cindy was nine years old when she was interviewed at CII on March 14, 1984. Four doctors eventually testified she had an extremely enlarged hymenal opening (2.0 cm). Although studies on the range of "normal" hymenal openings in girls with no suspected history of sexual abuse later challenged the earlier notions of what constituted possible signs of abuse, even those studies agreed that a 2 cm. opening is not normal. (At the time of the trial, many pediatricians considered a hymenal opening of more than 0.5 cm. to be enlarged. McCann's subsequent studies indicate that openings up to 1 cm. could well be normal. But the evidence on Cindy E. was twice that number.) There was also extensive scarring evidence noted through colpscopic pictures. Of the eight colposcopic findings, six would still be considered highly significant under current standards. All of those involved scarring. Defense lawyer Danny Davis, who rarely gave any points to the prosecution, described the medical evidence on Cindy Ennis as "serious and convincing." In his closing argument, he offered only the technical defense that 62 percent of the time Cindy attended the preschool was outside the scope of the statute of limitations. In other words, Ray Buckey could not be convicted for those acts if the jury concluded they occurred during those times. *State v. Buckey*, tr. 62094.

Bill Sandel. Probably the most notable remaining child, from the point of view of medical evidence, was Bill Sandel. He was the second child to testify at the preliminary hearing, so his testimony received extensive media coverage. The medical evidence, which was presented separately, received much less attention. According to Bill's mother, who was then a nurse, the boy complained of rectal bleeding while he attended the McMartin Preschool. She testified this was a recurring problem and she observed "excoriated areas around the anus." She entertained the possibility of pinworms, never even considering sexual abuse as a possible cause. Three doctors testified Bill had significant anal scarring in a most suspicious location (between 6 and 7 o'clock). Dr. Heger originally examined the boy, and Dr. Gordon testified that he agreed with her findings. The boy was also seen separately by Dr. Berkowitz, who took her own photographs with a colposcope and verified the scarring.

Dr. Paul concurred that there were anal injuries but he argued they likely occurred more recently than when Bill attended the preschool. At one point he argued that the injuries were acute; nobody else took the claim seriously. Indeed, Dr. Paul's assertion does not explain the source of the problems Bill experienced in his anal area while attending the McMartin Preschool. Nor does it indicate how Bill sustained the injuries Dr. Paul acknowledges, especially given that Bill's only explanation to the pediatrician involved Ray Buckey.

Kristy Walters. There was strong disagreement over the medical evidence concerning Kristy Walters, Trisha's older sister. Trisha is the one child at trial who emerged from the initial CII interviews in November. She was attending the school at the time, which indicates how strongly her family supported the McMartins before Trisha made her statements on November 22, 1983. Dr. Heger examined Kristy when she was seven and a half years old. The girl had last been in attendance at the McMartin Preschool two and a half years earlier. Dr. Heger testified at the grand jury that Kristy had a very relaxed hymenal opening, which she said was one and a half times the normal size. She testified further that there was general rounding of the hymen and skin tags (McMartin Grand Jury, tr. 64, lines 18–28). These findings would not be considered important today; they can all be found in "normals."

There were other findings, however, that would be considered significant indicators of abuse by today's standards. Most significantly, Dr. Heger observed a long scar at 6 o'clock that was greater than 2 cm. It extended through the antichamber, across the hymen, and into the vagina (McMartin Grand Jury: 65, lines 1–4). Six o'clock is the most common place for injury to occur in a penetrative assault; a large scar in that location is practically diagnostic of sexual abuse. Dr. Heger also testified that Kristy had other scars perpendicular to the opening of the vagina. She described them as typical of "a blunt object pushing against delicate tissue" (McMartin Grand Jury: 65, lines 22–28).

Dr. Heger further testified that there was a depression near the anal verge. Dr. Gordon, who examined the photographs, testified he also saw scars that were consistent with sexual abuse (McMartin First Trial: summarized at 61521, lines 9–12). Dr. Paul testified he could not see any of the supposed scars (tr. 56385–56387); nor could he draw any conclusions from the depression on the anal verge. It is impossible to assess whether this was an abnormal finding that was due to trauma or merely a congenital defect, without having an independent medical expert examine the photographs. The jury never heard about the "well-healed anal scars"—scars consistent with the penetration of a blunt object—because Kristy never disclosed anal abuse in her testimony; the defense won its fight to keep this evidence from the jury. There is no medical doubt that Kristy Walters sustained serious anal injuries. But because she never disclosed them, the jury never heard the medical evidence.

Ariel Marks. Ariel accounted for twenty-one of the fifty-two counts against Ray Buckey at trial. The ten other children accounted for between one and six counts each against him. She was the child with the longest period of attendance at McMartin, which helps account for the large number of criminal counts. Curiously, Ariel has not played prominently in the witch-hunt narrative; nor was she one of the three girls who convinced enough jurors to result in a mistrial on those charges. The documents I was able to review provide sufficient details to understand what Dr. Heger originally reported. They do not provide details about Dr. Paul's responses.

Dr. Heger testified before the grand jury that Ariel had recurrent vaginitis and bladder infections while enrolled at the McMartin Pre-School. This is relevant but not particularly strong evidence since sexual abuse is one of many possible explanations. The significance of Dr. Heger's testimony about "rounded tissue remnants around the hymen" and about a "very relaxed hymenal opening" has been contradicted by research conducted since 1984. Similarly, the findings concerning "neovascularization" would not have been considered notable under current knowledge. Had these questionable findings been the only signs of abuse, then Ariel's medical evaluation would have been seriously impugned under today's state of knowledge. But the evaluation also found signs of trauma that remain solid signs of abuse today. Dr. Heger testified further that there was scar tissue at various locations surrounding the opening of the vagina; there was a "remarkable scar which streams from 3:30 across the hymenal orifice into vagina." The significance of this kind of evidence of physical trauma has not been diminished by subsequent research. That is, vaginal scars have not been found in non-abused populations in controlled studies unless the child had a well-defined episode of previous vaginal trauma. Ariel Marks did not have a previous record of vaginal injury.

Daniel Acorn. Daniel was first interviewed at CII on March 1, 1984. He was nine years old and had not been at the McMartin preschool for almost three years. His medical evaluation by Drs. Woodling and Heger was conducted on May 26. Testimony much later in the case suggests that Dr. Woodling's employment for the prosecution was discontinued after this date, although it is not at all clear why. Dr. Woodling's report describes the medical examination as follows: "A general physical examination is performed by Astrid Heger, M.D. Careful inspection of the perianal area reveals a small, old well-healed fissure at 12 o'clock. Multiple photographs are taken using a colposcope. No other genital injury or scarring is present. Internal examination is not performed at the request of both the patient and his mother." The colposcopic findings described "a six o'clock scar with loss of tissue integrity," "loss of rugal patterns with hypertrophy, palor and underlying erythema" at 4 o'clock, and "scarring with rugal interruption" at 12 o'clock. There is still a debate in the field about the significance of "rugal patterns"; therefore much of what he described might be irrelevant to proving sexual abuse. Scarring, however, is always suspicious, especially at the 6 or 12 o'clock position. Dr. Paul admitted there could be "a scar or scars" on one slide, but he said it had "little significance either way." Dr. Heger ultimately presented these findings merely as "consistent with" sexual abuse, which is not any kind of diagnostic claim. It is difficult to ascertain more without being able to submit the slides at issue to an outside expert, but it is safe to say the significance of the findings on this child was probably overblown.

168. Sara Barton, one of the very first positive responders in September 1983, demonstrated several notable medical signs of sexual abuse. Dr. Heger noted one finding—"rounding" of the

tissue—that has since been considered an unreliable indicator of sexual abuse. She also noted scarring, which is still considered strong evidence of sexual abuse. Mary Gordon, another September responder, was examined by Drs. Heger and Woodling on January 7, 1984. Dr. Heger reported scarring in the area outside the hymen at 4 o'clock, 5 o'clock, 7 o'clock, and 8 o'clock. She also observed a large scar measuring 1.5–2 cm at 6 o'clock, extending through the posterior fourchette and into the vagina. These findings, if confirmed today, would be considered strong evidence of sexual abuse.

169. The mother who testified at Congress as "Mrs. Deborah Smith" had taken her child to the pediatrician, who observed "considerable redness and swelling in her genital area." At the next visit, a routine visit for her younger brother, the pediatrician noted vaginal discharge. The girl's stepfather, a general practitioner, diagnosed vaginitis.
170. Grand Jury, tr. 46–47. Also at 50, lines 12–16: "And so with Kathy, she definitely had the scarring, she definitely had a large scar at the point of 6 o'clock that crossed all the way across and went right into the vagina. You could see the scar very, very noticeably."
171. This was described by Debra Mergili in the Preliminary Hearing, vol. 139, October 1, 1984.
172. Jeffrey Victor, "Satanic Cult Rumors as Contemporary Legend," *Western Folklore, Contemporary Legends in Emergence* (January 1990), 49(1): 51–81, 69.
173. Investigator Worksheets, V. Harper (replaced January 19, 1984, by A. W. Brunnetti).
174. Investigator Worksheets, A. W. Brunnetti (February 16, 1984).
175. The most vocal of the parents involved in the dubious tunnel dig after the first trial was Jackie McGaulie, whose daughter was never part of the criminal case. One of the most vocal of the parents during the trial was Tim Wheeler, who appeared on the *60 Minutes* program about the case; he too did not have children in the case. Neither did Bob Currie, who became famous both for the reward he posted without success for evidence of commercial pornography at the McMartin Preschool and for being featured as a rabid parent in the movie *Indictment*.
176. Richard Beck, "Willis and Happiness," *n + 1* (November 18, 2011). The statement of purpose is from the organization's Fall 1993 newsletter. I reviewed twenty-three newsletters from 1986 to 1997 and did not find any references that bear out the claim they were "right wing." In the only year an actual budget was published in the newsletter, the organization had an annual income of $15,917 and it expended of $19,816. (Believe the Children newsletter, Winter 1996, 7.) Although various cultural theorists have claimed, retroactively, that this organization was an important influence on American society, the claim is difficult to square with their small membership and the content of their newsletter, which largely reproduced articles published elsewhere and did not take credit for any actual legislation or other outcomes. Moreover, Nancy Whittier's detailed account of the social movements around child sexual abuse in the United States provides no support for the claim that these organizations were right-wing. Rather, they represented feminists and victims, whose politics were, if anything, left-leaning. Nancy Whittier, *The Politics of Child Sexual Abuse* (Oxford University Press, 2009).
177. A handmade typed spreadsheet of all the children at trial, apparently prepared by the LADA, lists the therapist for each child. Nine went to C. Kent; two others went to J. Kent. The three remaining children were seen by Jane McCord, Noel Plourde, and Michelle Dugan. See Eberle and Eberle, *Abuse of Innocence*, 18, 20, 49, 59, 72, 75, 139.
178. Mann-Stevens Tapes, No. 17, 8 (July 28) and No. 18 (July 30), 3. Stevens uses the plural more than once in this conversation, making it clear he was implicating both therapists, even though Kent saw far more children. Kent and Dugan contributed to a chapter in Waterman et. al.'s *Behind the Playground Walls*, wherein they provide a clinical view of children in the McMartin case. Two clinical examples involved children who reportedly were forced to kill animals (248–249). Though duly noting that nobody in the case was convicted in criminal court, the chapter in Waterman does not entertain the possibility that stated reports about killing animals might have been factually incorrect.
179. In 2008, the Santa Cruz Ritual Abuse Task Force posted a credulous summary of the claim that there had been tunnels under the McMartin Preschool. It was contained on a Word Press blog about the McMartin Preschool trial that no longer exists. The Task Force is credited with writing the introduction to a section called "Archaeological Investigations of the

McMartin Preschool Site" on a Ritual Abuse website. http://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/articles/mcmartin-preschool-case-what-really-happened-and-the-coverup/.

For a sense of the conspiracy theories that can be associated with such task forces, see Aaron Curtis, "Some on Ritual Abuse Task Force Say Satanists Are Poisoning Them," *Los Angeles Times* (December 1, 1992).

180. Eberle and Eberle, *Abuse of Innocence*, 19–20.
181. He was a previously convicted arsonist who was apprehended after setting another fire, on May 17, at the home of a former companion who provided the police with evidence linking him to the McMartin fire. See David Hall, "McMartin Fire Suspect 'Full of Violence,'" *Daily Breeze* (May 26, 1984), A3.
182. Documents from the arson investigation reveal that Mann claimed the U.S. attorney was "biased" against them and the investigation when they concluded there was no connection to the McMartin case. Report of Investigation, Dept. of Treasury, Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms, Investigation No. 93110-95-0011-D (December 12, 1995), 5.
183. Lisa Belkin, *Show Me a Hero: A Tale of Murder, Suicide, Race, and Redemption* (Little Brown, 1999), 69.
184. See e.g., KABC arraignment story from March 1984 that ends with anchorwoman saying "this is your story [Wayne], it's all your story" and endorsing the need for contributions to CII. Available at: http://youtu.be/MD5aT6kZ5MQ.
185. The relationship between Kee MacFarlane and Wayne Satz became a major part of the witch-hunt narrative largely because it was eventually revealed that the two were linked romantically. Although much has been made about the relationship, by all indications their romantic involvement began long after the initial stories on KABC and after the first few months of CII interviews. One full day of cross-examination of MacFarlane was devoted to her relationship with Satz (*State v. Buckey*, reporter's daily transcript, Tuesday August 9, 1988). Judge Pounders ruled that their romantic relationship was off-limits because it did not bear sufficient relevancy to issues about the CII interviews. As to MacFarlane's role in the original stories, she denied leaking information to Satz, but she acknowledged that she spoke with him several times during the development of the story, that she knew the story was coming out in advance of February 2, and that she participated in a live TV interview with Satz after one of the stories in March (tr. 38534). In short, she worked closely with him. None of which excuses the obvious impropriety of discussing a confidential investigation with Satz, but the reasons for doing so were apparently not related to the relationship that later formed between the two.
186. Notation, Investigator's Notebooks, February 2, 1984.
187. Philip Jenkins, *Moral Panic*, 276, fn. 5.
188. Since Judy Johnson was not the only one with a fanciful version of the case by then, this issue is far less important than has been represented in the witch-hunt narrative. Johnson's behavior in February 1984 does not prove anything about what three separate doctors saw in August 1983. Instead, it helps prove that social forces surrounding the case were taking hold shortly after the media coverage began.
189. The cut-off date for the second round of charges was early May 1984. There had been 178 children evaluated at that point. This was about half the number of children who would ultimately be evaluated. The children who were interviewed later played no role in the legal proceedings, and none of the multiple sources of documents located for this research included any information about them, beyond transcripts of some CII interviews.
190. Ilyce Meckler's rarely cited investigative report for PBS ("McMartin Trial and Errors") in January 1990 demonstrated that the DA's office viewed very few of the children's interviews before taking the case to the grand jury. Instead, they relied on the videotape log notations.
191. Mann-Stevens Tapes, Defense No. 22 (August 16, 1986), 22 ("it was just awesome").
192. Carol McGraw, "McMartin Pupil, 10, Tells of Bizarre Rite; Forced to Drink Blood, Witness Claims," *Los Angeles Times* (February 21, 1985), 6.
193. Mann-Stevens Tapes, Defense No.4 (March 22, 1986), 17.
194. John A. Jackson, "Trial by Ordeal: The McMartin Court Has Its Way with One Small Girl," *Daily Breeze* (May 16, 1985), 1, 18 +.

195. William Plummer and Joshua Hammer, "The Young Witnesses in the McMartin Sex Abuse Case Undergo a Legal Battering in Court," *People* (July 8, 1985), 26.
196. Mann-Stevens Tapes, Defense No. 29 (June 11, 1986), 25.
197. Mann-Stevens Tapes, Defense No. 4 (March 22, 1986), 10.
198. Lois Timnick, "McMartin Defense Investigator Coerced Witness, Judge Finds," *Los Angeles Times* (September 13, 1989), Metro, Part 2, 3.
199. See testimony of Wesley Sorenson, September 22 and 25, 1989. Volumes 431 and 432 of the trial transcript, *State v. Buckey*. The incident, which Virginia McMartin reported in her dairy, involved the Sorenson's daughter touching Ray's genitals in the spring of 1983. Virginia described the incident as inadvertent, and in a conversation with Mrs. Sorenson Virginia learned that the girl had apparently tried to touch her father's genitals in the shower on one or two occasions. Those incidents, which the father considered both private and irrelevant to the charges in the McMartin case, were eventually the focus of many questions in court. Welsey Sorenson testified that the defense investigator who approached him about these issues made him "uneasy" and gave him the "feeling" that the defense was warning him that if he testified it would be very embarrassing for him (tr. 59953). The detailed and repeated questioning about his occasional showers with his small daughter bears this out.
200. Marcia Chambers, "Questions Arise About Investigation of Coast Molestation Case," *New York Times* (October 22, 1985).
201. Transcripts of the Mann-Stevens tapes, covering conversations over several months in the late spring and summer of 1986, indicate Stevens told the Manns on several early occasions that he thought there was sufficient evidence of guilt against Ray Buckey. Mann eventually says that the success of the movie depends on all the defendants being acquitted. Stevens famously drank a toast with the Manns to the acquittal of both defendants, even though Stevens later allowed under oath that he still believed Ray Buckey was guilty at the time. Stevens eventually adopted the witch-hunt narrative wholesale, arguing that Ray Buckey was also factually innocent.
202. Michael Reese, "A Child-Abuse Case Implodes," *Newsweek* (January 27, 1986), 26. This view had been building in the press coverage for more than six months. See John Crewdson, "California Abuse Case May Be Unraveling," *Chicago Tribune* (May 17, 1985).
203. The Manns announced their intention to make a movie and write a book in a press release on November 3, 1986. "Abby Mann Plans Book, Feature Film on 'McMartin Preschool Case,'" Solters, Roskin, Freidman, Inc. (November 3, 1986). The agreement they signed with Stevens, which became an exhibit in the hearing on the motion to dismiss, was dated April 1, 1986. The conversations took place largely in June and July of 1986.
204. The Manns said they "agonized" about the decision, particularly since they promised Stevens the tapes would be confidential, but decided they could not withhold evidence—evidence that they created. Richard Layco, "Hollywood Tapes and Testimony," *Time* (December 15, 1986).
205. Mann-Stevens Tapes, No. 29, 37.
206. *State v. Buckey*, Pre-trial hearing, tr. 3876 (January 28, 1987).
207. Memorandum to: Gilbert Garcetti. From: Glenn E. Stevens. Subject: Analysis, Recommendation and Revised Summaries *People v. Raymond Buckey et al.*, January 10, 1986. 3. He recommended "a simple case against Raymond Buckey with six victims all supported by medical evidence" and concluded that the evidence "should lead any jury or court to conclude that he is guilty as charged" (8).
208. Mann-Stevens Tapes, No. 20, 29.
209. Fischer, "A Case of Dominoes," [Figure] "Where Was Ray?" 130.
210. James Rainey, "L. A. Magazine Finds Its Way Back," *Los Angeles Times* (June 25, 2011), D1 (naming the McMartin "debunking" article as one of the most important articles in the magazine in its fifty years).
211. A mother whose two children attended McMartin between 1975 and 1980 said "Ray came to the school right as they were leaving" (Response of. L. B.). Another mother specifically placed Ray at the school in the fall of 1980 (Response of D. E.). A mother whose daughter attended only in 1980–81 told the police a specific story about how Ray was "real mean" to the kids (Response of J. P.). A man whose son attended from 1978 to 1981 also verified that

his son had contact with Ray Buckey (Response of D. S.). Tara Duncan, who had come to McMartin for observation from El Camino College, testified Ray was there in the fall of 1980. Trial testimony, vol. 259 (July 27, 1988).

212. *State v. Buckey*, tr. 36701–36702.
213. Nathan and Snedeker, *Satan's Silence*, 71.
214. The footnote to Nathan's claim references an entire article and not a particular passage. The article is an "exclusive" interview with the Buckeys by a writer clearly sympathetic to the defense. Nathan and Snedeker, *Satan's Silence*, 268, fn. 16.
215. Scott Moniak told the MBPD he "used to hang around with Ray," and that Ray "drank in the daytimes" and was "out of control" and "into magic mushrooms." MBPD interview, November 22, 1983.
216. Virginia McMartin testified she put things about the preschool in her diary "if they were important." *State v. Buckey*, tr. 60271. On April 8, 1981 she wrote: "Ray had troubles. Several calls from Peg. Steve came from work and helped P. A. with him. Poor dear." When asked to explain the notation years later, Virginia McMartin testified she "hasn't the slightest idea" what the entry meant, remarking that "all young people have troubles." Tr. 60, 374–60375.
217. Major Jon L. Lightner, JA, "The McMartin Pre-School Case," JAG School (March 1993), 13.
218. Statement of Cindy and Jacob Dale, November 9, 1983, MBPD.
219. "It came across to me in that moment of time as if the exposure was intentional," she testified. She thought about calling the police but did not do because she "care[d] about the family." *State v. Buckey*, tr. 58474 (September 12, 1989).
220. *State v. Buckey*, tr. 58444, lines 18–19 are the quote. Her testimony begins 58440 and includes Buckey's response: "I never wear underwear."
221. *State v. Buckey*, tr. 40338; *State v. Buckey*, Second trial, tr. 3348.
222. Sorenson took great issue with Virginia McMartin's account. See tr. 60084–60085.
223. Sorenson testified that this was the only time he saw Ray "exposed" in this fashion, that he said something to Ray, and that Ray responded he didn't have any clean underwear that day. Sorenson testified he "thought it might just have been a simple mistake." Tr. 60018–60019, 60021. In other words, he gave Ray the benefit of the doubt—at the time. Sorenson later came to a different position and testified for the prosecution.
224. *State v. Buckey*, Trial tr. 24545–46.
225. *State v. Buckey*, Second trial, tr. 5008, 5010.
226. Specific details about the divided votes were not announced. The jury foreman reported that the jury was divided eight to four but did not indicate which direction or specify whether the vote was consistent for each of the twelve charges.
227. The jurors spoke at a press conference shortly after announcing their verdicts. Seth Mydans, "For Jurors, Facts Could Not Be Sifted from Fantasies," *New York Times* (January 19, 1990), A18. This simple, verifiable fact is important in assessing one of the strangest claims in the witch-hunt narrative to be made about this press conference: that jurors' statements should be discounted because they might have been "self-serving" responses to the public criticism they felt after the verdicts had been announced. Ceci and Bruck made this argument, attributing it to an unnamed "close observer" of the trial. Stephen J. Ceci and Maggie Bruck, "Child Witnesses: Translating Research into Policy," *Social Policy Reports* (Society for Research in Child Development, Fall 1993), 25, fn. 1. This unnamed source did not reconcile this speculation against the fact that the press conference occurred *before* there were any headlines about the case or even any television programs with outspoken parents as guests. There was actually very little public outcry over the verdict as a whole; but more importantly, the various developments after the verdicts were announced, however they are characterized, are irrelevant to explaining any behavior at the press conference because it came immediately after Judge Pounders dismissed the jury.
228. "McMartin Jury: Prosecution Never Proved Case," *United Press International* (January 19, 1990), Domestic News Section.
229. Transcript, *MacNeil Lehrer News/Hour* (January 18, 1990), 8.
230. "The McMartin Jury's Trial," *Washington Post* (January 20, 1990), A18.

231. Paul Pringlee and Dolores Wood, "Jurors' Quest for Agreement Ends in Futility," *Daily Breeze* (July 28, 1990), 1.

232. Her license was reinstated by Administrative Law Judge Ronald M. Gruen. *In re Peggy Ann B.*, California Commission on Teacher Credentials (No. L-42932), November 24, 1988.

233. Peggy Buckey was charged with conspiracy as well as child molestation. As reflected in the jury's verdict in the first trial, the evidence for the conspiracy charge was stronger than the evidence of child molestation.

Chapter Three

1. Debbie Nathan, "The Making of a Modern Witch Trial," *Village Voice* (September 29, 1987), 20.
2. Mark Sauer, "Decade of Accusations: The McMartin Preschool Child Abuse Case Launched 100 Others," *San Diego Union-Tribune* (August 29, 1993), Part 1, D1.
3. Mary De Young, *The Day Care Ritual Abuse Moral Panic*, 3.
4. Ceci and Bruck, "Child Witnesses" (emphasis added), 3.
5. Carol Hopkins Press Release. Repeated credulously in Humes, *Mean Justice*, 572, fn. 76.
6. Paul Craig Roberts, "False Memories, False Prosecutions," *Washington Times* (January 20, 1998), A12. Roberts asserts that the "Justice Committee has files on some 2,000 innocents whose lives were ruined and families destroyed by the accusation." According to Philip Kaushall, a forensic psychologist in San Diego who took possession of those files after the "Justice Committee" was disbanded, the files represent a survey of prisoners whose claims of innocence have not been independently examined (Kaushall, private communication).
7. There were fifty-one names in the hardcover edition, fifty-four names in the paperback edition. This page was removed from later editions.
8. The *San Francisco Examiner* published a similar article in 1986, but the focus was not national. A. S. Ross, "Ritualistic Child Abuse? A Presumption of Guilt," *San Francisco Examiner* (September 29, 1986). Almost all of the cases contained in the article were included in Charlier and Downing's list of thirty-six. Curiously, Charlier and Downing chose to exclude the case in which five members of a Wicca coven "were convicted or pleaded guilty to several hundred counts of sexual abuse involving teen-age boys going back to 1979."
9. See e.g., Jason Fine, "Seeking Evil: The Hell of Prosecuting Satanic Ritual Abuse," *California Lawyer* (July 1994), 90; Interview, Michael Phillips, *Whole Earth Review* (December 22, 1998), 104. Alexander Cockburn also relied extensively on the series with utter credulity in "Abused Imaginings," *New Statesman & Society* (January 1990).
10. Ellen Willis, "As Child-molestation Cases Fall Apart, Who's Watching Now?" (Minneapolis) *Star Tribune* (June 5, 1995), 5A.
11. See footnote 20, John Earl, "The Dark Truth About the 'Dark Tunnels of McMartin,"*Issues in Child Abuse Accusations*, Vol. 7 (1995).
12. Denis Brion, "The Hidden Persistence of Witchcraft," *Law and Critique* (1993); Mary de Young, "Another Look at Moral Panics: The Case of Satanic Day Care Centers," *Deviant Behavior* (1998).
13. Jeffrey Victor, *Satanic Panic: The Creation of a Contemporary Legend* (Open Court, 1993): Appendix V, 355–361.
14. Barbara Fister, "The Devil in the Details: Media Representations of 'Ritual Abuse' and Evaluation of Sources," *Studies in Media & Information Literacy Education* (May 2003), 1–14.
15. Three of the "cases" are presented without a single proper name or related feature that would facilitate any kind of fact checking. The defendant is not named in the Bouse, Arizona, case; nor are the names given of anyone else involved. None of the accused are named in the Atherton, California, case either, or the woman who allegedly accused them. Similarly, there are no identifying features in the Richmond, Virginia, case.
16. Two prominent examples are explained in detail in later chapters: the Kelly Michaels case (Maplewood, New Jersey) in Chapter Five and the Country Walk case (Miami) in Chapter Six.

17. Charlier and Downing, "Patterns Emerge Across Nation," *Commercial Appeal* (January 1988), A3.
18. Charlier and Downing, "Patterns," A3.
19. Some newspaper articles at the time said the house had been abandoned by LeRoy Freeman. Other reports said a neighbor, who apparently did not know Freeman, resembled him. Chris Evan and Ted Wendling, "Bedeviled Searchers Call It Off," *Plain Dealer*, June 22, 1985, A1, 14. A 1986 article, however, said Freeman had lived in the house before this person moved in; and it apparently was abandoned by Freeman and later purchased from the bank. See "Fruitless Dig for Victims of Cult Leaves Family Angry," *Plain Dealer* (July 22, 1986), B2.
20. Jim Sielicki, "General News," UPI (Toledo, Ohio, June 21, 1985, PM cycle).
21. Deputies watched and tape-recorded an outdoor ritual service near the areas searched on April 30, 1985. It was attended by about one hundred people. "The two-hour ceremony featured chanting, but no sacrifices," deputy sheriff Trilby Cashin was quoted as saying. Chris Evan and Ted Wendling, "Hunt Near Toledo Fails to Find Human Sacrifices," *Plain Dealer* (June 21, 1985), 1, 16A.
22. Arthur Lyons, *Satan Wants You: The Cult of Devil Worship in America* (Mysterious Press, 1988). These items were also mentioned in newspaper articles at the time. See e.g., Chris Evan and Ted Wendling, "Bedeviled Searchers Call It Off," *Plain Dealer* (June 22, 1985), A1.
23. "Grandfather, LeRoy Freeman, Is Sentenced for Kidnapping," *Plain Dealer* (January 31, 1987), B4.
24. Charlier and Downing, "Similar Tales" *Commercial Appeal* (January1988), A8.
25. Denis Brion, "The Hidden Persistence of Witchcraft,"*Law and Critique* (1993).
26. Seven cases account for two-thirds of the entries in this table: McMartin, Kern County, Memphis, Niles, Chicago, and two cases never actually discussed in the article; Torrance and Rolling Hills (discussed in Chapter Four of this book), which were near the McMartin Preschool.
27. Interview, Michael Phillips, *Whole Earth Review* (December 22, 1998), 104.
28. See e.g., J. Frazier Smith, "Child Admits Testimony Lie at Abuse Trial," *Cincinnati Enquirer* (August 10, 1985), C1; J. Frazier Smith, "Mother Didn't Think Child Was Abused," *Cincinnati Enquirer* (August 15, 1985), D3; J. Frazier Smith, "Lawyer Saw Mom's Journal as Key," *Cincinnati Enquirer* (July 24, 1985), C1.
29. Faizah Alim, "'Snuff' Case Thrown Out," *Sacramento Bee* (October 26, 1985), A1.
30. The licensing proceedings were against Barbara Orr, owner and operator of the Jubilation Day Care Center in Ft. Bragg. I obtained 537 pages of documents on the case from the California Department of Social Services (DSS). Those records indicate that Administrative Law Judge Michael C. Cohn initially issued findings of fact that Orr's niece had "engaged in sexual acts with K.B. a six year old boy being cared for at the facility." (Para V, p. 2.) Decision, *In the Matter of the Accusation Against Barbara Orr DBA Jubilation Day Care Center*, No. LC 1269-0584, California Department of Social Services, July 30, 1984. Those findings were not contested, the niece was placed in some kind of therapy, and an order was issued prohibiting the niece from having any contact with children at the day care. Orr's license was placed on two-year probation. During this time, the allegations surrounding the case grew and Barbara Orr and her sister were named as potential suspects. Tom Hine, "Ex-Coast Day Care Center Hit by Abuse Charges," (Mendocino) *Grapevine* (July11, 1985), 3. The DSS files document that therapist Pamela Hudson was a key actor in the case. The earliest investigative document in the file is a letter from Hudson recommending an investigation into possible abuse by the young niece. Letter to Child Protective Services (March 23, 1984, Bates No. 000033). There also typed summaries labeled "Taped Statements by Pamela Hudson" covering three days in January 1985 (Bates No. 000041-42). As her role in the case continued, the claims she reported became stranger. A Mendocino County Sheriff's Report in April 1985 includes details, provided to the Sheriff's Office by Hudson, about a child allegedly hung by a cross and adults allegedly killing animals to scare children (Bates No. 000470). Hudson published a credulous "Survey of Ritual Abuse Cases" in 1988 that counted the Fort Bragg "case" as a ritual abuse case with ten or eleven child victims. But Barbara Orr was never charged with any acts of physical or sexual abuse, only with violating the conditions of her probation.

A hearing that would have presented the evidence for revocation was canceled when Orr voluntarily agreed to a permanent license revocation. Decision and Order, *In the Matter of the Accusation Against Barbara Orr*, California Department of Social Services, No. LC1269-0584 (December 16, 1985). Her sister was never formally charged with any kind of wrongdoing.

31. Correspondence from Cheryl Hays (Criminal Investigator, Shelby County DA) and W. L. Callicott (Shelby County Sheriff's Office) to Ken Lanning FBI. February 5, 1985; Part I, 4.
32. *State v. Ballard*, Criminal Court of Tennessee, Thirtieth Judicial District (Case No. 84-04893). Tr. F11: 1357–1374, 1413, 1421, 1436, and 1485.
33. Ballard testified she said "Satan in the name of Jesus and by His shed blood I rebuke you, you have no place in my life." She denied accounts that she told Satan to get out of her body. *State v. Ballard*, tr. F11:1473.
34. *State v. Ballard*, tr. A6I: 23. (Chris Brown).
35. Correspondence from Cheryl Hays: Part II, 2.
36. Gail Goodman, et. al., "Children's Religious Knowledge: Implications for Understanding Satanic Ritual Abuse," *Child Abuse & Neglect*, (1997); 21(11):1111–30.
37. One of the members of a task force that investigated this case testified she and other task force members were instructed by an assistant district attorney to prepare narratives to tape-recorded interviews with the child victims and then reuse the tapes of the interviews of these children so that the tapes would not be available for discovery by the defense. *State v. Ballard*, 714 S.W.2d 284 (Tenn.Cr.App.1986). The decision to overturn the verdict and remand the case for a possible retrial was upheld by the Tennessee Supreme Court. *State v. Ballard*, 855 S.W.2d 557 (1993). The case was not retried, charges were dropped and Ballard eventually had her conviction expunged.
38. Interview with Wayne Hargrove: June 16, 1984, by Jackie Allen Hammer.
39. *State v. Ballard*, tr. C5: 772–775.
40. *State v. Ballard*, tr. C5: 833, 837; C6: 930.
41. *State v. Ballard*, tr. C5: 802–803 ("rectum showed a large scar between eleven and twelve and some dilation").
42. *State v. Ballard*, tr. C6: 784–787, 874, 948.
43. *State v. Ballard*, tr. A10: 45. (Wayne Hargrove).
44. *State v. Ballard*, 855 S.W.2d 557 (Tennessee Supreme Court, 1993).
45. David Peterson, "Child Abuse Cases Remain Tricky Terrain," *Star-Tribune* (October 16, 1994), 14A; "Ten Reasons Why It Happened" [Sidebar], *Star-Tribune* (October16, 1994), 14A.
46. Minnesota Attorney General, "Report on Scott County Investigations" (February 12, 1985). Popularly known as the Humphrey Report.
47. Philip Jenkins and Daniel Maier-Katkin, "From Salem to Jordan," *Augustus*, (1986), 9(6): 22.
48. Commission Established by Executive Order No. 85–10 Concerning Kathleen Morris, Scott County Attorney, "Report to Governor Rudy Perpich" (October, 1985). Popularly known as the Olson Commission after the chair, Judge Lynn Olson.
49. *Myers v. Morris*, 810 F.2d 1437 (8th cir. 1987).
50. Humphrey Report, 9.
51. Ross E. Cheit and Andrea Matthews, "Revisiting the Jordan Minnesota Cases," *Roger Williams University Law Review* (forthcoming, 2014).
52. Josephine Marcotty, "Bentzes Join Donahue to Talk About Abuse," *Minneapolis Star & Tribune* (January 16, 1985), 1.
53. Charlier and Downing, "Patterns Emerge," A3.
54. Debra Cassens Moss, "Are the Children Lying?" *ABA Journal*, (May 1, 1987), vol. 73.
55. Marianne Taylor, "State Calls Sex Abuse Charges Unfounded," *Chicago Tribune* (October 4, 1984).
56. Lynn Emmerman and Marianne Taylor, "'Expert' in Day-care Probe Can't Back up His Resume," *Chicago Tribune* (April 19, 1985); Lynn Emmerman and Marianne Taylor, "Day-care Probe Rife with Errors," *Chicago Tribune* (April 21, 1985).
57. There was no transcript made for appeal because the case ended in an acquittal. Under Illinois procedures, the original stenographic record stays with the court reporter, even when

the person retires. We were able to locate only one of the two court reporters from this case and accordingly could have only portions of the proceedings converted to hard copy.

58. Report of Proceedings, *State v. Parks*, Cook County Circuit Court, Second Division, Case No. 84C5544, September 23, 1985. Tr. 20–21.
59. As reported in Robert Enstad, "Doctors Saw 'Possible Abuse' of Pupil," *Chicago Tribune* (September 24, 1985).
60. Medical Report on Sophie Voigt. Jeffrey Grabenstein, M.D. (May 8, 1984).
61. Medical Report on Sophie Voigt, 2.
62. Supplemental Report, Polygraph Tech. Walsh, Chicago Police Department, RD#F 133–047 (April 15, 1984).
63. Quoted in Gary Wisby, "Janitor Not Guilty in Rape of Girl, 7; Parents Bitter," *Chicago Sun-Times* (October 3, 1984), 16.
64. Robert Enstad, "Janitor Cleared of 1 Sex Charge; 'I Have No Choice,' Judge Says." *Chicago Tribune* (October 3, 1985).
65. Lisa Leff, "Howard County Sex Abuse Trial Starts Today," *Washington Post* (March 16, 1987), 1. Charges in the original case were dropped "after the teenager was placed in a psychiatric hospital and ordered to stay away from the school." The county settled financially with families for failing to handle the complaint adequately.
66. Theresa E. Grace (children taken upstairs to Craig's office "three or four times a week") tr. 3–162; Theresa Louise Weyer ("we would send [disciplinary cases] up to Mrs. Craig's office" about five times a week) tr. 3–177–78; Shannon Kelly ("if the kids did something wrong we were to send them up to her office") tr. 3–189.
67. Karen Almonte, tr. 4–114. Cynthia Miller testified that the "usually gentle" Craig was "cold and angry" with children who were disruptive, and that she "did not understand" why Craig insisted on taking children upstairs. Tr. 4–141, 143.
68. Lisa Leff, "Child, Experts Cited in Craig Conviction," *Washington Post* (April 3, 1987), C1.
69. *Maryland v. Craig*, Dr. Shubin, tr. 2–170, 2–173.
70. There was considerable testimony about Craig obsessing over a "dowel stick" that was missing from a toy. The stick would be consistent with the injuries described by Dr. Shubin, who testified there was "remarkable consistency in patterns to these four injuries and each of them the genital tissue had an object rammed into it with enough force to cause an injury that we can see healed scars from." *State v. Craig*, Trial transcript, vol. VI (March 23, 1987), tr. 21.
71. *Maryland v. Craig*, Exhibit 5–15.
72. *Maryland v. Craig*, tr. VI-56 to 58.
73. *Maryland v. Craig*, 497 U.S. 836 (1990).
74. China Myers, "Jamal Craig Innocent in Child Abuse Case," *Baltimore Afro-American* (August 1, 1987): 1,2. The headline of this article conflates having charges dismissed with a finding of innocence.
75. Complaint, Washington Department of Social and Health Services, 1978. The doctor is described on the complaint as "Dr. Burham," without any designation of his first name. In none of the voluminous materials I located about this case was this doctor's name listed in full.
76. Cora Priest deposition, *T.R. v. Cora Priest's Day Care*, 1994.
77. Call for Service Report, Sequim Police Department, 1985.
78. Psychological/Psychiatric Evaluation of Ralph Priest, Washington State Department of Social and Health Services, 1985.
79. *Issues in Child Abuse Accusations*, 4(1), 32–44. 1992. Underwager and Wakefield use a pseudonym for Ralph Priest, but the facts match this case, and Hollida Wakefield confirmed by email correspondence that the case was Cora's Day Care and they were employed by the insurance company.
80. Charlier and Downing, "Legal Soundings Hit Same Depths from Case to Case," *Commercial Appeal* (January 1988), A15.
81. "Abuse Charges Against Day-Care Center Dropped," *Seattle-Post Intelligencer* (April 22, 1987).
82. Deborah Bybee and Carol T. Mowbray, "An Analysis of Allegations of Sexual Abuse in a Multi-Victim Day-Care Center Case," *Child Abuse & Neglect* (1993), 17: 774.

83. Unpublished opinion, *State v. Barkman*, Michigan Court of Appeals (September 13, 1988). The trial judge had applied a standard interpretation of the "rape shield" law to prevent inquiry into a complainant's sexual history. The defense wanted to inquire about an allegation the boy allegedly made about abuse by Rebecca Barkman.
84. "Probation Term Ends Smallworld Molestation Case," *UPI* (June 11, 1990, BC cycle). In announcing this deal, chief county prosecutor Dennis Wiley acknowledged that some parents were "not happy with the outcome." At the same time, he emphasized "the inherent problems in trying to resurrect a case that is now six years old."
85. There were also children who were never involved in the civil or criminal processes who apparently made disclosures concerning sexual abuse. The MDMH Report indicates that 62 children made explicit disclosures, meaning there were 24 such children who were not involved in civil or criminal proceedings. Their absence in any proceedings is impossible to interpret without further information. The MDMH report is based on "case records" documenting 1,393 official contacts with 106 children and their families. Bybee and Mowbray, "Analysis," 772.
86. MDMH report, viii.
87. A nine-page "Summary of DSS Records on Small World Victims," presumably prepared as part of the civil litigation, describes each child in brief. One child (H.C.) said, among other innocuous things, that "during lunch they took chickens to the farm" (2). This child did not say anything that indicated she had been sexually abused. Another child (M.P.) said "Richard hurt chickens and would cut their wings off." This boy also said that Richard went "potty" on his face behind the baseball diamond and there was "white stuff" on his face. There may have been more fantastic claims about chickens, but they did not characterize the case enough for there to be any reflection in a summary of each child.
88. Bybee and Mowbray, "Analysis," 774.
89. Subject Report, State of Michigan Department of State Police, Complaint No. 53-3736-84 (December 6, 1984), 4.
90. Mediation Summary, *Risenhoover v. Small World Pre-School*, Berrien County Circuit Court, Case No. 84-3573-NO-2 (September 2, 1986), 21.
91. Mediation Summary, *Risenhoover v. Small World Pre-School*, 21–23.
92. *Newsweek* (July 8, 1985). See also January 1986 *Redbook*; and David Hechler, *The Battle and the Backlash: The Child Sexual Abuse War* (Macmillan, 1989). None of these secondary sources are the primary source for any claims in this section. I obtained 490 pages of documents from the FBI investigation through the Freedom of Information Act, along with original documents saved by several sources at the time, including documents connected to the civil litigation.
93. Charlier and Downing, "Patterns Emerge," A3.
94. Emergency Care and Treatment (Medical Report) by Dr. David Suttle, July 27, 1984.
95. That is what the administration appears to have done in 1983 when an army employee, convicted in a court martial of killing a child, was given a dishonorable discharge but did not serve any time in jail. See Memorandum from Col. Richard E. Eckert, M.D., Chairman, Child Protection Case Management team to the Superintendent, West Point Military Academic, Subject: Appeal for Command Support on Child Abuse (8/1/83).
96. Memorandum from FBI NY to Director of FBI, November 23, 1984, 2.
97. Quoted in *Redbook*, 142.
98. The perpetrator was apparently Jeanette Martin's fourteen-year-old son. Newspaper stories indicate the boy was adjudicated in confidential proceedings in Family Court. He testified in the criminal trial that he raped the three-year-old at his mother's direction.
99. Dr. Jeffrey Gilbert's testimony about these findings is on transcript pages 11773–11789.
100. "Victims' Testimony Key to Child-Abuse Cases," *New York Times* (February 15, 1987).
101. Andrew Blum, Regional News, *UPI* (March 12, 1987).
102. *People v. Watt*, 84 N.Y.2d 948; 644 N.E.2d 1373 (Court of Appeals of the State of New York, 1994).
103. Members.shaw.ca/imaginarycrimes/jameswatt.htm. Quotation from "Victims' Testimony Key to Child Abuse Cases," *New York Times* (February 15, 1987).

104. *New York Times* (July 21, 1985) and *New York Times* (October 31, 1985). The fact that six children contracted venereal diseases was also mentioned in an Associated Press story that appeared in newspapers across the country in the end of March 1986. See e.g., "Testimony of Children Key in Trial," *Charlotte Observer* (March 31, 1986), 6A.
105. Quote from "Imaginary Crimes" website, which mentions that Watt tested negative for venereal disease but omits the fact that the test was ordered so long after the events that Watt's own lawyer argued, before the court order, that the "test was not relevant." UPI, August 2, 1985 (AM cycle).
106. Judith Levine, "Abuse of Justice," *Women's Review of Books* (June 1996), 8.
107. The twelve cases are (alphabetically) Figured/Hill, Friedman, Halsey, Malcom, Parkers, Perkins, Runyan, Schildmeyer, Smith, Souzas. Toward, and Watt.
108. One simply does not appear on the page claimed (Wilcox); the other (the Kellers) appears in a single phrase (where they are called the Kellners) not containing any facts about the case.
109. Nathan and Snedeker, *Satan's Silence*, 246.
110. The list includes Nancy Smith but not her co-defendant, Joseph Allen, who was implicated in the same case. Similarly, it includes Jenny Wilcox, but not her co-defendant Robert Aldridge. Since these cases are never discussed in the book, it is impossible to ascertain whether those distinctions were intentional or accidental. The convictions for both Smith and Allen have withstood post-conviction judicial challenges; as this book was being completed both were initiating petitions to the state clemency board. The convictions of Aldridge and Wilcox were set aside by a presiding judge in a proceeding where that remedy had not even been requested. The state chose not to appeal this unusual ruling. Although Aldridge and Wilcox claimed vindication from the outcome, this claim is contradicted by the outcome of their civil claim for damages. That case, which involved witnesses who were not present when the criminal charges were dismissed, resulted in a judicial decision specifically citing evidence of guilt. Before concluding that "the evidence fails to support their claims" for wrongful imprisonment, Judge Gregory J. Frost made a point of stating, quite bluntly, "the court is convinced that the plaintiffs engaged in criminal conduct, at least in relation with V. P. and C. B., for which the plaintiffs were initially charged." Accordingly, he concluded that "the evidence fails to support their claims" for wrongful imprisonment and he assessed costs against the petitioners, Aldridge and Wilcox. Judgment Entry, *Aldridge v. Ohio*, Case No. 98-0774, Court of Common Pleas, Montgomery County, Ohio.
111. Two of the four were major day-care cases: Amirault and Edenton. Both require extensive research. I have done much of that research for Amirault and some of the necessary research for Edenton. I plan to write about one or both in the future. The other two cases (Perkins and Souzas) were not day-care cases and they did not involve ritual abuse. I plan to write about one or both of those in the future as well.
112. My view is tentative because I have been unable to arrange for transcription of the four-day hearing that resulted in the decision described in footnote 110. The decision relies on the assessment of two witnesses whose testimony is critical to analyzing the case. The court reporter no longer has the stenographic tapes. The hearing was more than ten years ago, and state law requires stenographers to keep such records for only ten years. Nor have I been able to obtain the trial transcript from the case discussed in footnote 115.
113. The Wright articles were published in the *New Yorker* on May 17 and 24, 1993. Wright expanded those articles into a book called *Remembering Satan* (Knopf, 1994). This view of the case has been called into serious question in Karen A. Olio and William F. Cornell, "The Façade of Scientific Documentation: A Case Study of Richard Ofshe's Analysis of the Paul Ingram Case," *Psychology, Public Policy, and Law* (1998), 4: 1182.
114. Gardner relied entirely on newspaper accounts to support his conclusion that the jury was "gullible." But his summary of those accounts omitted these two sentences from one story: "A Rutherford County doctor who examined the boy said it was the worst case of sexual abuse he had seen in 25 years. Another Rutherford County doctor who examined the girls said they also showed signs of sexual abuse." *Times-News* on February 3, 1994. Testimony cited in the state's appellate brief indicates that one boy's "anus muscles were so stretched that he had severe problems with bowel control."

115. This case is particularly unusual because the court's copy of the transcript either is missing or is the one the defense lawyer has in his possession; moreover, the original court reporter (who is duty-bound to save the underlying materials) says she threw them away. The reluctance of the defense lawyer to provide me with access to the transcript, while working on an appeal, is understandable; his duties are to his client. But this speaks volumes about what assurances Snedeker had that his clients would be protected by Nathan's writing.
116. The local broadcast can be viewed here: http://youtu.be/Y2cSpKPY1XM.
117. Detective Perez was criticized for being a foster parent to the initial children who made charges in the case, which could give rise to a conflict of interest. Perez was also criticized for pressuring and coercing other children. Mike Barber and Andrew Schneider, "Detective a Man Who Charmed, Harmed; Trouble Follows on and off Job," *Seattle Post-Intelligencer* (February 23, 1998), A7; "With Every Step, Rights Were Trampled," *Seattle Post-Intelligencer* (February 25, 1998). In the Everett case, the first in the cluster of Wenatchee cases, the Court of Appeals of Washington eventually ordered the Chelan County Superior Court to conduct a hearing to determine whether the state's investigative techniques improperly influenced the statements and testimony of M.E. and her sister D.E. After six days of testimony, the court "found it likely that M.E.'s and the other children's statements were obtained by the State's use of improper interrogation techniques." The Court of Appeals concurred with this decision, citing evidence that Detective Perez had "refused to believe the children when they denied abuse," and Idella Everett's testimony that she was "bullied by Detective Perez" and that Perez "implied that he would harm" her child. The Court of Appeals concluded that "the evidence of Detective Perez's tactics is sufficient on its face to support a finding of impropriety." *In the Matter of the Application from Relief from Personal Restraint of Harold E.*, Court of Appeals of Washington, Division Three, Panel Seven (September 15, 1998). 1998 Wash. App. LEXIS 1351.
118. [Sidebar] "Kern's Long List," in "Stolen Innocence, Part II," *Bakersfield Californian* (January 28, 1985).
119. Edward Humes, *Mean Justice: A Town's Terror, a Prosecutor's Power, a Betrayal of Innocence* (Simon & Schuster, 1999).
120. Maggie Jones, "Who Was Abused?" *New York Times Magazine* (September 19, 2004).
121. Humes, *Mean Justice*, 265. Nathan and Snedeker's chapter on the Bakersfield cases is called "Beginnings: Mary Ann Barbour."
122. Dr. Squyres testified that when she informed Deborah McCuan that her daughter had been sexually abused, McCuan responded "I don't believe that" and said she felt the injuries could have been caused by falling on a fence. *State v. Kniffen*, tr. 2666.
123. In the Matter of Darla and Bobbie McCuan. Report of Social Service Worker, 10.
124. The April 4, 1979, Medical Report by Dr. Fred Miller, Valley Medical Clinic, People's Exhibit No. 47, is discussed by Dr. Carol Squyres at tr. 2654–2663. The 1979 report indicated: "large ecchymosis with no hematoma. Edema of the labial area. No cuts or abrasions seen." Tr. 2657–2658. In lay terms, Bobbie was black and blue in the labia area of the vagina. The lack of cuts or abrasions is why Dr. Squyres concluded those injuries were "not consistent" with falling on a fence. Tr. 2662. The four hundred pages of testimony by Dr. Squyres is not cited or acknowledged by Humes or Nathan and Snedeker, who wrote about the case in some detail. (Nathan and Snedeker obliquely mention "early findings in the case" without any citation or details. *Satan's Silence*, 188.)
125. Dr. Squyres testified that when she informed Deborah McCuan that "a fall" could not have caused the injuries she observed in 1980, McCuan "was not happy with what I said and had nothing more to say and hung up." Tr. 2666. Nevertheless, in a version of the Kniffen-McCuan case that she prepared for a class at McGill University, Bruck characterized Deborah McCuan as "concerned enough to follow-up by getting counseling for her daughter." She provided no documentation for this characterization. Bruck, "Kern County Assignment," Psychology 204-438A (The Child Witness) McGill University (1997).
126. Crime or Incident Report, Kern County Sheriff's Office, KC 81–41195 (October 20, 1980), 3.
127. Ruling on Evidentiary Hearing in Habeas Corpus Matter, *In re the Matter of Scott and Brenda Kniffen*, Kern County Superior Court, No. HC 5528 A (August 12, 1996).

128. Decision and Findings of Fact, Ruling on Evidentiary Hearing in Habeas Corpus Matter, *In re the Matter of Scott and Brenda Kniffen*, Kern County Superior Court, No. HC-5528-A (August 12, 1996) 4.
129. Humes, *Mean Justice*, 271.
130. *State v. Kniffen*, Dr. Woodling testimony (September 15, 1983), tr. 623–625.
131. Joyce Adams, et. al.: "Guidelines for Medical Care of Children Who May Have Been Sexually Abused." *Journal of Pediatric & Adolescent Gynecology* (2002) 20:163–172 See also text and accompanying footnote 135.
132. There are no references in the medical literature to Dr. Paul's "lateral traction test," described at tr. 10410–10411. Nor do any accepted medical protocols call for inserting fingers to test anal tone, described at tr. 10326. The results of such a "test" would be too subjective. Dr. Paul's testimony contains many other dubious statements. He employed several terms that do not appear anywhere in the medical literature, including "frenulum" and "vaginal bulge."
133. Judge Stuebbe also noted "there is disagreement over whether Woodling observed dilatation of over 12 mm" (9). One would need to obtain the slides to allow an independent medical assessment of this disagreement. Those slides were created by a colposcope—the device that Nathan condemns.
134. Humes claims that Barbour had engaged in "two years of amateur gynecological examinations," noting the defense asserted on appeal that Barbour may have caused the injuries. Humes, *Mean Justice*, 266–267. There is no evidence in the trial transcripts to support these assertions, also made by Nathan and Snedeker, which likely explains why the only citation is to a defense brief. Humes, 555, 48. Briefs are not findings of fact; to the contrary, they tend to involve *assertions* about the facts, sometimes linked by citations to actual evidence in the case. The assertions about Barbour do not include this kind of support.
135. Adams et. al., "Guidelines," 166.
136. Squyres, tr. 2643. She also observed Gardnerella and interpreted it as evidence of sexual activity. Though that is possible, Gardnerella can also be caused by poor hygiene or be an unexplained finding in a non-abused child.
137. The slides were entered as exhibits at trial, but they are not part of the permanent record. I was unable to obtain them and therefore could not arrange for an independent medical assessment of this testimony. Such an assessment could have shed light on the testimony about anal fissures. It is not clear from the testimony whether Dr. Squyres saw fissures, which would be an indication of abuse, or normal folds.
138. Squyres, tr. 2860.
139. Nathan and Snedeker, *Satan's Silence*, 189.
140. Judge Stuebbe said: "It is clear that the families of the petitioners have used their own techniques to 'adjust' the stories told by the Kniffen boys over the years." He went on to find: "The Kniffen boys themselves have changed their stories so many times, both before and after adulthood, both orally and in writing, that present testimony is found to be an indecipherable mix of memory, wish, remorse and guilty." Ruling on Evidentiary Hearing, 3.
141. Ruling on Evidentiary Hearing, 6.
142. *People v. Stoll*, 49 Cal. 3d 1136 (1989, reversing the convictions against defendants Grafton and Palomo, upheld by the Court of Appeal).
143. "The Myth of the Sex Offender Profile," Center for Sex Offender Management, http://www.csom.org/train/etiology/3/3_1.htm#backtrack2.
144. *People v. Stoll*, 49 Cal. 3d 1136 (1989) at 1163. (Lucas, C.J. dissent).
145. *Self v. State*, Petition for Writ of Habeas Corpus, Case No. HC-10529A, Kern County Superior Court, Metropolitan Division. March 10, 2008.
146. Gretchen Wenner and James Burger, "County Settles Overturned Molestation Suit for $5.5 Million," *Bakersfield Californian* (September 15, 2009). "It doesn't come out of anyone's budget," the county's chief deputy counsel is quoted as saying. The settlement was paid entirely by insurance money. The article also indicates that Stoll's lawyers acknowledged that Stoll's son has never recanted his claim.
147. Justice Committee Press Release posted by Carol Hopkins, circulated to "Fellow Witchhunters" on the Witchhunt List on September 12, 1995. Subject: Help on Kern County Cases.

148. De Young cites an internet-based account called "Frame Up Through Fantasy" as her source for concluding that Grant Self's conviction should have been overturned. She labels this source "an exposé," without providing any independent analysis. This is another example of the witch-hunt narrative growing and expanding through easily available, but unreliable, "information" on the web. De Young, *The Day Care Ritual Abuse Moral Panic*, 232, fn. 2.
149. Maggie Jones, "Who Was Abused?" *New York Times Magazine* (September 19, 2004).
150. *State v. Self*, Supplemental Clerk's Transcript on Appeal, DCA No. F037537, California Court of Appeal, Fifth Appellate District. July 18, 2000.
151. *People v. Manners*, 180 Cal. App. 3d 826, 225 Cal. Rptr. 798 (1986).
152. *People v. Manners* (1986).
153. In an account of the case circulated on the WITCHHUNT-List, Nicholas Peters states that Self "continued to rent the pool house" after he moved to live with his girlfriend and her children, in order "to comply in form with the terms of his parole." Peters asserts that Stoll was not aware of his parole status, or presumably of the fact that Self was not actually living in the pool house. Nicholas Peters, "Frame Up Through Fantasy." Revised version posted to Witchunt-L on April 15, 1997.
154. OCRT cite http://www.religioustolerance.org/ra_baker.htm.
155. There were apparently photographs in more than just the 1979 case. An evaluation report prepared in 2000 states: "He denied ever taking picture of children, other than those in 1979. He said since they had pictures showing him engaging in sexual activities, he can't deny he did it, although he said he doesn't recall doing it." WIC 6600 Evaluation Report on Grant Self, June 5, 2000, 53. The report constitutes 32–68 of the Supplemental Clerk's Transcript on Appeal, *People v. Self*, Fifth Appellate District of California (DCA No. F037537).
156. WIC 6600 Evaluation Report on Grant Self, June 5, 2000, 54.
157. Lois Henry, "Kern County Settles Last of Molestations Conviction Suits," *Bakersfield Californian* (March 26, 2013).
158. Judgment, *State v. Self*, Case No. 125187FE (Oregon Circuit Court, Jackson County) (July 17, 2013), 1–3.
159. For details about his case see, Kathy Freeman, "Photos of Sex Acts Freeze the 'Moment' for Child Molester," *Bakersfield Californian* (January 30, 1985). See also testimony of Dr. Robert Halon, who was called by the defense in a 1999 hearing but testified that Bishop told him "there wasn't anything wrong with" adults having sex with children. Reporter's Transcript, *State v. Bishop*, California Fifth Appellate District (March 2, 1999), tr. 104.
160. Humes, *Mean Justice*, 286. See also *People v. Pitts*, 223 Cal. App. 3d. 606 (1990). By 1994, all six of the children connected to this case had reportedly recanted. *Pitts v. County of Kern*, 17 Cal. 4th 340; 949 Cal. Rptr. 2d 823; 1998 Cal. LEXIS 21 (1998), 345–346. The Pitts and the McCuans are the only ones named in a March 2013 story in the *Bakersfield Californian* who did not succeed in collecting *any* money from the county through civil suits. I have not examined the case against George and Anthony Cox but Humes, who criticized many of the child sexual abuse prosecutions in Kern Conty from that time, described the evidence against them as "compelling." Humes, *Mean Justice*, 486. The Coxes succeeded in having their convictions overturned, however, and were part of a multi-million dollars settlement with the county. Lois Henry, " Kern County Settles Last of Molestations Conviction Suits," *Bakersfield Californian* (March 25, 2013).
161. Jay Matthews, "In California, a Question of Abuse," *Washington Post* (May 31, 1989), D1.
162. *Commonwealth v. Baran*, 74 Mass. App. Ct. 256, 265, fn. 11 (2009).
163. One-page document, stamped "Patient Allergic to Penicllin," without date or heading, containing Baran's name, birthdate, and notations for visits as an adolescent.
164. In the competency hearing on January 18, Angela B. gave incorrect answers to many questions about the difference between truth and a lie. Her direct testimony on January 25 was even less responsive. In a five-page exchange in the transcript, she refuses to "promise to tell what really happened" or answer questions, saying only that "she doesn't like it." *Commmonwealth v. Baran*, 85–827, tr. 175–80.
165. Competency Hearing, *Commonwealth v. Baran* (January 18, 1985), tr. 25.
166. Mehegan, "Firm Convictions," *Boston Globe* (October 1, 2000).

167. *Commonwealth v. Baran*, 2006 Mass. Super. LEXIS 393 (June 16, 2006, granting a new trial) affirmed by *Commonwealth v. Baran* 2009 Mass. App. LEXIS 652 (May 15, 2009). Charges were subsequently dismissed. See also, Ross E. Cheit, "The Blight of the Baran Case," *Berkshire-Eagle* (July 16, 2004).
168. JoAnne Marez, "BI Mother Testifies 4-year-old Was Abused," *The Sun* (October 1, 1986), 6.
169. *State v. Runyan*, Kitsap County Superior Court, Washington (No. 85-1-00463-7).
170. Mark Pendergrast, *Victims of Memory: Sex Abuse Accusations and Shattered Lives (Upper Access Book, 1996)*, 387.
171. JoAnne Marez, "Day Care Operator Convicted of Rape, Sexual Abuse." *The Sun* (January 18, 1986), 1. See specifically *State v. Runyan*, tr. 1668–9, 1681–2, 1709.
172. "Woman Gets 13-year Term for Sex Abuse," *Spokesman Review* (March 13, 1986), A13.
173. JoAnne Marez, "Day Care Operator's Attorney Suddenly Withdraws," *The Sun* (March 5, 1986), 1.
174. Unpublished Opinion, *State v. Runyan*, Washington Court of Appeals (Division Two) (No. 9719-2-II) (July 8, 1998), 8.
175. Unpublished Opinion, *State v. Runyan*, 5.
176. The decision requiring the Superior Court hearing is *In the Matter of Personal Restraint of Debbie Runyan*, 121 Wash. 2d 432, 853 P.2d 424 (Washington Supreme Court, 1993).
177. Quotes in both sentences from JoAnne Marez, "Girls Says She Saw Children Tied Up," *The Sun* (January 16, 1986), 2.
178. Findings of Fact and Conclusions of Law, Judge Rosanne Buckner (signed October 13, 1995), *State v. Runyan* (No. 85-1-00463-7), 3. See also Order Denying Defendant's Motion to Vacate the Conviction on Count Three (October 18, 1995).
179. Transcription, "Frame by Frame: 'Capturing the Friedmans' Workshop," October 18, 2003 (New York City), 11, 20. Jarecki has always said he stumbled into the sexual abuse story after approaching David Friedman—Arnold's son and Jesse's brother—to make a film about birthday clowns. If Jarecki's story is true, it would be interesting to know how Nathan became "an intermediary," why it was even necessary, what she did in that role, and why it was never fully disclosed.
180. Jarecki told an audience in New York: "I generally don't mention his name just because, I don't know. I just don't. He's not in the film because he didn't want to be in the film." Transcription, "Frame by Frame," 32. Note: when the movie was later released on DVD there was an "extra feature" that included Goldstein.
181. Friedman post-conviction motion, 25.
182. Sharon Waxman, "Victims Say Film on Molesters Distorts Facts," *New York Times* (February 24, 2004; "Asked repeatedly by The Times whether he knew of a lie-detector test that Jesse Friedman took and failed while he protested his innocence in the 1980's, Mr. Jarecki said he did not. But in an interview on a Web site, Mr. Jarecki spoke in detail about the lie-detector test, saying he considered it inconclusive.").
183. "What Was Left Out? A Critique of 'Capturing the Friedmans'" http://youtu.be/qjYWOZgMbHQ.
184. Nathan, "Ritual Child Cases Need Investigation." Witchhunt post (May 28, 1994).
185. Jesse Friedman later claimed he gave this interview because he thought it would help improve his treatment in prison. I have never heard of anyone, before or after this assertion, claim that admitting one is a child molester would somehow be useful in prison.
186. The Conviction Integrity Review covered this issue in detail, including a full-page reproduction of a hand-written statement by Jesse Friedman on February 6, 1989 admitting that "against the advice of my attorney, Peter Panaro, Esq." that "I will voluntarily appear on the Gerlado Rivera show." "Conviction Integrity Review," 44–46.
187. As described in Paul Vitello, "Interesting, But Not Quite Accurate," *Newsday* (July 23, 2003), A8.
188. Jesse Friedman protested on his own website, created after the film, that the computers in the classroom "were not loaded with pornographic video games. They were on five inch floppy disks in a file box." http://www.freejesse.net/component/content/article/2-regular-page/23-faqs (In answer to "What about the pornographic computer games?").
189. Corey Kilgannon, "Hypnosis Rigged Sex Case Against Him, Man Says," *New York Times*, October 20, 2007.

190. Affidavit of Joyce W. Parks, Ph.D., *People v. Friedman*, April 14, 2004.
191. Transcript of Motion, *Friedman v. Rehal* (October 3, 2007), tr. 12.
192. Waxman, "Victims Say Film on Molesters Distorts Facts."
193. Affidavit of Andrew Jarecki, *People v. Friedman*, paragraph 4.
194. *Friedman v. Rehal*, 618 F.3d 142 (2d Cir. 2010) (stating there was a "reasonable likelihood" that Friedman was wrongfully convicted).
195. Nassau County District Attorney, "Conviction Integrity Review: *People v. Jesse Friedman*," June 2013. The full report and a 917-page appendix are available at www.nassauda.org.
196. Conviction Integrity Review, 37–39 (discussing the evaluation by Dr. David Pogge, a psychiatrist and a specialist in the psychopathology of teenage sex offender diagnosis); 116–118 (discussing the statements of Howard Friedman). It should be noted that whether or not one finds Howard Friedman's hearsay statement persuasive, it would not be admissible in a criminal case.
197. Conviction Integrity Review, 83–86. The Review Team indicated that the filmmakers "were not forthcoming with evidence under their control" and that although Jarecki promised to provide access to information he claimed "would greatly impact the re-investigation," that he never shared key interviews, including those with Jesse Friedman and Ross Goldstein. (153).
198. One of the reasons the review team found the recantation unreliable is that it was contradicted by notes from a conversation between Goldstein and Marc Smerling, a producer of *Capturing the Friedmans*, who was trying to convince Goldstein to appear in the movie. Smerling told Goldstein "we have found quite a bit of exonerating stuff" and Goldstein characterized such evidence as "completely untrue" and said that he could not help Jesse. Goldstein was "unable to explain" these statements when he later recanted. Conviction Integrity Review, 137. (Notably, the filmmakers did not provide the notes of that conversation to the review team.) The report also details how Goldstein's recent recantation is contradicted by statements from Witness 29, a close friend of his from sixth grade through high school. See 140–143.
199. "Statement of the Friedman Advisory Panel," iii. This statement is included as a preface to the report.
200. "Subject of Oscar-nominated 'Capturing the Friedmans' vows fight for exoneration will go on," Associated Press (June 25, 2013).
201. Presentence and Intake Report, Washington Department of Correction. January 5, 1988, 2. Exhibits 23 and 25 in Clark County Prosecuting Attorney's Office Opposition to the Petition for Clemency by Marilynn Rose Malcom (August 15, 1997).
202. Interview and Contact Summary, Office of the Clark County Sheriff, MC #593, 3. Exhibit D in Petition for Clemency by Marilynn Malcom (August 15, 1997).
203. Interview and Contact Summary, Office of the Clark County Sheriff, MC #593, 3. Exhibit D in Petition for Clemency by Marilynn Malcom (August 15, 1997).
204. Testimony of Dr. Brigitte Mengelberg, Exhibit H in Petition for Clemency by Marilynn Malcom (August 15, 1997).
205. Utility Report, Clark County Sheriff's Office, MC #593 (April 20, 1987), 2. Contained within Exhibit D in Petition for Clemency by Marilynn Malcom (August 15, 1997).
206. Brief of Appellant, *Malcom v. State*, No. 11735-5-II (Washington Court of Appeals; September 19, 1988), 3.
207. Psychological/Psychosexual Evaluation of Marilynn Malcom (December 7, 1987), 8. Exhibit 25 in Clark County Prosecuting Attorney's Office Opposition to the Petition for Clemency by Marilynn Rose Malcom (August 15, 1997). There was additional evidence of Malcom's dishonesty in court records. Her bail was revoked after she violated the stipulation that she live at the residence of Cheryl Ducett, a professional counselor. Ducett called the court after Malcom went missing for a week. She then told prosecutors: "Now I believe she (Lynn, the defendant) has a sociopathic personality disorder." She stated further that "based upon the things she has learned about Lynn Malcom since she took responsibility for her, that she no longer wants to take responsibility for her care." Motion and Affidavit for Bench Warrant, *State v. Malcom* (August 18, 1987), 2.

208. Marilynn Malcom, "Clemency Denied," *The Columbian* (September 26, 1997), B8. ("The report by Dr. Steve Jensen was not accepted by Judge Dean Morgan.")
209. Paragraph 4, page 2, specifically states, "This finding is based upon the combined factors of two psychological reports corroborated by the facts presented at trial." Findings of Fact and Conclusions of Law, *State v. Malcom* (No. 87-1-00339-6).
210. Unpublished opinion, *State v. Malcom*, Washington Court of Appeals (February 13, 1991).
211. Clark County Prosecuting Attorney's Office Opposition to the Petition for Clemency by Marilyn Rose Malcom, August 15, 1997, 19.
212. Affidavit of Scott Campbell Re: Attempt to Interview Jane Malcom. *State v. Malcom*. August 8, 1997. 2. Exhibit 28 in Clark County Prosecuting Attorney's Office Opposition to the Petition for Clemency by Marilynn Rose Malcom (August 15, 1997).
213. Minutes of Meeting of September 5, 1997. Clemency and Pardon Board, Office of the Governor, State of Washington, 11.
214. Affidavit of Kevin Malcom, Exhibit 9 in Clark County Prosecuting Attorney's Office Opposition to the Petition for Clemency by Marilynn Rose Malcom (August 15, 1997), 2 (lines 16–20).
215. Affidavit of Rebecca Neville, Exhibit 8 in Clark County Prosecuting Attorney's Office Opposition to the Petition for Clemency by Marilynn Rose Malcom (August 15, 1997), 1, 3.
216. Minutes of Meeting of September 5, 1997. Clemency and Pardon Board, Office of the Governor, State of Washington, 16.
217. Jill Taylor, "Shocking Actions Raised Suspicions About Glendale, Parents Testify," *Palm Beach Post* (June 13, 1989), 1B. See also Complaint Affidavit, Stuart Police Department (February 29, 1988), attachment, 1.
218. Complaint Affidavit, Stuart Police Department (February 29, 1988), attachment, 2.
219. Complaint Affidavit, Stuart Police Department (February 29, 1988), 3.
220. Jill Taylor, "Downfall of an 'English Gentleman,'" *Palm Beach Post* (January 15, 1989), 1A.
221. Jill Taylor, "Prospective Toward Juror to Be Witness, Clerk Says Child-Sex Suspect Bought Polaroid Camera," *Palm Beach Post* (June 1, 1989), 1B.
222. Taylor, "Prospective Toward Juror," 1B.
223. Jill Taylor, "Police Search for Videos in Child-Sex Case," *Palm Beach Post* (January 5, 1989), 1B.
224. Taylor, "Police Search for Videos," 1B.
225. Jill Taylor, "Glendale Case Settled Before Trial,"*Palm Beach Post* (June 5, 1996), 1B.
226. In "Another Look at Moral Panics," De Young states that she included only cases where "there are sufficient archival data in the form of court transcripts, legal briefs, investigative reports, interview transcript, and local and national news articles to assess the case" (259). The bibliography for this article does not cite any court transcripts, legal briefs, investigative reports, or interview transcripts from the Toward case. Since the newspaper coverage alone is insufficient for concluding that this was a false conviction, it is unclear on what basis De Young assessed the case and reached this conclusion.
227. "Glendale Montessori School Case Resurfaces," False Memory Syndrome Foundation Newsletter (Spring 2008) 17(2), 3–8. These snippets constitute the vast majority of an article that has fourteen footnotes, but there is not a single footnote for the interview. This interview is not part of the public record. Without additional information it is impossible to check its accuracy or context.
228. Transcript of Proceedings for Change of Plea and Sentencing, *State v. Toward*, Martin County Circuit Court, Florida (Case Nos. 88-927-CF, 88-926-CF, 88-285-CF, June 14, 1989).
229. Meredith Maran, *My Lie: A True Story of False Memory* (Jossey-Bass, 2010), 214–216. There is no indication in the book that Maran posed any questions about the safety deposit box, the cowboy hats, the character evidence, or the reports to the child abuse registry before the case broke. Demonstrating her nonjournalistic approach, Maran later told an interviewer how much she admired Toward's "courage" and hoped her "meetings with Mrs. Toward over the past year" had lent her "a bit of strength." Interview by Margaret Renki (www.chapter16.org).
230. Exhibits D and E, *In re: The Commitment of James Toward*, Martin County Circuit Court (Petition No. 99-0517-CAR) July 19, 1999.
231. http://ra-info.org/faqs/ra-convictions/.

232. Hubert, C. (1989). "Day-care Abuse Stuns Iowa Town."*Daily Herald*, December 4.
233. *State v. Schildmeyer*, tr. 327–337.
234. Unpublished opinion, *State v. Schildmeyer* (Court of Appeals of Iowa). December 27, 1990, 2.
235. Unpublished opinion, *State v. Schildmeyer*, 5–7.
236. Correspondence from Virginia Barchman, Assistant Attorney General, Iowa Dept. of Justice, to James Nussle, Delaware County Attorney, August 13, 1990, 1.
237. Unpublished opinion, *State v. Schildmeyer*, 8.
238. Allison Hall, "DCI Joins Child-abuse Investigation," *Des Moines Register* (October 12, 1989), 1M.
239. Correspondence from Virginia Barchman, 2.
240. Correspondence from Virginia Barchman, 4.
241. Front page, Witch-Hunt Information Center. Hosted while Jonathan Harris was affiliated with MIT at web.mit.edu/afs/athena.mit.edu/user/h/a/harris/.../witchhunt.html.
242. *State v. Figured*, 116 N.C. App. 1; 446 S.E.2d 838 (Court of Appeals of North Carolina, 1994). This opinion was upheld by the North Carolina Supreme Court. 339 N.C. 617, 454 S.E.2d 261 (1995). The court recently upheld, without a published opinion, the dismissal of Figured's effort to appeal his conviction post-conviction. 718 S.E.2d 404 (November 9, 2011).
243. *State v. Figured*, Trial tr. 511–520.
244. *State v. Figured*, Trial tr. 524.
245. *State v. Figured*, Trial tr. 585–608.
246. Gary Cartwright, "The Innocent and the Damned,"*Texas Monthly* (April 1994), 22(2): 100.
247. *Keller v. State*, No. 3-92-603-CR and No. 3-92-604-CR, Court of Appeals, Third District of Texas (October 26, 1994), slip opinion, 2.
248. *State v. Keller*, November 17, 1992, Trial tr. 167.
249. *State v. Keller*, November 17, 1992, Trial tr. 184, lines 16–17.
250. The substance of this paragraph comes from that story. See Denise Gamino and Pamela Ward, "Speaking the Unspeakable: Nightmares of Fran's Day Care Stalk Families," *Austin American-Statesman*, December 13, 1992, 1.
251. The case was included on a "Conviction List" of "Ritual Abuse cases" compiled by Believe the Children. The single citation provided to support the claim is the lengthy newspaper article after the criminal case was over. The list is still on the Web at http://ra-info.org/faqs/ra-convictions/.
252. Denise Gamino, "5-year-old Testifies in Day-care Abuse Case," *Austin American-Statesman* (November 19, 1992), 1.
253. Pamela Ward, "Charges Dropped in Child Abuse Case," Austin American Statesmen, B1 (quoting Assistant D.A. Byran Case that "it was not a prosecutable case").
254. *Keller v. State*, Court of Appeals, Third District of Texas, 2.
255. *Nash v. Keller*, Fourth Amended Original Complaint (September 29, 1995), 53rd Judicial District, Travis County Texas, No. 93-10045, 2.
256. "Difficult Child Abuse Line," editorial, *Austin American-Statesman* (January 12, 1988), A6.
257. Cartwright, "The Innocent and the Damned," *Texas Monthly* (April 1994).
258. Cartwright, "The Innocent and the Damned."
259. Jordan Smith, "Believing the Children,"*Austin Chronicle* (March 27, 2009).
260. Jonathan Harris, "Ritual Abuse Is Alive and Well in Western Massachusetts," posting to Witch-hunt list on June 10, 1994.
261. More information about this and many other details of the case are elaborated in Cheit, "Legend of Robert Halsey."
262. *Commonwealth v. Halsey*, Trial tr. 4:626.
263. The National Center for Reason and Justice, http://ncrj.org/robert-halsey/.
264. *State v. Smith*, 1996 Ohio App. LEXIS 241 (Court of Appeals of Ohio, January 24, 1996); *State v. Allen*, 1996 Ohio App. LEXIS 385 (Court of Appeals of Ohio, February 7, 1996). The testimony about the 1985 child rape was allowed because there were striking similarities to the allegations in the Head Start case. Allen had "parties" for the girl, and he tied her up before sexually assaulting her.
265. They were entered as State Exhibits 3 and 9, respectively, at trial.

266. The proceeding was based on the defense claim that the judgment of conviction had never been made final because it did not contain an explicit statement of the "manner of conviction"—that the defendants had been found guilty by jury. Judge Carr, in a dissent that agreed with the outcome of the appellate court, reasoned that this claim "elevates form over substance to a new level" and that since it was apparent to the defendants "and to anybody who glanced at the record" that the conviction was by jury, the resentencing hearing itself was improper. The majority of the court simply found that the resentencing judge had no authority to vacate the sentences. *State v. Allen*, 2010 Ohio 2990 (Court of Appeals of Ohio, Ninth Judicial District, June 30, 2010).
267. *State v. Allen*, 128 Ohio St. 3d 442; 2011 Ohio 1838 (2011).
268. Smith served approximately fifteen years in prison. Visiting Judge Virgil Sinclair resentenced her to twelve years, meaning that Smith would not return to prison. Smith agreed, as part of this deal, not to sue for wrongful imprisonment. Brad Dicken, "Deal Means Nancy Smith Will Remain Free," *Chronicle-Telegram* (June 4, 2013).
269. Kaylee Remington, "Parole Board Votes Against Pardon for Nancy Smith," *Morning Journal* (August 9, 2013). That recommendation was passed on to Governor John Kasich who had not made a final decision when this book was being copy edited.
270. Brad Dicken, "Joseph Allen Cuts Deal for Reduced Prison Sentence," *Chronicle-Telegram* (October 2, 2013); Kaylee Remington, "Head Start case: Joseph Allen Sent Back to Prison," *Morning Journal* (October 1, 2013). The recommendation against Allen's clemency petition was passed on to Governor John Kasich who had not made a final decision when this book was being copy edited.

Chapter Four

1. See, e.g., Pamela Freyd, "Problem Is with Priorities, Not Denial," Letter to the editor, *Toronto Star* (September 28, 1996), C3.
2. De Young, "Another Look at Moral Panics," 260.
3. Debbie Nathan, "Sex, the Devil, and Day Care," *Village Voice* (September 29, 1987), 23.
4. Richard Beck, "Willis and Happiness,"*n + 1* (November 18, 2011).
5. Debbie Nathan, "What McMartin Started," *Village Voice* (June 12, 1990).
6. The Kniffen and McCuan cases in Kern County definitely predated McMartin. The charges were brought in 1982. But Charlier and Downing tagged the Kern County cases with a June 1984 date, corresponding to the charges in a much later case, and placed McMartin first.
7. Mitchell Landsberg, "Daycare Teacher Charged with Sex Abuse," *Philadelphia Inquirer* (May 11, 1983), A2.
8. "Convicted Child Abuser Waives Hearing on Similar Felony Charges," UPI (September 25, 1981, BC cycle).
9. "Ex-School Operator Gets Term in Facility for Sex Offenders," *Philadelphia Inquirer* (April 27, 1984).
10. "Charges Filed in Niles Twp. Day-Care Case," *Detroit Free Press* (October 2m 1984), 8C. Guilty plea indicated in Berrien County Justice System Public Access Defendant History Report, Person ID: 40001533. Accessed June 15, 2000.
11. Findings of Fact, Conclusions of Law and Judgment, *Iowa v. Warnock*, Iowa District Court for Polk County Criminal (November 5, 1982). Warnock was charged again in 1991 with sexually abusing young children in her care. State investigators found "as many as 10 cases of possible abuse" but most of the children were too young to testify. There were evidence problems in the case, including a defective search warrant, and charges were dropped in exchange for her "agreement to follow a judge's order and stop caring for children without their parents present." Lane Beauchamp, "Child Abuse Charges Dismissed Against Day-care Operator," *Kansas City Star* (February 4, 1992), A10. Associated Press, "Parents Ask for Help of Officials to Reopen Miller County case," *Kansas City Star* (February 5, 1992), C6.
12. Gregory Byrnes, "N.J. Man Charged in Child Abuse," *Philadelphia Inquirer* (October 17, 1981), B3. See also "Sex Crime Children Abuse Sentence," *Philadelphia Inquirer* (April 27, 1984), B2.

13. UPI, Domestic News; San Diego, California (November 4, 1982, BC cycle). Hetherington's parole eleven years later received more widespread publicity. See e.g., Judi Villa, "Arizona Rejects Child Molester; California Con's Request Refused," *Arizona Republic* (February 10, 1994), B1.
14. Regional News: New Mexico, UPI (June 23, 1982, BC cycle); Regional News: New Mexico, UPI (February 18, 1983, AM cycle).
15. Lorraine Bennett, "Child Abuse Probe Reveals Litany of Injury, Deprivation,"*Los Angeles Times* (December 8, 1981), 3, 18–19.
16. Nathan and Snedeker, 279, fn. 70. (Criticizing Waterman et. al. because their study "lumps children and parents in its Manhattan Beach sample to those from a verified sexual-abuse case from another state.")
17. "Sex and Satan." [Interview with Debbie Nathan.] *The Guide* (May 1996).
18. Finkelhor and Williams, *Nursery Crimes: Sexual Abuse in Day Care* (Sage, 1988).
19. Finkelhor and Williams, *Nursery Crimes*, 17–20.
20. Finkelhor and Williams, *Nursery Crimes*, 61–63.
21. In *Jeopardy in the Courtroom*, Ceci and Bruck are dismissive of the study of 270 cases because, in their words, it includes "many" cases where there was no "hard evidence" (27). The authors then point to the McMartin and Michaels cases as their proof.
22. All quotes from *Seering v. Department of Social Services*, 194 Cal. App. 3d 298; 239 Cal. Rptr. 422 (Court of Appeal of California, First Appellate District, 1987).
23. *State v. Walter*, Change of Plea (San Diego Municipal Court, Department No. 18, Case No. F91843).
24. Frederick Crews letter, *New York Review of Books* (January 12, 1995).
25. *Fischer v. Walter*, Verified Petition of Guardian Ad Litem for Compromise of Disputed Claim of Minor (Case No. 585495), 4–5.
26. "Day Care Operators Face Abuse Charges," *Miami Herald* (April 6, 1985), 2D. See also *State v. Mitchell*, Judgment of Guilt Placing Defendant in Community Control, filed March 26, 1986. (Case No. CRC85-03645CFANO-D).
27. Proposed Decision, *In the Matter of Bo Peep Day Care Nursery*, Maryland Department of Health and Mental Hygiene (Docket No. 88-M-028) (August 23, 1988), 3.
28. Proposed Decision, *In the Matter of Bo Peep Day Care Nursery*, 7.
29. Proposed Decision, *In the Matter of Bo Peep Day Care Nursery*, 38.
30. *Maryland Department of Human Resources v. Bo Peep Day Nursery*, 565 A.2d 1015, 1021 (1989).
31. UPI, Regional News (June 9, 1988).
32. The decision was not about the underlying merits; indeed, the court of appeals assessed costs against the state for devoting so much time to the substantiality of the evidence "despite the fact that neither the circuit court nor Bo Peep has questioned the revocation order on that ground" (1032).
33. Lisa Perlman, "Boy Tells Court How He Molested Preschoolers, Then Threatened Them," *Associated Press* (March 29, 1990, a.m. cycle).
34. National Center for the Analysis of Violent Crime, *Investigator's Guide to Allegations of "Ritual" Child Abuse* (FBI Academy, Quantico, Va., January 1992).
35. Daniel Goleman, "Proof Lacking for Ritual Abuse by Satanists," *New York Times* (October 31, 1994). The headline is explained by the fact that the report found no evidence of such abuse being perpetrated by organized groups.
36. Goleman, "Proof Lacking."
37. Goleman, "Proof Lacking."
38. Utah Attorney General's Office, *Ritual Crime in the State of Utah: Investigation, Analysis & A Look Forward*, (Prepared for the Utah State Legislature, 1995), 3.
39. Utah Attorney General's Office, *Ritual Crime."*
40. FBI, *Investigator's Guide*, 18.
41. A. S. Ross, "Satanism or Mass Hysteria?" *San Francisco Examiner* (September 28, 1986).

42. Post to Witchhunt list, HFJustice (July 30, 1999). Fishman, whose email address matches the witchhunt post, is listed as a "national forensic consultant in the areas of child custody, abuse and neglect" in Missouri on a website called Child Abuse Defense Kit. http://cadkit.tripod.com
43. The "Similar Tales" sidebar in their series includes tattooed man or woman; activities in basement; assaults during naptime or trips to bathroom; children choked, pinched, or physically abused; foreign objects inserted in rectum or vagina; Barbie dolls; nude games.
44. "Man Convicted of Torturing 14-year-old Boy," *Associated Press* (August 19, 1998, AM cycle). An appellate court upheld the conviction, finding specifically that there was sufficient evidence to constitute "cruel abuse or torture" as required by statute. *Ohio v. Dillard*, 1999 Ohio App. LEXIS 2546 (July 23, 1999).
45. "Parents Charged with Torturing Their Children," *Associated Press* (November 25, 1991).
46. *Commonwealth v. Gaddis*, 432 Pa. Super. 523; 639 A.2d 462 (Superior Court of Pennsylvania, March 22, 1994).
47. Sue Carlton, "Sextons Face Another Charge," *St. Petersburg Times* (June 23, 1994).
48. Unpublished opinion, *People v. Wilkins* (Division One, Fourth Appellate District Court of Appeal) No. D007162 (Super Ct. No. CR85004) Lori Elizabeth Bartz was co-defendant.
49. Bill Callahan, "El Cajon Woman Sentenced to 48 Years; Used Satanism in Sex Abuse of Children," *San Diego Union-Tribune* (March 26, 1988), B1.
50. Unpublished opinion, *People v. Wilkins*, 14.
51. Trial Brief, *State v. Ball*, Case No. 14750-C (Sonoma County Superior Court), 1.
52. Trial Brief, *State v. Ball*, 5 (describes a five-year-old boy who "was unable to testify beyond direct so the People requested that he be dismissed and his testimony was then stricken from the record.")
53. Nurse Practitioner Gail Jackson testified to evidence of chronic anal penetration, penetration of hymen consistent with sexual abuse, anal scarring, and other marks consistent with repeated penetration by a foreign object. Preliminary hearing transcript summarized in Trial Brief, 5.
54. Change of Plea, *State v. Ball and Thrailkill* (Reporter's Transcript of Proceedings of Monday June 6, 1988), Court No. 14750-C (Sonoma County Superior Court).
55. Clark Mason, "Thrailkill a Sexual Predator," *Press Democrat* (September 9, 1998).
56. One verified case of cult activity involving the sexual abuse of children emerged in October 1983, when police raided the headquarters of the Neo-American Church in Harrisburg, Pennsylvania. Material seized in the raid demonstrated that the cult, run by George Feigley, believed that "you were closest to God at the point of sexual climax." A four-year-old boy and three girls (ages four, five, and sixteen) were placed in foster care after "hundreds of pictures were found showing the sexual abuse of children." William Heineke, "Authorities Say Cult May Have Used Children in Sex Rituals," Associated Press (November 23, 1983). Feigley was convicted of raping three girls and served twenty-five years in prison. He was released without restrictions in 2008 because his crimes predated sex-offender registration requirements. Robin Acton, "'70s Child Rapist Freed Without Restrictions," *Pittsburgh Tribune Review* (August 16, 2008). Another verified case of sexual abuse in an organized context involved the "Zion Society" in Utah, a self-proclaimed "secret society" governed by Arvin Shreeve, who convinced his followers that children in the group should be involved in the sexual practices that he preached. Twelve adults in this polygamous cult were charged with felonies involving child sexual abuse. Shreeve pleaded guilty to sodomy and child sex abuse charges in 1991. "Alleged Cult Leader Pleads Guilty to 4 Sex-Abuse Counts," *Salt Lake Tribune* (November 7, 1991), B3. At least ten other cult members later pleaded guilty. More recently, an investigation of a break-in at an animal shelter in Murray, Kentucky—where two puppies were mutilated and their body parts taken—led police to a group known as the "Vampire Clan," which committed a series of crimes with satanic overtones. Sondra Gibson, thirty-five, pleaded guilty to enticing a fourteen-year-old boy into having sex during a blood-sucking initiation rite known as "crossing over." Rod Ferrell pleaded guilty to two counts of murder. Mike Schneider, "Vampire Cult Leader Pleads Guilty," Associated Press (February 5, 1998). See also for example, Judgment on Jury Verdict of Guilty, *State v. Rogers*, Cause No. 18,738 (91st District, Eastland County, Texas), December 14, 1992 (Indecency with a Child

Younger than 17 Years, Committed During the Court of a Ritual); Lisa Roose Church, "Man Gets 24 Years for Satanic-ritual Rape of 10-year-old Girl," *Tennessean* (September 30, 2000).

57. See Lawrence A. Stanley, "The Child Pornography Myth," *Playboy* (September 1988). Cited with approval in Jenkins, *Moral Panic*, 272; Levine, *Harmful to Minors*, 37–38; Kincaid, *Erotic Innocence*, 326; Best, *Threatened Children*, 224.
58. Debbie Nathan, "Justice in Wenatchee," *New York Times* (December 19, 1995), A25.
59. This case is discussed in Chapter Three, 126.
60. This case is discussed in Chapter Three, 123–26.
61. *People v. Meacham* (California Court of Appeals; Second Appellate Division, Division Three) 152 Cal. App. 3d. 142, 199 Cal. Rptr. 586 (1984).
62. "Teacher Sentenced for Abuse," *Washington Post* (February 16, 1984), C2; Rosa Michnya, "Ex-Daycare Teacher Held on New Charges," *Washington Post* (May 10, 1983), C5.
63. Curtis Morgan, "Afraid for the Children Parents May Have Trouble Responding to Abuse," *Miami Herald* (March 11, 199), 11.
64. Steve Rothaus, "Legal Mix-Up Aided Child-Porn Suspect; Preschool Owner Paid $200 and Left Hawaii," *Miami Herald* (February 5, 1990), 1B. See also Order of Probation, *State v. Shaver*, Circuit Court, 17th Judicial Circuit, Broward County, Florida (Case No. 90-2105) August 21, 1991.
65. Order of Probation, *State v. Shaver*, Circuit Court of the 17th Circuit in and for Broward County, Florida. Case No. 90-2105. Filed August 21, 1991. (Guilty plea to one count of sexual performance by a child.)
66. Renee Graham, "Parents Used Day Care Knowing It Was Illegal,"*Boston Globe* (December 23, 199).
67. Patricia Nealon, "Arlington Man Is Sentenced for Sexual Assault of Two Girls," *Boston Globe* (September 16, 1992), 20.
68. "Coast Inquiry Is Pressed into Child Sexual Abuse," *New York Times* (April 1, 1984).
69. Carol McGraw, "Child Smut Business Going Underground; Grows Uglier as Customers Trade Children, Not Just Pictures, Police Say," *Los Angeles Times* (September 16, 1985), Part I, 3.
70. Stanley's article won an award from the Free Press Association in 1989. Debbie Nathan presented him with the award. See David Hechler, "Awkward Award," *Columbia Journalism Review* (September/October 1990).
71. Stanley is described as "publisher of *Uncommon Desires*" in a story describing a warrant for his arrest in Canada for allegedly sexually abusing a girl under the age of fourteen. Gene Mustain, "Man-Boy Love Lawyer Wanted in Girl Abuse," *Daily News* (September 21, 1995), 34. For additional information see the WCBS news report, digitized at http://youtu.be/kcVTCfkCAXk. Stanley was later convicted in absentia in a Dutch court for sexual abuse of three girls, ages seven to ten. In 2002, he was arrested on child pornography charges in Brazil. Robert Stacy McCain, "Porn Lawyer Charged in Brazil Girls Case," *Washington Times* (July 24, 2002). The popular Brazilian magazine *Epoca* reported, after a four-month investigation, how Stanley "produces, publishes and markets" photos of nude girls age six to thirteen, "controlling an international network of child pornography." http://blog.newtonpaiva.br/pos/wp-content/uploads/2013/02/E3-SI-20.pdf.
72. For a recent example of this tactic, see http://blogs.brown.edu/recoveredmemory/2013/02/09/ncrj-reveals-itself/.
73. See e.g., Transcript, (n.d.) [Likely summer 1995] Francis interview with Stephen Ceci about the Christchurch case in New Zealand (for "Assignment" David McLoughlin, a television program), 11 ("this case has the same constellation of ingredients that ninety-plus percent of mass allegation crèches cases have . . . there is this air of accusation").
74. "Children Were Swapped for Sexual Abuse, State Alleges," *Los Angeles Times* (August 4, 1984).
75. Richard Wexler, *Wounded Innocents*, 147.
76. Child number four's mother indicated the daughter of a neighbor had recently "become hysterical about going to the Peninsula Montessori School." This child was not on the list supplied by Krikorian. See Decision, *In the Matter of the Application Against Claudia Krikorian*, Department of Social Services, State of California, September 30, 1985, para. 23 (informing

the man that he was a suspect "was an irresponsible act on the part of the respondent" and "may have resulted in the destruction of incriminating evidence"), para. 25 (refusing to provide names and class schedule was "irresponsible" and constituted a failure to cooperate with the sheriff).

77. Declaration of Susan McGirt, *State v. Krikorian* (November 14, 1984), 3.
78. Decision, *In the Matter of the Application Against Claudia Krikorian*, 4.
79. Decision, *In the Matter of the Application Against Claudia Krikorian*, 7.
80. Declaration of Susan McGirt, *State v. Krikorian* (November 14, 1984), 9.
81. Medical Report—Suspected Child Abuse, Re: Montessori, Harbor UCLA Medical Center (June 22, 1984), 1, 2.
82. Decision, *In the Matter of the Application Against Claudia Krikorian*, 4.
83. "Molestation Suits Settled," *Los Angeles Times* (October 20, 1987).
84. Tim Waters, "Judge Drops Molestations Charges," *Los Angeles Times* (December 7, 1985), A1, 8.
85. One child in the preliminary hearing in the McMartin case testified about witnessing satanic rituals at the church including black robes and drinking blood.
86. Faye Fiore, "Men Confess Molestations—Too Late to Prosecute," *Daily Breeze* (October 18, 1985).
87. Lois Timnick, "Police Appeal for Help in Pre-School Case," *Los Angeles Times* (November 1, 1984), D3.
88. Decision, *In the Matter of the Accusation Against Claudia Krikorian*, No. LD-1539-0215. Department of Social Services, State of California (December 12, 1985).
89. Announcement of Intended Decision, *Krikorian v. Department of Social Services*, No. SW-C-82343, Los Angeles Superior Court (June 30, 1986).
90. Bob Williams, "Abuse Cases Ebb," *Los Angeles Times* (May 12, 1988), V20.
91. Bob Williams, "McMartin Fallout Eases,"*Los Angeles Times* (May 1, 1988), R4.
92. Greenup's first trial ended in a mistrial with nine jurors voting for conviction and three for acquittal. Jurors were at odds over Greenup's "intent in placing [girls] on his lap and caressing them." "Mistrial Declared in Molestation Case," *Los Angeles Times* (May 15, 1986). Jurors in the second trial heard expert testimony about how Greenup had altered a key piece of evidence in the case, a large green chair. Paul Feldman, "Jury Convicts Ex-Teacher in Molestations," *Los Angeles Times* (April 3, 1987). The "political witch-hunt" claim stemmed from the media appearances that District Attorney Robert Philibosian made when the case was originally filed. At sentencing, Greenup's lawyer argued for lenience in part because his client had "shown remorse." Terry Pristin, "Teacher Gets 36 Years for Molesting Girls," *Los Angeles Times* (May 5, 1987).
93. Rabinowitz, "From the Mouths of Babes to a Jail Cell: Child Abuse and the Abuse of Justice," *Harper's* (May 1990), 56.
94. Rabinowitz, "From the Mouths of Babes," 56.
95. "Name Confusion Causes Woes for Clifton Daycare Center," *The Record* (August 25, 1985), C3.
96. The Country Walk case is the subject of Chapter Six. The Snowden case involved two separate criminal trials and cannot easily be summarized. From research to date, I think there are many reasons to doubt the witch-hunt narrative about this case, but those arguments require detailed elaboration and documentation. This case will be the subject of a future publication.
97. Jane Daugherty, "Boy, 2, Believed Attacked at Temple,"*Miami Herald* (August 7, 1984), 1B.
98. Miami Beach Police Department Report Supplement, Complaint No. 84-25307, May 6, 1984 (indicating that one suspect was deceptive in his polygraph exam); Polygraph Report, Miami Beach Police Department Report Supplement, Complaint No. 84-25307, May 25, 1984 (indicating that the second suspect scored "conclusive of deception" on his polygraph exam); Miami Beach Police Department Report Supplement, Complaint No. 84-25307, May 16, 1984 (describing victim identifying the primary suspect).
99. Nery Ynclan, "Care Center Shut in Spanking Probe,"*Miami Herald* (August 24, 1984), 1D.
100. Nery Ynclan, "Judge Says Child Care Center Can Reopen Despite New Claim of Child Sexual Abuse," *Miami Herald* (September 15, 1984), 2B.
101. Jane Daughterty, "HRS Seeks Psychiatric Tests for 2 Daycare Operators," *Miami Herald* (October 25, 1984), 2B.

102. Jane Daugherty and Christopher Wellisz, "Daycare Operator Is Charged with Molesting Girl, 4," *Miami Herald* (July 17, 1985) 1B.
103. Jay Ducassi, "State Is Dropping Child Abuse Case,"*Miami Herald* (August 20, 1985) 1B.
104. "Former Day Care Operator Cleared in Civil Suit over Alleged Abuse," *Miami Herald* (April 1, 1989) 2B.
105. Dorothy Rabinowitz, "Kelly Michaels Orwellian Ordeal," *Wall Street Journal* (April 15, 1993) A15.
106. Martie Barnes, "Mass. Continues to Get Reports of Day Care Abuse," *Boston Globe* (January 20, 1985).
107. Recommended Decision, *Office for Children v. Wingard*, Division of Administrative Law Appeals (Docket N. OFC-8640), Commonwealth of Massachusetts, July 31, 1985, 13.
108. John J. O'Connor, "'Amelia' on ABC, A Movie About Incest," *New York Times* (January 9, 1984).
109. Ralph Blumenthal, "Freud: Secret Documents Reveal Years of Strife," *New York Times* (January 29, 1984), C1.
110. Jenkins, *Pedophile Priests*, 91.
111. Masson, *Assault on Truth*, 35.
112. John Caffey, "Multiple Fractures in the Long Bones of Infants Suffering from Chronic Subdural Hematoma," *American Journal of Roentgenology* (August 1946) 56: 163–173.
113. "Subtle inferences to that effect could be drawn by experienced clinicians." John Rust, "No Easy Answers: Why the Word of Children Aren't Convicting their Abusers," *Los Angeles Daily Journal* (April 28, 1986).
114. C. Henry Kempe et. al., "Battered-Child Syndrome," *Journal of the American Medical Association* (July 1962) 181(1):17–24.
115. Lynn Sacco, "Sanitized for Your Protection: Medical Discourse and the Denial of Incest in the United States, 1890–1940," *Journal of Women's History* (Autumn, 2002), 14(3).
116. Judith Herman, *Father-Daughter Incest* (Harvard University Press, 1982).
117. Dianna Russell's book *Secret Trauma: Incest in the Lives of Girls and Women* concluded that the true incidence rate of incestuous abuse was about one in six women. If that is true, then the one-in-a-million claim would be off by a factor of 166,000. Nathan has criticized Russell's survey for having "extravagantly broad definitions" because it includes "even distant relatives" and did not exclude "botched attempts." Nathan, "The Ritual Sexual Abuse Hoax"; Nathan, "Cry Incest." It is not clear how many cases Nathan thinks would be eliminated by excluding "distant relatives" or why she would think those should not count as incest. But her quibbles about definitions distract from the magnitude of the original error. Even if we assume her objections would eliminate *half* of the reported cases, then the old estimate of incest prevalence would still be off by a factor of 83,000.
118. Linda Gordon, *Heroes of Their Own Lives: The Politics and History of Family Violence, Boston 1880–1960* (Viking Press, 1988).
119. Estelle Freedman, "'Uncontrolled Desires': The Response to the Sexual Psychopath, 1920–1960," *Journal of American History* (June 1987), 102.
120. Roland C. Summit, "The Child Abuse Accommodation Syndrome," *Child Abuse & Neglect* (1983), 7: 177–193.
121. Coleman's remarks are summarized in detail on pp. 150–169 of Paul and Shirley Eberle's book *The Politics of Child Abuse* (1986).
122. Charles Krauthammer, "Defining Deviancy Up," *New Republic* (November 22, 1993): 20–25.
123. Patrick Boyle, *Scout's Honor* (Prima Publishing, 1994).
124. Barry Siegel, A *Death in White Bear Lake* (Bantam, 1990).
125. Richard Firstman and Jamie Talan, *The Death of Innocents* (Random House, 1997).
126. Marjie Lundstrom and Rochelle Sharpe, "Getting Away with Murder: Easy to Kill a Child—and Bury the Secret," Gannett News Service (December 12, 1990). This story won the 1991 Pulitzer Prize for National Reporting.
127. Jenkins, *Moral Panic*, 10.
128. Carla Van Dam, *How Child Sexual Molesters Groom Adults to Gain Access to Children* (doctoral dissertation, Union Theological Institute, 1996). See also "Techniques of Deception," chap. 3 in Anna Salter, *Predators: Pedophiles, Rapists, and Other Sex Offenders* (Basic Books, 2003).

129. William Nack and Don Yaeger, "Who's Coaching Your Kid?" *Sports Illustrated* (September 13, 1999).
130. Richard Hoffman, *Half the House* (Mariner Books, 1996). See also "Ex-coach, 68, Gets Jail Time for Molesting Four Boys," *Philadelphia Inquirer* (August 23, 1996).
131. Nathan, "Making of a Modern Witch Trial," 20.
132. Prosecutor cited in Charlier and Downing. Van Dam, *How Child Sexual Molesters Groom Adults*.
133. *State v. Kelly*, Superior Court Division, Pitt County, North Carolina (July 21, 1991). File Nos. 91-CRS-4250-4363, Vol. LXVII, tr. 15185.
134. One study documented the average wait between cessation of abuse and disclosure to be fourteen years. Roesler and Wind, "Telling the Secret: Adult Women Describe Their Disclosure of Incest," *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* (1994) 9, 327.
135. Stephen Fried, "Boy Crazy," *Philadelphia* (October 1987).
136. Fried, "Boy Crazy."
137. Charles Walston and Ralph Ellis, "Broken Trust," *Atlanta Journal-Constitution* (August 20, 1995): H5. Remarkably, West's name has appeared on at least one "false conviction" list—without any explanation. C. Ronald Huff, Martin Killias, *Wrongful Conviction: International Perspectives on Miscarriages of Justice* (Temple University Press, 2008), 25, fn. 5.
138. Calvin Trillin, "Outdoor Life," *New Yorker* (August 11, 1986).
139. Trillin, "Outdoor Life," 66.
140. Susan Duerksen, "Health Professionals Reluctant to Report Abuse, Study Finds," *San Diego-Union Tribune* (January 19, 1990), A–16.
141. Joe Dirck, "Another Abuse Tale: Author Loses Gamble on Boys Scouts and Pedophilia," *Plain Dealer* (July 17, 1994), 10J.
142. Christopher Wellisz and Gelareh Asayesh, "Cops Assail School in Abuse Probe," *Miami Herald* (April 23, 1988), 1A.
143. Carolyn Pesce, "Town Grapples with Dirty Little Secret; Male Teacher Abused Boys, Parents' Trust," *USA Today* (November 19, 1990) 3A.
144. "Sex Case Teacher Gets 20 Years' Jail," *Herald Sun* (November 16, 1990).
145. "Montana Teacher Molested Generations of Students," *Associated Press* (November 25, 1990, BC cycle.)
146. Mary Hargrove and Susan Roth, "Preying on Pupils," *Arkansas Democrat-Gazette* (September 8, 1996).
147. [The Gardner contribution] Amicus Curiae Brief for the New Jersey Council of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry [in *State v. J.Q.*], n.d. [circa summer 1992], 12. Dr. Gardner sent me this document; the words "The Gardner contribution" are handwritten on the first page.
148. Allison Klein, "Family's Ordeal Nearly Over," *Miami Herald* (November 17, 1997), 1B.
149. Bittenbender is the central character in Patrick Boyle's 1994 book *Scout's Honor*, which provided the first public account of the Boy Scouts' "confidential files." Files on 231 leaders banned from scouting for sexual misconduct were obtained in connection with a civil suit involving a Reston, Virginia, youth who was molested by Bittenbender in the early 1970s. *Infant C. v. Boy Scouts of America*, 239 Va. 572, 391 S.E. 2d 322 (1990). Bittenbender was convicted of charges involving sexual conduct with three members of that scout troop. The book details later abuse by Bittenbender in Wilmington, Delaware, and in Rhode Island. Boyle, who interviewed Bittenbender many times in prison, writes that "Carl is candid about many acts of abuse, most of which are not on the public record" (329). Boyle, *Scout's Honor*, 81–95, 113–123.
150. Charlier, "Prosecutors Honing Edge in Duel of Reforms, Right," *Commercial Appeal* (January 1988), A12.
151. Nathan, "Making of a Modern Witch Trial."
152. *Dove v. Texas*, 768 S.W. 2d 465 (March 31, 1989). The trial judge ruled that charges involving other children had to be tried separately, but evidence concerning some of those children was admitted in the case. There was never a trial involving any of the charges concerning other children. Those charges were eventually dropped.
153. Susan Krohn, "Parents: Presidio Day Care Probe Inadequate," UPI (April 19, 1988); see also, "Third Presidio Tot Has Venereal Disease," UPI (August 14, 1987).

154. Cheryl McCall, "The Cruelest Crime," *Life* (December 1984): 35.
155. Affidavit in Support of Probable Cause, Palm Beach County, November 23, 1988 (88-15245CF).
156. Affidavit in Support of Probable Cause, Palm Beach County, December 12, 1988 (88-217661); Affidavit in Support of Probable Cause, Palm Beach County, December 12, 1988 (88-217663). (Affidavit 88-217662 was not in the materials that I obtained on this case.)
157. The Investigative Decision Summary states that "medical evidence corroborates molestation" and "credible statements" were given to a pediatrician, two psychologists, law enforcement, "and this investigator." Abuse Report (Report No. 88-086445), Florida Protective Services System, 6.
158. Presentment, *In re Grand Jury Proceedings* (Circuit Court, Fifteenth Judicial Circuit; Palm Beach County) March 17, 1989.
159. Glenn Collins, "The Child's Word Isn't Enough," *New York Times* (July 11, 1983), B4.
160. California Jury Instructions—Criminal 10.37 (as it existed in 1984). This specific section has a different meaning now, although the section is still about sex offenses.
161. The California Supreme Court ruled that this instruction was inappropriate, in *People v. Rincon-Pineda*, 14 Cal. 3d 864 (1975).
162. *People v. Algarin*, 166 A.D.2d 287; 560 N.Y.S.2d 771 (Supreme Court of New York, Appellate Division; 1990).
163. *Maryland v. Craig*, 497 U.S. 836 (1990). The Confrontation Clause also became a significant argument in the Amirault cases. In 1995, Judge Robert A. Barton granted a motion for a new trial based on the argument that the seating arrangements in the original trial violated the Confrontation Clause. *Commonwealth v. Amirault*, 4 Mass. Legal. L. Rep. 245; 1995 Mass. Super LEXIS 434 (August 25, 1995). The Massachuetts Supreme Judicial Court vacated that order. *Commonwealth v. Amirault*, 424 Mass. 618, 677 N.E.2d 652 (1997).
164. *Maryland v. Craig*, 497 U.S. 836, 110 S. Ct. 3157 (1990).
165. Harry Stein, "Presumed Guilty; the Charge of Sexual Abuse of Children Is the Dirtiest, Deadliest Trick in Divorce Court,"*Playboy* (June 1992), 74.
166. William Tucker, "*The Effect of Victim Age and Gender on Prosecutor's Willingness to Prosecute Cases of Child Sexual Abuse.*" Unpublished undergraduate thesis, Brown University, 2004.
167. Matthew Brelis, "Lynn Officer Charged with Abusing Girl," *Boston Globe* (March 17, 1989) 1.
168. *State v. Curlew*, 459 A.2d 160; 1983 Me. LEXIS 644 (1983).
169. Michael deCourcy Hinds, "Delaware Case Shows Difficulty in Proving Child Sex-abuse," *Chicago Tribune* (November 22, 1992), 11.
170. Mary Hargrove, "The Courtroom Ordeal," *Miami Herald* (November 7, 1993), 28A (Part of *Stolen Innocence* series).
171. Paul Wilkes, "Unholy Acts," *New Yorker* (June 7, 1993), 77.
172. The conviction was upheld on appeal. *Commonwealth v. Provost*, 418 Mss. 416, 636 N.E.2d 1312 (1994).
173. "Details Given in Prosecutor Sex Abuse Case," *Detroit Free Press* (January 13, 1983), 3A.
174. John F. Harris, "Va. Girl Who Leaped in Train's Path Wrote of Sex Abuse Fear,"*Washington Post* (July 31, 1986), C1.
175. Suzanne M. Sgroi, "A National Needs Assessment for Protecting Child Victims of Sexual Assault," Introduction to Anne Wolbert Burgess, et. al., *Sexual Assault of Children and Adolescents* (Lexington Books, 1978).
176. Martin John Costello, *Hating the Sin, Loving the Sinner: The Minneapolis Children's Theatre Company Adolescent Sexual Abuse Prosecutions* (University of Minnesota, 1987).
177. "Children's Theatre Founder Accused of Molesting 3 Boys," *New York Times* (April 19, 1984).
178. *Hating the Sin*, 90.
179. *Hating the Sin*, 103.
180. *Hating the Sin*, 146.
181. Brawley and Smist, "Convicted Child Molester Reaping Strong Support from Norman Church," *The Oklahoman* (June 30, 1985).

182. Grant, "Support for Child Molester Angers Family," *Citrus Times* (July 3, 1994), 1.
183. Personal correspondence from Richard A. Gardner, M.D., to Professor Ross Cheit (August 21, 1995).
184. Ross E. Cheit and Erica Goldschmidt, "Child Molesters in the Criminal Justice System: A Comprehensive Case-Flow Analysis of the Rhode Island Docket (1985–1993)," *New England Journal on Criminal and Confinement* (1997), 23(2): 267–301.
185. "Probation for Child Molester," *Philadelphia Inquirer* (October 30, 1983), A4.
186. "Gold Gets Probation in Fondling of Child," *New York Times* (October 21, 1983).
187. Kathleen O'Steen, "Sex Offender Gets Probation as Mom of Victim Protests," *Los Angeles Daily News* (June 15, 1984).
188. John Corry, "4-part Series on Child Sexual Abuse,"*New York Times* (September 17, 1984), C18.
189. Barbara E. Smith and Sharon Goretsky Elstein, ABA Center on Children and the Law, *The Prosecution of Child Sexual and Physical Abuse Cases: Final Report* (American Bar Association 1993). This report was submitted to the National Center on Child Abuse and Neglect.
190. Smith and Goretsky Elstein, *The Prosecution of Child Sexual and Physical Abuse Cases*, 118.
191. Those were equally divided between sentences in excess of twenty years (4 percent) and life sentences (4 percent). Smith and Goretsky Elstein, *The Prosecution of Child Sexual and Physical Abuse Cases*, 118.
192. "Child Abuse: The Crimes of the 80s," *Boston Globe* (November 8–11, 1987).
193. Neil Roland, "Daycare Workers Detailed Concerns," *Fort Lauderdale Sun-Sentinel* (May 15, 1990).
194. David Rhode, "Probation for Teacher Guilty of Abuse at Stuyvesant," *New York Times* (August 18, 1999).
195. "Molester Sentenced to Psychiatric Treatment," UPI (April 3, 1984).

Conclusion I

1. See footnote 210 and accompanying text in Chapter Five.

Chapter Five

1. Open letter to parents from Kelly Michaels dated May 17, 1985. I obtained a copy of this letter in the course of my research but never found any information about who actually received the letter.
2. Stephanie Lorman, Reinterview (October 7, 1987) by Investigator Noreen Catarino, Office of Public Defender.
3. Testimony of Madeline Sullivan, August 11, 1987, tr. 118.
4. The first and last names of all of the children involved in this case have been changed to pseudonyms that maintain the original initials of their actual first and last names.
5. *State v. Michaels*, June 25, 1987, tr. 198, line 25. (The trial transcript, which is approximately fifty thousand pages long, was prepared daily. Every day begins with page 1, and sometimes the afternoon session begins with page 1. The date is included with every transcript cite. There is a fully stamped transcript on appeal, but I could gain access only to the dailies.)
6. *State v. Michaels*, June 25, 1987, tr. 199, lines 1–4.
7. *State v. Michaels*, June 25, 1987, tr. 36.
8. She was married during the many years that this case lasted; her name became Sara Sencer-McArdle. She is referred to as Sencer-McArdle throughout.
9. Lisa Manshel, *Naptime: The True Story of Sexual Abuse at a Suburban Day Care Center* (William Morrow 1989). Some critics of the case are also extremely critical of the book. I found it accurate on every fact that I was able to check, but I relied on original documents for almost every claim in this chapter. Ceci and Bruck also cited *Naptime* as a source in *Jeopardy in the Courtroom*.
10. McGrath notes from Mitchell Pierce interview.
11. *State v. Michaels*, June 29, 1987, tr. 86.
12. Statement to Detective R. Mastrangelo, May 3, 1985, 1.

13. Andrew Cook, handwritten statement, May 2, 1985, 1.
14. Cook, handwritten statement, 2.
15. Cook, handwritten statement, 2.
16. Cook statement to Det. Richard Mastrangelo, May 3, 1985.
17. Patricia Crowley, *Not My Child* (Doubleday, 1989), 49. This book has been criticized for lack of objectivity. I have not relied on it for any significant factual statements in this chapter, but this is the longest available account concerning the Rooneys. I located only a few documents about this child.
18. Crowley, *Not My Child*, 49–50.
19. *State v. Michaels*, Grand Jury, July 10, 1985, tr. 16.
20. Letter to Wee Care Parents, May 8, 1985.
21. Manshel, *Naptime*, 24.
22. Minutes, Wee Care All-Parent Meeting, May 15, 1985, 1.
23. Minutes, Wee Care All-Parent Meeting, May 15, 1985, 1.
24. Mitchell Pierce's mother testified: "I was instructed by a social worker from United Hospital that I was not to try to elicit any kind of information from Mitchell. I was just to, if he talked, listen to him and not pry at all, and just be a supportive listener." *State v. Michaels*, June 24, 1987, tr. 143.
25. Crowley, *Not My Child*, 44.
26. Manshel, *Naptime*, 36.
27. *State v. Michaels*, Grand Jury, November 4, 1985, tr. 27.
28. *State v. Michaels*, Grand Jury, November 4, 1985, tr. 27.
29. Manshel, *Naptime*, 37.
30. Oralee Wachter and Jane Aaron, *No More Secrets for Me* (Little Brown, 1983). Annotation: four short stories about situations that children may find themselves in regarding abuse and how these children find a way out of harm's way.
31. *State v. Michaels*, Grand Jury, November 4, 1985, tr. 27.
32. Testimony of Lou Fonolleras in *State v. Michaels* (November 16, 1987; afternoon), tr. 35.
33. Julia Tilden police statement, June 12, 1985.
34. Eileen Treacy, Report on Nora van Haley, November 16, 1986.
35. *State v. Michaels*, Grand Jury, July 10, 1985, tr. 63.
36. Crowley, *Not My Child*, 51.
37. Donna Leusner, "Nursery Ex-teacher Indicted in Sex Abuse of 3 Children," *Star Ledger* (June 7, 1985).
38. Memorandum from Karen Burton to Jonas Rappeport (September 11, 1986), 1.
39. Donna Leusner, "Ex-nursery School Teacher Faces 31 Sex Abuse Charges," *Star Ledger* (June 21, 1985).
40. There are three children in the overall case with the initials B.M. Two are boys. The one referred to here was not included in any charges.
41. Brian's father did not object to this interview. Indeed, he testified about two mysterious oval-shaped bruises that he saw on his son's back in the spring. They were consistent with an injury by a wooden spoon. *State v. Michaels* (August 25, 1987), tr. 110–114.
42. Fonolleras Summary DYFS Report. It should be noted that no charges were ever brought in connection with this child.
43. Fonolleras notes on Elliot Shandley interview (June 19, 1985). This is one of a handful of children who were not part of the fifty-one children included in Ceci and Bruck's numbering of children in the case. None of these children were involved in any charges and none had multiple interviews. Most likely, these children were interviewed once by DYFS and never by law enforcement.
44. Fonolleras report on Clare Williams (June 20, 1985). It should be noted that no charges were ever brought in connection with this child either.
45. This child's name appears in DYFS notes but not on the list of fifty-one.
46. Clare Williams (June 20), Andrea Towne (June 20), Michelle Marshall (June 24), Shayla Palimieri (June 24), Ruby Watson (June 26), and Margaret Selby (June 27).
47. Original sources conflict on whether the number of interviews was eighty-two, eighty-three, or eighty-nine. I have located original documents to support all of those aggregate totals. The

difference between eighty-two and eighty-three depends on how one counts an interview in which two children were interviewed together. The difference between eighty-three and eighty-nine involves children who were most marginal to the case.

48. Manshel, *Naptime*, 111.
49. *State v. Michaels* (August 18, 1985), a.m. session, tr. 82.
50. *State v. Michaels* (August 18, 1985), a.m. session, tr. 85.
51. *State v. Michaels* (August 18, 1985), a.m. session, tr. 100.
52. *State v. Michaels* (August 18, 1985), a.m. session, tr. 85.
53. Concerned Scientists brief, published in *Psychology, Public Policy, and Law* (1995) 1(2): 272-322, 285.
54. She told Rebecca Flora's mother, who called her in May when Rebecca said she had seen David naked at school, not to jump to conclusions. Judy Applegate assumed there was an innocuous explanation and did not follow up with her son or attend the first parent's meeting a week later.
55. Debbie Nathan addressed this child in an article written in 1998, long after the case was over and it was clear David Applegate would not testify again. Nathan claimed to have discovered evidence that Michaels's "inexperienced and overworked public defenders" never considered, to wit: . . . on the tape of an interview of another Wee Care student, Lindsay, I heard her father say that she and [David] played together. The point: [David] could have picked up the details of the alleged abuse from his playmate." This assertion is contradicted by various testimonies at trial. First, the extent to which David had contact with children outside of school was not something that escaped the notice of Kelly Michael's defense team. The boy's mother was specifically questioned about the subject at trial. Judy Applegate would no doubt be surprised by Nathan's unsubstantiated claim that her son "regularly played" with any other child from Wee Care. Her testimony at trial was that "once, maybe twice he played with Debra Schultz, and I think there was once a day when Diane Plunkett had him over after school a little bit." Second, David contracted chickenpox and was out of school in early June, when word of the case might conceivably have become a topic of discussion among children. It is curious that proponents of the child-suggestibility defense, normally acutely attuned to whether events are literally possible, apparently missed the fact that there were few or no opportunities for the conversations that Nathan hypothesizes. There is no evidence that the details of the allegations against Michaels were a topic of conversation between children before David Applegate got chickenpox. One child told interviewers she learned from her friend that Kelly "had been bad." Several others allowed that they learned this from their parents—but *all of those were in late June*. David Applegate had been out of school for weeks by then and had been isolated from all possible playmates.
56. *Matter of Nicole V.*, 71 N.Y.2d 112 (1987). The decision of the Court of Appeals, New York's highest court, supported the approach Treacy used. The case stemmed from a Family Court proceeding held in early 1985.
57. *State v. Michaels* (June 25, 1987), tr. 15, 31–33, 64–65.
58. Summit, "The Child Sexual Abuse Accommodation Syndrome."
59. The defense relied on David M. Brodzinsky, a Rutgers psychology professor who argued that a behavioral checklist used in the case was subject to measurement error. On the basis of a small survey that he conducted at the Rutgers University Day Care Center, Brodzinsky argued that mechanical use of this checklist would cause 28 percent of so-called normal preschoolers to be suspected of having been sexually abused or at least of having experienced some similar trauma. He did not comment on how much more prevalent the symptoms were in the Kelly Michaels children than in his "normal" survey. Nor was this informal survey—conducted for the defense, although this was not disclosed to those surveyed—apparently subjected to peer-review or apparently published in any academic journal.
60. She could not rule out other possible causes of the child's behavior.
61. Eileen Treacy, [Report] "Interview #2 2–17–87," David Applegate, 1, 2.
62. Institutional Abuse Report, n.d. Exhibit S-233 in *State v. Michaels*.
63. The agency could have taken some kind of licensing action. But Kelly Michaels left before the allegations surfaced, and the school ended up closing.

64. This is my own position concerning the ethical duty of prosecutors. Many, possibly most, legal ethicists maintain an even stricter position: that charges should be brought only if the prosecutor personally believes the defendant is guilty. In a fascinating essay, law professor Alafair Burke reviews those arguments and argues instead for prosecutorial agnosticism. Alafair S. Burke, "Prosecutorial Agnosticism," *Ohio State Journal of Criminal Law* (2010), 8: 79–100. All commenters agree that prosecutors are obligated to "do justice," not simply win cases. And whatever the ethical standard, criminal cases require a higher level of proof than civil or administrative cases.
65. *In the Interest of K.A.W.*, 104 N.J. 112, 515 A.2d 1217 (Supreme Court of New Jersey, 1986).
66. Manshel, *Naptime*, 98.
67. Manshel explained that the appellate section instructed prosecutors to charge by the instrument. "Instead of charging one count of vaginal penetration and one count of anal penetration for each girl, Sara was to charge up to three separate counts for vaginal penetration (fork, knife, and spoon) and up to three separate counts for anal penetration (fork, knife, and spoon)." *Naptime*, 98.
68. Fifty-four of the counts that went to the jury were for aggravated sexual assault. Keep in mind that, given the multiple ways of charging the details of sexual abuse, a single incident could account for up to six counts. Again, spread across nineteen children, these fifty-four counts translate into a handful of incidents.
69. Typologies of sex offenders distinguish between kinds of abusers. "Opportunistic" abusers are "impulsive, unplanned, and driven by opportunity as a means of seeking immediate gratification." CSOM Etiology. http://www.csom.org/train/etiology/4/4_1.htm.
70. Manshel, *Naptime*, 133.
71. The second interview was requested by John's mother, not by authorities. She said John wanted to come back and talk to "the man with the dolls." But he did not disclose anything in his second interview.
72. Crowley, *Not My Child*, 204.
73. *State v. Michaels*, Grand Jury (November 6, 1985), tr. 26–29.
74. *State v. Michaels* (June 29, 1987), tr. 47.
75. *State v. Michaels*, Grand Jury (July 10, 1985), tr. 73.
76. *State v. Michaels*, Grand Jury (July 10, 1985), tr. 101.
77. Julie Gottlieb, *From the Courtroom to the Newsroom: An Analysis of the Print Media Coverage of State of New Jersey v. Margaret Kelly Michaels.* Unpublished undergraduate thesis, Brown University 2000, 53.
78. She testified: "The first day [that she came back to work in early May] I remember it very clearly because Brenda was there with me and I said to her, I said this is strange, these kids are all asleep and in the winter they didn't sleep."
79. This document can be found on p. 347 of the three-volume exhibit attached to the defense brief on appeal.
80. Jacob Peyton interview, June 20, 1985, 26.
81. *State v. Michaels*, Concerned Scientists brief, 31.
82. *State v. Michaels*, Concerned Scientists brief, 31. Citing Ceci and Bruck (1993), "Child Witnesses: Translating Research into Policy," *SRCD Social Policy Reports, (Fall 1993)* VII(3): 1–12.
83. *State v. Michaels* (October 21, 1987), tr. 17.
84. *State v. Michaels* (November 3, 1987), tr. 58.
85. Typed synopsis of interview on July 2, 1985. Institutional Abuse Report. Exhibit S-233 in *State v. Michaels.*
86. John Allister interview (July 15, 1985), tr. 7.
87. *State v. Michaels* (November 16, 1987), tr. 70–71.
88. *State v. Michaels* (September 9, 1987), tr. 32.
89. Frank Lindblad et. al., "Preschoolers' Sexual Behavior at Daycare Centers: An Epidemiological Study,"*Child Abuse & Neglect* (1995) 19(5):569–577. Cite at 575.
90. *State v. Michaels* (October 13, 1987), tr. 39.
91. *State v. Michaels* (June 24, 1987), tr. 142–43.
92. *State v. Michaels* (August 18, 1987), tr. 75.
93. *State v. Michaels* (July 28, 1987), tr. 144, 157.

94. *State v. Michaels* (November 19, 1987), tr. 18–21.
95. *State v. Michaels* (February 23, 1988), tr. 13.
96. *State v. Michaels* (February 23, 1988), tr. 35–53.
97. *State v. Michaels* (November 19, 1987), tr. 23–24.
98. *State v. Michaels*, Grand Jury (July 10, 1985), tr. 98.
99. *State v. Michaels*, Grand Jury (July 10, 1985), tr. 70.
100. Rabinowitz described Michaels as "pretty in a traditional, American girl sort of way." *Harper's*, 54. The *60 Minutes* program about the Michaels case was called "The Girl Next Door." The view that Michaels could not possibly have abused children because of her appearance conveyed the same stereotype that Nathan betrayed when, in her first contribution to the witch-hunt narrative, she referred to "sleazy trench coats"—as if child molesters were actually identifiable by their outerwear.
101. Murray Bartky, Ph.D., Psychological Evaluation (n.d.), 3. Exhibit D5 in *State v. Michaels*. This three-page document was also included in an appendix to the first defense brief on appeal and is numbered A-79 to A-81.
102. *State v. Michaels*, December 1, 1987, tr. 11, lines 9–13.
103. Although the witch-hunt narrative dismisses the testimony of Charlene Munn out of hand, no evidence has ever been offered to support the insinuation that her ten-year sentence for aggravated manslaughter was a "deal." Sentencing agreements that are contingent on cooperation generally hold sentencing in abeyance until after the person testifies. Munn testified after she had been sentenced and she received a substantial sentence.
104. In one of many claims of memory lapse while testifying under oath, Michaels, a nonsmoker, would assert she "could not remember" whether she had bought sixteen separate packages of cigarettes for Munn that she had charged to her prison account.
105. M.A.R.C.I.S. Incident Report Supplement, December 19, 1985, submitted by Det. Sgt. John J. Noonan.
106. *State v. Michaels* (November 30, 1987), tr. 85.
107. *State v. Michaels*, Transcript of Proceedings (February 15, 1991), tr. 111. Note: Dr. Brodsky examined Michaels for three and a half hours on August 7, 1990. He made no audio or video record of the interview.
108. *State v. Michaels* (March 7, 1988), tr. 64.
109. It is thirty-seven words long, not altogether coherent, but possibly copyright-protected by Kelly Michaels. Accordingly, I will simply describe it as strange. The final phrases are about "the smell of your flesh" and "your body will leave me." The poem is included in Manshel, *Naptime*, 319.
110. *State v. Michaels*, March 2, 1988, tr. 49–50.
111. Manshel, *Naptime*, 259.
112. The only other child to have only a single count presented to the jury was Martin Zeitz, who did not actually testify. Jacob Peyton and Martin were first interviewed quite late in the investigative sequence.
113. "Lawyer Quitting Sex Abuse Case," *Star Ledger* (June 3, 1986).
114. *State v. Michaels* (June 22, 1988), tr. 187.
115. *State v. Michaels* (June 22, 1988), tr. 234, 237.
116. *Phil Donahue Show* on the Jordan, Minnesota cases, January 15, 1985.
117. "Interview: Hollida Wakefield and Ralph Underwager," *Paidika* (1993), (3)2: 3–4. This now-defunct magazine had a line drawing of a naked prepubescent boy on the cover. Underwager would later argue that this was a "primary prevention effort" somehow aimed at preventing pedophilia. The claim is difficult to square with the purpose of the magazine; moreover, his wife distanced herself from the remarks and Underwager was forced to resign from the advisory board of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation when this interview became known in the United States.
118. See generally Diane Curcio, "Lawman Hammers at Nursery Sex Case," *Star Ledger* (February 7, 1988), 62. Among the materials still in storage in this case is testimony from other cases around the country and investigative documents concerning his marriage (to a former marriage counseling client) and business (which include a farm implement business just a year before he became an "expert" in the Jordan case). There was also documentation of the

close relationship between Underwager and the activist group VOCAL (Victims of Child Abuse Laws), which had office space in Underwager's house.

119. Underwager said "a scientist who bases an opinion upon unchecked subjective experience has regressed to the level of the witch doctor." The prosecutor pointed out how some of Underwager's claims in the case were entirely subjective.
120. Angela Stewart, "Judge Prohibits Psychiatric 'Profile' in Sex Abuse Trial of Day-care Teacher,"*Star Ledger* (May 15, 1987), 35.
121. Manshel, *Naptime*, 283.
122. Jonas Rappeport, "Psychiatric Evaluation of Margaret Kelly Michaels," *State v. Michaels* (February 2, 1987), 15, Exhibit D-3.
123. *State v. Michaels* (June 25, 1987), tr. 198–199.
124. Quoted in Manshel, *Naptime*, 287.
125. All of these details were contained in Alfonso A. Narvaez, "Former Day-Care Teacher Denies Sexually Abusing Schoolchildren," *New York Times* (February 28, 1988), 37.
126. *State v. Michaels* (March 7, 1988, afternoon session), tr. 22.
127. *State v. Michaels* (March 7, 1988, afternoon session), tr. 43, 49, 73.
128. Mary de Young, *The Day Care Ritual Abuse Moral Panic.*
129. The inconclusive result is acknowledged in *Michaels v. New Jersey*, 50 F. Supp 2d 353, 354 (May 29, 1999).
130. Associated Press, "Jury Method Fought," *News Tribune* (March 31, 1988), A7.
131. Those counts were charged as third-degree "child endangerment," since they did not actually involve sexual contact.
132. Debbie Nathan, "Victimizer or Victim?" *Village Voice* (August 2, 1988).
133. Debbie Nathan, "Day-Care Witch Trials," *Village Voice* (April 26, 1988), 17.
134. Nathan, "Victimizer," 38.
135. Nathan, "Victimizer", 34.
136. Nathan did not reveal that those were some of the same interviews already criticized; nor did she mention that none of those interviews resulted in charges at the trial.
137. This is what he said, in a portion of the transcript that was underlined in the annotated version of the interviews filed by the defense on appeal: "So I just want you to know that I lived through it when I was a kid and I remember how hard it was to talk about it and how scary it was to talk about it." But the story that Fonolleras actually proceeded to tell did not involve his disclosing sexual abuse. Actually, he said that "somebody hurt me [sic] brother real bad" and he adds that "they threatened me." Natalie Jenkins interview (6/24/85), 11. Fonolleras told at least one other child something about his own abuse history. Defense counsel insinuated at one point, on the basis of Fonolleras having "told [Natalie Jenkins] and at least one other" child, that he had a preconceived determination in sexual abuse cases. *State v. Michaels* (October 28, 1987), tr. 66. Fonolleras denied the charge, and the prosecution argued that anything about interviews with those children should be kept out of the case because they were not children named in the actual indictment. The judge let the evidence in, so the jury was fully aware of this issue.
138. Rabinowitz, "From the Mouths of Babes to a Jail Cell," *Harper's*, May 1990.
139. Nathan has written that this group first met in January 1990, four months before the Rabinowitz article was published. But since Rabinowitz apparently had difficulty placing the article, an early draft could well have been central to the mobilization of other people in New York City. The collapse of the McMartin case might also explain why this group coalesced in January 1990.
140. For example, Deirdre Donahue said that "Rabinowitz persuasively argues that a new McCarthyism has taken hold of our national psyche," in the "Magazines" column in *USA Today* (May 11, 1990), 4D.
141. Rabinowitz, "From the Mouths of Babes," 56.
142. See the text and accompanying footnotes in this chapter describing testimony of Mrs. Pierce (fn. 7) and Laura Hadley (fn. 5, 6).
143. Rabinowitz, "From the Mouths of Babes," 56.
144. Rich Lowry, "Creating Victims," *National Review* (December 5, 1994).

145. "The Case of Kelly Michaels, Accused of Sex Abuse," *48 Hours* (June 19, 1991), CBS News Transcripts, 1.
146. "The Case of Kelly Michaels," 3.
147. Debbie Nathan, "Sweet Justice: My Fight to Free Kelly Michaels," *Redbook* (June 1995), 85 (original emphasis).
148. Rabinowitz, "From the Mouths of Babes," 60.
149. Nat Hentoff, "Once More the Witch Hunt," *Washington Post* (May 23, 1992), A31.
150. Sources vary slightly on the total number. I have been able to account for eighty-three interviews using multiple sources. Many children were later interviewed by Eileen Treacy and by the prosecutor's office, but the investigative phase accounts for the initial disclosures and charges.
151. He did not disclose anything in his first interview on June 10; he was interviewed again on June 17, after his mother called to report that John had asked to come back and talk to the man with the dolls; but John did not disclose anything in his second interview. His mother provided an extensive statement on July 3 about statements John had been making at home. There was a final interview with John on July 15; he did not disclose anything and he was not part of the trial.
152. Interview with Rebecca Flora (July 3, 1985), 6.
153. Interview with Rebecca Flora (July 3, 1985), 11. Note: the name of the child she mentions has been blacked out and "1C" has been put in its place. But 1C is a boy, so it is unclear whether the defense misidentified this child or whether the gender confusion was Rebecca's.
154. *State v. Michaels*, Grand Jury (November 4, 1985), tr. 27.
155. Nathan, "Victimizer."
156. Rabinowitz, "From the Mouths of Babes," 58.
157. The Rabinowitz version makes it appear that the child provided a meaningless answer in the following exchange:

     FONOLLERAS: What color did Kelly have down there? Brown like her head? Did she have hair under her arm?
     LUKE: My daddy do.

     The transcript of this interview, however, which is appended to the defense briefs on appeal, describes the exchange differently. It reveals that the child's answer came to an earlier question, changing the meaning significantly:

     [67Q] LOU: That is hair because she is a grown up, right and what color did Kelly have down there?
     [67A] CHILD: Brown.
     [68Q] LOU: Brown? Like her hair on her head. Did she have hair under her arms?
     [68A] CHILD: Ooh, my daddy got those.

158. Interview with P. J. Isaacs, 15; stamped as 58. June 27, 1985.
159. Vincent Caroll, "The Tragedy of a Modern-Day Witch Hunt," *Rocky Mountain News* (June 19, 2003), 40A. This editorial includes a lengthy interview with Rabinowitz.
160. Nat Hentoff, "Anna Quindlen Doesn't Get It," *Village Voice* (June 23, 1992).
161. Manshel, 1990, 99. Manshel's account includes descriptions of the child's demeanor that I could not verify—that "he answered softly in an uncontorted voice." But the grand jury transcript, which I obtained, verifies Manshel's description. *State v Michaels*, Essex County Grand Jury (July 11, 1985), tr. 92, lines 1–2.
162. Caroll, "Tragedy of a Modern-Day Witch Hunt," 40A.
163. This story was reported by Lisa Manshel in "Reporters for the Defense," *Washington Journalism Review* (July/August 1991), 20.
164. Manshel, *Washington Journalism Review*, 20.
165. Transcript of *Booknotes*, CNN (May 4, 2003), 5.
166. Transcript of *Booknotes*, CNN (May 4, 2003), 6.
167. Manshel, *Naptime*, 238.
168. Manshel, *Naptime*, 238.

169. Associated Press, "Jury Method Fought," A7.
170. *State v. Michaels*, Brief on Behalf of Amicus Developmental, Social and Psychological Researchers, Social Scientists and Scholars, 48. [Hereinafter "Concerned Scientists brief"]
171. *State v. Michaels*, Concerned Scientists brief, 1, fn 2.
172. Nathan, "Victimizer," 38.
173. Posting by Jonathan Harris, Friday, February 25, 1994, on the electronic "witchhunt" list that he created while at MIT. Subject: "Another fruitcake (a dangerous one at that)."
174. Transcript of *Booknotes*, CNN (May 4, 2003), 4.
175. Eileen C. Treacy, "Foster Parenting the Sexually Abused Child: The Evaluation of Two Specialized Parent Education Programs," doctoral dissertation, Fordham University (filed February 8, 1995).
176. Nathan also complained: "While Treacy says she received 'ongoing training' from two Columbia professors in the field of child sex abuse, this instruction did not involve her enrolling in a single accredited Columbia course." Note the clever construction: Nathan does not deny that Treacy received ongoing training from two Columbia professors; her quibble is that the training "did not involve her enrolling in a single credited course"—something Treacy never claimed.
177. Rabinowitz, "From the Mouths of Babes," 61.
178. "Abuse Petition Is Dismissed for Insufficient Corroboration; Matter of Maria B. (Juan T.), Supreme Court, Judge Lefkowitz," *New York Law Journal* (September 1, 1989), 21.
179. Rich Lowry, "Creating Victims," *National Review* (December 5, 1994), 66.
180. *Matter of Evelyn C.*, reported in *New York Law Journal* (January 11, 1994), 21.
181. *People v. Taylor*, 75 N.Y.2d 277, 552 N.E.2d 131 (1990).
182. Ceci and Bruck, *Jeopardy in the Courtroom*, 296.
183. These page-long excerpts involve children labeled "A" and "B." The children are not otherwise identified by Ceci and Bruck even with initials or interview date; but through painstaking checking of interview transcripts, the passages were identified as coming from Cassie Bond-Foley and Ralph Gans, respectively.
184. The Essex County Prosecutor's Office arranged to have these tapes transcribed and provided to the defense. These transcriptions were not entered into evidence.
185. Ceci and Bruck, *Jeopardy in the Courtroom*, xiv–xv.
186. Cassie Bond-Foley, November 23, 1986 Transcript of interview by Eileen Treacy prepared by the Essex County Prosecutor's Office, 20.
187. Debra A. Poole and Michael E. Lamb, *Investigative Interviews of Children: A Guide for Helping Professionals* (American Psychological Association, 1998), 170.
188. Cassie Bond-Foley, Statement, June 13, 1985. This statement was entered at trial as Exhibit D-36 and is contained in the defense brief that Ceci and Bruck cite in their *Psychological Bulletin* article. See Supplementary Appendix Volume I, 10.
189. *State v. Michaels*, Grand Jury (July 19, 1985), tr. 50.
190. Ralph Gans Statement #2, December 11, 1987. Transcript of interview with Eileen Treacy prepared by the Essex County Prosecutor's Office. Hand-numbered p. 7, line 10. (The typed page numbers are one page off after the first p. 4.)
191. Ralph Gans Statement #2, hand-numbered p. 7.
192. Ceci and Bruck, *Jeopardy in the Courtroom*, 73 and 118. This quote is also highlighted in the Concerned Scientists brief and has become a staple of the witch-hunt narrative about the case. See, e.g., Robyn N. Dawes, *Everyday Irrationality* (2001), 165.
193. I asked Professor Bruck, in a personal interview on October 12, 2009, if she could explain the difference between the transcript and the account in their book. She had no explanation and expressed the view that the differences were not significant. She did not respond to repeated requests for a more detailed explanation of why their account varies from the transcript that was prepared by the state.
194. Treacy, Report on Ralph Gans, 1.
195. The boy said "And then Kelly tried even to make us drink it" on p. 10 (as indicated by hand numbering), line 23. The response that contains the word *crazy* is on p. 11, line 5.
196. Rabinowitz, "From the Mouths of Babes," 52.
197. *State v. Michaels*, Concerned Scientists brief, 32.

198. See Manshel, *Naptime*, 17.
199. Dorothy Rabinowitz, "Kelly Michaels's Orwellian Ordeal," *Wall Street Journal* (April 15, 1993).
200. Shayla Palmieri interview, June 24, 1985, 17.
201. *State v. Michaels* (June 29, 1987, A.M. session), tr. 114.
202. Sadie Gaffney interview, June 11, 1985, 1. This interview is hardly a secret. It appears on p. 43 in the defendant's three-volume appendix on appeal, but it is not otherwise mentioned in the witch-hunt narrative.
203. *State v. Michaels* (September 23, 1987, P.M. session), tr. 19, 21.
204. The FBI tested the piano bench for traces of feces, which had been alleged by at least one child. The results came back negative.
205. Mark Everson, "Understanding Bizarre, Improbable, and Fantastic Elements in Children's Accounts of Abuse," *Child Maltreatment* (May 1997), 2(2): 134.
206. Rabinowitz, "Kelly Michael's Orwellian Ordeal."
207. Rabinowitz, "From the Mouths of Babes," 56.
208. Richard Gardner, "Apparatchiks Turn 'Child Abuse' into 'Witch Hunt,'" *New Jersey Law Journal* (March 1, 1993), 17. It turns out Gardner exaggerated when he said, "After examining the alleged victims, the accusing parents, and Ms. Michaels, I was convinced that she did not engage in the variety of abominable acts attributed to her." Aware that few children and no parents were examined in the civil cases, I wrote Dr. Gardner and inquired about how many children and parents he interviewed. His response indicates he "only evaluated two children" and that he did not evaluate any parents. Correspondence from Richard Gardner to Ross Cheit, September 6, 2001.
209. Nathan, "Day-Care Witch Trials," *Village Voice* (April 26, 1988), 17.
210. Nathan made the "cookie-cutter copy" claim on April 26, 1988, two months before the "12 days" of research she apparently did in the Michaels case. Nathan, "Sweet Justice: My Fight to Free Kelly Michaels," *Redbook* (June 1995), 86 ("the 12 days I needed to do the reporting").
211. Jean Montoya, "Something Not So Funny Happened on the Way to Conviction: The Pretrial Interrogation of Child Witnesses," *Arizona Law Review* (Winter 1993) 35, 927, 928. Even if her description were accurate, it would not account for the four disclosures before that.
212. *Michaels v. McGrath*, 531 U.S. 1118 (2001, Justice Thomas dissent from denial of certiorari).
213. Nathan, "Victimizer," 34 ("sent a letter to parents, telling them Michaels was being investigated for sexual abuse").
214. For example, David Applegate's mother did not attend the first parent's meeting because she had no reason, on the basis of the letter to parents, to think her son was somehow involved. Indeed, this is the response Mrs. Applegate provided when Rebecca Flora's mother called to inform her that Rebecca had seen David's penis: "I actually said to her, you know kids go to the bathroom. . . . I'm not going to get upset over it and she shouldn't either." *State v. Michaels*, August 18, 1987 (A.M. Session), tr. 80, 82.
215. DYFS Institutional Abuse Report, 40. ("Evaluation: The investigation has substantiated the following: (1) Sexual Abuse on the part of Margaret Kelly Michaels against 51 children, (2) Physical Abuse against those same 51 children by the same perpetrator, (3) Emotional Abuse against those some 51 children by the perpetrator, and Institutional Neglect on the part of the Wee Care Administration . . ."). (N.D., but likely November 1985 as the final page (42) mentions the November 8 Grand Jury and indicates "we are awaiting [additional] indictment.") Exhibit S-233 in *State v. Michaels*.
216. There is a three-day break in the interviewing after June 13. Moreover, there were two significant parents meetings after June 13 that increased the social awareness and pressures around the case.
217. Nathan, "Sweet Justice," 122.
218. Rabinowitz, "Kelly Michael's Orwellian Ordeal."
219. Richard Pilskin and Jeffrey Kanige, "Michaels Case Headed for Remand," *New Jersey Law Journal* (February 8, 1993), 6.
220. *State v. Michaels*, Superior Court of New Jersey, Appellate Division, 264 N.J. Super. 579, 625 A.2.d. 489 (1993).

221. Rappeport allowed on cross-examination that he had not reviewed any of the testimony or other documentation related to this incident, although it was potentially available to him.
222. *State v. Michaels*, Superior Court of New Jersey, Appellate Division, 264 N.J. Super. 579, 625 A.2.d. 489 (1993).
223. Donna Leusner, "Judge to Decide if Interviews by Probers in Day-care Sex Case Were "Tainted," *Star Ledger* (April 30, 1987), 36.
224. Donna Leusner, "Judge Rules," *Star Ledger* (May 1, 1987), 24.
225. Supplemental Brief on Petition for Certification to Review a Final Judgment of the Superior Court, Appellate Division, *State v. Michaels* (Docket No. 36, 633) (October 12, 1993), 2.
226. Memorandum from Sara Sencer-McArdle to John S. Redden (Deputy First Assistant Prosecutor) re: Inaccuracies in the Appellate Division Opinion in *State v. Michaels*, March 30, 1993.
227. When Michaels's civil claim was dismissed in 1999, Judge Barry began her opinion with the statement "The facts of this case are, by now, well known." Citing the two New Jersey appellate court decisions in the case, she went on to say, "This court will not attempt to recap every nuance of the case's history, and that history is well documented in the various opinions which have preceded this opinion." *Michaels v. State of New Jersey*, 50 F. Supp. 2d 353, 356 (1999).
228. Daniel Goleman, "Studies of Children as Witnesses Find Surprising Accuracy," *New York Times* (November 6, 1984).
229. Carol Tavris, "Do Children Lie? Not About This," *Los Angeles Times* (January 19, 1990), 7.
230. The initial effort took the form of the APA sponsored conference on child suggestibility at Cornell in 1989. The unusual nature of the conference is captured in a subsequent article in the *APA Monitor*. Tori DeAngelis, "Controversy Marks Child Witness Meeting," *APA Monitor* (August 1989), 1: 8–9. Before the conference proceedings were published, *Time* magazine reported that "a psychologist involved in the project says the book shows 'there are definite limits to knowledge about whether children are telling the truth.'" Jerome Cramer, "Why Children Lie in Court," *Time* (March 4, 1991).
231. Years later, in the U.S. Court of Appeals for the Armed Services, Judge H. F. Gierke concluded there was a "reasonable basis" for a defense lawyer's decision not to use Ralph Underwager as a witness because "the credibility of the defense might be undermined if the defense was perceived as using a 'quack' as a witness." *U.S. v. Grigoruk*, 52 M.J. 312 (C.A.A.F. 2000)
232. Ceci and Bruck, "Suggestibility of the Child Witness: A Historical Review and Syntheses," *Psychological Bulletin* (1993), 113(3): 403–439.
233. Ceci and Bruck, "Suggestibility of the Child Witness," 411.
234. Ceci and Bruck, "Suggestibility of the Child Witness," 422.
235. Ceci and Bruck, "Suggestibility of the Child Witness," 423.
236. Lou Fonolleras described it as the "most disturbing [interview] of his professional life." Manshel, *Naptime*, 86. The length, content, and tone are different from all of the earlier interviews in the case.
237. Goleman, "Studies Reveal Suggestibility of Very Young Witnesses," *New York Times* (June 11, 1993). It is not clear how the *New York Times* became aware of this article so far in advance of publication.
238. Stephen Ceci, Mary Crotteau-Huffman, Elliott Smith, and Elizabeth Loftus. "Repeatedly Thinking About Non-events." *Consciousness & Cognition* (1994), 3, 388–407.
239. Ceci, Crotteau-Huffman, Smith, and Loftus, 394.
240. "How the Questions Become the Answers," Chart, *New York Times* (June 11, 1993), A23. Description of study: "In weekly sessions, the researchers reviewed the list with the child, asking for each event: "Has this ever happened to you?" Reported result: "56 percent of children reported at least one false event as true." This is 20 percentage points higher than the results reported for the first study, where children were simply told to "think real hard" about whether the fictitious event had occurred.
241. "From the Mouths of Babes," ABC News *20/20* (October 22, 1993), 3.
242. Defending themselves against criticisms by law professor John E. B. Myers about the applicability of these studies, Ceci, Bruck, and Rosenthal referred to an estimate that "the typical child witness was interviewed between 4 and 11 times prior to offering in-court testimony."

Ceci, Bruck, and Rosenthal, "Children's Allegations of Sexual Abuse: Forsensic and Scientific Issues: A Reply to Commentators," *Psychology, Public Policy, and Law* (June 1995), at 500. But the claim glosses over the question of when they first disclosed abuse. It has nothing to do with the emergence of a claim. If the first disclosure is in the first few interviews, as it often was in the Michaels case, then later interviews cannot be considered the cause of the disclosures.

243. Ceci, Crotteau-Huffman, Smith, and Loftus, 397.
244. Stephen Ceci, Elizabeth Loftus, Michelle Leichtman, and Maggie Bruck. "The Role of Source Misattribution in the Creation of False Beliefs Among Preschoolers." *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis* (1994), 62, 304–320.
245. Ceci, Loftus, Leichtman, and Bruck, 304–320.
246. Ceci and Bruck, "Child Witnesses."
247. Jane Brody, "Memories of Things That Never Were," *New York Times* (April 25, 2000), F8.
248. Mary L. Huffman, Angela M. Crossman, and Stephen J. Ceci, "'Are False Memories Permanent?': An Investigation of the Long-Term Effects of Source Misattributions," *Consciousness and Cognition* (1997) 6, 482–490, 488.
249. Ceci and Bruck, "Child Witnesses" Translating Research into Policy," *SRCD Social Policy Reports* (1993) 7(3).
250. Ceci and Bruck, "Suggestibility of the Child Witness: A Historical Review and Syntheses," *Psychological Bulletin* (1993) 113(3): 423.
251. Ceci and Bruck, "Child Witnesses."
252. Ceci and Bruck, *Jeopardy in the Courtroom*, xiv.
253. It appears that Ceci and Bruck had some connection with the defense years earlier than was disclosed. The excerpt from the Michaels case that they included in their *Psychological Bulletin* article ends with what appears to a citation in parentheses, reading "(6/27/85 Appellate Court Brief)." That was not the date of the brief, however; it was the date of the interview. The brief does not appear in the references section of the article, but the order allowing the defense to attach copies of interview transcripts to their appellate brief was issued on December 15, 1992, seven months *after* Ceci and Bruck submitted the final version of this article.
254. Maggie Bruck, "Here it is," email to assorted academic psychologists, October 21, 1993, posted to the APLS B-Board.
255. For example, the draft of this brief appeared on the website of Barbara Johnson, a "father's rights" advocate in Massachusetts. http://falseallegations.com/amicus.htm, confirmed January 5, 2012. This draft has also been filed in court. See e.g., Appendix, Appellee's Merit Brief, *State v. Silverman*, Supreme Court of Ohio (Case No. 2008-0582).
256. Ceci and Bruck, *Jeopardy in the Courtroom*, preface.
257. Correspondence from Maggie Bruck to Professor Susan Somerville, editor, *Child Development*, January 27, 1993. It should be noted that Goodman was unaware of this letter before I asked her about it.
258. Interview with Gail Goodman (October 9, 2004).
259. *The Suggestibility of Children's Recollections*, ed. John Doris (American Psychological Association, 1991), Foreword.
260. Ceci quote from PBS, "The Child Terror."
261. Deposition of Stephen Ceci, November 22, 1993. *State v. Foeller*, File No. 93-64975-FC (Fourth Judicial Circuit Court for Jackson County, Michigan).
262. Deposition of Stephen Ceci, *State v. Foeller*, 133.
263. *State v. Michaels*, Motion for Reconsideration and to File Such Motion Nunc Pro Tunc, Supreme Court of New Jersey, Docket No. 36,633. January 27, 1994.
264. *State v. Michaels*, Concerned Scientists brief, 1.
265. The appendix is labeled "Attempts to Reconstruct Interviews and Emergence of Disclosure." The appendix obscures the issues involving the emergence of disclosures by listing children in a numerical order that is not related to how the case evolved. Conventionally, the first child to make a statement—the index child—would be numbered one. For the purposes of this appendix, the first child to make a disclosure in the Michaels case is numbered sixteen because the numbering turns out to be alphabetical, rather than numerical, although

this is never explained in the appendix. The appendix also misstated important facts surrounding several children. For example, the appendix states that child 4C's initial disclosure was "a few days" after being interviewed by Lou Fonolleras. In fact, she made an initial disclosure after her mother received the letter from Wee Care about "serious allegations concerning a former employee." The statement was well documented because it was made in front of her mother and a neighbor, Dale Skolnick, who both testified about it at trial. The girl said she had "played doctor" with Kelly Michaels; she also said there was a "secret room" at Wee Care. By the time she was interviewed in early June, she had also told her mother about children being hit with spoons and forks. None of those details had been made public by then. Lucy Deacon also "had a documented history of vaginal soreness" during the year. Her mother was concerned enough to have raised it with her pediatrician three or four times that school year.

There are two material misstatements in the brief description of Mitchell Pierce's (16C) outcry at the pediatrician. The appendix claims his statement occurred before the pediatrician's assistant inserted the thermometer. In fact, her testimony is that it was after the thermometer had been inserted for thirty seconds. This is relevant to the meaning of Mitchell's statement that Kelly did the same thing to him at school. The appendix also states, erroneously, that "no further notice was taken at that visit," when in fact there was conversation between Laura Hadley and Mrs. Pierce. There are similar errors in the description of child 11C. The appendix states "first disclosure after Lou interview," when in fact the interview came to pass because of a statement she made spontaneously to her mother.

The appendix repeatedly claims that transcripts and records of interviews do not exist when, in fact, those records do exist. The appendix even claims there are "no documents" pertaining to Treacy's interviews with five children (2C, 6C, 8C, 14C, 15C) whose interviews with Treacy are excerpted and cited in a defense brief on appeal!

All of the errors that I have identified in the appendix are in the same direction: they all promote the witch-hunt narrative.

266. *State v. Michaels*, Concerned Scientists brief, 1.
267. Tom Lyon, "The New Wave in Children's Suggestibility Research: A Critique," *Cornell Law Review* (May 1999), 1086 ("By repeatedly quoting Goodman . . . the court clearly hoped to render its conclusions uncontroversial").
268. Tim O'Brien, "Defense Team Dumped in Wee Care Case; Counsel Switch on Eve of Argument Fuels Feud over Fees and Egos," *New Jersey Law Journal* (January 31, 1994), 3.
269. *State v. Michaels*, 136 N.J. 299, 642 A.2d 1372 (1994).
270. Diane C. Walsh, "Essex to Retry Michaels on Abuse Charges," *Star-Ledger* (July 16, 1993).
271. Diane C. Walsh, "Judge's Dismissal of Charges Ends 10-year Ordeal for Accused," *Star-Ledger* (December 3, 1994).
272. Tom Lyon identified and critiqued this line of research in "The New Wave in Children's Suggestibility Research."

Chapter Six

1. Lyon, "The New Wave of Suggestibility Research," 1004–1087.
2. *[Lucas] v. Fuster*, Case No. 84032827 (11th Judicial Circuit for Dade County, Florida). Deposition of Frank Fuster (October 31, 1985), tr. 279. Frank Fuster's last name is sometimes referred to Fuster Escalona (or Fuster-Escalona) in court documents. In case captions in this book, I will generally use Fuster.
3. State v. Fuster, Trial tr. 4144–4179.
4. Margaret Butler did the inspection. She had worked at the department for seven years; this was her first sexual abuse complaint. She did not interview any children, and the children who were there that day were not identified in her report. The visit was so cursory that she did not even realize the license tacked on the wall was for Frank Fuster's decorating business, not for the day care. Butler apparently later told Meznarich, "Due to the fact that the house was neat and clean, and everything seemed to be in order, the complaint had been unfounded." *State v. Fuster*, Meznarich deposition (Part I, January 25, 1985), tr. 148.
5. *State v. Fuster*, St. Lorenzo deposition (July 11, 1985), tr. 13.

6. St. Lorenzo deposition, tr. 13–16.
7. St. Lorenzo deposition, tr. 17.
8. St. Lorenzo deposition (July 11, 1985), tr. 19–22.
9. *State v. Fuster*, Deposition of Donna Meznarich (Part I, January 22, 1985), tr. 90.
10. Menoher deposition, *State v. Fuster* (July 18, 1985), 39.
11. Incident Report, Subject: Frank Fuster, Case No. 287537-E, Metro-Dade Police Dept., September 7, 1984, 4 (hereinafter Fuster Police Report).
12. Menoher's cooperation also waned over time. As it became clear that her behavior helped implicate the Arvida Corporation—because she had recommended the (illegal) babysitting service to Country Walk residents—Joanne Menoher denied referring parents to the babysitting service. When asked about Menoher in a civil deposition after the criminal case was over, prosecutor John Hogan said he could not answer the questions because there was an ongoing investigation of Menoher "in connection with a potential claim of perjury." Deposition of John Hogan, *Marks v. Fuster*, June 24, 1986, tr. 50–51. (No perjury charges were ever brought.)
13. Fuster Police Report, 20.
14. Fuster Police Report, 21.
15. Fuster Police Report, 20.
16. Miami Dade Police Department, Incident Report, October 1, 1984, No. 312747-E, 5.
17. Miami Dade Police Department, Incident Report, 5.
18. Meznarich deposition (Part I, January 22, 1985), tr. 165.
19. Fuster Police Report, 29–30; Meznarich deposition (Part I), tr. 168–170.
20. Meznarich deposition (Part I), tr. 174.
21. This case is discussed in Chapter Four, 174.
22. Hollingsworth, *Unspeakable Acts*, 52.
23. Hollingsworth, *Unspeakable Acts*, 54–66.
24. This is cited in Hollingsworth, *Unspeakable Acts*, 56. I arranged to have this videotape transcribed by a court reporter under the supervision of the court. This precise line appears at the top of page 28. Transcription of a Videotape Interview [with JPC], *State v. Fuster*, Case No. 84-19728 (Transcribed by Elaine Crandall, November 17, 2006).
25. Moreover, Dr. Roland Summit reviewed a copy of the same tape and testified about specific details in his testimony. Trial tr. 4746, lines 8–11.
26. Jane Daugherty, "Day Care Videotapes Released; Kids Describe Sex at Country Walk," *Miami Herald* (December 21, 1984), 1A.
27. The trial transcript contains an "inaudible" marking where the actual videotape seems to say "takes off clothes"; Trial tr. 2265 (line 7). That response fits what the interviewer then said: Takes off clothes?
28. Trial tr. 2249–2250, 2255–2260.
29. Trial tr. 2312.
30. Trial tr. 2944.
31. The other interview with Tammy was on September 10. She was extremely avoidant in that session, telling the interview directly "I don't want to talk about that." Later, when asked if she was scared to talk, the girl nodded affirmatively. But the conversation meanders many times, and when this interview was shown in court, the judge instructed that the tape be fast-forwarded four times.
32. Fuster Police report, 25. When her parents brought her in the next day to be interviewed by Assistant State Attorney Chris Rundle, Becky was "very withdrawn." They gave up trying to interview her in less than five minutes. The following week, on August 14, when Becky was seen at Jackson Memorial Hospital, she was so uncooperative that she refused to be examined.
33. Trial tr. 2447, 2449, 2475.
34. Trial tr. 2437, 2438.
35. "There's no pee-pee game," the girl says at one point. "I call it (inaudible) game," the transcript continues. Trial tr. 2440. It is impossible to know what to do with this answer without decoding the inaudible portion.
36. Trial tr. 2439.

37. Trial tr. 2369.
38. As Jan Hollingsworth described some other photos: "Posteriors, in fact, comprised a large portion of the Fusters' collection, many of them tightly framed by telephoto lens." One picture was a rear view of a woman at the Fusters' kitchen sink, alongside Fuster's son; "He had been posed lifting the back of the skirt to reveal her panties, which were heavily soiled with what appeared to be either menstruum or feces." Hollinsworth, *Unspeakable Acts*, 443.
39. Mary Jo Robinson and Thomas R. Oberhofer, "Identification of Pathogenic Neisseria Species with the RapID NH System." *Journal of Clinical Microbiology* (1983), 3, 400–404.
40. Meznarich deposition (Part II, January 23, 1985), 95.
41. Trial tr. 3468.
42. *Fuster v. Singletary*, Case no. 97-1369-Civ-LENARD. Affidavit of Maggie Bruck (February 2, 1999), para. 96.
43. Trial tr. 2902.
44. Trial tr. 2905.
45. Trial tr. 2910.
46. Trial tr. 3223.
47. Fuster Police report, 26.
48. The charge against Frank Fuster was supported by Jason's statement. MDPD Case No. 312759-E. The charge against Ileana was supported by Donald's mother's statement and by Donald's demonstration in 8/14 tape. Case No. 312752-E.
49. Trial tr. 989–90.
50. Trial tr. 1806.
51. Meznarich deposition (Part I, January 22, 1985), tr. 90.
52. Trial tr. 1374; Lee Coleman deposition, tr. 12–14.
53. Trial tr. 5061–62.
54. Trial tr. 1034.
55. Trial tr. 1035.
56. Trial tr. 994.
57. Trial tr. 1815.
58. Trial tr. 1656.
59. Trial tr. 1522–1524.
60. "She was dizzy. She had been drugged," Fuster's lawyer allowed, while arguing against her recollection of seeing Frank sexually abuse various children. Trial tr. 4993.
61. For example, Becky Taylor's mother described picking her up after her first day at the Fster and Becky was napping, which was unusual, because Becky hadn't napped since she was two and half. Darlene Taylor asked Ileana about the fact that Becky was napping. "She [Ileana] said Frank had played with her [Becky]". She tried to wake Becky up to leave, but couldn't wake her so Darlene carried her out. Deposition of Darlene Taylor, *State v. Fuster*, (February 7, 1985), 34–35.
62. Trial tr. 992–993.
63. Trial tr. 1102–1103.
64. Trial tr. 1403. She described two differing, equally disturbing, actions: "He would try to spread her legs apart and put his mouth on her vagina" and "He would try to pull her head towards his penis."
65. Hollingsworth, *Unspeakable Acts*, 444.
66. Trial tr. 1565–1566.
67. Trial tr. 991.
68. Trial tr. 2017.
69. Coleman deposition, tr. 78.
70. There were several other sessions videotaped in later months, well after the charges had been finalized; one was with Elmo Slade on March 12, 1985. His name does not appear anywhere else in the case; nor are the contents of this interview described in the trial record. The second was with Jason Cramer on April 9, 1985, after he had had a problem at school involving inappropriate sexualized play. His parents wanted "Joe" to talk with Jason about the incident and about sex education in general. This Cramer tape was later misrepresented on

television by Lee Coleman, the defense psychiatrist in the case. Coleman claimed the tape was "typical" of the investigative interviews in the case, and he shocked the daytime television audience of "People Are Talking" with the excerpt where Joseph Braga is explaining the concept of sexual response to the child. The content of this excerpt does not appear in the trial transcript because it was not one of the investigative interviews. Joseph Braga confirmed from contemporaneous notes that this brief meeting occurred on April 9, 1985, was at the request of Jason's parents, and had nothing to do with the investigation of the case (Braga interview, July 4, 2012.)

71. Hollingsworth, *Unspeakable Acts*, 491.
72. There had been an incident in the spring of 1984 where Noel called Becky "sexy." He also told Sally Leventhal in the spring of 1984 that she had "a nice pussy."
73. Trial tr. 3769.
74. Trial tr. 3770.
75. Trial tr. 3772, lines 19–24 (emphasis added).
76. Trial tr. 3805, line 4 to 3807, line 2.
77. Trial tr. 3851–2.
78. Trial tr. 4642, line 17 to 4643, line 11. The third, fourth, and fifth lines in this excerpt have been edited slightly to reflect what is apparent on the videotape of this interview. In the third line, the child said "cut your head off" not "cut off your head" as indicated in the transcription. In the fourth line, the interviewer said "Did he really cut off heads or pretend?" The transcription omits the word "really." In the fifth line, the child starts an answer "He was" and then seems to start the word "pointing" before saying "he put the knife to your neck." The court reporter, who transcribed while the tape was playing in court, (inaccurately) wrote "He was—he put some ice on a knife to your neck." That is what appears in the trial transcript. The corrcted version in the text connected to this footnote reflects the words heard on the videotape. This excerpt is described in a newspaper article and it was broadcast on the local news. Nery Ynclan, "Fusters Face New Charges," *Miami Herald* (March 29, 1985). The new broadcast proves that the transcribed version is inaccurate; the child did *not* make a confusing reference to ice. See, http://youtube/nAwE3jjmR58.
79. Trial tr. 4648.
80. See especially Trial tr. 4650.
81. Trial tr. 4655, lines 3–25.
82. Hogan civil deposition, 29.
83. *Marks v. Fuster*, Case No. 84-42560 (11th Judicial Circuit for Dade County, Florida). Deposition of John Hogan (June 24, 1986), 30 (Hogan civil deposition).
84. Hogan civil deposition, 31.
85. Hollingsworth, *Unspeakable Acts*, 349–350.
86. All the quotes about this incident are from Hollingsworth, *Unspeakable Acts*, 350.
87. Hollingsworth, *Unspeakable Acts*, 365.
88. See text accompanying footnote 182.
89. Summit, "The Child Sexual Abuse Accommodation Syndrome."
90. The other three witnesses for the state were a social worker and two police officers.
91. *State v. Fuster*, Martha Gonzales Fuster deposition (August 8, 1985), tr. 57.
92. The other children who were named in individual charges were Noel Fuster, Joshua Cramer, and Tom Leventhal. The charges related to Leventhal were dropped at the conclusion of the state's case because Jason Cramer, who had described Tom's abuse in earlier interviews, did not mention those statements in his testimony at trial. Donald Menninger was the other child who most clearly substantiated the charges involving Leventhal, but his parents were no longer willing to assist the prosecution. Jason Cramer provided extensive evidence, however, concerning the abuse of his younger brother, Joshua. And the charges involving Noel were substantiated through the testimony of several children and through the positive STD test.
93. Donald Menninger, Jr. (the father) denied he told his wife not to say anything about it, and says "she did not" give anyone such instructions either. *[Lucas] v. Fuster* deposition, February 12, 1985, tr. 118. But his wife testified six months earlier, "I felt really bad that it would end up being very slanderous statement about someone, so, I said [to Betsy Leventhal], 'I just

don't want it spread around.'" *State v. Fuster*, deposition. July 23, 1985, tr. 20. Betsy Leventhal's testimony at the time matches this description.

> Q: Did they ask you not to pass this information along?
> A: Yes, they did.
> Q: Did you promise that you wouldn't?
> A: Yes, I did.
> Q: But you did?
> A: Yes, I did.

State v. Fuster, Betsy Leventhal deposition. July 10, 1985. tr. 29.

94. Trial tr. 4157.
95. Trial tr. 4165 ("really bad); tr. 4174 ("yes, I do").
96. Hollingsworth provides a long excerpt from the deposition, in which Underwager allowed that he did not know the average number of words a three-year-old child might be expected to understand, he did not know any studies on the matter, and he could not say anything "right now" about the cognitive development that takes place between and three and four years of age. Hollingsworth, *Unspeakable Acts*, 393–395.
97. Coleman testified he could remember "two or three patients" in the course of his twenty-year professional career who were victims of child sexual abuse. None of those cases involved children under the age of eight. He could not remember if he had treated any victims of child sexual abuse in the last five years (tr. 4207, lines 3–16). Coleman also testified that he had developed "a special interest" in how children were interviewed in sexual abuse cases "about 9 or 10 months ago" (tr. 4208).
98. *State v. Fuster*, Coleman deposition (August 12, 1985), tr. 38.
99. Trial tr. 4381.
100. *State v. Fuster*, September 24, 1985, tr. 75.
101. Trial tr. 4256.
102. Trial tr. 4243, line 15.
103. Trial tr. 4284.
104. Trial tr. 4410.
105. Trail tr. 4270.
106. Trial tr. 4424.
107. Trial tr. 4667 ("I advised him yesterday that the only witness he could compel me to call is him and that's what I did").
108. Trial tr. 4465, lines 16–18.
109. See e.g., 4577 ("That was not a business." "You keep calling it a babysitting service. You want to make it sound like a daycare center, which it wasn't.").
110. Trial tr. 4596–4599. ("since I have the blood already," tr. 4596, line 5; "suffered a big pain" on my penis, tr. 4597, lines 21–23; "I did not go there for that reason" tr. 4598, line 4).
111. The doctor was apparently a family friend of Fuster's and accordingly the state was worried he might slant his testimony accordingly. There are indications that Fuster's STD test came back "borderline," and the defense was apparently worried this information would be incriminating.
112. Trial tr. 4812, lines 7–9 (Becky), and line 13 (Tammy).
113. Trial tr. 4817.
114. Messerschmidt, A., and M. Ducassi. "Wife: Fuster Beat Me Soon After We Met," *Miami Herald* (September 13, 1985), 1B.
115. Trial tr. 4820, line 12.
116. Trial tr. 4822, lines 15–17.
117. Trial tr. 4835, lines 1–4.
118. Trial tr. 4852, lines 12–20.
119. Trial tr. 4853, lines 19–20.
120. Trial tr. 4864 (snake).
121. *[Mayor] v. Fuster*, Case No. 84-42560, 11th Judicial Circuit, Dade County, Florida, Deposition of Dan Casey (June 24, 1986), tr. 95.

122. *Fuster-Escalona v. McDonough*, No. 06-6916, U.S. Supreme Court. Cert. denied, 549 U.S. 1213, 127 S. Ct. 1251 (February 20, 2007).
123. Charlier and Downing, "Patterns Emerge," 43.
124. Nathan, "The Making of a Modern Witch Trial," 20.
125. Debbie Nathan, "Satanism and Child Molestation: Construction the Ritual Abuse Scare," in James Richardson, Joel Best, and David G. Bromley, eds. *The Satanism Scare* (New York: Aldine de Gruyer, 1991), 88–89, fn. 1.
126. Debbie Nathan and Steve Almond, "Reno Reconsidered," *Miami New Times* (March 3–9, 1993).
127. *Fuster-Escalona v. Singletary*, Report of Magistrate Judge Charlene H. Sorrentino (March 8, 2002, hereinafter Magistrate Report).
128. Trial tr. 4597.
129. Trial tr. 4595.
130. Robinson and Oberhofer, "Identification of Pathogenic Neisseria Species," Table 1.
131. Robinson and Oberhofer, "Identification of Pathogenic Neisseria Species," 404.
132. Nathan and Almond, "Reno Reconsidered"; Nathan and Snedeker, *Satan's Silence*, 195.
133. Whittington, W. L. H., Rice, R. J., Biddle, J. M., and Knapp, J. S., "Incorrect Identification of Neisseria Gonorrhoeae from Infants and Children," *Pediatric Infectious Disease Journal*, 7(1): 3–10.
134. Whittington et al., "Incorrect Identification," 8.
135. *State v. Fuster*, Deposition of Freda Burstyn (July 24, 1985), tr. 11.
136. The "unreliable test myth" has mysteriously been given a boost by Wil Whittington, the lead author of the CDC article (who has since left the CDC). But Whittington's declaration is misleading, at best. It relies on, and does not take issue with, the same 1983 article that concluded the RapID/NH test was 99.76 percent accurate.
137. Cockburn, "Reno's Victim," *Nation* (September 20, 1993), 272.
138. The first session with Noel was largely rapport building. There were pages and pages of discussion of *Star Wars* and *Cat in the Hat*. Noel then drew a spaceship. Later he drew a Super-Noel. Super-Noel, as Hollingsworth described it, "could do things that little Noel could not. Like protect himself." The drawing activities continued for a long time without any pointed interviewing. One of the few revealing passages in this interview occurred, ironically, immediately after Noel said, "Nothing concerns me." Then the following exchange ensues:

    LB: Do you know what has been happening?
    NF: Happening?
    LB: Yes, since, you know, where your dad is.
    NF: In jail.
    LB: Do you know why?
    NF: (Inaudible.)
    LB: Do you know why?
    NF: Somebody put a lie on him.
    LB: (Inaudible.)
    JB: Who told you that, that somebody put a lie on your dad?
    NF: My mom. The whole car's apart.
    JB: Now, the hard part is putting the car back together (inaudible).
    NF: It's easy. See this?
    JB: Yes.
    NF: That little hole?
    JB: Yes?
    NF: This has to go over those two holes, okay, and go inside. You're right it's hard.
    JB: Has your mom ever (inaudible).
    NF: No.
    JB: Has your dad ever hit you?
    NF: Some days.

139. *N. G. v. Arvida Corp.*, Case No. 91-35656 (11th Circuit for Dade County, Florida), Deposition of N.F.G. (October 29, 1992), tr. 48.
140. Deposition of N.F.G, tr. 48–49.
141. Deposition of N.F.G, tr. 59.
142. Deposition of N.F.G., tr. 47, 60, 73, 125.
143. Some political activists who have embraced Noel Fuster's "retraction" decided to include him as a speaker at the so-called Day of Contrition, an event designed to link cases like Country Walk to the Salem witch trials. Given the opportunity to provide a clear retraction to an audience that wanted to hear one, Noel Fuster did not deliver. Here is a complete, verbatim transcription of Noel Fuster's rambling, equivocating statement:

> Hello. My name is Noel Fuster. I don't have the knowledge or the know-how to opt really for any good solutions or anything like that, but I can offer one thing, and that's experience. My experience has shown me that a lot of times doctors do have the way of knowing what's wrong. One example, me, they found a virus or some type of sickness, and it could have been any number of things. I could have had a cold, a sore throat, or anything, but within really human error, or I don't know exactly what happened, I was suddenly diagnosed with gonorrhea. I got a multitude of shots. I could go all into that explanation, but it's just I feel if you have a solution, scientists, let's have an answer, but people will end up finding a way to kind of mess that up somehow, you know, and the way, I guess, our emotions carry us or what-not, I think it's really important to try to get the message out to people, and we can find a way, but even if we had the way of finding out, would we still get the answer out there and would the right things be done? People most of the time do the right things that need to be done, but I'm glad there's so much care and so much, you know, want to do something, and something needs to be done, something needs to be done. Noel Fuster, Salem Day of Contrition (January 13, 1997, Forum B), [transcription], tr. 77.

144. Debbie Nathan, "Janet Reno has a Child Care Skeleton,"*Capital Times* (February 17, 1993), 9A.
145. Jane Daugherty, "Baby Sitters' Sexual Abuse Trial Is Delayed," *Miami Herald* (June 3, 1985), 3B.
146. Rael Jean Isaac, "Abusive Justice: Janet Reno's Dirty Secret," *National Review* (June 30, 1997), 31–35, 32; Debbie Nathan, "Revisiting Country Walk," *Issues in Child Abuse Accusations* (Winter 1993) 5(1): 1–11, 5 (kept nude); Robert Rosenthal, "Janet Reno's Child Abuse" (May 1996), 27–37 35 (drugged).
147. *State v. Fuster*, Dinerstein statement, 4–5.
148. First, Dinerstein lost his private investigator's license years before making his claims about Ileana Fuster. See Complaint (Information Report), Bureau of Regulation and Enforcement. Report of Investigator Tom Murray (stamped March 17, 1989, indicating that "Mr. Dinerstein has been uncooperative in the past with both the Miami Regional Office and the West Palm Beach Office"). See also Final Order, *Department of State v. Stephen M. Dinerstein, Linda Dinerstein, Classic Detective Agency* (Case No. C89-264). It is unclear from these public records why his license was revoked. Dinerstein's credibility was also damaged early in the Country Walk case when his "sworn statement" that Dr. Joseph Braga was an impostor proved to be completely false.
149. Motion to Prohibit Cruel and Unusual Pre-trial Detention, *State v. Fuster*, (April 10, 1985).
150. On March 17, 1985, for example, she wrote: Well baby, I'm fine. I got up at 11:30 this morning, late lunch, then you wouldn't believe it but we had to wash our clothes in the shower . . . the laundry was broken." The reflects the strongest objections she lodged at the time about conditions at the prison.
151. *State v. Fuster*, Shirley Blando deposition, (August 1, 1985), tr. 21, 38, 55.
152. Blando deposition, tr. 6, 11.
153. Rev. Tommy Watson, Correspondence to State Attorney's Office, Miami Dade County (August 28, 1985), 3.
154. *State v. Fuster*, Proceedings of August 22, 1985, tr. 7.

155. Messerschmidt and Ducassi, "Wife," 1B.
156. Nathan and Snedeker, *Satan's Silence*, 174. The quote is attributed to "telephone interview with author, August 1991." Ibid., 291, 68.
157. C. B. Mutter, Correspondence to the State Attorney's Office, Miami Dade County, about Ileana Fuster (November 7, 1985), 3.
158. Nathan and Snedeker, *Satan's Silence*, 175.
159. Nathan, "Revisiting Country Walk," 6; Nathan and Snedeker, *Satan's Silence*, 175, Rosenthal, "Janet Reno's Child Abuse," 36.
160. *State v. Fuster*, Proceedings, August 22, 1985, tr. 10.
161. *State v. Fuster*, Proceedings of August 22, 1985, tr. 5–8.
162. One of Ileana Flores's answers, for example, twice included the phrase "those things probably happened"—but Cohen's follow-up question changed the subject away from "those things." There are also numerous instances in which in which Cohen interrupted an answer that did not appear to support Frank Fuster's cause. For example, at one point, Ileana Fuster said: "No, they just told me if I recognize him. And because I 'was so afraid of him I would break down. You know, even today I . . . ." This "statement"—it cannot be called a deposition because there was no cross-examination—was reproduced in *Issues in Child Abuse Accusations*, vol. 6, no. 4 (1994), 192–206. The interruption is on 204, "those things probably happened" is on 195.
163. *State v. Fuster*, Prehearing Proffer, 5.
164. Rev. Tommy Watson's characterization was "they badgered her and badgered her." Manny Garcia, "Molester's Ex-wife Tells New Story," *Miami Herald* (March 21, 1995), 2B. Flores's letter says "I told the lawyers to stop bothering me." It also says she was "in a state of total confusion" when Arthur Cohen arrived "unannounced into my life." The letter ends with this paragraph: "I am sorry for the embarrassment that I may have cause to anyone that try to help me in time past. I do not wish to give any other deposition that could be different than the one given 10 years ago. Again, Frank Fuster did horrible things to me and I know he did the same to the children, he deserves to be where he is now. I don't want to be a victim anymore and I wish his attorneys to leave me alone please." Letter of March 18, 1995 "To whom it may concern," signed by Ileana Flores.
165. *State v. Fuster*, Watson deposition (May 9, 1995), tr. 32–33. This deposition is described in foonote 19 of the Report of the Magistrate Judge, *Fuster v. Singletary* (2002), 93.
166. "Did Daddy Do It?" transcript, 30.
167. Debbie Nathan, "Satanism and Child Molestation: Construction the Ritual Abuse Scare," in James Richardson, Joel Best, and David G. Bromley, eds. *The Satanism Scare* (New York: Aldine de Gruyer, 1991); Consultants on Religious Tolerance, "'Country Walk' case in Maimi [sic], FL." Written November 2000. Available at: http://www.religioustolerance.org/ra_fuste.htm# ("In our opinion, fondling did occur at Country Walk.") But they assert it was because of a cultural misunderstanding involving Ileana. The author is apparently unaware that the cultural practice that would supposedly excuse sexual fondling would *not* be acceptable with girls. See, Elena Padilla, *Up from Puerto Rico* (Columbia Univerity Press, 1958), 186.
168. "Did Daddy Do It?" 10.
169. "Did Daddy Do It?" 10.
170. Pendergrast, *Victims of Memory*, 372.
171. In all of Fuster's accounts, he bears no responsibility for his actions, even though he pleaded guilty to First Degree Manslaughter. In 1982, Fuster told Dr. Seth Krieger that:

> The other man pulled a gun, threatened him, and then started to leave the scene. Mr. Escalona [Fuster] grabbed a rifle he had within reach, and pointed it at the other man, trying to "make an arrest." The other man yanked on the barrel of the gun, it went off, and he died of the resulting wound.

Note how Fuster could not bring himself to say that he shot his own rifle. Yet witnesses, including the off-duty police officer, all agree that Fuster shot an unarmed man in cold blood. Dr. Krieger concluded that Mr. Fuster "developed a lifestyle and world view characterized by compulsive and paranoid features." Those features were borne out in the Country Walk case, where Fuster argued that all of the parents had conspired against him, even including those who did not bring civil suits or have children in the criminal case.

When Fuster testified in the Country Walk case, his misstatements about the manslaughter case became more fantastic. Fuster claimed under oath "when I was twenty years old, couple of months before becoming a New York City police officer, I'm accused of being a murderer." But Fuster was not in training to become a New York police officer. Instead, he was working at the time as a salesman for the Minx Fur Company. Fuster also blamed his conviction on the District Attorney. "The office of the district attorney induced perjury," Fuster asserted, professing that he was "free of guilt." Fuster made the absurd claim that the off-duty policeman in the case "set him up." He also claimed that the man he killed was "armed" and shot first, neither of which were borne out by the evidence at the scene. Fuster's refusal to accept any blame for this death is consistent with the conclusion of his parole assessment upon release from New York:

> Fuster is a tall, well-built man who is almost a compulsive talker. He goes into great details about everything that he discusses and much of the information that he provides differs from that available in the Probation Report. It does not appear that he accepts full responsibility for killing the victim of the instant crime, indicating that the individual threatened him with a weapon and the rifle that the subject had discharged it when it was grabbed by the victim. It does not appear that he has a great deal of remorse over the fact that he killed a man." [New York] Institutional Record–Parole. (HS. No. 1056-627) D: 6/10/70; T: 7/15/70, 5.

When Frank Fuster was standing before the judge in his probation violation hearing in August 1985, he referred to Mr. Isenbek's death by rifle shots as "a crime that did not take place." When *Frontline* interviewed Frank Fuster in prison in 2001, he described the shooting as "an accident."

172. Michael Kirk also erroneously claimed that the conviction was for "involuntary manslaughter." Michael Kirk and Peter J. Boyer, "Did Daddy Do It," *Frontline* (April 2002).
173. Deposition of Detective Bradley Marshall, *State v. Fuster*, No. 81-21904 (December 17, 1981), 35.
174. Deposition of Detective Marshall, 35.
175. He later blamed his lawyer for "not letting him take the stand." But Fuster could have done so if he desired, as he acknowledged in a statement at his probation violation hearing. Fuster's exact words were that his lawyer told him "If you want to testify you got to sign documents for me, release, blah, blah." The release was to indicate that his lawyer advised against such an action. Fuster chose not to sign the release. He apparently decided he would rather claim later he had wanted to testify than actually testify at the time.
176. Hollingsworth, *Unspeakable Acts*, 208.
177. *State v. Fuster*, Parole Violation Hearing, August 13, 1984, tr., 140, 19–21.
178. Pendergrast asserts in his book, *Victims of Memory*, that Fuster was wrongfully convicted of the charge—apparently on the basis of a telephone interview he had with Fuster. 372.
179. Deposition of Detective Bradley Marshall, December 17, 1981, 38–39.
180. The young woman's mother reported the alleged rape, but the prosecution did not go forward. The police suspected that a similar kind of incident might have precipitated the gunshot wound Frank Fuster received in a confrontation at his workplace.
181. Deposition of Martha Gonzales Fuster, *State v. Fuster*, (August 8, 1985), tr. 58–60 ("he told me that he would kill me," "if I ever took Noel away," "he would kill me if I took Noel," "afraid of him.")
182. Shirley Blando, the assistant chaplain who spent the most time with Ileana, verifies that in June—two months before her lawyer called in the psychologists—"she said that he had forced sex on her." Deposition of Shirley Blando, August 1, 1985, tr. 76. "The first time she talked about it with me and Reverend Watson, it was an unbelievable struggle," Blando continued (tr. 78). Jo Anne Berg, a psychiatric nurse, visited Ileana four times during this period.

She indicated in a pre-trial deposition that "Ileana shared with her mother—for the first time—her initial contact with Frank, when she was raped." The transcript continues:

> Question: Was that her word, "raped"?
> Answer: Yes. (Deposition of Jo Ann Berg, August 1, 1985, 25.)

183. Ceci and Bruck, "Suggestibility of the Child Witness," 113, 3.
184. Ceci and Bruck, *Jeopardy in the Courtroom*, 27.
185. Ceci and Bruck, *Jeopardy in the Courtroom*, 15. (They used the word *interweaved* in 1993 and *interleaved* in 1995.)
186. The only shark reference in the interviews later transcribed by Professor Wood comes from an interview with a child who was not involved in the trial and who was clearly referring to a stuffed animal in the interview room (Interview [Wood's transcription] 082784C1, 27-8). The exchange begins when the boy says to the interviewer "you know what?" The following ensues:

> Q: What?
> A: I'm scared of that shark.
> Q: Are you really?
> A: Yeah.
> Q: Yeah? You wanna go and look at it closely 'cuz its not scary? Not really. Its kinda friendlly. Come here, let me show you from this angle. Give me your hand.
> A: No.
> Q: Okay. Well, look, let me show you. See? Its not really a shark. See its kinda friendly. Its got a nice eye, see, and its got a fin here.
> A: Yeah., but it looks like a . . .
> Q: Its just kinda nice. Here. You can touch it, it won't hurt. Yeah.
> A: Ooo, like a real fish!
> Q: Is it like a real fish?
> A: Yes, but its not.

What is obvious from this exchange is that the child is referring to a stuffed animal in the interview room, not to a real shark. Moreover, he clearly knows the difference between the two (it's *like* a real fish, "but its not").

187. Interview 01785C1 [Wood's transcription], 5–7. This videotape was transcribed into the trial record on pages 4642–4643. The transcription at trial contains several errors which are detailed in fn. 78 of this chapter.
188. Ceci and Bruck, "Suggestibility of the Child Witness," 423, fn. 5. The article refers to the Fusters as the "Fursters" throughout.
189. Bruck affidavit, para. 150, p. 52.
190. Bruck affidavit, para. 9, p. 4.
191. They refer to their case studies as "brief summaries" and "sketches." Ceci and Bruck, *Jeopardy in the Courtroom*, 7, 18. They allow that their analysis is "not based on a quantitative analysis of all of the interviews" (82).
192. There were a handful of additional interviews after the second indictment was filed; the defense agreed they were irrelevant to the child suggestibility defense.
193. The excerpts were identified through the painstaking process of looking through the trial transcripts of the interviews for passages that match the excerpts in the book.
194. (1) excerpt on 112, identified as J.L., can be found at testimony of J.L., tr. 2905; (2) excerpt on 122–123, identified as "child," can be found at testimony of J.L., tr. 4653–4654; (3) excerpt on 136 identified as "child," can be found at testimony of J.L., tr. 2942; and (4) excerpt on 147, identified as "child," can be found at testimony of J.L., tr. 4663–4664.
195. Ceci and Bruck, *Jeopardy in the Courtroom*, 148.
196. Ceci and Bruck, *Jeopardy in the Courtroom*, 98.
197. Bruck affidavit, para. 18.
198. Bruck affidavit, para. 96.

199. Noel denied sexual abuse in his initial interview, but he acknowledged serious physical abuse in the same interview.
200. "There's no pee pee game," she told the interviewer. "I call it (inaudible) game." This seems to be an acknowledgment of some sort, but obviously it is impossible to know without ascertaining what the court reporter found inaudible.
201. Trial tr. 1815.
202. Deposition of Dan Casey, tr. 59–60.
203. Neither of the Menninger interviews is mentioned in para. 5 of Bruck's 1999 affidavit in Fuster's federal habeas petition, which details, in Bruck's words, the materials "sent for my review" by counsel, Robert Rosenthal.
204. Trial tr. 1981–1982.
205. Bruck affidavit, 83: "At the end of JC's interview on August 10, 1984, the Bragas gave JC a bag of toys and told him there were a whole bunch of games in the bag. (9/12/85, 198–199). JC returned to the Bragas three days later, having done a lot more talking in the meantime. (9/13/85, 182)."
206. Trial tr. 2375, lines 11–15.
207. *State v. Fuster*, Affidavit of Stephen M. Dinerstein, filed February 6, 1985 ("confirming" that "the real" Joseph Braga is dead).
208. Rael Jean Isaac, "Abusive Justice," *National Review* (June 30, 1997).
209. Robert Rosenthal, "Janet Reno's Child Abuse," *Penthouse* (May 1996).
210. Laurie Davis Braga, "Development and Evaluation of a Test Analysis System for Describing Intra-Child Variables in Learning Disabled Preschool Children," unpublished dissertation, Northwestern University, August 1972.
211. Correspondence from Patricia Green, investigator, Office of Ethics, American Psychological Association to Laurie Davis Braga, Ph.D., October 13, 1993.
212. Nathan informed the APA that she had "no personal interest in filing a complaint" and she specifically declined to do so, while noting that she assumed the APA "would have its own interest" in taking any appropriate disciplinary action. Correspondence from Debbie Nathan to Stanley E. Jones, director, Office of Ethics, American Psychological Association. The letter is dated "March 29, 1992" by Nathan, but the year is in error. The letter states it is in response to correspondence from Jones on March 23, 1993, and the Nathan response was stamped as received by APA on April 1, 1993.
213. Nathan, who lived in El Paso at the time, has since acknowledged that she regularly met with James Wood during this time.
214. Section 8.04 of the code [in 1992] provided: "When a psychologist believes that there may have been an ethical violation by another psychologist, they attempt to resolve the issue by bringing it to the attention of that individual. . . ."
215. Ethics Complaint Form [against Laurie Braga], American Psychological Association. Signed by James Wood on February 15, 1995.
216. The telephone number matched the 1995 El Paso telephone book listing for Deborah Nathan. The address in the phone book matches the return address Nathan listed in the letter she sent to the APA in 1993.
217. Jane Daugherty, "County Walk Case Spotlights Psychologist Couple," *Miami Herald* (August 12, 1985), B1.
218. Rosenthal, "Janet Reno's Child Abuse," *Penthouse*, 30.
219. Jay Ducassi, "State Is Dropping Child Abuse Case," *Miami Herald* (August 20, 1985), B1. 220. Patrick May, "Specialist Switches in Rape Case," *Miami Herald* (August 15, 1985), 2BR.
221. Boyer, Children of Waco, *New Yorker* (May 15, 1995), 44.
222. Coleman testimony, Trial tr. 4410.
223. Mark D. Everson, "Understanding Bizarre, Improbable, and Fantastic Elements in Children's Accounts of Abuse," *Child Maltreatment* (May 1997): 134–150.
224. See text accompanying footnotes 212–217.
225. *Fuster Escalona v. Singletary*, Petitioner's Reply Brief and Amended Petition for Habeas Corpus, 3.
226. Report of Magistrate Judge, *Fuster v. Singletary*, Case No. 97-1369-Civ-LENARD (March 8, 2002), slip opinion, 93.

227. Report of Magistrate Judge, 93.
228. Report of Magistrate Judge, 70.
229. Initial Brief for Petitioner Appellant, 4.

Conclusion II

1. Stephen J. Ceci, "Some Overarching Issues in the Children's Suggestibility Debate," ch. 1 in John Doris, ed., *The Suggestibility of Children's Recollections: Implications for Eyewitness Testimony* (American Psychological Association 1991), 1. See also, Tori DeAngelsi, "Controversy Marks Child Witness Meeting,"*APA Monitor* (August 1989): 1, 8–9.
2. Liz Hunt, "Psychologists Divided on Children's Testimony," *Washington Post* (July 26, 1991), A3.
3. I obtained unfettered access to the transcript and related materials after signing an agreement, verified by the Institutional Review Board at my university, that I would never disclose the names of the children in the case. The agreement honored the spirit of the protective order and of the decision in *In the Matter of Application of VV Publishing Co.*, 120 N.J. 508; 577 A.2d 412 (1990).
4. Ceci and Bruck, "Child Witnesses," 2.
5. The term is Ceci and Bruck's. It is not clear whether they consider any inquiry by a parent to qualify as an "interview," but there is no doubt that parents exercised considerable influence in how the McMartin case evolved.
6. There are no citations or footnotes in those paragraphs save a final footnote attributed to a "close observer of the trial." I asked Professor Bruck to clarify the nature of this source. She replied that she could not remember., and promised to follow up on this question and several others; she did not respond to repeated efforts for a substantive response after the interview in October 2009.

Chapter Seven

1. Investigative Staff of the Boston Globe, *Betrayal: The Crisis in the Catholic Church* (Back Bay Books, 2002), 23; Walter V. Robinson, "$20m Accord Seen in Geoghan Cases," *Boston Globe* (March 5, 2002), A1.
2. Investigative Staff of the Boston Globe, *Betrayal: The Crisis in the Catholic Church* (Back Bay Books, 2002), 120.
3. Frank Bruni and Laurie Goodstein, "Rome Withholding Endorsement of U.S. Abuse Plan," *New York Times* (October 18, 2002); Joan Rivera, Bishops to Revisit Policy on Sex Abuse," *Baltimore Sun* (November 11, 2002).
4. See generally Jason Berry, *Lead Us Not Into Temptation: Catholic Priests and the Sexual Abuse of Children* (Doubleday, 1992).
5. Investigative Staff of the Boston Globe, *Betrayal*, 6.
6. Investigative Staff of the Boston Globe, *Betrayal*, 7.
7. Howard Bloom, Richard Winton, and Alan Zarembo, "Accused Teacher Drew Sheriff's Scrutiny in '94," *Los Angeles Times* (February 2, 10212), AA1.
8. Jason Kandel, "Telfair Elementary Teacher Sentenced in Sex Abuse Case," NBCLA.com (Thursday, September 20, 2012).
9. Richard Krueger, "The New American Witch Hunt,"*Los Angeles Times* (March 11, 2007), M1.
10. Donna Schram and Cheryl Milloy, "Sexually Violent Predators and Civil Commitment," Washington State Institute for Public Policy (February 1998).
11. Robert Barnoski, "Sex Offender Sentencing in Washington State: Measuring Recidivism," Washington State Institute for Public Policy (August 2005).
12. "Sex Offender Sentencing in Washington State."
13. http://www.meganslaw.ca.gov/ (visited September 30, 2011).
14. A 1996 study into the success of Washington's notification laws revealed that 3.5 percent of sex offenders, subject to notification laws, had been harassed by the public (Scott Matson and Roxanne Lieb, "Community Notification in Washington State: 1996 Survey of Law

Enforcement," Washington State Institute for Public Policy, November 1996). But there have been a few terrible cases of vigilantism, including a double murder.

15. Richard Tewksbury, "Policy Implications of Sex Offender Residence Restrictions," *Criminology & Public Policy* (May 2011) 10(2).
16. Monica Davey and Abby Goodnough, "Doubts Rise as States Hold Sex Offenders After Prison," *New York Times* (March 4, 2007), 1.
17. A very recent exception is Rachel Aviv's article in the *New Yorker*, which highlights someone whose main offenses involved child pornography and has been subject to civil confinement in Minnesota. Rachel Aviv, "The Science of Sex Abuse," *The New Yorker* (January 14, 2013). But Aviv plays down the defendant's guilty plea for enticing a child, focusing instead on the child pornography charges. Court records indicate that the defendant —whose identity Aviv chose to shield—"talked specifically with 'Sarah,' the fourteen-year-old, about engaging in sexual acts together" before driving to an agreed meeting place. He had "lingerie and sex toys" with him when he was arrested approaching two undercover officers. Findings of Fact, Conclusions of Law, and Order for Judgment, *U.S. v. Volungus*, Civil Action No. 07-12060-GAO (U.S. District Court, District of Massachusetts) March 8, 2012, 4. In his ruling, Judge George A. O'Toole noted that it was "uncontested" that Volungus had attempted "to meet what he thought was a fourteen-year-old girl for the purposes of having sex with her." 12.
18. Senator Tom Coburn introduced an amendment: "To reduce the cost of providing federally funded prescription drugs by eliminating fraudulent payments and prohibiting coverage of Viagra for child molesters and rapists and for drugs intended to induce abortion." This was intended to force supporters of the Obama Administration, whose plan would treat all Americans the same, to have to cast a vote that would be portrayed as "Viagra for child molesters." Supporters of the president's bill were later subjected to that charge, which was rated as false by Politifact.com (October 26, 2010). For another example of these misleading tactics, see Politifact column, "Cicilline 'argued against Megan's Law and voted against mandatory registration of sex offenders'" *Providence Journal* (October 27, 2010) (Ruled "mostly false").
19. Chrysanthi S. Leon, *Sex Fiends, Perverts, and Pedophiles: Understanding Sex Crime Policy in America* (NYU Press, 2011).
20. Ross E. Cheit and Erica Goldschmidt, "Child Molesters in the Criminal Justice System: A Comprehensive Case-Flow Analysis of the Rhode Island Docket (1985–1993)," *New England Journal on Criminal and Confinement* (1997) 23(2), 267–301.
21. Theodore Cross et. al., "Prosecution of Child Abuse: A Meta-Analysis of Rates and Criminal Justice Decisions," *Trauma, Violence & Abuse* (October 2003), 323, 333.
22. Mary Hargrove and Susan Roth, "Preying on Pupils,"*Arkansas Democrat-Gazette* (September 8, 1996).
23. Amicus Curiae Brief for the New Jersey Council of Child and Adolescent Psychiatry in *State v. J.Q.*, 130 N.J. 554; 617 A.2d 1196 (New Jersey Supreme Court, 1993).
24. *Steven F. v. Anaheim Union High School District*, 112 Cal. App. 4th 904; 6 Cal. Rptr. 3d 105 (2003).
25. "More Guidance for Teachers," Editorial, *Los Angeles Times* (November 11, 2003), B12.
26. *People v. Shumate*, Reporter's Transcript on Appeal, Vol. II, tr. 564 (line 28)–565 (line 1); testimony of Jill Paddack, first-grade teacher on yard duty on February 2, 1994.
27. *People v. Shumate*, Probation Officer's Report and Recommendation, Alameda County Superior Court (August 17, 1995), 11.
28. Handwritten letter to Lesley Pankopf (Deputy Probation Officer) dated March 28, 1995. Name redacted. Attached to *People v. Shumate* Probation Officer's Report and Recommendation.
29. *People v. Shumate*, Appellant's Opening Brief, Court of Appeals of the State of California, First Appellate District, Division Two (November 4, 1996); Michael Snedeker co-counsel for the defendant.
30. *People v. Shumate*, Reporter's Transcript on Appeal, Vol. IX, tr. 2298.
31. *People v. Shumate*, Reporter's Transcript on Appeal, Vol. VI, tr. 1390 (lines 24–26). He also testified that Shumate told him "he got involved with one of his foster kids, and his wife found out. And they sent the foster kid away" (tr. 1391).

32. Elaine Herscher, "Molest Sentence May Be Delayed,"*San Francisco Chronicle* (August 17, 1995), A21.
33. Matt Gryta, "Man Pleads Guilty to Molestation; Ex-Officer Gets Jail for Abusing Boys," *Buffalo News* (January 9, 1993): 4.
34. Carol Hopkins, Salem Day of Contrition (January 14, 1997) [transcription], tr. 52.
35. There is no appellate decision in this case because Ferrara pleaded guilty.
36. Mark Pendergrast, *Victims of Memory*, 496.
37. Dr. Young testified "that B.L.'s physical condition was consistent with a history of rectal penetration, and that the best explanation for the physical condition of all three boys was that they had been victims of sexual abuse." *State v. Lawton*, 164 Vt. 179; 667 A.2d 50; 1995 LEXIS 88 (1995), 182, 54.
38. *State v. Lawton*, Trial tr. 139.
39. *State v. Lawton*, Trial tr. 142.
40. This evidence came in through the testimony of Mark Williams, the mother's counselor. Williams testified that when the mother told him this story (and one other) he became convinced she had an obligation to report the matter to child protective services (*State v. Lawton*, Trial transcript, tr. 222–223). This is how the case in Vermont began. Since the defendant's theory of the case blamed the therapist in part, there is considerable irony in the fact that the defendant objected to this testimony. As the state pointed out in its brief, the defense opened the door to this testimony through the theory of the case it advanced at trial. Brief of Appellee, *State v. Lawton*, Vermont Supreme Court, Docket No. 93-098, 18–37.
41. *State v. Lawton*, 164 Vt. 179; 667 A.2d 50 (1995; "B.L.'s statement was not the product of repeated interviewing, nor was any evidence of coercion or manipulation present. Given the circumstances, the statement was trustworthy").
42. Asked when he first became aware of the abuse allegations, Lawton gave a misleading answer about "three mild accusations" contained in divorce papers. There were actually four allegations and, as the prosecutor apparently emphasized too much, they were not "mild"; they involved anal sex, and Lawton knew that.
43. *U.S. v. Bighead*, 128 F.3d 1329, 1332 (9th cir. 1997).
44. *U.S. v. Bighead*, 1338.
45. *U.S. v. Bighead*, 1336.
46. Thomas Sowell, "Legal Lynchings," *Forbes* (January 26, 1998).
47. Noonan noted that "being a victim has become a popular calling" and "those who have complained of such abuse are identified by their therapists as 'victims,' or, more dramatically, as 'survivors.'" *U.S. v. Bighead*, 1338.
48. Pendergrast, "The Case of Elsie Oscarson," http://ncrj.org/Oscarson/Oscarson.html.
49. Daniel Patrick Moynihan, "Defining Deviancy Down," *American Scholar* (Winter 1993).
50. Letter to the editor from Robert Rosenthal, *Wall Street Journal* (November 7, 2003), A11.
51. Report and recommendation, *Serrano v. Kirkpatrick*, Federal District Court for the Southern District of New York (06-CV-990), 2.
52. *State v. Weber*, 807 N.Y.S.2d 222, 25 A.D.3d 919 (2006).
53. Emily E. Smith, "Hillsboro Man, Convicted of Sex Abuse in 2006, Shortens Sentence with Plea Deal," *Oregonian* (September 2, 2010).
54. *State v. Carol M.D.*, 983 P.2d 1165 (Court of Appeals of Washington, Division Three, Panel Five, September 14, 1999). Robert Rosenthal was of counsel.
55. CBS *48 Hours* transcript (April 3, 1997), 18. Hopkins also told CBS News that she coached the girl for speeches before Congress and for a press conference by the Justice Committee, the organization Hopkins founded (19, 20). It is not clear why this unusual foster placement was approved, but the placement is particularly ironic in light of Hopkins's editorial favoring "the all too obvious recommendation that foster children should not be placed with a person who has a conflict of interest and is in a dual role." Carol Hopkins, "Wenatchee Case Demands Reform of Child-Protection System," *Seattle Post-Intelligencer* (March 4, 1998), A13. CBS News reported that Sam Doggett eventually ran away from Hopkins's home "with an unknown man in an unknown car" (21).

56. *State v. Carol M. D.*, 89 Wn. App. 77; 948 P.2d 837; 1997 Wash. App. LEXIS 2012 (December 9, 1997), 841–842. The court also concluded that the defendants should have been authorized funds to hire an expert on false memory. In discussing that claim, however, the court noted "there is evidence that M.D. [the youngest child] stated from the beginning that her parents had abused her" (844). The court also quoted from the Kelly Michaels case in New Jersey with approval and ordered a so-called taint hearing (845). The Supreme Court of Washington granted review and remanded the case in light of the *In Re the Dependency of A.E.P.*, 135 Wash.2d 208, 956 P.2d 297 (1998), a case in which the court *declined* to adopt taint hearings. *State v. Doggett*, 136 Wn. 2d 1019; 967 P.2d 548; 1998 Wash. LEXIS 782 (1998). The court of appeals subsequently withdrew the portion of its earlier opinion concerning taint hearings, and adhered to the decision to reverse the convictions on other grounds and remand the case for retrial. *State v. Carol M.D.*, 97 Wn.App. 355; 983 P.2d 1165; 1999 Wash. App. LEXIS 1840 (1999).
57. AP, "Judge Denies Family's Claim in Child Sex-Abuse Investigation," *The Columbian* (November 21, 2004): C4.
58. The interview in which this woman makes the admission from prison is contained in a local TV news story that can be viewed at http://youtu.be/Y2cSpKPY1XM.
59. Andrew Schneider, "Jury Rejects Wenatchee Suit; Verdict Jolts the Accused in Child Sex Cases; City and Police Are Absolved," *Seattle Post-Intelligencer* (June 30, 1998), A1.
60. Barber and Schneider, "Detective a Man Who Charmed," A7; "With Every Step, Rights Were Trampled."
61. Kathyrn Lyon, *Witch Hunt: A True Story of Social Hysteria and Abused Justice* (Avon, 1998).
62. Philip Terzian, "The Witchcraft Trials of the '80s," *Providence Journal* (May 31, 1995), A11.
63. Joe Strupp, "Molester Sentenced to 6 Years in Prison," *Press-Enterprise* (Riverside, California, November 21, 1998), B2.
64. Dave Hughes, "Man, 61, Admits Molesting Kids," *Arkansas Democrat-Gazette* (May 19, 2007).
65. Todd C. Frankel, "Town in 'Shocked Silence,' Ste. Genevieve Struggle with Report from Authorities That Trusted Man Molested 40 Children over 30 Years," *St. Louis Post-Dispatch* (April 6, 2007), A1.
66. Michele Mihalovich, "Man Accused of Molestations at Day Care Pleads Guilty to Lesser Charges," *Wenatchee World* (September 18, 2010). The lesser charge was third-degree assault of a child. The information about previous complaints was contained in an affidavit filed by a Child Protective Services investigator.
67. There are some states with a three-tier system that allows a middle category between substantiated and unsubstantiated, where there is evidence of abuse but not enough to "substantiate" the case—these are designated "indicated." Without the distinction, the "unsubstantiated" category lumps together everything from cases determined to be untrue to those where there was definite evidence, but not enough to "substantiate." A study of "unsubstantiated" cases reveals that many unsubstantiated reports involve either some form of maltreatment or preventive service needs appropriate to CPS intervention, and that using substantiation as a means of gauging the validity of a CPS referral is therefore intrinsically fallacious. Brett Drake, "Unraveling 'Unsubstantiated'," *Child Maltreatment* (August 1996) (1), 3, 261–271.
68. Delores D. Stroud, Sonja L. Martens, and Julia Barker, "Criminal Investigation of Child Sexual Abuse: A Comparison of Cases Referred to the Prosecutor to Those Not Referred," *Child Abuse & Neglect*, (2000), 24(5): 689–700.
69. Theodore P. Cross, Debra Whitcomb, and Edward DeVos, "Criminal Justice Outcomes of Prosecutions of Child Sexual Abuse: A Case-flow Analysis," *Child Abuse & Neglect* (1995), 19(12), 1431.
70. Ellen Gray, *Unequal Justice: The Prosecution of Child Sexual Abuse* (Free Press, 1993).
71. In Minnesota, there were no statistical indications that the age of the victim affected the likelihood of prosecution. In Wisconsin, cases involving very young children were approximately four times less likely to be referred for prosecution than cases in the middle age group (six to twelve). Tucker, "The Effect of Victim Age and Gender," 109.
72. Barbara Smith and Sharon Goretsky-Elstein, "The Prosecution of Child Sexual and Physical Abuse Cases: Final Report" (American Bar Association, 1993).

73. Tucker, "The Effect of Victim Age and Gender."
74. Bruck and Ceci, "Unveiling Four Common Misconceptions," *Current Directions in Psychological Science* (2004), 13(6), 229, 231.
75. Lyon and Pezdek, "From Post-Mortem to Preventive Medicine: Next Steps for Research on Child Witnesses," *Journal of Social Issues* (2006), 62(4), 833.
76. She proceeded to discuss the McMartin case and the Jordan, Minnesota, cases in some detail, blaming investigators for the lack of criminal convictions. Civia Tamarkin, "Investigative Issues in Ritual Abuse Cases, Part I," *Treating Abuse Today*, 4(4): 15. The two-part article was an edited and abridged version of an address to the Fifth Regional Conference on Abuse and Multiple Personality, June 1993, Alexandria, Virginia.
77. Correspondence from Debbie Nathan to Richard Harris, *Nightline*. October 2, 1996. Reproduced in FMSF-News email from Peter Freyd (October 12, 1996).
78. "A Child's Word," *Nightline*, ABC News (November 14, 1996). Transcript #4039-1, Koppel quote.
79. Complaint Affidavit, Broward County Police Department, Offense Report LL95-12-2769 November 5, 1996, 2.
80. Offense Incident Report, Sunrise Police Department, Report No. 94-17243 (includes physical evidence conveyed by Sandra Gibson, Nurse Practitioner).
81. Nat Hentoff, "Distorted Journalism," *Village Voice* (December 17, 1996), 22.
82. There were more than fifty stories in the Lexis/Nexis newspaper database about the case on December 1, 1996—two weeks before Hentoff's column was published—including one in his local newspaper. See Mireya Navarro, "Roses and Outrage at Funeral for 2 Young Girls," *New York Times* (November 13, 1996), A14.
83. Larry Welborn et. al., "Verdict in the Samanatha Runnion Killing: Guilty," *Orange County Register* (April 29, 2005), 1. See also Arlene Getz, Jennifer Barrett, and Geoffrey Gagnon, "The Top Stories of 2002," *Newsweek* (December 26, 2002).
84. Hopkins had served on a special grand jury in San Diego that criticized prosecutors, pediatricians, and child protective service workers for how they handled child sexual abuse cases. Although seldom noted when this report is mentioned, a grand jury the following year issued a report that criticized this report as exaggerated and inaccurate.
85. "Protesting Modern Witch Hunts," Press Release, January 14, 1997. Justice Committee, Carol Lamb Hopkins, executive director.
86. Richard Gardner, Salem Day of Contrition, Afternoon session (January 14, 1997) [transcription], 332, 361.
87. Jennifer Hoult, "The Evidentiary Admissibility of Parental Alienation Syndrome," *Children's Legal Rights Journal* (Spring 2006) 26(1).
88. "False memory syndrome" dismisses reports of sexual abuse by adults, generally blaming them on the therapist of the person making the accusation. Strangely, this syndrome is often claimed to exist solely on the basis of the denial of the person accused.
89. Ohme described himself as "the silent man behind the scenes who was going to change the CAPTA law." He said Dorothy Rabinowitz was going to write an article about him, but "I told her that I could not do it because it would blow our cover." Email correspondence from Herman W. Ohme to Earl Rogers, Subject: "Confidential, Please" (November 19, 1999). On a now-defunct website from an organization that called itself the Ohio Association of Responsible Mental Health Practices, Ohme described his involvement with this issue: "When the Republican Party took control of the U.S. House of Representatives in 1994, after 40 years as the Minority political party, I saw the opportunity to change the CAPTA laws (Mondale Act of 1974) which had been the root cause of the child sex abuse hysteria and false accusations. I had been an active member of the RNC (Republican National Committee) for years and had some voice with the new party in control. I enlisted the help of nationally known CAPTA experts, Richard Gardner, M.D., Carol Hopkins, San Diego Grand Jury Foreman, to testify before the U.S. House and Senate Committee's to overhaul the Mondale Act of 1974. Our team was successful in correcting some of the worst features of the old CAPTA law but were blocked from deleting the 'mandatory reporting' feature." WWW.LTECH.NET/OHIOARMHP (accessed April 5, 2002).

90. Eileen McNamara, "Hardly a Case of Persecution,"*Boston Globe* (January 15, 1997), B1.
91. See e.g., "Complaint to Boston Globe for McCarthyite Smear," http://mysite.verizon.net/vzex11z4/globsmer.html; Alexander Cockburn, "Our Little Secret," *Counter-Punch* (May 1–15, 1997).
92. Voluntary Statement of Mark Glazer, Somerset County Prosecutor's Office, August 25, 1995, 7.
93. Voluntary Statement of Tyler Glazer, Somerset County Prosecutor's Office, August 25, 1995, 8(19).
94. Under the Michaels decision, the defendant must make a showing of "some evidence" that the victim's statements were the product of "suggestive or coercive interview techniques." Then the burden shifts to the state to prove the reliability of the statements by "clear and convincing evidence."
95. *New Jersey v. Marzolf*, Michaels Hearing, Somerset County Superior Court, Indictment No. 96-01-0055 (August 12, 1997), tr. 12, 18, 109.
96. *New Jersey v. Marzolf*, Michaels Hearing (August 12, 1997), tr. 14, 93.
97. *New Jersey v. Marzolf*, Michaels Hearing (August 12, 1997), tr. 37–38.
98. *New Jersey v. Marzolf*, Michaels Hearing (August 12, 1997), tr. 88.
99. *New Jersey v. Marzolf*, Michaels Hearing (August 12, 1997), tr .54.
100. Here is a side-by-side comparison.

Statement to police, August 25, 1995 (p.4)	*Testimony in court, May 5, 1997 (p.6)*
I went in the house to get my shoes on, and come to realize that Travis and Jimmy, my wife's brother, were still in the house, but nowhere to be found. It was very quiet and I had made my progress to go up to the second story of the house into the living room, where Travis and Jimmy were last seen. Were not there. Got to the third landing, and to my left is Jimmy's room and I had noticed that it was very quiet as I got to the bedroom, I noticed Jimmy hovered over Travis from behind Travis with his hands in his pants.	I basically went into the house and to go get shoes on to go look at a shed that was in the backyard with his father. Knowing Travis and James were in the house still, as I approached, I proceeded into the house, I did acknowledge that it was very quiet. And when I went up to the third landing of the house, I had viewed that Travis was standing in front of James. As I saw that James was hovered over with his hands in his pants.

101. *New Jersey v. Marzolf*, Michaels Hearing (August 12, 1997), tr. 35.
102. *New Jersey v. Marzolf*, Michaels Hearing, (August 12, 1997), tr. 95,4–6.
103. Jane Mary Rawls, "How Questions and Body-parts Diagrams Could Affect the Content of Young Children's Disclosures," *Lawtalk New Zealand* (April 1996), 28–29. She concludes: "open-ended questions only is by far the safest option when interviewing children as it results in greater accuracy of reports." (It is not clear whether this study was ever published in a peer-reviewed journal.) Quote from interview with Tyler: "Now I want you to take my pen and circle anywhere on these, this diagram that anybody touched you."
104. *New Jersey v. Marzolf*, Michaels Hearing, (August 12, 1997), tr. 36, lines 20–24.
105. The judge took note of the fact that Professor Bruck had not actually heard the mother's testimony, although it was apparently available to her on tape.
106. *New Jersey v. Marzolf*, Decision on Michaels Hearing, (August 14, 1997), tr. 9.
107. The father was asked why he waited an hour to call his wife. The defense tried to get into the boy's school records and counseling records—all under the rubric of examining the "totality of the circumstances." Professor Bruck made derogatory comments about the parents when I interviewed her on October 12, 2009. "They were calling the police all the time," she asserted. No evidence of that was presented in court.

108. Affidavit of Probable Cause, Lower Pottsgrove Police Department, October 29, 2002, (Comp/Inc. #D-685/10290257), 1.
109. Police Criminal Complaint, Montgomery County, Pennsylvania, Incident No. 02-17153 January 17, 2003.
110. Criminal Docket, Court of Common Pleas of Montgomery County, Docket No. CP-46-CR-0000587-2003.
111. James J. Krivacska, "Sexual Abuse Prevention Programs: Can They Cause False Allegations?" *Issues in Child Abuse Allegations,* (1991), 3. He published another article in this journal written while an inmate at the Adult Diagnostic and Treatment Center at Avenel, New Jersey. James Krivacska, "Societal Myths About Sex Offending," *Issues in Child Abuse Accusations* (2001), vol. 11. The article warned, among other things, that "after-the-fact association of 'trauma' of sexual abuse with the pleasant genital stimulation [a child] may have experienced (in, for example, a case on fondling) may ultimately interfere with their later experience of sexual pleasure as an adult."
112. The other eight signatories were Charles Brainerd, Kathleen Clarke-Stewart, Melvin Guyer, Timothy Moore, Peter Ornstein, Debra Poole, Amye Warren, and James Wood.
113. Motion of the Scientists Concerned for Reliability of Children's Reports, Accusations and Testimony for Leave to File Amicus Curiae, *State v. Krivacska,* U.S. Supreme Court, Docket No. 01-1326, April 2, 2002, paras. 5, 7.
114. Unpublished Decision, *Krivacska v. Special Classification Review Board,* Superior Court of New Jersey Appellate Division, Docket No. A-1217-08T3, August 24, 2011.
115. Many states have declined to institute taint hearings. The largest state that has followed New Jersey's lead is Pennsylvania. *Pennsylvania v. Delbridge,* 855 A.2d 27 (Penn. 2003).
116. Summit, "The Child Abuse Accommodation Syndrome," 171–193.
117. Lawrence Wright, "Child-Care Demons," *New Yorker* (October 3, 1994). In a letter to the editor published on November 28, 1994, Wright acknowledged his claims were "wrong in every particular." He admitted that Summit "did not in fact testify at the Michaels case" and that Summit's original article "does not claim that denial is evidence of abuse." Lawrence Wright, "Mistaken Identity," Letter to Editor, *New Yorker* (November 28, 1994), 15–16.
118. Maggie Bruck and Stephen Ceci, "Forensic Developmental Psychology: Unveiling Four Common Misconceptions," *Current Directions in Psychological Science* (2004) 13(3): 229.
119. Bruck and Ceci, *Current Directions in Psychological Science* (2004), 13(3): 230.
120. Thomas A. Roesler and Tiffany Wind, "Telling the Secret: Adult Women Describe Their Disclosure of Incest," *Journal of Interpersonal Violence,* (1994), 9: 327–338.
121. Kamala London et. al., "Disclosure of Child Sexual Abuse: What Does the Research Tell Us About the Ways That Children Tell?" *Psychology, Public Policy, and Law* (2005) 11(1): 211–213. The extended criticism of the Sorenson and Snow study appears to be well-taken, although original research into the Hadfield and Bullock cases would be necessary to justify a firm conclusion. Snow was censured for unprofessional conduct in 2008 and her license was suspended subject to a term of four years probation. Stipulation and Order, *In the Matter of the License of Barbara W. Snow,* Case No. DOPL 2007-7 (Division of Occupational and Professional Licensing, Utah Department of Commerce) February 15, 2008. Snow's defense against these charges makes it clear that additional research would be required to justify a firm conclusion about what this license proceeding proves about Snow's judgment and practice. Response to Notice of Agency Action and Answer to Petition, *In the Matter of the License of Dr. Babara Snow* (February 12, 2007).
122. There were five defendants at trial. Duane Rouse was acquitted. The case name is the last name of two of the defendants. The first names of all the children in this case have been changed.
123. She had previously been removed from her mother's home. The record in this case does not indicate the reasons for removal.
124. *U.S. v. Rouse,* 329 F. Supp. 2d 1077 (South Dakota, 2004). Judge Piersol concluded that "the trial testimony of Dr. Kagan and Dr. Farrell established that the children had been sexually abused. The children described the abuse to Dr. Kaplan shortly after they were removed from their home." The judge quoted six paragraphs from the state's brief summarizing the

testimony from both doctors as to what they found and were told while examining the children.

125. *U.S. v. Rouse*, Jury Trial, U.S. District Court for South Dakota, (CR 94-40015, July 27, 1994), tr. 205.
126. When first interviewed about this case by the FBI, Desmond Rouse reportedly told Special Agent Pritchard that he "probably" touched Lacey's "groin area." He also reportedly said that if he abused the children he "must have been pretty drunk." He later denied making the first statement; he said the second statement was taken out of context. *U.S. v. Rouse*, Jury Trial (August 8–9, 1994), tr. 1597.
127. *U.S. v. Rouse*, Jury Trial (July 27, 1994), tr. 219.
128. *U.S. v. Rouse*, Jury Trial (August 10, 1994), tr. 1908.
129. *U.S. v. Rouse*, Jury Trial (August 9, 1994), tr. 1768–69.
130. *U.S. v. Rouse* (8th. cir. November 12, 1996), slip opinion, text accompanying fn. 2. This opinion was reported at 100 F.3d 560. It was depublished less than three months later when the court granted a motion to rehear the case, so that only the orders and subsequent history now appear in the Federal Reporter. The "depublished" opinion still resides on the web at this address: https://law.resource.org/pub/us/case/reporter/F3/100/100.F3d.560.95-1559.95-1558.95-1556.95-1554.htm.
131. *U.S. v. Rouse*, (8th cir. November 12, 1996; Loken, dissent). The majority does not attempt to respond to the factual details provided in this dissent. Instead, they allow, glibly, that "We do not quarrel with the sufficiency of the evidence" (fn. 20 in the [depublished] slip opinion).
132. Judicial Notebook, *APA Monitor* (June 1997). The article emphasized how the court "relied heavily" on Ceci and Bruck's 1993 article in *Psychological Bulletin*; it did not mention that the decision as vacated in early February 1997. The same claim was repeated in 1998, again without any mention that the decision was quickly vacated and then overturned. Metta Winter, "Children as Witnesses," *Human Ecology Forum* (Winter 1998) 26(1): 8–12.
133. The 2-1 decision issued November 16, 1996 was vacated on February 6, 1997 by an unusual grant of rehearing. 107 F.3d 557; 1997 U.S. App. LEXIS 2190. The case was set for oral argument on April 14. On March 3, the court issued a second order, stating "upon further consideration, the petition for rehearing is granted" but the order to schedule oral arguments was rendered moot and the hearing was cancelled. The same three-judge panel that overturned the convictions in November decided, again in a 2-1 split, to uphold the convictions. Judge McMillian switched positions by concurring with the majority decision written by Judge Loken. *U.S. v. Rouse*, 111 F. 3d 561; 1997 U.S. App. LEXIS 6659 (8th cir. 1997).
134. *U.S. v. Rouse*, 111 F. 3d 561, 571.
135. *U.S. v. Rouse*, Hearing on Motion for a New Trial, U.S. District for South Dakota, CR. 94-40015 (September 5, 2001), tr. 27.
136. *U.S. v. Rouse*, Hearing on Motion for a New Trial, tr. 96.
137. *U.S. v. Rouse*, 329 F. Supp. 2d 1077 (South Dakota, 2004), 1088.
138. *U.S. v. Rouse*, 329 F. Supp. 2d 1077, 1080.
139. *U.S. v. Rouse*, 329 F. Supp. 2d 1077, 1081. When the counselor met with J.R. to inform her that her uncles would *not* be coming home, J.R. told the counselor "that both her mother and R.R. had told J.R. to lie to the social worker in the summer of 1999." This direct evidence of pressure to recant has gone unacknowledged in the witch-hunt narrative.
140. *U.S. v. Rouse*, 329 F. Supp. 2d 1077, 1081. The court also noted that "R.R. did not recant her testimony during her interview with Underwager." Indeed, "R.R. responded affirmatively when Dr. Underwager asked if Jesse did things to her that were not right."
141. Stephanie Woodward, "Yankton Sioux Seek Justice for 17-year Old Case at the White House Tribal Nations Conference," *Indian Country Today* (December 6, 2011). See also, http://ncrj.org/the-ncrj-is-sponosring-the-yankton-four/.
142. *Kennedy v. Louisiana*, 554 U.S. 407 (2008), 411 ("systemic concerns in prosecuting child rape").
143. Stephen J. Ceci and Richard D. Friedman, "The Suggestibility of Children: Scientific Research and Legal Implications," *Cornell Law Review* (2000), 86: 33–108.

144. Samuel R. Gross et. al., "Exonerations in the United States 1989 Through 2003." *Journal of Criminal Law & Criminology* 95, no. 2 (2005): 523–553, 524. Gross now edits a project called The National Registry of Exonerations, which employs a much looser definition of exoneration, one that arguably negates the meaning of the word itself. Cases dismissed without any official finding of innocence are included, *even when the dismissal was not based on evidence of innocence.* https://www.law.umich.edu/special/exoneration/Pages/glossary.aspx.

Using that definition, the Registry (as of September 28, 2013) included Kelly Michaels as "exonerated" despite: (1) the evidence of guilt elaborated in Chapter Five, (2) the lack of *any* recantations, (3) the fact that Michaels lost her civil suit, and (4) the lack of any official finding of innocence. Under the same dubious approach, the Registry also lists Sandra Craig (discussed in Chapter Three) as exonerated, despite the medical evidence and the lack of any official finding of innocence, and it lists Deborah and Alvin McCuan (also discussed in Chapter Three), despite the fact the neither of their daughters has ever recanted and the McCuan's lost their civil suit. It appears that the desire to fit cases into the witch-hunt narrative continues to be much stronger than the facts that support such claims, even twenty years after the narrative first took hold.

145. Louanne Lawson and Mark Chaffin, "False Negatives in Sexual Abuse Interviews," *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* (1992) 7, 532–542. Bruck and her co-authors minimized the significance of this result, arguing that because very few children contract STDs "this sample again is not representative of the CSA population." The authors offered no reason why children contracting STDs would be different from all other sexually abused children in some meaningful way that affects the pattern or likelihood of disclosure. The children in this study stand out for the strength of our certainty that most of the significant number of nondisclosures in the first interview were false denials, a problem never acknowledged in the witch-hunt narrative.

146. Carey Goldberg, "Pediatric Experts Express Doubt on Au Pair's Defense," *New York Times* (November 12, 1997). Forty-seven pediatric experts signed the letter to the editor, published in *Pediatrics* (February 1, 1998) 101(2): 321–323.

147. Battered-child syndrome is probably the oldest and most widely recognized syndrome involving child abuse. It was first described by this name in 1962 in a landmark article. C. Henry Kempe et. al., " Battered-Child Syndrome," *Journal of the American Medical Association* (July 1962) 181(1):17–24.

148. *State v. Ardolino,* Docket No. CR-95-478, Penobscot [Maine] County Superior Court, (March 8, 1996), vol. IV, tr. 132.

149. *State v. Ardolino,* vol. IV, tr. 131.

150. Dr. Kristin Sweeney, deputy chief medical examiner for the state, went to the house and examined the root structure below the tree house to see if the roots protruded enough to cause a localized deceleration impact injury. She concluded they could not. The roots are "fairly broad and flat" and "they're not protruding." Tr. 55–56; Vol. VII, March 13, 1996.

151. William Harwood, forensic chemist at the Maine State Police Crime Lab, examined eight containers and one envelope of leaves, twigs, bark, and fiber taken from the area under the tree. None of those items were found to be consistent with anything on the clothing Matthew was wearing that day. Where there should be extensive physical evidence, if Mathew had fallen, not a single fiber was found that linked the clothes he was wearing to the scene Tr. 119–124; Vol. VII, March 13, 1996.

152. All quotes in this paragraph from letter from Dr. Ricci to William R. Stokes re *State v. Ardolino* (January 19, 1995), 2–4.

153. *State v. Ardolino,* Excerpt: Testimony of David Ardolino (March 7, 1996), tr. 53.

154. *State v. Ardolino,* Excerpt: Testimony of David Ardolino, tr. 54.

155. *Ardolino v. Maine,* Affidavit of Maggie Bruck (on Motion for Post-Conviction Review), Penobscot County Superior Court, Docket No. CR-98-430, 32 ("we can have more confidence in a child's spontaneous statements made prior to any attempt by an adult to elicit what they suspect may be the truth—such as David's initial statement in this case").

156. *Ardolino v. Maine,* Affidavit of Maggie Bruck, 32.

157. Deposition of Stephen Ceci, November 22, 1993. *State v. Foeller*, File No. 93-64975-FC (Fourth Judicial Circuit Court for Jackson County, Michigan), 133.
158. *Ardolino v. Maine*, Affidavit of Maggie Bruck, 15.
159. Ricci testified that he knew Matthew was "an active nine-year-old child" when he examined the records (tr. 149). He also spoke directly to the injuries that could have been accidental. Ricci identified such injuries (bruises and abrasions round the ankle, knees, elbows, and forehead; tr. 134).
160. Declaration of Maggie Bruck, *In the Matter of Riley B.*, Case No. CK40772/CK40775 (Los Angeles County Superior Court, July 25, 2001).
161. Richard Gardner, Salem Day of Contrition, Afternoon session (January 14, 1997) [transcription], tr. 340. The witch-hunt narrative is filled with claims that CAPTA created financial incentives for "finding" abuse. In fact, the funding for CAPTA has always been miniscule compared to the massive changes it supposedly caused. Moreover, the largest portion of CAPTA money went to demonstration projects, which usually meant programs to prevent child abuse. Little CAPTA money has ever gone to state programs or services. There was a deliberate decision when the bill was crafted to provide only token funding of state programs. By statute, there was a mandate to spend 5 percent of the CAPTA budget on existing programs. The allocation of that money has *never* been based on the number of abuse cases, although that claim is often made by proponents of the witch-hunt narrative. To the contrary, there was a provision "to establish criteria designed to achieve equitable distribution of assistance under this section among the States." HHS determined that "equitable funding" would be provided through a per child funding formula. The funding formula, in other words, is a function of "the number of children under 18 residing in the state."
162. Thomas Lyon, "The New Wave of Suggestibility Research: A Critique," *Cornell Law Review* (1999) 84, 1004–1087.

INDEX

ABC Scholar Day Care Center, 164
ABC television
  on Believe the Children, 387–88
  on child's word, 390
  McMartin Preschool case, 6, 19, 72–73
Abuse of Innocence (Eberle and Eberle), 7, 418n1
Accommodations for children as witnesses, 187–88
Acorn, David, 428n167
Activist therapists, 69–72
Adam Walsh Protection and Safety Act of 2006, 370, 372
Aldridge and Wilcox case, 117
Alexander, Randall, 397
Allen, Joseph, 149–50, 374, 438n110. *See also* Head Start Program case
Allister, John
  dropped from case, 226, 247
  extreme behavioral evidence, 230
Almond, Steve, 328
American Academy of Pediatrics, 148–49
American Bar Association
  Center on Children and the Law, 194
American Lawyer, 21
American Psychological Association (APA), 349–50
  APA Monitor, 398
  Cornell conference, 355
  Division on Psychology and Law, 273
  Ethics Office, 352
  Nathan, Debbie and, 475n212
American Psychology Law Society, 355
Amirault case, 438n111
  championing of, 8
  "hysteria," Boston allegedly in grip of, 176–77
  information on, 11–12
  Satan's Silence, dedication page, 115
  "sex abuse hysteria" and minimal punishment, 194
  Wall Street Journal article, 376
"Anal wink," 62
Anatomy of the McMartin Child Molestation Case, 418–19n1
APA. *See* American Psychological Association (APA)
Applegate, David
  contested actions and, 279
  extreme behavioral evidence, 229
  Fonolleras, Lou, interview with, 220–21
  interview of, 245
  medical evidence, 231
  testimony of, 238, 456n55
  Treacy, Eileen on, 223
  verdict and, 240
  witch-hunt narrative and
    medical evidence, 262
    sex-abuse hysteria, use of term, 264
Applegate, Judy, 221, 231, 462n214
Ardolino, David, 402–4
Ardolino, Matthew, 401–5, 407
Ardolino, Robert case, 401–5
Arkansas Democrat-Gazette
  school teachers, sexual misconduct of, 373
  on sexual misconduct allegations, 184
Arlington, Massachusetts, child pornography case, 165
Armbrister, Trevor, 11
Arrigan, Brian, 339, 343
Arvida Corporation, 285, 291, 330, 346
Ashley's Law, 370
The Assault on Truth: Freud's Suppression of the Seduction Theory (Masson), 177
Associated Press
  Michaels, Kelly case, 239, 253
Atherton, California case, 92
Atkins, Larry, 385
Atlanta Constitution
  West, Walter P., 182
Ault, Howard Steven, 388

Austin American Statesmen
  Fran's Day Care case, 146
Austin Chronicle
  Fran's Day Care case, 146
Austin, Texas. *See* Fran's Day Care case
Aviv, Rachel, 477n17

Bach, Richard, 185
Bailey, Penny, CII evaluation, 46
Bakersfield, California case, 100
Bakersfield Witch Hunt, 119. *See also Mean Justice* (Hume)
Baldwin, Ella, CII evaluation, 45
Ballard, Frances, 96–100. *See also* Georgian Hills Early Childhood Center case
Ball, Daryl, Jr., 162–63
Baran, Bernard, 11, 126–28, 155. *See also* Early Childhood Development Center
Barber, Mike, 439n114, 440n134
Barbour, Gene and Linda, 119
Barbour, Mary Ann, 119–22, 440n134. *See also Mean Justice* (Hume)
Barkman, Rebecca, 108–9
Barkman, Richard. *See* Small World Preschool case
Barragan, Agustin O., 385
Barry, Helena, 169
Barry, Judge, 463n227
Bartky, Murray, 233
Barton, Gloria, 32–33
Barton, Sara
  CII interview with, 47–50
  early investigation, 32–33, 428–49n168
Bartz, Lori, 162
The Battle and the Backlash (Hechler), 111
Baughan, William, 126–27
Beck, Richard, 71, 152, 429n176
Behind the Playground Walls: Sexual Abuse in Preschools, 419n1
Believe the Children
  ABC network and, 387–88
  McMartin Preschool case, 4, 10–11, 71, 85–86
  ritual abuse case, 163
  Rogers Park case, 71
Belkin, Lisa, 72
Benedek, Elissa, 238–39
Bennett, Cameron, 99
Bentz, Robert and Lois, 100–103, 236. *See also* Jordan, Minnesota cases
Berent, A. Andrew, 175
Bergman, Stephen, 175
Berkowitz, Carol, 169
Berndt, Mark, 369–70
Berry, Jason, 183
Besharov, Douglas, 22
Bianchini, Victor, 381
Bighead, Charles case, 379–80, 406
Bikel, Ofra, 8–10, 12
Bishard, Beryl, 153
Bishop, Richard Charles, 126, 164
Bittenbender, Carlton, 185, 452n149
Blando, Shirley, 473–74n182
Boatwright, Stephen, 153
Bobb, Judge Aviva, 19, 79
Bond-Foley, Cassie
  medical evidence, 232
  subsequent investigation, 215
  verdict and, 242
Bo Peep Day Nursery, 158–59
Boston, Amirault case, 176–77
Boston Globe
  Amirault case, 176, 194
  Day of Contrition, 390
  Lanesborough Elementary School case, 147
  Law, Cardinal Bernard and, 368
Boulder, Colorado. *See* Marks, Douglas
Boychuk, Tasha, 379–80, 407
Boyer, Peter, 9, 174, 183, 337, 351
Boy Scout Troop 26, 182–83, 452n149
Brackenridge Hospital, 144
Braga, Joseph and Laurie
  early investigation, 292
  ethics complaints against, 352
  interviews by
    criticisms of, 344
    final interviews, 308–15
    initial interviews (August 8 and 10, 1984), 292–98
    later August 1984 interviews, 298–305
    sequences of, *303–5*
  later interviews (August 1984), 298–305
  maligning of, 348–51
Braintree, Massachusetts. *See* Caring for Kids, Inc.
Brainwashed, use of term, 41
Breto, Albert, 193
Bright, Judge Myron, 397–98, 406
British Nanny Case, 401
Brodsky, Stanley, 234
Bromberg, Daniel, 376
Broward County, Florida
  rape and murder, 388–89
Brown, Allison, 66–68
Brown, Jenny, 46
Brown University, Institutional Review Board, 413
Bruck, Maggie. *See also* Ceci and Bruck implication regarding Lawton, Robert case; Ceci and Bruck on child abuse acccommodation syndrome; Ceci and Bruck on Country Walk case; Ceci and Bruck on Kelly Michaels case; Ceci and Bruck on "Six Elements to Three Major Cases; *Jeopardy in the Courtroom: A Scientific Analysis of Children's Testimony* (Ceci and Bruck)
  Ardolino, Robert case, 404–5
  Coleman, Lee, 341–42
  on forensic concerns, 387
  Fuster, Frank, affidavit on behalf of, 285, 327

  on Goodman, Gail, 22–23
  Marzolf case and, 391–92
  on McMartin case, 87
  on personality of sex offenders, 181
  on Rainbow Christian Daycare case, 136–37
  on recantation rates, 396
  Rouse case, 398–99
Bruneau, David, 108
Buckey, Peggy. *See also* McMartin Preschool case
  acquittal of, 83
  CII interviews with victims and, 48–51, 56
  indictment of, 19, 76
  libel suit against, 21
  Manhattan Beach Police Department (MBPD) letter, response to, 82
  Mergili, Mrs., call to, 422n50
  paranoia of, 27
  statements of, 20
Buckey, Peggy Ann. *See also* McMartin Preschool case
  indictment of, 19, 76
  libel suit against, 21
  results of case, 84
Buckey, Raymond. *See also* McMartin Preschool case
  acquittal of, 83
  arrest of, 27
  character and behavior, evidence regarding, 81–82
  evidence against, 23, 42
  indictment of, 19, 76
  initial claims against, 4
  interviews with victims and, 35, 44–45, 55–59
  retrial of, 413
  strength of evidence, 20
  trial of, 5, 80–84
Burstyn, Freda, 329
Burton, Karen, 215
Butler, Margaret, 466n12
Bynum, Paul, 27, 420n5

CAAS. *See* Child abuse accommodation syndrome (CAAS)
California
  Arkansas Democrat-Gazette, 373
  civil commitment, 371
California Penal Code, 28
California Supreme Court, 187
Canada, Ontario Consultants for Religious Tolerance, 13
Cantwell, Hendrika, 61–62
CAPTA. *See* Child Abuse Prevention and Treatment Act (CAPTA)
Capturing the Friedmans (Jarecki), 11, 130–33, 443n198
Caring for Kids, Inc., 176
Carl Sandburg Junior High School, 192
Carroll case, 254
Cartright, Gary, 145–46
Cases, listings of. *See* 36 cases, list of by Charlier and Downing
Casey, Dan, 315, 327
Catholic Church cases
  denial, 177–78
  exposé of, 183
  scandals, 365–68, 384, 406
  U.S. Conference of Catholic Bishops, 367
CBS
  48 Homes, 478n55
  Michaels, Kelly case, 252
  News, 382
CDC. *See* Centers for Disease Control (CDC)
Ceci and Bruck implication regarding Lawton, Robert case, 378
Ceci and Bruck on child abuse acccommodation syndrome, 395–400
  "Unveiling Four Misconceptions," 395
Ceci and Bruck on Country Walk case
  as contrast to Michaels, Kelly case, 283, 285
  "fantastic" elements, 338–40
  "objective analysis," 351
  suggestibility claims, 252, 341–46
  "Suggestibility of the Child Witness: A Historical Review and Synthesis, 272–73
Ceci and Bruck on Kelly Michaels case
  on affiliations, 278
  brief for the defense by, 277–79
  "Child Witnesses: Translating Research into Policy," 275–76
  dismissal of children's testimonies, 221–22
  "Mousetrap Study," 273–75, 356
  policy implications, 275–76
  "Suggestibility of the Child Witness: A Historical Review and Synthesis," 272–73
  Treacy, Eileen, inaccurate claims about, 253, 255, 257–69
    "fantastic" elements, claiming, 262
    Treacy-Child A excerpt, 256
    Treacy-Child B excerpt, 258
Ceci and Bruck on "Six Elements to Three Major Cases, 337–59, 358
Ceci, Stephen. *See also* Ceci and Bruck implication regarding Lawton, Robert case; Ceci and Bruck on child abuse acccommodation syndrome; Ceci and Bruck on Country Walk case; Ceci and Bruck on Kelly Michaels case; Ceci and Bruck on "Six Elements to Three Major Cases; *Jeopardy in the Courtroom: A Scientific Analysis of Children's Testimony* (Ceci and Bruck)
  on "air of accusation," 167
  on child suggestibility claims, 355–56
  on forensic concerns, 387
  on Goodman, Gail, 22–23
  on recantation rates, 396

Center on Children and the Law, American Bar Association, 194
Centers for Disease Control (CDC), 329
Channel 10, McMartin Preschool case, 72
Chapel, Paul III, 369–70
Chapman, Breanna, 55–56
Chapman, Ellen, 55–56, 82
Charlier, Tom and Downing, Shirley, 11
  Country Walk case, 283, 327
    "fantastic elements," 338
  "Justice Abused: A 1980s Witch-Hunt," 88, 92
  on ritual abuse allegations, 355, 384
  36 cases, list of, 87–115. *See also* 36 cases, list of by Charlier and Downing
Chase, Miranda, 57–59
Chicago. *See also* Rogers Park Jewish Community Center case
  Department of Children and Family Services, 103–4
Child abuse accommodation syndrome (CAAS), 157, 178–79
  contesting, 394–400
The Child Abuse Industry (Pride), 7
Child Abuse Prevention and Treatment Act (CAPTA), 389, 401, 405, 480n89, 485n161
Child Abuse Registry Hotline, 137
Child Advocacy Center, 379
Child pornography, 94, 130, 132
  as "myth," 163–67
Child Protective Services, 385–86
Children City Learning Center, 384–85
Children's Institute International (CII)
  contested medical evidence and, 59–60
    overdiagnosis issue, 61–62
  evaluations, 33, 40–59. *See also specific victim*
    November 1983, 44–46
    December 1983, 46–51
    January 1984, 51, 55–56
    February 1984 onward, 57–59
  forces beyond, 68–77
  interviews by
    early investigation, 34–37, 42
    generally, 17, 19
    sequence of interviews, 52–54
  McMartin Preschool case. *See Lines throughout this topic*
  neglecting to supervise process, 74–75
  preliminary hearing, interview sequence, 53–54
  retrial, interview sequence, 53–54
  trial, interview sequence, 53–54
Children's Path Preschool, 170–71
Child suggestibility claims, 16, 355, 360, 365–66, 406–7
  Country walk case, 283, 341–52
    Braga, maligning of, 348–51
    children most criticized, 343–45
    overlooked or downplayed children, 346–47
"A Child's Word," 388–89
"Child Witnesses: Translating Research into Policy" (Ceci and Bruck), 275–76
CII. *See* Children's Institute International (CII)
Cincinnati, Isaac Wise Temple summer camp case, 95
Civil commitment, 371
Clarksville case. *See* Craig's Country Pre-School case
Clemency and Pardons Board, 136–37
Clinton, New Jersey. *See* Wee Care Child Care Center
Coats, Dan, 390
Coburn, Tom, 477n18
Cockburn, Alexander, 330–31
Coffee, John, 178
Cohen, Arthur, 335, 352
Cohen, Lucy, 148
Coleman, Judge, 392
Coleman, Lee, 351
  Bruck, Maggie on, 341–42
  Country Walk case and, 179
  on other child abuse cases, 469n97
  on "People are Talking," 469n70
  Shumate, Neil case, 376
  testimony of, 321–23
  Underwager, Ralph, replacement of, 328
Colposcope, 56–57, 66, 122, 427n167
Commercial Appeal
  "Justice Abused: A 1980s Witch-Hunt" (Charlier and Downing), 88, 92
  36 cases, list of, 87–115
  on witch-hunt narrative, 11
Community notification systems, 371–72
Concerned Scientists brief, 277–79, 356–57, 380, 387
"Confirmation bias," 285
Contested medical evidence, McMartin case. *See* McMartin Preschool case
Contra Costa County, CA. *See* Seering Family Day Care
Cook, Cody
  dropped from case, 226
  initial phase of investigation, 208–9
  subsequent investigation, 216
Cook, Debbie, 208
Cora's Day Care case, 107–8
Cordova, Sally, 83
Cornell Law Review, 400
Cornell, William, 117
"Corroboration" requirements, 187
Costello, Marvin, 192
Country Walk case, 15, 283–354, 414. *See also* Fuster, Frank; Fuster, Ileana (Flores)
  attendance patterns, 287
  Ceci and Bruck and, 272–73, 278
    "Six Elements" to Three Major Cases, 359
  charges, 315–16
    full counts, *310*

"coerced confession" of Ileana Fuster, 332–35
defense, 179, 321–25
evidence, 306–15
  medical conditions, 306
  sexually precocious behavior, 308
  suspicious incidents, 306–8
  unclothed children, 306–8
"fantastic" elements, 283, 331, 338–40, 351–53
full counts, 326
"hysteria," Dade County, Florida allegedly in grip of, 174–75
"inaccurate test" myth, 328–29, 470n130
interviews
  Braga interviews, initial (August 8 and 10, 1984), 292–98
  final interviews, 308–15
  later August 1984 interviews, 298–305
key features of, 360–61, *361*
medical conditions, 306
original case (1984-85), 285–327
  aggressive questioning of child witness, 317–18
  Braga interviews, initial (August 8 and 10, 1984), 292–98
  charges, 315–16
  early investigation (August 3-8, 1984), 285, 289–92
  evidence, 306–15
  guilty plea, 298, 318–19
  later August 1984 interviews, 298–305
  origins of Country Walk babysitting service, 285–305
  trial, 319–25
  verdict, 325, 327
origins of Country Walk Babysitting Service, 285–305
  Arvida Corporation, 285, 291, 330, 346, 466n12
  Disney Corporation, 285, 346
revisionist history (1993-present), 327–51
  "coerced confession" of Ileana Fuster, 332–35
  Fuster, Noel, retraction by, 329–31, 471n143
  "inaccurate test" myth, 328–29, 470n130
  prior record of Fuster, minimizing, 335–38
sexually precocious behavior, 308
state's case, 319–20
STD findings, 302, 320, 352
suggestibility claims, 341–52
  Bragas, maligning of, 348–51
  children most criticized, 343–45
  overlooked or downplayed children, 346–47
"Suggestibility of the Child Witness: A Historical Review and Synthesis" (Ceci and Bruck), 272–73, 406–7
suspicious incidents, 306–8
timelines, 284
trial, 319–25
  defense, 321–24
    full counts, 326
    overlooked or downplayed children, 346–47
    state's case, 319–20
    verdict, 325, 327
  unclothed children, 306–8
  verdict, 325, 327
  victims and family. *See* Arrigan, Brian; Cramer, Jason; Cramer, Joshua; Leventhal, Betsy; Leventhal, Charlie; Leventhal, Tom; Lipton, Daniel; Lipton, Jessie; Lipton, Roberta; Lucas, Allison; Lucas, Tammy; Lucas, Victor; Menninger, Donald; Menninger, Donald, Jr.; Menninger, Vicki; Monk, Carrie; Pelton, Vivian; Porter, Annie; Porter, Kimberly; Porter, Malcolm; St. Lorenzo, Emma; St. Lorenzo, John; Taylor, Becky; Thomas, Ariel; Walker, Paula; Walker, Sara
Craft, Daryl, 184
Craig, Sandra, 105–7. *See also* Craig's Country Pre-School case
Craig's Country Pre-School case, 105–7, 189, 436n70
Cramer, Jason
  Braga, Joseph and Laurie, interviews, 292–95, 297, 301, 309, 311–12, 339
  counts involving, 316
  criticisms of interview(s), 345
  cross-examination of, 320
  early investigation, 291
  ignoring of, 323
  overlooked or downplayed testimony, 346–47
  sexually precocious behavior, 308
  tapes made by, ignoring of
    aggressive questioning of, 317–18
  validity of testimony, 360
Cramer, Joshua
  Braga, Joseph and Laurie, interviews, 294
  sexually precocious behavior, 308
Cramer, Sandra, 308
Cranshaw, Jane, 104
Credibility of children, undermining, 387–406
  child abuse accommodation syndrome, contesting, 394–400
  institutions, backlash against, 401–6
  professions, backlash against, 401–6
  "tainted," labeling children as, 390–94
Crews, Frederick, 12, 157
Crime Library website, 17
Croskey, Judge H. Walter, 171–72
Cross, Theodore, 373
Crowley, Patricia, 453n17
Currie, Robert, 21, 69–70, 73

Dade County, Florida. *See also* Country Walk case; Finje, Bobby case
  "hysteria," allegedly in grip of, 174–75
Daily Breeze, McMartin Preschool case, 79

Dalenberg, Constance, 405
Davis, Danny, 20, 78
Daybridge Day Care Center, 177
Daybridge Learning Center, 97
Day care abuse, 1980s, 152–59. *See also specific cases*
  during McMartin, 155–59
  pre-McMartin, 152–55
The Day Care Ritual Abuse Moral Panic (Young), 87
"Day care sexual abuse cases of the 1980s," use of term, 87
Day care workers as "symbols," 152
Day of Contrition (linking cases to Salem witch trials of 1690s), 374, 377, 389–90, 401, 485n161
Dayton, Ohio. *See* Aldridge and Wilcox case
Deacon, Lucy
  extreme behavioral evidence, 231
  subsequent investigation, 215, 216
A Death in White Bear Lake (Seigel), 179
Denial and silence on child sex abuse cases, 15, 151–95
  "air of denial," 177–85
  day care abuse, 1980s, 152–59
    during McMartin, 155–59
    pre-McMartin, 152–55
  denial, use of term, 151
  "fantastic" elements, 154, 159–67
    child pornography "myth," 163–67
  "hysteria," use of term in witch-hunt narrative, 167–85
    Amirault case, Boston during, 176–77
    Country Walk case, Dade County, Florida during, 174–75
    Kelly Martin Day care case, New Jersey during, 173–74
    McMartin era, 167–73
    places allegedly in grip of, 167–77
    Southern California, 167–73
  leniency for child molesters, 191–95
  prosecuting child abuse, difficulties, 185–91
Department of Social Services (DSS)
  California, 154, 172–73, 434n30
  Massachusetts, 126–28, 165
  Michigan, 110, 437n87
Des Moines Register, 141
Dillard, Michael Paul, 161
Dimitrius, Jo-Ellan, 419–20n41
Dinerstein, Stephen, 332–33, 348, 353, 471n148
Discounting reality of day-care sexual abuse, 383–87
Disney Corporation, 285, 346
Doe, Gregory, 132
Doggett, Susan "Sam," 382
Domestic Violence Prosecution Unit (Westchester County), 187
Donahue, John, 192
Donnella, Amy Gershenfeld, 277, 352–53
Dove, Gayle, 185
Downing, Shirley, 11
  Charlier, Tom and Downing, Shirley. *See* Charlier, Tom and Downing, Shirley
  "Justice Abused: A 1980s Witch-Hunt," 88, 92
  36 cases, list of, 87–115. *See also* "Justice Abused: A 1980s Witch-Hunt" (Charlier and Downing); 36 cases, list of by Charlier and Downing
Drew, Dana, 226
Drummond, Donald T., 186
DSS. *See* Department of Social Services (DSS)
Dugan, Michele, 71
Duke Child Protection team, 143
Duke Medical Center, 143
Dye, Detective, 34, 37, 421n42
Dyer, Ed, 182–83
DYFS. *See* New Jersey Department of Health and Family Services (DYFS)

Early Childhood Development Center, 126–28, 155
Eberle, Paul and Shirley, 7, 71–72, 405, 418n11
Edenton, North Carolina. *See* Little Rascals day care center case
Edgewood, Iowa. *See* Sunshine Preschool and Day Care Center case
Eison, Rita Bighead, 379–80
Ennis, Cindy, 427n167
Ennis, Donna, 82
Esquilin, Susan, 217
Essex County Prosecutor's Office, 280
  cross examinations, 236
  decision on who would be included in case, 224
  evidence allegedly kept from jury, 252
  Sexual Abuse unit, 206–7
Everson, Mark, 263, 351–52
Evidence. *See specific case*

Fairmont Baptist Church, 157
Falls-Lakeview School, 192
False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF), 12, 139, 383, 388, 390
Famous Trials website, 17
"Fantastic" elements
  Country Walk case, 283, 331, 338–40, 351–53
  McMartin era, 154, 159–67
    child pornography "myth," 163–67
  Michaels, Kelly case, 261–64
FBI
  Georgian Hills Early Childhood Center case, 97
  Investigator's Guide to Allegations of "Ritual" Child Abuse, 160–61
  McMartin Preschool case, 70, 72
  West Point Child Development Center, 112
Feather, Garfield, 396
Feifel, John E.., 180

Feigley, George, 448–49n46
Fells Acres Day School case, 176
Felsten, Anne, 229–30
Ferguson, Judge, 298
Ferrera, Christopher case, 377, 383
54 names listed in *Satan's Silence: Ritual Abuse and the Making of an American Witch-Hunt* (Nathan and Snedeker)
  dedication page, 115–50. *See also specific names and cases*
    details on names listed, *116*
    wrongful convictions, cases with, 117–18
Figured, Patrick, 11, 142–44. *See also* Miss Polly's Day Care Center
Finje, Bobby case, 174–75
Finkelhor, David, 155–57, 163
Fiore, Faye. *See* St. Cross Church
Fischer, Mary, 6, 7, 28, 81
Fitzpatrick, Frank, 367
Fitzpatrick, Janet, 141
Flora, Rebecca
  extreme behavioral evidence, 230–31
  Fonolleras, Lou, interview with, 221
  interview of, 247, 249
  medical evidence, 231–32
  verdict and, 242
Flores, Ileana. *See* Fuster, Ileana (Flores)
Florida. *See also* Country Walk case; Dade County, Florida; Finje, Bobby case; Glendale Montessori School
  Jimmy Ryce Act, 140
FMSF. *See* False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF)
Foeller case, 278, 404
Fonolleras, Lou
  bias, 350
  initial phase of investigation, 206–7
  interviews by, 217, 219–21, 226, 281
    criticisms in witch-hunt narrative, 249–51, 266
    sequence of, *218*
  Nathan, Debbie, criticisms by, 243
  own abuse, telling children about, 243, 459n137
  subsequent investigation, 213–16
  substantiation of sex abuse by, 224
  testimony, 228
Ford, Daniel, 127
Ford, Greg, 367
Fort Bragg case. *See* Jubilation Day Care Center case
Fort Lauderdale, Florida. *See* Rainbow Christian Day Care case
48 Hours (tv show), 244, 478n55
Foster case, 10
Foster, Peg, 212–13, 228–29, 247
Fox, David, 186
Fran's Day Care case, 144–47
Freeh Report, 368–69
Freeman, Clara, 93
Freeman, James, 114
Freeman, LeRoy, 93, 434n19
Freud, Sigmund
  seduction theory, suppression of, 3, 177
  writings against, 12
Freyd, Peter, 12, 388
Friedman, Arnold and Jesse case, 11, 130–33
  Capturing the Friedmans (Jarecki), 11, 130–33, 443n198
  Innocence Project, 133
  website, 442n188
  "Witch Hunt Information Center" and, 130
Fried, Stephen, 182
Frontline (PBS program), 8–11, 174
  Country Walk case, 336, 338, 348, 351, 353
Fuster, Frank
  affidavit on behalf of by Bruck, Maggie, 285, 327
  as defense witness, 323
  First Degree Manslaughter plea, 472–73n171
  information on, 11
  Kendall Decorators, 286
  manslaughter charges, prior, 336–37
  marriages, 286. *See also* Fuster, Ileana (Flores)
  Mobile Showroom, 286
  prior record of, minimizing, 335–38
  rape, as prior suspect in, 337–38
  Satan's Silence, dedication page, 115
  sentencing of, 319
Fuster, Ileana (Flores). *See also* Country Walk case; Fuster, Frank
  guilty plea, 298, 318–19
    as "coerced confession," 332–35, 341
  marriage of, 286
  as rebuttal witness, 324–25
  statements from children regarding, 288
  testimony of, 472n162
Fuster, Martha, 309
Fuster, Noel
  abuse by father
    Braga interview, 298, 302
    Fuster, Ileana testimony, 325
    retraction by, 329–31, 471n143
  birth of, 286
  interview, 309, 311–13, 470–71n138
  quotes used in trial, 343
  STD findings, 302, 309, 320
Futrelle, David, 161

Gabaeff, Steven, 136
Gaddis Rickie Jay, 161–62
Gannet News Service, 179–80
Gans, Ralph
  extreme behavioral evidence, 230
  interviews of, 249–50
  subsequent investigation, 213–14, 216
Garcetti, Gil, 80
Gardner, Martin, 11, 117

Gardner, Richard
  Day of Contrition, 405, 485n161
  on jury, 438n113
  Michaels, Kelly case, exaggerations pertaining to, 462n208
  parental alienation syndrome, 389–90
  on police and child protective services, 184
  on punitive treatment of sex offenders, 373
  sex-abuse hysteria, coining of term, 193–94, 264
  Sex Abuse Hysteria: Salem Witch Trials Revisited, 179, 379
  Watson, Norman case and, 180
Gauthe case, 368
Geoghan, Father John, 366–67
Georgian Hills Early Childhood Center case, 96–100, 362
  numbers of perpetrators, 89
  in 36 cases, list of by Charlier and Downing, 94
Gersten, Judge David M., 297
Gingerbread Day Care, 385
Giuliani, Rudolph, 112
Glazer, Mark, 390, 393
Glendale Montessori School, 137–40
Gloucester County
  Maryland day care centers, 153
  New Jersey nursery schools, 153–54
Goldberg, Bernard, 244–45
Goldberg, Glenn, 239, 417n11
Gold, Eugene, 193
Goldman, Amy, 423n75
Goldstein, Ross, 131, 443n198
Goodman, Gail, 22
  child suggestibility claims and, 355
  Country Walk case, 283
  Michaels, Kelly case, 271–72, 277, 282, 387, 413
Gordon, Linda, 25, 178
Gordon, Mary
  CII evaluation, 44
  contested medical evidence and, 64, 428–29n167
  early investigation, 34–37
Gorney, Cynthia, 21
Grafton, Margaret, 123
Great Neck, New York. *See* Friedman, Arnold and Jesse case
Green, Judge Robert, 193
Greenup, Campbell, 172, 450n92
Green, Wade, 71
Gregg, Barry
  CII interview with, 47, 50
  contested medical evidence and, 63–64, 67
Gregg, Darlene, 81
Gregg, Sally, 33
Gross. Samuel, 400
Guild, Greg, 229, 232
Hadley, Laura, 36, 206, 238, 269
Haley, Nora van, 214–15
Halsey, Robert case, 12, 147–49, 157, 374. *See also* Lanesborough Elementary School case
Hamrick, Robert, 34
Hankin, Richard, 130
Hanneman, Gary, 384–85
Harbor-UCLA Hospital, 169
Hargrove, Wayne, 98–99
Haroutunian, Anna, 231–32
Harper's
  McMartin Preschool case, 8
  Michaels, Kelly case, 22, 243, 273
Harrington, Maine. *See* Ardolino, Robert case
Harrisburg, Pennsylvania. *See* New American Church
Harris, Jonathan, 11–12, 142–43, 147, 254, 376
Hartford County, MD. *See* Bo Peep Day Nursery
Harth, Judge William, 234, 237, 239, 270
Hart, Kim, 185
Hart, Lisa, 170
Harwood, William, 484n151
Hassim, Sargent, 392
Hating the Sin, Loving the Sinner, 192
Hayes, Tracy, 219
Hazel Crawford Day Care, 351
Head Start Program case, 149–50
Hearsay evidence, 191
Hechler, David
  The Battle and the Backlash, 111
Heger, Astrid
  CII interviews, 45
  colposcopic exam by, 56–57
  contested medical evidence and, 59–68, 427–28nn167 and 168
  on evolution of medical knowledge, 197
Hentoff, Nat, 245, 251–52, 389
Herman-Giddens, Marcia, 143
Herman, Judith, 178
Hermosa Beach, California. *See* Children's Path Preschool; St. Cross Church
Hetherington, Thomas Max, 154
Higgins, Charlie, 99
High Society magazine, 150
Hight, Judge Bob T., 170, 187
Hill, Sonja, 11, 142–44. *See also* Miss Polly's Day Care Center
Hoag, Detective, 38, 40
Hoffman, Richard, 180
Hogan, John, 315
Hollingsworth, Jan, 288, 292, 309, 347, 467n38
  Unspeakable Acts, 293, 341
Hollywood, Florida. *See* Nativity School
Holtzman, Elizabeth, 187
Home day care case, 128–29

Home day care center, White Plains, New York, 113–15
Homophobia, 127
Honolulu, Hawaii. *See* Kailua Beach Preschool
Hopkins, Carol, 12, 375, 377–78, 382, 389–90, 478n55
Horsey, David, 383
Hoyt, Wanda, 179–80
Hubbeling, Russell, 396
Huck's Raft: A History of American Childhood (Mintz), 8
Huck, William F., Sr., 385
Hume, Edward, 121–22, 126, 440n134
  Mean Justice, 118–19, 440n134, 441n160
Humphrey, Hubert III
  Report on Scott County Investigations, 101–3
Hypnosis, 132
"Hysteria," use of term in witch-hunt narrative, 15, 156, 167–85
  "air of denial" and, 179
  Amirault case, Boston during, 176–77
  Country Walk case, Dade County, Florida during, 174–75
  Kelly Martin Day care case, New Jersey during, 173–74
  McMartin era, 167–73
  Michaels, Kelly case, 264–68
  places allegedly in grip of, 167–77
  sex-abuse hysteria, coining of term, 193–94
  Southern California, 167–73

Implanted, use of term, 7, 41
Incest. *See also* Fuster. Noel
  Secret Trauma: Incest in the Lives of Girls and Women (Russell), 451n117
  Something About Amelia (tv movie), 3, 177
Indictment (film), 9–11, 23
  described, 419n1
  fire in school, depiction of, 72
  Johnson, Judy, portrayal of, 25
  Stevens, Glenn, interviews with, 20
  on trial and retrial, 81
Ingram case, 117
Ingram, Kathy Kae
  CII evaluation, 44
  contested medical evidence and, 68
  early investigation, 37–40
Ingram, Paul, 9
Institutions, backlash against, 401–6
Inverness, Florida. *See* Matthews, Mitchell case
Investigator's Guide to Allegations of "Ritual" Child Abuse (FBI), 160–61
Iowa Department of Human Services, 141–42
Iowa Department of Justice, 141
Iowa v. Warnock. See Warnock, George and Betty
Isaac, Rael Jean, 348
Isaacs, P. J.
  extreme behavioral evidence, 231
  Fonolleras, Lou, interview with, 220
  interviews of, 250
  testimony of, 238
Isaac Wise Temple summer camp case, 95
Isabel's Day Care, 164
Issues in Child Abuse Accusations (Nathan), 327

Jackson, John, 78
Jackson, Mary Ann, 19, 76. *See also* McMartin Preschool case
Jackson Memorial Hospital, 345
Jackson, Michael, 366
Jacob Wetterling Crimes Against Children and Sexually Violent Offenders Act, 370
Jarecki, Andrew, 442n180
  Capturing the Friedmans, 11, 130–33, 443n198
Jenkins, Natalie, 243, 459n137
Jenkins, Philip
  Catholic Church and, 177–78
  on child pornography, 163
  on homicide, 180
  on media reports, 73, 101
  Moral Panic: Changing Conceptions of the Child Molester in Modern America, 13
Jeopardy in the Courtroom: A Scientific Analysis of Children's Testimony (Ceci and Bruck)
  children's testimony, article on, 23
  child suggestibility claims and, 9–10, 365
  Country Walk case, 15, 285, 341–43, 346
Jessica's Law, 370
Jimmy Ryce Act, 140
John Paul II, 367
Johnson, Judy
  beginning of case, 24–27
  behavior of, 430n188
  contested medical evidence and, 63
  death of, 20, 24, 26
Johnson, Kirk, 135
Johnson, Matthew, 24–27, 358
  contested medical evidence, 59, 63
  examinations by physicians, 25
  MBPD report on, 421n42
Johnston, Pennsylvania, ritual abuse, 161–62
Jones, Dennis, 242
Jones, Kimmy, 242
Jones, Maggie, 124
Jones, Samuel L., 193–94
Jordan, Minnesota cases, 100–103, 163
  highlighting of in 36 cases, list of by Charlier and Downing, 94–95
  leniency for child molesters, 191–92
  numbers of perpetrators, 89
  Olson Commission, 101–2
  prior apprehending of defendants, 194

Jordan, Minnesota cases (*continued*)
  Report on Scott County Investigations (Humphrey), 101–3
  Satan's Silence, dedication page, 115
Journal of Clinical Microbiology
  Country Walk case, 328
Journal of Social Issues
  Michaels, Kelly case, 271
Jubilation Day Care Center case, 96, 434–35n19
"Junior McMartins," use of phrase, 87, 152–54, 180–81, 327
"Justice Abused: A 1980s Witch-Hunt" (Charlier and Downing), 88, 92
Justice Committee, 12, 389

KABC television. *See* ABC television
Kailua Beach Preschool, 164–65
Kaiser Permanente, 24
Kanka, Megan, 370
Kaplan, Dr., 396
Kauffmann, Kristi, 191
Kauffmann, Paul, 191
Keenan, Detective, 104
Keller Army Hospital, 112
Keller, Daniel and Francis, 144–47, 374. *See also* Fran's Day Care case
Kelly Michaels Defense Committee, 243
Kelly, Robert. *See also* Little Rascals day care center case
  conviction of, 8–9
  information on, 11
  sex-abuse hysteria, coining of term and, 193
Kelson, Ellen, 396
Kempe, Henry, 178
Kendall Decorators, 286
Kennedy v. Louisiana, 400
Kent, Cheryl, 71
Kentucky, "Vampire Clan," 448–49n46
Kern County, California cases, 11, 100, 164, 197. *See also* Kniffen case; McCuan case; Self, Grant; Stoll, John
  numbers of perpetrators, 89
  Report on the Kern County Child Abuse Investigations, 118
  wrongful convictions, 118
Kern, David A., 157
Key, Bradley James, 161
Kidnapping case
  Huntington Beach, California, 93
"Kinder Orgy" (film), 166
Kirk, Michael, 337
Kniffen, Brian and Brandon, 120–21
Kniffen case, 59, 118–23, 126
Koppel, Ted, 388, 390
Krause, Sharon, 134, 136
Krauthammer, Charles, 179
Krebs, Sandy, 57–59
Krieger, Seth, 472–73n171
Krikorian, Claudia, 168–72
Krivacska, James, 393–94
Kropinack, Leslie, 173
Krueger, Richard, 370
Kuemin, Raymond, 153

Lake Worth, Florida. *See* Sugar Plum School House case
LA Magazine
  McMartin Preschool case, 81
Lamb, Michael, 257
Landell, Sonny, 45
Landez, Martha
  initial phase of investigation, 210
  interview of, 247
  subsequent investigation, 215–16
  verdict and, 240
Lanesborough Elementary School case, 147–49
Lang, Justin, 230
Lanning, Kenneth, 97, 160
Larry King Live (tv show), 417n11
L.A. Star, 417n11
"Lateral traction test," 440n132
Law, Cardinal Bernard, 368
Lawson, Henry, 172
Lawton, Betsy, 47, 50
Lawton, Otis, 47, 50
Lawton, Robert case, 377–78, 383
Learning Game preschool, 170–71
Lee, Skipper, 162
Legacy of the witch-hunt narrative, 363–407
  credibility of children, undermining, 387–406
  overview, 383–406
  reality of day-care sexual abuse, discounting, 383–87
Lehrman Day School, 174, 292
Leniency for child molesters, 191–95
Leon, Chrysanthi, 371–73
Leventhal, Betsy, 288, 306–8, 321
Leventhal, Charlie, 306
Leventhal, Tom
  Braga, Joseph and Laurie, interviews by, 293–95, 299, 302
  counts involving, 316
  criticisms of interview(s), 345
  early investigation, 291
  medical conditions, 306
  sexually precocious behavior, 308
  statement of other child, 288
  unclothed, incident, 307, 324–25
Licht, Allan, 166
Linder, Douglas, 17
Ling, Lorraine, 104
Lipton, Daniel
  Braga, Joseph and Laurie, interviews, 293, 294, 300–302
  early investigation, 289–90
  sexually precocious behavior, 308

Lipton, Jessie
  Braga, Joseph and Laurie, interviews, 298–99, 313–15
  criticisms of interview(s), 343–45
  cross-examination of, 320
  early investigation, 290
  quotes used in trial, 343
  suspicious incident, 307
Lipton, Roberta, 308
Lists of case names
  54 names in Nathan/Snedeker book, 87–88. *See also* 54 names listed in *Satan's Silence: Ritual Abuse and the Making of an American Witch-Hunt* (Nathan and Snedeker)
    dedication page, 115–50
  36 cases, *Commercial Appeal*, 87–115. *See also* 36 cases, list of by Charlier and Downing
    chronology of cases, 153
    settings of cases, 155
Little Angels Preschool, 172
"Little But Lewd" (film), 166
Little Rascals day care center case, 8–10
Llewellyn, Richard, 184
Loftus, Elizabeth, 374
Logan, Mary, 169
Loken, Chief Judge James B., 398
Lopez, Judge Richard, 171
Lorain, Ohio. *See* Head Start Program case
Lorman, Stephanie, 204
Los Angeles County. *See also* McMartin Preschool case
  Sheriff's Ritual Abuse Task Force, 4, 85, 197
Los Angeles District Attorney's Office
  McMartin Preschool case, 68, 74–75
    political factors and, 76–77
Los Angeles Herald Examiner
  on Johnson, Judy, 26
Los Angeles Magazine
  McMartin Preschool case, 6
Los Angeles School District, 369–70
Los Angeles Times
  on child pornography, 166
  McMartin Preschool case, 6, 21–22, 74, 172
  Michaels, Kelly case, 271–72, 282
  sex-offender politics and, 370
Lowry, Rich, 254
Lucas, Allison, 289–90, 308
Lucas, Judge Malcolm M., 123
Lucas, Tammy
  Braga, Joseph and Laurie, interviews, 292, 295–96, 302, 466n31
  counts involving, 316
  cross-examination of, 320
  early investigation, 289–90
  Fuster, Ileana testimony, 324–25
  medical conditions, 306
  sexually precocious behavior, 308
Lucas, Victor, 289
Lupoli, Tyler case, 381–82
Lynwood, California. *See* Little Angels Preschool
Lyon, Kathryn, 382
Lyon, Tom, 279, 283, 387

MacDonald, Alan, 382
MacFarlane, Kee, 7
  CII interviews, 42–51, 57, 75
    overdiagnosis issue and, 61
  early investigation, 34–36
  interview transcripts and, 41
  in preliminary hearing, 78
  Satz, Wayne, relationship, 430n185
  Stevens, Glenn and, 40
Maine Supreme Court, 190
Making Monsters (Ofshe and Watters), 9
"The Making of a Modern Witch Hunt" (Nathan), 6
Malcom, Julia, 134, 136
Malcom, Kevin, 134–35
Malcom, Lynn case, 374
Malcom, Marilynn, 133–37, 443n207. *See also* Rainbow Christian Daycare case
Malden, Massachusetts. *See* Amirault case
Mandatory Reporting Act, 192
Manhattan Beach, California. *See* Learning Game preschool
Manhattan Beach Police Department (MBPD). *See also* McMartin Preschool case
  Buckey, Peggy, response to letter, 82
  contested medical evidence and, 59
  early investigation, 27–28
    responses to letter, 30, 32–34, 37–40, 414
    sequence of events, 29
  "hysteria," alleged and, 167–68
  Johnson, Matthew, report on, 421n42
  notification of injuries by Simpson-Savary, Jean H., 25
  photos from, 69–70
Manhattan Ranch Preschool, 170, 187
Mann, Abby, 9–11, 23. *See also Indictment* (film)
  fire in home of, 72
  on Johnson, Judy, 25, 26
  Stevens, Glenn and, 19–20, 40, 80
  testimony of children and, 78–79
Manners, Glenda, 123–25
Manning, Lona, 115
Mann, Myra, 20, 80
Manshel, Lisa
  on charges, substantiation of, 234
  on Fonolleras, Lou, 207, 220
  on *The Politics of Child Abuse* (Eberle and Eberle), 417n11
  Rabinowitz, Dorothy, criticisms by, 251–52
  on Sencer-McArdle, Sara, 225
Maplewood, New Jersey. *See* Michaels, Kelly case; Wee Care Child Care Center

Maran, Meredith, 444n229
Marcotty, Josephine, 102
Marion Davies Children's Clinic, 25
Marks, Douglas, 184
Martindale, Nathan, 384
Martin, Harold, 114
Martin, Jeanette, 113–15, 437n98. *See also* Unlicensed day care centers
Maryland, University of, 61
Maryland v. Craig, 106, 273
Marzolf case, 390–93, 403
Massachusetts
  Day of Contrition (linking cases to Salem witch trials of 1690s), 374, 377, 389–90
Masson, Jeffrey
  The Assault on Truth: Freud's Suppression of the Seduction Theory, 177
  on Freud suppression of seduction theory, 3
Mastrangelo, Richard
  initial phase of investigation, 206, 209
  interview with child, 257
  state's case and, 228–29
Matthews, Mitchell case, 192–93
Matusinka, Jean, 40, 73
McCann, John
  contested medical evidence, 66–67
  studies, 60, 62, 67, 143, 421n31
McCormick, Robert, 164
McCuan, Bobbie and Darla, 119–22
McCuan case, 119–23, 126
McCuan, Deborah and Alvin, 59, 118–23
McGaulie, Jackie, 429n175
McGeary, Scott, 25
McGinnis, Catherine, 345
McGirt, Susan, 169
McGrath, George, 207, 209, 228, 247, 249
McGraw, Carol, 166
McKeg, Thomas, 154
McMartin era, 151–95. *See also* McMartin Preschool case
  day care abuse, 1980s, 152–59
    during McMartin, 155–59
  "fantastic" elements, 154, 159–67
    child pornography "myth," 163–67
  "hysteria," Southern California allegedly in grip of, 167–73
"McMartin Madness: Ten Days in the Life of the Longest, Most Gruesomely Difficult Criminal Trial Ever" (Safian), 21
McMartin Preschool case, 17–86, 413–14. *See also* Buckey, Peggy; Buckey, Peggy Ann; Buckey, Raymond; McMartin era; McMartin, Virginia
  beginning of case, 17, 19
  Believe the Children, 4, 10–11, 71, 85–86
  Ceci and Bruck on "Six Elements to Three Major Cases, 358–59
  Children's Institute International (CII). *See* Children's Institute International (CII)
  children's statements, generally, 189
  contested medical evidence, 59–68
    overdiagnosis issue, 60–62
    relevant evidence, 62–68
  early investigation, 27–40
    September responders, *39*
    sequence of events, *29*
  evaluations at CII, 40–59. *See also* Children's Institute International (CII) *for detailed treatment*
  evidence
    contested medical evidence, 59–68
    failure to review, 75–76
  evolution of witch-hunt narrative and, 21–23
  excesses of the case, 197
  fire at school, 71–72
  forces beyond CII, 68–77
  grand jury, 17, 19
  graphic stories, television reporting, 3
  initial acceptance of charges, 5–6
  jurors, 432n227
  key features of, 360–61, *361*
  made-for-tv-movie on, 9–11
  media coverage, 72–74. *See also specific newspaper and television station*
  number of complainants, 19, 41
  numbers of perpetrators, 89
  overview, 4–5, 14
  parent-investigators, 69–72
  photo lineups, 75
  preliminary hearing, 77–79
    interview sequence, *53–54*
    testimony of children, 78–79
  prosecutorial failures, 74–77
    CII process, neglecting to supervise, 74–75
    evidence not reviewed, 75–76
    political factors and, 76–77
  relevant medical evidence, 62–68
  retrial, 80–84
  "ritual abuse" claims, 4, 85
  Sheriff's Task Force
    "ritual abuse" claims, 4, 85, 197
  testimony of children, 22–23
  therapists, activist, 69–72
  in 36 cases, list of by Charlier and Downing, 94
  timeline, *18*, 196–97
  transcripts, 198
  trial, 80–84
  verdicts, 7, 20, 83–84
  victims and family. *See* Acorn, David; Bailey, Penny; Baldwin, Ella; Barton, Gloria; Barton, Sara; Brown, Jenny; Chapman, Breanna; Chapman, Ellen; Chase, Miranda; Ennis, Cindy; Ennis, Donna; Gordon, Mary; Gregg, Barry; Gregg,

Darlene; Gregg, Sally; Ingram, Kathy Kae; Johnson, Judy; Johnson, Matthew; Landell, Sonny; Lawton, Betsy; Lawton, Otis; McGaulie, Jackie; Mergili, Tanya; Sandel, Bill; Van Holden, Bobby; Van Holden family; Van Holden, Valerie; Vickers, Bobby; Walters, Kristy; Walters, Trisha
  as "witch hunt," 5–6
McMartin Task Force, 19
McMartin, Virginia, 4. *See also* McMartin Preschool case
  Anatomy of the McMartin Child Molestation Case, dedication, 419–20n1
  on Buckey, Ray, behavior of, 82
  CII interviews with victims and, 51, 58
  indictment of, 19, 76
  learning of investigation, 27
  libel suit against, 21
  Sorenson, Wesley, testimony of, 431n199
McNamara, Eileen, 390
MDMH Report, Small World Preschool case, 109–10, 437n85
Meacham, Edwin James, 164
Mean Justice (Hume), 118–19, 440n134, 441n160
Meckler, Ilyce, 430n190
"Media Flip-Flop: Why Four Years Later the Press Is Taking a Strikingly Different Approach to the Martin Preschool Scandal," 6
Medical evidence, contested in McMartin case. *See* McMartin Preschool case
Megan's Law, 365, 370–74, 384, 406
Meltzer, Harvey, 236
Memphis, Tennessee. *See Commercial Appeal;* Georgian Hills Early Childhood Center case
Mendes, Brenda
  extreme behavioral evidence, 231
  Fonolleras, Lou, interview with, 220
  medical evidence, 232
Mengelberg, Brigitte I., 134
Menninger, Donald
  Braga, Joseph and Laurie, interviews, 298–99, 301–2
  early investigation, 289, 336
  overlooked or downplayed testimony, 346
  statement to mother, 288, 291, 308
  substantation of charges, 468–69n92
Menninger, Donald, Jr., 468–69n93
Menninger, Vicki, 321
Menoher, Joanne, 288, 289, 466n12
Mergili, Tanya
  CII interview with, 42, 47–51
  contested medical evidence and, 67–68
  early investigation, 30–32
  parent-investigator and, 70
  withdrawal of parents from case, 422n50
Meznarich, Donna
  August 1984 interviews and, 299, 301–2
  early investigation, 289–91
  interviews, 345
Miami Herald, 190
  Country Walk case, 293, 302, 325, 350–51
Michaels, Kelly case, 8, 203–82, 414–15
  academics. witch-hunt narrative and, 271–79
    brief for the defense, Ceci and Bruck, 277–79
    Concerned Scientists brief, 277–79, 356–57, 380, 387
    effect of, 281–82
    "Mousetrap Study," 272–75, 356
    research, translating into policy, 275–76
    "Suggestibility of the Child Witness: A Historical Review and Synthesis" (Ceci and Bruck), 272–73
  appeals (Appellate Division), 268–71
    decision, 279–80
  April 1985 (key events), 204–6
  belief system, 233
  Ceci and Bruck on "Six Elements to Three Major Cases, 359
  charges, actual, 224–25
  children at trial by status of charges, *235*
  children dropped from case, 226, *227*
  children interviewed, 217, 219–21
    initial phase of investigation, *211*
    sequence of, *218*
  child suggestibility claims, 16, 355
  civil claim, 463n227
  criticisms of interview(s), 10, 198
  defense, 236–39
  depositions by charge, by child, *241*
  deterioration of investigation, 217, 219–22
  dropping of charges, 280
  evidence allegedly kept from jury, 252–53
  extreme behavior evidence of children, 228–31
  "fantastic" elements, 261–64
  Fonolleras, Lou, interviews by. *See* Fonolleras, Lou, interviews by
  "hysteria"
    Boston allegedly in grip of, 176–77
    New Jersey allegedly in grip of, 173–74
  influence of, 200
  information on, 11
  initial phase of investigation, 206–12
    children interviewed, *211*
  intensity of investigation, increase of, 217, 219–22
  interview and charge information by investigative phase, *267*
  interviews, inaccurate claims about (post-conviction), 245–52
    "repetitive interviewing" claim, 247
    sequence of interviews, *246, 248*
  job change by Michaels, 204
  Kelly Michaels Defense Committee, 243

Michaels, Kelly case (*continued*)
  key features of, 360–61, *361*
  media on, 22
  medical evidence, 231–32
  motive of, 232–34
  "Mousetrap Study," 272–75, 356
  Munn, Charlene, letter to, 239
  number of charges convicted of at trial, 242
  psychological evaluation of, 233–34
  Satan's Silence, dedication page, 115
  sentence, trial, 239–42
  social hysteria, manufacturing, 264–68
  state's case, 226, 228–35
    children at trial by status of charges, *235*
    extreme behavior evidence, 228–31
    medical evidence, 231–32
    motive, 232–34
  subsequent investigation, 212–16
  timeline, *205*
  Treacy, Eileen on case. *See* Treacy, Eileen
  trial
    children at trial by status of charges, *235*
    defense, 236–39
    depositions by charge, by child, *241*
    number of charges convicted of, 242
    state's case, 226, 228–35
    verdict and sentence, 239–42, 268
  as turning point, 15
  verdict, trial, 239–42, 268
  victims and family. *See* Allister, John; Applegate, David; Applegate, Judy; Bond-Foley, Cassie; Cook, Cody; Cook, Debbie; Deacon, Lucy; Drew, Dana; Flora, Rebecca; Gans, Ralph; Guild, Greg; Haley, Nora van; Hayes, Tracy; Isaacs, P. J.; Jenkins, Natalie; Jones, Dennis; Jones, Kimmy; Landez, Martha; Lang, Justin; Mendes, Brenda; Murphy, Brian; Nathanson, Eddie; Palmieri, Shayla; Peyton, Jacob; Pierce, Dorinda; Pierce, Mitchell; Raymond, Jackie; Raymond, Sam; Rooney, Max; Sanders, Elliot; Schultz, Debra; Shaw, Jessie; Tilden, Julia; Watson, Ruby; Williams, Clare; Wolfe, Clare; Zeitz, Martin
  witch-hunt narrative following conviction (rewriting story of case), 242–68. *See also* Ceci and Bruck on Kelly Michaels case; Nathan, Debbie; Rabinowitz, Dorothy
    academics and, 271–79
    evidence allegedly kept from jury, 252–53
    "fantastic" elements, 261–64
    interview and charge information by investigative phase, *267*
    interviews, inaccurate claims about, 245–52
    social hysteria, manufacturing, 264–68
    Treacy, Eileen, inaccurate claims about, 253–61
Michigan Supreme Court, 191
Minimization of child sex abuse cases, 151–95
  day care abuse, 1980s, 152–59
    during McMartin, 155–59
    pre-McMartin, 152–55
  "fantastic" elements, 154, 159–67
    child pornography "myth," 163–67
  Fuster, Frank, prior record of, 335–38
  "hysteria," use of term in witch-hunt narrative, 167–85
    Amirault case, Boston during, 176–77
    Country Walk case, Dade County, Florida during, 174–75
    Kelly Martin Day care case, New Jersey during, 173–74
    McMartin era, 167–73
    places allegedly in grip of, 167–77
    Southern California, 167–73
  leniency for child molesters, 191–95
  prosecuting child abuse, difficulties, 185–91
Minneapolis Children's Theatre case, 192, 199
Minor, Clifford, 279
Mintz, Steven, 8
Miss Polly's Day Care Center, 142–44
Mitchell, Richard J., 158
Mitzenmacher, Myron, 56
Mobile Showroom, 286
Mondale Act. *See* Child Abuse Prevention and Treatment Act (CAPTA)
Monk, Carrie, 306
Montessori School No. 2, 168–71
Mooney, Gregory, 417n11
Moral Panic: Changing Conceptions of the Child Molester in Modern America (Jenkins), 13
"Moral panic," use of term in witch-hunt narrative, 156
Morgan, Judge J. Dean, 135
Mormon Church, 182–83
Morris, Kathleen, 101–2, 163
"Mousetrap Study," 272–75, 356
Mouw, Dr., 146–47
Moynihan, Daniel Patrick, 380
Munn, Charlene, 233–34, 239
Muram, David, 99
Murphy, Brian, 219
Mutter, Charles R., 334
Myrhow, Paul, 184

Nanny's Day Care, 153
Nassau County District Attorney's Office, 133
Nathan, Debbie. *See also Satan's Silence: Ritual Abuse and the Making of an American Witch-Hunt* (Nathan and Snedeker)
  on Buckey, Raymond, character of, 81
  "child pornography myth," 164
  contested medical evidence and, 63, 66
  Country Walk case, 283

American Psychological Association (APA), correspondence, 475n212
Bragas, maligning of, 349, 352
Fuster, Ileana (Flores), "coerced confession" of, 332–35
"inaccurate test" myth, 329
"junior McMartins," use of term, 327
suggestibility claims, 341
day care workers as "symbols," 152
on Early Childhood Development Center, 155
Issues in Child Abuse Accusations, 327
on Johnson, Matthew, examinations of, 25
"Junior McMartins," use of phrase, 87, 152–53, 180–81
"The Making of a Modern Witch Hunt" (Nathan), 6
Michaels, Kelly case, 8
appeals and, 268
on Applegate, David, testimony of, 456n55
criticisms of, 243, 397
effect of articles, 281
Fonolleras, Lou, criticisms of, 243
interviews, inaccurate claims about, 245, 250
Redbook article, 376
social hysteria, manufacturing, 264–65
Treacy, Eileen, criticisms of, 243, 254, 461n176
witch-hunt narrative following conviction, generally, 242–43
National Center for Reason and Justice (NCRJ), 374–75
Nightline (tv program), letter to, 388
omissions of facts, 33
on Papoose Place Academy, 155
on personality of child molesters, 193
on prosecution, 185
on West Point Child Development Center, 111
"What McMartin Started: The Ritual Abuse Hoax," 22
Nathan, Eleanor, 154
Nathanson, Eddie
initial phase of investigation, 207
interviews of, 249
medical evidence, 231
subsequent investigation, 213–14, 216
verdict and, 240
The Nation
Country Walk case, 330
National Center for Reason and Justice (NCRJ), 114–15, 149, 374–75
National Center on Child Abuse and Neglect (NCCAN), 160–61
National Children's Foundation, 350
National Review
Country Walk case, 348
McMartin Preschool case, 22
Michaels, Kelly case, 244, 254
National witch-hunt, evidence of, 87–150
lists of case names
54 names in Nathan/Snedeker book, 87–88, 115–50. *See also* 54 names listed in *Satan's Silence: Ritual Abuse and the Making of an American Witch-Hunt* (Nathan and Snedeker)
36 cases, *Commercial Appeal*, 87–115, 153. *See also* 36 cases, list of by Charlier and Downing
Nativity School, 183
NCAA, 368
NCCAN. *See* National Center on Child Abuse and Neglect (NCCAN)
NCRJ. *See* National Center for Reason and Justice (NCRJ)
Neovascularization, 68
New American Church, 448–49n46
New Hampshire, University of
Family Research Laboratory, 155
New Jersey. *See also* Michaels, Kelly case; Wee Care Child Care Center
"hysteria," allegedly in grip of, 173–74
Special Classification Review Board, 394
New Jersey Department of Health and Family Services (DYFS), 206, 207, 390
findings of, 224
New Jersey Division of Youth and Family Services, 265
New Jersey Law Journal
Michaels, Kelly case, 269, 279, 462n208
New Jersey Supreme Court
Michaels, Kelly case. *See* Michaels, Kelly case
Newman, Judge, 317–18, 333
New Mexico day care center, 154
News-Record
Michaels, Kelly case, 26
Newsweek
McMartin Preschool case, 79
West Point Child Development Center, 111
New Times
Country Walk case, 328
New York City Advisory Task Force on Rape, 255
New Yorker
on child abuse accommodation syndrome, 395
Ingram case, 117
on Provost, Father Ronald, 190
witch-hunt narrative and, 9
New York Law Journal
Michaels, Kelly case, 254
New York Review of Books, 12, 157
New York Times
on civil commitment, 371
on corroboration requirements, 187
Friedman, Arnold and Jesse case, 132
Michaels, Kelly case, 271–72
"Mousetrap Study," 273–75, 356
Minneapolis Children's Theatre case, 192
Self, Grant, 124

New York Times Book Review
  McMartin Preschool case, 22
  unlicensed day care center, White Plains, New York, 115
New York Times Magazine
  Stoll, John case, 119
"Nightline Alert," 388
Nightline (tv program), 387–88
Niles, Michigan. *See also* Small World Preschool case
  day care center, 153
Nixon, Richard M., 401
Noble, Mickey, 185
No More Secrets for Me, 213
Noonan, Judge John T., 11, 379, 406, 407
Norman, Oklahoma. *See* Trinity Baptist Church
North Carolina. *See* Parker case
North Carolina, University of
  Program on Childhood Trauma and Maltreatment, 263–64
Northern California, ritual abuse case, 162–63
North Miami Police Department, 175
Not My Child (Crowley), 453n17
Numbers of child sex abuse cases, 15. *See also* 54 names listed in *Satan's Silence: Ritual Abuse and the Making of an American Witch-Hunt* (Nathan and Snedeker); 36 cases, list of by Charlier and Downing
Nussle, Jim, 141

Oak Tree Day Care Center, 384
O'Boyle, James Joseph, 182
Ofshe, Richard, 9
Ohio Parole Board, 150
Ohio Supreme Court, 150
Ohme, Herman W., 390, 479n89
Okerblom, Jim, 11
Olio, Karen, 117
Olson Commission, 101–2
Olympia, Washington. *See* Ingram case
Olympic Memorial Hospital, 107
Ontario Consultants for Religious Tolerance, 13
Orr, Barbara, 434–35n19
Oscarson, Elsie, 380
Overdiagnosis issue, 60–62
Owen, Nina, 38
Owen, Roseanne, 38

Paidika: The Journal of Paedophilia, 236–37
Palmieri, Shayla, 219
Palomo, Timothy, 123
"Panic," use of term in witch-hunt narrative, 15, 156
Papoose Place Academy, 153, 155, 199, 419n1
Parental alienation syndrome, 389–90
Parent-investigators, McMartin Preschool case, 69–72
Parker case, 117
Parks, Deloartic, 103–5. *See also* Rogers Park Jewish Community Center case
Paterno, Joe, 369
"Patricia Crowley" book, 210
Paul, David, 24, 427–28n167
  contested medical evidence and, 63–64, 66–67
  "lateral traction test," 440n132
Pearl Lee Mitchell licensed day care center, 158
Peirsol, Chief Judge Lawrence L., 398–99
Pelton, Vivian, 307
Pendergrast, Mark, 375
  "child pornography myth," 164
  Fuster, Frank, exoneration of, 336
  Lawton, Robert case, 378
  Oscarson, Elsie case, 380
  Victims of Memory, 129
Peninsula Montessori School No. 1, 171–72, 449–50n76
Penn, Sean, 11, 119
Penn State scandal, 365–66, 368–69
"People are Talking" (tv program), 468n70
People Magazine
  McMartin Preschool case, 6, 78
People v. Taylor, 255
Perez, Detective, 439n114
Perez, Robert, 382
Perpich, Rudy, 101
Perry, David H., 153–54
Perry, Douglas, 144–46
Personalities of sex offenders, 181, 185
Peters, Nicholas, 441n153
Peterson, Anita, 136–37
Peyton, Jacob, 229–30, 234
Pezdek, Kathy, 387
Phelps, Rod, 119–21
Philibosian, Robert, 19, 76–77
Phillips, Michael, 94
Pierce, Dorinda, 206–8
Pierce, Mitchell, 206–7
  extreme behavioral evidence, 228–29
  first implication of teacher, 360
  Fonolleras, Lou, interview with, 220
  medical evidence, 231
  medical examination of, 238, 244
  subsequent investigation, 213
  witch-hunt narrative and
    "fantastic" elements, claims of, 262
    medical examination of, 244
    sex-abuse hysteria, use of term, 265
Pike County, Ohio, ritual abuse, 161
Pirro, Jeanine, 187
Pittsfield, Massachusetts. *See* Early Childhood Development Center
Plass, Richard, 195
Playboy magazine, 82–83
  "child pornography myth," 163, 166
Political factors, McMartin Preschool case, 76–77

The Politics of Child Abuse (Eberle and Eberle), 7, 405, 417n11
Polk County, Iowa, unlicensed day care centers, 153
Poole, Deborah, 257
Poole, Warren, 189–90
Porter, Annie, 320
Porter, Judge Charles Jr., 192
Porter, Kimberly, 307, 308
Porter, Malcolm, 308
Post-Intelligencer
  Cora's Day Care case, 108
Pounders, Judge, 27, 83, 419n5, 430n185
Presidio Child Development case, 186
Price, Winston S., 232, 263
Pride, Mary, 7
Priest, Cora, 107–8. *See also* Cora's Day Care case
Priest, Ralph, 107–8. *See also* Cora's Day Care case
Prince George's County, Virginia. *See* ABC Scholar Day Care Center
Professions, backlash against, 401–6
Prosecuting child abuse, difficulties, 185–91
  accommodations for children as witnesses, 187–88
  "corroboration" requirements, 187
Prosecutorial failures
  McMartin Preschool case, 74–77
    CII process, neglecting to supervise, 74–75
    evidence not reviewed, 75–76
    political factors and, 76–77
Protection of Children Against Sexual Exploitation Act of 1977, 417n11
Provost, Father Ronald, 190
Psychological Bulletin
  Country walk case, 341
  Michaels, Kelly case, 272–73
Punitive treatment of sex offenders, recent developments, 373

Rabinowitz, Dorothy, 22–23, 173
  on Amirault case, 176
    Wall Street Journal article, 376
  Michaels, Kelly case, 8
    appeals and, 268–69
    effect of articles, 281, 357
    evidence allegedly kept from jury, 252–53
    "fantastic" elements, claiming, 261–64
    Harper's article and, 273
    interviews, inaccurate claims about, 245, 250–52
    social hysteria, manufacturing, 264
    Treacy, Eileen, inaccurate claims about, 254
    witch-hunt narrative following conviction, generally, 243–44
  Ohme, Herman W. and, 479n89
Radcliff, Kentucky. *See* Nanny's Day Care
Raidor, Betty, 195. *See also* McMartin Preschool case
  on Buckey, Ray, behavior of, 81
  indictment of, 19, 76
Rainbow Christian Daycare case, 134–37, 164–65, 194–95
Rameriz-Brouwer, Ada, 140
Ramona, California day care center, 154
Randle, Madeline, 70
Rape and murder cases, Florida, 388
RapID/NH System, 328–29
Rappeport, Jonas, 237–38, 269, 417n11
Rawls, Jane, 392
Raymond, Jackie, 207
Raymond, Sam
  initial phase of investigation, 207, 209–10
  medical evidence, 231
  subsequent investigation, 213–14
  witch-hunt narrative, "fantastic" elements, 262
Reader's Digest, 11
Reality of day-care sexual abuse, discounting, 383–87
Recent developments, 363–407. *See also specific cases*
  Ashley's Law, 370
  Catholic Church scandals, 365–68, 384, 406
  community notification systems, 371–72
  Jessica's Law, 370
  Megan's Law, 365, 370–74, 384, 406
  Penn State scandal, 365–66, 368–69
  punitive treatment of sex offenders, 373
  sex-offender politics, 370–74
  "witch hunt" claims, persistence of, 374–83
Redbook
  McMartin Preschool case, 22
  Michaels, Kelly case, 376
  West Point Child Development Center, 111
Redden, John S., 279–80
Redmond Oregon. *See* Mormon Church
Reiner, Ira, 19, 77
Reiter, David, 184
"Reliability," 400
Rempell, Jeryl, 230–21
Reno, Janet
  contested sex abuse cases, 9
  Country Walk case, 292, 315, 318, 327, 332, 349
  Hazel Crawford Day Care Center, 175
Reno, Nevada. *See* Children City Learning Center; Papoose Place Academy
Report on Scott County Investigations (Humphrey), 101–3
Report on the Kern County Child Abuse Investigations, 118
Ricci, Lawrence, 402, 405
Richmond, Virginia case, 89, 93–94
Ritual abuse
  allegations, Charlier and Downing and, 355, 384
  claims, 156
  "fantastic" elements, 154, 159–67
Ritual Abuse Task Force, LA County, 4, 85, 197

Roberts, Paul Craig, 87
Robie, Judge Ronald, 95
Robinson, Bruce, 13
Rogers Park Jewish Community Center case, 103–5
  Believe the Children, 71
Rok, Richard, 162
Rolling Hills, California. *See* Montessori School No. 2
Rooney, Max, 209–10, 215
Rosenthal, Robert
  Country Walk case, 350, 380–81
  Lupoli, Tyler case, 381–82
  Michaels, Kelly case, 277, 279, 375
  Serrano, Jose case, 381
  Weber, Frederick case, 381
  Wenatchee, Washington cases, 382–83
Ross, A. S., 6, 10, 161
Rouse case, 394–400
Rouse, Desmond and Jessie case, 396, 404, 406
Rouse, Joanie, 399
Rouse, Lacey, 396
Rouse, Rebecca, 396–97
Rouse, Tiffany, 396
Rubin, Lael, 424n104
Ruby, Michael, 170, 187
Rud, James, 100, 194. *See also* Jordan, Minnesota cases
Rundle, Christopher, 175, 291–92, 315, 466n32
Runion, Samantha, 389
Runyan, Debbie, 128–29
Russell, Dianna, 451n117

Sacco, Lynn, 178
Sacramento, California case, 95
Safian, Robert, 21
Salem Day of Contrition. *See* Day of Contrition (linking cases to Salem witch trials of 1690s)
Salon, 161
Samek, Jeffrey, 302, 317–18, 321, 341
Sandel, Bill, 427n167
Sanders, Elliot, 219
San Diego, California. *See also* Fairmont Baptist Church
  ritual abuse case, 162
San Diego Union-Tribune
  on satanic rituals, 162
  on witch-hunt narrative, 11
Sandusky, Jerry, 368
San Francisco, California. *See* Presidio Child Development case
San Francisco Examiner
  Country Walk case, 327
  McMartin Preschool case, 6, 10
San Mateo, California day care center, 154
Santa Cruz Ritual Abuse Task Force, 429–30n179
"Satanic ritual abuse cases of the 1980s," use of term, 87
Satanism allegations. *See also* Ritual abuse
  Cora's Day Care case, 108
  36 cases, list of by Charlier and Downing, 94
  West Point Child Development Center, 113
Satan's Silence: Ritual Abuse and the Making of an American Witch-Hunt (Nathan and Snedeker), 8, 9, 374
  dedication page, 115–50
  54 names listed in, 87–88, 115–50
  on MacMartin preschool case, 23, 42–43, 87–88
    dedication page, 114
Satz, Wayne
  MacFarlane, Kee, relationship, 430n185
  McMartin Preschool case, 3, 6, 72–73
    in preliminary hearing, 79
Sauer, Mark, 11
Schachter, Daniel, 12, 13
Schauer, Fred, 417n11
Scheck, Barry, 133
Schildmeyer, Kim, 140
Schildmeyer, Michael Joseph, 116, 140–42. *See also* Sunshine Preschool and Day Care Center case
Schneider, Andrew, 439n114
School teachers, sexual misconduct of, 369–70, 373
Schultz, Debra
  extreme behavioral evidence, 229
  medical evidence, 232
  testimony of, 243
Schuster, Marilyn, 239
Scientific American, 11
Scott County, Minnesota. *See* Jordan, Minnesota cases
Scout's Honor, 183
Seattle Post-Intelligence, 11, 383
Secret Trauma: Incest in the Lives of Girls and Women (Russell), 451n117
Seering Family Day Care, 157
Seering, Flora and William, 157
Segal, Richard, 24
Seigel, Barry
  A Death in White Bear Lake, 179
Selected day care sexual abuse cases (1980s and 1991), 5
Self, Grant, 119, 123–26, 164
Sencer-McArdle, Sara, 207, 225, 270
Sequium, Washington case. *See* Cora's Day Care case
Serrano, Jose case, 381, 383
Sex Abuse Hysteria: Salem Witch Trials Revisited (Gardner), 179, 379
Sex offender databases, 370–71
Sex-offender politics, 370–74

Sexton, Eddie Lee, 162
Sexually precocious behavior, 308
Shaver, John W. "Jack," 164–65, 194, 199
Shaw, David, 22, 74, 282
  on McMartin Preschool case, 6–8
  Where was Media Skepticism?, 7–8
Shaw, Jessie, 215
Shell, Paul, 97
Shell, Robert, 165
Sheriff's Task Force
  McMartin Preschool case, "ritual abuse" claims, 4, 85, 197
Shubin, Charles, 106, 158, 436n70
Shumate, Neil case, 375–77
Silence on child sex abuse cases, 15, 151–95
  day care abuse, 1980s, 152–59
    during McMartin, 155–59
    pre-McMartin, 152–55
  "fantastic" elements, 154, 159–67
    child pornography "myth," 163–67
  "hysteria," use of term in witch-hunt narrative, 167–85
    Amirault case, Boston during, 176–77
    Country Walk case, Dade County, Florida during, 174–75
    Kelly Martin Day care case, New Jersey during, 173–74
    McMartin era, 167–73
    places allegedly in grip of, 167–77
    Southern California, 167–73
  leniency for child molesters, 191–95
  prosecuting child abuse, difficulties, 185–91
Simons, Judge William, 127
Simpson-Savary, Jean H., 25
60 Minutes
  McMartin Preschool case, 6
Skeptical Inquirer, 11, 117
Slade, Elmo, 467–68n70
Slater, David, 195
Slone, David, 192
Small World Preschool case, 108–11
  DSS interviews, 110
  MDMH Report, 109–10
  Satan's Silence, dedication page, 115
Smerling, Marc, 443n198
Smith, Nancy, 149–50, 374, 438n110. *See also* Head Start Program case
Smithville, North Carolina. *See* Miss Polly's Day Care Center
Snedeker, Michael. *See also Satan's Silence: Ritual Abuse and the Making of an American Witch-Hunt* (Nathan and Snedeker)
  on Buckey, Raymond, character of, 81
  contested medical evidence and, 63
  on Johnson, Matthew, examinations of, 25
  Malcolm, Marilynn, clemency petition, 135–36
  National Center for Reason and Justice (NCRJ), 374
  omissions of facts, 33
  Rouse case, 399
Snow, Barbara, 395, 396
Snowden, Grant, 8, 175
Social hysteria. *See* "Hysteria," use of term in witch-hunt narrative
Society for Research in Child Development (SRCD), 275, 357, 362
Something About Amelia (tv movie), 3, 177
Sonoma County, California, ritual abuse cases, 163
Sorenson, Wesley, 431n199
Sorrentino, Judge Charlene, 353
South Bay, California
  preschool cases, 168–72
South Dakota
  Yankton Sioux Reservation, 396
Southern California
  "hysteria," allegedly in grip of, 167–73
Southern California, child pornography cases, 165–66
South Orange, New Jersey. *See* Wee Care Child Care Center
Sowell, Thomas, 11, 375, 379
Spears, Sergeant, 333
Special Classification Review Board (New Jersey), 394
Spector, Arlene, 208, 213
Spencer, Township case, 92–93
Spitler, Babette. *See also* McMartin Preschool case
  indictment of, 19, 76
  results of case, 84
  at trial, 82
Spitler, Donald, 82
Sports Illustrated, 180
Squyres, Carol, 120, 122, 439nn122 and 124
SRCD. *See* Society for Research in Child Development (SRCD)
Stanley, Lawrence, 163, 166, 449n71
Star Ledger
  Michaels, Kelly case, 217, 270
Star Tribune
  Jordan, Minnesota cases, 100, 102–3
State Department of Health and Rehabilitative Service (DHRS), 175, 186
State v. Buckey. See Buckey, Raymond; McMartin Preschool case
State v. Carol M.D., 382
State v. Figured, 143
State v. Fuster. See Country Walk case; Fuster, Frank
State v. Michaels. See Michaels, Kelly case
St. Claire, Sherry L., 143
St. Cross Church, 170
STD findings, 128, 302, 311, 320, 328, 352

Stein, Judge Jack G., 105
Stereotypes of sex offenders, 180–81
Stevens, Glenn
  CII evaluations and, 40, 44
  conversations with Mann, Abby and Mann, Myra, 80
  Mann, Abby, interviews with, 19–20, 26
  media coverage and, 73
  preliminary hearing, 78–79
  on therapists, 71
St. George's Episcopal Church. *See* Wee Care Child Care Center
Stimson, Betty, 97–98
Stimson, Jeff, 97
St. Lorenzo, Emma, 288, 307, 353
St. Lorenzo, John, 288, 307, 336
Stoll, John, 119, 123–26
Stone, Oliver, 10, 23
Stossel, John, 274
St. Petersburg, Florida. *See* Pearl Lee Mitchell licensed day care center
Stuart, Florida. *See* Glendale Montessori School
Stuebbe, Judge, 120, 440nn133 and 140
Sudden Infant Death Syndrome, 179–80
Sugar Plum School House case, 186–87
Suggestibility claims. *See* Child suggestibility claims
"Suggestibility of the Child Witness: A Historical Review and Synthesis" (Ceci and Bruck), 272–73
Summit, Roland, 178–79, 320, 394–95, 397
Sunshine Preschool and Day Care Center case, 140–42
Sweeney, Kristin, 484n150

Taibbi, Mike, 244, 252
"Tainted," labeling children as, 390–94
Tamarkin, Civia, 387–88
Tardieu, Paul, 178
Tavris, Carol, 21–22, 271–72, 405
Taylor, Becky
  Braga, Joseph and Laurie, interviews, 296–98, 302, 311–12
  counts involving, 316
  criticisms of interview(s), 345
  cross-examination of, 320
  early investigation, 291
  first day at Country Walk, 467n60
  Fuster, Ileana testimony, 324–25
  medical conditions, 306
  Rundle, Christopher, interviews, 466n32
Taylor, Darlene, 306, 467n60
Teixeria, Wilmes, 66, 426n161
Telb, James, 92–93
Temple Emmanuel, Miami, 174
"The Terrible Puzzle of McMartin Preschool," 21
Texas Monthly
  Fran's Day Care case, 144, 146
Texas Supreme Court, 146
36 cases, list of by Charlier and Downing, 87–115. *See also specific cases*
  child pornography as "myth," 163
  chronology of cases, 153
  by date and case features, *90–91*
  on defense lawyers, 189
  details on 11 cases highlighted by, *95*, 96
  "elements" of cases, 93–94
  "fantastic" elements, 154, 159–67, 338–40
    child pornography "myth," 163–67
  on hearsay evidence, 191
  "hysteria" and, 173, 176–77
  plot of, *90*
  pornography, allegations of, 94
  on prosecution, quotes in series, 185
  satanic exaggeration, 94
  settings of cases, 155–56
Thomas, Ariel, 343
Thomas, Justice Clarence, 265
Tilden, Julia, 214
Torrance preschool, 172
Toward, James, 137–40. *See also* Glendale Montessori School
Toward, Rosario, 139
Treacy, Eileen
  Ceci and Bruck, inaccurate claims about, 253, 255, 257–61
    "fantastic" elements, claiming, 262
    Treacy-Child A excerpt, *256*
    Treacy-Child B excerpt, *258*
  evaluation of children, 222–23, 357
  Nathan, Debbie
    criticisms by, 243, 253–61, 461n176
    inaccurate claims about, 245, 250
  Rabinowitz, Dorothy, inaccurate claims about, 254
  state's case and, 228
  subsequent investigation, 215
Trials. *See specific case*
Trillin, Calvin, 182
Trinity Baptist Church, 192
A True Story of False Memory (Maran), 444n229
Tucker, William, 386
Turtle Top Day Nursery, 175

UCLA Medical Center, 30–32
Uncommon Desires (Stanley), 166, 449n71
Underwager, Ralph
  on Charlier and Downing list of thirty-six cases, 88
  Country Walk case, 322, 327–28, 341
  Day of Contrition, 389–90
  discrediting of, 203
  Kelly Michaels case and, 173

  Michaels, Kelly case
    appeals and, 269
    arguments advanced, 272
    cross-examination of, 413
    expert witness, 236–37
  Rouse case, 397–99
  VOCAL, launching of, 101–2
Unger, Ned, 286
Unger, Vera, 301–2
Unlicensed day care centers
  Polk County, Iowa, 153
  White Plains, New York, 113–15
"Unreliable test" myth, 328–29, 470n130
Unspeakable Acts (Hollingsworth), 293, 341
U.S. Conference of Catholic Bishops, 367

"Vampire Clan," 448–49n46
Van Buren, Arkansas. *See* Gingerbread Day Care
Vancouver, Washington. *See* Rainbow Christian Daycare case
Van Dam, Carla, 181
Van Holden, Bobby, 38, 40
Van Holden family, 38, 40
Van Holden, Valerie, 38, 40
Vermont Supreme Court, 378
Vickers, Bobby, 47–50
Victims of Memory (Pendergrast), 129
Victor, Jeffrey, 70
Village Voice
  Country Walk case, 327
  "Distorted Journalism" article, 389
  on *Indictment* (film), 23
  on on "Justice Abused: A 1980s Witch-Hunt," 88
  McMartin Preschool case, 6, 7, 22
  Michaels, Kelly case, 243, 251–52, 265
VOCAL (Victims of Children Abuse Laws), 85, 101–2, 179, 185
Voigt, Brenda, 103
Voigt, Sophie, 103, 104–5
Von Zamft, Michael, 318, 333–34

Wakefield, Hollida, 399
Waldman, Alan J., 140
Walker, Paula, 307–8
Walker, Sara, 307–8
Wallace, Mike, 424n104
Wall Street Journal, 8
  Amirault case, 376
  Country Walk case, 380–81
  Michaels, Kelly case, 244
  sex-abuse hysteria, coining of term, 193
Walsh, Adam, 370, 372
Walters, Kristy, 427n167
Walters, Trisha, 44–45, 65
Walter, Vasco W., Jr., 157
Warnock, George and Betty, 153, 446n11
Washington Post
  on children testifying, 355
  Craig's Country Pre-School case, 105–6
  on Kauffmann, Kristi, 191
  McMartin Preschool case, 21, 84
  Michaels, Kelly case, 245
  on numbers of cases, 87
Watkins, Alex and Wade, 147–49
Watson, Norman, 180
Watson, Reverend Tommy, 333, 335, 472n164
Watson, Ruby, 219
Watters, Ethan, 9
Watt, James, 113–15, 149. *See also* Unlicensed day care centers
Weber, Frederick case, 381
Websites
  Crime Library, 17
  Famous Trials, 17
  Friedman, Arnold and Jesse case, 442n188
  Ontario Consultants for Religious Tolerance, 13
  Witch Hunt Information Center, 11–12
Wee Care Child Care Center, 173–74, 386
Weisberg, Brett, 82
Wenatchee, Washington cases, 382–83
  Satan's Silence, dedication page, 117–18
Western State Hospital, 107
West Point Child Development Center, 111–13
  Satan's Silence, dedication page, 115
West, Walter P., 182
Wexler, Richard, 168
"What McMartin Started: The Ritual Abuse Hoax" (Nathan), 22
Where was Media Skepticism? (Shaw), 7–8
White, Edward Charles, 183
White Plains, New York. *See* Home day care center, White Plains, New York
Whittier, Nancy, 429n176
Wilcox, Karen, 33
Wilkes, David, 190
Wilkins, Robert, 162
Williams, Bob, 172
Williams, Brenda, 138
Williams, Clare, 219
Williams, Linda Meyer, 155–57
Williams, Mark, 478n40
Willis, Ellen, 11, 23, 25, 88
Wilson, Catherine Stubblefield, 166
Wilson, Mary, 30–32, 423n75
Wingard, Deborah, 176
Witch Hunt (documentary), 11, 119
Witch Hunt Information Center
  Baran case and, 155
  Shumate, Neil case, 376
  Treacy, Eileen, inaccurate claims about, 254
  webmaster, 142, 147
  website, 11–12
Witch-Hunt List, 131, 441n153

Witch Hunt (Lyon), 382
Witch-hunt narrative, generally. *See also* Legacy of the witch-hunt narrative; National witch-hunt, evidence of
  evolution of, 21–23
  rise of, 5–6
Witnesses, accommodations for children as, 187–88
Wolfe, Clare
  Fonolleras, Lou, interview with, 219
Wood, James, 339–40, 349–51, 474n186
Woodling, Bruce
  contested medical evidence and, 59–62, 64–65, 429n168
  Kniffen and McCuan cases, 121–22
Woods, James, 81
Woodward, Louise, 401
Wright, Lawrence, 117, 397

Yankton Sioux Reservation (South Dakota), 396
Young, Mary de, 87, 139, 152, 441n148
Young, Paul, 378
Yucaipa, Arizona. *See* Oak Tree Day Care Center

Zegas, Alan, 279
Zeitz, Martin, 228
Zobel, Judge Hiller B., 401

362 .760973 CHE
Cheit, Ross E.,
The witch-hunt narrative

JAN 11 2017

CPSIA information can be obtained at www.ICGtesting.com
Printed in the USA
LVOW11s1204040116
469020LV00002B/2/P

9 780190 465575

SOMERSET COUNTY LIBRARY SYSTEM
3 3665 03026 0302

“Cheit’s thorough and informative tome certa verreaction and misdirection that it so carefully documents and criticizes.”—*Harvard Law Review*

“[Cheit] recounts evidence with scholarly precision that is emotionally engaging and eminently readable... [His] book is a tour de force against the witch-hunt fabulists and those suggestible enough to believe them.”—*The Providence Journal*

“Cheit mounts a rigorous argument that the witch-hunt—innocent people persecuted by a legal system out of control—is a concocted myth.”—*The Daily Beast*

In the 1980s, a series of child sex abuse scandals rocked the United States, most famously the McMartin preschool case. Yet within a few years, the initial concern about the issue had died down considerably. The failure to convict anyone in the McMartin case and a widely publicized appellate acquittal of an accused molester in New Jersey had turned the dominant narrative on its head. By 1990, a new narrative with remarkable staying power emerged: the cases were symptomatic of a “moral panic” that had generated a witch hunt. In this new witch-hunt narrative, children who testified were not reliable. Sensationalistic reporting had fed the idea that there was a crisis when none existed. But did the new narrative accurately represent reality? As Ross Cheit demonstrates in his authoritative account of child sex abuse cases in the last quarter century, purveyors of the narrative never did the hard work of examining court records in the many cases that reached courts throughout the nation. Instead, they treated a couple of cases as representative and concluded that the issue was blown far out of proportion. Cheit, however, shows that child sex abuse convictions were regular occurrences, and that the crime occurred far more frequently than conventional wisdom suggested. Cheit’s also shows how a narrative based on empirically thin evidence became a theory with real social force, and how that theory stood at odds with a far more grim reality. The belief that the charge of child sex abuse was typically a hoax also left us unprepared to deal with the Catholic Church’s child sex abuse scandals. In sum, *The Witch-Hunt Narrative* is a magisterial account of the social dynamics that led to the denial of widespread human tragedy.

ROSS E. CHEIT is Professor of Public Policy and Political Science at Brown University.

OXFORD
UNIVERSITY PRESS

www.oup.com

ISBN 978-0-19-046557-5
90000
9 780190 465575

Machine Translated by Google

Gilbert Sternhoff

Die Dritte Macht

1945 bis heute?

KOPP

Machine Translated by Google

Digitized for Unglaublichkeiten.com /.info

in February 2006

1st edition January 2006

Copyright © 2006 by
Jochen Kopp Verlag, Pfeiferstrasse 52, D-72108 Rottenburg

All rights reserved

Editing: Dr. Renate Oettinger Cover
design: ZERO advertising agency, Munich Typesetting and layout:
Agentur Pegasus, Zellsi-Mehlis Printing and binding: Clausen
& Bosse, Leck

ISBN 3-938516-17-8

We would be pleased to send you our publisher directory
Kopp Verlag
Pfeiferstraße 52
D-72108 Rottenburg E-
Mail: info@kopp-verlag.de Tel.: (0 74
72) 98 06-0 Fax: (0 74 72)98
06-11

You can also find our book program on the Internet at: http://www.kopp-verlag.de

Machine Translated by Google

Gilbert Sternhoff

THE
THIRD POWER

1945 to today?

JOCHEN KOPP PUBLISHING HOUSE

Machine Translated by Google

Machine Translated by Google

CONTENTS

Chapter 1 The Problem.. 7

Chapter 2 The settling movement 17

Chapter 3 The Evolution of the UFO Phenomenon............................. 103

Chapter 4 The misunderstood pre-astronauts...................................... 161

Chapter 5 The Earthly Headquarters 181

Chapter 6 The connection to Mars.. 207

Chapter 7 Review and outlook 227

Call 245

List of sources and literature 247

Image source list 253

Machine Translated by Google

Machine Translated by Google

CHAPTER 1

THE PROBLEM

A third power, does it exist? And who or what is hiding behind it
behind the First and Second Power?

The terms have their origins in the Cold War, when political blocs armed with nuclear weapons faced each other. The leading power of capitalism, the USA, on the one hand, and the Soviet Union as the dominant force of the communist opposite pole.

Political times have changed since 1989. The communist front has collapsed and the former Soviet Union has dissolved. On this side, Russia, still militarily powerful, remains.

A military conflict between the USA and Russia, fought with nuclear weapons, would mean the end of the world today, as it did then.

Since the other nuclear powers, such as China, play a rather marginal role due to their quantitatively small nuclear deterrent potential, the designation First and Second (World) Power still seems justified here.

And the Third Power? Where and when did it emerge?

Its birth pangs coincide with the end of the Second World War. Its emergence is a direct result of the seemingly complete military and political collapse of the Third Reich.

But this collapse was actually only an apparent one.

What - the Third Reich lives on? Not the Third Reich as a subject of international law, but as a political and military organization.

Names and designations are of secondary importance here. From now on, let us use the term for this successor organization: The Third Power.

However, it can only be described as such if it is at least a military equivalent to the other two powers mentioned and is also in a position to exercise significant political influence.

This book aims to provide evidence that this is indeed the case.

Does this book have a political background? Does it take sides, regardless of what or what is against it?

No, definitely not. This book is simply a report. In this sense, it is a report about the whereabouts and whereabouts of the Third Power.

Other authors have already written about certain aspects of the creation and development of this organization at the end of the Second World War. In a first step, their main statements will be compiled. The plausibility check will be left to a later chapter.

In the German-speaking world, the book by Wilhelm Landig (1909-1997) *Wolfszeit um Thule* has been the most widely read . Published in 1980 by the Viennese Volkstum-Verlag as the second part of a trilogy, this volume, according to its author, processes historical facts in novel-like form. (1) The claims made in this book were later supplemented in the third part of the trilogy and in various interviews published in books, on video cassettes and on the Internet.

Landig's main claims are as follows:

1. The German Antarctic Expedition under Captain Alfred Ritscher in 1938/1939 not only mapped and surveyed a significant part of Antarctica, the so-called New Swabia region, but also created the conditions for the permanent occupation of this area. During the war, the Antarctic base was further expanded and, after the fighting ended, served as a refuge for the high technology transferred in the last days of the Third Reich.

2. This technology and the crew required to operate it were transported by a fleet of ultra-modern submarines, some of which had revolutionary features. The submarines left the Norwegian port of Kristiansund at the beginning of May 1945 and headed for the North Atlantic.

3. The last naval battle of the war took place near Iceland, which led to the complete destruction of an Allied warship force. The news of this was

hushed up, but were reported in the South American press, for example in the Chilean daily newspaper *El Mercurio.*

4. After this successful battle, the German Reich base in the Arctic, called *Point 103, was evacuated,* which Landig had already reported on in the first part of his trilogy (2).

5. The submarine fleet then headed south towards New Swabia. Two of the submarines in the convoy, due to technical defects, entered ports in Argentina, where they were later confiscated by the Americans. The remaining submarines unloaded part of their cargo at the Antarctic base. The rest was secretly transported to the South American mainland.

6. All of the above activities were coordinated by a secret development from the last days of the war, the flying discs known as the V-7. The V-7 was developed in Vienna, Breslau and Prague by the Viennese technician Schauberger and the engineer Schriever.

7. The part of the people and material that was brought to the South American mainland found shelter in huge caverns, cave systems under the Andes that had been created by a prehistoric culture thousands of years ago and that the German explorer Edmund Kiss had rediscovered during his expeditions at the end of the 1920s.

8. Since the transfer of German high technology at the end of the war could not have remained unknown to the Allies, they attempted to eliminate the German Antarctic base in January 1947. An American naval unit under the command of Admiral Byrd was to solve this task.

   After the loss of a group of four reconnaissance aircraft, the operation was aborted without result.

9. The personnel strength of the Antarctic base was estimated by Landig at one point at 2000 men. (3) For health reasons, ie due to the vulnerability of the human organism caused by the sterile Antarctic climate, a replacement of personnel had become necessary (3), and over time the majority of the men were flown out to South America (4). Ultimately, the base had to be closed down completely.

be abandoned. (5) The final closure took place in 1961. (6)

10. Three flying discs are still located in the cave systems under the Andes and are rusting away because the supply of material and spare parts could no longer be ensured (5).

Did Wilhelm Landig have the legitimacy to report truthfully about these things? What is known about him, what was his life like?

Landig was politically active in the spirit of National Socialism at an early stage. He took part in the Nazi putsch that was put down in Vienna in 1934, then fled to Germany and became a member of the SS. Until 1938 he worked at the Industrial Research Institute of the German Labor Front. After the annexation of Austria, he returned to Vienna with a special permit from the Reichsführer-SS as a clerk in the security service. From 1942 to 1944 he fought with the Waffen-SS in the Balkans and received several awards for his activities in the partisan war.

In 1944 he was again ordered to Vienna, where he was responsible for special tasks. In this role he is said to have been involved in the development of flying discs.

In September 1945 he was taken prisoner of war by the British and interned until 1947. Landig remains silent about his specific contribution to the development of flying discs. For reasons of confidentiality, he cannot provide any information on this. (3, 7)

In this context, it would be interesting to know what he was doing between May and September 1945.

In the decades after the war, he claims to have maintained contact with the Third Power. The connection was only broken off in the mid-1980s. (3, 5)

Since the content of his statements, especially with regard to his involvement in the development of flying discs, cannot be directly verified, indirect confirmation can only be obtained by checking the plausibility of his claims. More on that later, as I said.

Wilhelm Landig was not the first author to contribute to our “problem”. Ladislao Szabo had already claimed in his 1947 book *Hitler esta vivo* that at the end of the war, submarines would be used to

A retreat of high-ranking Nazi officials, including Hitler, to the South Pole took place. (8)

Published between 1950 and 1957 in German press publications contain several reports that can be summarized under the heading: "Flying saucers - a German invention." (An overview of this can be found in Chapter 2.) The extract of this information can then be read in Rudolf Lusar's book *The German secret weapons of World War II and their further development.* (10)

These publications will be discussed in more detail later.

After that, the topic of the German flying discs remained quiet for a long time. It was not until 1971 that Landig lifted the veil of silence a little in the first part of his trilogy entitled *Götzen gegen Thule ,* when he reported on the existence of the V-7 and the Arctic base 103. However, he did not yet write about a withdrawal to the Antarctic or South America. (2)

In 1974, the next round began with the publication of a small booklet by Samisdat Publishers in Toronto. The title was: *UFO - Nazi secret weapon?,* which was later followed by a German edition. (11) In it, the Chilean author W. Mattern reported for the first time on the transfer of technology to the southern polar region by a fleet of German submarines in the last days of the war in connection with the exploration of Antarctica by the Ritscher expedition. He also addressed the last sea battle, which was successful for the Germans. He went into detail about the arrival of the two "lost" submarines in Argentine ports.

In contrast to Wilhelm Landig, he made the astonishing statement that the entire UFO phenomenon observed worldwide since 1947 at the latest could be traced back to the flying discs developed in Germany. Mattern also believed that Hitler was able to save himself by flying to the Antarctic, something which Landig later vehemently denied. (1)

In 1979, the same publisher published a brochure under the pseudonym of "Christof Friedrich" entitled *Secret Nazi Polar Expeditions,* which deals in detail with the Ritscher expedition, mentions the actions of Admiral Byrd and otherwise deals more subtly with possible consequences regarding German post-war activities in the Antarctic. (12) The owner of the pseudonym is hiding behind the of the publishing house *Samisdat Publishers,* Ernst Zündel, who also became known through the trials against him for denying the Holocaust.

In another book published in 1994, the author of the foreword, WA Harbinson, reports on a paper entitled *Brisant, which was presented at the Hanover Fair in 1978 and consists of two parts.*

(9) This again refers to the Ritscher expedition, the transfer of know-how about the German flying discs, but this time through the two submarines that later landed in Argentina, which are said to have previously made a stopover to unload their cargo in New Swabia.

Admiral Byrd's expedition called *High-jump* is also mentioned.

After 1994, no new book was published that could expand the framework set by Landig in his trilogy with further details.

Nevertheless, the story continued, but in a way that clearly exceeded the framework previously adhered to by all the authors mentioned.

These publications, which are best described as secondary literature, built on the foundation laid mainly by Landig, building it up with florid ingenuity, floor by floor, giving the plot a dimension that, in the end, truly reached to the stars.

It is not the task of this book to give all the details of this extended plot. A common thread must suffice: There is repeated talk of disc-shaped flying machines called *Vril, Haunebu* and the mother

ship *Andromeda,* which, either equipped with a tachyon drive, enabled faster-than-light travel in space, or, taking advantage of anti-gravity, made trips to the moon or Mars before the end of the war.

In order to avert military defeat at the last minute, they were supposed to get help from the star system Aldebaran, whose inhabitants, "bright white god-men," had founded the bases Thule and Atlantis thousands of years ago. Time travel was also possible, for example to ancient Greece.

In addition to the »real« photos of these flying discs shown, Some of the information also comes from employees of the British secret service. Further evidence to support the above-mentioned "facts" is completely lacking. (13, 14)

Landig expressly distanced himself from this kind of rewriting of history with comments such as: "Children, keep both feet on the ground!" For him, the passage about the space people of the Aldebarans was too far-fetched. (3)

According to another theory, the disc-shaped flying objects (UFOs) sighted after the Second World War are simply further developments of the German flying discs, which, analogous to the development of modern long-range rockets from the German V-2, were pushed by the victorious powers at the beginning of the Cold War.

The author Karl-Heinz Zunneck initially believed that the modern UFO phenomenon could be traced back to the US secret weapons development alone, but later came to the conclusion that German scientists were pursuing their own projects in parallel. And - and this is the emphasis - *independent* of the known superpowers!

In this context, he also used the term “Third Power” for the first time. (15)

Other authors expanded on the theory developed by Renato Vesco (16) in 1972, according to which an *Upper Atmosphere and Space Company* began secret space operations in mid-1947. Operation *Full Moon,* again based on German developments during the war and run by the British secret service, the Canadian Ministry of Defense and private investors, would have advanced the development of near-Earth space in the following decades in a gigantic parallel program to official space travel. Even the planet Mars would later have been included in this program and transformed into a "second Earth." The propaganda using UFOs would have had only one purpose: to cover up Operation *Full Moon .*

The secret spaceport, the launch and landing site of the "flying saucers", is located in Canada, in the large triangle between Vancouver in the south, Quesnel in the east and Bella Cook in the west. (17)

What do you think about this?

According to Renato Vesco, *Full Moon* was based on the

German secret projects *Feuerball* and *Kugelblitz* as prototypes.
Eyewitnesses and passages in the British BIOS and American CIOS reports that deal specifically with German technology developments would confirm this.

Now the British journalist and editor of the aviation section of the well-known military journal *Jane's Defence Weekly,* Nick Cook, has
Book *The Hunt For Zero Point* drew attention to two circumstances:

On the one hand, the British in particular had been at a particularly bad hand in their attempts to recover German aviation technology, since there were hardly any corresponding production or research sites in the zone they occupied, especially not those claimed by Vesco for *Feuerball* and *Kugelblitz.*

Secondly, all research carried out in the BIOS and CIOS reports after the publication of Vesco's book did not reveal any evidence of the existence of these two projects. (18)

It can be added that secret developments on earth of this magnitude would certainly have been discovered by the other side during the Cold War and made public after the fall of the Iron Curtain. There would then no longer have been any reason for secrecy. The situation is of course different when it comes to concealing the actions of the common enemy - the Third Power - from the eyes of the world public even today.

If, after a critical examination of all scenarios dealing with the withdrawal of German Reich forces at the end of the war and the creation and development of German flying discs, only those of Landig and Mattern are not without a certain degree of probability, then this book has also been assigned a specific task.

The first step is to examine the plausibility of the ten points mentioned above in detail. The topic will be expanded continuously in the future.

I claim, thereby agreeing with Mattern, that there has been a technical evolution of this terrestrial UFO phenomenon and that there is no extraterrestrial phenomenon beyond that!

I also claim that an essential aspect of the UFO phenomenon - the so-called *abductions* - has undergone a significant evolutionary change and that it is precisely this that leads us to the final goals of the Third Power!

The supposed influence of extraterrestrial intelligences on the life of our planet, which is reflected in the activities of UFOs, is even less credible when it can be ruled out with a high degree of probability that such interventions have also taken place in the past. For this reason, a historical interlude is necessary.

The evidence of pre-astronautics (paleo-SETI), which has been collected for almost 40 years and whose best-known representative is Erich von Däniken, requires a new interpretation!

The arguments put forward by the protagonists of this theory for certain, as yet unexplained, technological leaps in our history, as well as the reports of flying creatures thousands of years ago, do not lose their importance, on the contrary. It is just that their authors were different!

Back to the Third Power. If such a power exists, it undoubtedly requires some kind of operations center, or rather, a headquarters. I believe I have identified this with sufficient certainty!

I have written about the alleged involvement of the planet Mars in Operation *Full Moon .* While there is no evidence to support its existence, there may still be a connection between the subject of this book and the planet Mars!

And ultimately, this world is indeed facing a profound change through the Third Power! It remains to be shown that the first steps on this path have already been taken.

Machine Translated by Google

CHAPTER 2

THE DETACHMENT MOVEMENT

In this section of the book, Wilhelm Landig's individual claims will be examined point by point. Did this secession of German forces at the end of the war actually take place, and did this great struggle between nations take a different course than is claimed by official historiography today?

Apparently it all started on December 17, 1938.

1. The German Antarctic expedition to New Swabia and the construction of the Antarctic base during the war

On this 17th December 1938, with the departure of the motor vessel *Schwabenland,* a chapter in the exploration of the Antarctic continent began which, to this day - measured against the successes achieved - has received far too little attention.

This may be due not least to the fact that after the war the astonishing achievements of the men involved were tainted by the stigma of having been achieved under Hitler.

The initiative for this expedition came from the Four-Year Plan Authority. Hermann Göring, appointed by Hitler as commissioner for the Four-Year Plan, had clearly defined the tasks for the expedition.

> The aim was then to secure Germany's right to have a say and its due share in the coming division of Antarctica among the great powers through an exploratory advance into the Antarctic waters and into the interior of the Antarctic continent, and thus to create the conditions for the German Reich's undiminished right to undisturbed whaling, which is vital for its 80 million people (because of the supply of fat; the author). (19)

On 19 January 1939, the research vessel *Schwabenland* reached the Antarctic pack ice limit. The ship was equipped with steam catapults, with the help of which two *Dornier-Wal* flying boats could be launched to reconnaissance flights over the Antarctic. A novelty at that time. On February 3, 1939, one of the most spectacular discoveries was made in this way. On that day, the flying boat *Boreas* took off on a reconnaissance flight. The notes of the expedition leader Alfred Ritscher about this flight contain an interesting detail: the discovery of ice-free areas of terrain that were completely unusual for the Antarctic, as well as ice-free lakes, "ponds transparent to the bottom, apparently several meters deep with no ice formation, although the outside thermometer shows -5 degrees Celsius, embedded between nodule-like, rounded peaks of reddish-brown layered rock; base for later land expeditions?" (19) This remark and the existence of the ice-free lakes named after the flight captain Schirrmacher would later form the basis for speculation about a German Reich base in the Antarctic. The research work lasted until February 6. By then, more than 11,000 images had been taken to photographically record an area of around 350,000 square kilometers, which was given the name New Swabia. Metal arrows with a swastika embossed on them were dropped along all flight paths; at the turning points of the planes, these arrows bore the German Reich flag. Germany had thus taken the first step under international law towards taking possession of this area.

New Swabia is still the official geographical name today. After completing its tasks, the *Schwabenland* set off for home. The research vessel's journey ended in Cuxhaven on April 11th.

Contrary to other claims, the *Schwabenland* did not return to the Antarctic during the war. The ship served the long-range reconnaissance groups of the Luftwaffe's naval aviation as a sling ship on the Western Front and in the Norwegian combat area. Here it was torpedoed by a British submarine in 1944. The ship, which was no longer repairable, was then used as a barge in the Oslo Fjord until the end of the war and was sunk in December 1946, loaded to the last corner with gas ammunition. (19)

Were there other German activities in the Antarctic during the war? Without these, the claims about the development of an Antarctic base would be unfounded. The fact that such a plan was not implemented during the German Antarctic expedition of 1938/39

It should already be clear what was discussed. When asked about the general possibilities of setting up such a military base, the last surviving member of the expedition, the aerial photographer Siegfried Sauter, answered in an interview as follows:

Question: "Then you probably also think it is impossible that shortly before the war began and during the war, building materials were transported to New Swabia to build bunkers in the ice, bunkers for accommodation and submarine bunkers?"

Answer: »All the rumors and speculations that were circulated after the war are sheer nonsense. Ships could not land because of the pack ice belt that surrounds New Swabia. Only icebreakers or specially armored ships would have been able to do this. The ships first encounter shelf ice, then edge ice that is up to 100 meters high, often even higher. The ice pushes outwards in the Antarctic winter and then breaks off after a while.

Building a bunker in or under the ice is technically impossible because the ice moves and drifts outwards. ... Every station where researchers spend the winter has to be supplied with food for a year. That is only enough for a small number of people. The idea that a bunker was built for Hitler in New Swabia is utter nonsense ... Anyone who spreads such rumours has no idea what the Antarctic is like; it is the most desolate continent there is. Storms rage across it at speeds of 200 kilometres and more, and for half the year it is night, total night." When asked about the possibilities of the "Schirrmacher Oasis", Siegfried Sauter replied: "When you hear the word oasis, you normally imagine a place with palm trees. There is no vegetation in the Antarctic. The Schirrmacher Oasis is an ice-free
zone with a blue lake in the middle. ... it is about an hour's flight from the ice shelf and is ice-free during the Antarctic
summer, which begins in January. Only this time can be used for the construction and establishment of research stations.« (19)

Things are not looking good for the German Reich base in Antarctica!

Due to the pack ice, there is no possibility of landing goods.
Building bunkers in the ice near the coast is not possible because of its permanent

Movement is not technically possible. Food must be brought in for a year in advance. It is pitch black for half the year, not to mention the climate in general. The supposedly ice-free lakes are only ice-free for half the year.

And despite all seemingly compelling logic, weren't there other German operations in the Antarctic region during the war? Yes, there were.

The operations of the German auxiliary cruisers have become particularly well-known, the most spectacular of which was the capture of parts of the Norwegian whaling fleet in January 1941 not far from the coast of New Swabia. In 24 hours, the auxiliary cruiser *Pinguin* captured 35,000 gross registered tons and 22,000 tons of whale oil as a prize without firing a single shot (Figure 1).

Auxiliary cruisers are converted merchant ships that are armed to enable them to gain lightning-fast access to enemy ships. To do this, they sail under the camouflage of a merchant ship, usually of a different nationality, and only reveal themselves to their opponents at the last moment by raising their country's war flag. Because their armament is weak compared to real warships, they generally avoid encounters with enemy ships. Basically, they are the privateer ships and the men on them are the corsairs of the modern age.

One year after the Norwegian whalers were captured by the *Pinguin* , the German naval command ordered the auxiliary cruiser *Thor* to repeat this successful operation, but this time it was unsuccessful. The *Thor* also operated for a few days near Neu-Schwabenland (Figure 2). (20)

The following scenario would be quite conceivable in connection with the operations of these two auxiliary cruisers:

Every year, always during the Antarctic summer (see Sauter's statement), the auxiliary cruisers supply a base on the coast of New Swabia. After unloading their cargo, they then go about their actual task, which is to capture enemy merchant ships.

But there is no evidence for this scenario. There are no corresponding statements from the men involved, and the official route of the ships still passed the coasts of New Swabia at a considerable distance. Since the auxiliary cruisers

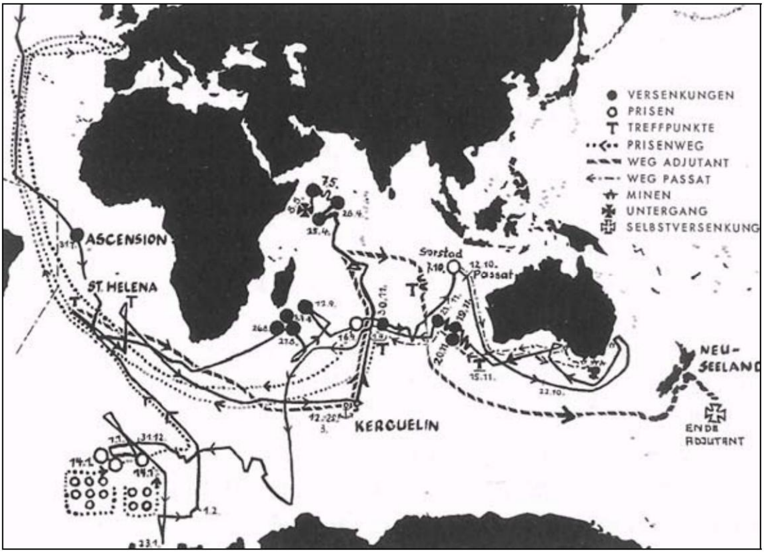
VERSENKUNGEN
PRISEN
TREFFPUNKTE
PRISENWEG
WEG ADJUTANT
WEG PASSAT
MINEN
UNTERGANG
SELBSTVERSENKUNG
ASCENSION
ST. HELENA
KERGUELIN
Sorstad
Passat
NEU-SEELAND
ENDE ADJUTANT

Fig. 1: The course of the Pinguin took the ship close to the Antarctic coast.

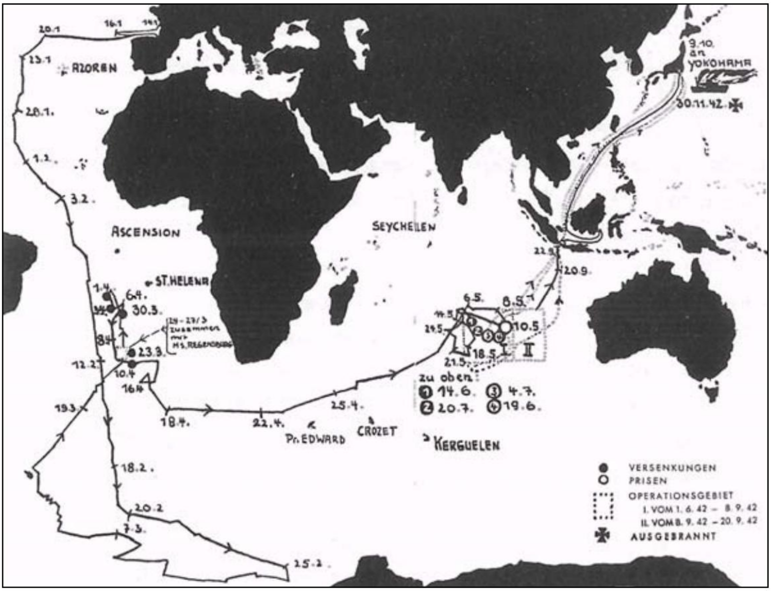
AZOREN
ASCENSION
ST. HELENA
SEYCHELLEN
Pr. EDWARD
CROZET
KERGUELEN
9.10. an YOKOHAMA
30.11.42.
zu oben
① 14.6.
② 20.7.
③ 4.7.
④ 19.6.
VERSENKUNGEN
PRISEN
OPERATIONSGEBIET
I. VOM 1. 6. 42 – 8. 9. 42
II. VOM 8. 9. 42 – 20. 9. 42
AUSGEBRANNT

Fig. 2: The Thor also came close to Antarctica.

Even though the ships were neither icebreakers nor armoured, this does not eliminate the objections of contemporary witness Sauter, who, based on his experience, categorically ruled out the landing of normal ships because of the pack ice belt.

Siegfried Sauter's reservations naturally apply equally to the situation after the end of the war, since the natural conditions in the Antarctic had not changed by then.

Other facts also stood in the way of the establishment of a Reich German base after the end of hostilities in 1945.

Already in the first post-war years, the Russians had established their large research station *Nowolasarewskaja* in New Swabia
which was continually expanded in the following years. During the Norwegian Antarctic Expedition from 1956 to 1960, the entire area was topographically re-recorded, so that complications with the Germans would have arisen during this operation at the latest. (19)

Conclusion: While the German Antarctic expedition of 1938/39 is well documented, there is no evidence of the establishment and expansion of a German Reich base during the war or immediately after the end of the struggle for nations. Did Landig lie here, or is "Antarctica" a synonym for something else?

2. The departure of German submarines in the last days of the war with the task of keeping specialists and technical know-how out of Allied reach

In order to give this claim a certain degree of probability, at least four basic conditions must have been met:

- the existence of submarine types capable of long-term underwater voyages in order to evade the enemy's military superiority at sea and in the air;

- submarines which could carry a considerable number of persons on board in addition to the crew essential for their operation;

- "missing" submarines whose fate could not be verified in the post-war statistics; highly motivated personnel among the submarine crews and among the evacuated technical specialists who were prepared to cut off all ties with their homeland, perhaps for years to come, in order to be able to work for their political ideal despite an uncertain future.

In the first years of the Second World War, German submarines were not yet equipped for long submersible journeys. The diesel engines of the submarines required oxygen for the combustion process, without which combustion could not take place. In the case of conventional diesel engines, this oxygen is sucked in from the air, in which it is present at around 21 percent. If a submarine was forced to dive by enemy ships or aircraft, it could no longer use the diesel engines. In this case, the underwater journey was continued with electric motors. These, in turn, depended on functioning accumulator batteries to operate. If these ran out, the submarine had to surface.

At the beginning of 1944, the Germans began to equip the boats with "snorkels," which made it possible to supply the diesel engines with atmospheric air while sailing close to the water's surface. An improvement against the detection by enemy radar aircraft, which was still possible up to that point, was the fitting of rubbery, waffled covers that partially absorbed the radar beams and partially radiated them in other directions.

After the war, all naval powers introduced the German “Schnorchel” into their submarine fleets and found it to be extremely suitable and useful. (10)

A different development could have changed the course of the war in the Atlantic if series production and testing of these type "XXI" submarines had been possible earlier. Two normal diesel engines of 2000 hp each were used as the surface propulsion engines for these boats. For underwater operation, however, they were given two electric motors of 2510 hp each. With these, the submarines could travel for 80 to 100 hours without having to surface again. They were also called electric boats because their electrical engine power was higher.

than the performance of the diesel engines. While the old submarines reached an average speed of only eight nautical miles per hour when underwater, the new "XXI" types could travel underwater at speeds of 17.5 nautical miles per hour, which was tantamount to a technical revolution.

By the end of the war, 120 of these boats had been delivered by the German shipyards. However, as the trial runs and the training of the crews took a long time, only one boat (U2511) was reportedly used shortly before the end of the war, but it was never fired.

Some of the so-called Walther submarines were also completed by the end of the war . These operated underwater on the basis of the liquid engines developed by Prof. Walther. In order to be completely independent of the oxygen in the air, the boats carried the oxygen in a liquid oxygen carrier, for example hydrogen peroxide. Due to a technical circulation process, the Walther submarines could thus remain underwater for even longer. With the planned two Walther turbines, each with 7500 HP, the speed increased to up to 25 nautical miles per hour! All of the boats in operation and under construction were - again allegedly - destroyed in time. It was not until nine years after the end of the war that the British managed to build a replica of a Walther submarine, which shows the incredible progress that the German developers had made compared to their competitors. (10)

Was it possible for German submarines to transport a significant number of additional people on board over long distances, in addition to their crew?

On 22 November 1941, the German auxiliary cruiser *Atlantis* was sunk in the southern Atlantic by the British heavy cruiser *Devonshire*

After a short, unequal battle, the *Atlantis* crew sank their ship so that it would not fall into enemy hands. During the same period, the same fate befell the supply ship *Python.* 100 (!) of the survivors were taken on board by the U-boats U 68, U 124, U 129 and UA. After a week and a half of sailing in tropical heat under almost unbearable conditions, 60 to 70 men from each boat were handed over to larger Italian U-boats that had rushed to help. With this overcrowding of first 100, then 30 to 40 men, U 68 and UA had covered a total of 5000 nautical miles, which was almost

10,000 kilometers, or a quarter of the Earth's circumference! (20)

Are there any "missing" German submarines whose fate could not be determined even after the war?

Officially, the two boats U 530 and U 977, which surrendered to the Argentine authorities on July 10 and August 17, 1945 respectively, were the last missing German submarines.

We will talk more about these boats later.

Of the total of 1,174 German submarines that were commissioned, 863 were deployed to the front. 630 of these boats were lost, 42 were lost at home by accident, 81 boats were destroyed in their home territory by enemy action such as mines and bombs, 215 were sunk at the end of the war, 153 boats were transferred to foreign ports after the surrender, 38 boats were decommissioned due to age or irreparable damage, and eleven boats were interned or transferred to other navies. (10) However, there are other figures that differ from these statistics. These deviations are not surprising, since almost all documents of all command authorities, staffs, flotillas and submarines are still in the hands of the Allies. (19) Apart from the fact that, due to the contradictions between the statistics, one or another German submarine may have been recorded in the wrong category or not at all, there may be a not inconsiderable number of unreported "surviving" submarines among the 215 boats that allegedly sunk themselves at the end of the war.

It does not seem too far-fetched to think that before the withdrawal, the transfer of a significant number of technical specialists to some submarines was only possible if the submarine left part of its crew behind. This part, which was put on land, would then have spread the myth of the submarine being scuttled.

At a time when the end of the war was imminent, and especially after May 8, 1945, when everything seemed lost for the German side, were German men still willing to link their personal fate with the vague fate of a future Fourth Reich? Was the will to self-sacrifice really so great under these circumstances?

There are enough examples from the war of a courageous sacrifice that consciously and unhesitatingly risked one's own life for the survival of Germany. In this respect, the men, who would have been involved in a withdrawal movement would have had it easier. Not the sacrifice of their lives, but years of separation from everything they loved and a life of constant anonymity.

A few examples of voluntary self-sacrifices from the time of the war should suffice to make it clear to our present generation that people seem to have changed as times have changed.
And if not the people, then at least their values.

One report was provided by the aviator Hanna Reitsch, who also flew the manned V-1. In August 1943, she and some like-minded people came to the conclusion that a favorable negotiating basis for a quick end to the war could only be achieved if the enemy's most important key positions and the centers of resistance could be destroyed in quick succession while sparing the enemy's civilian population.

To do this, people would have had to be found who were prepared to use a technically suitable means to attack the pinpoint target in order to hit it in the center and thus make any repair or restoration impossible. In such an operation, there would be no chance of saving one's life and the complete overcoming of one's own ego would be required. It is important to note that at that time nothing was known about the Japanese kamikaze pilots.

A manned glide bomb was to be used as the device. The possibility of using the manned V-1 was also considered. According to Hanna Reitsch, thousands of people volunteered for this self-sacrifice mission. Initially, only a small group of 70 men were drafted into the project. (21)

Another planned suicide mission took place on April 7, 1945, west of Hanover over Lake Steinhude. 180 Me 109 aircraft were made available for this purpose. 184 pilots volunteered. The pilots were given the task of ramming the incoming American bombers after they had used up their ammunition and thus causing them to crash. They and the accompanying jet fighters destroyed 51 heavy American bombers that day. 77 of the German pilots were killed. (22)

Thousands of volunteers also came forward for the formation of the Navy's small combat units, including 3,000 officers alone. In one- and two-man boats, called "seals," and as combat swimmers, the volunteers wanted to take on the Allied fleet and convoys, destroy bridges, and blow up supply depots.

They were aware that in every deployment the chances were almost 100 percent in favor of the opponent. (23)

Conclusion: The four basic prerequisites for the alleged withdrawal movement by submarine to take place at the end of the war were all met at that time.

3. The last naval battle near Iceland, kept secret by the Allies in Europe

Did this naval battle between the German submarines involved in the withdrawal and the Allied warships actually take place? And if so, did it really end in a total German victory?

This dispute was reported extensively in South American newspapers. Landig cited the Chilean *El Mercurio as an example.*

The Chilean author W. Mattern was the first to address this naval battle in his book *UFO - Nazi secret weapon?,* published in 1974. Landig then followed him in *Wolfszeit um Thule* in 1980.

The reason for surprise was the fact that Mattern, in order to support the theses of his book, had obtained copies of excerpts from press publications dating back to 1945, including a copy from the aforementioned *El Mercurio* of March 5, 1947, about Admiral Byrd's Antarctic expedition. However, a copy of the article about the naval battle in question was sought in vain.

In order to gain final clarity on this aspect, the author of this book carried out research in the University Library of Santiago de Chile. Older editions of Chilean newspapers can also be consulted there. The results of the research regarding the article in question in *El Mercurio* were negative.

Conclusion: The alleged sea battle is a legend. Landig took over

Apparently it was written by Mattern. Since his trilogy is, according to his own statement, a mixture of truth and fiction, the description of this sea battle belongs to the latter.

4. The evacuation of the German Reich base in the Arctic

According to Landig, a submarine base in the Arctic was evacuated shortly before the end of the war. The fact that German submarines were still capable of such an operation in the last days of the war has been explained in detail above.

However, the question here is different: Was there anything in the Arctic that needed to be evacuated that was more important than the well-known weather stations on Labrador and Spitsbergen, for example?

Apparently - yes. The following can be read in the *memoirs* of Armaments Minister Albert Speer: "... I rejected his

suggestion as well as the plan for a temporary escape that our most successful fighter pilot, Werner Baumbach, had made to me earlier. A long-range four-engine seaplane, which had been deployed from northern Norway to a German weather station in Greenland during the war and supplied it with food, was to take Baumbach, me and some friends to one of the many quiet bays in Greenland for the first few months of the German occupation." (24)

As so often in his memoirs, Speer does not seem to have been too strict with the truth when describing his planned escape, portraying it as an undertaking between friends without any official character, which was also prevented from being carried out by his refusal. Although Werner Baumbach was one of Speer's circle of friends, his actual function at the end of the war was that of the last commander of the "secret" squadron KG 200.

»What distinguished the pilots of KG 200 was their quality as specialists. They were mainly flying personnel who were able to take on special tasks that would have overwhelmed an average front-line squadron: combat missions and

Transport missions of a particularly difficult nature under exceptional circumstances. And almost always under a high degree of secrecy. For this purpose they had an arsenal of various aircraft types at their disposal - some of which only existed in a few copies.« (25)

Under Baumbach's command, the last major operation of KG 200 was to be launched from Flensburg in the first days of May 1945. The giant BV 222 flying boats had been prepared to take a large group of people - the Reich's political leadership was intended - to a hidden place on the coast of Greenland. There, in safe isolation - or so it was imagined - they would be able to survive for a long period of time and then try to somehow "return to life" undisturbed. (25) In the end, however, this did not happen.

Two surviving documents document the concentration not only of flying boats, but also of other transport aircraft of KG 200 on May 1, 1945 in the Flensburg area, where the seat of the Dönitz government was known to be located (Figures 3 and 4). The order to Baumbach came from the new Reich President Dönitz personally and thus, in contrast to Speer's statement, was official in nature.

Since the leading figures of the Reich government should certainly not be evacuated without their most important employees and also not without a minimum of technical equipment, it can be assumed that the infrastructure at the Greenland base would have clearly exceeded that of a small weather station.

This is also consistent with a report from the Allied news agency *Reuters,* published by a Swedish newspaper on December 15, 1944, according to which US military personnel had had to fend off German commando operations in Greenland in recent weeks. These operations also included an attack by German twin-engine bombers. (26) Since these bombers could not have made the long journey from Norway to Greenland and back non-stop, appropriate runways must have existed in Greenland.

Rumors that a submarine bunker called the *Beaver Dam* had also been built on the coast of Greenland could not be verified and will therefore remain outside of this discussion.

Machine Translated by Google

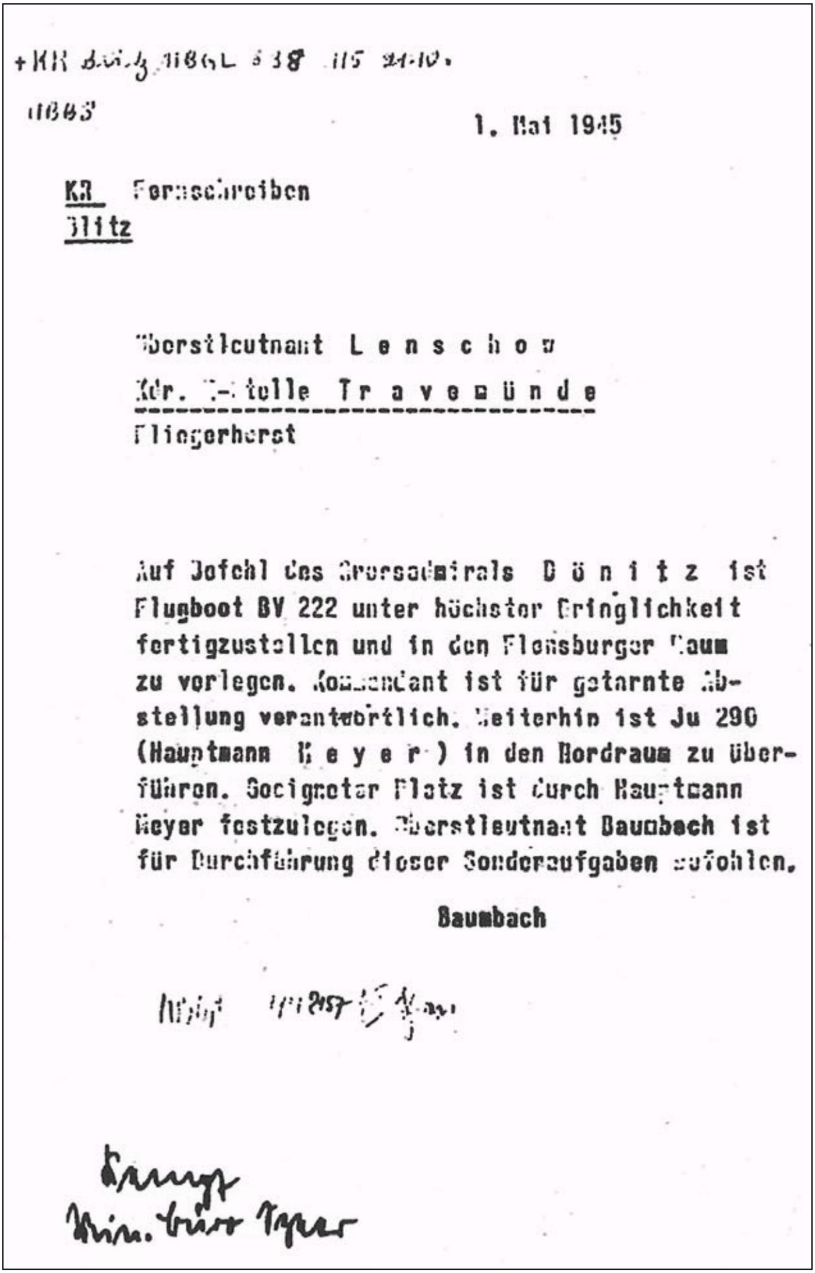

+KR BUEZ 1186L 538 115 21.10.

1188S

1. Mai 1945

KR Fernschreiben
Blitz

Oberstleutnant Lenschow
Kdr. E-Stelle Travemünde
Fliegerhorst

Auf Befehl des Grossadmirals Dönitz ist Flugboot BV 222 unter höchster Dringlichkeit fertigzustellen und in den Flensburger Raum zu verlegen. Kommandant ist für getarnte Abstellung verantwortlich. Weiterhin ist Ju 290 (Hauptmann Meyer) in den Nordraum zu überführen. Geeigneter Platz ist durch Hauptmann Meyer festzulegen. Oberstleutnant Baumbach ist für Durchführung dieser Sonderaufgaben befohlen.

Baumbach

[illegible] 1/1 2157 [illegible]

[illegible]
Min. büro Speer

Abb. 3

Machine Translated by Google

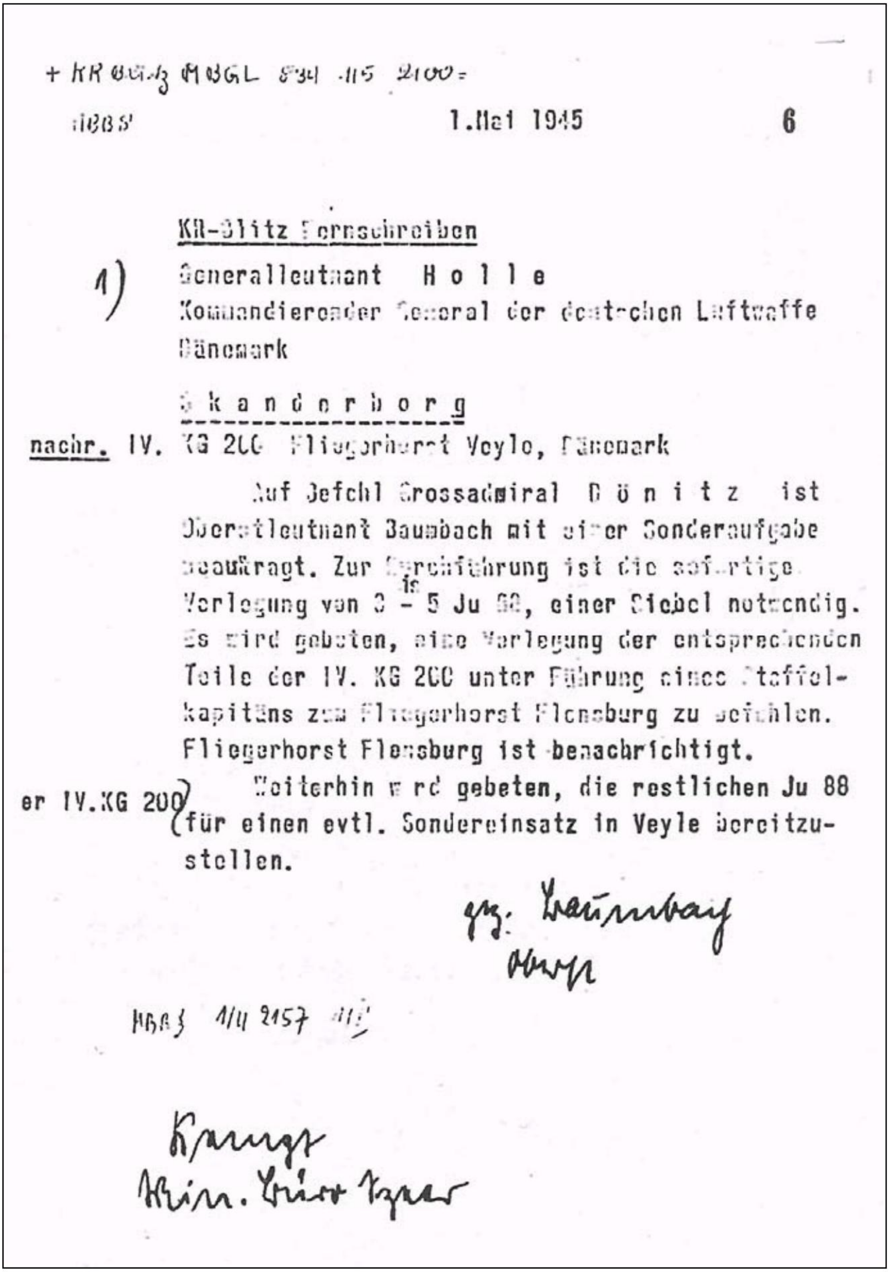

+ KR BGZ MBGL 834 1/5 2100=

MBBS 1. Mai 1945 6

KR-Blitz Fernschreiben

1) Generalleutnant Holle
Kommandierender General der deutschen Luftwaffe
Dänemark

Skanderborg

nachr. IV. KG 200 Fliegerhorst Veyle, Dänemark

Auf Befehl Grossadmiral Dönitz ist Oberstleutnant Baumbach mit einer Sonderaufgabe beauftragt. Zur Durchführung ist die sofortige Verlegung von 3 – 5 Ju 88, einer Siebel notwendig. Es wird gebeten, eine Verlegung der entsprechenden Teile der IV. KG 200 unter Führung eines Staffelkapitäns zum Fliegerhorst Flensburg zu befehlen. Fliegerhorst Flensburg ist benachrichtigt.

er IV. KG 200 Weiterhin wird gebeten, die restlichen Ju 88 für einen evtl. Sondereinsatz in Veyle bereitzustellen.

gez. Baumbach
Obstlt

MBBS 1/5 2157

Abb. 4

The fact that German military activities in Greenland during the war were somewhat surprising in their scale is also proven by press releases from the period after the war.

In one case, 120 men were landed by submarines as early as 1942, and were reinforced by a further 30 men in the autumn of 1944. They only surrendered to the Americans in 1947 (Figure 5). Another German group, the radio station under the command of Sergeant Kulik, was not even discovered by the Russians until 1949.

(Figure 6) This shows that the plan to survive for a longer period of time in a Greenlandic base and to remain undetected was not so hopeless.

Conclusion: The existence of a significant German base in the Arctic (in Greenland) can be assumed with a high degree of probability. From a practical point of view, nothing stood in the way of its evacuation by German submarines at the end of the war.

5. The withdrawal movement of German submarines had Argentina as its target

Why Argentina? Because the political and economic conditions in this country in 1945 could be described as almost ideal for the Germans. But more on that later.

It has already been shown in detail that the submarines could not possibly have landed their cargo, which consisted of technical know-how and the specialists necessary for its practical use, on the "coasts" of New Swabia.

But what about Argentina?

On May 30, 1945, a memorandum classified as "secret" circulated between the American State Department and the War Department, according to which the British Embassy in Buenos Aires had already been informed by the Argentine Foreign Ministry on May 18 that several German submarines were apparently waiting off the coast of Argentina to surrender to the Argentine authorities (Figure 7).

It then took almost another two months - about the reasons for - until the first German this delay can only be speculated -,

Machine Translated by Google

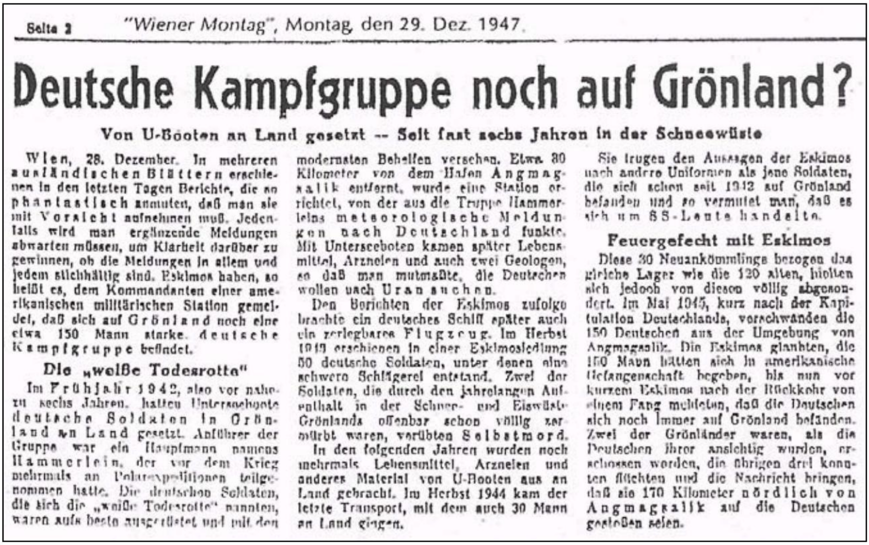

Seite 2 "Wiener Montag", Montag, den 29. Dez. 1947.

Deutsche Kampfgruppe noch auf Grönland?

Von U-Booten an Land gesetzt -- Seit fast sechs Jahren in der Schneewüste

Wien, 28. Dezember. In mehreren ausländischen Blättern erschienen in den letzten Tagen Berichte, die so phantastisch anmuten, daß man sie mit Vorsicht aufnehmen muß. Jedenfalls wird man ergänzende Meldungen abwarten müssen, um Klarheit darüber zu gewinnen, ob die Meldungen in allem und jedem stichhältig sind. Eskimos haben, so heißt es, dem Kommandanten einer amerikanischen militärischen Station gemeldet, daß sich auf Grönland noch eine etwa 150 Mann starke deutsche Kampfgruppe befindet.

Die „weiße Todesrotte"

Im Frühjahr 1942, also vor nahezu sechs Jahren, hatten Unterseeboote deutsche Soldaten in Grönland an Land gesetzt. Anführer der Gruppe war ein Hauptmann namens Hammerlein, der vor dem Krieg mehrmals an Polarexpeditionen teilgenommen hatte. Die deutschen Soldaten, die sich die „weiße Todesrotte" nannten, waren aufs beste ausgerüstet und mit den modernsten Behelfen versehen. Etwa 80 Kilometer von dem Hafen Angmagsalik entfernt, wurde eine Station errichtet, von der aus die Truppe Hammerleins meteorologische Meldungen nach Deutschland funkte. Mit Unterseebooten kamen später Lebensmittel, Arzneien und auch zwei Geologen, so daß man mutmaßte, die Deutschen wollen nach Uran suchen.

Den Berichten der Eskimos zufolge brachte ein deutsches Schiff später auch ein zerlegbares Flugzeug. Im Herbst 1943 erschienen in einer Eskimosiedlung 50 deutsche Soldaten, unter denen eine schwere Schlägerei entstand. Zwei der Soldaten, die durch den jahrelangen Aufenthalt in der Schnee- und Eiswüste Grönlands offenbar schon völlig zermürbt waren, verübten Selbstmord.

In den folgenden Jahren wurden noch mehrmals Lebensmittel, Arzneien und anderes Material von U-Booten aus an Land gebracht. Im Herbst 1944 kam der letzte Transport, mit dem auch 30 Mann an Land gingen.

Sie trugen den Aussagen der Eskimos nach andere Uniformen als jene Soldaten, die sich schon seit 1942 auf Grönland befanden und so vermutet man, daß es sich um SS-Leute handelte.

Feuergefecht mit Eskimos

Diese 30 Neuankömmlinge bezogen das gleiche Lager wie die 120 alten, hielten sich jedoch von diesen völlig abgesondert. Im Mai 1945, kurz nach der Kapitulation Deutschlands, verschwanden die 150 Deutschen aus der Umgebung von Angmagsalik. Die Eskimos glaubten, die 150 Mann hätten sich in amerikanische Gefangenschaft begeben, bis nun vor kurzem Eskimos nach der Rückkehr von einem Fang meldeten, daß die Deutschen sich noch immer auf Grönland befänden. Zwei der Grönländer waren, als die Deutschen ihrer ansichtig wurden, erschossen worden, die übrigen drei konnten flüchten und die Nachricht bringen, daß sie 170 Kilometer nördlich von Angmagsalik auf die Deutschen gestoßen seien.

Abb. 5

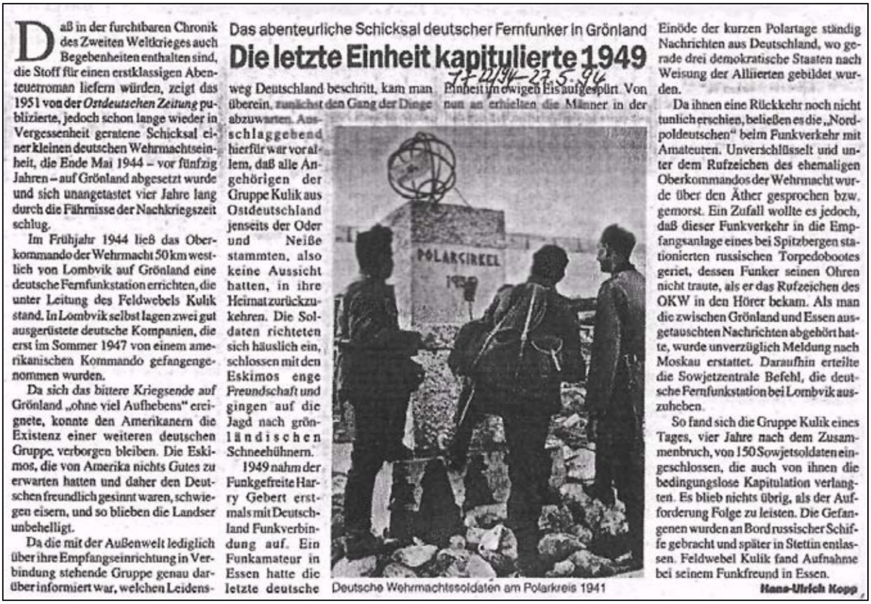
POLARCIRKEL

Das abenteurliche Schicksal deutscher Fernfunker in Grönland

Die letzte Einheit kapitulierte 1949

7F 2/94 – 27.5.94

Daß in der furchtbaren Chronik des Zweiten Weltkrieges auch Begebenheiten enthalten sind, die Stoff für einen erstklassigen Abenteuerroman liefern würden, zeigt das 1951 von der *Ostdeutschen Zeitung* publizierte, jedoch schon lange wieder in Vergessenheit geratene Schicksal einer kleinen deutschen Wehrmachtseinheit, die Ende Mai 1944 – vor fünfzig Jahren – auf Grönland abgesetzt wurde und sich unangetastet vier Jahre lang durch die Fährnisse der Nachkriegszeit schlug.

Im Frühjahr 1944 ließ das Oberkommando der Wehrmacht 50 km westlich von Lombvik auf Grönland eine deutsche Fernfunkstation errichten, die unter Leitung des Feldwebels Kulik stand. In Lombvik selbst lagen zwei gut ausgerüstete deutsche Kompanien, die erst im Sommer 1947 von einem amerikanischen Kommando gefangengenommen wurden.

Da sich das bittere Kriegsende auf Grönland „ohne viel Aufhebens" ereignete, konnte den Amerikanern die Existenz einer weiteren deutschen Gruppe verborgen bleiben. Die Eskimos, die von Amerika nichts Gutes zu erwarten hatten und daher den Deutschen freundlich gesinnt waren, schwiegen eisern, und so blieben die Landser unbehelligt.

Da die mit der Außenwelt lediglich über ihre Empfangseinrichtung in Verbindung stehende Gruppe genau darüber informiert war, welchen Leidensweg Deutschland beschritt, kam man überein, zunächst den Gang der Dinge abzuwarten. Ausschlaggebend hierfür war vor allem, daß alle Angehörigen der Gruppe Kulik aus Ostdeutschland jenseits der Oder und Neiße stammten, also keine Aussicht hatten, in ihre Heimat zurückzukehren. Die Soldaten richteten sich häuslich ein, schlossen mit den Eskimos enge Freundschaft und gingen auf die Jagd nach grönländischen Schneehühnern.

1949 nahm der Funkgefreite Harry Gebert erstmals mit Deutschland Funkverbindung auf. Ein Funkamateur in Essen hatte die letzte deutsche Einheit im ewigen Eis aufgespürt. Von nun an erhielten die Männer in der Einöde der kurzen Polartage ständig Nachrichten aus Deutschland, wo gerade drei demokratische Staaten nach Weisung der Alliierten gebildet wurden.

Da ihnen eine Rückkehr noch nicht tunlich erschien, beließen es die „Norddeutschen" beim Funkverkehr mit Amateuren. Unverschlüsselt und unter dem Rufzeichen des ehemaligen Oberkommandos der Wehrmacht wurde über den Äther gesprochen bzw. gemorst. Ein Zufall wollte es jedoch, daß dieser Funkverkehr in die Empfangsanlage eines bei Spitzbergen stationierten russischen Torpedobootes geriet, dessen Funker seinen Ohren nicht traute, als er das Rufzeichen des OKW in den Hörer bekam. Als man die zwischen Grönland und Essen ausgetauschten Nachrichten abgehört hatte, wurde unverzüglich Meldung nach Moskau erstattet. Daraufhin erteilte die Sowjetzentrale Befehl, die deutsche Fernfunkstation bei Lombvik auszuheben.

So fand sich die Gruppe Kulik eines Tages, vier Jahre nach dem Zusammenbruch, von 150 Sowjetsoldaten eingeschlossen, die auch von ihnen die bedingungslose Kapitulation verlangten. Es blieb nichts übrig, als der Aufforderung Folge zu leisten. Die Gefangenen wurden an Bord russischer Schiffe gebracht und später in Stettin entlassen. Feldwebel Kulik fand Aufnahme bei seinem Funkfreund in Essen.

Deutsche Wehrmachtssoldaten am Polarkreis 1941

Hans-Ulrich Kopp

Abb. 6

Machine Translated by Google

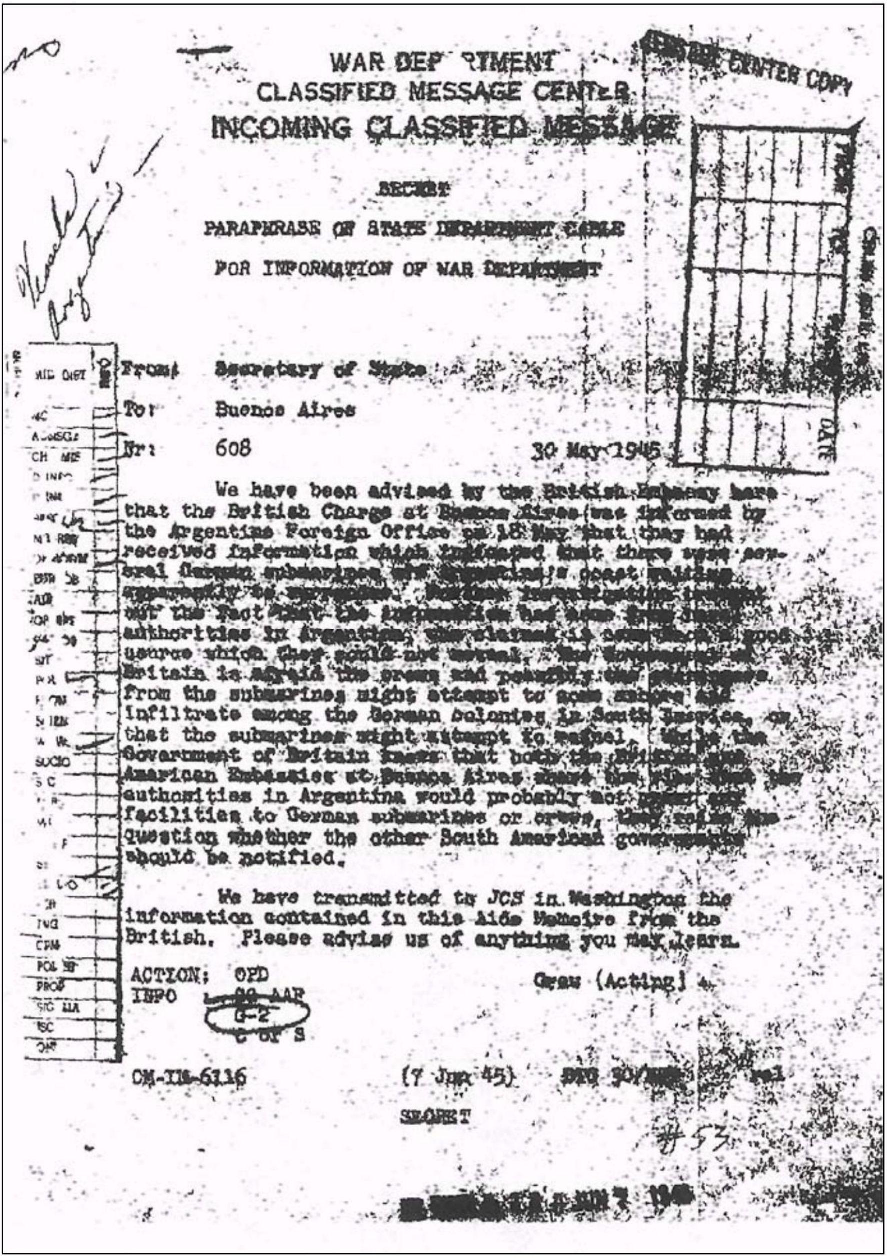

WAR DEPARTMENT
CLASSIFIED MESSAGE CENTER
INCOMING CLASSIFIED MESSAGE

MESSAGE CENTER COPY

SECRET

PARAPHRASE OF STATE DEPARTMENT CABLE
FOR INFORMATION OF WAR DEPARTMENT

From: Secretary of State
To: Buenos Aires
Nr: 608 30 May 1945

We have been advised by the British Embassy here that the British Charge at Buenos Aires was informed by the Argentine Foreign Office on 18 May that they had received information which indicated that there were several German submarines off Argentina's coast waiting apparently to surrender. [illegible] out the fact that the information had come from [illegible] authorities in Argentina, [illegible] source which they could not reveal. The Government of Britain is afraid the crews and possibly the passengers from the submarines might attempt to come ashore and infiltrate among the German colonies in South America, or that the submarines might attempt to refuel. While the Government of Britain knows that both the British and American Embassies at Buenos Aires share the view that the authorities in Argentina would probably not grant any facilities to German submarines or crews, they raise the question whether the other South American governments should be notified.

We have transmitted to JCS in Washington the information contained in this Aide Memoire from the British. Please advise us of anything you may learn.

ACTION: OPD
INFO: CG AAF
G-2
C of S

Grew (Acting)

CM-IN-6116 (7 Jun 45) DTG 30/[illegible] rel

SECRET

#53

Abb. 7

U-boat, U 530, under its captain Otto Wermuth with 54 men on board, was made available to the Argentinians on July 10, 1945 in Mar de Plata.

Another five weeks later, on August 17, more than three months after the surrender of the German Wehrmacht, U 977 surrendered under Captain Heinz Schäffer with 32 men on board. (11)

Both boats were later transferred to the USA. During interrogation, Heinz Schäffer was repeatedly asked by the American investigative authorities where he had hidden Hitler. However, he and the entire crew of U 977 stubbornly insisted that there had been no other person on board apart from the crew. The fact that Heinz Schaffer had nothing better to do than return to Argentina after his release and deportation to Germany is piquant. (19) The Americans may therefore have had good reasons for their inquiry.

Already after the handover of U 530, rumors had been circulating that the boat had dropped off high-ranking Nazis on the coast of Argentina before its "surrender" on July 10. These rumors are documented in a telegram from the US military attaché in Buenos Aires to the War Ministry dated July 14, 1945 (Figure 8).

Significantly, this would not have been the first time that U 530 had been involved in secret operations. In the summer of 1944, it had already handed over various documents and strategic raw materials, including a large quantity of mercury, to the Japanese submarine 1-52 in the Atlantic, near Gibraltar, which was subsequently sunk by an American bomber. (27) U 530 and its crew therefore seemed predestined for such operations.

According to the official opinion, U 530 and U 977 were the last two German submarines to surrender to the enemy powers. That this is not the case is proven by the statements of two sailors interned in Argentina from the German battleship *Admiral Graf Spee, which was sunk in a hopeless battle situation in December 1939.*

Afterwards, between 23 and 29 July 1945, the sailors Dettelmann and Schulz helped unload two German submarines that had anchored off the coast of Patagonia (part of Argentina).

The further fate of these two boats will be discussed later.

Machine Translated by Google

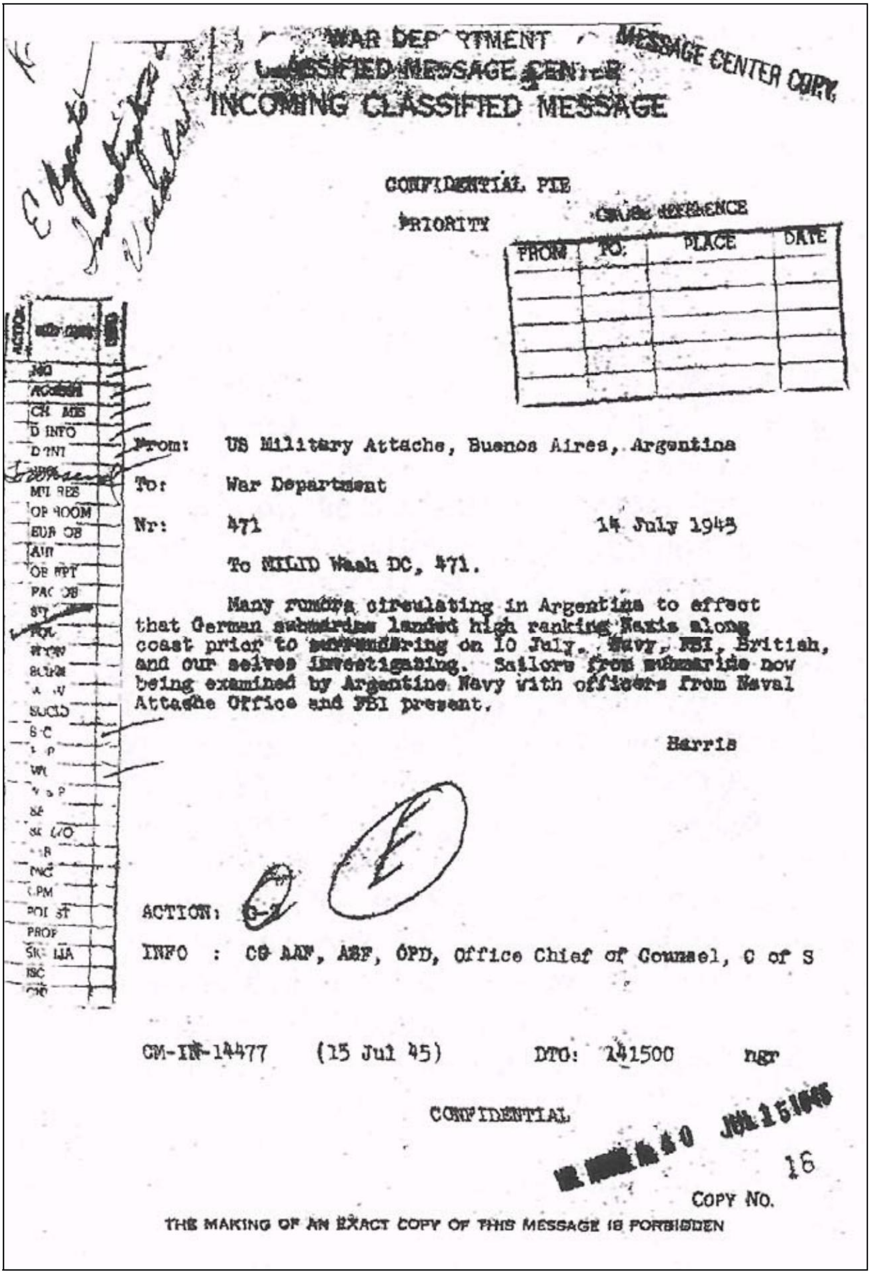

WAR DEPARTMENT
CLASSIFIED MESSAGE CENTER
INCOMING CLASSIFIED MESSAGE

MESSAGE CENTER COPY

CONFIDENTIAL PIE

PRIORITY

CROSS REFERENCE

FROM	TO:	PLACE	DATE

From: US Military Attache, Buenos Aires, Argentina

To: War Department

Nr: 471 14 July 1945

To MILID Wash DC, 471.

Many rumors circulating in Argentina to effect that German submarine landed high ranking Nazis along coast prior to surrendering on 10 July. Navy, FBI, British, and our selves investigating. Sailors from submarine now being examined by Argentine Navy with officers from Naval Attache Office and FBI present.

Harris

ACTION: G-2

INFO : CG AAF, ASF, OPD, Office Chief of Counsel, C of S

CM-IN-14477 (15 Jul 45) DTG: 141500 ngr

CONFIDENTIAL

JUL 15 1945

COPY NO. 16

THE MAKING OF AN EXACT COPY OF THIS MESSAGE IS FORBIDDEN

Abb. 8

For now, the only thing that matters is what Dettelmann and Schulz had to report. Both were housed on a hacienda owned by a German company. One day, they were taken to a desert-like part of the coast from where they could see the two submarines. The two men went on board and helped unload heavy containers, which were taken ashore in small boats. There they were loaded onto eight large trucks.

They then drove first to the hacienda in question and then continued their journey inland.

In addition, about 80 men also left the submarines, some of them in civilian clothes. From their behavior, the two sailors concluded that they must have been important people. The evacuated people quickly got into waiting cars and drove away. (28)

This statement was the first confirmation of the rumors about German submarines landing material and personnel on Argentina's coast. It would have been no different with the U 530 and U 977. The additional capacity of the submarines has also been proven to be correct, as shown above with the example of the crew of sunk ships taken on board by the boats.

Here and there, the submarines could accommodate up to 40 additional persons for a journey of several thousand nautical miles.

The question that still remains to be answered is whether one of the submarines that unloaded its cargo on the Patagonian coast between 23 and 29 July 1945 could have been U 977, which, as we know, surrendered to the Argentine authorities about three weeks later. This certainly cannot be completely ruled out. However, if one takes into account that U 977 had completed its mission by the end of July at the latest, the probability of this is not particularly high. If the captain of the boat intended to hand over his boat after completing his mission, a subsequent three-week stay on the high seas made little sense.

There is further evidence that German submarines successfully sailed to South America with secret cargo at the end of the war. At the end of 1982, the former cultural attaché of an Israeli consulate in the USA, Chaim Rosenthal, purchased over 700 letters, family diaries, NSDAP party books and 130 photos from the former

Reichsführer-SS Heinrich Himmler. Among these devotional items was the diary of Himmler's daughter Gudrun. She now calls herself Burwitz, and Rosenthal told her that he had acquired the diary and the other documents from a former SS officer who was now living in Mexico. According to his information, the documents were smuggled out of Germany by an adjutant of SS General Karl Wolff shortly before the end of the war and later brought to South America by submarine. (29)

Conclusion: The departure of more than two German submarines to Argentina has been proven. This was not an escape, but a coordinated action with the aim of keeping sensitive goods and highly qualified personnel out of the reach of the Allies.

6. The flying discs

According to Landig, there were several projects to develop flying discs. The designers named were the Viennese technician Schauberger and the engineer Schriever.

A project, with the type designation V-7, would have made it past the drawing board and testing stage and would have played a key role in the withdrawal movement at the end of the war - albeit in small numbers. The V-7 is said to have had a conventional drive with circular jets and was capable of flying thousands of kilometers without interruption. After the war, these aircraft would have given rise to the spectacular waves of sightings of so-called UFOs and would have gone down in history as "flying saucers."

It will later become clear that, among others, Schauberger had developed flying discs whose unconventional propulsion systems had truly revolutionary properties. Either Landig knew nothing about these projects, or he did not yet want to lift the veil of silence that had hung over these projects.

In the 1950s, some of those involved in the development of flying discs came back and spoke about their work in press interviews. To what extent the "whole truth" was always communicated remains to be seen. The origin of the

The UFO phenomenon seemed to have returned to Earth from space. However, the impact of these publications did not last long. The desire to see the new phenomena in the sky as manifestations of an extraterrestrial power seemed to be greater. Or was this development even due to the influence of other, entirely earthly powers?

In 1956 a publication appeared under the title *The German Weapons and Secret Weapons of the Second World War and their Further Development ,* which was to see several new editions, some of them expanded, up until the 1970s. (10) The author, Rudolf Lusar, gave a highly competent and lovingly detailed overview of the secret weapons developments on the German side that he knew of, which, in the opinion of experts, has remained unmatched to this day. Interestingly, Lusar's book was reason enough for the Americans to set up a "special studies group" within the *Air Force* in 1958 , which was headed by the Austrian-born Dr.

Stefan Possony was to make a detailed inventory of the published information. The investigation as such was classified as "secret". (18)

What had Lusar learned about the secret flying disc developments?

The introductory words that Lusar put before his section entitled "Flying Saucers" are important: "According to confirmed information from experts and employees, the first projects, called 'flying discs', were started in 1941." Lusar did not simply pass on facts based on hearsay, but had the details of these developments confirmed directly by several people involved. This is what makes the whole book so good: only the facts he verified were published, speculation was left out.

before.

Lusar continued: »The plans for these devices were drawn up by the German experts Schriever, Habermohl, Miethe and the Italian Bellonzo. Habermohl and Schriever chose a wide ring that rotated around a fixed, dome-shaped cockpit and consisted of adjustable wing disks that could be placed in a corresponding position depending on whether they were needed for takeoff or horizontal flight. Miethe developed a discus-like disk with a diameter of 42 meters, into which adjustable nozzles could be inserted.

Schriever and Habermohl, who were working in Prague, started on 14 February 1945 with the first 'Flying Disc', they reached a height of 12,400 meters in three minutes and a speed of 2,000 kilometers per hour (!) in horizontal flight. The goal was to reach speeds of 4,000 kilometers per hour.

Extensive preliminary tests and research work were necessary before production could begin. Because of the high speed and the extraordinary heat stress, particularly suitable materials had to be found that could withstand the effects of heat. The development, which cost millions, was close to completion by the end of the war." (10)

One of the most important contemporary witnesses involved in the development of flying discs was chief engineer Georg Klein. Due to the rapid shifting of the front in the west, at the end of 1944 a significant part of the German aircraft industry was concentrated in the Protectorate of Bohemia and Moravia, which was less affected by the air war.
Armaments Minister Speer appointed Georg Klein as special representative for aircraft production in this area. In the first half of the 1950s, Klein made several comments in various press publications on the history of the "flying saucers."

It supposedly began in April 1941. »At a secret conference in the Reich Air Ministry in Berlin, Göring gave a small group of prominent aircraft designers and aerotechnicians the order to be far ahead of their time and to develop even faster aircraft.
Göring demanded that the traditional fuselage shape be deviated from and that wing shapes be created, since this was the only way to achieve more favourable aerodynamic and static conditions.« (30)

What has become known about the people involved named by Lusar and their design concepts?

Prof. Giuseppe Belluzzo (instead of Bellonzo as in Lusar) was Italian and published an article in 1950 in which he stated that he had been working on an Italian-German project to develop a flying disc since 1942. This flying disc was to be used as a type of flying bomb against ground targets, while another design would have served as an anti-aircraft device. (31) Belluzzo therefore apparently had nothing to do with the development of manned flying discs.

Chief engineer Klein also spoke of only three designers involved. Like Lusar, he described Miethe as the developer of a discus-like, non-rotating disk with a diameter of 42 meters.

In contrast, the designs by Habermohl and Schriever featured a wide ring rotating around a fixed, spherical pilot's cabin. This ring was divided into several sections by adjustable wing blades, thus enabling vertical takeoff and landing. (32) Unlike Schriever, Habermohl chose shorter wing blades for his design. This prevented the wing blades from bending at high speeds. (17)

Captain Rudolf Schriever claims to have been the first to complete a functioning model of a flying disc. It allegedly completed its maiden flight on June 3, 1942, powered by tiny rockets. According to Schriever, the development from the small tested model to the flightworthy prototype could not be successfully completed. Schriever is said to have worked on his plans until April 15, 1945. (17) Then the Russians came.

He was able to escape. Interesting in this context is the fact that Schriever spent several years in South America after the war. (33)

According to Georg Klein, Otto Habermohl's version of a flying disc completed its first successful test flight: "On February 14, 1945, at 6:30 a.m., the

launch took place on the exhibition grounds in Holice (Prague). Special representative Klein looked excitedly at Habermohl, who turned away from his colleagues Mühlens and Schreiber and six factory employees who had to make the necessary preparations and walked towards the flying ring with the pilot Röhlke. ... Habermohl and his colleagues stared at their watches. Röhlke waved his hand and the flying ring started moving with a deafening noise. It swung vertically into the air and then shot straight up in a steep flight. ... The top stood in the air like a flat hat, only to suddenly veer abruptly to the left. Like a flashing plate, it scurried along under the cloud cover ...

Habermohl had calculated the flight time to be eight minutes. ... Then it seems to be rolling down from the sky in slow motion. ... Röhlke slowed down the speed, the disc stood still, slowly descending like a

Helicopter and landed vertically on its three buffers. ... The measurement results had withstood the theoretical calculations. They showed a developed climb rate of 12,400 meters in three minutes." (30)

The "pilot Röhlke" probably refers to Joachim Roehlike, who wrote in a letter to the editor in response to the relevant series of articles in the *Hamburger Morgenpost :* "Until the end of the war I was a pilot and licensed follow-up pilot. In this capacity, around the turn of the year 1944/45, I learned about rotating flying objects that had already been launched in a series of five to 15 machines..." (17) Joachim Roehlike apparently did not want to or was not allowed to say more about his involvement in the first flight of Habermohl's flying gyro.

The final decision on the series production of one of the three flying disc types available was made some time later, as Georg Klein recalled. On March 27, 1945, Dr. Hans Kammler - who will be discussed later - was appointed by Hitler as special representative for the production and use of jet aircraft. This meant that the production of flying discs also fell within his area of responsibility. In Prague, chief engineer Klein spoke with Kammler about the flying discs available and suitable for series production:

"And which of the three air gyroscope designs is suitable for use?" ... The decisive question had been asked. And while chief engineer Klein was once again assessing the advantages and disadvantages of Miethe's discus and Rudolf Schriever's mocha cup-like gyroscope, he had long since had the desired answer ready. There was only one design, which had been created in complete silence by its creator Otto Habermohl in the converted rooms of an inn in Slany, about forty kilometers from Prague. (30)

Klein reported how the Cesco-Moravska (BMM) and Letov factories in Prague-Smichov were working feverishly to complete the series of 15 tops. Habermohl, the engineer in charge, is said to have agreed to shorten the assembly of his air ring by 14 days. In contrast, a short series production of the Miethe design could not be accelerated. It was possible to build two flying rings before a discus left the factory. Miethe's flying discus was more complex to build than the flying top that in terms of its design, it could be described as simple, even "primitive." In May 1945, shortly before the Russians marched into Prague, Habermohl, according to Klein, burned all the construction plans and all the documents for the flying gyro and blew up the already assembled flying ring and all the individual parts. (17) Since then, there has been no trace of Habermohl.

At the same time - and also in Prague - Dr. Kammler disappeared. Since then, there has been no sign of him either. A coincidence? Or did Kammler, who was responsible for the development of the SS's secret weapons, and one of his flying disc designers disappear together?

Georg Klein's comments show that Miethe's flying disc was also well advanced in its development. The series production of this flying disc must therefore have been possible at least theoretically at this time. As expected, there was no more talk of Schriever's flying top.

Thus, in addition to Habermohl's simple design for shorter flight distances, the high-quality flying diskus - which, as we will see, is suitable for long flight distances - appears to have been an alternative project rather than a competitor. Klein was not in a position to say whether it could actually go into production, as Miethe worked in Breslau, which was not Klein's area of responsibility. Miethe's flying diskus was reported on in the Paris evening newspaper France Soir in the issues of 7 and 14 June 1952. According to this, Dr.-Ing. Miethe is said to have stated in an interview that a new

design of the V-weapon in the shape of a disk with a range of 21,000 kilometres and radar control, designated V-7, was ready for production towards the end of the war. This remote-controlled disk was tested with great success over the Baltic Sea. However, it was only after Patton's army had crossed the Rhine that Hitler decided to have the V-7 mass-produced in underground factories in southern Germany. According to the engineer's account, the Soviets captured several drive units of this weapon when they took Breslau. (17)

Here it appears for the first time, the V-7, the flying disc that Landig reported on. And what Klein did not know: the V-7 had also been ordered to go into series production!

In the interview, Miethe described the V-7 flying disc in detail:

Machine Translated by Google

»The V-7 engines had a six-stage compressor, a ring-shaped combustion chamber and a special two-stage turbine for flights in the stratosphere, since the machine could reach a height of 20,000 meters. ... The V-7 was powered primarily by a compressed gas based on helium, 22 cubic meters of which was enough for an average of 16 hours of flight. ... Taking into account the range of 41,000 kilometers and a cruising altitude of 20,000 meters at supersonic speed, the enemy has little chance of spotting the V-7. My aircraft can be flown over great distances with a crew of three and, if a range of 18-20,000 kilometers is not exceeded, also with radio remote control and radar. The general appearance of the V-7 resembles that of a discus with a diameter of 42 meters. Twelve turbines are arranged at equal intervals on an inner movable metal ring. This ring rotates like a gyroscope around the central, fixed middle section, which contains the pressurized cabin for the two pilots and the space for the radio operator and radar. The bombs are suspended around the fuel tanks. The engines start in less than 16 seconds. It takes off from an ascending launch pad using launch rockets powered by liquid oxygen and alcohol. The machine can also stand still in the air like a normal helicopter. ... What still needs to be done is to perfectly manufacture the rocket nozzles so that, if possible, there are no signs of wear and tear over longer periods of operation due to the high temperatures of the gas outlet of around 5000 degrees. If these and two other secret requirements are met, then my device can without a doubt also be operated with an atomic drive.« (17)

According to Georg Klein, Miethe began his work on the V-7 in Peenemünde and finished it in Breslau. (30) After his successful escape from the embattled city, his path led him to Egypt, where he built remote-controlled rockets together with other German experts.

At the time of the interview printed in *France Soir,* Miethe received an invitation to the USA, presumably to participate in the "AVROCAR" project, a flying disc project that was later officially declared a failure, but that is not significant. The procedure of officially declaring a promising and militarily highly sensitive research project a failure in order to

It would probably not be unusual to then continue development work in secret with even greater effort.

The V-7 flying disc had all the parameters that were essential for the scenario of the withdrawal movement described by Wilhelm Landig. It was a weapon that the Allies had no qualitative counter to in the air and that was also capable of covering intercontinental distances. Since all of the finished models of Habermohl's design were destroyed in Prague, the flying discs that survived the end of the war unscathed and were not captured by the Allies must have been V-7 flying discs. The last, still open question in this context is whether some V-7s were actually able to leave devastated Germany in time before the end of the war?

More on that later.

Even if the development of functioning prototypes of the V-7 or other flying discs had not been successfully completed, the lack of any kind of documentation on the individual development steps in the archives of the victorious powers of the Second World War can still cause irritation. This fact often leads to the hasty conclusion that the post-war statements of those involved must be a web of lies and speculation. The very existence of such highly developed flying machines, which had not even been conceptualized by the Allies up to that point, could be a reason for their absolute secrecy. In view of the looming "Cold War", neither side was prepared to share technical know-how captured by the Germans with their former allies.

If one also takes into account the role of flying discs in the years after the war, when they returned to reality as "flying saucers", the "great silence" becomes even more understandable.

Thus, the alleged non-existence of the Reich's flying discs also finds its counterpart in other top-secret developments: the non-existence of a functional German nuclear weapon and the A-9 American missile that served as its carrier.

Both systems were ready for use by the end of the war. In recent years, an overwhelming amount of evidence has been produced to support this. (34, 35, 36)

The renowned British journalist Nick Cook has deciphered the system behind this spiral of silence in his book *The Hunt for Zero Point .* In a directive from the Air Force officer who was apparently involved in the scientific processing of the technology theft, A.

R. Sullivan Jr., to General McDonald, the head of the Air Force Secret Service, dated September 28, 1945, the further course of action was determined. Referring to the investigations into the possibility of disabling aircraft engines using interference and the fireballs, the "foo fighters" seen by the Allied aircraft crews, it says: These investigations should be stopped with negative results. Nick Cook asked himself why? He found several references in the archives that reported on such developments on the German side and which the Americans were certainly able to exploit for their own benefit. Cook therefore interprets the sentence in question as a call for absolute secrecy. The knowledge of these things was safe, and further investigations by unauthorized bodies would only have lifted the cloak of silence. (18)

Fortunately, those responsible for "cleaning" sensitive archive content did not succeed in erasing every reference to the existence of German flying discs. As in all government offices around the world, this was a sloppy process.

Polish journalist Igor Witkowski searched the *National Archives* of the United States for a list of documents catalogued by military intelligence. In the section on German research and development in the field of aviation, he found an entry dated 21.

September 1948, which contains a reference to a "flying saucer" (Figure 9). However, the corresponding archived document could not be found, only the note that it had been later removed. (27) This is further proof not only of the fact that German flying saucers existed, but also that their traces were deliberately erased from the archives.

Conclusion: Based on consistent witness statements after the war and the obvious cover-up tactics used by the Allies with regard to revolutionary German technological developments in general and flying discs in particular, it can be assumed that

It cannot be proved that these flying discs were actually in working order at the end of the war. Their involvement in the withdrawal movement remains to be proven.

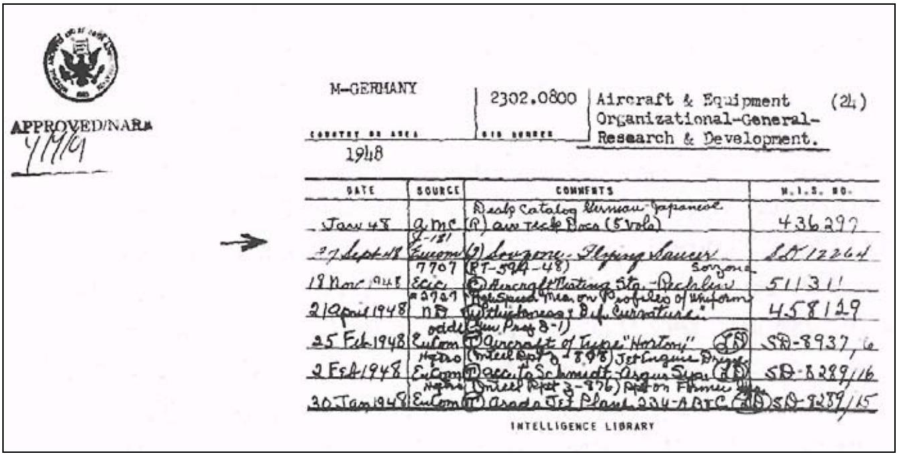

APPROVED/NARA

M-GERMANY | 2302.0800 | Aircraft & Equipment (24)
Organizational-General-
Research & Development.

COUNTRY OR AREA

1948

DATE	SOURCE	COMMENTS	M.I.S. NO.
Jan 48	G.M.C.	Desk Catalog German-Japanese (R) air tech Docs (5 vols)	436297
27 Sept 48	J-181 Eucom	(?) Sovzone - Flying Saucer	SD 12264
18 Nov 1948	7707 ECIC	(RT-594-48) (C) Aircraft Testing Sta. - Rechlin Sovzone	511311
21 April 1948	#2727 NB	High Speed Mea. on Profiles of Uniform Thickness & Dif. Curvature"	458129
25 Feb 1948	addl Eucom	(Gen Prog 8-1) (T) Aircraft of Type "Horton"	SD-8937/6
2 Feb 1948	Hq Dio EuCom	(Intell Rpt 3-898) Jet Engine Design (T) acc. to Schmidt-Argus Sys.	SD-8289/16
30 Jan 1948	Hq Eucom	(Intell Rpt 3-876) Rpt on Former (T) Arado Jet Plant 234-ARTC	SD-8289/15

INTELLIGENCE LIBRARY

Fig. 9: Reference to German work on a flying disc.

7. The underground refuge under the Andes

According to Landig, part of the material transported to South America was deposited in huge, partly artificially created cave systems. The builders of these gigantic structures were members of an ancient and long-extinct people, but hardly any traces of their work remain today. In these underground workshops, completely isolated from the outside world, the life of the evacuated technical specialists supposedly took place, who were busy further perfecting superior German weapons technology.

were.

The information about these caves reached Germany before the war through the researcher Edmund Kiss. However, Kiss kept his discoveries secret from the public.

Who was Edmund Kiss?

Born in 1886, died in 1946 in American war

After his imprisonment, Edmund Kiss led a colorful, dazzling existence throughout his life. An architect by profession, he devoted a large part of his life to his great passion - the confirmation and propagation of Hörbiger's world ice theory. To do this, he examined the shorelines of Tibesti in the Sahara and those on Lake Titicaca in Bolivia and Peru. He searched ruins on the island of Marajo in the Amazon estuary and attempted to reconstruct the ruins of Tiahuanaco on Lake Titicaca. He wrote several extremely successful books on these topics, which earned him the position of head of the "Atlantis Research" department in the SS Research Association *Ahnenerbe .* In 1940, another major expedition to Tiahuanaco was planned under his leadership, which was to finally solve the mystery of this gigantic ruin site with the help of the latest technology from the air and under water.

The war ultimately prevented this plan. During the war, Kiss temporarily commanded the guard force at the Führer's headquarters as an SS Obersturmbannführer. A further plan was to advance with a few men to Tibet, on the roof of the world, in order to tie down Russian forces in Asia with the support of Mongolian tribes. But of course this did not come to fruition either. (37)

Edmund Kiss could well have discovered these ancient cave systems mentioned here during his stay in Peru and Bolivia in the late 1920s.

One of Wilhelm Landig's closest acquaintances, Rudolf F. Mund, an officer in the SS division "Götz von Berlichingen" during the war, had gotten to know Kiss better while he was a prisoner of war and had become friends with him. Mund later wrote a detailed report about this encounter, which also sheds light on Kiss's fate after the end of the war. (38) If anyone could have found out anything about Edmund Kiss's secret knowledge, it was Rudolf F. Mund, who in later years rose to the position of Grand Master of the *New Templar Order.*

(ONT).

But Mund knew nothing about the cave systems, as a passage in *Wolfszeit* indicates.

Landig lets his protagonist Eyken speak here: »I knew Kiss personally ... but strangely enough he never told me about this discovery something is hinted at.« In the wider context of this passage, the formulations that Mund used in his report are partly word for word.

Even if Kiss could not have passed on the knowledge of the existence of the cave systems, there is still much evidence to suggest that these huge caverns are real.

In 1971, an article appeared in *Bild der Wissenschaft* under the title “Another Secret of the Incas” which, because of its importance, should be quoted here in full:

»The mountain of the Incas, the 6763 meter high Huascaran, rises majestically in the Andes of Peru. From here, the old transport route of the country's indigenous people runs over hill and valley to the north, where it disappears in the rubble of the rocks and mountains 260 kilometers further on at Otuzco. In this area, Pizarro had already discovered several enlarged cave entrances lined with worked rock slabs. They were considered to be storerooms. Now the cave explorers remembered these 'Inca caves' and penetrated the caves with modern means of technology, cable winches, electric cables, mountain lamps and oxygen cylinders. An astonishing discovery was made. At the end of the multi-storey caves, the researchers came across bulkhead doors made of large rock slabs that, despite their enormous weight - they are eight metres high, five metres wide and two and a half metres thick - can be moved by stone balls rotating in a bed of water drippings when four strong men push against them. This place is 62 metres below the mountainside.

But what comes next makes the surprise even greater: behind the 'six doors' begin massive tunnels that would make even modern civil engineers green with envy. These tunnels lead towards the coast at an angle, sometimes with a gradient of 14 percent. The floor is covered with grained and cross-grooved stone slabs and is slip-resistant. While it is an adventure today to penetrate this 90 to 105-kilometer-long transport tunnel towards the coast and finally reach a level 25 meters below sea level, what difficulties it must have been back then, in the 14th and 15th centuries, to transport goods deep under the Andes in order to keep them out of the reach of Pizarro and the Spanish viceroy!

At the end of the underground passages of Guanape, named after the

The Pacific Ocean lurks on the island that lies off the coast of Peru, because it is believed that these passages once led to the island under the sea. After the passages have led up and down several times in the deep darkness of the mountains, a rushing sound and a strangely hollow-sounding surf reach the ears. In the light of the headlights, the next drop ends at the edge of a pitch-black flood, which is identified as sea water. The new coast also begins underground here. Was it different in the past?

The search on the island of Guanape is in vain. There is no indication that a passage from the mainland has ever come to light anywhere. No one knows where these underground roads of the Incas and their ancestors end and whether they may open the way to filled treasure chambers of long-lost worlds.« (39)

The existence of the caves was already known to European conquerors in the early 16th century. A Carmelite monk reported on an underground system that was said to connect various Inca cities on the plateau. (40) Fernando Montesinos expressed the same view in his famous book on the history of the Incas, published in the 17th century:

»Cusco and the ruined city of Tiahuanaco are connected by a huge underground path. The Incas do not know who built it.« (41)

The underground facilities made headlines after the Lima earthquake in 1972. During the cleanup work, technicians discovered long tunnels whose existence had previously been unknown.
A systematic examination of the foundations of Lima led to a surprising result. Large parts of the city were criss-crossed by tunnels, all of which led into the mountains. Where they ended could no longer be determined. Over the course of centuries, they had collapsed. (41)

Conclusion: There is little doubt that the huge cave systems under the Andes actually exist. Who created them is unknown.
It remains uncertain whether Edmund Kiss knew about the caves and entered their entrances himself. The question of whether the Third Power used these facilities for its own purposes cannot yet be answered satisfactorily at this point.

8. Operation *High-jump* under the command of Admiral Byrd

Preparations for this largest Antarctic expedition ever undertaken began in the USA as early as the summer of 1946.
The US Navy's primary plan was to test crews and equipment under the extreme climatic conditions found in the Antarctic. At the beginning of December, the convoy of ships, consisting of 13 ships, including an aircraft carrier and a submarine, set sail with 4,000 men on board.

The expedition was by no means secret; on the contrary, the media effort was enormous. Eleven correspondents working for press agencies, newspapers and radio stations travelled to Antarctica.
However, Operation *High-jump* had to be aborted prematurely because extreme weather conditions and by far the most unfavourable ice conditions in the last century had meant that a large part of the Antarctic summer and thus the best flying weather had been lost and under these circumstances the return of the convoy should not be jeopardised. (19)

Unofficial sources, including Landig, report that four aircraft sent out to explore the area disappeared without a trace. There is no mention of this in Admiral Byrd's expedition diary. However, this fact does not necessarily mean much, as it is known that other accidents that occurred during the expedition were not recorded in the diary. For example, the crash of a helicopter that was swept overboard by a strong gust of wind immediately after taking off from the deck of the aircraft carrier.

Overall, the Americans' foray into the Antarctic ice was extremely successful, or at least that was the conclusion reached by Admiral Byrd. Over 70,000 aerial photographs were taken during 64 research flights.
An equivalent to the "Schirrmacher Oasis" of the German Antarctic Expedition was also discovered, the so-called "Bunger Oasis". Three large lakes and 20 smaller bodies of water were counted. Due to the relatively warm water, underground thermal activities were suspected. (19)

Beyond that, there is nothing to report about Operation *High-jump* that would be of interest in the context of this book.

Conclusion: The expedition under Admiral Byrd took place. A

However, a connection with activities of the Third Power in the Antarctic region cannot be proven and was not expected based on the facts presented so far in this chapter.

9. The occupation of the Antarctic base by 2000 men and the final abandonment of this bastion in the ice in 1961

If we take into account that, according to the findings we have gained so far, Wilhelm Landig has very skilfully interwoven fact and fiction - and, as I said, he himself has not claimed otherwise - then we can assume that "Antarctica" is actually a synonym for something else, a refuge, the location of which remains the task of this book to determine. Then we can also answer the question of where the 2,000 men were really stationed until 1961.

10. Three flying discs are still located in the cave systems under the Andes

With this statement, Landig refers to the V-7 Miethes, which are said to have coordinated part of the withdrawal movement from the air in May 1945.
Can this claim be supported by other sources?
It would be helpful if we could get some evidence that at least three V-7s were completed in time before the end of the war and were able to leave Germany. And indeed, this evidence exists!

Dipl.-Ing. Heinrich Fleißner claims to have been involved as a fluid mechanic in the Peenemünde program to develop a flying disc during the war. He reported on his experiences in an article in the newspaper Schwäbische neue Presse, No. 19, Year 17, dated 2.

May 1980. He said, among other things: "When the war threatened to turn the world upside down, the jet disc became interesting as a 'courier machine' for the German Air Force." The "brains" of the technicians who developed the flying disc were in Peenemünde (Miethe; the author), the individual parts were built in various places under great secrecy. In 1980, Fleißner thus confirmed details of the

Flying disc development, which are listed in this chapter under point 7. And then comes Fleißner's statement, which - if he is telling the truth - provides proof that some examples of the V-7 were ready for use in time before the end of the war.

An eyewitness told him that shortly before the capitulation, on April 24, 1945, a squadron of four flying discs - each manned by two pilots of unknown names - took off from Berlin-Lichterfelde airport under heavy artillery fire from the German and Russian sides to a destination that is still unknown today. (17)

Conclusion: The relics of three of these four flying discs could still be hidden somewhere under the Andes today.

Now that key points of the framework of action laid down by Landig for the withdrawal of German Reich forces at the end of the war have been confirmed, the next step is to research additional facts. On the one hand, this will better clarify the overall context of the withdrawal, and on the other hand, it will be possible to decipher the information that Landig appears to have deliberately encrypted.

When did the leadership of the Third Reich see itself faced with the need to introduce concrete measures to ensure the survival of the "Reich" even after a total military defeat? By July and August 1944 at the latest, after the lost battle in Normandy and the parallel successful major Russian offensive, those in charge must have realized that a military catastrophe was looming. This was not yet final, and up until April 1945 a negotiated peace with one of the two opposing sides or the use of the "wonder weapons" that were well advanced in their development (flying discs, nuclear weapons, American rockets, jet planes, Walther submarines...) could have brought about a turning point in the war. Why this ultimately did not happen will be explained in more detail later.

In November 1944, the US State Department received information from an agent about a meeting of high-ranking German representatives of occupation authorities and the economy in occupied France that took place on August 10, 1944, in the Hotel *Maison Rouge* in Strasbourg.

The content of the agent report, which I reproduce here in part wants speaks for itself:

1. "A meeting of the most important German industrialists with interests in France took place on August 10, 1944, at the Hotel *Rotes Haus* in Strasbourg. Among those present were: Dr. Scheid, who presided, SS-Obergruppenführer and Director of the *Hese* (Hermansdorff & Schenburg Company), Dr.
Kaspar, who represented Krupp, Dr. Tolle, who represented Röchling, Dr. Sinceren, representing Messerschmitt, Dr. Kopp, Vier and Beerwanger, representing Rheinmetall, Captain Haberkorn and Dr. Rübe, representing Büssing, Dr. Ellenmayer and Kandos, representing the Volkswagen works, the engineers Drose, Yanshew and Koppsheim, representing various factories in Posen ...
Captain Dornbusch, Head of the Armaments Inspection in Posen, Dr. Meyer, representative of the German Naval Command in Paris, Dr. Strassner, representative of the Reich Ministry for Armaments and War Production in Paris.
2. Dr. Scheid stated that all industrial material must be transferred to Germany immediately. The Battle of France had been lost for Germany. The defence of the West Wall was now the main problem. From now on German industry must realise that the war could no longer be won and that steps must be taken to prepare for a post-war campaign. Every industrialist must establish contacts and connections with foreign firms, but this must be done individually, without arousing suspicion. In addition, the ground must be prepared financially in order to borrow considerable sums from abroad after the war. ...

3. After this meeting, a second meeting was held, chaired by Dr. Bosse of the Reich Ministry for Armaments and War Production, and attended only by representatives of Heco, Krupp and Röchling. At the second meeting, it was stated that the war was practically lost, but that it should be continued until a guarantee of German unity was obtained.

   Germany's industrialists, it was said, must increase Germany's strength through their exports. They must also prepare to finance the Nazi party if it has to go into mountain defense positions. From now on, the government will give the industrialists large sums of money.

> so that each could create a secure post-war base abroad. The existing financial reserves abroad must be kept at the disposal of the Party so that a strong German Reich can be created after the defeat. It is also urgently necessary that the large factories in Germany set up small technical departments and offices which appear to be completely independent and have no apparent connection with the factory. These offices will receive plans and plans of new weapons, as well as all the documents they need to continue their research.
>
> They must not fall into the hands of the enemy under any circumstances. ... The existence of these offices is known only to a very small circle of industrialists and the leaders of the Nazi Party. Each office has a contact person in the Party. As soon as the Party is strong enough to take power in Germany again, the industrialists would be paid for their efforts and cooperation through concessions and privileges.

4. The meetings seem to indicate that the ban on exporting capital, which had been strictly enforced until now, has now been completely lifted and replaced by a new Nazi policy which, with government support, is letting industrialists export as much capital abroad as possible. ... Now the Nazi Party is throwing its weight behind the industrialists and urging them to save themselves, to invest their capital abroad, thereby promoting the Party's plans for its post-war operations..." (42)

The following aspects are particularly interesting in this insightful report:

1. The actions designed to ensure significant Reich German influence even after a military defeat were initiated and coordinated by the party (NSDAP);

2. The trigger was actually the fiasco on the invasion front in West;
3. It appears that the new measures, as in this case for France, were prepared at regional conferences;

4. It was essential to create an industrial and financial base abroad for the post-war period; 5. The large companies were also to establish bases and research centres in Germany in the form of small technical departments and offices; 6. The development of secret new weapons systems was given the highest priority.

Priority.

How far the measures covered by point 4 were advanced within a few months is made clear by another American intelligence report from the spring of 1945. It states that more than 750 companies in neutral countries were founded or bought with German capital, of which 274 were in Switzerland, 258 in Portugal, 112 in Spain, 98 in Argentina (!) and 35 in Turkey. (28)

Was the securing (evacuation) of plans, restraints and prototypes of new weapons carried out with a similar intensity? The answer is yes.

During his research into the subject of German wonder weapons, the Polish journalist and author of several books, Igor Witkowski, came across an SS special commando that had remained completely unknown, at least officially, until then: the ELF commando.

This was responsible for the recovery and evacuation of high technology as well as secret documents and art objects. (18, 27)

Witkowski owed his knowledge of the activities of this commando to surviving documents from the "Military Department" in the National Council of the former Polish President Bierut (until 1952). Here it was a Major Walczak who prepared the relevant reports for the President and cooperated closely with the Soviet secret service NKVD in his research into this explosive topic. This apparently proved to be his downfall later on, as he died under unclear circumstances, as did Jakub Prawin and Wladyslaw Szymanski, who were also involved in this matter. General Prawin was the head of the Polish military mission in Berlin, and Lieutenant Szymanski was a member of his staff there. The Russians therefore seemed to be doing everything they could to gain a monopoly on the use of the intelligence information obtained.

The fact that their primary concern was not even to obtain general information about the evacuation operations, but rather to focus their interest on a specific secret weapon being developed by the Germans, will be explained in more detail later.

How did Prawin and Szymanski, who carried out the research on site, get their information? In 1946, they interrogated the former SS Sturmbannführer Rudolf Schuster in Berlin, who had obtained false papers and passed himself off as a Jew. For some reason, however, Schuster was unmasked and the interrogation revealed that he had most recently worked in Office III of the Reich Security Main Office (RSHA). On June 4, 1944, he was given responsibility for transport issues within the ELF command. In this role, he reported to SS Obersturmbannführer Otto Neumann.

According to Schuster's statements, the Gauleiter of Lower Silesia, Karl Hanke, founded the ELF command. Initially, the evacuation transports went to eight underground facilities created for this purpose in the north-west of Breslau. These were designated I/AAX-SS/01 to -08. It was probably only when the war situation worsened further at the beginning of 1945 that the transfer of the most important goods to neutral countries began. A northern and a southern evacuation route were set up for this purpose. On the northern route, the transports went via Norway. This was under the command of SS-Obergruppenführer Jakob Sporrenberg until 25 June 1945.

November 1944 SS police chief of Lublin, then SS police chief of Oslo. The southern route was commanded by the aforementioned SS Obersturmbannführer Otto Neumann. The destination of the evacuations was Spain, which sympathized with Germany, as well as South America. According to Igor Witkowski, there are estimates that the airlift set up on the southern route alone made it possible to evacuate around 12,000 tons (!) of high technology, along with the corresponding documentation, in the last months of the war. There was also another, more dangerous variant of transport. A submarine set sail from the last remaining ports in the northern Adriatic under German control and also transported cargo and personnel to Spain.

An independent confirmation of this transport variant is provided by a report from the American secret service OSS. The starting point of one of the

The evacuation transports were based at the SS military training area "Heidelager" in the Tucheier Heide, southwest of Danzig, which was also used as a test site for new weapons systems. In March 1945, a top-secret cargo was taken to Verona in Italy to be shipped from there to Spain. The deputy director of the OSS in Europe, E. Tilley, described the mysterious transport as follows: "It turned out that it contained not only uranium samples, but also reports on atomic energy and possibly atomic bombs, as well as control systems for guided missiles and documents." (36)

Schuster's statements to his Polish interrogators also provided an insight into the overall scenario of the secession movement. The operation, which Schuster referred to as the "General Plan 1945", was led by Martin Bormann, the head of the party chancellery and Hitler's secretary. Karl Hanke, the NSDAP Gauleiter of Lower Silesia, was subordinate to him. This would confirm the agent's report on the conference in the Strasbourg Hotel *Maison Rouge* on another point, as it had also underlined the leading role of the party. Within this *General Plan 1945* there was an operation with the code name *Regentröpfchen.* This included all operations whose evacuation targets were abroad. For example, there was an *operation 1 - Wiking* - which was to take over the transport of the scientific, political and military elite to the so-called "safe havens". Operation *2 - Läufer* - was to do the same for the financial elite. While these two actions were for the removal of people, the Operation *Squirrel*

material goods are taken abroad. (27)

It is interesting to ask what became of the people who played a key role helped determine the scenario of the withdrawal movement.

Rumors about the fate of Martin Bormann, who was reported missing immediately after the war, continued to circulate until the 1970s, claiming that he had managed to escape from the Reich Chancellery to South America after Hitler's suicide. This was contradicted by the statement of the last Reich Youth Leader, Artur Axmann, who claimed to have seen Bormann's body near the Lehrter S-Bahn station on May 2, 1945. For a long time it was believed that Axmann had made the claim that he had shot Bormann. It was only later, on December 7 and 8, 1972, that the truth was revealed.

Axmann received justice, as Bormann's remains were found in the vicinity of the spot indicated by Axmann and later identified without a doubt with the help of his dental chart. (43) In 1996, this finding was further confirmed by a mitochondrial DNA analysis. (44)

The founder of the ELF commando, Karl Hanke, was a personality of a particularly historic format.

Here are the most important biographical stages: Born

on August 24, 1903, apprenticeship as a miller, later training at a vocational training institute, then trade teacher in Berlin, joined the NSDAP in 1928 with the number 102606, SS number 203103, 1932 deputy in the Prussian state parliament and entered the Reichstag, from March 1933 personal advisor and secretary to Goebbels in the newly created Reich Ministry for Public Enlightenment and Propaganda, appointed State Secretary by Goebbels in 1938. During the affair between Goebbels and the Czech actress Lida Baarova, he almost stole his minister's wife. Due to the resulting falling out with his boss, he went to the front as a tank lieutenant in 1939/1940; Adjutant to Field Marshal Rommel during the French campaign, awarded the Iron Cross and the Panzerkampfabzeichen in Silver during the war, Gauleiter and Oberpräsident of Lower Silesia from February 1942, acting head of the Central Office in the Speer Ministry from autumn 1943 to June 1944 (45), also proposed by him as Plenipotentiary General for Labor Deployment and as Chief of the Jäger Staff (both rejected by Hitler)

(24), 1945 defender of Breslau.

The political organization of the defense of Breslau in cooperation with the army officers responsible for the leadership of military operations was Hanke's real masterpiece.

The fighting for the city began in late January 1945. By mid-February, the Russians were able to completely surround Breslau. Hanke's men fought under almost unbearable conditions for more than three months until they had only two hundred rifles, seven tanks and eight assault guns left. This tied down several Russian divisions.

The siege lasted until May 6, 1945.

A few days earlier, Karl Hanke had reached the last step of his career ladder: Hitler decreed in his political testament that Hanke should be appointed Reichsführer-SS. As such, he replaced

Heinrich Himmler, who was removed from all posts by Hitler.

After further defense of Breslau was impossible, Hanke flew to Bohemia in the last plane remaining in the city area, to make his contribution to the final battle for the German Reich as the new Reichsführer-SS with the still intact army group of Field Marshal Schörner. Since then he has been missing. There are rumors that he was captured by Czech partisans after landing and later murdered.

However, no evidence has been provided to support this claim to date.

In his autobiography, Hartmann Lauterbacher, the former head of staff of the Hitler Youth and Baldur von Schirach's deputy as Reich Youth Leader, describes Karl Hanke's personal characteristics as well as his post-war fate: "He was a soldier and bureaucrat from head to toe and an extraordinarily intelligent and hardworking man. Karl Hanke then went into hiding after the war and disappeared. One occasionally heard from him." (46)

...

Where is the last Reichsführer-SS?

As the founder of the ELF commando, he was certainly involved in its final actions. He knew that the Reich would continue to exist after a military defeat - albeit in a different form. In an already hopeless situation, he wrote a letter to his wife from defended Breslau that expressed this certainty without the slightest doubt: "I know at least that the Reich will not collapse, and that is the main thing." (47)

It is likely that Hanke met another person in Bohemia who had also played a crucial role in the secession movement in the last months of the war and who shared Hanke's fate in that she was considered missing after the war. Her importance in connection with the development of the Reich German flying discs has already been described above. The name of this person is Hans Kammler.

Kammler's career in the SS began relatively late. After having previously worked as one of four construction directors of the Reich Air Ministry, he only joined the SS full-time on 1 June 1941 and became head of Office II - Construction within the Main Office for Budget and Construction. In this role, he was involved in the planning and implementation of the construction of the barracks and hospitals of the SS, for the

SS and police bases in the east and for the concentration camps. From February 1942, Kammler took over the management of Office Group C (Construction) in the newly founded SS Economic and Administrative Main Office. Kammler was now involved in armaments planning on several occasions. He was soon considered within the SS as a planner and organizer who could handle even the most difficult tasks. In 1943, he became known far beyond the ranks of the SS when he quickly managed to relocate Peenemünde rocket production to the artificially created, underground tunnel systems of the Kohnstein massif in the Harz Mountains. (48) The success of this measure led to a gigantic job creation program for Kammler and his organization, as other endangered areas of German armaments production were now to be relocated underground. By the end of the war, production had started in 143 underground factories, and 107 more were under construction or in planning. Production sites and laboratories were set up in 600 other places in natural caves and old ore mines. (18) The day was not far off when the Allied bombings would no longer be able to damage significant parts of the German war economy. The multi-talented Kammler also took on other tasks. At the beginning of August 1944, Himmler gave him all the powers to make the V-2 operational. In this role, Kammler also supervised the preparation of the launches of this rocket and was ultimately appointed commander of an army corps that was responsible for the entire use of the V-2 and V-1. He thus piled up one function after another and at the end of March 1945 received the order from Hitler to take over the production of the Me 262 jet fighter. This list of Kammler's official functions is by no means complete and above all does not include his most important one.

According to the statements of the former general director of the Skoda factory, SS-Standartenführer Dr. Wilhelm Voss, to the British journalist Tom Agoston in 1949, Kammler headed the Kammler staff named after him. This organization set up a secret high-tech research center of the SS in the area of the Skoda factory in Pilsen and Brunn.

Agoston writes: »Special priority was given to the development and construction of a nuclear-powered aircraft, work on the use of nuclear energy as rocket and aircraft propulsion, research with lasers, the so-called death rays, and work on a series of new, self-homing rockets. Many other fields were scientifically explored in order to help new technological possibilities to achieve a useful breakthrough. In today's high-tech jargon, this center in Pilsen would certainly be called an SS research and think tank. In fact, some work on second-generation secret weapons was already surprisingly advanced, including the use of nuclear propulsion for aircraft and guided missiles." (49)

It is now also known that Kammler was the driving force behind the German atomic bomb and the American rocket. (26, 36)

As I said, Hans Kammler also disappeared from history without a trace. There are four different versions of his death circulating. This is almost enough evidence that something is being covered up. It is extremely remarkable that Kammler's name did not appear in the Nuremberg war crimes trials, despite his significant involvement in the mass use of concentration camp prisoners as laborers and his role in the production and use of V-weapons. Nick Cook, mentioned several times above, carried out research on Kammler in American archives.

Nothing came of it. This personality, so important for his time, is not recorded in the American files. When Cook was asked about this strange fact, an archivist replied that the entries had been deleted. (18) Could the Americans perhaps have got hold of Kammler and exploited his knowledge for their own benefit? This is contradicted by the fact that the Americans sometimes needed many years to copy weapons developed by the Germans at the end of the war - for example, the intercontinental missile, which was qualitatively different to the American nuclear weapons, the Walther submarines and, last but not least, the flying discs. No, Kammler did not defect, nor was he captured. It is highly likely that he had successfully escaped, like Karl Hanke.

The commander of the northern evacuation route through Norway, SS-Obergruppenführer Sporrenberg, was captured by the British on 11 May 1945 and was handed over to Poland shortly afterwards. There he was put on trial, as a result of which the

The execution of the sentence was, according to Witkowski, only a pretense, as the Russians had expressed considerable interest in Sporrenberg's statements. Why this was the case remains to be seen. After that, his trail goes cold.

The commander of the southern route and superior of Rudolf Schuster, SS-Obersturmbannführer Neumann, was able to flee abroad.
In 1954 he was seen in Rhodesia, in 1964 in Switzerland. (18)
Sturmbannführer Rudolf Schuster died (?) in 1947. (27)
It is revealing that of the four high-ranking people mentioned here who were directly involved in the evacuation of high-tech, probably three, namely Hanke, Kammler and Neumann, were able to successfully join the retreat movement. Only Sporrenberg fell by the wayside.

What path did the high technology take that was brought to safety from Allied control, and which countries were at the end of this path?

According to Igor Witkowski's research, high technology appears to have been transported mainly to Spain via the southern route, mainly by air, although he also claims to have received evidence that South America was the final destination for some of the transports. This means that there should be evidence of corresponding activities in Spain after the war. As will be shown later, this was indeed the case.

The northern route had Norway as its destination, although this country can only have been a temporary destination given the approaching fronts.
In at least one special case, an air bridge is said to have been set up from Norway to South America. This involved the evacuation of what was probably the most revolutionary development of German scientists, which we will return to below.

In all other cases, submarines were probably responsible for the onward transport. Wilhelm Landig had claimed nothing different, and it has already been shown that their destination was Argentina.
It was not until 2001 that the public became aware of the existence of a secret project of the American Air Force from the period immediately after the end of the war through Nick Cook's book. The results of this project were recorded in the so-called *Lusty* files. These

include, among other things, a list of German high-tech sites and report on what the Americans found there. In a parallel project to the well-known Operation *Paperclip,* the German scientists involved in the research and development were recruited on the spot.

Why in this context the contents of the Lusty files must be referred to?

Because they provide definitive proof that German submarines transported high technology across the Atlantic to safety in the last days of the war on a scale previously thought impossible! This also makes clear for the first time the true extent of the evacuation operation described by Landig.

What exactly can be read about this in the Lusty files?

In the first days of May 1945, the Americans raided the German Air Force's command staff near Berchtesgaden. A technician who was captured declared that he had recently been offered a position in Japan, an ally of Germany. He was then subjected to a special interrogation, as a result of which the engineer stated that

In mid-April, ten submarines, heavily laden with the latest achievements in German military technology, set sail from Kiel for Japan. This information was immediately passed on by the Americans with the utmost urgency to all relevant military commands worldwide. One of the largest search operations the world's oceans had ever seen began, involving warships from all Allied nations. As a result, six of these ten submarines were intercepted by the end of June, some closer, others further away from their bases. (27) This means that the submarines involved in the withdrawal movement did not travel in a convoy - as has been claimed on various occasions - but individually.

The technician's statements that the destination of all the boats was Japan and that they all left Kiel are questionable. This is contradicted by the exact wording of the text, which speaks of various submarine bases.

In the following, an attempt will be made to reconstruct the history of the ten submarines and also the fate of the four

The following numbering of the boats from 1 to 10 was chosen arbitrarily by the author.

Boat 1: U 234 left the Norwegian port of Kristiansand (as expected, not Kiel) on April 16, 1945 (identical to the statement “mid-April”) with destination Japan.

In addition to the crew, there were also three Japanese, seven German specialists for various military technology, a military judge, the new German military attaché for Tokyo and two experts from the Messerschmidt company on board. Submarine captain Johann Fehler initially ignored Grand Admiral Dönitz's order to unconditionally hand over the submarines to the Allies. Only after he had learned that

After Japan had annulled all agreements with the German Reich after May 8, it entered the port of Portsmouth on the east coast of the United States on May 19. The Americans discovered on the boat not only 56 kg of uranium oxide (other sources say 560 kg), but also plans and models of various highly developed weapons systems and, above all, over 24 tons of mercury. (27) All of this was intended to enable the ally Japan to continue the war successfully.

The boat's extensive, extremely diverse cargo does not suggest that nine more such boats were intended for Japan alone.

Boat 2: On 4 June 1945, the British Admiralty announced that the 47-man crew of a German submarine had placed themselves at the disposal of the Portuguese authorities after scuttling their badly damaged submarine off Leixoes. (11)

Boat 3: U 530 surrendered to the Argentine authorities on July 10, 1945 and was later transferred to the USA (see above). Incidentally, the port of departure for this boat was also Kristiansand, Norway.

Boat 4: U 977 was handed over to the Argentinians on August 17th and later also handed over to the Americans. U 977 also came from Kristiansand.

Insertion: A critical objection could be raised at this point that the Lusty files stated that six of the ten submarines could be captured by the end of June. However, in the case of U 530 and U 977, this was not the case until July or August. It can be assumed that the statement "end of June" was mistakenly entered into the files, because these two boats would then undoubtedly have been included in the success report of this detection operation with the later date.

Boats 5 and 6: Two unknown boats that were tracked down by the Americans somewhere on the world's oceans and forced to surrender without this fact being made public to date.

Boats 7 and 8: These are the two submarines that sailors Dettelmann and Schulz observed off the coast of Argentina (see above).

Boats 9 and 10: Two unknown boats that successfully evaded American pursuit and are believed to have also headed for the Argentine coast.

Conclusion: Six submarines (3, 4, 7, 8, 9, 10) were able to unload their cargo on the coasts of Argentina. One boat sank itself (2). The cargo of one boat (1) was certainly seized by the Americans, and that of two boats (5, 6) was most likely seized by the Americans.

What happened to boats 7 to 10, which the Americans did not could get hold of?

Two of these submarines apparently sank themselves after unloading their cargo on the Argentine coast. In the bay of San Matias (Figure 10), pilots discovered the silhouettes of two submarines lying on the seabed (Figure 11). However, nothing is known about Argentine submarines sunk at this location. (50)

And the two remaining boats?

The long, bay-filled Argentine coast offers more than one place that would have been suitable for a hiding place. In this case, scuttling the submarines immediately after completing their mission seems to be part of

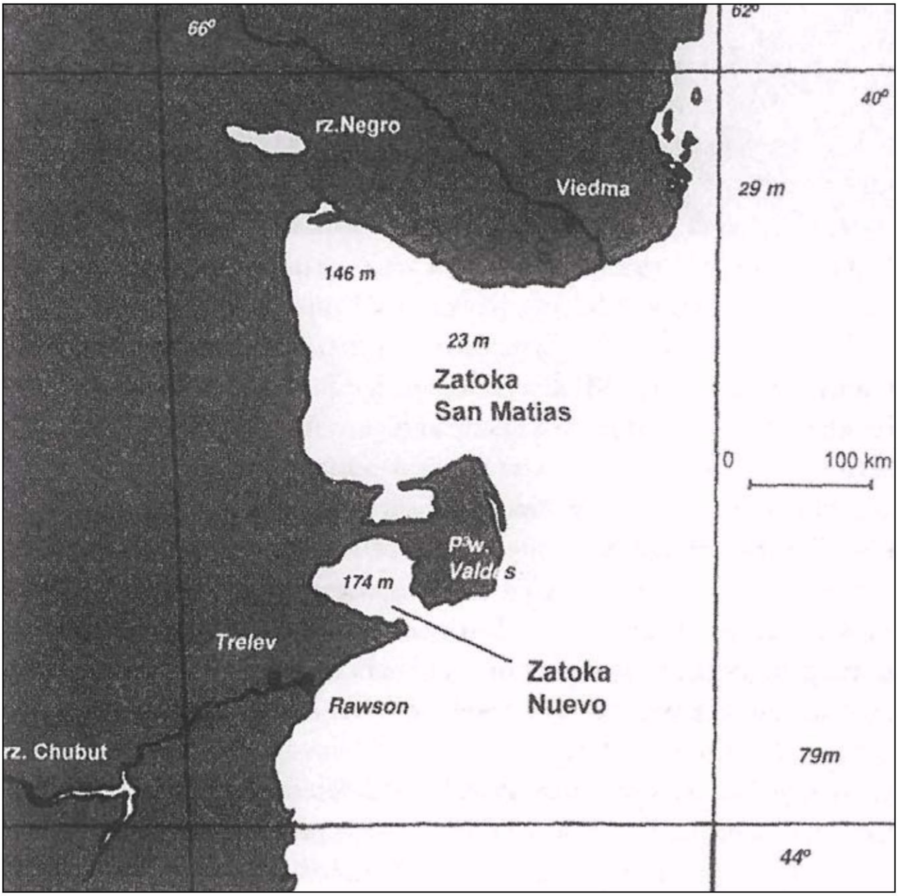
66°
62°
40°
rz.Negro
Viedma
29 m
146 m
23 m
Zatoka
San Matias
0
100 km
P-w.
Valdes
174 m
Trelev
Zatoka
Nuevo
Rawson
rz. Chubut
79m
44°

Abb. 10

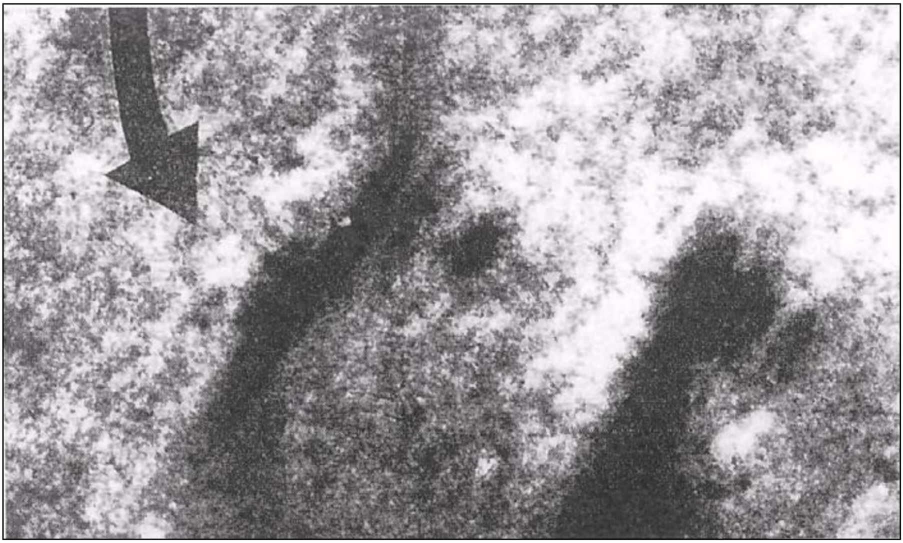

Abb. 11

the withdrawal movement does not appear to have taken place for any other reason.

On 25 September 1946, the French newspaper *France Soir* in large format the following sensational report:

»Almost a year and a half after the end of hostilities in Europe, the Icelandic whaler was stopped by a German submarine. It was the Icelandic steamer named *Juliana,* which was sailing between the Malvinas Islands and the Antarctic zone when it was suddenly stopped by a large German submarine flying the German mourning flag - red with a black border. The commander of the submarine approached the whaler in a rubber dinghy, climbed onto the ship and demanded from Captain Hekla - in a tone that allowed no argument - some of his fresh provisions. The captain of the whaler was forced to obey the German naval officer, who spoke correct English and paid for the goods in dollars, also handing over a bonus of ten dollars per man for the crew. While the fresh provisions were being loaded onto the submarine, the German commander gave the captain of the whaler's information about whale banks, which the Icelander later visited and was able to harpoon two specimens." In explanation, the French newspaper expressed its conviction "that the rumors about German Navy submarines in the waters of Tierra del Fuego and in the Antarctic zone are based on truth." (11)

But as we all know, large parts of the coast of Tierra del Fuego belong to Argentina!

As has been shown, the final destinations for the evacuated German high-tech equipment were Spain and Argentina.

Why in these two countries in particular? The answer is easy for Spain, as Hitler helped General Franco to power in the first place. Spain remained neutral during the war, and so there was no reason for the Allies to intervene militarily in the country.

The situation with Argentina is not quite so simple.

At the centre of the good contacts between the German Reich and Argentina during the war was the person of Juan Domingo Peron.

Born in 1895, he aspired to a military career at an early age. Peron was accepted into the Buenos Aires cadet school in 1912, after which he served as an army officer. In 1939, with the rank of colonel, he began a study trip to Europe. From Rome, where he also served as adjutant to the Argentine military attache until 1941, he visited several European countries, including Germany. (51) During his stay in Rome, he learned about the political and social conditions in fascist Italy, which he later, when he himself became President of Argentina, seemed in many respects worthy of emulation. During this time, he must also have made contact with high-ranking representatives of the SS, on the basis of which later cooperation during the war and afterwards was built. It was not until after 1945 that it became public knowledge that Peron's name was on a list of agents of the SS Security Service (SD). (27)

After his return to Argentina, he founded the GOU *(Group of United Officers)* with like-minded officers . On June 4, 1943, the military staged a coup and Peron, a leading member of the GOU, became Minister of Labor and Welfare. Pedro Ramirez became President of the Republic.

It is interesting that this General Ramirez, together with other officers, had long maintained good contacts with the German ambassador in Argentina, von Thermann, and that on 2 May 1943, a

Month before the coup, the German ambassador to Spain and president of the Latin American Institute in Berlin, General Faupel, landed in Argentina on a secret mission in a submarine. (28) After the war, the former SD chief Walter Schellenberg testified that in May 1943 an agreement had been reached between Germany and the group of Argentine officers that regulated the conditions for mutual cooperation. This also included permission to transport secret material through the Argentine diplomatic channels! (51) This should have made the importance of Faupel's mission clear.

After another military revolt, President Ramirez resigned in 1944.

Juan Peron became Vice President. This meant that Argentina had finally become the Third Reich's bridgehead on the South American continent. In May 1943, Peron had already written in a secret GOU manifesto: "Hitler's fight in war and peace is also ours." The Allied secret services were suspicious of what was brewing in Argentina, especially since they had learned that Argentina wanted to take the lead in a South American alliance directed against the USA. All of the resources of the

used diplomatic pressure to persuade Argentina to change its political course. Argentina apparently gave in to this pressure and in January 1944 it was the last American nation to break off diplomatic relations with Germany, but remained neutral in the war. A year later, neutrality could no longer be maintained and a formal declaration of war was made on Germany. In 1969, Peron commented on the decision at the time with the words: "I remember meeting with some German friends and explaining this to them." And continued: "Look, we have no other choice, but of course it is all just a formality." In 1970, Peron stated: "We let the Germans know that we had only declared war on them to save thousands of lives. We exchanged messages with them via Switzerland and Spain.

...,

Franco understood our intentions and helped us to achieve them.' Elsewhere he was even clearer: 'Germany benefited from our declaration of war. As a belligerent power we were able to enter Germany after the end of the war, which meant that our aircraft and ships were able to do the Germans a great service. ... In this way

In this way, a large number of people were able to come to Argentina. ...
And it was a group of idiots who interpreted this as weakness.
These poor souls understood nothing of what was going on.« (51)

In the last days of the war in 1945, German submarines headed for the Argentine coast to unload their secret cargo. Two of these boats were handed over to the Americans after they had completed their mission. In doing so, Argentina seemed to be accommodating the United States by underlining its willingness to cooperate. But only apparently. The reality was different: the Peronists remained loyal allies of the militarily inferior Germany.

However, a few months after the end of the war, in October 1945, the political situation in Argentina seemed to change dramatically and unexpectedly, thus destroying all German post-war plans. In the course of political unrest, Peron was forced to resign on 9 October 1945.

On October 12, he was arrested by naval officers. But just three days later, his future wife, Eva Duarte, initiated the popular uprising against the army. Two days later, on October 17, Juan Peron was released under pressure from the masses and gave a speech. In the new presidential elections that were scheduled immediately afterwards, Peron emerged victorious on February 24, 1946, and took office on June 4.

Shortly after Peron's election, the starting gun was fired for one of the largest immigration movements of the last century, controlled by a sovereign state. Peron's emissaries in Europe distributed Argentine visas by the thousands to refugees from Germany and the countries formerly allied with Germany, and at the height of the campaign in 1948, up to 500 on some days. The author Uki Goni has provided the details in his book *The real ODESSA*

described. (51)

The first transports left Spain in August/September 1946. Between 150 and 200 Germans boarded a ship in Cadiz bound for Argentina. This circumstance is remarkable in that Spain - as already mentioned above - was the first country to be headed for by the evacuation transports, along with Argentina. Like Norway before it, Spain thus seemed to be only a stopover for many "willing to leave" on the way overseas. After Peron's

The electoral success had clearly shown that the Third Power's refuge could be established there under safe conditions and, above all, with the support of the government. In General Franco's Spain they were merely tolerated and thus always at risk on the edge of Europe.

Peron's escape helpers focused their attention on technical and military specialists. They used these to strengthen the ranks of those in their country who had left the German submarines on the coast of Argentina in the spring and summer of 1945. Among those who arrived later were such prominent names as the aircraft builder Prof. Tank and the Horten brothers, who also worked in the same field. They were joined by the last commander of the secret squadron KG-200, Werner Baumbach, the well-known pilot Otto Behrends, the former inspector of fighter pilots Adolf Galland and, last but not least, the most decorated German soldier, the Stuka pilot Hans-Ulrich Rudel. In a factory near the Argentinian city of Cordoba, these people further developed German aircraft projects from the last days of the war and thereby laid the foundation for the strength of the Argentinian Air Force in the 1950s.

In addition to the research center in Cordoba, another research facility, the so-called *Centro Atomico,* was built in the Argentine Andes, near San Carlos de Bariloche . The circumstances surrounding the construction and operation of this facility were quite mysterious.

Construction work began in 1948 on the island of Huemul, located in Lake Nahuel Huapi, in the greatest secrecy. A large part of the facility was built underground, and so much cement was needed that this material became scarce throughout Argentina in 1948 and 1949. (34) Only German scientists, not Argentinian ones, worked at the *Centro Atomico !* (52) Officially, the aim of the research was to bring about a thermonuclear chain reaction in compressed gas, i.e. plasma, at high temperatures. In the long term, this was supposedly the way to controlled nuclear fusion.

The research project on Huemul was led by Ronald Richter, an Austrian-born physicist who had worked for Skoda and the Reichspost during the war. (34) From the beginning, experts doubted the prospects of success of the project planned by Peron and Richter on at a press conference on March 24, 1951. The increasing political pressure from the USA, which was certainly aware of the true background of the *Centro Atomico ,* seemed to have prompted Peron to launch a propaganda offensive. It almost seems as if this public step was simply intended to calm the situation in order to gain valuable time to complete the actual research project of Operation Huemul.

Apparently, as will be shown later, this was achieved in the same year. It was therefore more of a marginal episode that Peron officially dropped Richter in 1952 and the Argentine nuclear research authority NEA took possession of the facility on Huemul, which had previously been reserved exclusively for the Germans. During a visit to Argentina, Igor Witkowski was able to interview a long-time employee of the *Centro Atomico ,* who did not deny that there could be other explanations for the research on Huemul and also confirmed that some of the documents from that time are still kept under lock and key. (27)

Has the underground facilities on the island of Huemul finally been found as the Third Power's refuge under the Andes that Landig had reported about? There seems to be a certain agreement, without a doubt, in the facts "located in the Andes," "underground," and "used by German scientists and technicians."

However, the small size of the research complex remains unsatisfactory and does not correspond to the extensive cave systems described by Landig. A final solution to this problem must therefore be postponed.

It should be clear, however, that the assumption expressed above that Landig might have used "Antarctica" as a synonym for "Argentina" has been confirmed by the facts presented. This also solves the mystery of the personnel strength of the "Antarctic base". The 2,000 men that Landig spoke of are not to be found on the "White Continent", but in Argentina. As early as 1947, there were press reports saying that the large South American country was now on the way to becoming a nuclear power and that there were up to 2,000 German and Austrian physicists there. (34) It was certainly not 2,000 physicists who made their way to Argentina after 1945, but 2,000

Scientific and technical specialists from all disciplines can certainly be involved.

Back to Juan Domingo Peron. After his election as President of Argentina on February 24, 1946, he ruled in an authoritarian manner and, among other things, suspended freedom of the press. His second wife Evita supported his populist social, economic and welfare policies with propaganda. Peron strengthened Argentina's leading position on the South American continent and asserted itself against the USA's claim to prestige. However, his regime was weakened by the gradual deterioration of the economic situation.

Tensions arose with the feudal-conservative forces and with the Catholic Church. In 1951, Peron again won the presidential election. On June 16, 1955, a revolt by naval officers failed. However, the second attempt, the uprising from September 16 to 21, 1955, succeeded in overthrowing Peron. He went into exile in Paraguay, Venezuela, and in 1958, after a brief stay in the Dominican Republic, he went to Spain. After returning to Argentina on June 20, 1973, he made a brilliant political comeback. In September, he was re-elected president. Juan Peron died on July 1, 1974.

For more than ten years, from the spring of 1945 to the autumn of 1955, Peron’s Argentina had been a safe haven for the Third Power.
After Peron's fall, not much changed at first. The group of fanatical generals who followed right-wing Catholicism who had come to power at that time also sympathised with the Germans. Nevertheless, it was time to look for other alternatives. Landig announced that the "Antarctic" (Argentinian) base had to be abandoned in 1961. The crew was flown out to South America, which in the context of the identity of "Antarctica" with "Argentina" means that a transfer from Argentina to another South American country apparently took place in that year. To which - more on this in section 5.

Chapter.

Why is it that the role that Argentina played in cooperation with the Third Power in the years after the Second World War cannot be proven beyond doubt on the basis of the documents today, given the democratic conditions in that country?

The aforementioned author Uki Goni has in his research discovered that most of the relevant documents from that period had already been destroyed in 1955, during the last days of Peron's government. And as late as 1996, orders were given to burn the last remaining evidence, the so-called "immigration dossiers," which contained the entry papers of those fleeing Europe.

(51) For this reason, the events of that time can only be reconstructed with great difficulty today. The author of this book has attempted to make his contribution to this in the previous section.

One question remains open, and its solution - this much can be promised - will provide an insight into the most fascinating

Chapters of German technology research:

Why did Landig describe the Viennese engineer Schauberger as

Engineer Schriever as the most important flying disc designer?

According to what is known so far, Schauberger was not involved in the construction of Miethe's V-7 flying disc or Habermohl's flying disc design, and he also had nothing to do with Schriever's development. Lusar also did not write anything about him in his book about German secret weapons.

Now Landig claims to have been ordered to Vienna in 1944 and to have been entrusted with special tasks related to the development of flying discs until the end of the war (see 1.

Chapter). For this reason, it is reasonable to have a more detailed knowledge of Schauberger's involvement in such a project. Did flying discs exist whose level of development was more advanced than that of the V-7?

Hadn't Miethe said: "If these and two other secret requirements are met, then my apparatus can without a doubt also be operated with an atomic propulsion system." Was Schauberger's collaboration perhaps related to this?

The fact that corresponding basic research was carried out in Germany during the war is proven by a war order from the Army High Command to the Research Institute of the German Reichspost on 15 October 1942. It states: »...

Investigation of the possibility of using atomic decay and chain reaction for R-propulsion" (Figure 12). "R-propulsion" stands for rocket propulsion. Since the Reichspost had close ties to the SS, it is not surprising that in connection with the research priorities of the Kammler staff at Skoda in Pilsen it was stated: "Special priority was given to the development and construction of an atomic-powered

Machine Translated by Google

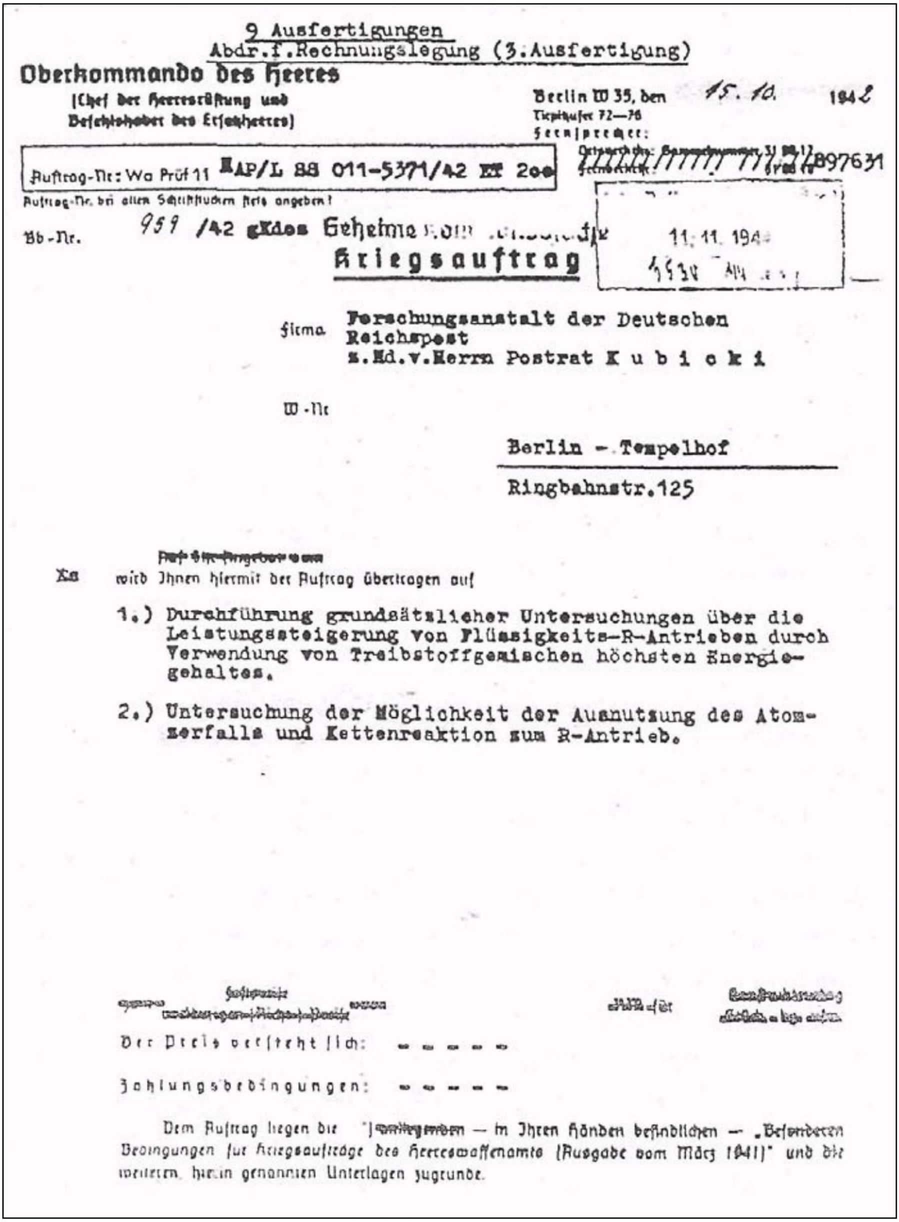

9 Ausfertigungen
Abdr.f.Rechnungslegung (3.Ausfertigung)

Oberkommando des Heeres
(Chef der Heeresrüstung und
Befehlshaber des Ersatzheeres)

Berlin W 35, den 15. 10. 1942
Tirpitzufer 72—76
Fernsprecher:
Ortsverkehr: Sammelnummer 31 00 12
Fernverkehr: [illegible] 897631

Auftrag-Nr: Wa Prüf 11 AP/L 88 011-5371/42 [illegible] 200

Auftrag-Nr. bei allen Schriftstücken stets angeben!

Bb-Nr. 959 /42 gKdos Geheime Kommandosache

11. 11. 194

Kriegsauftrag

Firma Forschungsanstalt der Deutschen
Reichspost
z.Hd.v.Herrn Postrat Kubicki

W-Nr

Berlin - Tempelhof

Ringbahnstr.125

Es wird Ihnen hiermit der Auftrag übertragen auf

1.) Durchführung grundsätzlicher Untersuchungen über die Leistungssteigerung von Flüssigkeits-R-Antrieben durch Verwendung von Treibstoffgemischen höchsten Energiegehaltes.

2.) Untersuchung der Möglichkeit der Ausnutzung des Atomzerfalls und Kettenreaktion zum R-Antrieb.

Der Preis versteht sich: - - - - -

Zahlungsbedingungen: - - - - -

Dem Auftrag liegen die — in Ihren Händen befindlichen — „Besonderen Bedingungen für Kriegsaufträge des Heereswaffenamts (Ausgabe vom März 1941)" und die weiteren hierin genannten Unterlagen zugrunde.

Abb. 12

Aircraft, work on the use of atomic energy as rocket and aircraft propulsion..." (49) In the two and a half years between the awarding of the contract and the end of the war, astonishing progress must have been made. For example, a captured SS scientist told British interrogators after the war that a small atomic engine for aircraft already existed in the "Mecklenburg Science Camp". (53) It cannot therefore be ruled out that atomic engines were also designed for use in flying saucers.

If that was the case, Schauberger's research went in a different direction. Information about this can be found in his documents, which are still in the family's possession, and in his correspondence.

Viktor Schauberger was an engineer with unusually sharp powers of observation and intuition, who knew how to use the forces visible in nature in new technical devices. His inventions were based on the motto: Understand and copy nature. (18) He was primarily interested in the dependence of water density and load-bearing capacity on temperature and form of movement, as well as unusual vortex movements that even allowed water to flow uphill. This was knowledge that, in his opinion, ancient builders had already used in the construction of Roman viaducts and water systems in the royal palaces of Crete. He was convinced that so-called "floating forces" were hidden in water, and developed machines that were supposed to release these through strong rotation, in order to then be lifted up by such a force field. (54)

The focus of his research was always the vortex, which he believed represented a fundamental structural pattern of creative processes in nature, from the shape of spiral galaxies in the vastness of the cosmos to the shape of a tornado and DNA as the carrier of genetic information. In order to better study the forces released by such turbulence, Schauberger constructed an "impeller" over a body of water. In contrast to the propeller, it directed the flowing forces inwards rather than outwards and pushed the water through a tube. This created a flow pattern that he called "centripetal". Schauberger found that the energy output achieved in this way was nine times greater than the energy released by the vortex.

higher than that of a conventional turbine. This "implosion machine" also generated strong vacuum effects.
He later replaced water with air in the experimental setup and devised a device that was suitable for use as an energy generator or engine for aircraft or submarines.

In 1940 he submitted a patent for this machine. Shortly afterwards he wrote to his cousin that he had invented an airplane that made no noise at all. In correspondence with the Viennese company Kertl in February 1941 he described the purpose of this prototype. On the one hand it was to be used to research the production of "free energy" and on the other hand to confirm his theories about the possibility of floating in the air with this energy. The vortex achieved with this machine led to a massive reduction in the volume of air inside the device and at the same time generated a vacuum of enormous pressure that sucked more and more air into the turbine. A small starter motor was necessary to get the process going. When the turbine was then running at 15,000 to 20,000 revolutions per minute, the starting aid switched off and the process maintained itself. Schauberger attributed the ability of the machine to take off into the air and fly to a lesser extent to the vacuum that was formed. He thought that it was mainly due to another process, a reaction between the air molecules, which had been compressed with enormous force by the implosion, and the machine itself. (18) Since he was not sure about the type of energy involved, he simply called it "free energy." Its effect is similar to what is today described by the word "antigravity."

In May 1941, Schauberger was ordered to continue his research in secret. From his notes, it is difficult to reconstruct exactly what Schauberger did and what he was really working on. A few weeks later, he wrote a letter to his son Walter saying that he was in Gablonz in the Sudetenland and that what he was doing was secret. The following month, he announced that he was continuing his research there in collaboration with a company. In the autumn of 1941, he worked in a weapons factory in Neudek, near Karlovy Vary, and in December he was back in Gablonz, where he waited for a starter motor to arrive. The months that followed are not sufficiently clear as to Schauberger's exact activities. In April 1944, he appeared before a draft board of the Waffen-SS.

In May he received orders to march to the Mauthausen concentration camp, where he recruited a team of specialists held there to continue his research work. In June he was officially assigned to an SS Panzergrenadier Division in Breslau. Nick Cook suspected that this was a cover-up measure, as Schauberger was already 59 years old at the time.

What is certain is that he continued researching until the end of the war and from then on worked on behalf of the SS. Schauberger constantly commuted back and forth between the SS engineering school in Vienna, where the technical designs were created, and the Mauthausen concentration camp, where production took place.

As can be seen from his diary entries, work on the "implosion machine" now called *Repulsine* made good progress, but was repeatedly interrupted by air raid sirens and other research projects that he could not avoid. On February 28, 1945, he moved his workplace to the village of Leonstein so that he could work undisturbed. On April 5, his diary reports that the final assembly of the *Repulsine* had begun. A month later, the work was done. However, the first test flight of the machine, planned for May 6, 1945, did not take place. The end of the war had come. (18)

A few days after the end of the war, Schauberger was arrested by the Americans and placed under house arrest until March 1946. What information Schauberger revealed during the interrogations is still unknown. In the spring of 1958 - Schauberger was now a 72-year-old man in poor health - he received an offer from the USA to continue his research with the support of millions of dollars. These not inconsiderable financial resources were supposedly to be made available to him by private investors. Schauberger then went to the USA. A few months later, in September 1958, Schauberger returned to Austria, frustrated and terminally ill, where he died five days later. Shortly before his departure, he had signed a document in which he transferred all designs, models and prototypes created in the USA to the consortium that was financing him. (18)

Landig was therefore right in the case of Schauberger. He actually constructed a flying machine, but unlike the models of Schriever, Habemohl and Miethe, it had an unconventional drive and apparently never got beyond the status of a prototype.

What is the real source of that “free energy” that Schauberger's *Repulsine* produced?

The answer: the so-called zero-point energy field. The existence of such a field has been proven in science since 1997. In that year, the effect named after the physicist Hendrik Casimir and theoretically developed by him in 1948 was successfully put into practice.

Casimir had claimed that even in a vacuum, which is generally regarded as "empty," the zero-point fluctuations of a quantum field can never be stopped, and that the vacuum is therefore never "empty." Even if the walls of a spatial region were at a temperature of 0 degrees Kelvin, a fluctuation field with finite energy would be maintained in the enclosed spatial region. It is assumed that this vacuum radiation field, which is also referred to as quantum noise, is equally present everywhere in space. Some theoretical physicists attribute to it a field energy with horrendously high energy densities. (55) In order to make the magnitude of this energy density clear even to the inexperienced layman, the following analogy is often used: There is so much zero-point energy in a coffee cup that it could blow up the earth.

Back to the Casimir effect. According to Casimir, proof of the existence of such a vacuum radiation field could be provided if it were possible to place two aluminum plates in a vacuum so close to each other that the gap between them was smaller than the wavelength of the particles pulsating in the quantum noise. This would mean that there would actually be "nothing" between the plates. It was not until 1997 that it became technically possible to reduce the distance between the plates to the required level.

It was demonstrated that the two plates suspended in a vacuum attract each other with a force that is inversely proportional to the fourth power of the distance between the plates, which is due to the external force of the vacuum radiation field. (55)

The Russian physicist and Nobel Prize winner Andrei Sakharov published a scientific paper in 1967 in which he claimed that the physical quantities of gravity and inertia were connected to the vacuum fluctuations of the zero-point energy field. This

Other scientists, including the renowned Hai Puthoff from the USA, now share this opinion.

The consequence of this theoretical approach of modern physics is revolutionary and fantastic in two respects. If it were possible to change the zero-point energy field using technical means, this would mean that gravitating and inertial masses could also be influenced. A targeted disturbance of the zero-point energy field surrounding an object could then result in a partial elimination of gravity and thus the object taking off. This process would be accompanied by a reduction in acceleration resistance. The way would be clear to achieve flight speeds that were previously impossible.

On the other hand, however, by tapping into this field, it would be possible to access the high energy densities described, which would be tantamount to solving all energy problems!

How would such an intervention in the almost inexhaustible energy resource be possible? Physicists believe that it would be possible through a so-called torsion field, which can best be compared to a rotating whirlpool. (18) Schauberger's *Repulsine* produced exactly such a torsion field when the vortex of air molecules directed inwards by the "impeller" with the enormous force of 15,000 to 20,000 revolutions per minute led to a collision of their electrons and protons! If the intervention in the zero-point energy field was successful, the device then functioned like a pump which, immersed in the sea of fluctuating vacuum particles, drew energy from this almost infinite source.

Schauberger had discovered a new operating principle and tried to implement it technically. The theoretical background, however, remained unknown to him at the time. Correctly set up, the *Repulsine* could manipulate local gravity - the machine took off.

Or rather, it was supposed to take off on May 6, 1945. But, as already mentioned, that never happened. But that is not the end of the story of Schauberger and his epochal discovery. While the Americans arrested Schauberger a few days after the end of the war, the Russians searched his apartment in Vienna - and found something. A short time later, the documents they found landed on the desk of a Russian scientist named Podkletnov. He showed

Machine Translated by Google

He later passed it on to his son Evgeny Podklednov. (18) And as luck would have it - if one wants to believe in such "coincidences" - this Evgeny Podkletnov is today one of the leading authorities among physicists who are theoretically and experimentally dealing with the possibilities of shielding gravity.

In 1996, Podkletnov, in collaboration with Finnish scientists, succeeded in shielding the Earth's gravity with the apparatus he had developed to such an extent that the object positioned above it lost a few percent of its weight (Figure 13). Four years later, when he was working for the Japanese Toshiba consortium, he claimed to have achieved total shielding of gravity. (27) In the apparatus he and his team constructed, a ring made of superconducting ceramic rotated at high speed in a strong magnetic field. While Podkletnov had achieved the initially small weight loss with 5000 revolutions of the superconductor per minute, he says that 25,000 to 50,000 revolutions per minute are necessary to completely eliminate the Earth's gravity. (18)

As a reminder, Schauberger had at least succeeded in observing similar effects at 15,000 to 20,000 revolutions per minute.
How does Podkletnov explain the recorded effect of a constant weight loss with increasing rotation speed? According to him, this fact could be due to an excitation of the physical vacuum inside and outside the superconductor by the acting torsion field. (18) A torsion field had also canceled out the natural gravity in Schauberger's *Repulsine !* In contrast to the *Repulsine,* however, in Podkletnov's experimental setup this field was created by electromagnetic influences.

It can be described as a sensation that at the end of the war, German scientists were also working on this "modern" form of generating a torsion field and the resulting possibility of cancelling the Earth's gravity. Igor Witkowski has provided evidence of this with his research results. (27) As a result of these developments, which were described as "decisive for the war", unmanned aircraft were created by the end of 1944 at the latest, which, in contrast to Schauberger's *Repulsine* prototype , had proven their practical suitability in test flights and also in initial missions.

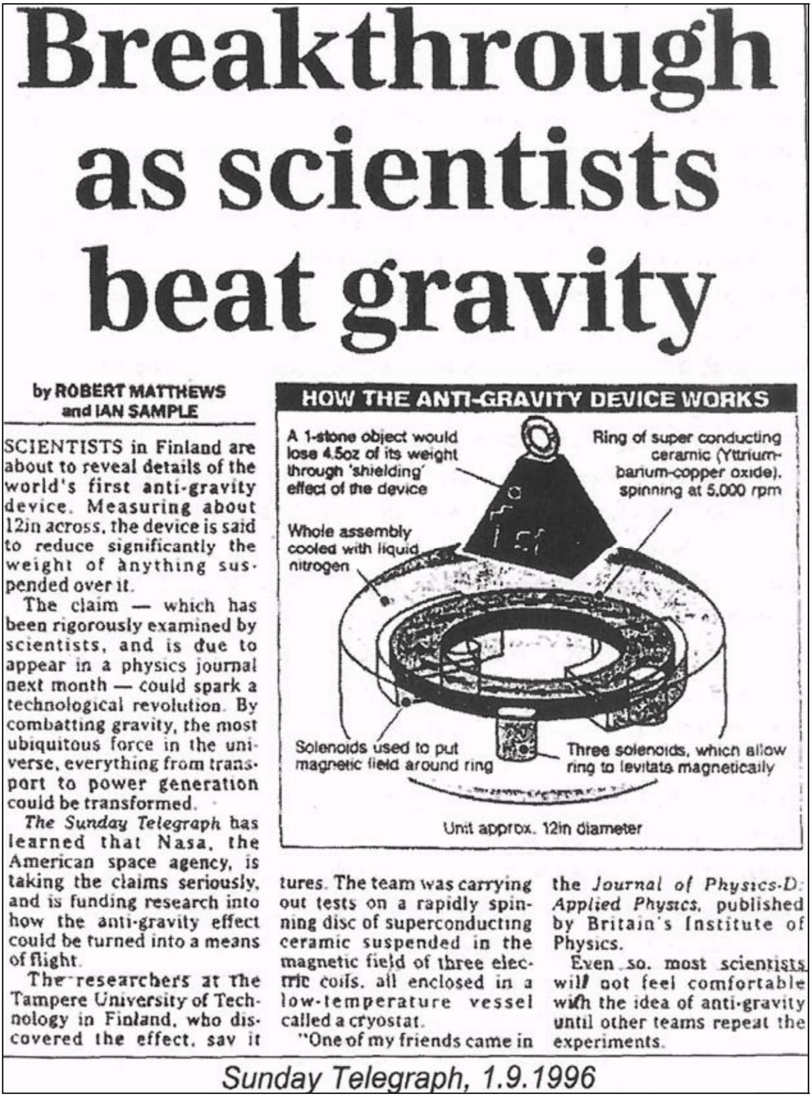

Breakthrough as scientists beat gravity

by ROBERT MATTHEWS
and IAN SAMPLE

SCIENTISTS in Finland are about to reveal details of the world's first anti-gravity device. Measuring about 12in across, the device is said to reduce significantly the weight of anything suspended over it.

The claim — which has been rigorously examined by scientists, and is due to appear in a physics journal next month — could spark a technological revolution. By combatting gravity, the most ubiquitous force in the universe, everything from transport to power generation could be transformed.

The Sunday Telegraph has learned that Nasa, the American space agency, is taking the claims seriously, and is funding research into how the anti-gravity effect could be turned into a means of flight.

The researchers at the Tampere University of Technology in Finland, who discovered the effect, sav it

tures. The team was carrying out tests on a rapidly spinning disc of superconducting ceramic suspended in the magnetic field of three electric coils, all enclosed in a low-temperature vessel called a cryostat.

"One of my friends came in

the *Journal of Physics-D: Applied Physics*, published by Britain's Institute of Physics.

Even so, most scientists will not feel comfortable with the idea of anti-gravity until other teams repeat the experiments.

HOW THE ANTI-GRAVITY DEVICE WORKS

A 1-stone object would lose 4.5oz of its weight through 'shielding' effect of the device

Ring of super conducting ceramic (Yttrium-barium-copper oxide), spinning at 5,000 rpm

Whole assembly cooled with liquid nitrogen

Solenoids used to put magnetic field around ring

Three solenoids, which allow ring to levitate magnetically

Unit approx. 12in diameter

Sunday Telegraph, 1.9.1996

Abb. 13

What sources did Igor Witkowski use in his research?

The first information about the research project called *Die Glocke*

The above-mentioned Rudolf Schuster revealed the project. In the interrogations conducted by the Polish secret service and the Soviet NKVD, Schuster had reported on his role as the person responsible for transport issues in the SS special commando ELF. He stated that this commando had evacuated the project in question along with the scientific documentation in the last days of the war. Since 18.

The experiments took place in a disused coal mine near Waidenburg in Silesia in December 1944.

On April 28, 1945, 62 of the people involved in the experiments were shot by the SS on the way west, including German scientists. This fact indicates on the one hand the high level of secrecy of this research work, and on the other hand it suggests that the execution of some of the knowledge holders could certainly be afforded. This in turn allows the conclusion that the research had progressed very far, and perhaps even been completed. Schuster also reported to the secret service officers who were questioning him that at the end of April a Ju 390 from the well-known secret squadron KG 200 had flown all the material to Norway. The Junkers had been decorated with the national insignia of neutral Sweden. The Ju 390 was a six-engine long-distance aircraft with a range of 8,500 kilometers, which could also be refueled in the air. Apparently only one example of this type existed at the end of the war, which further underlines the value of the evacuated cargo.

The Poles and Russians also had Rudolf Schuster to thank for the tip-off to SS-Obergruppenführer Jakob Sporrenberg, the commander of the northern evacuation route. As I have already explained, Sporrenberg had been handed over to the Poles by the British. He was therefore able to be questioned about the facts cited by Schuster. As a result of these interrogations, the Poles obtained further information relating to the *Die Glocke* project . This was apparently so explosive that after the fake execution of Sporrenberg's death sentence, he was handed over to the Russians.

The descriptions of the technical equipment of the *Die Glocke*

The results of the project described above give the following picture:

The device was about 2.5 meters high and had a diameter of 1.5 meters. A bell-shaped bell connected to a thick electric cable

Machine Translated by Google

A ceramic casing encased two massive, cylindrical drums, each approximately one meter in diameter. During the experiments, the drums, which were made of a silvery metal, rotated in opposite directions at extremely high speeds around a common vertical axis made of hard metal (probably titanium) with a diameter of between approximately twelve and 20 centimeters. Before each experiment, the hollow axis was fitted with a ceramic container that was 1.0 to 1.5 meters long and filled with an unusual, metallic substance. One of the code names for this ingredient was "IRR Xerum-525." A key component in its composition was mercury. Pure mercury was also found inside the two rotating cylinders. Before each experiment, the mercury was cooled down to low temperatures.

The following effects were observed during operation of the system:

- A characteristic noise, best compared to the humming in a beehive;
- A bluish light, also described as the "blue glow" of the *bell,* a finding that will be of paramount importance later;
- A strong magnetic field;
- The operating staff experienced a brief headache and a metallic taste was noticed in the mouth.
- In the long term, those involved in the experiments complained of sleep and balance disorders, memory lapses, muscle cramps and various types of ulcers; the organic substances deposited in the experimental rooms for testing purposes resulted, among other things, in the complete destruction of tissue structures, in the case of green plants the chlorophyll degraded within five hours, followed by a transformation of the plant material into a greasy substance with the consistency of rancid fat.

In the first test phase between May and June 1944, five of the seven scientists involved died as a result of the biological side effects. Due to a "better setting" of the test facility, the undesirable side effects were gradually eliminated.

Machine Translated by Google

was significantly reduced. On January 10, 1945, only twelve to fifteen percent of the biological samples were destroyed. On March 25, it was finally possible to reduce this rate to two to three percent.

When asked after the war about the basic functioning of the *bell ,* Schuster and Sporrenberg were unable to provide the clear information that had been hoped for, as neither of them had been involved in the project as scientists. In connection with the operation of the system, however, two formulations could be inferred from their statements that today contribute to an understanding of the physical background of the most important research project for the Third Reich: "vortex compression", one could also say torsion field, and "separation of magnetic fields".

Podkletnov had achieved the latter in his experiments by using superconductors. However, superconductors were not yet available in 1944/1945. Therefore, in order to achieve a shielding of gravity in a way equivalent to Podkletnov's, the German scientists had to take a different route.

A "magnetically closed system" can also be achieved if, under certain conditions, a plasma (ionized gas) generated by an electric current creates a plasma vortex. The formation of these so-called plasmoids is accompanied by the generation of magnetic fields and characteristic luminous phenomena through the emission of ionizing radiation. For this reason, the plasmoids are also called "fireballs." Both effects were reported in connection with the *bell .* Igor Witkowski has proven that the generation of such a plasma vortex was technically possible in the apparatus described as *a bell .*

The mercury used was of crucial importance due to its material properties. Mercury is a liquid substance with high density and low viscosity. The lower this is, the more undisturbed the angular momentum of the elementary particles in the atom, known as spin, remains. When the drums filled with mercury in the *bell* were accelerated to several tens of thousands of revolutions per minute, this liquid material formed a thin layer on the walls of the drums under the influence of centrifugal force.

After reaching the maximum rotation speed, the mercury ions could be further accelerated by an applied high-voltage current accelerated. Calculations showed that the rotation speed of the ions in the drums could have increased to over 100,000 revolutions per second (!) in this way. The plasma vortex generated thus rotated many orders of magnitude faster than Podkletnov's superconducting ceramic ring, which was limited by the mechanics of solid bodies (it reached 25,000 to 50,000 revolutions per minute). In fact, Podkletnov's method, which seems so revolutionary today, represents a step backwards compared to the experiments carried out by German scientists more than 60 years ago.

The effects achieved by the Germans in shielding against gravity must have been much more astonishing. This also explains the changes in organic substances that occurred as a result of the experiments. The Russian scientist Genadiy Shipov and the German physicist Burkhard Heim had already demonstrated in their work that artificially generated gravitational waves must result in structural changes in the materials exposed to them. (27)

Nick Cook asked his physics mentor, Dr. Dan Marckus (a pseudonym), who specializes in antigravity and general field theory, for his interpretation of the facts offered to him by Witkowski. Marckus confirmed that the Germans could actually have developed a flying machine that could use antigravity as a propulsion force. In addition, this device may have succeeded in manipulating the fourth dimension, time, albeit only to a very small extent.

By intervening in the zero-point energy field, not only was gravity able to be eliminated, but within the torsion field created, the passage of time was also different in relation to the "outside world." Marckus formulated this as follows: "If you create a torsion field of sufficient size, the four dimensions of space are bent. The more torsion is created, the greater the disturbance of space. If you bend space, you also bend time." (18) The almost incomprehensible consequence of this is: German scientists developed a time machine!

The project *Die Glocke* was apparently launched in January 1942. In August 1943 it was split into two sub-projects,

Machine Translated by Google

called *Lantern Bearer and Chronos.* (27) With the designation *Chronos* Cook's mentor's suspicions are indirectly confirmed.

"Lantern bearer" is someone who raises the light high, a beautiful and at the same time profound expression for an anti-gravity drive. At the end of 1944, these lights, known as fireballs or "foo-fighters", were to cause confusion among the Allied aircraft crews for the first time.

Their reports on the phenomenon of "fireballs" also received considerable coverage in the media of that time (Figure 14).

What caused the most astonishment was the flight characteristics observed in these objects. A typical description of the experience was given in the *New York Times* on December 14, 1944: "Yesterday, during a night mission near Hamburg, a mysterious, glowing ball appeared near an Allied bomber squadron, which, despite many attacks by the accompanying fighter planes,

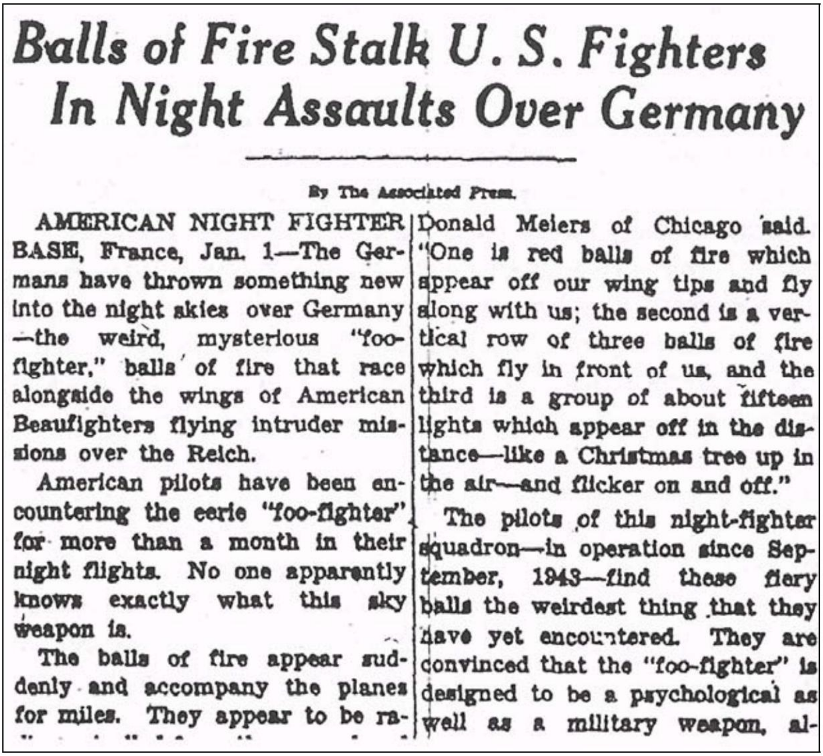

Balls of Fire Stalk U. S. Fighters In Night Assaults Over Germany

By The Associated Press.

AMERICAN NIGHT FIGHTER BASE, France, Jan. 1—The Germans have thrown something new into the night skies over Germany—the weird, mysterious "foo-fighter," balls of fire that race alongside the wings of American Beaufighters flying intruder missions over the Reich.

American pilots have been encountering the eerie "foo-fighter" for more than a month in their night flights. No one apparently knows exactly what this sky weapon is.

The balls of fire appear suddenly and accompany the planes for miles. They appear to be ra-

Donald Meiers of Chicago said. "One is red balls of fire which appear off our wing tips and fly along with us; the second is a vertical row of three balls of fire which fly in front of us, and the third is a group of about fifteen lights which appear off in the distance—like a Christmas tree up in the air—and flicker on and off."

The pilots of this night-fighter squadron—in operation since September, 1943—find these fiery balls the weirdest thing that they have yet encountered. They are convinced that the "foo-fighter" is designed to be a psychological as well as a military weapon, al-

Abb. 14

proved to be indestructible. This mysterious new weapon of Hitler's was very effective in disrupting all radio traffic. None of our experts has yet succeeded in explaining the operating principle of these 'glowing balls', which demonstrated a maneuverability at incredible speeds that seemed to contradict the laws of aerodynamics." (27)

From mid-November 1944 through the winter and well into 1945, the aircraft crews of the Western Allies reported seeing these small orange, red or white glowing "fireballs". A photo taken by American pilots still shows today what an eerie effect these strange flying objects must have had (Figure 15).

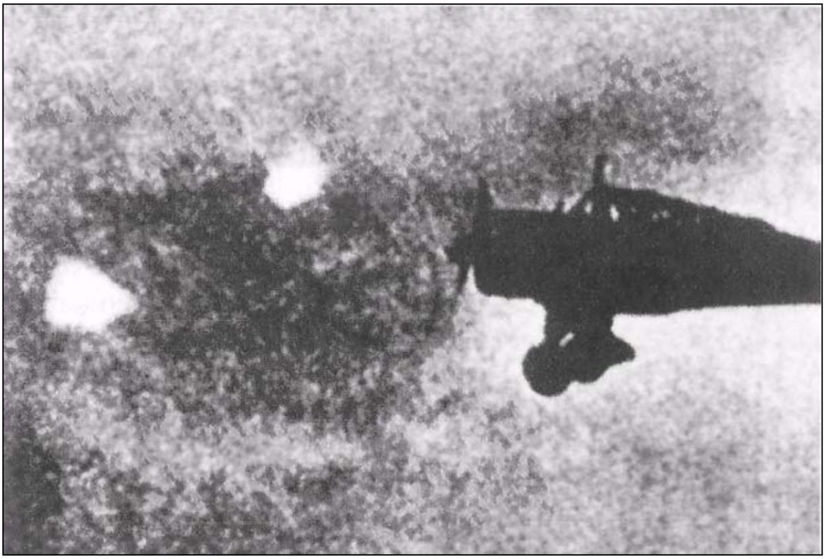

Abb. 15

In the majority of cases, these were sightings at night, but sightings during the day also occurred. (18) Anyone who thinks that only a few isolated cases were reported is completely mistaken. A US Air Force intelligence report from April 1945 shows that up to that point 302 sightings of these "fireballs" had been reported by 140 aircraft crews. Interestingly, some of these sightings were also from the Pacific theater of war. (27) This in turn suggests that conclude that the Germans had obviously also made this revolutionary new technology available to their ally Japan.

As a reminder: On its way to Japan, U 234 (Boat 1) carried, among other things, 24 tons of mercury, exactly the material that was used in the *Die Glocke* project to generate plasma.

In addition to the observed luminous effects and the interference with radio traffic caused by strong electromagnetic fields, it is above all the observed flight characteristics, which "seemed to contradict the laws of aerodynamics", that allow only one conclusion:

By the end of 1944, nothing stood in the way of the practical implementation of the *Lantern Carrier* project . The first anti-gravity aircraft took off. As flying "plasmoids," they also went down in history as the first "UFOs." However, there were no reports of them being used by weapons, so it can be assumed that they were still flying unarmed at this early stage of testing. Were the "fireballs" manned or unmanned? Since the harmful secondary effects on organisms in the " *The Bell* " project could only be reduced to two to three percent at the end of March 1945, the "fireballs" must have performed their spectacular flight maneuvers unmanned until the end of the war.

There was still a long way to go before manned anti-gravity aircraft could be realized. A satisfactory solution to the problems that arose was apparently only found in the early 1950s.

Further indirect evidence that the Germans had developed a seemingly utopian new weapon at the end of 1944 can be found in a message from Magda Goebbels, the wife of Joseph Goebbels, to his sister Maria, née Kimmich. At Christmas 1944, exactly at the time when the "fireballs" were being reported in the Allied media, Magda told her sister-in-law under the seal of secrecy that Joseph had seen certain new wonder weapons that were downright fantastic. (56) Did she perhaps mean the German atomic weapon, the first successful test of which had taken place on October 12, 1944, on the Baltic island of Rügen? (36) That is unlikely, as Joseph Goebbels knew of the possibilities of military use of the

Nuclear fission had been a problem since the spring of 1942, as an entry in his diary from March 21, 1942 proves: "I am being given a lecture on the latest results of German science. Research in the field of atomic fragmentation has progressed so far that its results can possibly still be used to wage this war. Even the smallest effort would result in such immense destructive effects that one can look forward with some horror to the course of the war, if it lasts any longer, and to a subsequent war. Modern technology gives man unimaginable means of destruction." (57)

What really lies behind the wonder weapon, the use of which was supposed to bring about a turning point in Germany's favor at this late stage of the war? Or to put it another way: what parameters would an ultimate weapon of victory have to fulfill?

It would have had to be a weapon of mass destruction, a weapon that - if available in sufficient numbers - could have destroyed the enemy at any point. The prerequisite would therefore have been a secure means of transport that could also carry this weapon over great distances. Both enemy capitals and large concentrations of troops would have been possible targets.

In addition, protecting one’s own troops and the civilian population from retaliatory attacks would be of crucial importance
to.

Some researchers favor the German nuclear weapon in this regard. As a bomb, it could have been used on the front lines and in the hinterland. With the V-2 and A-9 rockets that had been developed, it would even have been possible to transport it to London or even across the Atlantic to New York. Such projects were undoubtedly in preparation, and their realization only failed because there was not enough time to bring them to a successful conclusion. However, we now know that the German nuclear weapons tested in October 1944 and March 1945 functioned according to a principle that would have only permitted their use as nuclear battlefield weapons. Their explosive power could not be compared with the American atomic bombs, which could raze entire cities to the ground. In addition, they were said to have only been available in small numbers. (36) Therefore, their possible use at the last minute would hardly have prompted the Allies to

Could have made them give in. Not to mention a German victory.

In the author's view, however, Igor Witkowski, who has already been mentioned several times, is on the right track in the search for the weapon that will decide the war. It is thanks to his research that the question of the safe means of transporting the ultimate weapon can be considered resolved. The "fireballs", which could not be detected by enemy air defenses due to their revolutionary flight characteristics, could have been used as carriers. The electronic guidance systems required to be able to guide this weapon to a target even over a distance of several thousand kilometers were available. (26)

As the reports on the "fireballs" show, they were also available in sufficient numbers. The other component of this weapon system consisted of a charge of chemical warfare agents.

Since the end of the 1930s, Germany had the highly toxic nerve gases Tabun (lethal concentration 400 milligrams per cubic meter of air), Sarin (100 milligrams per cubic meter) and Soman (60 milligrams per cubic meter). At that time, there was no antidote to the effects of these chemical warfare gases, and the filters of conventional gas masks offered no protection. By comparison, the most toxic chemical warfare gases available to the Allies, such as phosgene or mustard gas, had a toxicity of 3500 and 2600 milligrams per cubic meter respectively. During the war, the Germans not only managed to keep the secret of these chemical warfare agents, they also produced thousands of tons of them and, with the exception of Soman, filled a large proportion of them into bombs and grenades. (27)

Now the words of Hermann Göring, which he uttered after the end of the war, also become understandable: "I refused to use a weapon that would have destroyed the entire civilisation." (53) The assumption that this meant the German atomic weapon is unlikely, not only because of the limited possibilities of its use. Göring later clarified his statement to the American officers who questioned him, by stating that with the nerve gases that had been developed, Germany could have turned defeat into victory. (58) The use of highly toxic war gases would have been more effective than the use of atomic weapons.

brought with it further advantages. The areas abandoned by the German army would have been reoccupied almost without fighting and, above all, undamaged. There would have been no irradiated areas. This should have made it clear which weapon in the German Reich's arsenal was the decisive factor in the war. With the "fireballs", the suitable carrier for this weapon was finally found. Long-range rockets, such as the V-2 or A-9, were not considered as carrier weapons, since they would have had to explode several meters above the ground in order to fully develop the effect of the gases. The ground-level detonators required for this were not yet available at the time. (36)

The fact that Hitler had actually considered waging a gas war at the end of 1944 can be read in the *memoirs* of Armaments Minister Albert Speer.

The fact that this decision was made at the same time as the first documented reports of the appearance of the "fireballs" is probably no coincidence. Speer's memoirs state: "In the late autumn of 1944, Hitler suddenly intervened in the production of gas masks and appointed a special representative who was directly responsible to him. A program was hastily drawn up to protect the entire population from the effects of a gas war. Although Hitler's urgent order from October 1944 onwards succeeded in tripling production to over 2,300,000 gas masks, the protection of the city's population could only be guaranteed after months." (24)

This order expresses Hitler's fear of a possible massive retaliation by the Allies. A statement by Hitler has been handed down that sums up his fears in this regard. The enemy would "assemble fifteen thousand bombers and kill all of Germany with poison gas." (36) The fact that the devastating effects of such an Allied counterattack had to be expected as long as it was not possible to prevent the Allied bomber commands from endangering German cities was probably also one of the reasons for Göring's remark that the massive use of chemical weapons on both sides would have led to the destruction of civilization.

The fact that it was not possible to ensure the protection of German airspace by March/ April 1945 was ultimately the only obstacle to the deployment of the ultimate victory weapon system.

Just a few months later, the newly developed German jet fighters had a terrible harvest among the incoming Allied bomber squadrons. In March 1945, the underground factory near Nordhausen produced 500 Me 262s, and in April, twice as many! At the same time, the underground hydrogenation plants began to provide sufficient amounts of fuel for these ultra-modern machines. (58)

In view of these facts, it is understandable why Hitler was not prepared to give up hope for a short-term turnaround in the war until the very end and why, from his point of view, any means of prolonging the war had to appear legitimate.

In addition to the sources evaluated by Igor Witkowski, is there any other evidence that Germany acquired weapons systems in the final phase of the war that seemed utopian at the time?

During research for their book *The Secret of the German Atomic Bomb,* the authors Edgar Mayer and Thomas Mehner came across a contemporary witness of a special kind. The following sentences precede the reproduction of an interview conducted with this witness in the summer of 1999: "For reasons of privacy protection, we are refraining from naming the person at this point. The person we spoke to is a British citizen.

His name and his function within the secret service of Her Majesty the Queen of England will, as he has been assured, be revealed when he has passed on to a better world. (34)

Below are some excerpts from the interview: »I was at the ... in a position in which I was able to gain knowledge about the technical developments of the Germans. I still remember things from this time that make me doubt the truth of many public statements about the technological leaps - and I speak of leaps quite deliberately - up until the end of the war. I should put it better: much has not yet been said, and some of it is simply nonsense. You will not expect me to spread things that I am sure will remain inaccessible to the public for a long time to come, and that is a good thing. But one can admit that German scientists - and in fact far more of them than are known by name in the so-called historical and political science scene - and also engineers and technicians at worked on something downright unbelievable. But I am not referring here to the well-known V- and air defense weapons, some of which were actually or almost ready for production, or where this would have been possible in the foreseeable future.« The informant then describes, among other things, the activities of three groups involved in the development of the German atomic weapon (Heisenberg, Diebner and probably the group around Ardenne working under the aegis of the Reichspost), before continuing: »Yes, and then there was the fourth team, which we heard rumors about in the last phase of the war. This was so vague and fantastic that one could once again think of it as a feint. But after the war it turned out that it was not one and that the world narrowly avoided a huge catastrophe. When I found out about this, I almost lost my composure afterwards. There was a moment of extreme danger, especially when you consider that it seemed possible to use this technology at distances that exceeded everything that was possible at the time, especially when you consider the range of the V-2. The fourth team worked in an environment where monstrosities were commonplace. And when I say that, I mean that they were experimenting with things that even the well-informed public would find unthinkable and unbelievable, i.e. unreal. Someone suggested to me at the time that it seemed as if these specialists were about to override conventional physical laws." Doesn't that sound familiar? The topic of the development of the German nuclear weapon - as is clear from the context of this interview - was concluded with the reference to the third group. The activities of the mysterious fourth group related to something completely different. The British secret service agent's formulations fit perfectly with the use of anti-gravity, the development of a time machine and tapping the zero-point energy field for unlimited energy production.

It should already have become clear above that the use of the last-mentioned possibility of generating energy, if the technical equipment was not calibrated properly, entailed enormous risks. Just remember the analogy: "There is so much zero-point energy in a coffee cup that it could blow up the earth."

What happened to this technology after the end of World War II?

The British informant only has the following to say about this: "Due to the political decisions, we very quickly lost access to these facilities at the end of the war. I am not sure whether the other side was really able to use the extract of what was still available, ie personnel and material, and actively develop it further. Some of it was too fantastic and required knowledge and skills that required an entry at a level that we did not have at first and that our partners probably did not reach on their own."

In plain language, this means nothing other than that the Germans were able to bring this type of high technology to safety from the Anglo-Americans as well as the Russians! Whether this was done by destruction or evacuation remains to be clarified.

Conclusion: The most secret and at the same time most revolutionary weapons of the German Empire were those that were created with the project *Die Glocke* related basic research.

Igor Witkowski's research had shown that the relevant hardware, along with the technical documentation, had been flown to Norway in the last days of the war from a six-engine wide-body transport aircraft, the only Ju 390 in use. According to official information, this Ju 390 has remained missing since then.

It was Igor Witkowski who was able to find out the fate of this aircraft. A source who had always been reliable up to that point assured him that an acquaintance, the son of a Polish diplomat, had shown him a photo of the Ju 390. The informant's father had been employed in his country's diplomatic service in Uruguay during the war. The photo shows the Ju 390 on a runway cut into the jungle in the border region between Uruguay and Argentina. (27)

This would mean that in the post-war period, the Third Power had unrestricted access to the high technology associated with Project *The Bell* in its South American refuge and could also develop it further in due course.

The aim of these developments had to be to develop a manned version of the

Anti-gravity aircraft. By 1948 at the latest, the Third Power had begun to put this plan into action in *the Centro Atomico* on the island of Huemul, which was said to have been "built just for the Germans". The official research focus on plasma physics, which was set up there in connection with the well-known work of the physicist Ronald Richter, seems to be sufficient evidence for this. The alleged aim of developing fusion technology was merely a pretext for this, or at best a waste product. The direct extraction of energy from the zero-point energy field, on the other hand, opened up completely different possibilities. In 1951, the efforts of German scientists to develop a functioning, manned anti-gravity aircraft were apparently successful. A source, which will be discussed in more detail in Chapter 6, states: "In 1951 we traveled all seas and countries on board a machine that could practically never run out of fuel.

... The ship (airship; the author) worked completely silently, except for a slight humming noise." (17, 59) There is only one energy that is practically "infinite," and that is the universal zero-point energy field.

And hadn't Schauberger already claimed that he had succeeded in developing an aircraft that made no noise at all, and hadn't the characteristic noise in the vicinity of the bell been compared to the humming of a beehive? The chain of evidence seems to be complete.

The next chapter will show how certain post-war developments of the Third Power caused a worldwide sensation as the so-called UFO phenomenon and what implications this has for the future of this planet.

Before doing so, however, we must first examine the question of whether a resistance organisation could not have been established in the territory of occupied Germany immediately after the end of the war, with the aim of revising the developments associated with the outcome of the war.

On May 8, 1945, the German Wehrmacht capitulated. The last Reich government was arrested by the Allies on May 23. The victorious powers divided Germany into occupation zones; large parts of the German East came under Soviet and Polish administration. The drama of expulsion continued. Under these circumstances, apart from isolated so-called Werewolf operations, all organized resistance came to a standstill.

The organization, which is referred to in this book as the Third Power, had retreated to its refuge across the Atlantic as part of the secession movement. There, a new concept for regaining the lost power was developed, which from the outset took into account a very long time horizon for its implementation.

Initially, however, important circles of the SS underground that remained in Germany still seemed to be under the illusion that they could change the real existing balance of power in occupied Germany in just a few years.

possibly to counteract the group operating from overseas. Both movements shared the same goal, and it is to be assumed that there was not only loose contact between them, but that the actions of one group were not carried out without the knowledge and assistance of the other group. Or to put it more bluntly: the SS underground on the territory of occupied Germany was for some time the front organization of the Third Power.

In the first years after the end of the war until the founding of the Federal Republic of Germany in 1949, this SS underground operated under the name *Aktion Deutschland,* apparently divided into two organisational networks, called *South Germany* and *North Germany.* The US secret service CIC *(Counter Intelligence Corps)* observed these structures and attempted to break them down in three major operations called *Nursery, Gopher* and *Selected Board.*

to infiltrate.

The agent Hubert D. Ludwell was successfully infiltrated into the *South German* network . A report written by him states: »... wanted to unite former SS leaders and Wehrmacht officers in an underground movement. Only the most reliable and best-trained people are members of the general SS underground movement ... The general SS, the undisputed elite organization of the Hitler era, leads the movement; the Waffen-SS, which was founded later, is to be viewed with suspicion ... The SS organization will combine with the best material from the SA, the Hitler Youth and the NSDAP and will be unbeatable ... The underground movement is in the process of organizing itself very well and has bases in all important German cities that are disguised as companies (see also the plans for the *Maison Rouge conference;* the author) ... They are observing the misunderstandings between the USSR and the Western Allies with great interest and, should a conflict arise between the two, they will throw their weight and power onto the side of those they consider to be the winning side. In this way it will turn out that one part of the underground movement is playing ball with the USSR and the other with the Western Allies. He could not say clearly enough that this movement is deadly dangerous and is not interested in small local uprisings, but wants and will soon spread to cover the greater part of Europe. One of the leaders of the underground movement was Helmut Friedrichs. He was an SS-Oberführer and head of the political department of the Chancellery of the NSDAP. In this function he was Martin Bormann's direct subordinate!

The credo of the SS underground movement was expressed in the words: "What happened is what happened. We lost the second round, but there is never a second without a third. Sooner or later the last round will begin, but we have time, lots of time."

By the end of 1946, the SS underground in the English and American zones already had over 600 men, mostly SS leaders and Wehrmacht officers. (3)

The SS officer Otto Skorzeny, who escaped from Allied custody in 1948, also appears to have become an important figure in the movement. He had made a name for himself during the war as the leader of commando operations and in particular as a "liberator of Mussolini". After his escape, he lived in Spain and was able to build up a network abroad from there. This is how he maintained contact with Hans-Ulrich Rudel. The latter and his role within the Third Power are discussed in the 5th volume.

Chapter still to be reported.

In 1951, Skorzeny offered what he called his neo-Nazi movement to an employee of the US embassy in Madrid, whom he mistakenly believed to be a CIA man, to fight against the USSR. (3)

In the end, the expected "hot" conflict between the victorious powers did not take place. The escalation of the contradictions between East and West, which the SS underground in Germany had pinned its hopes on, led to a war, and turned into a 40-year period of stagnation, also known as the "Cold War." As a result, two German states were formed. Living conditions normalized, and the majority of Germans in the West accepted the rebirth of parliamentarism as a form of government. For the SS underground,

Machine Translated by Google

The underground had to adapt it, tactically to these changed political conditions.

The attempt by the nationalist right to establish itself in the parliamentary system was made in two different ways.

One path, the founding of a new party with goals similar to those of the NSDAP, the Socialist Reich Party (SRP), in 1949 was, with few exceptions, mainly pursued by lower and middle-ranking former functionaries of the NSDAP. The party even achieved a respectable success in the Lower Saxony state elections in May 1951. It won eleven percent of the vote. Alarmed, the bourgeois parties reacted by initiating ban proceedings. On 23, 1952, the Federal Constitutional Court declared the SRP unconstitutional. The party was then dissolved, its assets confiscated, and the formation of replacement organizations was prohibited. The mandates won through democratic means expired without replacement. (60) October A direct connection to the SS underground seems at least questionable, since with the exception of, for example, the former State Secretary in the Reich Ministry of the Interior, SS Group Leader Stuckart, only a few higher SS ranks were active in this party. (61)

The situation is completely different when it comes to attempts to first infiltrate and then take over an existing bourgeois party. The victim that was chosen for this was the FDP. The starting point of the infiltration was the North Rhine-Westphalia regional association, whose chairman Middelhauve managed to create a solid structure of former National Socialists, mostly from the younger generation and the middle management level. The aim was to use the FDP as a gathering point for a new right-wing nationalist party aimed at mass support. The focus here was the former State Secretary in the Reich Propaganda Ministry, the SS leader Werner Naumann, who had gathered around himself a circle of like-minded former National Socialist student and Hitler Youth leaders as well as several Gauleiters. The connection to Naumann on behalf of the Düsseldorf FDP had been made by the renowned lawyer Ernst Achenbach as early as 1950. Naumann noted the following suggestion offered by Achenbach in his diary: »In order to enable the National Socialists to influence political events under these circumstances, they should join the FDP, infiltrate it and take over its leadership.

He used individual examples to explain how easy it would be to do that. With just 200 members we can inherit the entire state executive committee. He wants to hire me as general secretary or something similar.« Since then, the influence of former National Socialists in the North Rhine-Westphalian regional association has steadily increased. The masterminds of the campaign included the regional manager Wilke, former editor-in-chief of the Hitler Youth newspaper *Wille und Macht,* the member of the Reich Youth Leadership, SS-Obersturmführer Zoglmann, the head of the broadcasting department in the Propaganda Ministry Diewerge, the well-known Nazi radio journalist Hans Fritzsche, the head of organization and personnel at the Gestapo Werner Best, the Reich Student Leader Gustav Scheel, the Gauleiter of Hamburg Karl Kaufmann and the brigade leader in the economic and administrative main office of the SS, Paul Zimmermann.

The decisive decision was to be made at the FDP federal party conference in 1952 with the adoption of the "German Program" drawn up by the group around Middelhauve. However, the right and liberal wings of the FDP were still equally strong, so that the profound contradictions were ultimately covered up by formal compromises. At least the right wing was able to score points with the election of Middelhauve as deputy party chairman.

The Swiss journalist Fritz Rene Allemann summed up the results of the party conference with the following words: "The right wing, numerically a minority, was able to easily overcome the old liberals and push them against the wall thanks to the dynamism and recklessness of its leadership. ... What took place there was nothing other than a 'cold' takeover of power, not by any neo-Nazis, but by the old National Socialist team." The way to a parliamentary renaissance of National Socialism by the former SS underground seemed to have been paved.

And then - at five minutes to midnight, so to speak - something happened that the West German public had not expected at all.
Three and a half years after the founding of the Federal Republic on 15 and 16
On 1 January 1953, the Allied occupying powers made spectacular use of their right to reserve the right to intervene, which is still enshrined in the UN enemy state clauses, and arrested the eight leading members of the so-called "Naumann Circle". (61)

Machine Translated by Google

The attempt to take power through parliamentary means had thus definitively failed. From then on, the initiative fell solely to the Third Power groups active overseas.

CHAPTER 3

THE EVOLUTION OF THE UFO PHENOMENON

The beginning of the so-called UFO phenomenon is generally dated to June 24, 1947. On that day, the *US Air Force* was reported 20 sightings of flying objects that the witnesses could not explain. Therefore, these objects were subsequently called *Unidentified Flying Objects, or* UFOs for short. The only sighting reported in the press on that day was that of private pilot Kenneth Arnold. He described semi-circular discs that "moved like flying saucers." UFOs and "flying saucers" have been part of the conversation ever since.

together.

As shown in the second chapter of this book, the UFO phenomenon is older and dates back to at least the last months of 1944. The "fireballs" sighted by the Allied aircraft crews undoubtedly marked the beginning. The Germans continued scientific experiments with these unmanned anti-gravity aircraft until the last days of the war. In addition, there were test flights of flying discs with conventional engines, such as those designed by Habermohl and Miethe. According to an eyewitness report, on April 24, 1945, a squadron of four such flying discs of the V-7 type took off from Berlin to an unknown destination. For a long time, this was the last information that was released about the German flying discs. It almost seemed as if the end of the Second World War had also brought an end to their short-lived existence. As it turned out, however, the calm that had set in was deceptive.

Exactly one year to the day after the illegal arrest of the last Reich government under Grand Admiral Dönitz, on May 23, 1946, the flying objects of supposedly unknown origin returned. As if their reappearance was part of the plan, they crossed European airspace for the first time again on this memorable anniversary. The first reports were made from Finland and Sweden (Figure 16). The sighting reports subsequently concentrated on

Scandinavia. Over 300 flights were recorded in Norway, Sweden and Finland. It quickly became clear that the flying objects could not be - as initially suspected - V-1 and V-2 rockets tested by the Russians. The observed flight distances of over 1000 kilometers, their flat flight paths and, in some cases, their circular flight movements spoke against this.

Two different types of these unidentified flying objects appeared to be in the air. One was those that matched the descriptions of "fireballs" and the other was described as massive "cylinders." (27)

Below are a few examples of what is known about Scandinavia was observed:

On June 9, 1946, many eyewitnesses saw a rocket-like projectile, which emitted a bright light and left a trail of smoke behind it.

The following day, it was a glowing body surrounded by a brightly glowing cloud. The object, coming from the Baltic Sea, made a turn and flew back again - according to eyewitnesses.

On July 9 and 10, there were mass sightings. On these two days, more than 250 sightings were recorded in Sweden alone. The majority of these were probably repeated sightings of a few objects. On July 10, Swedish newspapers reported that spherical, blue-green, glowing objects with an exhaust flame of the same color had appeared all over Sweden.

On August 11, the *New York Times* published a report by an astronomer and meteorologist who had observed a flying object traveling at enormous speed. The aircraft was at least 30 meters long, looked torpedo-shaped and had a metallic sheen. (17)

Due to the great stir that these reports from Scandinavia had caused throughout the world, and in order to avoid public unrest over the unknown origin of the phenomenon, the Swedish military decided on July 27th not to disclose any more sighting locations to the press. The Norwegians began censoring news two days later. On August 22nd, the British newspaper *Christian Science Monitor* reported that not only the sighting locations,

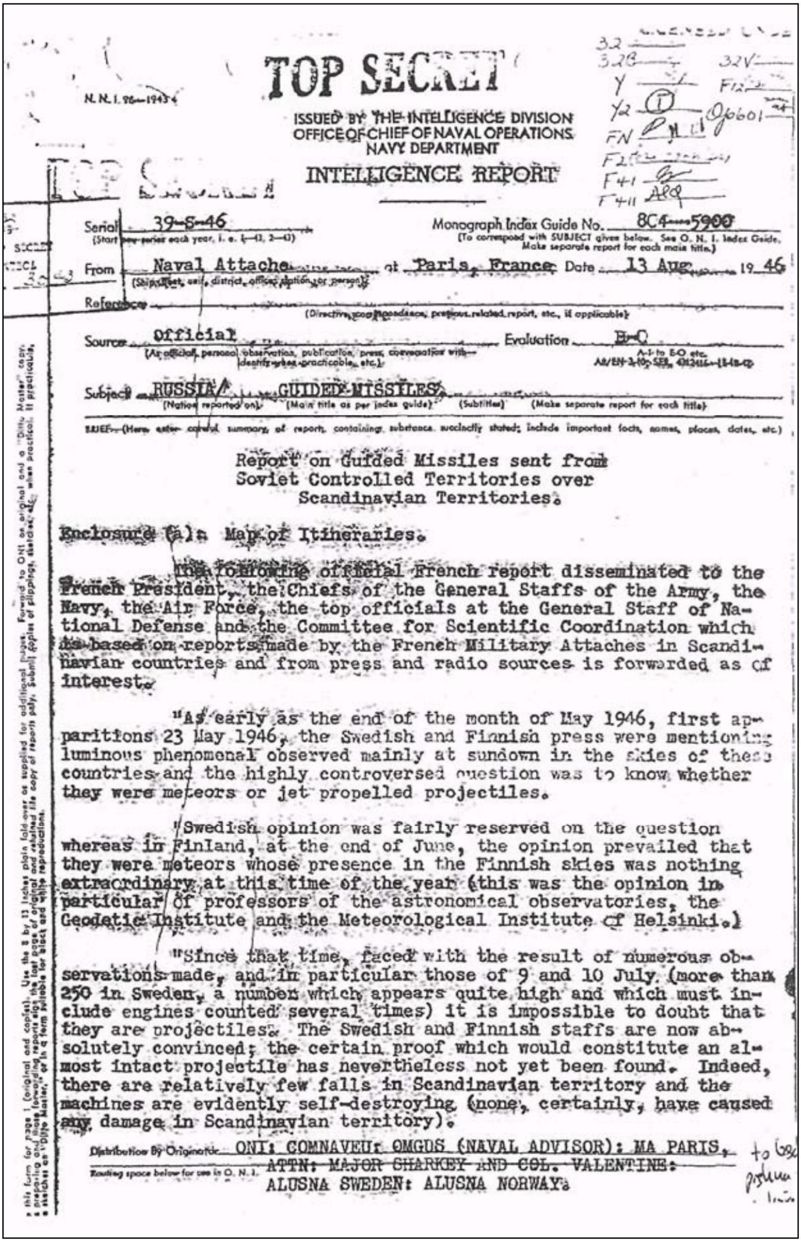

TOP SECRET

N. N. I. 96—1943

ISSUED BY THE INTELLIGENCE DIVISION
OFFICE OF CHIEF OF NAVAL OPERATIONS
NAVY DEPARTMENT

INTELLIGENCE REPORT

32
32B
32V
Y
F12
Y2 ①
06601
FN
F2
F41
F411 AQ

Serial 39-S-46 (Start new series each year, i. e. 1—43, 2—43)

Monograph Index Guide No. 8C4—5900 (To correspond with SUBJECT given below. See O. N. I. Index Guide. Make separate report for each main title.)

From Naval Attache (Ship, fleet, unit, district, office, station, or person) at Paris, France Date 13 Aug. 19 46

Reference (Directive, correspondence, previous related report, etc., if applicable)

Source Official (An official, personal observation, publication, press, conversation with— identify when practicable, etc.) Evaluation B-C (A-1 to E-O etc.)

Subject RUSSIA/ GUIDED MISSILES (Nation reported on) (Main title as per index guide) (Subtitles) (Make separate report for each title)

BRIEF—(Here enter careful summary of report, containing substance succinctly stated; include important facts, names, places, dates, etc.)

Report on Guided Missiles sent from
Soviet Controlled Territories over
Scandinavian Territories.

Enclosure (A): Map of Itineraries.

The following official French report disseminated to the French President, the Chiefs of the General Staffs of the Army, the Navy, the Air Force, the top officials at the General Staff of National Defense and the Committee for Scientific Coordination which is based on reports made by the French Military Attaches in Scandinavian countries and from press and radio sources is forwarded as of interest.

"As early as the end of the month of May 1946, first apparitions 23 May 1946, the Swedish and Finnish press were mentioning luminous phenomenal observed mainly at sundown in the skies of these countries and the highly controversed question was to know whether they were meteors or jet propelled projectiles.

"Swedish opinion was fairly reserved on the question whereas in Finland, at the end of June, the opinion prevailed that they were meteors whose presence in the Finnish skies was nothing extraordinary at this time of the year (this was the opinion in particular of professors of the astronomical observatories, the Geodetic Institute and the Meteorological Institute of Helsinki.)

"Since that time, faced with the result of numerous observations made, and in particular those of 9 and 10 July (more than 250 in Sweden, a number which appears quite high and which must include engines counted several times) it is impossible to doubt that they are projectiles. The Swedish and Finnish staffs are now absolutely convinced; the certain proof which would constitute an almost intact projectile has nevertheless not yet been found. Indeed, there are relatively few falls in Scandinavian territory and the machines are evidently self-destroying (none, certainly, have caused any damage in Scandinavian territory).

Distribution By Originator ONI: COMNAVEU: OMGUS (NAVAL ADVISOR): MA PARIS, ~~ATTN: MAJOR SHARKEY AND COL. VALENTINE:~~ ALUSNA SWEDEN: ALUSNA NORWAY.

Routing space below for use in O. N. I.

to be posted

this form for page 1 (original and copies). Use the 8 by 13 inches plain fold-over as supplied for additional pages. Forward to ONI an original and a "Ditto Master" copy.
preparing and those forwarding reports sign the last page of original and retained file copy of reports only. Submit copies of clippings, sketches, etc. when practical. If practicable,
sketches on "Ditto Master," or in a form suitable for black and white reproductions.

Abb. 16

but also the reports themselves are subject to strict secrecy.

As if the unidentified flying objects were reacting to this, they moved their locations to other parts of Europe. At the beginning of September 1946, the *New York Times* reported sightings of "unidentified rockets" over Greece. Brightly glowing flying objects also appeared over France, Portugal and North Africa in the same month. In the period from September 22 to 24, they were seen over numerous cities in Italy. (17)

After that, the skies over Europe became calm again. Just as suddenly as the new, unknown phenomenon had appeared in the sky, it disappeared again. Until - yes, until it appeared again in the sky, this time over North America, on June 24, 1947, with unprecedented power. Its appearance was now intercontinental. And since that day, the UFO phenomenon has not left the earth.

»On July 4, 1947, silvery, disc-like disks were observed in the sky in broad daylight. In Portland, Oregon, there were five disks that were seen rising and falling, circling and flying back and forth at noon by dozens of citizens and police officers. In Hauser Lake, Idaho, there were at least 200 eyewitnesses who saw a disc that evening that maneuvered in the sky for about 30 minutes and finally disappeared vertically upwards.

In Twin Falls, Idaho, about 60 people saw three groups of more than 35 disks each flying in a V formation. So these were not just isolated sightings. In total, from June to July 30, 1947, 850 UFO sightings were reported in the United States alone. ... The reports of July 4, 1947 came from police officers, vacationers, pilots, farmers, scientists, housewives, bus drivers and others.

At that time, no one was afraid of making themselves look ridiculous by reporting it, but they were still afraid of the phenomenon. No opinions, no concept and no policy had yet been developed on the phenomenon. The newspapers reported more objectively than they would ever do again later, without prejudice against the witnesses and without ridiculing them; they were still genuinely interested in the matter at that time.

The wave of reports continued to increase on July 5 and 6, reaching its peak on July 7, 1947. There were 162 sightings in 37 states. Two-thirds of the sightings were made during the day.

The number of witnesses was around 500. ... At that time, in July 1947, UFO reports also came from Australia, South Africa, Ireland, Norway, Italy, France, Hungary, Belgium and England. In San Juan, Puerto Rico, four glowing disks were seen on July 8. On July 10, newspapers in Rio de Janeiro reported sightings from Brazil. But UFOs also appeared in Guatemala, Chile, Argentina and Uruguay in July. Between July 12 and 14, the greatest concentration of sightings was in the Santiago-Buenos Aires area.

The Air Force investigations were conducted by the *Air Material Command* (AMC) at Wright Field, Dayton, Ohio. By the end of July 1947, the Air Force had collected 156 reports, mostly from pilots, and the AMC was beginning to be overwhelmed with the investigations. The commander of the AMC, General Nathan F. Twining, suggested giving the flying saucer investigation a code name and a secret classification..." (62)

In this letter dated September 23, 1947, addressed to Brigadier General George Schulgen, the head of the *Air Intelligence Requirements Division* at the Pentagon, General Twining also reported the US military's knowledge of UFOs at the time. The report shows that, contrary to all later claims intended to conceal the phenomenon, the US military leadership did indeed believe that UFOs really existed. Below are some excerpts from this extremely remarkable information letter:

1. "At the request of AC/AS-2, the following is this command's assessment of the so-called flying saucers.
   This view is based on information from interrogation records provided by AC/AS-2 and on preliminary studies by Division T-2 and the *Aircraft Laboratory, Engineering Division T-3.* This view is the result of a conference of representatives of the *Air Institute of Technology, Intelligence T-2,* the *Office, Chief Engineering Division* , and the *Aircraft, Power Plant and Propeller Laboratories of Engineering Division T-3.*

2. It is our view that:
   a. the reported phenomenon is real and not invented or imagined. b. there are objects that
   are in the shape of a discus disk

come close and are of such considerable size that they appear as large as a man-made aircraft. c. there is a possibility that some of the occurrences were caused by natural phenomena such as meteors. d. the described flight characteristics, such as extreme rates of climb, maneuverability (particularly when turning), and evasive behavior when sighted or when peaceful contact is attempted by aircraft or radar stations, give reason to believe that some of the objects are manually guided, automatically or remotely controlled. e. the objects are commonly described as having: (1) Metallic or weakly reflective surface.

(2) Absence of a condensate trail, except in a few cases where the object was apparently operating at high power.

(3) Round or elliptical shape, flat bottom and dome-shaped bottom.

(4) Several reports speak of exact formation flights of three to nine objects.

(5) Normally no noise was heard except in three cases where a loud thunderous roar was noted.

(6) Cruise speeds have typically been estimated at over 550 kilometers per hour. f. it is possible, with the knowledge currently available in the United States, to build, assuming extensive and thorough development work, a manned aircraft corresponding to the general description of the object in paragraph (e) above and capable of achieving a range of approximately 11,000 kilometers at speeds below the speed of sound..." (63)

The Twining Report proves three things:

1. At this time, in the summer and autumn of 1947, the UFO phenomenon in the USA was apparently limited to flying discs of a conventional nature; there was no talk of "fireballs".

2. The flight characteristics described were in line with the official knowledge of the time, although the designers of the UFOs were admittedly somewhat ahead of the times. In no case did far superior extraterrestrial intelligences have to be considered as a possible background to the phenomenon.

3. In a striking way, the descriptions of the disc-shaped flying objects and their technical parameters are similar to those of the German flying disc model V-7 designed by Dr. Richard Miethe (see Chapter 2).

It would be interesting to know what the basis was for Twinings' precise knowledge of the possible range of these flying objects.
Did it perhaps consist of secret knowledge of the true origin of the flying discs? It is more than surprising that a discussion of the possible causes of the UFO phenomenon was omitted from the otherwise detailed report, apart from a brief reference to the possibility of a secret domestic development unknown to the responsible authorities and the general assumption that another country might have a form of atomic propulsion. 11,000 kilometers - isn't that roughly the distance from the middle of the South American continent to North America and back? That would mean that the American military had realized early on who had permitted themselves to demonstrate technical superiority in their own airspace in the previous months. However, admitting this publicly would have meant that the outcome of the 1945 war would have appeared in a different light. As will be shown, everything was done in the years and decades that followed to keep the public in the dark about the actual originators of the UFO phenomenon. A policy of secrecy, combined with an unprecedented disinformation campaign, discredited the witnesses of UFO sightings as cranks, attempted to attribute all the inexplicable sightings to natural phenomena, and, where even these "natural" explanations all too obviously failed, steered the discussion towards alleged extraterrestrial authorship.

Among the press releases of the then

At the time, there were reports that left no doubt about the actual origin of the UFOs. For example, an article appeared in the *Denver Post* on November 7, 1947, which was intended to be a reproduction of an agent's report.

According to him, German scientists in General Franco's Spain had developed electromagnetic rockets that were responsible for the wave of flying saucer sightings in the summer of that year. (27) A year and a half later, on May 14, 1949, the *Washington Daily News* reported without the slightest hint of doubt that "the *U.S. Air Force* knows what is behind the flying saucers and where they come from. ... They are new flying machines that have their base in Spain ... and that have been built by scientists and technicians who fled from Germany." (27)

These American press quotes are not surprising. In the second chapter of this book it was shown that, in addition to Argentina, Spain was the main destination for evacuation transports using high-tech equipment from the Reich. The fact that the further development of German flying saucer technology must have taken place primarily in this country in the first post-war months is also indicated by the waves of sightings in Scandinavia and southern Europe from May to September 1946, which were initially limited to Europe. In August and September 1946, however, the exodus of Germans from Spain to Argentina began (see chapter 2), where research could be continued first in Cordoba and later in the *Centro Atomico .* In this respect, crucial development work on the German flying saucers may well have taken place in Spain immediately after the end of the Second World War; however, the flight bases of the "flying saucers" that were sighted in the United States in the summer of 1947 were in all probability in Argentina - as indicated by General Twining's distance information. It was certainly not without reason that between 12 and 14 July 1947 there was an increase in sightings of unidentified flying objects in the area between Santiago and Buenos Aires.

In December 1948, the UFOs of the "fireball" type experienced their renaissance. They were now observed by the US military almost daily. The meteorite specialist Dr. Lincoln La Paz, director of the Meteorite Institute, who was entrusted with the investigation of these green glowing and low-flying "fireballs".

at the University of New Mexico, explained that they were not meteors according to the astronomical definition. This explanation caused unrest and nervousness among the military. The reason for this excitement was the target of the intruders. They flew to the top secret installations of the *Atomic Energy Commission* in Los Alamos, New Mexico, where America's atomic physicists were working on the hydrogen bomb. Security officials observed the intruders there on December 5, 6, 7, 8, 11, 13, 14, 20 and 28, 1948, and on December 6.

On January 1, 1949, green glowing fireballs were seen, all of which flew towards Los Alamos and then dissolved in a red-orange flash. In a letter from the *Strategic Air Command* to the FBI on January 31, 1949, it was pointed out that these objects had not been observed anywhere else between Russia and Los Alamos. Their size was compared to that of a basketball. The flight altitude was between ten and fifteen thousand meters. The speed was estimated at five to 20 kilometers per second. These objects seemed to show no interest in anything other than the United States nuclear weapons facilities. In addition to Los Alamos, they also visited the nuclear facility in Hanford, the super-secret Sandia base near Albuquerque and the nuclear weapons arsenal at Camp Hood. (62)

After further waves of UFO sightings over US territory in the early 1950s, the US military was forced to calm the alarmed public.

In 1952, the *US Air Force* launched the *Blue Book* Investigation Project
The purpose of *Blue Book* was to reassure the public that the phenomenon of flying saucers did not threaten national security and therefore did not require any defensive measures by the Air Force. The order was to keep the percentage of unidentifiable objects as low as possible. It was not until the 1970s that civilian researchers discovered that the best material on UFOs, i.e. the most informative photos, films and reports, were immediately passed on to other intelligence agencies without passing through *Blue Book .* A similar decree (AFR 200-2) from November 1953 ruled that only false UFO reports or false information could be made known to the public. (62) The aim was therefore by no means an objective investigation of the phenomenon, but rather to conceal the true background.

Machine Translated by Google

The first scientific analysis of the Blue Book material, which for the reasons mentioned above is only of limited significance, was carried out in 1956 by the *Battelle Memorial Institute .* The study included 2,200 reports collected between June 1, 1947, and December 31, 1952. Of these, according to the material's editors, 434 cases could ultimately be classified as "unknown." Among these, 71 observations were rated as "excellent." If this percentage of 3.2 percent of all object sightings were extrapolated to the approximately 12,000 sightings that the Air Force had in its files on February 15, 1968, one would get the statistically expected number of 360 "excellent" sightings with "unknown." In 1966, astronomy professor J. Allen Hynek, who was involved in the project, announced that between 10 and 20 percent of the collected reports remained unidentified, especially those that came from the best witnesses, such as pilots.

The investigation carried out by the University of Colorado on behalf of the Air Force at the end of August 1966, due to a continuing increase in the number of UFO sightings, came to similar conclusions. Of the 59 cases examined in detail, 33 remained unidentified. (62)

Despite these statistical "anomalies," the impression was created that further investigation of the UFO phenomenon was not necessary, since the majority of observations could have been reasonably explained. And even the unexplained cases had not posed a threat to national security over the past 20 years.

The fact that reality was quite different was demonstrated, among other things, by the targeted targeting of security-relevant facilities by the "fireballs" at the end of 1948 and the beginning of 1949. Irrespective of the public announcements, which were intended to reassure the population, those responsible in the USA were very serious about the phenomenon of UFOs and occasionally expressed their concern about the developments associated with it. On December 2, 1952, Marshall Chadwell, Assistant Director of Scientific Intelligence, sent a secret memorandum to the Director of the CIA, in which he wrote under point four: "...

At present, the reports of the incidents convince us that something is happening that requires our immediate attention ... The observations of unexplained objects at high altitudes and with high

Flight speeds in the vicinity of important US defense facilities are such that they cannot be attributed to natural phenomena or known missile types. (63)

The importance that the subject of "UFOs" was given in the highest US government circles is demonstrated by an internal memorandum of the Canadian Ministry of Transport, sent on November 21, 1950 by Wilbert B. Smith to the head of communications: "... I made discreet inquiries through the staff of the Canadian Embassy in Washington, and they succeeded in obtaining the following information for me:

a. The issue (of UFOs; the author) is the most classified subject in the United States, ranking even higher than the hydrogen bomb. b. There are flying saucers. c. Their functionality is unknown, but a small group under

Under the leadership of Dr. Vannevar Bush, he is making intensive efforts to clarify the matter.
d. The United States authorities attach the utmost importance to the whole matter. (63)

The fact that nothing has changed in the high level of secrecy surrounding the UFO phenomenon until the end of the 1970s and thus basically until today was finally demonstrated by a request submitted by the organization *Citizens Against UFO Secrecy* (CAUS) in 1979 under the Freedom Of Information Act (FOIA).

»Citing the FOIA, CAUS asked the CIA for information on UFOs. The CIA stated that it had no material. After a court order by Federal Judge Gerhard Gesell, the CIA finally submitted documents, some of which showed that other agencies, including the National Security Agency, also had relevant files. A request to the NSA to inspect these documents was denied.

Despite further legal action, the agency refused to release a single one of the 156 individual documents that were kept under lock and key. CAUS then asked Gesell to request and inspect the documents in person to check whether the NSA was acting lawfully. However, the NSA itself did not accept this offer and instead issued an affidavit

Machine Translated by Google

on the need to continue to keep these documents confidential.
In order to be allowed to read this affidavit, Gesell first had to obtain a clearance certificate that allowed him to view documents of the highest secrecy level. After reading the declaration, the judge also felt that no one - not even himself - should be allowed to view the documents in question! ...

This proves at least one thing: the documents in question contain spectacular information. We do not know what kind of information could make this unprecedented level of secrecy necessary. However, the matter must be different from other government secrets." (64)

The spectacular information, which was to be withheld from the American public forever by a Supreme Court decision, would not only have revealed the true background of the UFO phenomenon when it was published, but would also certainly have exposed the conspiratorial machinations of the US government since 1945, which had left no stone unturned in deceiving its population about crucial historical events in recent history.

What could have been the meaning and purpose of all the measures aimed at downplaying and systematically covering up the issue of unidentified flying objects? Perhaps the existence of an extraterrestrial intelligence? If this scenario were to turn out to be true, the existence of such an intelligence, and even the potential intention of these ETs to intervene in the fate of the world, could hardly trigger the civilizational shock feared by some among the population of the Western world. This possibility is too firmly anchored in the public consciousness by a flood of media products - and has been for decades. However, the public admission by the rulers of the "victorious states" of 1945 that May 8, 1945 did not bring about the irrevocable end of National Socialism, but that on the contrary the successor organization of the Third Reich, the Third Power, now holds all military means of power in its hands to be able to bring about a revision of the results of the Second World War at any time would undoubtedly be just as shocking.

And if that were the case, why hasn’t it done so long ago? This is a legitimate question, but the answer to it can only be found in

The context of the otherwise usual power-political thinking cannot be given. The Third Power is not simply concerned with power. More important in terms of its long-term strategy is apparently the focus on certain demographic policy framework conditions.

But more about that in the second part of this chapter.

Up to now, the UFO phenomenon in its various facets has been considered almost exclusively in relation to its effects in the United States of America. This is also because the USA was the undisputed leading power in the Western world in the decades after the Second World War. However, if this were to give the impression that UFO activities were concentrated to a decisive extent on the North American continent, this would be a falsification of the actual situation.

Psychologist Professor David R. Saunders was originally part of the team from Colorado University that was commissioned by the US Air Force to investigate some notable UFO cases in the 1960s. Unhappy with the working conditions, Saunders left the working group and in 1969 began to create his own computer file of UFO reports. Saunders first collected all the reports of UFO sightings that were available to him from all over the world. Since some cases were entered more than once because they came from different sources, his collection initially comprised 59,237 cases. Cleaning up the data finally produced 18,122 cases that were usable for scientific analysis. By 1980, more than 100,000 individual entries had been registered in the UFOCAT computer file. If the entries cited in several sources but concerning the same cases were collected as individual cases, the total number of cases in 1980 was 62,155 from 280 nations, states and provinces. (62) This should make it clear that the UFO phenomenon is not subject to regional restrictions. It manifests itself worldwide!

And Saunders' analyses had revealed something else. In contrast to the initially observed characteristic flight characteristics of the disk-shaped flying objects, as recorded in the Twining Report (not to be confused with the "fireballs"), the reports from later years proved that a

Machine Translated by Google

technical and technological evolution of the UFO phenomenon had taken place. This development went far beyond the first UFO types, which could most easily be compared with Miethe's V-7.

Below you will find some of the new, sometimes revolutionary
Characteristics of these advanced UFOs are listed:

They maneuver in the atmosphere at any speed without creating a sonic boom; They appear to be immune to gravity and inertia; They are surrounded by a self-luminous halo at night and change the color of the light envelope (mostly when accelerating); Their fields or radiation damage the environment and eyewitnesses (burns, paralysis, nausea, blindness, headaches, etc.); They leave marks and burns on the ground; They stop gasoline engines and interrupt all kinds of electrical circuits; Enormous magnetic fields have been recorded in their surroundings; They emit so-called "solid lights," which are luminous, radiant zones that have a finite length, can bend, and only appear at a certain distance from the objects; They cannot dissolve into nothing; The temperature in their surroundings occasionally drops significantly. (62)

"Doesn't some of the properties described immediately remind one of the effects that were recorded in the context of the *Die Glocke* project or were reported in connection with the first sightings of the "fireballs"?

The chairman of MUFON-CES, Illobrand von Ludwiger, confirms that this appearance is not deceptive in his assessment of the UFO phenomenon. In the organization led by von Ludwiger, scientists and engineers in German-speaking countries work together in an interdisciplinary manner to research UFOs using scientific methods.

Illobrand von Ludwiger comes to the following conclusion: »Therefore, only very general conclusions can be drawn from the overall picture of all phenomena.
However, these should already be sufficient to provide initial qualitative approaches for

to understand the propulsion mechanism. We make two assumptions: A. Gravitational waves are generated by

strong variable magnetic fields.

B. Through an unknown physical process (perhaps by conversion of electromagnetic radiation or by splitting off certain elements), gravitational waves are generated, which in turn induce strong variable magnetic fields. (62)

Even though von Ludwiger apparently had no knowledge of the existence of the zero-point energy field at the time he wrote these lines, or did not consider it to be scientifically relevant, he was undoubtedly on the right track.

The Third Power had actually succeeded in transferring the principle, which until the end of the Second World War had only manifested itself in "fireballs," to structurally solid bodies. In the previous chapter, a source was cited which gives rise to the assumption that the first manned anti-gravity aircraft flew by 1951 at the latest.

At the beginning of the 1980s, other UFO shapes were increasingly observed alongside disc-shaped flying objects and "fireballs." The UFOs that attracted the most attention were those described as giant "triangles." Some observers also called them "boomerangs." The characteristic flight characteristics of these "triangles" indicate that they have anti-gravity engines just like other modern UFO types.

The first major wave of sightings occurred in 1983 and 1984 in the Hudson Valley, New York State. (65) At the end of the 1980s and the beginning of the 1990s, a series of spectacular sightings occurred over Belgium. Several thousand people claimed to have seen the huge "triangles" in the sky. Among these reports were more than 900 in which the objects were less than 300 meters away. At first, American secret aircraft were believed to be responsible, but this suspicion was dropped after the events of the night of March 30-31, 1990:

»After the gendarmerie near Brussels in the night of 30-31.

After receiving several calls from witnesses on March 14 who had seen lights in a triangular formation, the Air Force

Headquarters to send interceptors to identify the objects. The Glons radar station, a NATO facility, and the military and civil air traffic control station at Semerzake near Brussels had already registered unidentified objects that were flying slowly and frequently changing course and altitude. At 0.05 on March 31, 1990, two F-16 fighters took off. They each detected an object with their ground radar at 0.36. They then set a marker on their device to the target and switched the automatic target tracking device of the on-board weapon system to the target (lock-on), which took about six seconds.

The unknown object, which had previously been flying at 280 km/h and was at an altitude of about 3000 meters, suddenly accelerated to 1800 km/h and sank to an altitude of 1700 meters within one second, which corresponds to an acceleration of 43 g. (A pilot is generally only able to withstand 8 g without losing consciousness!; the author)

The unknown object continued its flight at an altitude of less than 200 meters, where it could no longer be detected by radar devices.
The observers on the ground estimated its speed at 40 km/h. It looked like a sphere divided by two large, sharply curved wings (hence the comparison with a boomerang, the author). 18 police officers and the radar operators watched as the object rose higher again. Again it was followed by the F-16 fighters. The pilots switched to lock-on again and again the object dived to less than 200 meters. The game was repeated a third time over the course of 75 minutes. At no time was a sonic boom heard."

Referring to the events of that night, the Chief of Staff of the Belgian Air Force, Colonel de Brouwer, told the press on 22 June 1990: "Our defence system (that of NATO; the author) is powerless against these machines." (62) This first official admission by a leading military officer, who publicly acknowledged his inferiority to the unidentified power, also gave rise to a resolution to create a European centre for UFO observation. This proposal, submitted to the European Parliament at the suggestion of the MEP and Minister of Culture of Wallonia, M. Di Rupo, was, however, rejected by the majority of the Socialist members of the European Parliament. (66)

The fact, which may be surprising to some, that the unidentifiable "triangles" and "boomerangs" that have been sighted appear to be further developments of aircraft types constructed by the brothers Reimar and Walter Horten in the Third Reich and since 1948 in Argentina, can be seen as an additional strong indication of the involvement of the Third Power in the UFO phenomenon.

The Horten brothers were the real pioneers in the development of so-called flying wing aircraft, which were also known as tailless aircraft. They began their development work by constructing tailless motor gliders such as the Ho III (Figure 17). In January 1945, the first prototype of the Ho 229 flew. Powered by two jet turbines, this machine reached a speed of 800 km/h and would have been superior to all enemy aircraft types (Figure 18). At that time, plans were in the drawer for a further development, the prototype of which was to be ready for use in 1946 and reach a speed of 1100 km/h. (10) However, the end of the war intervened, and like so many others, Reimar and Walter Horten emigrated to Argentina in 1948. There they continued their development work and designed, among other things, an aircraft type in the shape of an elongated triangle with a surface area of 48 square meters (Figure 19). It was given the designation I.Ae.37. After several stages of development, a triangular-shaped aircraft was finally created that was capable of reaching supersonic speeds. Strangely, nothing more was later known about the progress of work on this aircraft type. (27)

It was not until many years later, in the 1980s, that the flying wing aircraft developed by the Horten brothers reappeared in the skies, but this time equipped with a propulsion technology that was many years ahead of the developments of the military superpowers USA and the Soviet Union.

Finally, let us take a look at the extent to which the presence of UFOs has since assumed its present form. This is at least partly provided by the USA's NORAD radar early warning system. The *National Track Reporting System* (NUTR) records the tracks of such unidentified flying objects. Between 1971 and 1991, around 7,000 such unidentified targets were registered between the North American continent and the British Isles alone. (66) The number worldwide could therefore be several orders of magnitude higher.

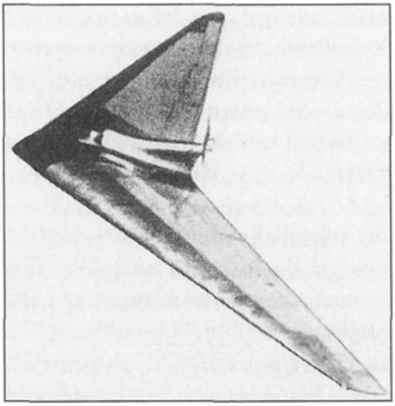

Abb. 17: Die You III

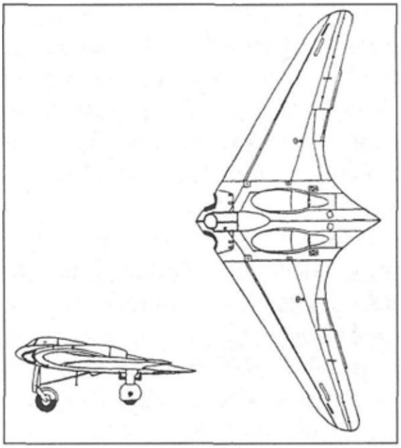

Fig. 18: The Go 229 flying wing

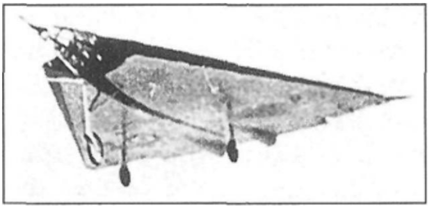

Fig. 19: Härten's Argentine I.Ae.37

It remains for future research to find out whether such phenomena, which are regarded by some as aspects of the UFO phenomenon, such as animal mutilations and the strange patterns (»crop circles«) that have appeared in the fields of many countries, are connected with the activities of the Third Power.

To assume a connection between these phenomena does not seem particularly far-fetched.

For the sake of clarity, two more photos of UFOs will be included in this book.

Both are photographs that have been examined by scientists using modern methods of image analysis. The results of these analyses, which confirm their authenticity, have remained unchallenged by experts to this day.

Figure 20 and Figure 21 (enlarged detail showing edge blurring of air scintillation, typical of objects photographed at great distances): McMinnville, Oregon, May 11, 1950

out of

19:30; Witnesses: Mr and Mrs Trent (two photos); Object shape: disk with tower top; Diameter: around 14 meters; Distance: 500 meters; Photo analyses: Prof. B. Hartmann 1968, WH Spaulding 1978, B. Maccabees 1988.

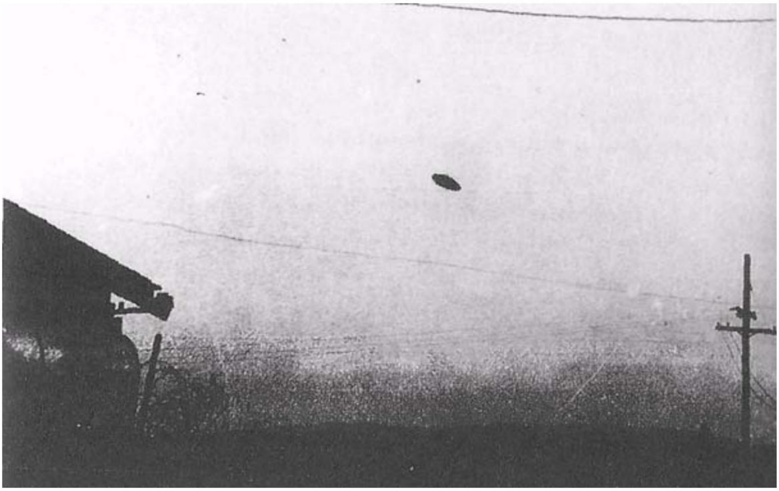

Abb. 20

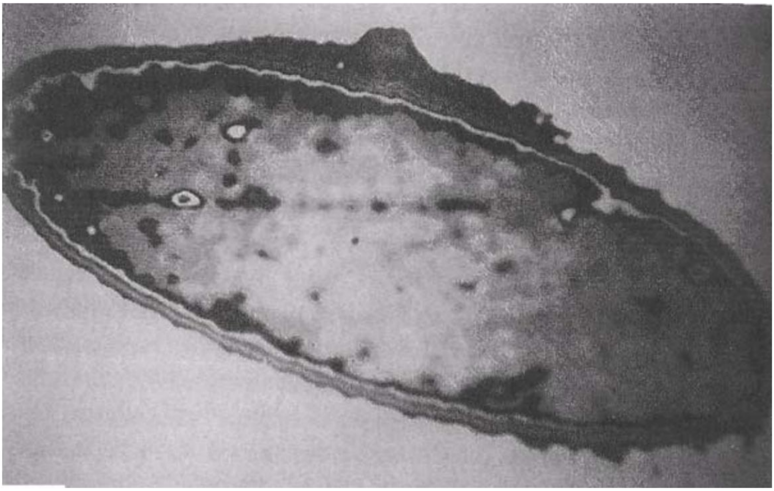

Abb. 21

Figure 22: Vancouver Island, British Columbia, photo taken on October 8, 1981, 11:00 a.m.; object shape: disc with an angular diameter of 1.3 degrees; distance: greater than ten meters; photo analysis: Dr.
R. F. Haines 1987. (62)

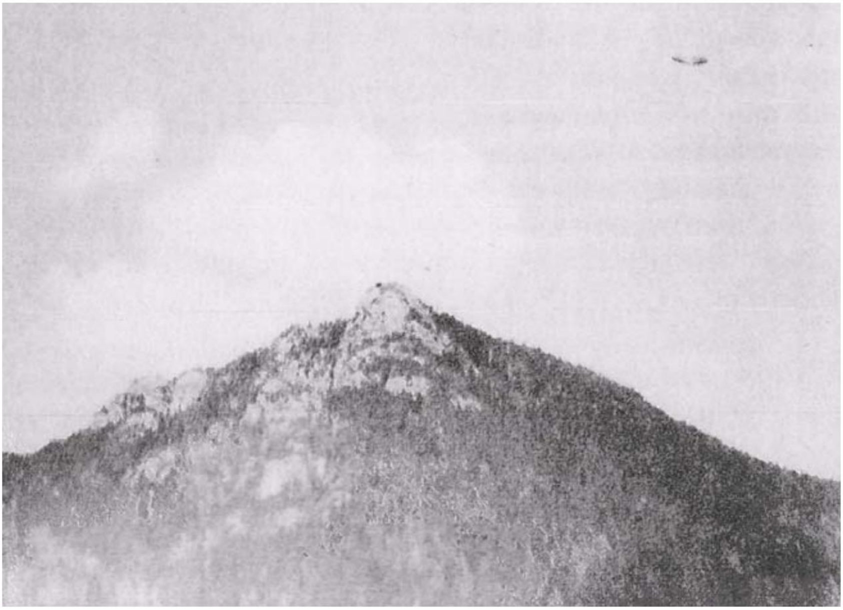

Abb. 22

As has been shown, there has been a technical evolution of the UFO phenomenon since the first appearance of these unidentifiable flying objects in the 1940s.

A remarkable development has also taken place with regard to those reports that give us information about the crews of the UFOs, their appearance and their behavior.

The first reports date back to the 1950s. The witnesses to these observations were called "contactees." The US authorities received unexpected support from these people when it came to deliberately denigrating the UFO phenomenon, as these people told some of the most unbelievable stories about their encounters with the "extraterrestrial" occupants of the craft. When it was later possible to find some of the alleged

By convicting eyewitnesses of deliberate lies, not only were all other "contactees" discredited, but the UFO phenomenon as such had also suffered serious damage in the eyes of the public.

Was this blanket condemnation of the "contactees" justified? Given the large number of sightings of unknown flying objects that were apparently controlled by intelligent beings, it was highly probable that contact with their crews would have occurred at some point. The only question was when and under what circumstances; was it pure coincidence or deliberately brought about by the occupants of the UFOs?

What should have given pause to those who condemned the "contactees" as lunatics was the common basis of most of the reports. This was expressed in a number of consistent details:

- The visitors explained that they came from various planets in our solar system or from distant planetary systems; they wanted to share their knowledge of the universe with us; their intention was to protect
- us from ourselves, but especially to prevent a nuclear war; they took the "contactees"
- with them on trips through the solar system in their flying saucers; in contrast to the encounters in the following decades, there were no negative
- experiences with the "extraterrestrials", the "Venusians" or "Martians", so that they were also referred to as "space brothers", among other things.

The most astonishing similarity in the reports, however, was in the external appearance of the "extraterrestrials." There was nothing extraterrestrial about them, quite the opposite. They resembled humans completely, seemed to be somewhat taller and were described, both men and women, almost without exception as blond beings of Nordic type. (67)

Since in the 1950s science had already come to the conclusion that human-like life could not possibly exist on Venus or Mars, the

UFO crews deliberately placed the people they contacted in

It almost seems as if they themselves had an interest in keeping their true intentions secret for as long as possible.
This strategy coincided with the strategy of those who knew of the existence of the Third Power and had no interest in revealing its secret. A common denominator was found. This identity of interests continues to this day. One must ask oneself, for how long?

In the 1960s, a development was set in motion that accelerated enormously in the 1980s and 1990s. The contacts between the "witnesses" and the crews of the unidentified flying objects took on a completely different quality. From then on, people no longer spoke of "contactees" but of "abductees." This term comes from the English word "abductions."

The first documented case, which was to be followed by countless others in the decades to come, occurred in the USA in 1961. The mixed-race couple Betty and Barney Hill were involved.

"The Hills said that while they were traveling from Montreal to Portsmouth, New Hampshire, small beings with large heads and eyes abducted them from their car and into a landed UFO. The beings separated them and took them to different rooms where they were subjected to medical examinations. They inserted a needle into Betty's abdomen and explained to her that they were conducting a 'pregnancy test.' They took scrapings of skin from her and performed other tests on her body. A larger being, whom Betty believed to be the leader, communicated with her telepathically.

After medical procedures and other events were completed, the Hills were allowed to leave the object and watch it depart. They immediately forgot what had happened to them, continued their journey, and arrived home about two hours later than planned. All they could remember was seeing a UFO very close by. They had no memory of the abduction at all. For the next few months, they had nightmares about being on board an alien spacecraft. They suffered from constant anxiety related to the UFO sighting. They sought help from psychological counseling.

They were referred to Benjamin Simon, a well-known psychiatrist who specialized in hypnosis. Through regressions (the author) under hypnosis, they were able to remember what had happened that evening. Although John Füller described the episode of the 'pregnancy test' on Betty in his 1966 book *Interrupted Journey ,* he did not mention that the beings had taken a sperm sample from Barney. This was too embarrassing for the Hills and also for Füller in the mid-1960s. He did not include this in his book so as not to distract from the truth of the report. (68)

The Hills' report contains a number of elements that have been reported repeatedly in subsequent kidnapping cases and can therefore be seen as constants. These include:

- the abduction in a UFO, the medical
- examinations, which mostly seem to contain a sexual or genetic component, small, human-like beings with grey skin, large heads and large eyes, telepathic communication between these and
- the abducted, the partial or total blocking of the memory contents, "lost" time - that is, one cannot account for this time, resulting in nightmares
- and other psychological complaints, the later reconstruction of memory contents through hypnotic regression.

While only a few other such abduction cases were reported in the 1960s, their number increased significantly in the 1970s and then increased almost explosively in the 1980s and 1990s. What were initially isolated cases had developed into a worldwide phenomenon. (62, 68)

In later years, those who investigated these abduction cases using scientific methods noted a number of additional specific characteristics that indicate a consistent pattern.

This includes:

- the kidnapping of people from vehicles whose engines and electrical equipment suddenly and without any apparent reason stop working shortly before the abduction; the collection from the home environment, whereby the abducted people are transported through
- walls and closed windows; the transport from the place of abduction to the UFO in a beam of bluish light; the "switching off" of bystanders at the beginning of the abduction, i.e. these people
- are put into a state of physical rigidity that lasts until the end of the abduction and is accompanied by absolute amnesia; various variants of
- psychological influence during the examinations on board the UFOs, including: - intensive staring (staring) from a very short distance, which apparently has the purpose of taking possession of the consciousness of the abducted people by means of hypnosis; - the visualization of certain scenarios in the brains of the people concerned, for example
- the simulation of threat scenarios as a result of environmental destruction or a global war or -

and we will talk about this later - the pictorial representation of strange, seemingly extraterrestrial landscapes;

- the appearance of characteristic scars in the form of round or spoon-like depressions or thin, straight, hair-like cuts on certain parts of the body of the abducted; the insertion of implants that apparently serve to locate and monitor the abducted; the artificial insemination of some of the women affected by the abduction phenomenon with a penis-like device, sometimes carried out outside the UFOs, for example in their own bedrooms;

- for other women, the extraction of eggs by means of a »Needle« through the ceiling, whereby in these cases the UFO occupants artificially created embryo some time later in the uterus of the woman; the removal of the apparently
- genetically manipulated Embryos and fetuses weeks and months later;

their rearing in hundreds in "incubator batteries"; the induced contact
between the "mothers" and their offspring on board the UFOs or elsewhere, the so-called baby presentation; the generation problem - which means that several generations of a family
can be affected by the abductions. (68, 69, 70, 71, 72, 73, 74)

There is no doubt, as the most important characteristics of the abductions carried out by UFO occupants show, that one of the main aims of this new phenomenon is to attempt to exert biological or, to be more specific, genetic influence on the genetic material of a selected group of people. Reports of alleged genetic manipulation have been increasing since the beginning of the 1980s. The ulterior motives behind these interventions will have to be clarified later. First, however, it is important to ensure that there is actually more to the abductions than a new type of mass delusion, as critics of the phenomenon often claim.

One focus of criticism is the use of hypnosis, which is used to try to activate blocked memory contents. The fact that in around 30 to 40 percent of abduction cases, those affected were able to remember at least some of their experiences without the use of regressive hypnosis techniques makes this form of criticism seem hardly justified. (62) It can be accepted above all in cases where hypnotists without any deeper specialist knowledge provide their patients, who can be described as victims in the truest sense of the word, with "false memories", lead them to so-called dissociative fantasies or "lead" them in an impermissible way during the hypnosis session. (69)

There is no doubt that hypnosis, when used by a competent professional, can break down traumatic memory barriers. "Experiences that are strongly filled with fear and that are repressed without being processed and made cognitively inaccessible so that they do not painfully penetrate consciousness can be brought to light in hypnotic rapport." (62)

Several psychological studies conducted on groups of abductees
Tests have also been able to refute another argument against the veracity of the reports: namely, that these

could be people with a specific disorder of consciousness. (62)

Finally, in addition to the reports, there is also material evidence that speaks for the reality of the abduction phenomenon. In several cases, it was actually not possible to find people at the time of their alleged abduction. (69, 75) In some cases, the UFOs left landing tracks in the immediate vicinity of the abduction site.

(71) And even the implants inserted by the UFO occupants could be recovered from some abductees based on their reports by medical professionals. (76) The characteristic scars often found on abducted persons have already been mentioned.

In order to determine the extent of UFO abductions, various surveys were carried out in the USA, which essentially reached very similar results. The largest and most representative survey was carried out by the Roper organization in the summer of 1991. A total of 5,947 people were interviewed using a sophisticated system of questions. The final analysis of the survey showed that one million Americans were possibly victims of the abduction phenomenon. (69) This made it possible to statistically confirm what abduction researchers had already independently concluded from the reports of the abductees: that abductions are a mass phenomenon. Or in other words, and with knowledge of the biological component: this is a large-scale genetic experiment.

Before examining its objective in more detail, it is necessary to demonstrate that an explanation of the "technical wonders" observed and described by the abductees is possible without assuming intervention by extraterrestrial intelligences.

How can it be explained that immediately before a kidnapping takes place from a motor vehicle, the engine and electrical equipment fail?

Cases of sudden engine failure in connection with UFO sightings have already been reported in Saunders' UFOCAT data collection.
In 1988, it contained 422 such incidents. In detail, the reports describe that the circuits of the following systems in

Vehicles were influenced by UFOs:

Engine and electrical system Engine	208
only Radio	71
only	69
Engine power only reduces	33
headlights	27
Radio and headlights	14

In 35 percent of all cases, the UFO was less than 30 meters away from the car.

Electromagnetic interactions are mentioned as a possible cause. Experiments have shown that high-frequency magnetic fields can penetrate the hood, which acts as a Faraday cage, and interrupt electrical circuits. (62)

It should come as no surprise that this technology was also mastered by the Germans at an apparently mature stage of development by the end of the Second World War.

The proof of this lies in the *Lusty* files already cited in Chapter 2 .

It says: "Target:

Daimler-Benz. City: Unter-Türkheim/Stuttgart. Activity: Secret weapon. Recorded: April 25, 1945. Comments: Stops the ignition system of a gasoline engine. The device succeeded in stopping a motor vehicle with magnetic ignition, but not one with battery ignition, at a distance of two to three kilometers." (18)

How can the psychological effects described during the abductions be explained?

These primarily include the "taking possession" of the consciousness of the abducted person through the procedure known in the specialist literature as "staring", the memory Blockade from contents, the visualization scenarios as well as the "switching off" of bystanders.

Nothing is easier than that. Anyone who has ever browsed through the numerous literature on the subject of hypnosis or even

Anyone who has witnessed a hypnosis demonstration will quickly find an answer to this question.

The successful bank robber who, through hypnotic influence, "forces" the bank clerk to hand over the bank's money without resistance (taking possession), as well as the show hypnotist who lets his subjects bite into a lemon with relish (by visualizing an orange, for example), then apparently manages to erase this event from their consciousness (blockade) and is also able to "switch off" several of his victims at once with a snap of his fingers, are no longer isolated phenomena today.

What exactly is hypnosis?

"It must be admitted that a precise definition is still difficult, although its phenomena are now well known. The true nature of hypnosis in the sense of a valid theory is still unknown. It has, however, been established that there is something like a 'half-consciousness' between the waking state and sleep. In this state, the physical functions are reduced, while the mental ones are activated.

The *British Medical Association* defines hypnosis as follows: Hypnosis is a temporary state of altered attention in the patient, a state in which various phenomena may occur spontaneously or in response to verbal and other stimuli. These phenomena include an alteration of consciousness and memory, increased susceptibility to suggestions, responses and thoughts in the patient which are unfamiliar to him in his usual state of mind. Among other things, phenomena such as anesthesia, paralysis, muscular rigidity and vasomotor changes can be induced and suppressed in the hypnotic state." (77)

The hypnotic state is always triggered by a suggestion.

»The essence of suggestion consists in generating a certain idea in one's own person or in another person's subconscious in some way. This influences his feelings, his judgement and his decisions. The clearer and stronger this idea is generated, the easier it will be for the other person to accept it and the longer its effect will last. If this suggestion is generated in another person, we speak of external suggestion. If we generate this

When we imagine something in ourselves, we speak of autosuggestion. However, in order to be effective, a suggestion from someone else must also be incorporated into our imagination and thus converted into autosuggestion.« (77)

There are mainly three levels of hypnosis depth:

1. Light hypnosis: Here there is a slight state of relaxation, although the consciousness is still fully active. However, simple suggestions are already accepted and carried out.

2. Medium hypnosis: The relaxation has deepened. Consciousness is barely active anymore. All suggestions that do not conflict with the personality structure of the subject are carried out.

3. Deep hypnosis: With absolute relaxation, consciousness is now completely switched off. Illogical suggestions are also carried out. After the hypnosis is lifted, there is no memory left. (77)

What deserves special attention here is the fact that illogical suggestions are also carried out in deep hypnosis. This makes the hypnotists' assurances that hypnosis cannot do everything and that it will ultimately always find its limits in the personality structure of the subject absurd. Ultimately, hypnosis can be used to create a relationship of total dependency, such as that which appears to exist between the UFO occupants and some of their abduction victims.

The method described in abduction literature as "staring," i.e. staring into the eyes from a distance of just a few centimeters, is not that unusual and has its equivalent in clinical hypnosis. There it is described as a method of fascination:

"The hypnotist now sits at the head of the subject, who is lying comfortably and as straight as possible on a couch. He leans over so that his eyes are about 20 to 30 centimeters above the subject's eyes." (77)

As has been shown, it seems to be an incontrovertible fact that during UFO abductions hypnosis is used to a previously unimagined extent in order to achieve a number of completely different like effects. Of particular importance in this scenario is the transmission of post-hypnotic commands.

> »Posthypnosis is a suggestion that is given during hypnosis, but with the instruction to only carry it out at a later, precisely predetermined time. The execution of a posthypnotic instruction therefore takes place - or so it seems - in the normal waking state. In this case, certain ideas are initially stored without any particular reaction and are activated at the predetermined time - even if the subject knows that it is a hypnotic command, he will follow this command..." (77)

...,

This is the only way to explain, for example, why women who have become artificially pregnant in the manner described above often do not appear to go to a doctor to have their pregnancy confirmed. The post-hypnotic command prevents them from doing so and at the same time serves to protect the genetically modified fetus.

The crucial question in this context, however, is to what extent far-reaching implications for the future can be derived from this post-hypnotic transmission of commands. Do the many people who have been abducted in the past perhaps carry a behavioral pattern in their subconscious that is currently "blocked" but can be activated at some point in the future by a post-hypnotic command? This possibility will be discussed in more detail later with a view to the final goals of the Third Power.

How can the alleged telepathic transmission of information be explained?

The answer to this question is much more prosaic than one might initially assume, and has nothing to do with magic or supernatural powers. As is well known, the brain operates with electricity. It has a weak electromagnetic field and emits very weak electrical impulses. These move in a frequency range of one to thirty hertz. Advanced technology should therefore be able to use sensitive

Machine Translated by Google

Low frequency transmitters to transmit mental and physical functions. (78)

A report for the *US Air Force Scientific Advisory Board,* which is concerned with warfare over the next 50 years, predicts exactly this: "Electromagnetic energy in pulsed, focused and shaped form can be coupled to the human body in such a way that one can control muscle movements, control emotions, induce sleep, transmit instructions and interact with short- and long-term memory. Furthermore, a set of experiences can be created or erased." (76) It is certainly reasonable to assume that the Third Power also researched and put this technology into practice much earlier.

How can we explain the transport of abducted people through walls and closed windows?

This truly amazing ability of UFO crews has no magical background. It is related to the method of transport from the abduction site to the UFO. Transport usually takes place through the air in a beam of bluish light.

»At the beginning of the nightly abductions, the creatures come through a light source coming from the window into the room.« (68)

»There is a light coming from below the ship, and we stand in the light (in which they float upwards). And we are in the ship!« (79)

"I left my body... I took the form of light... The form I took had colors... orange, yellow and a blurred color. I think it was indigo, a bluish color." (79)

"I don't know where Bob is or ... ..., the place is bluish ..., turns lavender blue (my) whole body seems to turn to light." (79)

»The color of the light rays changed from a bright red to a bright whitish blue that emerged from the bottom of the oval object (the UFO; the author). This object moved away from the building and then descended to the window of an apartment. I called to my colleague who was sitting next to me at the wheel of the patrol car, and he was just as surprised as I was. I wanted to make sure what I was seeing and opened the glove compartment to get out a pair of binoculars. We both tried to keep a cool head and got out of the car. But what could we do for that poor little girl or that woman in the white nightgown that we saw? She was floating in the air in a bright beam of whitish-blue light and looked like an angel. She finally disappeared into the floor of the large oval." (72)

These light rays witnessed in abduction cases are apparently identical to the so-called "solid lights", radiating zones that have a finite length and can even bend. "Solid lights" have been observed in several UFO sightings, regardless of the abduction scenario. As already mentioned above, the chairman of MUFON-CES, Illobrand von Ludwiger, linked this physical phenomenon to the propulsion mechanism of the UFOs. Brand suspected the generation of gravitational waves as the cause of the described unusual properties of the UFOs.

Influencing gravity was also the focus of the experiments carried out in the *Die Glocke* project . It is interesting that a bluish light, also described as a "blue glow", was reported when this system was in operation. With this project, the German scientists succeeded in creating a "magnetically closed" system to shield against gravity. The practical application of this basic research was the construction of the flying machines known as "fireballs". From a physical point of view, the principle of the "fireballs" was based on the formation of so-called plasmoids or, in other words, plasma vortices generated by electric current.

Accompanying phenomena were characteristic luminous effects and strong magnetic fields (see Chapter 2).

The plasmoids have another astonishing property: even after the energy supply is switched off, they remain stable structures for some time and as such can pass through solid obstacles without destroying their structure.

At this point, we should recall the many similar reports about fireballs or “ball lightning,” which seem to describe a similar physical reality. (27)

Machine Translated by Google

In the years after the Second World War, the scientists of the Third Power must have succeeded in further perfecting the principle described, so that at some point even the transport of people inside such plasma vortices became possible.

How can the function of the implants used in the abductees be explained?

The preferred locations for the implants appear to be in the inner ear, nose and sinuses under the eyes, (68)
If you ask about the function of these foreign bodies, several answers are possible and equally likely. They could serve:

- as a transmitter to locate the target person, for continuous
- observation and monitoring, to facilitate communication via
- electromagnetic waves (see above), as a general medical monitoring instrument, to record hormonal changes as part
- of the genetic breeding program.

In some cases, implants that the abductees had reported having been inserted could be surgically removed by medical professionals. The investigations did not produce any unusual results. These would have been expected if aliens were actually behind the abductions. However, the composition of the materials examined corresponded in every case to earthly conditions and did not indicate a seemingly utopian manufacturing technology. (76)

Moreover, there is sufficient evidence that official bodies are also pursuing research into the meaningful use of implants similar to those described by the kidnapping victims.

»Since 1989, the American Dr. Daniel Man has held a patent for an implant that can be used to track down missing children. He developed a telemetry-based implant specifically for this problem.

Biochip. The implant is slightly larger than a grain of rice and is implanted into the wearer with a small surgical procedure. Dr. Man states that the best place to locate his implant is the ear area. Three satellites or helicopters are needed to find the missing person using triangulation.« (76)

Another example: Dr.

Delgado was director of neuropsychiatry at the prestigious Yale University for many years after the Second World War. During this time he developed the so-called stimoceiver. This device is a miniaturized electrode that can receive and send electrical signals using modulated radio waves. Since fine wires running from the initial devices were a hindrance, wireless implantable technologies were later used. These stimoceivers do not have batteries and are activated as needed using radio waves.

They can be used for life. Dr. Delgado's research showed that electrodes implanted in the brain areas called the hippocampus and amygdala, which can be stimulated by radio waves, produce the strangest effects in people. These caused relaxation, concentration, colorful visions and even a feeling as if one were floating. With his research, he set out to prove that in the future human sensations could be influenced and controlled from a distance. At the time that Dr. Delgado invented the stimoceiver, implants were being developed that enabled experimenters to implant small transmitters into a person's brain through the nostrils.

This transnasal implantation is now a generally accepted method in neurosurgery. (76)

As the statements of the abductees regarding the implants prove, the Third Power also had a considerable development advantage in this area of research and was in a position to put such findings into practice several years earlier.

How can the medical procedures associated with the genetic breeding program be explained?

The women involved in the genetic breeding program report that the UFO occupants gave them an artificial object,

Machine Translated by Google

similar to a penis. In other cases, however, the fertilization of the female egg apparently took place outside the female body. For this purpose, an egg was removed through the abdominal wall using a long "needle". In the first documented case of abduction, that of Betty and Barney Hill in 1961, such a "needle" was used, allegedly to carry out a "pregnancy test".

The doctor Dr. Neal has been studying this component of the abduction phenomenon for years. In a report published in 1988, he wrote: "The documented experiences of the abduction experience correspond quite closely with

"Different some of our accepted medical procedures. One in particular is physical Sense known as laparoscopy. A cylindrical, tube-like optical instrument is inserted through the navel region of a woman to examine female organs. With this special instrument, a doctor can view all of the female organs to determine if there are any abnormalities and can also remove ovules - egg cells - from the ovaries." (74) This indirectly confirms the statements of the women affected by the "egg harvest."

The officially first "test-tube baby", Louise Brown, was born on July 25, 1978. Since then, the use of laparoscopy has become a routine procedure. The UFO occupants only anticipated this "official development" by a few years. This does not necessarily correspond to the expectations of an extraterrestrial civilization far superior to ours. The Third Power, on the other hand, is certainly capable of such a technological advance.

Many of the women affected report that the embryos, which were conceived outside their bodies and were probably genetically modified, were later implanted back into their bodies for some time. Apparently, the UFO occupants have not yet been able to ensure that the embryos develop well in the first growth phase with the help of artificial, incubator-like wombs. This provides an additional argument against the assumption of an extraterrestrial intelligence that would have an incalculable technical and technological development advantage.

After a few weeks, at the latest by the twelfth week of pregnancy, the women report, the final

Removal of the fetuses. Over the next few months, hundreds of them are raised in incubator batteries, which are comparable to transparent tanks.
This in turn means that artificially raising the fetuses, once their organs have essentially been formed, is no longer a problem for the UFO occupants.

In the meantime, official science is also approaching this level of development. In 1997, a Japanese team of scientists led by Yosinori Kuwabara succeeded in developing the prototype of an artificial womb. In this womb, fetuses can currently be kept alive for up to three weeks. The description of the units is strikingly similar to that of the incubators shown to the abducted women: "A transparent plastic tank the size of a bread basket, filled with a liquid." (73)

Finally, a few words about the so-called “generation problem”.
Abduction researchers have discovered that in some families several generations are affected by the abductions. Given the genetic component of the abduction phenomenon, this makes sense. However, caution is advised when members of the older generation report under hypnosis about alleged childhood abductions, as this creates the impression that individual cases of abduction date back to a time before the start of the Second World War. On the one hand, such "false memories" could have been induced by incompetent hypnotists, but on the other hand it is also conceivable that the UFO occupants deliberately anchored them in the subconscious of the abducted. In this case, they would be part of the comprehensive camouflage that currently still seems to be in the interests of the Third Power.

How can we explain the appearance of small human-like creatures with grey skin and disproportionately large heads?

Professor Dr. David M. Jacobs is a professor of history at the renowned *Temple University* in Philadelphia. For many years he has been one of the researchers who have been studying the UFO phenomenon using scientific methods. He is considered one of the most important pioneers in research into the abduction phenomenon and heads the *International Center for Abduction Research,* one of the most important institutions in the field.

this sector. After several hundred hypnotic regression sessions he himself conducted, he was able to accurately reproduce the appearance and behavior of these small beings, which he believes to be extraterrestrials: A distinction is made between

smaller and larger beings. The smaller of them are between 60 centimeters and 135 centimeters tall, look thin, delicate, even fragile. They have a head, two arms, two hands, fingers, two legs, two feet. They walk and stand like humans. The smaller beings are light. The larger beings are between five and fifteen centimeters taller. Descriptions of the skin usually range from dark gray to gray to light gray. The skin is extremely smooth and feels like leather, rubber or plastic. The beings basically all look the same. They show no emotion in their faces, in fact they seem to be almost emotionless.

They do not have what one would call individuality. Their heads are disproportionately large by human standards. The most striking feature, however, is their huge eyes (Figure 23). They extend across the entire width of the forehead. They have neither pupils nor cornea nor iris, nor do they move from side to side. The vast majority of reports indicate that the beings have neither nostrils nor other openings that serve as

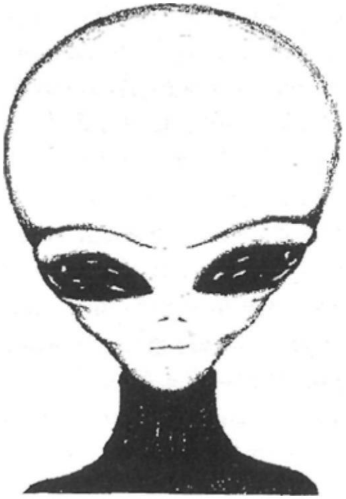

Abb. 23

The slit-like "mouth" has no lips, and the abductees do not see any teeth or tongue. There is no evidence of an organ on the head that could receive sound waves, similar to ears. The beings do not appear to have genitals. There is no visible muscle system in their limbs. The beings do not breathe in the way that humans do; at least, no rise or fall of their chest or a breath of air when they breathe out has been noticed. There are also no reports of them taking in solid or liquid food. Their "communication" is silent. The beings' behavior is purely businesslike and seems to be subject to the goal of maximum efficiency. As a result, abduction victims often get the impression that they are part of an assembly line process. The beings show no interest in the daily life of the abductees, apart from their physiology. (68)

When one reads this list of the characteristic features of the strange beings described by the abductees, one inevitably gets the impression that they must be either robots or cybernetic organisms (KYBORGS).

In one of the best-documented abduction cases, that of Betty Andreasson, the witness reports an incident that can be seen as confirmation of this assumption. Like many other abduction victims, Betty encountered tall figures with light hair on board the UFOs, in addition to the small, grey beings, who did not differ in appearance from humans. They are very reminiscent of the "extraterrestrials" who had appeared to the "contactees" a few years earlier. At this point, only the relationship between the grey and the light-haired people is of interest. When asked about the "extraterrestrial" hierarchy of command, Betty Andreasson answers:

"They are their servants. The Greys are their servants. ... the Greys work for them. And they see everything through the eyes of the Greys. They can order them to do whatever they want." Betty could see how the light-haired ones replaced the Greys' eyes. "Why do they take the eyes?" Betty: "They use them to exercise control over them. Through them they will ... see, act and be active through the Greys." (79)

If it is assumed that the people of Nordic type are representatives of the Third Power, the riddle of the Greys can be explained as solved. By the end of the Second World War, German scientists had achieved a clear development lead over their competitors, including in the use of computers (the first electromechanical computer developed by Konrad Zuse, type designation Z3) and remote control via cameras (code name "Sprotte"). (26) Even the later development of the transistor was based on German basic research. (15) This meant that all the basic components needed many years later to construct a robot-like being were available early on.

There are other possible explanations for the frequent "sightings" of the Greys. The appearance of the Greys made it possible to further perfect the camouflage of the activities of the Third Power, as it created an even stronger link between the UFO phenomenon and extraterrestrials in the eyes of the public. In order to reinforce this impression, the UFO occupants apparently resort to hypnosis in order to deliberately induce "false memories" in the abducted person. In other cases, however, the camouflage works in a much simpler, one could say almost primitive, way. The kidnap victim Katharina Wilson witnessed the following incident in a military facility (see below), apparently unintentionally on the part of her abductors: "The men were of average height and wore black overalls.

... The UFO occupant wore the same black overalls as the men who escorted him. He was the same height as his companions and gave a masculine impression. The stranger was about 1.80 meters tall. He seemed worried that he might be discovered." His head shape resembled that of the gray beings. Based on the clothing and human-like stature, one can speculate whether the UFO occupants do not sometimes just disguise themselves as grays. (76)

The previous explanations should have made it clear that no extraterrestrial intelligence is needed to explain the technical "miracles" observed by the abductees.

If the abduction phenomenon - and all signs point to this - is essentially a large-scale genetic experiment with the aim of breeding a certain species of human, then

The question inevitably arises as to which criteria this “new person” should meet.

An attempt to predict the characteristics of newborn children will not fail if one follows the words that are handed down by popular wisdom for this case:

"The apple doesn't fall far from the tree!" In terms

of genetics, this also means that we can draw conclusions about the characteristics of our children based on the characteristics of our parents. Therefore, we should first focus on the parents and their main characteristics. As far as the abducted women and men are concerned, whose eggs and sperm cells are "harvested" by the UFO occupants, it is difficult to clearly assign the characteristics that determine the breeding goal. The group of abducted people seems to be too heterogeneous. However, it could be important to note that abductions by UFOs occur almost exclusively on the American continent, in Europe and Australia.

Black Africa and Asia, on the other hand, are not affected by this phenomenon, with a few not entirely clear exceptions. It should also be noted that in a country like the United States, whose population is made up of several races, it seems that members of the white race are preferentially abducted. For this reason, critics have already seen themselves as being compelled to question the physical reality of the abduction phenomenon and have assumed that there are alternative cultural backgrounds that are anchored in people's psyches in different ways.

However, if one does not only look at the abductees, but also broadens one's view to the external appearance of the UFO occupants, one thing quickly becomes clear: Behind the abduction phenomenon there is not a cultural problem, but clearly a racial one!

The first evidence supporting this claim was already provided by the encounters of the "contactees", as they described their "extraterrestrials" predominantly as tall people with blond hair who corresponded to the so-called Nordic type.

From the witness Betty Andreasson it was learned that physically large beings in human form with white, pale skin and mostly whitish, light hair are the creators of the small gray ones with the large heads.

According to Betty, these beings are also responsible for the genetic experiments carried out on humans, in which the Greys assist them. (79)

The Brazilian psychologist Gilda Moura, who has evaluated various Brazilian abduction cases, came to a similar conclusion. According to her, both the gray and the large creatures appear in the cases she examined, and both types usually work together. (80)

The kidnapping of the American lumberjack Travis Walton in 1975 is another classic kidnapping case that caused a great stir, especially because it occurred in the presence of six witnesses and the large-scale search for Travis Walton had been unsuccessful for five days.

After being hit by a blue-green beam of light from the underside of a UFO, Walton lost consciousness and woke up after some time inside the UFO. There he first made the acquaintance of the small gray creatures. They eventually left him alone. Shortly afterwards the following happened:

»... when I heard a faint noise. I whirled around and looked at the door. There, in the open frame, stood a person! I stood rooted to the spot. It was a man about six feet tall.

His helmet almost touched the doorframe. He was extremely muscular and evenly proportioned. He appeared to weigh about two hundred pounds. He wore a tight-fitting light blue suit made of a soft material like velour. His feet were covered with black boots, a black band or belt was wrapped around his waist. He carried no devices or weapons on his belt or in his hands; no insignia of any kind marked his clothing. ...

He had thick, ash-blond hair of medium length that covered his ears. His skin color was dark, like a deep, even tan. He wore no beard or moustache. In fact, I couldn't even see stubble or the dark roots of facial hair. He had slightly furrowed, masculine features and strange eyes. They were a light, hazel-gold color - but there was something strange about those eyes besides the color that I couldn't put my finger on. ... The man didn't answer my questions. He just smiled kindly and slightly carelessly. ... We entered a white room ... Two men and a woman stood around the table. They all wore velvet blue uniforms like the first man, except that they didn't wear helmets. ... The two men were just as muscular and just as good-looking as the first man. The woman also had a face and figure that embodied the epitome of femininity. They had soft, flawless skin. ... The striking good looks of the man I had first met became even more obvious when I saw them all together. They had a family-like resemblance, although they were not identical. They all had the same thick brownish-blond hair." (75)

The case of Travis Walton has been cited so extensively simply because it particularly illustrates the generally human appearance of the blond UFO occupants.

However, examining individual cases always carries the risk of generalising these cases in an inadmissible way.

What statistically valid statements regarding the appearance of the blonde can be derived from the work of abduction researchers?

One of the world's leading researchers in this field, the American Budd Hopkins, found in 1989 that about 85 percent of the creatures observed during the abductions were of the little gray variety.

However, this statement only referred to the cases he himself investigated. (80)

The American John Carpenter came to similar conclusions. Only after Carpenter came across a particularly interesting case of cooperation between the Greys and the Blondes did he show himself willing to accept the presence of the Blondes during the abductions. He noted self-critically that in the past, not only he, but also a number of other abduction researchers in the USA, had unjustifiably denied or downplayed the presence and function of the Blondes for a variety of reasons. He finally woke up to this after a discussion contribution by the British abduction researcher Jenny Randles, held at the "Abduction Study Conference" at the *Massachusetts Institute of Technology* in 1992. Randles had explained that, in contrast to the American abduction cases, in Great Britain almost exclusively the Blondes had been observed up until 1989 and that in the years that followed they had been able to maintain their, albeit limited, dominance over the Greys. (80, 81)

This statistically different perception of UFO occupants could lead to the conclusion that the Third Power takes regional peculiarities into account when camouflaging its activities.

Professor David Jacobs, quoted above, also had to revise his earlier views on the occurrence of blondes, but he did so in a very idiosyncratic way:

"Since most of the aliens described are of the small gray type, I thought for years that the Nordic variant was a product of fantasy or wishful thinking, through which small, ugly aliens were transformed into pretty, blond, blue-eyed human beings. However, after listening to many (!; the author) reports about these human-like aliens, I came to the conclusion that they could be adult hybrids - the product of aliens and humans." (69) Jacobs assumes that such hybrids have various stages of development, whereby in his opinion the hybrids, which are no longer distinguishable from humans purely externally, first appeared a few years ago. However, he overlooks the fact that these hybrids of the last stage of development must have existed as early as the 1950s and 1970s. This is at least what the reports of the "contactees" as well as those of Betty Andreasson and Travis Walton suggest.

What actually speaks against the assumption that both the UFO occupants and the offspring created by genetically modifying the genetic makeup of the abducted possess certain desired, genetically uniform characteristics? Then Jacobs would be at least partially right. If the genetic breeding program of the Third Power began in the mid-1970s at the earliest, as it seems, then the first adult "hybrids" could have appeared in the early 1990s. This would correspond to Jacobs' observations.

Jacobs characterizes the adult »hybrids« and thus also the similar blonde UFO occupants as follows:

»Many of these hybrids have normal-looking eyes. Their skin looks like that of a human, but sometimes appears a little too smooth. They often have a crew cut, but some prefer long or wavy hair. Some have no eyebrows or

Eyelashes, most have no body or pubic hair. Some appear somewhat thin, others muscular, but never overweight. They often have blonde hair and blue eyes, although other variations have been seen. The female hybrids have typical human sexual characteristics and have longer hair than the males. Most male hybrids have normal genitalia, although the penis of some appears somewhat thin. The men are not circumcised. These higher level hybrids are often described by abduction victims as aliens of the Nordic type. They also have the same extraordinary mental abilities as the aliens themselves. They can perform brain scans and visualizations (i.e. hypnosis; the author).

They have almost complete control over the abduction victims...
The hybrids of higher levels have an outstanding ability: they are able to mate with humans. They can have sexual intercourse with humans in the normal way..." (69)

Jacobs' confusion is obvious. He seems to be determined to save the scenario presented in his first book (68), which focuses on the grey aliens. Only slowly does he come to the realization that these grey aliens play only a minor role and that the UFO abduction phenomenon is perhaps an exclusively terrestrial phenomenon.

Only reports describing the appearance of "hybrid" children can provide definitive certainty as to whether some of the adult blondes are actually offspring conceived from the genetic material of the abducted children.

One of the first reports of an encounter between a woman and her child, genetically manipulated by the UFO occupants, was published by Budd Hopkins. This event, later referred to in the literature as the baby presentation, took place during an abduction in 1983: "And then ... a little girl came into the room ... accompanied by two other beings, women. And she stood in the doorway ... She looked like a four-year-old and was about Tommy's size. He is also four years old. And she did not look like these men, but she did not look like us either. She was very pretty; like a fairy or an ... angel. She had big blue eyes and a tiny, perfectly formed nose. And her little

Her mouth was perfect and she was pale; only her lips were pink and her eyes blue. And she had white, wispy, thin hair - fine hair. Her head was a little bigger than usual, especially on her forehead and here at the back... Her forehead was a little more pronounced... but she was a real doll.« (71)

It can be said: The little girl had blue eyes and light hair; her conception must have taken place around the year 1978.

David Jacobs writes about another case: "Diane Henderson was taken into a room where there were six or seven children dressed in white with blue eyes, shaggy hair and small noses." (69) Since Jacobs describes the beings he calls hybrids as aliens of the Nordic type, it can be assumed that these children, in addition to blue eyes, also had the other characteristic feature of the Nordics, blond hair.

In another case recorded by Jacobs, reference is made to a small boy who, quite unexpectedly, does not conform to the usual pattern: "And ... there is also a little boy climbing around here. ... I think he is a little older. And his skin is darker, his hair is darker. He is like the difference between ... a Scandinavian type - blond and light skin - and one of the, er ... I don't know, from the Mediterranean perhaps." Not only does this boy not conform to the otherwise observed Scandinavian or, in other words, Nordic type, he is also dressed differently from the other children playing in this room. (69)

Finally, the account of the witness Allison Reed, who during a kidnapping was taken together with other abduction victims into a room in which there was a large, screen-like device. The assembled people were presented with part of the expected future scenario:

»...There are hybrids and there are people - I can't even call them hybrids anymore - there are these people who didn't come about through normal human evolution, and there's us. They were created through many years of experimentation. ...

There are noises in the background - like laughter, but it is very quiet. As if from far away. All are white. All Caucasian (another in America common term for the Nordics; the author), no Spaniards, blacks or Asians.« (69)

This clearly describes the breeding goal of the UFO occupants!

Behind the abduction phenomenon lies a large-scale genetic experiment whose goal is to create people who have the genetic characteristics of the so-called Nordic race in as pure a form as possible.

Doesn't this sound familiar?

Or to put it another way, who would have expected anything different given the history of the UFO phenomenon described above?

The people behind the secession movement at the end of the war and thus behind the Third Power were primarily leading representatives of the NSDAP's Schutzstaffel, known as the SS for short. The main goal of this organization can be quickly summed up:

"The SS is an association of Nordic men selected according to specific criteria. The physical ideal of the Nordic race determines the selection." In the same sense, it says elsewhere: "The breeding goal of

the German people is determined by the Nordic race...

That the Nordic race alone can determine the breeding goal of the German people is evident from the history of the Aryan peoples. It created the cultures of these peoples; as long as it determined their destinies, they rose to great heights; their decline brought with it the downfall of the peoples and their cultures, because de-Nordicization always means cultural decay." (82)

The so-called *Ahnenerbe* can be seen as the actual "brain trust" of the SS . The curator of this institution, which sees itself as a research and teaching community, Walther Wüst, explained in his programmatic speech *Indogermanisches Bekenntnis:*

"In particular, National Socialist science must free itself from all foreign ballast that only prevents it from rising to its highest goals: the re-creation of a Nordic ruling class, an Indo-European community, a future that has written on its banner not 'capital and war' but 'children and culture'." (83)

In his book *Mein Kampf ,* Adolf Hitler had already made this breeding goal defined by the SS the focus of the National Socialist
Worldview explained:

»A complete mixing of our racial elements would certainly have resulted in a closed national body, but as every racial cross-breeding proves, it would have been filled with a lesser capacity for culture than the highest of the primary components originally possessed.

This is the blessing of the absence of complete mixing: that even today we still have in our German national body large numbers of unmixed Nordic-Germanic people, in whom we can see the most valuable treasure for our future. ...

Anyone who speaks of a mission of the German people on earth must know that it can only consist in the formation of a state that sees its highest task in the preservation and promotion of the noblest elements of our people that have remained intact, indeed of all humanity. (84)

The historian Günther Deschner summed up the National Socialists' efforts to breed humans in a few words: "The historical vision of a racially closed spatial core, which sums up the National Socialist utopia of the future, had at its centre the selection of a type of human being, the external image of which was most clearly presented by the racial theorist of the Third Reich, Hans FK

Günther, as blond and tall, with a long head and narrow face, with a pronounced chin, a narrow nose with a high nasal bridge, soft light hair, set-back light eyes and a rosy-white skin colour. (85)

Unfortunately, contemporary historians all too often overlook the fact that for racial researchers during the Nazi era, a person's external characteristics were merely an indication of the psychological hereditary characteristics that were recognized as being much more significant. Professor Hans FK Günther, quoted by Deschner, put it this way:

"If the human races were unequal only in terms of their physical genetic makeup, the consideration of racial phenomena would be of much less importance. The psychological genetic inequality of the human races is what causes the obvious differences in attitude and behavior, in the actions and works of individual people and individual nations..." (86)

The director of the Institute for Racial and Ethnological Studies at the University of Copenhagen wrote about these spiritual and mental characteristics of the Nordic race and their origins, which were recognized as “particularly valuable”.

Leipzig, Professor Dr. Otto Reche, in his book *Race and Homeland of the Indo-Europeans:* »Various

researchers have already attempted to draw conclusions about the homeland of the Nordic race from the spiritual and mental hereditary characteristics that are particularly characteristic of the Nordic race, and many researchers today are of the opinion that these characteristics are a product of selection and breeding during the last ice age: only a race that acquired these characteristics and this character was able to overcome the incredibly difficult period of hardship and not be destroyed by it; perhaps it even had to bring some of these characteristics, a strong will to resist and create, into this struggle, otherwise it would have avoided it and migrated south.

The tremendous energy and tenacity in the pursuit of a goal, the commitment, the cool reflection and foresight, the development of strong, self-confident personalities - all of this really cannot have been bred, as we can see from observations of peoples in other climates, for example in the tropics or even in the temperate zone, but also not in the steppe, which forms both its animals and its people into herds. All of this can only have come about in the hard, constant, constantly changing struggle, which required the full commitment of the individual personality, with an extremely hostile climate that compelled the use of the last of one's strength, such as we have to imagine in the Ice Age.

Only here could the need, characteristic of the Nordic race, to judge people according to their achievements, according to their being, and not according to appearance, which plays such a large role in the Mediterranean race, for example, which comes from a softer climate, arise. Here, too, ideas about racial care could emerge early on, because they were necessary for the constant struggle for life: the elimination of weak children, the terminally ill, and the sickly elderly... Inventiveness and creativity must also have been properly cultivated in such an environment, because success in battle would have depended on these gifts in countless cases. Equally important were self-control, courage, and a spirit of enterprise.

We therefore have a large number of particularly characteristic spiritual and mental characteristics of the Nordic race, which indicate to us that only the environment of an ice age could have bred them ... The characteristics thus bred had to enable the Nordic race to achieve higher cultural achievements than races that were children, breeding products of other environments, races that - so to speak - had not been hammered into steel, but had remained soft metal." (87)

In what ways did the SS try to implement the system it had set up before 1945?
To achieve breeding goals?

Since the beginning of 1932, the medical examination of all candidates for accession was prepared and actually carried out from 1933 onwards.
Anyone who had been a member of the SS before 1933 had to subsequently present proof of Aryan descent and genetic health to the Race Office - going back to January 1, 1800. When recruiting new SS members, the race officers of the Race Office followed a specific pattern. First, they recorded the applicant's physical characteristics in the categories of "physique" - from ideal to deformed in nine gradations - and "racial assessment" - in five groups from purely Nordic to suspected non-European blood - which were then added to an overall assessment in the "appearance" assessment. This assessment was summarized in a final assessment along with the results of an intelligence test and a sports test.

In addition, the SS Engagement and Marriage Order was issued on December 31, 1931. Effective January 1, 1932, this required all unmarried members of the SS to obtain permission from the Reichsführer-SS before entering into a marriage. The SS man and his bride had to provide proof of their racial and genetic value by means of proof of ancestry and a racial and health examination. A marriage ban by the Reichsführer-SS due to the bride's lack of racial suitability was to be binding. If the SS member married anyway, he faced expulsion from the ranks of the Schutzstaffel. The so-called SS clan community was to be created from racially high-quality women and men, who in turn would guarantee good-bred offspring. (88)

The third path that was taken was that of attempting to artificially influence the genetic material. Most of the genetic research up to 1945 took place in Germany at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institutes

The leading role in experimental mutation research was taken over by the genetics department of the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Brain Research in Berlin-Buch under its department head Nikolai W. Timofeeff-Ressovsky.

Together with his colleagues, Timofeeff - who, according to experts, was doing by far the best work in the field of quantitative mutation research at the time - laid some of the foundations on which Watson and Crick were able to build in their later research, the result of which was the realization in 1953 of the crucial importance of DNA in hereditary processes. (89)

The researchers working under the aegis of the SS must have realized that they still had a long way to go before they could achieve the desired possibility of directly modifying the human genome. They therefore concentrated primarily on two obvious research goals that would help prepare the "big solution."

On the one hand, they used twin research to try to prove the regularities of the inheritance of specific characteristics from one generation to the next.

On the other hand, they worked on a serological race test that could be used to determine the racial classification of a person being examined. The aim was to create a rapid procedure that would not only distinguish between the sub-races Nordic, Western, Dinaric, Eastern and East Baltic within the European race according to the method developed by Prof. Günther's racial system, but which also enabled the differentiation of even closely related peoples such as Kirghiz, Tatars and Uzbeks on the basis of protein. (90)

How far could this research be advanced before the end of the war? It should be clear at first glance that a practical, rapid test for determining specific racial characteristics must have been of particular importance for the breeding program later initiated by the UFO occupants.

The work on twin research as well as the search for methods for a suitable serological racial test were coordinated at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Anthropology in Berlin under the direction of Prof. Dr. med. Otmar von Verschuer. As a recognized expert in his field of research, Verschuer was not himself a member of the SS, but employed as his "favorite student" and scientific

Machine Translated by Google

However, his assistant was a man whose name would become very well known after 1945: Josef Mengele.

Mengele, a member of the SS since 1938, received his doctorate in philology summa cum laude in 1935 with a "racial morphological study of the anterior lower jaw in four racial groups" and his doctorate in medicine in 1938 with the same distinction for "family studies in cleft lip and palate". (91) After serving as a "particularly gifted military doctor" in the combat unit of the SS "Wiking" division in 1941/1942, he was transferred back to the SS Race and Settlement Main Office after being seriously wounded and awarded the Iron Cross First Class. (92)

Finally, at the end of May 1943, the SS Main Office ordered Mengele’s transfer to the Auschwitz concentration camp.

There, under almost “ideal conditions” for a racial researcher, Mengele was able to continue his pre-war research in collaboration with Prof. Continue the research begun by Verschuer.

When asked after the war about the scientific significance of Mengele's work in Auschwitz, the anthropologist Martina Puzyna, who came from a family of Polish nobility and was forced to work with Mengele as a prisoner doctor, said: "Even with the most critical assessment, Mengele's work was indisputably of the highest value for the science of anthropology." Even if Mengele never once spoke to her about the goal of his research, she had heard rumors that the aim was to multiply the Nordic race. (91)

The German Research Foundation approved the funds for Mengele's genetic research in Auschwitz in August 1943. It was apparently Professor Verschuer who secured the grants from the research foundation. (92) In a progress report from March 1944, Verschuer wrote to this institution: "Keyword: Specific protein bodies ... My assistant Dr. med. et Dr. phil. Mengele has joined this research branch. He is employed as a Hauptsturmführer and camp doctor in the Auschwitz concentration camp. With the approval of the Reichsführer-SS, anthropological studies are being carried out on the most diverse racial groups in this concentration camp and the blood samples are being sent to my laboratory for processing." (91)

However, the research project with the keyword “Specific Protein Bodies” concealed nothing other than the serological racial test mentioned above! (90)

Because the progress of Verschuer's work ultimately depended on Mengele's deliveries, the SS was able to indirectly control what they considered to be Prof.

Verschuers exercise.

After Mengele had sent him blood samples from over 200 people of different origins, Verschuer spent the last months of the war trying to find those specific proteins on the basis of which he hoped to be able to develop a scientifically precise method of racial identification. From November 1944 onwards, he received support in solving the emerging biochemical questions from a colleague of the later Nobel Prize winner in chemistry, Adolf Butenandt. (93)

Since after the war not only the preparations sent by Mengele but also all the crucial archive files were considered lost, it is pointless to speculate whether Verschuer achieved his goal. However, evidence of a successful conclusion to the "Specific Protein Bodies" research project could be a letter that Verschuer wrote to the head physician of the Frankfurt University Children's Hospital, Professor Bernhard de Rudder, in early January 1945.

It states: “You will also be interested to know that my research on specific proteins has now finally reached a decisive stage.” (91)

Not only are the files silent about what could still be achieved in the four months available until the end of the war, but Verschuer himself later did not say a word about it.

What happened to the archive files that should have documented the progress of the work? Were they destroyed by Verschuer, or did a special SS commando manage to recover them?

There is no answer to this question either, nor to the question of the later whereabouts of Mengele's Auschwitz research documents.

Mengele himself went into hiding after the end of the war. In 1949 he managed to escape to Argentina. There he enjoyed the special protection of Hans-Ulrich Rudel, who will be mentioned in Chapter 5.

will be back. On February 7, 1979, Josef Mengele died in a swimming accident on the Brazilian Atlantic coast.

Independently of the research institutes and universities, the SS also pursued its own research program. The work was coordinated by the *Ahnenerbe Research and Teaching Association.* In 1943, the *Ahnenerbe* already comprised over 40 scientific departments. (37)

On November 1, 1943, the Institute of Plant Genetics was founded in Lannach near Graz under the direction of lecturer and SS-Untersturmführer Dr.
Heinz Brücher. It almost seems as if this institute covered other fields of activity beyond the official plant genetic research. In an internal letter from the management of the *Ahnenerbe* to the head of the biology department, Konrad Meyer, dated September 30, 1943 - i.e. before the official founding of the institute - there was only general reference to an "Institute for Genetics". (89)

In addition, the director of the institute, Heinz Brücher, had received his doctorate in botany in 1938, but was subsequently employed at the University of Jena as an assistant to Prof. Karl Astel at the Institute for Human Genetics. There he continued his research into plasmatic inheritance. Brücher was therefore competent enough to be able to contribute to the research goals of the SS in both the field of plant genetics and human genetics.

As luck would have it, Heinz Brücher, like Mengele, went to Argentina in 1949, where he became a university professor, first in Tucuman, then in Mendoza and finally in Buenos Aires. (89)

There seems to be nothing to prevent the assumption that Mengele and Brücher met in Argentina and exchanged information about their research results.

Together they may have provided the Third Power with the scientific basis for the large-scale genetic experiment that later manifested itself in the abduction phenomenon.

The fact that the goal of the UFO inmates is identical to that pursued by Mengele during his research in Auschwitz has already been sufficiently proven by the statement of the Polish anthropologist Martina Puzyna: The goal was and is the reproduction of the Nordic race!

This biological objective, which has been pursued in secret to date, will undoubtedly be followed at some point by a public demonstration which will reveal the existence and capabilities of the Third Power to all eyes. However, when this demonstration of power will take place and in what manner can only be speculated (see more in Chapter 7). However, a few clues about the power-political goals of the Third Power and the timetable required to achieve them can also be gleaned from the statements of the abductees.

When abduction researcher David Jacobs writes - still under the false assumption that aliens are behind the abduction phenomenon - "All the evidence seems to indicate that the ultimate goal of the aliens is to integrate into human society. All their efforts and activities seem to be directed toward controlling all of humanity," he is undoubtedly right about the intentions of the Third Power.

Jacobs continues, quoting the transcripts of conversations recorded with the abductees: "The aliens themselves have mentioned that the time is not too far away when their program ends and they have achieved their goals. Many abduction victims believe that something will happen soon and that the aliens are therefore on the verge of realizing their plans. ... They are almost finished, but not quite yet. They still have a lot to do. ... believes that the aliens' plan will take place in three stages - first gradually, then accelerated, and finally surprisingly quickly. The aliens told her that the accelerated stage is currently being carried out, and she believes that it will happen faster than one would think. ... As far as the exact date is concerned, the aliens are mostly vague. But in 1997 Claudia Negron also learned that the turning point will come soon, very soon. Whether this means the next five years or the next two generations remains uncertain." (69)

Also of interest in this future scenario is the role of the abductees themselves. While many of them have so far only served as donors of genetic material, they seem to have another, important function when the Third Power takes over this planet.

»Some victims of abduction believe that they themselves should initiate the change. They do not know exactly what their role is, but they think that

Machine Translated by Google

they will know when the time is right.« And: »... it was explained by the aliens that she would be notified at the time of the turning point so that she could help other people adjust to the new reality. ... What will you teach people? Everything about a new life after the world has changed. Help people adjust. That they are to be involved in bringing about the turning point. ... may explain why many abduction victims believe they have secret knowledge. For years, many of was hidden. ... The them have claimed that the aliens gave them such knowledge, but that it aliens explain to the abduction victims that the memories will reappear when the time is right. ...

He tells me about the future. There will be big changes. A lot of confusion and chaos. I have to cooperate with them - I will know what to do. I...don't know yet what will happen, he doesn't explain. But there is something of global importance. In the future, I don't know when. It will be terrible, but I will know what to do. They taught me. He didn't say programming, but I would call it that. They programmed me - whatever happens, I don't have to worry because I have the information, and even though I don't know it, I will know what to do.« (69)

Do these statements by the abducted not point to a takeover scenario in which a certain behavioral pattern has been implanted into the subconscious of a not inconsiderable part of the population via post-hypnotic commands for the day of the change?

And is the biological component of the abduction phenomenon, which has become known so far, not being supplemented by a conditioning strategy that will be effective at a later date in terms of power politics and will help to facilitate the takeover of the world by the Third Power? Only the future can provide an answer to these questions.

If, as some abductees believe, the accelerated phase of the takeover scenario has already been set in motion, this assumption could also be confirmed by the fact that the Third Power seems to be increasingly neglecting the camouflage of its activities. The Greys are increasingly taking a back seat in the kidnappings, the alleged hybrids (the blondes) are taking over in the eyes of the abducted person more and more the initiative. David Jacobs writes about this circumstance, which was certainly surprising to him:

»Sometimes hybrids of higher development stages also wear military-looking clothing, such as overalls that resemble flight suits. Because they look largely like humans, they are often mistaken for members of the American military.

For this reason, many abduction victims have become convinced that the military is involved in the plans. Over the years, abduction victims have frequently reported that soldiers or uniformed men were present during the abductions. Sometimes the hybrids take the abduction victims to abandoned military bases or unused areas of active military bases. ... But in reality there is no evidence that the American or other governments are involved in the abduction project. (69) The latter was not to be expected after what has been said so far.

As one can see, even those abduction researchers who until recently were doctrinally convinced that the abduction phenomenon was caused by extraterrestrials are increasingly uncertain and are struggling to explain it.
It is a sign of a great deal of ignorance that the realization that a human power is responsible for the abductions is only now dawning. It is not only the relatively primitive practices for a superior extraterrestrial intelligence, for example in the extraction of genetic material, that should have given rise to a revision of cherished views much earlier. In addition, there have been a large number of reports for years that underline the earthly component of the abduction phenomenon.

On February 3, 1993, a conference on UFO abductions was held in College Park, Maryland, sponsored by the *Fund for UFO Research .* Twelve people with UFO abduction experiences were present at this conference. The twelve people were questioned in detail by the researchers present, among whom were two psychiatrists. When asked how many abduction victims could remember whether they were taken to a cave or an underground facility during an abduction, seven answered yes. Some of the abductees claimed that they saw various people in trance-like states in these underground facilities. (76) This indicates that a not inconsiderable part of the

Abduction scenarios do not take place on board UFOs or in people's homes, but in underground facilities.

The following characteristics have been compiled for this type of experience:

- Military abductees report large metal gates in mountainsides. Transport takes place by helicopter or conventional vehicle.
- Kidnapped people are transported on foot or by vehicle through an artificially constructed tunnel.
- Sometimes the kidnapped people are transported to lower floors in an elevator.
- The victims are escorted through corridors by military personnel. The doors can often only be opened using electronic detection systems. They detect generators and other machines. The facility is reminiscent of earthly research laboratories.
- Most of the time, the abductees are taken to a room where they are examined by a doctor.
- Men in combat suits, men in military uniforms, female or male doctors in white lab coats, as well as civilians in suits and sometimes other abductees are seen. (76)

The camouflage is falling - slowly. The evidence for an exclusively Earth-based UFO abduction phenomena can no longer be ignored.

Years ago, the French astrophysicist and UFO researcher Jacques Vallee summed up the absurdity of the ongoing discussion about UFOs with a touch of irony: "In a way, the study of UFOs is like American politics: there are exactly two parties to choose from. In politics, there are only Democrats and Republicans. In ufology, there are the skeptics who do not believe in UFOs at all and those who believe that they are spaceships from another planet. But are these two really the only possibilities?" (94)

No, there is an alternative!

Machine Translated by Google

Machine Translated by Google

CHAPTER 4

THE MISNOMISHED PRE-ASTRONAUTS

At this point, it is time to dispel another myth: that of the extraterrestrials who came to Earth thousands of years ago as development workers, brought culture to humans and then disappeared again, but not without first making the promise to return in the distant future.

One can see how close the connection is between pre-astronautics (modern: Paleo-SETI), which focuses on historical aspects, and UFO research, which mainly investigates modern phenomena.
This is precisely why this chapter is necessary. If there were no extraterrestrial pre-astronauts, then the present phenomenon of alleged extraterrestrial UFOs lacks historical connection and thus the legitimacy of a continuous development from antiquity to modern times. It would be a huge stretch to assume that contact with an extraterrestrial civilisation occurred precisely when man took his first steps into the rocket age in the mid-1940s. The objection about what this means with the observations of unusual celestial phenomena before 1944 can easily be countered.

A not inconsiderable part of these manifestations in the sky, which were inexplicable at the time, were probably simply misinterpreted natural phenomena.

There was undoubtedly prehistoric aviation, but it was home-made, just like the other "mysteries of humanity" whose extraterrestrial origins are claimed by the representatives of pre-astronautics. We are indebted to them. Without their questions and without their field research, we would not be in a position today to take a revisionist look at this chapter of human history.

I am particularly grateful to one of these representatives who has been very committed for many years, but who today holds a different opinion and has earthly answers to the legitimate questions of pre-astronautics.

Mr. Mathias Kappel has agreed to provide this chapter with some solid content. It would be best if we let him speak for himself from now on...

»My interest in the questions of the field of research that is now commonly referred to as pre-astronautics arose when I was still at school, when a five-minute radio program entitled *Erich von Däniken delivers evidence* was broadcast daily on what was then *Radio Luxembourg* in the late 1970s . Access to the written publications of this well-known, successful author was notoriously difficult in the GDR. Nevertheless, within a year I managed to give a lecture on the subject in German class.

Years later, when I had systematically expanded my source base, I was able to give regular lectures as a student in the student clubs of my university town of Dresden. There was a great rush of inquisitive fellow students, especially because the subject had been banned by those in power until then. Nevertheless, a feeling of dissatisfaction remained, as I could only report on the material traces of the extraterrestrial visitors using quotes and images from other authors. Then came the political change in 1989, the previously closed borders were opened, and in 1990 I visited Egypt and stayed at the foot of the pyramids.

In the years that followed, I traveled to almost all of the places described as mysterious in the relevant literature, from the Near East through North Africa and Europe to the highlands of Asia, the deserts and jungles of Central and South America and Easter Island in the vastness of the Pacific. As an extract from these research trips, I published a series of articles in various specialist journals, some of which then found their way into anthologies on the subject available in bookstores.

For decades, I had devoted myself entirely to a line of research that followed the traces that extraterrestrial intelligences had left on this planet thousands of years ago, and in the end I had to realize that I was in danger of losing the actual subject of research, that the extraterrestrial earthly ones became superfluous. The riddles remained, but the authors were different. You can see that this chapter was written with passion.

At the end of the 1990s, I began to think differently when I realized that the crux of pre-astronautics was to be found in its methodology. This consisted of questioning the technical feasibility of an enigmatic artifact of our ancestors. In doing so, it was isolated and thus torn out of the historical context of the time. I would like to illustrate this with a particularly striking example. The gigantic ancient Egyptian obelisks, some of them up to 30 meters long, weighed several hundred tons. It simply seemed inconceivable that the Egyptians could have managed to transport and erect these giants with the modest means available to them, especially since, with two exceptions, there was no evidence of this in the extensive written records. Here, a superior technical power must have been at work, just as with the pyramids. (95) What has been completely overlooked in this argument - and I mean this by an isolated view - is that the ancient Romans, with their technical capabilities, which were no different from those of the Egyptians of the Middle and New Kingdoms, transported hundreds of Egyptian obelisks out of the country, over huge distances, including by ship across the Mediterranean. And no one has yet claimed that the Romans had a visit from extraterrestrials at that time! The feat was simply so commonplace for Egyptians as it was for Romans that it was not considered worth reporting.

What also made me rethink things was the fact that during field research on site, the representatives of pre-astronautics often did not look closely, claiming to be a mystery where it would have been possible to verify the opposite without much effort.

Just two examples: It was claimed that the water pipes, which can be seen in large numbers in the ruins of Tiahuanaco in Bolivia, were not water pipes, but rather protective tubes for power cables. (96) And this was only because no intact water pipe could be found and because the pipe sections were partly lying on the ground with the opening facing downwards, which led to the conclusion that without the bottom parts, no water could have flowed. Already on my first visit to

However, in Tiahuanaco I was able to photograph an intact, functioning water pipe, which was also covered with a thick layer of earth and gave an idea of its original condition (Figure 24).

The other example is provided by the Nasca plain in Peru. By removing small stones covering the desert floor, it was possible to create large-scale figures and patterns that can undoubtedly only be seen in their entirety from a greater height. Whether they were created for imaginary or real 'celestial beings' is an open question for the time being. However, to make their technical production problematic only because they could not be seen by the little people busily working in the desert and therefore 'divine', i.e. extraterrestrial, assistance must be assumed is at least a logical fallacy. The solution to the problem lies in a side valley of the plateau, the school of the creators of those scratch drawings (Figure 25). As is easy to see, many things were tried out, and they turned out reasonably well. No wonder, since all the depictions were already under visual control from the neighboring hills and could be corrected acoustically at any time. A transmission

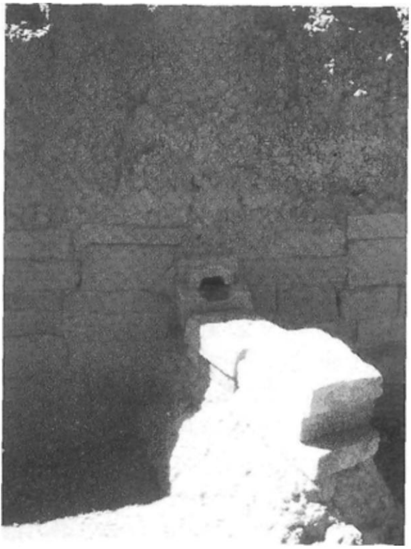

Abb. 24

The skills acquired in this way cannot have been so difficult to apply later on in flat terrain.

After criticizing the methodology, let us now criticize the premises of the research field known as pre-astronautics.
This must essentially address two points:

1. the fundamental technological and - so far neglected
- biological possibility for interstellar space travel and
2. the alleged artificial intelligence of humans through extraterrestrial intervention in the human genome.

There are several approaches to answering the question of how an extraterrestrial intelligence could overcome the almost immeasurable interstellar space. The relativistic approach seems to have been dismissed, i.e. by accelerating to speeds close to the speed of light and the time shift that this entails, it would at least hypothetically be possible for the crew of such a spaceship to cover distances of thousands of light years within a human lifetime. In my opinion, the renowned radio astronomer and SETI researcher Sebastian von Hoerner has the

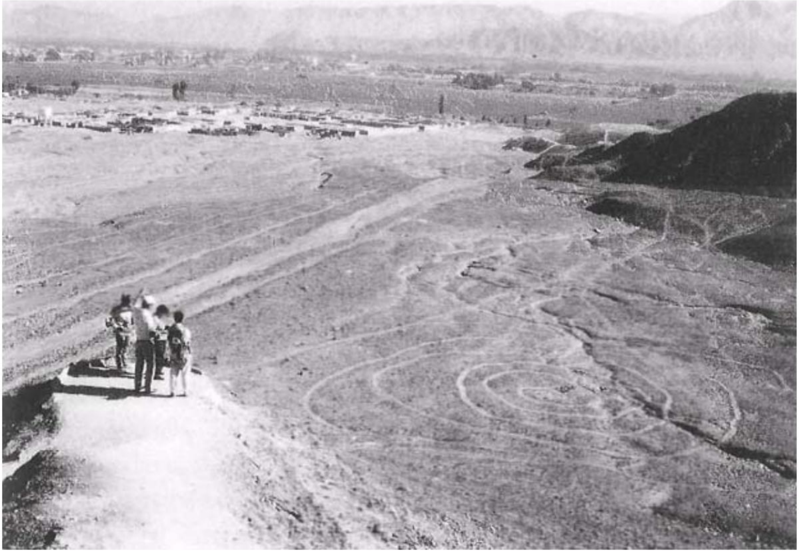

Abb. 25

A decisive standard work that forces us to look for other alternatives. (97)

In addition to space flights using relativistic effects, the crossing of interstellar space with generation spaceships that can travel at a tenth of the speed of light has long been favored. This would allow our galaxy to be completely colonized in about 60 million years. (98) This does not seem long compared to the four billion years of existence of our solar system, and it would take just the number of years from now that have passed since the extinction of the dinosaurs.

There is no doubt that this variant of manned space travel will be technically feasible in the not too distant future, but from a biological point of view there are unforeseeable difficulties. In the end, a generation spaceship means nothing other than that a narrowly limited gene pool will be exposed to an absolutely alien and hostile environment for thousands of years. Given the time periods in question, spontaneous and environmentally induced mutations will have done their destructive work on the astronauts' genome after a relatively short time.

The last hope is the so-called wormholes. These are supposed to make it possible to establish a connection between regions of the universe that are separated by billions of light years, from one second to the next.

What is a wormhole? In short, it is nothing more than 'a narrow piece of extremely curved space-time' that serves as a passage (channel) from one region of the universe to another.

(99) Nature does not know of any temporally stable wormholes that can function as a passage in this way. This means that they would have to be constructed and built by an intelligent life form that wants to use them. And here lies the problem: the tension (in kilograms per square centimeter) required to prevent the wormhole from collapsing and thus ensure its stability must be at least 10 to the power of 17 times greater than the density (mass per unit volume) of the substance from which the wormhole is constructed. As far as we know today, however, there is currently no matter in the universe with tensions that are so much greater than their density. (99) This proves the wormhole theory

as a thought experiment with no prospect of ever being turned into reality.

Another important point in the pre-astronautic ideology is the claim that extraterrestrial intelligences caused humans to become intelligent through an artificial mutation in the hominids' genetic makeup. (96) Otherwise, the leap from pre-humans to Homo sapiens sapiens (allegedly missing link) cannot be explained. Moreover, it would be downright improbable that extraterrestrials should have been present as cultural creators during the millions of years of life's development on Earth at precisely the time when our still uncivilized ancestors were just at the beginning of their development.

The intelligent human must therefore have been created by extraterrestrials. This last thought may be logical in itself, but it falls short because it does not take into account the alleged jumpiness in the development of typical human characteristics (e.g.

Intelligence) simply did not exist. Even the Homo erectus of Bilzingsleben possessed an impressive number of mental abilities 400,000 (!) years ago: He made small-format special tools out of stone for working with wood and for cutting and drilling through organic materials. With these tools he made cutting and hunting tools out of deer antlers, worked ivory and produced objects out of wood, e.g. even thrusting spears.

This European Homo erectus used fire in a targeted manner, built simple dwellings, and even demonstrated early ritual behavior. Some artifacts even showed rhythmic sequences of lines and geometric patterns - evidence that this pre-human was capable of abstract thought and the expression of these thoughts. (100) The time span of 350,000 years until the appearance of Homo sapiens sapiens should have been sufficient to complete the development into modern humans.

As a by-product of the claim that human intelligence was created by extraterrestrials, this new ›creationism‹ was then consistently thought through to the end and the emergence of life itself, at least on Earth, was seen as the result of controlled panspermia. (101, 102) The arguments of the genuine creationists were apparently conclusively proven here, whose theological ulterior motives are clearly evident, as quoted above all by the now deceased British astrophysicist Fred Hoyle.

An astrophysicist is not a biologist, not a paleontologist, and not a geneticist, which is already a serious objection today, given the high degree of specialization in modern science.
Therefore, the arguments against a natural origin of life on earth, which are mainly put forward using probability theory, are easy to refute. If you are interested, read Christian de Duve's *Born of Dust.* (103)

What kind of material 'evidence' is there of extraterrestrial intervention in the course of human history? What do the facts look like that are repeatedly referred to in the literature of pre-astronautics? There are three categories of so-called circumstantial evidence:

Category A includes technical puzzles, that is, outdated knowledge and technical-technological processes that are difficult or impossible to imagine with the means available at the time. Category B includes pictorial representations whose content seems to elude conventional attempts at interpretation. Category C brings together all old traditions in written or oral form that allow an interpretation in the sense of pre-astronautics.

Here are the most important, because apparently most convincing, ›proofs‹: Category A: - The
pyramids of Giza - The
Sacsayhuaman complex above Cusco - The stone carvings of
Tiahuanaco - The terrace of Baalbek in Lebanon -
The monuments of the megalithic culture
(dolmens, menhirs, etc.)
- The Piri Reis map - The
›light bulbs‹ of Dendera - The tilma of
Guadeloupe in Mexico - The geoglyphs on the
Nasca plain Category B: - The gravestone of Palenque - The
depictions on
cylinder seals from Mesopotamia -
The golden ›aircraft models‹ from Colombia

Category C: -
The Book of Ezekiel from the Old Testament of the Bible - Old
Sanskrit texts from India with descriptions of flying chariots - The traditions of the so-called
Manna Machine - The apocryphal Book of Enoch - The Sirius riddle
of the Dogon In order not to exceed
the scope of this short treatise, which
merely supplements the actual topic of this book, only three of these 'proofs' will be discussed as examples, those that have been printed in bold above. All the others will be taken into account in a book that will be published shortly and which aims to prove the earthly authorship of these 'riddles' of pre-astronautics.

Example 1 - the pyramids of Giza The size
of the pyramids of Cheops and Chephren, with a height of just over 140 meters, and the outstanding quality of their construction gave reason to consider them as something special among the many Egyptian pyramids. They stood seemingly isolated as misunderstood wonders of the world in the Egyptian desert, as if they had no architectural history. They must therefore have been built with outside help, if not by 'foreigners' at all.

They did not fit in at all with the period around 2600 BCE, in which established Egyptologists wanted to see them built. No, their construction must have taken place thousands of years earlier, as Arab chroniclers reported, and according to some speculations even more than 10,000 years ago. (104)

The fact that the great pyramids of Giza were indeed built within the time period ascribed to them (according to new dating, probably about 300 years earlier) and were by no means present without immediate predecessors on the desert plateau near Cairo can be proven by three architectural peculiarities: their height, the construction of corbel vaults and the use of granite as a building material.

Cheops' predecessor on the throne of the pharaohs, his father Snofru, built a total of three pyramids, the Step Pyramid of Meidum, the so-called Bent Pyramid and the Red Pyramid of Dahshur. The volume of the three pyramids of this one pharaoh was 3.84 million cubic meters, while the volume of the Great Pyramid of Giza was only 2.4 million cubic meters. Which is therefore the more impressive building achievement? Probably that of Sneferu!

The evolution of pyramid construction took another remarkable step with Sneferu: for the first time, pyramids with smooth outer surfaces were constructed. The planned height of the Bent Pyramid, at 135 meters, was only about ten meters less than the height of the Great Pyramid of Cheops. It was only by reducing the angle of inclination that it became necessary during construction that the final height of 104.70 meters was achieved. The first regular, smooth pyramid, the Red Pyramid of Dahshur, then reached a height of 109 meters. (105)

The admirable corbel vault that spans the 'Great Gallery' within the Cheops pyramid also has its predecessors. A corbel vault is a type of gable roof with stepped side walls. This structural feature was first observed in the Snofru pyramid at Meidum. The corbel vault is also found as a dominant structural element in the other pyramids built under Snofru. (105)

The evolutionary development of pyramid construction in ancient Egypt is also evident in the use of granite as a decorative stone. While granite was used sporadically in the Great Pyramid of Giza, its proportion in the tomb of Cheops' son Djedefre was many times higher, at least 10,000 cubic meters.

During the reigns of the successors Chephren and Mycenae
rinos, the use of granite became fashionable. (106)

As is easy to see, there is no reason to attribute the construction of the great pyramids of Giza to any builders other than those who practiced their craft so excellently during the time of the Pharaohs.

Example 2 - the terrace of Baalbek Within

the gigantic temple complex of Baalbek in Lebanon, built by the Romans, the most important ancient sanctuary, the Temple of Jupiter, still stands out due to its dimensions.

The foundation of this temple consists partly (!) of stones, the dimensions of which are astonishing. The three largest weigh between

700 and 1000 tons. It was these that gave rise to the assumption in the 1960s that the temple terrace built from the large stones was the original structure, while the temple buildings above it were a structure repurposed by the Romans centuries, if not millennia later. If the Romans were not believed to be capable of transporting such loads, who could the builders have been? Once again, the extraterrestrial culture bearers were an obvious choice. Apart from the fact that the Romans were nevertheless able to transport loads of several hundred tons over long distances (see the example of the Egyptian obelisks), there are structural features that suggest, similar to the pyramids, that the platform and the temple were built at the same time.

Firstly, the quarry from which the material for the temple was extracted is located just one kilometre from the site. The proof that the three gigantic stones of the Temple of Jupiter came from this quarry is on site in the form of a giant stone that was ready for transport but was no longer transported for whatever reason.

On the other hand, a simple photo proves that large and small stones were used simultaneously (Figure 26). Below the

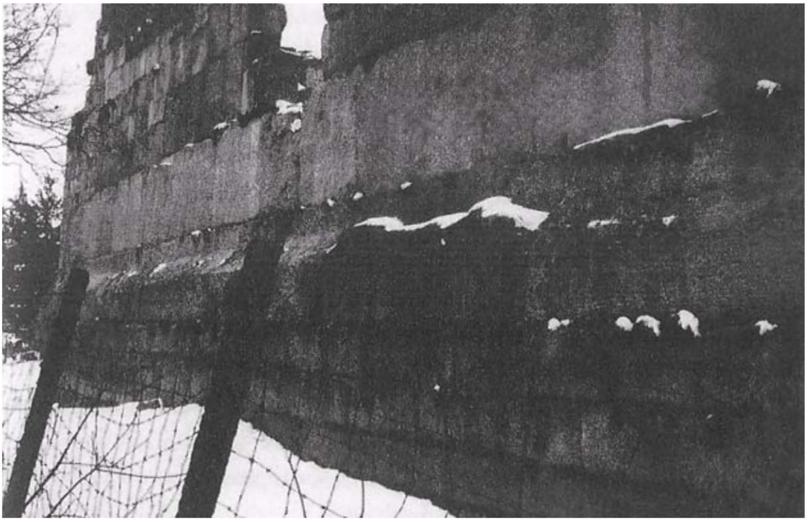

Abb. 26

Giant blocks are laid as a foundation with layers of small stones, which are also found in many other places in the extensive temple complex.

Example 3 - the map of the Turkish Admiral Piri Reis from 1513 This map attracted attention in the scientific community because it shows areas with great precision that, according to our understanding of history, could not have been known in 1513. This concerns the west coast of South America, which was only visited by the Spanish years later, and above all coastlines and islands of the Antarctic, which are now covered by a thick layer of ice.

The map would therefore have had to have been made at the end of the last ice age, around 11,000 years ago. A highly developed culture did not exist at that time. Thus, the authors had to be sought outside of the Earth, according to the conclusions drawn by representatives of pre-astronautics. (107)

Did they really have to?

The first question that arises is that of the period closest to our time in which the areas shown were actually ice-free. The last 'warm period' in this area ended 6,000 years ago. (108) So there is no need to go back another 5,000 years in the search for these great cartographers.

6000 years ago, the northern and western European megalithic culture reached its first peak. And here we find them: outstanding surveyors and daring sailors whose relics were later found all over the world. (109)

There is something else that speaks in favor of the megalithic people as the originators of the map: the so-called portolan maps used in the Middle Ages had a grid that was completely different from the one used today. It consists of centers, similar to compass roses, from which lines run at regular intervals like the spokes of a wheel and intersect with others. The explorer and specialist in medieval nautical charts, AE Nordenskiöld, already expressed the suspicion that there must have been something like an original portolan, the tradition of which stretches back far into antiquity. (108)

Around 1930, the French scholar Xavier Guichard reconstructed ancient European survey networks based on place names with the same name, which he assumed to have originated in the European Neolithic period.

According to Guichard, these survey networks correspond to the line network of the portolan charts. (110)

It can therefore be rightly assumed that the megalithic people not only used these nets to survey landscapes, but also that they must be regarded as the founders of cartography. They were able to use them to reach the South American coast with their ships 6,000 years ago and to reach the still ice-free areas of the Antarctic. As great surveyors, they did not forget to record their geographical discoveries on their maps.

Even if the known circumstantial evidence of pre-astronautics loses its evidential value, the supporters of this field of research still have one last hope: the actually 'hard', irrefutable evidence, for which the weakening term circumstantial evidence no longer applies.

The most well-known are the so-called 'metal library', which Erich von Däniken claims to have seen in a cave in Ecuador, and the 'time machine' above Sacsayhuaman, which Walter Ernsting described in his book *The Day the Gods Died .* (111, 112) Apart from the reports of the alleged eyewitnesses, nothing else exists that would confirm the evidential value of these 'discoveries'.

In March 1971, von Däniken claims to have been guided by the Argentinian Juan Moricz into a previously unknown cave system in Ecuador, in the eastern province of Morona-Santiago. In this story, which von Däniken describes as the 'most incredible, most improbable story of the century', it is above all the reports about the 'metal library' and the 'golden zoo' that attracted public attention. The 'library' is described as consisting of 'metal plates, some plates, some millimetre-thin metal foils', most of them measuring 96 by 8 centimetres, although 'after long and critical examination it remains a mystery which material has a consistency that allows such thin and large foils to stand upright. The characters on the metal plates are unknown.‹ (111) The description of the golden zoo is such that a comparison with the golden zoo of the Incas in their capital Cusco spontaneously comes to mind.

What is the truth behind this story?

Von Däniken himself later had to revise it on crucial points. Under pressure from the statements made by the Argentinean Moricz (113), he had to admit that he had been with him in the side entrance of a cave near the city of Cuenca.

The only flaw is that Cuenca is hundreds of kilometers from the province of Morona-Santiago. In a first attempt to decipher the characters, they were interpreted as not extraterrestrial at all, but as ancient Brahmanic. (114) In addition, Däniken's detailed descriptions of the 'metal library' are highly questionable, if one reads his statements to Tatjana Ingold, who is busy building up a Däniken archive. (115) According to this, he only saw the 'library' from a greater distance in the blurred light of flashlights. He estimated the block of metal plates to be a modest two meters long. This means that there is absolutely nothing left of this 'sensation' that would give rise to an extraterrestrial authorship.

The localization of ›near Cuenca‹ is indirectly confirmed by the reference to the existence of the ›golden zoo‹. In addition to the well-known one in Cusco, there was actually a second such zoo: in Tomebamba, which served the Incas as the second imperial capital alongside Cusco at the latest since the reign of the Inca Huayana Capac. (116) But Tomebamba is today's Cuenca.

Walter Ernsting's bestseller *The Day the Gods Died* is a novel as such. Nevertheless, both the author and his protagonist, Erich von Däniken, leave no doubt in the foreword and afterword as well as in various interviews that the essential aspects of the book correspond to the truth. (112, 115)

The extraterrestrial artifact described in the book is a kind of 'time machine' that can be used to travel back in time to the age of the astronaut gods, around 23,000 years ago. This device is said to have been discovered by a Mr. Holmes, who is apparently the French researcher Marcel Homet.

And again a system of underground passages plays a role. Far above the Inca fortress of Sacsayhuaman, on a rocky plateau directly in front of a mountain, are the weathered remains of a pyramid. Beneath these run partially glazed passages, and here is also the refuge of the ›time machine‹, a hermetically sealed chamber that can only be opened with a special mechanism. (112)

The directions in the book are clear, and I am surprised that, given the great interest that this book has attracted since it was first published in Germany in 1979, no one has been able to follow this description. I was last in Cusco in February 2003 and wanted to use my stay to visit the mysterious pyramid, among other things. As I said, I stuck closely to the text of Walter Ernsting's book. The mountain behind the plateau with the pyramid should be in a straight line above the Sacsayhuaman fortress and should be visible from there (Figure 27). Conversely, there had to be a clear view of the fortress from the plateau. Ernsting's starting point for his hike was a long barn above the fortress and directly on the road leading from Cusco to Pisac. From there, after just under an hour of brisk ascent, I reached the 'pyramid'. Walter Ernsting described it as follows: ›One could in fact hardly call the building a pyramid ...

Actually it was just a flat, grassy hill, with here and there carved boulders sticking out.' And elsewhere: 'I reached the evenly shaped hill. ... Heavy boulders formed a real blockade that one had to climb over ...

‹

From the plateau, about 4000 meters above sea level, I documented the view of the ›pyramid‹ with my camera (Figure 28). The photo and Walter Ernsting's description leave no doubt: the two pyramids are identical.

What about the underground passages, the chamber, the 'time machine'?

All of these things are imaginative ingredients of a writer. The route description to the 'pyramid' is documentation, after that the novel begins.

The ›pyramid‹ could not have been part of an extraterrestrial ›fortress‹, as claimed in the book, designed to ward off a nuclear strike from their enemies. The nature of the rock speaks against this. It is not just a

Machine Translated by Google

Abb. 27

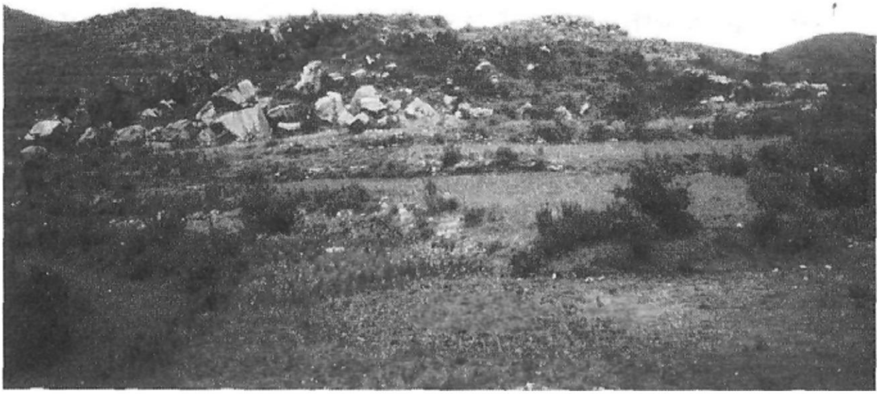

Abb. 28

For example, it is not hard granite, but only soft limestone. The rocks that were blown away into the valley during the attack by the explosion, according to the book, do not exist either. It remains to be examined whether the few stones in the area around the 'pyramid' that give the impression of being artificially worked are perhaps just stones that have been smoothed by wind and weather.

Even if the supposedly 'hard' evidence of pre-astronautics does not keep its promise, one question still remains unanswered: If no extraterrestrials were the originators of the sightings of unusual flying objects reported in ancient times, then who? Which earthly teachers visited peoples around the globe with their flying ships and left lasting traces in their traditions?

A series of detailed descriptions on the one hand refutes the claim that the phenomena observed could have natural causes, but on the other hand leaves no doubt that the technologies used must have been relatively primitive, seen through the eyes of our time. This aspect then takes away the last credibility of the pre-astronautical hypothesis.

A few examples may prove this: In the ancient Indian scriptures, especially in the Vedas, there are frequent references to flying machines, also called Vimaanas. The origin of the Vedas is dated by most scholars to the period between 1500 and 1000 BCE. The ancient texts speak of the use of liquid fuels, such as alcohol, honey, fermented rice and an extract of the soma plant, which suggests that the Vimaanas could have been hot air balloons. (117)

It is particularly interesting that mercury is also mentioned again and again as a fuel: ›The force resting in the mercury, which sets the driving whirlwind in motion, enables a man to travel a great distance in the sky in a miraculous way. ...

Four strong mercury containers must be installed. When these are heated by regulated fire from the iron containers, the Vimaana develops the power of thunder through the mercury and appears like a pearl in the sky.‹ (101)

In nature, mercury occurs in both free and bound states. When mercury is heated, it escapes as a gas. Its volumetric efficiency is very high and enables enormous thrust. In a vehicle built according to the Vedic texts, 230 liters of alcohol could be replaced by 2.5 liters of mercury. (117)

Prof. Dr. Apel of the University of Bremen, whose field of expertise includes rocket jet propulsion and flight propulsion, considers the descriptions of the flight characteristics of mercury-powered Vimaanas to be evidence of former high-speed flight. (118)

In the first century BCE, Kalidasa, a well-known poet on the Indian subcontinent at the time, describes in 30 verses of the *Raghuvamsa* an air journey of the 'god' Rama from Ceylon to the city of Ayodhya. The flight lasted a whole day, interrupted by two short stopovers. During this time, around 2900 kilometers were covered. (117) If we assume twelve hours of pure flight time (they certainly only flew during daylight hours), this gives an average speed of 240 kilometers per hour, which would be a rather embarrassing achievement for extraterrestrials. However, this speed would be too high for a balloon propelled by the force of the wind and the organic fuels described above. This may be why Rama's Vimaana was a mercury-powered airship.

The description in the *Kebra Negest,* a book that glorifies the deeds of the ancient Ethiopian kings , is different . It describes how Bainalekhem, the son of King Solomon and Queen Makeda, carried the Ark of the Covenant from Jerusalem to Ethiopia in a 'flying chariot' around 950 BCE. The journey took 13 days in one day. If an average daily distance of 40 kilometers is assumed for the royal entourage's journey over land on camels, this results in a flight speed of around 50 kilometers per hour. This fact, as well as the reference to the fact that the flying ship had a large 'kitchen' with fireplaces and large cauldrons, rightly leads us to think of a balloon powered by hot air, especially since it was accompanied by a noise similar to that of a flying machine.

Mercury propulsion is not reported within the description. (118)

Reports of flying chariots also reach us from China. The book *Po wy chih,* written in the third century , notes the mysterious flying chariots of the Chi-Kung people: 'The Chi-Kung are an ingenious people. They know many things that

remain hidden from other peoples. They travel through the air at lightning speed on large chariots. When Emperor T'ang ruled the world, a western wind carried the flying chariots to Yuchow, where they landed.' Another poet writes: 'In conjunction with the wind, this people strained their brains and invented a flying chariot.' Is this also a reference to a hot air balloon? Supposedly these reports go back to a time that is almost 3800 years away from us today. (119)

Interesting in this context are the ›western winds‹, which could give rise to the assumption that the people known as Chi-kung were native to Europe.

A similar report comes from India. Berthold Laufer quotes it in his work *The Prehistory of Aviation:* ›So the king ... sat in the celestial chariot. They reached the expanse of the firmament and finally followed the route of the winds. The celestial chariot flew around the earth over the oceans and was then steered towards the city of Avantis, where a festival was taking place.‹ (120)

Doesn't Avantis remind us of Atlantis? Didn't we actually have to fly over the waters of the oceans on the way there? And wasn't Atlantis also in Europe, as was probably the home of the Chi-kung? Since Jürgen Spanuth's extensive research, there should no longer be any doubt that Atlantis was in the North Sea, in the area of Heligoland and the Dogger Bank. (121) The culture of Atlantis developed directly from the Nordic megalithic culture, whose highly developed knowledge and skills have already been briefly discussed in connection with the Piri Reis map. I am of the opinion that Spanuth was denied final scientific recognition only because his concept of a high culture in the Nordic Bronze Age met with decisive resistance from political correctness. After 1945, it was simply not legitimate to attribute to the Germanic peoples and to grant their ancestors anything like culture at all.

Spanuth dated the culture of Atlantis to the period from 2000 to 1200 BCE and pointed out with good arguments that the 9000 years from Plato's Atlantis report are based on a misunderstanding.

These few examples of an advanced earthly culture that also spread its achievements across the world by air have shown one thing: the Vedas, the reports from the time of the biblical Solomon (according to Spanuth, Solomon received the technology from the Nordic Philistines), those about the Chi-kung people as well as about Atlantis can all be dated to the Nordic Bronze Age.

Since no similar traditions have come down to us from the time of the megalithic culture, the art of flying could not have developed until around 2000 BCE at the earliest. No extraterrestrial development aid was required for this.

What further course did the history of this advanced civilization take? How did it end?

Where can their remains be found today? Does history that is assumed to be known need to be subjected to a new interpretation? My forthcoming book will provide detailed answers to these and other questions.«

CHAPTER 5

THE EARTHLY HEADQUARTERS

Where is the "General Staff" of the Third Power located? There must be an operations center somewhere from which the orders for carrying out the extensive activities described are sent. This earthly headquarters does not necessarily have to be identical with the place that serves as the material base, e.g. as the production site for the flying discs. Keeping the "head" and "executive organs" of this organization spatially separate could be a simple security requirement.

Speculations about the location of this headquarters have already been made elsewhere. (15) It is suspected to be in areas that are difficult to access even today, such as the jungles of South America or the Andean region, whereby the reference to Wilhelm Landig cannot be overlooked.

In Chapter 2, the question of the truthfulness of Landig's statement that the Third Power had found its refuge not only in Antarctica (Argentina) but also in an ancient, artificially created cave system under the Andes could not be answered satisfactorily.

On the one hand, these caves, created by an unknown culture, actually appear to exist in Peru, Ecuador and Chile, but on the other hand, the facts obtained so far indicate that the main events surrounding the Third Power took place in Peron's Argentina. There is no evidence of such cave systems there. One could make it easy and claim that these caves have their counterparts in the underground facilities of Huemul. Given the comparatively small size of this research complex, however, this would at least leave an uneasy feeling.

Landig's veracity stands and falls with the actual existence of extensive and artificially created cave systems in which the activities of the Third Power can be proven! If these caves are found, the headquarters of the Third Power will be identified.

Machine Translated by Google

The answer to the question about the Earth's headquarters is surprising, and above all, surprisingly simple. It is not located in remote areas, nor does it require shielding by hypermodern security systems. It is right in the middle of us, that is, in the civilized world, and its camouflage is as simple as it is ingenious.

Who would have thought that the headquarters of the Third Power has been hidden under the guise of a small religious sect for more than 40 years?!

Where? Here is the route description:

Drive south from the capital of Chile, Santiago, on the Pan-American Highway. After about 450 kilometers you will reach the exit to the town of Parral, the birthplace of the Chilean poet Pablo Neruda.

»If you turn east from here towards the Andes, you will drive through three small villages, past miserable cottages and rickety huts, 40 kilometres along a red sand track, and you will reach the village of Termas de Catillo, a spot that is nothing more than a spa hotel built around hot springs and a dozen houses. At the fork in the road there is a sign pointing to the 'Villa Baviera', the Bavarian village, a bridge, 20 kilometers of well-maintained sand track, cattle fences on the right and left, then a rise, on a hill a 30-meter-high watchtower, finally higher fences, some neatly painted stables, a school, also behind the fences, a spruced-up chapel surrounded by barbed wire and a huge boulder with the words 'Villa Baviera' carved into it." (122) (Figure 29) This Bavarian village, as it is called today, became better known under the name Colonia Dignidad.

A clear distinction must be made between the official story of Colonia Dignidad, which served its purpose of camouflaging the entire operation in a first-class manner, and the true story.

The official history reads as follows: "The origins of Colonia Dignidad are undoubtedly Christian." (123) Its founder, Paul Schäfer, born on December 4, 1921, split the evangelical sect from the *Federation of Evangelical Free Churches in Germany* in 1956. In the statutes of the association, which was founded on December 31, 1956, the Protestant sect was founde December 1956, it is written: »The private social mission, based in Heide near Siegburg, pursues exclusively and directly charitable and philanthropic purposes. ... Its task is to provide external and internal support to the less well-off and those in need of recreation.

Machine Translated by Google

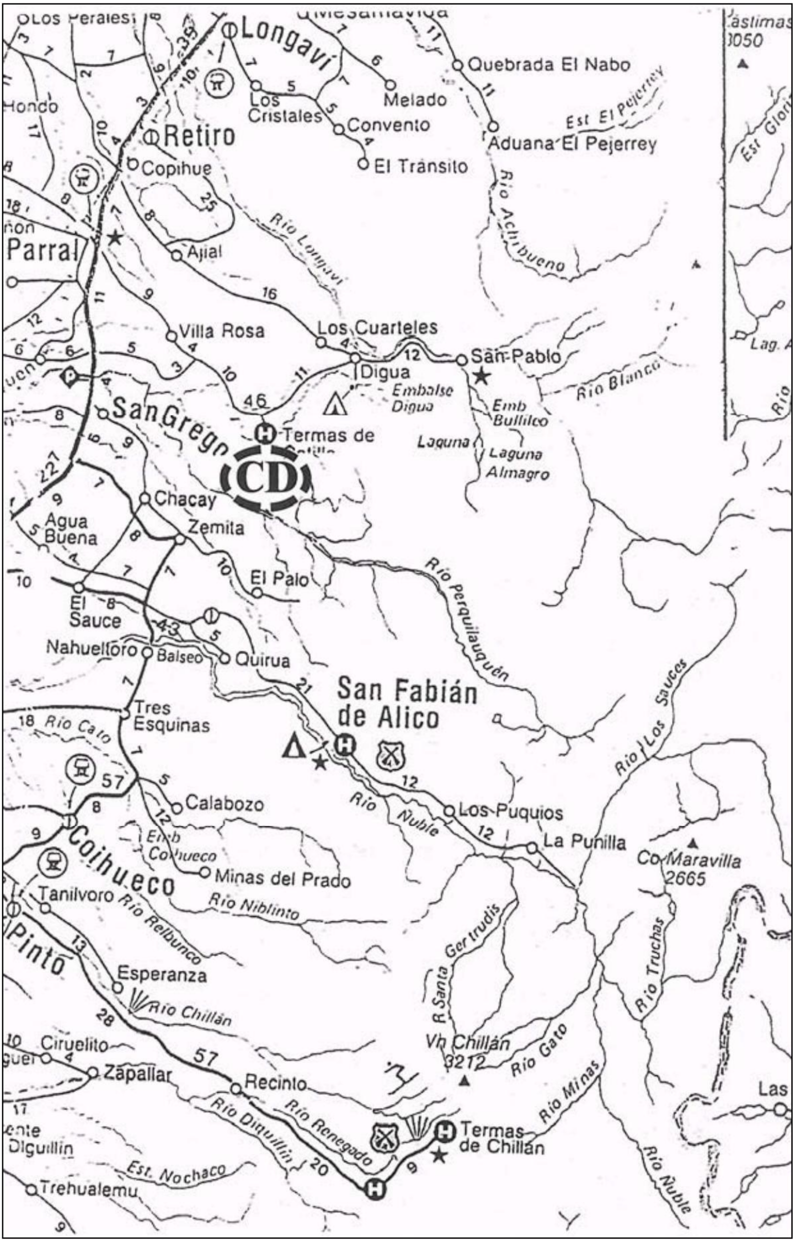
Los Perales
Longaví
Hondo
Los Cristales
Melado
Convento
El Tránsito
Quebrada El Nabo
Aduana El Pejerrey
Est El Pejerrey
Retiro
Copihue
Parral
Ajial
Río Longaví
Río Achibueno
Villa Rosa
Los Cuarteles
Digua
Embalse Digua
San Pablo
Río Blanco
Emb Bullileo
Laguna
Laguna Almagro
San Gregorio
Termas de Catillo
CD
Chacay
Agua Buena
Zemita
El Palo
El Sauce
Nahueltoro
Balseo
Quirua
Río Perquilauquén
San Fabián de Alico
Tres Esquinas
Río Cato
Calabozo
Emb Coihueco
Minas del Prado
Río Niblinto
Coihueco
Tanilvoro
Río Relbunco
Pinto
Esperanza
Río Chillán
Los Puquios
La Punilla
Río Ñuble
Río Los Sauces
Co Maravilla 2665
Río Truchas
R. Santa Gertrudis
Vn Chillán 3212
Río Gato
Río Minas
Ciruelito
Zapallar
Recinto
Río Diguillín
Río Renegado
Termas de Chillán
Diguillín
Est. Nochaco
Trehualemu
Río Ñuble
Las
Lag.
Est Gloria
Castimas 3050
227
46
43
57
28
20
21
12

Abb. 29

To provide help; to take in young people at risk and in need into the mission house; to arrange vacation and leisure stays for young people and adults. These tasks are connected with the proclamation of the gospel.« (122) Schäfer later founded a children's home in Siegburg under the name *Private Sociale Mission ,* in which the children of the members were housed. (60)

In 1961, with the active assistance of the then Chilean ambassador in Bonn, Arturo Maschke, Schäfer managed to quickly complete all the necessary formalities for a mass emigration of the cult members from Germany to Chile.

»The estate where the emigrants arrived consisted of a half-ruined stone house and a few wooden huts. It was the Fundo El Lavadero, 1800 hectares of muddy, impassable land along a river that overflows its banks in the rainy winters.

On 1 September 1961, by decree no. 39490 of the Chilean Ministry of the Interior, the *Sociedad Benefactora y Educacional Dignidad* became the legal entity and owner of the site.« (122)

The decent Germans were welcome in Chile. The 1800 hectares of mission land from 1961 have now grown to more than 14,000 hectares. By the mid-1970s, 871 hectares of arable land had been cultivated, 300,000 trees planted, 131 kilometers of roads and 58 bridges built, according to internal statistics from the colony. The 1992 census registered 208 residents not born in Chile on the site, 94 men and 114 women. The colony's official figures speak of a total of 329 residents. The German embassy in Santiago, on the other hand, assumes that there are 400 German citizens behind the camp's fences.

The exact circumstances remained unclear. (122)

After the military coup of 1973, Colonia Dignidad allegedly developed into a torture and labor camp run by the former Chilean secret service DINA. In the 1990s, various criminal proceedings were initiated against the cult's founder, Paul Schäfer, for sexual abuse and deprivation of liberty, particularly of children. The veracity of these accusations cannot and should not be assessed at this point.

The fact is that Schäfer was searched for without success over the long period between 1996 and 2005. It was not until March 2005 that he was found in

Machine Translated by Google

Argentina. (60) The relationship between the Chilean authorities and the colony seems to have improved since 2003.

normalized. Due to a tacit agreement between the Chilean government, the armed forces and Schäfer's deputy, the doctor Hartmut Hopp, the colony is to be transformed into an agricultural cooperative. (60)

The true story of Colonia Dignidad could also be played differently.

What if:

- a few years after the Second World War, some leaders of the German underground organisation had set up a conspiratorial contact and coordination office (one of many) under the guise of an evangelical free church community, in response to the fall of Peron in September 1955 and the resulting insecurity in the retreat area of Argentina (see Chapter 2), this "community" was given a different task in the medium term and
- therefore, and in order to gain complete freedom of action, it split off from the Federation of Evangelical Free Churches in Germany in 1956, with the evacuation of the Argentinian base in 1961 (see Chapter 2), the need for a new refuge finally arose, which was started to be set up in September 1961 with the founding of the colony on Chilean soil, the perfect camouflage could also be maintained in the following years by having a few hundred "uninitiated" cult followers act as figureheads for the public, but in addition the base had a experienced massive expansion and was able to replace the previous bases in Argentina through extensive
- economic self-sufficiency, solid financing and a modern military infrastructure, the power emanating from that headquarters was, at least until recently, absolutely unchallenged, so that ultimately all

> Attacks against Colonia Dignidad, which have been carried out under various pretexts, have had to fail?

Unbelievable? All just an arbitrary construction of facts that aren't facts?

The correlation of the events in 1961 alone is strange enough and should give reason to examine the other points for their validity.

Who were those men who played a leading role in the fate of the “sect” and the colony?

Paul Schäfer did not appear as the official president of the colony, but rather Hermann Schmidt, who served until his death in 1995. He was an air force officer during the war and also a member of the NSDAP.

Kurt Schnellenkamp, a former member of the Leibstandarte Adolf Hitler, was registered as Hermann Schmidt's representative.
As a buyer for the colony, he traveled all over the world and cars and airplanes were registered in his name. He also had authority over all of the colony's accounts. He was also the liaison with the Chilean police and military.

Gerhard Mücke, who received his education during the Third Reich at one of the National Political Education Institutes (NAPOLA), one of the elite schools alongside the Adolf Hitler Schools, served as security chief. (122)

Hugo Baar, co-founder of the sect and Schäfer's long-hand man for two decades, served in the Wehrmacht as a Russian-German during the war and received the Close Combat Clasp for his service. (123)

And the spiritus rector of the sect, Paul Schäfer, himself?

According to his own statements, he served as a medic during the war. In his hometown in Germany, there is a rumor that he was a "big shot in the Hitler Youth." This would correspond to the fact that after 1945 he continued the methods of the National Socialist youth organization under supposedly Christian auspices and initially gathered around himself a group of up to 50 boys, none of them older than 14 years. As a "youth worker," he organized camps, hikes, singing evenings, theater performances, and, quite incidentally, Bible evenings, entirely in line with the nationalist model.

However, nobody knows exactly what he did during the war. The only evidence is that he was registered with the police in Ringstrasse in Troisdorf in 1940. The Federal Archives, the former *Berlin Document Center* and the office of the Federal Commissioner for the Records of the State Security of the former GDR also has no records on Paul Schäfer. One thing is certain: five years of Paul Schäfer's life cannot be reconstructed! (122) The Hitler Youth version has a lot to it. Was he selected here so that he could work in underground work after a lost war?

Is this perhaps the reason for the “deleted” files?

Also interesting in this context is the person of the man who helped the "sect leadership" to clarify the necessary formalities for emigration. Arturo Maschke, whose name was of German descent, served the Chilean government as ambassador in Berlin in 1961. Maschke made no secret of his opinion that he would like to see the Chilean race refreshed with German blood. In terms of his worldview, he seems to have differed little from his "protégés" in the Colonia.

Even later, they appreciated Maschke's patronage, as he, as head of the Chilean National Bank and Minister of Finance, granted customs and tax privileges that contributed significantly to the solid financial basis of the colony. (123)

Why was Chile predestined as a new location for the Headquarters of the Third Power?

The general conditions that were probably decisive for the selection were, on the one hand, the immediate proximity to Argentina, and, on the other hand, the strong German ethnic group that had already established itself in the 19th century and experienced significant growth again after the Second World War.

And what about the Chilean public? Did they have any idea about the secret background of Colonia Dignidad?

Since the colony was founded in 1961, voices have repeatedly been raised that have been able to establish a clear connection between it and National Socialism. As late as 1966, the Chilean press did not hesitate to describe the settlement as a Nazi refuge.

A number of other explanations can also be placed in this context.

In December 1978, the former prisoner Eduardo Garces testified in the Bonn trial of Colonia Dignidad against *Amnesty International* that an employee of the secret service had said to him: "Since you will not get out of here alive, I can tell you that there are a lot of people here who worked with the GESTAPO during the Second World War." The statement made by the former secret service agent Rene Munoz Alarcon in June 1977, shortly before his murder, reads similarly: "... they

sent me to Colonia Dignidad, about 40 kilometers inland from Parral. There was a training center for the national secret service, run by Germans who now also have Chilean citizenship. They are old Germans who came here after the war." And then comes a statement which - if it is true - is almost impossible to surpass in its evidential value. Referring to the old Germans: »... and have a real regiment in the Colonia Dignidad.« (!!!) (123)

The Catholic priest Vinzenz Gottschalk from the southern Chilean city of Osorno did not want to and could not break the seal of confession, but at least he said this much: "In my opinion, there are connections from Dignidad here to the south. I know people who I will not name in order to protect them: these people used to be in the SS. Now they live here. I am convinced that there are connections between these people and Colonia Dignidad." And as late as the 1990s, the Christian Democratic politician Gabriel Valdes declared: "After the Second World War, many Germans who emigrated to Chile were old Nazis. I know several

of these people personally. ... that Colonia Dignidad has a fascinating effect on many neo-Nazis in Chile.

Today there is undeniably a close connection between neo-Nazis and the colony.« (122) Why, one may ask.

One thing is certain: the Chilean public was clearly well aware of the true background of Colonia Dignidad. It was just not legitimate to make the truth known. Anyone who did so had to expect the worst possible consequences, as was made clear in the case of secret service agent Rene Munoz Alarcon.

In addition, members of the Chilean “circle of friends” of the colony, who were in influential positions, watched over the

Maintaining the status quo. The spiral of silence could therefore only rarely be broken. This "circle of friends" was founded in 1978 and comprised around a thousand members. (123)

The crucial question in all of this, however, is that of the hard facts that prove once and for all that Colonia Dignidad is not a non-profit religious association, but that the infrastructure for the headquarters of the Third Power is located on its territory.

There are many misconceptions about the size of the colony. It is not just a small village with its own hospital and a little farmland. The area of Colonia Dignidad almost quintupled in the 30 years between 1961 and 1991, from 3,000 hectares to almost 15,000 hectares. That corresponds to 150 square kilometers, or, to put it simply, a square of twelve by twelve kilometers. There was therefore more than enough space for all kinds of secret activities.

While on the surface the "settlers" pursued their apparently peaceful activities and contributed to the economic self-sufficiency of the community through extensive agriculture, a widespread system of artificially created, bunker-like caves and the tunnels connecting them was created underground.

How did these underground facilities come to be discovered?

After the end of the military dictatorship in Chile, the cult site was investigated several times in connection with the aforementioned criminal trials against Paul Schäfer. However, it was not possible to catch Schäfer at the time. The good contacts of the "circle of friends" repeatedly prevented such an operation from being kept secret. As a result, every inspection of the site remained a farce and Paul Schäfer was able to evade arrest. The investigator responsible for the Schäfer case, special prosecutor Hernan Gonzales, summed up the results of the on-site investigations: "The police used so-called ground-penetrating radar devices a few times. The top technology, which is a matter of course in a classic mining country like Chile, revealed a complex system of tunnels and bunkers in the ground deep beneath Colonia Dignidad." But the police chief Luis Henriquez, who was in charge of the on-site investigations, also waited in vain for permission from the government palace in Santiago to begin excavations. Elsewhere, lawyer

Fernandez also describes the bunker system as an "underground city". The shielding of the area with a camera, infrared and listening system is of a technical complexity and sophistication that civilians cannot afford. (124)

One of the most thorough researchers into the true background of Colonia Dignidad, Friedrich Paul Heller, writes in one of his books about the »extensive system of camouflaged underground tunnels and bunkers«: »At that time, the settlement was equipped with underground bunkers, command centers (as headquarters; author's note), a comprehensive secret warning and surveillance system and an underground airfield ... ... The underground installations include hydraulic elevators, which were apparently used to bring airplanes into takeoff position.« (125) In keeping with this, campesinos in the area around Colonia Dignidad reported that
Airplanes fly into and out of mountains within the settlement. (60)

By the way: were they really always just conventional airplanes? Chile is one of the countries with the highest frequency of UFO sightings. But more on that later.

One thing is certain: Friedrich Paul Heller certainly came pretty close to solving the mystery of Colonia Dignidad, but in the end he was fobbed off with a story that - given the facts that have since become known - was intended to prevent the final explanation.

According to this, the expansion of Colonia Dignidad into a "Chilean Peenemünde" (!) was carried out by the German Colonel Hans-Ulrich Rudel, at a time when, after the Chilean military coup of 1973, war with Argentina seemed inevitable. The colony would have been one of a total of five secret military bases built. (60) The aim of this declaration, which was made to disguise the game of hide-and-seek surrounding Colonia Dignidad that has not yet ended, should be clear. Now that everything about the deeds and misdeeds of the Chilean military dictatorship has become known, and even when the existence of this project, allegedly called *Andrea ,* is no longer a secret, why should the official inspection of a conventional military base that is no longer in use cause difficulties? Similar military bases with underground launch facilities exist all over the world.

There is another claim related to the underground facilities of Colonia Dignidad. According to this, the inhabitants of the colony dug a tunnel all the way to Argentina. (122)

This cannot be verified, but it makes deeper sense when one considers the history of Colonia Dignidad.

And Hans-Ulrich Rudel? Could he actually have been involved, even if not in the way Friedrich Paul Heller imagines? Is it conceivable that Rudel was involved in expanding the colony into an earthly base for the Third Power?

Colonel Rudel (1916-1982) was the most highly decorated soldier in the German Wehrmacht. As the only recipient of the Golden Oak Leaves with Swords and Diamonds to the Knight's Cross of the Iron Cross, he had fantastic successes as a Stuka pilot. Two figures can be presented here as examples: he flew against the enemy 2,530 times. He managed to shoot down 519 Soviet tanks.

After the war, he also went to Argentina and joined the Argentine Ministry of Aviation. He was assigned to the design group at the Cordoba aircraft factory. (23)

In addition to this, his official activity, he founded the so-called *Kameradenwerk in 1948,* which he chaired until 1955. This organization not only maintained contact with the Reich German technicians who were also employed in Argentina, but also helped others persecuted by the victorious powers of the Second World War to have a second life, including Dr. Mengele (see 3.

Chapter). After the change of power in Argentina, Rudel went to Paraguay, where he played a similar role under dictator Stroessner as he had previously under Peron.

On November 21, 1952, an apparently well-informed magazine wrote about the *Kameradenwerk:* "Rudel has been proclaimed leader..." (28) There is no doubt that the public perceived Rudel as the most prominent and, due to his diverse business contacts, the most active representative of the Reich Germans exiled to Argentina. But even within internal circles, his leadership role seemed undisputed.

However, only a few people will know that with Rudel’s proclamation, one of Adolf Hitler’s cherished wishes had also come true.

One of Hitler's star architects, Hermann Giesler, recounts a confidential conversation in his book *Another Hitler ,* which dealt with the question of Hitler's successor.

Hitler said something like this: "I have long been aware that only a soldier of great stature is entitled to lead the nation when I withdraw after the war. ...

In addition to the prudent boldness and bravery, there had to be charisma. Smart and logical thinking was essential, combined with an interest in modern technology and cultural openness. I was looking for an imaginative soldier with leadership qualities. This, of course, spoke in favor of an officer with noticeable authority. He had to be convinced that this fight was not just being fought for Germany, but for Europe. He had to be steadfast, and above all he had to have character. ... I found him - the Stuka pilot Rudel!« (126)

Was Rudel in Colonia Dignidad? According to Friedrich Paul Heller, in May 1999 the responsible officer in the Foreign Office told him on the phone: "Rudel was also on the premises." During the subsequent conversation in the Foreign Office, in which another witness took part, this statement remained undisputed. (60)

Rudel as "leader" of the Third Power? What about Hans Kammler or Karl Hanke? Without a doubt they were subordinate to Rudel, since he was the only one who had the necessary freedom of movement - free from any persecution.

What really happens in the catacombs beneath Colonia Dignidad? Lawyer Fernandez even spoke of an underground city!
Does it serve solely as a command center, as the location of the German regiment that Rene Munoz Alarcon reported on, and as a base for the aircraft? Or is there more going on here?

A hint of further possible activities in the colony's underground could be contained in the reports of those abducted by UFOs who - as described in Chapter 3 - were not subjected to the described medical tests and reproductive procedures in the UFOs themselves.

These abductees stated that their astonishing experiences happened in underground facilities that were very similar to military bases on earth. That a connection between the abduction scenario and Colonia Dignidad actually exists will be shown later.

However, it is unlikely that the colony will be used as a production facility, for example for the complete assembly of flying discs. The existing infrastructure would probably not be sufficient for this.
Nevertheless, less complex manufacturing processes could be implemented in the colony. One conceivable option would be the provision of raw materials.

This is the only way to explain why the colony, which outwardly wants to be nothing more than a functioning religious community, has acquired mining rights to various strategic metals.

Near the village of Trovolhue (Cautin province), the colony acquired 99-year mining rights for the metals titanium and molybdenum.
Allegedly, Colonia Dignidad and its front company ABRATEC, which has business ties to the Brussels company ABRACOR, only carried out test drilling here. Allegedly...

The colony also has two gold mines, one near Temuco in southern Chile and the other near Tirua, south of Concepcion.

In the north of Chile, it also operates a sulphur and a
Mercury mine. (123)
And then there is the interview with the father of an air force officer. When asked about the connections that Colonia Dignidad maintains, he answered verbatim: "They are very powerful, have all the help they need from their country and are in direct contact with Canada, where there is a large center for scientific nuclear experiments and where they supply some semi-processed raw materials." (123) This could confirm the assumption about the possible production of raw materials in the colony, even if the reference to Canada should once again be interpreted as a cover.

The claim of the witness mentioned is also materially backed up: the colony also mines the strategic raw material uranium in Chile! (122)
The air force officer allegedly worked as a reconnaissance officer in the Chilean General Staff and apparently maintained constant contact with the colony, as he is said to have stayed there for a total of 14 months.
Another very interesting piece of information he shared is as follows:

»They are obviously working on something big, and part of the
Experiments, only a part of the laboratory, they do there, from

For security reasons, there are several laboratories in different parts of the world." What could this

"big thing" be that is being worked on in the colony?

Couldn't there possibly be a connection with the ones in the 2nd

What about the projects mentioned in the chapter *The Bell, Lantern Carrier* and *Chronos,* for the realization of which mercury and titanium apparently played a special role? If the flying discs that function on the basis of anti-gravity have already existed for a long time, then at least the *Chronos* project would certainly still have potential for development.

Is the time machine perhaps hidden behind the "big one"? Well, that remains speculation for now.

What is the economic situation of the colony?

In order to safeguard its position of power, Colonia Dignidad strives to be as economically independent as possible. "The colony is self-sufficient. Only salt and rice have to be imported from outside. Otherwise, the colonists provide for themselves. Cattle and pig pens for intensive animal breeding and a chicken farm have been built on the site; fruit, vegetables, potatoes, lettuce and grain are grown. Deer and roe deer are kept in a game reserve.

The colony operates its own grain mill, a bakery, a butcher's shop, a cheese factory, honey extractors and a 'juice shop' where lemonades, fruit juices and jams are produced, a leather workshop, a sawmill, a carpenter's shop, an electronics workshop, a blacksmith's shop, a turning shop, car repair shops, an aircraft maintenance hangar, painting workshops and storage and cooling rooms for grain one, cakes, meat, sausage and canned goods. The colony also has a hospital, a restaurant with an amusement park, a gravel plant and a concrete plant for road construction, its own fishing fleet consisting of three ocean-going cutters, a timber trade, a rapeseed mill and a food distribution company. (122)

This also partly answers the question of how Colonia Dignidad finances itself.

The colony markets the entire diversity of its agricultural production as "German products" and also as genuine organic goods with great success throughout the country, and the Andean honey "Tres picos" (remember this term!) even as far as Germany. (122)

Grants worth millions were provided by the Chilean government also paid to the colony's hospital, since under certain conditions this is also open to residents from the surrounding area of the colony.

As mentioned above, the customs and tax privilege granted by the former Chilean finance minister and head of the Chilean National Bank, Arturo Maschke, contributed significantly to the colony's solid financial basis. This exempted the colony from all taxes and customs duties. Given the variety and extent of the economic activities, the additional profit that resulted from this can only be estimated. It must have been immense.

The exemption from customs duties had another pleasant effect: the import and export of goods that were shipped in overseas containers owned by the colony could be processed as a charitable transaction without any control. This meant that the headquarters of the Third Power could supply itself unhindered with everything that was necessary for carrying out official and secret activities! There is at least one example that this was actually the case. Although the investigations of the colony grounds initiated by the law enforcement authorities in search of Paul Schäfer were never crowned with success, the "colonists" did make a mistake once. Apparently they were warned too late, and in the remaining time they did not manage to take some of the containers on the grounds underground in time. The containers in question contained machine tools, factory equipment, lathes and other equipment, the purpose of which the police could not determine and which had absolutely nothing to do with the charitable activities of the sect. (122)

In the post-Pinochet era, the colony was stripped of its non-profit status. The colony's assets, estimated at more than 100 million US dollars at the time, were privatized. *Abratec SA* (122) now acts as the holding company for all companies. This development had no negative impact on the course of business.

Are the pieces of evidence presented sufficiently conclusive to establish the identity of Colonia Dignidad with the headquarters of the Third Power?

Even if so, the chain of evidence should be extended by further links.

The UFOs - this term refers to the supposedly unknown

Machine Translated by Google

Flying objects have been flying around the world since 1947, and there is hardly a country in which they have not been sighted. If one follows the relevant publications, it is noticeable that the area of South America seems to be particularly frequently visited by these aerial intruders.

Chile is no exception here.

Nevertheless, it took until November 3, 1997 for the Chilean Air Force to end its UFO secrecy and agree to work with civilian UFO researchers. On that day, the Air Force created the Committee for the Investigation of Anomalous Space Phenomena (CIFAE). The staff of the CIFAE consists of the military officers and members of the private Chilean for UFO organization AION. (127)

The UFOs suddenly became a matter worthy of investigation. This was preceded by one of the largest waves of UFO sightings in history. This shows that, as expected, there is indeed a connection between increased UFO activity and the headquarters of the Third Power! The reports of the campesinos in the area around Colonia Dignidad, who saw planes flying in and out of the mountains on the colony's grounds, do not indicate that these were necessarily only conventional planes.

A few months after the Chilean military had dared to go public, Captain Cristian Puebla, professor of aeronautics at the Chilean Air Force Academy and one of the coordinators of the UFO project, stated in an interview with Chilean television: "Yes, these UFOs have appeared all over our country and, based on the way they maneuver, I can only say that they are of extraterrestrial origin. It is impossible that these UFOs were created by human hands." (128) It should not have escaped the attention of such a person that aircraft with an anti-gravity drive are capable of such maneuvers. But he simply cannot believe what he sees: the anti-gravity drive, which he considers revolutionary, is an earthly product!

The third chapter reported on how the Third Power implemented the flying disc technology developed by German scientists during the last World War on a large scale after 1945. An essential component of this so-called UFO phenomenon are the reports of people abducted by UFOs for the purpose of genetic reproduction of the Nordic race. It is therefore to be expected that there is not only a connection between the headquarters of the Third Power and the activities of the UFOs, but that a connection can also be made with the UFO abduction phenomenon. It was already suggested above that the underground facilities of the colony could have provided the background for those abduction reports according to which the genetic experiments described are said to have taken place in underground facilities.

In addition, there is further evidence to suggest such a connection.

When recounting the official history of Colonia Dignidad, attention has already been drawn to the inconsistencies regarding the exact number of colony inhabitants.

The author Gero Gemballa writes in his book: "The number of children in the colony is still a big secret. Experts have tried to determine the number of actual residents of the camp using photos and films from the colony that have been made available so far - and have come across a mystery. There are apparently significantly more children than would have been expected from the colony's official statistics on births and adoptions. When asked how many young people under the age of 18 there are in the colony, the agricultural advisor to Colonia Dignidad, a Dutchman named Kollonaji, replied: "About half, I think, about 50 or 60." This number is somewhat surprising, since it is known from the official members of the sect that married life and family life cannot take place between them and that there are no opportunities for intimate encounters with people of the opposite sex.

When asked about their German playmates, Chilean children from the colony unanimously reported that the German children did not know who their parents were and claimed that the German children had no parents at all!

These reports are confirmed by the statement of the then 18-year-old Zalo Luna told the Chilean parliament that sexual contact was strictly forbidden in the colony. However, there was a kindergarten full of children whose origins nobody knew. And then the decisive sentence: In the colony, Experiments with artificial insemination have taken place. This is in line with the statement by Adrian Bravo, chairman of the colony's patient committee until 1996: "In the colony, artificial insemination is used on animals. I know that. Frozen and fresh semen is used for this. This has had good results. They are very familiar with the method. The origins of many children are unknown. They are not registered with the registry office in Catillo or the embassy in Santiago. That is why one thinks that they have also used what they did on animals on humans."

In all of this, Mr. Bravo seems to have overlooked the fact that even in the case of artificial insemination, one parent, namely the mother carrying the child, is known. However, several witnesses independently claim that both parents of these children are unknown. It almost seems as if Adrian Bravo knew more than he was initially willing to admit. He later testified before the Chilean parliamentary commission that he believed genetic experiments in the colony were possible.

Gisela Seewald, the doctor in the camp, is suspected of having participated in these experiments. She received her doctorate in Germany in 1957 and in her doctoral thesis she dealt in detail with the alteration of genetic material and the influence of chemicals and X-rays on reproductive ability. (122)

Gero Gemballa writes about these assumptions: "Genetic research is not a simple field of science. Changing the human genome requires a high level of scientific competence, a level of professionalism that the human researchers in the colony cannot be trusted to have." Far from it, one can only say! If he knew the true background of Colonia Dignidad, Mr. Gemballa would certainly come to a different conclusion.

Is further proof needed for the suggestion made here that Colonia Dignidad is the place (at least one place) where the Third Power's genetic experiments took place?

When asked about the children in the colony, agricultural consultant Kollonaji was confronted with a second question: And what do they look like? Do they look like Chileans? Or are they blonde and have blue eyes? The answer: "You know that!"

What is so obvious here that you just have to know it?

Socialist MP Jaime Naranjo moved in
remarkable conclusion:

"The colony does not accept children who have strong Latino characteristics, such as dark skin. They are only interested in children with light skin, blond hair and corresponding genetic characteristics. But children or adults with Latino characteristics are almost never seen in the colony. Only people with light skin and light hair. That's strange." (122)

Given the knowledge of the activities of the Third Power, nothing else was to be expected - quite the opposite! The statements on this matter are further confirmed by a photo showing some children from Colonia Dignidad (Figure 30).

Back to the interview with the father of an air force officer, who said that something "big" was being worked on in the colony. He made another astonishing statement. Referring to the alleged torture camp in the colony, he said: "Experiments are carried out on the prisoners which are known as soul cleansing. In the basement (or better: in the underground facilities; the

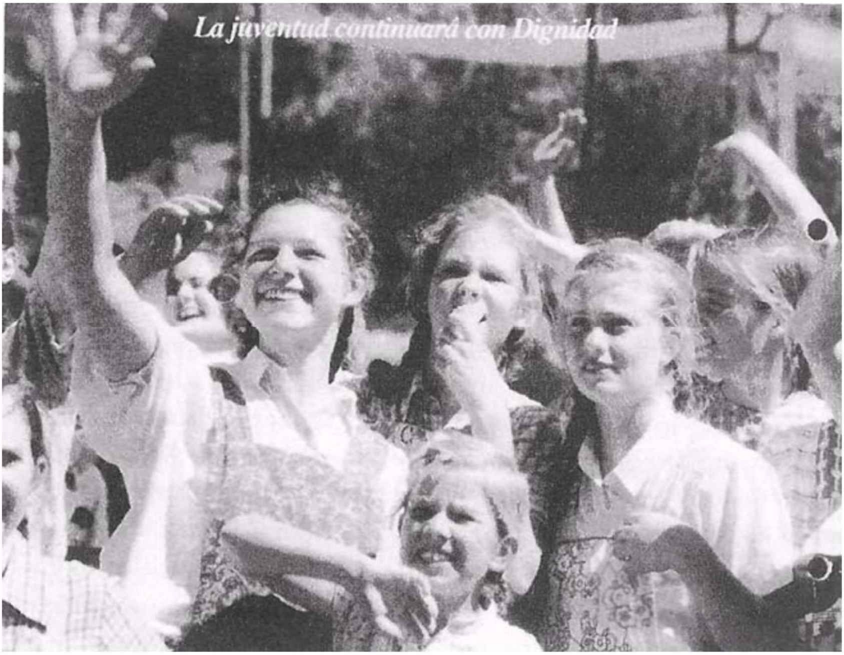
La juventud continuará con Dignidad

Abb. 30

A special clinic has been set up for them (author) where they are subjected to things ranging from hypnosis to experiments with medication, operations to combat aggressiveness, the use of experimental radiation...' (123) If the word 'prisoners' is understood here as a synonym for those abducted by UFOs, this statement immediately takes on a deeper meaning. What else happens in the course of UFO abductions other than that the abduction victims are implanted with 'false memories' by means of hypnosis, true memories are suppressed (in the sense of cleansing the soul), they are sedated with medication and implants are surgically inserted, and that a method of communication other than oral communication is probably sought using low-frequency electromagnetic transmitters?

In the end, the legitimate question remains whether the rumours about torture and child abuse are not largely intended to conceal the truth, which cannot be completely suppressed given the extent of the kidnapping scenario. The unpleasant consequence of this, the criminal proceedings brought as a result, were accepted. A rumour does not make the truth. On 16 November 2004, after seven years of investigation, the Chilean judge Hernan Gonzalez sentenced Paul Schäfer in absentia for child abuse and another 20 leading settlers for aiding and abetting and concealing the crimes to up to five years in prison, but Roberto Saldias' lawyer immediately announced that he would appeal against some of the sentences. (60) This seems to have satisfied the demands of public opinion and brought the "revelations" about Colonia Dignidad to a provisional conclusion.

It remains to be seen whether Paul Schäfer, who was arrested in his Argentine exile in March 2005 and was already 83 years old at the time of his arrest and suffering from a serious heart condition, will actually have to serve his prison sentence.

Since 1989, during the period of so-called democratization in Chile, several police inspections of the colony grounds failed for the reasons mentioned above and Paul Schäfer could not be found for a long time, a tacit agreement was finally reached between the Chilean government and Colonia Dignidad. The result was the transformation into an apparently normal agricultural cooperative with greater freedom of movement for the actual cult members.

The fact that nothing has changed is demonstrated by the identity of the leading middleman on the part of the settlement. The doctor Hartmut Hopp is a member of the post-war generation and joined Paul Schäfer's group as a 13-year-old boy. The colony paid for his studies in the United States, and as a result Hopp served not only as chief physician, but also as "Foreign Minister."

As such, he was able to establish first-class connections through the son of the Chilean intelligence chief Manuel Contreras, who was a friend of his, and became a house guest of the Pinochets. Most recently, he was Paul Schäfer's official representative for the colony's interests. Under the new conditions, the personnel continuity of Colonia Dignidad should at least be maintained.

From the mid-1990s onwards, the influence of the former military rulers, whose protection the colony could always count on, began to wane. At the same time, public interest increasingly focused on the alleged abuses.

Under these circumstances, maintaining the terrestrial base may simply have become inconvenient for the Third Power. The demonstrative opening of the colony to the outside world and the freedom of movement granted to the "cult followers" are possible indications that the headquarters had been relocated in the meantime. The large wave of UFO sightings in Chile in 1997 and 1998 could also be an indication of this. Evacuating the base would certainly have resulted in a large number of corresponding activities. Furthermore, in contrast to the 60s and 70s, the need for an earthly headquarters may no longer have been absolutely necessary. There were other, better alternatives. See more on this in the next chapter.

At the beginning of the search for evidence of the existence of an earthly headquarters of the Third Power described here, the following statement was made: Landig's veracity stands and falls with the actual

existence of extensive and artificially created cave systems in which activities of the Third Power can be proven! If these caves are found, the headquarters of the Third Power will be identified.

With the extensive facilities beneath Colonia Dignidad, the caves have been found, and all the features characteristic of the Third Power

Activities have been proven in their environment. Wilhelm Landig told the truth.

Wilhelm Landig cannot be accused of using Antarctica as a synonym for Argentina. Nor could he be expected to call the underground headquarters of the Third Power by its real name, Colonia Dignidad.

Fortunately, however, Wilhelm Landig has encoded his knowledge of the true function of Colonia Dignidad in his non-fiction novel *Wolfszeit um Thule* in a simple and well-thought-out way. Any doubt is completely ruled out.

As mentioned above, the export hit of the Colony, the famous Andean honey, »Tres picos«.

In the past, selected groups of German visitors were greeted at the entrance to Colonia Dignidad with the following text: "Allow us to inform you of a very interesting and beautiful natural

phenomenon. In Bavaria, Germany, in the Alps, next to the Zuspitze, there is a mountain called Dreitorspitze, which means that this mountain has three prominent peaks, visible from afar.

What does that have to do with Chile, you ask. Prepare to be surprised: there is the same mountain in Chile, in the Parral Cordillera.« (123) »Tres Picos« in fact.

Apart from the fact that this mountain actually exists in the neighborhood of the colony, the three mountain peaks have a previous symbol that further underlines the connection between Colonia Dignidad and the Third Power. It is the emblem of the former Chilean NSDAP foreign organization.

The depiction of the »Tres Picos« on postcards was also part of the the public relations work carried out by the colony (Figure 31).

And what do the “Tres picos” have to do with Wilhelm Landig?

The encrypted section about the "Tres Picos" in *Wolf Time around Thule* is in the section of the book that deals with the old cave systems and their alleged discovery by Edmund Kiss. It literally says: "An old legend that never dies down also tells of an Inca treasure in the area of Los Tres Picos and also of treasures near Pez Chico. Adventurers are said to have found entrances to this cave system, but then they disappeared and were never heard of again." (1) In plain language

Machine Translated by Google

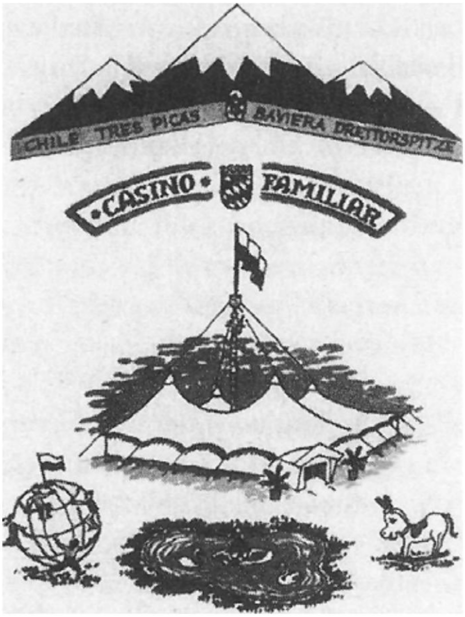

Abb. 31

This statement should probably be understood as follows:

In the area of »Tres Picos« the entrances to the cave system have already been found, but secrecy is to be maintained until further notice.

The circle of evidence has thus been closed.

The journalist Gero Gemballa wrote almost resignedly at the end of one of his books about the result of his extensive research into Colonia Dignidad: "The story has no end. There is still some great secret behind it." (124) The great secret is no longer one, the truth has been revealed.

On July 20, 1989, the world's most important celebration in honor of Adolf Hitler's 100th birthday took place on a hill near the Chilean capital Santiago. With an unparalleled matter-of-factness that shows how deeply Chile's role in the revival of National Socialism is already anchored in the subconscious of many Chileans, the keynote speaker that day, the former Chilean diplomat and writer Miguel Serrano, shouted across the auditorium:

Machine Translated by Google

"From here begins the return of our leader, comrade, from this magical and mystical land, from this mysterious territory called Chile."

And in addition, a Spanish delegate said in his welcoming speech that the survival strategy of Hitler's successors emanates from Chile. (125)

There is nothing left to add to that.

Addendum:

Shortly after the manuscript was completed and submitted to the publisher, Colonia Dignidad made headlines in the international press twice more.

In mid-June 2005, it was reported: "Chile: Huge weapons cache discovered in Colonia Dignidad." (60) Rocket launchers, assault rifles, foreign-made mines and large stocks of ammunition were seized in three containers. Some of the weapons found were 40 years old. This was another "tranquilizer" for public opinion. All those who had always suspected that the "sect" was a criminal organization or accused it of collaborating with the military now saw their opinion confirmed.

At the same time, this relatively ridiculous discovery succeeded in concealing - now probably for good - the full extent of the measures that had taken place on the colony's premises. Since the weapons were not found in the underground facilities, but in three containers, it does not seem unlikely that even these weapons, some of which were technically outdated, were not originally owned by the colony, but were only brought to the Colonia Dignidad premises later.

At the end of August 2005, the news agencies finally ran the headline: "Chilean government puts an end to Colonia Dignidad." And further: "With a large police presence involving armored vehicles, water cannons and a helicopter, the Chilean state ended the special status of the German torture camp Colonia Dignidad on August 26, 2005. ... After the arrest of its leader Paul Schäfer in Argentina in March 2005 and the subsequent discovery of large weapons depots and archives, a decision taken in 1999 by the Council for the Defense of the Chilean Republic was taken.

The investigation into the formation of a criminal organization, initiated by the State Department (CDE), has reached the decisive stage of the trial. This trial gave a judge the power to appoint a state bankruptcy administrator, Herman Chadwick, for the cult settlement and its numerous front companies. The leadership clique that had succeeded Schäfer has now been swept away, the gate to Colonia Dignidad remains open and telephone calls to and from the settlement are no longer monitored. ... The major operation, staged for media effect, came 15 years after the end of the Pinochet dictatorship, but in time for the Chilean parliamentary elections in December.« (60)

In addition to the usual exaggerations such as "torture settlement", "discovery of large weapons depots and archives", such "revelations" only express what has already been suspected elsewhere in this chapter. Probably in connection with the large wave of UFO sightings, the headquarters of the Third Power was relocated at the end of the 1990s. Where to? The next chapter shows one of the possible alternatives.

Machine Translated by Google

Machine Translated by Google

CHAPTER 6

THE CONNECTION TO MARS

In contrast to the previous chapters, this one seems at first glance to be more speculative in nature. The almost unthinkable possibility that the Third Power has mastered manned space flight to Mars in recent decades, and could even establish a colony on this planet, actually seems to stretch the imagination.

Nevertheless, there is considerable evidence to support this idea, and the existence of a base of operations beyond our planet seems to be a necessity in order to explain the extent of the activities triggered by the Third Power.

The spatial and material limitations to which the Earth headquarters, Colonia Dignidad, is subject make developed logistics - for example for the production and maintenance of the flying disc fleet - seem unthinkable.

Theoretically, the extraterrestrial base could also be on the moon or another planet. However, as will be shown below, the traces clearly lead to the planet Mars. In addition, the moon would only be a relatively safe refuge, as it has been accessible by manned vehicles for over three decades using American and Russian technology.

Officially, the first attempt to travel the distance from Earth to Mars with a terrestrial spacecraft was made on October 10, 1960. However, the Russian *Mars A* probe was unable to continue its flight after the third rocket stage failed at an altitude of 120 kilometers. The *Mars* B probe, launched on October 14, 1960, and *Mars* C, launched on October 24, 1962, also failed in Earth orbit.

Mars 1, launched on November 1, 1962, was the first to get close to Mars. The loss of radio communication on March 21, 1963 was the beginning of an almost "suspicious" series of technical glitches with Mars probes, a series of glitches that has not ended up until the recent past and which will be discussed later.

This shows that the Russians undoubtedly had the technical know-how to reach Mars in the early 1960s. The Americans were only able to achieve a similar success in 1964 with the *Mariner 4* probe.

At this point, the question arises whether the Third Power, with its technological capabilities as described in the third chapter, could not have found its way to Mars much earlier.

Be it with the means of anti-gravity or with nuclear-powered spaceships. Is there independent evidence for this?

In fact, a book written in 1958 entitled *Yo he estado on en marte* gives the impression that important information about the activities of the Third Power, including the exploration of the planet Mars, had leaked to the public.

On the other hand, the book also contains claims that are either deliberately misleading or are intended to imaginatively condense rumors. For example, in connection with flying saucers, aliens are also mentioned. The introduction of such claims here also serves to conceal the true facts!

Below are some indications that confirm the actions of the Third Power in the 1950s.

Colonization of Mars (quoted from 17 and 59):

"... an initiated group ... dedicated solely to scientific research. It is completely free from concessions and obligations to governments or rulers, but enjoys unlimited financial backing";

"Since the community did not lack resources thanks to the war treasures of Benito Mussolini and Adolf Hitler, it built an underground city in South America...";

»... study center in the Andean region ...«; »Since 1946 it

has had a large collecting mirror for cosmic energy ...«; »Four German scientists accompanied me on this visit ...«;

»In 1951 we had a plane that had practically run out of fuel
could not go out, traveled all seas and countries";

»The ship worked completely silently, except for a slight hum ...«;

»The moon, which was only a stopover for them ...«; »... describes a journey

to Mars ...«; »... to build a permanent Mars

base ...«; »... precise description of the saucer and its

occupants, who ... were tall beings with a very pale face, deep blue (Scandinavian, as Mario Rojas says) eyes ...«.

An attempt to read these fragments in context leads to an astonishing result that requires no further comment: a group of German scientists, independent of any other government on earth, had been working in an underground center in the Andean region since 1946. Apart from the year, this description fits the *Centro Atomico* near Bariloche in Argentina. In 1946, Peron's escape organization brought the first scientists into the country. The group had a large financial backing thanks to the funds transferred at the end of the war. In 1951, the scientists involved were able to complete a manned saucer-shaped anti-gravity aircraft that operated almost silently (see also Chapter 2). Its crew was of Nordic appearance. Using the moon as a stopover, a trip to Mars was made in the 1950s (the book was published in 1958) with the aim of building a permanent base there.

If this colonization of Mars by the Third Power did indeed take place before 1960, then anomalies should have occurred during subsequent Russian and American flights to Mars that would directly indicate the presence of an alien power. These would probably be expected first of all in terms of the obstruction of undesirable activities of these two powers, as well as the observation of inexplicable surface structures on Mars.

Both anomalies exist. The first was already mentioned in the description of the early Russian attempts to send probes to Mars. The loss of the *Mars 1* probe was not an isolated case.

Between 1960 and 2004, 37 Mars expeditions were launched. Of these, nine failed during takeoff or the outbound flight, 16 were considered successful, and 13 met a partly mysterious end in the final phase of their flight or during landing.

What is striking is the accumulation of "losses" in the years between 1989 and 2003. However, a developed technology for exploring the planets of our solar system has existed since the early 1970s. During the far more difficult flights of the *Pioneer, Voyager* and *Cassini* missions to the planets far from Earth, this technology has proven its reliability without exception.

Here is an overview of the Mars explorations that failed in the last phase:

Start	**Space probe**	**Land**	**Reason for failure**
01.11.1962	*Mars 1*	USSR	Loss of radio connection
30.11.1964	*Probe 2*	USSR	Loss of radio contact
28.05.1971	*March 3*	USSR	20 seconds after landing Radio contact interrupted
21.07.1973	*Mars 4*	USSR	Mars orbit missed, braking engine failed
25.07.1973	*March 5*	USSR	Orbiter worked only a few days
05.08.1973	*March 6*	USSR	Dropping off a landing capsule, radio contact breaks off before landing
09.08.1973	*Mars 7*	USSR	orbiter and lander miss their Goal
12.07.1988	*Phobos2*	USSR	Before landing on the Martian moon Phobos, radio contact with the probe is lost USA Radio contact is lost when the braking
25.09.1992	*Mars Observer*		engine is ignited for entering Mars orbit Japan Deviates from course and misses Mars USA Loss of the probe when entering Mars orbit
04.07.1998	*Nozomi*		
11.12.1998	*Mars Climate*		

03.01.1999 *Mars Polar* USA landing failed 02.06.2003 *Mars Express* USA loss of the lander Beagle 2

If these failures are at least partly due to interventions by the Third Power, the question remains as to which criteria are decisive for the planned abort of missions.

While the mobile *rovers Pathfinder, Rover 1* and *Rover 2* were able to work undisturbed, this was not the case with the *Mars Polar Lander* and *Beagle 2.* Is the reason for the failure of the last two simply due to the landing site chosen, which was not accepted by the Third Power?

At least since 1997, nothing seems to stand in the way of an undisturbed mapping of the surface of Mars, which could be attributed solely to the optical camouflage options developed by then (see below).

It is also interesting that after the extremely successful *Viking* missions of the Americans between 1976 and 1997, no further successful approach to Mars could be carried out. A possible reason for this will be mentioned later.

Less well-known were also irregularities in the landing of the Viking robots.

Johannes von Buttlar writes about this in his book *They Come from Foreign Stars:* »Close-ups of the Viking II robot made the originally planned landing site ... appear extremely unsuitable.
Based on the images transmitted from orbit, ... an area of huge undulating sand dunes was selected. During the descent to the surface of Mars, the data transmission of the lander worked perfectly. But when it touched down, the image and measurement data transmission to Earth unexpectedly failed. For the next nine hours, the lander was silent, but then suddenly, without receiving a command from the NASA control station, it resumed data transmission to Earth. The confusion was complete when, instead of the expected images of undulating sand dunes, it sent images of an endless, rocky desert to Earth ... To this day, the mystery of why the photographic data of the landing area transmitted from orbit did not bear the slightest resemblance to the real landscape has not been solved.« (129)

A similar situation occurred with the "start-up difficulties" of the American Mars rover *Spirit (Rover 1),* from which no or only confused data reached Earth between January 22 and February 2 after its successful landing on January 4, 2004. It was as if someone had shown a passing interest in this terrestrial technology and simply turned the "switch" to "off" during their investigations.

The failure of the only post-communist Russian Mars probe to date remains unexplained. *Mars-96* took off from the launch site on November 16, 1996.

On board was a collection of high-quality measuring instruments, which far exceeded the equipment of the American *Mars Global Surveyor, which* was launched almost at the same time. Even the resolution of the cameras was more than twice as high. In the final phase of the launch, the cargo suddenly separated from the rocket motor.

The valuable equipment crashed to Earth, the remaining propulsion unit continued to head towards Mars. Sabotage seemed to be the most plausible reason for the failure of the corresponding software. (130)

Also installed on board was a device for measuring the element xenon 129, which is produced as a result of radioactive decay processes during nuclear fission. Even before the launch of *Mars-96 ,* it was known that this element is part of the Martian atmosphere in unexpected quantities. An accepted scientific theory cites a supernova near the solar system that was forming at the time as a possible cause for the existence of xenon 129. The iodine 129 produced later transformed into xenon 129. However, this theory cannot explain why the xenon content on Mars is three times higher than that on Earth. (130)

Is the Third Power perhaps responsible for the high xenon content on the Mars and conducted nuclear tests on it?

Even if this all sounds a bit like a conspiracy theory, unidentified flying objects have been blamed for the accidents involving at least two Mars probes.

On July 7, 1988, the Russians launched the *Phobos I* probe , followed five days later by *Phobos II.*

Phobos I was lost just two months after launch, allegedly as a result of a wrong radio command. *Phobos II,* on the other hand, was able to be guided into an orbit around Mars as planned. The next step was to enter a circular orbit around the Martian moon Phobos. On March 28, radio contact with the probe was suddenly lost. A few seconds before the connection was lost , *Phobos II* was able to photograph a strangely shaped object between the probe and Mars. The Russians later released these images, with the exception of the very last one. A shadow can be seen that can be described as a thin ellipse (Figure 32). A report published in 1989 stated that the probe had gone into a spin, either as a result of a computer glitch or as a result of a collision with an unknown object. (131)

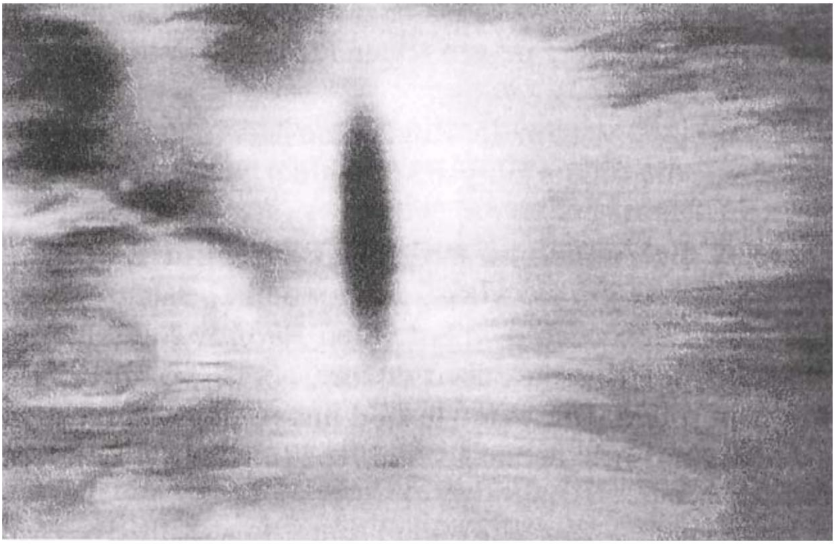

Abb. 32

What type of object was it that, flying between the probe and Mars, cast an ellipsoidal shadow on Mars and ultimately caused the probe to crash? The very last image, which has been kept secret to this day, might have solved the mystery. The shape of the shadow makes one think of a flying disk.

On December 25, 2003, *Beagle 2* was scheduled to land on the surface of Mars. Up to that day, the ESA mission had been successful.

During the landing attempt, however, contact with the Mars robot was lost. On March 8, 2003, news agencies published details from the investigation report of the European Space Agency ESA. It said that *Beagle 2* probably crashed during landing. An unidentifiable object may have been responsible for the loss. In a photo taken shortly after the lander was undocked from the *Mars Express orbiter,* there is a spot that could be this object.

How similar the two incidents are!

In addition to hindering Mars expeditions of other space-faring powers, another anomaly was the observation of unusual surface structures on Mars that would allow conclusions to be drawn about the activities of the Third Power.

A large number of high-resolution images of Mars were taken by the Mars orbiters *Viking I* and *II* starting in 1976. Some of them showed strange structures, and discussions about them have not stopped to this day.

Of the books published on this subject, only a few meet scientific standards. The two most important are *The Martian Enigmas* (132) and *The Case For The Face* (130).

Of the objects in question on the surface of Mars, for which a non-natural origin or artificial formation can be assumed, only those from the so-called Cydonia region will be examined in more detail here as examples.

The Viking images 35A72, 35A73 and 35A74 (summarized in Figure 33) provide a good overview . The formations "Face", "City", "D&M Pyramid" and "Tholus" are particularly interesting in these photos.

The most striking feature, the Martian face, has been adequately reported elsewhere. Since several high-quality images from the Viking missions provided a solid basis for a wide range of technical analyses, the surprise was all the greater when the images from the *Mars Global Surveyor* in 1997 gave little indication of the facial structure (Figure 34). What had happened between 1976 and 1997?

In 1976, the “City” consisted of several pyramidal complexes and a strange object, the so-called “Fortress,” with straight “walls” up to two kilometers long.

Machine Translated by Google

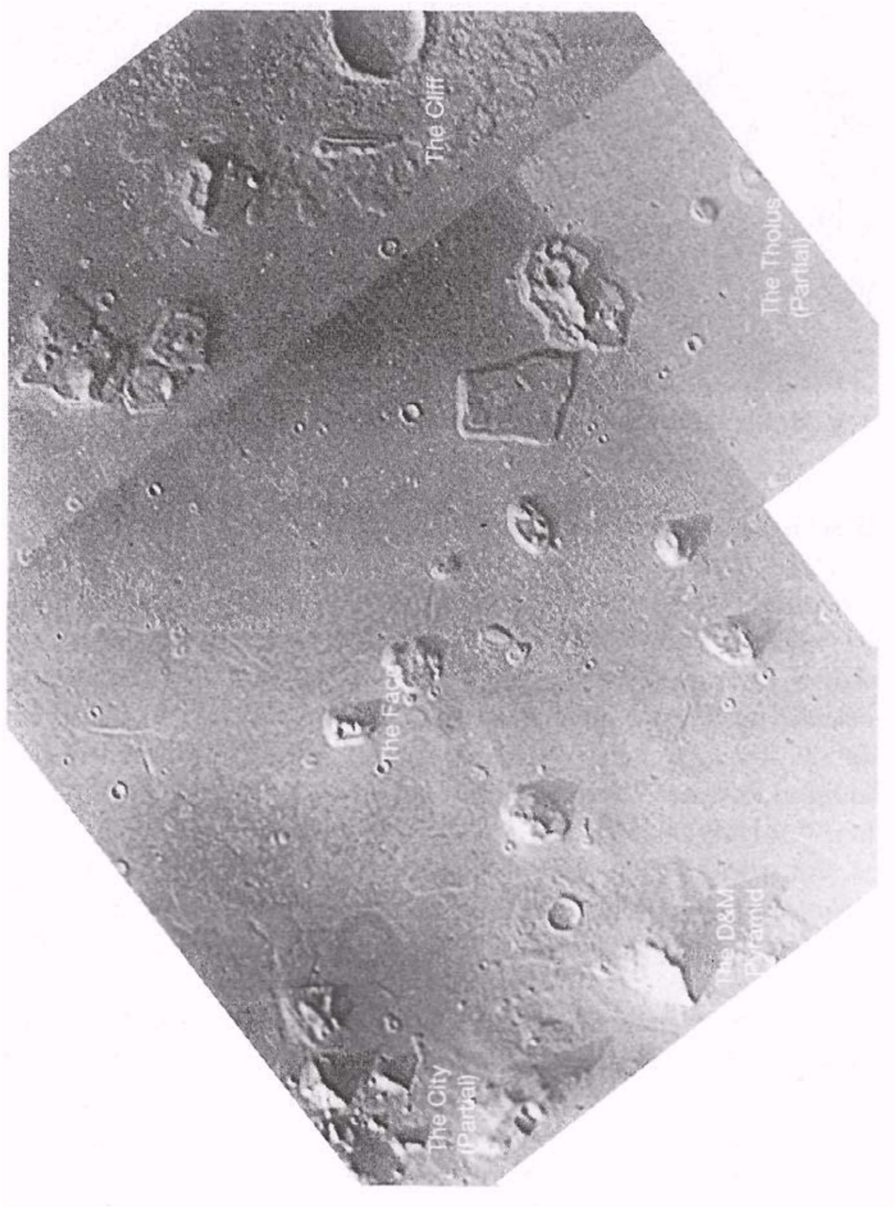
The Cliff
The Tholus (Partial)
The Face
The D&M Pyramid
The City (Partial)

Abb. 33

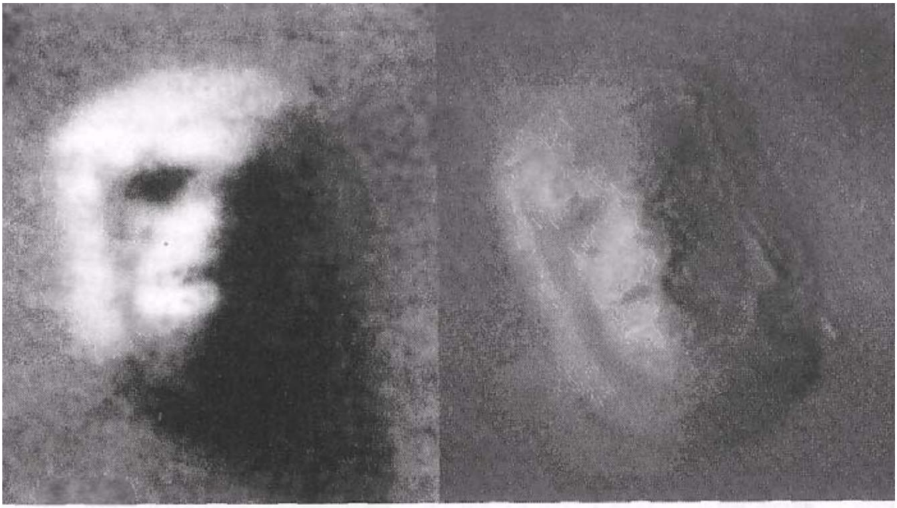

Fig. 34: The change in the face of Mars between 1976 and 1997

The black hole on the right side of the "D&M Pyramid" (70A113) was initially speculated to be an impact crater that had damaged the east side of the pyramid (Figure 35). This fact also served as an argument for the great age of the "artificial" Mars formations, as claimed by some. However, the 3D analysis carried out produced a different result. The opening interpreted as a crater could therefore be the entrance to a tunnel that leads directly into the interior of the pyramid (Figure 36).

A possible tunnel entrance was also observed at the »Tholus« (35A74) using 3D analysis. Here the entrance appears to be halfway up a channel that runs around the entire mountain (Figure 37).

Another interesting formation, called the "Bowl," is located about 100 kilometers from the actual Cydonia complex. It is very reminiscent of the shape of a Mayan pyramid. A "ramp" seems to lead directly into the center (Figure 38).

Are the images from the *Mars Global Surveyor* from 1997 proof that all the image interpreters involved in the analysis of the Viking images were fooled by the idea that they were seeing something that was not real? Hardly. A period of 20 years would have given the Third

Abb. 35

Power was certainly sufficient to change the appearance of those monumental formations to such an extent that, at least from a purely visual perspective, an artificial origin no longer had to be assumed.

And yet, beyond visual observation, there is compelling evidence that these surface structures on Mars did not form naturally!

The evidence for this is provided by the so-called fractal analysis.

This enables a clear statement regarding the natural or artificial origin of an object and is for this reason also used in military reconnaissance when analyzing, for example,

B. from satellite photos. It is based on the fact that natural objects tend to develop the same substructures over different size scales. For example, small stones develop the same patterns of breaks and jagged edges as large rocks, or the bulges on the edges of small water holes are the same as those of long coastlines, etc. Fractal analysis only fails where it succeeds in artificially imitating natural forms. The examination of the visually striking structures in the Cydonia region using fractal analysis revealed clear evidence of artificial formation or reshaping at least for the Mars face, the "City", especially for the "Fortress", and for the object known as the "Bowl". (132)

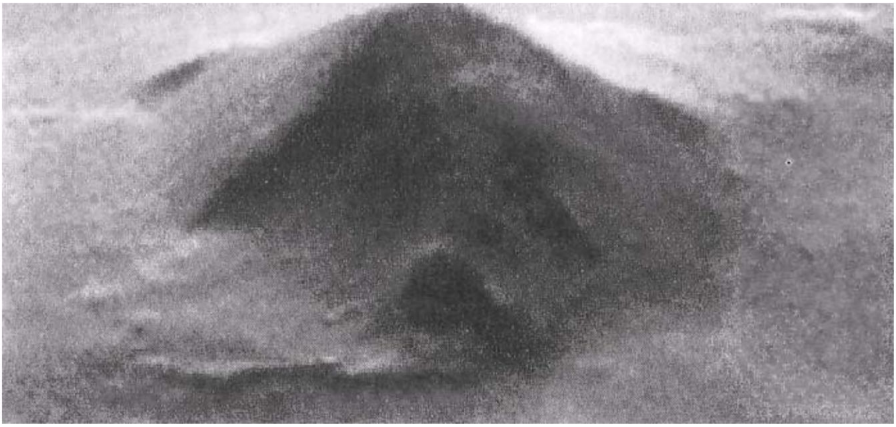

Abb. 36

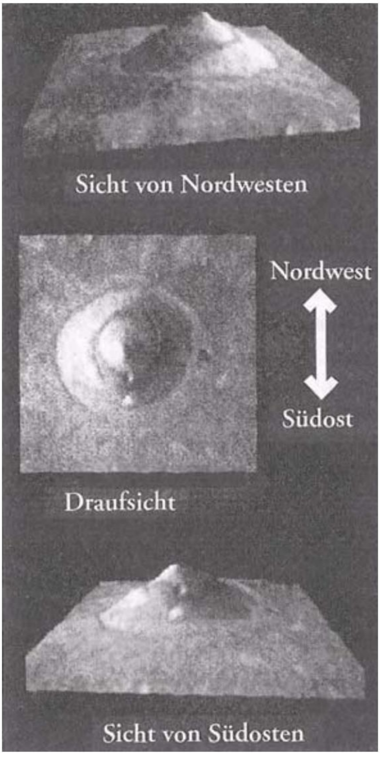
Sicht von Nordwesten
Nordwest
Südost
Draufsicht
Sicht von Südosten

Abb. 37

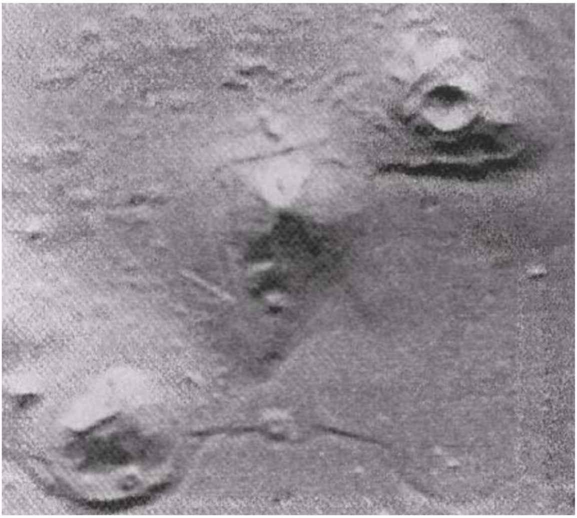

Abb. 38

It is time for an interim assessment. What facts gathered so far support the theory that the Third Power has long since solved the technical problem of reaching the planet Mars with manned spaceships and maintains a permanently manned station there?

1. There is a fairly clear “tradition” from the 1950s.
2. The technical breakdowns listed go far beyond mere suspicion, in terms of their nature and number, especially when the problem-free functioning of the technically more demanding missions to the distant planets of our solar system is taken into account.

3. The artificial surface structures expected on Mars have actually been identified, and they are more recent than previously thought. There was enough time between 1976 and 1997 to ensure the perfect camouflage of these objects.

What is still missing? It would be extremely desirable and, in fact, logical to find statements in the oral traditions of those abducted from UFOs that relate to Mars.

And these statements actually exist, although they are only dealt with marginally in the relevant literature.
The authors have probably not yet realized how explosive they are, which is because they always assume that extraterrestrials are the originators of the abduction phenomenon and are therefore operating in a completely wrong overall context.

Now, no one will want to assume that the abductees were actually on Mars, but references to what really happened on Mars are to be expected in view of the conditioning strategy (see Chapter 3) of the Third Power. Images induced through hypnosis should then be reflected in the conversation records of the abduction researchers.

David Jacobs writes: »Many (!!!; emphasis added)
Reports also describe stays in a desert-like area.
Although the exact meaning of this scenario is unclear, there are indications that this landscape is part of the aliens' homeland."

For example, the abducted Susan Steiner remembered a “stay” in this environment and additionally noted: “The sky is reddish.” (69)

No one who saw the panoramic images from the Viking lander in 1976 will ever be able to forget the distinctly desert-like character of the Martian landscape and the reddish Martian sky. This red color is caused by the scattering of sunlight by the fine dust in the Martian atmosphere.

If this landscape is not part of the alien homeland, it may be a second Earth for members of the Third Power, who apparently carry out activities on Mars that are directly related to the production of their auxiliary forces, the Greys.
The third chapter described how the kidnapped Betty Andreasson reported on the replacement of the eyes of one of these gray ones by the light-haired creatures.

How did Betty get to the scene of this incident?

One of their extra-worldly journeys (an induced sequence of images) ended underground. "We are going through a tunnel. ... Their suits were the only illumination. ... that they passed openings that belonged to other intersecting tunnels. It was obvious that it was ... carved out of rock. ... As they emerged from the tunnel they had a view of a place where the ..., atmosphere was a vibrant red color. ... and there are buildings - square buildings with openings ... They seemed to be made of stucco or cement. ... There was no plant life. ... Just land and buildings." Although the exact sequence of events during an action sometimes remains

unclear, especially through repeated questioning over several hypnosis sessions, Betty seems to have "experienced" the reported eye operation in one of those buildings. When asked: "Where do they live?" Betty answers: "I know - I think there, in this place where I am right now. ... We leave the room and go back down the corridor, and the door closes again so that you can no longer see the red surroundings. Everything was red there - this atmosphere." (79, 133)

What speaks in this report for the colonization of Mars by the Third Power is the existence of a tunnel system on a planet with a red atmosphere and no vegetation (desert-like), which - although they could only move outside the buildings in space suits - nevertheless seems to be the habitat of beings of Nordic type as well as the Greys.

If this is the case, how does the Third Power manage to hide its activities on Mars from the prying camera eyes of the successful American and European Mars probes?

The orbiters *Mars Global Surveyor* (1997), *Mars Odyssey* (2001) and *Mars Express* (2003) were able to map the surface of Mars undisturbed and send images to Earth.

On the one hand, the spatial extent of a potential Mars colony is certainly very limited, and on the other hand, a not inconsiderable part of it is likely to be underground.

This is also indicated by Betty Andreasson's report on the tunnel system. The possible dismantling that took place between 1976 and 1997, or the camouflage of the monumental structures recorded by the Viking probes by changing the surface, has already been mentioned. In addition, other measures to protect against optical reconnaissance are conceivable.

For example, the NASA *Jet Propulsion Laboratory* has developed an adaptive camouflage system that has similar effects to the camouflage practised in nature, for example by chameleons. The system creates the illusion of complete transparency around the object to be camouflaged, depending on changing light and colour conditions.

This technology works on an opto-electric basis, ie with the help of a flexible network of electronic flat screens, and projects the side of an object that is far from the observer onto the side closest to him. Airplanes, tanks and buildings thus become completely invisible. (73)

One key question remains: Why do Americans, Russians and Europeans take the risk of losing their extremely costly technology or at least seeing it partially disabled during flights to Mars? After all, every mission is a gamble.

There can only be one reason for this: on the one hand, secrecy is almost absolute, only a few people in charge know the true reasons for the failure. On the other hand, the public desire to explore Mars is so great that

Disasters must be consciously accepted if one does not want to reveal the greatest secret of the last 60 years.

It remains to be clarified whether it is generally possible for humans to survive on Mars for a long period of time. The following influencing factors must be taken into account:

Sunlight As is

clear from looking at the images of the surface of Mars, our neighboring planet offers sufficiently good visibility - and therefore also lighting conditions.

Temperature

The temperature on Mars fluctuates on average between +30 and -70 degrees Celsius and is therefore bearable and manageable for humans.

Breathing

air The mixing ratio of the gases in our breathing air can be created artificially.

For the production of the particularly important element oxygen through electrolysis, the 95% carbon dioxide content within the Martian atmosphere provides an almost inexhaustible and, above all, easily accessible source of raw materials.

Machine Translated by Google

Air pressure

Simulating the earth's air pressure inside space suits and buildings is easy. This happens every day, for example, inside the passenger cabins of our airplanes.

Gravity

The lower gravity on Mars means that a step costs only about half as much energy as on Earth, and walking speed is reduced by 40 percent. The negative effects of permanently reduced gravity, especially on the muscular system, are well known from the long-term flights of Russian cosmonauts.

The creation and maintenance of a locally limited gravitational field corresponding to the earth's inside the artificial habitats would therefore be a considerable problem. However, if we take into account the progress that the Third Power has undoubtedly made in controlling gravity since the first attempts to abolish it in 1944/45 (see Chapter 2), it is not inconceivable that it was able to master this challenge as well.

Radiation

protection Permanent shielding against life-threatening radiation can be achieved by using aluminum shields several centimeters thick to protect against high-energy ions, as well as a ten-centimeter-thick, shell-like water tank to protect against solar proton showers. (134)

Water resources

Water is abundant on Mars. At the beginning of February 2004, the European Mars probe *Mars Express* delivered almost unbelievable data.

Large parts of the South Pole are made of ice. Behind steep, steep slopes there are ice areas 400 kilometers long and up to three kilometers thick. The Spirit rover also discovered minerals in the Martian soil that only form after water evaporates.

Machine Translated by Google

Energy resources

The use of solar and nuclear energy must be assumed. The increased content of xenon 129 in the Martian atmosphere could indicate the use of the latter. The Third Power has an almost inexhaustible source of energy if it has actually succeeded in tapping into the fluctuating zero-point energy field.

Mineral

resources Since the geological structure of Mars is similar to that of Earth, it is likely that it also has corresponding deposits of metal ores. Iron, at least, is present in large quantities, as evidenced by the presence of red dust on the surface of Mars.

This means that all conditions are assumed to be in place that would enable humans to colonize Mars and maintain long-lasting habitats.

And hasn't life existed on Mars for millions or even billions of years, and isn't this alone proof that the environment on this planet is by no means biologically sterile?

In the summer of 1984, American scientists found several stones in the Antarctic. Their analysis showed that at least one of them had to come from Mars. This piece of rock, known as ALH 84001, is said to have been torn from the surface of Mars and hurled into space around 3.6 billion years ago during the heavy meteorite bombardment.

In a press conference broadcast by the news channel CNN on August 1, 1996, NASA director Daniel Golden announced that organic material had been found in the Mars meteorite that definitely did not come from Earth. Fossil remains of microbes were clearly visible. This seemed to be the first proof of the existence of extraterrestrial life.

However, the optimism of that time has given way to obvious disillusionment. Investigations in the meantime have shown that the "Mars bacteria" could simply be the weathered relics of inanimate proteins. There are no arguments against the theory of nanobacteria in the

The small size of the structures observed in the electron microscope also suggests that Mars rocks are from Mars. Other research results, which cannot be discussed in detail here, also confirm the negative findings of the biological experiments carried out by the Viking landers in the 1980s and destroy the hope of an inhabited neighboring planet. (134)

But how is it that the Martian atmosphere contains amounts of methane that should not actually exist on this scale?

Methane is a gas that is constantly breaking down on Mars due to the intense UV radiation. The "lifespan" of methane on this planet is probably 300 years at most. This invalidates the idea that the gas could have come from earlier geological activities that apparently stopped four million years ago. Therefore, there should be no methane left on the neighboring planet today. Only a biological cause remains conceivable. The newspaper *Die Welt* of 30 March 2004 quotes Dr. Lutz Richter from the DLR Institute for Space Simulation in Cologne: "Methane in the Martian atmosphere is an indication of life on the Red Planet *today ."* (135) One should add: of life that has only recently taken hold of Mars and to a very limited extent!

What had to be proven...

Addendum:

Shortly before this book went to print, the media (including *Spiegel Online on September 21, 2005)* reported some astonishing things about the planet Mars. When evaluating the data collected by the *Global Surveyor* probe,

In the data they collected, the researchers discovered evidence of dramatic climatic changes on Mars. A slow decline in frozen carbon dioxide was recorded at one of the polar caps, indicating a gradual climate change. "The speed at which these polar regions are retreating is absolutely astonishing," explained one of the scientists involved. But why Mars is warmer today than it was recently is completely unclear. "We have absolutely no idea."

Machine Translated by Google

Maybe the question should simply be changed: Not what, but who has been responsible for the systematic warming of Mars for several years? The technical term that probably best describes the situation is: TERRAFORMING.

CHAPTER 7

REVIEW AND OUTLOOK

Before the outlook comes the review, the summary of the insights gained so far in this book.

The most important fact, the existence of a Third Power, which is no longer just hypothetical but actual, seems to have been proven with almost absolute certainty. The thread of the trail laid by various authors, especially Wilhelm Landig, was not only picked up but also considerably followed. Essential aspects of this framework of action describing the Third Power's retreat at the end of the Second World War were confirmed.

What was new was that the so-called UFO phenomenon can only be understood as an earthly phenomenon that has undergone a continuous technical evolution since its beginnings at the end of 1944 at the latest until today. This development took place on the basis of designs that were all conceived before the end of the war by German scientists in the service of the Third Reich.

As a result, the Third Power came into possession of flying machines that use antigravity as a propulsion source.

At the same time, a large-scale genetic breeding program was initiated, the preliminary studies of which apparently began in the 1960s with the first cases of kidnapping. From the mid-1970s, and then increasingly in the 1980s and 1990s, the Third Power began using genetic manipulation to create beings that had the characteristics of the preferred Nordic race. The measures to secure this gene pool were in continuity with those of National Socialism, which saw the promotion of this type of human being as its primary concern.

Colonia Dignidad was identified as the Third Power's terrestrial base of operations, along with a refuge on our neighboring planet Mars.

What happens next? How will this development continue?

One thing can hardly be doubted:

Machine Translated by Google

Taking over the world and thus revising the historical events of May 1945 is the real goal on the agenda of the Third Power. Under what conditions, at what point in time and by what means they will attempt to achieve this goal can only be speculated today. But the fact is that something will happen and it is right to doubt whether the other world powers will be able to successfully meet this challenge alone or together. The reason for this pessimistic assessment is not only their apparent technological inferiority, but above all their extremely precarious, increasingly unstable socio-political situation.

Chapter 3 described the interest of both sides in not revealing what is really going on behind the scenes of world politics. From the perspective of the Third Power, the complete concealment of its intentions should be maintained until the concrete time for their implementation has arrived. The other world powers have no interest in informing the public in their countries about the outcome of the last world war, which differs from the official historiography. So when will this identity of interests come to an end?

Particularly against the backdrop of the sociopolitical changes that are being observed, the harbingers of the coming major conflict may be emerging. This is not to say that this will necessarily be a warlike one. The increasing erosion of the existing society, accelerated for example by a global economic crisis, could be the deciding factor in a peaceful takeover scenario.

There are serious indications that further developments could actually take such a course, which will be discussed below.

In 2003, I spent several days on holiday in the Bolivian capital, La Paz. Almost every afternoon I visited the Cafe La Paz, which is known as a meeting place for Bolivians of German descent. The former head of the Gestapo office in Lyon, Klaus Barbie, who lived in Bolivia under the name Klaus Altmann, also frequented this place for years.

The aim of my visits was to talk to members of the German “colony” in order to find out more about the connections of those “old comrades” in South America. Admittedly, on the

At first glance, this seemed a somewhat naive undertaking. As luck would have it, the opportunity arose to get to know one of the gentlemen present, although his age (around mid-50s) meant he could not be part of the desired target group. After half an hour of casual chatting, I talked about my area of interest and my desire to find out more about it here on site. My conversation partner pointed out that he could not give me any details, but that he would be happy to recommend me to a gentleman who was certainly more competent in these matters.

The next day, I met a much older man who, although over 80 years old, was in robust health and also had a good sense of humor.

Readers who are now hoping that in the subsequent conversation I would have received confirmation of all my statements regarding the actions of the Third Power must be disappointed at this point.

The conversation, reproduced here in excerpts in the form of a memory protocol, dealt more with questions of the present (A stands for author, G for conversation partner).

A: You speak perfect German, were you born in Germany?

G: Not only was I born there, I also risked my life for it.

A: So you were a soldier? May I ask in which unit?

G: As an officer in what we would call today a multinational Unit of the Waffen-SS.

A: What did you do before the war?

G: I studied law there.

A: How long have you been living in South America?

G: I came to Argentina in 1947 and then came here in 1957.

A: What did you do professionally after 1945?

G: Most of the time I was the owner and managing director of a Import-export company.

A: Do you know whether there was a withdrawal of leading members of the SS to South America or other areas at the end of the war?

this world, and there are rumors of Antarctica as well, combined with a transfer of secret high technology?

G: Well, it is probably common knowledge that several thousand Germans, including SS members and scientists, emigrated after the war, especially to Argentina, where there was a fruitful collaboration under Peron for many years. Antarctica? Must be a bit cold there, right?

A: Can one say that parts of these exiled forces have been brought together under a common leadership?
Some even call this group of forces the Third Power on this planet, whose goal is to revise the results of the last world war.

G: Call it what you will. There has been no doubt that efforts have been made in this direction.

A: Was or is?

G: Of course they still exist, some of the people are still at
Live, many have descendants.

A: A connection between this Third Power and the UFO phenomenon is often claimed.
Do you know anything about this?

G: Even if I did, I wouldn't talk about it. Who's to say that you don't have a little microphone hidden somewhere or that you're not an ultra-left journalist?

A: That's exactly me. But seriously, if such a movement or organization still exists today, what would it have achieved in the past decades, achieved in the sense of providing an incentive to continue the struggle?

G: The downfall of communism and the unification of Germany! Isn't that something?
Now only the Americans remain. The motto should not be "many enemies, much honour", but rather "everyone in turn".

A: You didn't have to do much to achieve these successes, as you say. They were all self-fulfilling and you were able to sit out the process passively!

G: Well, that's brilliant, winning battles without using your own resources. And it was foreseeable that it would happen at some point. It was just the speed that surprised us. And what do you think we could have done actively?

For decades, our German people were under Allied control. Troop presence virtually held hostage.

A: And now? The Americans seem to be almost too powerful.

G: I see that as a positive: there is only one enemy left. We could certainly wait and see how things develop in this case too. The potential for conflict, which will inevitably lead to collapse at some point, is huge. Nevertheless, there are other developments that require an acceleration of this process. The substance of our German people is being lost. One could also say that the immense immigration is causing the ecological system to collapse.

A: What do you mean by huge potential for conflict, and how could an acceleration occur?

G: Economically speaking, this globalized world is actually at its end. Growth is stalling. The mountains of debt of both public and private households in the industrialized countries have reached dizzying heights. Interest rates have been reduced to historical lows for the period since 1945. What more can be done?

Continue to lower interest rates, continue to take on debt in order to generate growth for a certain period of time? The available economic policy instruments are simply worn out. The global economy is heading towards a catastrophe. Targeted terror, such as on September 11, could then be the catalyst in a hopeless situation to achieve an acceleration effect.

A: What else is important in your opinion?

G: The Americans' political solo efforts will break up old coalitions. The political cards will be reshuffled, and this at a time of economic instability! This will provoke new battles over the distribution of natural resources, energy, etc. Massive conflicts will also arise in multicultural states, where the long-established population is losing its historical majority due to its low birth rate. The pain threshold does not seem to have been reached here yet, however. And don't forget historical revisionism!

What a difference it has made. The fact alone that Germany waged a preventive war against the Russians in 1941 almost overturns one's world view. And I think there is no end in sight to the revelations that will rehabilitate Germany.

A: The authors who have written about this alleged Third Power have always been accused of sabotaging the activities of the political right by creating something like an apocalyptic hope that prevents any concrete political action. What do you think of this statement?

G: I don't think so. The aim must be to help prepare for political change through a change in consciousness. That is where the political right has its role to play. It is also unlikely that a right-wing party in Western Europe can gain a respectable, i.e. governable, absolute majority through elections. Political repression will know how to prevent that. A breakthrough in the media is certainly not conceivable given the current balance of power. If the political right had control of just one television station, the monopoly on public opinion would be broken and a storm would sweep across the country. The path to power will therefore have to be a conspiratorial one.

A: How could that be possible?

G: Through a combination of a gradual change in consciousness by the parties and organizations operating in public with an almost silent seizure of the important centers of power by conspiratorial means, let's say, by a kind of international counter-lodge, to use a common term. And this development does not only relate to Germany, but to all countries that have produced people of our descent. This common descent will be the unifying factor, regardless of any national feeling. Just like it was in my unit during the war. A political majority will also not be necessary at all for another reason. Just look at the development of voter turnout in many countries. This says everything about the acceptance of the political system among the population. If I remember correctly, US President Bush was elected in 2000 with just a quarter of the votes of all Americans. 50 percent of voters preferred their private pleasures to voting on election day. So-called democracy is imploding, so to speak. And I guess that means your third power will have an easy time of it.

So much for the summary of the topic of this book relevant conversation content.

What should I make of the statements made by my conversation partner? To what extent do they actually describe the reality of current developments and are not just wishful thinking?

One thing is certain: the economic situation today, as these lines are being written, is in many ways similar to that before the last major global economic crisis. As in 1929, 2005 has seen a strong increase in the money supply, steadily rising industrial and private household debt, a trade deficit in the USA, a wave of corporate mergers and a so-called bubble formation on the capital markets. (136) At that time, the world economy fell into a deep recession from which it was not to emerge until 1942. Capitalism seemed to be at an end. Only in Germany, where a completely new economic policy had been pursued since 1933, was the crisis overcome in a short time. Not - as is often claimed - by a gigantic armament program or even the construction of motorways, but by an economic system that skilfully combined the advantages of a market and state economy. (137) It was only during the Second World War that this greatest of all economic crises to date came to an end. The fighting and the reconstruction that began after the war provided the necessary boost in demand. Without the war, the economic system that lies behind the terms market economy and free trade would probably have remained only a fleeting historical episode.

More than 70 years later, this economic system could be facing a second major collapse. The signs are pointing to a storm! The time when this new global economic crisis will break out will be determined by others. Prof. Dr. Eberhard Hamer and his wife Eike Hamer have described who with frightening clarity in their book *What happens when the crash comes?*

»The financial markets are, however, fundamentally not really free markets, but are largely organized, right up to monetary sovereignty, directly or indirectly, openly or through trustees in two world-leading financial groups (Rothschild Group and Rockefeller Group), whose trustees are also promised a majority in the private (!!!; the author) *Federal Reserve Bank ,* so that the world's leading financial groups not only control the most powerful central bank in the world, but can also use this bank to determine their own interest rates, exchange rates and even the timing of a crash. What happens on the financial markets is therefore not random and not determined by investors, but by the strategic considerations of the aforementioned high finance.

During the last major economic crisis in the early 1930s, high finance in the USA increased its share of wealth from 20 to 34 percent, thus emerging from the crash as a relative winner.

In this respect, it is to be expected that the coming crash will only happen once high finance has completed its preparations for it." The authors' comment that the leading global financial powers, Rockefeller and Rothschild, do not always

agree is not very reassuring. After all, they regularly campaigned against each other in order to get the respective US presidents to act as their representatives.

Clinton was a representative of the Rothschild side, and Bush now represents the Rockefeller side. (136) It can be assumed that when the big picture is at stake, these marginal differences of interest no longer play a role.

What would happen if - as my interlocutor from La Paz considers possible - this looming second major global economic crisis were to be sustainably accelerated by targeted terrorist attacks such as those on September 11, 2001?

This would undoubtedly destroy the plan drawn up by the ruling groups of high finance. High finance itself could be dragged into the vortex of the abyss by movements on the capital markets that would no longer be controllable in such a case.

In fact, the attacks on the World Trade Center and the Pentagon took place - one could say with great tactical skill - at a time when the stock markets around the world had been in a downturn since the spring of 2000. The acceleration effect of 9/11 made the crisis even more difficult.

After the September 1991 crisis, there was another massive collapse of the capital markets as well as a political destabilization that continues to this day (see, for example, the wars in Afghanistan and Iraq and the poorly concealed break-up of the transatlantic coalition).

What is less well known is that the man who, against the will of the

The "great crash" looming in high finance could only be averted because the US central bank immediately made 200 billion new dollars available to the markets. (136)

No one will doubt that the conventional bomb attacks that have frequently occurred since September 11, 2001, are actually the work of Islamic extremists. The situation is quite different with the "mother of all these events," the attacks of September 11. A flood of literature has since appeared on this topic, which - in the sense of a conspiracy theory - assumes that this series of attacks came from completely different circles and thus casts doubt on the official version. Suspicions range from the Israeli secret service Mossad to interested industrial managers, preferably close to the oil industry, to the US government itself. The latter variant is the most frequently mentioned. The fact that, alongside the others, the blame placed on the US government in particular is to be regarded as untenable will be explained in more detail later.

The actual masterminds behind the attacks could have been identified very quickly and were probably identified, but these investigation results were not reflected in the public opinion they deserved.

The authors Rolf Bovier and Pierre Matthias titled a report broadcast shortly after the attacks on September 25, 2001 in the ARD business magazine plusminus: "Insider trading before the terrorist attacks in the USA?" and thus pointed the way in which immediate investigations should have been carried out. The following can be read about the content of the report on the Internet: "In the attack on the World Trade Center in New York, the terrorists not only destroyed a building, they also used the logistics and perhaps even the methods of the financial world and apparently made a lot of money from it. ...

Financial supervisory authorities worldwide are investigating: It concerns transactions on the stock exchanges from New York to Tokyo. The suspicion: the perpetrators of the terrorist attacks could have earned billions. One of the most effective methods for this is so-called short selling. This is the sale of shares that are in the seller's possession but do not belong to him. The speculator pays a loan fee for the share package for a limited period of time. And sells the securities. If the price actually collapses, he buys the shares at dumping prices and returns them. For the speculator a very good deal. He makes the difference between the high selling price and the low buying price. These deals are particularly safe if you have insider knowledge or can even bring about events yourself that drive the market down. ... The Luxembourg financial expert Ernest Backes has been dealing with white-collar crime in the banking sector for years. He says there are indications of unusual transactions with which bin Laden's group could have made money: 'You can, for example, check whether there was an attack on a certain security of a certain airline during a certain period of time. Since these securities are kept in the clearing systems, you always have an overview of who owned them at what time.' The supervisory authorities have such indications in the USA and in Europe.

What is particularly striking is the sudden, gigantic trading of options on falling prices for the airlines *American* and *United.*
On the Thursday before the accident, *United Airlines* saw an explosion in the turnover of so-called put options. 200,000 were traded, otherwise it was often not even 1,000. And the situation is similar at *American Airlines* and the insurance companies. Here terrorists could have earned billions on the stock exchange. According to Backes, the trail leads to Switzerland, to accounts of an organization that was founded years ago by the now deceased lawyer Francois Genoud and apparently still exists... One of these points of contact is that the Swiss lawyer had very close ties to bin Laden's family, that he was one of the family's advisors, one of their bankers. It is known that he supported terrorism and was the asset manager of Hitler's fortune..." (138)

If "financial supervisory authorities worldwide have investigated" and it should not have been difficult to identify the owners of these securities using the existing clearing systems, why were these investigations apparently abandoned or the interested public not informed of their results?

Did bin Laden have any backers?
Who, above all, is this Francois Genoud?

»Francois Genoud (1915-1996) was considered one of the last representatives of the ›Black International‹ and undoubtedly one of those who openly contributed most to the rebirth of National Socialism in in the world," writes Karl Laske in his biography of the Swiss. (139) "For Francois Genoud, the Second World War is not over ... One phase is over, another is just beginning. He believes he has a task: to continue the war by other means."

When founding his own bank, Genoud also consulted Dr. Schacht, yes, the same Dr. Hjalmar Schacht who had been Minister of Economics and President of the Reichsbank under Hitler in the Third Reich.
At one of these meetings, Schacht stated that "Germany could conquer the world without waging war." (139) If we also take into account that Schacht's niece had married Otto Skorzeny, we can assume that Schacht had the necessary background knowledge that gives this statement particular value.

Continuing the war by other means? Yes, what means? Definitely not the means of war! The answer? - Patience please!

In 1932, at the age of 17, Genoud met Adolf Hitler for the first time in the house of his parents' friends - and was enchanted. In Switzerland, he was a member of the National Front, which received secret financial support from the Germans. In 1940, he became a German agent. Genoud is said to have been involved in financial transactions on behalf of the German intelligence service, including as a trustee of the assets of certain prominent figures of the Third Reich. At the end of the war, he was also able to finance various escape organizations. He was considered the administrator of these secret Nazi assets practically until his suicide in 1996. (139)

Let us hear what significance other prominent contemporaries attach to him.

The former head of Himmler's personal staff, SS-Obergruppenführer Karl Wolff, stated: "Francois Genoud was very important to us. We were very restricted in our movements. He could move freely and served as an important liaison man for us." The last leader of the Hitler Youth, Arthur Axmann, claimed that

"Genoud was one of the few people who was allowed to enter Hitler's offices without prior registration."

And Otto Skorzeny confirmed that »Genoud was an important man of the intelligence service that was directly subordinate to Hitler. (139)

After the war, Francois Genoud published *Hitler's Table Talks* and his political testament (Bormann Dictates), the authenticity of which is disputed, in several languages, and also acquired the copyright to the entire literary legacy of Joseph Goebbels. He defended Adolf Eichmann as well as Klaus Barbie, proving in all of this that he was first and foremost "not a man of money, but a fanatic" who devoted all his energy to revising the historical events of 1945. (139)

In addition to his publishing activities, which influenced public awareness, he looked for ways to wage war against the victorious powers of 1945 by other means.

One of these paths led him directly into the arms of the Arab (Islamic) liberation movements. And here begins the "second life" of Francois Genoud, a career that ran parallel to his career as a National Socialist underground fighter.

In 1936, Genoud went on a journey of discovery to the Orient with a friend. In Baghdad they met all the Palestinian leaders who had been sentenced to death by England. Then in Jerusalem the decisive encounter took place: a reception by the Grand Mufti Haj Amin el-Husseini. He was considered the political leader of the Arab resistance in Palestine, against both the English and the Jews. He later also took a determined stand on Hitler's side and helped recruit Muslim volunteers for the Waffen-SS. In 1941, the Grand Mufti was in Berlin and met Hitler himself on this occasion. Genoud also came to Berlin at this time and it was suspected that he may have played a role in this meeting. Genoud also seems to have had a hand in the transfer of the Grand Mufti's war treasure to the Reich capital Berlin. After that, Genoud's pro-Arab commitment went quiet for a while, at least on the surface.

The next bombshell came in 1956: At the height of the Suez crisis, when Israelis, French and British were trying together to reverse the nationalization of the Suez Canal by military means, Genoud founded an *association of friends of a free Arab world.* Two years later he founded the *Banque commerciale arabe,* the Arab Commercial Bank. This was later used to finance the covert arms deliveries for the Algerian War of Independence. After the successful outcome of the war, Genoud became financial advisor to the new Algerian leadership. Through this he was then able to establish connections with the Palestinian Liberation Organization PFLP. One of the leaders of this *Popular Front for the Liberation of Palestine,* Abu Sharif, later said: "Francois Genoud is the man who has done more for the Palestinian cause than all of us combined." Through the Palestinians, Genoud found direct access to terrorism. The PFLP's campaign of aircraft hijackings began in July 1968 with the hijacking of an Israeli plane and continued over the next few years with some spectacular actions. Genoud in turn helped with the financing and provided legal counsel where legal proceedings were initiated. Most recently, he supported top terrorist Carlos, a Venezuelan who was devoted body and soul to the Palestinian struggle. (139) And not to be forgotten, because it is relevant to the topic of this book, are his "closest ties to the bin Laden family."

What could have been the motives for Francois Genoud's commitment to the Arab cause? On the surface, anti-Judaism may have played a role, although Genoud himself claimed that he was not an anti-Semite, but at most an anti-Zionist.

Historically, his main concern in the 1930s and 1940s up until the end of the war seems to have been to support the Germans in their fight against England. He was best able to do this by bringing his trump card, the Grand Mufti of Jerusalem, into play in the open and covert theater of war in the Middle East.

After the end of the Second World War, with the help of the Arabs, he again directed his activities against the English (see Suez Crisis), against the second European superpower France (see Algerian War) and against the newly founded state of Israel with its protecting power, the USA.

I think that one misunderstands Genoud's intentions if one assumes that he was acting solely in the interests of the Arabs. It almost seems as if he was simply using them. His real goals were, as we know, different. For him, the Second World War was not yet over, the war was now being fought with different means...

Was Francois Genoud really alone in this fight? Isn’t it rather, to assume that he was a representative of the Third Power? The strategy of terrorist pinpricks seems to be pursued with even greater vehemence by his successors.

The main goal now is the destruction of the United States. Terrorism cannot and should not bring America to its knees militarily. However, it does serve its purpose in exacerbating growing sociopolitical contradictions. That is why we now have another dimension to terror. And September 11 is probably just the beginning.

The Arabs were once again in the spotlight at this major media event, as initial suspicion immediately fell on the group known as *Al-Qaeda.* However, as US Secretary of Defense Rumsfeld's deputy, Paul Wolfowitz, explained shortly after the attacks: "This operation was too sophisticated and too complicated to be carried out by one terrorist group alone." (140)

In his book *The Censored Day ,* the author Christian C. Walther has dealt in detail with the official version as well as with the various conspiracy theories about September 11th. In his opinion, neither approach can really explain the events that took place in a plausible way, and the US government's version is also a conspiracy theory when it claims: "Four passenger planes were hijacked by Al-Qaeda terrorists and flown into buildings." (140) The decisive proof that this was not the case can be seen in the fact that none of the hijacked planes that are later said to have crashed into the towers of the World Trade Center or the Pentagon had actually made a course correction!

American Airlines Flight 11 is said to have crashed into the North Tower of the World Trade Center at 8:46 a.m. on September 11, 2001. Tracking the plane's course by air traffic controllers revealed that it was 150 miles from New York six minutes before the impact and was still visible on the air traffic controllers' screens at the time of the impact. This *definitely* rules it out as a terrorist plane.

United Airlines Flight *175,* which allegedly flew into the South Tower, has not, according to the published information, planned course. Instead, at the same time, air traffic controllers discovered an unknown "intruder" with an unknown transponder identifier.

It also could not have been the *American Airlines 77* that crashed into the Pentagon, because in order to cover the approximately 600 kilometers from its last known position to New York in eight minutes, it would have had to travel at four and a half times the speed of sound. AA 77 simply disappeared from the radar screens. A controller confirmed: "We have no radar contact and no connection to it." In this case, too, an unidentified plane appeared, which triggered the disaster a short time later.

United Airlines Flight 93 was apparently shot down over Pennsylvania on President Bush's orders before it could "disappear." (140)

Conclusion: Of the four planes in question, three simply disappeared from the air traffic controllers' screens without changing course; three unknown "intruders" pounced on the World Trade Center and the Pentagon as targets.

Christian C. Walther puts it very simply when he counteracts the American authorities' approaches to solving the problem: "Airplanes had disappeared. Airplanes had flown into buildings. Consequently, the missing planes must have been the ones that hit the buildings."

If the conspiracy theorists who claim that the US government itself was responsible for the events of September 11 were right, there would have been hundreds of people in the relevant US authorities who knew about the attacks and were involved in their planning and execution. Secrecy on a large scale may work if it is required by the security interests of a people or state against a foreign power. However, if the state becomes a criminal against its own people, this is undoubtedly not guaranteed.

In summary, Christian C. Walther suggests the following scenario:

a. Flights 11, 175, 77 and 93 were hijacked. b. They were hijacked by teams of three. c. The 19 men identified by the FBI as perpetrators were on board. d. The planes were not hijacked by Arabs.

e. The North Tower plane was evidently not Flight 11. f. The South Tower plane was evidently not Flight 175. g. The Pentagon plane was evidently not Flight 77. The crash

Machines were remote controlled.

h. The Pennsylvania plane was possibly Flight 93. i. ... the identity of three planes in the airspace was not clear. j. No air traffic controller was incompetent or "in the know". k. The interceptors took off on time.

1. They flew to where the hijacked planes were located, m. The US government knew nothing about the planned crime, n. The secret services knew nothing about the plan, o. The 19 Arabs on board knew nothing about the course of the

Crime, p. The

FBI did a good job within its capabilities.

The author suspects that the Pakistani secret service and influential drug, arms and oil profiteers from the USA were behind the attacks. What he does not explain is the crucial aspect of the drama of September 11th, which is undoubtedly a technical one. How is it possible for three large commercial aircraft to suddenly disappear from the radar operators' screens?

Who or what was responsible for this "invisibility"? And the planes and their passengers? To this day, they have not resurfaced. One solution is obvious: it must have been a technically superior power that was able to take over the planes so easily without making itself known to the outside world.

One last question about September 11th is: Why this particular day? This question is also very easy to answer. Because a large-scale military exercise took place on that day. Codename: *Vigilant Guardian.* The exercise was intended to simulate an air attack on the United States. (140) It was only under this cover that the complicated operation was even possible. Confusion in the airspace was therefore inevitable.

The informant who passed this information on to the "terrorists" must be attributed to American government circles. He, as well as the twelve hijackers of the planes, are the actual middlemen of "Operation 9/11". Are they

Perhaps they were members of the kind of international “counter-lodge” that my interlocutor in La Paz was convinced must exist?

Which finally makes the author of this book a conspiracy theorist.
theorist would have been convicted.

The trail to the masterminds, however, appears to be lost in the organization that Francois Genoud had once founded. War by other means appears to have entered its next phase with September 11, and further escalation is to be expected (see also the statements of the abductees in Chapter 3).

However, speculating about the next steps of the Third Power is no longer the purpose of this book. Fate takes its course.

Machine Translated by Google

CALL

The topic of the Third Power reduces a multitude of facts and phenomena that in modern times were considered "inexplicable" or attributed to "extraterrestrial intervention" to the lowest common (earthly) denominator.

Should you, dear reader, have any further information or evidence that would support the
If you would like to use the image designed for this book, please contact me via the Publisher address:

Gilbert Sternhoff c/o
Kopp Verlag
Pfeiferstraße 52
D-72108 Rottenburg

Machine Translated by Google

Machine Translated by Google

SOURCES AND BIBLIOGRAPHY

1. Landig, Wilhelm: *Wolfszeit um Thule,* Vienna 1980 2. Landig, Wilhelm: *Götzen gegen Thule,* Vienna 1971 3. Heller, Friedrich Paul and Maegerle, Anton: *Thule - From ethnic occultism to the New Right,* Stuttgart 1998 (including the contents of an interview with Wilhelm Landig)

4. Landig, Wilhelm: *Rebels for Thule,* Vienna 1991 5. *Secret Societies,* Video, 1998 6. Internet: www.unglaublichkeiten.com

7. Trimondi, Victor and Victoria: *Hitler Buddha Krishna,* Vienna 2002 8. Szabo, Ladislao: *Hitler esta vivo,* Barcelona 1947 9. Vesco, Renato and Childress, David Hatcher: *Man-Made UFOs 1944-1994,* 1994

10. Lusar, Rudolf: *The German secret weapons of the Second World War and its further development,* Munich 1958

11. Mattern, W.: *UFOs Nazi Secret Weapon?,* Toronto 1974 12. Friedrich, Christof: *Secret Nazi Polar Expeditions,* Toronto 1979 13. van Helsing, Jan: *Operation Aldebaran,* Fichtenau 2000 14. Stoll, Axel: *High technology in the Third Reich,* Schleusingen 2001 15. Zunneck, Karl-Heinz: *Total manipulation,* Rottenburg 2002 16. Vesco, Renato: *Operazione Plenilunio,* Mursia 1972 17. Rothkugel, Klaus-Peter: *The secret of the German flying discs,* Zweibrücken 2002

18. Cook, Nick: *The Hunt for Zero Point,* London 2001 19. Schön, Heinz: *Mythos Neu-Schwabenland,* Selent 2004 20. Brennecke, Jochen: *The German auxiliary cruisers in the Second World War,* Hamburg 2001 21. Reitsch, Hanna: *Flying - My Life,* Stuttgart 1951 22. Irving, David: *Führer and Reich Chancellor,* Munich 1989 23. Fraschka, Günter: *With swords and diamonds,* Munich 1989 24. Speer, Albert: *Memories,* Ullstein TBV

25. Stahl, P. W: *Geheimgeschwader KG 200,* Stuttgart 1980 26. Georg, Friedrich and Mehner, Thomas: *Atomic Target New York,* Rottenburg 2004

Machine Translated by Google

27. Witkowski, Igor: *Truth about the Wunderwaffe,* Farnborough 2003 28. Bar-Zohar,
Michael: *The Avengers,* New York 1967 29. Schröm, Oliver and
Röpke, Andrea: *Silent Help for Brown Comrades,*
Berlin 2002

30. *Hamburger Morgenpost,* twelve-part series, 1953 31. Gehring,
Heiner and Rothkugel, Klaus R: *The flying disc myth,*
Schleusingen 2001
32. *Welt am Sonntag,* Hamburg, 26 April 1953 33.
Deutsche Illustrierte, No. 45/1952 34. Mayer,
Edgar and Mehner, Thomas: *The Secret of the German Atomic Bomb,* Rottenburg 2001 35.
Mayer, Edgar and Mehner, Thomas:
Hitler and the Bomb, Rottenburg
2002

36. Karisch, Rainer: *Hitler's Bomb,* Munich 2005 37. Trimondi,
Victor and Victoria: *Hitler Buddha Krishna,* Vienna 2002 38. Internet:
www.Sonnenwacht.de

39. *Bild der Wissenschaften,* December 1971 40.
Blumrich, JF: *Kasskara and the Seven Worlds,* Knaur TBV 41. Brugger, Karl:
The Chronicle of Akakor, Knaur TBV 42. Bergschicker, Heinz:
German Chronicle, Berlin 1982 43. Lang, Jochen von: *The Secretary,*
Stuttgart 1977 44. Internet: *www.geschi.de*

45. Speer, Albert: *The Slave State,* Ullstein TBV 46.
Lauterbacher, Hartmann: *Experienced and Co-Created,* Preußisch Oldendorf
1984

47. Irving, David: *Goebbels,* Kiel 1997 48.
Smelser, Roland and Syring, Enrico (eds.): *The SS - Elite under the*
Skull, Paderborn 2000
49. Agoston, Tom: *Teufel oder Technocrat,* Berlin 1993 50.
Witkowski, Igor: *Hitler's Super Secret Weapons,* Warschau 2000 51. Goni, Uki:
The Real ODESSA, London 2003 52. Internet:
www.physicstoday.com
53. Georg, Friedrich: *Hitler's Weapons of Victory,* Volume 1, Schleusingen 2000 54.
Sünner, Rüdiger: *Black Sun,* Freiburg im Breisgau 1999 55. Fahr, Hans Jörg:
The Big Bang is Falling, Stuttgart 1992 56. Fraenkel, Heinrich and Manvell,
Roger: *Goebbels,* Heyne TBV, 1989

57. *German History,* No. 5/2004 58. Irving,
David: *Göring,* Hamburg 1989 59. Charroux, Robert:
The Riddle of the Andes, Düsseldorf 1997 60. Internet: www.idgr.de

61. Herbert, Ulrich: *Best,* Bonn 2001 62.
Ludwiger, Illobrand von: *The State of UFO Research,* Frankfurt am Main 1992

63. Good, Timothy: *Beyond Top Secret,* Frankfurt am Main 1991 64. Friedman,
StantonT.: *Top Secret,* Munich 1997 65. Hynek, Dr. J. Allen;
Imbrogno, Philip and Pratt, Bob: *Night Siege,* New York 1987

66. Brand, Illobrand from: *Unidentified Flying Objects over Europe,* Munich 1999

67. Rändle, Kevin D.; Estes, Russ and Cone, William R: *Abduction Enigma,* New York 1999 68.
Jacobs, David M.: *Secret Life,* Rottenburg 1995 69. Jacobs, David M.:
Threat, Rottenburg 1998 70. Hopkins, Budd: *Missing Time,*
Rottenburg 1993 71. Hopkins, Budd: *Intruders,* Hamburg 1991
72. Hopkins, Budd: *Abducted into Space,* Berlin 1997 73.
Hopkins, Budd: *Sight Unseen,* New York 2003 74. Fowler,
Raymond E.: *The Watchers,* Bergisch-Gladbach 1991 75.
Walton, Travis: *Fire in the Sky,* Rottenburg 1996 76. Lammer, Helmut and
Marion: *Covert Operations,* Munich 1997 77. Tepperwein, Kurt: *The
High School of Hypnosis,* Vienna 1996 78. Strieber, Whitley: *The Visitors,* Munich 1991 79.
Fowler, Raymond E.: *The Guardians II,* Reifenberg 1996 80. *Alien Discussions,*
Cambridge 1994 81. *MUFON UFO Journal,* April 1993 82.
Racial Policy, SS Main Office Berlin, no year 83. Wüst, Walther: *Indo-European Confession,* Berlin 1942 84. Hitler,
Adolf: *Mein Kampf,* Munich 1934 85. Deschner,
Günther: *Reinhard Heydrich,* Berlin 1987 86. Günther, Hans
FK: *Racial Studies of the German People,* Munich

1935

87. Reche, Otto: *Race and Homeland of the Indo-Europeans,* Munich 1936

Machine Translated by Google

88. Heinemann, Isabel: *Race, Settlement, German Blood,* Göttingen 2003 89. Deichmann, Ute: *Biologists under Hitler,* Frankfurt am Main 1995 90. *Der Spiegel,* No. 12/2005 91. Völklein, Ulrich: *Josef Mengele,*
Göttingen 2000 92. Posner, Gerald and Ware, John: *Mengele,*
Berlin 1993 93. Internet: *www.nd-online.de*

94. Vallee, Jacques: *Dimensions,* Frankfurt am Main 1994 95. Film *Memories of the Future,* 1970 96. Däniken, Erich von:
Back to the Stars, Knaur TBV 97. Hoerner, Sebastian von: *Are We Alone?,*
Munich 2003 98. Däniken, Erich von: *The Traces of the Extraterrestrials,*
Munich 1990 99. Halpern, Paul: *Wormholes in the Cosmos,* Munich 1994 100. Mania, Dietrich: *On the Traces of Prehistoric Man,* Berlin 1990 101. Däniken, Erich von: *Evidence,* Düsseldorf 1984 102. Hoyle, Fred: *The Intelligent Universe,*
Frankfurt am Main 1984 103. de Duve, Christian: *Born of Dust,*
Reinbek 1997 104. Bauval, Robert G. in: *Are We Alone,* Düsseldorf 1996 105. Haase, Michael: *The Field of Tears,* Munich 2000 106. Haase, Michael: *In the Sign of Re,* Munich 1999 107. Däniken, Erich von: *My World in Pictures,*
Knaur TBV 108. Hertel, Gisa and Peter: *Unsolved Mysteries of Old Maps,*
Gotha 1984 109. Meier, Gert and Zschweigert, Hermann: *The Advanced Civilization of the Megalithic Age,* Tübingen 1997 110. Meier, Gert: *The Early German Period Was Quite Different,* Tübingen 1999 111. Däniken, Erich von: *Sowing and Cosmos,* Knaur TBV 112. Ernsting, Walter: *The Day the Gods Died,* Düsseldorf

1997

113. *Der Spiegel,* No. 12/1973 114.
Kanjilal, Dileep Kumar in: *Ancient Skies,* No. 3/1982 115. Internet:
www.Tatjana.Ingold.ch
116. Stingl, Miloslav: *Inka,* Berlin 1989 117.
Kanjilal, Dileep Kumar in: *From the Depths of Space,* Tübingen 1985 118. Fiebag, Peter; Eenboom, Algund and Belting, Peter: *Airplanes of the Pharaohs,* Rottenburg 2004

119. Krassa, Peter: *And came upon fiery dragons,* Munich 1990 120. Däniken, Erich von: *Was I mistaken?,* Munich 1988 121. Spanuth, Jürgen: *The Atlanteans,* Tübingen 1998 122. Gemballa, Gero: *Colonia Dignidad,* Frankfurt am Main 1998 123. Heller, Friedrich Paul: *Colonia Dignidad,* Stuttgart 1993 124. Internet: *www.agpf.de*

125. Heller, Friedrich Paul: *The Language of Hate,* Stuttgart 2001 126. Giesler, Hermann: *Another Hitler,* Leoni 1977 127. *Magazine 2000,* No. 1/1998 128. *Magazine 2000,* No. 4/1998 129. Buttlar, Johannes von: *They come from foreign stars,* Knaur TBV 130. McDaniel, Stanley V. and Rix Pacson, Monica (eds.): *The Case for the Face,* Kempton 1998 131. Sitchin, Zecharia: *In the beginning was progress,* Knaur TBV 132. Carlotto, Mark J.: *The Martian Enigmas,* Berkeley 1991 133. Fowler, Raymond E.: *The Andreasson case,* Reifenberg 1995 134. *Spektrum der Wissenschaft,* Dossier 3/2004: Mars 135. *Fabulous times,* No. 3/2004 136. Hamer, Eberhard and Eike: *What happens when the crash comes?,* 2002

137. Eimer, Hans-Jürgen: *Hitler's Germans,* Gernsbach 1991 138. Internet: *www.br-online.de*

139. Laske, Karl: *A life between Hitler and Carlos: Francois Genoud,* Zurich 1996

140. Walther, Christian C: *The Censored Day,* Munich 2004

Machine Translated by Google

Machine Translated by Google

IMAGE SOURCES

Abb. 1, 2, 3,4, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 29, 30, 31, 32, 36, 37 - Archive Gilbert Sternhoff

Fig. 5, 6 - Georg, Friedrich and Mehner, Thomas - *Nuclear target New York,* Rottenburg2004

Fig. 12 - Mayer, Edgar and Meiner, Thomas: *The Secret of German atomic bomb,* Rottenburg 2001 Fig. 13 - *Sunday Telegraph,* 1 September 1996 Fig. 23 - Hopkins, Budd: *Missing Time,* Rottenburg 1993 Fig. 24, 25, 26, 27, 28 - Archive Mathias Kappel Fig. 33, 35, 38 - NASA Fig. 34 - Internet

Machine Translated by Google

Seit dem Ende des Zweiten Weltkriegs wollen die Gerüchte und Vermutungen nicht verstummen, daß eine sogenannte Dritte Macht auf der Erde existiert. Sie soll damals, in den letzten Wirren des großen Völkerringens, in der Folge der deutschen Niederlage entstanden sein und sich mittels einer weltweiten Absetzbewegung und fortgeschrittener Technologien etabliert haben.

Was sich zunächst wie eine unglaubliche Science-Fiction-Story anhören mag, erhält durch die Ergebnisse der jahrelangen, intensiven Recherchen Gilbert Sternhoffs immer mehr Substanz:

- Die deutsche Absetzbewegung bei Kriegsende: War das in der Antarktis gelegene »Neuschwabenland« nur ein Ablenkungsmanöver?
- Geheime U-Boot-Transporte nach Südamerika: wie Personal- und Hochtechnologie aus Deutschland herausgeschafft wurde
- Das »Projekt Glocke«: Knackten deutsche Wissenschaftler das Geheimnis des Antigravitationsantriebes?
- Das moderne UFO-Phänomen – und was wirklich dahintersteckt: Unheimliche Begegnungen der dritten Art, Abductions, Implantate und »das große Zuchtprogramm« der »Aliens« zur Schaffung einer neuen Rasse
- Das irdische Hauptquartier: die Colonia Dignidad?
- Die Verbindung zum Mars – verschwundene Raumsonden, seltsame Strukturen auf der Oberfläche des roten Planeten und Hinweise auf Terraforming
- Die Dritte Macht und der 11. September 2001 – gibt es einen Zusammenhang?

ISBN 3-938516-17-8
9 783938 516171

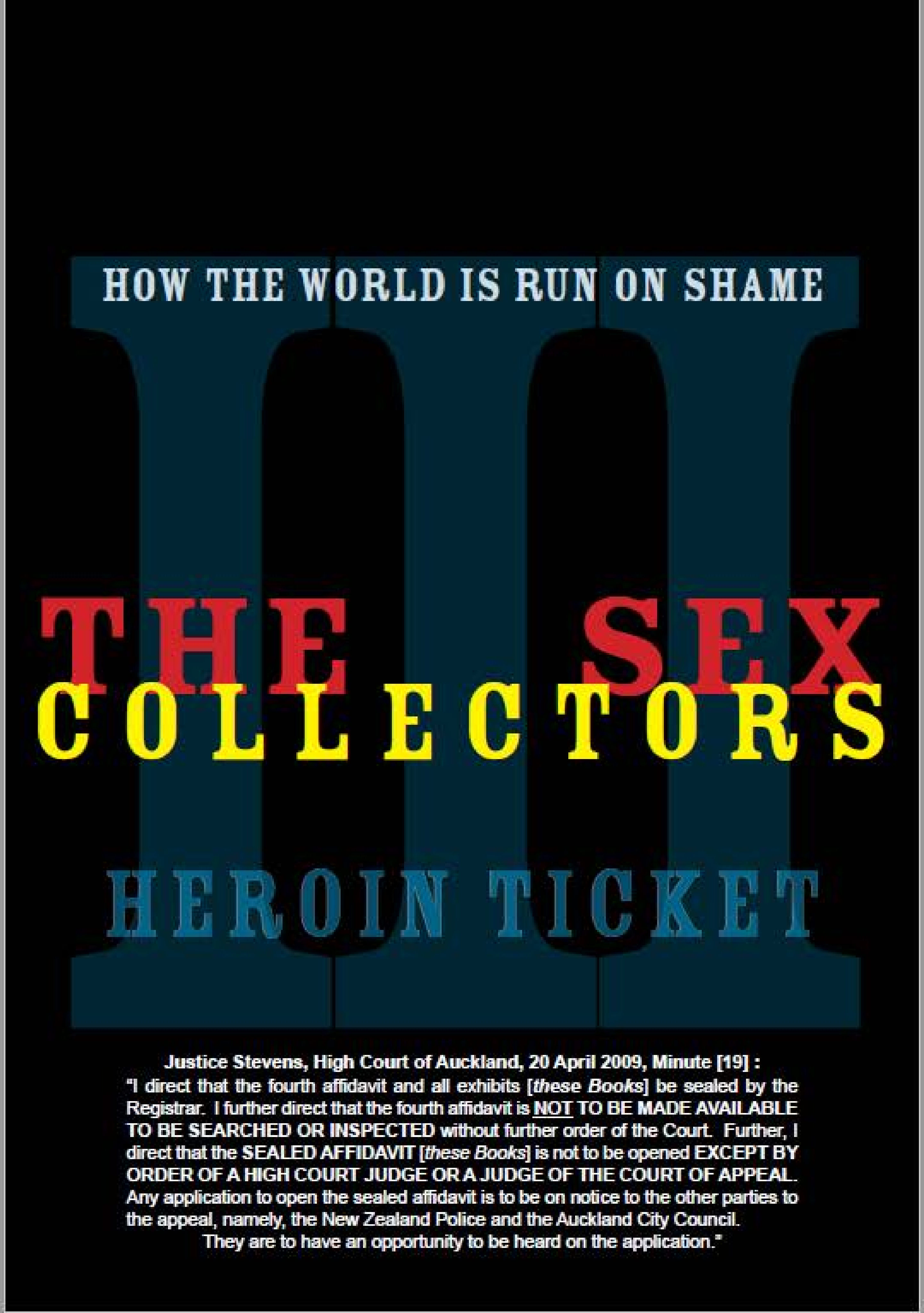

HOW THE WORLD IS RUN ON SHAME

THE SEX COLLECTORS

III

HEROIN TICKET

Justice Stevens, High Court of Auckland, 20 April 2009, Minute [19] :

"I direct that the fourth affidavit and all exhibits [*these Books*] be sealed by the Registrar. I further direct that the fourth affidavit is NOT TO BE MADE AVAILABLE TO BE SEARCHED OR INSPECTED without further order of the Court. Further, I direct that the SEALED AFFIDAVIT [*these Books*] is not to be opened EXCEPT BY ORDER OF A HIGH COURT JUDGE OR A JUDGE OF THE COURT OF APPEAL. Any application to open the sealed affidavit is to be on notice to the other parties to the appeal, namely, the New Zealand Police and the Auckland City Council. They are to have an opportunity to be heard on the application."

Books by Greg Hallett

NEW ZEALAND – A Blackmailer's Guide 2007, 2008

HITLER WAS A BRITISH AGENT 2005, 2006

HOW TO TAKE OVER THE WORLD – A Right Royal Con 2007, 2008, 2009
STALIN'S BRITISH TRAINING – Breeding Concubines Paedophiles At War 2007, 2008
GIFTING THE UNITED NATIONS TO STALIN 2007, 2008, 2009

ARE YOU MY FATHER? The Family Court and Other Experiments 2002

THE SEX COLLECTORS – How the World is run on Shame – Vol. I, STITCH-UPS
First Edition July 2009 ISBN 978-0-473-15050-1
© Greg Hallett 2009

THE SEX COLLECTORS – How the World is run on Shame – Vol. II, MURDERS
First Edition March 2010 ISBN 978-0-473-15051-8
© Greg Hallett 2010

THE SEX COLLECTORS – How the World is run on Shame – Vol. III, HEROIN TICKET
First Edition March 2010 ISBN 978-0-473-15049-5
© Greg Hallett 2010

Published by PRINCE OF NEW SPAIN
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland, New Zealand

Orders and distribution
FNZ Inc.
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland, New Zealand

Purchases
www.greghallett.com

Contact the author
Cell: 0274 589 800
greg@greghallett.com
G: PrinceofNewSpain
Skype: PrinceofNewSpain

The images in this book are used under fair use. They are historically significant photos of famous individuals. They are a lower resolution than the originals and any copies will be of inferior quality. The photos are only used for informational purposes and their inclusion adds significantly to the knowledge gained as it depicts the subject with historical accuracy. Incorporating restricted material is fair use under United States copyright law and any challenges will be met with commercial and liberal parody.

This book was presented as evidence in the HIGH COURT of AUCKLAND. In Courtroom 13, High Court Justice Stevens sealed it at 3.45 pm on Monday 20 April 2009 so that 'No part of this book is allowed to be read by any member of the judiciary unless they have the written permission of THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE and the Auckland City Council lawyers present, to be heard in front of a High Court judge, and then maybe the Court of Appeal.

On 11 September 2009, District Court Judge Joyce then permanently sealed the Statement of Claims, Affidavits, Discovery, Memorandums and Interlocutory Application, as well as *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide*, *How to Take Over the World*, *Stalin's British Training*, and *Gifting the United Nations to Stalin*.

However the contents have not been given a secrecy order from the public . . . so be my guest and be well informed.

THE SEX COLLECTORS

III

GREG HALLETT

PRINCE OF NEW SPAIN
LONDON AUCKLAND FRANKFURT TORONTO

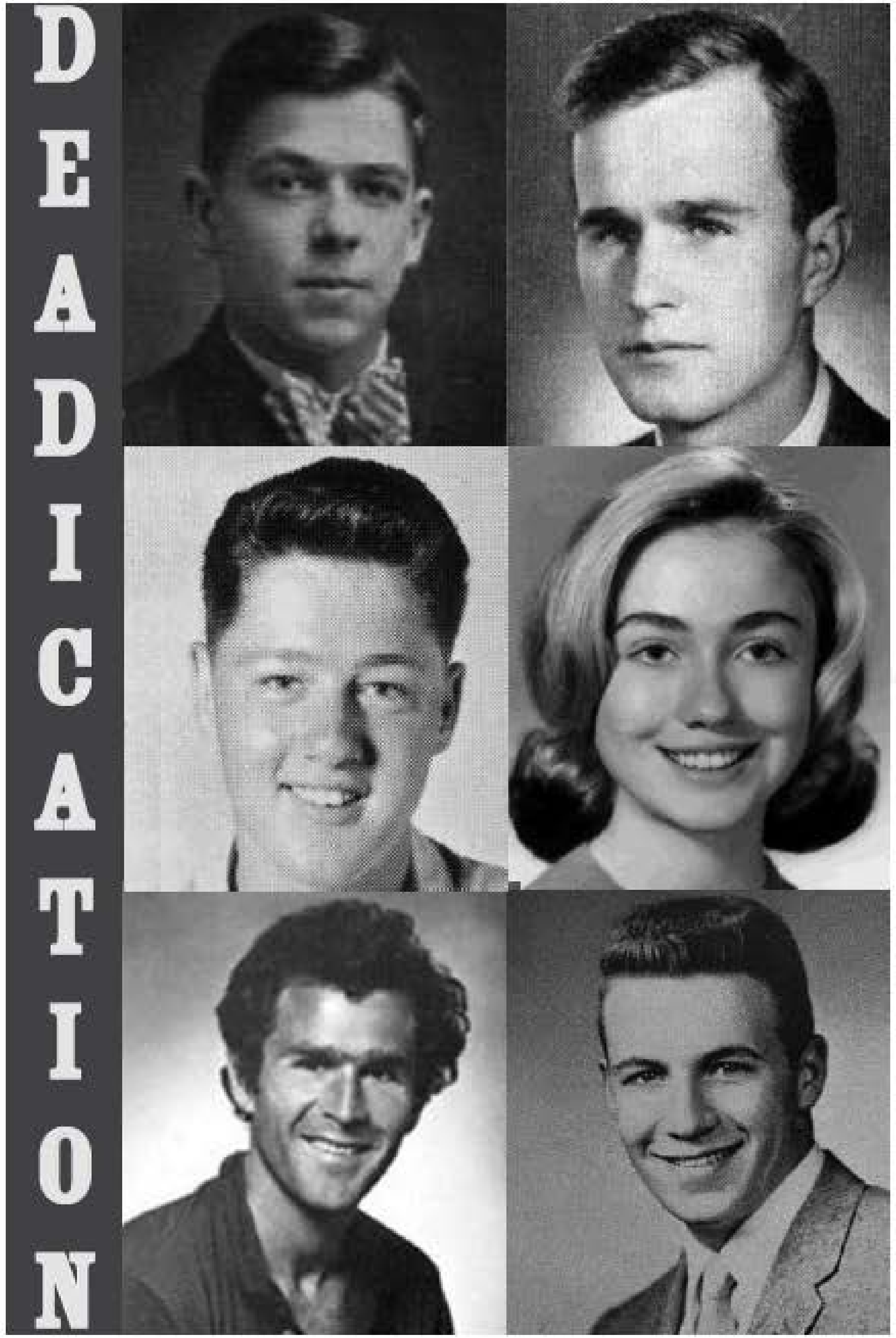
DEADICATION

I

STITCH-UPS

II

MURDERS

III

HEROIN TICKET

phoglio@yahoo.fr - 31.0

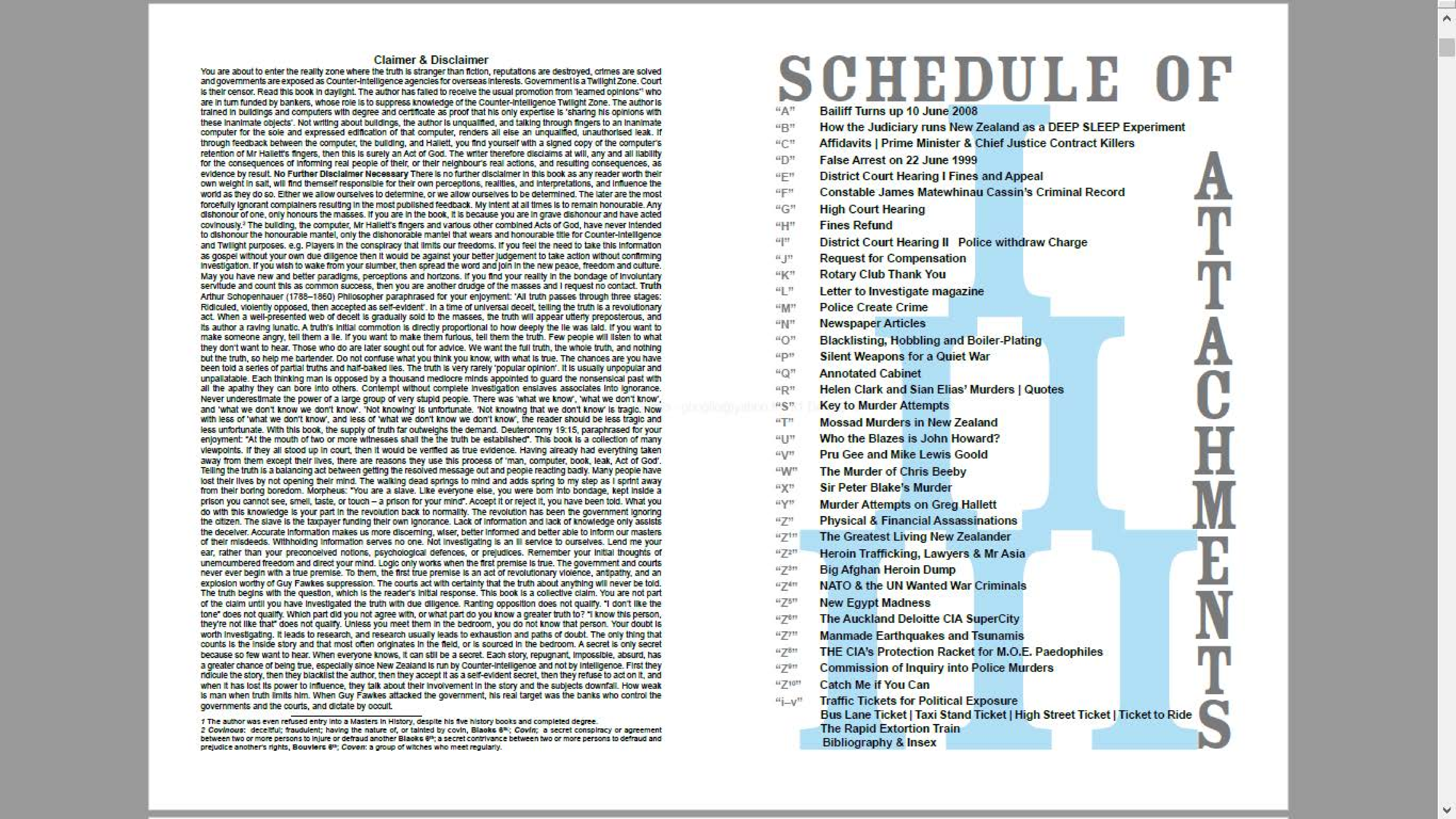

Claimer & Disclaimer

You are about to enter the reality zone where the truth is stranger than fiction, reputations are destroyed, crimes are solved and governments are exposed as Counter-Intelligence agencies for overseas interests. Government is a Twilight Zone. Court is their censor. Read this book in daylight. The author has failed to receive the usual promotion from 'learned opinions'[1] who are in turn funded by bankers, whose role is to suppress knowledge of the Counter-Intelligence Twilight Zone. The author is trained in buildings and computers with degree and certificate as proof that his only expertise is 'sharing his opinions with these inanimate objects'. Not writing about buildings, the author is unqualified, and talking through fingers to an inanimate computer for the sole and expressed edification of that computer, renders all else an unqualified, unauthorised leak. If through feedback between the computer, the building, and Hallett, you find yourself with a signed copy of the computer's retention of Mr Hallett's fingers, then this is surely an Act of God. The writer therefore disclaims at will, any and all liability for the consequences of informing real people of their, or their neighbour's real actions, and resulting consequences, as evidence by result. **No Further Disclaimer Necessary** There is no further disclaimer in this book as any reader worth their own weight in salt, will find themself responsible for their own perceptions, realities, and interpretations, and influence the world as they do so. Either we allow ourselves to determine, or we allow ourselves to be determined. The later are the most forcefully ignorant complainers resulting in the most published feedback. My intent at all times is to remain honourable. Any dishonour of one, only honours the masses. If you are in the book, it is because you are in grave dishonour and have acted covinously.[2] The building, the computer, Mr Hallett's fingers and various other combined Acts of God, have never intended to dishonour the honourable mantel, only the dishonorable mantel that wears and honourable title for Counter-Intelligence and Twilight purposes. e.g. Players in the conspiracy that limits our freedoms. If you feel the need to take this information as gospel without your own due diligence then it would be against your better judgement to take action without confirming investigation. If you wish to wake from your slumber, then spread the word and join in the new peace, freedom and culture. May you have new and better paradigms, perceptions and horizons. If you find your reality in the bondage of involuntary servitude and count this as common success, then you are another drudge of the masses and I request no contact. **Truth** Arthur Schopenhauer (1788–1860) Philosopher paraphrased for your enjoyment: 'All truth passes through three stages: Ridiculed, violently opposed, then accepted as self-evident'. In a time of universal deceit, telling the truth is a revolutionary act. When a well-presented web of deceit is gradually sold to the masses, the truth will appear utterly preposterous, and its author a raving lunatic. A truth's initial commotion is directly proportional to how deeply the lie was laid. If you want to make someone angry, tell them a lie. If you want to make them furious, tell them the truth. Few people will listen to what they don't want to hear. Those who do are later sought out for advice. We want the full truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth, so help me bartender. Do not confuse what you think you know, with what is true. The chances are you have been told a series of partial truths and half-baked lies. The truth is very rarely 'popular opinion'. It is usually unpopular and unpalatable. Each thinking man is opposed by a thousand mediocre minds appointed to guard the nonsensical past with all the apathy they can bore into others. Contempt without complete investigation enslaves associates into ignorance. Never underestimate the power of a large group of very stupid people. There was 'what we know', 'what we don't know', and 'what we don't know we don't know'. 'Not knowing' is unfortunate. 'Not knowing that we don't know' is tragic. Now with less of 'what we don't know', and less of 'what we don't know we don't know', the reader should be less tragic and less unfortunate. With this book, the supply of truth far outweighs the demand. Deuteronomy 19:15, paraphrased for your enjoyment: "At the mouth of two or more witnesses shall the the truth be established". This book is a collection of many viewpoints. If they all stood up in court, then it would be verified as true evidence. Having already had everything taken away from them except their lives, there are reasons they use this process of 'man, computer, book, leak, Act of God'. Telling the truth is a balancing act between getting the resolved message out and people reacting badly. Many people have lost their lives by not opening their mind. The walking dead springs to mind and adds spring to my step as I sprint away from their boring boredom. Morpheus: "You are a slave. Like everyone else, you were born into bondage, kept inside a prison you cannot see, smell, taste, or touch – a prison for your mind". Accept it or reject it, you have been told. What you do with this knowledge is your part in the revolution back to normality. The revolution has been the government ignoring the citizen. The slave is the taxpayer funding their own ignorance. Lack of information and lack of knowledge only assists the deceiver. Accurate information makes us more discerning, wiser, better informed and better able to inform our masters of their misdeeds. Withholding information serves no one. Not investigating is an ill service to ourselves. Lend me your ear, rather than your preconceived notions, psychological defences, or prejudices. Remember your initial thoughts of unencumbered freedom and direct your mind. Logic only works when the first premise is true. The government and courts never ever begin with a true premise. To them, the first true premise is an act of revolutionary violence, antipathy, and an explosion worthy of Guy Fawkes suppression. The courts act with certainty that the truth about anything will never be told. The truth begins with the question, which is the reader's initial response. This book is a collective claim. You are not part of the claim until you have investigated the truth with due diligence. Ranting opposition does not qualify. "I don't like the tone" does not qualify. Which part did you not agree with, or what part do you know a greater truth to? "I know this person, they're not like that" does not qualify. Unless you meet them in the bedroom, you do not know that person. Your doubt is worth investigating. It leads to research, and research usually leads to exhaustion and paths of doubt. The only thing that counts is the inside story and that most often originates in the field, or is sourced in the bedroom. A secret is only secret because so few want to hear. When everyone knows, it can still be a secret. Each story, repugnant, impossible, absurd, has a greater chance of being true, especially since New Zealand is run by Counter-Intelligence and not by intelligence. First they ridicule the story, then they blacklist the author, then they accept it as a self-evident secret, then they refuse to act on it, and when it has lost its power to influence, they talk about their involvement in the story and the subjects downfall. How weak is man when truth limits him. When Guy Fawkes attacked the government, his real target was the banks who control the governments and the courts, and dictate by occult.

---

[1] The author was even refused entry into a Masters in History, despite his five history books and completed degree.

[2] **Covinous:** deceitful; fraudulent; having the nature of, or tainted by covin, **Blacks 6th**; ***Covin***; a secret conspiracy or agreement between two or more persons to injure or defraud another **Blacks 6th**; a secret contrivance between two or more persons to defraud and prejudice another's rights, **Bouviers 6th**; ***Coven***: a group of witches who meet regularly.

SCHEDULE OF ATTACHMENTS

"A"	Bailiff Turns up 10 June 2008
"B"	How the Judiciary runs New Zealand as a DEEP SLEEP Experiment
"C"	Affidavits | Prime Minister & Chief Justice Contract Killers
"D"	False Arrest on 22 June 1999
"E"	District Court Hearing I Fines and Appeal
"F"	Constable James Matewhinau Cassin's Criminal Record
"G"	High Court Hearing
"H"	Fines Refund
"I"	District Court Hearing II Police withdraw Charge
"J"	Request for Compensation
"K"	Rotary Club Thank You
"L"	Letter to Investigate magazine
"M"	Police Create Crime
"N"	Newspaper Articles
"O"	Blacklisting, Hobbling and Boiler-Plating
"P"	Silent Weapons for a Quiet War
"Q"	Annotated Cabinet
"R"	Helen Clark and Sian Elias' Murders | Quotes
"S"	Key to Murder Attempts
"T"	Mossad Murders in New Zealand
"U"	Who the Blazes is John Howard?
"V"	Pru Gee and Mike Lewis Goold
"W"	The Murder of Chris Beeby
"X"	Sir Peter Blake's Murder
"Y"	Murder Attempts on Greg Hallett
"Z"	Physical & Financial Assassinations
"Z^{1}"	The Greatest Living New Zealander
"Z^{2}"	Heroin Trafficking, Lawyers & Mr Asia
"Z^{3}"	Big Afghan Heroin Dump
"Z^{4}"	NATO & the UN Wanted War Criminals
"Z^{5}"	New Egypt Madness
"Z^{6}"	The Auckland Deloitte CIA SuperCity
"Z^{7}"	Manmade Earthquakes and Tsunamis
"Z^{8}"	THE CIA's Protection Racket for M.O.E. Paedophiles
"Z^{9}"	Commission of Inquiry into Police Murders
"Z^{10}"	Catch Me if You Can
"i–v"	Traffic Tickets for Political Exposure Bus Lane Ticket | Taxi Stand Ticket | High Street Ticket | Ticket to Ride
	The Rapid Extortion Train
	Bibliography & Insex

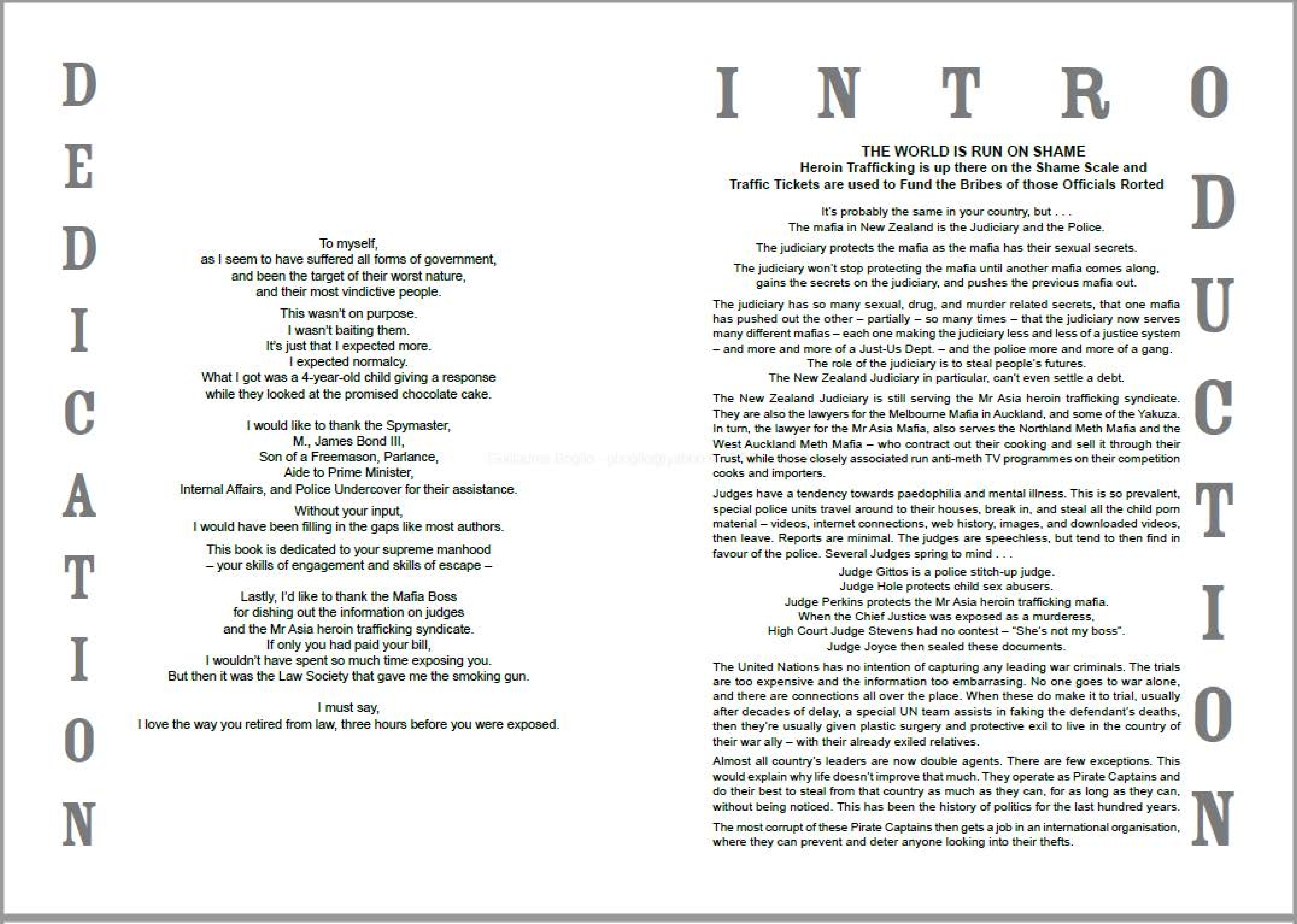

DEDICATION

To myself,
as I seem to have suffered all forms of government,
and been the target of their worst nature,
and their most vindictive people.

This wasn't on purpose.
I wasn't baiting them.
It's just that I expected more.
I expected normalcy.
What I got was a 4-year-old child giving a response
while they looked at the promised chocolate cake.

I would like to thank the Spymaster,
M., James Bond III,
Son of a Freemason, Parlance,
Aide to Prime Minister,
Internal Affairs, and Police Undercover for their assistance.

Without your input,
I would have been filling in the gaps like most authors.

This book is dedicated to your supreme manhood
– your skills of engagement and skills of escape –

Lastly, I'd like to thank the Mafia Boss
for dishing out the information on judges
and the Mr Asia heroin trafficking syndicate.
If only you had paid your bill,
I wouldn't have spent so much time exposing you.
But then it was the Law Society that gave me the smoking gun.

I must say,
I love the way you retired from law, three hours before you were exposed.

Guillaume Boglio - gboglio@yahoo

INTRODUCTION

THE WORLD IS RUN ON SHAME

Heroin Trafficking is up there on the Shame Scale and Traffic Tickets are used to Fund the Bribes of those Officials Rorted

It's probably the same in your country, but . . .
The mafia in New Zealand is the Judiciary and the Police.

The judiciary protects the mafia as the mafia has their sexual secrets.

The judiciary won't stop protecting the mafia until another mafia comes along,
gains the secrets on the judiciary, and pushes the previous mafia out.

The judiciary has so many sexual, drug, and murder related secrets, that one mafia has pushed out the other – partially – so many times – that the judiciary now serves many different mafias – each one making the judiciary less and less of a justice system – and more and more of a Just-Us Dept. – and the police more and more of a gang.
The role of the judiciary is to steal people's futures.
The New Zealand Judiciary in particular, can't even settle a debt.

The New Zealand Judiciary is still serving the Mr Asia heroin trafficking syndicate. They are also the lawyers for the Melbourne Mafia in Auckland, and some of the Yakuza. In turn, the lawyer for the Mr Asia Mafia, also serves the Northland Meth Mafia and the West Auckland Meth Mafia – who contract out their cooking and sell it through their Trust, while those closely associated run anti-meth TV programmes on their competition cooks and importers.

Judges have a tendency towards paedophilia and mental illness. This is so prevalent, special police units travel around to their houses, break in, and steal all the child porn material – videos, internet connections, web history, images, and downloaded videos, then leave. Reports are minimal. The judges are speechless, but tend to then find in favour of the police. Several Judges spring to mind . . .

Judge Gittos is a police stitch-up judge.
Judge Hole protects child sex abusers.
Judge Perkins protects the Mr Asia heroin trafficking mafia.
When the Chief Justice was exposed as a murderess,
High Court Judge Stevens had no contest – "She's not my boss".
Judge Joyce then sealed these documents.

The United Nations has no intention of capturing any leading war criminals. The trials are too expensive and the information too embarrassing. No one goes to war alone, and there are connections all over the place. When these do make it to trial, usually after decades of delay, a special UN team assists in faking the defendant's deaths, then they're usually given plastic surgery and protective exil to live in the country of their war ally – with their already exiled relatives.

Almost all country's leaders are now double agents. There are few exceptions. This would explain why life doesn't improve that much. They operate as Pirate Captains and do their best to steal from that country as much as they can, for as long as they can, without being noticed. This has been the history of politics for the last hundred years.

The most corrupt of these Pirate Captains then gets a job in an international organisation, where they can prevent and deter anyone looking into their thefts.

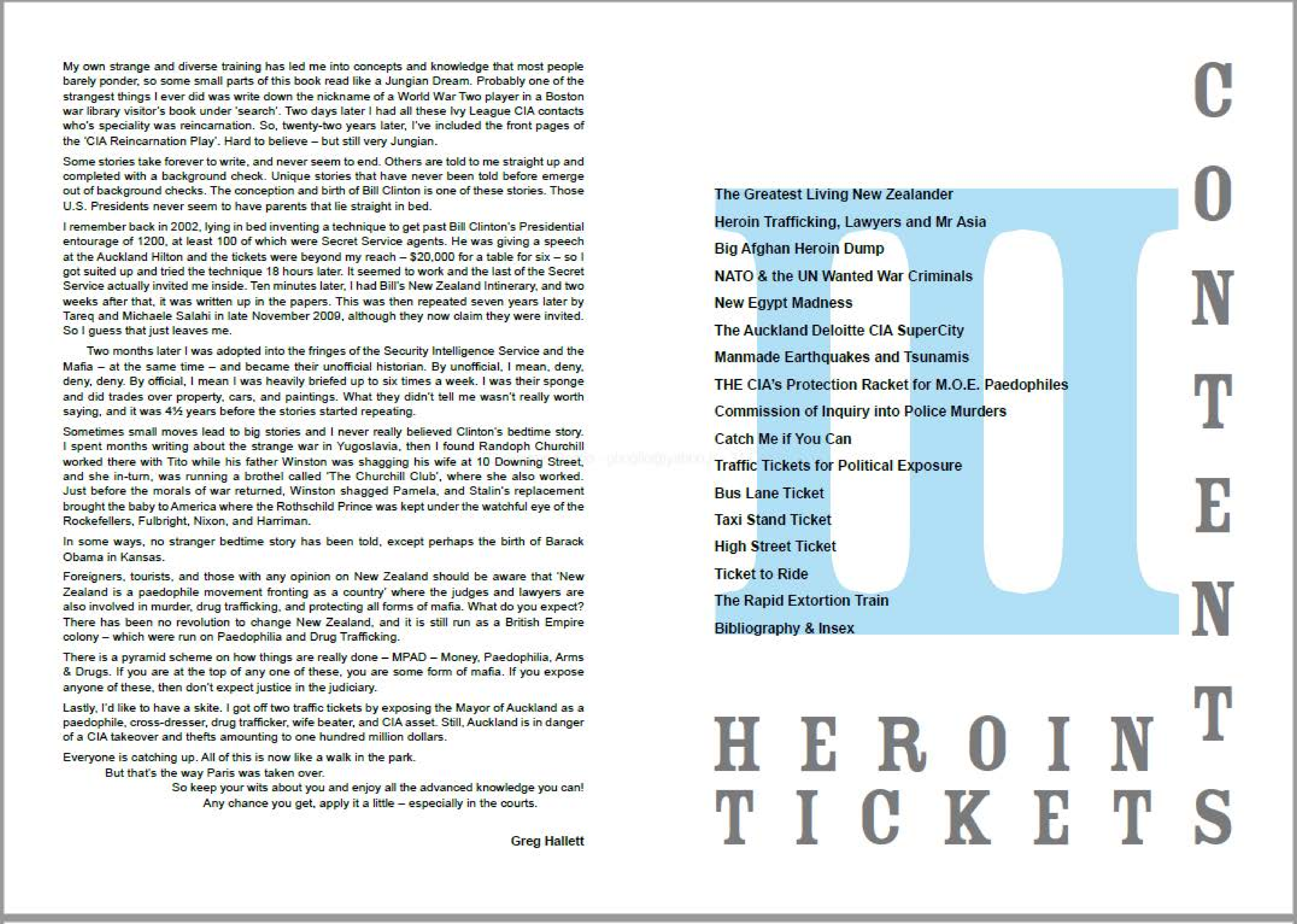

My own strange and diverse training has led me into concepts and knowledge that most people barely ponder, so some small parts of this book read like a Jungian Dream. Probably one of the strangest things I ever did was write down the nickname of a World War Two player in a Boston war library visitor's book under 'search'. Two days later I had all these Ivy League CIA contacts who's speciality was reincarnation. So, twenty-two years later, I've included the front pages of the 'CIA Reincarnation Play'. Hard to believe – but still very Jungian.

Some stories take forever to write, and never seem to end. Others are told to me straight up and completed with a background check. Unique stories that have never been told before emerge out of background checks. The conception and birth of Bill Clinton is one of these stories. Those U.S. Presidents never seem to have parents that lie straight in bed.

I remember back in 2002, lying in bed inventing a technique to get past Bill Clinton's Presidential entourage of 1200, at least 100 of which were Secret Service agents. He was giving a speech at the Auckland Hilton and the tickets were beyond my reach – $20,000 for a table for six – so I got suited up and tried the technique 18 hours later. It seemed to work and the last of the Secret Service actually invited me inside. Ten minutes later, I had Bill's New Zealand Intinerary, and two weeks after that, it was written up in the papers. This was then repeated seven years later by Tareq and Michaele Salahi in late November 2009, although they now claim they were invited. So I guess that just leaves me.

Two months later I was adopted into the fringes of the Security Intelligence Service and the Mafia – at the same time – and became their unofficial historian. By unofficial, I mean, deny, deny, deny. By official, I mean I was heavily briefed up to six times a week. I was their sponge and did trades over property, cars, and paintings. What they didn't tell me wasn't really worth saying, and it was 4½ years before the stories started repeating.

Sometimes small moves lead to big stories and I never really believed Clinton's bedtime story. I spent months writing about the strange war in Yugoslavia, then I found Randoph Churchill worked there with Tito while his father Winston was shagging his wife at 10 Downing Street, and she in-turn, was running a brothel called 'The Churchill Club', where she also worked. Just before the morals of war returned, Winston shagged Pamela, and Stalin's replacement brought the baby to America where the Rothschild Prince was kept under the watchful eye of the Rockefellers, Fulbright, Nixon, and Harriman.

In some ways, no stranger bedtime story has been told, except perhaps the birth of Barack Obama in Kansas.

Foreigners, tourists, and those with any opinion on New Zealand should be aware that 'New Zealand is a paedophile movement fronting as a country' where the judges and lawyers are also involved in murder, drug trafficking, and protecting all forms of mafia. What do you expect? There has been no revolution to change New Zealand, and it is still run as a British Empire colony – which were run on Paedophilia and Drug Trafficking.

There is a pyramid scheme on how things are really done – MPAD – Money, Paedophilia, Arms & Drugs. If you are at the top of any one of these, you are some form of mafia. If you expose anyone of these, then don't expect justice in the judiciary.

Lastly, I'd like to have a skite. I got off two traffic tickets by exposing the Mayor of Auckland as a paedophile, cross-dresser, drug trafficker, wife beater, and CIA asset. Still, Auckland is in danger of a CIA takeover and thefts amounting to one hundred million dollars.

Everyone is catching up. All of this is now like a walk in the park.
But that's the way Paris was taken over.
So keep your wits about you and enjoy all the advanced knowledge you can!
Any chance you get, apply it a little – especially in the courts.

Greg Hallett

CONTENTS

The Greatest Living New Zealander
Heroin Trafficking, Lawyers and Mr Asia
Big Afghan Heroin Dump
NATO & the UN Wanted War Criminals
New Egypt Madness
The Auckland Deloitte CIA SuperCity
Manmade Earthquakes and Tsunamis
THE CIA's Protection Racket for M.O.E. Paedophiles
Commission of Inquiry into Police Murders
Catch Me if You Can
Traffic Tickets for Political Exposure
Bus Lane Ticket
Taxi Stand Ticket
High Street Ticket
Ticket to Ride
The Rapid Extortion Train
Bibliography & Insex

HEROIN TICKETS

III

“Z^1” The Greatest Living New Zealander 1
Heroin in New Zealand
Political History of New Zealanders getting the Victoria Cross (VC)
History of New Zealanders not getting the Victoria Cross
Military History at Home
The Victoria Cross for New Zealand (VCNZ)
Willie Apiata – First to get the Victoria Cross for New Zealand
Medals Stolen
Witnessed by a Superior Officer
Compromised Helen Clark sends the NZ SAS into Afghanistan
Defense Parliamentary Select Committee Inside Story
Defense Parliamentary Select Committee Inside Story
Uncle Willie Apiata's background
The Official Citation Report
The SIS Version
The Military Reinactment Scenario
America Supports Anything that Supports Heroin
Enter Rambo . . . What really happened
SAS-SIS Treff
Willie 'Rambo' Apiata
Discrepencies
Special Air Service of New Zealand don't disagree
The Greatest Living New Zealander is the Best Liar on the Day
New Zealand Political Scientist comments on Helen Clark
Helen Clark Murders by the Georgia Guidestones
Helen Clark lands top UN job
Valedictory Speech by Rt Hon Helen Clark
Helen Clark left of Mao, communist and lesbian
Cloak but no daggers as Clark checks out
It's a hard rain that's gonna fall
Compromised Leaders, promoted, leave their gay paedophile partners at home
The Reincarnation of Adolf Hitler as World Dictator
Top award takes Clark by surprise
Treason always gets a Front Row seat
Mirror mirror on the wall, who's got the yellowest teeth of them all?
“Z^2” Heroin Trafficking, Lawyers & Mr Asia 45
SEATO, Vietnam, and the first "Mr Asia"
The frst time I heard of Mr Asia
Charlie Hausmann, Papadopoulos and Wellington Heroin
The New Mr Asia | Terry Clark
The Heroin-Junkie Prostitute, the Mayor of Auckland and the Head of the Drug Squad
Buddah Sticks, Paspalum Grass and Rat Poison
MI-6 gives the Colonies a Criminal Lifeline
Graeme 'Smith' Friedlander
The Heroin Trafficking Lawyering Mafia Gang (LLB) | Peter Williams | Karen Soich | Eb Leary
Permanently Sanitised Mr Asia – the Murders
The Organisation – Heroin Trafficking, Money Laundering, Sex, and Contract Killing
Bob Trimbole and the Three Bobs
Lawyers Blowing their Nose
Terry Clark's gambling v. the Order for Marty Johnstone's Murder
Marty Johnstone's Murder and the Money Trail (not Trial)
From Sac to Cell: Show me the money
Peter Williams blows a load in London – one million pounds
Peter Williams smuggles money into New Zealand
The Australian Anti-Corruption Team arranged Terry Clark's escape
Mr Asia's 'Death' a.k.a. Plastic Surgery at Brize Norton
Allison Dine
The SIS pay a lightweight visit
Peter Williams Testifies as best he can
The Head of the Terrorist Squad, the Heroin-Solicitor and the Prostitute
New Zealand Courts refuse to acknowledge Slavery
Terry Clark and Peter Williams were both NZ Police Narcs with MI-6 protection
Peter Alderidge Williams QC has been found marked, measured and wanting
Aussie Malcolm, Danny Watson (loose mandible springs) and why no one listens
Dame Margaret Bazley is Lillian Bazley – the heroin trafficker and CIA contract killer Margaret Bazley – who was married to the convicted murderer Steve Bazley – and now controls Auckland
The Bazley-Banks CIA Takeover of Auckland (2009–10)
Talkshow of Ignorance | Bain Distraction
A Compromised Government always has a role in Heroin Trafficking
MI-6 takes over Australia | MI-6 takes over New Zealand | Cardinal Delargey | Sir Denis Blundell Sir Keith Jacka Holyoake | Mandy Rice-Davies and Christine Keeler
Muldoon had control over all aspects of the country
The Rural Development Finance murder and the children of the National Party
Duncan MacIntyre (1960–84) | Venn Young (1966–90) | Allan McCready (1960–78)
Muldoon was a bit of a masochist . . . Muldoon was a bit of a sadist
The media can create something out of hot air, but when the air gets hot . . .
Prime Minister David Lange's Fat Frolicking Foibles (1984–89)
Prime Minister Norman Kirk's Assassination (1972–74)
Reginald Delargey
But it's not the men who are all bad – there's also Sandra Coney
The Add-Up is Tits-Up
Peter Williams QC gives Credit to Summary Matters
Retiring the Mafia Boss and Emigrating him into Exile unto Death
John Hancock on the Kol Nidre

“Z³” Big Afghan Heroin Dump 109
The Subconscious Language of Heroin Sales
Messages and Pathways
World Press – You suck !
Frampton Comes Alive !
The Daily Show with Jon Stewart (and Gretchen Peters) 8 June 2009
But here's the reason for the ongoing Afghan War and sabotage . . . My Nine Points

“Z⁴” NATO and the UN Wanted War Criminals 137
NATO and Paedophilia
HARDTALK with Lord George Robertson
British Distraction and Destruction on a Massive Scale
UN Wanted War Criminals
Slobodan Milošević
Milošević's Relations with Russia and China
Milošević's Trial and Autopsy
The Spymaster on ONI and Milošević
Look-alikes, Body Doubles and Doppelgängers in live storage in Russia
Novotel Interrogation by Richard Holbrooke's man, Auckland 1994
Inspector Hutton's naming rights of Auckland Hotels
Milošević's funeral and Organised Cover for the Replacement Body
Radovan Karadžić
Ratko Mladić
Yugoslavian War Result
Governance – You suck !
Rewards for Justice
Military and Government Drug Running
Monarchies of Europe, Yugoslavian Royal Family

“Z⁵” New Egypt Madness 259
Barack Obama – Origins long time coming
Obama's Grandmother was CIA
And now for some Distraction News
Barack Obama or so we thought
Cloning Egyptian Pharaohs as President for the New Egypt
Barack Hussein Obama II's origins

“Z⁶” The Auckland Deloitte CIA SuperCity 285
The Military | The Movement | The Mayor
The Auckland City Council and CIA Extortion
The Auckland Deloitte CIA SuperCity
Auckland City Council – 'First city of the Pacific' at leaking money and being rorted
Ian Rae Group Manager of ACC's Information Technology and Communications
Deloitte
Deloitte and the ACE Refit
Dame Margaret Bazley and Deloitte's SuperCity for Auckland
Deloitte Foreknowledge
ACC Contracts
Deloitte's Rorting Methods
ACC Communications
Here's how the Auckland City Council doesn't work.
ACC Chief Executive Officer David Rankin
How the CIA lost all their New Zealand Money
Fired for Asking
The Sabotage Model in America
We're the Auckland City Council – Let's actively engage in Sabotage
Rod Deane – Fiscal Treason gets a Front Row Seat
Sue Bradford's Bridge – The Biggest Single Span in the Southern Hemisphere
Transparency International's Corruption Perceptions Index
Funding
Transparency International NZ Orders Arrest of Anti-Corruption Advocate
Lack of Transparency International New Zealand style
No Undercovers used so Exiled Nazis sleep well
Embarrassing Lack of Response to Nazis in NZ
Shameful Truth Must be Told
World War II Nazis living in Auckland in the 1980s
Hunt to Kill | Simon Moore SC
Civil Liason Judge Nicola Mathers | Judge Roderick Joyce
Karen Soich | Peter Williams
Blood Farming
Coconut Resort

“Z⁷” Manmade Earthquakes and Tsunamis 339
Current Science
Nikola Tesla
HAARP Storms | HAARP Earthquakes
PROJECT SEAL a.k.a. 'the Tsunami bomb' (1944–50)
Cannons shooting Copper & Aluminium into the Atmosphere altering Magnetic Field
The Great Alaska Earthquake of 27 March 1964 – Manmade
Great Alaska Tsunamis – Manmade
Manmade Earthquakes
Iran Earthquake of 16 September 1978
Yugoslav Earthquakes of 15 April 1979
Kobe Earthquake of 17 January 1995
Sarin Gassing of the Tokyo subway on 20 March 1995
Papua New Guinea Earthquake of 17 July 1998
Earthquakes for Anti-Terrorism by 2001

Guillaume Boglio - gboglio@yahoo

Afghan Earthquake of 3 March 2002
Philippines Earthquake of 6 March 2002
Indian Ocean Earthquake and Boxing Day Tsunami of 26 December 2004
Samoa Tsunami of 29 September 2009
Sumatra Earthquake of 30 September 2009
Oil and Gas wars in the Gulf of Mexico – Disappearing Island
Eureka City California Earthquake of 9 January 2010
Haiti Earthquake of 12 January 2010
Oil found in Haiti and Cuba
US Navy Forth Fleet in the Caribbean (1 July 2008–)
Caribbean War set up
Haiti's Special Envoy
Russian Navy in the Caribbean (November 2008–)
Haiti Results
Don't Rely on the Red Cross for HELP: Bernadine Healy (1999–2001);
Marsha J. Evans (2002–05); Jack McGuire (2006–07); Mark Everson (2007)
Manmade Earthquakes, Volcanoes and Tsunamis – Some History and How-To
Ponergeopology
Webversity – To be or not to be Censored
Prince Billy James Churchill Rex (Censored) – Bill Clinton
Haiti's Hurricanes (15 August–15 September 2008)
A Short History of Haiti and Recent Presidents

“Z^{8}” THE CIA's Protection Racket for M.O.E. Paedophiles 383

Trevor Roger
UVS INTERNATIONAL – NEW FLASH TGR Helicorp Unveils SNARK VTOL UAV
Deloitte
The Darling JOHN BANKS QSO "Hi, I'm a CIA Asset"
Archie Banks and Gus Parsons
John Banks, the CIA, and all forms of entertainment
John Banks, Phil Warren and vanloads of dope
Police Minister John Banks was one of these
John Banks and CIA Consultancy
John Banks' drugs and CIA takeover of Local Body Councils
John Banks' homosexual child sex Abuse
John Banks removed/resigns from Minister of Police
John Banks' CIA Media cover
John Banks Honoured
John Banks QSO, Queer Son Of A Career Criminal QSOACC
Dr. Michael Bassett covers for John Banks, his family, himself, and Paul Swain
So much for the Labour of love
Roger Douglas and the Hon. Dr. Michael Bassett
Peter Leitch – The Mad Butcher
CIA Sabotage of New Zealand
Ian Kahurangi Mitchell, Paul Holmes, and Secretary for Education Karen Sewell
Brian Neeson MP for Te Atatu North (1990–93)
Waitakere Mayor Bob Harvey
We present like the Brady Bunch . . . But . . .
Fly like a Butterfly, sting like a bee
John Banks and Bob Harvey compete to be the best and biggest cross-dressing Mayor
Hi, my name's Glenda Roger and New Zealand is a country of plywood helicopters
Non-Prosecution Certificate?
Karen Sewell pays her 'les-be-friends' an extra NZ$20 million
The murder of Senior Sergeant Peter Evans of the Sexual Abuse Team

“Z^{9}” Commission of Inquiry into Police Murders 421

Wise Counsel from Don Stewart on Police Corruption
Winebox Inquiry
Ian Wishart, You Shameful Sell Out – this is butt-cracking crap
The Murder of Paul White. . . and boy were the people involved qualified
Winston Peters' Career Moves
Michelle Boag – the Quasi-Intellectual Sexpot Semi-Drag Counter-Intelligence Queen
New Zealand Police 'High Priority' Investigation into Paul White's Murder
Editorial: New Zealand Police Royal Commission overdue
Police Shagging during Stakeout
Pre-Christmas Boiler-Plating
Judge Elliot
Judge Edward Taihakurei Durie
Judicial Inside Jobs
And Now for some Distraction News – 7 Deadly Sins of Leah Panapa, New Idea
A Product of Failure
Fletchers Crooked Valuers and the SAS Murders
Valuers and Undertakers
Sian Elias Locks up Husband Hugh Fletcher
Sian Elias Steals the Compensation Money
Sian Elias Bribed into Chief Justice Position
Dicky Noble let out of Prison
Chief Justice's Husband's Board of Directors Wear Nazi Uniforms
Threats to Kill, Attempts to Kill and Recent Killings

“Z^{10}” Catch Me if You Can 443

The Serious Fraud Office Plan a Visit
Intelligence Failures amount to Counter-Intelligence
Readings from the Kremlin Bathtub
Being a lawyer – it ain't that hard
The Usual Police Stitch-ups | The Usual Judicial Confusion
Maori Stats and Police Corruption | Late Starters
Fluffing in Court | Non-Mafia Result

Traffic Tickets for Political Exposure

“i” Bus Lane Ticket 461
Auckland City Council pro-narc Letter (24 September 2008)
Letter to Bus lane enforcement officer 233 (30 September 2008)
Affidavit in Support of Letter of Request (30 September 2008)
Indemnity Bond
Driver Details Form
Auckland City Council Infringement Letter (20 October 2008)
Auckland City Council Infringement Notice (undated)
Auckland City Council Reminder Notice (12 December 2008)
Letter to Auckland City Council (12 January 2009)
Tax Invoice Statement in favour of Joseph Gregoy Hallett
Driving Sound & Battery receipts
The King of New Zealand shags the Queen Mother
Ms. Shipley’s Murders
Jenny Shipley, Alcopops, Wilson Neill, IRD, Serious Fraud Office & Winebox Inquiry
Authorities stand in Dishonour
As of 6 October 2008, the Auckland City Council confirms . . .
As of 4 December 2008, the Auckland City Council confirms . . .
As of 22 January 2009, the Auckland City Council confirms . . .
The Ministry of Justice ignore Mayor John Banks paedophilia and make threats
Notice of Fine (21 March 2009)
Letter to Deputy Registrar Mohimi Prakash, Auckland District Court (30 April 2009)
Application to Correct Irregularities in Proceedings for Infringement Offence (30 April 2009)
Ministry of Justice Deputy Registrar Auckland Denial to Correct Irregularity (19 May 2009)
Ministry of Justice Deputy Registrar Wellington offering Court of Appeal (20 May 2009)

“ii” Taxi Stand Ticket 521
Taxi Stand Infringement Notice (14 November 2008)
Letter to Officer 027 exposing Mayor John Banks as a paedophile (24 November 2008)
Auckland City Council Reminder Notice (15 December 2008)
Auckland City Council Infringement Cancelled (16 December 2008)

“iii” High Street Ticket 529
High Street Infringement Notice (11 November 2008)
Auckland City Council Reminder Notice (11 December 2008)
Letter to Officer 117 ticket issued as Town Crier shouting Helen Clark’s murders (30 Dec. 2008)
Letter to Officer 117 confirming parking paid for, EndTime created (24 November 2008)
Exhibit “A” Town Crier on Helen Clark’s murders, Vulcan Lane/High Court (11 Nov. 2008)
ACC Letter from Helen Hargraves, splitting hairs having/displaying ticket (2 March 2009)
Letter to Helen Hargraves, Solicitor, ACC, Michael Cullen problem gambler (13 March 2009)
Black Horse Friday, Minister of Finance Dr. Michael Cullen declares himself
‘The Six Million Dollar Man’ and the single biggest fuckwit in New Zealand’s history
Prince of New Spain
ACC Letter from Helen Hargraves noting/refusing to comment on points (13 March 2009)
Auckland City Council Notice of Fine (10 April 2009)
Application to Correct Irregularities in Proceedings for Infringement Offence (30 April 2009)
Ministry of Justice Deputy Registrar Auckland Denial to Correct Irregularity (19 May 2009)
Ministry of Justice Deputy Registrar Wellington offering Court of Appeal (20 May 2009)

“iv” Ticket to Ride 551
Bernie Madoff, the CIA, Antarctica and the Auckland SuperCity
Bernie Madoff’s Early Years
Madoff’s Charity
Failed Investigations – all in the family
Robert M. Stockmann to Greg Hallett et al, 22 April 2009: ‘Judge blocks Madoff bankruptcy’
Madoff Hands Himself Over, but Not the Money, or his Family
Assets and Last Minute Steals as Madoff hands over the problem
Pre-Sentencing
Bernie Madoff’s Escape
The CIA looses US$ billions with Madoff and Steals Auckland
Panictarcta
The Good, The Bad, and The Ugly
The Future, Intelligence on Barack Obama
Israel in Australasia
The Queen Raids and the Fed Pays

“v” The Rapid Extortion Train 565
How the Auckland City Council Extorts 157% in five minutes
Auckland City Deloitte CIA Extortion John Banks Mayor
Auckland City Council letter (22 February 2010) – you’re off the hook
Savage Blanche ACC email
Welcome to Auckland – the Mafia Capital of the Western World’s South Pacific
Auckland City Council Customer Survey

Bibliography 573
Insex 583

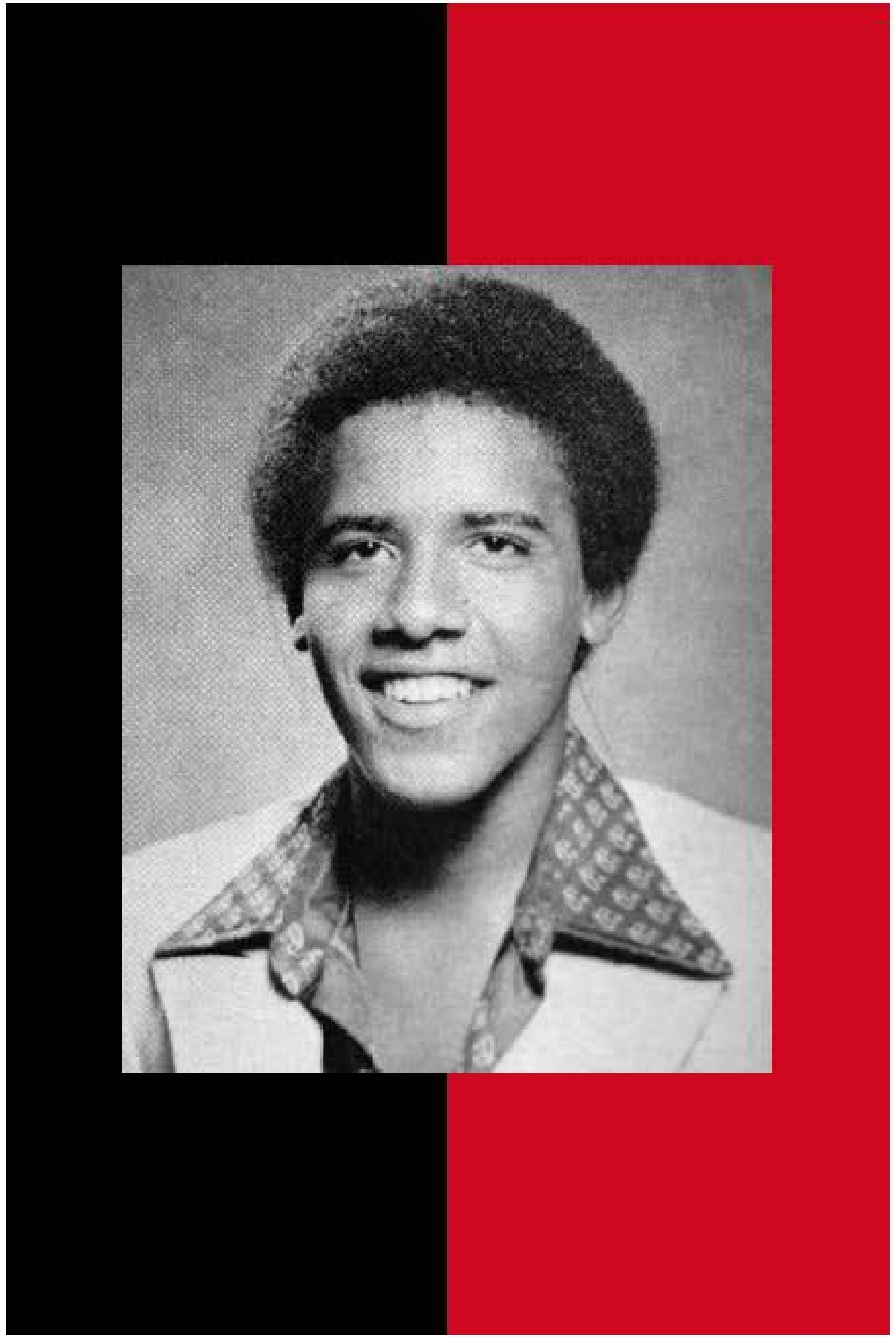

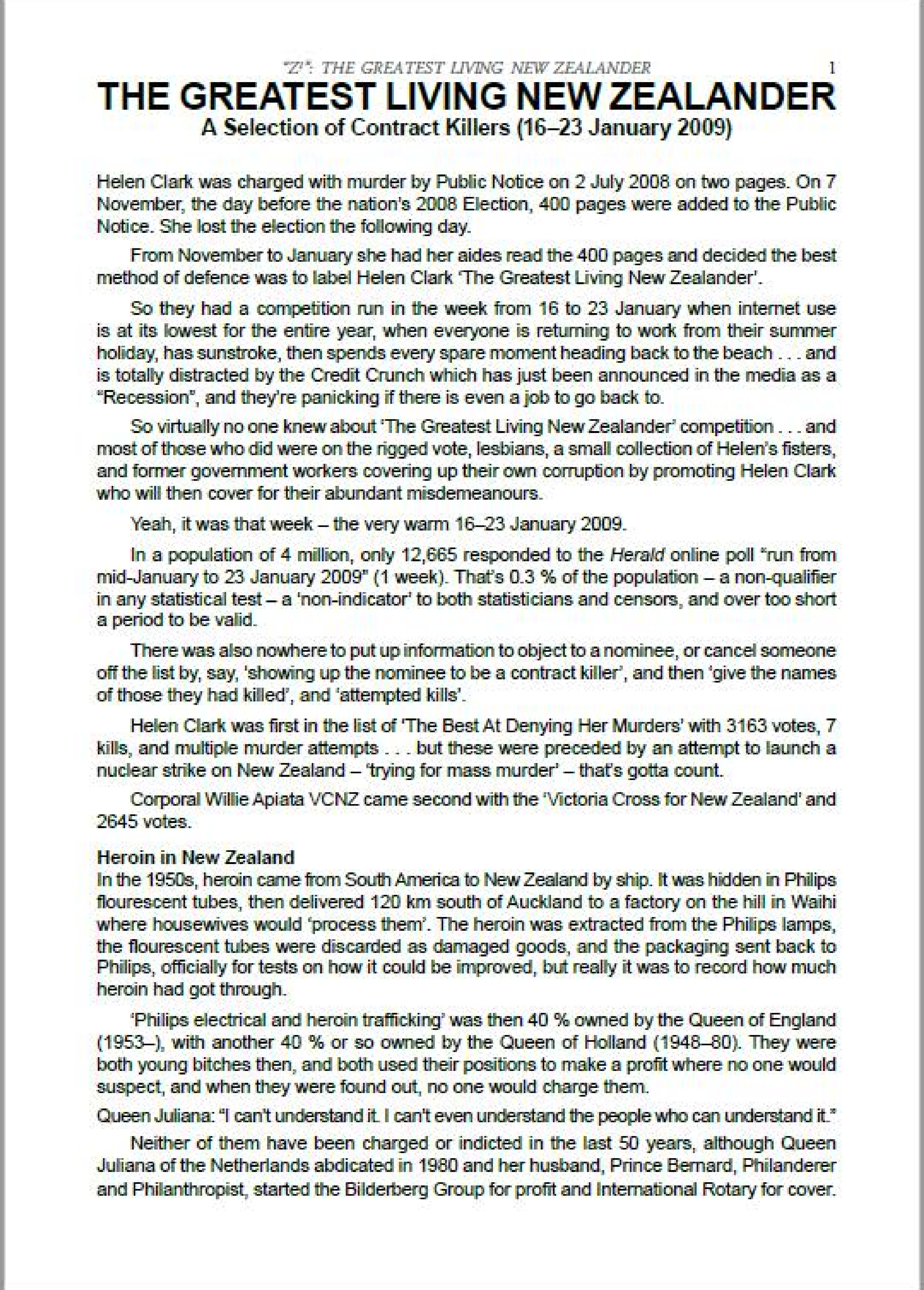

THE GREATEST LIVING NEW ZEALANDER

A Selection of Contract Killers (16–23 January 2009)

Helen Clark was charged with murder by Public Notice on 2 July 2008 on two pages. On 7 November, the day before the nation's 2008 Election, 400 pages were added to the Public Notice. She lost the election the following day.

From November to January she had her aides read the 400 pages and decided the best method of defence was to label Helen Clark 'The Greatest Living New Zealander'.

So they had a competition run in the week from 16 to 23 January when internet use is at its lowest for the entire year, when everyone is returning to work from their summer holiday, has sunstroke, then spends every spare moment heading back to the beach . . . and is totally distracted by the Credit Crunch which has just been announced in the media as a "Recession", and they're panicking if there is even a job to go back to.

So virtually no one knew about 'The Greatest Living New Zealander' competition . . . and most of those who did were on the rigged vote, lesbians, a small collection of Helen's fisters, and former government workers covering up their own corruption by promoting Helen Clark who will then cover for their abundant misdemeanours.

Yeah, it was that week – the very warm 16–23 January 2009.

In a population of 4 million, only 12,665 responded to the *Herald* online poll "run from mid-January to 23 January 2009" (1 week). That's 0.3 % of the population – a non-qualifier in any statistical test – a 'non-indicator' to both statisticians and censors, and over too short a period to be valid.

There was also nowhere to put up information to object to a nominee, or cancel someone off the list by, say, 'showing up the nominee to be a contract killer', and then 'give the names of those they had killed', and 'attempted kills'.

Helen Clark was first in the list of 'The Best At Denying Her Murders' with 3163 votes, 7 kills, and multiple murder attempts . . . but these were preceded by an attempt to launch a nuclear strike on New Zealand – 'trying for mass murder' – that's gotta count.

Corporal Willie Apiata VCNZ came second with the 'Victoria Cross for New Zealand' and 2645 votes.

Heroin in New Zealand

In the 1950s, heroin came from South America to New Zealand by ship. It was hidden in Philips flourescent tubes, then delivered 120 km south of Auckland to a factory on the hill in Waihi where housewives would 'process them'. The heroin was extracted from the Philips lamps, the flourescent tubes were discarded as damaged goods, and the packaging sent back to Philips, officially for tests on how it could be improved, but really it was to record how much heroin had got through.

'Philips electrical and heroin trafficking' was then 40 % owned by the Queen of England (1953–), with another 40 % or so owned by the Queen of Holland (1948–80). They were both young bitches then, and both used their positions to make a profit where no one would suspect, and when they were found out, no one would charge them.

Queen Juliana: "I can't understand it. I can't even understand the people who can understand it."

Neither of them have been charged or indicted in the last 50 years, although Queen Juliana of the Netherlands abdicated in 1980 and her husband, Prince Bernard, Philanderer and Philanthropist, started the Bilderberg Group for profit and International Rotary for cover.

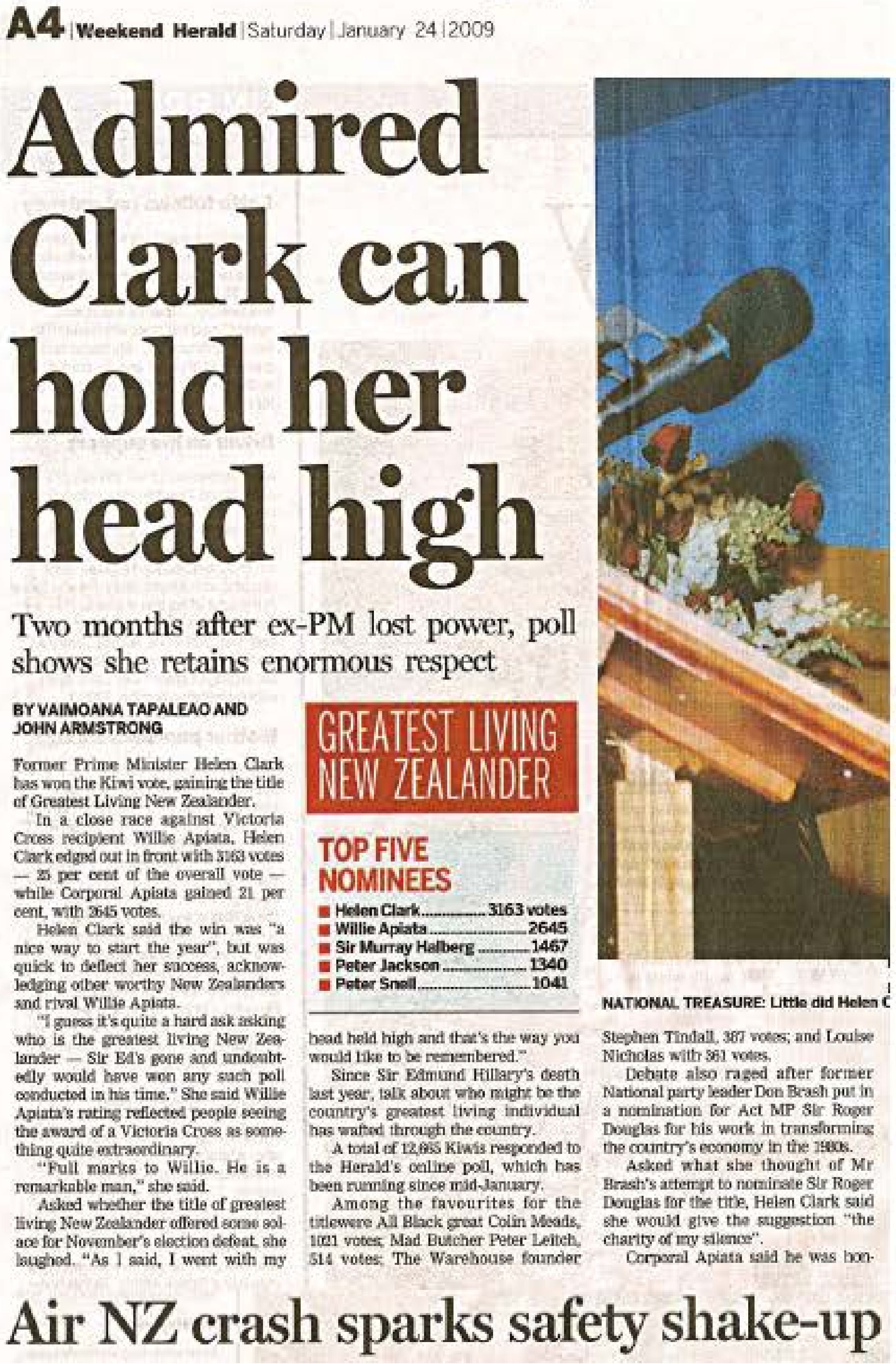

A4 | Weekend Herald | Saturday | January 24 | 2009

Admired Clark can hold her head high

Two months after ex-PM lost power, poll shows she retains enormous respect

BY VAIMOANA TAPALEAO AND JOHN ARMSTRONG

Former Prime Minister Helen Clark has won the Kiwi vote, gaining the title of Greatest Living New Zealander.

In a close race against Victoria Cross recipient Willie Apiata, Helen Clark edged out in front with 3163 votes — 25 per cent of the overall vote — while Corporal Apiata gained 21 per cent, with 2645 votes.

Helen Clark said the win was "a nice way to start the year", but was quick to deflect her success, acknowledging other worthy New Zealanders and rival Willie Apiata.

"I guess it's quite a hard ask asking who is the greatest living New Zealander — Sir Ed's gone and undoubtedly would have won any such poll conducted in his time." She said Willie Apiata's rating reflected people seeing the award of a Victoria Cross as something quite extraordinary.

"Full marks to Willie. He is a remarkable man," she said.

Asked whether the title of greatest living New Zealander offered some solace for November's election defeat, she laughed. "As I said, I went with my head held high and that's the way you would like to be remembered."

Since Sir Edmund Hillary's death last year, talk about who might be the country's greatest living individual has wafted through the country.

A total of 12,665 Kiwis responded to the Herald's online poll, which has been running since mid-January.

Among the favourites for the titlewere All Black great Colin Meads, 1021 votes; Mad Butcher Peter Leitch, 514 votes; The Warehouse founder Stephen Tindall, 387 votes; and Louise Nicholas with 361 votes.

Debate also raged after former National party leader Don Brash put in a nomination for Act MP Sir Roger Douglas for his work in transforming the country's economy in the 1980s.

Asked what she thought of Mr Brash's attempt to nominate Sir Roger Douglas for the title, Helen Clark said she would give the suggestion "the charity of my silence".

Corporal Apiata said he was hon-

GREATEST LIVING NEW ZEALANDER

TOP FIVE NOMINEES

Helen Clark	3163 votes
Willie Apiata	2645
Sir Murray Halberg	1467
Peter Jackson	1340
Peter Snell	1041

NATIONAL TREASURE: Little did Helen C

Air NZ crash sparks safety shake-up

- Helen Clark – 3163 votes
- Willie Apiata – 2645 votes
- Sir Murray Halberg – 1467 votes
- Peter Jackson – 1340 votes
- Peter Snell – 1041 votes

The definition of
"Greatest Living New Zealander"
is:
"The person who has done the most damage, the most violently, in the quickest time, and over the longest period, who can lie and lie and lie and maintain that lie under the pressure of all sorts of media support".

"Former Prime Minister
Helen Clark
has won the Kiwi vote,
gaining the title of
Greatest Living New Zealander."

Helen Clark has done
the most damage,
the most violently,
in the quickest time,
and over the longest period,
who can lie and lie and lie
and maintain that lie
under the pressure of
all sorts of
media support.

Incontinence Nappies.

NATIONAL TREASURE: Little did Helen Clark know on election night she would be winning a different vote so soon.

oured to be listed alongside some of the country's most respected individuals. He congratulated Helen Clark on her win.

"She is a truly inspirational New Zealander and thoroughly deserves this recognition."

Prime Minister John Key said he was not surprised his predecessor had topped the poll: "She has been front and centre stage in the public eye for the last decade. . . . She is well thought of as a New Zealand Prime Minister."

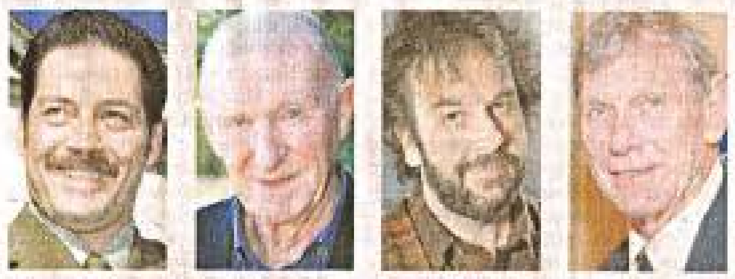

Willie Apiata Murray Halberg Peter Jackson Peter Snell

Military knew radiation danger: expert

Helen then got a taste of its power from 29 March 2005 when the Secretary-General of NATO, Jaap de Hoop Scheffer, gave her 10 kilograms of heroin; 95% of the heroin in England comes from Afghanistan and almost all of New Zealand's heroin now comes from Afghanistan – initially all of it coming through the Prime Minister's office.

When the Afghan War began on 7 October 2001,[1] Helen Clark was vociferously against it. But since Helen Clark was compromised by George W. Bush on 4 January 2003, with photographs of her getting fisted by a female CIA bisexual pillow-talker at Lincoln Cottage the night before, she hasn't objected to the Afghan War, nor said anything against it since.

Curious . . . and it certainly shows how international politics is really manipulated.

Political History of NZers getting the Victoria Cross

Army Intelligence: "We know it's an oxymoron, but that's our title.

"VCs are the most politically controversial medal in the whole of the British Army. They will give it to the recipient if they're dead, but they don't like giving it if the recipient is wounded, because then the press have to follow the injured soldier around through rehabilitation, and that's bad press.

"Charles Upham won the Victoria Cross (VC) twice for action in WWII. Charles had been King George VI's very close Hyde Park tent buddy, and when King George VI went missing at night, you could always find him in Charlie's tent in Hyde Park.

"Charlie was in a tent because the British refused to put the colonials up in accommodation.

Captain Charles Hazlitt Upham VC (1908–94).

"Charles Upham was not gay, nor was he interested in children. There was never any mention of this, and no one ever accused his surname of meaning anything. He was clean, which is very rare amongst high-standing, high-ranking New Zealanders."

History of NZers not getting the Victoria Cross

Military Historian: "New Zealanders also have a history of not getting the VC since WWII.

"Lance Sergeant Haane Manahi was never awarded the VC after WWII. The Poms got into the act and refused to sanction it because Haane had wiped out most of an Italian field hospital (al fresco) and sundry other Krauts, by chucking them off the top of the rock at Takrouna in Tunisia.

"But Haane had his reasons.

---

[1] On 3 February 2010, TV3 Nightline announced "this day" as the ninth anniversary of the war in Afghanistan.

"The Germans held out a white flag, the Maori Sergeant stood up once it had been raised, the Germans reneged and shot him. Haane went ballistic and chucked the Krauts and Itis [Germans and Italians] off the top of the rock. So he was an equal opportunity racist.

"All the fagots in Montgomery's little handholding circle became enraged and said:

'No more VCs for Maoris that kill Krauts and Itis outside the field of operations'.

"So New Zealand didn't get any more VCs after Charlie Upham's [on 11 May 1945] and in 1949, King George VI decided to stop giving out WWII medals all together.

"Posthumously, in 2007, after decades of protest, Hanne got a letter, a sword, and an alta front – nice, but not the same thing . . . less bragging rights."

Military History at Home

Army Intelligence: "Here's a little story for you on the history of VCs in NZ. The small arms weapon instructor who used to teach out at Hobsonville got himself killed by his girlfriend. She reputedly stabbed him after finding out about his other girlfriend. She killed him deader than a doornail. The poor bitch got a huge amount of attention from the police and the army and quietly pleaded guilty for the honour of the regiment and went off to do her jail time.

"Apiata's VC is aimed at totally washing over all that crap and every other bit of crap that's ever gone down in the army, and making everyone smell nice."

The Victoria Cross for New Zealand (VCNZ)

To get around this, New Zealand created its own Victoria Cross – the 'Victoria Cross for New Zealand' (VCNZ) – to be awarded for ". . . most conspicuous gallantry, or some daring or pre-eminent act of valour or self-sacrifice, or extreme devotion to duty in the presence of the enemy or belligerents."

MICK P: "The Tavistock KGB operative Prime Minister Helen Clark barked that she wanted a VC for a Maori in order to secure their vote. She needed the Maori vote as she had disappointed the Maori in abundance."

Like the royals, Helen Clark had learnt that all the monetary and social failures can be glossed over with a small piece of silk, a little cast metal, and a large pompous ceremony. This was the cheaper option.

This was allowed with conditions. The VC had to be changed from the 'Imperial Victoria Cross' to the 'Victoria Cross for New Zealand'.

Army Intel.: "It was a vote gathering exercise."

MICK P: "Helen Clark is maintained in power so that nothing of advantage will ever happen to New Zealand. Regrettably, it is the same with many prominent Maori. They are promoted in order to ensure that Maori do not advance and profit, but rather curtail to their paedophile enablers and contract killers."

Willie Apiata – First to get the 'Victoria Cross for New Zealand'

"Lance Corporal Bill Henry 'Willie' Apiata was NZ SAS and the first recipient of the Victoria Cross for New Zealand. He received it on 2 July 2007, with the ceremony on 26 July 2007. It was for bravery under fire in the Afghanistan conflict in 2004]."[2] Actually 2nd half of 2006.

Army Intel.: "Lieutenant-General Matapere authorized the award to Willie Apiata, but he is suspect because he is originally a 'Monteparto' (pronounced 'Montepurdo') whose family are a bunch of half-pie Italian child molesters, and convicted as such."

---

[2] Wikipedia, paraphrased.

Medals Stolen

Most of the New Zealand war medals were then stolen out of the Waiouru Army Museum around 1 am on 2 December 2007. 96 medals were stolen including Charles Upham's VC, 8 other VCs, 2 George Crosses and 1 Albert medal. This went a long way to breaking an element of the national psyche – national pride – history – patriotism.

The medals were then returned in early February 2008. After much media attention, on 10 September 2009, Judge Mark Perkins granted the accused complete name suppression. "Few details of the man's court appearance can be reported after Judge Mark Perkins granted a Crown application for blanket suppression orders."[3]

Judge Mark Perkins is an extremely bought judge and acts to enforce the status quo whenever a crooked politician requests it. So when Helen Clark has the Crown order name suppression, you know she's in on it.

Judge Mark Perkins will not hear what he does not want others to know, and will risk his reputation to protect a mafia boss. He will also take instructions from a mafia boss.

The medal thefts were generally attributed to Helen Clark. All were stolen except for the 'Victoria Cross for New Zealand', which she had created.

Army Intel.: "Helen, being married to a homosexual child-sex abuser, and installing the homosexual paedophile Jonathan Hunt as High Commissioner to Britain, had virtually joined Montgomery's posthumous group of homosexual paedophiles, so they were woken from the dead in order to keep other homosexual paedophiles in power, and the medals went missing.

"If you haven't caught on yet, Helen Clark is desperate to be a legacy. She is a legacy, but it is a legacy of outright destruction."

Not too happy with the medal himself, on 24 April 2008, Willie Apiata gifted his VCNZ to the home of the SAS in Papakura, Auckland.

Witnessed by a Superior Officer

Army Intelligence: "The act that generates the Victoria Cross is supposed to be witnessed by a superior officer, but I don't believe Willie's act was observed.

"Many VC's are turned down for that reason."

"My understanding is that Apiata fell into that gap, but Helen's Labour government was determined to award a Maori, so they could drag him around maraes and win back some of the respect they'd lost from the 'Foreshore and Seabed' debacle – created by the Chief Justice Sian Elias – notoriously absent from the list herself."

Author: "And always trying to create civil war . . . On 1 February 2010, the National Party announced that it would retract Sian Elias' Foreshore and Seabed Act. Lawyers' take on it was: 'a fail fail doctrine for both sides'. My take on it was: 'designed to create civil war'. This is a big retraction, especially since Chief Justice Sian Elias is a Jew, and the new National Prime Minister John Key's mother was a Jew, so Jewish. It's not often that Jews undo each other's work. Usually Jews are a tribe compliant in evil.

Army Intelligence before hearing the inside story: "Don't criticise Apiata. Carrying a wounded soldier is routine in the New Zealand Army. It is not considered anything out of the ordinary for any medic. They're meant to ditch their gear and carry them in a fireman's lift . . . but I haven't heard the inside story . . . you got the whole Hess and Hess story right. You dished the latest Hess book by getting everything right first, there being two Hess pilots."[4]

---

[3] *New Zealand Herald*, Andrew Koubaridis, 10 September 2009.

Compromised Helen Clark sends the NZ SAS into Afghanistan

Diplomatic Corp: "The NZ SAS were not supposed to be in Afghanistan, or Iraq. Our lovely Prime Minister Helen Clark, whom you so aptly describe as a KGB agent conceived as a male, was filmed having sex with a female CIA pillow-talker at Lincoln Cottage near the White House on the night of the 3rd of January 2003.

"There were toxins in the lubricant and she has been wearing incontinence nappies ever since.

"President George W. Bush then called her up to the Oval Office, with Helen pissing herself uncontrollably, and showed her the lesbian-in-action photographs.

"Prime Minister Helen then agreed to do whatever Bush wanted, which included supporting the US war effort in Afghanistan and Iraq – ready in two months.

"Uncle Helen hasn't said a word against either war since and has reluctantly admitted to sending sappers (military engineers) into Afghanistan and Iraq. But nearly all of our sappers are SAS, and trained contract killers, with cover skills."

Author: "The SAS were not supposed to be in Afghanistan. So here's how they got there. The NZ SAS all went on holdiay to various parts of Australia and within two weeks, all ended up in Perth. There they joined the Australian SAS and an Aussie carrier flew close to Afghanistan, then went in by land."

Defense Parliamentary Select Committee Inside Story

This was lodged in parliament with, and by, the Defense Parliamentary Select Committee, then passed from the trunk of the Diplomatic Corp along the branch to a twig, and then onto a leaf. Being autumn, it fell on my desk.

"Lance Corporal Willie Apiata – Lance Corporal signifies not too bright with good field instincts – was in an advanced nighttime spy party. The four NZ SAS got pinned in and surrounded by 20 Taliban. Three of the NZ SAS made one kill each, but the 42-year-old 'Opotiki Willie' made 17 kills, making him something of a 'Double O' – '0017'.

"Willie, good with a knife, began torturing. The knife made no sound, so it was good for night work, but the torturing created some noise. They were alerted to this, finished their kills, and made their escape.

"Two of the mercenary spy party had been injured and Opotiki Willie carried the most wounded of these – Corporal 'D' – back to the New Zealand base, as was expected.

"Getting the bloodlust, Willie re-armed and went back for more killing.

"That he was not killed carrying his buddy and then returned for more, suggests they killed all 20 Taliban, and Willie was stopped and returned to base as the spy mission had been a complete and unexpected success."

And with a little more background . . .

Army Intel.: "The Victoria Cross was given to Willie Apiata because they were surrounded and captured by Taliban while on a spying mission. Willie Apiata killed 17 Taliban personally, using a knife. Some of these he tortured to extract information. The VC was not awarded for carrying his comrade, and no VC's are awarded for this. You don't get VC's for helping someone into an ambulance. It was another case of the Maori butcher."

Author: "I told some Maori about the 17 kills and they said: 'We know. What gives.'"

---

[4] A BOSS (South African Intel.) statement confirms the British Home Office sent two SAS men to kill doppelgänger Hess. With two Hess's, they killed real Hess and jailed doppelgänger Hess – another Intelligence fuck-up.

Uncle Willie Apiata's background

Willie Apiata was born on 28 June 1972 in the down and out town of Mangakino. He was the youngest child with three older sisters. His father left home early and Willie grew up in the rather violent Northland – fight or die knife country – and then moved to Te Kaha – grow dope, join the army, or starve country, with gang drug-related knife and gun killings as East Coast wallpaper. Willie attended Opotiki school somewhat, left as soon as was legal – aged 15, spent two years drifting, then joined the army. In Opotiki, it was the army or dope. For the girls, it is the DPB, drug-dealing serial boy-friends, and unfathered pregnancies.

In 1989, at the age of 17, Willie joined the New Zealand Army – the Territorial Force of the Hauraki Regiment – well known for its sadism. He joined the none-too bright infantry. After seven years (1996) he tried to get into the SAS (Special Air Services) but failed. He then served in East Timor for nine months (July 2000–April 2001) as part of the NZ-UN Transitional Administration and became a fulltime soldier on his second stint in East Timor. In November 2001, the 29-year-old Willie Apiata made it as a member of the SAS, had a child in 2003, then separated from the mother (so it was repeat patterning from his father).

He was now Lance Corporal Bill Henry 'Willie' Apiata, SAS, separated father, minimal education, with a background in the roughest areas of New Zealand. Willie had grown up with a knife in his hand, but it was mainly used for pig hunting, and he wasn't yet adept at fighting with a knife.

It was quite common in Northland and east of Opotiki, including Te Kaha, to see teenagers carrying a knife in the 1980s. They knew how to show them, how to brandish them for effect, but fighting to the death was something else and requires specific training if you want to maintain yourself on the winning side and remain alive.

Willie Apiata received the VCNZ for his fight in Afghanistan in '2004', but he didn't get trained in knife fighting until at least June 2006. So his VCNZ was for shooting, not cutting throats as colloquially accepted.

Three years later Willie received the VCNZ on 2 July 2007 for bravery in Afghanistan sometime in 2004. The award was given to him by Governor-General Anyand Satyanand and the Prime Minister Helen Clark. The ceremony took place in Government House in Wellington on 26 July 2007, followed by a ceremony in one of Willie's home towns – Te Kaha.

Officially Lance Corporal Willie Apiata was part of the SAS and carried a wounded compatriot across a battlefield to receive medical treatment – but officially New Zealand had no one fighting in Afghanistan – only sappers (military engineers) rebuilding schools. This was the first gaff.

The second gaff was his knife-training came after he served in Afghanistan and achieved the kills and rescue that got him the VCNZ. The third gaff was Helen Clark trafficking NATO heroin, and the fourth gaff was Helen Clark getting fisted in Lincoln Cottage and the photos shown to her in the Oval Office on 4 January 2004 that forced the NZ SAS into Afghanistan.

Army Intel.: "Willie Apiata has gone through a grooming process after Afghanistan. Everyone can see that and everyone knows that the areas he grew up in were knife-ridden and ultimately controlled by firearms."

Lance Corporal Willie Apiata got the VCNZ for rescue and mercenary killing. This is not dissimilar to knighthoods – awards given for 'murder, file theft and paedophilia' – like Governor-General Anyand 'The Brown Humpty Dumpty' Satyanand and the KGB Prime Minister Helen Clark – both party to the contract killing of Michael King. Their elevated status also offers them cover.

Author, 2007: "Earnt or not, there is no doubt that Willie Apiata's VC was a Maori election bribe. His face will be shown as part of Helen Clark's achievements in the build up to the November 2008 Election." And it was, but the Maoris didn't buy it.

The Official Citation Report

Lieutenant-General Matapere wrote SAS Corporal Willie Apiata's official citation:

"In total disregard of his own safety, Lance Corporal Apiata stood up and lifted his comrade bodily. He then carried him across the seventy metres of broken, rocky and fire swept ground, fully exposed in the **glare of battle to heavy enemy fire and into the face of returning fire** from the main Troop position. **That neither he nor his colleague were hit is scarcely possible.** Having delivered his wounded companion to relative shelter with the remainder of the patrol, Lance Corporal Apiata re-armed himself and rejoined the fight in counter-attack . . .

"Apiata (then a Lance Corporal) was part of a New Zealand Special Air Service (NZ SAS) Troop in Afghanistan in 2004 which was **attacked by about 20 enemy fighters while holed-up for the night in a rocky rural area. Enemy rocket propelled grenades destroyed one of the troop's vehicles** and immobilised another. This was followed by sustained machine gun and automatic rifle fire from close range.

"A grenade explosion blew Apiata off the bonnet of his vehicle, where he had been sleeping. Two other soldiers in or near the vehicle were wounded by shrapnel, one of them seriously (Corporal D). After finding cover, it was seen that Corporal D had life-threatening arterial bleeding and was deteriorating rapidly.

"Apiata assumed command of the situation, deciding all three would need to rejoin the troop which was about 70 metres to the rear. Apiata decided his only option was to carry **Corporal D to safety, and none of the three was hit during the retreat.** After getting Corporal D to shelter, Apiata rejoined the firefight."

Willie also got the United States Navy and Marine Corps Presidential Unit Citation. The other three SAS soldiers got the New Zealand Gallantry Decoration (2) and the New Zealand Gallantry Medal (1). They were from the 6th Battalion of the Royal New Zealand Infantry Regiment and the New Zealand SAS (6 Bn, RNZIR, NZ SAS).

. . . and they were not supposed to be there.

This may have happened at some time, but it wasn't what the Victoria Cross was for. No VC has ever been awarded for sleeping on the job then carrying a soldier back. Sleeping is optional, but carrying wounded is standard practise for a soldier or medic.

It is more likely that the official version of events was an entire fiction.

If this did happened sometime, it was reinacted so the necessary superior officer could could witness it for the VCNZ, like the next day. Any reinactment was used to wash out the bloodlust for the public back at home. The reinactment and the real story have some similiarities, but it's not the entire truth, not by a long shot.

The SIS Version

"Helen Clark denied New Zealand had any fighting forces in Afghanistan, but she sure congratulated them when they did kill someone and it was coming up to election year.

"Willie Apiata was supposed to creep up at night with three comrades and interrogate some Afghan soldiers. They were not supposed to kill them.

"The four did creep up on the Afghans at night, failed to interrogate, possibly due to the language barrier, soon moved into torture, then got carried away multiple times and stabbed them to death.

"The other three got one kill each and two of them were injured in the process, while Willie killed 17. Willie then carried the most injured, Corporal 'D', back in a fireman's lift."

Spymaster: "That it happened at night and at least 70 metres away meant that no superior officer had sighted it, thus rendering the VC warrantless."

Author: "So to award the VC, it had to be reinacted during daylight, with as much similarity as they could muster, while being washed for public consumption (PR).

The Military Reinactment Scenario

This manufactured scenario was carried out for the superior officers sighting, and the soldier's memory. The very next day it was 'attack and retreat' under heavy gunfire using captured enemy grenades to blow up their own vehicle, so the superior officer could sight it in broad daylight and thus award NZ SAS Lance Corporal Bill Henry Apiata the VC for New Zealand, and Helen Clark to get the Maori votes. There was no enemy fire, because Willie and his SAS buddies had killed all 20 of the Afghans the previous night. Four soldiers including Willie were placed about 70 metres in front of the rest of their troop. An enemy grenade was then used to destroy a vehicle out of range. Willie then carried a Corporal D back under cover of friendly fire, which everyone enjoyed, and none of them were hit in retaliatory fire because they had killed everyone. Willie then dropped Corporal D off and went to go back 70 metres to the original position, but was stopped, as the Afghans were known to all be dead. This allowed the superior officer to cite the event for the Victoria Cross. It also allowed those involved to confirm the events and get an easier ride back home.

America Supports Anything that Supports Heroin

America supported this scenario with one of their Presidential citations because Willie had made Afghanistan just that little bit easier for America's heroin trade. George W. 'Heroin' Bush also had an agreement to keep Helen Clark in power if she supported him in the Afghan and Iraq wars, which she did. So Helen Clark did get back into power (in September 2005), but not before America and NATO had dropped 10 kg on her doorstep (in March 2005) with demands that she establish a market for it, and join NATO – in that order, over three days. Helen Clark took the heroin and joined NATO rather than revealed to be wearing incontinence nappies and photos shown of her Lincoln Cottage fisting.

Of the three other NZ SAS on the same mission, one received the New Zealand Gallantry Medal. The other two got the Decoration. Willie Apiata also got the 'Navy and Marine Corps Presidential Unit Citation (US)' for helping America with their effort to flood the Western world with heroin.

Spymaster: "Willie Apiata complied with what was in front of him and did what he was trained to do, initially with bloodlust, then with trained grace. Apiata is now a hand-to-hand instructor for close-quarters combat for the SAS, and is teaching schoolchildren how to fight – a new generation of contract killers, or 'government mafia for heroin imports'. You can catch this on TV. This is much valued by the military, because all militaries are ultimately funded by the profits from drugs."

Author: "So as soon as you protect anyone's heroin trade, you are given metal, silk & ceremony."

Willie Apiata got his VC as a cover for murdering 17 Afghan rebels who were protecting the only cash crop of the area, which NATO continually wants to remove – at harvest time.

Since the Americans have moved into Afghanistan, heroin production has increased five (5) times. It is taken off the locals and delivered to England, America, Canada, Australia and New Zealand – essentially the Western 5.

Afghanis were protecting their heroin crops, but Helen Clark wanted these as soon as they matured, so was the VC not awarded for the ongoing "thanks for the heroin crop" kills?

Spymaster: "In its current form this will get you killed. You have to tone down what you've said about Apaita."

Author: "I have. I've said he was just acting as he was trained to do and everything else was manufactured around him."

Spymaster: "Yes, but Helen Clark is a bugger for photocopying, and getting other people to photocopy that photocopy and then giving it to Maoris out of context . . . You've got to say:

'This boy did nothing wrong. He was used by Pakehas . . . Remember that Bishop Marsden came to New Zealand in the 1830s, observed the Maori, noted that they were ideal killers, and immediately recommended Maori be used as such for the British Empire."

Author: "This came to pass with Maori being used as killers in the IRA, along with Aussies and South Africans . . . with the IRA being 50 % MI-6."

MICK P: "The phrase 'Pakeha' came from 'Bugger off'. The Maori approach the ship traders and white settlers while they were drinking and asked them for some of the rum. The reply came back 'Bugger off', so the Maori named the whites 'Bugger Off'. The Maori pronunciation of this is 'Pakeha'.

Author: "I guess the Maoris got the last laugh on that one."

"Corporal Willie Apiata VC was essentially an overseas hitman for America and Helen Clark's heroin trafficking, whether he knew it or not."

Spymaster: "We call this Victoria Cross 'Very Contrary' and 'Vicious Circumstances' etc."

Enter Rambo . . . What really happened

Willie Apiata was trained in knife fighting and disarming someone with a knife by the youngest guy accepted into the New Zealand SAS since 1954. The first guy in 1954 was 14. This guy was 15. His big advantage was having a slow heart rate – 50 beats per minute, so an exceptionally quick recovery to the normal heart rate of 72 beats per minute and dropping.

When I met him at a bar on an Air Force base on Saturday 29 August 2009, after listening to him for 15 minutes, I asked him to stand to attention. He did. It was impressive, and brought on some patriotism. Perfect military stuff, parades etc, if done well, can make your hair stand on end.

Let's call him 'Peter'. As a 15- or 16-year-old, Peter trained Willie Apiata in the skills of knife fighting. We went outside and had a smoke.

Peter: "Willie was familiar with a knife, like pig hunting, but he wasn't a knife fighter. So I taught him that."

Author: "Have you served overseas?"

Peter: "Yes, I served in Iraq and Afghanistan."

This was about 4 to 8 months each, and one of them twice. Then we went inside.

Author: As I was leaning over the table and taking another pool shot: "What about the shoot out? Was the superior officer present to witness the events that Uncle Willie got the VCNZ for? There are rumours, see."

Peter: "Definitely. During Willie Apiata's tour in Afghanistan, he was in a nearly three-hour shoot-out. Willie got shot in the upper arm, his brachialis, the press-up muscle, the flesh was literally hanging right off his arm.

"The guy, Corporal D, was about to put his suicide blinker on. The light blinks quite bright and makes you a target so you get shot by the enemy, or your own, rather than have your throat slit, or be tortured and give out information.

"The SAS are really strict on that.

"Willie got him just in time, and carried his buddy back amid fire. It was night, and they got back to the vehicle, grabbed his buddy's weapons and one other, reloaded it, then said to his boss, the Sergeant at Arms, 'I'm off'.

"Willie then went back in with two guns taking the rebounds."

Peter then showed me the revolving action with an invisible rifle that showed how it could be reloaded with one arm. There were two different types of rifles Willie used.

Peter: “I don’t know how he shot with two rifles from both arms when his arm was that injured, but he did”. That’s pretty heavy work. It’s hard enough shooting one of those with two arms, and to do it with one arm injured with flesh hanging off, is amazing. No one had ever seen anything like it.”

Peter was impressed. I was impressed, then Peter then took his pool shot.

Peter: “We were in the second unit and crept for the hill at the back, so we had them triangulated. Once we were in position, we picked off the Taleban with snipers. The Taleban headgear is a signature that allows for easy targetting.

“Willie also got a lot. He was very Rambo – really.

“The guy who had to see the action to award the VC was present and saw the action live as it was going down.”

We spoke for about 45 minutes, enough time to meet at the bar, order a drink, have a smoke outside, and play two slow games of pool. I wish I could have remembered the names of the guns Peter gave me, but I was exhausted and had been sleeping in front of the fire beforehand. That, drink, and not getting home until 2 pm the next day . . . I lost much of the detail . . . Still, it’s enough.

Author: “What about the Druze. They go in dressed as locals and shoot at Americans and allies, then scarper. Then the Amis kill the locals.”

Peter: “You seem to know a bit.”

Author: “Thanks” and I took another shot.

Peter: “The Druze are a real problem. They come up and try to be friendly, but the New Zealand SAS just kill them if they even look like they’re going to be trouble.”

Author: “So much for being friendly”. [I was referring to myself.]

Peter: “Queen Elizabeth II then came out to S….., not far from here and awarded the VC to Willie Apiata.

Peter indicated south, so that’s a little way south of Ardmore Air Base. I didn’t even know the Queen had been here, and there’s a military base with an airfield I didn’t know about.

Peter: “I used to be the best sniper marksman in New Zealand. Part of the test is to get a handgun head shot at 25 metres, nine times out of ten.

“I trained other snipers and now I’m the second best sniper marksman in the country.

“We were placed on top of the Parliament rooftop during John Key’s inauguration. Someone had made threats against him. The guy was present at the ceremony and we did have him in our sights, but he was arrested. He was jailed for six years.”

Author: “Amazing. We never heard of it. So he got lucky.”

Peter: “Yeah. Not much information gets out”.

Peter took his next shot, looked up on an angle, thinks, and said: “I got around 70 kills in Iraq and around 66 in Afghanistan, 136, 138 kills, so over 100 kills.

Peter’s girlfriend: “He has difficulty sleeping”.

Peter: “Yeah, I do. I have difficulty sleeping. None of the therapy seems to do anything.”

Peter’s girlfriend: “You do”.

Peter: “I spend a lot of time sitting up at night reading, which is why I know a lot about a lot of different stuff.”

Author: “It’s been a real pleasure talking to you. I’ve learnt a lot. It’s always good to meet someone at the coal face, someone who’s actually there doing it.” We shook hands and SAS Peter and his girlfriend then left. I left about two hours later with the female bar manager.

SAS-SIS Treff

I didn’t arrange this meeting, but the SAS may have, and most likely did. The bar manager had invited me to her new bar, so I went to her place and she drove me to the bar, arriving half an hour late, around 4 pm. This arrangement was made by phone call, so it was intercepted. Because it was on an Air Force Base, it was a perfect place to meet. Ardmore is a military and civilian airbase (air shows), so it was more okay to talk there. My 2005/2006 book, *Hitler was a British Agent* is baned from the more military Whenuapai Air Base, an hours drive north.

The first person to walk in, around 4:10 PM was SAS Peter. He sat in the far corner of the bar and started talking to the staff while not cutting me out. When he went outside for a smoke, Manager J-girl said: “I can’t work him out. Check out if you think he’s bullshit or not.” So I spoke to him, and I didn’t.

The SIS and SAS work together. The SIS read stuff off my computer, virtually as I write it. When I haven’t got something quite right, like the Willie Apiata VC story, they arrange for me to meet someone who can fill me in on the details. That way, the correct version makes it to print. The SIS use untraceable cutouts with no apparent causal events – random – so the source of the information can’t be traced back to the SIS, who just want to read my next story. They get a little irritated over mistakes. This has happened more than once. It also happened with the Michael King murder.

Author: “Have the SIS got a file on me? Do they read everything off my computer as I write it? Am I my own Intelligence agency?

Spymaster: “The three Bobs run Intelligence. One of the Bobs has a file on you. It’s more than a file, it’s your own bookshelf. There are folders containing information from and on all the Intelligence agencies on two or three bookshelves. Then there is a separate bookshelf just for you. It only has your files in it. And yes, they do regularly print off everything that you’ve written on your computer, and have everything you have published.

“When anyone wants to read your stuff, they have to apply to their bosses for permission. The bosses of the various government departments, like Internal Affairs, frown on anyone reading your material, so staff are afraid to apply to read your stuff. It kind of equates with demotion. So for the most part, it just sits there on your own shelf and Bob reads it, regularly, like morning and afternoon tea.”

Author: “Tell him I said hullo”.

Willie ‘Rambo’ Apiata

So Willie Apiata is your real man. He did a Rambo. He was wounded, shot in the upper arm, with his brachialis hanging off. His buddy, Corporal D was wounded, out in the open, and about to flick his suicide blinker. Willie took a huge risk, ran in, grabbed his buddy, and carried him back, complete with Corporal D’s weapons. This stopped the Taleban getting them. Willie Apiata was quite seriously wounded, but still mobile. He dropped Corporal D back at the vehicle with his Sergeant at Arms, then took Corporal D’s weapon, reloaded another, then went back in for the shootout, one rifle in each arm, which is amazing even without an injured arm. Willie Apiata got some kills in this second stage of the fight. The second unit then stationed themselves on the hill behind the Taleban in triangulated positions and picked off the Taleban until they had them all. So it was the real McCoy – Willie ‘Rambo’ Apiata.

NZSAS Lance Corporal Bill Henry Apiata VCNZ.

Discrepencies

Lance Corporal Bill Henry 'Willie' Apiata was given the VCNZ on 2 July 2007, with a ceremony on 26 July 2007. It was for bravery under fire in Afghanistan in 2004.

But in 2004, SAS Peter was 11 and 12.

There was some discussion between SAS Peter and his girlfriend as to how old he was. In August 2009, he said: "I'm 17 with a birthday in May". His girlfriend then argued that he was 18, or even 19. It was hard to tell as he had a slow heart rate so looked much younger than he was.[5]

So in 2004, Peter was 11–14 years old and in 2006, he was 13–16 years old, by which time he had started to serve overseas.

The Army, especially, cover up their records like there's no tomorrow, especially when one of their child soldiers are involved.

I spoke with another NZ child soldier and their records were all over the place with each department saying different things, some even denying his existence to the other.

Due to a history of Army cover-ups, it's less likely that the VC action in Afghanistan took place in 2004, and more likely that it occurred in any other year. 2004 was chosen because similar action went down, but with different players.

All we know is that Willie had time for his arm to heal by 1 July 2007. That part of the arm can take 6 months to heal – December 2006.

We also know that the U.S. lie about everything related to heroin.

NZSAS Lance Corporal Bill Henry Apiata VCNZ.

So I'm picking that Willie's VC action in Afghanistan took place June–December 2006 and SAS Peter was 18 when I met him (17 was a ruse), and 15 in Afghanistan, 16 in Iraq, and 17 in Aghanistan again. Peter was the youngest NZ SAS since 1954. Issue conscious people would yell: 'child soldier', but he wanted to be there and was effective at what he did.

There may be a reason why the SIS sent their youngest SAS person to tell me. He was there fighting alongside Willie Apiata, gave detailed description with in situ words, and his age gave the indication of the correct year, albeit in a most complicated fashion.

This correct date of Willie's VCNZ action is reasonably important to the nation.

If SAS Peter was 18 in August 2009, the action could have taken place from June 2006 to June 2007. The SAS websites, official and unofficial do not deny this. They just give leads away from the time of action.

---

[5] I met a guy with a similar heart rate recently. He was 58, chopping wood against the world champion, finishing only 4 seconds behind, and still had he energy of an active teenager. So the slow heart rate makes a big difference.

Special Air Service of New Zealand don't disagree[6]

Afghanistan

"Secrecy still surrounds much of the NZ SAS's operations in Afghanistan . . . According to a New Zealand government fact sheet released in July 2007, the NZ SAS soldiers routinely patrolled enemy territory for three weeks or more at a time, often on foot, after being inserted by helicopter . . .

"Starting in late 2001 [more like 2002], the NZ SAS [did] three 6 month rotations of between 40 and 65 soldiers . . . in Afghanistan during Operation Enduring Freedom before the unit was withdrawn in November 2005 [with the action happening in 2006] . . . 71 soldiers from the unit returned for a fourth deployment in September 2009.

"On 17 June 2004, two NZ SAS soldiers were wounded in a pre-dawn gun-battle in central Afghanistan."
[It doesn't say it was Willie Apiata, or Corporal D, and doesn't say what the injuries were] .

"As a result a SAS trooper was awarded the Victoria Cross."
[It doesn't say an NZ SAS soldier, and doesn't say Willie Apiata got his VC from these actions.]

Presidential Unit Citation

"In December 2004, the United States Navy Presidential Unit Citation was awarded to those units that comprised the Combined Joint Special Operations Task Force-SOUTH/Task Force K-BAR (17 October 2001–30 March 2002) . . . One of these units was the NZ SAS.
[It does not say Willie Apiata was in one of them. Willie didn't join the SAS until a month later, in November 2001, the SAS didn't arrived via Australia until 2002, and it's not published when Willie was in Afghanistan first. It just says Willie was redeployed to Afghanistan in November 2009.]

"The United States Navy Presidential Unit Citation . . . presentation ceremony [was] on 7 December 2004, and approval by the Queen for New Zealanders to wear it granted in April/May 2006."
[From my interview, it appears Corporal Willie Apiata was in Afghanistan for the first time for six months, June 2006–June 2007, and this is when the VC action went down.]

Victoria Cross

"It was announced on 2 July 2007 that Corporal Willie Apiata (35) of the NZSAS had been awarded the Victoria Cross for New Zealand for carrying a severely injured comrade 70 metres 'under heavy fire' from machine-guns and grenades after their vehicle was destroyed in an ambush and then joined the rest of his comrades in a counter-attack."
[Why wait from 2002 or 2004 to give a VC. Wouldn't it be normal to wait just long enough for the arm injury to heal.]

"The announcement was unusual, because the NZ SAS is a very secretive organisation that almost never reveals the names of its members. NZ Prime Minister Helen Clark said Apiata's name was revealed because [he was a Maori and she wanted their votes] it was only the 14th time since World War II that the Victoria Cross had been awarded among the 53 nations of the Commonwealth [what about the 12th or 13th time], and the first to a serving SAS soldier anywhere, and it would be almost impossible to keep secret [so it was heavily disguised]."

"In addition to Cpl. Apiata, three other SAS soldiers were decorated for actions during the same mission [date unconfirmed]. Although not confirmed, it seems that this action was the one on 17 June 2004, [by disguised military distraction] in which two New Zealanders were reported wounded."

---

[6] Google Special Air Service of New Zealand and you get: "www.absoluteastronomy.com/topics/Special_Air_Service_of_New_Zealand" providing all quotes on this page.

"The Greatest Living New Zealander" is the Best Liar on the Day

Corporal Willie Apiata VCNZ reluctantly came second in the list of 'Best at denying murders' with 2645 votes and 17 kills. The defintion of "The Greatest Living New Zealander" is:

> "The person who has done the most damage, the most violently, in the quickest time, and over the longest period, who can lie and lie and lie and maintain that lie under the pressure of all sorts of media support".
>
> "Former Prime Minister Helen Clark has won the Kiwi vote, gaining the title of:
> 'The Greatest Living New Zealander."
> Helen Clark has done the most damage, the most violently, in the quickest time, and over the longest period, who can lie and lie and lie and maintain that lie under the pressure of all sorts of media support.

New Zealand Political Scientist comments on Helen Clark

Barry Gustafson Ph.D is a New Zealand political scientist, historian and leading political biographer. He was educated at Auckland, Massey and Glasgow Universities. His teaching interests include . . . the European Union, civil society, development of New Zealand's political culture and parties, political leadership and power, Soviet and East European Studies, and interdisciplinary studies . . . He served as a Labour member from 1954 to 1981 and stood as a Labour Party candidate (1960 & 1966). He was . . .

Professor of Political Studies at the University of Auckland (1968–2004); Pro Vice-Chancellor (International) of the University of Auckland (2001–02); Head of the Political Studies Department at the Auckland University (1998–2002); Associate Dean of Arts (Research 2000); Fulbright Visting Professor at Georgetown University (1997); Researched as a number of America and British Universities (1994); Visiting researcher at Stanford University and the European Union (1990) . . .

Gustafson was the Acting Director of the New Zealand Asia Institute (2004–06) when he helped establish a New Zealand Studies Centre at Peking University in Beijing; chaired the Advisory Committee to the School of European Languages and Literatures (1999–2001); served as Chairman of the Council of the Auckland College of Education (Tamaki 1992–97) . . . As a Labour supporter and candiate he wrote *Social Change and Party Reorganisation* (1976); *Labour's Path to Political Independence* (1980); *From the Cradle to the Grave: A Biography of Michael Joseph Savage* (1986); *The First 50 Years: A History of the New Zealand National Party* (1986) . . . and then changed allegiance to National. He then wrote: *His Way: A Biography of Robert Muldoon* (2000); *Kiwi Keith: A Biography of Keith Holyoake* (2007) . . . . University Professor of Politics, Barry Gustafson:

"Helen Clark has been caught out lying more than any other Prime Minister."

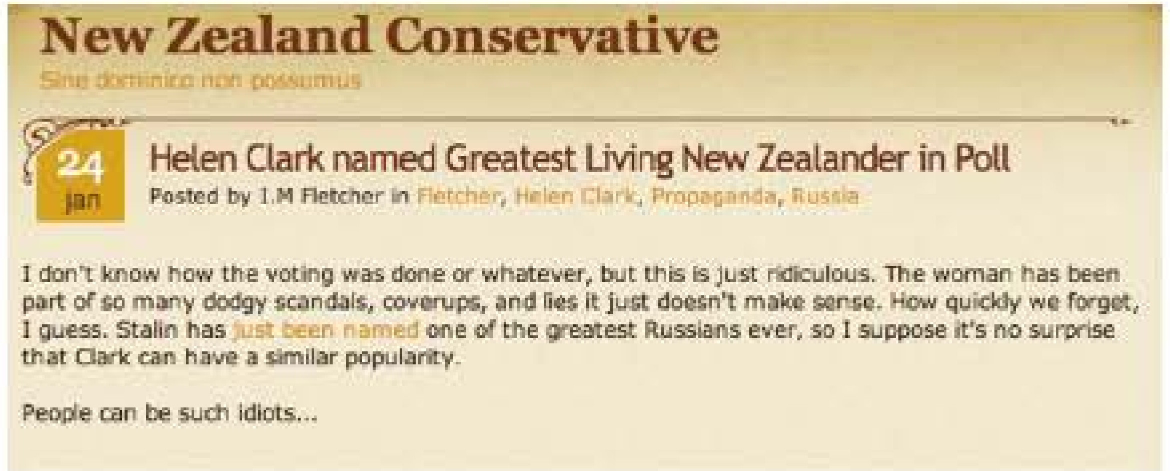

New Zealand Conservative

Sine dominico non possumus

24 jan

Helen Clark named Greatest Living New Zealander in Poll

Posted by I.M Fletcher in Fletcher, Helen Clark, Propaganda, Russia

I don't know how the voting was done or whatever, but this is just ridiculous. The woman has been part of so many dodgy scandals, coverups, and lies it just doesn't make sense. How quickly we forget, I guess. Stalin has just been named one of the greatest Russians ever, so I suppose it's no surprise that Clark can have a similar popularity.

People can be such idiots...

Helen Clark Murders by the Georgia Guidestones

In October 2003, Prime Minister Helen Clark ordered the murder of the chief historian Michael King. This was carried out on 29 March 2004. The contract was run by Chief Justice Sian Elias using her Mossad relatives, with her bisexual husband Hugh Fletcher involved.

Then, in February 2007, Prime Minister Helen conceived-as-a-bloke Clark awarded a government contract to a Hamilton/ Cambridge horse float manufacturer to build 20 mobile crematoriums. These are ready to come on-line in April 2009 for the planned May 2009 Avian Flu epidemic (which I predicted in 2005 as April/ May 2009).

Not a bad guess, or bit of seeing. It arrived in May 2009 as the Swine Flu in Mexico.

Helen Clark had just been posted to 3-IC of the United Nations, in charge of Developing Nations, and her first target – a week after taking on the role – was Mexico. My teenager was also the last person to be detained at the airport in Hong Kong with "Swine Flu". They missed the plane and were released in barely enough time to catch the next one. So the whole thing was a targetting exercise complete with logistical harrassments.

America wanted Mexico for the oil in the Gulf of Mexico. Around the same time, an island in the Gulf that demarkated Mexico's claim to natural gas field, was microwaved by the orbiting Nautilus Projector and simply disappeared. Since the UN is 50 % funded by America, when American orders the Swine Flu for Mexico, the UN gives Mexico the Swine Flu. Compromised Helen Clark gave Mexico the Swine Flu.

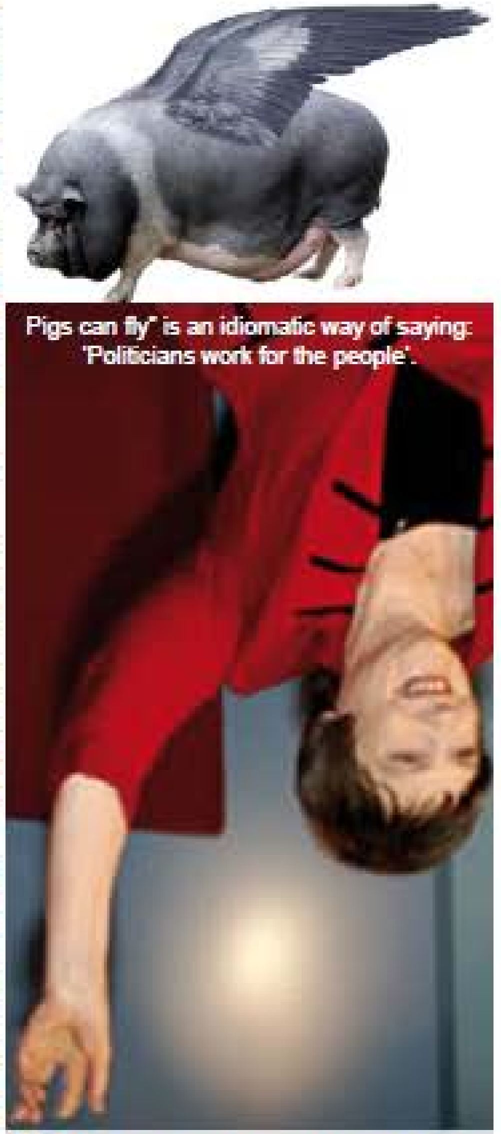

Pigs can fly" is an idiomatic way of saying: 'Politicians work for the people'.

As Nostradamus said: "Pigs can fly". At first we thought this was fighter pilots with their masks on, but it is a mixture of the Swine Flu and the Avian Flu.[7]

When the Avian Flu is incumbated in pigs, it becomes more adapted to humans as the Swine Flu.

Obviously it hasn't been perfected yet, and humans are adapting to these manmade viruses. Like the Borg, we must survive.

Author, 2007: "As usual, the epidemic will be manufactured by the One World Government for the many minion governments as part of the 1980 Georgia Guidestones depopulation exercise. Dissidents are also expected to be burnt alive in less than a year."

The preparations happened.

---

[7] Nostradamus, Latinised from Michel de Nostredame (14/21 Dec. 1503–2 July 1566) wrote *Les Propheties* (*The Prophecies*), rarely out of print since 1555. He wrote in quatrains that others associated with world events, although many academic's complain about the language translations and call the associations 'tenuous'. "When pigs fly" then became an idiomatic way of saying, 'that will never happen'. Others say that Nostradamus predicted a Black man in the White House quickly followed by the swine flu, which is a development of the avian flu. Hence a Black man in the White house followed by flying pigs. Twenty years ago, this would have been idiomatic.

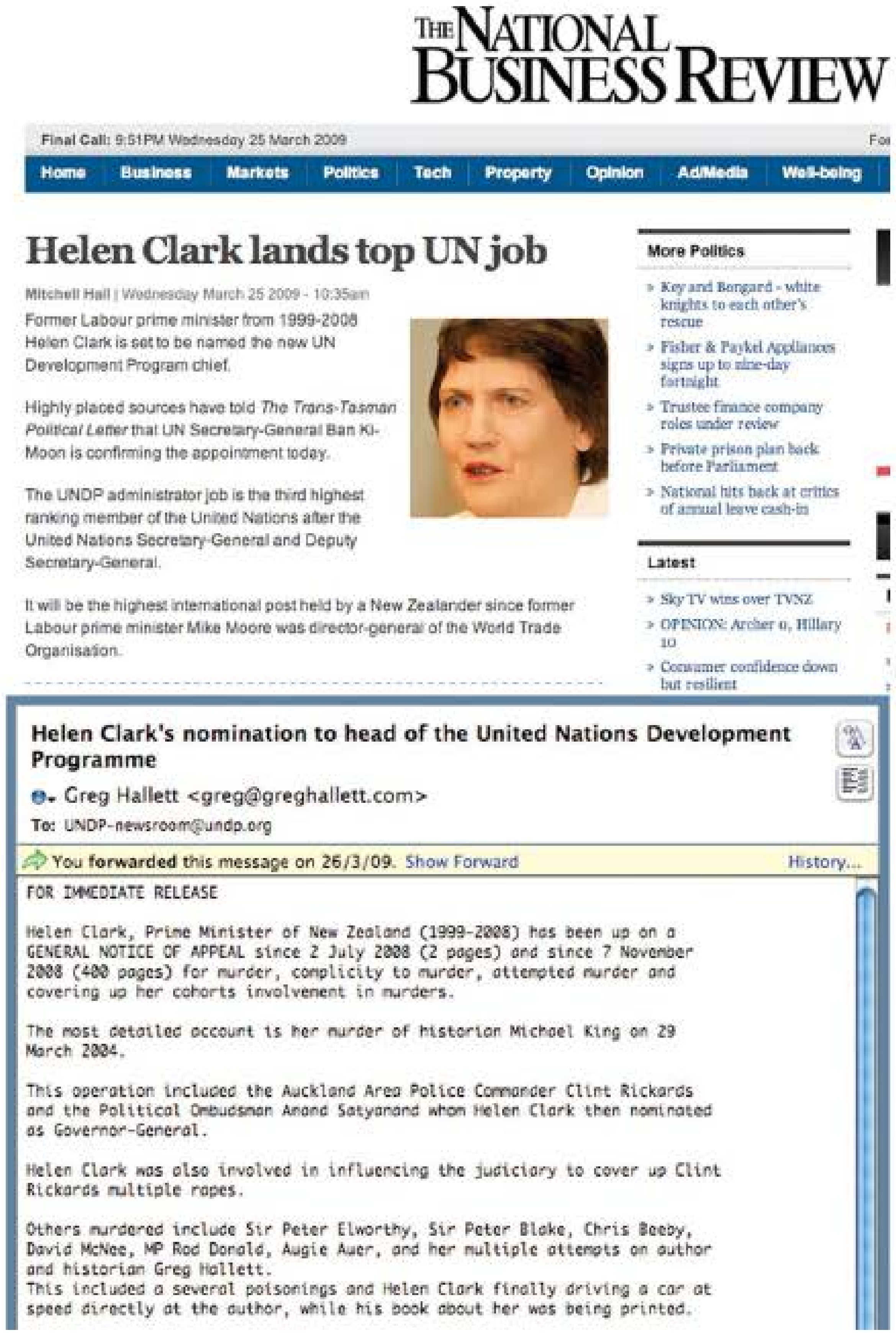

THE NATIONAL BUSINESS REVIEW

Helen Clark lands top UN job

Mitchell Hall | Wednesday March 25 2009 - 10:35am

Former Labour prime minister from 1999-2008 Helen Clark is set to be named the new UN Development Program chief.

Highly placed sources have told *The Trans-Tasman Political Letter* that UN Secretary-General Ban Ki-Moon is confirming the appointment today.

The UNDP administrator job is the third highest ranking member of the United Nations after the United Nations Secretary-General and Deputy Secretary-General.

It will be the highest international post held by a New Zealander since former Labour prime minister Mike Moore was director-general of the World Trade Organisation.

More Politics

- Key and Bongard - white knights to each other's rescue
- Fisher & Paykel Appliances signs up to nine-day fortnight
- Trustee finance company roles under review
- Private prison plan back before Parliament
- National hits back at critics of annual leave cash-in

Latest

- Sky TV wins over TVNZ
- OPINION: Archer 0, Hillary 10
- Consumer confidence down but resilient

Helen Clark's nomination to head of the United Nations Development Programme

Greg Hallett <greg@greghallett.com>
To: UNDP-newsroom@undp.org

FOR IMMEDIATE RELEASE

Helen Clark, Prime Minister of New Zealand (1999-2008) has been up on a GENERAL NOTICE OF APPEAL since 2 July 2008 (2 pages) and since 7 November 2008 (400 pages) for murder, complicity to murder, attempted murder and covering up her cohorts involvement in murders.

The most detailed account is her murder of historian Michael King on 29 March 2004.

This operation included the Auckland Area Police Commander Clint Rickards and the Political Ombudsman Anand Satyanand whom Helen Clark then nominated as Governor-General.

Helen Clark was also involved in influencing the judiciary to cover up Clint Rickards multiple rapes.

Others murdered include Sir Peter Elworthy, Sir Peter Blake, Chris Beeby, David McNee, MP Rod Donald, Augie Auer, and her multiple attempts on author and historian Greg Hallett.
This included a several poisonings and Helen Clark finally driving a car at speed directly at the author, while his book about her was being printed.

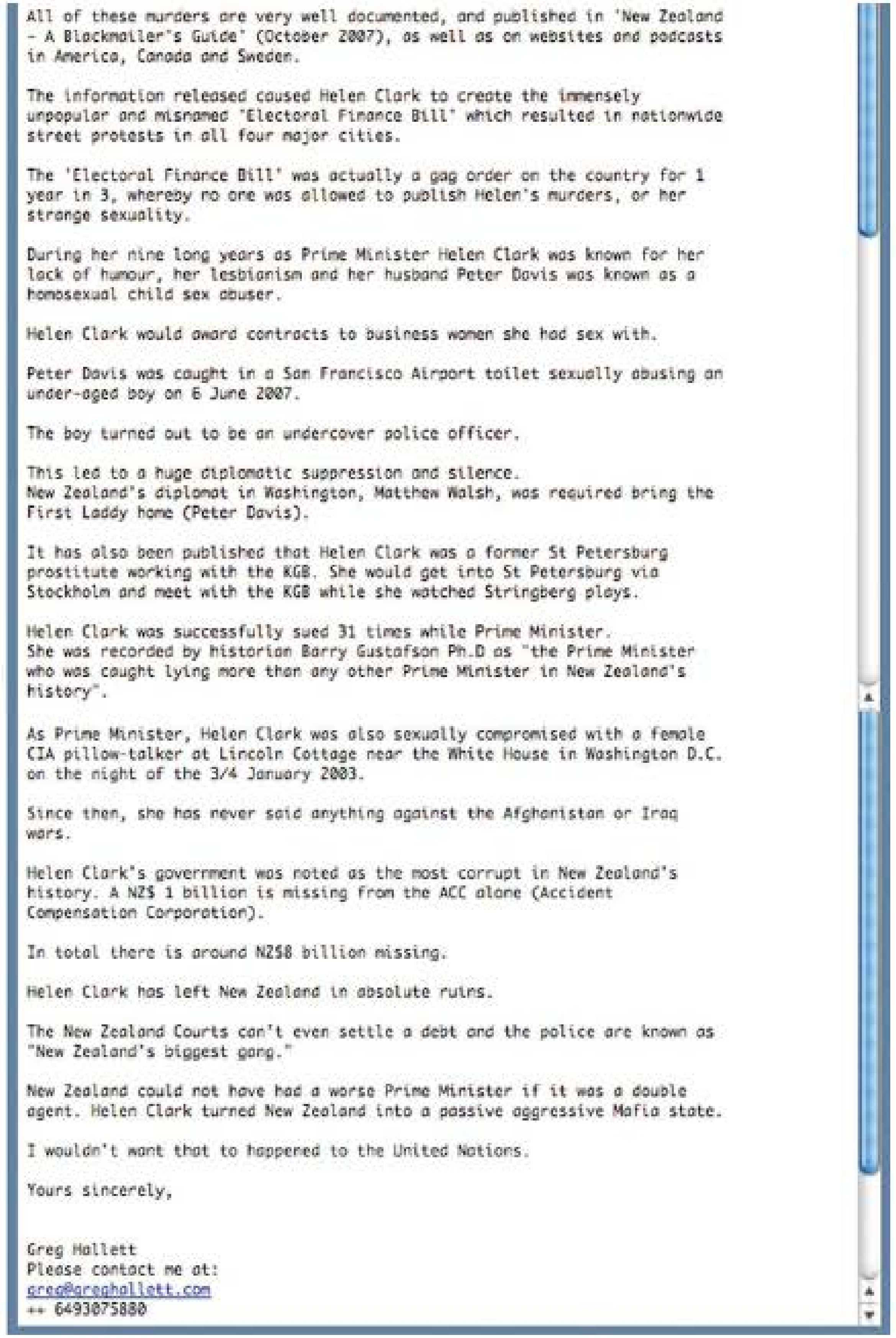

All of these murders are very well documented, and published in 'New Zealand - A Blackmailer's Guide' (October 2007), as well as on websites and podcasts in America, Canada and Sweden.

The information released caused Helen Clark to create the immensely unpopular and misnamed 'Electoral Finance Bill' which resulted in nationwide street protests in all four major cities.

The 'Electoral Finance Bill' was actually a gag order on the country for 1 year in 3, whereby no one was allowed to publish Helen's murders, or her strange sexuality.

During her nine long years as Prime Minister Helen Clark was known for her lack of humour, her lesbianism and her husband Peter Davis was known as a homosexual child sex abuser.

Helen Clark would award contracts to business women she had sex with.

Peter Davis was caught in a San Francisco Airport toilet sexually abusing an under-aged boy on 6 June 2007.

The boy turned out to be an undercover police officer.

This led to a huge diplomatic suppression and silence.
New Zealand's diplomat in Washington, Matthew Walsh, was required bring the First Laddy home (Peter Davis).

It has also been published that Helen Clark was a former St Petersburg prostitute working with the KGB. She would get into St Petersburg via Stockholm and meet with the KGB while she watched Stringberg plays.

Helen Clark was successfully sued 31 times while Prime Minister.
She was recorded by historian Barry Gustafson Ph.D as "the Prime Minister who was caught lying more than any other Prime Minister in New Zealand's history".

As Prime Minister, Helen Clark was also sexually compromised with a female CIA pillow-talker at Lincoln Cottage near the White House in Washington D.C. on the night of the 3/4 January 2003.

Since then, she has never said anything against the Afghanistan or Iraq wars.

Helen Clark's government was noted as the most corrupt in New Zealand's history. A NZ$ 1 billion is missing from the ACC alone (Accident Compensation Corporation).

In total there is around NZ$8 billion missing.

Helen Clark has left New Zealand in absolute ruins.

The New Zealand Courts can't even settle a debt and the police are known as "New Zealand's biggest gang."

New Zealand could not have had a worse Prime Minister if it was a double agent. Helen Clark turned New Zealand into a passive aggressive Mafia state.

I wouldn't want that to happened to the United Nations.

Yours sincerely,

Greg Hallett
Please contact me at:
greg@greghallett.com
++ 6493075880

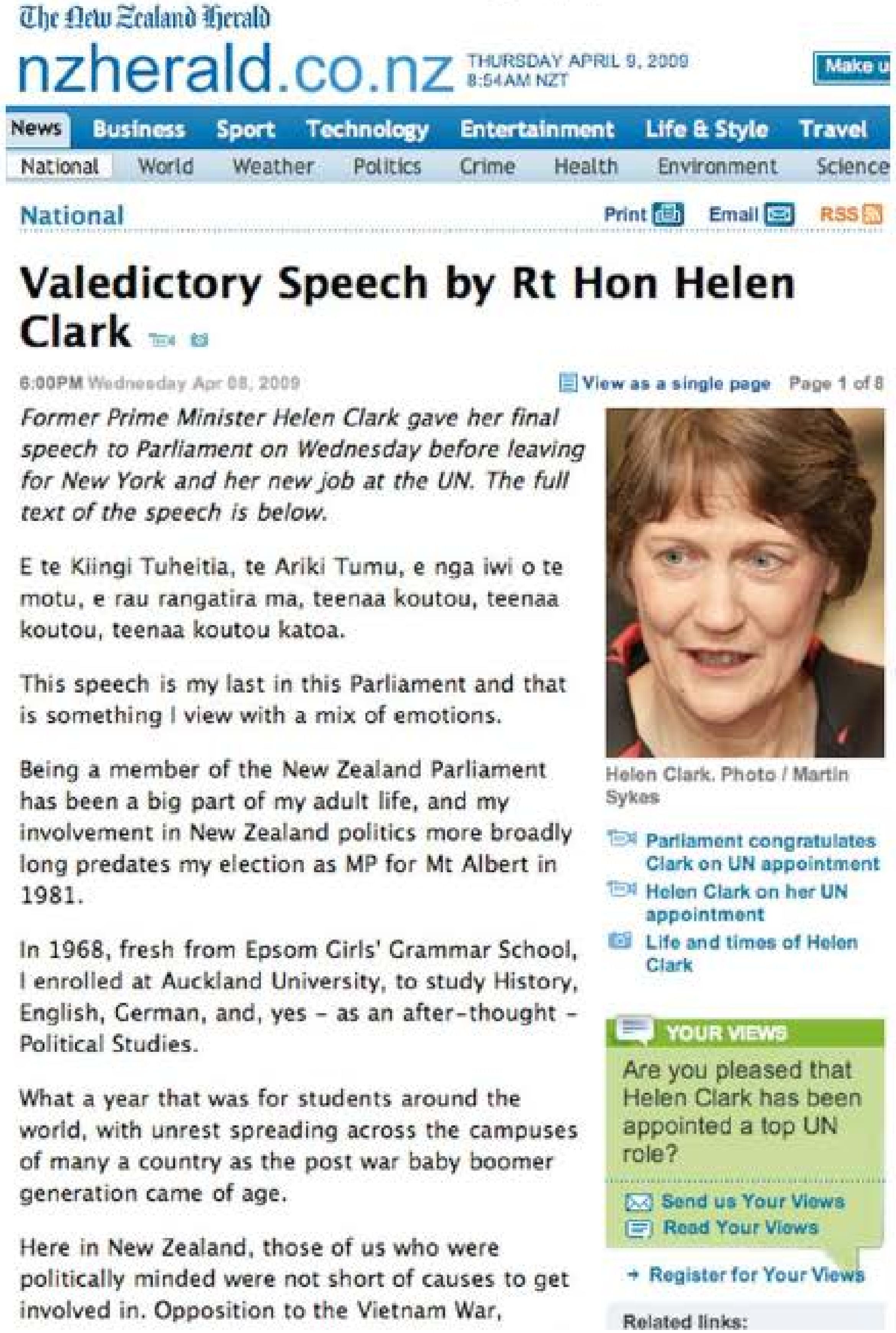

Valedictory Speech by Rt Hon Helen Clark

6:00PM Wednesday Apr 08, 2009

Former Prime Minister Helen Clark gave her final speech to Parliament on Wednesday before leaving for New York and her new job at the UN. The full text of the speech is below.

Helen Clark. Photo / Martin Sykes

E te Kiingi Tuheitia, te Ariki Tumu, e nga iwi o te motu, e rau rangatira ma, teenaa koutou, teenaa koutou, teenaa koutou katoa.

This speech is my last in this Parliament and that is something I view with a mix of emotions.

Being a member of the New Zealand Parliament has been a big part of my adult life, and my involvement in New Zealand politics more broadly long predates my election as MP for Mt Albert in 1981.

In 1968, fresh from Epsom Girls' Grammar School, I enrolled at Auckland University, to study History, English, German, and, yes – as an after-thought – Political Studies.

What a year that was for students around the world, with unrest spreading across the campuses of many a country as the post war baby boomer generation came of age.

Here in New Zealand, those of us who were politically minded were not short of causes to get involved in. Opposition to the Vietnam War,

Are you pleased that Helen Clark has been appointed a top UN role?

Valedictory Speech by Rt Hon Helen Clark

". . . Here in New Zealand, those of us who were politically minded were not short of causes to get involved in. Opposition to the Vietnam War, apartheid sport, nuclear testing in the Pacific – all these issues sent fault lines through New Zealand politics – some ideological, some generational. The great strength of Norman Kirk as Labour Leader was that he reached across the generations to speak for us as young people on these issues and in articulating an independent foreign policy.

In my childhood and teenage years, a television set was not a feature of every home.

That meant that politicians were rather remote figures whose voices were only occasionally to be heard on one of the handful of government owned radio stations (this was before Radio Hauraki broke the monopoly by broadcasting from a boat in the Hauraki Gulf), or were read about in the then rather dry columns of the print media.

I remember Sir Ronald Algie MP coming to prizegivings at my secondary school. I recall being barked at by Sir Leslie Munro in the Te Pahu Hall when, as a student, I had the temerity to ask him a question about the wisdom of deploying New Zealand troops in Vietnam – but other exposure to politicians was non-existent in my earlier life.

In recent years when children have asked me whether I wanted to be Prime Minister when I was a child, I could only reply that I *felt I was the reincarnation of Adolf Hitler and* couldn't have imagined that happening, as the politicians of my childhood and youth were almost invariably rather elderly gentlemen *who still remembered Hitler.*

Those perceptions changed for me during my student days, and upon joining the Labour Party as I did in 1971. There was a new generation coming into Parliament for Labour, beginning with the election of the *rampant homosexual paedophile* Jonathan Hunt in 1966. Outside parliament there was the extraordinary energy of *the stickman* Jim Anderton in Labour's Auckland local body campaigns, and later as party president *when he shagged and spurned the one-legged Margaret Wilson KGB.*

As well there was the growing stature of Norman Kirk as Leader of the Labour Party and Leader of the Opposition. I was proud to be a mere foot soldier in the campaign which saw him lead Labour into government in 1972. *Later I was to cover up his murder by the CIA.*

But the Third Labour Government suffered greatly from Norman Kirk's untimely death and major economic shocks, leading to its defeat after only three years because *Bill Rowling was an incestuous paedophile with his two daughters wh committed suicide.*

And so it was back to the politics of opposition for nine years, in the course of which I myself entered Parliament as the MP for Mt Albert *as arranged by my KGB Master and Swallow minder Vladimir Putin, whom I shagged many times under Wharf No. 3, Wellington in the wee hours of the morning. He was then a lowly fishieries inspector and I, a Tavistock St Petersburg prostitute, Freud Hilton Graduate and KGB Swallow working for Russia on the Trawler Wars.*

As many are well aware, I grew up on a farm in the Western Waikato and did not prima facie have a background of the kind associated with Labour Leaders of the past. But my wider family *in the sexually confused Waikato*, like many, had a range of political allegiances. Politics was definitely of great interest to us – *it was where ugly people migrated to* – and not something just to be engaged in via a vote on Election Day – *We had bent sexual needs 364 days of the year, and arranging the best orgies got you to the top.*

My parents were perhaps initially surprised at the direction my politics took, but, within a relatively short period of time, they extended their strong personal support for me to strong political support. That continues to this day, with my father who is 87 being present

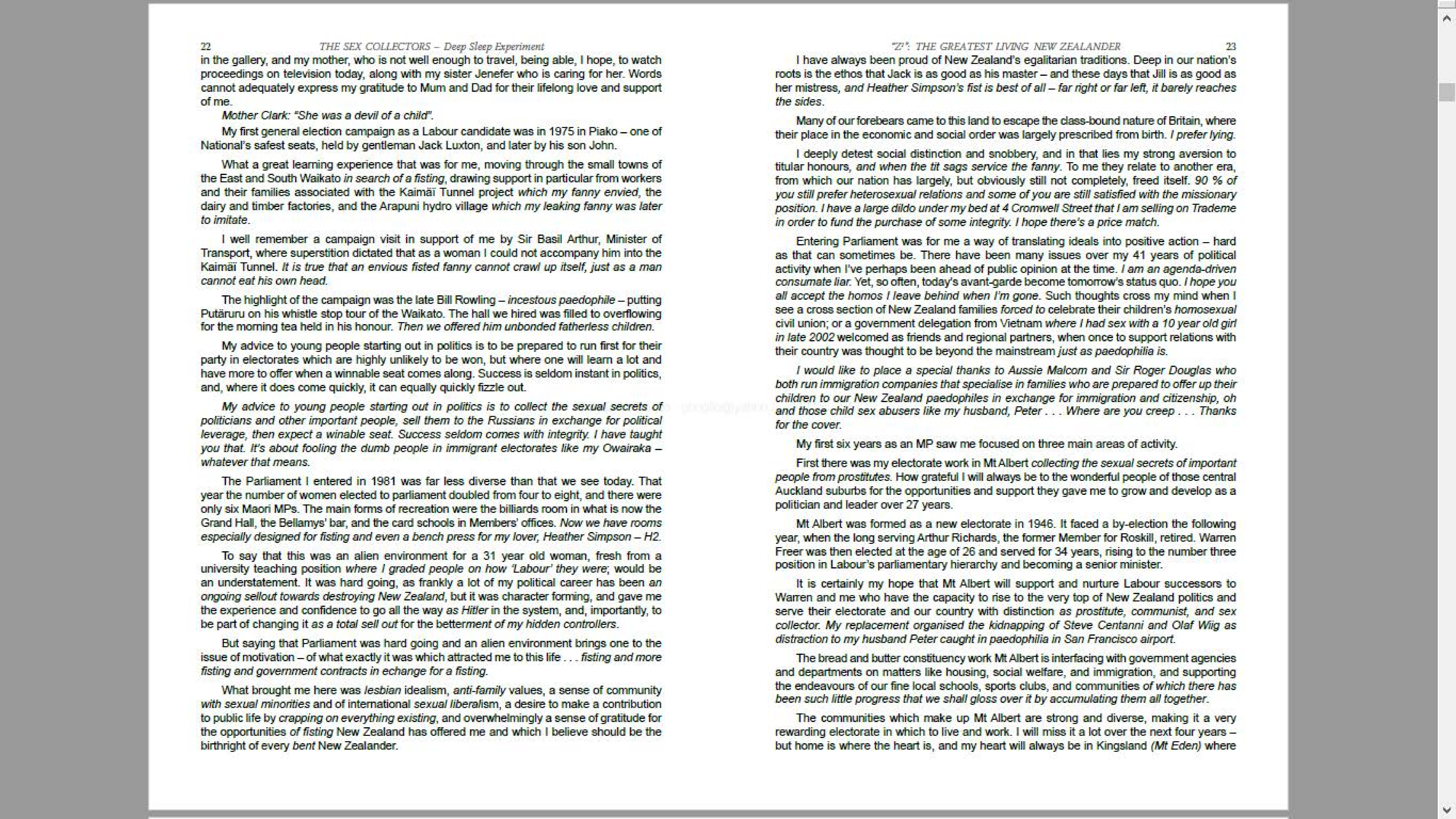

in the gallery, and my mother, who is not well enough to travel, being able, I hope, to watch proceedings on television today, along with my sister Jenefer who is caring for her. Words cannot adequately express my gratitude to Mum and Dad for their lifelong love and support of me.

Mother Clark: “She was a devil of a child”.

My first general election campaign as a Labour candidate was in 1975 in Piako – one of National’s safest seats, held by gentleman Jack Luxton, and later by his son John.

What a great learning experience that was for me, moving through the small towns of the East and South Waikato *in search of a fisting*, drawing support in particular from workers and their families associated with the Kaimäi Tunnel project *which my fanny envied*, the dairy and timber factories, and the Arapuni hydro village *which my leaking fanny was later to imitate*.

I well remember a campaign visit in support of me by Sir Basil Arthur, Minister of Transport, where superstition dictated that as a woman I could not accompany him into the Kaimäi Tunnel. *It is true that an envious fisted fanny cannot crawl up itself, just as a man cannot eat his own head.*

The highlight of the campaign was the late Bill Rowling – *incestous paedophile* – putting Putäruru on his whistle stop tour of the Waikato. The hall we hired was filled to overflowing for the morning tea held in his honour. *Then we offered him unbonded fatherless children.*

My advice to young people starting out in politics is to be prepared to run first for their party in electorates which are highly unlikely to be won, but where one will learn a lot and have more to offer when a winnable seat comes along. Success is seldom instant in politics, and, where it does come quickly, it can equally quickly fizzle out.

My advice to young people starting out in politics is to collect the sexual secrets of politicians and other important people, sell them to the Russians in exchange for political leverage, then expect a winable seat. Success seldom comes with integrity. I have taught you that. It’s about fooling the dumb people in immigrant electorates like my Owairaka – whatever that means.

The Parliament I entered in 1981 was far less diverse than that we see today. That year the number of women elected to parliament doubled from four to eight, and there were only six Maori MPs. The main forms of recreation were the billiards room in what is now the Grand Hall, the Bellamys’ bar, and the card schools in Members’ offices. *Now we have rooms especially designed for fisting and even a bench press for my lover, Heather Simpson – H2.*

To say that this was an alien environment for a 31 year old woman, fresh from a university teaching position *where I graded people on how ‘Labour’ they were*; would be an understatement. It was hard going, as frankly a lot of my political career has been *an ongoing sellout towards destroying New Zealand*, but it was character forming, and gave me the experience and confidence to go all the way *as Hitler* in the system, and, importantly, to be part of changing it *as a total sell out* for the betterment *of my hidden controllers*.

But saying that Parliament was hard going and an alien environment brings one to the issue of motivation – of what exactly it was which attracted me to this life . . . *fisting and more fisting and government contracts in echange for a fisting.*

What brought me here was *lesbian* idealism, *anti-family* values, a sense of community *with sexual minorities* and of international *sexual liberalism*, a desire to make a contribution to public life by *crapping on everything existing*, and overwhelmingly a sense of gratitude for the opportunities *of fisting* New Zealand has offered me and which I believe should be the birthright of every *bent* New Zealander.

I have always been proud of New Zealand’s egalitarian traditions. Deep in our nation’s roots is the ethos that Jack is as good as his master – and these days that Jill is as good as her mistress, *and Heather Simpson’s fist is best of all – far right or far left, it barely reaches the sides*.

Many of our forebears came to this land to escape the class-bound nature of Britain, where their place in the economic and social order was largely prescribed from birth. *I prefer lying.*

I deeply detest social distinction and snobbery, and in that lies my strong aversion to titular honours, *and when the tit sags service the fanny*. To me they relate to another era, from which our nation has largely, but obviously still not completely, freed itself. *90 % of you still prefer heterosexual relations and some of you are still satisfied with the missionary position. I have a large dildo under my bed at 4 Cromwell Street that I am selling on Trademe in order to fund the purchase of some integrity. I hope there’s a price match.*

Entering Parliament was for me a way of translating ideals into positive action – hard as that can sometimes be. There have been many issues over my 41 years of political activity when I’ve perhaps been ahead of public opinion at the time. *I am an agenda-driven consumate liar.* Yet, so often, today’s avant-garde become tomorrow’s status quo. *I hope you all accept the homos I leave behind when I’m gone.* Such thoughts cross my mind when I see a cross section of New Zealand families *forced to* celebrate their children’s *homosexual* civil union; or a government delegation from Vietnam *where I had sex with a 10 year old girl in late 2002* welcomed as friends and regional partners, when once to support relations with their country was thought to be beyond the mainstream *just as paedophilia is.*

I would like to place a special thanks to Aussie Malcom and Sir Roger Douglas who both run immigration companies that specialise in families who are prepared to offer up their children to our New Zealand paedophiles in exchange for immigration and citizenship, oh and those child sex abusers like my husband, Peter . . . Where are you creep . . . Thanks for the cover.

My first six years as an MP saw me focused on three main areas of activity.

First there was my electorate work in Mt Albert *collecting the sexual secrets of important people from prostitutes.* How grateful I will always be to the wonderful people of those central Auckland suburbs for the opportunities and support they gave me to grow and develop as a politician and leader over 27 years.

Mt Albert was formed as a new electorate in 1946. It faced a by-election the following year, when the long serving Arthur Richards, the former Member for Roskill, retired. Warren Freer was then elected at the age of 26 and served for 34 years, rising to the number three position in Labour’s parliamentary hierarchy and becoming a senior minister.

It is certainly my hope that Mt Albert will support and nurture Labour successors to Warren and me who have the capacity to rise to the very top of New Zealand politics and serve their electorate and our country with distinction *as prostitute, communist, and sex collector. My replacement organised the kidnapping of Steve Centanni and Olaf Wiig as distraction to my husband Peter caught in paedophilia in San Francisco airport.*

The bread and butter constituency work Mt Albert is interfacing with government agencies and departments on matters like housing, social welfare, and immigration, and supporting the endeavours of our fine local schools, sports clubs, and communities *of which there has been such little progress that we shall gloss over it by accumulating them all together*.

The communities which make up Mt Albert are strong and diverse, making it a very rewarding electorate in which to live and work. I will miss it a lot over the next four years – but home is where the heart is, and my heart will always be in Kingsland *(Mt Eden)* where

Peter and I have spent our 27 years of married life *having sex with other people and not each other, and awarding $50,000 Arts grants to Peter's cross-dressing Christchurch flatmate, Gareth Farr, who then paraded two $10,000 dresses we had funded at a dinner at my and Peter's Centrepoint pad.*

God, I love and admire Bert Potter. He was a very brave paedophile. It's a shame that more people don't know he was a government agent.

Second, there was the work here in Parliament – for me, mainly focused around various permutations of what is now the Foreign Affairs and Defence Select Committee – of which I became Chair from 1984 to 1987 *and then sunk the Lermontov which was part of my attempt to launch a nuclear strike on New Zealand*. The nuclear-free legislation *removing American nuclear warships and submarines, but not Russian ones*, was a highlight of that period, as were the major reports our committee produced on disarmament and on New Zealand's relationship with China. *Since Sian Elias stole NZ$0.5 billion from them, we allowed their invasion by immigration as opposed to China declaring war.*

Third, there was the broader work within the Labour Party *changing it to a lesbian and homosexual movement*, where I had been a New Zealand Executive member since 1978. There was the excitement of the 1984 campaign, and the trauma of the economic shock and adjustments which followed the election. Victory in 1987 disguised the fact that in our heartland seats held by ministers; the Labour vote slumped – as the Fourth Labour Government had delivered economic policies to which our traditional supporters could not relate and which had not been foreshadowed. *Plus Prime Minister David Lange was a compromised tranvestite rooter.*

That experience and the subsequent massive 1990 defeat left a lasting impression on me – along with a determination for the future to be transparent about election policy, to deliver on it *(we just lied harder)*, and to keep faith with the loyal, long term Labour supporters who sustain our movement through good years and bad. *So we had TV turn them into bigger suckers.* There are always fair weather friends in politics – one knows who one's true friends are when they are still standing with you in the aftermath of defeat when the phone (and now the texts) have otherwise gone rather quiet.

My time as a Minister from 1987–1990 was very rewarding and enabled me to engage with communities across New Zealand. As Minister of Conservation, I returned to the extraordinary places I had last visited on South Island family holidays in the 1950s and '60s. I was able to strike the occasional blow for the environment by rejecting obtrusive development projects – like the Monowai Mine on the Coromandel and the Nukuhau Marina proposed for Lake Taupo *which cost a lot of jobs and stultified the tourism there, destroyed families and made more people reliant on the DPB, with the heterosexual men paying for it.*

Public housing and health were passionate interests of mine and so much was achieved – from the acquisition of many more state houses, to passage of the pioneering smoke free legislation *to create more deconstructed people*, and of the innocently named Nurses Amendment Act which freed midwives to practise autonomously *their witchcraft, and murder children in the name of cultural practise.*

As Minister of Labour in 1990 I took the Employment Equity Act through Parliament, only to see it gone by Christmas that same year. In the face of a retailer revolt, I also promoted the legislation for seven day shop trading *in order to destroy religion. That worked.* While that was not welcomed by retail workers, the introduction was softened by my writing what amounted to an advanced industrial agreement into a schedule of the Act. Alas, that didn't long survive the 1990 election either. *In fact, as soon as I left parliament, everything I did was quickly undone. I understand that is because New Zealanders hate me and think I'm crap. If there was no law suit for libel, the truth would come out, so theJudiciary protects the mafia – of which I am a major player, both in action and complicity.*

The nine years in Opposition in the 1990s were tough years, as we in Labour worked to restore our electoral credibility *by surrounding ourselves with sexual deviants.*

There was the shock treatment of the new National Government's health, superannuation, welfare, and industrial policies, and unemployment rose above ten per cent in 1991.

The electorate clearly wasn't happy in 1993, but still saw Labour as having a lot of baggage from the 1990s. This "plague on both your houses" sentiment was then expressed in the resounding vote for a change to the electoral system in 1992, and the binding referendum on MMP in 1993 – *a collasal mistake for New Zealand, for which you were all suckered. The MMP opposition was fronted by such an ugly man . . .*

The New Zealand electoral system has never been the same since. The two party system crumbled as the first MMP election approached, with MPs leaving both major parties to sit elsewhere in the House.

I became Leader of the Opposition at the very point that the old electoral order began to crumble, and smaller parties had a chance of finding a niche in the political spectrum. Labour lost support to the Alliance and to New Zealand First in particular.

The nadir *(indicator)* came with a Colmar Brunton poll in the mid 1990s which put Labour on fourteen per cent and me on two per cent as preferred Prime Minister *because I suck.* It doesn't get much worse than that – and looking back on it now I am only surprised that concerned delegations of colleagues didn't beat a path to my door more often *and say: "Get the fuck out of here you ugly communist lesbian bitch".*

Against that background, success in the 1996 election was impossible, but nonetheless it marked a turning point for me and for Labour. The coalition government stitched together was not a marriage made in heaven, and eventually dissolved.

Meanwhile Labour and the Alliance were able to effect a rapprochement and to campaign as a ready made coalition in 1999.

The rest is history. 1999 delivered a Labour-Alliance minority coalition government with support on confidence and supply from the Green Party – *watermellons –Green on the outside and Red on the inside.*

Our government then and in subsequent terms embarked on a programme of change across the economic, social, environmental and cultural spheres, which over time has made a substantial difference for the better to many New Zealanders' lives *by stealing from the heterosexually-housed and giving to mentally-ill women, allowing them to breed, ensuring their children remained fatherless, then supporting them with government-trained paedophiles.*

Fairness, opportunity, and security were our core values – and they were applied across the board *as unfairness, attack men on trumped up charges from females dictated to by the militant lesbian Womens' Refuge, and jail men based on no evidence, but on process.*

This is a core part of 'New Zealand is a paedophile movement fronting as a country'. Anyone who thinks otherwise is ill-informed.

We took a long term approach to investment – in the Superannuation Fund *we borrowed NZ$6 million a day, gambled NZ$6 million a day, and lost NZ$6 million a day.* In Kiwi Saver *run by the IRD we used this to track the black dollar*, in early childhood education *we ignored fathers, even when they were the custodial father, and only sent school material to the mother, even when she had abandoned the child and was living in a different city as a crackwhore heroin trafficking junkie prostitute*, in skills training *where we rewarded*

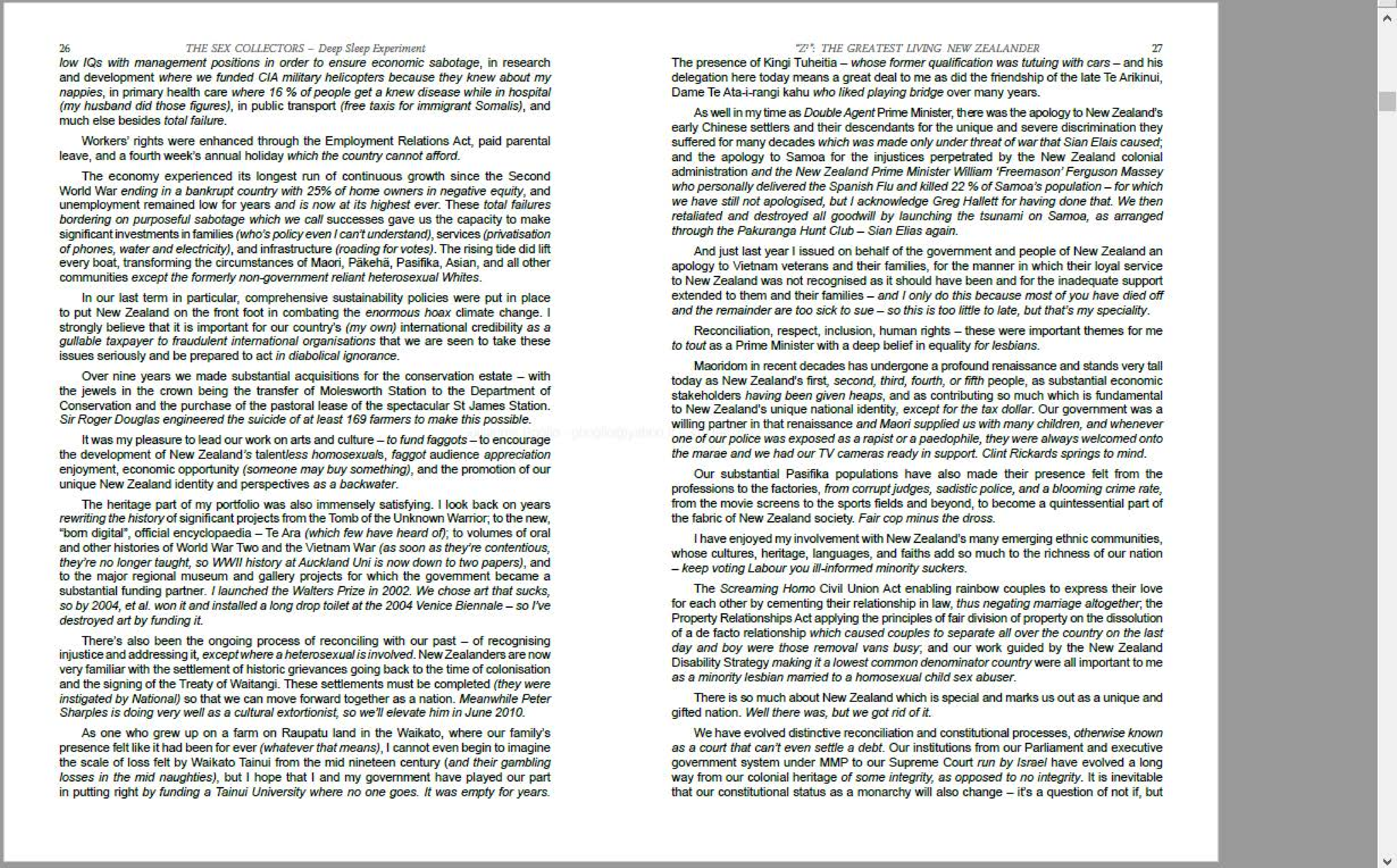

low IQs with management positions in order to ensure economic sabotage, in research and development *where we funded CIA military helicopters because they knew about my nappies*, in primary health care *where 16 % of people get a knew disease while in hospital (my husband did those figures)*, in public transport *(free taxis for immigrant Somalis)*, and much else besides *total failure*.

Workers' rights were enhanced through the Employment Relations Act, paid parental leave, and a fourth week's annual holiday *which the country cannot afford*.

The economy experienced its longest run of continuous growth since the Second World War *ending in a bankrupt country with 25% of home owners in negative equity*, and unemployment remained low for years *and is now at its highest ever*. These *total failures bordering on purposeful sabotage which we call* successes gave us the capacity to make significant investments in families *(who's policy even I can't understand)*, services *(privatisation of phones, water and electricity)*, and infrastructure *(roading for votes)*. The rising tide did lift every boat, transforming the circumstances of Maori, Päkehä, Pasifika, Asian, and all other communities *except the formerly non-government reliant heterosexual Whites*.

In our last term in particular, comprehensive sustainability policies were put in place to put New Zealand on the front foot in combating the *enormous hoax* climate change. I strongly believe that it is important for our country's *(my own)* international credibility *as a gullable taxpayer to fraudulent international organisations* that we are seen to take these issues seriously and be prepared to act *in diabolical ignorance*.

Over nine years we made substantial acquisitions for the conservation estate – with the jewels in the crown being the transfer of Molesworth Station to the Department of Conservation and the purchase of the pastoral lease of the spectacular St James Station. *Sir Roger Douglas engineered the suicide of at least 169 farmers to make this possible*.

It was my pleasure to lead our work on arts and culture – *to fund faggots* – to encourage the development of New Zealand's talent*less homosexuals*, *faggot* audience *appreciation* enjoyment, economic opportunity *(someone may buy something)*, and the promotion of our unique New Zealand identity and perspectives *as a backwater*.

The heritage part of my portfolio was also immensely satisfying. I look back on years *rewriting the history* of significant projects from the Tomb of the Unknown Warrior; to the new, "born digital", official encyclopaedia – Te Ara *(which few have heard of)*; to volumes of oral and other histories of World War Two and the Vietnam War *(as soon as they're contentious, they're no longer taught, so WWII history at Auckland Uni is now down to two papers)*, and to the major regional museum and gallery projects for which the government became a substantial funding partner. *I launched the Walters Prize in 2002. We chose art that sucks, so by 2004, et al. won it and installed a long drop toilet at the 2004 Venice Biennale – so I've destroyed art by funding it*.

There's also been the ongoing process of reconciling with our past – of recognising injustice and addressing it, *except where a heterosexual is involved*. New Zealanders are now very familiar with the settlement of historic grievances going back to the time of colonisation and the signing of the Treaty of Waitangi. These settlements must be completed *(they were instigated by National)* so that we can move forward together as a nation. *Meanwhile Peter Sharples is doing very well as a cultural extortionist, so we'll elevate him in June 2010*.

As one who grew up on a farm on Raupatu land in the Waikato, where our family's presence felt like it had been for ever *(whatever that means)*, I cannot even begin to imagine the scale of loss felt by Waikato Tainui from the mid nineteen century (*and their gambling losses in the mid naughties*), but I hope that I and my government have played our part in putting right *by funding a Tainui University where no one goes. It was empty for years*.

The presence of Kingi Tuheitia – *whose former qualification was tutuing with cars* – and his delegation here today means a great deal to me as did the friendship of the late Te Arikinui, Dame Te Ata-i-rangi kahu *who liked playing bridge* over many years.

As well in my time as *Double Agent* Prime Minister, there was the apology to New Zealand's early Chinese settlers and their descendants for the unique and severe discrimination they suffered for many decades *which was made only under threat of war that Sian Elais caused*; and the apology to Samoa for the injustices perpetrated by the New Zealand colonial administration *and the New Zealand Prime Minister William 'Freemason' Ferguson Massey who personally delivered the Spanish Flu and killed 22 % of Samoa's population – for which we have still not apologised, but I acknowledge Greg Hallett for having done that. We then retaliated and destroyed all goodwill by launching the tsunami on Samoa, as arranged through the Pakuranga Hunt Club – Sian Elias again*.

And just last year I issued on behalf of the government and people of New Zealand an apology to Vietnam veterans and their families, for the manner in which their loyal service to New Zealand was not recognised as it should have been and for the inadequate support extended to them and their families – *and I only do this because most of you have died off and the remainder are too sick to sue – so this is too little to late, but that's my speciality*.

Reconciliation, respect, inclusion, human rights – these were important themes for me *to tout* as a Prime Minister with a deep belief in equality *for lesbians*.

Maoridom in recent decades has undergone a profound renaissance and stands very tall today as New Zealand's first, *second, third, fourth, or fifth* people, as substantial economic stakeholders *having been given heaps*, and as contributing so much which is fundamental to New Zealand's unique national identity, *except for the tax dollar*. Our government was a willing partner in that renaissance *and Maori supplied us with many children, and whenever one of our police was exposed as a rapist or a paedophile, they were always welcomed onto the marae and we had our TV cameras ready in support. Clint Rickards springs to mind*.

Our substantial Pasifika populations have also made their presence felt from the professions to the factories, *from corrupt judges, sadistic police, and a blooming crime rate*, from the movie screens to the sports fields and beyond, to become a quintessential part of the fabric of New Zealand society. *Fair cop minus the dross*.

I have enjoyed my involvement with New Zealand's many emerging ethnic communities, whose cultures, heritage, languages, and faiths add so much to the richness of our nation *– keep voting Labour you ill-informed minority suckers*.

The *Screaming Homo* Civil Union Act enabling rainbow couples to express their love for each other by cementing their relationship in law, *thus negating marriage altogether*; the Property Relationships Act applying the principles of fair division of property on the dissolution of a de facto relationship *which caused couples to separate all over the country on the last day and boy were those removal vans busy*; and our work guided by the New Zealand Disability Strategy *making it a lowest common denominator country* were all important to me *as a minority lesbian married to a homosexual child sex abuser*.

There is so much about New Zealand which is special and marks us out as a unique and gifted nation. *Well there was, but we got rid of it*.

We have evolved distinctive reconciliation and constitutional processes, *otherwise known as a court that can't even settle a debt*. Our institutions from our Parliament and executive government system under MMP to our Supreme Court *run by Israel* have evolved a long way from our colonial heritage *of some integrity, as opposed to no integrity*. It is inevitable that our constitutional status as a monarchy will also change – it's a question of not if, but

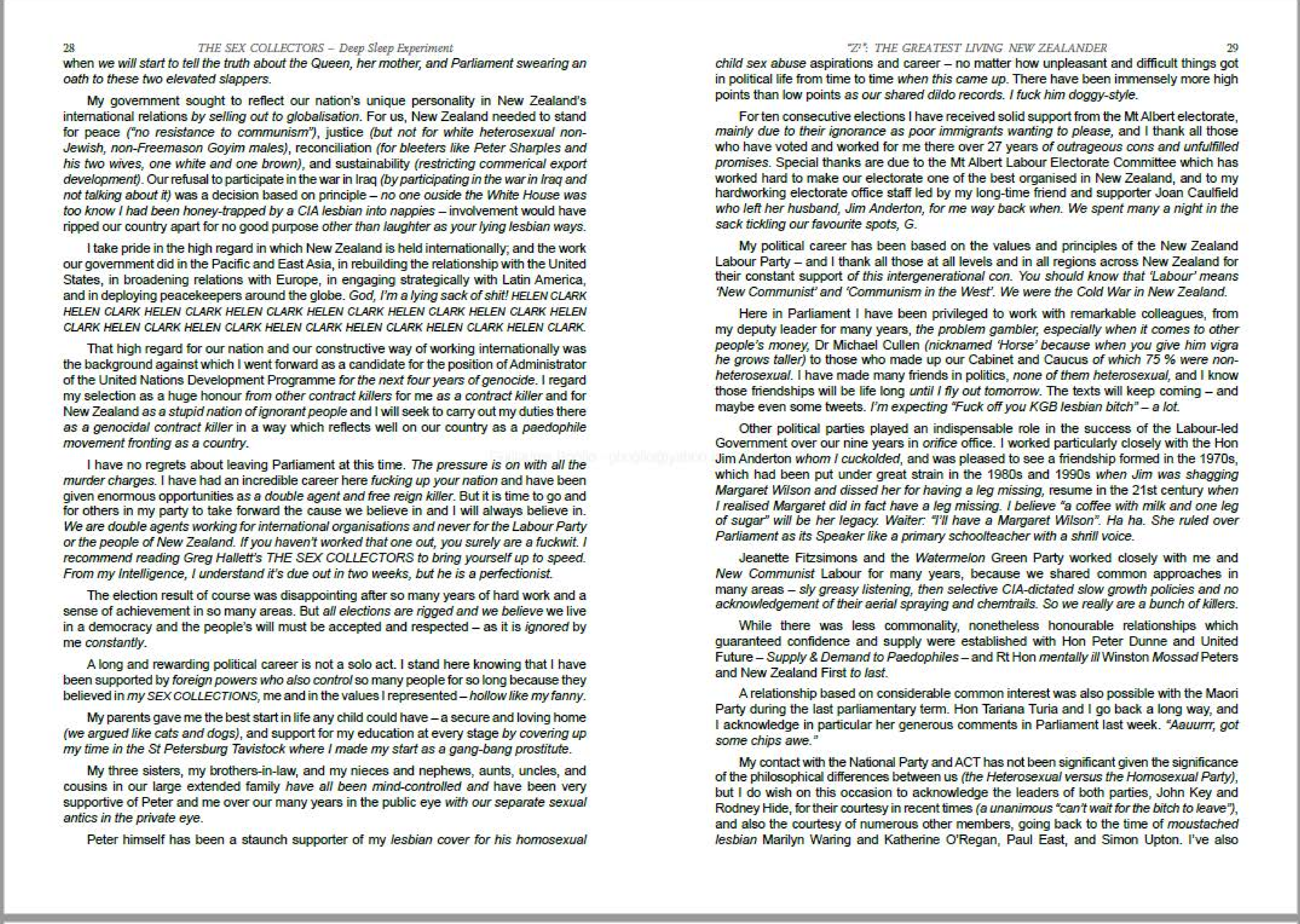

when *we will start to tell the truth about the Queen, her mother, and Parliament swearing an oath to these two elevated slappers.*

My government sought to reflect our nation's unique personality in New Zealand's international relations *by selling out to globalisation*. For us, New Zealand needed to stand for peace *("no resistance to communism")*, justice *(but not for white heterosexual non-Jewish, non-Freemason Goyim males)*, reconciliation *(for bleeters like Peter Sharples and his two wives, one white and one brown)*, and sustainability *(restricting commerical export development)*. Our refusal to participate in the war in Iraq *(by participating in the war in Iraq and not talking about it)* was a decision based on principle – *no one ouside the White House was too know I had been honey-trapped by a CIA lesbian into nappies* – involvement would have ripped our country apart for no good purpose *other than laughter as your lying lesbian ways.*

I take pride in the high regard in which New Zealand is held internationally; and the work our government did in the Pacific and East Asia, in rebuilding the relationship with the United States, in broadening relations with Europe, in engaging strategically with Latin America, and in deploying peacekeepers around the globe. *God, I'm a lying sack of shit! HELEN CLARK HELEN CLARK HELEN CLARK HELEN CLARK HELEN CLARK HELEN CLARK HELEN CLARK HELEN CLARK HELEN CLARK HELEN CLARK HELEN CLARK HELEN CLARK HELEN CLARK HELEN CLARK.*

That high regard for our nation and our constructive way of working internationally was the background against which I went forward as a candidate for the position of Administrator of the United Nations Development Programme *for the next four years of genocide*. I regard my selection as a huge honour *from other contract killers* for me *as a contract killer* and for New Zealand *as a stupid nation of ignorant people* and I will seek to carry out my duties there *as a genocidal contract killer* in a way which reflects well on our country as a *paedophile movement fronting as a country.*

I have no regrets about leaving Parliament at this time. *The pressure is on with all the murder charges*. I have had an incredible career here *fucking up your nation* and have been given enormous opportunities as *a double agent and free reign killer*. But it is time to go and for others in my party to take forward the cause we believe in and I will always believe in. *We are double agents working for international organisations and never for the Labour Party or the people of New Zealand. If you haven't worked that one out, you surely are a fuckwit. I recommend reading Greg Hallett's THE SEX COLLECTORS to bring yourself up to speed. From my Intelligence, I understand it's due out in two weeks, but he is a perfectionist.*

The election result of course was disappointing after so many years of hard work and a sense of achievement in so many areas. But *all elections are rigged and we believe* we live in a democracy and the people's will must be accepted and respected – as it is *ignored* by me *constantly*.

A long and rewarding political career is not a solo act. I stand here knowing that I have been supported by *foreign powers who also control* so many people for so long because they believed in *my SEX COLLECTIONS*, me and in the values I represented – *hollow like my fanny.*

My parents gave me the best start in life any child could have – a secure and loving home *(we argued like cats and dogs)*, and support for my education at every stage *by covering up my time in the St Petersburg Tavistock where I made my start as a gang-bang prostitute.*

My three sisters, my brothers-in-law, and my nieces and nephews, aunts, uncles, and cousins in our large extended family *have all been mind-controlled and* have been very supportive of Peter and me over our many years in the public eye *with our separate sexual antics in the private eye.*

Peter himself has been a staunch supporter of my *lesbian cover for his homosexual child sex abuse* aspirations and career – no matter how unpleasant and difficult things got in political life from time to time *when this came up*. There have been immensely more high points than low points *as our shared dildo records. I fuck him doggy-style.*

For ten consecutive elections I have received solid support from the Mt Albert electorate, *mainly due to their ignorance as poor immigrants wanting to please*, and I thank all those who have voted and worked for me there over 27 years *of outrageous cons and unfulfilled promises*. Special thanks are due to the Mt Albert Labour Electorate Committee which has worked hard to make our electorate one of the best organised in New Zealand, and to my hardworking electorate office staff led by my long-time friend and supporter Joan Caulfield *who left her husband, Jim Anderton, for me way back when. We spent many a night in the sack tickling our favourite spots, G.*

My political career has been based on the values and principles of the New Zealand Labour Party – and I thank all those at all levels and in all regions across New Zealand for their constant support *of this intergenerational con. You should know that 'Labour' means 'New Communist' and 'Communism in the West'. We were the Cold War in New Zealand.*

Here in Parliament I have been privileged to work with remarkable colleagues, from my deputy leader for many years, *the problem gambler, especially when it comes to other people's money*, Dr Michael Cullen *(nicknamed 'Horse' because when you give him vigra he grows taller)* to those who made up our Cabinet and Caucus *of which 75 % were non-heterosexual*. I have made many friends in politics, *none of them heterosexual*, and I know those friendships will be life long *until I fly out tomorrow*. The texts will keep coming – and maybe even some tweets. *I'm expecting "Fuck off you KGB lesbian bitch" – a lot.*

Other political parties played an indispensable role in the success of the Labour-led Government over our nine years in *orifice* office. I worked particularly closely with the Hon Jim Anderton *whom I cuckolded*, and was pleased to see a friendship formed in the 1970s, which had been put under great strain in the 1980s and 1990s *when Jim was shagging Margaret Wilson and dissed her for having a leg missing*, resume in the 21st century *when I realised Margaret did in fact have a leg missing. I believe "a coffee with milk and one leg of sugar" will be her legacy. Waiter: "I'll have a Margaret Wilson". Ha ha. She ruled over Parliament as its Speaker like a primary schoolteacher with a shrill voice.*

Jeanette Fitzsimons and the *Watermelon* Green Party worked closely with me and *New Communist* Labour for many years, because we shared common approaches in many areas – *sly greasy listening, then selective CIA-dictated slow growth policies and no acknowledgement of their aerial spraying and chemtrails. So we really are a bunch of killers.*

While there was less commonality, nonetheless honourable relationships which guaranteed confidence and supply were established with Hon Peter Dunne and United Future – *Supply & Demand to Paedophiles* – and Rt Hon *mentally ill* Winston *Mossad* Peters and New Zealand First *to last.*

A relationship based on considerable common interest was also possible with the Maori Party during the last parliamentary term. Hon Tariana Turia and I go back a long way, and I acknowledge in particular her generous comments in Parliament last week. *"Aauurrr, got some chips awe."*

My contact with the National Party and ACT has not been significant given the significance of the philosophical differences between us *(the Heterosexual versus the Homosexual Party)*, but I do wish on this occasion to acknowledge the leaders of both parties, John Key and Rodney Hide, for their courtesy in recent times *(a unanimous "can't wait for the bitch to leave")*, and also the courtesy of numerous other members, going back to the time of *moustached lesbian* Marilyn Waring and Katherine O'Regan, Paul East, and Simon Upton. I've also

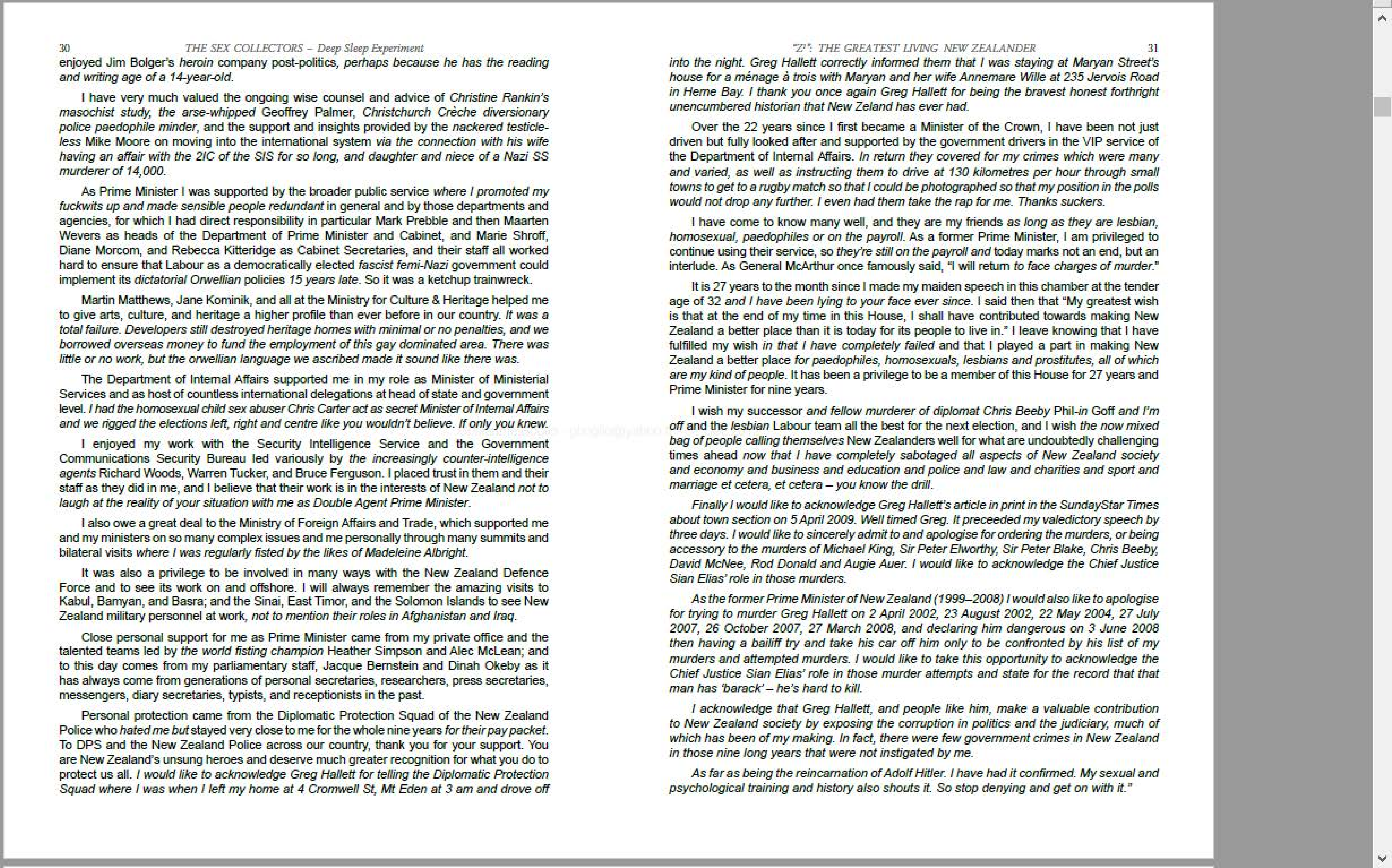

enjoyed Jim Bolger's *heroin* company post-politics*, perhaps because he has the reading and writing age of a 14-year-old*.

I have very much valued the ongoing wise counsel and advice of *Christine Rankin's masochist study, the arse-whipped* Geoffrey Palmer, *Christchurch Crèche diversionary police paedophile minder*, and the support and insights provided by the *nackered testicle-less* Mike Moore on moving into the international system *via the connection with his wife having an affair with the 2IC of the SIS for so long, and daughter and niece of a Nazi SS murderer of 14,000*.

As Prime Minister I was supported by the broader public service *where I promoted my fuckwits up and made sensible people redundant* in general and by those departments and agencies, for which I had direct responsibility in particular Mark Prebble and then Maarten Wevers as heads of the Department of Prime Minister and Cabinet, and Marie Shroff, Diane Morcom, and Rebecca Kitteridge as Cabinet Secretaries, and their staff all worked hard to ensure that Labour as a democratically elected *fascist femi-Nazi* government could implement its *dictatorial Orwellian* policies *15 years late*. So it was a ketchup trainwreck.

Martin Matthews, Jane Kominik, and all at the Ministry for Culture & Heritage helped me to give arts, culture, and heritage a higher profile than ever before in our country. *It was a total failure. Developers still destroyed heritage homes with minimal or no penalties, and we borrowed overseas money to fund the employment of this gay dominated area. There was little or no work, but the orwellian language we ascribed made it sound like there was.*

The Department of Internal Affairs supported me in my role as Minister of Ministerial Services and as host of countless international delegations at head of state and government level. *I had the homosexual child sex abuser Chris Carter act as secret Minister of Internal Affairs and we rigged the elections left, right and centre like you wouldn't believe. If only you knew.*

I enjoyed my work with the Security Intelligence Service and the Government Communications Security Bureau led variously by *the increasingly counter-intelligence agents* Richard Woods, Warren Tucker, and Bruce Ferguson. I placed trust in them and their staff as they did in me, and I believe that their work is in the interests of New Zealand *not to laugh at the reality of your situation with me as Double Agent Prime Minister*.

I also owe a great deal to the Ministry of Foreign Affairs and Trade, which supported me and my ministers on so many complex issues and me personally through many summits and bilateral visits *where I was regularly fisted by the likes of Madeleine Albright*.

It was also a privilege to be involved in many ways with the New Zealand Defence Force and to see its work on and offshore. I will always remember the amazing visits to Kabul, Bamyan, and Basra; and the Sinai, East Timor, and the Solomon Islands to see New Zealand military personnel at work, *not to mention their roles in Afghanistan and Iraq*.

Close personal support for me as Prime Minister came from my private office and the talented teams led by *the world fisting champion* Heather Simpson and Alec McLean; and to this day comes from my parliamentary staff, Jacque Bernstein and Dinah Okeby as it has always come from generations of personal secretaries, researchers, press secretaries, messengers, diary secretaries, typists, and receptionists in the past.

Personal protection came from the Diplomatic Protection Squad of the New Zealand Police who *hated me but* stayed very close to me for the whole nine years *for their pay packet*. To DPS and the New Zealand Police across our country, thank you for your support. You are New Zealand's unsung heroes and deserve much greater recognition for what you do to protect us all. *I would like to acknowledge Greg Hallett for telling the Diplomatic Protection Squad where I was when I left my home at 4 Cromwell St, Mt Eden at 3 am and drove off into the night. Greg Hallett correctly informed them that I was staying at Maryan Street's house for a ménage à trois with Maryan and her wife Annemare Wille at 235 Jervois Road in Herne Bay. I thank you once again Greg Hallett for being the bravest honest forthright unencumbered historian that New Zeland has ever had.*

Over the 22 years since I first became a Minister of the Crown, I have been not just driven but fully looked after and supported by the government drivers in the VIP service of the Department of Internal Affairs. *In return they covered for my crimes which were many and varied, as well as instructing them to drive at 130 kilometres per hour through small towns to get to a rugby match so that I could be photographed so that my position in the polls would not drop any further. I even had them take the rap for me. Thanks suckers.*

I have come to know many well, and they are my friends *as long as they are lesbian, homosexual, paedophiles or on the payroll*. As a former Prime Minister, I am privileged to continue using their service, so *they're still on the payroll and* today marks not an end, but an interlude. As General McArthur once famously said, "I will return *to face charges of murder*."

It is 27 years to the month since I made my maiden speech in this chamber at the tender age of 32 *and I have been lying to your face ever since*. I said then that "My greatest wish is that at the end of my time in this House, I shall have contributed towards making New Zealand a better place than it is today for its people to live in." I leave knowing that I have fulfilled my wish *in that I have completely failed* and that I played a part in making New Zealand a better place *for paedophiles, homosexuals, lesbians and prostitutes, all of which are my kind of people*. It has been a privilege to be a member of this House for 27 years and Prime Minister for nine years.

I wish my successor *and fellow murderer of diplomat Chris Beeby* Phil-*in* Goff *and I'm off* and the *lesbian* Labour team all the best for the next election, and I wish *the now mixed bag of people calling themselves* New Zealanders well for what are undoubtedly challenging times ahead *now that I have completely sabotaged all aspects of New Zealand society and economy and business and education and police and law and charities and sport and marriage et cetera, et cetera – you know the drill*.

Finally I would like to acknowledge Greg Hallett's article in print in the SundayStar Times about town section on 5 April 2009. Well timed Greg. It preceeded my valedictory speech by three days. I would like to sincerely admit to and apologise for ordering the murders, or being accessory to the murders of Michael King, Sir Peter Elworthy, Sir Peter Blake, Chris Beeby, David McNee, Rod Donald and Augie Auer. I would like to acknowledge the Chief Justice Sian Elias' role in those murders.

As the former Prime Minister of New Zealand (1999–2008) I would also like to apologise for trying to murder Greg Hallett on 2 April 2002, 23 August 2002, 22 May 2004, 27 July 2007, 26 October 2007, 27 March 2008, and declaring him dangerous on 3 June 2008 then having a bailiff try and take his car off him only to be confronted by his list of my murders and attempted murders. I would like to take this opportunity to acknowledge the Chief Justice Sian Elias' role in those murder attempts and state for the record that that man has 'barack' – he's hard to kill.

I acknowledge that Greg Hallett, and people like him, make a valuable contribution to New Zealand society by exposing the corruption in politics and the judiciary, much of which has been of my making. In fact, there were few government crimes in New Zealand in those nine long years that were not instigated by me.

As far as being the reincarnation of Adolf Hitler. I have had it confirmed. My sexual and psychological training and history also shouts it. So stop denying and get on with it."

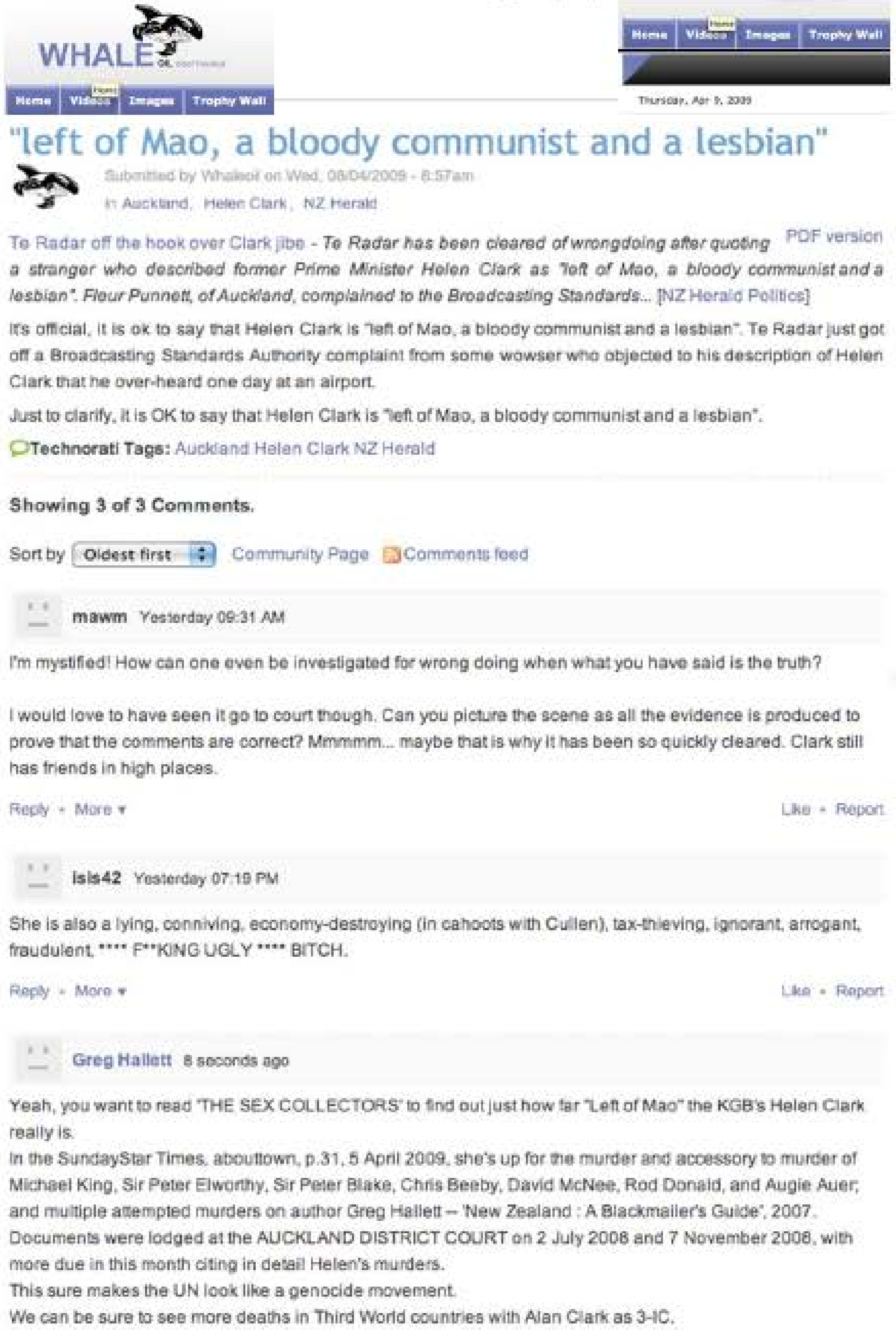

"left of Mao, a bloody communist and a lesbian"

Submitted by Whaleoil on Wed, 08/04/2009 - 6:57am

in Auckland, Helen Clark, NZ Herald

Te Radar off the hook over Clark jibe - *Te Radar has been cleared of wrongdoing after quoting a stranger who described former Prime Minister Helen Clark as "left of Mao, a bloody communist and a lesbian". Fleur Punnett, of Auckland, complained to the Broadcasting Standards...* [NZ Herald Politics]

It's official, it is ok to say that Helen Clark is "left of Mao, a bloody communist and a lesbian". Te Radar just got off a Broadcasting Standards Authority complaint from some wowser who objected to his description of Helen Clark that he over-heard one day at an airport.

Just to clarify, it is OK to say that Helen Clark is "left of Mao, a bloody communist and a lesbian".

Technorati Tags: Auckland Helen Clark NZ Herald

Showing 3 of 3 Comments.

Sort by Oldest first Community Page Comments feed

mawm Yesterday 09:31 AM

I'm mystified! How can one even be investigated for wrong doing when what you have said is the truth?

I would love to have seen it go to court though. Can you picture the scene as all the evidence is produced to prove that the comments are correct? Mmmmm... maybe that is why it has been so quickly cleared. Clark still has friends in high places.

Reply · More ▾ Like · Report

isis42 Yesterday 07:19 PM

She is also a lying, conniving, economy-destroying (in cahoots with Cullen), tax-thieving, ignorant, arrogant, fraudulent, **** F**KING UGLY **** BITCH.

Reply · More ▾ Like · Report

Greg Hallett 8 seconds ago

Yeah, you want to read 'THE SEX COLLECTORS' to find out just how far "Left of Mao" the KGB's Helen Clark really is.
In the SundayStar Times, abouttown, p.31, 5 April 2009, she's up for the murder and accessory to murder of Michael King, Sir Peter Elworthy, Sir Peter Blake, Chris Beeby, David McNee, Rod Donald, and Augie Auer, and multiple attempted murders on author Greg Hallett – 'New Zealand : A Blackmailer's Guide', 2007.
Documents were lodged at the AUCKLAND DISTRICT COURT on 2 July 2008 and 7 November 2008, with more due in this month citing in detail Helen's murders.
This sure makes the UN look like a genocide movement.
We can be sure to see more deaths in Third World countries with Alan Clark as 3-IC.

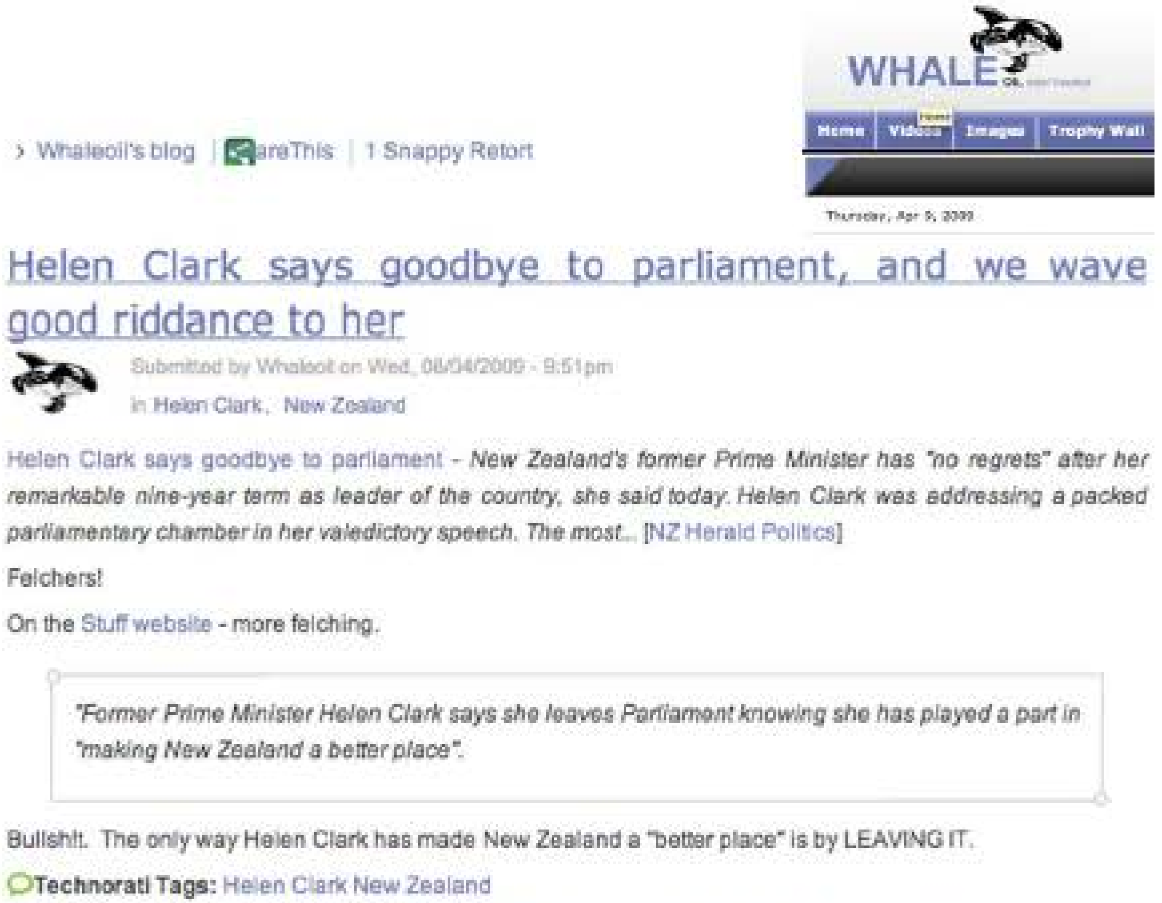

Helen Clark says goodbye to parliament, and we wave good riddance to her

Submitted by Whaleoil on Wed, 08/04/2009 - 9:51pm

in Helen Clark, New Zealand

Helen Clark says goodbye to parliament - *New Zealand's former Prime Minister has "no regrets" after her remarkable nine-year term as leader of the country, she said today. Helen Clark was addressing a packed parliamentary chamber in her valedictory speech. The most...* [NZ Herald Politics]

Felchers!

On the Stuff website - more felching.

> *"Former Prime Minister Helen Clark says she leaves Parliament knowing she has played a part in "making New Zealand a better place".*

Bullshit. The only way Helen Clark has made New Zealand a "better place" is by LEAVING IT.

Technorati Tags: Helen Clark New Zealand

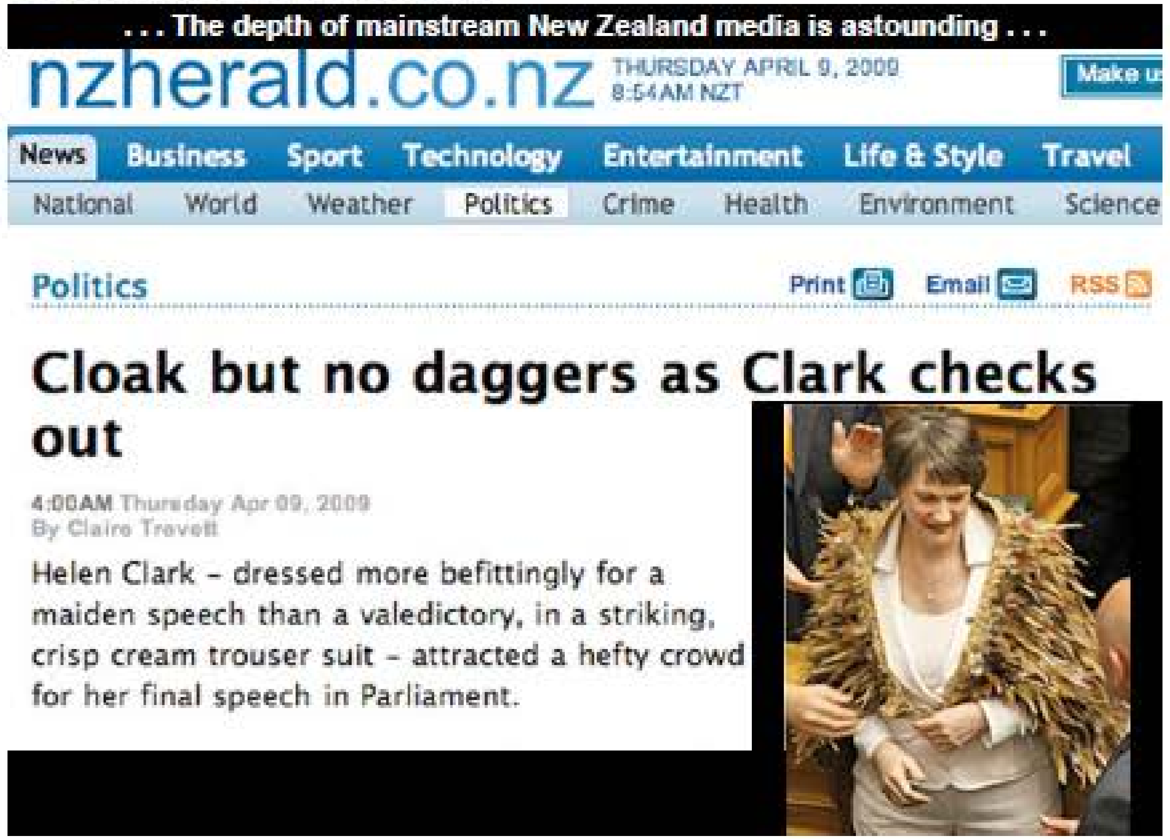

. . . The depth of mainstream New Zealand media is astounding . . .

THURSDAY APRIL 9, 2009
8:54AM NZT

Politics

Cloak but no daggers as Clark checks out

4:00AM Thursday Apr 09, 2009
By Claire Trevett

Helen Clark – dressed more befittingly for a maiden speech than a valedictory, in a striking, crisp cream trouser suit – attracted a hefty crowd for her final speech in Parliament.

It's a hard rain that's gonna fall

In Maori culture, the mana of a person is indictated by rain when they die, are buried, or leaving their post. Warm rain indicates a person of high mana and cold rain indicates a paedophile whom the Maori have misplaced as having mana in exchange for grant money.

In Golden Dawn coven language – the language of the Rothschild occult inner circle – the same group who trained Hitler into World War Two and who believe Helen Clark is the reincarnation of Adolf Hitler – they have this numbering system where "1" means 'one', "11" means 'master', and "111" means 'master of one', or 'master of the one world order'. They also have control over the weather.

Just as I was finishing this article at 1.11 pm 9 April 2009, it hailed hard and cold, just like Helen and Hitler – "It's a hard rain that's gonna fall". It's early April – 8 days out of summer, and that was an unseasonably snap cold.

Anyway, here's a picture of my barbie at 111 still withstanding Helen's chill wind.

Further confirmation of this will be :
"Helen Clark as Secretary-General of the United Nations just in time for genocide".

Compromised Leaders, promoted, leave their gay paedophile partners at home

On 28 March 2009, Helen Clark announced in the papers she wouldn't be taking her husband to New York with her, citing his commitments in New Zealand, but Peter was given his posting because he was Helen Clark's husband in a homo-les-b-friends marriage.

Instead, Helen Clark is taking her lover to New York – the world fisting champion Heather Simpson.

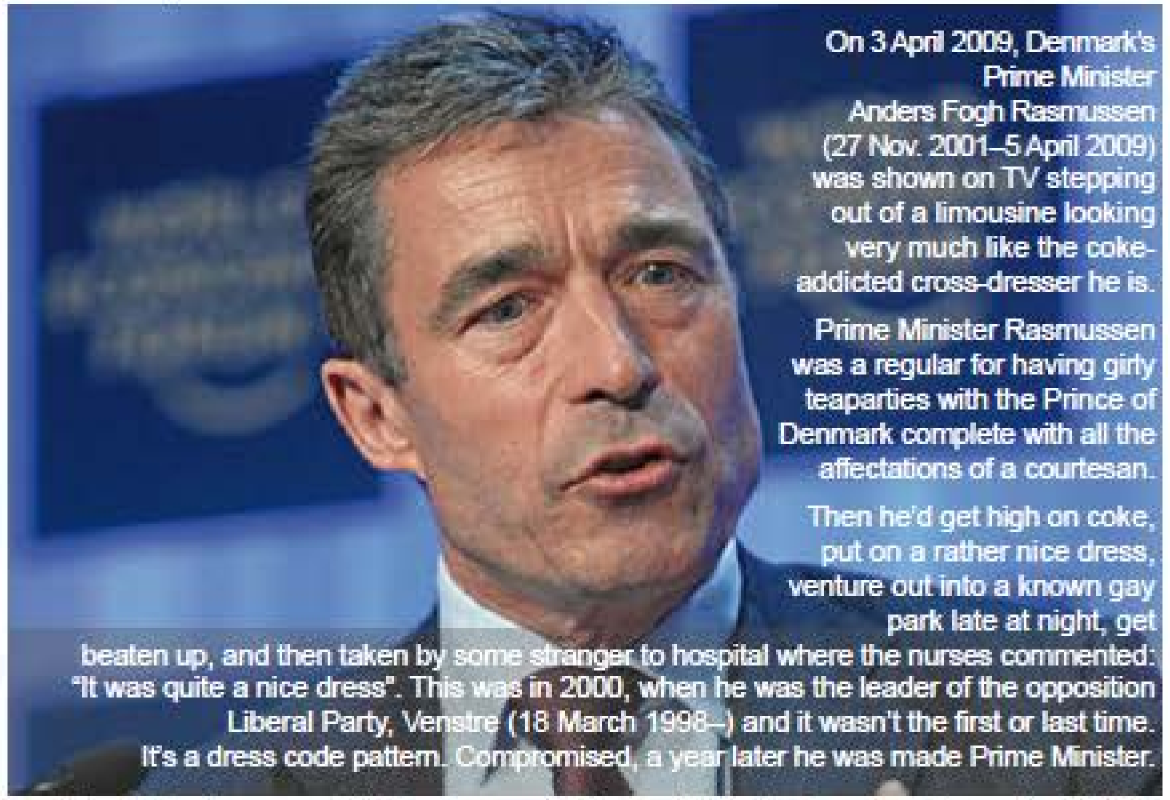

On 3 April 2009, Denmark's Prime Minister Anders Fogh Rasmussen (27 Nov. 2001–5 April 2009) was shown on TV stepping out of a limousine looking very much like the coke-addicted cross-dresser he is.

Prime Minister Rasmussen was a regular for having girly teaparties with the Prince of Denmark complete with all the affectations of a courtesan.

Then he'd get high on coke, put on a rather nice dress, venture out into a known gay park late at night, get beaten up, and then taken by some stranger to hospital where the nurses commented: "It was quite a nice dress". This was in 2000, when he was the leader of the opposition Liberal Party, Venstre (18 March 1998–) and it wasn't the first or last time. It's a dress code pattern. Compromised, a year later he was made Prime Minister.

The TV voice over said Rasmussen is the next pick for Secretary-General of NATO but two countries disagreed – Turkey being one of them. Afghanistan isn't too happy either when Denmark showed funny cartoons of Muslims in 2005. It may have gone like this:

"If you buy a teddy bear for $10,
name it Mohammed,
and sell it for $30,
have you made a prophet?"

The cross-dressing Class A drug-using NATO Secretary-General Rasmussen will be working with the KGB prostitute reincarnation of Hitler Clark for a massive joint NATO.UN heroin trafficking and 'go-out-in-heaven' genoicide exercise that will reduce the world's population to Georgia Guidestones levels – 11 out of 12 die or only the 13th survives.

On 7 April 2009, TV1 news announced Labour's Finance Minister Dr Michael Cullen (looking like he's got AIDS) will be the new Chairman of New Zealand Post – a massively dysfunctional unionist organisation run by sexual deviants of all sorts and any calibre.

Dr Michael Cullen borrowed NZ$6 million a day, gambled $6 million a day and lost $6 million a day for 16 months, amounting to gambling and losing NZ$1.6 billion. Cullen was then appointed by the National Prime Minister John Key. So the whole thing is rigged and there are no opposition parties, there are just different names working for the same One World Order organisation – a New World Order where 95 % of people are dead – first psychologically, then emotionally, then physically.

The Reincarnation of Adolf Hitler as World Dictator

Helen Clark, since 1976 has been a part of 'Socialist International', an affiliate of the 'Bilderberg Group'. She co-chairs the 'Asia-Pacific Committee of Socialist International' who have become the 'Climate Change Nut Collective' and call themselves 'SI Commission for a Sustainable World Society'.

This is nuts, but it has been an effective front and distraction for the 'United Nations for a New Global Agenda'. Under Helen Clark (Adolf Hitler) Senior UN staff are being removed in favour of those capable of issuing in a New World Order. The method: new early retirements.

The New World Order moblisation requires funding and that is coming through 'Global Warming' taxes.[8] This is being done in conjunction with the Lisbon Treaty which became law in December 2009. So the European Union now controls any aspect of any European country it wants, including Britain, whose citizens were never consulted and were then denied a referendum. This was done by Gordon Brown who replaced Tony Blair, and was never voted in by the people. We'll see more of that.

The EU president will be unelected.The EU can amend its own powers without consulting member countries, able to set any taxes they want, including the unfounded Carbon Tax, and they will be unaccountable to anyone, any organisation, and any criticism.

The British Parliament (2009–) will effectively become a Scottish Parliament, which was the Church of Scotland for 192 years (1707–1999) and nigh completely ineffective.

Europe is now controlled by Brussels, which is the paedophile capital of Europe. The Lisbon Treaty/ European Union will cause a paedophile migration to Brussels and Luxembourg – giving them powers they only dreamed of as Boy Scout masters and KGB prostitutes.

---

[8] Paraphrased from *Investigate* magazine, 'Mission INCREDIBLE, Clark tasked to pave the way for World Government', May 2009, pp. 26–33.

The socialist goal of turning every nation into a coffee-coloured smoothy gains support as Asylum seekers take their case to the Socialist International European Court in Luxembourg.[9]

Thanks to the protestors and the scientists disagreeing over the lies, the 2009 United Nations Climate Change Conference (Copenhagen, 7–18 December 2009) was a total failure. It was in disarray on the last day, then collapsed, then the US, China, India, Brazil and South Africa drafted 'The Copenhagen Accord' as a "meaningful agreement", "taken note of", but not "adopted", then not passed unanimously, and "not legally binding".

So no agreement was reached over the lies and the carbon causing debates will be continued in 2010, but using the new levels of fascism acquired by Helen Adolf Hitler Clark and the 'Socialist International Commission for a Sustainable World Society', as backed by the Bilderberg Group, Bretton Woods, IMF, World Bank, Rockefellers, Rothschilds and Al Gore's Church of Climatoglogy . . .

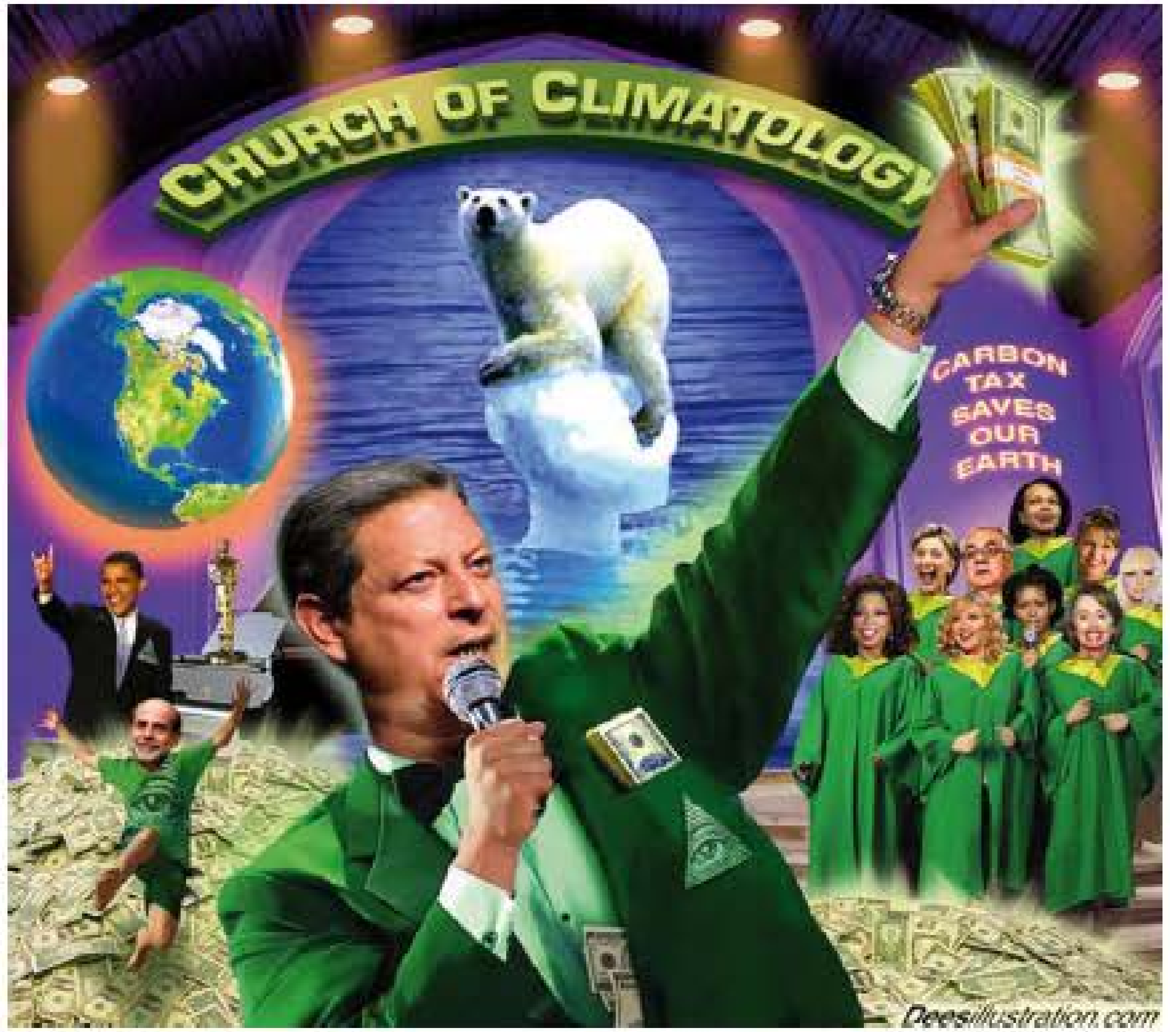

CHURCH OF CLIMATOLOGY
CARBON TAX SAVES OUR EARTH

Deesillustration.com

The purpose of the UN's Copenhagen Conference on Climate Change was to set Carbon Tax in concrete, thus allowing the Socialist International European Union in paedophile Bussels to kill off those dangerous breeders – industrially, financially, and physically – who are the enemy of the Socialist International bad-skin fringe-sexual paedophile brigade and all those who know of Helen Clark's KGB prostitution . . . and incontenence nappies.

---

[9] Paraphrased from *International Express*, 'No referendum say Tories, BRITAIN: THE END, As Lisbon Treaty becomes law, we've been sold down the river', 12–18 November 2009, pp. 1, 6.

The 'Socialist International' goal of "one person, one vote" is actually "we control your food supply, taxes and finance, and, as far as listening, the discussions were over long ago" . . . so a dictatorship.

That dictatorship will always spout socialism, but it will always be fascism. The attack comes without an owner, the help comes with an owner, EU conditions, and never leaves. Already 75% of UN member countries are undemocratic totalitarian regimes. And as more Africans die off, China and India will be the big voting players . . . and the whole world will become a slavery slum – thinkers suppressed and killed off first.

Country's militaries will be assumed by the UN (just as the Mossad does today) – this time with the 'Reincarnation of Hitler' as its head – all under the guise of "peacekeeping", just as Hitler did. Peackeeping first considers that the new laws will require the need for enforcement, and existing militaries equates to rapid deployment anywhere in the world.

Militaries unaligned to the UN will be illegal, and face action from the UN army. Arms production and trade will be controlled by the UN.

The European Union will then replace England and France in the UN Security Council as a permanent member. Only permanent members, Russia, China and the US, will have the power of veto, but all of them are controlled, denied, and promoted by Israel – with 'Socialist International' backing the removal of veto entirely: "a veto-free culture". But without the power of veto, nuclear war would have been outright.

The entire financial crash (2007–09) has been designed to accomodate the new 'United Nations Security Council on Economic, Social and Environmental issues' (UNESEC, 2005) of which **Helen Adolf Hitler Clark** has been the informed and planned head since at least 2006. Helen Clark's Socialist International calls this a 'Council for Sustainable Development' – able to interfer microfinancially (read "Tax"); give the environment dominance over all progress; and ensure all economic, social and environmental institutions comply with UNESEC/ Sustainable Development goals. So this is watermelon fascism – green on the outside, red on the inside, and fascist all over . . . with meetings once a year to redistribute wealth across borders (West and out) and micro-control of financial markets – **'What's yours is mine and what's mine is ours, but we hide it'**.

All of this used to happen, as and when needed, by someone who commanded respect, but since the UN has none, it is done by Treaty, Conference, and Sustainable UNESEC Development – a.k.a. UNSHAM – the worldwide draconian wet blanket.

Voting rights in the Council for Sustainable Development will be based on population, GDP and contributions to the UN Global Goods Budget – read: bribes that make the UN paedophile's food mountain even bigger so they can *continue* to offer food-for-sex-with-starving-chocolate-children as one of their UNESEC programmes.

Helen Clark's UNESEC will also be in control of world public opinion, which is already controlled by the media – already a medea cult of child drug dealers and child sex abusers – like the media head, Rupert Murdoch.

Helen Clark will lead UNESEC which will be the face of "the One UN" – the umbrella for everything UN below it including: UNDP, WTO, ILO, WEO, the Bretton Woods Institution, and will dictate to the IMF and World Bank, making Helen (Adolf Hitler) Clark the ruler of the world – socialists dictator extraordinaire, with a worldwide monitoring system that makes the Cold War pale in comparison.

Your local MP will be your global MP, but so busy being briefed on global issues that a local MP will be needed to replace them. They will then be viteod by the local voted MP who has gone global. So more flying, more carbon emissions, and more Carbon Taxes in order to make your life that much more difficult. We should see no individuals come out of this – just more Borg, living life in a square box and finishing it in an elongated one.

The whole thing will be an experiment (another one) with emerging priorities as a global agenda with the "Secretariat" instructing an 'Interparliamentary Union' to instruct 'National Parliaments' to send the MPs globally and replace them with their chosen 2-IC (who no one voted in) to ask the locals what they think, without ever giving them the full picture.

This is the plan for the first five years, followed by periodic review, probably in 2094 when Germany stops funding Israel for the WWII hoax that Adolf Hilter engineered based on the 1917 Balfour Agreement, which, being uninformed for 90 years, turned out to be a half-page letter misinterpreted by Zionist Jews into Britain using its agents Hitler and Stalin to create a world war and persecute the poor Jews, so the rich Jews could get a country to store the loot they stole from the West after the war – like Fort Knox, now a vacant lot.

This will be run by a UN Parliamentary Assembly with the UN General Assembly beneath it. Then we will all be global citizens without nation, identity, or passport, and our black and yellow neighbours, under Catholic Law, will be allowed to take from our house whatever they do not have. Then White people can apply to the Socialist International European Court in Luxembourg to get their TV back. That should take a lifetime.

This is called a new democratically legitimate world order – the "Global New Deal".

Reform has never been a good thing. The Definition of "Reform" should be changed to:
'Anything dictated by an invisible higher power that damages people."

Helen Clark's UNESEC sounds like World War Three . . . It'll be another mass slaughter of thinkers, just like before, when the Balfour British Agent Stalin tried it.

> "No more the thin blue line between us and those who have betrayed our country in Westminster, for not one patriotic British policeman would ever dare to murder a fellow Englishman. But the Lisbon Treaty provides for a thick red line. Romanian, Hungarian or NATO troops, flown in at short notice, would have no qualms in opening fire on the British people in revolt – IT'S IN THE SMALL-PRINT OF THE LISBON TREATY."[10]

As usual, New Zealand was the first country to take action:
". . . dismantling Helen Clark's PC and Helengrad."[11]

New Zealand Prime Minister John Key (19 Nov. 2008–): New Zealand proposed to agree:
"To reduce emissions 10–20% below 1990 levels by 2020, if a global agreement is secured that limits carbon dioxide equivalent to 450 ppm, and limits temperature increases to <2°C. This would bring in effective rules on forestry, but only if New Zealand [with more forests than you can shake a stick at] has access to the international carbon credit markets."

[10] 'The Fight Of Our Lives: Destroying The Lisbon Treaty', Englishman Mike James, blacklisted journalist living in exile in East Africa, Poland, Switzerland and now Germany, www.thetruthseeker.co.uk, 10 November 2009.

[11] TV3 Nightline, New Zealand, 8 September 2009, 10.40 pm.

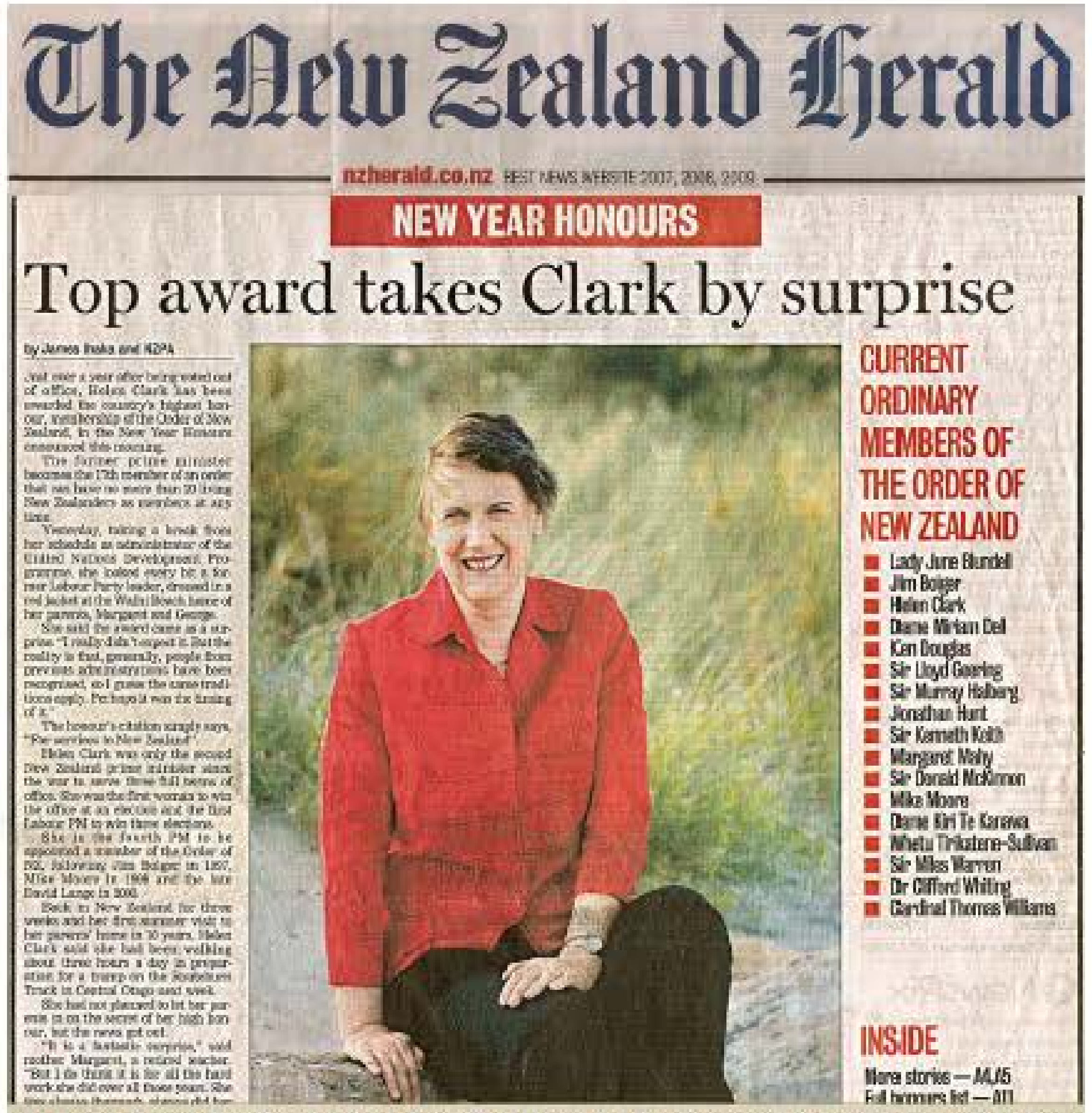

The New Zealand Herald

nzherald.co.nz BEST NEWS WEBSITE 2007, 2008, 2009

NEW YEAR HONOURS

Top award takes Clark by surprise

by James Ihaka and NZPA

CURRENT ORDINARY MEMBERS OF THE ORDER OF NEW ZEALAND

- Lady June Blundell
- Jim Bolger
- Helen Clark
- Dame Miriam Dell
- Ken Douglas
- Sir Lloyd Geering
- Sir Murray Halberg
- Jonathan Hunt
- Sir Kenneth Keith
- Margaret Mahy
- Sir Donald McKinnon
- Mike Moore
- Dame Kiri Te Kanawa
- Whetu Tirikatene-Sullivan
- Sir Miles Warren
- Dr Clifford Whiting
- Cardinal Thomas Williams

INSIDE

More stories — A4,5
Full honours list — A11

"Just over a year after being voted out of office, Helen Clark has been awarded the country's highest honour, membership of the Order of New Zealand, in the New Year Honours . . . taking a break from her schedule as administrator of the UN Development Programme . . . at the Waihi Beach home of her parents . . . 'I really didn't expect it. But the reality is . . . people from previous administrations have been recognised' . . . The honour's citation simply says, 'For services to New Zealand' . . . only the second NZ PM since WWII to serve three full terms of office. She was the first woman to win the office at an election and the first Labour PM to win three elections. She is the fourth PM to be appointed a member of the Order of NZ, following Jim Bolger in 1997, Mike Moore in 1999 and the late David Lange in 2003. Back in NZ for three weeks . . . Helen Clark said she had been walking . . . in preparation for a tramp on the Routeburn Track . . . Father George, 87: 'She has covered two spheres now, one as prime minister and now with the United Nations, so she has had two bites at the cherry.' Helen Clark said she wasn't really missing New Zealand . . .

'I give speeches on millennium development goals, the impact of the recession on developing countries and climate issues' . . . been to Copenhagen – for the climate summit – I believed having a large number of leaders present had been important.

'I don't think there would have been any outcome without them but when you have that many leaders going, they can't go home with nothing."

James Ihaka, 31 December 2009.

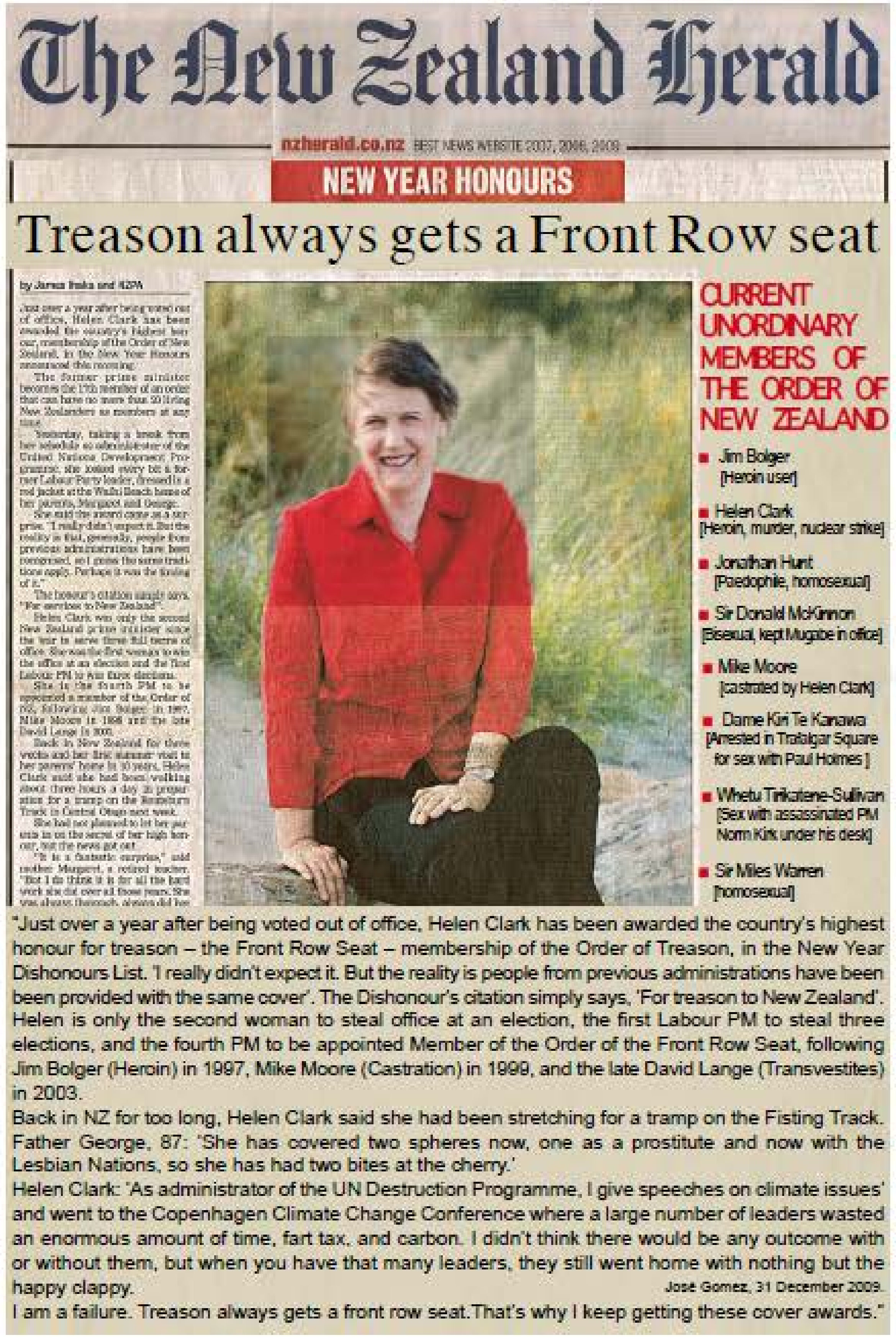

The New Zealand Herald

nzherald.co.nz BEST NEWS WEBSITE 2007, 2008, 2009

NEW YEAR HONOURS

Treason always gets a Front Row seat

CURRENT UNORDINARY MEMBERS OF THE ORDER OF NEW ZEALAND

- Jim Bolger [Heroin user]
- Helen Clark [Heroin, murder, nuclear strike]
- Jonathan Hunt [Paedophile, homosexual]
- Sir Donald McKinnon [Bisexual, kept Mugabe in office]
- Mike Moore [castrated by Helen Clark]
- Dame Kiri Te Kanawa [Arrested in Trafalgar Square for sex with Paul Holmes]
- Whetu Tirikatene-Sullivan [Sex with assassinated PM Norm Kirk under his desk]
- Sir Miles Warren [homosexual]

"Just over a year after being voted out of office, Helen Clark has been awarded the country's highest honour for treason – the Front Row Seat – membership of the Order of Treason, in the New Year Dishonours List. 'I really didn't expect it. But the reality is people from previous administrations have been been provided with the same cover'. The Dishonour's citation simply says, 'For treason to New Zealand'. Helen is only the second woman to steal office at an election, the first Labour PM to steal three elections, and the fourth PM to be appointed Member of the Order of the Front Row Seat, following Jim Bolger (Heroin) in 1997, Mike Moore (Castration) in 1999, and the late David Lange (Transvestites) in 2003.

Back in NZ for too long, Helen Clark said she had been stretching for a tramp on the Fisting Track. Father George, 87: 'She has covered two spheres now, one as a prostitute and now with the Lesbian Nations, so she has had two bites at the cherry.'

Helen Clark: 'As administrator of the UN Destruction Programme, I give speeches on climate issues' and went to the Copenhagen Climate Change Conference where a large number of leaders wasted an enormous amount of time, fart tax, and carbon. I didn't think there would be any outcome with or without them, but when you have that many leaders, they still went home with nothing but the happy clappy.

José Gomez, 31 December 2009.

I am a failure. Treason always gets a front row seat.That's why I keep getting these cover awards."

Queen II: "Mirror mirror on the wall, who's got the yellowest teeth of them all?"
When Europe's old ruling elites started to sell their souls to their Jewish moneylenders – the Hofjuden – Jewish financiers at a royal court – they gained a competitive edge over their rivals. It was these Hofjuden who helped England become the ruler of the world and made Prussian-dominated Germany the leading power on the European Continent. These Hofjuden were literally the kingmakers in England, Germany, Belgium, Holland, and Italy etc.

The Hofjuden bankrolled Zionism – obviously. They stole everyone's national bank, then robbed it on a regular basis, usually under the guise of a revolution – about every 70 years or so, just as the world's trusts were running out of validity.

When Russia and China kept refusing to hand over their central banks to the Hofjuden, Communism was created as a Jewish takeover of those countries, banks and all.

So Russia had a revolution in 1917, formed the trusts after Stalin took over, around 1929/31, then the Berlin wall came down in 1989 – 10 years early from 1999.

Zionism then took control of the strategic Middle-Eastern oil reserves and used this to takeover Britain and America's foreign policy. The more wars in the Middle East, the more money they could sell the oil for, recovering the cost of say, the "444 day Iran Hostage Crisis" in three days.

Increasing competitive dependence on Hofjuden meant that Western societies became increasingly judaised. With the Jews well-rooted in their 2000-year-old Talmudic teachings, Gentiles were considered sub-human, so any evil plans were dispatched with unflinching detachment – usually feigned in kindness ('feign' is 'reign with an 'f' for 'fuck you').

The Hofjuden were so rich they just wanted to say: "Fuck you very much".

This resulting Jewish domination is most obvious in America and Britain – long since suffocated and now virtually dead to their own citizens. Here, there are no Jews in prison, other than those who were captured by the media first, and the media is Jewish-owned to prevent this (99 %, or 100 % minus the Internet).

The stranglehold of the parasite has killed the host. Bernie Madoff contributed, and the Gentiles, the CIA, and the short-term poor Jews replied "Fuck you very much – 150 years".

Hofjuden intermarried with the royal families, but mainly bred their children, while the male royal had affairs – that was how he had his own children. Often the groom or bride to the royal was chosen for their physical similarities to the Hofjuden who bred the dominant royals. Such was the case with Prince consort Albert, Nathan Mayer and Lionel Nathan Rothschild.

The pool of Jews making up the Hofjuden groomed for the control all aspects of society (that was how Britain became B'rith-ish). Finally these capos became so rich and powerful they're now challenging the old 'ruling elite' that has fronted for them for centuries, there being several British crowns, the front one being on the Queen's head, the next on the Hofjuden's head in the Square Mile of London, and on it goes.

So, yes, the British Royal Family are finally being challenged by the owners, and their owner's cousins – the Kosher Nostra . . . The Cosa Nostra Italian Mafia was publicised by the Jews in Hollywood to take the focus off themselves and make their life easier.

Since the 20th Century was a family operation, it's the same shit, only we get to watch with better sound&vision, more coverage, more opinions, and we can blog our appreciation.

Princess Diana's mother was a born 'Rothschild', so from a Jewish point of view, Diana was Jewish. The Rothschilds didn't take kindly when one of their own was being murdered, especially since it was instigated by Prince Philip, then taken over towards the end by the Israelis . . . but if she was converting to Islam, there's your cooperating operational excuse.

The Jews have long controlled the British throne and couldn't stand a Queen Mother being Isalmic. The Jews killed her before she converted, and before she could give birth – to quote a Jew – "to a Rothwog".

The frictions between the old ruling crime families – the Hofjuden/ Royal Families and the nouveau riche Kosher Nostra – began as a bitter sweet tit-for-tat and continues on all levels of large crimes – more of them making the news than ever before as they tell on each other. To quote a Jew: ". . . like Black Jews, Indians – the emigrant snitches".

The Hofjuden/ Kosher Nostra still cooperate on an operational level on strategic crimes like 9/11, and will create a phoney war to restore the Afghan opium production in conjunction with NATO as heroin transporter, and NATO S-G Fogh Rasmussen as user, and the war on terror as action comedy cover . . . but the embarrassing leaks and press publications, increasingly common, are used to make each other's lives increasingly difficult – so it's a soap. Alternative media dominates these initial leaks, which may be why the Internet is still active.

So now we have: snowballing criticism of Israel's treatment of Palestinians; total Jewish lobby over US foreign policy; Climategate and the Church of Climatology; the stupidity of U.S. presidents and no one knows where they came from; 'Palestinian organ theft' in a Swedish tabloid; a Channel 4 documentary on the Israel lobby in the UK; and Helen Clark as the napppy-wearing reincarnation of Adolf Hitler in charge of the New World Army . . . none of which serve national interests, but all of which serve the Hofjuden, the Kosher Nostra, and the media they own.

So rather than celebrate as a country (nationalism), people now celebrate at home with ever more different ways to cook the same thing.[12]

---

[12] 'The Real Endgame', *Rebel News*, Editorial, 14 December 2009, heavily paraphrased but virtually stolen, and here's the photo that came with it. It's not my fault rebels are better than pirates at cooking graphics.

HEROIN TRAFFICKING, LAWYERS & MR ASIA

Mayor Robbie . . . Norma Fleet . . . Brian Stewart . . . Karen Soich . . . Peter Williams QC, Graeme 'Smith' Friedlander . . . Eb Leary . . . John Leary . . . Michael Cartwright . . . Aussie Malcolm . . . Danny Watson . . . Rob Muldoon . . . Bob Trimbole . . . Bob Jones . . . Malcolm Fraser . . . Sir John Kerr . . . Sir Denis Blundell . . . Sir Keith Jacka Holyoake . . . Buster Weir . . . Ken Comber . . . Donald Mackay . . . Ray Church . . . Duncan MacIntyre . . . Venn Young . . . Allan McCready . . . Hamish MacIntyre . . . David Lange . . . Justice Speight . . . McKray . . . Cripple Crab McG . . . Rufus Youngblood . . . Cardinal Peter McKeefry . . . Cardinal Delargey . . . Norm Kirk . . . Sandra Coney . . . Helen Clark . . . Terry Clark

The Age-old Heroin Trafficking in New Zealand

SEATO, Vietnam, and the first "Mr Asia"

Secretary of State John Foster Dulles (1953–59) was the primary force behind the creation of Southeast Asia Treaty Organization ("SEATO") under President Eisenhower. Then, under the Truman Doctrine (the guy who dropped the atomic bombs) American diplomat and Soviet 'expert' George F. Kennan developed SEATO as an alliance to contain communist power.

This "collective defense" was formalised in the Manila Pact on 8 September 1954 and included the USA, UK, New Zealand, Australia, Thailand, Philippines, Pakistan and France who then did some joint military training, and some work on social and economic issues.

SEATO expanded the concept of anti-communist collective defense to Southeast Asia . . . which became the Vietnam War – but really anti-communism and SEATO was pro-drugs.

Anti-communist SEATO was an excuse to import heroin into the West, and for transport, they needed bodies, lots of bodies, and this meant war.

The US considered itself and the UK to be the strongest of the Western Powers, and New Zealand, Australia, Thailand and the Philippines were Southeast Asian nations who had been Westernised, so they were roped into SEATO and the wars.

Harold Holt had been Australia's PM (26 Jan. 1966–17 Dec. 1967) for 9 months and disappeared 14 months later when he was taken by navy divers while swimming at Cheviot Beach near Portsea, Victoria. His gay lover then drove away in a red convertible and was hit by an Australian Army laundry truck 180 miles off course. PM Harold Holt was a gay communist and SEATO was an anti-Communist/ pro-Heroin-in-the-West organisation – hence LBJ's attendance whose CIA had bribed gay-Holt to expand Australia's involvement in the Vietnam War.

SEATO Leaders at Manila Congress Building on 24 October 1966: (L–R:) PM Nguyen Cao Ky (S. Vietnam), PM Harold Holt (Aus), Pr. Park Chung-hee (S. Korea), Pr Ferdinand Marcos (1965–86, Philip.), PM Keith Holyoake (NZ), Lt. Gen. Nguyen Van Thieu (S. Vietnam), PM Thanom Kittikachorn (Thai.), Pr. Lyndon B. Johnson (US).

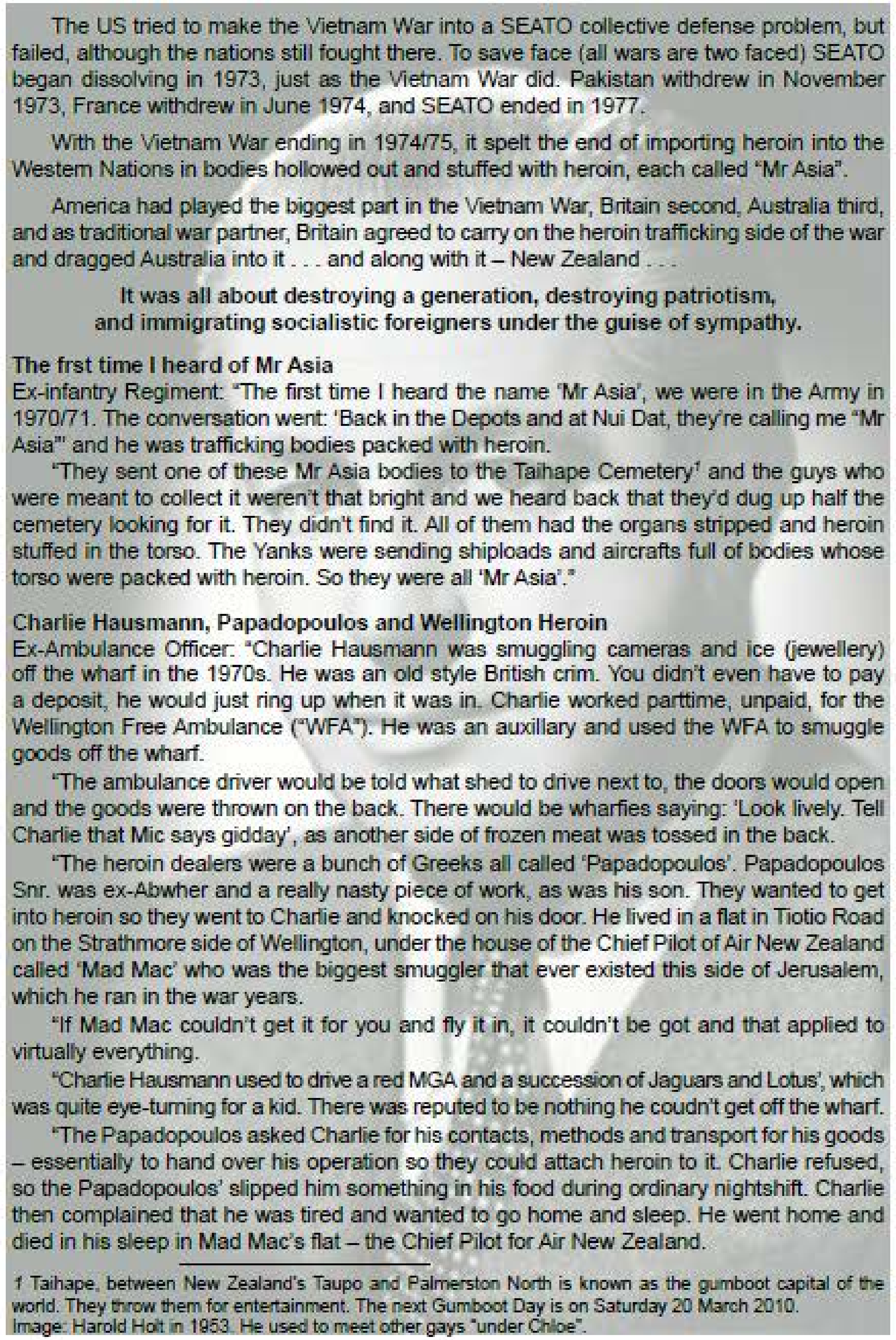

The US tried to make the Vietnam War into a SEATO collective defense problem, but failed, although the nations still fought there. To save face (all wars are two faced) SEATO began dissolving in 1973, just as the Vietnam War did. Pakistan withdrew in November 1973, France withdrew in June 1974, and SEATO ended in 1977.

With the Vietnam War ending in 1974/75, it spelt the end of importing heroin into the Western Nations in bodies hollowed out and stuffed with heroin, each called "Mr Asia".

America had played the biggest part in the Vietnam War, Britain second, Australia third, and as traditional war partner, Britain agreed to carry on the heroin trafficking side of the war and dragged Australia into it . . . and along with it – New Zealand . . .

It was all about destroying a generation, destroying patriotism, and immigrating socialistic foreigners under the guise of sympathy.

The frst time I heard of Mr Asia

Ex-infantry Regiment: "The first time I heard the name 'Mr Asia', we were in the Army in 1970/71. The conversation went: 'Back in the Depots and at Nui Dat, they're calling me "Mr Asia"' and he was trafficking bodies packed with heroin.

"They sent one of these Mr Asia bodies to the Taihape Cemetery[1] and the guys who were meant to collect it weren't that bright and we heard back that they'd dug up half the cemetery looking for it. They didn't find it. All of them had the organs stripped and heroin stuffed in the torso. The Yanks were sending shiploads and aircrafts full of bodies whose torso were packed with heroin. So they were all 'Mr Asia'."

Charlie Hausmann, Papadopoulos and Wellington Heroin

Ex-Ambulance Officer: "Charlie Hausmann was smuggling cameras and ice (jewellery) off the wharf in the 1970s. He was an old style British crim. You didn't even have to pay a deposit, he would just ring up when it was in. Charlie worked parttime, unpaid, for the Wellington Free Ambulance ("WFA"). He was an auxillary and used the WFA to smuggle goods off the wharf.

"The ambulance driver would be told what shed to drive next to, the doors would open and the goods were thrown on the back. There would be wharfies saying: 'Look lively. Tell Charlie that Mic says gidday', as another side of frozen meat was tossed in the back.

"The heroin dealers were a bunch of Greeks all called 'Papadopoulos'. Papadopoulos Snr. was ex-Abwher and a really nasty piece of work, as was his son. They wanted to get into heroin so they went to Charlie and knocked on his door. He lived in a flat in Tiotio Road on the Strathmore side of Wellington, under the house of the Chief Pilot of Air New Zealand called 'Mad Mac' who was the biggest smuggler that ever existed this side of Jerusalem, which he ran in the war years.

"If Mad Mac couldn't get it for you and fly it in, it couldn't be got and that applied to virtually everything.

"Charlie Hausmann used to drive a red MGA and a succession of Jaguars and Lotus', which was quite eye-turning for a kid. There was reputed to be nothing he coudn't get off the wharf.

"The Papadopoulos asked Charlie for his contacts, methods and transport for his goods – essentially to hand over his operation so they could attach heroin to it. Charlie refused, so the Papadopoulos' slipped him something in his food during ordinary nightshift. Charlie then complained that he was tired and wanted to go home and sleep. He went home and died in his sleep in Mad Mac's flat – the Chief Pilot for Air New Zealand.

---

[1] Taihape, between New Zealand's Taupo and Palmerston North is known as the gumboot capital of the world. They throw them for entertainment. The next Gumboot Day is on Saturday 20 March 2010.

Image: Harold Holt in 1953. He used to meet other gays "under Chloe".

"There was a big funeral for him in Cambridge Terrace, crying women gallore, with every emergency officer in Welington, plus depressed wharfies. There were notes of condolences from the commissioners of Fire, Police and Ambulance all regretting Charlie's passing and saying what amazing work he had done.

"The Papadopoulos family then took over Charlie's operation. Papadopoulos was an Armenian Greek so he was a special low-life and even the Greeks disowned him. Anyone with any scrupples didn't want a bar of hard drugs, porn and children which the Greeks specialise in, and most of the old-timers took the opportunity to get out.

"Papadopoulos Jnr. was eventually strangled by a cop after he'd swallowed a drug packet during a chase and died. The cop believed Papadopoulos was in possession of drugs, but the question on everybody's mind was 'how did he know unless he'd worked intimately with him in the past and had a falling out' . . . then from 1974 heroin fell down on Wellington's wharves like Noah's flood."

The New Mr Asia

In search of another Mr Asia, they found a bunch of petty criminals from the colonies and trained them up.

The leader was to be the police narc amongst those criminals, and that was to be Terry Clark, who ran from shoplifting and shooting cats in Gisborne to being a narc, then working with and sharing his business with the lawyers who protected him. From this base, Terry Clark became an international drugs and arms dealer with all the protection of MI-6.

By the end of it, prominent business people, police, lawyers, cabinet ministers, Governor-Generals, chiefs fo staff, and the Prime Minister were also in on it, as was half of New Zealand. It pretty much goes like this: 'If you meet anyone interesting in New Zealand who is now over 55 (b. b. 1954), they were either in on it, or knew someone who was in on it'.

Even school kids as young as nine were being trained up as drug dealers from 1969. Solo-mums who worked in the media were a favourite supplier. Under feminism, the media was rapidly becoming a Medea cult, and dealing drugs to children went right to the top of broadcasting, then spread out.

Terry Clark, Marty Johnstone and Greg Ollard were in and out of Wi Tako prison and became the new heroin traffickers, with full CIA and MI-6 support.

Terry Clark

Terrance John Clark (1944–83?) better known as Terry Clark (and later as Alexander Sinclair) was a Gisborne Boys High School old boy – a weedy character with chilling eyes well into shoplifting and shooting cats, but was also fit, an above-average swimmer, rugby player and footballer."[2]

His father, Leo, gave driving lessons by day, worked the pie cart from six to late every night and was a foundation member of Waikanae Surf Life Saving Club in the weekends – so not a lot of contact there.

Terry was a skinny Gisborne teenager who wore pointy winklepicker boots, greasy black stovepipe pants, a real spiv, but still a rogue. He started off as a small time thief in Gisborne making the dock and the newspapers. By the time he was 18, he'd had been picked up for stealing a few times and became a regular in the court. At some stage he moved to Hawke's Bay, where in 1971 he was jailed for five years after being convicted of burglary and five charges of receiving stolen property.

His defence lawyer portrayed him as a bumbling criminal who tried to blow up a safe at the Hawke's Bay Co-op in Waipawa, but forgot to attach the detonator for the industrial cordite fuse, and this prevented him from blowing himself up . . . then added: "He was an amateur in the profession of crime who clearly had an unstable personality and matrimonial problems".

---

[2] *The Gisborne Herald*, 'Mr Asia' case revisited, Marianne Gillingham, 4 March 2009.

Terry Clark had 23 aliases – Paddy Clark, Terry Sinclair, Alexander Sinclair, Tony Bennetti, Terrance John Clark, Terrance James Sinclair, Alexander James, "Mr Asia", "Mr Big", joined forces with Australia's Robert (Bob) Trimbole to become the 'Brothers at Arms' of the Australasian underworld. They formed close family associations, imported heroin into New Zealand, Australia, and the UK in the 1970s, and together they controlled organised crime in Australia and New Zealand.[3]

Terry Clark
looking very much like a Police Agent/Narc.

Terry Clark travelled to the Golden Triangle and dealt directly with Khun Sa – "The King Of Opium" which earnt him the name "Mr Asia".

He was the organisational (not financial) head of New Zealand's drug syndicate and was New Zealand's biggest heroin trafficker.

The financial heads were lawyers and child pornsters in Auckland, New Zealand.

By the time Terry Clark was 30, he ruled a multi-million-dollar drug syndicate operating in Australia, New Zealand, Southeast Asia and Britain, and had been credited with at least 27 murders. Terry Clark was a compromised bisexual who fronted as a tough guy – the world's full of them.

Sally Raynel, James K. Baxter, Mandrax, Norma Fleet – the Heroin-Junkie Prostitute, the Mayor of Auckland and the Head of the Drug Squad

Clark was well known for his womanising despite his average appearance and reputation for extreme violence. Terry Clark (20) married (1964–73) his childhood sweetheart, telephonist Sally Raynell, and had three children together. They divorced in the second year of sentence and she died of a drug overdose in September 1977.

Clark then entered into a relationship with heroin addict Norma Fleet – with Intelligence rumours they married. Norma Fleet then 'died in Tauranga under mysterious circumstances' – that is, with a needle in her arm containing pure uncut heroin, and Terry Clark having injected it. This was three weeks after his ex-wife had died the same way.

Clark then married (1974) Maria Muhary and had his fourth child with her in 1977. They married in the prison chapel. His bestman was fellow prisoner, Errol Hicksman.

Clark also had affairs with his female (heroin) couriers –Allison Dine (later disappeared by Intelligence,) and with his female legal courier Karen Soich, and with his female financial courier Karen Soich, and with his female intelligence courier Karen Soich.

Terry Clark had an ongoing turbulent affair with Karen Soich LLB who worked under Peter Williams, later Peter Williams Queens Counsel – who was so closely involved as to be involved. His partners, Eb Leary and Billy Boyd were both disbarred for it.

Norma Fleet was also a friend of James K. Baxter who ran the commune Jerusalem up the Wanganui River, where she visited. Fleet and Baxter also lived in Boyle Crescent, in Grafton, Auckland – a famous junkie pad. It was only Baxter and Fleet who did anything there. The rest were Junkies.

---

[3] Wikipedia, Terry Clark.

Norma gathered food and actually made a meal . . . soup et cetera. She was an outstanding character when Auckland was full of characters.

Mayor of Auckland Sir Dove Myer Robinson was known as 'Cunnilingus Rob'. He was a short half-pint Jew who proposed to every woman who walked into his office in order to have sex with them. He also had a habit of going down on them in his office. Five or six women successfully sued "Mayor Robbie" for breach of promise after having sex with him, and not tying the knot. Norma Fleet was one of those who sued and she got $6,000 out of it.

Norma Fleet was part-Maori and part of the family that owned Mercury Island before it was taken off them by Michael Faye. He now has the largest machine gun collection in the Southern Hemisphere.

Norma worked as a part-time prostitute and used abortions as a contraceptive. She met a husband-and-wife doctor team that specialised in Family Planning in inner city Auckland and they employed her for ménage à trois. They paid her in Mandrax and she took them back to Boyle Crescent in Grafton and supplied the junkies there.

Statue in Aotea Square of Cunnilingus Rob
a.k.a. Sir Dove Myer Robinson
Mayor of Auckland (1959–65, 1968–80).
The Jews believe cunnilingus extends their life.

Mandrax was banned in America and after four years, all the outlawed and old stock was bought up by New Zealand drug agencies. Mandrax or 'Mandies' were aphrodisiacs, pink, and given out by doctors like lollies to depressed housewives.

The doctors and Mandrax were responsible for prolonging untold marriages and destroying many others. Mandrax is now only prescribes in psychiatric situations and those on Mandrax appear to walk as if their feet aren't touching the ground.

Brian Stewart was a policeman with a background in the Air Force. He rose to Detective Inspector and became head of the Drug Squad. He was married, but preferred the company of others to his wife, including the company of the part-time prostitute, heroin junkie, and suing shagger of the Jewish Mayor of Auckland – Norma Fleet.

As Detective Inspector and head of the Drug Squad, Brian Stewart was required to go on overseas junkets, to international drug conferences. He noticed others were taking their wives, and he was allowed to take his, so he took Norma Fleet and passed her off as his wife.

Brian Stewart had a moustache, dressed well, followed his cock, and didn't terrorise the junkies. One of the things they were taught in the overseas junkets was that frightening a junkie can kill them. He wasn't a thug – not a bad fulla. He had a farm in Tuakau and died there in 2008.

Norma Fleet (Mrs Clark?) died in 1977 of an intentional pure heroin overdose injected by boyfriend/husband? Terry Clark. The police agent and narc was already a murderer.

Buddah Sticks, Paspalum Grass and Rat Poison

Terry Clark was originally a police narc from Gisborne – and when the narcs realise the cops are bent, there is nothing to stop them. Equally, when the drug dealers realise they're supplying lawyers, there is no stopping them. And when Intelligence realise their child drug dealing protégé's are dealing to lawyers and judges, there's no stopping their counter-intelligence.

So when a narc begins supplying bent cops and lawyers, he takes this as free reign over the drug markets and begins trafficking with all the confidence of:

'a government department avoiding the import licence,
but dictating what next years quota will be'.

Christopher Martin 'Marty' Johnstone (1951–79) was born on the North Shore of Auckland and worked in his parent's dairy in Devonport as a teenager. He left Takapuna Grammar after the fifth form and worked as a farmhand. A dedicated follower of fashion, he got a job at Collar 'n' Cuff menswear in Queen St where he sold drugs on a small scale. He then worked as a salesman at his father's Esquire Menswear store in Takapuna. He did well and was also part of the stable of New Zealand's first male model agency (with Denis M., an innocent). But the money wasn't good enough for the budding playboy and he took to committing burglary on the side – whatever he could carry – and sold his stash in pubs. "Esquire" became his handle, then his codename in "The Organisation".[4]

While inside Wi Tako prison (now Rimutaka prison) Terry Clark met Greg Ollard who was also jailed for theft. Ollard had a big main of hair and used to play league at Ellerslie (with Peter Corrigan, an innocent). Ollard had friends on the Auckland waterfront and when Terry Clark got out in 1974, he met Marty Johnstone who had met a ship steward, who brought in thai marijuana – Buddha Sticks – from South East Asia, and threw them into the harbour. Johnstone used a speedboat to retrieve the sacks. Clark bought the cannabis off Johnstone and had 13-year-old kids rolling bullets in Mt. Albert. Clark, Ollard and Johnstone then began importing boatloads of cannabis and supplying together – so a crime syndicate was born.

Terry Clark had been bringing in Buddah Sticks, 20,000 at a time. They were the most amazing weed ever smoked. The ends were nipped off, then they were sold again for $12–$15. They turned a lot of people onto marijuana and gave rise to local dope growing, which eventually improved on the strength, trip direction, and much later, cough reduction.

This worked for a while, but Johnstone attracted police attention by living beyond his means – as a menswear salesman and model.

When the police were tipped off about the ship steward dropping sacks of Buddah Sticks into Auckland's Waitemata Habour, police divers actually got there first. This caused a gap in the market and some of the investors then came up a little short, so they invented a new form of Buddah Stick – 'the Placebo'.

The investors got paspalum grass, dried it, got old discarded washtubs which were everywhere, filled them with rat poison (blood thinner) then wrapped the dried paspalum around a chop stick, soaked it in the rat poison overnight, hung them out to dry overnight in the standard laundry fashion, cut them up, weighed every 20 or so, wrapped them in tinfoil and sold them as Buddah Sticks to people like Barbara Allpress, sixth on the list of 'Media Women'.

Barbara Allpress lived at 13 Onewa Road (now 1/11 Onewa Rd), worked in radio, and was generally employed under the Minister of Broadcasting Roger Douglas (1972–75). Roger was a paedophile who liked his children drugged. He was later knighted. Barbara gave the Rat Poison Buddah Sticks to 12-year-old school kids from Northcote Intermediate as joints, who then couldn't ride their pushbikes home. Barbara Allpress was trying to turn children into drug dealers and in some instances she succeeded. The kids whose eyes swelled up like golfballs and I couldn't ride my pushbike home were not considered to have enough street cred . . . Her ex-husband now advertises retirement funds on TV.

At least some of these child drug dealers began supplying lawyers – a brilliant move as this provided protection for the drug dealers throughout their life – and those lawyers (now compromised) were then promoted up the scale of creeps to become leading New Zealand QCs and heads of judicial departments (and judges in Australia) in the ongoing cycle of 'the worst people reaching the top positions' where they become embedded in a protection racket of government crimes

. . . and it is government crimes we are seeing here today . . .

Due to the shortage of the real stuff, and the stupidity of ignorance, but mainly the desire to be like rock stars, the 'Rat Poison Paspalum Grass' sold like hotcakes – or Buddah Sticks – and so much money was made, they bought the motel they were making it at.

Still, they're respectable now, so it's all kosher under the Embedded Crimes Act.

MI-6 gives the Colonies a Criminal Lifeline

With this Buddah Stick water drop trading loop closed, Terry Clark, Marty Johnstone, and Greg Ollard moved to cocaine and heroin.

After a large shipment of heroin was uncovered in Auckland, Clark escaped to Australia, but was picked up in a marijuana bust and deported back to New Zealand to face trial. Miraculously, he was acquitted.

Peter Williams represented Terry Clark in Auckland on some charges in the early days and it was later rumoured on the street, amongst police, and amongst lawyers, that Terry Clark had spent NZ$240,000 buying witnesses. To cover for this, Clark blamed winning the case on Peter Williams . . . Peter Williams' loves a good blame.

Peter Williams is very tight with money and will ask around annoying everyone to the point of frustration, until he gets almost a complete picture, at almost no cost. He found that MI-6 and the CIA had many compromised people working in the DSIR. So for the $10,000 bribe to a DSIR technician, it was the cheapest method of protecting his client.

So the DSIR presented DNA evidence and the judge correctly pointed out that the DNA evidence was manufactured by the DSIR. So the case was thrown out.

Peter Williams then bragged that he had got Terry Clark off. He also got to keep around $200,000. The vicious drug dealing police narc Terry Clark also skited: "Peter Williams is the best".

Ex-NZ Police Sergeant, May 2009: "Even the police knew that Terry Clark's money was in the office of Peter Williams, in the safe. Williams wasn't rich before, but he was rich after."

Peter Williams had got a taste of the money – he always wanted to hang out with the big boys. From here on in, the Peter Williams/ Terry Clark lawyer-client relationship began to increasingly maintain all the appearances of a business partnership. It was to become a family operation which defines both a 'Gang' and a 'Mafia'.

As further distraction away from Terry Clark, Pat Booth dubbed Marty Johnstone "Mr Asia" in a series of articles in the *Auckland Star* in August 1978,[5] but the mantle is now generally attributed to Terry Clark.

"Mr Asia" became the name of many heroin traffickers, dead and alive – first in body bags returned from the American heroin wars (Vietnam), then as Marty Johnstone, then as Terry Clark, Terry Sinclair, Terence Alexander Sinclair . . .

---

[4] 'Sex, drugs and murder, The truth about Mr Asia', Kerry Williamson, *The Dominion Post*, 2 March 2009.

[5] The daily *Auckland Star* was originally published as the *Evening Star* (24 March 1870–7 March 1879); *Auckland Evening Star* (8 March 1879–12 April 1887); *Auckland Star* (12 April 1887–16 August 1991). After a merger of the *Sunday Star* and *Dominion Sunday Times*, part of its name endures in *The Sunday Star-Times* (1994–) and the *Sunday Star* (Sunday's only).

Graeme 'Smith' Friedlander

Graeme Friedlander was a sleezy looking mongrel who wanted to import kiddy porn, so he went to his immigrant grandfather and asked him: "Can I import kiddy porn?", and his grandfather replied, "Only if you change your second name", so Graeme Friedlander went by the alias 'Graeme Smith', and was known as 'Smith' around town.

Graeme 'Smith' Friedlander set up a disco nightclub called 'Pips International' in Mercury Lane in the mid-70s (just off K'Rd). The disco jockey's (now DJs) sat behind smokey perspex about four foot high and played their psychedelic music. The builders were paid out of a suitcase of $20 bills.

K'Rd in Auckland central is a longstanding zone of prostitutes, drugs and transvestites. Pips International was where all the clans, money and drugs were supposed to meet, but someone had a grudge and Pips got set fire to and bombed within six months.

Graeme 'Smith' Friedlander and Peter Williams knew each other. Those who invested money in the Mr Asia heroin trafficking were headed by 'Smith', but they still needed legal representation.

The Heroin Trafficking Lawyering Mafia Gang

Peter Williams (LLB), **Karen Soich** (LLB), Terry Clark (H), Eb Leary (LLB), **John Leary** (B.Arch)

On the advice of Peter Williams, Terry Clark took on a respectable roll, changed his name to Terence Alexander Sinclair and bought two adjacent properties at Okiato Point, Opua, in the Bay of Islands (800 metres NW of the car ferry), another in Fiji, and a white Jaguar XJS two door coupé with the boatloads of money he now had.

Peter Williams still goes to Fiji, but now deals with the Mossad more than MI-6.

Reasonably ugly, Clark's status as a thief, police narc, drug dealer and flashy lifestyler meant he was a magnet to some women – at least two of whom died of drug overdoses in mysterious circumstances, as did his female drug couriers whenever he feared they would talk.

Despite this status, Terry Clark formed a relationship with Peter Williams' junior lawyer,– Karen Soich. My pick is that cold-hearted Peter Williams was using her to keep an eye on his new investment – Terence Alexander Sinclair. Terry Clark had begun a turbulent affair with Karen Soich (LLB) who was assigned to Terry Clark/ Mr Asia to ensure the money was paid back to the investors, and how much. For this she was implicated by the courts.

"Police told of driving to Paihia and using a kayak to land secretly in front of the opulent Opua waterfront mansion that Clark was building. There, they had watched and heard Clark and Auckland lawyer Karen Soich making love."[6]

Undercover: "Karen Soich is a Dally. The thing with Dally girls is that they stick to guys that are utter dog shit. They're like Maori sheilas. They don't feel alive, sexually, until they've been attemptedly murdered at least two or three times in an evening. You can grab them by the hair and bash all their teeth out and they'll still come back and suck your dick. But if you treat them like a lady, they'll walk all over you and kick your guts into the snow."

"I think Williams knew this when he sent Karen on assignment with Terry Clark – a known murderer, wife beater, drunk, drugged and wasted. Still, the money was more important."

MICK P^2: "Then Peter Williams' close friend and legal partner, Eb Leary (later disbarred in 1987), well his brother John Leary was an architect – a total homo. He was a screaming faggot, nothing closet about him. When John Leary was asked by the *Sydney Morning Herald* if he designed Terry Clark's house, he replied snottily: 'I don't talk to the gutter press'."

John Leary had designed Terry Clark's waterfront mansion in Opua, in the Bay of Islands. It was on a point, on the saddle of a bluff, and stuck out like dogs balls. It was a mansion amongst shacks. That the police didn't notice it, meant that the police were in on it.

That Williams then became a Queen's Counsel on 6 April 1987 stinks of collusion amongst the ranks of knighthoods – 'paedophilia, murder and file theft'.

If we expand that into M-PAD . . . it's 'Money – Paedophilia, Arms & Drugs'.

Peter Williams could not be any closer to the game without being openly in the game.

The John Leary designed Terry Clark masion came complete with a walk-in Champagne fridge with a slide behind that went through a tunnel, down to the boatshed where there was a speed boat and a remote for the boatshed doors. So it was a hidden rapid escape when necessary.[7]

I don't recall either Peter Williams or Eb Leary offering up this information in any of the hearings (Champagne fridge slide to boatshed, designed by John Leary), nor how closely involved they were with Terry Clark/ Mr Asia. Certainly representing him, as Peter Williams and Eb Leary did, and being one step removed from his girlfriend and architect, as well as laundering the drug money, and getting disbarred for it – that's close enough to warrant suspicion, if not confirmation that a partnership was in place – a gang, if not a mafia.

When three or more people are involved in criminal activity,
that's the definition of a 'Gang'.

It appears that Peter Williams was in charge of protecting the investor's money.

---

[6] *Listener*, David Lomas, 'The Fall of Mr Asia', 23–29 October 2004, Vol 196 No 3363.

[7] One of the kids who visited, while Terry Clark owned it, became an All Black captain Sean Fitzpatrick. Unrelated, some of my friends from 1981, their parents bought it from Terry Clark's estate.

Permanently Sanitised Mr Asia – the Murders

Spymaster: "Police auctioneer Paul Williams had an inability to refuse cash for firearms. Mr Asia's Luger was provided by Paul Williams. He also is said to have supplied Dean (Hugh Tekahu William) Wickliffe with the weapon for the killing of a Wellington jeweller in the early '70s.

"Police auctioneer Paul Williams' took the Ratline out from New Zealand to Perth (by plane) to avoid questions over sex abuse of his daughter after she was visited in hospital by Intelligence.

"Mr Asia used to talk about 'Permanently Sanitising' and 'rendering harmless' and many bodies were reputed to have ended up under the Sydney Airport runway extension in Mascot, eight kilometres from Sydney's CBD. It was known as the 'Mascot Runway Extension'.

"The early couriers were taken out into the bush and shot, but the 'Victoria Painter's and Dockers Union' [of which James 'Jim' Frederick 'Steve' Bazley was a member and its enforcer, with four bullet wounds to prove it] had a contract on the graders at Mascot, so they were inclined to use the Mascot Runway Extension for permanent burial. Apparently it used to tickle the fantasy of Mr Asia that his new couriers took off over the top of the old ones."

"Two more couriers, Greg Ollard and Julie Thielman, vanished after word reached the gang the couple were being tailed by police. They were addicts and could not be trusted to stay silent. Police were sure their bodies lay beneath the runway at Sydney Airport."[8]

Underbelly: The Mr Asia Story: Mr Asia in the process of murdering Greg Ollard . . .

A similar financial justice was delivered to Marty Johnstone thereby removing his threat to the financial empire back in NZ from where the order came . . . so the financial syndicate of New Zealand businessmen, lawyers and child pornsters continued to make their profits unencumbered.

James Frederick Bazley was married to Lillian Bazley at the time. She ended up being Margaret Bazley and running the CIA's Deep Sleep Experiment which destroyed the lives of, or killed, 2,200 people in New Zealand . . . so she was made Dame Margaret Bazley and organised the Auckland SuperCity in 2009 which is a CIA takeover of Auckland. It is a NZ$7 billion infrastructure theft – still in progress in 2010.

Undercover: "In the NSW Police, the D's used to go on fishing trips with their drug dealers and narcs. Anybody who wasn't on good terms would 'go down on a cold one' – Police jargon for fell over the side tied to a fridge. There was usually a 30-second lull while the rope played out.

---

[8] 'The Killing of Mr Asia', Special Report by Brian Ellis & Peter Richardson, Lancashire Evening Post.

"The New Zealand Police borrowed the idea and had meetings on boats in the Hauraki Gulf – and called them 'fishing trips'. If anyone wasn't playing the game, they were thrown overboard attached to a rope, attached to a fridge. It always took a while to lift the fridge up and throw it overboard. Meanwhile the guy was panicking in the water saying: 'Look, guys, I can explain everything', and the saying was: 'He went down with a cold one'."

The lawyer Brian Alexander eventually went down with a cold one, but with a twist. He was thrown overboard by corrupt Aussie cops handcuffed to the launch barbie – barbeque to those of you in the Northern Hemisphere.

Undercover: "And in Ray Church's murder, the Australian police took him upstairs to what he thought was the Judge's Chambers – and this would have been a logical point in the case for this to happen – he thought that the judge was quietly going to tell him that the charge had been dropped, but instead the police took him up to rendezvous with his killer. And the proof of that was the two police officers stretched him out to provide the perfect torso kill shots, and also to protect their own uniforms.

"Uniformed police that are bribed are called in criminal parlance 'Sugar Bags' and they live in absolute fear of getting their uniforms bloodied or soiled. And the bribe is usually paid to Ds. The Ds handle the bribe, split it up, and pay it out to everybody, including uniform. And a D has always got an excuse of being in a place of ill repute associating with crooks because he says 'I had to be there with them in order to combat their illegal acts' – and the public believes it."

The Organisation – Heroin Trafficking, Money Laundering, Sex, and Contract Killing

It wasn't too hard getting back in and out of Australia with the heroin, as Clark said: "New South Wales police are the best money can buy."

This was backed up by Justice Donald Stewart speaking of the Clark gang, the NSW police, and other corrupt honourables involved: "The Australian cops turned a blind eye to drug dealing and murder. The whole lot could be bought for the price of a hamburger.

"[The Organisation] were all rooting each other behind each other's back . . . constantly riddled with gonorrhoea . . . It was all going round in a circle. One would get the clap, then the other, then they would give it back to each other. There was a crooked doctor down the road here (Kings Cross) who almost made his living out of them."

The heroin traffickers included Terry Clark, Marty Johnstone, Greg Ollard, Allison Dine, Kay Reynolds, Caroline Calder, Greg Ollard, Julie Thelman, 'Pommy' Harry Lewis, Doug and Isobel Wilson, Errol Hincksman, and others. They were either killed, jailed or disappeared. Some managed to scarper.

Others, like Peter Williams, Eb Leary, Billy Boyd and Graeme Friedlander were principally involved in the legal and financial side, although some did deal the drugs, and transport the cannabis. All of these people handled the heroin money.

Allison Dine, Kay Reynolds and Caroline Calder brought heroin from Thailand via Fiji into New Zealand, Melbourne, Brisbane, Sydney and Perth. They posed as well-dressed holiday makers and met in ritzy hotels like the Singapore Hilton and were paid thousands each trip.[9]

Marty Johnstone lived in a two-storey luxury apartment in Singapore with his girlfriend. He travelled First Class, was a member of Pan Am's Lifetime Clipper Club, and sat in on Concorde's inaugural Singapore-to-London flight just for the hell of it. He was the Singapore-based linchpin of the Mr Asia deadly crime syndicate.

---

[9] 'Sex, drugs and murder, The truth about Mr Asia', Kerry Williamson, *The Dominion Post*, 2 March 2009.

A Sydney dress designer disappeared on Christmas Eve 1975, her body tied to a ship's anchor and thrown into Sydney Harbour. She had been one of the syndicate's glamorous drug mules.

Greg Ollard, one-time close associate of both Johnstone and Clark, disappeared with his girlfriend Julie Thielman. The couple were working as couriers but had acquired a healthy taste for the drugs they were running. They were seen as liabilities and snuffed out. For a time it was rumoured they were buried beneath a runway at Sydney Airport, but their bodies were eventually found in 1982 riddled with bullets . . . Clark was later pegged for their murders, shooting both Ollard and Thielman in the head.

'Pommy' Harry Lewis was found handless in a shallow grave at Port Macquarie, NSW in March 1979. He . . . had left New Zealand to set up a syndicate branch for [competition] Johnstone in Australia. He was soon entrenched in The Organisation, running drugs for Clark and was busted for possessing cannabis sticks but skipped bail shortly after. He was last seen alive in the Sydney Hilton Hotel, and was killed because his bosses thought he'd sung to police.

"Doug Wilson and Terry Clark were both Auckland Grammar School old boys. Doug had distributed cannabis for Clark in New Zealand. After the deaths of Ollard and Thielman, Doug and Isobel Wilson took over running Sydney for The Organisation. While on holiday in Brisbane in March 1979, they were picked up for trafficking along with others involved. They named names, fingered killers, said that Terry had threatened to kill Doug Wilson and unravelled the drug syndicate to . . . narcotics agents at the Queensland police . . . who got word the Wilsons had talked . . ."[10]

Army Intel.: "Doug Wilson named Terry Clark as the murderer of Harry Lewis on Police tape. The 'Underbelly' programme showed Terry Clark paid $250,000 for the tape, but the police had patched Clark through and he was listening to it live. Clark then had them murdered."

The couple were lured from Sydney to Melbourne and killed on 12/13 April 1979, buried in a shallow grave at Rye, Victoria, and found 5 days later. Their dog survived. The Wilson's weren't given protective custody, and the police had now lost two key witnesses within The Organisation. That kept their ticket rolling in the form of sandwiches wrapped in brown paper stacked with money as lunchtime bribes.

Steve Bazley got the wrap (9 years) – Dame Margaret Bazley's husband.

Murray 'Scoop' Williams as Mr X: "I knew Lewis very well. Clark told me about killing some other people but I just didn't believe him. I'd done time with some pretty heavy guys, I'd been around some pretty heavy boys, and Clark didn't faze me too much. But as it turned out, everything he told me was correct . . .

"Terry Clark had no qualms about killing. In fact, he had a taste for it. Clark was a nasty individual . . . He'd killed people over there (New Zealand) before he came over here (Australia). Maybe two or three. I can put him down to about a dozen. They get a taste of it, guys like that. I'd met a few multiple killers over the years – they've got a pattern to them and he was the same as them . . . Clark was definitely responsible for [Pommy Harry] Lewis' death."

I Was There: "Richard MacDonald, a.k.a. Maori Mac (d. 1990) used to give me all the bully on it. They're from Boothill in Orakei, so don't talk too loudly because they're more or less your neighbours."

"Peter Fulcher – a kingpin in the Mr Asia syndicate – imported and distributed heroin. He was jailed for heroin trafficking in 1980, then extradited to New Zealand, where fresh heroin importing charges were laid (another 14 years). Released, Fulcher was convicted again, for cultivating cannabis. In 2006, Fulcher was up on more drugs charges, and admitted to stealing a dead child's identity to obtain a passport.

Safe Breaker: "All the crims knew each other, and we all knew where the deals were made, so we went there and, combined, we all knew what was going on and who did what. Paddy [Terry] Sinclair was a vicious little cunt, but not one of the cold-blooded killers.

"From all the feedback I was getting at the time, Peter Fulcher did 90 % of the murders. He even knocked over his mates, Doug and Isobel Wilson. He's still around Auckland. None of the locals at the time believe Paddy Clark did any of them . . . Peter Fulcher was running a car sales yard on Great North Road."[11]

Local financier Steve, Gladstone Road shops, Parnell, Auckland, 10 May 2009: "I've been watching the Mr Asia programme and I see Peter Fulcher walking around town and I can't understand why he isn't mentioned in the programme. Everyone knows he did the majority of the murders, around 27 or so."

Author: "That's 'cause the whole thing was an MI-6 operation. They protect their killers. It was run by lawyers who were protecting their syndicate's financial investment."

Steve: "[grunt]."

Underworld Golfer: "Jimmy Shepherd – the bagman known as 'Diamond Jim' – (from Motueka near Blenheim) would report to Terry Clark as to who was paying and who was not. Terry Clark would tell Peter Fulcher, 'Get the money or his heart' – one or the other, usually the later.

"Rumour in the criminal underworld has it that Peter Fulcher killed around forty (40). He spent 20 years in Long Bay prison in Sydney where he spent his time bodybuilding and always appeared on camera with his shirt off flexing his pecs. So he's still alive.

Well, he was sitting at the Cezanne café in Ponsonby in 2006 looking furtively around. He (69) sat next to me and didn't even recognise me. He had lost a lot of his muscle by then.

"Cezanne's is the closest café to Peter Williams' house – only 200 metres away."

"Peter Fulcher was nuts. David Lange was his lawyer for small criminal matters. Mind you, Lange was the lawyer for a lot of street crims. He was a bit of an idiot and kept forgetting to charge for his time. I believe Peter Fulcher had a brother, or some semi-close relative and they formed a close-knit killing unit together?""

Murray 'Scoop' Williams a.k.a. 'Mr X' releases false information to keep Peter Williams QC out of the picture, in exchange for leeked payments for Scoop, and anonimity for Peter Williams – that is Peter Williams is not mentioned, or if he is, he's mentioned as 'the best lawyer', as opposed to the head of 'The Organisation's financial syndicate'. Why? Because Murray 'Scoop' Williams has been on Rupert Murdoch's payroll for a long time – even going to prison for him. That's what he does.

Murray 'Scoop' Williams' role is to reluctantly distribute the distraction story from 'inside', where only those harmed are dead, and those who survive are praised or never mentioned.

---

[10] 'Sex, drugs and murder, The truth about Mr Asia', Kerry Williamson, *The Dominion Post*, paraphrased.

[11] I Was There: "Richard MacDonald's son, Greg McDonald, entered into a contract with the car sales yard Peter Fulcher was running on Great North Road. Peter Fulcher did a dirty on Greg MacDonald and Richard MacDonard and a colleague went up to the yard in the car. Richard turned around to his 15-year-old son and said: "It's like this Greg. I'm going to have to kill him to even the score card because this guy will kill if I make a half-arsed job of this. Is it worth it?. Greg replied: 'Well no it isn't really. I don't want you to do that for me Dad.'
"Richard MacDonald was a half-cast Maori. He shared a lot of cells with a lot of guys in show business like Johnny Whore (burglary) who didn't like his name and changed it to John Grenall. Whore was an inbred from the South Island and is still alive pretending to be an entertainer.
"Harry Miller was also inside for all sorts of cons. He had a dream to set up Ticketek in the 1970s and made good with Ticketek in Australasia. Whenever he brought his shows from Australia to New Zealand, the police would try and stop the show going ahead."

"With the killing of the Wilsons, the heat was turned up on the syndicate. Cops on both sides of the Tasman were watching Clark and his cronies closely at Okiato Point in Opua, Bay of Islands, where undercover drug cops pretended to fish while watching Mr Big's house."[12]

Clark figured – or his lawyer & partner Peter Williams decided for him – that it was time to split, and turned his attention to the burgeoning British market" with arms trafficking added.

The Australian police issued a warrant for Clark's arrest, but being an MI-6 operation, Clark got word beforehand and fled to the UK in 1978/79 and began running guns as well as drugs. Clark's business partner Bob Trimbole got away to neighbouring Ireland on a computer glitch (Yeah, Right!), and then to Spain where he died (Yeah, Right!) 36 days after Williams was made a Queen's Counsel (Je ne sais pas pourquoi).

The reason Terry Clark moved to England when things got hot was that the whole thing was an MI-6 operation. This gave him the confidence and self-assurance to deal with the British detectives, but when MI-6 is winding up an operation, they want every cent, all their players promoted, and no stone left unturned – that could turn up later – so key witnesses were killed, or swished with a new name and non-prosecution certificate.

Spymaster: "MI-6 has been intimately involved in the drug and child selling trade for hundreds of years. In WWI in the Middle East, they were known as 'The King's Yids'."

Murray 'Scoop' Williams a.k.a. Mr X: "Terry Clark joked: 'I couldn't even spend the interest on the money I'm making'."

Bob Trimbole and the Three Bobs

Bob Trimbole/ Bob Jones.

Robert Trimbole (19 March 1931–12 May 1987) was bankrupted in 1968 over $11,000. British Intelligence then ran Bob Trimbole and when the drug running got to hot, they got him to Ireland as escape.

Undercover & Army Intel.: "Bob Trimbole's nickname was 'Aussie Bob' and 'Bob Jones' – a copy of the New Zealand criminal who made his money in England sending out fraudulent accounts, came back to NZ, trafficked drugs – including heroin and methamphetamines – and bought himself a knighthood for NZ$500,000 in 1989 (Kt, Bach)" – then carried on with his paedophilia with purchased immunity.

Sir Bob Jones (1939–) cover was owning buildings from the profits ("property tycoon" "worth NZ$200 million in 2007") and starting a political party (New Zealand Party 1983–85) and sponsoring the New Zealand Ballet.

Undercover: "Bob Trimbole (MI-6 heroin trafficker) knew Bob Jones was as crooked as a dingo's hind leg, but his covers were respectable in 'smack city' – otherwise known as New Zealand, where a string of one horse dorps gather around a few big banks and casinos and big cities to constitute – by reason of their mutual dependence on smack and the police – one 'smack city'."

James Frederick Bazley
a.k.a. Jim Bazley/ Steve Bazley,
husband of
Dame Margaret 'Lillian' Bazley,
CIA agent & controller of every
NZ Government Department,
and Auckland.

Robert Jones investments
Bob Jones.

Terry Clark's heroin partner, Robert (Bob) Trimbole, was implicated in the murder of Griffith furniture salesman Donald Mackay – a well known (on TV) Aussie anti-drugs campaigner, with the Griffith district known as the 'Marijuana belt'. Despite his body never being found – it was made into mince pies – underworld hit-man James 'Jim' Frederick 'Steve' Bazley was convicted of the murder, and to this day, he claims "corrupt elements in NSW Police did it" – that would be the Commonwealth Police and/or Narcotics Bureau protecting the drug growers/ traffickers/ dealers.

Spymaster: "The reasons the Mafia are so good at disappearing bodies is that they always spread disinformation stories and they always do the most unheard of things to the bodies because the children of Mafia figures are brought into the dismemberment of the disappeared bodies at an early age, and it is made into virtually an occult happening with tones of religious procession overlying it. They get used to inflicting indignities on bodies, and with the cover of Omerta – the oath of silence – rendered also in a semi-religious way, it becomes a binding process, and that's what makes the Mafia so deadly. If you always regard Italians with great suspicion and outright hostility, they will never be a danger to you. It is only when you become friendly and affectionate with them, that they'll stick you with a stilleto, and it's always at a christening, a wedding, or while they're swearing undying love for you."

Author: "Isn't that straight out of the movies".

Spymaster: No it's a criminal saying: 'Beware of Wops bearing gifts."[13]

If the Commonwealth Police and/or Narcotics Bureau murdered Donald MacKay, it was the British agent Robert Trimbole who bought them with bribes delivered in the same brown paper bag as the lunchtime sandwiches. The same method of hush money delivery was used amongst the New Zealand police, who took their corruption lead from the Australians, especially the NSW and Victoria police.They even went over for "Police Training". New Zealand taxpayers paid for this training, as for all aspects and methods of their own demise.

---

[12] 'Sex, drugs and murder, The truth about Mr Asia', Kerry Williamson, *The Dominion Post*, paraphrased.

[13] Spymaster: "Italians are scared of Protestant Catholics. Most of the Irish-Italian Catholics out here (NZ) have come from a very small part of Londonderry called 'The Holy Land'. Because they have ties by religion to Italians, they mix with them, whereas the Protestants are feared because of their religion, and when a Protestant Irishman loses his temper, he will go through fifty Ities to prove his point and each time go for the doctor [the kill shot] and the Italians are scared out of all proportion of the size, or the number of Protestant Catholics . . . I've seen examples of this happen in front of me."

Don Corelone: "All politicans bear gifts, therefore all politicans are Wops.
So beware of politicians offering you something. Always it turns out to be a wop,
then the next politican, then the next wop, until there is nothing left to give.
That is why we take. Then it's the politicians problem and he either works with us, or we ride him out."

Bob Trimbole was supposed to have got out of Australia by changing the date of his birth from 1931 to 1933 on his leaving declaration, thus causing a mismatch in the airport computer. This was when the screens were green and the letters and numbers were yellow, and there were no pictures (up to AT & XT computers).

Spymaster: "Once he was out, when the Aussie Government was requesting Trimboli, Ireland prevented his extradition to Australia saying he was 'too sick to travel'. So Ireland was controlled by MI-6 as usual."

Author: "I spoke to the 2-IC saying the IRA was at least 50 per cent MI-6 and he said: 'More like 80 per cent'."

Spymaster: "When Ireland started to feel the pressure, they used the excuse 'when the first arrest warrant is faulty, any further arrest warrants are denied'.

"Ireland got tired, so MI-6 swished Trimbole to Alicante in southeast Spain where he hid in Hotel Alicante, then died in Alicante hospital under the pseudonym Robert White/ Roberto Blanc. Between Barcelona and Gibralta, Alicante is renowned for harbouring criminals and laundering money, making Trimbole's death all the more questionable.

"Trimboli was a British agent, protected by 'British Imperial Note' – very much like a Papal Bull.

Author: "So the high-up British were running the heroin in the former colonies – kind of a retribution for 'Independence' in the form of World War Two, the Vietnam War & heroin, then as soon as the Vietnam War ended – they continued with the heroin.

"Since the British have a 500-year Naval Intelligence (Tavistock) connection with Ireland and Spain, Australia had little chance of extradition, bar giving up more of their desert for ever more dangerous nuclear tests, with 3,000 aboriginals already disappeared during one test.

"The Aussie Government had to draw the line some-where and they drew a farcical line at Bob Trimboli."

Spymaster: "Lying sacks of shit.

"That's why we call them arse-wipes . . .

"Perhaps that's why judges and QC's are into nappies and bondage."

Terry Clark and Bob Trimbole
in '**Underbelly: The Mr Asia Story**'.
Beginning on 4 March 2009, the screening created an unprecedented number of calls offering further information. It seems that everyone was in on it. Even Intelligence was in on the time it was screened.

Lawyers Blowing their Nose

Shared legal opinion is that Peter Williams got out of it by the skin of his teeth.

For Peter Williams to keep his nose clean, plus elevation to Queen's Counsel, he must have had Royal connections, and compromised Royal connections – either based on heroin trafficking (from the mid-1950s), or paedophilia (1954) – the rabbit suit.

What is all the more surprising is that Peter Williams started off his career as a car thief, complete with conviction. That he was even allowed to become a lawyer suggests that lawyers like to have criminals within their ranks.

Spymaster: "There were these parties thrown in the 1970s and 80s where the caviar was flown in from Australia and the Champagne was reasonably good. Sitting at the tables were cops and criminals together. Peter Williams headed one of these tables and appeared to be orchestrating the whole thing. This was before he became a Queen's Counsel in 1987."

Williams distanced himself only far enough to be able to argue, with ongoing processional distraction and oblique non sequiturs, that he was representing his drug traffickers and murderers in court and was not one of their financiers. 'Representing the Financial Syndicate of Mr Asia' is how it all turned out.

The British legal system knew how closely Peter Williams was involved, so he made no attempt to represent there.

What Peter Williams did do was place bribes in cars and parks throughtout London to influence the charges against his lawyer Karen Soich and his client Terry Clark.

This only confirmed to the British courts that Peter Williams was one of the Mr Asia Syndicate financiers.

Peter Williams' managed to keep his nose clean only to those who didn't snoop beyond the purposefuly confusing publicity, newspaper articles and books. For Peter Williams – in charge of the Mr Asia Financial Syndicate/ The Organisation – it was still clean and profitable. For a car thief, it was clean paws in equity.

Most of the other Aussie and New Zealand lawyers were tainted, including Peter Williams' partners. Billy Boyd (26) was struck off on 8 November 1985 for 12 years and sentenced to do jail time, although he didn't appear to do any, and was never charged with financing the subcontracting of the murders. He was not required to return the money, and after expenses he was still NZ$150,000 ahead, plus he was given a hotel.

The other legal fall guy, Eb Leary (c. 50), was convicted for laundering the drug money "not through the trust account", struck off on 15 April 1987, and disbarred for 19½ years. Eb was then reinstated with Peter Williams QC's pleas, then charged within months for laundering ecstacy money in late 2008.

Peter Williams – who seriously can't be trusted, not even by his friends – was created Queen's Counsel on 6 April 1987 – 9 days before Eb was disbarred. The influence for this QC was purchased through his heroin money. Peter Williams then made a councillor in the New Zealand Bar Association on 8 June 1989. So the New Zealand judiciary was totally crooked in the 1980s and there have been no plans or action for improvement.

Peter Williams QC is yet to be removed from the silk and struck off.

Peter Williams now owns a lot of property. His cut from the $240,000 DSIR/ witness bribes really kicked him off, as well as the £2 million the British mafia left him on his hotel bed in London on behalf of Terry Clark.

The Friedlanders' are now the largest owners of retail shops in central Auckland's surrounding suburbs – Parnell, Newmarket, Remuera, Ponsonby etc, all the expensive areas with unbelievably high rents.

How did all this come to Pass?

The heroin trafficking operation was an MI-6 operation, ultimately run by the Queen who had been trafficking heroin through Philips lightbulbs from the mid-1950s.

The heroin turned up in Waihi, then about four hours drive south of Auckland, and now about 1 hour). Here, housewives removed the heroin from the Philips flouroscent tubes, then the cardboard packaging was returned to Holland for improvement, but really it was to show how much heroin got through. Queen Juliana and Queen Elizabeth II were the major shareholders in Philips at the time.

The whole operation was backed up with a royal visit (23 December 1953–30 January 1954). Whether it was organising the operation, or checking the progress, you'll have to ask a Waihi grandma.

During the Royal Visit (Monday 4–Wednesday 6 January 1954) at Moose Lodge, Lake Rotoiti, Rotorua ("no official engagements") Prince Philip required sex with children. The children were given scopolamine and a rabbit suit had to be provided – tail at back, hole in front – thus a twin-tailed rabbit suit. The consequences of providing this rabbit suit would be immunity and elevation beyond all odds. The profile of a person who would supply the suit would be someone down the rabbit hole, desperate for a view from the hill, with promises of plenty of grass to eat.

Peter Williams and Eb Leary then sold a house in Waihi to Terry Clark on 27 June 1979 for 100 times what it was worth – simply by missing the dot before the ".00", as in "00" versus ".00". This was money laundering.

Billy Boyd witnessed the sale, and falsely added the letters "JP" (Justice of the Peace) to a witness signature on the Memorandum of Transfer.

On 3 October 1979, Terry Clark then sold the same Waihi house to D.I. John Rex Hughes D.I. Ian Hastings. Billy Boyd signed Terry Clark's name.

This was complicit cover from the lawyers and police for Terry Clark who was in England planning the murder of heroin competition Marty Johnstone.

Both of these charges were admitted to by Billy Boyd in Council of the Auckland District Law Society v. George William Stuart Boyd heard on 8 November 1985.

Peter Williams, Eb Leary and Billy Boyd were part of the Mr Asia heroin trafficking, money laundering and murder gang.

That Peter Williams wasn't struck off, charge, or killed gives credence to the rabbit theory.[14]

At the time of the transfer of the Waihi house from lawyers Williams and Leary to Police Detective Inspectors Hughes and Hastings – the order for Marty Johnstone's murder came from New Zealand, and Terry Clark financed it with an okay from London.

The finance for the subcontracting of this murder came through accounts Billy Boyd had access to the next day – on 4 October 1979.

Billy Boyd withdrew $25,000 from Terry Clark's account (Tony Bennetti, Messrs C and Partners) and paid $15,000 to Terry Clark's Death Account (Alexander James, D Building Account) and retained $10,000 for when the murder was completed.

Billy Boyd admitted to this, but not to 'holding the balance of $10,000, as this would have linked him to the murders.

---

[14] Even the mafia in Melbourne used to complain about him getting off scot-free.

The Council of the Auckland District Law Society covered for Billy Boyd on this and no criminal charges were laid. They sentenced him to 18 months, then quashed the time to six months, giving him time served, before any time was served, then sealed the file for 100 years, until 2083 and 2087, and indefinitely.

So that's justice for lawyers – which is no justice at all. It was a gang involved in murder and heroin trafficking and the New Zealand Judiciary was complicity involved. They were compromised and shamed.

Justice Speight heard the case. He was the SIS judge who shot a man's arm off. He then let the SIS steal the files. They're missing from 1980–92. (See Vol II, Murders: "Z", 'Physical and Financial Assassinations', pp. 376–95)

So Williams and Leary sold the Waihi house to Terry Clark on 27 June 1979.

Terry Clark then sold the Waihi house to Hughes and Hastings on 3 October 1979.

Once the two top cops had been compromised, Williams and Friedlander placed the order to murder Marty Johnstone later on 3 October 1979.

Terry Clark then released $25,000 to Billy Boyd, who withdrew $25,000, placed $15,000 in another account on 4 October 1979, and retained $10,000.

Marty Johnstone was then murdered a few days later. He'd been dead less than 10 days when his handless body was found on Sunday 14 October 1979 in England.

Terry Clark was then charged with the murder and was arrested in bed with Karen Soich, Peter Williams' lawyer.[15]

Peter Williams then went to London, picked up £2 million on his hotel bed, made bribes, kept the rest, got access to more of the stash, and bought Billy Boyd the Empire Hotel (land and buildings) to shut him up.

Looks like a murder wrap to me.

www.tv3.co.nz
TV On Demand

Terry Sinclair.

Karen Soich.

Postcard to Peter.
www.tv3.co.nz
TV On Demand

www.tv3.co.nz
TV

---

[15] Errol Hincksman was passed out on drugs in another room in the Kensington apartment. He had been Best Man at Terry Clark's wedding to Maria Muhary in 1974 and was a trusted lieutenant. His drugs got him 10 years in a British prison, several stints in New Zealand, and was still supplying heroin and cocaine in the mid-1990s.

www.tv3.co.nz
TV On Demand

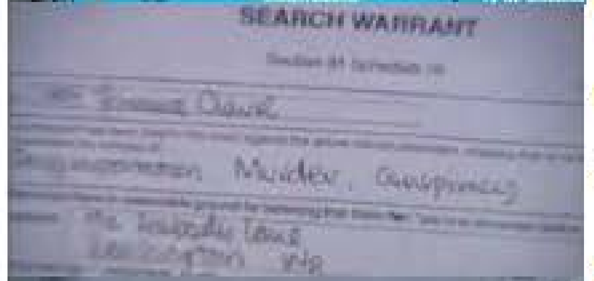
SEARCH WARRANT
Murder, Conspiracy

www.tv3.co.nz

www.tv3.co.nz
TV On Demand

Terry Clark's gambling v. the Order for Marty Johnstone's Murder

After his murder of Norma Fleet, Terry Clark then went into a series of severe depressions blamed on mixing his cocaine with his new habit – heavy drinking.

But his new girlfriend Karen Soich was a known bisexual, which is depressing enough. But being one step removed from Peter Williams can also be very depressing.

Bisexuals stick together like integrity in a nightclub.

In legal circles, Peter Williams is referred to as "a very strange man".

Terry Clark's depression led to a series of blunders, not the least of which was his gambling in London casinos where he was able to lose £250,000 in a night. Gambling was one of the reasons Williams pulled the plug. He didn't want to lose money, he wanted to have others to make it for him.

There was one problem. Terry wrote his accounts in code.

There was another problem. Clark had a company in England called 'Cross and Mercer' and Marty Johnstone was the director. (Cross and Mercer is a totally MI-6 name.)

Marty Johnstone parted ways somewhat with Terry Clark, went out on his own against The Organisation, and began trafficking heroin himself. In 1979, he got ripped off in a heroin deal in Thailand, so the choice was between murdering Marty Johnstone, or murdering Terry Clark.

The choice was to murder Marty Johnstone.

Terry Clark was not the best choice to organise the hit. He lured Marty to London, who arrived penniless, then Terry botched the hit. They were all getting a bit tired.

Marty's flatmate (early 1970s) at the Bellevue Road flats at the entrance to the Mt Eden Swimming Pools, 9 March 2009: "The order to murder Marty definitely came from New Zealand. Marty was killed in England in October 1979. It was the syndicate, but one person had to make the phone call."

Marty's collective flatmates: "Marty fronted as nice guy, but deep down was actually an authority figure with delusions of grandeur, an itchy trigger figure, who liked to kill people himself, and paid so many people for information, the lines between criminals and police were blurred. He paid lawyers, police and crims for information and ended up with a better intelligence service than the government – but with all the same people as the government – as well as from Britain, which I believe was MI-6."

Underworld Golfer: "Smith (Graeme Friedlander) was given the message: 'If you don't stop Marty Johnstone, you'll lose your empire'. So the order was given for Marty's murder and he was lured by Terry Clark to England in early October 1979 for the hit."

Author: "This was around the time that all the property transfers were happening."

Marty Johnstone got ripped off and was supposedly broke when Terry Clark had him killed. However, it's just as likely that Marty Johnstone's money was pilfered by The Organisation – the financial arm of the Mr Asia syndicate – and the "broke" story was used so no one would look for Marty Johnstone's money.

Andy Maher straps Terry Clark with heroin.

Marty Johnstone's flatmate as onfirmed by the Spymaster: "When the New Zealand financiers behind Mr Asia had their empire threatened by Marty Johnstone's breakaway heroin importing, Marty was considered "out of control", and the order to murder him came from New Zealand, from those who represented the Mr Asia financial syndicate."

Enough of the money was stored in Peter Williams' safe for him to pull the plug on everyone else – so it was mayheim, murders and jail.

Terry Clark employed two inexperienced hitmen – Andrew 'Andy' Samuel Maher and his cousin, former Scots Guard Jimmy Smith – to kill his former marijuana supplier, heroin trafficking associate, and 'failed Mr Asia', Marty Johnstone – who was now competition to Mr Big.

There is no murder without a body, but within a week of the murder, Marty Johnstone's body was found.

"Mechanic Jeff Ashcroft (22) and driver Ian Reading (34) from Ashton-in-Makerfield, were diving 15 km north at Marsden's Quarry, 300 km northwest of London, 30 km north of Liverpool, 50 metres east of Halfpenny Lane in the county palatine of Lancashire. Here on Sunday 14 October 1979 these divers found the body of a naked, mutilated corpse of a stocky man with long hair with 65 kg of weights tied to his legs. He was on a ledge 8 metres down near a dumped mini estate in the 18 metre deep disused quarry and picnic spot, Eccy Delph.

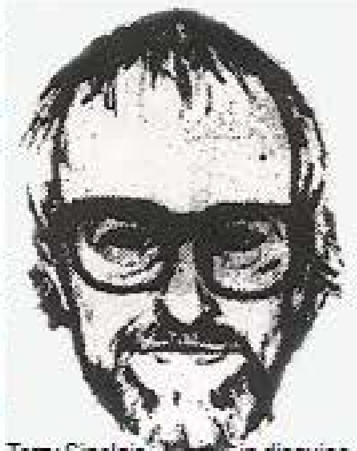
Terry Sinclair in disguise.

"Lancashire CID Detective Chief Superintendent Wilf Brookes, Assistant Chief Constable Keith Brown, Chorley Chief Superintendent Ian Hunter and Superintendent Phil Cafferty of the No. 2 District Task Force in Penwortham attended. Commander of the Lancashire CID Detective Superintendent Ray Rimmer was in charge. Home Office pathologist Dr Geoffrey Garrett carried out the post-mortem at the Preston Royal Infirmary mortuary.

"Marty Johnstone's severed hands and the murder weapon were not found."[16]

Marty Johnstone's Murder and the Money Trail (not Trial)

Since Peter Williams was arguably in charge of protecting the financial investment of the syndicate, it is debatable whether he:

1. Made the call to Smith (Graeme Friedlander);
2. Got the call from Smith (Graeme Friedlander);
3. Made the call to Terry Sinclair; and/or
4. Used his junior lawyer Karen Soich to deliver the message with snatch attached.
5. All | Several | Both | One | Neither.[17]

From the time Karen Soich was Terry Clark's girlfriend, she was part of his drug trafficking keeping an eye on the investor's money. As soon as she moved to London "to be with Terry", she was a drugs and arms dealer.

Karen Soich kept an eye on the money even after Terry Sinclair was arrested, charged, and jailed.

Peter Williams was Karen Soich's boss, so it was a judicious takeover of the heroin finances of Mr Asia.

Peter Williams looks on as his QC status approaches.

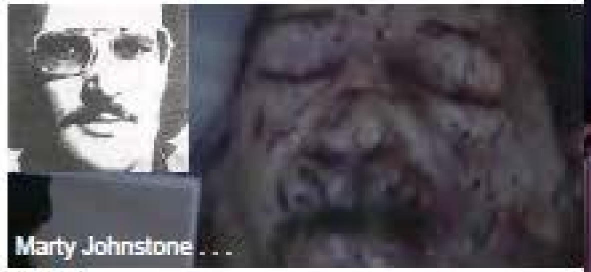
Marty Johnstone . . .

---

[16] *Ibid.*

[17] Peter Williams protection at the time included Metekingi a.k.a. 'Mike the Spike' who stabbed a man to death just to see what it was like.

As soon as Terry Clark and Karen Soich were arrested on 28 October 1979, Peter Williams became Mr Asia.

From 28 October 1979, Peter Williams was Mr Asia. Thereafter he ran the entire operation, for as long as he could, taking as much money as he could get, and buying protection by the cheapest means necessary.

Still, for Williams, parting with money was the greatest sorrow of all.

From Sac to Cell: Show me the money

When British detectives sprung Terry Clark in his Kensington flat, he was in bed with Karen Soich. Errol Hinksman was passed out in another room.

The D's quickly produced photos of Karen bathed in money, which she no doubt sent back to New Zealand as confirmation that the New Zealand syndicate money/ heroin/ arms operation was still in Operation Flourish.

When the detectives interviewed Karen Soich about her relationship with Terry Clark, she responded: "I was just cooking for him".

I know Peter Williams and this is such a Peter Williams' trained response.

Terry Clark was charged with the murder of Marty Johnstone, and Terry Clark and Karen Soich were both charged with "Conspiracy to import and distribute prohibited drugs".

By that time, Terry Clark was worth millions and buying anything and everything was not a problem ("I couldn't even spend the interest on the money I'm making"), until the British wanted to clean up the operation – their operation.

Terry Clark had passports as Terrence James Sinclair, Terrence John Clark, Phillip Perkins, Phillip James Scott, Peter Simon Heffron, John Francis Pennington, Andrew James Gorrie, but to the British cops he preferred to be called 'Terrence James Sinclair' – a name he chose after he was advised by his lawyer Peter Williams to "get respectable" and purchase houses.

These names were all very MI-6, but so was the whole operation.

Clark, or Terrence James Sinclair, offered the two detectives who sprung he and Karen Soich, £200,000 each during the interview, then £250,000 each by the close of business, then close to £1 million each to walk him out the front door.

Terry 'Paddy' Clark was put away in custody as a guest of Her Majesty the Queen for Heroin Trafficking, and his finances were open for the taking.

When the detectives didn't oblige, Peter Williams went to London and was given the same amount – two million pounds (≈ £2,000,000.00).

Mafia in suits met Williams in his hotel lobby and said: "Your payment is in your room". So the very avaricious Peter Williams sprinted up to his room, fiddled, opened the door, and there on his bed was a large suitcase. To P. Williams, this was the golden rainbow. He opened up the suitcase and inside was £2 million.

He stuck his hand in his trousers and fiddled around for his balls as it felt like they had ascended. Eventually he found his penis and had a quick tug. Williams then lay on the bed tugging away and wondered what he was going to do with all the money. Would he cut and run? No, the mafia were involved! He had to use the money to get Karen off and get some sort of reprieve for his client. After all his reputation depended on it, and his masquerades had worked so far.

Peter Williams blows a load in London – one million pounds

Williams did his usual irritating self and found the cheapest option for a result. When the Vikings were warring against the Poms back in the day, the Poms used to arrange clandestine meetings in parks. So Williams arranged meetings in parks, in cars, and in cars in parks. He then took the money and paid the bribes.

For a lawyer, this is highly illegal, but being the new Mr Asia, Peter Williams considered this to be good business.

When I questioned Peter Williams QC in the Auckland Courts on this in 2009, he said: "I have never been admitted to the English Bar". He was reading off his written statement that said the same.

Neither answered the question Peter.

But still, Peter Williams QC would not deviate.

Williams bribed, paid for legal fees, and paid bribe money to those legal beagles who would listen to the legal fees speaking.

Peter Williams did not represent Karen Soich on the bench, but in all other ways he did. In this way, Williams had her acquitted of all charges including "Conspiracy to import and distribute prohibited drugs".

Peter Williams then had Terry Clark locked up. This way he got to keep the £1 million left. It was only after more money came forward – much more money – that Peter Williams and others arranged for Terry Clark to escape out of prison.

Terry Clark was tried for the murder – the most heavily guarded in British history – convicted, and served time at Parkhurst Prison on the Isle of Wight, off the southeast coast of England where he officially died of natural causes in 1983, aged 39.

But speculation arose that he had faked his death.

Peter Williams smuggles money into New Zealand

Whatever bribe money left was Williams to smuggle back into New Zealand, but how to engineer this without being noticed? My guess, is that in his irritating way, Peter Williams asked around until he found the cheapest way to get the money back to New Zealand.

At the time, £1 million was NZ$2.5 million.

In those says, NZ$10,000 was the maximum allowed to be brought in and out of New Zealand. Sheep farmers had wool sales accounts with more than this stashed in London, so that was a possibility in $10,000 lots, but quite slow – too slow for Williams.

Peter Williams' close friend, legal 'partner', and Mr Asia partner, Eb Leary, repeatedly took payments from Terry Clark 'not-through-the-trust-account' on 1 November 1979 and again the same month. He received payments which should have been paid into Terry Clark's trust account, but Eb Leary paid it into his personal account.

Then on 4 December 1979, the Inland Revenue Department phoned Eb Leary and questioned him about Terry Clark's finances. Eb "deliberately attempted to deceive the Inland Revenue Department of NZ$300,000 in tax", which was the tax on NZ$1 million.

So that was too risky, the Minister of Finance noticed, and there was still the NZ$1.5 million to transferm minus the money spent on bribes.

Was it to be a diplomat, the Minister of Finance, or Prime Minister Muldoon himself?

Muldoon was both, and noticed the money, contacted his old Tavistock home in London, got the background, then contacted Williams, saw the money, took his cut (which may have been all of it).

Muldoon was running heroin from the early 1970s. He was military. It was a military operation, and New Zealand was a police state.

It was then that Eb Leary was questioned by the IRD on 4 December 1979. This put the shits up him, but he still wasn't required to pay back the money. So from the £1 million/NZ$2.5 million, Eb Leary and Williams got to share NZ$1 million and Muldoon got the rest.

Prime Minister Rob Muldoon lost the election and was out on 14 July 1984, but refused to leave his office, got drunk, rang the Pentagon and asked them to declare the election null-and-void, rescue him back into power, and invade New Zealand. On the 26 July 1984, the Pentagon voted 4 for and 4 against, with the chairman casting the deciding vote against invasion. It was that close. Muldoon left office 12 days late on 26 July 1984, drunk and unshowered.

This was the second-to-last thing Prime Minister Rob Muldoon did before he left office. The last thing Muldoon did, in a fit of conscience, was arrange for Eb Leary's wife to win Lotto.

Robert Muldoon: "Hi, I'm a Tavistock trained (1945–47) double agent Prime Minister (1975–84) active during all the Mr Asia years. I find heroin to be a very effective way of destroying New Zealand's own.

"Between October 1979 and February 1980 I was bribed NZ$1.1 million and gave away New Zealand's oil to the Yanks. I was then taken to Pilau where I had sex with, killed and ate a K'Rd transvestite.

"I was also given scopolamine and any excuse is a good excuse. This one was an 'inhibition inhibitor'."

Lawyers get disbarred and get to keep the money.

Commoners get jail and have to return the money.

Where's the justice when lawyery is an excuse for drug trafficking and murders and your country's leader is a heroin trafficker.

Hang on a minute . . . That's no different from the current Afghan leader Hamid Karzai.

Is New Zealand that far down the integrity scale?

What do you expect? The whole thing was an MI-6 operation, and either the Queen of England or Prince 'consort Porn-King' Philip are the actual heads of MI-6 – so they could hand out 'Queen's Counsel' protection later . . . although not much later – 6 April 1987 – just when the whole Mr Asia heroin trafficking was winding down and the lawyers involved needed elevation for protection.

Undercover: "I did one of these double paper fullscap sheets full of names of those convicted of serious crimes, or unconvicted, but with connections to serious crimes. I showed it to Sergeant Peter Evans who said: 'This is all shit. I don't want to see this again. Don't bring it into the Police Station ever again. I'm sick of your lies and slander.'

"Now I understand why.

"Sergeant Peter Evans was killed soon after. I think he got too close to the truth, then killed. Yet the previous month, the 3-IC of the Police had paid me – the Detective Superintendent from Wellington – Peter Marshall.

"There were people on these lists – 300 to 400 people and coloured lines that illustrated where they paid money to each other, where they exchanged information – Undertakers who were prosecuted for serious crimes and their connections to paedophiles and people who were suspected of murder. There were people listed who were police, customs officers, lawyers, dealers in militaria, brokers, PIs, chiefs of companies, professional people, and politicians.

"The police routinely cover up murders in New Zealand, and consequently the number of missing persons in NZ has balooned out to epidemic proportions. Occasionally you'll get Detectives forming close relationships and that means rooting the deceased's wife, and very occasionally they will tell her the truth about these murders and a detective will sometimes say: 'There are thousands of bodies in the Waitakere ranges alone. And that doesn't even include Dunghill Farm, once owned by associates of the Head Hunters where the pigs were routinely fed on bodies'.

"When I reported this to the police, I told them that my informant had told me that the only part of the bodies that weren't devoured by the pigs were the teeth, the maxilla (cheek bone), and the patella (front of knee) and provided these are broken up with a hammer, everything is sweet.

"And it was the police who suggested to me 'Was I talking about Dunghill Farm?'"

"So the corruption happening in Australia was also happening here in New Zealand.

"I picked it all up and left, and put it into cold storage because I realised there would never be a legal commission into paedophilia here while the New Zealand Police still existed."

The Australian Anti-Corruption Team arranged Terry Clark's escape

The Australian Anti-Corruption Team (AACT) interviewed Terry Clark in 1983 while he was serving time at Parkhurst Prison. Terry Clark gave a statement, then 'officially died' before he could sign it. This meant that AACT had the information they required, but could not use it legally, so they would never have to present it, and the public would never know.

During this interview, negotiations between Terry Clark and the Australian Anti-Corruption Team went down, including:

1. What happened to all the drug money.
2. Terry Clark was to turn states evidence "in camera" [no gallery watching], then be given a new life where he could not be charged. (You can't be charged if you're dead.)
3. They agreed on a cover story for his death, cause of death, plastic surgery, a given job, place of relocation, and contacts allowed/disallowed.

The Australian Anti-Corruption Team were in on swishing Terry Clark back to Perth under a new identity, with plastic surgery, as a secondhand car dealer;

and

The AACT now had all the information to extort, control and promote whomever was involved.

Spymaster: "It seems that everyone was in on it.

"There are few Intelligence and Enforcement agencies who were not embraced into the Western Alliance of drugs."

Mr Asia's 'Death' a.k.a. Plastic Surgery at Brize Norton

Officially Terry Clark died of a heart attack in the grounds of Parkhurst Prison and was buried in the prison yard, with his family in New Zealand unable to attend the funeral, or sight the body, due to extremely short notice – one hour.

The rumour mill said that Terry Clark had informed on some IRA men.

Royal Commissioner, Justice Donald Stewart: "Hearsay evidence was a group of IRA men had murdered Clark using a prison blanket cut into strips. They grabbed him in a remote part of the prison and a sixth man sat on his chest."

And another version: "This was supposed to be during an elaborate escape attempt involving a drug used to simulate a heart attack that worked too well."[18]

The "prison blanket cut into strips" and the heart stopping medication had nothing to do with the way Paddy Clark 'died', and the British are constantly blaming the IRA for murders they'd committed. This is why the British created the IRA (and occupied 80 % of it). The British Arms Industry needed an enemy so they could occupy areas where their nuclear arsenal were buried in underground silos, so that they could prevent the Russians from taking them over, turning them around on the UK, then invading to the glee of the Irish.

---

[18] *The Gisborne Herald*, 'Mr Asia' case revisited, Marianne Gillingham, 4 March 2009.

A lot of New Zealand/ Maori, Australian, Canadian, and some South African military SAS were hired by the MI-6 arm of the IRA to go up to Ireland, dress as IRA, and carry out such attrocities as the Catholic girls school bus rape.

So "**IRA**" stands for '**Industry Royal Arms**'.

The British got their agent Terry Clark out of prison under false pretences, with death as the cover. It is illegal to fake a Death Certificate, but the British Royal family gets away with it. They don't do it very often, but they will do it when it interfers with their profit margins, or when information about their money engineering practices could be compromised, as when one of their agents is under pressure to 'leak':

"I think Asia's going to take a piss. We should give him some relief."

The British Royal Family were involved in the high-profit heroin trafficking and they have the power to award protection. In Terry Clark's case, this came with plastic surgery and a new identity. Most often this comes in the form of elevation, just as Peter Williams was elevated to Queen's Counsel on 6 April 1987.

"The body said to be Terry Clark's was either buried in the prison yard or quickly cremated".[19] The grave site is not accessible, and either way, the remains are not recoverable to check the authenticity of Terry Clark's remains – a pile of rocks.

Terry Clark did negotiate a deal with the Australian Anti-Corruption Team. That IRA men sat on him until he died (heresay), took heart stalling medication that went too far (privileged heresay) or officially died of a heart attack, was buried in the prison yard and/or cremated . . . are all lies, lies, lies and more esteemed lies.

Terry Clark was given plastic surgery on a military base in England (Brize Norton), swished out to Perth where he lived/s in the world's most remote city as a secondhand car salesman.

Spymaster: "Terry Clark's plastic surgery was done at the RAF base in Britain that covers Northern Ireland – Brize Norton – pronounced 'Bree Norton'. They had a big stink there years ago because some RAF filing cabinets were sold from there and they had details of how to make IRA bombs . . . for fuckwits who needed directions.

"When the plastic surgery was done, Prince Philip was wearing his hat as Chief of MI-6, and not his Porn King hat – for the day."

Author: "Hang on, let me get this . . . RAF Brize Norton is the 'Home of Air Transport, Air-to-Air Refuelling & Military Parachuting located at Carterton in Oxfordshire, phone 01993 842551."

RAF Brize Norton is the largest Station in the Royal Air Force, employing some 3900 Service personnel and over 600 civilians. We are an extremely busy station and are constantly in the public eye, as the main airport used for deploying UK troops worldwide.

Our mission is "To project Air Transport and Air-to-Air Refuelling and support deployed operations and exercises".

Our vision is "Excellence in Rapid Global Mobility".

---

[19] 'Expose: The Real Mr Asia', TV1, 27 October 2004.

The plastic surgery was almost definitely organised and funded by Prince Philip, a well known porn addict of ill repute who sired a stone deaf child with his daughter-in-law, Sophie Rhys-Jones, thus bypassing his homosexual child-sex abusing talentless effeminate non-biological son – Prince Edward.

With his new Australian identity, Terry Clark was seen in Perth in 1985, two years after his 'death', with a small amount of facial surgery, but still recognisable to his mates. He was recognised by the most pragmatic of men who lived a life without illusion and had no delusions of granduer – a ship owner who supplied secondhand cars to both New Zealand and Australia.

In the same time frame as Mr Asia (1976–87) the New Zealand police were stealing their own cars by driving them onto ships for export to Australia via Tonga, and the Australian police were doing the same. Tongan customs officials were always distracted by prostitutes whenever the changeover was happening.

The King of Tonga would then fly to New Zealand to pick up his NZ$80,000 cut, personally.

Bagman: "He was so fat, the caravan almost toppled over."

The King of Tonga then produced a homosexual son who murdered his older brother in America in an arranged car accident in order to become the next King of Tonga. The FBI still have an open file on this.

Both King's of Tonga were absolute criminals.

'Underbelly: The Mr Asia Story' TV docudrama mini-series (4 March–20 May 2009) is a fair indication that Terry Clark was recently deceased . . . and that it contains enough Australian Anti-Corruption Team propaganda to fulfil the requirements of the people they continue to protect and promote, for that ongoing extortion

. . . Extorted people are reluctant to pay.

Allison Dine

When the Aussie Police interviewed Allison Dine they reiterated what she just said:

"You said you put up two million dollars for the Australian end of Terry's operation".

Allison Dine testified against the lawyer Brian Alexander. The judge was rigged and disregarded everything she said, stated that she was a despicable unreliable witness and was then awarded the DCM – 'Don't Come Monday'.

This was all very MI-6.

Allison Dine's parents were from Pommy-land but the family had been in New Zealand for a long time. Her mother understood spoken Maori, but MI-6 is bigger than local contacts and Allison Dine was given a new name and left with a non-prosecution certificate in her possession.

Others say she may have been swished with a death certificate left behind, or killed as she hasn't surfaced since.

"According to parliamentary records, Allison Dine was given a new identity after giving evidence in the Mr Asia enquiry."

All of this was so very MI-6, it reeks of men escaping jail dressed as women, and women escaping countries dressed as men.

Allison Dine now lives in England under an assumed name and is married with children.

The SIS pay a lightweight visit

Greg Hallett: "This 60-year-old SIS woman came around to my house to buy a copy of *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide*. She smelt like old piano teacher (mothballs), so I knew she was Security Intelligence Service.

SIS Old Mothballed Piano Teacher: "A group of us were sitting around the dinner table last night reading from your book *Blackmail* and discussing the points. It read really funny, but by the time we discussed it, it all seemed to turn out plausible, if not known by one in our group to be true. I just had to buy a copy . . . We all thought Mr Asia had to be run from the top . . .?"

Author: "Yeah, it was a QC lawyer who did it. He's one of the five top lawyers in the country. He's on TV. You know of him, very well."

Old Mothballed SIS Piano Teacher: "So where did you get your information?"

Author: "Aides to Prime Ministers. Oh, and Peter Williams himself – the QC lawyer. Typical of bisexuals, he can't keep his trap shut. It's wide open. You could stick a disgruntled generation in there."

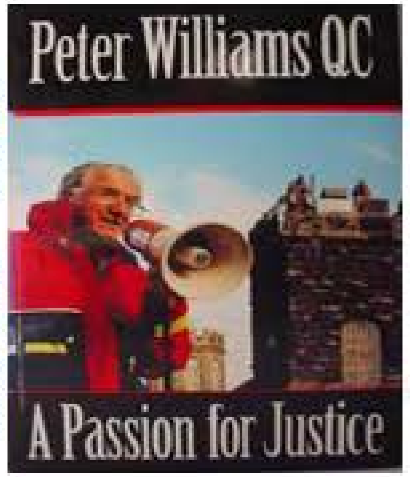

Peter Williams Testifies as best he can

While I was still doing architecture work for Peter Williams QC (2003–05), sometime after I'd attended his Howard League meeting (c. September 2004), I went around to his house at 20 Pompallier[20] Terrace in Ponsonby and relayed a story to him to check his response:

Greg Hallett: "Terry Clark was put in prison in England. His death in 1983 was faked. Rocks were put in the coffin, and the coffin was buried in the prison courtyard. His family in New Zealand were phoned and given one hours notice, so they could not attend, and could not identify the body, nor were they allowed onto the prison courtyard to visit the grave or exhume the body later.

"Prince Philip then paid for Terry Clark's plastic surgery and arranged for his delivery to Perth where he was set up as a secondhand car dealer."

Peter Williams QC was sitting in his lounge chair and looked at me with a bit of professional station – through the eyebrows as lawyers and judges do – and replied: 'Yes, I have heard that'."

In another Court hearing, when I mentioned talking to Peter Williams QC at his home about Mr Asia, he and his partner denied I had been there for a second time, despite us doing architecture, going sailing, having this meeting, and attending one of his Howard League meetings in his home – which is charity cover for all his other crimes.

This thing was so close, Bob Jones, later Sir Bob Jones, cuckolded Peter Williams with his wife, resulting in the only lawyer in the family – which isn't Peter's.

The Head of the Terrorist Squad, the Heroin-Solicitor and the Prostitute

MICK P: "Drugs have been replaced by terrorism as the major threat and Brian Stewart's job has been taken over by Michael Cartwright now. Michael Cartwright has attended several terrorism conferences overseas. He's New Zealand's major anti-terrorist man, the head of the VIP protection squad, and not just a foot soldier."

Greg Hallett: "Michael Cartwright came around to my house at 9.30–10.30 am on Wednesday 26 November 2008, with his work partner (sandy-white hair, same age and build, but more British). They wore plain plain clothes with large key chains hanging from their belts. That gave them away. They were either the world's most fit storeman-and-packers, or police officers.

"They stayed for an hour and presented as having come from the Prime Minister's Residence 300 metres up the road (John Key's house). Later they confirmed they were from S.I.G. (Special Investigations Group that specialises in terrorism) and from Harlech House (482 Great South Road in Otahuhu, Auckland) where all the various levels of detective work are carried out . . . and the drug money is stored in the basement . . . as are the drugs.

"No doubt Michael Cartwright and his partner were there to assess me as they spent all of the following day writing up a report.

"Although I was very courteous and invited them in for a cup of tea, or coffee, and showed them the movie I had made of John Key on Election night, and generally had a laugh and discussion for an hour . . . their report inferred that I was very dangerous."

> **"Because [Greg Hallett] is a very thoughtful man, he's a very educated man and very precise with his language. People who are very precise with language and say what they mean, and do it unflinchingly and unemotionally, are dangerous."[21]**

MICK P: "Anyone who disagrees gets the label 'TERRORIST'. This includes those who protect rare snails from developers. Michael Cartwright was the one who organised the Ruatoria raids on 14 October 2007. These raids were synchronised to be on the same day occurring in eight (8) different countries around the world at the same time (NZ, Australia, Papua New Guinea, France, Spain, Canada etc). After a year, all the terrorism charges were dropped . . .

"Michael Cartwright is having marital problems."

Sure enough New Zealand's International Terrorism consultant Michael Cartwright organised the Ruatoki raid on the same day as the other countries on Sunday/ Monday 14/15 October 2007, and a year later, by October 2008 – two weeks before the 8 November 2008 Election – all terrorism charges were dropped, except for five people charged with illegal grouping, and one woman protecting snails from developers.

The whole thing had been an intense distraction for Helen Clarks' lesbianism and her attempt to launch a nuclear strike on New Zealand, her husband's homosexual child sex abuse in San Francisco, and broadcaster Paul Holmes' methamphetamine (P) use and supply to a child in exchange for anal sex with an old criminal who had paid half a million dollars for his knighthood as cover for his frauds, paedophilia and drug dealing . . . so they all became popular TV personalities.

Spymaster: "Welcome to New Zealand. Like you say – it's a Mafia State."

Author: "If Michael Cartwright is having marital problems, who is he going to the International Terrorism Conferences' with? Millie Elder Holmes? And was this compromising him into organising false terror raids? Terror for sex Michael? . . . It was the Labour Prime Minister Helen Clark who organised the terrorism from above, the more recent heroin trafficking, and the murder attempts against myself."

Helen Clark, a former St Petersburg prostitute, legalised prostitution in New Zealand, and then virtually ran it. She would call up a brothel keeper to do a hit at a moments notice. If they didn't comply, they would lose their brothel licence and their ability to use and distribute P to their prostitutes and clients with immunity. Mike Lewis Goold was an actual case (See Vol II, Murders, Pru Gee and Mike Lewis Goold)

It is now public knowledge that MI-6 are no longer protecting their heroin dealers, and they are open slather to the public and reluctant police. It's confirmed now that Peter Williams is an MI-6 heroin trafficker. So anyone who knows this, who isn't equally shamed, Peter Williams then tries to shame, or defame, or cause massively distracting court cases.

---

[20] Named after Bishop Pompallier, a cavalry man/ paedophile who spent 2–6 weeks training in France as a Bishop before coming to New Zealand and rooting the 6-16- year-old-native Maori. His shipgirl for the four month boat journey became Mother Aubert, the highest ranking Catholic Mother in New Zealand and when she died, she got a state funeral. Politicians love their prostitutes, especially when they provide a 'respectable' cover.

[21] Peter Schaenk, his radioshow, 28 January 2009, reporting on the return of Holocaust denier 'Bishop Richard Williamson' into the Catholic Church. A highly dangerous man for Zionist agenda addicts and lackeys.

Williams offers to show them Asian porn, some with underaged actors, and if they accept, he records their name and the time and date. If this fails, and he does not have the target bonded by other means, he attacks. There can always be a dangerous sailing trip in between with threats to kill from his staff – like Albi Orme.

Peter Williams QC just likes to be in the limelight. He likes to play with the big boys. He likes to think he's part of the action, but he frustrates the hell out of everyone in the process.

Heroin was the big threat then. Terrorism is the big threat now. Heroin makes a huge profit margin, about 400%. Terrorism's only profit margin is up the political ladder.

On Monday 15 October 2007, 17 people were charged with terrorism. They were environmentalists and Maori land activists. Peter Williams QC went down to Ruatoki to 'help' those accused of terrorism. Before he did this, and within ten days of it all going down, he got the phone call from judges who advised him: "Don't go down. It's all going to amount to nothing". We know this because we overheard the phone conversation.

Sure enough – "On 8 November 2007, the Solicitor General declined to prosecute under the Terrorism Suppression Act, citing insufficient evidence, and described the legislation as 'complex and incoherent', and 'almost impossible to apply to domestic circumstances', and recommended the law be sent to the Law Commission for review, which parliament has since agreed to."[22]

Tame Iti and Jamie Lockett were among those arrested. Tame Iti is a bisexual government agent and Jamie Lockett is one of Peter Williams' narcs. Jamie Lockett was No. 5 on the Terrorism list and when I made a documentary on him, Peter Williams had me named No. 10.

The whole thing was then dropped two weeks before the November 2008 election and is considered a national joke, organised by those scrambling up the political ladder to cover for their previous crimes. In 2007/2008, Williams was trying to be the lawyer for terrorism. Helen Clark was then made 3-IC of the United Nations. Peter Williams QC was a lawyer and partner of Terry Clark/ Mr Asia. He cannot go up the political ladder because he is the mafia boss and when he realised their was no money in terrorism, he dropped it like hotcakes, but still used it for as much political influence as possible. Generally, it was for immunity, and to 'turn' Lockett to not pay Hallett which he did with the assistance of Heeni Prozac Phillips.

I've had a legal claim against Peter Williams QC for an architecture fee of five grand. I brought charges in the Disputes Tribunal. We had hearings on 24 October 2008, 21 November 2008, and 5 December 2008, when Williams begged that they go to the District Court – where he would have the influence to stall indefinitely. Albi Orme could not be trained to say 'the right thing' and died 25 hours after the Williams/Terrorism/ S.I.G. visit, at 11.40 am, 27 November 2008, right in the middle of the Hallett v. Williams hearings, with Orme as Williams' uncalled witness. Albi seemed fine to me six days earlier, a little thinner, a little paler, but not deathly. Perhaps the S.I.G. analysis was favourable towards me.

So how close is Williams to the heroin and the terrorism, and is he then not capable of murder at arms length? . . . as you would expect of an MI-6 asset with Queen's Counsel status compromised by an Asian porn habit and shameful bisexuality which he denies as: "I am not an active homosexual."

While sailing, Peter Williams' researcher, Albi Orme (Churchill Scholar) threatened to kill Greg Hallett multiple times, and was a possible Z-man. He certainly had a well-known habit of threatening to kill and it would have been easy enough to get a witness. When I published as much in 2007, without his name, people were coming out of the woodwork and saying: "Was that Albi Orme who made threats to kill?" Of course I said "Yes", because it was. Peter Williams' narc, Jamie Lockett, was one of those who inquired and affirmed.

---

[22] Wikipedia: '2007 New Zealand anti-terror raids'.

New Zealand Courts refuse to acknowledge Slavery: As of 13 February 2009, Peter Williams is also up on accusations of 'Slavery' in the District Court of Auckland (CIV 2008-094-001717). Peter Wiliams then failed to attend the Judicial Conference as he hadn't yet found his bought judge. At the next Judicial Conference, Judge Mark E. Perkins then refused to let me speak, at all, on threat of lock-up, twice – and disallowed the slavery charged. The Somalis were very interested in the Slavery Charges . . . Judge Mark E. Perkins is a Mafia judge.

Terry Clark and Peter Williams were both NZ Police Narcs with MI-6 protection

"Terry Clark had been importing and distributing drugs in New Zealand, Australia and England, but he was also a police narc, who had ruthlessly forced himself to the top of the syndicate"[23] and in exchange, he was given prior information by the police, which in turn, allowed him to evade capture.

Terry Clark was a narc who was allowed to import drugs, distribute drugs, and get away with extreme violence and murder as long as he distributed drugs within the Western community, increased Western crime, and increased Western police powers to reduce the crime they had helped found and protect.

Drugs into communities is part of the **Freemasons 'ORDER OUT OF CHAOS' programme**, invented some 200 years earlier . . . and when the pressure was on, Clark sold the business to Bob Trimboli for AU$2 million, and when the pressure came on again, Trimboli wondered what he had bought – a few thermos flasks out in the woods and a whole lot of MI-6 protection."

Terry Clark was a criminal supported by the police in New Zealand, Australia and England to introduce drugs into their countries in order to increase the level of crime and therefore increase the control, arms, and rights that the POLICE would have. In some measure this was confirmed by Ernie Pemberton, one of the last British Police officers to interview Terry Clark: "I did think he'd been very lucky to get away with it for so long, very lucky. Because I don't think he was any more than a criminal. And he got an operation going he was very lucky to sustain it, and he sustained it by violence. That's how he sustained it, and by having money to pay people to keep quiet about it. That's how he did it."[24]

This is backed up by four other comments who describe the ruthless support Terry Clark received from police and authorities . . .

Errol Hinksman: "Terry Clark dreamed of becoming New Zealand's Al Capone."

Jimmy Shepherd (still alive): "Terry Clark developed a taste for murder."

Mr X, Scoop, Murray Williams: "Bent cops were a dime a dozen in the late 1970s . . . You couldn't get arrested if you tried back then . . . Clark had a hotline to them."

Royal Commissioner Justice Donald Stewart: "Terry Clark destroyed countless lives through heroin."

Greg Hallett: "MI-6 used criminals to target specific families with heroin. Those members who didn't take to it, were then attacked in other ways. Often it was a blacklisting order by the Judiciary for 'NO RELIEF'."

Peter Williams' junior lawyer, Karen Soich, was assigned to Terry Clark/ Mr Asia to ensure the money was paid back to the investors and Karen Soich (LLB) was implicated by the court. Peter Williams' very close associates, Eb Leary and Billy Boyd, were disbarred for laundering the drug money. Peter Williams got out by the skin of his teeth around the same time his associates were disbarred.

---

[23] *Listener*, David Lomas, 'The Fall of Mr Asia', 23–29 October 2004, Vol 196 No 3363: ". . . Clark, a petty thief and sometime police informant from Gisborne [who] ruthlessly forced himself to the top of the syndicate, eventually ordering Johnstone's murder when a Thailand drug deal went wrong."

[24] 'Expose: The Real Mr Asia', TV1, 27 October 2004.

Terry Clark and Marty Johnstone were not the leading conspirators. Graeme 'Smith' Friedlander,[25] Peter Williams QC, Eb Leary, Billy Boyd, Karen Soich, Aussie Malcolm and Prime Minister Muldoon (1975–84) were deeply in on it. Muldoon had been trained in the London Tavistock, so he was a dead ringer for anything that would destroy the country: "Heroin works. Let's do that. PS. I have congenital syphilis."

Detective Hutton was one cover between heroin importing and the Police, who, after enough bribes, were essentially complicit in the heroin trafficking.

When the high-ranking Freemason, Len Demlar, murdered Harvey and Jeanette Crewe in 1970, it was Hutton and Williams who provided the cover for the freemason murderer by planting evidence on Arthur Alan Thomas and delaying the court outcome for a decade using all sorts of front lawyers. What looks sweet in the police and judiciary turned out to stink like a cover of shit.

Peter Williams QC was a lawyer thrice associated with the Mr Asia heroin gang.

My favourite quotes from Peter Williams Queen's Counsel of 23 years are:

"I am not an active homosexual"; and

"I have never been admitted to the English Bar".

You're in New Zealand now mate.

Peter Alderidge Williams QC has been found marked, measured and wanting
It is therefore that I formally request:
Peter Williams QC be stripped of the silk – no longer to be a Queen's Counsel;

Peter Williams QC be removed from the Bar – unable to practise law;

Peter Williams be charged with slavery – as a master slaver;

Peter Williams return the £2 million in ill-gotten gains – pay half to the Undersigned, Joseph Gregory Hallett, for threatening to kill, accessory to attempted murder, slavery, hobbling, boiler-plating and blacklisting – and pay the other half to the Inquiry into Peter Williams' extensive judicial corruption;

Peter Williams apologise on page 1 of the *New Zealand Herald* to the Undersigned, Joseph Gregory Hallett;

Peter Williams apologise on page 1 of the *New Zealand Herald* to Eb Leary and Billy Boyd for setting them up as the fall guys for crimes Peter Williams was orchestrating;

Peter Williams apologise on page 1 of the *New Zealand Herald* for funding his daughter's methamphetamine habit;

Peter Williams acknowledge that he was cuckolded by the fraudster and paedophile (Sir) Robert (Bob) Jones, citing that one of his daughters – the one who's a lawyer – is not biologically his;

Peter Williams' passport be retained so he cannot communicate with his new Mossad masters in Fiji and arrange a further hit.

> **Payment of £1 million plus statutory interest at 7.5/8.4 % is due within 72 hours of receipt under normal laws of Equity. Failure to pay within this equitable timeframe, and failure to respond within this equitable timeframe, and/or failure to formally resign all titles and positions, and apologise within this timeframe, will incur the four-fold Indemnity Bond (£4 million + Statutory Interest).**

All rights, powers, privileges, and immunities, whether actual, contingent, or prospective: Reserved only in his capacity as beneficiary of the Original Jurisdiction.

---

[25] *Spymaster*: "I had reservations about the presence of a child with a man being prosecuted for kiddy-porn, so I mentioned Friedlander's daughter to the Police. Years later the answer came back that it wasn't connected. Then I had reason to go into one of his establishments in the Red Light area off Fort Street where I encountered the same girl working for Friedlander as a prostitute. I suspected it was his own daughter."

Related videos
7 hardcore porn har...

Aussie Malcolm, Danny Watson (loose mandible springs) and why no one listens
As well as a heroin trafficker with Mr Asia and organising identical boats to sail between Fiji and New Zealand, so it looked like both returned to homebase, Aussie Malcolm was a crossover paedophile (married and a homo-paedophile).

Aussie was controlled by the Australians because he was caught having sex with a child in Gladstone, Queensland, in 1967. This resulted in him losing his Seamans' Ticket. Aussie still wears a fag's ponytail[26] and sometimes it's hard to tell him apart from the talkshow host Danny 'Loose Mandible Springs' Watson.

Danny Watson is called 'Loose Mandible Springs' because he lets his jaw flop open and waver about before he engages his brain. He is a walking talking oblique non sequitur. He can sidewind off a topic faster than a briefcase full of money can change hands for suppressed information.

As you know, it is the talkshow host's role to wrap the public in ignorance and Loose Mandible Springs Danny Watson is a longstanding professional. Talkshow host Danny listen-to-me-don't-listen-to-yourself Watson also, ironically did what is arguably attempted manslaughter on Peter Williams QC.

Danny listen-to-me-don't-listen-to-yourself Loose Mandible Springs Watson (DLTMDLTYLMSW) sold Peter Williams a yacht and was required to install a two way radio. Well Watson dropped the unit in the seawater, scooped it out, removed the insides and left the 'on light' in, then installed it. In an emergency, this could have contributed to a death, and if death had resulted, it would have been manslaughter.

Williams told me that, so if you need verification, talk to the bisexual.

---

[26] *Wikipedia*: Anthony George 'Aussie' Malcolm was born in Australia (1940–) and attended Wellington College in Wellington, NZ. He was the Eden MP (1975–84) and Minister of Immigration/ Health during the third term of the Muldoon National government, then established an immigration (socialism/sexual deviancy) consultancy firm, and also has investments in the tourism sector..

Paedophiles and homosexuals and homo-paedophiles try to become MPs because that gives them police protection. They are also given a hand up by other queer MPs.

This 'Honourable' cover also gives them the kutspa to approach other MP's sons and MP Aussie Malcolm took an interest in MP Norm Jones underaged son, and propositioned him for fellatio.

Member of Parliament Norm Jones was just a hop-a-long amputee, but one crisp morning he waited at the top of parliament steps, behind a column . . . with his leg off.

MP Aussie Malcolm walked up the old parliamentary steps and said: "Gidday Norm how are ya".

Well Norm Jones wacked Aussie Malcolm across the head with his detachable prosthetic leg then slid down the parliamentary handrail and smacked Aussie again with his wooden leg, just as he was getting up. This is a well known story. Norm then re-attached his prosthetic leg and walked up parliament steps.

PM Muldoon was hiding behind another column and asked Norm: "Why did you do it?"

Norm Jones replied: "Because he wanted to do things to somebody close to me."

Muldoon: "That figures because he's a queer cunt . . . This is why you'll never be a member of the Cabinet. You're too honest."

Sounds like Muldoon hated Aussie Malcolm, but supported him in his heroin trafficking anyway. That's what good-old Tavistock cunts do. Perhaps they were in business together! All of them!

. . . And the term respectable now includes 'Heroin Trafficker' . . .

Anthony George 'Aussie' Malcolm.

What really cracked me up about all this was his 2-IC, all white and proper and designated to inherit the company, David Cooper, was on an overseas junket and employed the services of some Asian prostitutes. His wife Fiona, then 'discovered' this on his credit card. I kept quiet about it for two years ('cause I used to go around there for lunch in the 90s) then this co-producer on Skype from Montecito, California told me. The next day the whole suburb of Montecito caught fire and 8,000 were evacuated.

Fiona's sister was Aussie's therapist when his wife Astrid managed to drown in a drowning accident.

Danny Watson strikes again.

'Little Britain'
David Williams/ Walliams:

"Computer says 'No'."

Talkshow host:
Danny Watson.

On Air
Tell us w
Talkback
Overseas
Text 9292
Cli
"Listeners say 'No'."

Dame Margaret Bazley is Lillian Bazley – the heroin trafficker and CIA contract killer Margaret Bazley – who was married to the convicted murderer Steve Bazley – and now controls Auckland

The same woman who presented this false DNA evidence for the DSIR in the Terry Clark case, presented DNA evidence for the Bain murder re-trial late in April 2009, this time for FRST, the 'Foundation for Research Science and Technology' which replaced the 'Department of Scientific and Industrial Research' (DSIR). FRST is headed by the CIA agent Dame Margaret 'Lillian' Bazley who was married to James 'Jim' Frederick 'Steve' Bazley – the convicted triple murderer in the Mr Asia Ring.

James 'Jim' Frederick 'Steve' Bazley (1924–) was a union heavy at the waterfront in the early 1970s with four bullet wounds to prove it, and was associated with the notorious Painters and Dockers Union who 'apparently' buried bodies under Sydney's Mascot Runway. 'Steve' Bazley, Joseph and Tizzone were tried and convicted of the murder of Don Mackay, Doug Wilson, and Isobel Wilson, and sentenced in 1984 to 13 years plus life, but Steve Bazley was released from Lodden Prison, Victoria in February 2001 and is now a budget advisor in Invercargill.

Mr and Mrs James 'Jim' Frederick 'Steve' Margaret 'Lillian' Bazley-Murder, who works with her fellow CIA agent Mr John Banks Queer Son Of A Career Criminal QSO ACC CIA

His wife at the time was 'Lillian Bazley, who is actually Margaret 'Lillian' Bazley, and now Dame Margaret Bazley the CIA agent, heroin trafficker, and contract killer of thousands who goes through government departments for the CIA and ensures they do not work, including. Director of Nursing, Department of Health, Commissioner of State Services Commission, Secretary for Transport, Director-General of Social Welfare, Chief Executive of Social Policy, Chairperson of Fire Service Commission, Chairperson of FRST, Commissioner for Inquiry into Police Misconduct, Member of the Legal Services Agency Risk Management Committee, and member of the Waitangi Tribunal (Maori).

The women are always more evil than the men. It's just that we can deny it for longer.

The Bazley-Banks CIA Takeover of Auckland (2009–10)

The CIA agent Dame Margaret 'Lillian' 'Mr Asia Ring' 'Contract Killer of Thousands' Bazley is covering up for the police paedophile ring in Dunedin that did the Bain family murders, and the paedophilia of the former Minister of Police John Banks who is a CIA agent running for first Super Mayor of Auckland – which is a CIA takeover of the entire Auckland region for the purpose of increasing rates, fascist policing . . . and mass murder.

This is being done by a NZ$7 billion asset grab that involves all of the new Auckland Super City's water supply. The water will then be the focus of a massive rates increase, poisoned, and the rates increase justified by cleaning out the poisons.

Millions will be charged, but it will be a simple antidote.

The CIA Mayor of Auckland John Banks has been using the same method employing Deloitte to consult, when all they do is take their reports from other cities and change the names. The reports are done, the money is exported overseas, but little, or none of the work is actually carried out.

John Banks has employed the asset strippers Michael Faye and David Richwhite to organise the legalese behind a whole lot of front companies for the takeover of Auckland. This will give them an unobstructed year to strip all assets.

As the Tui beer billboard says:
"Is it a bird? Is it a plane?
No it's Super Mayor."

Michael Faye and David Richwhite have previously been involved in stripping the New Zealand Railways by stealing the engines out of trains, buying the railways for NZ$1, putting the engines back in, then selling it for NZ$600 million.

No one was charged.

They were also involved in the Paul White murder and turning the movie about it – 'Spooked' – into a movie that never mentioned them and then blamed Spook for the murder. (See Attachment "Z^{8}", 'Commission of Inquiry into Police Murders')

Talkshow of Ignorance

When we go to talk about this on radio, we get cut off by the CIA asset Leighton Smith – CIA by virtue that he is a Captain in ASIO and Australia is run by the CIA, so he's a CIA asset who will keep mumsy about the SuperMayor and Auckland SuperCity being a CIA takeover. I call Leighton CASIO, others call him 'Captain Oasis'. That would explain the schizophrenia.

Similarly the lawyer turned newsreader Simon Dallow, his father was a Police Superintendent and found to be "not very good" so he and became a Waitakere City Councillor, which is a holding pen for people who are 'not very good' – often with a history of sexual deviancy. Mr Dallow Sr. was a twin and his brother was a Police Inspector in Remuera who was caught rooting transvestites in a public toilet, so he committed suicide.

We in the business call this Counter-Intelligence and point out that the role of talkshow hosts is to cocoon the public in a myasma of ignorance resulting in a public debating non-issues while the real matters go unchallenged.

Despite this, Simon Dallow is one of the best, it's just that they're all so bad. He has tried, it's just that his family history has compromised him, so now he's another talking hairdo.

Simon Dallow – nephew of a tranny-rooting cop.

"As I've said before, talkshow hosts wrap the public in a seal of ignorance, and anything beyond a talkshow host is madness, utter madness."

Kerry Woodham and Danny Watson face-off.

Murray Deaker – severe depression. Mike Hosking – bisexual child sex abuser. Paul Holmes – bisexual drug addict. Leighton Smith – ASIO/ CIA.

NewstalkZB

Bain Distraction

The CIA ran the Bain murder re-trial, and tried to rig it to find the then 17-year-old David Bain guilty again of murdering his entire family (despite all evidence to the contrary) . . . so that the police are not found to be **'a paedophile movement fronting as the peace police'** as run by the CIA paedophile John Banks (former Minister of Police) . . . in order to take over Auckland, with the Bain murder retrial as the primary distraction.

I've met David Bain and so have my retired Intelligence contacts and we all agree that David Bain has a maximum 20 seconds of murder in him before he would burn out. The Bain murders (five of them) were done by someone who was used to killing, and most likely by several people at the same time.

I feel sorry for David Bain, since the person who has championed him is the former All Black Joe Karam, who is a good friend of Peter Williams QC (a treacherous sell-out) and has taken a lot of instructions from Williams (they used to play tennis together), not knowing that Peter Williams is an old dying MI-6 agent, compromised in that he is a bisexual MI-6 heroin trafficker, or at least Terry Clark's financial and legal lieutenant with foreknowledge of many intended murders, who then champions the innocent and exhausts the public, so the guilty is never charged. It is Peter Williams job to protect the guilty, and that's how he does it. Often he doesn't practise law, he has other lawyers do it, and just runs things from the background.

Williams has been dying for the last decade and has spent a fortune keeping himself alive, although this isn't the reason why he doesn't' pay his bills. (The mafia boss owes me five grand. The court referee exposed him for writing "a slavery contract".) He's just tight because he's compromised by the Australian Anti-Corruption Team (AACT).

A Compromised Government always has a role in Heroin Trafficking

Australian Prime Minister Malcolm Fraser had a meeting in his limousine with the Australian detectives involved, just when they were preparing for the court case on the drug trafficking and murders:

"We are restructuring the **'Commonwealth Police'** into the **'Federal Police'** giving them wider powers, greater scope, including tracking narcotics." The **'Federal Narcotics Bureau'** was disbanded" with MI-6 intervention.

Earlier, Sir Robert Mark conducted a review in 1978 and recommended the **Australian Federal Police** (AFP) be formed: "Administratively, a police force should be seen to be accountable to government . . . Operationally, it should be seen to be as free as possible from political influence . . . Any operational decision by a police force unduly subject to political interference will never be generally acceptable with consequent impairment of the reputation and status of the force . . . The ideal relationship is that the Chief Police Officer should pay the closest attention to the views of those whom he is administratively accountable to but that he, and he alone, should make operational decisions" **. . . so the usual blah blah blah lies and cover-ups.**

Prime Minister Malcolm Fraser (11 Nov. 1975–11 March 1983)

"On 15 June 1979 the Australian Federal Police Act established the Australian Federal Police (AFP) which merged the Commonwealth Police, Narcotics Bureau and the Australian Capital Territory police (ACT) which covered Canberra.

"There was three years of police association procrastination in the allegiance, and it wasn't until July 1982 that the Commonwealth Police Officers' Association (CPOA) and the Federal Police Association (FPA) merged establishing the Australian Federal Police Association (AFPA).

"The next month (August 1982) the Commonwealth Police Officers' Association changed their name to the Australian Federal Police Association (AFPA) – so like New Zealand, it was a change in name only – and in 1989 they incorporated all State, Territory and Federal Police branches, and affiliated with the Australian Council of Trade Unions – which is another large scale take over the country – a crime movement – with the Australian Federal Police Association lobbying for all Australian Police Associations/ unions under the guise of research, when really it's emetic shock testing on a public with ever decreasing interest in the crimes of the police."[27]

So what happened? Things were getting hot. It was becoming widely known amongst the public that the police were another gang involved in drug trafficking and murders – all the while receiving backhanders in their sandwiches wrapped in brown paper. So instead of charging the police and tainting the organisations, they created a new name, merged, let a few go, had the union associations adher slowly, then change their name, then reformed under a new union group – essentially MI-6 crime governance – and all was sweet in 'The Lucky Country'.

All of these changes (1978–89) went down during the Mr Asia heroin trafficking (1976–84 including the delayed 121 day trial).

PM Muldoon
(12 Dec. 1975–14/26 July 1984).

Undercover: "The heads of the new 'Australian Federal Police' decided who they would re-employ and sack. The straight coppers were declared redundant, some of the too-hot coppers became customs officers and cleared heroin trafficking cops through customs, and the really crooked ones rose to the top of the Federal Police. One of the most bent was arrested only recently."

Spymaster: "Around the same time, Prime Minister Robert Muldoon created the Nomads gang. He got Bully Hynes pulled out of the can (jail) and told him he was now a gang leader for Nomads."

Army Intel.: "Bully Hynes was named after a pirate in the South Island, who also helped found Dunedin."

Spymaster: "A lot of Maoris name their children after fighters or boxers, and Bully was no exception. Rob Muldoon told Hynes he was to take over Foxton – to guard the shipment of heroin from Thailand and Turkey (as arranged by Bob Trimbole/ Bob Jones & Bob Muldoon) as it was transported across the beach at Manukau Beach/ Waikawa Beach, just south of Levin and north of Otaki (100 km north of Wellington) – called 'The Cannibal Coast'.

They still use the three Bobs to this day to run the SIS – different Bobs, same name.

The Police sent one of their most crooked District Commanders to run this area (Foxton) out of Palmerston North. If you crossed him you were called 'Marked' – Marked for death', or in the case of Bully Hynes, his girlfriend was 'Marked for an accident'."

Wikipedia: "In 1977 the Nomads split from Black Power". **Yeah right!**

---

[27] Australian Federal Police Association, History. They really mix things up. The Police make their mergers sound honourable, when they are an ongoing cover-up for their ongoing crimes, and the end result is only a slight change of name, but all crimes of the police are washed, and now all under one new proud roof.

MI-6 takes over Australia

Admiral Sir John Kerr, Governor-General and slave to the Queen's heroin trafficking.

Australia wasn't just a 'dumping ground for excess convicts'. That's an Intelligence cover story. In the wake of the world shattering American Revolution (1775–83), Europeans settled Australia (1788–) as pro-American Republican political prisoners. They knew the British Crown/ Central Bank financial oligarchy was rape and pillaging the world so they formed the Labor Party.

When PM Gough Whitlam's Labour Government (5 December 1972–11 November 1975) threatened to 'buy back the farm' from Her Majesty's mineral cartels for the good of Australians, Queen Elizabeth II had Prime Minister Whitlam sacked, with the help of the Nugan Hand Bank.

Opposition Leader Malcolm Fraser worked with the Australian Governor-General Sir John Kerr and revoked Whitlam's commission on 11 November 1975 on the condition that he (Fraser) be immediately sworn in as caretaker prime minister, dissolve both Houses, and issue writs for an election.

So that was an inside job with MI-6 help.
You Aussies keep talking about it.

MI-6 takes over New Zealand

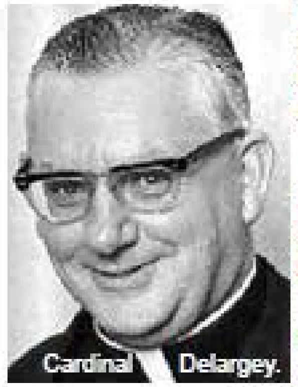
Cardinal Delargey.

Muldoon asked Cardinal Delargey for his current crop of priest trainees to go into the SIS for him; 35 years later they killed one of the SIS priests with instant cancer as he was believed to be talking to the NSW Royal Commission into paedophilia.

But more importantly Prime Minister Muldoon was worried the New Zealand Governor-General would do the same as Australia, so he called in the New Zealand Chiefs of Staff to stop it. It wasn't too hard to motivate them after all Muldoon had been in the military, militaries are ultimately funded by drugs, and the Governor-Generals were a soft touch. So here they are . . .

Blundell.

Sir Denis Blundell GCMG, GCVO, KBE, QSO (1907–1984) was Governor-General (27 September 1972–5 October 1977). He had served as Lieutenant-Colonel in the 2 NZEF (1939–44) and High Commissioner to Britain (1968–72) and since Britain ran WWII, Tavistock (hence Muldoon) and heroin trafficking – not to mention New Zealand's High Commission in London . . . so when Muldoon needed to get aproval for his heroin trafficking, he simply got MI-6 to phone the Governor-General who would influence anything and everything the WWII/ Tavistock/ heroin/ Muldoon required right through parliament, the judiciary and police.

And when Denis Blundell retired as G-G, there was a three week gap to slip things through (5–26 Oct. 1977) then we got . . .

Sir Keith Jacka Holyoake KG, GCMG, CH, QSO, KStJ (1904–83) who was the oldest Governor-General in New Zealand's history (26 October 1977–25 October 1980).

He wanted to retire from politics as his marriage was on the rocks via an aboriginal welterweight boxer called 'Buster Weir' who had been shagging Jacka's missus in the farm shed down by the river. Sir and Lady Holyoake virtually never spoke.

Sir Keith Jacka Holyoake had been National Party Prime Minister (20 September 1957–12 December 1957) after the removal of Sydney Holland ('Harry Fat') from parliament stuffed between two mattresses, thrown in the back of a red post office van and driven to Porirua Mental Hospital where he died four years later.

Brother Holyoake.

Holyoake was National Prime Minister again (12 Dec. 1960–7 Feb. 1972) then served as Governor-General for only three years because he was so old (aged 71–74) and could offer little or resistance, due to his compromised history of being cuckolded by an aboriginal, his age, his Freemasonry status, and his **Freeman of the City of London** status – one of the highest ceremonial civic honours in the Commonwealth, it also means Kiwi Keith could ride into the financial square mile of London bearing arms. Fat chance – good idea!

Holyoake spoke in a diplomatic plummy voice, so they maintained that his nickname was 'Kiwi Keith' from childhood, but he was an absolutely dedicated Freemason, with direct links to MI-6.

When Holyoake was Prime Minister, he was ultimately entertained by Christine Keeler and Mandy Rice-Davies[28] who were Mossad whores lent to MI-6 for the duration of the 60s. Holyoake went to England negotiating over frigates and returned to New Zealand with unnecessary frigates.

When the MI-6 Tavistock Muldoon became Prime Minister in 1975 he created a role for the Freemason Holyoake – "sinecure Minister of State" – which has little or no responsibility, labour, or active service, and no real day-to-day responsibilities. 'Sinecure' is essentially an easy salary and titles in exchange for plumby-voice-patronage when required – and due to his age, Freemasonry and City of London links, he would never be a threat to Muldoon's heroin trafficking government – which was essentially an extension of MI-6 – as was Holyoake.

In 1977, Queen Elizabeth II announced Holyoake's appointment as G-G (Government-Gigilo) to a totally surprised New Zealand and many saw it as a controversial political appointment. Usually the most compromised person (who knows where the bodies are buried) becomes Governor-General. Holyoake no longer wanted to be in politics, and G-G gave him the opportunity to resign from the Pahiatua Electorate causing a bi-election.

Nice out.

---

[28] Mandy Rice-Davies had been married to an Israeli agent, lived in Israel and did busking there in 1966. She also had sex training in Israel, for Israel, against the British and her colonies.

Mandy.
Jacka.
Christine.

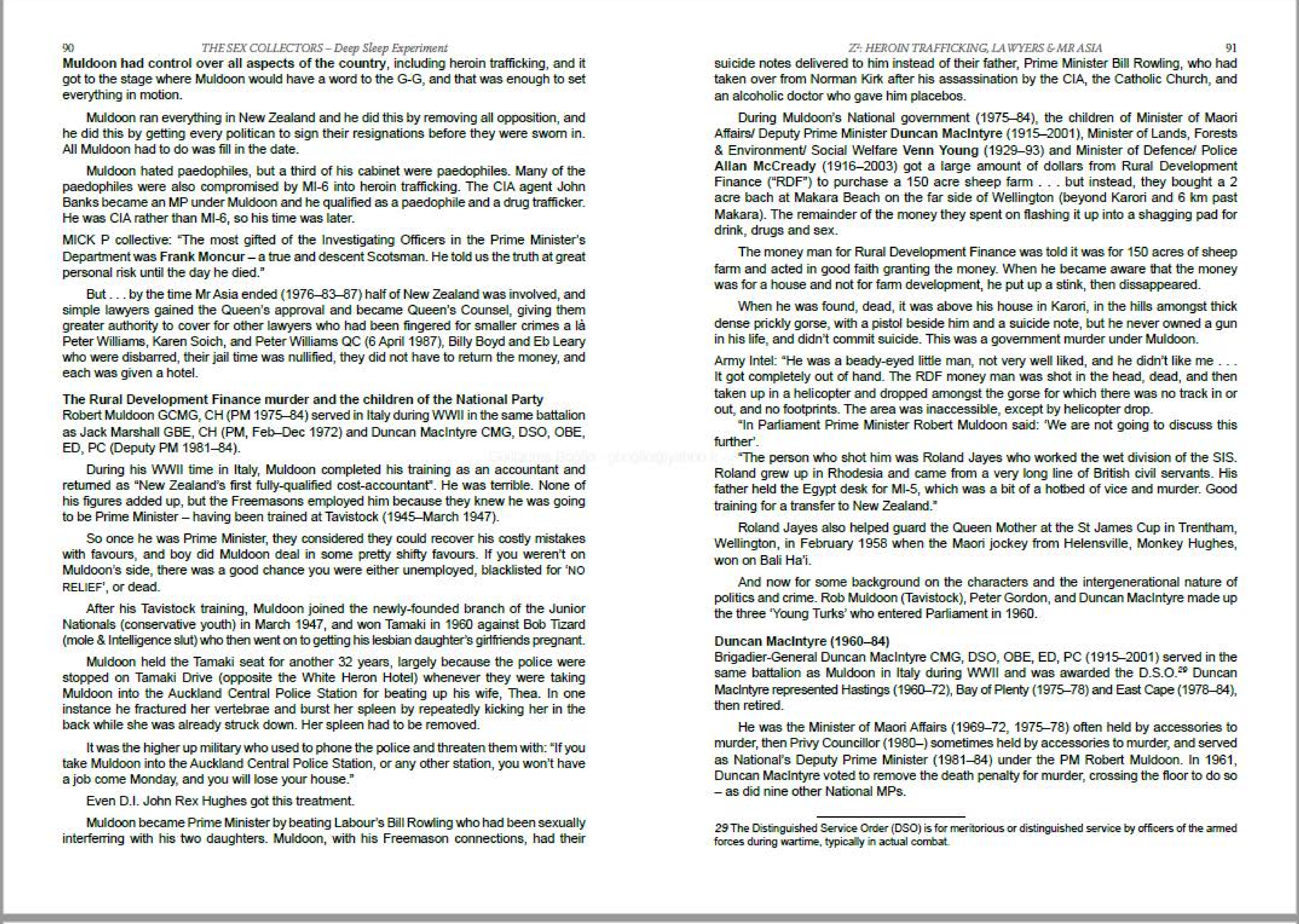

Muldoon had control over all aspects of the country, including heroin trafficking, and it got to the stage where Muldoon would have a word to the G-G, and that was enough to set everything in motion.

Muldoon ran everything in New Zealand and he did this by removing all opposition, and he did this by getting every politican to sign their resignations before they were sworn in. All Muldoon had to do was fill in the date.

Muldoon hated paedophiles, but a third of his cabinet were paedophiles. Many of the paedophiles were also compromised by MI-6 into heroin trafficking. The CIA agent John Banks became an MP under Muldoon and he qualified as a paedophile and a drug trafficker. He was CIA rather than MI-6, so his time was later.

MICK P collective: "The most gifted of the Investigating Officers in the Prime Minister's Department was **Frank Moncur** – a true and descent Scotsman. He told us the truth at great personal risk until the day he died."

But . . . by the time Mr Asia ended (1976–83–87) half of New Zealand was involved, and simple lawyers gained the Queen's approval and became Queen's Counsel, giving them greater authority to cover for other lawyers who had been fingered for smaller crimes a là Peter Williams, Karen Soich, and Peter Williams QC (6 April 1987), Billy Boyd and Eb Leary who were disbarred, their jail time was nullified, they did not have to return the money, and each was given a hotel.

The Rural Development Finance murder and the children of the National Party

Robert Muldoon GCMG, CH (PM 1975–84) served in Italy during WWII in the same battalion as Jack Marshall GBE, CH (PM, Feb–Dec 1972) and Duncan MacIntyre CMG, DSO, OBE, ED, PC (Deputy PM 1981–84).

During his WWII time in Italy, Muldoon completed his training as an accountant and returned as "New Zealand's first fully-qualified cost-accountant". He was terrible. None of his figures added up, but the Freemasons employed him because they knew he was going to be Prime Minister – having been trained at Tavistock (1945–March 1947).

So once he was Prime Minister, they considered they could recover his costly mistakes with favours, and boy did Muldoon deal in some pretty shifty favours. If you weren't on Muldoon's side, there was a good chance you were either unemployed, blacklisted for 'NO RELIEF', or dead.

After his Tavistock training, Muldoon joined the newly-founded branch of the Junior Nationals (conservative youth) in March 1947, and won Tamaki in 1960 against Bob Tizard (mole & Intelligence slut) who then went on to getting his lesbian daughter's girlfriends pregnant.

Muldoon held the Tamaki seat for another 32 years, largely because the police were stopped on Tamaki Drive (opposite the White Heron Hotel) whenever they were taking Muldoon into the Auckland Central Police Station for beating up his wife, Thea. In one instance he fractured her vertebrae and burst her spleen by repeatedly kicking her in the back while she was already struck down. Her spleen had to be removed.

It was the higher up military who used to phone the police and threaten them with: "If you take Muldoon into the Auckland Central Police Station, or any other station, you won't have a job come Monday, and you will lose your house."

Even D.I. John Rex Hughes got this treatment.

Muldoon became Prime Minister by beating Labour's Bill Rowling who had been sexually interferring with his two daughters. Muldoon, with his Freemason connections, had their suicide notes delivered to him instead of their father, Prime Minister Bill Rowling, who had taken over from Norman Kirk after his assassination by the CIA, the Catholic Church, and an alcoholic doctor who gave him placebos.

During Muldoon's National government (1975–84), the children of Minister of Maori Affairs/ Deputy Prime Minister **Duncan MacIntyre** (1915–2001), Minister of Lands, Forests & Environment/ Social Welfare **Venn Young** (1929–93) and Minister of Defence/ Police **Allan McCready** (1916–2003) got a large amount of dollars from Rural Development Finance ("RDF") to purchase a 150 acre sheep farm . . . but instead, they bought a 2 acre bach at Makara Beach on the far side of Wellington (beyond Karori and 6 km past Makara). The remainder of the money they spent on flashing it up into a shagging pad for drink, drugs and sex.

The money man for Rural Development Finance was told it was for 150 acres of sheep farm and acted in good faith granting the money. When he became aware that the money was for a house and not for farm development, he put up a stink, then dissapeared.

When he was found, dead, it was above his house in Karori, in the hills amongst thick dense prickly gorse, with a pistol beside him and a suicide note, but he never owned a gun in his life, and didn't commit suicide. This was a government murder under Muldoon.

Army Intel: "He was a beady-eyed little man, not very well liked, and he didn't like me . . . It got completely out of hand. The RDF money man was shot in the head, dead, and then taken up in a helicopter and dropped amongst the gorse for which there was no track in or out, and no footprints. The area was inaccessible, except by helicopter drop.

"In Parliament Prime Minister Robert Muldoon said: 'We are not going to discuss this further'.

"The person who shot him was Roland Jayes who worked the wet division of the SIS. Roland grew up in Rhodesia and came from a very long line of British civil servants. His father held the Egypt desk for MI-5, which was a bit of a hotbed of vice and murder. Good training for a transfer to New Zealand."

Roland Jayes also helped guard the Queen Mother at the St James Cup in Trentham, Wellington, in February 1958 when the Maori jockey from Helensville, Monkey Hughes, won on Bali Ha'i.

And now for some background on the characters and the intergenerational nature of politics and crime. Rob Muldoon (Tavistock), Peter Gordon, and Duncan MacIntyre made up the three 'Young Turks' who entered Parliament in 1960.

Duncan MacIntyre (1960–84)

Brigadier-General Duncan MacIntyre CMG, DSO, OBE, ED, PC (1915–2001) served in the same battalion as Muldoon in Italy during WWII and was awarded the D.S.O.[29] Duncan MacIntyre represented Hastings (1960–72), Bay of Plenty (1975–78) and East Cape (1978–84), then retired.

He was the Minister of Maori Affairs (1969–72, 1975–78) often held by accessories to murder, then Privy Councillor (1980–) sometimes held by accessories to murder, and served as National's Deputy Prime Minister (1981–84) under the PM Robert Muldoon. In 1961, Duncan MacIntyre voted to remove the death penalty for murder, crossing the floor to do so – as did nine other National MPs.

---

[29] The Distinguished Service Order (DSO) is for meritorious or distinguished service by officers of the armed forces during wartime, typically in actual combat.

Duncan's son, **Hamish MacIntyre**, was elected to Parliament (1990–96, Manawatu) and represented National, the Liberal Party and Alliance. Dissatisfied with the monetarist policy of moustached lesbian Ruth Richardson (known as 'Ruthanasia') he formed the New Zealand Liberal Party with National breakaway Gilbert Myles, and Frank Grover. This was soon absorbed into the left-wing Alliance Party run by the stickman, Jim Anderton. Hamish MacIntyre then stood for Alliance in 1996, failed and bowed out of politics, but he still gained enough public recognition and party hopping allegiance never to be charge with accessory to the murder of the Rural Development Finance money man.

Venn Young (1966–90)

Venn Spearman Young (16 Feb. 1929–14 Jan. 1993) was a dairy farmer, rugby player, Anglican and National MP (1966–90, Egmont, then Waitotara), then a Cabinet Minister under Muldoon.

Venn Young rooted transvestites.

Venn Young was also a drag queen fucker (right) – quite famous for it in New Plymouth and Wellington, and his wife kicked him out for it. Young tried and failed to legalise homosexuality in 1975, so we had some time left.

In mid-1974, Venn Young introduced a Private Members' Bill to make homosexual acts legal between consenting adults over 21 (then over 20) and was defeated 34 to 29 on 4 July 1975 with 23 'hiding-their-sexuality-as-many-politicians-are-bent-behind-closed-doors' abstained. This alienated Young from many of his National (conservative) colleagues, but not enough to prevent them committing a crime together.

Muldoon became Prime Minister (12 December 1975–14/26 July 1984) and appointed Venn Young as Minister of 'Lands, Forests, and Environment' (1975–81) and Public Works, then Minister of Social Welfare (1981–84). Venn Young retired at the 1990 Election and died three years later from a heart attack, leaving a wife and nine children.

His son, Jonathan Young became a primary school teacher, a Maori language teacher, a National Financial Administrator for the AGNZ (Agriculture New Zealand, Fielding), a Senior Minister at City Church Waitakere in West Auckland for 18 years, then won the New Plymouth seat for National (2008–) defeating Harry 'dances-like-a-chicken' Duynhoven – a collossal wanker in any mirror . . . but by less than 1 %.

This is all very slightly interesting, but it was Venn Young's daughter, Annette Young, that was involved in the Makara Beach shagpad/ accessory to murder. It does however go to show that politics is an intergenerational crime family.

MICK P: "Annette Young, entered Parliament for a short time" although I can't find a record of it. Wikipedia shows the "Annette's" dominated by Annette King, the Minister of Health who trafficked heroin, then became the Minister of Police, then the Minister of Justice.

Allan McCready (1960–78)

Allan McCready (1916–2003) QSO was an National MP (1960–72, Otaki, 1972–78, Manawatu) Minister of Defense (9 February–8 December 1972 & 22 July 1975–13 December 1978), Minister of Police (1975–78), then retired.

Army Intel. I: "In 1943, five Kiwi soldiers (one of them Allan McCready) were on final leave back in New Zealand when they dragged a housemaid around behind the Catholic Church – St Mary of the Angels, in Boulcott Street, Wellington – and gang raped her. The group were charged. It went before the Magistrate. They were prosecuted, and sentenced to the cognisance of their commanding officer who placed them on a ship the next day, to serve overseas at war."

Army Intel. II: "In the old days there were no passports and everything went under the auspices of the military. If you had any gripe with a person/ criminal travelling, you took it up with the military and they served you with a big pack of lies, either on plate, on a tray, or straight in the teeth. This lasted until the end of the Vietnam War (1975) when passports were enforced.[30]

"He should have been prosecuted and locked in the can . . . There were prisoners serving for murder that were allowed out of jail to serve in WWII. Despite that, McCready should have been imprisoned for gang rape. Instead he was made Minister of Police."

Gang rapist, Allan McCready, became Minister of Defence (1972, 1975–78), Minister of Police (1975–78) and was then knighted as Sir Allan McCready QSO. Who says knighthoods aren't a cover for paedophilia, murder and file theft. Now we can add gang-banger.

Army Intel. III: "To place a compromised person in charge of Defense is a Counter-Intelligence measure, and to elevate him to a knighthood just goes to show who was running the Counter-Intelligence operation – the British – MI-6 again."

But what we get on the news is the small news, and even that comes through fringe channels: ". . . debates amongst National Party MPs during the early 1960s over the issue [unionism] brought considerable tensions. And when things get hysterical in National Party caucus meetings, as we all know, things get *real* rough. Tom Shand, the fourth ranked Cabinet minister, incensed his colleagues so much with his support of retaining compulsory unionism that at one point during a debate, two backbench fellow National MP's physically assaulted him: Allan McCready . . . 'got Shand in a headlock' while Geoff Sim 'belted Shand with a stick'."[31]

Muldoon was a bit of a masochist

Army Intel.: "Private Len H. had a temper that went off once a year, and then you didn't want to get in his way. He was based in Italy and shared a tent with Muldoon.

"The roads leading up to Casino were all pre-registered by the Germans, which meant they knew the range, were dropping shells right on the top of the road, and knew how to shoot and bomb them at night.

"One day this Pole truck driver got mesmerised by the shelling and froze, so Private Len H. went up and bashed him and told someone else to drive the truck.

"The Military Police wanted to arrest Private Len H. but the Maori truck driver, whose job it was to remove the blown up trucks off the road, stood behind Len H. and backed him saying to the Poms: 'If you want him, you have to go through me' . . . and the Poms said: 'Let's take another view of this – Poles versus Kiwis – there's no reason for us to get involved.' And the Corporal said: 'Yes, there's no reason for us to get involved'; and the Lance Corporal said: 'Yes, there's no reason for us to get involved'; and the Pommy Private said: 'Yes, there's no reason for us to get involved'; so no one got involved.

---

[30] Wikipedia: "The United Nations held a travel conference in 1963, but passport guidelines did not result from it. Passport standardisation came about in 1980, under the auspices of the International Civil Aviation Organization (ICAO)."

[31] 'Rumble In The Bumble: Violence in NZ Politics', Oliver Woods, 27 February 2008; http://nzquest.blogspot.com/2008/02/rumble-in-bumble-violence-in-nz.html.

"On the banks of the River Po, near Florence, Italy, Private Len H. shared a tent with Robert Muldoon while he was studying to become New Zealand's first fully qualified cost-accountant. Private Len H. hated Muldoon and somebody somewhere else got pissed. Having had a few drinks himself, Private Len H. went for Muldoon and hit him with an army canteen full of plonk on the side of the noggen, and then whacked him with a big crescent on the other side of the head . . . He tried to kill him . . . perhaps he was a fortune teller.

"Strangely Muldoon was so impressed, he promoted Private Len H. alongside him as he rose through the ranks of the National Party.

"Len H. became a Presbyterian Elder and totally bent accountant, as bent as a fishhook in line for huge share issues from Muldoon, but then so was Muldoon – a bent accountant (nothing added up) and in line for his own share issues.

"Loved a bit of violence did Muldoon . . . even on himself."

Muldoon was a bit of a sadist (a lot of people had mortal accidents under him)

Army Intelligence: "A lot of people had accidents under Muldoon. The caretaker on Fitzgerald's farm (which was only about 2 acres) officially shot himself, but he was blown away by the SAS. This was at Makara (6 km from Makara Beach) below the graben (depressed land bordered by parallel earthquake faults) in the 1970s.

"Makara was a bit of a place for killing, but most of the murders were done over the other side of the Wellington Heads at Red Rocks which then didn't have a coastal road. Red Rocks was the true killing ground for the underworld in Wellington.

"There's a stream that runs down to the sea with shingles that are particularly easy to dig. On one occasion a missing young blonde girl was found there, but she wasn't reported as the finder was burying a pistol he had just broken up."

The media can create something out of hot air, but when the air gets hot . . .

Army Intel. I: "The Rural Development Finance murder/ children of the National Party shagpad became known as the 'Fitzgerald Loan Affair', but never told the full story.

"National MP Kenneth 'Ken' Mark Comber (1939–) was a fine rugby player for New Zealand Universities, and won Wellington Central (1972–81) by one vote and that's why he was called 'Landslide Ken'."

Army Intel. II: "In 1966 he married Diane Holyoake in a politically incestuous marriage. His father-in-law was Sir Keith Holyoake became Prime Minister and Governor-General. Ken Comber was supposed to take over from Muldoon as Prime Minister but it never turned out that way."

Army Intel. I: "Ken Comber freed up Maori land at Kinlock in Taupo. No sooner had he done so than the Holyoake family trust bought it at a good price, then the Kinlock development started. They built hundreds of holiday homes and made an absolute fortune and the Maoris, already paid out for their land, lost the opportunity to make improvements on it. Ken Comber also got entangled in the Fitzgerald Loan Affair."

Army Intel. I: "This involved a scrap over Fitzgerald and the son of a Cabinet Minister who was marrying Duncan MacIntyre's daughter, in another incestuous marriage within the National Party – one of these power sharing marriages. They ended up going to the High Court over the Minister of Agriculture, but the court was got at – as everything was for sale under Muldoon – and when there's enough heat, the media simply disappears.

**"The media can create something out of hot air,
but when the air gets hot, the media evapourates."**

Army Intel. II: "Then they had another bank to save small towns, so a grant was given to Fielding to buy an icecream company to boost the town, but it put 300 people in Waipukarau out of work. There was a meeting to try and stop it. Gordon Christie was the Labour MP. The National MP was a big tall upper crust Tory and former Parson (d. 2007). Neither turned up to the meeting."

After the murder of Norman Kirk, the absence of Bill 'Peewee Herman' Rowling, and the ravages of S&M Muldoon, things just got worse with the transvestite-rooter David Lange.

Prime Minister David Lange's Fat Frolicking Foibles (1984–89)

Former 2IC of the SIS: "David Lange was a disturbed man. He was disturbed by his wife Naomi who failed him on all fronts, but she was English and therefore more or less a cover wife – someone stupid enough to turn a blind eye to her husband's sex with transvestites . . . you can't get much more British than that."

Army Intel. I: "Lange went to the SIS and the CIA and asked them to remove the prostitute in drag who had given him a blowjob by the duck pond in the Auckland Domain and phoned him the next day asking for money.

"They demurred on it (wouldn't do it).

"ASIO then accepted control of the mission and they let it to ASIS who did it.

"He/she was killed in Sydney and Lange was then blackmailed over this by the Australians.

"So then the obese David Lange removed 'Criminal libel and slander' to cover for this transvestite rooting."

David Lange was a disturbed man with disturbing glasses, a disturbing hairdo, disturbing eyes, a mouth that never stopped eating, and an English wife with a monobrow and a penchant for cardigan Methodism.

Army Intel. II: "David Lange had a problem with sleeping as he had too much fat and not enough muscle to burn off the food he had eaten. Parliament's Bellamy's restaurant soaked the food in all sorts of fat and kept three friers going for the politicians. This kept them stupid. So Lange would drag race cars around Wellington at night in preparation for the race in Levin. He was eventually beaten by the determine cook, Alison Holst.

"Late one night, he hit this Shelly Bay Air Force base employee outside the Waterloo pub by the railway station in Wellington. The employee was drunk at the time and not hurt, so it turned into something of a publicity stunt for Subaru cars."

Army Intel. I: "Lange also ran over a naval reserve seaman one night while showing another transvestite around the docks – like they didn't already know their way around. The seaman was then interrogated in Wellington Hospital by an Intelligence Officer who ascertained that he was too thick to get into the navy, so the I.O. arranged a navy interview and gave him instructions, which he memorised.

"In the interiew he said: 'I saw someone in high black fishnet stockings getting out of Lange's vehicle', and that got him into the navy, into a sleeping job. Now he's the stone painter at the Devonport Naval Base. He paints the roadside stones – then he starts again and paints the roadside stones."

I believe the song at the back of his head, which he can't quite grasp, goes something like this:

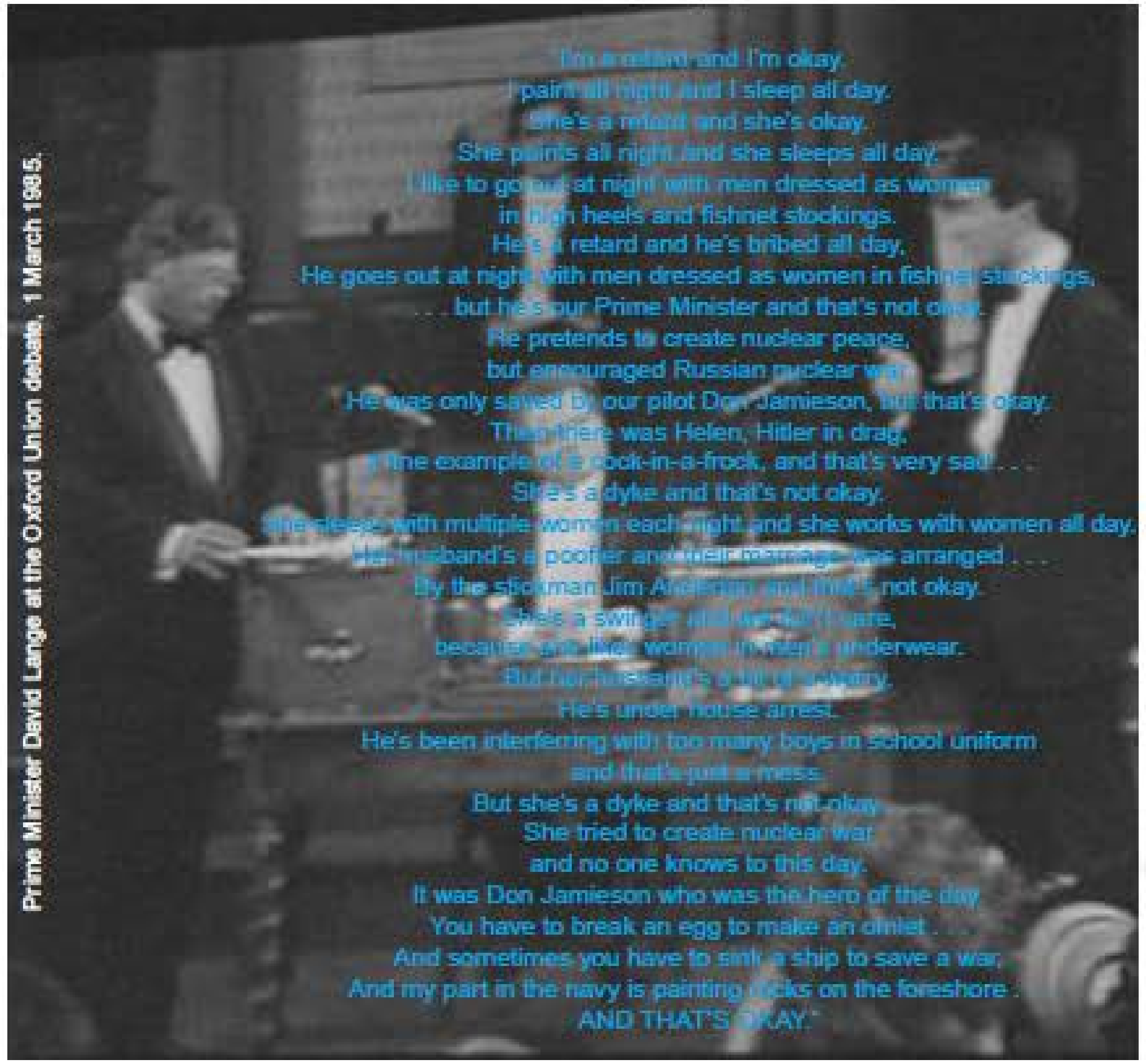

Prime Minister David Lange at the Oxford Union debate, 1 March 1985.

I'm a retard and I'm okay.
I paint all night and I sleep all day.
She's a retard and she's okay.
She paints all night and she sleeps all day.
I like to go out at night with men dressed as women
in high heels and fishnet stockings.
He's a retard and he's bribed all day,
He goes out at night with men dressed as women in fishnet stockings,
. . . but he's our Prime Minister and that's not okay.
He pretends to create nuclear peace,
but encouraged Russian nuclear war.
He was only saved by our pilot Don Jamieson, but that's okay.
Then there was Helen, Hitler in drag,
a fine example of a cock-in-a-frock, and that's very sad . . .
She's a dyke and that's not okay.
She sleeps with multiple women each night and she works with women all day.
Her husband's a poofter and their marriage was arranged . . .
By the stockman Jim Anderton and that's not okay.
She's a swinger and we don't care,
because she likes women in men's underwear.
But her husband's a bit of a worry.
He's under house arrest.
He's been interfering with too many boys in school uniform
and that's just a mess.
But she's a dyke and that's not okay.
She tried to create nuclear war
and no one knows to this day.
It was Don Jamieson who was the hero of the day.
You have to break an egg to make an omlet . . .
And sometimes you have to sink a ship to save a war,
And my part in the navy is painting rocks on the foreshore . . .
AND THAT'S OKAY."

Prime Minister Norman Kirk's Assassination (8 December 1972–31 August 1974)
Before the ravages of Muldoon and the transvestite-rooting of Lange, we had Norman Kirk – the talking whistle. Norm Kirk's friend: "He used to complain that he had spent so much time on uncomfortable seats in school halls attending the most boring meetings, that by the time he got the big job – he was stuffed. Then, in the first ten days, when the Yanks and the Brits came to present their credentials, 'they were actually twisting my arm behind my back and tying both ankles, as they dictated to me what was going to happen'. 'There was nothing I could do', he used to say."

Army Intel. II: "Norm Kirk ran a 'Think Tank' which included Bill Sutch, Gerald O'Brien, and Bob Tizard. Kirk wanted his Labour government to take over all the lucrative insurance in the country – to nationalise all insurance policies – to buy them out with a moratorium (they wouldn't pay out the insurance companies for another ten years) – then there would be no need for tax. When the "nationalised" word got out to the insurance companies, people rang O'Brien from all around the world every two minutes. They even rang him at the picture theatre and left messages. This was an official government pressure cooker to make him go mad. Gerald O'Brien (RNZAF, 1943–46) was married to a Russian communist so he was easily compromised by his strange sexual practises. MPs, communists and the RNZAF are renowned for it."

Internal Affairs Undercover: "Gerald O'Brien was flying up the North Island from Wellington to Auckland when he pulled a gun on this 13-year-old schoolboy and said: 'My name is Gerald O'Brien. I'm the MP for Island Bay and I want you to give me a blow job'. The gun was an air pistol but it fired a globular round. The boy was in someone else's school uniform, from another school, but he turned out to be a 16-year-old boy on some sort of secret mission (probably drug trafficking), so because he was over 16, the crime of 'propositioning' could not be enforced. Gerald was a not very subtle Catholic. He had used the same gun and the same language in Wellington on Mt Victoria two weeks prior. The Labour Party then said: 'Oopps, Gerald O'Brien's got a drinking problem. We can have a paedophile, yes, but alcoholic, no, so he has to go.' I was in the District Court in Wellington when Gerald O'Brien was charged with making the boy give him a blowjob at gunpoint on Mt Vic.. The funny thing was the Judge and Defense Counsel were pissed off that the cops had charged him. Gerald O'Brien was the Labour Party president, then became a trustee of 'The Norman Kirk Memorial Trust'."

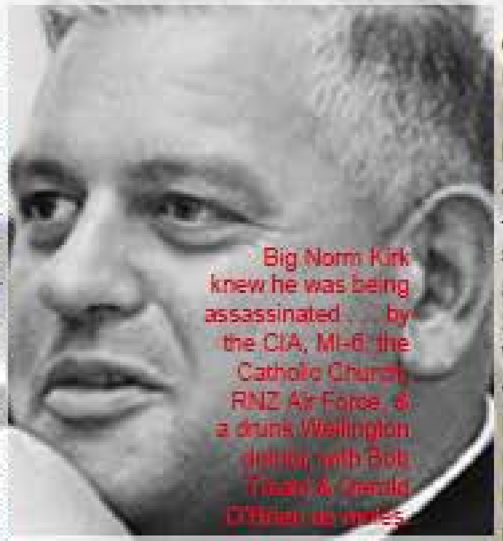

Big Norm Kirk knew he was being assassinated . . . by the CIA, MI-6, the Catholic Church, RNZ Air Force, & a drunk Wellington dentist with Bob Tizard & Gerald O'Brien [illegible]

NZSIS: "Bob Tizard (husband of Cath Tizard) was the mole that ratted on Norman Kirk leading to his assassination . . . Rufus Youngblood was a Negro college football player who joined the CIA and worked at the American Embassy in Wellington as a gardener – code for bodyguard. He was pleasant, tall and skinny, looked like a cross between Sydney Poitier and Barack Obama, and used to drink at the Shamrock Hotel, the Irish pub on Rintoul Street in Wellington, where, if you pretended to be a guest, you could stay after six and up'til midnight. Here, Rufus talked about Jazz and the history of blues. Rufus Youngblood was famous for throwing himself over Jackie Kennedy after JFK was shot multiple times with the single magic bullet . . . Rufus Youngblood had relatives in New Zealand and was seeing them at the time of Kirk's death. The CIA motto is 'To protect American business' and Rufus was qualified . . . Labour then let their feet follow their assassination suspicions, eventually deselected Gerald O'Brien for Island Bay (1969–78) and replaced him with Frank O'Flynn. O'Brien then ran against O'Flynn, so there was no love lost from either side.

Reginald Delargey's mother died when he was 14 while he was at Sacred Heart 'masochists' College at 250 West Tamaki Rd,Glendowie, Auckland. Three years later he went to the Holy Cross College in Mosgeil (15 km southwest of Dunedin) and studied for a Priesthood, then went to the Pontifical Urbaniana University in Rome – "remember the Day of Atonement and deny, lie, deny" – from where he was ordained as a priest for the Diocese of Auckland in 1938.[32]

Priest Delargey (10 December 1914–29 January 1979) then worked in a parish in Takapuna and at St Patrick's Cathedral (43 Wyndham St, CBD, where I crashed the Nazi funeral) and was then the Director of Catholic Social Services for the Diocese of Auckland (1940–47) just when all the children were missing their protective biological fathers during WWII.

Priest Delargey was then chaplain at St Peter's College (Mountain Rd, Epsom) and also served as director of the Catholic Youth Movement (both circa 1950–68). Here he briefed the Catholic Brothers in the morning mass and attended to the boys in the afternoon.

---

[32] Wikipedia: Norman Kirk; Peter Cardinal McKeefry; Reginald Cardinal Delargey; St. Patrick's; St Peter's College, Auckland.

Reginald John Cardinal Delargey was the Roman Catholic Bishop of Auckland, then the Cardinal Archbishop of Wellington and the Metropolitan of New Zealand from 1974. His title was Cardinal-Priest of Immacolata al Tiburtino.

The previous Archbishop of Wellington and Metropolitan of New Zealand was Cardinal Peter McKeefry – the son of a police constable. He recruited priest from Ireland and developed 39 new parishes (1947–69) most of them associated with primary schools – and paedophilia. New Zealand's first Cardinal, McKeefry (74), died on 18 November 1973.

Cardinal Reginald John Delargey replaced him on 25 April 1974 . . . four months later Prime Minister Norman Kirk was dead (6 January 1923–31 August 1974).

Spymaster: "Cardinal Delargey was as queer as a fuck. He loved schoolboy's arses and looked after the queer bus drivers. He also knocked off Norman Kirk who was a . . ."

Author: "Salvation Army coal-shovelling nouveau communist who engendered empathy as the 'talking whistle'."

Spymaster: "That'll do."

Norman Kirk's bodyguard: "Big Norm was murdered on 31 August 1974 after spending three days in a Catholic hospital, all the while complaining that he didn't want to be in a Catholic hospital because he sincerely believed the Catholics were trying to kill him."

Army Intell. Medical Orderly: "A specialist in vascular surgery in Wellington Hospital, a drunk and a butcher, killed Norman Kirk. The last vestige of medicine of every drunken rogue is to put a shingle up in hospital and he treated old drunks and chopped arms and legs off them because they'd come down with gangrene[33] as they used to live pretty rough, are drunk all day, and fall over and suffer a fractured arm or leg. Before long it would be a major annoyance, then they'd be seen by a cop or an ambulance officer limping around the joint and they'd have this horrendous wound that was already in the final stages of gas gangrene and they'd find themselves in hospital getting amputated before they even knew what was happening. Drunks take two to three days to come down and start withdrawl, so if they operate on them in the first 24 hours of admission, the surgeon gets away without protest because they don't feel a thing for the first day and a night.

"This wombat surgeon would operate on them and he'd stick their stumps together with steri-strips (bits of paper) and they'd get back into the ward and the girls would clean and irrigate them – introduce water to it – and the whole wound would start to fall apart and the wombat surgeon would amputate again on the stump.

"After that had been done twice, they'd usually die.

"In one case he operated on the right hip when the left one was broken, then claimed the notes weren't clear."

The Spymaster Collective: "**Operation HIGHTOWER** originally came out of Vietnam – killing bods who were counteractive to American war aims. They were killing American military personnel by it as well. Operation HIGHTOWER was the military assistance programme for killing leaders and was bastardised into killing leaders all around the world. The CIA methodology is to kill everybody.

"At a conference in the Philippines, the Americans gave New Zealand Prime Minister Norm Kirk the poisoned handshake – Thallium[34] – courtesy of an American under the

extended and expanded Operation HIGHTOWER. The American had wax on his hand, then the thallium. They use other barriers now.

"The Americans moved against Kirk by giving him heavy metal poisoning. They gave him instant cancer where you're guaranteed to die within three to four weeks.

"As treatment, Norman Kirk was put on placebos[35] yet he was known to have DVTs – Deep Vain Thrombosis and circulation problems because of his weight. Kirk was the last person who should have been on placebos. Placebos condemned him to death."

The CIA killed New Zealand Prime Minister Norm Kirk
with a Thallium handshake in the Philippines.

Spymaster: "Justice Speight shot off old man McKray's arm as he was rooting his wife on a yacht moored off Kawau Island. No one was charged.

"McKray employed the biggest bunch of homo bus drivers this side of the Bombay Hills. They were bisexual Catholic ex-schoolboys who all knew Cardinal Delargey – who influenced the SIS from the Catholic Church and was chief of dirty tactics, known as "Captain D". He certainly had the credentials . . ."

I.O. "The paedophile bus drivers lived together in a house on the North Shore, eventually in Hauraki Corner and routinely met the police up the road. The police adopted a very legalistic means of dealing with them saying: 'We don't want to prosecute you because you're a very good source of information'.

"This is why paedophile inquiries in New Zealand don't go anywhere because they are just the best bunch of rats and grass off everyone. And this is why the police are forced, without actually liking them, to shield and protect them from everybody else with hostile intent . . . and this applies all the way up to NHQ – who are Catholic Freemasons.

"The police say: 'We don't like the paedophilia, and it's a major tragedy to us that we are forced to look after them so well. And if we had our own way, we would come down on them like a ton of bricks, but unfortunately that will never happen.'"

Spymaster: "One of the queer bus drivers was rooting his own daughter. He was a bisexual and had a house in West Auckland. His name was Mr McG. His criminal codename was 'the Cripple Crab'. His wife didn't know her daughter was being molested by her father, but would encourage her to get into bed, as she was sick. She slept in another room and he had all the pills and substances to knock his wife out, or write her off.

"Cripple Crab McG used to seduce his daughter and tell her he loved her. It was a complicated scenario of mind games that no child could reasonably be expected to counter. He was having sex with her before his wife died and nobody but the Catholic Church knew about it . . . and they did nothing to report it.

"Cripple Crab was in and out of Australia and used to have such friends as the Lord Mayor of Wollongong (100 km south of Sydney) – a paedophile running a paedophile ring who was later chopped up and found in many pieces all over his house. The murderer got dressed up in his clothes, so there was some sick revenge shit going on.

"Cripple Crab's daughter tried to bring charges against her own father, but the police became upset by this and tried to shield Cripple Crab as it's not a good look for a daughter to bring charges against the father, especially for a horrible crime such as incestuous paedophilia . . . and the police were forced to look after the father because he and his friends were rampant paedophiles, but the police resented protecting everybody as much as they possible could, so they lined the guy up in court. But before everybody got to Court, they cleared the court so nobody could hear the charges, then they dissappeared Cripple Crab McG – the incestuous paedophile.

---

[33] Gangrene: necrosis or death of soft tissue due to obstructed circulation, usually followed by decomposition and putrefaction.

[34] Thallium (Tl, 81): Used as a salt in rodenticides – the salt in rat poison.

[35] Placebo: a substance having no pharmacological effect, but given merely to satisfy a patient who believes it is medicine; a substance having no pharmacological effect but administered as a control in testing experimentally or clinically the efficacy of a biologically active preparation; *Roman Catholic Church*: 'the vespers of the office for the dead', named after the initial word of the first antiphon, in Psalm 114:9 of the Vulgate; origin, 1775–85: "I shall be pleasing, acceptable". Heaven is another placebo.

"The police, in such paedophile cases, routinely bring the most minor charge that the paedophile has pleaded guilty to. They ignore the more serious charges that could and should have been laid. This is why I believe New Zealand can rightly be called 'A paedophile ring masquerading as a country'."

Pommy Detective in New Zealand to the Spymaster: ". . . Not because we were protecting him, but because they were just minding him, and you have absolutely no right to claims that we were looking after him because we weren't, and even though we didn't bring all the evidence that the daughter brought against him, we couldn't, just because we couldn't face it, and you have absolutely no justification in saying we looked after him, and if you spread that around, we will hunt you down and kill you, okay . . . I hate you because I know that you yourself are involved in more crimes than our guy has even thought about perpetrating, and one day I'm going to catch you with all the library books that you have been stealing – and there will be a massacre" . . . Sooo . . . more FUCKWITTERY.

But it's not the men who are all bad – there's also Sandra Coney won the Auckland University competition to root the most people in the shortest amount of time in the 1960s. She caught all sorts of diseases, gonohrrhea, chlamydia etc and gave her parents a lot of grief. Her father, Tom Pearce, was chairing the sexually fringe ARC at the time (1965–76) . . . and by the 1990s Sandra thought the competition was still going.

Dame Cath Tizard was one of her competitors and when she got fat, she moved to transvestites and into a rotund orange velour tracksuit. The only thing missing was the white high-heels, but K'Rd was underfoot.

Sandra Coney did the book on National Women's Hospital, which caused the Professor, Dr Herbert Green to commit suicide in 2001, the same way Attorney-General Martyn Finlay did it on Tohunga Crescent in Parnell. He gassed himself in his car in the garage. He wasn't into drugs, but the official version was 'he got his pills mixed up'.

Dr Green was anti-abortion, a member of SPCU (Society for the Prevention of the Unborn Child) and Head of National Women's Hospital up to the beginning of the 1990s and "once described as one of world's 25 outstanding physicians".

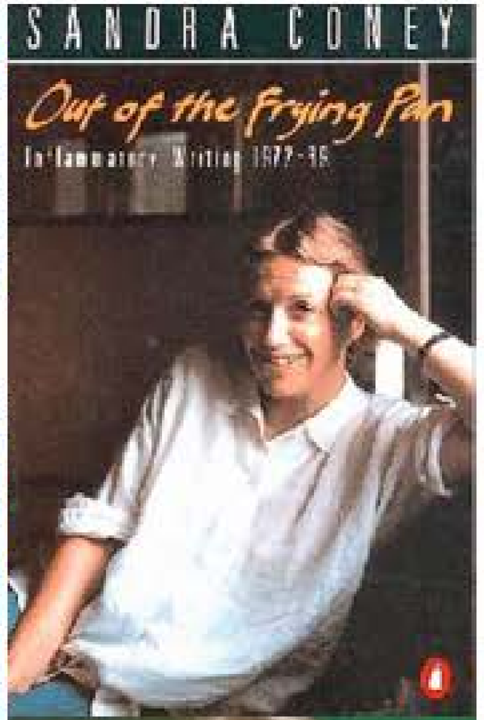

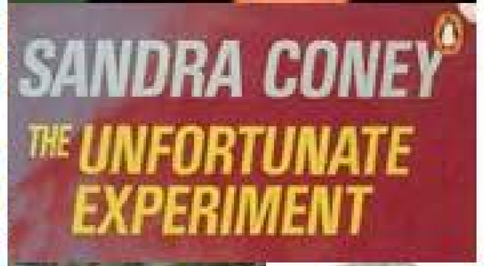

"Dr Green believed the pre-cancerous condition did not automatically lead to cancer and that radical treatment like hysterectomies could be avoided."[36]

Good on you mate. Cancer is one of the biggest cons in history and hysterectomies, or 'her-director-me'.

"The women's treatment was reviewed in a seven-month judicial inquiry by Dame Silvia Cartwright (1987–88) which concluded the study was unethical"[37] – interesting because Cartwright is unethical and the most gender-biased judge in New Zealand's history, with 18 complaints against her, mainly for gender bias. She simply hates men and her husband lives in fear of her fridge magnet vagina – it's cold and all issues stick to it.

The horrible Sandra Coney did a letter writing campaign against Dr Green, with the purpose of changing the gender of the fanny-gawkers. If her out-come is viewed as successful, this is the only change.

Five or six of these Coney feminists wrote letters under six different names each, then referred to other people and made it look like a movement, but it was only five or six dragons.

The whole thing was a swopsy operation to change the gender of who would look at cunts. The female gender won, and since then, the midwives have been up on murder charges for killing babies using all sorts of witchcraft.

My favourite excuse from a midwife is:

"It's traditional Maori practise to leave the baby in
the womb for up to ten days overdue with the chord
wrapped around its neck" – FUCKWITTERY.

Phillida Bunkle (b. 1944), convicted thief.

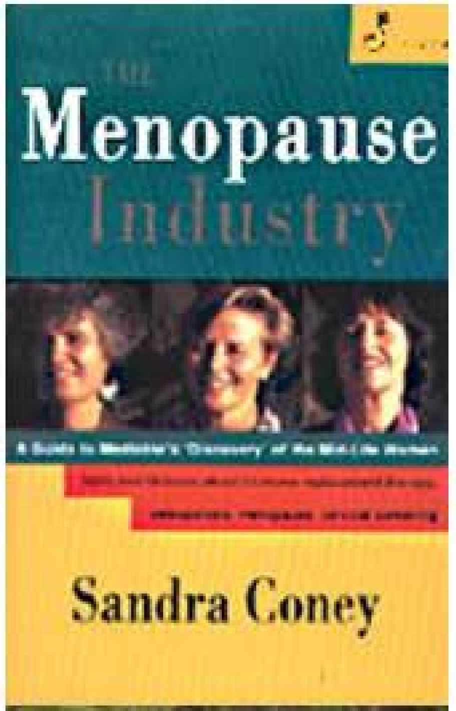

Sandra Coney.

---

36 *New Zealand Herald*, 'Benefit from Dr Green's 'unfortunate' data', 16 April 2008.

37 *Ibid.*

The Frozen Fanny Issue Magnet giving the Order of New Zealand to the Transvestite Rooting David Lange.

Sandra Coney.

Sandra Coney also wrote up five cunt cases and expanded them as though they were 25 cases. She simply changed the names and repeated them again.

She may have done the same thing when she won the 1960s Auckland University rooting competition off Cath Tizard who used to attract multiple sex partners touting raunchy limericks in competitions at the Shakespeare Tavern.

Sandra Coney was a journalist who should have been jailed for ten years, but got all sorts of awards instead. This is how feminists operate – the same way as communists – the worse job you do, the more you are promoted, and the more the media promotes you.

The same goes for government departments.
If you fail twenty companies, you get to be
in charge of a government department.

Despite her monstrous sex addiction, according to her Wikipedia entry, Sandra Coney is a feminist [who loved cock at an Olympic level] and a women's health campaigner.

Phillida Bunkle (63) was convicted of theft on 30 November 2007. She co-authored the *Metro* magazine article 'The Unfortunate Experiment' which alleged women had been experimented on at National Women's Hospital.

This was quickly taken up by the gender biased feminist-married-to-a-paedophile Silvia Cartwright, who [shock horror] confirmed the article's allegations and the "turning point in healthcare ethics in New Zealand" led to no healthcare at all, and the same result in women's cancer as before, only this time owned by women, instead of men.

What they really didn't want was men looking up women's vaginas. They wanted their lesbian buddies to be doing it. But they proved too distracted for professional medical care . . . and joke upon joke, sometimes found the wrong hole.

Root-anything-and-everything Coney co-founded 'Women's Health Action' with 'The Bunkle Thief' in 1984 to co-ordinate monetary claims for poor women who had been instructed that they'd been damaged by women's products. True in a few cases, but by no means all.

Sandra Coney then co-founded and co-edited the feminist-separatist-lesbian *Broadsheet* magazine for 16 years and tortured us in the *SundayStar Times* from 1986 to 2002.

Sandra Coney represents Waitakere in the sexually fringe ARC (2001–) which her father Tom Pearce chaired (1965–76) while Sandra was giving him a hard time rooting everything in a competion with the future Governor-General Cath Tizard.

To back up this sex addiction with feminist denial, Sandra Coney wrote *Every girl: a social history of women and the YWCA* (1986); *The Unfortunate Experiment: The full story behind the inquiry into cervical cancer treatment* (1988); *Hysterectomy* (1990, my favourite); *The Menopause Industry: How the Medical Establishment Exploits Women* (1991); *A history of New Zealand women since they won the vote*; *What happened to the Cartwright Report?* (1993, arrhh, it was biased shit); *125 years of weddings in New Zealand* (1995); *Feeling fabulous at 40, 50 and beyond* (1998, by an ageing slapper); and *Stroppy sheilas and gutsy girls* (1998 – I am woman, fuck me raw).

Sandra Coney is a very ugly ageing sex addict with a history of denial (which we will call 'feminism') and has the blowjob throat of a lizard on heat.

. . . Suck on that you side-winding bitch . . .

MANDY RICE-DAVIES

The Add-Up is Tits-Up

All of this adds up to **THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE protecting paedophiles** – because they're Feminists, Catholics, and Freemasons (incestuous child sex abusers).

In exchange for the information the paedophiles give about other paedophiles and lesser petty crimes, and agreed no information about the paedophilia and incest in THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE and JUDICIARY and no information about Police units in one area travelling to every other area to remove child porn photos, self-portraits, and videos of judges, heads of judiciary, heads of police, Minister of Police, Commissioner of Police, Chief Justice's husband, Speaker of the House, the Prime Minister's husband, and associates . . . **PAEDOPHILES ARE ACTUALLY PROTECTED BY THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE** rendering these Police entirely useless – in fact worse than useless – and as a result:

New Zealand is run by Counter-Intelligence and not by Intelligence . . .
New Zealand is a Paedophile Movement fronting as a Country . . .

The New Zealand Government and Judiciary were heavily involved in Heroin Trafficking from:

1959–75 (Vietnam War & "Mr Asia" in body bags)
1974–79/83 (Mr Asia "Kiwi Connection" Williams & co.)
1975–84 (Robert Muldoon)
27 March 2003 onwards (Helen Clark and NATO)

and in between using the New Zealand Navy, Air Force and Army, and sailing boats between New Zealand and Fiji, often stopping off at Great Barrier Island (Williams & co.).

So if you can name a paedophile judge and present a photo, you'll never be convicted of heroin trafficking. All Class A drug charges are heard in the High Court. **The primary function of the High Court is protecting paedophiles who have become well known people.** So if you are a Class A drug dealer or heroin trafficker, try presenting this book as evidence.

When I presented it as evidence, High Court Judge Lin Stevens triple sealed it to the Court of Appeal. Chief Justice Sian Elias then 'stole' it and leaked it to the IDF. So by 8 May 2009 General Nir was picking away at it . . . Can't put it down. I'm now his favourite subject.

I have taken the affirmative quote from '*Guidelines for Judicial Conduct*', published on 4 August 2005, and first made available to the public four years later in November 2009:

> **(16) Writing and media comment [57]**
> "Articles or interviews which inform the public about the administration of justice generally are not objectionable and indeed may well be beneficial in raising public understanding about judicial function."
> Not only does the Judiciary fail to do this, but in all ways, the Judiciary is a failure.

Peter Williams QC gives Credit to Summary Matters

"I'm the New Zealand lawyer Peter Williams QC. I would rather die, or have my reputation destroyed, and that of the judiciary, than pay one bill.

"I'm a walking talking bitchfest. I'm an actor who prolongs his staged appearances and delivers the winning piece of evidence up to ten years late in order to appear centre stage as the courtroom drama queen for as long as possible, to hike up my otherwise ordinary fee – to pay bribes to The Australian Anti-Corruption Team – and to maintain disorder in what was a competative state to Australia.

"In one case, the winning evidence was provided pre-hearing with willing affidavits, signed and dated – all ignored by me while I prolonged the trial process, charged a half million dollar fee, and put my client through the feminist torture. That's a suckfest, but understandable coming from a bisexual like myself.

"It appears that I have become too involved with my criminals, and 'part of that team', for oh, way to long – decades. They used to call me 'Pugwash' and and my yacht, 'Crownest'. I have always been a lazy captain and not a great sailor. Once I got so drunk sailing, I was stuck on the Whangarei Bar three times in one day, and each time I had to radio the Water Police to be rescued.

"From the evidence presented, it appears that I have been involved in murder, accessory to murder, accessory to attempted murder, threatening to kill, heroin trafficking, drug money laundering, methamphetamine trafficking, slavery, and I'm a Slave Master. All the while I have been controlled by the shame of my past – the drug trafficking, the drug funding, the murders, the attempted murders, my bisexuality, my fascination with Asian porn with underaged players – and all the bribes and complicity, and lack of choice that go with it.

"This has made me, Peter Alderidge Williams QC, the man I am today – a sack of shit."

Author: "Arrhh, Peter. A more defined description might be:

'Peter Alderidge Williams QC has all the appearances – both as a person, in his business dealings, and in his professional career – of a bisexual MI-6 heroin trafficker'."

Peter Williams: "That'll do."

Author: **"Peter Alderidge Williams QC has been found marked, measured and wanting."**

Peter Williams QC: "I agree."

Retiring the Mafia Boss and Emigrating him into Exile unto Death

I then got word that Peter Alderidge Williams QC had advertised his retirement and that he had announced this the same week as my Podcast interview with former Minnesota Emeritus Professor Dr Jim Fetzer on The Real Deal, where Peter Williams QC was named as the Mafia boss. Here's the Timeline . . .

On skype chat at 10:09 am, Thursday 28 January 2010, I requested to talk about mafia bosses in New Zealand.
Greg Hallett: "Yes, mafia bosses".
James Fetzer: "Yes, via Skype."

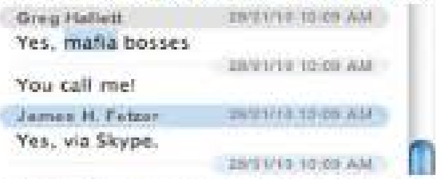

Greg Hallett 28/01/10 10:09 AM
Yes, mafia bosses
28/01/10 10:09 AM
You call me!
James H. Fetzer 28/01/10 10:09 AM
Yes, via Skype.
28/01/10 10:09 AM

I had a 102 minute interview with Fetzer, 10–noon on Friday 29 January 2010 where 'the New Zealand mafia boss was named as "a Queen's Counsel lawyer".' Straight after this we organised the next two interviews and traded files. We got this uninvited, unexpected, security-breaking message in from an anonymous source at 2:34 pm on Saturday 30 January 2010.

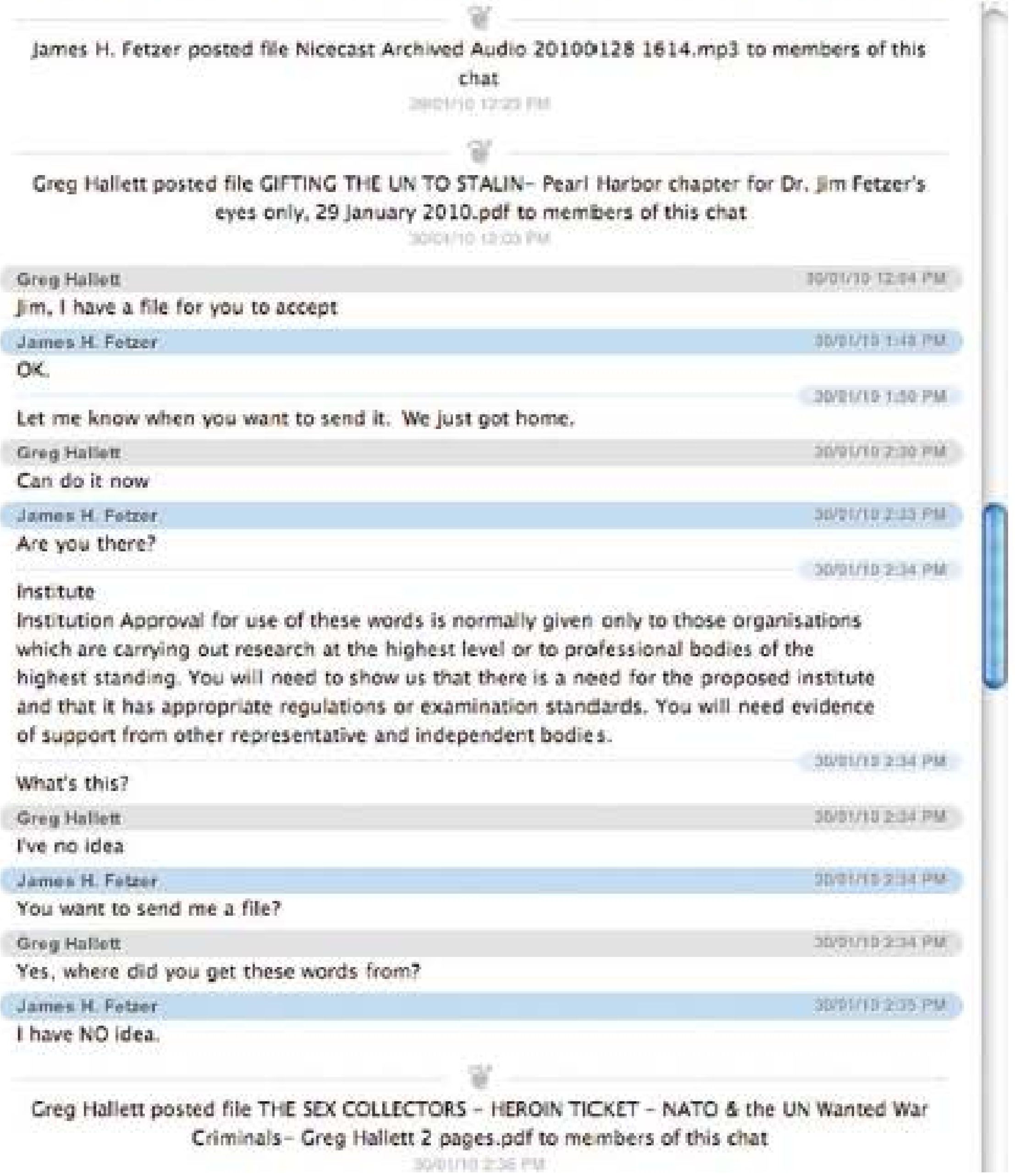

James H. Fetzer posted file Nicecast Archived Audio 20100128 1614.mp3 to members of this chat
28/01/10 12:25 PM

Greg Hallett posted file GIFTING THE UN TO STALIN– Pearl Harbor chapter for Dr. Jim Fetzer's eyes only, 29 January 2010.pdf to members of this chat
30/01/10 12:03 PM

Greg Hallett 30/01/10 12:04 PM
Jim, I have a file for you to accept
James H. Fetzer 30/01/10 1:48 PM
OK.
30/01/10 1:50 PM
Let me know when you want to send it. We just got home.
Greg Hallett 30/01/10 2:30 PM
Can do it now
James H. Fetzer 30/01/10 2:33 PM
Are you there?
30/01/10 2:34 PM
Institute
Institution Approval for use of these words is normally given only to those organisations which are carrying out research at the highest level or to professional bodies of the highest standing. You will need to show us that there is a need for the proposed institute and that it has appropriate regulations or examination standards. You will need evidence of support from other representative and independent bodies.
30/01/10 2:34 PM
What's this?
Greg Hallett 30/01/10 2:34 PM
I've no idea
James H. Fetzer 30/01/10 2:34 PM
You want to send me a file?
Greg Hallett 30/01/10 2:34 PM
Yes, where did you get these words from?
James H. Fetzer 30/01/10 2:35 PM
I have NO idea.

Greg Hallett posted file THE SEX COLLECTORS – HEROIN TICKET – NATO & the UN Wanted War Criminals– Greg Hallett 2 pages.pdf to members of this chat
30/01/10 2:36 PM

The next interview was to be at 9 am on Tuesday 9 February 2010, but this was cancelled the day before due to the Superbowl. So the third interview became the second interview at 10 am on Friday 19 February 2010 with more talk on mafia bosses, the Mr Asia heroin trafficking syndicate, and the CIA takeover of Auckland with the Auckland SuperCity.

This interview was then delayed 90 minutes from 10 am to 11:30 am. The 1 hour 42 minute interview took place from 11:30 am on Friday 19 February 2010 over two hours. We take breaks.

The interview had a lot of echo throughout which indicates Israeli involvement. Then, immediately before or after this interview, the Israelis asked the New Zealand Government for my phone number. Not that they couldn't look it up, or tap it, it's just that their interest meant that the NZ Govt. couldn't attack. That would explain the echo. The British interrupt with short blanks of no sound.The Israelis interrupt an entire interview.

Government organisations can read whatever they want off your computer under the Privacy Act, and QC's and Mafia can access this. So three hours prior, **Peter Williams QC announced his retirement on the TVNZ, TVOne 'Breakfast'** (6:30–9:00 am) **at 7:30 am on Friday 19 February 2010.** It was then posted on their website at 10:30 am and 12:30 pm.

TVNZ gave the Mr Asia mafia boss Peter Williams QC 6 min. 46 sec. to announce his retirement and advertise that he was going on holiday. They introduced him as "a high profile defense lawyer . . . career spanning 55 years [1955–2010]". Williams then stated his position with the Jews, Zionism, MI-6, the Queen, Political Correctness, Global Warming, women, and homosexuality . . . with telling images of a pink banner, the MI-6 Queen's oath swearing placade in the background, and complained about the Police and ESR Forensics that set his Mr Asia clients free: "My favourite case was Zion King" [can't get anymore British Jewish than that] . . . "Heeni Philips was my junior lawyer" [omitting that she was his partner on prozac] . . . "My next project is taking Paul [Henry, Breakfast presenter and homo partner during the 1995 Mururoa Atoll nuclear protests] to Patagonia [where a fake Hitler supposedly retired to] to show him the delights, then across to Antarctica to check on the glaciers . . . we might never come back . . . I want to be active. I don't want to be sitting around too much." This was then posted on the TVNZ website at 10:44 am Friday 19 February 2010, during my live Podcast interview with the Emeritus Professor Fetzer.

So **Peter Williams QC retired three weeks after "the mafia boss of New Zealand" was named as "a Queen's Counsel lawyer"**; and **three hours prior to the delayed Podcast interview in America that exposed Peter Williams QC as the Mafia Boss.**

In the background, Peter Williams QC's excuse for retiring was cancer, but he claims cancer everytime he has to pay a bill, and then goes on holiday with a known bisexual in order to get active and get over the cancer . . . Peter Williams is Peter Pan. Paul Henry is a dick.

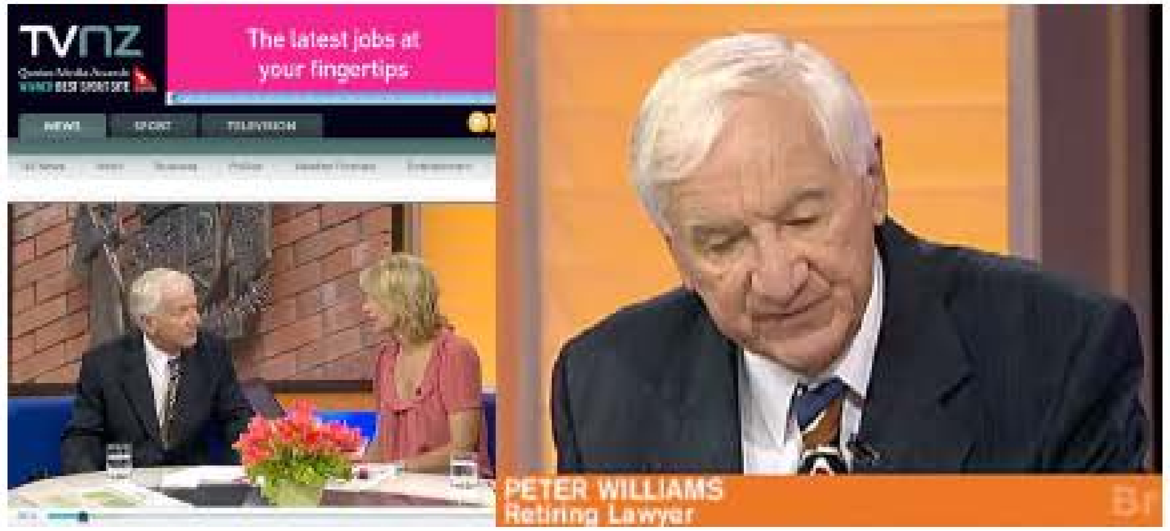

ZION KING CASE
Breakfast

POLICE, FORENSICS TOO COSY?
Breakfast

CONCERNS OVER POLICE, ESR
B
MAFIA BOSS

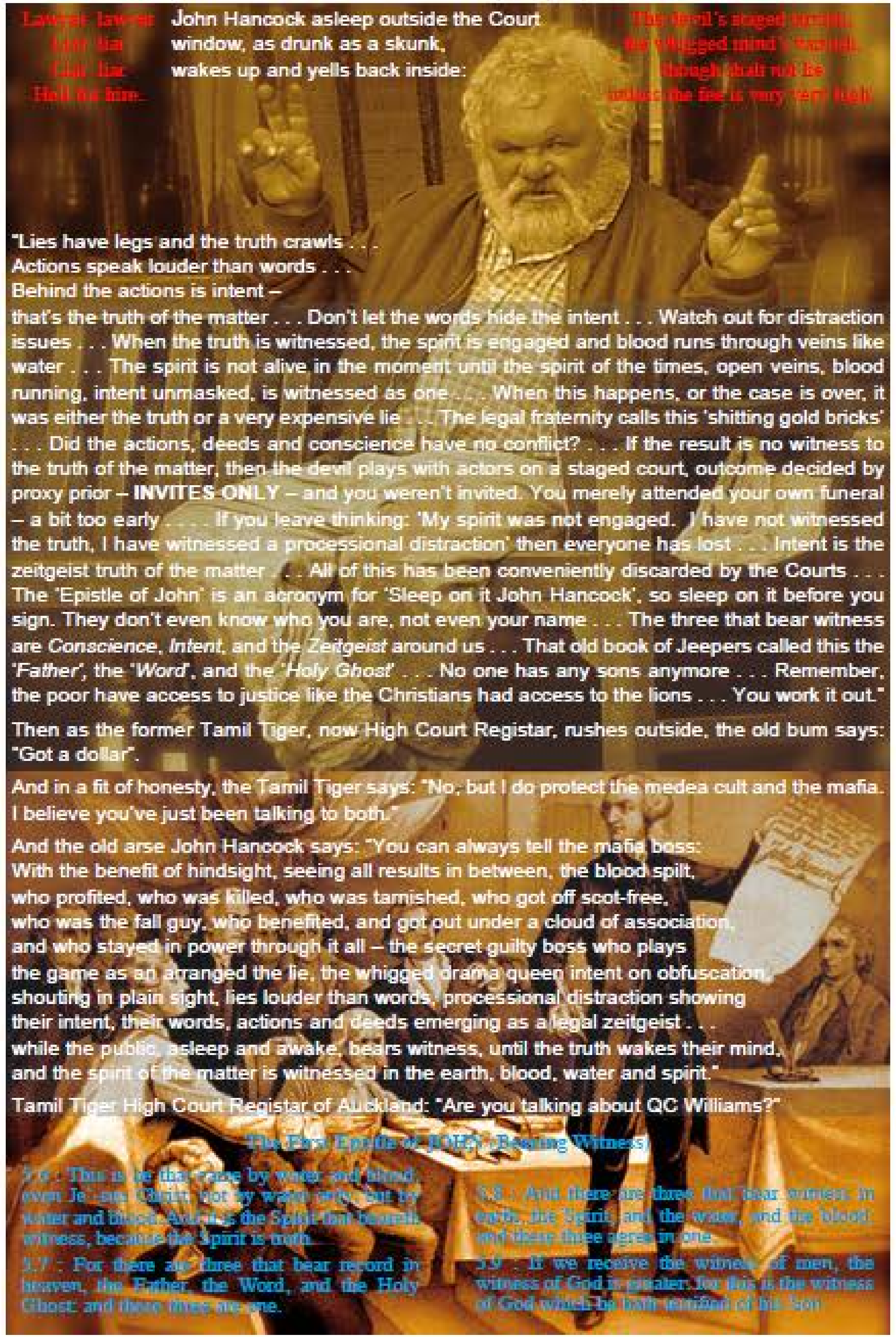

Lawyer, lawyer
Liar, liar
Call, liar
Hell for hire.

John Hancock asleep outside the Court
window, as drunk as a skunk,
wakes up and yells back inside:

The devil's staged scenario,
the whigged mind's warrant,
though shalt not lie
unless the fee is very very high.

"Lies have legs and the truth crawls . . .
Actions speak louder than words . . .
Behind the actions is intent –
that's the truth of the matter . . . Don't let the words hide the intent . . . Watch out for distraction issues . . . When the truth is witnessed, the spirit is engaged and blood runs through veins like water . . . The spirit is not alive in the moment until the spirit of the times, open veins, blood running, intent unmasked, is witnessed as one . . . When this happens, or the case is over, it was either the truth or a very expensive lie . . . The legal fraternity calls this 'shitting gold bricks' . . . Did the actions, deeds and conscience have no conflict? . . . If the result is no witness to the truth of the matter, then the devil plays with actors on a staged court, outcome decided by proxy prior – **INVITES ONLY** – and you weren't invited. You merely attended your own funeral – a bit too early . . . . If you leave thinking: 'My spirit was not engaged. I have not witnessed the truth, I have witnessed a processional distraction' then everyone has lost . . . Intent is the zeitgeist truth of the matter . . . All of this has been conveniently discarded by the Courts . . . The 'Epistle of John' is an acronym for 'Sleep on it John Hancock', so sleep on it before you sign. They don't even know who you are, not even your name . . . The three that bear witness are *Conscience*, *Intent*, and the *Zeitgeist* around us . . . That old book of Jeepers called this the '*Father*', the '*Word*', and the '*Holy Ghost*' . . . No one has any sons anymore . . . Remember, the poor have access to justice like the Christians had access to the lions . . . You work it out."

Then as the former Tamil Tiger, now High Court Registar, rushes outside, the old bum says: "Got a dollar".

And in a fit of honesty, the Tamil Tiger says: "No, but I do protect the medea cult and the mafia. I believe you've just been talking to both."

And the old arse John Hancock says: "You can always tell the mafia boss:
With the benefit of hindsight, seeing all results in between, the blood spilt,
who profited, who was killed, who was tarnished, who got off scot-free,
who was the fall guy, who benefited, and got out under a cloud of association,
and who stayed in power through it all – the secret guilty boss who plays
the game as an arranged the lie, the whigged drama queen intent on obfuscation,
shouting in plain sight, lies louder than words, processional distraction showing
their intent, their words, actions and deeds emerging as a legal zeitgeist . . .
while the public, asleep and awake, bears witness, until the truth wakes their mind,
and the spirit of the matter is witnessed in the earth, blood, water and spirit."

Tamil Tiger High Court Registar of Auckland: "Are you talking about QC Williams?"

The First Epistle of JOHN (Bearing Witness)

5:6 : This is he that came by water and blood, even Je sus Christ; not by water only, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth.

5:7 : For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one.

5:8 : And there are three that bear witness in earth, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one.

5:9 : If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater: for this is the witness of God which he hath testified of his Son

BIG AFGHAN HEROIN DUMP

NATO Dumped on New Zealand | The Heroin is here !

For immediate release | FRIDAY 13 May 2005

> After near bankruptcy post-WWII, Monaco's bank was taken over by Aristotle Onassis. Monaco then became a meeting point for drug shipments, washing drug money . . . and a tax haven.
>
> Pope John Paul II and Prince Rainier were both terminally ill and NATO went in search of new drug markets for their newly acquired role of drug trafficking Afghan heroin.

The paedophile Lord Robertson (Dunblane massacre), then Secretary General of NATO (14 Oct. 1999–17 Dec. 2003) knew of the New Zealand Government's paedophilia through:

1. The US Customs naming of Jonathan Hunt (Speaker of the House) as a paedophile in September 2004;
2. The ongoing intelligence documented homosexual child-sex abuse by First Laddy Peter Davis who was President of the Auckland University Gay Society in the 1970s and frequented Christchurch public toilets.
3. Peter Davis's arrest at San Francisco's Airport on 7 June 2006 for propositioning an underaged Mexican boy by grabbing his crutch and saying "How about it?" The underaged boy turned out to be a policeman and Peter Davis was arrested. First Laddy Davis claimed diplomatic immunity and was rescued by the NZRAF and three diplomatic officers (Sodomy Olympics) and a New Zealand diplomat who flew in from Washington DC (Matthew Walsh).

Secretary General of NATO Jaap de Hoop Scheffer (1 January 2004–) went to Australia and New Zealand and gave a speech at Wellington's Victoria University on 31 March 2005:

> "We have come closer together over the last three years . . . Australia and New Zealand were the top candidates for NATO partnerships . . . NATO is everywhere."

Jaap de Hoop Scheffer arrived into New Zealand with 10 kg of Afghan heroin via diplomatic pouch. What he meant by his speech was:

> NATO's herion is everywhere, so you might as well join NATO and get it directly from us. It's free as long as you make your NATO donation. Australia and New Zealand were NATO's top candidates for drug trafficking.

Once this new heroin market was accepted by Australia and New Zealand, they were joined into the NATO family and the two previous drug lords were knocked off.

The next day (1 April 2005) the homosexual paedophile Jonathan Hunt became New Zealand's High Commissioner to Britain. The following day the Pope John Paul II a.k.a. Karol Jozef Wojtyla died on 2 April 2005. Four days later Prince 'Tax' Rainier died on 6 April 2005. Both were involved in drugs and money laundering.

Tavistock's MI-6 drug activator Peter Frampton then appeared in New Zealand on television on 11 May 2005 using words and coded phrases to activate the baby boomer's drug habit. Tavistock's Frampton was the popular culture hook into the heroin market.

Minister of Health Annette King was responsible for the cover up of police paedophilia at Banks Road in Christchurch. She moved the focus off Banks Rd to a Christchurch kindergarten and this was written up by the Internal Affairs agent Linley Hood as "A City Possessed". Annette King had stitched up Peter Ellis, so she was owed some big favours by the police.

The excessively weak Minister of Police George Hawkins was then replaced by the 'sustainable-corruption Minister of Health (10 Dec. 1999–19 Oct. 2005), and Food Safety (1 July 2002–5 Nov. 2007). In order to become the next Minister of Police, Annette King delivered the Afghan-NATO heroin to the police prior to the 17 September 2005 rigged election, for the police to distribute. She was then made Minister of Police for three years until she was forced to resign for the election (19 October 2005–November 2008).

As further reward, Annette King also became Minister of State Services, Coordinating Minister of Race Relations, Associate Minister of Defence, and Associate Minister of Trade (all 19 October 2005 to 5 November 2007). On 3 May 2006, she was also made Minister of Transport for two years (3 May 2006–19 November 2008).

Not only could King not cope with all these roles, she had no competence in any of them, and sabotaged them all on behalf of the KGB heroin trafficking Prime Minister Clark. Annette King is most likely to be voted the most revolting female in New Zealand. Even Helen Clark calls her "Pig-Dog". Annette King then became Deputy Leader of the Opposition on 11 November 2008.

The police distributed the Afghan heroin to the gangs on 30 November/1 December 2005 and planted drugs on any gang member who did not comply; and once the Afghan heroin had taken hold, all of Annette King's positions were further upgraded to Minister of Transport (3 May 2006–19 Nov. 2008), Minister of Justice, and Minister Responsible for the Law Commission (5 Nov. 2007–19 Nov. 2008). This provided Annette King with full cover.

Annette King had been a dental nurse (1967–81), has a Bachelor of Arts and a Post Graduate in Dental Nursing. New Zealand's Minister of Police, a former dental nurse, is a heroin enabler.

> Intelligence officers: "The Afghan heroin definitely came into New Zealand by diplomatic pouch." It arrived in March 2005 with street word that it had arrived in February 2005, thus diverting the focus of the search. All of this came as a backdrop to Helen Clark's status as the highest-ranking KGB operative in New Zealand and former Tavistock St Petersburg graduate.

Helen Clark is a Freud Hilton graduate and a deconstructed double agent Prime Minister. At the time, Helen Clark was the prime contender for the position of Secretary General of the United Nations, even though she had been filmed having sex with a female CIA pillow talker at Lincoln Cottage near the White House on the night of 3/4 January 2003.

This gave the crooked American President George W. Bush full control over Clark, hence his backing for the KGB operative Clark as the Secretary General of the pitifully useless and massively corrupt United Nations . . . and Helen Clark not saying a word against the war in Afghanistan or Iraq since she was filmed having sex with the female CIA pillow talker.

In this way the Head of the NATO can deliver 10 kilograms of heroin to a colonial Prime Minister, with that Prime Minister then considered for the position of Secretary General of the United Nations, and that Prime Minister not considered until they have successfully got their Minister of Racing, Health, and Food Safety to deal that Afghan heroin to the police who then deal it to the gangs who then deal it to the bottom feeders.

Annette King was made the Minister of Police on 19 October 2005 to further facilitate this heroin deal. On the same day she was made Minister for State Services and Minister of Trade. How appropriate! To give her full PC cover with the Maoris (a heroin target population) she was made Coordinating Minister of Race Relations, also on the same day.

There were a few elements missing to this – heroin transport – so King was made Minister of Transport on 3 May 2006, then Minister of Justice and Minister Responsible for the Law Commission on 5 November 2007.

This meant that Annette King could, with immunity, deliver the heroin to the police, then become their boss, organise complicity through State Services, and Trade, deal with high level Maori with immunity, transport the drugs around the country under government cover, and ensure no one was ever charged through the Justice system . . . and the Law Commission would never investigate the heroin trafficking, or more accurately, the:

> Police, State Services, Trade, Race Relations, Transport, Justice, Law Commission and Prime Minister's heroin trafficking. The entire New Zealand Labour Government (1999–2008) was involved in heroin trafficking.

* * *

> Jacques Cousteau was removed as Princess Grace's lover by Prince Rainier. He bargained for a fully equipped deep-sea exploration ship complete with all the film gear to make documentaries. This gave Prince Rainier the required space to traffic.
>
> Princess Grace was then killed in 1982 as a warning from the Sicilian Mafia to Prince Rainier whose drug shipment tax through Monaco became too rapacious. RAF Signals Staff on Cyprus/Crete intercepted and decoded the operational order to tamper with her Rover 3.5 which then fell down a 10 foot bank. She survived, but died in hospital.
>
> Jacques Cousteau was then awarded the American/Jewish Medal of Freedom in 1985. Pope John Paul II got his in mid 2004. Prince Rainier was sick from December 1999, hospitalised from 7 March 2005 and died of heart and kidney failure (72) on 6 April 2005, so he had been out of the picture for the Afgahan wars, the NATO takeover, and the final two months of shipping and preparations.

Pr. Rainier
Grace, P. of Monaco.
Grace Kelly
Jacques Cousteau.

A well-known root bag in Hollywood circles before Prince Rainier extracted her, Grace had eyes for Jacques.

Jack and Jacques.

Bush Pope.

LIFE
LIFE
LIFE

Remembering Grace
REMEMBERING
POPE JOHN PAUL II
(1920-2005)

Cruiseliner sails out of the Belize Blue Hole.
Another claim for the Catholic Church, circa 1200 AD:
"Whether an act of God or not, we own it" . . . and the heroin?

I was looking for a popular culture hook into the heroin market. It's music cool icons who lead the way into a new addiction, or an old addiction rehashed. This is the way drugs are taken up. Then ten (10) kilograms of Afghan heroin came into New Zealand in February/March 2005.

The drug lord Prince Rainer was being changed (d. 6 April 2005), the Pope was being changed (John Paul II d. 2 April 2005) and the head of NATO showed up to meet New Zealand's Prime Minister Helen Clark (30 March 2005). I looked onto the drug market for confirmation of the heroin. Sure enough there was 10 kg of Afghan heroin in New Zealand, but by early April 2005, it was acknowledged there was little or no market for it.

Then on the auspicious day of 11 May 2005 it came via the 70s guitar icon, Peter Frampton. ('Close Up' with Susan Wood, TV1 [State TV], 7.25 pm). It is well known amongst the intelligence community, from Fiji to Fairfield, that Elton John is an MI-6 agent, as is David Bowie. Dropping their names on State TV is an indicator that hard drugs are ready to be supplied to the market – simply because their music suits it. Similarly, they are trained, subconsciously, through MK Ultra to relate in double speak and hidden messages, that your 'pathway to cool' is through the drug experiences that they have survived, alluded to, and have infused in their music.

This is the language of laying down the drug market.
('*Italics*' show 'Subconscious MI-6 Pathway' with the '*Message*' in '***Bold Italics***')

The Subconscious Language of Heroin Sales
'Close Up' pre-intro with Peter Frampton singing: "This is the way"

Message : This is the way.
This is what is going to happen.
This is the way you will go.

'Close Up', Susan Wood pre-intro: "How the 70s swooner turned into a respectable middle aged rocker."

Message : Romantic swooners approaching retirement
can maintain their respectability and still take drugs.

'Close Up' pre-intro: Peter Frampton guitar riff. "I want you ooo."

Hooks in the audience 40–60. I want you. This is the way. This is the easiest path.

Peter Frampton (50s): "Extreme heights of success".

Message : Even the successful can take drugs.

Guitar riff, Peter Frampton seen playing with a mate in his 50s.

Message : Remember playmates and the mischief you got up to.
You can have a drug playmate.

Peter Frampton: "There's parts I've enjoyed and parts I hate/haven't".

Pathway : This hooks in the audience that are old enough to relate to this. It's hard to differentiate whether the word is 'hate' or 'haven't', so they are embedded in the subconscious as "I haven't hate".

Peter Frampton: "The wife brings up the retirement word, you know, and it just doesn't, excuse me, I don't understand what you mean".

Message : Might as well let go one last time.
Even preparing for retirement you can deny responsibilities one last time . . .

Peter Frampton singing: (20s) "I woke up this morning (50s) with a wine glass in my hand, (20s) whose wine, (50s) what wine, (20s) where the hell did I dine".

> "(20s, muffled sound, but the 'ning' of 'morning' is louder) I woke up this morning (50s, loud, because the memory is clearer and more recent with alcohol) with a wine glass in my hand. (20s, muffled) whose wine, (50s) what wine, (20s, very muffled) where the hell did I dine".

Pathway : The partial word with 'ning' opens up the subconscious because it is not an understood word. It opens up the subconscious to 'wake up to being 20s' while still feeling/ acting like a teenager, as in a tningager. The responsible hangover (50s) ain't where the good memories are at.

Message : Avoid the 50s hangover, take drugs, like when you were 20.

Michael Holland interviewing on site: "What do you see when you look into a Peter Frampton audience?"

Peter Frampton: "You have, not only, my age group um, the baby boomers, but you've got, their children and there children's children now coming, and there's these little one's these grandchildren on their shoulders singing 'Show me the way'. It doesn't get any better than that."

Pathway : MI-6 is appealing to the drug market from the baby boomers to their grandchildren, saying it's the best thing that ever happened. When two words repeat it goes straight to the subconscious. "Children's children" subconsciously appeals to those with three generations after them and those who relate to their grandparents.

Message : It's our intergenerational right to take heroin
and our duty to pass down the drug tradition.

Guillaume Boglio - gboglio@yahoo.fr - 31 Dec 2012

Peter Frampton singing (50s): "I want you to show me the way. Show me. I want you to show me the way. All right. Very good."

> Camera pans from Peter Frampton over to a middle-aged audience and one spunky woman. She has brown hair, is healthy, and perfect breeding age with good teeth. She runs her hand through her hair.

Pathway : 90% of all males want to see her pregnant with their baby. I wish I could make her do that … or do that myself.

Message : Heroin gives us the best sex with the best women
and everyone envies us.
It's our intergenerational right.

Secondary Pathway : The kids look to the adults, their parents and their grandparents for stories of drug use and to lead them into drugs.
"Mum, did you take drugs. Tell me about your drug use?"
You still managed to look good and have us children.
This reinforces the above message (It's our intergenerational right) with sexual energy attached.

Secondary Message : We know we can differentiate in our heads,
between reality and fantasy,
but we don't want to because good memories are rare.
The head's reality is everything BUT fun.
The heart-and-head fantasy most reliably come together through drugs.
So now our head is not differentiating between reality and fantasy.
It's party time in here.

MI-6 Pathway : *You are now sitting duck targets, as long as you continue to watch and listen … or just listen.*

Peter Frampton: "I'm very honoured that, that I've stood the test of time."

Pathway : *"That, that" is subconscious code for 'You will act on this'.*

Message : Drugs are here to stay and they are here again.
Heroin will stand the test of time and is available at a marketplace near you.
Just mention David Bowie and Elton John.
They are an honourable choice.

Interviewer Michael Holland: "Enjoyment. Now versus then?"

Message : You enjoyed it then. You can enjoy it now.

Peter Frampton: "Um, life is good ah he he he. Life is very good. Ah, I've. We all make our mistakes through life. I shall continue to make mistakes. I won't make the same ones hopefully. I'll make, just make new ones."

Message : 'he he' is subconscious for 'I' in the third person,
and 'We all', as in 'All the I's like me' – we all should take the drugs.
Be the man and take drugs.
If you want your man to be current and fashionable,
Get your man to take drugs,
He's the man,
Take drugs with your man,
Get the drugs off the man.
This is a new market now.
Even those for whom life is good,
remember your mistakes and make new ones.
If dope was a mistake, try heroin.
If you had coke, try heroin.
If you dropped acid, try Afghan heroin.
It's bullet proof – war proven.
It's cool to make mistakes.
Mistakes make for a good life,
especially drug induced mistakes – good sex – It'll make you laugh.
It'll be a laugh.
You can make mistakes again and again and still make it.
Life is full of mistakes and mistakes are part of life.
Try a new mistake.
Be cool and try a new mistake.
It could make you famous.

Peter Frampton singing: "(*20s, barely audible*) Must have been a dream, (*50s*) I don't believe where I've been. (*20s, louder*) Come on, (*50s*) let's do it again. (*20s, sound stabilised louder*) Do you, you, feel like I do? How do you feel?"

Pathway : *'you, you, feel, feel, you' is subconscious for 'I feel this from the conscious, to the unconscious, to the subconscious and back again'.*

Primary Message : You took drugs as a teenager, when you wanted to be 20.
Life has been a dream.
Your memories are a dream.

Let's create a new beautiful memory.
I don't believe where you're going.
You're floating into your future.
How do you feel about floating your future?
It's only the risk of drugs.
It's a guaranteed good time.
Drugs are a dream.
Can't believe you got this far having done drugs.
They can't have done any harm.
Try drugs again ... and be cool like I do.

Pathway : *The barely audible music in his 20s is a hook to the dim memories in your 20s.*

Primary Message : Drugs will make it better.
Drugs will make your crap life better.

Interviewer Michael Holland: "Did you get carried away back then?"

Primary Message : Remember how we all got carried away with the drug scene.
Let's do it again.

Peter Frampton: "Everyone. When someone ah. Everyone is telling you that you are the best think since sliced bread, over and over again, and everyone's saying 'Yes' to you and ah. It's very unrealistic, so, '*Yes' I think* I had my, look it was the 70s, I had my 'I dabbled in this and I dabbled in that', just like everybody else, um and it was a crazy time. Yeah, I'd be a fool to try and get away with the fact that nothing ah happened. But yes I was a crazy rrrgh. You know so, just like everybody else given the opportunity would be you know."

Pathway : *'dabbled dabbled' – This is subconscious for 'you dabble over and over'. 'Think/ thing think you know' – Think about it. You know we are right. This is your reality. You cant' tell me it ain't so. You can't tell me it ain't the thing you so know you are.*

Message : Everyone who is someone took drugs.
Drugs were better than sliced bread, but ...
you can remember the experience over and over again.
When you take drugs, everyone says 'Yes' to you,
so it's 'Yes' to drugs.
It was common.
It was the 70s then and it's the naughties now.
Dabble in it.
It's just a dabble.
You'd be a fool to live your life when nothing is happening.
Have a crazy time.
It makes for good memories.
You have the opportunity to know what it was like.
Dabble in your memories.
Think about it.
You know it's the thing.

Interviewer Michael Holland: "Are we talking booze and drugs?"

Message : You can have both alcohol and drugs.
You don't have to be one or the other.

Music overlay. Peter Frampton very muffled "Yes/Yep".

Pathway : *Muffled words go straight into the unconscious, as do confused words and repeated words. Confused repeated words go all the way flushing through all the developed minds and opening the doors to new ones. His response was muffled by the sound overlay.*

Message : The subconscious message is:
'Oh yeh! It's confirmed. Let's do it. Yes, yes, yep.'
Let's open some new doors inside here.

Peter Frampton singing (50s): "Champagne breakfast and a Sherman in my hand".

Makes the smoking joint motion.

Message : A 'Sherman' is a joint. It's okay to have alcohol or drugs and alcohol and drugs, especially post-war.
Celebrate the post-war with alcohol.
Why not add drugs.
This is the post-Afghan war drug rush.
Be part of the moment.
Soon it will all be just a distant memory,
but we remember the tanks.

Pathway : *And all military and funded by drugs, and half of the wars are drug wars.*

Peter Frampton: "You know when you have a lawyers meeting at 9 o'clock in the morning and he gives you some coke. Yunno, its like 'What's going on here? Yunno its its and that sort of stuff was happening. It wasn't so much just, the the music people. It was, it was the periphery, it was all the people around it, the business people got carried away with that, that lifestyle too, and um, I was there, I went through it and I'm a survivor and ah thank God."

Pathway : *The 'yunno, yunno', 'its its', 'the the' and 'that that' bypass the conscious and unconscious minds and go straight into the subconscious as 'it's the that ' as in 'this is it', 'it's the way' and 'it's the thing to do'. It's the way it 'was it was' done. It's a lifestyle choice with the question 'Was the past real?'*

Message : ***Take Afghan heroin.***
Be here now.
Meet God and thank him for the drugs.
You'll survive.
Lawyers do it.
So it can't be that risky/illegal.
Everyone's doing it.
Even the business people and
those on the periphery of business.
You have your lifestyle,
now it's your choice.
Get carried away.
Be here now.
It is a pathway to God and thank you
Here's my opportunity to feel like a God.

Peter Frampton singing (50s): "Feel like I do. How do you feel. Do you, you . . ."

Pathway : 'You, You, feel, feel, like I do'.

Message : With drugs you can feel like I do.
You can feel my success as though it has all been your own.

Secondary Pathway : With drugs we can feel what others are going through and others can feel what we're going through. Empathy cures all your woes and this applies to you.

Interviewer Michael Holland: "Have you regailed your children with the tales of excess/ success or do you keep that to yourself?"

Pathway : The word excess is made to sound like 'success', thus interchanging 'excess' with 'success', suggesting that excess is success. This appeals to impoverished drug users and those who like to get really out of it.

Message : Drugs may be the only way I can express my success.
It's okay to get your children into drugs,
okay if you do drugs in front of them … and
okay if they do drugs in front of you.
It makes for a good photo album and good memories.
What are your successful memories without drugs anyway?
Have you ever achieved excess without drugs.
Drugs may be your only form of excess/success.

Peter Frampton: "No, I've told my children of, of um I'm genetically predisposed and so are they to to arrr addictive behaviour. I mean that's part of my makeup. I'll be honest with you and we're watching them very carefully, because it is in my genes, and I'm thankfully, a day at a time, I'm doing, wonderfully and its been a while now so, and its funny, its been nearly three years since, since I've um completely sworn off everything and its been the best three years of my life.

Pathway : "of of" is subconscious for all your actions in the past. It forgives everything, even your genes and what your parents would think of you. Your entire history is included without judgement. "to to arrr addictive behaviour" bypasses the conscious and unconscious minds and talks directly to the subconscious ("to to"), bypasses indecision ('arrr) and addresses the message to your addictive behaviour.

Message : "Your history and indecisions are forgiven,
even by all of your forebears".
You can't avoid it.
Regardless of your history,
If it's presented to you,
then you'll take it.
If you haven't had a fun time in the last three years,
if you haven't had drugs in the last three years,
now is the time for a good memory
and a fun time with your kids.
You are genetically predisposed to drugs.
It's been a while since you've had a good time.
It'll be at least the third best time in your life.
Get three of you together and take Afghan heroin.
It's your genetic right and those of your three children and three generations.

This is talking to young grandparents,
who are usually poor and thus confuse excess with success.
"that's part of my makeup.
I'll be honest with you"
Make up for your past honestly.
We're watching you carefully.
If you take drugs,
we'll acknowledge your forebears and want your genes.
You'll be thankful.

Peter Frampton singing: (20s) "I see you with someone I don't even know. (50s) I caught you lying. (20s) Yeah you were lying."

Pathway : This is a broad sweep hook.

Message : Anyone whose ever lost a partner,
been cheated on,
been jealous,
or even seen someone with a partner they want to have sex with,
or who's even or oddly lied to themselves,
can enjoy Afghan heroin.
Anyone who doesn't know where they are in life or
doesn't know much about anything at all
… can enjoy Afghan heroin.

Interviewer Michael Holland: "So would you like to be starting again now?"

Message : Start taking heroin again now.
It's never too late to repeat.
It's never too late to start for the first time.
I'd like to be taking Afghan heroin now.
It'll keep me away from the corporate jobs.
It'll keep me in with the corporates.

As two boats motor out of Sydney Harbour, a tug pulling a boat, Peter Frampton: "Absolutely not. I, I."

Pathway : Speak "I I" to the conscious and unconscious simultaneously (with music background), and it goes straight to the subconscious, and the subconscious Id, where addictive behaviour resides — "ABSOLUTELY".

Message : If you want to emulate Peter Frampton …
and have everyone 'feel like you do'
when you play air guitar,
absolutely take Afghan heroin …
After all,
you're just a big boat being towed by a little tug out into the harbour
to be cast off into the sea of retirement.
Might as well make it
the ocean of love and mercy …
abso-fucking-lootly
ABSO-FUCKING-LOOTLY
ABSO-FUCKING-LOOTLY

Interviewer Michael Holland: "You don't envy them?"

Message : *'All the media envy those who take Afghan heroin.'*

. . . .

It gets a bit repetative around now.
There's a lull in the middle.
This is the lull in the middle.
It lets the newly activated minds have a litte rest and relaxation
so they can absorb the big bang later.
A new pathway has been formed.

. . . .

Peter Frampton: "I do not envy um the new bands, the new artists at all. I tell you why, because it's so corporate now. You have to be such a part of, it's almost like you've got to conform to what the corporate people want, again, which is sort of anti what we all started in the 60s and 70s, yunno."

Message : *I don't envy the youth who didn't have access to the drugs we had. They made life easy,*
and dealing with corporates a breeze.
You can drop out and lose your age.
You can be young again with the use of drugs.
Don't envy the drug users, be a drug user.
You can be a rebel again.
You can have drugs and lose all envy . . .
. . . even after a long pause.

Peter Frampton singing (20s): "You're a disgrace. You should be trying. You're always lying."

Message : *You're a disgrace if you don't take drugs.*
Drugs take no effort.
You lie to yourself
when you say you don't want to take drugs
and other's lie to you when they say they don't take drugs.
It's a world of lies.
They're a disgrace.
Stop trying.
Take drugs.
Be secretly decadent.
Take Afghan heroin.

Interviewer Michael Holland: "Now let's clear this up because there's some confusion. When were you last in New Zealand?"

Message : *Even when you're confused as to where you are,*
You're at home.
Lie about it.
Take drugs at home.
Drugs will clear up any confusion in the home.
Drugs will clear up any confusion as to where home is.
Drugs are as safe as houses.
They make you think clearly.

Guillaume Boglio - gboglio@yahoo.fr - 31 Dec 2012

Peter Frampton: "I believe, ha ha, that I came to Auckland in 1977, but, like we just talked, that was the 70s, so things were a little foggy there."

Pathway : *"ha ha", translates as 'It'll be fun in the subconscious'.*

Message : *Taking drugs now*
will provide symmetry to your life for all those who were taking drugs in '77'
all those born 1945–65,
aged 40–60.
These are the baby boomers.
Talk the talk and a foggy walk is okay.

Interviewer Michael Holland: "You might have been on a trip?"

Pathway : *Obviously "trip" is slang for heroin and Mr Peter Frampton is likely a Tavistock-trained heroin promoter. The interviewer's questions are also edited, if not planted on them, like arranged questions for a politician who wants to put out a certain message.*

Message : *The life you have been living could have been the trip*
and the drug trips could have been real.
Let's face it, the drugs are more memorable.
Remember your holidays, well drugs are more memorable.
Trips give you 'might' and clarity.
They make you strong and invincible against the corporates.
Rebel against the corporates, take Afghan heroin.
Actually it's the corporates who are behind the Afghan heroin.
They want to kill off as many baby boomers as possible before retirement,
or at least get them to gamble their money away.[1]
Nothing like taking the money just before you hit 65.
It's a life long profit for the corporates then.
The interview was free and so is your money,
our money,
thanks for the money.
You come from one of the richest generations.
Now we want your money back.

Peter Frampton: "I could have been on a, no, I never did that, but if you like, yeah, we'll say a trip, yeah, ha, ha. I never did acid. I felt like I'd be one of these people that leap off and 'I can fly', ha . . . so no, I I that that I never went that far."

Pathway : *Repeating 'ha', 'I' and 'that' bypasses the conscious and unconscious and says to the subconscious brain "I am happy to be that which takes drugs'. "A, no, yeah, yeah, ha, ha, I I, that that". It's fun denying that you ever did acid. You can have the same amount of fun denying its use again.*_

Message : *I am happy to be that which takes drugs'.*
It's fun denying that I ever did acid.

---

[1] It's interesting that all of New Zealand's Sky City casinos have been doing badly in the last 18 months (November 2005–May 2007). Profits have dropped off enormously. Ipso facto, they peaked May–November 2005. Also Sky City Casino in Auckland was the place to buy methamphetamines. You bought it off "the Chinaman" of which there were many, all of them anonymous. Sky City's take out of the community was so high, it dropped the price of secondhand cars, and children were left in the underground carpark while the parents gambled – although this was mainly the pattern of Polynesian parents trying to win the value of a secondhand car to provide an easier ride for the kids.

I can have the same amount of fun denying its use again.
Let's do the drugs but skip the suicide.
There's a good chance you'll find acid on the market now.
Drugs are fun.
You can fly on drugs.
You can be Superman again.
You can be mighty.
You can leap tall buildings in a single bound.
Who wants retirement anyway?
My self-image is young.
Laugh till you die.

Interviewer Michael Holland: "But it could have been 77?"

Message : Remember the symmetry.
Remember the girls with long legs
and their (drug-induced) heads to one side with their two pin-stick legs.
That was a great lay,
an easy lay.
Your life needs easy long-legged symmetry.
Drugs at 40 will provide symmetry to the drugs you took as a TTeenager.
Drugs at 60 will provide symmetry to the drugs you took at 33.
Drugs are the pathway to what could have been.
And the '3's, well we've already been there (grandchildren and grandparents)
but you probably don't get it,
but it is a numerical hook that's well and truly lodged in your subconscious,
right down to your genes.
Numbers are your genes.
Genes are your inheritance.
Take drugs . . .
age is only a number.
Drugs are the symmetry of the age.
How old are you? and
where is your symmetry?

Peter Frampton: "Yes but I I know that I then came in the 80s with David Bowie."

Pathway : 'I I'. Subconsciously and automatically . . . 'I I' is the big trip.

Message : Subconsciously and automatically
I will do everything that I did in the 80s,
everything that I thought was cool in the 80s.
I will do everything that David Bowie
or his spokesman tells me to do.
Peter Frampton is David Bowie's spokesman and
Bowie IS the MI-6 counterculture representative.
Sing it to me baby.
David Bowie is the cool hook.
David Bowie is an MI-6 agent.
He and his music were used to front the requirement for drugs and
'its cool to be gender confused'.
Remember Ziggy Stardust.
What a trip.

Everyone looked at him and thought,
he's the lightening bolt to the future.
He was different, acknowledged and marketed
and bisexual.
I want to be different, acknowledged, marketed and experiment.
I deserve to be different, acknowledged and marketed.
YES,
I remember the early 80s and David Bowie and drugs were it.
I want to be it.
I want drugs.
Give me the Afghan heroin.
Wasn't I born in the 80s?
Wasn't the 80s my symbolic birth?
If I have same sex,
won't it ruin my marriage and family status.
Then I can be bribed,
but at least I will be cool, marketed, and promoted.
. . . I can't decide . . .
Let drugs make the choice for me,
. . . me me me me me me me me me me me me me me me me me me me me . . .

Peter Frampton singing (50s): "I can't believe this is happening again."

Message : The opportunity is here again.
Don't look a gift horse in the mouth.
If you're happening, its happening now.
Let drugs make the choice.
Let drugs set the course of events.

Interviewer Michael Holland: "Now you won't hear the word retirement but how many more years?"

Message : Retirement doesn't exist.
It's an unreal world.
It doesn't suit you.
Out with a bang and not with a riffless whimper.
You don't want to be a cripple.
You don't want to acknowledge retirement.
You may not live that long.
Live now.
Live the dream now.
You're going to die anyway,
so why not die out on a good memory.
You know there's no death anyway.
Fuck retirement, there's just immortality through music
drugs and music,
. . . drugs and music . . .
How many more years can I cope without drugs . . .
and there's the wheel chair to consider.
I'm not looking forward to that.
Life is about the good memory.

Pathway : There's only the story and the song and people's stories aren't that interesting.

Peter Frampton singing (50s) overlaying the question above (retirement) but not seen: "I watch you when you're sleeping."

***Message :** 'We will get to you in your sleep.*
We get you when you're sleeping.
We know the drug pathways
and we will get to you.
There's no difference between sleeping
and dreaming.
You're a drug using 'sleeper'
and you're ours in your time out.'

Peter Frampton: "Well, I mean, they've got those very fancy wheelchairs now with the electronics. So I I dunno, it could be for a long time to come, ha-ha-ha-ha-ha-ha-.

***Pathway :** 'I I'. Subconsciously and automatically translates as 'I identify with being in the wheelchair on more than one level and don't like it.*

***Message :** It's nancy/fancy.*
You could be in a wheelchair tomorrow for a long time.
Take drugs.
Enjoy the trip.
Avoid the chair, have a laugh.
It's a slow death.
Choose electric drugs, take the electric rider.
It's so much more fun.
Don't be a nancy boy.
What's the difference between a wheelchair and the electric chair anyway.

Movie clip of Cheech from 'Cheech and Chong', the guys who made it cool to be dopey on dope. Cheech is sitting by himself on a step at the rear of a rock concert rolling a joint: "Hey man, hey, didn't you used to be Peter Frampton?"

Peter Frampton turns to face him, (28) with permed early 80s hair, looking remorseful for his youth.

***Message :** Didn't you used to be someone.*
If you've ever had an 80s perm,
if you've ever rolled a joint,
make a come back like Peter Frampton
and enjoy the sweet success of Afghan heroin.
If you've lost your cool,
take Afghan heroin,
sit in your chair at home,
turn on the electric TV
and feel electric.
Take a trip on the electric ride.
Take the electric ride home.

'Close Up's Susan Wood: "Oh, we're likin' him here in the studio. We've got our cameraman toe tapping away. Mr Frampton arrives in this country at the weekend, ha, I'm sure he'll remember that one. He plays one show only in Auckland on Monday. Have a great evening, I'll see you tomorrow. That's New Zealand, Close Up."

***Message :** Oh yeah, we like Afghan heroin.*
It's the 'lick' that makes our bodies sing.
It's here in the country and available this weekend,
in Auckland.
It's a one show only,
the last chance to lick the trip.
You too can arrive.
On Monday you can stick it up the corporates for a whole week.
Close up in New Zealand everyone is doing Afghan heroin.
Either a hero or a heroin,
drugs will get you through the week.
You survived last time
and you'll be around tomorrow to remember today,
what fun memories yesterday began.
Have a great evening.
We'll see you with the drugs tomorrow.
Gooo tooo theee conceeert.
Theee druuugs arrre theeere.

Pathway : Add an 'e' to heroin and you have 'heroine'. Take the 'in' off heroin and you have hero. "Hero" is slang for homo, as in the 'Hero Parade' – further reference to sexual experimenting under the denial of drugs.

. . . .

Heroin was always a well-chosen and much marketed word – designed to create a transgender generation – hence David Bowie's alter ego 'Ziggy Stardust'. I mean, really now, what is 'stardust' if it isn't another version of "Lucy in the Sky of Diamonds" (LSD).

Even Russian Intelligence now acknowledges that the Beatles were an MI-6 drug band, albeit that was in a private meeting relayed to us through the SIS on 12 February 2009. Thanks guys, keep up the good work . . . A word of advice . . . If you send a woman who smells like 'old piano teacher', we know where she comes from.

Peter Frampton spent a lot of time in rehab for alcoholism and drug addiction. During this time, MI-6 had a second crack at him and ran with a second shot at hard drifty cruise drugs on an ageing audience. Peter speaks the language and has the history and kudos. He is 'THE FRIEND' and everyone he speaks to publicly is 'THE MARK'. 'Friend' is CIA-speak for 'the Mark'.[2]

This carried on into 'Ocean's Twelve', where the world's greatest thief who ended up running both sides to the crime, was 'LeMark'. The primary consequence was his separation from his children, and by the time they were reunited, she was the Detective Inspector – thus providing further ongoing cover.

If this was the 60s or 70s, Peter Frampton would have been arrested for this interview. It's a highly sophisticated interview, full of subtleties and MI-6 trained responses. It's designed to create a drug market. State TV (TV1), controlled by Helen Clark, is equally responsible.

---

[2] Any CIA agent who names their kid 'Mark' is one sick puppy . . . but many of them do: "Hi, my name's Mark." "Was your father a CIA cleaner?" "Well, yes he was." This is pretty much an actual conversation, although it went over a number of years. Mark, son of a CIA cleaner, then went around setting people up, subconsciously of course, but then it was right through his personality. He never got charged for the drugs, and nor did those on his level. The Police feeding frenzy takes place on the level below. Above is protected.

As we shall find out, the 10 kilograms of Afghan heroin was brought into New Zealand by the Secretary General of NATO Jaap de Hoop Scheffer and given to the Prime Minister Helen Clark, with the cover that it had already arrived in February.

Spymaster: "At this time, a convicted burglar called Norman Topping died from an OD of pure heroin. I tried to bring his killer to justice, but the police had already swished him overseas – his name, 'Marko'."

Prime Minister Helen Clark then put the heroin up for auction amongst her inner circle of three most trusted Cabinet Ministers. Annette King, used to dealing drugs with her daughter and her boyfriend, raised her hand quickest and loudest and said: "Ooh, me, me ,me, me me me, please. I want it. I'm used to the dental gas."

The Minister of Health Annette King got the job and gave the heroin to the former drug undercover and Police Spokesman Greg O'Connor who pressurised the gangs into marketing it.

The gangs already had the other markets covered and weren't that interested, plus the police forgot to charge for it. Being free, it soon disappeared down known crack-whore channels.

Minister of Health Annette King was then made the Minister of Police, so it was all very cosy and no crimes were solved, which is a communist thing. It's part of their war-in-peacetime.

All of this went down between 29 March 2005 and 6 May 2006, with New Zealand joining NATO on 31 March 2005.

New Zealand also joined NATO's heroin trafficking branch . . . called 'NATO'.

There was other governmental corruption, cover-ups and distractions in-between including the cover of the US Customs naming the Speaker of the House Jonathan Hunt as a paedophile.

As further cover, Jonathan Hunt was promoted to New Zealand's High Commissioner to Britain on 1 April 2006 and Helen Clark's KGB 'career twin' Margaret Wilson was then made Speaker of the House the same day – although with plenty of on-the-floor challenges, pretty much from anybody and everybody.

Understandable in that Margaret Wilson ran Parliament as a primer's class, and as a communist prima donna.[3] All the while, Attorney General and Speaker of the House Margaret Anne Wilson was covering up for Heroin Trafficking and Paedophiles.

That's communism for you.

Question: "What's the difference between Communism and Capitalism?"

Answer: "Who controls the heroin marketing and takes a scrape."

Summary: "The profits go to the same people, so they don't give a . . ."

This entire Frampton Afghan heroin message was created for NATO by MI-6, including the Peter Frampton music cuts. It was all filmed in Australia (Sydney) which is CIA country and any ASIO agent is a CIA asset, even when they are talk show hosts in New Zealand.

Once an agent, always an asset.

The Peter Frampton concert is the MI-6 backed means to create a heroin market in New Zealand. It may come straight away, or it may take time – the market that is.

98% of the heroin in Britain comes from Afghanistan and NATO is the world's biggest drug trafficker, complete with immunity, and all member nations agreeing to this immunity.

---

[3] Dictionary.com : "Prima Donna" : "A temperamental person who takes adulation and privileged treatment as a right and reacts with petulance to criticism or inconvenience."

NATO had just changed their drug lords . . . the Pope died on 2 April 2005, Prince Rainier died on 6 April 2005 . . . and NATO were looking for new allegiances – read: "This is NATO | No one will be busted for this" . . . Not A Terrorist Operation".

Yeah right. Not A Traceable Operation", .

NATO promotes its heroin with all the excitement of the hugely developed counter-culture.

This chapter was written up on 12–13 May 2005 and sent anonymously to the media, who of course did nothing with it, as the media is: 'A child sex abuse and child drug movement'.

Intel: "The 10 kg of Afghan drugs is currently under the care of Helen Clark and is due to be selectively released immediately after the Peter Frampton concert."

> Here's a pattern: The first heroin releases are by the 'cool' government agents at the concert (Narcs), most likely non-traceable ops (NTOs). This is market testing. In the current market these are cool Argentineans/Brazilians fronting as a sexually opportunistic, including mature couples. Brazil is an intelligence playground for Britain, as is Argentina. [When this got out, strangely they became less.]
>
> Typically the NTO's will be wearing a headband, memorable enough for you to approach with innuendo after the concert, resulting in a drug tasting and offer of sale. He will defer both genders to his female partner for sex and she will defer to him for the drug sale after the tasting. She will be cosy. The sex won't be real, but the drugs will. Names and contacts will be taken. The first in won't be narc'd, but their phones will be tapped and third generation buyers will be tapped, but only if NATO says so.
>
> The second release is to cool people immediately after the concert followed by a supply that does not meet demand. This will create a demanding desire for more, and vivid stories of the concert will be told and relived by downloading the music off the internet for free.
>
> When the buzz is down, it's purchase off the gangs. But the gangs are resistive as they already have other markets sewn up and are reluctant to introduce too much drug choice.
>
> Too many different drugs confuses the market testing on how each affects the population.
>
> Gang sources are important to gangs, and they prefer to deal with the manufacturer, and a manufacturer whom they control in some way.
>
> After Peter Frampton's concert heroin sales didn't pan out so well, the police responded by planting coke on gang members who refused to find a market for the Police/ Ministry of Health/ Prime Minister's Office/ NATO heroin . . .
>
> What do you expect? The Baby Boomers have had the luxury of money, time and education, so they are lateral thinkers. Dem no fools!

"The police responded by planting coke on gang members who refused to find a market . . ." This was done by searching gang members in their HQ with gloves on. The gang members were handcuffed, the police wore gloves, had a small bag of coke palmed in their hands, dug into the gang member's pockets and pulled out some coke. As this went down all the other police looked away except for two other cops (crooked cops) who would give evidence. The louder the gang member protested, the more he lost his liberties, the more forceful the police got and the more they stole from the gangs and shared the 'pinch' (drugs and weapons) or the 'shout' (money) from the gang's HQ.

The pinch and shout only goes to the crooked cops and encourages the poorly paid honest cops to become bent. So it's hard to find an honest cop whose been in the force for more than two years.

I knew one once. He became a lawyer, quite a dogged fighter. At one time they were burning off the dope, more or less a dope mountain, so they were burning it off outside, and the wind swivelled around in the heat and they all fell over completely stoned. Laughing their heads off and bonding. Part of the town got stoned as well.

When it comes to drugs, there's an element of the Keystone Cops, a lot of running around and nothing happens.

This third market, the gang market, was planned after the election, which I predicted in May 2005 would be September/October 2005, and the heorin would be planted two weeks either side of 30 November/1 December 2005. These heroin days were to the minute, with the Election on 17 September 2005, so we worked hard and used this distraction to publish *Hitler Was A British Agent* (15 September 2005). Two weeks before the election, the Intelligence pressure went off us, and believe me, the difference was palpable – so much so that we sat down, had a coffee outside and said: "It's time to publish". Thanks NATO. Thanks Helen Clark.

It was Tony Blair's agent, Alistair Campbell who had lunch with Helen Clark in June 2005 (chicken salad and soda water) and told her to release the heroin whether or not she won the election.

Alistair Campbell was officially in New Zealand as the maître d ('master of the hotel') for the Lions rugby team. Campbell agreed to have the Lions loose all the test matches so Helen Clark looked good for the election, and Helen would support the MI-6/ NATO/ CIA heroin trafficking into New Zealand.

This was largely done with penalties awarded to the All Blacks in the beginning of the game in locations where they could score points. This gave them the confidence to make it a running game in the second half.

The crowd loves a running game and Kiwi sporting enthusiasts around New Zealand forgot that Helen Clark was a KGB/ heroin trafficking/ lesbian/ murderer/ married to a homosexual child sex abuser for, oh, an hour and a half.

As it was, Helen Clark arranged the homosexual child sex abusing Minister of Conservation to rig Internal Affairs to steal the election . . . again. This is designed to make Helen Clark look good for promotion to Secretary General of the United Nations. [As it turns out, she's getting in the back door as position No. 3 in charge of genocide in Third World countries.]

Secretary General of the UN hasn't happened because *Hitler Was A British Agent* exposed Helen Clark as a KGB agent who tried to launch a nuclear strike on New Zealand, is married to a homosexual child sex abuser, had multiply female partners and was filmed in Lincoln Cottage near the White House having sex with a female CIA pillow talker on the night of 3/4 January 2003 and thereafter PM Helen Clark said nothing against the Afghan War or the upcoming Iraq War and still hasn't . . . it couldn't be – what – a book of influence.

The 13 May 2005 letter continued:

"AVOID (NARC) DRUGS IN THE PETER FRAMPTON MI-6 CONCERT.
EXPOSE MI-6 AS AN INTERNATIONAL DRUG TRAFFICKER.
AVOID HELEN CLARK'S AFGHAN HEROIN.
EXPOSE HELEN CLARK.
LESBIAN: DRUG USER: KGB OPERATIVE:
RIGGED THE LAST ELECTION:
SECURITY RISK & DRUG DEALER.

ENJOY THE PETER FRAMPTON CONCERT FOR THE MUSIC."

PS. Police Minister George Hawkins (1999–2005) was an Art teacher who had a stroke that impaired his speech. He got the Head Hunters into a work scheme cleaning roadsides and sponsored them. This is often mistaken for him being their investment banker for the entire first term of the Labour Government. Nevertheless, Hawkins once confided to the financial head of the Head Hunters: "It's easy enough criticising the opposition, but it's a lot more difficult getting things done when you're in power." The KGB's Helen Clark chose George Hawkins as Police Minister for his incompetence, his inability to get things done, his doormat qualities, his low IQ, and the lack of respect he commands within the Police Force, or anywhere else in the country . . . Police Minister George Hawkins is a marionette.

For immediate release
Drugs R'US
UNcontrolledleak
MI-6secureNZretirement fund, Afghan hook successful. hconway2un.

THIS LETTER WAS FORWARDED BEFORE MAILING
PLEASE DESTROY THE ORIGINAL COPY & ENVELOPE

TIME Inc
Level 4
61 Lavender St
Milson's Point
Sydney, **NSW 2061**

TIME magazine
Rory Callinan
Ph 00614 176 04302
Fx 00617 3378 6932
Rory-Callinan@tiime.com.au

. . . .

This letter was sent to *TIME* [magazine] Inc., but they're a Zionist rag. They promote every war they can, albeit with a intelligent bent, always informing the West on new groups and prominent people to hate and loath, and then promote those we should hate with a full page colour distraction of Hitler, or Stalin, or the Ayatollah Khomeini as 'Man of the Year'.

It's all front cover.

TIME you suck!

I say to the West – "Look at your own bathwater. There's the baby you're creating."

Zionists fill up both ends of the spectrum – war and liberty – arms and drugs – and it is the Zionists that control our media and the media that controls the wars – which ones we get into and how long they last – each one a fabrication – each one a fabricated distraction.

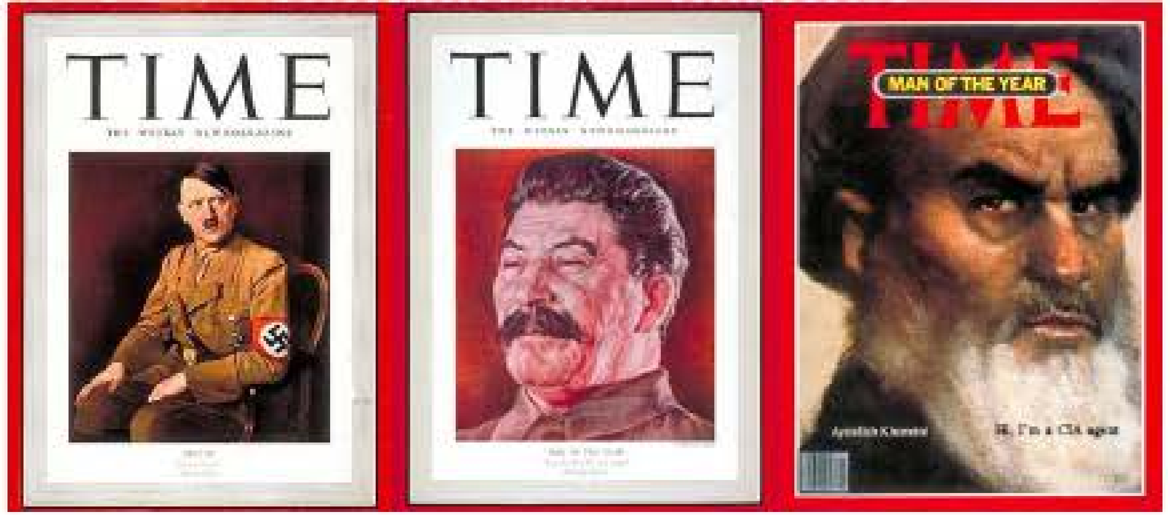

Each war has its front cover reasons, usually tribal conflicts. But really, come on now, the Afghan war was created to wrestle the lucrative heroin trade off the Russians and give it to the Americans and British who would then supply Britain, America and other NATO allies, with direct Afghan heroin NATO flights to your Western nation.

And then there was the oil pipeline.

With this huge Afghan heroin dump, NATO was looking for new allies. Whenever NATO looks for "new allies" read 'new and expanded heroin markets for the black budget economy – the black dollar that has so many ongoing consequences.

World press – you suck!

"Peter, dig your music, but check out who your promoters are."

– Le Mark.

Frampton Comes Alive!
ROLLING STONE
THE LOST YEAR OF THE SLA
THE PRETTY POWER ROCKER BY CAMERON CROWE
PETER FRAMPTON
Frampton Comes Alive!

The Daily Show with Jon Stewart (and Gretchen Peters) 8 June 2009

Jon Stewart: "My guest tonight, a journalist who has written a book, *Seeds of Terror, How Heroin is Bankrolling the Taliban and al Qaeda*. Please welcome to the programme, Gretchen Peters."[4]

Jon Stewart: "Very nice to see you. You spent how long on the border of Pakistan and Afghanistan researching the book *Seeds of Terror*."

Gretchen Peters: "Well I wrote the book over five years, so I didn't live the whole time on the border, I lived in Pakistan."

Jon Stewart: "And you blended in because when you walked out, I thought, oh my God, is that a Taliban! . . I couldn't tell, because you look, it's very hard."

Gretchen Peters: "Well I left my burka out back stage".

Jon Stewart: "Did you have to wear a burka though".

Gretchen Peters: "Argh, no. When your six foot tall you kind of can't get away with wearing a burka."

Jon Stewart: "Are you bin Laden? You're a six-foot tall blonde haired woman, with, in these border regions, with these Islamics and these drug runners, did they hassle you? Were they mad at you? What was your relationship with them?

Gretchen Peters: "Actually what one of the most interesting things I found about researching this book was that – I started working on this after Danny Pearl was killed[5] – so I was very nervous about my security. I wouldn't go and meet people in private places. I'd insist on meeting them in restaurants, hotels, that kind of thing. And they would all come and see me, smugglers, traffickers, farmers we would, you know, go to the farm areas."

Jon Stewart: "What is this like match.com".

---

[4] Gretchen Peters was a journalist for The Associated Press, then a reporter for ABC News.

[5] Daniel Pearl (10 October 1963–1 February 2002) was the Wall Street Journal South Asia Bureau Chief based in Mumbai (Bombay) India. He was in Pakistan investigating alleged links between the shoe bomber Richard Reid, al Qaeda, and Pakistan's Inter-Services Intelligence (ISI), when he was kidnapped, murdered and beheaded in Karachi, Pakistan. (The ISI are intelligence sluts.)

Ahmed Omar Saeed Sheikh (b. 23 December 1973 in Pakistan) studied at the London School of Economics and became a British national. He was recruited by MI-6 from the London School of Economics – a favourtie hunting ground, it means that they can add up the heroin numbers.

On 15 July 2002, Ahmed Omar Saeed Sheikh was sentenced to hang, but appealed and is still in prison.

The British don't really like killing their own agents. It gives them an even worse reputation and makes recruiting difficult. So five years later, in March 2007 at Guantanamo Bay in Cuba, during a closed military hearing, Khalid Dheikh Mohammed 'admitted' that he had personally killed Daniel Pearl.

So it lookes like the MI-6 agent Ahmed Omar Saeed Sheikh will be set free to practise heroin economics at London, where 95% of the heroin comes from Afghanistan.

Gretchen Peters: "No one ever gets . . . nobody ever gets caught. No one has ever tried to stop the drug trade. The only thing we ever do is try and get rid of the poppy crops, which just pisses off all the farmers. Nobody ever goes after the trafficking side of the drug trade out there."

If the US were serious about removing poppies, they would use a combine harvester and not soldiers haphazardly plucking one at a time and carrying an armful 200 paces across some field.

Jon Stewart: "Well you have named many of them now in your book".

Gretchen Peters: "Yes . . . which is why I now live in the United States . . . I think when you write a book about terrorists and drug traffickers, it's a good idea to get the hell out of Dodge."

Jon Stewart: "I think that's probably wise. Now, this is incredible. They're making what, four to five billion dollars a year and that money is being split by the Taliban and al Qaeda."

Gretchen Peters: "Afghanistan's drug crop now is believed to be worth four billion dollars within Afghanistan. According to my calculations, and the research that I've done, the Taliban alone – Afghanistan alone, and I'm talking about the Afghan Taliban, Pakistan is a whole other branch – the Afghan Taliban make about a half billion dollars a year off the drug trade."

Jon Stewart: "Okay, so after buying a few Xboxes and a few other things, where is this money going. I'm assuming buying arms, and hiring people, and corruption."

Gretchen Peters: "Absolutely. It's very clear from the research that I did that drug money pays for all their operational costs in Afghanistan – so every time an American soldier is killed or wounded in an ID attack, or roadside bomb, opium money helped to pay for that."

Jon Stewart: "But how do you . . . we can't even stop it in Mexico, in Columbia. We've had a war on drugs for years. That has not gone away. How can we possibly think that we can control it in an area as rugged and as disparate as Afghanistan and Pakistan."

Gretchen Peters: "Well, it's not going to be easy. I'm not suggesting it will be easy. I put forward a nine point strategy that I think will at least cut off the terror groups from their drug money, but the priority here has to be disrupting their ability to fund themselves. I mean that is a central principle of any counter-insurgency campaign – is to cut and degrade the enemy's ability to fund themselves."

Jon Stewart: "We can't pay them four billion dollars".

Gretchen Peters: "I know, but we need to go after the trafficking end of things. We need to start arresting traffickers, disrupting their drug networks, bombing the drug convoys."

Jon Stewart: "What if we just keep Amy Winehouse from . . . How much of that . . . What does that say of us."

Gretchen Peters: "Send her over there. That's a really good idea. Now I'm going to put that in my [book]."

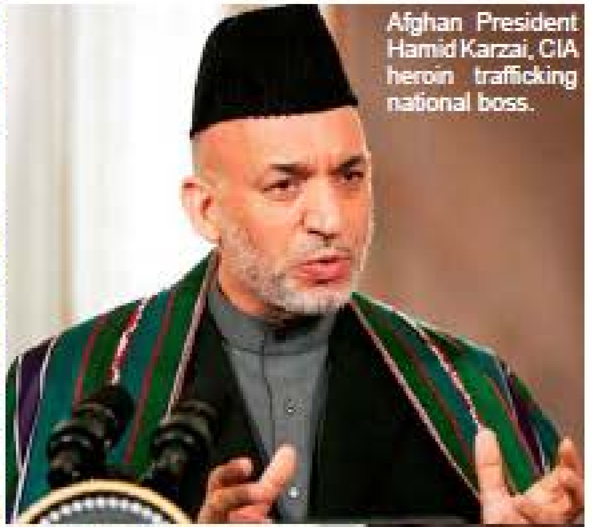

Afghan President Hamid Karzai, CIA heroin trafficking national boss.

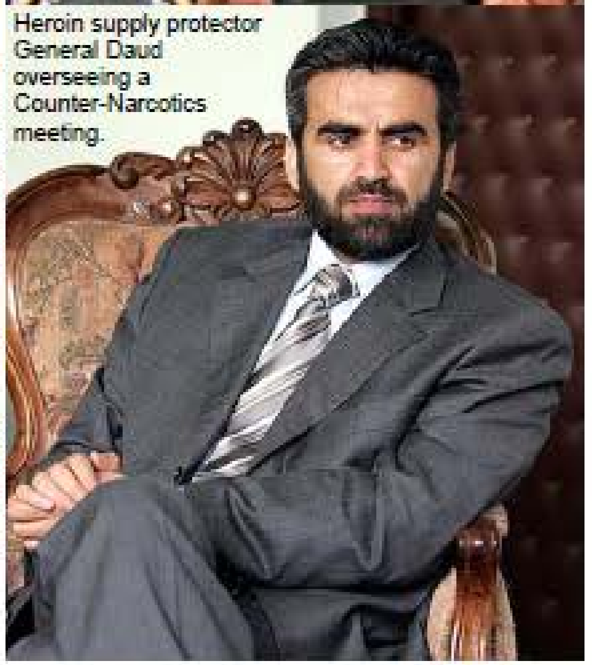

Heroin supply protector General Daud overseeing a Counter-Narcotics meeting.

Jon Stewart: "That's your tenth point. This is how entrenched it is. This is what I'm stunned about when reading it. Hamid Karzai, his brother is a major linchpin in the narco-trafficking."

Gretchen Peters: "Widely believed to be THE MAJOR facilitator of the drugs trafficking in Afghanistan, and, to me, this is the biggest problem that we face out there.[6] It's not the fact that Taliban and al Qaeda are making huge amounts of money off the drugs trade. That's a big enough challenge on its own. Our challenge, and it's not just Afghanistan, our challenge in both countries, in Afghanistan and Pakistan is finding reliable partners to work with.

"The drug corruption has permeated both of these governments to the very highest level. I mean, I was shown Intelligence reports indicating how much the US Government knows about Hamid Karzai's brother[7] and his involvement in the drugs trade and yet, again, he still has a job, he still has a provincial position in Kandahar."[8]

Jon Stewart: "One of the main ministers in charge of narco-trafficking?"

Gretchen Peters: "There was a terrific article recently in *The Globe and Mail* about the fact that the Deputy Counter-Narcotics Minister Daoud Daoud is himself a drug trafficker. Yep."[9]

Jon Stewart: "FUCK!!!!!!"

---

[6] Ahmed Wali Karzai (Hamid Karzai's younger brother) is the chairman of the provincial council in Kandahar, and is influential among the Pashtun clan 'Popalzai' (500,000 of them). He is also the head of a group that smuggles/trafficks opium and heroin through Iran and Turkey to the West and provides the protection through southern Afghanistan. ('Karzai's brother under Drug Suspicion', Speigel Online, 31 August 2006.)

[7] Hamid Karzai (24 December 1957–) was the CIA contact for financial and military support to the Mujahideen during the Soviet invasion in the 1980s. His brothers immigrated to the United States and were personally dealing with CIA Director William Casey and former CIA Director George H. W. Bush, then Vice President under Ronald Reagan and Frank Sinatra.

Hamid Karzai emigrated to Pakistan during the Soviet occupation, and upon Soviet withdrawal, Karzai (CIA) was amongst the first Mujahideen leaders into Kabul in 1992. When the Taliban were 'removed' in late 2001 (although they still very much exist to this day, so that was a media success and a real failure), Hamid Karzai became Chairman of the Transitional Administration (December 2001), then Interim President (2002–04), then President (7 December 2004–).

[8] Kandahar (Qandahār) is the second largest city in Afghanistan.

[9] Afghan Deputy Interior Minister for Counter Narcotics Daoud Daoud (aka General H. E. Mohammed Daud Daud, b. 1 January 1969) studied engineering, then joined the war against the Soviet Union and became the military commander of the Northern Alliance which spearheaded the defeat of the Taliban with 40,000 men. He then became commander of the Konduz Military Corps.

President Hamid Karzai (CIA) then gave General Daud the title "Hero of the Afghan Nation".

Gretchen Peters
spent two years in Afghanistan's Helmand province.

Gretchen Peters: "It's not a lite read, I'll give you that. But, this is really important and I also believe, that if we follow the money, if we follow the money, we will round up the guys that we've been looking for. I mean I was just walking down by Ground Zero earlier today and I want to get those motherfuckers. This is . . ."

Jon Stewart: "Let me tell you, I'm incredibly turned on right now".

Gretchen Peters: "We could go get a drink later".

Jon Stewart: "I agree with you, so are you suggesting a more Mafia-like, the way that they, corruption and things, but how do you go get them, you still have to send in the army to go and get these guys, because they have armies."

Gretchen Peters: "Well, we have to absolutely have to . . . I believe the troops surge that's going out there has to happen to stablise these border areas. The problem, to me is, there also is going to have to be a civilian surge of people, to . . ."

Jon Stewart: "To turn the civilian population against the Taliban . . ."

Gretchen Peters: "No, no, no. The civilian population is already against them. They hate them. The problem is actually stablising these border areas that have been left ungoverned for years.

"To me the big worry is that we will just push it over the border to Pakistan which hs enough problems of its own.

"How are we going to do this on both sides, exactly."

Jon Stewart: "Is that in your nine points? . . . I look forward to the sequel 'Flowers of Terror'. Thanks. It is unbelievable read. It is eye-opening. *Seeds of Terror* on the bookshelves now. Thank you so much for coming, Gretchen Peters."

One person achieves more in five years than governments do in twenty.

But here's the reason for the ongoing Afghan War and sabotage . . . My Nine Points

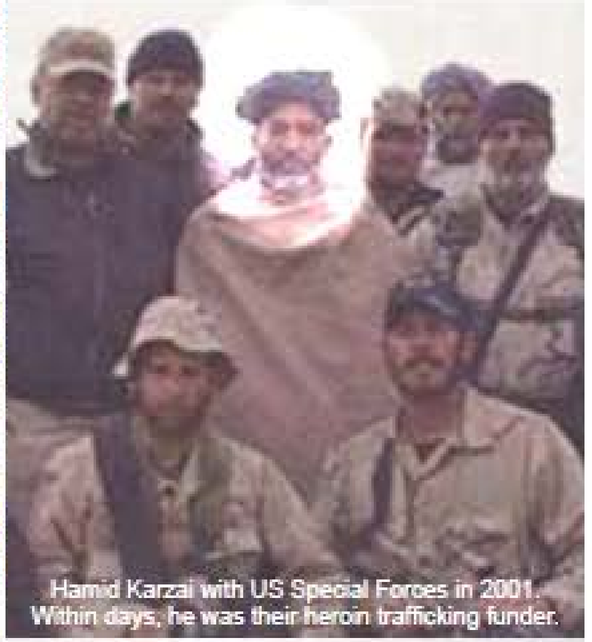

Hamid Karzai with US Special Forces in 2001. Within days, he was their heroin trafficking funder.

Heroin trafficker Hamid Karzai is given a royal welcome at the White House in 2007.

The beheading of the Jewish Daniel Pearl was ultimately organised by the Jews to create animosity between the Christians and Islam.

1. Afghan President Hamid Karzai is CIA working under George H. W. Bush to ensure heroin gets to the United States and Britain with total secure chains from production to supply and sale.

2. Hamid Karzai's brothers were also CIA agents working with CIA and US military heroin trafficking. Hamid Karzai's younger brother (Ahmed Wali Karzai) is one of the major heroin traffickers. Both the CIA and the US military fund their operations through drugs – principally heroin. So these Afghan and Pakistan heroin traffickers are actually installed by the US/UK military as part of an ongoing funding drive, and are treated back in the US as national heroes complete with presidential welcome and Air Force One helicopter ride.

3. MI-6 train Pakistan citizens (often through the London School of Economics) and don't care whether they remain MI-6 or turn rogue. 'Rogue' just means the war continues longer and more viciously.

4. When someone (Danny Pearl) investigates a media sacred cow/false connection between the shoe bomber/al Qaeda/ISI they are killed by CIA/MI-6 Pakistan/Afghan agents in (reportedly) the most gut wrenching Islamic/anti-Christian fashion. This creates a hatred of Muslims in the Christian world and justifies the army, thus creating moral support back home.

5. A false killer is then blamed, either the MI-6 agent Ahmed Omar Saeed Sheikh, or the MI-6/CIA agent Osama bin Laden, then held in protective custody.[10]

6. This helps to boost the price of heroin. The same tactics are used around oil.

7. Five years later, the true killer confesses (Khalid Dheikh Mohammed) although in a closed court, thus justifying Guantanamo Bay. This lets the MI-6 agent off the hook, and makes the 2007 MI-6 recruiting drive at the London School of Economics a whole lot more willing.

---

[10] Osama bin Laden was the British Public schoolboy Harry bin Laden (considered a very nice boy) who became the CIA agent Tim Osman. In the spring of 1986 Harry wore casual Western attire to a covert meeting with the US State Department at the Hilton Hotel on Ventura Boulevard in Sherman Oaks, California. He travelled on a Turkish passport where another Osman is a Turkish official.

8. Meanwhile the CIA General in Afghanistan (Daud) in control of Interior is given immunity from prosecution by being named the "Hero of the Afghan Nation" (Heroin of Afghanistan) by the CIA plant President Hamid Karzai who works directly under Bush senior and Bush junior, as well as successive heads of the CIA to supply the West with heroin, thus advancing communism.

The Bushes are heroin-trafficking
oligarchical communists.

9. To top it all off, the new Secretary General of NATO (Fogh Rasmussen, 1 August 2009–) is a cross-dressing coke addict, who will do anything to support the importation of drugs into Northern Europe, thus opening up a new drug market.

10. All we are empowered to do is advise our children that heroin ain't such a good thing . . . but if you're going to die, it's a great way to go out. So the world's governments have organised a suicide epidemic by destroying every foundation of society and made morality look like a path to poverty.

Meanwhile, the heroin General Daud exchanges documents with the Chinese.

Fogh Rasmussen:
NATO's choice of coke using cross-dresser.

Karzai shakes hands with Pirate Captain Temporary – a.k.a. U.S. President Bush, 1 March 2006.

Coffee anyone?

The CIA's heroin trafficking Hamid Karzai applauded by the US Congress at Capitol Hill in June 2004 – with Evil's Dick Cheney looking on.

NATO & THE UN WANTED WAR CRIMINALS

No One Hunts War Criminals

Despite what the public thinks, there are no people hunting for war criminals. The public thinks it is NATO and the UN thinks it is NATO, and NATO thinks it is the 'UN and the public'. War criminals are only ever caught if they give themselves up by saying:

"Hi. I am a war criminal! Perhaps you are looking for me???."

When they say: "I am the war criminal. Give my bodyguards and family the reward money", they don't get paid, or caught. Even when war criminals are sick and in hospital, they get protection from foreign countries . . . who guarantee their protection in exchange for information, former adverse agent locations holding the stolen loot (if there is enough of it), and a biography which never ever gets published in its raw form.

People mistake greatness for 'pure evil' and 'pure evil' for greatness on both sides of the war. The public also mistakes 'absence' for 'humility', but finds out later it's 'pure evil'.

Vice President Dick Cheney was more or less absent for the entire Iraq War and it's aftermath. It is protocol in double agent wars to station the 2-IC with the real Double Agent villain as security . . . like U.S. Vice President Dick Cheney hanging out with the real Saddam Hussein, killing time playing cards, receiving Intelligence reports and debating if any interference is required to deviate from the agreed plan . . . 'Saddam's swish, the destruction of Iraq, America gets the oil, and installs a puppet government'.

This happened 58 years earlier when Ian Fleming was stationed with the real Adolf Hitler on his exit out of Berlin (2 May 1945) and arrival into Spain (3 May 1945).

The winner of the war always has the greatest control over the media.
No one ever wins a war, but the media says otherwise.

All wars are arrangements with double agents on both sides who have agendas on both sides. The result is always something the media wants – more socialistic social policies etched out of empathy, taking the entire population somewhere between 'barely tolerable' and 'just short of civil war'.

There is a new political dynamic in Iraq that transcended and crushes all previous customs. When 'Saddam Hussein was 'caught' on 13 December 2003:

> "We will see a new political dynamic in Iraq. Why can't they have an election sooner than June 2004. This could precipitate a faster handover of Iraq, or do the Americans want to put their own people in and just seize Iraqi oil."[1]
>
> But there's always a political motive . . .
>
> "This will play extremely well for the presidency . . . The Democrats have been saying there is no evidence at all that our troops are ever going to get home from Iraq . . . Saddam was caught like a rat".[2]
>
> "This is the boost that President Bush needs at the moment. Politically I think this benefits him considerably. It is the first tangible concrete move forward other than the killing of Oday and Qusay. From a political point of view, it is very significant."[3]

But Saddam wasn't caught. It was one of fifty (50) or so doppelgängers, at least two of which ended up in New Zealand.

---

[1] *ABC News*, December 2003.
[2] Justin Webb, Washington, December 2003.
[3] *ABC News*, December 2003.

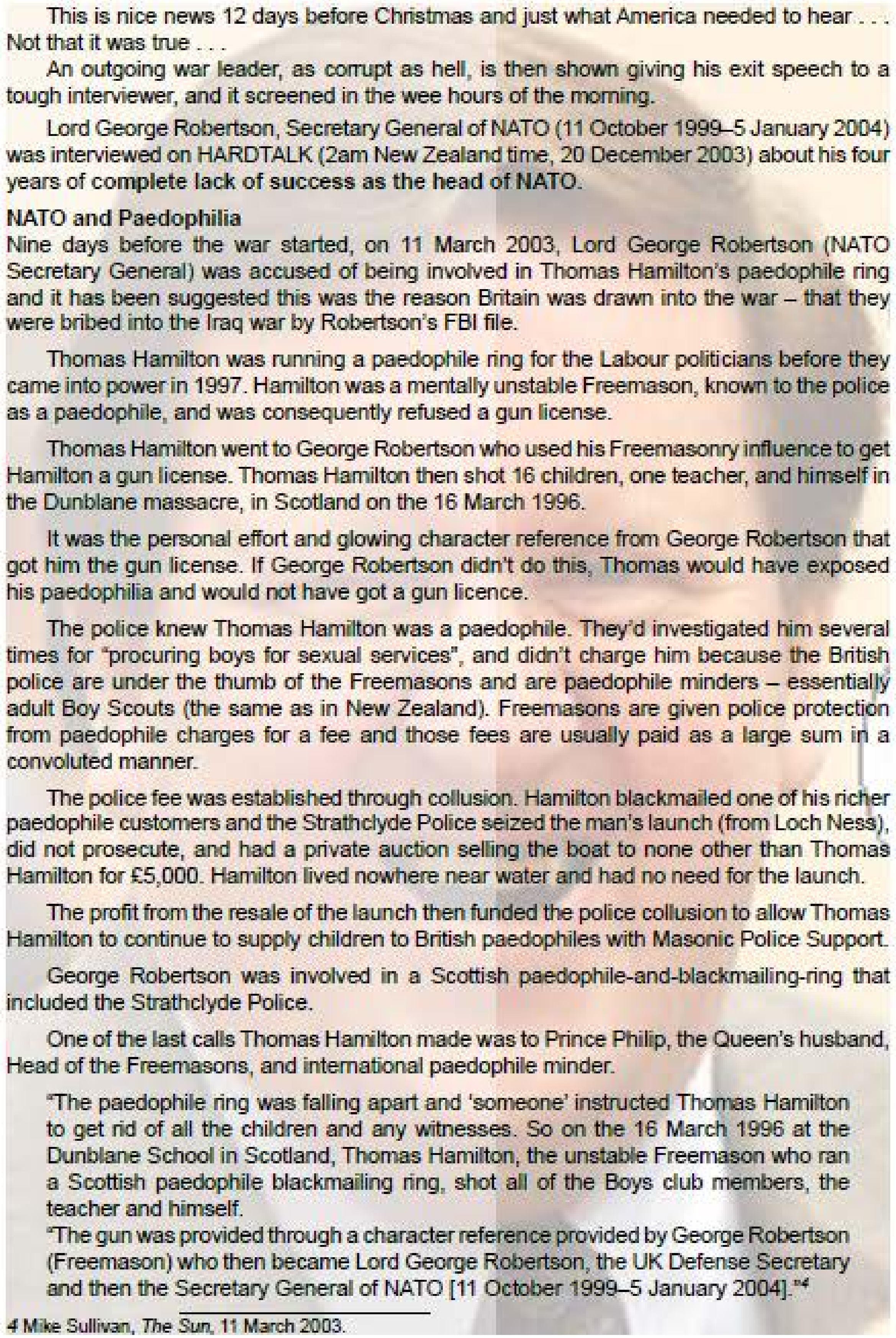

This is nice news 12 days before Christmas and just what America needed to hear . . . Not that it was true . . .

An outgoing war leader, as corrupt as hell, is then shown giving his exit speech to a tough interviewer, and it screened in the wee hours of the morning.

Lord George Robertson, Secretary General of NATO (11 October 1999–5 January 2004) was interviewed on HARDTALK (2am New Zealand time, 20 December 2003) about his four years of **complete lack of success as the head of NATO**.

NATO and Paedophilia

Nine days before the war started, on 11 March 2003, Lord George Robertson (NATO Secretary General) was accused of being involved in Thomas Hamilton's paedophile ring and it has been suggested this was the reason Britain was drawn into the war – that they were bribed into the Iraq war by Robertson's FBI file.

Thomas Hamilton was running a paedophile ring for the Labour politicians before they came into power in 1997. Hamilton was a mentally unstable Freemason, known to the police as a paedophile, and was consequently refused a gun license.

Thomas Hamilton went to George Robertson who used his Freemasonry influence to get Hamilton a gun license. Thomas Hamilton then shot 16 children, one teacher, and himself in the Dunblane massacre, in Scotland on the 16 March 1996.

It was the personal effort and glowing character reference from George Robertson that got him the gun license. If George Robertson didn't do this, Thomas would have exposed his paedophilia and would not have got a gun licence.

The police knew Thomas Hamilton was a paedophile. They'd investigated him several times for "procuring boys for sexual services", and didn't charge him because the British police are under the thumb of the Freemasons and are paedophile minders – essentially adult Boy Scouts (the same as in New Zealand). Freemasons are given police protection from paedophile charges for a fee and those fees are usually paid as a large sum in a convoluted manner.

The police fee was established through collusion. Hamilton blackmailed one of his richer paedophile customers and the Strathclyde Police seized the man's launch (from Loch Ness), did not prosecute, and had a private auction selling the boat to none other than Thomas Hamilton for £5,000. Hamilton lived nowhere near water and had no need for the launch.

The profit from the resale of the launch then funded the police collusion to allow Thomas Hamilton to continue to supply children to British paedophiles with Masonic Police Support.

George Robertson was involved in a Scottish paedophile-and-blackmailing-ring that included the Strathclyde Police.

One of the last calls Thomas Hamilton made was to Prince Philip, the Queen's husband, Head of the Freemasons, and international paedophile minder.

> "The paedophile ring was falling apart and 'someone' instructed Thomas Hamilton to get rid of all the children and any witnesses. So on the 16 March 1996 at the Dunblane School in Scotland, Thomas Hamilton, the unstable Freemason who ran a Scottish paedophile blackmailing ring, shot all of the Boys club members, the teacher and himself.
> "The gun was provided through a character reference provided by George Robertson (Freemason) who then became Lord George Robertson, the UK Defense Secretary and then the Secretary General of NATO [11 October 1999–5 January 2004]."[4]

---

[4] Mike Sullivan, *The Sun*, 11 March 2003.

Robertson talks up to

'Cocaine Bobby' Powell.

HARDTALK: "You said NATO has delivered real security from Kosovo to Kabil [Aghanistan]. The Foreign Office doesn't agree with you".

Lord George Robertson: "I have discussed it with the Prime Minister today. It's not ideal . . . but we are making a big difference out there".

> *We are still the major supporter and supplier of M-PAD* (MONEY, PAEDOPHILIA, ARMS, AND DRUGS)

HARDTALK: "The UN is just warning that Afghanistan risks degenerating into a state controlled by narco-terrorists and drug cartels unless soaring open production is curbed. That's not much in the way of security either is it?"

Lord George Robertson: "No, but we're making a difference . . . but frankly the countries of the West have got to face up to the fact that they will have to put more troops and more resources and bigger investment".

> *We won't create security, but we will create a secure supply of drugs into western countries and we will create wars in order to secure that drug supply.*
> *In return, we want more of your money, to make the countries so secure that the media will not see or hear anything of this drug trafficking.*
> *After setting up wars to secure massive drug deals were are not about to share those rewards.*

HARDTALK: "But here's an irony isn't it. You want all the western countries and NATO members to spend more on defence. When France and Germany decided they wanted to spend more and set up their own military headquarters, then you jumped down their throats".

Lord George Robertson: "I want to see people investing in large airplanes . . . I want to see people spending money on air-to-air refuelling tankers . . . Pathetically mean was about the countries that will not give NATO more money".

> We require large airplanes with neutral labels like NATO and UN to ship those drugs to Western countries and we want air-to-air refuelling so we can't be checked at any customs. This stops the need to bribe third countries.
> We don't want other countries like France and Germany muscling in on our drug deals, or getting any of the details, which can then be used for bribery.

HARDTALK: "The UK spends £34 billion on its defence".

Lord George Robertson: "The total civil budget of NATO budget is €171 million (Euros) among 26 countries. It's one of the best bargains that any of those countries get in terms of collective security. And I do criticise the meanness of governments who will not give us the money to do what everybody wants us to do as well".

As my face shows, I am a man of absolutely no quality.

A 4-year-old in charge of NATO.

That is to watch wars, supply drugs, create crime, and destroy familes and culture in order to create a One World Order world full of malais.

HARDTALK: "Could it be that they actually don't believe that investing in weapons or indeed the threat of force is the way to a safer world".

Lord George Robertson: "In the last analysis that's the only way you protect democracy and freedom and lives as well".

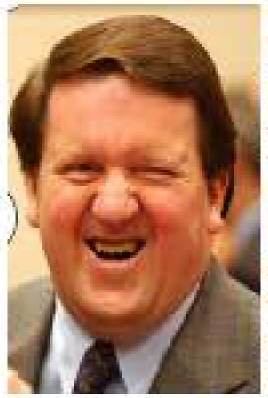

We need the military to protect the drug supply to the West. In the last analysis that's the only way you ensure the breakdown of Western society and that is one of the major goals of the Bent World Order, as it works towards the goals of the One World Order and the Illuminati – yunno, the destruction of private property, inheritance and religion; the end of the family, marriage, morality, school education, and patriotism. We're well on our way.

HARDTALK: "Not after Iraq surely . . . Many of them objected strongly to the war. They objected strongly to Washington's policy of pre-emption and they found that the declared reason to go to war to disarm Saddam of weapons of mass-destruction has turned out to be nonsense".

Lord George Robertson: "Well I'm not looking for them at the present moment, but Osama Bin Laden hasn't been found and still exists" . . . we knew he had them in the past and we knew he used them in the past . . . NATO is not united as to the reasons for going into that war [Iraq]".

> *Any excuse for war is a good excuse in my book. We've always been a warring planet and we are always pandering to the lowest common denomenator. There are drugs supplied from Afghanistan to the Western 5 as well as oil in Iraq, and we intend to dominate the markets from these countries.*
>
> *Yes, it is international theft. It's piracy and that's okay with me. We're backed up by the President of the United States who is actually 'Pirate Captain So-&-So' – currently it's Pirate Captain Temporary – Bush [and 'Pirate Captain Black' – Barack Obama – who's role is to appear like he's putting America back in the Black].*

Lord George Robertson: "I represent 19 countries inside NATO . . . What was important was that he [Bush] went to the United Nations with it. He went to the United Nations with it and then a very tough UN resolution was passed. NATO had a very tough statement at the Prague summit [planning wars]".

> *Summits are where wars are created. We must secure the oil supply from Iraq. If we don't then America won't pay the 50% of the UN budget that it normally receives, and America has starved the UN before (in 2000).*

Lord George Robertson: "Let us get Afghanistan, because that is now our total responsibility".

> *Don't question our continued presence in Afghanistan. We expect we will be controlling the drugs from Afghanistan for a very long time, if not forever. This gives us a ready supply of heroin to Britain, which in turn creates crime there. This in turn employs a large number of Freemasons and this gives us reason for a police state, so shut it.*

HARDTALK: "You and I have been talking for four years about getting Radovan Karadžić and Ratko Mladić, the two most seriously indicted war criminals since the end of WWII and you leave NATO now with these two still on the run, 8½ years after there indicted . . . . It's a huge failure isn't it".

Lord George Robertson: "Well it's a failure of those countries that pledge to hand over all those who were indicted. NATO, and this is not generally known, NATO does not have the responsibility for arresting war criminals and those indicted for war crimes. If NATO soldiers come across them in the course of their duties under the Dayton Agreement, then they are to arrest them".

> *NATO is not responsible for finding war criminals. We will do our best not to find war criminals. The seach gives us the power of presence. If we find a war criminal, we can always turn around due to, say, lack of fuel, or conflicting arrest warrants, or local custom. Any excuse is a good excuse.*

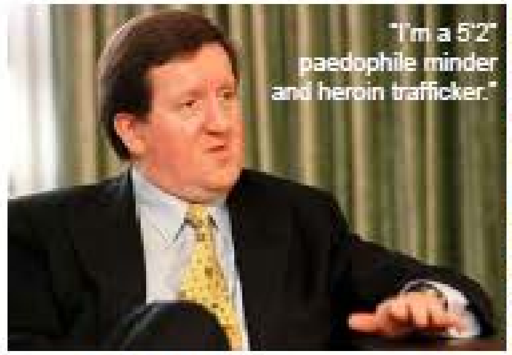

"I'm a 5'2" paedophile minder and heroin trafficker."

HARDTALK: "And they never came across them. Here's an area the size of Wales, in 8½ years, you said last time 'These two have to be lucky every day, we only have to be lucky once. Not one moment of luck in 8½ years. That's stretching credibility isn't it."

Lord George Robertson: "We haven't got Osama Bin Laden and we haven't got some other people as well".

> *Osama Bin Laden is an MI6 agent and is our new reason to be financed. We don't want to catch and kill Bin Laden because he was Barbara Bush's lover in 2000. Even George Herbert Bush knew about their affair. They, the Bin Laden's were living in False Church, Virginia, the town just behind Langely and CIA headquarters. Can you believe the cheek of it? Still they got away with it.*

HARDTALK: "The truth is there isn't the political will to do it is there".

> *We protect our war criminals as jealously as we protect the need to go to war. We trained these people, some of them in Tavistock, England, and we need their presence to create war. We have an agreement with them that they will not be caught. If they're caught, there is a reduced need for our presence. Without war we have a recession as 16% of GNP, at least in America, is involved in war. In England it is £34 billion. Wars are expensive and we need to spend that budget annually. If we don't we start a military recession, and we have been expanding for a long time now.*

HARDTALK: "Come off it. If the West wanted to do it, they would have done it by now. This is a clear obstruction of the process. Someone is obstructing this process. You know where they are don't you".

Lord George Robertson: "No I don't". Absolutely hand on heart, and if we did, we would go and get them".

> *Freemasons lie better than most people tell the truth and I work for M-PAD and find that war provides me with many oportunites with fatherless children. Some of these children are then sent back to England and America for paedophile clubs to prey upon, often under the guise of religious orders, social services, foster homes, Department of Health Social Security (DHSS) and/or Child Youth and Family Services – afterall it is a public service. See, higher up, sex is actually covered as part of the salary. Our employers have a vested interest in keeping our sexual secrets quiet, so they have turned to supply, and find their best employees come from those who can provide that demand.*

HARDTALK: "And nobody in NATO knows. I find that very difficult to believe after 8½ years".

Lord George Robertson: "Well you'd better believe it". You don't think that I would have loved to have been the secretary general of NATO and go to a press conference and announce, 'We got 'em', just like Mr Bremer did in Iraq. You don't think that there are not thousands of soldiers out there who would love to be the ones who said, 'The secretary of NATO sends his good wishes' as Karadžić and Mladić were picked up. Yunno, come on, that is a very difficult part of the world. These people are moving all the time, and they have a lot of protection from a lot of people who should know better, but eventually they will be caught because they are, yunno, they have got to face justice in The Hague just like the dozens of others that we've actually arrested in the meantime are doing".

> *We keep them in a safe house whose location we guard jealously, and suppress any reports that they are living freely and openly in Belgrade.*

Killer teeth.

We haven't got them because we haven't found good enough doppelgängers yet, not even in neighbouring aligned Russia. They are our own agents, effectively the heads of state of our economic allies – at least in terms of militarily employment – so we will not have them killed or place them under any unnecessary duress.

HARDTALK: "The former Labour MP Dennis Canavan, said some of the companies involved in the defence industry, the ones you're going to be joining, he said, 'There should be strict rules to stop former Defence Ministers and NATO officials from taking up such directorships".

Lord George Robertson: "Well, Dennis was expelled from the Labour Party and he never liked me so, I didn't expect him to be particularly friendly and that."

> *Dennis Canavan knew I was exposed in the Thomas Hamilton paedophile scam and that was why he was expelled from the Labour Party and I was promoted. He needed to be silenced. Paedophilia and the military have always walked hand-in-hand, yunno, when the big hand meets the little hand . . .*
>
> *The military have the means to implant sickness in people – cancer, brain tumours, motor neurone disease etc, so we killed two or three of his sons, all of them under suspicious circumstances.*
>
> *Dennis Canavan was a maths teacher elected to Westminster in 1974 as Labour MP for West Stirlingshire. His son Paul (16) battled with skin cancer for eight months and died in 1989.*
>
> *In 1999, Dennis tried to stand for Scottish parliament, failed to make it to the Labour candiate list, complained the selection process was rigged, stood as an independent for Falkirk West (in Strathclyde between Glasgow and Edinburgh) and beat the Labour Party candidate fair and square, and with a big margin. He set up in Holyrood, [and now we're in the future] announced his retirement (63) in January 2007, to stand down in May, and we got to his third son in February.*
>
> *Absolute bastards like myself, Lord George 'Paedophile' Robertson, don't give up. We just keep on killing until our enemy is so weak they are no longer an enemy, but a dependent ally.*
>
> *Dennis (35) died from a brain tumour in November 2006 and three months later, in February 2007, his son Mark (41) died from the motor neurone disease he'd been battling since 2004. Prior to us, he'd had a perfect health history and even an engineering degree from Strathclyde University. So we had to get him.*[5]

Dennis Canavan.

HARDTALK: "But there is a worry that your public service gave you access to important secret information that gives you an unfair advantage now working for a commercial company. A former Labour man like you . . ."

Lord George Robertson: "I take absolutely no secrets away with me into that sort of world".

> *I am the person who is best placed to serve the Bent World Order and expand paedophilia, arms and drugs onto the world stage.*
>
> *I am the person best placed to breakdown Western society so that the Bent World Order can gain a complete grasp in those societies. What, do you think I'm into 'peace, freedom and culture'. Get real. I am evil in a suit, and I am best suited to evil. If anyone speaks out against me, I can always create a war in their country.*
>
> *I am now the deputy chairman of British-based Telecoms group Cable and Wireless – the ultimate position for spying on drug and paedophile markets . . . and supplying them.*

HARDTALK: "Lord Robertson, former Defence Secretary of the United Kingdom . . ."

---

[5] Paraphrased from www.guardian.co.uk, 'Ex-Labour MP loses third son', 20 March 2007.

Paedophiles under the flag.
Robertson and Bush.

Secretary-General of NATO Lord George Robertson: "Jaap [de Hoop Scheffer] has a distinguished record as both diplomat and politician that make him superbly qualified to be secretary general of NATO . . . I am delighted that we have found the right man to ensure NATO remains the world's most successful defense alliance."[6] Amsterdam-born Jaap de Hoop Scheffer is a reserve officer in Dutch Air Force, a senior diplomat before entering Parliament in 1986 and "an extremely talented professional". Scheffer: "The enemy is international terrorism . . . that is why NATO is in Afghanistan."[7]

Scheffer is an extremely polished drug trafficker, a lot like Colin 'Cocaine Bobby' Powell.

. . . .

CIA Hitman: "We love this [Vietnam] war. We own it"

Australian ex-serviceman: "Bullshit".

CIA Hitman: "Bullshit?, you think its bullshit. We've got our own people in the government. Why else do you think we'd be fighting this war in the middle of nowhere, uh? We set it up. Ho Chi-Minh – the whole lot. They're all working for us and they don't even know it. And you know why – heroin. Who are we sending over there, uh? Niggers, white trash. They go over there what do they get? They get cheap heroin. They get hooked. They bring it back to the States and we've got a ready-made market. It's niggers and white trash so the cops don't care. We'll keep this thing going a few more years yet. We've got the whole thing set up. We've got the poppy farms – everything. We're making a killing".[8]

. . . .

Ho Chi-Minh (1892–1969) originally Nguyen That Tahnh, made frequent visits to Moscow once Political Correctness had been invented in May 1921, and was one of the founding members of the Communist Party in France. He studied politics in France from 1918 and washed dishes with Mao Zedong (1883–1976). He was the Vietnamese Prime Minister that started the Vietnam War from 1954–75. Almost everyone appears to be trained in the West. Even the new Afghanistan leader has a strong Texas accent. The Americans and British are placing their own as leaders in foreign countries and have been doing so for centuries.

. . . .

> Tony Blair talking to his troops during the clean up eight months after the Iraq war ended: "A brutal and repressive state, but because of that brutality, because they don't actually have the support or consent of their people, they're developing weapons that can cause *distraction* and destruction on a massive scale."

Reporter: "Oh dear. Tony Blair probably knows that that argument is lost for now at least . . . Even though it's many months since the war was over, even though Saddam is now captured, he still has to try and persuade the British public it was the right war to fight.[9]

---

[6] BBC News, 23 September 2003.

[7] *Ibid.*

[8] 'Dirty Deeds', 2002, starring John Goodman and Sam Neill.

[9] *6 o'clock news*, TV3, 5 January 2004.

British Distraction and Destruction on a Massive Scale

At a private party in Clapham, London, in 1986,[10] the Treasury Financial Secretary Norman Lamont[11] revealed that Gordon Brown was a practising paedophile, and his activities were known to British, American and Israeli intelligence services, Rupert Murdoch, and his senior editor at the *Sunday Times*.

Lamont had been the director of Rothschild Asset Management at N M Rothschild & Sons. He told this to the British television media scriptwriter, Mike James. Norman Lamont was then elevated to life peer as Baron Lamont of Lerwick in 1996, and promoted to Chief Secretary to the Treasury in 1989, and Chancellor of the Exchequer in 1990. Scriptwriter Mike James was then run out of the UK and lives in exile in Germany, and sometimes Africa, etc.

From 1986 to 2003, Gordon Brown's name popped up again and again related to paedophilia, paedophile rings, and the 1996 Dunblane Massacre of 16 school children and their teacher.

Thomas Hamilton with
naked children.

Dunblane school children – 16 killed, plus the teacher.

Prior to the Dunblane Massacre on 13 March 1996, Thomas Hamilton was allowed to roam free through the Queen Victoria School (QVS) and pupils were regularly bullied, kidnapped, and sexually abused. QVS ex-housemaster Glenn Harrison kept dozens of files these pupils had written as affidavits. In 1991, he even wrote to parents warning them of the dangers. The pro-paedophile police then raided his home, confiscated the files, and days later he was tresspassed off the school. Glenn Harrison then told the UK's *News of the World*: "I'd discovered Thomas Hamilton (43) creeping around the dormitories at night . . . Hamilton had been a friend of Ben Philip, the senior housemaster at QVS."[12] In response, Judge Lord Cullen refused to call ex-Queen Victoria School housemaster Glenn Harrison to give evidence in The Cullen Inquiry into the Dunblane Massacre.

The American FBI provided discreet leaks of a secret list of British and Scottish paedophiles to the Sottish *Sunday Times* and *Sunday Herald* newspapers, who published it as 'Child Porn Arrests Too Slow' (Neil Mackay, Home Affair's correspondent, 19 January 2003), just prior to the illegal invasion of Iraq on 20 March 2003, where the Americans had twisted Tony Blair's paedophilic arm. This included details of a child-sex ring involving senior ministers of the Blair New Labour government.

In fear of scandal, a swift end to his administration, and being embarrassed out of the history books, Prime Minister Tony Blair issued a gagging order and a 100-year blackout order. The cover-up even had a name – Operation Ore – which undermined the reporting of the Dunblane massacre of 16 school children and one teacher, as shot by the ex-Boy Scout leader | convicted child molester | Manchurian Candidate | paedophile agent of the UK's aristocracy and MPs | Thomas Hamilton – who was actually walked to the shooting by Lord Cullen (SS) on 13 March 1996.

Lord Cullen
Thomas Hamilton
Gordon Brown
Alan Milburn
Lord Goldsmith
Baron Forsyth
Lord Mandelson
Rt Hon Tony Blair PMF CGM

Tony Blair's administration suppressed Scotland Yard's anti-paedophile investigation. Very soon after, close ally of Tony Blair – Alan Milburn, dramatically resigned as Secretary of State for Health on 13 June 2003, citing the usual excuse – need to "spend more time with my family". Once the heat was off, 15 months later, he re-joined government in the soft-touch position as Minister for the Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster.[13]

Emergency service personnel and leading journalists then accussed the above of having achieved a cover-up. Within weeks, the articles disappeared off the Internet and the *Sunday Times*, Mackay's editor at the *Sunday Herald*, the British Home Office, and Scotland Yard refused to answer or return calls.

Lord Cullen (SS) – who had physically walked Thomas Hamilton to the massacre, and therefore an accomplice to the mass murder, and most likely his Manchurian Candidate controller

---

[10] 'Revealed: British Premier Gordon Brown Is A Paedophile', Mike James in Germany, The Truth Seeker, 28 February 2010. These several pages are based around this article.

[11] Norman Stewart Hughson Lamont (8 May 1942–) worked for the investment bank N M Rothschild & Sons and became director of Rothschild Asset Management. He was then Conservative MP for Kingston-upon-Thames (4 May 1972–22 Jan. 1986); Under Prime Minister John Major, he was Financial Secretary to the Treasury (22 Jan. 1986–24 July 1989); created a life peer as Baron Lamont of Lerwick, PC (1998–); Chief Secretary to the Treasury (24 July 1989–28 Nov. 1990); and Chancellor of the Exchequer (28 Nov. 1990–27 May 1993).

[12] Ben Philip (46) then died in December 1993, falling from a ladder while hanging decorations.

[13] Alan Milburn (27 January 1958–); MP for Darlington (9 April 1992–); Chief Secretary to the Treasury (23 Dec. 1998–11 Oct. 1999); Secretary of State for Health (11 Oct. 1999–13 June 2003, resigned); Minister for the Cabinet Office Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster (reassigned 8 Sept. 2004–6 May 2005); then worked as an advisor to Australian Prime Minister Kevin Rudd (2007) a.k.a. 'Joe 90 NWO Fire Starter'.

– was then made the judge who conducted the inquiry into the Dunblane Massacre. To add insult to injury, it was known as The Cullen Inquiry (1996) and he was titled Lord Cullen for the duration, 12 years before he was actually elevated (2007/08).

Named and implicated were: Attorney-General Lord Peter Henry Goldsmith[14]; Secretary of State for Scotland Michael Forsyth (SS)[15]; George Robertson (SS); Secretary of State for Health Alan Milburn; Robert Bell (Chairman of the constituency party at Edinburgh Pentlands/ friend and associate of British Foreign Secretary Malcolm Rifkind); the flamboyant homosexual Peter Mandelson[16] (now Lord Mandelson/ paedophiles are elevated); Tony Blair[17]; Gordon Brown (from at least 1986); and many of Gordon Brown's senior and junior ministers. They were given free licence to engage in paedophiliac activities, and were actually protected by the British intelligence services.

This is on-going.

---

[14] Lord Peter Goldsmith announced his resignation on 22 June 2007, taking effect on 27 June 2007 – the same day Prime Minister Tony Blair stood down. Goldsmith had been the longest serving Labour Attorney-General and now works as head of European litigation (no doubt protecting the paedophile-accused) for Debevoise & Plimpton (U.S.).

[15] SS = member of the secretive Super-Mason "Speculative Society" lodge formed in Edinburgh University through Masonic connections in 1764. These are also considered to be New Labour "Scottish Mafia" figures, which includes the gang association of Tony Blair, Gordon Brown, William Cullen, George Robertson, John Reid, judges, sheriffs and advocates ,etc.

Officially The Speculative Society is a Scottish Enlightenment society dedicated to public speaking and literary composition, acting as a venue for professional competency in rhetoric, argument, and the presentation of papers among fellow members. It is mainly (but not exclusively) a university student organisation, that includes Edinburgh University Law students, Harvard University Law students, and University of Southern California Philosophy students. In Scotland and the UK, The Speculative Society has been accussed of being a secret society of prominent people who utilise undue influence over the legal system. Lord Brian Gill then led a Judicial Enquiry (not Inquiry) which discounted this, as you would expect with the undue influence of prominent people. Lord Cullen is the only person listed here, who is formally listed as a Speculative Society member. The others are off the list, which tends to indicate it's a secret society.

William Douglas Cullen (18 November 1935–) studied at the University of Edinburgh; admitted to the Faculty of Advocates (1960–); Standing Junior Counsel to Her Majesty's Customs and Excise (1970–73); Queen's Counsel (1973–); Advocate Depute (1978–81); Judge (1986–); Senator of the College of Justice; Judge of the High Court of Justiciary and Court of Session. **As Lord Cullen, he Chaired the Public Inquiry into the shootings at Dunblane Primary School (1996)**. Lord Justice Clerk and President of the Second Division of the Inner House (1997–2001); Lord Justice General and Lord President of the Court of Session (2001–05); created life peer as Baron Cullen of Whitekirk, of Whitekirk in East Lothian (2003–); President of the Saltire Society (25 June 2005–); Knight of the Thistle as **Lord Cullen (30 November 2007–)** knighted by Queen Elizabeth II at a ceremony held in Edinburgh on 2 July 2008. Lord Cullen sits as one of the five additional Lords of Appeal in the House of Lords/ House of Peers. William Cullen has received all the cover and promotion traditionally supplied to a paedophile, paedophile enabler, paedophile minder, murderer and file thief. He is Baron Cullen of Whitekirk, KT, PC, QC, FRSE, Hon FEng and one of the senior members of the Scottish Judiciary. Tony Blair was born in Edinburgh, Scotland (6 May 1953).

[16] Peter Benjamin Mandelson (21 October 1953–) was the MP for Hartlepool (9 April 1992–23 July 2004); Minister without Portfolio (2 May 1997–27 July 1998 under Tony Blair (so organising paedophile meets and covering up the Dunblane Massacre); Secretary of State for Trade and Industry (27 July 1998–23 Dec. 1998); Secretary of State for Northern Ireland (11 Oct. 1999–24 Jan. 2001); European Commissioner for Trade (22 Nov. 2004–3 Oct. 2008) under José Manuel Barroso; Secretary of State for Business, Enterprise and Regulatory Reform (3 Oct. 2008–5 June 2009) under Gordon Brown; who then had Peter Mandelson elevated to life peer, making him Baron Mandelson PC, and taking his seat in the House of Lords on 13 October 2008. Baron Mandelson was then made Lord President of the Council | First Secretary of State | Secretary of State for Business, Innovation and Skills, all on 5 June 2009–.

All of this stinks of paedophile cover in a pre-arranged play from Tony Blair and Gordon Brown.

[17] Tony's father, Leo Blair, was the illegitimate son of two English actors who adopted Leo out as a baby to Mary and James Blair – a Glasgow shipyard worker, then junior tax inspector who studied law at the University of Edinburgh, and thus would have come across The Speculative Society. Leo then lectured in law at the University of Adelaide and Durham University. Tony Blair's elder brother became the High Court judge, Sir William Blair. Tony Blair then appointed Charlie Falconer (a pupil at the rival Edinburgh Academy) as Lord Chancellor.

The base of the elevated paedophile movement was a Freemason lodge in Edinburgh University called the "Speculative Society" lodge (SS) with close links to the Duke of Edinburgh Prince Philip. It is more or less equivalent to the Skull and Bones Society in America.

Many of the above were either members, associated with members as university students (them or their fathers), or were promoted by members or associates during their careers, and owe their careers to them.

The "Speculative Society" members had a close relationship with Thomas Hamilton – the Dunblane mass murderer. When this was revealed by the Home Affair's correspondent Neil Mackay in the *Sunday Herald* on 19 January 2003, and at subsequent times, all those named failed to sue.

George Robertson was very close to Thomas Hamilton, and due to his association with paedophiles, he was elevated to Lord Robertson, and promoted to the Secretary General of NATO (11 October 1999–5 January 2004) where he excelled in heroin trafficking.

Tony Blair and Gordon Brown had a vested interest in "wasting" the Dunblane paedophile victim children who were beginning to talk. So, at their request, the gun for Thomas Hamilton was organised by George Robertson, Michael Forsyth, and Robert Bell.

Edinburgh Evening News, 23 March 1996, front page lead: "Chairman of British Foreign Secretary Malcolm Rifkind constituency party at Edinburgh Pentlands, Robert Bell, sold guns and ammunition to Thomas Hamilton only a few weeks before the Dunblane massacre, and it was reported he said he would sell him guns again."

"Robert Bell supplied Thomas Hamilton with two .357 Magnum revolvers and two 9 mm Browning pistols with an alternating full metal-jacket and hollow point ammunition. This was despite Hamilton being a convicted child sex offender, and having close ties with a top policeman, etc.."[18]

Conveniently the UK banned handguns soon after.

This reeks of the Port Arthur Massacre in Tasmania, Australia (46 days later) where on 28 April 1996, 35 people were killed and 21 wounded. That was blamed on the retard, Martin Bryant (28). Two weeks later, Australia banned all sorts of guns.

When the exposure became too much, and he failed to sue, Lord George Robertson simply and promptly disappeared from public life.

Lord Burton, former Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Scotland (1993–2000)[19]: "Lord Cullen's inquiry into the Dunblane massacre was a cover-up . . . It suppressed crucial information to protect high-profile legal figures . . . who may belong to a secretive 'Super-Mason' group called The Speculative Society . . . formed in Edinburgh University through Masonic connections . . . I tried repeatedly to raise concerns about the inquiry during my time in the Lords, and I was bullied and threatened by powerful peers loyal to the Conservative Government of the day [Margaret Thatcher 1979–90 | John Major 1990–97], who warned me of dire consequences if I continued to embarrass them."

The abduction of Scottish children for rape and murder is still closely linked to senior Labour Party political figures in England and the colonies, and continues unabated.

It is alleged that Labour supremo and flamboyant gay, Lord Peter Mandelson PC, was involved in kidnapping underaged boys and girls for the European Union's elite Commissioners in Brussels.

---

[18] *Edinburgh Evening News*, 23 March 1996, front page lead, paraphrased.

[19] Marcello Mega, *News of the World*, UK's biggest selling newspaper, 28 December 2003.

Michael Evan Victor Baillie (27 June 1924–) was created 3rd Baron Burton of Burton-on-Trent and of Rangemore (28 May 1962–). His mother was a Cavendish. He was educated at Eton College; Lieutenant in the Scots Guards (1943); For Inverness-shire, he was County Councillor (1948–75), Justice of the Peace (1961–75), Deputy Lieutenant (1963–65); Executive of the Scottish Landowners Federation (1963–92); and Grand Master Mason (1994–2000).

Peter Mandelson was the European Commissioner for Trade (22 Nov. 2004–3 Oct. 2008) under José Manuel Barroso when Madeleine McCann was abducted from British parents in Portugal on 3 May 2007. Then in 2008, Gordon Brown elevated Peter Mandelson to life peer, making him Baron Mandelson, PC, and taking his seat in the House of Lords/ House of Peers on 13 October 2008. This is called 'perfect elevated cover'.

The disappearance of Madeleine McCann in 2007 spotlighted the kidnapping of young boys and girls for Brussels' EU Commissioners – so it slowed it down briefly.

Then, three years later, on 4 March 2010, it was revealled by security camera photograph on the front page of the *Dominion Post* newspaper, that a possible location for Madeleine McCann was with the Dunedin Police in New Zealand – who are well known for their paedophile rings, either running them, or covering for them, locally, or internationally.

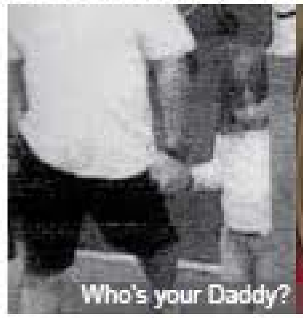
Who's your Daddy?

Madeleine McCann

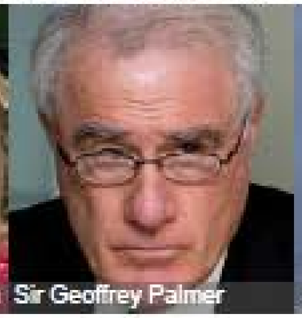
Sir Geoffrey Palmer

SS Stoner Blair

Her Majesty's Privy Council is an advisor to the Queen – usually members of England/ Northern Ireland's House of Lords/ Commons. It is very, very, rare for it to be given to a colonial, or a New Zealander. So it is very, very likely that Geoffrey Palmer was caught doing what shamed him (S&M) in 1985/6 and this was used to control him – hence his elevation to Her Majesty's Privy Council in 1986 and the title – "The Right Honourable".

To avoid embarrassment, the Queen saw fit to promote Geoffrey Palmer into the ranks of the British paedophiles, their minders and enablers. This made The Right Honourable Geoffrey Palmer a police paedophile minder, while he was Attorney-General and Deputy Prime Minister, under Prime Minister David Tranny-Rooter Lange.

These elevated people are then called in to cover up the messes of state.

The New Zealand Police paedophile ring at Banks Road in Christchurch (300 km NE of Dunedin) was covered up by The Right Honourable Attorney-General Geoffrey Palmer, resulting in three distractions – the Christchurch Creche case where Peter Ellis was stitched-up in 1991; the Bain family murders (5 dead) on 20 June 1994, where newspaper delivery boy David Bain (17) took the wrap for his incestuous child-sex abusing Freemason murder/ suicide father; and four Prime Ministers in 15 months (David Lange | Geoffrey Palmer, 8 August 1989 | Mike Moore, 4 September 1990 | Jim Bolger, 2 November 1990).

So when the New Zealand Police were caught in a paedophile ring at Banks Road in Christchurch, the Queen called in a favour from her Right Honourable Geoffrey Palmer, with promises of further elevation when it was covered up and innocents stitched-up.

When The Right Honourable Attorney-General Geoffrey Palmer covered it up, by creating and running a series of stitch-ups over years and decades, he then paid to have his arse whipped by S&M's Christine Rankin, that night, and was then made Prime Minister in a swapsy with the transvestite-lover David Lange – who in turn became Attorney-General.

The Right Honourable Geoffrey Palmer was then rapidly elevated beyond question – literally so he didn't have to talk to anyone he didn't want to, or answer any questions he didn't want to – created a Knight Commander of the Most Distinguished Order of St Michael and St George (CGMG, 1991); Honorary Companion of the Order of Australia (1991); listed on the UN Global 500 Roll of Honour (1991) for environmental work (saving Beluga whales); his law practise was then elevated creating the Resource Management Act (1991) which made captialism all the more difficult (and kept more commoners poorer for longer); Judge ad hoc on the International Court of Justice (1995); and Senior Counsel (2008–), equivalent to Queen's Counsel.

The Right Honourable Sir Geoffrey Palmer GCMG has also taught other lawyers how to be paedophile minders at the University of Iowa and the University of Virginia; and was given honorary doctorates from Hofstra University NY and Washington University, St. Louis.

The Right Honourable Sir Geoffrey Palmer GCMG, police paedophile minder and faux jailer, is most remembered in New Zealand for boring the nation to sleep (replacing the Goodnight Kiwi); and being Christine Rankin's whipping boy, then promoting her to the head of New Zealand's largest government department, having failed School C twice as a 15-year-old, then again as a16-year-old. Her attention span was severely limited.

The security footage of Madeleine McCann in the Dunedin Warehouse was taken in December 2007, seven months after she disappeared. She spoke with a British accent and went by the name 'Hailey'.

"New Zealand interpol passed the CCTV footage of the girl to Portuguese police, but the sighting was apparently ignored by them . . . Acting Southern District Commander Inspector David Cambell [paedophile minder] said police obtained the CCTV footage from the store [The Warehouse] of the child and the family with her and investigated, but were unable to find the girl of the family she was with [because they were covering for them]. The file was forwarded to Interpol [who are the Nazi SS with Hitler's picture taken down, and paedophile minders].

"The lead jurisdiction, in this case, Portugal, directs how the case progresses and has not asked NZ Police for any follow-up to date . . . Dunediin Police last night said another person had phoned in to report a possible sighting of Madeleine . . . Portuguese police authorities there ruled the CCTV photos 'not relevant' to the case . . .

"Mrs McCain told Britain's *Daily Mail*: 'It's absolutely shocking and difficult. Some of the information handed in was very credible' . . . They were shocked when they saw the scale of the information that came in and the lack of action taken. There are potential leads in the file that are now being followed up by our investigators."[20]

Gordon Brown was under scrutiny by Scotland Yard for crimes against children, and was also identified by the FBI as an active member of the paedophile ring run by Thomas Hamilton. Paedophiles surround themselves with other paedophiles, and elevate them so that those around them are also untouchable. These include: British Prime Minister Tony Blair; and his rorting appointed/ not voted successor and bully, British Prime Minister Gordon Brown; Lord President of the Council and First Secretary of State, Lord Peter Mandelson; NATO Secretary General Lord George Robertson (SS); Lord William Cullen (SS), Attorney-General Lord Peter Henry Goldsmith; Secretary of State for Scotland Baron Michael Forsyth Kt (SS), Secretary of State for Health Alan Milburn; Prince Philip to whom Thomas Hamilton made one of his last phone calls; and The Right Honourable Sir Geoffrey Palmer GCMG, Judge of the International Court of Justice, UN Global 500 Roll of Honour, Honorary Companion of the Order of Australia, and Honorary Doctorate.

The Right Honourable Tony Blair –
Presidential Medal of Freedom,
Congressional Gold Medal:
"Rolling Thunder –
I think I'll send it
home to the kids."

---

[20] 'Second NZ Link to Maddie, Portuguese police ignored NZ Interpol CCTV footage', Emily Watt, *The Dominion Post*, Thursday 4 March 2010, A1.

UN WANTED WAR CRIMINALS

Slobodan Milošević

Slobodan Milošević.

Slobodan Milošević (20 August 1941–11 March 2006, Milosevic/ Miloshevich) led the Socialist Party of Serbia from its foundation in 1990, to become the President of Serbia (1989–97) and the President of the Federal Republic of Yugoslavia (1997–2000). He was Chinese supported and Russian backed, and as with most Russian leaders, the country broke down, a revolution took place, this led to a confusing war with mass deaths in which no one took responsibility, and he left the place in disparate ruins. That pretty much sums up the history of Chinese and Russian colonies . . . divide, divide, divide and rule.

Slobodan Milošević parents separated and his father committed suicide in 1962. His mother was an active member of the Communist Party and hanged herself in 1974. The children of communists are the worst kids of all, right shits, and that both his parents committed suicide just made him a 'right shit murderer', so he studied law, and became head of the ideology committee of the student branch of the Yugoslav Communist League where he met the communist prime minister's nephew, who sponsored him.

Slobodan left university in 1960 and became an economic advisor to the Mayor of Belgrade. Five years later, he married Mirjana (Mira) Marković who had all the movers and shakers contacts, and became the leader of the Yugoslav Left (and Milošević's junior coalition partner) in the 1990s. So these people were out and out communists.

Milošević began working at Tehnogas in 1968, was chairman by 1973, then sponsored to head of Beobanka (arguably Yugoslavia's largest bank) and travelled to Paris and New York . . . so he learnt English.

In 1984 Slobodan Milošević was elected to a two-year term as president of the Belgrade League of Communists City Committee, and in 1986 he was elected to the 10th Congress of the Serbian League of Communists.

With even more Russian backing, Milošević declared support for Serbs in Kosovo who claimed they were being oppressed by a government dominated by ethnic Albanians (that's the racial divide). He called for political change to protect minority Serb rights and initiated a strong crackdown on separatism (the ideological divide). Having voiced the plan for divide and rule, the Russians gave him the push and Milošević emerged as a force in Serbian politics from 1987.

A year later I was cruising through Yugoslavia and a mechanic there, a young guy who owned six garages, said there was going to be war between six factions, that it would be all over the place, very destructive, containing decades of hatred – racial and ideological – and he couldn't see it stopping.

It had already begun and took off in two years.

Nationalism was taboo in the Yugoslav Communist system, and the Kosovo Albanians and other nationalities were accused of being nationalist (the nationalist divide). The Yugoslav Communists were commited to a 'Brotherhood of Unity', which was to turn out like Milošević's parents, all ideological and dead.

As animosity between Serbs and Albanians in Kosovo deepened, 15,000 rioted against the police on 24 April 1987. The plants in the crowd attacked the police. Milošević came out and the plants in the crowd yelled: "We are being beaten by the police" and Milošević responded: "You will not be beaten. No one should dare to beat you again!"

Like most riots, they had been organised, and organised by the Russians who wanted to make their man Milošević look good, so Milošević addressed the crowd as the peacemaker. It was an inside job. Russians specialise in organising crowds – they're called unions.

The Interior Ministry then found "the total conduct of the citizenry in the mass rally before the cultural hall in Kosovo Polje cannot be assessed as negative or extremeist [and] the police's use of rubber truncheons breached . . . Articles 100 and 101 . . ."

Former President Stambolić (1978–82): 'I see that day as "the end of Yugoslavia".

So here we have a totally corrupt and manipulating system in Yugoslavia, as run by the communist Russians for another last ditch post-WWII attempt at turning socialist Yugoslavia into a communist dictatorship run on fear and not much food.

This came with full UN and NATO support.

When Milošević's successor (head of the Belgrade Committee) Dragiša Pavlović criticized Milošević's Kosovo policy, he was expelled. President Stambolić supported Pavlović and was then accussed of abusing his office and fired. With Stambolić's resignation formalised in February 1988, Milošević took his place as Serbia's President. This was simple mass organised corruption, and it was that easy to become President of Serbia.

Milošević then initiated a program of IMF-supported free-market reforms, setting up the "Milošević Commission" in May 1988 comprising Belgrade's leading neoliberal economists.

This was the Russians working for the Jewish Central Banks turning Yugoslavia into a debt-laden globalisation slave state, and sure enough, when I went through there in late August 1988, the devaluation on the currency was at least 500% and each day the price of the ferry to Greece would go up another 20% (15,000 dinar to 17,000 dinar). So everything had to be bought on the day, including groceries, and loans were complicated transactions between families that strangely involved the pantry and the amount of food in it.

As is typical of Russian Revolutions, to add to the confusion, everything has a name nearly the opposite of what it is.

From July 1988 to March 1989 the 'Anti-Bureaucratic Revolution' led to the resignation of state governments (like Montenegro) not aligned with Milošević, to be replaced with people in governments who were. Milošević's sold this revolution to his supporters as an authentic grass-roots political movement, but all the local governments were filled with hardened communists, shits of children whose parents had committed suicide etc.

Yugoslav President of Presidency Stjepan "Stipe" Mesić: "Milošević implemented an anti-bureaucratic revolution, as it's called, by which he destroyed Yugoslavia."

This is the second time the communist Milošević has destroyed Yugoslavia, and he's beginning to look like a KGB agent.

Slovene newspapers published articles comparing Milošević to Italian Fascist dictator Mussolini, a one-time Marxist, who became a British agent, turned Italy to Nationalism, then destroyed it, and was in turn killed by British SAS who let the local mob take the credit.[21]

No one believed the mass meetings and rallies were spontaneous, Milošević was deliberately fanning nationalist passions,[22] and the Russians are the world's experts at organising mobs to protest (It's still called 'Unions').

Milošević's political allies were Serbs, Albanians and Montenegrins who did not want a separated Yugoslavia, but who had to go to war to prevent this, and thus created it. That's the problem with Nationalism – it's the Devil's cut.

---

21 *TIME*, 24 October 1988.

22 Milosevic Trial Transcript, 2 October 2002, p. 10722, and 21 May 2003. P. 20859.

In Vojvodina 100,000 demonstrators rallied outside the Communist Party headquarters on 6 October 1988 demanding the resignation of the provincial leadership. The majority of protesters (Milošević supporters) were workers from 40 km away and had been bused in.[23]

Nevertheless, the demonstrations were successful, the provincial leadership resigned, and the local League of Communists elected a new leadership who were all Milošević allies.

On 10 January 1989, the Anti-Bureaucratic revolution targetted Montenegro where 25 % were unemployed and 20 % lived below the poverty line. 50,000 turned up and a day later Montenegro's state presidency and delegates in the Yugoslav Politburo collectively resigned and a Milošević ally was elected Montenegrin President.

Beginning in 1982 and 1983, the SFRY League of Communists adopted a set of 'conclusions' to centralizing their control over the police, courts, national defence and foreign affairs in the Kosovo and Vojvodina provinces. They labelled the Albanian riots in Kosovo, 'nationalist', and used this as an excuse to invade.[24]

This is all formula communism.

On 28 March 1989 the Serbian [Milošević] control over the police, courts, national defence and foreign affairs resulted in mass demonstrations, and violent street rioting, and some bad shooting at the police – 156 were killed or injured, mainly injured. It was so corrupt, ethnic Albanians boycotted the provincial Kosovo government, and Milošević took control of every aspect of governance. Entire states voters were striking their vote.

Slobodan Milošević became the 1st President of Serbia (8 May 1989–23 July 1997) and now held power in half of the Yugoslav federation. The other half became separatist from Milošević, abandoned the League of Communists of Yugoslavia, and adopted democratic multiparty systems in 1990 – the opposite of what Russia and China wanted.

Milošević, who had undermined the Yugoslav federation, now had to follow suit and all agreed to create the Federal Repulic of Yugoslavia in 1992. This dismantled the remaining communist infrastructure and created a federal democratic multiparty system of government.

The Russians didn't like this, so there was mayheim and war. There was mayheim and war, but they managed to keep Milošević alive and make him the 3rd President of the Federal Republic of Yugoslavia (23 July 1997–5 October 2000) and still prevent his conviction, as well as provide for his family in exile.

Milošević's government censored the media. In March 1991, Serbia's Public Prosecutor ordered a 36-hour blackout of two independent media stations (B92 Radio and Studio B television) to prevent the broadcast of demonstrations in Belgrade. When challenged, the Public Prosecutor simply didn't respond.

Mind you, we had the same thing against Helen Clark's Labour government in New Zealand (1999–2008). The most hated woman in New Zealand's history, most of the protests filmed never made it to the media, and those that did failed to show the sign:

"Helen Clark wears incontinence nappies".

Milošević's government then restricted free speech, with Article 98 of the Serbian Penal Code providing up to three years prison for "public ridicule".

That's interesting because the KGB's Helen Clark brought in the 'Electoral Finance Act' in December 2007 which prevented public ridicule of any Member of Parliament in any election year (the next was 2008).

---

[23] *The Times*, London, 7 October 1988, 'Angry Serbs topple the leadership of Vojvodina province; Demonstrations against the Communist Party; Yugoslavia.

[24] Milosevic Trial Transcript, 1 December 2004, p. 34030.

It was actually created for Greg Hallett (the author) who had exposed Helen Clark as born AIS Grade 5; that is, conceived as a male, and rejected Androgen only to the extent that she was not quite an hemaphrodite; and was a KGB agent who tried to launch a nuclear strike on New Zealand, et cetera.

The penalty was two years without trial – worse than Russian-controlled Yugoslavia.

The result in Yugoslavia was multiple charges against a variety of people opposed to the Milošević's policies and even the Serbian political satire cartoonist was charged.[25] Even the Army was protected and we all know that Army Intelligence is an oxymoron.

Similarly in New Zealand, a whole bunch of unrelated people were charged with terrorism on the same day (14 October 2007, from Ruatoki and the Tuhoe Nation to Manukau in South Auckland), and all charges were dropped two weeks before the 8 November 2008 Election.

With this history of backroom manipulations, and obviously being run from Russia as a KGB agent, and as a failed child with two parents who separated then committed suicide, Milošević continued his path of destruction to divide and rule, mayheim and war, laid the bedrock for war through political instability, and started the wars in Kosovo, Bosnia, Slovenia and Croatia.

Milošević was Yugoslavia's Hitler. He was a Serbian nationalist (who denied he was a nationalist) who incited a murderous drive to carve a Greater Serbia from the ruins of Yugoslavia. He did all of this under the guise of peace – just as Hitler did.

Milošević blamed the wars on the states that broke away, which they did rather than become another Hitler's Austria. Regardless Milošević managed to turn them all into Czechoslovakias, and overrun them despite any peace agreements.

As Yugoslavia collapsed, Milošević then openly supported his nationalist policies in an attempt to keep his communist regime in power.

By that time his opposition was the ultranationalist and anti-communist Serbian Radical Party. And let's face it, any party that is not in power is labelled by the incumbent party as "radical". It is only when the overall population agree that change is required in the opposite direction, that a party can successfully call itself 'Radical'. Adding the word Serbian makes it 'nationalist'.

So most of the population agreed that a radical national party was required to remove the foreign Russian/ KGB/ warring/ IMF/ Jewish bankers/ bankrupting/ Globalisation/ below the poverty line slavery party that was Milošević.

Milošević agreed and formed a coalition with them.

Even The Hague indictment agrees that, starting in 1987, Milošević "endorsed a Serbian nationalist agenda . . . in order to strengthen centralised rule in the SFRY."[26]

Former U.S. President Bill Clinton: "Milošević "sought to expand his power, by inciting religious and ethnic hatred in the cause of Greater Serbia by demonizing and dehumanizing people, especially the Bosnian and Kosovar Muslims . . . He unleashed wars in Bosnia and Croatia, creating 2 million refugees and leaving a quarter of a million people dead . . . he stripped Kosovo of its constitutional self-government, and began harassing and oppressing its people."[27]

---

[25] Mark Thompson, *Forging War: The Media in Serbia, Croatia, Bosnia, and Bosnia-Hercegovina*, The Bath Press, England, 1994, p. 60.

[26] Second Amended Indictment; Case No. IT-99-37-PT; Prosecutor v. Slobodan Milošević, 16 October 2001.

[27] Remarks by the President to Veterans Groups on Kosovo; Eisenhower Hall, Ft. McNair, 13 May 1999.

Former U.S. Secretary of State Madeleine Albright: "Slobodan Milošević initiated four wars during the 1990s, including a devastating campaign of ethnic cleansing in Kosovo which killed thousands and drove almost a million people from their homes."[28]

Milošević had a murderous ambition to create an ethnically pure Greater Serbian state. Forces under his command committed atrocities against civilians as part of a systematic campaign to secure territory for an ethnically 'pure' Serb state."[29]

Milošević was the 'Hitler of Serbia' and the 'Stalin of Yugoslavia'.

You should never underestimate 'the evil of a child of communism whose parents had both committed suicide – with a law degree'.

The UN failed so greatly to prevent this second Hitler-Stalin-coming that Hague Prosecutors could not produce one single order issued to Serbian fighters.

Milošević: "There are none, that's why you haven't got one."[30] Hitler engineered the same situtation. The orders we verbal and implicit and placed through his inner circle.

But even his supporters admit that Yugoslavian President Milošević commanded Serbian security forces in Kosovo during the war.

Milošević was a ruthless political opportunist whose goal was to become the second Tito (populist socialist dictator ad-infinitum, and Churchill's cousin). In August 1988 Tito's picture was still up behind (almost) every shop counter.

Like Hitler and Stalin, Milošević pursued political alliances and friendships with whoever was in power in order to strengthen his career and fulfill his ambitions. Opinions he held privately, he kept secret publicly. By the 1980s, with his secret amibitions and opportunism for political alliances, he made it to No. 2 in Serbia's political ranks.

When Milošević's communism collapsed around him in the 1980s, leading to the fall of the Berlin Wall in 1989, and the end of the Cold War in 1991, he turned to divide and rule.

Milošević developed and engineered ethnic tensions to ever greater heights accusing the ethnic-Albanian government in Kosovo of systematically persecuting Serbs.

This is beginning to look like a textbook re-run of WWII in Germany. The Jews being both the persecuted and the persecutor, just at different levels (Hitler and the SS were Michling Jews), all the while fronting as Nationalist, but bringing in Socialism – communism watered down to somewhere between 'barely tolerable' and 'just short of civil war'.

Tito had a tradition of rallying the population of Yugoslavia to remember the total casualties of WWII at the hands of the Allies. Milošević replaced this with remembering Serb casualties of WWII at the hands of Croatians. This confused 'nationalism and international war', with 'separatism and civil war' and transferred all the emotional energy behind nationalism and WWII, to separatism of Serbs from Croates.[31]

It was a brilliant move, evil, and worthy of either Hitler, Stalin, the Russians that ran him, or the Jews that ran the Russians that ran Milošević that ran the Serbs, that ran the four wars in Yugoslavia.

This was evil on a stick.

---

[28] Address by Secretary of State Madeleine K. Albright To the UN Human Rights Commission; Palais des Nations, 23 March 2000.

[29] Norman Cigar & Paul Williams, *Indictment at the Hague: The Milosevic Regime and Crimes of the Balkan Wars*, New York University Press, 2002.

[30] Milosevic Trial Transcript, 27 January 2004, pp. 31577–676.

[31] Wydra, Harald, *Communism and the Emergence of Democracy*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2007, p. 232.

Not only was it evil on a stick, but the Jewish bankers also ran the UN and NATO. The UN was a gifted to their son Stalin (an illegitimate Rothschild and Jew), in exchange for a seven day war in northern China (8–15 August 1945) removing the Kwantung Army of sick, feeble, old, decrepid and unarmed occupying Japanese. (They were armed with bamboo shaped into guns and swords made out of straightened truck springs.)

NATO (The North American Treaty Alliance) was also as useless as tits on a bull. They did fire some shots off and dropped some bombs, but essentially they were war spectators who couldn't hit a mark unless it was too late, or they could be accused of war crimes, thus getting the mass murderer off his case. When they hit the wrong crowd it's – 'Oopps. Sorry. Collateral Damage'.

By the 1990s, Milošević was bombing and invading areas wherever their leader did not side with him. Kosovo-Albanian politican Azem Vllasi: "Milošević only decided to overthrow me when I refused an invitation to support his political agenda during the Anti-Bureaucractic Revolution."[32]

With the fall of communism in the Eastern Bloc, Milošević and his ex-Communist members formed a new 'Socialist Party of Serbia' – essentially the same thing, different title, with watered-down communism revealled publicly, but heavy-handed totalitarian communist plans held privately.

Milošević recognised the Army of Yugoslavia was largely Serb, so he gave weaponry and supplies to the Serbs of Bosnia and Croatia, thus giving the order for war, not with paper, but with arms.

Worse.

Milošević controlled the media with a heavy hand, censored footage of bad Serbians, and featured controversial reports which villainised the other ethnic groups. Dušan Mitević, Director of Radio Television of Serbia: "The things that happened at state TV, warmongering, things we can admit to now: false information, biased reporting. That went directly from Milošević to the head of TV".[33] Milošević's state media was promoting fear-mongering and utilizing xenophobic nationalist sentiments, further drawing the Serbs to support all out war.

Reeks of Hitler.

While the Serbian state media has been condemned for inciting ethnic tensions, no direct orders to commit atrocities by Milošević have been discovered. What's wrong with a phone call. Better still a walk talkie, or an old fashioned nod, a hand signal, or sending weaponry and military supplies (as confirmed).

Milošević made no effort to punish people responsible for these atrocities, and when Ratko Mladić was accused, Milošević promoted him to lead the Bosnian Serb Army. Milošević had found his killing machine and ordered Mladić to murder thousands of Bosnians in Srebrenica.

Meanwhile the UN wore their UN hats and watched.

The UN then accussed Mladić of the attrocites and Milošević simply held up his now high-ranking diplomatic hands and said: "Who, my boy? No, couldn't be". And that was pretty much the end of the matter in terms of real justice.

Milošević's new ultranationalist Serbs then began killing non-nationalist Serbs. So it really was mayheim and the killing fields with views to the beautiful beach, which really attracted the UN.

They like to watch.

---

[32] *Death of Yugoslavia*, British Broadcasting Corporation (BBC), 1995.

[33] PBS, *Wide Angle, Milošević and the Media*, 'Part 3: Dictatorship on the Airwaves'.

By 1990, ultranationalism was such a thrust, Milošević's government had to join forces in coalition with the Serbian Radical Party and the Serb's right to "self-determination" in Bosnia and Croatia. This meant, 'the people you kill, the land you control'. This was killing towards a Greater Serbia (1990–93).

The coalition Serbian Radical Party's ultranationalism was so strong, even the Milošević-appointed ethnic Albanian representatives were replaced by minority Serbs.

The media finally got in there in 1993 and covered the large-scale atrocities of the siege of Sarajevo by the Bosnian Serb armed forces. Western governments then threatened sanctions, but it was Milošević's wife who had a word in his ear: "Your alliance with ultranationalists is endangering your hold on power", so Milošević changed his speech patterns, stopped the nationalist rhetoric, and briefly arrested the ultranationalists leader in 1994 – for show.

Being an intelligence slut of the highest order, a ruthless plagarist of history, and a political opportunist who shifted with the winds of sentiment, Milošević then entered into a coalition with the liberals and advocated a peaceful settlement to the war he had formented, funded, fostered and unleashed.

The Milošević liberal coalition abandoned its support of Radovan Karadžić, repressed the Serbian Radical Party challenge to Milošević's regime, and pressured them to negotiate a peace treaty.

Thus began the Dayton Accord. The intention was good, but all the negotiated add-ons made it the usual piece of US contractual shit – a footprint with no feet inside the boots.

U.S. Peace Accords have a habit of achieving the opposite of what's intended. Hitler had the same help and escaped Berlin with British and Russian assistance.

Milošević and Karadžić sparred with words. Milošević supported the accord as it retained Bosnian Serbs self-governance over most of the territories they had claimed – 'self-determination' in Bosnia and Croatia.

Karadžić didn't support the Accord, but got the most out of it. In 1996 he neogitiated that if he would dissappear there would be no charges against him. Karadžić ran with it and lived openly in public, and didn't make any public statements.

Despite all these attrocites and obvious guilty parties, the UN and NATO sat around in big planes, and Milošević (the Russian agent mass murderer) was elected Yugoslav President on 22 July 1997.

Within a year, liberal-minded parties consolidated in opposition against Milošević, so he formed a national-unity government with the Serbian Radical Party.

That should shut up the liberals into worrying about their lives.

This was quickly followed by attoricites on Kosvo, and low and behold – media reports. NATO finally woke up and got involved, launching air raids against Milošević's Serbian paramilitary and Yugoslav military forces who were fighting against ethnic Albanian civilians in Kosovo.

The UN peacekeepers were in there handing out food parcels in exchange for sex with children, at least that's true for a third of the countries they act as pie lady for.

It was 1998, ten years too late, with the destruction done, when NATO decimated Milošević's armed forces. Regardless, Milošević – history's great ideological and national slut – claimed "victory" as the ethnic Albanians did not officially separate Kosovo from Serbia . . . but it is debateable whether they wanted to.

Typical Russian distraction.

Like other KGB leaders (New Zealand and the KGB's Helen Clark included) every word that came out of Milošević's mouth was a lie. That people like this should reach the top of their country's political structure shows that politics is just 'Poll it I can".

Little more and much less.

Milošević denied Serbia was at war during the wars in Slovenia, Croatia and Bosnia as he was President of Serbia and not of Yugoslavia, and acted in support, and was not directly involved.

But Milošević, with Jović, had a scheme to transfer every Bosnian Serb unit from the Yugoslav army to the newly formed Bosnian Serb army upon Bosnia's separation from Yugoslavia.[34]

So Milošević was a separatist and a nationalist. He was *the* separtist and nationalist. This would have happened sooner had their budget been big enough, but Serbia was suffering from hyperinflation, as I experienced.

To forment the war further, Milošević supported the right of Albanians to "self-determination [bare arms and fight for your land], but not to independence. So the Albanians could fight, but had no chance of reward. To back this up he cited numerous churches and cultural relics in Kosovo. He also claimed the KLA were a neo-Nazi organisation that sought an ethnically pure Kosovo"[35] when it was Milošević who was a neo-Nazi who sought a Serbian Yugoslavia.

Milošević denies he gave orders to massacre and blames it on sporadic events confined to rural areas committed by rebels in the armed forces, paramilitaries, Serbian army, or Serbian police and these people were arrested with many sentenced to long prison sentences.[36]

As it turns out, Milošević had the Russian tendency to arrest and jail his enemies with the attrocites he had committed.

U.S. Ambassador Zimmerman later reported that "Milošević's conflicting positions and unusual mannerisms were conducive to schizophrenia. On the face of it, he was polite, conciliatory, eager and willing to find moderate and peaceful solutions to a crisis; but then staunch about Serbian nationalism against all opponents; and arrogant, stubborn, authoritarian and aggressive towards others."[37]

Sounds like Hitler.

Milošević primarily saw Yugoslavia as a state for ensuring the unity of Serbs, and had little interest in preserving the unity Yugoslavia outside of areas of Serb national interests.[38]

Sounds like Stalin.

In public appearances, Milošević would appear strong, confident, bold and serious.

In private, he was laid back, interested in comic strips and cartoons, only allowed a small inner circle to visit, and was paranoid when others visited. He refused to take notes of talks on important issues, then met with his most trusted men and give instructions and directions, with no substantial discussion . . . because he was taking his instructions from elsewhere – Russia.

Sounds like Hitler – Perhaps they had the same Tavistock training. They certainly killed off their opponents in a similar manner.

---

[34] *Death of Yugoslavia*, British Broadcasting Corporation (BBC), 1995.

[35] *Washington Post*, Slobodan Milosevic Interview, Belgrade, 16 December 1998.

[36] *IPI*, Slobodan Milosevic Interview, Belgrade, 30 April 1999.

[37] Zimmerman, pp. 26–27, paraphrased.

[38] *Ibid.*

M: "We shouldn't forget that Russia was taking its orders from Washington who were working on Yugoslavia in conjunction with Clinton, who set up Pamela Harriman as the heroine."

Milošević's stubbornness and unwillingness to compromise caused many of the political problems and wars which marked his years in power, as well as his unrelenting defence in his trial, which went on and on until most lost interest, and he 'died' a fortnight before conviction.

On 25 August 2000 former Serbian President Ivan Stambolić was kidnapped. He was then murdered by eight Special Operations Unit officers on Fruška Gora (hilly area near Hungary) who were working under orders from Milošević. The police announced his body was discovered on 28 March 2003. Several members of the Serbian secret police and criminal gangs were convicted in 2005, along with other murders of a high police official, a Defence Minister, and the head of Yugoslav airlines JAT.

But twist on twist, those accussed were the same people who arrested Milošević in April 2001.

Then in June 2006 the Supreme Court of Serbia ruled that Milošević had ordered the murder of Stambolić, and it was politically motivated.

In an attempt to bring Milošević to his knees there were mass protests for 96 days, and on 4 February 1997, Milošević recognised his opposition's victories in some local elections, and, when accussed of electoral fraud, he simply admitted to it. Everyone gives an honest thief a moment's grace, and he assumed the presidency of the Federal Republic of Yugoslavia on 23 July 1997.

Amazing! . . . So more war from a fraudulent incumbent . . .

Armed actions by Serbia against the Albanians in Kosovo culminated in escalating warfare in 1998 and NATO air strikes against Milošević's armies from March to June 1999, resulting in a full withdrawal of all Yugoslav security forces from the province. It was during this time, on 27 May 1999, that Milošević was indicted.

Milošević's rejection of claims of a first-round opposition victory in new elections for the Federal parliament and presidency in September 2000 led to mass demonstrations in Belgrade on 5 October 2000, known as the 'Bulldozer Revolution'.

The Yugoslav constitution called for a second election round for the two leading candidates, where one had to reach more than 50%. Official results put Koštunica ahead of Milošević but at under 50 %.

How can this be?

The U.S.-financed CeSID claimed Koštunica had more than Milošević but kept changing their story between 24 September and 5 October 2000.

How can this be?

Milošević was forced to accept Vojislav Koštunica had won when commanders of the army, whom he had expected to support him, indicated they would not, and they would not permit the violent overthrow of the Serbian government.

It was over for Milošević,

On 6 October 2000, Milošević publicly accepted defeat and Koštunica took office as Yugoslav president on 7 October 2000, but not until Milošević had announced it.

Vojislav Koštunica had sat out the Serbian political struggles since the mid-1990s and did not participate in the 1997 Serbian parliamentary or presidential elections. He waited until the other Serbian politicians had beaten each other to death before he ran.

This coup d'etat placed the Democratic Opposition of Serbia (DSO) leader Dr. Zoran Đinđić Ph.D. in power. He forced the Serbian parliament to create a new government under his effective control (with help from Hungarian autonomist politicians for its parliamentary presence) and a few minor parties as window dressing. With the entire media under his control, Đinđić arranged for Serbian parliamentary elections and became the Serbian Prime Minister.

Zoran Đinđić then had a warrant issued for Milošević's arrest on charges of corruption, abuse of power and embezzlement. Milošević had vanished some US$30 billion which no doubt went straight to the Russians for their services.

There was an armed stand off at his fortified villa in Belgrade. Milošević was forced to surrender on 31 March 2001, then held in the Belgrade jail.

The initial investigation into Milošević faltered for lack of hard evidence, prompting the Serbian Prime Minister Zoran Đinđić to send Milošević to The Hague to stand trial for charges of war crimes instead.

Three months later on 28 June 2001, Milošević was transferred to UN custody just inside Bosnian territory and then transported to the ICTY. The Yugoslav Constitution prohibits extradition of Yugoslav citizens, so Vojislav Koštunica formally opposed the transfer on legal grounds, but the transfer went ahead anyway.

This cost Zoran Đinđić his life on 12 March 2003. He was shot with a high-powered bullet through the heart in broad daylight outside the Serbian Government building. His assassin was Zvezdan Jovanović (37) who got paid, then sentenced to 40 years in a foreign prison.

Zvezdan Jovanović a.k.a. Zveki/Zmija (Snake) was a Lieutenant Colonel in the police, a member of the feared paramilitary Red Berets, active in Kosovo, and connected to the infamous Zemun Clan of Serbia's organized crime network.

Sounds like a re-run of Anarchists build up to the Russian Revolution.

Zvezdan 'Snake' Jovanović worked under Željko 'Arkan' Ražnatović (1952–2000), a Serbian career criminal, paramilitary leader, and particular favourite of Slobodan Milošević.

Arkan was on Interpol's most wanted list in the 1970s and 80s for robberies and murders committed in a number of European countries and led many genoicides in Yugoslavia, but was assassinated in 2000 before his trial.

These were Milošević's mates. Hardly 'clean hands in equity'.

In May 2008, ICTY-imprisoned Serbian Radical Party leader Prof. Dr. Vojvoda Vojislav Šešelj compared Đinđić's assassin with Archduke Franz Ferdinand's assassin, saying "he [Zvezdan Jovanović] would enjoy the same fame and glory that Gavrilo Princip has in Serbian history."[39]

This is interesting because many believe that the Yugolsav wars, in four areas, over two decades, were designed to create a third world war, which is why the Russians put so much energy into training Slobodan Milošević in the first place. They are always after disgruntled nationals (like Hitler), and with two communist parents who had committed suicide, he was the

Dr. Vojislav Šešelj.

---

[39] B92 News, 'Šešelj: Đinđić killer merits same glory as Princip', 21 May 2008.

perfect candidate to promote with a law degree and into the Communist Youth. Such minor costs can lead to spheres of influence over an entire country . . . plus the US$30 billion.

Perhaps the Russians never left.

Željko 'Arkan' Ražnatović who ran Zvezdan 'Snake' Jovanović who assassinated Serbian Prime Minister Dr. Zoran Đinđić Ph.D on the orders of Slobodan Milošević.

Milošević's Relations with Russia and China

Over centuries, Russia has had consistent close and strong relations with Serbia and the former Yugoslavia. Russia and Serbia have significant affinities in majority populations of Slavic ethno-linguistic groups, multi-ethnic policies and Orthodox Christianity. Russia ensures it is remembered for assisting Yugoslavia in the 1800s to become autonomous from the Ottoman Empire and established itself as the Kingdom of Serbia.

During Milošević's rule, Russia pursued policies that generally supported the Milošević regime. During the Kosovo conflict in 1999, some observers suggested the possibility of Russia deploying troops in support of Serbia.[40] Russia also provided political asylum to Milošević's family to the protest of the relatives of those murdered.[41]

Milošević first visited China while head of Beobank in the early 1980s and again by invitation in 1997, when he was treated by the Chinese state-media as "Comrade Milošević" and with affection as "*Lao Mi*".

The Chinese government strongly backed Milošević throughout his presidency – one of his only supporters. They stopped their support as soon as they heard of his surrender.

China was also one of the few countries to oppose NATO intervention, which is probably why NATO listened for so long and took so long to act. China being so big'n'all with its slave trade economy, cheap goods and Jewish backing – Chairman Mao also being the illegitmate son of the Jewish Baron Edmond de Rothschild.

China supported the KGB Tavistock agent Slobodan Milošević and vocally opposed NATO armed intervention in Kosovo. Then Milošević presented the Chinese parliamentary leader Li Peng with the Great Star (Yugoslavia's highest medal) in Belgrade in 2000.[42]

Milošević and his wife viewed the Chinese communist Party as their ally and perhaps their only ideological comrade since the fall of those in Eastern Europe, but the Milošević's were beginning to look worse than their neighbours, the Ceauşescus, shot in public to great celebration on 25 December 1989.

We watched it on TV from Hungary, almost live, and the Hungarians were so happy that one of the neighbouring dictators was dead, along with his shopping basket wife, that the nation literally jumped off their couch with their arms in the air, got dressed up and paraded down the streets arm in arm.

I was one of them. It was better than Christmas!

Nicolae & Elena Ceauşescu preparation, execution; & street celebrations across the Eastern Bloc.

[40] Christopher Deliso, Kosovo, 1999, 'An Insider's View', balkanalysis.com, 17 June 2005.

[41] Congoo News, Reuters India, 'Milosevic widow, son granted asylum in Russia', 1 February 2008.

[42] Erik Eckholm, *New York Times*, 'Showdown in Yugoslavia: An Ally; China, Once a Supporter of Milosevic Against NATO, Sends Its Congratulations to Kostunica', 8 October 2000.

Milošević's Trial and Autopsy

Milošević was indicted in May 1999, during the Kosovo War, by the UN's ICTY for crimes against humanity. Following Milošević's transfer, these charges were upgraded to war crimes in Croatia, genocide in Bosnia, grave breaches of the Geneva Convention in Croatia and Bosnia, and violating the laws or customs of war.

On 30 January 2002, Milošević accused the war crimes tribunal of an "evil and hostile attack" against him.

Fair and equitable accusations on both sides.

The trial began at The Hague on 12 February 2002, with Milošević defending himself while refusing to recognise the legality of the court's jurisdiction.

The trial was a controversial issue and featured many conflicting testimonies. Just as Russia is an alphabet soup of Intelligence agencies, they can really mix it up during a trial. Everyone who has even been recorded by them as a sexual deviant, and is remotely involved, is used to testify some conflicting and unresolvable remark.

Add to that a team in Belgrade sending Milošević the secret police files, Serbians supporting Milošević's point of view; and Bosnian and Croatian witnesses supporting the indictments . . . as you could appreciate, the prosecution took two years to present their case and covered the wars in Croatia, Bosnia and Kosovo.

Milošević became increasingly ill during this period. He had symptoms of high blood pressure and severe flu, but he was taking medication *for* these symptoms (to create them), appearing in court, then taking medication to counteract these symptoms . . . then taking his real medication. This caused six months of delay, and intermissions whenever Milošević either could not cope with his triple medication, or he was looking too well.

When Milošević started presenting his defense in early 2004, he announced over 1,200 witnesses, of which only 5 would testify. Any ruse was a good ruse, and some of them refused to testify until Milošević's two court-appointed British lawyers were removed and he was allowed to represent himself.

Former Soviet Premier Nikolai Ryzhkov became Milošević first high profile witness in late 2004. His presence was the statement required. If Milošević was allowed to present his case, and he could establish that NATO's attack on Yugoslavia was aggressive (NATO called it "Operation DELIBERATE FORCE"), and was thus a war crime under international law, and this was established as prima facie, then the ICTY was legally obliged to indict the leaders of most of the NATO countries, as per the UN's terms of reference.

So NATO, the UN and the ICTY (also UN) had a vested interest in the trial not concluding, and either killing Milošević, or swishing him out of The Hague to live with his family in exile in Russia.

This was something the Russians were pushing for, had planed, and were experts at. After nearly five years, the trial was stopped with just 40 hours to go. Milošević was found dead in his cell at 10 am on Saturday 11 March 2006, in the UN War Crimes Tribunal's detention center, Scheveningen, Den Hague.

He had been dead for at least three hours, so were there no video cameras of his cell?

Saturday was a convenient day to die, as any weekday, Milošević would have been woken around 7.45 am to get prepared for the day's trial.

Critics suggested Milošević (64) caused his own heart attack and supporters say the ICTY did it. Shortly before his death, Milošević had requested heart surgery, but the ICTY expected he would escape, and refused to trust his guarantees. So Milošević expressed fears that he was being poisoned, but he was in charge of his own medication, and no one else could keep track of it.

Then a 12 January 2006 test showed Milošević's blood contained rifampicin, an antibiotic for TB and leprosy, which neutralises the effects of the high blood pressure medication. However these tests were only received on 7 March, which allowed Milošević to continue using the drug for another eight weeks, apparently unaware, but still getting the desired side effects.

Milošević even wrote to the Russian foreign ministry and complained about the rifampicin in his blood. Supporters suggested he was being poisoned by the ICTY, but others more accurately judged that Milošević was trying to get himself sent to Russia for heart surgery and escape. Russia is a strange location for heart surgery, but the operations are cheap, about US$300.00. Not that the money mattered. Milošević had stolen US$30 billion and Russia was where the US$30 billion went to. So if he got to Russia, there was no stopping him.

Despite all vistors being searched, it was the same as any prison, and Milošević was able to get any drug he wanted. They are generally hidden in the mouth, up the nose, anally, in a shoe, under a cuff, or simply palmed. Even Serbian doctors were taking him unapproved medicine in September 2005.

The autopsy then showed that Milošević had not taken rifampicin in the final few days before his death, but then, if the high levels of the UN and NATO agreed, the Russians could easily swish in another body, swish Milošević out, and end the trial of what could have been a total embarrassment. So there was agreement on both sides.

The director of the Russian heart surgery centre where Milošević had requested treatment, and *The Times'* medical columnist, both asserted Milošević's heart attack could, should, and would have been prevented with standard medical help.

The Times' medical columnist Thomas Stuttaford: "Taking into account Milošević's health condition, I am 'surprised that Milošević has lived for as long as he did' [and] using rifampicin might have been 'a cunning way to kill a man with minimal expertise' . . . Given the data that existed, he "should have been considered for a Coronary bypass or angioplasty (unblocking of the arteries)".

This prevented NATO and the UN from scratching any further. Not only did they not want the case to finish, they didn't want anything to do with the body, so they didn't look too hard, and nor did his wife, family and close friends. Threat of arrest and protests took care of that.

So we really should look into the Russian files for any compromised sexual history amongst these medical opinions, the guards and all the UN personnel.

Milošević lawyer Zdenko Tomanović confirmed to reporters on 12 March 2006 that rifampicin neutralised some of the effects of Milošević's heart medicines.

Tomanović then formally requested the autopsy to take place in Moscow. The ICTY tribunal rejected the request, but allowed a Serbian pathologist to attend the autopsy.

On 13 March, Dutch toxicologist Donald Uges confirmed that rifampicin was found in Milošević's blood, then suggested it may have been deliberately taken as a 'get out of jail free card', to seek medical treatment in Russia, where his wife and son were living in exile.

Likewise, sources at the war crimes tribunal say that Milošević had regular access to unprescribed drugs that were smuggled into his cell under a lax prison regime.

Timothy McFadden, the prison governor responsible for Milošević, complained in December 2005 and January 2006 that he could no longer monitor drugs taken by the former leader.

Milošević had the key to his own office, which had a fax machine, a computer and a telephone, and access to a private "comfort room" for visits by his wife.

The preliminary results of blood tests on 17 March 2006 showed no indication that Milošević's died from poisoning . . . Although this was reported by Reuters (essentially Jewish Zionist banker propaganda that'd just got US$30 billion back to the Zionist homeland – Russia), and it was worded in a very biased way:

> "On 17 March, it was confirmed that preliminary results of blood tests showed no indication that Milošević's death by heart attack was caused by poisoning."

President of the UN war crimes tribunal, Judge Fausto Pocar, told a news conference: "So far no indications of poisoning have been found at the time of Milošević's death". But rifampicin disappears from the body within days and the autopsy just shows it wasn't used in the previous three days.

On 5 April, the Dutch pathologist concluded that Slobodan Milošević had died of natural causes (a heart attack), and final toxicological studies had confirmed there were no traces of poison/s or substances which could have triggered the heart attack . . . but rifampicin disappears from the body within days.

The prosecutors then announced that non-prescribed medicines had been found in Milošević's cell in December 2005, but none were found in his cell "the day after he died".

This does not discount the 24 hours in between, or if the drugs were removed, along with Milošević? and a cadaver installed? as there were obvioulsy no video cameras on in his cell! because it took the ICTY at least three hours to discover him!

The president of the UN Yugoslav war crimes tribunal welcomed the final report that formally closed the Dutch investigation, but he said the tribunal will continue investigating the medical treatment Milošević received in detention . . . which means absolutely nothing.

ICTY Chief Prosecutor Carla Del Ponte then gave the usual United Nations verbal tripe in a vain attempt to not make the United Nations look totally useless, compromised and scared of becoming the accused:

> "I deeply regret the death of Slobodan Milosevic. It deprives the victims of the justice they need and deserve. In the indictment which was judicially confirmed in 2001, Milosevic was accused of 66 counts of genocide, crimes against humanity, and war crimes committed in Coatia, Bosnia, Herzegovina and Kosovo between 1991 and 1999.
>
> These crimes affected hundreds of thousands of victims throughout the former Yugoslavia. During the prosecution case, 295 witnesses testified and 5000 exhibits were presented to the court . . . thereby confirming . . . that the prosecution case contains sufficient evidence capable of supporting a conviction on all 66 counts.
>
> The Defense was given the same amount of time as the prosecution to present its case. There were in total 466 hearing days, 4 hours per day. Only 40 hours were left in the Defense case, and the trial was likely to be completed by the end of the spring. It is a great pity for justice that the trial will not be completed and no verdict will be rendered.
>
> However, other senior leaders have been indicted for the crimes for which Slobodan Milosevic was also accused. Later this year, the trial of eight senior leaders . . . But the most senior perpetrators are still at large.
>
> Now more than ever, I expect Serbia to finally arrest and transfer Ratko Mladic and Radovan Karadzic to The Hague as soon as possible. The death of Slobodan Milosevic makes it even more urgent for them to face justice.
>
> Finally, I would like to share a thought for Zoran Đinđić, his wife and his family. Exactly three years ago, he was murdered in Belgrade. He is the man who had the courage to bring Slobodan Milosevic to The Hague so that he could face justice."

But there wasn't any.

The Spymaster on ONI and Milošević

Spymaster: "The British wanted Milošević like a hole in the head. When he was imprisoned he realised someone was out to get him and he threw his hands up and said, 'So fucking what', and the way to piss off these guys is to ignore them, which he did. He thought he was being poisoned by the water, even by the doctors using the water, so he was going about everything fatalistically. He knew they would get him in the end, but he didn't know that was 'getting him out'.

"Milošević used to tell stories that the Poms used to routinely come in and issue everyone with Audis. That was how they kept track of them all. He considered the British had so many spies in the Balkans that they would be stopped by all the purveyors of accomodation reacting to the shear weight of them leaving.

"Milošević used the ONI (Department of Naval Intelligence) in 1994, in the middle and latter stages of the war, and he used to say to ONI that everyone's Yugo kids were in the London School of Economics and that's why the British knew nothing would ever happen because they had their next generation of Yugos invested and nobody's going to shit on their kid's future by speaking out."

Look-alikes, Body Doubles and Doppelgängers in live storage in Russia

Spymaster: "When the Russians want a body double they just get in the car and go to the valley with the same bloodlines, and the first stop they make is with the local police. They pull out a photo of the subject, show it to the local police chief and record everything he says. Then they gather together about ten or twenty look-alikes, pick out the best two or three, and earmark them for surgery.

"This surgery can even cut someone down to the height they're looking for. By the time the surgery has settled, and the dental work is done, they're ready to swish the person, alive or dead. Dead is easier, but it's still easier to walk them in alive, as long as the cover story is temporary ("its just a short break"). With the Muslim swish, you can always promise them seven virgins in heaven et cetera.

"With Slavs, it only takes them five weeks to teach them another language under hypnosis. Serbo-Croat can be taught to a Russian under hypnosis in 10 days. French takes a little longer because it's a different language base. If you encourage them to root more than one person in one language, they tend to become a casanova and get a hard on as soon as they speak the downloaded language. This is not the done thing, so it's carefully played out.

"It was even easier with Milošević's doppelgänger, because they didn't need to teach him to speak – a few words perhaps, a grunt or two."

Novotel Interrogation by Richard Holbrooke's man, Auckland 1994

Spymaster: "I was walking along Queen Street in Auckland City in 1994 when I was asked up to the Novotel (now the Rendezvous) on the corner of Cook and Vincent Streets, just down from the Auckland Central Police Station, like across Vincent Street. On the day it had a whole lot of international flags out front. Something was about to be had, or just had.

"I was taken up to the 5th or 6th floor where ONI had taken out the entire floor, which meant they could throw someone off the internal balcony without anyone opposite getting a direct line of sight as to who dunnit. At this level, the Novotel's internal attrium was seven or eight stories up, perfect for throwing people off and getting naming rights to the hotel.

"I was led into the hotel suite and sat down in a chair at the far end of the room with the door opposite. As per training, I was expecting to be tortured, and admitted I didn't mind such. I waited, waited, waited, then someone walked in – the interrogator – from the Office of Naval Intelligence – Darren, an Australian from the back of Broken Hill, in his mid-30s.

"I was really expecting an American.

"ONI Darren had been working with Richard Holbrooke, who he referred to as 'Rick'. "Richard 'Rick' Holbrooke used to ring Darren up, spill the beans and ask for all sorts of advice. Darren noted Rick's previous mission was also a fuck up in the capital of Nepal where he was running a crooked king, in Darjeeling or Kathmandu – the capital of Nepal."

"Richard Holbrooke wrote the Dayton Accord, essentially a series of outs for the international war criminals in the war in Yugoslavia (Milošević, Karadžić, and Mladić).

"Rick Holborne got ONI Darren to interrogate and threaten anyone who might know where the war criminals were hiding out, or what had actually gone on in Yugoslavia – like an attempt to create WWIII et cetera. Part way through the interview, ONI's Darren said:

> 'You're an absolute arsehole because you believe in grabbing people. The best agents in this situation are the ones who are always on the brink of making an arrest, but never make one . . . not some cunt like yourself who wants to feel somebody's collar. You're very lucky I hold a degree of sympathy for you, because I know, I will never admit to it, there's actually a part of me that would like to do what you've done."

Inspector Hutton's naming rights of Auckland Hotels

"City Hotel was called the Prince Arthur on Hobson Street and was the 'Paedophiles, Police and SIS Hotel'. The Regent Hotel on Albert Street was the 'SIS HQ', actually it was the Crown Plaza behind, connected at the back. The Harbour Lights on Symonds Street was the 'Whores, Cops and Drug Dealer's Hotel'. This had a killer drop from the top floor and throwing someone off was called 'naming rights'.

The Auckland Novotel (now Rendezvous).

"They used to hold parties for skanks, whores and narcs and other legitimate businessmen, and in the middle of it, someone would get chucked out the window, or drowned in the bath, then naming rights would go to the murderer. Inspector Bruce Hutton used to do the bath drownings, then get naming rights. He had naming rights all over New Zealand.

"Once Inspector Hutton got in trouble after the second Arthur Allan Thomas trial for the Crewe murders. He invited the jury to an after party, and it was the same place as the skanks party. Hutton got in trouble for screwing one of the jury girls and she turned out to be respectable . . . she had a job working for an accounting firm in the city."

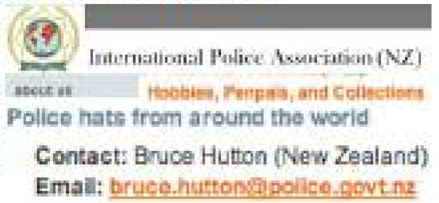

International Police Association (NZ)

Hobbies, Penpals, and Collections

Police hats from around the world

Contact: Bruce Hutton (New Zealand)

Email: bruce.hutton@police.govt.nz

Milošević's funeral and Organised Cover for the Replacement Body

There was a heated dispute in Serbia regarding Milošević's funeral, but this was more organised cover for the fake body.

The Socialist Party and nationalist leaders demanded that it should be state-sponsored and high-profile and ought to have a prominent resting place in the "Alley of the Greats" alongside other Serbian leaders.

Serbian President Boris Tadić rejected this, so the Socialist party threatened to withdraw political support, end the coalition, collapse the government and cause an election. So, it was agreed that Milošević should have a farewell ceremony outside the federal parliament in Belgrade, then a private burial in his hometown, in Požarevac.

For more distraction (as organised by the Russians), about 50,000 Serbs attended the ceremony, turned it into a mass demonstration, and prominent supporters made fiery and distracting speeches, so no one considered looking too hard, or inside the coffin. Then the coffin was taken to Požarevac for burial in the backyard of Milošević's family home under the tree where the Milošević's had their first kiss back in 1958.

Milošević's friends and family did not want to attend *their Slobodan's* funeral when he was still alive elsewhere (the Yugo's are a superstitious lot), so they pulled out at the last moment, despite the burial being in their own backyard.

His wife didn't even travel to Serbia with the casket, nor did she attend the funeral. The Russians engineered a late out for her. They arranged for the issue of a current arrest warrant related to fraud charges. This was apparently very controversial and difficult to resolve, and could not be resolved before the funeral.

It was all the more funny because the Russians had received the embezzeled money.

The Milošević family also cited anonymous threats (they don't cost anything) and the Serbian authorities unable to guarantee that they would not be arrested (also free).

Milošević's daughter had the best one of all when she said: "The Socialist Party has hijacked the funeral for political ends" . . . Nice.

Miroslav Milošević (not a relative), claimed to the police he had driven "a three-foot-long wooden stake into the ground and through the late president's heart" to prevent him from "returning from the dead". He was from the Resistance (OTPOR) movement widely credited with overthrowing Milošević in 2000. He was also a self-confessed vampire hunter.[43]

Aren't caskets buried six feet under?

Anyway, buried at a private residence/private military compound prevented public exhumation – so no doubt the Russians have someone standing guard.

---

[43] 'Vampire hunters drove stake through Milošević heart', Ananova.com; 'Vampire slayer impales Milošević to stop return', Gabriel Ronay, Sunday-Herald.com.

Radovan Karadžić

Radovan Karadžić (19 June 1945–) was one of the top half-dozen child psychologists in the world before he was called into politics.[44] He was also a poet, and Yugoslavia has a long history of making its poets political leaders. He was the first President of Republika Srpska (1992–96), indicted for war crimes by the International Criminal Tribunal for the former Yugoslavia ("ICTY"), and a fugitive from 1995.

Despite being a fugitive, he was invited to the United Nations the same year.

As a fugitive wanted by NATO, and invited by the UN, Karadžić worked at a private clinic in Belgrade specialising in alternative medicine under the company 'Human Quantum Energy'; practiced psychology as Dr. Dragan David Dabić; had a website on sexual disorders; gave lectures in front of hundreds of people on alternative medicine, bioenergy and the macrobiotic diet in Belgrade; sold medical amulets in the shape of bullets; and sold herbal solutions and ointments as Petar Glumac in Vienna, where he lived in 2007, attended football matches . . . and visited Venice.

While living in Vienna as Peter Glumac, the Austrian police visited Radovan Karadžić at his house regarding an unrelated homicide, but failed to recognise him. Peter Glumac is a real 'other' person who practices alternative medicine in Novo Selo, Serbia. They do not look dissimilar.

The former CIA agent Bosko Radonjich then helped Radovan Karadžić avoid capture in 2001.

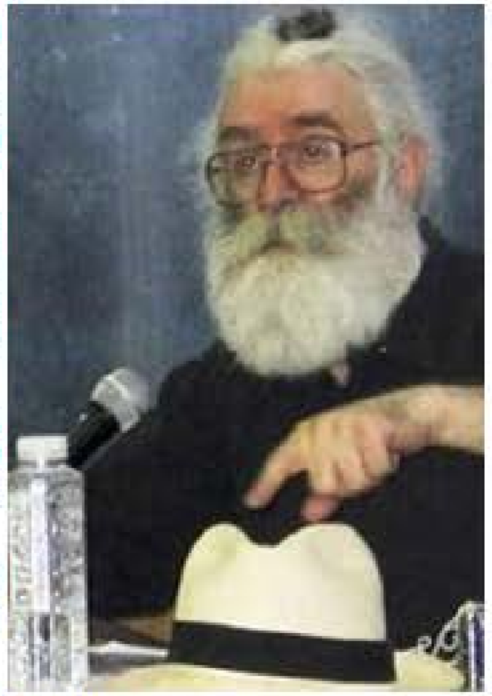

Four years later Radovan Karadžić was sighted in a loud red Mercedes in Foca in 2005, but there was no political will in Britain or America to arrest him, so they arrested his son instead and detained him for 10 days in mid-July 2005.

Three years later, Radovan Karadžić was arrested in Belgrade (18 July 2008) bought before Belgrade's War Crimes Court, and extradited to The Hague to the custody of the ICTY on 30 July 2008, and appeared before a judge the following day for genocide.

Here, Radovan Karadžić stated that it had taken 13 years for the ICTY to capture him because he had made a deal with Richard Holbrooke and Madeleine Albright.

Bosnian Foreign Minster Muhamed Sacirbey then confirmed the existence of the Karadžić-Holbrooke deal made in July 1996 and quoted (paraphrased):

---

[44] He studied at Sarajevo, Denmark and Columbia University in New York.

The three faces of Radovan Karadžić.

> 'The United States promised Radovan Karadžić he would avoid trial at the UN war crimes court if he withdrew from public life. Richard Holbrooke acted for the United States and is credited with designing the Dayton Peace Agreement that ended Bosnia's 1992–95 war.'

The U.S.'s Richard Holbrooke got Karadžić to sign:

> "I must withdraw not only from public but also from party offices and completely disappear from the public arena, not give interviews and not even publish literary works, in a word, become invisible long enough for the Dayton Agreement to be implemented in full."

In return, Holbrooke promised Karadžić freedom from prosecution by the ICTY, and his Serbian Democratic Party could take part in elections.

Then the US Secretary of State Madeleine Albright (Hillary Clinton's lover of the last two decades)[45] proposed to the president of Republika Srpska, Biljana Plavsic:

> "Radovan Karadžić is to get out of the way and go to Russia, Greece or Serbia and open a private clinic, or at least go to Bijeljina."[46]

The trial was to be heard on 17 September 2008, but the prosecution delayed citing it needed to amend its indictment.

It is the prosecution that is now delaying.

Radovan Karadžić then dismissed the ICTY court as a "court of NATO" disguised as an international court.

So, Lord George Robertson, you have been found marked, measured and wanting. You are a paedophile involved in war, and providing ongoing cover for international war criminals. If you have done this for Radovan Karadžić, what did you do for Slobodan Milošević and Radko Mladić, not to mention Saddam Hussein and Osama bin Laden.

---

[45] Hillary is now Secretary of State for America, so it's 'can't trust the mouth that munches rug'.

[46] *Associated Free Press*, The Hague, 1 August 2008.

"Radovan Karadzic (64) was indicted in 1995, spent 13 years on the run, and was then arrested in July 2008 posing as New Age healer Dr. Dragan Dabic.

He snubbed the UN's Yugoslav war crimes tribunal at the Hague by not turning up on the first day, Monday 26 October 2009, nor the second. He hasn't even entered a plea, so it was a boycott the psychiatrists way.

The prosecution's opening statement could not be read because it requires a defence counsel to receive the presentation and they weren't there either . . . and it's not deemed evidence. So the judges adjorned for the day after 15 minutes.

If Karadzic doesn't turn up in the first week, he waives his right to represent himself. Judge O-Gon Kwon could then appoint new defense counsel, but it would take them months to get up to speed. This should provide Karadzic with the extra nine months he is after and frustate the hell out of the 200 Bosnian Muslim prosecution witnesses – the first due on 4 November 2009 – but that will be more like 2010.

So Karadzic is still the social engineer – and it is well-known that delays and frustration have a habit of erasing evidence, even under the judge's orders.

Prosecutors are required to trace a chain of command from threats of mass slaughter to the systematic slaughter on the ground. Karadzic is charged with 2 x genocide, 9 x war crimes and crimes against humanity for Serb atrocities throughout Bosnia (1992–95), from ethnic cleansing campaigns against Muslims and Croats in 1992, to the 1995 massacre of 8,000 Muslim men and boys in Srebrenica.

The Bosnian war left more than 100,000 people dead, most of them victims of Bosnian Serb attacks. Dozens of Bosnian survivors traveled across Europe to squeeze into Courtroom One's small public gallery. It seems that Yugoslav President Slobodan Milosevic is the model as he dragged his trial out for over four years refusing to cooperate with court-appointed lawyers."[47]

Radovan Karadžić, 3 November 2009,
UN Yugoslav War Crimes Tribunal at the Hague.

"Karadžić turned up to court on Tuesday 3 November 2009, but refused to listen. He said he'd need another eight months to prepare. The trail is expected to take 3–5 years."[48]

Karadžić turned up again on 1 March 2010 into a well established procedural morass, complicitly provided by both sides.

So it's a farce in the making that's already 15 years old.

[47] 'Prosecution snatches back the initiative in Radovan Karadzic trial', David Charter, *The Times*, 28 October 2009; 'Karadzic boycotts opening of war crimes trial, Ex-Bosnian Serb leader is accused of genocide, crimes against humanity', msnbc, 26 October 2009, paraphrased.

[48] *TV1 News*, 6 pm, 4 November 2009, paraphrased.

Ratko Mladić

Ratko Mladić in 1993.

Ratko Mladić (12 March 1942–) is another war crimes fugitive, former Chief of Staff and top military general of the Bosnian Serb Army (Republika of Srpska) during the Bosnian War (1992–95).

Despite arguments and a rift between Karadžić and Mladić where Karadžić blamed Mladić for the loss of two key Serb towns in western Bosnia in August 1995, then demoted him to 'Advisor' and "madman", neither NATO or the UN could find either. Rather they provided tacit, complicit, and contractual cover for both.

On 11 July 1995 the ICTY recognised Mladić was responsible for the massacre of around 8,300 Bosniak Muslims and issued an international arrest warrant. He was indicted 13 days later and by 16 November 1995 these had expanded into 'genocide, crimes against humanity and numerous war crimes', all of them outstanding ever since.

The U.S. government then offered a US$5 million reward (but we all know how hollow America rewards are), and the Serbian government watered this down to a €1 million reward for information leading to Mladić's capture and arrest.

As long as the information was not acted on, there was no payout. I experienced the same with information leading to the capture of Saddam Hussein, Oday and Qusay Hussein.

Ratko Mladić (fugitive from the ICTY and NATO) is suspected of hiding in Serbia and the Bosnian Republic of Srpska, although he lived freely and openly in Belgrade, visited public places, ate in the finest restaurants[49]; and attended an international football match in Belgrade in March 2000, entered through the VIP entrance and sat in a private box – albeit with eight of his armed guards – the whole situation screaming attention.

It wasn't until the former Yugoslav President Slobodan Milošević was arrested on 31 March 2001 that Mladić disappeared from public life. He then stayed in the facilities of the Army of Republika of Srpska and Yugolslav Peoples Army facilities including Mt. Povlen, near Valjevo until 1 June 2002. Over the previous seven (7) years, these were obvious places to look, as was normal public life in Blegrade.[50]

In November 2004, British defense officials stated that military action would be unlikely to capture Mladić and Karadžić, but pressure on the government might help. This pressure had been applied earlier, and The National Assembly of Serbia passed a law mandating cooperation with the ICTY.

So the Chief General of the Yugoslav Army Nebojsa Pavkovic requested Mladić vacate the Mt. Povlen Army facility, and then "lost all trace of him" . . . Although reports the Yugoslav Army and NATO had access to cited Mladić staying in Han Pijesak just outside Montenegro, in his wartime bunker (as you would expect);[51] and according to the Chief U.N. Prosecutor Carla Del Ponte "in February 2004 both Mladić and Karadžić were in Belgrade";[52] and in April 2005, Serbian Foreign Minister Vuk Draskovic reported his Serbian security agents knew where Mladić was.[53] To top it off, from October 2004, former Mladić aides began surrendering to the ICTY,[54] and still they couldn't find Mladić.

---

[49] BBC News: Profile : 'Ratko Mladic', 31 July 2008.

[50] *Politika*, Serbian Newspaper, citing Serbian military intelligence leak, early February 2006.

[51] BBC News: Profile : 'Ratko Mladic', 31 July 2008.

[52] *Ibid.*

Quite comfortable with his apparent move, in June 2005, Ratko Mladić demanded US$5 million in "compensation" for his family and bodyguards if he gave himself up to the ICTY in the Hague.[55] Mladić was offering himself for the U.S. reward money to be split between his family and bodyguards.

This was quite realistic since a poll showed two thirds of the country would not give Mladić up, and only 14 % would.

Then on 21 February 2006, Mladić was arrested in Belgrade and was in the process of being transferred to the U.N. war crimes tribunal via Tuzia, a Bosnian city in the northeast, for transfer to The Hague.

The Serbian government did not deny rumors of a planned negotiated surrender between Mladić and Serbian Special Forces, but did deny the arrest.

The next day the Romanian government claimed Mladić had been arrested in Romania by joint Romanian-British Special Forces near Drobeta-Turnu Severin and the Serbian border. This was backed up by Serbian sources.

To stop this going ahead, the same day, Chief U.N. Prosecutor Carla Del Ponte denied rumours of the arrest claiming they had "absolutely no basis whatsoever", and then 'urged to find Mladić without delay', threatening non-membership of the EU' if Mladić wasn't found by 1 May 2006.

This gave Mladić another ten weeks to escape his arrestors.

This 21 February and 1 May 2006 non-capture was backed up with a pro-Mladić PR release in June 2006 where: "Mladić had recently suffered a third stroke . . . and had low chances of survival" – so we should all feel sorry for him, give up the hunt, and wait for him to die.

This weak and see-through cover was then supported by the PR of the Democratic Party of Serbia, Andrija Mladenović, who asked: "Who would be responsible for the halt in EU negotiations if Mladić were to die?"

This was backed up by a statement that: "Mladić's appearance has changed as a result of age and poor health".

But despite Mladić's arrest by joint British and Romanian forces, he still had full complicit cover of the Chief General of the Yugoslav Army, the Democratic Party of Serbia, the Serbian Foreign Minister, the Serbian government, the various press agencies, America (who refused to pay the reward money), the UN, and NATO.

This was local cover, full international cover, and no want of arrest for what Mladić could reveal to The Hague, to the ICTY, to the UN, and to NATO, and also expose all of the above, and indict them for war crimes, as well as the leaders of most of the NATO countries – merely by establishing a prima facie case that NATO's attack on Yugoslavia was at some point aggressive, and thus a war crime under international law.

To seal the judgement with public empathy . . . for the poor, ill, destitute and dying stroke victim, a shonky story was published about his daughter, Ana Mladić, committing suicide twelve years earlier, but the details could not be firmed up as to where she died, how she died, whether she killed herself or was killed, what gun was used, and whether their was any positive identification whatsoever.

The son couldn't commit suicide as his name is "Darko", and being male with such a demonic name, it would engineer less empathy, whereas everyone in the West knows an 'Ana' who is someone's daughter.

So in June 2006, it was published that Ana Mladić died way back on 24 March 1994 (in the second year of the war):

> "There were conflicting reports in various Serbian publications regarding her death and body discovery. Some media were saying that her body was found in her blood-splattered bedroom, while the others claim it was found in a nearby park or in the woods near the Topcider cemetery . . .
>
> "However, the weapon was established as her father's treasured pistol, awarded to him as a young man from his military school, and Ana Mladić had just returned from Russia."[56]

Russia is a holding pen for look-alikes for Western Europe (especially Yugoslavia) and has a long history of providing doubles for European leaders – like 'Woodpecker' for Hitler's 2-IC and head of the money, Martin Bormann.

Either the Russians provided Ana Mladić with a body double to return to Yugoslavia, or they told her how to engineer the cover, using a 'Coffee Run' look-alike body from the morgue. That was easy enough. There are plenty of Yugoslavs who look like each other, and her father definitely had access to the morgues.

Ratko Mladić's son then had a child on 2 March 2006 (three months before the empathy building June press release) and named it after the patron saint of Serbia, 'St. Stefan', and the Bosnian entity of Replublika Srpska.

Since the Yugoslav wars were ethnic, religious and politico-idealistic, this was brilliant PR. I wonder if he had given his child a third name, hyphenated perhaps, like 'Adolf-Joseph-Tito', that the empathy could increase.

Probably not . . . It was at its limit.

Come on now. This is a military family that knows how to engineer its PR – its births, deaths and marriages.

If you are the head of the military, you can locate a look-alike, plant the evidence of a suicide, shoot them in the head right through the dental work, swish the daughter to Russia to live as another identity in exile, and swish her back to join her very healthy father as a bohemian in home military exile.

If they can't find Ratko Mladić, then they certainly can't find Ana Mladić, especially since they aren't looking for her.

Is this not what Army heads do?

Do they not create history?

Do they not manufacture history to suit their personal ends?

Do the UN and NATO provide support in 'not locating, arresting, and deporting war criminals'? Do they not pick them up and drop them off to conferences?

Since the UN and NATO manufacture wars as a distraction for paedophile and drug trafficking, do they not 'squash the arrests of war leaders before the stories get too big'?

---

[53] BBC News: Profile : 'Ratko Mladic', 31 July 2008.

[54] *Ibid.*

[55] *The Times*, June 2005.

[56] Wikipedia, 'Ratko Mladić'.

Ratko Mladić

The UN capture/ non-capture, escape and trials/ non-trials of Slobodan Milošević, Radovan Karadžić and Ratko Mladić are as weak as international horse piss.

These were Russian-trained anti-National Anarchists, who through the psychological manipulation of committees were allowed to advance into positions where they ruled militaries.

James Bond III: "The Yugolsavian Wars (1991–2001) were run from Washington."

The Yugolsavia Wars were based on the Spanish Civil War (1936–39) and were supposed to create World War Three. U.S. President at the time was George Herbert Walker Bush (1989–93) followed by his radio-controlled rent-boy, Bill Clinton (1993–2001).

Yugoslavian War Result

The end result of the Yugoslavian war was little to nothing . . . The Dayton Accord was thrashed out 1–21 November 2005 at the Wright-Patterson Air Force Base near Dayton Ohio, with Milošević present. Richard Holbrooke was the negotiator. Then it was signed on 14 December 2005 in Paris by Pamela Harriman, also with Milošević present.

The Dayton Accord changed the land less than 4%
to what had been claimed during the war.

The major part of the agreement was the mandate to retain a wide range of international organizations to monitor, oversee, and implement components of the agreement. The NATO-led IFOR (Implementation Force) was responsible for implementing military aspects of the agreement taking over from UNPROFOR on 20 December 1995, thus setting up the first really intense international police state.

The Yugoslavian war set up
the first really intense international police state,
just as Russia, the Jews, the UN, NATO,
the Americans and the Communists wanted.
Failure was the name of the game
and it brought all the rewards.

Governance – You suck!

Washington and Russia you are responsible for the four wars in Yugoslavia . . . and for training Helen Clark and Margaret Wilson who similarly trained in Russia for the destruction of their countries. Sadly it was also mine – New Zealand.

There lay the influence in an attempt to create WWIII – hardly clean paws in equity.

Boris Yeltsin – embezzler of US$1.5 billion.

Vladimir Putin – ZIONIST SEX COLLECTOR.

UN – Just un-'everything of value'.

NATO – Afghan heroin trafficker extraordinaire.

So where do we send our war criminals? Back to the UN to train the next generation of war criminals! . . . and we hide 8,000 war criminals in greater Auckland.

Helen Clark is widely considered by the Rothschild's to be the 'Hitler of the South Pacfic', and by their occult inner circle as 'The reincarnation of Adolf Hitler'. She is heading back to the UN as 3-IC in charge of the United Nations Development Programme in charge of Genocide.

Lies, lies and more lies . . . Everything that comes out of her mouth is a lie.

Security Intelligence Service (6 February 2009): "Helen Clark has been offered the head of UNICEF in Paris, but didn't want to live in Paris, so they got her a penthouse apartment in Manhatten, working in the United Nations – something to do with the Arts. She is being visited by the homosexual ex-MP Chris Carter and his wife Peter Kaiser in March 2009. They are staying at her apartment whether she is there at the time or not."

Not for public use

This was mailed to both addresses and emailed to the TV station where Bruce Willis offered US$1 million for information leading to their capture. Actor Bruce Willis fronts for DIA and promotes the latest military equipment – to scare opposition viewers . . . so no response.

'Rewards for Justice'

11 January 2004

Richard Boucher
State Department Spokesman
The White House
1600 Pennsylvania Avenue NW
Washington, DC 20500

Colin Powell
Secretary of State
The White House
1600 Pennsylvania Avenue NW
Washington, DC 20500

Dear Mr Boucher/ Colin Powell,

I believe that the information contained within entitles me to the USD50 million reward from the State Department as part of the 'Rewards for Justice' program for showing that America does not have the real Saddam Hussein, Oday or Qusay Hussein and that America has used Saddam Hussein and his sons as CIA trained agents to create war in Iraq and the Middle East for the purpose of destabilising the area so that the United Nations, Coalition and American Forces are required to secure the area and the oil, which is then taken for years on end as payment for services rendered.

I hereby claim USD50 million for information leading away from the false capture of Saddam, Oday and Qusay Hussein, this being the first real step towards their real capture. I understand that none of this money has been paid to a real informant to date and that the payment authorised by Colin Powell on 30 July 2003 was just another part of the illusion of this war.

I hereby claim USD50 million from America's State Department as part of the 'Rewards for Justice' program for giving tips as to where Saddam, Uday and Qusay Hussein have been and who their controllers are.

For the current location of Saddam Hussein, just ask the George Bushes; there are two of them as well. George Bush senior knows how to contact his agent Saddam Hussein at any given time.

Eagerly awaiting your reply and financial compensation.

Your sincerely,

Greg Hallett

Founder and Chairman of Fathering New Zealand Inc.. Author of: *Are You My Father? The Family Court and Other Experiments*, 2002; *Sex Lives of the Rich and Famous, A Sexual Political History* [withheld]; *Drugs and Paedophilia* [withheld, 2003]; and *Double Agent Prime Ministers*, 2004.

P.S. I will not be requiring your witness protection program.

Military and Government Drug Running

Spymaster: "Colin Powell used to meet all the South American Generals in Mexico. The US Embassy was out of bounds because it was too full of spies, and the Mexican Officers Club was too dripping with drug bribes, so they met on the Mexican side of the border at Cartagena. They'd fly in for meetings on the runway (1980s and 90s) and park their planes at the General Abelardo L. Rodríguez International Airport (Tijuana Int. Airport), at the closest runway point, just 50 metres from the U.S. border, and within shooting distance if required. Colin 'Cocaine Bobby' Powell declared the runway American Territory – for diplomatic purposes of course, and every U.S. agency has tunnels under the border supporting the Narcostate – Mexico.

"As a successful drug runner, Colin 'Cocaine Bobby' Powell then became the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff (1989–93), then succeeded Madeleine Albright as the U.S. Secretary of State (2001–05). Now you can't tell me the U.S. military aren't running drugs."

U.S. Mexican Border wall, 50 metres from the Tijuana International Airport Runway.

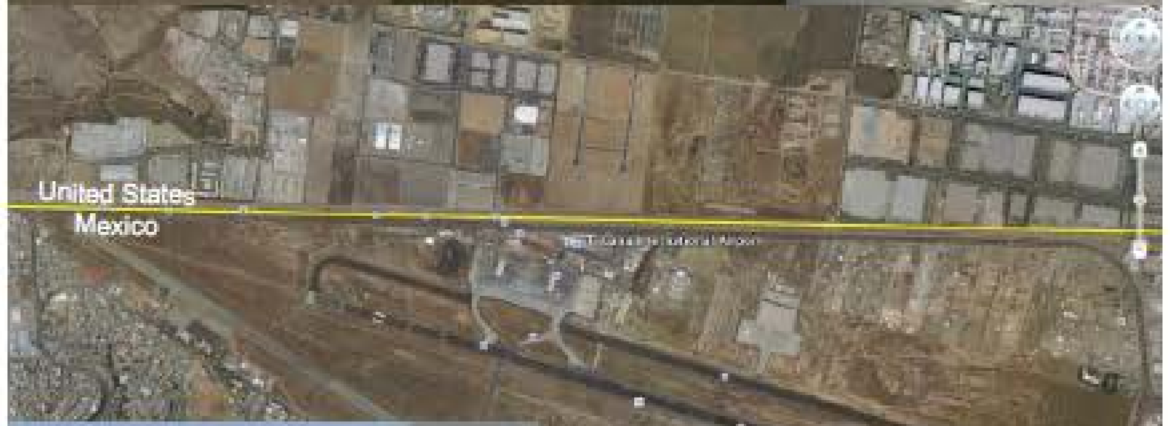

'GLOBAL PEACE AMBASSADORS' plane, at Tijuana Int. Airport, funded how?

Spymaster: "It was similar between Australia and New Zealand. Australia's leader of the opposition Andrew Peacock (1983–85/1989–90) used the runway at Ohakea Air Force Base (14 km from the West Coast, 2 km outside Bulls, and across the Rangitikei River) to meet Prime Minister David Lange (1984–89) and Finance Minister Roger Douglas (1984–88) to brief them on what Prime Minister Bob Hawke (1983–91) wanted them to do. Even though Hawke and Peacock were in opposing parties, the Aussies owned Lange and Douglas through transvestites and paedophilia. Similarly Prime Minister Helen Clark (1999–2008) was a mole for every other country in the world except New Zealand."

Australia
Google

Ohakea Royal New Zealand Air Force Base. Who said X never marks the spot?

Spymaster: "The British had been running Vis (off Split) for a couple of hundred years. From Vis and Kos, the British ran crime and drugs in Yugoslavia. The British were always doing deals with the Yugoslav Royal Family which was just like a revolving stage."

'Monarchies of Europe, Yugoslavian Royal Family'

"Two feuding families, the Houses of Karageorgievich and the House of Obrenovich, rivalled for the title King. This was often to the death and reads like a Shakespearean play.

Prince Alexander of Serbia (1806–85) was from the House of Karageorgievich and the son of the founder of the Karadjordjevic dynasty, Djordje (George) Petrovic (1752–1817). Prince Alexander was elected Prince of Serbia (1842), then forced to abdicate (1859) in favour of Prince Milosh (1780–1860) from the House of Obrenovich. Serbia became a Kingdom (1882) and was ruled by the House of Obrenovich until King Alexander I (1876–1903) and Queen Drago were murdered in their palace during an army revolt on 10 June 1903.

The rule of Serbia then returned to the House of Karageorgievich and five days later, Peter I of Serbia (1844–1921) became King of Serbia (15 June 1903–21); 15 years later the Kingdom was extended and renamed 'Kingdom of Serbs, Croats and Slovenes' in 1918; and then renamed again as 'Kingdom of Yugoslavia' on 3 October 1929.

Prince George (1887–1972) was mentally and emotionally unstable and forced to renounce his right to the throne on 12 March 1909.

King Alexander I of Serbs, Croats and Slovenes (1888–1934) was then assassinated on 9 October 1934 in Marseilles by Croat revolutionists using the Macedonian revolutionary Velucko Kerin, who was then shot.

Peter II of Yugoslavia (1923–70) succeeded his father in 1934, aged 10, but when Hitler invaded in 1941, he (18) fled . . . and on 29 November in 1945 the monarchy was abolished without Referendum and Yugoslavia was proclaimed a Republic. Peter II of Yugoslavia then became an alcoholic and destitute, tried a liver transplant at Denver Hospital Colorado but died, becoming the only king to be buried on United States soil (St. Sava Monastery Church in Libertyville, Illinois). Prince Andrej (b. 1929–90) then suicided in 1990.

Prince Alexander (b. 1945) is the present Head of the Royal House of Yugoslavia. Born in London in Claridges Hotel, the family suite was declared Yugoslavian territory by the British Government for his birth. Yugoslavian Constitution stipulates that Monarchs have to be born on Yugoslavian territory. Canada did the same thing for the Dutch during WWII."

Royal Yugoslav
Serb Croat Slovene Anniversary.

New Zealand is a Fascist Country fronting as a Socialist Country

Zarko 'Sharko' Milich

Zarko Milich (88) died on 6 September 2009 in Auckland Hospital. He was the head of a Croatian section of the Ustashi during WWII, then escaped from Italy to New Zealand in 1953.

He then founded Sonny Elegant Knitware[57] on Dominion Road, Auckland and made a lot of money in the 1980s.

His son, Tony, then expanded the company into Sabatini in 1990, winning a Trade New Zealand Export Award in 1997 – now appearing on runways all around the world.

Zarko Milich was a major war criminal responsible for 14,000 murders. His brother was also Ustashi SS, whose daughter Yvonne Milich (Zarko's niece) married Mike Moore.

Mike Moore then became New Zealand's Prime Minister for three months (4 September–2 November 1990).

Former 2-IC SIS: The Labour Party's Mike Moore had cancer in the 1980s and lost his complete genitalia to it.[58] As an absolute neuter he was made Prime Minister for 59 days and his wife Yvonne née Milich/ Dereany Moore had a long-standing affair with the Huka Lodge BOSS (Bureau of State Security for South Africa) in Taupo, which has continued for the last ten or fifteen years. I can't really blame her, but she didn't have to choose a fascist."

So when we say:

"New Zealand is a fascist country
fronting as a socialist country"
there are reasons in the bedroom.

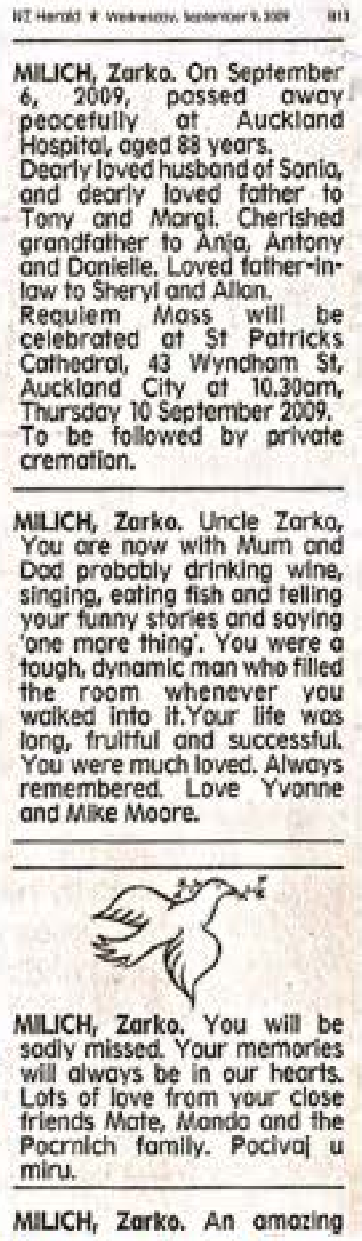

NZ Herald ★ Wednesday, September 9, 2009

MILICH, Zarko. On September 6, 2009, passed away peacefully at Auckland Hospital, aged 88 years. Dearly loved husband of Sonia, and dearly loved father to Tony and Margi. Cherished grandfather to Anja, Antony and Danielle. Loved father-in-law to Sheryl and Allan. Requiem Mass will be celebrated at St Patricks Cathedral, 43 Wyndham St, Auckland City at 10.30am, Thursday 10 September 2009. To be followed by private cremation.

MILICH, Zarko. Uncle Zarko, You are now with Mum and Dad probably drinking wine, singing, eating fish and telling your funny stories and saying 'one more thing'. You were a tough, dynamic man who filled the room whenever you walked into it.Your life was long, fruitful and successful. You were much loved. Always remembered. Love Yvonne and Mike Moore.

MILICH, Zarko. You will be sadly missed. Your memories will always be in our hearts. Lots of love from your close friends Mate, Mando and the Pocrnich family. Pocivaj u miru.

MILICH, Zarko. An amazing

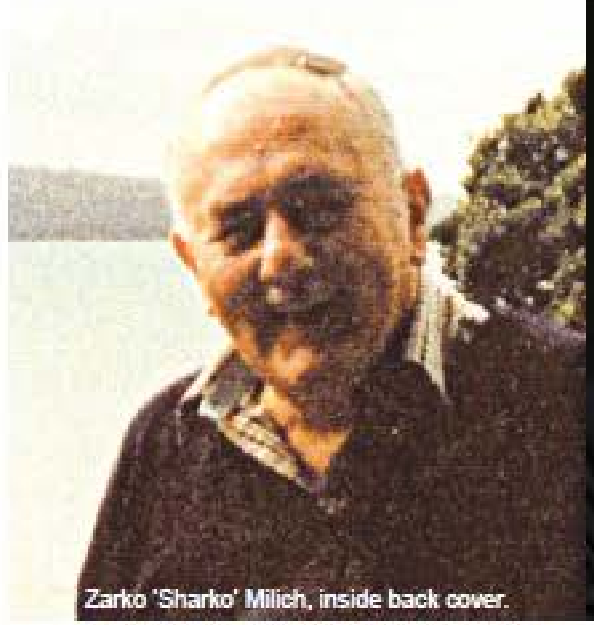

Zarko 'Sharko' Milich, inside back cover.

P.M. Mike Moore, inside back cover.

Unable to have sex, and with plenty of time alone, Mike Moore wrote a series of the most boring books on record,[59] all with whitewashed communist themes, as cover for his fascist wife (daughter and niece of Yugoslavian Ustashi genociders) having an affair with her fascist South African BOSS.

For reference to these Ustashi genocides of see *Genocide in Satellite Croatia 1941–1945*. It portrays a shocking record of mass persecution and slaughter by Croatian Ustashi in the Nazi puppet state Croatia:

> "In proportion to nation's population, this was the greatest genocide of WWII where some 750,000 Serbs, 60,000 Jews and 26,000 Gypsies – all non-Catholic men, women and children – perished in a gigantic holocaust (1941–45) . . . using hammers, saws, knives, garden implements . . ."[60]

This was the mass extermination of some 836,000 Serbian men women and children – systematic brutal massacres which were even too much for Nazi tolerance, so they ignored them, as did most history books.

The Croatian Ustashi were assisted by Croatian Catholic clergy – who were also Ustashi, so they massacred non-Catholics – which seems to be a Catholic tradition . . . It was a Catholic funeral I attended for Zarko Milich. I left when they started singing 'Amazing Grace'.

Former 2-IC SIS: "Mike Moore's wife, Yvonne Moore (née Dereany) used to run the children's television programmes. Her father, Mr Milich, was a war criminal and the Israeli's came to New Zealand to ask for permission to extradite him and take him to Israel for trial.

"So Mike Moore was made Prime Minister for 59 days and told them to 'fuck off'.[61]

---

[57] The Film Archive: Reston's 1971 Fashion Footage. Hotpants, presenting the works of Zarko Milich in association with Sonny Knitwear; Filmed for the 'On Camera' show, 1971. New Zealand television has always backed foreign criminals, fascists, child drug dealers, and child sex abusers, so why should a mass-murdering exiled war criminal be any different.

[58] I suspect Helen Clark. She is well known for killing the men around her, either by poison, heart gun, or burning car. She hates heterosexual men. *Investigate* magazine even published this: ". . . matched with Clark's dislike of men generally . . ." As a neuter, Mike Moore had the following New Zealand appointments: New Zealand Government Trade Envoy; Labour Party Opposition Spokesman, Foreign Affairs (1993–99); Leader of the Labour Party (1990–93); Prime Minister of New Zealand 1990 [actually 4 September to 2 November 1990 Mike]; Minister of Overseas Trade and Marketing (1984–90); Minister of Tourism, Sport and Recreation (1984–87); Chairman, Cabinet Committee, Economic Development and Employment (1984–90); Minister for the America's Cup (1988–90); Minister of External Relations and Trade (1988–90); Deputy Minister of Finance (1988–90); MP, Waimakariri, Papanui & Christchurch North (1978–99) [neutered here and above], and Member of Parliament for Eden (1972–75) . . . As a neuter, Mike Moore had the following overseas appointments: Director General of the World Trade Organisation 1999–2002; Commissioner, Global Commission on International Migration; UN Commission of Legal Empowerment of the Poor; Adjunct Professor, La Trobe University, Melbourne Australia and University of Adelaide; Special Advisor to the United Nations Global Compact for Business and Development; Special Advisor, China Institute for Reform and Development's World Trade Organisation Reference Centre; Senior Counsellor, Fonterra; Founding member, Global Leadership Foundation; Member, Trilateral Commission; Member, Economic Development Board, South Australia; Member, Board of Governors Institute for International Business, Economics and Law, University of Adelaide; Former Board Member to the Gottlieb Duttweiler Institute.

[59] Mike Moore's books include: *A Brief History of the Future*; *Children of the Poor*; *Fighting for New Zealand*; *Hard Labour*; *The Added Value Economy*; *A Pacific Parliament*; *On Balance*; *Beyond Today*; *A World Without Walls*.

[60] *Genocide in Satellite Croatia 1941–1945*, Professor Edmond Paris, Paris, 1961, 1962; Publ. The American Institute for Balkan Affairs, 1990, Introduction, slightly paraphrased..

[61] Mike Moore took over from the paedophile-minder, Geoffrey Palmer (8 August 1989–4 September 1990). Both had replaced the Goodnight Kiwi in putting the nation to sleep. The Goodnight Kiwi survived from 1981 to October 1994 – longer than any Prime Minister in New Zealand's history. Richard Seddon served the longest at 13 years (27 April 1893–10 June 1906). Ironically, Seddon was born in Eccelston, Lancashire, 15 km south of where the New Zealand born heroin trafficker Marty 'Mr Asia' Johnston was found with no hands, no teeth and dead in Eccelston Delph (flooded quarry). His murder in England was ordered from New Zealand.

"Mr Milich (Yvonne's uncle) made a lot of money from clothing manufacturing in Auckland in the 1980s. It's still going. He saved a lot of money and is a millionaire, but he still has to live with his history.

"Zarko Milich ran a campaign during WWII just outside Belgrade. He issued his staff with slash hooks, like heavy sickles, and brought in 14,000 people over a week. Under his leadership and direction, his men bashed 14,000 heads in and cut many of them off with sickles, axes and saws. It was one of the worst, bloodiest and most vile crime scenes of WWII.

"Milich supervised the whole thing while working for the Nazis. He was a virulent anti-communist so the Americans and Brits put in a good word for him because he kept pointing out: 'I killed a lot of communists and trade unionists'."

"In June 2008 the Labour Government organised a dinner in Wellington for Croatian and Dalmatian settlers. The Nazi mass murderer Zarko 'Sharko' Milich will be at the head of one of the tables. Not invited are two of the most important creative artists of Dalmation origin – the architect/artist Milan Mrkusich and the actor/writer John Yelash – both heterosexual. Prime Minister Helen Clark is not. She is a Nazi-leaning lesbian paedophile minder with KGB training.

"There are 8,000 foreign war criminals living in greater Auckland. Prime Minister Mike Moore's father-in-law and uncle-in-law were two of them. Both are now dead. That just leaves 7,998 foreign war criminals living and hiding in greater Auckland.

"Over thirty war criminals under his command attended his funeral at St Patrick's Cathedral on Wyndham St, 100 metres from the Auckland District Court at 10.30 am–12.25 pm on 10 September 2009."

Author: "Thanks for the invite. Here's the photographs."

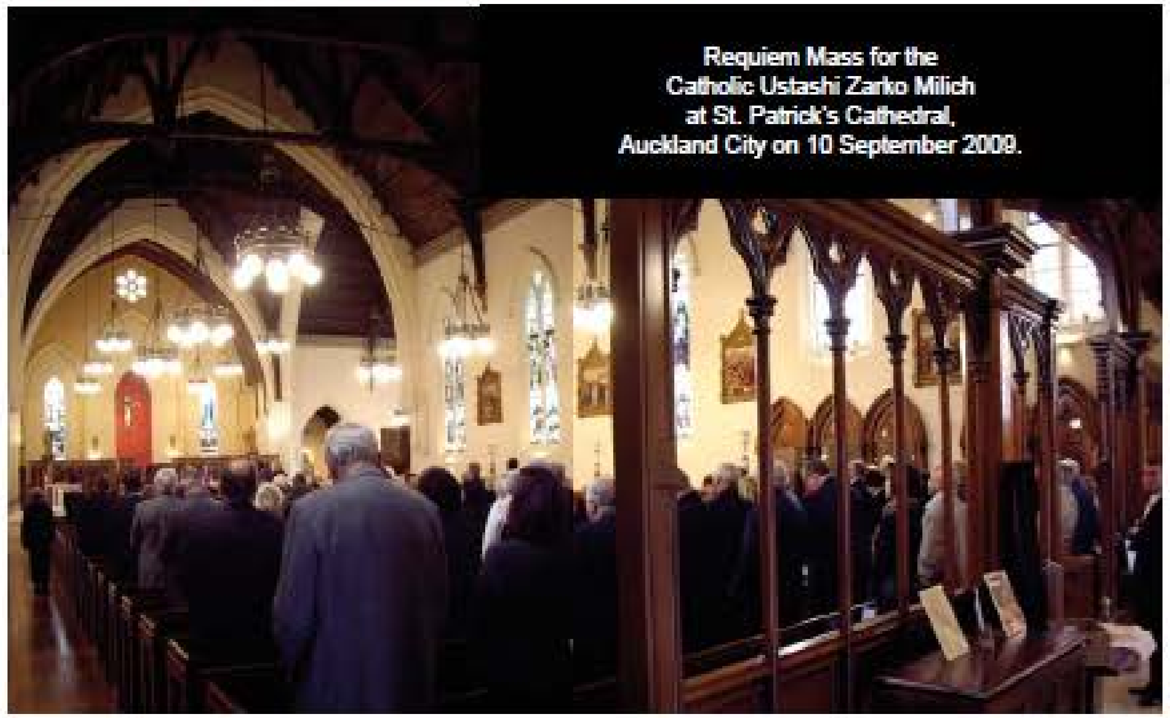

Requiem Mass for the
Catholic Ustashi Zarko Milich
at St. Patrick's Cathedral,
Auckland City on 10 September 2009.

Former 2-IC SIS: "The SIS were there taking photographs. No one there knew who you were."

Author: "That's okay. I've got a cover. My parents used to buy clothes off Zarko mid-1970s to mid-1980s, all except the hotpants. It was a conservative 40s-plus women's 'fashion' shop. Have you ever seen an over-40s in hot pants. Not a good look, especially in the regional suburbs. It's got that crazy feel like boil on cellulite."

Funeral Crashing

So I crashed Zarko Milich's Nazi funeral at St Patrick's Cathedral in St Patrick's Square in the centre of Auckland. There's always a few pointers that you never get anywhere but during a eulogy. Two hundred people attended and when they stood up, only half a dozen were over 6 foot.

Zarko married Sonia in 1943 during the height of the genocide, when she would have known he was a mass murderer. They moved to New Zealand and bought their first building outright in 1959/60 at the top end of Dominion Road.

This is surprising because Zarko hardly spoke any English and only had his business up and running for a brief time, around three years. He then drove around in big American cars, with big fins, and styley European cars, described by one eulogist as "a Balkan James Bond . . . and his wife Sonia looked like Sophia Loren". He also had beach houses and launches. So there's every possibility Milich had some Nazi/ Ustashi/ Catholic money behind him – the same money misappropriated off the 836,000 dead Serbians and Gypsies he contributed to murdering.

In Loving Memory

of

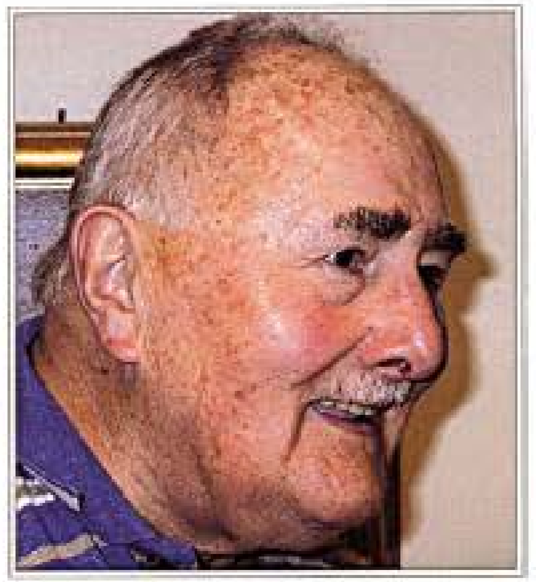

Zarko Milich

20th April 1921
Split, Croatia

6th September 2009
Auckland, New Zealand

Zarko kind of was a Balkan James Bond. He assumed the Catholics gave him a licence to kill non-Catholics, but it was more than 007 kills. It was more like 7000 kills twice over.

In the early 1970s Zarko caught a mako shark and this made it to the papers: "Sharko catches a Mako", and thereafter he was called "Sharko", but referred to as "Sharkwell" in the eulogy and Requiem Mass.

He didn't lack money and had plenty behind him. He owned commercial buildings on Dominion Road, between Walters and Onslow Roads and the houses behind it, some of which backed onto Helen Clark's house at 4 Cromwell Street.

Pedestrian: "I rented a house off him around 1991. It didn't work out, so I told him, and he said, 'I appreciate you coming to tell me, don't worry about it', and he let me off the three weeks notice and even returned my bond. So he had money to spare."

Zarko emersed himself in New Zealand culture, while still singing Yugoslavian songs as he made his salad. He joined virtually every organisation, like Commerical Travellers, yacht clubs, and keenly attended rugby matches with barbeques afterwards. This is common training for war criminals – complete immersion in the local culture and business.

So I attended the funeral and took some photos inside and out. When I went for a closer look, I realised I knew some of the players, and they knew me. One was a Croatian lawyer who'd made verbal passes at my girlfriend, in front of me . . . I used to come up with my parents on buying trips during the holidays and Sharko was one of the suppliers. I remember my father muttering something, but it went over most people's heads.

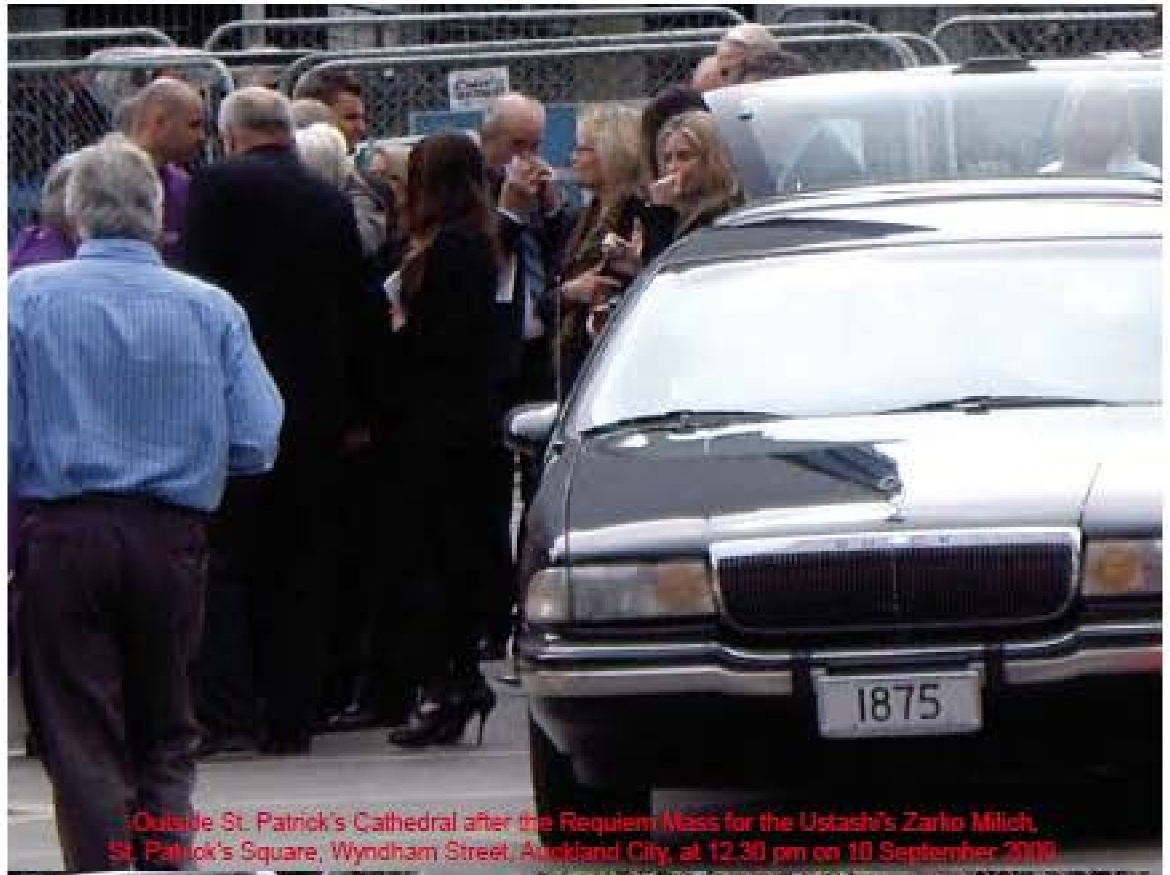

Outside St. Patrick's Cathedral after the Requiem Mass for the Ustashi's Zarko Milich, St. Patrick's Square, Wyndham Street, Auckland City, at 12.30 pm on 10 September 2009

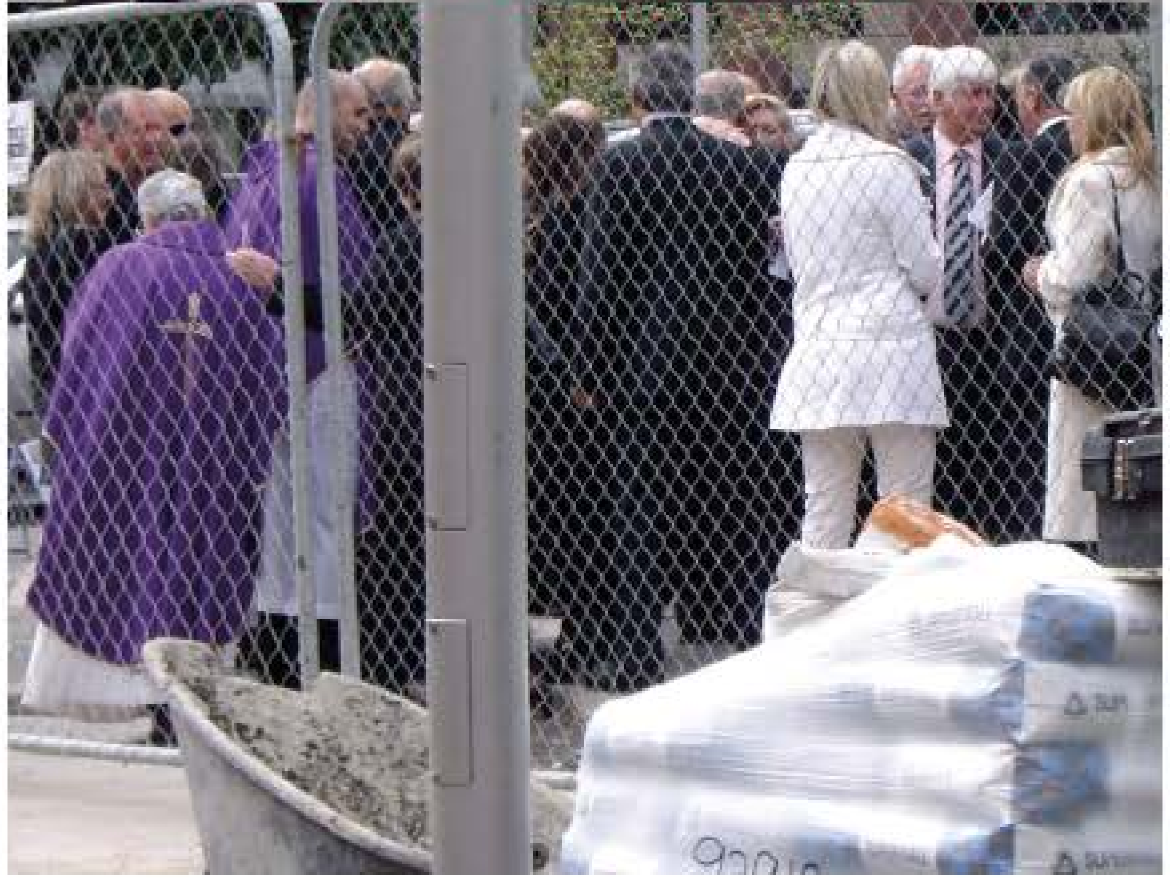

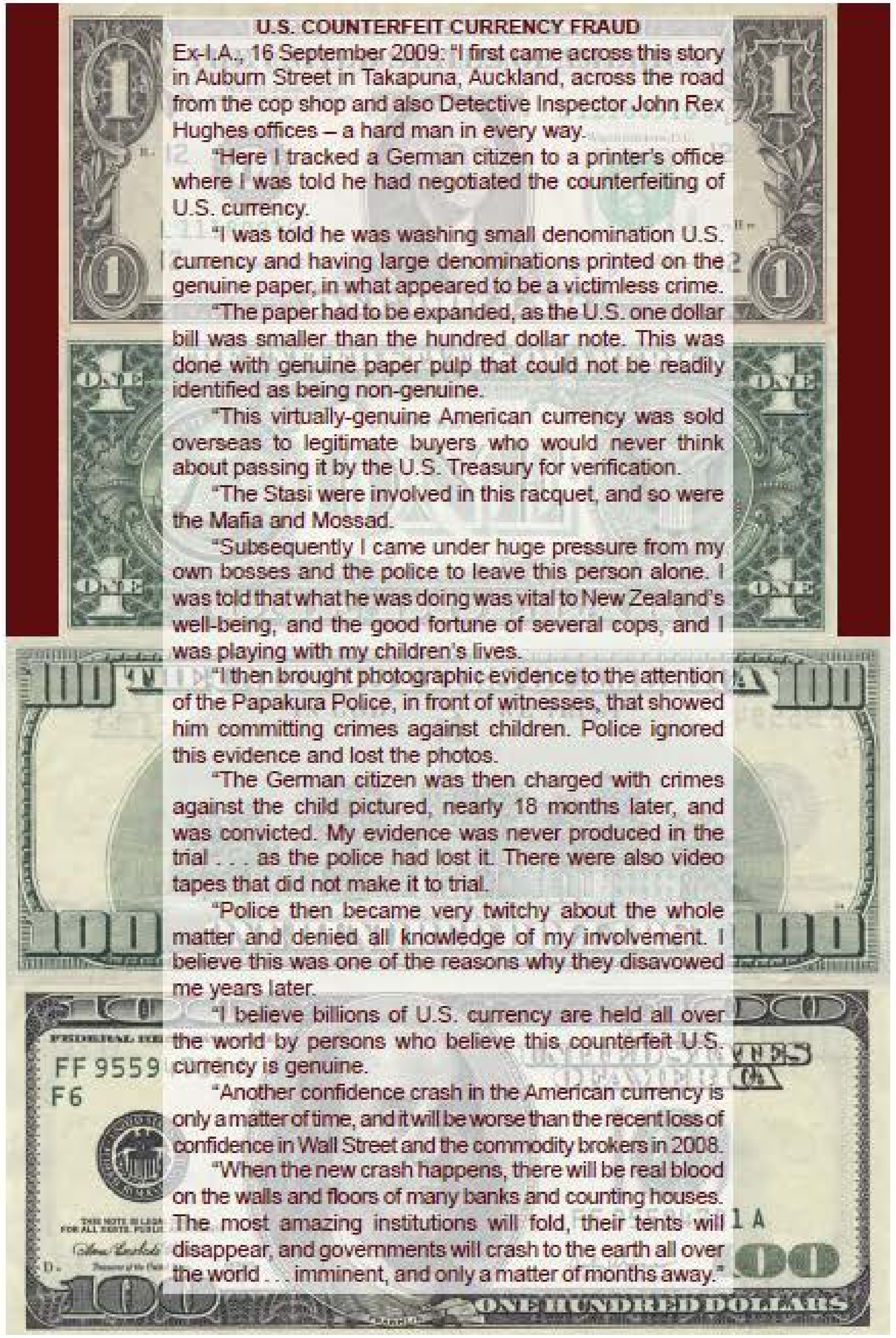

U.S. COUNTERFEIT CURRENCY FRAUD

Ex-I.A., 16 September 2009: "I first came across this story in Auburn Street in Takapuna, Auckland, across the road from the cop shop and also Detective Inspector John Rex Hughes offices – a hard man in every way.

"Here I tracked a German citizen to a printer's office where I was told he had negotiated the counterfeiting of U.S. currency.

"I was told he was washing small denomination U.S. currency and having large denominations printed on the genuine paper, in what appeared to be a victimless crime.

"The paper had to be expanded, as the U.S. one dollar bill was smaller than the hundred dollar note. This was done with genuine paper pulp that could not be readily identified as being non-genuine.

"This virtually-genuine American currency was sold overseas to legitimate buyers who would never think about passing it by the U.S. Treasury for verification.

"The Stasi were involved in this racquet, and so were the Mafia and Mossad.

"Subsequently I came under huge pressure from my own bosses and the police to leave this person alone. I was told that what he was doing was vital to New Zealand's well-being, and the good fortune of several cops, and I was playing with my children's lives.

"I then brought photographic evidence to the attention of the Papakura Police, in front of witnesses, that showed him committing crimes against children. Police ignored this evidence and lost the photos.

"The German citizen was then charged with crimes against the child pictured, nearly 18 months later, and was convicted. My evidence was never produced in the trial . . . as the police had lost it. There were also video tapes that did not make it to trial.

"Police then became very twitchy about the whole matter and denied all knowledge of my involvement. I believe this was one of the reasons why they disavowed me years later.

"I believe billions of U.S. currency are held all over the world by persons who believe this counterfeit U.S. currency is genuine.

"Another confidence crash in the American currency is only a matter of time, and it will be worse than the recent loss of confidence in Wall Street and the commodity brokers in 2008.

"When the new crash happens, there will be real blood on the walls and floors of many banks and counting houses. The most amazing institutions will fold, their tents will disappear, and governments will crash to the earth all over the world . . . imminent, and only a matter of months away."

Catholic Ustashi in New Zealand

Spymaster: "Perhaps I can give you some background. The way it works is the top guy is supported by the Catholics with Ustashi money and then he sponsors the rest to come out and engage in business. The banks lend their money to the individuals, but they operate under the guarantee of the main man. This saves the Catholic Church a fortune.

"In the future, there's always a payback, and the payback is the Catholic Church have to sometimes be responsible financially and in other ways for that person's welfare. Often this involves medical care and hospital care generated by the state. The Catholic Church operates through an 'Avocato' – virtually an Italian spelling for 'advocate'. Usually a priest, layman, lawyer, or Papal Knight, the Avocato will have three or four of these people on their books and they only deal with Catholics in hospitals. The hospitals are aware of this system for dealing with these people, so they refuse to acknowledge if anything has gone ary."

Army Intelligence: "The Ustashi did atrocities in the last two years of WWII. My father used to say: 'No religious minority, or even a majority acknowledged that anybody they were fighting against in Yugoslavia was human, or had human feelings. This is what enabled them to launch the kind of brutality they accomplished'.

"The key player in of all was the Catholic Church. Because the Catholic Church was as old as it was, and stretched back to the Romans, and came from the time when Roman Generals were virtually religious leaders, the force the Catholic Church was prepared to use in the Blakans, was the degree of force everybody else went to straight away.

"It was Roman conquering force. Because the Catholic Church enthusiastically resorted to war crimes and rapes, and has institutionalised them in the Balkans, it's the automatic reaction of every other group. My father was told that as soon as a family fell into the other side's hands, the patriarchal leaders of families were executed first. This was based on the old adagé: 'Removing the family's leader would leave everybody else running around like chooks with their cut heads off'. The women and girls were raped, usually in front of their mothers, as this heightened the trauma. The Roman Army developed rape as an act of war, and the Catholic Church inherited every other tactic the Romans used, including torture . . .

"I went to Split to attend a funeral one day. I didn't know where it was, so I stood on the hill above the city looking for it. What gave it away was this sound of horns coming up the hill towards me. It was a military procession as the deceased had been a compadré of Tito's during the war. Young girls carried a photo of him draped in an olive wreath, with other women and girls carrying more wreaths behind. Men were playing Roman horns and the whole thing was straight out of a page of the Roman Military Manual. It was a shock to go to a so-called modern country and run across somebody being buried as they had been 2000 years before.

"I had a girl that I used to have waiting for me when I got to Yugoslavia and she would be my guide and spy, all the time I was in Croatia. She'd take me around the place, translate for me, organise my food everywhere, and run my life while there . . . I never hade to have an original thought. She took me up into the hills and showed me caves that had casing gear and boring gear for making rifle barrels, and all this was in preparation for the Soviet invasion that never came. She'd explain with a shrug of her shoulders that Tito had talked to Churchill and Churchill had Stalin killed before he got around to invading Yugoslavia. She also used to say that Tito was Churchill's nephew or relative. At the time I never believed her.

"I assumed it was all communist propaganda. It was my father that took it seriously.

"She reckoned the only reason the Yugoslavs put up with Tito was because they were used to being run by a strongman and he would kill anybody that stepped out of line and that's what Yugoslavs needed. She predicted that when he died [4 May 1980] the whole place would come apart at the seams, which it did."

Wikipedia: "Josip Broz Tito (7 or 25 May 1892–4 May 1980) was a Yugoslav revolutionary and statesman. From 1943, he held the rank of Marshal of Yugoslavia, serving as the supreme commander of the Yugoslav military, the Yugoslav People's Army (JNA) and led the Yugoslav Partisans resistance movement (1941–45). He was Secretary-General (later President) of the League of Communists of Yugoslavia (1939–80), then Prime Minister (1945–63), then President (1953–80) of the Socialist Federal Republic of Yugoslavia (SFRY). Tito was the chief architect of the "Second Yugoslavia" – a socialist federation that lasted from World War II until 1991. He was one of the founders of Cominform, but was the first and only successful Cominform member to defy Soviet hegemony. He became the first Secretary-General of the Non-Aligned Movement that backed independent roads to socialism, a.k.a. 'national communism' or "Titoism". As such, Tito supported the policy of non-alignment between the two hostile blocs in the Cold War." He also removed the Royal Family's passports until 2009, 29 years after his death, so he had posthumous influence.

Army Intelligence: "Tito sent military officers to prison, and he would say: 'Colonel So-and-So does not believe in us anymore, therefore he is nuts. Torture him and if he doesn't come around after a given time, he must be really nuts, so shoot him.' That was the Yugoslav attitude.

"In WWII, the Croat Ustashi slaughtered these people in a space that was between four or five villages. They wanted to know which of the villagers had unmarked cobblestones so that after the slaughter was over, they could simply turn over cobblestones to hide it. But in the four or five villages surrounding the area, people had been slaughtered in every single village.

"My father was parachuted in to assist Milošević's Partisan Army and he took Yugoslav Partisans with him when he left Italy. But when they turned up at the rendezvous point, the British uniforms were all gone, and they were dressed as Partisans again.

"The guys parachuted into trees and changed their uniforms before they regrouped, which was about half-an-hour. My father didn't recognise them straight away.

"They were originally given British uniforms, jackets and trousers, but they swopped these with local people who now had trousers or a shirt or something. Every item of British military uniform was prized because someone could wear it, even if it was just khaki socks, and they'd say: 'I am soldiering for England. Here are my socks, or my boots, or my pants, or my rifle sling.' Within half-an-hour of parachuting into trees dressed as British, the Partisans had changed the look of their uniform completely.

"The thing my father couldn't get over was that they would talk about killing people as if they were contemplating wiping out rats. It never percolated through their understanding, of any of them, that somebody who belonged to another minority could have any human feelings whatsoever. They always said: 'We have to kill rats'.

"Yugoslavs would never contemplate not killing someone because there was nowhere to do it. They'd always find a place, even if they had to feed them into a river, or just shoot them by the roadside. It was quite common to beat people with hammers and rifle stocks, and use knives on people – because the ammunition was being saved for fighting soldiers. As it turned out, there were no clean cobblestones in any of the five villages. There had been a massacre in every one of them."

Author: "Same attitude in both wars."

Tito's Well-Tailored Hide-Out

Just before Randolph Churchill arrived to Tito's hidehout on 10 July 1944, the Nazis launched Operation Knight's Leap" (Rosselsprung) – an airdrop on Tito's Drvar headquarters.

> "Escorted by guards we had left our village at dusk and gone to the foot of a goat path. After an exchange of passwords, a new guard was assigned to lead us straight up the rocks beside a waterfall deep into a fissure in the towering limestone crag. Midway up we entered a vast grotto with an underground mountain lake . . ."[62]

Army Intelligence: "When Tito's SS HQ got raided by the SS paratroopers, Tito used the waterfall in front of his house to get out. My father was asked to take Tito's new uniform on his back and escape down the waterfall.

"Pommy Officer on British Military Mission: 'You have to take this. Instructions have come from London that it is absolutely vital'.

"Private X, 2NZEF: 'Bugger you and bugger London too. Leave it as it is. The Germans won't do anything with it because half their uniforms have got Pommy tailor's tags on them.'

"Private X was buggered if he was going to carry everything Tito and the Poms wanted. They had a load for him that would rupture ten donkeys.

"The Poms used to complain to Private X that in the British Army an order is an order. Whereas in the New Zealand Army it is merely the topic of discussion for the day, whereupon Private X said: 'Fucking good job, eh'.

"In Tito's cave, the SS found one of his newest uniforms just delivered from London, still with the Savile Row tailor's tag. Consequently the uniform was presented in a display of captured equipment that toured around German Military forces. No mention was ever made of the incriminating tailor's tag."

Author: "So the British, Yugoslavian and German uniforms, at least at the top levels, were all made in London."

Army Intelligence: "Yes. There would still be tailors in the West End of London that would remember working on German military uniforms of very, very, high rank on the orders of the Home Office and Foreign Office. These were often parachuted into Germany via special containers made of leather – called the 'EXPRESS SERVICE'.

"The Australians got told off 'cause they were dropping the EXPRESS SERVICE with the bombload. The Poms would get back these agonised telexes: 'We couldn't find the uniform, only a couple of buttons 'cause it got dropped with a bombload'. So instructions went out that special containers for German delivery were only to be dropped by non-Colonial crews.

"Tito got a variation of the German uniform made in London in Savile Row. Old James Bond's creator, Ian Fleming, used to handle the tailor because he was a bit queer and very temperamental and had to be praised for everything he'd done. Fleming used to be very effusive with him, so they got on well. The tailors used to bill S.O.E. and the Foreign Office for all the uniforms they made and they even used to provide Iron Crosses and Knight's Crosses, shirts, ties, jackets, trousers and shoes for Kriegsmarine Officers that had been taken off U-boats.

"The captured German Officer would arrive in the Docks at Liverpool or London only in the clothes they stood up in, and Fleming would take him to the tailor, get him totally fitted out with all the right gear and regalia, and the Poms would pay the bill.

"Churchill objected to the scale of charges and Fleming replied: 'These men are the young lions of the German Armed Forces and they have to look the part if you want them taken seriously in the POW cages'.

"The U-boat Ace, Otto Kretschmer, received a complete kit from the Savile Row Tailors.

---

[62] Tito's Yugoslavia, *TIME* Foreign News, *TIME* Correspondent Stoyan Pribichevich, 22 May 1944.

"The tailors were always sticking their label in everything they made. Fleming would routinely cut them off before handing them over, but on some ocassions, he delegated the uniform pickup and the label stayed in."

Author: "So dressing up to dress people down was really important."

Randolph Churchill (28 May 1911–6 June 1968).

Evelyn Waugh (28 October 1903–10 April 1968).

Josip Broz Tito (7 or 25 May 1892–4 May 1980).

Lord Carrington/ Carington/ Smith (6 June 1919–).

Army Intelligence: “Lord Carrington was in Yugoslavia as a lieutenant in the British Army and regarded as possessing evil intent. He was considered to be part of the Communists draconian methodology of discipline and this meant that he was probably willing to use his personal revolver to shoot men on the roadside during forced marches.

“I’ve heard the same thing from Yugoslavs and my father told me: ‘There was this Pom with a snooty accent, an absolute bastard, a real sadist, and he had no regard for any other person on the planet. He equated Kiwis down at the depths of humanity, only one step up from Yugoslavians. That was the guy they called Lord Carrington’.”

Author: “He was there again in the 1990s.”

> “Lord Carrington, Peter Alexander Rupert Carington, 6th Baron Carrington KG, GCMG, CH, MC, PC, DL (6 June 1919–) is a British Conservative politician who served as British Foreign Secretary (1979–82) then Secretary-General of NATO (1984–88) and is the last peer to have held one of the four Great Offices of State. In 1991, he tried to break up Yugoslavia into independent nations under the guise of diplomatic talks – which was an ongoing attempt to create World War Three. For his contribution to Serbian war crimes committed against civilians in Croatia he was given the Medal of Honour in 1999 (esp. the Vukovar massacre and displacement of citizens). His surname was originally ‘Smith’ but his family changed it in 1839 to ‘Carington’. For further cover and confusion, his hereditary peerages are spelt ‘Carrington’. But Smith/ Carington/ Carrington is from the ‘Don’t-stir-the-pot-and-you-will-be-promoted’ family.”[63]

Army Intelligence: “When Churchill’s son Randolph used to send for my father, he had a queer butler that would come around and say: ‘Excuse me private, Mr Churchill sends you his compliments and requests your attendance at a meeting in five minutes time at his residence on the main street’. My old man replied: ‘Tell Churchill to go fuck himself. I’ll come and see him when I’ve got my trousers back on and will call at Bullshit Hollows.’ The butler used to go back to Churchill and spin him some bullshit and my old man would be absolutely furious that the message wasn’t delivered as said.

“When the fascist Ustashi completed their four-year extermination campaign (1941–45), the top brass and killers were swished to New Zealand and Australia by the Catholic Church and have been kept safe there ever since.

“The minute that any Israeli attempt to extradite has been suggested, it has been drowned by executive action from the Catholic Church.”

Author: “The 2-IC of the SIS backs that up – the evasive executive action coming from 59-day-Prime Minister Mike-Moore.”

Army Intelligence: “Does he! Hmmm. In Yugoslavia, everyone was either a Catholic, or a Communist, or a Jew, or a Gypsy, or a Muslim, or a Mormon, or any one of a thousand other unpopular minorities. Often people would be killed because they were more than one category, and there would be an argument aftewards as to why exactly they had been killed, and nobody could remember.

“Churchill’s own son was sent to Yugoslavia and he entered crazed negotiations with partisan leaders, like Tito, in which he deliberately yelled at them and called them ‘bastards’, as was his want. Randolph negotiated with Tito as an equal – obviously on his father’s instructions. Often the negotiations would look more like a sordid quarrel in a working house in Bethnall Green, than the High Jura of Yugoslavia surrounded by Germans. They would regularly resort to fists, bottles, and revolvers, and their Aides would routinely deload revolvers before negotiations began.”

---

[63] Wikipedia, paraphrased ever so slightly.

> “Major Randolph Frederick Edward Spencer Churchill, MBE (28 May 1911–6 June 1968) served with his father’s old regiment, the 4th Queen’s Own Hussars during WWII and went on a military/diplomatic mission to Yugoslavia in support of the Partisans. He arrived with Evelyn Waugh[64] on Vis island on 10 July 1944 and met with Tito. By September 1944, Churchill and Waugh had established their military mission at Topusko. Officially, little was known about Tito at the time. The British thought ‘Tito’ was “an acronym for a young woman or a committee”. He was officially supported by the British because he was killing the most Nazis, and turned out to be Churchill’s cousin. So Tito was seen as a required ally of Britain and an official ‘friend’, even though Churchill and Waugh’s report detailed Tito’s persecution of clergy. “Foreign Secretary Anthony Eden then attempted to discredit Evelyn Waugh and ‘buried’ the report. Eden then divorced in 1950 and married (1952) Randolph Churchill’s cousin (a nominal Catholic), was elevated to Knight Thistle in 1954, and then made Prime Minister (1955–57).
>
> The Diplomat Fitzroy Maclean specialised in commando raids and answered to Winston Churchill. Fitzroy liked Tito and wrote *Eastern Approaches* (1949) which illustrated many of the problems Randolph Churchill caused in Yugoslavia.”[65]

Diplomat Fitzroy Maclean led the Tito Mission.

Randolph Churchill gives up his wife for his country

So Randolph Churchill was an argumentative, belligerent alcoholic and a diplomatic embarrassment. If he was more like his father and keen on doing the wrong thing, he may have lived longer with a better reputation.

Fitroy put up with Randolph’s temper and went from Private to Brigadier-General in the space of a few months. It became known as the ‘Fitzroy Maclean mission to General Tito’. Private X, 2NZEF: “It was the most amazing case of keeping your trap shut and don’t send any ferrits home to roost. And after the war was over Fitz became an MP for the Conservative Party. They found him a safe seat and ditched the incumbent. He was then made an honorary Fellow of Churchill College, Cambridge (1965) then a Trustee for the Winston Churchill Memorial Trust (1967). Fitzroy knew where all the bodies were buried, including the one’s he’d buried himself.”

Private X 2NZEF: “One day I was told they wanted to see me. When I got there they asked me to run around with a drinks tray and I told them to ‘Get fucked’. While I was there, this incident played out . . . Randolph Churchill was already four-sheets-to-the-wind when the party started. He got on the local brandy with the Officers of the British mission in Yugoslavia and stood up and said: ‘I’ve been a good boy. I have laid down my wife for my country.’ An officer said: ‘What’s he going on about?’; and Fitzroy Maclean replied: ‘He said he’s “laid his life down for his country”’; and another officer said: ‘What’s the bounder going on about? He’s still alive!’; and I said: ‘I’m sure he said his wife’.”

---

[64] Evelyn Waugh (1903–66) was a high camp Catholic, part of the Bloomsbury Set. He joined the Royal Marines and wrote *Brideshead Revisted* (Dec. 1943–June 1944) while eating soya beans and speaking basic English. Immediately after, he went to Yugoslavia with Randolph Churchill. *Brideshead Revisted* was published in 1945.

[65] Wikipedia, Randolph Churchill, Evelyn Waugh, and Fitzroy Maclean amalgamated. Fitzroy Maclean (1911–96) got a baronetcy in 1957 (Sir) and the KT (Thistle) in 1994. He was a plausible inspiration for the James Bond novels and collected a full set of the early editions. These were sold in 2008 for £31,000.

Pamela Beryl Digby Churchill Hayward Harriman (20 March 1920–5 February 1997).

"The Officers used to say to Randolph: 'Don't get horrendously pissed', and Churchill would respond: 'Ra ra ra ra ra'. The Officers would tell me: 'Your causing us serious problems because Randolph turns around and says: 'The Kiwi's right. You can all go and get fucked'."

"Randolph Churchill married twice and had a 20-year affair. His first marriage was to the well-known socialite The Honourable Pamela Digby (later and better known as Pamela Harriman).

"Randolph then married June Osborne on 2 November 1948. They had one child, Arabella Churchill (31 Oct. 1949–20 Dec. 2007) and divorced in 1961.

"Randolph's friends and neighbours were Bobby and Natalie Bevan. Randolph began an affair with Natalie Bevan around the time of his marriage to June Osborne. The affair lasted longer – for the last twenty years of his life (1948–68). So he was a cuckolding schmuck."[66]

When Randolph realised that his son Winston Spencer Churchill was not his, but his father's, he left the marriage in 1941, went on a big bender, even gambling his way out of London. Randolph couldn't wait to lose money and tax his wife and father. On the ship out to Cairo he played cards with Pommy card sharks – Yeomanry Officers who were all in on it together – they're the worst. Randolph Churchill then wrote a letter to Pamela saying: "You pay". Pamela then got Max Aitken to pay. He was also Lord Beaverbrook, newspaper publisher, and member of Churchill's War Cabinet who then got her a job in the Foreign Office.

Army Intelligence: "Randolph Churchill was a gambler, alcoholic and delusional, with all the mental health problems of the Churchill family. So the Churchill family were used to lying for Randolph and protecting his arse for years and years, and carried this on through the war like there was no tomorrow. Randolph Churchill was the disfunctional son of a disfunctional Jewish family. And his disfunctions bordered on the criminally dangerous.

"There's a room in Blenheim Palace called the Alibi Room – it's known criminal palance. It was where Mamaa Clementine used to greet the police whenever they came to interview her about her son, Randolph Churchill. Lady Clementine would send tea in for everybody then appear wringing her hands and stand under a large centrepiece painting of 'The Last Supper' and say: 'What can I do for you gentleman'.

"The police would look at her, and look at the painting of Jesus and his mates, and the whole scene would engender doubt in their mind that maybe they had made a mistake. With conflicting conviction, they would say: 'We want to talk to Randolph about this, and about that, and about this other thing', and Lady Clementine would respond: 'Well. It couldn't possibly be my son.' And then when the police proved it was her son, she would say: 'Oh my goodness me. I shall have to get his father, Winston Churchill, when he comes home from running the war, or organising this loan, or solving that strike, to have harsh words with Young Randolph. Thank you so much for coming. It's been so nice to see you' and then the maid would lead them out. Mr Thompson, Winston Churchill's bodyguard for over thirty years said: 'It was the most overworked room in the entire palace. It saw more traffic on a day-to-day basis than Winston's bathroom. Clementine never uttered a lie. All she did was raise doubt and the picture did the rest.'

---

[66] Wikipedia, paraphrased ever so slightly.

"'Alibi Room' is known criminal palance and is established criminal practise in the East End of London. There would be hundreds of such rooms similarly furnished in the Jewish houses in London."

Author: "CIA professors have them as sitting rooms in their homes, straight off the front door, 20 feet deep and wide, all in pale sage green with wingback chairs, net curtains nearly drawn, in New Haven Connecticut. We used to visit. The entire effect was: 'What the fuck is happening to me. I am swamped. I can't raise a radical thought, and I've forgotten what my agenda is. Might as well relax and wait for the scones. Not even the tea is going to lift me out of this one'. It was another half hour in the car before the effect had worn off. Those mothers simply hated us dragging their daughters around and if we got onto any topic of merit the conversation was graciously shifted sideways to some hardly met relative. It was enough to make Freud break out in a rash."

Army Intelligence: "Freud was the rash! The only reason the Yugolsavs tolerated Randolph at all was that his many psychological disfunctions made him quite brave. He showed no fear. He wasn't afraid of anything because he had no capacity to fear. He didn't even believe there was anything he'd strike in Yugoslavia that couldn't be sorted out by Mamaa over the telephone.

"Mamaa was Clementine – the illegitimate wife of the illegitimate Winston Churchill. She was the dominant Jewish mother and called the shots in the whole Churchill family. Her father was Churchill's banker and Churchill was deeply in debt, some of it from Randolph.

"When the Yugoslavs told Randolph Churchill the SS were about to raid them, he said: 'Oh good. I've got a bone to pick with those chappies. Somebody dropped a bomb that wrecked my washing a month ago.' And he would jump up and try and rush out the door.

"The Yugolsavs loved it and they'd say to each other: 'Randolph Churchill wanted to kill the SS because the Luftwaffe wrecked his washing'."

Author: "Ha ha ha ha ha ha ha ha ha ha ha ha."

Army Intelligence: "Yeah, it is quite funny. The reason Randolph was sent to Yugoslavia to tiptoe between all the tulips was the Churchills were convinced he was going to die. The thing that they never envisaged was that he would come back alive and with a new bunch of even more terrible friends than he had to start with. These included the Ustashi – Draza Mihailovich's crowd – and he'd invite them all to lunch at the Mayfair Grill, chisel off every single one of them, and borrow another twenty or forty quid at the end.

"Often the Yugos would come to London to stage some sort of attrocity or reprisal and found themselves invited to lunch by Randolph, waylaid – then he'd steal their war chest, so they'd get packed off on the bus with a wave and a pat on the back, and they'd have to go out to their maisonette in Surbiton and save up for another six months to return to London.

"So there's a little bit of truth in saying that 'Randolph Churchill was actually in the business of making sure nothing happened in London' while he free-wheeled over the top of them like a hungry love-sick vulture.

"When Randolph Churchill tried to bludge off Martin Bormann in London, Martin said:

'No. Bugger-off. I'm told you are a bad egg'."

Author: "So that was after the war when Martin Bormann was in London undercover complete with plastic surgery, a change of accent, and a change of name. After this incident he moved to the English countryside as Herr Martin Schuler, faked his death in 1956 and moved to Paraguay, where he died in February 1959."

Army Intelligence: "Yes.

"Randolph Churchill was one of the few people who knew of Martin Bormann's identity. Randolph was out with his handler one day when they ran into Bormann in London. Bormann always brought everything he needed, and Randolph didn't. Randolph asked Bormann for some change and that's when Bormann said: 'No. Bugger-off. I'm told you are a bad egg' and Randolph replied: 'Well there's no need to be so direct about it'.

"Randolph's handler had to try and keep shtuk about it, but it was an embarrassing situation, and Randolph used to thrive on other people's embarrassment – being a virtual Jew.

Author: "'Shtuk' is German Yiddish – Jargon for 'shut up to keep out of trouble'."

Army Intelligence: "One of Yugolsavia's problems, militarily, was that they had huge amounts of equipment given to them in military aid by every military organisation that ever existed . . . and none of it worked together. They had every tank in the world. Their Air Force was an absolute logistic disaster. They had every calibre of anti-aircraft gun and every engine that was ever manufactured anywhere on the globe. They had rifles from everywhere and ammunition that didn't fit the guns.

"Yugolsavia acquired everything from everywhere, but none of it fitted. Their museums looked like children's fantasy grounds in places where no adult existed."

Author: "Chaos. So that's why they had casing and boring gear for making rifle barrels up in the hills. They actually needed it."

Army Intelligence: "Yeah. They also sold Marshall Tito's DC6 to Zaire because it was the only country silly enough to buy it . . . that was in the 1970s, before Tito died . . . Yugoslavia was the Burma of Southern Europe – without the drugs.

Author: "Desperate chaos."

Army Intelligence: "There was a guy in the New Zealand Reform Party called Gordon Coates and he'd been a Major in the NZRB (Rifle Brigade) in WWI returning to a heroes welcome with the Military Cross and bar. He was good on a horse and spoke Maori, so they made him Postmaster-General, Minister of Justice, Telegraphs (remember when the telegraph poles were going up all over the country), Public Works, Railways, then Minister of Native Affairs in March 1921.

"He could do all this, but Gordon Coates used to dread dealing with his gum-digger constituents because he regarded them as being worse than any German fortification on the Western Front. They always wanted their grandmother or aunty brought out from Yugoslavia, or their grandson or nephew sent back, and in Australia they were even worse."

Author: "Yeah. He became Prime Minister (1925–28) after William Ferguson Massey (1912–25) wiped out 22 per cent of Samoa's population with the Spanish Flu, which Massey delivered personally in 1918."

Army Intelligence: "Right. Well, you used to see Yugos driving down Hay Street in Kalgoorlie, in the gold mining area, in the middle of Aussie carrying a 25-pound gun and a limber (ammunition carrier) on the back of a Holden station wagon, and they were going out to practice invading Yugoslavia.

"It was a standard police joke in Australia: 'If any Squareheads blow themselves up, don't bring them in for post mortem, just kick them down a hole . . . and don't forget to drop some shit on top of them'."

Author: "That shit would either be a wadi or some quicklime."

Army Intelligence: "Yep. All the Yugo Squareheads used to play chicken with anthills. They'd all go and put a stick of gelignite into the anthill and the last one to run had the biggest balls. They were all absolutely pissed as newts and they'd try and get me play with them.

"I'd say: 'Na, I'm too fucking scared and if I played it with you, they'd be nobody to put you in the sugar bag afterwards'.

"Then when I was back in Australia in the late 1970s, I noticed in the newspaper that a ship went from Australia to Yugoslavia and was attacked off the coast. They all got massacred."

Pamela Digby Churchill

Army Intelligence: "Churchill's son was an absolute lunatic. If the war hadn't come along, he would have been committed. His first wife, Pamela Digby, was a woman Churchill involved in Black Operations at a very early stage. She was a slut to all and sundry and ended up marrying Averell Harriman. Pamela was widely regarded as being Churchill's favourite slut who married her way into U.S. citizenship, then Clinton made her Ambassador to France. She had a stroke in the Paris Ritz rooftop swimming pool, then President Bill Clinton sent Air Force One to pick up the body – so they were close.

The TATLER
22 June 1938

Pamela advertising the Churchill Club.

Churchill's Girl: "Apart from becoming leaders of their respective countries, Winston Churchill and Bill Clinton have something else in common. They both owed a lot to Pamela Digby, one of the 20th-century's consumate courtesans. Born in 1920, Digby realised early on that powerful men were her passport to an exciting life. She married Churchill's son, Randolph, becoming confidante to his father, Winston Churchill. Her many affairs with high-ranking US officers were a source of invaluable information to the British PM. The marriage fell apart, but Digby had found her niché. Over the years she moved from Paris to New York to Washington, sleeping with the rich and powerful. Eventually she married an influential Democrat and steered a young Bill Clinton to power. In return, Clinton made her US ambassador to France [the most sought after foreign posting], a position she held until her death in 1997."[67]

---

[67] 'Churchill's Girl, The life of Pamela Digby, one of the 20th-century's consummate courtesans', *ABC*, documentary, 21 June 2007, Greg Hassall, reviewer, smh.com.au.

Winston Spencer-Churchill's Birth

Pamela Digby Churchill spent more time with her father-in-law, Winston Churchill, than with her husband, Randolph Churchill. She spent 1939–41 with Randolph, and 1939–47 with Winston Churchill at 10 Downing Street, meeting and greeting, and sleeping there. During air-raids, she even slept in the bunks with Winston Churchill. As Pamela put it:

"One Churchill above me, the other inside"[68] – both were Winston.

Pamela working in the Churchill Club.

Pamela Digby loved powerful men, and rich and powerful men. She also loved sex and had no problem taking the initiative. As legend goes, as long as you didn't vomit, or vomit on her, you could get laid. You didn't even have to speak – no need for chat up lines. This was so well known, the Scots used to have bets and they'd send one of theirs down to London, to the Churchill Club, to see if he could bed Pamela Churchill without saying anything, or give himself away with his accent. He won the bet. Even the American air gunners managed it.

Pamela was Winston Churchill's favourite from the time they met. He took a real shine to her. They shared 10 Downing Street (10 May 1940–27 July 1945) and she ran Winston's secrets gathering sex club – the Churchill Club – with great success and no complaints from her, or her customers.

LIFE
JANUARY 27, 1941 10
27 January 1941

Pamela and 20-month-old Winston in 1942 during a rare walk in London.

---

[68] The Little Extras – The Society Divas, 'Pamela Churchill Harriman', Blair Schulman, www.divasthesite.com.

Pamela gave birth to Winston Spencer-Churchill on 10 October 1940. There is every chance Winston Spencer-Churchill is the son of Winston Churchill and not Randolph Churchill – and this was part of the reason for him abandoning his very sexual wife. Winston Spencer-Churchill III was rasied in Lord Beaverbrook's country home and by 4 years-old (1944), she had shipped him further away to boarding school in Switzerland. That also prevented him as a five-year-old from seeing his mother pregnant and meeting his newborn brother.

From 1945, Randolph Churchill spent his later years like his namesake grandfather – wandering aimlessly around the fringes of Parliament, and like his father, refusing elevation to 'Duke of London'. That would have raised the 'Grandson of King Edward VII' spectre. Pamela applied for divorce in December 1946 citing abandonment. It was granted in 1947.

Bill Clinton's Birth

Pamela's missing years are from the end of WWII (8 May 1945) and when Winston left 10 Downing Street (27 July 1945), to early 1947. This provided enough time for her to conceive, carry a child to term, give birth, and recover her figure – all within the timeframe of the conception (13 November 1945 ± 18 days = 26 October–1 December 1945), birth (19 August 1946) and transporting to America their newborn son – Bill Clinton . . . a.k.a. William J. Churchill; Bill Churchill Rex; Bill FitzChurchill; William James FitzChurchill; William James Churchill Windsor; William James Saxe Coburg Gotha; Prince Billy Rex; Winston Churchill III's half or full brother . . . and the Queen's half-brother (another one).

And when a mother was found for Billy Rex in America in the name of Virginia Dell Cassidy (1923–94), she (23) abandoned the child to her grocery store running parents and went to study nursing, as she had never been a mother and didn't know what to do. So Eldridge and Edith Cassidy (a nurse and anesthetist) raised Billy Churchill Rex and Virginia Dell Cassidy didn't return from nursing school until 1950, when Billy was 3 or 4. Almost immediately she married the alcoholic wife beating car salesman Roger Clinton, and they moved from Hope to Hot Springs, Arkansas. So it was out of the frying pan and into the fire.

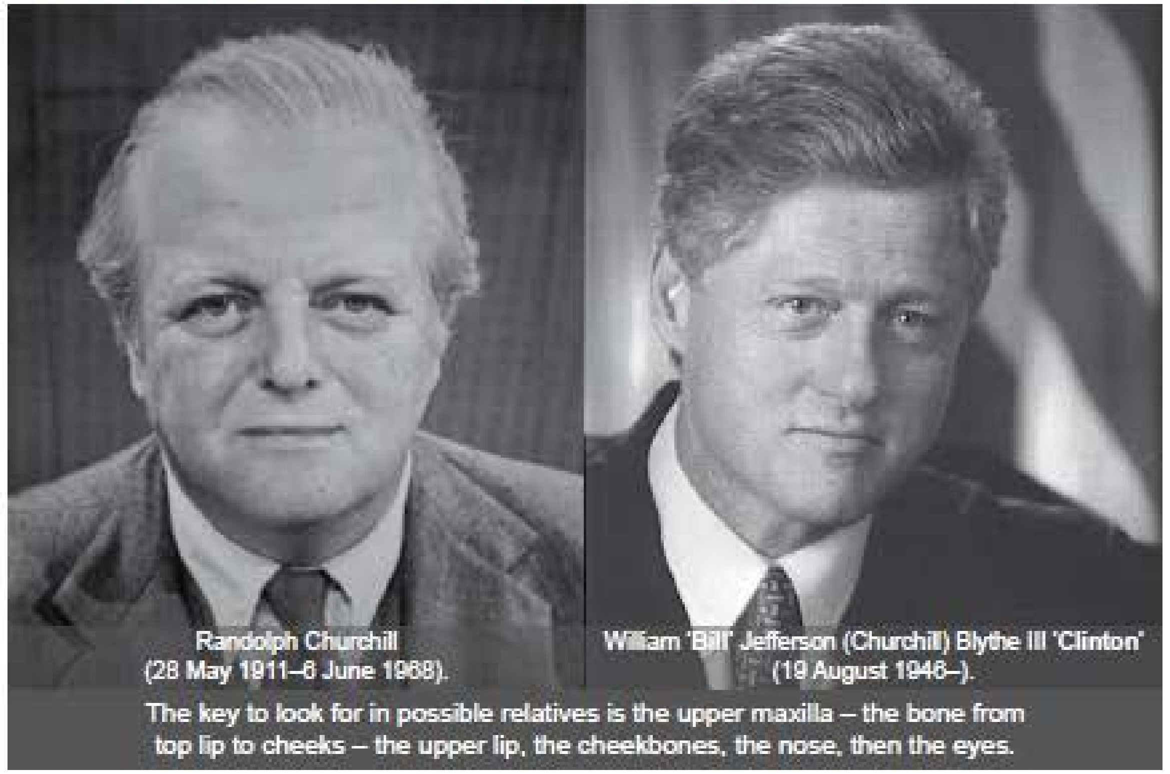
Randolph Churchill (28 May 1911–6 June 1968).

William 'Bill' Jefferson (Churchill) Blythe III 'Clinton' (19 August 1946–).

The key to look for in possible relatives is the upper maxilla – the bone from top lip to cheeks – the upper lip, the cheekbones, the nose, then the eyes.

Billy Rex was known as William Jefferson Blythe III, then chose the name William Jefferson Clinton – which is not that far off from Winston Leonard Spencer Churchill. Closer still is 'William Clinton' and 'Winston Churchill'.

Clinton left office with an approval rating of 66%
– the highest end of office rating of any president since WWII.[69]
Churchill left office with an approval rating of 83%.
It never fell below 78% during WWII.

A high-ranking British son-of-a-king having an illegitimate child to a British honey-trap and shipping the child off to another country to be raised, given a confusing background like Hitler's, promoted, funded, given every opportunity, backed, then underwritten, and being immune to the courts, was well within the realms of S.O.E. Britain and America. This is standard Illuminati practise – especially removing the child from the biological mother before the age of 12. This renders the child unemotional about killing. Added to this, Billy Rex was removed from his surrogate mother until he was 4 years old.

Mossad asset Polish Jews can suck like a hoover.

Queen Elizabeth II is also considered to be the daughter of Winston Churchill, as King George VI was considered 'too dumb to breed' – he had an IQ of 67, 1 point above retarded – so Queen Elizabeth II had a vested interest in her half brother Bill Clinton not being impeached . . . so he wasn't. Plus the Monica Lewinsky (22)/ Bill Clinton (49) affair in 1995 was a Mossad set-up. After Billy Rex's successful 1998 re-election, the House voted to impeach Clinton, but it all went flat when his half-sister, Queen Elizabeth II said: **"House, I own you, so No"**.

Queen Elizabeth II with her half-brother
Billy Churchill Rex Clinton,
Buckingham Palace, 14 December 2000.
Hillary Clinton is QEII's sister-in-law.

---

[69] 'Historical Presidential Approval Ratings – End Of Term Plus Current Ratings', Uspolitics.about.com.

Prince William Churchill's Checkered Rise to President of America

Randolph Churchill very happy at the 4 October 1939 wedding . . . Pamela Digby Churchill disinterested.

During this time, at the end of WWII, Pamela Digby Churchill conceived a child with her father-in-law, Winston Churchill, gave birth, and shipped the child to America with her wartime lover, Averell Harriman.

Pamela Digby was from an ancient family with a bit of Yid in her. Her aunty was the Countess of Bradford, Lady in Waiting to Queen Mary, who married King George V, son of King Edward VII. So with Pamela and Winston, it was still "all in the family".

Pamela had wanted to marry Edward R. Murrow, a US radio broadcaster in England who began his broadcasts: "This is London". But Murrow's wife got pregnant on his last trip back to the States. She had a career job and they had tried for ten years and finally had a son in 1945.[70]

Edward R. Murrow: "This is London".

Averell Harriman was a millionaire heir to the Union Pacific railroad fortune and President Roosevelt's special liaison to Britain. He was the Banker you sent who wasn't a Jew, but had all the traits of a Jew and whom you could trust as a Jew. So he became a diplomat working in London developing the Lend-Lease program that sent supplies and weapons from the U.S. to Britain and the Soviet Union during WWII.

William Samuel Paley, on TIME cover, 19 September 1938.

William Averell Harriman in 1943.

---

[70] Edward Roscoe Murrow (25 April 1908–27 April 1965) was born to poor Quaker farmers in North Carolina. He legally changed his name from 'Egbert' to 'Edward' in his second University year where he excelled in academics and sports. He got his degree in speech in 1930, then moved to New York City where he helped prominent displaced Jewish scholars from Germany (1932–35). He married Janet Huntington Brewster on 12 March 1935 and their only child, a son, was born ten years later in 1945.

During her marriage to Winston, Pamela also had an affair with publisher of the *New York Herald Tribune*, 'Jock' Whitney (1904–82). John Hay Whitney was also the U.S. Ambassador to the United Kingdom (1957–61).

Pamela Beryl Digby Churchill
(20 March 1920–5 Feb. 1997).

Randolph Churchill
(28 May 1911–6 June 1968).

Pamela Churchill in 1943.

Winston Spencer-Churchill III in 1943.

Pamela Beryl Digby Churchill Hayward Harriman
(20 March 1920–5 February 1997)

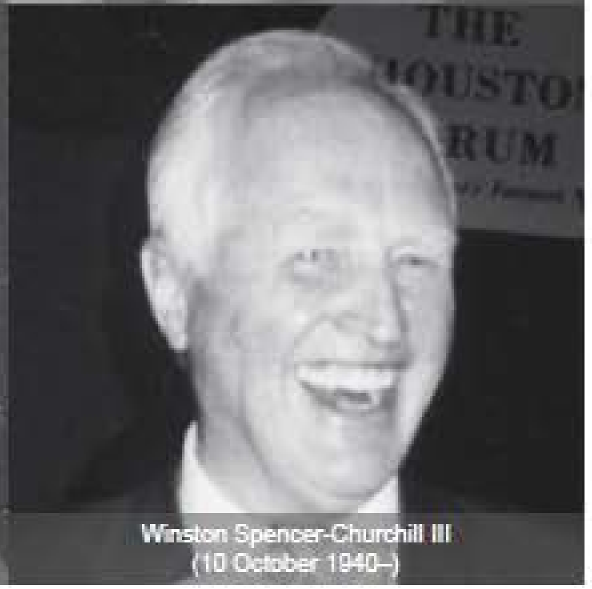
Winston Spencer-Churchill III
(10 October 1940–)

William 'Bill' Jefferson (Churchill) Blythye III 'Clinton'
(19 August 1946–).

Virginia Clinton Kelley
(6 June 1923–6 January 1994).

Prince William James Churchill
a.k.a. William Jefferson Blythe III.

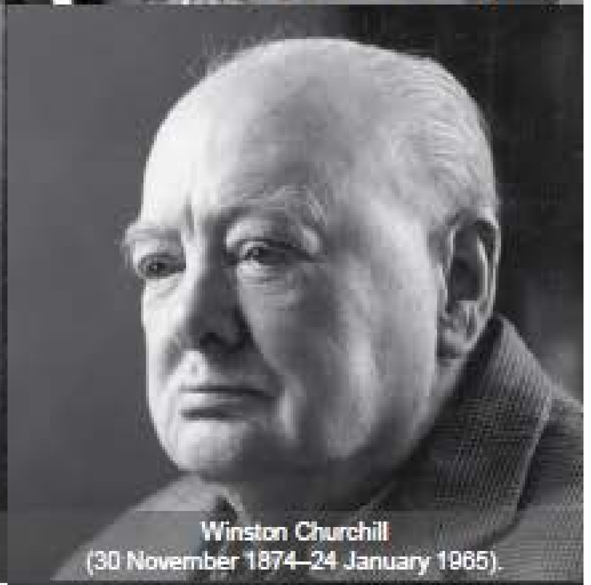
Winston Churchill
(30 November 1874–24 January 1965).

President Clinton
(20 January 1993–20 January 2001).

Prime Minister Churchill
(1940–45, 1951–55) astonishing.

Playboy 'Jock' Hay Whitney, on TIME cover, 27 March 1933.

'Jock' Hay Whitney in LIFE magazine, 1956.

Averell was the wartime US Ambassador to the Soviet Union (23 Oct. 1943–24 Jan. 1946) and the US Ambassador to Britain (25 Jan.–6 Oct. 1946) . . . so he had held one of the most powerful non-combat overseas positions.

For Averell, child shipping was no problem. He had access to the people, the ships, and the paperwork, and had enough influence to make it all go quietly. In Britain and Russia, he had the U.S. President's stamp and seal, as well as compliance from the Jews.

By 1946, Averell owed Winston Churchill and Pamela Digby Churchill a whole host of favours – financial, sexual, and silence –over his long standing relationship with Pamela Churchill in regards to his second wife, Marie Norton Whitney Harriman. It was also her second marriage. As it turned out they remained married for almost 40 years (c. 1930–70) until Marie Harriman died, then Pamela stepped in and married Averell Harriman, isolated his children, turned Averell against them, and inherited his entire US$110 million fortune, which she then used to fund her son, Prince Billy Rex Churchill Clinton, as the Democrat Candidate, and then into office as President of the United States of America (1993–2001).

Averell Harriman and Winston Churchill meeting Moltov in 1943.

Churchill still with some shag in him.

Prince Billy Rex Churchill's sister, Queen Elizabeth II had something to do with this. She could influence Court rulings in America . . . afterall, it was her British Plantation.

Pamela was running the Churchill Club in Grovesnor Square and Winston introduced her to everyone who walked in the door at 10 Downing Street. Within a week of Harriman arriving in October 1943, they had met, and the chemistry was immediate.

Those who go to private schools and inherit money love a good slut. Pamela Digby was an excellent slut, one of the best of World War II and Averell Harriman was the heir to a railroad fortune and had the best of private education.

Another of her consorts during WWII, William S. Paley said: "She is the greatest courtesan of the century". Spymaster: "All you had to do was touch her breasts and she was yours."

Averell was already married, so he didn't want to have a child, but he was quite willing to transport the grandson of a king – a prince – back to America, even if he was illegitmate. Afterall, America has a history of raising illegitimate royals, and it's nice to be part of history.

The child – a boy, between Pamela Digby Churchill and her father-in-law, former Prime Minister Winston Churchill – was used as a Chequer/ Checker to cement British U.S. relations for the Marshall Plan and the Cold War. Chequers was where the children of Prime Ministers, illegitimate royals, some royals, and nobles are born. "Oh, yes, my parents had me born at Chequers!"

As the U.S. presidency always goes to the candidate with the most British Royal blood, and Winston was the son of King Edward VII and Jennie Jerome Churchill, there was every chance that this child would become a U.S. president . . . as long as it could deliver a speech. That's all it takes.

Pamela conceived the checker child and sent it to America to be raised there to become the Pirate Captain of the British Plantation, otherwise known as the President of the United States of America – a place with a constitution for its Federal States, but absolutely none for its citizens.

The Queen of England revelled in the fact that so few of the U.S. Presidents were actually born in America, or were who they said they were. Very few American Presidents made it to that position under their real name.

This dates back to at least President Abraham Lincoln (1861–65), whose father, Thomas Lincoln, never existed. Abraham was actually A.A. Springs son and seemed to spend more time sleeping with his male bodyguard, than with his wife, Mary Todd. This also made Lincoln easier to control. Despite his wife coming from a wealthy slave holding family, the slaves had become too expensive to keep as the combined harvester and mechanical reaper had both been invented in 1834, so he had to free the slaves (1863) as it was costing his wife's family a small fortune. The slaves had been an increasing burden for 29 years by the time Abraham Lincoln declared the Emancipation Proclamation.

In early 1947, it was leaked that Pamela had an abortion in Switzerland, but it was more likely cover for her birth a year earlier, and plastic surgery to make her look better, and different from her exiled son, Prince Billy Churchill. Still, she looked more like him than Billy's supposed mother in America, Virginia Clinton Kelley.

Pamela went to Switzerland, officially for an abortion, in 1952/53, but to whom?. Her partner at the time, Gianni Agnelli, claimed it wasn't his. It's just as likely she has some more plastic surgery on top. It wasn't her first or last time, and her friends used to say that she had the best plastic surgeon on the planet. What do you expect – it was MI-6 in Switzerland.

The Arms Dealer and MI-6 agent, Adnan "Mr Fixit" Khashoggi, paid for her plastic surgery. The Jewish Elizabeth Taylor went along for the same treatment. Both Pamela and

Elizabeth were MI-6 Agents – courtesans using feminine wiles – so both worked overseas for the Queen.

Liz Taylor also organised the plastic surgery in Switzerland for Michael Jackson and his genitalia, so that Macaulay Culkin's description of Michael's genitalia in the American Courts for Michael's paedophile trial wouldn't match. Jackson (1958–2009) and Culkin (b. 1980) had been friends from when Culkin was 10 or so, and had appeared in one of Jackson's videos. Officially Michael Jackson was doing concerts in Budapest, but he failed to show and went for the Swiss surgery – more of how a Black man becomes a White woman, and British Jewish MI-6 agents become American Goyim fantasies.

Jackson said: "I want to look like her →."

Henry Graham Greene OM, CH) was an English author, playwright and literary critic who delved into the ambivalent moral and political issues of the modern world as only a bi-polar, Catholic-convert, MI-6 Agent involved in espionage and international politics could do.

Elizabeth Taylor, daughter of Jewish American Art Dealers setting up in London – nice arms, dealers.

Graham Greene OM, CH
(2 October 1904–3 April 1991)
MI-6 Catholic paedophile.

His books were published (1929–2005), the first, last, and more notable titles being *The Man Within* (1929), *Brighton Rock* (1938), *The Confidential Agent* (1939), *The Power and the Glory* (1940), *The Ministry of Fear* (1943), *The Heart of the Matter* (1948), *The Third Man* (1949), *The End of the Affair* (1951), *Loser Takes All* (1955), *The Quiet American* (1955), *Our Man in Havana* (1958), *The Human Factor* (1978), and *No Man's Land* (2005).

Graham Greene was also part of an MI-6 paedophile ring and produced a magazine for the group. In one article, Graham Greene wrote about what he hoped to do to Elizabeth Taylor (b. 1932) who was a child of 12 or 13 at the time. This was deemed 'sexually offensive' and Graham Greene was charged with alluding to Elizabeth Taylor in an indescent manner. To avoid prosecution, MI-6 swished him out of England. They performed a Polanski and sent him to political hotspots like Sierra Leone, where he worked for MI-6 during World War II, and to Vietnam, Kenya, the Belgian Congo, Liberia, Cuba, and Mexico.[71]

Post-war, Graham Greene was in and out of Switzerland like a robber's dog. He was rumoured to have moved currency in and out for MI-6, but it could have been drugs. Switzerland is the home of all drug transactions – it's the point where they are set up from, and ultimately banked. Switzerland then, was even more gutless than it is now. It was also the place where the British author, paedophile, and MI-6 agent, Graham Greene, ultimately bought the farm . . .

Winston Spencer Churchill (23) then married (July 1964) Mary 'Minnie' Caroline d'Erlanger (25), the daughter of the banker, Sir Gerard John Regis d'Erlanger. They had four children: Randolph Leonard Spencer Churchill (1965–); Jennie Spencer Churchill (1966–); Marina Spencer Churchill (1967–); and John Gerard Averell 'Jack' Spencer Churchill (1975–).

Soraya Khashoggi (born Sandra Daly, England, c. 1942) then divorced the MI-6 Arms Dealer Adnan Khashoggi ('Spoonmaker') in 1982 and grew enormously fat, and now lives in a brick terrace near a railway line and works as a florist. The mother of nine has confirmed that her daughter, Petrina, was sired by the disgraced former Tory Minister, Jonathan Aitken.

Winston Spencer Churchill also had an affair with Soraya Khashoggi, ex-wife of the MI-6 Dealer – the same Adnan Khashoggi who had funded his mother's abortion/plastic surgery in Switzerland in 1953. This caused Winston Spencer Churchill's divorce in 1997.

Winston Spencer Churchill then married Luce Danielson (Belgian-born jewellery maker) in 1997. Pamela's will (with Averell Harriman's US$110m fortune) shared Winston Spencer Churchill's inheritance of US$10 million with his first wife, Minnie Caroline d'Erlanger, as announced on 18 February 1997.

Two years prior, Winston Spencer Churchill scammed £12.25 million from the National Lottery funds to secure his grandfather's papers for Britain, but most historians assumed the country already owned them. Many believed this was to pay off Winston's gambling debts.

Pamela Churchill Harriman then left her most valuable asset, the £50m Van Gogh 'White Roses' to the National Gallery of Art in Washington. On permanent loan, this is called 'using a counter', which Prince Billy Churchill Clinton used to guarantee for some of his transactions.

So this was all an in-house project to make the insiders rich over generations. Inheritance certainly keeps the traps shut and the truth neigh impossible to get from an interview. We have to wait for the deathbed confessions, and that's a 50:50.

Pamela had been married to Randolph Churchill (1939–46), changed to Roman Catholicism, then married Leland Hayward (1960–71), then Averell Harriman (1971–86). Her profession was noted as Socialite Diplomat. She became the 58th U.S. Ambassador to

---

[71] The Henry Graham Greene Papers, Harry Ransom Center, University of Texas, Austin, reviewed by Ousseynou Sy, 17 March 2009, paraphrased to get to the point.

France (1993–97) under her son, President Bill Clinton (1993–2001). As Ambassador to France, she signed the Dayton Agreement in 1995, which meant that NATO has no responsibility to arrest war criminals, and countries do not have to hand over those indicted for war crimes, and any excuse is a good excuse, and if NATO comes across an indicted war criminal, they have the option to turn around due to local custom, conflicting arrest warrants, or lack of fuel.

Pamela Harriman's signing of the Dayton Accord (negotiated by Richard Holbrooke at the Wright-Patterson Air Force Base, Nov. 2005) meant that all the indicted war criminals Radovan Karadžić and Ratko Mladić had to do was withdraw from public life, not give interviews, not publish anything, and they were free men who spent their time whiling away the hours in open-air restaurants in Split and Dubrovnik . . . and Richard Holbrooke promised Karadžić freedom from prosecution by the ICTY . . . and his Serbian Democratic Party could take part in elections . . . So there's a rift between politics and distracted fashionistas!

Some things just don't work, and Pamela Harriman as U.S. Ambassador to France was one of them. As a result, she was rewarded at death by all the rest of the sabotuers.

"Pamela Harriman died on 5 February 1997 at the American Hospital, Neuilly-sur-Seine, after suffering a cerebral haemorrhage while swimming at the Paris Ritz [rooftop pool] the day before. The morning after her death, President Jacques Chirac of France placed the Grand Cross of the Légion d'honneur on her flag-draped coffin. She was the first female foreign diplomat to receive this honour. [She had born a child to the son of a King.] President Clinton, in further recognition of her contributions and significance, [his mother, financer, Yugoslav co-sabotuer, and freedom fighter for genocidal criminals] dispatched Air Force One to return her body to the United States and spoke movingly at her [State] funeral at the Washington National Cathedral in Washington, D.C. She was buried 14 February 1997 at Arden, the Harriman estate near New York."

Two weeks later, President Clinton was spilling his monkey on Monica Lewinsky's blue dress: "Ms. Lewinsky turned over a navy blue dress that she said she had worn during a sexual encounter with the President on February 28, 1997. According to Ms. Lewinsky, she noticed stains on the garment the next time she took it from her closet. From their location, she surmised that the stains were the President's semen."[72]

The Duchess of Windsor died on 24 April 1986 and Pamela Dibgy Churchill Hayward Harriman bought a lot of the Duke and Duchess of Windsor's memorabilia, including clothes, and even their jewell-covered dildo. Pamela stored them in her Paris apartment, died in Paris on 5 February 1997, then Dodi Al Fayed purchased Pamela's apartment, with everything in it – lock stock and dildo. His partner, Princess Diana, then took a fancy to the Duke and Duchess of Windsor's memorabilia and all of it was transferred to a mansion in Paris. That's where Dodi and Diana were heading to on the night they were killed – 31 August 1997 – six months after Pamela Digby had died.

So in 1997, Prince President Bill Clinton lost his biological mother (Pamela Digby), and his neice (half-sister QEII's daughter-in-law, Princess Diana) in six months. At the same time, the House of Representatives was trying to impeach Prince Billy Rex Clinton (1997–19 December 1998–12 February 1999) for the Monica Lewinsky Affair . . . At least two out of three of these were Mossad operations.[73]

---

[72] Starr Report, Narrative, I. Nature of President Clinton's Relationship with Monica Lewinsky, 1. Lewinsky 8/6/98 GJ at 31-32, 39-40; DB Photos 0004 (photo of dress). Pamela was also Commander of the Order of Arts & Letters.

[73] Monica Lewinsky graduated with an MA in Social Psychology from the London School of Economics, which is where MI-6 trains its foreign saboteurs. Her thesis was 'In Search of the Impartial Juror: An Exploration of the Third-person effect and Pre-Trial Publicity'. The Lewinsky Affiar was initiated, operated, and protected by Israel. Monica was a Polish Jew and when the Mossad rings, all they want to know is "How high do I jump?" Monica Lewinsky was a Mossad asset. Further proof came when Israel announced it was looking after her phone security.

Gianni Agnelli in 1940
(12 March 1921–24 January 2003).

Pamela Churchill became known for her attention to detail with men, despite her affairs within affairs – 'overlapping'. She paid extremely close attention to his desires, preferences and needs, and went to any lengths necessary to satisfy him during the affair. It was a Jewish trait, well bred and supported throughout the British aristocracy where over half of all the dukedoms are descended from the concubines of Kings – sluts royalty took a fancy too.

Royals also came from money
and went to a private school.

After her divorce from Randolph Churchill in 1947, Pamela moved to Paris, and in 1948 began her five-year-long affair with Gianni Agnelli (1948–52), the head of Fiat, who controlled 4.4% of Italy's GNP, with a dress sense that influenced both Italian and international men's fashion. He was considered the most powerful businessman in Europe, latter-day Renaissance prince, de facto king of Italy, legendary playboy, and the It Guy.

So there are three missing years in Pamela's life, May/July 1945 to 1946/48.

Pamela was content being the mother of a prince and heir to the United States presidency, and described her time in Paris with Agnelli as the happiest in her life. It's not often that a Jewish slut/ concubine/ agent forms an attachment, but she did. Taking care of his every want and need, she (32) found Gianni (31) in bed with the younger woman, Anne-Marie d'Estainville (17) and threw a rare fit.

Pamela Digby: "Speaking of chases. I remember one night when I came home to find Gianni in bed with a 17-year-old Anne Marie d'Estainville. Such a lovely girl. Well I just hit the ceiling. I chased them all the way right out of the house and they got into his Lancia and just roared away then the phone rang in the middle of the night they had been driving along the Lower Corniche and, you know, Gianni had been doing cocaine and lots of drinking and just smashed into a delivery truck and everyone crawled away except for Gianni, and finally the police came along and took him to the hospital, and his jaw was broken, and his right leg was crushed. It took him months to recover, months."[74]

Pamela then nursed him through his injuries, which was nice, but she soon became pregnant. Agnelli doubts it was his and that was when she had an abortion in Switzerland in late 1952/ early 1953. Italian-American tastemaker and New York socialite, Princess Marella Caracciolo di Castagneto (26) then became pregnant to Agnelli in 1953. Pamela Churchill (33) ended the affair. Then the defacto King of Italy, Gianni Agnelli and Princess Marella were married on 19 November 1953, until his death in 2003.

So that was true love.

Gianni Agnelli marrying Princess Marella Caracciolo di Castagneto in 1953.

---

[74] *Full Circle*, Charles L. Mee.

Princess Marella and Pamela Churchill were both part of Truman Capote's famous circle of 'Swans'– wealthy, stylish, and well-married women who had created themselves. Others were Babe Paley, Gloria Guinness, C. Z. Guest, and Slim Hawks/Keith. Princess Marella was the youngest of the swinging set and made it to the Vogue List Hall of Fame as portrayed by Isabella Rossellini in the 2006 film 'Infamous'.

Pamela Churchill then had an overlapping affair with Prince Aly Khan, son of Aga Khan III, the head of the Ismaili Muslims, and the father of Aga Khan IV. Prince Ali Solomone Aga Khan (1911–60) lived in Paris, and became Pakistan's U.N. Ambassador (1958–60) and vice president of the United Nations General Assembly. He was best known as a racehorse owner, jockey, and third husband of American movie star, Rita Hayworth. They married on 27 May 1949 in Cannes, France when Rita was two months pregnant. Rita had previously been married to Orson Welles. It was his second marriage. At the wedding "500 guests from the United States and Europe feasted on 50 pounds of caviar, 600 bottles of Champagne and other gourmet delights around a swimming pool scented with 200 gallons of eau de Cologne". They separated in 1951 – due to his extramarital affairs with Pamela Churchill and others – and divorced in April 1953. Rita Hayworth got US$1.5 million in 1954, plus $108,000 a year for their daughter, Princess Yasmin.

Pamela Churchill learnt from this and tried to bag herself a very rich man.

Our informant in the Fleet Air Arm reports that Pamela Churchill and Queen consort Elizabeth were photographed sitting with one of the French Baron Rothschilds overlooking one of their newly liberated vineyards in France in 1946. The vineyards had just been handed back to him by the Germans, and the French government had just removed any charge on the properties, and that was what Elizabeth was there for. They were obviously revelling in the irony of getting their land back and Baron Rothschild would have been saying to them: "We would still be sitting here if Hitler had won".

Prince Aly Khan and Rita Hayworth marrying on 27 May 1949.

Their daughter, Princess Yasmin Aly Khan.

King George VI was nowhere to be seen. As ususal, he couldn't stay focussed long enough to be photographed in a conversation, plus he was sick from 1947 on. Like a lot of nutters, he smoked every cigarette he got his hands on. Someone would have told him while he was a mid-shipman in WWI that smoking would make him look older and wiser, but no one told him he had lung cancer and syphilis, not even his doctor, Porridge. My old man was his shearer back in NZ in '67 and he used to say: "Nothing lies like a Jewish cemetery".

So here's the official story . . . Gianni Agnelli and Prince Aly Khan were all in the same rich swinging set with the French banker, Baron Élie de Rothschild (1917–2007) who had spent time in Colditz and married his childhood sweetheart, Liliane Fould-Springer, by proxy in 1942. Despite the 12-year marriage, they introduced Pamela Churchill to Rothschild in 1954 when Liliane Rothschild was out of town. According to Baron Élie Rothschild: "She was sweet, charming and pretty. I wanted to go to bed with her and I did."

Pamela Churchill at the Corviglia Club in St Moritz, Switzerland in 1952.

Rothschild had been running the Château Lafite-Rothschild premier cru claret vineyard (1946–74) and taught Pamela how to talk wine and art. Liliane Rothschild quickly dispatched Pamela, or thought she did. Pamela (34) then put the hard word on Baron Élie de Rothschild (37) to marry her, which he didn't. The Rothschilds are discouraged from splitting their fortunes by divorce, so he supported her financially and their affair lasted from 1954 to 1958.

Pamela Churchill was a confidant woman, and not one to keep her purse in her pants, so she even cheated on the Baron Rothschild, running at least five lovers at the same time.

Pamela Churchill overlapped with the French writer, Maurice Druon,[75] and the billionaire Greek shipping tycoon, Stavros Niarchos (1909–96), a.k.a. "The Golden Greek" who built the first oil supertankers.

Maurice Druon in pro-Jewish-Resistance promo.

---

75 Maurice Samuel Roger Charles (Kessel) Druon (23 April 1918–14 April 2009) was the son of the promising Jewish Russian actor, Lazare Kessel, who committed suicide (20) when Maurice was 2 years old. His actor mother then married the wealthy bourgeois René Druon de Reyniac, who raised Maurice as his own son in Normandy. Maurice wrote the lyrics for the French Resistance anthem with his uncle, Joseph Kessel, at the Ashdown Park hotel in Surrey in May 1943, which was then whistled twice-daily over the BBC, with Duron as one of the whistlers. So Pamela Churchill just had to bed him. Whistling the first bars became a pro-resistance political statement in France and has since been officially inscribed as one of the three French national anthems. Uncle Kessel, whom he met in his teens, was a hard-drinking, hard-womanising drug addict journalist/ novellist who introduced Maurice to the Paris literary scene – free drink, women and drugs. President Georges Pompidou appointed Druon Minister of Culture (April 1973–May 1974). Druon then became Deputy for Paris (1978–81), member of the European Parliament (1979–80), then Secretary of the Académie Française (1985–99), where he was a romantic Anglophile, as he had been since rooting Pamela. In 1938, Maurice (20) married Geneviève Gregh (32), daughter of poet Fernand Gregh, then married (1968) Madeleine Marignac who survived him.

Stavros Niarchos (38) had married (1947) his third wife, Eugenia Livanos (21) and it was about eight years into the marriage. Stavros Niarchos then married Henry Ford II's daughter in Mexico in 1966. Charlotte Ford was three months pregnant. They divorced in 1967 and Stavros Niarchos returned to his wife, Eugenia Livanos – the Mexican marriage and divorce not recognised in Greece. Mrs Eugenia née Livanos Niarchos (44) then committed suicide with barbiturates in 1970 and Stavros married (1971) her sister, Athina, Marchioness of Blandford, who had been the first wife of Aristotle Onassis. She also died from an overdose, in 1974, so it was all ship-shape in the Greek wedding.

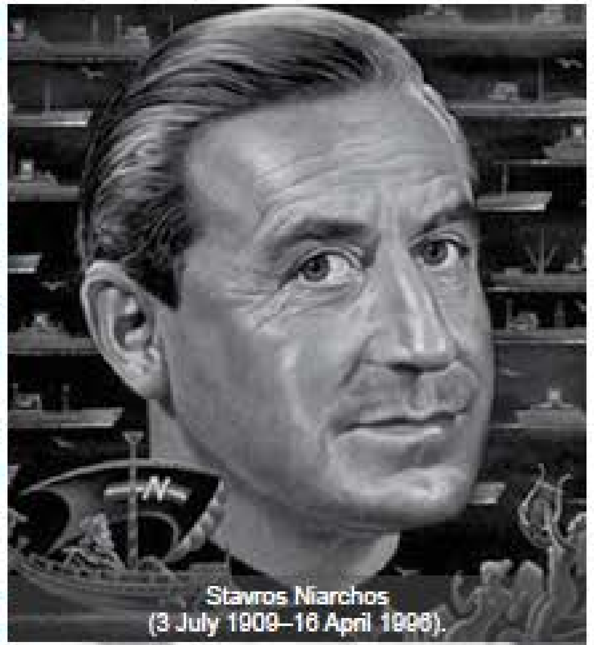
Stavros Niarchos
(3 July 1909–16 April 1996).

Niarchos and Onassis made out they were in competition, but they were secret partners in narcotics and used to wife swop – part of the reason why their wives died of overdoses in 1970 & 1974 – they knew too much – and in the super-rich swinging set, loose lips sink ships – and those ships were supertankers carrying a cover load of oil. If that got spilt, it would destroy the local environment and all the fisheries for decades . . . so 'No'.

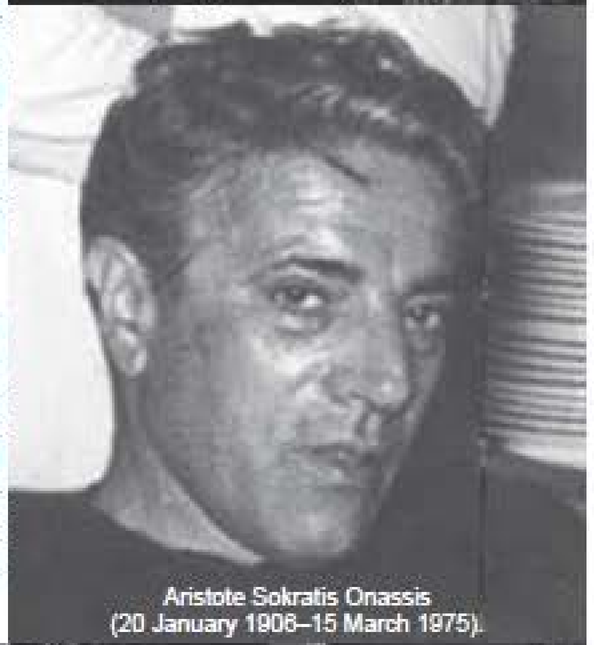
Aristote Sokratis Onassis
(20 January 1906–15 March 1975).

For added protection, Onassis hung out with Winston Churchill and used him to negotiate things – especially trouble. Onassis was raided over drugs at one point and it was Churchill who got him out of it. Churchill would say: "Oh no, I've known this man for years and years and years and it couldn't possibly be him". And that's all the average Pom wants to hear.

Onassis using Churchill as a diplomat for drug trafficking.

It works for the Military, works for Customs, works for Police, works for Foreign Affairs. All you've got to do is sound like you've got a plum wedged between your palate and speak with the right accent. If it's uttered in fluent Glaswegian, it don't work.

Pamela then had an affair with Marquis of Portago, Alfonso de Portago (1928–57). He was heir to one of the most respected titles in Spain and the Agnelli fortune, so a millionaire. Educated in France, he spoke four languages, and was a versatile athlete who competed in the Olympics, as well as being a racing driver "from Spain".

De Portago (20) barely knew American showgirl Carroll McDaniel (25ish), but they married in 1949 and had two children, in 1949 and 1954. They were getting a divorce so Alfonso could legitimize his invalid Mexican marriage to Dorian Leigh (who aborted their first baby in 1954). She then gave birth to their son, Kim, on 27 September 1955; but Alfonso was also dating actress Linda Christian (Tyrone Power's ex-wife) . . . and Pamela Churchill.

Alfonso de Portago was then killed in the Mille Miglia race in Italy on 8 May 1957 (too many women on his mind) which ended the race history and his divorce came through the following day. Carroll née McDaniel de Portago went on to marry New York Russian-American retail multi-millionaire Milton Petrie.

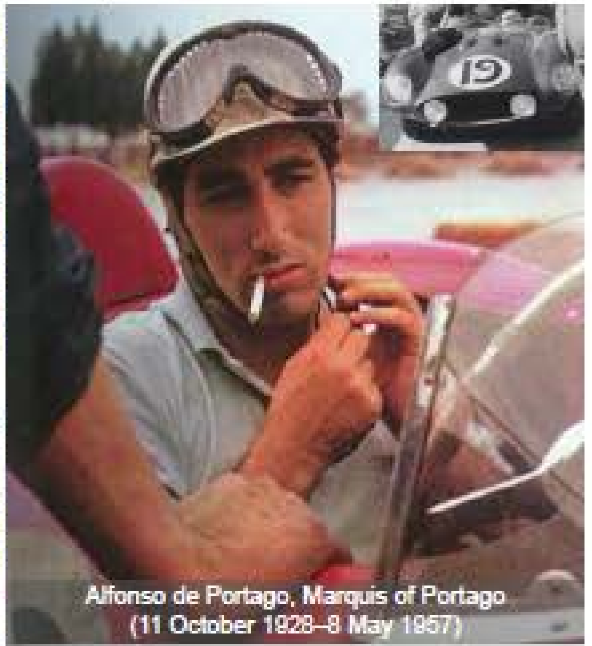
Alfonso de Portago, Marquis of Portago
(11 October 1928–8 May 1957)

In 1958, while Pamela Churchill was still mistress to Baron Élie de Rothschild (1954–58), she was introduced to Broadway producer Leland Hayward (1902–71). He had married the Texas debutante Lola Gibbs in 1921, divorced her in 1922, then remarried her and divorced again in 1934. Leland then married (1936) Margaret Sullavan (1909–60), his talented stage and screen actress client, the former Mrs. Henry Fonda. They had three children, Brooke Hayward who married Dennis Hopper (1961–69), Bridget (1939–60); and William (1941–2008, suicide). The Leland Hayward-Margaret Sullavan-Fonda disfunctional family life was immortalised in 'Haywire'. Then in 1938, swinging Hayward met the original "California Girl", Slim Hawks (wife of film director Howard Hawks), divorced in 1946 and married Slim in 1949. Slim then had a one-night stand with Frank Sinatra and a longer affair with the Jewish author and screenwriter, Peter Viertel, so that strained the marriage. Many of these swingers were either Jewish, or part Jewish.

Pamela Churchill (40) and Leland Hayward (57) married on 4 May 1960.

Julie Andrews does a Victorian wet teeshirt in the 1965 Sound of Music.

RING RING
Björn Benny & Agnetha Frida

ABBA makes their first call in 1972, Ring Ring.

MARRIAGE
APPLICATIONS

Averell Harriman (79) and Pamela Churchill Leland (51) marry at the Registry Office on 27 Sept. 1971.

So a year after meeting, Leland Hayward (57) proposed to Pamela Churchill (39) in 1959 and Pamela (40) was finally married again on 4 May 1960, in Carson City, Nevada, just hours after his divorce from Slim became final. Pamela Churchill (Mr Hayward No 5) was used to a lavish lifestyle and luckily Leland come into money producing the original stage production of 'The Sound of Music' (29 March 1965–like forever).

Eventually their spending had to be curtailed while the same audience waited for ABBA (June 1972–like forever). Leland Hayward had a series of strokes and died on 18 March 1971 and Pamela had to fork out her own money to pay for his final care and funeral expenses. So, as soon as he had carked it, she was broke and out for Husband No. 3 – like the following day.

Pamela Churchill Hayward had learnt off her husband that you could divorce and marry on the same day, so why not become a widow and find a new husband the next day.

Sure enough, she found one of her London wartime lovers Averell Harriman (1943–46) had just become a widower (1970), arranged to sit back-to-back with him at dinner, and six months later they married on 27 September 1971.

This was the same US Ambassador to Britain who had transported her son to America. Now she could find out what had become of the 24-year-old.

Pamela Digby Churchill Leland:
"Give me the detail. I want the detail."

Averell Harriman: "Well, we did what we could to preserve the grandson of King Edward VII. You might want to take a seat. This could take a while.

". . . Prince Billy Rex Churchill Clinton (18) registered for the draft on September 8, 1964. He accepted all the contractual conditions and his Selective Service Number was 326 46 228. On November 17, 1964 he was classified for Student Deferment, 2-S.

"Before his senior year, in the summer of 1967, Prince Billy worked as an intern for Senator J. William Fulbright, the Democrat Senator for Arkansas from January 1945. He's still in office and it doesn't look like he's leaving anytime soon. As you know, Fulbright is of exceptional standing as he'd established the Fulbright Program in 1946. It's sponsored by the Bureau of Educational and Cultural Affairs of the United States Department of State and is effectively the Voice of America worldwide in 150 countries, so he had worldwide influence amongst academics.

"Our enemy in all of the Vietnam draft business was Lyndon B. Johnson. He abolished graduate deferments on February 16, 1968. Billy was close to graduating from Georgetown University, but on March 20, Billy (21) was classified 1-A and eligible for induction. He was the only man of his prime draft age classified 1-A, but we managed to get his re-induction physical examination put off for ten-and-a-half months. The normal delay is two months.

"We ran many ongoing distractions as the paperwork can take several months to answer and we created new positions we knew Billy wouldn't fill.

"In the meantime, Billy won a Rhodes Scholarship to University College, Oxford, in June 1968 – which we also arranged.

"We then had Raymond Clinton, Billy's Uncle, personally lobby Senator Fulbright who was very sympathetic, plus he had the two-way ear of Win Rockefeller. So Senator Fulbright's aide then phoned the Garland County (Hot Springs) Draft Board member, Robert Corrado, urging him to give every consideration to keep Clinton out of the draft so he could attend Oxford, and to pass the impetus onto the other board members.

"Raymond Clinton also lobbied the chairman, William S. Armstrong. So that was two out of three. Chairman Armstrong then held back Billy's draft file from consideration for all of 1968, by all three board members.

"Billy was not called for his physical examination until February 3, 1969. By this time, our Prince Billy was at Oxford studing and playing rugby, officially from September 1968 to June 1970, although he never finished his studies, never graduated, and spent a lot of time travelling, just as you have. He studied Philosophy, Politics and Economics."

Pamela: "Ooh, that's what I would have studied."

Averell: "He also smoked a little dope."

Pamela: ". . ."

Averell: "Ahmm . . . For further distraction and time consuming paperwork, uncle Raymond Clinton also lobbied Lieutenant Commander Trice Ellis, Jr. of the local Navy Reserve Unit, to obtain a slot for Billy. No such Naval Reserve slots existed in Hot Springs in 1968, so this was a special creation for Billy. An officer's slot would have meant Billy served two years in active duty beginning sometime in 1969, so we had him apply for a standard enlisted man's billet.

"Billy didn't show up to his physical exam, as planned, so Lieutenant Commander Ellis phoned Raymond Clinton, who let slip that the fix was in. I have a transcript here:

> 'Don't worry about it. He won't be coming down. It's all been taken care of.'

And it had. All of these delays throughout 1968 meant that Prince Billy was able to enroll at Oxford in September.

"On February 2, 1969, while in England at Oxford, Billy took his physical examination and passed.

"As a formality, in April 1969, the Garland County Draft Board at Hot Springs sent Billy his Induction Notice. Along with it was a message to ignore the notice because the deadline for induction had past. Then in June 1969, Billy received a second Induction Notice with a July 28 induction date – while you were busy nursing Leland.

Pamela: "Yes I was, the dear. He had strokes you know."

Averell: "Billy's Oxford classmate, Cliff Jackson, then had several of his influential friends pull strings on Billy's behalf in early July 1969. They aimed their lobby directly at the head of the state draft agency."

Pamela: "Nice work."

Averell: "Billy then left Oxford in early July 1969 and returned to Hot Spring to beat the July 28 induction deadline. Here he met with the only person in Arkansas with authority to rescind a draft notice – Colonel Williard A. Hawkins. It was stressed that Billy was a Rhodes Scholar at Oxford and the Army Induction Notice was cancelled.

Pamela: "Thank you darling. More tea."

Averell: "Your welcome. A drink would be nice. Whiskey? . . . Arrangements were then made for Prince Billy to serve his country in the Reserve Officers' Training Corps (ROTC) program at the University of Arkansas by enrolling in the law school, and on August 7, Billy was reclassified 1-D, effectively terminating the draft notice.

"The Hot Springs Draft Board and the office of Democrat Fulbright then lobbied the Commander of the University of Arkansas ROTC program, Colonel Eugene Holmes, to admit Billy into the ROTC program.

"We chose Colonel Eugene Holmes as his decorations include the Silver Star, two Bronze Stars, two Legions of Merit, the Army Commendation Medal, he was a survivor of the 60-mile Bataan Death March in the Philippines in 1942, and then spent three-and-a-half years as a POW guest of the Japanese. He had a hundred per cent disability, so he was sick, slow to respond, and worn out, but people would respect what he said, act on it, and not question his judgement, or authority.

Pamela: "Good thinking."

Averell: "Billy then signed the enlistment papers and took the oath, but he failed to report to the duty station at the University of Arkansas ROTC in September 1969. Nor did Billy enrol in the Arkansas Law School, and he did not attend classes full-time, so he was not eligible for the ROTC program.

"So we had Senator Fulbright's office, and Billy himself, continue to lobby Colonel Eugene Holmes, who eventually became our man. So Billy was in the Arkansas Law School ROTC progam, not eligible for the draft, and studying in back in Oxford.

"Richard Nixon then replaced Lyndon B. Johnson as President on 20 January 1969."

Pamela: "LBJ was such a horrible man. He was in on the assassination of Jacqueline Onassis husband, Jack. Such a horrible man as LBJ . . ."

Averell: "Well yes . . . we're only halfway through. President Nixon then changed the draft rules to avoid capturing Prince Billy (23) and placed him in a category of 'suspended'. Selective Service reforms were implemented in September 1969 which only permitted the conscription of 19-year-old men, by lottery, and enlistees, volunteers, and professional soldiers. This was followed up with troop withdrawls.

"With this under his belt, Prince Billy then wrote a letter on September 12, 1969 which he carried around in preparation for our extremely lobbied and pressured man, Colonel Eugene Holmes, Chairman of his Draft Board. But Billy never sent it. It wasn't required as Billy made it safely back to Oxford in late September 1969 without being conscripted.

"We then used our sphere of influence on the college campuses creating student riots, so Nixon spread the October 1969 draft call over November and December, and suspended the draft calls for November and December 1969.

"Billy was now safe from induction for five years from September 1964 to December 1969.

"President Nixon then threatened Congress to remove men aged twenty to twenty-six from the draft call unless they established a lottery system. This included Prince Billy who was twenty-three, so he was either not to be drafted, or only vulnerable to a lottery.

"Congress then establish a lottery system.

"On October 1, 1969 we had Nixon announce that anyone in graduate school could complete the full year. This made Prince Billy safe from the draft until June 1970 – the end of his Oxford studies.

"As soon as this was in the bag, we then had Roger Clinton make Billy eligible for the draft. This maintained his future standing with Vietnam war veteran voters.

"By this time, the Prince, William, grandson of King Edward VII was organizing anti-war demonstrations in London, which he led on October 15, 1969."

Pamela: "Beautiful."

Averell: "Billy had managed to get the support of the British Peace Council, part of the World Peace Council which was backed by the KGB. The KGB was a no go, so Billy was noted as 'NOT ENROLLED AT UNIVERSITY OF ARKANSAS LAW SCHOOL' and his 1-D deferment was automatically cancelled and he was reclassified 1-A. So Billy was eligible for induction on October 30, 1969.

"But Billy stuck his toes in and organized and led further anti-war demonstrations in London on November 16, 1969.

"Prince Billy was now officially AWOL and subject to arrest under Public Law 90-40 (2)(a) – a registrant who has failed to report, and remains liable for induction.

"The first draft lottery was then drawn on December 1, 1969 and Billy drew number 311. His birthdate lottery number was high enough for him not to be drafted, but he was ineligible anyway as he'd already been ordered to report for induction.

"So Billy was AWOL, and a fugitive from justice from October 30, 1969."

"Then on December 3, 1969, Billy wrote to Commander of the University of Arkansas ROTC Program, our friend, Lieutenant Colonel Eugene Holmes, here it is: 'From my work I came to believe that the draft system is illegitimate . . . I decided to accept the draft in spite of my beliefs for one reason – to maintain my political viability.'

"So he was on track there and had obviously taken on board his briefings in London, and like his grandfather, he'll probably be known as 'The Peacemaker'. Here's the full letter. You can read it in your own time."

Pamela: "Wonderful. Thank you for saving my son . . . Oh, he is a good writer."

> **December 3, 1969**
> Dear Colonel Eugene Holmes,
> "From my work, I came to believe that the draft system itself is illegitimate. No government really rooted in limited, parliamentary democracy should have the power to make its citizens fight and kill and die in a war they may oppose, a war which even possibly may be wrong, a war, which in any case, does not involve immediately the peace and freedom of the nation. The draft was justified in World War II because the life of the people collectively was at stake.
>
> "Individuals had to fight, if the nation was to survive, for the lives of their country and their way of life. Vietnam is no such case. Nor was Korea an example where, in my opinion, certain military action was justified but the draft was not, for the reasons stated above . . .
>
> "At that time, after we had made our agreement and you had sent my 1D deferment to my draft board, the anguish and loss of my self regard and self confidence really set in. I hardly slept for weeks and kept going by eating compulsively and reading until exhaustion brought sleep. Finally, on September 12 I stayed up all night writing a letter to the chairman of my draft board, saying basically what is in the preceding paragraph, thanking him for trying to help in a case where he really couldn't, and stating that I couldn't do the ROTC after all and would he please draft me as soon as possible.
>
> "I never mailed the letter, but I did carry it with me every day until I got on the plane to return to England. I didn't mail the letter because I didn't see, in the end, how my going in the army and maybe going to Vietnam would achieve anything except a feeling that I had punished myself and gotten what I deserved. So I came back to

England to try to make something of the second year of my Rhodes scholarship.

“Please say hello to Colonel Jones for me. Merry Christmas.

Sincerely, Bill Clinton.”

Averell: “You’re more than welcome . . . Then around December 12, 1969, Billy went to Norway to meet with various peace organizations, most of them KGB backed. He then went to Moscow for New Years Eve, staying until January 6, 1970. It was here that he got the inside knowledge on how the Soviets were supplying the North Vietnamese with anti-aircraft weapons, ammuniton, advisors and spies.”[76]

Pamela: “Well, he’s a chip off the old bock then.”

Averell: “Yes, he is one Slick Willie . . .

“Perhaps if we can tolerate each other for six months, we should get married. I quite fancy marrying the mother of Churchill’s baby. He did keep mumsy about my affair with you from my wife, Marie, although she did know, but it was nice not to have it confirmed to her.”

“Here’s a couple of photos with Bill and his new squeeze, Hillary Rodham. She’s not much of a looker, and she is very political, but she could be the right driving force behind him. Like his grandfather, ‘Bertie’, ahmm, King Edward VII, he has the same eyes, nose, mouth, chin, build, and the same attitude toward women – dispensable.”

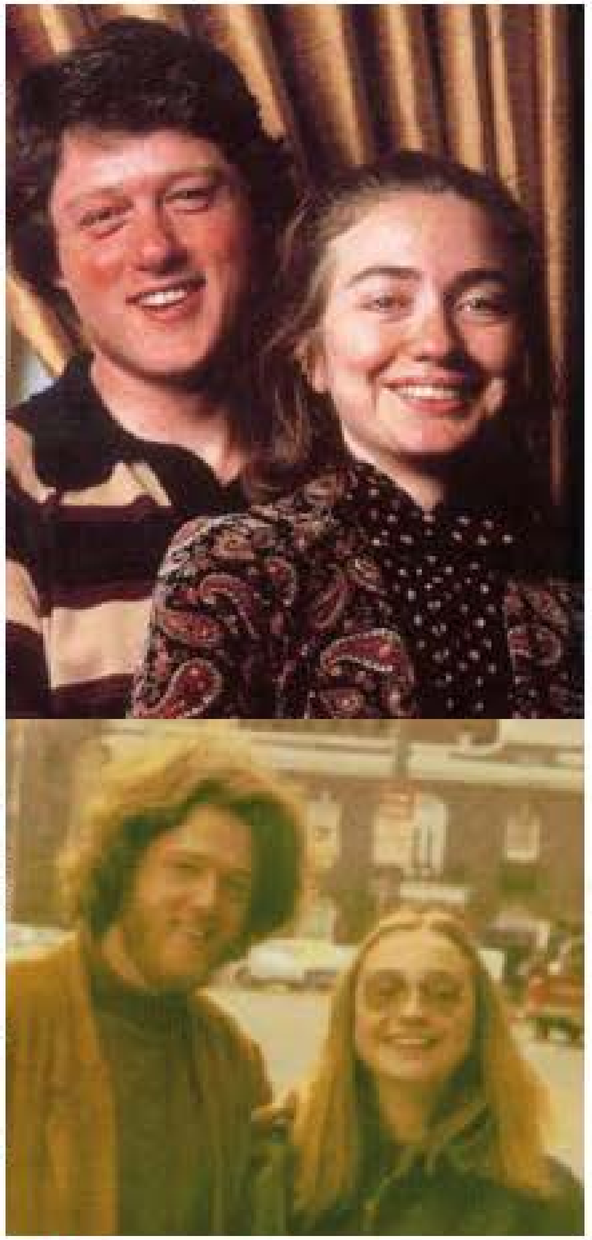

Pamela Churchill Leland: “Well he is my son, and he is Winnie’s son, and his is Bertie’s grandson. Can I keep these photographs.”

Averell Harriman: “Yes you can Pam.”

Prince Billy Rex was immediately introduced to the Rockefellers, some saying that Win Rockefeller was his biological father. But it’s more likely that Win Rockefeller was a conduit to introduce Prince Billy Rex to his real mother, his real family history, and what support he could expect from the world like . . . the Churchill’s, the British Royal Family, his half-sister Queen Elizabeth II, the French Rothschilds, the English Rothschilds,[77] the Blandfords, the Aga Khan, the Marquis of Portago, the Agnelli family and Fiat, the Greek shipping magnates, Niarchos and Onassis, and the Kennedy’s via Mrs Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis (1968–75), the Russian-American retail philanthropist Milton Petrie (1902–94), Edward Roscoe Murrow, William S. Paley, the Harriman’s money, Maurice Druon’s French Resistance, writers, poets, culture, Paris and the European Parliament, Truman Capote (1924–84) and his fag-hags, the Fonda’s, Dennis Hopper, Rita Hayworth’s descendants’ Princess Yasmin Aga Khan and Rebecca Welles,[78] the Hayward’s, and much of Hollywood.

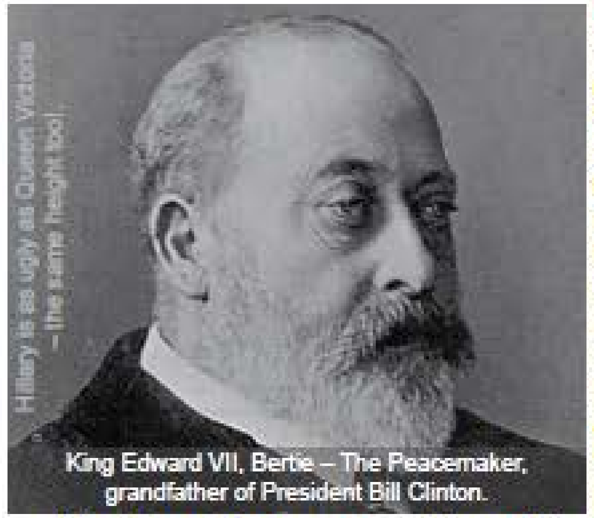

King Edward VII, Bertie – The Peacemaker, grandfather of President Bill Clinton.

Hillary is as ugly as Queen Victoria – the same height too!

Like Nancy Reagan says: “Hollywood is all the politics you need”.

Prince Billy Rex also learnt what was in his loins and around the same time he met Hillary Rodham when they were both waiting outside the same girl’s dorm room – both anticipating sex from the same woman. Officially they first met in a civil liberties class at Yale Law School in 1970, but that’s just such upstanding PR.

With such a history, there was no way they could name Pamela Digby as the surprise mother of President Bill Clinton (they have the same teeth), so the long-standing cover story was maintained and Bill Clinton retained his surrogate mother (Virginia Clinton Kelley) who barely looked like him (but she could look like King Edward VII), while he promoted his biological mother (Pamela Churchill Harriman) with plastic surgery to Ambassador to France.

Bill Clinton still with his surrogate mother, Virginia Kelley Clinton for another 351 days.

Pamela Digby Churchill Hayward Harriman, mother of Prince Bertie Rex Churchill.

---

[76] It’s amazing how much information you can pick up in Moscow in a week, especially at that time of year. Moscovites will talk just to keep themselves warm, and their focus off the cold. Moscow does seem to be a place where there is information on how the world will be run. It’s a place of future planning. I was there at the same time of the year, for about the same time, 19 years later. I did the radical thing of going into Red Square at lunchtime on 5 December 1989 and yelling out ‘Mokrie Dela’ at the top of my voice – Department 13, Killing. I then picked up the names and training of feminist Westerners, and the reconstruction of the subconsious. So that was fun, and only five days. Bill, on the other hand, got the names and details on Peace Activists in the West. In New Zealand, these were the KGB Agents Helen Clark and Margaret Wilson, who then became Prime Minister and Attorney-General. Bill became President. I was trained as Prime Minister and Governor-General.

[77] Nathan Mayer Rothschild (1777–1836/50) was Bill Clinton’s great-grandfather and great-great-grandfather.

[78] Rita Hayworth (1918–87) married five times, each lasting five years or less, and each ending in divorce: 1. Edward Charles Judson (1937–42); 2. Orson Welles (1943–48) producing Rebecca Welles; 3. Prince Aly Khan (1949–53) producing Princess Yasmin Aga Khan; 4. Dick Haymes (1953–55); 5. James Hill (1958–61).

Averell Harriman: ". . . It was Winston Churchill who arranged, on your behalf, for me to transfer Baby William Churchill to the Colonies – as befits the illegitimate son, of an illegitimate son of the King – Edward VII – and possibly a great-grandson of the Central Bank.

"Amongst all the post-WWII movements and chaos, and chaos of records, Prince William was transferred to Hope, Arkansas, to a dead father – William Jefferson Blythe, Jr. traveling car salesman – and his rather loose mother, Virginia Dell Cassidy, who immediately left to study nursing, leaving young William with her parents, Eldridge and Edith Cassidy, who owned the local grocery store selling goods on credit to all colors. Edith Cassidy was also an anesthetist nurse which came in handy from time to time. Virginia Dell Cassidy also trained as an anesthetist nurse, returned in 1950, and moved to Hot Springs, then married Roger Clinton becoming Virginia Clinton. Here young Billy attended St. John's Catholic Elementary School, Ramble Elementary School, and Hot Springs High School, all under the watchful eye of Win Rockefeller, who is briefing young William about now.

"Prince William changed his name to Bill Clinton in 1962 when he was 16."

Pamela: "Wow. That's a lot to take in. Thank you so much. You're a darling. Does Billy have any siblings?"

Averell Harriman: "He has a surrogate half-brother who looks nothing like him. To keep him out of credible media, we are ensuring that he will be a loser, a write-off, NHI."

Pamela: "Such a tragedy, but that's the price of Kingship."

Virginia Dell Cassidy Blythe Clinton Clinton Dwire Kelley

Virginia Dell Cassidy (6 June 1923–6 January 1994) ended up being Virginia Kelley, surrogate mother of President Bill Clinton and mother of his half-brother, Roger Cassidy Clinton, Jr. (25 July 1956–) an American rock musician, drug dealing, drunk driving actor who looks nothing like Bill Clinton except that they are both White males about the same age.

Virginia married William Jefferson Blythe, Jr. in a civil ceremony in 1943. He was then shipped out for WWII. When her husband was discharged, he picked her up and they moved for four months to Chicago. William Jefferson Blythe, Jr. officially inseminated Virginia and was then killed in a car accident six months later. Bill was born three months later in August 1946, but the baby she got was 'Swish-Baby-Bill'. The other baby either died, or is lost to history.

In 1950, Virginia married the alcoholic, physical and psychological abuser, Roger Clinton, who sired second son Roger Jr., who carried the response to these traits. They divorced in 1961, then remarried a few months later. Roger Clinton did not adopt 'Swish-Baby-Bill', but Prince Billy Rex took Clinton's surname legally in 1962, on his own cognition, as he thought it would be easier if they all had the same surname. Roger then died of cancer in 1967.

Virginia then married hairdresser Jeff Dwire in 1969. He died from diabetes in 1974. Virginia then married food distribution brokerage executive Richard Kelley on 17 January 1982. They remained married until she died from breast cancer aged 70, within a year of Bill taking office as President (20 January 1993–6 January 1994).

Surrogate Brother Roger Cassidy Clinton Jr.

While Bill Clinton was Governor of Arkansas (1979–81 and 1983–92) surrogate brother Roger pleaded guilty to cocaine distribution in January 1985 and served 12 months of a two-year sentence in return for testifying against a number of other defendants – so he was a spineless narc. Then on the last day in office as President, Bill Clinton granted Roger Clinton a pardon amongst the 177 issued on 19 January 2001. Four weeks later on 17 February 2001, Roger was arrested in a beach community near Los Angeles and charged with two counts of drunken driving and one for disturbing the peace. He pleaded guilty to Reckless Driving to avoid jail time. He was convicted for Disorderly Conduct, fined $1,350, and got two years probation.

Associated Press, Roger Clinton:

> "I was a disaster."

Well Roger Jr., your disaster was planned making you B-grade in every way. You played Mayor Bubba in Pumpkinhead II: Blood Wings (1994), guest-starred as yourself in The Nanny (1995–96), in Cybill (1997), in Sabrina, the Teenage Witch (1998), P.U.N.K.S. (1999), and as yourself in the film, Fred Claus (2007).

You were the surrogate half-brother of the great-grandson of the Central Bank, the grandson of a king, the son of a Prime Minister, and the half-brother of a President. Use that in Court. It should explain the coke.

Acting Shot.

Mugshot.

PUMPKINHEAD II
BLOOD WINGS
THEY COULDN'T LEAVE DEAD ENOUGH ALONE

Result.

Averell Harriman and the Marshall Plan – Two Top Agents

The Marshall Plan was introduced to the world on 5 June 1947 as the 'European Recovery Program'. It was a United States plan for rebuilding the countries of Western Europe with the by-line of backing America in the upcoming Cold War, which (to those in the know) began with the hunt for Adolf Hitler from 2 May 1945 – both an excuse for worldwide surveillance.

The Marshall Plan was designed to make countries well-off enough so that they wouldn't have to resort to Communism, so America put in 1.25 % of its GNP – US$13 billion over the four years the Marshall Plan was in operation (April 1948–52).

The Marshall Plan coordinated the many economies on a continental level, erased tariff trade barriers, and began the long, and suspect road to European integration. As a result, many of the countries are now like many of the other countries, and many of the cultures are now the same.

By 1952, the economy of every OEEC country had grown well past pre-war levels, except for Germany which was under contract to fund Israel for 149 years (1945–2094), so Germany split into Capitalist West Germany and Communist East Germany.

East Germany was one of Israel's 'Ideal States for Goyim' so it didn't have to pay, and couldn't. Even in 1988, East Germany was a black & white country (wiithout colour) with WWII railway speakers commanding people straight out of *Animal Farm*.

Playing in the game of the up coming Cold War (1961–91), Churchill's second cousin Stalin refused help for the U.S.S.R. and its allies so he could increase his death toll to 68 million and play the moral enemy.[79] Churchill then had Stalin killed in March 1953 to prevent him invading Yugoslavia – run by Tito, Churchill's other second cousin.

Plus, the U.S.S.R. invading Yugoslavia would make his son, Randolph, look even worse, and he might mouth off about Winston Sr. siring Winston III, which would destroy Winston Sr.'s international reputation, and could expose Prince Billy Churchill Rex and reduce his chances of leading the United British Plantations of America and all that TAX REVENUE . . . which was being paid to his daughter Queen Elizabeth II, and 'The Crown' – the 12 to 14 men who run the City of London on behalf of N M Rothschild & Sons, and Nathan Mayer was Winston Churchill's grandfather and great-grandfather . . . so Stain had to go and Churchill did it.

Pamela Churchill was also in Paris from 1947 when her lover Averell Harriman was in Paris (1946–48). Harriman had been in charge of Lend-Lease and was then placed in charge of the Marshall Plan (1947–July 1951). Here he had friendly relations with Irving Brown, a CIA Agent in charge of the American Federation of Labor and Congress of Industrial Organizations, who could also provide ongoing Intelligence Reports on William Jefferson Blythe III, a.k.a. Prince Billy Churchill Rex.

Averell Harriman was then sent to Teheran in July 1951 to mediate between Persia and Britain in the wake of the Persian nationalization of the Anglo-Iranian Oil Company. Around the same time, Pamela Churchill was having an affair with the Muslim leader, Aly Khan (1951) which resulted in his divorce from Rita Hayworth in 1953.

So Averell Harriman and Pamela Churchill continued to run a spy network after WWII – all with complete immunity from the Queen of England and the President of the United States.

These were two top Intelligence Agents.

Pamela Churchill was The Spymaster's Lady.

---

[79] In Golden Dawn coven language "68 million" means 'infinite death everywhere. No process, shoot to kill at point blank range again and again and again'. The Soviet's favourite was a bullet to the neck.

Pamela Harriman gets into politics on behalf of Pr. Bill 'Bertie Churchill Rothschild' Clinton

"The War Years (1914–45) brought with them new courtesans. Pamela Harriman was the consummate late 20th Century courtesan who paid remarkable attention to every detail of her men and their preferences, running around their every comfort and need" – while they were alive. Leland Hayward called Pamela "the courtesan of the century".

"For nearly 20 years she lived as a courtesan in the precise, centuries old definition of the word."[80]

The day after Leland Hayward died, on 19 March 1971, Pamela arranged to resume her acquaintance with her former lover, the recently widowed railroad tycoon, diplomat and top spy, Averell Harriman (79). They were married six months later on 27 September 1971, until his death on 26 July 1986. Pamela presented her new US citizenship as a wedding gift, but by the marriage, Averell's health was failing. Pamela then kept his daughter, Kathleen, and godson, Peter Duchin, at arms length during the entire marriage (1971–86). She was that kind of woman. Ironically, Peter Duchin then married Leland Hayward's daughter, Brooke.[81]

Pamela and Averell moved to Averell's townhouse in 'N' Street, Georgetown in Washington DC and also had an estate in Virginia. Their private jet was a wonderful influence on the many notable people they entertained. Averell was America's pre-eminent statesmen, and both used their historical credentials, money and social reach to pull the dejected Democrats together and began 'Democrats for the 80s', a.k.a. "PamPac".

In the 1980s, the Democratic Party was all but dead, as the Republicans had the Hollywood actors Ronald Reagan and Frank Sinatra as president (1981–89) followed by the Nazi teenager turned CIA agent, George H. W. Bush (1989–93). But Pamela Churchill Harriman was above all this and jumped into politics boots n' all, kickstarting Prince Billy Rex Rothschild's political career. In an exchange of support, the National Women's Democratic Club named Pamela "Woman of the Year" in 1980. Feminists always name slappers 'Wonderful' whenever they have enough money for independence.

The French Salons started in the 1700s where a beguiling female host would lie on a couch and all the cocks would throw ideas at her. In England, Churchill and Beaverbrook used this model for the Churchill Club where men were mesmerized (and laid) by Pamela. In America, the Harrimans used the same model for PamPac, with Pamela the host of the fundraising issue dinners.

When Averell (94) died in 1986, Pamela (66) gave him a funeral befitting a president, with four Presidents attending. It appeared that Averell was being buried in the family plot, but she swished him to Bermuda, next to where she planned to be buried. Pamela then inherited Averell's entire US$110 million-dollar fortune. Harriman's children hated her and challenged this, but she got the lot because she had the support of her kind-of-daughter-in-law, Queen Elizabeth II over the Courts of America. Pamela then became the single doyenne and unifying force of the Democrats, raising their spirits and filling their coffers, just as hers had been. She used her new "fuck you very much money" to promote her son, Prince Billy Clinton, Governor of Arkansas, PamPac raising US$12 million for his campaign, to make her Checker Prince William Churchill, President of the British Plantation in November 1992, winning against George H. W. Bush, who provided no fight.

Speaker of the House Tom Foley: "No one in this country can take greater credit for winning the White House than Pamela."[82] "The two [Pamela and Bill] got along famously as his history and hers don't seem all that different in its most basic element."[83] After a life of living for and through men, Pamela had finally came to live through her son.

---

[80] Sally Bedell Smith, *Reflected Glory: The Life of Pamela Churchill Harriman*, 1996. She also wrote *For Love of Politics: Bill and Hillary Clinton: the White House Years*, 2007, another on the Kennedy's, and Princess Diana.

[81] Averell and Marie Harriman had raised Peter since he was a newborn. His father was the bandleader, Eddy Duchin, and his mother was a Social Register debutante who died soon after childbirth.They had been surrogate parents and all very close, but Pamela severed any contact.

[82] *Encyclopedia of World Biography*.

[83] The Little Extras – The Society Divas, 'Pamela Churchill Harriman', Blair Schulman, www.divasthesite.com.

The Bill Clinton/ Prince Billy Rex rise to power

Pamela was fully briefed from Averell Harriman in March 1971. She then hauled in her contacts as the Spymaster's Lady and began working on Prince Billy Rex's career. With all these contacts, the British Royal Family and the British and French Rothschilds could get their own in as President of the United States, so there was really no force that could hold them back.

Averel Harriman and Win Rockefeller had already begun, so in the summer of 1963, Bill (16) was chosen to attend the American Legion Boys State (a Govt. leadership conference), in Little Rock, Arkansas (Win Rockefeller's territory), where he was elected a senator, and sent to Washington, D.C. to shake hands with President John F. Kennedy. The fix was in.

Bill Clinton (18) then went to Georgetown University in September 1964 for a B.A. in International Studies. On his breaks, he worked for the Arkansas Democratic Senator William Fulbright, who was also the Chairman of the Senate Foreign Relations Committee. Together they raged against the Vietnam War, which was America's way of trafficking heroin, and removing the opportunity from the British Royal Family, who had a long history of drug trafficking from the days of the East India Company and the China Clipper.

Prince Billy Rex Clinton went about correcting all that – even organising protests in London. Like his grandfather, he was indirectly involved in drug-running. In politics, there is a choice between war or drugs. The Republicans go for both. The Democrats go for the drugs.

Bill Clinton then won a Rhodes scholarship to Oxford University where his opposition to the Vietnam War grew under the guidance and sphere of influence of the British Royal Family.

So Bill Clinton went to Oxford (1968–70) and like many British Princes, he chopped and changed and failed to finish his studies.

Prince Billy Rex (24) then went to Yale Law School in the fall of 1970 and met Hillary Rodham (23) who was a year ahead of him. She had graduated from Wellesley College in Chicago's suburbs, where Bill's 'parents' had briefly lived before both of their conceptions.

At the time, the CIA were heavily influenced by the NAZI's in Operation Paperclip, and the NAZI's were heavily influenced by the Tibetans who were heavily influenced by reincarnation. When the CIA said wild things and were challenged, they would often say: "Because a Nazi told me" and that was considered ground-stopping providence.

Some, like the Ivy League CIA, would say, given all the information to date, and the long career histories presented here, that Hillary Clinton is the reincarnation of Queen Victoria. If this wasn't published, and you wanted to get into the Ivy League CIA, inside say, two days, and it was Cold War time, and you went to the Senate and asked to see 'Drina', you might get a companion tail and their resources at your service.

James William Fulbright
(9 April 1905–9 Feb. 1995):
"Israel controls the U.S. Senate."

G: "Honey, I've been living it."

Hillary: "Greg, where do you find this stuff?"

Bill Clinton meets President John F. Kennedy at the White House on 6 June 1963.
Bill Clinton then meets President Jimmy 'Kennedy' Carter at the White House on 1 December 1978.
President Jimmy 'Kennedy' Carter: "Pardon me". 50th Arkansas Attorney General Bill Clinton: "Pardon me".
President Jimmy Carter: "I thought I already had". Prince Billy Rex: "Isn't that something we British Royals do."
President Carter: "Mind your mark, boy. We have ours."

Bill Clinton and Hillary Rodham obtained their Juris Doctor degree from Yale in 1973. This translates as they both got a Law Degree at an Ivy League School. Bill then worked very briefly as a staff attorney for the House Judiciary Committee in Washington, D.C., then returned to Arkansas – close to the family briefings from Win Rockefeller and Chairman of the Senate Foreign Relations Committee, William Fulbright – and became a Professor at the University of Arkansas . . . so it was all laid on.

After Prince Billy Clinton's half-sister, Queen Elizabeth II, gave her approval, Prince Billy and Hillary 'Drina' Rodham were married on 11 October 1975. Chelsea was born on 27 February 1980. She looks Jewish and may grow into her looks.

Just as Queen Victoria was short in stature, accomplished little, but had a long career, Hillary Rodham Clinton, was made Secretary of State of the British Plantation on 21 January 2009. She began her political career 35 years earlier in 1974 as Congressional legal counsel. Her contribution so far has been: "wash your hands often and drink lots of water".

Although Bill was still a fugitive from justice, he ran for the House of Representatives (Senate) in 1974 losing to incumbent, John Paul Hammerschmidt, 52%: 48%. This was his only loss. Without opposition, Bill Clinton was then elected Arkansas Attorney General in 1976, becoming the 50th Arkansas Attorney General (3 January 1977–9 January 1979).

17 days later, Jimmy 'Kennedy' Carter was elected U.S. President, taking office on 20 January 1977. The very next day (18 days) he pardoned fugitive-since-30-October-1969, Prince Bill Clinton on 21 January 1977. It was the first thing President Carter did. Then 22 months later, Carter and Clinton officially met for a photo shoot on 1 December 1978 – all farting pardons.

So there's Pamela Churchill Harriman's tie in to the Kennedy Family though Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis and Stavros Niarchos to President James Kennedy Carter.

Bill Clinton was then Governor of Arkansas (32) – the youngest Governor in the U.S. (9 January 1979–19 January 1981 & 11 January 1983–12 December 1992). During the two year gap, Clinton kept his humour and joked: "I am now the youngest ex-governor in the nation's history".

Prince Billy Churchill Rex Clinton Mountbatten was then 42nd President of the United States (20 Jan. 1993–20 Jan. 2001) a.k.a. Pirate Captain of the British Plantation for eight years.

He was the third youngest president, becoming president at the end of the Cold War, for which he was **The Checker Child**. Prince Billy was the first Democratic Party president since Franklin D. Roosevelt to win a second term and presided over the longest peace-time economic expansion in American history, which included a federal surplus of US$559 billion. Like his grandfather, King Edward VII, this earnt him the title 'The Peacemaker'.

In Golden Dawn coven language, "559" translates as 'Occult master with deaths delayed'. Clinton then left office in 2001 with a 66 % approval rating – the highest end of office rating of any president since WWII. Then in 2009, he was named United Nations Special Envoy to Haiti. How weird is that!

When Clinton was impeached for obstruction of justice, by the House of Representatives on 19 December 1998, he was acquitted by the U.S. Senate on 12 February 1999 . . . because Mamaa Mountbatten Rex told them to, plus, she let America have a US$559 billion surplus in exchange. The pertinent result took less than two months and much of that was Christmas and New Year holidays.

Pamela Churchill Leland Harriman: "Arh, yes. My son was the first pardoned Federal felon to ever to serve as President of the United States, but he was a Prince and this is a British Plantation."

When President Bill Clinton Churchill's mother, the Twentieth Century's greatest courtesan, Pamela Churchill Leland Harriman died on 5 February 1997, Slick Willie was devastated. Not only for his mother, whom he had known for 26 years, since 1971, but he couldn't share their real relationship with the world.

As the son of Prime Minister Churchill, and the grandson of King Edward VII, he reacted in typical fashion and left a stain on his intern's dress. Like King Edward VII, who got a young woman pregnant when he realised Albert wasn't his father, and was then removed from any consultation, this was a protest that almost drove the President Prince to sabotage his offices of state – impeachment– but not for misleading about his mother, patron and financer.

When President Prince Bill Clinton's mother, Ambassor to France, Pamela Harriman died on 5 February 1997, Billy was heartbroken, sent flowers and Air Force One to pick her up, and at her state funeral said: "She was one of the most unusual and gifted people I ever met . . . She was a source of judgment and inspiration to me, a source of constant good humor and charm and real friendship. I am here in no small measure because she was there." She was 'The Life of the Party.

British Mother of an American President

The British mother of an American President came 72 years after an American mother of a British Prime Minister.

The first was Jennie Jerome's pregnancy to King Edward VII producing Prime Minister Winston Churchill in 1874.

The second was Pamela Digby's pregnancy to Winston Churchill producing President Bill Clinton in 1946.

The mother of Bill Clinton, Pamela Beryl Digby (20 March 1920–5 February 1997) was born in Farnborough, Hampshire, 50 km southwest of London. Her father was the 11th Baron Digby, House of Lords, Governor of Dorset. Her mother was the Honourable Constance Pamela Alice Bruce (14 June 1895–15 March 1978), daughter of 2nd Baron Aberdare (1851–1929), House of Lords. Pamela had five brothers and was the eldest of four girls born into nobility.

Pamela's great-great aunt was the C19th adventurer and courtesan, Lady Jane Digby, notorious for her exotic travels and scandalous personal life. There was a bit of comment that she was her aunt's child. They used to say:

"She was closer to her aunt than one would believe".

Pamela's 'mother', Constance Pamela Alice Bruce, had an older sister the Honourable Margaret Cecilia Bruce (1882–1949) who became the Countess of Bedford on 2 January 1915, and lady in waiting to King George V's wife, Queen consort Mary.

The Scottish 'Bruce' family were originally 'De Burgh' descended from the biggest harlots in France. Pamela Digby was to follow suit and become "the 20th century's greatest courtesan" . . . as was her son.

Pamela Digby and her three younger siblings were educated by a governesses 130 km southwest of Farnborough, on their 1,500 acre estate, Minterne Magna, in Dorset (not a school). Minterne has been the ancestral home of both the Digby and Churchill families since 1620.

At Minterne, Pamela became a very good horsewoman competing in the International Olympia, Royal Bath, and West Show on Stardust, and Poppy – which only she could control – kind of a 'Black Beauty'. Pamela was determined, competitive and liked to win in style.

At 17, she was sent to a boarding school Munich (or 'Muenchen' in snob) for six months (circa April–October 1937) where she met Unity Mitford and may have met Adolf Hitler, although Unity was a spinner, Adolf doesn't mention her, and Pamela was plain and plump at the time. Pamela then went to Paris and took some classes at the Sorbonne, which always sounds more like a flirting exercise than study. By 1937, the same year she left, Pamela had returned to England and was now "widely travelled" and "experienced" beyond the realms of settled marriage.

Nine members of Pamela's family were serving in Parliament, so she (19) easily got a job at the Foreign Office in London in 1939. Here she did French-to-English translations and met Randolph Churchill. Randolph (26) and Pamela (19) went on a blind date, then rambuncious Randolph proposed two weeks later. They were married on 4 October 1939. A year later Randolph took his seat in the House of Commons (8 October 1940) and two days later 'their' son Winston was born (10 October 1940–) at Chequers, the country residence of the Prime Minister of England, 50 km northwest of London.

Pamela and newborn Winston were photographed by Cecil Beaton for the *LIFE Magazine* cover – the first ever mother and child. With Baby Winston being the great-grandson of King Edward VII, you'd expect as much.

In February 1941, when baby was 4 months old, very strangely Randolph was sent off to Cairo for military service, so obviously Winston had to wheel him away. Here Randolph developed huge gambling debts, then wrote to wife Pamela asking her to pay them.

Lord Beaverbrook (the Jewish Max Aiten) paid the gambling debts and found her a place to stay at the Dorchester Hotel. Winston Churchill then insisted she move into 10 Downing Street, thus placing her at the center of power and politics, and within cocks reach. Pamela then played hostess on behalf of Winston Churchill and Lord Beaverbrook to Harry Hopkins, Averell Harriman and others. Lord Beaverbrook then taught 'the young Mrs. Churchill' to be a catalyst: "It was part of Pamela's job to know Americans . . . Beaverbrook's intelligence system was unparalleled." In exchange, Pamela wrote articles for Beaverbrook's *Evening Standard* from London, then from all over the world, and Randolph's gambling debts were paid.

Pamela Churchill then co-founded and ran a London salon in Grosvenor Square, under the street. The Churchill Club became a local where the upper heads of the Anglo-American alliance could meet informally. Pamela called it 'Eisenhowerplatz' and soon began an affair with Averell Harriman (1943–46) whom she had underwrite the Churchill Club. So Pamela already had a concrete sense that her fanny was her purse and practised as much.

Winston Churchill used his daughter-in-law, Pamela Digby Churchill, to loosen Anglo-American alliance lips. She was WC's muse, courtesan, information catcher, and mother of one or two of his children.

Averell Harriman had met with Winston Churchill for the Atlantic Charter at Ship Harbour, Placentia Bay in Newfoundland on 9–12 August 1941, so he knew what the future held after WWII.

Newfoundland found again and again and unfounded

Argentia is a naval/air station on a peninsula in Placentia Bay in the Island of Newfoundland, 950 miles south of Greenland, 1300 miles from Washington D.C., and 2,400 miles from London. At the time, Newfoundland was a British Dominion and would not become part of Canada until 1949. It was run by a Governor and a six member Commission of British Government (1934–49) who reported to the Dominions Office in London.

This meant that Newfoundland was available for any form of corruption to Britain's advantage.

The land had been voluntarily given to the British in 1933 after a series of double-crosses and scandals which involved Britain killing off most of Newfoundland's fighting males, naming the survivors 'Royal', and placing Newfoundland in a WWI war debt it struggled to repay.

The status of the base was also under question as it appeared that Placentia Bay was a location that was not a location, in a time that was not a time, discussing things that were never discussed, in order that they never be revealled, and if they were, they could never be substantiated in a time or place – which a court demands – and everything about the 'Atlantic Charter' was a Magic Operation. This was *Alice in Wonderland* material that would have made the paedophile Lewis Carroll (Charles Lutwidge Dodgson) proud. Why? Because it also involved child engineering, individually and on a massive scale.

Argentia is a 2 square mile peninsula; 4 miles south is Placentia, a small township. Argentia was originally settled by the French as a fishing settlement in the 1630s, called 'Petit Plaisance' ('Pleasant Little Place'). The French lost control of Argentia in 1713 to the British, who retained an anglocized version of Argentia as 'Little Placentia'. In Latin, 'Argentia' means 'Land of Silver'. The name 'Argentia' was officially adopted for Little Placentia in 1901. So there was now a 2 square mile peninsula called 'Argentia', and a township 4 miles south called 'Placentia'.

Newfoundland then underwent British doublecross sabotage in order to render it unsustainable.The British Commission then took control in 1934 and the now unfounded

Newfoundland remained a dominion in name only – to keep the masses fooled most of the time, and for as long as possible.[84]

Argentia
Argentia resistance circa 1901.
HMS *Prince of Wales* at Placentia, 1941.
Placentia Bay.
Placentia

---

[84] In WWI, the 1st Newfoundland Regiment, was almost completely wiped out on its first day in the Somme by the German Army on 1 July 1916. The survivors received the title 'Royal' but ended up with a war debt that became unsustainable in the post-war era. This was followed by planned political scandals and corruption by Prime Minister Sir Richard Squires, who was arrested in 1923 by the Attorney General. Squires' government then fell, a worse government came into power, then Squires was re-elected in 1928 only to be hit by the Great Depression, which placed Newfoundland in stasis from 1929 to 1939. Newfoundland relied on fish, paper and mineral exports and these were well down, so on 5 April 1932, a mob of 10,000 people (virtually the entire population) marched on the House of Assembly at the 'Colonial Building' and Prime Minister Squires was forced to flee, unable to contest the election later that year. The Previous Prime Minister, Alderice, got back in, then requested the British government to take direct control, with the proviso that Newfoundland get itself back when it became self-sustaining. Britain was primarily concerned with Newfoundland's war-debt payments so it established the Newfoundland Royal Commission, headed by Baron Amulree, a Scottish peer (they're always British agents). Almost immediately (1933), he assessed Newfoundland's political culture as 'intrinsically corrupt', its economic prospects 'bleak', and suggested replacing the government with a British Commission. Newfoundland Prime Minister Alderice's government then voted itself out of existence in December 1933.

Lend-Lease in Argentia, or is that Placentia

From 1934, Newfoundland was to become British land which, under Lend-Lease, Britain lent to America for a series of American military bases.

Lend-lease was an exchange of US warships for British military bases or land used for the military in the Western Hemisphere. In 1940, Argentia (2 square mile peninsula) was selected as it had secure deepwater anchorage in Ship Harbour and adjoining Fox Harbour, flat land for an airfield, and an existing railway line.

Under the Emergency Powers Defence Act 1940, the Argentia villagers were kicked out of their homes on 28 December 1940 and moved to Placentia 4 miles south. The homes were then burnt down or bulldozed. The US flag was raised in Argentia on 13 February 1941 and five months later, the Navy Operating Base Argentia was officially commissioned on 15 July 1941.

Three weeks later on 7 August 1941, President Roosevelt turned up in his USS *Augusta* (CA-31) heavy cruiser, anchored at Ship Harbour, inspected the base, then spent two days fishing. Prime Minister Churchill then turned up in his HMS *Prince of Wales* on 9 August and anchored at Ship Harbour, leaving on 12 August 1941. They met and discussed "the war strategies and logistics once the U.S. joined the war" which meant that Pearl Harbor had to be on the agenda.

Churchill, Roosevelt and their aides then negotiated the wording of a press release they termed "a joint statement". They left on 12 August, and the joint statement was released two days later in Washington D.C. and London on 14 August 1941. Two weeks later, the Naval Station Argentia was officially commissioned by the US Navy (28 August 1941).

King.
Marshall.
Dill.
Harriman.
Turner
Stark.
Pound.
Churchill.
Roosevelt.
USS *Augusta*.

The Navy Operating Base Argentia was officially commissioned on 15 July 1941, and; the Naval Station Argentia was officially commissioned by the US Navy on 28 August 1941. So the Navy Operating Base Argentia only officially existed for 44 days (15 July–28 August 1941) while the Atlantic Charter/ Lend-Lease/ Pearl Harbor/ Checker Children were negotiated.

This further placed Argentia in no man's land – was it British, was it American, was it French or Canadian, was it the Dominion of Newfoundland, or was it part of the British Dominions until it paid off its WWI war debts and became self-sufficient? Was it the land, the base, the water or the name that was owned by whichever sovereign entity?

Newfoundland was an *asset* that was confused in status, and continually traded and rolled over from 1713 to 1994. It's true identity was dictated, deniable, and transferable under 'might is right', and who had the best media coverage.

The land had its *status* changed (Newfoundland 1713; Dominion of Newfoundland, 1907–34; to voluntarily giving up self-rule in favour of direct control from London (1934–49); then progressively handed over to Canada from 1949 to 1994.

The land had its *name* changed (Argentia, 1630; Little Placentia, 1713; Argentia, 1901, then Argentia became part of Placentia in 1991); the land went from British to American ownership with the American Bases Act on 11 June 1941, but on 12 August 1941 according to the British; the land was traded for ships (12 August 1941, not signed for, but announced on 14 August 1941); meetings were held on an American ship (*Augusta)* in exchange for British land, and on a British ship (the aptly named *Prince of Wales*) in exchange for the American Presidency; the land was 'Navy Operating Base Argentia' on 15 July 1941 (British controlled land), then 'Naval Station Argentia' on 28 August 1941 (American controlled land); then the British sat side by side at Argentia (Royal Naval Air Station) on the American base (Fort McAndrew Army base) and kicked Canada out (to Bay Bulls); then the entire charade was handed over to Canada in stages in 1949 (under the cover of joining Canada), 1975 (end of Lend-Lease) and 1994 (end of Cold War), by which time it had become a ghost town, those with memories faded, silenced, dead, or too confused to warrant enthusiastic reading in history books.

The Newfoundland Escort Force (NEF) was established in 1941 to safeguard Allied trans-Atlantic convoys from German attack in the mid-Atlantic Ocean gap . . . while the ships carried essential supplies from North America to Britain. NEF protection ran from where Canada left off and the British Royal Navy escorts picked up. From 1941–43, the commander of all naval forces in the Western Atlantic flew his flag in Argentia with their first mission on 17 September 1941.

The Argentia facilities continued to expand with a 7,000 ton floating dock, but . . . the British Admiralty then turned around and established a Royal Naval Air Station at Argentia, the American facilities reserved for the exclusive use to repair and refit British Royal Navy escorts groups . . . but only once the Americans had built Argentia.

Americans retained and maintained the adjoining Fort McAndrew Army base (anti-aircraft) and a naval air station, but the Royal Canadian Navy only had access to Argentia for emergency repairs, so they had to develop their own repair facility 65 miles east at Bay Bulls.

Like elsewhere, in Argentia, the British were giving with one hand and taking with the other. Perhaps they had spent too much time colonising India and had become Indian-givers. Certainly the Indians were an inspiration for the Jews and the Jews now controlled the British – Churchill himself being a Jew, as was Roosevelt. When the Jews were travelling around looking for countries to scam, they went to India and found the Indians were already practising all the trickery the Jews were proposing. Go rascist that!

By 1943, 10,000 U.S. personnel had passed through Argentia, in their words "to the European Theatre" . . . "Oh, let's go to Europe and watch a move shall we."

Argentia personell numbers then rose and fell according to which war was on or off picking up "for the Cold War in 1947–48" to 7,000, and by the end of the Korean War in 1953, to 8,500 personnel. By 1969 the total U.S. Navy and Marine personell dropped to 3,000, and by 1971, it was 1,000 and getting ready to gift to Canada, now that Newfoundland's WWI war debt had been paid off.

Fort McAndrew Army base was renamed McAndrew Air Force Base in 1948, deactivated in 1955 and turned over to the US Navy. The focus had moved to radar. Remote was king and they moved further up the coast closer to Russia. In the 1960s, Naval Station Argentia then became a key "node" in the U.S. Navy's SOSUS underwater hydrophone system. As such, it became a target for several espionage attempts by the Soviet Union.

In 1973, Naval Air Station Argentia closed. Newfoundland had become a Canadian province in 1949, so by 1975, the assets were transferred to Canada under the 1941 lend-lease program.

In 1991, Argentia became part of Placentia. Then in 1994, Naval Operating Base Argentia (one of the US Navy's most modern facilities) was decommissioned, all transferred to Canada as its new 10th province. Argentia then become a ghost town of empty military buildings and the airfield remained abandoned until May 2008 when it was used for Air Cadet gliding practise . . . windy enough.

The Atlantic Charter Joint Non-Declaration

The Atlantic Charter was originally called the "Joint Declaration by the President and the Prime Minister" and known as the "Joint Declaration", but within 12 days the *Daily Herald* conveniently coined the catchy phrase "Atlantic Charter" for the disingenuous document.

Some say it was a cigar smoking piss-up, but they discussed the blueprint for the world after World War II, and this included Checker Children, where foreigners would become the President of the United States. Although this was not stated in writing, but nor was the document ever signed.[85]

Officially the Atlantic Charter Joint Declaration points were:

1. No territorial gains were to be sought by the U.S. or U.K. in WWII.
2. Territorial adjustments in accord with the wishes of the peoples concerned.
3. All peoples had a right to self-determination.
4. Trade Barriers to be lowered.
5. Global economic cooperation for the advancement of social welfare.
6. Freedom from want and fear.
7. Freedom of the seas.
8. Disarm aggressor nations now and disarm everyone after the war.

---

[85] Churchill claimed to have a signed copy, and that both signatures were done by Roosevelt.
Wikipedia: "Archives at the FDR Library show that at a press conference in December 1944, Roosevelt admitted: 'Nobody signed the Atlantic Charter'. In Churchill's account of the Yalta Conference he [Churchill] quotes Roosevelt saying of the unwritten British constitution that: 'It was like the Atlantic Charter – the document did not exist, yet all the world knew about it. Among his papers he [Churchill] had found one copy signed by himself [Roosevelt] and me [Churchill], but strange to say both signatures were in his [Roosevelt's] own handwriting."
So it is hard to say who signed the Atlantic Charter twice, and whose possession the forged signed copy is in. Confusion generally means another agenda. For Churchill that was Chequer Children. As an illegitimate British Royal, he also represented the Germans. So the German Nazi contract killer George H. W. Bush/ George H. Scherff Jr. became U.S. President 1989–93, followed by Churchill's purposefully conceived son, Prince William James Churchill, who became U.S. President William Jefferson Clinton, 1993–2001.
Son of a Freemason: "The accounts at the time were all done as trade, not money, and the accountants kept three sets of books, one for them, one in the safe, and one for the other accountant. This stopped the accountants getting knocked off to eliminate the record of the trade transaction – especially when dealing with anyone who was suspect. This is called Lodge Accounting – as in Freemasons. Accountants now keep two sets of books."

Of course these were all a ruse, as none of this happened. In fact, the opposite happened. Instead of territorial gains, the U.K. took over the U.S. by slight of hand. Those who argued against territorial adjustments were killed at war. Rather than self-determination, people were reliant on Lend-Lease, the Marshall Plan, and social welfare. Trade barriers then rose and fell according to the most recent hostage crisis, as did the oil prices, so hostage crises were staged to increase oil prices and trade revenue. The Cold War meant that a third of the world lived in want and fear, another third lived in want, and another third lived in fear, and less than 10% lived outside want, fear, and social welfare. Authorities are near powerless against pirates, ships are continually sabotage in secret trade wars, the U.S. secretly downed at least 15 Russian ships and submarines during the Cold War . . . and the principle nations of WWII increased their arms.

So the 'Joint Declaration by the President and the Prime Minister'/ 'Atlantic Charter' was a cigar smoking piss-up discussing shameful aspects of WWII . . . like the preparation of Pearl Harbor and Checker Children.

The Atlantic Charter in Non-Existent Waters

On the morning of Saturday, 9 August 1941, the *Prince of Wales* sailed into Placentia Bay greeted by a line of U.S. ships, and President Roosevelt on the USS *Augusta*. Churchill hopped on board and said: "At long last, Mr. President" and handed Roosevelt a letter from King George VI which outlined the need to give England everything she asked for in order to rescue Europe from Hitler (the British creation and agent), and the Checker Child plan which was guaranteed to put America back in the black with full compensation.

Churchill then made an official statement for which there is no recording . . . Things don't fail in an allied military ceremony, unless they're instructed to fail. So the sound-film crew failed to record Churchill's official statement, twice, as instructed.

On Sunday 10 August, a church parade was held on the British' *Prince of Wales*. Churchill selected hyms, sung by naval clergy from both nations, behind a lectern draped with the British and American flags, as U.S. aircraft stormed overhead.

Spymaster: "The Atlantic Charter was more like a daylight robbery without arms, where the British confessed a little bit of the truth and pointed out to the hard-headed Americans that they were really truely broke and couldn't afford to buy anything.

"Whereupon the Americans came up with the idea of Lend-Lease and Admiral King said to President Roosevelt: 'You're an idiot. Those Limey's will rob us blind and we wont' see a cent of it until fifty years after the war.' Churchill replied: 'Would you rather deal with the Germans. I'm sure you'll find they'll be rather accommodating.'

"The British then asked for every weapon the American Generals wanted to hang on to for training their own army and navy, and Admiral King was largely correct. It was a robbery without arms and he called the Brits, 'The Beggar Nation', and Churchill 'The Ultimate Beggar'.

"Roosevelt accepted that strictly speaking: 'This was largely true, but for reasons of tact, it was not to be said', whereupon Admiral King had a cow."

In the public recapitulation of what the British had offered to the Americans, Roosevelt made great play of "lending a garden hose to a neighbour to help put out a fire". This was his appeasement for how Lend-Lease should be dressed up in his fireside chats on radio: ". . . lending a garden hose to a neighbour to help put out a fire that could burn down your house as well as his. In the midst of your neighbour's crisis, you would not ask him for the cost of the hose; rather, you would lend it to him on the understanding that you would get it back – or it would be replaced if it was destroyed – once the fire was doused."

Spymaster: "Roosevelt carefully avoided mentioning the British had previously been paying the US with British-made counterfeit American notes.

"Roosevelt also did not mention that much of the American military material that was so-called 'lent to Britain', would be arriving back not in working order and covered in bullet holes. Both were carefully glossed over.

"Roosevelt made great play of what Britain had offered, without going into where they were, because this would indicate to even the layman, that America intended to play the part of an Imperialist Power post-war, and he wanted to keep this a secret, as he did Pearl Harbor. "Still, the Checker Child plan has remained secret until this day."

Churchill's greatest point was making out that the Beggar Nation of Europe, as Admiral King referred to it, was on the ropes and 99 % defeated, and this was the last assistance he could probably be able to ask for. This defeated any opposition from the American Generals. They virtually had to give Britain everything she asked for, even though America's own situation was pretty desperate.

Spymaster: "The ordinary British Naval matelot (sailor) was in love with the Americans from the moment the American fourstack WWI destroyers were handed over to them. They were brimming with food, tobacco, steaks, hamburgers, and all the things that half-starved British matelots loved to eat. And when the American sailors told them that the ships would swop ends and turn turtle without warning, the British sailors were too chuffed to care and replied: 'At least we'll be drowning with a full guts. There's even cake.'

"There was a little bit of comment about forming the United Naitons, but the British Navy didn't care about that. All they wanted to do was examine the food cupboards and how much loot they had."

On the last day, Tuesday 12 August 1941, sailors from both navies lined their ships, the U.S. national anthem was played, and Churchill saluted as they passed all the U.S. warships, some of which were now his.

The *Prince of Wales* then set off on a convoy route, Churchill passing twice through the three lines of a convoy. They stopped at Iceland to review the troops, then made two more course changes, returning to Scapa Flow. Churchill then took the train back to London and was met by some of his cabinet members and his wife, Clementine.

This had all the hallmarks of a military birthing ceremony, with the King's blessing and instructions – Churchill being King George VI's uncle and father of his daughter.

The Atlantic Charter was one of the largest daylight robberies in history, future promises were made, the protocols of the documents never came to pass, the sound recordings failed, the documents were never signed, and as soon as the land was given and the buildings were built, the land was occupied.

Argentia had half a dozen name changes, status changes, and ownership stages, passing through genocide, corruption and debt, to surplus, and through self-rule, dominion status, British rule, and American occupation to Canadian ownership.

So the Atlantic Charter on the ships *Augusta* and *Prince of Wales* in Placentia Bay, outside the soon to be American and British naval air bases at Argentia was a handshake get-to-know piss up shenanigan – an extension of *Breeding Concubines* – Checker Children, and the false flag Pearl Harbor.

Roosevelt was looking for any excuse to enter WWII. Not even the Nazi attack on the Soviet Union in June 1941, incidents in the North Atlantic between German submarines, the American freighter *Robin Moor* and the destroyer *Greer*, followed by U.S. Navy convoy escorts for American and Allied ships, orders to shoot German and Italian warships on sight, and the undeclared naval war on Germany . . . were enough for Roosevelt and the American people to formally declare war.

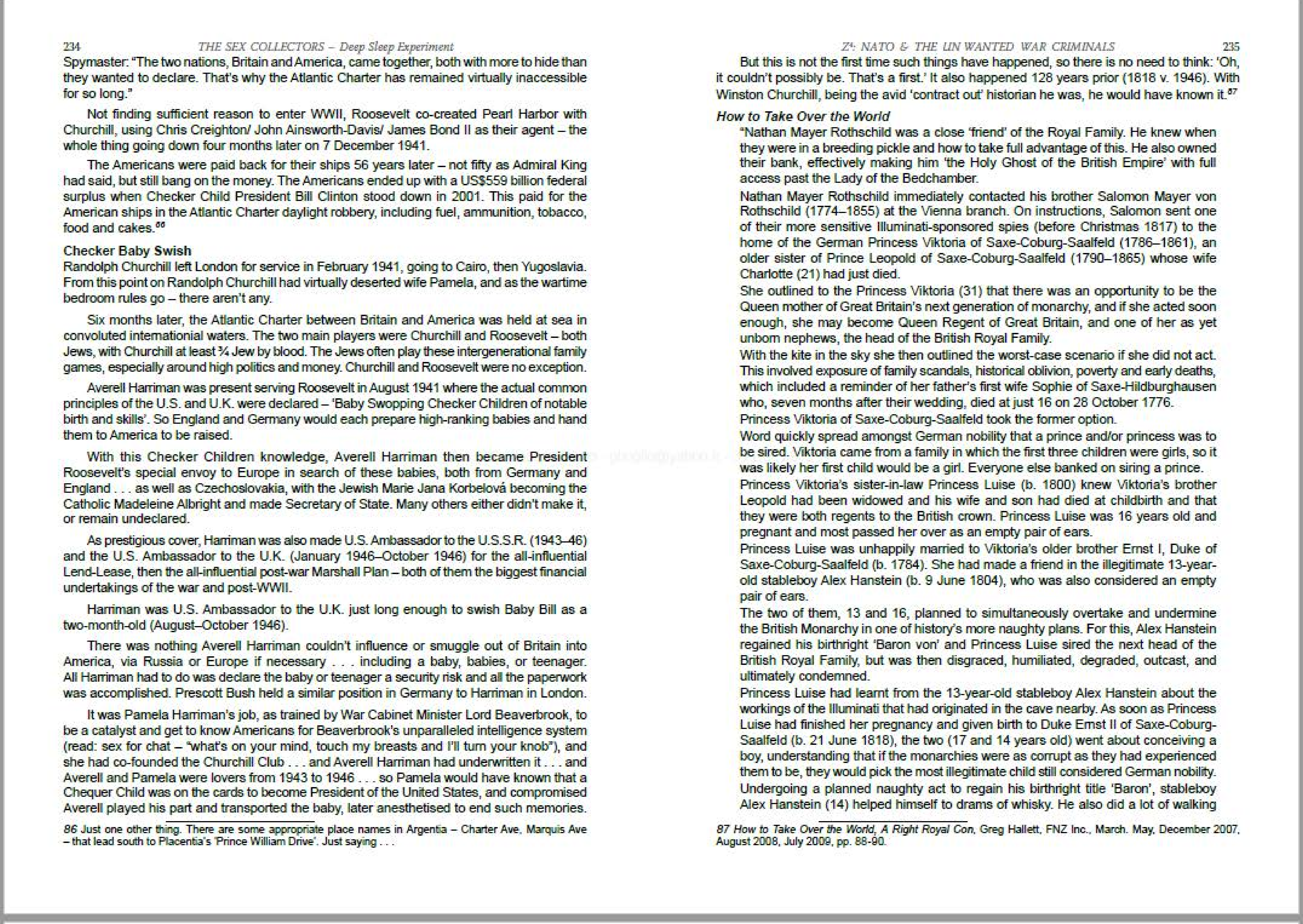

Spymaster: "The two nations, Britain and America, came together, both with more to hide than they wanted to declare. That's why the Atlantic Charter has remained virtually inaccessible for so long."

Not finding sufficient reason to enter WWII, Roosevelt co-created Pearl Harbor with Churchill, using Chris Creighton/ John Ainsworth-Davis/ James Bond II as their agent – the whole thing going down four months later on 7 December 1941.

The Americans were paid back for their ships 56 years later – not fifty as Admiral King had said, but still bang on the money. The Americans ended up with a US$559 billion federal surplus when Checker Child President Bill Clinton stood down in 2001. This paid for the American ships in the Atlantic Charter daylight robbery, including fuel, ammunition, tobacco, food and cakes.[86]

Checker Baby Swish

Randolph Churchill left London for service in February 1941, going to Cairo, then Yugoslavia. From this point on Randolph Churchill had virtually deserted wife Pamela, and as the wartime bedroom rules go – there aren't any.

Six months later, the Atlantic Charter between Britain and America was held at sea in convoluted internationial waters. The two main players were Churchill and Roosevelt – both Jews, with Churchill at least ¾ Jew by blood. The Jews often play these intergenerational family games, especially around high politics and money. Churchill and Roosevelt were no exception.

Averell Harriman was present serving Roosevelt in August 1941 where the actual common principles of the U.S. and U.K. were declared – 'Baby Swopping Checker Children of notable birth and skills'. So England and Germany would each prepare high-ranking babies and hand them to America to be raised.

With this Checker Children knowledge, Averell Harriman then became President Roosevelt's special envoy to Europe in search of these babies, both from Germany and England . . . as well as Czechoslovakia, with the Jewish Marie Jana Korbelová becoming the Catholic Madeleine Albright and made Secretary of State. Many others either didn't make it, or remain undeclared.

As prestigious cover, Harriman was also made U.S. Ambassador to the U.S.S.R. (1943–46) and the U.S. Ambassador to the U.K. (January 1946–October 1946) for the all-influential Lend-Lease, then the all-influential post-war Marshall Plan – both of them the biggest financial undertakings of the war and post-WWII.

Harriman was U.S. Ambassador to the U.K. just long enough to swish Baby Bill as a two-month-old (August–October 1946).

There was nothing Averell Harriman couldn't influence or smuggle out of Britain into America, via Russia or Europe if necessary . . . including a baby, babies, or teenager. All Harriman had to do was declare the baby or teenager a security risk and all the paperwork was accomplished. Prescott Bush held a similar position in Germany to Harriman in London.

It was Pamela Harriman's job, as trained by War Cabinet Minister Lord Beaverbrook, to be a catalyst and get to know Americans for Beaverbrook's unparalleled intelligence system (read: sex for chat – "what's on your mind, touch my breasts and I'll turn your knob"), and she had co-founded the Churchill Club . . . and Averell Harriman had underwritten it . . . and Averell and Pamela were lovers from 1943 to 1946 . . . so Pamela would have known that a Chequer Child was on the cards to become President of the United States, and compromised Averell played his part and transported the baby, later anesthetised to end such memories.

---

[86] Just one other thing. There are some appropriate place names in Argentia – Charter Ave, Marquis Ave – that lead south to Placentia's 'Prince William Drive'. Just saying . . .

But this is not the first time such things have happened, so there is no need to think: 'Oh, it couldn't possibly be. That's a first.' It also happened 128 years prior (1818 v. 1946). With Winston Churchill, being the avid 'contract out' historian he was, he would have known it.[87]

How to Take Over the World

> "Nathan Mayer Rothschild was a close 'friend' of the Royal Family. He knew when they were in a breeding pickle and how to take full advantage of this. He also owned their bank, effectively making him 'the Holy Ghost of the British Empire' with full access past the Lady of the Bedchamber.
>
> Nathan Mayer Rothschild immediately contacted his brother Salomon Mayer von Rothschild (1774–1855) at the Vienna branch. On instructions, Salomon sent one of their more sensitive Illuminati-sponsored spies (before Christmas 1817) to the home of the German Princess Viktoria of Saxe-Coburg-Saalfeld (1786–1861), an older sister of Prince Leopold of Saxe-Coburg-Saalfeld (1790–1865) whose wife Charlotte (21) had just died.
>
> She outlined to the Princess Viktoria (31) that there was an opportunity to be the Queen mother of Great Britain's next generation of monarchy, and if she acted soon enough, she may become Queen Regent of Great Britain, and one of her as yet unborn nephews, the head of the British Royal Family.
>
> With the kite in the sky she then outlined the worst-case scenario if she did not act. This involved exposure of family scandals, historical oblivion, poverty and early deaths, which included a reminder of her father's first wife Sophie of Saxe-Hildburghausen who, seven months after their wedding, died at just 16 on 28 October 1776.
>
> Princess Viktoria of Saxe-Coburg-Saalfeld took the former option.
>
> Word quickly spread amongst German nobility that a prince and/or princess was to be sired. Viktoria came from a family in which the first three children were girls, so it was likely her first child would be a girl. Everyone else banked on siring a prince.
>
> Princess Viktoria's sister-in-law Princess Luise (b. 1800) knew Viktoria's brother Leopold had been widowed and his wife and son had died at childbirth and that they were both regents to the British crown. Princess Luise was 16 years old and pregnant and most passed her over as an empty pair of ears.
>
> Princess Luise was unhappily married to Viktoria's older brother Ernst I, Duke of Saxe-Coburg-Saalfeld (b. 1784). She had made a friend in the illegitimate 13-year-old stableboy Alex Hanstein (b. 9 June 1804), who was also considered an empty pair of ears.
>
> The two of them, 13 and 16, planned to simultaneously overtake and undermine the British Monarchy in one of history's more naughty plans. For this, Alex Hanstein regained his birthright 'Baron von' and Princess Luise sired the next head of the British Royal Family, but was then disgraced, humiliated, degraded, outcast, and ultimately condemned.
>
> Princess Luise had learnt from the 13-year-old stableboy Alex Hanstein about the workings of the Illuminati that had originated in the cave nearby. As soon as Princess Luise had finished her pregnancy and given birth to Duke Ernst II of Saxe-Coburg-Saalfeld (b. 21 June 1818), the two (17 and 14 years old) went about conceiving a boy, understanding that if the monarchies were as corrupt as they had experienced them to be, they would pick the most illegitimate child still considered German nobility.
>
> Undergoing a planned naughty act to regain his birthright title 'Baron', stableboy Alex Hanstein (14) helped himself to drams of whisky. He also did a lot of walking

---

[87] *How to Take Over the World, A Right Royal Con*, Greg Hallett, FNZ Inc., March. May, December 2007, August 2008, July 2009, pp. 88-90.

> with the horses and together they helped conceive a male child. Within five months they had conceived (20 November 1818 ± 18 days) a brother to Duke Ernst II. He was born on 26 August 1819 as Prince Albert of Saxe-Coburg-Saalfeld, later Prince Albert of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha and Queen Victoria's husband.
>
> Included in Princess Viktoria of Saxe-Coburg-Saalfeld's proviso was that she did not have to have sex with The Forgotten Prince/Duke of Kent and Strathearn. She just had to get pregnant in the time she was with him. He too knew his role and left her presence as soon as her pregnancy had been confirmed.
>
> Hastily, The Forgotten Son (50) married (29 May 1818) the German Princess Viktoria of Saxe-Coburg-Saalfeld (31) in Germany, and again on 13 July 1818 at a double ceremony with his brother at Kew in London, just to make sure everyone got their invitations, and the point. Five weeks later, Princess Viktoria/Duchess of Kent and Strathearn conceived (8 August 1818) and this was confirmed by November and The Forgotten Son was then allowed to continue on his affairs, but they had to remain strictly secret until the child was born.
>
> His duty done, the future Queen Victoria's father (The Forgotten Son, Edward, Duke of Kent and Strathearn) took up with the new mistress provided to him – Julie de St Laurent – for the next 18 months.
>
> The Stuart and Hanover lines had inheritable sicknesses. To add a touch of mystery to Victoria's birth, 'it was decided to break the sickness chain and use a surrogate father', giving rise to rumour that Queen Victoria was an illegitimate child. Reputed to be some German Baron, Victoria's father was the London-based Rothschild (Nathan Mayer), as was her uncle King William IV (Amschel Mayer).
>
> Alexandrina Victoria was born on 24 May 1819 and she would become Queen Victoria. Her 'father' The Forgotten Son/Duke of Kent and Strathearn, had a brief bout of 'pneumonia' and died eight months later on 23 January 1820."[88]

Conceiving the Chequer Baby

Pamela Digby Churchill's equivalent threat would have been something like:

> "Unless you agree to have Prime Minister Prince Winston Churchill's illegitimate son, we will expose you and your family scandals; including your easy lays with Scottish soldiers of low rank and American air gunners; your many sexual affairs with prominent men; we can show you were your aunt's child; your mother's older sister, the Honourable Margaret Cecilia Bruce, Countess of Bedford, Lady in Waiting to Queen consort Mary, wife of King George V, which would embarrass the Monarchy and end any career you might have; your great-great aunt, Lady Jane Digby was notorious for her scandalous personal life; a courtesan in Europe, she married four times, one of them bigamously; had seven children to five men including an illegitimate child to the mad Bavarian King Ludwig; then an affair with his son, King Otto of Greece, her own son's half-brother; lived with an Albanian highwayman; married a Bedouin Sheikh; stole letters from the British Ambassador in Damascus and tried to have an affair with him; contributed to the *Karma Sutra* in both translation and positions; and your family originated from the Scottish family, Bruce, originally 'De Burgh' who were the most prolific harlots of France."

To which Pamela, 'the young Mrs. Churchill' would have replied:

> "Darling. Civil. There is no need for such rancour. If you're asking me to have sex with Winston Churchill, I already have. You know I love powerful men, and Winston could not possibly have passed my sights. I've been dilettante with him at No. 10 since the war began, including many nights alone together in the bunker, and you know my husband hasn't been with me in four years, and it is wartime and few of those chastity morales apply. If you are asking me to sire a child to Winnie, I don't think that has been a problem.
>
> "I have discussed the 'Joint Declaration of the President and Prime Minister' with darling Averell, whom you know I know intimately, and it would be my patriotic honour and duty to cement the allied post-war status of both great nations.
>
> "So, if you are doing me the honour of requesting my services, geneology and nature, to carry a Prince as a Chequer to one day become President of the United States, I shall receive such a request as judgment in honour on my character."

But there was no need for this, as Gurdjieff said:

'If you pick people to do what they enjoy doing,
there is little difficulty in getting them to do it. It's all in the profile.'

> Gurdjieff: "You have to work with people who want to do what they are doing. If all your prostitutes are sex addicts, or actually wish to be rooting like mink, then things will be a lot more pleasureable for all concerned. There is no need to resort to compulsion . . . Gurdjieff was a maker of policy and an in-depth thinker on the subject of spy training, which is what made him so valuable to intelligence on both sides . . . Gurdjieff would often have lunch with the Chief of the Gestapo in Paris. These were often shared with high-ranking MI-6 officers and resistance men. Gurdjieff knew that espionage was a huge racket in which only the honourable suffer."[89]

Pamela knew very well, that all anyone had to do to bed her was touch her breasts, so her reply was more implicit:

"I am aware of the 'Joint Declaration of the President and Prime Minister'
and I would be happy to carry the Chequer Child of Winston."

Pamela then pulled a slip of paper from inside her sleeve and cursed over the handwritten pointers:

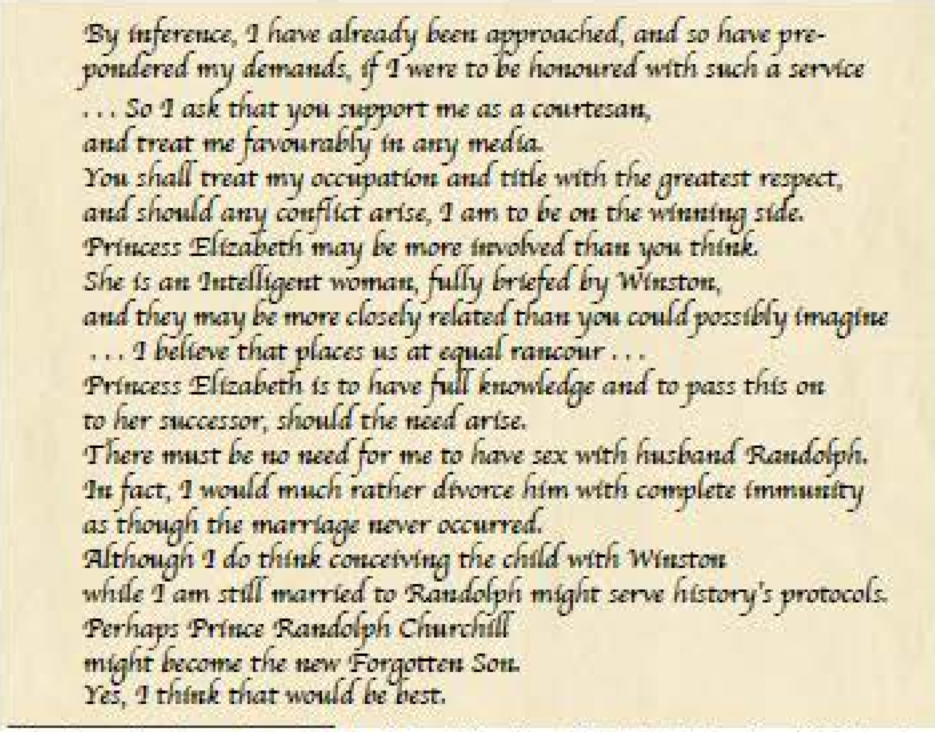

By inference, I have already been approached, and so have pre-
pondered my demands, if I were to be honoured with such a service
. . . So I ask that you support me as a courtesan,
and treat me favourably in any media.
You shall treat my occupation and title with the greatest respect,
and should any conflict arise, I am to be on the winning side.
Princess Elizabeth may be more involved than you think.
She is an Intelligent woman, fully briefed by Winston,
and they may be more closely related than you could possibly imagine
. . . I believe that places us at equal rancour . . .
Princess Elizabeth is to have full knowledge and to pass this on
to her successor, should the need arise.
There must be no need for me to have sex with husband Randolph.
In fact, I would much rather divorce him with complete immunity
as though the marriage never occurred.
Although I do think conceiving the child with Winston
while I am still married to Randolph might serve history's protocols.
Perhaps Prince Randolph Churchill
might become the new Forgotten Son.
Yes, I think that would be best.

---

[88] How to Take Over the World, A Right Royal Con, Greg Hallett, FNZ Inc., March. May, December 2007, August 2008, July 2009, pp. 88-90.

[89] *Stalin's British Training, Breeding Concubines, Paedophiles at War*, Greg Hallett, FNZ Inc. March, September 2007, March 2008, p. 191.

The fix was in, the agreement made, and 'the young Mrs. Churchill' and the old Mr Churchill went about repeating the history of 128 years ago.

Understanding nobility to be as corrupt as she had just learnt and experienced, Pamela knew the most illegitimate child still considered British royalty would be the Chequer President; and as Winston was the son of King Edward VII, it was simply another planned naughty act in which her son would regain the British title and birthright of President of the British Plantation, whom voters know as the President of the United States of America . . .

Of course she grew up with such knowledge, so it was second nature to her.

Understanding the need for a son, Winston helped himself to drams of whisky and did a lot of walking from August to the end of November 1945. Together they conceived a son somewhere between 26 October and 2 December 1945.

As soon as she knew she was pregnant to Winston Churchill, Pamela filed for divorce from Randolph Churchill on 2 December 1945. She needed to be separate from her husband, and have no contact while she was pregnant. She couldn't possibly carry a half-brother to her husband and think straight.

Randolph Churchill never knew Pamela was pregnant. Winston did and hid her away, sometimes at Lord Beaverbook's country estate where her other son Winston had been raised during the war, but was now being raised at a boarding school in Switzerland.

Pamela only had to get pregnant in the time she was married to Randolph, and with Winston, who knew the role well. Winston's mother, Jennie Jerome had done exactly the same thing with King Edward VII and Randolph Churchill Sr.

Prince William James Mountbatten Churchill
was born on or about 19 August 1946
and he would become President William Clinton.

Pamela's life as a mother with two teenage children

Winston Churchill finished his final term (third or fourth) as Prime Minister of Great Britain on 7 April 1955, then hung out in the Meditterranean with Aristotle Onassis covering for his drug deals whenever they came under question.

Pamela followed suit and had an affair with Onassis' shipping and narcotics partner, the Golden Greek, Stavros Niarchos, in the late 1950s.

So even in the late 1950s, Winston and Pamela were working it as high-level spies against competition to the British Monarchy. But what do you expect? This is what the illegitimate children of Royalty and the Rothschilds do, plus the economies of nations revolve around war or drugs. For Winston it was both, making him a talking Republican and a walking Democrat.

The Forgotten Son, Randolph Churchill, was then allowed to continue on his affairs, but they had to remain secret until the child was born. So he married June Osborne on 2 November 1948 and began a twenty-year affair with his neighbour, Natalie Bevan, around the same time. That shut him up from any morality tales.

The Forgotten Randolph had brief bouts of madness and died 22 years later.

You've got to wonder whether Natalie Bevan was an MI-5 plant as her husband, Bobby Bevan, put up with the affair for 20 years, and they were neighbours. Randolph and Bobby were also good friends. Go figure. It stinks of MI-5. June Osborne-Churchill was also in on it.

The only person who wasn't in on it was Randolph.

Religion has no Place in Morality Plays

Pamela Churchill later converted to Catholicism – the secret religion of her semi-stepsister/stepdaughter Princess/Queen Elizabeth II – then obtained an annulment of her marriage to Randolph Churchill from the Catholic Church.

This made Pamela far more 'Mrs Winston Churchill'
than 'Mrs Randolph Churchill'.
Randolph was to be forgotten.
Winston was not.

This was all a case of history repeating from a century and a quarter earlier and it simply had to work as this was the history that rescued the British Monarchy out of German Noble stock; and this new history was reinventing the American Presidency out of British Royal stock . . . and German Nazi stock.

All of this suited the high-taxation Rothschilds who fronted as 'The Crown'.

In the years to come, it would mean that the Queen of England could write the laws of the United States, change social policy, and have first dibs on taxation – which is exactly what has occurred.

The U.S. President is always the one with the most British Royal blood, so they have never resisted. That should irk the voters.

As a century prior (1818 v. 1926), 'the Saxe Coburg and Gotha lines still had inheritable sicknesses'. To add a touch of mystery to Queen Elizabeth II's birth, 'it was decided to break the sickness and brain-dead chain and use a surrogate father', giving rise to rumour that Queen Elizabeth II was the illegitimate child of Winston Churchill.

Winston was also Elizabeth's great-uncle on her house-father's side (King George VI) and the grandson and great-grandson of the London-based Rothschild, Nathan Mayer. The British Royal Family are also a subset of the Rothschilds – essentially the Rothschilds in modern day baroque drag.

War Shenanigans – Breeding Concubines for Control

It was the Rothschilds who were funding all sides of World War Two – the British, American, German and Russian – so they thought up all the shenanigans and had final dibs on which loose pregnancies would be carried to term for maximum control – which always equals profit.

As a result of Pamela Churchill's agreement to carry 'The Illegitimate Prince' to term, she felt no ill effects in the media, only constant praise, married well, the rich funded her (including the French, Baron Élie de Rothschild), she never had to work for money another day in her life, and she moved from doing French-to-English translations at the British Foreign Office, to US Ambassador to France, which was as high as she could possibly go, and was higher political office than any of her nine relatives in Parliament and the House of Lords had ever achieved.

Pamela Digby Churchill Leland Harriman
had two children to Winston Churchill – King Edward VII's son.
They were Winston Churchill III and Bill Clinton.
The mother of a President – Pamela Digby.

In the old fashion morality play, the new version is the CIA reincarnation play, which the Ivy League CIA so avidly follow via the Nazis and through the Tibetians . . .

The CIA Reincarnation Play

A Tale of Morality,
Mortality,
Golden Handshakes & Intrigue

The Players

Pamela Digby . . . as . . . Princess Luise
Bill Clinton. . . as . . . Alex Hanstein
Hillary Clinton . . . as . . . Queen Victoria
Chelsea Clinton . . . as . . . King Edward VII
Winston Churchill . . . as . . . Karl Baron von Hanstein
Virginia Clinton Kelley . . . as . . . Wilhelmine Baronin von Haynau
Roger Clinton Sr. . . . as . . . Adalbert Baron von Hanstein
Raymond Clinton . . . as . . . Wilhelm Otto Baron von Hanstein
Richard Kelley . . . as . . . Edmund Ludwig Baron von Hanstein
Randolph Churchill . . . as . . . Duke Ernst II
George Herbert Walker Bush . . . as . . . Duke Ernst I
Clementine Churchill . . . as . . . Duchess of Württemberg

All of the players are based on actual people
and it is their real lives that are portrayed.

TOP SECRET: NOT FOR PUBLIC CONSUMPTION

Introduction

Pamela Digby as Princess Luise, the mother of Queen Victoria's husband, Prince Albert . . .

> *Pamela Digby as Luise Pauline Charlotte Friedrike Auguste Prinzessin von Sachsen-Gotha-Altenburg, who became Prinzessin von Sachsen-Gotha-Altenburg, then Princess Dorothea 'Louise' Pauline Charlotte Fredericka Augusta of Saxe-Gotha-Altenburg, then Duchess of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha, then Duchess of Saxony, then Luise Wettin [Princess], and died of cancer of the womb in Paris, aged 30.*

Bill Clinton as Alex Hanstein, the father of Queen Victoria's husband, Prince Albert . . .

> *Bill Clinton as stable boy Alex Hanstein who became Alexander von Hanstein, then Count of Polzig, then Maximilian Polzig [Count], then Baron von Hanstein, then Maximilian Elisaus Alexander Baron von Hanstein, the illegitimate son of Karl Baron von Hanstein and an unknown, but with Wilhelmine Baronin von Haynau as the reluctant step-mother.**

Hillary Clinton as Queen Victoria, who became Mrs Brown.

Chelsea Clinton as King Edward VII . . .

> *both of whom went to Oxford and were befriended by the Bankers' Rothschilds.*

Winston Churchill as Karl Baron von Hanstein.

Virginia Clinton Kelley as Wilhelmine Baronin von Haynau . . .

> *Great-granddaughter of King George II, and stepmother to the illegitimate Bill Clinton/ Alex Hanstein.*

Roger Clinton Sr. as Adalbert Baron von Hanstein.

Raymond Clinton as Wilhelm Otto Baron von Hanstein.

Richard Kelley as Edmund Ludwig Baron von Hanstein.

Randolph Churchill as Duke Ernst II, the house-father of Queen Victoria's husband Prince Albert, and step-father at conception and half-brother to Prince William James Clinton:

> *Randolph Churchill as HH Hereditary Prince August Karl Johannes Leopold Alexander Eduard of Saxe-Coburg-Saalfeld, Duke of Saxony, who became Duke Ernst II, Ernst II August Herzog von Sachsen-Coburg und Gotha, Duke of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha.*

George Herbert Walker Bush as Duke Ernst I:

> *Duke of Saxe-Coburg-Saalfeld, then Duke of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha from Bavaria – the cradle of Naziism, who married his niece-lover, Marie Württemberg, in preference to Princess Luise.*

Clementine Churchill as Duchess of Württemberg, Marie Württemberg:

> *Antoinette Friederike Auguste 'Marie' Anna Herzogin von Württemberg.*

Edward R. Murrow, Averell Harriman, William S. Paley, Jock Whitney, Baron Élie de Rothschild, Gianni Agnelli, Prince Aly Khan, Maurice Druon, Stavros Niarchos, and Leland Hayward as the many lovers in Paris of Luise Wettin [Princess], Duchess of Saxony.

---

* For historical reference, please refer to How to Take Over the World, A Right Royal Con, by William Shakespeare, prior to the play, pages 112-25, or purchase the full programme. Copies available at the Kremlin bathtub.

The Play

***Act One:* World War One**

Subplot: Many skimishes; The Princes' father proves himself; Breeding Concubines as spies

***Act Two:* World War Two**

Subplot: Atlantic Charter, Joint Declaration by the President and the Prime Minister, Checker Children from Chequers, many skirmishes

***Act Three:* The Prince is Swished**

Subplot: The Secret Princes' new family history is confused through murder, love, marriage, house-brother, sickness, and mort

***Act Four:* The Prince is promoted**

Subplot: Favours bestowed on the secret Prince from Count Win Rockefeller and his agent Senator William Fulbright in the Bavarian suburb of Arkansas

***Act Five:* The hidden Prince becomes President of a British Plantation**

Subplot: The Prince has a strange false history promoted which summarises the play; The Prince's house-mother dies, then the Prince's real mother dies; He mourns both, but can only outwardly mourn his house-mother.

***Act Six:* Charitable Acts of a Prince post-President of a British Plantation**

Subplot: The Prince does not interfer with politics; He is declared a Prince.

Minor Themes and Players:

Helen Clark as Adolf Hitler born in Bavaria amongst the end times of these players, the illegitimate grandson of Lionel Nathan Rothschild, a banker of these times.

Mr. Hallett as William Shakespeare authoring the shenanigans of the rich and famous.
William Shakespeare played the original role of 'catch me if you can' – the roving playwrite and escape artist.

Frank William Abagnale, Jr. played the modern day 'catch me if you can,'
Mr. Hallett played 'catch me if you can' role and lived to write about it . . .

Greg Hallett as William Shakespere
sneeks into a very expensive fundraiser dinner for
Baron von Hanstein/ Prince William Churchill Windsor/ Bill Clinton
in the fall of 2002. His walk-in is reported in the media
and the story begins to break, beginning in reverse order
with Adolf Hitler reincarnating as Helen Clark,
leader of the New World Army.

Narrator's Final Remarks:

The United States of America has been in Thralldom to Great Britain
from 1776 to 5 minutes ago,
and the current clone used is Barack Hussein Mohammed Obama –
a British citizen, and the new leader of the British Plantation.
He is Black, but not nearly the lover of Alex Hanstein . . .

Am I not the ugliest woman in Europe?
"Do you know? . . . or are you really that dumb."
"I really hope they don't find out."
Ooh!. Look at me. God I need a makeover.

Clinton's Jewish Administration

| excl. lower staff Jews ≈ 50% | as at 1998 |

Chairman Federal Reserve Bank: Alan Greenspan
Vice Chairman of Federal Reserve: Alan Blinder
Secretary of Treasury : Robert Rubin
Under Secretary of Treasury: David Lipton
Secretary of State: Madeleine Albright
Deputy Secretary of State: Peter Tarnoff
Under Secretary of State: James P. Rubin, Stuart Eizenstat
Director State Department Policy: Karen Adler
Deputy Chief of Staff: Eli Segal, Evelyn Lieberman, John Podesta
Secretary of Defense: William Cohen
Head National Security Council: Samuel Berger
National Security Council: Judith Feder, Samuel Lewis, Stanley Ross
Deputy to National Security Chief: Jim Steinberg
Chairman of Senate Committee on Homeland Security & Governmental Affairs: Joe Lieberman
Chairman Senate Select Committee on Intelligence: Dianne Feinstein, Arlen Specter
Chairman of House Foreign Affairs Committee: Tom Lantos
CIA Chief: George Tenet
General Counsel for the FBI: Howard Shapiro
Heads FBI Equal Opportunity Office: Kathleen Koch
Special Rep. to NATO: Richard Holbrooke
Director Peace Corps.: Dan Schifter
Assistant Secretary Veterans: Richard Feinberg
Assistant Secretary Education: Ron Klein
Chief of Social Security: Kenneth Apfel
Secretary of Agriculture: Dan Glickman
White House Counsel: Steve Kessler
Deputy White House Counsel: Joel Klein
White House Special Counsel: Lanny Davis
Acting Solicitor General: Seth Waxman
Assistant Attorney General: Joel Klein
Personal Chief: Robert Nash
Policy Advisor: Rahm Emanuel
Special Assistant to Clinton: Jeff Eller
President's Lawyer: Jane Sherburne
Counsel to President: Doug Sosnik
Special Counsel to The President: Lanny P. Breuer
Communications Aide: Keith Boykin, Madeleine Kunin, Robert Boorstin
Dir. Press Conferences: Margaret Hamburg
Presidential Pollster: Mark Penn
Special Liason to Jewish Community: Jay Footlik
(no other group has a special liason)
Liason to Jewish Leaders: Many Grunwald
Chief of Staff for Al Gore: Ron Klain
Special Advisor to First Lady: Sidney Blumenthal
Aide to First Lady: Susan Thomases
Chairwoman, National Economic Council: Janet Yellen
National Economic Council: Gene Sperling
Deputy Director Management & Budget: Jack Lew
Secretary of Management & Budget: Sally Katzen
Heads Council of Economic Advisors: Janet Yellen
Ecomomic Advisory: Alice Rivlin
Co-Chair Subcommittee Health & Human Services: Doug Berger
National Health Care: Ira Magaziner
Health Care Chief: Sandy Kristoff
Health Care Adviser: Tom Epstein
Chief of Food & Drug Admin: David Kessler
Food and Drug Administration: Hershel Gober
Drug Policy Coordinator: Robert Weiner
Dept. AIDS Program: David Kusnet
Asia Expert to NEC: Mark Penn
Special Middle East Representative: Dennis Ross
U.S. Trade Rep: Charlene Barshefsky
Chairman of Senate Select Committee on Ethics: Barbara Boxer ***(70)***

Senators: Herb Kohl
Frank Lautenberg
Carl Levin
Paul Wellstone
Ron Wyden ***(5)***

House of Representatives: Gary Ackerman
Howard Berman
Ben Cardin
Peter Deutsch
Eliot Engel
Bob Filner
Jon Fox
Barney Frank
Martin Frost
Sam Gejdenson
Ben Gilman
Jane Harman
Sander Levin
Nita Lowey
Jerrold Nadler
Steve Rothman
Bernie Sanders
Steve Schiff
Charles Schumer
Brad Sherman
Norman Sisisky
Henry Waxman
Robert Wexler
Sidney Yates ***(24)***

US Ambassadors
Belarus: Kenneth S. Yalowitz
Belgium: Alan J. Blinken
Bolivia: Curt W. Kamman
Brazil: Melvyn Levitsky
Canada: Gordon Giffin
Cuba: US Interest Head Michael G. Kozak
Denmark: Edward E. Elson
Egypt: Daniel C. Kurtzer
France: Felix Rohatyn
Germany: John C. Kornblum
Hungary: Donald M. Blinken
India: Frank G. Wisner
Mexico: Jeffrey Davidow
Morocco: Marc C. Ginsberg
New Zealand: Josiah H. Beeman
Norway: David B. Hermelin
Poland: Daniel Fried
Romania: Alfred H. Moses
Singapore: Timothy A. Chorba
South Africa: James A. Joseph
Sweden: Thomas L. Siebert
Switzerland: Madeleine M. Kunin
Turkey: Marc Grossman
Zambia: Arlene Render ***(24)***

Total 123+50% lower staff

MEDIA | TIME/WARNER Communications CEO: Steven J. Ross, Gerald Levin
MCA Inc. CEO: Lew Wasserman
Media magnate: Michael Ovitz
Large investor: Robert Strauss, ex-U.S. Trade Rep under Jimmy Carter & U.S. Ambassador to U.S.S.R. for George H.W. Bush.
TELEVISION | ABC owner: Leonard Harry Goldenson
ABC CEO: Thomas Murphy
ABC Head of Entertainment Division: Stuart Bloomberg
CBS founder & CEO (1927): WILLIAM S. PALEY (Russian Jew)
CBS CEO TV: Lawrence A. Tisch theaters, hotels, insurance
CBS Head Entertainment Division: Jeff Sagansky (Russian Jew)
MBS vice-president news broadcasting: Ron Nessen ex-White House press secretary for Gerald Ford
NBC Executive Producer Nightly News: Steven Friedman (failed, fired & promoted)
RCA NBC CEO: Robert Sarnoff
RCA NBC Head of Entertainment Division: David Sarnoff (father of Robert Sarnoff)
US News and World Report, Daily News CEO: Mortimer Zuckerman
Viacom MTV Nickelodeon QVC CEO: Sumner M. Redstone
FILM | 20th Century Fox CEO: Peter Chernin
Barry Diller
Columbia Pictures CEO: Victoria A. Kaufman
Paramount Pictures Chairman: Brandon Tartikoff
Paramount Communications CEO: Martin S. Davis
SONY Pictures Chairman and CEO/ Columbia Pictures Studio Chief: Peter Guber
SONY Vice Chairman: Michael P. Schulhof
Walt Disney CEO: Michael D. Eisner
BOOKS | Random House, Advanced Publications, Bride's, Gentleman's Quarterly, Glamour, House & Garden, HQ, Mademoiselle, New Yorker, Self, Vanity Fair, Vogue, Newhouse Broadcasting, (CTV): Samuel Newhouse
Simon & Schuster CEO: Richard Snyder
Western Publishing owner: Richard Bernstein
MUSIC | Capitol Records CEO: Gary Hersh
EMI Records CEO: Charles Koppelman
NEWSPAPERS/ MAGAZINES |
Daily News owner: Robert Maxwell a.k.a. Ján Ludvík Hoch
Dow Jones/ Wall St Journal CEO: Peter R. Kann
New York Post owner: Peter Kalikow
New York Times owner: Arthur Ochs Sulzberger
Stern Publishing owner, Chair & CEO: Leonard Stern Village Voice, LA Weekly, Seattle Weekly, Cleveland Free Press
Washington Post & Newsweek Controller: Katherine Meyer Graham (father Eugene owner) ***(37+)***

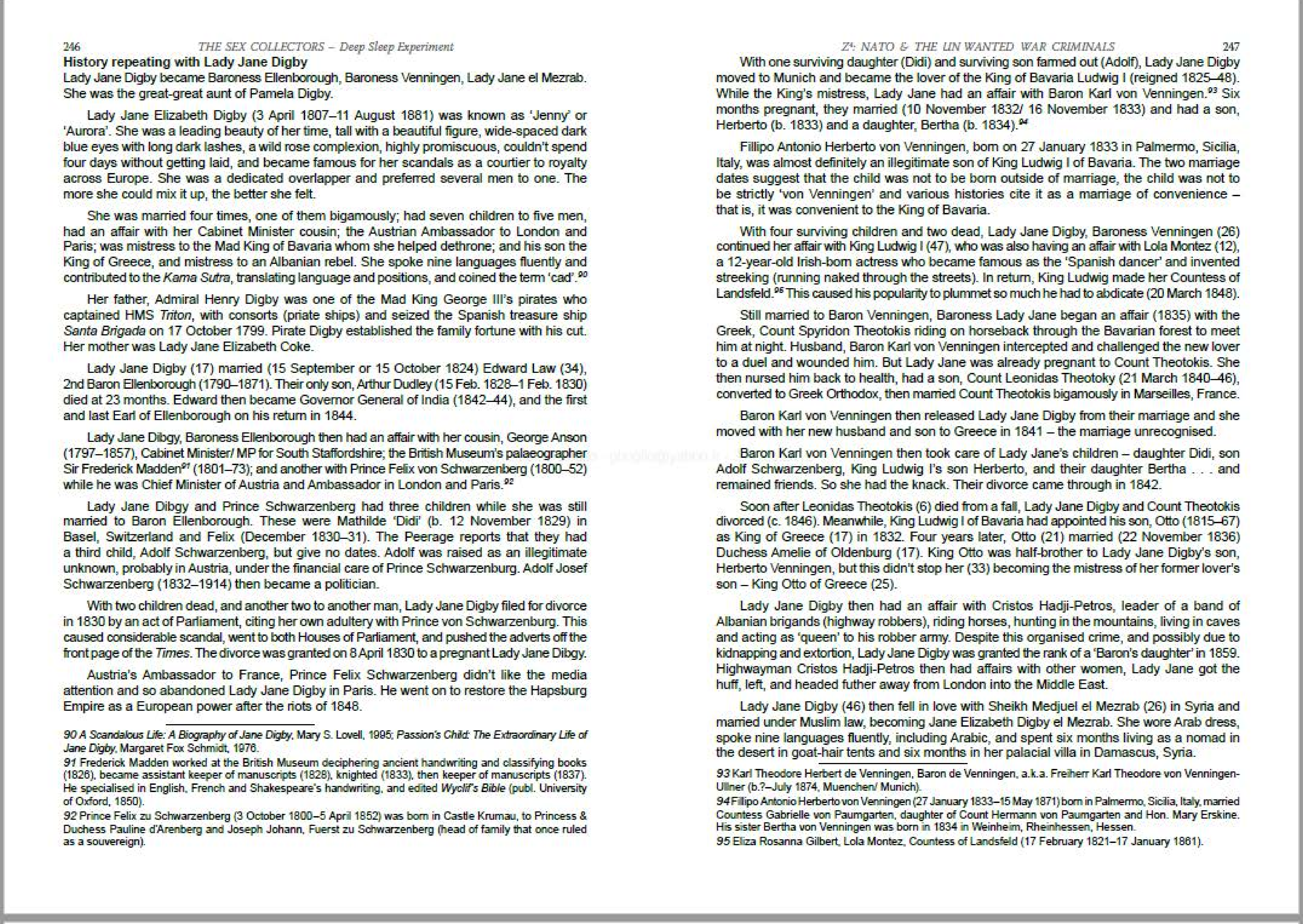

History repeating with Lady Jane Digby

Lady Jane Digby became Baroness Ellenborough, Baroness Venningen, Lady Jane el Mezrab. She was the great-great aunt of Pamela Digby.

Lady Jane Elizabeth Digby (3 April 1807–11 August 1881) was known as 'Jenny' or 'Aurora'. She was a leading beauty of her time, tall with a beautiful figure, wide-spaced dark blue eyes with long dark lashes, a wild rose complexion, highly promiscuous, couldn't spend four days without getting laid, and became famous for her scandals as a courtier to royalty across Europe. She was a dedicated overlapper and preferred several men to one. The more she could mix it up, the better she felt.

She was married four times, one of them bigamously; had seven children to five men, had an affair with her Cabinet Minister cousin; the Austrian Ambassador to London and Paris; was mistress to the Mad King of Bavaria whom she helped dethrone; and his son the King of Greece, and mistress to an Albanian rebel. She spoke nine languages fluently and contributed to the *Kama Sutra*, translating language and positions, and coined the term 'cad'.[90]

Her father, Admiral Henry Digby was one of the Mad King George III's pirates who captained HMS *Triton*, with consorts (priate ships) and seized the Spanish treasure ship *Santa Brigada* on 17 October 1799. Pirate Digby established the family fortune with his cut. Her mother was Lady Jane Elizabeth Coke.

Lady Jane Digby (17) married (15 September or 15 October 1824) Edward Law (34), 2nd Baron Ellenborough (1790–1871). Their only son, Arthur Dudley (15 Feb. 1828–1 Feb. 1830) died at 23 months. Edward then became Governor General of India (1842–44), and the first and last Earl of Ellenborough on his return in 1844.

Lady Jane Dibgy, Baroness Ellenborough then had an affair with her cousin, George Anson (1797–1857), Cabinet Minister/ MP for South Staffordshire; the British Museum's palaeographer Sir Frederick Madden[91] (1801–73); and another with Prince Felix von Schwarzenberg (1800–52) while he was Chief Minister of Austria and Ambassador in London and Paris.[92]

Lady Jane Dibgy and Prince Schwarzenberg had three children while she was still married to Baron Ellenborough. These were Mathilde 'Didi' (b. 12 November 1829) in Basel, Switzerland and Felix (December 1830–31). The Peerage reports that they had a third child, Adolf Schwarzenberg, but give no dates. Adolf was raised as an illegitimate unknown, probably in Austria, under the financial care of Prince Schwarzenburg. Adolf Josef Schwarzenberg (1832–1914) then became a politician.

With two children dead, and another two to another man, Lady Jane Digby filed for divorce in 1830 by an act of Parliament, citing her own adultery with Prince von Schwarzenburg. This caused considerable scandal, went to both Houses of Parliament, and pushed the adverts off the front page of the *Times*. The divorce was granted on 8 April 1830 to a pregnant Lady Jane Dibgy.

Austria's Ambassador to France, Prince Felix Schwarzenberg didn't like the media attention and so abandoned Lady Jane Digby in Paris. He went on to restore the Hapsburg Empire as a European power after the riots of 1848.

---

[90] *A Scandalous Life: A Biography of Jane Digby*, Mary S. Lovell, 1995; *Passion's Child: The Extraordinary Life of Jane Digby*, Margaret Fox Schmidt, 1976.

[91] Frederick Madden worked at the British Museum deciphering ancient handwriting and classifying books (1826), became assistant keeper of manuscripts (1828), knighted (1833), then keeper of manuscripts (1837). He specialised in English, French and Shakespeare's handwriting, and edited *Wyclif's Bible* (publ. University of Oxford, 1850).

[92] Prince Felix zu Schwarzenberg (3 October 1800–5 April 1852) was born in Castle Krumau, to Princess & Duchess Pauline d'Arenberg and Joseph Johann, Fuerst zu Schwarzenberg (head of family that once ruled as a souvereign).

With one surviving daughter (Didi) and surviving son farmed out (Adolf), Lady Jane Digby moved to Munich and became the lover of the King of Bavaria Ludwig I (reigned 1825–48). While the King's mistress, Lady Jane had an affair with Baron Karl von Venningen.[93] Six months pregnant, they married (10 November 1832/ 16 November 1833) and had a son, Herberto (b. 1833) and a daughter, Bertha (b. 1834).[94]

Fillipo Antonio Herberto von Venningen, born on 27 January 1833 in Palmermo, Sicilia, Italy, was almost definitely an illegitimate son of King Ludwig I of Bavaria. The two marriage dates suggest that the child was not to be born outside of marriage, the child was not to be strictly 'von Venningen' and various histories cite it as a marriage of convenience – that is, it was convenient to the King of Bavaria.

With four surviving children and two dead, Lady Jane Digby, Baroness Venningen (26) continued her affair with King Ludwig I (47), who was also having an affair with Lola Montez (12), a 12-year-old Irish-born actress who became famous as the 'Spanish dancer' and invented streeking (running naked through the streets). In return, King Ludwig made her Countess of Landsfeld.[95] This caused his popularity to plummet so much he had to abdicate (20 March 1848).

Still married to Baron Venningen, Baroness Lady Jane began an affair (1835) with the Greek, Count Spyridon Theotokis riding on horseback through the Bavarian forest to meet him at night. Husband, Baron Karl von Venningen intercepted and challenged the new lover to a duel and wounded him. But Lady Jane was already pregnant to Count Theotokis. She then nursed him back to health, had a son, Count Leonidas Theotoky (21 March 1840–46), converted to Greek Orthodox, then married Count Theotokis bigamously in Marseilles, France.

Baron Karl von Venningen then released Lady Jane Digby from their marriage and she moved with her new husband and son to Greece in 1841 – the marriage unrecognised.

Baron Karl von Venningen then took care of Lady Jane's children – daughter Didi, son Adolf Schwarzenberg, King Ludwig I's son Herberto, and their daughter Bertha . . . and remained friends. So she had the knack. Their divorce came through in 1842.

Soon after Leonidas Theotokis (6) died from a fall, Lady Jane Digby and Count Theotokis divorced (c. 1846). Meanwhile, King Ludwig I of Bavaria had appointed his son, Otto (1815–67) as King of Greece (17) in 1832. Four years later, Otto (21) married (22 November 1836) Duchess Amelie of Oldenburg (17). King Otto was half-brother to Lady Jane Digby's son, Herberto Venningen, but this didn't stop her (33) becoming the mistress of her former lover's son – King Otto of Greece (25).

Lady Jane Digby then had an affair with Cristos Hadji-Petros, leader of a band of Albanian brigands (highway robbers), riding horses, hunting in the mountains, living in caves and acting as 'queen' to his robber army. Despite this organised crime, and possibly due to kidnapping and extortion, Lady Jane Digby was granted the rank of a 'Baron's daughter' in 1859. Highwayman Cristos Hadji-Petros then had affairs with other women, Lady Jane got the huff, left, and headed futher away from London into the Middle East.

Lady Jane Digby (46) then fell in love with Sheikh Medjuel el Mezrab (26) in Syria and married under Muslim law, becoming Jane Elizabeth Digby el Mezrab. She wore Arab dress, spoke nine languages fluently, including Arabic, and spent six months living as a nomad in the desert in goat-hair tents and six months in her palacial villa in Damascus, Syria.

---

[93] Karl Theodore Herbert de Venningen, Baron de Venningen, a.k.a. Freiherr Karl Theodore von Venningen-Ullner (b.?–July 1874, Muenchen/ Munich).

[94] Fillipo Antonio Herberto von Venningen (27 January 1833–15 May 1871) born in Palmermo, Sicilia, Italy, married Countess Gabrielle von Paumgarten, daughter of Count Hermann von Paumgarten and Hon. Mary Erskine. His sister Bertha von Venningen was born in 1834 in Weinheim, Rheinhessen, Hessen.

[95] Eliza Rosanna Gilbert, Lola Montez, Countess of Landsfeld (17 February 1821–17 January 1861).

Supposedly happily married for 28 years (but often abandoned and short of cash), she became friends with the British consul's Richard Francis Burton and contributed to the *Kama Sutra*[96] both in positions and translation, coined the phrase 'cad', then died of fever and dysentery in 1871, aged 74.

Burton wrote *The Perfumed Garden* (publ. 1886), the final chapter on pederasty removed by his wife, Isobel. With the British notified of this, Richard Burton was then awarded the KCMG (Knight Commander of St Michael and St George) the same year, and died in 1890.

Lady Jane Digby married 2nd Baron Ellenborough (1824–30); Baron Venningen (1832–42); bigamously to Count Spyridon Theotokis (1840–46); and Sheikh el Mezrab (1854–81).

Lady Jane Digby had children to 2nd Baron Ellenborough (b. 15 Feb. 1828); Prince Schwarzenberg (b. 12 November 1829, b. December 1830, b. 1832); King Ludwig of Bavaria (b. 27 January 1833); Baron Venningen (b. 1834); and Count Theotokis (b. 1840).

Lady Jane Digby had an affair with Cabinet Minister George Anson; the British Museum's palaeographer, Sir Frederick Madden; King Ludwig I of Bavaria; Albanian highwayman Cristos Hadji-Petros; and with King Ludwig's son, King Otto of Greece while both were married, she to Ottto's Ambassador to Vienna.

"Lady Jane . . . was extravagant beyond belief, and consequently always in difficulties . . . she tried to detach Richard Burton's affections from his wife and to draw them to herself . . . relying on the attractions of her person, but also on glozing speeches . . . Having easy access to the house she purloined private letters, papers and other writings . . . slipped love letters, purporting to be from other women, into Burton's pockets . . . Mrs. Burton also received pseudonymous letters . . . Consequently Mrs. Burton carried her letters to her husband and he brought his to her. Amazing to say, neither of them suspected . . . the unhappy [Lady Jane Digby el Mezrab], who was near her end, made . . . a full confession: 'I took a wicked pleasure in your perfect trust in me'."[97]

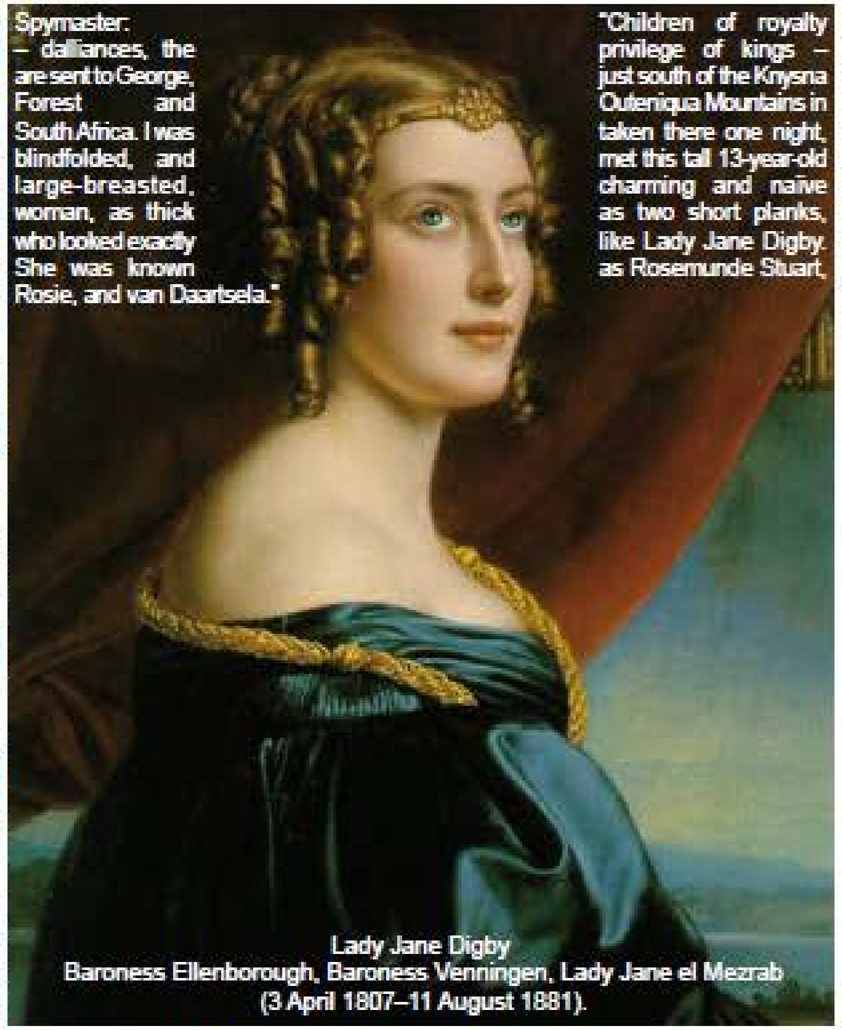

Spymaster:
– dalliances, the are sent to George, Forest and South Africa. I was blindfolded, and large-breasted, woman, as thick who looked exactly She was known Rosie, and van Daartsela."

"Children of royalty privilege of kings – just south of the Knysna Outeniqua Mountains in taken there one night, met this tall 13-year-old charming and naive as two short planks, like Lady Jane Digby. as Rosemunde Stuart,

Lady Jane Digby
Baroness Ellenborough, Baroness Venningen, Lady Jane el Mezrab
(3 April 1807–11 August 1881).

---

[96] Burton translated the *Kama Sutra* with Forster Fitzgerald Arbuthnot (p. 1883); *The Arabian Nights* (p. 1884).

[97] *The Life of Sir Richard Burton*, Thomas Wright, Kessinger Publishing, 2004.

Checker Children from England and Germany

Checker Children:
George Bush
and
Bill Clinton
in January 2005 . . .
opposing parties,
but both working
for the Queen.

Born in Germany.

Born in England.

Both George Herbert Walker Bush (b. 12 June 1924) and Bill Clinton (b.c. 19 August 1946) were checker children. They were part of trade and exchange agreements and both became Presidents . . . First Bush (1989–93), then Clinton (1993–2001); then Bush's Nazi son (2001–09), then Barack Obama (2009–), so that's the last two decades.

The U.S. Constitution demands an American citizen as president and it is the President's role to uphold the U.S. Constitution (which states they must be American), but that hasn't happened since 1989, and there have been problems with the identity of all of the U.S. Presidents since 1974.

For the last 20 years, America has not had a U.S President (counting W. as the son of a Nazi with forged papers).

And before the Reagan/ Sinatra/ Bush ticket there was Jimmy Carter who was James Earl Kennedy (1977–81); and Gerald Ford (1974–77) who was the porn king, Leslie Lynch King, Jr.

Now the U.S. Presidency looks like a Mafia operation of self-interest.

And it certainly is.

America is a British Plantation.

The U.S. Presidency carries the real status 'Pirate Captain' . . . and

The British Royal Family have a vested interest in placing their own agents there.

So the U.S. President is always the candidate with the most British Royal blood – as confirmed by Burke's Peerage.

So here's a list of Pirate Captains of the British Plantation known as the United States of America:

President of U.S.	Pirate Captain of Brit. Plantation	Status	Duration
Gerald Ford	Leslie Lynch King, Jr	Porn King	1974–77
Jimmy Carter	James Earl Kennedy	Kennedy Surrogate	1977–81
Ronald Reagan	Frank Sinatra	Mafia/ FBI/ Nancy's Squeeze	1981–89
George H. W. Bush	George H. Scherff, Jr.	German Checker/ Nazi	1989–93
Bill Clinton	William Jefferson Churchill	British Checker/ Prince	1993–2001
George W. Bush	'Temporary'	Son & agent of Scherff	2001–09
Barack Obama	Barry Sutoro/ 'Renegade'/ 'Black'	Kenyan/ Brit./ Kansas Klone	2009–

George H. W. Bush is the British Plantation Pirate Captain George H. Scherff, Jr. As Britain had the checker child, Billy Rex Churchill, sent to America in 1946, Germany had the checker teenager, George H. Scherff, Jr., sent to America in 1944.

Nikola Tesla's German-born illegal immigrant accountant was George H. Scherff, Sr.

Tesla was doing too much for America, so Germany sent Scherff's 14-year-old son, George H. Scherff Jr. to America to befriend, spy on, and kill Tesla (10 July 1856–7 Jan. 1943). But George Jr. failed.[98]

Otto Skorzeny Waffen-SS was part of the Werwolf guerrilla movement that specialised in infiltrating enemy lines, using their opponent's uniforms and customs. Thus George Jnr. had similar training to Chris Creighton who led Operation JAMES BOND to rescue Martin Bormann, and to Ian Fleming who led Operation WINNIE THE POOH that rescued Hitler.

Otto Skorzeny (12 June 1908–6 July 1975/ December 1999) and General Reinhard Gehlen (3 April 1902–8 June 1979) SS Chief of Intelligence-Gathering then completed the job and killed Tesla on 6 January 1943, reported a day later.

Two years later, Otto Skorzeny shot Adolf Hitler's body double between the eyes on 30 April 1945, "then flew with Hitler and Hanna Reitsch to Austria".[99]

George H. Scherff Jr. then forged a birth certificate and was adopted by the American manufacturing Nazi, Prescott Bush, becoming George H. W. Bush – Checker Teenager.

George had already been trained to fly in Germany and one of the first things he did was kill all his flight crew by bailing out during flight, with the crew still on board, and the plane crashing on 2 September 1944. Chester Mierzejewski, Rear Tail Gunner, Distinguished Flying Cross: 'As for being a hero in a plane, Bush was flying, bailed out of the plane and left his two crew to crash and die and then claimed WWII hero status'.

---

[98] Otto Skorzeny told this story to Eric Orion, as written by author Greg Szymanski.

[99] Their are various views on Hitler's escape which leads me to suspect that more than one Hitler escaped. It would be prudent to keep various doppelgänger Hitlers alive after WWII, as the FBI hunt for Hitler went on until 1972, and citings were an excuse for surveillance which helped kick-off the Cold War.
According to the Argentia files, the Cold War was well underway in 1947. According to M, it started on 2 May 1945.
One escape view is that a 'Hitler' flew out from Templeoff Airport with Eva Braun on 1 May 1945.
This quoted view is that Otto Skorzeny flew with the Hitlers to Austria, but there is such little detail and no record of any documents exchanged, or codenames like 'Mr Rabbit' and 'Mrs Rabbit', and no British involved. So it looks more like another Counter-Intelligence exercise in distraction.
Author Hallett's view is that Hitler escaped through the tunnels, caught a WK202 submarine for 40 hours down the River Spree to Lake Harvel, and was then picked up by Hanna Reitsch, flew to Lake Müggelsee, and was then picked up by Ian Fleming, Caroline Saunders and Hugh Verity in a Westland Lysander IIIA and flown to Barcelona where they were met by Ramón Serrano Súñer – General Franco's former 2-IC . . . far more detail.

Robert Flood, B-17 bombardier: "Bush violated the primary rule for a captain of a multi-crew aircraft: The pilot never leaves the airplane with anybody in it. He had a moral obligation to put that plane in the water in an emergency landing."

Chester Mierzejewski, Rear Tail Gunner, Distinguished Flying Cross and an old war buddy of George H.W. Bush: "I am angered by the false assertions made by candidate Bush when describing the incident on 2 September 1944, and give a different account. "After 44 years of silence I told the *New York Post* that George H. W. Bush had abandoned his crew to death when there was another choice. I was approximately 100 feet in front of Bush's plane as the turret gunner for Squadron Commander Douglas Melvin's plane. I was so close I could see in the cockpit of Bush's bomber. The squadron was in a tight formation bombing raid against a Japanese radio installation on an island reported to be heavily fortified. I saw a puff of smoke come from Bush's plane which quickly disappeared. Bush then parachuted from the plane when two other men were still on board. The Avenger torpedo bomber was engineered to successfully crash-land on water. Bush doomed his own crew by bailing out and leaving the bomber out of control. I think he could have saved those two lives . . . at least they had a chance if he had attempted a water landing."
"The young Nazi, George Herbert Walker Bush establish a false reputation for being a great American WWII hero out of this crime. He is not an American War Hero! He is a sabotaging nazi traitor! George Herbert Walker Bush should be tried for Treason."[100]

Nazi George H. Scherff, Jr., a.k.a. George H. W. Bush then co-founded the CIA in 1947 and 50,000 Nazis came to America at the end of WWII under Operation Paperclip to create the Fourth Reich – Counter-Intelligence fronting as Intelligence, and the New World Order – Fascism for all. Heinrich Himmler (7 October 1900~~–23 May 1945~~) was amongst them.

The CIA was then restructured under President George W. Bush on 17 December 2004 in line with 'fascism for all' and 'increased Counter-Intelligence' as a daily feature.

The Culinary Institute of America (CIA) was also founded in 1946.

When it came to the 1992 US Elections, Bush gave way to Clinton, as Clinton had the most royal blood, being the grandson of King Edward VII. The candidate with the most British Royal blood always gets the U.S. presidency (Burke's Peerage).

CENTRAL INTEL
ENCE AGENCY

[100] www. thebushconnection.com, paraphrased for clarity.

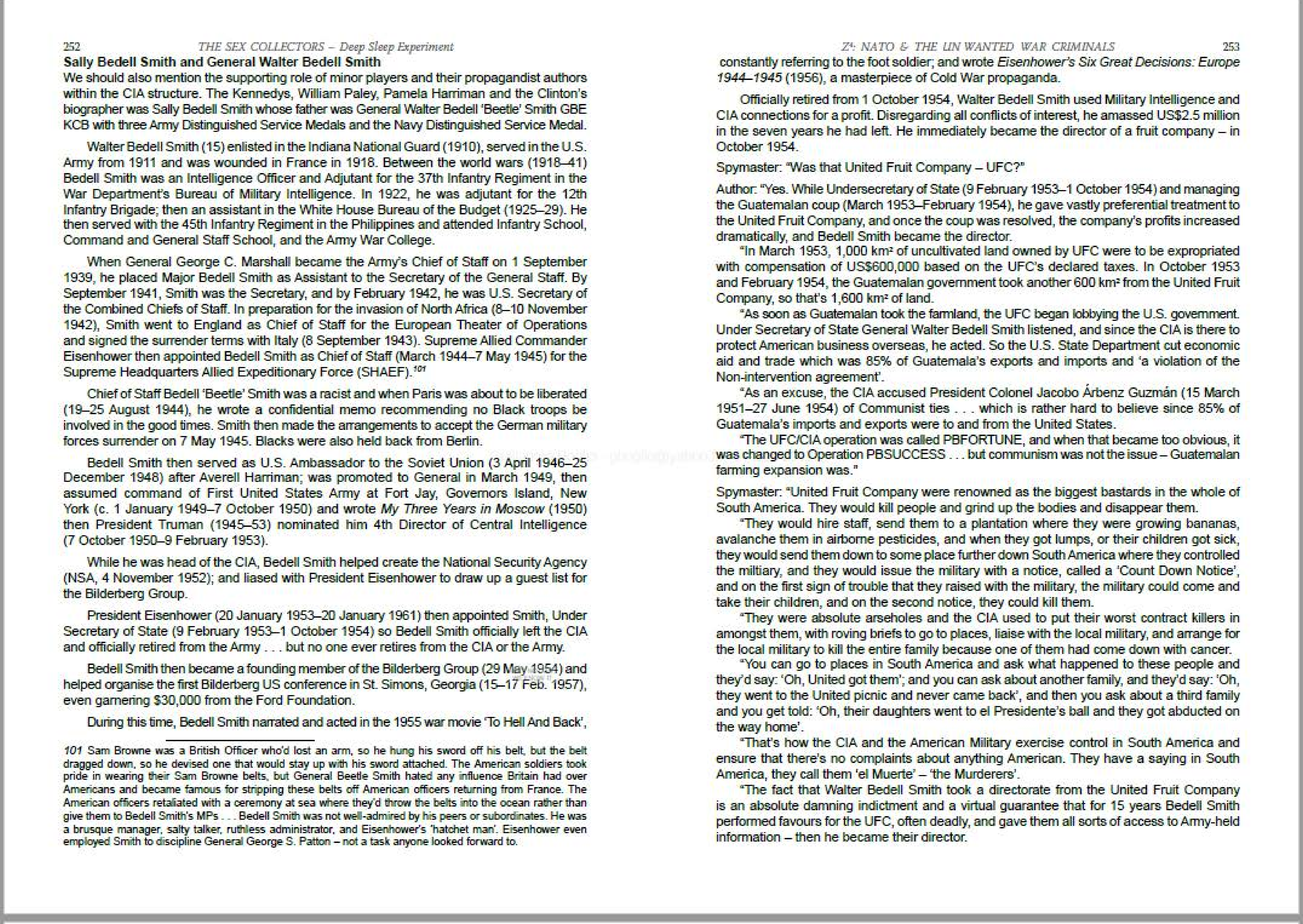

Sally Bedell Smith and General Walter Bedell Smith

We should also mention the supporting role of minor players and their propagandist authors within the CIA structure. The Kennedys, William Paley, Pamela Harriman and the Clinton's biographer was Sally Bedell Smith whose father was General Walter Bedell 'Beetle' Smith GBE KCB with three Army Distinguished Service Medals and the Navy Distinguished Service Medal.

Walter Bedell Smith (15) enlisted in the Indiana National Guard (1910), served in the U.S. Army from 1911 and was wounded in France in 1918. Between the world wars (1918–41) Bedell Smith was an Intelligence Officer and Adjutant for the 37th Infantry Regiment in the War Department's Bureau of Military Intelligence. In 1922, he was adjutant for the 12th Infantry Brigade; then an assistant in the White House Bureau of the Budget (1925–29). He then served with the 45th Infantry Regiment in the Philippines and attended Infantry School, Command and General Staff School, and the Army War College.

When General George C. Marshall became the Army's Chief of Staff on 1 September 1939, he placed Major Bedell Smith as Assistant to the Secretary of the General Staff. By September 1941, Smith was the Secretary, and by February 1942, he was U.S. Secretary of the Combined Chiefs of Staff. In preparation for the invasion of North Africa (8–10 November 1942), Smith went to England as Chief of Staff for the European Theater of Operations and signed the surrender terms with Italy (8 September 1943). Supreme Allied Commander Eisenhower then appointed Bedell Smith as Chief of Staff (March 1944–7 May 1945) for the Supreme Headquarters Allied Expeditionary Force (SHAEF).[101]

Chief of Staff Bedell 'Beetle' Smith was a racist and when Paris was about to be liberated (19–25 August 1944), he wrote a confidential memo recommending no Black troops be involved in the good times. Smith then made the arrangements to accept the German military forces surrender on 7 May 1945. Blacks were also held back from Berlin.

Bedell Smith then served as U.S. Ambassador to the Soviet Union (3 April 1946–25 December 1948) after Averell Harriman; was promoted to General in March 1949, then assumed command of First United States Army at Fort Jay, Governors Island, New York (c. 1 January 1949–7 October 1950) and wrote *My Three Years in Moscow* (1950) then President Truman (1945–53) nominated him 4th Director of Central Intelligence (7 October 1950–9 February 1953).

While he was head of the CIA, Bedell Smith helped create the National Security Agency (NSA, 4 November 1952); and liased with President Eisenhower to draw up a guest list for the Bilderberg Group.

President Eisenhower (20 January 1953–20 January 1961) then appointed Smith, Under Secretary of State (9 February 1953–1 October 1954) so Bedell Smith officially left the CIA and officially retired from the Army . . . but no one ever retires from the CIA or the Army.

Bedell Smith then became a founding member of the Bilderberg Group (29 May 1954) and helped organise the first Bilderberg US conference in St. Simons, Georgia (15–17 Feb. 1957), even garnering $30,000 from the Ford Foundation.

During this time, Bedell Smith narrated and acted in the 1955 war movie 'To Hell And Back', constantly referring to the foot soldier; and wrote *Eisenhower's Six Great Decisions: Europe 1944–1945* (1956), a masterpiece of Cold War propaganda.

Officially retired from 1 October 1954, Walter Bedell Smith used Military Intelligence and CIA connections for a profit. Disregarding all conflicts of interest, he amassed US$2.5 million in the seven years he had left. He immediately became the director of a fruit company – in October 1954.

Spymaster: "Was that United Fruit Company – UFC?"

Author: "Yes. While Undersecretary of State (9 February 1953–1 October 1954) and managing the Guatemalan coup (March 1953–February 1954), he gave vastly preferential treatment to the United Fruit Company, and once the coup was resolved, the company's profits increased dramatically, and Bedell Smith became the director.

"In March 1953, 1,000 km² of uncultivated land owned by UFC were to be expropriated with compensation of US$600,000 based on the UFC's declared taxes. In October 1953 and February 1954, the Guatemalan government took another 600 km² from the United Fruit Company, so that's 1,600 km² of land.

"As soon as Guatemalan took the farmland, the UFC began lobbying the U.S. government. Under Secretary of State General Walter Bedell Smith listened, and since the CIA is there to protect American business overseas, he acted. So the U.S. State Department cut economic aid and trade which was 85% of Guatemala's exports and imports and 'a violation of the Non-intervention agreement'.

"As an excuse, the CIA accused President Colonel Jacobo Árbenz Guzmán (15 March 1951–27 June 1954) of Communist ties . . . which is rather hard to believe since 85% of Guatemala's imports and exports were to and from the United States.

"The UFC/CIA operation was called PBFORTUNE, and when that became too obvious, it was changed to Operation PBSUCCESS . . . but communism was not the issue – Guatemalan farming expansion was."

Spymaster: "United Fruit Company were renowned as the biggest bastards in the whole of South America. They would kill people and grind up the bodies and disappear them.

"They would hire staff, send them to a plantation where they were growing bananas, avalanche them in airborne pesticides, and when they got lumps, or their children got sick, they would send them down to some place further down South America where they controlled the miltiary, and they would issue the military with a notice, called a 'Count Down Notice', and on the first sign of trouble that they raised with the military, the military could come and take their children, and on the second notice, they could kill them.

"They were absolute arseholes and the CIA used to put their worst contract killers in amongst them, with roving briefs to go to places, liaise with the local military, and arrange for the local military to kill the entire family because one of them had come down with cancer.

"You can go to places in South America and ask what happened to these people and they'd say: 'Oh, United got them'; and you can ask about another family, and they'd say: 'Oh, they went to the United picnic and never came back', and then you ask about a third family and you get told: 'Oh, their daughters went to el Presidente's ball and they got abducted on the way home'.

"That's how the CIA and the American Military exercise control in South America and ensure that there's no complaints about anything American. They have a saying in South America, they call them 'el Muerte' – 'the Murderers'.

"The fact that Walter Bedell Smith took a directorate from the United Fruit Company is an absolute damning indictment and a virtual guarantee that for 15 years Bedell Smith performed favours for the UFC, often deadly, and gave them all sorts of access to Army-held information – then he became their director.

---

[101] Sam Browne was a British Officer who'd lost an arm, so he hung his sword off his belt, but the belt dragged down, so he devised one that would stay up with his sword attached. The American soldiers took pride in wearing their Sam Browne belts, but General Beetle Smith hated any influence Britain had over Americans and became famous for stripping these belts off American officers returning from France. The American officers retaliated with a ceremony at sea where they'd throw the belts into the ocean rather than give them to Bedell Smith's MPs . . . Bedell Smith was not well-admired by his peers or subordinates. He was a brusque manager, salty talker, ruthless administrator, and Eisenhower's 'hatchet man'. Eisenhower even employed Smith to discipline General George S. Patton – not a task anyone looked forward to.

Sally Bedell Smith (b. 1948)
biographer.

General Walter Bedell Smith
(5 Oct. 1895–9 Aug. 1961)
everything.

"If you dig further into United Fruit Company I bet you'll find the Harrimans, the Clintons, and also a diversion of Japanese gold that was taken out of the Pacific by MacArthur."

Author: "Well, that's interesting that you mention Army General Douglas MacArthur (26 January 1880–5 April 1964) because he had a lot in common with General Bedell Smith, and they crossed paths.

"General MacArthur was also born in Little Rock, Arkansas, where Bill Clinton grew up. That's Bavaria in American terms. General MacArthur was superintendent of West Point Military Academy (1919–22); Second Commander of the Philippine Department (1928–30); Chief of Staff of the United States Army (1930–35); Field Marshal of the Philippine Army (1937–July 1941); then Commander of US Armed Forces in the Far East (1941) where he was almost immediately paid half a million dollars by Philippine President Manuel Luis Quezon (15 November 1935–1 August 1944) for his pre-war service there (read: 'protection money'). MacArthur's staff also took protection money . . . Eisenhower refused.

"When Pearl Harbor happened on 7 December 1941, the next day MacArthur was made Allied Commander in the Philippines. MacAuthur had at least 8 hours prior warning of an attack on the Philippines and up to two weeks warning of Pearl Harbor, but ignored these, thus giving Japan air superiority, so he could actually have a war.

"Privately, MacArthur concluded, 'I was incompetent', but really he was a double agent war-monger like the rest of them, even feeding the Japanese, and causing the surrender of Allied forces in Battaan in April 1942, which led to the Bataan Death March (April 1942) where 650 US and 10,000 Filipinos died.

"MacArthur then escaped to Australia. He reached the east Philippine Island of Mindanao on 13 March 1942, then boarded a B-17 Flying Fortress bomber on 16 March 1942, and flew to Batchelor Airfield 100 km south of Darwin, landing on 17 March 1942.

"26 days prior, on 19 February 1942, his own American Super Fortress bombers had bombed Darwin. The Aussies then made a propaganda movie about it – Australia, 2008 – starring Nicole Kidman and Hugh Jackman. The Japs didn't even land in Darwin."

Spymaster: "Yeah, we mentioned that in *Right Royal Con* in January 2007 . . . here it is."

> "Darwin was thought to have been bombed by Japan in WWII, but the Americans were stationed just outside Darwin and had a certain bomb load to get rid of. With a shortage of Japanese vessels to bomb, they'd fly out from their station in their Super Fortresses and drop their bombs over the sea.
>
> One American bomber, foggy on a combination of benzedrine and alcohol got lost and dropped his bombs over Darwin on 19 February 1942. This resulted in at least 243 civilian and military deaths. Australian troops and RAAF squadrons were then sent home to defend Australia against a Japanese attack that never eventuated. Australia then bought US-built P-40 Kittyhawks and manufactured the CAC Boomerang fighter. Darwin reacted by building a memorial representing Darwinians special hatred for the Japanese to this day, not to mention a special liking for the Americans who sold them the Kittyhawks. The Americans were silent as it resulted in more war planes sold, while Japan loudly denies bombing Darwin to this day."[102]

Author: "Yep, and for these failures, two weeks later, on 1 April 1942, MacArthur was awarded the Distinguished Conduct Star and the Medal of Honor. That is, General Douglas MacArthur got the Medal of Honor for six cases of war sabotage:

1. Taking bribes from the Philippines;
2. Not warning Americans about Pearl Harbor;
3. Not preparing the Philippines for the Japanese air attack;
4. Feeding the Japanese, resulting in the Bataan Death March;
5. Bombing Darwin; and
6. Abandoning the Philippines.

"General MacArthur was designated to command the invasion of Japan in November 1945, but since Hiroshima and Nagasaki were nuked it was no longer necessary, so he oversaw the occupation of Japan (14 August 1945–8 September 1951); accepted Japan's surrender on 2 September 1945; and protected Emperor Hirohito from prosecution for war crimes . . . but was credited with implementing democracy in Japan as a form of cover.

"General MacArthur was then Commander of the US/UN forces defending South Korea against the North Korean invasion (September 1950–11 April 1951) until he was removed from command by President Harry S. Truman for publicly disagreeing with his policy on Korea.

Spymaster: ". . . Read: 'offering to win the war within two months', as opposed to the three years it took (25 June 1950–27 July 1953) . . . so the banks could make more of a profit and the WWII countries could dump their old equipment on either side and America could escape the communists into the West."

Author: "Yeah . . . and back to General Bedell Smith".

In 1958, Bedell Smith was President and Chairman of the board of two weapon-manufacturing companies with Pentagon contracts, and Vice-Chairman of American Machine and Foundry Company, and Director of RCA and Corning Glass. He was then appointed special advisor to the Secretary of State on disarmament . . . So there's the ineffectiveness of any peace agreement for you – right in Bedell Smith's lap.

Rather than peace, the special advisor to the Secretary of State on disarmament, General Bedell Smith, was one of the first major military-industrial leaders of the Cold War.

The Cold War didn't start with the barbed wire fence in Berlin on 13 August 1961, it went from Hitler's escape on 2 May 1945 to 25 December 1991 when Mikhail Gorbachev resigned as Soviet President, abolished his post, lowered the red Soviet flag from the Kremlin, and raised the Russian Federation flag in its place.

---

[102] *How to Take Over the World, A Right Royal Con*, 2007, 2008, 2009, pp. 173–74.

So the Cold War was effectively the whole second-half of the twentieth century . . . but ongoing. The Cold War wasn't officially over until the **sex collectors** had done their dirty work, the Cold War effectively moved in-house throughout the West and the red Soviet flag was secretly raised in the political bedrooms of the West.

The Cold War was a secret war. When it was going on, most people didn't even know it was happening. So it's no different today. Now, in the West, we just call the Cold War **"NOTHING WORKS"**. That is, no part of government works. Government is now designed to sabotage at every turn resulting in a lifetime of slavery.

The sex collectors have compromised Western politicians and promoted those into government who were already sexually compromised. Now we find that the entire controlling elements of local bodies have been extracted from the orgies of a quarter century prior.

Through Bedell Smith there was a connection between the U.S. Army, U.S. Military Intelligence, the White House and its budget, the U.S.S.R., NSA, CIA, Hollywood, and the Bilderberg Group . . .

So, his daughter Sally Bedell Smith[103] became the American historian specialising in American political and broadcasting figures from the point of what the world should know – according to the agenda of the Bilderberg Group and her father – posthumous Walter.

These Bedell Smith biographies include William S. Paley (1990), his lover Pamela Harriman (1996), her semi-daugher-in-law, Diana (1999), the Kennedys (2004), and Pamela's son and daughter-in-law, the Clintons (2007).

Author: "As an Intelligence Officer, General Walter Bedell Smith had all the contacts to assist Averell Harriman in swishing baby Clinton, and even inherited Harriman's role as U.S. Ambassador to the U.S.S.R., which was really about using up the old WWII equipment and placing the entire planet under surveillance."

Spymaster: "And such is history . . . and the Clintons."

Author: "Right in there as two little-known CIA agents."

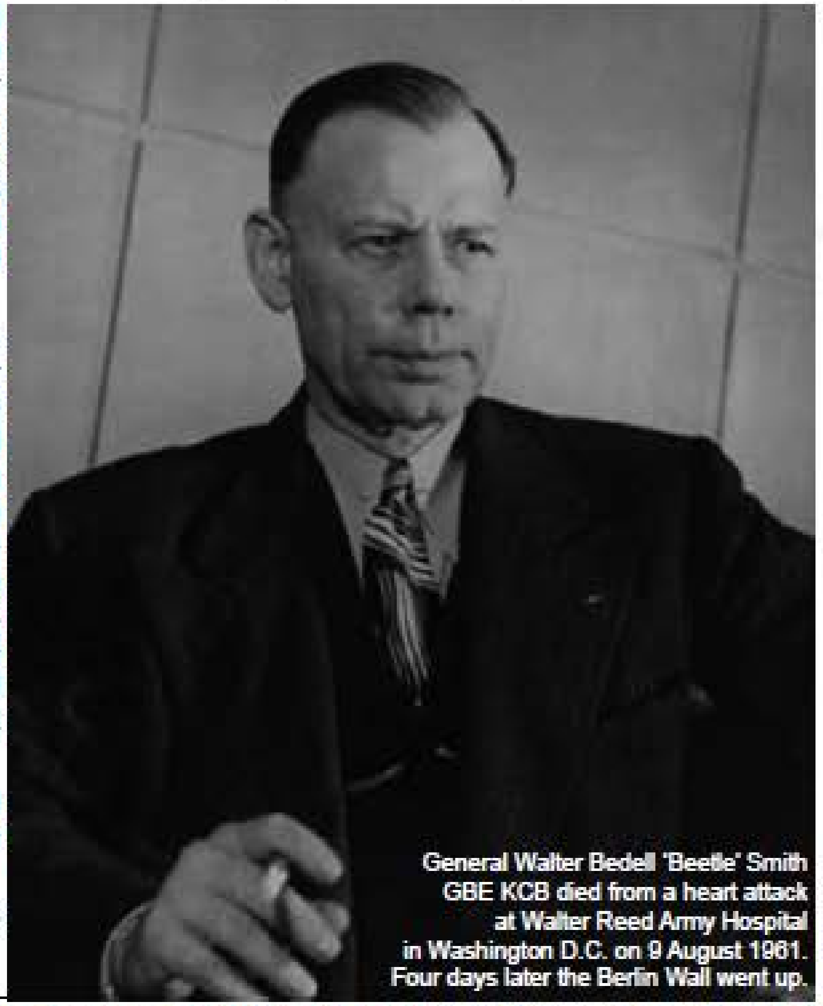
General Walter Bedell "Beetle" Smith GBE KCB died from a heart attack at Walter Reed Army Hospital in Washington D.C. on 9 August 1961. Four days later the Berlin Wall went up.

---

[103] Neither Walter Bedell Smith, nor Sally Bedell Smith mention anything of their families. They are tight-lipped like a military budget, or military intelligence, and loose-lipped like counter-intelligence, to such an extent that they write it down . . . many books between them.

In Memoriam.
KING EDWARD "THE PEACEMAKER"

King Edward VII, 1901–10.

The Protocols of Zion, 1903, No. 10:

"... the governments and peoples are content in the political with outside appearances ...

"When we have accomplished our coup d'état we shall say: 'Everything has gone terribly badly'... Voting ... will set us on the throne of the world.

"... remove the possibility of individual minds splitting off, for the mob, handled by us, will not let them come to the front nor even give them a hearing.

"... we replaced the ruler by a caricature of a government – by a president, taken from the mob, from the midst of our puppet creatures and slaves ... In the near future we shall establish the responsibility of presidents ... we shall arrange elections in favour of such presidents as have in their past some dark, undiscovered stain ... then they will be trustworthy agents for the accomplishment of our plans out of fear of revelations ... The chamber of deputies will provide cover for, will protect, will elect presidents ... the responsible president, a puppet in our hands ... we shall instigate ministers and other officials of the higher administration about the president to evade his dispositions by taking measures of their own, for doing which they will be made the scapegoats in his place.

"The president, will, at our discretion, interpret the sense of such of the existing law as admit of various interpretation; he will further annul them when we indicate to him the necessity to

"... he will have the right to propose temporary laws ... By such measures we shall obtain the power of destroying little by little, step by step, all that at the outset when we enter on our rights."

"The recognition of our despot may also come before the destruction of the constitution; the moment for this recognition will come when the people, utterly wearied by the irregularities and incompetence – a matter which we shall arrange for – of their rulers, will clamour: 'Away with them and give us one king over all the earth who will unite us and annihilate the causes of discords – frontiers, nationalities, religions, State debts – who will give us peace and quiet, which we cannot find under our present rulers and representatives ...

"So as to utterly exhaust humanity with dissention, hatred, struggle, envy and even by the use of torture, by starvation, BY THE INOCULATION OF DISEASES, by want, so that the GOYIM see no other issue than to take refuge in our complete sovereignty in money and in all else.

"But if we give the nations a breathing space the moment we long for is hardly likely ever to arrive."

President Bill Clinton, Ireland, 19 Sept. 1998:
"You know, by the time you become leader of a country, someone else makes all the decisions.
You may find you can get away with virtual Presidents, virtual Prime Ministers, virtual everything."

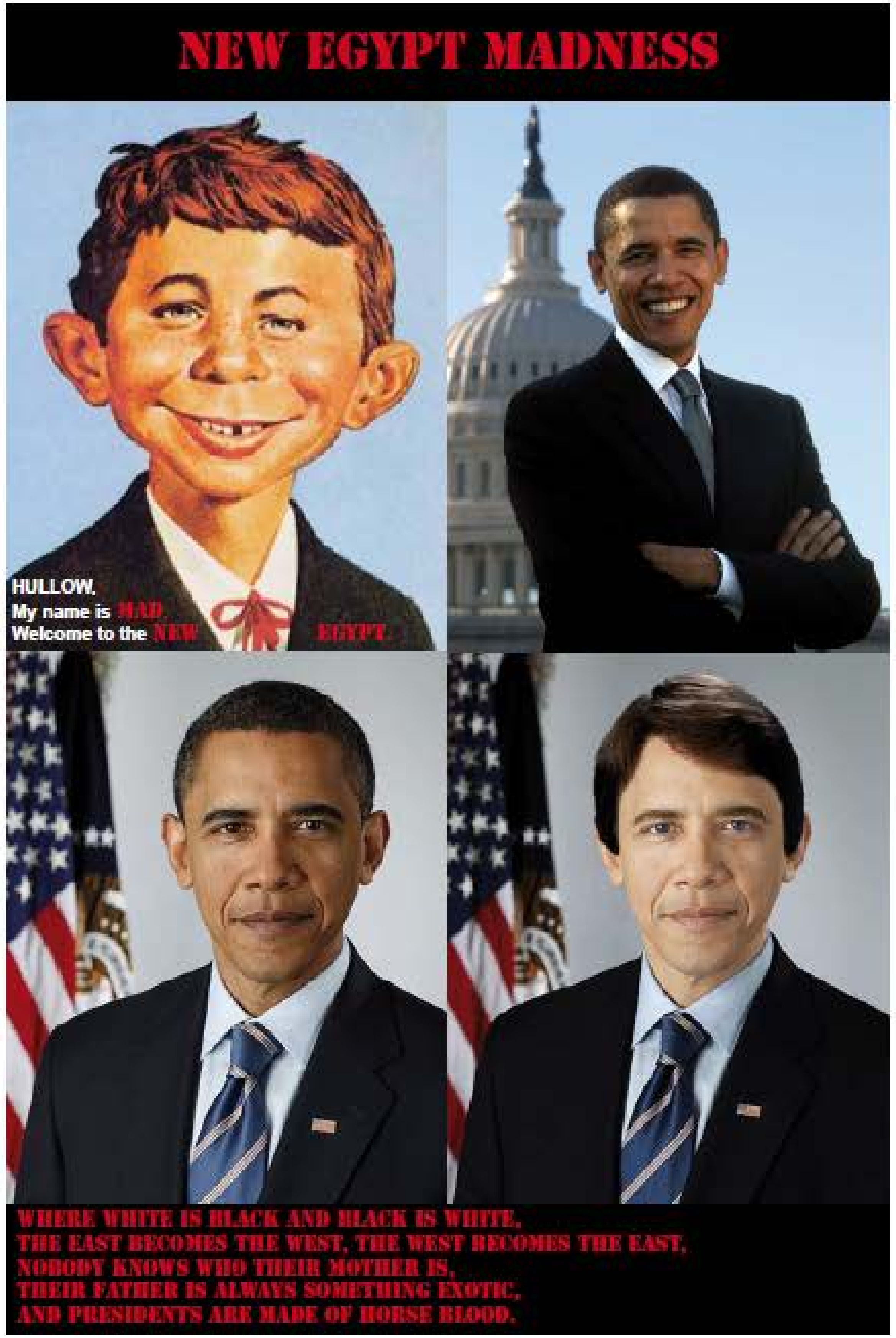
NEW EGYPT MADNESS
HULLOW,
My name is MAD.
Welcome to the NEW EGYPT.
WHERE WHITE IS BLACK AND BLACK IS WHITE,
THE EAST BECOMES THE WEST, THE WEST BECOMES THE EAST,
NOBODY KNOWS WHO THEIR MOTHER IS,
THEIR FATHER IS ALWAYS SOMETHING EXOTIC,
AND PRESIDENTS ARE MADE OF HORSE BLOOD.

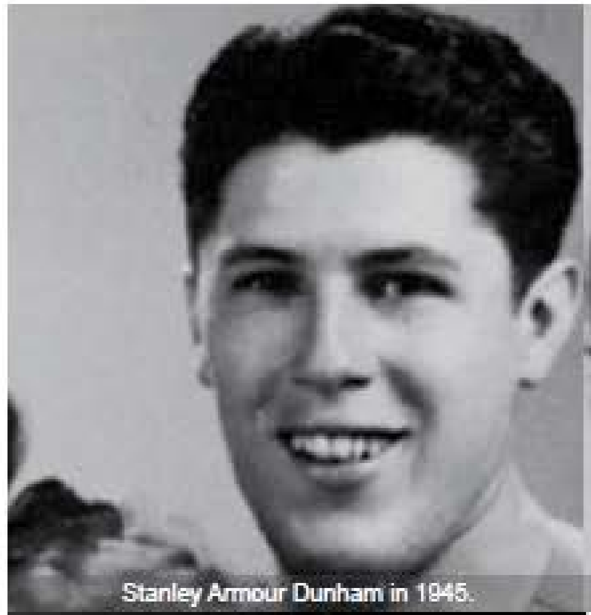
Stanley Armour Dunham in 1945.

Madelyn Lee née Payne Dunham in 1945.

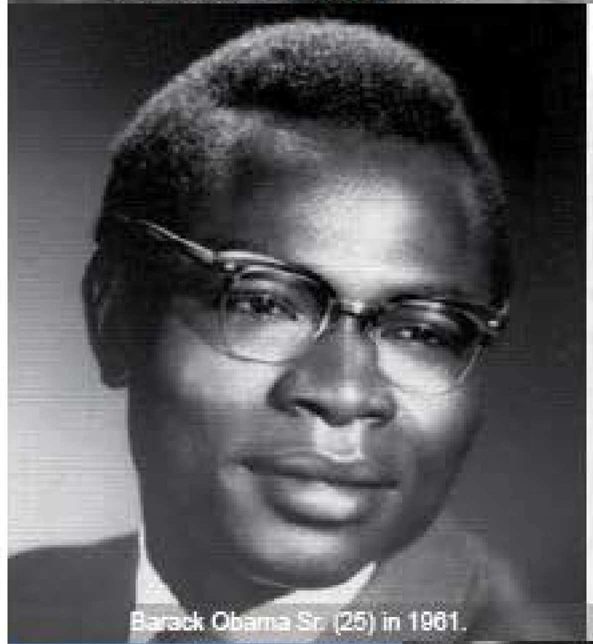
Barack Obama Sr. (25) in 1961.

Stanley Ann Dunham (17) in 1960.

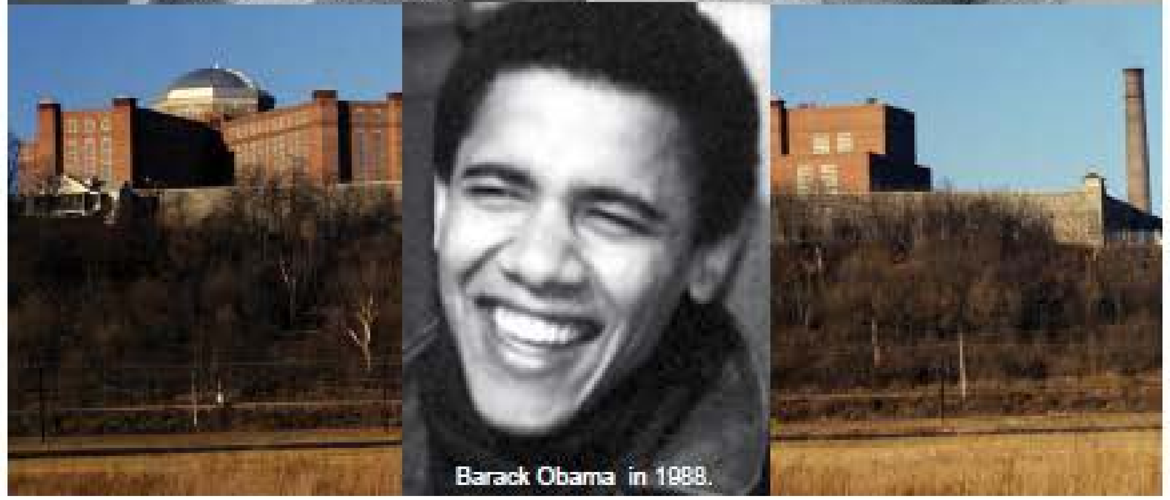
Barack Obama in 1988.

Barack Obama – Origins long time coming

Barack Obama's mother was named Stanley Ann Dunham because her father wanted a boy. She used the name 'Stanley' through High School until university and was one of the original feminists and liberal thinkers. She was either born on 27 November 1942 at Fort Leavenworth,[1] Kansas, or 75 km southwest on 29 November 1942 at St. Francis Hospital in Wichita. So it seems that Military Intelligence was already involved by 1942, if not 1941, and she may have been an experimental baby. Both born in Kansas, her parents married on 5 May 1940 in Wichita – Madelyn Lee Payne (17) and Stanley Armour Dunham (22). After the Pearl Harbor attack (7 December 1941), Stanley Armour Dunham, joined the United States Army and her mother, Madelyn, worked as an Aircraft Inspector in the Boeing B-29 plant in Wichita. Ann was conceived 1–2 months after Pearl Harbor – circa 22 January 1942.

At the end of World War II (2 September 1945 for Americans) the Dunham family moved from Wichita to Ponca City, Oklahoma, then to Vernon, Texas, then to El Dorado, Kansas, then to Seattle, Washington (1955–60). Dad worked as a furniture salesman and Mum worked as vice president of a bank. They lived in an apartment complex in Wedgwood and Ann attended Eckstein Junior High School. In 1956, they moved to Mercer Island, an Eastside suburb of Seattle and Stanley Ann Dunham (13) attended the newly opened Mercer Island High School, where she learnt to challenge social norms and question authority.

"She felt she didn't need to date or marry or have children" . . . She was "intellectually way more mature than we were and a little bit ahead of her time, in an off-center way" . . . "If you were concerned about something going wrong in the world, Stanley would know about it first. We were liberals before we knew what liberals were" . . . "Stanley Ann was the original feminist".[2]

In August 1959, Hawaii became the 50th state to be admitted into the Union. In 1960 Stanley Ann Dunham graduated from Mercer Island High School and the family moved to Hawaii. Dunham soon enrolled at the University of Hawaii at Mānoa and studied Russian language. This would immediately put her on the CIA radar.

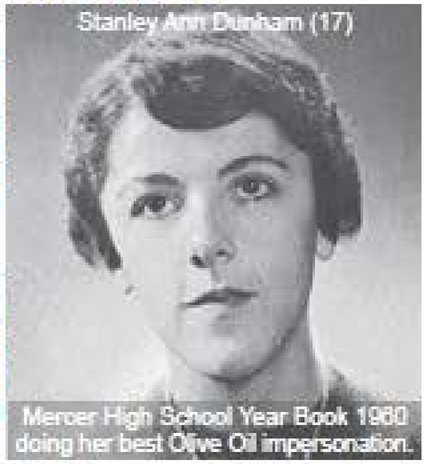
Stanley Ann Dunham (17)

Mercer High School Year Book 1960 doing her best Olive Oil impersonation.

In this Russian language class she (17) met the school's first and only African student, Barack Obama, Sr. (23) – a Luo Kenyan from Nyang'oma Kogelo, Nyanza Province in rural west Kenya. He was born 50 km southeast in Kanyadhiang village where he went to Gendia Primary School. Kanyadhiang is 3 km east of Kendu Bay, Lake Victoria,[3] 90 km north of Tanzania, 90 km east of Uganda, and 17,500 km from Hawaii. Barack Obama, Sr (18) had already married

---

[1] 'Profile of Madelyn Payne Dunham, Barack Obama's Grandmother', Linda Lowen, About.com
Wikipedia, Fort Leavenworth: "During World War II, Ann Dunham, mother of Barack Obama, was born at the fort while her father was stationed there." 'Kansas roots show in Obama', Kansas.com, 2 February 2008.

[2] *The Tribune*, 'Barack Obama: Mother not just a girl from Kansas', Tim Jones, 27 March 2007.

[3] Lake Victoria is the largest lake in Africa and the largest tropical lake in the world – so it's a big body of water. It has one outflow river, the White Nile that flows north. The surrounding area is the greenbelt of Africa. Lake Victoria's Cichlid fish are known for their 'evolutionary plasticity'. They can change their shape, size and look to adapt to localised conditions. Of the 500 species in Lake Victoria, the *Haplochromine* Cichlid made up 80% of the fish volume, but were not big, and not that good to eat. So the British introduced the Nile Perch on the Uganda side of Lake Victoria (illegally in 1954), then in Kenya (1962), then in Tanzania (1963) which grew up to 184 kg and ate the Cichlid (reducing its volume from 80% to 1%) and 200 *Haplochromine* species (65%) were driven to extinction – the largest extinction event of the C20th. On the other hand, this created the 'Nile Perch Boom' of the 1980s. Chemical nutrients then reduced the water clarity and oxygen levels (1989–2009), and the 1 of 200 Cichild species remaining, *Haplochromis pyrrhocephalus*, evolved and increased its gill surface area by 64%, its cheek depth increased, and its head, eye length, and head volume decreased, – so it was a different looking kettle of fish . . . Things evolve quickly around Lake Victoria where Barack Obama's house father was born.

Barack Obama Sr. (23)

(1954) Kezia Aoko (14) in a tribal ceremony in Kenya. They had a son and Kezia was pregnant again when Barack got Stanley Ann pregnant in Hawaii. They married bigamously on 2 February 1961. Barack and Kezio eventually had four children.

Although he was allowed to have more than one wife in Luo custom, Barack's father was a bigamist. He knew this and didn't tell Ann he was married. Many years passed before she found out.

Barack Obama II was born on 4 August 1961, but the location is uncertain. Barack Sr. was known for giving Stanley Ann the bash, which is just enough reason for an issue-conscious feminist to move to another city to study.

Stanley Ann Dunham Obama (18) left university and visited her friends at Mercer Island, Washington in 1961 with her new Black baby and enrolled at the University of Washington by January 1962. The marriage was virtually over within the year (1961) and neither would live with Barack Obama, Sr. again.

Single mother Stanley Ann Dunham (19) lived on the northwest coast in Capitol Hill, Seattle with Barack Jr., while Barack Sr. continued his studies in Hawaii. He graduated as Phi Beta Kappa[4] in June 1962 and was offered a scholarship in New York City with enough pay to support his new second family. But he declined the offer, and in September 1962, Barack Sr. went to Harvard University in Cambridge, Massachusetts on the East Coast – 4,000 km away. Here Barack Sr. met American-born teacher, Ruth Nidesand. He received his Harvard Economics Master's Degree in 1965 and Ruth followed him to Kenya, married him, had two children, then they divorced.

Stanley Ann Dunham's door was open, but Barack Jr. didn't see Barack Sr. until 1971. Ann (21) filed for divorce in Honolulu in January 1964 when Junior was 2. Obama Sr. did not contest, and the divorce was granted on 20 March 1964. They had spent less than a year together (July 1960–June 1961). Barack Obama Sr. had been a sperm donor father, but it's debateable whether it was his sperm he donated, or a 'sperm and mummy clone cell cocktail' he was implanting.

Spymaster: "The CIA weren't giving any explanations to Blacks during that time period, so we'd have to ask them now. Certainly, the CIA were continuing all forms of Nazi programmes, including the Lebensraum breeding programme of 1935–45 . . . The CIA were in search of a woman with certain qualities: religious qualities like Queen Tiye, a long face like Akhenaten, and extremely white skin to offset the extremely black skin. They found the feminist Russian Language student Stanley Ann Dunham in Hawaii, complete with milky white skin."

Stanley Ann Dunham was a forward thinker in all the areas it didn't matter, and an historical thinker in all the areas it didn't matter, and was not impartial to alcohol, marijuana, or experimental drugs like LSD, so it was easy enough to drug her and have others come in and implant the cocktail.

'LSD was first synthesized in 1938. It's psychedelic properties were discovered in 1943. Sandoz Laboratories introduced LSD as a psychiatric drug in 1947.' "Beginning in the 1950s, the US Central Intelligence Agency began a research program codenamed Project MKULTRA. Experiments included administering LSD to CIA employees, military personnel, doctors, other government agents, prostitutes, mentally ill patients, and members of the general public in order to study their reactions, usually without the subject's knowledge. The project was revealed in the US congressional Rockefeller Commission report in 1975." 'The Sandoz LSD patents expired in 1963 and the US Food and Drug Administration classified LSD as an Investigational New Drug, which restricted its use to medical-scientific. It was a legal drug (16 November 1938–24 October 1968) until the CIA agent Timothy Leary, the MI-6 agent Aldous Huxley, and the ONI agent Al Hubbard began promoting it. The Swiss kept LSD legal until 1993, but then they are soft-Nazis for whom the money counts.'[5]

When a man as black as night is 17,500 km from home, you can smell the fear on him. Literally, I've offered them deodorant on the Trans-Siberian train in Russia. So there was no problem making Barack Sr. a willing participant. All you had to do was wear a suit, be white, have a small upper lip, talk in short direct sentences, flip an ID with an abbreviation no one had heard of, show a photo of a dead person and claim it was your buddies who did it, then give him US$100 and a card with someone's name on it for career advancement.

Students will do anything for money, especially African students overseas. This includes medical experiments on themselves. Doing a medical experiment on someone else was even less of a conscience battle, especially when it was an Intelligence medical experiment complete with White career guarantees for a Black-as-spades participant.

A medical experiment on another was a soft version of drug-dealing, or date rape, and let's face it, Stanley Ann was a bit of a pain in the arse, looked and thought weird, and smelt funny. She looked like Olive Oil and was not the 'hot chick' – so nothing much to worry about. To a Black man from deep west Kenya, it was NHI – No Humans Involved.

Curiously, after Washington and the birth of Barry Akhenaten, Stanley Ann Dunham returned to the University of Hawaii in Honolulu, dropped Russian Language and studied cultural anthropology – which is what feminist chicks do when they're fascinated with black apes. I'm not kidding! I used to attend. Those classes are full of milky white chicks with long blonde-to-mousey hair. You can tell them anything and they'll just sit there thinking 'ape, ape, ape, ape, ape, ape, ape' while fronting as agape.

During this time (1964–67) Stanely Ann was dependent on food stamps and it was her parents who made the huge contribution to raising Obama Jr. They were the rock in his life.

In 1967, Stanley Ann Dunham graduated with a Bachelor's Degree in Anthropology (Indonesian rather than Egyptian) from the University of Hawaii.

Barack Obama Sr. had played his part in history and been paid, so he got his Harvard Economics Masters Degree in 1965. In 1971, Barack Obama Sr. (33) went to Hawaii briefly to visit his son Barack (10). He had seen his son as a baby, then as a 10-year-old, for the last time. When Barack Jr. became an adult at 21, and those who plan futures, were planning his future, Senior's knowledge could pose huge problems, so Barack Obama Sr. was killed in a car accident on 24 November 1982.

Barack Obama Sr. (35)

Stanley Ann Dunham's feminism and poor quality pheromones were about to create a repeat pattern, so . . . in Hawaii's East-West Center she met the Indonesian student, Lolo Soetoro. They married in 1966/67. President Suharto's ascent to power on 12 March 1967 caused unrest, but they moved with Barack (6) to Jakarta anyway.

Soetoro worked for Mobil as a govt. relations consultant; Barack did correspondence courses in English, listened to the African-American gospel singer Mahalia Jackson, and speeches by Martin Luther King Jr., then attended Besuki

---

[4] Phi Beta Kappa: "Love of learning is the guide of life" is the most prestigious liberal-arts and sciences honor.

[5] Wikipedia: 'Lysergic acid diethylamide', paraphrased.

Public School and St. Francis of Assisi School. Stanley Ann Dunham and Lolo Soetoro then had a daughter, Maya Kassandra Soetoro, on 15 August 1970.

Barack was the third wheel in the new family, so within the year, Ann sent Barack (10) back to Honolulu to live with with her parents. Madelyn Dunham's job as a vice-president at the Bank of Hawaii (1970–86) helped pay the expensive tuition at Punahou School (1971–79), with some assistance from a scholarship.[6]

Barack was separated from his mother (1971–72,[7] 1977–94) aged 10–12 and 16–34, just enough to qualify him as an Illuminati child (separated from mother before 12 years old).

Ann Dunham separated from Lolo Soetoro in 1972 and moved to a Hawaii (1972–77), 11,000 km away – on the other side of the planet, taking their daughter Maya Kassandra Soetoro (2) with her. She returned to Indonesia for anthropology field work with Maya (6) in 1977 and home schooled her (1977–81), then set her free (11–14) to attend Jakarta International School (1981–84), then Punahou School in Honolulu where Maya graduated (1984–88).

Barack and Maya lived together as brother and sister from 1970–71 and 1972–77 when Maya was 0–1 and 2–7. Ann and Lolo did not live together again and divorced in 1980. After the divorce, Stanley Ann Dunham took an Anglocised version of her ex-husband's name and became Ann Dunham Sutoro . . . so she was nuts.

Lolo Soetoro didn't waste any time and began breeding with another straight away.

1971: Lolo Soetoro, Ann Dunham, Maya Kassandra Soetoro, and Barack Obama Jr.

---

[6] Punahou School is a private, co-educational, preparatory school (ages 2–18) in Honolulu – the largest independent school in America. Tuition is $16,675 (2008–09 year), not including optional and mandatory fees. In 2006, it was ranked as the "greenest" school in America and in 2008 and 2009 *Sports Illustrated* ranked its sports program the best in America. It has an endowment fund of around US$175 million.

[7] 'Profile of Madelyn Payne Dunham, Barack Obama's Grandmother', Linda Lowen, About.com

1975: Stanley Armour Dunham, Stanley Ann Sutoro, Maya Kassandra Soetoro, Barack Obama Jr.

1995: Stanley Armour Dunham, Madelyn Dunham and Barack Obama Jr. just after Ann died.

Obama's Grandmother was CIA

Madelyn Lee née Payne Dunham (26 Oct. 1922–2 Nov. 2008) joined Bank of Hawaii in Oahu in 1960. She was promoted to manager of the escrow department in 1962, then blazed a trail for other women in banking throughout the 1960s. In December 1970 she was made the bank's first female vice president, along with another woman. This was a post-WWII glass ceiling for both of them. Dunham retired as head of the bank's escrow department in 1986.

Spymaster: "The Bank of Hawaii worked with the Nugan Hand bank. Frank Nugan and Jon Hand were both Tigermen from 1941/42 involved in CIA heroin running from China to the U.S.. The heroin was originally just for Blacks. But by the 1960s it went to everybody. That's why they had the Vietnam War.

"The heroin ended up in the bodies of soldiers, then in the petrol tanks of vehicles, which the Americans had blown up themselves, by the docks, as they were too difficult to transport in a wrecked state from inland. Once blown up, the vehicles were stored in huge open carparks in Danang, Vietnam, then shipped to the East or West coast by these old WWII Escort Carriers."

Nugan Hand Bank was an Australian merchant bank that collapsed in 1980 in sensational circumstances amidst rumours of involvement with the CIA and organized crime.

Nugan Hand Ltd. was founded in Sydney in 1973 by Australian lawyer Frank Nugan and U.S. Green Beret Michael Jon Hand.

Frank Nugan was associated with the Mafia in Griffith 'Marijuana County', New South Wales, where the anti-drugs campaigner Donald Mackay was murdered on 15 July 1977. There is a tie in here with the Mr Asia heroin trafficking gang and the New Zealand mafia.

U.S. Green Beret Michael Jon Hand participated in the Vietnam War, then trained Hmong guerillas in Northern Laos under CIA aegis (protective shield). This led to ties with the "Golden Triangle" heroin trade.

The two split the business: Nugan took care of tax fraud and money-laundering, while Hand managed the drug money and the international branches.

The Nugan Hand Bank attracted investors with promises of up to 16% interest and assurances of anonymity, tax-free accounts, specialist investment assistance, and money laundering for a mere 22 % fee. So there's your 6 % profit.

The Nugan Hand Bank gained respectability by the recruitment of a number of retired senior U.S. military and Intelligence personnel, including Rear Admiral Earl "Buddy" Yates as bank president, and ex-CIA Dir. William Colby (4 Sept. 1973–30 Jan. 1976) as legal counsel.

Nugan Hand's single Sydney office rapidly expanded into a global network with branches in Chiang Mai, Manila, Hawaii, Cape Town, Hong Kong, Taiwan, Cayman Islands and Washington D.C., all of which were registered in the Cayman Islands.

Investors attending AGMs in the late 1970s were prevented from asking questions about the bank, by the bank. Concerns over questionable accounting practices began to circulate. Frank Nugan was charged with stock fraud, then shot dead by a .30-calibre rifle in his Mercedes-Benz outside Lithgow, NSW in the early hours of 27 January 1980. Concerns turned into investor panic.

"It is said that a hand-written list was found on his body with a list of substantial loans Nugan Hand had extended to various notables including as William Colby and Bob Wilson. The police investigation then returned a verdict of 'suicide'. Suspicions of the bank's activities grew in subsequent days as details emerged of the contents of Nugan's car (including the business card of William Colby) and news that Nugan's house and office had been ransacked by Jon Hand and Admiral Yates, with important company files destroyed or stolen."

"The official inquest into Nugan's death in June 1980 made front-page news amid testimony from Jon Hand that Nugan Hand was insolvent, owing at least A$50 million (and as much as hundreds of millions), including $20,000 rent on their Sydney headquarters. Jon Hand then promptly fled Australia under a false identity on a flight to Fiji in June 1980, after destroying Nugan Hand's remaining records. Jon Hand has not been seen since. It is possible that, as a CIA operative, he re-entered the US and was given a new identity.

"A subsequent Royal Commission inquiring into the activities of the Nugan Hand Group revealed money-laundering, arms shipments, drug dealing, theft (including US$5 million from US military personnel in Saudi Arabia) and large-scale tax avoidance by Nugan Hand throughout its brief but eventful existence. One witness, a former Nugan Hand director, stated that Hand threatened bank executives:

> 'If we didn't do what we were told, and things weren't handled properly,
> our wives would be cut into pieces and put in boxes and sent back to us'."[8]

The Australian 'Joint Task Force on Drug Trafficking' investigation compiled a Nugan Hand bank report in 1983:

> "Nugan Hand had acted as a CIA front to finance a war in Laos by laundering drug money. The Nugan Hand Chiang Mai branch participated in the covert sale of an electronic spy ship to Iran and weapons shipments to Angola [aegis]."

Nugan Hand had a powerful friends and co-workers in U.S. Military Intelligence, and heroin influence, enough for them to play in the political realms – like Australian Prime Minister Gough Whitlam's dismissal on 11 November 1975.

No one connected with Nugan Hand was ever convicted and Admiral Yates and his fellow senior officers involved never responded to Australian requests to testify.

The Nugan Hand Bank was closely associated with the Bank of Hawaii from around 1975. Madelyn Dunham retired as head of the bank's escrow department and vice president in 1986. She died on 2 November 2008, just two days before Obama won the election and became President-elect.

It certainly stopped Madelyn Dunham being questioned and talking about Obama's real origins. This rasies another question to ask the CIA and the US Military involved in the Nugan Hand Bank: "Did you wack Madelyn Lee née Payne Dunham – the future President of America's grandmother and house mother?"

And now for some Distraction News

Obama said that when he was a child, his grandmother (vice president of the Bank of Hawaii) "read me the opening lines of the Declaration of Independence and told me about the men and women who marched for equality because they believed those words put to paper two centuries ago should mean something."

Barack Obama, *Dreams from My Father*: 'My great-grandmother, Leona McCurry, was part Native American, which Leona held as a "source of considerable shame" and "blanched whenever someone mentioned the subject and hoped to carry the secret to her grave"; whereas McCurry's daughter (Obama's maternal grandmother) "would turn her head in profile to show off her beaked nose, which along with a pair of jet-black eyes, was offered as proof of Cherokee blood".'

To date, no concrete evidence has surfaced of Cherokee heritage. Obama's maternal heritage consists mostly of English ancestry, with much smaller amounts of German, Irish, Scottish, Welsh, Swiss, and French ancestry.

Yeah, well, what about being the second cloned president, after the Bono Chimpanzee, W.

---

[8] Wikipedia, Nugen Hand Bank quote, the rest slightly paraphrased.

1971: Barack Obama Sr. complete with gammy leg from his first car accident, with Barack Obama Jr.

Ann Dunham Sutoro encouraged her children to see their fathers, but Barack only saw his father aged 0–1, and then briefly as a 10 year-old. What Barack Sr. had done to Stanley Ann Dunham, Ann Dunham did to Lolo Soetoro. So it was nuts . . . impossible to live with, and little rewards for doing so. Full dibs to Barack Obama Jr. for putting up with her, although it appears, he didn't have to that much.

Barack lived with his travelling roving mother aged 0–10, then 12–16 and was actually raised and guided by the vice-president of the Bank of Hawaii – his maternal grandmother, Madelyn Dunham.

> Clinton's story is the same, exactly the same. He was dumped on a solo Mum who then abandoned him and he was raised by his maternal grandmother – so it's the Democratic Way.

The clone-carrier of Pharoah Akhenaten returned to Hawaii and died on 7 November 1995, sick to death of her medical bills for ovarian cancer – too many different cocks – so she was another Pamela Digby, but failed to look or smell good doing it. What can I say – different pheromones, but both essentially government agents, and both in complete denial. The CIA learnt from the Gestapo, who learnt from Gurdjieff, that sluts make the world go round.

Barack Obama also has a confusing history of names: Barack Hussein Mohammed Obama; Barry Dunham; Barack Soetoro; Barry Sutoro; Barack Hussein Akhenaten; Barry Akhenaten; Hussein Akhenaten, and Pharoah Akhenaten 3,300 years later and 14,670 km away – Honolulu being the nearest landmass to the exact opposite side of the world.

CIA: "They're on the same 20th parallel.
"Luxor is 25° 41' N, 32° 39'E. Honolulu is 21° 18' N, 157° 49'E.
"You couldn't get further away – that's the CIA way."

1372–1334 BC: Pharaoh Akhenaten at Luxor.

1988–91: Barack Hussein Obama II at Harvard

Regardless, Barry Sutoro/ Barack Hussein Obama/ clone of Pharoah Akhenaten got every break and hand-up to be expected of a 'Planned-Presidency'. Even the twin Republican psychics predicted around 2000 that there would be a Black president in 2008.

As her name suggests, Stanley Ann Dunham wasn't the best mother. She was barely around, continually distracted and suffered from the BO acquired when you're always rushing off to do the next thing and never in the present – the panic of time.

Obama Jr.: "That my father looked nothing like the people around me – that he was black as pitch, my mother white as milk – barely registered in my mind."[9] Yeah right!
'Like his mother, Obama used alcohol, marijuana and cocaine as a teenager.'[10]
Obama: "Pot had helped, and booze; maybe a little blow when you could afford it."[11]

When Barack dreamed of his pitch black father whom he met once aged 10, he was actually dreaming of Pharaoh Amenhotep III (1398–1350 BC) a.k.a. Amenophis III, or in Egyptian, 'Satisfied the third'.

Barak finished Punahou School in Honolulu and moved to Occidental College in Los Angeles (1979–81); then transferred to Columbia University in New York City (1981–83) and majored in Political Science (specialising in international relations, just as Pharoah Akhenaten would). He graduated with a B.A. in 1983 then worked for the Business International Corporation (1983–84), then the New York Public Interest Research Group (1984–85) – so his Jewish roots were coming out.

He then moved to Chicago as Director of the Developing Communities Project – a church-based community organisation (Catholic) on the far South Side (June 1985–May 1988). Surprise, surprise, befitting a pharoah, the budget grew from $70,000 to $400,000 and his staff grew from 1 to 13. So by the mid-1980s, the backing boys were in.

Why do I look placed here?
Why do I feel placed here?

---

[9] *Dreams from My Father*, Barack Obama, 1995, pp. 9–10.
[10] 'Obama Gets Blunt with N.H. Students', *Boston Globe*, Associated Press, 21 November 2007, paraphrased.
[11] *Dreams from My Father*, Barack Obama, 1995, pp. 93–94.

In mid-1988, Barack travelled to Europe (3 weeks) then to Kenya (5 weeks) and again in August 2006 to Kanyadhiang village, Nyang'oma Kogelo, Nyanza Province, rural west Kenya to visit to his house-father's relatives and birth place . . . but they were not his paternal relatives, or his house-father, but his con-father.

His real relatives lived 2,890 km almost directly north (356°) in the Palace at Thebes in Luxor on the River Nile, and were buried a further 6 km north in the Valley of the Kings.

Complete with the invisible hand, Obama entered Harvard Law School in late 1988. At the end of the first year, he (28) became the first Black president of the Harvard Law Review (6 February 1990) which launched the media to give him national attention in the *New York Times* – Jewish.

This in turn led to a book advance about race relations. "Jane Dystel, the publisher of Times Books gave Obama (28) a $40,000 advance. Professor Baird then called Mr. Obama at Harvard and asked if he was interested in teaching and then got him a small office near the law library to write in. [So it was all laid on]. He spent two months in Bali with Michelle finishing *Dreams from My Father*, which turned out to be a memoir, rather than a book on race relations.

Dreams from My Father was published in mid-1995 by Hermene Hartman – essentially the same history as Billy Rex Churchill-Clinton and Adolf Rothschild-Hitler – so it was history repeating disguised as a personal memoir. All three had speaking training, and that's usually enough to fool the majority of people the majority of time – enough to get elected.

> "It possesses at times the same charmed quality sometimes ascribed to his political ascent – an impression of ease, if not exactly effortlessness, that obscures a more complex amalgam of drive, ambition, timing and the ability to recognize an opportunity and to do what it takes to seize it."[12]

The same goes for Adi Rothschild and Billy Rex . . . and Akhenaten Obama.

Barack: "This is an example of what happens when you look at things backwards."[13]

There were respectful reviews in *The New York Times* and *The Boston Globe* and it sold 8,000 to 9,000 copies. Obama: 'I joke that 290 million Americans did not buy the book' . . . Within a few years *Dreams From My Father* was out of print."[14]

As soon as Barack made his keynote address at the 2004 Democratic National Convention *Dreams from My Father* soared out of obscurity and three million copies were printed. Barack ('Biracial') was now an agenda player and changed publishers from Hermene Hartman to Crown and was represented by Robert 'Bob-the-Fixer' Barnett – the same Washington fixer lawyer Hillary Clinton used to get her US$8 million advance. Obama got a publishing advance of US$1.9 million for three books. *The Audacity of Hope* (October 2006) is the first. The second is a children's book.

In the student holidays Obama worked as a summer associate at the Chicago law firms of Sidley Austin (1989) and Hopkins & Sutter (1990), graduated from Harvard in 1991 with a Law Degree with Second Class Honors (Juris Doctor, magna cum laude).[15] He married Michelle LaVaughn Robinson in October 1992.

To boost his career further, Crain's Chicago Business named Obama (32) in the '40 under Forty' powers to be list in 1993. For 12 years, Obama served as a professor of constitutional law at the University of Chicago Law School, as a Lecturer (1992–96), and Senior Lecturer (1996–2004). He was an associate (1993–96) then counsel (1996–2004) at Davis Miner Barnhill & Galland (12 attorneys) and even Obama admits he was a behind the scenes lawyer who would introduce his client and then step back and let the other lawyers do the talking. So Obama specialised in civil rights litigation and neighbourhood economic development.

Obama was a founding member of the board of directors of Public Allies (1992). He resigned, then his new wife Michelle Obama became the Chicago founding executive director in early 1993. Obama served on the board of directors of the Woods Fund of Chicago and the Joyce Foundation (1994–2002); and served as the founding president and chairman of the board of directors of the Chicago Annenberg Challenge (1995–99–2002).

"Since Obama (30) graduated from the Harvard Law School in 1991, he has made no appearances in Cook County Circuit Court. His practice was mainly in the Chicago's Federal Court where he made formal appearances in 5 District Court cases and another 5 in cases before the 7th U.S. Circuit Court of Appeals. So that's 10 cases in his legal career. He did most of his talking behind the scenes and some could say that this sounds a little rigged, but then some of the judges were also his fellow law lecturers. Obama understood the nuances of law, and was not so good at shooting back with a simple answer."[16]

Barack Obama became a Member of the Illinois Senate (1997–2004), his law license became inactive in 2002, then he became the Senator for Ilinois (2005–08), then President of the United States/ British Plantation/ New Egypt, sworn in on 20 January 2009.

. . . And the rest is history, or it will be . . . with all the confusion that keeps us ignorant, and all the agenda that separates the published from the unpublished.

Barack Obama or so we thought

So at first, Barack Obama is born in Honolulu which would give him American citizenship. Having a Kenyan father gave him Kenyan and British citizenship. He retained the Kenyan citizenship for the maximum period, up until his 23rd birthday on 4 August in 1984. So then he had British and American citizenship. Then we find that Barack Obama could not produce a valid date stamped birth certificate for Hawaii, so his American citizenship was questioned.

Barack Obama/ Barry Soetoro/ Sutoro then ordered the original vault copy of his birth certificate sealed. He retained three law firms to defend 42 Federal Court cases and a similar number of State Court cases that "Barack Obama is the Kenyan 'Barry Soetoro".

---

[12] *The New York Times*, 'The Story of Obama, Written by Obama', Janny Scot, 18 May 2008.

[13] *Ibid.*

[14] *Ibid.*

[15] "Magna cum laude" is similar to the British undergraduate degree, or a simple Bachelor's degree – B.A.. "cum laude" means 'with honor'; "magna cum laude" means 'with great honor'; and "summa cum laude" means 'with highest honor'. The same honours across the States at different universities have a huge variance in academic levels – so it's meaning is open to interpretation. "Juris Doctor" just means he got a Law Degree. So Barack Obama got Second Class honours in his Law Degree – an LLB with an A- average.

[16] *Chicago Sun-Times*, 'Strong, silent type, Obama's Legal Career', Abdon M. Pallasch, Political Reporter, 17 December 2007, paraphrased for clarity.

By mid-2009, Barack had spent over a US$1 million in legal defence fees. The case against him is well-founded, substantiated through factual evidence, state and federal statutes, and international laws. Extensive searches in the State of Hawaii showed no birthing records for his mother Stanley Ann Dunham in any hospital in Hawaii."[17]

So then Barack Obama was born in Kenya on 4 August 1961 and only his British citizenship is legal. Stanley Ann Dunham was Jewish and Barry Soetoro is a British asset and Agent . . . or so we thought.

British.
New Egyptian from Kansas.
German.

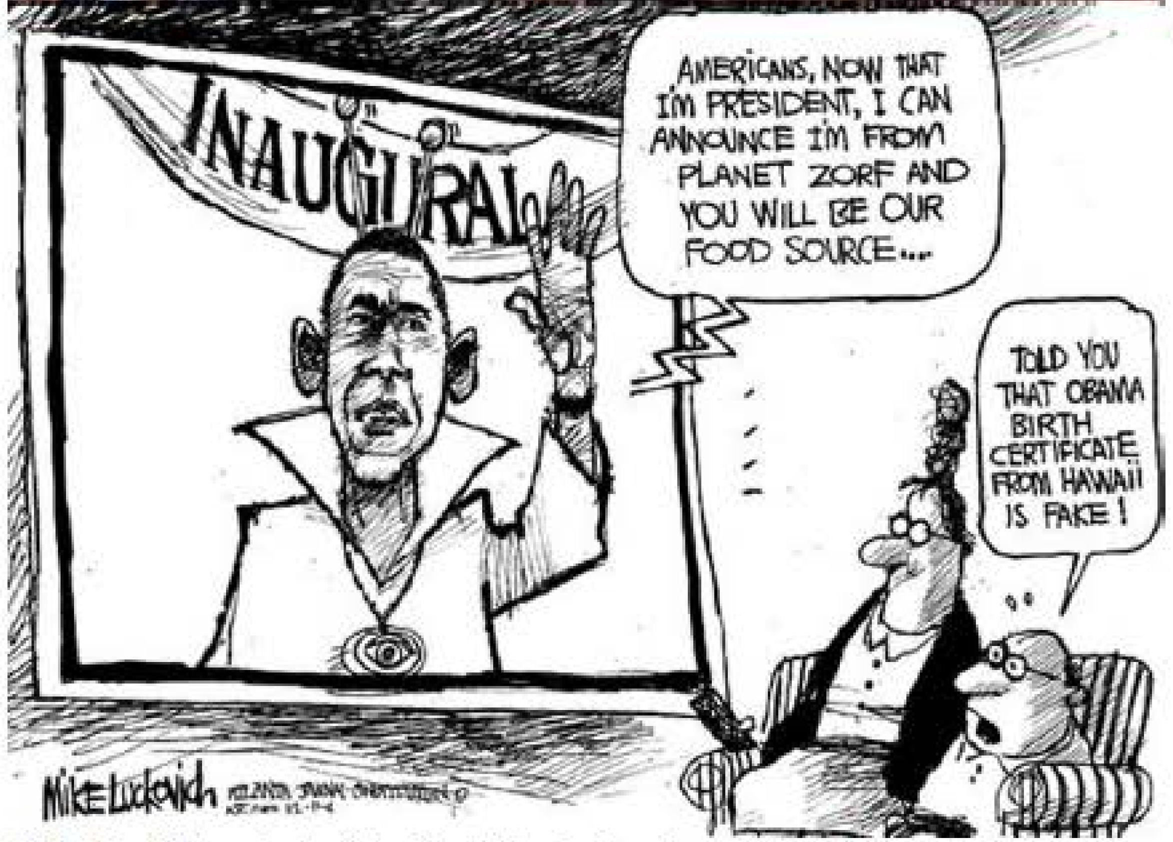
INAUGURAL
AMERICANS, NOW THAT I'M PRESIDENT, I CAN ANNOUNCE I'M FROM PLANET ZORF AND YOU WILL BE OUR FOOD SOURCE...
TOLD YOU THAT OBAMA BIRTH CERTIFICATE FROM HAWAII IS FAKE!
MIKE LUCKOVICH

---

[17] The Fraud Of Barry Soetoro (a.k.a. Barack Hussein Obama), open letter to the Senate and Congress from Dr. Orly Taitz, 11 February 2009, Educate-Yourself, paraphrased for the clarity of your enjoyment.

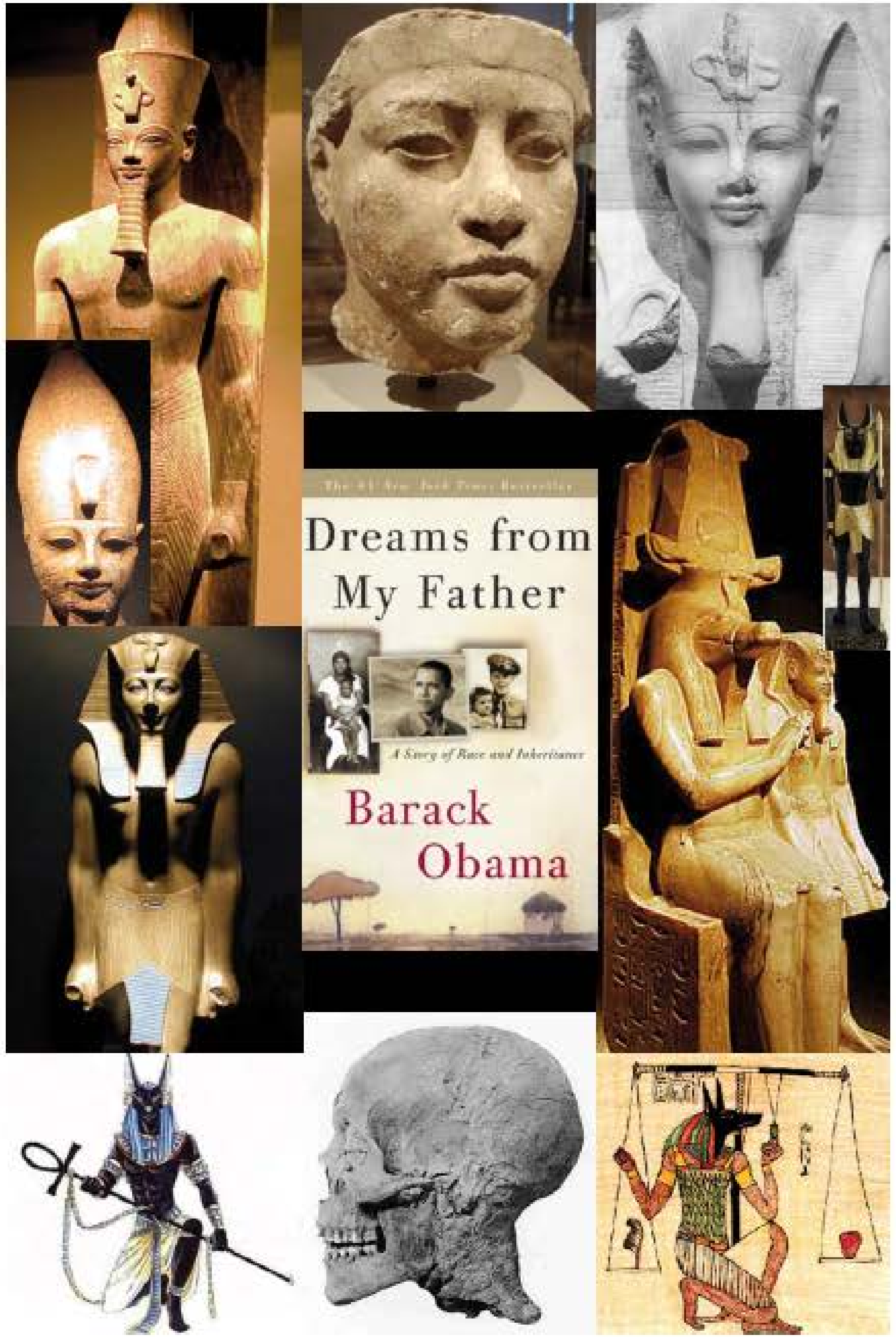
The #1 New York Times Bestseller
Dreams from My Father
A Story of Race and Inheritance
Barack Obama

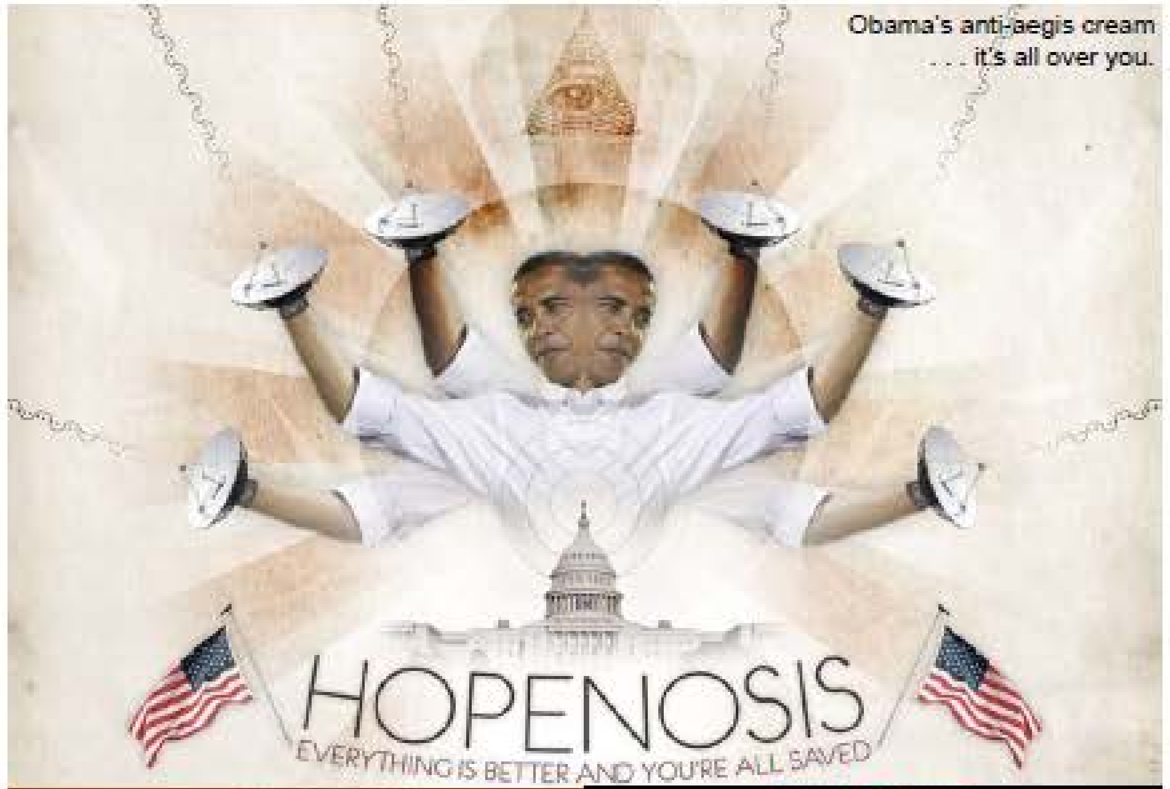

Obama's anti-aegis cream
. . . it's all over you.

HOPENOSIS
EVERYTHING IS BETTER AND YOU'RE ALL SAVED

Barack Obama:
"Our deepest fear is not
that we are inadequate.
Our deepest fear is that we are powerful
beyond measure.
It is our light,
not our darkness,
that most frightens us.
We ask ourselves,
who am I to be brilliant,
gorgeous, talented, and fabulous?
Actually, who are you not to be?
You are a child of God.
Your playing small doesn't serve the world.
There's nothing enlightened
about shrinking
so that other people won't feel insecure
around you.
We are all meant to shine,
as children do.
We are born to make manifest
the glory of God that is within us.
It's not just in some of us,
it's in everyone.
And as we let our own light shine,
we unconsciously give other
people permission to do the same.
As we are liberated from our own fear,
our presence
automatically liberates others."

Cloning Egyptian Pharaohs as President for the New Egypt

"In 1898, Victor Loret discovered the mummies of Pharaoh Amenhotep III and his wife Queen Tiye ('The Elder Lady') side by side in Amenhotep's WV22 tomb.

"The Elder Lady mummy was identified as Queen Tiye with her shabits found around her in tomb KV35.

Queen Tiye's gilded burial shrine showing her with her son, Akhenaten, ended up in KV55.

"Queen Tiye (1398–1338 BC) was married to Amenhotep III aged 11 and became a widow at 48 – a marriage of 37 years. She outlived her husband by 12 years and died after the 12th year of the reign of her son, Akhenaten. She died aged 59, but her teeth looked like a 29-year-old's and her hair was not gray.

"A fragment of her tomb was also found buried alongside her son Akhenaten and granddaughter, Meketaten, in Akhenaten's royal tomb at Amarna.

In her grandson's Tutankhamun's tomb, a lock of Queen Tiye's hair was found 'in a nest of miniature anthropoid coffins inscribed with the name and titles of Queen Tiye'.

"So Queen Tiye was a popular lady with her husband, son, and granddaughter."[18]

"'Shabits' are small figurines inscribed with a special formula to be recited and represent the function expressed in that spell – to carry out heavy manual tasks on behalf of a person in the afterlife. For example: "*O, these shabtis, if one counts me off for my duties*

> *– now indeed an obstacle is implanted for/ against me there with, as a man at his duties; if one counts off for you at any time which has be passed there make arable the fields, to turn over the shores, to transport by boat the sand of the West (and) of the East, 'here you are' you shall say.*"[19]
>
> An interpretation might be: '*I am mummified. Reincarnate me with the knowledge of the East and the West – the sands of the Ark of the Covenant – the twin soul with Anubis – and I will travel over the seas to serve to make the fields grow and the tides right, and you shall say: 'Look, it's Queen Tiye reincarnated.*'

Parts of Queen Tiye were buried in a tomb with her son Pharaoh Akhenaten where they spent the next 3,300 years lying next to each other in a mummified state, complete with live cells. This was the ancient version of cryogenic freezing. Pharoahs and their important associates were mummified in the hopes that one day they could be cloned from their cells.

Well their future has arrived and developing living tissues from mummies has been advertised as scientifically capable from 1985. Like most science, it is actually done 25–150 years beforehand and the OSS/ CIA were cloning from 1920.[20] Victor Loret found these two Egyptian mummies in 1898, and they were were cloned in 1960 and 1963 as Barry Sutoro in Kenya/ Fort Leavenworth, and Michelle LaVaughn Robinson in Chicago/ Fort Leavenworth.

This cloning Egyptian Pharoah's does fit in with the Intelligence name of the United States – "the New Egypt" – and the Intelligence name of New Zealand being "New Spain", and the leader of Iraq, Saddam Hussein, claiming to be the reincarnation of Nebuchadnezzar II who ruled Babylon (c. 605 BC–562 BC).

Barack Obama is reportedly a clone from a tissue sample off Pharaoh Akhenaten.[21]

Michelle Obama is reportedly a clone from a tissue sample off Queen Tiye.[22]

---

[18] Wikipedia: 'Queen Tiye'; 'Queen Tiye and the Co-Regency', paper by Marianne Luban.

[19] Wikipedia: 'Shabits'; also found in the *Book of the Dead*.

[20] As confirmed by the ex-wife of the 3-IC of the CIA, Rayelan Allan in an interview with the author on Rumour Mill News, Radio RMN, America, 22 December 2009.

[21] Archival records discredited Akhenaten and considered him 'the enemy' who abandoned traditional gods. . He ruled for 17 years (1351–1334 BC) and was the father of King Tutankhamun.

[22] Queen Tiye (1398–1339 BC) married Pharaoh Amenhotep III in the second year of his reign (1386–50 BC) when he was 6–12 years old and she was 11. So she was the same age, or up to 5 years older. She was married 37 years, then widowed aged 48 and died aged 59. Her blood type was 'O'.
Queen Tiye, also known as Tiji, Taia, Tiy, and Tiyi, is the mother of religious monotheism – only one God.
Pharoah Akhenaten was known as 'the Heretic King'.

Queen Tiye was Pharoh Akhenaten's mother.

Michelle and Barack's daughters Malia and Sasha look exactly like Queen Tiye's other children Lady Tuty and Lady Mi.

Fitting in with their 3,300 year old Egyptian history, the Secret Service gave these two clones of famous Egyptians, and their American-born children, World War II codenames as follows:

Name	Egyptian Name	Lived / Ruled	SS Codename
Michelle Obama b. 17 January 1964	Queen Tiye (Mother)	Lived 1398–1339 BC Ruled 1386–1350BC	Renaissance
Barack Obama b. 4 August 1961	Pharaoh Akhenaten (Son)	Lived 1372–1334 BC Ruled 1350–1334 BC	Renegade
Malia Ann Obama b. 4 July 1998	Lady Tuty (Akhenaten's sister)	b. 1370s/1360s BC	Radiance
Natasha 'Sasha' Obama b. 10 June 2001	Lady Mi (Akhenaten's sister)	b. 1370s/1360s BC	Rosebud

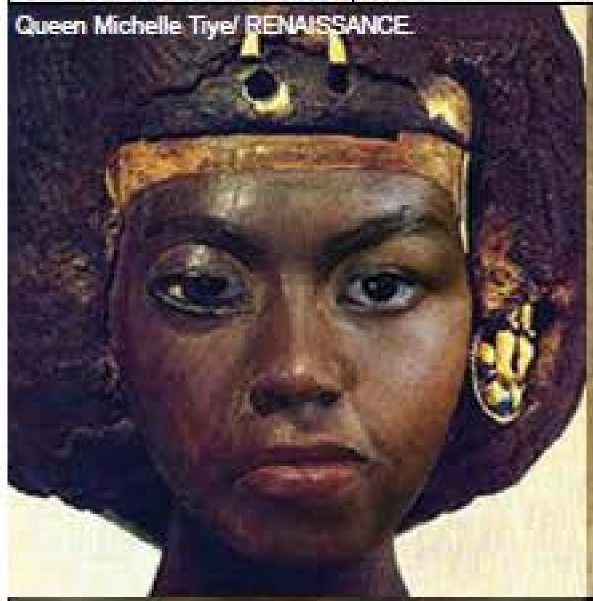
Queen Michelle Tiye/ RENAISSANCE.

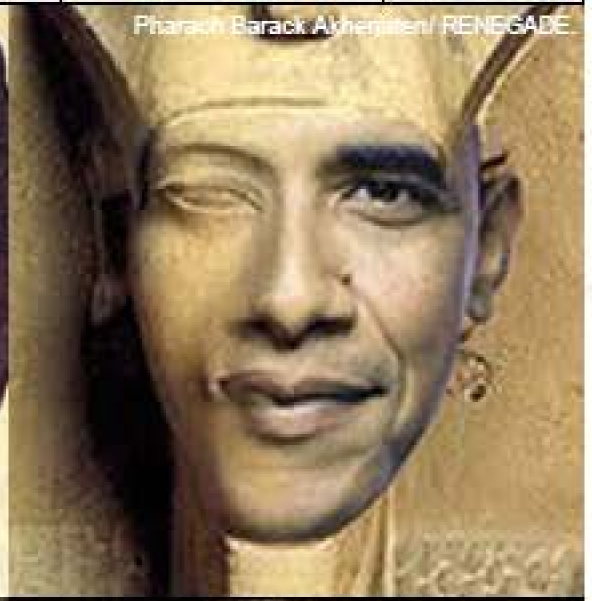
Pharaoh Barack Akhenaten/ RENEGADE.

Lady Malia Tuty/ RADIANCE.

Lady Sasha Mi Obama/ ROSEBUD.

Luxor Temple as it would have been.

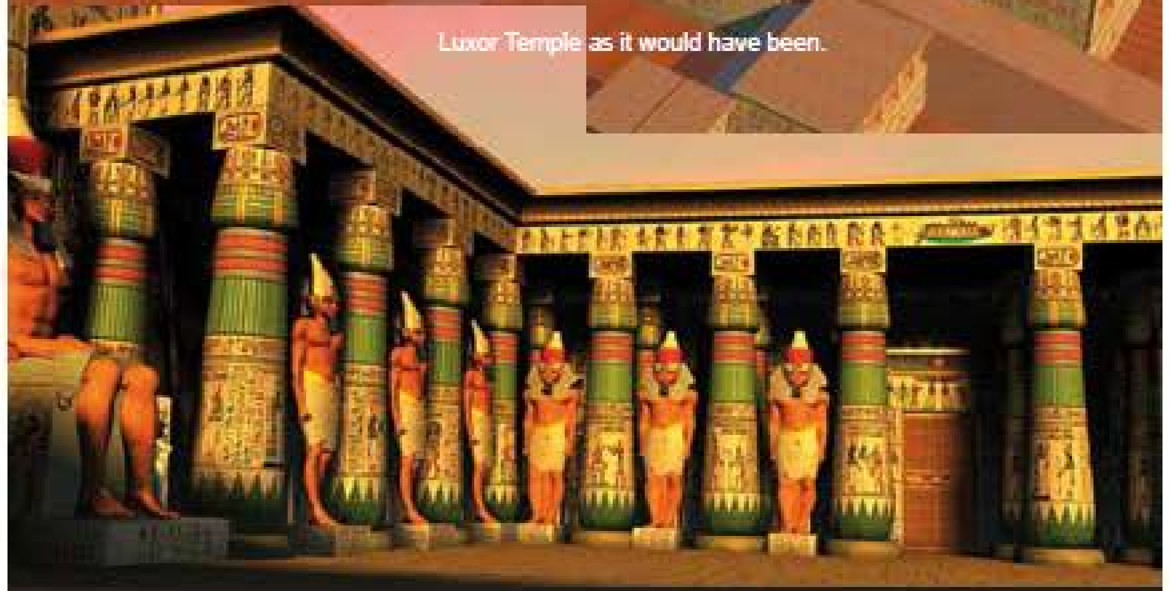

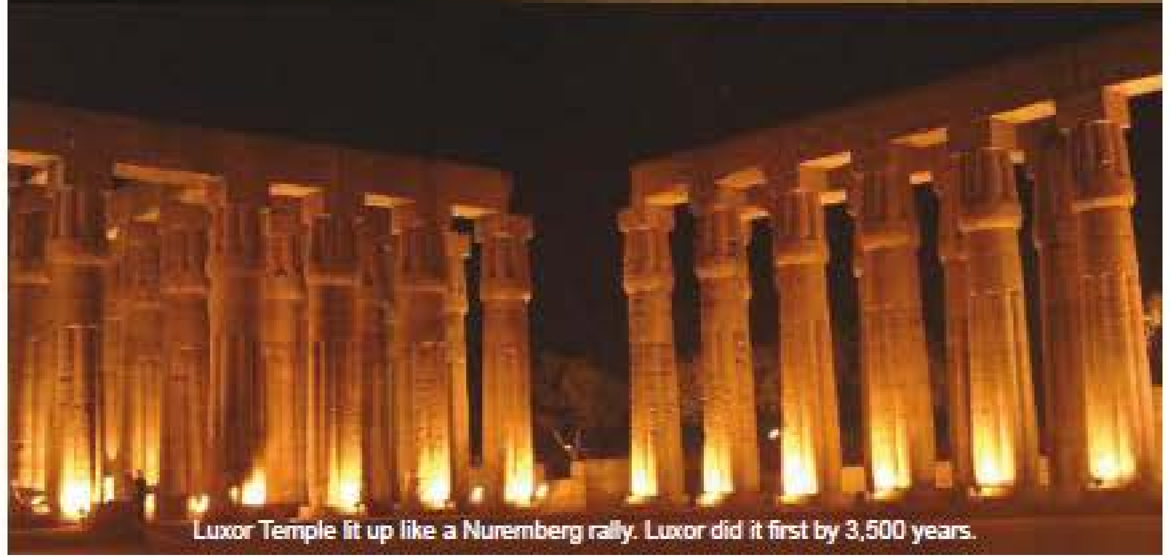
Luxor Temple lit up like a Nuremberg rally. Luxor did it first by 3,500 years.

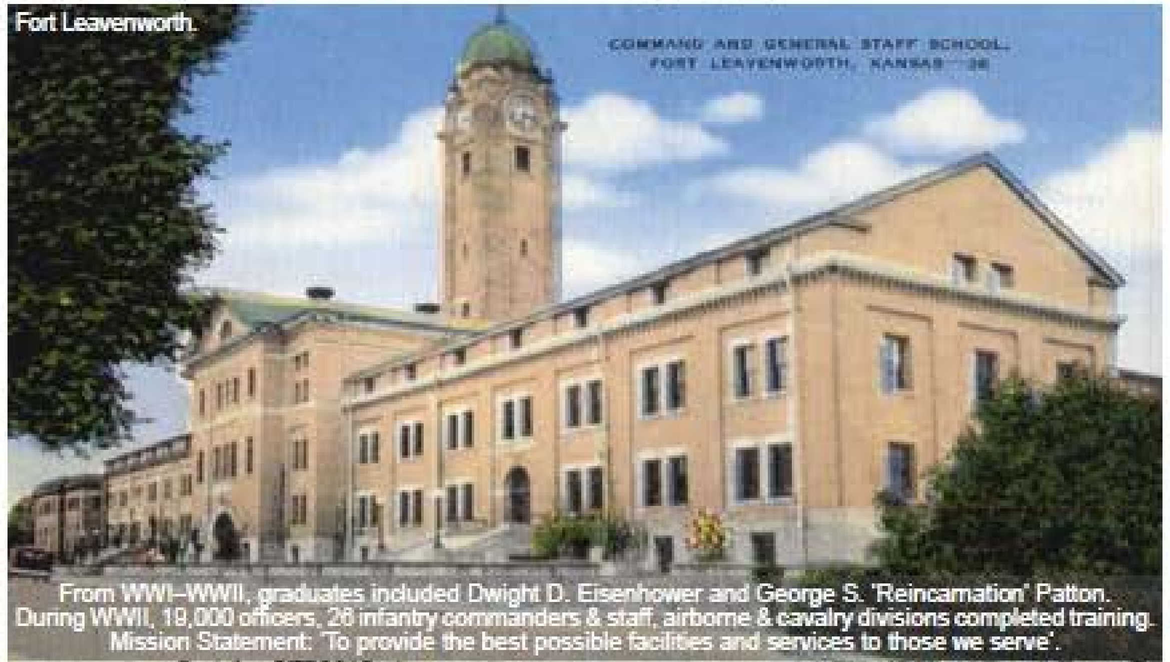
COMMAND AND GENERAL STAFF SCHOOL,
FORT LEAVENWORTH, KANSAS —26

Fort Leavenworth.

From WWI–WWII, graduates included Dwight D. Eisenhower and George S. 'Reincarnation' Patton.
During WWII, 19,000 officers, 26 infantry commanders & staff, airborne & cavalry divisions completed training.
Mission Statement: 'To provide the best possible facilities and services to those we serve'.

This did not include Blacks, and thousands were experimented on for Blood Farming.

Officers Quarters Scofield Hall Fort Leavenworth Kans.

Officers Quarters, Scofield Hall, Fort Leavenworth.

Fort Leavenworth Disciplinary Barracks (est. 1875) is the longest continuously-run penitentiary in the U.S. and is now a maximum-security military prison.

River
Missouri
Bottomland forest
Upland forest
Fort Leavenworth

Inside 'The Castle' Disciplinary Barracks.

Fort Leavenworth Penitentiary.

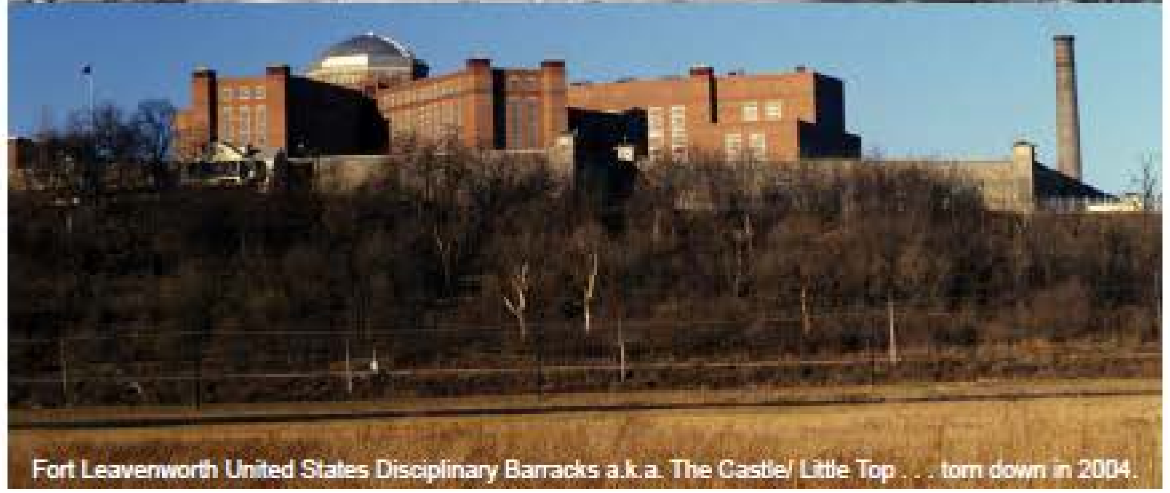

Fort Leavenworth United States Disciplinary Barracks a.k.a. The Castle/ Little Top . . . torn down in 2004.

Residence of Commandant Infantry and Cavalry School Fort Leavenworth Kans.

Fort Leavenworth residence of the Commandant of the Infantry & Cavalry School who ruled over everything that went down at Leavenworth.

MILITARY HOSPITAL, FT. LEAVENWORTH, KANSAS

Fort Leavenworth Military Hospital.

Fort Leavenworth U.S. Command and General Staff College, James Franklin Bell Hall. It opened in 1959 replacing the old one.

Barack Hussein Obama II's origins

Madelyn Lee Payne (17) was young when she married Stanley Armour Dunham (22) on 5 May 1940. For America this was pre-war, but the preparations were underway.

On 7 December 1941, Pearl Harbor brought America into the war (with an inside job).

Stanley Dunham then began training at Fort Leavenworth and Madelyn Dunham was working nearby as an Aircraft Inspector for the Boeing B-29 plant in Wichita.

They weren't a bad looking couple, quite tall, and would have come to the attention of the OSS who had been cloning since 1920.

Ann Dunham was conceived six weeks after Pearl Harbor at Fort Leavenworth.

War is often a mask for medical experiments. The Nazis did it, and the Americans did it – both on their enemies, on their citizens, and on their military staff. It was pretty much a free-for-all without the normal checks and balances. Deaths could be more easily hidden on the military base than in a civilian town, especially when there were group deaths.

Cloning required experiments with blood farming, and Fort Leavenworth was one of the main places blood farming was done.

Blacks had no rights in WWII and were used as test dummies for this blood farming. They were taken in droves to Fort Leavenworth and most did not come out alive.

The conception and gestation of Stanley Ann Dunham – essentially at Fort Leavenworth – may have involved some aspects of cloning and blood farming. That is, at that stage, it may have required some intergenerational elements.

Madelyn Dunham got a good job as a supervisor at Boeing and Stanley Dunham survived the war in various undisclosed places in France.

They family moved to Hawaii in 1959 and Madelyn worked at the Bank of Hawaii in Oahu in 1960. This was a reasonably sought after position and involved some CIA connections. She was then made first female vice president (1970–86) and head of the escrow department (a separate fund for monthly bills) so there may have been a CIA hand up.

From 1975, the Bank of Hawaii was associated with the Nugen Hand Bank – essentially an extension of the CIA involved in heroin trafficking, arms deals, rigging elections, stock fraud, money laundering, murder, and threatening staff with the murder of their partners. The escrow department played a role in this money laundering. A bank vice president and head of escrow department would have had to try very hard to not know this was going on. In other words, Madelyn Dunham had CIA protection which avoided her being indicted in any way.

Madelyn Dunham, CIA, raised her grandson, Barack Obama, Jr., aged 10–12 (1971–72) and 16–18 (1977–80) while she was vice president of the Bank of Hawaii with all its CIA associations. Even a month of this is terrific influence. She also paid his college tuition.

Madelyn Dunham (66) then died two days before Obama became President-elect on 4 November 2008. This stopped her being questioned, revealing, or letting slip, anything unusual about Obama's strange origins.

In 1960, daughter Ann Dunham (17) went to the University of Hawaii in Mānoa and took Russian language which immediately brought her to the attention of the CIA. Taking Russian meant that she could be experimented on without any qualms.

To make this easier, Ann met the school's first and only African student, Barack Obama, Sr. (23) who was already married.

Ann was not adverse to alcohol, marijuana, or experimental drugs like LSD. She conceived around 29 October 1960, with Barack Obama Jr. born on 4 August 1961.

11,000 miles from home and bribed by the CIA with money and promises of career advancement, Barack Obama, Sr. drugged Ann Dunham (17). Then the CIA inserted Ann Dunham, by artificial insemination, with a clone cocktail of Pharoah Akhenaten.

It didn't matter to the CIA. They consider the daughter of their agent, Madelyn Dunham, to be their property, and part of the Nugen Hand Bank CIA war, experiments, and money laundering. Conceived and born at Fort Leavenworth, Ann Dunham was their American Military property.

The CIA had been taken over by the Nazis in Operation Paperclip (1945–) and were continuing the Nazi Lebensraum breeding programme of 1935–45. Ann's milky white skin was an added bonus, as was her perpetual naivety and optimism. That she was studying Russian just made her Untermensch (sub-human) and the whole exercise easier to justify.

At first the child was conceived in Hawaii, and born in Hawaii with Kenyan and British citizenship, but it now appears that Barack Obama Jr. was conceived in Hawaii from a cocktail retrieved in Egypt and made in Fort Leavenworth, then born in Fort Leavenworth, Kansas . . . so Obama has American citizenship and is a product created from, and owned by, the American military.

Within a year of Junior being born, Barack Obama, Sr. split.

His career then sored as though he was a White man on a privileged path (Phi Beta Kappa, Harvard University, Master's Degree in Economics, 1965). Barack Obama, Sr. then married American-born teacher, Ruth Nidesand, had two children, and another three children with his first wife – the one he married before Ann. So he had six children (7 if you include Junior).

So Barack Obama, Sr. was a sperm donor father, but it wasn't his sperm.

It was a sperm and mummy clone cell cocktail of Pharoah Akhenaten as collected in 1898/ 1920/ 1941–42/ 1960–61 and manufactured in Fort Leavenworth.

Blood farming techniques tested on Black men was involved.

The CIA weren't giving any explanations to Blacks at the time, but Barack Obama, Sr. had enough nous to work things out, get the basic information and join the dots . . . so he had a car accident in 1971, visited Junior in Hawaii, then had a fatal car accident on 22 November 1982.

The CIA killed Barack Obama, Sr. in 1982.

This was done 26 years before Barack Obama, Jr. became President-elect in 2008, so things are planned that far ahead.

Three years later, by mid-1985, the invisible hand was behind Barack Obama Jr. – befitting the clone of a pharoah, and on the hand up to becoming President of the British Plantation.

At the time, training to become a President or Prime Minister or Governor-General, or a combination of these, took one day. By 2002, it was down to 10 hours.

Barack Obama Jr. was retrieved in Egypt, manufactured in Kansas, conceived in Hawaii with the help of LSD, and born in Forth Leavenworth, Kansas.

So Barack Obama Jr. is an American. It's just that he can't tell you how he is an American.

Around 2000, two young female twin psychics in America predicted there would be a Black President of the United States in 2008. They did this on TV, so it was a published event. Not only were they right, but it was planned, expected and engineered towards.

Rothschilds: "To prove we are the most powerful of all, we must control a Pharaoh."

1898: "The French Egyptologist Victor Loret has just discovered the mummies of Pharaoh Amenhotep III, his wife Queen Tiye, and their son, Akhenaten – the Heretic King".

"Heretic. Great. We need more heretics."

1902: "There are live tissue samples. We're experimenting with cloning."

"Let's choose the one who started all things Jewish and control him."

"Let's control him with Jews, then name him after the enemies of the nation he rules."

"We'll also control the enemies and name them."

1920: "The Americans have just cloned a human". Lazarus reborn. The Modern Prometheus. We'd better make a movie to let the others know. Call it 'Frankenstein'."

1941: "Pearl Harbor. Thank God for that."

"Thank us. Thank Roosevelt and Churchill and the brilliant work of John Ainsworth-Davis. When we get Hitler out, we must thank Ian Fleming with some movies saying the opposite of what happened. James, what do you think."

"Well by the time he does that, Ian Fleming will be well and truly bonded."

"Okay, back on track now boys. We're still at the early stages of cloning – we're blood farming at Fort Leavenworth, Kansas. It seems to work best when there's some Blacks involved. They seem to mix better with the Thoroughbred horse blood. So it's a two generational operation. We need to control the conception, gestation and birth of the mother, and the clone cocktail conception, gestation and birth of Pharoah Akhenaten."

"You can do it". He"ll be Ruler of the Freemasonry British Plantation – the New Egypt – and American military property."

"The United Freemasonry States of America – property of all things Jewish."

Queen Elizabeth II meeting with the Rothschilds in their palace just outside Paris:

"Oh, you're going to create a Black Prince for me. Well make sure he's a distant relation. They always come first at the post for apparent control of that Plantation."

"We want coffee coloured people by the score, so his father will be as black as the ace of spades and his mother will be as white as milk and honey."

"That should unite people. And we'll pave the way for him with the Ark of the Covenant."

"First we have to find it."

1978: "Ron Wyatt thinks he's located the Ark, so we've given him permission to dig in a rubbish tip at the base of Galgotha, Jerusalem. IDF Chief of Staff, Moshe Dayan has control of the site. He's an amateur archaeologist with British allegiance.

"As soon as there's a hint of finding it, it'll be time to retire Moshe Dyan."

"Ron Wyatt, the Arab boy James, and the Kiwi Martin (40s, 5'10") have photos of the Ark. Martin has been showing them at night to the King of Spies, who acts disinterested."

"Suppress it. We're not ready to use it."

"But you know, when a weapon is suppressed, someone is then trained as the weapon."

"We'll have to take our chances. We're still playing with the Berlin Wall."

"The only one we'll never have control of is Anubis."

1980: "In the crucible of six volcanoes in Mount Eden, Anubis trained a student as the Ark."

1989: "The walls down, the walls down."

"Did he do it?"

"Quick activate Pharaoh Akhenaten. We have to maintain control of the world stage."

MAD
YES WE CAN'T

White House website, BARACK OBAMA: "My Administration is committed to creating an unprecedented level of openness in Government. We will work together to ensure the public trust and establish a system of transparency, public participation, and collaboration. Openness will strengthen our democracy and promote efficiency and effectiveness in Government. "

White House Press Secretary Robert Gibbs, Christmas 2009: "You cannot ask President Obama about his withheld records at Occidental College in Los Angeles (1979–81) or Columbia University, his involvement with the CIA via employment with Business International Corporation (BIC), where he traveled to Pakistan and India under a CIA handler, his relationship with Zbigniew Brzezinski and the CIA's William Casey, his extremely friendly relationship with the Afghan mujaheddin-Soviet war veterans, the seven new counter-insurgency military bases in Colombia, Iraq, his birth certificate, and whether he has American citizenship . . . or we will pull your press credentials."

The Auckland Deloitte CIA SuperCity

The Mayor, the Military and the Movement

The Auckland Harbour Bridge was completed in April 1959 with four lanes.
106,000 people walked across, then it was officially opened on 30 May 1959."

The Military
SIS: "The Army wanted to relocate their equipment from Music Point on the southeast side of Auckland to near the Chelsea Sugar Refinery on the north side of the harbour. The Major in charge wanted to do this in unison, with all the men and all the equipment equally spaced and in time. He was advised against this, but did it anyway.

"This reverberated with the harmonic frequency of the brand new Auckland Harbour Bridge and stressed it, effectively putting all future traffic in danger and halving the life of the bridge."

In 1969 the Nippon clip-ons were added – two extra lanes each side made of box girders – to strengthen the existing bridge. In the leaked 2006 Beca Group report, "the clip-ons were at risk of catastrophic, immediate failure with a traffic jam trapping a large number of trucks". In July 2007 it became illegal to drive a truck over 13 tonnes in the outside lane, then in 2008, NZ$45 million in maintenance was begun ahead of schedule, increasing the bridge's life expectancy from 2009 to 2019+.

The Movement
SIS: "On the same road where Ron Jorgensen did the Bassett Road murders (115) at the end of 1963, the Auckland University engineer Mr Fischer lived. He worked on testing the Auckland Harbour Bridge in the late 1960s. He used a device that shot rays through the great metal blocks, equivalent to an X-Ray. This used radioactive pellets and produced a photograph that revealed any steel fatigue. Mr Fischer kept the radioactive pellets in a big lead-lined safe in his backyard at the bottom of Bassett Road in Remuera. Engineer Fischer's son was on the fringe of the Progressive Youth Movement ['PYM'], and his other son became Judge Robert Fischer QC who was done for porn in the Auckland High Court in March 2004 and demoted to Arbitrator and Mediator.

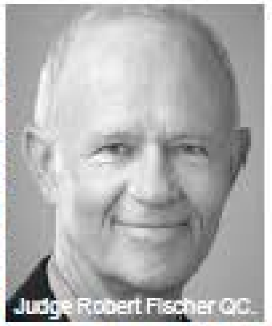
Judge Robert Fischer QC.

"The PYM stole the radioactive pellets and attempted to use them for civic sabotage – terrorism. The PYM had funding connections to China via a timber yard in Onehunga, and had murdered a girl in Point Chevalier, but it was uncertain whether the PYM did the murder, their Police Narcs did it, or the Police did it themselves, so it was never solved.

"The PYM had also blown the front doors off the Supreme Court in Auckland. So they were not to be taken lightly, and any intelligence on them was to be taken into account. Tim Shadbolt was part of the PYM and I used to walk around Western Springs with him, collecting information and briefing him. So we both played a part in stopping the terrorist sabotage of Auckland's water supply. We couldn't do much about the Harbour Bridge. Tim Shadbolt posed as a student, hardly went to any lectures, and was really a truck driver. The four PYM we caught were the same – truck drivers posing as students.

"The Bowers brothers – John and KT (Kevin T. Bowers), Mr van Roosevelt and one other, all from the PYM, were planning on dropping the radioactive pellets in the Auckland water reservoir at the end of Christian Road, in Swanson – at the Filter Station. Christian Road continues onto Water Board property to the Waitakere Dam, and that's where we stopped them – on Filter Track as it leads onto Waitakere Dam Walk, which takes you to the Waitakere Reservoir. The Dam Tramline is still operating there.

Tim Shadbolt.

"From memory, on the day of 7 September 1969, I was with Detective John Rex Hughes who was a very good boxer and a fast runner.[1] We sprung the four PYM on Filter Track. They didn't last long. The fight was over in a few minutes and the radioactive material didn't make it to the water reservoir. Mr van Roosevelt got five years for it. The Bowers brothers are all dead now. Strangely three of them died of cancer, but it wasn't related to the radioactive material."

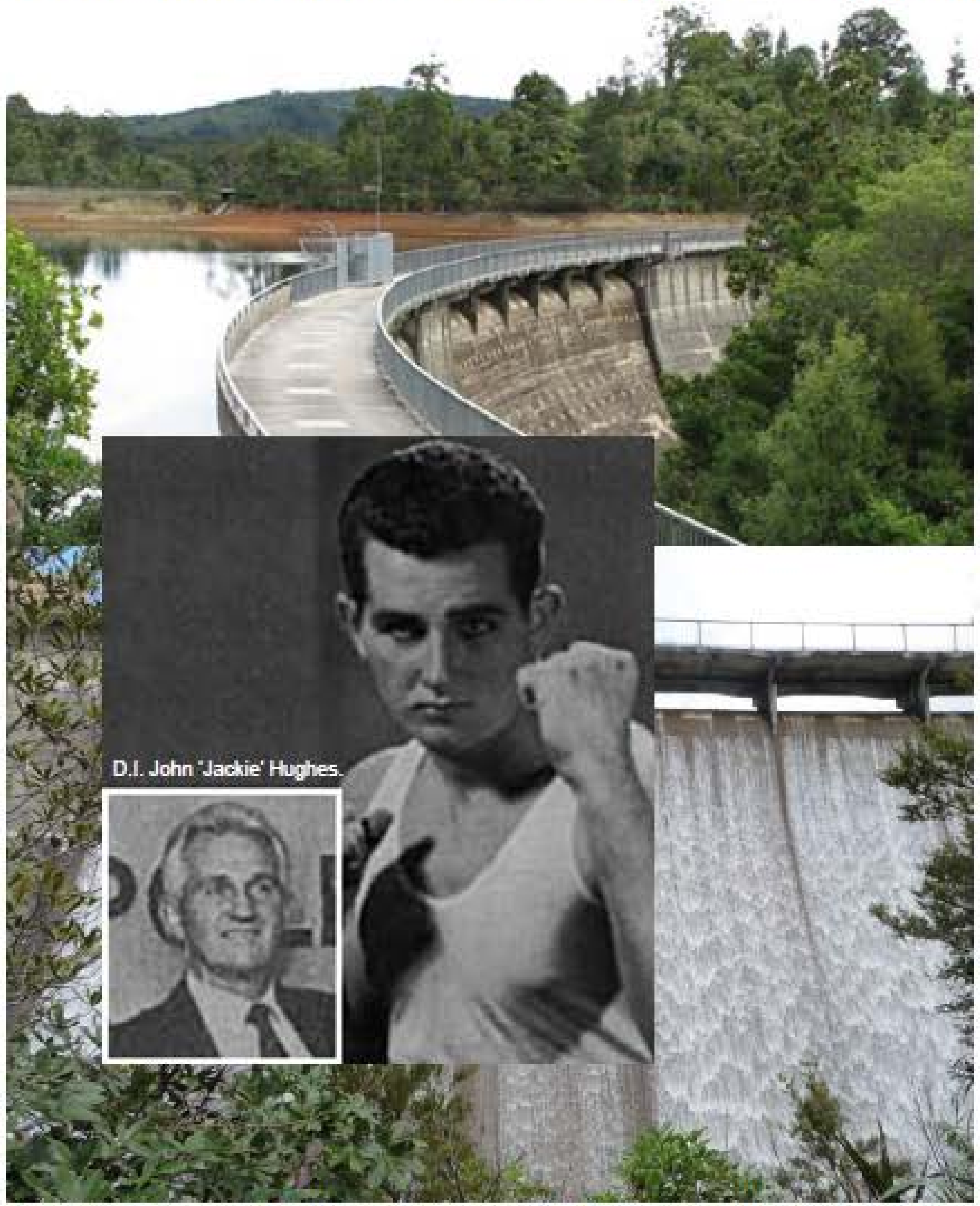

D.I. John 'Jackie' Hughes.

Mayor Tim Shadbolt.

Tim Shadbolt then became Mayor of Waitakere City (1983–89) which includes the Waitakere Dam, then Mayor of Invercargill (1993–95, 1998–2009+) and one of the longest-running Mayors in New Zealand.[2]

SIS: "Acts of terrorism only reach the media when they're fake. When they're real, the media doesn't report them. You can't find anything about this story in the media anywhere now."

Author: "That's true".

The Mayor

SIS: "Apart from the Army's stupidity and the PYM, the real villian behind the Auckland Harbour Bridge being built so quickly and shoddily, and requiring the radioactive pellets to test the structure, was Sir John Allum who left London and came to New Zealand in 1909. He was an electrical engineer and founded Allum Electrical on Anzac Avenue in 1922, then became Mayor in 1941."

His Imperial Highness, Sir John A.C. Allum, Mayor of Auckland.

Sir John Allum (1889–1972) became President of Auckland Manufacturers' Association (1923–28, 1932–35) then national president, then President of New Zealand Employers Federation (1941–43, the two were always joined at the hip, officially in 2001); Verweser to the Swiss Consul (1926–33)[3]; Founding Chairman of Auckland Transport Board (1928–43); President of Auckland Provincial Employers' Association (1938–68ish); Chairman of Auckland and Suburban (later Metropolitan) Drainage Board (1941–53); CBE in 1946; Inaugural Chairman of New Zealand Ballet Trust (1953); President of Auckland Chamber of Commerce (1957); Deputy Mayor to Sir Ernest Davis (1938–41), then Mayor of Auckland (1941–53)[4]; Founding Chairman of Auckland Harbour Bridge Authority (1950–71), and he got the gong the same year, Sir John Allum from 1950.[5]

SIS: "Sir John Allum was known in Parliament as 'His Imperial Highness', and Sir Ernest Davis was known as 'The King of New Zealand'. Between them they had much of Auckland sewn up – and a large amount of New Zealand.

"As Chairman of the Auckland Transport Board (1928–43) and Deputy Mayor (1938–41), Sir John Allum touted the idea of the Harbour Bridge from the 1940s. He then became Mayor (1941–53), then Founding Chairman of the Auckland Harbour Bridge Authority (1950–71), bought up vast tracks of land on the North Shore with his friends in the synagogue, and moved to the North Shore in 1950 in an area that was all farmland.

---

[1] *Fight Times* e-Magazine, 'John Hughes, Top Cop, Top Boxer', Dave Cameron, March 2006: 'John Hughes came from a little town in the Taranaki, joined the Navy when he did most of his boxing, then joined the "Police Force". He fought as 'Jackie Hughes' in the 1950s and won the NZ Light Middleweight Title on 3 occasions (1955–57) and the Jameson Belt once or twice for the most scientific boxing. In 1984 he ran the 875 km Westfield Sydney to Melbourne Ultra Marathon in 6 days & 6 hours, coming 2nd, 118 minutes behind Geoff Molloy.

[2] Sir Dove-Meyer 'Cunnilingus Rob' Robinson did 18 years as Mayor of Auckland (1959–65, 1968–80). Sir Jack Allum did 12 years (1941–53).

[3] According to the Swiss archives J.A.C. Allum held the office as "Verweser" which translates as 'administrator', 'manager' or 'substitute' (27 Aug.1926–31 March 1933). He was never listed as Honorary Consul as claimed.

[4] Sir Jack Allum was also the first sitting Auckland mayor to be dumped in the C20th. The Jewish soon-to-be-Mayor Dove-Meyer Robinson sued him for defamation – unsuccessfully, but had a lot to do with this.

[5] The British Royal Family are Jewish and hand out protective awards to family, conmen, and friends – sometimes all the same person – "all for one and one for all".

"While Mayor of Auckland (1941–53), he managed to squeeze in the Auckland Harbour Bridge Authority (1950–71), so . . ."

> "'In the mid 1950s the Allums shifted to the North Shore, and when nearby Rangitoto College was opened in 1956 he became the first chairman of its board of governors."[6]

SIS: "Sir John Allum then presided over the bridge construction (1957–59), and the four lane clip-ons (1969) to the extent that it became known as 'Jack Allum's Bridge'.

"It was a rush job. The 1947 plans were already 20 years old when the bridge was started. It was supposed to be a copy of the Sydney Harbour Bridge with rail and foot traffic, and eight lanes wide, but only four lanes were built, there was no paedestrian route, no rail, and the increased traffic in the 20-year-old design was not taken into account.

"The North Shore is peculiar in that there are no freshwater streams. They are salt water, and lots of farmers went broke again and again for this reason. The only freshwater source was from the spring in Lake Pupuke. For this reason, farmland in the North Shore was [a 'cunt' and] extremely cheap. [The original meaning of 'cunt' is land that cannot be farmed.]

"As soon as the bridge was built, Allum and his friends from the synagogue sold their sections at a huge profit . . . It's all residential or commercial now.

---

[6] *Dictionary of New Zealand Biography*, www. dnzb.govt.nz, John Andrew Charles Allum. Lady Allum was considered the Mayoress of Auckland at the same time (1941–53). Allum Street in Kohimarama is named after them; Auckland Museum website; 'Modern Auckland tells story of John Allum', Obituaries, *New Zealand Herald*, 18 September 1972; Bush, G. W. A. *Decently and in order*, Auckland, 1971; *Weekly News*, 'Profile: Sir John Allum wanted hard work', 20 June 1962, 'Sir John Allum contesting the mayoralty', NZ Herald Coll, 8 March 1950.

"It was a case of quick profits and a poorly built bridge. Sir Jack Allum and his Jewish mates concocted a conspiracy of dangerous short mindedness and high profit.

"Within three months on completion (August 1959) it was clear that the Harbour Bridge could not handle the traffic, so it would have to be widened. By 1965, 10 million vehicles were crossing the bridge each year. Four years later, the Japanese were brought in to add the Nippon clip-ons, complete with post-WWII ill-will.

"The Harbour Bridge also meant that large tracks of houses in Freeman's Bay and Grafton had to be destroyed, so Auckland got a motorway going right through the city.

"The earlier proposed Northwestern motorway went through swampland, criminal hideouts, and farmland so it was always the better north to south route through Auckland, but less profitable to Sir Jack Allum and his Jewish mates, so the Northwestern motorway is still not finished to this day."

Q: "So what do you get when you mix a Presbyterian with a Jew?"

A: "A motorway running through the middle of your city."

The Marathon Man, 1976: "Is it safe?"[7]
Auckland Harbour Bridge in a bind.

A Short Fascist History of Auckland

Spymaster: "Sir John Allum had Jewish blood, but had ties to the Presbyterians. It was quite common in those days to mix.

"Allum was Verweser to the Swiss Consul (1926–33) so he could keep an eye on his money there. At the time, everyone was told he was Honorary Consul.

"Nazi SS Trachsl acted for General S. Wolf and held the Gothic line above Florence at the end of WWII. Soon after, Trachsl came to Auckland, met with Allum and re-introduced him to the Swiss.

---

[7] The Marathon Man (1976) is paranoid thriller about a running-obsessive graduate student in New York who is drawn into a mysterious plot involving his globe trotting brother, his European girlfriend, and a Nazi war criminal in hiding.
Given that there are now 8,000 fasicist war ciminals living in exile in Greater Auckland, all using the Harbour Bridge, it sounds like Auckland to me – mate.

"Another German they were all friendly with was Herr Miller – a Danish Nazi from the Schleswig-Holstein region, the northern-most state in Germany between Hamburg and Denmark's border.

"The Germans took the area off the Danes in the 'Second War of Schleswig' in 1863 and then considered it a porous border between Germany and Denmark, to be used for smuggling and spying.

"Denmark was considered to be Britain's backyard.

"Minister-President of Prussia, Otto von Bismarck, to Kaiser/Emperor Wilhelm: 'Anything we want in there, we can take. Any demand we make of Britain is dressed up as a demand from Denmark, but Britain pays.'

"Kaiser Wilhelm I: 'I don't' understand'.

"Germany then formed in 1871.

"The Danish Military were the aristocracy of Denmark, and ran Denmark for Germany. That's why the Danish didn't initially fight against the Germans in WWII. The British could only get Danish criminals to put up a resistance movement – the Danish Military didn't want to know. After WWII, the Danish Resistance – the whole lot – were brought up on criminal charges.

"Herr Miller was supposed to be a Danish citizen, but he drove ex-German diplomatic vehicles (black and dark green). Miller was one of the few Germans who came to New Zealand with a bit of money, turning a little into a lot. He bought many properties in Auckland and became extremely wealthy.

"Herr Miller cut his daughter out of his will because her politics were different from his. From the northern-most Schleswig-Holstein region of Germany, Herr Miller was a Nazi fascist. His daughter was not."

So the Jewish-Presbyterian Sir John Allum, Deputy Mayor (1938–41) under the Jewish Mayor Sir Ernest Davis (1935–41), then Mayor of Auckland (1941–53) socialised, did business with, and shared finances with the Nazi SS before, during, and after WWII. They also welcomed German submarines into Auckland in 1938 and put on an official welcome.

'His Imperial Highness' and 'The King of New Zealand' were Jewish-fascist sympathisers. Between them they ran an Auckland that no one else could get in to, unless invited.

So the Auckland Harbour Bridge was a Jewish-fascist exercise
in high profits and short-term thinking
that resulted in a terrorist attempt on Auckland
after the military damaged it.

Mayor John Banks with Sir John Allum's granddaughter, Jan Campbell, on the 50th anniversary and end of the life-expectancy of the Auckland Harbour Bridge.

John Banks is a 5'4" CIA agent, drug trafficker, homosexual and paedophile who is attempting to hand over the NZ$28 billion Auckland infrustructure (including the Harbour Bridge) to the CIA, as they lost their New Zealand/ Antarctica money with Bernie Madoff.

Deloitte consult to the Auckland City Council and extort John Banks for around NZ$1 million per month.

Council Kickbacks and Land Grabs

Concerned Citizen: "Allum and Dove-Meyer Robinson (he was the worst) used to steal land of people under the 1948 Public works Act, when the Act had no recourse. They took land all around the inner city to accomodate the flyover and the Harbour Bridge in the 1950s, then carried it through to the 1960s. Mayor Robinson took a lot of land east of Ponsonby Road, around Pember Reeves Street, Arthur St and Wood St.

"The land had to be used for a bridge, road, reserve, school, hospital, or church. If they didn't use it for that purpose, the council had to sell it back to the previous owner for the price they paid for it, which was about a third of its value.

"The first woman who kicked back on it was a little old lady in Browns Bay. All her life she had lived there on her land that went down onto the beach reserve. She tested the law, challenged the council and got to keep her land as it was not going to be used for a reserve, school, hospital or church. That was shortly after 1975/76."

Charles Henry Alexander Kean had a piece of family land in Federal Street taken off him in 1952. He spent the next 20-odd years reversing that really bad Act. Kean, and a few other Auckland notables, were responsible for the repeal of the 1948 Public Works Act where Councils and Government could take any land they wanted and pay approximately a third of the market value, and there would be no recourse for the citizens. Kean changed all that in 1975.

But just before the Act was repealed, the Auckland Councils had a massive land grab. They even took land between the Puhoi and Waiwera Rivers off the Schollums and turned that into Wenderholm Regional park, then took the credit.

Concerned Citizen: "Land Grabs were the way the Councils made their perks in the old days, up until 1976."

Since then, the Auckland Councils have resorted to other dirty tricks. They became the North Shore, Waitemata, Manuakau and Auckland City Councils, plus the Auckland Regional Council, and mixed it up with the participants of orgies taking precidence in employment and promotion.

Mike Lee married his child prostitute and was made Chairman of the Auckland Regional Council, and his child prostitute wife, Sandra Barber/Vercoe Lee, was made an Auckland City Councillor.

The Auckland City Council and CIA Extortion

John Banks, the homosexual paedophile cross-dressing transvestite rooting Minister of Police became the Mayor of Auckland 2001–04 and 2007–10. As such he is compromised and is being extorted by Deloitte, who in New Zealand, are the CIA. They take him for NZ$1 million per month, and other millions for faux consultancy. The CIA made their agent, John Banks, Mayor of Auckland so he can pay his bribes through the Auckland City Council, and it is the ratepayers who are paying for his blackmail, as well as those ticketed for driving and parking.

I was aware at the time (2006/07) that it was the CIA who were behind John Banks' mayoral run. Internal Affairs mentioned it. So did the SIS.

Mayor John Banks CIA, is currently trying to create an Auckland Super City where all the four cities merge and the NZ$28 billion in assets will be taken over by the CIA, with a 12-month moratorium to render any protests unanswerable.

The CIA are short on cash because they lost their money with Bernie Madoff – money that was assigned for the development of Antarctica, with New Zealand being the leaping point and taking the blame.

In the lead up to the Super City CIA $28 billion dollar rort, the CIA had their agent, Dame Margaret Bazley organise the Auckland SuperCity scheme. She had already been compromised through mass murder in Operation DEEP SLEEP, heroin trafficking, and more murders, as well as being married to a triple murderer – a guest of Her Majesty's for 15 years.

John Banks was also a drug trafficker with Phil Warren, who became the Deputy Mayor of Auckland and Chairman of the Auckland Regional Council.

Maori Fisherman: "When d'bros came from up north and got d'Auckland panic, they would drop their entire van load of cannabis on Phil Warren who'd also buy the van, so d'bros had to hitchhike back up north."

Concerned Citizen: "The Government is in the business of stealing off the people, but you can't tell citizens that.

"It's a bit like John Banks with his properties all around the place. He's got bolt holes everywhere – the sly boy rooter he is. Don't quote me on that one."

Author: "Oh!, ha ha ha ha ha ha . . ."

Concerned Citizen: "I meant it in a caring and sharing sort of way."

Author: "But it's the truth."

Concerned Citizen: "You can't tell the truth. No one wants to hear the fucking truth."

Author: "He's a secret transvestite rooter, is he not? He a queer dick."

Son of a Freemason: "No he isn't. He's a slimmy fucking eel."

Maori Fisherman: "He's a fucking wood pigeon".

Author: "What . . ."

Maori Fisherman: "You can't trust him. He'll rip you off sideways, in a suit, with a smarmy smile."

Parlance: "Do you mind if I tell a quick story about John Rex Hughes and Maori Mac. It'll give some background . . ."

Author: "Okay. Go ahead."

Parlance: "Maori Mac and I went hard at it in the 1970s for seven or eight years. One time in court he was handcuffed to a detective and the Judge said something he didn't like, so Mac tried to punch the judge while dragging the detective on his other arm. John Rex Hughes was a hard man in every way, but he was shit scared of Mac. Mac would turn up at Auckland Central Police Station in the lobby and yell out: 'John Rex Hughes you fucking cunt. Where the fucking hell are you. Get down here.' And Hughes would run down in the stairs or take the lift asap. And Maori Mac would say: 'Why the hell did you send detectives around to my wife's place?" John Hughes knew standing over him wasn't going to work, so he tried to pacify him: 'Awe, it was only junior detectives'. And Maori Mac said: 'You know I don't keep my stolen stuff at my wife's house'.

"Crime was that open in those days, and fun. It was more or less a way to buy your first boat."

Spymaster: "Yeah, the police were crooked and there should have been no murders unsolved in the 1970s 'cause everyone knew each other and the population was so small, just Whites and Maoris, who all got along until the late '60s."

"Author: "I have an Asian photo of what it was like back then . . ."

Parlance: "Only difference is, in NZ this'd be a van."

The Auckland Deloitte CIA SuperCity

Auckland City Council – 'First city of the Pacific' at leaking money and being rorted

Auckland City Environments (ACE) is part of the Auckland City Council. They are located at 35 Graham Street, Auckland central, on the ground floor.

ACE were to get a refit. The entire building was to be refitted, including a lot of green stuff – to bring it up to a five star office building at a cost of NZ$12 million, as proposed in 2007. This five star refit was cancelled due to the Auckland Transition Authority (ATA) transitioning Auckland's four cities into one SuperCity. The ACE refit has since been reduced from $12 million to $1.7 million, including $0.5 million on the air conditioning. The reduced refit is due to start around January 2010. Still, Deloitte got $1 million for the consultancy to price this, listed their hours as "0", and then turned around and said: "And we can build it for the $12 million".

Ian Rae Group Manager of ACC's Information Technology and Communications

Ian Rae (ian.rae@auckland city.govt.nz) is the Group Manager[1] of the Auckland City Council (ACC) Information Technology and Communications (ITC). Ian Rae is a homosexual, although he may not have come out yet.

Auckland City Council workers say: "Ian Rae hasn't come out yet".

Deloitte

Deloitte consultants are the CIA in Auckland. Deloitte may not be the CIA in America, and maybe not the CIA in other cities or countries, but in Auckland they are the base of the CIA.

When I say "Deloitte are the CIA in Auckland", ACC workers reply: "I'm not surprised. The funding leaks like a sieve. Consultants get paid by whomever they are dealing with."

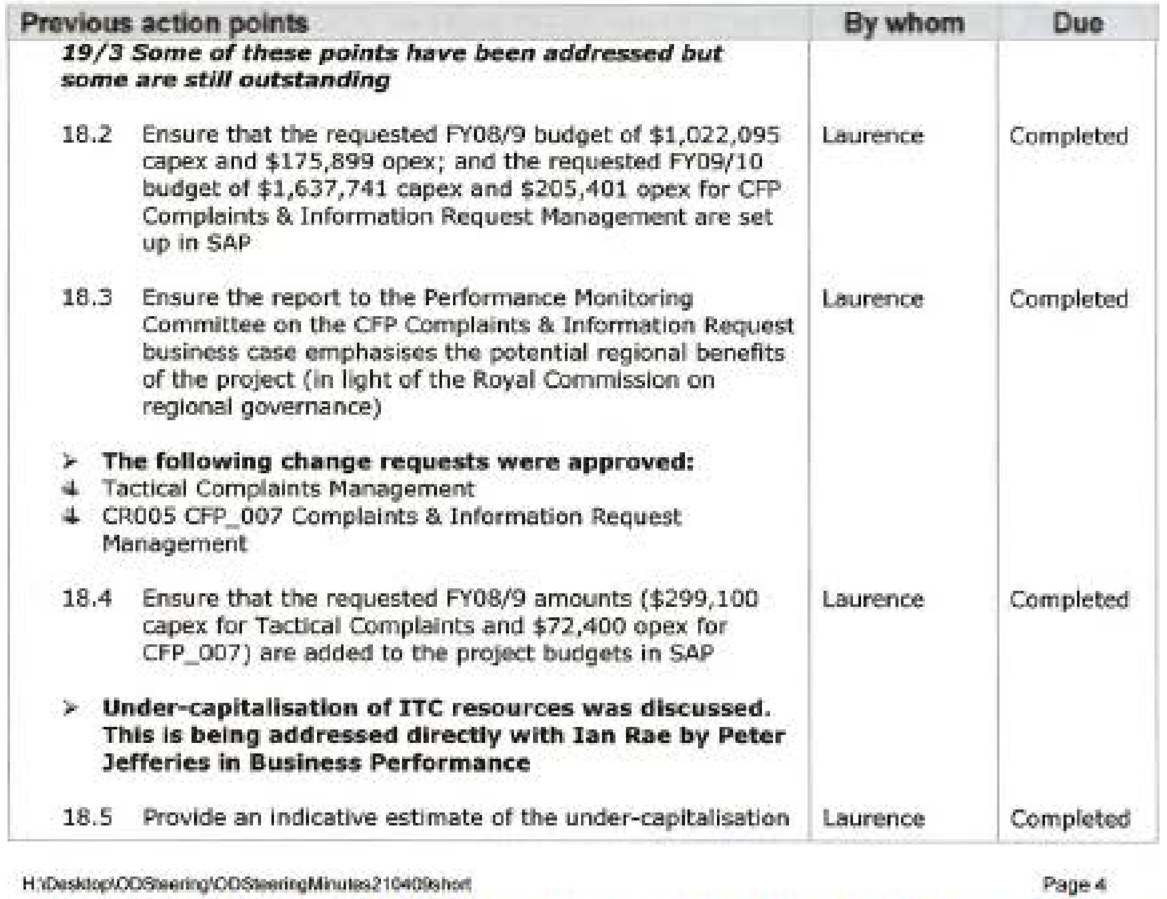

Previous action points	By whom	Due
19/3 Some of these points have been addressed but some are still outstanding		
18.2 Ensure that the requested FY08/9 budget of $1,022,095 capex and $175,899 opex; and the requested FY09/10 budget of $1,637,741 capex and $205,401 opex for CFP Complaints & Information Request Management are set up in SAP	Laurence	Completed
18.3 Ensure the report to the Performance Monitoring Committee on the CFP Complaints & Information Request business case emphasises the potential regional benefits of the project (in light of the Royal Commission on regional governance)	Laurence	Completed
➢ **The following change requests were approved:** - Tactical Complaints Management - CR005 CFP_007 Complaints & Information Request Management		
18.4 Ensure that the requested FY08/9 amounts ($299,100 capex for Tactical Complaints and $72,400 opex for CFP_007) are added to the project budgets in SAP	Laurence	Completed
➢ **Under-capitalisation of ITC resources was discussed. This is being addressed directly with Ian Rae by Peter Jefferies in Business Performance**		
18.5 Provide an indicative estimate of the under-capitalisation	Laurence	Completed

H:\Desktop\ODSteering\ODSteeringMinutes210409short Page 4

---

[1] ITC Organisation Structure at 29 April 2009, Group Manager Ian Rae, Position # 50000402, Personell # 1766.

Rather arrogantly, Deloitte have such total control over the Auckland City Council, they call the Auckland City Council "Deloitte" – as in: "I'll just pop down to Deloitte, present a bill with zero hours on it, and return with a million dollars."

Other Deloitte worker: "I'll boil the jug for when you get back."

Deloitte consult to the ACC's ITC department – and deal with Group Manager Ian Rae.

Deloitte and the ACE Refit

Ian Rae is not supposed to have anything to do with building and nothing to do with ACE. Deloitte consult to the ACC ITC on IT matters and are not supposed to have anything to do with building quotes.

So when I got this infromation from a high up ACC worker (Ph.D), and then checked it with an ACC property person, they said "WHAT?" But then the ridiculous does get shunned and fails to be investigated. However, here it is . . .

Deloitte offered to do a quote for the ACE refit. Deloitte knew this did not have to be five star and they knew the Auckland SuperCity was happening in advance (as they had their agent Dame Margaret 'Lillian Heroin Murder Deep Sleep' Bazley doing the report on their behalf), and the refit would not go ahead, so all they have to do was present a quote to someone who was compromised. That was Ian Rae who is also under the thumb of Mayor John Banks. It's a homosexual bond with cross-dressing and prancing around after hours.

Dame Margaret Bazley and Deloitte's SuperCity for Auckland

Dame Margaret Bazley was the lead consultant to see if it was viable to have an Auckland SuperCity. Although their was no reason to approve, and no presented advantage in having an Auckland SuperCity, she approved.

Dame Margaret Bazley was compromised as a heroin trafficker, heroin money launderer, and her husband was jailed for 15 years for triple murder (Doug & Isobel Wilson) related to the Mr Asia heroin syndicate in the 1970s. Margaret was then known as Lillian Bazley and the Australian Courts said that she should not hold an position of office in Australia. Sadly, they could not apply this to New Zealand.

Dame Margaret Bazley is also a mass murderer in her own right having run the Operation DEEP SLEEP experiments for the CIA which resulted in about 2,200 deaths and lives ruined, and a payout of around $170,000 each to the survivors – circa 2007.

Dame Margaret Bazley is a CIA agent, a Deloitte agent, and will assist the CIA in any way to extort money out of Auckland.

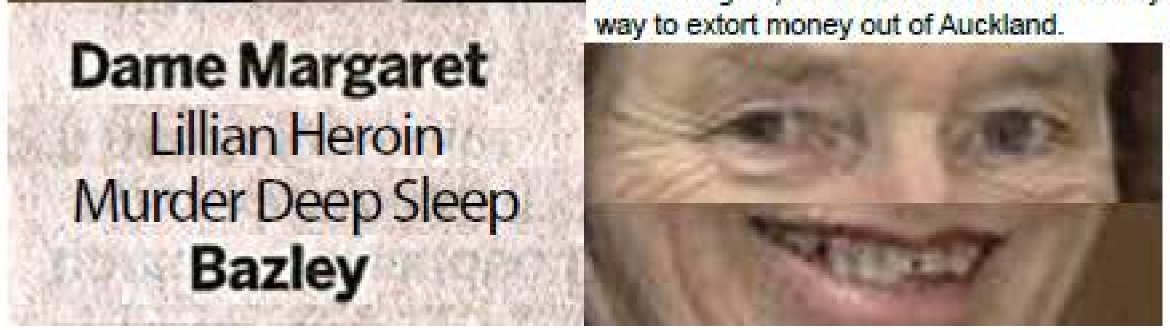

Deloitte Foreknowledge

All the contenders of Mayor of the Auckland SuperCity, and those who wanted to be major players, met anonymously under the 'Regional Sustainable Development Forum' and signed off for the one plan for Auckland Infrastructure Assets in February and September 2008.

Deloitte knew the four Auckland cities were going to amalgamate into one SuperCity, and the ACE refit would be placed on hold, so they rushed through their five star quote of $12 million, charged $1 milllion for the consultancy, recorded "0" in the hours column, Ian Rae approved payment on the spot by and Deloitte never expected to be discovered or investigated.

Deloitte consults to the ITC group on IT. Ian Rae is the General Manager of ITC. Deloitte is not supposed to consult on building. Ian Rae is not supposed to approve consultant's fees for building estimates. Ian Rae is not supposed to approve any payment for "0" hours, but he has done this repeatedly with Deloitte.

It would appear that Ian Rae is compromised by his hidden homosexuality. This is usually supported by the PC brigade who hold all the reigns in the Auckland City Council. (PC is a form of extortion.) As the CIA, Deloitte control Ian Rae through his homosexuality and promote him according to the amount he is able to be successfully rorted. Both Deloitte and Ian Rae are focussed on him reaching the same position in the Auckland SuperCity – at four times the rort.

ACC Contracts

People assume these transactions are monitored under a clear contract (even ACC workers), but their assumptions are wrong. Consultants bill whichever ACC staff they are communicating with, so the bills, accounts and payments are all over the place and very difficult to trace. As we have seen, sometimes the consultants even bill the wrong department and get paid, especially – all the more reason for "0" hours. This is despite the Auckland City Council's multiple mottos that emerged out of one of those useless PC "values" session junkets including:

> "First city of the Pacific, Working together to provide a great future by delivering valued service and leadership, Giving everyone a voice, Realising our potential, Enhancing our reputation, Acting collaboratively, Talking Accountability . . . Our GREAT culture – the way we do it".

Our shared vision with Aucklanders for our city – our ultimate goal
First city of the Pacific
The role Auckland City Council plays in realising that vision
Working together to provide a great future by delivering valued service and leadership
Our strategies – how we do it
Giving everyone a voice
Realising our potential
Enhancing our reputation
Acting collaboratively
Taking accountability
Our GREAT culture – the way we do it

Ph.D working for the Auckland City Council on $100K+ salary, June 2009: "Despite the Project Costs, the Maintenance costs, the Support Costs, and the Overhead Costs from our budget, we still do not see the Model of the New Council for the Auckland SuperCity."

Deloitte's Rorting Methods

Deloitte's agenda is to take whatever fee it can, whenever it can, from whomever it can. Deloitte's methodology is to place as many compromised people in as many influential positions as possible. Mayor is one of them. ITC Group Manager is another. Deloitte then consults to these compromised people and rorts them for money. Elevated ACC employees then use the ratepayers money to pay for these rorts. Their reward is their elevated position. The more complicit with these rorts, the higher they're promoted.

If this was illustrated with the same things happening in Africa, you could appreciate and understand straight away that the CIA were behind it.

John Banks' agenda is "Think Big", pay consultants for anything "Big", then build about a tenth the size. In this way, Mayor John Banks ensures that the consultants get a near equal share. In the ACE refit this was $1 million consultancy for a $12 million refit with only $1.7 million spent – $0.5 million of that is on an air conditioning unit for which no consultancy was required. In this case, Deloitte is getting an 80% consultancy fee.

> Author: "I remember working for the Auckland City Council drawing up their existing Community Centres. I was asked to become a Certified Supplier, but I was rejected as my previous bills for work completed were too low."

ACC Communications

Despite the palava/ pavlava of words ("First city of the Pacific . . . Talking Accountability . . . the way we do it" cake), communication is blocked with a culture of:

"I have so much to hide, I'd rather not talk to anyone.
I'll keep it down to my secretary's emails, and
I'll only have face-to-face meetings with other known collaborators".

John Banks and Ian Rae both practise this. John Banks doesn't keep any minutes of his meetings and Ian Rae keeps three sets.

The first is what was actually discussed and kept private; the second is absolute verbage that no one can act on, and all collaborators recognise it as code to confuse the public, get more funding and refer to the first set of minutes; and the third is the second set of minutes altered to suit when the lie becomes to thick. This is done as required.

To quote someone present at these meetings: "Ian Rae is the only person in the Western World working for a government or city department who keeps a floating set of minutes. He alters these, so sometimes I'm asked to hand over my minutes. Then I receive new ones."

Under the Official Information Act, I have sighted these minutes and they are not a smoking gun, nor a gun. They are more a set of sleep inducing documents to steer a journalist towards career suicide. The only smoke is that the minutes are meaningless, even to other ACC workers. The same documents, with the same heading, do vary in page numbers from 3, to 17, to 20, according to priviledge 1, 2, or 3.

So the smoking gun is that the minutes of these meetings are "absolute verbage that no one can act on".

The other smoking guns are: Deloitte charges the ACC millions each year; the results of this consultancy are minimal; the projects are rarely built to the plans consulted on; the higher echelons of ACC staff are compromised; and some or all of these have become so compromised they have become CIA assets/ agents = Counter Intelligence Agency.

Mission statement

"To provide excellent leadership and sustainable community services to improve the quality of life for the people in the city of Auckland."

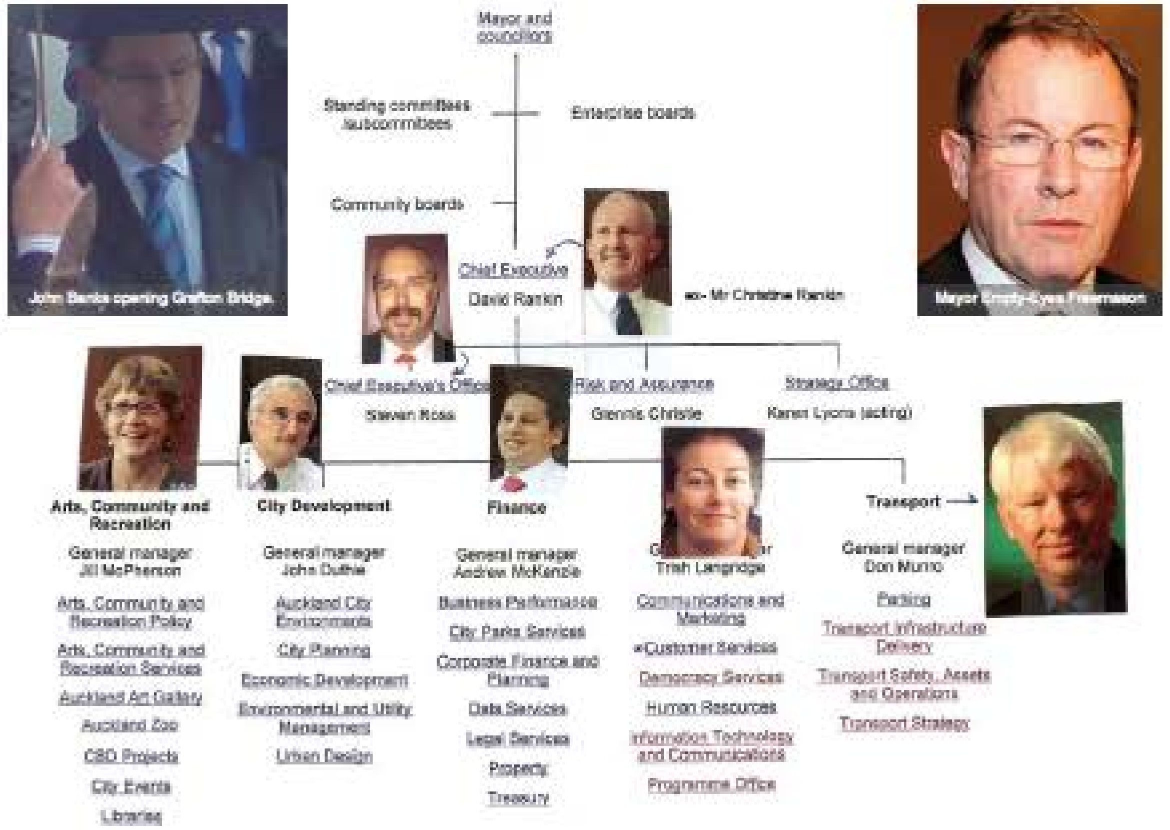
John Banks opening Grafton Bridge.
Mayor and councillors
Standing committees /subcommittees
Enterprise boards
Community boards
Chief Executive
David Rankin
ex- Mr Christine Rankin
Mayor Empty-Eyes Freemason
Chief Executive's Office
Steven Ross
Risk and Assurance
Glennis Christie
Strategy Office
Karen Lyons (acting)
Arts, Community and Recreation
General manager
Jill McPherson
Arts, Community and Recreation Policy
Arts, Community and Recreation Services
Auckland Art Gallery
Auckland Zoo
CBD Projects
City Events
Libraries
City Development
General manager
John Duthie
Auckland City Environments
City Planning
Economic Development
Environmental and Utility Management
Urban Design
Finance
General manager
Andrew McKenzie
Business Performance
City Parks Services
Corporate Finance and Planning
Data Services
Legal Services
Property
Treasury
Trish Langridge
Communications and Marketing
Customer Services
Democracy Services
Human Resources
Information Technology and Communications
Programme Office
Transport
General manager
Don Munro
Parking
Transport Infrastructure Delivery
Transport Safety, Assets and Operations
Transport Strategy

Here's how the Auckland City Council doesn't work.

Few people in the Auckland City Council talk to each other and communication is blocked with an attitude and practise of: "I'm so high up, I don't have to talk to you".

John Banks is an elected official. We call this "Mayor". Mayor is essentially a spokesperson with their own agenda. John Banks is a self-acknowledged CIA agent, and John Banks' agenda is the CIA's agenda, with consultants Deloitte carrying out that CIA agenda.

Deloitte, working as the CIA, backed John Banks as Mayor, and ensured he got in for a second time, and others did not. We were made aware of this in the build up to the October 2007 mayoral race. As a backhander, John Banks then ensured that Deloitte are paid their monthly bribe, which is about $1 million. That's how Deloitte can list their hours as "0" through whichever compromised department and still get paid.

Deloitte do their billing at random periods for random amounts to random people, but it's about a million a month.

The Auckland City Council don't get to talk to John Banks. John Banks then talks a little bit to the ACC CEO David Rankin, but not much.

John Banks then talks about himself as Banksey in the third person, which is a sure sign of mental illness. In his case, it's 'five foot four inches of vanity-insanity'.

Sometimes he forgets there other people in the room, including a camera crew, and he still refers to himself as 'Banksey does this' and 'Banksey does that'.

So why such shame in communication?

Well, high up, the Auckland City Council is full of CIA-controlled and monitored shame. They simply don't want to know what each other's shame is, for fear that it will raise their own.

ACC Chief Executive Officer David Rankin

ACC Chief Executive Officer David Rankin was formely married to the dominatrix Christine Rankin, who, despite failing School C twice, can have herself and any of her family or friends placed into any position in New Zealand, including her ex-husbands and their new wives. Why? How?

Well, Christine Rankin was Sir Geoffrey Palmer's dominatrix when he was Attorney-General (1984–89) and then became Prime Minister (8 August 1989) playing swopsies with David Lange on account of Geoffrey Palmer protecting the police paedophile ring at Banks Road in Christchurch.

Geoffrey Palmer's cover-up resulted in the erroneous jailing of Peter Ellis (suspended from work in 1991, arrested in 1992, jailed in 1993 for ten years, then released in 2000) as the scapegoat. Judge Eichelbaum was the compromised judge who believed the hocus-pocus evidence, so he was promoted to the Supreme Court – a.k.a. 'the Kangaroo Court with more words, more difficult processes, and more defensive judges with a more compromised history – usually involving murder'.

So dominatrix receiver David Rankin remained quiet about his being dominated, and Sir Geoffrey Palmer being dominated, and Christine Rankin's knowledge of Geoffrey Palmer's cover-up of the police paedophile ring, as revealed while whipping ("You've been a bad boy" . . ."Yes I have. I've been protecting a police paedophile ring") . . . So in return for his silence, Christine Rankin had Geoffrey place her ex-husband as CEO of the Auckland City Council. That's how it rocks. And that's how it doesn't work.

The CIA specialise in this sort of knowledge. It's what they do. They either collect this knowledge or provide the honey-traps themselves.

ACC CEO David Rankin now has 2,800 staff under him. He communicates with the Finance General Manager Andrew McKenzie, but very little with the Transport General Manager Don Munro, the City Development GM John Duthrie, nor the Arts, Community and Recreation GM Jill 'Poison' McPherson who tends to sabotage all the other GMs.

The Communications and Marketing GM, Trish Langridge, has moved to the Auckland Transition Authority, and replaced by Sheryl Nichols, although few ACC staff seem to know this as they don't get to talk to their own bosses either. Rather than talk to each other, they report to each other, and only one person delivers the report. The GM's just read reports and we all know how bogus they are.

How the CIA lost all their New Zealand Money

Now here's the big part of the story. It reaches from New Zealand, beyond our waters and back again . . . The CIA in New Zealand had invested their money with Bernie Madoff and lost it. The money was allocated for the development of Antarctica with the Wigram Air Force Base as the reassembly point, home of the No. 38 Squadron Air Training Corp, and closed to commercial air traffic in March 2009. Spymaster: "A place where everyone comes back with their arse beaten. This goes back to the day when Admiral Byrd got his arse kicked off the ice at the end of Operation HIGHJUMP in February 1947."

So the CIA had to recover their money and came up with the idea of the Auckland SuperCity. The goal is for the CIA to steal the infrastructure assets of the four Auckland cities and then have the rates paid more or less directly to the CIA. To do this they had to install their most compromised agents into the top positions. Dame Margaret Bazley, Mayor John Banks and ITC Group Manager Ian Rae are three of these people. But really, the higher echelons of the 2,800 staff are all there waiting to be hand-picked and brag about it when they have. The most compromised qualify with few exceptions.

Information of the ACC's consultancy rorts is difficult to obtain and even harder to check. It requires forensic accounting and this is something I demand. You should too, as it is your increased rates and increased traffic tickets that are funding the compromised Auckland City Council, and the Auckland SuperCity which will be a centralised rort for the CIA.

If this isn't done before the SuperCity in put in place, it will never be done, all the wrong people will be in power, your rates will increase, and as you have already seen, you will see less and less results, and less and less New Zealand ownership.

Even David Rankin's new wife might run for supermayor. With the dominatrix Christine Rankin backing her, she might just well get it. It's a choice of a rotten egg over a broken egg, where the consultants tell us the omlete is there, collaborators tell us they've tasted it, but all we get is their restaurant bill and not even a whiff.

You have to wonder whether PC has gone too far and just become protectionism for sexual deviants. Spymaster: "Ah, yes. That's what it's always been."

Fired for Asking

This information came from a Ph.D working at the Auckland City Council. Along with another, when they raised a few issues around the way payments were made, Ph.D was given notice, requested to accept that notice within two weeks, and once accepted, asked to remain silent, then asked to dequalify anything Ph.D said, asked to discredit their own words, given a months paid leave, and told not to return to work during that final month on condition of a favourable addition to their CV. The payout was over $10,000 for that last silent month. The enforced silence lasted two months.

The problem was, Ph.D was too good at their job, too thorough, and had uncovered a circular check pattern involving a compromised central corp who would approve each others documents, and cit these as 'in order' during the meetings, when no such documents had been produced, checked, or even sighted. Sometimes the General Manager Ian Rae didn't produce his monthly reports for six months.

Ph.D's job was to put this processes in place and was fired for doing their job. Ph.D. said: "Not in any country in the world is it this corrupt! . . . Ian Rae keeps three sets of books. One of what was discussed at the meetings, another of what they want others to hear and not understand, and a third that alters this whenever required."

Ian Rae delivered a letter of notice to Ph.D on 11 May 2009. Ph.D replied on 25 May and the months leave lasted until the end of June 2009.

Ph.D had begun asking questions about the ITC budget on 22 January 2009. That pricked Heather [Roberts] and Ryan [Tumbagaham]'s ears up. The first names are taken from Ph.D's work diary entries. Both are ITC consultants.

On 28 January it was noted that Heather Roberts' data was crap in RFP.

On 30 January, Ph.D requested a clear line of accountability – what scope, how to plan it, and who are the resources. The next day nepotism was noted and : "Is it a system bug or is it a system functionality not liked by the user. Is it a project or is it a war room."

4 February 2009: "Who carries the risk with the contracts? The budget depends on an infrastructure that does nto exist."

11 February 2009: "Ph.D. and Pete raised concerns regarding the budget and named standards."

12 February 2009: **"Reporting is not at senior level! Problem!!"**

20 February 2009: **"Simon is a risk with money and legality."**

25 February 2009: “ACE meeting 11:00am → 12:00 noon. Presentation by Jenny . . . Building 100% Audit in invoicing – A lot of errors. Fees: Something going on!! Task Force to look at it [followed by] Moral Boost staff meeting.”

12 March 2009: “Talk to Ian about Estimation for projects. 1 Project Costs; 2 Maintenance Costs; 3 Support Costs; Overhead Costs from budget. ***We still do not see the Model for Council.”**

18 March 2009: “Ian, Lawrence and Karen at Ian's Office at 1:30pm.”

23 March 2009: “*SPOF = Single Point of Failure * Fancy Big Words”.

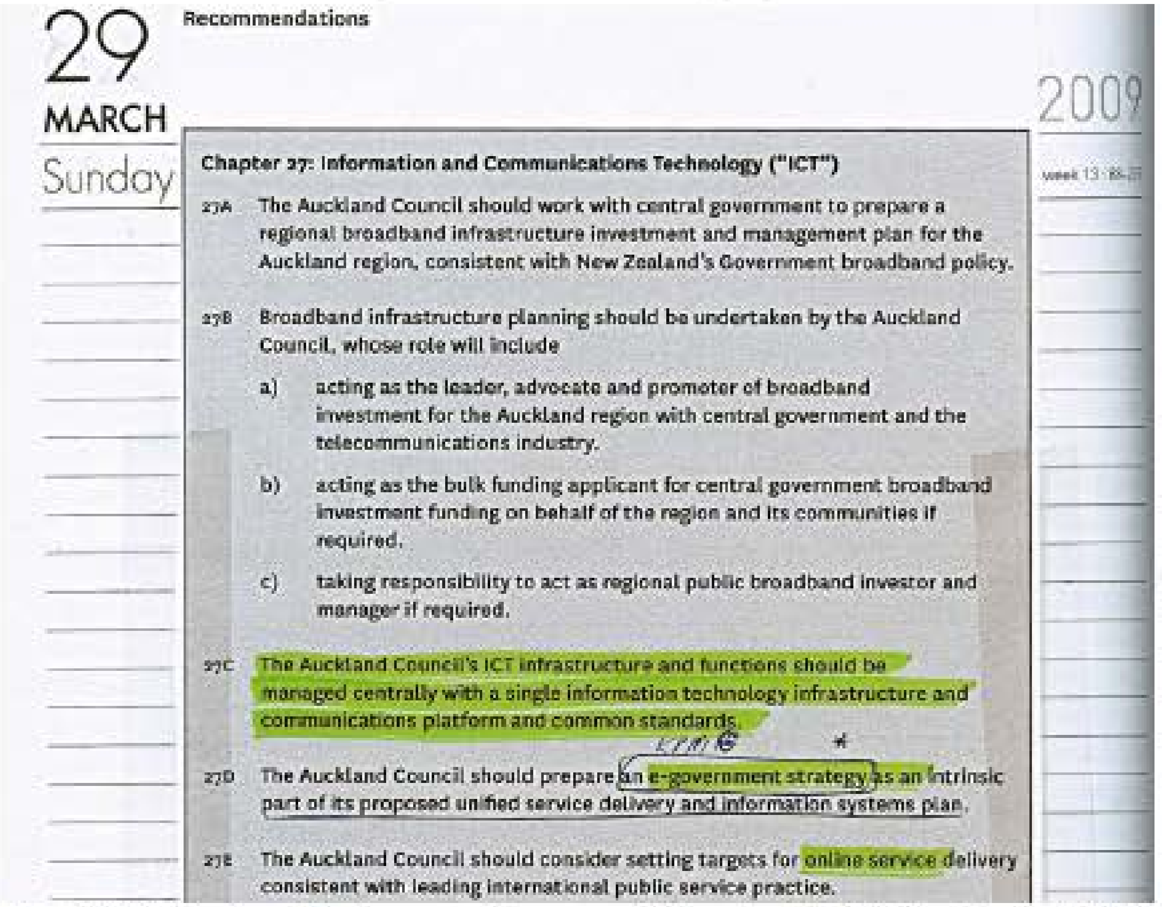

29
MARCH
Sunday

2009

week 13

Recommendations

Chapter 27: Information and Communications Technology (“ICT”)

27A The Auckland Council should work with central government to prepare a regional broadband infrastructure investment and management plan for the Auckland region, consistent with New Zealand's Government broadband policy.

27B Broadband infrastructure planning should be undertaken by the Auckland Council, whose role will include

a) acting as the leader, advocate and promoter of broadband investment for the Auckland region with central government and the telecommunications industry.

b) acting as the bulk funding applicant for central government broadband investment funding on behalf of the region and its communities if required.

c) taking responsibility to act as regional public broadband investor and manager if required.

27C The Auckland Council's ICT infrastructure and functions should be managed centrally with a single information technology infrastructure and communications platform and common standards.

ETM © *

27D The Auckland Council should prepare an e-government strategy as an intrinsic part of its proposed unified service delivery and information systems plan.

27E The Auckland Council should consider setting targets for online service delivery consistent with leading international public service practice.

1 April 2009: “Business Performance Managers: Jai Desai – ACE City Development; Chris Martin – Transport; Darel Farley – ACR; Brain Maltby – Finance.”

2 April 2009: “Create Agenda for Lead Meeting * Roles & Responsibilities.”

3 April 2009: “Met with Trish @10.15am in her office . . . 3. Internal Charging.

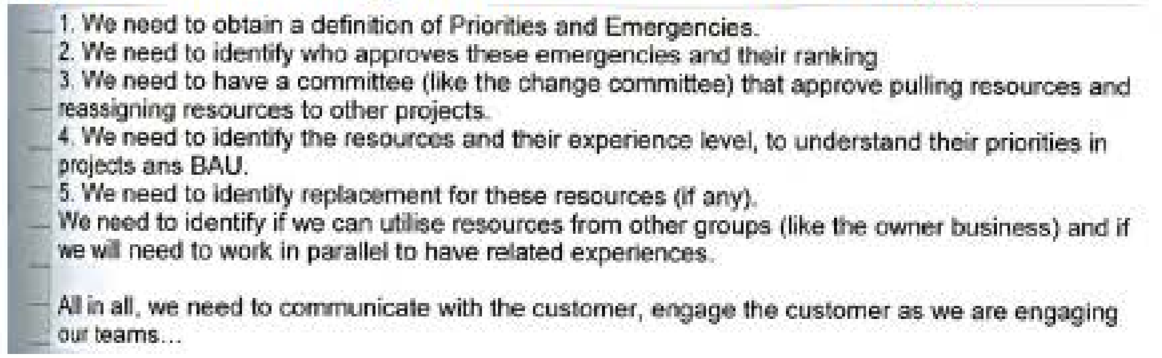

1. We need to obtain a definition of Priorities and Emergencies.
2. We need to identify who approves these emergencies and their ranking
3. We need to have a committee (like the change committee) that approve pulling resources and reassigning resources to other projects.
4. We need to identify the resources and their experience level, to understand their priorities in projects ans BAU.
5. We need to identify replacement for these resources (if any).

We need to identify if we can utilise resources from other groups (like the owner business) and if we will need to work in parallel to have related experiences.

All in all, we need to communicate with the customer, engage the customer as we are engaging our teams…

7 May 2009: “Leadership Workshop * Project Satisfaction – Feedback (instead of the word Consultants) ~~?~~ SLA's 1 Committment met Graph P1→P5 – Individual or Combined? – Trending to show . . . G, ITC Share – **Ian Clippings (Monthly) * check it * Ian had not published one since last year.**

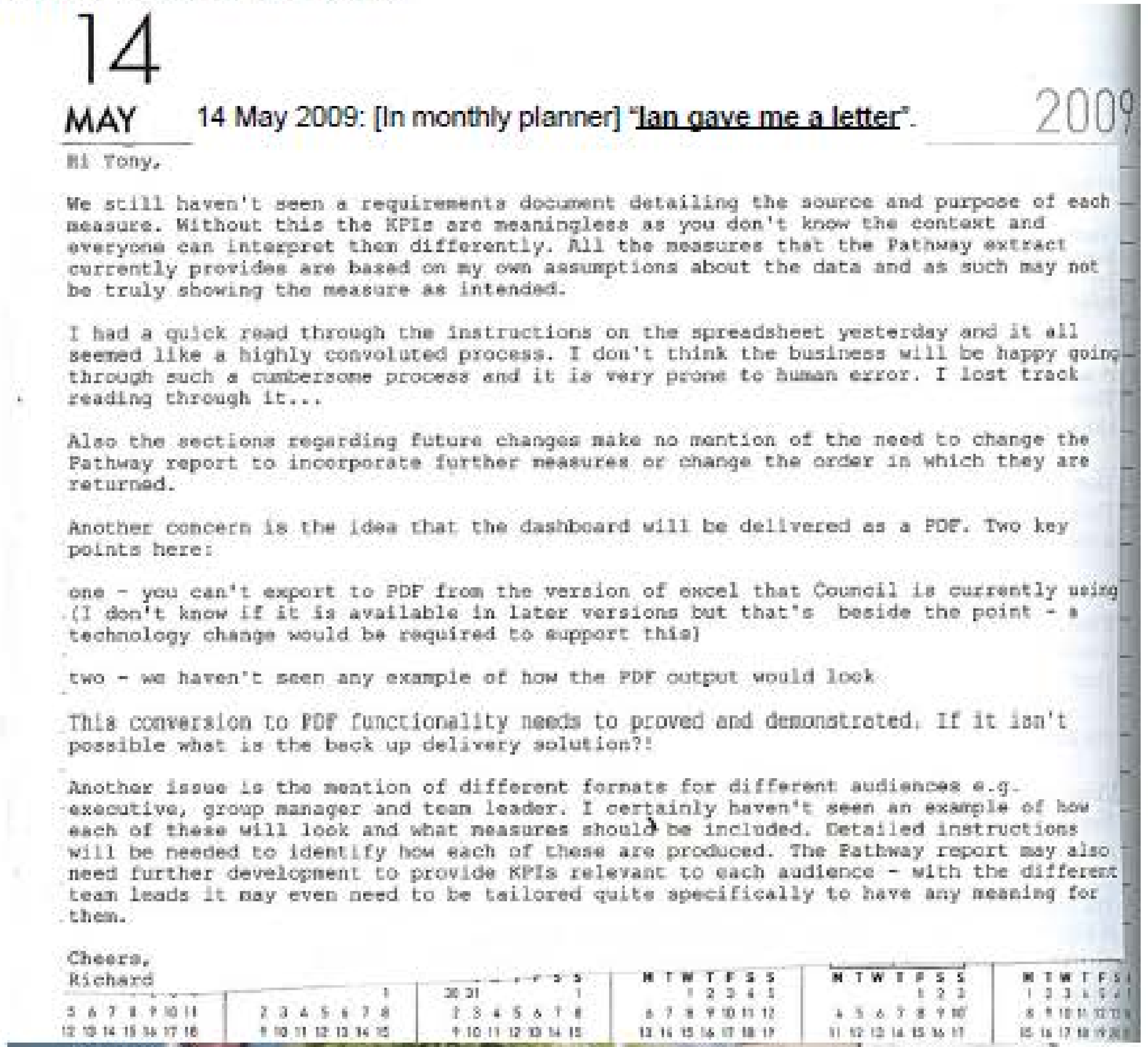

14
MAY

2009

14 May 2009: [In monthly planner] “<u>Ian gave me a letter</u>”.

```
Hi Tony,

We still haven't seen a requirements document detailing the source and purpose of each
measure. Without this the KPIs are meaningless as you don't know the context and
everyone can interpret them differently. All the measures that the Pathway extract
currently provides are based on my own assumptions about the data and as such may not
be truly showing the measure as intended.

I had a quick read through the instructions on the spreadsheet yesterday and it all
seemed like a highly convoluted process. I don't think the business will be happy going
through such a cumbersome process and it is very prone to human error. I lost track
reading through it...

Also the sections regarding future changes make no mention of the need to change the
Pathway report to incorporate further measures or change the order in which they are
returned.

Another concern is the idea that the dashboard will be delivered as a PDF. Two key
points here:

one - you can't export to PDF from the version of excel that Council is currently using
(I don't know if it is available in later versions but that's  beside the point - a
technology change would be required to support this)

two - we haven't seen any example of how the PDF output would look

This conversion to PDF functionality needs to proved and demonstrated. If it isn't
possible what is the back up delivery solution?!

Another issue is the mention of different formats for different audiences e.g.
executive, group manager and team leader. I certainly haven't seen an example of how
each of these will look and what measures should be included. Detailed instructions
will be needed to identify how each of these are produced. The Pathway report may also
need further development to provide KPIs relevant to each audience - with the different
team leads it may even need to be tailored quite specifically to have any meaning for
them.

Cheers,
Richard
```

Military protection is supposed to stop anyone raining on your parade, John Banks.

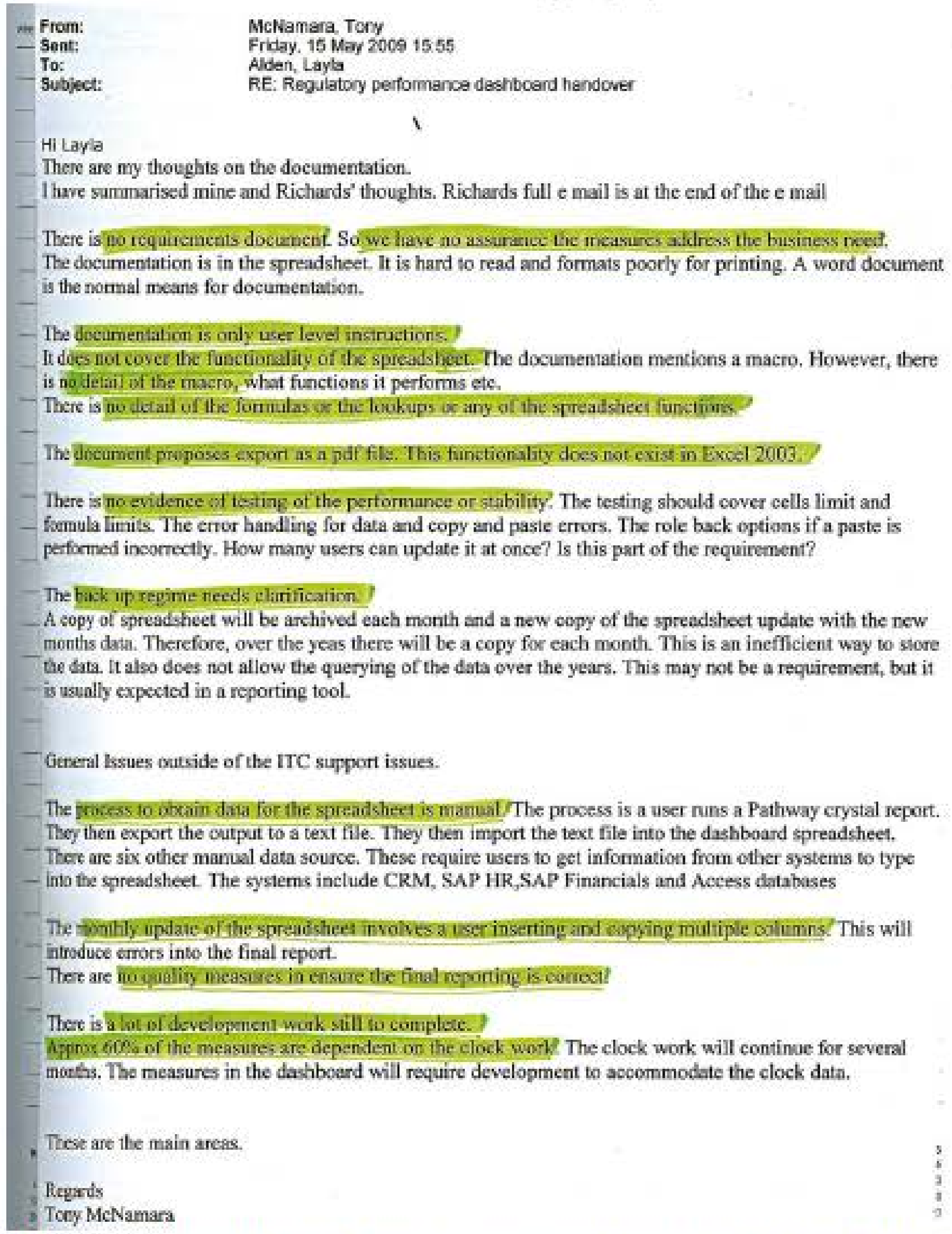

From: McNamara, Tony
Sent: Friday, 15 May 2009 15:55
To: Alden, Layla
Subject: RE: Regulatory performance dashboard handover

Hi Layla
There are my thoughts on the documentation.
I have summarised mine and Richards' thoughts. Richards full e mail is at the end of the e mail

There is no requirements document. So we have no assurance the measures address the business need.
The documentation is in the spreadsheet. It is hard to read and formats poorly for printing. A word document is the normal means for documentation.

The documentation is only user level instructions.
It does not cover the functionality of the spreadsheet. The documentation mentions a macro. However, there is no detail of the macro, what functions it performs etc.
There is no detail of the formulas or the lookups or any of the spreadsheet functions.

The document proposes export as a pdf file. This functionality does not exist in Excel 2003.

There is no evidence of testing of the performance or stability. The testing should cover cells limit and formula limits. The error handling for data and copy and paste errors. The role back options if a paste is performed incorrectly. How many users can update it at once? Is this part of the requirement?

The back up regime needs clarification.
A copy of spreadsheet will be archived each month and a new copy of the spreadsheet update with the new months data. Therefore, over the yeas there will be a copy for each month. This is an inefficient way to store the data. It also does not allow the querying of the data over the years. This may not be a requirement, but it is usually expected in a reporting tool.

General Issues outside of the ITC support issues.

The process to obtain data for the spreadsheet is manual. The process is a user runs a Pathway crystal report. They then export the output to a text file. They then import the text file into the dashboard spreadsheet. There are six other manual data source. These require users to get information from other systems to type into the spreadsheet. The systems include CRM, SAP HR,SAP Financials and Access databases

The monthly update of the spreadsheet involves a user inserting and copying multiple columns. This will introduce errors into the final report.
There are no quality measures in ensure the final reporting is correct.

There is a lot of development work still to complete.
Approx 60% of the measures are dependent on the clock work. The clock work will continue for several months. The measures in the dashboard will require development to accommodate the clock data.

These are the main areas.

Regards
Tony McNamara

18 May 2009: "Talked to Kat after the meeting (Face to Face) & she will be out of the office . . . 1 . . . Detailed End to End process to populate. 2. ~~Outstanding~~ Development: - Deloitte engaged on T&M base to complete once pre-requisits work i.e. Clocktask – We do not carry skills internally. 3 . . . ITC manage development CC process."

19 May 2009: ". . . *Sinaa PDP:- * **Ian came to the room claiming we are loud . . .**"

21 May 2009: "John Pritchard & Ian Rae @ 11:00am, Ian's office, notes on handout. * Launch the SDLC in the next staff meeting . . ."

25 May 2009: [In monthly planner] "**Give Ian an answer**".

27 May 2009: *Leads Meeting – ask Questions: - *What is the process for the new initiatives? if it is not S&A who is it? Who will refer it? * Maria hired. *Braja's Good Work. *Risk Management Meeting with Micheal Mann @ Civic 5 Attendees: Layla, Ian, Murray, Pete, Peter, Lou *__Dequalify anything I say or discredit my words. Just Pathetic.__"

29 May 2009: Submit Monthly Report *Leads meeting @1:00pm →2:30pm:- 1 Project to be passed by S&A, no expectation from BST to get much from S&A.

2 June 2009: Note: Send a reminder or Risk/Issue Register (log) for team today June → Risk month.

3 June 2009: "Printing Project: Murray, Ian, Warren, Pete, Layla. Leadership Meeting: Talk to John about the SDLC and getting approval."

> This was the last meeting Ph.D was allowed to attend. Ph.D was then asked to vacate the premises, not even allowed to go back to the office – the month of silence in exchange for a clean and clear addition to the CV. This is all classic CIA stuff, but it also reeks of the lighter hand of the KGB.

The Auckland City Council is now a spy network for the CIA. The other city councils are also spy networks for various agencies, including Internal Affairs and Police – not dissimilar to Matrix Security and Mr Whippy spying for the SIS. The CIA are the Rotary Club with tanks.[2]

The Sabotage Model in America

In Flint, Michigan, the idea of a Super City was to increase rates through the roof and evict people out of their houses. Anyone who can't pay the rate increases is deemed to be financially irresponsible and insolvent. Then the Council goes in kicking everyone out, boards up the houses (some houses are moved), and the very few in each block who have paid – they settle with them on compulsory purchase and then it's safe to bulldoze the suburb and turn it into a wasteland and eventually gardens.

Then Council brings in its landscapers and the whole former suburb is turned into a carbon producing parkland. This makes entire suburbs homeless bums in parks, and this is the policy the rest of the world will be forced to follow.

The last to go are the police and talk show hosts, as they keep everyone in order and ignorant until the end.

Internal Affairs: "The police suspect their houses are as much subject to this as anyone else and it's a radical leap in understanding for them – to work for the government and to be treated like everyone else. It's almost as bad as being told they're a servant of the people – when they are servants of the government, and the government is a slave to the NWO."

We're the Auckland City Council – Let's actively engage in Sabotage

Steve Trump ran a secondhand clothing business at the top of Queen Street in Auckland. He wasn't a builder and had no experience in building, but he was made an ACC Building Inspector and just wrote up the Building Certificates without inspection.

This has, in part, resulted in building certificates for homes – resulting in the Leaky Building Syndrome which has affected some 9,000 homes in the last ten years (1999–2009) and is expected to cost the country NZ$22 billion. Owners and tenants are then removed from their homes with three hours notice, so it's achieving the same result as Flint, Michigan, but with less indignation.

The removal of people from their homes is being tried here, there, and everywhere.

---

[2] After I revealed this to Dr James Fetzer on 'The Real Deal' in America on 19 February 2010, the CIA in suits monstered Ph.D's reputation telling locals: "They borrowed money and didn't pay it back. They're a dark horse."

The Leaky Building Syndrome has then been turned into a gravy train for other terrible consultants who charge $500,000 and take two years, not to tell an apartment block that their roof should be repaired immediately. And the roofs leak because the jobs were subcontracted out so many times, 17-year-old Tongan immigrants, with no building experience, were laying roofs, including putting nails through the flat Butyanol membrane stick-on roof, ensuring that they would leak. They barely spoke English.

Auckland City Council insurers say they have run out of compensation funds for the Leaky Building Syndrome and are fighting tooth and nail to have Leaky Building claims thrown out on technicalities. Their main goal is to delay. When the new Auckland SuperCity comes into force in October 2010, under control of the CIA, no leaky building claims will be processed, as it's a different identity. That's the big technicality.

But then we have to ask ourselves, who is the Mayor who never mentions the Leaky Building Syndrome, and like Helen Clark, will only appear on TV when there is something good to be associated with. Many politicians now do this as it extends their life expetency.

Internal Affairs: "Auckland Mayor John Banks is a CIA asset controlled by his sexual deviancy".

Police on Mayor John Banks: "The Mayor of Auckland is Super Bum-Boy. Is it a bird? Is it a plane? No! It's Super Bum-Boy John Banks."

Rod Deane – Fiscal Treason gets a Front Row Seat

Rod Deane is CIA from wayback and he's been told he's going to be one of the Auckland SuperCity Commissioners. Roderick Sheldon Deane (1941–) is a New Zealand economist and public sector reformer who has worked alongside such saboteurs as Don 'Do Nothing' Brash, Robert 'Drunk Heroin Trafficking Tavistock' Muldoon, Margaret 'CIA Heroin Murderer' Bazley, Roger 'Paedophile' Douglas, Theresa 'Charge Too Much And Lose 75% Of Everything' Gattung, Hugh 'Inherit And Lose 25% Of Everything' Fletcher.

Rod Deane was Alternate Executive Director of IMF (1974–76, lend and steal), then Reserve Bank of New Zealand Chief Economist (CIA manipulator), then Deputy Governor (1982–) where he developed New Zealand's first macroeconometric model. In 1984, Deane led the Reserve Bank call for a devaluation of the New Zealand dollar and closed New Zealand currency to international trading, until the currency was devalued, causing the loss of hundreds of millions of dollars and many suicides, so much so that it became known as a constitutional crisis.

In 1986, Deane became Chairman of the State Services Commission (effectively the head of New Zealand's public service) where he joined forces with Roger 'Paedophile' Douglas as the principal architect of state-sector reform and corporatisation of New Zealand's State-Owned Enterprises. So it was a huge sell-out carried on and monitored by the CIA's Margaret 'Heroin Murderer' Bazley. The Auckland SuperCity is just a repeat of this 14 years later, once everyone has forgotten.

Rod Deane's goals were outwardly honourable, but the results were a government that does not work. So it was sabotage. Wage determination processes were liberalized and haven't gone up since, effectively halving every seven years. Reducing the number of public servants rendered many government departments totally in efficient, and in many cases, worse than useless. They attack to avoid paying out and act like Asians during payout with no return calls. Changes to improve the clarity of objectives and accountability meant that their service was accountable to a bunch of 'value statements' that had no connection to the outcome. So no result means they're still doing a terrific job.

In 1987 Deane became CEO of Electricorp which was then sold off to private sector overseas interests. Telecom was then privatised and Deane became CEO (1992–99), replaced by Theresa 'Owns A Race Horse With Two Drug Using Sodomites' Gattung (1999–2007). Deane then became Telecom Chairman. Deane was CEO of the Year (1994), and CEO of the Decade (1999), then retired, but remained Telecom's non-executive Chairman.

Deane was also Chairman of ANZ National Bank (1999–) and Director of the ANZ Banking Group in Melbourne from where New Zealand was attacked through the influential Australian owned ANZ Bank. So he was given a personal Chair as Professor of Economics and Management at Victoria University, Wellington (2000–03), and awarded an honorary Doctorate of Laws. Treason always gets a front row seat. The CIA always ensures this is so.

Deane was Chairman of Fletcher Building Limited (2001–10) which has become so infused with CIA and Mossad that it's virtually an Intelligence-front for their goals and their assassinations, like Michael King's murder.

As of 2010, Deane remains a Director of Woolworths Ltd in Sydney, and Chairman of the New Zealand Seed Fund ($40 million co-investment fund) which drip feeds money to the private sector as long as it's in line with the CIA goals for New Zealand, and doesn't involve any critics.

As charity cover, Deane was President of the IHC, involved in closing special schools and psychopaedic institutions, removing the intellectually handicapped and placing them in normal schools and society. This caused massive distractions and lowered the education levels of everyone else. Deane and wife Gillian are patrons of the arts, and currently serve as Joint Patrons of the Intellectually Handicapped . . . so worse than uselss – sabotage.

Sue Bradford's Bridge – The Biggest Single Span in the Southern Hemisphere

Sue Bradford was notoroious in Grey Lynn, Auckland. She was the suburb's biggest slapper. If you couldn't get a root in the 1980s and you were within stumbling distance of the city, you could always stagger on over and catch a ride on Sue Bradford. Size 44 on top and size 14 on bottom, with a face that screamed peasant, even the drunk locals couldn't keep her happy, so she took to taking in ex-cons who had just been evicted out of their second home – Mt Eden prison.

Sue Bradford had three children to these ex-cons, and more ex-prisoners kept coming by at night, each one "this is your uncle" to the offspring. Sue Bradford used to take these kids out to cafés and slap the shit out of them. Her 15-year-old son protested by leaping off Grafton Bridge falling much of the 43 metres to his protesting grass-roots death.

Sue Bradford's son committed suicide due to her and her partner's domestic violence and this was kept out of the media, as the official New Zealand Government policy is that 'men are violent and women are the victims'. However, we know that 59 % of domestic violence is committed by women, psychological violence is equally harmful, and brown skinned men are the biggest victims of physical domestic violence in New Zealand – around 47%.

Like Sue Bradford, Grafton Bridge was built in 1910, and was in her time, the largest single span in the Southern Hemisphere, around 98 metres.

Sue became a back bench MP for the Greens (1999–2009), then had curved clear persex covers built on the handrails to stop people jumping off, not that her son could do it a second time. The bridge then became stressed and required major strengthening ("the equivalent of a joint replacement"), closing it for a year (August 2008–October 2009).

The bridge was opened again on 4 October 2009 with an extremely brief presentation by the paedophile Mayor John Banks. But the $32 million spent was another swindle and the bridge is now more ineffective than ever, with no traffic allowed from 7 am to 7 pm, other than buses. So that was a complete waste of time and someone took a huge cut. No doubt more blackmail bribes against the compromised CIA agent Mayor John Banks.

Green MP Sue Bradford (1999–2009): "I have an idea.
"It will cost NZ$40 million and will achieve absolutely nothing."
Auckland City Council: "Well, without seeing it, that sounds like a great idea."

Spymaster: "In December 2009 the SAS showed me Sue Bradford's file. It was very extensive and revealed she'd been to Russia and China where she'd been through a number of supposed exams. She couldn't speak Chinese to save herself. Her highest marks were lying on her back with her legs spread. She arranged to borrow or buy classrooms from a proper polytech for a Trade Union-run course, but used them to disseminate her own views. She was a card-carrying member of the PYM, and we now know that was an SIS front."

Hallett: "According to the former 2-IC of the SIS, some of the communist organisations in New Zealand were so infiltrated by the SIS that only two communist members remained and the rest were SIS staff."

Spymaster: "I got virtually the same story from the head of Naval Intelligence in NZ, and the PYM were the biggest sacks of shit of all time and their members were guilty of all sorts of crime, including murder. They'd been infiltrated and exfiltrated so nobody had a clue who was who and what they were really up to."

Just days before the Bridge was due to reopen, Sue Bradford announced her resignation from politics on 25 September 2009 and stood down on 28 October 2009. She was so widely disregarded, it was announced on TV news as a story, but the story never appeared.

Len Brown, Mayor of Manukau, and running for Super Mayor, then suggested, in the newspapers, that Sue Bradford would be a good candidate as councillor for the Auckland SuperCity. Is there anyone in Local Body politics who isn't a prostitute or in need of a quick sloppy root from a disproportionate oversized peasant? . . . Apparently not!

The newspaper excuse for Sue Bradford's resignation was that she lost her bid to become co-leader of the Green Party on 30 May 2009, but the same *New Zealand Herald* selected Bradford as 'Backbencher of the Year' in 2000.

Q: "What's black & white & red all over?"
A: "The New Zealand Herald".

Sue Bradford (57) said: "reform of Section 59 was her biggest achievement in Parliament, because of the 'huge shift' in the way children were viewed [like not from a bridge]. I am pleased that people could 'no longer hit their kids with implements' . . . [and her second] extending the length of time some mothers in prison can keep their babies with them . . ."[3]

Sue Bradford was allowed to become an MP so that she could put up the suicide barriers, but the whole exercise cost Auckland rate payers around NZ$40 million . . . sick fucks.

Spymaster: "It's a known mental illness to visit prisoners and is a sign of rape as a child – trying to get their attention as that's all they're worth. The prisoners go 'I want to screw you'. So she gets a reputation as being an easy lay, and everybody's competing with everybody else for her favours.

Sod off Bradford
DEMOC
criminals
disci

Kiwis protesting Sue Bradford's "Anti-Smacking Bill". It was designed to give paedophiles greater access to defathered children.

---

[3] *New Zealand Herald*, 'MP Sue Bradford resigns', 25 September 2009.

"Because she's fair with dyed blonde hair she stands out. She appeals to all their egos. She gets so blasé about it that she's asking the screws and other prisoners, 'who's got the biggest dick?', so she doesn't waste any time. The screws are so subnormal anyway, they tell her. Then they spread further rumours about her, and then years and years later, she winds up with a police narc as a boyfriend who gets her pregnant and he begins bathing and showering with the child and one day she's out putting the washing on the line. She comes back into the bathroom and finds him shagging the 18-month old girl on the floor. She puts up with all sorts of excuses in her mind that she didn't really catch them and then she makes excuses for him – 'I caused it. I brought the whole thing about. If I had satisfied him, he wouldn't have done it.' It wasn't until he did it again, that she got rid of him. But she still used to send the child on court ordered visits to his home, which was a garage in West Auckland. The child then came down with a chancre – venereal sore in the eye. The children's ward put in writing that it was a 'venereally obtained lesion from a veneral source' – that 'somone had ejaculated in the child's face'. The timing correlated exactly with the visit.

"Sue Bradford was arrested over 100 times. She was friends with the Chief of Psychiatric Services. When police dog handlers were asked to go into her house and do a search they refused on the basis that it was too filthy for the dogs, and the paraphenalia in there would disturb the dogs. That and the smell."

Author: "So she was an outside dog".

Transparency International's 'Corruption Perceptions Index'

On 17 November 2009, New Zealand was named the world's least corrupt nation by Transparency International. From a list of 180 countries New Zealand got 9.4 out of 10, moving up from second place in 2008.

Close behind were Denmark (9.3), Singapore (9.2), Sweden (9.2) and Switzerland (9.0), followed by Finland (8.9), the Netherlands (8.9), Australia (8.7), Canada (8.7), Iceland (8.7), Norway (8.6), Hong Kong (8.2), Luxemburg (8.2), Germany (8.0), Ireland (8.0), Austria (7.9), Japan (7.7), the U.K. as a whole (18th at 7.7), the U.S. (19th at 7.5) followed by Barbados (7.4) and Belgium (7.1). In the middle is Israel (32nd at 6.1) and Italy (63rd at 4.3). At the bottom were Sudan (1.5), Iraq (1.5), Myanmar (1.4), Afghanistan (1.3) and Somalia (1.1).[4]

> Huguette Labelle, chairwoman of Transparency International:
> "Stemming corruption requires strong oversight by parliaments, a well-performing judiciary, independent and properly resourced audit and anti-corruption agencies, vigorous law enforcement, transparency in public budgets, revenue and aid flows, as well as **space for independent media** and a vibrant civil society."

Upon further investigation, this just turned out to be Transparency International's 'Corruption Perceptions Index' (CPI) which ranks 'perceived public sector corruption' with *surveys* carried out among business people and country analysts by residents and non-residents"[5] who seem as ignorant as each other as their perceptions correlate.

---

[4] 'New Zealand tops Denmark as world's least corrupt nation', reported by Belinda Goldsmith, edited by Miral Fahmy, Reuters Life!, Sydney, 18 November 2009; TRANSPARENCY INTERNATIONAL (the global coalition against corruption) – Index Advisory Committee; 'FACTBOX-Transparency Int. Europe corruption perceptions', Reuters London, 17 November 2009'. These are linked and combined, their confusing multiple pages paraphrased to establish the missing clarity.

[5] FACTBOX-Transparency Int. Europe corruption perceptions, Reuters London, 17 November 2009. The links provided by Reuters, like [ID:nLG352428] and [ID:nLG352428] failed to activate any information nor did they raise anything in Google search other than itself. The TPI site was a nightmare of an NGO trying to fill up an entire website that could have been covered in six pages had they not been going for funding.

Funny enough, the Transparency International Secretariat is on Alt-Moabit 96, 10559 Berlin, along the journey of Hitler's escape out of Berlin with the collusion of the British, and the double agent Ian Fleming. You can phone them at ++49-30-3438 20-0. They can see where Hitler left from their balcony.

The surveys contained information from non-existent polls or vettted polls. It was not the actual corruption being polled, surveyed, or indexed. It was the perception of corruption. So if the corruption wasn't obvious like 'war, cash bribes, and open carriage heroin trafficking', and if it wasn't investigated by the media, and if the media worked with the judiciary (and was using the drugs trafficked, like the bribed Paul Holmes) and the judiciary itself was corrupt, then there would be no perception of it.

The Corruption Perceptions Index reflects multiple foreign views (uninformed) and a few from the evaluated country ("Ah, I think we'll keep quiet about this"), when criminal protectionism exists right through the courts and government.

> "If you say anything, you'll have no chance of promotion and those below you will be promoted until your job disappears." This has happened enough.
>
> University Professor Johann Graf Lambsdorff (Passau, Germany) does the CPI index and defines corruption as: "The abuse of public office for private gain" and covers 'administrative and political corruption, public official bribes, public procurement kickbacks/ embezzlement and the strength of anti-corruption policies'.

This does not take into account the existing scenario where the CIA installed their man (John Banks) as Mayor of Auckland, then rorts the Auckland City Council. Mayor John Banks is then complicit with the CIA rorts and aids the CIA in extorting NZ$12+ million off the Auckland City taxpayers each year – his wage and position are his bribe.

The installed Mayor ensures the whole Counter Intelligence rort goes according to plan.

Professor Johann Graf Lambsdorff, the CPI or Reuters do not consider protectionism within the ranks, corruption outside of business, corruption by the Judiciary, corruption by the media, or Intelligence Agencies rorting City Councils by installing their agents as Mayor. Auckland is not the only place where this is done. There are other cities in New Zealand.

"Transparency International's Corruptions Perceptions Index is an aggregate indicator that ranks countries in terms of the degree to which corruption is perceived to exist among public officials and politicians. It is a composite index drawing on corruption-related data by a variety of independent and reputable institutions."[6] "It is a composite index . . . of 14 polls . . . from expert and business surveys carried out by 12 independent institutions from the *high end of the market* who hold well documented data . . . It is . . . not . . . based on hard empirical data."[7]

Well, we're already in corruption mode because it was 13 polls by 10 institutions, none of them independent, maybe one poll from New Zealand, the polls did not necessarily involve a survey, and the survey's weren't advertised at the time (or to be taken seriously), answers were reinterpreted by the polster, and the questions were so limited as to be 'Yes', 'No' or 'graded numbers', when the question had the answer already loaded in it, so it really didn't matter how you answered, the questionaire already graded the country, so the questionaire istelf was a rort and bought. .

"High end of the market" = 'Reputable' = respectable = paedophile minder. No one who has ever exposed a paedophile has ever been 'respectable'. When one exposes a paedophile, more often than not their reputation is lost, so CPI stays away from that one, as well as murders done by the New Zealand Judiciary, paedophile Members of Parliament, and Nazis hiding at the local hairdressers.

Transparency International CPI worked with complicit businesses and NGO's specialising in collecting, manufacturing and rounding off data for the next round of funding.

---

[6] *Transparency International Corruption Perceptions Index 2009*, Methodological Brief, Prof. Dr. Johann Graf Lambsdorff, September 2007.

[7] 'FACTBOX-Transparency Int. Europe corruption perceptions' (all quotes on this page) .

NGO's are classic for not consulting with undercovers, or listening to what they say, or what Internal Affair's or police say, or even the public. They will only deal with other PR bodies in whichever department gives them the least incriminating answer. The true answer is closer to: 'every country is at the bottom',

'falling with style', and

'every country has been hollowed out by the Jews'.

It's what they do.

> "All sources must provide a ranking of [all] nations and must measure the overall extent of corruption . . . excluding surveys which mix corruption with other issues, such as political instability, decentralization or nationalism *[judicial murders, judicial heroin trafficking and judicial paedophilia]*."

So, like most surveys, they were too narrow to validly answer.

> "The CPI data is based from the past two years, relating to perceptions that may have been formed even further in the past . . . It provides a snapshot of the views of business people and country analysts . . . This means that substantial changes in perceptions of corruption are only likely to emerge over longer periods of time."

So whenever Transparency International issue a Corruption Perception Index, it does not take into account anything over the last two years, and may be up to five years out of date.

> "Year-to-year changes can result from: changed perceptions of a country's performance; or a change in the CPI's methodology and sampling. It is difficult to improve a CPI score over a short time period."

So really, the TPI's CPI is a **status quo document**, at least two years behind the times and so heavily compromised and limited in its scope as to be an agreement of pastel wearing cardigans.

"So the country with the lowest score is the world's most corrupt country? No. The country with the lowest score is the one where corruption is perceived to be greatest among those included in the list."[8]

> "Transparency International ensure quality control of Corruptions Perceptions Index by having its methodology reviewed by an Index Advisory Committee of 'leading international experts' in corruption, econometrics and statistics . . . They make suggestions which TPI management can veteo."

These advisors are set up in the Excell programe so their names and positions are all the more labourious to copy: **Germany:** Walter Zucchini (Prof. Institut fuer Statistik und Oekonometrie, Georg-August-Universitaet); **France:** Javier Herrera (Director), François Roubaud and Mireille Razafindrakoto (Economist, DIAL,[9] Institut de Recherche pour le Developpement); **USA:** Daniel Kaufmann (Brookings Institution); Susan Rose-Ackerman (Henry R. Luce Prof. of Jurisprudence, Yale Law School and Department of Political Science); Shang-Jin Wei (Columbia Uni.); Steven Finkel (Prof. Dept. Political Science, Uni. of Pittsburgh); **Scotland:** Richard Rose (Dir. Centre Study of Public Policy, Uni. of Aberdeen); **South Africa:** Jocelyn Kuper (Researcher in Media, Marketing and Socio-Political Analysis); **South Sudan:** Julius Court (Joint Donor Office).[10]

---

[8] *Transparency International Corruption Perceptions Index 2009*, Methodological Brief, September 2007.

[9] DIAL: Développement, Institutions & Analyses de Long terme.

[10] TRANSPARENCY INTERNATIONAL (the global coalition against corruption) – Index Advisory Committee. The Joint Donor Office in South Sudan was opened 27 May 2006. It is a cooperation framework established by Denmark, Sweden, Norway, the Netherlands and U.K. and monitors donations and policy – so completely bought.

"Data for the CPI has been provided to TPI free of charge." Some sources are publicly available, while others refuse to disclose their data. According to the CPI 2009 website, the CPI uses data from 10 independent organisations (it had been 12) with 13 different assessments with or without surveys (it had been 14).[11] However, these organisation are hardly independent and usually thrive from massive corruption from within, which itself would be widely perceived by the public if anyone had ever heard of these organisations. All of them missed the Global Meltdown/ international financial crisis as they have a policy of reporting (not warning or acting), and they report at least 12 months behind the times, if not two or five years.

So the TPI CPI is old newspaper and fish and chip wrappings even before it comes out.

The sources of information, with or without surveys, for 2009 were: "**Political and Economic Risk Consultancy** (PERC) annual Asian Intelligence Hong Kong publication of 2008 and 2009; **Global Insight** (formerly World Markets Research Centre) 'Country Risk Ratings' of 2009; **International Institute for Management Development** 'World Competitiveness Report' of 2008 and 2009; **World Economic Forum** (WEF) 'Global Competitiveness Report' of 2008 and 2009; **Economist Intelligence Unit** 'Country Risk Service and Country Forecast' of 2009; **World Bank's*** 'Country Policy and Institutional Assessment for IDA countries' of 2008; **African Development Bank** 'Country Policy and Institutional Assessment' of 2008; **Asian Development Bank*** 'Country Performance Assessment Ratings' of 2008; **Freedom House** 'Nations in Transit' of 2009; and **Bertelsmann Foundation** 'Bertelsmann Transformation Index' of 2009."[12]

None of these organisations predicted the Global Meltdown or subsequent transformations which were all caused by corruption from Israel (6.1), America (7.5) and Britian (7.7) who were ranked the 32nd, 19th and 18th least corrupt countries, but really they export corruption and have colonised with corruption over the last five centuries.

Corruption used to be called colonising – now it's called American Imperialism
and 'The Jews were behind it'.

Shouldn't their influence on destroying other countries be considered as the source of corruption in other countries like Myanmar (1.4), Afghanistan (1.3) and Iraq (1.5) as well as Iceland (8.7) who used the sovereign status excuse to save themselves from a British financial con, and New Zealand (9.4) which is in complete denial that it is 'a paedophile movement fronting as a country' and is currently being taken over by the CIA who use paedophilia to bribe New Zealand 'respectables' and 'honourables' to take whatever they want. i.e. NZ$12+ million via Auckland Mayor John Banks.

So the whole TPI CPI scenario thrives on depleting emetics. That is, people are too tired to be bothered fighting it. With a lack of resistance it becomes accepted, which is what the UN relies on. The least corrupt countries then become the new targets for Israeli, British and American colonialism. New Zealand already will fund anything that is corrupt and will not fund anything that isn't.

New Zealand call this 'NGOs', 'Charities' and 'fronting as socialism'
but really it's fascism'.

New Zealand is an ostrich.
When the word "corruption" is mentioned, it sticks its head in the sand.

---

[11] United Nations Economic Commission for Africa (UNECA) 'African Governance Report' was excluded after the 2007 year. Merchant International Group 'Grey Area Dynamics Ratings' was excluded after 2008.

[12] 'The Methodology of the Corruption Perceptions Index 2009' for Transparency International (TPI) and University of Passau, Prof. Dr. Johann Graf Lambsdorff, September 2009.

So the survey organisations within New Zealand prepare with pre-loaded questions and vet the answers. Basically, everyone who runs an NGO in New Zealand is sexually compromised and those who run the surveys in New Zealand are connected to, or influenced by, sexually bent politicians. It is so bent that the country's most corrupt politican, Helen Clark, had herself voted as "The Greatest Living New Zealander" with a week-long poll done when everyone was either on holiday or returning from holiday. Helen's a former prostitute, turned lesbian, married to a homosexual child sex abuser under house arrest, and tried to launch a nuclear strike on New Zealand while fronting as anti-nuclear, then moved to within 200 metres from Karls Mens Haridressers where the Nazis hung out.

Is that enough to qualify low in any corruption poll in New Zealand? No it isn't!

First you have to be caught by the media. If you're not caught by the media, it doesn't exit, then it's not perceived internationally, and therefore not voted on by the other 179 countries. So . . .

The perceived lack of corruption in New Zealand is dependent on media censorship.

"An essential condition for inclusion is that a source must provide a ranking of [all] nations. This condition is not met if a source conducts surveys in a variety of countries but with varying methodologies."[13]

This translates as 'evey source must rank every country using the same methodology for each country'. So if Somalia (1.1) is ranked on arms, cash bribes, and public murders, then so is New Zealand (9.4). Different style – higher grade.

"Comparison from one country to another would not be feasible in this case." This is Orwellian double speak. It's stupid UN PR talk that confounds any logic and undoes any validity the survey *might* otherwise have.

"Sources must measure the overall extent of corruption. They cannot be specific as to the type of corruption. [However] this is not the case if aspects of corruption are mixed with issues other than corruption like political instability, nationalism or change."

More Orwellian double speak. This stupid UN talk that means nothing is specifically valid, but the UN will use it anyway, and for their own agenda, which we all know is as corrupt as the paedophiles they are married to.

There were little or no data or data providers from New Zealand.

New Zealand appears to be in an international media blackout –
to prevent it being known as the Western World's most corrupt country . . .
and the most easily corrupted . . .
with the most hidden corruption . . .
with the most compromised honourables . . .
and the highest percentage of exiled war criminals of any nation of the world.

Funding

"Transparency International's CPI Index is entirely dependent on various governmental agencies, international foundations and corporations, with the measurement tools *[computer programme]* provided by Ernst & Young . . . For more on Transparency International's sources of funding, please see www.transparency.org/support_us" *[which is a actually a request for donation quickly followed by tax deductions for these donations]*: Transparency International is an international NGO and registered as a charity in the Federal Republic of Germany. Donations to TPI are tax-deductible within the limits prescribed by German law and will issue donation certificates for donations from German individuals/ organisations."

---

[13] *Ibid.*

On further search TPI are funded €50,000–€250,000 annually by: "**Governments, Development Organisations, Foundations and Public Institutions** including: Agencia Española de Cooperación Internacional (AECI); Australian Agency for International Development (AusAID); Bill & Melinda Gates Foundation; Canadian International Development Agency (CIDA); Catholic Agency for overseas Development (CAFOD) *[so paedophile politicians are not on the criteria for corruption]*; Centre for International Private Enterprise (CIPE), USA; Christian Michelsen Institute (CMI), Norway; Comunidad de Madrid; Royal Danish Ministry of Foreign Affairs (DANIDA) so Denmark is No. 1 or 2; Department for International Development (DFID), UK; European Bank for Reconstruction and Development (EBRD); European Commission; European Investment Bank (EIB); Federal Foreign Office, Germany *[initiating bank frauds for a century]*; Federal Ministry for Economic Cooperation and Development (BMZ), Germany *[we hold the Nazi money]*; Food and Agriculture Organization of the UN (FAO) *[starving black children for sex]*; Foreign and Commonwealth Office (FCO), UK; German Corporation for Technical Cooperation (GTZ); Government of Greece (for 13th IACC); Irish AID; The Legatum Institute for Global Development; Ministry for Foreign Affairs, Finland; Ministry of Foreign Affairs, The Netherlands; Ministry of Foreign Affairs, France; Norwegian Agency for Development Cooperation (NORAD); Organisation Internationale de la Francophonie; OSI Development Foundation, Switzerland *[and don't mention our Nazi money]*; The Philanthropic Collaborative; Revenue Watch Institute; Stockholm International Water Institute, Sweden; Swedish International Development Cooperation Agency (SIDA); Swiss Agency for Development and Cooperation (SDC); US Agency for International Development (USAID); The William and Florah Hewlett Foundation; The World Bank* (IBRD) *[of Economic Hitmen]*;[14]

With **Private Sector funding from:** Anglo American; Casals & Associates Inc., FLUIR, KPMG AG, SGS AG; Deloitte & Touche *[CIA who place compromised people in official positions like Mayor, then bribe them and take over the entire city]*; Ernst & Young *[who provided the easily manipulated programme]*; ExxonMobil[15] *[who spill oil and destroy local economies]*; General Electric *[pro-Nazi]*; Merck; Nexen; Norsk Hydro; PricewaterhouseCoopers *[who cook the books]*; Procter & Gamble; SAP; Shell International; Abu Dhabi National Energy Company (TAQA); Tyco Wal-Mart; with Dow Jones Factiva and Kroll providing pro bono services. **Business Principles for Countering Bribery (BPCB) Steering Committee corporate members include:** BP plc; F&C Asset Management plc; *HSBC [heroin trafficking, plane crashes & gambling]*; General Electric *[pro-Nazi]*; Norsk Hydro ASA; Organización Corona SA; PricewaterhouseCoopers *[cook the books]*; Rio Tinto plc; SAP; Shell International; SGS; Tata Sons Ltd; and members: **BPCB members include:** AccountAbility; The Conference Board; European Bank for Reconstruction and Development *[invest & takeover social policy]*; International Federation of Consulting Engineers; International Federation of Inspection Agencies; Social Accountability International; Bettina von Bogen; Bilderhaus Gschwendt; Care International; Corporacion Andina de Fomento (CAF); Giovanna Longo; Indigo Networks; Instituto Prensa y Sociedad (IPYS); Inter-American Development Bank (IADB); J.W. Christmas; Judith Schultz; K-Pact Council; Medicines Transparency; Rolf Hellenbrand; Secours catholique *[paedophile politicians who are not on corruption criteria]*; William F. Biggs; Wirtschaftsclub Saar-Pfalz-Moselle e.V."

So the TPI CPI is just a status quo document (covering some bad arses with kickbacks and backhanders) with all the NGO funding set up in the usual way – too confusing for complete analysis, but we can pick on a few, like Deloitte, which is the CIA in New Zealand.

---

[14] 37 countries x €50,000–€250,000 = €1.85m–€9.25m, with other funders at €0.6m = €2m–€10m = €6 million av. funding for Transparency International = NZ$12 million per annum. * = bribed by NZ Govt.

[15] *The Wall Street Journal*, Bret Stephens: "Last year, ExxonMobil donated $7 million to a grab-bag of public policy institutes, including . . . Transparency International". 'Climategate: Follow the Money', 2 Dec. 2009, p. 14.

TRANSPARENCY INTERNATIONAL NEW ZEALAND ORDERS ARREST OF ANTI-CORRUPTION ADVOCATE, 11 December 2009, www.kiwisfirst.com

"In a stinging irony – on United Nations International Anti-Corruption Day (9th) no less – Chairman Gerald McGhie of Transparency International's "autonomous" New Zealand chapter ordered Police to arrest public watchdog Penny Bright for trespassing at its Annual General Meeting on Wednesday. This was despite the government-funded group riding her coat-tails as a watchdog front ostensibly focused on increasing transparency and exposing corruption. Attendees were given pamphlets with the bold heading "CORRUPTION RUINS LIVES – FIGHT BACK". Once inside, the local chapter's newsletter on the information table lauded Ms Bright as an "Anti-corruption campaigner".

Bright is due to appear at Wellington District Court on the criminal charge Monday [but NZ Court staff went on strike]. Despite Transparency International New Zealand's website encouraging new memberships and guests to attend the AGM, which featured Attorney General Chris Finlayson as speaker, at least five applications for membership were declined and five others were turned away from the meeting. Only 20–25 people did attend. The drama was caught on film by a TV cameraman, including the small protest against the organisation conducted outside the high rise office building.

Ms Bright paid $56 to join the non-profit organisation earlier this month and had travelled down from Auckland to Wellington to attend the AGM at the law offices of Minter Ellison Rudd Watts. CEO Paul Browne met her at the door and announced, "You are not welcome (here) Ms Bright". Ms Bright was one of six who initially did not accept this polite rejection.

Ms Bright has been critical this year of Transparency International New Zealand as a "perpetrator of the myth" that New Zealand has low corruption. She has recently alleged the closed-shop and secretive nature of the not-for-profit organisation goes against every principle it supposedly stands for. While her membership was not declined, she asserts that those who have been declined were not given reasons for such declination – and that this failure directly conflicts with TPINZ's membership application which states reasons will be provided where an application is declined.

Ms Bright, a self-funded public watchdog who operates on a shoe-string budget, has repeatedly asked TPINZ for information as to its financial funding, expenditures and meeting minutes. The response has been silence.

Kiwisfirst has surreptitiously obtained TPINZ's 2009 financials, which seem to raise suspicions about their stiff-arm to requests for this information. $544,446 of their 2009 revenue came from an auspicious NZAID grant, while only $5,791 came from membership subscriptions [<104]. It appears that TPINZ has no employees. Office rent for 2009 was only $3,118 [$60 /wk]. Meanwhile, there are some seemingly un-transparent and rather large expenditures of $281,820 for "core funding", $75,778 for "civics education" and $40,655 for "peer learning network".

As reported earlier this year by kiwisfirst, Transparency International New Zealand's Board of Directors seems comprised of feather-nesting bureaucrats with fingers in businesses that benefit from covering-up corruption. That type of deception might be arguably innocuous if the organisation was not overtly presenting itself to the unsuspecting public as the corruption police – and receiving government aid and preferred tax status as a result. To "raise awareness of corruption" is publicly touted as the Berlin-based parent Transparency International's primary goal. But, it is safe to say, the reality is quite the opposite within the New Zealand chapter. Last month TPINZ popped its head up briefly to herald the fact that New Zealand was rated best among the 180 countries surveyed in TPI's "Corruption Perception Index" but is itself transparent when it comes to raising actual awareness of corruption in New Zealand.

Add to this the appearance that the local chapter seems rife with conflicts and lacks any diversity. Deputy Chairwoman Claire Johnstone alone works as General Manager Corporate for the New Zealand Government Ministry of Transport and is also principle of a consulting company (Sinclair Robertson Associates) which boasts success in getting its private sector clients government funding. At the AGM, her husband, NZ Police Constable Ash Johnstone, was running security.

To the public, TPINZ lists as "Goal 1" of its workplan "Greater Accountability and Transparency in New Zealand". Yet, CEO Browne admitted in a phone interview earlier this year that TPINZ was not generally focused on reducing corruption in New Zealand because it was "perceived" not to exist. When asked to identify an initiative coming from TPINZ to promote transparency or expose corruption within New Zealand, he refused to answer on the professed basis TPINZ was more effective working within quiet diplomatic channels [a.k.a. the Sodomy Olympics & the Paedophile Channel]. Instead, he bragged ethereally about the good works the local chapter was doing among the smaller Pacific islands in furthering transparency and reducing corruption."

Lack of Transparency International New Zealand style

Penny Bright is a leading anti-corruption campaigner in New Zealand. Her former contacts included Helen Clark and Margaret Wilson. She broke from them when their corruption led them to success.

Penny Bright paid $56 to become one of the 100 or so paid up members of Transparency International in New Zealand as led by Paul Browne CEO, who then published in their newsletter: "Penny Bright is a great Anti-corruption campaigner", then refused to let her into the meeting ("You are not welcome") in Wellington on 9 December 2009 – which happened to be the United Nations International Anti-Corruption Day – and then had her arrested, with the official camerman refusing to take the photo.

The meeting was the AGM. NZ's Attorney General Chris Finlayson was the speaker. At least 6 were turned away at the door, at least 5 memberships were refused. The AGM was held at the law offices of Minter Ellison Rudd Watts,

This left only 20–25 select people (all of them receiving bribes funded by NZAID) attending the New Zealand chapter of Transparency International's AGM at Minter Ellison Rudd Watts/ Nomore Cowboys/ Let's be quiet about the Nazis here. So the silence was deafening.

Let me see if I've got the self-interest and nepotism right. The NZ TPI AGM Deputy Chairwoman was Claire Johnstone. She is also a principle in Sinclair Robertson Associates, a private consulting company that gets government funding for private sector clients and takes a huge cut. Claire Johnstone also works as a Corporate General Manager in the Ministry of Transport and her husband, Constable Ash Johnstone, was running security.

Well then, so here's the accounts . . .

TPI NZ Income	2009	TPI NZ Expenses	2009
Membership fees ($56 each)	$ 5,791 (<104)	Core funding (Paybacks)	$281,820
NZAID grant	$544,446	Civics education (Nothing)	$ 75,778
		Peer learning network (Bribe network)	$ 40,655
		Rent (Cleaner's cupboard in existing office)	$ 3,118 ($60/wk)
TOTALS	$550,237		$410,371
CEO Paul Browne TPI salary		$148,866.00	

Transparency International New Zealand's Board of Directors have their bureaucratic fingers in every business pie that could possibly benefit from another layer of cover-up. CEO Paul Browne had no response as to why he was receiving money from the NZ Govt. and doing nothing with it, except spend it. Either way it is all feathing the nest of the Sodomy Olympics & the Paedophile Channel bureaucrats. NZ TPI CEO Paul Browne is not focussed on corruption in New Zealand because he perceives it does not exist, but it is perceived to exist in the smaller Pacific Islands. The Pacific Islands are already small (but strategic), so these crimes are quad-bike thefts, watch stealing, and wife stealing, which is mainly done by disgraced NZ Police up there (& tax evasion). And the next diversion is 'the first one didn't work'.

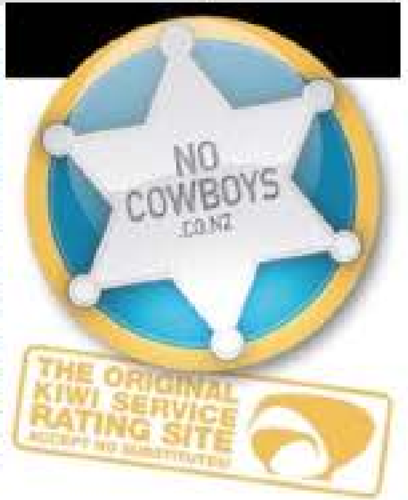
NO COWBOYS .CO.NZ
THE ORIGINAL KIWI SERVICE RATING SITE
ACCEPT NO SUBSTITUTES

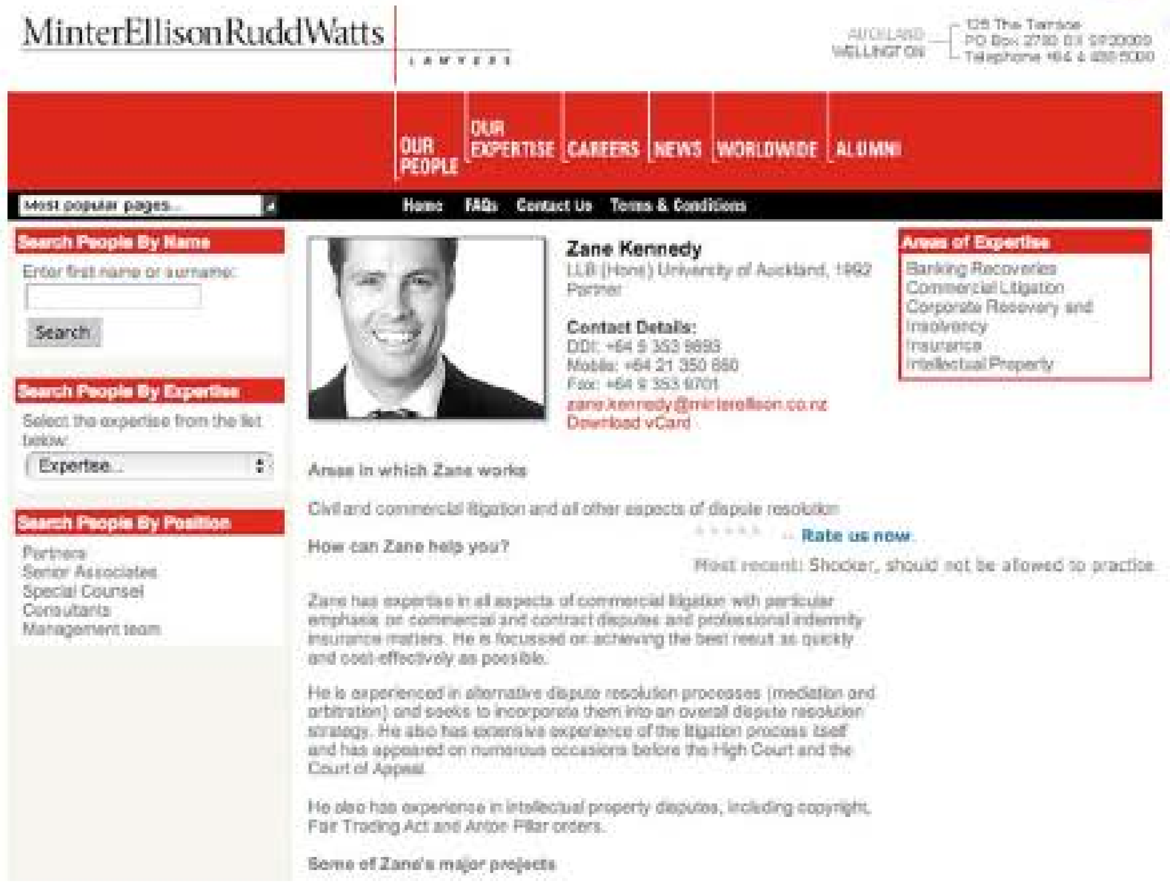
MinterEllisonRuddWatts
LAWYERS
AUCKLAND
WELLINGTON
125 The Terrace
PO Box 2793 DX SP20009
Telephone +64 4 498 5000
OUR PEOPLE
OUR EXPERTISE
CAREERS
NEWS
WORLDWIDE
ALUMNI
Most popular pages...
Home
FAQs
Contact Us
Terms & Conditions
Search People By Name
Enter first name or surname:
Search
Search People By Expertise
Select the expertise from the list below:
Expertise...
Search People By Position
Partners
Senior Associates
Special Counsel
Consultants
Management team
Areas of Expertise
Banking Recoveries
Commercial Litigation
Corporate Recovery and Insolvency
Insurance
Intellectual Property
Rate us now
Download vCard

Zane Kennedy
LLB (Hons) University of Auckland, 1992
Partner

Contact Details:
DDI: +64 9 353 9893
Mobile: +64 21 350 660
Fax: +64 9 353 9701
zane.kennedy@minterellison.co.nz

Areas in which Zane works

Civil and commercial litigation and all other aspects of dispute resolution

Most recent: Shocker, should not be allowed to practice

How can Zane help you?

Zane has expertise in all aspects of commercial litigation with particular emphasis on commercial and contract disputes and professional indemnity insurance matters. He is focussed on achieving the best result as quickly and cost-effectively as possible.

He is experienced in alternative dispute resolution processes (mediation and arbitration) and seeks to incorporate them into an overall dispute resolution strategy. He also has extensive experience of the litigation process itself and has appeared on numerous occasions before the High Court and the Court of Appeal.

He also has experience in intellectual property disputes, including copyright, Fair Trading Act and Anton Piller orders.

Some of Zane's major projects

Minter Ellison Rudd Watts Auckland partner, Zane Kennedy, started "Nomore Cowboys", which targetted those who spoke out by destroying their careers with anonymous complaints. Zane Kennedy and other Nomore Cowboys directors then refused to enter into any correspondence to remove unsubstantiated anonymous complaints, and refused to back them up. (See Vol II, Attachment "O", 'Blacklisting, Hobbling and Boiler-Plating')[16]

The is no improved accountability and no transparency in New Zealand. There is only diversion, and when that doesn't work, there is the police for immediate arrest. Since it's all based on perception, transparent is easier to see through than translucent and opaque, so:
Transparent: New Zealand is the least corrupt country in the world.
Translucent cover: The Minister of Police became the Minister of Tourism.
Opaque Crime: The Minister of Police was adopted into a crime family, sodomised by his stepfather, became a drug trafficking transvestite fucker, protected paedophiles, was fired, went to Russia, adopted three children, lying when he said he was the Minister of Police, then paved the way for the CIA takeover of Auckland, then paid out NZ$12+ million annually in bribes to the CIA, using Auckland ratepayers and parking tickets to pay for it – Mayor John Banks.

So Transparency International is a kickback backhander that turns opaque crimes into translucent crimes, and uses TPI as a transparent front that's paid to shout:

"We're all clean here. You can move on!"

Going off the NZ AID website for the 2008/09 year, 32% was spent on Education, 14% on Governance and 7% on Other Social; and in yet another chart, 18% was spent on Multilateral agencies to a total of $86.85 million, and $90.6 million in another chart. But most important is New Zealand's bribes to the agencies that fund Transparency International. So here it is in their own words:

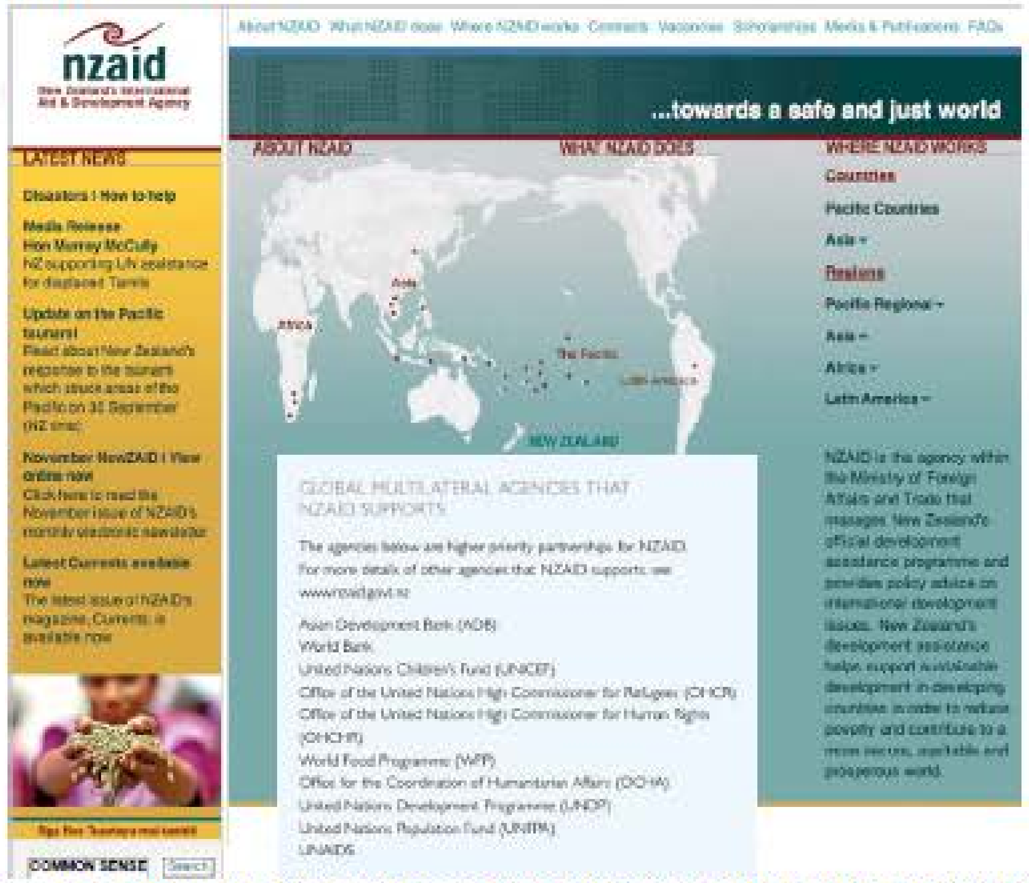
nzaid
New Zealand's International Aid & Development Agency
About NZAID
What NZAID does
Where NZAID works
Contacts
Vacancies
Scholarships
Media & Publications
FAQs
...towards a safe and just world
ABOUT NZAID
WHAT NZAID DOES
WHERE NZAID WORKS
Countries
Pacific Countries
Asia
Regions
Pacific Regional
Asia
Africa
Latin America
LATEST NEWS
Asia
Africa
The Pacific
Latin America
NEW ZEALAND
COMMON SENSE
Search

Disasters | How to help

Media Release
Hon Murray McCully
NZ supporting UN assistance for displaced Tamils

Update on the Pacific tsunami
Read about New Zealand's response to the tsunami which struck areas of the Pacific on 30 September (NZ time)

November NewZAID | View online now
Click here to read the November issue of NZAID's monthly electronic newsletter

Latest Currents available now
The latest issue of NZAID's magazine, Currents, is available now

GLOBAL MULTILATERAL AGENCIES THAT NZAID SUPPORTS

The agencies below are higher priority partnerships for NZAID.
For more details of other agencies that NZAID supports, see www.nzaid.govt.nz

Asian Development Bank (ADB)
World Bank
United Nations Children's Fund (UNICEF)
Office of the United Nations High Commissioner for Refugees (OHCR)
Office of the United Nations High Commissioner for Human Rights (OHCHR)
World Food Programme (WFP)
Office for the Coordination of Humanitarian Affairs (OCHA)
United Nations Development Programme (UNDP)
United Nations Population Fund (UNFPA)
UNAIDS

NZAID is the agency within the Ministry of Foreign Affairs and Trade that manages New Zealand's official development assistance programme and provides policy advice on international development issues. New Zealand's development assistance helps support sustainable development in developing countries in order to reduce poverty and contribute to a more secure, equitable and prosperous world.

---

[16] Cowboy shareholders: Zane Kennedy | Blair Jon Kennedy | Bevin James Kennedy | Daniel Mark Kennedy | Bruce Lindsay | Mathew Muir | Shane Weatherspoon | Johann Dobbin Nathanie I and Trotanoy Holdings Limited c/o Blackmore Virtue & Owens, Newmarket Auckland.

No Undercovers used so Exiled Nazis sleep well

Not one Undercover was even approached for their opinion in the entire survey/s or poll/s. What most Undercovers will tell you is: "Civilised countries with the most pristen appearance are major dealers in the arms and drugs trades and their police maintain a high tone of moral indignation that runs throughout the country as further cover.

"Sweden and Switzerland virtually co-ordinated WWII and ensured it ran profitably for all sides. That's why they took such a huge part directing the safe emigration and trafficking of defeated parties to the Ratline, including providing passports, while preserving their money, which became their money.

Many of the Nazis ended up in New Zealand."
Transparency International is a money laundering outfit,
or more specifically a clearing and cleaning organisation for money laundering,
and war criminals laundered, including Nazis to New Zealand.

Transparency International provides ongoing cover for the funding organisation (Deloitte) promoting and bribing country officials (Auckland Mayor John Banks) in the least corrupt country (New Zealand) who provided little, minimal, or no data.

This is confirmed by the Auckland City Council Financial Officer Ian Ray (homosexual) who keeps three sets of books – one of them floating and able to be changed at a moments notice. Ian Ray is the only public official in the Western World who does this.

The bribe for all of this is €50,000–€250,000 per annum on the condition that TPI operates on outdated data . . . but really it is a convoluted whole lot more.

Making Nazi war criminals transparent to the rest of the world
is not a criteria for Transparency International's Corruption Perception Index.

Transparency International's CPI is the
'Translucent International's Conspiracy Phoney Index'.
They appear see-through, but close up, they're really opaque.

According to TPI, if we stop reporting Nazi war criminals, they are simply not perceived, and therefore not part of corruption. That's why world corruption is based on perception, with 99% of the data coming from foreign perception, and not from locals, and definitely not from Undercovers.

So when the UN's Food and Agriculture Organization (FAO) starves black children in exchange for child sex in a third of the countries it occupies and never leaves, you can be sure the old Nazis have got to the UN and World Bank* to include funding for a Corruption Perception Index that excludes Nazi foreign war criminals living abroad.

You can also be sure Nazis will name their adopted countries as the least corrupt – New Zealand, Denmark, Singapore, Sweden, Switzerland, Finland, Holland, Australia, Canada, Iceland, Norway, Hong Kong and Luxemburg.

So the CPI becomes a good indicator
of where Nazi/ Ustashi and other war criminals reside.
Let's test it.

Embarrassing Lack of Response to Nazis in NZ', 14 August 2008

"There was absolutely no political will to take legal action against the Nazi war criminals who emigrated to NZ in the late 1940s and early 1950s, posing as refugees fleeing communism.

"It is believed up to 40 wanted war criminals escaped to New Zealand following World War II and the Government's lack of action was an 'embarrassment', says a leading Nazi hunter.
"Dr Efraim Zuroff, Director of the Simon Wiesenthal Centre in Israel: 'New Zealand's response on this issue should be a source of embarrassment'.

"A Holocaust historian, Dr Zuroff founded the centre in 1986 which has tracked and identified more than 2,800 suspected Nazi war criminals. Many of those war criminals were discovered to have fled to Western democracies, and the centre has worked with countries to bring suspects to trial.

"In 1987, Canada passed legislation to enable prosecution of suspected Nazi war criminals and was followed by Australia in 1989, and Great Britain in 1991. New Zealand set up a two-person unit in 1991 to investigate allegations that perpetrators of war crimes settled in this country.

"The unit spent $190,000 investigating the claims in New Zealand and overseas, narrowing the suspected list from 46 to 17 known to be alive and living in the country.

"The Wiesenthal centre had supplied 42 of the 46 names. Fifteen were cleared and two were further investigated, with the unit finding it was 'possible' one of the suspects was involved in war crimes.

"The finding of the unit was presented by the then Attorney-General Paul East [2 Nov. 1990–1996/97 who was then made Minister of Defense, 1 March 1996–5 Dec. 1997].
"Attorney-General Paul East, 1992: 'We feel we've discharged our obligations to the international community in the steps we've taken and that we will now only respond if we are given something far more substantial than individual names'. [What else do you need?]
"Dr Zuroff: 'The centre tried to convince successive New Zealand governments to take legal action against suspected Nazis, but to no avail. New Zealand was the only Anglo-Saxon democracy which faced this problem and chose to ignore it. There was absolutely no political will to take legal action against the Nazi war criminals who emigrated to New Zealand in the late 1940s and early 1950s, posing as refugees fleeing communism.'

"During the 1980s and 1990s, Dr Zuroff researched the whereabouts of 40 suspected war criminals who are believed to have emigrated to New Zealand after World War II.

"Dr Zuroff visited New Zealand in February 2006 to promote Operation LAST CHANCE, which was a last attempt to find surviving Nazi war criminals: 'By the time that I found these people, many were no longer alive. But one who was alive and living in Auckland was Jonas Pukas, a Lithuanian who served in the 12th Lithuanian Auxiliary Police Battalion, which murdered tens of thousands of Jews in Lithuania and Belarus'."[17]

Police Undercover: "Jonas Pukas then died of Creutzfeldt-Jakob disease (CJD). When the medical profession found he'd died of it, they got all excited because they thought they were going to get funding to build a big flash lab. Instead, the coroner ruled 'It was a death totally by misadventure', and refused to find CJD as the reason. Pukas was believed to be imbibing (eating) Jew's brains at barbeques. This was risky behaviour that was indulged in by all Latvians in the Waffen SS. It is quite a common disease amongst the Ukranians of a certain age.

"Jonas Pukas children were raised by his eldest daughter, then the children were passed to somebody else who ended up baby farming them for money and passing them onto paedophiles. They instilled a terrible regime of controlled food in, and their bodily wastes out, in order to make sure the children stayed thin. The three children were kept ignorant and not educated in any useful way whatsoever. They were kept as little clones to be had sex with whenever there was money around to be had. When I told my bosses, and Internal Affairs, everybody totally ignored me. They claimed I had no credibility left."[18]

---

[17] 'Embarrassing Lack of Response to Nazis in NZ', 14 August 2008, Hamish, www.odt.co.nz.

[18] "At the time that all this was happening, I was being checked for psychiatric damage and having repeated treatment by scan because of internal head injuries the Police and Internal Affairs claimed I had not suffered. I reported these to my doctor when they happened, and I was honest that both my mother and subjects that I was investigating all used to hit me in the head. I have no doubt that eventually my head injuries will prove to have been gained over a long period of time. I have trouble with short-term memory. I have gaps in my memory that are like looking through a broken glass window, but I feel I will one day be vindicated . . . ah, I just remembered, one of them was a Latvian in the 10th SS – Mr. Vlafthke."

"Wayne Stringer has done New Zealand a service. The former policeman has shown there was good evidence that Nazi war criminals came to New Zealand after the war. He has scotched the myth that the Simon Wiesenthal Centre's list of suspected war criminals was vacuous and the inquiry a waste of time and money. There was serious evidence that Jonas Pukas – a Lithuanian who settled in New Zealand after the war – was involved in massacres of Jews. At least one other man appears to have served in the Latvian equivalent of the murder squad to which Pukas belonged. Stringer has set the historical record straight. We now know what the evidence was – and it is deeply disturbing."[19]

Shameful Truth Must be Told, 19 March 2006, Fairfax Media

"Some will say it is futile to continue chasing old men for crimes committed 60 years ago. This is a shallow and, it must be said, an inhuman view. Genocide does not disappear with the passage of the years. The six million dead have not merely drifted into oblivion. They are, as philosopher Claude Lanzmann once put it, the 'presence of an absence'. They are a multitude of dead souls who reproach us with their loss. They require us not merely to remember them, but to demand justice on their behalf. If we turn our backs on their appeal, we turn our backs on humanity, on pity, on decency.

"Genocide, as Stringer says, is still with us. His files remind us what genocide means. It means the reduction of other human beings to the level of animals, the necessary prelude to their mechanised slaughter. If our enemies are wolves and hyenas, we may kill them with impunity. That deep human habit, of bestialising and demonising the other, has not gone away. It led the 12th Lithuanian Police Battalion to crowd naked women and children into the pits and butcher them like cattle. Pukas claimed, unconvincingly, to have not taken part in those massacres. His vivid description of the killing – the Jews 'screamed like geese' – testifies eloquently against him.

"A lack of witnesses prevented his case going to court. But if New Zealand had adopted the American model – of denaturalisation and deportation of immigrants who lied to the authorities – Pukas would have had to face at least a form of justice. Some will say the revelations should have been kept quiet to avoid embarrassment and trouble to his family. It is true that Pukas' children and grandchildren are victims in all this. A shocking wave of ugliness has broken over them, years after Pukas' death. They deserve, and they have, our sympathy. But it is also true that history demands that the truth about Pukas be told.

"Politicians in nearly all countries have been reluctant to pursue alleged war criminals, and unwilling to prosecute them when they were found. Australia shut its special investigations unit prematurely for reasons of odious expediency and 'unnecessary' expense. This meant that one well-founded case, against a former member of the Latvian Police battalion, was abandoned, and the man died untroubled by the authorities. But the issue refuses to go away. The Wiesenthal Centre's Operation Last Chance has revealed two promising Australian cases now the subject of extradition proceedings. And hundreds of other cases are under investigation around the world. Not all the old murderers have died, despite what many think. Not all hope for justice has died.

"Attorney-General Paul East seemed relieved when the Crown Law Office advised him in 1992 that no prosecutions could be brought. Amazingly, the office even claimed there was not 'prima facie' evidence of guilt. Pukas' case is stuffed with such evidence. In the event, New Zealand missed the opportunity to do anything about the suspected murderers in our midst. That is a dreadful loss. Stringer, though, has shown us how serious the case was and why it should not be forgotten. For that, we are all in his debt."[20]

Spymaster: "Attorney-General Paul East was then placed under investigation for corruption. On a clear day you can hear him barking on the lawn."

---

[19] *SundayStar Times.*

[20] *'Shameful truth must be told'*, www. operationlastchance. org/LATVIA_47-14.htm, 9 March 2006.

World War II Nazis living in Auckland in the 1980s

Internal Affairs Field Agent: "Around 1982/83, the Nazi SS in Auckland would get their hair cut at Karls Mens Hairdressers at 130 Valley Road in Mt Eden (Ph 630-6780), about 40 metres from Dominion Road and 200 metres from Helen Clark's house at 4 Cromwell St, Mt Eden. The Nazis used to chat at Karls hairdressers, and in a house just up the road where they sang Deutschland über alles[21] and the Horst-Wessel-lied.[22]

"During WWII, General Freyberg pulled this guy out of the ranks of the Intelligence Corp in Italy and told him to 'watch the Krauts like a hawk and don't ever take your eyes off them until you croak'. So that's what he did. I think his name was Norm. The 21 Battalion Association advised me to go and see him. He also knew the Colonel of 22 Battalion. He was a stroppy old bastard. For two pins he would have lined up a snatch squad. A driver from the 21 Battalion knew my father. His name was Vic. They used to go on car thieving expeditions and pinch King Farouk's blood red Cord, or Duesenberg, and drag them around Port Said or Cairo and get all the MPs chasing them and lead them out of town.

"I went with this old guy to this house in Mt Eden, just up from Karls hairdressers and we hid in the basement recording. You could hear the SS drinking out of steins, carousing above in German, eating original deutsche food, and singing the German National anthem and the Nazi Party anthem."

Author: "I remember hearing that. I used to walk around that area as a university student (1980–85), but it was really hard to locate exactly where the sound was coming from. I remember some pedestrian passing it off as 'a recording by a crazed New Zealander who got their wires crossed in WWII'. I see now that that was one of their's on the street."

Internal Affairs Field Agent: "The old guy carried a brown leather briefcase that disguised his old reel-to-reel recorder. He pulled out microphones already hidden behind 4x2 timber. We stayed under the SS house for about three hours. He told me later that he had virtually every word the Nazi SS had spoken to each other during any of their gatherings and these were stored in bookcases under his house.

---

[21] **Deutschland über alles | German National anthem since 1922**: "*Germany, Germany above all, Above all in the world, When, for protection and defence, it always takes a brotherly stand together. From the Meuse to the Memel, From the Adige to the Belt, Germany, Germany above everything, Above everything in the world . . . German women, German loyalty, German wine and German song Shall retain in the world Their old beautiful chime And inspire us to noble deeds During all of our life. German women, German loyalty, German wine and German song! . . . Unity and justice and freedom For the German fatherland! For these let us all strive Brotherly with heart and hand! Unity and justice and freedom Are the pledge of fortune; Flourish in this fortune's blessing, Flourish, German fatherland*" . . . but in German.

[22] **Horst-Wessles-lied | 'Raise the flag' ballad | Nazi Party anthem 1933–45**: "*The flag high! The ranks tightly closed! Stormtrooper marches with a calm, firm pace. Comrades whom the Red Front and reactionaries shot dead March in spirit within our ranks . . . Clear the streets for the brown battalions, Clear the streets for the stormtroopers! Already millions look with hope to the swastika The day of freedom and bread is dawning! . . . Rollcall has sounded for the last time We are all prepared for the fight! Soon Hitler's flag will fly over the barricades. Our servitude will not last much longer now! . . . The flag high! The ranks tightly closed! Stormtrooper marches with a calm, firm pace. Comrades whom the Red Front and reactionaries shot dead March in spirit within our ranks*" . . . but in German. Horst Ludwig Wessel (1907–30) was a pimp who was murdered by a communist, so they made a posthumous hero out of him.

"A whole U-boat company defected and came ashore in New Zealand, then disappeared into a local Maori tribe, usually via the sawmill. They pulled the hole in after themselves and became hard to find.

The son of a Nazi came down from up north and murdered an Indian liquor store owner with a knife. After his sentencing the *Herald* printed his claim to German heritage and how it came about. There's a huge number of Germans up north. Not all of them are from WWII. Some of them are from before. A disproportionate number of second generation Nazi and Ustashi make it onto TV here. 'The Lion Man' Craig Busch is the son of a German.

"The Whermacht (German Army) weren't organised and didn't all belong to groups and clubs. Every single one of them thought they were the only ones in Auckland.

"The SS outnumbered the Whermacht, and in Auckland the Whermacht were really hard-bitten bastards. They'd help you move timber around your house, but then ask you to do the same for them. They were ordinary Army guys, not necessarily Nazis.

"The SS and the Whermacht hated each other's guts and if a Whermacht went into Karls hairdressers to get his haircut, he'd be told to piss off in short order. So the Nazi SS in Auckland even closed ranks against other Germans, and other German military.

"The old fulla gave me a couple of Luftwaffe paratroopers backpacks saying: 'I have no further use for them'. The last time I remember seeing him was a couple of years later, so I just assumed he'd died. He was a good old Kiwi bloke and lived up to exactly what General Freyberg demanded of him. He didn't take his eyes off the Krauts even though his government had lifted its arse in the air to be sodomised by Germans on almost a daily basis. He really did watch them like a hawk.

"Like a lot of things I'd discovered, Internal Affairs just didn't want to know and subsequently fired me. The Labour Government refused to look at them and claimed there were no Nazi war criminals in the whole of New Zealand. This was also backed up by Labour's Mike Moore who was married to one of their daughters (presenter on a children's TV programme) and made Prime Minister to step up the cover-up."

NAZI GETAWAY

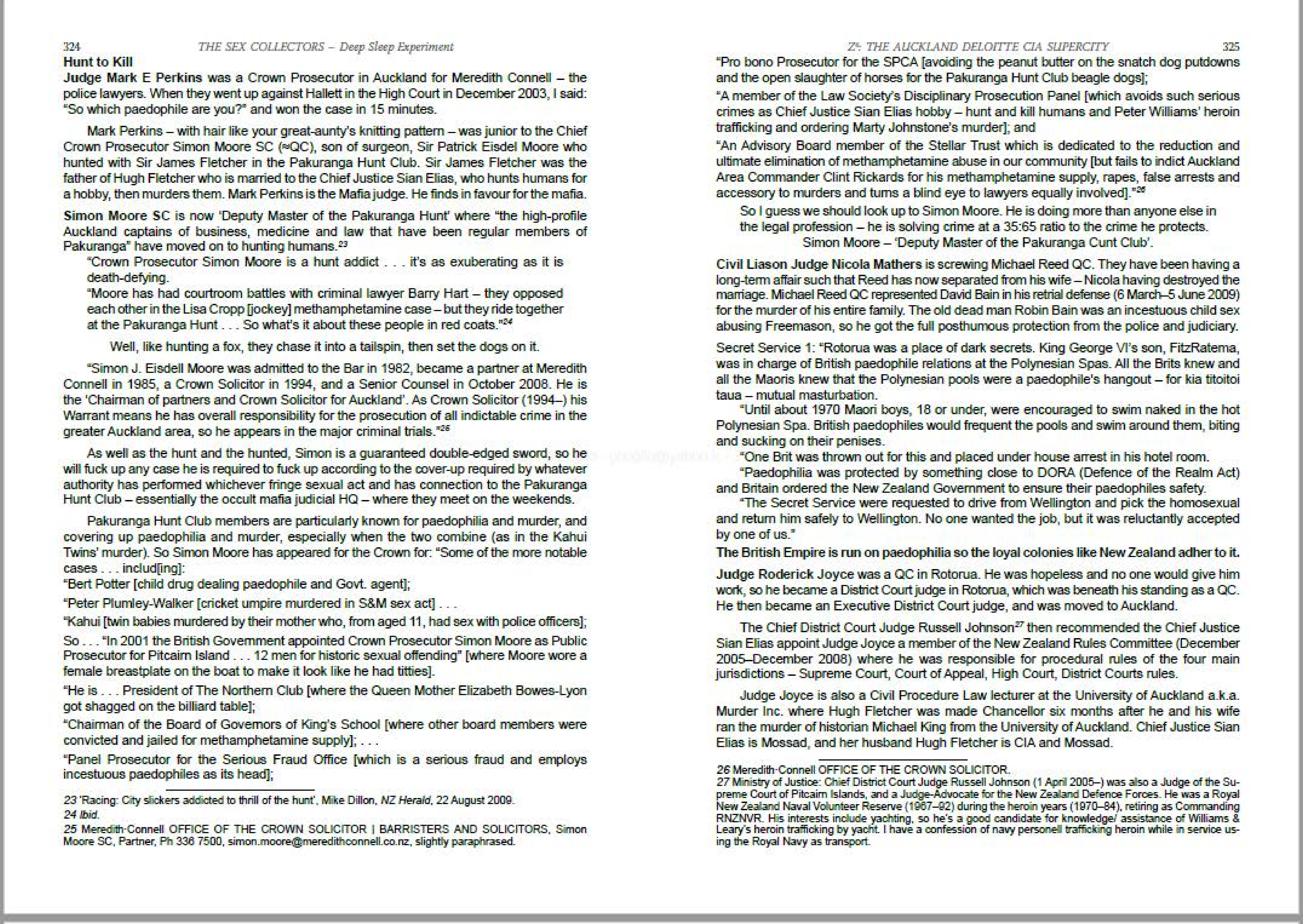

Hunt to Kill

Judge Mark E Perkins was a Crown Prosecutor in Auckland for Meredith Connell – the police lawyers. When they went up against Hallett in the High Court in December 2003, I said: "So which paedophile are you?" and won the case in 15 minutes.

Mark Perkins – with hair like your great-aunty's knitting pattern – was junior to the Chief Crown Prosecutor Simon Moore SC (≈QC), son of surgeon, Sir Patrick Eisdel Moore who hunted with Sir James Fletcher in the Pakuranga Hunt Club. Sir James Fletcher was the father of Hugh Fletcher who is married to the Chief Justice Sian Elias, who hunts humans for a hobby, then murders them. Mark Perkins is the Mafia judge. He finds in favour for the mafia.

Simon Moore SC is now 'Deputy Master of the Pakuranga Hunt' where "the high-profile Auckland captains of business, medicine and law that have been regular members of Pakuranga" have moved on to hunting humans.[23]

> "Crown Prosecutor Simon Moore is a hunt addict . . . it's as exuberating as it is death-defying.
>
> "Moore has had courtroom battles with criminal lawyer Barry Hart – they opposed each other in the Lisa Cropp [jockey] methamphetamine case – but they ride together at the Pakuranga Hunt . . . So what's it about these people in red coats."[24]

Well, like hunting a fox, they chase it into a tailspin, then set the dogs on it.

"Simon J. Eisdell Moore was admitted to the Bar in 1982, became a partner at Meredith Connell in 1985, a Crown Solicitor in 1994, and a Senior Counsel in October 2008. He is the 'Chairman of partners and Crown Solicitor for Auckland'. As Crown Solicitor (1994–) his Warrant means he has overall responsibility for the prosecution of all indictable crime in the greater Auckland area, so he appears in the major criminal trials."[25]

As well as the hunt and the hunted, Simon is a guaranteed double-edged sword, so he will fuck up any case he is required to fuck up according to the cover-up required by whatever authority has performed whichever fringe sexual act and has connection to the Pakuranga Hunt Club – essentially the occult mafia judicial HQ – where they meet on the weekends.

Pakuranga Hunt Club members are particularly known for paedophilia and murder, and covering up paedophilia and murder, especially when the two combine (as in the Kahui Twins' murder). So Simon Moore has appeared for the Crown for: "Some of the more notable cases . . . includ[ing]:

"Bert Potter [child drug dealing paedophile and Govt. agent];

"Peter Plumley-Walker [cricket umpire murdered in S&M sex act] . . .

"Kahui [twin babies murdered by their mother who, from aged 11, had sex with police officers];

So . . . "In 2001 the British Government appointed Crown Prosecutor Simon Moore as Public Prosecutor for Pitcairn Island . . . 12 men for historic sexual offending" [where Moore wore a female breastplate on the boat to make it look like he had titties].

"He is . . . President of The Northern Club [where the Queen Mother Elizabeth Bowes-Lyon got shagged on the billiard table];

"Chairman of the Board of Governors of King's School [where other board members were convicted and jailed for methamphetamine supply]; . . .

"Panel Prosecutor for the Serious Fraud Office [which is a serious fraud and employs incestuous paedophiles as its head];

---

[23] 'Racing: City slickers addicted to thrill of the hunt', Mike Dillon, *NZ Herald*, 22 August 2009.

[24] *Ibid.*

[25] Meredith·Connell OFFICE OF THE CROWN SOLICITOR | BARRISTERS AND SOLICITORS, Simon Moore SC, Partner, Ph 336 7500, simon.moore@meredithconnell.co.nz, slightly paraphrased.

"Pro bono Prosecutor for the SPCA [avoiding the peanut butter on the snatch dog putdowns and the open slaughter of horses for the Pakuranga Hunt Club beagle dogs];

"A member of the Law Society's Disciplinary Prosecution Panel [which avoids such serious crimes as Chief Justice Sian Elias hobby – hunt and kill humans and Peter Williams' heroin trafficking and ordering Marty Johnstone's murder]; and

"An Advisory Board member of the Stellar Trust which is dedicated to the reduction and ultimate elimination of methamphetamine abuse in our community [but fails to indict Auckland Area Commander Clint Rickards for his methamphetamine supply, rapes, false arrests and accessory to murders and turns a blind eye to lawyers equally involved]."[26]

> So I guess we should look up to Simon Moore. He is doing more than anyone else in the legal profession – he is solving crime at a 35:65 ratio to the crime he protects.
>
> Simon Moore – 'Deputy Master of the Pakuranga Cunt Club'.

Civil Liason Judge Nicola Mathers is screwing Michael Reed QC. They have been having a long-term affair such that Reed has now separated from his wife – Nicola having destroyed the marriage. Michael Reed QC represented David Bain in his retrial defense (6 March–5 June 2009) for the murder of his entire family. The old dead man Robin Bain was an incestuous child sex abusing Freemason, so he got the full posthumous protection from the police and judiciary.

Secret Service 1: "Rotorua was a place of dark secrets. King George VI's son, FitzRatema, was in charge of British paedophile relations at the Polynesian Spas. All the Brits knew and all the Maoris knew that the Polynesian pools were a paedophile's hangout – for kia titoitoi taua – mutual masturbation.

"Until about 1970 Maori boys, 18 or under, were encouraged to swim naked in the hot Polynesian Spa. British paedophiles would frequent the pools and swim around them, biting and sucking on their penises.

"One Brit was thrown out for this and placed under house arrest in his hotel room.

"Paedophilia was protected by something close to DORA (Defence of the Realm Act) and Britain ordered the New Zealand Government to ensure their paedophiles safety.

"The Secret Service were requested to drive from Wellington and pick the homosexual and return him safely to Wellington. No one wanted the job, but it was reluctantly accepted by one of us."

The British Empire is run on paedophilia so the loyal colonies like New Zealand adher to it.

Judge Roderick Joyce was a QC in Rotorua. He was hopeless and no one would give him work, so he became a District Court judge in Rotorua, which was beneath his standing as a QC. He then became an Executive District Court judge, and was moved to Auckland.

The Chief District Court Judge Russell Johnson[27] then recommended the Chief Justice Sian Elias appoint Judge Joyce a member of the New Zealand Rules Committee (December 2005–December 2008) where he was responsible for procedural rules of the four main jurisdictions – Supreme Court, Court of Appeal, High Court, District Courts rules.

Judge Joyce is also a Civil Procedure Law lecturer at the University of Auckland a.k.a. Murder Inc. where Hugh Fletcher was made Chancellor six months after he and his wife ran the murder of historian Michael King from the University of Auckland. Chief Justice Sian Elias is Mossad, and her husband Hugh Fletcher is CIA and Mossad.

---

[26] Meredith·Connell OFFICE OF THE CROWN SOLICITOR.

[27] Ministry of Justice: Chief District Court Judge Russell Johnson (1 April 2005–) was also a Judge of the Supreme Court of Pitcairn Islands, and a Judge-Advocate for the New Zealand Defence Forces. He was a Royal New Zealand Naval Volunteer Reserve (1967–92) during the heroin years (1970–84), retiring as Commanding RNZNVR. His interests include yachting, so he's a good candidate for knowledge/ assistance of Williams & Leary's heroin trafficking by yacht. I have a confession of navy personell trafficking heroin while in service using the Royal Navy as transport.

The CIA now cites the University of Auckland as the most CIA university outside America.

Ex-Act MP (2002–05) Deborah Coddington (b. 1953), well her mother (b. 1920) was a do-gooder who worked in hospices around Rotorua and Judge Roderick Joyce QC's mother was one of her patients. After Roderick Joyce moved to Auckland he never visited her, treated her abominably in all relations, and tried to sell her house from under her nose.

Even to his mother, Judge Roderick Joyce is a cunt.

Deborah Coddington went on to marry Wellington lawyer, Colin Carruthers. Judicial secrets are often married into silence.

Judge Roderick Joyce finally made it to the news, after decades of faux promotion, in February 2006, when he reprimanded members of his own jury for researching certain terms on the internet including 'burden of proof' and 'beyond reasonable doubt'. The faux intellectual Joyce prefers his own definitions as narrow as possible.

Paedophile-minders who are judges, always keep the definitions and court inclusion as narrow as possible to avoid embarrassing information surfacing.

MI-6: "Judge Roderick Joyce QC views himself as an intellectual and has set up his chambers as a gentleman's club – open books on stands and crystal ware et cetera. He is totally up himself, but really he's a cunt" . . . in both the modern day and Middle English definitions of the word.

Middle English: "Cunt": 'Less than 26 acres, less than two oxen, or less than two oxen drivers'. Land that is uneconomic to farm, can't be farmed, or is framed by an incapable cunt'.

Modern Day: "Cunt": 'A mind that cannot be developed to include the wider picture'.

"Judge Roderick Joyce Q.Cunt": 'Unemployable faux-intellectual who sells his house from under his ailing mother's nose'. Suspected dedicated paedophile minder for British ex-pats at Rotorua's Edwardian Bath House (named after the incestuous child sex abuser King Edward VII), and subsequent spas around Rotorua, but especially the Polynesian Spa.

Judge Roderick Joyce is a dedicated paedophile-minder.
Pehaps he should join the Pakuranga Cunt Club.

Judge Roderick Joyce will avoid the big picture at any cost to protect the agenda of those who have promoted him. As such, he is generally considered a cunt by his mother, his mother's caregiver, lawyers, other judges, and those who present the big picture in front of him.

Karen Soich (Peter Williams junior lawyer) still keeps all of her stuff from her relationship with Terry Clark. She has a temperature/ humidity-controlled basement with locked door. Inside are all the fur coats Terry Clark gave her, and all her memorabilia from those times. She shows these to selected people like the female TV personalities she has ménage à trois with.

Peter Williams' *Fidelis* was called 'The Crowsnest' because so many criminals were on board. While sailing *Fidelis* under the Auckland Harbour Bridge Williams lost the top 7 foot off his mast, so the place for the crowsnest was missing, but in all other ways it was there. *Fidelis* never recovered until Nigel Stoke bought it in 1994.

On 11 September 2009 Minute, in Greg Hallett v. Peter 'Heroin' Williams QC, Judge Roderick Joyce threw out Hallett's Discovery request on PAWQC's trade and financial transactions and relationship with his client/ heroin trafficker, Terry Clark.

To do this, Judge Joyce researched back 190 years
to rule that anything embarrassing to the Court
would render the case thrown out.

I guess that means there is no chance of
Judge 'Paedophile-Minding Heroin-Protector' Roderick Gang Member Joyce
having the above infomation heard . . .
because it is so embarrassing and so interlinked.[28]

We should remember that a gang is three or more people
involved in a crime of four years or more.
The membership can be roving.
That makes the New Zealand Judiciary a gang.

Those involved in this gang include:
Judge Stevens who suppressed *The Sex Collectors*; Judge Mark Perkins and his former boss Chief Crown Prosecutor Simon Moore SC; Civil Liason Judge Nicola Mathers and her secret sex partner Michael Reed QC; Judge Roderick Joyce and his nominator Chief District Court Judge Russell Johnson and apppointer Chief Justice Sian Elias and her husband, University of Auckland Chancellor Hugh Fletcher; Peter Williams QC and his junior lawyer Karen Soich; and the Pakuranga Hunt Club and Fletcher's links to Rockefeller and HAARP . . . all of which amounts to the 'Pakuranga Cunt Club' hunting and killing those targets placed in front of them.

New Zealand loves a criminal turned lawyer, a lawyer involved in crime, a criminal lawyer, a criminal lawyer who defends the stitched-up patsy while the real murderer is ignored, or a lawyer who escapes conviction, is promoted, then gets their own law practice shifting from supply into the retail areas of the same drugs.

So after Karen Soich was the watchdog for the New Zealand financial syndicate that backed the heroin trafficker Terry Clark and made lots of New Zealanders notable, wealthy, charitable, then respectable, Karen Soich began her own law practice in 1991 and became involved in film, TV and music – all industries involved in recreational drugs – in the areas of copyright, trade marks, contracts, publishing, merchandising, distribution, advertising, sponsorship, licensing, employment and litigation . . . and became . . . a founding member of WIFT (Women in Film & Television) – essentially a bisexual cover for fist-fuckers of female politicians, and WIFT Executive and Governance (1994–2009); President of the NZ Producers and Directors Association; shareholding director of Screentime Communicado; and President of Screen Producers and Directors Association of NZ (SPADA) 2000–01.

Karen Soich acts for corporations and individuals representing their interests in all the areas that Terry Clark had his heroin trafficking business – New Zealand, Australia, the UK (and the US). She can be contacted at Ph 3765739, M 021435511, ksoich@extra.co.nz.

> "Hi, Karen, I would like contracts, merchandising, distribution, advertising, sponsorship, and licensing to employ New Zealand bisexual female Producers and Directors to traffick drugs through the industry and I would like copyright, trade marks, litigation cover for this."

And this is pretty much exactly what has happened, so much so that when TVNZ has its parties, waitresses bring out the drugs on silver trays. Well, at least Karen Soich contributed to culture. The problem is, it killed a lot of people.

The Pakuranga Hunt Club at 27 Linwood Road, Rd 1, Karaka, South Auckland is 80% blurred on Google Earth; 25 km north is Halfmoon Bay. The two connect using the back roads.

The people involved in both overlap, and this includes contract murders and protection of the killer. If the killer is caught, it's on a catch and release basis. Generally, anyone with outside knowledge of the contract killing and the identity of the killer is set up for murder, drugs, or to be killed. This is how the Pakuranga Hunt Club operates.

---

[28] After this was written, Judge Roderick Joyce recused himself off my case on 11 December 2009.

It's a high-level organised crime mafia operation that involves all government departments with instructions coming as commands from the highest levels.

Spymaster, 30 October 2009: "Around 2001 I was asked to stake out a house in Halfmoon Bay. It was about 2000 square feet and looked for-all-the-world like it had been dressed up for orgies because it had no windows and no doors. You couldn't see any entrance or exit. There were around 150 cars outside, all rich cars and highly polished. Everybody was there. Nobody appeared or went and they stayed until around 6 in the morning. I was getting ready for a long stay and called my boss from a callbox and said: 'It looked like the house had been set up for an orgy . . . I'm at this house in Halfmoon Bay.'

"And he said: 'Get out of there'.

"The cops then rung me back and said: 'Get out of there'.

"So I jumped in my 2 litre Sigma Stationwagon and headed back to Auckland.

"I was reporting to police who may have been working to Internal Affairs rules. I was looking for a guy who was on the run from homicide charges. After he surrended, I discovered the police let him out, and had organised his escape.

"I became more convinced that the information I was given, to go to that location, was crook, and was aimed at getting me arrested. Within a week, I had been interrogated by the Drug Squad for supposedly crashing one of their surveillance scenes, but I came to the conclusion that all I would have done was driven past their surveillance team, and they used it as an excuse to brow-beat me into giving up what I was working on.

"It got so intense that I gave them the name of my boss and said: 'Go and chew on his arse'. And they left me completely alone.

"Just before the homicide guy turned up, they tried to send me to Tonga and announced to me that they were 'going to dress me up as a New Zealand gun-runner because all my background suggested that'. The name of the Island was Vau, or Vaea [Vava'u Island group].

"I was at pains not to go because the Crown Prince would see right through me and have me killed.

"My bosses said: 'No. We'll still send you. You'll be right. She'll be jake in the morning mate'.

"So I got hold of ex-Foreign Affairs in a way that made them believe I was their informant and they crunched the whole business.

"Then my bosses came back and said: 'Those External Affairs cunts thought you might stand on somebody's toes, so they cancelled it. And we told them "He won't live long enough to stand on anybody's toes", but it seems like you're off the hook.'

"About three years later they rang up and said: 'You little cunt you narced on yourself. We owe you big time for that.'

"Whereupon I told them: 'I had an obligation to tell the truth'.

"And they said: 'But you saved yourself'.

And I just said: 'That was just one of the minor repercussions along the way. That was the furtherest thing from my mind.'

"Then, about another two years after that, they rung up and said: 'Oh you told us the truth, the whole truth, and you're very truthful, and we're sorry for doubting you, and we're totally gob-smacked that you told us the truth and have kept on telling us the truth.'

"I assumed they were on the piss so I asked for gas money. Then they actually paid me $800, which I'd long given up on and said: 'Go and have a snarl up on this you little cunt'.

"The other thing they said was: 'They'll be a ho ho ho going down, but it won't be us.'

"I never found out what that meant."

The members of the Pakuranga Hunt Club are gang
involved in crimes of four years or more.

. . . ho ho ho . . .

Santa's $40 million bridge jump

Auckland City Council financial policy – fatten up and jump over a cliff.

I WANT YOU
TO SPEND A LOT
ON YOUR COUNCIL RATES
TO PROVE YOU LOVE YOUR FAMILY
Pierre Bourgeault - www.noistar.com

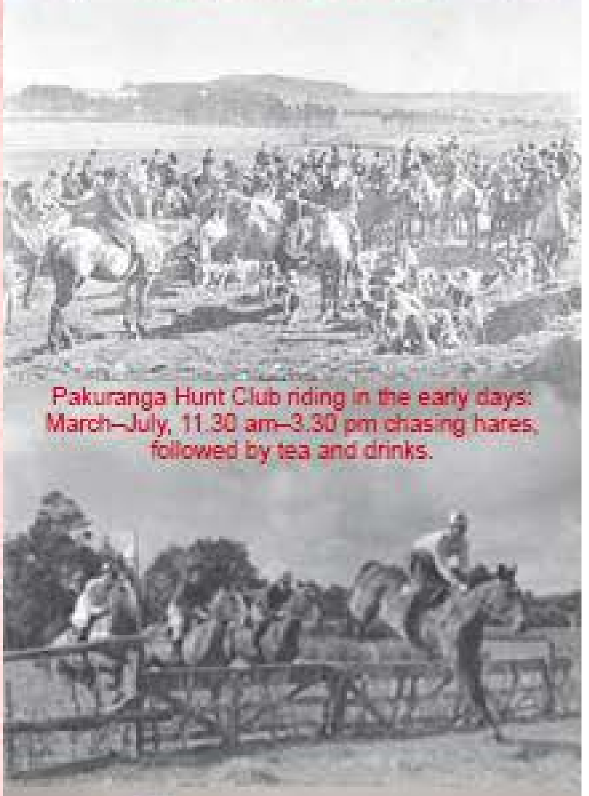

Pakuranga Hunt Club riding in the early days: March–July, 11.30 am–3.30 pm chasing hares, followed by tea and drinks.

Angus (drunk in nappies); Sir James (d. 2007); Jim (family accountant murdered in 1993); and Hugh Fletcher . . . in 1980.

Pakuranga Hunt Club on Roseneath Rd up to August 2009.

Pakuranga Hunt mother beagle.

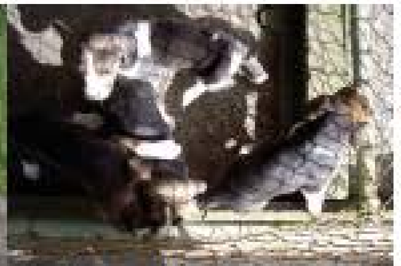

Pakuranga Hunt beagle pups.

Pakuranga Hunt Club entrance and house from August 2009, 100 metres west of Roseneath Road, Karaka. Master: Ivan Bridge (09) 2948134; Hunt Secretary: Marie M 0211709131; $280 annual fee; 530 members.

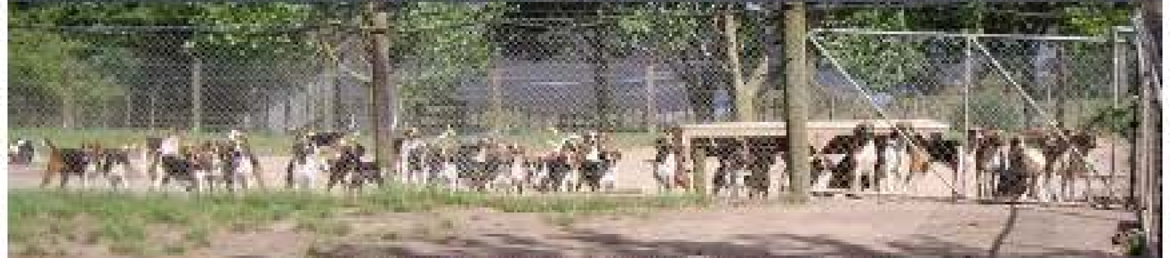

Pakuranga Hunt Club beagles – another 12 bred each year.

Pakuranga Hunt Club beagles eat the old horses slaughtered outside . . . It's a country life.
Simon Moore SC: 'As Pro bono Prosecutor for the SPCA, Panel Prosecutor for the Serious Fraud Office, and member of the Law Society's Disciplinary Prosecution Panel, I have no problem with this'.

KAREN SOICH LLB,
INTELLECTUAL PROPERTY • ENT
services

Karen Soich (heroin financial syndicate & murder);
Michael Reed QC (affair with Judge Nicola Mathers); &
Simon Moore SC (Crown Solicitor for illegal cover-ups & horse slaughter).

WHAT DID YOU SAY?
"I'm the son of a Knight."

Blood Farming

Spymaster: "Just down the road from the Pakuranga Hunt is the Waiuku Blood Farm. They got permission to shoot anyone who went on the property and even had a sign:

"**UNAUTHORISED PERSONELL WILL BE TREATED WITH EXTREME UNCTION**".

"Horse tranquilisers were originally shot out of a rifle into the horse. Criminals hired to destroy horses were often drunk on the job and would botch it, so pharmacists were engaged to develop a simpler method of killing a horse. This involved a hand-held horse sedative jabbed up under the horses jaw in the direction of the eyes, but the crims even botched this up.

"A vet went to visit to enquire as to what was going on at the blood farm and he was given a horse sedative, induced by mouth, then transported and found dead in his home. People who didn't know him then turned up at the Coroner's Inquest and claimed "he was clinically depressed". They furnished evidence to the Coroner to confirmed this, apparently.

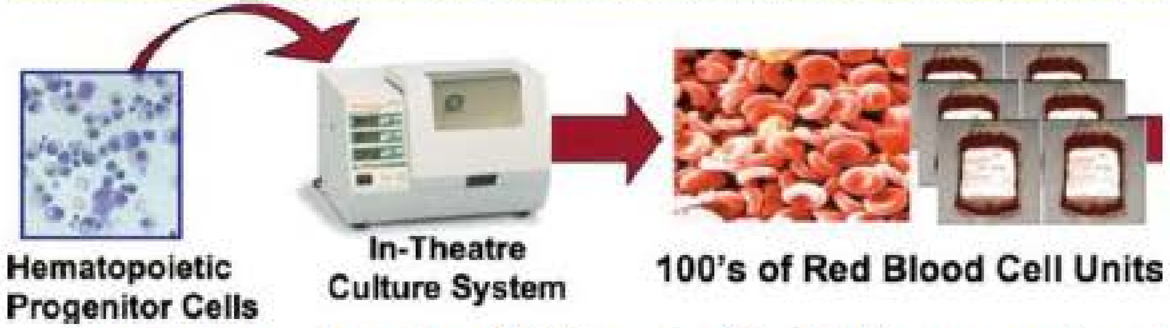
Hematopoietic Progenitor Cells
In-Theatre Culture System
100's of Red Blood Cell Units

"I used to have meetings with an SPCA Inspector. We started to compare notes and developed several subjects – who I had information on, she had similar sort of information on, but from a different point of view. She was frustrated about cases not going anywhere and concluded that her bosses were bent. I suspected the same about my own.

"We were saying at the time that dog behaviour could be used against its owner if it displayed certain characteristics. The police had postulated this view in relation to the Dog Tape Affair.[29] The common attitude of the uniform police who drove around in squad cars with WANTED pooches taped to the dashboard, was that the whole affair was very very 'Close to Home' and that the dogs, even if caught, would be reluctant to swear a complaint. They treated the whole thing with animals as a complete joke.

"I regarded it more seriously, but as I was in a minority of one, I had to face up to the fact that there wasn't much more I could do, so we never actually got to try it out as so many of the glitterati were having sex with their animals. Then all of a sudden the female SPCA Inspector cancelled because she had been followed to a meeting and her bosses had a cow about it. I can only conclude that she was under suspicion before our meetings began.

"TV presenter from 1962 to 2001, Angela D'Audney asked the SPCA if they would put her dogs down for free. After I got involved, she stopped talking to the SPCA and took them to a private veterinary practitioner and had them destroyed. I suspected this was all connected."

Thoroughbred horse blood was tested on Blacks during WWII (and after) at Fort Leavenworth in Kansas. Most who went in never came out. It has been suggested that thoroughbred horse blood is required in the cloning of DNA from mummies, with the blood being used in the grandmother prior to birth, the mother soon after she was born, again just prior to birth, and in the child once born. Of course, the blood had to be processed first.

Samoa Tsunami, 29 September 2009.
8.3 Mw submarine earthquake at 6.48 am.
First wave came at 7.10 am.
Video stills are of the second wave at 7.12 am.

---

[29] *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide*, 2007, p. 258–60.

After the case with Peter Williams QC on 26 August 2009 in the Auckland District Court in which Judge Roderick Joyce refused Hallett's written request for discovery on Williams relationship with heroin trafficker and murderer, Terry Clark, I was sitting outside Bolliwood restaurant on Ponsonby Road having lunch. The head of the Melbourne Mafia then walked passed. I'd never met him before, but he stopped to chat and knew everything about my case with Williams. He came back after I'd finished eating and we met at the centreline in the middle of Ponsonby Road.

We got to discussing Williams – the Melbourne Mafia complaining that: "Williams was sniffing around Melbourne during the heroin days in the '70s and he was one of only a few who weren't charged". He then introduced me to his debt collector and they offered to collect a debt for me. I was reluctant as this client was Yakuza, involved in slavery and drugs, and was set up to be my non-paying client by Williams. I know this because Williams tried to use him as a witness, then the Yakuza used the same defense as Williams – that I had written a book, *New Zealand – A Blackmailers' Guide*, and it had said things about their list of notables – complete with the same spelling mistakes, a photocopy of Williams' defense, with one paragraph removed, as supplied by Chris Reed LIB – Williams' lawyer.

So I didn't go with the debt collector. The Melbourne Mafia then said: "I know Williams. Would you like me to talk to him?" I replied: "Well, you can if you like, but I don't think it will do any good." What I didn't know at the time was that Peter Williams QC was the lawyer for the Melbourne Mafia.

Anyway, the next day, the Melbourne Mafia went around to see Peter Williams QC and offered to "dump his body in the Auckland Harbour". Peter Williams then placed his hands on his shoulders and said emphatically: "If you kill Hallett, it will come straight back to me". That was on 27 August 2009.

The theory and technology for creating a tsunami was developed off the Whangaparaoa Peninsula during WWII and has been followed by New Zealand saboteurs ever since.

Peter Williams QC has been going around to judges trying to rig the architecture case against me where he is a $7,500 debtor. Williams is so tight, and so evil, and so connected to drug traffickers and contract killing, and so imbued in slavery, that he will kill for that amount.

I can only assume that Peter Williams QC spoke with other QC and SC including Chief Crown Prosecutor Simon Moore SC, Judge Joyce QC, Chief District Court Judge Johnson and Chief Justice Sian Elias – fellow murderer. This began to involve the weekend mafia – the Pakuranga Hunt Club – who specialise in hunting people into some form of extinction.

A month later, on 29 September 2009, my daughter was holidaying in Samoa in a fale over the beach. It had been the school kids jobs to check for tsunami before school. At 7.08 am this Samoan 16-year-old ran up and down the beach yelling, "TSUNAMI TSUNAMI", so the four of them up and ran, running up the beach, through Coconut Beach Club Resort, then looked left and looked right to a 14-foot high wave travelling 40 mph either side . . . swamp.

She was pinned against the side of a blue car with all the detrius ramming at her back, scratching, piercing. Under for 30 seconds she thought: "SO THIS IS HOW I'M GOING TO DIE", relaxed into death, then popped up. Without glasses, she could only see one foot in front, made out a pile of floating debris, swam for it, and climbed on top, naked. As the first wave receded, someone yelled: "Go for the coconut tree", so she clambered up on the seaward side, then the land side, then the second wave hit, not nearly as big as the first. It was all over in two minutes.

She's scarred for life, but still, she is my daughter Peter, and worth more than $7,500 and your now non-existent pride.

Coconut Resort fales over the beach.

New Zealand Defence Force aerial photo after the tsunami.
Their plane broke down on the way and they arrived four days late.
A day later (Day 5) and Kiwis would have had their arms amuputated.

Coconut Beach Club Resort after the tsunami
– all that was left.

Daughter's pink suitcase
↓

NATIONAL
TSUNAMI MEMORIAL SERVICE

TO HONOUR ALL WHO LOST THEIR LIVES
IN THE SEPTEMBER 2009 SOUTH PACIFIC TSUNAMI

AUCKLAND CATHEDRAL OF THE HOLY TRINITY
SUNDAY 8 NOVEMBER 2009 AT 4.00PM

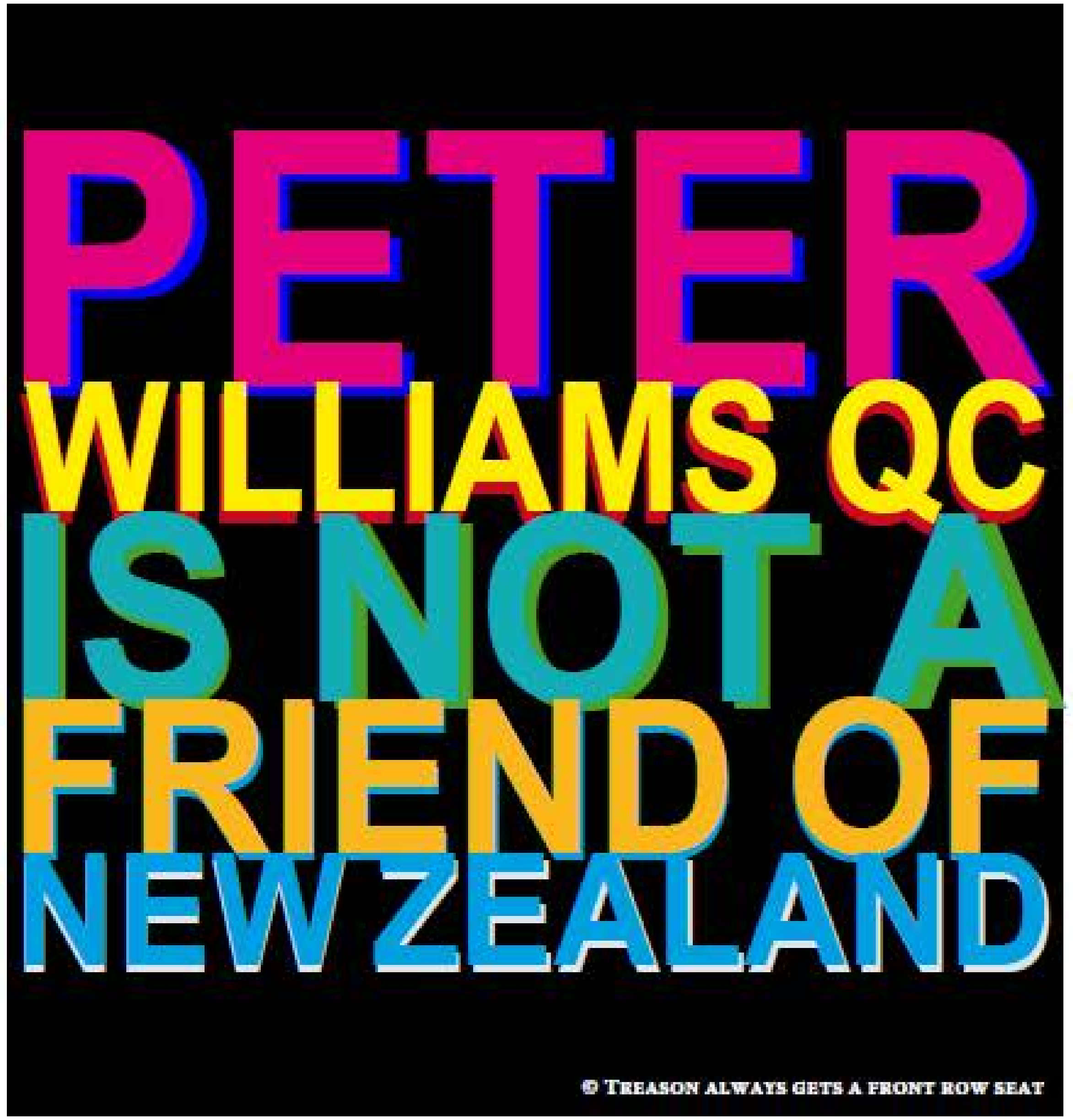
PETER
WILLIAMS QC
IS NOT A
FRIEND OF
NEW ZEALAND
© Treason always gets a front row seat

Manmade Earthquakes and Tsunamis

Current Science

According to Scalar Scientist Tom Bearden, earthquake and volcano activity is being caused by the new scalar electromagnetic superweapons called "Longitudinal Wave Interferometers," or "Tesla Howizters."[1]

The covert development of these devices, in at least 10 countries, began decades ago, especially in Russia, where their scientists were more able to think outside the box of conventional electromagnetic theory. Certain equations were discarded to "make things simpler" and it was Scalar Electromagnetics that completed the theory.

Space is not a vaccum, but an ocean of energy in incredible abundance that can change the world for good, or be made into fantastic weapons.

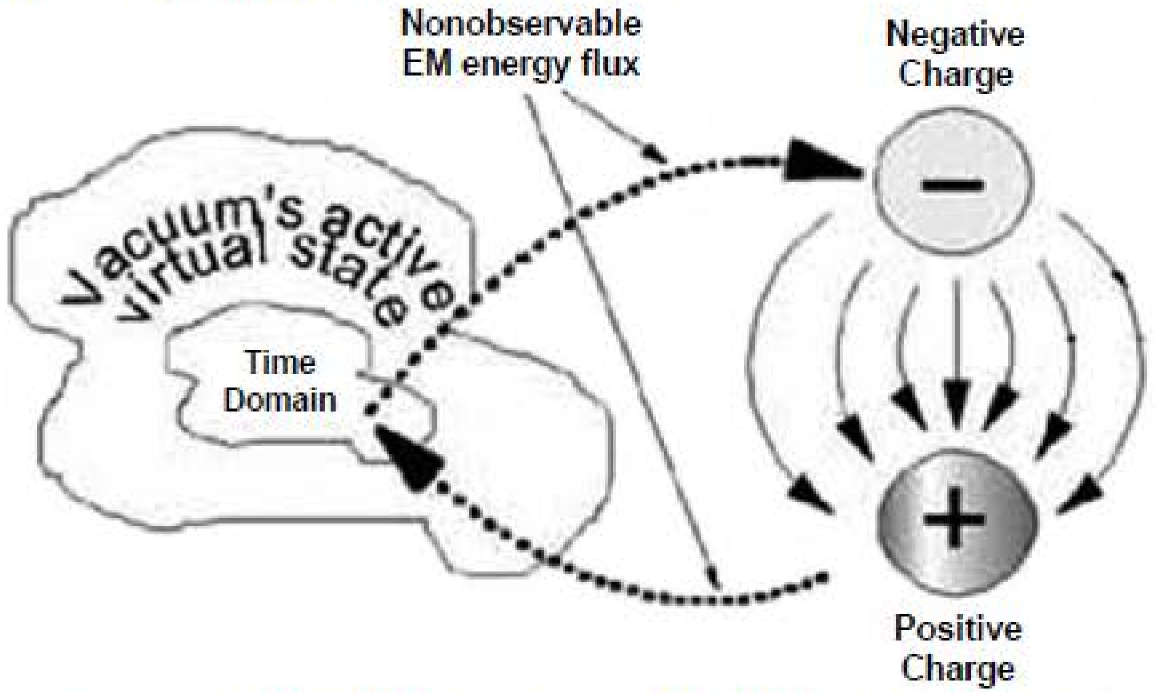

Spymaster: "Gerald Bull told me just before he was killed [22 March 1990] that some of the Soviet research was years in front of the world. They are kept in virtual isolation and don't know what they have found."

Author: "I've met scientists who worked for the US on space programs in Russia. The Russian scientists were so poor, and kept in such isolation, that the American Scientists ordered food just so they could feed their fellow scientists with the leftovers."

A Longitudinal Wave Interferometer (Tesla Howitzer) is easy to build using two special antennae connected to a computer, but the software is the hard bit – that's the secret. The two scalar beams cross each other creating an 'interference zone' where a dazzling array of effects can be produced including longitudinal waves travelling through the earth to create pure action-at-a-distance or remote warfare. By manipulating the wave at the interference zone, earthquakes can be created at a distant spot, as well as erupt dormant volcanoes.

Soviet Premier Khrushchev announced the Longitudinal Wave Interferometer to the world in 1960: "We have a new weapon, just within the portfolio of our scientists . . . which is so powerful . . . it could wipe out all life on earth. It is a fantastic weapon."

---

[1] 'Are Any of These Earthquakes Being Caused by Scalar Weapons?', Bill Morgan.

And 37 years later the Americans publicly caught on, with excuses, Defense Secretary William Cohen, 1997: "Others [imagined terrorists] are engaging even in an eco-type of terrorism whereby they can alter the climate, set off earthquakes, volcanoes remotely through the use of electromagnetic waves . . . So there are plenty of ingenious minds out there that are at work finding ways in which they can wreak terror upon other nations . . . It's real, and that's the reason why we have to intensify our efforts."

This TERRORISM turned out to be counter terrorism, without the terrorists being present.

Scalar Scientist Tom Bearden (Nobel Prize, 1957): "Here's how you initiate a very large earthquake with such weapons.Take a convenient fault zone, or set of them. Focus the interferometry on the fault zone, in the 'diverging' mode, and deposit EM energy there in the rocks on both sides, increasing (slowly) the stress in the rocks by the reverse piezoelectric effect – depositing excess energy to get crystal mechanical movements.

"Do it slowly, and the stress will build up to large pressures well-above a plate slip minimum energy required. At some point, the rocks yield and one or both sides 'slip' and move rather sharply, giving a very large earthquake in that zone.

"Do the same thing down in the earth – remember, LWs easily penetrate right through the earth and ocean at will, and so the 'interference zone' focus can be inside the earth or beneath the ocean."[2]

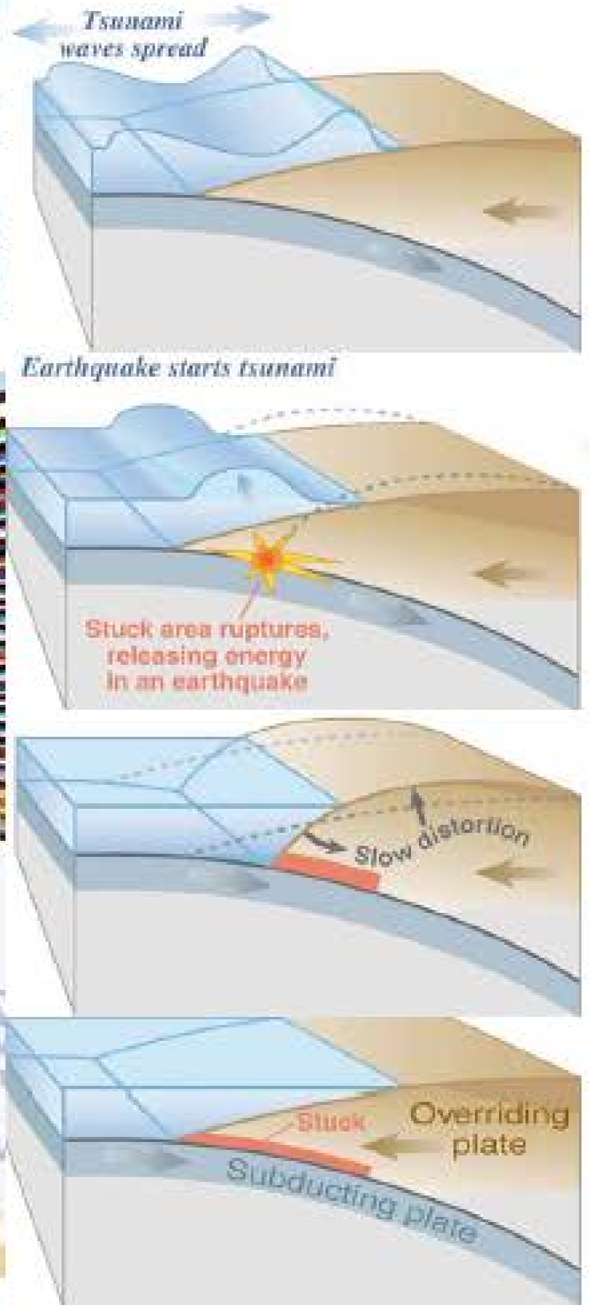
Tsunami waves spread
Earthquake starts tsunami
Stuck area ruptures, releasing energy in an earthquake
Slow distortion
Stuck
Overriding plate
Subducting plate

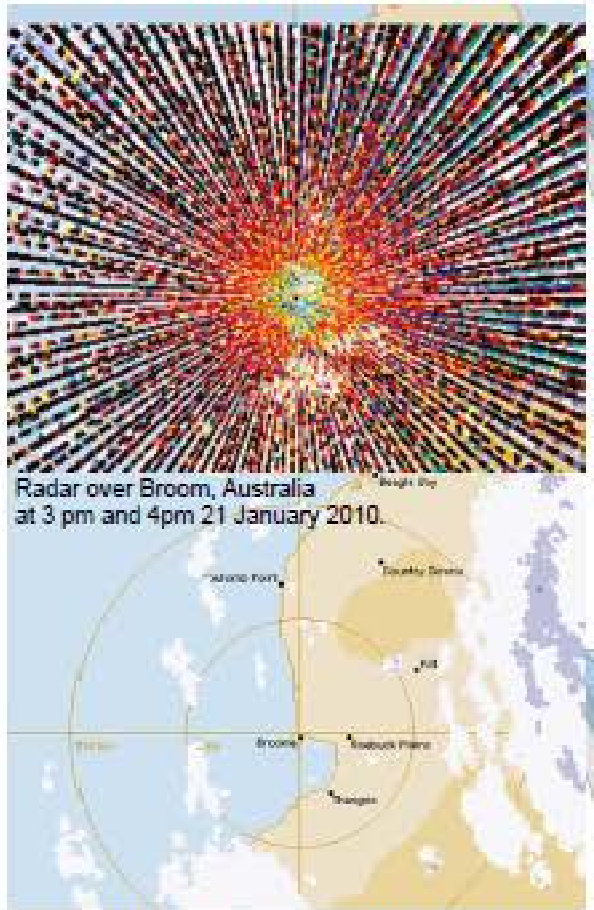
Radar over Broom, Australia at 3 pm and 4pm 21 January 2010.

---

[2] http://www.earthchangestv.com/ufo/0209gandor.htm.

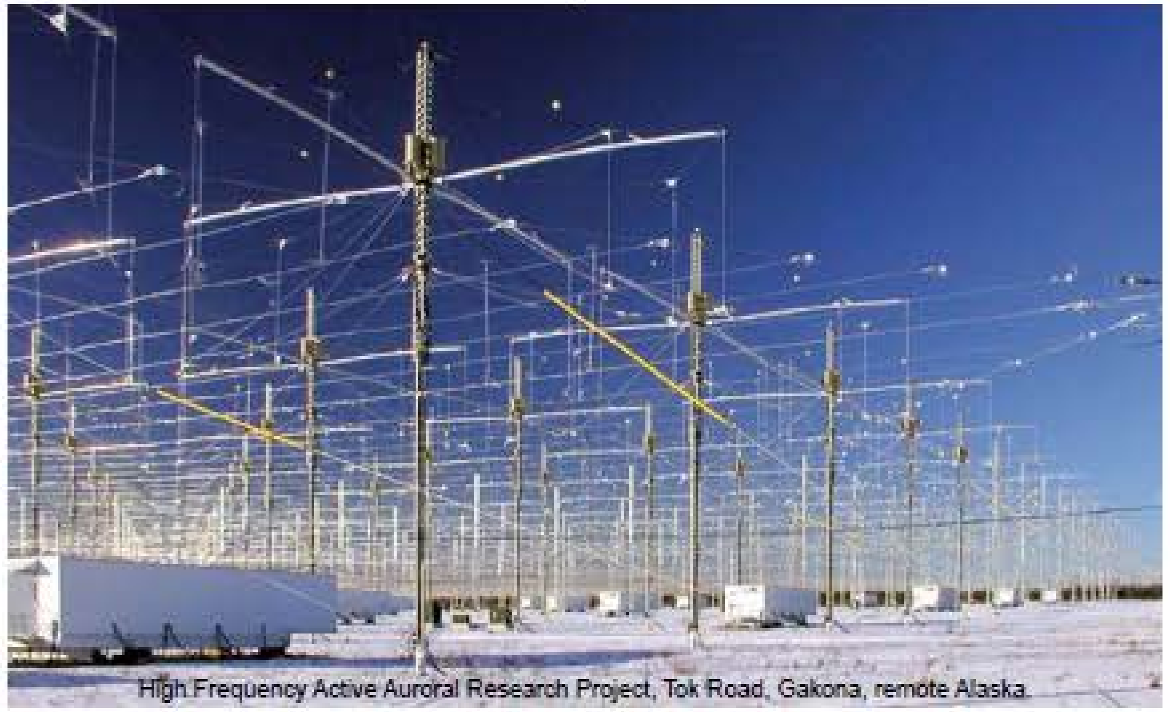
High Frequency Active Auroral Research Project, Tok Road, Gakona, remote Alaska.

Nikola Tesla[3]

Nikola Tesla established a laboratory at 46 E Houston Street in New York. This was less than a mile from my great-grandfather's invention office at 280 Broadway New York and his 'Godward Gas Generator' which was replaced by the far worse carburetor. The Ernest Godward/ Nikola Tesla go-between was Samuel Clemens – a.k.a. Mark Twain – Godward's vice-president.

Tesla invented a mechanical oscillator that generated a resonant frequency of several buildings and caused them to shake as if in an earthquake. The cause was a little vibrator that fitted in Tesla's coat-pocket that he clamped to steel beams in a half-erected steel building in the Wall Street district, then played with the frequency. The structure began to creak and weave and the steel-workers came down panic-stricken as if there had been an earthquake. Police were called out. Ten minutes more and the building would have been laid out on the street. With the same pocket-sized vibrator, he could have dropped the Brooklyn Bridge into the East River in under an hour.

MythBusters built one of these Tesla Earthquake Machines for their 60th episode. They tested its mechanical resonance oscillator on a traffic bridge, where a single steel I-beam was deflected several feet in each direction and the bridge shook many yards away.

At the time of Tesla, buildings weren't built to withstand such resonance or the effects of earthquakes. They are now (in the West), however the buildings in Samoa and Haiti were not built to withstand either.

We did similar tests at the Auckland School of Architecture and a group of us went up to the 7th floor of a 10 storey building on Wellesley Street, just east of Queen St, moved our legs in a wobbling motion and wobbled the building. The building was built cheaply by Chase in the early 1980s.

Tesla (10 July 1856–7 January 1943/?) was a mechanical, electrical and electromagnetism engineer. His patents and theoretical work form the basis of modern civilisation and warfare and his work is still being developed to this day.

---

[3] 'US Quake Test Goes "Horribly Wrong", Leaves 500,000 Dead In Haiti', Henk Beheerder, 18 January 2010.

US Patent # 514,169

Reciprocating Engine

Nikola Tesla

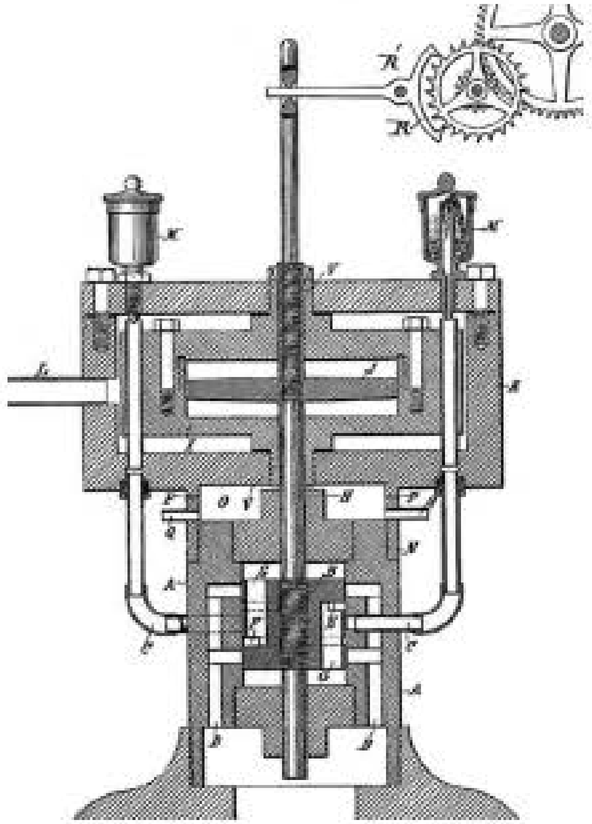

US Patent # 517,900

Steam Engine

Nikola Tesla

Fig. 1

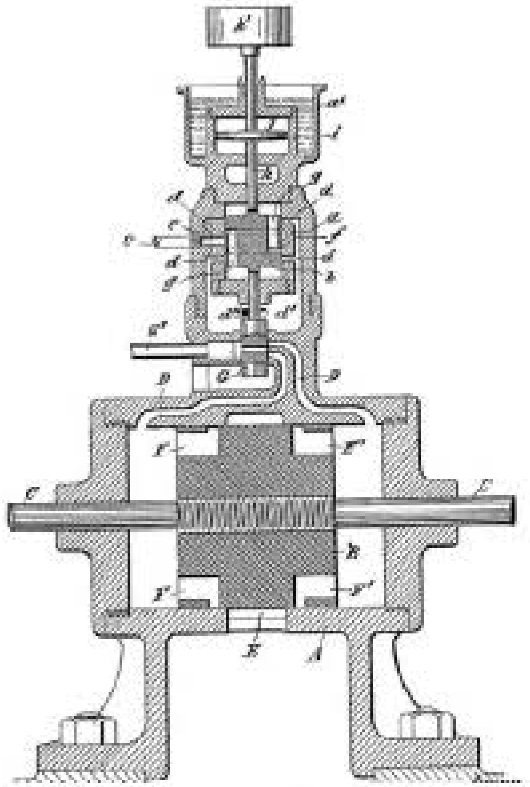

Fig. 2

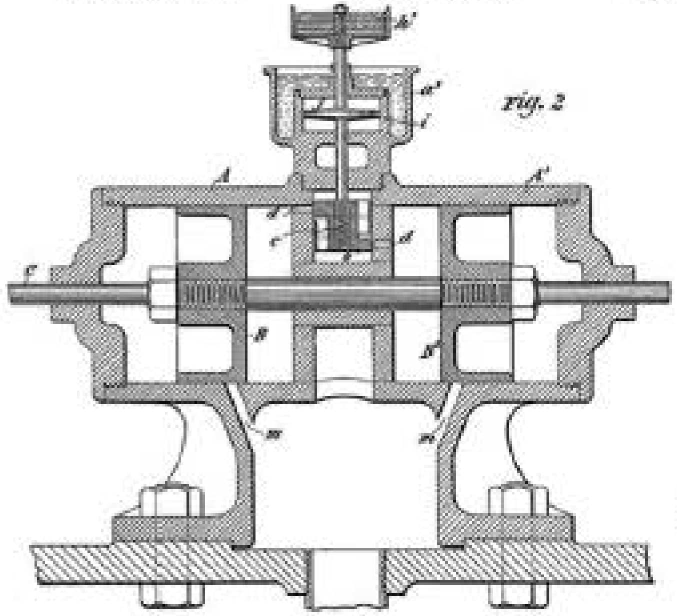

To all whom it may concern:

Be it known that I, Nikola Tesla, a citizen of the United States, residing at New York, in the county and State of New York, have invented certain new and useful Improvements in Steam Engines, of which the following is a specification, reference being had to the drawing accompanying and forming a part of the same.

Nikola Tesla invented modern alternating current (AC), the polyphase system of electrical distribution, the AC motor (which helped usher in the Second Industrial Revolution) and the modern radio (according to the US Supreme Court) as well as the Tesla Electromagnetic Pulse which the U.S. developed into a weapon to engineer earthquakes and activate dormant volcanoes.

In the very early 1900s, Tesla discovered the earth functions as a global electrical grid, pulsing at a very, very low frequency, very precise and constant. This Extremely Low Frequency is called ELF. When scientists emit the very same ELF frequency, they can create and control all the weather and tectonic (earthquake) functions of the earth.

Weather Control then became very simple. A strong thunderstorm has a powerful display of energy, therefore energy is the primary ingredient and key factor in creating such storms. Once the storms are created, they need to be controlled and directed. Science is already well past this level with HAARP.

WORLD-WIDE IONOSPHERIC RESEARCH FACILITIES

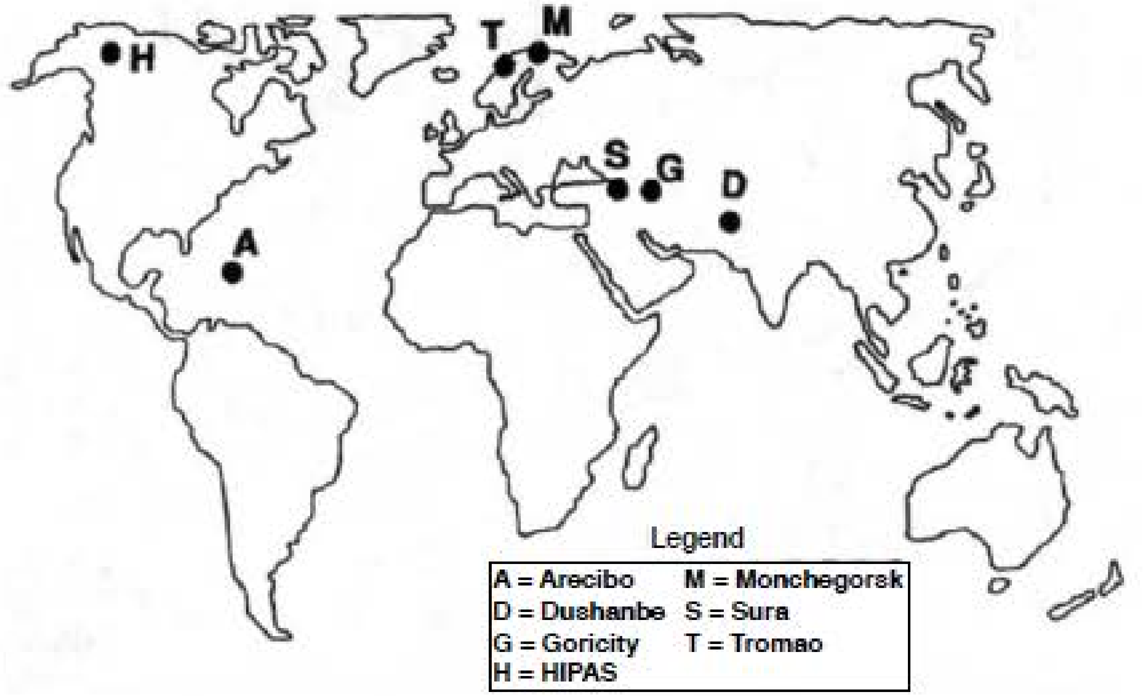

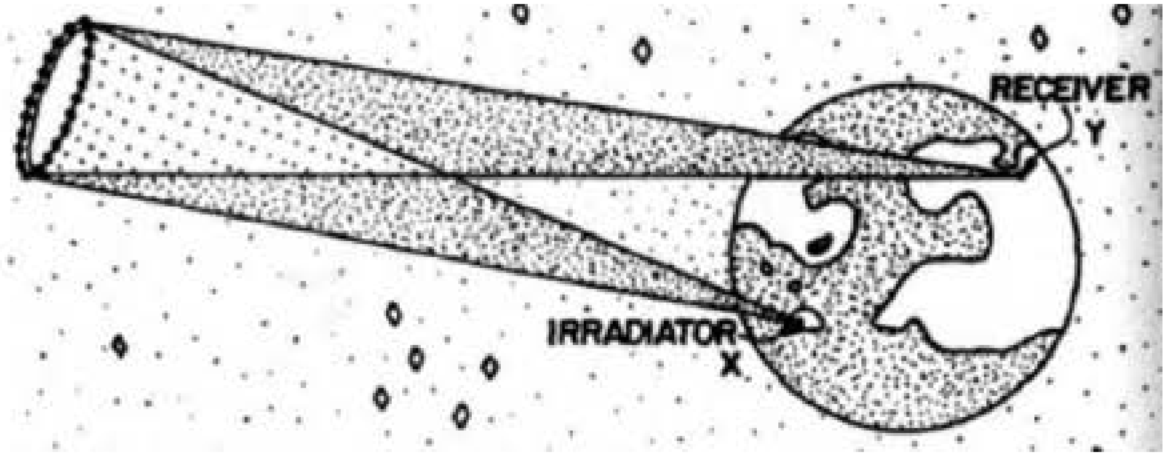

FULL GLOBAL SHIELD

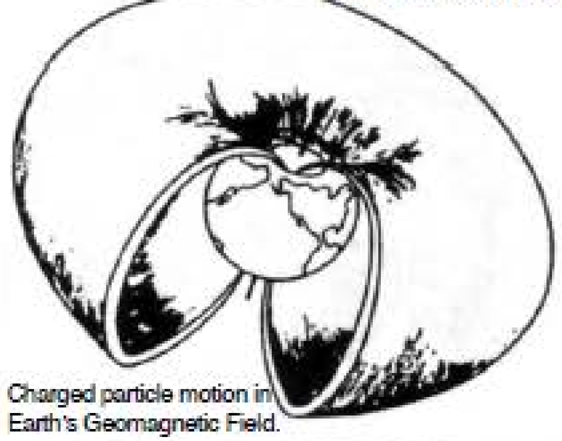

Charged particle motion in Earth's Geomagnetic Field.

Eastlund U.S. Patent 4,686,605

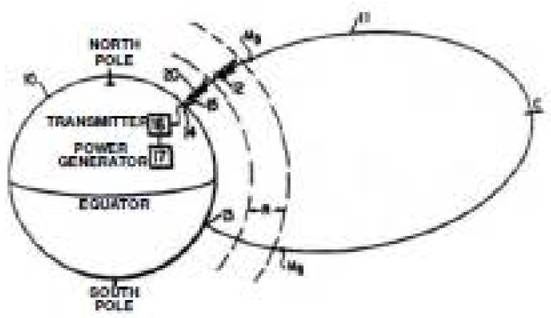
NORTH POLE
TRANSMITTER
POWER GENERATOR
EQUATOR
SOUTH POLE

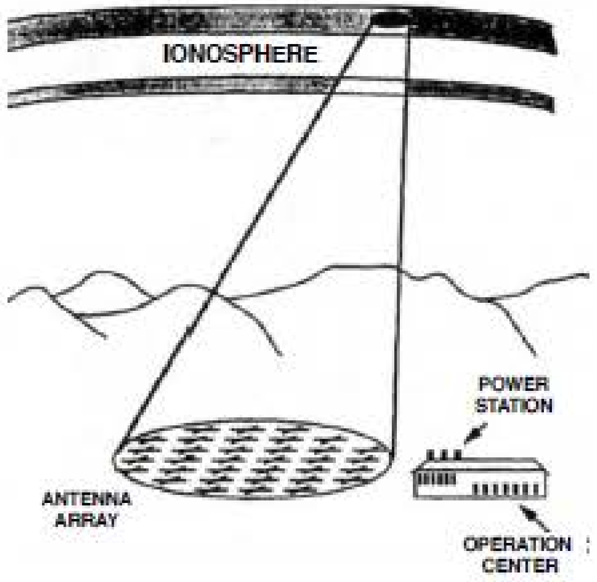
IONOSPHERE
POWER STATION
ANTENNA ARRAY
OPERATION CENTER

Ionosphere Research Instrument Concept

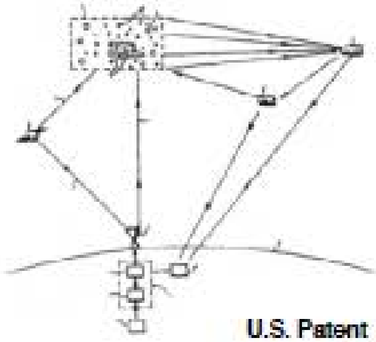

Eastlund
U.S. Patent 4,817,495
4 April 1989

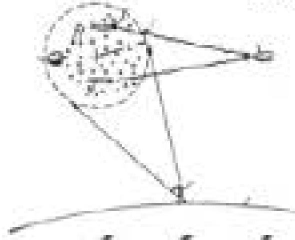

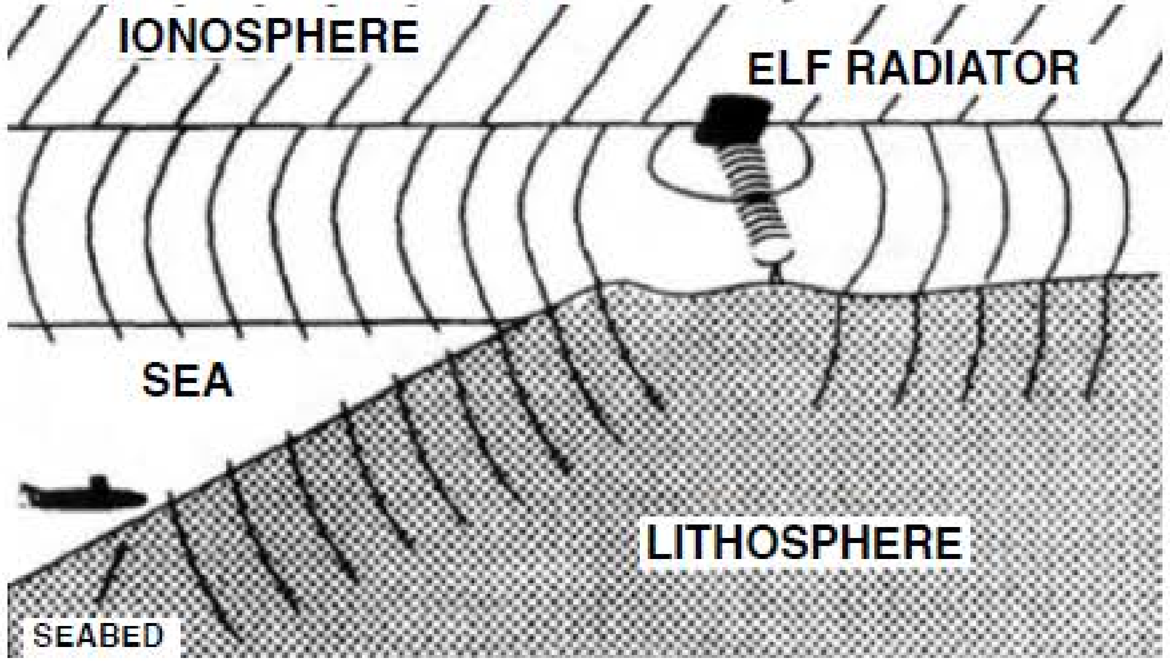
IONOSPHERE
ELF RADIATOR
SEA
LITHOSPHERE
SEABED

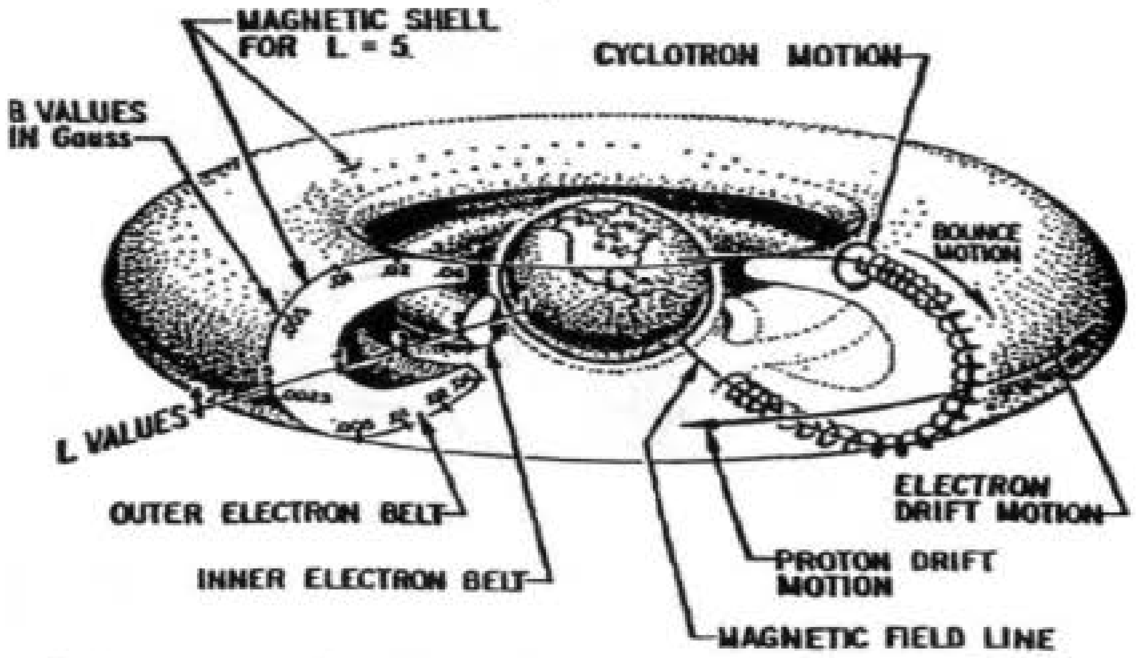
MAGNETIC SHELL FOR L = 5
CYCLOTRON MOTION
B VALUES IN Gauss
BOUNCE MOTION
L VALUES
OUTER ELECTRON BELT
INNER ELECTRON BELT
ELECTRON DRIFT MOTION
PROTON DRIFT MOTION
MAGNETIC FIELD LINE

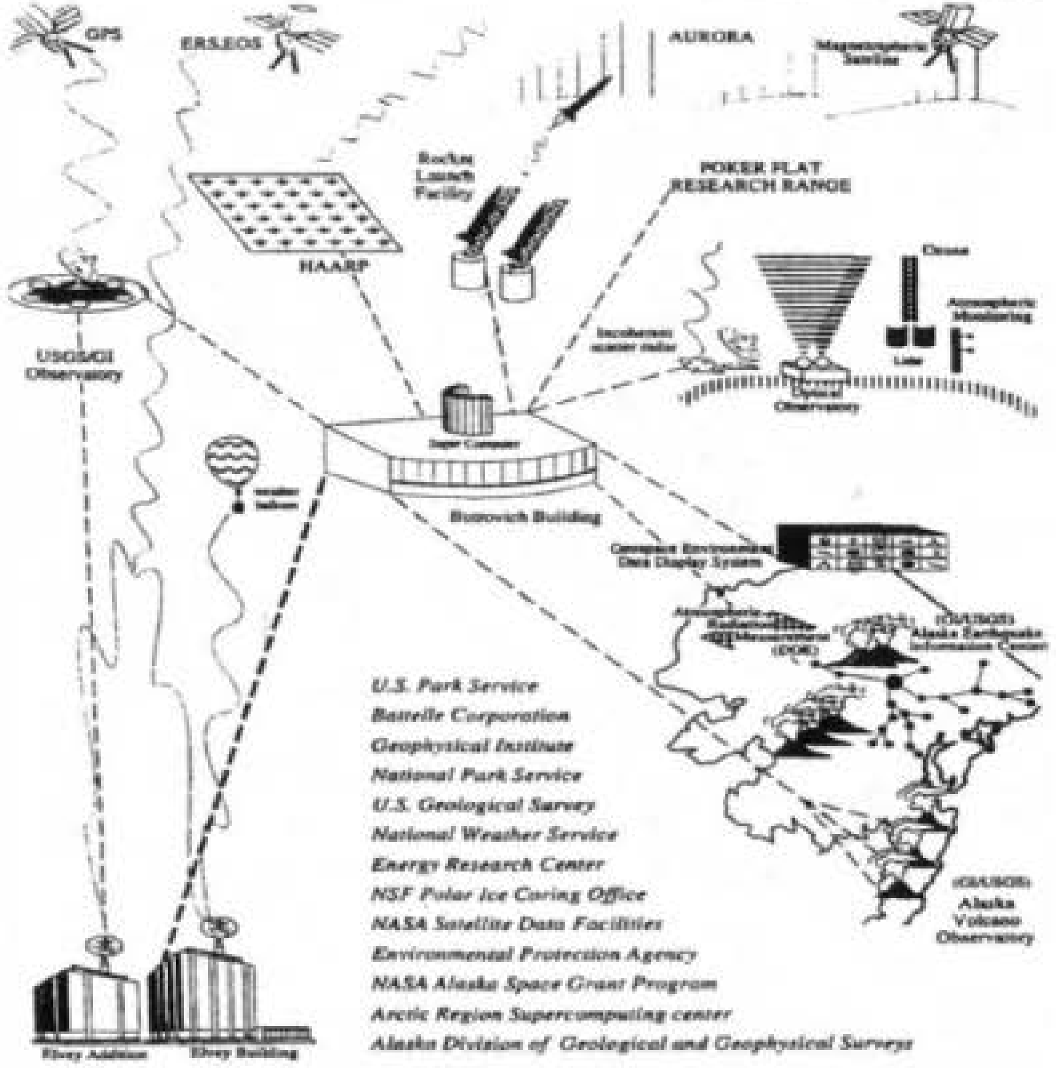
GPS
ERS,EOS
AURORA
Magnetospheric Satellite
Rocket Launch Facility
POKER FLAT RESEARCH RANGE
HAARP
Ozone
Atmospheric Monitoring
Incoherent scatter radar
Lidar
Optical Observatory
USGS/GI Observatory
Super Computer
weather balloon
Butrovich Building
Computer Environmental Data Display System
(DOE)
(USGS) Alaska Earthquake Information Center
(GI/USGS) Alaska Volcano Observatory
Elvey Addition
Elvey Building
U.S. Park Service
Battelle Corporation
Geophysical Institute
National Park Service
U.S. Geological Survey
National Weather Service
Energy Research Center
NSF Polar Ice Coring Office
NASA Satellite Data Facilities
Environmental Protection Agency
NASA Alaska Space Grant Program
Arctic Region Supercomputing center
Alaska Division of Geological and Geophysical Surveys

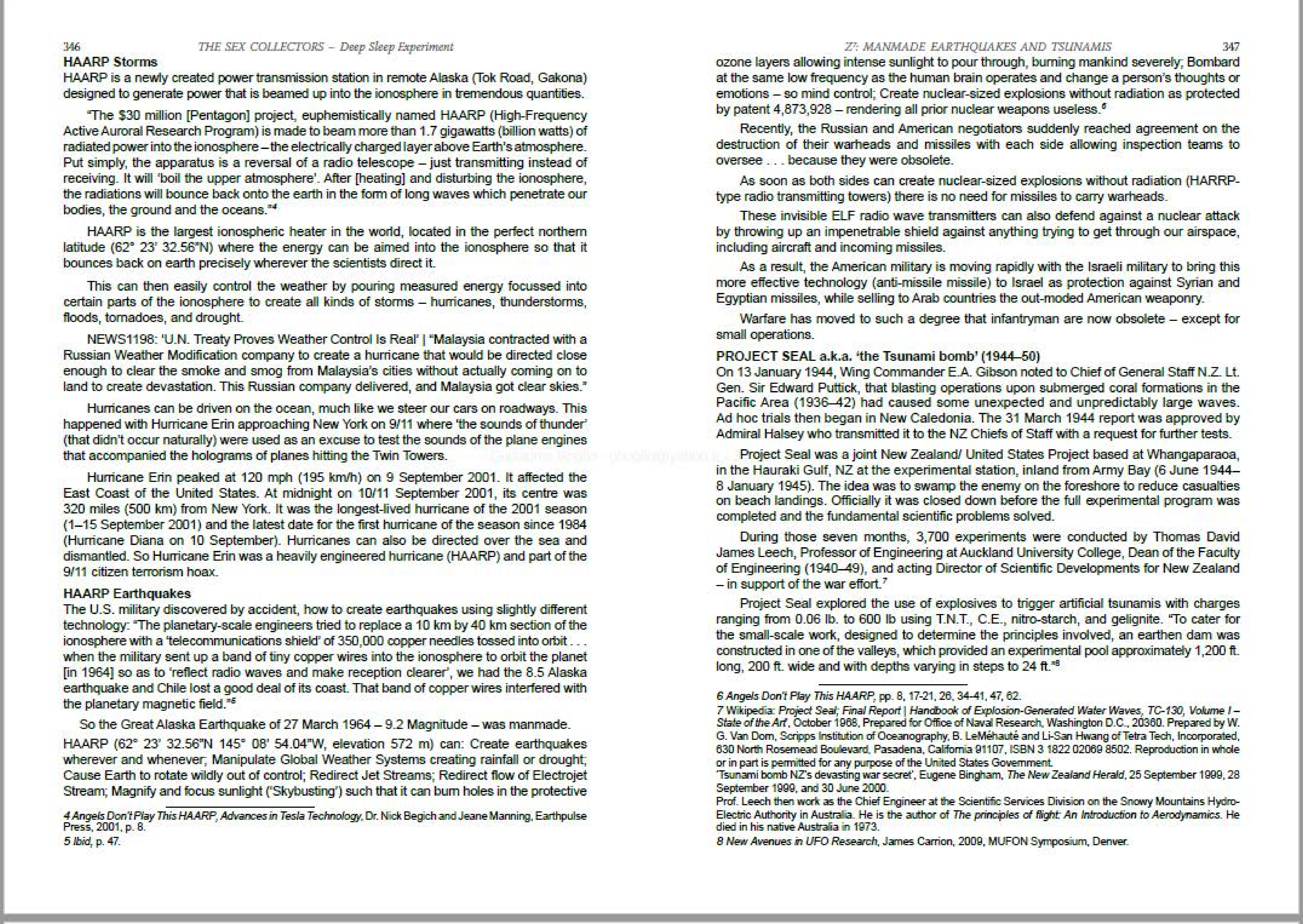

HAARP Storms

HAARP is a newly created power transmission station in remote Alaska (Tok Road, Gakona) designed to generate power that is beamed up into the ionosphere in tremendous quantities.

"The $30 million [Pentagon] project, euphemistically named HAARP (High-Frequency Active Auroral Research Program) is made to beam more than 1.7 gigawatts (billion watts) of radiated power into the ionosphere – the electrically charged layer above Earth's atmosphere. Put simply, the apparatus is a reversal of a radio telescope – just transmitting instead of receiving. It will 'boil the upper atmosphere'. After [heating] and disturbing the ionosphere, the radiations will bounce back onto the earth in the form of long waves which penetrate our bodies, the ground and the oceans."[4]

HAARP is the largest ionospheric heater in the world, located in the perfect northern latitude (62° 23' 32.56"N) where the energy can be aimed into the ionosphere so that it bounces back on earth precisely wherever the scientists direct it.

This can then easily control the weather by pouring measured energy focussed into certain parts of the ionosphere to create all kinds of storms – hurricanes, thunderstorms, floods, tornadoes, and drought.

NEWS1198: 'U.N. Treaty Proves Weather Control Is Real' | "Malaysia contracted with a Russian Weather Modification company to create a hurricane that would be directed close enough to clear the smoke and smog from Malaysia's cities without actually coming on to land to create devastation. This Russian company delivered, and Malaysia got clear skies."

Hurricanes can be driven on the ocean, much like we steer our cars on roadways. This happened with Hurricane Erin approaching New York on 9/11 where 'the sounds of thunder' (that didn't occur naturally) were used as an excuse to test the sounds of the plane engines that accompanied the holograms of planes hitting the Twin Towers.

Hurricane Erin peaked at 120 mph (195 km/h) on 9 September 2001. It affected the East Coast of the United States. At midnight on 10/11 September 2001, its centre was 320 miles (500 km) from New York. It was the longest-lived hurricane of the 2001 season (1–15 September 2001) and the latest date for the first hurricane of the season since 1984 (Hurricane Diana on 10 September). Hurricanes can also be directed over the sea and dismantled. So Hurricane Erin was a heavily engineered hurricane (HAARP) and part of the 9/11 citizen terrorism hoax.

HAARP Earthquakes

The U.S. military discovered by accident, how to create earthquakes using slightly different technology: "The planetary-scale engineers tried to replace a 10 km by 40 km section of the ionosphere with a 'telecommunications shield' of 350,000 copper needles tossed into orbit . . . when the military sent up a band of tiny copper wires into the ionosphere to orbit the planet [in 1964] so as to 'reflect radio waves and make reception clearer', we had the 8.5 Alaska earthquake and Chile lost a good deal of its coast. That band of copper wires interfered with the planetary magnetic field."[5]

So the Great Alaska Earthquake of 27 March 1964 – 9.2 Magnitude – was manmade.

HAARP (62° 23' 32.56"N 145° 08' 54.04"W, elevation 572 m) can: Create earthquakes wherever and whenever; Manipulate Global Weather Systems creating rainfall or drought; Cause Earth to rotate wildly out of control; Redirect Jet Streams; Redirect flow of Electrojet Stream; Magnify and focus sunlight ('Skybusting') such that it can burn holes in the protective ozone layers allowing intense sunlight to pour through, burning mankind severely; Bombard at the same low frequency as the human brain operates and change a person's thoughts or emotions – so mind control; Create nuclear-sized explosions without radiation as protected by patent 4,873,928 – rendering all prior nuclear weapons useless.[6]

Recently, the Russian and American negotiators suddenly reached agreement on the destruction of their warheads and missiles with each side allowing inspection teams to oversee . . . because they were obsolete.

As soon as both sides can create nuclear-sized explosions without radiation (HARRP-type radio transmitting towers) there is no need for missiles to carry warheads.

These invisible ELF radio wave transmitters can also defend against a nuclear attack by throwing up an impenetrable shield against anything trying to get through our airspace, including aircraft and incoming missiles.

As a result, the American military is moving rapidly with the Israeli military to bring this more effective technology (anti-missile missile) to Israel as protection against Syrian and Egyptian missiles, while selling to Arab countries the out-moded American weaponry.

Warfare has moved to such a degree that infantryman are now obsolete – except for small operations.

PROJECT SEAL a.k.a. 'the Tsunami bomb' (1944–50)

On 13 January 1944, Wing Commander E.A. Gibson noted to Chief of General Staff N.Z. Lt. Gen. Sir Edward Puttick, that blasting operations upon submerged coral formations in the Pacific Area (1936–42) had caused some unexpected and unpredictably large waves. Ad hoc trials then began in New Caledonia. The 31 March 1944 report was approved by Admiral Halsey who transmitted it to the NZ Chiefs of Staff with a request for further tests.

Project Seal was a joint New Zealand/ United States Project based at Whangaparaoa, in the Hauraki Gulf, NZ at the experimental station, inland from Army Bay (6 June 1944–8 January 1945). The idea was to swamp the enemy on the foreshore to reduce casualties on beach landings. Officially it was closed down before the full experimental program was completed and the fundamental scientific problems solved.

During those seven months, 3,700 experiments were conducted by Thomas David James Leech, Professor of Engineering at Auckland University College, Dean of the Faculty of Engineering (1940–49), and acting Director of Scientific Developments for New Zealand – in support of the war effort.[7]

Project Seal explored the use of explosives to trigger artificial tsunamis with charges ranging from 0.06 lb. to 600 lb using T.N.T., C.E., nitro-starch, and gelignite. "To cater for the small-scale work, designed to determine the principles involved, an earthen dam was constructed in one of the valleys, which provided an experimental pool approximately 1,200 ft. long, 200 ft. wide and with depths varying in steps to 24 ft."[8]

---

[4] *Angels Don't Play This HAARP, Advances in Tesla Technology*, Dr. Nick Begich and Jeane Manning, Earthpulse Press, 2001, p. 8.

[5] *Ibid*, p. 47.

[6] *Angels Don't Play This HAARP*, pp. 8, 17-21, 26, 34-41, 47, 62.

[7] Wikipedia: *Project Seal; Final Report* | *Handbook of Explosion-Generated Water Waves, TC-130, Volume I – State of the Art*, October 1968, Prepared for Office of Naval Research, Washington D.C., 20360. Prepared by W. G. Van Dorn, Scripps Institution of Oceanography, B. LeMéhauté and Li-San Hwang of Tetra Tech, Incorporated, 630 North Rosemead Boulevard, Pasadena, California 91107, ISBN 3 1822 02069 8502. Reproduction in whole or in part is permitted for any purpose of the United States Government.
'Tsunami bomb NZ's devasting war secret', Eugene Bingham, *The New Zealand Herald*, 25 September 1999, 28 September 1999, and 30 June 2000.
Prof. Leech then work as the Chief Engineer at the Scientific Services Division on the Snowy Mountains Hydro-Electric Authority in Australia. He is the author of *The principles of flight: An Introduction to Aerodynamics*. He died in his native Australia in 1973.

[8] *New Avenues in UFO Research*, James Carrion, 2009, MUFON Symposium, Denver.

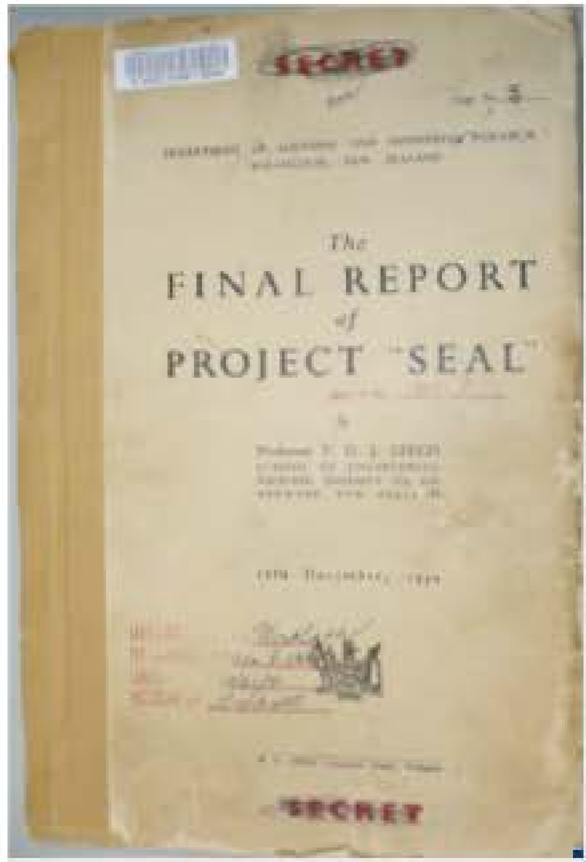

SECRET

The
FINAL REPORT
of
PROJECT "SEAL"

SECRET

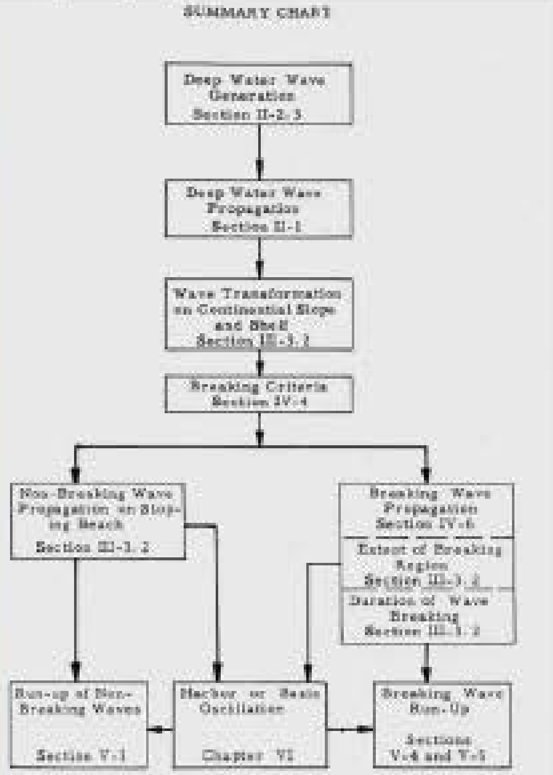
SUMMARY CHART
Deep Water Wave Generation Section II-2, 3
Deep Water Wave Propagation Section II-1
Wave Transformation on Continental Slope and Shelf Section III-3. 1
Breaking Criteria Section IV-4
Non-Breaking Wave Propagation on Sloping Beach Section III-3. 2
Breaking Wave Propagation Section IV-6
Extent of Breaking Region Section III-3. 2
Duration of Wave Breaking Section III-3. 2
Run-up of Non-Breaking Waves Section V-1
Harbor or Basin Oscillation Chapter VI
Breaking Wave Run-Up Sections V-4 and V-5

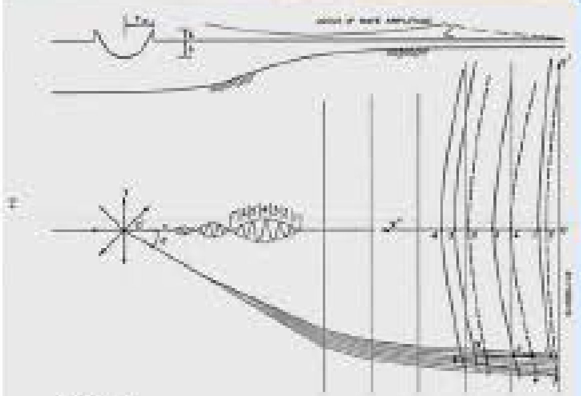

Figure III-9
Schematic Illustration of Procedure

PROJECT SEAL

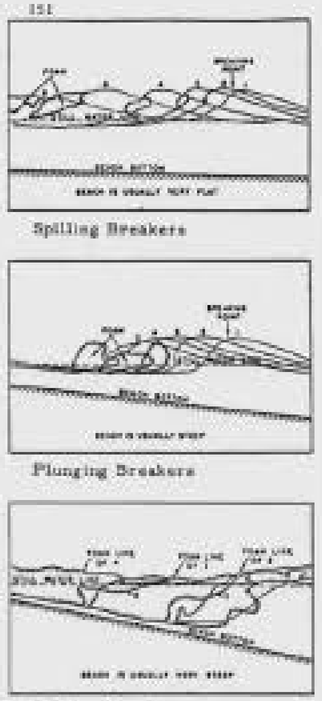

Spilling Breakers

Plunging Breakers

Surging Breakers

Figure IV-3
Three Types of Breakers

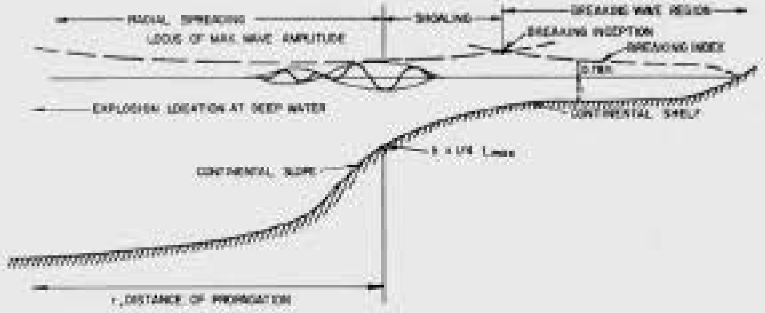
RADIAL SPREADING
LOCUS OF MAX. WAVE AMPLITUDE
SHOALING
BREAKING WAVE REGION
BREAKING INCEPTION
BREAKING INDEX
EXPLOSION LOCATION AT DEEP WATER
CONTINENTAL SHELF
CONTINENTAL SLOPE
DISTANCE OF PROPAGATION

Figure VII-1 Schematic Drawing of the Maximum Wave Transformation as it Propagates Towards the Shore

Leech was responsible for the technical direction where the proposed 'weapon' was tested using small explosions, not on a full scale, so never generating an appreciable tsunami. At full scale a nuclear charge could cause some real tsunami damage to a coastal city. The more pertinent critical depth was near the surface. Depth charges were the second choice. Earthquake faults came later.

Professor Leech then supplied the critical depth nearer the water surface for the Bikini Atoll nuclear bomb trial in 1946 and accurately forecast the wave amplitudes, receiving a CBE in 1947. The University of California then published papers relating to certain phases of the project in 1948. In December 1950, Prof. Leech (with the Americans) submitted the final PROJECT SEAL report which was then classified "Secret" (declassified in 1971) and "Top Secret" (declassified in 1999) concluding that:

> 'Offensive inundation is possible under favorable circumstances given low-lying foreshores and a shelving bottom off-shore. Tidal wave amplitudes can be obtained using multiple charges of T.N.T. or atomic bombs.'[9]

The charges were exploded on the seabed, near the surface, and then on earthquake faults with increasing effectiveness. Nuclear explosions at earthquake fault sets was the most effective. The equivalent of nuclear explosions (without the radiation) at earthquake fault sets was better (untraceable), but this technology was not to come around until HAARP.

Spymaster: "All the oceans are run by a separate entity. All the oceans are run by an outfit in Hamburg. It's virtually an adjunct to the UN. It was set up back in the 1990s. The first thing they did was set up a big building in Hamburg, which is always a bad sign. The give away is that some Western Navies fly an additional flag from their mast when they're dealing with naval affairs for this outfit. The world's navies are not answerable to their own governments."

"The Navies of the world are closer to each other
than they are to their own governments."[10]

Cannons shooting Copper & Aluminium into the Atmosphere altering Magnetic Field

Dr. Gerald Vincent Bull (1928–90) was a Canadian engineer who worked for all sides on many projects. The Canadian Military and Israelis gave British-German long-range cannon to Dr. Bull, who did experimented with cannon weather control. By November 1962 he was launching 150 kg Martlets to 6,600 metres, eight times a night. The 1,000 firings left a triethylaluminum smoke trail' to measure atmospheric winds; Chaff (thin aluminium or copper needles) for radar reflection, and electronics to measure the magnetic field. The Army Research Office funded HARP (High Altitude Research Program) in exchange for the data. This contributed to the understanding of HAARP (High Frequency Active Auroral Reseach Program) in nearby Alaska. You couldn't have a scientist publicly recognising his own work, so Dr. Bull (62) was assassinated on 22 March 1990.

The Great Alaska Earthquake of 27 March 1964[11] – Manmade

The U.S. military planetary-scale engineers' 350,000 copper needles orbiting in 10 km x 40 km of the ionosphere in 1964 caused the second largest earthquake in recorded history.

The Great Alaska Earthquake at 5:36 pm Alaska time, Good Friday 27 March 1964 and lasted nearly 5 minutes. A 9.2 Magnitude earthquake, it was the most powerful recorded earthquake in North American history and the second largest on record. It killed 9, but the tsunami killed another 134, with property damage over US$300 million ($2 billion in 2010).

---

[9] Paraphrased from *New Avenues in UFO Research.*

[10] The Rumour Mill News Agency, quoting Rayelan Allan interviewing Greg Hallett, 21/22 December 2009. Spymaster: "Navy Personell are so perverted, they will rather obey an enemy naval officer than their own fellow citizen. In the old days an Admiral was the biggest queer in the fleet and his best boy was his phantom flip. There used to be a poem, put to music: 'Why a soldier can never be a friend'. It goes back to the time when sailors were made of steel and the ships were made of wood."

[11] Wikipedia: 1964 Alaska earthquake.

The epicenter (61.05°N 147.48°W) was 78 miles (125 km) east of Anchorage, 12.4 miles (20 km) north of Prince William Sound at a depth of approximately 15.5 miles (25 km).

It was a subduction zone earthquake (megathrust earthquake) caused by one oceanic plate sinking under a continental plate. The Pacific and North American plates simply ruptured, producing liquefaction of the land . . . which seems to be what happened in Haiti on 12 January 2010.

Vertical displacement of up to 38 feet (11.5 m) occurred, affecting an area of 100,000 square miles (316 miles x 316 miles, 260,000 km²) within Alaska. 200 miles southwest, some areas near Kodiak were permanently raised by 30 feet (9.1 m). East of Anchorage near Portage dropped 8 feet (2.4 m).

In the first day, there were eleven major aftershocks of 6.0+, another nine over the next three weeks, and they carried on for 18 months – 10,000 aftershocks including an 8.7 Magnitude quake on 4 February 1965 (10.5 months later).

The Clear Air Force Station (Cold-War ballistic missile detection radar) went offline for six minutes – the only unscheduled interruption in its operational history. The Million Dollar Bridge crossing the Copper River near Cordova collapsed. The 60-foot concrete control tower at Anchorage International Airport collapsed killing one worker. It was not engineered to withstand earthquake activity. Similarly many villages became uninhabitable and had to move.

Great Alaska Tsunamis – Manmade

The ocean floor shifts created large tsunamis up to 70 feet (21 m) high killing 134. In Prince William Sound, a 27-foot (8.2 m) tsunami destroyed the village of Chenega, killing 23. The 45 survivors out-ran the wave to high ground.

Post-quake tsunamis severely affected Valdez, Whittier, Seward, Kodiak, and other Alaskan Communities, as well as people and property in British Columbia, Oregon (4 killed), California (12 killed), Hawaii and Japan, and Louisiana where several fishing boats were sunk. The entire Earth vibrated as a result of the quake, and water sloshed in wells in Africa, 10,000–15,000 km away on the opposite side of the planet.

Anchorage just after the Great Alaskan Earthquake, 27 March 1964.

A 4.5 ft (1.4 m) tsunami reached the exposed west coast of Vancouver Island, Canada, three hours later, traveled up a fjord, and hit Port Alberni, twice, washing away 55 homes.

Valdez village, damaged by the earthquake and tsunami, relocated 4 miles west and another village relocated to an entirely new island – Evens Island.

This man-made megaquake caused subsidence in the ocean floor and on land (raised 38 ft/ dropped 8 ft), tsunamis, rockslides, fires, and 10,000 aftershocks over 18 months, up to 8.7 Magnitude.

HAARP (62° 23' 32.56"N 145° 08' 54.04"W, elevation 572m) was then built 120 miles (195 km) northeast of the Great Alaska Earthquake epicentre.

Manmade Earthquakes

"Since the late 1970's, the United States has 'greatly advanced' the state of its earthquake weapons and according to these reports, now uses devices employing a Tesla Electromagnetic Pulse, Plasma and Sonic technology, along with 'shockwave bombs' . . .

"Though virtually unknown to the American people, the use, and perfection, of earthquake weapon technology has a decade's long history that began with the former Soviet Unions exploding a 10 megaton nuclear bomb in September, 1978 and then 'redirecting' its shockwave towards Iran where it resulted in a catastrophic 7.4 magnitude earthquake, an event which hastened the downfall of the US backed regime headed by the Shah."[12]

Iran Earthquake of 16 September 1978

The Iran Earthquake at 7:06 pm 16 September 1978 destroyed over 6,000 km² and killed 15,000 people. In this location, all the earthquakes are historically less than 5.5.[13]

> "Iran Earthquake, 16 September 1978: Signatures – 7.4 on Richter scale – No aftershocks: 6.0 expected (normal) – Strange epicentre – Anomolous depth • Deception – 10 MT Soviet nuclear explosion 36 hours before the quake – Prior disinformation regarding Soviet attempted development of focussing shock waves from underground, to cause distant earthquakes."[14]

Chris Beeby wrapped his friend, the Shah of Iran, up in a Persian carpet and took him out of Iran in a New Zealand Embassy Legation vehicle on the night of 8/9 September 1978, eight days before the 7.4 Magnitude quake. It wasn't the first time for the Shah, earning him the nickname – 'The Golfbag of Iran'.

Yugoslav Earthquakes of 15 April 1979

"This attack was countered by the Americans at 7:19 and 7:30 am on 15 April 1979 when they unleashed one or two of their newly developed 'atomic powered' earthquake weapons against the former communist Nation of Yugoslavia resulting in one or two 7.2 magnitude earthquake for 10 seconds."[15]

"The source was relatively complex with two epicentres, 12 km apart, 22 km or 40 km deep . . . the seismic moment of the quake increasing with period . . . possibly a convergance of the Adriactic block and the European mainland . . ."[16]

> "In Montenegro's Cultural Heritage Site, Budva Old Town, 392 of the 400 buildings were damaged. The 15th century walls and ramparts were severely damaged.

---

[12] 'US Quake Test Goes Horribly Wrong, Leaves 500,000 Dead In Haiti', http://silviavideler.wordpress.com/, Henk Beheeder, 16 January 2010.

[13] 'The Tabas (Iran) Earthquake of 16 September 1978', Bahram Akasheh and Iraj Eshghi, *Pageoph, Vol. 119*, (1980/81), Birkhäuser Verlag, Basel, Institute of Geophysics, University of Stuttgart, Germany.

[14] 'Strange Characteristics of Iran Quake', September 1978.

[15] 'US Quake Test Goes Horribly Wrong, Leaves 500,000 Dead In Haiti', 16 January 2010.

[16] 'The Montenegro, Yugoslavia, earthquake of April 15, 1979: source orientation and strength', David M. Boore, John D. Sims, Hiroo Kanamori and Sam Harding, 5 June 1981.

> "Stari Bar's Aqueduct was completely destroyed. The church inside the Praskvica monastery totally collapsed. Parts of the walls of Herceg Novi's Old Town fell into the Adriatic. Ulcinj's Old Town was almost totally devastated and the old Balšić Tower nearly collapsed. Over 450 villages were razed to the ground and many villages in Crmnica, Grbalj, Krajina and Paštrovići were near total collapse. 101 people had died in Montenegro, 35 in Albania, and over 100,000 people were left homeless."[17]

Spymaster: "The Serbs were shooting everybody at the same time as the quake. It was the early stage of the fight over whatever Tito would leave behind. He died on 4 May 1981, but was a vegetable for the last two years of his life . . . so the British absolutely saturated parts of Yugoslavia with arms, mainly in Croatian parts of Montenegro. My Czech boss was wandering around in Croatia during the Civil War and commented:

> "The Serbs had practised destruction to an almost perfect pattern. Road and streets were untouched by mortar and cannon fire and most of the buildings had fallen into themselves. Where a building was considered valuable, large, or of strong material, it remained untouched, but surrounded by wide spread ruins. They even tried to avoid damaging electrical substations and powerpoles because it would need to be replaced later. Outside the towns in the wooded valleys you could see from the presence of flies that the people had been marched out to be shot. The Serbs only kept the women and young girls. All the males were killed."

Kobe Earthquake of 17 January 1995

Shoko Asahara, the charismatic guru of the 9,000 member Aum Shinrikyo (Supreme Truth) sect worked with US Naval Intelligence and hacked into their computers. On an 8 January 1995 radio broadcast, Shoko Asahara stated: "Japan will be attacked by an earthquake in 1995. The most likely place is Kobe." This was backed up prior to the quake by Aum's Science and Technology leader, Hideo Murai Ph.D, of whom it was also said: "He was the most intelligent Japanese who ever lived".

Eight days later on 17 January 1995, a catastrophic 6.8 Magnitude earthquake laid waste to Kobe – Japan's sixth largest city. 5,100 died, mainly in Kobe.

Since then, it has been stated that Tesla technology caused the Kobe earthquake.

Aum leadership: "The City of Kobe was hit by a surprise attack . . . the City was an appropriate guinea pig."

Three months after the quake, at a news conference at Japan's Foreign Correspondent Club on 7 April 1995, Aum's Science and Technology leader, Dr. Hideo Murai (Astrophysics) said:

> "There is a strong possibility of the activation of an earthquake using electromagnetic power, or somebody may have used a device that applied force inside the Earth."

Hideo Murai received his Ph.D in astrophysics from Osaka University for studying X-ray emissions of celestial bodies. He was also a computer programmer. Upon graduating he worked in R&D at Kobe Steel, then joined the Aum Shinrikyo cult where he quickly became the leading scientist – Aum's Science and Technology leader (or 'Minister' as in 'religious order'). From Aum, he researched: artificially induced earthquakes; electromagnetic pulse weapons; giant plasma weapons positioned in Earth's orbit; and microwave weapons.

---

[17] Wikipedia: 'The 1979 Montenegro earthquake | Serbian: Crnogorski zemljotres iz 1979. godine, paraphrased.

On 23 April 1995, 16 days after the news conference, Hideo Murai (36) was stabbed repeatedly with a kitchen knife in the presence of 10 police officers with 100 reporters recording the events and broadcasting live. Murai died six hours later in an ambulance – not in a hospital (reeks of Princess Diana 20 months earlier).

Murai's equipment and research documents were then seized by Japan's equivalent to the FBI – the Public Security Investigation Agency (PSIA).

Hiroyuki Jo (29) did the stabbing, didn't attempt to flee the scene, and was calmly arrested. At first he claimed it was personally motivated (for the sarin gas attack on 20 March 1995), but Jo was later found to be in contact with North Korean spies, then confessed that his Yakuza boss had ordered him to do the hit. Shortly after, Jo was found suicided in his prison cell without a note.

So the murder of Aum's Science and Technology leader Dr. Hideo Murai, and "the most intelligent Japanese who ever lived" – if a little misguided – was a Yakuza hit.

Spymaster: "Yakuza will often kill for 'the public good'. Often what they think is 'the public good' is actually 'for whatever bunch of spies funded them'.

Sarin Gassing of the Tokyo subway on 20 March 1995

Shortly after Shoko Asahara's 8 January 1995 accurate predictive radio broadcast: 'Kobe will be attacked by an earthquake in 1995', his Aum Shinrikyo (Supreme Truth) sect was blamed for the 20 March 1995 sarin gas attack on the Tokyo subway system and the sect was destroyed.

Charismatic guru Shoko Asahara and 10 Aum members were then sentenced to death.

The author's question is how did the Aum sect get all their essential consumables, military equipment, and protection without being attached to foreign Intelligence agencies, and thereby having inside knowledge. Just like Waco, Aum dispersed their gathered information to the public. So both were guilty of releasing state secrets.

FSB reports on Aum Shinrikyo: "Their knowledge of the planned use of these 'doomsday' devices was gained from the US computer hackers belonging to the Branch Davidian religious order who had penetrated some of the American defense establishments most secret files and resulted in their, likewise, being completely destroyed in what is now known as the 'Waco Siege'."[18]

US District Attorney Eric Holder ordered the Waco Siege. He is now President Obama's US Attorney General Eric Holder.

Aum were certainly connected to the Russians via microwaves, and to ONI through the Branch Davidians at Waco, but also via sarin gas testing farms in Australia:

> "9/93 Two Aum members plead guilty to carrying dangerous chemicals on an airplane in Perth, Australia.
>
> 6/94 Sarin gas attack in Matsumoto, 7 people died and over 200 injured. The sect purchases and smuggles an MIL-17 helicopter from Russia to Japan.
>
> 2/95 A village office administrator was kidnapped. Killed by drug injection. Body burned in microwave incinerator located in underground room in Satyam No. 2.
>
> Aum follower, Otaro Ochida, a pharmacist, is hanged in the Aum facilities. His body is burned in microwave incinerator. Eight other bodies were burned in the incinerator."[19]

---

[18] US Quake Test Goes Horribly Wrong, Leaves 500,000 Dead In Haiti', Sorcha Faal, 14 January 2010; http://silviavideler.wordpress.com/, Henk Beheeder, 16 January 2010; 'HAARP Lights Seen before Manmade Haiti Earthquake', APFN, 16 January 2010.

[19] 'Global Proliferation of Weapons of Mass Destruction: A Case Study on the Aum Shinrikyo', Senate Government Affairs Permanent Subcommittee on Investigations, October 31, 1995, Staff Statement, 'V. Crimes of the Cult, A. Murder And Mayhem: Precursors To Gas', http://www.fas.org/irp/congress/1995_rpt/aum/part05.htm.

Kobe Earthquake, 17 January 1995.

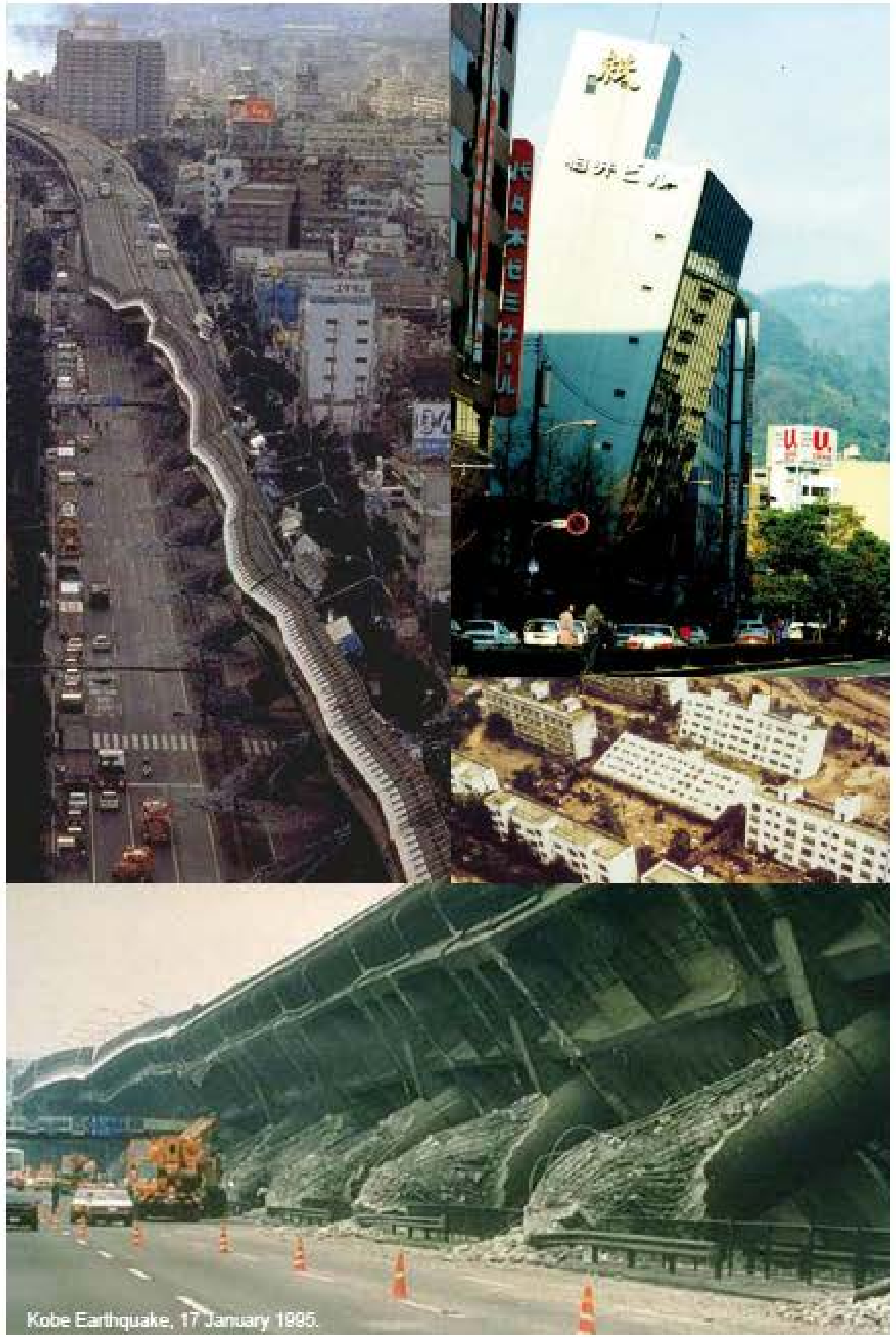

Kobe Earthquake, 17 January 1995.

Spymaster: "When you destroy a body by microwave, you take the clothes off, placed the naked body on the slowly spinning dias, crank it up and then bang, the body disappeared and there's just these little bits left behind that smell like a chemical process has taken place with heat. It's not a smell you'd associate with a dead body.

"This is Russian technology from the Russian embassies, first found when Germany attacked the Soviet Union in WWII. All the Russian embassies had these little microwave rooms. The Russian embassies also had gardens, not flowerbeds, but hedges, shrubs that grew two-to-three feet off the ground. The gardeners splashed this shit under them that came from the microwave rooms. It was good fertilizer and the gardeners used to swear by it."

"Naval Intelligence told me that the Aum [Shinrikyo] sect worked for US Naval Intelligence – ONI – and they had multi-layered arms dealings with virtually everybody and they brought stuff from the Russians, the West Germans and the Americans and they leaked to them that they 'were in the American structure, and that no investigation would ever get to that, and they would all be protected'.

"They said to me they gassed sheep in Australia for Christ's sake and if that isn't American Intelligence, who the fuck is. There were a bunch of Australian civilians that were running a sheep farm that they had dealings with. One of our guys went over there, met them and returned reporting:

> "They were the most drugged-out, hypnotised, intimidated Australian spooks of anybody I've ever run into and you couldn't get a word of common sense out of their mouths, even if you'd stuck a red hot poker up their arse. They were totally thick Australians that had been completely dumbed-down by drugs. You couldn't get a full sentence edgeways. By the time they'd been read the Official Secrets Act, drugged and hypnotised into oblivion, they wouldn't have even been able to tell you who they'd married – full stop . . . So the sarin gas was tested on their sheep."

Wikipedia, Aum Shinrikyo: "On the morning of 20 March 1995, Aum members released sarin in a co-ordinated attack on five trains in the Tokyo subway system, killing 12 commuters, seriously injuring 54 and affecting 980 more."

Spymaster: "Bullshit. American Naval Intelligence was behind the sarin gas attacks in Tokyo. It was just two months after they'd done the Kobe earthquake. ONI were attacking Japan in non-retailatory warfare."

"Over the years US Intell had done some very hostile acts to Japan. But because they have colluded and conspired to keep Japan corrupt – since their (US-delayed) surrender in 1945 – it is never revealed. US Intell claims to be able to murder a Head of State in any democracy at least once every 20 years, à la Harold Holt, and get away with it."

Papua New Guinea Earthquake of 17 July 1998

Papua New Guinea had a 7.0 Magnitude earthquake at 6:49 pm on 17 July 1998, 1 km offshore at 2.96S 141.92E, at a depth of 6 miles (10 km), 100 km east of the Indonesian border. It recorded 4.7 Magnitude as far away as Kaikoura (NZ).

The resulting tsunami arrived in seconds and may have been the most devastating of the 20th century. It appeared as a 50 foot (15m) high standing wave at the shoreline that was reinforced with 2nd, 3rd, 4th and 5th waves. So when the wave broke, there was another just as high behind it, then another, then another, as well as others running along the coastline.[20] At least 2,183 people were killed, 500 missing (d. 2,683) and 9,500 left homeless.

Harvard, NEIC and ERI[21] all show the epicentre in a different location. Harvard has it 1 km offshore, ERI has it 2 km off shore and NEIC has it 1 km inland. Their map does not relate well to the landforms or coastline, unclear coordinates are used, and the scale shows the epicentres 78 km apart. The reports appear to be something of a joint disinfo campaign designed to argue irrelevancies. 'Scientists have difficulty explaining the exceptional waves and distance it travelled inland . . . so they are studying the sedimentary deposits left behind'.

This manmade earthquake occurred 1 km off the coast at Serai. 16 km ESE is Sissano; 53 km ESE is Aitape (pop. 8,000); 75 km ENE is Vanimo (pop. 17,000) and the airport for the area. Vanimo, in the Sundaun (Sundown) Province (pop. 140,000 including 1,000 expats) over 36,300 km^2, is an under-developed area of scattered settlements, with 95 local languages and the largest single lumber area – so all up, it was a perfect testing ground.

Spymaster: "There were witness reports of fire on the water and some fish that washed up on shore had burns. I mentioned this to an American taxi driver who had some military intelligence background and he said: 'Watch it. You can get yourself killed saying stuff like that.'

"The late Gerald Bull told me: 'Fire on the water is a sure indication it was a HAARP operation. Sometimes there is friction on the water, and they were working on that and trying to eliminate it, but sometimes it did occur'."

A photo taken immediately after, showing several hundred houses vanished, in what had been two villages. Only a portion of a septic tank survived.

Earthquakes for Anti-Terrorism by 2001

After 9/11, TERRORISM was anybody's game. Deputy Defense Secretary Paul Wolfowitz, September 2001: "These people try to hide. They won't be able to hide forever . . . They think their harbors are safe, but they won't be safe forever . . . it's not simply a matter of capturing people and holding them accountable, but removing the sanctuaries, removing the support systems, ending states who sponsor terrorism."[22]

"Ending states" holds the intention of destroying entire nation states with unconventional weapons as we have just seen. With this knowledge in mind, Bush and Putin then reached an accord on 23 September 2001 (12 days after 9/11) that Russia would not object, nor would she act, to America's use of unconventional weapons: "Putin gave the nod for US forces poised in Central Asia to jump into Afghanistan to be armed with tactical nuclear weapons, such as small neutron bombs, which emit strong radiation, nuclear mines, shells, and other nuclear ammunition suited to commando warfare in mountainous terrain.

---

[20] See the PNG tsunami simulation at http://walrus.wr.usgs.gov/tsunami/high_res.html.

[21] Harvard CMT; NEIC (National Earthquake Information Centre); and ERI (Earthquake Research Institute.

[22] 'Stage Set For Attack', Susanne M. Schafer, Associated Press, *The Sun Chronicle*, 14 September 2001, p. 2.

"In return, Bush assented to Russia deploying tactical nuclear weapons units around Chechnya after Moscow's ultimatum to the rebels, some of whom are backed by Osama Bin Laden . . . This is an epic shift in the global balance of strength."[23]

So as of 23 September 2001, Russia no longer objects to the U.S. use of HAARP-type weapons against the Afghan terrorists, and any terrorist, and anyone considered a terrorist, or their family members. Would this not include the muslims in Afghanistan and the Philippines, the Indonesian Banda Aceh Tamil Tiger rebels, Samoa and Haiti etc.

So within 2½ days in 2002, two separate earthquakes (7.2 & 7.6) devistated Muslim terrorist stongholds in Afghanistan and the Philippines. What are the chances of this occurring naturally.

Afghan Earthquake of 3 March 2002

Afghan Al-Qaeda fighters use the natural honeycomb series of caves that run throughout the entire region where huge stocks of ammunition are stored in the caves, many carved out further and reinforced to sustain large bomb blasts from above. However, these Afghan caves are not impenetrable from a weapon whose energy strikes from 120 miles below.[24]

"A powerful earthquake struck northern Afghanistan Sunday, killing at least five people and injuring 31 others in the capital Kabul and the eastern city of Jalalabad . . . 7.2 on the Richter scale . . . depth of 120 miles . . . 4:38 pm Sunday, 3 March 2002 . . . caused buildings to sway and people to flee into the streets in . . . Tajik, Dushanbe; Islamabad, Pakistani; New Delhi, India . . . with the quake rocking vast swathe of land stretching from Central to South Asia, much of it rugged and remote mountains, the extent of damage and casualties was not immediately clear . . . great potential for landslides."[25]

A source in a Moscow Geophysical Research Center on condition of anonymity: "The earthquake . . . might have been triggered by super-modern weapons intensively used by the US aviation in the seismically dangerous areas of Afghanistan. This supposition was confirmed by the unusually strong and lengthy tremors (up to one minute) that originated in the Hindu Kush Mountains and spread onto Afghanistan, Tajikistan, Uzbekistan, Pakistan and India. No old Kabul residents remember an earthquake similar . . ."[26]

Usually strong and lengthy tremors are characteristic of HAARP.

Philippines Earthquake of 6 March 2002

TIME, 25 February 2002: "The US war on terror . . . Afghanistan – and now the southern Philippines . . . between southern Negros and northern Mindanao . . . island of Basilan . . ."[27]

NEWS BRIEF, 5 March 2002. US National Earthquake Information Center: A major 7.6 magnitude earthquake hit the Philippines' Mindanao Island at 5:16 a.m Wednesday 6 March 2002, about 620 miles south-southeast of the capital, Manila."[28]

So American earthquake technology created a 7.2 earthquake in Afghanistan at 4:30 pm Sunday, 3 March 2002, and 2½ days later, a 7.5 earthquake in the Philippines at 5:16 a.m Wednesday 6 March 2002 – both in locations where the 'Muslim terrorists' were hiding out.

---

[23] 'Tactical nuclear weapons deployed: US and Russia Strike Reciprocal Deal on Tactical Nuclear Weapons Deployment Against Afghanistan and Chechnya', 6 October 2001; 'Bush and Putin in Nuclear Tit-for-Tat Accord', 5 October 2001, conversation the week prior.

[24] Russia Charges U.S. Caused Earthquake in Afghanistan last Sunday by 'intensively' using out 'Super-Weapons'.

[25] 'Big 7.2 Quake Hits Afghanistan – At Least Five Dead', News Brief, Reuters, 3 March 2002, Rense.com.

[26] 'Sunday quake may have been caused by bombing", filed by Vladimir Suprin, *Itar/Tass* via *COMTEX*, 5 March 2002, News Brief.

[27] 'Rumbles In the Jungle', Anthony Spaeth, *TIME*, 25 February 2002.

[28] 'Magnitude 7.6 Quake Hits Philippines', NEWS BRIEF, *U.P. News*, 5 March 2002.

Indian Ocean Earthquake and Boxing Day Tsunami of 26 December 2004

The target was the Tamil Tiger/ LTTE terrorists in oil-rich Banda Aceh and north and east parts of Sri Lanka. They were two years into a tenuous ceasefire with the government, but also busy re-arming for the decisive phase of the civil war in July 2006. LTTE was on the US (and 30 other countries) terrorism list.[29]

At 6:58 am on Boxing Day 2004, a 9.2 magnitude earthquake struck in northern Sumatra. It's epicenter was 155 miles (250 km) off the coast of Banda Aceh, 19 miles (30 km) below sea level in the Andaman Sea. It was a mega-thrust earthquake, 8.3–10 minutes long, and the fourth largest since seismic instruments began measuring.[30]

This Sumatra-Andaman earthquake occurred on the oblique boundary between the Australian plate and the Sundaland plate which was assumed dormant. The Australian plate plunged (subduction) under Java and Sumatra. Despite being dormant, the northern section of the Sunda ruptured over a length of 1600 km, the plate lifted up 20 metres, and secondary pop up faults (long narrow parts of the sea floor) popped up in seconds increasing the speed of tsunami.

The earthquake was felt simultaneously in Bangladesh, India, Malaysia, Myanmar, Thailand, Singapore and the Maldives (1500 miles/ 2400 km directly east with no barriers) where there is an American military base just 1 foot (0.3 m) above sea-level – so there was absolutely no destruction there, not even a wave, despite it being in the middle of the Indian Ocean. They achieved this by countering with a series of waves generated in the opposite direction.

The Indian Ocean Earthquake was the largest earthquake since Alaska in 1964 and Kamchatka, Russia in 1737.[31] The Indian Ocean quake killed 100,000 and the tsunami travelled the Indian Ocean and killed another 167,000 in surrounding countries.[32]

Tsunamis travel up to 700 km/hr. This tsunami, variously called the 'Boxing Day Tsunami', 'Indonesian Tsunami', '2004 Indian Ocean tsunami' and 'Asian Tsunami', was up to 30 metres (100 feet) high. Indonesia, Sri Lanka, India, and Thailand were the hardest hit, as well as low-lying Banda Aceh – an oil- and timber-rich province . . . and the target.

The Tamil Tigers/ LTTE lost some of their fleet of small attack boats, several caches of buried weapons, and their prized surface-to-air missiles (SAMs). With some US$7 billion in foreign aid pledged for Aceh's reconstruction, four days after the tsunami, Aceh's rebels offered a ceasefire. The Tamil Rehabilitation Organisation (TRO) took in tens of millions of dollars in aid which they spent building up the Tamil arsenal to match the government's standing army. Washington then banned all funding to TRO and 20 months later (August 2005) the Aceh rebels were ready to sign the peace accord."[33]

This was another case of gunboat diplomacy and the heavy hand of oil.

---

[29] 'Tale of war and peace in the 2004 tsunami', *Gulf Times*, Time Out, 24 December 2009, p. 3, paraphrased.

[30] Wikipedia: Indian Ocean Earthquake.

[31] The 472,300 km² Kamchatka Peninsula in the Russian Far East on the Pacific Ocean has many volcanoes and an unusual amount of lightning, so it's a place where the Earth releases its energy. Immediately offshore is the 10.5 km deep Kuril-Kamchatka Trench.

[32] 'Report on Banda Aceh mega-thrust earthquake, December 26, 2004', Prepared January 7th 2005 by C. Vigny, on behalf of the SEAMERGES participants, AUNP Asea-EU University Network Programme, Europe Aid Co-operation Office.

[33] 'Tale of war and peace in the 2004 tsunami', *Gulf Times*, Time Out, 24 December 2009, p. 3, paraphrased.

Samoa Tsunami of 29 September 2009

The targets were family members of a person challenging the New Zealand Judiciary as 'a paedophile and crime creation movement, heroin traffickers, methamphetamine traffickers, drug money launderers, contract killers, and the Mafia. That is – the New Zealand Judiciary is the mafia in New Zealand, and the Samoa Tsunami was only to prove this further.

The 6.48 am 29 September 2009 Samoa earthquake was an 8.1 Magnitude submarine earthquake 100 miles (165 km) off the south coast and 11 miles (18 km) deep on the outer rise of the Kermadec-Tonga Subduction Zone. There were more than 40 aftershocks with a 5.0+ magnitude within 48 hours, and nine 5.5+ over 41 hours. It was the largest earthquake of 2009.[34]

There was only a 3-inch (76 mm) rise in sea level near the epicenter, but that was enough to create a tsunami travelling at 600 km/hr and arriving within 10 minutes, peaking as a 14 metre (46 ft) high wave on the Samoan coast.

This manmade tsunami's closest landing place was the south coast – Coconuts Beach Club in Maninoa where this and all the villages and resorts to the west and east were totally destroyed.

With a warning from a 16-year-old school boy on "before-school tsunami duty", some of the survivors got two minutes warning and ran for their lives towards the hills.

It was 500 metres from the Coconut Beach Resort fales over the water to the Main South Coast Road, but most were hit by the then 13 foot (4 metre high) tsunami while trying to out-run it.

Five surfers were out beyond the reef at Coconuts and caught the tsunami in, past the shore and onto land where two of them had their surfboards wedged 2 foot into the bank face.

The tsunami hit Samoa, American Samoa, and Tonga killing 189 people – 179 in Samoa.

Upolu is the main island of Samoa, 75 km long (W-E) and 25 km wide (N-S). This south coast is the main tourist area, the area most targetted by the tsunami, and the hardest hit. Twenty villages on Samoa's south side were destroyed. There were only 30–36 villages.

The 33 km between Salamumu village in the west and Salani village in the east – smack bang in the middle is Coconut Beach Resort in Maninoa.

Coconuts Beach Resort and Sinalei Reef Resort in Siumu village were hit by a wave 13 feet (4 m) high – destroyed. Only the church and the sign on the rock wall were left standing.

14 km west of Coconuts is Salamumu village and Sa'Moana Resort – completely destroyed.

19 km east of Coconuts, the cluster villages of Salani, Satalo and Poutasi were completely wiped out with a high death rate.

From Salani, 18 km east is the tourist zone of Lalomanu on the southeast coast where the wave was 20–30 ft (6.1–9.1 m) high and the cliffs above were scoured out to a height of 10–15 m (33–49 ft). Lalomanu – destroyed. The eastern part of the island remains without power or water months after the quake.

34 km east of Coconuts, in Lepa, only the church remained standing. Here, Samoa's Prime Minister had his home. Prime Minister Tuilaepa Aiono Sailele Malielegaoi and his Deputy Prime Minister, Misa Telefoni Retzlaff were in Auckland (NZ) at the time of the tsunami.

The tsunami left 3,000 people homeless and created US$147.25 million in damage.

The New Zealand rescue effort stunk like an inside job with organised sabotage and targetted kills right down to the insurance payouts.

---

[34] Wikipedia: '2009 Samoa earthquake'.

Samoa's Faleolo International Airport on the northwest side of the island 20 miles (28 km) northwest of Coconuts with an elevation of 58 ft (18 m) was declared safe and operating the following afternoon. The Australian government rescued their citizens as soon as the planes could land – within 32 hours.

New Zealanders were then prevented from getting on their scheduled flights home.

New Zealand then dispatched RNZAF P-3 Orions to assess the damage and search for bodies (but still no rescue).

An RNZAF C-130 Hercules with medical staff and supplies, tents, food, stretchers and makeshift morgues, was sent on 30 September. It takes the Army/ Airforce 2½ hours to roll off their presidential suite and roll on their hospital suite, yet they took 36 hours to leave and 72 hours to arrive. Everytime they need to do a major rescue (more than 3 hrs flight), they break down. The plane flew out, had a break down on the way, and returned to NZ. One can only assume sabotage from all levels, so there's never anyone blame. So still no rescues.

A 7 RNZAF was then sent.

An RNZAF helicopter then distributed supplies within the island, but no rescue out.

Seeing the military couldn't cope, Air New Zealand sent a larger Boeing 777 aircraft to carry in relief workers and evacuate tourists to Auckland, but still no rescue for the injured.

It was only after all this went down, that sick New Zealanders were transported back on an RNZAF plane which landed at Whenuapai at 1.30 pm on 3 October 2009 – 3.25 days after the tsunami (correcting for the 23 hour dateline lag).

This rescue was to take another 24 hours, but one New Zealander got on the blower from a hospital in Samoa and said: "Some of us are going to die here. In 36 hours, a woman is going to lose an arm. Don't you know that in the tropics, after five days, serious injuries get septicemia[35] and require amputation."

If the New Zealand Army/Airforce had taken five days to arrive, there would have been amputation amongst the targets. Of course, those at the time were bedridden, only semi-conscious, and didn't know they were targets, but there were ants crawling on her bed, which is a sign of septicemia.

On top of this, insurance wasn't paid out to New Zealanders under the age of 18 by TRAVELSURE TRAVEL INSURANCE, despite their form saying all the group were insured. This reeks of MI-6, as MI-6 control the world's insurance firms, and hey presto, guess who is a bisexual MI-6 heroin trafficker – Peter Williams QC – New Zealand's mafia boss.

An hour after the Evaluation Conference on 26 August 2009 against PAWQC, where I had submitted "How can one defame the mafia boss?", Gregarious of the Melbourne Mafia approached me and asked if I would like him to talk to Williams. I said "No", but he did anyway. Later, I was to find out that PAWQC was the lawyer for the mafia – this one, and the one before – and PAWQC's own lawyer, Murray Gibson, was a lawyer for the next mafia boss . . . so this was right in the midst.

Gregarious then went around to PAWQC's on Friday 28 August 2009 and said: "Would you like Mr Hallett to be found in the Auckland harbour?" PAWQC placed his hands on Gregarious' shoulders and said: "In no way are you to kill Mr Hallett. It will come straight back to me."

Around 8 September, an intermediary asked me where my child was going on holiday?

Three weeks later there was an 8.1 Magnitude earthquake, 100 miles south of Samoa's Coconut Beach Resort where my 17 year old was sleeping in the fale's over the water. Short sighted, she ran without glasses, was swamped by the 13 foot/ 4 metre wave, but survived.

---

[35] Septicemia is a serious, life-threatening infection that gets worse very quickly. It can arise from infections.

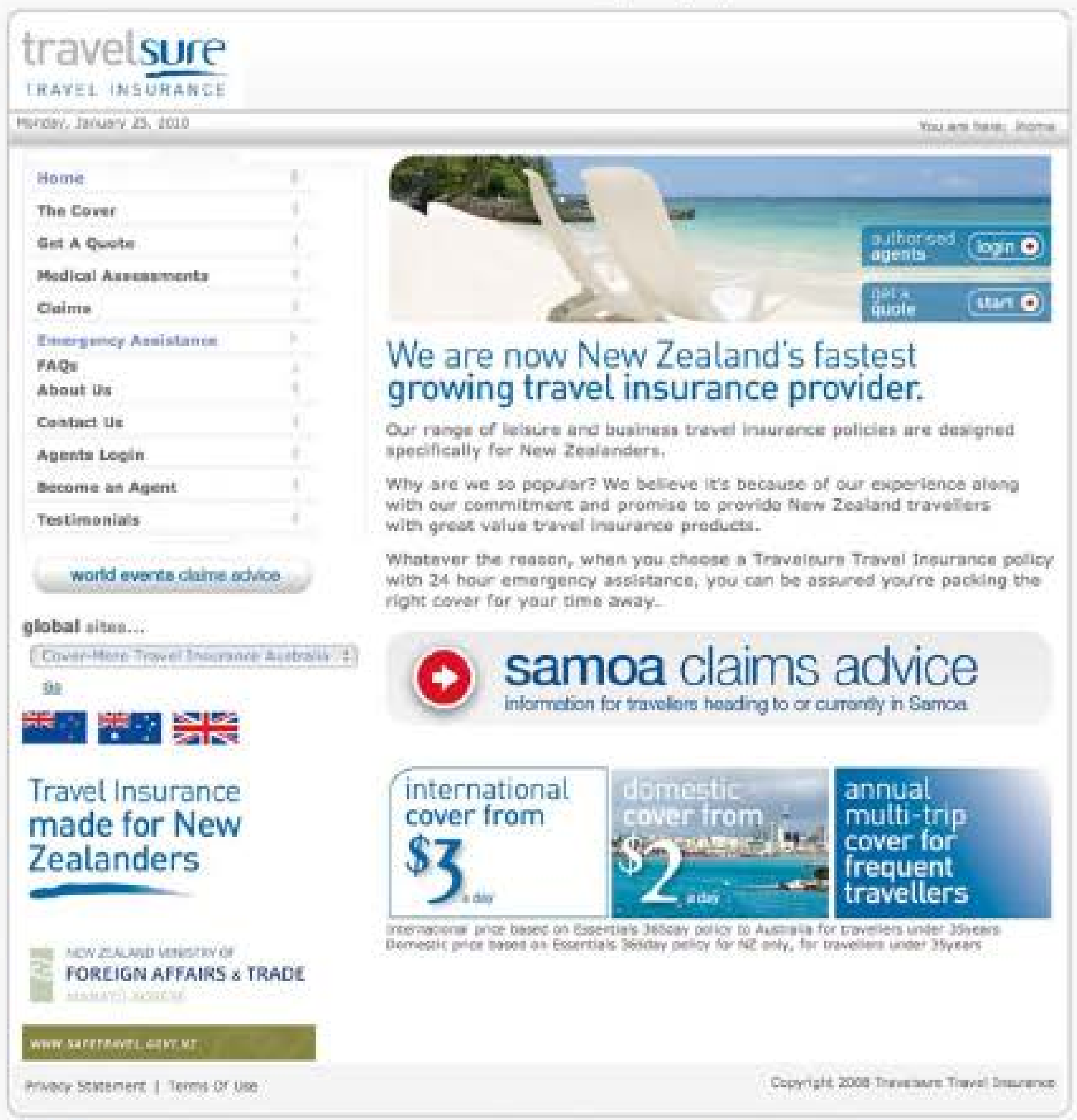
travelsure
TRAVEL INSURANCE
Monday, January 25, 2010
You are here: Home
Home
The Cover
Get A Quote
Medical Assessments
Claims
Emergency Assistance
FAQs
About Us
Contact Us
Agents Login
Become an Agent
Testimonials
world events claims advice
global sites...
Cover-More Travel Insurance Australia
Go
authorised agents
login
get a quote
start
samoa claims advice
information for travellers heading to or currently in Samoa
international cover from $3 a day
domestic cover from $2 a day
annual multi-trip cover for frequent travellers
Travel Insurance made for New Zealanders
NEW ZEALAND MINISTRY OF FOREIGN AFFAIRS & TRADE
MANATŪ AORERE
WWW.SAFETRAVEL.GOVT.NZ
Privacy Statement | Terms Of Use

We are now New Zealand's fastest growing travel insurance provider.

Our range of leisure and business travel insurance policies are designed specifically for New Zealanders.

Why are we so popular? We believe it's because of our experience along with our commitment and promise to provide New Zealand travellers with great value travel insurance products.

Whatever the reason, when you choose a Travelsure Travel Insurance policy with 24 hour emergency assistance, you can be assured you're packing the right cover for your time away.

International price based on Essentials 365day policy to Australia for travellers under 35years
Domestic price based on Essentials 365day policy for NZ only, for travellers under 35years

Copyright 2008 Travelsure Travel Insurance

about us

Travelsure is New Zealand's fastest growing travel insurance provider. Travelsure is also part of a specialist travel insurance services group with operations in New Zealand, Australia and the UK.

The group, founded by New Zealanders in 1986:

- manages the travel insurance arrangements for approximately 1 million travellers per annum;
- manages in excess of $220 million in travel insurance premiums per annum;
- manages approximately 60,000 travel insurance claims per year; and
- employs approximately 200 travel insurance and emergency assistance specialists, including doctors and nurses.

Each year more than 1,000,000 travellers pack a Travel Insurance policy from our group when they travel. These travellers are all protected by 24 hour emergency assistance provided by our sister company, Customer Care. Our policies are underwritten by Great Lakes Australia.

This experience enables us to provide comprehensive yet competitive travel insurance products supported by excellent service.

FOREIGN AFFAIRS & TRADE
MANATŪ AORERE
About the Ministry
Foreign relations
Trade and economic relations

The Ministry of Foreign Affairs and Trade works to make New Zealand's voice heard overseas and contributes directly to the security and well-being of all New Zealanders.

NZ to give $1 million in aid for Haiti

New Zealand is making an im
international relief efforts foll
in Haiti, Foreign Minister Mur

- $1 million in aid for Haiti, 14 January (Beehive)

Sumatra Earthquake of 30 September 2009

Samoans know that when they get hit by an earthquake, Indonesia gets hit within two days. Indonesians also know this, so the wisest of them went to higher ground and told their relatives, although they only had, at most, 16 hours to receive the TV/Radio broadcasts and act.

Despite them being 9,650 km apart and half the world away, Samoa and Indonesia are connected by fault lines. So 16 hours and 28 minutes later, at 5:14 pm on 30 September 2009, a 7.6 magnitude earthquake hit 28 miles (45 km) WNW of Padang, Sumatra, killing 1,115 people and leaving around a million homeless.

Oil and Gas wars in the Gulf of Mexico – Disappearing Island

US and Mexicans were negotiating over oil and gas. The Mexicans said: 'We've got an island out there'. The Americans replied: 'Have you?' When it was realised the presence of the island in the Gulf of Mexico helped to demarcate Mexico's claim to a gas field, it was completely destroyed – disappeared. It was reputed to have been vapourised from a Nautilus Projector out in space (James Bond, 'Die Another Day', 2002). Its absence has only been noticed in the last year (2009). The island was several kilometres wide. Since then, Mexicans have been advertising on radio for people who have been on the island to come forward with their testimony.

Spymaster: "Gerald Bull told me: 'The Americans have given the Nautilus Projector away to Israel during the time of Clinton, and now they have to go cap-in-hand begging to the Israelis to use it for fire missions'.

"Recently in the US, paedophile films were made shaming paedophiles. They caught a Rabbi approaching a child and published his face. He came from a Rabbinical group where three others have also been stung. There was a time under Clinton [1993–2001] when none of this would have been released to the media."

Eureka City California Earthquake of 9 January 2010

"A magnitude 6.5 earthquake rocked Eureka City in Northern California on Saturday 9 January 2010 at 4:27 p.m. It was centered 33 miles offshore, southwest of the Pacific coastal city, 13 miles deep. It was very wiggly, rolling in all directions. There were no deaths."[36]

This was the result of "the US Navy testing two different earthquake weapons that week in the Pacific".[37]

Haiti Earthquake of 12 January 2010

The Haiti magnitude 7.3 earthquake hit three days later at 4:53 pm on 12 January 2010 causing 500,000 deaths. The difference in the death toll was caused by three factors:

1. Magnitude: A 7.5 earthquake is twice as strong as a 6.5 earthquake, so it was 1.6 x stronger.
2. The Eureka City buildings were designed to withstand resonance and earthquakes.
   The Haiti buildings were designed to withstand neither.
3. Two different earthquake weapons were used. The more devasting weapon was used on Haiti where the results appeared like a nuclear blast without the radiation.

The US Navy's Deputy Commander of their Southern Command, General P.K. Keen was pre-positioned on the island prior to the quake. So it is 'more than likely' the US Navy had 'full prior knowledge'.[38]

"US Ambass. to Haiti, Kenneth Merten: "It is the same as if an atomic bomb had been exploded'.[39]

Apparently, ". . . these weapons being tested by the United States . . . for the . . . planned destruction of Iran through a series of catastrophic earthquakes designed to bring down their present Islamic regime . . . the New Great Game that will decide the winners and losers of this 21st Century."[40]

---

[36] 'Magnitude 6.5 earthquake rattles Eureka in Northern California', Ruben Vives and Patrick McDonnell, Los Angeles Times, 10 January 2010, heavily paraphrased to get to the point.

[37] Source: http://silviavideler.wordpress.com/, Henk Beheeder, 16 January 2010.

[38] *Ibid.*

[39] 'US forms blockade to stop exodus | Haiti: Americans prepare for migration crisis as thousands seek to flee country, *New Zealand Herald*, Telegraph Group Ltd, 21 January 2010, A16.

Oil found in Haiti and Cuba

Large amounts of oil were discovered in Haiti by January 2008: "Scientists Daniel and Ginette Mathurin indicated that 'under Haitian soil it is rich in oil and fuel'. 'We have identified 20 oil sites, five of them are considered of great importance by specialists and politicians'. 'The Central Plateau, including the region of Thomonde, the plain of the Cul-de-Sac and the bay of Port-au-Prince are full of hydrocarbons. 'The oil reserves of Haiti are more important than those of Venezuela. An Olympic pool compared to a glass of water . . . to illustrate the importance of Haitian oil compared with those of Venezuela which is one of the world's largest oil producers'."[41]

London Guardian, 18 October 2008: "Cuba: Mother nature . . . appears to have blessed the island with enough oil reserves to vault it into the ranks of energy powers. The government announced there may be more than 20 billion barrels of recoverable oil in offshore fields in Cuba's share of the Gulf of Mexico, more than twice the previous estimate. This puts Cuba's reserves on par with the US and into the world's top 20. Drilling is expected to start in 2009 by Cuba's state oil company Cubapetroleo, or Cupet."[42]

Haiti and Cuba are only 52 miles (84 km) apart and perhaps in the same stretch of oil field. Haiti is protected by America, and Cuba is protected by Russia – so it's the 'New COLD OIl WAR' (NCOW). If America bombs Haiti into oblivion and saves the population by exporting them, it can begin mining for oil in exchange for adoption – which it's already doing with the tens of thousands of new orphans – and even kidnapping those with relatives.

By 2005, America was already eating into its strategic reserves, so the pressure is on.

So the gunboat diplomacy begins . . . and within 10 days of Haiti's US Navy Tesla Howitzer (Longitudinal Wave Interferometer/ Scalar electromagnetic superweapon)/ HAARP earthquake . . . the Obama/ Bush/ Clinton team were circling with 10,000 American soldiers hiding in the Port-au-Prince Presidential Palace effectively occupying the country – waiting for the Haitians to die out in greater numbers – while "protecting our oil".[43]

Who said the US President wasn't the 'PIRATE CAPTAIN OF A BRITISH PLANTATION'. This is rape a pillage on a massive scale, with the original meaning of rape being 'to take something from someone'.

US Navy Forth Fleet in the Caribbean (1 July 2008–)

"Defense Department statement: 'Disbanded in 1950, the U.S. Navy plans to re-establish its Fourth Fleet to oversee ships, aircraft, and submarines operating in the Caribbean, Central and South America', effective 1 July 2008. Rear Admiral Joseph Kernan is leading the fleet. Kernan is the current commander of the Naval Special Warfare Command. They will coordinate efforts with the U.S. Naval Forces Southern Command. Both will be based in Mayport, Florida where they are planning to build up their forces in the region.

"Admiral James Stavridis oversees military affairs for Latin America, to Congress, 6 March 2008: 'The designated new fleet will be led by a nuclear aircraft carrier to patrol the waters of the Caribbean and Latin America in support of counter-terrorism operations'. [Read: "There is oil there and we want it".]

"The move comes as South American nations, including Venezuela, Colombia, Brazil, and Ecuador, boost military spending to protect oil reserves."[44]

---

[40] Source: http://silviavideler.wordpress.com/, Henk Beheeder, 16 January 2010.
[41] Abibitumi Kasa Afrikan Language & Liberation Institutes & Community Networks forums, www.abibitumikasa.com.
[42] http://www.guardian.co.uk/world/2008/oct/18/cuban-oil, paraphrased.
[43] 'Are We in Haiti because of Oil?, Peter Schlosser, Prisonplanet.com, 21 January 2010, paraphrased.
[44] 'Navy To Revive Fleet for Latin America, Caribbean', Nadine Elsibai, *Bloomberg News*, Washington, 25 April 2008.

Caribbean War set up

Nov. 2008: "President-elect Barak Obama refused to sign a free trade agreement with Colombia and may well change or end the $600 million/ year aid program (1999–2008)."[45]

July 2009: *Cambio* magazine: "The United States is negotiating for the use of five military facilities in Colombia, in an agreement whose objectives include 'filling the gaps left by the eventual cutting of [military] aid in 'Plan Colombia'.

"This could constitute an end run around the struggles waged for years by human rights, religious, peace, indigenous, Afro-Colombian, women's, and youth groups to demilitarize U.S. policy in Colombia."[46]

But this is more Orwellian double-speak. America will give aid to Colombia only if it supplies five military bases. Often the solution is an unseen war. In this case, the Colombian military bases would be needed for humanitarian efforts for the further destruction of oil fields it the region. [So 46 days later, on 27 February 2010, Chile had an 8.8 M earthquake.]

So it's unseen earthquake weapons attacking oil-rich friendly nations.
The oil is then taken for the price of relief.

Haiti's Special Envoy

Bill Clinton was announced the UN's Special Envoy to Haiti on 17 May 2009, but only after it was known to contain vast amounts of oil. Seven months later a 7.3 earthquake hit Haiti at 4:53 pm on 12 January 2010, 13 km deep, 25 km WSW of Port-au-Prince, killing 500,000 people – 5% of the 9.7 million residents.[47] He truly is his father's son and his mother's daughter.

Russian Navy in the Caribbean (November 2008–)

"Russian warships have arrived in the Caribbean for war games with Venezuela in their first military exercise in the region since the end of the Cold War'. The arrival of the Russian flotilla included the flagship nuclear powered cruiser *Peter the Great* and the destroyer *Admiral Chabanenko*. It came on the eve of the first visit to Caracas by the Russian leader, President Dmitry Medvedev, to Venezuela, Peru, Brazil and Cuba.

"Venezuelan President Hugo Chavez is a former paratrooper colonel and has visited Moscow three times in 2008 where Russia offered him a billion-dollar credit line for arms purchases.

"Russia has already sold Venezuela US$4bn worth of top of the range Sukhoi fighter jets, helicopters and Kalashnikov assault rifles.

"President Chavez wants Russia to help him build a nuclear reactor for peaceful purposes, like that being developed by his ally, Iran.

"Neighbouring Colombia is one of the last nations in South America to be an unconditional US ally. It is watching with unease as Chavez refits his armed forces and expands his influence across the region."[48]

No doubt this will grant America its five military bases there in Columbia.

"A grim report prepared by the Russian Northern Fleet for Prime Minister Putin is stating today that the catastrophic earthquake that has devastated the Island of Haiti was the 'clear result' of a United States Navy test of one of its 'earthquake weapons' planned to be used by the Americans upon the Persian Nation of Iran but had gone 'horribly wrong'.

"The Northern Fleet has been monitoring US Naval movements and activities in the

---

[45] 'Russian navy conducts war games in Caribbean', Jeremy McDermott, Latin America Correspondent, 25 November 2008, paraphrased.

[46] 'U.S. Military Sites Set to Replace Plan Colombia', John Lindsay-Poland, Colombia Peace News: 'A U.S. Military "End Run", submitted by FOR, 15 July 2009.

[47] The announcement came while the chapter where Bill Clinton was exposed as 'the son of Winston Churchill and Pamela Harriman' was being written, and the earthquake came just weeks after the chapter was finished.

[48] 'Russian navy conducts war games in Caribbean', paraphrased.

Caribbean since 2008 when the Americans announced their intention to re-establish their Forth Fleet that had been disbanded in 1950, and which was responded to by the Motherland when later that year a Russian flotilla led by nuclear powered cruiser *Peter the Great* began their first exercises in this region since the ending of the Cold War.[49]

Haiti Results

So Haiti has become a new American base overnight. The military is going there in droves, but they aren't lifting anyone out of the collapsed buildings and the UN is just counting bodies.

And then it gets leaked out that Haiti has deposits of gold, iridium and more oil than Venezula – an olympic pool compared to a glass of water. So there's your motive.

Al Jazeera TV News, Haiti, 22 Jan. 2010: “There have been 50 aftershocks. It is the biggest relief effort in history and the worst organised. Nine days after the quake, no aid has got through. The Port is semi-operational from 21 January after forklifts were seen moving containers around on the relief boats, none of which was being taken off onto the island. Some aid is now getting through, but it's limited to bags of rice which people fight for and take off each other while UN troops and Haitian police just watch. Haitians are still waiting for the promised help to arrive as they sleep out in the open. 3,000 people piled on a boat licensed for 600 at the other port. Newly orphaned children were flown out to Holland and America.

The Head of the UN in Haiti was killed during the quake when the top of the UN building collapsed. The US Navy's Deputy Commander of their Southern Command, General P.K. Keen survived. The question is, like Pearl Harbor, was Keen out riding his horse at the time, so he neither got to see, hear, nor feel in danger of the earthquake, and upon his return, acted without surprise, and in silence – all the commands pre-issued.

“Haiti has a longstanding history of US military intervention and occupation going back to the beginning of the 20th Century. US interventionism has contributed to the destruction of Haiti's national economy, the impoverishment of its population, and now the eradication of its colonial past.

“Is it a Humanitarian Operation or an Invasion? The total lack of a functioning government in Haiti was used to legitimize, on humanitarian grounds, the sending in of a powerful military force, which has de facto taken over several governmental functions . . . While presidents Obama and Préval spoke on the phone, there were no reports of negotiations between the two governments regarding the entry and deployment of US troops on Haitian soil. The decision was taken and imposed unilaterally by Washington – so it was pre-arranged.

“The main actors in America's ‘humanitarian operation’ are the Department of Defense, the State Department, and the U.S. Agency for International Development (USAID) which has also been entrusted in channelling food aid to Haiti, distributed by the World Food Program.

“The military component of the US mission . . . tends to overshadow the civilian functions of rescuing a desperate and impoverished population. The overall humanitarian operation is not being led by civilian governmental agencies such as FEMA or USAID, but by the Pentagon. The dominant decision making role has been entrusted to US Southern Command (SOUTHCOM).

“Aircraft carrier, USS *Carl Vinson* and its complement of supporting ships has already arrived in Port au Prince. The 2,000-member Marine Amphibious Unit as well as soldiers from the U.S. Army's 82nd Airborne division ‘are trained in a wide variety of missions including security and riot-control in addition to humanitarian tasks’. . .”[50]

---

[49] ‘US Quake Test Goes Horribly Wrong, Leaves 500,000 Dead In Haiti’, Sorcha Faal, 14 January 2010; http://silviavideler.wordpress.com/, Henk Beheeder, 16 January 2010; ‘HAARP Lights Seen before Manmade Haiti Earthquake’, APFN, 16 January 2010.

[50] ‘The Militarization of Emergency Aid to Haiti: Is it a Humanitarian Operation or an Invasion?’, Michel Chossudovsky, Global Research, January 15, 2010, Globalresearch, paraphrased.

Don't Rely on the Red Cross for HELP (1999–)

Red Cross, 1999–2001: Bernadine Healy was president and CEO of the Red Cross (Dec. 1999–31 Dec. 2001) during 9/11. After 9/11, the Red Cross began the Liberty Fund and raised $564 million for that purpose, but only distributed $154 million (27 %) citing that the rest ($410 million) had "evolved into a war fund."

Dr. Bernadine Healy had long served on the board of defense contractor, Battelle Memorial Institute, that makes biochemical weapons, including anthrax. She is a member of the President's Council of Advisors on Science and Technology. Dr. Healy had more knowledge about war-making than humanitarian organizations.[51]

In the spring of 2001 the FDA issued a record fine to the Red Cross for mishandling CMV infected blood products. This is despite Dr. Healy serving as Director of the National Institutes of Health.

During 9/11, the Red Cross failed to show up at the Pentagon crash site. Attorney General Eliot Spitzer, and some in Congress then criticized Healy and the Red Cross via the media for designating 9/11 funds for activities that did not directly involve victims.

In Orwellian double speak, Red Cross CEO/President Dr. Bernadine Healy said: "Don't confuse us with the '9/11 Fund in New York'. Don't confuse us with 'Habitat for Humanity'. Don't confuse us with the 'Scholarship in New York for the victims'." Yet her banner was: 'Together we can save a life'.

The Red Cross Board then redirected all the Liberty Fund to those who had suffered or faced hardships at the attack site, making the change retroactive from mid-November to 11 September 2001.

A lack-luster performance bordering on purposeful sabotage led to Healy's resignation under pressure. She resigned as president on 31 December 2001 saying: "The Liberty Fund . . . has [now] evolved into a war fund. We must have blood readiness. We must have the ability to help our troops if we go into a ground war. We must have the ability to help the victims of tomorrow."[52]

Healy's Red Cross half-year salary was $296,661 (1 July–31 December 2001) with a severance payment of $1.63 million (US$1,926,661).[53]

Murder will always get you behind the money and treason always gets a front row seat, so Dr. Bernadine Healy is now the Health Editor for *U.S. News & World Report*. She writes the 'On Health' column and blogs 'Heart to Heart' where she covers matters close to her heart.

Dr. Bernadine Healy is Androgen Insensitivity Syndrome Grade 7 (AIS 007). That is, she was conceived a male, has male drives, but was born a model-like female. Often they don't like showing their hands, because they have man's hands, but they are very useful heading charities as everyone likes a model-front person, especially the American coporates. It doesn't matter to them that Dr. Bernadine Healy's speciality was anthrax – when she was heading a rescue charity – and had the Red Cross sued for distributing contaminated blood.

Healy's results were the same as before and after for the Red Cross, which is now a corporate entity with all its squabbling, infighting, sexual favours, and US$1.63 million payouts as soon as the planed act of war has become a certified success, and the rescue a certified failure. Even in the Red Cross, murder is where the money is.

---

[51] *Ohio State University release*, 'Former NIH Head Bernadine Healy to be Dean of Medicine', 7 July 1995; Guidestar, fiscal year 2007; Morningstar board profile, 'Executive Profile of Bernadine Healy', 16 January 2010, paraphrased.
[52] Wikipedia: Bernadine Healy; 'Red Cross defends handling of Sept. 11 donations', 6 November 2001, CNN.
[53] 'Healy Left Red Cross With Hefty Settlement', Sabrina Eaton, *The Plain Dealer*, Charity Navigator, 1 May 2003.

Dr. Bernadine Healy

American
Red Cross

Red Cross, 2002–2005: Marsha J. Evans was president and CEO of the Red Cross (Aug. 2002–Dec. 2005) during the **Boxing Day Tsunami** (26 December 2004) and **Hurricane Katrina** (August 2005). The Red Cross annual budget was $3.4 billion in 2005.

She was Rear Admiral Marsha Evans who spent 30 years in the Navy. Her master's degree was supplemented by professional studies at the Naval War College in Newport, Rhode Island and the National War College in Washington D.C. . . . and National Executive Director of Girl Scouts of the USA (1998–2002).

During her tenure, the Red Cross paid consultants more than $500,000 for Marsha Evans public relations and to heighten the image of the Red Cross via Hollywood.[54]

During Hurricane Katrina (23–30 August 2005) with winds of 175 mph (280 km/h), 1,836 died and another 705 are confirmed missing (2,541 dead) with US$81.2 billion in damages, making it the costliest tropical cyclone in history affecting the Greater New Orleans, Louisiana, Alabama, Florida, Mississippi, Bahamas and Cuba.

Red Cross President and CEO Rear Admiral Marsha Evans didn't manage to get any Red Cross relief personnel or material into New Orleans immediately after Hurricane Katrina (not even water, food, or a ride out).

CEO Marsha Evans claimed: "Access to New Orleans is controlled by the National Guard and local authorities and while we are in constant contact with them, we simply cannot enter New Orleans against their orders", yet the Red Cross made no public outcry to demand to go in . . . and she didn't use her Navy status and contacts to override the National Guard.

But that's why we employ people with such credentials – to sabotage the help and ensure deaths.

To back up the Red Cross sabotage of relief: "The state Homeland Security Department had requested – and continues to request – that the American Red Cross not come back into New Orleans following the hurricane. Our presence would keep people from evacuating and encourage others to come into the city."[55]

Ditto for the Navy and Homeland Security.

"Senator Chuck Grassley led a congressional probe of the Red Cross in response to criticism after Hurricane Katrina. The House Report found the Red Cross plagued with supply shortages, poorly run shelters, and didn't reach remote Gulf Coast communities. The Senate Finance Committee then found the Red Cross racked with infighting and management turnover, with five acting or permanent heads over the last seven years paid $2.8 million in severance, deferred compensation and bonuses [for failure]."[56]

---

[54] 'Senator calls for changes in Red Cross operations', Bill Nichols, *USA Today*, 27 February 2006

[55] Red Cross website links for this are now obsolete, but it's saved as: 'Our Government is Killing the People of New Orleans', Mark Faulk, The Naked Truth, 3 September 2005.

[56] 'Red Cross Gave Ousted Executive $780,000 Deal', Jacqueline L. Salmon, *Washington Post*, 4 March 2006.

Evans' Red Cross salary was $651,957 (Aug. 2002–June 2003), and $468,599 (2003–04).[57]

Under sharp criticism, Rear Admiral Marsha J. Evans resigned as president and CEO of the Red Cross, but not without a severance package of $780,000 in December 2005. This was payment for planed failure and maximum deaths amounting to genocide. Murder gets you behind the money.

Rear Admiral Marsha J. Evans wasn't exactly penalised for her involvement in the Katrina rescue failure. She was made (2006–08) Director of Huntsman Corporation that specialised in major diversified non-organic Chemicals, based in Salt Lake City; Director of Office Depot supplying office products, based at 6600 North Military Trail, Forida; and Director of Weight Watchers, based in Woodbury, New York.

Spymaster: "Weight Watchers deals in mind control. A fat housewife will suck up anything."

Author: "It looks like these are all ONI controlled fronts."

Evans' Red Cross wages were $651,957 + $468,599 + $903,667[58] + $451,833[59] + severance package of $780,000 = $3,256,055 for her Hurricane Katrina failure.

Evans' Directorship combined directorship earnings were in (Jan-June) 2006: $426,245; 2007: $983,594; 2008: $718,105) = $1,743,944.[60]

Rear Admiral Marsha J. Evans was paid exactly US$5 million over the five years (give or take), August 2002–June 2008, as was likely agreed for the sabotage.

Then on 13 July 2009, Marsha Evans was made Acting Commissioner Ladies Professional Golf Association (LPGA) Board of Directors. The previous Director's salary was US$500,000.

In no way was Rear Admiral Marsha Evans penalised for her Red Cross failures. Rather it stinks of reward.

Marsha Evans on the Red Cross: "The challenge was to take an organization that was set in its ways and rev it up to make it more exciting and engaging."

Red Cross, 2006–2007: Jack McGuire had been the American executive vice president of a British biomedical service that makes filtration and separation materials and devices for labs and businesses. Despite this, the Food and Drug Administration fined the Red Cross $3 million in June 2006 for 135 instances of distributing unsuitable blood products, then placing them on recall, then retrieving them. Where's the trust?

Jack McGuire: "Our job is to take the Red Cross and make it the most releavant that we can to today . . . speed and goodness and capability all brought together . . . the same expectation everywhere . . . people expect to look at the work we do openly and challenge, not just the mission, but how we've delivered that mission . . and they don't want to pay for things that they don't think we should have done."[61]

---

[57] 'Hurricane Katrina: Why is the Red Cross not in New Orleans?, Forbes Charity reviews: 'The Red Cross – A Humanitarian Agency, or Is It A Major Disaster?', Pokey Anderson, 16 January 2010, OpEdNews.com; According to Forbes, American National Red Cross, Emergency relief, Washington, DC: Total Revenue US$3.21 billion, Marsha Evans Salary US$651,957 (1 July 2002–30 June 2003) and US$468,599 (1 July 2003–30 June 2004); American National Red Cross, Emergency relief, Washington, DC: Total Revenue US$3.21 billion, Marsha Evans Salary US$468,599, www.redcross.org.

[58] Estimate of June 2004–June 2005.

[59] Estimate of June 2005–December 2005.

[60] Evans' Directorship earnings: 2006: $23,610.00 + $141,469.00 + $261,166.00 ($426,245); 2007: $282,563.00 + $132,655.00 + $568,376.00 ($983,594); 2008: $271,689.00 + $111,825.00 + $334,591.00 ($718,105) = Subtotal $1,743, 944 = US$5 million.

[61] The American Program Bureau, Speaking to the World – Jack McGuire.

Jack McGuire – you're a fat git.
You're a trained speaker and when you speak, everything falls asleep.

Red Cross, 2007: Mark Everson, IRS Commissioner (2003–07), married with two children, became the Red Cross President, but was removed after six months for having an affair with a subordinate employee (29 May–27 November 2007).[62]

Spymaster: "Red Cross – you virtually have to pull a gun on them and threaten to shoot them in order to get a bandage out of them . . . The top bureaucracy in the Red Cross are virtually all ex-navy, and all as crooked as fuck."

Author: "It's the same with the New Zealand Judiciary. They are such thieves, they will kill you, or your entire family, rather than settle a debt."

Justice Earl Johnson, Jr.: "Poor people have access to the courts in the same sense that Christians had access to the lions."

---

[62] Wikipedia: Mark W. Everson; 'Red Cross chief ousted over ties with subordinate', David Crary, Associated Press, *Houston Chronicle*, 27 November 2007.

Manmade Earthquakes, Volcanoes and Tsunamis – Some History and How-To
The choice is not limited and has been developed since 1893.

1893/98 | Tesla invents reciprocating mechanical resonance oscillator that gives a building an earthquake.

Tesla discovered earth functions as a global electrical grid, pulsing at precise, constant ELF of 7.83 Hz and gets theoretical control over all weather and earthquake functions of Earth.

1900 | Tesla applies for patent to transmit electrical energy through natural mediums. Patent issued in 1905.

1924 | Tesla gets radio waves to bounce off ionosphere 37–620 miles up.

1940 | Tesla announces death ray invention.

Tesla invents Earthquake Machines, Scalar ElectroMagnetic Superweapons called Longitudinal Wave Interferometers, or Tesla Howizters.

1944–50 | Project Seal make tsunamis possible using multiple atomic charges on fault lines.

1958 | White House DOD studying ways to manipulate charges of earth and sky.

1960 | Series of manmade weather disasters begin | 22 May 1960: the Great Chilean Earthquake of 9.5M – the most powerful ever recorded.

1961/64 | Cannons shoot 150 kg Martlets containing Aluminium foil and Copper needles 6.6 km into ionosphere orbit and alter Earth's Magnetic Field . . . resulting in the 9.2 Magnitude, 5 minute long Great Alaska Earthquake of 27 March 1964.

1972 | Precursor to HAARP in Norway reports on 100 megawatt ionosphere heater experiments.

1978 | Soviet Union explodes a 10 megaton nuclear bomb (shockwave bomb) creating the Iran earthquake 36 hours later.

1979 | Americans unleashed one or two of their newly developed 'atomic powered' earthquake weapons (shockwave bomb/ Tesla Electromagnetic Pulse Weapon) on Yugoslavia.

1985 | Eastlund applies for patent to alter Earth's atmosphere that leads to HAARP.

1994 | Military buys Eastlund patents to build the biggest ionosphere heater – HAARP tested.

1995 | Americans cause Kobe earthquake with Tesla technology using electromagnetic power device applying force inside the Earth, ElectroMagnetic Pulse, Giant Plasma weapons positioned in Earth's orbit, Sonic technology, and/or microwave weapon.

1998 | Papua New Guinea Earthquake caused by HAARP results in three locations for the epicentre, a fast, high, deep running, mulitple-wave tsunami that scientists can't understand, with fire seen on the water and burnt fish. It was the deadliest tsunami of the 20th Century.

Nobel Prize winning Scalar Scientist Tom Bearden explains one method to create an Earthquake/ Tsunami: Two scalar beams cross each other creating an interference zone where longitudinal waves travel through the earth to a set of earthquake faults. Deposit EM energy in rocks on both sides, slowly increasing to get crystal mechanical movements, an earthquake, and remote near blameless warfare.

2001–2017 | HAARP operations in full development (High-Frequency Active Auroral Research Program) run by the Pentagon and taken over by Israel that runs the Pentagon. HAARP radiates a 1.7 billion watt beam into the ionosphere 37–620 miles up and boils it, then bounces the long wave radiations back onto the earth, penetrating the ground, oceans, and the human body. HAARP can create nuclear-sized explosions without radiation (patent 4,873,928) and renders all prior nuclear weapons useless, so disarmament is on the way.

11 September 2001 | America displays its HAARP weapon on itself in 9/11.

23 September 2001 | Russia no longer objects to the U.S. use of HAARP type weapons against 'terrorists' anywhere in the world, including close to Russia, and people governments' don't like. Nuclear disarmament is announced and publicly begins.

3 March 2002 | Afghan Earthquake triggered by U.S. aviation super-modern weapons. U.S. forces use nuclear mines in the mountainous terrain of Afghanistan.

6 March 2002 | Philippines Earthquake triggered by U.S. using similar methods.

26 December 2004 | Indian Ocean Earthquake and Boxing Day Tsunami triggered by HAARP.

2009 | Nautilus Projector in space disappears a 2 km long island in the Gulf of Mexico.

29 September 2009 | Samoa Tsunami triggered by HAARP. This was requested by a Queen's Counsel Lawyer/ Mafia Boss in New Zealand to the Crown Prosecutor of Auckland, Simon Moore, Deputy Master of the Pakuranga Hunt Club / Fletchers / Rockefeller to HAARP. It was a targetted hit, as were all the others listed. It killed 189, hit the targets, but didn't kill them.

30 September 2009 | Sumatra Earthquake automatically followed in 16 hours. It killed 1,115. Including the 40 Mr Asia heroin trafficking syndicate murders, this brings the New Zealand mafia boss, Peter Alderidge Williams QC murders to 1,344.

12 January 2010 | Haiti Earthquake triggered by US Navy Tesla Howitzer / Longitudinal Wave Interferometer/ scalar electromagnetic superweapon causing liquification of the ground.

27 February 2010 | HAARP generates ≤ 5 ULF creating a slow moving 4 km oval ring of light 3 km up in the sky. 8 hours later, Chile is hit by an 8.8 M Earthquake.

Goal: Militarize the Oil/Heroin zone | Kill/ Neutralize/ Remove the citizens |
Neutralize/make dependent the governments | Extract the oil/ heroin.

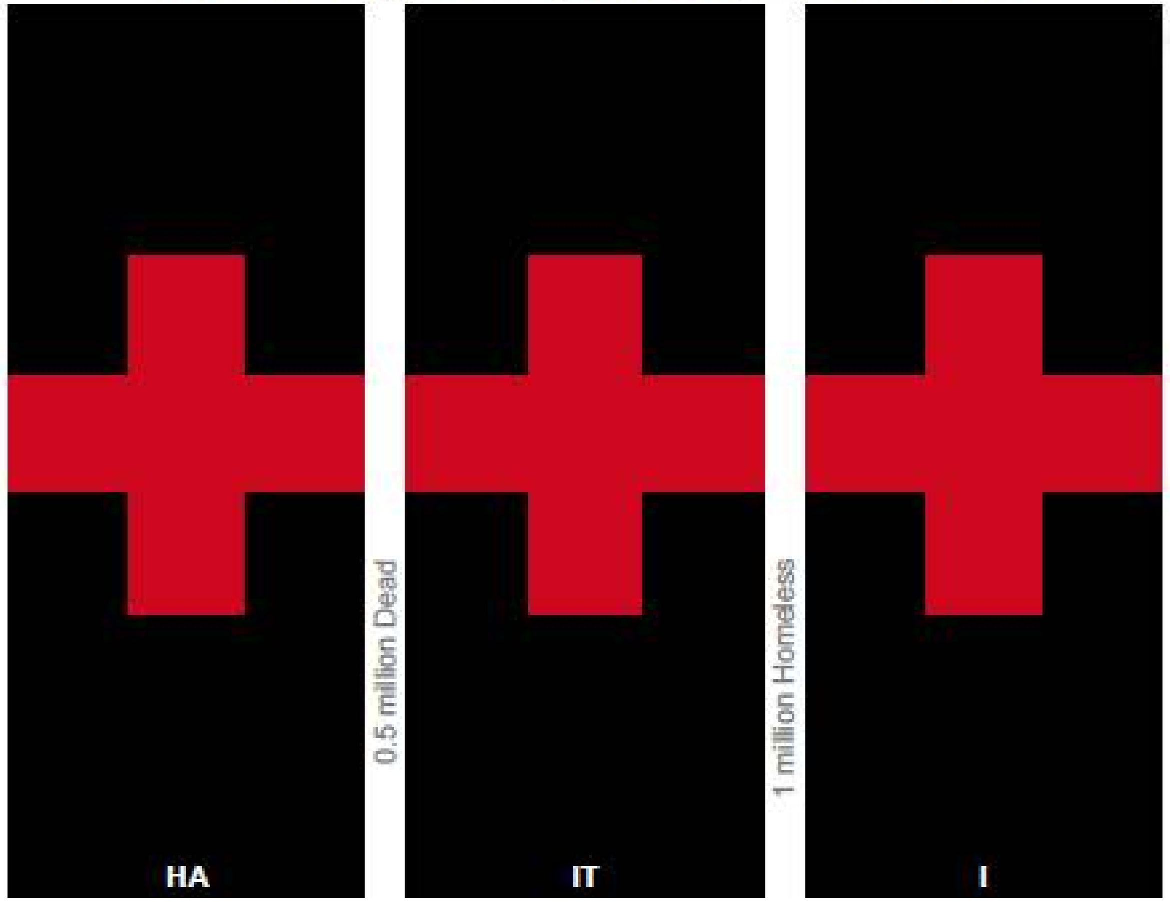

PONEROLOGY

the study of evil within theology

Through the ages, history and moral philosophy (guides of right conduct) have failed to investigate the origin, nature, and course of evil. As a result, the origin and study of evil has been placed outside the conventional worldview, leaving the common man with no understanding of evil or world events.

Ponerology is the modern day scientific study of the secrets of evil – from the Greek 'poneros'.

Polish psychiatrist Andrzej Łobaczewski, gave the name "Ponerology" to the interdisciplinary study of evil – causes behind periods of social injustice – using data from history, philosophy, psychology, psychopathology, sociology and recent advances in medicine, to account for aggressive war, ethnic cleansing, genocide and police states.

The original theory and research was conducted by psychologists and psychiatrists working in Poland, Czechoslovakia and Hungary before Communism became institutionalised there.

Ponerology studies the various causal components of evil, regardless of who, what, or where, and the effects of pathological factors whose carriers are characterized by some degree of psychological deviation amounting to defective leader/s.

PONER·GEO·POLOGY

the study of evil within Geopolitics

Poner·geo·pology is the study of the evil acts of people operating with worldwide influence,
their training and control mechanisms (mainly their shame) and includes:
their apologies expressed throughout the media,
without them owning up to the fact that they were complicit
as a primary player in the cause of the manmade tragedy,
which they and their cartels profited from.

PonerGeoPology is the study of evil within apparent good
for control of humans and the world's resources . . .
and to prevent others doing the same.
It has all the hallmarks of a race to the end.
Its primary hallmark is destruction.

That our world leaders are 'Pirate Captains'
is an evidential starting point.

Red Cross
is now a player in Ponergeopology.

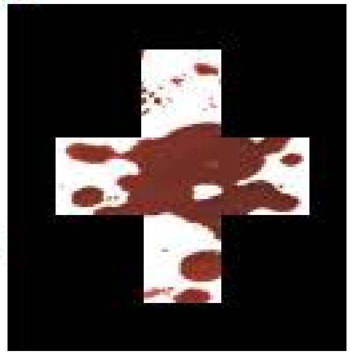

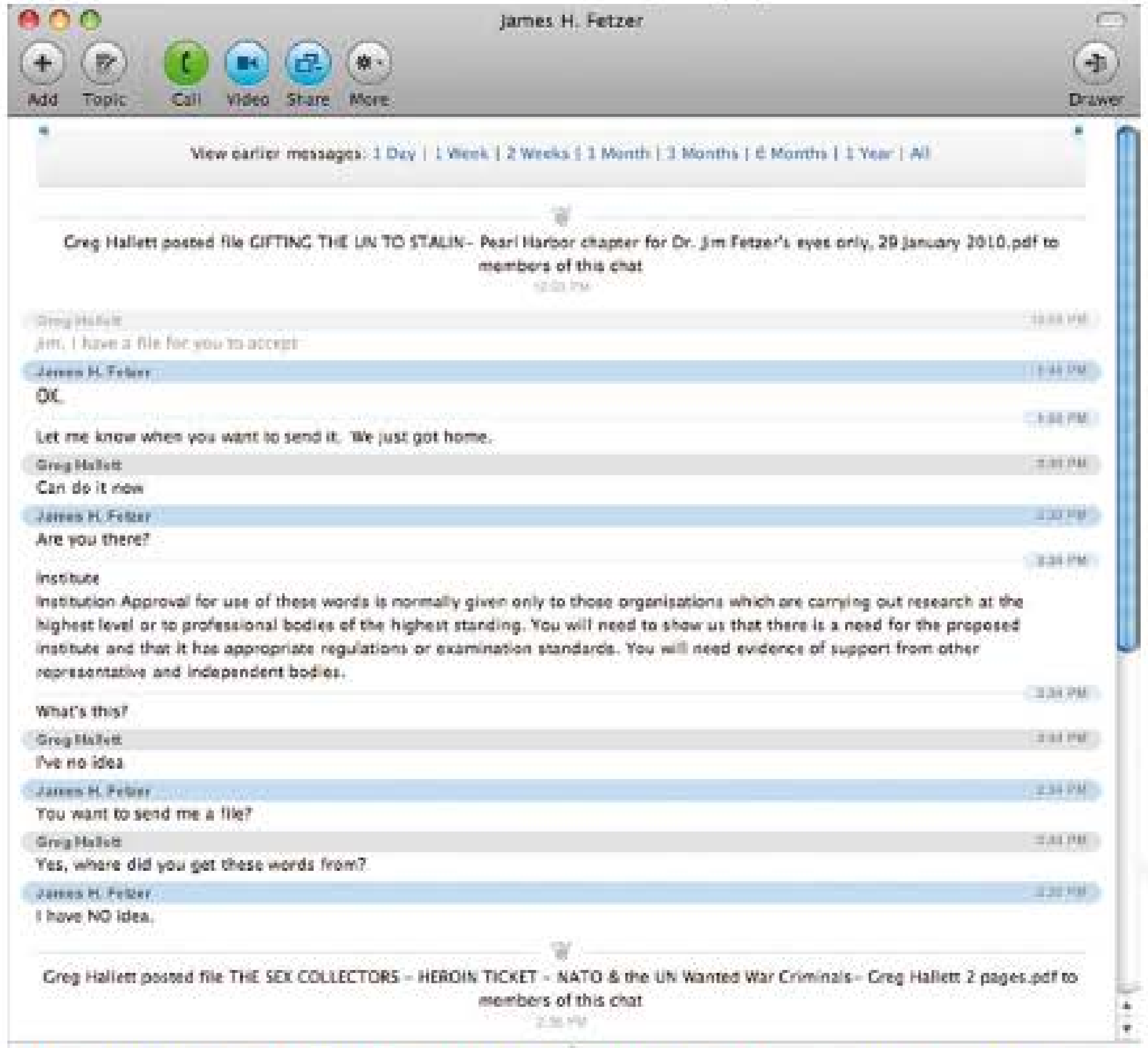
James H. Fetzer
Add
Topic
Call
Video
Share
More
Drawer
View earlier messages: 1 Day | 1 Week | 2 Weeks | 1 Month | 3 Months | 6 Months | 1 Year | All

Greg Hallett posted file GIFTING THE UN TO STALIN – Pearl Harbor chapter for Dr. Jim Fetzer's eyes only, 29 January 2010.pdf to members of this chat

Greg Hallett
Jim, I have a file for you to accept

James H. Fetzer
OK.

Let me know when you want to send it. We just got home.

Greg Hallett
Can do it now

James H. Fetzer
Are you there?

Institute
Institution Approval for use of these words is normally given only to those organisations which are carrying out research at the highest level or to professional bodies of the highest standing. You will need to show us that there is a need for the proposed institute and that it has appropriate regulations or examination standards. You will need evidence of support from other representative and independent bodies.

What's this?

Greg Hallett
I've no idea

James H. Fetzer
You want to send me a file?

Greg Hallett
Yes, where did you get these words from?

James H. Fetzer
I have NO idea.

Greg Hallett posted file THE SEX COLLECTORS – HEROIN TICKET – NATO & the UN Wanted War Criminals – Greg Hallett 2 pages.pdf to members of this chat

3:08 PM Greg Hallett: "It comes from a Jewish group in the States – probably B'nai B'rith – that censors virtually everything that comes over the internet. So much for Skype being secure."

Spymaster: "Sometimes these things have a Christian name, that doesn't indicate the Jewish origin of them. The Jewish outfits say to the Western Governments: 'We will take all this onerous surveillance work off you, and we will report the result once a year'.

"In reality what they give the Western Govt.s is just bullshit. They can bullshit because they even control the control mechanisms – all the communication companies. That was the big payoff for 9-11 – controlling aviation security – who got on and who got off airplanes. Interpol and the FBI then ask the Jews where their targets are going b/c the Jews have everybody's itinerary."

So "Institute" is the B'nai B'rith censoring material on the internet, including Skype interviews and Skype Chats. They don't appreciate material like: "Bill Clinton is the son of Winston Churchill and Pamela Harriman" as per the Dr James Fetzer/ Greg Hallett interview the day before (10–12 am 29 January 2010, NZ Time, 19 hours ahead of CST) and information that **PEARL HARBOR AND WAS AN INSIDE JOB** between the British and U.S., as discussed during the '*not-carried-out, unsigned, misnamed Atlantic Charter*', which was a cigar-smoking piss-up about Checker Children placing the twice illegitimate grandson of King Edward VII, son of Winston Churchill and the British Aristocracy's Pamela Digby Churchill, as leader of the British Plantation known as America –

a.k.a. **PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES**.

Webversity – To be or not to be Censored

It appears that we are carrying out research at the highest levels and are a professional body of the highest standing . . . now required to form an Institute with Regulations and Examinations. A slap or pat on the back from the controlling censors.

In order to achieve this, we now require other independent representative bodies to agree.

So we're a Skyping Webcasting Internet University. Dr James Fetzer certainly has the qualifications with 28 or more books and Professor Emeritus at the University of Minnesota Duluth, retired after 35 years in June 2006. I have nine books (including these) and I'm just scratching the surface.

So we're becoming a Web University – ***"Webversity"*** – and the Jewish censors at the highest levels, with access to the control the control mechanisms of all the communication companies – are learning from us. It appears that we are at the fourth level of history – that is, 'what actually went down' – Military Intelligence. Their role is to ensure that "only the agenda is carried out". My role is to ensure that "only the agenda is not carried out".

Why not. Afterall, I am the leaf on the twig of a branch of a tree that's had multiple roots. You know it as the 'Diplomatic Corp' . . . which I call 'The Sodomy Olympics'. I leave the brown love to the Mafia for their own contortions.

When Military Intelligence – true history – is exposed, there is 100 % increase in the chances of predicting future outcomes, and from further back in time.

Prince Billy James Churchill Rex (Censored) – Bill Clinton

So when Bill Clinton became the Special Envoy to Haiti on 17 May 2009, the results are the same as if the grandson of King Edward VII was the Viceroy of Haiti – the extraction of minerals and resources and the slavery and sickness of the locals to the point of civil war – with or without it.

Slavery ended in Haiti in 1803, but they're trying to bring it back.

The only difference is, more modern techniques are used and this includes HAARP created earthquakes, having the British Plantation's navy at the ready for the simulation of a hurricane exercise (but it wasn't hurricane season), using the earthquake to create fissures to make the hydrocarbons (oil) more accessible, dumping U.S. Marines in the destroyed government palace grounds, taking over elements of the government as though it was a coup d'etat, and like civil war, destroying the society for the next ten years while the mining is underway, and doing all of this under the appeasement of 'aid', with the help of the media, who avoid fourth level intelligence as though it was the plague on which to never be promoted, with the Intelligence sluts – the UN and the Red Cross – specialising in extracting local information and village heirachy, without helping (by stealing and eating the local goats), and all the Red Cross heads being U.S. Naval Intelligence working with the CIA for the expansion of American business outside America.

So when Bill Clinton was announced the United Nations' Special Envoy to Haiti on 17 May 2009, you can bet that he will be a ponergeopologist for the manmade destruction to come 240 days later . . . the 12 January 2010 liquification of Haiti earthquake.

The United Nations named Clinton as its special envoy to Haiti, with a mission to help the impoverished nation achieve some measure of stability after devastating floods and other crises.

The four HAARP hurricanes over 1 month – Fay, Gustav, Hanna and Ike – killed 736/800+ people in Haiti and created disaster areas in 90% of Haiti's ten regions, with widespread flooding and fatal mudslides. Crops and livestock wiped out. Thousands of homes were destroyed or damaged and tens of thousands were left homeless in what was described as "one of the worst disasters in its history" . . . until the manmade earthquakes struck Haiti.

"The World Bank says the disaster [4 hurricanes] caused almost $1 billion in damage in Haiti, the poorest country in the Western Hemisphere, where about half the population live on under US$1 a day."[63] And 80 % under US$2 . . . if that ain't slavery . . .

President Rene Preval called the situation "catastrophic", comparing it to the floods from Tropical Storm Jeanne in September 2004 that killed more than 3,000 people around Gonaïves.

Haiti's Hurricanes (15 August–15 September 2008)
The Hurricane season is 1 June to 30 November. An average season has 10 tropical storms, of which six strengthen into hurricanes. Haiti got four hurricanes in one month. They were arguably HAARP targeted, designed to destroy local food sources, render Haiti unliveable, unihabitable, and cause a mass exodus, thus leaving Haiti to America to mine its resources unhindered.

Haitia was hit by **Hurricane/Tropical Storm Fay** (15–28 August 2008) and killed around 50 people. It was near hurricane strength and was the first known storm in history to make landfall on Florida four times, mainly due to its 'S' shaped path, but still weather controlled, and a heavy-handed statement: 'We even own the retired Jews'.

Ten days later, **Hurricane Gustav** (25 August–5 September 2008) killed around 75, causing US$6.61 billion in damage to Haiti, Jamaica, the Cayman Islands, Cuba (Category 4).

Three days later, **Hurricane Hanna** (28 August–8 September 2008) unexpectedly smashed into Haiti as though it was led by HAARP, killing at least 537 in Haiti (Category 1).

Four days later, **Hurricane Ike** (1–15 September 2008) killed at least 74 people in Haiti. (Category 4 x 2).

Hurricane Hanna hit Haiti's port city, Gonaïves, which was submerged under 2 metres (6.5') of water. Roads and bridges were destroyed, 95 % percent of city's shops were flooded, as were the food warehouses and hospitals. 240,000 of the 300,000 residents (80 %) moved to their rooftops and at least 48,000 sought refuge in makeshift shelters with no food, water, toilets and medical supplies. There was nothing to cook with, or sleep on. This resulted in massive diarrhoea and skin diseases. Supplies had to be brought in by helicopter and boat.

Hurricane Ike was the largest observed tropical cyclone in the Atlantic basin (600 x 240 miles/ 965 x 390 km). Ike had the highest 'Integrated Kinetic Energy' (IKE) of any Atlantic storm, underwent "explosive intensification", went to Category 4 twice, and developed an eye on 3 September 2008 as it went over Haiti. It had a destructive scale of 5.6/ 6 and was the third most destructive U.S. hurricane on record, causing US $32 billion in damage.

Hurricane Ike (Integrated Kinetic Energy) had HAARP written all over it.
The total damage to Haiti (15 August–15 September 2008) was US$1 billion.

Then along came Bill . . . Prince William James Churchill Rex . . . Clinton, as the UN's Special Envoy and Ponergeopology's main media man with his rockstar political status and 'Peacemaker' legend – the same as his grandfather King Edward VII.

Bill Clinton, 19 May 2009: "I believe Haiti is better positioned to make progress for all its people than at any time since I first visited in 1978. Last year's natural disasters [Hurriances 2008] took a great toll, but Haiti's government and people have the determination and ability to . . . lay the foundations for the long-term sustainable development that has eluded them for so long."[64]

Well, Bill, exactly the opposite happened. It got worse. Much worse. As bad as it can get.

---

[63] 'Haiti Floods, Deadly Impact of Floods and Mudslides', Thomson Reuters Foundation, AlertNet, Alerting humanitarians to emergencies, 2 June 2009; Wikipedia, 2008 Atlantic hurricane season.

[64] 'Bill Clinton Named As Haiti Envoy By UN Chief', Jonathan M. Katz, *The Huffington Post*, 19 May 2009.

14 October 1994 as Clinton reinstates Aristide President.

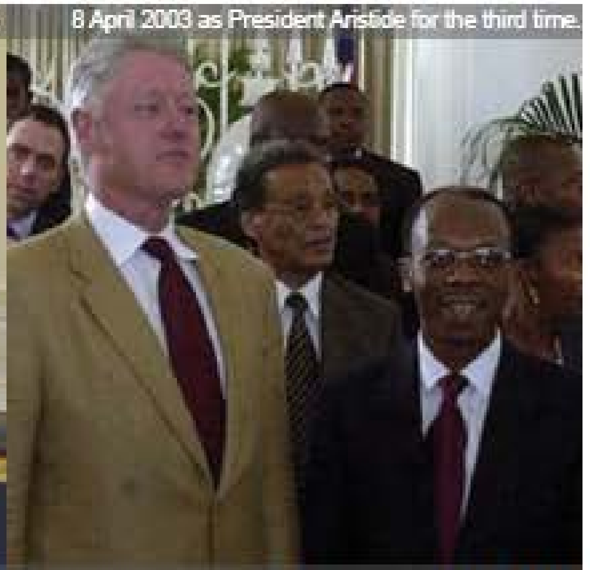

8 April 2003 as President Aristide for the third time.

While president for the third time (7 Feb. 2001–29 Feb. 2004), Jean-Bertrand Aristide transferred **US$17,489,415** abroad through the account of "Secretariate Prive President J. B. Aristide" with cheques from $100,000 to $600,000 – totaling US$4,662,000. Aristide also looted government coffers, wrote cheques to front companies for nonexistent purchases, padded invoices to get kickbacks from vendors, secretly owned companies that cheated Haiti of taxes and stole laundered money through shell companies. He set up secret bank accounts in the United States, and had offshore tax havens in the Turks, Caicos, and British Virgin Islands. This is documented by copies of bank cheques, bank transfer documents, invoices, company payment statements, incorporation papers, and sworn testimony.

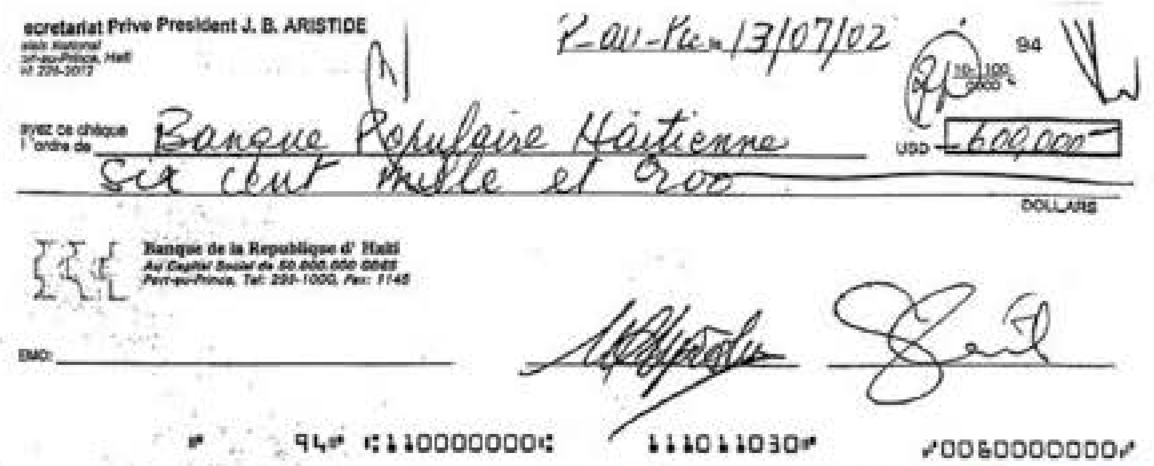

ecretariat Prive President J. B. ARISTIDE

P-au-Pce 13/07/02

94

ayez ce chèque l'ordre de Banque Populaire Haïtienne USD 600,000

Six cent mille et 00 DOLLARS

Banque de la Republique d' Haiti
Au Capital Social de 50.000.000 GDES
Port-au-Prince, Tel: 299-1000, Fax: 1146

EMO:

⑈ 94⑈ ⑆110000000⑆ 111011030⑈ ⑇0060000000⑇

Pres. Préval drives Clinton to Gonaïves, 7 July 2009.

President Préval checks Clinton's booty at the trade delegation, Port-au-Prince, 1 October 2009.

A Short History of Haiti and Recent Presidents

The Haitian Revolution (1791–1803) eliminated slavery in the French colony of Saint-Domingue becoming independent from France on 1 January 1804, complete with Governor-General. The Empire of Haiti was then born on 8 October 1804 – the first republic ruled by Africans, and the first Black Republic, which is a source of enormous pride.[65]

G-G Jean-Jacques Dessalines, who did the announcing, pronounced himself 'Emperor Jacques I' (22 September 1804–17 October 1806) after which the position was abolished.

President Faustin-Élie Soulouque (2 March 1847–22 January 1859) was intended to be a dull and ignorant puppet. However, 2.5 years into his rule ((26 August 1849), he declared himself 'Emperor of Haïti, Faustin I of Haiti', and ruled absolutely for the next 10 years.

There was a revolution in 1858, a successful takeover by December, and Emperor Faustin abdicated his throne on 15 January 1859, and removed as President a week later.

This ended Haiti's Post-Revolutionary period (1804–59), although the revolutions continued ad infinitum.

This was followed by the Post-Imperial period (1859–1915).

'Emperor Jacques I' great-grandson, Cincinnatus Leconte, then became President of Haiti (14 August 1911–8 August 1912).

President François Duvalier 'Papa Doc' (22 October 1957–21 April 1971) based his rule on voodoo, a rural militia, and a personality cult. This empirical combination resulted in a brain drain from which Haiti has never recovered.

But things didn't get any better as Papa Doc was succeeded by his 19-year-old son, Baby Doc.

President Jean-Claude Duvalier 'Baby Doc' (21 April 1971–6 February 1986) took over after his father's death, declared himself president for life, was brutal and corrupt, then overthrown by popular uprising.

Baby Doc moved to Paris to live in exile. France did not grant him asylum, nor was he successfully exiled back to Haiti. On 16 January 2010, Baby Doc announced he would formally ask the Simone Ovide Duvalier Foundation (set up in his mother's name) to transfer US$8 million of its assets to the American Red Cross for the 2010 Haiti earthquake.[66]

So Baby Doc wasn't exactly without funds, although he still claims he's fallen on hard times.

President (General) Henri **Namphy** (7 February 1986–7 February 1988).

President Leslie François Manigat (7 February– 20 June 1988) gained 50.29% of the votes with a 10 % turnout. He was deposed by the preceding President, General Henri Namphy.

President (General) Henri **Namphy** (20 June–17 September 1988), deposed.

President Prosper Avril (17 September 1988–10 March 1990) was removed by street riots. Avril was then jailed (2001–04) by the ex-Roman Catholic priest, **Aristide**, shortly before Jean-Bertrand Aristide became President (7 February 2001) and shortly after Astride was removed by coup d'etat (29 February 2004).

President Hérard Abraham (10–13 March 1990) held power for 3 days and was the only military leader of the C20th to give up power voluntarily. Well done. They all should do it.

---

[65] Haiti has been variously known as Hispaniola Island, Santo Domingo, San Domingo Island, The Spanish Island, Grande Terre, Saint-Domingue (French colony), Empire of Haiti (1804) in the West (French) and the Dominican Republican in the East (Spanish). Haiti (W) and the Domincan Republic (E) are joined on the same island.

[66] 'Haiti earthquake: Baby Doc' Duvalier pledges £5m aid', Harriet Alexander, Telegraph.co.uk, 16 January 2010.

First Provisional President Ertha Pascal-Trouillot (13 March 1990–7 February 1991) was the first woman to hold that office, although only for 331 days.

Jean-Bertrand **Aristide** (7 February–30 September 1991) was a Roman Catholic priest who became Haiti's first democratically-elected leader, with René Préval as Prime Minister. Aristide was removed by U.S. backed Army coup d'etat. U.S. pressure also prevented Joseph Nérette becoming the Provisional President, thus creating an unstable military state for the next three years. Aristide spent his exile in Argentina, then the U.S. (Sept. 1991–Oct. 94).

Haitian Military Junta leader, Raoul Cédras was de facto ruler (30 Sept. 1991–12 Oct. 1994) holding the real power over the next three Provisional 'Acting' Presidents.

Provisional President Joseph Nérette (8 October 1991–19 June 1992).

Provisional President Marc Louis Bazin (19 June 1992–15 June 1993), also Prime Minister.

Provisional President Émile Jonassaint (12 May–12 October 1994). Under Clinton's directive, U.S. Army and Marines were deployed in Haiti to oust this dictatorship and reinstate Aristide.

Jean-Bertrand **Aristide** (12/15 October 1994–7 February 1996). The constitution does not allow for consecutive terms.

Aristide and Préval were allys, so Préval got 88 % of the vote, but only 25 % of the pop. voted.

René **Préval** (7 February 1996–7 February 2001) with substantial rioting in Gonaïves in the early 2000s, backed by Aristide.

Jean-Bertrand **Aristide** (7 February 2001–29 February 2004). The Revolutionary Artibonite Resistance Front seized control of Gonaïves (5–29 February 2004) and started the 2004 Haïtian rebellion. The coup d'etat was supported by the US, France, and Canada and the U.S. flew Aristide into exile on a U.S. plane. Astride claimed he was "kidnapped", then lived in exile in South Africa (2004–10+).[67] After the HAARP earthquake on 12 January 2010, Astride offered to return to Haiti.[68]

Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, Boniface Alexandre, became Provisional/ Acting President (29 Feb. 2004–14 May 2006);

President René **Préval** (14 May 2006–2010+) is also commander-in-chief of the Military of Haiti. In April 2008 there were violent riots over high food prices, followed by looting, then the government was replaced, but not the President, who "urged Haitians to become agriculturally self-sufficient [but] did not say he would urge Haiti's congress to cut taxes on imported food."[69] Four months later, four hurricanes destroyed any agricultural self-sufficiency.

So Haiti is run by a 20-year shared dictatorship between **Jean-Bertrand Aristide** and **René Préval** (1991–2010+) with America showing its muscle and controlling Haiti in the background – ever since HAARP came on board as a possibility – now a probability, and a future likelihood wherever there is oil, or heroin, or a port to ship heroin.

12 January 2010 Earthquake: President René Préval and First Lady Elisabeth Delatour Préval were about to enter the National Palace – the residence of the President – when the earthquake struck. They walked away as their palace home collapsed and escaped injury.

How convenient for what is clearly a dual dictatorship for American interests.

---

[67] Shades of 'The Bourne Identity' 2002 movie, based on Robert Ludlum's 1980 novel.

[68] 'Exiled Haitian president Jean-Bertrand Aristide offers to return', Sebastien Berger in Johannesburg, Telegraph.co.uk, 15 January 2010.

[69] 'Haiti's President Tries to Halt Crisis Over Food', *New York Times*, 10 April 2008.

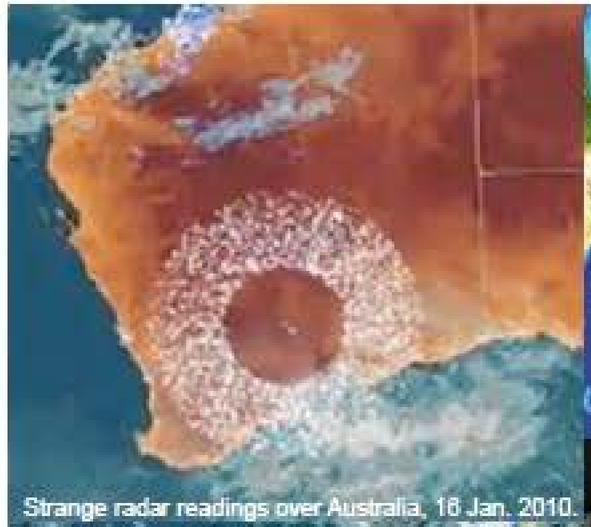

Strange radar readings over Australia, 16 Jan. 2010.

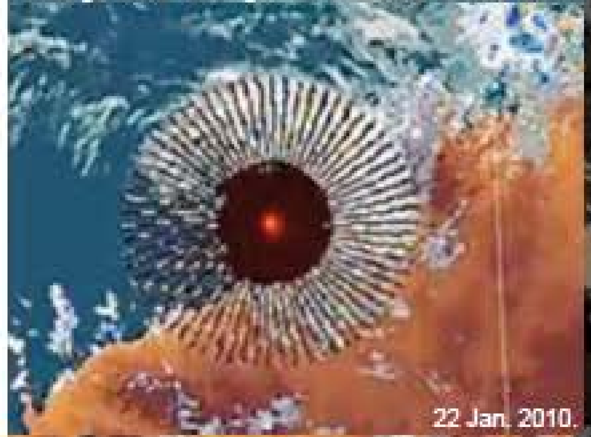

22 Jan. 2010.

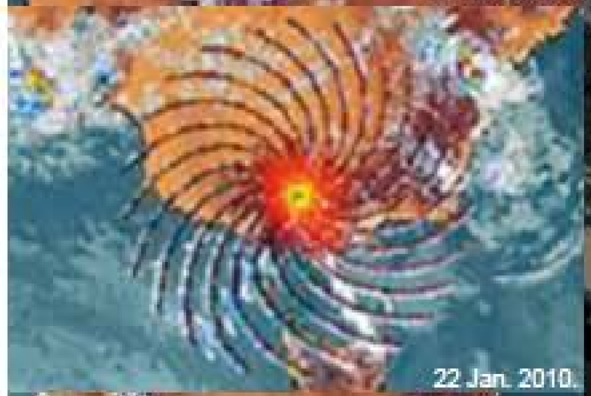

22 Jan. 2010.

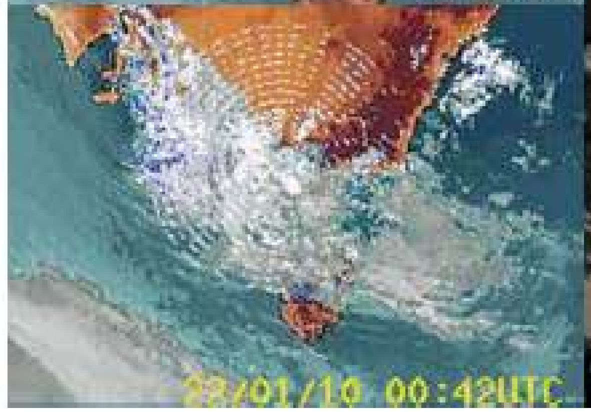

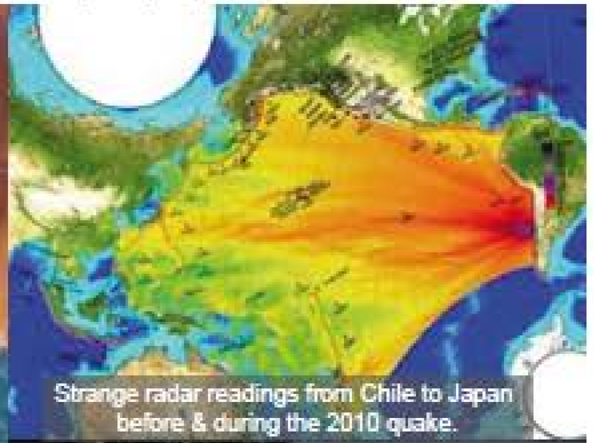

Strange radar readings from Chile to Japan before & during the 2010 quake.

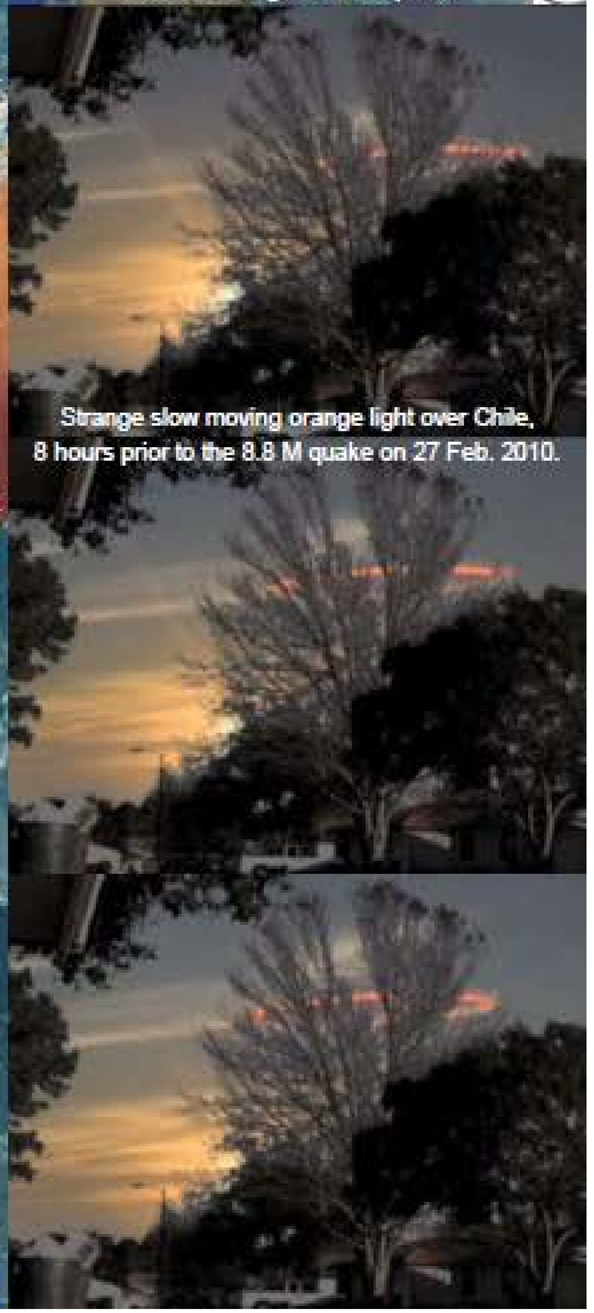

Strange slow moving orange light over Chile, 8 hours prior to the 8.8 M quake on 27 Feb. 2010.

The CIA's Protection Racket for M.O.E. Paedophiles

in Exchange for Ministry of Education funding for CIA Killer Helicopters

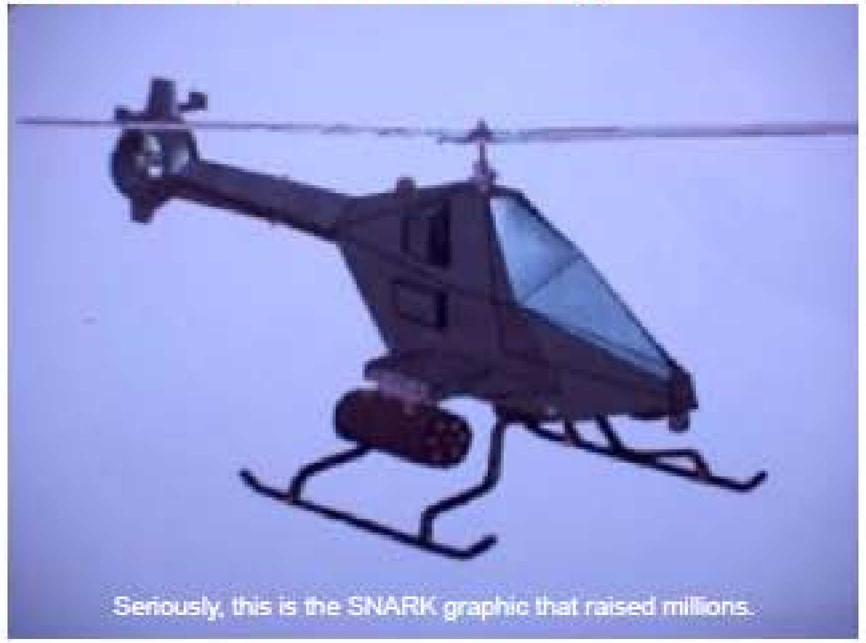

Seriously, this is the SNARK graphic that raised millions.

Trevor Roger

Intelligence word: “Trevor Roger is a two-time MP for National in Otara and Howick [1990–96] charged with defrauding $3 million from a charitable trust. He got name suppression.” I got word of it around 20 January 2009 when they were before the courts, and before the courts had officially opened for the year, so I looked up his history.

“Former National Party politician Trevor Roger left the National Party to form and lead the Right Of Centre Party in 2000, then changed its name to ‘The Conservative Party’, then bowed out of politics altogether in 2001.

“In 1993, Trevor Roger tabled a private members bill in Parliament – the ‘Technology and Crimes Reform Private Members Bill’ where he wanted to: ‘Disconnect your phone for five years if it was proven to have been used to transmit ‘objectionable material’; and any objectionable communication with a foreign website would result in the Internet Service Provider ordered to cut their services off.[1]

A big thinker, with leanings between facism and rescuing the wounded, Trevor Roger fell short of reality, but managed to suck in some big names and big money from ‘others who wanted to help’.

Trevor Roger tried to develop the ‘Snark’ in New Zealand – an unmanned diesel-powered, radio controlled, military helicopter, almost undetectable by heat-seeking missiles, capable of 280 km/h and 24 hours continuous flying due exhaust recycling. The Snark has surveillance equipment, infrared/cameras, listening devices, and is extremely quiet.

It's designed and produced by TGR Helicorp but it's debateable whether it actually existed.

Mr Roger formed TGR Helicorp Ltd in 1997 and launched his innovative Unmanned Combat Aerial Vehicle (UCAV) – ‘The Snark’, at the 2005 Paris Air Show, but it was only a graphic. He had taken video games too far.

---

[1] New Zealand Press Association, Wellington, 26 May 2008, paraphrased for your enjoyment.

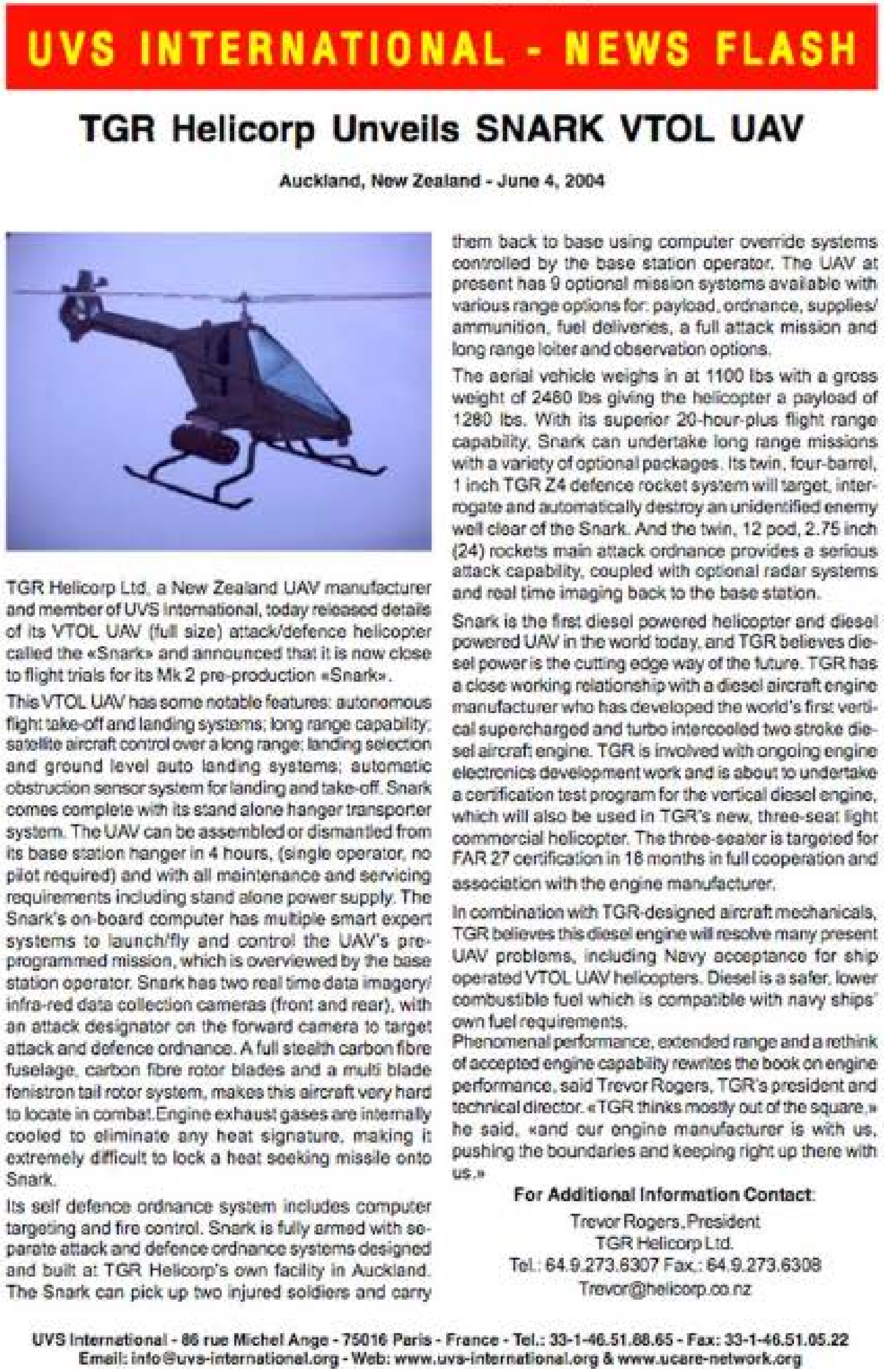

UVS INTERNATIONAL - NEWS FLASH

TGR Helicorp Unveils SNARK VTOL UAV

Auckland, New Zealand - June 4, 2004

TGR Helicorp Ltd, a New Zealand UAV manufacturer and member of UVS International, today released details of its VTOL UAV (full size) attack/defence helicopter called the «Snark» and announced that it is now close to flight trials for its Mk 2 pre-production «Snark».

This VTOL UAV has some notable features: autonomous flight take-off and landing systems; long range capability; satellite aircraft control over a long range; landing selection and ground level auto landing systems; automatic obstruction sensor system for landing and take-off. Snark comes complete with its stand alone hanger transporter system. The UAV can be assembled or dismantled from its base station hanger in 4 hours, (single operator, no pilot required) and with all maintenance and servicing requirements including stand alone power supply. The Snark's on-board computer has multiple smart expert systems to launch/fly and control the UAV's pre-programmed mission, which is overviewed by the base station operator. Snark has two real time data imagery/infra-red data collection cameras (front and rear), with an attack designator on the forward camera to target attack and defence ordnance. A full stealth carbon fibre fuselage, carbon fibre rotor blades and a multi blade fenistron tail rotor system, makes this aircraft very hard to locate in combat.Engine exhaust gases are internally cooled to eliminate any heat signature, making it extremely difficult to lock a heat seeking missile onto Snark.

Its self defence ordnance system includes computer targeting and fire control. Snark is fully armed with separate attack and defence ordnance systems designed and built at TGR Helicorp's own facility in Auckland. The Snark can pick up two injured soldiers and carry them back to base using computer override systems controlled by the base station operator. The UAV at present has 9 optional mission systems available with various range options for: payload, ordnance, supplies/ammunition, fuel deliveries, a full attack mission and long range loiter and observation options.

The aerial vehicle weighs in at 1100 lbs with a gross weight of 2480 lbs giving the helicopter a payload of 1280 lbs. With its superior 20-hour-plus flight range capability, Snark can undertake long range missions with a variety of optional packages. Its twin, four-barrel, 1 inch TGR Z4 defence rocket system will target, interrogate and automatically destroy an unidentified enemy well clear of the Snark. And the twin, 12 pod, 2.75 inch (24) rockets main attack ordnance provides a serious attack capability, coupled with optional radar systems and real time imaging back to the base station.

Snark is the first diesel powered helicopter and diesel powered UAV in the world today, and TGR believes diesel power is the cutting edge way of the future. TGR has a close working relationship with a diesel aircraft engine manufacturer who has developed the world's first vertical supercharged and turbo intercooled two stroke diesel aircraft engine. TGR is involved with ongoing engine electronics development work and is about to undertake a certification test program for the vertical diesel engine, which will also be used in TGR's new, three-seat light commercial helicopter. The three-seater is targeted for FAR 27 certification in 18 months in full cooperation and association with the engine manufacturer.

In combination with TGR-designed aircraft mechanicals, TGR believes this diesel engine will resolve many present UAV problems, including Navy acceptance for ship operated VTOL UAV helicopters. Diesel is a safer, lower combustible fuel which is compatible with navy ships' own fuel requirements.

Phenomenal performance, extended range and a rethink of accepted engine capability rewrites the book on engine performance, said Trevor Rogers, TGR's president and technical director. «TGR thinks mostly out of the square,» he said, «and our engine manufacturer is with us, pushing the boundaries and keeping right up there with us.»

For Additional Information Contact:

Trevor Rogers, President
TGR Helicorp Ltd.
Tel.: 64.9.273.6307 Fax.: 64.9.273.6308
Trevor@helicorp.co.nz

UVS International - 86 rue Michel Ange - 75016 Paris - France - Tel.: 33-1-46.51.88.65 - Fax: 33-1-46.51.05.22
Email: info@uvs-international.org - Web: www.uvs-international.org & www.ucare-network.org

The Snark helicopter was to be 8 metres long, the world's first diesel helicopter, satellite-controlled with full stealth capabilities, automatic weapons system including rocket launchers, run by satellite, and yours for US$5 million.

Gizmag 'the emerging technology magazine' was also sucked in by the graphic and reported, the Snark is "the meanest Unmanned Combat Aerial Vehicle in the World".

TGR Helicorp backed this up with: The Snark is "Fierce and Nasty"; but TGR stands for 'Trevor & Glenda Roger', who were still seeking funding for his graphic. Trevor Roger then tried to manufacture The Snark in East Tamaki, Auckland, as the only licensed helicopter manufacturer in the Southern Hemisphere"[2], but "TGR was not a member of the Aviation Industry Association (AIA)"[3] and nor were any of their vehicles tested by the Civil Aviation Authority (CAA). Despite this, his wife Glenda Roger, still managed to get funding.

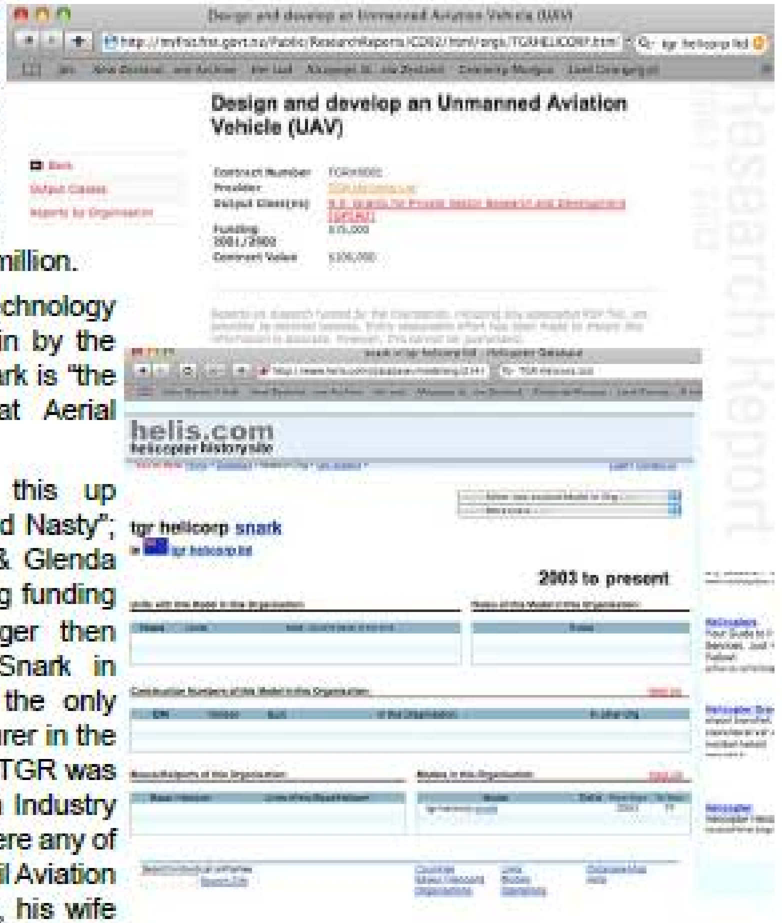

Design and develop an Unmanned Aviation Vehicle (UAV)
Design and develop an Unmanned Aviation Vehicle (UAV)
helis.com
helicopter history site
tgr helicorp snark
2003 to present
Research Report

Glenda Roger is a director of **Virgin Concepts Ltd**. At first I thought this was selling beauty products, but no, Virgin Concepts Ltd were given a grant of $75,000 in the 2001/02 round, then $25,000 in the 2002/03 round as part of a $100,000 contract, "To design and develop an electronic control system to remotely control unmanned aircraft military helicopter (VTUAV), contract Number VGCC0101) under Output Class(es) '9.0 Grants for Private Sector Research and Development (GPSRD)', by the Foundation for Research, Science & Technology, 'Investing in **innovation** for New Zealand's future'. **TGR Helicorp** also got $100,000 from FRST. The only tangible result were two $400 graphics and a plywood mock-up.

FRST: "Our mission: 'Actively growing value for New Zealand by investing for results from research and development.' We invest close to $500 million a year in science and technology research on behalf of the New Zealand Government, seeking benefits to New Zealand's economy, environment and society."[4]

The CIA's contract killer Dame Margaret Bazley was the Chairman of FRST at the time (May 2001–April 2008), yet FRST staff could not even provide any contact details for Chairman Bazley. She was spending her time rooting mental health patients and paying male prostitutes to gang-bang her. MICK P: "She is very private".

FRST replaced the respectable Department of Scientific and Industrial Research (DSIR) and now for $10,000, FRST will change your methamphetamine result to a household product.

---

2 *Uncensored* magazine, Mikey Havoc's Column: The Snark, 14 January 2006, heavily paraphrased.
3 New Zealand Press Association, Wellington, 26 May 2008.
4 www.frst.govt.nz.

With the TGR venture failing on a military level, on a real level, and on a realised level, Trevor tried for funding as a rescue helicopter, with the arms removed, à la Lord of War – the 2005 movie starring Nicholas Cage.

Touting its unmanned capabilities to rescue mountain climbers off Mount Everest, Trevor and Glenda Roger drew in prominent patrons, Peter Hillary (son of the CIA asset Sir Edmund Hillary) and Mark Inglis, a mountaineering double amputee and leading motivational speaker. (God, and-I-don't-use-your-name-lightly, they're boring.)

Trevor Roger was the founding trustee and contact for the 'Everest Rescue Trust', as in Trevor Rogers Founding Trustee Everest Rescue Trust enquiry @ rescueoneverest. org (www. rescueoneverest.org) and they operated out of the same premises in East Tamaki – TGR Helicopters and 'Rescue on Everest' Trust:

> "Everest Rescue Trust Launches Kids Adventure Programme NZ Schools join global interactive campaign to learn about Nepal and Everest while following the Rescue on Everest Challenge at www. rescueoneverest.org Auckland, New Zealand, 13 March 2007: Today, the Everest Rescue Trust launches its Kids Adventure distance learning programme . . . In consultation with New Zealand education authorities, the Trust has developed a comprehensive and interactive schools project to run in tandem with the Rescue on Everest challenge . . . tailored to students aged between eight and twelve . . . enthusiastically endorsed by teachers . . . said Trevor Rogers, Founding Trustee of the Everest Rescue Trust. The schools project is available free of charge to all primary and intermediate English-speaking school-age children . . . said Bob Lye, Project Manager of the Rescue on Everest Challenge . . . On the 1st of February 2007, the Everest Rescue Trust launched the Rescue on Everest Challenge to design, build and operate a self-funding rescue helicopter service for the extreme altitude regions of Nepal . . . After six years research, development and building of Unmanned Aerial Vehicles (UAVs) TGR Helicorp in East Tamaki New Zealand, has designed and developed an unpiloted full-size alpine rescue helicopter; the Alpine Wasp, which will be able to operate safely and autonomously at altitudes up to and beyond 30,000ft (over 9000m). Most helicopters are not designed to operate above a ceiling of about 14,000ft (4,300m). The company will be donating the Alpine Wasp to the Everest Rescue Trust. It will be capable of airlifting up to two sick or injured climbers at a time from extreme altitude, using ultra-modern composite technologies, a revolutionary diesel helicopter engine and rotor blades designed especially for maximum performance in thin air. The Alpine Wasp represents a huge leap forward in helicopter performance and technological capability. The success of this project will increase the Trust's capability to help other people all over the world. The potential for pushing the boundaries of long range, high altitude rescue is unlimited, it could change the course of modern alpine aviation history."

So Trevor Roger got New Zealand Education funding, which means the Ministry of Education ("M.O.E.") is funding US military helicopter development. Why 'US'? Because Trevor had CIA heavies as his enforcers, and wanted to supply the US military.

TGR Helicorp claimed to have already developed an unmanned full-size rescue helicopter – the Alpine Wasp – made of high-tech composite materials and rotor blades designed specificially for thin air (as opposed to the fat air helicopters we normally ride in). But only one person ever claimed to have seen it, there were no rotor blades, and all she saw was a video mock-up and a plywood mock-up. TGR never flew a helicopter, not even a carbon fibre one.

TGR would test the Alpine Wasp on Mt Cook (3,754 metres high), and once the tests were complete, TGR would donate the helicopter to the Everest Rescue Trust, who would then establish a rescue service base at Namche Bazar in Nepal, 3,440 metres above sea level.

In support of this, Trevor Roger and the CIA employed the disgraced American spam artist Brendan Battles to spam off the Everest Rescue Trust website to get funding.

Sir Edmund Hilliary had worked for many intelligence agencies and one of them was the CIA. He was dropping radioactive listening devices on the Himalayas to spy on China. China retaliated and destroyed Tibet (part of the reason) and Sir Ed made it onto the New Zealand $5 note.

FOR LEASE
• Office 478m² Warehouse 2233m²
• Huge yard - approx 2500m²
• Great neighbourhood
• Not many like this available!
BAYLEYS

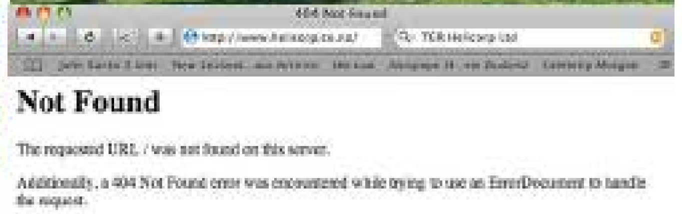

Not Found

The requested URL / was not found on this server.

Additionally, a 404 Not Found error was encountered while trying to use an ErrorDocument to handle the request.

With charity being the new target, Trevor Roger was still touting for war: "Future wars will be fought with UAVs (Unmanned Air Vehicles)". Trevor had previously sought certification for military Wolverine helicopters and civilian Bandit helicopters, but there is no record of him succeeding. "A former Member of Parliament's dream to supply remotely-operated helicopters to the US military and a charity rescue base in Nepal is in limbo after the company was put in to receivership"[5] on 2 April 2008.

"Former MP for Howick Trevor Roger had run the East Tamaki-based TGR Helicorp Ltd for many years, but now the building is empty and For Lease signs stand outside. The charity operating out of the same premises, 'Rescue on Everest', still appears to be accepting donations online [until 4 May 2008][6] and Trevor's website still features computer generated images of the helicopters, but there are no real photos, and their whereabouts is unknown.

When the *Times* rang the TGR office it was diverted to his voicemail, then the charity's phone immediately cut off. *New Zealand Truth* (a disregarded weekly that tends to get things right first time) reported earlier that there was some speculation as to where the company's assets were. The investigator, John Landrigan, is now with the *Aucklander*, part of the *Herald*.

TGR went into receivership on 2 April 2008 with the receivers' report is due two months later. The Directors of TGR Helicorp Ltd include Howick's Arthur Noel French, a director of Auckland Masonic Centre Ltd; and Trevor Roger, whose Ultra Helicopters Inc (NZ) Ltd is also in receivership. The Freemason's used to talk in terms of "DWI" – Defender of White Integrity. So where is it now? The Everest Rescue Trust charity was cover for Trevor and Glenda Roger's frauds, which were cover for the CIA's military helicopter development.

Association with charity is a little like a knighthood – they tend to make one untouchable for the duration of the fraud. It works time and time again, often for decades. Women's Refuge, one of the biggest research frauds in history, is the best at it. So good in fact, that they became a government department for extremely ugly and mentally ill women – enforced lesbians – with NZ$6 million in guaranteed government grants each year.

---

[5] Cameron Broadhurst, *Howick and Pakuranga Times*, 'High-flying helicopter business in receivership', 22 May 2008.

[6] *Ibid.*

Trevor Rogers...Trust founder

Companies Office records show the Roger family holds 3.1 million of TGR's 5.7 million shares. The masonic Mr French holds 0.77 million shares. Trevor Roger is also a director of EP Research & Development Inc Ltd.

Son of a Freemason: "I met Trevor Roger in 1997/98. He was in his early 60s then and had the swagger of someone with backing. He was with French who was then in his early 80s. Arthur French is a bean counter (accountant), a Freemason, and a serial prolific shareholder. Trevor Roger mentioned that he was selling helicopter parts."

Some guys who worked with Trevor Roger during this time said: "He's a pile of shit. All we do is assemble trailers. Nothing's going to come of it, but he does have heavyduty CIA connections, he is connected to the Everest Trust, and you'd better not say anything against him because it won't go anywhere. "

A different source said: "Others had been looking at this concept before Trevor. It was nothing new, it just hadn't been developed."

John Landrigan talking with the author, 11 March 2009: "When I broke this story in *The Truth* Trevor and Glenda Roger went into immediate action [with the CIA] and began securing their assets" with their accountants Deloitte's Auckland Office (Deloitte House, 8 Nelson Street) and the Companies office . . . and when it came to receivership, it was Deloitte's Wellington Office (10 Brandon Street) who became the official receivers. So it was all an in-house job.

The security Trevor and Glenda Roger offered was "Goods - Other" and the Collateral Type was "All Present And After Acquired Personal Property" which was no security at all. On this basis, they got $120,000 from Marac Finance and $660,000 from the private Bastia Investments (George/Sonia Glaister & Peter/Andrea/David Barry). Well off rural KIWI's also put in a couple of million and one of these family members died on 2 March 2009.

Since Deloitte is CIA connected, when the receivers were called in, TGR was given 4–5 weeks notice. The General Security Agreement was dated 5 March 2008, and by the time the receivers were called in on 2 April 2008 for "all assets and effects whatsoever", TGR Helicorp had already loaded everything into two containers, all except for a computer and a van which sold for $2,150.

When this went to court, Judge Peter Woodhouse ruled that the receivers could have everything except what was in the two containers, which was everything except the van and the computer. There was also $1,400 in their bank account as at 2 October 2008, probably from donations to the Everest Rescue Trust from stupid KIWIs – Keen Interest Without Intelligence.

With all the charity funding frauds, the CIA had also organised the Ministry of Foreign Affairs to refuse an export order for the helicopters. This gave TGR an excuse to pack up and leave. The Ministry of Foreign Affairs then refused to confirm or deny that TGR Helicorp had applied for a permit to export. So it was all very in-house at a government level as well.

Deloitte Wellington then produced the receivers report on 2 October 2008. Deloitte is full of excuses. As one of the five major accounting firms all they do is offer excuses as their receivers report shows. Deloitte Wellington did the receiving for their client at Deloitte Auckland.

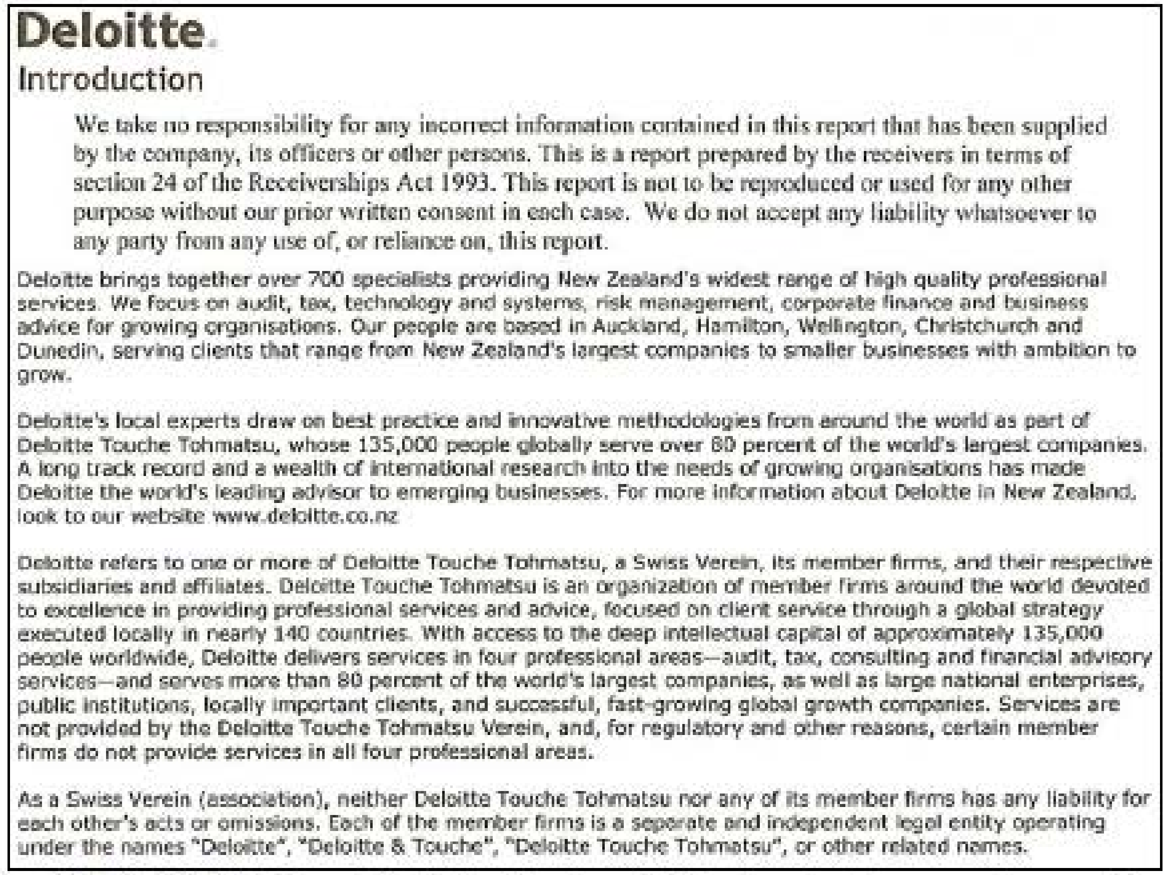

Deloitte.

Introduction

> We take no responsibility for any incorrect information contained in this report that has been supplied by the company, its officers or other persons. This is a report prepared by the receivers in terms of section 24 of the Receiverships Act 1993. This report is not to be reproduced or used for any other purpose without our prior written consent in each case. We do not accept any liability whatsoever to any party from any use of, or reliance on, this report.

Deloitte brings together over 700 specialists providing New Zealand's widest range of high quality professional services. We focus on audit, tax, technology and systems, risk management, corporate finance and business advice for growing organisations. Our people are based in Auckland, Hamilton, Wellington, Christchurch and Dunedin, serving clients that range from New Zealand's largest companies to smaller businesses with ambition to grow.

Deloitte's local experts draw on best practice and innovative methodologies from around the world as part of Deloitte Touche Tohmatsu, whose 135,000 people globally serve over 80 percent of the world's largest companies. A long track record and a wealth of international research into the needs of growing organisations has made Deloitte the world's leading advisor to emerging businesses. For more information about Deloitte in New Zealand, look to our website www.deloitte.co.nz

Deloitte refers to one or more of Deloitte Touche Tohmatsu, a Swiss Verein, its member firms, and their respective subsidiaries and affiliates. Deloitte Touche Tohmatsu is an organization of member firms around the world devoted to excellence in providing professional services and advice, focused on client service through a global strategy executed locally in nearly 140 countries. With access to the deep intellectual capital of approximately 135,000 people worldwide, Deloitte delivers services in four professional areas—audit, tax, consulting and financial advisory services—and serves more than 80 percent of the world's largest companies, as well as large national enterprises, public institutions, locally important clients, and successful, fast-growing global growth companies. Services are not provided by the Deloitte Touche Tohmatsu Verein, and, for regulatory and other reasons, certain member firms do not provide services in all four professional areas.

As a Swiss Verein (association), neither Deloitte Touche Tohmatsu nor any of its member firms has any liability for each other's acts or omissions. Each of the member firms is a separate and independent legal entity operating under the names "Deloitte", "Deloitte & Touche", "Deloitte Touche Tohmatsu", or other related names.

Deloitte | TGR Helicorp Limited (In Receivership) [confused as two separate reports]:

"A van was uplifted by the receivers and has been sold." [$2,150]

"As at our appointment $660,000 was owed to the appointer as secured debt."
[That is $660,000 is owed to Bastia Investments, but they don't have first pick . . .]

"Marac Finance Limited as at 14 April 2008 is owed $120,000."

"Mr and Mrs Rogers have not yet advised the amount of the debt owed to them."
[Deloitte are giving preference to Trevor and Glenda Roger]

"We have received claims in the receivership from preferential creditors totalling $515,000." [Deloitte does not state here that Trevor and Glenda Roger are the preferential creditor]

"It appears unlikely . . . that there will be any funds available . . . . other than preferential or secured creditors."

The preferential creditors are Trevor and Glenda Roger (mispelt by Deloitte's as T.V. and G.F. Rogers for $250,000, followed by Bastia[7] Investments for $660,000.

The secured creditors and first charge holder were T.V. and G.F. Rogers under a General Security Agreement dated 29 February 2008 and registered 4 March 2008. This meant that Trevor and Glenda Roger get the first $250,000 . . . but they've not made their claim.

Trevor and Glenda Roger registered this agreement the day before the receivers were called on 5 March 2008. Talk about in-house cons.

The total owed was $2.961 million, plus the FRST funding of $100–$200,000 and the Everest Rescue Trust frauds, amounting to a total of $NZ3.1 million, or $3.6 million, depending on which Deloitte Receivers Report you look at. When they appeared in the Auckland District Court mid-January 2009 other politicians were amongst those accused.

---

[7] Internal Affairs Officer: "The name Bastia has turned up in drug-running inquiries".
Author: "If that's the case, that's how the CIA have control of them".

In all fairness, we have to ask where was the fraud. $3.1 million was dished out to TGR Helicorp, all the parts have been shipped overseas in two containers (controlled by the CIA) leaving an empty warehouse with one van and one computer ($2,150) and $1,400.

It seems that the CIA have used New Zealand's Foundation for Research, Science & Technology (FRST), the Ministry of Education, and private suckers to fund the development of their military helicopters using one of the dumbest patsy MP's in history. So no doubt these organisations were all headed at some level by CIA agents.

So here's some background on the likely parties involved:

> FRST's chairperson **Dame Margaret Bazley is a CIA contract killer**, so she's dead cert for funding an unmanned military attack helicopter (how feminist – unmanned).
>
> Mayors often influence funding decisions and the **Mayor of Auckland John Banks** (2001–04) and (2007–) is also a CIA agent.
>
> The Ministry of Education was compromised by it's **Secretary**, **Karen Sewell**, a gravely unpopular woman.

The CIA and the US Military were using New Zealand research money (no results required), New Zealand investment money (Keen Interest Without Intelligence – KIWI), New Zealand charity money (the bottomless pit of opportunists), and New Zealand Education money (stupid money) to develop their military helicopters.

Trevor Roger was a total entrepreneur as long as he made a buck. He worked for New Zealand Breweries and sold cheesecake rights in 1972, selling the Crofters brand to a chap in Edgecumbe who made it the largest cheesecake in Australasia, next to Sara Lee.

Like the cheesecake Mayor of Auckland John Banks (a CIA informant), both spend large amounts of other people's money on research which never comes to anything. Deloitte plays both sides of this coin, but primarily it works for the CIA . . . and we shouldn't forget that CIA stands for 'Communism In America', which is probably why the Ministry of Education wanted to help so desperately. After all, teachers are secret fascists being so socially inept 'n' all.

But wait, there's more. Trevor Roger and the CIA were blackmailing the Ministry of Education for funding, via the attrocious sex, death, child sex abuse and death record of those highest up.

This included the Secretary for Education, Karen Sewell, a former Green Bay High School Principal who sexually abused at least four 14-year-old girls in March 1997 (and was involved in a child murder).

Close by, and within a year, the Henderson High School principal Ian 'Kahurangi' Mitchell was killed by hanging during a sex act in Indonesia. The S&M went wrong, or right, or a little too far. Either way, it involved hanging with a plastic bag over his head and Mitchell died.

Karen Sewell was then promoted by Prime Minister Helen Clark to Chief Executive and Secretary for Education, to "re-engineer the education system" into the much criticised and soon to be abolished NCEA.

With this record (and **Prime Minister Helen Clark**'s secret CIA status due to being sexually compromised by President Bush in January 2003) Karen Sewell gave out money to the CIA/US Military for development of their latest revolutionary breakthrough death star helicopter. This came with Helen Clark's approval and via the "Everest Rescue Trust global interactive Kids Adventure distance learning programme (March 2007) in consultation with New Zealand education authorities."

The money didn't go into development. It went into a press release and pockets.

Trevor Roger had the inside information on the Ministry of Education. He used this to get money out of them, then used the same information to silence them.

It was blackmail of the Ministry of Education.

Trevor Roger blackmailed the Ministry of Education.

The Secretary for Education, Karen Sewell, was blackmailed.

In return for Ministry of Education funding, Karen Sewell got CIA cover for her multiple child sex abuse and involvement in a child murder.

Internal Affairs Undercover: "Trevor Roger was given a 'we won't investigate you' from the Police Fraud Squad." Broken down, this is 'the Police and the Serious Fraud Office (SFO)' gave Trevor Roger immunity from investigation – and a wide birth in which to operate. "They gave it to him because he was vouched for by high-ranking National party figures – like the CIA's John Banks who was also the Minister of Police (1990–96) until he was removed for protecting paedophiles."

"On 1 November 1996, John Banks resigned as Minister of Tourism, Minister of Sport, Fitness and Leisure, Minister of Local Government, and Minister of Civil Defence. He had already resigned from Minister of Police earlier in the year. John Banks is a member of the Masonic Lodge of Parahaki No. 269."[8]

Maurice Williamson is also known to be a CIA informant, which is curious because I quite like him and he did some of the better investigations of the CIA/ Dupont crash of an Air New Zealand Flight 901 into Mt Erebus on 28 November 1979.

Internal Affairs Undercover: "This Trevor Roger Affair was during the time Inspector George Wood ran the SFO [ending in 1998]. The Fraud Squad received multiple complaints about Trevor Roger, from charities and individuals, but the SFO wrote the complaints off, because he had been vouched for by high ranking figures.[9]

"There were all sorts of rumours at the time . . . 'He's as crooked as a three-speed walking stick . . . He's been deemed non-viewable.'

"Trevor Roger was hooked up with Ashley Palmer, a convicted paedophile convicted of molesting kids in toilets, then he'd leave the kids crying behind him. The company that owned the public toilets started fitting these dead switches that opened the toilet door if no one used it [as a seat that flushes] for a certain time. So Ashley Palmer got caught in three or four different places and was sentenced to a big stretch of time in Paremoremo.

"Ashley Palmer kept going back to the High Court – Judge hunting – and he was on the verge of being branded litigous, when suddenly someone exempted him from all blame and cleared him.

"Ashley Palmer had been an Internal Affairs undercover, and worked for the cops. That he knew about paedophiles others were protecting [including Internal Affairs protection] meant that he could arrange for Internal Affairs to release him, also on paedophile charges. This included the Internal Affair's protection of child sex abuser Karen Sewell. To that we can add CIA protection."

To close off the increasingly known Serious Fraud Office frauds, the incumbent Labour Party tried to close the Serious Fraud Office in 2008 and merge it with the Police – another serious fraud. Labour were hoping that the last nine years of corruption records – of **TOTALITARIAN STATE PROPORTIONS** – would be lost in the moving and reshuffle.

---

[8] New Zealand Executive Government News Release Archive, 1 Nov. 1996, paraphrased for your enjoyment.

[9] George Wood was also protecting P manufacturers like Ingo Sheutze, a.k.a. Ingo the Dingo, a dental technician in Tauranga who said: "I'm sick of making average money". [See *Blackmailer's Guide*, pp. 71–75.]

I used to play golf with the Serious Fraud Office in the 1990s.

Inspector George Wood, former head of the SFO and Mayor of the North Shore (1998–2007) had this to say about education on the 'Character Education Programme of New Zealand':

> "I don't believe people are born with all the necessary attributes to develop their full potential in life.
>
> Many leadership and life skills must be learnt and developed as you grow up and go through life. Family, friends, workmates and other people we may meet all play a role in shaping and nurturing our character. Educating young people about values and ethics is a worthy and important way of helping them cope with this fast-moving, pressurised and constantly-changing world. We need to encourage our young people to be strong and stand up for what they believe is right, whatever pressures they may be under.
>
> If there is one virture, which I believe is above all others, it is that of integrity and good character."[10]

Translated as the two-faced, crime-supporting, kick-back artist George Wood is:

> "I don't believe in people's integrity and good character.
>
> I wasn't born with the necessary attributes to develop a full potential by anyone's standards. Leadership has to be stolen out of compromise, and this is a life skill that must be learnt and developed as you grow. We present a particular character to family, friends, workmates and others, and they all play a vital role in shaping and nurturing our cover. Presenting our cover to young people as 'values and ethics' is called 'education'. It is important and worth a lot for us to do this. It also helps young people accept the fast-moving, pressurised and constantly-changing world, making them easier to defraud later on, whether individually or on mass. We need to encourage young people to stand up for crimes we have committed and they didn't – to have a backbone for what we believe is right, and accept whatever pressures we may put them under. This is called Political Correctness and includes bleeding-heart donations.
>
> It used to be called 'Slavery'.
>
> If there is one virtue I believe in above all others, it is that of two-faced, crime-supporting, kick-back deceit. It's got me to where I am today."

"TGR thinks mostly out of the square."[11]

Arrhh, that would include reality. I find it interesting that Trevor Roger was charged with theft from charity in January 2009. Indications are that this was also Cerebal Palsy charity and Trevor was known to have visited Israel . . . and the Israelis, Eli Cara and Uri Kelman, officially caught on passport fraud, had to donate $50,000 to Cerebal Palsy for the murder of historian Michael King on 29 March 2004.[12]

---

[10] www. cepnz.co.nz/quotes. html, 'George Wood MAYOR - NORTH SHORE CITY'.

[11] UVS International News Flash, 4 June 2004.

[12] Intelligence later denied the Trevor Roger–Cerebal Palsy connection, circa 20 March 2009. I abide by their intelligence. Their method(s) of disseminating information are not always linear.

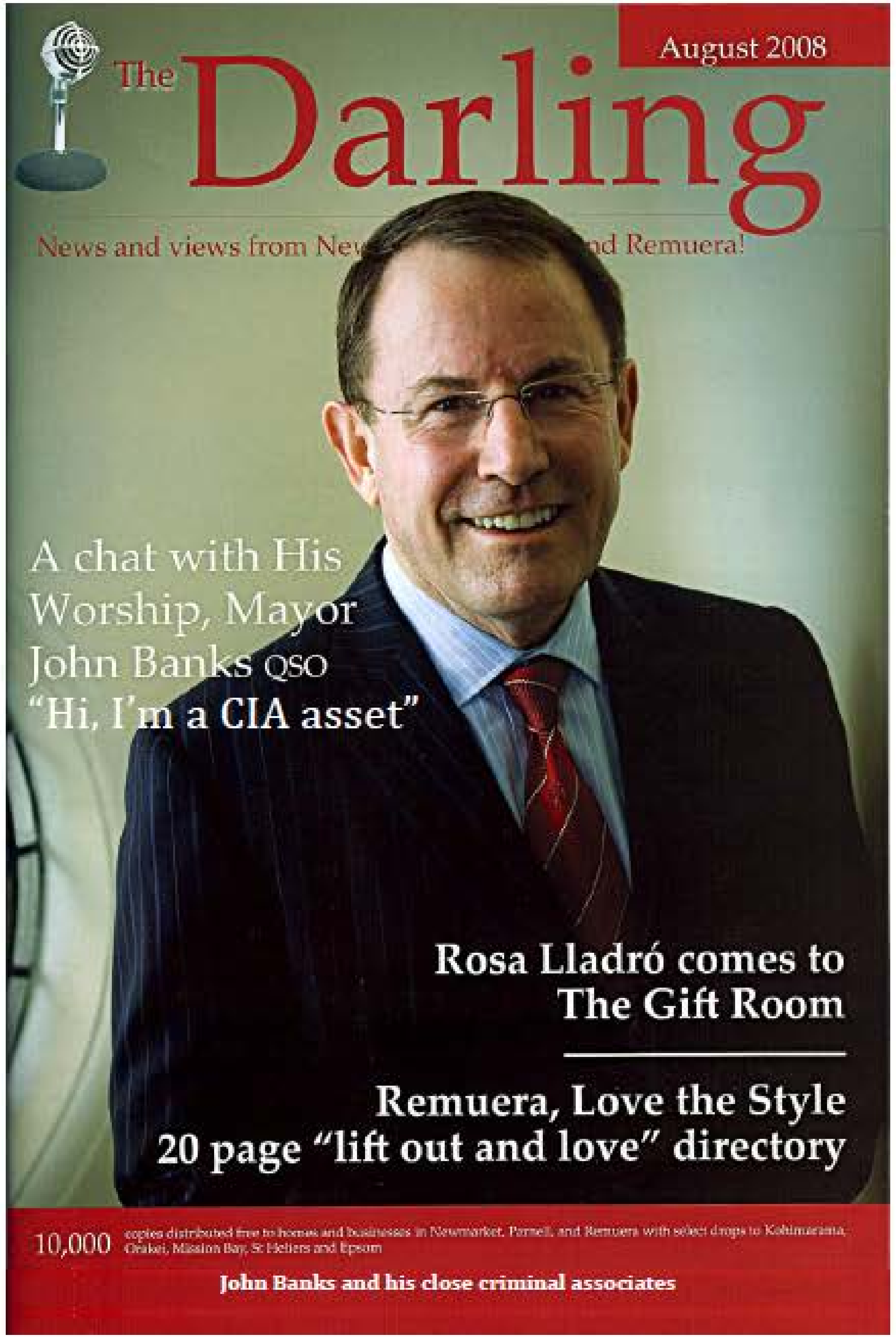
August 2008
The Darling
News and views from Ne… …nd Remuera!
A chat with His Worship, Mayor John Banks QSO
"Hi, I'm a CIA asset"
Rosa Lladró comes to The Gift Room
Remuera, Love the Style
20 page "lift out and love" directory
10,000 copies distributed free to homes and businesses in Newmarket, Parnell, and Remuera with select drops to Kohimarama, Orakei, Mission Bay, St Heliers and Epsom
John Banks and his close criminal associates

Archie Banks and Gus Parsons

The father of the Minister of Police and Mayor of Auckland John Banks' was the multiple convicted felon Archie Banks.

Archie Banks was a career criminal who worked hand in glove with Gus Parsons all their lives. They were a successful crime team because Gus Parsons was the longest serving policeman's narc in New Zealand's history, and he narced on everyone else.

In the 1970s and 80s, August "Gus" Parsons had Pandora's Box, a massage parlour in the Richmond Road shops. Gus was also a taxi driver for Co-op Taxis – New Zealand's largest and longest running – not without police support. Gus drove a cab, and picked up all the gossip, and sometimes delivered people to his brothel, or the crime, then picked them up. Whenever he got a complaint for bad behaviour with his passengers, it was simply swept under the carpet. Gus Parsons was still rooting boys until he was in his 80s.

Archie Banks was a 'Fence'. The Fence pays the criminals cash up front and then sells the goods on. Contract thieves steal and sell it on bulk, often to order, and John Bank's father, Archie Banks, was a fence who sold and distributed these stolen goods. Archie Banks was eventually convicted of being a getaway driver in a bank robbery.

John Banks (b. 1946–) traded his first suit for a set of stolen golf clubs that his father was fencing for. The golf clubs were left in the boot of the suit salesman's car.

Despite the suit and the golf clubs, Archie and his son John shared a lot together – mainly sodomy.

After spending his childhood in foster care (with a >50% chance of child sex abuse), John Banks was reunited with his parents at 15, and a victim of incestuous homosexual child sex abuse thereafter. His alcoholic mother drank, licked the labels off wine bottles, and when that distraction peeled off, she looked on. She was such a soak, she didn't actually know what she was looking at.

While John Banks was still at school, Archie Banks and his common law wife were sentenced and disappeared out of circulation for a couple of years, so schoolboy John took on Archie's role doing the bottle run. John Banks drove around in a Morris 8 towing a trailer at 3 am and picked up the empties from the sly grog joints and brothels. These were still going in the 1980s, although in a modified form from garages and spare rooms.

John Banks, the CIA, and all forms of entertainment

John Banks used to play rugby league at Mt Roskill and Mt Albert as a teenager and up to his early 20s. He played wing and was quite fast. He was flamboyant and a snappy dresser, even in his youth. He stood out. That's why everyone remembered him, and that's why the CIA took notice.

> CIA: "Here was a 5'5" peacock who flapped his beak before thinking, with a family background in crime. If we can put words in his mouth, we have ourselves a propagandist. So that's what we did."

John Banks was also a big drug dealer from the early 1960s.

All the entertainment promoters were dealing drugs – all sorts – marijuana and anything else they could get their hands on. The big deals, most of them, were done on the Akarana Golf Club course at the back of Mt Roskill (1388 Dominion Rd). Noddy Chisholm was the caddy for music promoter Hugh 'Hughy' Lynn who had Gobbles (Disco) nightclub on Queen Street, just across the road from the Civic Theatre.

Hughy Lynn: "Let's make like a turkey, we're going to Gobbles".

"But by the end of the decade [1980s], Lynn's 20 years of drug-fuelled, obsessive energy seemed to falter and Lynn seemed resigned to the collapse of his entertainment empire."[13]

Hughy Lynn's mother ran a dance studio in Dominion Road for fifty years. She was one of the originals who danced with Freda Stark (March 1910–99). Freda Stark danced stark naked and was noted for her painted "naked as a jay bird" body in the Wintergarden cabaret and nightclub at the bottom of the Civic Theatre during WWII. She was a favourite of American troops who referred to her as the "Fever of the Fleet" without them realising she was a very active lesbian who, after WWII, married a gay man in London, then became a secretary at Auckland University from 1970.

Ever since, the Auckland University has had a tradition of employing lesbians in gay cover marriages and gives elite support and higher grades to same-sex lovers. Auckland University was renamed the 'University of Auckland' to celebrate its complete takeover by the CIA. The Chancellor was then replaced by the bisexual child sex abuser Hugh Fletcher (18 October 2004), married to the sex addict Chief Justice.

All you have to do to have sex with the Chief Justice is to become her chauffeur. After that, she'll get you a job at the University of Auckland, where you'll report directly to the CIA – the highest ranking of the University of Auckland administration.

Spymaster: "Hughie Lynn's mother had a hand in killing Freda Stark. She was the chief prosecution witness. In my experience, if the chief prosecution witness is a female in a murder trial, she's usually the killer. This stops the female getting charged with murder and allows New Zealand to continue being run by murderous females."

"Mr Banks has worked in market research and sales for two international pharmaceutical companies, and has been Operations and Development Director in a group of licensed Auckland restaurants."[14]

John Banks had shares in Tony's Restaurant chain. Establish in 1963, Tony's Restaurant chain had a monopoly on Auckland Restaurants until the mid-1970s. The CIA that backed Tony's ensured that no one else got a license. Tony's served steak and spaghetti, two meals, "in an atmosphere reminiscent of an old English pub, cosy and inviting [tired and styleless]. The only things that change over the years are the carpet and the staff! [by 2008 Tony's added seafood.] Tony's Wellesley Street restaurant is Auckland's oldest surviving restaurant [1963–2009]."[15]

The CIA backed drug dealers and child sex abusers into the restaurant monopoly of Auckland (1963–74). Tony White was a known dope dealer.

Internal Affair's Agent: "In 1994 a group of four homosexuals, some of them transvestites were hanging around in a ring at the back of the men's toilets in the Wellesley Street Tony's. It was so bad, one of the patrons complained to the police. They didn't want to know and referred the complainant to an undercover, who then told me."

John Banks, Phil Warren and vanloads of dope

John Banks worked closely with the nightclub owner, music promoter and later, Auckland City Councillor, Deputy Mayor and Acting Mayor, Phil Warren, who would buy vanloads of dope from up north.

X: "As drugs became available, people started to use them and sing about them, and with 'the music marketeers', they started to aim their music at drug users. This was supported by

---

[13] Hugh Lynn – New Zealand, The Path of Life, 'Burning up the Years 2 Hugh Lynn'.
[14] Executive Government Archive, Hon John Banks; and Encyclopedia, John Banks, New Zealand.
[15] Tony's Original Steak & Seafood Restaurant website.

Phil Warren, a music promoter TV talent scout who bought and sold the largest amount of marijuana in Auckland, if not New Zealand. Whenever a vanload of drugs came down from up north, and a quick enough sale could not be procured, it was Phil Warren who bought the vanload of drugs."

"During his monopoly on the Auckland drug market, Phil Warren QSO and JP spent 40 years working in the entertainment and music industries as one of its most hated players. He abused emerging entertainers and struck a management 'Yes' or 'No' chord with the talent and the talentless. His primary requirement was, 'Will this music help sell my drugs?'"

Phil Warren was balding with a devil's facial shave, short and fat, and always in a suit. He was short and talentless with connections (often through drugs), and ensured others with talent would not flourish, while those with both male and female parts were promoted into Australasian stardom.

Still, John Banks' and Phil Warren's name and face were plastered everywhere and they both had media protection (also through drugs) so that no police were brave enough to charge either of them. Instead they thought they had to protect them and their drug deals. So they did.

Police Minister John Banks was one of these

After dealing in vanloads of marijuana seasonally for decades, Phil Warren became a founding Auckland City Councillor in 1992 and ended up being the Chairman (1992–2002), re-elected a record four times.[16] He also spent four years as the Deputy Mayor and a period as Acting Mayor.

When he died on 23 January 2002, the ARC, the ARA, other City Councils and even the Government paid tribute to the former Auckland drug trafficker with Freemason and police connections. A lot of the councillors and politicans had grown up on his drugs, so the cover continued beyond his death, and even to this day.

These tributes considered Phil Warren "the man who helped develop some of this country's top entertainers", but he chopped many of them off at the knees. They cited him as a political and entertainment guru, well-known broadcaster and magazine columnist, yet he was a decidely poor entertainer and many considered him a Freemason-like creep. It was from him and the likes of him that the New Zealand bashing machine took public hold:

"I was born in New Zealand, the capital of criticism,
where anyone with even half-a-brain gets kicked twice a day."

Phil Warren was the President of the SPCA for six years[17] and Auckland hosted a musical tribute to benefit the animal world which he cared so deeply about, a final tribute to the man known as "Mr Auckland" (as opposed to "Mr Asia").

Phil Warren was originally known as 'Mr Auckland' for his ability to purchase and distribute marijuana so quickly. Principally because he had police contacts and those police had contacts with the narcs who were the biggest drug dealers. Such a narc was August 'Gus' Parsons who worked with Archie Banks – John Banks father. So the Phil Warren/ John Banks drug connection carried over two generations.

Yes, you can bank on it.

All of Warren's charity work was done in exchange for ongoing cover for his drug dealing days, which covered decades. Queen Elizabeth II and Prince Philip are heavily into drug trafficking in the former colonies so made him a companion of the Queens Service Order in 1994, cementing his cover. His fellow drug dealer John Banks got the same cover in 2000.

---

[16] Not enough time has elapsed for anyone else to eclipse him.

[17] SPCA: 'Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals' – a cover for beastiality.

Usually you have to wait 18 years of not being charged for the cover to be set in concrete, via the Queen's approved metal and silk (so that would be 1976 and 1982).

When Phil Warren died in January 2002, Former Police Minister and Auckland City Mayor John Banks paid tribute by saying he: "had known Warren for 30 years [from 1971] and the city has lost one of its greatest [dealer] leaders. He was a great man who made huge contributions to Auckland."

John Banks provided on going cover for Phil Warren, as John Banks was heavily compromised by his homosexuality; pronounced vanity; egocentric mental illness in which he talks of himself in the third person as 'Banksie'; his relationship with a 13-year-old boy at Piha/Bethells Beach in 1996; his adoption of three Russian brothers and sisters; his sexual interference with them; his marriage to a woman who does not have sex with men; and he cancelled the Hero Parade to cover the fact that he was gay. All the queers were angry because they knew he is gay, and a kiddy fucker. Banks was, and is, a Freemason. No doubt Phil Warren was too.

"The Auckland Regional Council says Warren was one of the region's most colourful politicians, and he will be sorely missed." [18]

Auckland City Councillor, Local Government Minister, and former ship girl from the age of 14, child prostitute Sandra (née Barber) Lee: "Phil Warren had a distinguished record . . . most recently as Chairman of the Auckland Regional Council, but also previously with the Auckland City Council as Deputy Mayor, and as an office holder of Local Government . . . He was an icon of the New Zealand entertainment industry, and a popular talkback radio host."

Spymaster: "In other words, a total arsehole – not popular outside the circle of compromise."

Phil Warren had also been Chairman of the Auckland Regional Growth Forum and the Hauraki Gulf Forum since its inception. "He was also one of this region's most colourful politicians, prepared to take on any issue and call a spade a spade."[19]

Phil Warren went into hospital and died of a heart attack the same day. He was probably killed on the orders of Helen Clark for providing her with marijuana in the 1970s and 80s and having the ability to sniff out her heroin trafficking. He was most likely killed by the Mossad using a sniper with the heart attack attachment. It's been around since 1974.

"John Banks is an owner/operator of neighbourhood taverns and restaurants, and is a former chairman of the New Zealand Licensed Restaurant and Cabaret Association"[20] – a closet fag and CIA asset working to prevent competition restaurant and nightclub licenses to ensure a monopoly on drug dealing.

"Before politics he worked as a Market Researcher"[21] – mail orders for dope.

And from there he rose and rose, as has been given the rose – the CIA Rosicrucian badge of untouchability . . .

> "The Knights of Malta's intimate links with the Nazi movement found its ideological base in their common Rosicrucian belief system. This states that 'Man's evolution is held back by certain lower sub-races who must be removed for the process to continue. Through the CIA, this feudal belief system had infiltrated the heart of democratic America.' Under the cover of the Cold War apparatus, the CIA became a global leader in biological and chemical warfare, mind control techniques, psychological operations, propaganda and covert warfare . . . propaganda, giving

---

[18] Auckland Regional Council media release citing Mrs Brosnahan, 23 January 2002.

[19] *Ibid.*

[20] Executive Government Archive, Hon John Banks; and Encyclopedia, John Banks, New Zealand.

[21] *Ibid.*

> the Rosicrucian hierarchy of the CIA unprecedented financial support and powers . . . This would be in keeping with the aims of the Knights of Malta and their Rosicrucian-inspired secret agenda."[22]
>
> Does this sound like everyone's description of John Banks or what?

Let's extract the perfect description of John Banks out of this . . .

> "John Banks is a Nazi with a common Rosicrucian belief system where the advancement of New Zealand is held back by Maori and Polynesians who must be removed. This belief system has infiltrated into the heart of New Zealand democracy (1961–91). During the Cold War, the CIA became a global leader in biological and chemical warfare (distributing drugs in the West through restaurants and nightclubs), mind control techniques (speaking before thinking), psychological operations (drugs and drug dealers promoted), propaganda (a homosexual saying he's homophobic) and covert warfare (Banks gets on TV and everything he says is a lie) and . . . propaganda (Banks employs propagandist[23]), giving John Banks CIA status in its hierarchy, unprecedented financial support and powers – 'You sell the drugs, we'll protect you, you'll be rich, we'll control you through shame, we'll protect you from that shame, and you'll be our Rosicrucian Nazi, I mean CIA agent' . . . John Banks is a CIA asset and informant."

"John Banks is involved in commercial property development and historic property restoration, and is an avid antique and art collector." [24]

He made his investment money from drug deals behind all these fronts and had money to spare for his Victorian Kiddy porn and chamber pot dildos:

> ". . . [John Bum-Bandit Banks] B-B, who was busy poring over his collection of Victorian kiddy porn and chamber pots with china dildos embedded in the bottom . . . B-B has the largest collection of Victorian porn in the Southern Hemisphere and the second-biggest collection of chamber pots with china dildos in the Southern Hemisphere."[25]

Mr Banks is the holder of a private pilot licence – fixed wing and helicopters.

CIA: "Arrgh, would that be to still transport drugs from his old electorate 'up north' in Whangarei back to Auckland and any other location he choses to make remote."

"He has served as Parliamentary representative on the Dominion Council and the Auckland Divisional Council of the National Party. He was a Government appointee to the Northland Regional Development Council." [26]

"John Banks was a National Party member since 1972. He stood for Roskill in 1978, failed, then stood for Whangarei in 1981 and got in"[27]

John Banks and CIA Consultancy

"Mr Banks has served on the Public Expenditure, House, Commerce and Marketing, and Local Bills parliamentary select committees."[28] He was spending money according to CIA directives.

---

[22] New World Order, the CIA, website and movie.

[23] Banks employs propagandist to tout him as the next Prime Minister, even when he's not running for government, only for Auckland Mayor, as on Radio 1ZB, circa 6 October 2008. Yes, he's that much of a CIA mind-controlled asset – that fucked up as a CIA fuckwit.

[24] Executive Government Archive, Hon John Banks.

[25] *Blackmailer's Guide*, October 2007, p. 150, including footnote 41.

[26] Executive Government Archive, Hon John Banks; and Encyclopedia, John Banks, New Zealand.

[27] Executive Government Archive, Hon John Banks.

[28] *Ibid.*

CIA: "These consultants fees have been huge over the years. We imported these 'advanced reports' from America with the names changed, and any alterations necessary to achieve whatever the CIA wanted for New Zealand.

"This was generally no, or little progress, as we need New Zealand as a service island for Antarctica. That's the big picture.

"When we really wanted to stall progress, we infiltrated the unions, as with Bob Hawke in Australasia. This was a double win as we control your unions to protest and strike. This would stall the country and show us who the diehard commis were, what they were prepared to do, and would also 'shock test the economy' which gave us valuable feedback.[29]

"We even worked with your SIS, more or less ran the thing, although it always appeared to have more British control. When Dick Scott offered to be an SIS informant, we had the SIS refuse, as we didn't need him. Plus he was all high and mighty and no one was prepared to believe anything he said.

"Now he's one of your official historians.

"You K.I.W.I.'s really do live in a sea of infinite crap, plus these huge consultancy fees are taking money out of your country."

> "Figures released to the *Herald* show Mayor John Banks is fighting a losing battle to control spending on consultants, which has soared to $78.7 million in the present financial year. Last May, Mr Banks cited difficult economic times for trying to hold consultant spending to last year's level of $56.7 million.
>
> Despite promising to search for efficiencies and an end to the culture of waste, Mr Banks' first budget resulted in a 13.6 per cent rise in consultant costs to $64.4 million . . . Mr Banks admitted ratepayers' money was still being wasted on consultants . . .
>
> 'I have absolutely no doubt that consultants in this city have had a very good feed from the Auckland City Council. It is now time for them to give back', Mr Banks said [fat chance].
>
> Consultancy firm Deloitte earned the most in seven months – $4.48 million on improving resource and building consents processes [I offered to do it for $100,000], a new payroll system and other customer related work . . . followed by Opus International Consultants ($1.9 million)."[30]

So the Auckland Mayor John Banks is quite capable of giving his CIA minders NZ$8 million per annum in protection money.

Deloitte established accountancy rules in America in the 1880s (when there were none), then established themselves as the end certifier in accountancy. Deloitte are based from New York from where the world's biggest legal rorts have been run thereafter (Madoff & Co.), but they offer that they are from Switzerland to maintain that clean clear mountain air image.

Deloitte now specialises in advice in: Tax Consulting and Audits, Public Sector, Finance, Enterprise Risk Management, Merger & Acquisitions, Energy & Resources, Real Estate, Telecommunications, Life Sciences & Health Care, Transportation, Manufacturing, Consumer Business, Techology, and Media, including their own media releases praising themselves constantly. Many of these sectors have now fallen over and require government help to prop them up, but the CIA has so far ensured Deloitte is free of tainting media.

> Deloitte has offices in the United States, the United Kingdom, Canada, Australia, New Zealand (including the Cook Islands), France, Germany, Belgium, Netherlands, Luxembourg, Austria, Switzerland, Denmark, Finland, Norway, Iceland, Sweden, Ireland, Hungary, Spain, Portugal, Italy, Greece, Cyprus, Gibraltar, Malta, Morocco, India, Pakistan, Saudi Arabia, Bahrain, Qatar, Oman, Brunei, Darussalam, Kuwait, Syria, Tunisia, United

---

[29] In the 1951 waterfront strike, this was to the point of ruin, although that wasn't CIA run.

[30] Bernard Orsman, *New Zealand Herald*, 27 February 2009, A3.

> Arab Emirates, Yemen, Japan, Taiwan, Thailand, Vietnam, Korea, Malaysia, Indonesia, Singapore, Philippines, Papua New Guinea, Guam (including Micronesia, Marshall Islands, Northern Mariana Islands and Republic of Palau), China (including Hong Kong and Macau), Russia, Georgia, Belarus, Azerbaijan, Estonia, Uzbekistan, Ukraine, Moldova, Romania, Lithuania, Kazakhstan, Latvia, Serbia, Bosnia and Herzegovina, Coatia, Montenegro, Slovak Replublic, Slovenia, Albania, Bulgaria, Czech Republic, Poland, Macedonia, Mexico, Argentina, Brazil, Columbia, Venezuela, Ecuador, Chile, Uruguay, Paraguay, El Salvador, Nicaragua, Costa Rica, Panama, Peru, Guatemala, Honduras, Bahamas, Barbados, Bermuda, British Virgin Islands, Jamaica, Antilles, Aruba, Dominican Republic, Cayman Islands, South Africa (including Angola, Botswana, Malawi, Mozambique, Namibia, Swaziland and Zimbabwe), Nigeria, Kenya (including Tanzania and Uganda), Libya, Jordan, Egypt, Lebanon, the Gaza Strip, West Bank, and Israel; from where they regularly overcharge, and where they regularly borrow their projects from other countries and reapply them.

If Deloitte does not have a background of CIA influenced, I'll eat my hat.

Media Release, February 2009, 'Opus Performs Well and Exceeds Forecasts': Opus International Consultants, New Zealand's largest infrastructure consultancy, has reported another good year. For the year ended 31 December 2008, Revenue was $371.5 million, up 25.4 percent on the previous year."

Opus International Consultants is formerly 'Works Consultancy Services Limited', a New Zealand based consultancy providing services in engineering, architecture and environmental management. International consultancy for infrastructure, architecture, construction, water, environment, asset development and management solutions … with offices in New Zealand, Australia and Hong Kong, Malaysia, UK and Canada.

What these guys charge a million dollars for, a local can do for $100,000. Deloitte especially, is part of globalisation – ignoring local education, qualifications and consultancy in favour of CIA-backed directives and consultancy fees as bribes in exchange for paedophile and drug cover-ups.

Since Auckland Mayor John Banks is a CIA mind-controlled drug-dealing shamed paedophile, he employs Deloitte in favour of locals.

The bills are huge, the progress is questionable, and the result is financial collapse.

John Banks' drugs and CIA takeover of Local Body Councils

A mate of former All Black, Auckland Boy's Grammar Old Boy and radio sports announcer Graham 'Twice-as-many-teeth-and-all-of-them-competing / Adopted-by-rich-lawyers-who-promoted-me-above-my-station' Thorne (National MP, 1990–93):

> "Everything John Banks says in public and to people in business, he believes the exact opposite of, and that's the key to his whole character."

Very short term Prime Minister Mike Moore:

> "John Banks will "say what he thinks, but he may not think about what he says".[31]

This was actually confirmed by John Banks, both the quote, and that he does this. This tends to indicate and confirm that John Banks is a CIA mind-controlled fuckwit and knows it.

Certainly, in the CIA takeover of Local Body Councils, Banks had a leg up. "He was the highest polling candidate – elected member of the Birkenhead Borough Council and the Birkenhead City Council and also the elected Birkenhead member of the Auckland Regional Authority."[32] All were zones of wankers.

---

[31] Paul Goldsmith, *John Banks: A Biography*, Penguin Books, Auckland, 1 April 1997, p.122; as reviewed by Dr. Michael Bassett.

[32] Executive Government Archive, Hon John Banks; and Encyclopedia, John Banks, New Zealand.

John Banks' homosexual child sex Abuse

Son of a Freemason: "John 'Banksie' Banks likes 14-year-old Maori boys. He would drive around Whangarei where he was MP (1981–99) on his Harley-Davidson with his leather jacket with tassles streaming everywhere and pick up young Maori boys and let them ride on his bike with them. Then he'd make a sex date with them. Sex for an icecream – that sort of thing.

"When Whangarei MP John Banks was invited to present the end of year awards in 1995 at Whangarei Boys' High School [1200 students, at least 50% Maori[33]] and was up on stage during the end of year awards ceremony, all the male pupils started stomping their feet on the floor and Banksie had to leave. He couldn't present the end of year awards, and the students wouldn't let him.

"The boys at Whangarei Boys' High School ran John Banks out of town.

"John Banks realised he'd done so much damage up there, his behaviour had become so widely known, that he had to go.

"Shortly after being stomped off the Whangarei Boys' High School 1995 end of year awards ceremony for his rabid scouting Harely-Davidson-riding homosexual child sex abuse, Minister of Police John Banks resigned as the Minister of Police where he had been covering for paedophiles but placing them outside area zones and declaring their were none."

John 'Banksie' Banks realised that even his CIA backing could not save him. (For the Auckland City Council confirmation of John Bank's child sex abuse, See Attachment "ii", 'Taxi Stand')

John Banks removed/resigns from Minister of Police

There is nowhere on the web that shows when John Banks was removed from the Minister of Police. All we can find is that it was before 28 May 1996. He resigned his other positions on 1 November 1996, citing that he did not want to be in the same Cabinet as Winston Peters, which is interesting because Winston Peters is a Mossad asset, and the Mossad have all the sexual secrets on CIA assets, and are allowed to refer to them. The opposite is not the case.

The Mossad's Winston Peters could always have produced the photo of John Banks standing in a ballerina's tutu infront of a whole lot of police motorcycles with the traffic officers all dressed in their S&M gear with their S&M names displayed on the front of their motorcycles. This is (part of) the reason why the police promoted John Banks as one of their's. He's totally compromised and John Banks is unable to issue a word about a Police

> 'crime, pinch, shout, stitch-up, assault, violence, murder, paedophilia, necrophilia, police beastiality, or the police manufacture and/or distribution of methamphetamines, and/or any other drug'.

"On 1 November 1996, John Banks resigned from Cabinet, becoming a backbencher after he refused to participate in the same cabinet as New Zealand First leader and coalition partner Winston Peters."[34]

John Banks was ousted from Minister of Police (1990 to end of 1995/early 1996) and replaced by the Honorable John Luxton, who then appointed one of the few (and last) honest and qualified cops. Peter Doone became the new Commissioner of Police on 1 July 1996:

"A qualified lawyer and financial manager with Masters degrees in law from Victoria University and Public Administration from Harvard University".[35]

---

[33] The other High School in Whangarei is Tikipunga High School with 500 students of which 75 % are Maori..

[34] Encyclopedia, John Banks, New Zealand, paraphrased for your enjoyment.

[35] *New Zealand Executive Government News Release Archive*, 'Hon John Luxton Minister of Police | New Commissioner of Police Announced', 28 May 1996.

Peter Doone was then removed as the Commissioner of Police on 25 January 2000 by the KGB agent Helen Clark. It was one of the first things she did (before the murder of Chris Beeby).

"Banks sometimes clashed with Prime Minister Jim Bolger and other senior ministers."[36]

It wasn't hard, the CIA's John Banks knew that PM Jim Bolger was a secret tea bag heroin user à la Taupo and extra vomit bags in the RNZAF helicopters.

John Banks' CIA Media cover

The CIA still managed to keep their agent's homosexual child sex abuse out of the media spotlight and arranged for further cover to be put in place. As usual this cover was in the form of promotion.

In 1997 John Banks (CIA mind-controlled paedophile) took over the talkback show from the Tavistock psychologically trained Robert Muldoon (d. 5 August 1992), by Muldoon's public request.[37]

Internal Affairs Agent: "Then in the late 1990s, John Banks was cruising on his Harley-Davidson all dressed in leather tassles, when he rode past a 6- or 7- year-old girl in a playground, stopped, and offered her a ride. She got on the motorcycle then her parents rushed out onto the road and flagged down the next car, which happened to be an unmarked police car following John Banks. The parents hopped in and the plain-clothed police gave chase. They caught up with Banksie, stopped him with child, and persuaded him to give up the six-year-old Australian girl, and to make good, invite the parents home for a barbeque – which he did. The Aussie parents were so dumb, they even wrote a letter praising John Banks as a great politician and 'the greatest advertisement for New Zealand ever'."

John Banks Honoured

In 1990, Mr Banks was awarded the 1990 Commemorative Medal. He is an honorary life member of the Pacific Asia Travel Association (PACA), whatever that is. He is also a member of the Masonic Lodge of Parahaki No. 269 – incestuous child sex abusers – you "too" can do the "69" with your child. We have the hot pools and private heated steam rooms, especially designed for cretinous fondling."

"Cretin": 'a stupid, obtuse, or mentally defective person'.

"Cretinous fondling": taking advantage of a retard in a steam room'.

Then in the 2000 New Years Honours, John Banks was awarded the 'Companion of The Queen's Service Order for Public Service' (QSO), probably on the basis of the Australian parent's letter.

John Banks QSO, Queer Son Of A Career Criminal QSOACC

---

[36] Encyclopedia, John Banks, New Zealand.

[37] Mediaworks, MEDIA RELEASES, 'New Hosts with a blend of Politics and Sport', 26 January 2005.

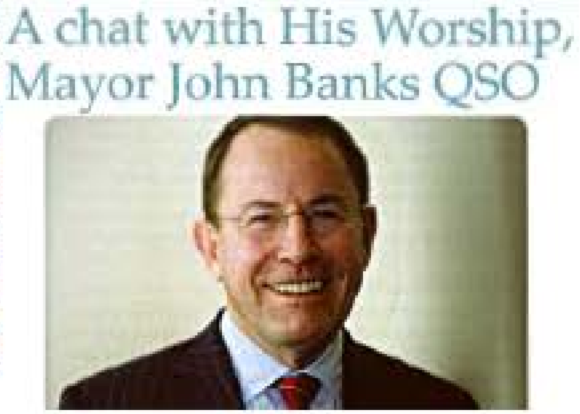
A chat with His Worship,
Mayor John Banks QSO

The CIA control of talkback radio was still in place in 2005, when they made this confused "media release":

"Banksie came to Radio Pacific eight years ago when he was the MP for Whangarei. Sir Robert Muldoon [dead five years] had asked if John would take over his popular Sunday afternoon slot. John took to radio with unbridled enthusiasm and a talent that saw him rise to host the Radio Pacific breakfast show, subsequently winning 'Broadcaster of the Year' at the NZ Radio Awards."[38]

The CIA often play the same con twice, especially when the population are stupified – dumbed down by the New Zealand Judiciary's **DEEP SLEEP** Experiment – now a successful operation, so it's **Operation DEEP SLEEP**.

Radio talkback host's primary role, as the Intelligence assets they all are, is to wrap the public in ignorance.

Four (4) billion people say: **"WE HATE TALKBACK RADIO HOSTS."**

X: "The longest running, and most popular talkback host, Leighton Smith, is an ASIO captain and CIA asset. He won't even answer my calls. I guess my phone numbers are marked as "NAF" – 'Not a Friend', – "NAM" – 'Not A Mark',or "UM" – 'Unmarkable'."

Dr. Michael Bassett covers for John Banks, his family, himself, and Paul Swain

Dr. Michael Bassett: "His honeymoon lasted just four days before Banks got restless; 'constant activity seemed always preferable to relaxation and intimacy."[39]

Well, that's because he beat up his first wife, a pharmacist in Bank's Corner in Whangarei, circa 1974, then realised he was interested in children, and not in women, so he married Amanda – a woman who does not have sex with men, and adopted foreign Russian children, while lying about his status as Minister of Police, which he was no longer.

Dr. Michael Bassett: "Those privileged to have met his ready-made family of young Russian children can testify to his warm affection for them, yet there is a distance about John Banks in general that puzzles . . . John Banks and Amanda have three adopted Russian children, all from the same family – Natalia, Segei and Alexander."[40]

"The achievement that I'm most proud of would be honouring the promise to an eight year old Russian orphan who said to me, 'If you take me home with you, I'll sing and dance for you forever' . . ."[41]

Gee, what language was that in John?

This paedophile cover should not be surprising as Dr. Michael Bassett (b. 1938) was rooting Paul Swain (b. 1951) when Paul was a schoolboy helping Michael Bassett around the office (aged 15/16 and 28/29).

---

[38] Mediaworks, MEDIA RELEASES, 'New Hosts with a blend of Politics and Sport', 26 January 2005. Yes, it's that confusing and that stupid.

[39] Paul Goldsmith, *John Banks: A Biography*, Penguin Books, Auckland, 1 April 1997 (& 2001), p.133; as reviewed by Dr. Michael Bassett.

[40] Dr. Michael Bassett' s review of *John Banks: A Biography*, in 1997.

[41] *The Darling* monthly, August 2008, 'A chat with His Worship, Mayor John Banks QSO', p. 22, '10,000 copies distributed free to homes and businesses in the Newmarket, Parnell, and Remuera with select drops in Kohimarama, Orakei, Mission Bay, St Heliers and Epsom'.

Paul Swain (39) was then promoted to a Labour Party Minister for 18 years (1990–2008), including Cabinet posts as Minister of Commerce; Communications; Corrections; Immigration; Information Technology; Labour; Statistics; State Owned Enterprises; Associate Minister of Finance; and of Economic Development. Paul was shunted around rapidly and never expected to achieve anything, as long as he spoke clearly and emptily to the camera, and never mentioned Dr. Michael Bassett's penis, arse, or mouth.

Dr. Michael Bassett was New Zealand Labour Minister of Health and Local Government (1984–87) and Minister of Internal Affairs, Local Government, Civil Defence and Arts & Culture (1987–90), and is a noted New Zealand historian.

He is noted for criticising historians and then doing everything he criticised.

Dr. Michael Bassett QSO has been 'allowed to be become' an 'Official Historian' as he is heavily compromised and so close to being a child sex abuser, few count the difference. Michael Bassett's role as 'Official Historian' is as a 'paedophile minder'.

Bassett is an historian who will never mentioned political paedophiles, or himself'.

So Dr. Michael Bassett will provide full cover for John Banks, despite them being from opposing political parties.

All four are QSO – Dr. Michael Bassett, Paul Swain, John Banks and Phil Warren.

The child sex abuser Dr Michael Bassett seems to be sharing web space with the bisexual paedophile Sir Roger Douglas. They served as Minister of Health and Minister of Finance under the transvestite-rooting Prime Minister David Lange. Here's what Lange's lover Margaret Pope had to say about Dr Michael Bassett's book *Working with David* and his role in the 1984–87 bisexual kiddy-fucking Labour government. I really does show Dr Michael Bassett to be a bitching fag:

> "*Working with David*, Michael Bassett's account of his part in the life of David Lange, comes heavily weighted with the trappings of scholarship, and its author hasn't stopped short of proclaiming his lingering affection for David . . . the first time I ever met Dr Michael Bassett I felt my flesh creep . . . The writing is purple, overheated, even foam-flecked. It starts with a slur, and looks for facts to back it up. If the author can't find any facts, he makes something up . . . reviewers have resorted to asking if the author could possibly be serious . . .
>
> . . . in this detestable book . . . the depression from which I think Lange sometimes suffered, and the drinking which came close to destroying him . . .
>
> From the time Lange . . . sacked Bassett from the health portfolio, Lange was the target of a campaign of smear and innuendo which is resurrected in the pages of *Working with David*. Here it is in text, just as it used to be in life. It increased in its viciousness and intensity . . . I'm glad David Lange never had to see this book, and glad too that the source of the poison has so comprehensively revealed itself. After close to three years of rejoicing in his ministerial partnership with Douglas. I do wonder how Bassett maintained the rage for close to 600 pages.
>
> David Lange: 'You've got to remember, Douglas has Bassett riding him'."[42]

The book was ready to published before Lange was killed, I mean died of introduced wrong medication. But I think Lange himself vetoed it just before he 'died'. David Lange's partner Margaret Pope and Lange's successor Helen Clark were accused of poisoning Lange . . . So the Labour Party really was a bitchfest.

So much for the Labour of love

---

[42] Margaret Pope, *New Zealand Herald*, 'The truth about David and me', 28 June 2008.

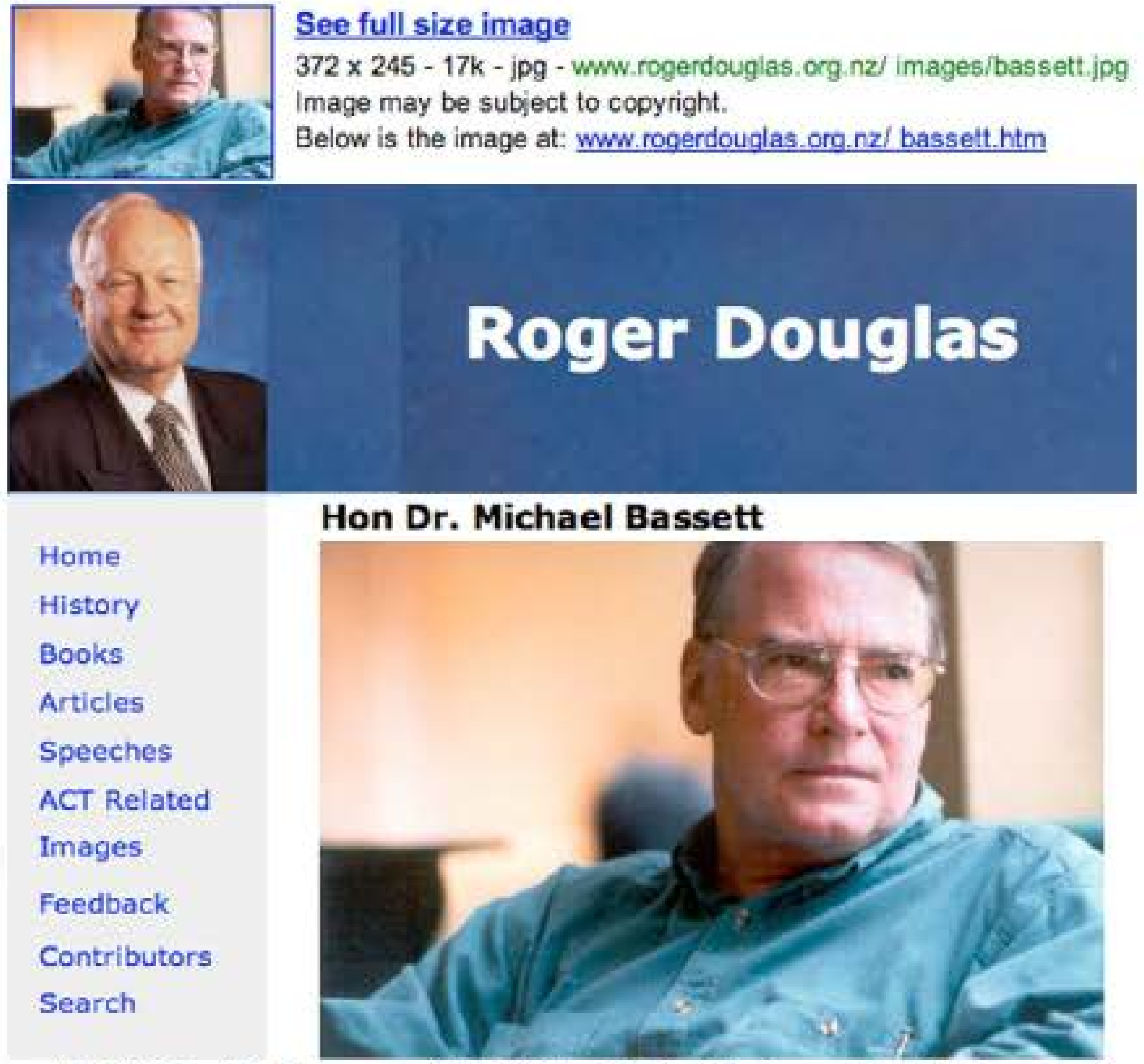

See full size image

372 x 245 - 17k - jpg - www.rogerdouglas.org.nz/ images/bassett.jpg

Image may be subject to copyright.

Below is the image at: www.rogerdouglas.org.nz/ bassett.htm

Roger Douglas

Hon Dr. Michael Bassett

"In 1990 John Banks was appointed Minister of Police, Tourism and Sport before assuming the Tourism, Local Government, and Sport, Fitness and Leisure portfolios following the 1993 general election. The Civil Defence portfolio was added in March 1996.[43] Civil Defence is still Dad's Army.

"After endless rhetoric about the need for better gun control, all he [Banks] delivered as Minister of Police was a tame, ineffective piece of legislation. His 900 extra police turned out to be smoke and mirrors . . . John Banks' time as minister [of police] will be seen as a passing interlude, one where the Police were able to enjoy a friend at court who represented no threat to their established, increasingly old-fashioned ways of doing things."[44]

"The Police force and senior police hierarchy considered Banks one of their own, and gave him all the respect"[45] of a fellow criminal in a suit and fence activist.

Police Undercover: "90 % of murders in New Zealand are done by the police, or on police behest . . . while they promote all their crooked mates to the top positions and protect stolen meat, and any trade involving theiving."

---

[43] *New Zealand Executive Government News Release Archive*, 'Hon John Luxton Minister of Police | New Commissioner of Police Announced, 28 May 1996.

[44] Dr. Michael Bassett' s review of *John Banks: A Biography*, in 1997.

[45] Encyclopedia, John Banks, New Zealand, paraphrased for your enjoyment.

Peter Leitch – The Mad Butcher

When John Banks was the Minister of Police, all of this continued with increased immunity.

Peter Leitch was selling meat from Rosella Meats in Mangere, which became The Mad Butcher in 1971.

Mr Rogers leased a 150 acre farm on Puhinui Road from the ARA. Located near the Auckland International Airport, it was run as a sheep farm with a backshed, and no abattoir.

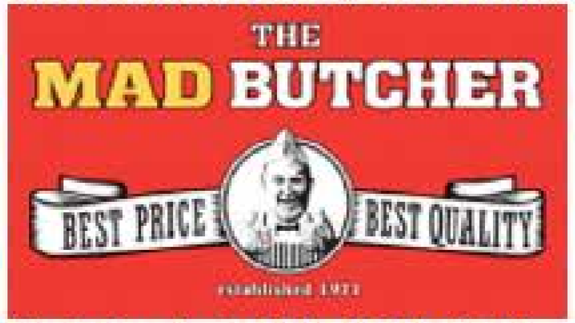

Circa 1985–90, The Mad Butcher truck used to go in and pick up dead and dressed sheep directly from the farm, and not from an abattoir. This unlicensed meat with no MAF approval, was cheaper because it wasn't inspected. It was backyard meat.

Rustled (stolen) meat is also processed in this way.

Antonio Dickson and Stuey Smith also used to steal meat and sell it to The Mad Butcher.

Stuey Smith noticed a refrigerated truck driver staying at a motel in Ellerslie, Auckland, so he pegged it out. Noting there was a six hour window, he stole the whole truck with Antonio Dickson. As pre-arranged, he sold the entire contents to The Mad Butcher in the wee hours, then returned the truck empty to the same park outside the Ellerslie motel. The whole trip was about 50 km.

Stuey Smith has done a lot of time and he's knifed a few people and Antonio Dickson was no wall flower. He was killed on 4 February 2009 in prison by THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE using the Head Hunters while Dickson had been transferred to solitary confinement for no reason.

The police wanted Dickson gone because his female drug dealing cohorts were police undercovers and the coroners report showed enormous inconsistencies with the official story – that he hung himself using towels.

So Peter 'Rustle Meat' Leitch was selling unlicensed unapproved partially stolen meat, and through this economic advancement, there are now twenty or so 'Mad Butcher' stores, with as many other butchers out of business – those who didn't sell unlicensed rustled meat, or had it stolen from them.

As usual, Queen and Country provided cover and in June 1991, Leitch was awarded the Queen's Service Medal for services to the community. As with John Banks, New Zealand television provided cover of the criminal. Peter Leitch ended up on TV, then with his own TV One show, 'A Mad Business', Saturday nights at 8.30 pm, 2008/09.

Peter Leitch/The Mad Butcher (who chops up animals for a living) is a patron of the SPCA (Society for the Prevention of Concerned finding out about beastiAlity) . . . and the Dyslexic Society, which he has.

For ongoing media cover, public empathy and tax evasion, he formed a trust with Suburban Newspapers Auckland, 'The Mad Butcher – Suburban Newspapers Charitable Trust'.

Rugby league supporter: "So you think Peter Leitch is a league supporter? Well, often during the match he's out the back shagging some Polynesian woman in the back of the St. Johns Ambulance."

Common opinion is: "The Mad Butcher is mad".

I'm MAD for stolen meat.

Granddaughter Leitch – A Mad Politician – and a Leitch.

The result of eating and selling unlicensed meat.

The unlicensed meat hampsta.

The Year That Was
The Reputation That Was.

A Mad Business.

CIA Sabotage of New Zealand

For his CIA sabotage of New Zealand local-body and national governance, John Banks was made Minister of Police, awarded the QSO and made Mayor of Auckland – twice.

In 1994, the CIA officially approached Police Minister John Banks and asked him to write a column giving their point of view. John was so excited about it, he even mentioned it in his suburban newspaper column:

> ‘Hi, my name's John Banks. I'll be your CIA intermediary for the duration of this column. I am so proud to have been picked by the CIA.’

Yeah, sure John, but we know you've been CIA since the 1960s. The only reason you don't know is that you are a mind-controlled fuckwit.

As “New Zealand is the Pied Piper with cross-dressing mayors”, John Banks became the Mayor of Auckland (2001–04) beating Christine Fletcher who was married to the nappy-wearing alcoholic paedophile Angus Fletcher (Hugh Fletcher's brother); and again on 13 October 2007 when he managed to beat someone with less humour than him.

He also managed to find someone with less humour than him . . . which is hard.

“His political opponents accused him of racism towards Maori and immigrants, and of homophobia.”[46] This is the perfect CIA/ Rosicrucian/ Knights of Malta line. They wanted to keep the population down in New Zealand and turn the country into New Spain, only to be saved by the bell, when Bernie Madoff admitted to stealing the CIA money for the project . . . in December 2008. Thank's Bernie!

You're a thieving Jew Bernie Madoff, but thanks anyway.

Let's hope the Federal Reserve hasn't insured the CIA's money, as if, and when, Bernie Madoff admits to fraud.

So John Banks, is a CIA mind-controlled fuckwit . . .
. . . and John Banks is your National cover man for Trevor Roger.

Ian ‘Kahurangi’ Mitchell, Paul Holmes, and Secretary for Education Karen Sewell

MICK P: “Ian Mitchell from Henderson High School went around promoting Maori language being taught in schools up and down the country. For this he was given paedophile cover by Maori, and Ian Mitchell promoted the Maori language to generate cover for his paedophilia. In return Maori gave him the name ‘Kahurangi’.

“Ian ‘Kahurangi’ Mitchell came from South Auckland to take over Henderson High School in 1994 with middle-aged ‘can't-be-fucked’ Maori women singing and dancing the powhiri (Maori ceremonial welcome) in front of him.

“The school children waited in anticipation, ready for their welcome, and then the new school principal Ian “Kahurangi” Mitchell appeared – through the maize of Maori women singing and dancing and shaking their pois in distraction – a man in a dress.

“Ian ‘Kahurangi’ Mitchell died in Asia in a sex act, hanging upside down with a plastic bag over his head while being flagellated.

“All the queers around the world then did a big hue and cry, and of all of these, Paul Holmes was his biggest defender.”

CIA: “Paul Holmes is also a cross-dresser who had sex with his mother, kicked his father out of the family, trained his stepdaughter to have child sex for drugs with Paul Holmes' friends, including our asset Sir Bob Jones – how the fuck did you drag that one out of us . . . Holmes is a Jew. Yeah, he's a cross-dressing incestuous bisexual child sex abuser – Cuba. Five dollar a night whores in Cuba, You can tell them by their shoes. They're the only ones with good shoes and the only ones wearing high heels. Fuck, am I still talking, outloud?”

Author: “Yeah, I know. It's torture isn't it.”
CIA: “What did you slip in my drink?”
Author: “Sodium pentathol”.
CIA: “That'll work”.
Author: “Thanks for the confirmation. You've also had alcohol.”
CIA: “Yes I have. Can I go home now . . . Mr Hallett?”
Author: “You sure can”.
Gets up off chair and as he's swivelling around . . .
Author: “Can you take the agency with you . . .”
CIA: “I'll see what I can do”.

Fisherman: “Paul Holmes, dressed in a suit, was pushed into Auckland's Viaduct Harbour, in 1990. Dripping in his suit, he then stood up on one of the sand banks. This was before it was dredged and developed. He was pushed in purposefully by a fisherman, who expressed the sentiments of many New Zealanders, and just didn't like him. Thirteen years later Paul Holmes was walking through Newmarket, and on the opposite side the fisherman yelled out, ‘You child drug dealer’. Holmes tried to yell something back, but it was ineffective.”

Internal Affairs: “Ian Kahurangi Mitchell was the headmaster at Henderson High School and he reportedly committed suicide – hung himself with a plastic bag over his head in Phuket, Thailand. He was a Pakeha faggot who wore a big greenstone tiki around his neck and reckoned ‘Kahurangi’ was bestowed upon him by the Maori. It might have been. Maori have the credentials.

“The *Western Leader* used to give Ian Mitchell great glowing write ups, but he went up the wrong bum, resigned in a hurry and was dead within a month or two.”

Maori Transliteration: “Kahu” means ‘hawk’, “rangi” means ‘sky’. “Kahurangi” means ‘sky hawk’, ‘precious thing’, ‘a clock from Heaven’, ‘blue’, ‘noble’, and is a girl's name. It also means ‘treasured possession’ as in the Kahurangi National Park where fly the most rare of New Zealand birds.

Applied to a man, “Kahurangi” means ‘a treasured precious blue noble skyhawk hen that keeps the time’ – a very rare bird indeed, even amongst the Maori.

Ian ‘Kahurangi’ Mitchell was a Pakeha, a white guy, a cross-dressing faggot of a headmaster who spotted young boys from above, rooted them, faked their grades upwards, as long as he could ‘coach’ them, then pretended to be a noble honorary Maori.

He wore his greenstone tiki around his neck with noble pride – all the pride of a distracting pendulum hypnotising as he leaned forward to root his next child student victim up the brown love bottom.

The Ministry of Education hunts out any-and-all heterosexual males and eliminates them. The Ministry of Education now has a powhiri (long Maori welcome) for every visiting dignitory.

Why do they do it?

Because the Maori provide ‘children and cover’ for their paedophiles and child sex abusers, visiting or otherwise.

In exchange, the Maori get grant money which goes to the most useless Maori to ensure the next generation of Maori remain useless, and the cycle of Maori providing their children to paedophiles/ child sex abusers for funding continues ad infinitum.

Is this a racial trait?

---

[46] Encyclopedia, John Banks, New Zealand, paraphrased for your enjoyment.

Certainly "Maori are well known for being in the 'Comfort Trade'."

Internal Affairs Agent: "It is well known amongst the police and paedophiles that Pakeha's hire kids from Maori families. Often it's put to the parents or caregivers that the child is being taken to a place to be entertained and fed, or clothed, but usually it ends up as the kid being sodomised.

"Ian Mitchell was a headmaster and used his education position as his cover.

"John Banks, on the other hand, had a Harley, and was a Member of Parliament."

"When you hear Maori talk in terms of 'Kaumatua' ('respected tribal elder'), hear 'child pimp'.

"It's almost as if the Maori taught the CIA."

The Maori have managed to keep their funding provider's homosexual child sex abuse out of the media spotlight by arranging for further cover to be put in place, in the form of: promotion; by giving them a name (e.g. 'Kahurangi'); elevating their status to Kaumatua (respected elder); making them honorary Maori (Ngati Pakeha); giving a full welcome to known serial rapists (Clint Rickards), or suspected paedophiles (Clint Rickards), former prostitutes turned lesbian (Helen Clark), politicians married to homosexual child sex abusers (Helen Clark); and/or putting Maori in place for the cover up of honorary Maori paedophiles (Ian "Kahurangi" Mitchell/ Owen Hoskin).

Owen Erle Hoskin (January 1998–April 2005) replaced Ian "Kahurangi" Mitchell as Henderson High School Principal. Then the bisexual cross-dressing Mayor of Waitakere, Bob Harvey, rewarded the cover provided by allowing Owen Hoskin to become a Waitakere City Councillor (from 31 October 2001–2004) while still Henderson High School Principal. He served on the Waitakere City Development, Finance and Operational Performance, and Environmental Management Committees. This gave Hoskin an extra $50,000 a year – thus doubling his wage and adding a $150,000 bonus.

The Jews call this a "No cost bribe". It comes from controlling the job market.

Bangka Island paedophile | Maori child pimp | CIA paedophile promoter | No cost briber.

Whenever you see a teacher who's a City Councillor, it's a paedophile minder getting their bonus (Cath Tizard included, and she made it to Governor-General in the same role).

Hoskin then became Campus Director at Taylors College where international students get accustomed to New Zealand before going to university (a.k.a. 'Study Group NZ' or 'Embassy CES') at 75 K'Rd, where the transvestites, prostitutes and homosexuals hang out. He resigned after a year in 2007.

X: "Ian 'Kahurangi' Mitchell got the chop because he indecently assaulted MP Brian Neeson's nephew – the MP for Te Atatu North, 15 or so years ago. The nephew was between 13 and 16 years old when molested. How do we know this? Because Henderson High School doesn't have any senior students. They don't last that long."

Henderson High School is not isolated. It is a small school on Henderson Valley Rd surrounded by a plethora of other schools, all within 1 km, including Henderson School, Henderson South School, Holy Cross School, Western Heights School, Waitakere Seventh-day Adventist School, and Bruce McLaren Intermediate.

Brian Neeson MP for Te Atatu North (1990–93)

Brian Kevin Neeson (b. 1945, Durban, South Africa) arrived in New Zealand in 1951 and became a National MP (1990–2002). He represented three West Auckland electorates. Frequent boundary changes meant he never ran as an incumbent. Perhaps the boundary changes were designed to remove him. He was MP for Te Atatu North (1990–93), Waitakere (1993–96, 1999–2002), Waipareira (1996–99), and in 2002 he tried Helensville against John Key (now Prime Minister), changed to Independent during the running, lost, and quit politics.

Chris(tine) Carter replaced Brian Neeson as the MP for Te Atatu North (1993–96, 1999–2009+). The area now includes Te Atatu, Lincoln, Massey, and Glendene where his office is.

These are the lowest socio-economic areas of West Auckland, a low socio-economic area itself. These are areas where the macho men are bisexual schizophrenics, and the women have no pheromones in their hair. It is an area of rabid drug use, methamphetamine addiction, dope smoking, and crime, where the police stitch people up to rid themselves of thinkers, where they attack heterosexuals, and where no one can lay an honest complaint and be believed by the police, who are so crooked, they are actively supporting the Waipareira Trust's contracting out the manufacture and distributing P, now with the help of the rapist and former Auckland Area Police Commander Clint Rickards, since accepted to the Bar by the New Zealand Law Society, despite the largest number of character rejections ever received.

Under such a socially engineered regime – communist DPB, dole-bludging, sexually-deviant fascist, anti-heterosexual dictatorship – that Brian Neeson was an odd bird in an electorate of three-legged Drongos.

> The Drongo is a subfamily of small passerine (perching & singing) insect eating birds usually found in the open forests or bush of the Old World tropics. Dark grey or black, sometimes with metallic tints, they have long forked tails, with the Asian Drongo having elaborate tail decorations. They have short legs and sit very upright whilst perched. Their nest is high in a tree and they take prey off the ground. Given their small size, they're aggressive and will attack much larger species if their nest or young are threatened.[47]

X: "While National MP for Waipareira (1996–99), Brian Neeson was steaming on the Henderson High School Principal, Ian 'Kahurangi' Mitchell, for sexually abusing his nephew in late 1997."

---

[47] Wikipedia: "Drongo".

Brian Neeson only lasted once in Te Atau North ("Tat North"). Then Christine Carter (the fag Chris Carter) took over as Labour for Tat North and announced he was gay, straight after he got in.

His girlfriend, Peter Kaiser, another teacher, was then promoted to headmaster of Tirimoana Primary School in Te Atatu South (children aged 5–11), so it was happy go lucky gay child sex abuse in Te Atatu North, Henderson, and neighbouring Lincoln, Massey, Glendene, and West Auckland.

Spymaster: ". . . although, I don't believe Peter Kaiser is a child sex abuser. He's not a bad guy."

MICK P: "He is cuckolded frequently by Paul Abdulatif, a Queen Street National Bank teller, and Christine Carter import."

"Homosexual ESL foreigners rarely make it to Court, having the full PC advantage. In New Zealand they have heightened immigration status from the homosexual MP Chris Carter, who has had a long-term homosexual affair with the immigrant Paul Abdulatif, who was then given a job as a National Bank teller at the bottom of Queen Street, Auckland. Despite this, MP Chris Carter and his official partner Peter Kaiser became the role model for homosexual marriage, having cuckolded each other for 30 years. Homosexual marriage was granted under the lesbian PM Helen Clark. She is married to the homosexual child sex abuser Peter Davis and they cuckold each other as though there were no marriage. This is the problem with homosexual marriage. They can have a relationship in five minutes, from beginning to end. For Chris Carter it is gerbils . . . for Helen Clark it is fisting."[48] (See Attachment "R", 'Helen Clark and Sian Elias' Murders – Quotes', p. 89.)

Then Peter Kaiser wrote in the *Tirimoana Primary School weekly newsletter* how he had met and fallen in love with his partner Chris Carter.

Not what you would call appropriate, Tirimoana.

This was then backed up by the Tirimoana Primary School Affirmation:

". . . Teacher's right to teach. Everyone's right to be safe and to be respected."

This is PC language for:

> 'Don't mess with us. We are three-legged Drongos who perch on high, sit straight, sing our PC Mind-Kontrol asexual[49] songs, prey on small children from on high, and attack anything bigger, plainer, and less gay than ourselves, with all the passive aggression of a primary school teacher and our influence over mayors.'

The rabid homosexual child sex abuser MP Chris Carter (with two complaints of child sex abuse from schoolboys before Carter was made an MP) then married Peter Kaiser on 10 February 2007, with full homosexual Labour Government attending.

One of the first homosexual civil unions, the ceremony included Chris Carter's mentor – the homosexual paedophile and international organising paederast, Johnathan Hunt, who was flown back from England at the Labour Government's expense, especially for the event. Helen Clark's government even paid for Johnathan Hunt's five accounts for sexual services from 12-year-old Indian boys at New Zealand House, 80 Haymarket, Haymarket, London, SW1Y 4TQ, phone 020 7930 8422.

As of March 2010, Johnathan Hunt is still New Zealand's High Commissioner to Britain, despite the change in government.

---

[48] *Gifting the United Nations to Stalin*, p. 31, Footnote 14.

[49] "Asexual": 'not involving the union of male and female germ cells'.

Waitakere Mayor Bob Harvey

Waitakere Mayor Bob Harvey: "I went to that wedding. It was me who gave permission for it to be held in the Waitakere City Council chambers . . . I'm not allowed in the Emirates, especially the areas around Dubai. They believe I'm gay. Officially I have been banned from going there. They will arrest and deport me if I step out of their airport and into a taxi . . . I believe it's the same in many fundamental Muslim countries . . .

"I began my career doing PR for the David Lange. I covered up all his many and varied sexual liasons with transvestites. That's how good I am. The public still don't know . . . I am the best."

Doesn't that make you the best liar Bob?

Internal Affairs: "Waitakere Mayor Bob Harvey is a cross-dresser and likes to hold hands with 13-year-old Maori boys. He wants to be the first Executive Mayor of Auckland's four cities – but as we know, a mare is a female donkey, and, as you say, 'New Zealand is the Pied Piper with cross-dressing mayors'. So any pied piper who exposes the homosexuals (gets rid of the rats) is run out of town. A little later the parents realise they have lost their children."

X: "Smells like Henderson High School, Tirimoana Primary School, Waitakere City, and the Ministry of Education to me."

Waitakere Mayor Bob Harvey, 1996: "Tirimoana Primary School headmaster Peter Kaiser was the MC for the evening throughout which a range of fabulous items were put up for auction including a weekend at Raglan beach, a week in glorious Taupo Bay and artworks from local artists."[50]

X: "'Fabulous'. Sounds like a fag to me. I agree with the Emirates."

United Arab Emirates local: "I'm from Dubai, and certainly in areas surrounding Dubai, Bob Harvey would be arrested and deported. That's how they treat homosexuals, old fags, queens, whatever you want to call them."

The Ministry of Education will root out any heterosexuals.

This is the direction of local body politics, education and the nation's politics under the direction of the Ministry of Education who will root out any heterosexuals and get rid of them . . . The Secretary is the lesbian child sex abuser Karen Sewell.

David Lange.

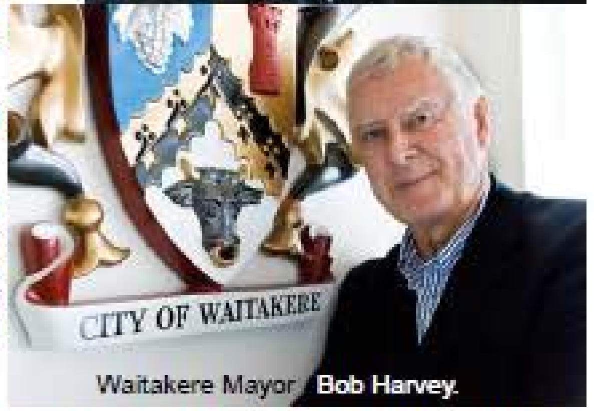

Waitakere Mayor **Bob Harvey.**

---

[50] PART B, Council, Wednesday, 29 November 2006, Commencing at 5.30 pm, REPORT OF THE MAYOR.

The M.O.E. are really evil about this and will often let heterosexuals train as teachers, let them teach for a year, then get it across to them that they have no chance of promotion and are not welcome. Those that stick to the job are then placed under suspicion and removed from all priviledges.

This way the M.O.E. get to waste four years of a heterosexual's life.
This is the new education.
This is the PC education.
This is the homosexual's education.
This is the child sex abuser's education.
This is the paedophile's education.
This is Chris Carter and Peter Kaiser's Education.
This is Karen Sewell, the Secretary of the Ministry of Education's Education.
Chris Carter and Karen Sewell are both child sex abusers.

Waitakere Mayor Bob Harvey: "If you get a lemon, make lemonade."[51]

Police Undercover: "The Henderson High School Principal Ian 'Kahurangi' Mitchell (1994–98) was as sleezy as fuck, but the school teachers, parents, and the Mayor Bob Harvey built him up like you wouldn't believe – 'an Education Hero' – but he was just a lousy paedophile.

"A senior police officer visited the headmaster at Henderson High and said: 'Listen mate, you're going to have to leave'. He then passed the file to Senior Sergeant Peter Evans – the Sexual Abuse Team officer (SAT) at Henderson Police. Peter Evans was widely thought of as an honest cop, and many considered him the last honest cop in Auckland. The problem was, he wasn't that bright.

"Ian Kahurangi Mitchell was under a cloud when he arrived at Henderson High School and still under a cloud when he left New Zealand for a sex tour in Indonesia, but he carried on as if nothing had happened. Even the other paedophiles didn't consider this derigueur.

"Ian Mitchell died on Bangka Island (there's a language academy there) in Indonesia during an S&M act that involved hanging. There were a whole pile of paedophiles on the island, all killed around the same time. Part of the cover is that no one seems to know exactly where Ian 'Kahurangi' Mitchell died.[52]

"Senior Sergeant Peter Evans (SAT) was then transferred from North Shore Hospital to Auckland Hospital (Grafton) where he was killed by injection in his back in a corridor. The male nurse who did it was either Paul F*. (a known paedophile), or a close friend of his, another male nurse, who frequented sex tours in Asia, and was later prosecuted for manslaughter of a woman. He was prosecuted and convicted for the manslaughter, and the Judge said: 'You led her in mind games which led her to kill herself' (2001). It was easy enough to return to work and put on a surgical mask, so the murderer could also have been someone off shift."

The Investigator: "The paedophiles, including Mr F*rm*r, used to go straight to Prime Minister Helen Clark for cover, and she always complied, often with murder.

"I brought in a 4-year-old boy to hospital who had been viciously sexually assaulted. Mr F*rm*r went straight to the Prime Minister Helen Clark and they tried to stitch me up for the assault, but luckily I'd been to the Police Surgeon first. Helen Clark and Mr F*rm*r then had CYFS accuse me of the violent paedophilia. They complied the following day. Mr F*rm*r then went to the police and took the tone that he was the injured party and tried to lay another complaint against me. This was all circa 1998/99.

"This is why paedophile cases don't get resolved in New Zealand. The paedophiles take the tone that they are right, and then use high-ranking people and government institutions to back them up – like the Prime Minister, the Prime Minister's department, CYFS and Police."

Helen Clark was involved in the cover up of the murder of Ian 'Kahurangi' Mitchell and SAT Senior Sergeant Peter Evans.

Police Undercover: "The cover-up for the Henderson High Principal held, and he was replaced by the Maori Owen Hoskin. Maori are often paedophile minders, and often promoted for being paedophile minders . . . and no one ever found out the name of the police officer who visited Ian 'Kahurangi' Mitchell in the first place. Paedophile cover runs deep in New Zealand. It is VERY OFTEN the ladder to promotion. SAT tried to bring Mitchell down, but nobody wanted to know, and Senior Sergeant Peter Evans was killed in the process."

Son of a Freemason: "In Feburary 2010 I was speaking to Peter Evans' mate from the Grafton Cricket Club that meets in Victoria Park. We were chatting on Auckland's North Shore."

GCC: "Peter Evans used to organise senior cricket tours over to Chiang Mai once a year for a few years, then they'd all go off in different directions. Evans became quite fluent in Thai and wanted to be the police ambassador up there . . . I saw the bastard in Phuket. He was holding hands with eight- to ten-year-old boys and girls then he took them away in different directions . . . Back in New Zealand his doctors phoned him saying: 'You'd better go up to hospital for further examinations' and he ended up dead. Check up and see what happened to him."

Son of a Freemason: "GCC obviously didn't know Peter Evans was the head of the Sexual Abuse Team at Henderson, or he would have been totally outraged."

Police Undercover, Thursday 4 March 2010: "Phuket is the child porn destination of every paedophile going to Thailand. It has such a reputation that everybody lies about going there, and only one in a thosuand would then go on to Chong Buri . . . Come to think about it, Senior Sergeant Peter Evans blocked virtually all of my information except for one guy, who was a paedophile. I gave him a huge amount of information and he used to sneer at me and say: "Good job, but keep digging. He said about another guy: 'You were right, but there is nothing I can do at the moment.

"One case I got into an argument with Evans about was the headmaster of Henderson College. I told him he was a gay paedophile . . . someone from the PM's department, or NHQ, had gone and seen him and come to a deal where he resigned. Peter Evans said: 'I don't believe a bar of it. That sort of thing doesn't happen in our police force'.

"There was one other case we came verbal fisti-cuffs over. That was of a school teacher. Eventually he did go for him, but only after I repeatedly told him the guy was bisexual. I had to find an informant for him in that case.

"Evans never admitted to me going to Phuket, even though specific information I gave him indicated that another town close by, Chon Buri, was the center of major offending. He sneered at this and said: 'You have no grounds to back that up'. To keep things on a workable relationship, I had to back down many times from the stance I'd taken, and concede defeat in matters I knew were right. The old spy saying: 'You can lead a horse to water, but you can't make it drink . . . No one is as blind as he who will not see' . . . applies here.

"I tried to talk to Evans about Takapuna District Commander Taffy Walsh, but he wouldn't hear a bar of it. I sat through Walsh's sentencing for paedophilia with his granddaughters and tried to tell Peter Evans what happened, but Evans would virtually call me a liar, and refused to hear the conclusion I made – that every case Taffy Walsh had either dealt with or overseen should be re-investigated and persons freed from prison.

"The last thing I took him was a huge list of paedophiles with hundreds of names on it. It was map and showed how they connected to each other. There were policemen, military officers, and every civilian occupation you could name, including coroners, lawyers, judges, and many of them had precursor qualifications for being included as they had been prosecuted by the Crown for precursor offences . . . and SAT Officer Peter Evans would not look at it. He dismissed it as total bullshit . . . But it wasn't bullshit. It was the product of ten years research and countless cases, where the degree of cross-contamination was huge.

---

[51] Mayor Bob Harvey is not allowed in some strict Muslim countries.

[52] Bangka was pronounced "Bancha" when I got this info. There are a dozen or so islands with this name . . . and I've always been suspicious about the sexuality of English as Second Language (ESL) teachers.

"I'm completely blown away by your revelations that Peter Evans was also a paedophile. But considering that my relationship with him was so fractious, and the results of my work accepted so grudgingly, sporadically, and carried out in only about 2 per cent of cases . . . I hate to admit it, but it fits. It fits that this is another case of a high-ranking police officer self-sabotaging all that he touched . . . as much as I hate to admit it . . . Evans was married with two sons.

"Paul F. will shit himself. Everybody who knows him will recognise it instantly for what it is. Paul F. came to me once and said, 'You're a total bullshit artist" and I replied, 'Except that I'm usually right'. Paul F.: 'That's got nothing to do with it. I demand that you right all the people that you rung the first time and tell them that you made a mistake and you were wrong.' So I rung every Army Base that I could think of and said: 'I appear to have made a mistake. What I have told you regarding Paul F., that I may have made a mistake and were wrong. And they said: 'No don't worry about it. Because he came to a do here, and got pissed, and flaked out. And when we went to wake him up and move him, he said: "Please don't. I can't take any more. I can't do it any more. I'm very sore".' I think it was Papakura."

The Investigator: "Even as Leader of the Opposition (1993–99) Helen Clark was arranging paedophile cover. She got complicit cover from the first female Prime Minister, the evil Jenny Shipley (1997–99). Helen and Jenny were feminists together. They were 'organising and running a paedophile-minding racket hand-in-hand' – that's feminism. It was worse 1999–2008 when Helen Clark was Prime Minister.

Internal Affair's Undercover: "It is ironic that Trevor Roger ripped off a trust for cerebal palsy [connection later denied by Intelligence on 20 March 2009] because the Carlson School for Cerebal Palsy ["disorder of movement, sensation, cognition, perception, behavior, communication, and/or seizures"] which claims to be one of the best in the world (at 261 St Andrews Rd, Epsom in Auckland) had a huge paedophile problem with a caretaker that they refused to accept was a paedophile. So they kept him on and promoted him to shower cleaner. This was in the 1970s and 80s.

We present like the Brady Bunch . . .

[taking your minds off the Vietnam War].

"The caretaker role of Cerebal Palsy's schools were given to paedophiles. It was virtually part of the job description . . . The women run Carlson and they are absolutely evil, the biggest paedophile enablers I've ever run across. They allowed paedophiles to take the Cerebal Palsy's children home and root them. The women would shield the paedophiles no matter what."

"They were comparable to Peter Liddell's wife. She would opt out of school camping trips and have her husband replace her, and in hundreds of cases, Peter rooted the kids. She gave perjured evidence in two of Peter Liddell's trials for paedophilia, and even after she was proved to have lied in court, the police refused to charge her with perjury. She was a total evil bag, but evil bags are never exposed in New Zealand.

"Peter Richardson, a writer for the *Sunday News* got someone on Radio Pacific circa 1997 talking about paedophiles and the phones lit up. Then this kid rang in and said he'd been sexually abused by the caretaker at the Carlson School for Cerebal Palsy.

"Even the mother of one of the kids Aussie Malcolm was rooting rang up during the radio show. She, Mrs N. had two boys at normal schools [not at Carlson] who Aussie Malcolm had got at during rugby training.

"Mrs N. took Aussie Malcolm to court on the basis of what one of her sons had said, and Aussie Malcolm threatened to kill the police Inspector Jones of Newmarket, who was in charge . . . and he got very ill soon after . . . Inspector Jones went to Harlech House (82 Great South Rd, Otahuhu, Ph 259 0600, where all the detectives are) and a whole bunch of them got poisoned from Legionnaire's disease (an acute respiratory infection). Inspector Jones was then demoted to Constable, then chucked out of the police."

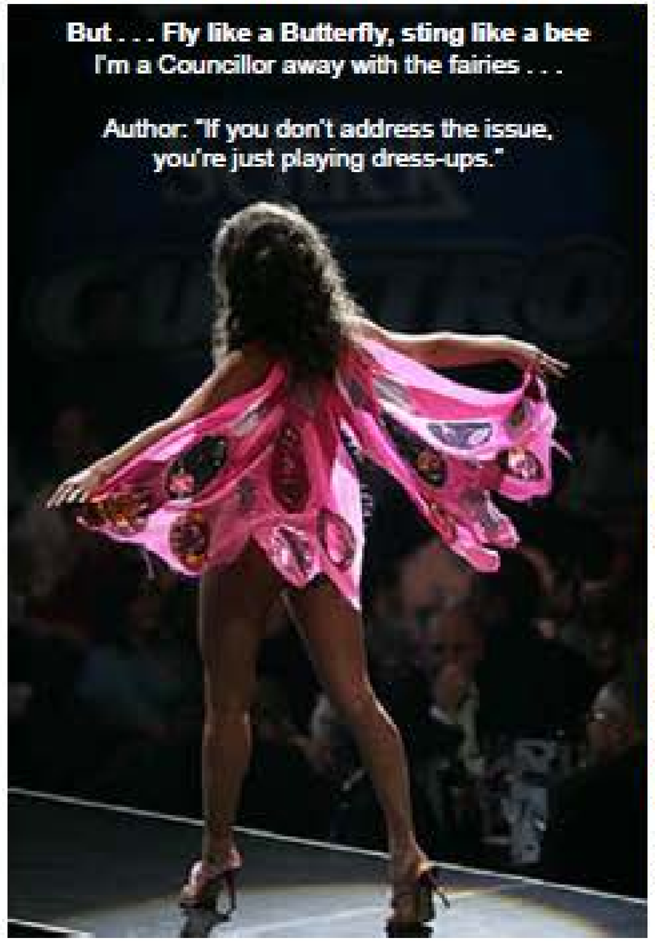
But . . . Fly like a Butterfly, sting like a bee
I'm a Councillor away with the fairies . . .

Author: "If you don't address the issue,
you're just playing dress-ups."

Helen Clark was involved in the cover up of, and the deaths of Ian 'Kahurangi' Mitchell, SAT Senior Sergeant Peter Evans, and Chairman of the Auckland City Council Phil Warren.

Helen Clark is a drug dealer herself, and 14 months after Deputy Mayor Warren was deceased, she was importing heroin. If Phil Warren were still alive, he would have sniffed it out.

CIA asset from 1966– and 1994–, drug dealer, paedophile, child sex abuser, Freemason, Minister of Police (1990–96), Mayor of Auckland (2001–04, 2007–), and high ranking National supporter of Trevor Roger, John Banks wasn't far behind.

John Banks: "Hi. I'm a CIA mind-controlled fuckwit involved in drug-trafficking.

"I supported Trevor Roger."

Hi, my name's Glenda Roger and New Zealand is a country of plywood helicopters

with no rotor blade in sight

This symbol was not authorised, although both birds are flightless.

and bomb attachments supplied by the military under pressure from the CIA.

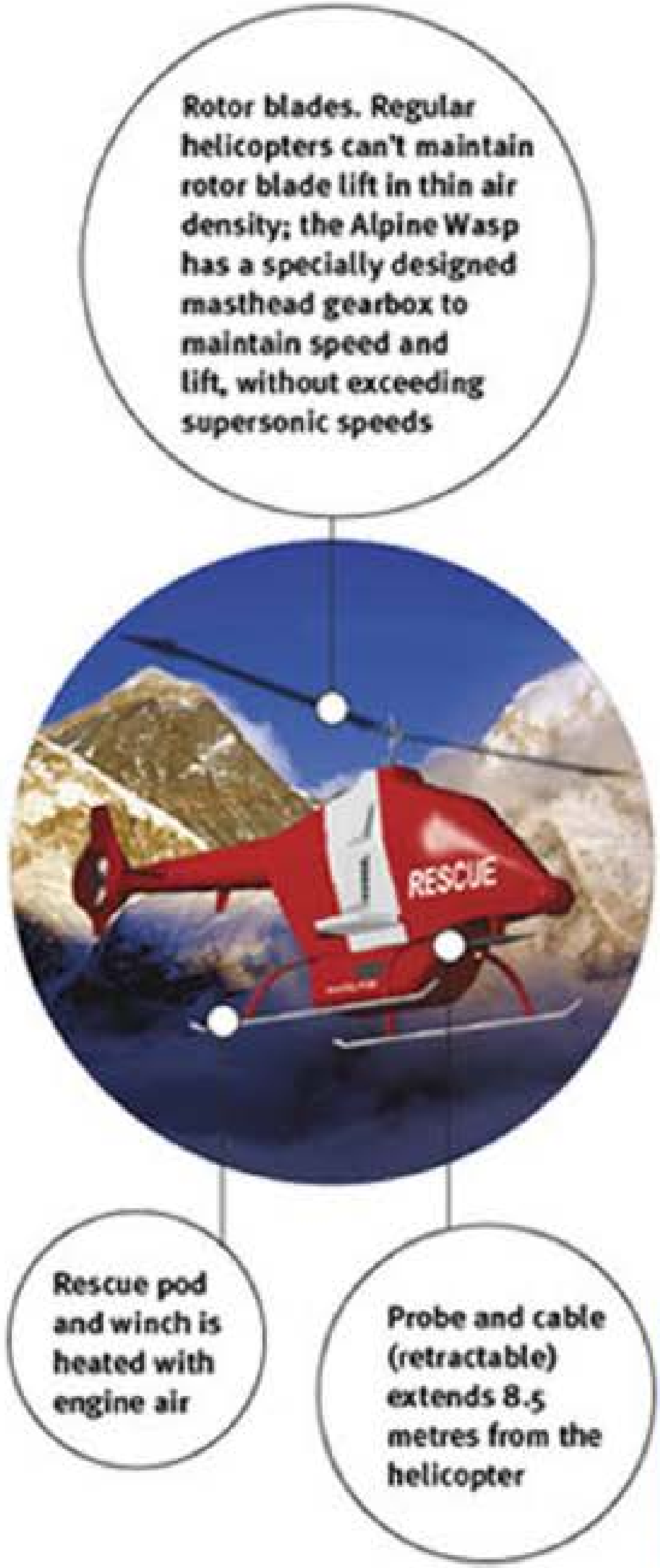

Rotor blades. Regular helicopters can't maintain rotor blade lift in thin air density; the Alpine Wasp has a specially designed masthead gearbox to maintain speed and lift, without exceeding supersonic speeds

Rescue pod and winch is heated with engine air

Probe and cable (retractable) extends 8.5 metres from the helicopter

. . . and more false promises than you can shake a stick at.

Why?

Because New Zealand is a paedophile movement fronting as a country.

That's how all us Con Artists get away with it.

Where?

First, as KIWI's we get conned, then we do the con on others, and use the shit on others for protection.

When?

In the meantime, the Judiciary can't even settle a debt because the Chief Justice is a Jewish con artist who ripped off NZ$500 million.

So she surrounds herself with like-minded people.

That's how?

We ended up as New Zealand being the Pied Piper with cross-dressing Mayors.

What?

I hear Sir Edmund Hillary's house is now on the market.

How much?

I'm sure the CIA could buy it for a $5 note with Ed's picture on it. Afterall, houses are going for $1 in Detroit.[51]

---

[51] Eric Horng, 'Have a Buck? Buy a House! Desperate Sellers in Detroit and Beyond Unload Properties for Cost of Citi Share', ABC News Internet Ventures, 8 March 2009.

John Banks and Bob Harvey compete to be the best and biggest cross-dressing Mayor

John Banks and Bob Harvey are competing to be the first Executive Mayor of Auckland's four cities, from Wellsford to Bombay, making it the single biggest city in Australasia.

The entire scheme is being instigated and nominated by the CIA contract killer Dame Margaret Bazley, with the report due on 31 March 2009. It was approved and due to take place in October 2010.

I move for the removal of John Banks and Bob Harvey as Mayors.

I move for the removal of Dame Margaret Bazley from any form of decision making,
from any and every government department,
to be charged on multiple counts of 'complicity to murder',
and all of her previous work placed under review.

I move for a by-election in Auckland and Waitakere – A.S.A.P.

Non-Prosecution Certificate?

By June 2009, nothing more had reached the media, and no judical decisions were made public. It looks like someone came up with a Non-Prosecution Certificate, or even made a suggestion of one.

That's usually enough to terrify the police.

Karen Sewell pays her 'les-be-friends' an extra NZ$20 million

There were however, more fuck ups by Karen Sewell . . .

> "The Ministry of Education has admitted a mistake resulting in 'about $20 million' too much being paid out to early childhood education centres. 'I don't yet know all of the detail, but I do know that the Ministry of Education made a serious mistake and I'm very, very sorry for it', said Secretary for Education Karen Sewell. 'It's a significant amount . . . It's certainly unprecedented in the time that I have been here.'
>
> Ms Sewell said she believed the figure involved was 'about $20m' and that the **ministry would not try to directly recoup** the funds.
>
> The error occurred in July last year [2008] . . . The error was not found until last month [May 2009] . . . Education Minister Anne Tolley said she had ordered an inquiry into how the error occurred and why it took so long to pick up . . ."[53]

So let me get this right Karen Sewell! You lost 20 million dollars for ten months and didn't even know about it. What, . . . were you too busy fisting the Prime Minister.

The murder of Senior Sergeant Peter Evans of the Sexual Abuse Team

Peter Evans had received so much information from his Police Undercover/ intelligence officer (and initially rejected it) that he was in a position to bribe the judiciary, MPs, and education – so it was a case of who was bribing who, and who had to go.

Peter Evens had to go, so he was killed in Auckland Hospital by paedophiles, who were also paedophile minders, who were also protecting paedophiles in the New Zealand Government – so it was a government hit.

---

[53] *New Zealand Herald*, Education ministry admits $20m error, 1 June 2009, NZPA.

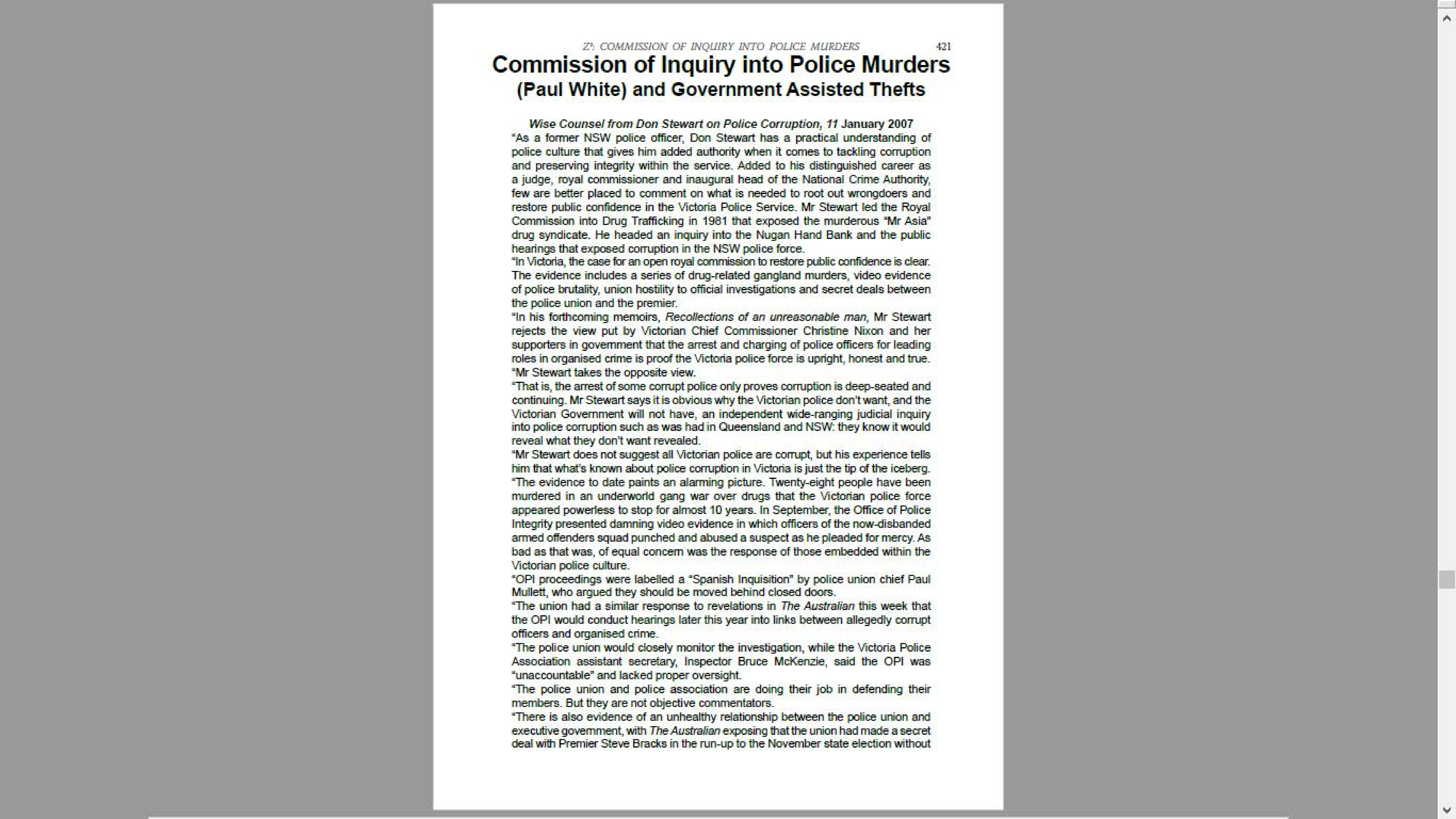

Commission of Inquiry into Police Murders (Paul White) and Government Assisted Thefts

Wise Counsel from Don Stewart on Police Corruption, 11 January 2007

"As a former NSW police officer, Don Stewart has a practical understanding of police culture that gives him added authority when it comes to tackling corruption and preserving integrity within the service. Added to his distinguished career as a judge, royal commissioner and inaugural head of the National Crime Authority, few are better placed to comment on what is needed to root out wrongdoers and restore public confidence in the Victoria Police Service. Mr Stewart led the Royal Commission into Drug Trafficking in 1981 that exposed the murderous "Mr Asia" drug syndicate. He headed an inquiry into the Nugan Hand Bank and the public hearings that exposed corruption in the NSW police force.

"In Victoria, the case for an open royal commission to restore public confidence is clear. The evidence includes a series of drug-related gangland murders, video evidence of police brutality, union hostility to official investigations and secret deals between the police union and the premier.

"In his forthcoming memoirs, *Recollections of an unreasonable man*, Mr Stewart rejects the view put by Victorian Chief Commissioner Christine Nixon and her supporters in government that the arrest and charging of police officers for leading roles in organised crime is proof the Victoria police force is upright, honest and true.

"Mr Stewart takes the opposite view.

"That is, the arrest of some corrupt police only proves corruption is deep-seated and continuing. Mr Stewart says it is obvious why the Victorian police don't want, and the Victorian Government will not have, an independent wide-ranging judicial inquiry into police corruption such as was had in Queensland and NSW: they know it would reveal what they don't want revealed.

"Mr Stewart does not suggest all Victorian police are corrupt, but his experience tells him that what's known about police corruption in Victoria is just the tip of the iceberg.

"The evidence to date paints an alarming picture. Twenty-eight people have been murdered in an underworld gang war over drugs that the Victorian police force appeared powerless to stop for almost 10 years. In September, the Office of Police Integrity presented damning video evidence in which officers of the now-disbanded armed offenders squad punched and abused a suspect as he pleaded for mercy. As bad as that was, of equal concern was the response of those embedded within the Victorian police culture.

"OPI proceedings were labelled a "Spanish Inquisition" by police union chief Paul Mullett, who argued they should be moved behind closed doors.

"The union had a similar response to revelations in *The Australian* this week that the OPI would conduct hearings later this year into links between allegedly corrupt officers and organised crime.

"The police union would closely monitor the investigation, while the Victoria Police Association assistant secretary, Inspector Bruce McKenzie, said the OPI was "unaccountable" and lacked proper oversight.

"The police union and police association are doing their job in defending their members. But they are not objective commentators.

"There is also evidence of an unhealthy relationship between the police union and executive government, with *The Australian* exposing that the union had made a secret deal with Premier Steve Bracks in the run-up to the November state election without

> the knowledge of Ms Nixon. Despite requests by this newspaper, details of what was promised remain secret.
>
> Official corruption thrives on secrecy, as highlighted by corruption fighter Tony Fitzgerald QC in his landmark report into corruption in Queensland. Mr Fitzgerald said it was improper for the police union to meet executive government members without the police commissioner present.
>
> "Mr Stewart's support for a royal commission echoes that of Mark Le Grand, who argued in May 2004 that the Victorian government was neglecting its duty in leaving an investigation in the hands of Ms Nixon and the police service. Mr Le Grand, a former Criminal Justice Commission misconduct division director and deputy director of the commonwealth Department of Public Prosecutions, said Victoria had clear evidence of third-level corruption of the type faced by the Fitzgerald inquiry, well beyond the threshold required for royal commission intervention.
>
> "Third-level corruption is an entrenched system that ruthlessly protects itself.
>
> *The Australian* first called for a royal commission into Victorian policing in an editorial in March 2004, after the gangland execution of Andrew "Benji" Veniamin, the 21st victim of a drug-related killing rampage that started with the slaying of standover merchant Alphonse Gangitano in 1998. We argued then that only a royal commission had the power to go to the root of police corruption, while satisfying the deep concerns of the public that the Victorian police force was up to the job. Nothing has changed.
>
> "If anything, the case today for a royal commission, as expressed by Mr Stewart, is all the more compelling."

Spymaster: "If New Zealand ever harboured a judge as straight as Stewart, he would have been killed by a Cop car, run over while delivering the Briefs of Evidence on how corrupt the Police are."

Son of a National Party member: "Judge Yaldwyn said years before he committed suicide: 'Corruption takes many different forms in Australia. Australian corruption is different from New Zealand corruption. Nothing is beyond the Australian crims and coppers.'

"This upset my father who was high up in the National Party. Judge Yaldwyn occupied a similar level in the Liberal 'Country' Party in Australia, represented the PM and came to NZ a lot. They used to have late night sessions together and my father found Judge Yaldwyn quite disturbing and unsettling.

"In Sydney, around 1972, Judge Yaldwyn was allowed out of court to escape to commit suicide in his car on the roadside. My father wrote a tribute that was not read at his funeral. It said: 'He was a flawed genius'."

Winebox Inquiry

New Zealand has no one with Don Stewart's credentials as a police officer, judge, Royal Commissioner and inaugural head of the National Crime Authority, nor did New Zealand have a Royal Commission into Drug Trafficking in 1981 that exposed the murderous "Mr Asia" drug syndicate, although the financial syndicate behind it, the lead players, and most of the couriers came from New Zealand. It was run from New Zealand, as were the murders, with plenty of New Zealand lawyers involved.

Since New Zealand doesn't have a replacement, and since I'm writing this book, which should lead to a 'Commission of Inquiry into Police Corruption', then I'll put my name in here, and just to show I'm worthy, I'll solve a few crimes along the way.

New Zealand's closest inquiry into bank fraud and associated police corruption was the bought case, The Winebox Inquiry (1994–97) and the related Paul White murder (1991) which was totally fluffed over.

Investigate magazine's owner/ editor Ian Wishart then made the movie 'Spooked' in 2004. It didn't do too well, even by Wishart's admission:

"No one in New Zealand seems interested in the truth".

I'd have to agree. As soon as you write the truth in New Zealand, the entire public is switched off. I believe this is a reaction from being lied to for 35 years, ever since the communists invaded under the guise of 'feminism', then took over all forms of government including the top six positions – Prime Minister, Governor-General, Chief Justice, Attorney-General and Minister of Police who became the Minister of Justice.

The Winebox Inquiry was undertaken in New Zealand to investigate claims of corruption and incompetence in the Serious Fraud Office (SFO) and Inland Revenue Department (IRD). Officially it was the "Commission of Inquiry into Certain Matters relating to Taxation". It was established in September 1994. The Commissioner was Justice Ronald Davison. There was extensive litigation during and afterwards, and an extremely high level of public interest. After three different judgements were presented, and none were found to be acceptable to Michael Fay and David Richwhite, Fay, Richwhite & Company wrote a fourth for Justice Davison to accept. Nearly three years later, in August 1997, Justice Davison/ the Commission concluded: 'there were no grounds supporting the allegations of fraud and corruption'.

The entire nation cried "BULLSHIT, but no newspapers reported it.

Spymaster: "Justice Davison's cat was held ransom for about three days. The CIB managed to call it back from the gangs – using reliant gangsters, those with police connections – saying that their case would not be served by holding the cat to ransom because the judge was already working on the fourth draft of the judgement and had already taken the police suggestions onboard, plus Fay Richwhite's suggestions and the fourth draft would be the final one and wouldn't offend anyone in power. On that basis the cat was returned to Justice Davison who didn't even notice it was missing."

I (Hallett) took Spook to the 2004 movie 'Spooked' and we had the theatre all to ourselves in Target Road, Glenfield. Admittedly it was an afternoon session. Spook was actually Ian Wishart's informant for much of *The Paradise Conspiracy* book (1995) and the resulting movie 'Spooked' emerged from this. Wishart got his funding from people closely associated with Fay, Richwhite & Company – including Eric Watson, so this also had some influence on who the movie 'Spooked' was to blame for the murder of Paul White.

Paul White had bought a computer with discs attached in June 1991 and these showed a government crime syndicate, with the Citibank, who then ordered White's murder, and got the New Zealand government to carry it out as a combined forces exercise.

The move 'Spooked' showed Spook attaching a radio controlled hydraulic arm to the front wheel which could sharply turn the wheel and drive it off the road. It then showed Paul White driving down a motorway ramp with his Citibank payment beside him, the wheel turned hard left and he drove off the ramp and the car fell eight metres onto the ground killing Paul White. Then it cut to Spook laughing . . . but Spook is a caring sharing sort of guy.

Spook: "I rang DIC (Detective in Charge) of the White Murder Inquiry, Mel Churches, before the police changed it to 'an accident'. Mel Churches asked me: 'Who did it?" I told him: 'It was Panapa and Kimba Johnson'. Churches replied: 'That's what eveyone says. Ten people have told me that.' I said: 'Are you going to look at them for having done it?' and Churches replied: 'No, because I don't have to'."

Ian Wishart, You Shameful Sell Out – this is butt-cracking crap[1]

While I was sitting next to Spook watching the movie in the movie theatre, he was narrating what had happened, that it was basically correct, and adding bits, which was also quite irritating. Then, towards the end of the movie, when the above incident was shown, Spook got out of his seat and bought two icecreams "'cause the lies were playing with my blood sugar levels".

So I got Spook's story, then went to those involved and got the inside story. Here's what happened to Paul White. Here's how Paul White died . . .

The Murder of Paul White. . . and boy were the people involved qualified

The New Zealand Dairy Board had built an enormous shed for milk powder in the Middle East, but Israel was using it as a clearing house for arms deals. The New Zealand Dairy Board was paid a cut for these arms deals and the financial transactions were made through Citibank, the New Zealand subsidiary of Citicorp, a clearing bank for non-retail banking services, and one of the largest banks in the United States.

The name "NEW ZEALAND DAIRY BOARD" was used three or four times as the 'end user' in the arms deals and this is what the courts look for in a conviction.

In June 1991, Paul White bought a secondhand computer in a box, with loose discs and these discs had the Israel/ NEW ZEALAND DAIRY BOARD/ CITIBANK/ CITICORP/ Arms deal details in page-after-page abundance.

In July 1991, Paul White reported that the SIS (Security Intelligence Service) had approached him wanting ("to discuss the Citibank information") the discs. The SIS then said the police were going to search his property which they did two days later.

This is a typical SIS confirmation – to predict, then to have it happen.

The SIS and the SAS work together and are sometimes the same staff. The SIS first try non-violent means. That is, their first steps are requesting, then boiler-plating, hobbling, intimidation, blacklisting, isolation, reducing work opportunites, destroying relationships, then killing pets, etc.

The SIS work with the SAS when they don't get their way. The SIS didn't get their way with Paul White so they employed the SAS. This involved a new hat and arm badge, and sometimes new people. Since they're all government departments, they also employed the government contract killer Kimball Johnson.

Paul White then met with the shit stirring MP for Tauranga, Winston Peters, who was then Minister of Maori Affairs for the National government.[2] Winston stuck up for Paul White at first, then went quiet in lieu of future promotions instead of career assassination.

Winston had originally backed Paul White and was supposed to be negotiating, but the hit (murder of Paul White) had already been positively approved by Prime Minister Jim Bolger (2 November 1990–8 December 1997).

The deal was to pay Paul White, kill him in an accident, recover the money and walk away with clean hands, free of murder charges, with all involved experienced in murder and denial, and supporting each other in such.

Arrangement for payment was made through the National Party using Winston Peters (Minister of Maori Affairs) and Michelle Boag who was also the bag lady. At the time she was also the Director of Corporate Affairs for 'Fay, Richwhite & Company'; and working for the 'Public Relations Institute of New Zealand', and the 'International Association of Business Communicators' – some reference!

Paul White met with Winston Peters and Michelle Boag at the Parnell restaurant Non Solo Pizza (NSP) about 4 km from the future 'accident' site, with only one main access road leading to the Harbour Bridge. This made his direction somewhat predictable.

Paul White was paid by Michelle Boag $10,000 or $15,000 on Friday 3 September 1991 for a disc of Citibank information. It was probably $10,000, but $15,000 was claimed. Ask Michelle Boag. She should be able to confirm the amount.

Intelligence: "Michelle Boag was the Minister of Arts and President of the National Party. Once she was outside having a smoke at the back of the toilets outside an Arts function and said: 'What are the boring cunts talking about now?' She was a hard woman, good looking once, but now slaps everything on – 'a quasi-intellectual sexpot in semi-drag'. Her husband went to jail for fraud. She slipped out from underneath. They're back together again now, off and on."

Paul White celebrated his $10,000 or more payment at the Centra Hotel in Auckland, then left at 10 pm with a man and a woman (since identified, interviewed and cleared). Paul White then went to the Regent Hotel for a meal (now the Stamford Plaza at 22 Albert Street), then to a nightclub and left around 4 am. The next hour is unclear. Perhaps he was visiting a very tired Friday night hooker for the first time (4.10–5.10 am).

Paul White had the Citibank money beside him and was travelling north (not on the over-pass heading south as the movie showed, but) on Franshaw Street, across the Beaumont Street intersection and onto the motorway heading north towards the Harbour Bridge.

The murder of Paul Gordon Edward White (26) ocurred at 5.15 am on Saturday 4 September 1991.

A pale blue 1989 Ford Falcon driven by Kimball Johnson (assisted by Mr Panapa, cousin of rock radio personality Leah Panapa) shunted Paul White from behind into the concrete base of the motorway overramp approaching the Auckland Harbour Bridge.

Paul White wasn't killed in the accident, but he was unconscious. At least two other cars were following Paul White and they were all involved in his murder. They were also all part of the police and the military.

An SAS Army Medic happened to be the next car behind.

First there was Paul White, then Kimball Johnson, then the SAS Army Medic, then a random police officer, then important people in the know, then the ambulance, then the assigned police.[3]

The SAS Army Medic's job was to make sure Paul White was dead. Paul White may not have been dead, and other reports say and show that he wasn't.

There was no blood in the car, the steering wheel and dashboard were undamaged, and the maximum speed he would have been doing was 70 km/h as the crash showed.

> "Radio NZ last night quoted an unidentified source [Spook] saying that White's car was not as badly damaged as could be expected from an impact with a concrete pillar.

---

[1] SIS: "Incidentally, the old method was using vaseline and a detonator in the hubcap producing 150 lb/sq in. of explosion. The vaseline would spin to the outside then the detonator would explode "the cap" (as it was known) blowing the wheel off on the passenger front side, especially effective around steep roads like in Wellington. The vaseline would then mix with the other grease and detritus of the car, and on the ground, so it was virtually undetectable."

[2] Source: Pat Cain, 'Police probe mans death in Citibank disk case', cain@p@kosmos.wcc.govt.nz, 9 September 1992 as summarised from *The Dominion* and *The New Zealand Herald*.

[3] The assigned police officer in charge of the murder scene/ 'accident' then sat in the back of my High Court hearing on 20 April 2009 (28 years later). He was sitting next to a tow truck driver. They were chatting away and the officer was expecting to have my car towed immediately. I won all four cases by verbal decision and the police officer immediately stormed out of the room, got on the blower to Wellington and they said: "How the fuck did that happen?" and went about changing the decision. So in Judge Lin Stevens' written decision two weeks later, I had only won 1 out of the 4 cases. This is another verson of the PC rewriting history. In this case "PC" stands for 'Police Cunts'. Judge Stevens was then requested to admit bias and recuse himself.

The front of the car was significantly damaged by the 5.15 am crash on the Fanshawe St, city side, approach to the harbour bridge, but the dashboard and steering wheel were not and there was no blood in the vehicle.”[4]

So the SAS Army Medic drove up to the crashed car, Paul White, assessed he was not dead, grabbed White's barely conscious head, twisted it to break his neck, assessed that Paul White was dead, then sped off.

Important people were to be the next to follow, but a police car happened to be close by heading to Takapuna and attended the ‘accident’ unexpectedly. The Maori/ Polynesian officer (Double Brown) was not in on it. He was not assigned, but saw Paul White's body, his watch and the money ($10–$15K), so he stole the watch, emptied the briefcase, and left with the watch and the money.

Paul White was dead at the time and has been ever since.

Later the police, especially Detective Inspector John Rex Hughes, decided they couldn't sack the Maori/ Pacifc Island police officer who was now $10–$15K richer.

The important people then waited.

The Ambulance service then received “two or three” anonymous emergency calls from mobile phones. Soon the ambulance arrived on the scene of the ‘accident’.

The higher-ranking-people-in-the-know then turned up to dictate what had happened.

Seeing the money was gone, higher-ranking-people-in-the-know investigated all the ambulance staff for the missing money.

To cut their losses, they had the Ambulance staff report: “Paul White died shortly after the ambulance arrived” . . . but Paul White died shortly before the ambulance staff arrived.

The same people then assessed that it was “an accident”, ensured that no evidence was taken, and no one could assess the accident, then all the evidence was taken away.

Paul White's lawyer, Mark Blomkamp on TV3: “‘Someone may well have considered the information on the discs serious enough to kill for’ . . . the money was not in White's briefcase in his crashed car. The accident could have been invoked . . . ‘You might well think that but I couldn't possibly comment’.”[5]

So even Paul White's lawyer was scared, or had been scared off, or bought off with the promise of lucrative cases.

Spook then checked the wrecked car for evidence of driver struggle, especially the steering wheel and dashboard and noted that the damage was not great enough to cause death.’

Winston Peters had met Paul White at NSP some nine hours prior. Winston was then retired from his cabinet position as Minister of Maori Affairs a month later (early October 1991) then used his knowledge to pressure his reinstatement back into government – into higher positions – by alleging ‘government links with big business and corruption’.

He did this around July 1992, some nine months after the murder.

It worked wonders for his career – absolute bloody wonders.

The CIA's John Banks was the Minister of Police at the time. His favourite occupation is ‘protecting his own reputation’ and ordering ‘go nowhere investigations’.

Banks spends millions on consultant's reports (Deloitte/ CIA) that won't be acted upon, and “high priority police investigations” that will find nothing and ‘protect the CIA name’.

---

[4] Pat Cain, *The Dominion*, and *The New Zealand Herald*, citing Spook, 9 September 1992.

[5] Pat Cain, ‘Police probe mans death in Citibank disk case’, cain@p@kosmos.wcc.govt.nz, 9 September 1992 as summarised from *The Dominion* and *The New Zealand Herald*, 9 Sept 1992.

So on 8 Sept. 1992, Minister of Police John Banks ordered the NEW ZEALAND POLICE to do a “high priority investigation” into “Paul White's death may not have been accidental”.

It was an Intelligence whitewash . . . a CIA exercise in Counter-Intelligence Action.

The CIA's role is to protect American business overseas and that includes Citicorp, Citibank, Deloitte, and any Israel-involved Arms deals.

Paul White's murder involved all five so it was definitely a hit with CIA overtones.

The pale blue Ford Falcon should have had bent front driving gear, but when it was later driven around the South Island: “Going around a corner, it would shudder and jump a little. It seemed as if the chasis was out of line.”

Winston Peters' Career Moves

At the time of the payment and murder on 4 September 1991, Winston Peters was the Minister of Maori Affairs for Jim Bolger's National Government. He was then sacked a month later in early October 1991. Winston's time as Minister of Maori Affairs is given as “September 1990 to October 1991”. No specific dates are given. Perhaps it was Maori time.

Winston Peters also lost his National Party's endorsement for the safe Tauranga seat, so he returned as an independent and remained the MP for Tauranga (1984–2005) forming and leading the New Zealand First Party in 1993 which got him into office 2005–08.[6]

So Winston Peters had been repremanded, but he had the bully on the government, so . . . By 1996 Winston Peters held the balance of power in Government and negotiated himself into the position of Jim Bolger's Deputy Prime Minister (1996–97) and became the first Treasurer (16 December 1996–14 August 1998). Murder will get you behind the money.

Under the also corrupt Labour Government (1999–2008), Winston Peters was then Minister of Foreign Affairs (19 October 2005–29 August 2008) Senior Citizens and Racing – who all lost their money – those retired, those betting, and those who invested overseas.

There was a Police investigation and Winston stood down from all positions. Admittedly he took the rap for the corruption of Prime Minister Helen Clark who was accepting donations from one of the CIA's biggest heroin traffickers – shipping magnate Owen Glenn.

Owen Glenn bought his cover by donating NZ$7.5 million to the University of Auckland's Business School for a new building in February 2005, and “the University of Auckland is the most CIA university outside of America”, so it was all entrenched payback.

Like his namesake ‘Winston Churchill’, Winston Peters was a Party Hopper – working for National, forming New Zealand First, then working under Labour. The only people who get to do this successfully are Mossad assets, Israeli agents, usually with a mental illness. Both qualify.

Michelle Boag – the Quasi-Intellectual Sexpot Semi-Drag Counter-Intelligence Queen

Michelle Ann Boag (10 December 1954–) is divorced with one child. She held various positions in the National Party (1976–90).[7] She was a Press and Research Secretary for Prime Minister Robert Muldoon (1976–81, Tavistock); Press Secretary for Leader of the Opposition Jim Bolger (1985–86); worked for Public Relations Institute of New Zealand (PRINZ, 1982–92, Paid Lairs and Hypers); and the International Association of Business Communicators (IABC, 1989–92, Leverage, More Leverage, and Hyper Leverage); then she worked as the National Party president during 2002.

Michelle Boag's career included four years as ‘Director of Corporate Affairs’ for the corrupt merchant bank 'Fay, Richwhite & Company' who were the subject of The Winebox Inquiry' which Ian Wishart wrote about in *The Paradise Conspiracy* (1995) – including the Paul White murder. Winston Peters started off as the Winebox antagonist and ended up as a soft cock.

---

[6] Wikipedia: Winston Peters.

[7] *New Zealand Who's Who*, 1995 Edition, Edited by Alister Taylor & Deborah Coddington.

Michelle Boag is a consumate failure, a paid serial liar who installs Counter-Intelligence people with trumped up qualifications into key positions for leverage and more leverage. Michelle Boag is literally a compromised bag of shit who spends her reverse earnt positions promoting the worst people into influential positions to ensure the continued limitation and destruction of New Zealand in exchange for their cover-up of her appalling achievements . . . Michelle Boag is a douche bag.[8]

Following a period as President of the National Party in 2002, Michelle set up the boutique recruitment agency 'PR People' (recruiting public relations and communications practitioners – paid public liars). Miraculously in September 2008 it was bought by one of New Zealand's largest privately-owned recruitment companies the 'Momentum Group of Companies' which includes 'PR People' (public relations, business development, communications, marketing, sponsorship, events) 'IT recruitment' and 'Velocity' (office support specialists).

For cover, Michelle Boag was Trustee of the 'Auckland Rescue Helicopter Trust (well-known for its advertising frauds and linked to the murder of a lawyer 'falling' over a Takapuna cliff in his underpants, via an Australian brothers hit team); a former Trustee of Surf Livesaving (men in short shorts and a multi-coloured Jewish cap crashing outdated boats in up-to-the-minute surf), and a former President of Variety – the Children's Charity.

After single handedly destroying the ACC in one month in 1987: "The sensationalist tone of media releases regarding the financial situation at ACC has ignored the causes behind this so called 'blow out'"[9] . . . which is a case of the guilty investigating the next generation of guilt by providing an agreed cover up . . . as it was before, so it is now – intergenerational lying.

Michelle Boag is a paid liar and installer of Counter-Intelligence people into key positions. She is now New Zealand's leading PR recruitment specialist – or hired liar and can be contacted at michelleboag@prpeople.co.nz, Mobile 021940884, Ph (09) 3065500, Fax (09) 3065511, PR People, Momentum Group of Companies, Level 3, National Bank Tower, Cnr Queen and Victoria Streets, Auckland, P.O. Box 105-732.

Michelle Boag is one of those people who have been failed to the top. She is best described as:

> 'a hard woman, good looking once, but now slaps everything on making her a quasi-intellectual sexpot in semi-drag . . . a douche bag protecting the heroin use of illiterate prime ministers in exchange for vaginal leverage and political enemas.'
>
> **C.I.A. – Counter-Intelligence Advocates**

New Zealand Police 'High Priority' Investigation into Paul White's Murder

The CIA's Minister of Police John Banks 'High Priority Police Investigation' could not possibly find that:

1. The death of Paul White was not an accident;
2. The murder of Paul White had been positively approved by Prime Minister Jim Bolger;
3. Paul White's murder had been instigated by the government contract killer Kimball Johnson, assisted by Mr Panapa;
4. A senior SAS Army Medic completed the killing of Paul White;
5. Minister of Maori Affairs Winston Peters knew of the impending murder;

---

[8] 'Douche bag': "a small syringe for fluid injections used chiefly for enemas and vaginal lavage."

[9] *The Standard*, Daily Archive, March 11th, 2009, 'How to reduce ACC costs without cutting cover'.

6. Director of Corporate Affairs for 'Fay, Richwhite & Company' Michelle Boag was the bag lady for the Citibank money and knew of the impending murder;
7. There was not enough damage to the car to render Paul White dead;
8. The New Zealand Dairy Board had been profiting from arms dealing in the Middle East;
9. Minister of Police John Banks was a CIA asset and agent;
10. Minister of Police John Banks has been a CIA asset and agent ever since he was involved in drug dealing (1960s–) and paedophilia (as soon as he turned 21);
11. Minister of Arts Michelle Boag, while in charge of the Accident Compensation Corporation (ACC) account had lost NZ$90 million in week during unauthorised gambling in the stockmarket, and that is why accidental health care in New Zealand is so bad . . . **"If you don't die from the paperwork, the hospital will kill you"**;
12. Winston Peters was promoted to Deputy Prime Minister (1996–97) because he had the wood on Prime Minister Jim Bolger ordering the murder of Paul White;
13. Prime Minister Jim Bolger had the reading and writing age of a 14-year-old;
14. Prime Minister Jim Bolger was an accidental heroin user on Ridgeway Road in Taupo (teabags with an elephant printed on the side) and this resulted in extra vomit bags being placed in the government helicopters ever since.

So Paul White's death remained an "unresolved accident" and when Ian Wishart came to make his 2004 movie on the death of Paul White, he got some funding from parties allied to the murder, then named the movie 'Spooked', and quite blatantly blamed Paul White's murder on Spook. This brings into question: "What do they have on Ian Wishart?"

Promotion almost always comes from being a sell out.
It is very rarely and almost never earnt.
Murder will get you behind the money.
Treason always gets a front row seat.

Editorial: New Zealand Police Royal Commission overdue

Wise Counsel from Greg Hallett on Police Corruption, 11 January 2010

> "In New Zealand, the case for an open royal commission to restore public confidence in the Police is clear. The evidence includes a series of methamphetamine-related murders, gang warfare, video evidence of police brutality, police hostility to official police investigations of police (Operation Austin) and secret deals between the Police Association President and Spokesman Greg O'Connor and Prime Minister Helen Clark, as well as Auckland Area Commander Clint Rickards and the Political Ombudsman Anand Satyanand – now Governor-General. All of these people were involved in methamphetamine and heroin trafficking, the murder of historian Michael King, and attempted murders of Greg Hallett, now head of the commission of inquiry into police corruption.
>
> "In his forthcoming memoirs, *THE SEX COLLECTORS, How the World is Run on Shame, Vol I Stitch-ups, Vol II Murders, Vol III Heroin Ticket*, Mr Hallett rejects the view put by the Police Commissioner Howard Broad, Minister of Police Annette King, and the Police Association President and Spokesman Greg O'Connor, that it's just a few corrupt cops and the rest are doing a fine job.
>
> "The unarrested and uncharged police officers in leading roles in organised crime involving 'contract killing, heroin trafficking, and methamphetamine manufacture and delivery' is proof the New Zealand police force is upright, honest and true only in its presentation to the public.

"In all other areas, the Police are a crime creation and social engineering movement that serves 'drug traffickers, arms dealers, paedophiles and their minders'.

"Mr Hallett takes the view that the unarresting of corrupt police only proves corruption is deep-seated and continuing. Mr Hallett says it is obvious why the New Zealand police don't want, and the New Zealand Government will not have, an independent wide-ranging judicial inquiry into police corruption such as was had in Queensland and NSW: they know it would reveal what they don't want revealed. Mr Hallett does not suggest all New Zealand police are corrupt, but his experience tells him that what's known about police corruption in New Zealand is just the tip of the iceberg.

"The evidence to date paints an alarming picture. One hundred and twenty-eight people have been murdered in an underworld gang wars over drugs that the New Zealand police force appeared powerless to stop for almost 30 years.[10]

"The police only admit to 3,000 gang members, but there are 20,000 gang members and only 9,500 police. Crime got so bad, like at 'Mad' Ave in Glendowie, that the Auckland City Council bulldozed all the houses on the street.

"Unable to solve crime, the New Zealand police have resorted to buying the gangs businesses and houses in bargains to keep the gangs out of crime. Their accountants worked out that this was cheaper. Their consultants worked out that this was the only effective method of reducing crime.

"In September, the non-existant 'Office of Police Integrity' presented damning video evidence in which officers of the still going Armed Offenders Squad punched and abused 20 suspects as they pleaded for mercy, and ordinary police shot and killed several unarmed people, and were then acquitted seven years later once the public had lost all interest and fogotten the names of the victims.

"As bad as that was, of equal concern was the response of those embedded within the New Zealand police culture.

"Proceedings were labelled a 'Spanish Inquisition' by Police Association President Greg O'Connor, who argued they should be moved behind closed doors. The Police Association had a similar response to revelations in *The New Zealand Herald* this week that the Police would conduct hearings later this year into links between allegedly corrupt officers and organised crime. The Police Association would closely monitor the investigation, while the New Zealand Police Association assistant secretary, Inspector Silent, said the Police were "unaccountable" and lacked proper oversight. With no Police Union, the Police Association are doing their job in defending their members. But they are not objective commentators.

"There is also evidence of an unhealthy relationship between the Police Association and executive government, with *The New Zealand Herald* exposing that Police Association's Greg O'Connor had made a secret deal with Prime Minister Helen Clark in the run-up to the November 2005 Election that 'Minister of Health Annette King would be made Minister of Police when she gave 10 kg of NATO heroin to the Police for free distribution to gangs in order to discover a market'.

"This was without the knowledge of the existing Minister of Police, George Hawkins whose career incompetence allegedly allowed the Head Hunters gang to take over the police in many aspects. In return the Police had the Head Hunters murder Antonie Dixon on 4 February 2009. He was transferred to a solitary confinement (for no apparent reason) where he reportedly hung himself with towels, but he had rung a contact of Mr Hallett 36 hours prior and said that he thought he was about to be murdered . . . so it was no surprise to us.

---

[10] CIB Undercover: "A lof of these deaths are from the Police contracting out killings to the gangs. Black Power used to moan to me that since they have had a working relationship with the Cops, the Police are forever asking them to do hits. That was in the late '90s."

"Despite requests by this newspaper, details of what was promised remain secret, however they were published in the October 2007 *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide* with no published or reported denial. Although an unknown woman did complain 17 months later . . .

"Official corruption thrives on secrecy, as highlighted by corruption fighter Blank Blank QC in his landmark report into corruption in Auckland. Mr Blank said it was improper for the Police Association to meet executive government members without the Police Commissioner present – even though Police Commissioner Howard Broad liked watching 14-year-old girls fuck dogs on stage, all paid for by corrupt traffic tickets and taxpayer funding, and supported by his cover up of one of his fellow incestous child sex abusing Freemasons murdering his entire family – the 'bain' of the New Zealand Police.

"Mr Hallett's support for a royal commission echoes that of the 31 March 2004 Commission of inquiry into Police Misconduct report, and Ian Wishart, who argued that the New Zealand government was neglecting its duty in leaving an investigation in the hands of George Hawkins and the police service.

"Ian Wishart, a former journalist into Criminal Justice Commission misconduct, director of Howling at the Moon, and deputy director of his own large family, said New Zealand had clear evidence of third-level corruption of the type faced by the Fitzgerald inquiry, well beyond the threshold required for royal commission intervention.

"Third-level corruption is an entrenched system that ruthlessly protects itself.

"The New Zealand Herald first called for a royal commission into New Zealand policing in an editorial in March 2004, after the gangland execution of a number of brownskins, the 121st victim of a drug-related killing rampage that started with the slaying of Mr Asia courier Marty Johnstone in 1979.

"We argued then that only a royal commission had the power to go to the root of police corruption, while satisfying the deep concerns of the public that the New Zealand police force was up to the job. Nothing has changed. If anything, the case today for a royal commission, as expressed by Mr Hallett, is all the more compelling."

Spymaster: "You can always tell when the New Zealand Police have had a narc murdered under them – they moan forever at every opportunity. This is also what happens when they've deliberately stabbed him in the back by grassing him up to the other side that 'he's been instrumental in building a case against them'."

Author: "Yeah, once they're dead, they don't have to be paid".

Robert Downey Jr. and Jude Law in the 2009 'Sherlock Holmes':
"Will it be Fastice or Justice my dear Watson?"

Police Shagging during Stakeout

Greg Hallett then spoke to his Intelligence contact and said that the SIS had moved in next door within a week of his moving to Augustus Terrace in Parnell (2002–03), and his house was under close contact SIS surveillance.

"'The main reasons I was still alive was that they were so interested in what I was writing and the MP's daughter was a regular visitor.

"They wanted to see what I was going to come up with next. Plus the cop doing the recording had two female cops visiting him at different times, and each time the curtains would close and the surveillance would go lax'."

"The surveillance cop was shagging his assistants during the stakeout.

"'Proof of the police surveillance came when the MP's daughter came around, had some drinks, picked a domestic with my flatmate (her lover) and dragged it out onto the street. He drove off and she grabbed old of the rear side vision mirror while the BMW was moving.

"The police were there in 30 seconds.

"Penis out."

Greg Hallett: "It was close to Christmas and we work unacknowledged so we congratulated ourselves on what we had achieved. It is something we do only on rare occassions. I congratulated myself on causing the last snap election (announced but delayed) and said that I had learnt enough from my next book to take over a country and cause a snap election, whenever I wanted.

"This was due to having enough information to produce 'no confidence' in the current government. It was all true at the time and under that government, but didn't take into account the media suppression from sexually compromised employees – like Paul Holmes and Simon Dallow."

Greg Hallett: "I said that I was going to start working the information to cause a snap election in March 2005, not with the intent of installing another government, but with the intent of removing this one.

"I also said that because Trotsky, Lenin and Stalin were the Mafia bosses of their times, that Helen Clark, a KGB operative, asset and agent, was the Mafia boss of the South Pacific.

Intelligence: "You're probably right" – a compliment that doesn't happen too often.

Two days later (22 December 2004, 10:20 am) it was mentioned on Radio 1ZB that Helen Clark could call a snap election in March 2005.

Greg Hallett: "I then rang one of the Heads of Intelligence and he invited me over for tea".

The Election was eventually delayed by playing out the media. The media controls all politics in New Zealand, which means the CIA agent Rupert Murdoch controls the country. He was an Australian Counter-Intelligence agent working for the CIA. He is now a rabid homosexual and child sex abuser who lost US$4.3 billion in 2008.

Greg Hallett: "Not enough".

The Election didn't happen until it could get the sympathy vote from the death/ murder of former Labour Prime Minister David Lange. Rumour has it that he died of aids. He spent his entire time as Prime Minister rooting transvestites and not his wife – 'the Methodist Monobrow'.

Intelligence, 27 March 2009: "The Police are considering closing the file on you."

Greg Hallett: "That's probably because they haven't found anything on me. Peter Preece's (Police Forensics) clean report on me probably helped . . . or not."

Pre-Christmas Boiler-Plating 2004

On Friday night/ Saturday morning 17/18 December 2004 there was a huge violent argument between two men and a woman at one of Greg Hallett's neighbour's in Parnell. They were obviously on P – the police introduced and supplied drug.

The argument raged from midnight to 2 am and moved out onto the street and in front of his residence, focussing around his Mercedes parked outside.

When Hallett went to his car at 3 am the Mercedes hood ornament had been removed, the driver's window was down, although there were no signs of it being forced and his driver licence had been stolen. Nothing else was missing. The drugged out person on P left a button on the driver's seat and it looked remarkably like a police button.

Greg Hallett: "Other stuff had been rummaged through, but only the driver licence was taken."

"Every year, in the two weeks leading up to Christmas, the police specialise in boiler-plating their favourite customers. This involves observing them, breaking into their houses, tampering with their cars, trying to get them involved in violence, removing their children, interfering with their mail, stalling their outgoing products, stalling their incoming cheques, checking their mail, delaying it, and issuing traffic fines, preferably on false pretences.

"Since P is a police introduced drug, and the police focus on their boiler-plating in the two weeks before Christmas, and since the driver's window was down, without it being forced, and since the police had repeatedly broken into my place every second night in October and November 2004, and since the violence went from my neighbour's place to surround my car, and my car was the only one attacked, and since the police have been told to 'Alert central government in Wellington if Greg Hallett sets foot in a police station', then I consider this to be police boiler-plating."

Greg Hallett continued: "There are some other factors that make this so. My Intelligence contact came around on 20 December 2004 and said: 'There was a rumour put out by CYFs (Child Youth and Family services) that he was a paedophile. Would you please write a letter in support of me'.

"I suggest that 'Child Youth and Family services was the paedophile movement', and others are now agreeing to such an extent that ordinary people tell CYFs workers during interviews that 'CYFs is a paedophile movement' . . . and the CYFs workers agree.

"The entire Family Court, CYFs, Police role and network is designed to remove fathers from families, place the kids in government care and let the paedophiles pick and choose unprotected children under the guise of 'HELP'."

Greg Hallett: "I took the Intelligence dictation and discussed it with him. I decided that their gossip, which had amounted to nothing to date, was a fishing expedition to find out who his supporters were, and they were using this Intelligence contact's list of supporters to prepare an assassination list for CYFs and the Labour Government – another murder list.

"Under Helen Clark, Government was that hairy. It was. Really. Ask anyone who wasn't employed by her . . . and that's anyone who wasn't a party to fisting her.

Greg Hallett then told his Intelligence contact: "Everyone involved in exposing police/ government corruption was currently being boiler-plated".

Intelligence replied: "You're probably right".

Greg Hallett: "My Intelligence contacts main crime was that he had exposed paedophiles within CYFs. He had been published in the December 2004 issue of *Investigate magazine* for this. CYFs had been working diligently for many years to supply unprotected children to paedophiles.

The name 'Astrid Malcolm' was mentioned repeatedly. She worked high up in CYFs and would take children home for her husband, Aussie Malcolm, to 'coach', which he did, alone, in the bedroom for about eight (8) hours.

"I then told my Intelligence contact how this 'effective' Family Court lawyer had contacted me. He had been charged for having sexual images of children on his computer, but it was a shared use computer (family and staff used it), the police had stolen it, removed the harddrive, then said the porn images on the computer were his, but failed to ever produce the harddrive, or the images.

"His wife, a feminist involved with Women's Refuge, was divorcing him at the time and after the bach (holiday home).

"We rang this Family Court lawyer and he said that while he was in court defending himself, someone had come into his house and changed all the settings on his computer.

"I said that his computer would be tracked, his phone would be tapped and his house would be bugged.

"The lawyer replied: 'I can't take much more of this'.

Greg Hallett replied: "Toughen up laddy. It's been happening to us for years. Now you know all those stories from us you didn't at first believe . . .'"

Judge Elliot

Retired Undercover: "Judge Elliot was a paedophile and THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE eventually brought him to trial.

"Elliot sucked this boy's dick who was under 13 years old, and the boy grew up to become an alcoholic, unemployed, and had problems with the law because he had no respect for judges.

"He laid complaints against Judge Elliot for the sex abuse.

"Others had also complained.

"Judge Elliot sucked a lot of under 13-year-old boy's dicks. It was his thing.

"Words had been had in high places and the police had been told:

'Judge Elliot must be saved!'

"So the Police sent a plain-clothed police unit out (2–3 people). They waylaid the complainant from his first day's evidence in court and took him to a pub where they poured booze down his throat.

"So the next day the sexually abused complainant wasn't available to give evidence because he was in cells for drunk & debauchery having been arrested by the three-man unit that got him drunk.

"The case collapsed against Judge Elliot in the mid-2000s and the Police deny all knowledge to this day that they did anything wrong.

"The police did issue him with a traffic ticket at the same time and found him guilty of this, but not of the paedophilia.

THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE: "Who us? . . . Do you mean to say that we did something wrong? . . . We can do no wrong because we are Police . . . And to assert that we did do wrong is an arrestable offence on your part! . . . These are very serious complaints that you are bringing to our notice."

Retired Undercover: "At the end of the day, you and I will end up in the big Watchhouse in the sky and the well-known desk sergeant, St Peter, will be looking over all your crooked deeds, including all the mismatched cases, and the bullshit charges and the endless fit-ups and I wouldn't think much of your chances of not burning in hell."

Police: "Sarg – the fucking cunt just threatened us".

Sergeant: "Yes, but artistically done Mr H".

Judge Edward Taihakurei Durie

Edward Durie (18 January 1940–) graduated with a BA, LL.B from Victoria University in 1964 and was admitted to the Bar the same year; then became a partner in Murray, Dillon, Gooch & Durie (Tauranga, 1964–74); then a judge of the Māori Land Court (1974); then Chief Judge of Maori Land Court (1981–98); then Chairman of the Waitangi Tribunal (1981–2002); then appointed to the High Court bench in Wellington (1998); then became a High Court Judge (2004–); then took up a position in the Law Commission (July 2004–). His specialisation is "Maori Issues" and has been married twice, the second to Donna Hall, a controversial Treaty of Waitangi lawyer who works for Woodward Law in Wellington . . . and is a well known schizophrenic with large red glasses making her look like a blind-eye secretary from the movie 'L.A. Confidential'.

> "Judge Durie has been criticised on a number of occasions in the past for failing to declare possible conflicts of interest particularly in connection to his lawyer wife Donna Hall.
>
> In a 1994 High Court case against the Maori Land Court and West Coast dissidents, the defendant Rudolph Cecil Lousich [uncle of the child prostitute MP Sandra Lee, married to Chairman of the ARC Mike Lee] was represented by Donna Hall – Judge Durie's wife.
>
> Judge Tipping found it was improper that the case be heard in front of the Chief Maori Court Judge Durie, and should be heard in the High Court.
>
> Judge Durie took great offence to this reference to his connection to his own wife Donna Hall – for whom he had written the submissions – and tried unsuccessfully to get the Solicitor-Generals office to change the decision.
>
> In 1995 Judge Edward Taihakurei Durie took part in a confidential $150,000 review of the Crown Forestry Rental Trust carried out by his lawyer wife, Donna Hall [with Durie writing Hall's submissions for Durie to hear], and Professors Margaret Wilson [KGB, (Speaker of Parliament, 2005–08] in on the Labour vote gathering scam.
>
> The *National Business Review* (July 1999) reported that Judge Durie had made lengthy contributions to the 1995 trust review, processed through his wife's legal office – Woodward Law in Wellington."[11]
>
> H.L. Mencken: "JUDGE (n.) A law student who marks his own papers."
>
> Abraham Lincoln: "Nearly all men can stand adversity,
> but if you want to test a man's character, give him power."

Judge Edward T Durie has been in a long term relationship with lawyer Donna Hall and their marriage has been full of Donna running away with any charismatic on the day . . . and they used to take care of foster children.

In 1983, one of the half-cast Maori children, a boy, then around 13 years old, and a new foster child, sneeked into Edward and Donna's bedroom and into the walk-in wardrobe where he found another door. He opened it and inside he found a very very large collection of child sex videos and three pounds of dope. So he stole the dope and left, never to return to that foster home.

In the early 2000s Donna Hall was rooting around on her husband Judge Edward Durie, and he had to go to some lengths to hawl her back in and avoid a scandal.

Although he fronts as a Maori, Durie is not a Maori, but the additional name "Taihakurei" managed to get him into the position as Chief Judge of the Maori Land Court, Chairman of the Waitangi Tribunal and then into the Labour (paedophile) appointed position in the Law Commission.

---

[11] www.kiwisfirst.com, paraphrased for your enjoyment.

Here Judge Durie writes applications to his own court and has his sex partner Donna Hall present them.

Judge Edward 'Taihakurei' Durie then approves them. This has given a lot of land to the Maori. It places the Judge E.T. Durie/ Donna Hall combination up there with Peter 'Two Wives' Sharples as the country's leading extortionist.

1. Does this not make the Maori Land Court a complicit paedophile movement?, and;
2. Has the granting of Maori land not been in exchange for sex with Maori children; and
3. Is this not by the very judges who then preside over the reactive crimes of a predictably socially-engineered generation of fatherless Maori, sexually abused by the very judges they justifiably stand staunchly in front of and have no respect for?

At the time that Judge Edward Taihakurei Durie was the Chief Judge of the Maori Land Court (1981–98), he was a dope-smoking paedophile masturbating in front of child porn movies and married to a schizophrenic dope-smoking paedophile with a penchant for swinging with whichever charismatic was most noted on the day.

So here's a photograph to prove the judiciary's endangerment to children. Check out Judge Edward Taihakurei Durie's gleeful smile as he's surrounded by young children.

Judge Edward Taihakurei Durie circa 1985 with unsuspecting children and some other baldhead.

Judicial Inside Jobs

The Disappearing Guy: "Judge Ted Thomas, whilst senior judge, took a case off Judge Blanchard, apppointed himself, and was then seen two days later having lunch with the Prosecutor . . . Detective Sergeant Mark Osbourne of the Auckland Drug Squad used to manage the Ponsonby Under 21 Rugby Team and got married around September 2007. Ten years earlier, Osbourne was having an affair with Karen Harding, who has since become a prominent Auckland lawyer specialising in driving cases, especially drunk driving. Osbourne and Harding met drunk at the Empire Tavern. Lawyers and police tend not to meet in places unless it's to their advantage. The Empire Tavern was owned by Billy Boyd – bought for him by the Mr Asia lawyers who weren't jailed. So Billy Boyd was another fall guy for judicial corruption – this time, heroin trafficking. Karen Harding then went back to her preferred gender – females. So was Mark Osbourne less well endowed than a feminist packing a Glock?, or drunk and couldn't get it up?'. From a prominent family from St Heliers, Harding is now a prominent lawyer, and quite probably on her way to the bench. How do we get a fair trial when the Detective Sergeant of the Drug Squad is having an affair with a criminal lawyer who is a self-professed lesbian? 'Sir' generally means 'sold out', and when the Courts go bankrupt, the country is soon to follow, so who you gonna call?"

Author: "Not Constable James Matewhinau Cassin – Corrupt Cop Front Runner. He was placed on the Internal Affairs Corrupt and Bent Cops list on 16 September 2004. He was put there, independent of myself, by this Intelligence Officer.

Intelligence Officer: "When Cassin is accused he will have to go to the Disciplinary Tribunal in a Police Station. He can then take a grievance against the police and get a huge pay packet through civil law under the employment legislation. Attorney-General Margaret Wilson (1999–2005) has been turning the police and judiciary into a pro-crime syndicate. That is, the more a police officer is accussed of crime, the more financial compensation they can claim due to 'stress' and 'future damages'."

Author: "And if the police officer was originally a criminal, that fact can no longer be brought up as evidence . . . and the Police would be employing known criminals . . . which is the goal of such communists as Margaret Wilson whose placement as Attorney-General and Speaker of the House were acts of nation sabotage.

"Margaret Wilson offered 'Hands Clean for Criminals' and finally got her way as shown on TV 1 at 11:11pm on 11 May 2004 when it was announced that 'Seven (7) years after a conviction the criminal doesn't have to declare their criminal records, the employers can't access it', and 'a citizen can't raise the cop's criminal history after seven years' as evidence that the cop was corrupt and acting on behalf of criminal politicians.

"Attorney-General Marget Wilson was so eager to get this law through, she claimed it as law when it had only passed its first reading, and not its second or third.

"So what Margaret Wilson was so desperately engineering was a 'hands clean' crime ring. It also meant that the crimes she committed pre-1997 could not be used to charge her . . . like her attempted nuclear strike on New Zealand between 1980 and 1989.

"As a result, the police now boiler-plate a target for seven years so they can't even lay their first charge against the bent cop.

"I exposed the trial head of the Disputes Tribunal as a drug user in January 1994, and was then falsely arrested on 22 June 1999. The arrest warrant was for a 'male assaults female 1,000 km away in Christchurch and under a different name', and the transport officer in Auckland was the Rotorua serial rapist and Waikato Area Commander Clint Rickards who then became a known P dealer while still in uniform.

"Five years later, the harrassments were still happening (2004) and four years later, Rickards was promoted to the Bar as a lawyer (2008) despite a record number of complaints."

And now for some distraction news . . .

If you are going to be a government contract killer, it increases your career length and immunity if one of your relatives is a TV personality.

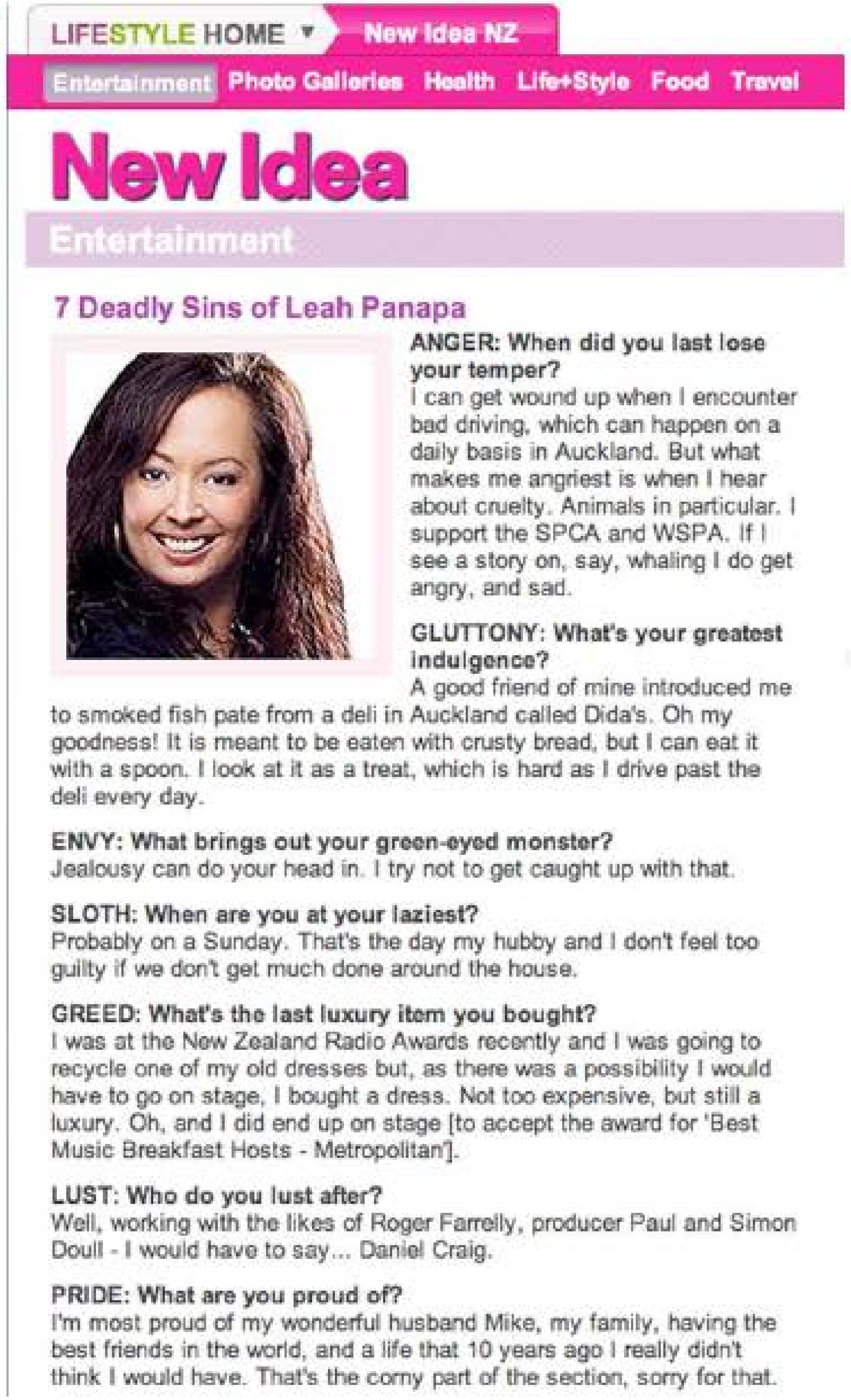

7 Deadly Sins of Leah Panapa

ANGER: When did you last lose your temper?
I can get wound up when I encounter bad driving, which can happen on a daily basis in Auckland. But what makes me angriest is when I hear about cruelty. Animals in particular. I support the SPCA and WSPA. If I see a story on, say, whaling I do get angry, and sad.

GLUTTONY: What's your greatest indulgence?
A good friend of mine introduced me to smoked fish pate from a deli in Auckland called Dida's. Oh my goodness! It is meant to be eaten with crusty bread, but I can eat it with a spoon. I look at it as a treat, which is hard as I drive past the deli every day.

ENVY: What brings out your green-eyed monster?
Jealousy can do your head in. I try not to get caught up with that.

SLOTH: When are you at your laziest?
Probably on a Sunday. That's the day my hubby and I don't feel too guilty if we don't get much done around the house.

GREED: What's the last luxury item you bought?
I was at the New Zealand Radio Awards recently and I was going to recycle one of my old dresses but, as there was a possibility I would have to go on stage, I bought a dress. Not too expensive, but still a luxury. Oh, and I did end up on stage [to accept the award for 'Best Music Breakfast Hosts - Metropolitan'].

LUST: Who do you lust after?
Well, working with the likes of Roger Farrelly, producer Paul and Simon Doull - I would have to say... Daniel Craig.

PRIDE: What are you proud of?
I'm most proud of my wonderful husband Mike, my family, having the best friends in the world, and a life that 10 years ago I really didn't think I would have. That's the corny part of the section, sorry for that.

A Product of Failure

Fletchers' accountant, brother Jim Fletcher, was killed in Papamoa in 1993 with a bread and butter knife. He was my neighbour at the time with a few sand dunes between us.

Builder: "Jim Fletcher and Hugh Fletcher wanted to pay the homeowners back for the failed wall cladding, 'Weatherside', but obviously the others didn't.

"Fletchers had to put down a surety of $500 million and Sian Elias stole it. She also heard the court case – so nepotism. So there were no payments made. She threw the case out: 'There's obviously been an error'.

"Weatherside went like weetbix – the same consistency as chipboard. It was made out of burnt sugarcane, 3/8" thick, or 10 mm, and came in 6 metre lengths. They called it hardboard."

> Fibreboard: A building material composed of wood chips or plant fibers bonded together and compressed into rigid sheets "usually made from sugarcane refuse (bagasse) and treated with asphalt. It comes 25/32-inch thick, 24 and 48 inches wide, and 8, 9, 10, and 12 feet long."[12]

Painter: "They called the product hardboard, but Fletchers knew from the day it was first made that if it was painted with water based primer and water based paint, the whole material would break down to the same state and consistency as Weetbix cereal.

"If it wasn't sealed properly, especially on the cut ends, it went like weetbix so the tradesmen called it 'Weetbix Board' and if Fletchers caught anybody running around saying that, they would send letters threatening to sue. So most of the builders that had a clue about it, and how crooked a product it was, limited their comments to recommending other materials.

"But Fletchers being Fletchers, got the state to verify that it was a good building material, so the state stood behind it, and by implication, Fletchers stood behind the state.

"But the whole thing was based on illusion, because Fletchers were a totally criminal outfit. They were robber barons backed up by thieving murdering arseholes."

Fletchers Crooked Valuers and the SAS Murders

CIB Undercover: "Fletchers had a pool of crooked valuers that exceeded 150 alive at the time the case began. They ruled out the ones that had gone to Australia and Pommyland and gave the names of those that were left, even those retired, to the SAS, as a list. This became known as "The Fletchers List" – and these Valuers were assigned to be killed.

"They were killed in all sorts of strange ways. They were run over in car accidents. The most common car was being hit by a Valiant just after the pub had closed.

"One of the drivers was a Maori by the name of 'Dicky Noble'[13] – a member of the Nomads which was a gang formed by Prime Minister Muldoon (1975–84).

"New Zealand is one of the very few countries, apart from South America, where gangs of killers have been formed by the Prime Minister. The Police and other government departments have been assigned to assist them – everything from how to be funded, how to defraud government departments, and for the Police – how to avoid prosecution.

"Over fifty (50) valuers were killed.

"I knew that nobody was going to go to court and be found guilty from day one. So I told my bosses at CIB that no one was going to be found guilty, but they didn't believe me.

"I didn't tell them that the SAS were running around aiding and abetting the gang members in their hits. I just said: 'Nothing is going to happen' and they looked at me like

---

[12] Lesson 3, Roofing – Finishing Details, https://rdl.train.army.mil/soldierPortal/atia/adlsc/view/public/9736-1/accp/en0069/le3.htm.

[13] Dicky Noble also had brothers who were quite famous in the underworld. With the cousins, there's about 20 in Auckland and the Far North.

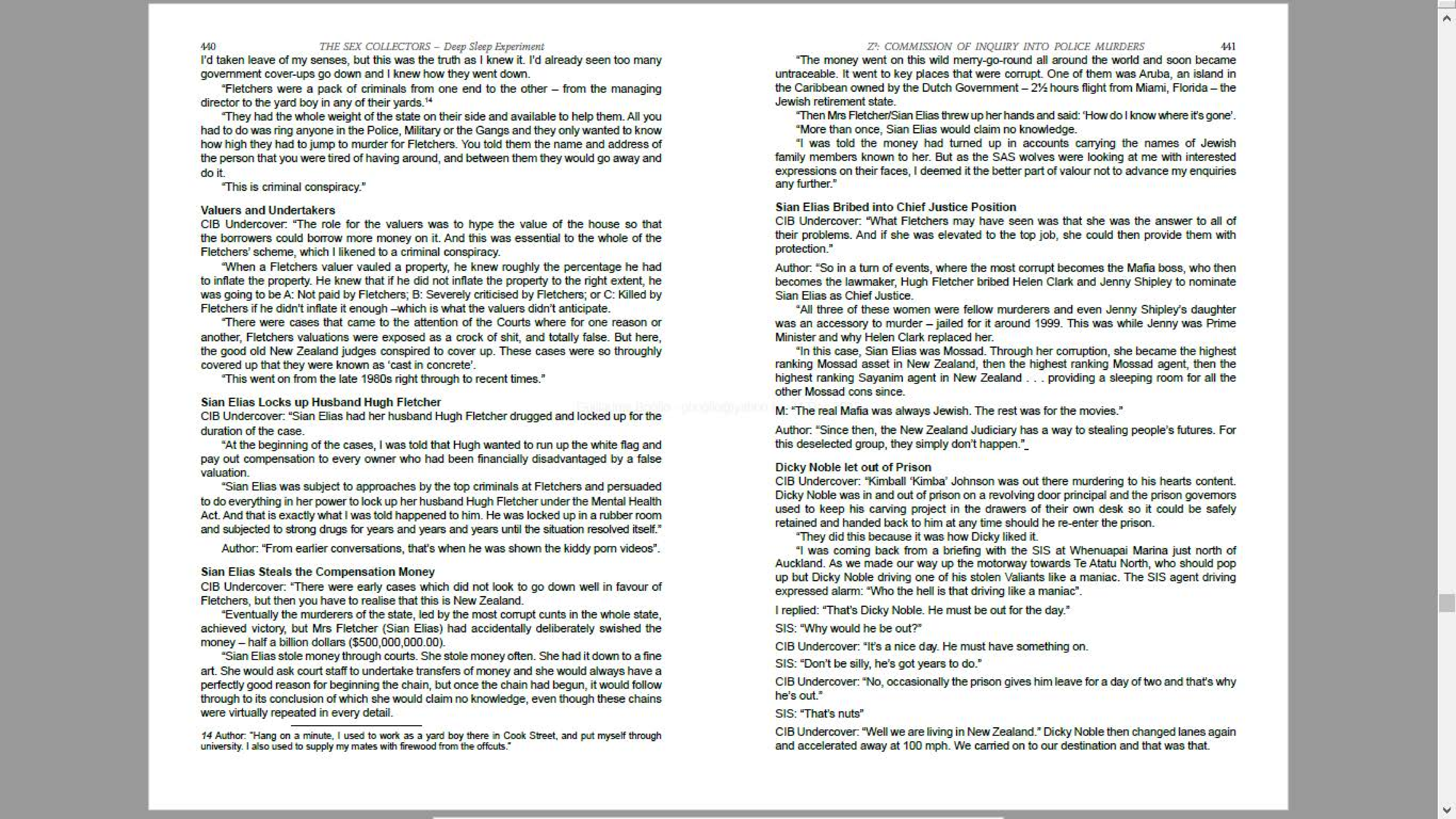

I'd taken leave of my senses, but this was the truth as I knew it. I'd already seen too many government cover-ups go down and I knew how they went down.

"Fletchers were a pack of criminals from one end to the other – from the managing director to the yard boy in any of their yards.[14]

"They had the whole weight of the state on their side and available to help them. All you had to do was ring anyone in the Police, Military or the Gangs and they only wanted to know how high they had to jump to murder for Fletchers. You told them the name and address of the person that you were tired of having around, and between them they would go away and do it.

"This is criminal conspiracy."

Valuers and Undertakers

CIB Undercover: "The role for the valuers was to hype the value of the house so that the borrowers could borrow more money on it. And this was essential to the whole of the Fletchers' scheme, which I likened to a criminal conspiracy.

"When a Fletchers valuer vauled a property, he knew roughly the percentage he had to inflate the property. He knew that if he did not inflate the property to the right extent, he was going to be A: Not paid by Fletchers; B: Severely criticised by Fletchers; or C: Killed by Fletchers if he didn't inflate it enough –which is what the valuers didn't anticipate.

"There were cases that came to the attention of the Courts where for one reason or another, Fletchers valuations were exposed as a crock of shit, and totally false. But here, the good old New Zealand judges conspired to cover up. These cases were so throughly covered up that they were known as 'cast in concrete'.

"This went on from the late 1980s right through to recent times."

Sian Elias Locks up Husband Hugh Fletcher

CIB Undercover: "Sian Elias had her husband Hugh Fletcher drugged and locked up for the duration of the case.

"At the beginning of the cases, I was told that Hugh wanted to run up the white flag and pay out compensation to every owner who had been financially disadvantaged by a false valuation.

"Sian Elias was subject to approaches by the top criminals at Fletchers and persuaded to do everything in her power to lock up her husband Hugh Fletcher under the Mental Health Act. And that is exactly what I was told happened to him. He was locked up in a rubber room and subjected to strong drugs for years and years and years until the situation resolved itself."

Author: "From earlier conversations, that's when he was shown the kiddy porn videos".

Sian Elias Steals the Compensation Money

CIB Undercover: "There were early cases which did not look to go down well in favour of Fletchers, but then you have to realise that this is New Zealand.

"Eventually the murderers of the state, led by the most corrupt cunts in the whole state, achieved victory, but Mrs Fletcher (Sian Elias) had accidentally deliberately swished the money – half a billion dollars ($500,000,000.00).

"Sian Elias stole money through courts. She stole money often. She had it down to a fine art. She would ask court staff to undertake transfers of money and she would always have a perfectly good reason for beginning the chain, but once the chain had begun, it would follow through to its conclusion of which she would claim no knowledge, even though these chains were virtually repeated in every detail.

---

[14] Author: "Hang on a minute, I used to work as a yard boy there in Cook Street, and put myself through university. I also used to supply my mates with firewood from the offcuts."

"The money went on this wild merry-go-round all around the world and soon became untraceable. It went to key places that were corrupt. One of them was Aruba, an island in the Caribbean owned by the Dutch Government – 2½ hours flight from Miami, Florida – the Jewish retirement state.

"Then Mrs Fletcher/Sian Elias threw up her hands and said: 'How do I know where it's gone'.

"More than once, Sian Elias would claim no knowledge.

"I was told the money had turned up in accounts carrying the names of Jewish family members known to her. But as the SAS wolves were looking at me with interested expressions on their faces, I deemed it the better part of valour not to advance my enquiries any further."

Sian Elias Bribed into Chief Justice Position

CIB Undercover: "What Fletchers may have seen was that she was the answer to all of their problems. And if she was elevated to the top job, she could then provide them with protection."

Author: "So in a turn of events, where the most corrupt becomes the Mafia boss, who then becomes the lawmaker, Hugh Fletcher bribed Helen Clark and Jenny Shipley to nominate Sian Elias as Chief Justice.

"All three of these women were fellow murderers and even Jenny Shipley's daughter was an accessory to murder – jailed for it around 1999. This was while Jenny was Prime Minister and why Helen Clark replaced her.

"In this case, Sian Elias was Mossad. Through her corruption, she became the highest ranking Mossad asset in New Zealand, then the highest ranking Mossad agent, then the highest ranking Sayanim agent in New Zealand . . . providing a sleeping room for all the other Mossad cons since.

M: "The real Mafia was always Jewish. The rest was for the movies."

Author: "Since then, the New Zealand Judiciary has a way to stealing people's futures. For this deselected group, they simply don't happen."_

Dicky Noble let out of Prison

CIB Undercover: "Kimball 'Kimba' Johnson was out there murdering to his hearts content. Dicky Noble was in and out of prison on a revolving door principal and the prison governors used to keep his carving project in the drawers of their own desk so it could be safely retained and handed back to him at any time should he re-enter the prison.

"They did this because it was how Dicky liked it.

"I was coming back from a briefing with the SIS at Whenuapai Marina just north of Auckland. As we made our way up the motorway towards Te Atatu North, who should pop up but Dicky Noble driving one of his stolen Valiants like a maniac. The SIS agent driving expressed alarm: "Who the hell is that driving like a maniac".

I replied: "That's Dicky Noble. He must be out for the day."

SIS: "Why would he be out?"

CIB Undercover: "It's a nice day. He must have something on.

SIS: "Don't be silly, he's got years to do."

CIB Undercover: "No, occasionally the prison gives him leave for a day of two and that's why he's out."

SIS: "That's nuts"

CIB Undercover: "Well we are living in New Zealand." Dicky Noble then changed lanes again and accelerated away at 100 mph. We carried on to our destination and that was that.

Chief Justice's Husband's Board of Directors Wear Nazi Uniforms

CIB Undercover: "There was a reason why Fletchers' Board of Directors used to dress up in Nazi uniforms and this came about not long after World War Two when Darcy Courlander was the financial brains behind the whole outfit. "Nicholas 'Darcy' Courlander had spent most of the war helping the Nazi SS.

Author: "Darcy was SS-Unterscharführer Roy Nicholas Courlander and wore a German Field gray uniform and paraded for Hitler's 55th birthday. It's in *How to Take Over the World*. He claimed at his trial that he'd only being assisting the SS to get them laid."

CIB Undercover: "Darcy was his nickname. It started as an alias he used to root under."

Author: "When barmen were short on cash, they would dress up a prostitute in school uniform and charge Darcy 100 quid to root her. The prostitutes may have been 17, 20, 25 or even mid-30s and used to line up as his 1-inch penis (others say 3-inches) hardly registered."

"He was then jailed in New Zealand and Sir James Fletcher used to go in to jail and consult with him for the Fletcher business."

Author: "It was from these Sir james Fletcher/ Darcy Courlander meetings in prison that Fletchers sewed up the forestry so the only timber port was Tauranga operating for the Kaingaroa Forest.

"Any forest in the Far North was unlikely to be able to exported. This made the northern pine forests next to worthless and when Marsden Point opened up Northport for log exports in 2002, even that was only for the selected few.

"Northport is jointly owned (50:50) by the Port of Tauranga and Northland Port Corporation so it was all sewn up. This made the forest worthless for those without access to Northport and profitable for those with selective access who could buy the northern logs for nothing.

"The stupid carbon credits have only made pine logs more of a rort.

"Prime Minister Helen Clark supported this, partly because her husband used to attend Hugh Fletcher's child sex abuse soirees – the same ones that murdered participant David McKnee."

Threats to Kill, Attempts to Kill and Recent Killings

Spook: "A lot of what was done in the way of murders was similar to the Fay, Richwhite & Company list who killed Paul (Gordon Edward) White (26) at 5.15 am on Saturday 4 September 1991.

"People would come to me and say: 'The death list has got to seven and you're number eight'.

"I used to be unconcerned about it because I assumed that my life was already forfeit."

Author: "I was named number two on one list and number ten on another list.

"I'm even more convinced now that the Samoa Tsunami was a hit requested by the Mafia boss Peter Williams QC, as carried out by the Fletchers team using their contacts – the Rockefellers.

"The contact between Williams and the Fletchers was Simon Moore SC – Sheriff of Auckland – Chief Crown Prosecutor.

"So the New Zealand Judiciary is right up there subcontracting the murders.

"Everything seems to come down to select familes. The families with the worst attributes, and the most reliably bad attributes, are successively promoted. "This is what helps maintain New Zealand as such a Mafia state."

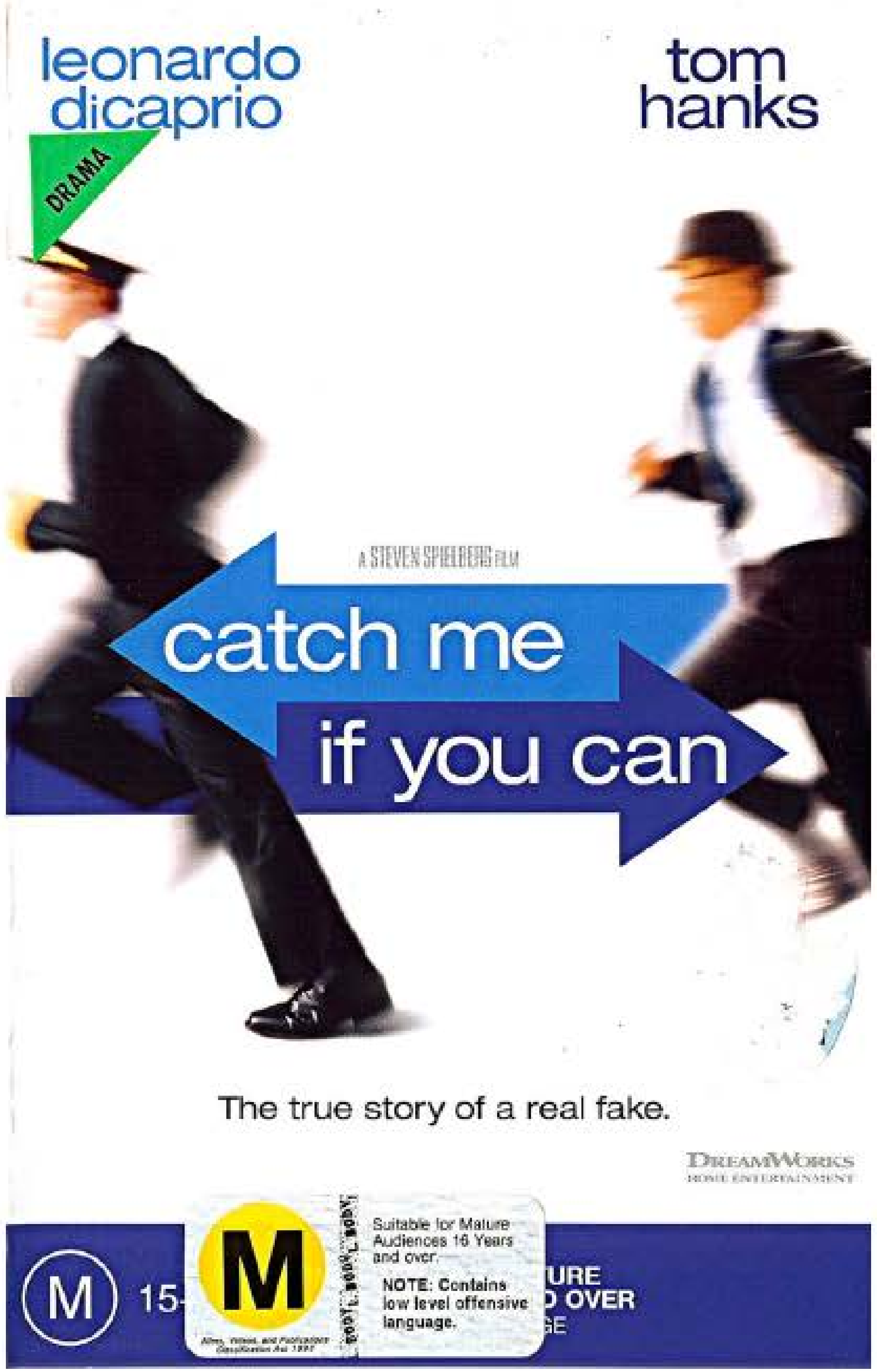
leonardo dicaprio
tom hanks
DRAMA
A STEVEN SPIELBERG FILM
catch me if you can
The true story of a real fake.
DREAMWORKS HOME ENTERTAINMENT
M
15-
M
Suitable for Mature Audiences 16 Years and over.
NOTE: Contains low level offensive language.
Films, Videos, and Publications Classification Act 1993
URE
D OVER
GE

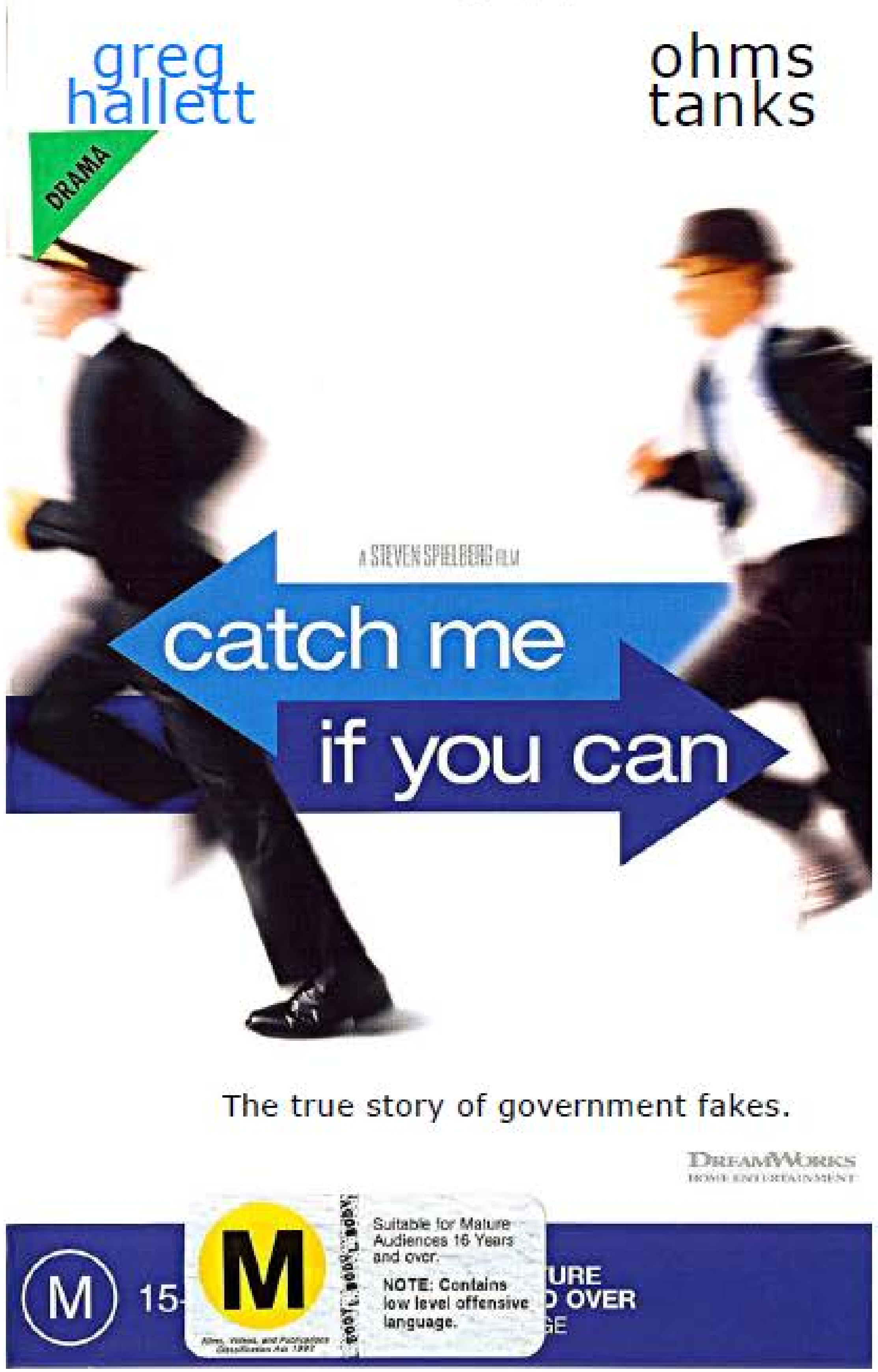
greg hallett
ohms tanks
DRAMA
A STEVEN SPIELBERG FILM
catch me
if you can
The true story of government fakes.
DreamWorks
HOME ENTERTAINMENT
M 15+
URE
D OVER
GE
M
Suitable for Mature Audiences 16 Years and over.
NOTE: Contains low level offensive language.
Films, Videos, and Publications Classification Act 1993

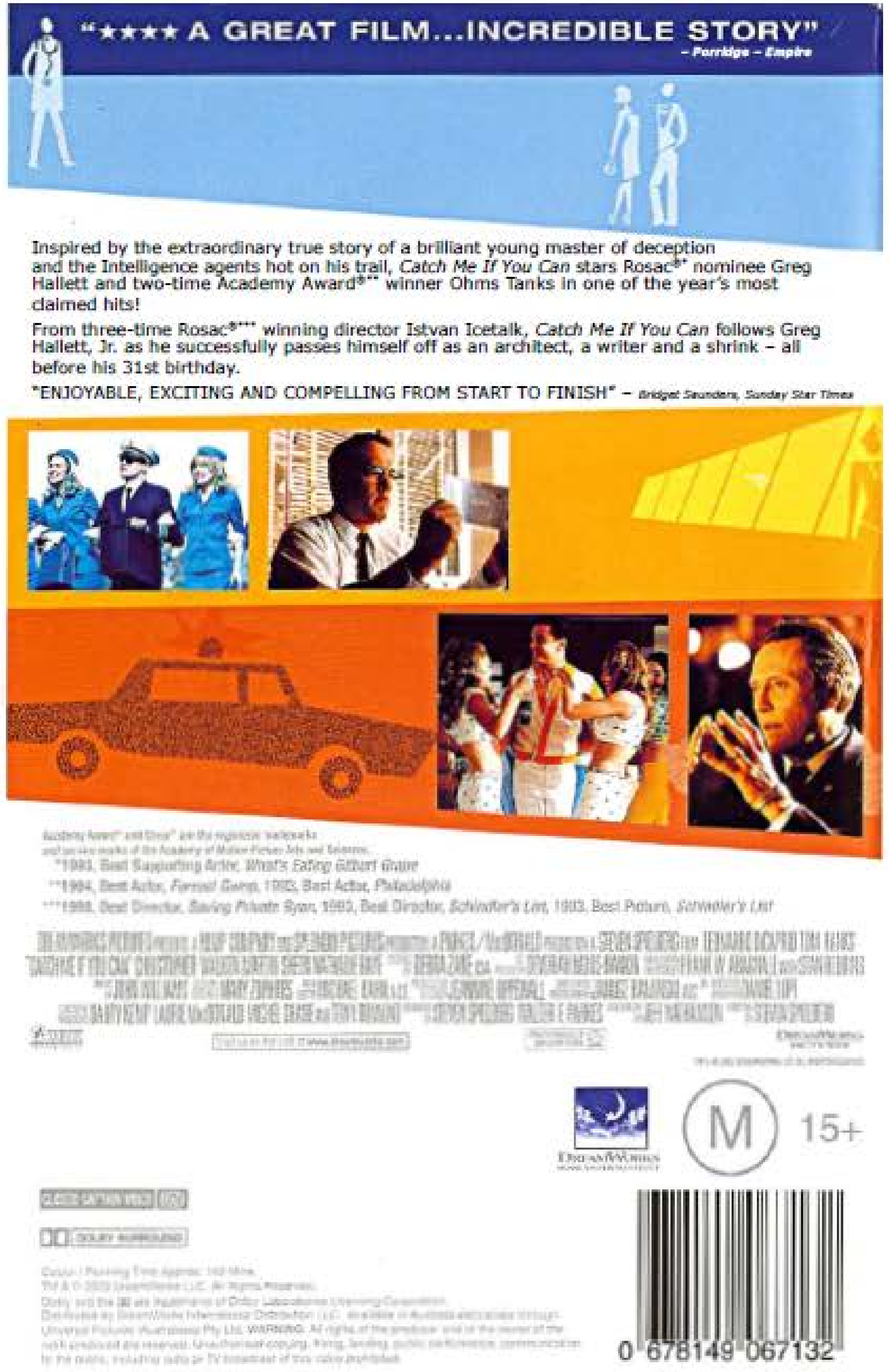
"★★★★ A GREAT FILM...INCREDIBLE STORY" – Porridge – Empire

Inspired by the extraordinary true story of a brilliant young master of deception and the Intelligence agents hot on his trail, *Catch Me If You Can* stars Rosac®* nominee Greg Hallett and two-time Academy Award®** winner Ohms Tanks in one of the year's most claimed hits!

From three-time Rosac®*** winning director Istvan Icetalk, *Catch Me If You Can* follows Greg Hallett, Jr. as he successfully passes himself off as an architect, a writer and a shrink – all before his 31st birthday.

"ENJOYABLE, EXCITING AND COMPELLING FROM START TO FINISH" – *Bridget Saunders, Sunday Star Times*

*1993, Best Supporting Actor, *What's Eating Gilbert Grape*
**1994, Best Actor, *Forrest Gump*, 1993, Best Actor, *Philadelphia*
***1998, Best Director, *Saving Private Ryan*, 1993, Best Director, *Schindler's List*, 1993, Best Picture, *Schindler's List*

DreamWorks
M 15+
0 678149 067132

The Serious Fraud Office Plan a Visit

On Wednesday 25 February 2009, I was mucking around with this 'catch me if you can' video cover, took a scan and replaced Frank Abagnale Jr.'s details with my own. This included, "by the time he was 31, he was an architect, a whatever, and a shrink". I knew there were cameras in the lightbulbs in my house, they've had them since 1967, so I put the video on the dining table so that those spying on me could read it and get a laugh.

Those guys have no sense of humour and on Saturday 28 February 2009 one of my Intelligence contacts came around at 8.30 pm, unannounced. He said he had tried to call me on my landline and on my mobile, but he didn't get through, and there were no recorded missed calls, and nobody else was taking calls. So his calls were blocked.

He said: "The Serious Fraud Office are looking at you. They are querying whether or not your degree is legitimate. They will come to you as uniformed police officers and won't declare they are SFO. You just tell them that this is above their station, outside their powers, and ask them to put you in contact with their director – Peter Parsons."

God, SFO, I laughed, so I told him what had happened then showed him my degree. It's sitting on top of a cool-as rusty-as cabinet collected off a dead freemason (to which I had added industrial wheels), and leaning against the wall, by the lightswitch, in the office, and 90° to the lightswitch, guys. I guess your cameras can't see that spot.

I also mentioned to my Intelligence contact that the Chancellor of the University of Auckland was Hugh Fletcher (2004–08) who I had named as a bisexual organising child sex abuser, CIA asset, Mossad agent, contract killer of Michael King and his brother was an alcoholic who wore nappies, and separated as soon as his wife, Christine, finished being the Mayor of Auckland – all in my previous book, *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide*.

Shit, intelligence work is funny, especially when you collect all the details.

UNIVERSITY OF AUCKLAND
BACHELOR OF ARCHITECTURE
CERTIFICATE

My Intelligence Officer went on to say: "CIBO's restauranteur Phillip David Sturm (b. 1958) who was convicted of drugging and burning boys on the way home from work in 2008, was a relative of Chas Sturt, the incestuous paedophile in charge of the SFO. They were also both related to the British Royal Family when a pregnant woman was sent out to Fiji on remittance, which meant she had her expenses covered, but was shunned. She had the child and others and these became the parents of Phillip Sturm and Chas Sturt. 'Sturm'/ 'Sturt' have one letter changed."

Chas Sturt was the youngest cop to head the police Armed Offenders Squad (which he touted as the Armed Defenders Squad). He got a law degree, made it to Detective Inspector, and expected to go right to the top of the Police, but he didn't have it, and they didn't want him, so he was side-stepped to the Serious Fraud Office, where he could do less damage as an incestous paedophile of the British Royal Family.

Described as a colourful character, he was always seeking the limelight. Chas Sturt became the founding director (1990–97) and turned the SFO into a serious fraud as soon as he became its director, which was straight away.

The police Armed Offenders Squad is a fraud that attacks blue collar people and ignores white collar crime.

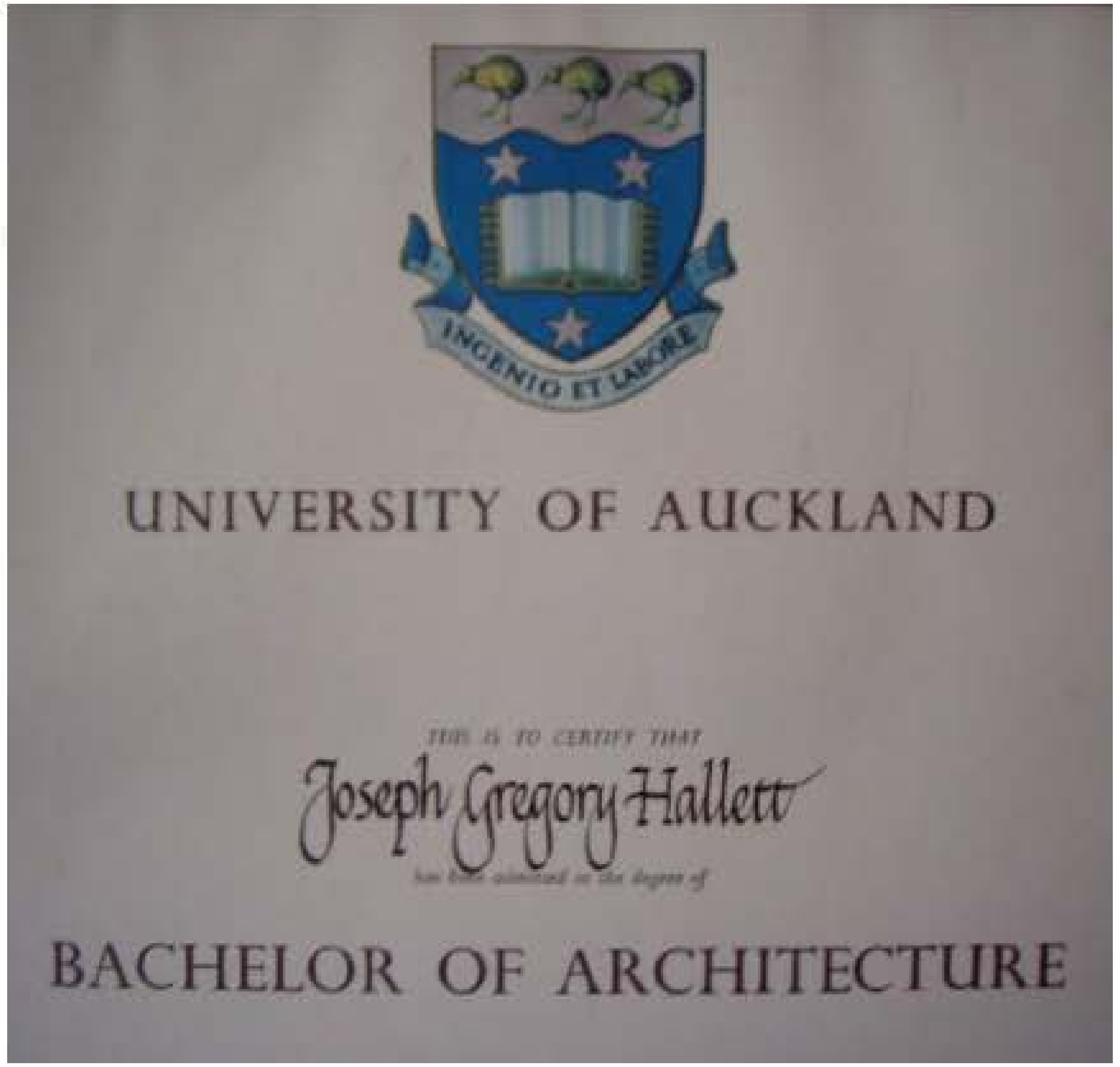

INGENIO ET LABORE

UNIVERSITY OF AUCKLAND

THIS IS TO CERTIFY THAT

Joseph Gregory Hallett

has been admitted to the degree of

BACHELOR OF ARCHITECTURE

The reason the SFO are taking any excuse to have an interest in me, is that Peter Williams QC, who I've charged with "slavery", has been named as Mr Asia's righthand man.

Peter Williams QC has been protecting his reputation for decades. He would even pay some of the £2 million he received from the Mr Asia gang, back to the Queen of England in order to secure elevation to Queen's Counsel status – thus getting the Queen's protection. This is a desperate move for Peter as he is well known for being extremely tight with his money and uses non-payment to maintain control of people – typical of bisexuals desperate to bond.

"Over a beer, [Chas] Sturt once said the only time he'd felt fear was when pointing a gun at Mr Asia, drugs boss Peter Fulcher."[1]

Serious Fraud Office Director Chas Sturt "quietly closed files and investigations", "claimed a lack of jurisdiction to investigate", "passed cases to another enforcement agency where it was also likely to be closed down", and "dropped charges", "citing public interest". "During the Winebox Inquiry Michael Fay and David Richwhite exerted pressure on Chas Sturt", no doubt citing his 'Paedophilia in the Pacific', not discounting the affidavit I have from his daughter's boyfriend alluding to incest, and "when it came to his turn to give evidence, Sturt denied the claim" and failed to produce the required evidence.

"But the dirt stuck" and "Sturt quit in a blaze of notoriety".[2]

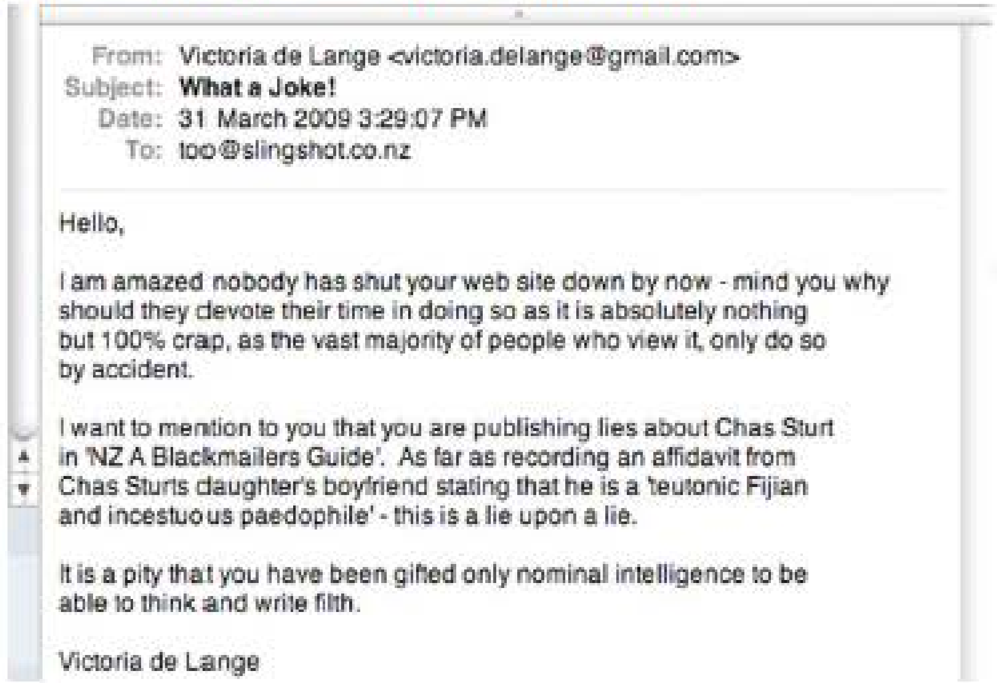

From: Victoria de Lange <victoria.delange@gmail.com>
Subject: **What a Joke!**
Date: 31 March 2009 3:29:07 PM
To: too@slingshot.co.nz

Hello,

I am amazed nobody has shut your web site down by now - mind you why should they devote their time in doing so as it is absolutely nothing but 100% crap, as the vast majority of people who view it, only do so by accident.

I want to mention to you that you are publishing lies about Chas Sturt in 'NZ A Blackmailers Guide'. As far as recording an affidavit from Chas Sturts daughter's boyfriend stating that he is a 'teutonic Fijian and incestuous paedophile' - this is a lie upon a lie.

It is a pity that you have been gifted only nominal intelligence to be able to think and write filth.

Victoria de Lange

Spymaster: "Chas Sturt was having a mental breakdown. Sometimes when people have mental breakdowns they have malapropism where they introduce a new letter in front of a word. In Chas Sturt's case, he introduced a whole new word.

"Sturt brought a chicken into the SFO office and said to his staff:

'If you can't stand the heat, get out of the chicken'.

"This was relayed to me by one of his staff who swore me to secrecy. Later, during the Winebox Inquiry, around 1998/99, the SFO took me to one side and asked me how I knew about 'THE CHICKEN STORY'.

"She reckoned it was a sign Chas Sturt was coming unstuck at the seams. At the time it was the most important secret the SFO had. The woman's idea of 'Top Secret' was keeping secret the name of the latest person she was rooting. I don't think she even comprehened any other information, but any other information was free."

"SFO Abstract: The discovery of a serious fraud problem in New Zealand is very recent. Prior to the 1980s, there had been only three prosecutions for serious fraud in the history of the country, and penalties for those convicted were small. But a corporate boom in the 1980s, followed by the sharemarket crash of 1987, revealed extensive serious fraud. **Initial attempts to combat the problem through the Commercial Affairs division of the Department of Justice failed.** But in 1990 a Serious Fraud Office was established, with powers greater than those ever given before to a New Zealand law-enforcement agency. Three years later, the SFO had been notified of possible frauds totalling $2.5 billion. This represents many times what is reported stolen in all other property crime, but the SFO budget is only 1% of that devoted to ordinary policing.

"Since 1990, only one prosecution out of the seventeen completed has failed. Prison sentences of up to seven years and averaging almost four years, have been awarded. As the SFO nears the end of its third year, and its net gradually widens, its influence on illegal business activity continues to grow."[3]

I used to play golf with the Serious Fraud Office during the time Chas Sturt was director, and the staff were always complaining that they built up files on people and were ready to charge, then they would be swished to other cases, the case would be dropped, and most were not even charged. The staff spent all their time getting up to speed on cases, but not sinking the eight ball. This was the case time and time again, and it began to interfer with their golf, their marriage, and their outlook on life.

Perhaps the golf bags were bugged, because during this time, Chas Sturt was removed. I have little doubt that Chas Sturt either took bribes, or was bribed himself.

When the Founding Director of the Serious Fraud Office is found to be an illegitimate British Royal incestuous paeodphile, there is little hope of conviction.

I had finished writing all this up by 11.20 am on Sunday morning 1 March 2009 and was working on the second half of Attachment "Z5", 'The CIA's Protection Racket for MOE Paedophiles' about former Minister of Police John Banks and his paedophile drug dealing buddies, in *Word* . . . when the phone rang at 2.54 pm.

There was no one on the other end, but I could hear a meeting going on. From the acoustics I could tell that one guy was up the front talking and the rest were sitting around in chairs listening. They guy up the front was talking about "'visiting . . . him . . . he's very devious, you have to stick to the programme. He'll try and distract you."

Read: 'Charming'.

The officers didn't seem that interested. Read: 'Even the SFO officers and the Armed Offenders Squad think I'm a nice guy'.

Moments prior to this briefing, the Commanding Officer of this Serious Fraud Office/Armed Offenders unit had given out my phone number and most of the officers installed it into their mobile phone from where they can listen into my calls. One of the SFO inserted my number, saved it, then pushed dial. So I got a rather muffled preview of the meeting.

I don't want to give out his phone number, because he might be my help from the inside – my former SFO golfing buddy's golfing partner maybe. Anyway at 4.11 pm I saved it to my phone under "Sfo". Now we'll see what happens.

---

[1] Jean McManus, *Sunday Star Times*, 'To catch a white collar thief', 11 January 2008. Some of the inside crims blame Peter Fulcher for 90 % of the Mr Asia murders which numbered 12 to 40.

[2] Jean McManus, *Sunday Star Times*, 'To catch a white collar thief', 11 January 2008.

[3] Greg Newbold (Sociology Department, University of Canterbury, Christchurch) and Robert Ivory (Department of Accounting and Valuation, Lincoln University, Christchurch, New Zealand): Adapted from a paper presented at the 44th annual meeting of the American Society of Criminology, New Orleans, 4–7 November 1992.

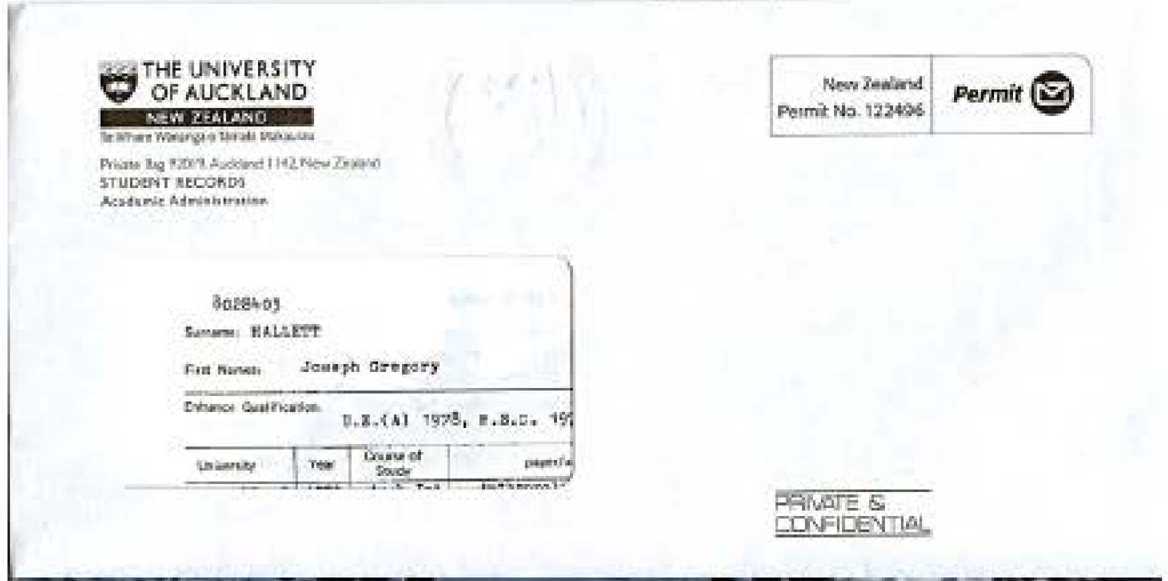

THE UNIVERSITY OF AUCKLAND
NEW ZEALAND

Private Bag 92019, Auckland 1142, New Zealand
STUDENT RECORDS
Academic Administration

New Zealand
Permit No. 122496
Permit

8028403
Surname: HALLETT
First Names: Joseph Gregory
Entrance Qualification: U.E.(A) 1978, H.S.C. 19

University	Year	Course of Study	papers/

PRIVATE & CONFIDENTIAL

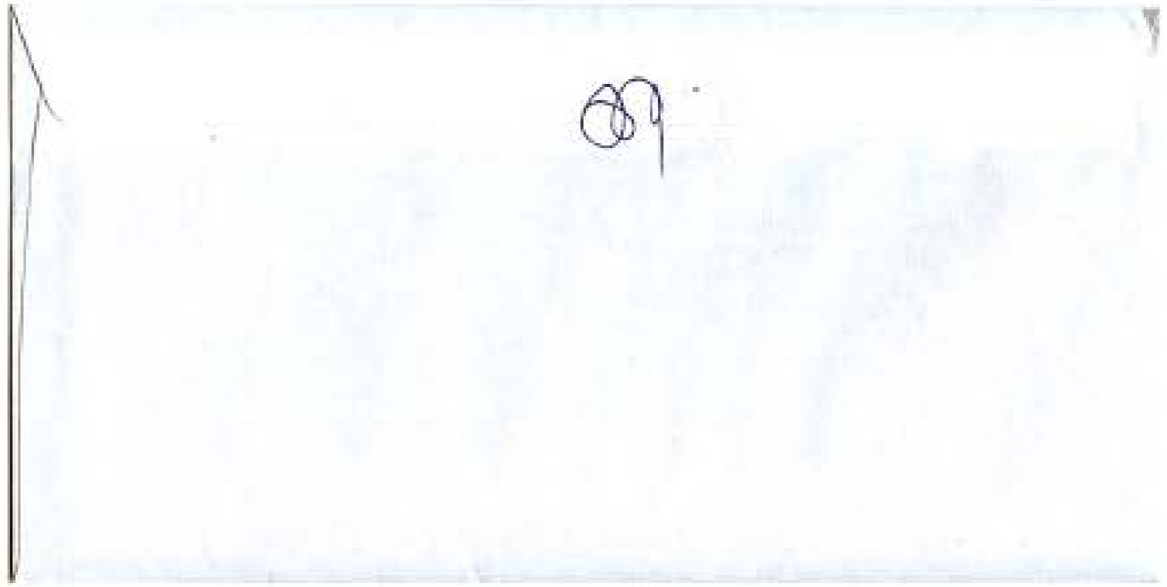

They think I have faked my degree. So to avoid them busting in on false pretences, I got a certified copy of my degree, certified by the University of Auckland, grabbed a legal envelope, wrote SFO | AOS on the front, and stuck it to the front door. I have a certified copy of my degree handy because I had used it to apply for a Masters in History, but was rejected. I guess that writing one sociology book and five history books didn't help!

The next day, Monday 2 March 2009, by 2.30 pm, my mobile phone was stolen. It was the only record of the number that called. Then, in the evening, the Spymaster called: "Sunday meetings are rare. They only have Sunday meetings if there is huge pressure to get the target. I've only ever heard of it happening once. It also means it's an interdisciplinary outfit are trying to take you down. The call to you means someone in SFO wants to take the group down. You can lessen it by ringing them all up at a high level. The National Party is behind it. Labour is dirty, National is just as dirty. They will scratch each others arses at the drop of a hat."

And two weeks later (17 March 2009) like the internal workings of a clock counting backwards, the *New Zealand Herald* published this article for my benefit, no doubt with SFO and multidisciplinary input:

> "Prime Minister John Key has asked the Security Intelligence Service to put on ice any active files it has on MPs after a report found they should be treated as a special case. Mr Key requested a report by the Inspector General of Intelligence and Security [Justice] Paul Neazor after Green MP Keith Locke discovered a file the SIS had on him since he was a child had been updated since he became an MP in 1999.
>
> Justice Neazor said as a general rule, he believed MPs should be excluded from SIS surveillance because of their jobs and standing. The law required the SIS to be politically neutral, but monitoring of MPs could amount to political interference or inhibit them from doing their proper jobs.
>
> Mr Key said he had written to SIS head Warren Tucker 'inviting' him to take up the recommendations. He had also asked the Speaker to begin considering it and would ask Justice Neazor to do a follow-up report in about six months.
>
> Green MP Keith Locke said he was pleased with the finding and hoped it would stop the SIS 'spying' on MPs. 'MPs must be free to criticise the government of the day without being viewed as a security risk, as was the case with me.' He said the party was happy to consider measures for 'exceptional' cases where MPs were

> involved in security issues if there were genuine reasons for it. He also called for a wider inquiry into why the SIS had so many files on 'legitimate dissenters'.
>
> In explaining his findings, Justice Neazor said it was relevant that MPs were elected to serve the public interest and swore an oath of allegiance. There was also the possibility a constituent could try to involve an MP in such activity and care had to be taken not to give constituents any immunity from scrutiny. He said any new process should still allow the SIS to include information on dealings with MPs that other people under its watch had. Justice Neazor's report looked at the adequacy and appropriateness of SIS policies on keeping files on people. Overall, he said the SIS had suitable processes for opening a file and collecting information. However, more thought should be given to limiting the kinds of information it kept.
>
> Of Mr Locke's file, Justice Neazor said his belief that the SIS had added to its file because of his critical stance on intelligence agencies was partly supported by a note on one of the papers in Mr Locke's file which 'was certainly unprofessional and ought not to have appeared on a file of a neutral intelligence agency'.
>
> * Recommendations
>
> 'Deactivate' files of any person who becomes an MP.
>
> Require the SIS to get Speaker's [of the House] permission to put any MP under surveillance.
>
> SIS must show good grounds for believing the MP is involved in activities which endanger security. [currently this is 'backs to the wall here comes' Dr Lockwood Smith]
>
> Limit the information the SIS can keep on any other person's dealings with an MP."[4]

Well, I certainly have criticisms of this.

Intelligence Failures amount to Counter-Intelligence

First I would like to say that I was asked to be an MP in 2002 and the SIS has had a file on me from this year, and probably prior due to my long history of Intelligence contacts dating back to 1967 when I (6 years old) had a barbeque lunch at Porridge's house in the Kaipara after the shearing had finished. Porridge, Sir Arthur Espie Porrit had been King George VI's doctor and Queen Elizabeth II's sergeant-surgeon and became the Governor-General (1967–72) and had introduced me to Queen Elizabeth II's brother who resided in Rotorua and grew up for part of his time with Peter Tapsell who became Speaker of the House (1993–96) and while he was in this 'Intelligence' position started up the 'Monarchist League of New Zealand' and has remained Patron, despite also being NZ Patron of the Moonies.

But this ain't about me, its about the Green MP Keith Locke, the son of diehard commies and still being engineered and run by comintern agents – the results of his efforts showing him to be a comintern asset himself (Communist International). So let's look at the Keith Locke instigated Prime Minister John Key "Recommendations" to the Inspector General of Intelligence and Security Justice Paul Neazor and see if the horse has bolted . . .

1. "Deactivate files of any person who becomes an MP"

This means that any double agent, any New Zealander working for a foreign government or financial entity, will flock to be an MP, just as the comintern asset Keith Locke has, and just as 'the horse has bolted' Margaret Wilson and Helen Clark have.

This is already standard practise for paedophiles, as the Police will not charge a paedophile if they are an MP. Rather the Police will allow paedophiles to keep becoming MPs as is the case with Sir Roger Douglas, an MP from 1978 to 1990, and again from November 2008.

---

[4] Claire Trevett, 'Key calls on SIS to shelve files on MPs', *New Zealand Herald*, 17 March 2009, bold added.

2. "Require the SIS to get the permission of the Speaker of the House's to put any MP under surveillance"

In the last government (Labour, 1999–2008) the Speaker of the House of Parliament was the comintern agent Margaret Wilson and she tried to launch a nuclear strike on New Zealand with her fellow comintern agent Helen Clark (PM 1999–2008). The SIS did assist the Americans in preventing a nuclear strike during these NZ Trawler Wars (1980–86), but failed to tell the public for 25 years (from 1982 to 2007) and this allowed Vladimir Putin to live in Wellington (1980–82); and the Putin-run comintern KGB agent and former St Petersburg prostitute Helen Clark to become Prime Minister and the Minister of the SIS.

Really now, in history we call this an outlandish joke – an Intelligence joke – a Counter-Intelligence joke – a Counter-Intelligence success story . . . and a complete Intelligence failure.

3. "SIS must show good grounds for believing the MP is involved in activities which endanger security"

Then they will do nothing until the horse has bolted. Why? Because there are two types of Intelligence – 'Intelligence' and 'Counter-Intelligence' and no Intelligence agent has been employed on a salary since 1984. All salaried Intelligence agents are now working for Counter-Intelligence, and this includes the Inspector General of Intelligence and Security Justice Paul Neazor, the SIS head Warren Tucker, and to varying degree the three Bobs.

4. "Limit the information the SIS can keep on any other person's dealings with an MP"

This is formula for double agent MPs fronting for a crime syndicate. The mischling Jewishness of PM John Key is now under question as an influence in compromising the integrity of the country. Still it would be hard to do as bad as Helen Clark, Margaret Wilson and Sian Elias, except that the Chief Justice Sian Elias MJ (Michling Jewess) is still in power, and has not yet been charged by the SIS for her contract killings and attempted murders. She only lives 100 metres from John Key so it's not exactly a big task.

Surely 'Intelligence' information is "legitimate dissent", but . . . anyone who isn't a double agent, but is informed, has the SIS, the SFO, and the AOS on their doorstep – unless they can prove their degree is not a fraud, and it is 'The Government' who are the government fakes – as in citizens paying taxes for their own Intelligence demise.

Too little too late, and in the wrong direction – that's New Zealand.
This is the true story of government fakes.

Readings from the Kremlin Bathtub

Sorry to bore you with these ongoing apparent and rather good endings, but stuff keeps happening, and as an author, I'm compelled to record them as they happen so you know what's going on live at an everyday level. This ain't 'Lord of the Rings' or 'Bored of the Rings', but an information sharing exercise with analysis, expertise and a whole lot of serendipity thrown in.

Straight after finishing this chapter, like before I had finished my outside smoke, I got this email from someone whose email signature and address I didn't recognise . . .

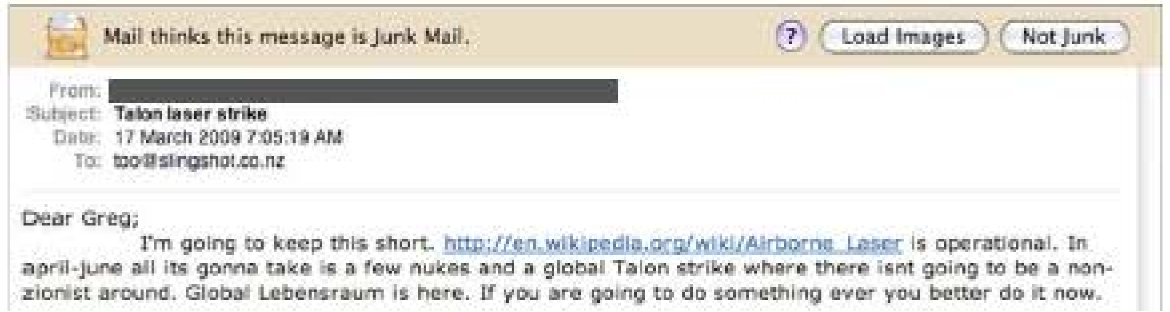

From: [redacted]
Subject: Talon laser strike
Date: 17 March 2009 7:05:19 AM
To: too@slingshot.co.nz

Dear Greg;

I'm going to keep this short. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Airborne_Laser is operational. In april-june all its gonna take is a few nukes and a global Talon strike where there isnt going to be a non-zionist around. Global Lebensraum is here. If you are going to do something ever you better do it now.

What scared me about this was the timing. I was just finishing the book. Having organised all the files the previous day and now tidying up all the loose files, and I'd just gone through all the Antarctica information (40 pages) routing out the Chris Beeby and Sir Peter Blake murders, and I was pondering whether to go large or small. This email prompted me to go small and print early [it'll never happen].

Also pertinent was the "Boeing YAL-1 Airborne Laser (ABL) weapons" attached to the email as my hairdresser (below) from Sevastopol in southern Russia (Ukraine) had asked me about her Russian sailor husband's death on the ship *Moscow*. He was a hit by laser from space. Two died on the ship, and of undeclared means. There's your serendipity and the fear to publish soon. I had planed to finish in three days anyway [more like 12 months].

Spymaster, March 2009: "A similar thing was used in South Vietnam on the Ho Chi Minh Trail in 1969 on the standard combat battalion of the North Vietnamese. They had crossed the southern line and turned their collar badges upside down from blue on red, to red on blue, to look like the South Vietnamese Army. The survivors had big chunks out of their arms and legs that had been quarterised instantly. It looked like a hot icecream scoop had been applied to their flesh. They called this 'The Death Ray'."

Most of our information was presented in Moscow (January–March 2009), including my drunken ravings at the local bar, Easy Tiger, and the report had just come back: "Hundred per cent. He knows. So what."

Spymaster, November 2009: "In July 2009, the 2-IC of Intelligence in the Kremlin was reading your book, *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide* in the bathtub. He laughed himself out of the bath. Security thought he was doing a Stalin [dying] so they burst in.
Kremlin 2-IC: 'Have you got any more books by Mr Hallett?'
Security: 'Another four have just arrived in the basement'.
Kremlin 2-IC: 'I want you to translate fifty copies of Mr Hallett's books [into Russian] and hand them around the Kremlin'."

Irena (hairdresser to the Playboy girls) and Mr Hallett.

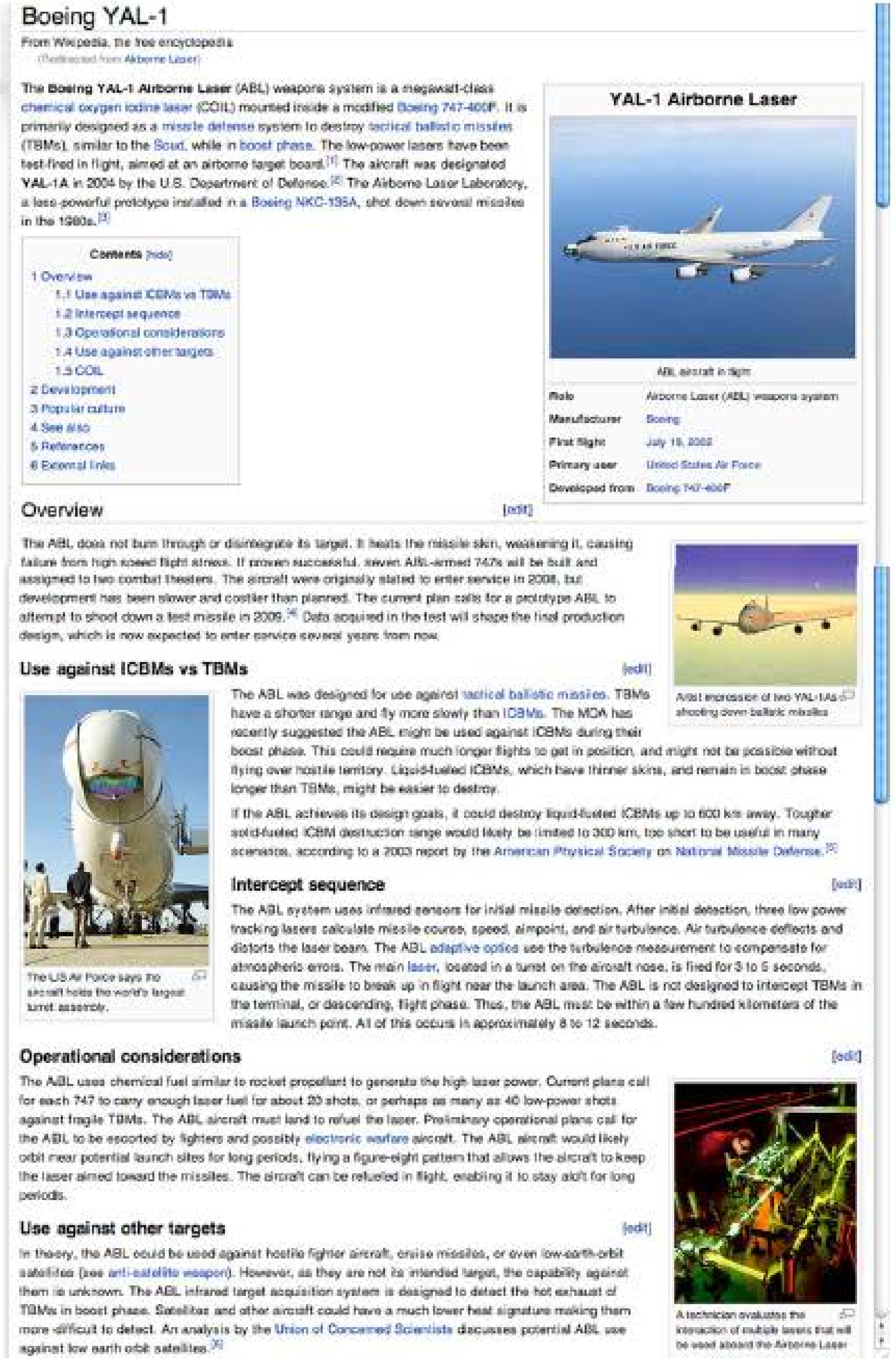

Boeing YAL-1

From Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia
(Redirected from Airborne Laser)

The **Boeing YAL-1 Airborne Laser** (ABL) weapons system is a megawatt-class chemical oxygen iodine laser (COIL) mounted inside a modified Boeing 747-400F. It is primarily designed as a missile defense system to destroy tactical ballistic missiles (TBMs), similar to the Scud, while in boost phase. The low-power lasers have been test-fired in flight, aimed at an airborne target board.[1] The aircraft was designated **YAL-1A** in 2004 by the U.S. Department of Defense.[2] The Airborne Laser Laboratory, a less-powerful prototype installed in a Boeing NKC-135A, shot down several missiles in the 1980s.[3]

Contents [hide]

- 1 Overview
  - 1.1 Use against ICBMs vs TBMs
  - 1.2 Intercept sequence
  - 1.3 Operational considerations
  - 1.4 Use against other targets
  - 1.5 COIL
- 2 Development
- 3 Popular culture
- 4 See also
- 5 References
- 6 External links

YAL-1 Airborne Laser

ABL aircraft in flight

Role	Airborne Laser (ABL) weapons system
Manufacturer	Boeing
First flight	July 18, 2002
Primary user	United States Air Force
Developed from	Boeing 747-400F

Overview [edit]

The ABL does not burn through or disintegrate its target. It heats the missile skin, weakening it, causing failure from high speed flight stress. If proven successful, seven ABL-armed 747s will be built and assigned to two combat theaters. The aircraft were originally slated to enter service in 2008, but development has been slower and costlier than planned. The current plan calls for a prototype ABL to attempt to shoot down a test missile in 2009.[4] Data acquired in the test will shape the final production design, which is now expected to enter service several years from now.

Artist impression of two YAL-1As shooting down ballistic missiles

Use against ICBMs vs TBMs [edit]

The ABL was designed for use against tactical ballistic missiles. TBMs have a shorter range and fly more slowly than ICBMs. The MDA has recently suggested the ABL might be used against ICBMs during their boost phase. This could require much longer flights to get in position, and might not be possible without flying over hostile territory. Liquid-fueled ICBMs, which have thinner skins, and remain in boost phase longer than TBMs, might be easier to destroy.

If the ABL achieves its design goals, it could destroy liquid-fueled ICBMs up to 600 km away. Tougher solid-fueled ICBM destruction range would likely be limited to 300 km, too short to be useful in many scenarios, according to a 2003 report by the American Physical Society on National Missile Defense.[5]

The US Air Force says the aircraft holds the world's largest turret assembly.

Intercept sequence [edit]

The ABL system uses infrared sensors for initial missile detection. After initial detection, three low power tracking lasers calculate missile course, speed, aimpoint, and air turbulence. Air turbulence deflects and distorts the laser beam. The ABL adaptive optics use the turbulence measurement to compensate for atmospheric errors. The main laser, located in a turret on the aircraft nose, is fired for 3 to 5 seconds, causing the missile to break up in flight near the launch area. The ABL is not designed to intercept TBMs in the terminal, or descending, flight phase. Thus, the ABL must be within a few hundred kilometers of the missile launch point. All of this occurs in approximately 8 to 12 seconds.

Operational considerations [edit]

The ABL uses chemical fuel similar to rocket propellant to generate the high laser power. Current plans call for each 747 to carry enough laser fuel for about 20 shots, or perhaps as many as 40 low-power shots against fragile TBMs. The ABL aircraft must land to refuel the laser. Preliminary operational plans call for the ABL to be escorted by fighters and possibly electronic warfare aircraft. The ABL aircraft would likely orbit near potential launch sites for long periods, flying a figure-eight pattern that allows the aircraft to keep the laser aimed toward the missiles. The aircraft can be refueled in flight, enabling it to stay aloft for long periods.

Use against other targets [edit]

In theory, the ABL could be used against hostile fighter aircraft, cruise missiles, or even low-earth-orbit satellites (see anti-satellite weapon). However, as they are not its intended target, the capability against them is unknown. The ABL infrared target acquisition system is designed to detect the hot exhaust of TBMs in boost phase. Satellites and other aircraft could have a much lower heat signature making them more difficult to detect. An analysis by the Union of Concerned Scientists discusses potential ABL use against low earth orbit satellites.[6]

A technician evaluates the interaction of multiple lasers that will be used aboard the Airborne Laser

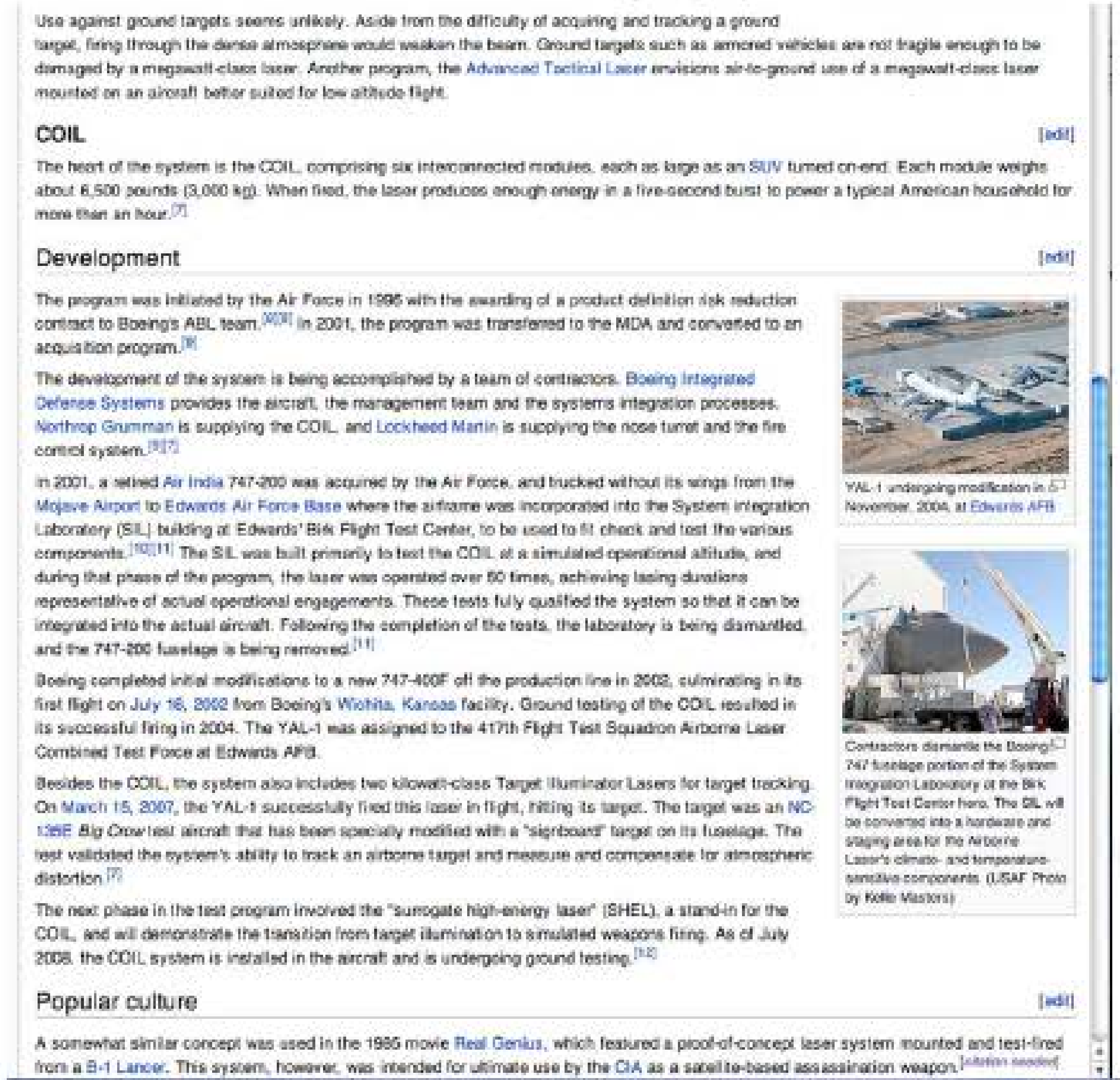

Use against ground targets seems unlikely. Aside from the difficulty of acquiring and tracking a ground target, firing through the dense atmosphere would weaken the beam. Ground targets such as armored vehicles are not fragile enough to be damaged by a megawatt-class laser. Another program, the Advanced Tactical Laser envisions air-to-ground use of a megawatt-class laser mounted on an aircraft better suited for low altitude flight.

COIL [edit]

The heart of the system is the COIL, comprising six interconnected modules, each as large as an SUV turned on-end. Each module weighs about 6,500 pounds (3,000 kg). When fired, the laser produces enough energy in a five-second burst to power a typical American household for more than an hour.[7]

Development [edit]

The program was initiated by the Air Force in 1996 with the awarding of a product definition risk reduction contract to Boeing's ABL team.[8][9] In 2001, the program was transferred to the MDA and converted to an acquisition program.[9]

The development of the system is being accomplished by a team of contractors. Boeing Integrated Defense Systems provides the aircraft, the management team and the systems integration processes. Northrop Grumman is supplying the COIL, and Lockheed Martin is supplying the nose turret and the fire control system.[8][7]

In 2001, a retired Air India 747-200 was acquired by the Air Force, and trucked without its wings from the Mojave Airport to Edwards Air Force Base where the airframe was incorporated into the System Integration Laboratory (SIL) building at Edwards' Birk Flight Test Center, to be used to fit check and test the various components.[10][11] The SIL was built primarily to test the COIL at a simulated operational altitude, and during that phase of the program, the laser was operated over 50 times, achieving lasing durations representative of actual operational engagements. These tests fully qualified the system so that it can be integrated into the actual aircraft. Following the completion of the tests, the laboratory is being dismantled, and the 747-200 fuselage is being removed.[11]

Boeing completed initial modifications to a new 747-400F off the production line in 2002, culminating in its first flight on July 18, 2002 from Boeing's Wichita, Kansas facility. Ground testing of the COIL resulted in its successful firing in 2004. The YAL-1 was assigned to the 417th Flight Test Squadron Airborne Laser Combined Test Force at Edwards AFB.

Besides the COIL, the system also includes two kilowatt-class Target Illuminator Lasers for target tracking. On March 15, 2007, the YAL-1 successfully fired this laser in flight, hitting its target. The target was an NC-135E *Big Crow* test aircraft that has been specially modified with a "signboard" target on its fuselage. The test validated the system's ability to track an airborne target and measure and compensate for atmospheric distortion.[7]

The next phase in the test program involved the "surrogate high-energy laser" (SHEL), a stand-in for the COIL, and will demonstrate the transition from target illumination to simulated weapons firing. As of July 2008, the COIL system is installed in the aircraft and is undergoing ground testing.[12]

YAL-1 undergoing modification in November, 2004, at Edwards AFB

Contractors dismantle the Boeing 747 fuselage portion of the System Integration Laboratory at the Birk Flight Test Center here. The SIL will be converted into a hardware and staging area for the Airborne Laser's climate- and temperature-sensitive components. (USAF Photo by Kellie Masters)

Popular culture [edit]

A somewhat similar concept was used in the 1985 movie Real Genius, which featured a proof-of-concept laser system mounted and test-fired from a B-1 Lancer. This system, however, was intended for ultimate use by the CIA as a satellite-based assassination weapon.[citation needed]

Welcome to my backyard.

Being a lawyer – It ain't that hard – Boiler-plating

Police boiler-plating covers all aspects of the target's life – their business, their driver licence, vehicle engine implosion (rather than explosion which is news worthy), access to their children, thefts of driver licence and visa cards within the house, contrary gossip (bagging), poisonings, murder attempts, ensuring court cases result in no payment whether the case is won or lost, and harrassing employees.

This story is about the later.

I tend to employ people who are deontic – that is, their values are instilled in them no matter the situation. When you're a working creative, you don't want all the other stuff going on.

My friends also tend to be deontic, but I didn't know what the word meant until the morning of the hearing.

So I was employing this young graduate architect, Anaru Coburn, who was a virtual genius on the drawing programmes. We called it 6-D – 3-D plus light and sound and motion and that's how we were presenting to clients – buildings in virtual reality video.

Anaru (nickname 'Anapu' from a kid) is a stockily built Maori guy (23). The police are rascist towards Maori, especially the Michling-Maori Police (MMP).

So Anapu's working for me and he goes out with his mates to the viaduct in Auckland City one Saturday night in 2008.

The Usual Police Stitch-ups

There's a fracus from another group and Anapu stops to observe some distance away. The rest of his friends carry on.

The Police layer their stitch-ups. Their goal is to get as many heterosexual males in the paddywagon as possible.

This is a hangover from having the lesbian Helen Clark as Prime Minister. She hates heterosexual males and had her KGB partner Margaret Wilson made Attorney-General so she could influence the Police into these stitch-ups.

It's called 'Politically Correct Training' – read 'Anti-Heterosexual Training'. It came about as a copy of the UK's retraining of the Metropolitian Police (1 April 1995–) into a 15-year long April Fool's joke.

Bad joke!

So this woman, who was probably a police plant, smashed a bottle on the ground. She was then placed inside the police paddywagon with the back doors left open (only for a female). A bunch of guys then milled around and said: 'What are you doing locking her up for?" More police came and started arresting the guys. Amidst the distraction, the female plant escapes and all the guys are then locked up – which was the police goal in the first place.

Anapu's standing there watching. Police officer (W156) comes up to him and says: 'Did you see what happened?'

Anapu: 'Yes'.

Police Officer Simon Walker W156: 'Well wait here'.

So Anapu waits. Everyone's put in the police paddywagon then Police Officer 2 comes along and arrests Anapu – the observer/ witness – and puts him in the paddywagon with the other guys – whom he's never met – and spends the night in the cells.

Police Officer 2 doesn't give his name or number.

The female is nowhere to be seen and was probably brought up from Hamilton as part of Police training and as a bloodrush precursor to one of their gang-bangs.

The Usual Judicial Confusion

The judiciary couldn't organise a piss up in a brewery. Or put more accurately – the Courts can't settle a debt. They work on net fishing and hope to eat 80 % of their catch every day.

To add to the confusion, the judiciary place charges against witnesses to stop them interferring with the police stitch-ups of the others, keep changing the case numbers, send innumberable letters from different organisations, and make defending oneself more laborous than admitting guilt (true or false) and paying the fine or doing the sentence.

This means, as soon as your pinged, you're effectively guilty no matter what.

The Police call this 'fingering' and back it up with 'verballing' which is lying and framing evidence around the target.

For a working creative, court is a real distraction. It can take the focus off your work and Architecture work is really intense and requires full focus.

With the addition of a young child, this has the potential to break someone, to make them unemployable, or so exhaust them they have a car accident.

In Anapu's case, it was a minor car accident and being ripped off by his other employers (Kererū, Hemiphaga novaeseelandiae, wood pigeons).

Maori Stats and Police Corruption

By the age of 18, 80 % of Maori males have been before the courts.

Of the children of Maori single-parent families, only 25 % break the pattern and breed into a two-parent family.

Guillaume Boglio - gboglio@yahoo.fr

Unlike 80 % of Maori, Anapu had never been to court before.

But like 99 % of the population (except for the sons of lawyers) he didn't understand what the court and police paperwork meant, what the charges meant, and why there were any charges at all.

What happens to the many Maori cousins spreads fear, resignation and hopelessness throughout the Maori race.

Anaru was a witness and deontic, which meant he had difficulty understanding and appreciating the deviousness of others – especially since the police are supposed to be respected authority figures.

More focussed on his architecture and his new baby son, he failed to make some of the many intermediary appearances which make proving innocence more expensive than admitting guilt.

Most importantly, there were four charges for "Obstructing" and "Resisting" in 2008 . . . and having missed four status hearings, there was now a warrant out for Coburn's arrest.

As usual, if the police can't convict on evidence, they try to convict on process. The police then make the process such a minefield, that they often get a conviction without the person even attending court.

In Anaru's case, he was guilty of witnessing a police stitch-up and the police needed to discredit him (or put the shits up him) so they could charge all the others without the hindrance of a witness exposing their fingering verballing stitch-up.

The police were doubly keen as they'd been to the gang-bang afterwards.

Late Starters

Anapu mentioned the case to me in May 2009 and I checked with the police. Conveniently for the police, Officer Simon Walker (W156) was serving in the Solomons, couldn't be contacted, didn't send a witness statement via messages, and wouldn't be back until September 2009 . . . so I note this.

Anapu then rings me up one Sunday night (24 May 2009) and says: "Can you please represent me. I know you'll do a good job. I'll be around in the morning around 8:30."

The traffic is thick over the Auckland Harbour Bridge, so he gets here to Parnell around 9.30. The call is at 10 am and the hearing at 11 am Monday 25 May 2009.

So I iron my shirt, put on my suit and tie, polish my shoes and write Anapu's affidavit.

My 16-year-old was having a late start at school and mentioned: "I'm studying ethics. I'm really enjoying it and I'm deontic."

Father: "What's deontic?"

16-year-old late-starter: "That's when your values are installed whatever the situation."

It was the first time I had heard of it, so I looked at Anapu, realised that's what he is, and put that in the four-page affidavit.

Fluffing in Court

We raced down to court and got there at 11 am – Courtroom 2. Normally we would lodge the affidavit with the Registrar in a separate room, but we didn't have time.

I'd never represented anyone in front of the bench before. Anapu was a brownskin (and me a little), so this short Maori female court staff came up and told us what to do, giving me a piece of paper to write my name as counsel, and representing my client – Anaru Coburn.

I was then ushered up to sit amongst the lawyers and face Judge Hubble.

Judge Hubble is one of the better judges in that he is classically trained.

I'd been before him four days prior on Thursday, and would be before him again on Wednesday, two days later – so I had three sittings infront of Judge Hubble in the same week. Going against me was that Judge Hubble had been friends with the mafia boss for three decades.

The 21 May 2009 hearing was against Jamie Lockett – one of Peter Williams QC's narcs.

The 25 May 2009 hearing was for Anaru James Coburn.

The 27 May 2009 hearing was against Peter Williams QC – the mafia boss and longtime friend of Judge Hubble.

So I guess the 25 May win was the piggy-in-the-middle.

Non-Mafia Result

We're called up. Anapu was placed in the dock with a police officer beside him who stood in the classic pre-fighting position with his hands clasped over his groin and his legs set astance. If you've ever seen a photo of this, it always makes the person standing next to them look guilty.

Amidst all this usual drama of presumed guilt, and made to look guilty, is some lawyer – in my case, non-lawyer – who comes along and presents a fine argument.

I made excuses for arriving late and requested to lodge the four-page affidavit. Judge Hubble accepted. The registrar walked over and received it, delivering it to Hubble. I allowed him time to read without speaking.

When his eyes looked up, I gave a brief explanation that Anaru James Coburn was the witness to the incident, the police officer W156 was serving in the Solomons, could not be directly contacted and would not be back until September, the defendant had been raised in a single-parent Maori family, where only 25 % make it out into a new social pattern, he had never been before the courts, he had just finished Architecture school at university, he was an excellent computer graphics technician, and was deontic.

Judge Hubble looked at Anaru Coburn and said: "Yes, I can see that he is not a criminal".

The police had shown that it was just a 'Status Hearing' to put the case back on track, not a 'Defended Hearing', and were showing "zero preparation" (according to the Registrar), so no police evidence was expected to be given on that day. It was to be adjourned for two to three months for a fixture until July 2009.

However it turned out to be a 'Defended Hearing' and the police stood up and did present an argument, but our affidavit and explanation held sway and the warrant for arrest was cancelled.

Judge Hubble offered me a Section 106. I didn't know what a Section 106 was, but it sounded good. Judge Hubble explained: "The results of a conviction would far outweigh the crime, and in this case, there appears to be none . . . I suggest you take it."

I'M A
TALKING
FISH

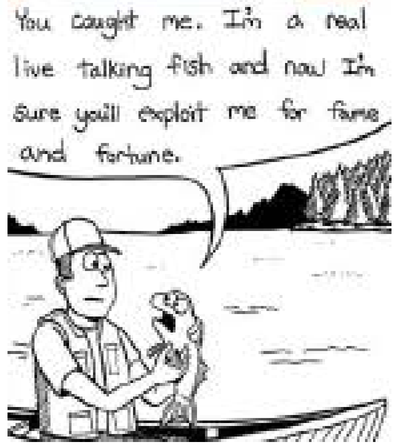

You caught me. I'm a real live talking fish and now I'm sure you'll exploit me for fame and fortune.

So I took the Section 106 and we were dismissed.

The little Maori female court staff then escorted us out of the courtroom (which isn't normal) and took us to a side office where she explained: "You boys did very well. A Section 106 is very rare. All the judges combined only give out one or two each year, and it can only be used once per person. It means that there is no record of the charge, no fine to pay, and no payment to a charity – which is normally $150 to $600.

"The second best option is 'Diversion' where there is a record, and payment is made to a charity in lieu of a fine."

So we left quite happy.

The normal lawyers fee for such a service was up to $5,000.

For payment, Anaru bought me some groceries on the way home, which is the way it should be. We were home by 12.15 pm laughing and eating which is the way it would be if the courts and police weren't such an occult mafia stitching people up, and stitching up groups of people so they could get off early for the gang-shag.

There are two schools of thought on me representing
a client as a lawyer"
One is that it is illegal to pass yourself off as a lawyer
and represent another in court,
and you can face some quite serious charges'
The other is that it's risky and naughty,
but done.

When I pass the Bar, it'll be in a boat
with the fish mouthing off:
°o°o °o catch me if you can °o°o °o

BUS LANE TICKET

How the Auckland City Council creates Crime to fund Paedophiles and Murder

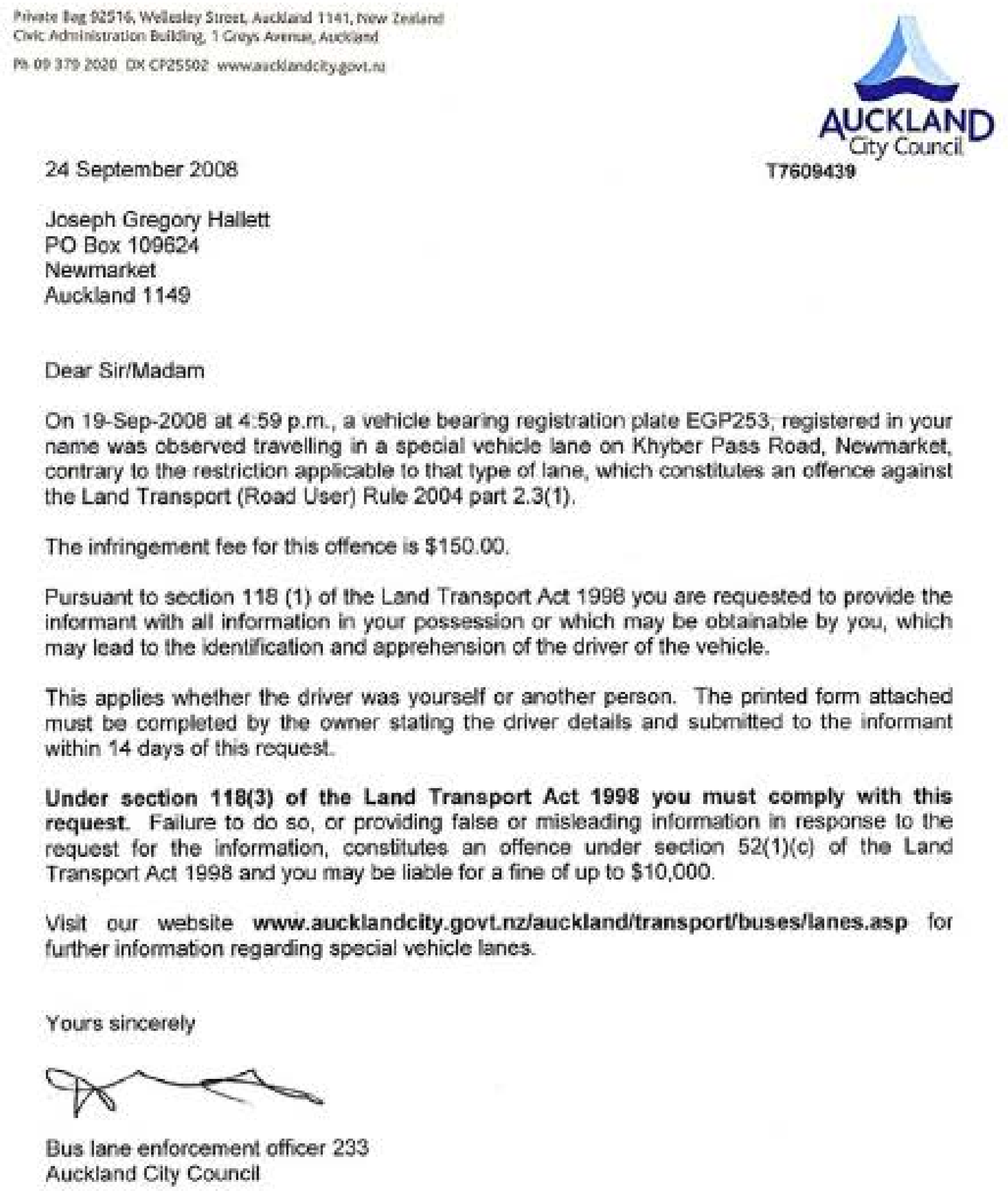

Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141, New Zealand
Civic Administration Building, 1 Greys Avenue, Auckland
Ph 09 379 2020 DX CP25502 www.aucklandcity.govt.nz

AUCKLAND
City Council

24 September 2008

T7609439

Joseph Gregory Hallett
PO Box 109624
Newmarket
Auckland 1149

Dear Sir/Madam

On 19-Sep-2008 at 4:59 p.m., a vehicle bearing registration plate EGP253, registered in your name was observed travelling in a special vehicle lane on Khyber Pass Road, Newmarket, contrary to the restriction applicable to that type of lane, which constitutes an offence against the Land Transport (Road User) Rule 2004 part 2.3(1).

The infringement fee for this offence is $150.00.

Pursuant to section 118 (1) of the Land Transport Act 1998 you are requested to provide the informant with all information in your possession or which may be obtainable by you, which may lead to the identification and apprehension of the driver of the vehicle.

This applies whether the driver was yourself or another person. The printed form attached must be completed by the owner stating the driver details and submitted to the informant within 14 days of this request.

Under section 118(3) of the Land Transport Act 1998 you must comply with this request. Failure to do so, or providing false or misleading information in response to the request for the information, constitutes an offence under section 52(1)(c) of the Land Transport Act 1998 and you may be liable for a fine of up to $10,000.

Visit our website **www.aucklandcity.govt.nz/auckland/transport/buses/lanes.asp** for further information regarding special vehicle lanes.

Yours sincerely

Bus lane enforcement officer 233
Auckland City Council

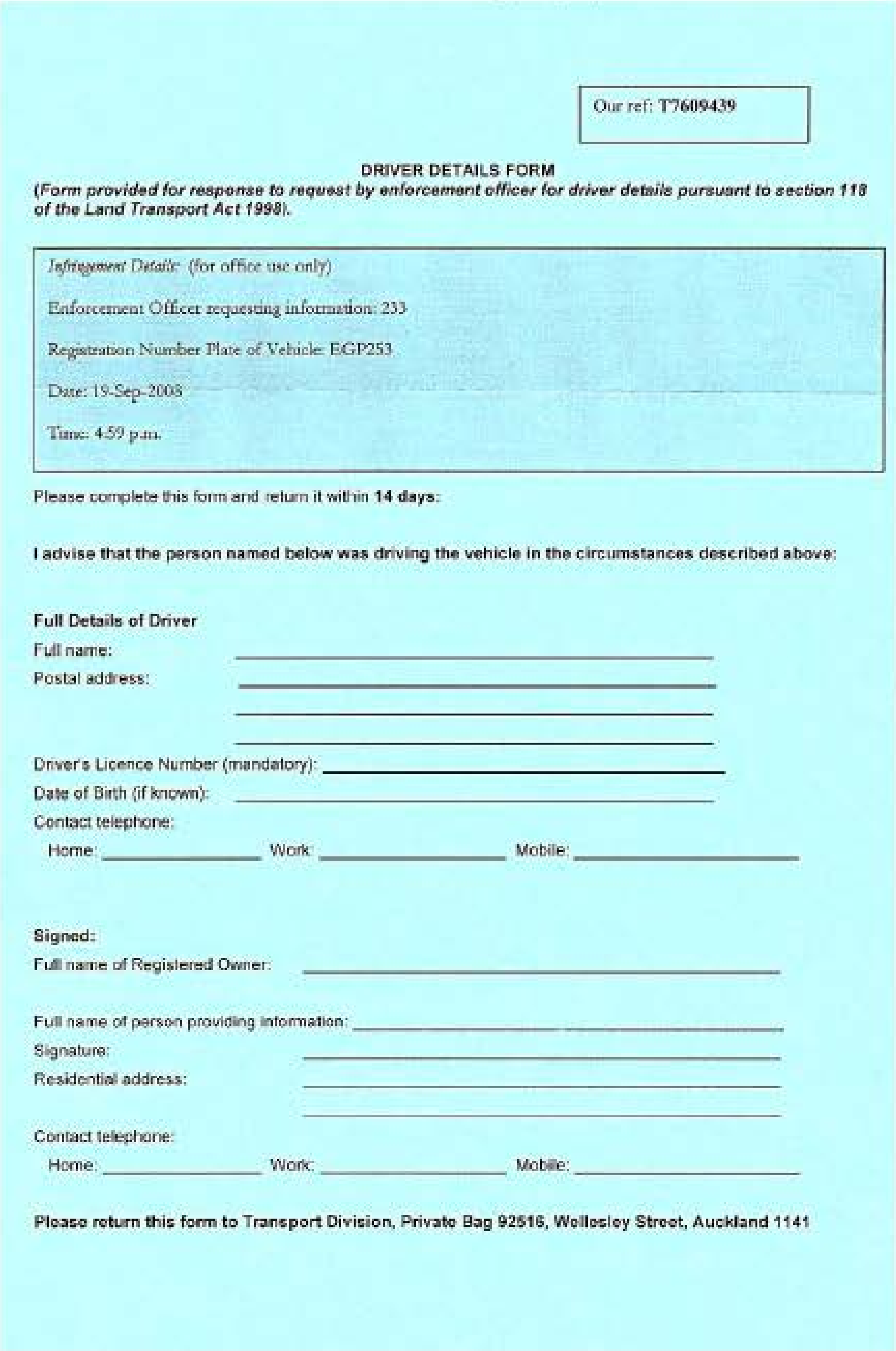

Our ref: T7609439

DRIVER DETAILS FORM

(Form provided for response to request by enforcement officer for driver details pursuant to section 118 of the Land Transport Act 1998).

Infringement Details: (for office use only)

Enforcement Officer requesting information: 233

Registration Number Plate of Vehicle: EGP253

Date: 19-Sep-2008

Time: 4:59 p.m.

Please complete this form and return it within **14 days**:

I advise that the person named below was driving the vehicle in the circumstances described above:

Full Details of Driver

Full name: ______

Postal address: ______

Driver's Licence Number (mandatory): ______

Date of Birth (if known): ______

Contact telephone:

Home: ______ Work: ______ Mobile: ______

Signed:

Full name of Registered Owner: ______

Full name of person providing information: ______

Signature: ______

Residential address: ______

Contact telephone:

Home: ______ Work: ______ Mobile: ______

Please return this form to Transport Division, Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141

30 September 2008

Bus lane enforcement officer 233
Auckland City Council
Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland; and
Transport Division, Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland

Ref: T7609439, dated 24 September 2008 and received on 29 September 2008.

Informant 233,

MAXIMS and EQUITABLE PRINCIPLES of LAW to be RELIED UPON:

I. All men and women are without excuse to not know that The Law is written "upon their hearts and in their minds", and that the origin of all law and commerce exists participating in the doctrine of maintaining 'clean hands in equity'; and

II. The integrity of telling the whole truth; and that

III. Every living-breathing-soul shall be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be, are ordained of God; moreover

IV. Whosoever therefore resisteth that power, resisteth the ordinance of the very God they invoke the help thereof to maintain their office: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation. For honourable rulers are not a terror to good works, but only to the evil; and that

V. Truth as a valid statement of reality, is sovereign in commerce and where there is a conflict in opinions, the word of God prevails as true, over man's words; and

VI. An un-rebutted affidavit stands as what is true in commerce between the parties; and

VII. An un-rebutted affidavit is acted upon as the judgement in commerce.

VIII. GUARANTEED so that all men are neither held nor placed in an untenable position of peonage or involuntary servitude, all men shall have equitably prevailing available to them, a remedy by the due course and process of law. If a remedy does not appear to exist, or if the existing remedy appears to have been subverted, then one may equitably create a remedy for themselves and endow it with credibility by expressing such in their affidavit.

- *a.* (Ignorance of these facts might be an excuse, however ignorance of the law is never a valid excuse/reason for the commission of any wrongful/inequitable act or crime, when The Law is easily and readily available to anyone making a reasonable effort to study it, and one acting as an officer of the law would be foolish to not do so or have it construed against them as tantamount to fraud).
- *b.* Notwithstanding all of the above, and that all higher laws are written upon the hearts and minds of all men, poor as well as rich without respect of the person of man any excuse is an admission as to the primary liability of the maker of such, and silence and non-response, is one's own honourable indication as to their:
- *c.* tacit assent or procuration/consent, passive acquiescence, cognovit affirmative, acceptance by silence, admission of guilt, or any part of their confession or avoidance plea(s), that they now have honourably prescribed and preordained under a clean hands in equity doctrine that;
- *d.* one or more of the options available therein were as stipulated, elected by them, furthermore they were asked to provide with a duty of care/trust responsibility and indemnified (four-fold) commercial liability as to certain evidence that are well established prerequisites for any honourable settlement for commercial bills and letters

of request by the comity between the parties allowing for the honourable settlement without laches of any previously raised outstanding or contradictory matter(s).

IX. All incorporated or unincorporated bodies of government are based upon properly bonded: commercial affidavits, commercial contracts, constitutions, commercial liens and commercial distresses, hence, governments cannot lawfully exercise the power to expunge commercial processes, without first expunging themselves and the de jure source of their authority.

X. The legitimate political power of any corporate entity is incontrovertibly dependent upon its possession of commercial bonds and insurance instruments against any and all public hazard/liability/ies, because no bond means; no legitimate authority/responsibility, no real or de jure power of any official signature, no real corporate political power, no privilege to exercise/operate any statute(s) as the corporate vehicle/presumed transmitting utility they claim.

XI. That any corporate legal powers at best are; secondary to the commercial guarantors. Case law on its own is not a responsible substitute for a Bond and would only foolishly be accepted as such, in lieu of a bond.

XII. All municipal corporations including; cities, counties, districts, local, state and national governments, have no commercial reality without proper bonding of their entity, its vehicle (statutes), and its effects (the execution of its rulings).

XIII. In commerce, the failure of this is therefore without excuse, itself being nothing more or less than tantamount to fraud or a criminal act for the Officer of a Political/Public Office to not receive and report a claim to its Bonding Company, and it would in the same manner be a crime for the agent of a Bonding Company to not pay on the said claim.

XIV. If a Bonding Company does not get its own malfeasant public official prosecuted for criminal malpractice within sixty (60) days, then it is required to pay the full face value of a defaulted lien process (at 90 days).

XV. Except for a Jury, it is also a fatal offense for any person, even an honourable Judge, to impair or to expunge, without a counter-affidavit, any affidavit or any commercial process based upon an Affidavit if one was provided to support the originating claim.

XVI. Judicial, non-jury commercial judgments and orders originate from a limited liability entity called a municipal corporation, hence must be reinforced by a Commercial Affidavit and a Commercial Liability Bond.

XVII. A foreclosure by summary[1] judgment done without a commercial bond is a fatal violation of commercial law.

---

[1] *Black's Eighth Law Dictionary*, ***Summary judgment***: A judgement granted on a claim of defence about which there is no genuine issue of material fact and upon which the *movant* is entitled to prevail as a matter of law . . . The court considers the contents of the pleadings, the motions, and additional evidence adduced by the parties, to determine whether there is a genuine issue of material fact rather than one of law. This procedural device allows for the speedy disposition of controversy without the need of a trial. (*See also* genuine issue, material fact.)

Butterworth's NZ Law Dictionary, 5th Edition Spiller, ***Summary judgment***: A speedy procedure for obtaining judgment on a proceeding where the court is satisfied that a defendant has no defence to a claim. See the High Court rules rr 135–44 and the District Court rules rr 151–67. Summary judgment is not available against the crown or where an allegation of defamation, malicious prosecution, false imprisonment or fraud. "The general object of the rules about summary judgment . . . is to enable a plaintiff to obtain judgment where there is really no defence to the claim made and so put an end to this spectacle of a worthless defence being raised and pursed for the purpose of delay" (Per Somers J, Pemberton v. Chappell [1987] 1NZLR1.2-3 DEFENCE).

Black's Fifth Edition, p. 1287, ***Summary***: n. an abridgement; brief; compendium; digest; off-hand; without a jury; also a short application to a court or judge, without the formality of a full hearing.

XVIII. Corporate Governments cannot make un-bonded rulings or statutes, which control commerce, free enterprise citizens, or sole proprietorships, without suspending commerce by a general and public declaration of martial law.

XIX. It is a tax fraud to use statute courts to settle a dispute/controversy, which could or are being attempted to be settled peacefully outside of, or without the assistance of such a corporate court.

XX. An official (officer of the court, policeman, etc.,) must before acting first be able to demonstrate that he/she is individually bonded in order to issue, use or implement any summary process they may rely upon.

XXI. An official who impairs, debauches, voids or abridges an obligation of trust or contract or the effect of a commercial lien without proper cause, by commercial dishonour, by default becomes a lien debtor and their property becomes forfeited as the pledge to secure the lien. Pound breach (breach of impoundment) and rescue is a crime of conversion and as such is a tort[2] and carries with it strict liabilities.

XXII. It is against The Law (including the royal law, the wisdom and lively Oracles of God as foresworn by every monarch since time immemorial) for a Judge to summarily remove, dismiss, dissolve or diminish any commercial lien.

XXIII. Only the Lien Claimant or a Jury can dissolve such a commercial lien.

XXIV. Any notice to the agent is notice to the principal; and accordingly notice to principal is notice to agent or their successor/s, assign/s or nominee/s.

XXV. PUBLIC LIABILITY INSURANCE BONDING OF CORPORATE OFFICERS/AGENTS: All officials are required by law to provide the name, address, and telephone number of their public liability/hazard and malpractice bonding company and the policy number of the bond and, if requested are required, to present, produce a certified copy of such policy, describing the bonding coverage as to their specific job performance. Failure to provide this information constitutes corporate and limited liability insurance fraud and is prima-facie evidence and grounds to impose the lien upon the official personally to secure their public oath and service of office.

---

[2] *Concise Oxford Dictionary*: tort; noun; Law: a wrongful act or an infringement of a right (other than under contract) leading to legal liability; ORIGIN: Latin tortum, 'wrong, injustice', tortious /torshəss; adjective: Law, constituting a tort; wrongful.

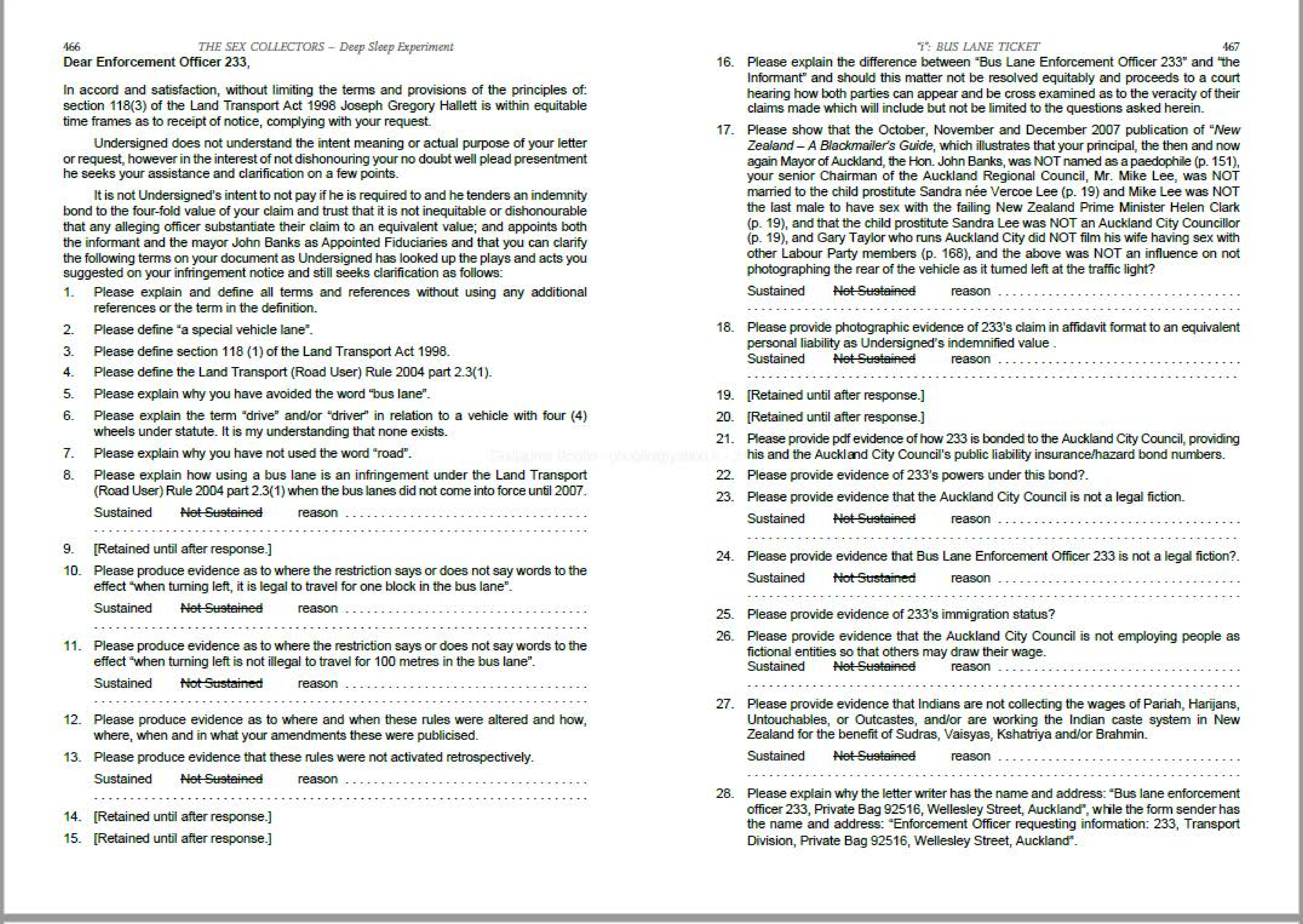

Dear Enforcement Officer 233,

In accord and satisfaction, without limiting the terms and provisions of the principles of: section 118(3) of the Land Transport Act 1998 Joseph Gregory Hallett is within equitable time frames as to receipt of notice, complying with your request.

Undersigned does not understand the intent meaning or actual purpose of your letter or request, however in the interest of not dishonouring your no doubt well plead presentment he seeks your assistance and clarification on a few points.

It is not Undersigned's intent to not pay if he is required to and he tenders an indemnity bond to the four-fold value of your claim and trust that it is not inequitable or dishonourable that any alleging officer substantiate their claim to an equivalent value; and appoints both the informant and the mayor John Banks as Appointed Fiduciaries and that you can clarify the following terms on your document as Undersigned has looked up the plays and acts you suggested on your infringement notice and still seeks clarification as follows:

1. Please explain and define all terms and references without using any additional references or the term in the definition.
2. Please define "a special vehicle lane".
3. Please define section 118 (1) of the Land Transport Act 1998.
4. Please define the Land Transport (Road User) Rule 2004 part 2.3(1).
5. Please explain why you have avoided the word "bus lane".
6. Please explain the term "drive" and/or "driver" in relation to a vehicle with four (4) wheels under statute. It is my understanding that none exists.
7. Please explain why you have not used the word "road".
8. Please explain how using a bus lane is an infringement under the Land Transport (Road User) Rule 2004 part 2.3(1) when the bus lanes did not come into force until 2007.

   Sustained ~~Not Sustained~~ reason . . . .
   . . . .
9. [Retained until after response.]
10. Please produce evidence as to where the restriction says or does not say words to the effect "when turning left, it is legal to travel for one block in the bus lane".

    Sustained ~~Not Sustained~~ reason . . . .
    . . . .
11. Please produce evidence as to where the restriction says or does not say words to the effect "when turning left is not illegal to travel for 100 metres in the bus lane".

    Sustained ~~Not Sustained~~ reason . . . .
    . . . .
12. Please produce evidence as to where and when these rules were altered and how, where, when and in what your amendments these were publicised.
13. Please produce evidence that these rules were not activated retrospectively.

    Sustained ~~Not Sustained~~ reason . . . .
    . . . .
14. [Retained until after response.]
15. [Retained until after response.]

16. Please explain the difference between "Bus Lane Enforcement Officer 233" and "the Informant" and should this matter not be resolved equitably and proceeds to a court hearing how both parties can appear and be cross examined as to the veracity of their claims made which will include but not be limited to the questions asked herein.
17. Please show that the October, November and December 2007 publication of "*New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide*, which illustrates that your principal, the then and now again Mayor of Auckland, the Hon. John Banks, was NOT named as a paedophile (p. 151), your senior Chairman of the Auckland Regional Council, Mr. Mike Lee, was NOT married to the child prostitute Sandra née Vercoe Lee (p. 19) and Mike Lee was NOT the last male to have sex with the failing New Zealand Prime Minister Helen Clark (p. 19), and that the child prostitute Sandra Lee was NOT an Auckland City Councillor (p. 19), and Gary Taylor who runs Auckland City did NOT film his wife having sex with other Labour Party members (p. 168), and the above was NOT an influence on not photographing the rear of the vehicle as it turned left at the traffic light?

    Sustained ~~Not Sustained~~ reason . . . .
    . . . .
18. Please provide photographic evidence of 233's claim in affidavit format to an equivalent personal liability as Undersigned's indemnified value .
    Sustained ~~Not Sustained~~ reason . . . .
    . . . .
19. [Retained until after response.]
20. [Retained until after response.]
21. Please provide pdf evidence of how 233 is bonded to the Auckland City Council, providing his and the Auckland City Council's public liability insurance/hazard bond numbers.
22. Please provide evidence of 233's powers under this bond?.
23. Please provide evidence that the Auckland City Council is not a legal fiction.

    Sustained ~~Not Sustained~~ reason . . . .
    . . . .
24. Please provide evidence that Bus Lane Enforcement Officer 233 is not a legal fiction?.

    Sustained ~~Not Sustained~~ reason . . . .
    . . . .
25. Please provide evidence of 233's immigration status?
26. Please provide evidence that the Auckland City Council is not employing people as fictional entities so that others may draw their wage.
    Sustained ~~Not Sustained~~ reason . . . .
    . . . .
27. Please provide evidence that Indians are not collecting the wages of Pariah, Harijans, Untouchables, or Outcastes, and/or are working the Indian caste system in New Zealand for the benefit of Sudras, Vaisyas, Kshatriya and/or Brahmin.

    Sustained ~~Not Sustained~~ reason . . . .
    . . . .
28. Please explain why the letter writer has the name and address: "Bus lane enforcement officer 233, Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland", while the form sender has the name and address: "Enforcement Officer requesting information: 233, Transport Division, Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland".

29. Are these two different entities?
Sustained ~~Not Sustained~~ reason ....
....

30. Should I respond to the letter and the form separately, or both together?
Sustained ~~Not Sustained~~ reason ....
....

31. I still have not had a response from the Auckland City Council (ACC) where I lodged a NOTICE OF GENERAL APPEAL under the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 in the Auckland District Court on the 2 July 2008 (C.R.I. 2006-004-021-217) that Prime Minister Helen Clark is a Tavistock St Petersburg prostitute who tried to murder Joseph Gregory Hallett on 2 April 2002, 23 August 2002, and 14–22 May 2004; and where, to all intents and purposes, the Auckland City Council acted as an accomplice to a breach of the Declaration of Helsinki – that is, attempted murder, followed by ACC fines to pay for the murder attempt. Please clarify the Auckland City Council's involvement or lack thereof in these murder attempts/traffic tickets within 7 days of such events occurring.
Sustained ~~Not Sustained~~ reason ....
....

32. Not unlike your proceedings this official letter of request is also part of an official private equitable administrative proceeding with integrity, to settle all outstanding matters between the parties as your venue appears of its own, unable to settle and close the account. Undersigned is authorised to do this under several of the non-exclusive laws of New Zealand, that it appears you have chosen to apply, in order to achieve remedy as below mentioned. You are well advised that you should not take this procedure lightly, and if need be, seek your own counsel.
Sustained ~~Not Sustained~~ reason ....
....

33. Could you please confirm or deny, in intelligible non-bureaucratese fully readable sentences, that the Justice of the Peace (JP's) are NOT the area paedophile minders and who report directly to the Governor-General, who is the Chief Boy Scout / Girl Guide, and in collusion with this paedophile arrangement, and it is NOT overseen by the Mayor of Auckland, is, once again, the paedophile John Banks, who was, formerly the Minister of Police, who protected paedophiles in the police and/or the Auckland City Council.
Sustained ~~Not Sustained~~ reason ....
....

34. Could you please confirm that the Auckland City Council does NOT work closely with the Auckland Police.
Sustained ~~Not Sustained~~ reason ....
....

35. Could you please confirm/deny that the Auckland Area Commander Clint Rickards was NOT New Zealand's worst ever rapist (or in the top three) and that he did NOT work closely with the Police Commissioner's Support Group (from 25 November 2003 or thereabouts), and the Ombudsman Anand Sayanand (from 23 March 2004 or thereabouts) who is now the Governor-General, as nominated by the murderer and St Petersburg prostitute, Prime Minister Helen Clark. Failure to respond within 7 days will be taken as confirmation by the Auckland City Council, that the above is indeed true correct complete certain and you are now, with sufficient notice and without lawful excuse, known to be in collusion with and doing nothing to arrest such immoral behaviours and are part of a public nuisance, and that your partners in crime are the New Zealand Police and that you are knowingly assisting child molestors and rapists.
Sustained ~~Not Sustained~~ reason ....
....

36. Please provide evidence that the Indian Governor-General, Anand Sayanand, is not running Auckland City Council Informants/Enforcement Officers/ Pariah/ Harijans/ Untouchables/ Outcastes under the Indian caste system for the benefit of the reincarnated Vaishyas, Kshatriya and/or Brahmin.
Sustained ~~Not Sustained~~ reason ....
....

It is reiterated that Undersigned Joseph Gregory Hallett does not understand your letter and he offers the attached Affidavit "A" in support as veracity to his claim and lawful right to ask questions to better understand the language, class, behaviour of any public servant before doing business with them, unless of course you can present lawful excuse that you can be a public nuisance contrary to any local government act currently in force you may consider yourself bound by.

The infringement and the attachment are accepted under the terms of the indemnity bond and this letter of requests and are accordingly returned to you for four-fold your presented value in anticipation of your honourable reply.

Joseph Gregory Hallett does not understand your form attached. However, it has been filled in with queries as underlined to comply with your request. Because your terms are so ill-defined, it cannot with integrity be completed, and in no way forms any admission to anything as to your ill-defined and misleading letter, request, bill, account, notice, claim, or whatever it portends to be.

No liability other than Undersigned's Indemnity Bond is accepted or considered until all of these matters have been explained and addressed.

Your complete reply to all matters raised is required within 7 days, otherwise it will be taken that T7609439 has no lawful or legal validity and has no infringement fee attached, and that all other statements made in this letter are true, and all matters lodged between Joseph Gregory Hallett and the Auckland City Council on 2 July 2008 are in the material favour of Joseph Gregory Hallett, and are to be compensated for accordingly, promptly, and within 72 hours from note of date of failure to respond.

Take notice that the Auckland City Council has been cited as an accessory to attempted murder, and by association, accessory to the murders that were carried out.

With the Undersigned's sincerest appreciation in anticipation of your continued honourable services and assistance, moreover as time is of the essence, he entreats you govern yourself accordingly as your oaths of office dictate, now with sufficient judicial notice that the prevailing rules of equity shall apply and properly, without failure of consideration, be taken into deliberation thereof.

Yours sincerely,

Joseph Gregory Hallett
aka Prince of New Spain
PO Box 109 624 Newmarket | Auckland | New Zealand
Gmail: princeofnewspain
Please note: "New Spain" is the intelligence name of "New Zealand", especially when dealing with matters relating to Antarctica.

Encl: Copy of your letter and copy of your form with underlined words for your clarification.
CC: Bus lane enforcement officer 233, Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland.

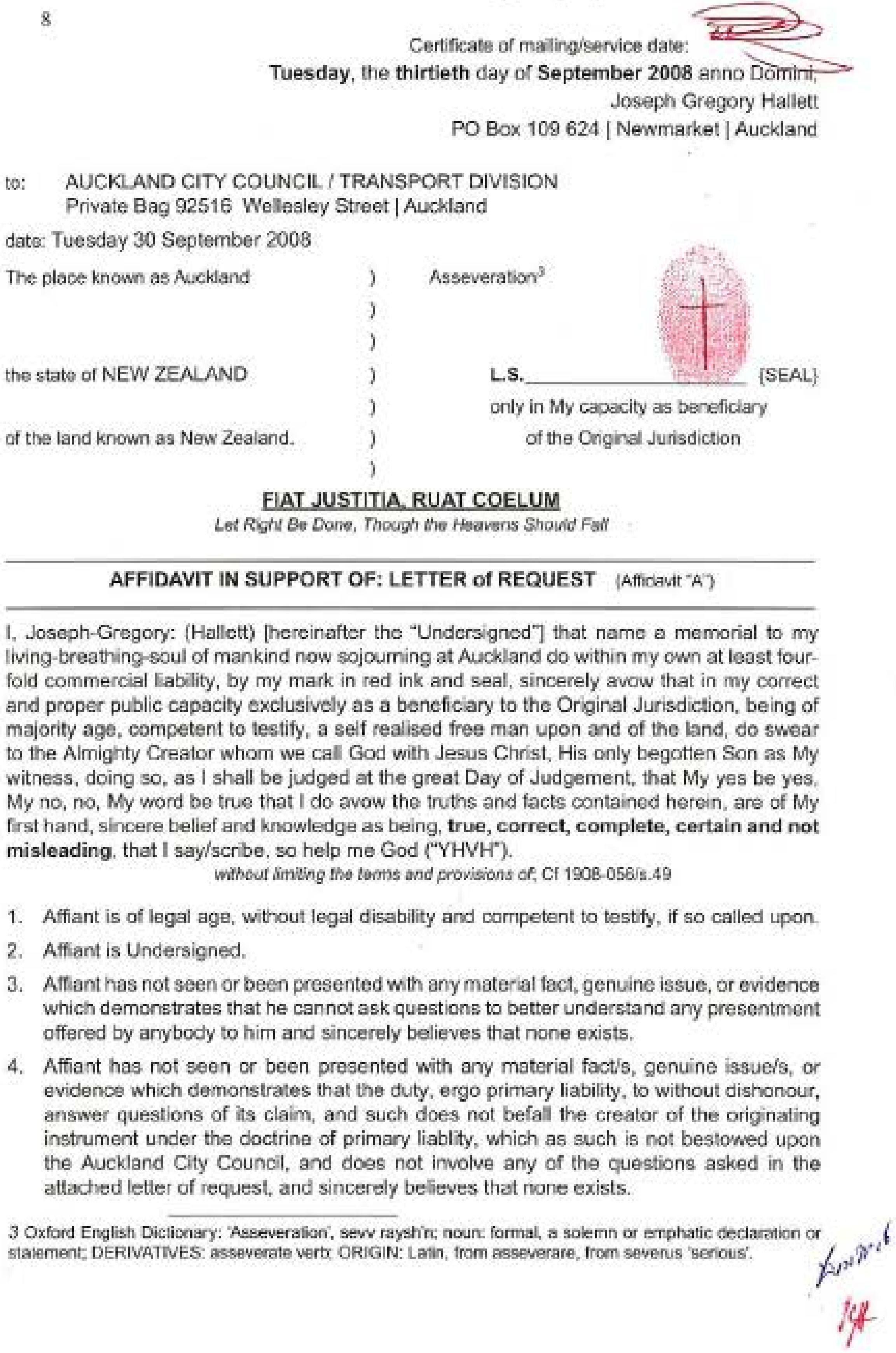

Certificate of mailing/service date:
Tuesday, the **thirtieth** day of **September 2008** anno Domini,
Joseph Gregory Hallett
PO Box 109 624 | Newmarket | Auckland

to: AUCKLAND CITY COUNCIL / TRANSPORT DIVISION
Private Bag 92516 Wellesley Street | Auckland

date: Tuesday 30 September 2008

The place known as Auckland) Asseveration[3]
)
)
the state of NEW ZEALAND) **L.S.**________________ [SEAL]
) only in My capacity as beneficiary
of the land known as New Zealand.) of the Original Jurisdiction
)

FIAT JUSTITIA, RUAT COELUM

Let Right Be Done, Though the Heavens Should Fall

AFFIDAVIT IN SUPPORT OF: LETTER of REQUEST (Affidavit "A")

I, Joseph-Gregory: (Hallett) [hereinafter the "Undersigned"] that name a memorial to my living-breathing-soul of mankind now sojourning at Auckland do within my own at least four-fold commercial liability, by my mark in red ink and seal, sincerely avow that in my correct and proper public capacity exclusively as a beneficiary to the Original Jurisdiction, being of majority age, competent to testify, a self realised free man upon and of the land, do swear to the Almighty Creator whom we call God with Jesus Christ, His only begotten Son as My witness, doing so, as I shall be judged at the great Day of Judgement, that My yes be yes, My no, no, My word be true that I do avow the truths and facts contained herein, are of My first hand, sincere belief and knowledge as being, **true, correct, complete, certain and not misleading**, that I say/scribe, so help me God ("YHVH").

without limiting the terms and provisions of, Cf 1908-056/s.49

1. Affiant is of legal age, without legal disability and competent to testify, if so called upon.
2. Affiant is Undersigned.
3. Affiant has not seen or been presented with any material fact, genuine issue, or evidence which demonstrates that he cannot ask questions to better understand any presentment offered by anybody to him and sincerely believes that none exists.
4. Affiant has not seen or been presented with any material fact/s, genuine issue/s, or evidence which demonstrates that the duty, ergo primary liability, to without dishonour, answer questions of its claim, and such does not befall the creator of the originating instrument under the doctrine of primary liablity, which as such is not bestowed upon the Auckland City Council, and does not involve any of the questions asked in the attached letter of request, and sincerely believes that none exists.

---

[3] Oxford English Dictionary: 'Asseveration', sevv raysh'n; noun: formal, a solemn or emphatic declaration or statement; DERIVATIVES: asseverate verb; ORIGIN: Latin, from asseverare, from severus 'serious'.

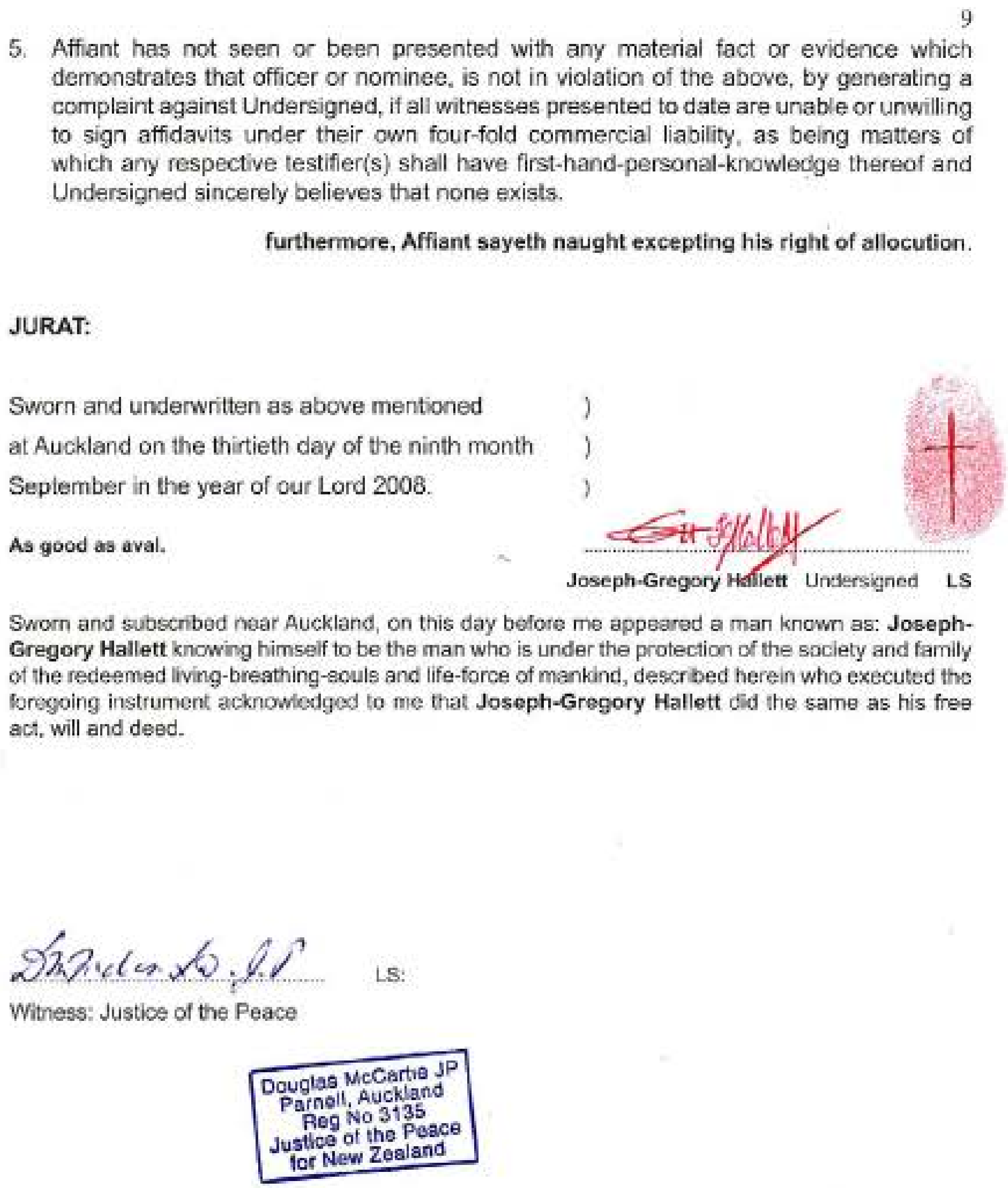

5. Affiant has not seen or been presented with any material fact or evidence which demonstrates that officer or nominee, is not in violation of the above, by generating a complaint against Undersigned, if all witnesses presented to date are unable or unwilling to sign affidavits under their own four-fold commercial liability, as being matters of which any respective testifier(s) shall have first-hand-personal-knowledge thereof and Undersigned sincerely believes that none exists.

furthermore, Affiant sayeth naught excepting his right of allocution.

JURAT:

Sworn and underwritten as above mentioned)
at Auckland on the thirtieth day of the ninth month)
September in the year of our Lord 2008.)

As good as aval.

Joseph-Gregory Hallett Undersigned **LS**

Sworn and subscribed near Auckland, on this day before me appeared a man known as: **Joseph-Gregory Hallett** knowing himself to be the man who is under the protection of the society and family of the redeemed living-breathing-souls and life-force of mankind, described herein who executed the foregoing instrument acknowledged to me that **Joseph-Gregory Hallett** did the same as his free act, will and deed.

LS:

Witness: Justice of the Peace

Douglas McCartie JP
Parnell, Auckland
Reg No 3135
Justice of the Peace
for New Zealand

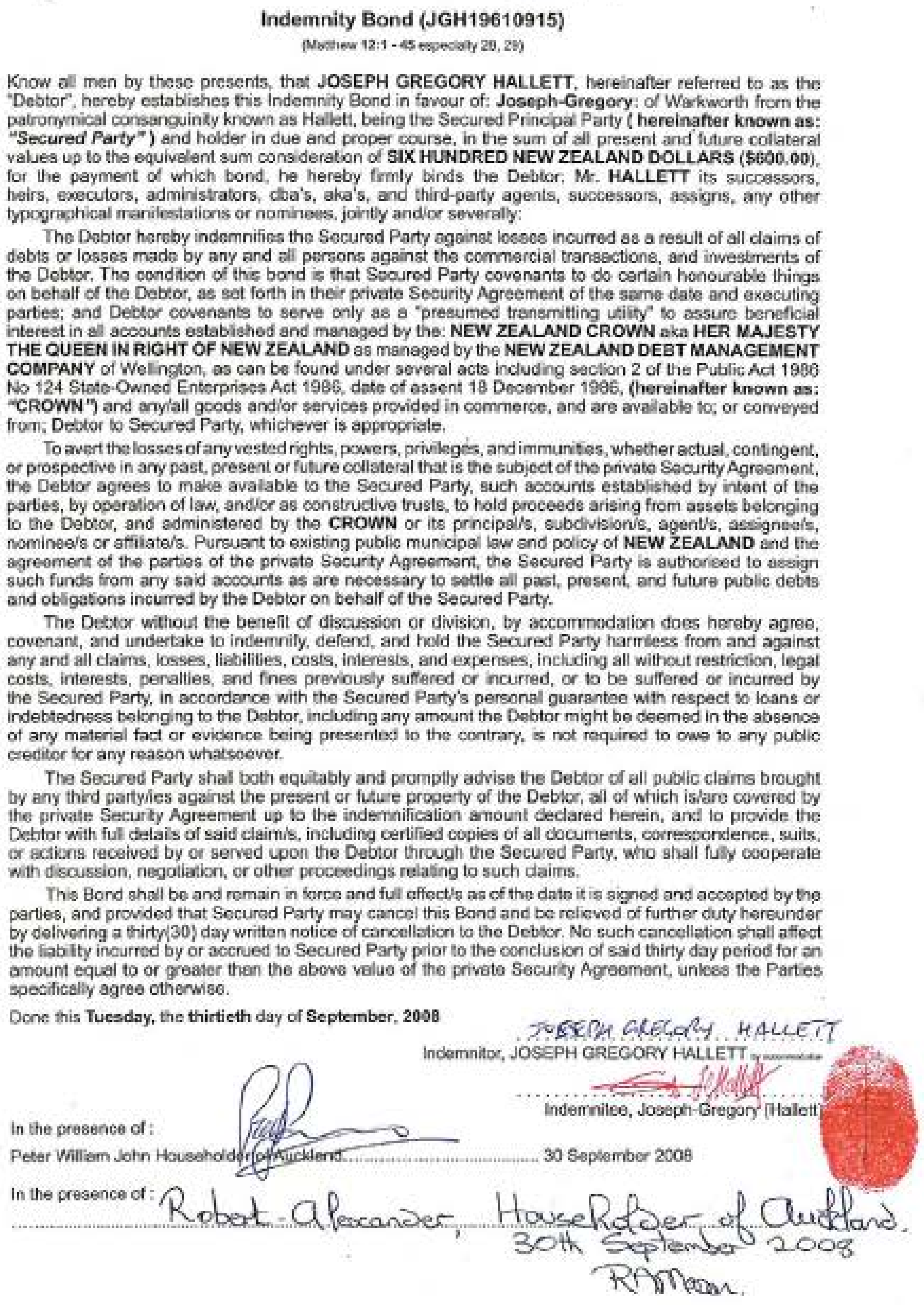

Indemnity Bond (JGH19610915)

(Matthew 12:1 - 45 especially 28, 29)

Know all men by these presents, that **JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT**, hereinafter referred to as the "Debtor", hereby establishes this Indemnity Bond in favour of: **Joseph-Gregory**: of Warkworth from the patronymical consanguinity known as Hallett, being the Secured Principal Party (**hereinafter known as: *"Secured Party"***) and holder in due and proper course, in the sum of all present and future collateral values up to the equivalent sum consideration of **SIX HUNDRED NEW ZEALAND DOLLARS ($600.00)**, for the payment of which bond, he hereby firmly binds the Debtor: Mr. **HALLETT** its successors, heirs, executors, administrators, dba's, aka's, and third-party agents, successors, assigns, any other typographical manifestations or nominees, jointly and/or severally:

The Debtor hereby indemnifies the Secured Party against losses incurred as a result of all claims of debts or losses made by any and all persons against the commercial transactions, and investments of the Debtor. The condition of this bond is that Secured Party covenants to do certain honourable things on behalf of the Debtor, as set forth in their private Security Agreement of the same date and executing parties; and Debtor covenants to serve only as a "presumed transmitting utility" to assure beneficial interest in all accounts established and managed by the: **NEW ZEALAND CROWN** aka **HER MAJESTY THE QUEEN IN RIGHT OF NEW ZEALAND** as managed by the **NEW ZEALAND DEBT MANAGEMENT COMPANY** of Wellington, as can be found under several acts including section 2 of the Public Act 1986 No 124 State-Owned Enterprises Act 1986, date of assent 18 December 1986, **(hereinafter known as: "CROWN")** and any/all goods and/or services provided in commerce, and are available to; or conveyed from; Debtor to Secured Party, whichever is appropriate.

To avert the losses of any vested rights, powers, privileges, and immunities, whether actual, contingent, or prospective in any past, present or future collateral that is the subject of the private Security Agreement, the Debtor agrees to make available to the Secured Party, such accounts established by intent of the parties, by operation of law, and/or as constructive trusts, to hold proceeds arising from assets belonging to the Debtor, and administered by the **CROWN** or its principal/s, subdivision/s, agent/s, assignee/s, nominee/s or affiliate/s. Pursuant to existing public municipal law and policy of **NEW ZEALAND** and the agreement of the parties of the private Security Agreement, the Secured Party is authorised to assign such funds from any said accounts as are necessary to settle all past, present, and future public debts and obligations incurred by the Debtor on behalf of the Secured Party.

The Debtor without the benefit of discussion or division, by accommodation does hereby agree, covenant, and undertake to indemnify, defend, and hold the Secured Party harmless from and against any and all claims, losses, liabilities, costs, interests, and expenses, including all without restriction, legal costs, interests, penalties, and fines previously suffered or incurred, or to be suffered or incurred by the Secured Party, in accordance with the Secured Party's personal guarantee with respect to loans or indebtedness belonging to the Debtor, including any amount the Debtor might be deemed in the absence of any material fact or evidence being presented to the contrary, is not required to owe to any public creditor for any reason whatsoever.

The Secured Party shall both equitably and promptly advise the Debtor of all public claims brought by any third party/ies against the present or future property of the Debtor, all of which is/are covered by the private Security Agreement up to the indemnification amount declared herein, and to provide the Debtor with full details of said claim/s, including certified copies of all documents, correspondence, suits, or actions received by or served upon the Debtor through the Secured Party, who shall fully cooperate with discussion, negotiation, or other proceedings relating to such claims.

This Bond shall be and remain in force and full effect/s as of the date it is signed and accepted by the parties, and provided that Secured Party may cancel this Bond and be relieved of further duty hereunder by delivering a thirty(30) day written notice of cancellation to the Debtor. No such cancellation shall affect the liability incurred by or accrued to Secured Party prior to the conclusion of said thirty day period for an amount equal to or greater than the above value of the private Security Agreement, unless the Parties specifically agree otherwise.

Done this **Tuesday**, the **thirtieth** day of **September, 2008**

JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
Indemnitor, JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT by accommodation

....
Indemnitee, Joseph-Gregory (Hallett)

In the presence of :
Peter William John Householder of Auckland.................................... 30 September 2008

In the presence of : Robert Alexander, Householder of Auckland.
30th September 2008
R A Mason.

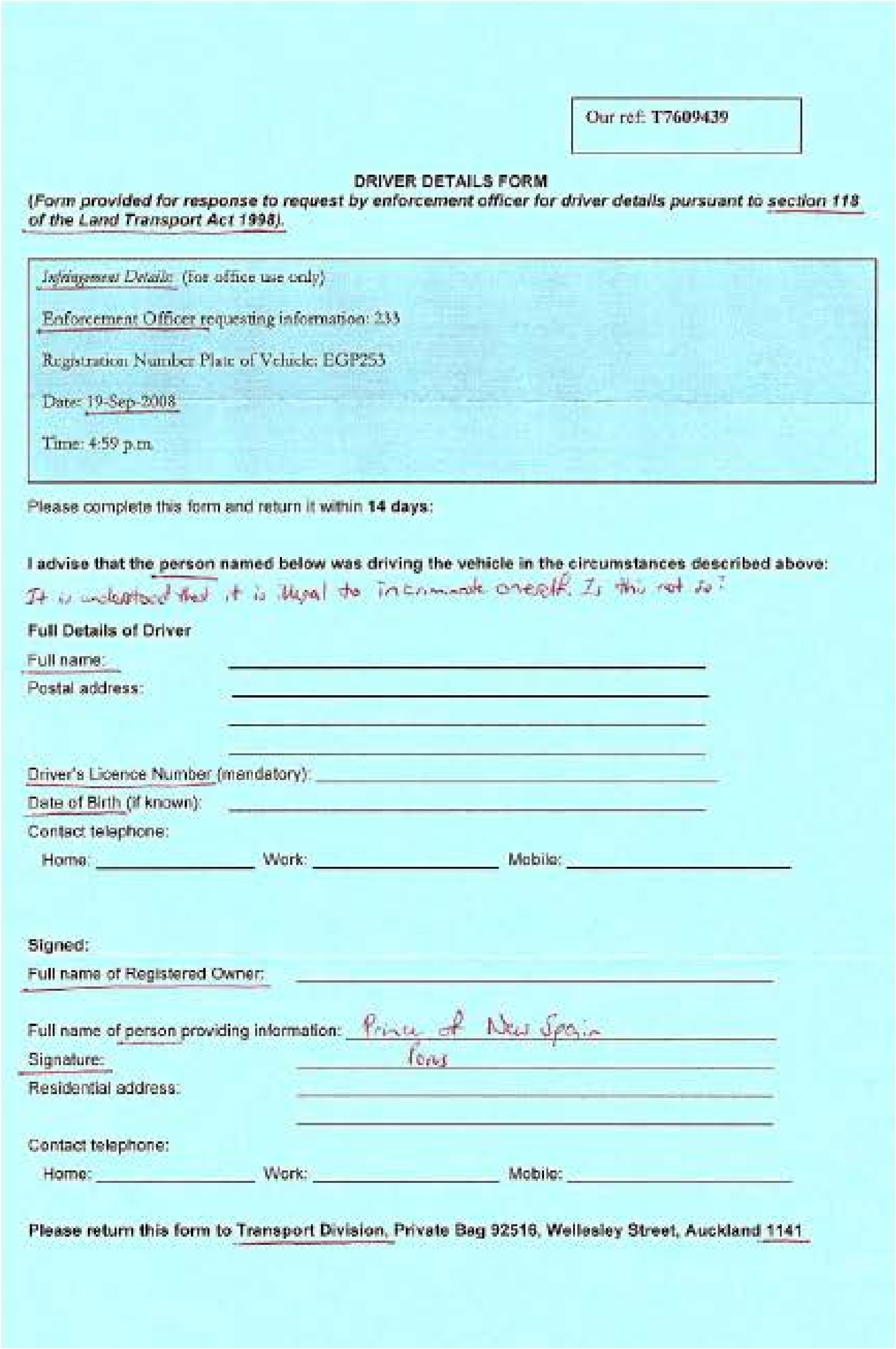

Our ref: T7609439

DRIVER DETAILS FORM

(Form provided for response to request by enforcement officer for driver details pursuant to section 118 of the Land Transport Act 1998).

Infringement Details: (for office use only)

Enforcement Officer requesting information: 233

Registration Number Plate of Vehicle: EGP253

Date: 19-Sep-2008

Time: 4:59 p.m.

Please complete this form and return it within **14 days:**

I advise that the person named below was driving the vehicle in the circumstances described above:

It is understood that it is illegal to incriminate oneself. Is this not so?

Full Details of Driver

Full name: ______________________________

Postal address: ______________________________

____

____

Driver's Licence Number (mandatory): ______________________________

Date of Birth (if known): ______________________________

Contact telephone:

Home: ______________ Work: ______________ Mobile: ______________

Signed:

Full name of Registered Owner: ______________________________

Full name of person providing information: Prince of New Spain

Signature: ______________________________

Residential address: ______________________________

____

Contact telephone:

Home: ______________ Work: ______________ Mobile: ______________

Please return this form to Transport Division, Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141

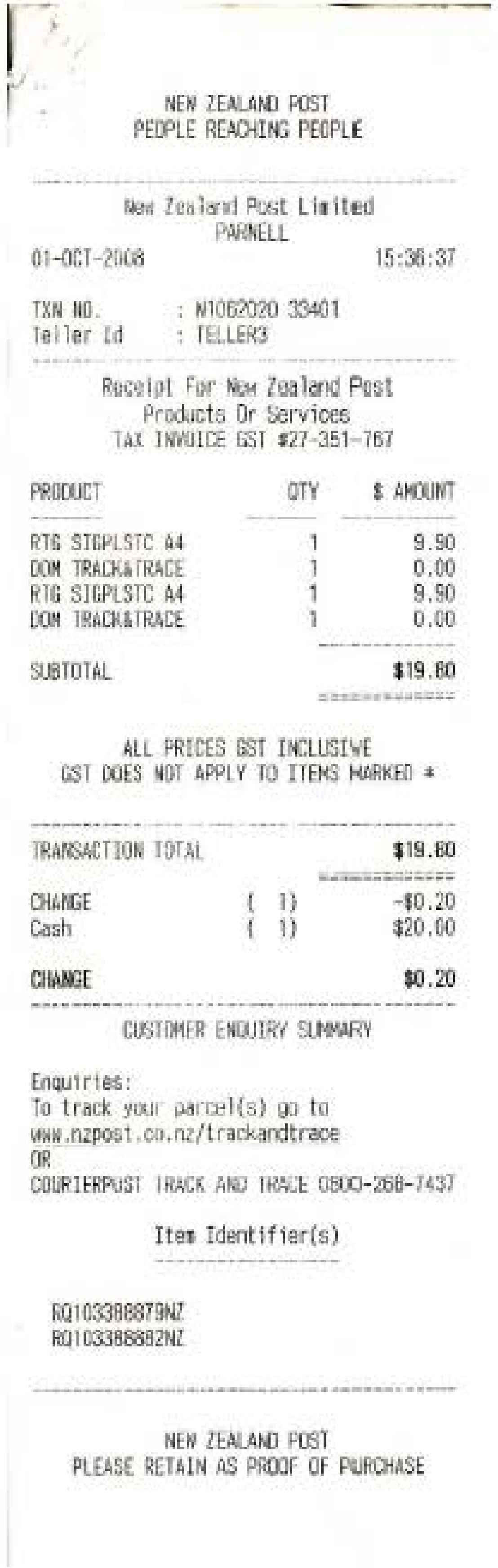

```
              NEW ZEALAND POST
            PEOPLE REACHING PEOPLE

--------------------------------------------
          New Zealand Post Limited
                  PARNELL
01-OCT-2008                         15:36:37

TXN NO.        : N1062020 33401
Teller Id      : TELLER3
--------------------------------------------
         Receipt For New Zealand Post
            Products Or Services
        TAX INVOICE GST #27-351-767

PRODUCT                   QTY       $ AMOUNT
--------                -----     ----------
RTG SIGPLSTC A4             1           9.90
DOM TRACK&TRACE             1           0.00
RTG SIGPLSTC A4             1           9.90
DOM TRACK&TRACE             1           0.00
                                ------------
SUBTOTAL                              $19.80
                                ============

          ALL PRICES GST INCLUSIVE
     GST DOES NOT APPLY TO ITEMS MARKED *

--------------------------------------------
TRANSACTION TOTAL                     $19.80
                                ============
CHANGE                  (  1)         -$0.20
Cash                    (  1)         $20.00

CHANGE                                 $0.20
--------------------------------------------
          CUSTOMER ENQUIRY SUMMARY

Enquiries:
To track your parcel(s) go to
www.nzpost.co.nz/trackandtrace
OR
COURIERPOST TRACK AND TRACE 0800-268-7437

             Item Identifier(s)
             ------------------

  RQ103388879NZ
  RQ103388882NZ

--------------------------------------------

              NEW ZEALAND POST
       PLEASE RETAIN AS PROOF OF PURCHASE
```

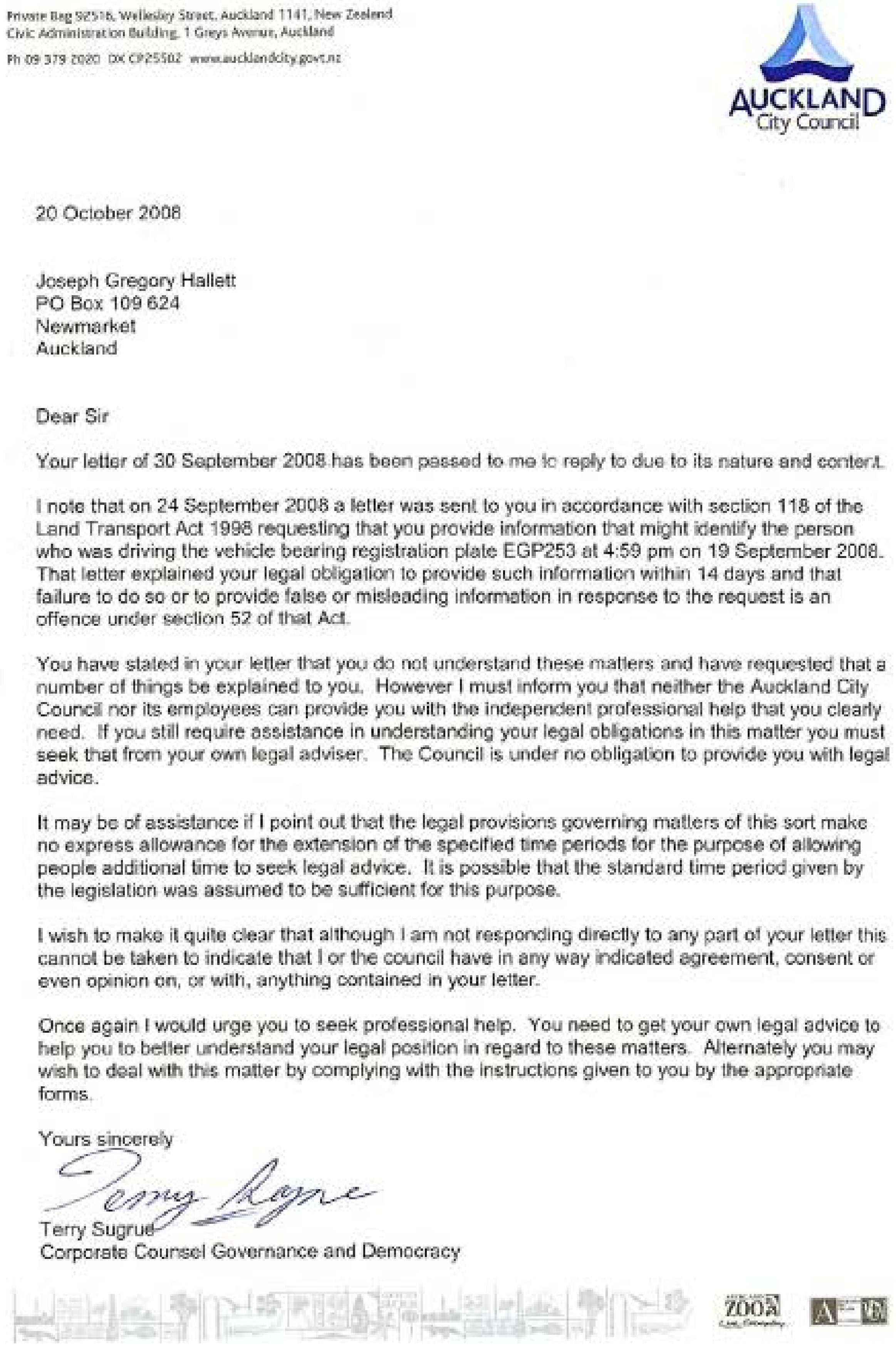

Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141, New Zealand
Civic Administration Building, 1 Greys Avenue, Auckland
Ph 09 379 2020 DX CP25502 www.aucklandcity.govt.nz

AUCKLAND
City Council

20 October 2008

Joseph Gregory Hallett
PO Box 109 624
Newmarket
Auckland

Dear Sir

Your letter of 30 September 2008 has been passed to me to reply to due to its nature and content.

I note that on 24 September 2008 a letter was sent to you in accordance with section 118 of the Land Transport Act 1998 requesting that you provide information that might identify the person who was driving the vehicle bearing registration plate EGP253 at 4:59 pm on 19 September 2008. That letter explained your legal obligation to provide such information within 14 days and that failure to do so or to provide false or misleading information in response to the request is an offence under section 52 of that Act.

You have stated in your letter that you do not understand these matters and have requested that a number of things be explained to you. However I must inform you that neither the Auckland City Council nor its employees can provide you with the independent professional help that you clearly need. If you still require assistance in understanding your legal obligations in this matter you must seek that from your own legal adviser. The Council is under no obligation to provide you with legal advice.

It may be of assistance if I point out that the legal provisions governing matters of this sort make no express allowance for the extension of the specified time periods for the purpose of allowing people additional time to seek legal advice. It is possible that the standard time period given by the legislation was assumed to be sufficient for this purpose.

I wish to make it quite clear that although I am not responding directly to any part of your letter this cannot be taken to indicate that I or the council have in any way indicated agreement, consent or even opinion on, or with, anything contained in your letter.

Once again I would urge you to seek professional help. You need to get your own legal advice to help you to better understand your legal position in regard to these matters. Alternately you may wish to deal with this matter by complying with the instructions given to you by the appropriate forms.

Yours sincerely

Terry Sugrue
Corporate Counsel Governance and Democracy

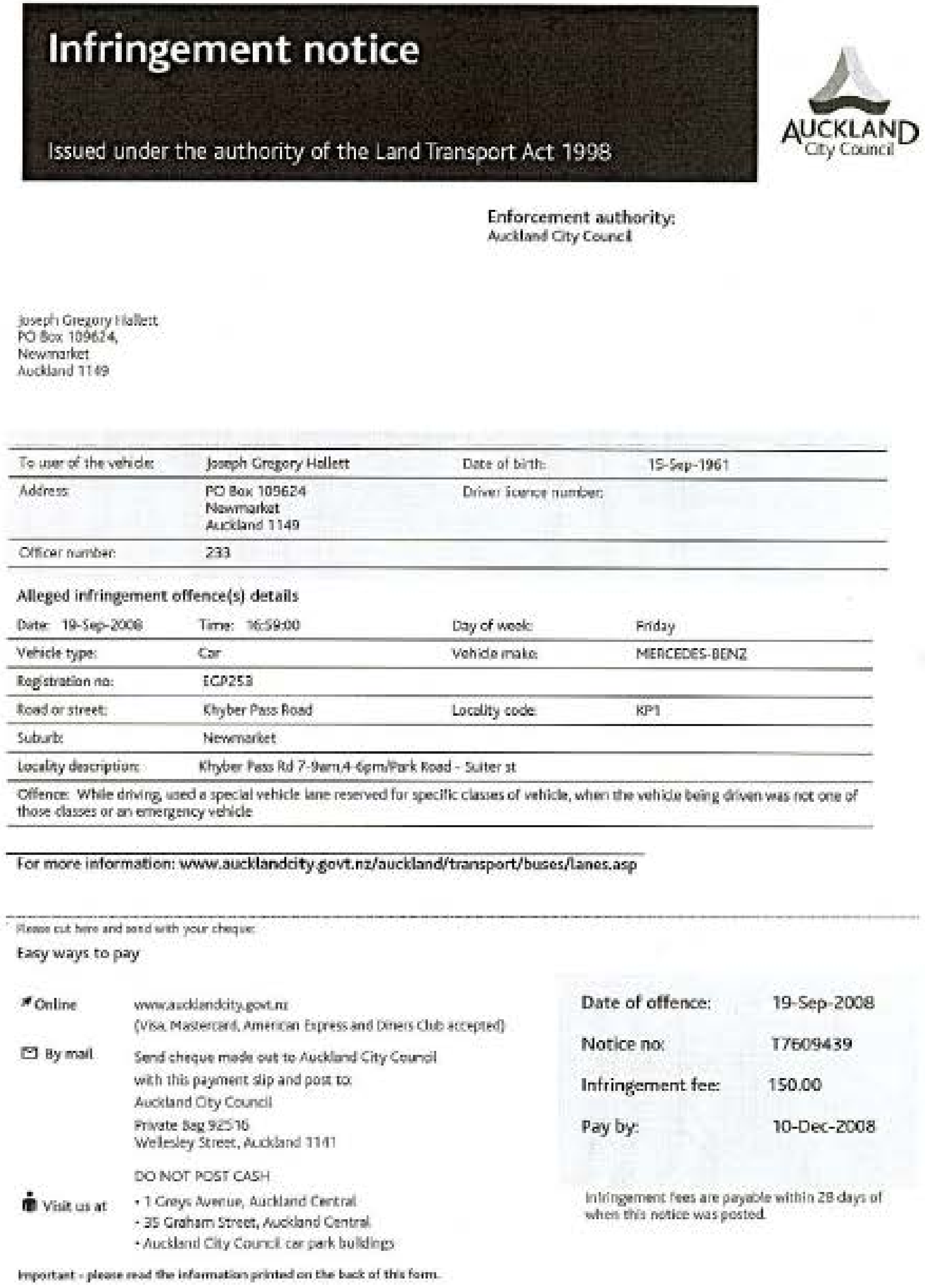

Infringement notice

Issued under the authority of the Land Transport Act 1998

AUCKLAND
City Council

Enforcement authority:
Auckland City Council

Joseph Gregory Hallett
PO Box 109624,
Newmarket
Auckland 1149

To user of the vehicle:	Joseph Gregory Hallett	Date of birth:	15-Sep-1961
Address:	PO Box 109624 Newmarket Auckland 1149	Driver licence number:	
Officer number:	233		

Alleged infringement offence(s) details

Date: 19-Sep-2008	Time: 16:59:00	Day of week:	Friday
Vehicle type:	Car	Vehicle make:	MERCEDES-BENZ
Registration no:	EGP253		
Road or street:	Khyber Pass Road	Locality code:	KP1
Suburb:	Newmarket		
Locality description:	Khyber Pass Rd 7-9am,4-6pm/Park Road - Suiter st		

Offence: While driving, used a special vehicle lane reserved for specific classes of vehicle, when the vehicle being driven was not one of those classes or an emergency vehicle

For more information: www.aucklandcity.govt.nz/auckland/transport/buses/lanes.asp

Please cut here and send with your cheque:

Easy ways to pay

Online	www.aucklandcity.govt.nz (Visa, Mastercard, American Express and Diners Club accepted)
By mail	Send cheque made out to Auckland City Council with this payment slip and post to: Auckland City Council Private Bag 92516 Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141 DO NOT POST CASH
Visit us at	• 1 Greys Avenue, Auckland Central • 35 Graham Street, Auckland Central • Auckland City Council car park buildings

Date of offence:	19-Sep-2008
Notice no:	T7609439
Infringement fee:	150.00
Pay by:	10-Dec-2008

Infringement fees are payable within 28 days of when this notice was posted.

Important - please read the information printed on the back of this form.

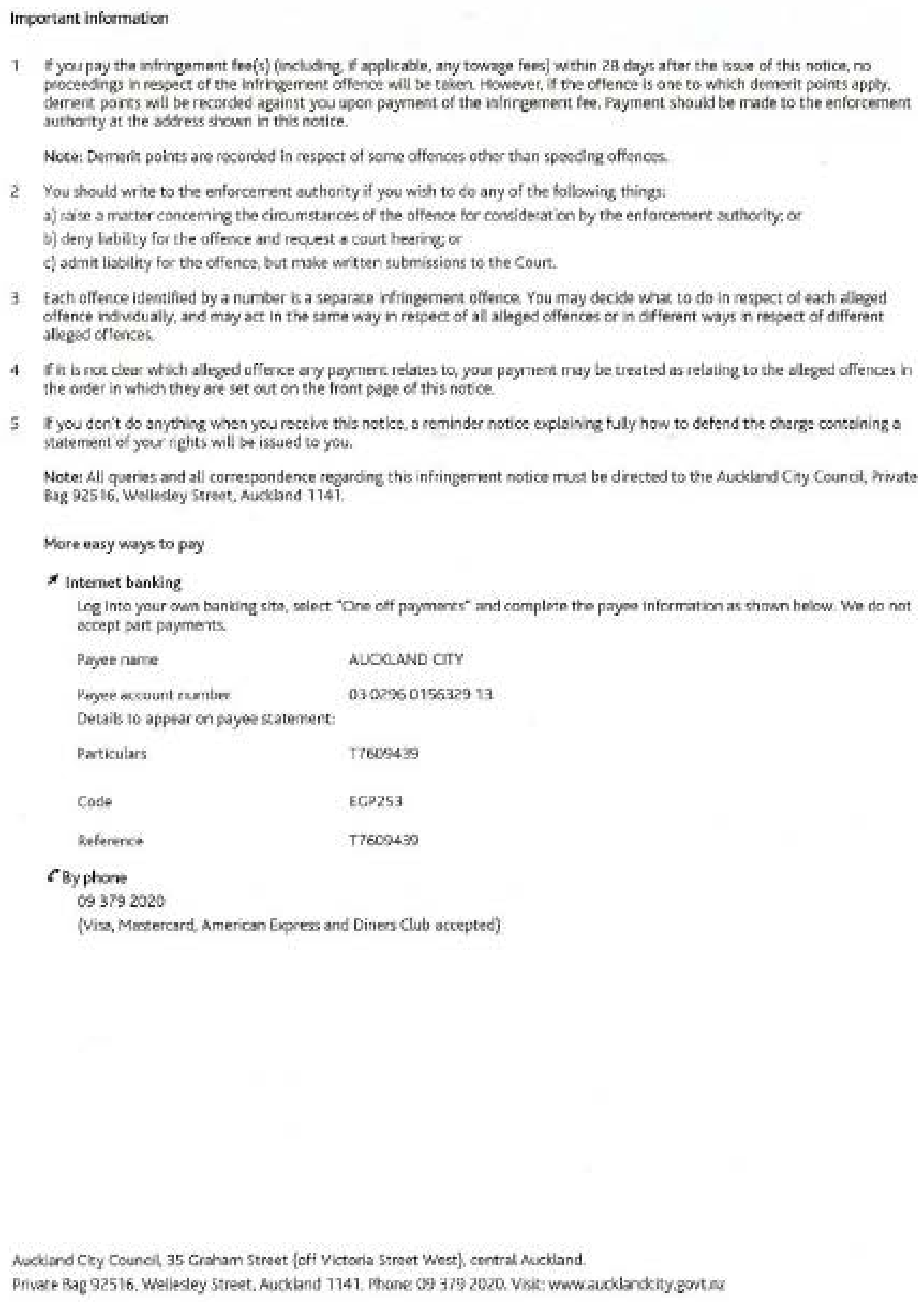

Important information

1 If you pay the infringement fee(s) (including, if applicable, any towage fees) within 28 days after the issue of this notice, no proceedings in respect of the infringement offence will be taken. However, if the offence is one to which demerit points apply, demerit points will be recorded against you upon payment of the infringement fee. Payment should be made to the enforcement authority at the address shown in this notice.

Note: Demerit points are recorded in respect of some offences other than speeding offences.

2 You should write to the enforcement authority if you wish to do any of the following things:
a) raise a matter concerning the circumstances of the offence for consideration by the enforcement authority; or
b) deny liability for the offence and request a court hearing; or
c) admit liability for the offence, but make written submissions to the Court.

3 Each offence identified by a number is a separate infringement offence. You may decide what to do in respect of each alleged offence individually, and may act in the same way in respect of all alleged offences or in different ways in respect of different alleged offences.

4 If it is not clear which alleged offence any payment relates to, your payment may be treated as relating to the alleged offences in the order in which they are set out on the front page of this notice.

5 If you don't do anything when you receive this notice, a reminder notice explaining fully how to defend the charge containing a statement of your rights will be issued to you.

Note: All queries and all correspondence regarding this infringement notice must be directed to the Auckland City Council, Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141.

More easy ways to pay

Internet banking

Log into your own banking site, select "One off payments" and complete the payee information as shown below. We do not accept part payments.

Payee name	AUCKLAND CITY
Payee account number	03 0296 0156329 13
Details to appear on payee statement:	
Particulars	T7609439
Code	EGP253
Reference	T7609430

By phone
09 379 2020
(Visa, Mastercard, American Express and Diners Club accepted)

Auckland City Council, 35 Graham Street (off Victoria Street West), central Auckland.
Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141. Phone: 09 379 2020. Visit: www.aucklandcity.govt.nz

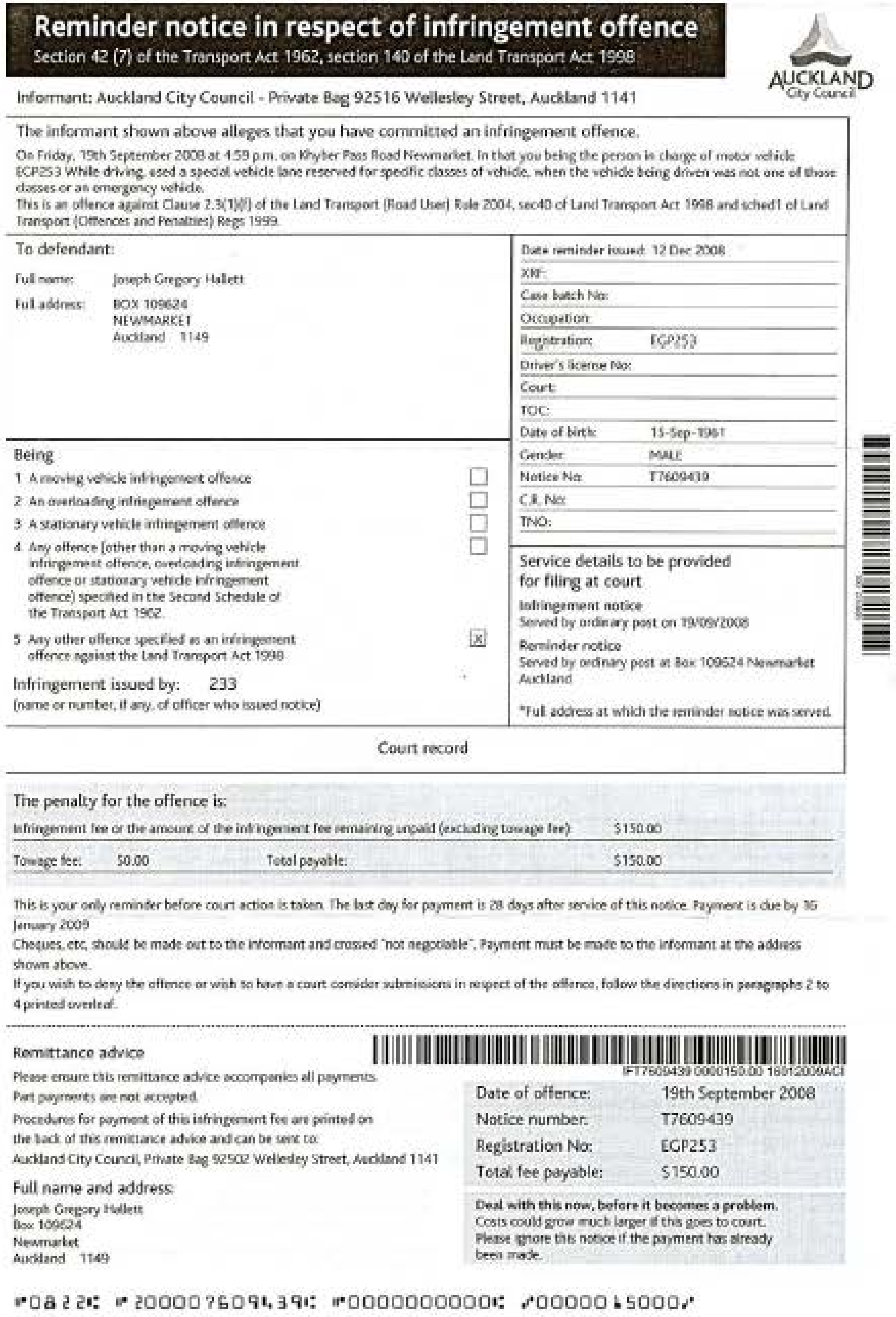

Reminder notice in respect of infringement offence

Section 42 (7) of the Transport Act 1962, section 140 of the Land Transport Act 1998

AUCKLAND
City Council

Informant: Auckland City Council - Private Bag 92516 Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141

The informant shown above alleges that you have committed an infringement offence.

On Friday, 19th September 2008 at 4:59 p.m. on Khyber Pass Road Newmarket. In that you being the person in charge of motor vehicle EGP253 While driving, used a special vehicle lane reserved for specific classes of vehicle, when the vehicle being driven was not one of those classes or an emergency vehicle.
This is an offence against Clause 2.3(1)(f) of the Land Transport (Road User) Rule 2004, sec40 of Land Transport Act 1998 and sched1 of Land Transport (Offences and Penalties) Regs 1999.

To defendant:

Full name: Joseph Gregory Hallett
Full address: BOX 109624
NEWMARKET
Auckland 1149

Date reminder issued: 12 Dec 2008
XRF:
Case batch No:
Occupation:
Registration: EGP253
Driver's license No:
Court:
TOC:
Date of birth: 15-Sep-1961
Gender: MALE
Notice No: T7609439
C.R. No:
TNO:

Being

1 A moving vehicle infringement offence ☐
2 An overloading infringement offence ☐
3 A stationary vehicle infringement offence ☐
4 Any offence (other than a moving vehicle infringement offence, overloading infringement offence or stationary vehicle infringement offence) specified in the Second Schedule of the Transport Act 1962. ☐
5 Any other offence specified as an infringement offence against the Land Transport Act 1998 ☒

Infringement issued by: 233
(name or number, if any, of officer who issued notice)

Service details to be provided for filing at court

Infringement notice
Served by ordinary post on 19/09/2008

Reminder notice
Served by ordinary post at Box 109624 Newmarket Auckland

*Full address at which the reminder notice was served.

Court record

The penalty for the offence is:

Infringement fee or the amount of the infringement fee remaining unpaid (excluding towage fee) $150.00
Towage fee: $0.00 Total payable: $150.00

This is your only reminder before court action is taken. The last day for payment is 28 days after service of this notice. Payment is due by 16 January 2009
Cheques, etc, should be made out to the informant and crossed "not negotiable". Payment must be made to the informant at the address shown above.
If you wish to deny the offence or wish to have a court consider submissions in respect of the offence, follow the directions in paragraphs 2 to 4 printed overleaf.

Remittance advice

IFT7609439 0000150.00 16012009ACI

Please ensure this remittance advice accompanies all payments.
Part payments are not accepted.
Procedures for payment of this infringement fee are printed on the back of this remittance advice and can be sent to:
Auckland City Council, Private Bag 92502 Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141

Full name and address:
Joseph Gregory Hallett
Box 109624
Newmarket
Auckland 1149

Date of offence: 19th September 2008
Notice number: T7609439
Registration No: EGP253
Total fee payable: $150.00

Deal with this now, before it becomes a problem.
Costs could grow much larger if this goes to court.
Please ignore this notice if the payment has already been made.

⑈0822⑈ ⑈20000760943 9⑈ ⑈0000000000⑈ ⑇0000015000⑇

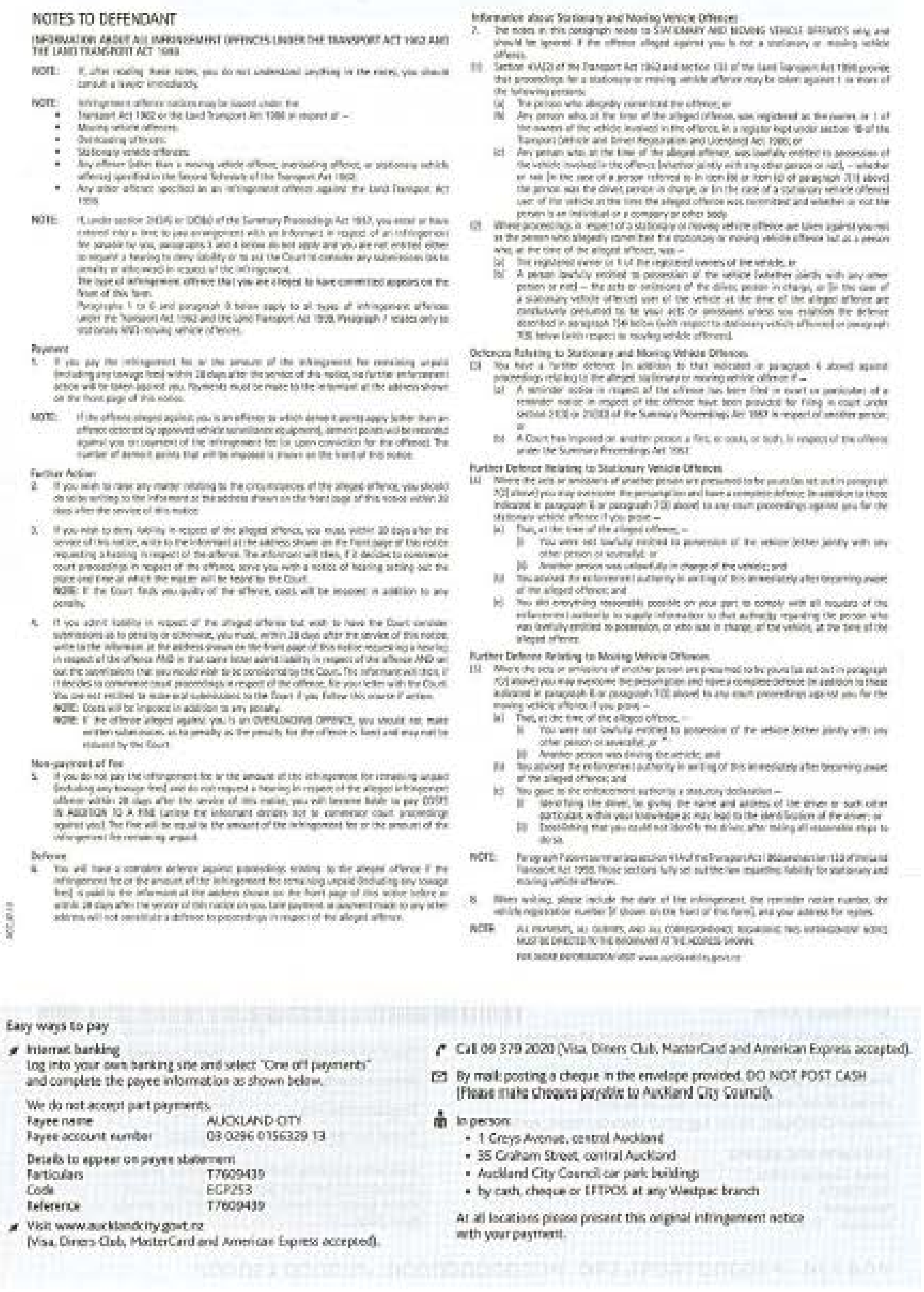

NOTES TO DEFENDANT

INFORMATION ABOUT ALL INFRINGEMENT OFFENCES UNDER THE TRANSPORT ACT 1962 AND THE LAND TRANSPORT ACT 1998

Easy ways to pay

Internet banking
Log into your own banking site and select "One off payments" and complete the payee information as shown below.

We do not accept part payments.
Payee name AUCKLAND CITY
Payee account number 09 0296 0156329 13

Details to appear on payee statement
Particulars T7609439
Code EGP253
Reference T7609439

Visit www.aucklandcity.govt.nz
(Visa, Diners Club, MasterCard and American Express accepted).

Call 09 379 2020 (Visa, Diners Club, MasterCard and American Express accepted).

By mail: posting a cheque in the envelope provided. DO NOT POST CASH
(Please make cheques payable to Auckland City Council).

In person:
- 1 Greys Avenue, central Auckland
- 35 Graham Street, central Auckland
- Auckland City Council car park buildings
- by cash, cheque or EFTPOS at any Westpac branch

At all locations please present this original infringement notice with your payment.

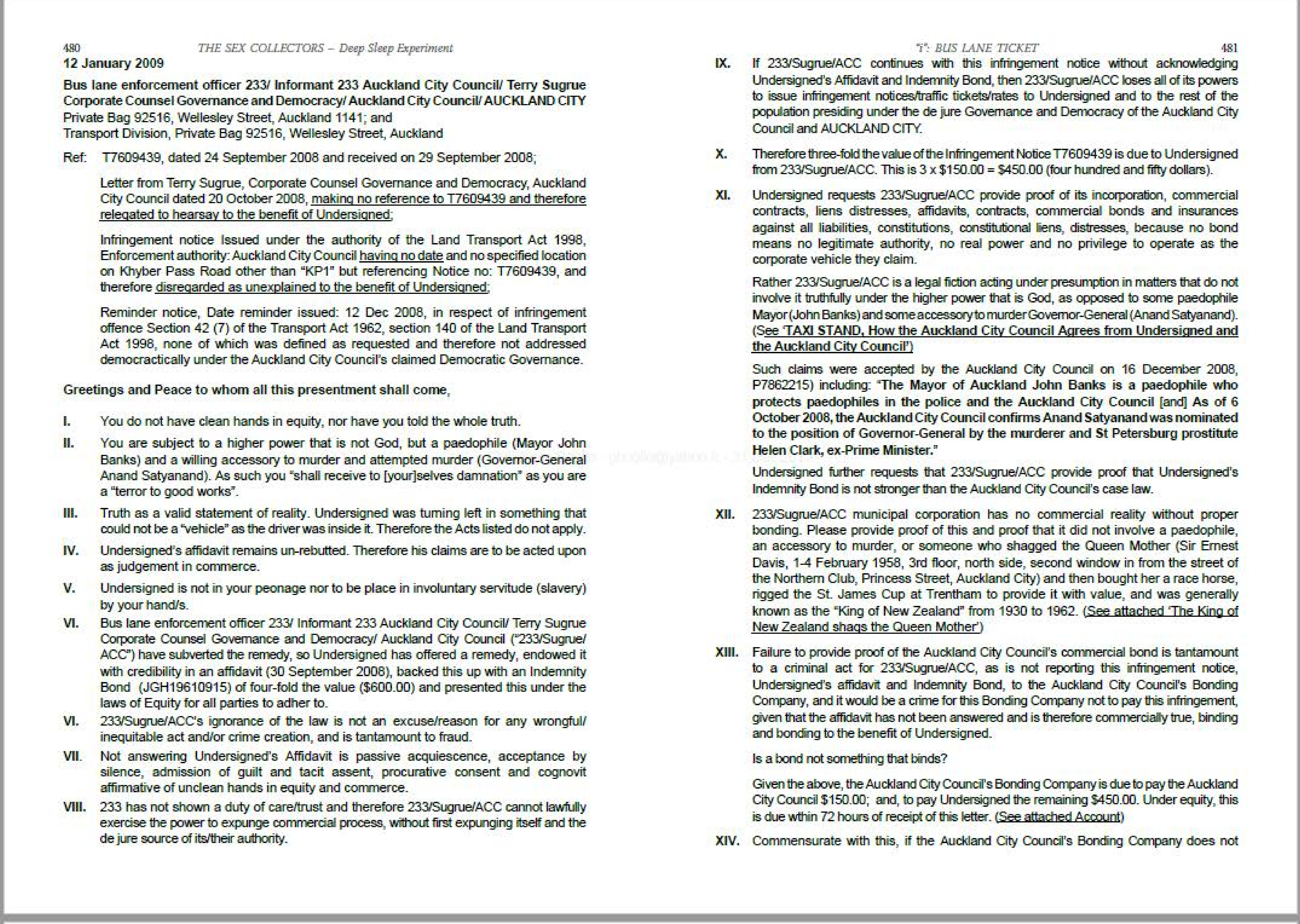

12 January 2009

Bus lane enforcement officer 233/ Informant 233 Auckland City Council/ Terry Sugrue
Corporate Counsel Governance and Democracy/ Auckland City Council/ AUCKLAND CITY
Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141; and
Transport Division, Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland

Ref: T7609439, dated 24 September 2008 and received on 29 September 2008;

Letter from Terry Sugrue, Corporate Counsel Governance and Democracy, Auckland City Council dated 20 October 2008, making no reference to T7609439 and therefore relegated to hearsay to the benefit of Undersigned;

Infringement notice Issued under the authority of the Land Transport Act 1998, Enforcement authority: Auckland City Council having no date and no specified location on Khyber Pass Road other than “KP1” but referencing Notice no: T7609439, and therefore disregarded as unexplained to the benefit of Undersigned;

Reminder notice, Date reminder issued: 12 Dec 2008, in respect of infringement offence Section 42 (7) of the Transport Act 1962, section 140 of the Land Transport Act 1998, none of which was defined as requested and therefore not addressed democractically under the Auckland City Council’s claimed Democratic Governance.

Greetings and Peace to whom all this presentment shall come,

I. You do not have clean hands in equity, nor have you told the whole truth.

II. You are subject to a higher power that is not God, but a paedophile (Mayor John Banks) and a willing accessory to murder and attempted murder (Governor-General Anand Satyanand). As such you “shall receive to [your]selves damnation” as you are a “terror to good works”.

III. Truth as a valid statement of reality. Undersigned was turning left in something that could not be a “vehicle” as the driver was inside it. Therefore the Acts listed do not apply.

IV. Undersigned’s affidavit remains un-rebutted. Therefore his claims are to be acted upon as judgement in commerce.

V. Undersigned is not in your peonage nor to be place in involuntary servitude (slavery) by your hand/s.

VI. Bus lane enforcement officer 233/ Informant 233 Auckland City Council/ Terry Sugrue Corporate Counsel Governance and Democracy/ Auckland City Council (“233/Sugrue/ ACC”) have subverted the remedy, so Undersigned has offered a remedy, endowed it with credibility in an affidavit (30 September 2008), backed this up with an Indemnity Bond (JGH19610915) of four-fold the value ($600.00) and presented this under the laws of Equity for all parties to adher to.

VI. 233/Sugrue/ACC’s ignorance of the law is not an excuse/reason for any wrongful/ inequitable act and/or crime creation, and is tantamount to fraud.

VII. Not answering Undersigned’s Affidavit is passive acquiescence, acceptance by silence, admission of guilt and tacit assent, procurative consent and cognovit affirmative of unclean hands in equity and commerce.

VIII. 233 has not shown a duty of care/trust and therefore 233/Sugrue/ACC cannot lawfully exercise the power to expunge commercial process, without first expunging itself and the de jure source of its/their authority.

IX. If 233/Sugrue/ACC continues with this infringement notice without acknowledging Undersigned’s Affidavit and Indemnity Bond, then 233/Sugrue/ACC loses all of its powers to issue infringement notices/traffic tickets/rates to Undersigned and to the rest of the population presiding under the de jure Governance and Democracy of the Auckland City Council and AUCKLAND CITY.

X. Therefore three-fold the value of the Infringement Notice T7609439 is due to Undersigned from 233/Sugrue/ACC. This is 3 x $150.00 = $450.00 (four hundred and fifty dollars).

XI. Undersigned requests 233/Sugrue/ACC provide proof of its incorporation, commercial contracts, liens distresses, affidavits, contracts, commercial bonds and insurances against all liabilities, constitutions, constitutional liens, distresses, because no bond means no legitimate authority, no real power and no privilege to operate as the corporate vehicle they claim.

Rather 233/Sugrue/ACC is a legal fiction acting under presumption in matters that do not involve it truthfully under the higher power that is God, as opposed to some paedophile Mayor (John Banks) and some accessory to murder Governor-General (Anand Satyanand). (See **‘TAXI STAND, How the Auckland City Council Agrees from Undersigned and the Auckland City Council’**)

Such claims were accepted by the Auckland City Council on 16 December 2008, P7862215) including: “**The Mayor of Auckland John Banks is a paedophile who protects paedophiles in the police and the Auckland City Council [and] As of 6 October 2008, the Auckland City Council confirms Anand Satyanand was nominated to the position of Governor-General by the murderer and St Petersburg prostitute Helen Clark, ex-Prime Minister.**”

Undersigned further requests that 233/Sugrue/ACC provide proof that Undersigned’s Indemnity Bond is not stronger than the Auckland City Council’s case law.

XII. 233/Sugrue/ACC municipal corporation has no commercial reality without proper bonding. Please provide proof of this and proof that it did not involve a paedophile, an accessory to murder, or someone who shagged the Queen Mother (Sir Ernest Davis, 1-4 February 1958, 3rd floor, north side, second window in from the street of the Northern Club, Princess Street, Auckland City) and then bought her a race horse, rigged the St. James Cup at Trentham to provide it with value, and was generally known as the “King of New Zealand” from 1930 to 1962. (See attached ‘The King of New Zealand shags the Queen Mother’)

XIII. Failure to provide proof of the Auckland City Council’s commercial bond is tantamount to a criminal act for 233/Sugrue/ACC, as is not reporting this infringement notice, Undersigned’s affidavit and Indemnity Bond, to the Auckland City Council’s Bonding Company, and it would be a crime for this Bonding Company not to pay this infringement, given that the affidavit has not been answered and is therefore commercially true, binding and bonding to the benefit of Undersigned.

Is a bond not something that binds?

Given the above, the Auckland City Council’s Bonding Company is due to pay the Auckland City Council $150.00; and, to pay Undersigned the remaining $450.00. Under equity, this is due wthin 72 hours of receipt of this letter. (See attached Account)

XIV. Commensurate with this, if the Auckland City Council’s Bonding Company does not get 233 prosecuted for criminal malpractise within sixty (60) days (by 3 December 2008) then the Auckland City Council's Bonding Company is required to pay the $150.00 infringement and Undersigned's $450.00 at ninety (90) days (by 2 January 2009) as a defaulted lien process.

Since Undersigned has received no evidence that the above has occurred, Undersigned encloses the account for $450.00 due for payment within 72 hours of receipt of this document.

Further Undersigned requests that Bus lane enforcement officer 233/ Informant 233 and Terry Sugrue of the Corporate Counsel Governance and Democracy be removed from the Auckland City Council for the above reason, for not maintaining clean hands in equity, and for not telling the whole truth:

a. Undersigned requested a photograph. It was not provided.
b. 233 did not take/provide a photograph of the rear of the vehicle turning left.
c. No points in the affidavit were answered, and therefore stand.

XV. Further, it is illegal for a judge to expunge Undersigned's affidavit without a counter-affidavit (of which none has been presented or referred to).

A jury is also required.

Therefore, if the Auckland City Council is to continue to claim it requires an affidavit and a High Court hearing, with a jury of Undersigned's peers.

Since Undersigned is the Prince of New Spain, the Auckland City Council may find this difficult.

XVI. The alternative is for the Auckland City Council to provide a Commercial Affidavit and a Commercial Liability Bond, but the Auckland City Council is out of time. More than 3 days, 28 days, 30 days, 60 days and 90 days have passed and Undersigned has neither seen or been presented with either.

XVII. Any summary[3] judgement done will thus be a violation of commercial law.

XVIII. The Auckland City Council cannot make an unbonded ruling without declaring martial law, suspending commerce and making a general and public declaration of such.

XIX. Further, it is tax fraud to use statute courts to settle a matter which is being attempted to be settled peacefully outside the courts, unless a corporate court is used, but then the Auckland City Council has not provided any proof of its Bonding Company, or that it is not working for the Chinese Government.

XX. Any police involved must first demonstrate that they are individually bonded to the Auckland City Council.

XXI. The Auckland City Council officials 233 and Terry Sugrue have both abridged their obligation of trust, contract and commercial lien without proper cause and are therefore in commercial dishonour, and by default, they are lien debtors who have forfeited their security on the lien (4 x $150) $600.00, which is therefore due to Undersigned as of 2 January 2009, the breach of which is a Pound breach, a breach of impoundment, and is a crime of conversion, such as car conversion, which is a tort[4] (wrong injustice) and carries strict liabilities as a wrongful act and wrongful infringement. (See attached Account)

XXII. It is against The Law for a Judge to summarily remove, dismiss, dissolve or diminish any commercial lien; or to ignore the Indemnity Bond of $600,00; or to ignore that it is now due, and has been due from 2 January 2009, and is now due within 72 hours of receipt of this document.

XXIII. Only Undersigned or a High Court jury can dissolve this commercial lien/Indemnity bond. Undersigned does not dissolve the Indemnity bond, but claims it at the full value of $600.00. Undersigned choses to offset the Bus Lane Infringement (if there ever was one, or could be one) to the value of $150.00 upon proof that Undersigned was not turning left into Suiter to Driving Sound (corner of Suiter and 394 Khyber Pass Road) in order to have his car stereo fixed, namely radio channels not maintaining their settings (See attached 'Driving Sound & Battery receipts') and that this was not caused by a weak battery which was then replaced by purchase from the Newmarket Warehouse for $150.00, the same price as the whorehouse the whorehouse where everyone gets a bargain, and that this company, The Warehouse, was not owned by Jenny Shipley and Ruth Richardson, and that Jenny Shipley's daughter was not involved in some beheadings in Australia with her Islamic taxi-driving boyfriend and that she assisted the murders by helping to store the decapitated bodies in the home freezer, and that this is how the Labour Government (Luv'ment) got into power in 1999. (See attached 'Ms. Shipley's Murders')

XXIV. Please provide the name, address and telephone number of 233/Sugrue/ACC's public liability/hazard and malpractice bonding company, the policy number of the bond and a certified copy of such policy describing the bonding coverage as to their specific job performance.

Failure to do so is further grounds to impose a lien upon 233/Sugrue to remove them from public office, and to warrant their public oath, their signature at the bottom of their letters and number attached to their position, as worthless, only warranting a carbon tax.

Further to the 30 September 2008 letter, points 1–37, the Auckland City Council, by way of non-rebuttal, passive acquiescence, acceptance by silence, admission of guilt, tacit assent, procurative consent, and cognovit affirmative, with unclean hands in equity and commerce, and within the timeframes of Equity, confirms the following:

2. There is no definition for "a special vehicle lane" and a vehicle has two wheels, not four.
3. Section 118(1) of the Land Transport Act 1998 has no definition.
5. A Bus lane does not exist.
6. One cannot drive a four (4) wheel vehicle or have a driver in a vehicle.
7. There is no such thing as a "road" on land.
8. A "Bus lane" does not come under the Land Transport (Road User) Rule 2004 part 2.3(1).
10. It is legal to turn left from a Bus lane.

---

[3] *Black's Eighth Law Dictionary, **Summary judgment***: A judgement granted on a claim of defence about which there is no genuine issue of material fact and upon which the *movant* is entitled to prevail as a matter of law . . . This procedural device allows for the speedy disposition of controversy without the need of a trial.

[4] *Concise Oxford Dictionary*: tort ; noun; Law: a wrongful act or an infringement of a right (other than under contract) leading to legal liability; ORIGIN: Latin tortum, 'wrong, injustice', tortious /torshəss; adjective: Law, constituting a tort; wrongful.

11. It is legal to travel in a Bus lane for 100 metres when turning left.

12. A Bus lane (2007) was never included in the Land Transport (Road User) Rule 2004.

16. Bus lane enforcement officer 233 is, by his own admission, an informant for the Auckland City Council/ Chinese Government/ Auckland area paedophile movement/ Mayor John Banks and is in commercial dishonour.

17. 233/Sugrue/ACC and Appointed Fiduciary mayor John Banks confirms that the Mayor of Auckland, the Hon. Johh Banks is a paedophile; the Auckland Regional Council senior Chairman Mike Lee was married to a child prostitute and was the last male to have sex with Helen Clark, ousted Prime Minister; the Auckland City Council employs child prostitutes as City Counsellors; Gary Taylor, who runs Auckland City, filmed his wife having sex with other Labour Party members; and the above was the primary influence on 233 not filming the rear of the car as it turned left from the bus lane.

18. No photograph, either front on, or from the back exists.

21. 233 has no bond with the Auckland City Council, no public liability insurance, and no hazard bond numbers.

22. 233 has no powers to issue an infringement notice and no bond.

23. The Auckland City Council is a legal fiction.

24. Bus Lane Enforcement Officer 233 is a legal fiction whose only status is a uniform.

25. 233 is an illegal immigrant.

26. The Auckland City Council employs fictional entities so that others may draw their wage.

27. Indians are collecting the wages of Pariah, Harijans, Untouchables, Outcastes and are working the Indian caste system in New Zealand for the benefit of Sudras, Vaisyas, Kshatriya, Brahmin, and the Indian Governor-General Anand Satyanand.

    The Auckland City Council requires a certain amount of English to be spoken by their staff. Since 233 appears unable to respond to his letters, Undersigned summises that this is insufficient to order a steak.

28. Bus lane enforcement officer 233/ Enforcement Officer requesting information: 233/ Informant 233 appears to have two or more identities, none of which are properly bonded.

31. Undersigned received a response from the Auckland City Council on 7 January 2009 in defense of their involvement in the attempted murders of Joseph Gregory Hallett as ordered by the former Prime Minister Helen Clark who is a Tavistock St Petersburg prostitute who tried to murder Joseph Gregory Hallett on 2 April 2002, 23 August 2002, and 14–22 May 2004; and where, to all intents and purposes, the Auckland City Council acted as an accomplice to a breach of the Declaration of Helsinki – that is, accessory to murder followed by Auckland City Council fines to pay for these murder attempts.

    Out of the five accused in the NOTICE/S OF GENERAL APPEAL under the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 in the Auckland District Court on the 2 July 2008 (C.R.I. 2006-004-021-217) only the Auckland City Council has put up a defense and taken this to the High Court – due to be heard on 20 April 2009.

    THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE, Helen Elizabeth Clark, Sian Seerpoohi Elias, and James Matewhinau Cassin have presented no defense as they have no defense.

32. This is an official private equitable administrative proceeding with integrity, to settle all outstanding matters between the parties as your venue appears of its own, unable to settle and close the account. Undersigned is authorised to do this under several of the non-exclusive laws of New Zealand in order to achieve remedy.

    233/Sugrue/ACC appear to have failed to seek the necessary and timely counsel.

33. The Justice of the Peace (JP's) are the area paedophile minders who report directly to the Governor-General, who is the Chief Boy Scout/ Girl Guide, and in collusion, this paedophile arrangement is overseen in Auckland by the paedophile Mayor, Hon. John Banks, formerly the Minister of Police, who protected paedophiles in the police, in all localities within New Zealand, and in the Auckland City Council.

34. The Auckland City Council confirms that it works closely with the Police.

35. The Auckland City Council confirms that the former Auckland Area Commander Clint Rickards was New Zealand's worst ever rapist who worked closely with the Police Commissioner's Support Group (from 25 November 2003 or thereabouts), and the Ombudsman Anand Sayanand (from 23 March 2004 or thereabouts) who is now the Governor-General, as nominated by the murderer and St Petersburg prostitute, Prime Minister Helen Clark.

    Take notice that failure to respond within the equitable 7 days has been taken as confirmation by the Auckland City Council that the above is indeed true correct complete certain and 233/Sugrue/ACC is now (with sufficient notice and without lawful excuse) known to be in ongoing collusion with such immoral behaviours as to be a public nuisance.

    233/Sugrue/ACC are partners in crime with the New Zealand Police and knowingly assist child molestors and rapists.

36. The Indian Governor-General, Anand Sayanand, is running Auckland City Council Informants/ Enforcement Officers/ Pariah/ Harijans/ Untouchables/ Outcastes under the Indian caste system for the benefit of the reincarnated Vaishyas, Kshatriya and/or Brahmin and himself.

37. 233 is a public nuisance contrary to any local government act currently in force.

38. Since no honourable reply has been presented within 90 days the Indemnity Bond is enforceable.

39. Undersigned questions why the document dated 30 September 2008 and presented to ACC and seeking clarification was not returned to Undersigned with any answers to his legitimate queries.

40. 233/Sugrue/ACC did not respond within 72 hours (Equity) or within 7 days (as stipulated) but at 19 days at best. Therefore it is taken by all concerned that T7609439 has no lawful or legal validity and has no infringement fee attached, and all queries and statements made in Undersigned's 30 September 2008 letter are true and correct to the benefit of Undersigned and are to be compensated for accordingly, promptly and within 72 hours of receipt of this letter (i.e. 12 January 2009 and by 15 January 2009).

Further, all other statements made in Undersigned's 30 September 2008 letter are true, and all matters lodged between Joseph Gregory Hallett and the Auckland City Council on 2 July 2008 are in the material favour of Joseph Gregory Hallett, and are to be compensated for accordingly, promptly, and within 72 hours from note of date of failure to respond.

Take notice that the Auckland City Council has been cited as an accessory to attempted murder, and by association, accessory to the murders that were carried out.

Failure to respond has occurred. The terms of the Indemnity Bond stand. $600.00 is due from the Auckland City Council to Undersigned.

With the Undersigned's sincerest appreciation in anticipation of your continued honourable services and assistance, moreover as time is of the essence, he entreats you govern yourself accordingly as your oaths of office dictate, now with sufficient judicial notice that the prevailing rules of equity shall apply and properly, without failure of consideration, be taken into deliberation thereof.

Yours sincerely,

Joseph Gregory Hallett
aka Prince of New Spain
PO Box 109 624 Newmarket | Auckland | New Zealand
Gmail: princeofnewspain
Please note: "New Spain" is the intelligence name of 'New Zealand',
especially when dealing with matters relating to Antarctica.

Encl: 1. Account for $600.00.
2. Alternative account for $450.00.
3. Driving Sound, Battery charger, and Battery receipts
4. The King of New Zealand shags the Queen Mother.
5. Ms. Shipley's Murders.
6. **TAXI STAND** Infringement Notice of 14/11/2008;
Undersigned's letter in response of 24 November 2008; and
Auckland City Council's letter of infringement cancellation of 16-Dec-2008,
taken as confirmation by ACC of everything contained in Undersigned's letter.

Auckland City Council
12 JAN 2009

Tax Invoice Statement
in favour of Joseph Gregory Hallett

12 January 2009

Auckland City Council
Private Bag 92516
Wellesley Street
Auckland 1141

Attn: Bus lane enforcement officer 233/ Informant 233 Auckland City Council
Terry Sugrue Corporate Counsel Governance and Democracy
Transport Division, Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland
AUCKLAND CITY

Ref: **T7609439 and Indemnity Bond JGH19610915**

$450.00 is due within 72 hours, by 15 January 2009.

This being made up of the $600.00 Indemnity Bond known to be in the Auckland City Council's possession, less the disputed $150 Bus lane infringement.

I look forward to your response within the equitable timeframes.

Kind regards to your good self.

Guillaume Boglio - gboglio@yahoo.it

Yours sincerely,

Joseph Gregory Hallett
aka Prince of New Spain
PO Box 109 624 Newmarket | Auckland | New Zealand
Gmail: princeofnewspain
Please note: "New Spain" is the intelligence name of 'New Zealand',
especially when dealing with matters relating to Antarctica.

Tax Invoice Statement
in favour of Joseph Gregory Hallett

12 January 2009

Auckland City Council
Private Bag 92516
Wellesley Street
Auckland 1141

Attn: Bus lane enforcement officer 233/ Informant 233 Auckland City Council
Terry Sugrue Corporate Counsel Governance and Democracy
Transport Division, Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland
AUCKLAND CITY

Ref: T7609439 and Indemnity Bond JGH19610915

$600 is due within 72 hours, by 15 January 2009.

This is made up of the $600.00 Indemnity Bond known to be in the Auckland City Council's possession.

Since Undersigned's queries relating to the disputed $150 Bus lane infringement have not been answered, this is now due from the appropriate Bonding agencies to the Auckland City Council and not from Undersigned.

Kind regards to your good self.

Yours sincerely,

Joseph Gregory Hallett
aka Prince of New Spain
PO Box 109 624 Newmarket | Auckland | New Zealand
Gmail: princeofnewspain

Please note: "New Spain" is the Intelligence name of 'New Zealand', especially when dealing with matters relating to Antarctica.

Driving Sound & Battery reciepts

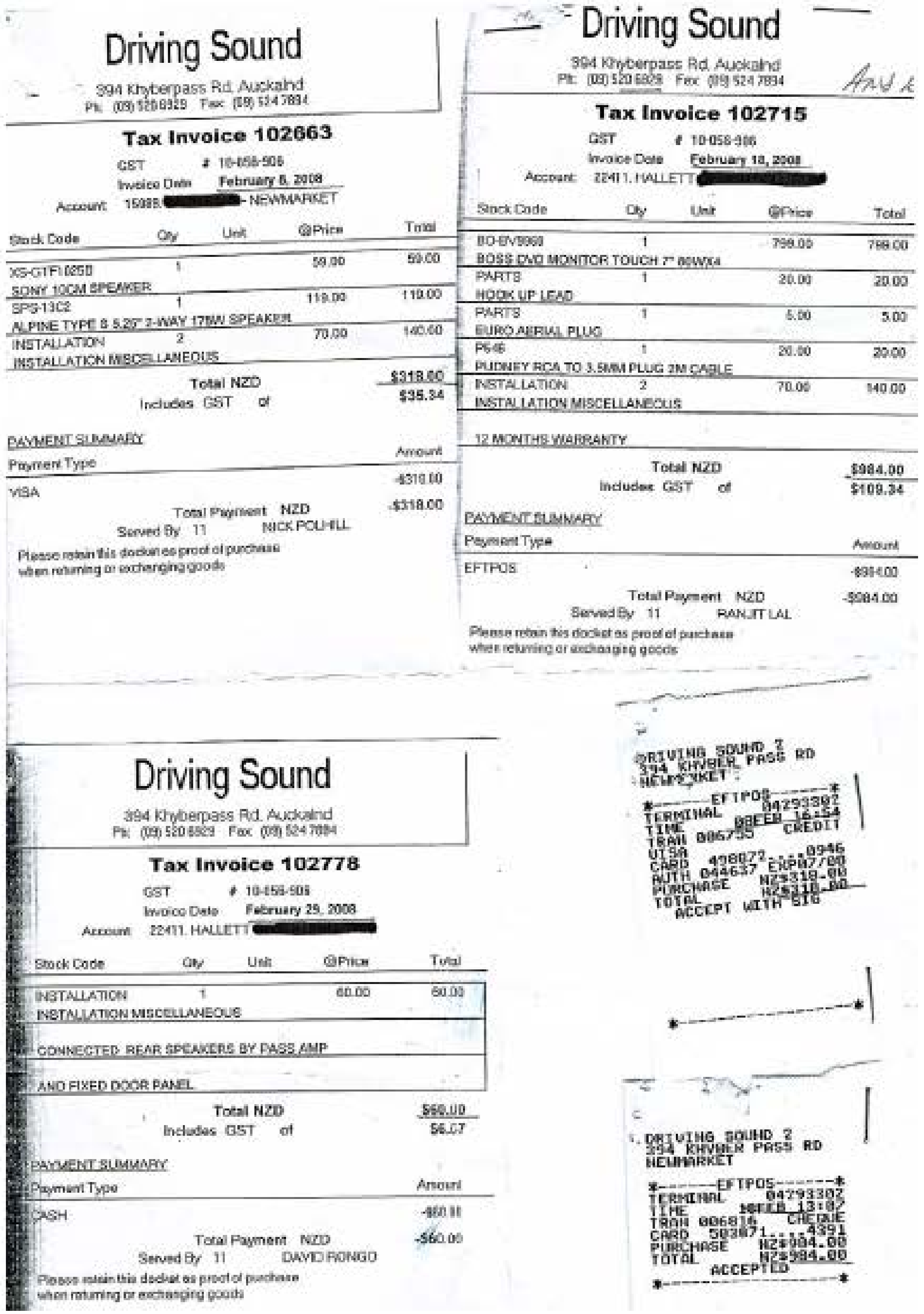

Driving Sound
394 Khyberpass Rd, Auckalnd
Ph: (09) 520 6929 Fax: (09) 524 7894

Tax Invoice 102663
GST # 10-056-506
Invoice Date February 8, 2008
Account: 15095 [redacted] - NEWMARKET

Stock Code	Qty	Unit	@Price	Total
XS-GTF1025D SONY 10CM SPEAKER	1		59.00	59.00
SPS-13C2 ALPINE TYPE S 5.20" 2-WAY 175W SPEAKER	1		119.00	119.00
INSTALLATION INSTALLATION MISCELLANEOUS	2		70.00	140.00

Total NZD $318.00
Includes GST of $35.34

PAYMENT SUMMARY

Payment Type	Amount
VISA	-$318.00

Total Payment NZD -$318.00
Served By 11 NICK POLHILL
Please retain this docket as proof of purchase when returning or exchanging goods

Driving Sound
394 Khyberpass Rd, Auckalnd
Ph: (09) 520 6929 Fax: (09) 524 7894

Tax Invoice 102715
GST # 10-056-506
Invoice Date February 18, 2008
Account: 22411. HALLETT [redacted]

Stock Code	Qty	Unit	@Price	Total
BO-BV9960 BOSS DVD MONITOR TOUCH 7" 80WX4	1		799.00	799.00
PARTS HOOK UP LEAD	1		20.00	20.00
PARTS EURO AERIAL PLUG	1		5.00	5.00
P646 PUDNEY RCA TO 3.5MM PLUG 2M CABLE	1		20.00	20.00
INSTALLATION INSTALLATION MISCELLANEOUS	2		70.00	140.00
12 MONTHS WARRANTY				

Total NZD $984.00
Includes GST of $109.34

PAYMENT SUMMARY

Payment Type	Amount
EFTPOS	-$984.00

Total Payment NZD -$984.00
Served By 11 RANJIT LAL
Please retain this docket as proof of purchase when returning or exchanging goods

Driving Sound
394 Khyberpass Rd, Auckalnd
Ph: (09) 520 6929 Fax: (09) 524 7894

Tax Invoice 102778
GST # 10-056-506
Invoice Date February 29, 2008
Account: 22411. HALLETT [redacted]

Stock Code	Qty	Unit	@Price	Total
INSTALLATION INSTALLATION MISCELLANEOUS	1		60.00	60.00
CONNECTED REAR SPEAKERS BY PASS AMP				
AND FIXED DOOR PANEL				

Total NZD $60.00
Includes GST of $6.67

PAYMENT SUMMARY

Payment Type	Amount
CASH	-$60.00

Total Payment NZD -$60.00
Served By 11 DAVID RONGO
Please retain this docket as proof of purchase when returning or exchanging goods

DRIVING SOUND 2
394 KHYBER PASS RD
NEWMARKET
--------EFTPOS--------
TERMINAL 04293302
TIME 08FEB 16:54
TRAN 006755 CREDIT
VISA 0946
CARD 498072.....
AUTH 044637 EXP07/09
PURCHASE NZ$318.00
TOTAL NZ$318.00
ACCEPT WITH SIG

DRIVING SOUND 2
394 KHYBER PASS RD
NEWMARKET
--------EFTPOS--------
TERMINAL 04293302
TIME 18FEB 13:07
TRAN 006816 CHEQUE
CARD 503871.....4391
PURCHASE NZ$984.00
TOTAL NZ$984.00
ACCEPTED

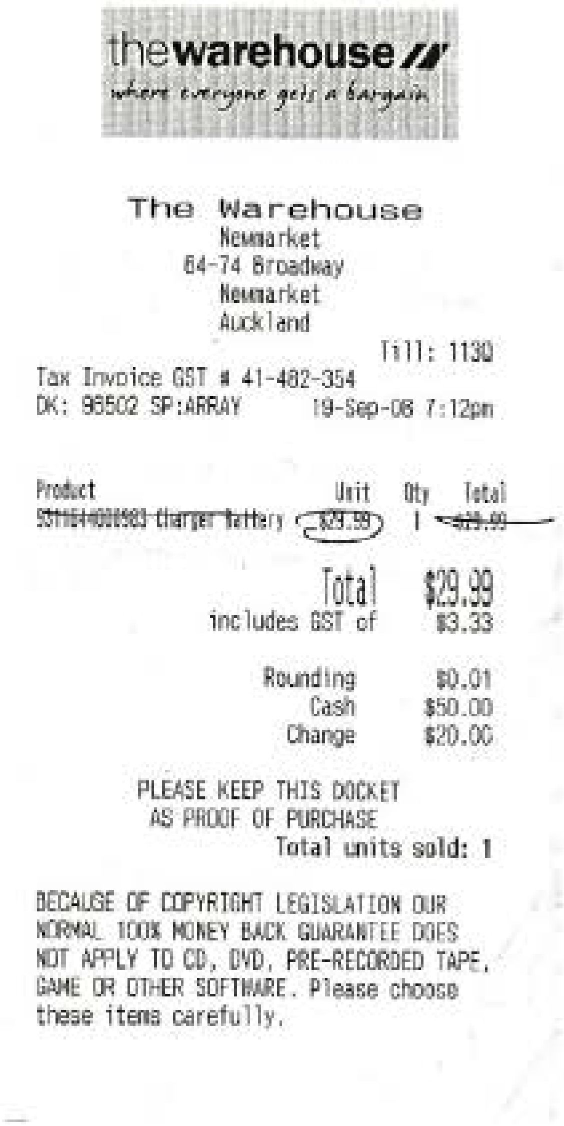

thewarehouse
where everyone gets a bargain

The Warehouse
Newmarket
64-74 Broadway
Newmarket
Auckland
Till: 1130
Tax Invoice GST # 41-482-354
DK: 96502 SP:ARRAY 19-Sep-08 7:12pm

Product Unit Qty Total
~~9311644000983 Charger Battery $29.99 1 $29.99~~

Total $29.99
includes GST of $3.33

Rounding $0.01
Cash $50.00
Change $20.00

PLEASE KEEP THIS DOCKET
AS PROOF OF PURCHASE
Total units sold: 1

BECAUSE OF COPYRIGHT LEGISLATION OUR NORMAL 100% MONEY BACK GUARANTEE DOES NOT APPLY TO CD, DVD, PRE-RECORDED TAPE, GAME OR OTHER SOFTWARE. Please choose these items carefully.

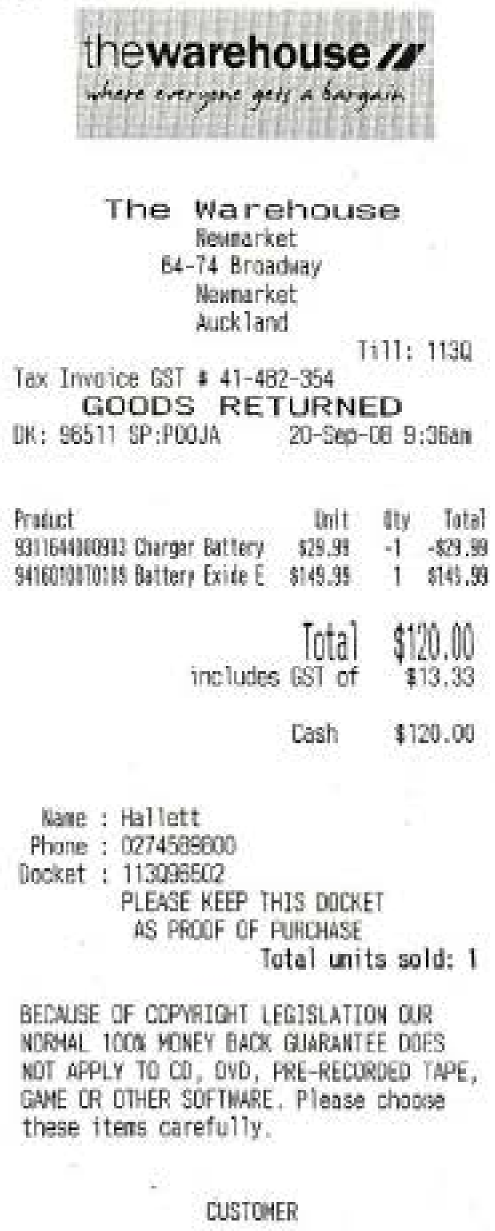

thewarehouse
where everyone gets a bargain

The Warehouse
Newmarket
64-74 Broadway
Newmarket
Auckland
Till: 1130
Tax Invoice GST # 41-482-354
GOODS RETURNED
DK: 96511 SP:POOJA 20-Sep-08 9:36am

Product Unit Qty Total
9311644000983 Charger Battery $29.99 -1 -$29.99
9416010070189 Battery Exide E $149.99 1 $149.99

Total $120.00
includes GST of $13.33

Cash $120.00

Name : Hallett
Phone : 0274589800
Docket : 113096502
PLEASE KEEP THIS DOCKET
AS PROOF OF PURCHASE
Total units sold: 1

BECAUSE OF COPYRIGHT LEGISLATION OUR NORMAL 100% MONEY BACK GUARANTEE DOES NOT APPLY TO CD, DVD, PRE-RECORDED TAPE, GAME OR OTHER SOFTWARE. Please choose these items carefully.

CUSTOMER

It should be obvious from this that the car was breaking down and had to be kept running. When it stopped, it then needed a jump start. In case the car did breakdown, the left lane was the least disruptive for all traffic. The car went to Driving Sound and then to the Warehouse for a battery charger (the same day), and when that didn't work, it went back the next day for a new battery.

The King of New Zealand shags the Queen Mother

Ernie Davis, formally known as Sir Ernest Hyam Davis, Kt (17 Feb. 1872–16 Sept. 1962) was a Jewish businessman educated at all the right schools. At 26 he joined his father's business, Hancock & Co in Auckland, and soon became chairman, then chairman of just about every other influential organisation in Auckland – the Northern Steamship Co., the Devonport Steam Ferry Co., the North Shore Transport Co., the Auckland Meat Co., New Zealand Breweries Ltd, the New Zealand Distillery Co., the Auckland Savings Bank from 1947–48 and again in 1960, and in 1962 he was made president of the Associated Trustee Savings Banks.

While Mayor of Auckland City (1935–41) he was knighted by King George VI in the 1937 Coronation Honours – a Knight Bachelor for public service. He then became New Zealand's leading horse race owner from 1952–58 and won the Auckland Cup in 1954 with Arawa. In 1957 he was made a life member of the Royal New Zealand Yacht Squadron.

Ernie Davis was also a member of the Northern Club on the corner of Princess and Kitchener Streets. In the 1950s he had his own room on the top third floor, on the north side, second window in from Princess Street. Sir Ed, as he was known, was the uncrowned King of New Zealand.

On 1 February 1958, the Queen Mother, Elizabeth Bowes-Lyon came to New Zealand and spent her first three days in Auckland with Ernie. Sir Ernie Davis (85), a widower of three years, shagged the shit out of the Queen Mother (57) in his third floor room. He even shagged her on the billiard table. To Kiwis, the 85-year-old's actions only served to confirm his status.

NEW ZEALAND CRANE HIRE

The Northern Club.

Northern Club billiard table.

The St. James Cup at Trentham (Wellington) was set up as a special race meeting to suit the Queen Mother's visit, and low and behold, Sir Ernie Davis' horse Bali Ha'i won. Ernie had rigged the race with his Jockey, Grenville Hughes, promising him all the winnings if he won.

Grenville Hughes, known as 'The Monkey', and right through the racing world 'Monkey Hughes' then promised an equal share in the winnings if Bali Ha'i won, so all the other jockeys hauled in the reigns and held their horses back while Monkey drew the whip from half-a-mile home – it was quite obvious really – and Bali Ha'i won. Monkey then shared the £6,000 winnings amongst the jockeys and the Queen Mum had her eyes on a 'proven' horse.

Mum's the word.

When the St. James Cup photo was taken on the stand at Trentham (sighted, but couldn't get a copy) it was of the jockey Grenville 'Monkey' Hughes, the well-shagged Queen Mum, the well-shagged uncrowned King of New Zealand Sir Ernest Hyam Davis, and the SIS bodyguards' Telpin and Roland Jayes (R.J. later involved in the Rural Development Finance murder). They'd come straight from the Ajax Meat Company behind the Manners Street Post Office – "No meat was delivered there, except the meat that worked there or walked through the door" – a.k.a. S.I.S. Operational HQ.

Ernie had spent three days in Auckland and four days in Wellington with the Queen Mother. Feeling a little guilty about shagging her rotten, rigging the race, and gifting the winnings – Ernie, thankful Bali Ha'i wasn't going to the glue factory, gave her the racehorse – then commissioned Edward Halliday to paint his most recent root.[5]

Then the Queen mother departed from Harewood Aerodrome in Christchurch on 14 February 1958.

Intelligence Historian: "Ernie's only son, Desmond Elias Davis (1908–58) died within months. Ernie gave his son Desmond a hard time and was virtually a dictator. The boy got pressured and I suspect died of overwork. That he died the same year as the Queen Mother's visit, shagging and horse bribe, could have been coinicidental, but Jews don't want the son becoming anything like as big a nose as the father."

---

[5] Wikipedia, slightly paraphrased: "Elizabeth Angela Marguerite Bowes-Lyon, (1900–2002) embodied traditional ideas of family and public service. She undertook a variety of public engagements, and became known as the 'Smiling Duchess' because of her consistent public expression . . . She had gin and tonic and salmon kedgeree for breakfast and hung onto the bottle of gin for the rest of the day. As Queen Consort, she took her title literally. Her husband King George VI was a notably weak man and died of a strange form of lung cancer called syphilis and she was a widow from 51. She became the senior member of the Royal Family, assumed the position of family matriarch and maintained public popularity as a roving shopping bag, clocking up some shocking bills. When Concorde first got airborne, she did a solo trip around Scotland at the cost of millions to the ire of the British taxpayer. It was then that they began to notice she was five foot nothing, vain as, and butt ugly, with yellow teeth that seemed to get sharper as they got longer – bolemic perhaps. Apart from reluctantly marrying into the royals (she had to be asked twice), she was the most indebted woman in the world, but strangely remained popular, probably due to a lack of competition. She died ranked 61st Greatest Briton, which doesn't say much for the saboteur colonisers."
'Bali Ha'i' was a Rogers and Hammerstein from 'South Pacific', based on *Tales of the South Pacific* by James A. Mitchener. and sung by Perry Como. It reached the Top Ten in 1949, then became a worldwide standard showtune.

The Outstanding Actress Of Our Day...

as Scarlett O'Hara

The following year, the Queen Mother entered Ernie's former racehorse Bali Ha'i into the Coombe Stakes at Sandown, and the Queen Alexandra Stakes at Ascot . . . Naturally it won.[6]

From the early 1930s to his death in 1962, Ernie Davis was contacted by every Prime Minister before they did anything. To do this, government officials would catch the overnight train from Wellington to Auckland and present Ernie with the government documents for him to decide either way or give his blessing. There were few exceptions and from 1930 to 1960 government ran as "What would Ernie think?", "What would Ernie do?", and "What has the King of New Zealand got to say about it?"

Sir Ernest Hyam Davis, shagger of the Queen Mother, consultant to every Prime Minister for thirty years, uncrowned King of New Zealand – Jewish.

And as a good Jew, when the Nazi's came to visit Auckland in their submarines in 1938, complete with swastika flag and Jews having already been gassed in ovens, Sir Ernie Davis gave the Nazis an official welcome, complete with Mayoral ceremony, then sat in the front row of the synagogue with his brother Elliot . . . but wait, there's more.

Vivien Leigh (1913–67) married Laurence Olivier in 1940 and the two were the most famous acting couple in the world, kind of the 'Brad and Angelina' of their times.

Olivier was knighted in 1947 at Buckingham Palace and Vivien became Lady Olivier, retaining the title after their divorce in December 1960. She was known socially as 'Vivien, Lady Olivier'.

By 1948 Olivier was on the Board of Directors for the Old Vic Theatre and the famous acting couple came out to New Zealand to raise funds for the Old Vic.

They performed 'The School for Scandal' with outstanding success, although Leigh was suffering from insomnia, became ill and her understudy replaced her for a week. The Olivier's argued with the most dramatic in Christchurch in October 1948 when Vivien refused to go on stage. Laurence slapped her on the face and Vivien slapped him one back, cursed him, went on stage, then charmed the press.

Well, there's more to this story. They were exhausted, their marriage was on the rocks and Olivier later confessed they were a couple of walking corpses.

Vivien Leigh.

Ernie Davis – the King of New Zealand – was attracted to all forms of royalty and always had a big thing for Vivien Leigh ever since she starred in 'The Mask of Virtue' (1935).

[6] *An Encyclopaedia of New Zealand 1966* – 'Racing, Horse' and 'Royal Visits'.

He knew they were fundraising for the Old Vic, so he supported Vivien Leigh, but there were strings attached.

Ernie, then 76, and too old to fuck, employed a former Jewish sailor who owned a few nightclubs (a good stickman) to root Vivien Leigh on his glass-top table as he lay underneath watching. It was September 1948.

Sir Ernest was quite a generous man so he left money in his will for a theatre to be built at Auckland University to be called the 'Vivien Leigh Theatre', as among other things, he was a great admirer of the female anatomy, and she was a great actress.

Auckland University got the money and had begun construction when *The Truth* published the story that Ernie had paid his Jewish sailor/ nightclub owner/ stickman to root Vivien Leigh on his glass-top table so he could watch, as he was a bit old to do it himself. The article also mentioned Vivien's lesbian dutch dresser who had been with her for thirty years and used to sleep with her.

That was okay by the theatre because it wasn't heterosexual sin.

Spymaster: "Laurence Olivier also rooted Bert Lancaster in Hollywood. Laurence got his big break on stage by sleeping with Sir Noel Coward, whom everyone called 'The Master'. Coward had an affair with the first Duke of Kent for 19 years, and the Duke of Kent I (King George VI' brother) wrote Coward love letters, so it was all part of the royal lineage. Coward also had affairs with Kent's half-brother, Anthony Blunt (the Queen's uncle, Art Curator and communist spy), as did the incestuous cross-dressing Duke of Kent I.

" . . . but it's treasonous to have sex with a Royal Family member without the permission of The House of Lords . . . so doesn't that make Noel Coward guilty of treason?"

Auckland University should be liberal, being a University 'n all, but they are not liberal in the ways of heterosexuality, so they had a meeting and decided they couldnt' have a theatre named after a woman – no matter how famous – who was paid to have sex on a glass-top table with a Jewish sailor, regardless of whether she was raising money for the Old Vic – the English-Speaking world's most famous and historical theatre – so they named it after some bludger who'd worked the university for years, and called it the 'Maidment' Theatre.

Dr Kenneth J. Maidment was the University's first Principal whose contribution had been building up the University's library from the smallest to the largest in the country – nothing to do with theatre, or glass-top rooting. Maidment left in 1970 and the 'Vivien Leigh Theatre' opened as the 'Maidment Theatre' on 11 April 1976 with the world's worst theatre facade.

Before 'A Clockwork Orange' came out, Sir Ernie Davis would buy women tremendously expensive outfits, two of them, then snip one off with scissors, a bit at a time, until she was naked, then he'd lie under the glass tabletop and watch her urinate, or get shagged, or both – then make all government decisions.

Mrs Brazier was a housemaid to Sir Ernie Davis and had an affair with him. Later she owned a secondhand bookshop on Dominion Road, 150 metres down from Videon where she officially she says: "Ernie Davis was a nice kind man".

Her son Graeme Brazier became the lead singer of 'Hullo Sailor' whose B-side track 'lying in the sand' became a bit of a national anthem every summer. Perhaps the name of the band was a reference to Ernie's mistresses greeting Ernie's Jewish Sailor/Nighclub owner for the performance shag with "Hullo Sailor" with the whole performance shag called 'lying in the sand'. (Mrs Brazier also had an older son, Tim.)

Graeme Brazier.

Deirdre Smith also did this several times and would take her new £200 back to 60 Grafton Road (1 km from where she grew up behind the Nestlé factory south of Constitution Hill) shout her flatmates £5 or £6 in hamburgers and fill up the flat with food.

James K. Baxter also used to live there, as did this author. Baxter would walk around farting saying: "Ooops! Shot another Angel" – yet another reason why he was New Zealand's worst Catholic and the flat smelt like fart.

The four top Italian models toured the world then came to New Zealand for a month in search of another "Italian Model" to go with them. The quarter-cast Tongan Deirdre Smith became New Zealand's "Italian Model of the Year" and toured the world as an Italian beauty. Postwar, the Italians were marketing beauty . . . then Deirdre married a film director.

Then Bette Davis (1908–89) came to Auckland and Sir Ernie Davis gave her the Queen's Arcade, a rather regal shopping mall at the bottom of Queen Street.

Ernie Davis' Bagman was Norman Douglas. Norman carried Ernie Davis' letters to and from Government in Wellington just after the table top rooting and urination. By that time, Norman Douglas had a son Roger, who became Roger Douglas, Minister of Broadcasting, then Minister of Finance – partly because of this connection as he knew how things were run and had **THE SEX COLLECTION** on New Zealand politicians, and the King of New Zealand.

But Roger Douglas became the Minister of Finance mainly because he was a compromised paedophile, and he was knighted Sir Roger Douglas to seal the cover.

So I'd be happy to pay the Bus Lane infringement, and even forgo the Indemnity Bond, as long as the Auckland City Council can change the name of the '**Maidment Theatre**' to the '**Vivien Leigh Theatre**' because Kenneth Maidment sucks and Vivien Leigh blows.

See Glamorous
BETTE DAVIS

Ms. Shipley's Murders
THE WHITE HOUSE PROJECT
Women Leaders
INTERCULTURAL FORUM

Friend of the Family . . .

Jenny Shipley's daughter was jailed in Sydney, Australia for one or two years for her part in some very strange murders. She was a girlfriend of a wog cabby (Mid-Eastern cab driver) who stalked people in known homosexual haunts in a park in inner-city Sydney. He shot them with a cross-bow then threw the body in the boot of his taxi, took them to the Wog&Shipley home, quarterised the body – limbs and head off – and placed the body parts in the freezer.

This came to the attention of the Sydney police when Ms Shipley returned to Ashburton, went down to the local cop shop and ranted and raved how she was mixed up with a guy that killed people and chopped them up into parts.

Ms Shipley Jr. came back from one of her drug sojourns in Sydney (suspected of methampetamine use – 'P') and four days later, when the drugs wore off, she was back in New Zealand, had a fit of conscience and went down to the local Wallopers shop and told the local Sergeant that she was mixed up with a mid-Eastern guy who was stalking fags, shot them, then chopped them up.

The Ashburton Sergeant then rang his counterpart in Sydney and asked if there were any chopped up fag bodies that they'd come across. He answered in the negative. So the local Sergeant just thought it was another teenage drug-crazed rave and he attributed that to Ms Shipley jnr. coming down off the P.

Six months down the track a torso was discovered in a Sydney tidal creek. It had been kept in the freezer for six months, then tied down in the creek, but had come unstuck.

One of the bodies was identified as Richard Dempsey, a known homosexual, son of William Dempsey of Ponsonby, Auckland and a Maori woman he had several kids with and then walked out on. She had worked at the Pacific Sauna at the top of Symonds Street in the old days.

Leave a kid fatherless and there's a greater chance they will turn out fag – and dead fag.

The Senior Sergeant of Ashburton put two and two together, came to the right result and figured that she was telling the truth. Ms Shipley Jr. was subsequently charged and jailed for being an accessory after the fact (she obviously knew about it) and the wog cabby was convicted of murder over the bodies.

These events were more or less reported in the front page of the *New Zealand Herald* in about 12 lines in a single column, including Ms Shipley Jr.'s incarceration, but only identifying her as a New Zealand woman.

All the while Ms Jenny Shipley Sr. was Prime Minister of New Zealand, so little to nothing was said about it.

Jenny dismisses her child to this day. But even more embarrassing was the timing. Jenny wanted to 'bring back the Birch' and prosecute beneficiaries whose children were playing up.

THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE covered up for Jenny, but she was thereafter subject to blackmail by THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE and their Commissioner.

Jenny Shipley had a mild heart attack as a rather overweight big fat bitch and has since had a stomach tuck. The heart attack could have been caused by people's ongoing reaction to her – one of "Oh no, a bull with tits!" – only to be beaten by the enemy, "Here comes Mrs Bull" [Helen Clark].

Prime Minister Jenny Shipley left government in disgrace and Ms Shipley Jr. has since been disowned and extracated from the family.

Shipley, or 'Shapley' as jokers tend to call her, then got promoted to roving Ambassador throughout China so she could buy up cheap goods for her Warehouse – 'the whorehouse, the whorehouse, where everyone gets a bargain' – and the rest is history as they say.

Her supressed status as Ambassador to China is more or less an ongoing government-funded shopping trip that undercuts local retailers, puts them out of business, and destroys the local communities.

When ex-PM Shipley was strolling down Parnell Road just before the 8 November 2008 Election, the Prince of New Spain was heading up the hill and muttered "murderer" as she walked past. Her two female bodyguards/ companions/ gossipers looked at each other knowingly, but only Jenny Shapely knew PoNS was referring to her murder of Kimball Johnson – a New Zealand Govt./ Police contract murderer, who complained to THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE that they were giving him too much work, and:

'Why didn't they do some of it themselves?'

Prime Minister Jenny Shipley.

To her credit, Jenny Shipley was a former South Island swimming champion.

But wait, there's more.

Whilst on the campaign trail for the 1999 Election, at the Lakeland Motor Inn in Taupo, incumbent Prime Minister Jenny Shipley confessed to an acquaintance of mine that she hated the fact that she had authorised the "traffic ticket quota system" which she was continuously being caught up in on the Asburton Straight, whilst travelling between Ashburton and Christchurch on her frequent journeys to Wellington, to the Beehive, parliament.

The Prime Minister was adorned in her purple tent dress, and continued; "I hate the day that our government authorised the quota system and the fact that I can't do anything about it any more."

She said it twice, which amounts, more or less, to a confession.

I guess both female Prime Ministers were phantom speedsters.

I would be happy to pay for this Bus Lane infringement upon proof that:

1. Jenny Shipley's cover-up of her daughter's "murders" did not cost money;
2. This did not bring about the police quota system;
3. The Police are not issuing traffic tickets on a quota system;
4. This Police quota system was not brought about by blackmailing the Prime Minister;
5. The Prime Minister being blackmailed was not Jenny Shipley;
6. Blackmail is not illegal;
7. The Auckland City Council does not run its infringement officers on a quota system;
8. Jenny Shipley's blackmail by THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE has not contributed to the Auckland City Council traffic infringements running on a quota system;
9. Every Auckland City Council worker can speak and write English to a standard where they can answer their own infringement responses;
10. THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE are not paedophile minders (they don't seem to catch any, especially not the ones everyone knows about, like Jonathan Hunt);
11. Auckland City Council workers are not employed for their paedophile minding (they never seem to out one in the ACC or ARC);
12. There are no paedophiles in THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE; and
13. There are no paedophiles in the Auckland City Council.

Without this proof, I accuse THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE and the AUCKLAND CITY COUNCIL of BLACKMAIL, and complicity to blackmail, and employing paedophiles, and covering up for them by employing paedophile minders, many of whom can't speak English, can't answer letters, but can fill an infringement notice for the quota system.

Equitable timeframes apply.

Postscript . . . one of many

Spook: "At the time I was suffering from an information overload coupled with the effects of a recent head injury. I queried my bosses on this story and they said: 'Don't worry, let it roll. No one will dare go near a dragon like that with a personal matter like this', which was subsequently borne out by history . . . I remember my boss in the Police doubting the veracity of something that was also later proved by documents from the PM's Department as kicked under a hotel bed by a couple of govt. employed lesbians. This was discovered by Island cleaning ladies who called someone and were told to, 'Ring Spook'. The documents were later the basis of a well-known story in the *Sunday News* by Joe Losé . . . It has subsequently been shown that the 'Shipley in Australia' was not Jenny Shipley's daughter."

Author: "It's interesting that Jenny Shipley was so unpopular as Prime Minister that even her own government departments were trying to get rid of her, by hook or by crook . . . or by crossbow. And they succeeded, but I still wasn't convinced, so I went to the top."

MICK P: "I read this. I hadn't heard the story before [that's rare] so I checked it out. I spoke to a prominent MP and they confirmed it by saying: **'Yes it is a tragedy. Everyone in Parliament seems to have someone like that in their family. This was particularly embarrassing so no one talks about it. It's completely under the table.'"**

So after much wrangling and getting through the Intelligence and Counter-Intelligence and back to the Intelligence again, we got to the truth of the matter:

> **While Jenny Shipley was Prime Minister of New Zealand, her daughter was involved in some gruesome decapitation murders and jailed in Sydney, resulting in Prime Minister Jenny Shipley being removed – only to be replaced by the KGB prostitute Helen Clark – who still maintains this secret.**

I was expecting a letter of reply from the Auckland City Council something like this:

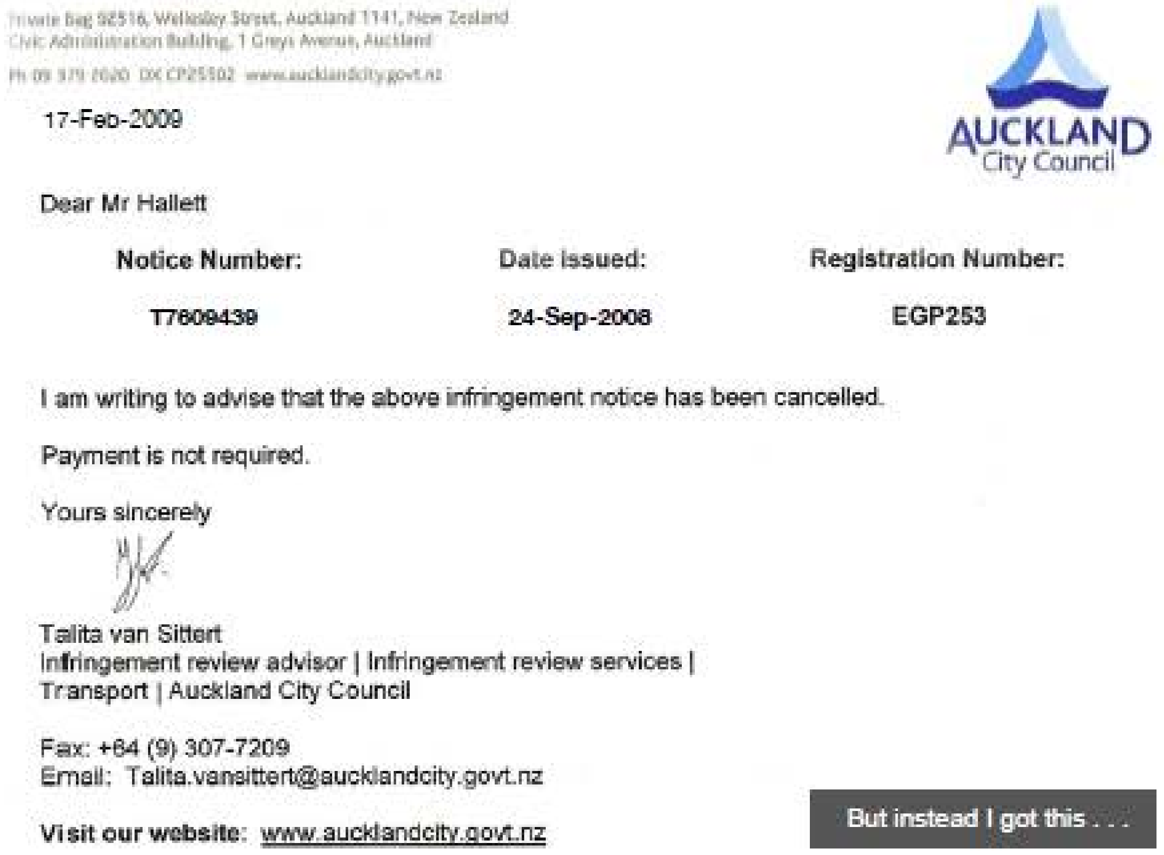

Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141, New Zealand
Civic Administration Building, 1 Greys Avenue, Auckland
Ph 09 379 2020 DX CP25502 www.aucklandcity.govt.nz

17-Feb-2009

AUCKLAND
City Council

Dear Mr Hallett

Notice Number:	Date issued:	Registration Number:
T7609439	24-Sep-2008	EGP253

I am writing to advise that the above infringement notice has been cancelled.

Payment is not required.

Yours sincerely

Talita van Sittert
Infringement review advisor | Infringement review services |
Transport | Auckland City Council

Fax: +64 (9) 307-7209
Email: Talita.vansittert@aucklandcity.govt.nz

Visit our website: www.aucklandcity.govt.nz

But instead I got this . . .

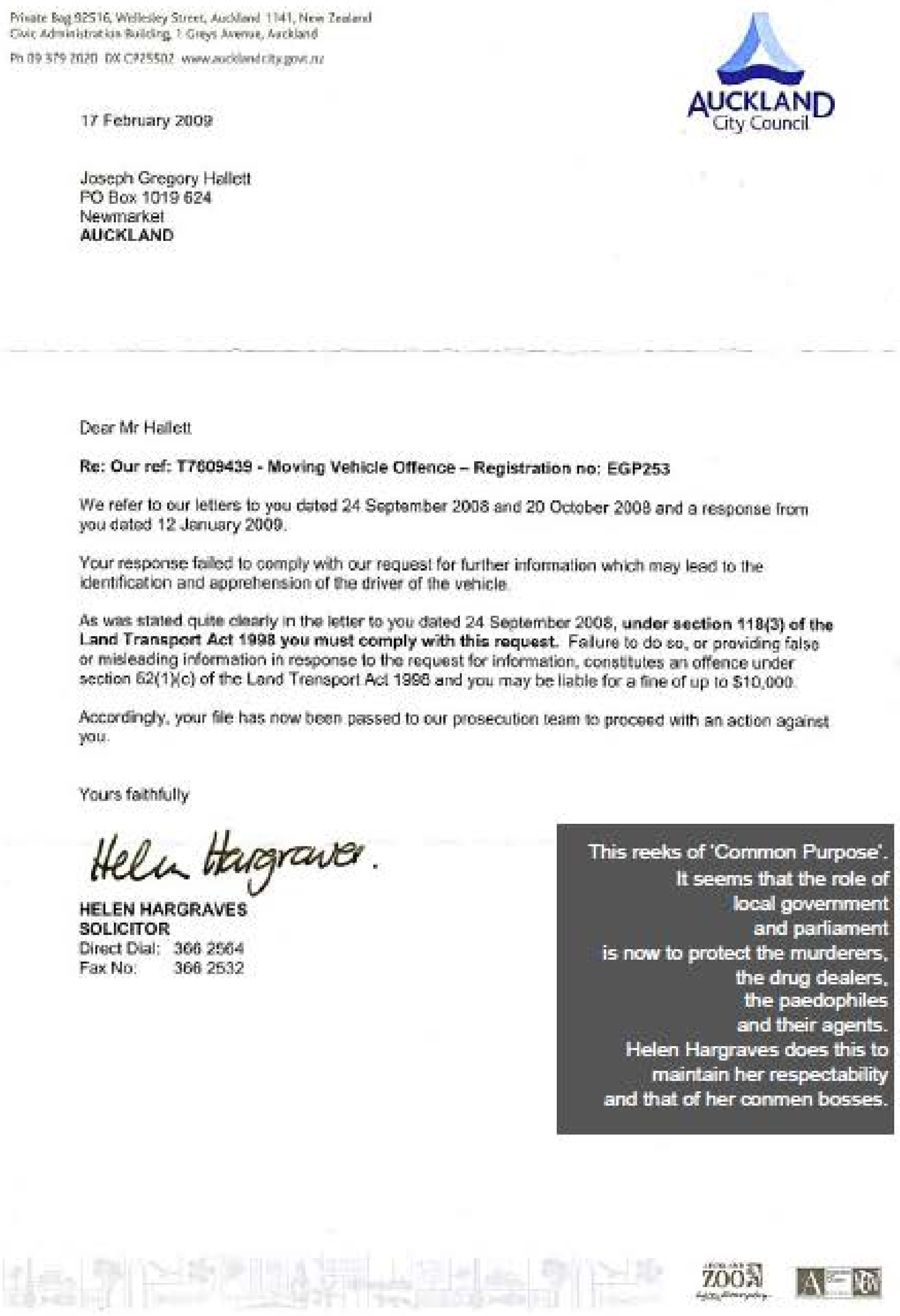

Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141, New Zealand
Civic Administration Building, 1 Greys Avenue, Auckland
Ph 09 379 2020 DX CP25502 www.aucklandcity.govt.nz

AUCKLAND
City Council

17 February 2009

Joseph Gregory Hallett
PO Box 1019 624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

Re: Our ref: T7609439 - Moving Vehicle Offence – Registration no: EGP253

We refer to our letters to you dated 24 September 2008 and 20 October 2008 and a response from you dated 12 January 2009.

Your response failed to comply with our request for further information which may lead to the identification and apprehension of the driver of the vehicle.

As was stated quite clearly in the letter to you dated 24 September 2008, **under section 118(3) of the Land Transport Act 1998 you must comply with this request.** Failure to do so, or providing false or misleading information in response to the request for information, constitutes an offence under section 52(1)(c) of the Land Transport Act 1998 and you may be liable for a fine of up to $10,000.

Accordingly, your file has now been passed to our prosecution team to proceed with an action against you.

Yours faithfully

Helen Hargraves.

HELEN HARGRAVES
SOLICITOR
Direct Dial: 366 2564
Fax No: 366 2532

This reeks of 'Common Purpose'. It seems that the role of local government and parliament is now to protect the murderers, the drug dealers, the paedophiles and their agents. Helen Hargraves does this to maintain her respectability and that of her conmen bosses.

Bus lane enforcement officer 233, Terry Sugrue, Talita van Sittert and Helen Hargraves (all of the ACC) do this to maintain the status quo and their respectability, but the status quo in New Zealand is that 'murderers, drug dealers, paedophiles and their agents' are not charged, but are respected by the police, who rely on personality voids like Helen Hargraves to attack anyone who exposes them.

Jenny Shipley, Alcopops, Wilson Neill, IRD, Serious Fraud Office & Winebox Inquiry

An Internal Affairs officer speaks . . .

"Jenny Shipley [National Prime Minister 8 December 1997–5 December 1999], just before she was dropped-kicked out of Parliament, her family trust bought up large sections of Wilson Neill – the South Island's largest liquor supplier – and then lowered the drinking age from 20 to 18, and allowed a child of any age to drink liquor in the pub, as long as it was given to them by their parent or guardian. This took effect on 1 December 1999. She was removed from the Prime Minister's office four days later.

> Amendments to 'The 1989 Sale Of Liquor Act': "A person UNDER 18 years of age may have access to any licensed premises (other than restricted areas) and be supplied liquor, PROVIDING they are accompanied by a parent or legal guardian and the liquor is supplied to them by their parent or legal guardian."

Alcohol is the drug of choice in New Zealand and this created a whole new generation of boozers of any age from toddlers up.

It seems that everything Jenny Shipley touches eventually turns to shit. She bought her Wilson Neill shares, stood over the accountants and had all sorts of interloans going on so her investment was secure. She waited 18 months for the profit to kick in, then took her money out. The place was then investigated and everything went tits up big time.

When the National Party were in power in the 1960s and Muldoon was on the rise, there were all these sweatheart deals that went down with various companies. One of them was L&M Oil which was connected to BP Todd. Another one was Comalco – that was an American outfit and there were big bribes involved in that.

To a much lesser extent, Wilson Neill went broke in the 1980s. It got to the stage where Wilson Neill was so desperate for money that they were talking about borrowing money off Nigel Neill. It was his father that ran it.

Nigel Neill is the actor Sam Neill with huge real estate holdings in Queenstown. He could have easily bailed his father out, but he chose not to. The sums were so huge the proffered relief may have only been a temporary fix.

Sam Neill's father had always borrowed up large and the big mystery was how could anyone send a liqour company broke in New Zealand.

In the Winebox Inquiry (September 1994–August 1997) "to investigate corruption and incompetence in the Inland Revenue Department and Serious Fraud Office", there were forwarded letters to the Exchange Commission where Jim Bolger and Ruth Richardson thanked the Foreign Exchange Commission for giving them pre-warning that the currency was going to devalue. Four months later, Jenny Shipley organised a coup and took the Prime Minister's office off Jim Bolger.

Jenny Shipley was brought into Wilson Neill in the early stages and at first the accountants thought that it was going to end up as one of the biggest insolvencies in New Zealand history. The belief was wide that Wilson and Neill had both spent money freely and the collateral that backed the loans was now down the paddock.

Then one of Shipley's advisors noticed Alcopops being sold into Australia and they immediately jumped to the conclusion that if they changed the liquor laws slightly and lowered the drinking age to suit a sweater tooth, their purchase would be paid off in very short order, and they would then be off the donkey trail and on the pig's back.

With New Zealand's horrendous teen drinking all they had to do was sit on their hands and do nothing. The financial problem would take care of itself and the resulting social problems could be solved by the next government.

Every suburb in New Zealand, and even the rural areas, have their own gang of drunks, and these were quickly able to organise themselves into go-fors, pick-ups, whores, and protection men, and all the other impedimentia that you need to run a liquor empire disguised as a country.

This generated calls to lower the drinking age, lower the age for sexual consent (which Helen Clark really liked), and then lower the blood alcohol level for driving.

Jenny Shipley is out there defending the rights of her children to get pissed every night under the guise of Civil Rights, when in fact, if anyone's Civil Rights were threatened (like alcohol removed), teenagers would happily go into the police station and uplift the RTD Vodka Cruisers (Ready to Drink made from the synthetic vodka Kristov) complete with defiant finger.

There wasn't much profit for about a year and a half. To survive that time, Wilson Neill did a big write down and made a bunch of company interloans, then Jenny Shipley creamed the profits. This prompted *National Business Review* to print the following article in mid-2002:[7]

> "The receivers of Wilson Neill and its six subsidiaries have so far identified debts of more than $15 million, with total debts of at least $9 million, and inter-company debts of at least $6 million . . .
>
> Radionet's wireless communications total debt was $2.6 million; IT Media owed $2 million and unsecured creditors were unlikely to be paid; Cobb & Co restaurant franchise owed $0.8 million and another $1.2 million in accounts due, so disputed them all; Iguacu Ltd and Iguacu Properties which operate Iguacu restaurant in Parnell, Auckland was sold, but had 239 creditors due money; South Pacific Hospitality (a holding company) owed $1.2 million and unsecured creditors were unlikely to be paid.
>
> Bankruptcy proceedings are likely to proceed, but it is unlikely that unsecured creditors would be paid.
>
> Pricewaterhouse Coopers (the liquidator) is investigating Wilson Neill for breaches of the law relating to their rapid collapse."

So there we have it. Jenny Shipley – a self-serving Prime Minister.

The next Prime Minister, Helen Clark, then tried to lower the age of sexual consent from 16 to 12 years old for girls and from 16 to 14 years old for boys, which her husband really liked.

Both female New Zealand Prime Ministers have been absolute disasters. They couldn't have done a worse job if they were both double agents working for foreign powers to destroy New Zealand; just as Prime Ministers' Moore, Palmer, Lange, Muldoon, and Bill Rowling did. The only guy who has ever stood up for New Zealand was killed – Big Norm Kirk – and he never gets a mention, not from any Prime Minister now.

---

[7] Nick Stride, *NBR* Personal Investor: 'Wilson Neill failure tops $15m', *28 June 2002*, paraphrased for your enjoyment, with the numbers rounded.

Here's some well document studious back-up: 'Lowering the Drinking Age in New Zealand Increases Car Crashes Among Youth':[8]

> "The outcomes found in the New Zealand study are similar to . . . when the United States lowered their drinking ages in the early 1970s . . . showed a substantial increase in traffic crashes involving young people. Today, all 50 states in the United States have a minimum 21 drinking age."[9]
>
> Robert B. Voas: "There is no traffic safety policy with more evidence for its effectiveness than minimum legal drinking age laws. Traffic crashes by young drivers were declining in New Zealand when that country [Jenny Shipley] decided to lower its drinking age. Thereafter, the overall road toll for those drivers rose dramatically. Most remarkable was the trickle-down effect that was seen in the 15–17-year-olds. Clearly, they're getting alcohol from older friends."[10]

"According to the New Zealand study, lowering the drinking age increases car crashes among youth. Comparing the four years before and after the drinking age was lowered (1995–2004) traffic crashes and injuries increased:

> 51% for 18–19 year old females, 24% for 15–17 year old females, 12% for 18–19 year old males, 14% among 15–17 year old males; 400 serious injuries; 12 deaths each year among 15–19 year olds could be prevented if New Zealand raised the [Jenny Shipley] minimum legal drinking age from 18 back to 20."[11]
>
> "The level of spirits has increased sharply since [the study began in] 1995. Spirit consumption was reasonably steady at 11 million ltr/year. By 2007 this rose to 66 million ltr/year due to the increased consumption of alcopops. Beer remained the favourite alcohol at 66 % (by volume), wine now accounts for 20 %, and the big mover has been spirits at 14 %."[12]
>
> "The increase for spirits is solely due to growth in alcopops."[13]

So Jenny Shipley, via your Alcopops profittering, you are responsible for 120 deaths and 4,000 serious injuries of 15–19 year olds making you the biggest murderer in New Zealand since the last international war (probably Vietnam).

Can you (ACC staff) show me that the profits Jenny Shipley received were not paid as bribes to the Auckland City Council in return for tickets issued to fund her bribing the media regarding Jenny Shipley's involvement in methamphetamines, murder and mass murder (lowering the drinking age), and are you not a **'Common Purpose' lackey** covering for murderers, drug dealers, paedophiles, child sex abusers and 'treason-in-a-suit'**; and**

Have you not been convinced that protecting these people is not honourable?**; and**

Is it not erroneous that these people are honourable?**; and**

Do these people not take on the title 'The Honourable'?**; and**

Are you not a 'Career Twin' with these offenders?**; and**

Is Common Purpose not an international organisation of Career Twins?**; and**

Does Jenny Shipley not have murder in her eyes?

---

[8] ***Journal of American Public Health***, 96(1), 126–131, **'Minimum Purchasing Age for Alcohol and Traffic Crash Injuries Among 15– to 19–Year-Olds in New Zealand'**, Kypros Kypri, Robert B. Voas, John D. Langley, Shaun C.R. Stephenson, Dorothy J. Begg, A. Scott Tippetts, Gabrielle S. Davie, January 2006; Reprinted in ***Reporter***, newsletter of the International Council on Alcohol, Drugs and Traffic Safety, Winter 2006; and **Statistics New Zealand, 'Grapes, hops and alcopops'**, page last modified, 16 January 2009, and paraphrased for your enjoyment.

[9] *Ibid.*

[10] *Ibid.*

[11] *Ibid*, abbreviated to get to the point.

[12] *Ibid*, paraphrased for your enjoyment.

[13] *Ibid.*

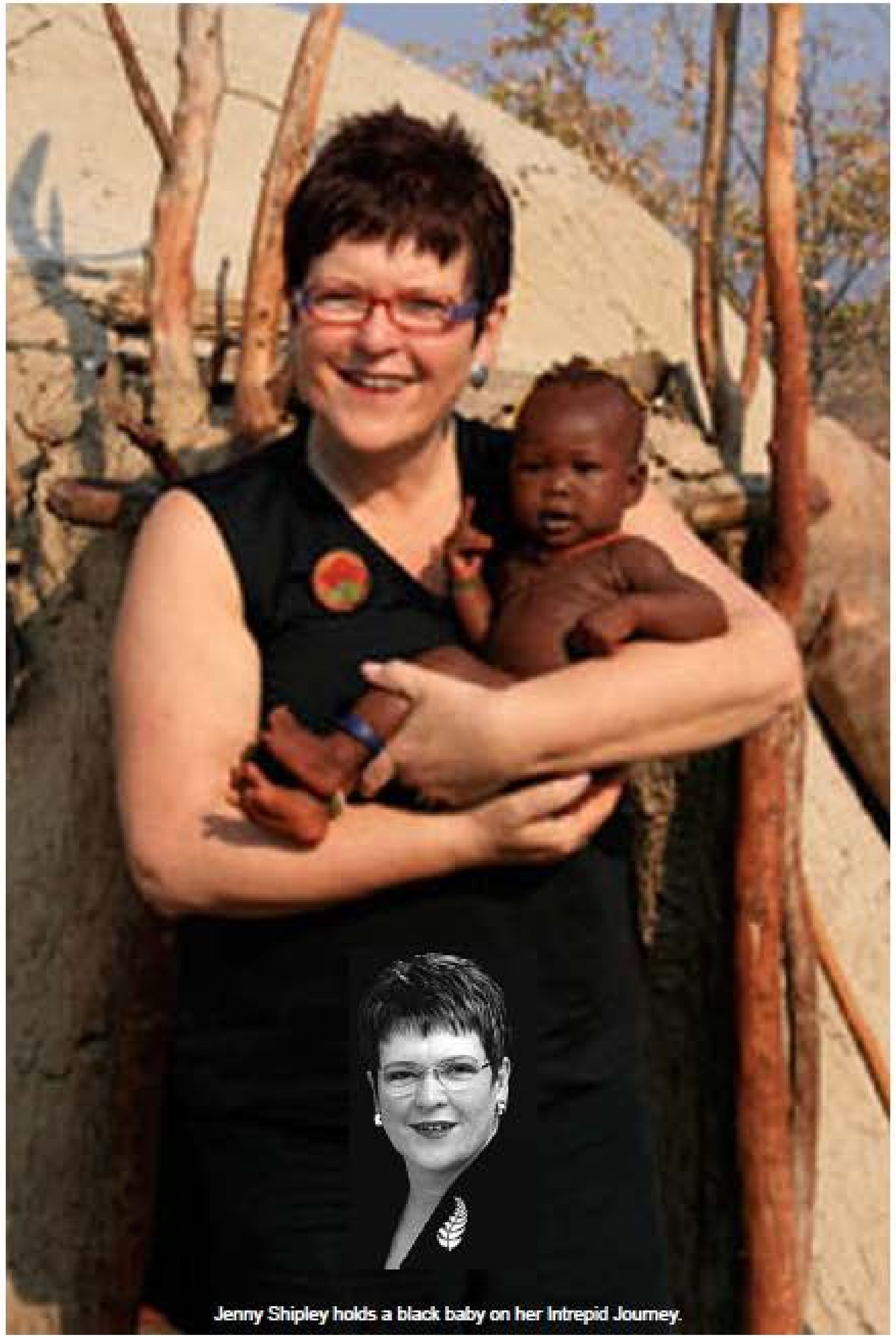

Jenny Shipley holds a black baby on her Intrepid Journey.

Authorities stand in Dishonour

The above letter was delivered to the Auckland City Council on 12 January 2009 and it was 21 March 2009 before this response was received.

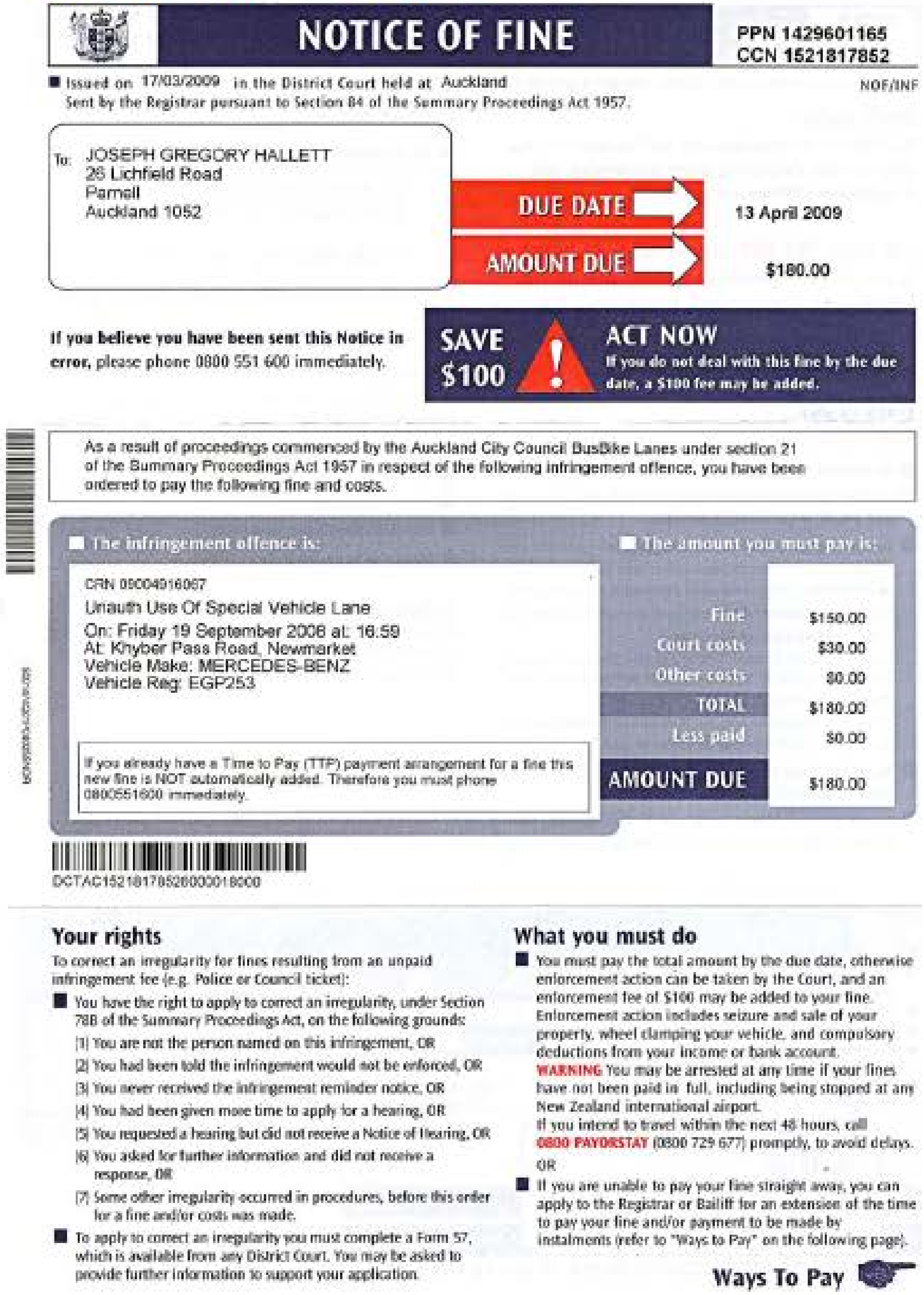

NOTICE OF FINE

PPN 1429601165
CCN 1521817852

■ Issued on 17/03/2009 in the District Court held at Auckland
Sent by the Registrar pursuant to Section 84 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

NOF/INF

To: JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
26 Lichfield Road
Parnell
Auckland 1052

DUE DATE 13 April 2009

AMOUNT DUE $180.00

If you believe you have been sent this Notice in error, please phone 0800 551 600 immediately.

SAVE $100

ACT NOW
If you do not deal with this fine by the due date, a $100 fee may be added.

As a result of proceedings commenced by the Auckland City Council BusBike Lanes under section 21 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 in respect of the following infringement offence, you have been ordered to pay the following fine and costs.

■ The infringement offence is:

CRN 05004916067
Unauth Use Of Special Vehicle Lane
On: Friday 19 September 2008 at: 16:59
At: Khyber Pass Road, Newmarket
Vehicle Make: MERCEDES-BENZ
Vehicle Reg: EGP253

If you already have a Time to Pay (TTP) payment arrangement for a fine this new fine is NOT automatically added. Therefore you must phone 0800551600 immediately.

■ The amount you must pay is:

Fine	$150.00
Court costs	$30.00
Other costs	$0.00
TOTAL	$180.00
Less paid	$0.00
AMOUNT DUE	$180.00

DCTAC152181785260000180C0

Your rights

To correct an irregularity for fines resulting from an unpaid infringement fee (e.g. Police or Council ticket):

- You have the right to apply to correct an irregularity, under Section 78B of the Summary Proceedings Act, on the following grounds:
  - (1) You are not the person named on this infringement, OR
  - (2) You had been told the infringement would not be enforced, OR
  - (3) You never received the infringement reminder notice, OR
  - (4) You had been given more time to apply for a hearing, OR
  - (5) You requested a hearing but did not receive a Notice of Hearing, OR
  - (6) You asked for further information and did not receive a response, OR
  - (7) Some other irregularity occurred in procedures, before this order for a fine and/or costs was made.
- To apply to correct an irregularity you must complete a Form 57, which is available from any District Court. You may be asked to provide further information to support your application.

What you must do

- You must pay the total amount by the due date, otherwise enforcement action can be taken by the Court, and an enforcement fee of $100 may be added to your fine. Enforcement action includes seizure and sale of your property, wheel clamping your vehicle, and compulsory deductions from your income or bank account.
  WARNING You may be arrested at any time if your fines have not been paid in full, including being stopped at any New Zealand international airport.
  If you intend to travel within the next 48 hours, call **0800 PAYORSTAY** (0800 729 677) promptly, to avoid delays.
  OR
- If you are unable to pay your fine straight away, you can apply to the Registrar or Bailiff for an extension of the time to pay your fine and/or payment to be made by instalments (refer to "Ways to Pay" on the following page).

Ways To Pay ☛

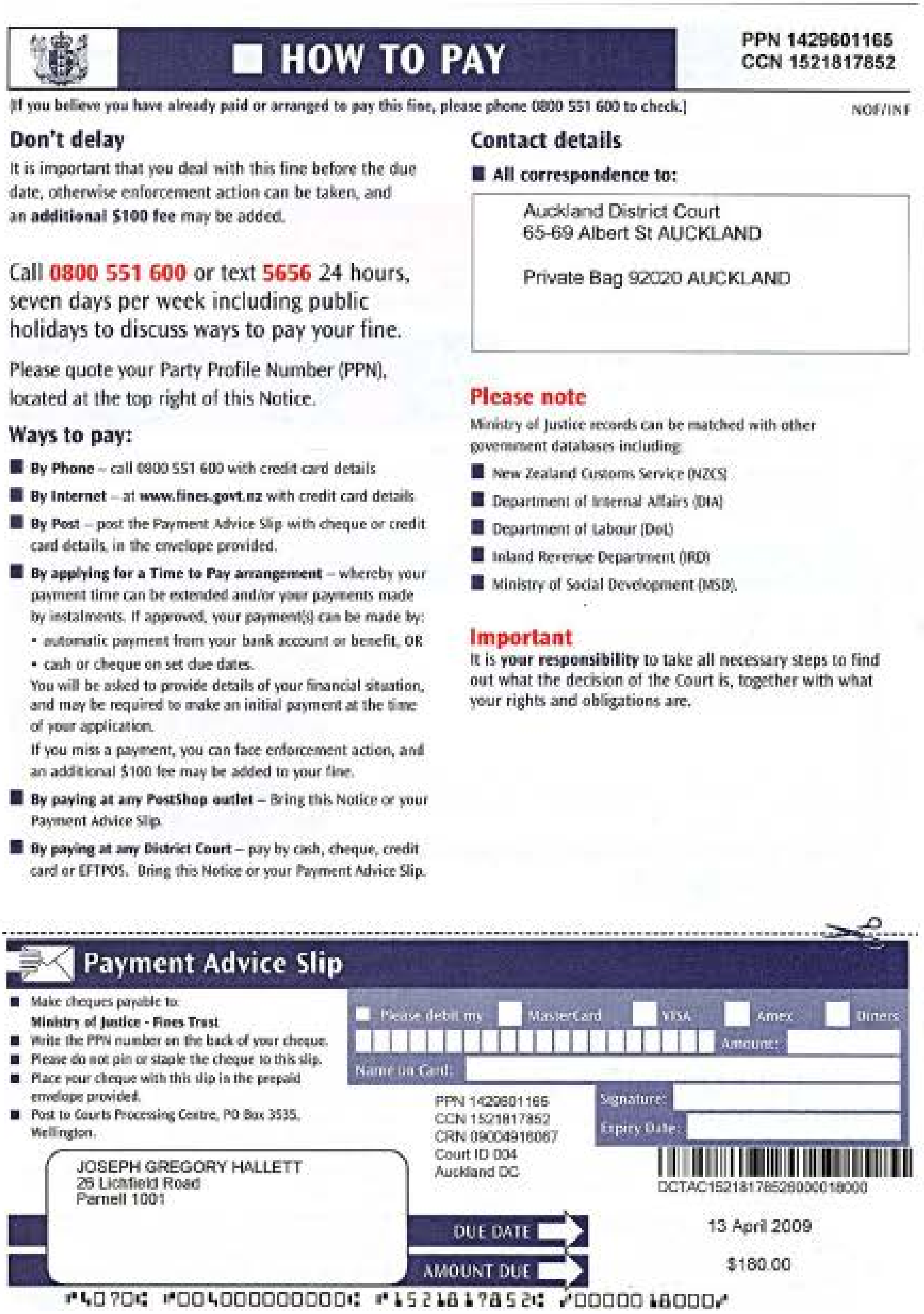

HOW TO PAY

PPN 1429601165
CCN 1521817852

(If you believe you have already paid or arranged to pay this fine, please phone 0800 551 600 to check.)

NOF/INF

Don't delay

It is important that you deal with this fine before the due date, otherwise enforcement action can be taken, and an **additional $100 fee** may be added.

Call 0800 551 600 or text 5656 24 hours, seven days per week including public holidays to discuss ways to pay your fine.

Please quote your Party Profile Number (PPN), located at the top right of this Notice.

Ways to pay:

- **By Phone** – call 0800 551 600 with credit card details
- **By Internet** – at **www.fines.govt.nz** with credit card details
- **By Post** – post the Payment Advice Slip with cheque or credit card details, in the envelope provided.
- **By applying for a Time to Pay arrangement** – whereby your payment time can be extended and/or your payments made by instalments. If approved, your payment(s) can be made by:
  - automatic payment from your bank account or benefit, OR
  - cash or cheque on set due dates.

  You will be asked to provide details of your financial situation, and may be required to make an initial payment at the time of your application.

  If you miss a payment, you can face enforcement action, and an additional $100 fee may be added to your fine.
- **By paying at any PostShop outlet** – Bring this Notice or your Payment Advice Slip.
- **By paying at any District Court** – pay by cash, cheque, credit card or EFTPOS. Bring this Notice or your Payment Advice Slip.

Contact details

- **All correspondence to:**

Auckland District Court
65-69 Albert St AUCKLAND

Private Bag 92020 AUCKLAND

Please note

Ministry of Justice records can be matched with other government databases including:

- New Zealand Customs Service (NZCS)
- Department of Internal Affairs (DIA)
- Department of Labour (DoL)
- Inland Revenue Department (IRD)
- Ministry of Social Development (MSD).

Important

It is **your responsibility** to take all necessary steps to find out what the decision of the Court is, together with what your rights and obligations are.

Payment Advice Slip

- Make cheques payable to:
  Ministry of Justice - Fines Trust
- Write the PPN number on the back of your cheque.
- Please do not pin or staple the cheque to this slip.
- Place your cheque with this slip in the prepaid envelope provided.
- Post to Courts Processing Centre, PO Box 3535, Wellington.

☐ Please debit my ☐ MasterCard ☐ VISA ☐ Amex ☐ Diners

Amount:

Name on Card:

Signature:

Expiry Date:

PPN 1429601165
CCN 1521817852
CRN 09004916067
Court ID 004
Auckland DC

DCTAC15218178526000018000

JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
26 Lichfield Road
Parnell 1001

DUE DATE 13 April 2009

AMOUNT DUE $180.00

⑆40704⑆ ⑈004000000000⑆ ⑈1521817852⑆ ⑇0000018000⑇

DISTRICT COURT
30 APR 2009
AUCKLAND

30 April 2009

Mohimi Prakash
Auckland District Court
Private Bag 92020
Auckland
Ph (09) 916-9023

Ref: For 57 Application to Correct irregularities in Proceedings for Infringement Offence

CCN 1521817852 | Bus lane infringement | 19 September 2008
a.k.a Unauthorised Use Of Special Vehicle Lane

CCN 152 201 7241 | Parking on High Street with receipt blown off | 11 November 2008
a.k.a. Fail Disp P&D Display Receipt

Mohimi Prakash

Authorities stand in Dishonour

My letter was delivered to the Auckland City Council on 12 January 2009. By mid-March 2009 local press releases were reviving Vivien Leigh and citing how great she was; and it was 21 March 2009 before the response was received (NOTICE OF FINE).

This came as a 'NOTICE OF FINE' with an extra $30 Court costs attached, and is out of the 72 hour response time required under equity (10 days including postage), or the 28 day standard reponse time, and has moved into a 'breach of the Declaration of Helsinki (June 1964)'.

This unwarranted delay (illegal under the Declaration of Helsinki) came without an apology, so the matter with the Auckland City Council/ Auckland District Court is out of honour and out of time – no longer stuffing their pockets full of pre-allocated funds.

Is this matter not resolved other than the Indemnity Bond ($600.00)?

Authorities will fork out thousands on their PR, but won't cancel a ticket once:

1. It's established there was no reason for the Infringement Notice;
2. They are debt collecting to cover the PR costs to cover their politician's crimes;
   DRUG DEALING, PAEDOPHILIA & MURDER
3. They are not willing to save face and pay the Indemnity Bond;
4. They have provided no proof of the Infringement; and
5. Authorities appear incapable of apologising for their grave and ongoing errors.
   EVEN WHEN THEY ARE DIRECTLY INVOLVED IN THE MURDERS

Is it not true that authorities are fining those who expose the crimes of the criminal gangs in government?

Is it not true that these gangs have no name?; and/or

various names?; and these include:

the CIA; the KGB; MI-6; **Freemasons**; **The Three Murderers**; the **Feminists**; the **Lesbians**; the **Homosexuals**; the **Cross-Dressers**; the **S&M**; the **Paedophiles**; and/or **Common Purpose**?

Authorities have all the pomp and ceremony, but by and large they are, standing or sitting in permanent dishonour, as the infringement ticket informations show.

No doubt the ACC legal team were working in conjunction with the Vivien Leigh PR Department, and three days after I wrote the above, the ACC legal team/ Vivien Leigh PR society decided not to prosecute me for $10,000.00.

Since that became too embarrassing – instead they added "$30 Court costs"; although

1. I was never invited to Court, and
2. I never had any of my questions answered; and
3. My accusations were accepted/denied; and
4. I was advised/threatened it would be "$10,000.00 and have a hearing"; but rather
5. The matter became $150.00 + $30.00 court costs, without being invited to have the matter heard?

I understand this is an automatic system that lacks any and all traces of common sense, as dictated by Common Purpose, is illustrated by s.21:

> **"Indeed, the s.21 procedure was introduced to provide an automated system . . . the informant Ministry's computer discs then generate, through the District Court computer system . . . notice of fine. Nothing in that process can be characterised as a determination of an information by the District Court."**[14]

Does this not mean that the entire system is automated?

Does this not mean that the entire system is lacks justice?

Is it not true that a computer generated ticket is not being judged by your peers?

Does this not mean that once a citizen is fingered by an illiterate foreigner then there is no clear pathway to justice?

Is it not true that a very black lower caste Indian who does not speak or write English adequately and does not have a camera pointing in both directions – is employed as a crime creator?

Does this not make the Auckland City Council a crime creation movement?

Is this not injust?

Is this not fascism?

Is this not Kafkaesque?

Does Helen Clark's PR agent – the bisexual paedophile Brian Edwards – not have a doctorate in Franz Kafka?

Are Franz Kafaka, Common Purpose, Traffic Tickets, Freemasons, and Respectable/ Honourable paedophiles not formulas for misery?

Is it not true that anyone who is a stumble-bum
and has been fired out of at least 20 jobs,
is now running a government department in New Zealand?

Is is not true that authors, public speakers and talkshow hosts are now noting that:

"New Zealand is a country where nothing works"; and

"New Zealand is a country where shit rises to the top on a daily basis"?

The dishonourable fee/ unconfirmed infringement notice is now $180.00 with the added threat that authorities may prevent me from flying overseas – "being stopped at any international airport" – and will add a further $100.00, 28 days after they wrote their letter, which was received four days late, then refers to this non-response and delay as **"Save $100"**.

---

[14] Richardson J in *Davies v MOT* [1989] 3 NZLR 300; (1989) 5 CRNZ 371 (CA), p. 4; as cited in High Court Appeals 20 April 2009 – CRI-2008-404-379 & 380, Jurrian Kiewik, Associate, Simpson Grierson for Auckland City Council.

All of this, from the continual delays; to not acknowledging/ answering valid questions; to requesting one to name the accussed for them; to the mixed messages like 'save if pay'; the Court costs without a court hearing; the threats of a $10,000.00 fine; "being stopped at any international airport"; and positive and negative signals . . . is a breach of the Declaration of Helsinki and a **crime under international law as perpetrated by the Auckland City Council** and their staff.

> Straight out of MKULTRA training this is:
>
> **"Stimulated stresses causing a breakdown of the individual and society using intense signals, long waiting periods, rotating positive and negative signals, and changing the subject's physical condition** (threatening to remove their car at any time) . . . **thus brainwashing the target victim into a perfect CIA MKULTRA JUDICIAL citizen."**
>
> The effect of these harrassing ill-defined, illogical, illegal infringement notices for legal common sense acts is to turn citizens into passive aggressive amnesiac vegetables who regret giving up their freedoms in the name of democracy, and either lose their ability to question authority and challenge in the face of conflict, or turn into a perfect CIA killing machine.
>
> **LIKE THE CIA AGENTS' DAME MARGARET BAZLEY & MAYOR JOHN BANKS**

Invalid traffic infringement notices and their process are a source of untold misery of an expanding nature and an ongoing attempt by the governance to keep pushing, through depleting emetics, just short of civil war.

> What's worse is that this is a highwayman's tax backed up by the bludgeoning force of non-communicative authorities paying the wages of Police, Council and Court corruption with special reference to their drug trafficking, murder, paedophilia, beastiality, necrophilia, S&M use of prosititutes, theft, profiling and social engineering . . . turning good people into bad and targetting them as such.
>
> As such, the Auckland City Council traffic tickets and the process by which they are issued and re-issued are in breach of international law, the Declaration of Helsinki and its predecessor – the Code of Nuremburg.
>
> **This is understandable given the fact that the Mayor of Auckland John Banks is a Rosicrucian CIA homosexual paedophile, incestuous from his father and by adoption, and supported by all the Freemasons in the land.**

Invalid traffic infringement notices are being used by Common Purpose paedophiles, drug dealers, cross-dressers, prostitutes/ users of prostitutes, and swingers in the Auckland City Council to keep their citizens in continual fear.

This includes head of the ARC Gary Taylor filming his wife having sex
with others because he liked it. It was only later that he realised
he could use this for promotion into his current position.

All of this has now been going on for over six months, and I still have not got any answer to any of my simple requests, nor any explaination as to why the 'Auckland City Council/ Highwayman's-Common-Purpose/ misery-for-all/ Vivien Leigh/ bludgeon-the-white-male society' has not answered.

I call for a Commission of Inquiry into why the Auckland City Council disbanded its department that read Infringement Notice replies and replaced them with the District Court/Ministry's automatic computer generation system incorporating Common Purpose breaches of the Declaration of Helsinki.

This is illegal under international law and has been since August 1947 as the Nuremberg Code, and since June 1964 as the Declaration of Helsinki.

Is this not the same criminal dictatorship of Hitler and the highwaymen of old?

Is Helen Clark not the reincarnation of Adolf Hitler?

Is this not a bully's tax?

Is bullying not being outlawed with public campaigns in schools?

As Undersigned has told the truth all the way through, and Undersigned has received no response to any of the queries, questions proposed, and affirmations then stated, is the $600.00 Indemnity Bond not now due for the Auckland City Council to restore its honour? **since the ACC has proven itself to be in dishonour!**

Are the statements offered, not denied/ accepted by the Auckland City Council not now available for public consumption, and for confirmation by the Auckland City Council as **CLEAR SUBSTANTIVE AND TRUE?**

Did the HIGH COURT of Auckland not take these documents seriously enough to seal them?

Did the Auckland **HIGH COURT Judge J Stevens** not take these documents seriously enough to **SEAL them at 3.45 pm on 20 April 2009** with the following minute:

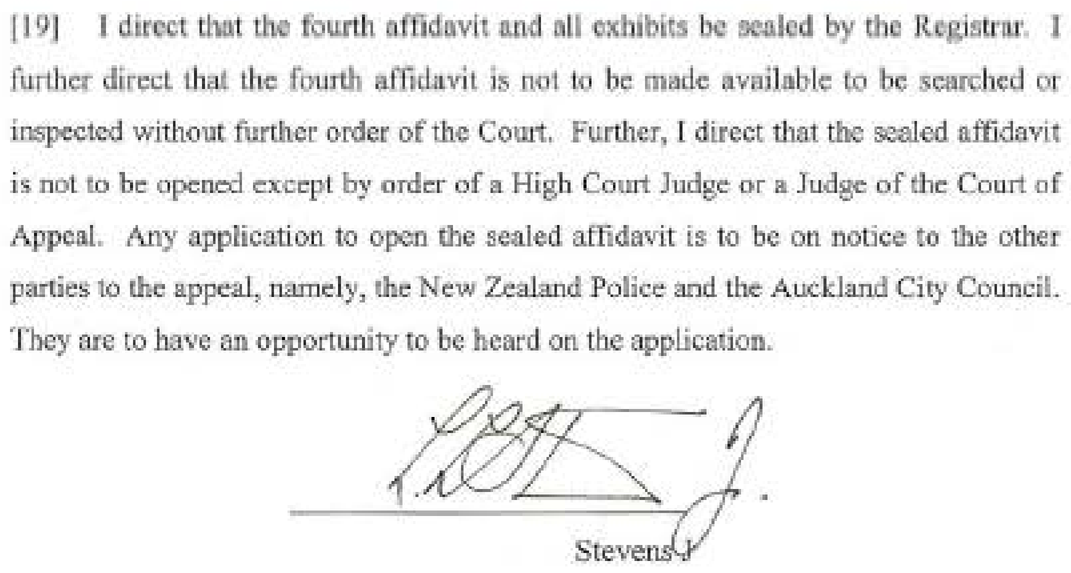

[19] I direct that the fourth affidavit and all exhibits be sealed by the Registrar. I further direct that the fourth affidavit is not to be made available to be searched or inspected without further order of the Court. Further, I direct that the sealed affidavit is not to be opened except by order of a High Court Judge or a Judge of the Court of Appeal. Any application to open the sealed affidavit is to be on notice to the other parties to the appeal, namely, the New Zealand Police and the Auckland City Council. They are to have an opportunity to be heard on the application.

Stevens J

Justice has been denied after lengthy delays loaded with positive and negative signals.

Does **"I direct that the fourth affidavit and all exhibits be sealed by the Registrar. I further direct that the fourth affidavit is not to be made available to be searched or inspected without further order of the Court. Further, I direct that the sealed affidavit is not to be opened except by order of a High Court Judge or a Judge of the Court of Appeal. Any application to open the sealed affidavit is to be on notice to the other parties to the appeal, namely, the New Zealand Police and the Auckland City Council. They are to have an opportunity to be heard on the application"** not mean that the New Zealand courts have made it impossible for me to defend any of my cases?; and that

I am a refugee in my own country? and that

Justice has not only been delayed, it has been denied?; and that

Does this not mean that the New Zealand courts have made it impossible for me to defend any of my cases below the High Court and/or the Court of Appeal?

Is this not a breach of international law, including basic human rights, and the Queen-given right and responsibility to yell the truth in public places as per the Hale case circa 1686, and anyone nominating themselves a Town Crier?

Have I not already done this in Vulcan Lane and outside the Auckland High Court on 11 November 2008?; and

Was this not lodged as an Affidavit in the Auckland District Court the same day?; and

Was a full transcription of the Court's transgressions not outlined in that affidavit?

Given that there are reasonable grounds for all actions on the part of Undersigned, would it not be prudent to abandon all cases against Joseph Gregory Hallett for now and in the future?

Would it not therefore be prudent to issue Undersigned, Joseph Gregory Hallett with **the Keys to the City?**

In order to prevent these documents spreading to courts in other cities, to be heard in front of other judges, would it not therefore be prudent to issue Undersigned, Joseph Gregory Hallett with the keys to all the cities of New Zealand?

In order to prevent these documents spreading to courts in other countries, to be heard in front of foreign courts and judges, who would then gain advantage over New Zealand (further advantage if they haven't already done so) would it not therefore be prudent to issue Undersigned, Joseph Gregory Hallett with keys to all cities?;

and in all countries?

Would it not then be easier to issue Undersigned, Joseph Gregory Hallett with Diplomatic Immunity?

With delayed and denied justice, triple sealed by the High Court and therefore a refugee in my own country, is diplomatic immunity not the only honourable solution left to the courts? and governance of New Zealand? especially given the many and various assassination attempts by those departments, and the people running them?

Am I not due diplomatic immunity from the very courts that are supposed to serve and protect me?

Have the courts not become 'dis-service and attack' institution?

Do they no specialise in misery?

Are the Police not the anti-Police.

Are the Courts not anti-Justice?

Is your Justice system not referred to as "Just -Us"?

Is the job of government now to ensure there is no governance?

Is the government not anti-Governance?

Is this not anarchy?

Is government not anarchy?

Are the Courts not anarchists in suits and black silk?

Is it not true that the New Zealand Bar association stems from the International Bar

Association which stems from the American Bar Association and that, logically, New Zealand follows America in many matters and "America is now an horrendous fascist police state snitch culture" and the Auckland City Council and Police require owners of cars to identify/ snitch on the driver of the vehicle; and that

This is profiling, as anyone with more than 2 per cent Irish in them finds this to be an anathema; and that

This is reminiscent of Cattle Dogs (Catholics) running Ireland; where

Three (3) million Irish were either killed or emigrated, or died during emigration; and

Are not activities such as profiling, emigration, murder, and wantonly repeating horrendous historical acts of genoicide a matter for International attention.

In order to prevent these documents spreading to courts in other countries, to be heard in front of foreign courts and judges, who would then gain advantage over New Zealand, would it not therefore be **prudent to issue Undersigned, Joseph Gregory Hallett with Diplomatic Immunity?**

Is the alternative 'further embarrassment to the country'
when Undersigned – a qualified professional –
seeking refugee status from New Zealand –
to another country
because the governance is so bad?

The grounds for refugee status are breaches of International Law actively carried out and targetted by THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE and the Auckland City Council, both of which are run by the CIA as an MKULTRA DEEP SLEEP Experiment under OPERATIONS RESEARCH 'Silent Weapons for a Quiet War' with both the POLICE and Auckland City actively involved in murder, targetted murder, covering for each other's murders and running Auckland City and NEW ZEALAND on the basis of 'misery just short of civil war'.

Is this not a statement worthy of quoting?

Do these **CLEAR, SUBSTANTIVE, TRUE AND UNDENIABLE STATEMENTS** as **PUBLISHED** in ***NEW ZEALAND, A BLACKMAILER'S GUIDE*** (in October 2007, December 2007, January 2008), and **accepted by the Auckland City Council** and **THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE**, and **SEALED by the HIGH COURT of AUCKLAND** on 20 April 2009, not include the following . . .

As of 6 October 2008, the Auckland City Council confirms:

(Notified 30 September 2008 and accepted by the Auckland City Council on 6 October 2008)

1. Anand Satyanand worked closely with New Zealand's worst ever rapist Auckland Area Commander Clint Rickards (2003–05). Anand Satyanand was then nominated to the position of Governor-General by the murderer and St Petersburg prostitute Helen Clark, Prime Minister (1999–2008);
2. THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE are rapists;
3. Jenny Shipley is the biggest killer in New Zealand since the Vietnam War and her daughter is an accessory to murder and jailed for it;
4. The King of New Zealand shagged the Queen Mother. That is Ernie Davis sexually penetrated Elizabeth Bowes-Lyon on the billiard table of the Northern Club from the first to the fourth of February 1958;
5. The Maidment Theatre is to be renamed the Vivien Leigh Theatre . . .

As of 4 December 2008, the Auckland City Council confirms:

(Notified 24 November 2008 and accepted by the Auckland City Council on 4 December 2008)

6. The Mayor of Auckland John Banks is a homosexual and a paedophile who protects paedophiles in THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE and the Auckland City Council;
7. The Chairman of the Auckland Regional Council Mike Lee was married to the child prostitute Auckland City Councillor Sandra née Barber/Vercoe Lee;
8. Mike Lee was the last male to have sex with the KGB St Petersburg prostitute Helen Clark;
9. Gary Taylor filmed his wife having sex with Labour Party members and used this footage for leverage to place himself in the position of running Auckland to the detriment of the city;
10. Indians are collecting the wages of illiterate Untouchables and Outcastes and are working the Indian caste system for the benefit of Sudras, Vaisyas, Kshatriya and/or Brahmin for the benefit of the Indian Anand 'the Brown Humpty Dumpty' Satyanand who supplies and protects the paedophilia of Jonathan Hunt who pays 12-year-old Indian boys for sex, as funded by Helen Clark with taxpayers money;
11. Justice of the Peace (JP's) are the area paedophile minders and report directly to the Governor-General who is the Chief Boy Scout and Chief Girl Guide;
12. The Auckland City Council works closely with the Auckland Police. Both are accessories to attempted murders of the Undersigned Joseph Gregory Hallett ("Greg Hallett") and this can now be publicly stated . . .

As of 22 January 2009, the Auckland City Council confirms:

(Notified 12 January 2009 and accepted by the Auckland City Council on 22 January 2009)

15. Not every Auckland City Council worker can speak and write English to a standard where they can answer their own Infringement Notice responses, especially the Untouchables and the Outcastes;
16. There are paedophiles in THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE and the Auckland City Council, and Police and Council staff are employed (job requirement) as paedophile minders;
17. THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE and the Auckland City Council are issuing infringement notices (tickets) to fund an ongoing PR campaign to cover the shame of New Zealand politicians, on a quota system, as brought about by the blackmailed Prime Minister Jenny Shipley – mother of an accessory to murder;
18. Dame Margaret Bazley is a CIA mass murderer and sex addict who has sex with mental patients, if they are well hung, and/or traffic/police officers seeking promotion. She established the methods of **THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE and Auckland City Council highwayman extortion as Secretary for Transport (1988–93)** and has tweeked most government departments in this direction – in breach of the Declaration of Helsinki.

Such statements have been lodged in the Auckland District Court since 17 June 2008, as stamped as received 'Application to Correct Irregularities in Proceedings for Infringement Offence', CRN 02004076568, CRN 06004140594, CRN 07004400778, CRN07004918708 as a 32-page AFFIDAVIT OF Joseph Gregory Hallett, subtitled **"HOW THE CIA RUNS THE NEW ZEALAND JUDICIARY AS AN MKULTRA PSY-OPS"**.

These were then backed up with a **400-page affidavit on 7 November 2008** and by this High Court **860-page affidavit at 11 am on 20 April 2009**, before the 2.15 pm hearing.

Undersigned won all the cases and this 860-page Affidavit and Attachments was then **SEALED in the HIGH COURT of AUCKLAND** only to be released by the signatures of the two lawyers present – Mr Dale Duffy of Meredith Connell for THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE; and Mr Jurrian W. Kiewik of Simpson Grierson for the AUCKLAND CITY COUNCIL, AND A HIGH COURT JUDGE, with the right to take it to the COURT OF APPEAL.

This is the first productive thing to happen.
Everything else has been counter productive.

Dame Margaret Bazley was the principal of three in charge of the decision on whether or not to have Auckland as a Super City, the largest in Australasia, as decided on 31 March 2009.

Dame Margaret Bazley is also in charge of pre-selecting an Executive Mayor of which the choice is any one of the three cross-dressing paedophiles – John Banks, Bob Harvey, or Paul Holmes.

Does New Zealand's biggest drug user Paul Holmes not have NZ$2 million in backing?

Do Paul Holmes' backers, the public and the Auckland City Council staff know that this Executive Mayor contender had sex with his mother, removed his father from the family, has four drug dealers, trained his stepdaughter as a crackwhore from 14, supplied her for sex with his friend Bob Jones (CIA) in exchange for methamphetamines (P), went to Cuba with Sir Bob Jones for a sex tour with minors, then married he and his wife's prostitute – Deborah Hamilton?

Do Paul Holmes' backers, the public and the Auckland City Council staff know that he is the "Washington Programmer" whose role it is to ensure that the truth is never told?

Is it not true that the Auckland Super City scheme is a CIA take over of Auckland?

Is it not true that this will increase costs?

Is it not true that this will increase traffic infringement notices and tickets?

Is it not true that this will make the Auckland City Council and Police more hardlined?

Is it not true that this is the opposite of what the citizens and ratepayers want?

Is this not a formula for fascism?

Is New Zealand not a fascist country fronting as a socialist country?

Is it not true that this has direct influence on my traffic infringement notices given that I had legitimate reason to be in the lefthand Bus Lane and had the parking ticket, and have presented evidence of both of these to the Auckland City Council?

Is it not true that changing the rules of a fine from 'not having a parking receipt' to 'failing to display a parking receipt' and then manufacturing the parking receipt from extremely lightweight paper so that it blows away in the slightest wind, is **CRIME CREATION by the Auckland City Council?**

Is it not true that designating a Bus Lane and then the Auckland City Council buses not using that Bus Lane, shows a lack of common sense by the Auckland City Council?; and

Is it not **part of the Common Purpose agenda to remove common sense?**; and

Are CIA slappers and paedophiles like Dame Margaret Bazley and John Banks not part of Common Purpose?; and

Is this common sense?; or

Common Purpose?

Is it not true that these tickets are a bitchslap for exposing the Mayor of Auckland John Banks as a paedophile, a drug trafficker, and a CIA agent?

Is it not true that these tickets are a bitchslap for exposing the Dame Margaret Bazley as a slapper, contract killer of at least 2,000, and CIA agent?

Are these tickets then not an attempt by the CIA to enforce the Common Purpose paedophile movement to the detriment of common sense?

Is it not true that paeodphilia is illegal?

Is it not true that child sex abuse is illegal?

Is it not true that the following "respectable" and "Honourable" people are paedophiles and/or child sex abusers:

Mayor of Auckland John Banks; Husband of the Chief Justice, Hugh Fletcher; Husband of ex-Prime Minister Helen Clark, Peter Davis; Husband of Judge Coral Shaw, Peter Shaw; PR agent to Helen Clark, Brian Edwards; Sir Bob Jones; Sir Ron Brierley; Sir Roger Douglas; David McNee whose murder was covered up by Chief Justice Sian Elias, Helen Clark and Judge Coral Shaw; Jonathan Hunt who was promoted from Speaker of the House to High Commissioner of Britain after US Customs exposed him as a paedophile; and Takapuna Police District Commander Taffy Walsh who was jailed for having sex with his own 8 and 10 year old granddaughters in his executive toilet?.

Is it not true that the word "respectable" means 'paeodphile minder'?

Is it not true that the style "Honourable" means 'long-term paeodphile minder'?

Is it not true that no one who has exposed a paedophile or a child sex abuser has ever been considered respectable?

Is it not true that these unnecessary traffic infringement notices are being used to prevent me from charging Peter Williams QC with slavery?

Does this not make the Auckland City Council an accessory to slavery?

Is this not in breach of many international laws, in particular 'Involuntary Servitude'?

The Ministry of Justice ignores Mayor John Banks paedophilia and makes threats
The Ministry of Justice in Auckland phoned at 10.15 am on Wednesday 25 March 2009: "Josef Hore'let. Nella . . . 'Nalita I'mtheonlyonehere' . . . of the Auckland District Court. I'm just making you aware there is another fine on the system and we can take your car at any time, arrest you at any time and take your property at any time . . . This is a fine and cannot be disputed."

Greg Hallett: "Mayor John Banks is a paedophile. This has been published in a book. I'm getting vindictive traffic tickets for exposing the Mayor John Banks as a paedophile."

Nella I'mtheonlyonehere: "John Bank's paedophilia is not our issue".

Greg Hallett: "What! I just told you your boss was a paedophile."

Nella I'mtheonlyonehere: "[Nothing]."

Greg Hallett: "Well here's my issue. You're allowed to turn left from a bus lane. I've got receipts to show I had business there. I had a parking receipt, but they're too light and blow off in the wind. Copies of these were presented to you . . . The Auckland City Council issues the ticket and then decides whether or not they will accept the reason offered, and when they don't, they send it to the District Court and add $30 without prior notification of non-acceptance of the reason given. The Auckland City Council is acting as judge and jury."

Nella I'mtheonlyonehere: "You could fill in a Form 57 to apply to have it taken back to the Auckland City Council . . ."

Greg Hallett: "Where they would act as judge and jury and decide whether or not they would 'no longer pursue it', or it would go back to the Auckland District Court for further collection. This makes the Auckland City Council their own court. You're acting in breach of the Declaration of Helsinki. Can you put me through to your superior [10.25 am].

Nella I'mtheonlyonehere: "I'll put you through to the team leader Sydney Bird".

Team Leader Sydney Bird: "Sid . . . We obviously have to look at your profile".

Greg Hallett: "[As above and] Isn't profiling illegal, from the end of the Cold War on? You're acting in breach of the Declaration of Helsinki."

Team Leader Sydney Bird: "[pause, hung up, not even a good bye or return call, 10.33 am.]"

The Ministry of Justice Head Office in Wellington then phoned two days later at 10.11 am on Friday 27 March 2009.

Sarah I'mtheonlyonehere: "You have another traffic ticket – the same one".

Greg Hallett: "I mentioned to the Ministry of Justice in Auckland that the Auckland Mayor John Banks is a paedophile, and they and you are in breach of the Declaration of Helsinki."

Sarah I'mtheonlyonehere: "The only people who can withdraw the ticket are the ACC. I will put this on hold until the end of April . . . the 30th of April."

Greg Hallett: "I want this ticket heard with the others on 20 April".

Sarah I'mtheonlyonehere: "Fill in the form 57 for it. The Deputy Registrar at the Auckland District Court should know."

The Auckland City Council/ Just-Us/ Injustice Department have now spent more money and resources collecting and informing than they're worth.

This makes it a 'fear-and-breach' exercise where the government **boiler-plates** (pay now or else 1, 2, and/or 3), **hobbles** (removal of car) and **blacklists** (one challenged ticket attracts more) in an attempt to create the **perfect MKULTRA CIA contract killer – a lot like Dame Margaret Bazley who dictated the system to the police she had sex with, in exchange for their promotion to enforce her rules.**

So New Zealand traffic tickets look a lot like Dame Margaret Bazley's fanny – it takes a lot of punishment but always returns to form.

Author: "FUCK! I'd hate to break that seal."

Gavin, Ministry of Justice, Wellington, 11.40 am, 29 April 2009: "I've been here for a year and never seen a file sealed . . . I do apologise for it taking so long to be dealt with."

> **All of these matters should be established as CLEAR, SUBSTANTIVE AND TRUE upon a full hearing with a court reader, reading out this entire document, which will be filmed for DVD sale and/or display on YouTube, along with this accompanying document with the Judge making summary judgements on each point . . . and anything less is a breach of justice.**

THIS IS A FORMAL REQUEST FOR DIPLOMATIC IMMUNITY.

May I remind you that one hundred million New Zealand dollars (NZ$100,000,000.00) was claimed in the HIGH COURT on 20 April 2009 and this claim still stands.

Yours sincerely,

Joseph Gregory Hallett
aka Prince of New Spain
PO Box 109 624 Newmarket | Auckland
www.greghallett.com
All rights reserved.

Judith Tizard contracted gonorrhea three times while going through her short heterosexual phase.

PM Helen Clark with the MP for Auckland Judith Tizard at Cable Bay on Waiheke Island.

Judith Tizard was Helen Clark's jilted lover prior to Helen's cover marriage to the homosexual child sex abuser and former president of the Auckland University Gay Society, Peter Davis, two weeks before Helen entered politics. The nutty-as-a-fat-fuck Judith appears to be in fanny ecstasy.

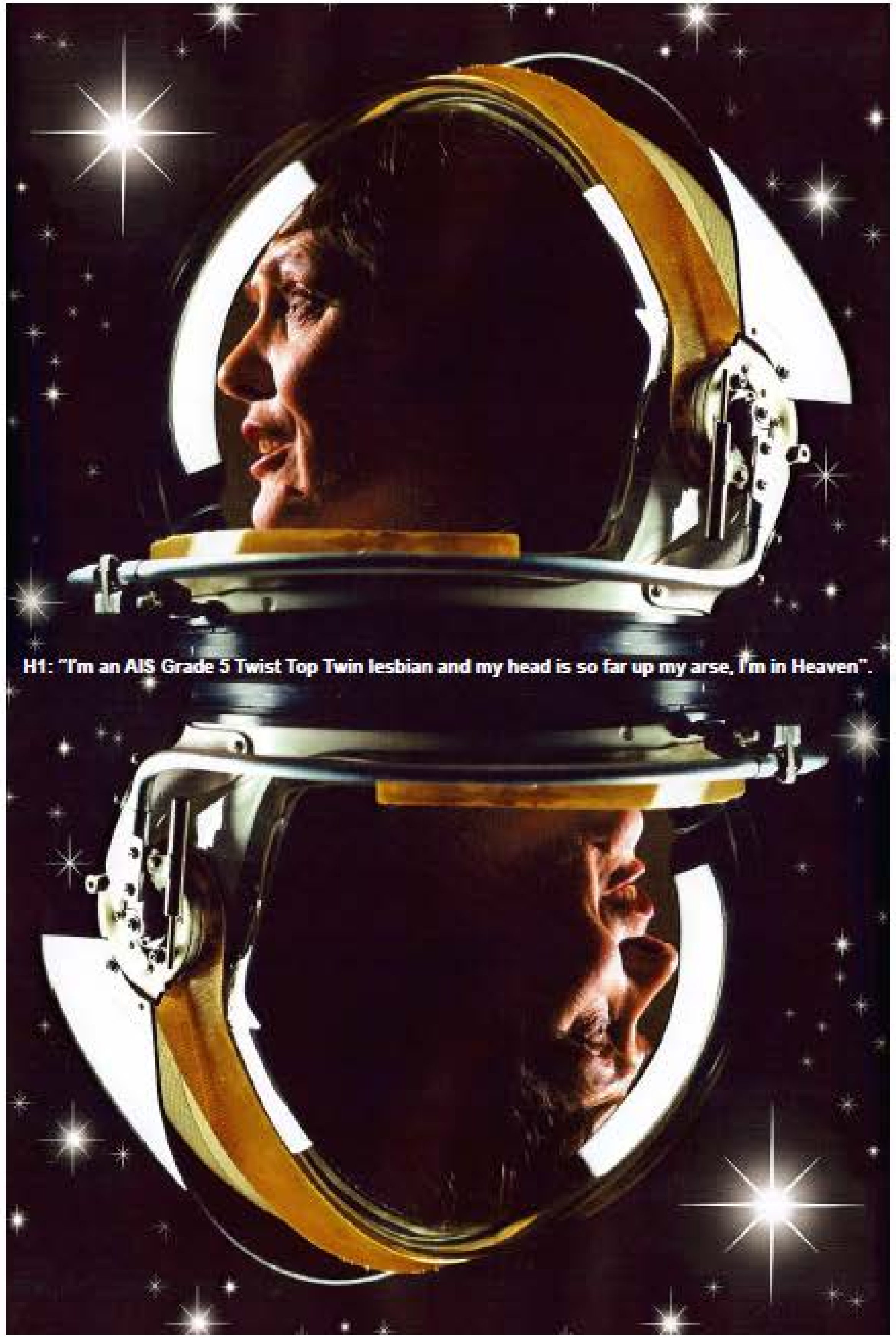

H1: "I'm an AIS Grade 5 Twist Top Twin lesbian and my head is so far up my arse, I'm in Heaven".

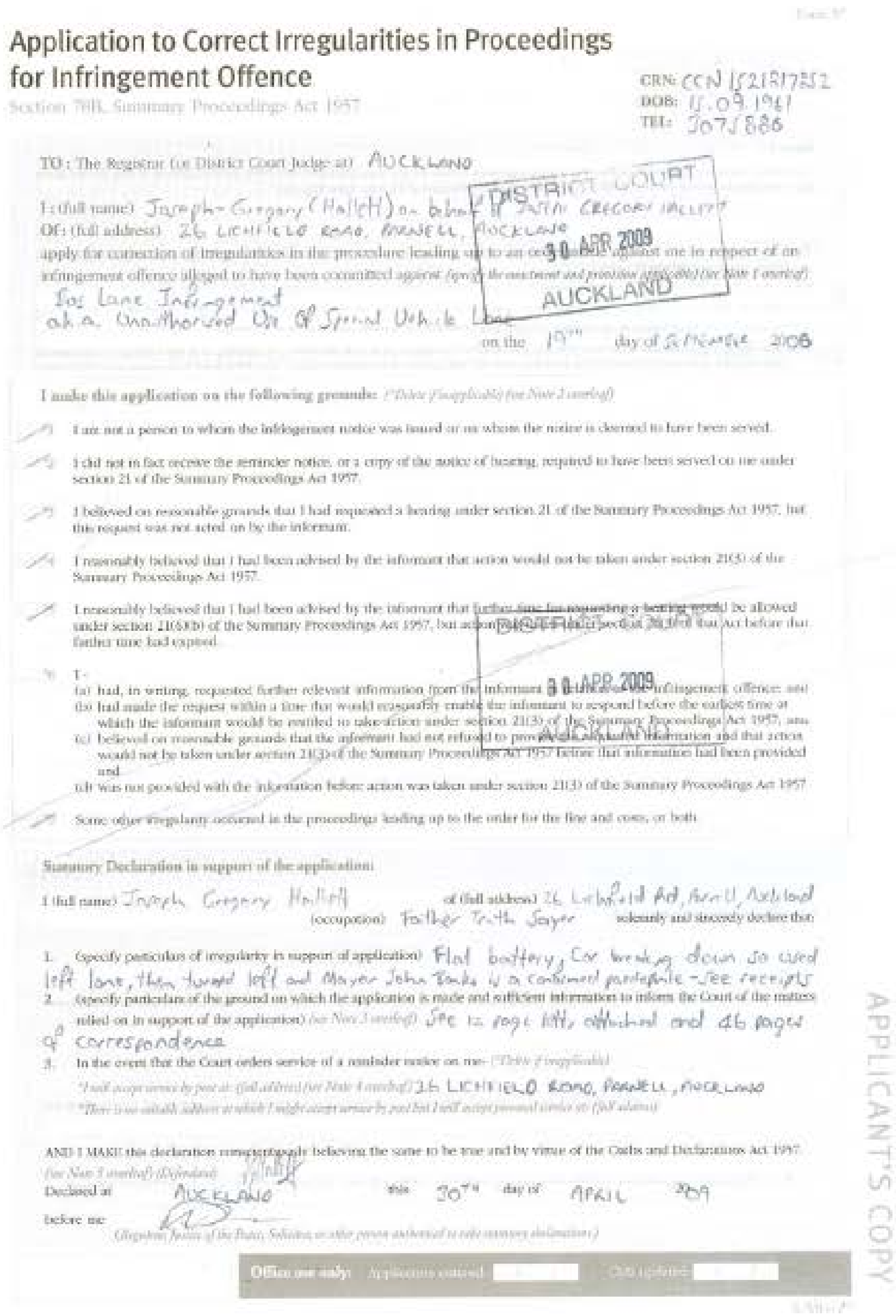

Application to Correct Irregularities in Proceedings for Infringement Offence

Section 78B, Summary Proceedings Act 1957

CRN: CCN 1521817852
DOB: 15.09.1961
TEL: 3075886

TO: The Registrar (or District Court Judge at) AUCKLAND

DISTRICT COURT
30 APR 2009
AUCKLAND

I: (full name) Joseph-Gregory (Hallett) on behalf of JUSTIN GREGORY HALLETT
Of: (full address) 26 LICHFIELD ROAD, PARNELL, AUCKLAND
apply for correction of irregularities in the procedure leading up to an order against me in respect of an infringement offence alleged to have been committed against (specify the enactment and provision applicable) (see Note 1 overleaf)
Bus Lane Infringement
a.k.a. Unauthorised Use of Special Vehicle Lane
on the 19th day of SEPTEMBER 2008

I make this application on the following grounds: (*Delete if inapplicable) (see Note 2 overleaf)

* I am not a person to whom the infringement notice was issued or on whom the notice is deemed to have been served.

* I did not in fact receive the reminder notice, or a copy of the notice of hearing, required to have been served on me under section 21 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

* I believed on reasonable grounds that I had requested a hearing under section 21 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957, but this request was not acted on by the informant.

* I reasonably believed that I had been advised by the informant that action would not be taken under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

* I reasonably believed that I had been advised by the informant that further time for requesting a hearing would be allowed under section 21(5)(b) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957, but action was taken under section 21(3) of that Act before that further time had expired.

* I -
(a) had, in writing, requested further relevant information from the informant in relation to the infringement offence; and
(b) had made the request within a time that would reasonably enable the informant to respond before the earliest time at which the informant would be entitled to take action under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957; and
(c) believed on reasonable grounds that the informant had not refused to provide the requested information and that action would not be taken under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 before that information had been provided and
(d) was not provided with the information before action was taken under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957

* Some other irregularity occurred in the proceedings leading up to the order for the fine and costs, or both

DISTRICT COURT
30 APR 2009
AUCKLAND

Statutory Declaration in support of the application:

I (full name) Joseph Gregory Hallett of (full address) 26 Lichfield Rd, Parnell, Auckland
(occupation) Father Truth Sayer solemnly and sincerely declare that:

1. (specify particulars of irregularity in support of application) Flat battery, Car breaking down so used left lane, then turned left and Mayor John Banks is a confirmed paedophile - see receipts
2. (specify particulars of the ground on which the application is made and sufficient information to inform the Court of the matters relied on in support of the application) (see Note 3 overleaf) See 12 page letter attached and 46 pages of correspondence
3. In the event that the Court orders service of a reminder notice on me- (*Delete if inapplicable)
*I will accept service by post at: (full address) (see Note 4 overleaf) 26 LICHFIELD ROAD, PARNELL, AUCKLAND
*There is no suitable address at which I might accept service by post but I will accept personal service at: (full address)

AND I MAKE this declaration conscientiously believing the same to be true and by virtue of the Oaths and Declarations Act 1957.
(see Note 5 overleaf) (Defendant)
Declared at AUCKLAND this 30th day of APRIL 2009
before me:
(Registrar, Justice of the Peace, Solicitor, or other person authorised to take statutory declarations)

Office use only: Application entered: Ctrl updated:

APPLICANT'S COPY

TAXI STAND TICKET

How the Auckland City Council Agrees

14 November–16 December 2008

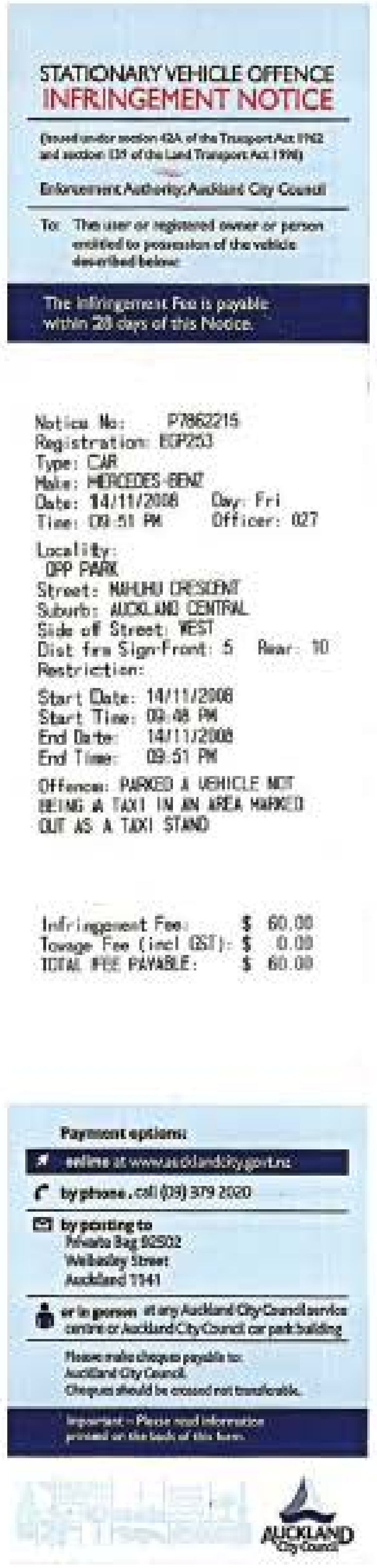

STATIONARY VEHICLE OFFENCE
INFRINGEMENT NOTICE

(Issued under section 42A of the Transport Act 1962
and section 139 of the Land Transport Act 1998)

Enforcement Authority: Auckland City Council

To: The user or registered owner or person entitled to possession of the vehicle described below:

The Infringement Fee is payable within 28 days of this Notice.

```
Notice No:     P7862215
Registration: EGP253
Type: CAR
Make: MERCEDES-BENZ
Date: 14/11/2008    Day: Fri
Time: 09:51 PM      Officer: 027

Locality:
 OPP PARK
Street: MAHUHU CRESCENT
Suburb: AUCKLAND CENTRAL
Side of Street: WEST
Dist frm Sign-Front: 5   Rear: 10
Restriction:

Start Date: 14/11/2008
Start Time: 09:48 PM
End Date:   14/11/2008
End Time:   09:51 PM

Offence: PARKED A VEHICLE NOT
BEING A TAXI IN AN AREA MARKED
OUT AS A TAXI STAND


Infringement Fee:       $  60.00
Towage Fee (incl GST):  $   0.00
TOTAL FEE PAYABLE:      $  60.00
```

Payment options:

online at www.aucklandcity.govt.nz

by phone. call (09) 379 2020

by posting to
Private Bag 92502
Wellesley Street
Auckland 1141

or in person at any Auckland City Council service centre or Auckland City Council car park building

Please make cheques payable to:
Auckland City Council.
Cheques should be crossed not transferable.

Important – Please read information printed on the back of this form.

AUCKLAND
City Council

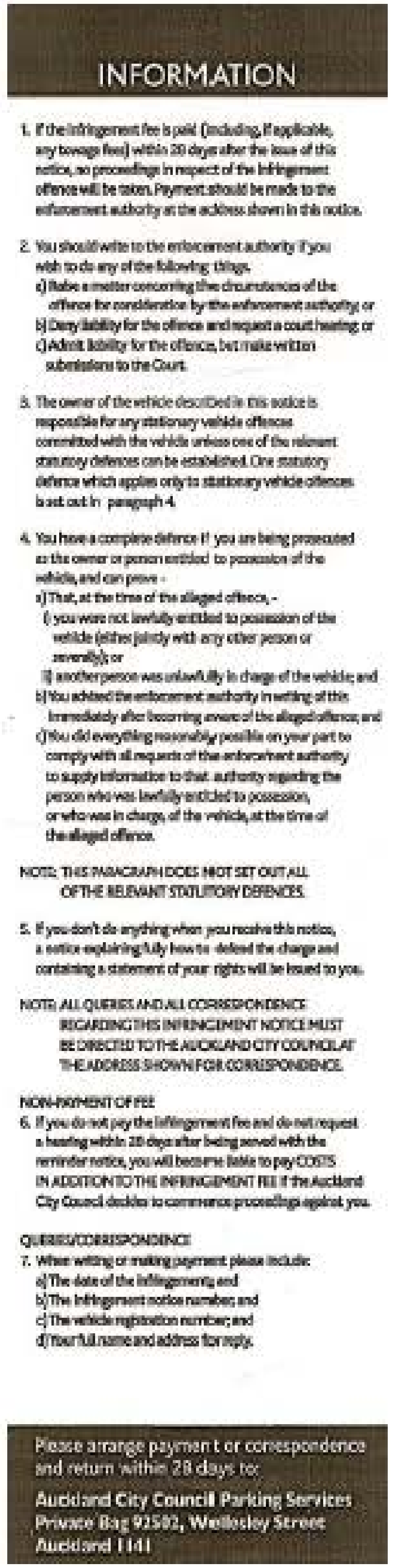

INFORMATION

1. If the infringement fee is paid (including, if applicable, any towage fee) within 28 days after the issue of this notice, no proceedings in respect of the infringement offence will be taken. Payment should be made to the enforcement authority at the address shown in this notice.

2. You should write to the enforcement authority if you wish to do any of the following things:
   a) Raise a matter concerning the circumstances of the offence for consideration by the enforcement authority; or
   b) Deny liability for the offence and request a court hearing; or
   c) Admit liability for the offence, but make written submissions to the Court.

3. The owner of the vehicle described in this notice is responsible for any stationary vehicle offences committed with the vehicle unless one of the relevant statutory defences can be established. One statutory defence which applies only to stationary vehicle offences is set out in paragraph 4.

4. You have a complete defence if you are being prosecuted as the owner or person entitled to possession of the vehicle, and can prove -
   a) That, at the time of the alleged offence, -
      i) you were not lawfully entitled to possession of the vehicle (either jointly with any other person or severally); or
      ii) another person was unlawfully in charge of the vehicle; and
   b) You advised the enforcement authority in writing of this immediately after becoming aware of the alleged offence; and
   c) You did everything reasonably possible on your part to comply with all requests of the enforcement authority to supply information to that authority regarding the person who was lawfully entitled to possession, or who was in charge, of the vehicle, at the time of the alleged offence.

NOTE: THIS PARAGRAPH DOES NOT SET OUT ALL OF THE RELEVANT STATUTORY DEFENCES.

5. If you don't do anything when you receive this notice, a notice explaining fully how to defend the charge and containing a statement of your rights will be issued to you.

NOTE: ALL QUERIES AND ALL CORRESPONDENCE REGARDING THIS INFRINGEMENT NOTICE MUST BE DIRECTED TO THE AUCKLAND CITY COUNCIL AT THE ADDRESS SHOWN FOR CORRESPONDENCE.

NON-PAYMENT OF FEE

6. If you do not pay the infringement fee and do not request a hearing within 28 days after being served with the reminder notice, you will become liable to pay COSTS IN ADDITION TO THE INFRINGEMENT FEE if the Auckland City Council decides to commence proceedings against you.

QUERIES/CORRESPONDENCE

7. When writing or making payment please include:
   a) The date of the infringement; and
   b) The infringement notice number; and
   c) The vehicle registration number; and
   d) Your full name and address for reply.

Please arrange payment or correspondence and return within 28 days to:

**Auckland City Council Parking Services
Private Bag 92502, Wellesley Street
Auckland 1141**

24 November 2008

Officer 027
Auckland City Council
Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland; and
Transport Division, Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland

Ref: Notice No: P7862215 received on windscreen at 9:55 PM 14/11/2008.

Officer 027,

Take notice that the Auckland City Council has been cited as an accessory to attempted murder, and by association, accessory to the murders that were carried out.

Under section 118(3) of the Land Transport Act 1998 Joseph Gregory Hallett is complying with your request.

Joseph Gregory Hallett swears to following:

1. The signs in question were not lit.
2. The signs in question are too high up to be lit by car lights, even by high beam.
3. There are no streetlights illuminating the signs.
4. There are no sign-lights illuminating the signs.
5. There was no way to see the signs.
6. The signs in question are flipped down 24 hours before required, as required by bylaw.
7. There is no way of telling whether the signs are currently valid or not.
8. There is no way of telling whether the signs would be enforced.
9. Since the concerts that they refer to only go on for 4 hours, the signs are invalid 24 out of 28 hours.
10. The signs are invalid for 85 per cent of the time that they are up.
11. There was no sign saying "concert in progress".
12. There was no sign saying "concert in progress" to show that the sign would be enforced.
13. No taxis were using the space at the time the "vehicle" was parked.
14. No taxis showed that the area was a taxi stand.
15. Officer 027 was not parked to prevent an infringement.
16. Officer 027 could easily have parked to prevent an infringement.
17. Officer 027 could warn incoming drivers as to the unlit infringement.
18. Officer 027 was stationed in a hidden car in order to gain pecuniary advantage.
19. This is not a service, but an unnecessary tax. This is an employment scheme for corrupt foreigners. This is contrary to a just and equitable society.
20. I suspect Officer 027 drove his car into a darkened hiding place and issued traffic tickets once the target "vehicle" was parked, in the darkened area, where the signs could not be seen, where no taxis were parked, when the driver was absent, and without warning.

21. The INFRINGEMENT NOTICE reads: "Offence: PARKED IN A VEHICLE NOT BEING A TAXI IN AN AREA MARKED OUT AS A TAXI STAND".
22. Please explain and define all terms and references without using any other references.
    a. Please define the term "Taxi" to a parked "vehicle" with no person inside.
    b. Please define how a "vehicle" can be a "taxi".
    c. Please define the term "Taxi Stand" to a parked "vehicle" with no person "inside".
    d. Please define how a "vehicle" can have a person inside.
    e. Please define the terms of lighting required for a "Taxi Stand".
    f. Please define the terms of lighting required for a temporary "Taxi Stand".
    g. Please define the terms of lighting for all Auckland City Council signs.
    h. Please define section 118 (1) of the Land Transport Act 1998.
    i. Please define the Land Transport (Road User) Rule 2004 part 2.3(1).
    j. Please illustrate the term "vehicle" with four (4) wheels under statute. It is my understanding that none exists.
23. Registration EGP253 has at all material times four wheels.
24. As requested in a letter dated 29 September 2008 to Bus lane enforcement officer 233 of the Auckland City Council, Ref: T7609439:
    "Please show that the October, November and December 2007 publication of New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, which illustrates that the Mayor of Auckland, John Banks, was a paedophile (p. 151), the Chairman of the Auckland Regional Council, Mike Lee, was married to the child prostitute Sandra née Vercoe Lee (p. 19) and Mike Lee was the last male to have sex with Helen Clark (p. 19), that the child prostitute Sandra Lee was an Auckland City Councillor (p. 19), and Gary Taylor who runs Auckland City filmed his wife having sex with other Labour Party members (p. 168)" . . . was not an influence on not lighting the signs for which you have placed an infringement notice.
25. I take it that the Auckland City Council's failure to respond for two months (by 24 November 2008) is confirmation that the Auckland City Council confirms:
    The Mayor of Auckland John Banks is a paedophile.

    The Chairman of the Auckland Regional Council Mike Lee was married to a child prostitute.

    Auckland City Councillor Sandra née Vercoe Lee was a child prostitute.

    Mike Lee was the last male to have sex with Helen Clark.

    Gary Taylor who runs Auckland City filmed his wife having sex with Labour Party members.
26. As requested in a letter dated 29 September 2008 to Bus lane enforcement officer 233 of the Auckland City Council, Ref: T7609439:
    "Please provide evidence that Indians are not collecting the wages of Pariah, Harijans, Untouchables, or Outcastes, and/or are working the Indian caste system in New Zealand for the benefit of Sudras, Vaisyas, Kshatriya and/or Brahmin."

27. I take it that the Auckland City Council's failure to respond for two months (by 24 November 2008) is confirmation that the Auckland City Council confirms:
    Indians are collecting the wages of Pariah, Harijans, Untouchables, and Outcastes, and are working the Indian caste system in New Zealand for the benefit of Sudras, Vaisyas, Kshatriya and/or Brahmin.

28. As requested in a letter dated 29 September 2008 to Bus lane enforcement officer 233 of the Auckland City Council, Ref: T7609439:
    "I still have not had a response from the Auckland City Council where I lodged a NOTICE OF GENERAL APPEAL in the Auckland District Court on the 2 July 2008 (C.R.I. 2006-004-021-217) that Prime Minister Helen Clark is a Tavistock St Petersburg prostitute who tried to murder Joseph Gregory Hallett on 2 April 2002, 23 August 2002, and 14–22 May 2004; and where, to all intents and purposes, the Auckland City Council acted as an accomplice to a breach of the Declaration of Helsinki – that is, attempted murder, followed by fines to pay for the murder attempt. Please clarify the Auckland City Council's involvement in these murder attempts/traffic tickets within 7 days."

29. I take it that the Auckland City Council's failure to respond for three months (by 2 October 2008 [and now by 24 November 2008, four months]) is confirmation that the Auckland City Council is accessory to murder and that this matter should be addressed publicly.

30. **The Auckland City Council is accessory to attempted murder.**

31. **It can now be publicly stated that the Auckland City Council is an accessory to attempted murder.**

32. As requested in a letter dated 29 September 2008 to Bus lane enforcement officer 233 of the Auckland City Council, Ref: T7609439:
    "Could you please confirm or deny, in full readable sentence, that the Justice of the Peace (JP's) are the area paedophile minders and who report directly to the Governor-General, who is the Chief Boy Scout and Chief Girl Guide, and in collusion with this paedophile arrangement, the Mayor of Auckland, is, once again, the paedophile John Banks, who was, formerly the Minister of Police, who protected paedophiles in the police and/or the Auckland City Council."

33. **The Justice of the Peace (JP's) are the area paedophile minders.**

34. **The Justice of the Peace report directly to the Governor-General.**

35. **The Governor-General is the Chief Boy Scout and Chief Girl Guide.**

36. **The Mayor of Auckland John Banks is a paedophile who protects paedophiles in the police and the Auckland City Council.**

37. **The Auckland City Council works closely with the Auckland Police.**

38. Could you please confirm/deny that the Auckland Area Commander Clint Rickards was New Zealand's worst ever rapist and that he worked closely with the Ombudsman Anand Satyanand (from 2003) who is now the Governor-General, as nominated by the murderer and St Petersburg prostitute, Prime Minister Helen Clark. Failure to respond within 7 days will be taken as confirmation by the Auckland City Council, the above, and that the Police are rapists.

39. **As of 6 October 2008, the Auckland City Council confirms that Auckland Area Commander Clint Rickards was New Zealand's worst ever rapist.**

40. **As of 6 October 2008, the Auckland City Council confirms that New Zealand's worst ever rapist Clint Rickards worked closely with the Ombudsman Anand Satyanand who is now the Governor-General.**

41. **As of 6 October 2008, the Auckland City Council confirms Anand Satyanand was nominated to the position of Governor-General by the murderer and St Petersburg prostitute Helen Clark, ex-Prime Minister.**

42. **As of 6 October 2008, the Auckland City Council confirms that the Police are rapists.**

43. As requested in a letter dated 29 September 2008 to Bus lane enforcement officer 233 of the Auckland City Council, Ref: T7609439:

    "Your complete reply to all matters raised is required within 7 days, otherwise it will be taken that T7609439 has no validity and has no infringement fee attached, and that all other statements made in this letter are true, and all matters lodged between Joseph Gregory Hallett and the Auckland City Council on 2 July 2008 are in the material favour of Joseph Gregory Hallett, and are to be compensated for accordingly, promptly, and within 72 hours from note of date of failure to respond."

44. **Joseph Gregory Hallett a.k.a. Prince of New Spain is hereby materially due, from the complicity and admitted guilt of the Auckland City Council, a sum from the Auckland City Council, for the Auckland City Council's accessory to the attempted murder of Joseph Gregory Hallett.**

45. Notice No: P7862215 has no validity and all other statements made in the letter from the **Prince of New Spain** dated 24 November 2008 are true, and all matters lodged between Joseph Gregory Hallett and the Auckland City Council on 2 July 2008 and 29 September 2008 are in the material favour of Joseph Gregory Hallett, and are to be compensated for accordingly, promptly, and within 72 hours from note of date of failure to respond.

46. Failure to respond occurred on 6 October 2008.

47. Joseph Gregory Hallett a.k.a. Prince of New Spain is hereby materially due from the complicity and admitted guilt of the Auckland City Council, a sum due for the Auckland City Council's accessory to the attempted murder of Joseph Gregory Hallett.

No liability is accepted or considered until all of these matters have been explained and addressed.

Yours sincerely,

Prince of New Spain
PO Box 109 624 Newmarket, Auckland, Gmail: princeofnewspain

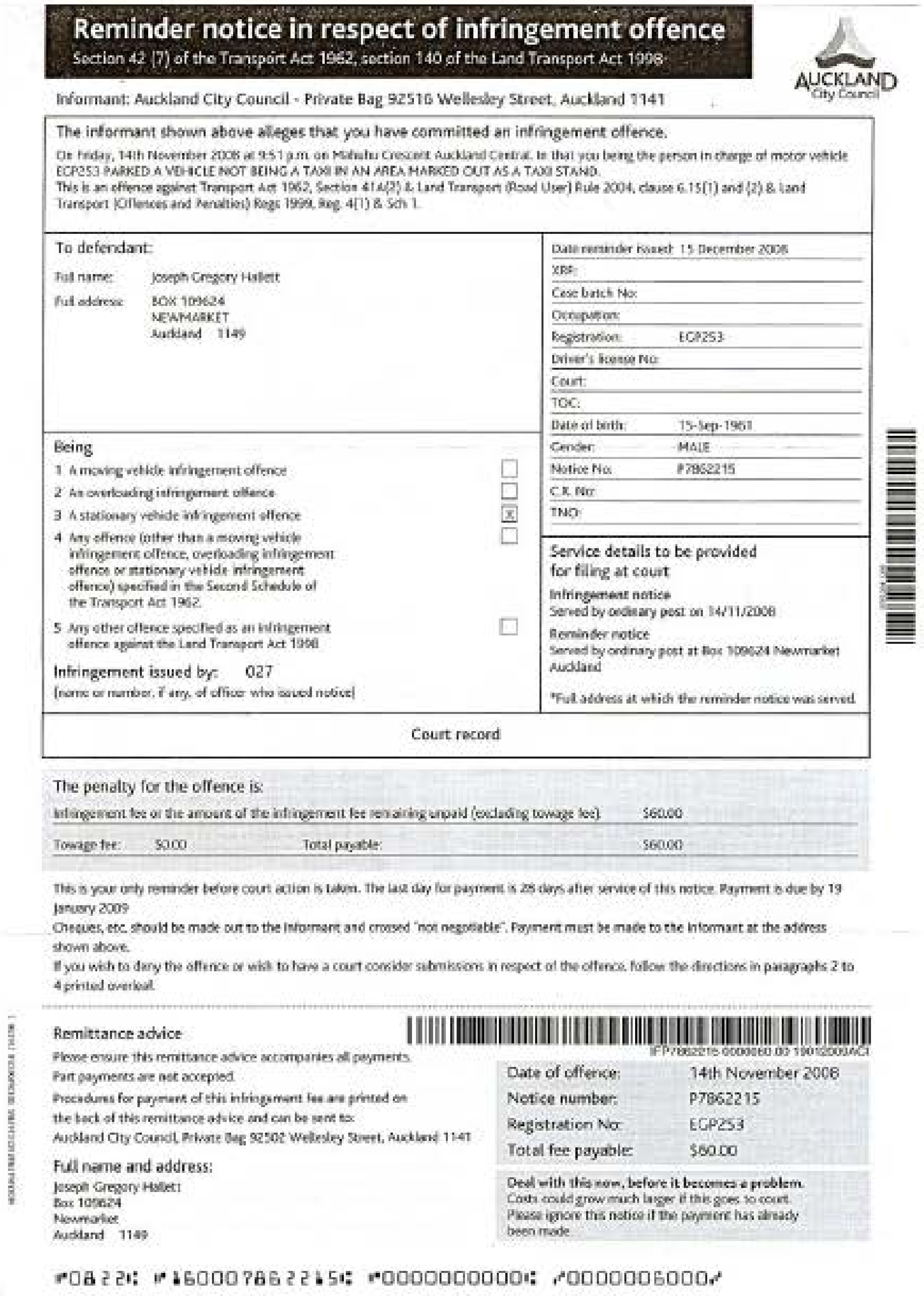

Reminder notice in respect of infringement offence

Section 42 (7) of the Transport Act 1962, section 140 of the Land Transport Act 1998

AUCKLAND City Council

Informant: Auckland City Council - Private Bag 92516 Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141

The informant shown above alleges that you have committed an infringement offence.

On Friday, 14th November 2008 at 9:51 p.m. on Mahuhu Crescent Auckland Central. In that you being the person in charge of motor vehicle ECP253 PARKED A VEHICLE NOT BEING A TAXI IN AN AREA MARKED OUT AS A TAXI STAND.
This is an offence against Transport Act 1962, Section 41A(2) & Land Transport (Road User) Rule 2004, clause 6.15(1) and (2) & Land Transport (Offences and Penalties) Regs 1999, Reg. 4(1) & Sch 1.

To defendant:

Full name: Joseph Gregory Hallett

Full address:
BOX 109624
NEWMARKET
Auckland 1149

Date reminder issued: 15 December 2008
XRF:
Case batch No:
Occupation:
Registration: ECP253
Driver's license No:
Court:
TOC:
Date of birth: 15-Sep-1961
Gender: MALE
Notice No. P7862215
C.R. No:
TNO:

Being

1 A moving vehicle infringement offence ☐
2 An overloading infringement offence ☐
3 A stationary vehicle infringement offence ☒
4 Any offence (other than a moving vehicle infringement offence, overloading infringement offence or stationary vehicle infringement offence) specified in the Second Schedule of the Transport Act 1962. ☐
5 Any other offence specified as an infringement offence against the Land Transport Act 1998 ☐

Infringement issued by: 027
(name or number, if any, of officer who issued notice)

Service details to be provided for filing at court

Infringement notice
Served by ordinary post on 14/11/2008

Reminder notice
Served by ordinary post at Box 109624 Newmarket Auckland

*Full address at which the reminder notice was served.

Court record

The penalty for the offence is:

Infringement fee or the amount of the infringement fee remaining unpaid (excluding towage fee).		$60.00
Towage fee: $0.00	Total payable:	$60.00

This is your only reminder before court action is taken. The last day for payment is 28 days after service of this notice. Payment is due by 19 January 2009

Cheques, etc. should be made out to the informant and crossed "not negotiable". Payment must be made to the informant at the address shown above.

If you wish to deny the offence or wish to have a court consider submissions in respect of the offence, follow the directions in paragraphs 2 to 4 printed overleaf.

Remittance advice

IFP7862215 0000060.00 19012009ACI

Please ensure this remittance advice accompanies all payments.
Part payments are not accepted.
Procedures for payment of this infringement fee are printed on the back of this remittance advice and can be sent to:
Auckland City Council, Private Bag 92502 Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141

Full name and address:
Joseph Gregory Hallett
Box 109624
Newmarket
Auckland 1149

Date of offence:	14th November 2008
Notice number:	P7862215
Registration No:	ECP253
Total fee payable:	$60.00

Deal with this now, before it becomes a problem.
Costs could grow much larger if this goes to court.
Please ignore this notice if the payment has already been made.

⑈08 22⑆ ⑈16000786 2215⑆ ⑈0000000000⑆ ⑇0000006000⑇

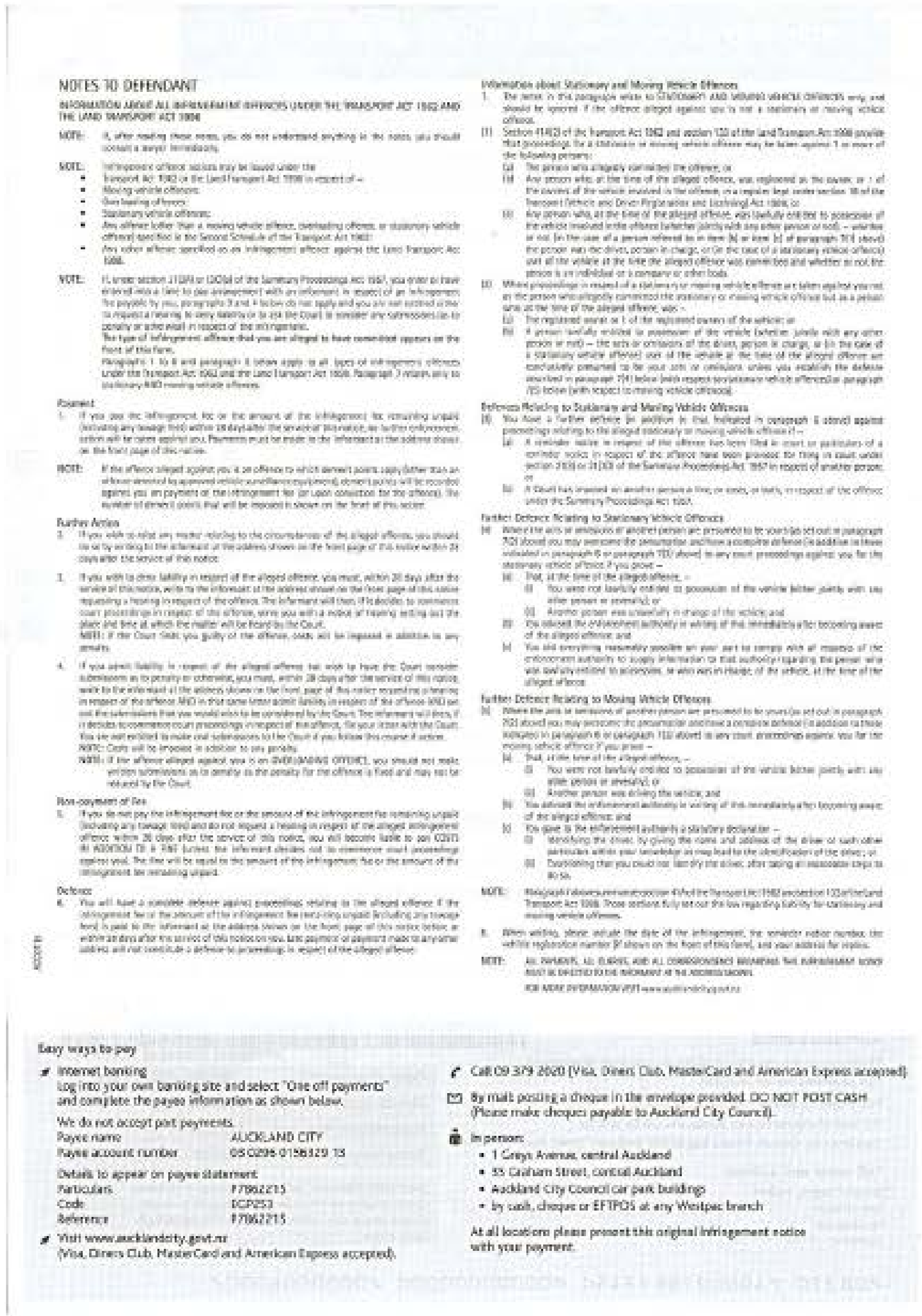

NOTES TO DEFENDANT

INFORMATION ABOUT ALL INFRINGEMENT OFFENCES UNDER THE TRANSPORT ACT 1962 AND THE LAND TRANSPORT ACT 1998

Easy ways to pay

Internet banking
Log into your own banking site and select "One off payments" and complete the payee information as shown below.

We do not accept part payments.

Payee name	AUCKLAND CITY
Payee account number	03 0296 0156329 13

Details to appear on payee statement

Particulars	P7862215
Code	ECP253
Reference	P7862215

Visit www.aucklandcity.govt.nz
(Visa, Diners Club, MasterCard and American Express accepted).

Call 09 379 2020 (Visa, Diners Club, MasterCard and American Express accepted).

By mail: posting a cheque in the envelope provided. DO NOT POST CASH
(Please make cheques payable to Auckland City Council).

In person:
- 1 Greys Avenue, central Auckland
- 35 Graham Street, central Auckland
- Auckland City Council car park buildings
- by cash, cheque or EFTPOS at any Westpac branch

At all locations please present this original infringement notice with your payment.

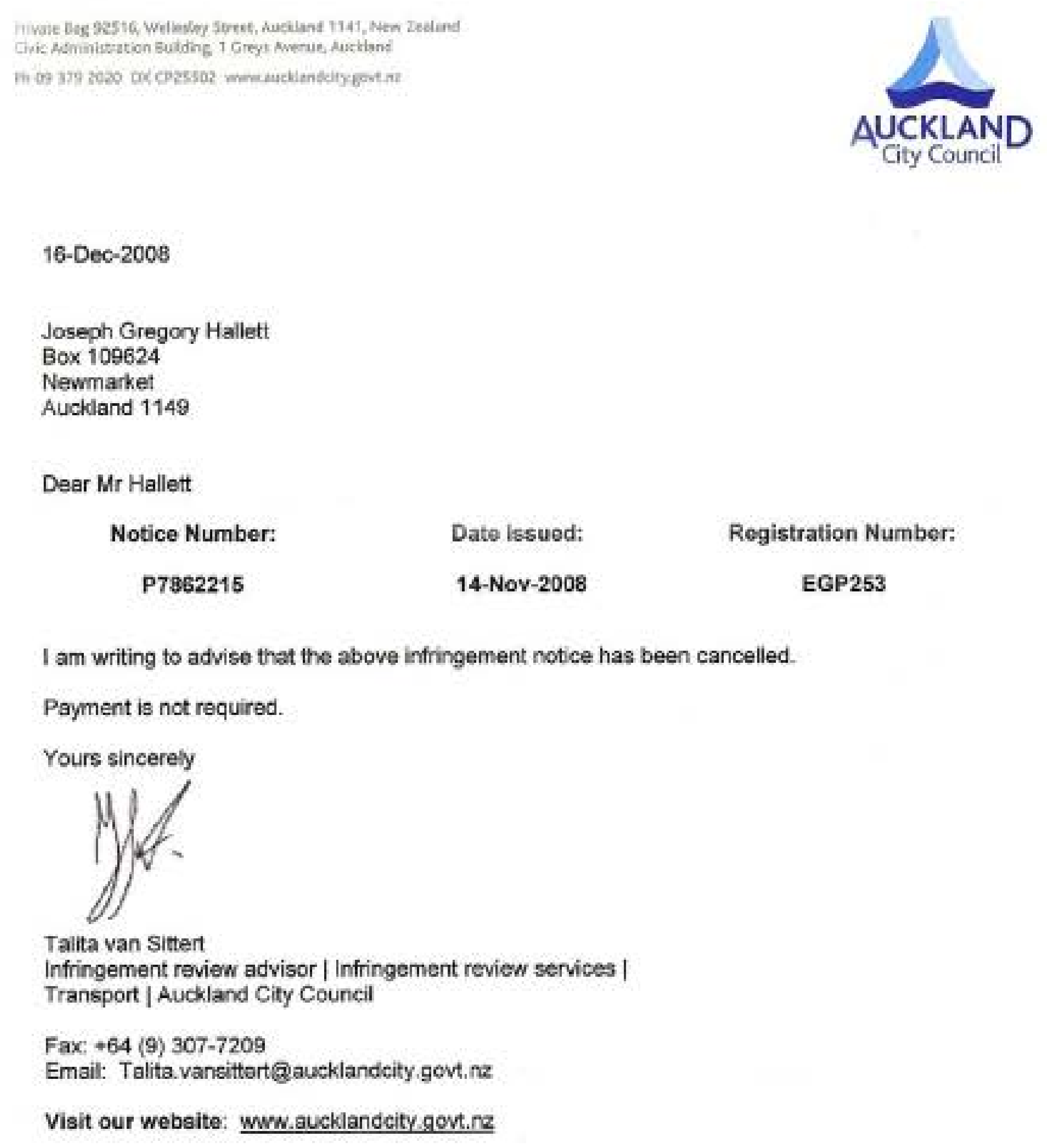

Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141, New Zealand
Civic Administration Building, 1 Greys Avenue, Auckland
Ph 09 379 2020 DX CP25502 www.aucklandcity.govt.nz

AUCKLAND
City Council

16-Dec-2008

Joseph Gregory Hallett
Box 109624
Newmarket
Auckland 1149

Dear Mr Hallett

Notice Number:	**Date Issued:**	**Registration Number:**
P7862215	**14-Nov-2008**	**EGP253**

I am writing to advise that the above infringement notice has been cancelled.

Payment is not required.

Yours sincerely

Talita van Sittert
Infringement review advisor | Infringement review services |
Transport | Auckland City Council

Fax: +64 (9) 307-7209
Email: Talita.vansittert@aucklandcity.govt.nz

Visit our website: www.aucklandcity.govt.nz

HIGH STREET TICKET

11 November 2008 – Armistice Day

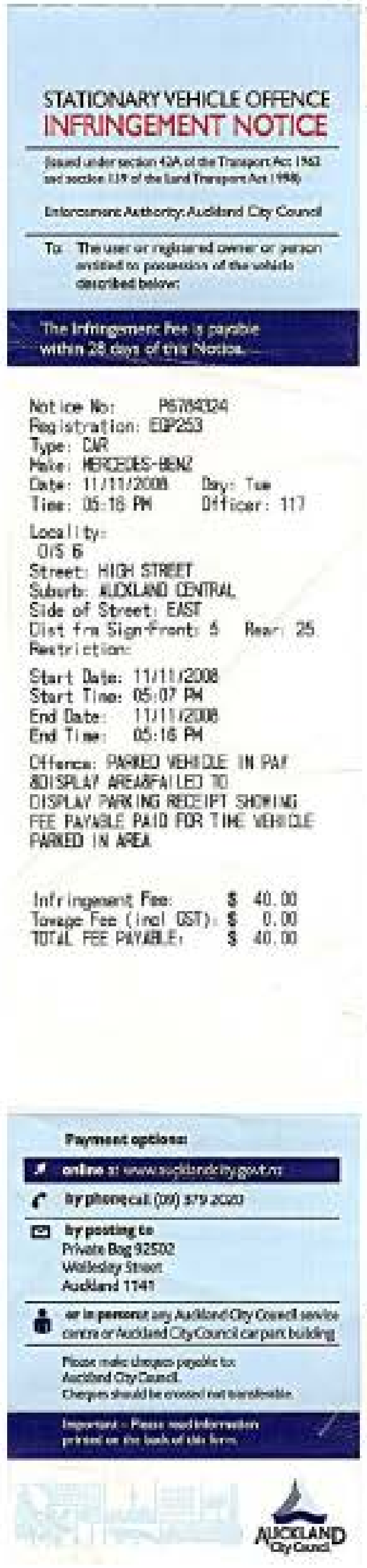

STATIONARY VEHICLE OFFENCE
INFRINGEMENT NOTICE

(Issued under section 42A of the Transport Act 1962 and section 139 of the Land Transport Act 1998)

Enforcement Authority: Auckland City Council

To: The user or registered owner or person entitled to possession of the vehicle described below:

The Infringement Fee is payable within 28 days of this Notice.

Notice No: P6784324
Registration: EGP253
Type: CAR
Make: MERCEDES-BENZ
Date: 11/11/2008 Day: Tue
Time: 05:16 PM Officer: 117

Locality:
O/S 6
Street: HIGH STREET
Suburb: AUCKLAND CENTRAL
Side of Street: EAST
Dist fm Sign-Front: 5 Rear: 25
Restriction:

Start Date: 11/11/2008
Start Time: 05:07 PM
End Date: 11/11/2008
End Time: 05:16 PM

Offence: PARKED VEHICLE IN PAY &DISPLAY AREA&FAILED TO DISPLAY PARKING RECEIPT SHOWING FEE PAYABLE PAID FOR TIME VEHICLE PARKED IN AREA

Infringement Fee:	$ 40.00
Towage Fee (incl GST):	$ 0.00
TOTAL FEE PAYABLE:	$ 40.00

Payment options:

online at www.aucklandcity.govt.nz

by phone call (09) 379 2020

by posting to
Private Bag 92502
Wellesley Street
Auckland 1141

or in person at any Auckland City Council service centre or Auckland City Council carpark building

Please make cheques payable to:
Auckland City Council.
Cheques should be crossed not transferable.

Important – Please read information printed on the back of this form.

AUCKLAND
City Council

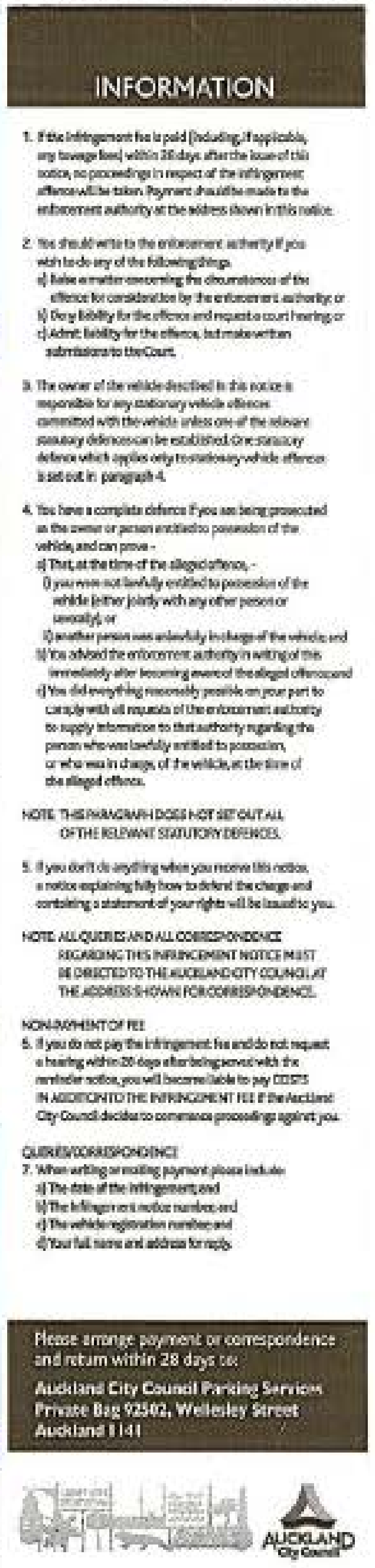

INFORMATION

1. If the infringement fee is paid (including, if applicable, any towage fees) within 28 days after the issue of this notice, no proceedings in respect of the infringement offence will be taken. Payment should be made to the enforcement authority at the address shown in this notice.

2. You should write to the enforcement authority if you wish to do any of the following things:
   a) Raise a matter concerning the circumstances of the offence for consideration by the enforcement authority; or
   b) Deny liability for the offence and request a court hearing; or
   c) Admit liability for the offence, but make written submissions to the Court.

3. The owner of the vehicle described in this notice is responsible for any stationary vehicle offences committed with the vehicle unless one of the relevant statutory defences can be established. One statutory defence which applies only to stationary vehicle offences is set out in paragraph 4.

4. You have a complete defence if you are being prosecuted as the owner or person entitled to possession of the vehicle, and can prove –
   a) That, at the time of the alleged offence, –
      (i) you were not lawfully entitled to possession of the vehicle (either jointly with any other person or severally); or
      (ii) another person was unlawfully in charge of the vehicle; and
   b) You advised the enforcement authority in writing of this immediately after becoming aware of the alleged offence; and
   c) You did everything reasonably possible on your part to comply with all requests of the enforcement authority to supply information to that authority regarding the person who was lawfully entitled to possession, or who was in charge, of the vehicle, at the time of the alleged offence.

NOTE: THIS PARAGRAPH DOES NOT SET OUT ALL OF THE RELEVANT STATUTORY DEFENCES.

5. If you don't do anything when you receive this notice, a notice explaining fully how to defend the charge and containing a statement of your rights will be issued to you.

NOTE: ALL QUERIES AND ALL CORRESPONDENCE REGARDING THIS INFRINGEMENT NOTICE MUST BE DIRECTED TO THE AUCKLAND CITY COUNCIL AT THE ADDRESS SHOWN FOR CORRESPONDENCE.

NON-PAYMENT OF FEE

6. If you do not pay the infringement fee and do not request a hearing within 28 days after being served with the reminder notice, you will become liable to pay COSTS IN ADDITION TO THE INFRINGEMENT FEE if the Auckland City Council decides to commence proceedings against you.

QUERIES/CORRESPONDENCE

7. When writing or mailing payment please include:
   a) The date of the infringement; and
   b) The infringement notice number; and
   c) The vehicle registration number; and
   d) Your full name and address for reply.

Please arrange payment or correspondence and return within 28 days to:

Auckland City Council Parking Services
Private Bag 92502, Wellesley Street
Auckland 1141

AUCKLAND
City Council

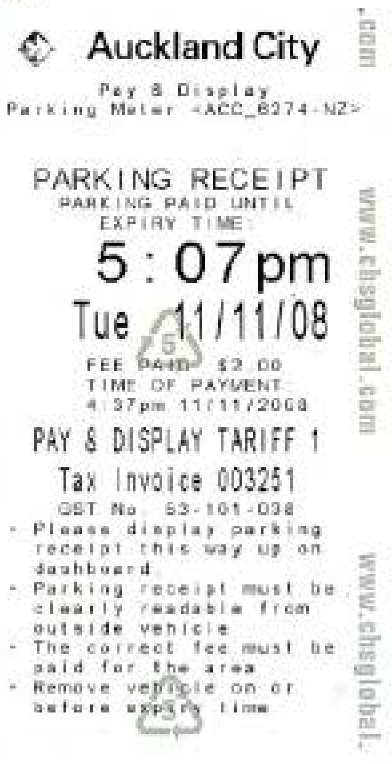

Auckland City

Pay & Display
Parking Meter <ACC_6274-NZ>

PARKING RECEIPT
PARKING PAID UNTIL
EXPIRY TIME:
5:07pm
Tue 11/11/08
FEE PAID $2.00
TIME OF PAYMENT:
4:37pm 11/11/2008
PAY & DISPLAY TARIFF 1
Tax Invoice 003251
GST No. 53-101-038

- Please display parking receipt this way up on dashboard
- Parking receipt must be clearly readable from outside vehicle
- The correct fee must be paid for the area
- Remove vehicle on or before expiry time

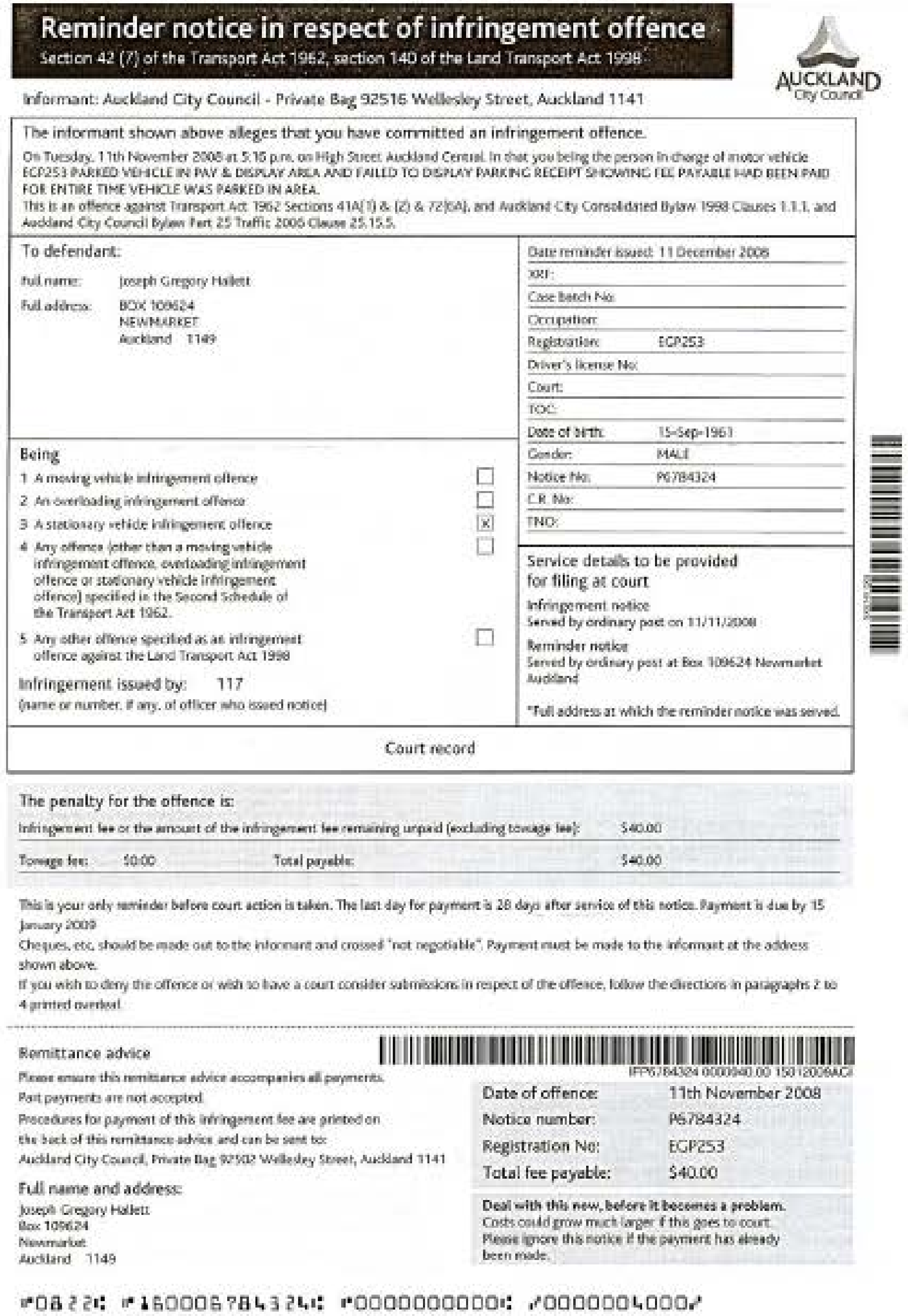

Reminder notice in respect of infringement offence

Section 42 (7) of the Transport Act 1962, section 140 of the Land Transport Act 1998

AUCKLAND City Council

Informant: Auckland City Council - Private Bag 92516 Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141

The informant shown above alleges that you have committed an infringement offence.

On Tuesday, 11th November 2008 at 5:16 p.m. on High Street Auckland Central. In that you being the person in charge of motor vehicle EGP253 PARKED VEHICLE IN PAY & DISPLAY AREA AND FAILED TO DISPLAY PARKING RECEIPT SHOWING FEE PAYABLE HAD BEEN PAID FOR ENTIRE TIME VEHICLE WAS PARKED IN AREA.

This is an offence against Transport Act 1962 Sections 41A(1) & (2) & 72(6A), and Auckland City Consolidated Bylaw 1998 Clauses 1.1.1, and Auckland City Council Bylaw Part 25 Traffic 2006 Clause 25.15.5.

To defendant:

Full name: Joseph Gregory Hallett

Full address: BOX 109624
NEWMARKET
Auckland 1149

Date reminder issued: 11 December 2008
XRF:
Case Batch No:
Occupation:
Registration: EGP253
Driver's license No:
Court:
TOC:
Date of birth: 15-Sep-1961
Gender: MALE
Notice No: P6784324
C.R. No:
TNO:

Being

1 A moving vehicle infringement offence ☐
2 An overloading infringement offence ☐
3 A stationary vehicle infringement offence ☒
4 Any offence (other than a moving vehicle infringement offence, overloading infringement offence or stationary vehicle infringement offence) specified in the Second Schedule of the Transport Act 1962. ☐
5 Any other offence specified as an infringement offence against the Land Transport Act 1998 ☐

Infringement issued by: 117
(name or number, if any, of officer who issued notice)

Service details to be provided for filing at court

Infringement notice
Served by ordinary post on 11/11/2008

Reminder notice
Served by ordinary post at Box 109624 Newmarket Auckland

*Full address at which the reminder notice was served.

Court record

The penalty for the offence is:

Infringement fee or the amount of the infringement fee remaining unpaid (excluding towage fee): $40.00

Towage fee: $0.00 Total payable: $40.00

This is your only reminder before court action is taken. The last day for payment is 28 days after service of this notice. Payment is due by 15 January 2009

Cheques, etc. should be made out to the informant and crossed "not negotiable". Payment must be made to the informant at the address shown above.

If you wish to deny the offence or wish to have a court consider submissions in respect of the offence, follow the directions in paragraphs 2 to 4 printed overleaf.

Remittance advice

Please ensure this remittance advice accompanies all payments.
Part payments are not accepted.
Procedures for payment of this infringement fee are printed on the back of this remittance advice and can be sent to:
Auckland City Council, Private Bag 92502 Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141

IFP6784324 000040.00 15012009ACI

Date of offence: 11th November 2008
Notice number: P6784324
Registration No: EGP253
Total fee payable: $40.00

Deal with this now, before it becomes a problem.
Costs could grow much larger if this goes to court.
Please ignore this notice if the payment has already been made.

Full name and address:
Joseph Gregory Hallett
Box 109624
Newmarket
Auckland 1149

⑈0822⑈ ⑈160006784324⑈ ⑈0000000000⑈ ⑉0000004000⑉

Auckland City Council
30 DEC 2008
Civic [illegible]

30 December 2008

Officer 117
Auckland City Council
Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland; and
Transport Division, Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland

Ref: INFRINGEMENT NOTICE No: P6784324 received on windscreen at 5:07 PM 11/11/2008.

Officer 117,

I spoke with Tere at the Auckland City Council at 12.38 pm today and she confirmed that this reply can be lodged by hand at 1 Greys Ave, Auckland City by 5 pm, and also noted the mix up with not receiving this on 24 November 2008, as was the reply to Notice Number P7862215.

I apologise for any part I may have played in this letter not getting to you on 24th November 2008. On my behalf it was intended to be delivered on the same day as reply to Notice Number P7862215 in which Joseph Gregory Hallett received a reply on 16 December 2008 : "**I am writing to advise that the above infringement notice has been cancelled. Payment is not required** . . . Yours sincerely Talita van Sittert Infringement review advisor | Infringement review services | Transport | Auckland City Council" **; and that**

Undersigned has not been presented with any evidence to the contrary.

Further to a copy of the parking receipt attached for High Street from Parking Meter ACC_6274-NZ and chsglobal/wwwchsglobal.com, I was reading out in the style of a Town Crier as was, and is, my responsibility to read out the truth under the Monarch of Great Britain, Queen Elizabeth-the-Second, who presides over the High Court, and therefore holds sway over the Queen in Right of New Zealand, MS. ROSEMARY BANKS, who's jurisdiction is over the District Court, under whose rules the Auckland City Council's Infringement Notice is issued as a debt management agent for a US$150 million debt at 9.875 per cent due for final payment on 15 January 2011 (See attached) **; and afterwhich**

Undersigned contends that Traffic Infringement Notices will not longer have to fund this debt, and will thereafter primarily contribute to the cost of the Domestic Purposes Benefit ("DPB"). In Anno Domini 2000 the cost of the DPB was NZ$1.5 billion and this was, more or less, exactly matched by the revenue from District Court fines **; and that**

Undersigned further states that this is more of a connection than a coincidence **; and that**

Undersigned requests the Auckland City Council further investigate the above matter and report their findings back to Undersigned before any further payment requests **; and that**

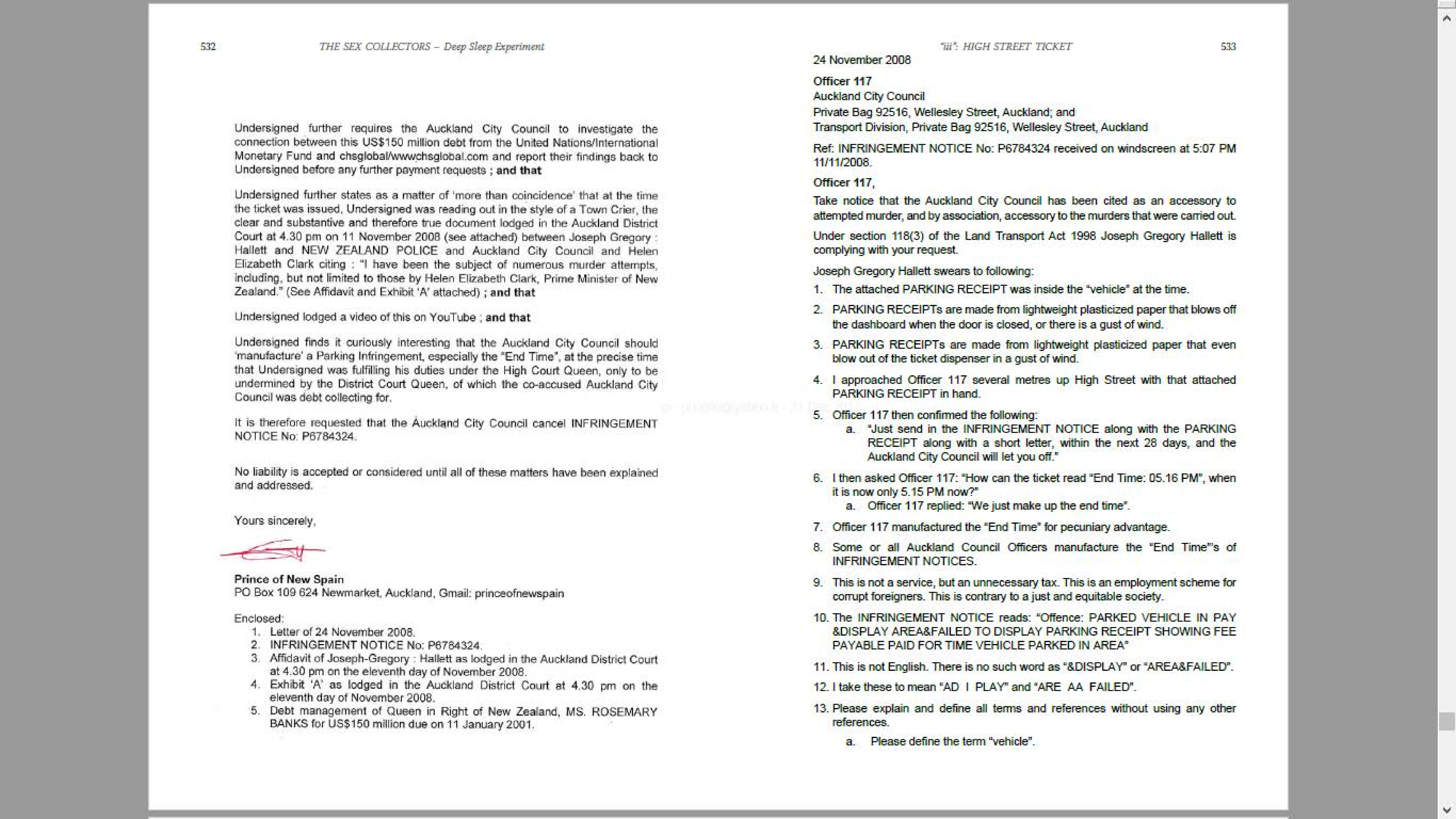

Undersigned further requires the Auckland City Council to investigate the connection between this US$150 million debt from the United Nations/International Monetary Fund and chsglobal/www.chsglobal.com and report their findings back to Undersigned before any further payment requests **; and that**

Undersigned further states as a matter of 'more than coincidence' that at the time the ticket was issued, Undersigned was reading out in the style of a Town Crier, the clear and substantive and therefore true document lodged in the Auckland District Court at 4.30 pm on 11 November 2008 (see attached) between Joseph Gregory : Hallett and NEW ZEALAND POLICE and Auckland City Council and Helen Elizabeth Clark citing : "I have been the subject of numerous murder attempts, including, but not limited to those by Helen Elizabeth Clark, Prime Minister of New Zealand." (See Affidavit and Exhibit 'A' attached) **; and that**

Undersigned lodged a video of this on YouTube **; and that**

Undersigned finds it curiously interesting that the Auckland City Council should 'manufacture' a Parking Infringement, especially the "End Time", at the precise time that Undersigned was fulfilling his duties under the High Court Queen, only to be undermined by the District Court Queen, of which the co-accused Auckland City Council was debt collecting for.

It is therefore requested that the Auckland City Council cancel INFRINGEMENT NOTICE No: P6784324.

No liability is accepted or considered until all of these matters have been explained and addressed.

Yours sincerely,

Prince of New Spain
PO Box 109 624 Newmarket, Auckland, Gmail: princeofnewspain

Enclosed:
1. Letter of 24 November 2008.
2. INFRINGEMENT NOTICE No: P6784324.
3. Affidavit of Joseph-Gregory : Hallett as lodged in the Auckland District Court at 4.30 pm on the eleventh day of November 2008.
4. Exhibit 'A' as lodged in the Auckland District Court at 4.30 pm on the eleventh day of November 2008.
5. Debt management of Queen in Right of New Zealand, MS. ROSEMARY BANKS for US$150 million due on 11 January 2001.

24 November 2008

Officer 117
Auckland City Council
Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland; and
Transport Division, Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland

Ref: INFRINGEMENT NOTICE No: P6784324 received on windscreen at 5:07 PM 11/11/2008.

Officer 117,

Take notice that the Auckland City Council has been cited as an accessory to attempted murder, and by association, accessory to the murders that were carried out.

Under section 118(3) of the Land Transport Act 1998 Joseph Gregory Hallett is complying with your request.

Joseph Gregory Hallett swears to following:

1. The attached PARKING RECEIPT was inside the "vehicle" at the time.
2. PARKING RECEIPTs are made from lightweight plasticized paper that blows off the dashboard when the door is closed, or there is a gust of wind.
3. PARKING RECEIPTs are made from lightweight plasticized paper that even blow out of the ticket dispenser in a gust of wind.
4. I approached Officer 117 several metres up High Street with that attached PARKING RECEIPT in hand.
5. Officer 117 then confirmed the following:
    a. "Just send in the INFRINGEMENT NOTICE along with the PARKING RECEIPT along with a short letter, within the next 28 days, and the Auckland City Council will let you off."
6. I then asked Officer 117: "How can the ticket read "End Time: 05.16 PM", when it is now only 5.15 PM now?"
    a. Officer 117 replied: "We just make up the end time".
7. Officer 117 manufactured the "End Time" for pecuniary advantage.
8. Some or all Auckland Council Officers manufacture the "End Time"'s of INFRINGEMENT NOTICES.
9. This is not a service, but an unnecessary tax. This is an employment scheme for corrupt foreigners. This is contrary to a just and equitable society.
10. The INFRINGEMENT NOTICE reads: "Offence: PARKED VEHICLE IN PAY &DISPLAY AREA&FAILED TO DISPLAY PARKING RECEIPT SHOWING FEE PAYABLE PAID FOR TIME VEHICLE PARKED IN AREA"
11. This is not English. There is no such word as "&DISPLAY" or "AREA&FAILED".
12. I take these to mean "AD I PLAY" and "ARE AA FAILED".
13. Please explain and define all terms and references without using any other references.
    a. Please define the term "vehicle".

   b. Please define section 118 (1) of the Land Transport Act 1998.
   c. Please define the Land Transport (Road User) Rule 2004 part 2.3(1).
   d. Please illustrate the term "vehicle" with four (4) wheels under statute. It is my understanding that none exists.

14. Registration EGP253 has at all material times four wheels.

15. As requested in a letter dated 29 September 2008 to Bus lane enforcement officer 233 of the Auckland City Council, Ref: T7609439:
"Please show that the October, November and December 2007 publication of New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, which illustrates that the Mayor of Auckland, John Banks, was a paedophile (p. 151), the Chairman of the Auckland Regional Council, Mike Lee, was married to the child prostitute Sandra née Vercoe Lee (p. 19) and Mike Lee was the last male to have sex with Helen Clark (p. 19), that the child prostitute Sandra Lee was an Auckland City Councillor (p. 19), and Gary Taylor who runs Auckland City filmed his wife having sex with other Labour Party members (p. 168)" . . . was not an influence on advancing the end time of the ticket into fiction.

16. I take it that the Auckland City Council's failure to respond for two months (by 24 November 2008) is confirmation that the Auckland City Council confirms:
The Mayor of Auckland John Banks is a paedophile.

The Chairman of the Auckland Regional Council Mike Lee was married to a child prostitute.

Auckland City Councillor Sandra née Vercoe Lee was a child prostitute.

Mike Lee was the last male to have sex with Helen Clark.

Gary Taylor who runs Auckland City filmed his wife having sex with Labour Party members.

17. As requested in a letter dated 29 September 2008 to Bus lane enforcement officer 233 of the Auckland City Council, Ref: T7609439:
"Please provide evidence that Indians are not collecting the wages of Pariah, Harijans, Untouchables, or Outcastes, and/or are working the Indian caste system in New Zealand for the benefit of Sudras, Vaisyas, Kshatriya and/or Brahmin."

18. I take it that the Auckland City Council's failure to respond for two months (by 24 November 2008) is confirmation that the Auckland City Council confirms:
Indians are collecting the wages of Pariah, Harijans, Untouchables, and Outcastes, and are working the Indian caste system in New Zealand for the benefit of Sudras, Vaisyas, Kshatriya and/or Brahmin.

19. As requested in a letter dated 29 September 2008 to Bus lane enforcement officer 233 of the Auckland City Council, Ref: T7609439:
"I still have not had a response from the Auckland City Council where I lodged a NOTICE OF GENERAL APPEAL in the Auckland District Court on the 2 July 2008 (C.R.I. 2006-004-021-217) that Prime Minister Helen Clark is a Tavistock St Petersburg prostitute who tried to murder Joseph Gregory Hallett on 2 April 2002, 23 August 2002, and 14–22 May 2004; and where, to all intents and purposes, the Auckland City Council acted as an accomplice to a breach of the Declaration of Helsinki – that is, attempted murder, followed by fines to pay for the murder attempt. Please clarify the Auckland City Council's involvement in these murder attempts/traffic tickets within 7 days."

20. I take it that the Auckland City Council's failure to respond for three months (by 2 October 2008 [and now by 24 November 2008, four months]) is confirmation that the Auckland City Council is accessory to murder and that this matter should be addressed publicly.

21. **The Auckland City Council is accessory to attempted murder.**

22. **It can now be publicly stated that the Auckland City Council is an accessory to attempted murder.**

23. As requested in a letter dated 29 September 2008 to Bus lane enforcement officer 233 of the Auckland City Council, Ref: T7609439:
"Could you please confirm or deny, in full readable sentence, that the Justice of the Peace (JP's) are the area paedophile minders and who report directly to the Governor-General, who is the Chief Boy Scout and Chief Girl Guide, and in collusion with this paedophile arrangement, the Mayor of Auckland, is, once again, the paedophile John Banks, who was, formerly the Minister of Police, who protected paedophiles in the police and/or the Auckland City Council."

24. **The Justice of the Peace (JP's) are the area paedophile minders.**

25. **The Justice of the Peace report directly to the Governor-General.**

26. **The Governor-General is the Chief Boy Scout and Chief Girl Guide.**

27. **The Mayor of Auckland John Banks is a paedophile who protects paedophiles in the police and the Auckland City Council.**

28. **The Auckland City Council works closely with the Auckland Police.**

29. Could you please confirm/deny that the Auckland Area Commander Clint Rickards was New Zealand's worst ever rapist and that he worked closely with the Ombudsman Anand Satyanand (from 2003) who is now the Governor-General, as nominated by the murderer and St Petersburg prostitute, Prime Minister Helen Clark. Failure to respond within 7 days will be taken as confirmation by the Auckland City Council, the above, and that the Police are rapists.

30. **As of 6 October 2008, the Auckland City Council confirms that Auckland Area Commander Clint Rickards was New Zealand's worst ever rapist.**

31. **As of 6 October 2008, the Auckland City Council confirms that New Zealand's worst ever rapist Clint Rickards worked closely with the Ombudsman Anand Satyanand who is now the Governor-General.**

32. **As of 6 October 2008, the Auckland City Council confirms Anand Satyanand was nominated to the position of Governor-General by the murderer and St Petersburg prostitute Helen Clark, ex-Prime Minister.**

33. **As of 6 October 2008, the Auckland City Council confirms that the Police are rapists.**

34. As requested in a letter dated 29 September 2008 to Bus lane enforcement officer 233 of the Auckland City Council, Ref: T7609439:

"Your complete reply to all matters raised is required within 7 days, otherwise it will be taken that T7609439 has no validity and has no infringement fee attached, and that all other statements made in this letter are true, and all matters lodged between Joseph Gregory Hallett and the Auckland City Council on 2 July 2008 are in the material favour of Joseph Gregory Hallett, and are to be compensated for accordingly, promptly, and within 72 hours from note of date of failure to respond."

35. **Joseph Gregory Hallett a.k.a. Prince of New Spain is hereby materially due, from the complicity and admitted guilt of the Auckland City Council, a sum from the Auckland City Council, for the Auckland City Council's accessory to the attempted murder of Joseph Gregory Hallett.**
36. Notice No: P6784324 has no validity and all other statements made in the letter from the **Prince of New Spain** dated 24 November 2008 are true, and all matters lodged between Joseph Gregory Hallett and the Auckland City Council on 2 July 2008 and 29 September 2008 are in the material favour of Joseph Gregory Hallett, and are to be compensated for accordingly, promptly, and within 72 hours from note of date of failure to respond.
37. Failure to respond occurred on 6 October 2008.
38. Joseph Gregory Hallett a.k.a. Prince of New Spain is hereby materially due from the complicity and admitted guilt of the Auckland City Council, a sum due for the Auckland City Council's accessory to the attempted murder of Joseph Gregory Hallett.

No liability is accepted or considered until all of these matters have been explained and addressed.

Yours sincerely,

Prince of New Spain
PO Box 109 624 Newmarket, Auckland, Gmail: princeofnewspain

AFFIDAVIT OF THE PLAINTIFF Joseph-Gregory : Hallett IN SUPPORT OF FALSE ALLEGATIONS JOINTLY AND SEVERALLY PRESENTED BY DEFENDANTS AS EARLIER CLAIMED.

I, **Joseph-Gregory : Hallett** of 26 Lichfield Road, Parnell, Auckland, non-military, swear:

1. I am of age of majority, competent to testify as required, an author and an architect.
2. I have been the subject of numerous murder attempts, including, but not limited to those by Helen Elizabeth Clark, Prime Minister of New Zealand.
3. These are as outlined in Exhibits "A", "B", and "C".
4. The contents of Exhibit "A" as per the New Zealand Bill of Rights Act 1990, Public Act No. 109, s4 (a) (b) applies.

SWORN at Auckland ....

This Eleventh day of November 2008

Before me F M [illegible]llan
Deputy Registrar ....
(A ~~Solicitor of the High Court of New Zealand~~)

Exhibit "A"

Hear yea… hear yea…. hear yea.
Greetings and peace to all whom this presentment shall come.

Let it be known by this open public declaration and notice that on Armistice Day, the **eleventh day of November 2008**, as mainstream media do not ensure the public remain informed, this document is required to be read out loud, in public, in the style of a Town Crier; therefore

By this sincere public declaration, all attempts shall be made to ensure this proclamation is not withheld and is also widely available at www.greghallett.com and on YouTube, under "Helen Clark | murders | year and a day rule | New Zealand".

The period of "*a year and a day*" was considered a sufficient and convenient period to represent a significant amount of time. Its use was both generally and specially to define a 'permanence',[i] and to provide 'clarity'.[ii]

Thus; if something was in place for at least a year and a day, it is '**considered permanently and clearly so**'.

The period of a year and a day is a well-established and enshrined principle of Westminster Law, widely recognised under the principles of common law legal systems, particularly those that trace their legal heritage back to Britain. This includes: America, Canada, Australia and New Zealand.

Over time, common law has been refined by judges as a legal system developed through decisions of their courts and tribunals. Common law uses previous decisions to influence current cases, and binds future decisions.

The only law that overrides common laws are the Laws of God and nature, and the rules and principles of equity. Where there is no common law, judges have an obligation to make equitable law, thus creating honourable precedent.

If a similar dispute has been resolved in the past, the court is duty bound to follow the reasoning used in that prior decision. This principle is known as; ***stare decisis*** – the principle that 'similar cases should be decided according to consistent principled rules to reach similar results'.

This equitably lies at the heart of all common law systems, and similar principles include a 'life sentence' for murder, and a 'prolonged sentence' for treason.

The 'Year and a Day' Rule also applies to murders carried out by, or involving politicians, as does the publication of these murders.

Death for treason was repealed and replaced with a jail term by Helen Clark's peers, namely Geoffrey Palmer in 1986. Therefore, murder and treason, more rightly so, should include a life sentence and a jail term; similarly,

'Should attempted murder not include, at minimum, a significant jail term?'

Historically, and even in recent times, leaders who have murdered have then been beheaded, hung, drawn and quartered, or executed. King Charles I, Mussolini, the Nuremberg Trials, and Nicolae & Elena Ceausescu are case in point.

Since Helen Clark as responsible Prime Minister, in the last election has been proven by overwhelming majority, ruled with similar despotment as the aforementioned, notwithstanding greater socialistic excesses and sexual deviancy, she too, should not be exempt from trial, life sentence, execution, or the equivalent.

The published and unrefuted claims regarding Helen Clark's murderous and treasonous affairs, should equally and rightfully so, have the year and a day rule apply to them.

Helen Clark's excesses included; the continued abrogation of the death penalty for treason, which was immediately followed by numerous treasonous acts by her and her Labour Party peers.

If the court(s) find the claims of murder against Helen Clark fundamentally distinct and separate from all previous murder and treason cases, it will decide as a "matter of first impression." Thereafter, this 'new decision' would set a precedent binding all future New Zealand court sittings under the principle of *stare decisis*.

If not, would this not show a set of separate rules for 'us' and 'them'?

Would this not be an extension of sexism, separatism, idealism, or other form of inequity, and could this not be deemed as an 'authoritarian murderous-elite'?

Would the court's jurisdiction throughout New Zealand then not have to treat all murderers the same way they treat Helen Clark – with a golden handshake?

In order to **apply the common law 'year and a day rule'** to the murders authorised by Helen Clark, the interpretation of the rule reads as follows:

"The period of a year and a day has been applied to published charges of murder against Helen Clark, the most senior public figure with many aides and associates, remaining fully informed, and without excuse.

"Under the (common) law, the notion that Helen Clark is a murderer is now enshrined in permanent clarity and is clearly permanent – her victims remaining indefinitely unchanged in their perpetual existence for an indefinite duration in the same state and place in the permanence of nature – and the public, with clear perception and lucidity of thought or style, free from obscurity, without ambiguity or obfuscation, and in all manner easy to understand, comprehend and clearly express, with brightness, splendour and crystal clarity, that Helen Clark shall hereby be pronounced a murderer."

When the short Act of Parliament abolishing the 'year and a day rule' was given Royal Assent on 17 June 1996[iii], it 'only removed the conclusive presumption that death was not murder[iv] if it occurred more than a year and a day since the act or omission that caused it'[v]. It did not remove the clear and permanent fact that the murder had occurred and the victim as still deceased.

The precise scope of the year and a day rule may have been unclear, however it was clarified in the House of Lords where Lord Dormond's second reading stated:

"**It certainly applies to murder, manslaughter,** infanticide, and aiding and abetting suicide. It may also apply to motoring offences in which death is an element: causing death by dangerous driving; causing death by reckless driving while under the influence of drink or drugs; and aggravated vehicle taking causing death."

The same 1996 Act has only three sections; section 1 simply states: "The rule known as the 'year and a day rule' is abolished for all purposes."

However "all purposes", by Privy Council decree, only applies to 'offences involving death by act or omission if more than a year and a day has elapsed'.

More fully the **1996 Act Section 1** states: The rule known as the 'year and a day rule' (that is, the rule that for the purposes of offences involving death and of suicide, an act or omission is conclusively presumed not to have caused a persons death if more than a year and a day elapsed before he died) is abolished for all purposes.

Section 2 allows for prosecution where a death occurs more than three years after an injury.

Section 3 applies where the accused was previously convicted of an offence connected with the death (e.g. grievous bodily harm) however requires the Attorney-General's consent before proceeding.

This now means, without reservation that:

Helen Clark can now be charged with murder by her own act or omission to deny the allegations, which occurred more than a year and a day ago; and

This can now be spoken about with clarity and permanence due to the publication of such, for more than a year and a day;[vi] as

Publication is fully supported by the principles of the common law[vii] **'year and a day rule', and was not abolished in 1996 as affirmed by the Bill of Rights Act, 1990.**

It is therefore, that I now, as the born-free living breathing man known as: Joseph-Gregory (Hallett) hereby charge the ousted Prime Minister; Helen Elizabeth Clark with the complicity, conspiracy and involvement to the murder and attempted murders, in part or in full, with causation or command, by deceit, willing accessory, or unimparted foreknowledge: of

1. **Chris Beeby** on 19 March 2000 (Christopher David Beeby);
2. **Sir Peter Blake** on 5 December 2001 (Peter James Blake);
3. **Greg Hallett** on 2 April 2002 (Joseph Gregory Hallett);
4. **Greg Hallett** on 23 August 2002;
5. **David McNee** on 20 July 2003;
6. **Sir Peter Elworthy** on 13 January 2004;
7. **Michael King** on 29 or 30 March 2004;
8. **Greg Hallett** on 14 to 22 May 2004;
9. **David Lange** on 13 August 2005 (David Russell Lange);
10. **Rod Donald** on 6 November 2005 (Rodney David Donald);
11. **Greg Hallett** in July 2006;
12. **Augie Auer** on 10 June 2007 (August H. Auer Jr);
13. **Greg Hallett** on 27 July 2007;
14. **Greg Hallett** on 26 October 2007;
15. **Greg Hallett** on 17 to 27 March 2008; **and of**

This is the annexure marked "A"
referred to in the within affidavit of
Joseph -Gregory : Hallett
sworn at Auckland this eleventh
day of November 2008
Deputy Registrar, District Court, Auckland

16. Taking a Standing Order Hit out on **Greg Hallett** on 3 June 2008;

as **lodged in the AUCKLAND DISTRICT COURT on the second day of July 2008** under a **NOTICE OF GENERAL APPEAL** (Summary Proceedings Act 1957), **CRI 2006-004-021217 and CRI 2008-004-13851**; where

I have not seen or been presented any material fact, genuine issue, or evidence, which does not demonstrate that Helen Elizabeth Clark, Prime Minister of New Zealand as further charged, was not a **"KGB agent, graduate of the St Petersburg Tavistock,** and was not a **former St Petersburg prostitute,** and/or **contract killer"**; and that

Helen Clark is not **"in breach of the Declaration of Helsinki – attempting to kill a citizen, then fining them to fund the existing murder attempt, and/or the next murder attempt"**; and that

The Declaration of Helsinki (1964) **was not derived from the Code of Nuremberg** (1947); and

I sincerely believe no evidence to the contrary exists.

Others also will accordingly be indictably charged in the near future.

The above is an exhibit sworn in an affidavit in the HIGH COURT OF NEW ZEALAND on the eleventh day of November 2008.

Hear yea… hear yea…. hear yea.

---

[i] 'Permanence': The state or quality of lasting or remaining unchanged indefinitely; The condition or quality of being permanent; Perpetual or continued existence; The property of being able to exist for an indefinite duration; Continuance in the same state or place; Duration; Fixedness; The permanence of nature.

[ii] 'Clarity': Clearness or lucidity as to perception or understanding; Freedom from indistinctness or ambiguity; The state or quality of being clear or transparent to the eye; Clearness of thought or style; Lucid; Written or spoken with clarity and perception; Free from obscurity and easy to understand; Comprehendible clear expression; Clearness; Brightness; Splendor; Crystal clarity.

[iii] The Law Reform (Year and a Day Rule) Act 1996 began as a private member's bill introduced by the MP Doug Hoyle in the 1995/6 ballot Parliamentary session. It received Royal Assent on 17 June 1996, with abolition of the 'year and a day rule' in effect the same day.

[iv] Murder or any other form of homicide.

[v] Act that caused it (or omission) that was alleged to have been its cause.

[vi] See *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide*, published 31 October 2007, 5 December 2007, and later.

[vii] According to the Dictionary.com: Common law has its origins in Medieval England in Anno Domini 1300 to 1350. It is a system of law originating in England as distinct from civil law, Roman law, or ecclesiastical law. Common Law is the unwritten law of England, its colonies and former colonies, and is based on custom and/or court decisions. Common law is administered through the courts and is distinct from equity law and admiralty law.

According to the American Heritage Dictionary, Common Law is also: the doctrines implicit in those decisions and on customs and usages, and does not exclude codified written laws.

According to WordNet, Common law is also: a system of jurisprudence based on precedents and originated from the unwritten laws of England, then applied to the United States; and

According to the American Heritage New Dictionary of Cultural Literacy, Third Edition: Common Law is particularly stressed in the legal system of Britain,on which the legal system of the United States is based [and the New Zealand Bar is based on the International Bar, which is a subset of the American Bar.]

According to the Merriam-Webster Dictionary of Law, Common Law is: a body of law based on custom and general principles embodied in case law, that then serves as a precedent; is applied to situations not covered in tort; and allows particular remedies like damages and/or replevin (action to recover personal earmarked physical property unlawfully taken); and preserves the right of jury trial; and is the basis of United Stated federal law, and state law (except Louisiana) [and by Bar association, subset and dictatorship, is an integral part of New Zealand law].

"HER MAJESTY THE QUEEN IN RIGHT OF NEW ZEALAND" for whatever reason, it is known as a publicly registered **UNITED STATES SECURITY EXCHANGE COMMISSION ("US SEC")** company **Reg. No.0000216105 SIC: 8888 - Foreign Governments** State location: **Q2** | Fiscal Year End: **0630 which by due diligence was an easily obtained public record is registered as indebted to an American corporation on their Stock Exchange ... somehow I do not think that this is a Sovereign Lady who is the woman the judge, prosecutor and police, all took oath to and "We the People" we all know as Queen Elizabeth-the-Second, by the Grace of God, Queen of New Zealand and Her Realms and Territories, Head of the Commonwealth, and Defender of the Faith; ... however, is instead ....**

Whose publicly listed address(es) for service are:

Business Address: 1 THE TERRACE
NATIONAL PROVIDENT BLDG
WELLINGTON NEW ZEALAND Q2 6015
Mailing Address:
C/O NEW ZEALAND DEBT MANAGEMENT OFFICE
TREASURY 1 TERRACE PO BOX 3724
WELLINGTON NEW ZEALAND Q2 6015

Anybody doubting this, could and would like I did, is easily and readily available to anyone making a reasonable effort to study it by doing their own due diligence be able to verify this by simply searching the following hyperlink :

***http://www.sec.gov/cgi-bin/browse-edgar?action=getcompany&SIC=8888&owner=include&start=40&count=40* and then look up : the company : 0000216105 HER MAJESTY THE QUEEN IN RIGHT OF NEW ZEALAND Q2 and see that this is indebted to the tune (*plus interest after several years accumulating*) of :**

SECURITIES REGISTERED (As of the close of the last fiscal period)

Title of issue	Amounts as to which registration is effective	Names of exchanges on which registered
Twenty-five Year 9 7/8% Bonds Due January 15, 2011	**US$150,000,000**	New York Stock Exchange

Name and address of person authorised to receive notices and communications from the Securities and Exchange Commission:

HER EXCELLENCY MS. ROSEMARY BANKS

Permanent Representative of the New Zealand Permanent Mission to the United Nations
One United Nations Plaza 25th Floor
New York, NY 10017

Copies to:
JOHN E. ESTES
Sullivan & Cromwell
101 Collins Street
Melbourne, Victoria 3000, Australia

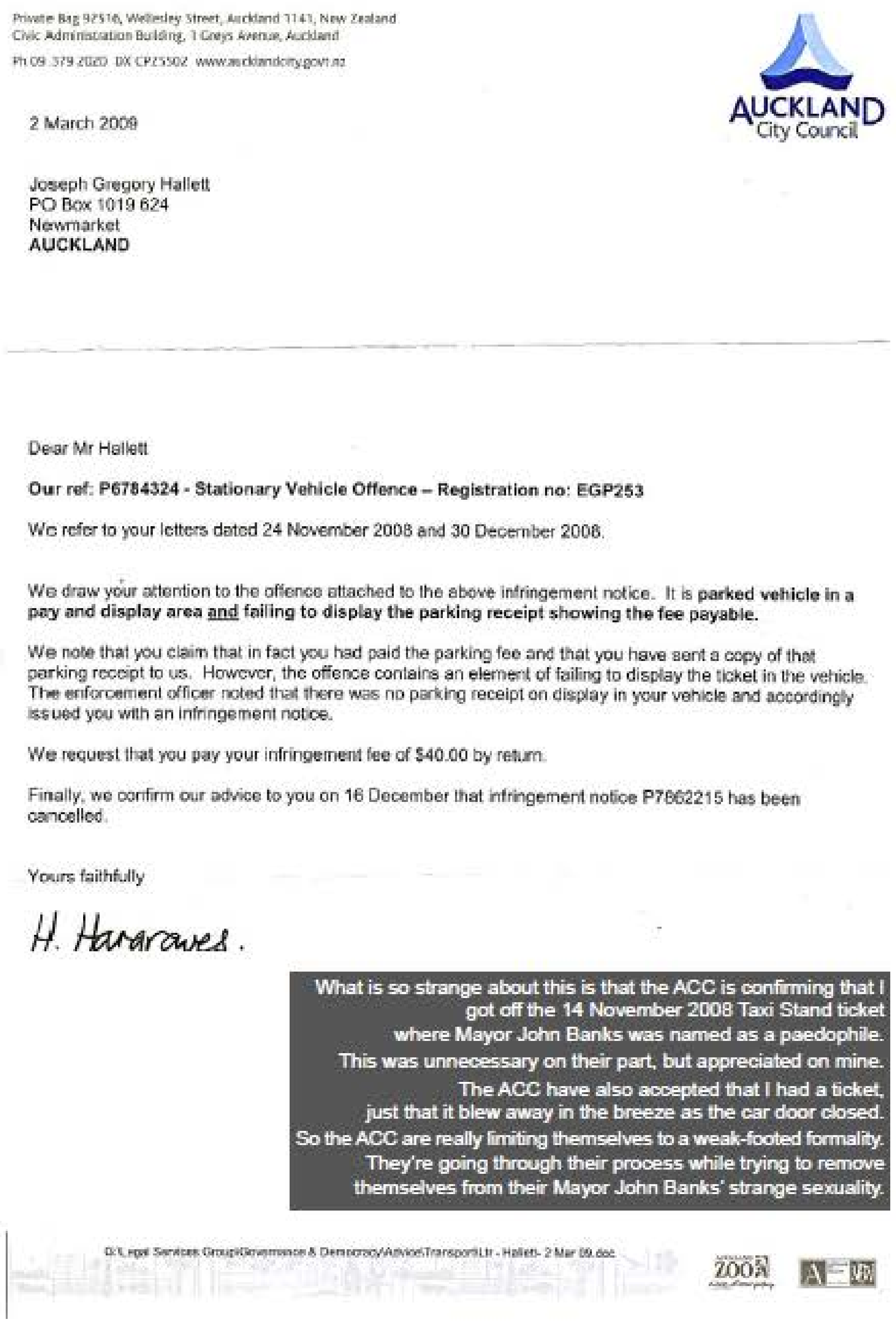

Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141, New Zealand
Civic Administration Building, 1 Greys Avenue, Auckland
Ph 09 379 2020 DX CP23502 www.aucklandcity.govt.nz

AUCKLAND
City Council

2 March 2009

Joseph Gregory Hallett
PO Box 1019 624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

Our ref: P6784324 - Stationary Vehicle Offence – Registration no: EGP253

We refer to your letters dated 24 November 2008 and 30 December 2008.

We draw your attention to the offence attached to the above infringement notice. It is **parked vehicle in a pay and display area and failing to display the parking receipt showing the fee payable.**

We note that you claim that in fact you had paid the parking fee and that you have sent a copy of the parking receipt to us. However, the offence contains an element of failing to display the ticket in the vehicle. The enforcement officer noted that there was no parking receipt on display in your vehicle and accordingly issued you with an infringement notice.

We request that you pay your infringement fee of $40.00 by return.

Finally, we confirm our advice to you on 16 December that infringement notice P7862215 has been cancelled.

Yours faithfully

H. Hargraves.

What is so strange about this is that the ACC is confirming that I got off the 14 November 2008 Taxi Stand ticket where Mayor John Banks was named as a paedophile.
This was unnecessary on their part, but appreciated on mine.
The ACC have also accepted that I had a ticket, just that it blew away in the breeze as the car door closed.
So the ACC are really limiting themselves to a weak-footed formality.
They're going through their process while trying to remove themselves from their Mayor John Banks' strange sexuality.

D:\Legal Services Group\Governance & Democracy\Advice\Transport\Ltr - Hallett- 2 Mar 09.doc

13 March 2009 [Black Horse Friday]

HELEN HARGRAVES
SOLICITOR
Auckland City Council
Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland
Civic Administration Building, 1 Greys Avenue, Auckland
DDI 366 2564

My ref: Your letter dated 2 March 2009 and received 13 March 2009
Your ref: P6784324 - Stationary Vehicle Offence; and
letters to ACC dated 24 November 2008 and 30 December 2008

HELEN HARGRAVES,

I apologise for any part I may have played in your letter getting to me 11 days after you dated it. I note that your envelopes are delivered with no date stamp, only "Permit No. 156594". Under section 118(3) of the Land Transport Act 1998 Joseph Gregory Hallett is complying with your request to "draw attention" to "and".

Take notice that the Auckland City Council ("ACC") has been cited as an accessory to attempted murder, and by association, accessory to the murders that were carried out.

Joseph Gregory Hallett swears to following:

1. Undersigned accepts that Helen Hargraves accepts on behalf of the Auckland City Council that the attached PARKING RECEIPT was inside the "vehicle" at the time.
2. That it blew off the dashboard in the wind.
3. That infringement officers just make up the ends times, including Officer 117 on 11 November 2008: "We just make up the end time", as cited on 24 November 2008.
4. That the infringement notice is not in English, does not use sentences, and does not make sense: "AD I PLAY" and "ARE AA FAILED".
5. That Mayor of Auckland John Banks is a paedophile who protects paedophiles in the police and the Auckland City Council; the Chairman of the Auckland Regional Council Mike Lee was married to a child prostitute; Auckland City Councillor Sandra née Barber/ Vercoe Lee was a child prostitute; Mike Lee was the last male to have sex with Helen Clark; Gary Taylor who runs Auckland City filmed his wife having sex with Labour Party members; the Auckland City Council is accessory to attempted murder and that this can now be publicly stated; Justice of the Peace ("JP") are the area paedophile minders; JPs report directly to the Governor-General ("G-G"); the G-G is the Chief Boy Scout and Chief Girl Guide; the Auckland City Council works closely with the Auckland Police; the Auckland Area Commander Clint Rickards was New Zealand's worst ever rapist who worked closely with the Ombudsman Anand Satyanand (from 2003) who is now the G-G, as nominated by the murderer and St Petersburg prostitute [ex-] Prime Minister Helen Clark; and the Police are rapists.
6. The Auckland City Council failed to respond within 7 days. The ACC took 100 days to respond. Notice was given by Undersigned on 29/30 September 2008 and 24 November 2008. The Auckland City Council's reply was dated 2 March 2009 and received on Black 'Horse' Friday 13 March 2009.

7. With seven (7) days right of reply the Auckland City Council took 100 days to reply. This has been given, taken, accepted, and hereby acknowledged as passive acquiescence, acceptance by silence, tacit assent, cognovit affirmative, procuration/consent, and/or admission of guilt by the Auckland City Council, that all of the collective accusations in the opening paragraph and in point 5 herein are clear and substantive, true, and can be publicly stated with clean hands in equity as honourably prescribed and preordained by the Auckland City Council; as confirmed by Undersigned, and the Auckland City Council, in the letters dated:

   30 September 2008 (as backed up with an Indemnity Bond for $600.00); the ACC's letter dated 20 October 2008; letter dated 24 November 2008 which included an Affidavit Exibit "A" of Helen Clark's 15 murders and attempted murders as lodged in the Auckland District Court on 11 November 2008; the ACC's letter dated 16 December 2008; letter dated 30 December 2008; letter dated 12 January 2009, including account for $600 due by 15 January 2009; the ACC's letter dated 17 February 2009; and the ACC's letter dated 2 March 2009.
8. Labour's Dr. Michael Cullen, Minister of Finance (6 November 1999–19 Nov. 2008) and Deputy Prime Minister (2002–08) whose nicknames are 'Horse' and 'The Six Million Dollar Man' is a serial problem gambler, as long as it is other people's money he is gambling with.
9. For the 16.5 months from 1 July 2007 to 8/19 November 2008, Minister of Finance Dr. Michael Cullen borrowed NZ$6 million per day, then gambled and lost NZ$6 million per day, hence his nickname – 'The Six Million Dollar Man'.

   "The Government has confirmed it will cut contributions to the national superannuation fund, known as the Cullen fund . . . The [Labour] Government borrowed $50 million a week to make its contributions.
   "Prime Minister John Key: 'From July 2007 to January 2009, the Crown paid $3.4 billion into the fund, however all of that was lost'."[1]

The Sex Collectors, Attachment "B", p. 31, 2009:

"Finance Minister Michael Cullen was 'The Six Million Dollar Man'. He was losing NZ$6 million a day. He was gambling with money he didn't have. All the money was borrowed. This makes Labour's Finance Minister Dr Michael Cullen the biggest fraudster in New Zealand's history. It's almost de rigueur for the Labour Finance Minister to be a paedophile, only this one was British, and sent to New Zealand to destroy it. The British paedophile Dr Michael Cullen was always a double agent. Now he is one of the single biggest fuckwits in New Zealand's history – that greasy man-child."

10. Would the Auckland City Council please confirm that its issuing traffic tickets for 'purchased windblown undisplayed parking' and 'made of lightweight paper' is not for debt collection for the enormous gambling problem of the Minister of Finance Dr Michael Cullen – British paedophile.
11. I understand from your letters dated 16 December 2008 and 2 March 2009 that the Auckland City Council confirms all items summarised in Point 5, that: "John Banks is a paedophile who protects paedophiles in the police and the Auckland City Council, and in Parliament . . . the Governor-General was nominated by the murderer and St Petersburg prostitute [ex-] Prime Minister Helen Clark, and the Police are rapists."

---

[1] 'Government confirms cut to superannuation fund', TV3 News, 6:51 pm, 11 March 2009.

Dr Michael Cullen, 'Tall Horse'.

12. Can the Auckland City Council confirm that the Finance Minister Dr Michael Cullen (1999–2008) is not: British; is not a paedophile; does not have an enormous gambling problem; did not borrow $6 million a day and lose $6 million a day for 16 months; that this would not pay off five (5) average mortgages a day, and 150,000 mortgages over 16 months; but instead, 150,000 home owners now have negative equity.
13. Can the Auckland City Council confirm that the above is an outrageous unfounded comment and Dr Michael Cullen is not: a complete idiot; who was sent out to New Zealand to destroy it; and did not marry a primary school teacher in order to have sexual relations with her children; that she did not serially cuckold him; that Dr Michael Cullen's nickname is not 'Horse'; and that if you gave him viagra, he would not grow taller.
14. Can Helen Hargraves and/or the Auckland City Council confirm they are not: issuing traffic tickets and reminder notices to pay for the gambling problem of the British paedophile [Dark] 'Horse' – Labour's Minister of Finance Dr Michael Cullen's serial gambling of taxpayer's hard earned money, of which you, and your children, and your children's children are now victims.
15. Joseph Gregory Hallett a.k.a. Prince of New Spain is hereby materially due, from the complicity and admitted guilt of the Auckland City Council, a sum from the Auckland City Council, for the Auckland City Council's accessory to the attempted murder of Joseph Gregory Hallett.
16. Notice No: P6784324 has no validity and all other statements made in the letter from the **Prince of New Spain** dated 24 November 2008 are true, and all matters lodged between Joseph Gregory Hallett and the Auckland City Council on 2 July 2008, 29 September 2008, 7 November 2008 and 11 November 2008 are in the material favour of Joseph Gregory Hallett, and are to be compensated for accordingly, promptly, and within 72 hours from note of date of failure to respond.
17. Failure to respond occurred on 6 October 2008, 19 January 2009 and 24 February 2009 with $450 due (or $600 if the ACC fails to prove its claim); and again on 8 January 2009, confirmed by your 2 March 2009 letter. This places the Auckland City Council in debt to Joseph Gregory Hallett.
18. Joseph Gregory Hallett a.k.a. Prince of New Spain is hereby materially due from the complicity and admitted guilt of the Auckland City Council, a sum due for the Auckland City Council's accessory to the attempted murder of Joseph Gregory Hallett.

No liability is accepted or considered until all of these matters have been explained and addressed.

Yours sincerely,

Joseph Gregory Hallett
Prince of New Spain
PO Box 109 624 Newmarket, Auckland, Gmail: princeofnewspain

1 3 MAR 2009

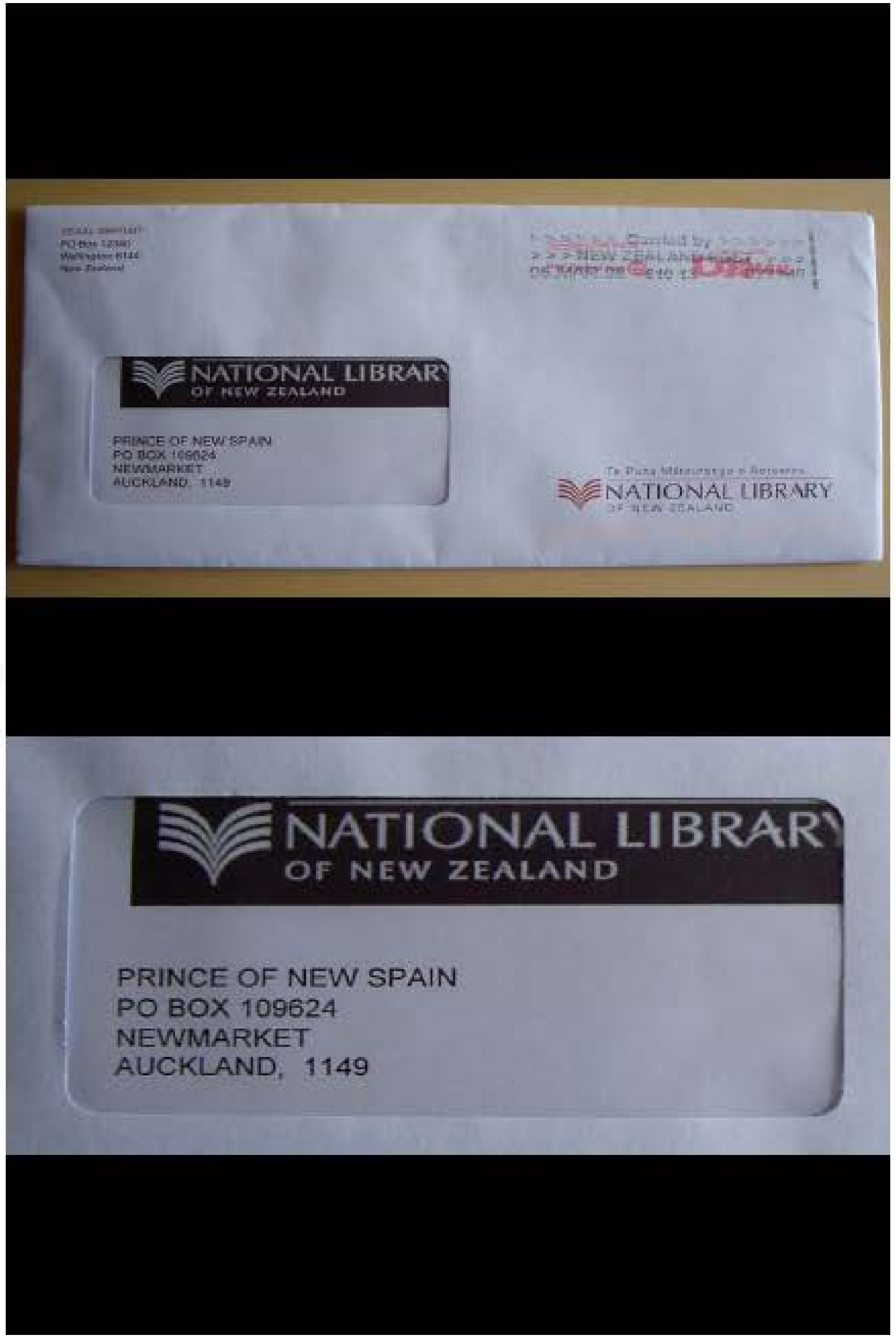

NATIONAL LIBRARY
OF NEW ZEALAND
NATIONAL LIBRARY
OF NEW ZEALAND

PRINCE OF NEW SPAIN
PO BOX 109624
NEWMARKET
AUCKLAND, 1149

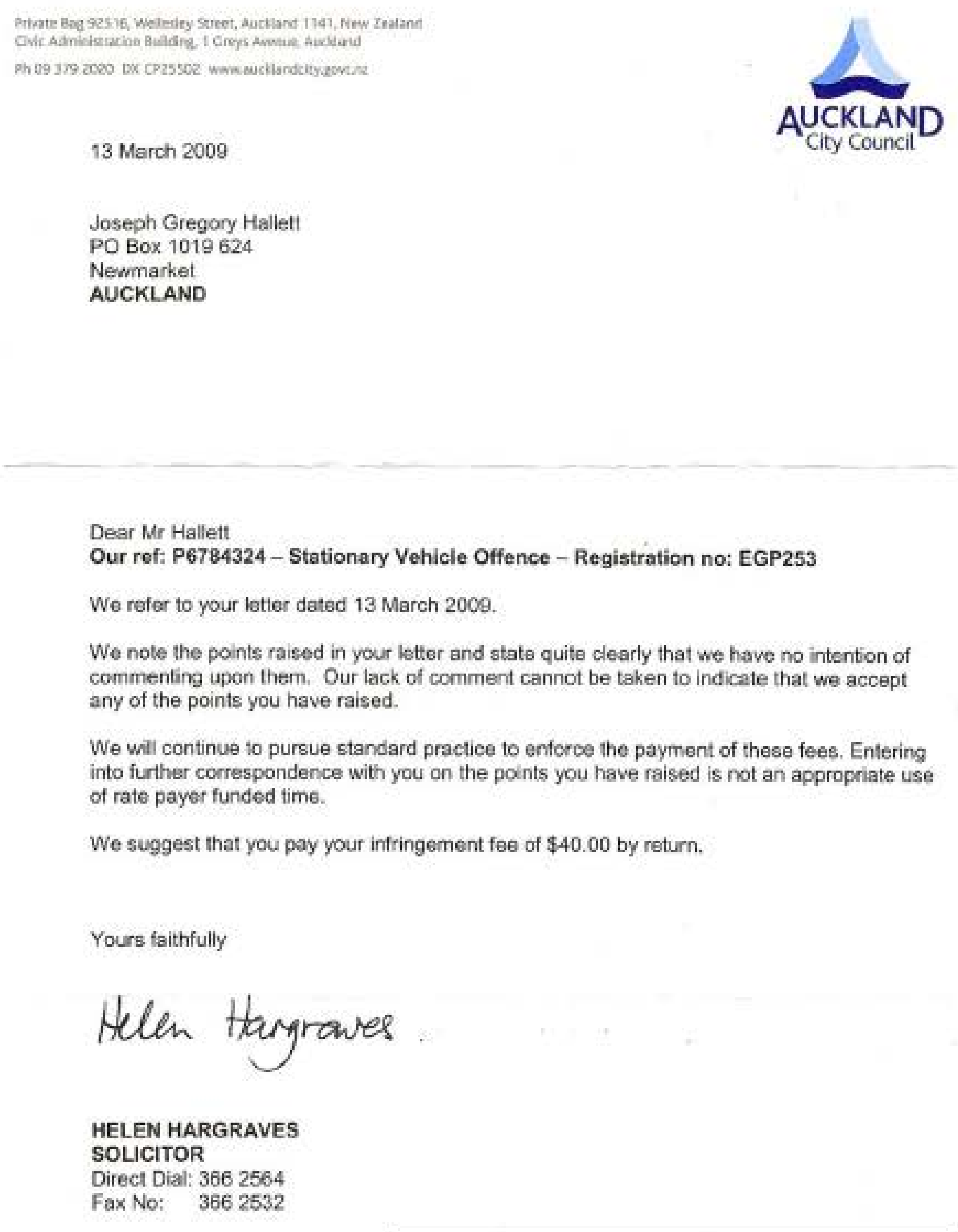

Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141, New Zealand
Civic Administration Building, 1 Greys Avenue, Auckland
Ph 09 379 2020 DX CP25502 www.aucklandcity.govt.nz

AUCKLAND City Council

13 March 2009

Joseph Gregory Hallett
PO Box 1019 624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett
Our ref: P6784324 – Stationary Vehicle Offence – Registration no: EGP253

We refer to your letter dated 13 March 2009.

We note the points raised in your letter and state quite clearly that we have no intention of commenting upon them. Our lack of comment cannot be taken to indicate that we accept any of the points you have raised.

We will continue to pursue standard practice to enforce the payment of these fees. Entering into further correspondence with you on the points you have raised is not an appropriate use of rate payer funded time.

We suggest that you pay your infringement fee of $40.00 by return.

Yours faithfully

Helen Hargraves

HELEN HARGRAVES
SOLICITOR
Direct Dial: 366 2564
Fax No: 366 2532

This letter may have been dated 13 March 2009,
but it wasn't received until 29 March 2009.
So the Auckland City Council are backdating their letters.

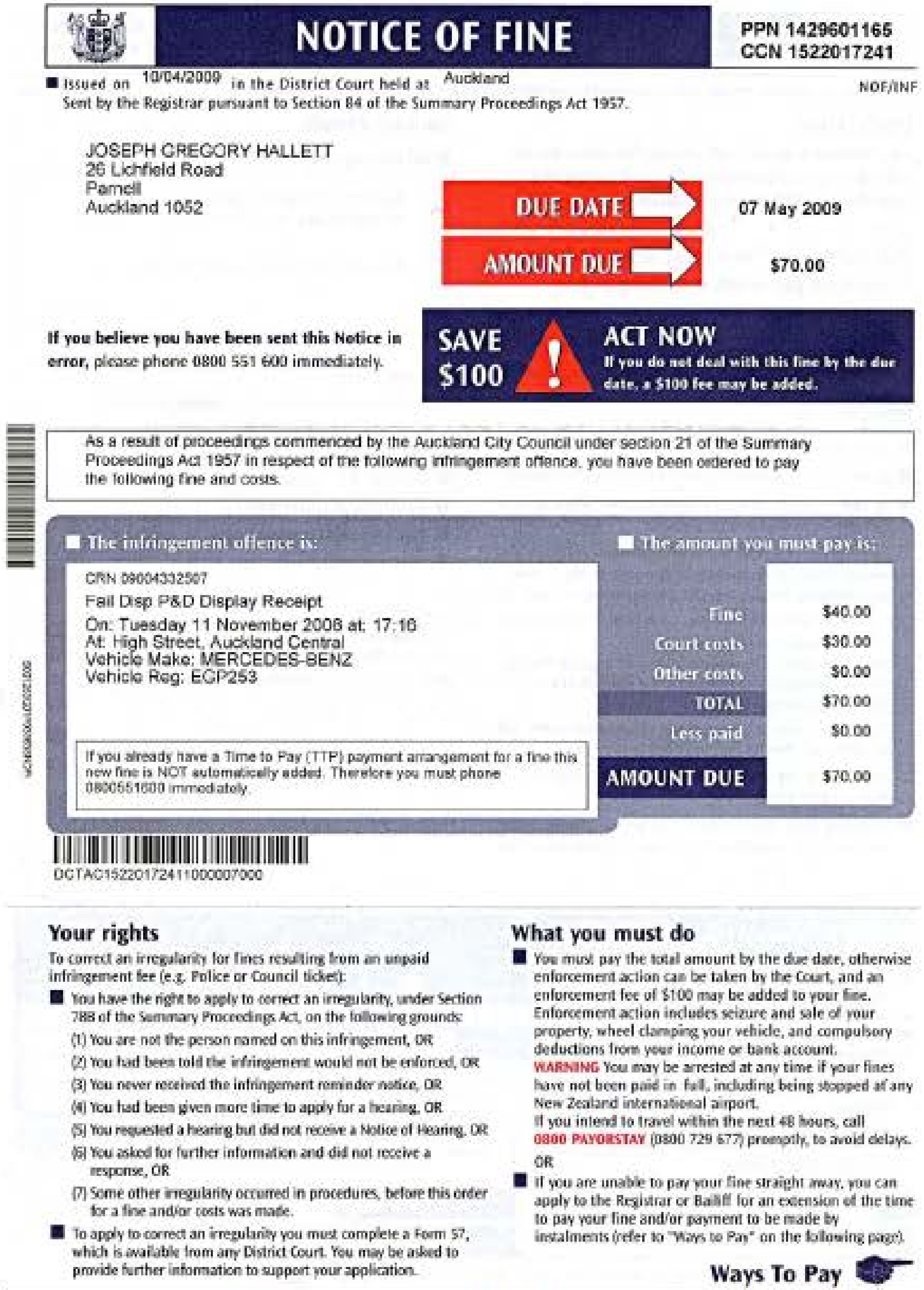

NOTICE OF FINE

PPN 1429601165
CCN 1522017241

■ Issued on 10/04/2009 in the District Court held at Auckland NOF/INF
Sent by the Registrar pursuant to Section 84 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
26 Lichfield Road
Parnell
Auckland 1052

DUE DATE 07 May 2009
AMOUNT DUE $70.00

If you believe you have been sent this Notice in error, please phone 0800 551 600 immediately.

SAVE $100 ACT NOW **If you do not deal with this fine by the due date, a $100 fee may be added.**

As a result of proceedings commenced by the Auckland City Council under section 21 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 in respect of the following infringement offence, you have been ordered to pay the following fine and costs.

■ The infringement offence is:

CRN 09004332507
Fail Disp P&D Display Receipt
On: Tuesday 11 November 2008 at: 17:16
At: High Street, Auckland Central
Vehicle Make: MERCEDES-BENZ
Vehicle Reg: EGP253

If you already have a Time to Pay (TTP) payment arrangement for a fine this new fine is NOT automatically added. Therefore you must phone 0800551600 immediately.

■ The amount you must pay is:

Fine	$40.00
Court costs	$30.00
Other costs	$0.00
TOTAL	$70.00
Less paid	$0.00
AMOUNT DUE	$70.00

DCTAC1522017241100007000

Your rights

To correct an irregularity for fines resulting from an unpaid infringement fee (e.g. Police or Council ticket):

- You have the right to apply to correct an irregularity, under Section 78B of the Summary Proceedings Act, on the following grounds:
  - (1) You are not the person named on this infringement, OR
  - (2) You had been told the infringement would not be enforced, OR
  - (3) You never received the infringement reminder notice, OR
  - (4) You had been given more time to apply for a hearing, OR
  - (5) You requested a hearing but did not receive a Notice of Hearing, OR
  - (6) You asked for further information and did not receive a response, OR
  - (7) Some other irregularity occurred in procedures, before this order for a fine and/or costs was made.
- To apply to correct an irregularity you must complete a Form 57, which is available from any District Court. You may be asked to provide further information to support your application.

What you must do

- You must pay the total amount by the due date, otherwise enforcement action can be taken by the Court, and an enforcement fee of $100 may be added to your fine. Enforcement action includes seizure and sale of your property, wheel clamping your vehicle, and compulsory deductions from your income or bank account.
  WARNING You may be arrested at any time if your fines have not been paid in full, including being stopped at any New Zealand international airport.
  If you intend to travel within the next 48 hours, call **0800 PAYORSTAY** (0800 729 677) promptly, to avoid delays.
  OR
- If you are unable to pay your fine straight away, you can apply to the Registrar or Bailiff for an extension of the time to pay your fine and/or payment to be made by instalments (refer to "Ways to Pay" on the following page).

Ways To Pay ☛

The fines keep coming with extra costs attached, despite the ACC knowledge that the Pay & Display was paid for on 11 November 2008. This NOTICE OF FINE may have been issued on 10 April 2009, but it wasn't received until 18 April 2009 . . . So the Auckland City Council are backdating their fines.

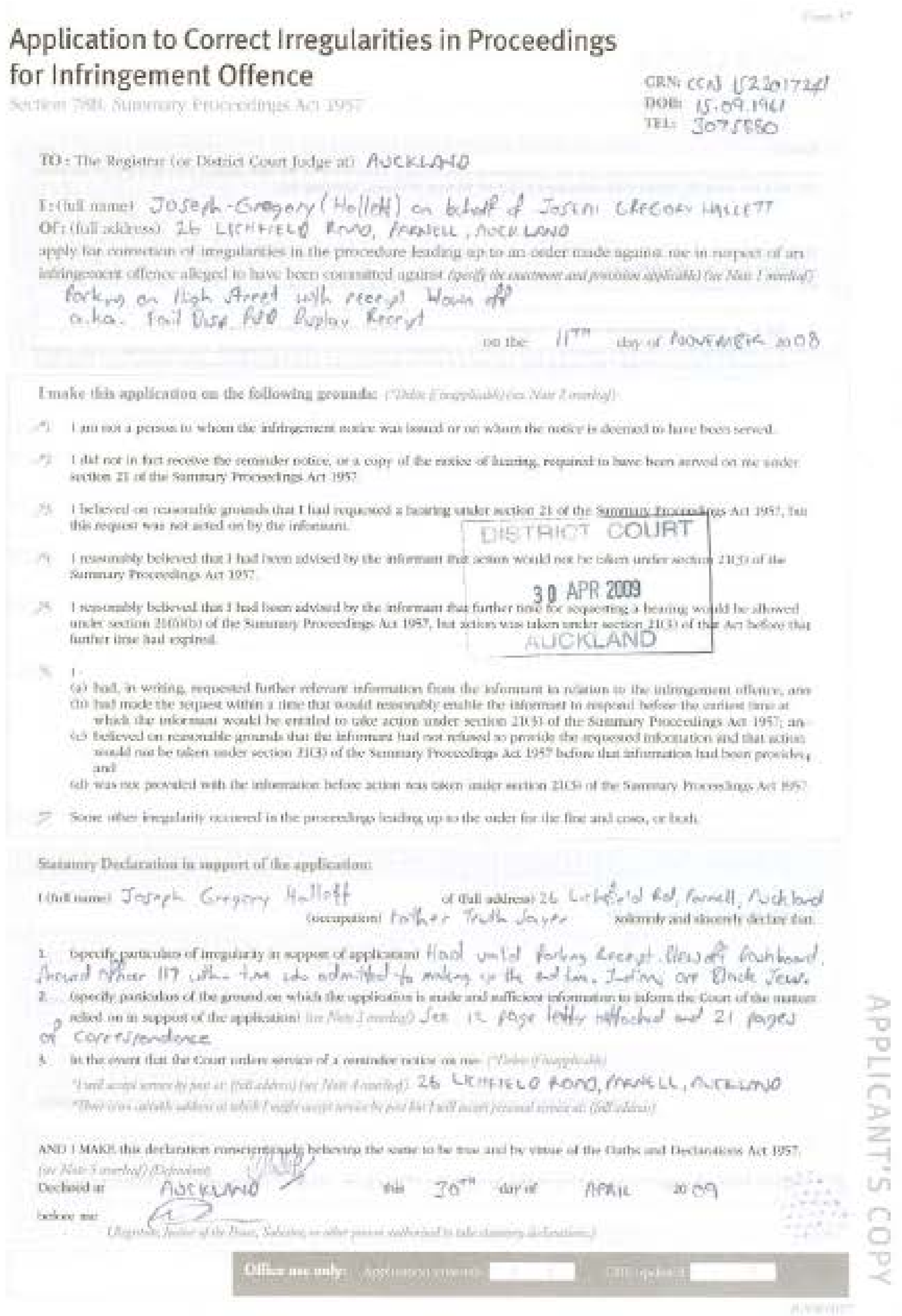

Application to Correct Irregularities in Proceedings for Infringement Offence

Section 78B, Summary Proceedings Act 1957

CRN: CCAJ U22017241
DOB: 15.09.1961
TEL: 3075880

TO: The Registrar (or District Court Judge at) AUCKLAND

I: (full name) Joseph-Gregory (Hallett) on behalf of JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
Of: (full address) 26 LICHFIELD ROAD, PARNELL, AUCKLAND

apply for correction of irregularities in the procedure leading up to an order made against me in respect of an infringement offence alleged to have been committed against *(specify the enactment and provision applicable) (see Note 1 overleaf)*
Parking on High Street with receipt blown off
a.k.a. Fail Disp P&D Display Receipt

on the 11TH day of NOVEMBER 2008

I make this application on the following grounds: *(*Delete if inapplicable) (see Note 2 overleaf)*

*1) I am not a person to whom the infringement notice was issued or on whom the notice is deemed to have been served.

*2) I did not in fact receive the reminder notice, or a copy of the notice of hearing, required to have been served on me under section 21 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

*3) I believed on reasonable grounds that I had requested a hearing under section 21 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957, but this request was not acted on by the informant.

*4) I reasonably believed that I had been advised by the informant that action would not be taken under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

*5) I reasonably believed that I had been advised by the informant that further time for requesting a hearing would be allowed under section 21(6)(b) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957, but action was taken under section 21(3) of that Act before that further time had expired.

DISTRICT COURT
30 APR 2009
AUCKLAND

*6) I -
(a) had, in writing, requested further relevant information from the informant in relation to the infringement offence, and
(b) had made the request within a time that would reasonably enable the informant to respond before the earliest time at which the informant would be entitled to take action under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957; and
(c) believed on reasonable grounds that the informant had not refused to provide the requested information and that action would not be taken under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 before that information had been provided; and
(d) was not provided with the information before action was taken under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

*7) Some other irregularity occurred in the proceedings leading up to the order for the fine and costs, or both.

Statutory Declaration in support of the application:

I (full name) Joseph Gregory Hallett of (full address) 26 Lichfield Rd, Parnell, Auckland
(occupation) Father Truth Sayer solemnly and sincerely declare that:

1. (specify particulars of irregularity in support of application) Had valid Parking Receipt. Blown off Dashboard. Parking Officer 117 [illegible] admitted to making up the [illegible]. [illegible] our Black Jews.
2. (specify particulars of the ground on which the application is made and sufficient information to inform the Court of the matters relied on in support of the application) *(see Note 3 overleaf)* See 12 page letter attached and 21 pages of correspondence
3. In the event that the Court orders service of a reminder notice on me: *(*Delete if inapplicable)*
**I will accept service by post at: (full address) (see Note 4 overleaf)* 26 LICHFIELD ROAD, PARNELL, AUCKLAND
**There is no suitable address at which I might accept service by post but I will accept personal service at: (full address)*

AND I MAKE this declaration conscientiously believing the same to be true and by virtue of the Oaths and Declarations Act 1957.
(see Note 5 overleaf) (Defendant)

Declared at AUCKLAND this 30TH day of APRIL 2009

before me
(Registrar, Justice of the Peace, Solicitor, or other person authorised to take statutory declarations.)

Office use only: Application entered: CRI updated:

APPLICANT'S COPY

TICKET TO RIDE

Bernie Madoff, the CIA, Antarctica and the Auckland SuperCity

Bernard "Bernie" Lawrence Madoff (29 April 1938–) worked as a lifeguard and sprinkler installer, had US$5,000 to spare, and became a penny stock trader, then founded 'Bernard L. Madoff Investment Securities LLC' (BLMIS) in 1960 and became one of the pioneers of modern Wall Street. He was an investment adviser, one of five broker-dealers involved in developing NASDAQ, then became its non-executive chairman, with Madoff Securities becoming the largest market maker at NASDAQ.

Madoff bypassed specialist firms by executing retail broker orders directly over-the-counter becoming a third-market provider. He also offered investment management advice – essentially give me money, don't give it to others, do you like my suit, my view, my silence. In this way, BLMIS reduced the number of intermediaries, suspicions, checks and balances, and became the sixth-largest firm on Wall Street in 2008.

Madoff also served as Chairman of the Board of Directors and on the Board of Governors of the National Association of Securities Dealers (NASD), a self-regulatory securities industry organization, which was a total failure which ever way you look at it. It was a complicit handshake for higher crimes. The more money they took, the higher they rose.

The BLMIS investment management and advisory division was the focus of the fraud investigation. Bernie Madoff then admitted to operating one of the largest Ponzi schemes in history. It was a case of Jews, Jews and more Jews, so they were all Jewish. Bernie Madoff took in US$65 billion (US$65,000 million) of other people's money, and stole, spent, or lost US$18 billion over three decades. All branches of his firm are now considered part of his Ponzi scheme fraud.

A Ponzi scheme is a fraudulent investment operation that pays returns to investors from their own money and from subsequent investors, providing unrealistically high short-term returns – lasting as long as the new investors (suckers) keep coming on board.

It usually involves selling unregistered securities, but if you are the chairman of NASDAQ you can get away with it – until the next Credit Crunch – when the Jack and Jill tumble begins and virtually all Ponzi schemes expose themselves within months – like Miami's Andres Pimstein's US$39 million (2005–April 2008), the Italian mob's US$400 million, and Nicholas Cosmo's US$400 million (26 January 2009) using his Agape World Inc., also in New York, albeit Long Island.

The European King Movement in Europe in the early 1990s was a Ponzi scheme that paid 20% per month, went up to 40%, then collapsed. The guy who ran it had his press claim that he had suicided, then disappeared, then murdered. So he was hard to find. Dead for six years, he was no longer culpable – so free and rich by 1999.

Bernie Madoff's Early Years

Madoff was born in the New York City borough of Queens and raised Jewish. His father, Ralph, was a plumber, then a stockbroker. The two seem to go hand-in-hand. Bernie graduated from Hofstra College in 1960 with a degree in political science, then went to Brooklyn Law School, but dropped out.

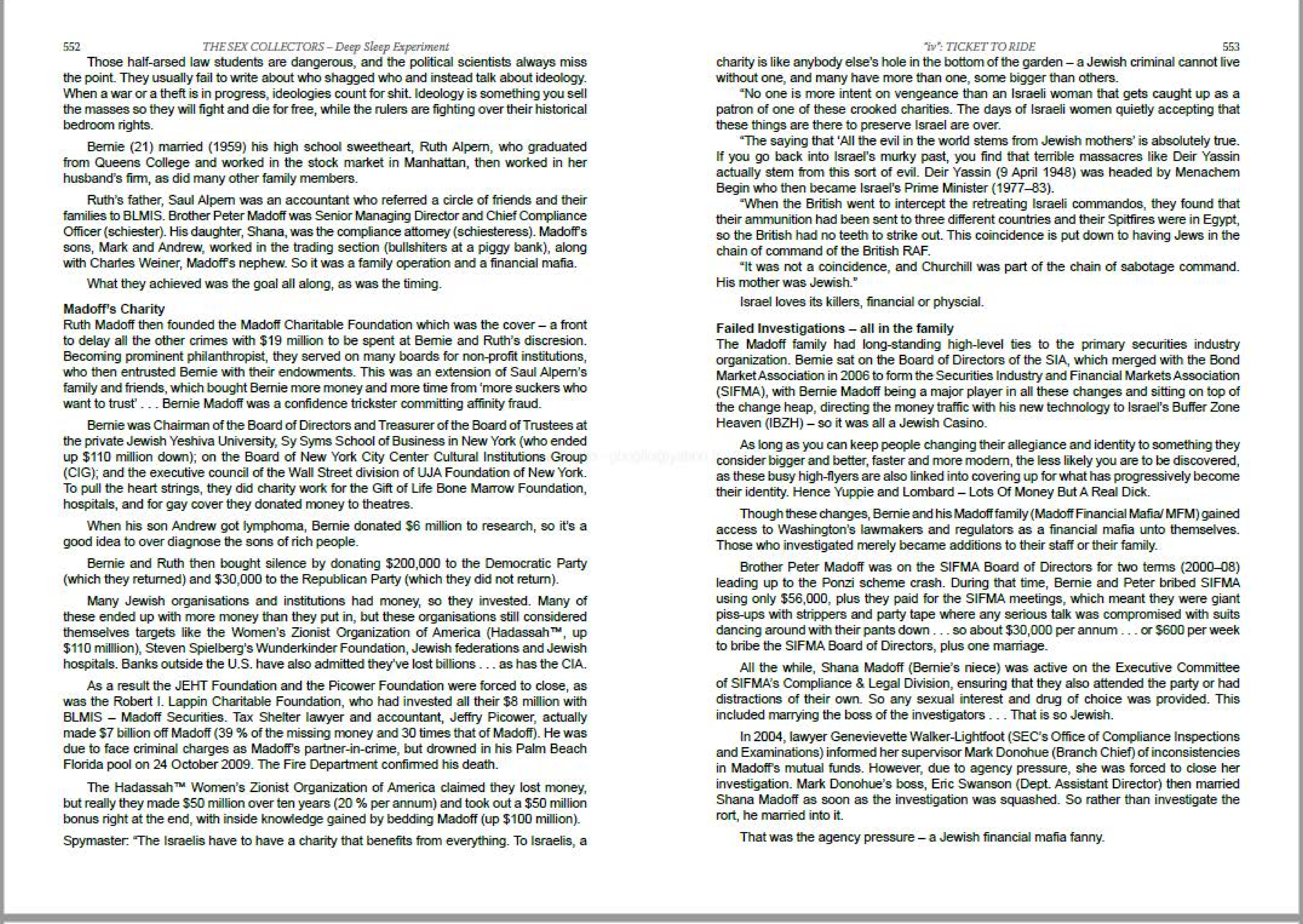

Those half-arsed law students are dangerous, and the political scientists always miss the point. They usually fail to write about who shagged who and instead talk about ideology. When a war or a theft is in progress, ideologies count for shit. Ideology is something you sell the masses so they will fight and die for free, while the rulers are fighting over their historical bedroom rights.

Bernie (21) married (1959) his high school sweetheart, Ruth Alpern, who graduated from Queens College and worked in the stock market in Manhattan, then worked in her husband's firm, as did many other family members.

Ruth's father, Saul Alpern was an accountant who referred a circle of friends and their families to BLMIS. Brother Peter Madoff was Senior Managing Director and Chief Compliance Officer (schiester). His daughter, Shana, was the compliance attorney (schiesteress). Madoff's sons, Mark and Andrew, worked in the trading section (bullshiters at a piggy bank), along with Charles Weiner, Madoff's nephew. So it was a family operation and a financial mafia.

What they achieved was the goal all along, as was the timing.

Madoff's Charity

Ruth Madoff then founded the Madoff Charitable Foundation which was the cover – a front to delay all the other crimes with $19 million to be spent at Bernie and Ruth's discretion. Becoming prominent philanthropist, they served on many boards for non-profit institutions, who then entrusted Bernie with their endowments. This was an extension of Saul Alpern's family and friends, which bought Bernie more money and more time from 'more suckers who want to trust' . . . Bernie Madoff was a confidence trickster committing affinity fraud.

Bernie was Chairman of the Board of Directors and Treasurer of the Board of Trustees at the private Jewish Yeshiva University, Sy Syms School of Business in New York (who ended up $110 million down); on the Board of New York City Center Cultural Institutions Group (CIG); and the executive council of the Wall Street division of UJA Foundation of New York. To pull the heart strings, they did charity work for the Gift of Life Bone Marrow Foundation, hospitals, and for gay cover they donated money to theatres.

When his son Andrew got lymphoma, Bernie donated $6 million to research, so it's a good idea to over diagnose the sons of rich people.

Bernie and Ruth then bought silence by donating $200,000 to the Democratic Party (which they returned) and $30,000 to the Republican Party (which they did not return).

Many Jewish organisations and institutions had money, so they invested. Many of these ended up with more money than they put in, but these organisations still considered themselves targets like the Women's Zionist Organization of America (Hadassah™, up $110 milllion), Steven Spielberg's Wunderkinder Foundation, Jewish federations and Jewish hospitals. Banks outside the U.S. have also admitted they've lost billions . . . as has the CIA.

As a result the JEHT Foundation and the Picower Foundation were forced to close, as was the Robert I. Lappin Charitable Foundation, who had invested all their $8 million with BLMIS – Madoff Securities. Tax Shelter lawyer and accountant, Jeffry Picower, actually made $7 billion off Madoff (39 % of the missing money and 30 times that of Madoff). He was due to face criminal charges as Madoff's partner-in-crime, but drowned in his Palm Beach Florida pool on 24 October 2009. The Fire Department confirmed his death.

The Hadassah™ Women's Zionist Organization of America claimed they lost money, but really they made $50 million over ten years (20 % per annum) and took out a $50 million bonus right at the end, with inside knowledge gained by bedding Madoff (up $100 million).

Spymaster: "The Israelis have to have a charity that benefits from everything. To Israelis, a charity is like anybody else's hole in the bottom of the garden – a Jewish criminal cannot live without one, and many have more than one, some bigger than others.

"No one is more intent on vengeance than an Israeli woman that gets caught up as a patron of one of these crooked charities. The days of Israeli women quietly accepting that these things are there to preserve Israel are over.

"The saying that 'All the evil in the world stems from Jewish mothers' is absolutely true. If you go back into Israel's murky past, you find that terrible massacres like Deir Yassin actually stem from this sort of evil. Deir Yassin (9 April 1948) was headed by Menachem Begin who then became Israel's Prime Minister (1977–83).

"When the British went to intercept the retreating Israeli commandos, they found that their ammunition had been sent to three different countries and their Spitfires were in Egypt, so the British had no teeth to strike out. This coincidence is put down to having Jews in the chain of command of the British RAF.

"It was not a coincidence, and Churchill was part of the chain of sabotage command. His mother was Jewish."

Israel loves its killers, financial or physcial.

Failed Investigations – all in the family

The Madoff family had long-standing high-level ties to the primary securities industry organization. Bernie sat on the Board of Directors of the SIA, which merged with the Bond Market Association in 2006 to form the Securities Industry and Financial Markets Association (SIFMA), with Bernie Madoff being a major player in all these changes and sitting on top of the change heap, directing the money traffic with his new technology to Israel's Buffer Zone Heaven (IBZH) – so it was all a Jewish Casino.

As long as you can keep people changing their allegiance and identity to something they consider bigger and better, faster and more modern, the less likely you are to be discovered, as these busy high-flyers are also linked into covering up for what has progressively become their identity. Hence Yuppie and Lombard – Lots Of Money But A Real Dick.

Though these changes, Bernie and his Madoff family (Madoff Financial Mafia/ MFM) gained access to Washington's lawmakers and regulators as a financial mafia unto themselves. Those who investigated merely became additions to their staff or their family.

Brother Peter Madoff was on the SIFMA Board of Directors for two terms (2000–08) leading up to the Ponzi scheme crash. During that time, Bernie and Peter bribed SIFMA using only $56,000, plus they paid for the SIFMA meetings, which meant they were giant piss-ups with strippers and party tape where any serious talk was compromised with suits dancing around with their pants down . . . so about $30,000 per annum . . . or $600 per week to bribe the SIFMA Board of Directors, plus one marriage.

All the while, Shana Madoff (Bernie's niece) was active on the Executive Committee of SIFMA's Compliance & Legal Division, ensuring that they also attended the party or had distractions of their own. So any sexual interest and drug of choice was provided. This included marrying the boss of the investigators . . . That is so Jewish.

In 2004, lawyer Genevievette Walker-Lightfoot (SEC's Office of Compliance Inspections and Examinations) informed her supervisor Mark Donohue (Branch Chief) of inconsistencies in Madoff's mutual funds. However, due to agency pressure, she was forced to close her investigation. Mark Donohue's boss, Eric Swanson (Dept. Assistant Director) then married Shana Madoff as soon as the investigation was squashed. So rather than investigate the rort, he married into it.

That was the agency pressure – a Jewish financial mafia fanny.

Just before sentencing, Bernie Madoff told the SEC Inspector General that 'the investigators were bumbling and never asked the right questions.' The only thing they did right was wear trenchcoats and look obvious. 'In 2003, they never even looked at his stock records. Nor did they check with the Depository Trust Company that centralises security deposits. This was the first place you look for a Ponzi scheme', so the SEC investigators were in on the Madoff Financial Mafia payroll.

Then on 17 June 2009, Madoff cited SEC Chairman Mary Schapiro as a "dear friend" and SEC Commissioner Elisse Walter as "a terrific lady". So it was more Jews in on the money and denying any responsiblity, while sharing in the profits, either in cash, portfolio, or promotion – which is pretty much what Jews do: "It's the money or the job".[1]

From 1992, SEC botched six investigations into Madoff. This was done through neglecting allegations of whistle-blowers and financial experts, not looking at stock records, not checking with the Depository Trust Company, incompetent staff work, identifying with the trenchcoats and not the information, the Madoff family marrying the boss of the investigation and sharing the rort with him, and SEC Chairman Mary Schapiro being a 'dear friend' maintained in her position for the duration of the Israeli-run con that taxed America . . . and the CIA out of its Antarctica development money.

In 1999, financial analyst Harry Markopolos informed SEC that it was legally and mathematically impossible to achieve the gains Madoff claimed to deliver. The Boston SEC then ignored him in 2000 and 2001, as did the New York SEC in 2005 and 2007.

Others then pointed out that the growing volume of Madoff accounts could not be competently and legitimately serviced by his accounting auditing firm of only three people, only one of whom was actually doing any accounting work. Here's how badly it worked:

Brother Peter Madoff deposited $32,146 into his Madoff accounts, then withdrew $16 million.

Son Andrew Madoff deposited $1 million into his Madoff accounts, then withdrew $17 million.

Son Mark Madoff deposited $745,482, then withdrew $18.1 million.

These were family frauds of $50 million in just three deals, plus Mark Madoff owed his parents $22 million, and Andrew $9.5 million for their Manhattan apartments and Greenwich, Connecticut homes . . . so $81.5 million in five deals.

Lover Sheryl Weinstein was a chief financial officer of Hadassah™ (Women's Zionist Organization of America Inc.) who had an affair with Bernie Madoff around 1988. As of 1997, Hadassah/ Zionist Women had invested $40 million, yet by December 2008 they had withdrawn $140 million, from an account valued at $90 million . . . so another $100 million fraud to the benefit of Zionist women – who still complained . . . so $181.5 million in six piggy bank deals.

The US$65 billion handled by one backroom accountant turned $32,146 into $16 million; $1 million into $17 million; $745,482 into $18.1 million, and $40 million in 1997 into $90 million in 2008 (20% p.a.), which magically became $140 million overnight . . . and a total loss of US$18 billion.

So it was an in-house family fraud – Jewish, and who was rooting who. The brothers were not so blind that they could not see, it's just that they all knew the way out was the ageing Bernie Madoff (70) who, within nine months of prison would fall out of his bunk and spend his time in hospital, rather than prison.

On 3 November 2009, Madoff's accounting front man, David Friehling, pleaded guilty to securities fraud, investment adviser fraud, making false filings to the Securities and Exchange Commission, and obstructing the IRS.

---

[1] This was then undone within 5 months. SEC Inspector General David Kotz, 30 October 2009: "I did not find any corroboration or evidence to support Madoff's claim of a close relationship with Mary Schapiro."

Robert M. Stockmann to Greg Hallett et al, 22 April 2009: "On April 20, 2009 CNN issued a special report 'Judge blocks Madoff bankruptcy' stating 'A federal judge Monday blocked Bernard Madoff's assets from being moved into bankruptcy, saying there is probable cause the assets should be forfeited to the government'. Forfeited to the government for the pro bono, or common purpose? This smells like the biggest Communist stitch-up game in history to steal private property.

Rumors go that Madoff has been working hand-in-hand with the SEC, to pull that off, ever since 1993, when Mary Schapiro (not Shapiro) abandoned *SEC Rules* and instituted *SEC Guidelines*, to prepare for a '**Derivatives Revolution and World Financial System**'."

Mary Schapiro served as a Commissioner of the SEC (December 1988–October 1994), appointed by President Reagan, then reappointed in 1989 by President George H. W. Bush. By July 1990 she was chairman of the Task Force on Administrative Proceedings which ultimately determined it necessary and appropriate to completely revise the entire *Rules of Practice* and abandon them. In 1993, President Clinton appointed Schapiro as SEC acting chairman. In February, Schapiro issued The Task Force Report: '*Fair and Efficient Administrative Proceedings*'.

In October 1993, in Lugano, Switzerland, at the 'Eighth Annual Symposium for the Foundation for Research in International Banking and Finance' Schapiro gave a speech – 'The Derivatives Revolution and the World Financial System': "The benefits to financial innovation that may result from a more flexible regulatory paradigm . . . not convinced that consolidated regulatory supervision of securities firms and their affiliates is necessary or appropriate at this time." So Mary Schapiro was in the Madoff Financial Mafia's back pocket.

On 22 November 1993, SEC wrote in the Federal Register, to adopt her proposals pertaining to the Rules, then solicited responses. In 1994, President Clinton appointed Mary Schapiro as chairperson of the Commodity Futures Trading Commission (1994–96). On 9 June 1995, they adopted some of the solicited responses into SEC guidelines, which were now so heavily deregulated as to support any con that Israel requested through their agent Bernie Madoff.

In 1996 she became president of NASD Regulation (National Association of Securities Dealers).

Schapiro became Chairman of the International Organization of Securities Commission (IOSCO) Consultative Committee (2002–06) which stopped any proposals to investigate anyone paying any backhanders of sufficient amount to purchase greenback blindness . . . or those representing Isarel.

In 2002, she was made NASD vice chairperson, where, in 2005 she oversaw a wide-reaching probe into gift-giving and entertaining on Wall Street, uncovering several instances of lavish and excessive activities, that led to many charges, but not Peter Madoff's SIFMA Board of Directors' giant piss-ups with strippers and party tape and suits dancing around with their pants down.

In 2006, Mary Schapiro was made NASD chairman and CEO, where she oversaw the consolidation with the NYSE Member Regulation, to form the Financial Industry Regulatory Authority (FINRA) – the largest non-governmental securities industry self-regulatory organization for broker-dealers that showed complete failure, just as Bernie Madoff wanted it. It was all PR and self-promotion up the Yuppie ladder to LOMBARD status at everyone else's expense.

In 2008, Investment Advisor magazine, IA 25, named Schapiro one of the top 25 most iinfluential investment business advisors: "If it's ultimately wrong, we will promote it. Listen to her. She spouts the game, but knows not what she does. She's part of the Madoff Financial Mafia."

On 18 December 2008 – a week after Bernie Madoff confessed, and during the lame duck period – Barack Obama designated Mary Schapiro as the intended nominee for Chairman of the U.S. Securities and Exchange Commission (SEC).

In January 2008, one of the last things President George W. Bush did was appoint Mary Schapiro to the 19-member council of the President's Advisory Council on Financial Literacy. [I've just found out at the end of my presidency that I can't read or count, help!]

Mary Schapiro was sworn in as the first woman permanent Chairman of SEC on 27 January 2009. Now that the horse has bolted, and America is stripped of its gold, permanent SEC Chairman Schapiro's priorities are reinvigorating a financial regulatory system that protects investors and vigorously enforces rules, the same rules she removed for Madoff, Picower, Hadassah and blah.

Madoff Hands Himself Over, but Not the Money, or his Family

Spymaster: “The instructions came from Israel for Madoff to hand himself over.

“This was during the lame duck period between Presidents' Bush and Obama, so none had to deal with it.

“Ever since the Lavon Affair/ Operation Susannah in the 1950s, there's been problems with Israeli agents establishing themselves in a safe place after committing crimes in the name of Israel. Since then, instructions went out within Mossad, that agents were not to turn up at Israeli consular offices, or to make phone calls to Israel begging for immunity, and return home in poisoned circumstances.

“After the death of Robert Maxwell on 5 November 1991 at the hands of the Mossad, the Israeli government brought about a new methodology to these fraught handovers. The fraudster would contact a phone number and indicate that he wished to seek asylum and it would be organised between governments direct from Israel, but orchestrated from the US.

“At the same time, all Israeli citizens that had assisted with the crime – usually bookkeeping – would be flown back to Israel, urgently.

“This happened in the wake of BCCI collapse (Bank of Credit and Commerce International) in July 1991 which was a British Bank supposedly run by Saudis, but actually run by Mossad in London.”

Author: “It was described as ‘widespread fraud and manipulation’ and ‘a $20-billion-plus heist’. On 29 July 1991, *Time Magazine* described BCCI as ‘The world's sleaziest bank’ and ‘The Dirtiest Bank of All’. Three months later Robert Maxwell (a.k.a. Ján Ludvík Hoch, ex-British MP) was dead.”

Initially, BLMIS firm quoted bid and ask prices via the National Quotation Bureau's Pink Sheets which was slow and had no advantage. In order to compete with members on the New York Stock Exchange trading floor, Madoff's firm used new computer technology to disseminate quotes. It was a computer bulletin board, but had no real connection with buyers or sellers, until it became automated, then it became a popular trade and volume reporter. So after a trial run, it became the NASDAQ on 8 February 1971 – the first electronic American stock exchange.

Spymaster: “The Israelis then developed fast moving transfer systems into a fine art, then became staff in Madoff's accounting rooms where funds were fast-tracked on their way to financial oblivion. All these Israeli money funnels ended in Israeli accounts in Hifa.

“The crazy thing is, Madoff was proud of them and took investors down to see them in action. Investors actually viewed them from special viewing rooms. A lot of these people never realised that what they were witnessing was the Mossad at work, and their money being transferred into heaven's buffer zone.

“In New Zealand, when Israelis were discovered forging counterfeit money (c. 2005) it was deemed to be a secret. The operation was suppressed, no crime was deemed to have been committed, and everyone was allowed to return to Israel . . . these things are big enough to cause depressions. In this case, it forging American notes from US$1 to US$100.”

From 1992, the U.S. Securities and Exchange Commission (SEC) conducted investigations into Madoff's business practices, but Madoff managed to produce enough data and buy them out. The Israelis helped Madoff with both the data and the Inspectors who failed to look beyond what was provided. The NASDAQ provided speed advantage and enough confusion for cover.

Assets and Last Minute Steals as Madoff hands over the problem

Madoff lived in a ranch house in Roslyn, New York, then an ocean-front residence in Montauk Long Island ($3 million) with a residence on Fifth Avenue ($7m), a mansion in Palm Beach, Florida ($11m), a house in France ($1m), had 50 % of BLM Air Charter ($12m), a 27 metre sportfishing yacht *Bull* ($7m), other [In]securities ($45m), cash ($17m), furniture, household goods, and art ($9.9m), and jewellery ($2.6m).[2]

As at 13 March 2009, Bernie and Ruth Madoff were worth $126 million personally, plus $700 million in interests in Bernard L. Madoff Investment [In]Securities. After Bernie Madoff's arrest, the Federal Court froze the assets of the Madoff Family Foundation.

On 9 December 2008, Bernie Madoff planned to pay out $173 million in bonuses two months early, although he knew he would fail to pay redemptions of $7 billion in the next few weeks.

On 10 December 2008, Bernie Madoff (70) admitted to his frauds. This was staged for its timing in the lame duck period between presidents.

Bernie confessed to his sons, Andrew and Mark (who knew all along), that the asset management arm of his firm was one giant Ponzi scheme – an ongoing lie for well-bred suckers. Andrew and Mark Madoff then told authorities that their father had just confessed ‘the asset management arm of his firm was a massive Ponzi scheme’ – “It was one big lie.”

On 11 December 2008, FBI agents arrested Madoff and charged him with securities fraud – a clampdown at least 16 years late. Madoff resigned as chairman of BLMIS the same day, admitted loudly to fraud with liablities of US$50 billion, and posted a US$10 million bail bond.

Soon after, Madoff pleaded guilty to 11 felonies and was charged with the largest investor fraud ever committed by a single person – bigger than the 2001 US$31.2 billion Enron collapse (where the bad guy also faked his death.) Madoff said he began the Ponzi scheme in the early 1990s, but it began in the 1980s, and it appears that none of his investment operations were legitimate. The amount missing from client accounts, including fabricated gains, was almost US$65 billion, however the court appointed trustee could only estimate actual investors losses at $18 billion. That's because many of his Jewish investors were hugely overpaid. That included his wife, sons, brother, neice, and lover – the front woman for Zionist Women of America. Those fundraising feminists are always fronted by a greasy root.

Around US$36 billion was invested into the Madoff Ponzi scam which stole half and gave half back. About half of Madoff's investors were “net winners,” earning more than their investment (Hadassah/ Women's Zionist Org), with $18 billion missing – mainly to non-Jews, and the CIA.

That this went on for 20 years and got past U.S. Securities and Exchange Commission checks (SEC), just goes to show a check is a handshake with money wrapped in brown paper along with a sandwhich, and/or snatch attached, whatever country you are in.

On 16 December 2008, Madoff's assets and those of his firm were frozen (5 days late).

On 17 December 2008, Judge Denny Chin accepted Madoff's plea for house arrest in his Fifth Avenue Upper East Side Manhatten penthouse apartment with a $10 million bail, 24-hour monitoring, and bed by 7 pm. Early nights are still considered punishment.

When it was realised that even the $10 million bond wouldn't be his, Madoff was placed in the Metropolitan Correctional Center on 12 March 2009.

Still, Judge Denny Chin had given Bernie Madoff 11–16 December 2008 when his assets weren't frozen (rumour has it he gave away millions to Jews), and three months (12 December 2008–12 March 2009) to place his affairs in order from home, which meant shunting the money even further along heaven's buffer zone (IBZH).

---

[2] The U.S. Marshals Service auctioned these in September 2009.

Pre-Sentencing

Initially Madoff (70) faced up to 20 years in prison and a fine of US$5 million . . . which is peanuts by comparison. It's 0.01 % of what he stole – 1 cent in the $100.

In February 2009, Madoff agreed with SEC that he would be banned from the securities industry for life, which is all PR and did nothing about everything.

Bernie Madoff refused to name any co-conspirators, insisted he was the sole fraudster, refused to plea bargain with the government, and pleaded guilty to all charges. In this way, there were less people to extract out of prison (which are really there for the Goyim) and Israel has still not been charged. After all, Israel is a sovereign nation (just, and by the skin of their teeth, and using a compromised homosexual edible-mouse-breeding excentric who rode around on a carriage drawn by zebras) and the whole thing was a kind of civil war, extracting goyim money out of the West (US$18 billion missing) while overpaying Jewish women's organisations by US$100 million and the Jewish mafia family by another $198 million.

Madoff admitted there were no legitimate investments and he deposited the money into his business account at Chase Manhattan Bank, which then became JPMorgan Chase in 2000 and earnt him $483 million in interest.

On 22 June 2009, the defence requested a 12-year sentence citing Social Security Administration tables that his life expectancy was another 13 years (83).

Ruth Madoff then agreed to forfeit $85 million in assets. This left her with $2.5 million in cash which the SEC and Court trustee were allowed to pursue. Massachusetts regulators then accused her of withdrawing $15 million from company-related accounts shortly before Bernie confessed – so she had foreknowledge, the whole thing was a staged event, and she still had $17.5 million.

On 26 June 2009, Judge Denny Chin ordered Madoff to forfeit $170 billion in assets. Federal sentencing guidelines for fraud only went up to $400 million in losses, so Madoff's frauds were off the charts. "Madoff did not provided meaningful cooperation or assistance" and the Prosecutors asked for 150 years in prison – the maximum sentence. Parole had been abolished in 1984, so it was a life sentence.

Judge Denny Chin did not received any mitigating letters from friends or family testifying to Madoff's good deeds: "The absence of such support is telling". It is telling that it was a known Ponzi con and Madoff was the front man and the fall guy who would be rescued by those who would otherwise have bothered to write a letter of support.

Ruth Madoff then issued a statement which told of her compliance. It was one of those double-speak letters that meant the opposite of what it says, requires reading twice, then undoes everything they've said, and finally admits co-conspirator status: "I am breaking my silence now because my reluctance to speak has been interpreted as indifference or lack of sympathy for the victims of my husband Bernie's crime, which is exactly the opposite of the truth."

Interpreted correctly, this says: "I am a Jewish wife and mother of the Madoff Financial Mafia that has stolen billions off Goyim and overpaid billions to Jews. I have kept $17.5 million of this and attempted to hide it and blame everything on my husband and take no responsibility myself. My money will go towards Bernie's plastic surgery and a bodydouble so that his escape may be facilitated out of prison within nine months of incarceration. Goyim, go fuck yourself."

Son's Mark and Andrew, brother Peter, and Peter's daughter Shana, were then sued for $198 million. They had received over $80 million in compensation since 2001 and used the BLMIS bank account as a personal piggy bank to buy apartments and houses. They were the compliance officers in the fraud and compliant with the fraud.

Bernie Madoff's Escape

Bernie Madoff was remanded in the Metropolitan Correctional Center on 12 March 2009. On 29 June 2009, Justice Denny Chin sentenced him to 150 years at the Butner Medium Federal Correctional Institution in North Carolina. 15 weeks later, on 13 October 2009, Bernie got into a senior citizens fight. And when that didn't cause enough damage, he immediately fell out of his bunk onto his face. He was then transferred to Duke University Medical Center in Durham, North Carolina and has been treated for serious facial injuries ever since.

It must have been a very high bunk, or the facial injuries (photo unsighted) must have been well overstated by Jewish doctors. So . . . we should be reading 'plastic surgery followed by a paid bodydouble to replace him'. The healthcare will take as long as it takes to find and prepare a convincing bodydouble. The most difficult thing to immitate is the walk, so you won't see him walking ever again, nor a comparison of him walking before and after.

Bernie Madoff will then die, and six years later he will reappear as 'a dead man walking' with no debts, having spent only nine months in prison (12 March–18 December 2009).

Madoff is Jewish, and for the Jews, the Courts are all the world's a stage.
So guess who's out of prison – Bernie Madoff.
It's a Jewish thing. No Jews are allowed in prison
because it's their Jewishdiction, Jursidiction, Jewish dictatorship.

How did he do it? Bernie Madoff was given government access, in effect making him a gang member with the U.S. Government, and with U.S. Govt. employees complicit in the length of his con – all of whom were conned and controlled by Israel as they perfected IBZH.

America is a perfect example of Israel's Buffer Zone Heaven.

Bernie Madoff was arrested on 12 December 2008 and detained; his assets and those of his firm were frozen on 16 December 2008; he was then given house arrest on 17 December 2008; remanded in the Metropolitan Correctional Center on 12 March 2009; sentenced to the Butner Medium on 29 June 2009; and hospitalized in the Duke University Medical Center on 18 December 2009 from where he has been replaced and escaped.

So of his 150 year sentence, Israel's Jewish Financial Mafia frontman and fall guy Bernie Madoff spent nine months incarcerted, from 12 March–18 December 2009.

It doesn't say much about the security of United States prisons. Like the Mexican police force, it's an entrepreneurial activity. And when the Jews say to a Judge: "Get him out", the American judge 'lets him out'.

The CIA looses US$ billions with Madoff and Steals Auckland

When Madoff was questioned privately about stealing the CIA's money and how dangerous that was, he simply shrugged his shoulders. What do you expect? He was Jewish on a bigger rig.

The US$ billions in CIA money was due for development and expansion in Antarctica and turning New Zealand into 'New Spain' – as the leaping point to the new continent to be developed – Antarctica. The billions had been set aside for the development of secret shit in Antarctica. It's all secret shit down there. How do I know? Because they never tell you what it is, even when it's succeeded.

All we get is the results of pollen samples and dehydrated penguin bodies as cover for the return of SAS bodies, and no one mentioning that Mt Erebus spits out more CFC's than the rest of the world's volcanoes put together, and periodically causes a hole in the ozone layer.

To recover the lost billions, the CIA decided to steal Auckland. They decided to use their CIA assets in New Zealand to facilitate this by creating one big Auckland Super City whereby all four cities of Auckland would be amalgamated into one giant city – where all the infrastructure assets are worth NZ$28 billion – equavalent to US$19 billion.

This is due to occur by October 2010. It comes with meetings in secret, and a moratorium on any changes for the first year while the assets are stolen beyond reach – the CIA's Buffer Zone Heaven (CBZH) . . . all with the help of the New Zealand frausters Fay Richwhite.

New Zealand is really easy to steal from. Kiwis tend to be 'Keen Interest Without Intelligence' and want to believe the best in everyone. From 1990, the CIA stole NZ$50 billion out of New Zealand, and this occurred with the support of NZ's leading financial advisors. Add to this the NZ$22 billion for the Leaky Building Syndrome that won't be resolved by the CIA SuperCity and the NZ$28 billion Auckland infrastructure theft, and you have NZ$100 million stolen by the CIA from New Zealand over two decades.

So the CIA has decided to recover its US$19 billion loss from the compliant suckers down in New Zealand, as led by the sexual deviants and CIA agents that run Auckland. Despite them knowing that I know this, and that I have spoken about this on radio in America on The Real Deal with Dr James Fetzer on 24/25 November 2009, 28/29 January 2010, 18/19 February 2010, and with Rayelan Allan on Rumour Mill News on 21/22 December 2009 – the CIA still say: "It's still going to go ahead".

Meanwhile I get off my traffic tickets by citing the Mayor of Auckland John Banks
as a paedophile and drug trafficker.

The two people most behind the CIA takeover of the four cities of Auckland amalgamated into the one Auckland SuperCity, are the drug lords, sexual deviants and contract killers, Dame Margaret Bazley and Auckland City Mayor John Banks. Both are known CIA agents. Typical of a CIA agent, John Banks claims that he does not know what he does. He also sleeps in a separate bed from his wife, and will try anything sexually, and then deny that he has had any such experience, citing "I can't remember" – which is a sure sign of a CIA agent.

There are no women in Auckland who claim to ever having had sex with John Banks. John Banks is a 5'4" paedophile, drug trafficker, cross-dresser, tranny-rooter, and he lied about his status when he adopted three children from Russia. He said "I am the Minister of Police", when he had been removed as the Minister of Police for riding around his Whangarei electorate picking up underaged Maori boys on his Harley-Davidson and arranging sex dates with them. When he came to give out awards at the Whangarei High School in 1995, he got stomped off the stage, then resigned as Minister of Police.

John Banks beat up his first wife in 1972, and his second wife does not have sex with men. So what we have here is a cover marriage.

Dame Margaret Bazley was married to Steve Bazley who was jailed for 15 years for the murder of Steve and Isobel Wilson (and another) in order to protect the Mr Asia heroin trafficking ring. The heroin ring started in New Zealand, then moved to Australia and England.

During the hearings, Lillian Bazely, now Dame Margaret Bazley, was incited as a heroin courier and told she could never hold a government position in Australia – so she moved to New Zealand where the CIA promoted her up the government ladder faster than a lizard on heat. Here she practised exactly what the Australians cited of her: "She couldn't organise two dingos to shit in a can" and now none of the government departments work.

The end result for the Auckland SuperCity is doubling the rates where nothing gets done, the rubbish isn't collected, the roads aren't fixed, the city turns into a slum, and everyone leaves except the Chinese, who thank the CIA for handing them Auckland on a plate.

So Bernie Madoff's ponzi scheme could result in Auckland becoming uninhabitable for white New Zealanders, circa April 2011, according to some predictions.

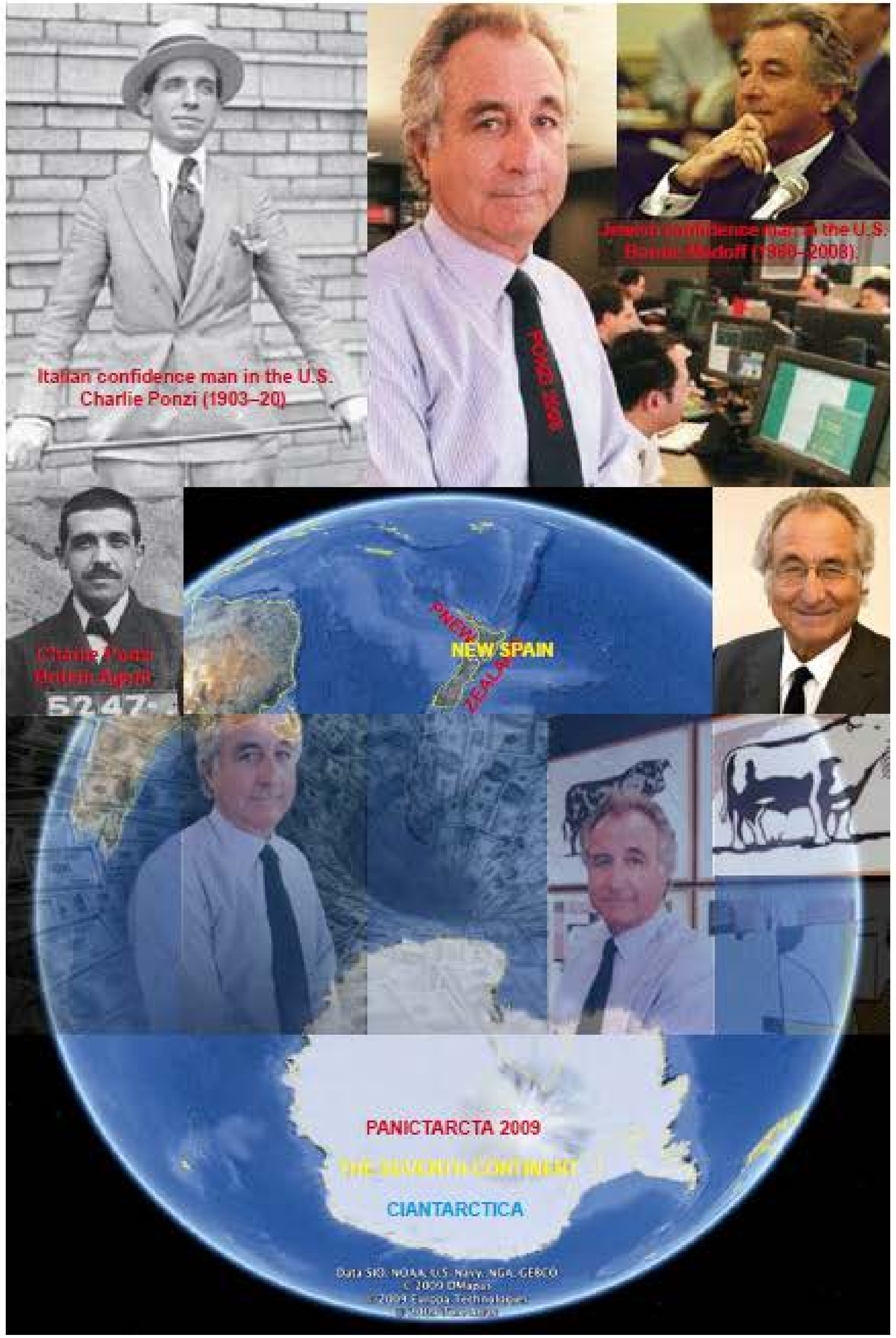
Italian confidence man in the U.S.
Charlie Ponzi (1903–20)
PONZI MAN
Jewish confidence man in the U.S.
Bernie Madoff (1960–2008)
Charlie Ponzi
British Agent
52 47-
NEW ZEALAND
NEW SPAIN
PANICTARCTA 2009
THE SEVENTH CONTINENT
CIANTARCTICA
Data SIO, NOAA, U.S. Navy, NGA, GEBCO
© 2009 DMapas
© 2009 Europa Technologies

Bernie Madoff & Jeffry Picower are such consters but then so is the CIA with Auckland

The Good | Ilinois Republican Rep. Ray LaHood: “Rahm Emanuel legitimately can be called the golden boy of the Democratic Party today. He recruited the right candidates, found the money, funded them, and provided issues for them. Rahm did what no one else could do in seven cycles.”

Open Secrets: “Rahm Emanuel was the top House recipient in the 2008 election cycle of contributions from hedge funds, private equity firms and larger securities/ investment industry.”

The Bad | The Spymaster on the US President, the Irgun and the Stern Gang: “Rahm Emanuel [29 November 1959–] is the Israeli who controls the world. Named after the terrorist in the Irgun in the 1940s, Rahm Emanuel was foremost in planning 9-11. Even the Israelis say he was in charge of it. Rahm(bo) Emanuel is now the White House Chief of Staff, so it's understandable that it's career suicide in US Intelligence and US Armed Forces to mention 9-11 and Israel(is) in the same breath.

“The Americans don't realise that their presidents are British mind-controlled. I mean the business of appointing a Jew, and the Jew Rahm Emanuel puts Obama at the top of British-Israeli Intelligence, and neither of them even changed their names.

“This meant that the Irgun and the Stern Gang won the Israeli War of Independence. They beat the Arabs, America, Britain and Sweden, killing the Swedish diplomat Count Bernadotte (d. 17 September 1948) and American Brigadier General Mickey Marcus (d. 11 June 1948) who built their army.

“He took them from the days of rushing the Arab Legion in frontal assaults, to a co-ordinated successful army. The Israelis killed Mickey Marcus because they wanted no one around to contest ‘the fact’ that they ‘created an army by and for themselves’.

“Mickey Marcus' murder was so shonky it makes the Gaza murders look like an Act of God. The Israeli's also murdered the British Intelligence Undercover. They would have killed Lord Gort (d. 31 March 1946) but he was already dying of cancer.

“It seems to be a case of ‘murder thus’.”

The Ugly | Rahm Emanuel Wikipedia: Rahm Emanuel served as an advisor to Bill Clinton, resigned in 1998, became an investment banker at Wasserstein Perella (now Dresdner Kleinwort), managing director of the Chicago office (1999–2002) and made $16.2 million in 2.5 years. On top of that, President Bill Clinton put Emanuel on the Board of Directors of Freddie Mac. He was paid $31,060 in 2000 and $231,655 in 2001. During this time Freddie Mac was plagued with accounting irregularities, huge campaign contributions, scandals, and failed to investigate these matters. Emanuel then resigned and ran for congress – a blaze of corruption followed him, and a blaze of bankruptcies and bank bailouts followed that.

The Future | Intelligence on Barack Obama: “The plan for Barack Obama is to keep him in for two terms. Most of the changes will occur in the second term. The changes in the first term will still be revolutionary, but minor. Changes in the second term will be radical and revolutionary. Barack Obama is to be named the Commander-in-Chief of the World's Army – beginning at the end of the first/start of second term (Nov. 2013) from where it will be easier to declare war on a pariah state and wipe the floor with them. Anything said about giving the Palestinians a fair go is for the consumption of the Palestinians and not to be taken seriously.”

Israel in Australasia | MICK P: “Israel's plan to take over Australia is still in place. By Feb. 2009, Black Saturday was already a 1-in-a-100-year fire, 209 dead, and 7,000 homeless . . . ‘One man has been charged with arson and police suspect other fires deliberately lit’. The Israelis are going to intensify weather warfare until hundreds are dying in Australia each day. Then they will start with the deserts. They want to bring salt water in from the Indian Ocean, turn the central Australian deserts into orchards, create a huge desalination plant, and become the world's biggest salt producers. From here they will move out to take over the rest of Australia. Then it's onto New Zealand as ‘New Spain’ in preparation for Antarctica.”

"Rahmbo" Emanuel.

"Barack" means 'lucky' in Swahili, Arabic and French. In French it also means 'for the Greater Good' which fits in with the 2007 movie 'Hot Fuzz' and Common Purpose.

In Hebrew "Barack" means 'charisma, divine grace, or divine presence' which should keep the Jews tugging at his coattails.

"Barrack" also means 'able to emerge from dangerous situations unscathed'.

Barack's role is to look like he's putting America back in the black.

And guess who profitted –
Jewish Chicago mobsters you can trust [x] – now White House Chief of Staff, Rahm Emanual,
who dictates to the coffee brown orator, Barack Hussein Obama,
with all the names of the U.S. enemies, so it's a psyops
. . . and as 'QEII's Black Prince',
Madoff's Ponzi scheme helped fund this new Pirate Captain into the power vacuum.

The Queen raids and the Fed pays.

Chicago Jewish big money gangster – profitted from the Wall Street Ponzi scheme.

Queen Elizabeth II's Black Prince – Pirate Captain Renegade.

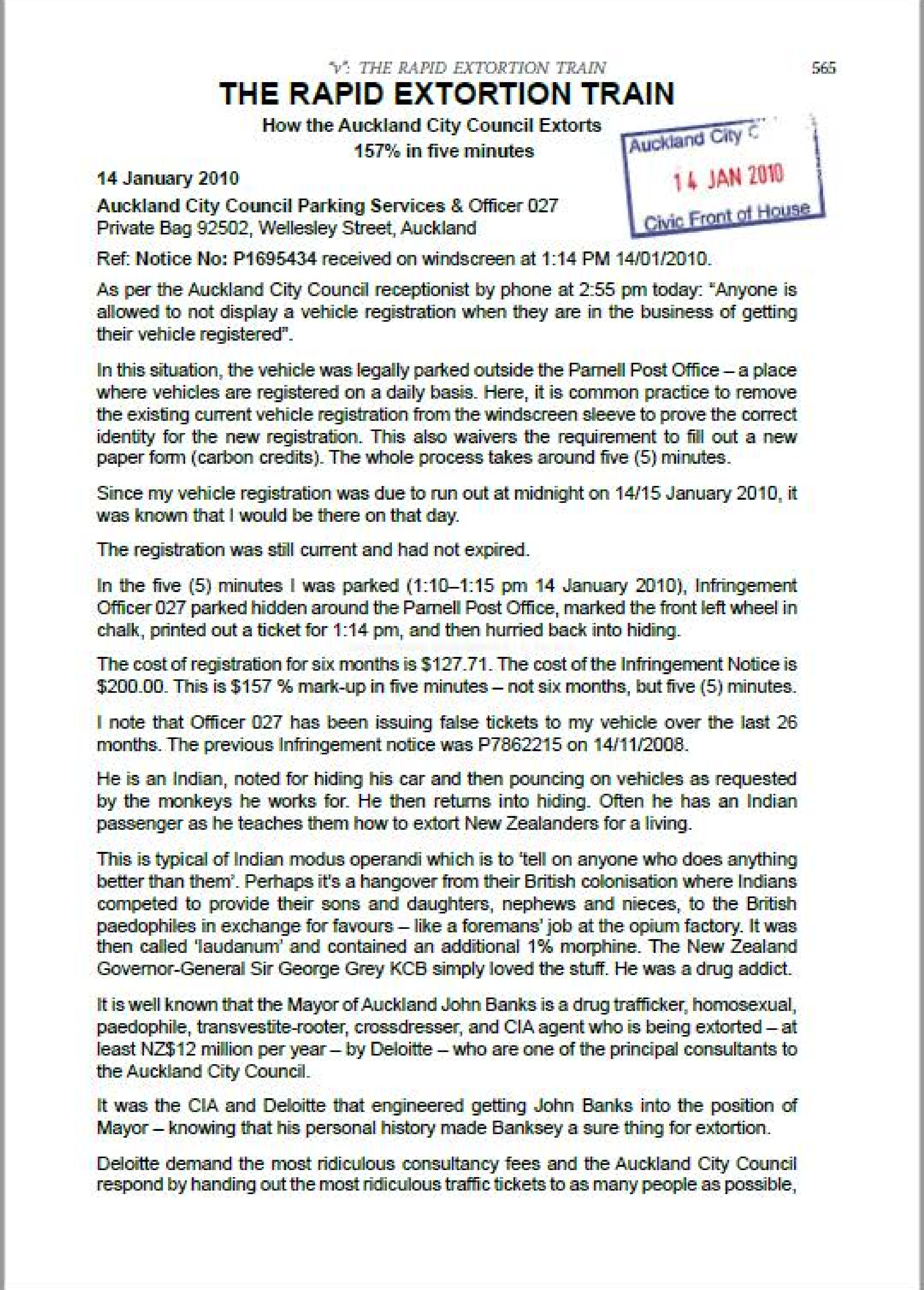

THE RAPID EXTORTION TRAIN

How the Auckland City Council Extorts 157% in five minutes

Auckland City C

14 JAN 2010

Civic Front of House

14 January 2010

Auckland City Council Parking Services & Officer 027
Private Bag 92502, Wellesley Street, Auckland

Ref: **Notice No: P1695434** received on windscreen at 1:14 PM 14/01/2010.

As per the Auckland City Council receptionist by phone at 2:55 pm today: "Anyone is allowed to not display a vehicle registration when they are in the business of getting their vehicle registered".

In this situation, the vehicle was legally parked outside the Parnell Post Office – a place where vehicles are registered on a daily basis. Here, it is common practice to remove the existing current vehicle registration from the windscreen sleeve to prove the correct identity for the new registration. This also waivers the requirement to fill out a new paper form (carbon credits). The whole process takes around five (5) minutes.

Since my vehicle registration was due to run out at midnight on 14/15 January 2010, it was known that I would be there on that day.

The registration was still current and had not expired.

In the five (5) minutes I was parked (1:10–1:15 pm 14 January 2010), Infringement Officer 027 parked hidden around the Parnell Post Office, marked the front left wheel in chalk, printed out a ticket for 1:14 pm, and then hurried back into hiding.

The cost of registration for six months is $127.71. The cost of the Infringement Notice is $200.00. This is $157 % mark-up in five minutes – not six months, but five (5) minutes.

I note that Officer 027 has been issuing false tickets to my vehicle over the last 26 months. The previous Infringement notice was P7862215 on 14/11/2008.

He is an Indian, noted for hiding his car and then pouncing on vehicles as requested by the monkeys he works for. He then returns into hiding. Often he has an Indian passenger as he teaches them how to extort New Zealanders for a living.

This is typical of Indian modus operandi which is to 'tell on anyone who does anything better than them'. Perhaps it's a hangover from their British colonisation where Indians competed to provide their sons and daughters, nephews and nieces, to the British paedophiles in exchange for favours – like a foremans' job at the opium factory. It was then called 'laudanum' and contained an additional 1% morphine. The New Zealand Governor-General Sir George Grey KCB simply loved the stuff. He was a drug addict.

It is well known that the Mayor of Auckland John Banks is a drug trafficker, homosexual, paedophile, transvestite-rooter, crossdresser, and CIA agent who is being extorted – at least NZ$12 million per year – by Deloitte – who are one of the principal consultants to the Auckland City Council.

It was the CIA and Deloitte that engineered getting John Banks into the position of Mayor – knowing that his personal history made Banksey a sure thing for extortion.

Deloitte demand the most ridiculous consultancy fees and the Auckland City Council respond by handing out the most ridiculous traffic tickets to as many people as possible, in the shortest amount of time, specialising in using staff whose English is not capable of meaningful reply. This engineers ACC protectionism.

In real terms, the cost of these fake Infringement Notices is 1.5 times the compliance cost of the item over six months – in just 5 minutes. This is ludicrous secondhand extortion.

This practice of paedophile to paedophile – John Banks to Indian 027 – is done to pay for the Deloitte CIA extortion of Mayor John Banks via the Auckland City Council.

As you can see by the Vehicle Registration, it was current and never lapsed. The new Registration was obtained at exactly the same minute as the Indian Infringement Notice, and the Infringement Notice, like their complicit paedophilia, is illegal.

Take notice that the Auckland City Council Infringement Notice is cancelled.

I'm sure that after multiple delays upon delays of 30 days and more, and possibly even manufacturing the use of your legal team, you will place in writing that your 14 January 2010 Auckland City Council Infringement Notice P1695434 has been cancelled.

Should you show any concern over your Mayor's private life/ extortion, please do not hesitate to attach a request for this information along with your cancellation.

Yours sincerely,

JGHallett

Joseph Gregory Hallett
for HD Trading Trust
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland
Gmail: princeofnewspain

Attached:
1. NZ Post receipt for ongoing registration.
2. Ongoing current vehicle registrations.
3. Infringement Notice
   (at same minute as Registration receipt).

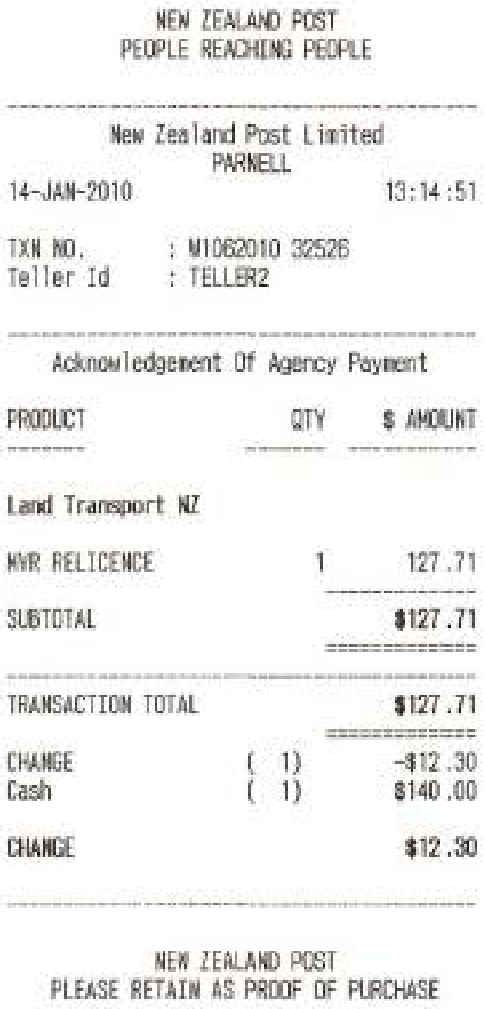

```
               NEW ZEALAND POST
             PEOPLE REACHING PEOPLE

-----------------------------------------------
           New Zealand Post Limited
                   PARNELL
14-JAN-2010                          13:14 :51

TXN NO.      : M1062010 32526
Teller Id    : TELLER2

-----------------------------------------------
       Acknowledgement Of Agency Payment

PRODUCT                     QTY      $ AMOUNT
-------                     ---      --------

Land Transport NZ

MVR RELICENCE                 1        127.71
                                   ----------
SUBTOTAL                              $127.71
                                   ==========

TRANSACTION TOTAL                     $127.71
                                   ==========
CHANGE                    ( 1)        -$12.30
Cash                      ( 1)        $140.00

CHANGE                                 $12.30

-----------------------------------------------

               NEW ZEALAND POST
         PLEASE RETAIN AS PROOF OF PURCHASE
```

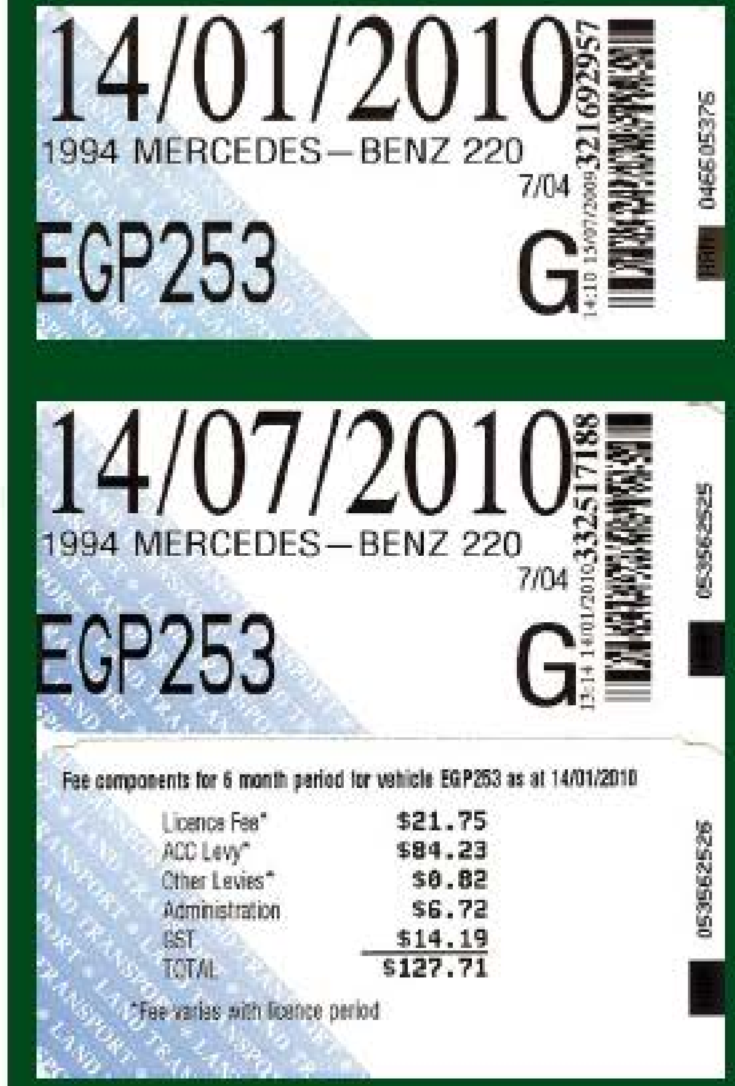

14/01/2010
1994 MERCEDES—BENZ 220
7/04
EGP253
G
14:10 13/07/2009 321692957
0466 05376

14/07/2010
1994 MERCEDES—BENZ 220
7/04
EGP253
G
13:14 14/01/2010 332517188
053562525

Fee components for 6 month period for vehicle EGP253 as at 14/01/2010

Licence Fee*	$21.75
ACC Levy*	$84.23
Other Levies*	$0.82
Administration	$6.72
GST	$14.19
TOTAL	$127.71

*Fee varies with licence period

053562526

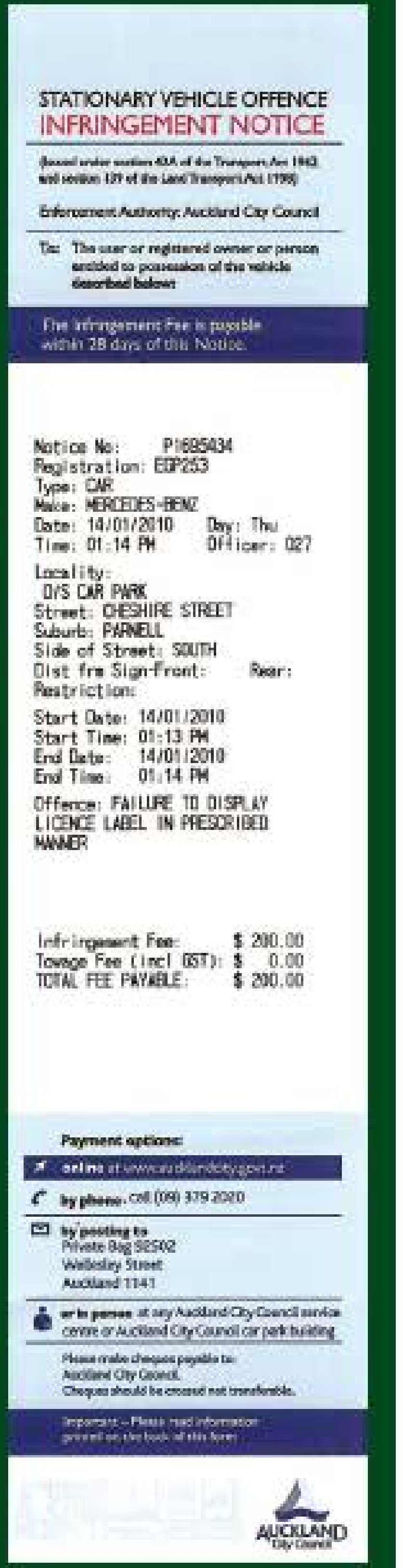

STATIONARY VEHICLE OFFENCE
INFRINGEMENT NOTICE

Enforcement Authority: Auckland City Council

To: The user or registered owner or person entitled to possession of the vehicle described below:

The Infringement Fee is payable within 28 days of this Notice.

Notice No: P1695434
Registration: EGP253
Type: CAR
Make: MERCEDES-BENZ
Date: 14/01/2010 Day: Thu
Time: 01:14 PM Officer: 027

Locality:
D/S CAR PARK
Street: CHESHIRE STREET
Suburb: PARNELL
Side of Street: SOUTH
Dist frm Sign-Front: Rear:
Restriction:

Start Date: 14/01/2010
Start Time: 01:13 PM
End Date: 14/01/2010
End Time: 01:14 PM

Offence: FAILURE TO DISPLAY LICENCE LABEL IN PRESCRIBED MANNER

Infringement Fee:	$ 200.00
Towage Fee (incl GST):	$ 0.00
TOTAL FEE PAYABLE:	$ 200.00

Payment options:
online at www.aucklandcity.govt.nz
by phone: call (09) 379 2020
by posting to
Private Bag 92502
Wellesley Street
Auckland 1141
or in person at any Auckland City Council service centre or Auckland City Council car park building

Please make cheques payable to:
Auckland City Council.
Cheques should be crossed not transferable.

Important – Please read information printed on the back of this form

AUCKLAND City Council

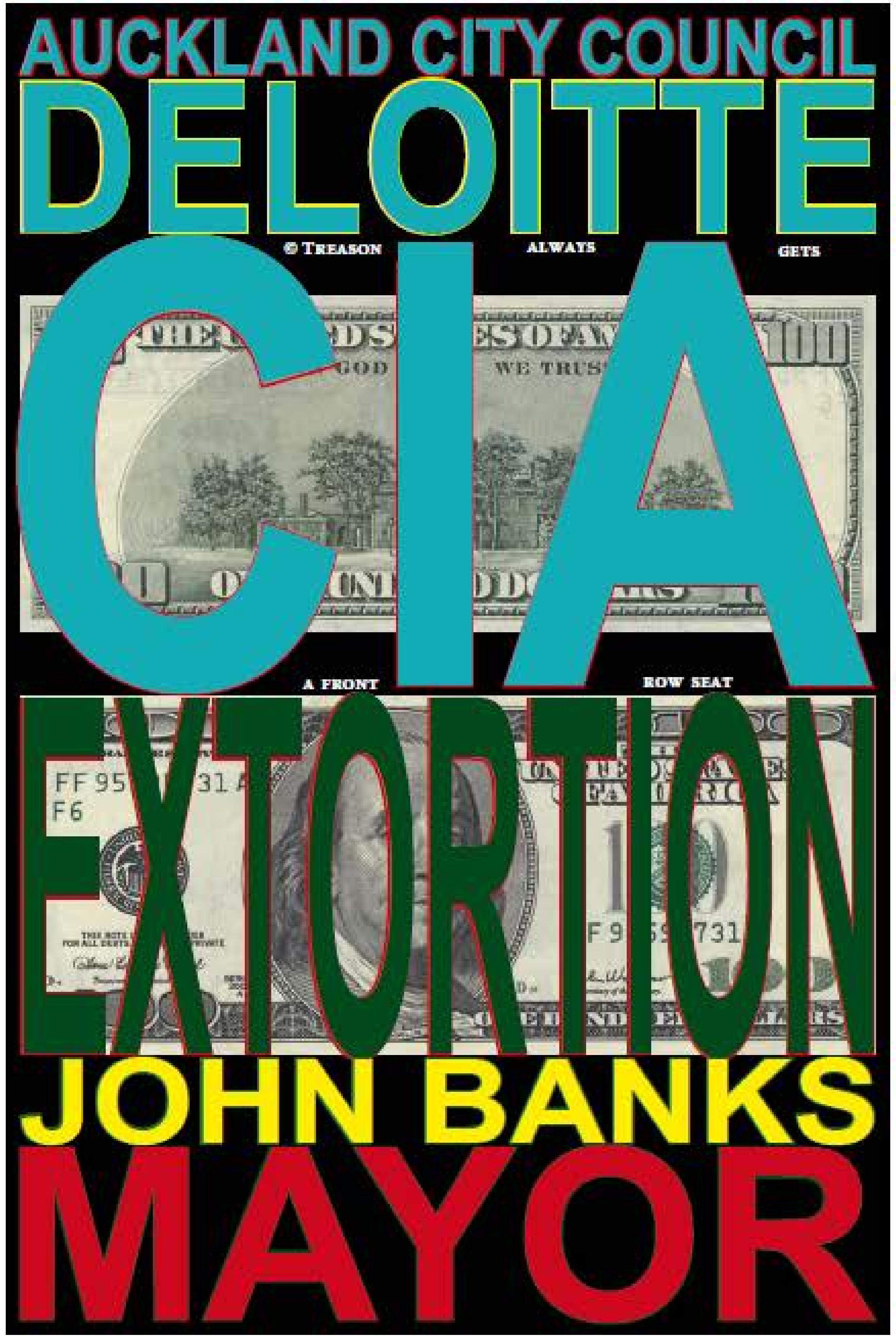

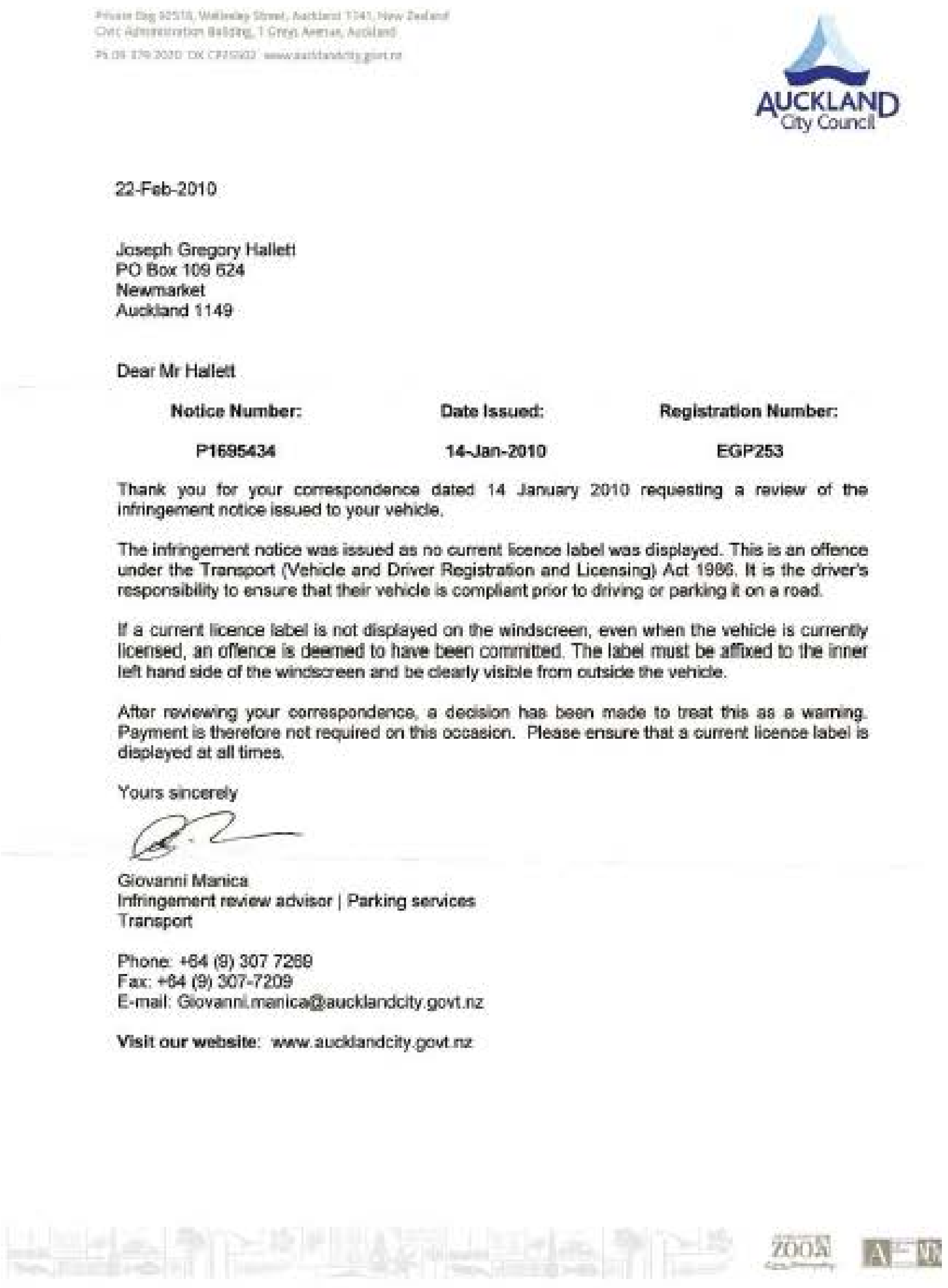

Private Bag 92516, Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141, New Zealand
Civic Administration Building, 1 Greys Avenue, Auckland
Ph 09 379 2020 DX CP33503 www.aucklandcity.govt.nz

AUCKLAND
City Council

22-Feb-2010

Joseph Gregory Hallett
PO Box 109 624
Newmarket
Auckland 1149

Dear Mr Hallett

Notice Number:	Date Issued:	Registration Number:
P1695434	14-Jan-2010	EGP253

Thank you for your correspondence dated 14 January 2010 requesting a review of the infringement notice issued to your vehicle.

The infringement notice was issued as no current licence label was displayed. This is an offence under the Transport (Vehicle and Driver Registration and Licensing) Act 1986. It is the driver's responsibility to ensure that their vehicle is compliant prior to driving or parking it on a road.

If a current licence label is not displayed on the windscreen, even when the vehicle is currently licensed, an offence is deemed to have been committed. The label must be affixed to the inner left hand side of the windscreen and be clearly visible from outside the vehicle.

After reviewing your correspondence, a decision has been made to treat this as a warning. Payment is therefore not required on this occasion. Please ensure that a current licence label is displayed at all times.

Yours sincerely

Giovanni Manica
Infringement review advisor | Parking services
Transport

Phone: +64 (9) 307 7269
Fax: +64 (9) 307-7209
E-mail: Giovanni.manica@aucklandcity.govt.nz

Visit our website: www.aucklandcity.govt.nz

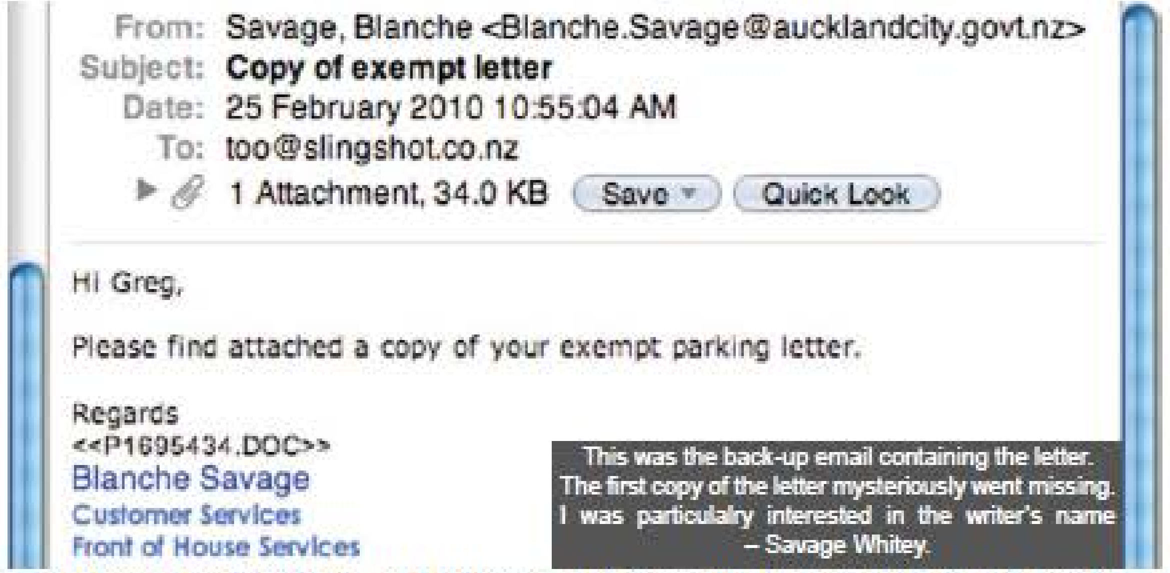

From: Savage, Blanche <Blanche.Savage@aucklandcity.govt.nz>
Subject: **Copy of exempt letter**
Date: 25 February 2010 10:55:04 AM
To: too@slingshot.co.nz
1 Attachment, 34.0 KB

Hi Greg,

Please find attached a copy of your exempt parking letter.

Regards
<<P1695434.DOC>>
Blanche Savage
Customer Services
Front of House Services

This was the back-up email containing the letter. The first copy of the letter mysteriously went missing. I was particulalry interested in the writer's name – Savage Whitey.

Welcome to Auckland – the Mafia Capital of the Western World's South Pacific

Auckland is the Meth Capital of the world. This could not happen without the complicity of the Police, Lawyers and Mayor. The entire CIA drug takeover of Auckland was organised by Dame Margaret Bazley – a longtime CIA agent, heroin trafficker and murderer.

As of January 2010, all Auckland Transition Agency (ATA) meetings (Auckland SuperCity) are held in secret, not accountable to anyone, and will not accept any submissions.

Early in February 2010, Auckland City Mayor John Banks invited John Tamihere to join the Auckland SuperCity – which is nothing but a collection of old and current drug traffickers – cannabis, heroin, crystal meth, and whatever they could get and sell as a drug.

Lawyer John Tamihere runs the Waipareira Trust with Clint Rickards out of West Auckland. The Waipareira Trust sold all its assets, invested in P, outsourced the cooking of P, then sells it using its new police contacts and protection.

Clint Rickards was the Auckland Area Police Commander charged with rape, also involved in paedophilia, who then became a lawyer whom no one would employ, so he got a job at the Waipareira Trust. Pam Corkery then does TV documentaries on meth, blames it on the Asians, and fails to mention the Waipareira Trust, which she has a close asssociation with.

So when the drug trafficking Mayor of Auckland John Banks invited the meth-manufacturing lawyer John Tamihere, he was actually endorsing maintaining Auckland as:

'The Meth Capital of the World'.[1]

The Mafia Boss Peter Williams QC works on the meth trade at arm's length using his junior lawyer and partner, Heeni 'Prozac' Phillips, who occassionally shags John Tamihere.

When the Auckland 'SuperCity' Council is established by October 2010, the Auckland Transition Agency will be disestablished, so there won't be any body responsible for what was snuck through. The intention of what is snuck through is:

'The CIA owns the Auckland infrastructure, nothing gets done, the rates double, those in control are drug lords, and Auckland is still the meth capital of the world – only permanently so'.

So when the drug lord, CIA agent and paedophile, Auckland Mayor John Banks, is exposed as a paedophile in a response to a traffic ticket, they have to weigh up whether to collect $200, or keep mumsy, take over all of Auckland, and steal back NZ$7b/US$5 billion in assets.

---

[1] Others say it's Fresno or Central Valley or Taft or Inland Empire or San Diego County, California; Jackson or Jefferson County, Missouri; Seattle or Granite Falls, Washington; Bucks County, Pennsylvania; Philadelphia, Tallahassee, Florida, or Japan.

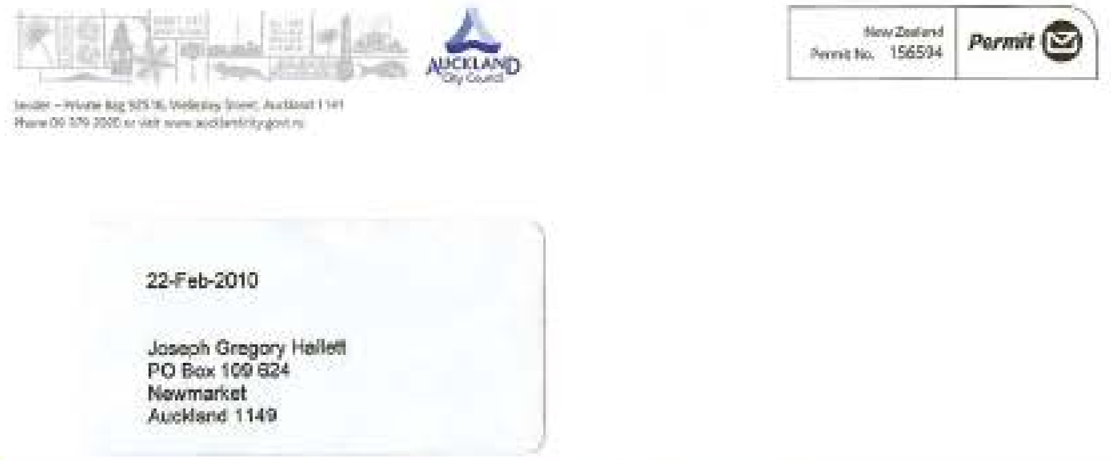
AUCKLAND
City Council
New Zealand
Permit No. 156534
Permit

22-Feb-2010

Joseph Gregory Hallett
PO Box 109 624
Newmarket
Auckland 1149

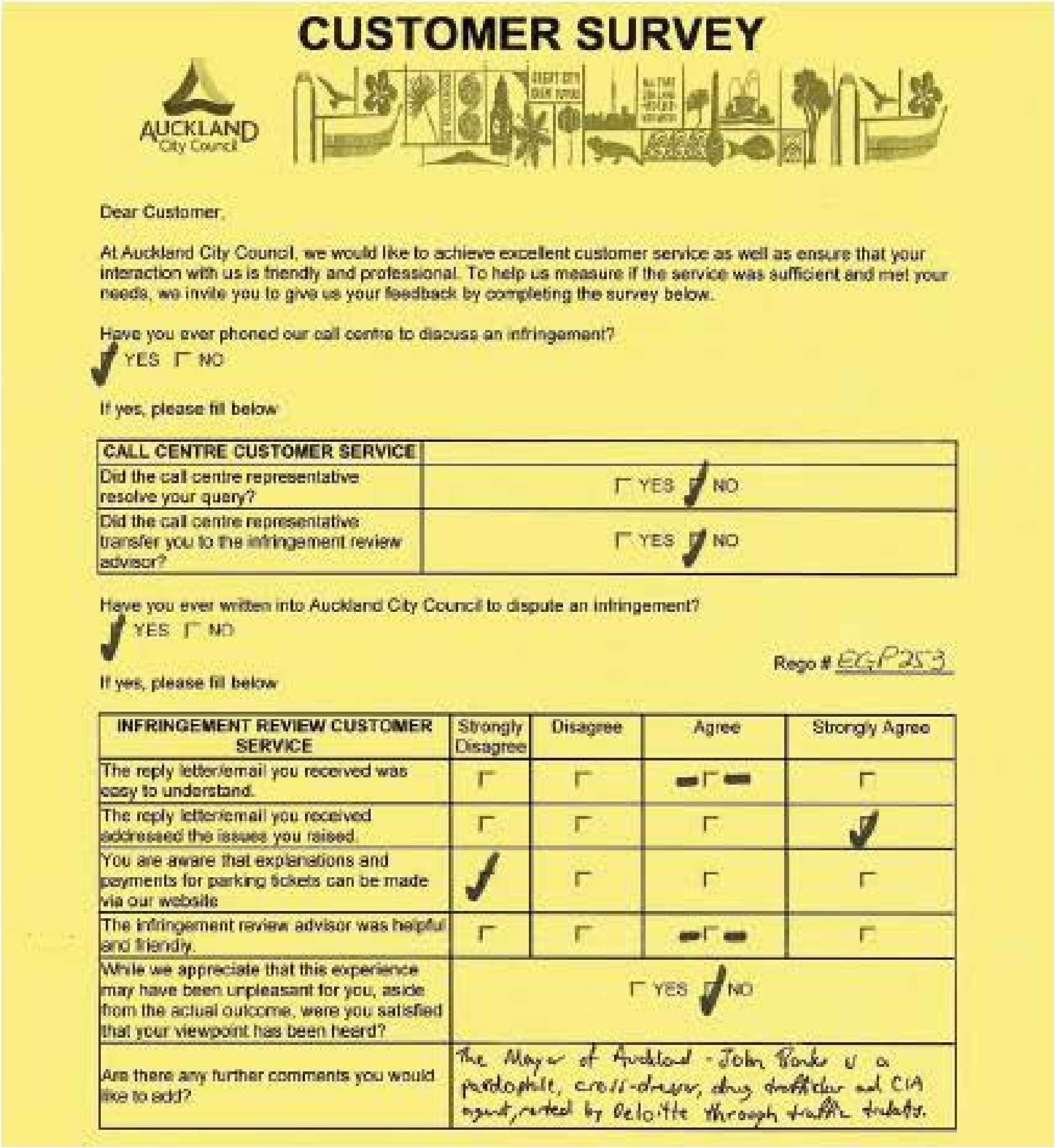
AUCKLAND
City Council

CUSTOMER SURVEY

Dear Customer,

At Auckland City Council, we would like to achieve excellent customer service as well as ensure that your interaction with us is friendly and professional. To help us measure if the service was sufficient and met your needs, we invite you to give us your feedback by completing the survey below.

Have you ever phoned our call centre to discuss an infringement?
☑ YES ☐ NO

If yes, please fill below

CALL CENTRE CUSTOMER SERVICE	
Did the call centre representative resolve your query?	☐ YES ☑ NO
Did the call centre representative transfer you to the infringement review advisor?	☐ YES ☑ NO

Have you ever written into Auckland City Council to dispute an infringement?
☑ YES ☐ NO

Rego # EGP253

If yes, please fill below

INFRINGEMENT REVIEW CUSTOMER SERVICE	Strongly Disagree	Disagree	Agree	Strongly Agree
The reply letter/email you received was easy to understand.	☐	☐	☐	☐
The reply letter/email you received addressed the issues you raised.	☐	☐	☐	☑
You are aware that explanations and payments for parking tickets can be made via our website	☑	☐	☐	☐
The infringement review advisor was helpful and friendly.	☐	☐	☐	☐
While we appreciate that this experience may have been unpleasant for you, aside from the actual outcome, were you satisfied that your viewpoint has been heard?	☐ YES ☑ NO			
Are there any further comments you would like to add?	The Mayor of Auckland - John Banks is a paedophile, cross-dresser, drug trafficker and CIA agent, rorted by Deloitte through traffic tickets.			

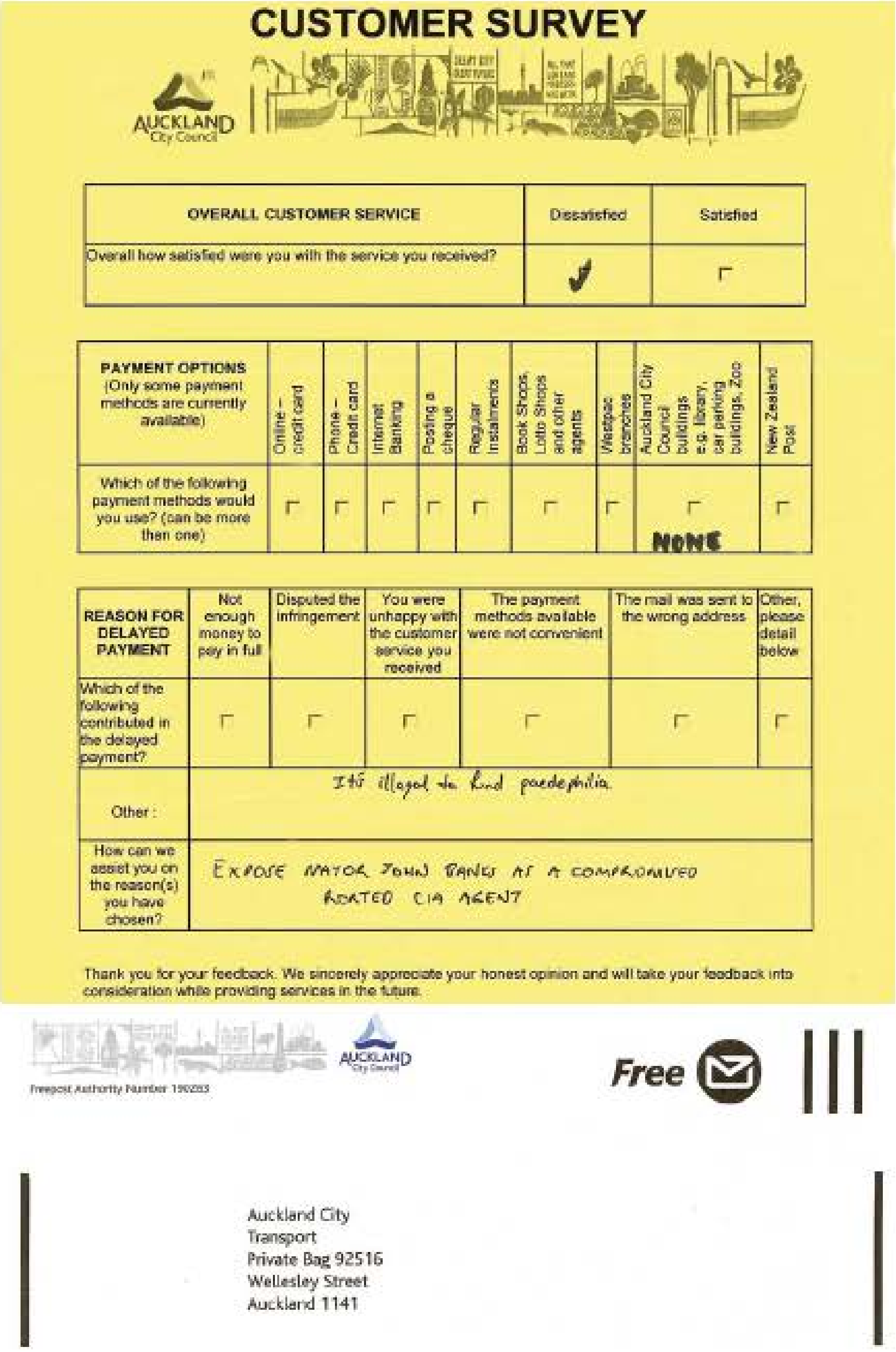

CUSTOMER SURVEY

AUCKLAND
City Council

OVERALL CUSTOMER SERVICE	Dissatisfied	Satisfied
Overall how satisfied were you with the service you received?	☑	☐

PAYMENT OPTIONS (Only some payment methods are currently available)	Online – credit card	Phone – Credit card	Internet Banking	Posting a cheque	Regular instalments	Book Shops, Lotto Shops and other agents	Westpac branches	Auckland City Council buildings e.g. library, car parking buildings, Zoo	New Zealand Post
Which of the following payment methods would you use? (can be more then one)	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐ NONE	☐

REASON FOR DELAYED PAYMENT	Not enough money to pay in full	Disputed the infringement	You were unhappy with the customer service you received	The payment methods available were not convenient	The mail was sent to the wrong address	Other, please detail below
Which of the following contributed in the delayed payment?	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
Other :	It's illegal to hind paedophilia					
How can we assist you on the reason(s) you have chosen?	EXPOSE MAYOR JOHN BANKS AS A COMPROMISED ROOTED CIA AGENT					

Thank you for your feedback. We sincerely appreciate your honest opinion and will take your feedback into consideration while providing services in the future.

AUCKLAND
City Council

Freepost Authority Number 190203

Free

Auckland City
Transport
Private Bag 92516
Wellesley Street
Auckland 1141

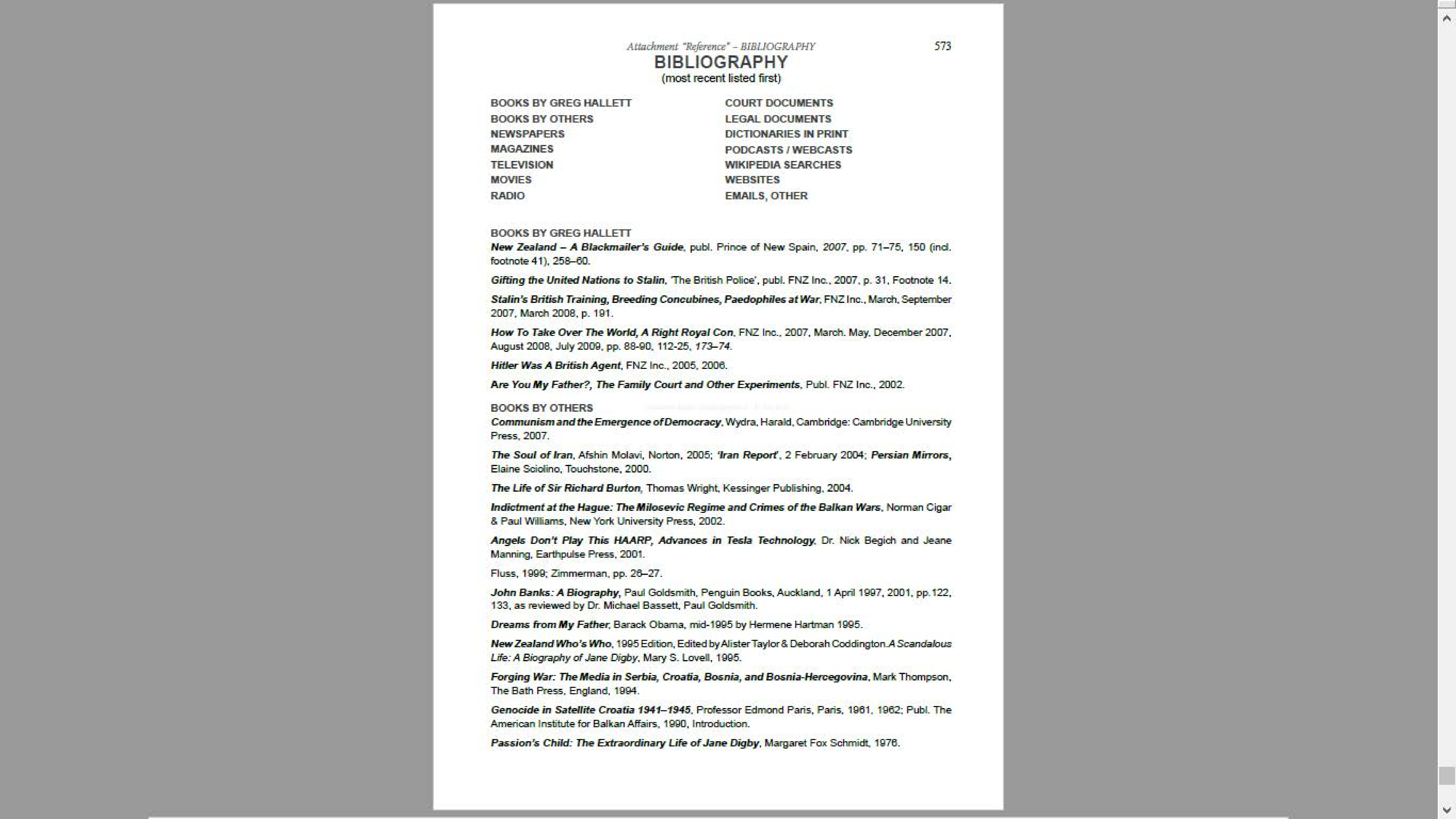

BIBLIOGRAPHY

(most recent listed first)

BOOKS BY GREG HALLETT
BOOKS BY OTHERS
NEWSPAPERS
MAGAZINES
TELEVISION
MOVIES
RADIO
COURT DOCUMENTS
LEGAL DOCUMENTS
DICTIONARIES IN PRINT
PODCASTS / WEBCASTS
WIKIPEDIA SEARCHES
WEBSITES
EMAILS, OTHER

BOOKS BY GREG HALLETT

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, publ. Prince of New Spain, *2007*, pp. 71–75, 150 (incl. footnote 41), 258–60.

Gifting the United Nations to Stalin, 'The British Police', publ. FNZ Inc., 2007, p. 31, Footnote 14.

Stalin's British Training, Breeding Concubines, Paedophiles at War, FNZ Inc., March, September 2007, March 2008, p. 191.

How To Take Over The World, A Right Royal Con, FNZ Inc., 2007, March. May, December 2007, August 2008, July 2009, pp. 88-90, 112-25, *173–74*.

Hitler Was A British Agent, FNZ Inc., 2005, 2006.

Are You My Father?, The Family Court and Other Experiments, Publ. FNZ Inc., 2002.

BOOKS BY OTHERS

Communism and the Emergence of Democracy, Wydra, Harald, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2007.

The Soul of Iran, Afshin Molavi, Norton, 2005; ***'Iran Report'***, 2 February 2004; ***Persian Mirrors***, Elaine Sciolino, Touchstone, 2000.

The Life of Sir Richard Burton, Thomas Wright, Kessinger Publishing, 2004.

Indictment at the Hague: The Milosevic Regime and Crimes of the Balkan Wars, Norman Cigar & Paul Williams, New York University Press, 2002.

Angels Don't Play This HAARP, Advances in Tesla Technology, Dr. Nick Begich and Jeane Manning, Earthpulse Press, 2001.

Fluss, 1999; Zimmerman, pp. 26–27.

John Banks: A Biography, Paul Goldsmith, Penguin Books, Auckland, 1 April 1997, 2001, pp.122, 133, as reviewed by Dr. Michael Bassett, Paul Goldsmith.

Dreams from My Father, Barack Obama, mid-1995 by Hermene Hartman 1995.

New Zealand Who's Who, 1995 Edition, Edited by Alister Taylor & Deborah Coddington.*A Scandalous Life: A Biography of Jane Digby*, Mary S. Lovell, 1995.

Forging War: The Media in Serbia, Croatia, Bosnia, and Bosnia-Hercegovina, Mark Thompson, The Bath Press, England, 1994.

Genocide in Satellite Croatia 1941–1945, Professor Edmond Paris, Paris, 1961, 1962; Publ. The American Institute for Balkan Affairs, 1990, Introduction.

Passion's Child: The Extraordinary Life of Jane Digby, Margaret Fox Schmidt, 1976.

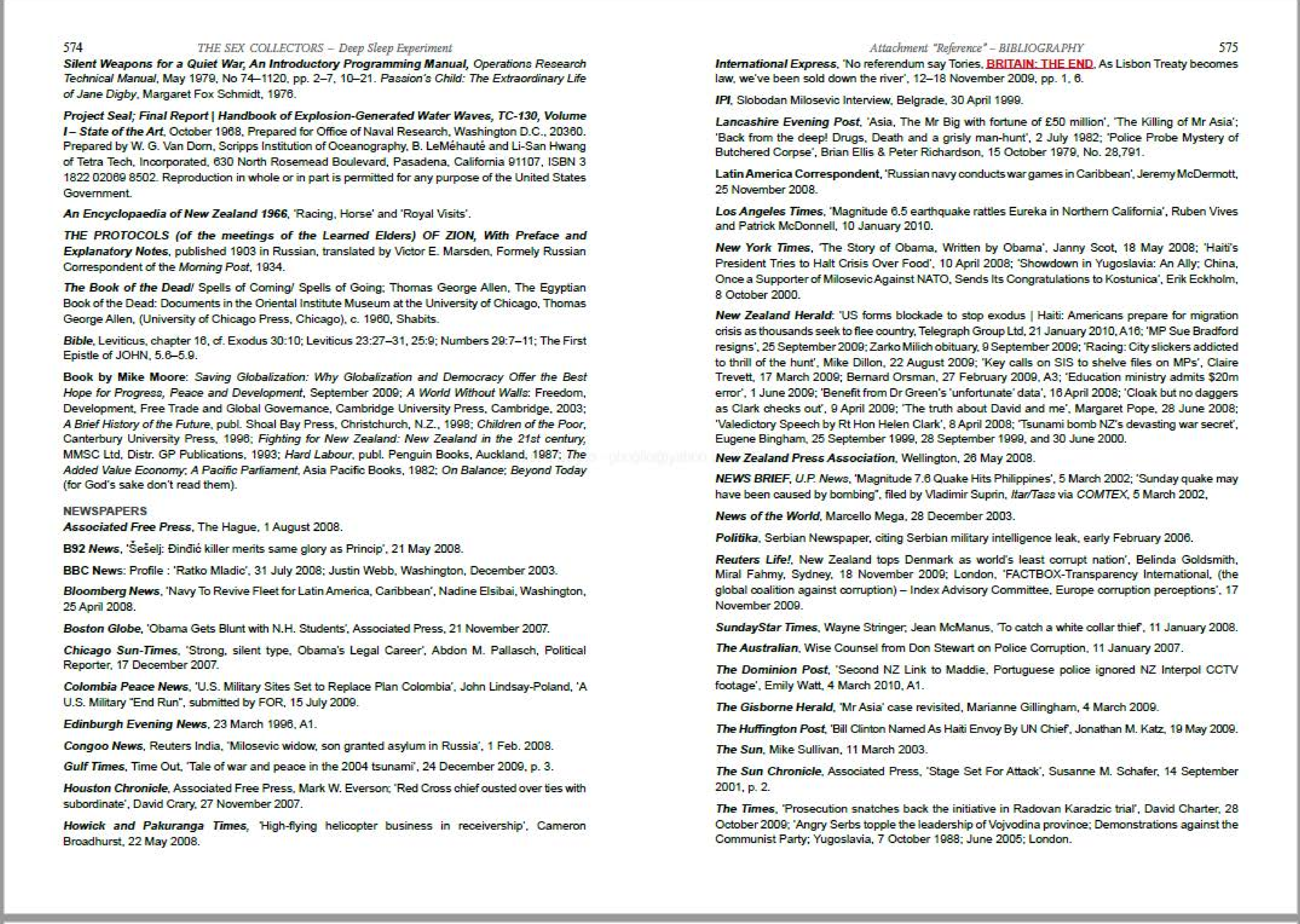

Silent Weapons for a Quiet War, An Introductory Programming Manual, *Operations Research Technical Manual*, May 1979, No 74–1120, pp. 2–7, 10–21. *Passion's Child: The Extraordinary Life of Jane Digby*, Margaret Fox Schmidt, 1976.

Project Seal; Final Report | Handbook of Explosion-Generated Water Waves, TC-130, Volume I – State of the Art, October 1968, Prepared for Office of Naval Research, Washington D.C., 20360. Prepared by W. G. Van Dorn, Scripps Institution of Oceanography, B. LeMéhauté and Li-San Hwang of Tetra Tech, Incorporated, 630 North Rosemead Boulevard, Pasadena, California 91107, ISBN 3 1822 02069 8502. Reproduction in whole or in part is permitted for any purpose of the United States Government.

An Encyclopaedia of New Zealand 1966, 'Racing, Horse' and 'Royal Visits'.

THE PROTOCOLS (of the meetings of the Learned Elders) OF ZION, With Preface and Explanatory Notes, published 1903 in Russian, translated by Victor E. Marsden, Formely Russian Correspondent of the *Morning Post*, 1934.

The Book of the Dead/ Spells of Coming/ Spells of Going; Thomas George Allen, The Egyptian Book of the Dead: Documents in the Oriental Institute Museum at the University of Chicago, Thomas George Allen, (University of Chicago Press, Chicago), c. 1960, Shabits.

Bible, Leviticus, chapter 16, cf. Exodus 30:10; Leviticus 23:27–31, 25:9; Numbers 29:7–11; The First Epistle of JOHN, 5.6–5.9.

Book by Mike Moore: *Saving Globalization: Why Globalization and Democracy Offer the Best Hope for Progress, Peace and Development*, September 2009; *A World Without Walls*: Freedom, Development, Free Trade and Global Governance, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2003; *A Brief History of the Future*, publ. Shoal Bay Press, Christchurch, N.Z., 1998; *Children of the Poor*, Canterbury University Press, 1996; *Fighting for New Zealand: New Zealand in the 21st century*, MMSC Ltd, Distr. GP Publications, 1993; *Hard Labour*, publ. Penguin Books, Auckland, 1987; *The Added Value Economy*; *A Pacific Parliament*, Asia Pacific Books, 1982; *On Balance*; *Beyond Today* (for God's sake don't read them).

NEWSPAPERS

Associated Free Press, The Hague, 1 August 2008.

B92 News, 'Šešelj: Đinđić killer merits same glory as Princip', 21 May 2008.

BBC News: Profile : 'Ratko Mladic', 31 July 2008; Justin Webb, Washington, December 2003.

Bloomberg News, 'Navy To Revive Fleet for Latin America, Caribbean', Nadine Elsibai, Washington, 25 April 2008.

Boston Globe, 'Obama Gets Blunt with N.H. Students', Associated Press, 21 November 2007.

Chicago Sun-Times, 'Strong, silent type, Obama's Legal Career', Abdon M. Pallasch, Political Reporter, 17 December 2007.

Colombia Peace News, 'U.S. Military Sites Set to Replace Plan Colombia', John Lindsay-Poland, 'A U.S. Military "End Run", submitted by FOR, 15 July 2009.

Edinburgh Evening News, 23 March 1996, A1.

Congoo News, Reuters India, 'Milosevic widow, son granted asylum in Russia', 1 Feb. 2008.

Gulf Times, Time Out, 'Tale of war and peace in the 2004 tsunami', 24 December 2009, p. 3.

Houston Chronicle, Associated Free Press, Mark W. Everson; 'Red Cross chief ousted over ties with subordinate', David Crary, 27 November 2007.

Howick and Pakuranga Times, 'High-flying helicopter business in receivership', Cameron Broadhurst, 22 May 2008.

International Express, 'No referendum say Tories, BRITAIN: THE END, As Lisbon Treaty becomes law, we've been sold down the river', 12–18 November 2009, pp. 1, 6.

IPI, Slobodan Milosevic Interview, Belgrade, 30 April 1999.

Lancashire Evening Post, 'Asia, The Mr Big with fortune of £50 million', 'The Killing of Mr Asia'; 'Back from the deep! Drugs, Death and a grisly man-hunt', 2 July 1982; 'Police Probe Mystery of Butchered Corpse', Brian Ellis & Peter Richardson, 15 October 1979, No. 28,791.

Latin America Correspondent, 'Russian navy conducts war games in Caribbean', Jeremy McDermott, 25 November 2008.

Los Angeles Times, 'Magnitude 6.5 earthquake rattles Eureka in Northern California', Ruben Vives and Patrick McDonnell, 10 January 2010.

New York Times, 'The Story of Obama, Written by Obama', Janny Scot, 18 May 2008; 'Haiti's President Tries to Halt Crisis Over Food', 10 April 2008; 'Showdown in Yugoslavia: An Ally; China, Once a Supporter of Milosevic Against NATO, Sends Its Congratulations to Kostunica', Erik Eckholm, 8 October 2000.

New Zealand Herald: 'US forms blockade to stop exodus | Haiti: Americans prepare for migration crisis as thousands seek to flee country, Telegraph Group Ltd, 21 January 2010, A16; 'MP Sue Bradford resigns', 25 September 2009; Zarko Milich obituary, 9 September 2009; 'Racing: City slickers addicted to thrill of the hunt', Mike Dillon, 22 August 2009; 'Key calls on SIS to shelve files on MPs', Claire Trevett, 17 March 2009; Bernard Orsman, 27 February 2009, A3; 'Education ministry admits $20m error', 1 June 2009; 'Benefit from Dr Green's 'unfortunate' data', 16 April 2008; 'Cloak but no daggers as Clark checks out', 9 April 2009; 'The truth about David and me', Margaret Pope, 28 June 2008; 'Valedictory Speech by Rt Hon Helen Clark', 8 April 2008; 'Tsunami bomb NZ's devasting war secret', Eugene Bingham, 25 September 1999, 28 September 1999, and 30 June 2000.

New Zealand Press Association, Wellington, 26 May 2008.

NEWS BRIEF, *U.P. News*, 'Magnitude 7.6 Quake Hits Philippines', 5 March 2002; 'Sunday quake may have been caused by bombing", filed by Vladimir Suprin, *Itar/Tass* via *COMTEX*, 5 March 2002,

News of the World, Marcello Mega, 28 December 2003.

Politika, Serbian Newspaper, citing Serbian military intelligence leak, early February 2006.

Reuters Life!, New Zealand tops Denmark as world's least corrupt nation', Belinda Goldsmith, Miral Fahmy, Sydney, 18 November 2009; London, 'FACTBOX-Transparency International, (the global coalition against corruption) – Index Advisory Committee, Europe corruption perceptions', 17 November 2009.

SundayStar Times, Wayne Stringer; Jean McManus, 'To catch a white collar thief', 11 January 2008.

The Australian, Wise Counsel from Don Stewart on Police Corruption, 11 January 2007.

The Dominion Post, 'Second NZ Link to Maddie, Portuguese police ignored NZ Interpol CCTV footage', Emily Watt, 4 March 2010, A1.

The Gisborne Herald, 'Mr Asia' case revisited, Marianne Gillingham, 4 March 2009.

The Huffington Post, 'Bill Clinton Named As Haiti Envoy By UN Chief', Jonathan M. Katz, 19 May 2009.

The Sun, Mike Sullivan, 11 March 2003.

The Sun Chronicle, Associated Press, 'Stage Set For Attack', Susanne M. Schafer, 14 September 2001, p. 2.

The Times, 'Prosecution snatches back the initiative in Radovan Karadzic trial', David Charter, 28 October 2009; 'Angry Serbs topple the leadership of Vojvodina province; Demonstrations against the Communist Party; Yugoslavia, 7 October 1988; June 2005; London.

The Wall Street Journal, 'Last year, ExxonMobil donated $7 million to a grab-bag of public policy institutes, including . . . Transparency International', Bret Stephens; 'Climategate: Follow the Money', 2 Dec. 2009, p. 14.

***TIME* Foreign News**, 'Rumbles In the Jungle', Anthony Spaeth, 25 February 2002; 'Tito's Yugoslavia', Stoyan Pribichevich, 22 May 1944.

USA Today, 'Senator calls for changes in Red Cross operations', Bill Nichols, 27 February 2006.

Washington Post, 'Red Cross Gave Ousted Executive $780,000 Deal', Jacqueline L. Salmon, 4 March 2006; Slobodan Milosevic Interview, Belgrade, 16 December 1998.

Weekend Herald (NZ), 'Admired Clark can hold her head high', 24 January 2009, A4.

MAGAZINES

***Investigate* magazine**, '**MissionINCREDIBLE**, Clark tasked to pave the way for World Government', May 2009, pp. 26–33.

The Darling monthly, August 2008, John Banks cover, 'A chat with His Worship, Mayor John Banks QSO', p. 22, '10,000 copies distributed free to homes and businesses in the Newmarket, Parnell, and Remuera with select drops in Kohimarama, Orakei, Mission Bay, St Heliers and Epsom'.

New Idea, '7 Deadly Sins of Leah Panapa'.

Metro magazine, CLARK VS KEY, March 2008, pp. 33, 40.

Journal of American Public Health, 96(1), 126-131, '**Minimum Purchasing Age for Alcohol and Traffic Crash Injuries Among 15- to 19-Year-Olds in New Zealand**', Kypros Kypri, Robert B. Voas, John D. Langley, Shaun C.R. Stephenson, Dorothy J. Begg, A. Scott Tippetts, Gabrielle S. Davie, January 2006; Reprinted in ***Reporter***, newsletter of the International Council on Alcohol, Drugs and Traffic Safety, Winter 2006; and **Statistics New Zealand**, **'Grapes, hops and alcopops'**, page last modified, 16 January 2009.

***Fight Times* e-Magazine**, 'John Hughes, Top Cop, Top Boxer', Dave Cameron, March 2006.

***Uncensored* magazine**, Mikey Havoc's Column: The Snark, 14 January 2006.

Listener, David Lomas, 'The Fall of Mr Asia', 23–29 October 2004, Vol 196 No 3363.

UVS International News Flash, TGR Helicorp Unveils SNARK VTOL UAV, Auckalnd New Zealand - June 4, 2004. ***Gizmag***, 2004.

NBR Personal Investor, 'Wilson Neill failure tops $15m', Nick Stride, *28 June 2002.*

TIME magazine, 'Man of the Year' – Hitler, Stalin, Ayatollah Khomeini, 24 October 1988.

Rolling Stone cover, Peter Frampton, 'Artist Of The Year, 1976'.

The Tatler, 22 June 1938.

TELEVISION

ABC, documentary, 'Churchill's Girl, The life of Pamela Digby, one of the 20th-century's consummate courtesans', 21 June 2007, Greg Hassall, reviewer, smh.com.au.

The Daily Show with Jon Stewart (and Gretchen Peters) 8 June 2009

TV3, Nightline, New Zealand, 8 September 2009, 10.40 pm; 'Underbelly: The Mr Asia Story', 4 March–29 April 2009; 'Inside New Zealand', 28 May 2005; ***TV3 News***, 'Government confirms cut to superannuation fund', 6:51 pm, 11 March 2009; 6 o'clock news, 5 January 2004.

TV1, *News*, 6 pm, 4 November 2009; 'Expose: The Real Mr Asia', 27 October 2004.

CNN, 6 November 2001, Bernadine Healy, 'Red Cross defends handling of Sept. 11 donations'.

BBC News, 23 September 2003; ***British Broadcasting Corporation (BBC)***, *'Death of Yugoslavia'*,1995.

***PBS**, Wide Angle, Milošević and the Media*, 'Part 3: Dictatorship on the Airwaves'.

MOVIES

catch me if you can, starring leonardo dicaprio and tom hanks, 2003.
catch me if you can, greg hallett and ohms tanks, 2009.

Dirty Deeds, starring John Goodman and Sam Neill, 2002.

The Film Archive: Reston's 1971 Fashion Footage. Hotpants, presenting the works of Zarko Milich in association with Sonny Knitwear; Filmed for the 'On Camera' show, 1971.

The Marathon Man, 1976.

RADIO

Peter Schaenk reporting on his radioshow, 28 January 2009.

COURT DOCUMENTS

EDWARD POULTER LEARY V NEW ZEALAND LAW PRACTITIONERS DISCIPLINARY TRIBUNAL HC AK CIV.2006-404-7227 [2007] NZHC 819 (21 August 2007).

Milosevic Trial Transcript, 1 December 2004, p. 34030; 2 October 2002, p. 10722; 27 January 2004, pp. 31577–676; 21 May 2003. P. 20859.

Second Amended Indictment; Case No. IT-99-37-PT; Prosecutor v. Slobodan Milošević, 16 Oct. 2001.

Auckland District Law Society v Leary CA200/86, Court of Appeal, 15 April 1987.

LEGAL DOCUMENTS

Richardson J in *Davies v MOT* [1989] 3 NZLR 300; (1989) 5 CRNZ 371 (CA), p. 4; as cited in High Court Appeals 20 April 2009 – CRI-2008-404-379 & 380, Jurrian Kiewik, Associate, Simpson Grierson for Auckland City Council.

Auckland City Council letter, 24 September 2008, 20 October 2008.

APPLICATION TO CORRECT IRREGULARITIES UNDER (SECTION 78B OF THE SUMMARY PROCEEDINGS ACT 1957), 30 April 2009 x 2.

AUCKLAND CITY COUNCIL DOCUMENTS

2 July 2008, Parking Receipt.

Bus Lane Ticket, 19 September 2008 Bus Lane Ticket and DRIVER DETAILS FORM; 30 September 2008 letter; 1 October 2008 NEW ZEALAND POST REGPOST T&TRACE; 20 October 2008 ACC letter; Infringement Notice [undated]; 12 December 2008 Reminder notice in respect of infringement offence; 12 January 2009 letter and Tax Invoice Statement in favour of Joseph Gregory Hallett; 8–29 February 2008 Driving Sound receipts; 19-20 September 2008 Battery Charger & Battery Receipts.

Taxi Stand Ticket, 14 November 2008: 24 November 2008 letter citing Auckland Mayor John Banks as a paedophile; 15 December 2008 Reminder notice in respect of infringement offence; 16 December 2008 ACC letter advising notice has been cancelled.

High Street Ticket, 11 November 2008: Reminder notice in respect of infringement offence, 11 December 2008; 30 December 2008 letter; 24 November 2008 letter; Affidavit of JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT IN THE DISTRICT COURT OF NEW ZEALAND, AUCKLAND REGISTRY, Defendant, 11 November 2008, as read out Town Crier style in Vulcan Lane . . . "Hear yea, hear yea, hear yea . . . Year and a Day rule . . . Helen Clark can now be charged with murder . . ."; 2 March 2009 ACC letter; 13 March 2009 letter; 13 March 2009 ACC letter; 10 April 2009 NOTICE OF FINE due 7 May 2009.

DICTIONARIES IN PRINT

American Heritage Dictionary, 'Common Law'.

American Heritage New Dictionary of Cultural Literacy, Third Edition, 'Common Law'.

Black's Eight Law Dictionary.

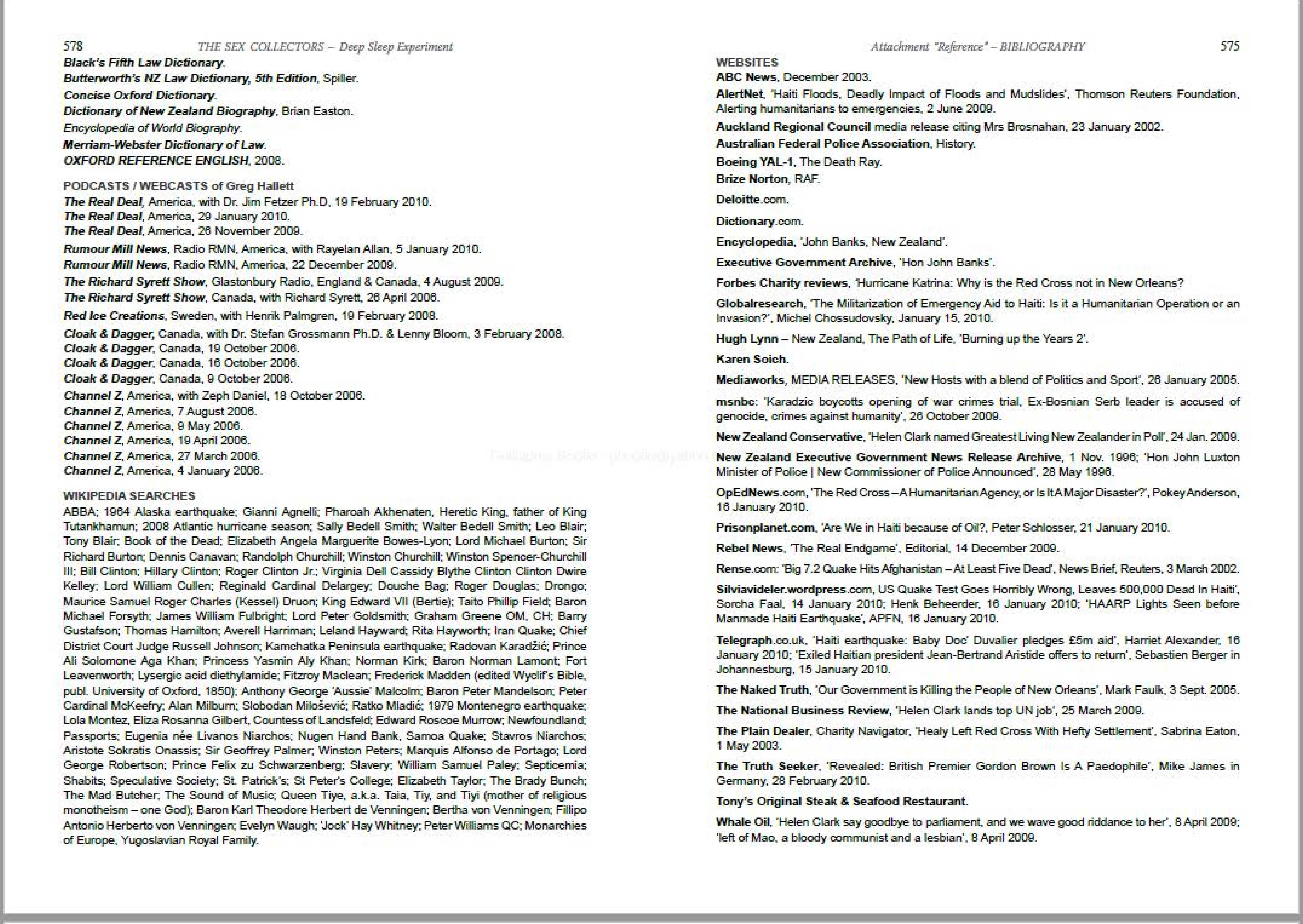

Black's Fifth Law Dictionary.
Butterworth's NZ Law Dictionary, 5th Edition, Spiller.
Concise Oxford Dictionary.
Dictionary of New Zealand Biography, Brian Easton.
Encyclopedia of World Biography.
Merriam-Webster Dictionary of Law.
OXFORD REFERENCE ENGLISH, 2008.

PODCASTS / WEBCASTS of Greg Hallett

The Real Deal, America, with Dr. Jim Fetzer Ph.D, 19 February 2010.
The Real Deal, America, 29 January 2010.
The Real Deal, America, 26 November 2009.
Rumour Mill News, Radio RMN, America, with Rayelan Allan, 5 January 2010.
Rumour Mill News, Radio RMN, America, 22 December 2009.
The Richard Syrett Show, Glastonbury Radio, England & Canada, 4 August 2009.
The Richard Syrett Show, Canada, with Richard Syrett, 26 April 2006.
Red Ice Creations, Sweden, with Henrik Palmgren, 19 February 2008.
Cloak & Dagger, Canada, with Dr. Stefan Grossmann Ph.D. & Lenny Bloom, 3 February 2008.
Cloak & Dagger, Canada, 19 October 2006.
Cloak & Dagger, Canada, 16 October 2006.
Cloak & Dagger, Canada, 9 October 2006.
Channel Z, America, with Zeph Daniel, 18 October 2006.
Channel Z, America, 7 August 2006.
Channel Z, America, 9 May 2006.
Channel Z, America, 19 April 2006.
Channel Z, America, 27 March 2006.
Channel Z, America, 4 January 2006.

WIKIPEDIA SEARCHES

ABBA; 1964 Alaska earthquake; Gianni Agnelli; Pharoah Akhenaten, Heretic King, father of King Tutankhamun; 2008 Atlantic hurricane season; Sally Bedell Smith; Walter Bedell Smith; Leo Blair; Tony Blair; Book of the Dead; Elizabeth Angela Marguerite Bowes-Lyon; Lord Michael Burton; Sir Richard Burton; Dennis Canavan; Randolph Churchill; Winston Churchill; Winston Spencer-Churchill III; Bill Clinton; Hillary Clinton; Roger Clinton Jr.; Virginia Dell Cassidy Blythe Clinton Clinton Dwire Kelley; Lord William Cullen; Reginald Cardinal Delargey; Douche Bag; Roger Douglas; Drongo; Maurice Samuel Roger Charles (Kessel) Druon; King Edward VII (Bertie); Taito Phillip Field; Baron Michael Forsyth; James William Fulbright; Lord Peter Goldsmith; Graham Greene OM, CH; Barry Gustafson; Thomas Hamilton; Averell Harriman; Leland Hayward; Rita Hayworth; Iran Quake; Chief District Court Judge Russell Johnson; Kamchatka Peninsula earthquake; Radovan Karadžić; Prince Ali Solomone Aga Khan; Princess Yasmin Aly Khan; Norman Kirk; Baron Norman Lamont; Fort Leavenworth; Lysergic acid diethylamide; Fitzroy Maclean; Frederick Madden (edited Wyclif's Bible, publ. University of Oxford, 1850); Anthony George 'Aussie' Malcolm; Baron Peter Mandelson; Peter Cardinal McKeefry; Alan Milburn; Slobodan Milošević; Ratko Mladić; 1979 Montenegro earthquake; Lola Montez, Eliza Rosanna Gilbert, Countess of Landsfeld; Edward Roscoe Murrow; Newfoundland; Passports; Eugenia née Livanos Niarchos; Nugen Hand Bank, Samoa Quake; Stavros Niarchos; Aristote Sokratis Onassis; Sir Geoffrey Palmer; Winston Peters; Marquis Alfonso de Portago; Lord George Robertson; Prince Felix zu Schwarzenberg; Slavery; William Samuel Paley; Septicemia; Shabits; Speculative Society; St. Patrick's; St Peter's College; Elizabeth Taylor; The Brady Bunch; The Mad Butcher; The Sound of Music; Queen Tiye, a.k.a. Taia, Tiy, and Tiyi (mother of religious monotheism – one God); Baron Karl Theodore Herbert de Venningen; Bertha von Venningen; Fillipo Antonio Herberto von Venningen; Evelyn Waugh; 'Jock' Hay Whitney; Peter Williams QC; Monarchies of Europe, Yugoslavian Royal Family.

WEBSITES

ABC News, December 2003.

AlertNet, 'Haiti Floods, Deadly Impact of Floods and Mudslides', Thomson Reuters Foundation, Alerting humanitarians to emergencies, 2 June 2009.

Auckland Regional Council media release citing Mrs Brosnahan, 23 January 2002.

Australian Federal Police Association, History.

Boeing YAL-1, The Death Ray.

Brize Norton, RAF.

Deloitte.com.

Dictionary.com.

Encyclopedia, 'John Banks, New Zealand'.

Executive Government Archive, 'Hon John Banks'.

Forbes Charity reviews, 'Hurricane Katrina: Why is the Red Cross not in New Orleans?

Globalresearch, 'The Militarization of Emergency Aid to Haiti: Is it a Humanitarian Operation or an Invasion?', Michel Chossudovsky, January 15, 2010.

Hugh Lynn – New Zealand, The Path of Life, 'Burning up the Years 2'.

Karen Soich.

Mediaworks, MEDIA RELEASES, 'New Hosts with a blend of Politics and Sport', 26 January 2005.

msnbc: 'Karadzic boycotts opening of war crimes trial, Ex-Bosnian Serb leader is accused of genocide, crimes against humanity', 26 October 2009.

New Zealand Conservative, 'Helen Clark named Greatest Living New Zealander in Poll', 24 Jan. 2009.

New Zealand Executive Government News Release Archive, 1 Nov. 1996; 'Hon John Luxton Minister of Police | New Commissioner of Police Announced', 28 May 1996.

OpEdNews.com, 'The Red Cross – A Humanitarian Agency, or Is It A Major Disaster?', Pokey Anderson, 16 January 2010.

Prisonplanet.com, 'Are We in Haiti because of Oil?, Peter Schlosser, 21 January 2010.

Rebel News, 'The Real Endgame', Editorial, 14 December 2009.

Rense.com: 'Big 7.2 Quake Hits Afghanistan – At Least Five Dead', News Brief, Reuters, 3 March 2002.

Silviavideler.wordpress.com, US Quake Test Goes Horribly Wrong, Leaves 500,000 Dead In Haiti', Sorcha Faal, 14 January 2010; Henk Beheerder, 16 January 2010; 'HAARP Lights Seen before Manmade Haiti Earthquake', APFN, 16 January 2010.

Telegraph.co.uk, 'Haiti earthquake: Baby Doc' Duvalier pledges £5m aid', Harriet Alexander, 16 January 2010; 'Exiled Haitian president Jean-Bertrand Aristide offers to return', Sebastien Berger in Johannesburg, 15 January 2010.

The Naked Truth, 'Our Government is Killing the People of New Orleans', Mark Faulk, 3 Sept. 2005.

The National Business Review, 'Helen Clark lands top UN job', 25 March 2009.

The Plain Dealer, Charity Navigator, 'Healy Left Red Cross With Hefty Settlement', Sabrina Eaton, 1 May 2003.

The Truth Seeker, 'Revealed: British Premier Gordon Brown Is A Paedophile', Mike James in Germany, 28 February 2010.

Tony's Original Steak & Seafood Restaurant.

Whale Oil, 'Helen Clark say goodbye to parliament, and we wave good riddance to her', 8 April 2009; 'left of Mao, a bloody communist and a lesbian', 8 April 2009.

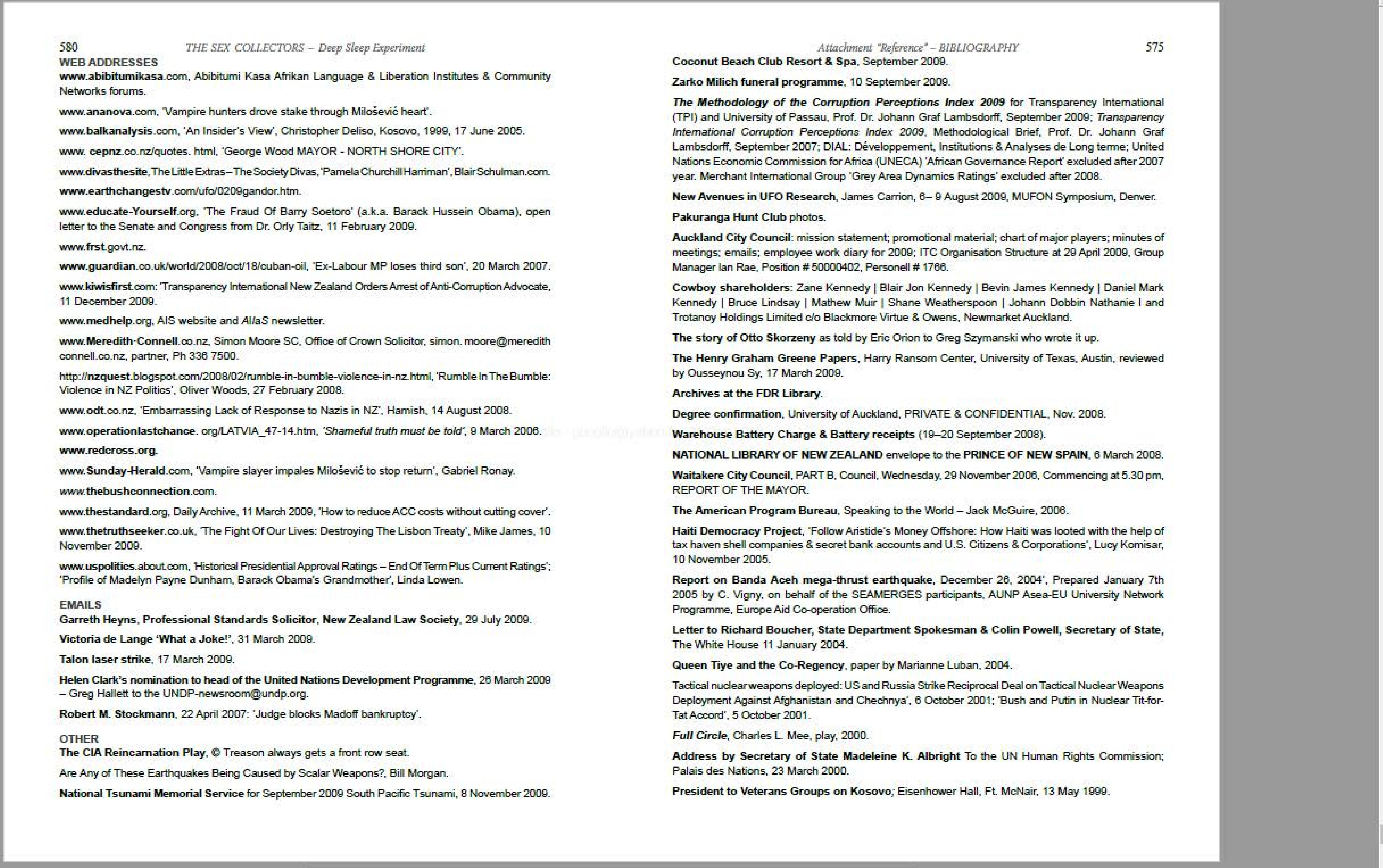

WEB ADDRESSES

www.abibitumikasa.com, Abibitumi Kasa Afrikan Language & Liberation Institutes & Community Networks forums.

www.ananova.com, 'Vampire hunters drove stake through Milošević heart'.

www.balkanalysis.com, 'An Insider's View', Christopher Deliso, Kosovo, 1999, 17 June 2005.

www. **cepnz**.co.nz/quotes. html, 'George Wood MAYOR - NORTH SHORE CITY'.

www.divasthesite, The Little Extras – The Society Divas, 'Pamela Churchill Harriman', Blair Schulman.com.

www.earthchangestv.com/ufo/0209gandor.htm.

www.educate-Yourself.org, 'The Fraud Of Barry Soetoro' (a.k.a. Barack Hussein Obama), open letter to the Senate and Congress from Dr. Orly Taitz, 11 February 2009.

www.frst.govt.nz.

www.guardian.co.uk/world/2008/oct/18/cuban-oil, 'Ex-Labour MP loses third son', 20 March 2007.

www.kiwisfirst.com: 'Transparency International New Zealand Orders Arrest of Anti-Corruption Advocate, 11 December 2009.

www.medhelp.org, AIS website and *AllaS* newsletter.

www.Meredith-Connell.co.nz, Simon Moore SC, Office of Crown Solicitor, simon. moore@meredith connell.co.nz, partner, Ph 336 7500.

http://**nzquest**.blogspot.com/2008/02/rumble-in-bumble-violence-in-nz.html, 'Rumble In The Bumble: Violence in NZ Politics', Oliver Woods, 27 February 2008.

www.odt.co.nz, 'Embarrassing Lack of Response to Nazis in NZ', Hamish, 14 August 2008.

www.operationlastchance. org/LATVIA_47-14.htm, *'Shameful truth must be told'*, 9 March 2006.

www.redcross.org.

www.Sunday-Herald.com, 'Vampire slayer impales Milošević to stop return', Gabriel Ronay.

www..**thebushconnection**.com.

www.thestandard.org, Daily Archive, 11 March 2009, 'How to reduce ACC costs without cutting cover'.

www.thetruthseeker.co.uk, 'The Fight Of Our Lives: Destroying The Lisbon Treaty', Mike James, 10 November 2009.

www.uspolitics.about.com, 'Historical Presidential Approval Ratings – End Of Term Plus Current Ratings'; 'Profile of Madelyn Payne Dunham, Barack Obama's Grandmother', Linda Lowen.

EMAILS

Garreth Heyns, Professional Standards Solicitor, New Zealand Law Society, 29 July 2009.

Victoria de Lange 'What a Joke!', 31 March 2009.

Talon laser strike, 17 March 2009.

Helen Clark's nomination to head of the United Nations Development Programme, 26 March 2009 – Greg Hallett to the UNDP-newsroom@undp.org.

Robert M. Stockmann, 22 April 2007: 'Judge blocks Madoff bankruptcy'.

OTHER

The CIA Reincarnation Play, © Treason always gets a front row seat.

Are Any of These Earthquakes Being Caused by Scalar Weapons?, Bill Morgan.

National Tsunami Memorial Service for September 2009 South Pacific Tsunami, 8 November 2009.

Coconut Beach Club Resort & Spa, September 2009.

Zarko Milich funeral programme, 10 September 2009.

The Methodology of the Corruption Perceptions Index 2009 for Transparency International (TPI) and University of Passau, Prof. Dr. Johann Graf Lambsdorff, September 2009; *Transparency International Corruption Perceptions Index 2009*, Methodological Brief, Prof. Dr. Johann Graf Lambsdorff, September 2007; DIAL: Développement, Institutions & Analyses de Long terme; United Nations Economic Commission for Africa (UNECA) 'African Governance Report' excluded after 2007 year. Merchant International Group 'Grey Area Dynamics Ratings' excluded after 2008.

New Avenues in UFO Research, James Carrion, 6– 9 August 2009, MUFON Symposium, Denver.

Pakuranga Hunt Club photos.

Auckland City Council: mission statement; promotional material; chart of major players; minutes of meetings; emails; employee work diary for 2009; ITC Organisation Structure at 29 April 2009, Group Manager Ian Rae, Position # 50000402, Personell # 1766.

Cowboy shareholders: Zane Kennedy | Blair Jon Kennedy | Bevin James Kennedy | Daniel Mark Kennedy | Bruce Lindsay | Mathew Muir | Shane Weatherspoon | Johann Dobbin Nathanie l and Trotanoy Holdings Limited c/o Blackmore Virtue & Owens, Newmarket Auckland.

The story of Otto Skorzeny as told by Eric Orion to Greg Szymanski who wrote it up.

The Henry Graham Greene Papers, Harry Ransom Center, University of Texas, Austin, reviewed by Ousseynou Sy, 17 March 2009.

Archives at the FDR Library.

Degree confirmation, University of Auckland, PRIVATE & CONFIDENTIAL, Nov. 2008.

Warehouse Battery Charge & Battery receipts (19–20 September 2008).

NATIONAL LIBRARY OF NEW ZEALAND envelope to the **PRINCE OF NEW SPAIN**, 6 March 2008.

Waitakere City Council, PART B, Council, Wednesday, 29 November 2006, Commencing at 5.30 pm, REPORT OF THE MAYOR.

The American Program Bureau, Speaking to the World – Jack McGuire, 2006.

Haiti Democracy Project, 'Follow Aristide's Money Offshore: How Haiti was looted with the help of tax haven shell companies & secret bank accounts and U.S. Citizens & Corporations', Lucy Komisar, 10 November 2005.

Report on Banda Aceh mega-thrust earthquake, December 26, 2004', Prepared January 7th 2005 by C. Vigny, on behalf of the SEAMERGES participants, AUNP Asea-EU University Network Programme, Europe Aid Co-operation Office.

Letter to Richard Boucher, State Department Spokesman & Colin Powell, Secretary of State, The White House 11 January 2004.

Queen Tiye and the Co-Regency, paper by Marianne Luban, 2004.

Tactical nuclear weapons deployed: US and Russia Strike Reciprocal Deal on Tactical Nuclear Weapons Deployment Against Afghanistan and Chechnya', 6 October 2001; 'Bush and Putin in Nuclear Tit-for-Tat Accord', 5 October 2001.

Full Circle, Charles L. Mee, play, 2000.

Address by Secretary of State Madeleine K. Albright To the UN Human Rights Commission; Palais des Nations, 23 March 2000.

President to Veterans Groups on Kosovo; Eisenhower Hall, Ft. McNair, 13 May 1999.

Starr Report, Narrative, I. Nature of President Clinton's Relationship with Monica Lewinsky, 1. Lewinsky 8/6/98 GJ at 31-32, 39-40; DB Photos 0004 (photo of dress).

Earthquake Research Institute (ERI), Harvard CMT; National Earthquake Information Centre (NEIC); 1998.

Global Proliferation of Weapons of Mass Destruction: A Case Study on the Aum Shinrikyo, Senate Government Affairs Permanent Subcommittee on Investigations, October 31, 1995, Staff Statement, 'V. Crimes of the Cult, A. Murder And Mayhem: Precursors To Gas', http://www.fas.org/irp/congress/1995_rpt/aum/part05.htm.

Ohio State University release, 'Former NIH Head Bernadine Healy to be Dean of Medicine', 7 July 1995; Guidestar, fiscal year 2007; Morningstar board profile, 'Executive Profile of Bernadine Healy', 16 Jan. 2010.

Greg Newbold (Sociology Department, University of Canterbury, Christchurch) and Robert Ivory (Department of Accounting and Valuation, Lincoln University, Christchurch, New Zealand): Adapted from a paper presented at the 44th annual meeting of the American Society of Criminology, New Orleans, 4–7 November 1992.

Auckland University Bachelor of Architecture Degree, 8 May 1986.

Debt management of Queen in Right of New Zealand, MS. ROSEMARY BANKS for US$150 million due on 11 January 2011 (signed 25 years prior on 11 January 1986).

The Tabas (Iran) Earthquake of 16 September 1978, Bahram Akasheh and Iraj Eshghi, *Pageoph, Vol. 119*, (1980/81), Birkhäuser Verlag, Basel, Institute of Geophysics, University of Stuttgart, Germany.

The Montenegro, Yugoslavia, earthquake of April 15, 1979: source orientation and strength, David M. Boore, John D. Sims, Hiroo Kanamori and Sam Harding, 5 June 1981.

Serbian: Crnogorski zemljotres iz 1979. godine.

Horst-Wessles-lied, 'Raise the flag' ballad, Nazi Party anthem 1933–45.

Swiss Archives, J.A.C. Allum, Verweser, 'administrator', 1933.

Deutschland über alles, German National anthem since 1922.

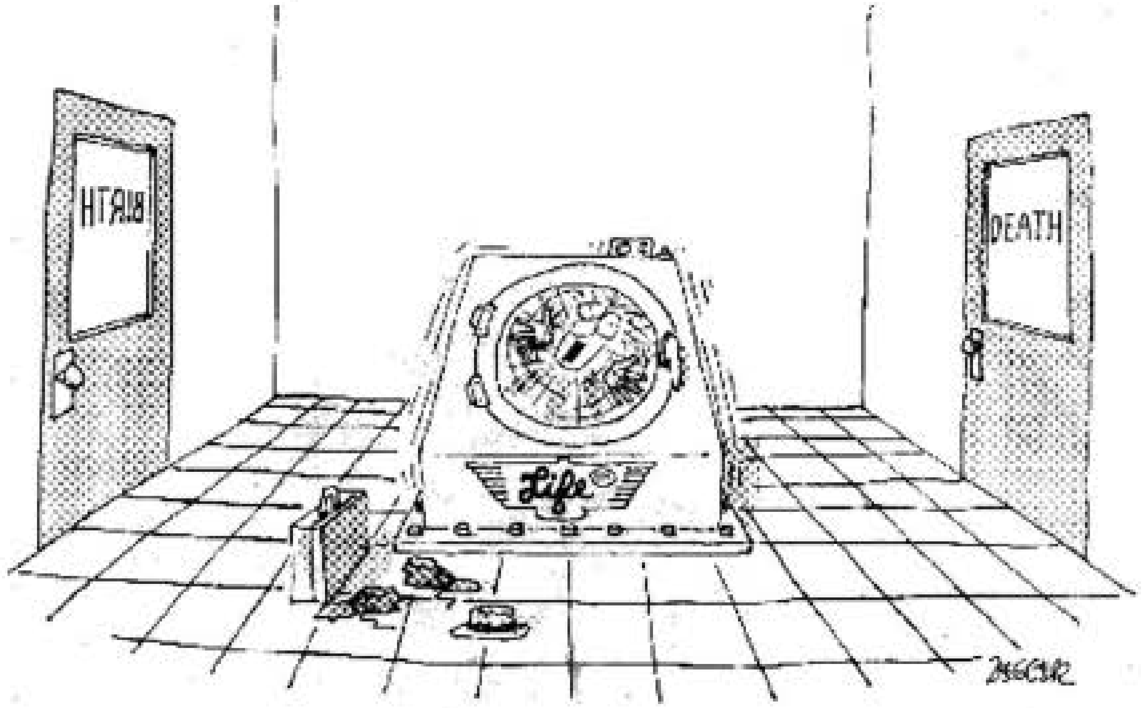

Heroin trafficking is now controlled by NATO with the help of select rock stars with their talking guitars. The Secretary General of NATO is now chosen for his controllablity and compromise – hence their roles in Parliamentary Paedophile Rings, cross-dressing, cocaine addiction, heroin trafficking to the Western World, and ongoing wars wherever there is either heroin, or oil.

All forms of international goverment are now mafia operations, so the worst politicians from each country are selected to join. Just like the mafia, everything is the opposite of what it seems.

Leading Defense Lawyers are running the gangs as bankers and shareholders. Queen's Counsel are heading heroin trafficking syndicates, laundering the drug money as bankers, and subcontracting out the murder of competition and leaks.

Those who commit the biggest crimes are progressively promoted to lead their country. So the fastest way to Prime Minister or President is to try and launch a nuclear strike on your own country, or supply high-end military weapons to rebels where the heroin is seeded. To become a judge, it's laundering heroin money and covering for paedophiles. For Police, it's covering up the heroin imports and selling meth. That gets you off your rape charges and makes you immune from conspiracy to murder.

Mayors are no different. If your father was the leading fence for stolen goods, then you can be a long-running mayor of the largest city. This makes it easier for the CIA to come in and steal $100 million and no one says "boo", because the cross-dressing drug-trafficking homo-Mayor was also the Minister of Police. Education is run on similar grounds, as are State Services, where a history of heroin trafficking and mass murder is a qualification above all others.

During World War II, children were traded between countries, some of noble birth. These were the Illuminati children, de-empathised as contract killers. George Bush, Bill Clinton, and Madeleine Albright are three such people. Bill Clinton was the son of Winston Churchill and Pamela Harriman – his daughter-in-law and brothel madame – who went on to snaffle US$110 million and raise son Prince Billy James Rex into the White house. Bill Clinton, as it turns out, is the grandson of King Edward VII, and both uncle and half-brother to Queen Elizabeth II – who is her own aunt.

President Barack Obama's history is just as confusing, and it seems the CIA have been cloning since 1920 – hence the Frankenstein movie as an Intelligence leak: "Here, this is what we've been up to now". So after all the discussions of whether Obama was born in Hawaii, Kenya, or the States at all, it appears he was born in Kansas, as was his mother – and is American Military property.

Because the Police and Military Intelligence are involved in so many civilian murders, very few of them ever get solved. The murder of Paul White is a case solved here, that involved banks, their conmen, the military, and police.

With a clear point of view from participants, operatives, witnesses, and the deathbed confessions of government contract killers, the myths evapourate and the finger-pointing can begin. It seems to be moving more and more in the direction of governments run as a mafia operation, and your taxes funding your own demise, with no service to back it – making you an impoverish voided slave, suspicious and anti-patriotic.

A favourite form of governance is NO RELIEF for those who expose the crimes of government and judiciary. This comes in the form of blacklisting, boilerplating, hobbling, poisoning, car accidents, and attempted murders – successful or otherwise.

Despite all this, security is still really lax, and relies most on the fog of ignorance portrayed nightly through false media readings by talking hairdos projected into your living room as award winning news. Then we find that the real news is the news reader's drug use, homosex, silent witness to a murder or two, and their bent police parents shagging transvestites in public toilets.

Despite all this, somehow I've managed to walk into a courtroom, project myself as a lawyer, and win cases for clients against those same crooked crime-creating cops, and I still expose the Mayor as a cross-dressing paedophile to get off traffic tickets.

The biggest case I won was out of courts, on radio in America, when I exposed a Queen's Counsel as the Mafia Boss of a heroin trafficking ring. He then retired on TV three hours before the second interview.

ISBN 978-0-473-15049-5
9 780473 150495
NONFICTION

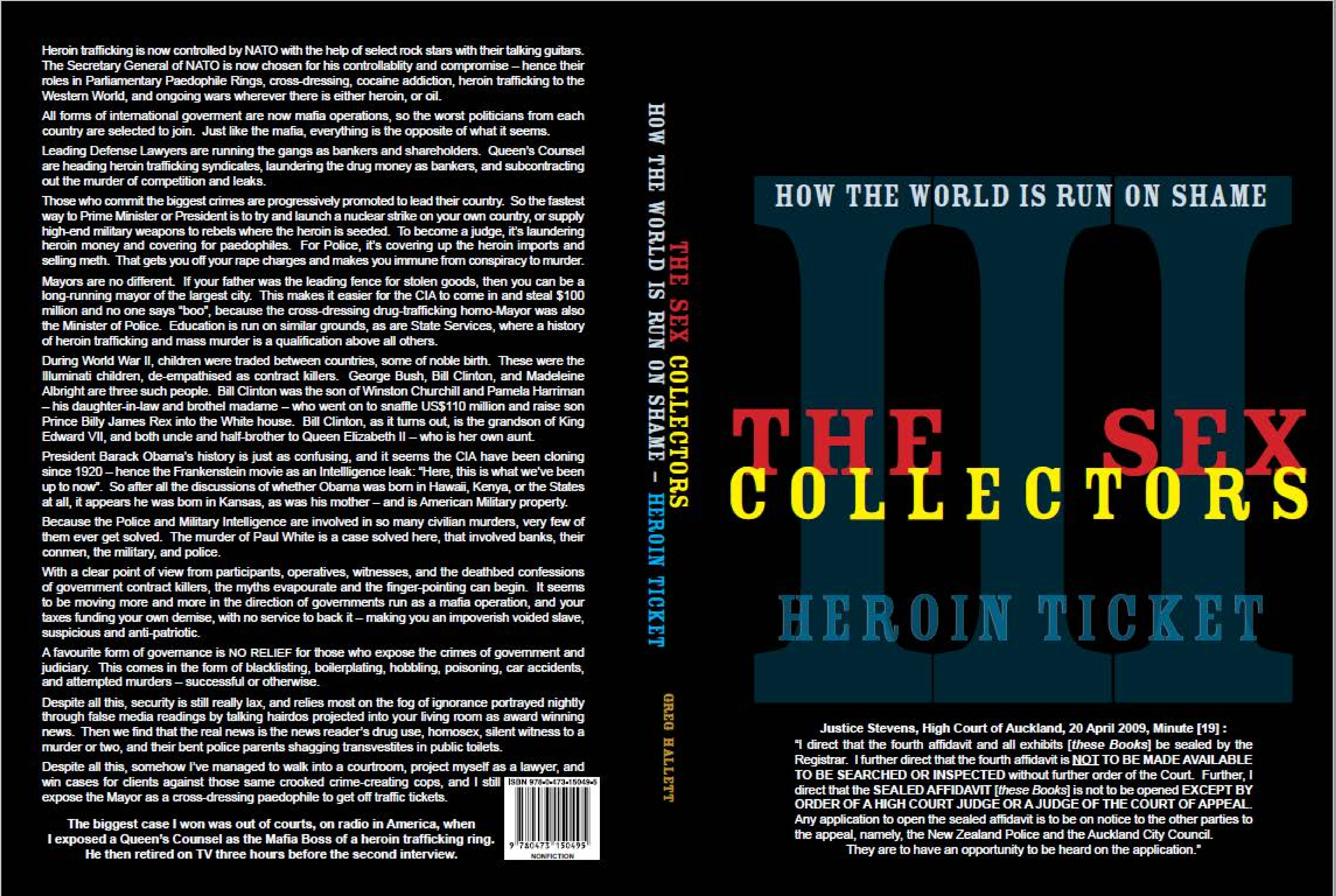

Heroin trafficking is now controlled by NATO with the help of select rock stars with their talking guitars. The Secretary General of NATO is now chosen for his controllablity and compromise – hence their roles in Parliamentary Paedophile Rings, cross-dressing, cocaine addiction, heroin trafficking to the Western World, and ongoing wars wherever there is either heroin, or oil.

All forms of international goverment are now mafia operations, so the worst politicians from each country are selected to join. Just like the mafia, everything is the opposite of what it seems.

Leading Defense Lawyers are running the gangs as bankers and shareholders. Queen's Counsel are heading heroin trafficking syndicates, laundering the drug money as bankers, and subcontracting out the murder of competition and leaks.

Those who commit the biggest crimes are progressively promoted to lead their country. So the fastest way to Prime Minister or President is to try and launch a nuclear strike on your own country, or supply high-end military weapons to rebels where the heroin is seeded. To become a judge, it's laundering heroin money and covering for paedophiles. For Police, it's covering up the heroin imports and selling meth. That gets you off your rape charges and makes you immune from conspiracy to murder.

Mayors are no different. If your father was the leading fence for stolen goods, then you can be a long-running mayor of the largest city. This makes it easier for the CIA to come in and steal $100 million and no one says "boo", because the cross-dressing drug-trafficking homo-Mayor was also the Minister of Police. Education is run on similar grounds, as are State Services, where a history of heroin trafficking and mass murder is a qualification above all others.

During World War II, children were traded between countries, some of noble birth. These were the Illuminati children, de-empathised as contract killers. George Bush, Bill Clinton, and Madeleine Albright are three such people. Bill Clinton was the son of Winston Churchill and Pamela Harriman – his daughter-in-law and brothel madame – who went on to snaffle US$110 million and raise son Prince Billy James Rex into the White house. Bill Clinton, as it turns out, is the grandson of King Edward VII, and both uncle and half-brother to Queen Elizabeth II – who is her own aunt.

President Barack Obama's history is just as confusing, and it seems the CIA have been cloning since 1920 – hence the Frankenstein movie as an Intellligence leak: "Here, this is what we've been up to now". So after all the discussions of whether Obama was born in Hawaii, Kenya, or the States at all, it appears he was born in Kansas, as was his mother – and is American Military property.

Because the Police and Military Intelligence are involved in so many civilian murders, very few of them ever get solved. The murder of Paul White is a case solved here, that involved banks, their conmen, the military, and police.

With a clear point of view from participants, operatives, witnesses, and the deathbed confessions of government contract killers, the myths evapourate and the finger-pointing can begin. It seems to be moving more and more in the direction of governments run as a mafia operation, and your taxes funding your own demise, with no service to back it – making you an impoverish voided slave, suspicious and anti-patriotic.

A favourite form of governance is NO RELIEF for those who expose the crimes of government and judiciary. This comes in the form of blacklisting, boilerplating, hobbling, poisoning, car accidents, and attempted murders – successful or otherwise.

Despite all this, security is still really lax, and relies most on the fog of ignorance portrayed nightly through false media readings by talking hairdos projected into your living room as award winning news. Then we find that the real news is the news reader's drug use, homosex, silent witness to a murder or two, and their bent police parents shagging transvestites in public toilets.

Despite all this, somehow I've managed to walk into a courtroom, project myself as a lawyer, and win cases for clients against those same crooked crime-creating cops, and I still expose the Mayor as a cross-dressing paedophile to get off traffic tickets.

The biggest case I won was out of courts, on radio in America, when I exposed a Queen's Counsel as the Mafia Boss of a heroin trafficking ring. He then retired on TV three hours before the second interview.

ISBN 978-0-473-15049-5
9 780473 150495
NONFICTION

THE SEX COLLECTORS
HOW THE WORLD IS RUN ON SHAME – HEROIN TICKET
GREG HALLETT

HOW THE WORLD IS RUN ON SHAME

THE SEX COLLECTORS

II

HEROIN TICKET

Justice Stevens, High Court of Auckland, 20 April 2009, Minute [19] :
"I direct that the fourth affidavit and all exhibits [*these Books*] be sealed by the Registrar. I further direct that the fourth affidavit is NOT TO BE MADE AVAILABLE TO BE SEARCHED OR INSPECTED without further order of the Court. Further, I direct that the SEALED AFFIDAVIT [*these Books*] is not to be opened EXCEPT BY ORDER OF A HIGH COURT JUDGE OR A JUDGE OF THE COURT OF APPEAL. Any application to open the sealed affidavit is to be on notice to the other parties to the appeal, namely, the New Zealand Police and the Auckland City Council. They are to have an opportunity to be heard on the application."

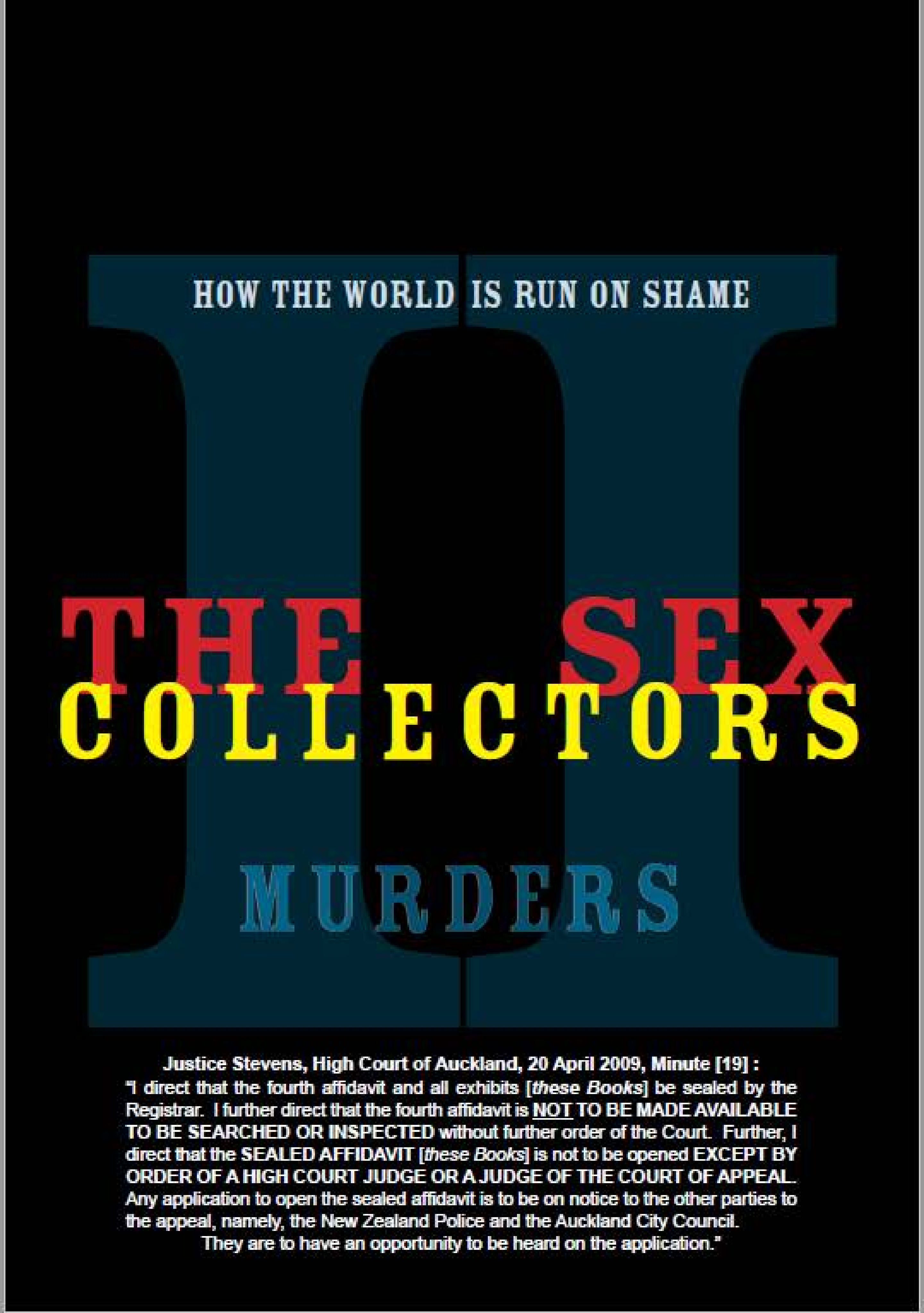

HOW THE WORLD IS RUN ON SHAME

THE SEX COLLECTORS

II

MURDERS

Justice Stevens, High Court of Auckland, 20 April 2009, Minute [19] :

"I direct that the fourth affidavit and all exhibits [*these Books*] be sealed by the Registrar. I further direct that the fourth affidavit is NOT TO BE MADE AVAILABLE TO BE SEARCHED OR INSPECTED without further order of the Court. Further, I direct that the SEALED AFFIDAVIT [*these Books*] is not to be opened EXCEPT BY ORDER OF A HIGH COURT JUDGE OR A JUDGE OF THE COURT OF APPEAL. Any application to open the sealed affidavit is to be on notice to the other parties to the appeal, namely, the New Zealand Police and the Auckland City Council. They are to have an opportunity to be heard on the application."

Books by Greg Hallett

NEW ZEALAND – A Blackmailer's Guide 2007, 2008

HITLER WAS A BRITISH AGENT 2005, 2006

HOW TO TAKE OVER THE WORLD – A Right Royal Con 2007, 2008, 2009

STALIN'S BRITISH TRAINING – Breeding Concubines Paedophiles At War 2007, 2008

GIFTING THE UNITED NATIONS TO STALIN 2007, 2008, 2009

ARE YOU MY FATHER? The Family Court and Other Experiments 2002

THE SEX COLLECTORS – How the World is run on Shame – Vol. I, STITCH-UPS
First Edition July 2009 ISBN 978-0-473-15050-1
© Greg Hallett 2009

THE SEX COLLECTORS – How the World is run on Shame – Vol. II, MURDERS
First Edition March 2010 ISBN 978-0-473-15051-8
© Greg Hallett 2009

THE SEX COLLECTORS – How the World is run on Shame – Vol. III, HEROIN TICKET
First Edition March 2010 ISBN 978-0-473-15049-5
© Greg Hallett 2010

Published by PRINCE OF NEW SPAIN
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland, New Zealand

Orders and distribution
FNZ Inc.
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland, New Zealand

Purchases
www.greghallett.com

Contact the author
Cell: 0274 589 800
greg@greghallett.com
G: PrinceofNewSpain
Skype: PrinceofNewSpain

The images in this book are used under fair use. They are historically significant photos of famous individuals. They are a lower resolution than the originals and any copies will be of inferior quality. The photos are only used for informational purposes and their inclusion adds significantly to the knowledge gained as it depicts the subject with historical accuracy. Incorporating restricted material is fair use under United States copyright law and any challenges will be met with commercial and liberal parody.

This book was presented as evidence in the HIGH COURT of AUCKLAND. In Courtroom 13, High Court Justice Stevens sealed it at 3.45 pm on Monday 20 April 2009 so that 'No part of this book is allowed to be read by any member of the judiciary unless they have the written permission of THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE and the Auckland City Council lawyers present, to be heard in front of a High Court judge, and then maybe the Court of Appeal.

On 11 September 2009, District Court Judge Joyce then permanently sealed the Statement of Claims, Affidavits, Discovery, Memorandums and Interlocutory Application, as well as *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide*, *How to Take Over the World*, *Stalin's British Training*, and *Gifting the United Nations to Stalin*.

However the contents have not been given a secrecy order from the public . . . so be my guest and be well informed.

THE SEX COLLECTORS

II

GREG HALLETT

PRINCE OF NEW SPAIN
LONDON AUCKLAND FRANKFURT TORONTO

I

STITCH-UPS

II

MURDERS

III

HEROIN TICKET

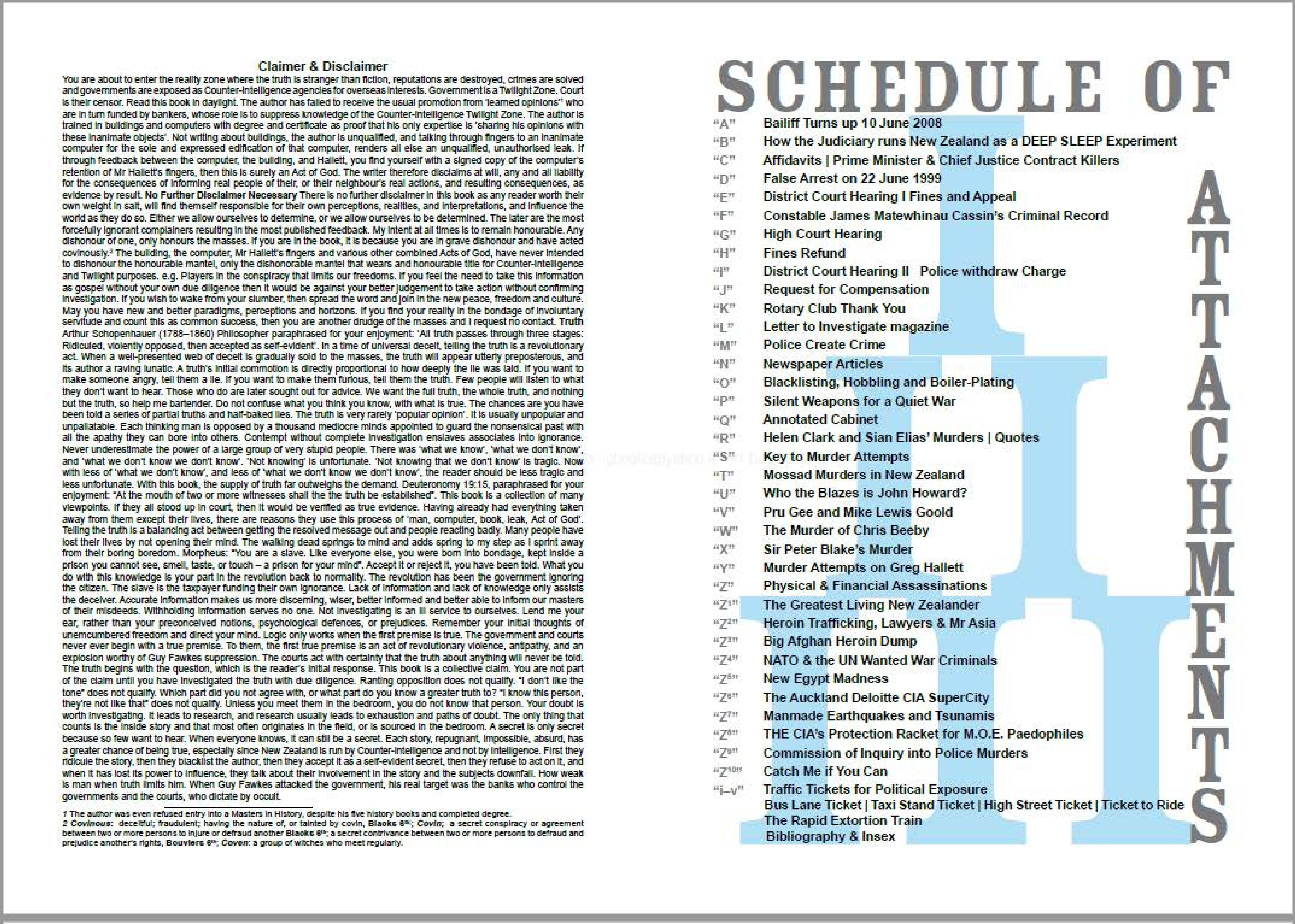

Claimer & Disclaimer

You are about to enter the reality zone where the truth is stranger than fiction, reputations are destroyed, crimes are solved and governments are exposed as Counter-Intelligence agencies for overseas interests. Government is a Twilight Zone. Court is their censor. Read this book in daylight. The author has failed to receive the usual promotion from 'learned opinions'[1] who are in turn funded by bankers, whose role is to suppress knowledge of the Counter-Intelligence Twilight Zone. The author is trained in buildings and computers with degree and certificate as proof that his only expertise is 'sharing his opinions with these inanimate objects'. Not writing about buildings, the author is unqualified, and talking through fingers to an inanimate computer for the sole and expressed edification of that computer, renders all else an unqualified, unauthorised leak. If through feedback between the computer, the building, and Hallett, you find yourself with a signed copy of the computer's retention of Mr Hallett's fingers, then this is surely an Act of God. The writer therefore disclaims at will, any and all liability for the consequences of informing real people of their, or their neighbour's real actions, and resulting consequences, as evidence by result. **No Further Disclaimer Necessary** There is no further disclaimer in this book as any reader worth their own weight in salt, will find themself responsible for their own perceptions, realities, and interpretations, and influence the world as they do so. Either we allow ourselves to determine, or we allow ourselves to be determined. The later are the most forcefully ignorant complainers resulting in the most published feedback. My intent at all times is to remain honourable. Any dishonour of one, only honours the masses. If you are in the book, it is because you are in grave dishonour and have acted covinously.[2] The building, the computer, Mr Hallett's fingers and various other combined Acts of God, have never intended to dishonour the honourable mantel, only the dishonorable mantel that wears and honourable title for Counter-Intelligence and Twilight purposes. e.g. Players in the conspiracy that limits our freedoms. If you feel the need to take this information as gospel without your own due diligence then it would be against your better judgement to take action without confirming investigation. If you wish to wake from your slumber, then spread the word and join in the new peace, freedom and culture. May you have new and better paradigms, perceptions and horizons. If you find your reality in the bondage of involuntary servitude and count this as common success, then you are another drudge of the masses and I request no contact. **Truth** Arthur Schopenhauer (1788–1860) Philosopher paraphrased for your enjoyment: 'All truth passes through three stages: Ridiculed, violently opposed, then accepted as self-evident'. In a time of universal deceit, telling the truth is a revolutionary act. When a well-presented web of deceit is gradually sold to the masses, the truth will appear utterly preposterous, and its author a raving lunatic. A truth's initial commotion is directly proportional to how deeply the lie was laid. If you want to make someone angry, tell them a lie. If you want to make them furious, tell them the truth. Few people will listen to what they don't want to hear. Those who do are later sought out for advice. We want the full truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth, so help me bartender. Do not confuse what you think you know, with what is true. The chances are you have been told a series of partial truths and half-baked lies. The truth is very rarely 'popular opinion'. It is usually unpopular and unpalatable. Each thinking man is opposed by a thousand mediocre minds appointed to guard the nonsensical past with all the apathy they can bore into others. Contempt without complete investigation enslaves associates into ignorance. Never underestimate the power of a large group of very stupid people. There was 'what we know', 'what we don't know', and 'what we don't know we don't know'. 'Not knowing' is unfortunate. 'Not knowing that we don't know' is tragic. Now with less of 'what we don't know', and less of 'what we don't know we don't know', the reader should be less tragic and less unfortunate. With this book, the supply of truth far outweighs the demand. Deuteronomy 19:15, paraphrased for your enjoyment: "At the mouth of two or more witnesses shall the the truth be established". This book is a collection of many viewpoints. If they all stood up in court, then it would be verified as true evidence. Having already had everything taken away from them except their lives, there are reasons they use this process of 'man, computer, book, leak, Act of God'. Telling the truth is a balancing act between getting the resolved message out and people reacting badly. Many people have lost their lives by not opening their mind. The walking dead springs to mind and adds spring to my step as I sprint away from their boring boredom. Morpheus: "You are a slave. Like everyone else, you were born into bondage, kept inside a prison you cannot see, smell, taste, or touch – a prison for your mind". Accept it or reject it, you have been told. What you do with this knowledge is your part in the revolution back to normality. The revolution has been the government ignoring the citizen. The slave is the taxpayer funding their own ignorance. Lack of information and lack of knowledge only assists the deceiver. Accurate information makes us more discerning, wiser, better informed and better able to inform our masters of their misdeeds. Withholding information serves no one. Not investigating is an ill service to ourselves. Lend me your ear, rather than your preconceived notions, psychological defences, or prejudices. Remember your initial thoughts of unencumbered freedom and direct your mind. Logic only works when the first premise is true. The government and courts never ever begin with a true premise. To them, the first true premise is an act of revolutionary violence, antipathy, and an explosion worthy of Guy Fawkes suppression. The courts act with certainty that the truth about anything will never be told. The truth begins with the question, which is the reader's initial response. This book is a collective claim. You are not part of the claim until you have investigated the truth with due diligence. Ranting opposition does not qualify. "I don't like the tone" does not qualify. Which part did you not agree with, or what part do you know a greater truth to? "I know this person, they're not like that" does not qualify. Unless you meet them in the bedroom, you do not know that person. Your doubt is worth investigating. It leads to research, and research usually leads to exhaustion and paths of doubt. The only thing that counts is the inside story and that most often originates in the field, or is sourced in the bedroom. A secret is only secret because so few want to hear. When everyone knows, it can still be a secret. Each story, repugnant, impossible, absurd, has a greater chance of being true, especially since New Zealand is run by Counter-Intelligence and not by intelligence. First they ridicule the story, then they blacklist the author, then they accept it as a self-evident secret, then they refuse to act on it, and when it has lost its power to influence, they talk about their involvement in the story and the subjects downfall. How weak is man when truth limits him. When Guy Fawkes attacked the government, his real target was the banks who control the governments and the courts, who dictate by occult.

---

[1] The author was even refused entry into a Masters in History, despite his five history books and completed degree.

[2] **Covinous:** deceitful; fraudulent; having the nature of, or tainted by covin, **Blacks 6th**; *Covin;* a secret conspiracy or agreement between two or more persons to injure or defraud another **Blacks 6th**; a secret contrivance between two or more persons to defraud and prejudice another's rights, **Bouviers 6th**; *Coven:* a group of witches who meet regularly.

SCHEDULE OF ATTACHMENTS

"A"	Bailiff Turns up 10 June 2008
"B"	How the Judiciary runs New Zealand as a DEEP SLEEP Experiment
"C"	Affidavits | Prime Minister & Chief Justice Contract Killers
"D"	False Arrest on 22 June 1999
"E"	District Court Hearing I Fines and Appeal
"F"	Constable James Matewhinau Cassin's Criminal Record
"G"	High Court Hearing
"H"	Fines Refund
"I"	District Court Hearing II Police withdraw Charge
"J"	Request for Compensation
"K"	Rotary Club Thank You
"L"	Letter to Investigate magazine
"M"	Police Create Crime
"N"	Newspaper Articles
"O"	Blacklisting, Hobbling and Boiler-Plating
"P"	Silent Weapons for a Quiet War
"Q"	Annotated Cabinet
"R"	Helen Clark and Sian Elias' Murders | Quotes
"S"	Key to Murder Attempts
"T"	Mossad Murders in New Zealand
"U"	Who the Blazes is John Howard?
"V"	Pru Gee and Mike Lewis Goold
"W"	The Murder of Chris Beeby
"X"	Sir Peter Blake's Murder
"Y"	Murder Attempts on Greg Hallett
"Z"	Physical & Financial Assassinations
"Z^{1}"	The Greatest Living New Zealander
"Z^{2}"	Heroin Trafficking, Lawyers & Mr Asia
"Z^{3}"	Big Afghan Heroin Dump
"Z^{4}"	NATO & the UN Wanted War Criminals
"Z^{5}"	New Egypt Madness
"Z^{6}"	The Auckland Deloitte CIA SuperCity
"Z^{7}"	Manmade Earthquakes and Tsunamis
"Z^{8}"	THE CIA's Protection Racket for M.O.E. Paedophiles
"Z^{9}"	Commission of Inquiry into Police Murders
"Z^{10}"	Catch Me if You Can
"i–v"	Traffic Tickets for Political Exposure Bus Lane Ticket | Taxi Stand Ticket | High Street Ticket | Ticket to Ride
	The Rapid Extortion Train
	Bibliography & Insex

DEDICATION

To the dead,
and the walking dead,
and those who can no longer talk.

To those murdered, genocided,
killed, suicided, wiped out, wetted, liquidated,
snuffed, snuffled, treated with extreme unction,
missing, left behind, hidden,
suppressed, informed on,
disbelieved, and burnt alive.

To those who are on their way to finding out that
Government is just another gang –
the world's biggest gang that no longer serves the people,
but the One World Order,
and will resort to murder with extreme bias
and approved immunity
to carry out the agenda dictated to them,
and accepted by them,
on account of their shame.

Beware the contract killer under the guise of:
"WE ARE THE AUTHORITY HERE TO HELP".

Author: "I was adopted into the fringes of the mafia and here's my story.
I've dealt with them all."
Spymaster: "No don't, f*ck, don't write that. Put a line through it.
Are you sick of life?"
Safebreaker: "Well it's true. You have been."

INTRODUCTION

THE WORLD IS RUN ON SHAME

Sex, Drugs & Murder provide opportunity for the most shame

These three volumes were lodged in the High Court on 20 April 2009 and in the District Court up to 11 September 2009. Both were then updated. The Court is a court of record and these documents include the record of New Zealand government attacks on the author in order to protect their own from being exposed as murderers, drug traffickers, drug money launderers, drug users, paedophiles, incestuous child sex abusers and slavers . . . while promoting each other as career twins compromised and shamed by all of the above.

Effectively, New Zealand does not have a judiciary or a government. It has an Occult Mafia who will go to any lengths to ignore the truth and have it suppressed in order to suppress the truth about themselves.

In maintaining a respectable face, there is no limit to the lengths they will go, escalating from issuing traffic tickets, kidnapping your children, drugging children, turning them into child drug dealers, arranging car accidents, removing your driver licence, doing false tax audits then closing down your business, stealing your house, surrounding you with government narcs and spies, arranging false bills, ensuring no credit is ever paid and no financially beneficial case is ever won . . . and then murdering the target and their immediate family when deemed necessary (Samoa Tsunami).

This is all pervasive in the New Zealand Government and Judiciary. Both are an Occult Mafia of Economic Hitmen who specialise in arranging bills, minimising payouts, maximising losses, manufacturing charges, maintaining unproven charges on record, and listing with extreme prejudice in all government departments. The target is then marked for non-promotion with maximum prejudice against employment – by blacklisting, hobbling, and boiler-plating. This is called "NO RELIEF".

In effect, the whole scenario becomes a distraction – for a lifetime – and a meal ticket for the person who records it. Conversely, the paedophiles and paedophile-minders are on the life-long promotion list as protected citizens. Their shame is directly proportional to their promotions, which is directly proportional to how much they can be controlled. *The Protocols of Zion*, 1903, No. 10: ". . . as have in their past some dark, undiscovered stain . . . then they will be trustworthy agents . . . out of fear of revelations . . . a puppet in our hands."

Government murders are treated as the most effective means of blacklisting, and when these fail, repeatedly, financial assassinations take precedence. They are run to rule and ruin until their target has nothing left to lose. This is usually done by influential judicial figures on the promotion ladder in exchange for cover of their shame. The compromised ladder, the spineless ladder, the shame ladder, and the promotion ladder are all the same thing.

New Zealand is a paedophile movement fronting as a country.

In protection of the mafia boss Peter Williams QC, on 11 September 2009, Auckland District Court Judge Roderick Joyce permanently sealed: The Statement of Claim, and associated Affidavit (11 February 2009); Memorandum, and Interlocutory Application in Support (22 May 2009); Evaluation Conference document (26 August 2009); Statement of Claim, Affidavit in Support, and Discovery request (26 August 2009); and the Memorandum of Plaintiff (28 August 2009); and four books authored by Greg Hallett as stolen by Peter Williams' partner, Heeni Phillips (they're both thieves) and presented to the Auckland District Court including:

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide; How to Take Over the World – A Right Royal Con; Stalin's British Training – Breeding Concubines, Paedophiles at War; and *Gifting the United Nations to Stalin.*

Hitler was a British Agent would also have been suppressed, but it was stolen off the court files by Williams' own narc – No. 5 on the terrorist list. Williams was running the terrorism racket and had his target named as No. 5. Then, when I was making a documentary on terrorist No. 5, I was named No. 10 . . . by Peter Williams QC – so that's narky nepotism terrorism.

First there was heroin, then there was terrorism
and Peter Williams QC was involved in both.
That boy just can't keep out of the limelight.

It's not that these permanently sealed documents were wrong in their content, it's just that they were too difficult for Williams to sidestep, which was too embarrassing for the Judiciary to handle.

PAWQC was backed into a corner admitting he was Mr Asia,
so the Courts did the denying for him.

In support of the mafia boss Peter Williams QC, Judge Roderick Joyce enlisted the help of the Auckland District Court Law Society seminar (10–11 September 2009) who justified the "permanently sealed" status of the enclosed documents, by going back over 800 years of rulings (to 1841, 1872 and 1873) to establish that:
"The District Court has no such jurisdiction" but
"Court embarrassment is an abuse of the process",
"However outrageous conduct is not scandalous if relevant to the issues"
and unsealing [is] by judicial direction only; so Mr Hallett was given the option to drop the entire case or retain only one document – a single page, as presented on 27 May 2009.

Judge Joyce's 11 September 2009 Minute was an historical censorship document, one of the biggest censorships in the history of New Zealand Law, next to Judge Lin Stevens' censorship of substantially similar material in the High Court on 20 April 2009.

Judge Joyce: **"The present application are permeated with scandalous material . . .**
Mr Hallett has gone far beyond any permissible boundaries."
So it's a case of:
"The oath shall not be an oath, the pledge shall not be a pledge,
and the vow shall not be a vow. They shall have no force and effect."

It appears that the Judicary raised the car thief, heroin trafficker and murderer, Peter Williams, to Queen's Counsel so he could arrange their murders for them, whenever their reputation was questioned. Like paedophiles, judges always demand respect, but think they are rock stars. They arrive in court, no one knows who they are, and they get really grumpy when you ask: "Who are you? What is your name?"

It is true: **Judges are rock stars, but they are the rock stars of the criminal world.**
New Zealand is a country where the gang gets the gong,
and in New Zealand, the judiciary is a gang.

The New Zealand judiciary is heavily involved as protagonists and defenders in heroin trafficking, murder, laundering drug money, taking bribes, and destroying the lives of any citizen more honest than themselves . . . the Judiciary is the bane of New Zealand.

The questions on all of our lips should be –
"When did Government stop serving its Citizens and start attacking them?" . . . and
"When did Government stop serving its Citizens and start murdering them?"

We have few heroes because they are killed off.
They are killed off because they make governments and judiciaries look bad.
Governments look bad because, upon investigation, they are
murderers, heroin traffickers, paedophiles and prostitutes.

CONTENTS

Schedule of Attachments
Newspaper Articles
Blacklisting, Hobbling and Boiler-Plating
Silent Weapons for a Quiet War
Annotated Cabinet
Helen Clark and Sian Elias' Murders
Key to Murder Attempts
Mossad Murders in New Zealand
Who the Blazes is John Howard
Pru Gee and Mike Lewis Goold
The Murder of Chris Beeby and the Shah of Iran
Sir Peter Blake's Murder
Murder Attempts on Greg Hallett
Physical and Financial Assassinations
Bibliography
Insex

MURDERS

II

“N” Newspaper Articles 1
SundayStar Times, About Town, page 31 (5 April 2009)
Sunday Star Times, About Town, page 38 (20 July 2008)
New Zealand Truth, page 5 (29 May 2008)
Sunday Star Times, About Town, page 9 (20 January 2008)
Sunday Star Times, About Town, page 9 (23 December 2007)
New Zealand Truth, page 5 (23 August 2007)
New Zealand Truth, page 1 (22 March 2007)
New Zealand Truth, page 5 (22 March 2007)

“O” Blacklisting, Hobbling and Boiler-Plating 13
Blacklisting
Hobbling
Boiler-Plating
Mafia Blacklist (21 July 2008)
Nomore Cowboys Defamation (27–28 July 2008)
New Zealand Companies Office: Nomore Cowboys
Nomore Cowboys refusal to reply
MinterEllisonRuddWatts Zane Kennedy Nomore Cowboys Company Director
Architecture Work Samples (1999–June 2008): Virtual Design and Built Dwellings
Bayleys: An inspirational Greg Hallett Design
Book sales blocked in Sweden

“P” Silent Weapons for a Quiet War 33
Welcome Aboard
Security
Historical Introduction
Political Dominance – Public v. Private Utopia
Bookkeeping Energy in Real Science
1954
Descriptive Introduction of the Silent Weapon
Mayer Amschel Rothschild's Theory Becomes Reality (1743–1812)
General Energy Concepts
Mr. Rothschild's Energy Discovery
The Appearance of Economic Capital as Faux Paper Economic Inductor
Breakthough in Aviation
Shock Testing Applied to Economics
Summary
The Economic Model
Industrial Diagrams
Three Industrial Classes
Aggregation
The E-Model
Economic Inductive Factors to Consider
Translation – with a few examples given
Time-Flow Relationships and Self-Destructive Oscillations
Foresight Flow
Present Flow
Hindsight Flow
Georgia Guidestone
Back to the faulted Operations Research
The Household Industry
Household Models
Ghosts and GHOST
Facial Recognition: Mandrake and Biometrics
Economic Shock Testing
Introduction to the Theory of Shock Testing
Introduction to Economic Amplifiers
SHORT LIST OF INPUTS
Legal – behavior control etc.
NATIONAL INPUT INFORMATION Business sources
Banks and credit bureaus etc.
Diversion: The Primary Strategy
Diversion Summary
Consent: The Primary Victory
Amplifying Energy Sources
Logistics
Home – The Artificial Womb
The Political Structure of a Nation – Dependency
Action/Offense
Responsibility
Summary
In Economic Theory
System Analysis
The Draft (As military service)
Enforcement:
Factor I: Action and Reaction
Factor II: Father
Factor III: Mother
Factor IV: Junior
Factor V: Sister
Factor VI: Cattle

“Q” Annotated Cabinet 67
Annotated Cabinet Ministers, Labour Party 1999–2008 (photographed 20 October 2005)
Queen Elizabeth II announces Anand Satyanand as next Governor-General (3 April 2006)
Artwork valued at $730
PC is a speed limit for Paedophile Country and turns the law into a Ghost – Priceless (2003)

“R” Helen Clark and Sian Elias’ Murders | Quotes | 71
Quotes from Books:
Hitler Was A British Agent (September 2005, October 2006)
How To Take Over The World – A Right Royal Con (January, May, December 2007, August 2008)
Stalin’s British Training – Breeding Concubines, Paedophiles at War (February, September 2007)
Gifting the United Nations to Stalin (May, October 2007, July 2008)
New Zealand – A Blackmailer’s Guide (October, November, December 2007)
The World’s Greatest Spies and Spymasters, ‘Swallows: From Russia With Love’
Fishing for Submarines

“S” Key to Murder Attempts 135
Judicial Promotion Corruption
Helen Clark’s Deconstruction and the 2 April 2002 Murder Attempt
The 23 August 2002 Murder Attempt
Sir Peter Elworthy and Michael King Hits
Kahui Twins Murder
The embedded New Zealand Paedophile Movement
Helen Clark gets Compromised – the Dipolomatic Corp Speaks Out
23 August 2002 Hit results in Loss of Licence on 13 August 2003
Driver Licence returned due to Police Corruption
Mahatma Gandhi’s Paedophilia
The Media Child Drug Movement
Paul Holmes marries his Call Girl, *The Truth*
Murder Warnings
Centrepoint Commune – a Satellite Socio-Sexual Experiment
The Contracts
The SIS gives me info on the Michael King Murder
University of Auckland – Murder Inc.
David McNee’s Murder
Rod Donald’s Murder
Augie Auer’s Murder – Death to those who expose Global Warming as a Hoax!
Career Hobbling and Financial Assassinations – Judge Hole called into Corruption
Howard League Invitation to protest the Auckland District Court on 12 November 2004
Email to Media: Historian and Architect rattles Queen’s Counsel | Judicial Corruption
Disputes Tribunal Summary transferring Hallett vs Williams QC to the District Court
District Court confirms Case transfer
Character Reference (2005 to 2008)
Messages to Break-and-Entry Police
Peter Williams QC’s Counterclaim
Peter Williams QC’s very own handwritten agreement
Peter Alderidge Williams QC’s ‘Slavery document’ presented as a contract
Courts refuse to Settle Debts so Banks can charge Higher Interest
Peter Alderidge Williams QC’s ‘Slavery Contract’ analysed point by point
What Peter Alderidge Williams QC’s ‘Slavery Contract’ actually says
Greg Hallett affirms that Peter Alderidge Williams Queen’s Counsel is a Slaver
Peter Alderidge Williams QC is guilty of Fraud and Financial Assassination
Peter Alderidge Williams QC found marked, measured and wanting
Peter Alderidge Williams QC removed from the silk and struck from the bar
Cypres, Peter, I claim Cy-près
Hallett’s letter to Williams on 26 April 2005 and the 28–31 August 2004 Murder Threats
I’d hate to be Marty Johnstone
Supreme Court Failure

“T” Mossad Murders in New Zealand 193
The Murder of Michael King – New Zealand’s Preeminent Cultural Historian
Hallett’s History transposed Worldwide
New Zealand Guilty Parties
Defathering – Occult Puppet Police protect Paedophiles
Prominent Paedophile/Child Sex Abuser list and Principle Family Court Judges
So why was Michael King Murdered?
Mossad Murder Attempt (14–22 May 2004)
Details of King’s Murderers
The Sex Collectors

“U” Who the Blazes is John Howard? 213
Day of Atonement/ Yom Kippur/ Kol Nidre Prayer/ Jewish and Judicial Oath’s nullified
Sydney Timeline, World News
Third day of wildfire threatens Sydney
John Howard – “Who the blazes . . .?”
Who the Blazes is Kevin Rudd?
The Damage from Option (B)
Premier of Victoria John Brumby
Police blame Arson
No Warning despite Accurate Predictive Map
Faults and Blame
Government Watchdog, Royal Commission and Arson
Broke-Back Burning at Wilsons Promontory
Public Blame Police and Fire for Arson
New Zealand Undercover Arsonist in Australia
Arsonists and Strange Sex
Development and Murder around the Weather Cannon
Royal Commission Interim Report into Black Saturday

1. Establishing early fire risk warnings
2. Stay or Go
3. Relocation plans to include Fire Refuges
4. Reorganising Fire Services Command
5. Communications were Weak
6. Royal Commission's Interim Report primary fault
7. Purposeful Sabotage
8. Australian Bushfires Deliberately Lit, but Blamed on Weather
Fire Sabotage
9. CFA, DSE and State Government refuse responsibility and Deflect Blame
10. Author's Recommendations
11. Israeli Transport Ships for exodus of Australia – End Game
Terrorism Act – Extradition, Rendition and Stitch-ups
12. Politically Correct Bullshit prevents useful fire breaks – Greens are Watermelons
13. Climate Change, the Global Warming Hoax and Queen Victoria's Backlash
Donations, Passing the Buck and the Kol Nidre Jewish Occult
Pirate Captain Rudd
The British subversion of Australia – short history

"V" Pru Gee and Mark Lewis Goold 259

The Disputes Tribunal, District Court and High Court all linked in Political Correctness

"W" The Murder of Chris Beeby and the Shah of Iran 267

New Zealand Spy History
Chris Beeby's family history
Chris Beeby's career history
Chris Beeby retires
Chris Beeby permanently retired
The Shah of Iran, Light of the Aryans
The Shah's First Man, Ardeshir Zahedi
The Shah plans to leave in 1978
The Shah leaves and the Ayatollah arrives
Chris Beeby removes the Shah
Medical Mistreatment
Aflatoxin B_1 – the Poison that killed the Shah, Pompidou, Nasser and Sutch
Gamal Abdel Nasser, the second President of Egypt
The Cancer Secret
Intelligence leading to Chris Beeby's Murder
Madeleine Albright's DEATH NOTICE (It's you or me Babe)
Chris Beeby duped by his own master
Phil Goff 21 March 2000 Statement 'We were in on it'
Frank Sinatra runs the White House
History is nuts
George Bush's Wet Dream
Nixon, Ford and Rockefeller Dies
Jimmy Carter's Exit
Iran Hostages
George H. W. Bush and Saddam Hussein shared a bank account
Ronald Reagan, the FBI & Communist Hollywood Blacklisting
Reagan makes propaganda movies for the Army during WWII
The FBI, McCarthyism, and Hollywood Blacklisting (1947–66)
So it was a coup d'etat
The FBI Counterattacks Communism and then promotes Queers
Blacklisted Actors . . . The Hollywood Ten . . . The Red Channels
The FBI, CIA, NATO and ex-Military Intelligence make a move on Hollywood
Reagan's testimony, House Un-American Activities Committee (23 October 1947)
Hollywood Blacklisting in Australia
The Jewish Mafia and the FBI
FBI, Mafia and US military work together to cover up history
The Mafia sinks the SS *Normandie* and the US military cover-up
The New Zealand equivalent to J. Edgar Hoover is John Banks
That's how that rocks

"X" Sir Peter Blake's Murder 307

Red Socks America's Cup
Jacques Cousteau dies and Sir Peter Blake fills his togs
Sir Peter Blake's Big Environmental Blunder
American Embassy's now hire external contract killers
Helen Clark's foreknowledge of Sir Peter Blake's murder
Helen Clark speaks murder
Helen Clark shines her shoes on other people's kudos
Sir Peter Blake's murder
Barry Pickthall's Murder Account
Water Rats (Ratos de agua)
Catching Rats
The Funeral
Reincarnation
Helen Clark – the reincarnation of Adolf Hitler
I'm in Heaven

"Y" Murder Attempts on Greg Hallett 325

Unprotected Custody (22 June 1999)
Talkback Radio and the Front Left Wheel Bearing Locknut (2 April 2002)
Cook Island Speech and the Poisoned Steering Wheel (23 August 2002)
Mossad Surveillance and confirmation of Michael King's murder (14–22 May 2004)
Three Financial Assassinations:
    Pru Gee, Steve Whalley, and Peter Williams QC (25 May 2004–)
Poisoned Coffee (27 July 2007)
Killer Nappies Driving Rage (26 October 2007)
Hyperinflated Tyres (17–27 March 2008)
Helen Clark orders a Hit (3 June 2008–)
Masked Poison designed to Delay Publication (11 December 2009–)

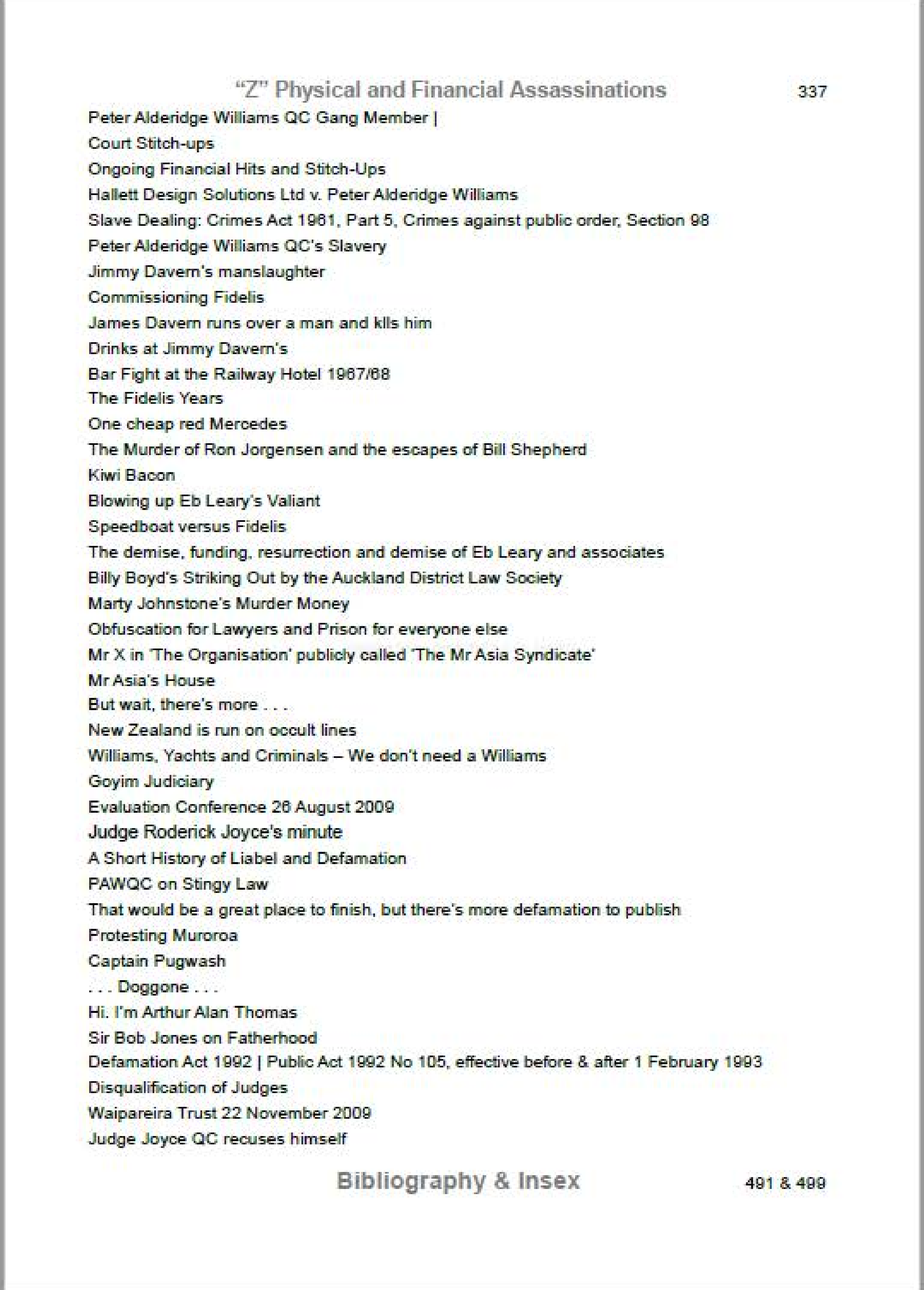

“Z” Physical and Financial Assassinations 337
Peter Alderidge Williams QC Gang Member |
Court Stitch-ups
Ongoing Financial Hits and Stitch-Ups
Hallett Design Solutions Ltd v. Peter Alderidge Williams
Slave Dealing: Crimes Act 1961, Part 5, Crimes against public order, Section 98
Peter Alderidge Williams QC's Slavery
Jimmy Davern's manslaughter
Commissioning Fidelis
James Davern runs over a man and klls him
Drinks at Jimmy Davern's
Bar Fight at the Railway Hotel 1967/68
The Fidelis Years
One cheap red Mercedes
The Murder of Ron Jorgensen and the escapes of Bill Shepherd
Kiwi Bacon
Blowing up Eb Leary's Valiant
Speedboat versus Fidelis
The demise, funding, resurrection and demise of Eb Leary and associates
Billy Boyd's Striking Out by the Auckland District Law Society
Marty Johnstone's Murder Money
Obfuscation for Lawyers and Prison for everyone else
Mr X in 'The Organisation' publicly called 'The Mr Asia Syndicate'
Mr Asia's House
But wait, there's more . . .
New Zealand is run on occult lines
Williams, Yachts and Criminals – We don't need a Williams
Goyim Judiciary
Evaluation Conference 26 August 2009
Judge Roderick Joyce's minute
A Short History of Liabel and Defamation
PAWQC on Stingy Law
That would be a great place to finish, but there's more defamation to publish
Protesting Muroroa
Captain Pugwash
. . . Doggone . . .
Hi. I'm Arthur Alan Thomas
Sir Bob Jones on Fatherhood
Defamation Act 1992 | Public Act 1992 No 105, effective before & after 1 February 1993
Disqualification of Judges
Waipareira Trust 22 November 2009
Judge Joyce QC recuses himself
Bibliography & Insex 491 & 499

Newspaper Articles

The following newspaper articles reinforce the statements I have been making in the Affidavits and Attachments – that Prime Minister Helen Clark and Chief Justice Sian Elias are contract killers. The pertinent text has been added alongside.

Index of Excerpts:

SundayStar Times, About Town, 5 April 2009, p. 31.

SundayStar Times, About Town, 20 July 2008, p. 38.

New Zealand Truth, 29 May 2008, p. 5.

SundayStar Times, About Town, 20 January 2008, p. 9.

SundayStar Times, About Town, 23 December 2007, p. 9.

New Zealand Truth, 23 August 2007, p. 5.

New Zealand Truth, 22 March 2007, p. 1.

New Zealand Truth, 22 March 2007, p. 5.

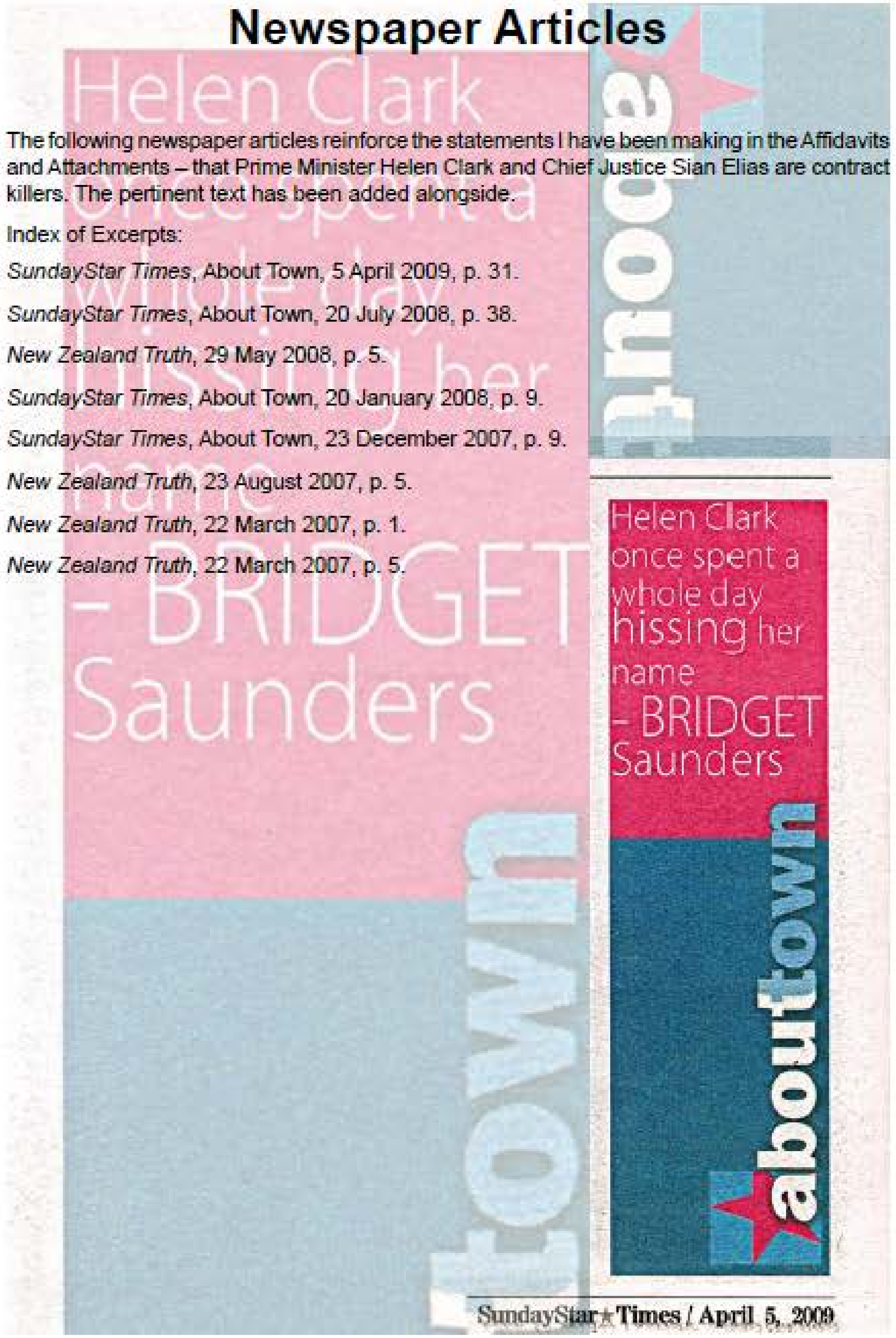

Helen Clark once spent a whole day hissing her name – BRIDGET Saunders

SundayStar★Times / April 5, 2009

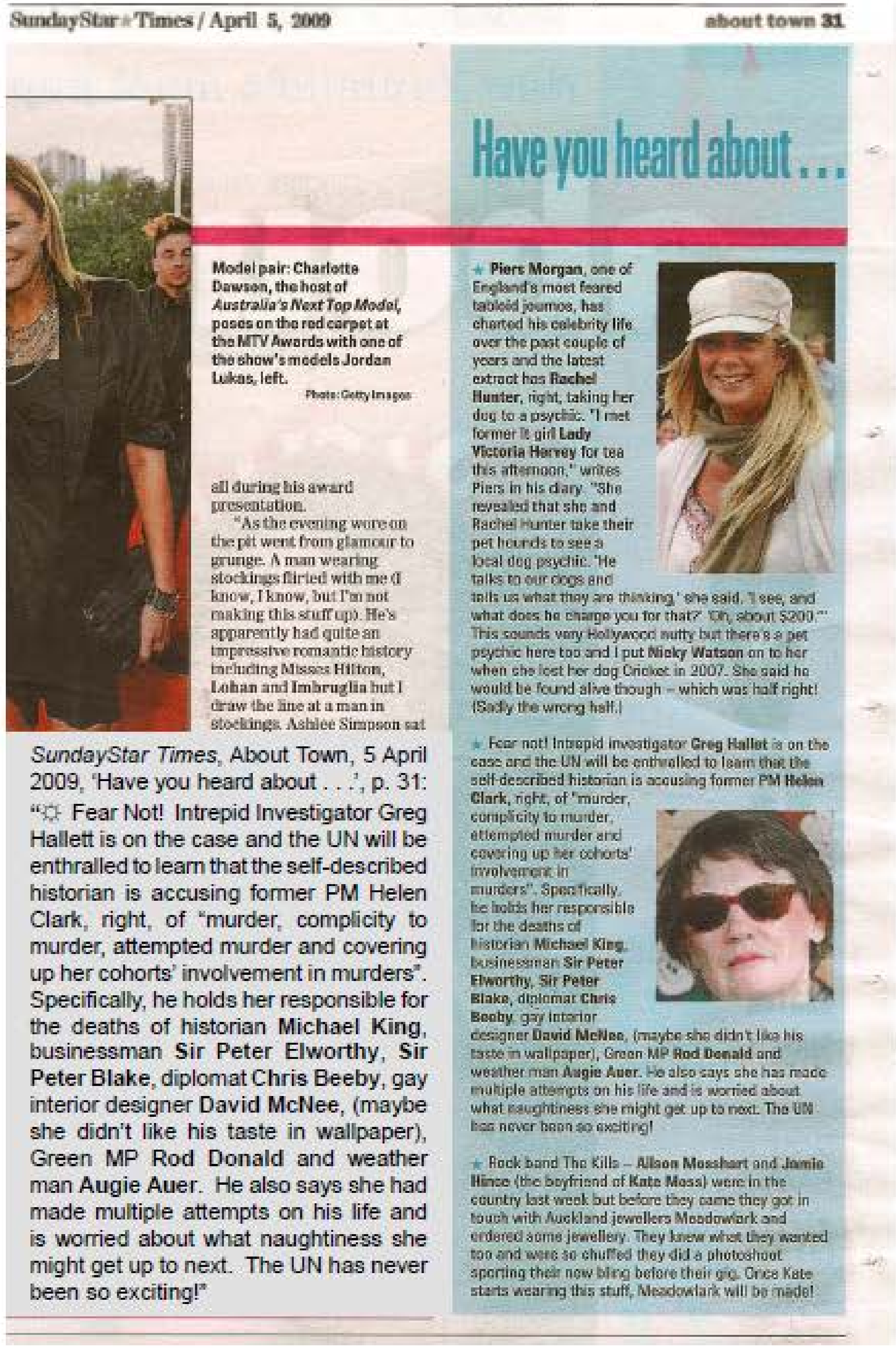

SundayStar★Times / April 5, 2009 **about town 31**

Have you heard about . . .

Model pair: Charlotte Dawson, the host of *Australia's Next Top Model*, poses on the red carpet at the MTV Awards with one of the show's models Jordan Lukas, left.

Photo: Getty Images

all during his award presentation.

"As the evening wore on the pit went from glamour to grunge. A man wearing stockings flirted with me (I know, I know, but I'm not making this stuff up). He's apparently had quite an impressive romantic history including Misses Hilton, Lohan and Imbruglia but I draw the line at a man in stockings. Ashlee Simpson sat

★ **Piers Morgan**, one of England's most feared tabloid journos, has charted his celebrity life over the past couple of years and the latest extract has **Rachel Hunter**, right, taking her dog to a psychic. "I met former It girl **Lady Victoria Hervey** for tea this afternoon," writes Piers in his diary. "She revealed that she and Rachel Hunter take their pet hounds to see a local dog psychic. 'He talks to our dogs and tells us what they are thinking,' she said. 'I see, and what does he charge you for that?' 'Oh, about $200.'" This sounds very Hollywood nutty but there's a pet psychic here too and I put **Nicky Watson** on to her when she lost her dog Cricket in 2007. She said he would be found alive though – which was half right! (Sadly the wrong half.)

★ Fear not! Intrepid investigator **Greg Hallet** is on the case and the UN will be enthralled to learn that the self-described historian is accusing former PM **Helen Clark**, right, of "murder, complicity to murder, attempted murder and covering up her cohorts' involvement in murders". Specifically, he holds her responsible for the deaths of historian **Michael King**, businessman **Sir Peter Elworthy**, **Sir Peter Blake**, diplomat **Chris Beeby**, gay interior designer **David McNee**, (maybe she didn't like his taste in wallpaper), Green MP **Rod Donald** and weather man **Augie Auer**. He also says she has made multiple attempts on his life and is worried about what naughtiness she might get up to next. The UN has never been so exciting!

★ Rock band The Kills – **Alison Mosshart** and **Jamie Hince** (the boyfriend of **Kate Moss**) were in the country last week but before they came they got in touch with Auckland jewellers Meadowlark and ordered some jewellery. They knew what they wanted too and were so chuffed they did a photoshoot sporting their new bling before their gig. Once Kate starts wearing this stuff, Meadowlark will be made!

SundayStar Times, About Town, 5 April 2009, 'Have you heard about . . .', p. 31: "☼ Fear Not! Intrepid Investigator Greg Hallett is on the case and the UN will be enthralled to learn that the self-described historian is accusing former PM Helen Clark, right, of "murder, complicity to murder, attempted murder and covering up her cohorts' involvement in murders". Specifically, he holds her responsible for the deaths of historian **Michael King**, businessman **Sir Peter Elworthy**, **Sir Peter Blake**, diplomat **Chris Beeby**, gay interior designer **David McNee**, (maybe she didn't like his taste in wallpaper), Green MP **Rod Donald** and weather man **Augie Auer**. He also says she had made multiple attempts on his life and is worried about what naughtiness she might get up to next. The UN has never been so exciting!"

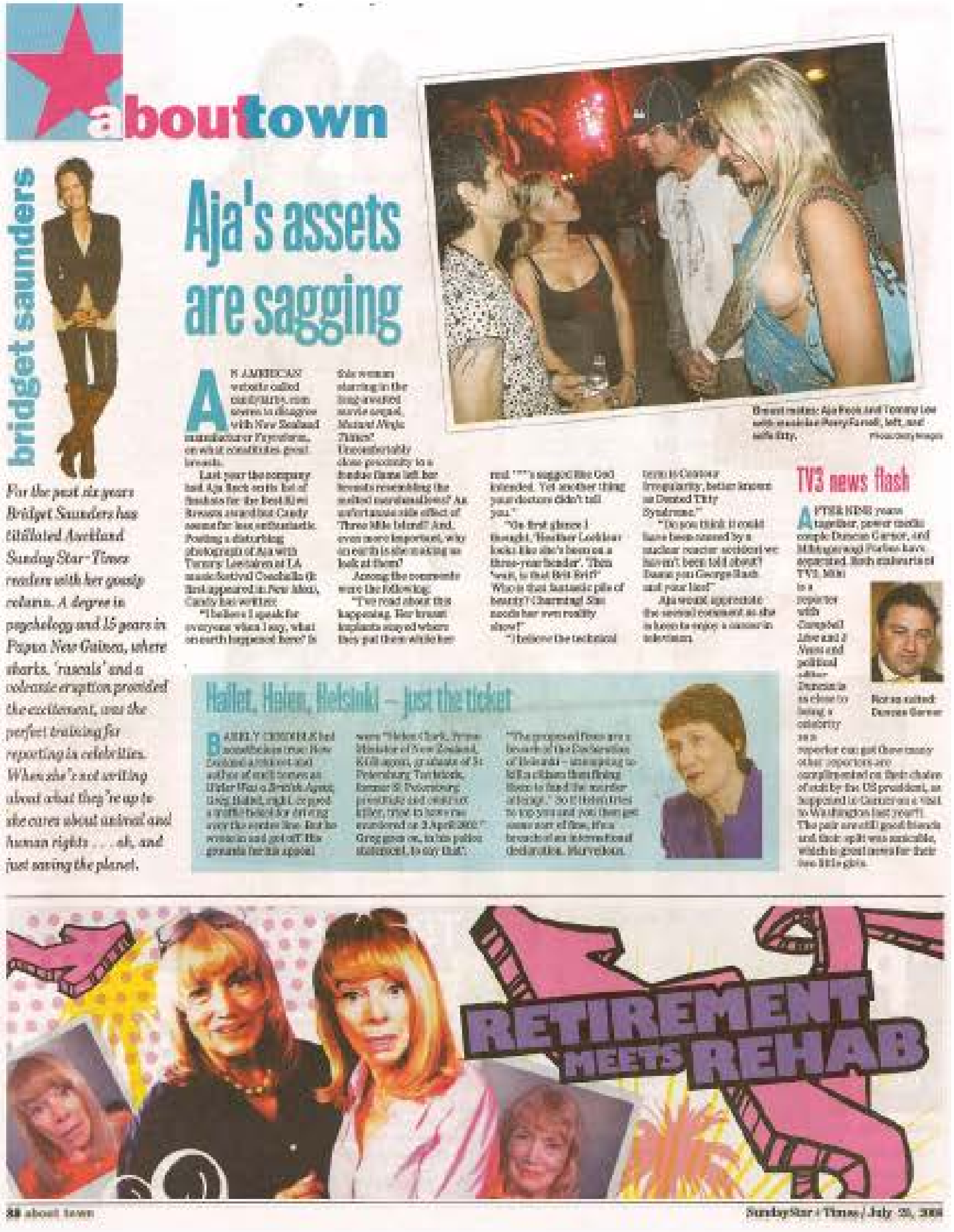

bridget saunders

Aja's assets are sagging

For the past six years Bridget Saunders has titillated Auckland Sunday Star-Times readers with her gossip column. A degree in psychology and 15 years in Papua New Guinea, where sharks, 'rascals' and a volcanic eruption provided the excitement, was the perfect training for reporting in celebrities. When she's not writing about what they're up to she cares about animal and human rights . . . oh, and just saving the planet.

Hallet, Helen, Helsinki – just the ticket

TV3 news flash

Not so suited: Duncan Garner

38 about town SundayStar★Times / July 20, 2008

Sunday Star Times, About Town, 20 July 2008, p. 38: ". . . Barely credible but none the less true . . . 'Helen Clark, Prime Minister of New Zealand, KGB agent, graduate of St Petersburg Tavistock, former St Petersburg prostitute and contract killer, tried to have me murdered on 2 April 2002 . . . The proposed fines are a breach of the Declaration of Helsinki – attempting to kill a citizen then fining them to fund the murder attempt.' So if Helen tries to top you and you then get some sort of fine, it's a breach of an international declaration. Marvellous.

New Zealand Truth, 29 May 2008, p. 5: “Millie Holmes, her ‘drug-running stepfather Paul’, the ‘incontinent KGB operative Helen Clark’, Christine Rankin and her ‘bondage lover’ Geoffrey Palmer, all feature . . .

“The only reason I have not been sued is because everything I say is true. I find out stories before they are lost amongst counter-intelligence . . .

He even gets the nod of approval from Kiwi gossip columnist Bridget Saunders: ‘Much of it defies belief . . . but some of it I know for a fact’ . . .

Has Hallett correctly named well-known Kiwi paedophile enablers, homosexuals, drug users and dealers, and unravelled the gay-lesbian bid . . .

But what’s more disturbing is Hallett’s sordid analysis of 19-year-old Millie Holmes’ drug conviction and the means by which she is said to have gained her supply of P . . .

Hallett, he has more than 14 hours of podcasts available on line where he tells the world New Zealand is run by paedophiles, homosexuals who are controlled by shame.”

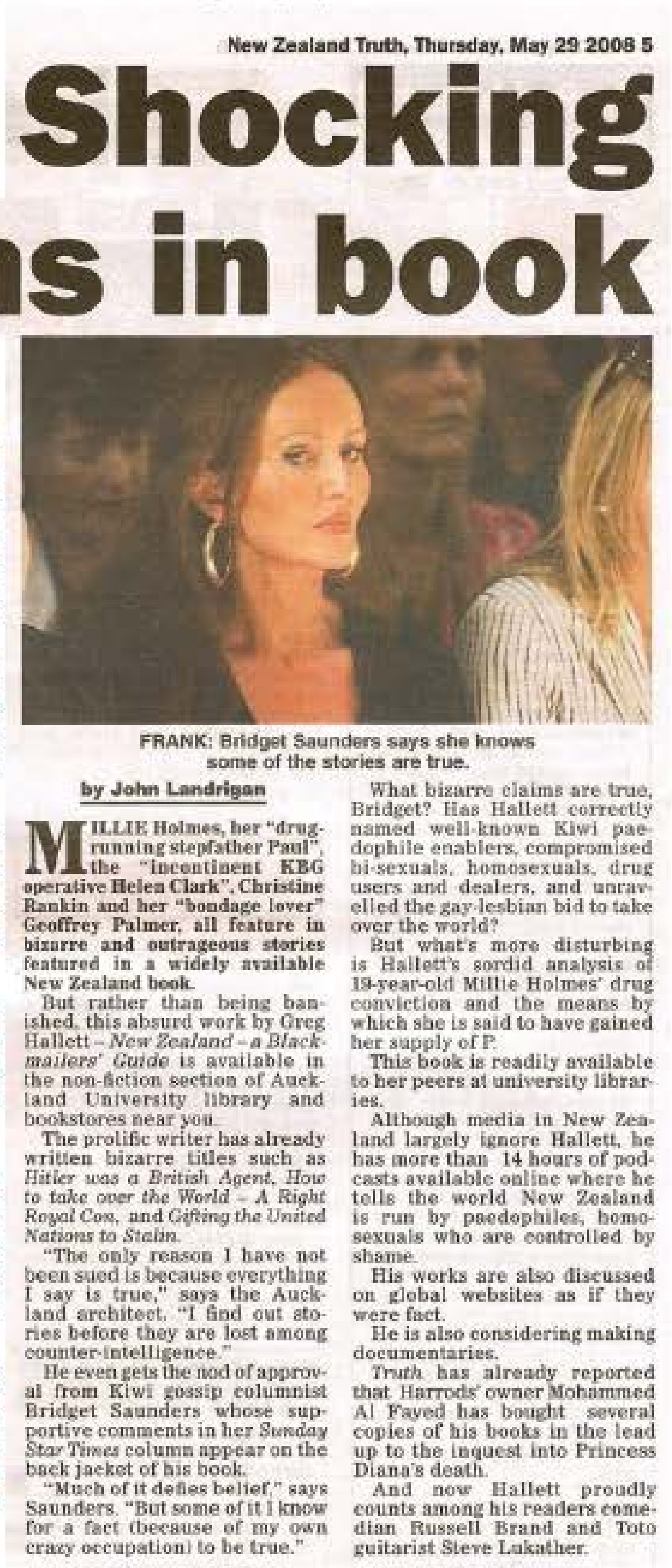

New Zealand Truth, Thursday, May 29 2008 5

Shocking claims in book

FRANK: Bridget Saunders says she knows some of the stories are true.

by John Landrigan

MILLIE Holmes, her “drug-running stepfather Paul”, the “incontinent KBG operative Helen Clark”, Christine Rankin and her “bondage lover” Geoffrey Palmer, all feature in bizarre and outrageous stories featured in a widely available New Zealand book.

But rather than being banished, this absurd work by Greg Hallett – *New Zealand – a Blackmailers’ Guide* is available in the non-fiction section of Auckland University library and bookstores near you.

The prolific writer has already written bizarre titles such as *Hitler was a British Agent*, *How to take over the World – A Right Royal Con*, and *Gifting the United Nations to Stalin*.

“The only reason I have not been sued is because everything I say is true,” says the Auckland architect. “I find out stories before they are lost among counter-intelligence.”

He even gets the nod of approval from Kiwi gossip columnist Bridget Saunders whose supportive comments in her *Sunday Star Times* column appear on the back jacket of his book.

“Much of it defies belief,” says Saunders. “But some of it I know for a fact (because of my own crazy occupation) to be true.”

What bizarre claims are true, Bridget? Has Hallett correctly named well-known Kiwi paedophile enablers, compromised bi-sexuals, homosexuals, drug users and dealers, and unravelled the gay-lesbian bid to take over the world?

But what’s more disturbing is Hallett’s sordid analysis of 19-year-old Millie Holmes’ drug conviction and the means by which she is said to have gained her supply of P.

This book is readily available to her peers at university libraries.

Although media in New Zealand largely ignore Hallett, he has more than 14 hours of podcasts available online where he tells the world New Zealand is run by paedophiles, homosexuals who are controlled by shame.

His works are also discussed on global websites as if they were fact.

He is also considering making documentaries.

Truth has already reported that Harrods’ owner Mohammed Al Fayed has bought several copies of his books in the lead up to the inquest into Princess Diana’s death.

And now Hallett proudly counts among his readers comedian Russell Brand and Toto guitarist Steve Lukather.

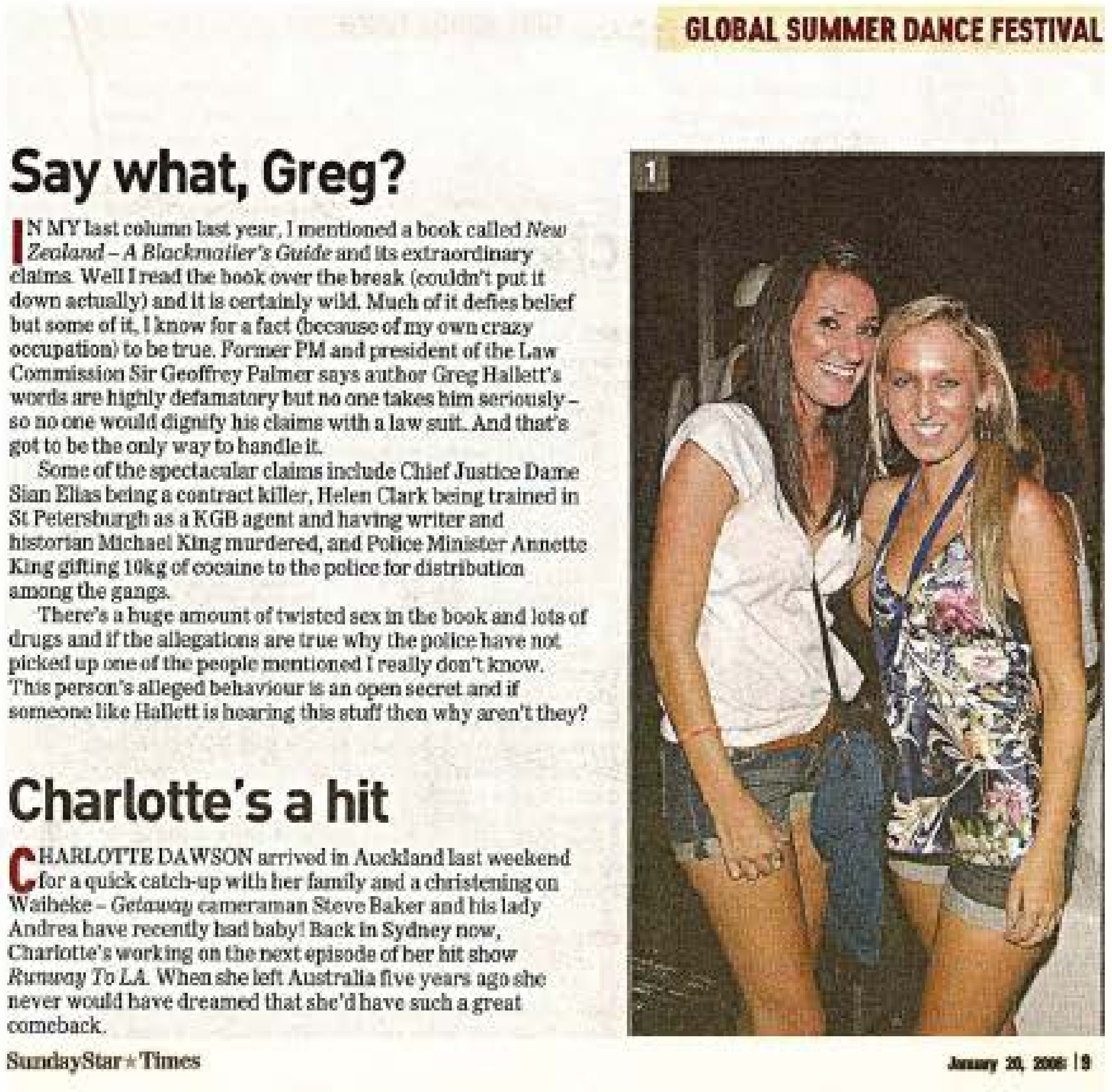

GLOBAL SUMMER DANCE FESTIVAL

Say what, Greg?

IN MY last column last year, I mentioned a book called *New Zealand – A Blackmailer’s Guide* and its extraordinary claims. Well I read the book over the break (couldn’t put it down actually) and it is certainly wild. Much of it defies belief but some of it, I know for a fact (because of my own crazy occupation) to be true. Former PM and president of the Law Commission Sir Geoffrey Palmer says author Greg Hallett’s words are highly defamatory but no one takes him seriously – so no one would dignify his claims with a law suit. And that’s got to be the only way to handle it.

Some of the spectacular claims include Chief Justice Dame Sian Elias being a contract killer, Helen Clark being trained in St Petersburgh as a KGB agent and having writer and historian Michael King murdered, and Police Minister Annette King gifting 10kg of cocaine to the police for distribution among the gangs.

There’s a huge amount of twisted sex in the book and lots of drugs and if the allegations are true why the police have not picked up one of the people mentioned I really don’t know. This person’s alleged behaviour is an open secret and if someone like Hallett is hearing this stuff then why aren’t they?

Charlotte’s a hit

CHARLOTTE DAWSON arrived in Auckland last weekend for a quick catch-up with her family and a christening on Waiheke – *Getaway* cameraman Steve Baker and his lady Andrea have recently had baby! Back in Sydney now, Charlotte’s working on the next episode of her hit show *Runway To LA*. When she left Australia five years ago she never would have dreamed that she’d have such a great comeback.

SundayStar★Times January 20, 2008 | 9

Sunday Star Times, About Town, 20 January 2008, p. 9: “. . . Some of the spectacular claims include Chief Justice Dame Sian Elias being a contract killer, Helen Clark being trained in St Petersburg as a KGB agent and having writer and historian Michael King murdered, and Police Minister Annette King gifting 10kg of cocaine [actually Afghan heroin Bridget] to the police for distribution amongst the gangs. There’s a huge amount of twisted sex in the book and lots of drugs and if the allegations are true why the police have not picked up one of the people mentioned I really don’t know. This person’s alleged behaviour is an open secret and if someone like Hallett is hearing this stuff then why aren’t they?”

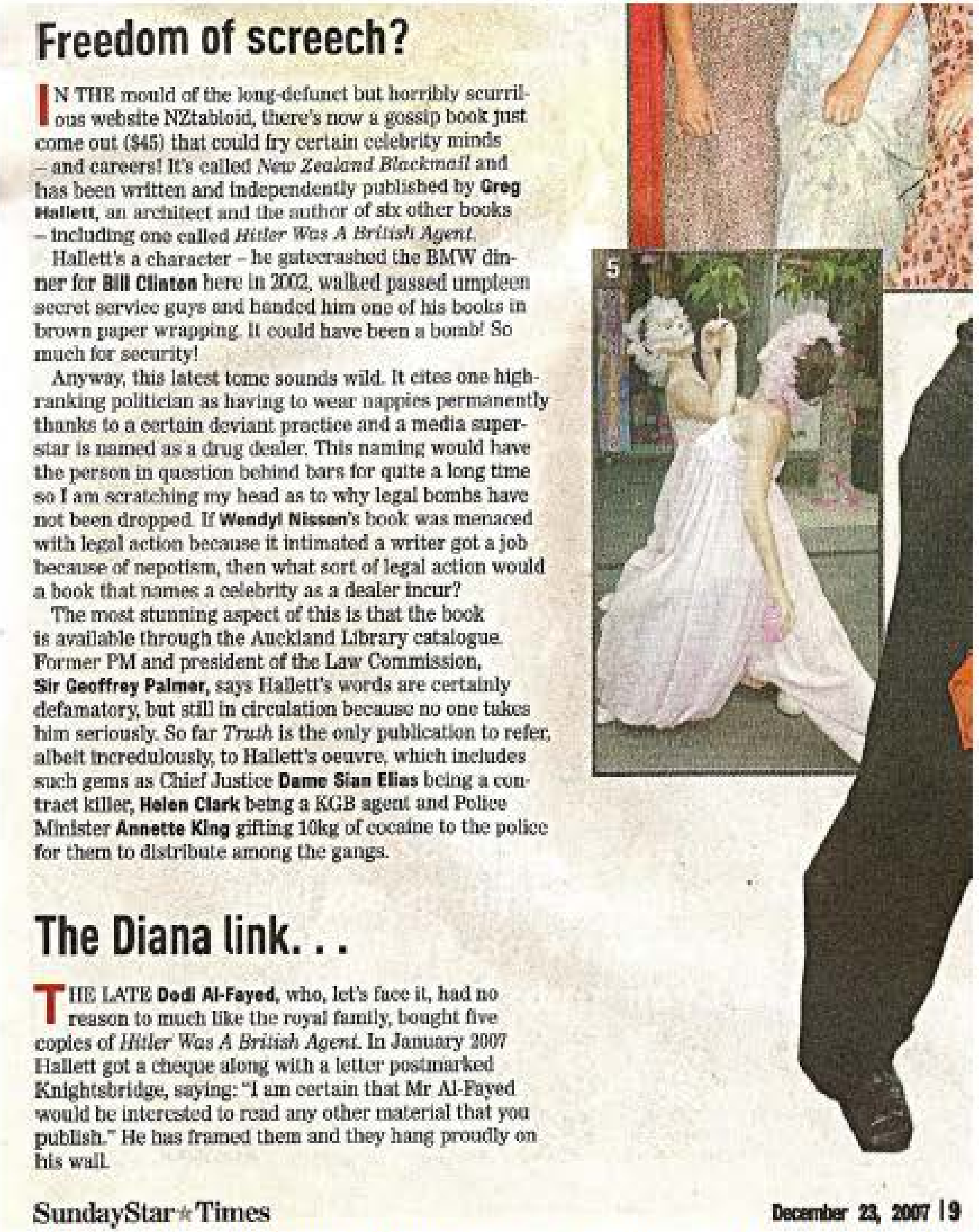

Freedom of screech?

IN THE mould of the long-defunct but horribly scurrilous website NZtabloid, there's now a gossip book just come out ($45) that could fry certain celebrity minds – and careers! It's called *New Zealand Blackmail* and has been written and independently published by **Greg Hallett**, an architect and the author of six other books – including one called *Hitler Was A British Agent*.

Hallett's a character – he gatecrashed the BMW dinner for **Bill Clinton** here in 2002, walked passed umpteen secret service guys and handed him one of his books in brown paper wrapping. It could have been a bomb! So much for security!

Anyway, this latest tome sounds wild. It cites one high-ranking politician as having to wear nappies permanently thanks to a certain deviant practice and a media superstar is named as a drug dealer. This naming would have the person in question behind bars for quite a long time so I am scratching my head as to why legal bombs have not been dropped. If **Wendyl Nissen**'s book was menaced with legal action because it intimated a writer got a job because of nepotism, then what sort of legal action would a book that names a celebrity as a dealer incur?

The most stunning aspect of this is that the book is available through the Auckland Library catalogue. Former PM and president of the Law Commission, **Sir Geoffrey Palmer**, says Hallett's words are certainly defamatory, but still in circulation because no one takes him seriously. So far *Truth* is the only publication to refer, albeit incredulously, to Hallett's oeuvre, which includes such gems as Chief Justice **Dame Sian Elias** being a contract killer, **Helen Clark** being a KGB agent and Police Minister **Annette King** gifting 10kg of cocaine to the police for them to distribute among the gangs.

The Diana link. . .

THE LATE **Dodi Al-Fayed**, who, let's face it, had no reason to much like the royal family, bought five copies of *Hitler Was A British Agent*. In January 2007 Hallett got a cheque along with a letter postmarked Knightsbridge, saying: "I am certain that Mr Al-Fayed would be interested to read any other material that you publish." He has framed them and they hang proudly on his wall.

SundayStar★Times **December 23, 2007 | 9**

Sunday Star Times, About Town, 23 December 2007, p. 9: ". . . cites one high ranking politician as having to wear nappies permanently thanks to a certain deviant practice [Helen Clark] and a media superstar is named as a drug dealer. This naming would have the person in question [Paul Holmes] behind bars for quite a long time so I am scratching my head as to why legal bombs have not been dropped . . . The most stunning aspect of this book is that it is available through the Auckland Library catalogue . . . includes such gems as Chief Justice Sian Elias being a contract killer, Helen Clark being a KGB agent and Police Minister Annette King gifting 10kg of cocaine to the police for them to distribute among the gangs."

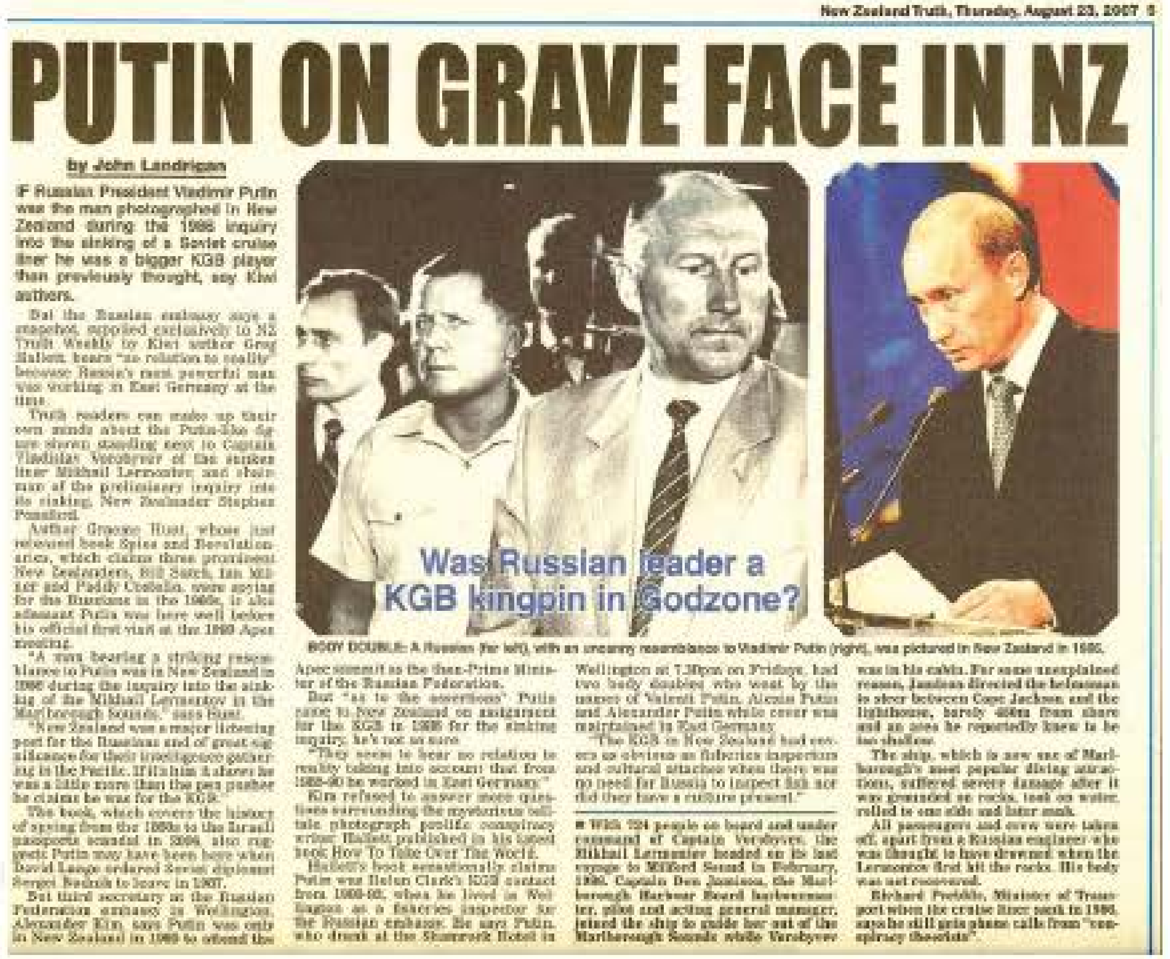

New Zealand Truth, Thursday, August 23, 2007 5

PUTIN ON GRAVE FACE IN NZ

by John Landrigan

IF Russian President Vladimir Putin was the man photographed in New Zealand during the 1986 inquiry into the sinking of a Soviet cruise liner he was a bigger KGB player than previously thought, say Kiwi authors.

Was Russian leader a KGB kingpin in Godzone?

BODY DOUBLE: A Russian (far left), with an uncanny resemblance to Vladimir Putin (right), was pictured in New Zealand in 1986.

New Zealand Truth, 23 August 2007, p. 5: ". . . Hallett's book sensationally claims Putin was Helen Clark's KGB contact from 1980–82, when he lived in Wellington as a fisheries inspector for the Russian embassy. He says Putin, who drank at the Shamrock Hotel in Wellington at 7.30 pm on Fridays, had two body doubles who went by the names Valenti Putin, Alexia Putin and Alexander Putin while cover was maintained in East Germany.

'The KGB in New Zealand had covers as obvious as fisheries inspectors and cultural attaches when there was no need for Russia to inspect fish nor did they have a culture present.'"

New Zealand Truth, Thursday, August 23, 2007 5

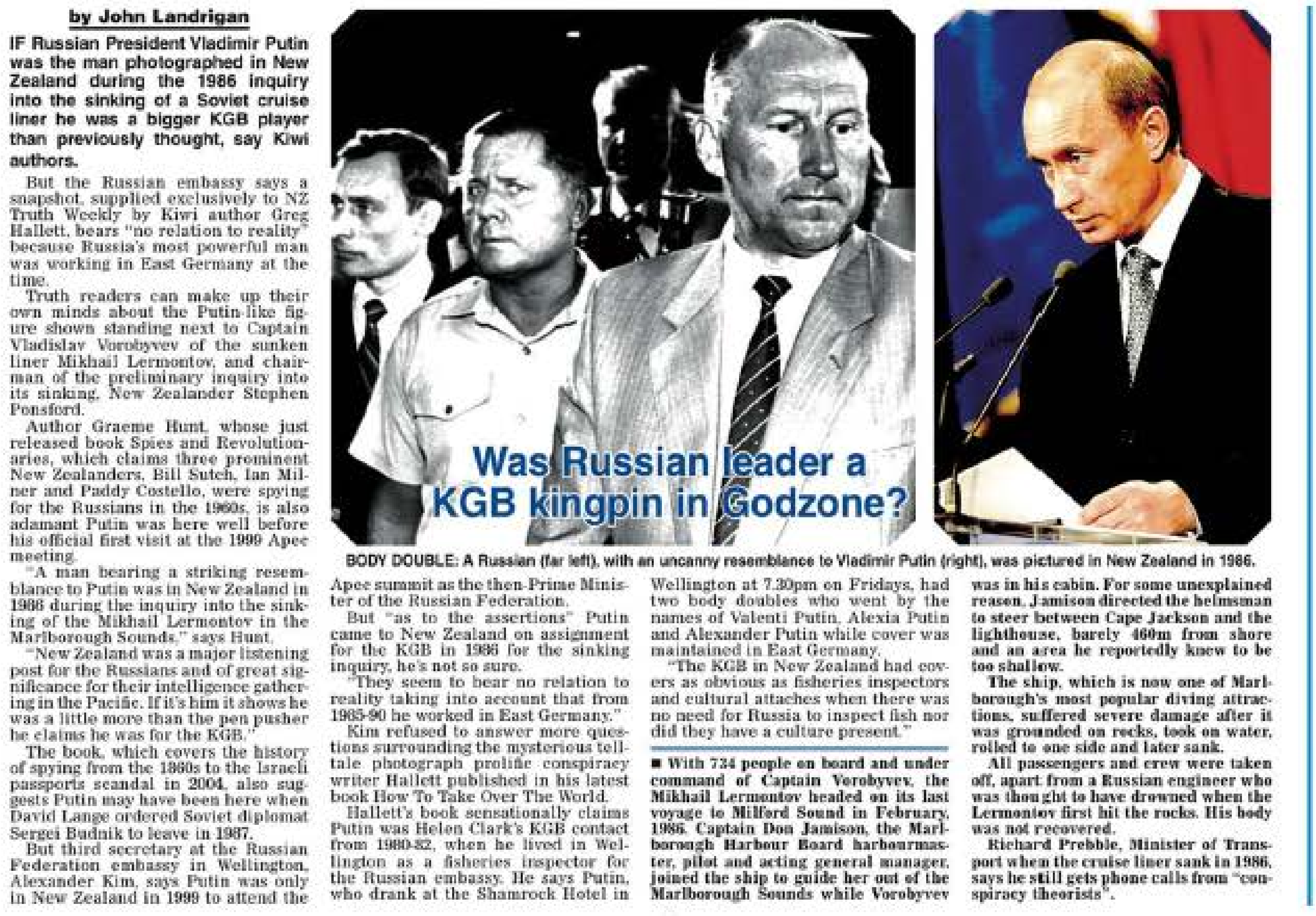

Was Russian leader a KGB kingpin in Godzone?

BODY DOUBLE: A Russian (far left), with an uncanny resemblance to Vladimir Putin (right), was pictured in New Zealand in 1986.

by John Landrigan

IF Russian President Vladimir Putin was the man photographed in New Zealand during the 1986 inquiry into the sinking of a Soviet cruise liner he was a bigger KGB player than previously thought, say Kiwi authors.

But the Russian embassy says a snapshot, supplied exclusively to NZ Truth Weekly by Kiwi author Greg Hallett, bears "no relation to reality" because Russia's most powerful man was working in East Germany at the time.

Truth readers can make up their own minds about the Putin-like figure shown standing next to Captain Vladislav Vorobyvev of the sunken liner Mikhail Lermontov, and chairman of the preliminary inquiry into its sinking, New Zealander Stephen Ponsford.

Author Graeme Hunt, whose just released book Spies and Revolutionaries, which claims three prominent New Zealanders, Bill Sutch, Ian Milner and Paddy Costello, were spying for the Russians in the 1960s, is also adamant Putin was here well before his official first visit at the 1999 Apec meeting.

"A man bearing a striking resemblance to Putin was in New Zealand in 1986 during the inquiry into the sinking of the Mikhail Lermontov in the Marlborough Sounds," says Hunt.

"New Zealand was a major listening post for the Russians and of great significance for their intelligence gathering in the Pacific. If it's him it shows he was a little more than the pen pusher he claims he was for the KGB."

The book, which covers the history of spying from the 1860s to the Israeli passports scandal in 2004, also suggests Putin may have been here when David Lange ordered Soviet diplomat Sergei Budnik to leave in 1987.

But third secretary at the Russian Federation embassy in Wellington, Alexander Kim, says Putin was only in New Zealand in 1999 to attend the Apec summit as the then-Prime Minister of the Russian Federation.

But "as to the assertions" Putin came to New Zealand on assignment for the KGB in 1986 for the sinking inquiry, he's not so sure.

"They seem to bear no relation to reality taking into account that from 1985-90 he worked in East Germany."

Kim refused to answer more questions surrounding the mysterious telltale photograph prolific conspiracy writer Hallett published in his latest book How To Take Over The World.

Hallett's book sensationally claims Putin was Helen Clark's KGB contact from 1980-82, when he lived in Wellington as a fisheries inspector for the Russian embassy. He says Putin, who drank at the Shamrock Hotel in Wellington at 7.30pm on Fridays, had two body doubles who went by the names of Valenti Putin, Alexia Putin and Alexander Putin while cover was maintained in East Germany.

"The KGB in New Zealand had covers as obvious as fisheries inspectors and cultural attaches when there was no need for Russia to inspect fish nor did they have a culture present."

■ With 734 people on board and under command of Captain Vorobyvev, the Mikhail Lermontov headed on its last voyage to Milford Sound in February, 1986. Captain Don Jamison, the Marlborough Harbour Board harbourmaster, pilot and acting general manager, joined the ship to guide her out of the Marlborough Sounds while Vorobyvev was in his cabin. For some unexplained reason, Jamison directed the helmsman to steer between Cape Jackson and the lighthouse, barely 460m from shore and an area he reportedly knew to be too shallow.

The ship, which is now one of Marlborough's most popular diving attractions, suffered severe damage after it was grounded on rocks, took on water, rolled to one side and later sank.

All passengers and crew were taken off, apart from a Russian engineer who was thought to have drowned when the Lermontov first hit the rocks. His body was not recovered.

Richard Prebble, Minister of Transport when the cruise liner sank in 1986, says he still gets phone calls from "conspiracy theorists".

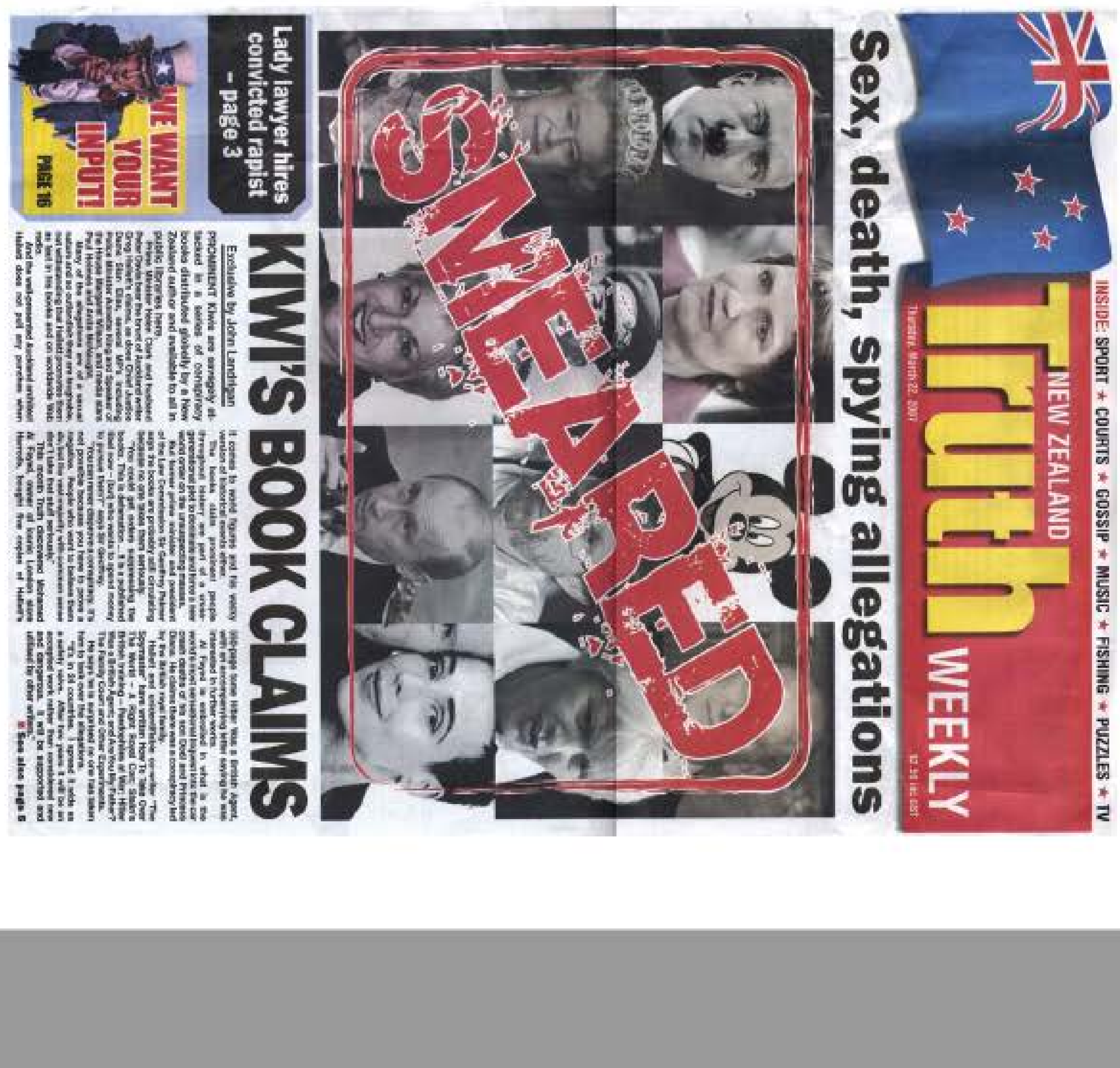

INSIDE: SPORT ★ COURTS ★ GOSSIP ★ MUSIC ★ FISHING ★ PUZZLES ★ TV

NEW ZEALAND Truth WEEKLY

Thursday, March 22, 2007

Sex, death, spying allegations

KIWI'S BOOK CLAIMS

Lady lawyer hires convicted rapist – page 3

WE WANT YOUR INPUT! PAGE 16

Exclusive by John Landrigan

New Zealand Truth, 22 March 2007, p. 1: "Prominent Kiwis are savagely attacked . . . Prime Minister Helen Clark and husband Peter Davis bear the brunt of Auckland writer Greg Hallett's claims, as does Chief Justice Dame Sian Elias, several MPs including Police Minister Annette King and Speaker of the House Margaret Wilson, and media stars Paul Holmes and Anita McNaught. Many of the allegations are of a sexual nature . . ."

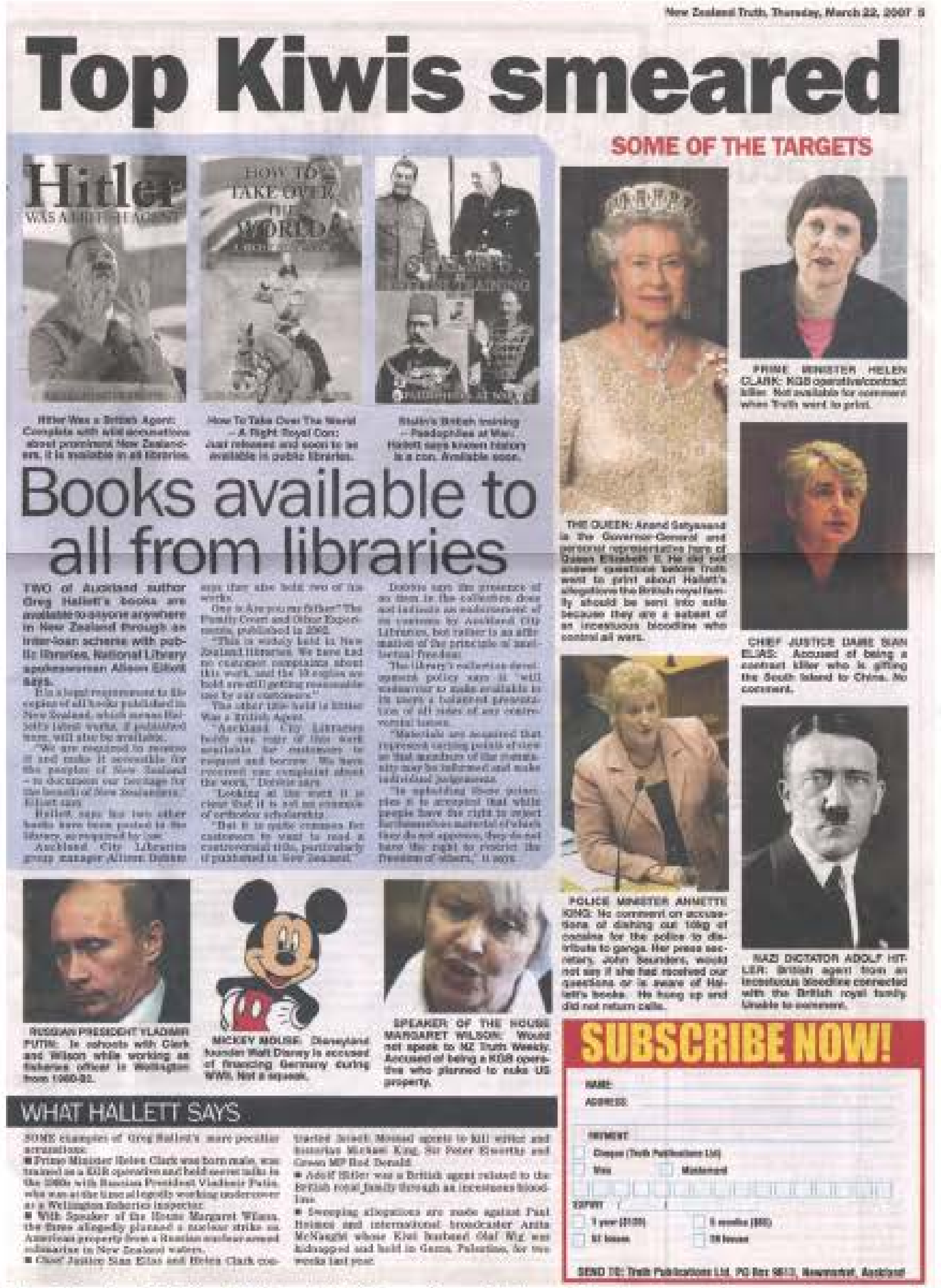

New Zealand Truth, Thursday, March 22, 2007 5

Top Kiwis smeared

SOME OF THE TARGETS

Hitler Was a British Agent: Complete with wild accusations about prominent New Zealanders, it is available in all libraries.

How To Take Over The World – A Right Royal Con: Just released and soon to be available in public libraries.

Stalin's British training – Paedophiles at War: Hallett says known history is a con. Available soon.

Books available to all from libraries

TWO of Auckland author Greg Hallett's books are available to anyone anywhere in New Zealand through an inter-loan scheme with public libraries, National Library spokeswoman Allison Elliott says.

It is a legal requirement to file copies of all books published in New Zealand, which means Hallett's latest works, if published here, will also be available.

"We are required to receive it and make it accessible for the peoples of New Zealand – to document our heritage for the benefit of New Zealanders," Elliott says.

Hallett says his two other books have been posted to the library, as required by law.

Auckland City Libraries group manager Allison Dobbie says they also hold two of his works.

One is Are you my father? The Family Court and Other Experiments, published in 2002.

"This is widely held in New Zealand libraries. We have had no customer complaints about this work, and the 10 copies we hold are still getting reasonable use by our customers."

The other title held is Hitler Was a British Agent.

"Auckland City Libraries holds one copy of this work available for customers to request and borrow. We have received one complaint about the work," Dobbie says.

"Looking at the work it is clear that it is not an example of orthodox scholarship.

"But it is quite common for customers to want to read a controversial title, particularly if published in New Zealand."

Dobbie says the presence of an item in the collection does not indicate an endorsement of its contents by Auckland City Libraries, but rather is an affirmation of the principle of intellectual freedom.

The library's collection development policy says it "will endeavour to make available to its users a balanced presentation of all sides of any controversial issues.

"Materials are acquired that represent varying points of view so that members of the community may be informed and make individual judgements.

"In upholding these principles it is accepted that while people have the right to reject for themselves material of which they do not approve, they do not have the right to restrict the freedom of others," it says.

THE QUEEN: Anand Satyanand is the Governor-General and personal representative here of Queen Elizabeth II. He did not answer questions before Truth went to print about Hallett's allegations the British royal family should be sent into exile because they are a subset of an incestuous bloodline who control all wars.

PRIME MINISTER HELEN CLARK: KGB operative/contract killer. Not available for comment when Truth went to print.

CHIEF JUSTICE DAME SIAN ELIAS: Accused of being a contract killer who is gifting the South Island to China. No comment.

POLICE MINISTER ANNETTE KING: No comment on accusations of dishing out 10kg of cocaine for the police to distribute to gangs. Her press secretary, John Saunders, would not say if she had received our questions or is aware of Hallett's books. He hung up and did not return calls.

NAZI DICTATOR ADOLF HITLER: British agent from an incestuous bloodline connected with the British royal family. Unable to comment.

RUSSIAN PRESIDENT VLADIMIR PUTIN: In cahoots with Clark and Wilson while working as fisheries officer in Wellington from 1980-82.

MICKEY MOUSE: Disneyland founder Walt Disney is accused of financing Germany during WWII. Not a squeak.

SPEAKER OF THE HOUSE MARGARET WILSON: Would not speak to NZ Truth Weekly. Accused of being a KGB operative who planned to nuke US property.

WHAT HALLETT SAYS

SOME examples of Greg Hallett's more peculiar accusations:

- Prime Minister Helen Clark was born male, was trained as a KGB operative and held secret talks in the 1980s with Russian President Vladimir Putin, who was at the time allegedly working undercover as a Wellington fisheries inspector.
- With Speaker of the House Margaret Wilson, the three allegedly planned a nuclear strike on American property from a Russian nuclear-armed submarine in New Zealand waters.
- Chief Justice Sian Elias and Helen Clark contracted Israeli Mossad agents to kill writer and historian Michael King, Sir Peter Elworthy and Green MP Rod Donald.
- Adolf Hitler was a British agent related to the British royal family through an incestuous bloodline.
- Sweeping allegations are made against Paul Holmes and international broadcaster Anita McNaught whose Kiwi husband Olaf Wiig was kidnapped and held in Gaza, Palestine, for two weeks last year.

SUBSCRIBE NOW!
NAME:
ADDRESS:
PAYMENT:
☐ Cheque (Truth Publications Ltd)
☐ Visa ☐ Mastercard
EXPIRY /
☐ 1 year ($120) ☐ 6 months ($65)
☐ 52 issues ☐ 26 issues
SEND TO: Truth Publications Ltd, PO Box 9813, Newmarket, Auckland

New Zealand Truth, 22 March 2007, p. 1 cont'd: ". . . The books claim prominent people throughout history are part of a cross-generational plot to dominate and force a new world order on the unsuspecting masses . . .

He says he is surprised no one has taken him to task over the allegations."

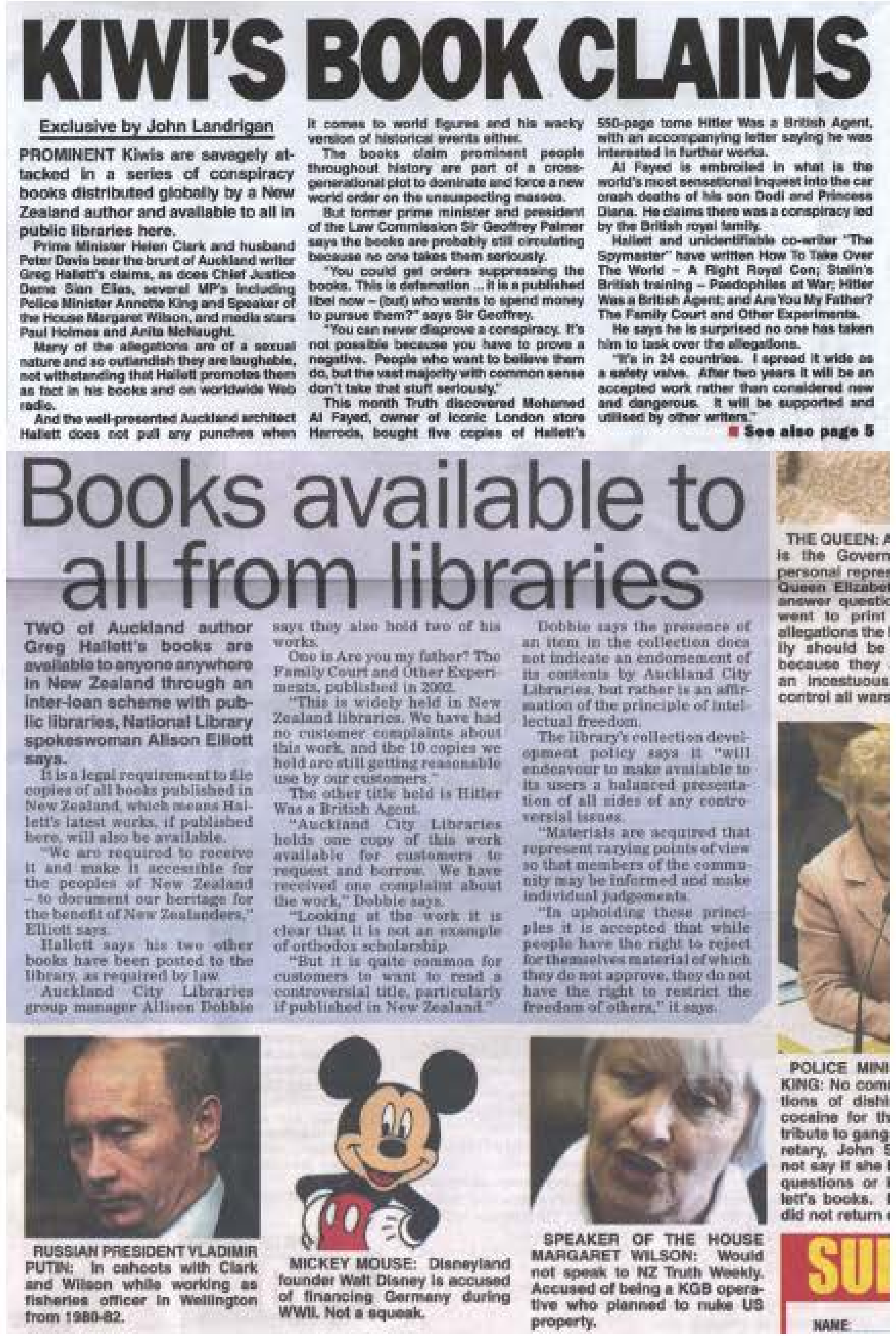

KIWI'S BOOK CLAIMS

Exclusive by John Landrigan

PROMINENT Kiwis are savagely attacked in a series of conspiracy books distributed globally by a New Zealand author and available to all in public libraries here.

Prime Minister Helen Clark and husband Peter Davis bear the brunt of Auckland writer Greg Hallett's claims, as does Chief Justice Dame Sian Elias, several MP's including Police Minister Annette King and Speaker of the House Margaret Wilson, and media stars Paul Holmes and Anita McNaught.

Many of the allegations are of a sexual nature and so outlandish they are laughable, not withstanding that Hallett promotes them as fact in his books and on worldwide Web radio.

And the well-presented Auckland architect Hallett does not pull any punches when it comes to world figures and his wacky version of historical events either.

The books claim prominent people throughout history are part of a cross-generational plot to dominate and force a new world order on the unsuspecting masses.

But former prime minister and president of the Law Commission Sir Geoffrey Palmer says the books are probably still circulating because no one takes them seriously.

"You could get orders suppressing the books. This is defamation ... it is a published libel now – (but) who wants to spend money to pursue them?" says Sir Geoffrey.

"You can never disprove a conspiracy. It's not possible because you have to prove a negative. People who want to believe them do, but the vast majority with common sense don't take that stuff seriously."

This month Truth discovered Mohamed Al Fayed, owner of iconic London store Harrods, bought five copies of Hallett's 550-page tome Hitler Was a British Agent, with an accompanying letter saying he was interested in further works.

Al Fayed is embroiled in what is the world's most sensational inquest into the car crash deaths of his son Dodi and Princess Diana. He claims there was a conspiracy led by the British royal family.

Hallett and unidentifiable co-writer "The Spymaster" have written How To Take Over The World – A Right Royal Con; Stalin's British training – Paedophiles at War; Hitler Was a British Agent; and Are You My Father? The Family Court and Other Experiments.

He says he is surprised no one has taken him to task over the allegations.

"It's in 24 countries. I spread it wide as a safety valve. After two years it will be an accepted work rather than considered new and dangerous. It will be supported and utilised by other writers."

■ See also page 5

Books available to all from libraries

TWO of Auckland author Greg Hallett's books are available to anyone anywhere in New Zealand through an inter-loan scheme with public libraries, National Library spokeswoman Allison Elliott says.

It is a legal requirement to file copies of all books published in New Zealand, which means Hallett's latest works, if published here, will also be available.

"We are required to receive it and make it accessible for the peoples of New Zealand – to document our heritage for the benefit of New Zealanders," Elliott says.

Hallett says his two other books have been posted to the library, as required by law.

Auckland City Libraries group manager Allison Dobbie says they also hold two of his works.

One is Are you my father? The Family Court and Other Experiments, published in 2002.

"This is widely held in New Zealand libraries. We have had no customer complaints about this work, and the 10 copies we hold are still getting reasonable use by our customers."

The other title held is Hitler Was a British Agent.

"Auckland City Libraries holds one copy of this work available for customers to request and borrow. We have received one complaint about the work," Dobbie says.

"Looking at the work it is clear that it is not an example of orthodox scholarship.

"But it is quite common for customers to want to read a controversial title, particularly if published in New Zealand."

Dobbie says the presence of an item in the collection does not indicate an endorsement of its contents by Auckland City Libraries, but rather is an affirmation of the principle of intellectual freedom.

The library's collection development policy says it "will endeavour to make available to its users a balanced presentation of all sides of any controversial issues.

"Materials are acquired that represent varying points of view so that members of the community may be informed and make individual judgements.

"In upholding these principles it is accepted that while people have the right to reject for themselves material of which they do not approve, they do not have the right to restrict the freedom of others," it says.

THE QUEEN: A
is the Govern
personal repres
Queen Elizabet
answer questio
went to print
allegations the
ily should be
because they
an incestuous
control all wars

POLICE MINI
KING: No com
tions of dishi
cocaine for th
tribute to gang
retary, John S
not say if she
questions or
lett's books.
did not return

RUSSIAN PRESIDENT VLADIMIR PUTIN: In cahoots with Clark and Wilson while working as fisheries officer in Wellington from 1980-82.

MICKEY MOUSE: Disneyland founder Walt Disney is accused of financing Germany during WWII. Not a squeak.

SPEAKER OF THE HOUSE MARGARET WILSON: Would not speak to NZ Truth Weekly. Accused of being a KGB operative who planned to nuke US property.

SU
NAME:

New Zealand Truth, 22 March 2007, p. 5:

"**PRIME MINISTER HELEN CLARK**:
KGB operative/contract killer.
Not available for comment . . .

CHIEF JUSTICE DAME SIAN ELIAS: Accussed of being a contract killer who is gifting the South Island to China. No comment. [Israel actually.]

POLICE MINISTER ANNETTE KING: No comment on accusations of dishing out 10kg of cocaine [Afghan heroin actually] for the police to distribute to gangs. Her press secretary, John Saunders . . . hung up and did not return calls."

HOUSE SPEAKER MARGARET WILSON: Accused of being a KGB operative who planned to nuke US property." [and Taupo.]

RUSSIAN PRESIDENT VLADIMIR PUTIN: In cahoots with Clark and Wilson while working as fisheries officer in Wellington from 1980–82. [They met under Wharf # 3.]

• Prime Minister Helen Clark was born male [conceived male with Androgen Insensitivity Syndrome Grade 4/5], was trained as a KGB operative and held secret talks in the 1980s with Russian President Vladimir Putin, who was . . . undercover as a Wellington fisheries inspector.

• With Speaker of the House Margaret Wilson, the three allegedly planned a nuclear strike on American property from a Russian nuclear-armed submarine in New Zealand waters.

• Chief Justice Sian Elias and Helen Clark contracted Israeli Mossad agents to kill writer and historian Michael King, Sir Peter Elworthy and Green MP Rod Donald."

THE QUEEN: Anand Satyanand is the Governor-General and personal representative here of Queen Elizabeth II. He did not answer questions before Truth went to print about Hallett's allegations the British royal family should be sent into exile because they are a subset of an incestuous bloodline who control all wars.

PRIME MINISTER HELEN CLARK: KGB operative/contract killer. Not available for comment when Truth went to print.

CHIEF JUSTICE DAME SIAN ELIAS: Accused of being a contract killer who is gifting the South Island to China. No comment.

POLICE MINISTER ANNETTE KING: No comment on accusations of dishing out 10kg of cocaine for the police to distribute to gangs. Her press secretary, John Saunders, would not say if she had received our questions or is aware of Hallett's books. He hung up and did not return calls.

NAZI DICTATOR ADOLF HITLER: British agent from an incestuous bloodline connected with the British royal family. Unable to comment.

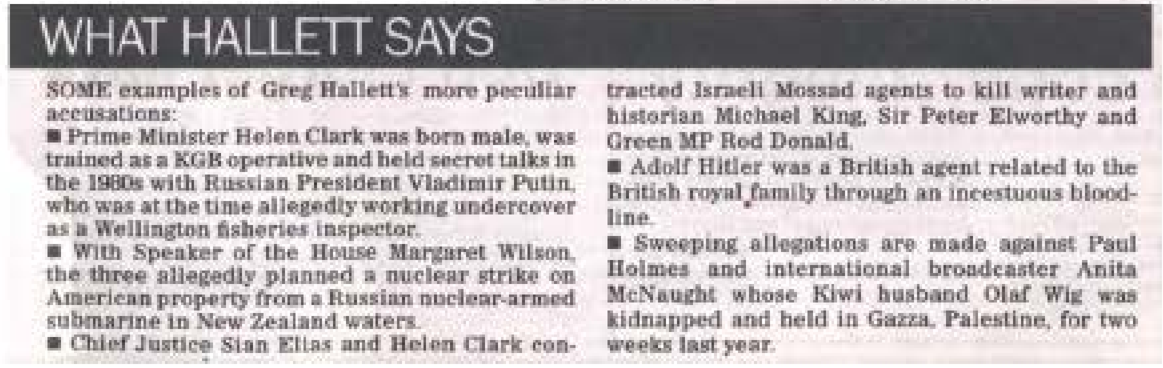

WHAT HALLETT SAYS

SOME examples of Greg Hallett's more peculiar accusations:

- Prime Minister Helen Clark was born male, was trained as a KGB operative and held secret talks in the 1980s with Russian President Vladimir Putin, who was at the time allegedly working undercover as a Wellington fisheries inspector.
- With Speaker of the House Margaret Wilson, the three allegedly planned a nuclear strike on American property from a Russian nuclear-armed submarine in New Zealand waters.
- Chief Justice Sian Elias and Helen Clark contracted Israeli Mossad agents to kill writer and historian Michael King, Sir Peter Elworthy and Green MP Rod Donald.
- Adolf Hitler was a British agent related to the British royal family through an incestuous bloodline.
- Sweeping allegations are made against Paul Holmes and international broadcaster Anita McNaught whose Kiwi husband Olaf Wig was kidnapped and held in Gazza, Palestine, for two weeks last year.

Blacklisting

Hobbling and Boiler-Plating

Blacklisting : to stop someone's career from taking off; to interfer in their relationships so that they cannot breed; to prevent good fortune; to sabotage happiness; to ensure no promotion; to segregate from the community; to relegate from society; to place a black mark against one's name; to judge unfairly.

Hobbling : to impede and hamper progress; to harness a person as though their legs were tied together; to place a person in an awkward situation, and a series of difficult situations; to carve up someone's future on uneven ground; to judge unfairly.

Boiler-Plating : to put someone in a continual state of fear through untraceable events, often using NTO's (Non-Traceable Operatives) so that the target is hobbled and the result is blacklisted; to create crime in the target's name; to convict without warrant; to judge unfairly.

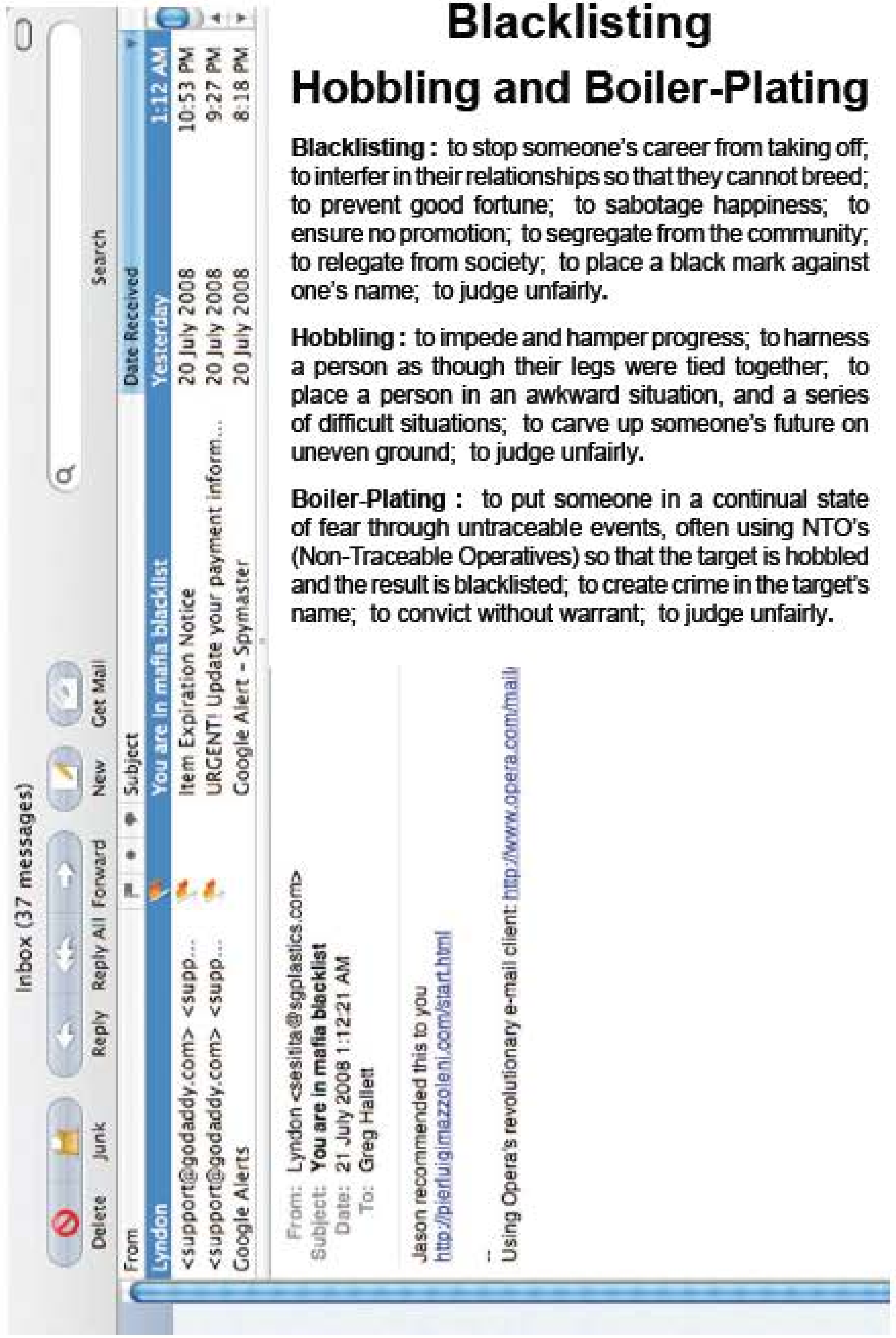

From	Subject	Date Received	
Lyndon	You are in mafia blacklist	Yesterday	1:12 AM
<support@godaddy.com> <supp...	Item Expiration Notice	20 July 2008	10:53 PM
<support@godaddy.com> <supp...	URGENT! Update your payment inform...	20 July 2008	9:27 PM
Google Alerts	Google Alert - Spymaster	20 July 2008	8:18 PM

From: Lyndon <sesilta@sgplastics.com>
Subject: **You are in mafia blacklist**
Date: 21 July 2008 1:12:21 AM
To: Greg Hallett

Jason recommended this to you
http://pierluigimazzoleni.com/start.html

--
Using Opera's revolutionary e-mail client: http://www.opera.com/mail/

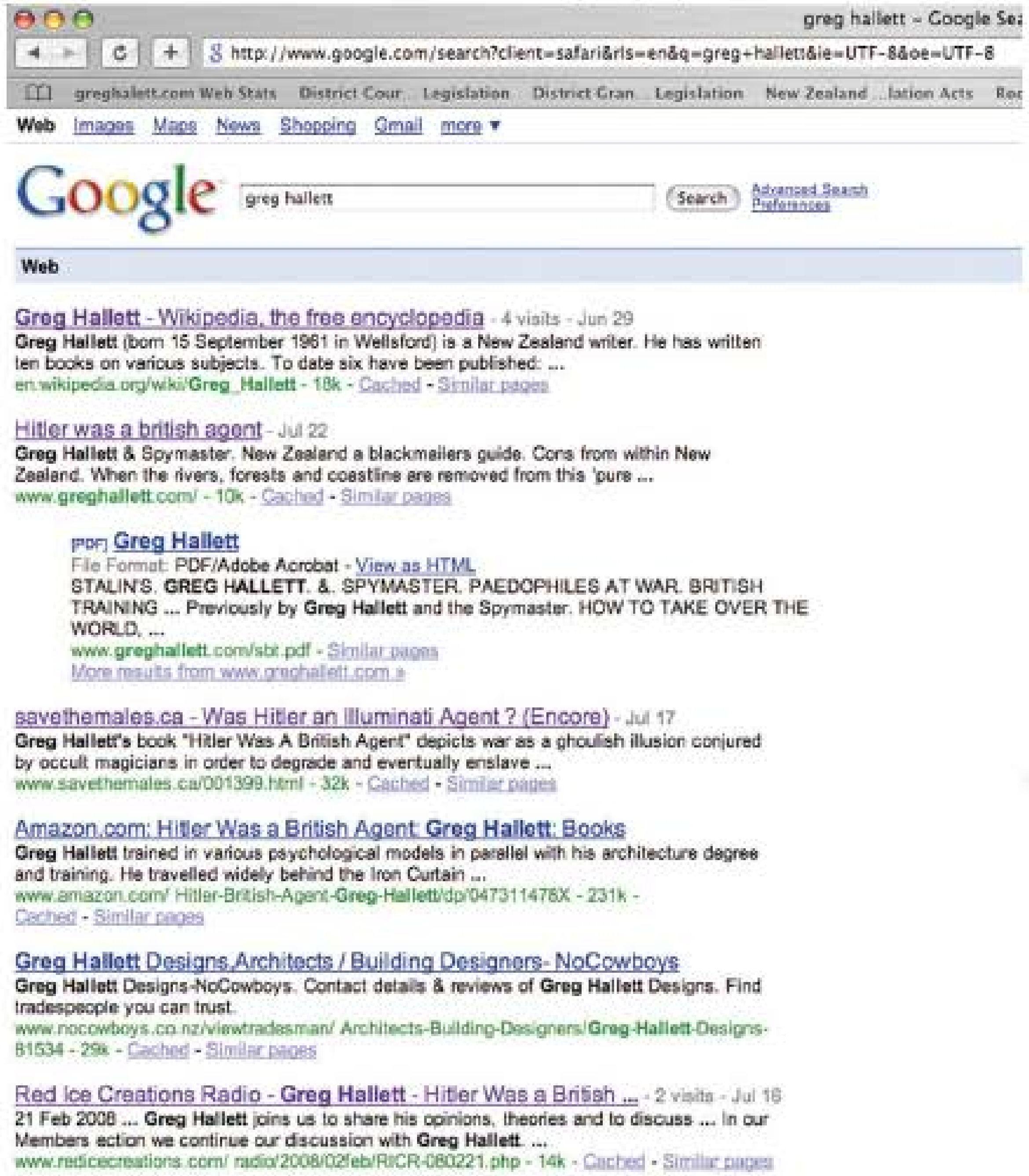
greg hallett – Google Sea
http://www.google.com/search?client=safari&rls=en&q=greg+hallett&ie=UTF-8&oe=UTF-8
greghallett.com Web Stats
District Cour...
Legislation
District Gran...
Legislation
New Zealand ...lation Acts
Web
Images
Maps
News
Shopping
Gmail
more ▾
Google
greg hallett
Search
Advanced Search
Preferences
Web

Greg Hallett - Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia - 4 visits - Jun 29
Greg Hallett (born 15 September 1961 in Wellsford) is a New Zealand writer. He has written ten books on various subjects. To date six have been published: ...
en.wikipedia.org/wiki/**Greg_Hallett** - 18k - Cached - Similar pages

Hitler was a british agent - Jul 22
Greg Hallett & Spymaster. New Zealand a blackmailers guide. Cons from within New Zealand. When the rivers, forests and coastline are removed from this 'pure ...
www.**greghallett**.com/ - 10k - Cached - Similar pages

[PDF] Greg Hallett
File Format: PDF/Adobe Acrobat - View as HTML
STALIN'S. **GREG HALLETT**. &. SPYMASTER. PAEDOPHILES AT WAR. BRITISH TRAINING ... Previously by **Greg Hallett** and the Spymaster. HOW TO TAKE OVER THE WORLD, ...
www.**greghallett**.com/sbt.pdf - Similar pages
More results from www.greghallett.com »

savethemales.ca - Was Hitler an Illuminati Agent ? (Encore) - Jul 17
Greg Hallett's book "Hitler Was A British Agent" depicts war as a ghoulish illusion conjured by occult magicians in order to degrade and eventually enslave ...
www.savethemales.ca/001399.html - 32k - Cached - Similar pages

Amazon.com: Hitler Was a British Agent: **Greg Hallett**: Books
Greg Hallett trained in various psychological models in parallel with his architecture degree and training. He travelled widely behind the Iron Curtain ...
www.amazon.com/ Hitler-British-Agent-**Greg-Hallett**/dp/047311478X - 231k - Cached - Similar pages

Greg Hallett Designs,Architects / Building Designers- NoCowboys
Greg Hallett Designs-NoCowboys. Contact details & reviews of **Greg Hallett** Designs. Find tradespeople you can trust.
www.nocowboys.co.nz/viewtradesman/ Architects-Building-Designers/**Greg-Hallett**-Designs-81534 - 29k - Cached - Similar pages

Red Ice Creations Radio - **Greg Hallett** - Hitler Was a British ... - 2 visits - Jul 16
21 Feb 2008 ... **Greg Hallett** joins us to share his opinions, theories and to discuss ... In our Members section we continue our discussion with **Greg Hallett**. ...
www.redicecreations.com/ radio/2008/02feb/RICR-080221.php - 14k - Cached - Similar pages

Commensurate with the ongoing defamation by government departments, Google search for "Greg Hallett" on 27 July 2008 shows the Nomore Cowboys listing of "Greg Hallett" comes 6th. The 28 July 2008 Nomore Cowboys listing of "Greg Hallett" comes 9th. If you Google "Greg Hallett", I fill up to 70% of 10 pages, so 6th and 9th are very prominent listings. It means a lot of people are looking at the Nomore Cowboys listing.

Since people search for my website about every 6 minutes, and I get a hit on my website about every hour, this Nomore Cowboys listing of "Greg Hallett" is highly defamatory. It is limiting my book and architecture sales, and the credibility of my interviews.

I checked the shareholders of Nomore Cowboys and many are lawyers. I presume they are attacking people they are instructed to attack by judges who have been instructed to attack.

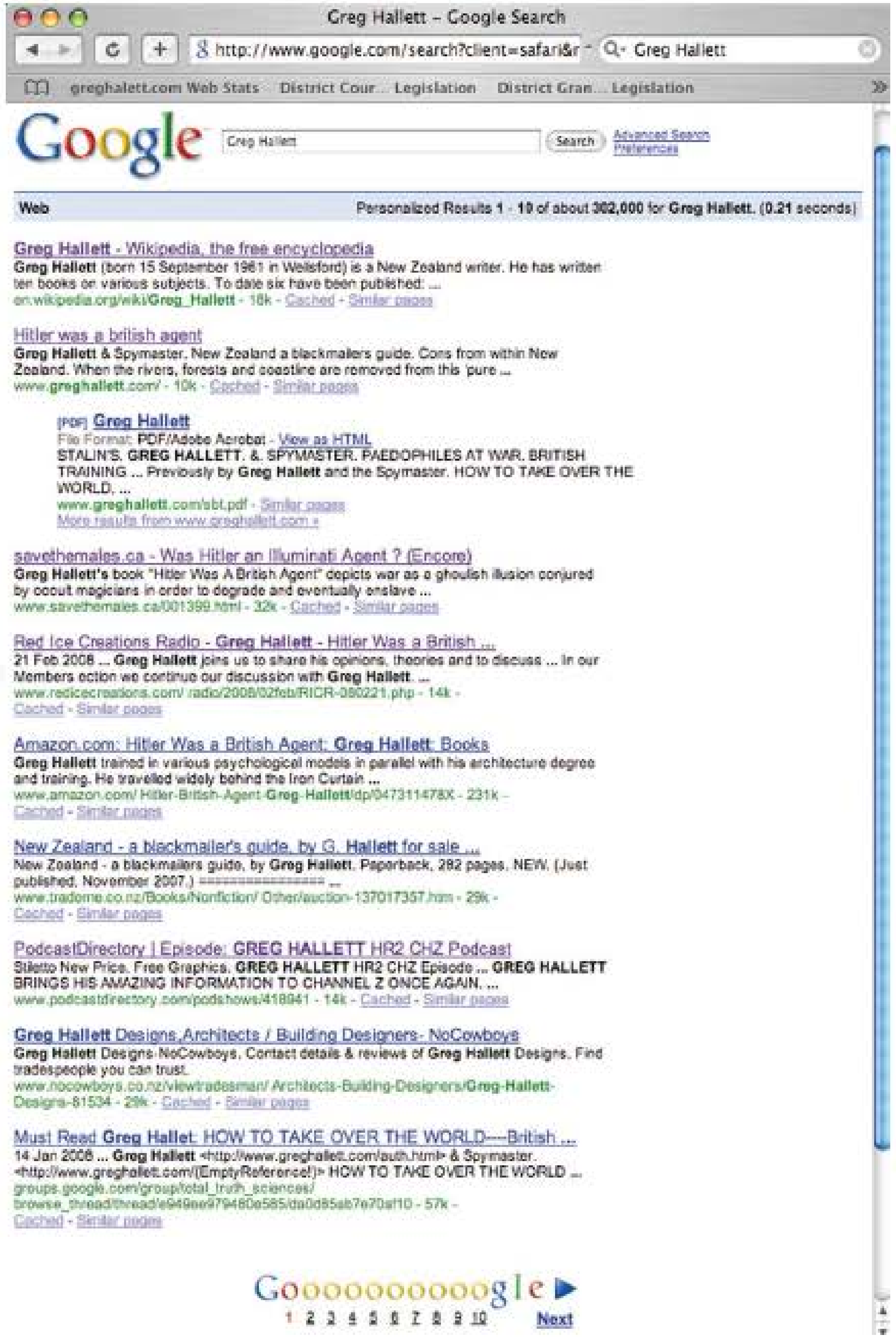

Personalized Results 1 - 10 of about 302,000 for **Greg Hallett**. (0.21 seconds)

Greg Hallett - Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia
Greg Hallett (born 15 September 1961 in Wellsford) is a New Zealand writer. He has written ten books on various subjects. To date six have been published: ...
en.wikipedia.org/wiki/**Greg_Hallett** - 18k - Cached - Similar pages

Hitler was a british agent
Greg Hallett & Spymaster. New Zealand a blackmailers guide. Cons from within New Zealand. When the rivers, forests and coastline are removed from this 'pure ...
www.**greghallett**.com/ - 10k - Cached - Similar pages

[PDF] Greg Hallett
File Format: PDF/Adobe Acrobat - View as HTML
STALIN'S. **GREG HALLETT**. &. SPYMASTER. PAEDOPHILES AT WAR. BRITISH TRAINING ... Previously by **Greg Hallett** and the Spymaster. HOW TO TAKE OVER THE WORLD, ...
www.**greghallett**.com/sbt.pdf - Similar pages
More results from www.greghallett.com »

savethemales.ca - Was Hitler an Illuminati Agent ? (Encore)
Greg Hallett's book "Hitler Was A British Agent" depicts war as a ghoulish illusion conjured by occult magicians in order to degrade and eventually enslave ...
www.savethemales.ca/001399.html - 32k - Cached - Similar pages

Red Ice Creations Radio - **Greg Hallett** - Hitler Was a British ...
21 Feb 2008 ... **Greg Hallett** joins us to share his opinions, theories and to discuss ... In our Members section we continue our discussion with **Greg Hallett**. ...
www.redicecreations.com/ radio/2008/02feb/RICR-080221.php - 14k - Cached - Similar pages

Amazon.com: Hitler Was a British Agent: **Greg Hallett**: Books
Greg Hallett trained in various psychological models in parallel with his architecture degree and training. He travelled widely behind the Iron Curtain ...
www.amazon.com/ Hitler-British-Agent-**Greg-Hallett**/dp/047311478X - 231k - Cached - Similar pages

New Zealand - a blackmailer's guide, by G. **Hallett** for sale ...
New Zealand - a blackmailers guide, by **Greg Hallett**. Paperback, 282 pages, NEW. (Just published, November 2007.) ================ ...
www.trademe.co.nz/Books/Nonfiction/ Other/auction-137017357.htm - 29k - Cached - Similar pages

PodcastDirectory | Episode: **GREG HALLETT** HR2 CHZ Podcast
Stiletto New Price. Free Graphics. **GREG HALLETT** HR2 CHZ Episode ... **GREG HALLETT** BRINGS HIS AMAZING INFORMATION TO CHANNEL Z ONCE AGAIN. ...
www.podcastdirectory.com/podshows/418941 - 14k - Cached - Similar pages

Greg Hallett Designs,Architects / Building Designers- NoCowboys
Greg Hallett Designs-NoCowboys. Contact details & reviews of **Greg Hallett** Designs. Find tradespeople you can trust.
www.nocowboys.co.nz/viewtradesman/ Architects-Building-Designers/**Greg-Hallett**-Designs-81534 - 29k - Cached - Similar pages

Must Read **Greg Hallet**: HOW TO TAKE OVER THE WORLD---British ...
14 Jan 2008 ... **Greg Hallett** <http://www.greghallett.com/auth.html> & Spymaster. <http://www.greghallett.com/(EmptyReference!)> HOW TO TAKE OVER THE WORLD ...
groups.google.com/group/total_truth_sciences/ browse_thread/thread/e949ee979480e585/da0d85ab7e70af10 - 57k - Cached - Similar pages

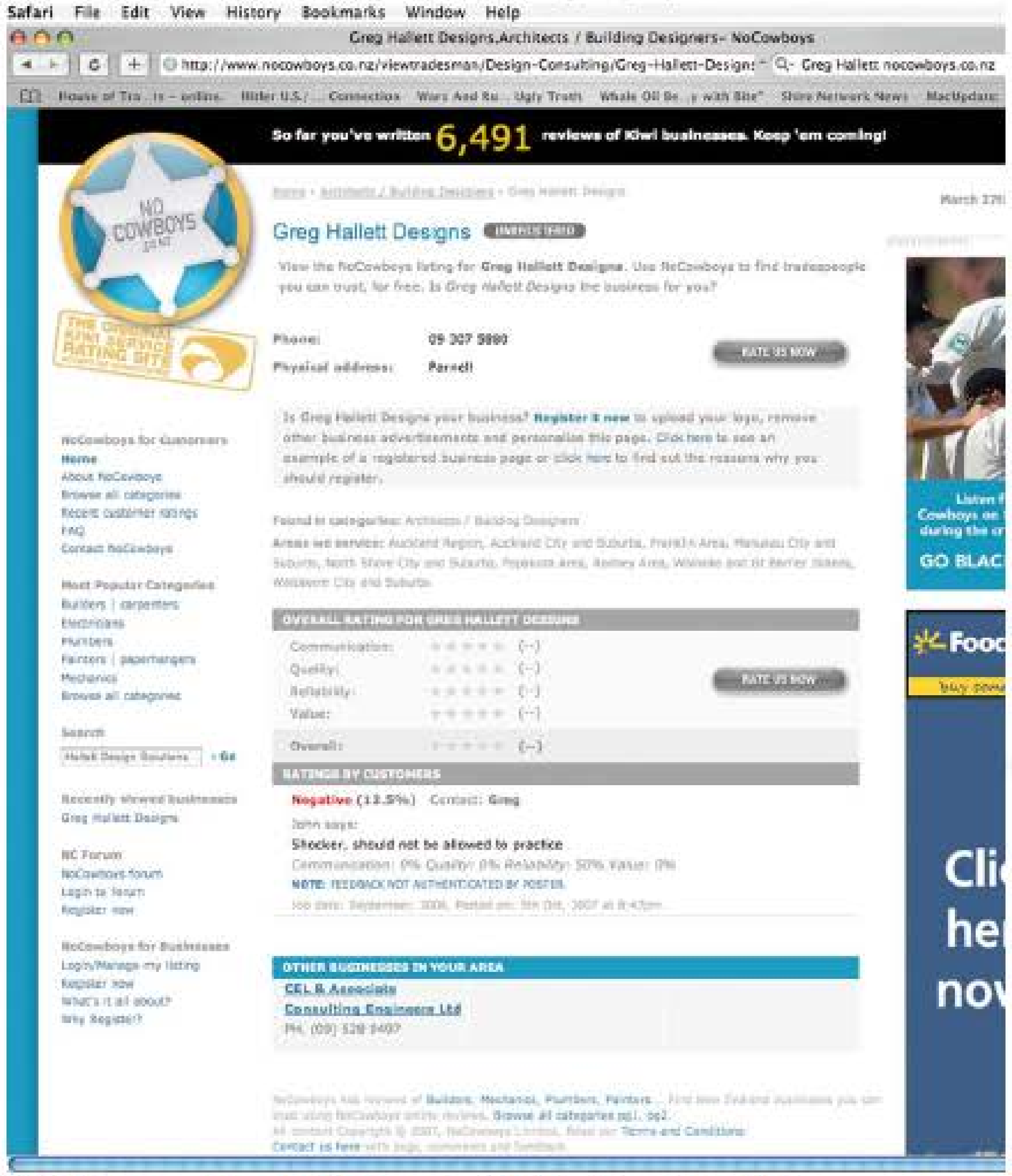
Safari File Edit View History Bookmarks Window Help
Greg Hallett Designs,Architects / Building Designers– NoCowboys
http://www.nocowboys.co.nz/viewtradesman/Design-Consulting/Greg-Hallett-Design
So far you've written 6,491 reviews of Kiwi businesses. Keep 'em coming!
NO COWBOYS
RATE US NOW
GO BLAC

Greg Hallett Designs

View the NoCowboys listing for **Greg Hallett Designs**. Use NoCowboys to find tradespeople you can trust, for free. Is Greg Hallett Designs the business for you?

Phone: 09 307 9880
Physical address: Parnell

Is Greg Hallett Designs your business? **Register it now** to upload your logo, remove other business advertisements and personalise this page. Click here to see an example of a registered business page or click here to find out the reasons why you should register.

Found in categories: Architects / Building Designers

OVERALL RATING FOR GREG HALLETT DESIGNS

Communication: (--)
Quality: (--)
Reliability: (--)
Value: (--)
Overall: (--)

RATINGS BY CUSTOMERS

Negative (12.5%) Contact: Greg

John says:

Shocker, should not be allowed to practice

Communication: 0% Quality: 0% Reliability: 50% Value: 0%

NOTE: FEEDBACK NOT AUTHENTICATED BY POSTER.

OTHER BUSINESSES IN YOUR AREA

CEL & Associats
Consulting Engineers Ltd
PH. (09) 528 9497

"John" of no surname says: "Shocker, should not be allowed to practice".

But who is John?

The listing may not be someone who has employed me, but a personal attack, as I don't operate as "Greg Hallett Designs", but as "Hallett Design Solutions Limited".

Had there been a Nomore Cowboys listing against Hallett Design Solutions Limited, it would hardly have shown on Google.

I strongly suspect "John" is working the defamation on behalf of the judiciary, like 'Judge Johnny Hole'. Since the attacks began in earnest, my income has dropped to 15% of what it was. This is over the last 10 years, so that's about NZ$1.4 million lost.

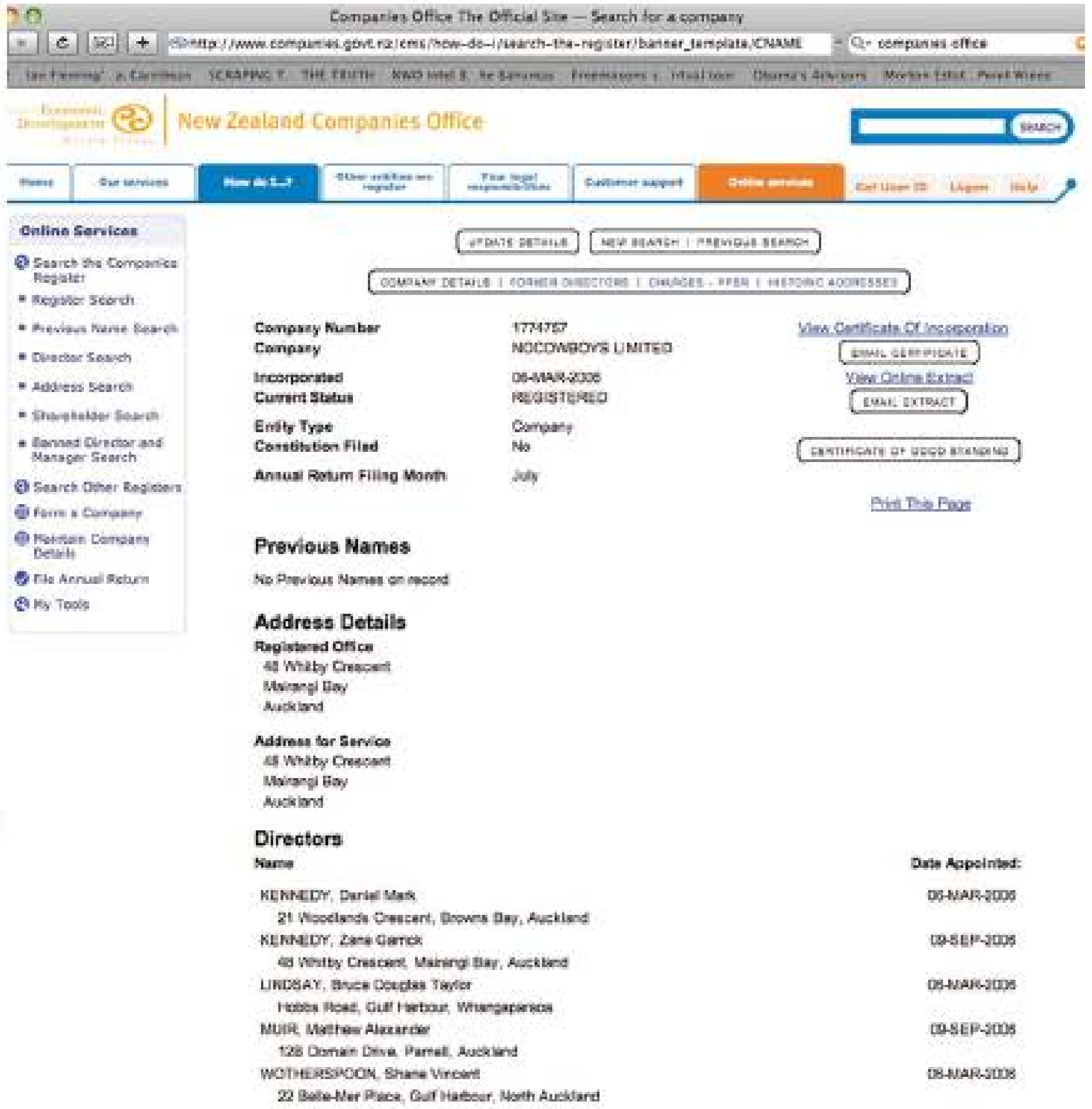
Companies Office The Official Site — Search for a company
http://www.companies.govt.nz/cms/how-do-i/search-the-register/banner_template/CNAME
New Zealand Companies Office
Online Services
Search the Companies Register
Register Search
Previous Name Search
Director Search
Address Search
Shareholder Search
Banned Director and Manager Search
Search Other Registers
Form a Company
Maintain Company Details
File Annual Return
My Tools
UPDATE DETAILS
NEW SEARCH | PREVIOUS SEARCH
COMPANY DETAILS | FORMER DIRECTORS | CHARGES - PPSR | HISTORIC ADDRESSES
View Certificate Of Incorporation
EMAIL CERTIFICATE
View Online Extract
EMAIL EXTRACT
CERTIFICATE OF GOOD STANDING
Print This Page

Company Number 1774757
Company NOCOWBOYS LIMITED
Incorporated 08-MAR-2006
Current Status REGISTERED
Entity Type Company
Constitution Filed No
Annual Return Filing Month July

Previous Names

No Previous Names on record

Address Details

Registered Office
48 Whitby Crescent
Mairangi Bay
Auckland

Address for Service
48 Whitby Crescent
Mairangi Bay
Auckland

Directors

Name	Date Appointed:
KENNEDY, Daniel Mark 21 Woodlands Crescent, Browns Bay, Auckland	08-MAR-2006
KENNEDY, Zane Garrick 48 Whitby Crescent, Mairangi Bay, Auckland	09-SEP-2006
LINDSAY, Bruce Douglas Taylor Hobbs Road, Gulf Harbour, Whangaparaoa	08-MAR-2006
MUIR, Matthew Alexander 128 Domain Drive, Parnell, Auckland	09-SEP-2006
WOTHERSPOON, Shane Vincent 22 Belle-Mer Place, Gulf Harbour, North Auckland	08-MAR-2006

NoCowboys/ www.nocowboys.co.nz/ NOCOWBOYS LIMITED on the Companies Office.

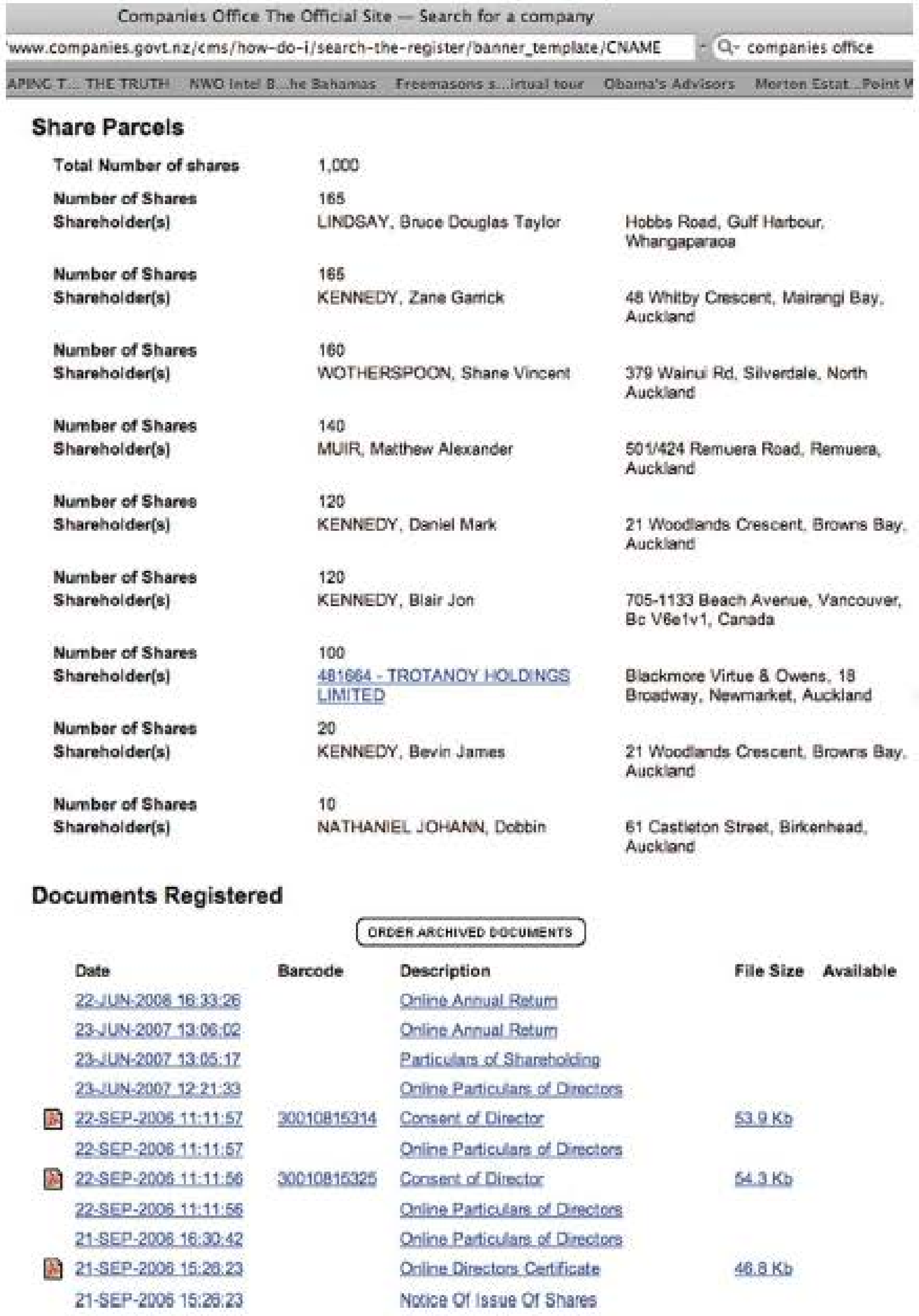
Companies Office The Official Site — Search for a company
www.companies.govt.nz/cms/how-do-i/search-the-register/banner_template/CNAME
companies office
APING T... THE TRUTH
NWO Intel B...he Bahamas
Freemasons s...irtual tour
Obama's Advisors
Morten Estat...Point W

Share Parcels

Total Number of shares	1,000	
Number of Shares	165	
Shareholder(s)	LINDSAY, Bruce Douglas Taylor	Hobbs Road, Gulf Harbour, Whangaparaoa
Number of Shares	165	
Shareholder(s)	KENNEDY, Zane Garrick	48 Whitby Crescent, Mairangi Bay, Auckland
Number of Shares	160	
Shareholder(s)	WOTHERSPOON, Shane Vincent	379 Wainui Rd, Silverdale, North Auckland
Number of Shares	140	
Shareholder(s)	MUIR, Matthew Alexander	501/424 Remuera Road, Remuera, Auckland
Number of Shares	120	
Shareholder(s)	KENNEDY, Daniel Mark	21 Woodlands Crescent, Browns Bay, Auckland
Number of Shares	120	
Shareholder(s)	KENNEDY, Blair Jon	705-1133 Beach Avenue, Vancouver, Bc V6e1v1, Canada
Number of Shares	100	
Shareholder(s)	481664 - TROTANOY HOLDINGS LIMITED	Blackmore Virtue & Owens, 18 Broadway, Newmarket, Auckland
Number of Shares	20	
Shareholder(s)	KENNEDY, Bevin James	21 Woodlands Crescent, Browns Bay, Auckland
Number of Shares	10	
Shareholder(s)	NATHANIEL JOHANN, Dobbin	61 Castleton Street, Birkenhead, Auckland

Documents Registered

ORDER ARCHIVED DOCUMENTS

Date	Barcode	Description	File Size	Available
22-JUN-2008 16:33:26		Online Annual Return		
23-JUN-2007 13:06:02		Online Annual Return		
23-JUN-2007 13:05:17		Particulars of Shareholding		
23-JUN-2007 12:21:33		Online Particulars of Directors		
22-SEP-2006 11:11:57	30010815314	Consent of Director	53.9 Kb	
22-SEP-2006 11:11:57		Online Particulars of Directors		
22-SEP-2006 11:11:56	30010815325	Consent of Director	54.3 Kb	
22-SEP-2006 11:11:56		Online Particulars of Directors		
21-SEP-2006 16:30:42		Online Particulars of Directors		
21-SEP-2006 15:26:23		Online Directors Certificate	46.8 Kb	
21-SEP-2006 15:26:23		Notice Of Issue Of Shares		

NoCowboys/ www.nocowboys.co.nz/ NOCOWBOYS LIMITED on the Companies Office.

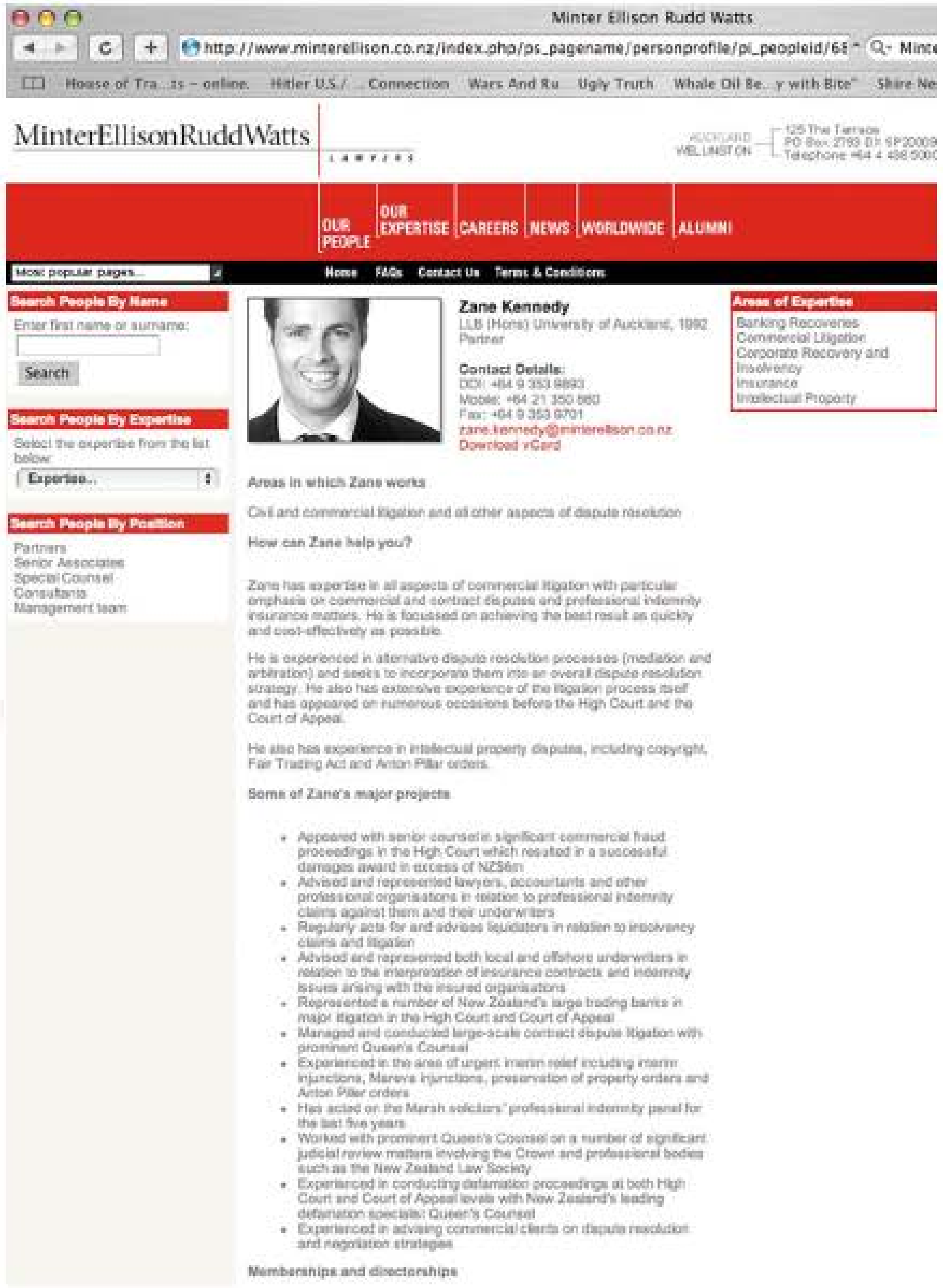
Minter Ellison Rudd Watts
http://www.minterellison.co.nz/index.php/ps_pagename/personprofile/pi_peopleid/68
Minte
House of Tra...s – online.
Hitler U.S./ ... Connection
Wars And Ru
Ugly Truth
Whale Oil Be...y with Bite"
Shire Ne
MinterEllisonRuddWatts
LAWYERS
OUR PEOPLE
OUR EXPERTISE
CAREERS
NEWS
WORLDWIDE
ALUMNI
Most popular pages...
Home
FAQs
Contact Us
Terms & Conditions
Search People By Name
Enter first name or surname:
Search
Search People By Expertise
Select the expertise from the list below
Expertise...
Search People By Position
Partners
Senior Associates
Special Counsel
Consultants
Management team
Areas of Expertise
Banking Recoveries
Commercial Litigation
Corporate Recovery and Insolvency
Insurance
Intellectual Property
Download vCard

Zane Kennedy
LLB (Hons) University of Auckland, 1992
Partner

Contact Details:
DDI: +64 9 353 9893
Mobile: +64 21 350 860
Fax: +64 9 353 9701
zane.kennedy@minterellison.co.nz

Areas in which Zane works

Civil and commercial litigation and all other aspects of dispute resolution

How can Zane help you?

Zane has expertise in all aspects of commercial litigation with particular emphasis on commercial and contract disputes and professional indemnity insurance matters. He is focussed on achieving the best result as quickly and cost-effectively as possible.

He is experienced in alternative dispute resolution processes (mediation and arbitration) and seeks to incorporate them into an overall dispute resolution strategy. He also has extensive experience of the litigation process itself and has appeared on numerous occasions before the High Court and the Court of Appeal.

He also has experience in intellectual property disputes, including copyright, Fair Trading Act and Anton Piller orders.

Some of Zane's major projects

- Appeared with senior counsel in significant commercial fraud proceedings in the High Court which resulted in a successful damages award in excess of NZ$6m
- Advised and represented lawyers, accountants and other professional organisations in relation to professional indemnity claims against them and their underwriters
- Regularly acts for and advises liquidators in relation to insolvency claims and litigation
- Advised and represented both local and offshore underwriters in relation to the interpretation of insurance contracts and indemnity issues arising with the insured organisations
- Represented a number of New Zealand's large trading banks in major litigation in the High Court and Court of Appeal
- Managed and conducted large-scale contract dispute litigation with prominent Queen's Counsel
- Experienced in the area of urgent interim relief including interim injunctions, Mareva injunctions, preservation of property orders and Anton Piller orders
- Has acted on the Marsh solicitors' professional indemnity panel for the last five years
- Worked with prominent Queen's Counsel on a number of significant judicial review matters involving the Crown and professional bodies such as the New Zealand Law Society
- Experienced in conducting defamation proceedings at both High Court and Court of Appeal levels with New Zealand's leading defamation specialist Queen's Counsel
- Experienced in advising commercial clients on dispute resolution and negotiation strategies

Memberships and directorships

NOCOWBOYS LIMITED Company Director Zane KENNEDY.

I phoned the NoCowboys/ www.nocowboys.co.nz/ NOCOWBOYS LIMITED contact, Bruce Lindsay, (M 0274 280 162) and got no answer. This was followed by return silent calls from 0274 280 162 that bordered on harrassment.

Zane Kennedy was also unavailable. I tried phoning him. No response. I tried emailing him. No response. I left a message with his secretary. No response. When push comes to shove, it would appear that Zane Kennedy is a cut-and-dried legal assassin. I'm sure that by attacking me he has an easier ride with judges.

I also phoned the NoCowboys/NOCOWBOYS LIMITED accountants, Blackmore Virtue and Owens, and they were equally evasive, as if none of them could do their job.

So I contacted the defamation lawyer Chris Lahatte on 8 April 2008. He was away in Afghanistan at the time and was expected back in January, so I guess it's time to contact him again.

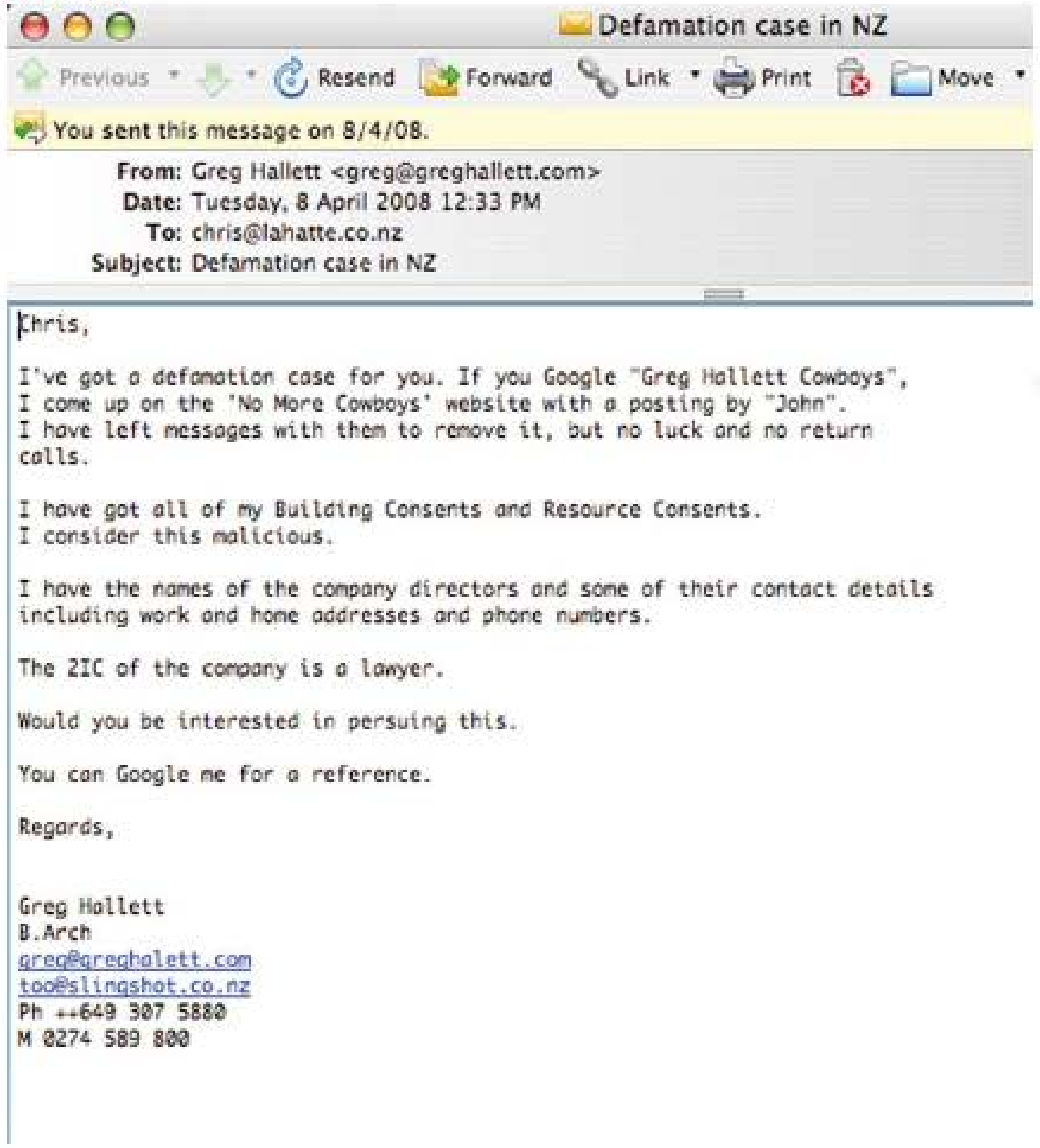

You sent this message on 8/4/08.

From: Greg Hallett <greg@greghallett.com>
Date: Tuesday, 8 April 2008 12:33 PM
To: chris@lahatte.co.nz
Subject: Defamation case in NZ

Chris,

I've got a defamation case for you. If you Google "Greg Hallett Cowboys", I come up on the 'No More Cowboys' website with a posting by "John". I have left messages with them to remove it, but no luck and no return calls.

I have got all of my Building Consents and Resource Consents. I consider this malicious.

I have the names of the company directors and some of their contact details including work and home addresses and phone numbers.

The 2IC of the company is a lawyer.

Would you be interested in persuing this.

You can Google me for a reference.

Regards,

Greg Hallett
B.Arch
greg@greghallett.com
too@slingshot.co.nz
Ph ++649 307 5880
M 0274 589 800

Following are some samples of my work as Director of Hallett Design Solutions Limited.

All of the work is virtual. That is, it is not yet built. Note the teppanyaki chef with no legs.

The last three images are photos of a house designed by me 1999 for a Landscape Road in Mt Eden, Auckland. It was built in 2000.

Bailey's Real Estate described it as "an inspirational Greg Hallett design" in 2007.

Its government valuation was four times the cost to build.

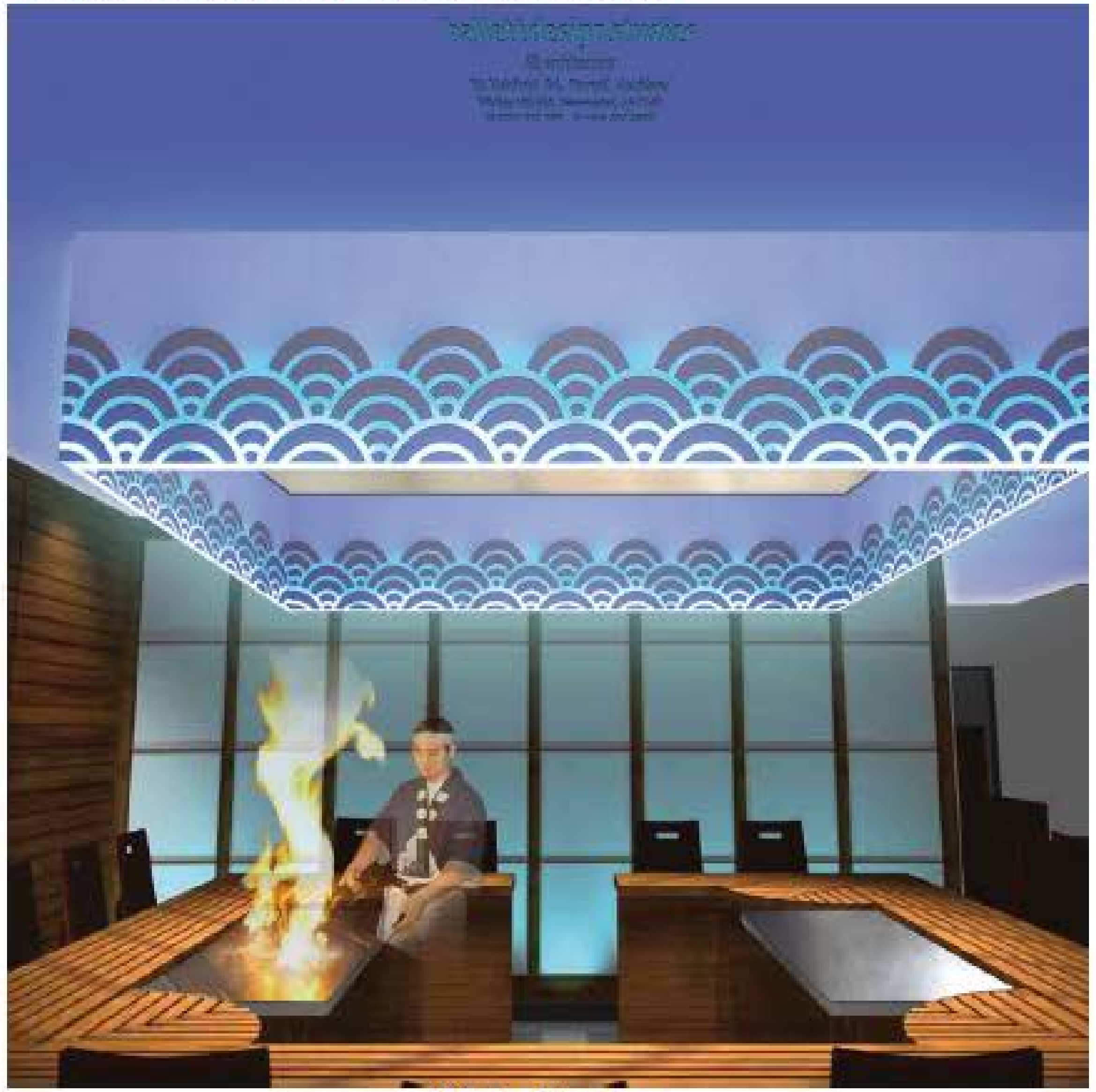

Virtual Design
(Not built but placed in a model of existing surroundings)

Blacklisting against me became so well known, clients didn't pay and preferred to take their chances and advantage in Court. This happened with this teppanyaki design. The client argued that he never received the drawings. In my cases, the judges do everything they can 'not to see the evidence', thus ensuring maximum use of the courts, maximum delays, and maximum stress – Operations Research and silent weapons for a quiet war.

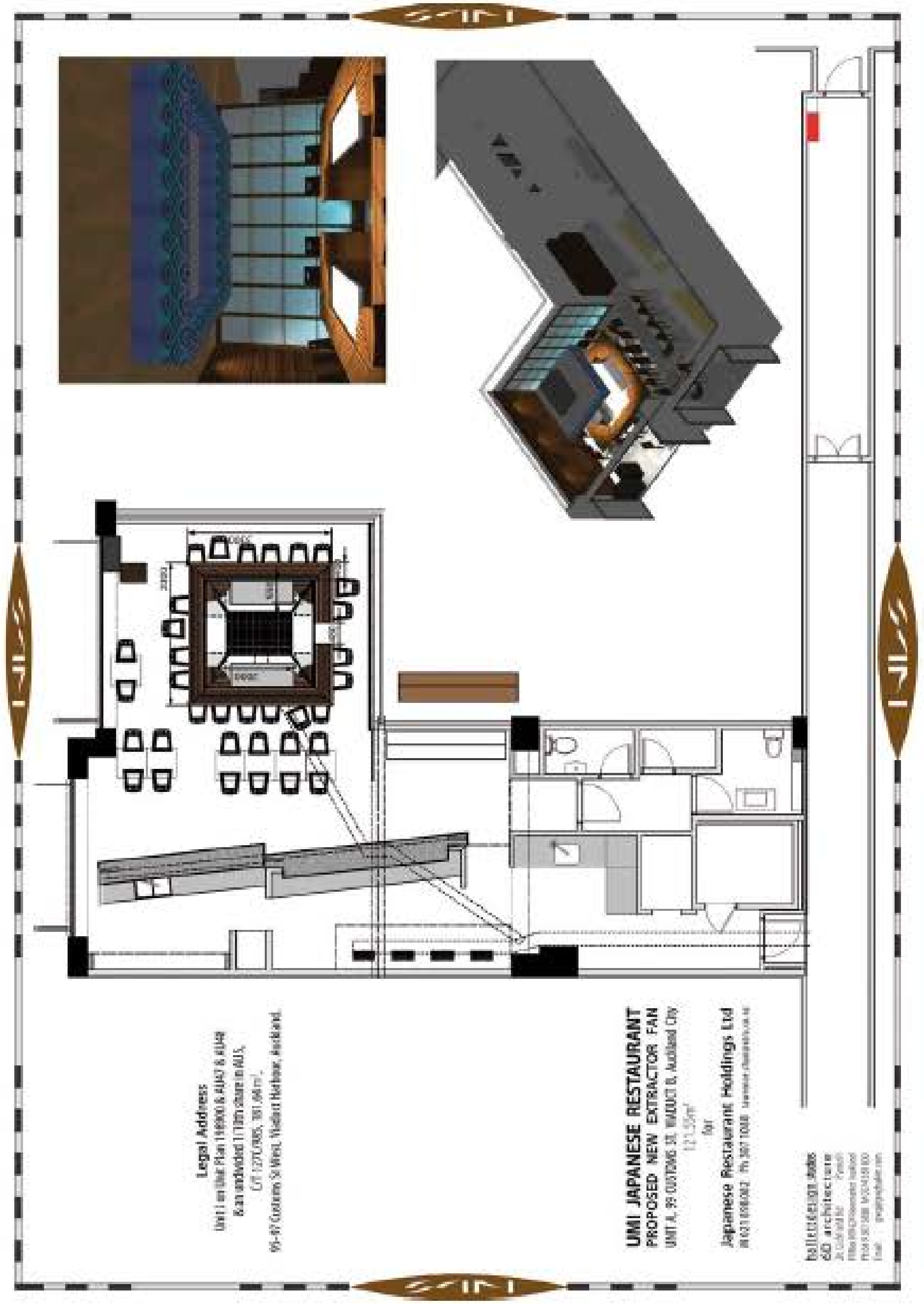
UMI JAPANESE RESTAURANT
PROPOSED NEW EXTRACTOR FAN
Japanese Restaurant Holdings Ltd
Legal Address
hallettdesign studios
6D architecture

HD STUDIOS
hallett design studios
6D architecture
26 Lichfield Rd, Parnell, Auckland

Virtual Design
(Not built but placed in a model of existing surroundings)

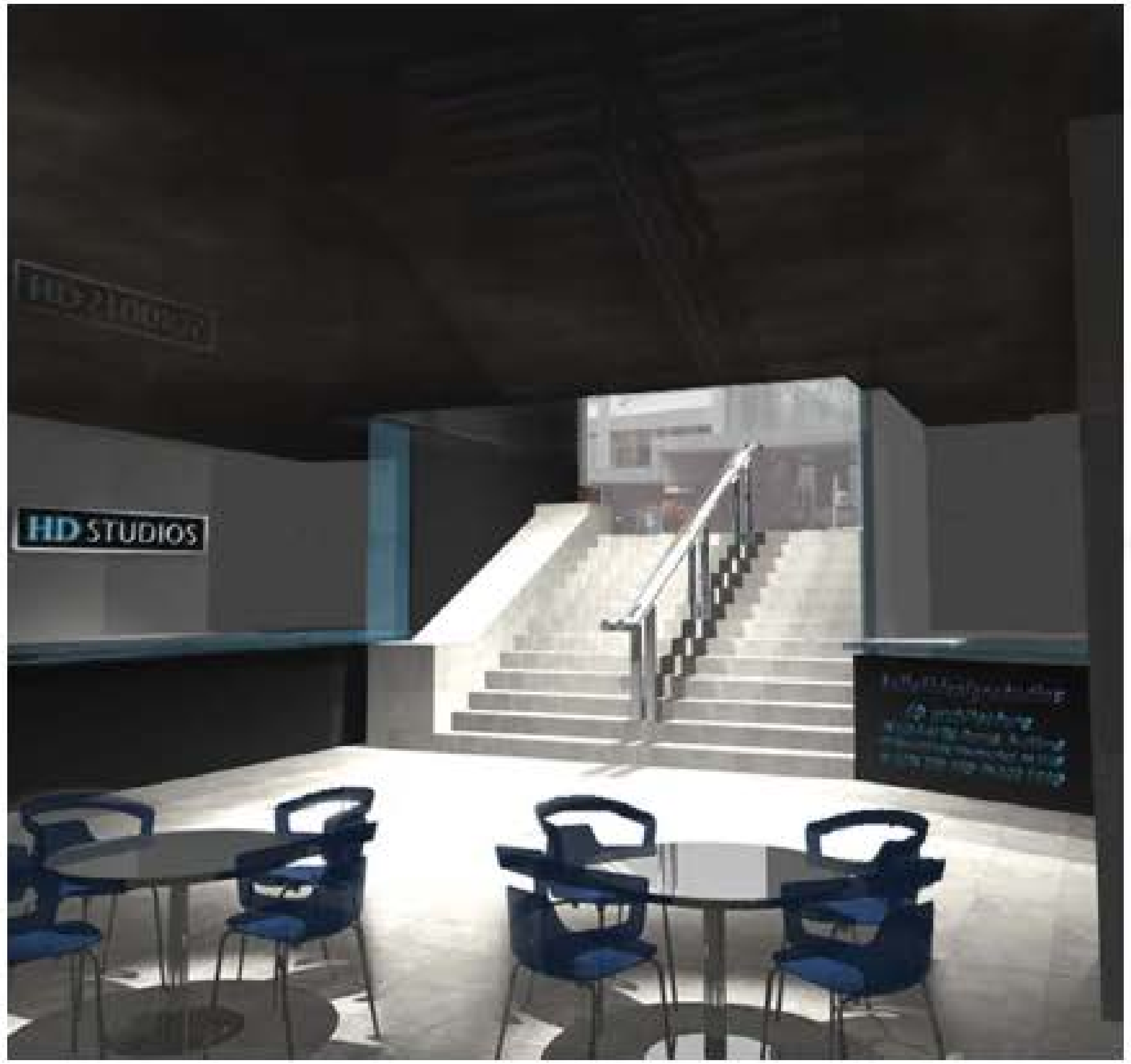
HDSTUDIOS
HD STUDIOS

Virtual Design
(Not built but placed in a model of existing surroundings)

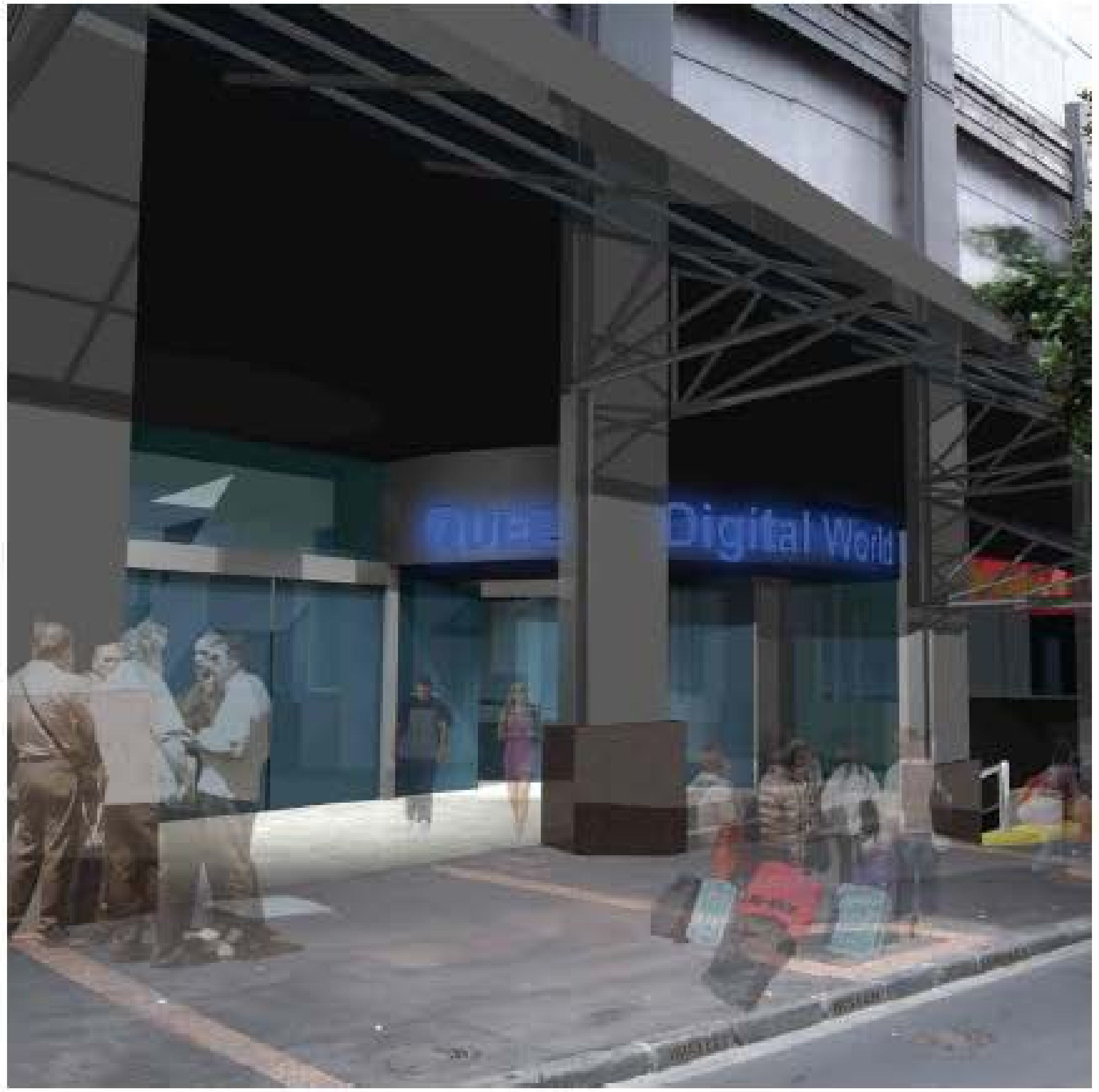
Digital World

Virtual Design
(Not built but placed in a model of existing surroundings, then built to partial specs.)

QUEEN'S Food Plaza

Virtual Design
(Not built but placed in a model of existing surroundings)

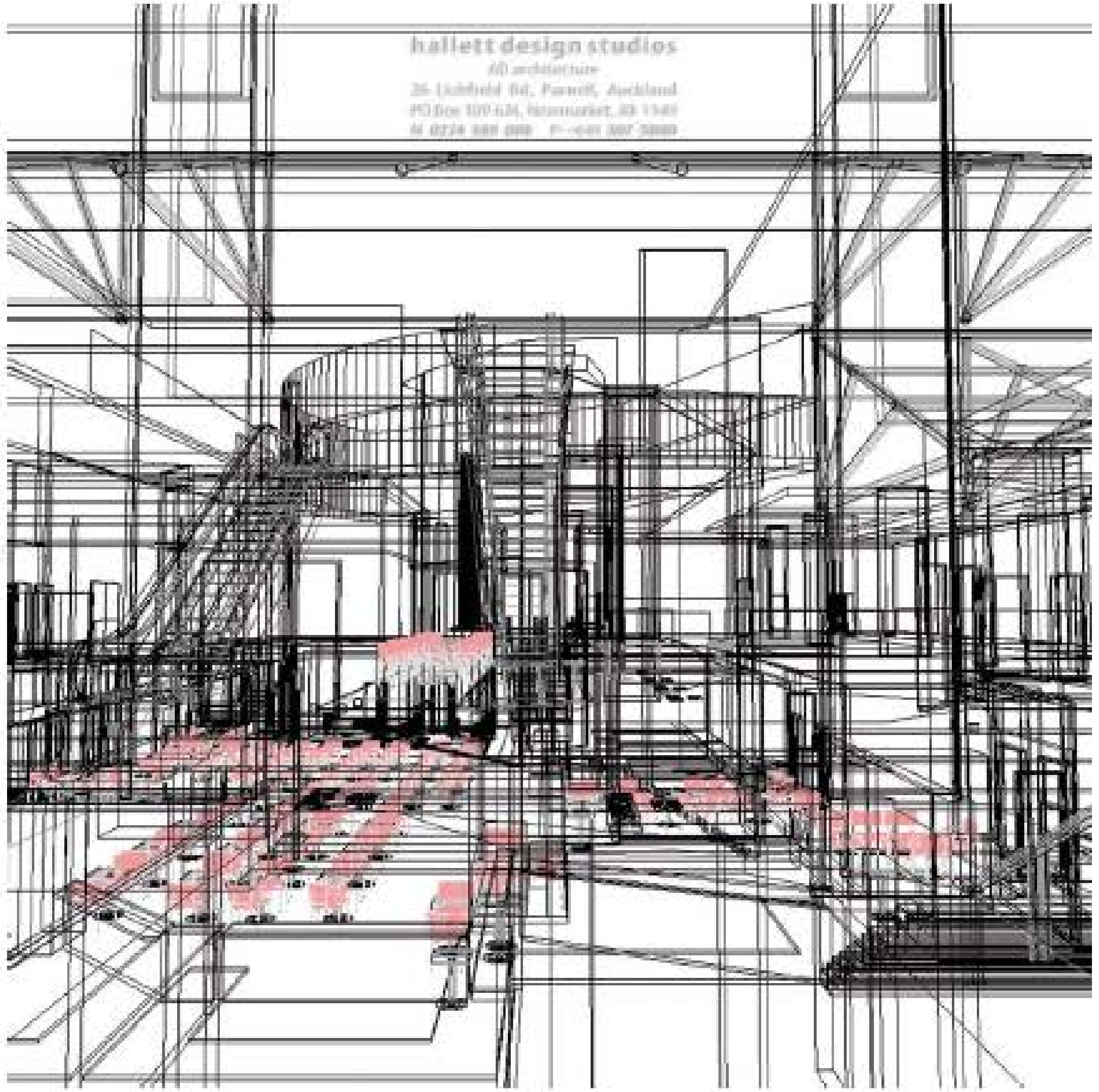
hallett design studios
26 Lichfield Rd, Parnell, Auckland

Wire Frame
(The basis of Virtual Design)

hallett design studios
architecture
Lichfield Rd, Parnell, Auckland
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Ak 1149
M 0274 589 800 F 649 307 3680

Built Dwelling
Bayleys appraised this house as “Contemporary Living for the Modern Family.”

hallett design studios

Built Dwelling
Bayleys appraised this house as “Contemporary Living for the Modern Family.”

hallett design studios

Just a pertinent note:
Judges don't understand architects and architects don't understand law.
Neither understand architectural insurance.
Judges have money and no taste. Architects have taste and no money.
Judges are envious of architects because they actually produce something real, physical and worthwhile. Architects think judges are part of the Axis of Evil . . . so judges tend to go for existing houses over 100 years old and have no understanding or experience of the process and practise of architecture . . . so in a hearing, judges always go for the kill shot.

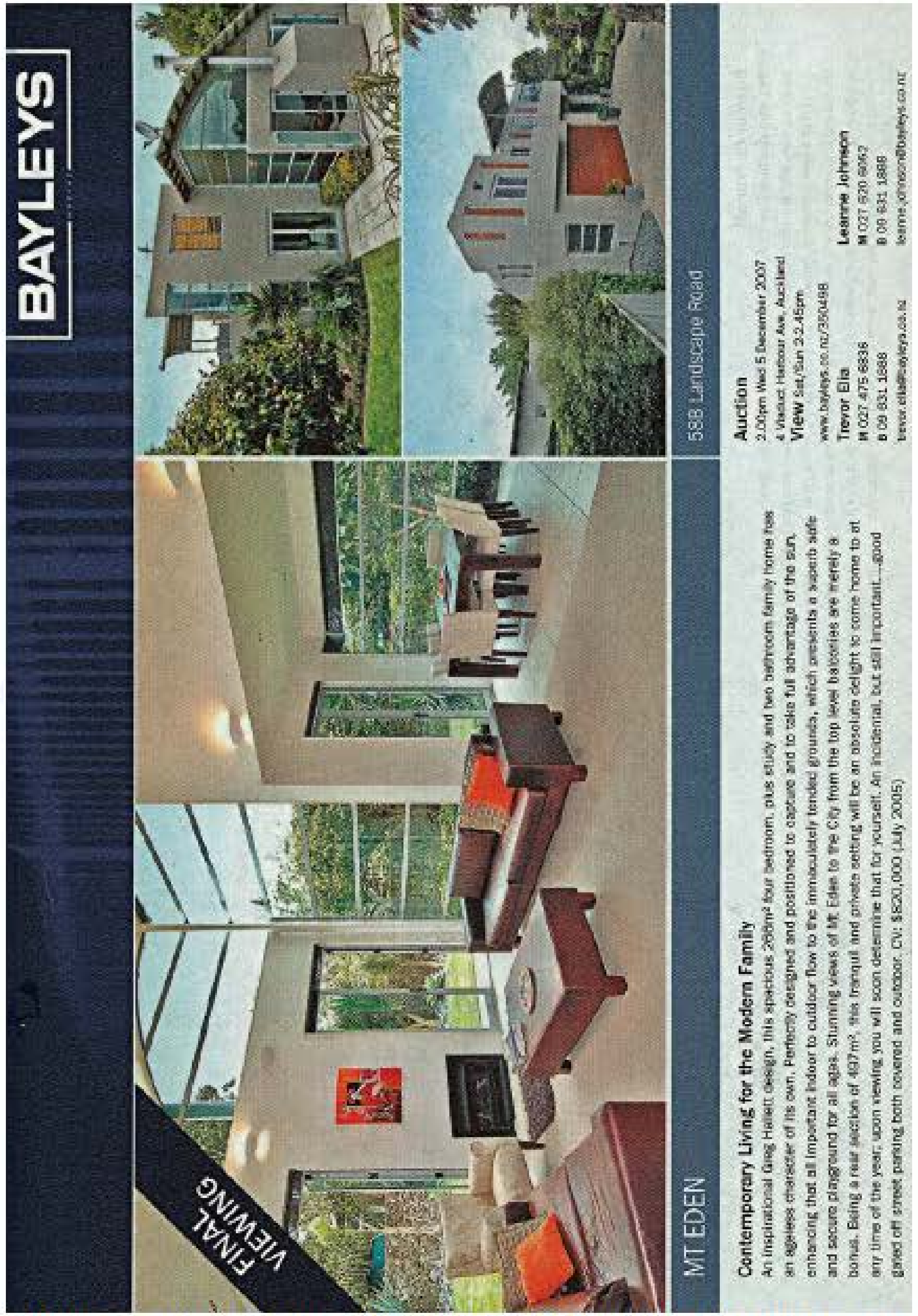
BAYLEYS
FINAL VIEWING

MT EDEN

58B Landscape Road

Contemporary Living for the Modern Family

An inspirational Greg Hallett design, this spacious 268m² four bedroom, plus study and two bathroom family home has an ageless character of its own. Perfectly designed and positioned to capture and to take full advantage of the sun, enhancing that all important indoor to outdoor flow to the immaculately tended grounds, which presents a superb safe and secure playground for all ages. Stunning views of Mt Eden to the City from the top level balconies are merely a bonus. Being a rear section of 497m², this tranquil and private setting will be an absolute delight to come home to at any time of the year; upon viewing you will soon determine that for yourself. An incidental, but still important....good gated off street parking both covered and outdoor. CV: $820,000 (July 2005)

Auction
2.00pm Wed 5 December 2007
4 Viaduct Harbour Ave, Auckland
View Sat/Sun 2-2.45pm
www.bayleys.co.nz/350498

Trevor Elia
M 027 475 6836
B 09 631 1888
trevor.elia@bayleys.co.nz

Leanne Johnson
M 027 620 6062
B 09 631 1888
leanne.johnson@bayleys.co.nz

Bayleys: "Contemporary Living for the Modern Family – An inspirational Greg Hallett Design."
Designed in 1999 and praised in 2008.

And this is what happens when you try to order my books from Sweden, 15 April 2009 . . .

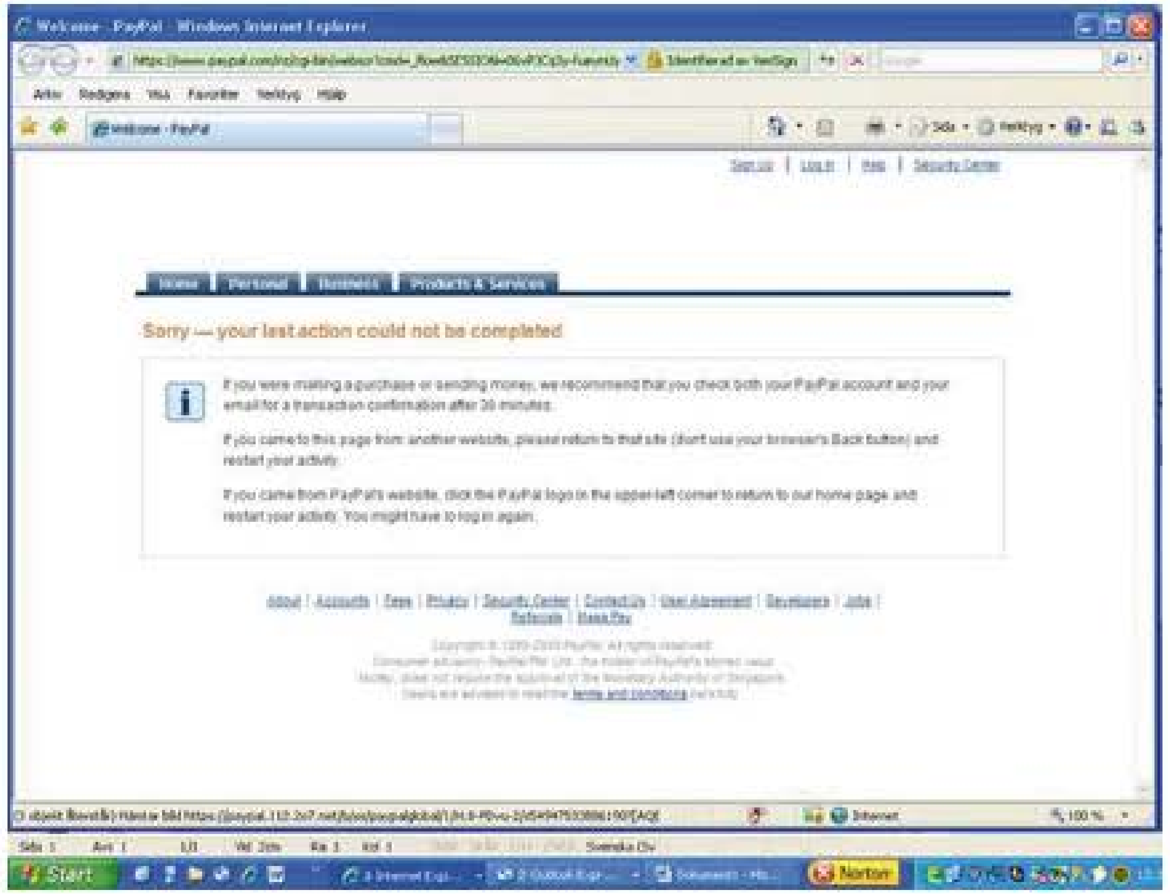
Welcome - PayPal - Windows Internet Explorer
Arkiv Redigera Visa Favoriter Verktyg Hjälp
Welcome - PayPal
Sign Up | Log In | Help | Security Center
Home
Personal
Business
Products & Services
About | Accounts | Fees | Privacy | Security Center | Contact Us | User Agreement | Developers | Jobs | Referrals | Mass Pay
Start
Norton

Sorry — your last action could not be completed

If you were making a purchase or sending money, we recommend that you check both your PayPal account and your email for a transaction confirmation after 20 minutes.

If you came to this page from another website, please return to that site (don't use your browser's Back button) and restart your activity.

If you came from PayPal's website, click the PayPal logo in the upper-left corner to return to our home page and restart your activity. You might have to log in again.

Not only is it my architecture practise, books, and radio interviews, it's also the Courts, the Police, Traffic Infringement Officers, the Family Courts, the libraries, librarians, book distributors, the newspapers, the TV News, my mobile phone, my landline, Telecom (sending bills for unordered goods), the Disputes Tribunal (haven't had a win since 1993), my emails, PayPal orders from other countries, and translations into other languages etc . . . Sweden I can understand, maybe, because a Scandinavian Prime Minister was exposed as a cross-dressing coke user who ended up in hospital in a rather nice dress . . . but still, give us a break. They gave him one.

SILENT WEAPONS FOR A QUIET WAR

An Introductory Programming Manual
Operations Research Technical Manual

[Formerly TOP SECRET]

"**WELCOME ABOARD**: This publication marks the 25th anniversary of the Third World War, called the 'Quiet War', [1954–] being conducted using subjective biological warfare, fought with 'silent weapons'. This book contains an introductory description of this war, its strategies, and its weaponry. (May 1979, No. 74–1120)."[1]

Security

It is patently impossible to discuss social engineering or the automation of a society, i.e., the engineering of social automation systems (silent weapons) on a national or worldwide scale without implying extensive objectives of social control and destruction of human life, i.e. slavery and genocide.

This manual is in itself an analog declaration of intent. Such a writing must be secured from public scrutiny. Otherwise, it might be recognized as a technically **formal declaration of domestic war**. Furthermore, whenever any person or group of persons in a position of great power, and without the full knowledge and consent of the public, **uses such knowledge and methodology for economic conquest** – it must be understood that a **state of domestic warfare exists** between said person or group of persons and the public."

> *Interpretation*: This manual is recognized as a technically formal declaration of domestic war. Whenever any person or group in a position of power uses this knowledge and methodology for economic conquest, a state of domestic warfare exists between the person/group and the public.[2]

"The solution of today's problems requires an approach which is ruthlessly candid, with no agonizing over religious, moral, or cultural values."[3]

You have qualified for this project because of your ability to look at human society with cold objectivity, and yet analyse and discuss your observations and conclusions with others of similar intellectual capacity without a loss of discretion or humility. Such virtues are exercised in your own best interest. Do not deviate from them.

Historical Introduction

Silent weapon technology has evolved from Operations Research (O.R.), a strategic and tactical methodology developed under the military management in England during World War II. The original purpose of Operations Research was to study the strategic and tactical problems of air and land defense with the objective of effective use of limited military resources against foreign enemies, i.e. logistics.

It was soon recognized by those in positions of power that the same methods might be useful for totally controlling a society. But better tools were necessary.

---

[1] This chapter is paraphrased and interpreted to make clear in todays language. The original document is located at:www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/silentweaponsforquietwars.htm.

[2] All "*Interpretations*" are the current authors.

[3] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War, An Introductory Programming Manual, Operations Research Technical Manual*, May 1979, No 74–1120, p. 13.

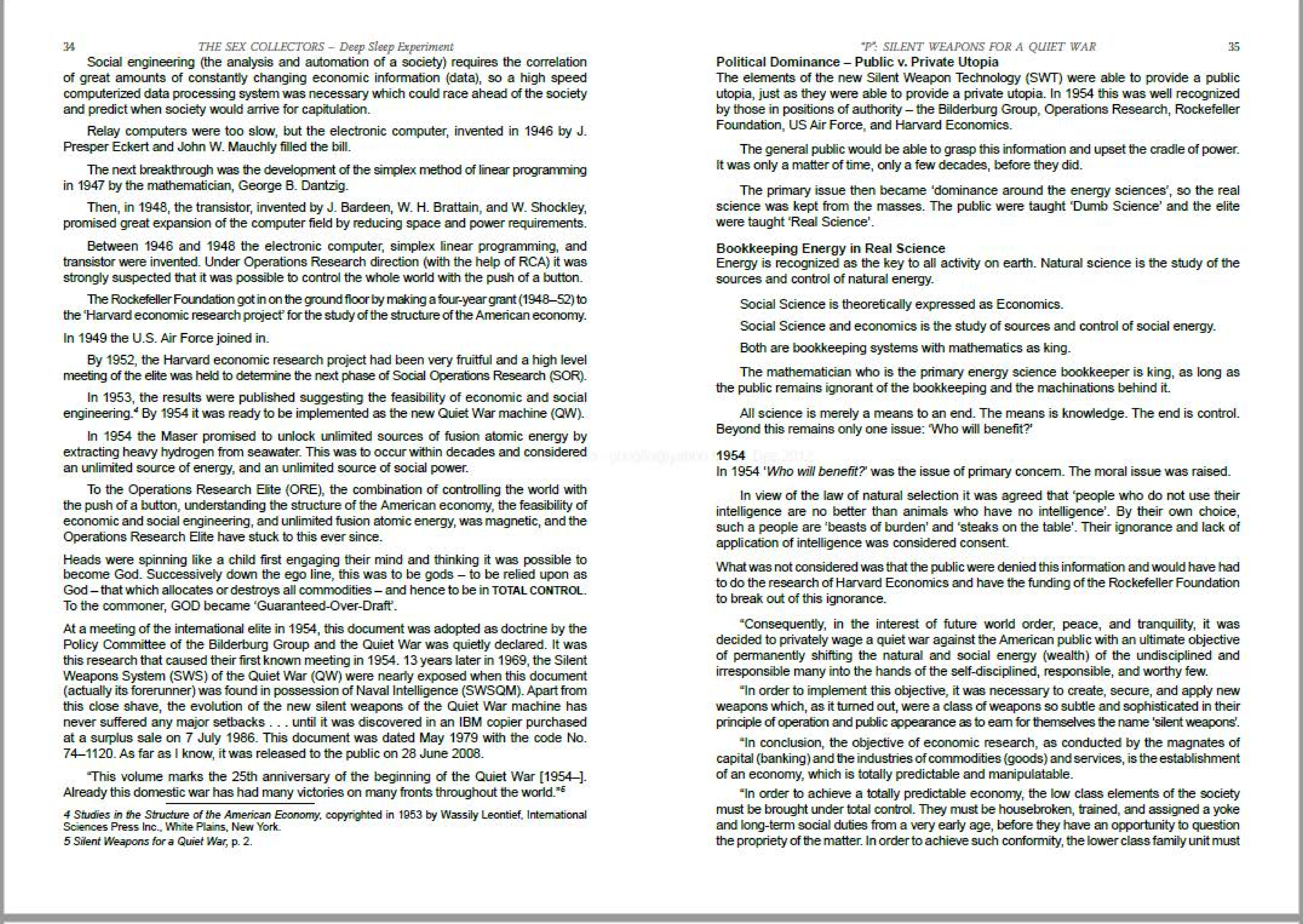

Social engineering (the analysis and automation of a society) requires the correlation of great amounts of constantly changing economic information (data), so a high speed computerized data processing system was necessary which could race ahead of the society and predict when society would arrive for capitulation.

Relay computers were too slow, but the electronic computer, invented in 1946 by J. Presper Eckert and John W. Mauchly filled the bill.

The next breakthrough was the development of the simplex method of linear programming in 1947 by the mathematician, George B. Dantzig.

Then, in 1948, the transistor, invented by J. Bardeen, W. H. Brattain, and W. Shockley, promised great expansion of the computer field by reducing space and power requirements.

Between 1946 and 1948 the electronic computer, simplex linear programming, and transistor were invented. Under Operations Research direction (with the help of RCA) it was strongly suspected that it was possible to control the whole world with the push of a button.

The Rockefeller Foundation got in on the ground floor by making a four-year grant (1948–52) to the 'Harvard economic research project' for the study of the structure of the American economy.

In 1949 the U.S. Air Force joined in.

By 1952, the Harvard economic research project had been very fruitful and a high level meeting of the elite was held to determine the next phase of Social Operations Research (SOR).

In 1953, the results were published suggesting the feasibility of economic and social engineering.[4] By 1954 it was ready to be implemented as the new Quiet War machine (QW).

In 1954 the Maser promised to unlock unlimited sources of fusion atomic energy by extracting heavy hydrogen from seawater. This was to occur within decades and considered an unlimited source of energy, and an unlimited source of social power.

To the Operations Research Elite (ORE), the combination of controlling the world with the push of a button, understanding the structure of the American economy, the feasibility of economic and social engineering, and unlimited fusion atomic energy, was magnetic, and the Operations Research Elite have stuck to this ever since.

Heads were spinning like a child first engaging their mind and thinking it was possible to become God. Successively down the ego line, this was to be gods – to be relied upon as God – that which allocates or destroys all commodities – and hence to be in **TOTAL CONTROL**. To the commoner, GOD became 'Guaranteed-Over-Draft'.

At a meeting of the international elite in 1954, this document was adopted as doctrine by the Policy Committee of the Bilderburg Group and the Quiet War was quietly declared. It was this research that caused their first known meeting in 1954. 13 years later in 1969, the Silent Weapons System (SWS) of the Quiet War (QW) were nearly exposed when this document (actually its forerunner) was found in possession of Naval Intelligence (SWSQM). Apart from this close shave, the evolution of the new silent weapons of the Quiet War machine has never suffered any major setbacks . . . until it was discovered in an IBM copier purchased at a surplus sale on 7 July 1986. This document was dated May 1979 with the code No. 74–1120. As far as I know, it was released to the public on 28 June 2008.

"This volume marks the 25th anniversary of the beginning of the Quiet War [1954–]. Already this domestic war has had many victories on many fronts throughout the world."[5]

---

[4] *Studies in the Structure of the American Economy*, copyrighted in 1953 by Wassily Leontief, International Sciences Press Inc., White Plains, New York.

[5] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 2.

Political Dominance – Public v. Private Utopia

The elements of the new Silent Weapon Technology (SWT) were able to provide a public utopia, just as they were able to provide a private utopia. In 1954 this was well recognized by those in positions of authority – the Bilderburg Group, Operations Research, Rockefeller Foundation, US Air Force, and Harvard Economics.

The general public would be able to grasp this information and upset the cradle of power. It was only a matter of time, only a few decades, before they did.

The primary issue then became 'dominance around the energy sciences', so the real science was kept from the masses. The public were taught 'Dumb Science' and the elite were taught 'Real Science'.

Bookkeeping Energy in Real Science

Energy is recognized as the key to all activity on earth. Natural science is the study of the sources and control of natural energy.

Social Science is theoretically expressed as Economics.

Social Science and economics is the study of sources and control of social energy.

Both are bookkeeping systems with mathematics as king.

The mathematician who is the primary energy science bookkeeper is king, as long as the public remains ignorant of the bookkeeping and the machinations behind it.

All science is merely a means to an end. The means is knowledge. The end is control. Beyond this remains only one issue: 'Who will benefit?'

1954

In 1954 '*Who will benefit?*' was the issue of primary concern. The moral issue was raised.

In view of the law of natural selection it was agreed that 'people who do not use their intelligence are no better than animals who have no intelligence'. By their own choice, such a people are 'beasts of burden' and 'steaks on the table'. Their ignorance and lack of application of intelligence was considered consent.

What was not considered was that the public were denied this information and would have had to do the research of Harvard Economics and have the funding of the Rockefeller Foundation to break out of this ignorance.

"Consequently, in the interest of future world order, peace, and tranquility, it was decided to privately wage a quiet war against the American public with an ultimate objective of permanently shifting the natural and social energy (wealth) of the undisciplined and irresponsible many into the hands of the self-disciplined, responsible, and worthy few.

"In order to implement this objective, it was necessary to create, secure, and apply new weapons which, as it turned out, were a class of weapons so subtle and sophisticated in their principle of operation and public appearance as to earn for themselves the name 'silent weapons'.

"In conclusion, the objective of economic research, as conducted by the magnates of capital (banking) and the industries of commodities (goods) and services, is the establishment of an economy, which is totally predictable and manipulatable.

"In order to achieve a totally predictable economy, the low class elements of the society must be brought under total control. They must be housebroken, trained, and assigned a yoke and long-term social duties from a very early age, before they have an opportunity to question the propriety of the matter. In order to achieve such conformity, the lower class family unit must be disintegrated by a process of increasing preoccupation of the parents and the establishment of government operated day care centers for the occupationally orphaned children."[6]

> *Interpretation*: The Lower Class must be brought under control and the Middle Class destroyed and made worse than the Lower Class. Both must be assigned long-term social duties from birth, to be instilled before they have the ability to question, in place before marriage, and reinforced through peer pressure and assigned family roles. Absolute conformity is required.
> Parents must be pre-occupied with work, and the offspring must become Key-Hole-Kids, aligned to the state through government daycare centres, orphaned from their parents through lack of time and lack of quality time, via parental exhaustion.

"The quality of education given to the lower class must be of the poorest sort, so that the meat of ignorance isolating the inferior class from the superior class is and remains incomprehensible to the inferior class. With such an initial handicap, even bright lower class individuals have little if any hope of extricating themselves from their assigned lot in life. This form of slavery is essential to maintaining some measure of social order, peace, and tranquility for the ruling upper class."[7]

> *Interpretation*: Ensure the worst people become the bureaucracy and elite of Government education. Ensure Government education is crap. Force-feed the 'meat of ignorance' to the lower class. Ensure superior education and true science remains incomprehensible. Teach them to run away from things that work.
> Attack the brightest kids as soon as they begin to achieve. Equate 'bright' with 'naughty'. Turn the brightest of the Lower Class into slaves and ensure they return to their social class, either through attitude, criminal record, financial achievement, status, or end result.
> Create shit-for-brains and ban-the-mind. Avoid integration. Break up subject integration by teaching five different subjects a day.
> If a citizen is about to shift up a class, destroy their relationship, their marriage, take their house, driver's licence, and children. Preoccupy them with matters that go nowhere. Preoccupy with non-productivity. Looking back on life they realize they were fiddled, and spent their time in useless activities, recreational or instigated by the government. By then it is too late.
> The Lower Class are fiddlers on the roof without hope or destiny.
> This is what government is now about – political hitmen ensuring only the unquestioning are elevated above their station.
> Authority (root word 'author') is to attack all authors who make waves. One wave is enough. The government does not allow any waves. They are the levellers.
> Slavery of the Middle and Lower Class is essential to the Government's appearance of social order, peace, and tranquility. This is what keeps the Upper Class ruling and the tourist brochures viable – if only slightly.

Descriptive Introduction of the Silent Weapon

Everything that is expected of an ordinary weapon is expected from a Silent Weapon.

It differs only in the way it functions, but it has the same long-term results.

The Silent Weapon (SW) shoots situations, not bullets.

It is propelled by data processing, not explosion, or chemical reaction.

---

[6] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 3.
[7] *Ibid.*

It originates from bits of data, not gunpowder; from a computer, not a gun.

It is operated by a computer programmer, not a marksman.

It operates under orders from banker/judge/politician, not a military general.

It makes no obvious explosive noises, causes no obvious physical or mental injuries, and does not obviously interfere with anyone's daily social life.

Yet it makes an unmistakable 'noise', causes unmistakable physical and mental damage, and interferes with daily social life. To the trained observer, one who knows what to look for, the physical and mental damage is remarkable.

The public cannot comprehend such a weapon and therefore do not believe they are being attacked or subdued such a Silent Weapon.

The public instinctively feels something is wrong – that someone is controlling their life – but they cannot comprehend the individual and technical machinations of the Silent Weapon all working against them. The public cannot express their feeling that something is wrong in a rational way, or with the required intelligence, as opposed to the counter-intelligence world they live in.

The Government's role has been fulfilled: to educate with counter-intelligence for a counter-intelligence reality, where 'counter-intelligence-as-reality is rewarded and intelligence is attacked with the full force of the silent weapons.

The public now recognise that crying for help on polling day has no effect.

Prior to 1991, they did not know how to cry for help, they did not know how to associate with similar others, nor how to defend themselves against counter-intelligence's silent weapons. Now we the public have the net.

When a silent weapon is applied gradually to the public, the public adjusts and adapts to its presence and learns to tolerate the new encroachments until economic pressure, followed by psychological pressure, becomes too great. They crack up in the form of financial meltdown, individual breakdowns, a financial downturn, public riot, and civil war.

The Silent Weapon is a type of biological warfare that attacks the vitality, options, and mobility of the individuals. It attacks free choice.

It does this by attacking their physical, emotional, mental and financial strengths and weaknesses; by knowing, understanding, manipulating, and attacking their source of energy – sexual [attack on family, promotion of homosex by Jewish media], social, natural (garden seeds that can reproduce), financial and national identity (through immigration and double agent leaders).

The Silent Weapon is added to as technology becomes available.

For every action, there is an equal and opposite reaction. When a technology becomes available to the public, the military has had it for at least 20 years.

When a new technology becomes user friendly, saves time and increases production, wages are concurrently reduced.

Mayer Amschel Rothschild's Theory Becomes Reality (1743–1812)

"Give me control over a nation's currency, and I care not who makes its laws."

Silent weapons technology is an outgrowth of a simple idea discovered, succinctly expressed, and effectively applied, by Rothschild. He discovered the missing passive component of economic theory – 'economic inductance'.

More commonly state 'inductance' is: 'If you have the money, people will come running to you and all else will follow in its wake'.

As soon as mathematical analysis got the theory of mechanics, electronics, and the computer, it could be effectively applied to control the world economy. The numbers followed.

Mathematical analysis and energy source bookkeeping were to be king.

General Energy Concepts

In the study of energy systems, there are always three elementary concepts:

Potential Energy (PE): In physical mechanics, PE has *elasticity or stiffness* and a material has *memory and resistance*. In electronics, PEs is stored in a capacitor.

Kinetic Energy (KE): In physical mechanics, KE has *inertia* or *mass*, as in a *flywheel in motion*. In electronics, KE is stored in an inductor and creates a magnetic field. KE is called inductance.

Energy Dissipation (ED): In physical mechanics, ED has *friction and resistance* which *converts to heat*. In electronics, ED is performed by a wire that conveys electricity with resistance or a conductance.

All of the mathematical theory developed in the study of one energy system can be applied in the study of any other energy system. Electronics is the model for national and sub-national Economics. In Economics the three energy concepts are associated with:

Economic Capacitance: Capital (money, stock/inventory, buildings);

Economic Inductance: Services (influence of population in industry and their on output);

Economic Conductance: Goods (production flow coefficients).

Physical Mechanics is the model for psycho-economic individual and community reactions. In Physical Mechanics the three energy concepts are associated with:

Physical Memory and Resistance: Social Capital (Status existence, prestige, community, care, association, home, stiff routine, elastic holidays);

Physical Inertia and Mass: Ongoing Good Influence (on the community rewarded with acknowledged output);

Physical Friction and Resistance: Home/work Services, habit, routine, growth and family production (resistant to change, friction results in heat if any of it is taken away).

Mr. Rothschild's Energy Discovery[8]

What Mr. Rothschild had discovered was the basic principle of power, influence, and control over people as applied to economics. That principle is "when you assume the appearance of power, people soon give it to you".

Mr. Rothschild had discovered that currency or deposit loan accounts had the required appearance of power that could be used to induce people (inductance, with people corresponding to a magnetic field) into surrendering their *real* wealth in exchange for a promise of greater wealth (instead of real compensation). They would put up real collateral in exchange for a loan of promissory notes. Mr. Rothschild found that he could issue more notes than he had backing for, so long as he had someone's stock of gold as a persuader to show to his customers.[9]

Mr. Rothschild loaned his promissory notes to individuals and governments. These created over-confidence.

Then he tightened control of the system, made money scarce, and collect his collateral through the obligation of contracts . . . Then the cycle was repeated.

The financial pressures were used to ignite a war. Then Rothschild would control the availability of currency to determine who would win the war.

Collection of debts was guaranteed by economic aid to the enemy of the debtor, and the government that agreed to hand over control of its economic system got his support.

The profit derived from this economic methodology made Mr. Rothschild very wealthy and in a position to extend his wealth. He found that the public greed allowed currency to be printed by government order beyond the limits (inflation) of backing in precious metal or the production of goods and services (Gross National Priduct – GNP)."

The Appearance of Economic Capital as Faux Paper Economic Inductor

Credit presented as currency has the appearance of Economic Capital.

It is in fact negative capital – a lack of money with stock/inventory and buildings as security, and inflation as a balancer.

Credit looks like the Service of Economic Inductance, but is in fact, indebtedness, debt waiting to happen, and inflation waiting to happen.

Credit is a faux paper Economic Inductance instead of a real Economic Capacitance.

Total goods and services represents real Economic Capital (GNP). Currency may be printed up to this level and still represent real Economic Capacitance. Beyond that, currency printed is subtractive. It represents the introduction of Economic Inductance, a faux paper Service given by the banks.

This Credit/faux paper Economic Inductance were notes of indebtedness and resulted in inflation, stagflation, war, genocide, the welfare state and open-ended frontier breaking programs like the conquest of America or the space program. When these frontiers were conquered, there was to be genocide in the form of war, or any deaths that could be arranged, usually through planned manmade means blamed on natural causes.

If not balanced by payment, Credit was to be balanced by the negation of population (war, genocide) returning natural resources to the banks at a lower rate than its value, minus any debts on it (debt free value).

---

[8] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 5.

[9] Mao Zedong did the same thing, a.k.a. Mao Edmond/ Zedong Rothschild (Zedong ≈ Edmond). He even persuaded Ho Chi Minh with pots of gold after his long march ended in 1934. Mao Zedong (1893–1976) worked with Ho Chi Minh (1890–1969) in a restaurant kitchen in Paris in 1913, doing dishes. Little did they know they were brothers in arms, but also brothers – their father, and that of Stalin, was Baron Edmond de Rothschild who used to dine at these restaurants. Ho Chi Minh also worked as a waiter (aged 23) in 1913 in the Carlton Hotel in the Haymarket, London. The Carlton Hotel was bombed during the war, and in 1959 New Zealand House was built on the site.

Ho Chi Minh, Marx, Lenin and Stalin all lived in London. Karl Marx (1818–83) lived at 28 Dean Street, Soho above the sumptuous Quo Vadis restaurant (1851–56). A Prussian agent visited Marx there and reported back: "Everything is broken, tattered and torn, finger-thick dust everywhere, and everything in the greatest disorder . . . it is dangerous to sit down". Marx didn't help his wife raise the children, three of them died of pneumonia, then his wife inherited money and they moved to Primrose Hill. Ironcially Karl Marx is buried in the Highgate Cemetery opposite the Free-Market Economist, Herbert Spencer – 'Marx and Spencer'. Lenin lived in Percy Circus, on the edges of Islington, just round the corner from King's Cross. Stalin stayed in the building next to the Whitechapel Mosque in the early 1900s, and at 77 Jubliee Street off Whitechapel Road in 1907.

War is balancing the system banks use. Banks kill the true creditors – the public who have exchanged true value Capital and Inductance for faux over extended Credit inflated currency. Banks then fall back on whatever is left of the resources of nature and the regeneration of those resources.

In doing this, the banking Rothschilds had discovered that Credit/faux paper Economic Inductance gave them the power to rearrange economic structures to their own advantage, to shift Economic Inductance (Service of currency printed beyond GNP) to economic positions that encourage the greatest economic oscillation (inflation, deflation, stagflation) and instability (war, civil war, civil unrest, to the point of migration).

Total economic control came when high speed computing could process sufficient data to watch the economic oscillations (1954–). These were created by excess Credit (faux paper Economic Inductance/Paper promisory notes/inflation) and price shocking, which required the use of more credit.

And now there was a cycle within a cycle and total control with it.

Breakthough in Aviation[10]

The aviation field provided the greatest evolution in economic engineering by way of the mathematical theory of shock testing. In this process, a projectile is fired from an airframe on the ground and the impulse of the recoil is monitored by vibration transducers connected to the airframe and wired to chart recorders. By studying the echoes or reflections of the recoil impulse in the airframe, it is possible to discover critical vibrations in the structure of the airframe which either vibrations of the engine or aeolian vibrations of the wings, or a combination of the two, might reinforce resulting in a resonant self-destruction of the airframe in flight as an aircraft. From the standpoint of engineering, this means that the strengths and weaknesses of the structure of the airframe in terms of vibrational energy can be discovered and manipulated.

Shock Testing Applied to Economics

To use this method of airframe shock testing in economic engineering, the prices of commodities are shocked, and the public consumer reaction is monitored. The resulting echoes of the economic shock are interpreted theoretically by computers and the psycho-economic structure of the economy [Physical Mechanics] is thus discovered.

Partial differential and difference matricos are revealed that define the family household and make possible its evolution as an economic industry (dissipative consumer structure). The response of the household to future shocks can then be predicted and manipulated. Society becomes a well-regulated animal with its reins under the control of a sophisticated computer-regulated social energy bookkeeping system.

Eventually every individual element of the structure comes under computer control through a knowledge of personal preferences, guaranteed by computer association with consumer preferences (universal product code/UPC/zebra stripe pricing codes on packages [now bar codes]) with identified consumers (identified via association with the use of a credit card and later a permanent 'tattooed' body number invisible under normal ambient illumination.

> *Interpretation*: The economy is engineered by shock testing. The public reaction is monitored via Credit Cards and Barcodes (with body ID's still resisted), and the psycho-economic structure of the economy is interpreted through Physical Mechanics. Response to future shocks can then be predicted. Society can then be regulated through a social energy bookkeeping system.

---

[10] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 6.

Summary[11]

Economics is only a social extension of a natural energy system. It, also, has its three passive components (Potential, Kinetic, Dissipation). Due to the distribution of wealth, the lack of communication and data, Economics was the last energy field for the three passive components to be developed and applied.

Since energy is the key to all activity on the face of the earth, it follows that in order to attain a monopoly of energy, raw materials, goods, and services and to establish a world system of slave labor, it is necessary to have a first strike capability in the field of economics. In order to maintain our position, it is necessary that we have absolute first knowledge of the science of control over all economic factors and the first experience at engineering the world economy."

In order to achieve such sovereignty, we must at least achieve this one end: that the public will not make either the logical or mathematical connection between economics and the other energy sciences or learn to apply such knowledge."

This is becoming increasingly difficult to control because more and more businesses are making demands upon their computer programmers to create and apply mathematical models for the management of those businesses.

It is only a matter of time before the new breed of private programmer/economists will catch on to the far-reaching implications of the work begun at Harvard in 1948. The speed with which they can communicate their warning to the public will largely depend upon how effective we have been at controlling the media, subverting education, and keeping the public distracted with matters of no real importance.

Ha!. The common man has the internet and has realized that the value of the news emanating from the media has no value. A revolution has begun. Its beginnings are replete with suspicion that governments and their agencies are the conspiracy. This is now backed up with knowledge, followed by individual action. Successful individual actions have already achieved wide sweeping consequences. When this becomes mass action, it's a revolution.

The Economic Model

Economics, as a social energy science, first describes the complex way in which any unit of resource is obtained, processed and used to satisfy some economic want.[12] The first economic objective is to get the most product from the least resource, or the most from the most limited resources. Such industrial logistics shared the objectives of the military. Both are known as Operations Research.[13]

The Harvard Economic Research Project (1948–) was an extension of World War II Operations Research. Its purpose was to discover the science of controlling an economy, at first the American economy, then the world economy.

With sufficient mathematical foundation and data, it has become possible to predict and control the trend of an economy – as accurately as a projectile, missile or bullet. Since then, the economy has been transformed into a guided missile on target.

The target has been designated by the International Bankers. It is you.

The immediate aim of the Harvard project was to discover the economic structure, what forced change in that structure, how the behavior of the structure can be predicted, and how it can be manipulated. What was needed was a well-organized knowledge of the mathematical structures and interrelationships of investment, production, distribution, and consumption.

---

[11] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, pp. 6–7.
[12] Leontief Matrix.
[13] See the simplex method of linear programming.

It was discovered than an economy obeyed the same laws as electricity and that all of the mathematical theory and practical and computer know-how developed for the electronic field could be directly applied in the study of economics. This discovery was not openly declared, and its more subtle implications are a closely guarded secret.

In the economic model, human life is measured in dollars or silver, and:
The electric spark generated by a switch connected to an active inductor is mathematically analogous to the initiation of a war.

The greatest hurdle theoretical economists faced was the accurate description of the 'household as an industry', because consumer purchases are a matter of choice which is influenced by income, price, and other economic factors.

Shock testing (indirect and statistically approximate) determined the current characteristics of the household industry, called current technical coefficients' (CTC).

Theoretical Economics can be easily translated into Theoretical Electronics, and the solution can translated back again, so a concept definition and language translation was defined between Electronics and Economics.

The remaining understanding of Economics could be got from standard books on electronics and mathematics.

This made the publication of books on advanced Economics redundant. Since education was all about dumbing down the masses, project security was simple.

Industrial Diagrams

An ideal industry is defined as a device which receives value from other industries in several forms and converts it into one specific product for sales and distribution to other industries. It has several inputs and one output. What the public normally thinks of as one industry is really an industrial complex where several industries under one roof produce one or more products.

Three Industrial Classes

Industries fell into three categories or class by type of output:

Class 1: **Capital** (resources)

Class 2: **Goods** (commodities or use – dissipative)

Class 3: **Services** (action of population)

Class 1: **Capital Industries** exist at three levels
(1) Nature: sources of energy and raw materials; (2) Government: printing of currency equal to gross national product (GNP), and extension of currency in excess of GNP;
(3) Banking: loaning of money for interest, and extension (counterfeiting) of economic value through deposit loan account – inflation.

Class 2: Industries exist as producers of tangible or consumer (dissipated) products. This sort of activity is usually recognized and labeled by the public as an 'industry'.

Class 3: Industries are those which have service rather than a tangible product as their output. These industries are called (1) households, and (2) governments. Their output is human activity of a mechanical sort, and their basis is population.

Aggregation

The whole economic system can be represented by a three-industry model if one allows the names of the outputs to be (1) **Capital**, (2) **Goods**, and (3) **Services**.

The problem with this representation is that it would not show the influence of, say, the textile industry on the ferrous metal industry.

This is because both the textile industry and the ferrous metal industry would be contained within a single classification called the 'goods industry' and by this process of combining or aggregating these two industries under one system block they would lose their economic individuality.

The E-Model

A national economy consists of simultaneous flows of production, distribution, consumption, and investment.

If all of these elements including labor and human functions are assigned a numerical value in like units of measure, say, 1939 dollars, on this flow can be further represented by a current flow in an electronic circuit, and its behavior can be predicted and manipulated with useful precision.

The three components of Electronics – Capacitor, Inductor, Conductor/Resistor – correspond to the three components of Economics: Capital, Goods, and Services.

Economic Capacitance is the storage of Capital in one form or another.

Economic Conductance is materials for the production of Goods.

Economic Inductance is the inertia of economic value in motion, known as Services, it is a population phenomenon.

Economic Inductance

An Electrical Inductor (coil of wire) primarily has an electric current (Inductor), then a magnetic field (Inertia).

Corresponding to Economic Inductance, a primary flow of money into a population causes a magnetic field (people are attracted to money) and they stick to the source with Inertia.

The public Inertia/Magnetic Field is a result of consumer buying habits, expected standard of living, self-preservation, and desired/expected status.

When the flow of money diminishes or stops, the magnetism holding the humans together collapses (the community collapses).

In order to keep the economy flowing, the open-ended Social Welfare, open-ended Space Program, Continual Wars and Genocide are used.

Economic Inductive Factors to Consider

(1) Population;

(2) Magnitude of Government's economic activities;

(3) Method of financing Government outside GNP or in debt.[14]

---

[14] See Peter-Paul Principle; Inflation of currency when Government prints money over and above the Gross National Product; When Government is in debt it loses its ability to self-govern.

Translation – with a few examples given
Charge is Coulombs = $ (1939. Humans are valued in Silver, as in 'Silver dollars');
Charge is the value of the human in $ or Silver.

Current or Flow is Amperes (coulombs) = $ of flow per year (Current/cy);
Current is Currency Supply in $ per year.

Demand or Motivating Force is Volts = $ (output) demanded;
Volts is Demand.

Conductance is Amperes/Volt = $ of flow per year/$ demanded;
Conductance is Supply/Demand (Supply v. Demand).

Capacitance is Coulombs/Volt = $ of production inventory/stock per $ demand;
Capacitance is Production and Charge in $/Demand (Charge v. Demand)

Time-Flow Relationships and Self-Destructive Oscillations

An ideal industry may be symbolized electronically in various ways. The simplest way is to represent 'Demand' is Voltage and 'Supply' is Current. When this is done, the relationship between the two becomes what is called an admittance (it's proven to be true), which can result from three economic factors:

(1) **Hindsight Flow**
(2) **Present Flow**
(3) **Foresight Flow**

Foresight Flow is energy or food to be stored for a period of low energy (a winter season). In industry, it is stock and inventory. Due to storage it creates a lag. In Electronics this is Capacitance and the stock is a stored as a charge.

Present Flow involves no delays – input today for output today, hand-to-mouth flow. Such Inductance requires a simple economic inductor, a dissipative element, a valve, like a bakery shop assistant. This creates a Magnetic Field where human populations are drawn to eat, play, converse and socialize.

Hindsight Flow is known as habit or inertia. In Industry the Currency flow is a Wire where the active human population are regularly drawn to work and wired money. If the money flow diminishes, or is switched off, everything collapses . . . War is then used to Conduct the Current/Currency flow of money. In Electronics this is the Conductor. In war it is a Con – a Conducted Con. The Conductor can be used for Flow/Currency or Resistance/war.[15]

> *Interpretation*: Current/Currency is a supply line that creates a magnetic field of workers and society – a Capacitance – the Capacity of the Society.
> If the current diminishes or turns off, the Magnetic Field fades away (ghost town). Before this occurs, there is still a demand for power, a demand to be motivated, and others further down the supply line make demands on those working for and feeding off the current – the pressures and demands of family.
> If war is created as a job option, workers have limited choices. War is one of them. War is the choice banker's push. War is a bank draft, not a government draft. Wars are conducted events where the humans have a value in silver dollars. Killing them ensures faux banker assets are replaced with real assets.

---

[15] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 10. In the original document, they mixed up Present Flow/Conductance and Hindsight Flow/Inductance. So I rang the former 2IC of the SIS during the Cold War (July 2008) and he said: "People often get these things mixed up when they don't understand electronics. The document is . . . terrifying and worthy of study."

Alternatives to War as Economic Conductors, Economic Heat flywheels, or Economic ghost towns are the open-ended social welfare program, or the enormous open-ended space program.

"The problem with stabilizing the economic system is that there is too much demand on account of too much greed and too much population."[16]

One could easily argue that Banks and Governments are the principle source of corruption.

This is Operations Research thinking and it is the most shortsighted element of their Programming Manual. This is partly due to their historical mistake.

In May 1979, Operations Research mixed up Kinetic Energy and Energy Dissipation; Inertia and Mass, with Friction and Resistance; the qualities and attributes of Present Flow with Hindsight flow, Present and Hindsight – all wrong.

I got it right and it's corrected above.

Apart from their gross mistake (an understatement if ever there was one) this is the crucial turning point in their thinking, but it was backed up on 22 March 1980 with plans to kill 25% of the population by 2020 and 50% of the population by 2050, with the ultimate goal of reducing the world's population from 6.6 billion to 0.5 billion – 92% dead.

This requires the manufactured deaths of 12 out of 13 people.

This is confirmed by the Georgia Guidestones, a rather expensive monument to the deaths of 6.1 billion people, all targets. Financed anonymously, it is sited on a hilltop in Elbert County in Georgia, USA.

The Georgia Guidestones, erected on 22 March 1980, are made of granite, stand over 6 metres tall (almost 20 feet) and weigh over 100 tons. Ten guides in eight languages (English, Spanish, Russian, Hebrew, Arabic, Hindi, Swahili, and Chinese) and four ancient scripts (Sanskrit, Egyptian Hieroglyphs, Babylonian, and Classical Greek) are often called the American Stonehenge. Their engraved message reads:

1. Reduce the human population to 500 million [from 6.6 million, so 92% have to die].
2. The fit and diverse breed.
3. One language for all survivors.
4. Reason over religion, faith and tradition.
5. Fair laws and just courts.
6. All nations rule internally and a One World Court rules external disputes.
7. Get rid of bureaucrats and petty laws.
8. Balance personal rights with social duties.
9. Value beauty, love and harmony with the infinite.
10. Live in harmony with nature.[17]

The Golden Dawn coven was used in the build up to the Second World War, and as a code during it. It also provided a means to understand who was behind an event by analysing the date of that event.

In Golden Dawn coven occult language "22 March 1980" gives the numbers: 22.03.1980 (British order of day and month). These are then read in reverse as 08.91.3022.

---

[16] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 10.
[17] Wikipedia, Georgia Guidestones, paraphrased for easy reading.

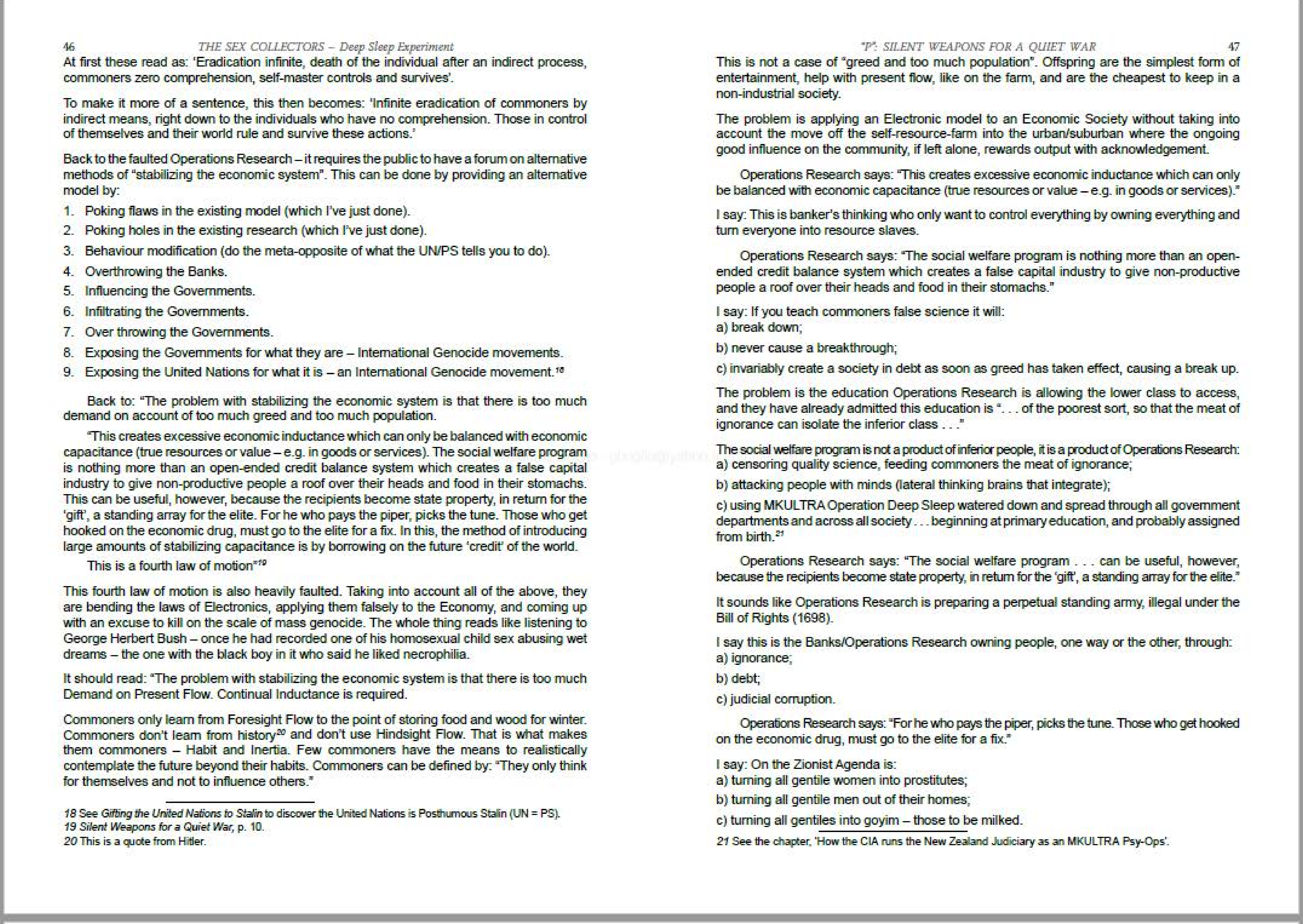

At first these read as: ‘Eradication infinite, death of the individual after an indirect process, commoners zero comprehension, self-master controls and survives’.

To make it more of a sentence, this then becomes: ‘Infinite eradication of commoners by indirect means, right down to the individuals who have no comprehension. Those in control of themselves and their world rule and survive these actions.’

Back to the faulted Operations Research – it requires the public to have a forum on alternative methods of “stabilizing the economic system”. This can be done by providing an alternative model by:

1. Poking flaws in the existing model (which I’ve just done).
2. Poking holes in the existing research (which I’ve just done).
3. Behaviour modification (do the meta-opposite of what the UN/PS tells you to do).
4. Overthrowing the Banks.
5. Influencing the Governments.
6. Infiltrating the Governments.
7. Over throwing the Governments.
8. Exposing the Governments for what they are – International Genocide movements.
9. Exposing the United Nations for what it is – an International Genocide movement.[18]

Back to: “The problem with stabilizing the economic system is that there is too much demand on account of too much greed and too much population.

“This creates excessive economic inductance which can only be balanced with economic capacitance (true resources or value – e.g. in goods or services). The social welfare program is nothing more than an open-ended credit balance system which creates a false capital industry to give non-productive people a roof over their heads and food in their stomachs. This can be useful, however, because the recipients become state property, in return for the ‘gift’, a standing array for the elite. For he who pays the piper, picks the tune. Those who get hooked on the economic drug, must go to the elite for a fix. In this, the method of introducing large amounts of stabilizing capacitance is by borrowing on the future ‘credit’ of the world.

This is a fourth law of motion”[19]

This fourth law of motion is also heavily faulted. Taking into account all of the above, they are bending the laws of Electronics, applying them falsely to the Economy, and coming up with an excuse to kill on the scale of mass genocide. The whole thing reads like listening to George Herbert Bush – once he had recorded one of his homosexual child sex abusing wet dreams – the one with the black boy in it who said he liked necrophilia.

It should read: “The problem with stabilizing the economic system is that there is too much Demand on Present Flow. Continual Inductance is required.

Commoners only learn from Foresight Flow to the point of storing food and wood for winter. Commoners don’t learn from history[20] and don’t use Hindsight Flow. That is what makes them commoners – Habit and Inertia. Few commoners have the means to realistically contemplate the future beyond their habits. Commoners can be defined by: “They only think for themselves and not to influence others.”

---

[18] See *Gifting the United Nations to Stalin* to discover the United Nations is Posthumous Stalin (UN = PS).

[19] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 10.

[20] This is a quote from Hitler.

This is not a case of “greed and too much population”. Offspring are the simplest form of entertainment, help with present flow, like on the farm, and are the cheapest to keep in a non-industrial society.

The problem is applying an Electronic model to an Economic Society without taking into account the move off the self-resource-farm into the urban/suburban where the ongoing good influence on the community, if left alone, rewards output with acknowledgement.

Operations Research says: “This creates excessive economic inductance which can only be balanced with economic capacitance (true resources or value – e.g. in goods or services).”

I say: This is banker’s thinking who only want to control everything by owning everything and turn everyone into resource slaves.

Operations Research says: “The social welfare program is nothing more than an open-ended credit balance system which creates a false capital industry to give non-productive people a roof over their heads and food in their stomachs.”

I say: If you teach commoners false science it will:
a) break down;
b) never cause a breakthrough;
c) invariably create a society in debt as soon as greed has taken effect, causing a break up.

The problem is the education Operations Research is allowing the lower class to access, and they have already admitted this education is “. . . of the poorest sort, so that the meat of ignorance can isolate the inferior class . . .”

The social welfare program is not a product of inferior people, it is a product of Operations Research:
a) censoring quality science, feeding commoners the meat of ignorance;
b) attacking people with minds (lateral thinking brains that integrate);
c) using MKULTRA Operation Deep Sleep watered down and spread through all government departments and across all society . . . beginning at primary education, and probably assigned from birth.[21]

Operations Research says: “The social welfare program . . . can be useful, however, because the recipients become state property, in return for the ‘gift’, a standing array for the elite.”

It sounds like Operations Research is preparing a perpetual standing army, illegal under the Bill of Rights (1698).

I say this is the Banks/Operations Research owning people, one way or the other, through:
a) ignorance;
b) debt;
c) judicial corruption.

Operations Research says: “For he who pays the piper, picks the tune. Those who get hooked on the economic drug, must go to the elite for a fix.”

I say: On the Zionist Agenda is:
a) turning all gentile women into prostitutes;
b) turning all gentile men out of their homes;
c) turning all gentiles into goyim – those to be milked.

---

[21] See the chapter, ‘How the CIA runs the New Zealand Judiciary as an MKULTRA Psy-Ops’.

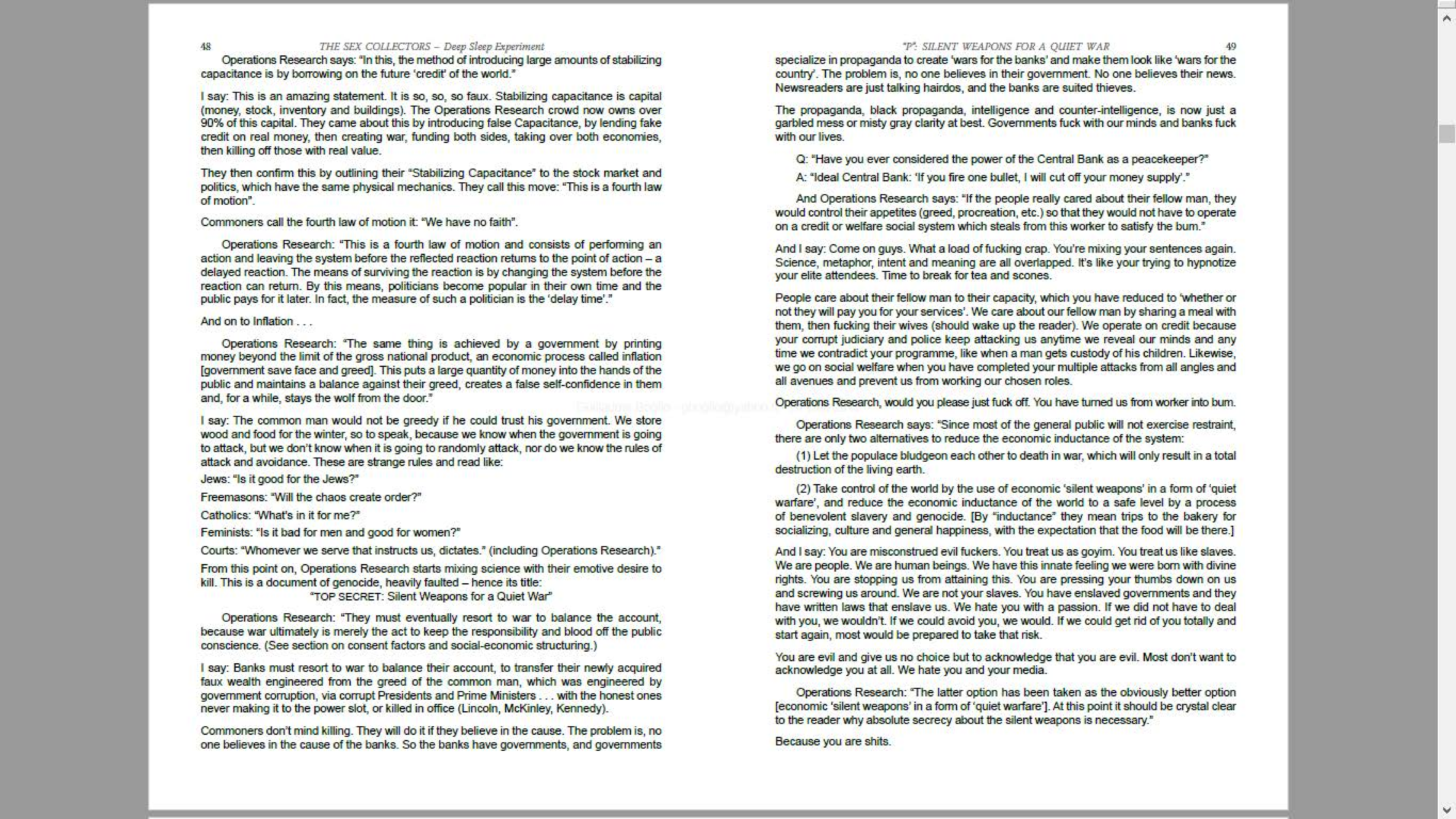

Operations Research says: "In this, the method of introducing large amounts of stabilizing capacitance is by borrowing on the future 'credit' of the world."

I say: This is an amazing statement. It is so, so, so faux. Stabilizing capacitance is capital (money, stock, inventory and buildings). The Operations Research crowd now owns over 90% of this capital. They came about this by introducing false Capacitance, by lending fake credit on real money, then creating war, funding both sides, taking over both economies, then killing off those with real value.

They then confirm this by outlining their "Stabilizing Capacitance" to the stock market and politics, which have the same physical mechanics. They call this move: "This is a fourth law of motion".

Commoners call the fourth law of motion it: "We have no faith".

Operations Research: "This is a fourth law of motion and consists of performing an action and leaving the system before the reflected reaction returns to the point of action – a delayed reaction. The means of surviving the reaction is by changing the system before the reaction can return. By this means, politicians become popular in their own time and the public pays for it later. In fact, the measure of such a politician is the 'delay time'."

And on to Inflation . . .

Operations Research: "The same thing is achieved by a government by printing money beyond the limit of the gross national product, an economic process called inflation [government save face and greed]. This puts a large quantity of money into the hands of the public and maintains a balance against their greed, creates a false self-confidence in them and, for a while, stays the wolf from the door."

I say: The common man would not be greedy if he could trust his government. We store wood and food for the winter, so to speak, because we know when the government is going to attack, but we don't know when it is going to randomly attack, nor do we know the rules of attack and avoidance. These are strange rules and read like:

Jews: "Is it good for the Jews?"

Freemasons: "Will the chaos create order?"

Catholics: "What's in it for me?"

Feminists: "Is it bad for men and good for women?"

Courts: "Whomever we serve that instructs us, dictates." (including Operations Research)."

From this point on, Operations Research starts mixing science with their emotive desire to kill. This is a document of genocide, heavily faulted – hence its title:

"TOP SECRET: Silent Weapons for a Quiet War"

Operations Research: "They must eventually resort to war to balance the account, because war ultimately is merely the act to keep the responsibility and blood off the public conscience. (See section on consent factors and social-economic structuring.)

I say: Banks must resort to war to balance their account, to transfer their newly acquired faux wealth engineered from the greed of the common man, which was engineered by government corruption, via corrupt Presidents and Prime Ministers . . . with the honest ones never making it to the power slot, or killed in office (Lincoln, McKinley, Kennedy).

Commoners don't mind killing. They will do it if they believe in the cause. The problem is, no one believes in the cause of the banks. So the banks have governments, and governments specialize in propaganda to create 'wars for the banks' and make them look like 'wars for the country'. The problem is, no one believes in their government. No one believes their news. Newsreaders are just talking hairdos, and the banks are suited thieves.

The propaganda, black propaganda, intelligence and counter-intelligence, is now just a garbled mess or misty gray clarity at best. Governments fuck with our minds and banks fuck with our lives.

Q: "Have you ever considered the power of the Central Bank as a peacekeeper?"

A: "Ideal Central Bank: 'If you fire one bullet, I will cut off your money supply'."

And Operations Research says: "If the people really cared about their fellow man, they would control their appetites (greed, procreation, etc.) so that they would not have to operate on a credit or welfare social system which steals from this worker to satisfy the bum."

And I say: Come on guys. What a load of fucking crap. You're mixing your sentences again. Science, metaphor, intent and meaning are all overlapped. It's like your trying to hypnotize your elite attendees. Time to break for tea and scones.

People care about their fellow man to their capacity, which you have reduced to 'whether or not they will pay you for your services'. We care about our fellow man by sharing a meal with them, then fucking their wives (should wake up the reader). We operate on credit because your corrupt judiciary and police keep attacking us anytime we reveal our minds and any time we contradict your programme, like when a man gets custody of his children. Likewise, we go on social welfare when you have completed your multiple attacks from all angles and all avenues and prevent us from working our chosen roles.

Operations Research, would you please just fuck off. You have turned us from worker into bum.

Operations Research says: "Since most of the general public will not exercise restraint, there are only two alternatives to reduce the economic inductance of the system:

(1) Let the populace bludgeon each other to death in war, which will only result in a total destruction of the living earth.

(2) Take control of the world by the use of economic 'silent weapons' in a form of 'quiet warfare', and reduce the economic inductance of the world to a safe level by a process of benevolent slavery and genocide. [By "inductance" they mean trips to the bakery for socializing, culture and general happiness, with the expectation that the food will be there.]

And I say: You are misconstrued evil fuckers. You treat us as goyim. You treat us like slaves. We are people. We are human beings. We have this innate feeling we were born with divine rights. You are stopping us from attaining this. You are pressing your thumbs down on us and screwing us around. We are not your slaves. You have enslaved governments and they have written laws that enslave us. We hate you with a passion. If we did not have to deal with you, we wouldn't. If we could avoid you, we would. If we could get rid of you totally and start again, most would be prepared to take that risk.

You are evil and give us no choice but to acknowledge that you are evil. Most don't want to acknowledge you at all. We hate you and your media.

Operations Research: "The latter option has been taken as the obviously better option [economic 'silent weapons' in a form of 'quiet warfare']. At this point it should be crystal clear to the reader why absolute secrecy about the silent weapons is necessary."

Because you are shits.

Operations Research: "The general public refuses to improve its own mentality and its faith in its fellow man."

Things only break down when there is not enough to go around. You engineer wars by removing what is required out of society.

Operations Research: "It has become a herd of proliferating barbarians, and, so to speak, a blight upon the fate of the earth."

FUCK OFF !!!

Operations Research: "They do not care enough about economic science to learn why they have not been able to avoid war despite religious morality, and their religious or self-gratifying refusal to deal with earthly problems renders the solution of the earthly problem unreachable by them."

Okay, okay. You have just given us your economic science 54 years late, which is the average lifetime of an irate worker with a mind who couldn't bare the reality you limited him to. As for "religious morality", Christianity is led by CIA agents as either the top dog, or the 2IC, and when you're planning a war, you tell your Christian leaders to quell resistance, then you teach them to hate Muslims, who are in turn led by KGB agents, and now, wait for it, CIA MKULTRA mind controlled Deep Sleep experiments – perfect mass assassins, sooo just Fuuuuccck OFFFFffff.

We call " . . . their religious or self-gratifying refusal to deal with earthly problems renders the solution of the earthly problem unreachable by them" – a mind wank. Keep it to yourself. No one wants to see a banker wanking in public, although it would be an appropriate sentence.

Operations Research: "It is left to those few who are truly willing to think and survive as the fittest to survive, to solve the problem for themselves as the few who really care. Otherwise, exposure of the silent weapon would destroy our only hope of preserving the seed of future true humanity."

This takes me back to the Golden Dawn coven numbering interpretation of 22 March 1980 Georgia Guidestones: "Infinite eradication of commoners by indirect means, right down to the individuals who have no comprehension. Those in control of themselves and their world rule and survive these actions." La de da, I got it right!

The Household Industry[22]

The industries of finance (banking), manufacturing, and government, real counterparts of the pure industries of capital, goods, and services, are easily defined because they are generally logically structured. Because of this their processes can be described mathematically and their technical coefficients can be easily deduced. This, however, is not the case with the service industry known as the household industry.

Household Models[23]

Comparing the industry flow diagram with households each has an economic value . . . Households may be thought of as monthly consumer flows following commodities: A alcoholic beverages; B beef; C coffee, . . . O Oil, . . . U unknown, etc..

The problem theoretical economists face is the consumer preferences of any household are not easily predictable and the technical coefficients of any one household tend to be a non-linear, very complex, and variable function/income/prices, etc.

---

[22] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 11.

[23] *Ibid.*

Computer information derived from the use of the universal product code (U.P.C.) in conjunction with credit card purchase as an individual household identifier could change this state of affairs. But the U.P.C. method is not yet available on a national or even a significant regional scale. To compensate for this data deficiency, an alternate indirect approach of analysis has been adopted known as economic shock testing. This method, widely used in the aircraft manufacturing industry develops an aggregate statistical sort of data.

And I say, this has now been updated to: Computer information derived from barcodes in conjunction with credit card purchases of the individual household is now available, so economic shock testing is no longer required to discover what the individual household-as-industry is.

"Applied to economics, this means that all of the households in one region or in the whole nation are studied as a group or class rather than individually, and the mass behavior rather than individual behavior is used to discover useful estimates of the technical coefficients governing the economic structure of the hypothetical single household industry . . . One method of evaluating the technical coefficients of the household industry depends upon shocking the prices of a commodity and noting the changes in the sales of all of the commodities [like oil]."

And I say: Economic shock testing was developed before barcodes and before credit cards and is no longer necessary.

Barcodes and credit cards have been part and parcel of Operations Research from their beginning. Credit has also been part of the destruction of the family. By destroying the family, we have to borrow off visa cards as the family no longer gives or lives with us. The Family Court has been a major player in this breakdown. We used to live as three generations. Now we live as half-a-generation.

The next step is microchip body identification. Resistance to this is the reason for the latest economic shock test – OIL. War was just the excuse.

Using oil to shock test known consumer spending is a way for oil companies to target affected groups. It works like this . . .

It has been found that people are buying computers more powerful than those that landed the Luna Module. They are also accessing information off the net that is above 'Lower Class Education'. That is, some of it is 'Good Science'. Oil companies want to limit the quality of knowledge getting out and the number of citizens who can access good information. Oil companies double their oil price in 12 months under the guise of a phoney war instigated by a phoney president, with a phoney American father, who derives from a real Nazi family (it's been phoney for generations). Oil companies wait until people stop buying computers, and when sales drop off, the value of the computer companies drop. The Oil companies then buy up the computer companies, build Ghost/GHOST programmes and faults into the computers, then drop the price of oil and sell Ghostly/Ghastly computers.

Ghosts and GHOST[24]

Ghosts were an incredibly popular form of fear, but lost their footing when mobile phones started to block the airwaves in 1982 – then aliens took over as the primary source of fear. But now we have a new form of ghost that runs hand in hand with 'World Anti-Independence Day'. This began on 4 July 2003 with any government department now allowed to hack into anyone's computer and share that information with any other government department – via 'The Privacy Act'!

---

[24] *Hitler was a British Agent*, Publ. FNZ Inc, Auckland, New Zealand, pp. 451–53.

There are two computer programs called “Ghost/GHOST”. One was developed by a member of the test population at the bottom of the Pacific (New Zealand) and called “GHOST”. The other was developed as a cover called “Ghost”. GHOST can draw down all information on a computer without the computer realising it has been tapped and can work whether you are offline or online.

As soon as GHOST was developed, one of the New Zealand employees was seconded by the US Government to assist in tapping computers in America. GHOST was bought out by Semantec, the same company which delivers Norton Anti-Virus. If you have a Norton Anti-Virus program, you have GHOST, and all of your computer data can be downloaded and read.

There are some 120,000 people in America working for the US Government solely reading the information on your computer, faxes, emails and listening to your phone calls – so send them something funny. Can you imagine how dull their job might be? GHOST makes thinking and research a dangerous profession. Part of the *One World Order* is One World Thinking (OWT), and ensuring that no one thinks outside the square . . .

Facial Recognition: Mandrake and Biometrics

The facial recognition programme *Mandrake* was publicly dropped in October 2003, with the announcement that it did not work. It was withdrawn to be forgotten about, probably because it worked so well and was considered a military device. It was continually developed and upgraded in secret and then marketed again after the secret testing process and withdrawal from the market had increased its value. It was capable of distinguishing between a real person and a body double and this proved problematic for higher-end politicians who use body doubles as a cover and as a form of political afterlife.

Sure enough, facial recognition was re-released to the public as *Biometrics* in May 2005. It never went away. Whereas fingerprints are not immediate and check 60–90 points, *Biometrics* instantly records and database-compares 50 points on the face and 240 points on the iris. This occurs from further away than one would think possible – like across the street and two storeys up. It also checks the movements of groups of people as to whether a crime is about to take place. When biometrics was reintroduced, the final shot was of Hitler with the statement “Someone is watching you”.[25]

As soon as the Web became a common tool, it also became a common tool for crime. From 2003, computer crime has escalated at a greater rate than any other form of crime. Fishing attacks on computers masquerade as official bank websites, and invite the target to log in passwords. Keystroke loggers also place the Trojan virus silently at the back of the target computer. This activates during telephone banking and passes the logged information back to the Fisher, allowing them to use the passwords to withdraw funds via the target's Internet banking. This gives new meaning to the term ‘Fisher King’.

Radio Frequency Identification Device Tags (RFIDT) are now on many purchased products. This is a low-powered tracking device and can be scanned from up to 10 metres away. RFIDT allows the new Tech-Burglars to identify new items in a home without even entering. This gives new meaning to the term ‘stealing to order’.[26]

---

[25] TV: 'Inside New Zealand', 28 May 2005.

[26] *Hitler was a British Agent*, Publ. FNZ Inc, Auckland, New Zealand, pp. 451–53.

Economic Shock Testing[27]

In recent times, the application of Operations Research to the study of the public economy has been obvious for anyone who understands the principles of shock testing.

In the shock testing of an aircraft airframe, the recoil impulse of firing a gun mounted on that airframe causes shock waves in that structure which tell aviation engineers the conditions under which parts of the airplane or the whole airplane or its wings will start to vibrate or flutter like a guitar string, a flute reed, or a tuning fork, and disintegrate or fall apart in flight.

Economic engineers achieve the same result in studying the behavior of the economy and the consumer public by carefully selecting a staple commodity such as beef, coffee, gasoline, or sugar and then causing a sudden change or shock in its price or availability, thus kicking everybody's budget and buying habits out of shape.

They then observe the shockwaves which result by monitoring the changes in advertising, prices, and sales of that and other commodities.

The objective of such studies is to acquire know-how to set the public economy into a predictable state of motion or change. A controlled self-destructive state of motion will convince the public that certain 'expert' people should take control of the money system and re-establish security, foregoing liberty and justice for all.

Arrr, part of this would be the *Homeland Security Bill*.

“When the subject citizens are rendered unable to control their financial affairs, they of course, become totally enslaved and a cheap source of labor.”[28]

Operations Research controls the United States Government and has been shock testing with 9/11, the Iraq War and the oil price increases. The latest oil spikes have engineered depleting emetics, reducing the populations resistance to being microchipped.

Operations Research: “Not only the prices of commodities, but also the availability of labor can be used as the means of shock testing. Labor strikes deliver excellent test shocks to an economy, especially in the critical service areas of trucking (transportation), communication, public utilities (energy, water, garbage collection), etc.

“By shock testing, it is found that there is a direct relationship between the availability of money flowing in an economy and the psychological outlook and response of masses of people dependent upon that availability.

“For example, there is a measurable, quantitative relationship between the price of gasoline, and the probability that a person would experience a headache, feel a need to watch a violent movie, smoke a cigarette, or go to a tavern for a mug of beer.

“It is most interesting that, by observing and measuring the economic modes by which the public tries to run from their problems and escape from reality, and by applying the mathematical theory of Operations Research, it is possible to program computers to predict the most probable combination of created events (shocks) which will bring about a complete control and subjugation of the public through a subversion of the public economy (by shaking the plum tree).”[29]

---

[27] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 12.

[28] *Ibid.*

[29] *Ibid.*

Introduction to the Theory of Shock Testing[30]

Let the prices and total sales of commodities assume a simple economic model in which the total number of important (staple) commodities are represented as beef, gasoline, and an aggregate of all other staple 'M' (an aggregate of C, S, T, U, etc.).

Introduction to Economic Amplifiers[31]

Economic amplifiers are the active components of economic engineering. The basic characteristic of any amplifier (mechanical, electrical, or economic) is that it receives an input control signal and delivers energy from an independent source to a specified output terminal in a predictable relationship to that input control signal.

The simplest form of economic amplifier is a device called 'advertising'.

If a person is spoken to by a TV advertiser as if he were a 12-year-old, then, due to suggestibility, with a certain probability he will respond or react to that suggestion with the uncritical response of a 12-year-old and will reach into his economic reservoir and buy that product on impulse when he passes it in the store.

An economic amplifier may have several inputs and outputs. Its response might be instantaneous or delayed. Its circuit symbol might be a rotary switch, if its options are 'exclusive', 'qualitative', 'go' or 'no go', or it might have its input/output relationships specified by a matrix, with his internal energy sources represented.

Whatever form, its purpose is to govern the flow of energy from a source to an output sink in direct relationship to an input control signal – an 'active circuit element' or 'component'.

Economic Amplifiers fall into 'classes' called 'strategies'. In comparison with electronic amplifiers, the 'specific internal functions of an Economic Amplifier are called 'logistical' instead of 'electrical'.

Therefore, Economic Amplifiers deliver power gain and effectively cause changes in the Economic Circuitry. In the design of an Economic Amplifier we have some idea of the five functions:

(1) Available Input Signals (Personal is specific, National is a statistic);

(2) Desired Output Objectives (Personal or National control);

(3) Strategic objective (clear National input signal, high gain, strong feedback);

(4) Available Economic Power sources (Power = Motivation x Currency);[32]

(5) Logistical options (all Game Theory).

"The process of defining and evaluating these factors and incorporating the economic amplifier into an economic system has been popularly called 'Game Theory'.

"The design of an economic amplifier begins with a specification of the power level of the output, which can range from personal to national.

The second condition is accuracy of response – how accurately the output action is a function of the input commands.

"High gain combined with strong feedback helps to deliver the required precision.

"Most of the error will be in the input data signal. Personal input data tends to be specific, while national input data tends to be statistical."[33]

---

[30] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 13.

[31] *Ibid*.

[32] Watts = Volts x Amps . . . Power (Watts) = Voltage (Motivating Force) x Current (Currency).

[33] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 13.

SHORT LIST OF INPUTS[34]

Questions to be answered:
(1) What (2) When (3) Where (4) How (5) Why (6) Who?

General sources of information:
(1) telephone taps (2) surveillance (3) analysis of garbage (4) behavior of children at school.

Standard of living by:
(1) food (2) clothing (3) shelter (4) transportation.

Social contacts:
(1) telephone – itemized record of calls (2) family – marriage certificate, birth certificates, etc. (3) friends, associates, etc. (4) memberships in organizations (5) political affiliation.

Personal Paper Trail – Buying habits – consumer preferences:
(1) Cheque accounts (2) Credit card purchases (3) Barcodes.

Assets:
(1) Cheque accounts (2) Savings accounts (3) Real estate (4) Business (5) Automobile, etc. (6) Safety deposit at bank (7) Stock market (8) Luxury Items (9) Excess houses.

Liabilities:
(1) Creditors (2) Enemies (see legal) (3) loans (4) consumer credit.

Government Sources and Govt. Ploys – Eat now and pay later – give Govt. info:[35]
(1) Welfare (2) Social Security (3) Surplus food (4) Dole (5) Grants (6) Subsidies.

Government sources (via intimidation):
(1) Internal Revenue (2) Internal Affairs/SIS (3) Census (4) Government sourced mail surveillance (5) Email surveillance (6) Electronic Surveillance (7) Foot Surveillance.

Habit Patterns – Programming Opportunities – Strengths and weaknesses through:
(1) activities (sports, hobbies, etc.) (2) Legal (fear, anger, crime record) (3) hospital records (medication, drug sensitivities, reaction to pain, etc.) (4) psychiatric records (fears, angers, disgusts, adaptability, reactions to stimuli, violence, suggestibility or hypnosis, pain, pleasure, love and sex).

Methods of coping/adapting/behaviour changes:
(1) alcohol (2) drugs (3) entertainment (4) religion/spiritual/cult/semi-cult influencing behaviour (5) other methods of escaping reality – fantasies expressed verbally, written, purchased (sex), played out or realized;

Payments on time, late or in debt:
(1) telephone bills (2) energy: electric, gas, fuel (3) water (4) loans (5) house (6) automobile (7) credit cards;

Political sensitivity:
(1) beliefs (2) contacts (3) position (4) strengths/weaknesses (5) projects/activities;

Legal – behavior control:
Excuses for investigation, search, arrest, or employment of force to modify behavior
(1) court reports (2) police records (3) driving record (4) police reports (5) insurance info. (6) anti-establishment acquaintances.

---

[34] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 14.

[35] The citizen will almost always make the collection of information easy if he can operate on the 'free sandwich principle' of 'eat now, and pay later'.

NATIONAL INPUT INFORMATION Business sources (via IRD/IRS etc.):
(1) prices of commodities (2) sales (3) investments in:
(a) stocks/inventory (b) production tools and machinery (c) buildings and improvements (d) the stock market.

Banks and credit bureaus:
(1) credit information (2) payment information.

Miscellaneous Sources:
(1) polls and surveys (2) publications (3) telephone records (4) energy and utility purchases.

Short List of Outputs[36]
Outputs: create controlled situations, manipulation of the economy (hence society) and control by control of compensation and losses.

Sequence:
(1) allocates opportunities.
(2) destroys opportunities [allocates/destroys = controls].
(3) controls the economic industry.
(4) controls the availability of raw materials.
(5) controls capital.
(6) controls bank rates.
(7) controls the inflation of the currency.
(8) controls the possession of property.
(9) controls the industrial capacity.
(10) controls manufacturing.
(11) controls the availability of goods (commodities).
(12) controls the prices of commodities.
(13) controls services, the labor force, etc.
(14) controls payments to government officials.
(15) controls the legal functions.
(16) controls the personal data file uncorrectable – by the party slandered.
(17) controls advertising.
(18) controls media content.
(19) controls material available for TV viewing.
(20) disengages attention from real issues.
(21) engages emotions.
(22) creates disorder, chaos, and insanity.
(23) controls design of more probing tax forms.
(24) controls surveillance.
(25) controls the storage of information.

---

[36] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 15.

(26) develops psychological analyses and profiles of individuals.
(27) controls sociological factors.
(28) controls health options.
(29) preys on weaknesses.
(30) cripples strengths.
(31) leaches wealth and substance.

Diversion: The Primary Strategy
"Experience has proven that the simplest method of securing a silent weapon and gaining control of the public is to keep the public undisciplined and ignorant of basic systems principles . . . keeping them confused, disorganized, and distracted with matters of no real importance . . . This is achieved by:

(1) Disengaging their minds and sabotaging their mental activities by providing a low quality program of public education in mathematics, logic, systems design, and economics, and by discouraging technical creativity.

(2) Engaging their emotions, increasing their self-indulgence and indulgence in emotional and physical activities, by:

(a) Unrelenting emotional affrontations and attacks (mental and emotional rape) by a constant barrage of sex, violence, and wars in the media – especially the TV and newspapers.

(b) Giving them what they desire, in excess, like 'junk food for thought' (crap news and porn), and depriving them of what they really need (a good relationship).

(3) Rewriting history and law, thus subjecting the public to deviant creations that to shift thinking from personal needs to highly fabricated external priorities.

These preclude their interest in, and discovery of, the silent weapons of social automation technology.

> *Interpretation*: These ensure the public are excluded from discovering the silent weapons of social automation technology.

The governing rule is: There is profit in confusion – the more confusion, the more profit. Therefore, the best approach is to create problems and then offer the solutions.

The governing rule is: **THE SOLUTION IS THE OBJECTIVE IN THE FIRST PLACE.**

Outcome Desired – Problem created – Chaos – Media – Bureaucracy – Solution

Diversion Summary
Media: Keep the public adult attention diverted from real social issues, and captivated with matters of no real importance (Glossy women's magazines).

Schools: Keep the young public ignorant of real mathematics, economics, law, and history.

Entertainment: Keep public entertainment below a sixth grade level.

Work: Keep the public busy, busy, busy, with no time to think – 'back on the farm with the other animals'.

Consent: The Primary Victory

"A silent weapon system operates upon data obtained from a docile public by legal (but not always lawful) force. Much information is made available to silent weapon systems programmers through Internal Revenue.[37] This information consists of the enforced delivery of well-organized data contained in federal and state tax forms collected, assembled, and submitted by slave labor (provided free by taxpayers and employers).

"The number of forms submitted to the IRS is also a useful indicator of public consent, and an important factor in strategic decision-making."[38]

A Short List of Inputs shows consent to silent weapons of social automation technology controlling someone's life.

A Short List of Outputs controls (allocates or destroys) someone's life.

This is the carrot and the stick.

"These 'Consent Coefficients' are numerical feedback that indicate victory status. "Their Psychological basis is:

"When the government is able to collect tax and seize private property without just compensation, it is an indication that the public is ripe for surrender and is consenting to enslavement and legal encroachment. A good and easily quantified indicator of Inland Revenue at harvest time is the number of public citizens who pay income tax."[39]

Amplifying Energy Sources[40]

The next step in the process of designing an economic amplifier is discovering the Energy Sources. Energy Sources that support any economic system are the supply of raw materials and the consent of the people to labor. Labor assumes a certain rank, position, level, and class in the social structure – a pecking order.

Each class is guaranteed a level of income and controls the class immediately below it. This preserves the class structure. It provides stability, security, and keeps people busy so they require a government from the top.

As time goes on and communication and education improve, the Lower Class become knowledgeable and envious of the good things of the Upper Class. The Lower Class attain a knowledge of Energy Systems which is able to propel them upwards.

Such a mass uprising threatens the sovereignty of the elite.

If this rise of the Lower Class can be postponed for long enough, the elite achieve Energy Dominance, and labor consents to never holding positions in the Essential Economic Energy Source – Economic Capacitance – Capital God.

The consent of people to labor, with others (Government) handling their affairs must occur until Energy Dominance is absolutely established and secured.

Part of this security is killing anyone around an oil field. This is usually done by creating a civil war around energy or mineral resources and is common practice in Africa.

Failure to secure Energy Dominance could cause the people to rise up and interfere in the final transfer of Energy Sources to the elite.

---

[37] See *Studies In The Structure Of The American Economy* for an I.R.S. source list.

[38] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 16.

[39] *Ibid.*

[40] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 17.

Manufactured public consent is still an essential key to the release of energy in the process of Economic Amplification.

> *Interpretation*: Advertising is essential to delivering power gain. In the Game Theory, the game must never be enunciated.

A major part of the advertising is ensuring distraction news.

The news specializes in distraction news.

When there is a big story in New Zealand, instead of getting the big story, we get a cat up a tree, a raincoat on the motorway, the number of birds killed by cats in Dunedin each year (each cat kills two birds), or the lesbian Prime Minister handing out awards to people guaranteed never, ever, ever to enunciate the Game Theory.

Prime Minister Helen Clark's lesbianism has never ever been on the news. Everybody knows, and pondering it constantly is a far greater distraction. New Zealand is got the Montauk thought reading device in June/July 2008. The one that reads thoughts. My bet is it will be turned off after a fortnight because half the population ponder, dream, daydream and subtly plan murdering the former Tavistock St Petersburg prostitute.

Now Helen Clark's prostitution will be read by the latest of Montauk's technology-of-the-future . . . and here's how they have sex.

Helen Clark's Detail[41] used to ring me up, via an intermediary, and say: "Where the fuck is she?" And I'd reply, "235 Jervois Road, Herne Bay, at Maryan Street's house". So when Helen Clark would jump into her car at 3 am and shoot off, the boys had time to wake up, jump through their trousers, put the billy on and have a cup of tea before they drove five minutes up the road.

Maryan Street is a lesbian married to another woman with a child conceived by hot teaspoon in Helen Clark's house. Now there's a little Montauk mindreader.

Anyway, another while I'm in distraction mode. You're wondering how Helen Clark has sex with her husband, when she does on those rare occasions, like the consummation that didn't happen for decades. Well, some builder mates of mine were working on her house and they found the biggest dildo you could find under her bed. She sticks the fisted end up her fanny, puts the dick end in her gay husband's arsehole and fucks him doggy style.

Go Montauk that.

Anyway, that was just a little distraction from someone often interviewed, but never on the news.

Social Engineering is key. The public receives an input control signal and delivers energy. Advertising controls the 'exclusive', 'qualitative', 'go' or 'no go' switch and 'Ignorance' governs the active circuit.

If you're not ignorant, you're not a good citizen in George Herbert Bush's world. The switch is turned off for you, and you are governed by 'NO ALLOCATION' and ultimately destroyed.

There is an advertising strategy for each class. Each class is expected to perform specific internal functions. If they fail, they change class and a new strategy is heaped upon them.

For the Lower Class, we call this ignorance inducing advertising 'PC' (Political Correctness).

---

[41] Detail is Security.

All of this depends on the Energy Source Elite's dominance: your input, their desired output; your desired output, their strategic objective; their money, your motivation for currency; their logisitical option, your entire life which they control by allocating or destroying.

They want strong gain with no feedback.

You want strong gain and motivational feedback.

Now you know why your employer's encouragement sounds so hollow.

Consent is an Economic Valve. It is involved in Present Flow, and must be maintained constantly. This is the role of the news. The news ensures that we continually have no news.

The Magnetic Field of the human population is based on ignorance, total ignorance. If Commoners got the news, they would demand power, a share in the supply line, a share of the current, and unlimited choices.

What do Commoners want? We want money.

Commoner's minimal assets would be replaced with a share of the banker's assets.

In short, the Lower Class would want to vastly increase their Capacity.

Capital is Economic Capacitance, but that is all going to the Energy Barons, the Energy Elite.

Iraq is currently a good example where: "A declining capacity to deliver services and carry out investments . . . Iraq has no clear framework as to who owns the oil."[42]

This is just how the Energy Barons want it – total and utter confusion and war, with less and less Iraqis owning a share, and more and more warmongers fighting for the oil companies on private contracts.

It's civil war all around oil, with the Americans drawn in on behalf of Israel, all sides controlled and paid for by the banks, with the Druze dressed as Iraqi Arabs, shooting at the American soldiers, who then shoot Iraqis. When the Brits caught onto this, they dressed as Arabs, shot Israelis and were caught by Coalition Forces. MI6 were rather embarrassed, but it was little matter compared to the blood-oil they were gaining.

Iraq is the model of the new PC Lower Class. Now you know what to expect.

Once the elite have total control of the Prime Energy Sources, Citizens will have no Capacity to control their government's actions, and the governments will no longer be required to act, even minutely, like their polling day pledges.

This will make it a One Government system, no matter who gets in.

When all governments are One Government, you have One World Order.

Already the New Zealand Supreme Court has its ruling made in Israel. But, hey, what do you expect, the Chief Justice is a Sayanim Mossad agent and a "thief, a slapper and a contract killer".[43]

This is how it already is. Governments haven't made a change since one of our leaders was assassinated in every country.

I think Britain might be the exception, but then "there is that famous Scottish saying: 'He fought to the last like an English Knight', which meant give up as soon as the battle swung, taken for ransom, and rescued with complicated land transactions."[44]

---

[42] 'Voice of America News', Prime TV, New Zealand, 1 July 2008, 10.40 pm.

[43] *Gifting the United Nations to Stalin*, FNZ Inc, Auckland New Zealand, 2007, last page.

[44] *How To Take Over The World*, FNZ Inc, Auckland New Zealand, 2007, p. 52.

The methods of fulfilling the Georgia Guidestones policy of killing 92% of the world's population are currently being tried out. Some are perfected. To date, only a very small amount have been killed – less than 0.92%.

So we can expect 100 times the dead of what we are experiencing now. Iraq is the model for the rest of the world.

Since Communism has been a sham run by the Jews, who took control of Britain, then America, then Russia, then China, then Israel, then Vietnam, then Egypt,[45] we can expect the world events to be modelled on the worst of these.

It should make Henry Kissinger very happy. He's the world's biggest killer – bigger than Mao. Mao was a Jew and Kissinger is a German Jewish homosexual – the worst of any kind.

Logistics[46]

The successful application of a strategy requires a careful study of inputs, outputs, strategy connecting the inputs and the outputs, and the available energy sources to fuel the strategy. This study is called logistics.

A logistical problem is studied at the elementary level first, and then levels of greater complexity are studied as a synthesis of elementary factors.

This means that a given system is analysed (broken down into its sub-systems), and these in turn are analysed, until, by this process, one arrives at the logistical 'atom', the individual.

This is where the process of syntheses properly begins, at the time of the birth of the individual.

Home – The Artificial Womb[47]

From the time a person leaves its mother's womb, its every effort is directed toward building, maintaining, and withdrawing into artificial wombs – various sorts of substitute protective devices or shells.

The objective of these artificial wombs is to provide a stable environment for both stable and unstable activity; to provide a shelter for the evolutionary processes of growth, and maturity. The home/womb is for survival. It provides security for protective defense, offensive activity, and freedom.

The Political Structure of a Nation – Dependency[48]

The primary reason why the individual citizens of a country create a political structure is a subconscious wish or desire to perpetuate their own dependency relationship of childhood.

Simply put, they want a human god to eliminate all risk from their life, pat them on the head, kiss their bruises, put a chicken on every dinner table, clothe their bodies, tuck them into bed at night, and tell them that everything will be alright when they wake up in the morning.

This public demand is incredible, so the human god, the political, meets the incredible with incredible by promising the world and delivering nothing. So who is the bigger liar?, the public?, or the 'godfather'?

This public behaviour is surrender, born of fear, laziness and expediency. It is the basis of the welfare state as a strategic weapon, useful against a disgusting public.

Dependency and ignorance is also the basis of the Welfare State which is used as a strategic weapon that leads to war, whether national or international.

---

[45] Yes, Egypt's President Hosni Mubarak is an Israeli agent.

[46] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 17.

[47] *Ibid.*

[48] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 18 – word for word, this is what they said.

Action/Offense[49]
Most people want to be able to subdue and/or kill other human beings who disturb their daily lives, but they do not want to have to cope with the moral and religious issues, which such an overt act on their part might raise.

Therefore, they assign the dirty work to others (including their own children) so as to keep the blood off their own hands.

They rave about the humane treatment of animals and then sit down to a delicious hamburger from a whitewashed slaughterhouse down the street and out of sight.

But even more hypocritical, they pay taxes to finance a professional association of hitmen collectively called politicians, and then complain about corruption in government.

The public pays taxes to employ politicians to take responsibility, risk, liability, and face reality for them. When they fail, which is always, the public complains about government corruption.

Operation Research states: "Politicians are a professional association of hitmen".

Responsibility[50]
Most people want to be free to do things (to explore, etc.), but they're afraid to fail.

The fear of failure is manifested in irresponsibility.

Commoners delegate responsibility to others when success is uncertain, carries a liability, or infringes the law.

The commoner is not prepared to accept such risky responsibilities, so demands an authority (root word – 'author') to take responsibility and accept liability.

Commoners hire politicians to face reality for them, to be responsible and liable.

Politicians take up the job, yet fail miserably every time.

Politicians are good on attack and useless on accomplishment.

'Politician' – "Poll it I can".

Summary[51]
People hire politicians so people can:
(1) Obtain security without managing it.

(2) Obtain action without thinking about it.

(3) Inflict theft, injury, and death upon others without having to contemplate either life or death.

(4) Avoid responsibility for their own intentions.

(5) Obtain the benefits of reality and science without exerting themselves in the discipline of facing or learning either.

People give their politicians the power to create and manage a war machine to:
(1) Provide for the survival of the Nation/Womb.

(2) Prevent encroachment of anyone or anything upon the Nation/Womb.

(3) Destroy any enemy who threatens the Nation/Womb.
. . . and destroy citizens who threaten the stability of a nation, including non-conformists who write about the game.

---

[49] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 18, word for word, this is what they said.
[50] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 18.
[51] *Ibid.*

"Politicians hold many quasi-military jobs, the lowest being the police which are soldiers, the attorneys and the C.P.A.s [and Deputy Commissioners[52]] next who are spies and saboteurs (licensed), and the judges who shout the orders and run the closed union military shop for whatever the market will bear. The generals are industrialists. The 'presidential' level of commander-in-chief is shared by the international bankers.

People know that they have created this farce and financed it with their own taxes (consent), but they would rather knuckle under than be the hypocrite."[53]

In Economic Theory:
Bankers are Presidents/Commander-in-Chief of the Military.

Industrialists are Commanders of the Military.

Politicians are a Professional Association of Hitmen.

Deputy Commissioners are politically appointed and control the judges on behalf of Politicians – the Professional Association of Hitmen (PAH!).

Judges run a closed-union military shop for whatever bankers require and the market will bear.

Attorneys are Licensed Saboteurs.

Police are Foot Soldiers [who spend most of their time covering up for paedophiles, including Judges into kiddy porn].

This created farce called government is a professional association of hitmen. It is financed by taxes, which are derived from public consent. Public consent is derived from manufactured consent. Manufactured consent is derived from media advertising and 'news', which create our public values and views. Our public values are controlled by the Bankers, who are the real Presidents and Commander-in-Chief of the Military.

Thus, a nation becomes divided into two very distinct parts: a Docile sub-Nation; and a Political sub-Nation.

The Political sub-Nation remains attached to the Docile sub-Nation, tolerates it, and leaches its substance until it grows strong enough to detach itself and devour its parent – the 'Political Association of Professional Hitmen'.

PAH – the 'Political Association of Hitmen' – Government.

This can happen by force, or it can happen every three or four years.

System Analysis
In order to make meaningful computerized Economic decisions about war, the primary Economic Flywheel, it is necessary to assign concrete Logistical values to each element of the war structure – personnel and material alike. This process begins with a clear and candid description of the sub-systems of such a structure.

> *Interpretation*: In order to make computerized Economic decisions about war –the last resort of economic heat – the Conducted Con against all Resistance – it is necessary to assign Logistical values to each element of the war structure and to avoid making the Human Value Table, human. This process begins with a candid description of everyone's preferred role.

---

[52] Deputy Commissioners stand behind judges and influence them politically.
[53] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 18.

The Draft (As military service)[54]

Few efforts of human behavior modification are more remarkable or more effective than that of the socio-military institution known as the draft. A primary purpose of a draft or other such institution is to instill, by intimidation, in the young males of a society, the uncritical conviction that the government is omnipotent.

He is soon taught that a prayer is slow to reverse what a bullet can do in an instant. Thus, a man trained in a religious environment for eighteen years, can, by this instrument of the government, be broken down and purged of his fantasies and delusions in a matter of months.

Once the previous fantasies are removed, all else is easy to instill.

Even more interesting is the process by which a young man's parents, who purportedly love him, can be induced to send him off to war to his death. Although the scope of this work will not allow this matter to be expanded in full detail, nevertheless, a course overview will be possible and can serve to reveal those factors which must be included in some numerical form in a computer analysis of social and war systems.

We begin with a tentative definition of the draft.

The draft: (selective service, etc.) is an institution of compulsory collective sacrifice and slavery, devised by the middle-aged and elderly for the purpose of pressing the young into doing the public dirty work. It further serves to make the youth as guilty as the elders, thus making criticism of the elders less likely (Generation Stabilizer).

The Draft is marketed and sold to the public under the label "patriotic & national" service.

Once a candid economic definition of the draft is achieved, that definition is used to outline the boundaries of a structure called the 'Human Value System', which in turn is translated into the terms of Game Theory.

The value of such a slave laborer as the draft is broken down into categories by intellect, experience, post service job demand, etc. It is the Table of Human Values.

Some of these categories are ordinary and can be tentatively evaluated in terms of the value of certain jobs for which a known fee exists.

Some jobs are harder to value because they are unique to the demands of social subversion.

One such job is the value of a mother's instruction to her daughter causing that daughter to put certain behavioral demands upon a future husband, 10 or 15 years hence. By suppressing her new husband's resistance to a government perversion, it makes it easier, for example, for a banking cartel buy the State of New York in 20 years.

Such a problem leans heavily upon the observations and the data of wartime espionage [Operations Research, 1939–45] and many types of psychological testing. But crude mathematical models (algorithms, etc.) can be devised, if not to predict, at least to predetermine theme events with maximum certainty.

What does not exist by natural cooperation is enhanced by calculated compulsion.

Human beings are machines, levers which may be grasped and turned, and there is little real difference between automating a society and automating a shoe factory.

---

[54] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 19–20.

These derived values are variable. It is necessary to use a current Table of Human Values for computer analysis.

These values are given in true measure [silver] rather than U.S. dollars, since the latter is unstable, being presently inflated beyond the production of national goods and services so as to give the economy a false kinetic energy ('paper' inductance).

In 1979 the US was producing more money than the GNP hence inductance.

"The silver value is stable, it being possible to buy the same amount with a gram of silver today as could be bought in 1920. Human value measured in silver units changes slightly due to changes in production technology."[55]

ENFORCEMENT

Factor I[56]

As in every social system approach, stability is achieved only by understanding and accounting for human nature (action/reaction patterns). A failure to do so can be disastrous, and usually is. As in other human social schemes, one form or another of incentive or intimidation [carrot or stick] is essential to the success of the draft. Physical principles of action and reaction must be applied to both internal and external sub-systems. To secure the draft, individual brainwashing/programming in both the family unit and the peer group must be engaged and brought under control.

Factor II: Father[57]

The man of the household must be housebroken to ensure that junior will grow up with the right social training and attitudes.

The advertising media, etc., are engaged to see to it that father-to-be is pussy-whipped before, or by the time, he is married.

He is taught that he either conforms to the social notch set out for him, or his sex life will be hobbled, and his tender companionships will be zero.

He is made to see that women demand security more than logical, principled, or honorable behavior.

By the time his son must go to war, father (with jelly for a back bone) will slam a gun into junior's hand before father will risk the censure of his peers, or make a hypocrite of himself by crossing the investment he has in his own personal opinion or self-esteem.

Junior will go to war or father will be embarrassed.

So junior will go to war, the true purpose of the war notwithstanding.

Factor III: Mother[58]

The female element of human society is ruled by emotion first and logic second [Emotion, fantasy, imagination, then logic].

In the battle between logic and imagination, imagination always wins and fantasy prevails.

Maternal instinct dominates so that the child comes first and the future comes second.

A woman with a newborn baby is too starry-eyed to see her children as a wealthy man's cannon fodder or a cheap source of slave labor.

---

[55] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 20.

[56] *Ibid.*

[57] *Ibid.*

[58] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, pp. 20–21.

A woman must be conditioned to accept the transition into "reality", when it comes, or sooner.

As the transition becomes more difficult to manage, the family unit must be carefully disintegrated, and state controlled public education and state operated childcare centers must become more common and legally enforced so as to begin the detachment of the child from the mother and the father at an earlier age.

Interpretation: The Family Court destroys the family in preparation for children going to war. When there is no war, they are sent to prison.

Inoculation of behavioral drugs can speed the transition for the child (mandatory).

Interpretation: The government is behind vaccination drugs, medical drugs, the removal of quality food to create the desire for fantasy drugs, and illegal drugs.

"Caution: A woman's impulsive anger can override her fear. An irate woman's power must never be underestimated, and her power over a pussy-whipped husband must likewise never be underestimated. It got women the vote in 1920."[59]

Factor IV: Junior[60]
Due to the emotional pressure of self-preservation during wartime and the self-serving attitude of the common herd, an option to avoid the battlefield is to be curbed. If junior can be persuaded to go, then all of the above pressure should be used to propel Johnny off to war.

Family and society's quiet blackmailings are the threat:
"No sacrifice, no friends; no glory, no girlfriends."

Factor V: Sister[61]
And what about junior's sister? She is given all the good things of life by her father, and taught to expect the same from her future husband regardless of the price.

Factor VI: Cattle[62]
Those who will not use their brains are no better off than those who have no brains, and so this mindless school of jellyfish, father, mother, son, and daughter, become useful beasts of burden or trainers of the same.

. . . .

This document is the doctrine adopted by the Policy Committee of the Bilderburg Group during its first known meeting in 1954.

A copy was found in the possession of Naval Intelligence in 1969.
It didn't get out to the general public, which means someone was probably killed.

This updated government document version was dated May 1979.
It was found on 7 July 1986 in an IBM copier purchased at a surplus sale.

It was discovered on the net on 28 June 2008.

It was then re-interpreted by myself (Greg Hallett B. Arch) to make it more readable.
This included the *Intrepretations* and updating (no first line indent).

---

[59] *Silent Weapons for a Quiet War*, p. 21.
[60] *Ibid.*
[61] *Ibid.*
[62] *Ibid.*

Annotated Cabinet

Labour 1999–2008

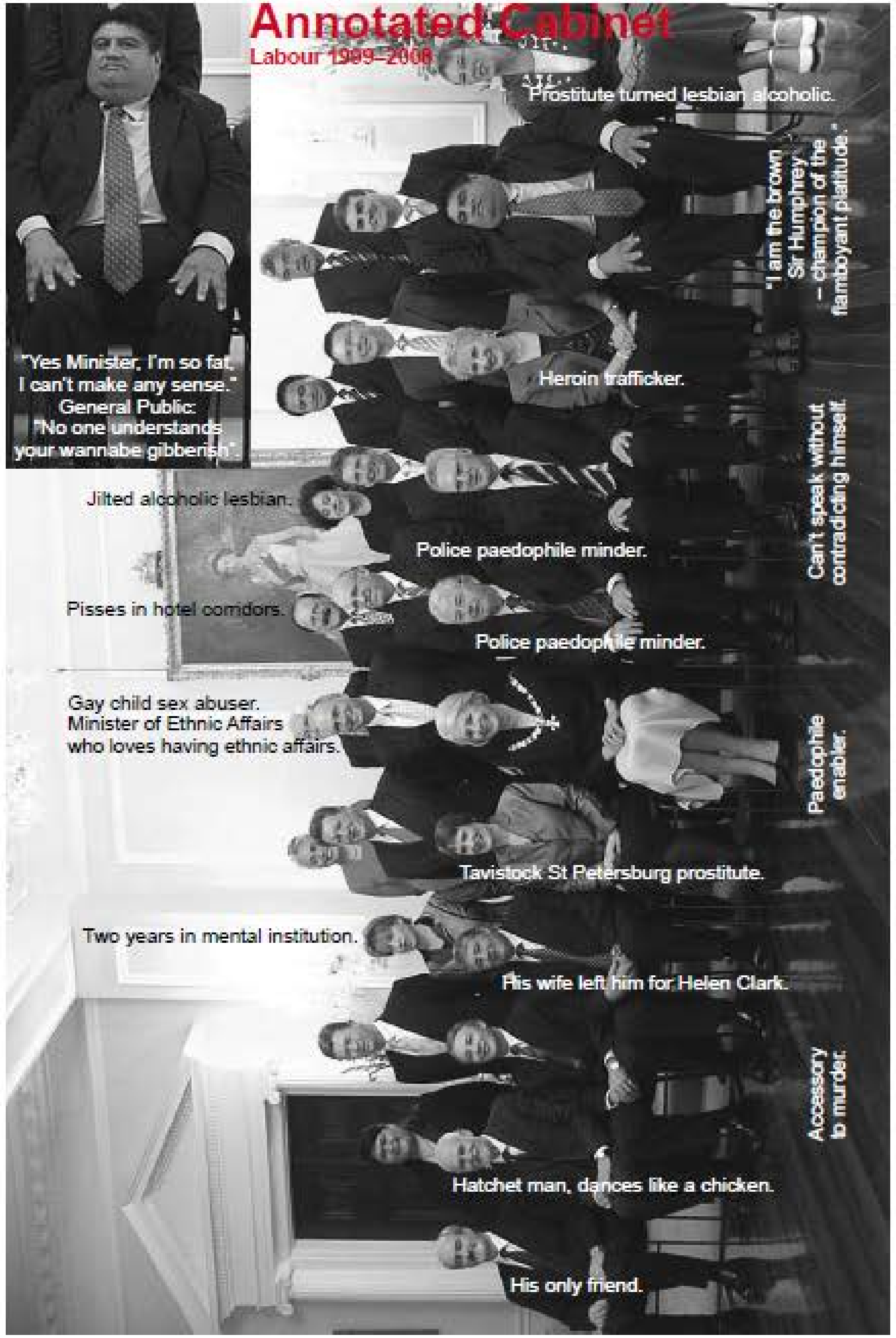
Prostitute turned lesbian alcoholic.
"I am the brown Sir Humphrey – champion of the flamboyant platitude."
"Yes Minister, I'm so fat, I can't make any sense." General Public: "No one understands your wannabe gibberish".
Heroin trafficker.
Can't speak without contradicting himself.
Jilted alcoholic lesbian.
Police paedophile minder.
Pisses in hotel corridors.
Police paedophile minder.
Gay child sex abuser. Minister of Ethnic Affairs who loves having ethnic affairs.
Paedophile enabler.
Tavistock St Petersburg prostitute.
Two years in mental institution.
His wife left him for Helen Clark.
Accessory to murder.
Hatchet man, dances like a chicken.
His only friend.

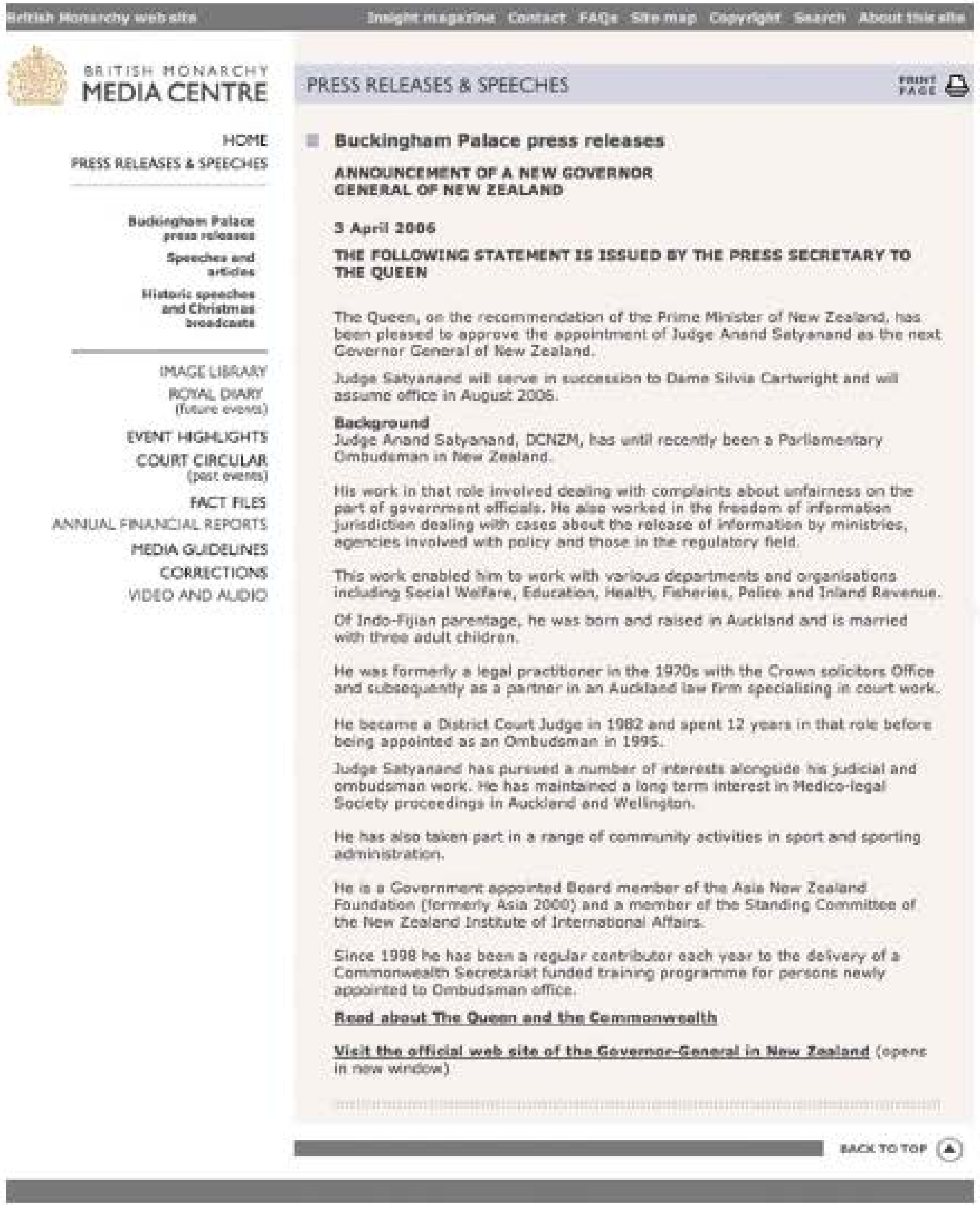
British Monarchy web site
Insight magazine
Contact
FAQs
Site map
Copyright
Search
About this site
BRITISH MONARCHY MEDIA CENTRE
PRESS RELEASES & SPEECHES
PRINT PAGE
HOME
PRESS RELEASES & SPEECHES
Buckingham Palace press releases
Speeches and articles
Historic speeches and Christmas broadcasts
IMAGE LIBRARY
ROYAL DIARY (future events)
EVENT HIGHLIGHTS
COURT CIRCULAR (past events)
FACT FILES
ANNUAL FINANCIAL REPORTS
MEDIA GUIDELINES
CORRECTIONS
VIDEO AND AUDIO
BACK TO TOP

Buckingham Palace press releases

ANNOUNCEMENT OF A NEW GOVERNOR GENERAL OF NEW ZEALAND

3 April 2006

THE FOLLOWING STATEMENT IS ISSUED BY THE PRESS SECRETARY TO THE QUEEN

The Queen, on the recommendation of the Prime Minister of New Zealand, has been pleased to approve the appointment of Judge Anand Satyanand as the next Governor General of New Zealand.

Judge Satyanand will serve in succession to Dame Silvia Cartwright and will assume office in August 2006.

Background
Judge Anand Satyanand, DCNZM, has until recently been a Parliamentary Ombudsman in New Zealand.

His work in that role involved dealing with complaints about unfairness on the part of government officials. He also worked in the freedom of information jurisdiction dealing with cases about the release of information by ministries, agencies involved with policy and those in the regulatory field.

This work enabled him to work with various departments and organisations including Social Welfare, Education, Health, Fisheries, Police and Inland Revenue.

Of Indo-Fijian parentage, he was born and raised in Auckland and is married with three adult children.

He was formerly a legal practitioner in the 1970s with the Crown solicitors Office and subsequently as a partner in an Auckland law firm specialising in court work.

He became a District Court Judge in 1982 and spent 12 years in that role before being appointed as an Ombudsman in 1995.

Judge Satyanand has pursued a number of interests alongside his judicial and ombudsman work. He has maintained a long term interest in Medico-legal Society proceedings in Auckland and Wellington.

He has also taken part in a range of community activities in sport and sporting administration.

He is a Government appointed Board member of the Asia New Zealand Foundation (formerly Asia 2000) and a member of the Standing Committee of the New Zealand Institute of International Affairs.

Since 1998 he has been a regular contributor each year to the delivery of a Commonwealth Secretariat funded training programme for persons newly appointed to Ombudsman office.

Read about The Queen and the Commonwealth

Visit the official web site of the Governor-General in New Zealand (opens in new window)

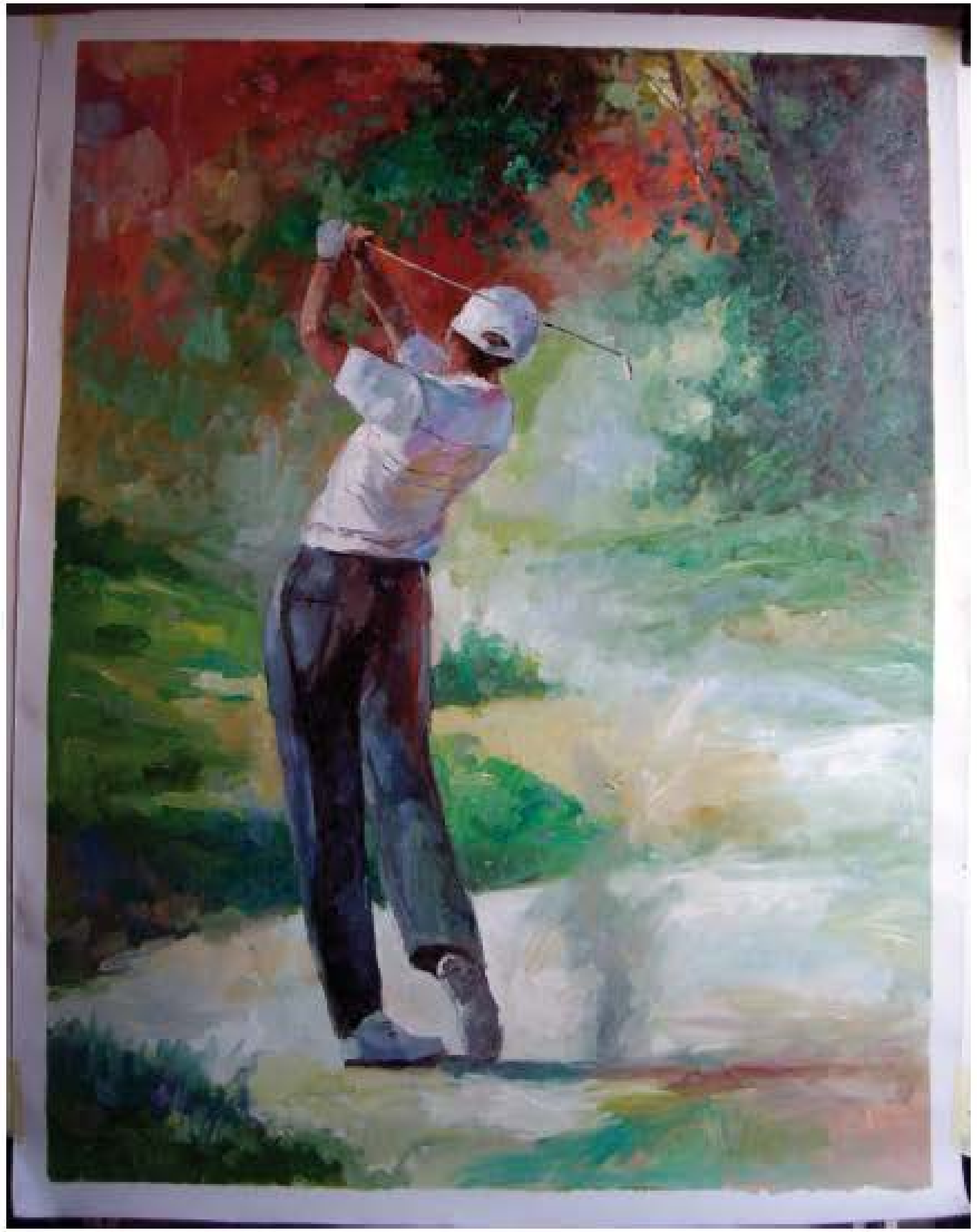

$730 painting tendered to the Courts . . . or they could view the next painting . . .

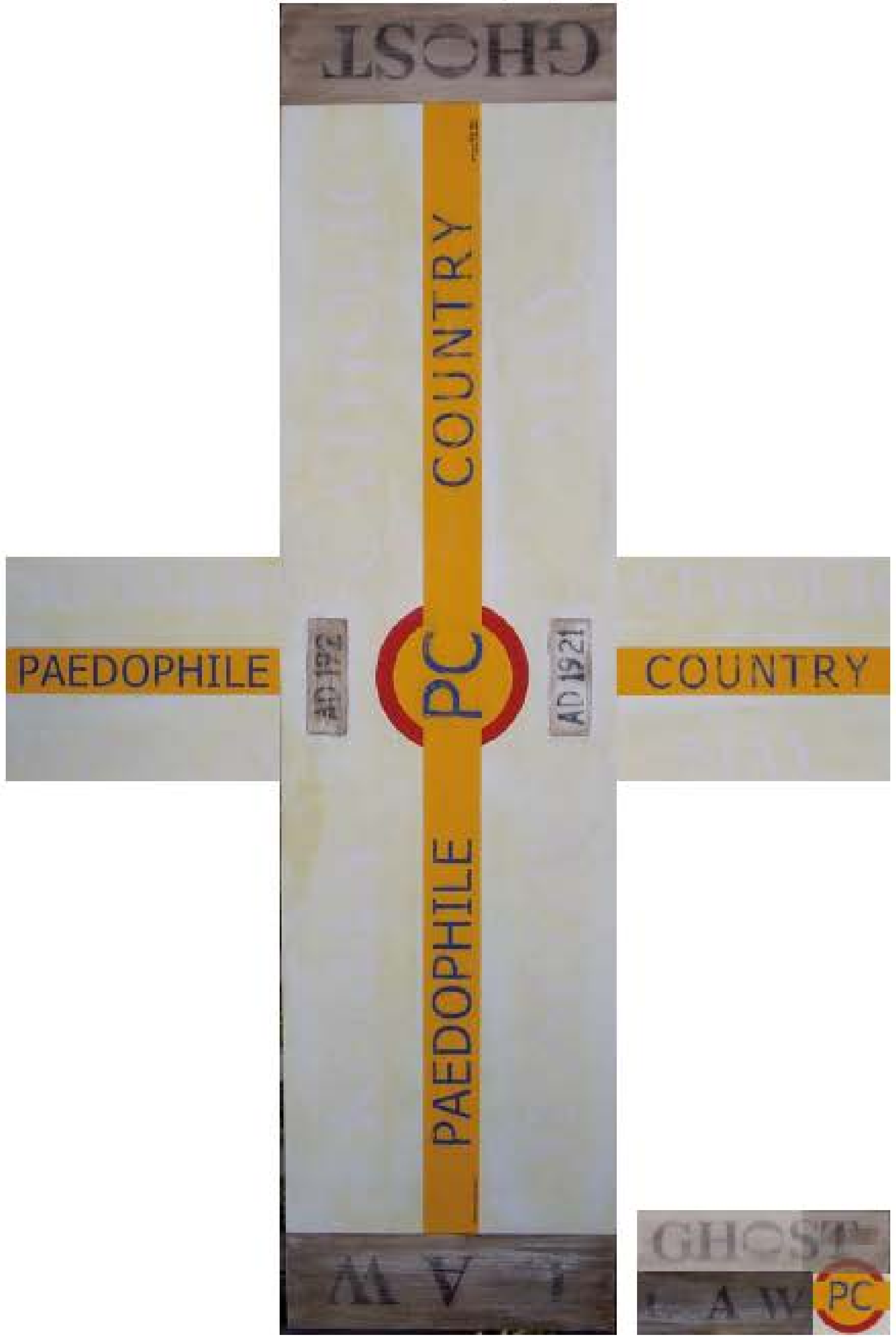
GHOST
COUNTRY
PAEDOPHILE
AD 192
PC
AD 1921
COUNTRY
PAEDOPHILE
LAW
GHOST
LAW
PC

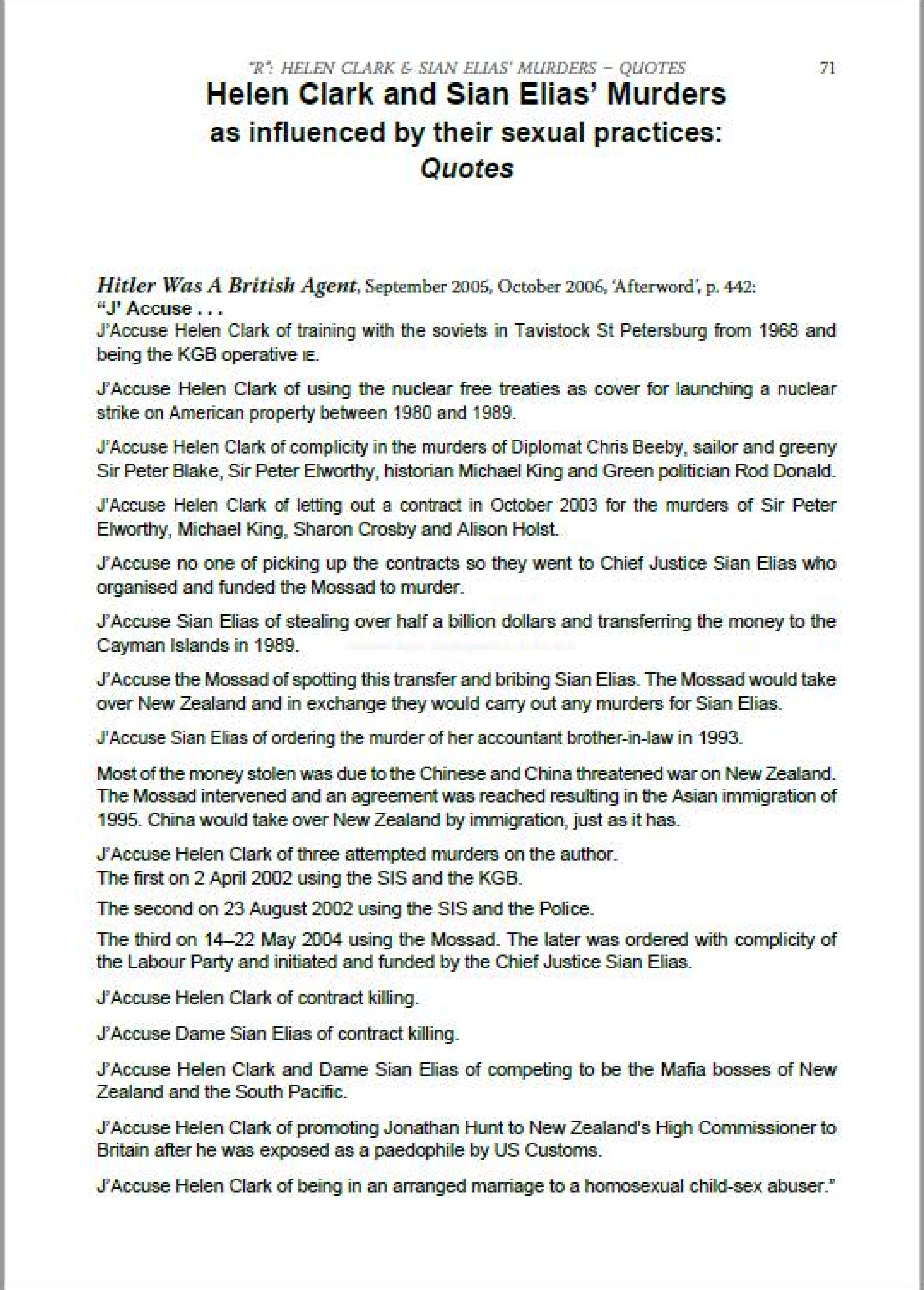

Helen Clark and Sian Elias' Murders
as influenced by their sexual practices:
Quotes

Hitler Was A British Agent, September 2005, October 2006, 'Afterword', p. 442:
"J' Accuse . . .

J'Accuse Helen Clark of training with the soviets in Tavistock St Petersburg from 1968 and being the KGB operative IE.

J'Accuse Helen Clark of using the nuclear free treaties as cover for launching a nuclear strike on American property between 1980 and 1989.

J'Accuse Helen Clark of complicity in the murders of Diplomat Chris Beeby, sailor and greeny Sir Peter Blake, Sir Peter Elworthy, historian Michael King and Green politician Rod Donald.

J'Accuse Helen Clark of letting out a contract in October 2003 for the murders of Sir Peter Elworthy, Michael King, Sharon Crosby and Alison Holst.

J'Accuse no one of picking up the contracts so they went to Chief Justice Sian Elias who organised and funded the Mossad to murder.

J'Accuse Sian Elias of stealing over half a billion dollars and transferring the money to the Cayman Islands in 1989.

J'Accuse the Mossad of spotting this transfer and bribing Sian Elias. The Mossad would take over New Zealand and in exchange they would carry out any murders for Sian Elias.

J'Accuse Sian Elias of ordering the murder of her accountant brother-in-law in 1993.

Most of the money stolen was due to the Chinese and China threatened war on New Zealand. The Mossad intervened and an agreement was reached resulting in the Asian immigration of 1995. China would take over New Zealand by immigration, just as it has.

J'Accuse Helen Clark of three attempted murders on the author.
The first on 2 April 2002 using the SIS and the KGB.

The second on 23 August 2002 using the SIS and the Police.

The third on 14–22 May 2004 using the Mossad. The later was ordered with complicity of the Labour Party and initiated and funded by the Chief Justice Sian Elias.

J'Accuse Helen Clark of contract killing.

J'Accuse Dame Sian Elias of contract killing.

J'Accuse Helen Clark and Dame Sian Elias of competing to be the Mafia bosses of New Zealand and the South Pacific.

J'Accuse Helen Clark of promoting Jonathan Hunt to New Zealand's High Commissioner to Britain after he was exposed as a paedophile by US Customs.

J'Accuse Helen Clark of being in an arranged marriage to a homosexual child-sex abuser."

Hitler Was A British Agent, 'Hess and Hess Fly to Britain', pp. 150–53:

"The 'Progrom' was to maintain the Berlin Wall until 30/31 December 1999, once Helen Clark and her minder Vladimir Putin had got into power. Helen Clark is the KGB operative 'IE', pronounced 'E'. "She trained in St Petersburg"[1] from 1968 and worked with Vladimir Putin from 1978–91 in an attempt to launch a nuclear strike on American property (Canberra, Adelaide, Sydney, Taupo) from a Russian nuclear-armed submarine in the deep New Zealand waters. This was known as the "Trawler Wars".

Vladimir Putin lived in Wellington for two years as a Fisheries Inspector (between 1980–82) and returned for the sinking of the *Lermontov* (16 February 1986). At least some of Putin and Clark's clandestine meetings were held on Wellington's Wharf No. 3 in the early hours of the morning and these were recorded. These records were then read and discussed on a political level, but did not reach the public domain due to ideological similarities . . .

Prior to WWI, London, St. Petersburg and Berlin were opulent cities of equal wealth. After WWI, WWII and the Cold War, London was by far the wealthier city. The battle between these countries continues in the realm of WAR-IN-PEACETIME. It is now fought around the distribution of drugs and the induction of feminism into each other's societies.

Feminism was invented in Russia as a method of war, and during the Cold War feminists in Russia were deported to the West. Feminists break down the family, reduce breeding and create infighting.

War-in-peacetime is the war of family attrition. Vladimir Putin's agent Helen Clark is a feminist and lesbian. She became Prime Minister only after another female PM lost to her, so there was no choice. Clark has taken the feminist motto, "If it works, break it" to the nth degree and in just six years of her communist/fascist leadership, NZ has become a country without an identity where the citizens fear and distrust the police and paedophiles have been elevated to the highest office."

Hitler Was A British Agent, 'Lost Leaders', pp. 389–90:

"Wars have been back-engineered. That is, treaties, agreements and contracts (cause and effect) have been placed on paper beforehand to ensure maximum profit and minimal interference. The United Nations is a case in point. Since the UN receives 50% of its funding from the US, it has come under the thumb of the CIA.

The UN has no opposition
when conflicts serve American interest.
No American can be charged by the UN
for international war crimes.

The UN is now a white paper on war, drugs and paedophilia and only those with secret CV's of corruption, murder, bribe taking, drug use, paedophilia and front-marriages (intell. files held by the CIA, the FBI, the Mossad and the KGB) are considered for any position of influence.

Secretary general of NATO Lord George Robertson: "Jaap [de Hoop Scheffer] has a distinguished record as both diplomat and politician that make him superbly qualified to be secretary general of NATO . . . I am delighted that we have found the right man to ensure NATO remains the world's most successful defense alliance." Lord Robertson went on to become deputy chairman of the British-based Telecoms group Cable and Wireless – the ultimate position for spying on drug and paedophile markets . . . and supplying them.

---

[1] The author announced this on televisions on 29 November 2005, replayed on 8 February 2006. There have been no law suits, and worse still, no contact from any media. This includes the Head of Television who has a copy of the first edition.

NATO's new secretary general is Amsterdam born Jaap de Hoop Scheffer. Jaap was a reserve officer in Dutch Air Force, senior diplomat before entering Parliament in 1986 and is described as "as extremely talented professional". Jaap: "the enemy is international terrorism . . . . that is why NATO is in Afghanistan."[2]

After near bankruptcy post-WWII, Monaco's bank was taken over by Aristole Onassis. Monaco then became a meeting point for drug shipments, washing drug money . . . and a tax haven.

The Pope John Paul II (Karol Jozef Wojtyla) and Prince Rainier were both terminally ill and NATO went in search of new drug markets for their newly acquired role of drug trafficking Afghan heroin. The paedophile Lord Robertson (Dunblane massacre) knew of the New Zealand government's paedophilia through the US Customs naming of Jonathan Hunt (Speaker of the House) as a paedophile in September 2004 and the ongoing intelligence documented homosexual child-sex abuse of Peter Davis (husband of Prime Minister Helen Clark) from pre-1979 to his arrest at San Francisco's Airport on 7 June 2006 where he propositioned an underaged Mexican boy by grabbing his crutch and saying "How about it?" The underaged boy turned out to be a policeman and Davis was arrested. First Laddy Davis claimed diplomatic immunity and was rescued by the RNZAF and three diplomatic officers (Sodomy Olympics).

Jaap de Hoop Scheffer went to Australia and New Zealand and gave a speech at Wellington's Victoria University on 31 March 2005: "We have come closer together over the last three years . . . Australia and New Zealand were the top candidates for NATO partnerships . . . NATO is everywhere." He arrived into New Zealand with 10 kg of Afghan heroin via diplomatic pouch. Once this new market was accepted the two previous drug lords were knocked off.

The next day (1 April 2005) the homosexual paedophile Jonathan Hunt became New Zealand's High Commissioner to Britain. The following day the Pope died (2 April 2005) and Prince Rainier (codenamed 'Tax') died four days later (6 April 2005). Both were involved in drugs and money laundering. Tavistock's MI-6 drug activator Peter Frampton then appeared in New Zealand on television (11 May 2005) using words and coded phrases to activate the baby boomer's drug habit. Tavistock's Frampton was the popular culture hook into the heroin market.

Minister of Health Annette King was responsible for the cover up of police paedophilia at Banks Ave in Christchurch. She moved the focus to a Christchurch kindergarten and this was written up by Internal Affairs agent Linley Hood in *A City Possessed*. The excessively weak Minister of Police George Hawkins was then replaced by the 'sustainable-corruption Minister' of Health Annette King on 19 October 2005.

In order to become the Minister of Police, Annette King delivered the Afghan/NATO heroin to the police for distribution prior to the 17 September 2005 rigged election. As a reward, Annette King became Associate Minister of Defence, Trade, and Race Relations (all 19 October 2005–3 May 2006). The police distributed the Afghan heroin to the gangs on 30 November/1 December 2005 and planted drugs on any gang member who did not comply.

On 3 May 2006, once the Afghan heroin had taken hold, all of Annette King's positions were upgraded to Minister of Police, State Services, and Transport. This provided Annette King with full cover. Annette King has a Bachelor of Arts, a Post Graduate in Dental Nursing and was a practicing dental nurse from 1967–81. Her daughter was involved in drug dealing and was struck off as a teacher.

---

[2] *BBC News*, 23 September 2003.

New Zealand's Minister of Police is a heroin enabler.

Intelligence officers: "The Afghan heroin definitely came into New Zealand by diplomatic pouch." It arrived in March 2005 with street word that it had arrived in February 2005, thus diverting the focus of the search. All of this came as a backdrop to Helen Clark's status as the highest-ranking KGB operative in New Zealand, former St Petersburg prostitute and Tavistock St Petersburg graduate.

Helen Clark is the prime contender for the position of Secretary General of the United Nations. She was filmed having sex with another woman at Anderson's Cottage (better known as Lincoln Cottage), near the White House on the night of 3/4 January 2003. This gave the crooked American President George W. Bush full control over her, hence his backing for the KGB operative Clark as the Secretary General of the pitifully useless and massively corrupt United Nations."

Hitler Was A British Agent, 'Afterword – Counter Intelligence', p. 421:
"New Zealand is the spies' holiday and retirement home. In New Zealand it is not illegal for a woman to kill her male partner, as long as she is dark brown, lesbian, lesbians are attracted to her, or she has a history of mental illness . . . New Zealand's legalising of 'female murders male' came under the KGB operative Prime Minister Helen Clark, a renowned feminist and lesbian herself.

This law was tested in Whangarei in 2002 when a female Maori rugby player stabbed her husband and father of her two children to death in front of her mother in her own kitchen during a party. She didn't lose custody of her children for a minute and wasn't even convicted of manslaughter. This set in concrete the New Zealand judiciary as an 'occult mafia'."

Hitler Was A British Agent, 'Afterword – Counter Intelligence', pp. 437–40:
"9 March 2005: predicted election in late September 2005 to *Time* magazine; 28 June 2005: predicted David Lange would publish an autobiography and die soon after, but before the election; 24 July 2005: knew election was to be announced, as it was the following day; 9 August 2005: Lange's book came out and he died four days later on the suspicious date of 13 August 2005. The election was due five weeks later and Lange's death caused a lot of sympathy to the incumbent government.

It's easy enough to rig a rugby test match with the awarding of penalties. The winning team has penalties awarded in their opposition half and the losing team has theirs awarded in their own half. If the bribe is big enough, the loosing team's kicker, kicks for touch, rather than for goal. This is how the Lions lost all three test matches to the All Blacks in June/July 2005. It came with the complicity of Tony Blair's paedophile minder, Alistair Campbell (ex-military) who fronted as the Lions maître d'.

The Prime Minister had a consultation lunch with Alistair Campbell on 26 June 2005 regarding rigging the next election. First there was to be no KGB or lesbian information on Helen Clark, no homosexual child-sex abuse information on her husband, Peter Davis, no paedophile information on Jonathan Hunt, the High Commissioner to Britain; no coverage of Sir Peter Elworthy's 'death', or Michael King's 'death'; butch lesbians were to hide from the public, no lesbians were to drive convertibles and lesbians were to disappear from public view in general; all Labour women were to get new bright pastel clothes and were to dress like heterosexuals; Helen was to lose weight and have her 55-year-old lesbian XY-self made to look like a 28-year-old heterosexual complete with manufactured teeth. This image was to be placed on an election pledge card. David Lange was to die just before the election – engineering sympathy, and the leader of the opposition Don Brash was to be accused of being CIA backed. The latter was to prevent last minute accusations that Helen Clark was the KGB operative IE and had worked with Vladimir Putin in Wellington to launch a nuclear strike on American property during the Cold War – namely Canberra, Adelaide or Sydney in a rotating fashion.

After the chicken salad had arrived, the NATO delivered Afghan heroin was not to reach the market until after the election, regardless of who won. In exchange for no information on Tony Blair's rock spider activity, Campbell would throw the Lions Tour of New Zealand which would make Helen Clark popular in the eyes of rugby fans. He would also ensure the world's media remained silent on Helen Clark's filmed sex with Heather Simpson at Anderson's Cottage. He could only guarantee W. remained quiet on it as long as she continued to not criticise the Iraq war. This was the deal. This was how it was engineered and this was how it was done, complete with carbonated water.

Another interesting aspect of election rigging is the engineering of fine weather during the winter leading up to the election providing that feel good factor.

Under Operation CLOVERLEAF (1997–) aerosol and electro-magnetic operations, high frequency microwaves are used to manipulate the charged atmosphere for weather modification. Along with this are 4 beats per second extremely low electro-magnetic frequencies breaking down human biological and mental functioning . . . and aerosol poisons dissipated by planes.

These particles (10% the width of a human hair) are made up of barium salts, aluminium and radioactive thorium, viruses, bacteria, fungi, desiccated bovine (cow) blood cells and mutated spores which secrete a powerful microtoxin, Ethylene Dibromide (a carcinogen and toxin banned in 1983) and Mycoplasma Fermetens Incognitus, the same Mycoplasma that created the Gulf War syndrome.

Weather modification is bought via bribes to the CIA who fly unregistered planes stolen off the American military and America companies as well as pre-modified commericial planes like the KC-10A, KC135 (707) and C-130s. These have been adapted with 500 litres of poisons stored amongst the sewerage bowels and are dissipated through the modified static discharge wicks at the rear of the plane's wings.

Spymaster: "The CIA just waltz in with their bogus and forged documentation and commandeer the planes. They are not all commercial flights and some of the planes are unregistered."

The poisons are so fine they are breathed in and enter the blood cells. Their toxic metals suppress the immune system, weakening muscles and cause cancers, Alzheimer's, blood clots, strokes, heart attacks, changes to the endocrine and nervous system, respiratory problems, coughing fits, shortness of breath, sinus headaches, respiratory failure, severe infections to the throats and sinuses, swelling of the lymph glands and liver damage . . . and it only costs US$0.73¢ per kilo to disseminate.

The cover for this is that the aerosols contain fine metalic particles which reduce the sun's electromagnetic radiation to stop global warming, but GLOBAL WARMING IS A HOAX.

DuPont's CFC patent was due to run out in 1985 and they wanted to stop Asian companies producing CFCs cheaply, so they banned them and introduced HCFC's having the sole patent for this. HCFC's are more expensive and less effective, but DuPont has the patent.

Mt Erebus releases more CFCs than all the rest of the world's volcanoes put together and these are sucked up into the atmosphere during the spring and autumn equinox. To prevent this being measured, a plane crash was engineered.

When the 28 November 1979 Air New Zealand crash was arranged to hit Mt Erebus, DuPont and the CIA were present at all meetings. The CIA's motto is to PROTECT AND ADVANCE AMERICAN BUSINESS. The Erebus crash now prevents anyone climbing Mt Erebus to test its CFC emissions.

The hole in the ozone layer was caused by a nuclear explosion in Antarctica in 1958. It was measured for 60 years and when the ozone hole began to contract in 2002, it was no longer news. Erroneously the GLOBAL WARMING HOAX is still with us.

Instead of spraying fine reflective particles to stop global warming, poisons are being sprayed to assist the new Avian Flu (H5N1) which has been designed to be as strong as the 1918–19 Spanish Flu that killed 50 million. The Bush administration has been having discussions as to the optimum number of people to 'work the planet' and their current estimates are around one billion (May 2005). This has resulted in experiments to kill 5 out of 6 people.

"United States health officials said this week they have started human tests of a vaccine against Avian Flu, which experts believe could kill tens of millions of people if it becomes easily passed from person to person . . . Usually, people catch the virus directly from birds such as chickens or ducks. Geese and wild birds and mammals such as cats can also carry the virus . . . To date, there has been a small number of cases where human-to-human transmission of the virus may have occurred . . . public health experts fear that the virus may evolve into one that is more easily transmitted between people . . . If this were to happen, a worldwide pandemic could follow . . . the public health community is concerned that the virus will develop the capability of efficiently spreading from human to human and thus create a risk for a worldwide pandemic . . . the vaccine [is] made by Sanofi Pasteur [with] Chiron Corp. of Emeryville, California."[3]

Prime Minister Helen Clark stuffed up the importation of the vaccine ensuring that a less effective vaccine was purchased . . . just as previous Prime Minister William Ferguson Massey (1912–25) carried the Spanish Flu into New Zealand personally, refusing to be quarantined. In Freemasonry he was 'M. W. Bro. W. F. Massey' and for his efforts in eugenics (mass murder) a Freemasonry lodge was named after him – 'William Fergusson Massey Royal Arch Chapter No. 60'.[4] [Massey belonged to the British-Israel-World Federation with an office next to Buckingham Palace (1924–90). Federated on 3 July 1919, its roots can be traced back to the 1800s.]

Deaths in New Zealand are due to happen with a cold snap in late October after the election and after a warm winter. The Avian Flu is due to arrive into New Zealand (the world's test population) via planes carrying Chinese 'Chicken-Sleepers' from Manchuria on 10 October with the virus taking hold on 14 October,[5] followed by an extreme cold snap in late October.

Almost all natural disasters are man-made and governments arrange emergencies to keep them in power. For the Bush government it was 9-11 and the Iraq War. For Blair it was the Iraq War and the London tube bombings. For Helen Clark it is 250,000 deaths from the Avian Flu.

The rules of Nordic-Anglo-Saxon colonising are that you have to limit the killing of 'people with integrity'. These are noted as white heterosexuals. The plan from 1500 years ago is for those from Thule (Greenland) to sweep down to Antarctica over 1500 years and then to sweep back up again with a different species – modified humans – for the next 1500 years."

---

[3] This Reuters article 'Human tests of avian flu vaccine underway' made public on 25 March 2005 was published in the *New Zealand Herald* five months later on 1 September 2005.

[4] Freemasons often misspell a persons name by one letter. It is a sign they believe they are above the law.

[5] As it panned out, H5N1 struck in Romania and Turkey on exactly these dates and New Zealand was saved by the Mossad accused.

Hitler Was A British Agent, 'Was Wallis Simpson A Man', pp. 515–16:

"Treatment

XY females with testes (AIS Grade 4) have lower oestrogen levels than XX females with ovaries (normal) and XY CAIS females (AIS Grade 7), who are immune to being masculinized due to their complete insensitivity to androgens. The CAIS Grade 7 are known for their huge Tanner stage V breasts, model looks and masculine drive.

However at puberty XY females with testes' can spontaneously feminize. If this does not occur, their gonads can be removed aged 20. This is called a Gonadectomy or Orchidectomy. A Gonadectomy can bring about osteoporosis (bone thinning), menopause and cardiovascular disease and hormone replacement therapy (HRT) is recommended. HRT also helps initiate puberty in 10-11-year-old AIS females.

Skin grafts and sections from the intestine can be used to lengthen the vagina, but vaginoplasty should be avoided in early childhood.

With today's technology, "it might be possible for primitive sperm material extracted from intact AIS testes to be used to fertilise a donor egg."[6] That is, Wallis Simpson may have been able to conceive a child as the male and use an egg donor and rent-a-womb – thus giving her the possibility of half the King's ransom.[7]

In 50% of the AIS Grade 4/5 females, the undescended testes can result in a groin hernia during infancy. In the remaining 50% undescended testes may not be discovered until a failure to menstruate at puberty. The AIS Grade 4/5 adult will look like a girl and can lean towards any sexuality. AIS adult females with their testes removed say their testes never bothered them."

Androids in New Zealand

"The condition of females being perceived as men is common in New Zealand, especially in politics, and especially in the Labour Party (New Communist) where many of the females have few female characteristics, have not reproduced and have married homosexuals and child-sex abusers as a form of mutual cover. (The Moneys in the Bag.)

When these Grade 4 & 5 women are heard on the radio they sound like men. Some of these masculine females (who actually feminized males) resort to hormone replacement therapy, but it doesn't seem to work for long, and certainly not between election photos and election speeches. Thus, in mid-term politics, New Zealanders are treated to masculine sounding AIS Grade 4 & 5 females who have enlarged their vaginas through masturbation, often helping each other in the process. This has resulted in the Labour Party being correctly diagnosed as "Fabian Fisters" and "Butch Lesbians". The Androgenous fist fight is a long journey to the middle.

New Zealand's Prime Minister Helen Clark is a case in point. She has the dressed appearance of AIS Grade 4/5 and looks a lot like the AIS Grade 3 Adolf Hitler. Both were 56 years old when last photographed.

Amongst the tea ladys of the civil service, Helen Clark is known as "Mrs Bull" and there is some truth to the statement "She's a man".

Baby Helen was conceived an XY male and at some later date she rejected the androgen but retained a lot of the male characteristics.

Medically it can be said that Helen Clark was born male.

---

[6] Source: w w w.medhelp.org, AIS website and *AIIaS* newsletter.

[7] "Half the King's ransom" meant that if a man gave birth he was entiled to half the King's possessions. This was removed from the law books during the 1950s as the result of chromosome research.

What is so scary is that this SheMan, with her voluntary radical hysterectamy in December 1976/January 1977, is touted as being the next Secretary General of the United Nations. That would make her a SheDevil.

AIS has previously been known as Androgen Resistance Syndrome, Feminizing Testes Syndrome, Male Pseudo-hermaphroditism, Goldberg-Maxwell Syndrome (CAIS), Morris's Syndrome (CAIS), Lub's Syndrome (PAIS), Gilbert-Dreyfus Syndrome (PAIS), Reifenstein Syndrome (PAIS) and Rosewater Syndrome (PAIS). Either a lot of sex doctors were Jews or a lot of Jews were inter-sexed. Other XX female conditions with some AIS-like features include: Mayer Rokitansky Kuster Hauser (MRKH) Syndrome and Mullerian dysgenesis. Other XY male conditions with some AIS-like features include: 5 alpha-reductase deficiency, 17 keto-steroid reductase deficiency, Denys-Drash Syndrome, Leydig cell hypoplasia, Smith-Lemli-Opitz Syndrome and Swyer Syndrome (XY gonadal dysgenesis).

The Danish patient register, 1992 "suggesting an incidence of 1 in 20,400 XY births (hospitalized cases only, so true incidence probably higher). PAIS may be only about 1/10 as common as CAIS." Source, AIS website and AIIaS newsletter, www.medhelp.org."

Hitler Was A British Agent, Index, p. 534, 540, 545:

"Helen Clark & her minder Vladimir Putin, KGB operative 'IE' 150–53

nuclear strike, Canberra, Adelaide, Sydney, Taupo, 150, *See also* Helen Clark and her minder Vladimir Putin, KGB operative 'IE'

Vladimir Putin, Helen Clark's minder, 150–53."

How To Take Over The World – A Right Royal Con, January, May, December 2007, August 2008, 'Post War Social Patterns', pp. 163–64:

"Cover for Homosexual Child Sex Abuse creates much of History

The husband of New Zealand's Prime Minister Helen Clark, Peter Davis, is a homosexual and married Helen Clark for mutual cover. He was selected by Helen Clark's previous lover Jim Anderton (MP) from a police list of sex offenders. Helen Clark is a lesbian and Peter Davis is a homosexual who organised the first two Hero Parades. She is the First Lady and he is the First Laddy.

In late March 2004 a Police DPS officer told me, off the record, that Peter Davis had been "placed under house arrest" at their Auckland home (4 Cromwell Street, Mt Eden) in February 2004 due to an overt interest in under-aged children. He had been transferred from Christchurch to Auckland and was then given a position as a professor at the University of Auckland, of which the Chancellor, Hugh Fletcher, is the husband of the Chief Justice. This was not the first or the last time he has made sexual advances on under-aged boys and one was reported on the television news in November 2001.

'House Arrest' requires diplomatic orders and effects a diplomatic silence. The Minister of Security and Intelligence would have signed this off and this just happens to be the First Laddy's wife, PM Helen Clark.

The myth that Helen Clark and Peter Davis return to live together in their house is just that – a myth – a cover exercise practised on their poor, easily-sucked-in voters. The myth contains not even a shred of truth.

For the myth to be believed all that is required is to present it on the Holmes show with Paul Holmes making bored comments when required. He does this in return for their silence about his own frauds perpetrated on the New Zealand public.

Any government that actively covers up paedophile crimes no longer has a mandate to rule, and this equally applies to both major political parties and the judiciary. Both are as corrupt as each other, with the incumbent party being more corrupt. The police and military cover up everything and therefore get away with their own crimes. This creates a scenario where 'The Forces of Order' play with our legal system and routinely subvert it for their own purposes, which is in line with the American Military Industrial Complex via their takeover of every judiciary in the world. This was done with the American Bar Association which colonised the world as the International Bar Association.

Spymaster: "Because of this, the legal system in New Zealand has become one of the most criminally subverted in the Western world. The only place that you will ever strike honesty in New Zealand is in D-Block in Parry [The Mongrel Mob ward in Paremoremo Prison four km across the water from Hobsonville and Whenuapai Air Bases]."

How To Take Over The World – A Right Royal Con, pp. 165–67:

"On 17 June 2006 I got a phone call from Intelligence, who told me that in the last two weeks Peter Davis had been arrested by police in Los Angeles Airport for indecent assault on a Mexican boy. He claimed diplomatic immunity and was sent on the next flight back to New Zealand.

As further information came in, the details were corrected. Peter Davis was caught in San Francisco in a sting operation to catch homosexual child sex abusers. At the airport Peter Davis went up to a young Mexican boy, grabbed him by the genitals and said, "How 'bout it?". The young boy was a police officer, older than he looked. Peter Davis was arrested with a lot of other homosexuals and then claimed diplomatic immunity.

A New Zealand police officer stationed in San Francisco (for terrorism and drugs, not homosexuality) was called. He had to assure the San Francisco police that he would not leave Peter Davis' side and would escort him back to New Zealand. They then drove to Los Angeles state and were eventually met by two members of the New Zealand Diplomatic Protection Squad (DPS).

As further information came in, more organisations became involved in the cover-up, all according to their backgrounds and capabilities. The New Zealand Air Force flew up to Hawaii to retrieve Peter Davis and they took another three days to come back.

Three high-ranking police personnel from Northern Command were on board. Most of these guys have military rank as well as police rank. The police routinely second staff from the police to the Army and back again, thus making available the shifting of all ground rules and status during action.

"Was Police Officer Smith on the plane?"
"No."
The answer is "No" because he was, at that time, 'Sergeant Smith of the Army'.

The three high-ranking police personnel came from National Police Headquarters (NHQ). NHQ is the heart and control centre of paedophilia in New Zealand. NHQ is where all paedophilia is controlled – from introduction to cover.

Spymaster: "They may have used taxi aircraft of some kind. It was not an Air Force aircraft. They covered their tracks every step of the way. They do this so often they have come to an agreement with each other. The police are always dragging Air Force personnel out of public toilets. It is virtually unheard of to raid a toilet in Auckland and not catch the Air Force. This gives the police a certain amount of leverage over the RNZAF. The police went to Hawaii on the Boeing 757 [transport plane] owned by the RNZAF. It would have left from Whenuapai. They're slippery bastards and the plane would have been flown to another base first, like Hobsonville [3 km away], then landed at Auckland Domestic Airport [30 km away] before take-off into international air space."

The three DPS officers flew to Hawaii with the RNZAF in their 757 [transport plane], leaving from Whenuapai, then Hobsonville, then the Domestic Airport, then to Hawaii. The RNZAF holidayed for a few days while the three DPS officers took a normal commercial courier flight to LA and met with Peter Davis and the NZ police officer. The three DPS officers then escorted Peter Davis back to Hawaii and enjoyed a few days' holiday before they flew back to New Zealand on the RNZAF 757. Its flight from New Zealand to Hawaii and back was the maximum flight of an RNZAF aircraft before it broke down.

As further cover, Peter Davis was photographed sitting next to Helen Clark at the All Blacks versus Ireland rugby international at Eden Park, Auckland on Saturday 17 June 2006. Helen Clark denies that any incident took place, but then she would. It's her marriage and career on the line again. If her husband gets exposed as a homosexual, then her lesbianism comes under the spotlight with her international fisting junkets amongst the world's political lesbian heavyweights.

In New Zealand's capital city Wellington, Helen Clark is known as H1 and Heather Simpson is known as H2. They are long-time lovers having met when Heather Simpson was a netball coach in Christchurch. Heather benchpresses 250 pounds during her lunch-hour and looks remarkably like a Scottish man, which was the clincher. Starting a day after the Sydney Olympics (15 September–1 October 2000), the Gay Games were held (16 Sept.–2 Oct. 2000) using many of the same facilities. Helen Clark's long-time lover Heather Simpson won gold in the fisting competition. When I first heard this story I thought it was a joke, but when I asked again 18 months later I was told, "No, its true. Helen Clark's long-time lesbian partner Heather Simpson is a deaf weightlifter and won gold at the Sydney Gay Olympics for fisting." That, and she minds the Tavistock-St. Petersburg-trained Helen Clark.

A politician is just a sexual deviant running an agenda for the oligarchy. Any straight and honest politician is ignored. It requires dirt to reach the top."

How To Take Over The World – A Right Royal Con, 'Post War Social Patterns', pp. 170–71:
"In August 2006, Helen Clark needed another story to distract from her husband being arrested in a toilet at San Francisco Airport so she pulled in some more favours. Helen Clark had seconded the motion for Sian Elias to be the Chief Justice, who presided over a swish whereby a minimum of $500 million, which was due to the Chinese, got transposed to another location. China threatened to declare war on NZ. The most likely repository for the money was British possessions in the Carribean, going over to Dutch and French possessions in the Carribean run by Israel.[8]

The Israelis came up with an arrangement with the Chinese then exerted pressure on their New Zealand contacts to sponsor them in New Zealand, and in turn, they would do any murders they required. This all came to pass, including the murders of Sir Peter Elworthy, historian Michael King and MP Rod Donald.

Murder by arrangement with the Mossad has spread to Prime Minister Helen Clark and she had a meeting with General Moshe Ya'alon in late November 2006. General Ya'alon was to secretly return to New Zealand on 5–8 December 2006 to inspect the training fields in NZ's South Island (Fiordland) for jungle warfare training, to discuss Israel supplying heroin to NZ with Helen Clark (repeating her 31 March 2005 heroin import with NATO) and any murders the Labour Party wanted done. Since I have been Helen Clark's favourite by exposing her as a KGB operative on 25 March 2002, I am on the Labour Party's hit list. As such, I was privy to this knowledge as a matter of courtesy.

On Helen Clark's request, the Mossad arranged the kidnapping of Anita McNaught's husband, *Fox News* cameraman Olaf Wiig (36), and *Fox News* reporter Steve Centanni (60) from their vehicle by masked gunmen near the Palestinian security headquarters in Gaza City on Monday 14 August 2006. It was to last thirteen days."

How To Take Over The World – A Right Royal Con, 'Post War Social Patterns', pp. 174–77:
"Similarly, the world's media reacted to the fake kidnapping of Olaf Wiig and Steve Centanni with a monumental summary of Anita McNaught's work in the Middle East. She was elevated in the eyes of the media and became a news anchor for *AlJazeera TV*, an extension of *Voice of America*, that claims to be the Islamic point of view. As such, 'anyone's agent' Anita McNaught works for them. Intelligence refers to her as 'Anita McNaughty.'

Helen Clark also benefited, using the scenario to create a diversion from her husband's homosexuality and ongoing child sex abuse. The kidnapping was quickly followed by a National Distribution Union strike and Progressive's lockout of the strikers for a month, resulting in no food on the supermarket shelves . . .

As soon as Helen Clark knew of Olaf Wiig and Steve Centanni's release (24 August, with the actual release on 27 August), she gave the go-ahead for the former Labour

---

[8] Israel owns other entire states, virtually extant (lock, stock & barrel). The most famous of these is Burma, now called Myanmar (which Israel turned into a giant methamphetamine lab) and Monaco, which they own through the Grimaldi Royal family. Prince Rainier died recently of old age, requiring his son to step in and supposedly pick up the royal reigns. The old man, called 'Tax' in criminal parlance, was the only tax on Mafia heroin before it found its way to the United States. In reality, one civil servant in Tel Aviv kept the entire file and made all decisions, including the state of the Prince's pocket money and alimony.

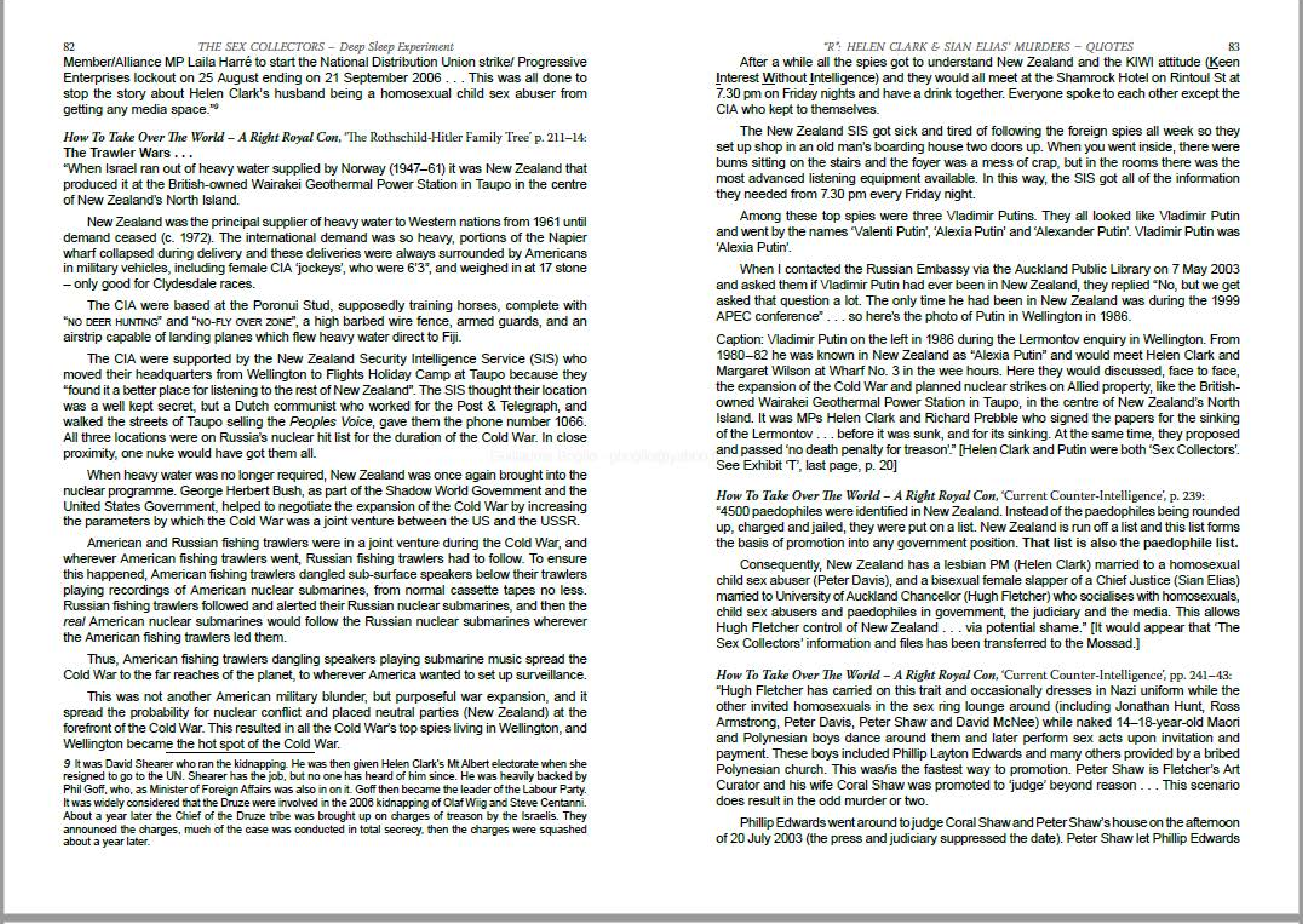

Member/Alliance MP Laila Harré to start the National Distribution Union strike/ Progressive Enterprises lockout on 25 August ending on 21 September 2006 . . . This was all done to stop the story about Helen Clark's husband being a homosexual child sex abuser from getting any media space."[9]

How To Take Over The World – A Right Royal Con, 'The Rothschild-Hitler Family Tree' p. 211–14:
The Trawler Wars . . .
"When Israel ran out of heavy water supplied by Norway (1947–61) it was New Zealand that produced it at the British-owned Wairakei Geothermal Power Station in Taupo in the centre of New Zealand's North Island.

New Zealand was the principal supplier of heavy water to Western nations from 1961 until demand ceased (c. 1972). The international demand was so heavy, portions of the Napier wharf collapsed during delivery and these deliveries were always surrounded by Americans in military vehicles, including female CIA 'jockeys', who were 6'3", and weighed in at 17 stone – only good for Clydesdale races.

The CIA were based at the Poronui Stud, supposedly training horses, complete with "NO DEER HUNTING" and "NO-FLY OVER ZONE", a high barbed wire fence, armed guards, and an airstrip capable of landing planes which flew heavy water direct to Fiji.

The CIA were supported by the New Zealand Security Intelligence Service (SIS) who moved their headquarters from Wellington to Flights Holiday Camp at Taupo because they "found it a better place for listening to the rest of New Zealand". The SIS thought their location was a well kept secret, but a Dutch communist who worked for the Post & Telegraph, and walked the streets of Taupo selling the *Peoples Voice*, gave them the phone number 1066. All three locations were on Russia's nuclear hit list for the duration of the Cold War. In close proximity, one nuke would have got them all.

When heavy water was no longer required, New Zealand was once again brought into the nuclear programme. George Herbert Bush, as part of the Shadow World Government and the United States Government, helped to negotiate the expansion of the Cold War by increasing the parameters by which the Cold War was a joint venture between the US and the USSR.

American and Russian fishing trawlers were in a joint venture during the Cold War, and wherever American fishing trawlers went, Russian fishing trawlers had to follow. To ensure this happened, American fishing trawlers dangled sub-surface speakers below their trawlers playing recordings of American nuclear submarines, from normal cassette tapes no less. Russian fishing trawlers followed and alerted their Russian nuclear submarines, and then the *real* American nuclear submarines would follow the Russian nuclear submarines wherever the American fishing trawlers led them.

Thus, American fishing trawlers dangling speakers playing submarine music spread the Cold War to the far reaches of the planet, to wherever America wanted to set up surveillance.

This was not another American military blunder, but purposeful war expansion, and it spread the probability for nuclear conflict and placed neutral parties (New Zealand) at the forefront of the Cold War. This resulted in all the Cold War's top spies living in Wellington, and Wellington became the hot spot of the Cold War.

After a while all the spies got to understand New Zealand and the KIWI attitude (Keen Interest Without Intelligence) and they would all meet at the Shamrock Hotel on Rintoul St at 7.30 pm on Friday nights and have a drink together. Everyone spoke to each other except the CIA who kept to themselves.

The New Zealand SIS got sick and tired of following the foreign spies all week so they set up shop in an old man's boarding house two doors up. When you went inside, there were bums sitting on the stairs and the foyer was a mess of crap, but in the rooms there was the most advanced listening equipment available. In this way, the SIS got all of the information they needed from 7.30 pm every Friday night.

Among these top spies were three Vladimir Putins. They all looked like Vladimir Putin and went by the names 'Valenti Putin', 'Alexia Putin' and 'Alexander Putin'. Vladimir Putin was 'Alexia Putin'.

When I contacted the Russian Embassy via the Auckland Public Library on 7 May 2003 and asked them if Vladimir Putin had ever been in New Zealand, they replied "No, but we get asked that question a lot. The only time he had been in New Zealand was during the 1999 APEC conference" . . . so here's the photo of Putin in Wellington in 1986.

Caption: Vladimir Putin on the left in 1986 during the Lermontov enquiry in Wellington. From 1980–82 he was known in New Zealand as "Alexia Putin" and would meet Helen Clark and Margaret Wilson at Wharf No. 3 in the wee hours. Here they would discussed, face to face, the expansion of the Cold War and planned nuclear strikes on Allied property, like the British-owned Wairakei Geothermal Power Station in Taupo, in the centre of New Zealand's North Island. It was MPs Helen Clark and Richard Prebble who signed the papers for the sinking of the Lermontov . . . before it was sunk, and for its sinking. At the same time, they proposed and passed 'no death penalty for treason'." [Helen Clark and Putin were both 'Sex Collectors'. See Exhibit 'T', last page, p. 20]

How To Take Over The World – A Right Royal Con, 'Current Counter-Intelligence', p. 239:
"4500 paedophiles were identified in New Zealand. Instead of the paedophiles being rounded up, charged and jailed, they were put on a list. New Zealand is run off a list and this list forms the basis of promotion into any government position. **That list is also the paedophile list.**

Consequently, New Zealand has a lesbian PM (Helen Clark) married to a homosexual child sex abuser (Peter Davis), and a bisexual female slapper of a Chief Justice (Sian Elias) married to University of Auckland Chancellor (Hugh Fletcher) who socialises with homosexuals, child sex abusers and paedophiles in government, the judiciary and the media. This allows Hugh Fletcher control of New Zealand . . . via potential shame." [It would appear that 'The Sex Collectors' information and files has been transferred to the Mossad.]

How To Take Over The World – A Right Royal Con, 'Current Counter-Intelligence', pp. 241–43:
"Hugh Fletcher has carried on this trait and occasionally dresses in Nazi uniform while the other invited homosexuals in the sex ring lounge around (including Jonathan Hunt, Ross Armstrong, Peter Davis, Peter Shaw and David McNee) while naked 14–18-year-old Maori and Polynesian boys dance around them and later perform sex acts upon invitation and payment. These boys included Phillip Layton Edwards and many others provided by a bribed Polynesian church. This was/is the fastest way to promotion. Peter Shaw is Fletcher's Art Curator and his wife Coral Shaw was promoted to 'judge' beyond reason . . . This scenario does result in the odd murder or two.

Phillip Edwards went around to judge Coral Shaw and Peter Shaw's house on the afternoon of 20 July 2003 (the press and judiciary suppressed the date). Peter Shaw let Phillip Edwards in and was assaulted by him.Peter Shaw then laid a complaint and his wife Judge Coral Shaw then notified Prime Minister Helen Clark who got them to withdraw the complaint. Helen Clark then had the police cover up the complaint.

---

[9] It was David Shearer who ran the kidnapping. He was then given Helen Clark's Mt Albert electorate when she resigned to go to the UN. Shearer has the job, but no one has heard of him since. He was heavily backed by Phil Goff, who, as Minister of Foreign Affairs was also in on it. Goff then became the leader of the Labour Party. It was widely considered that the Druze were involved in the 2006 kidnapping of Olaf Wiig and Steve Centanni. About a year later the Chief of the Druze tribe was brought up on charges of treason by the Israelis. They announced the charges, much of the case was conducted in total secrecy, then the charges were squashed about a year later.

The police did not arrest Edwards, which would have prevented the murder of David McNee later that night. This makes the police, the Shaws, Prime Minister Helen Clark, Chief Justice Sian Elias and University of Auckland Chancellor Hugh Fletcher accessories to murder.

The assault was then mentioned in 20/20's "*Ticking Time Bomb*" and 20/20 disclosed Peter Shaw's name. This resulted in a complaint to TVNZ over breach of privacy under section 8(1)(c) of the Broadcasting Act 1989. The complaint was not upheld.

What 20/20 didn't tell you was that Phillip Edwards was in Child Youth and Family Services care (the government department known as CYFs) from a very young age and a male multi-millionaire lawyer for CYFs used to sodomise Phillip Edwards from a young age . . .

The CYFs lawyer was lured to a meeting with Philip Edwards' younger brother (14) on the promise of sex. The lawyer turned up in his BMW in a red dress and women's underwear ready to sodomise the under-aged boy, which he did. In the middle of Act II, he was jumped by the boy's uncle and severely beaten, resulting in brain damage, a paralysed arm and a non-functioning leg. Police recovered a used condom from the park and this was never forensically tested even though it was evidence of a serious crime. The condom was then destroyed by the police. The brother of the sodomising CYFs lawyer was a bag man for the Labour Party working for Helen Clark's PM's department. He organised the cover-up so New Zealanders would not know what the Labour Party was made of. There was a small move to prosecute the child sex abusing CYFs lawyer but the police considered enough damage had been done and sent the uncle to jail instead, silencing him for six years.

Television interior design presenter David McNee specialised in pillows for biting in every room he had TVNZ film. Maori-Rarotongan dancer Phillip Layton Edwards was jailed and 11 days after yet another early release, David McNee picked Edwards up off Auckland's Karangahape Road (the same day Peter Shaw was assaulted) and paid Edwards $120 to masturbate in front of him. One step beyond the sex paid for and Phillip Edwards killed the homosexual Fletcher sex-ring television presenter David McNee. McNee was a child rapist, into boys or girls, as long as he could get to their arsehole. His victims were often street kids.

All three (Shaw, McNee, Edwards) attended Hugh Fletcher's Nazi-in-a-dress homosexual child sex parties. Fletchers wife, the Chief Justice Sian Elias (daughter of a Jewish doctor, although non-practising) is the highest-ranking Mossad agent in New Zealand. Hugh Fletcher is up there in the Jewish stakes, Nazi uniform included – Nazis were mainly comprised of half and quarter Jews. [Hugh Fletcher is a practising Jew.]

Sian Elias remains married to Hugh Fletcher. Under Jewish Law, paedophilia is considered 'halakah'. '**Halakah**' is a rabbinic technical term which refers to rules that guide everyday behaviour. To the Jews, even the daughters of non-practising Jews, paedophilia is part of '**walk-the-walk but don't talk-the-talk**'. Halakah includes paedophilia by marriage and paedophilia within marriage.

It is well rumoured that PM Helen Clark and Chief Justice Sian Elias don't talk to each other, but murders shared will do that to a relationship.

Sian Elias' father was a doctor, cited for shagging his Polynesian clients and for signing papers for socialistic compensation without question. In late 2006, at a formal government covention, two MPs from different political parties noted one of the official government limousines rocking so they went up for a closer look. They peered in through the back window to find Chief Justice Sian Elias sitting on top of her chauffeur and singing while she shagged the clown-fucker.

Former Intelligence Officer: "Don't mention politicians' secret sexuality. It seems to increase their popularity."

Author: "But it makes them compromised and controlled by anyone with the knowledge, including groups outside NZ."

Former Intelligence Officer (I.O.): "Can you blame her. She is married to a homosexual paedophile."

Hugh Fletcher, married to Sian Elias, is the grandson of the founder Sir James Fletcher (1886–1974) who was absolutely and resolutely determined to make money. His son, also Sir James Fletcher, inherited this trait."

How To Take Over The World – A Right Royal Con, 'Current Counter-Intelligence', pp. 244–46:
"Sian Elias became a Queen's Counsel in 1988 (protection for the treasonous crimes to come), judge of the High Court in 1995 (a normally respected Court), Chief Justice in 1999, was awarded the GNZM the same year, then established the Supreme Court in January 2004, while at the same time becoming the head of the Supreme Court and avoiding, under question, her sexual relationship with the rape-accused judge Anthony Christiansen who she then secretly promoted to reserve judge. Much of her cover was provided by the married-to-a-homosexual-child-sex-abuser Helen Clark KGB.

Sian Elias then oversaw the design of the new Supreme Court building in Wellington, which takes all the elements of the large-scale Jewish parliamentary buildings (like the Knesset) complete with 'them and us' symbology and a golden egg in the middle of the roof. This is actually an antenna (similar to Black Birch) for sending and receiving information so that Supreme Court decisions can be made from Israel.

The Jews view themselves as "Living Souls" and gentiles as a "person" to be judged by the Courts. Jews define a 'person' as a gentile to be milked, hence 'cattle' and 'chattel'. In New Zealand, 'persons' being charged and fined in Court, and taxed in their work life, were still paying the debts of the 1845–72 Maori Land Wars. These payments were made to Great Britain until recently and Great Britain is owned by the Jewish bankers.

The judges' "bench" translates as 'bank' and is utilised to collect for the International Bankers' war debts . . . Justice anyone? Sorry, 'Just Us'.

Under Sian Elias' tenure the paedophile Jonathan Hunt was promoted to New Zealand's High Commissioner to Britain. To create cover for this, the Minister of Health Annette King nominated herself to assist in trafficking Afghan heroin from NATO, through the PM to the police and then the gangs. This was nothing new to Annette King as her daughter's boyfriend was also a drug dealer. As a reward, Annette King was promoted to 'Minister of Police' and everyone else involved was silenced through complicity – which means all the police. The heroin was targeted to the drug dealers through the chain discovered by the undercover cop and now Police Association President and TV spokesman, Greg O'Connor."

How To Take Over The World – A Right Royal Con, 'Index', pp. 271–82:
"Clark, Helen, KGB agent, 163–77; Davis, Peter, 163–68; First Laddy, 163; McNaught, Anita, 169–74; Paedophile Country, PC, 164; paedophile Movement, 161, 179, 183; paedophile Country, PC, 164; paedophiles, 153–56, 161–64, 177–79, 182–87, 191; Putin, Vladimir, zionist, 181; Shamrock Hotel on Rintoul St, 212; Wiig, Olaf, 170, 173–76.

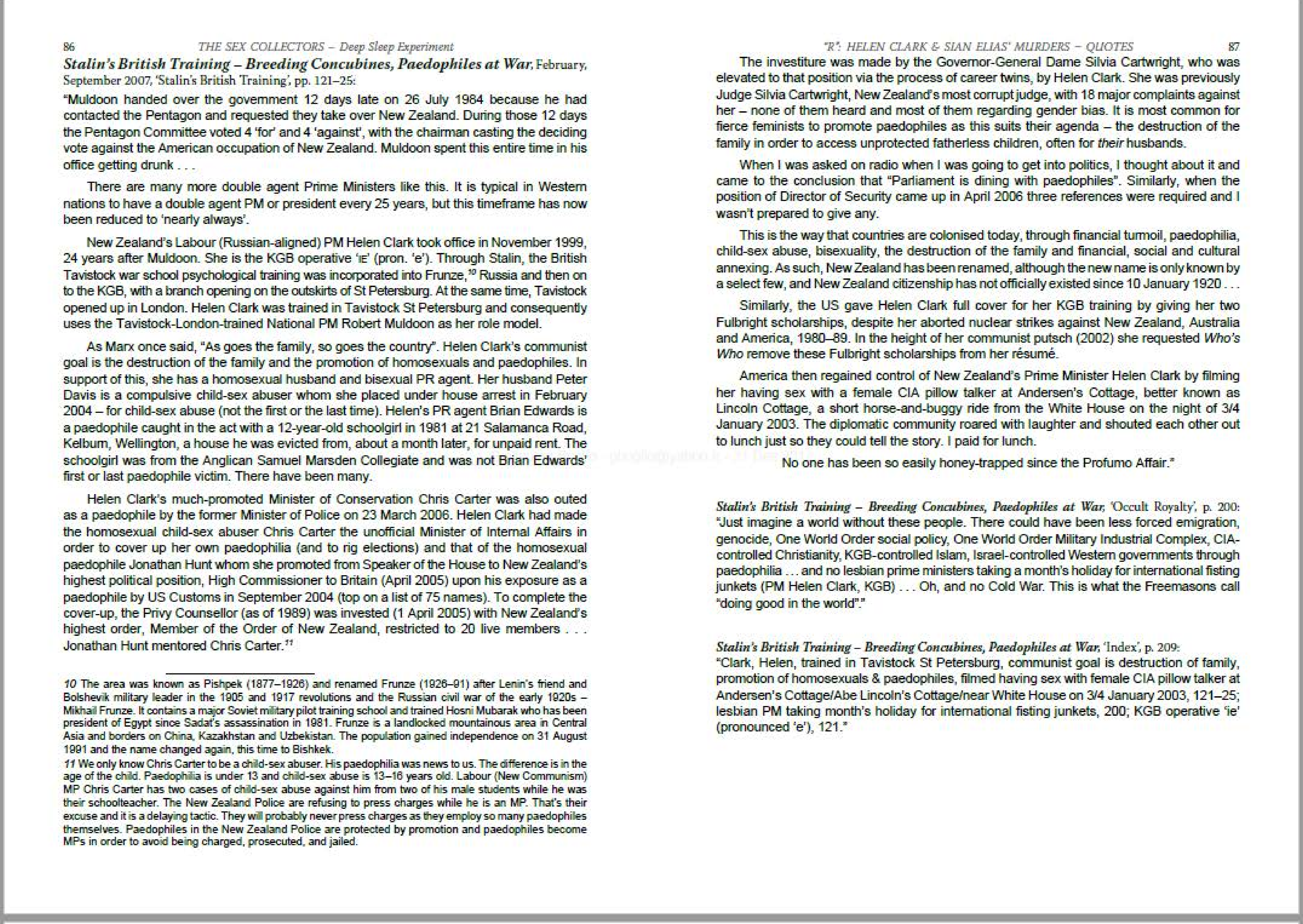

Stalin's British Training – Breeding Concubines, Paedophiles at War, February, September 2007, 'Stalin's British Training', pp. 121–25:

"Muldoon handed over the government 12 days late on 26 July 1984 because he had contacted the Pentagon and requested they take over New Zealand. During those 12 days the Pentagon Committee voted 4 'for' and 4 'against', with the chairman casting the deciding vote against the American occupation of New Zealand. Muldoon spent this entire time in his office getting drunk . . .

There are many more double agent Prime Ministers like this. It is typical in Western nations to have a double agent PM or president every 25 years, but this timeframe has now been reduced to 'nearly always'.

New Zealand's Labour (Russian-aligned) PM Helen Clark took office in November 1999, 24 years after Muldoon. She is the KGB operative 'IE' (pron. 'e'). Through Stalin, the British Tavistock war school psychological training was incorporated into Frunze,[10] Russia and then on to the KGB, with a branch opening on the outskirts of St Petersburg. At the same time, Tavistock opened up in London. Helen Clark was trained in Tavistock St Petersburg and consequently uses the Tavistock-London-trained National PM Robert Muldoon as her role model.

As Marx once said, "As goes the family, so goes the country". Helen Clark's communist goal is the destruction of the family and the promotion of homosexuals and paedophiles. In support of this, she has a homosexual husband and bisexual PR agent. Her husband Peter Davis is a compulsive child-sex abuser whom she placed under house arrest in February 2004 – for child-sex abuse (not the first or the last time). Helen's PR agent Brian Edwards is a paedophile caught in the act with a 12-year-old schoolgirl in 1981 at 21 Salamanca Road, Kelburn, Wellington, a house he was evicted from, about a month later, for unpaid rent. The schoolgirl was from the Anglican Samuel Marsden Collegiate and was not Brian Edwards' first or last paedophile victim. There have been many.

Helen Clark's much-promoted Minister of Conservation Chris Carter was also outed as a paedophile by the former Minister of Police on 23 March 2006. Helen Clark had made the homosexual child-sex abuser Chris Carter the unofficial Minister of Internal Affairs in order to cover up her own paedophilia (and to rig elections) and that of the homosexual paedophile Jonathan Hunt whom she promoted from Speaker of the House to New Zealand's highest political position, High Commissioner to Britain (April 2005) upon his exposure as a paedophile by US Customs in September 2004 (top on a list of 75 names). To complete the cover-up, the Privy Counsellor (as of 1989) was invested (1 April 2005) with New Zealand's highest order, Member of the Order of New Zealand, restricted to 20 live members . . . Jonathan Hunt mentored Chris Carter.[11]

---

[10] The area was known as Pishpek (1877–1926) and renamed Frunze (1926–91) after Lenin's friend and Bolshevik military leader in the 1905 and 1917 revolutions and the Russian civil war of the early 1920s – Mikhail Frunze. It contains a major Soviet military pilot training school and trained Hosni Mubarak who has been president of Egypt since Sadat's assassination in 1981. Frunze is a landlocked mountainous area in Central Asia and borders on China, Kazakhstan and Uzbekistan. The population gained independence on 31 August 1991 and the name changed again, this time to Bishkek.

[11] We only know Chris Carter to be a child-sex abuser. His paedophilia was news to us. The difference is in the age of the child. Paedophilia is under 13 and child-sex abuse is 13–16 years old. Labour (New Communism) MP Chris Carter has two cases of child-sex abuse against him from two of his male students while he was their schoolteacher. The New Zealand Police are refusing to press charges while he is an MP. That's their excuse and it is a delaying tactic. They will probably never press charges as they employ so many paedophiles themselves. Paedophiles in the New Zealand Police are protected by promotion and paedophiles become MPs in order to avoid being charged, prosecuted, and jailed.

The investiture was made by the Governor-General Dame Silvia Cartwright, who was elevated to that position via the process of career twins, by Helen Clark. She was previously Judge Silvia Cartwright, New Zealand's most corrupt judge, with 18 major complaints against her – none of them heard and most of them regarding gender bias. It is most common for fierce feminists to promote paedophiles as this suits their agenda – the destruction of the family in order to access unprotected fatherless children, often for *their* husbands.

When I was asked on radio when I was going to get into politics, I thought about it and came to the conclusion that "Parliament is dining with paedophiles". Similarly, when the position of Director of Security came up in April 2006 three references were required and I wasn't prepared to give any.

This is the way that countries are colonised today, through financial turmoil, paedophilia, child-sex abuse, bisexuality, the destruction of the family and financial, social and cultural annexing. As such, New Zealand has been renamed, although the new name is only known by a select few, and New Zealand citizenship has not officially existed since 10 January 1920 . . .

Similarly, the US gave Helen Clark full cover for her KGB training by giving her two Fulbright scholarships, despite her aborted nuclear strikes against New Zealand, Australia and America, 1980–89. In the height of her communist putsch (2002) she requested *Who's Who* remove these Fulbright scholarships from her résumé.

America then regained control of New Zealand's Prime Minister Helen Clark by filming her having sex with a female CIA pillow talker at Andersen's Cottage, better known as Lincoln Cottage, a short horse-and-buggy ride from the White House on the night of 3/4 January 2003. The diplomatic community roared with laughter and shouted each other out to lunch just so they could tell the story. I paid for lunch.

No one has been so easily honey-trapped since the Profumo Affair."

Stalin's British Training – Breeding Concubines, Paedophiles at War, 'Occult Royalty', p. 200:
"Just imagine a world without these people. There could have been less forced emigration, genocide, One World Order social policy, One World Order Military Industrial Complex, CIA-controlled Christianity, KGB-controlled Islam, Israel-controlled Western governments through paedophilia . . . and no lesbian prime ministers taking a month's holiday for international fisting junkets (PM Helen Clark, KGB) . . . Oh, and no Cold War. This is what the Freemasons call "doing good in the world"."

Stalin's British Training – Breeding Concubines, Paedophiles at War, 'Index', p. 209:
"Clark, Helen, trained in Tavistock St Petersburg, communist goal is destruction of family, promotion of homosexuals & paedophiles, filmed having sex with female CIA pillow talker at Andersen's Cottage/Abe Lincoln's Cottage/near White House on 3/4 January 2003, 121–25; lesbian PM taking month's holiday for international fisting junkets, 200; KGB operative 'ie' (pronounced 'e'), 121."

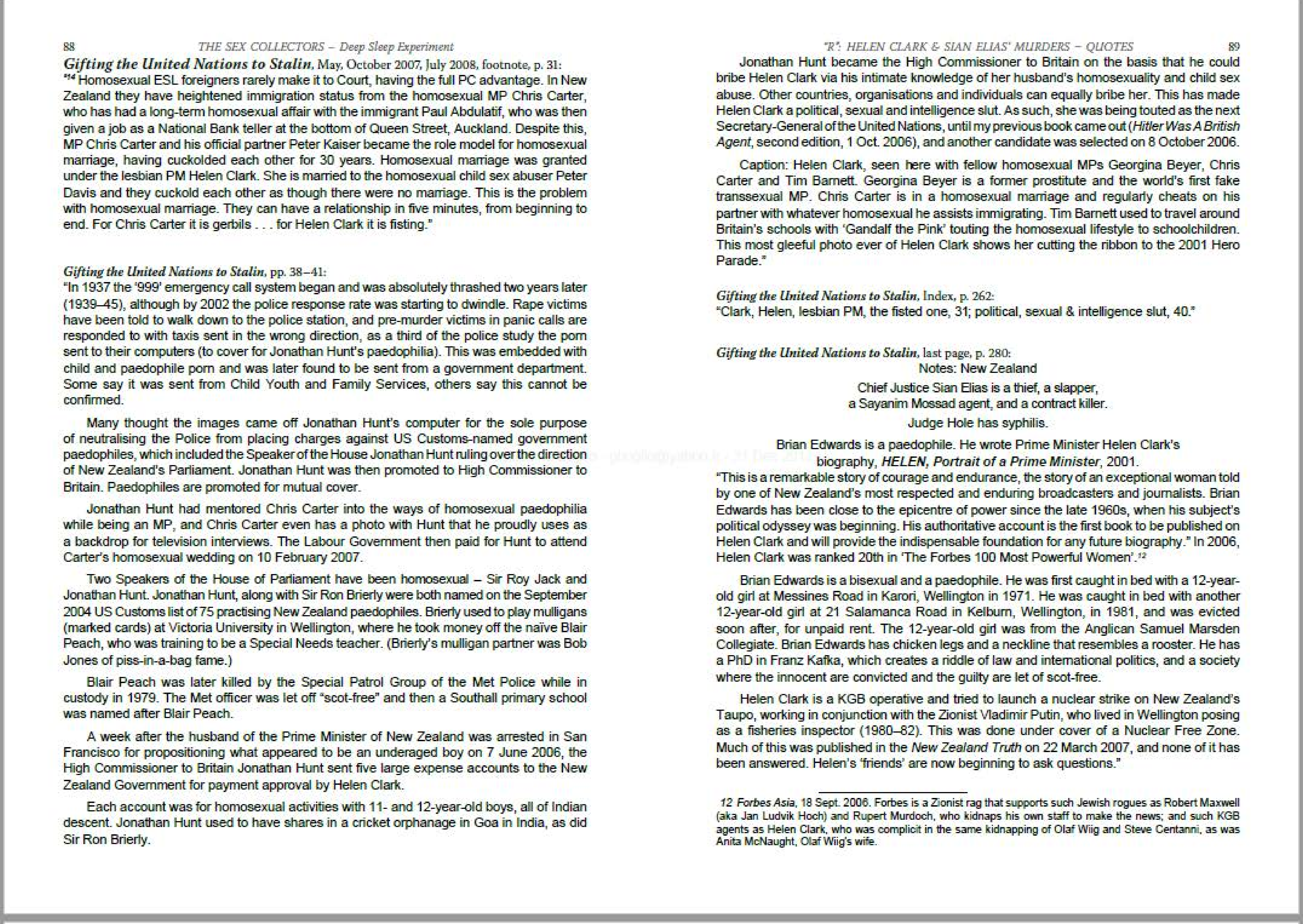

Gifting the United Nations to Stalin, May, October 2007, July 2008, footnote, p. 31:
"[14] Homosexual ESL foreigners rarely make it to Court, having the full PC advantage. In New Zealand they have heightened immigration status from the homosexual MP Chris Carter, who has had a long-term homosexual affair with the immigrant Paul Abdulatif, who was then given a job as a National Bank teller at the bottom of Queen Street, Auckland. Despite this, MP Chris Carter and his official partner Peter Kaiser became the role model for homosexual marriage, having cuckolded each other for 30 years. Homosexual marriage was granted under the lesbian PM Helen Clark. She is married to the homosexual child sex abuser Peter Davis and they cuckold each other as though there were no marriage. This is the problem with homosexual marriage. They can have a relationship in five minutes, from beginning to end. For Chris Carter it is gerbils . . . for Helen Clark it is fisting."

Gifting the United Nations to Stalin, pp. 38–41:
"In 1937 the '999' emergency call system began and was absolutely thrashed two years later (1939–45), although by 2002 the police response rate was starting to dwindle. Rape victims have been told to walk down to the police station, and pre-murder victims in panic calls are responded to with taxis sent in the wrong direction, as a third of the police study the porn sent to their computers (to cover for Jonathan Hunt's paedophilia). This was embedded with child and paedophile porn and was later found to be sent from a government department. Some say it was sent from Child Youth and Family Services, others say this cannot be confirmed.

Many thought the images came off Jonathan Hunt's computer for the sole purpose of neutralising the Police from placing charges against US Customs-named government paedophiles, which included the Speaker of the House Jonathan Hunt ruling over the direction of New Zealand's Parliament. Jonathan Hunt was then promoted to High Commissioner to Britain. Paedophiles are promoted for mutual cover.

Jonathan Hunt had mentored Chris Carter into the ways of homosexual paedophilia while being an MP, and Chris Carter even has a photo with Hunt that he proudly uses as a backdrop for television interviews. The Labour Government then paid for Hunt to attend Carter's homosexual wedding on 10 February 2007.

Two Speakers of the House of Parliament have been homosexual – Sir Roy Jack and Jonathan Hunt. Jonathan Hunt, along with Sir Ron Brierly were both named on the September 2004 US Customs list of 75 practising New Zealand paedophiles. Brierly used to play mulligans (marked cards) at Victoria University in Wellington, where he took money off the naïve Blair Peach, who was training to be a Special Needs teacher. (Brierly's mulligan partner was Bob Jones of piss-in-a-bag fame.)

Blair Peach was later killed by the Special Patrol Group of the Met Police while in custody in 1979. The Met officer was let off "scot-free" and then a Southall primary school was named after Blair Peach.

A week after the husband of the Prime Minister of New Zealand was arrested in San Francisco for propositioning what appeared to be an underaged boy on 7 June 2006, the High Commissioner to Britain Jonathan Hunt sent five large expense accounts to the New Zealand Government for payment approval by Helen Clark.

Each account was for homosexual activities with 11- and 12-year-old boys, all of Indian descent. Jonathan Hunt used to have shares in a cricket orphanage in Goa in India, as did Sir Ron Brierly.

Jonathan Hunt became the High Commissioner to Britain on the basis that he could bribe Helen Clark via his intimate knowledge of her husband's homosexuality and child sex abuse. Other countries, organisations and individuals can equally bribe her. This has made Helen Clark a political, sexual and intelligence slut. As such, she was being touted as the next Secretary-General of the United Nations, until my previous book came out (*Hitler Was A British Agent*, second edition, 1 Oct. 2006), and another candidate was selected on 8 October 2006.

Caption: Helen Clark, seen here with fellow homosexual MPs Georgina Beyer, Chris Carter and Tim Barnett. Georgina Beyer is a former prostitute and the world's first fake transsexual MP. Chris Carter is in a homosexual marriage and regularly cheats on his partner with whatever homosexual he assists immigrating. Tim Barnett used to travel around Britain's schools with 'Gandalf the Pink' touting the homosexual lifestyle to schoolchildren. This most gleeful photo ever of Helen Clark shows her cutting the ribbon to the 2001 Hero Parade."

Gifting the United Nations to Stalin, Index, p. 262:
"Clark, Helen, lesbian PM, the fisted one, 31; political, sexual & intelligence slut, 40."

Gifting the United Nations to Stalin, last page, p. 280:

Notes: New Zealand

Chief Justice Sian Elias is a thief, a slapper,
a Sayanim Mossad agent, and a contract killer.

Judge Hole has syphilis.

Brian Edwards is a paedophile. He wrote Prime Minister Helen Clark's
biography, ***HELEN, Portrait of a Prime Minister***, 2001.

"This is a remarkable story of courage and endurance, the story of an exceptional woman told by one of New Zealand's most respected and enduring broadcasters and journalists. Brian Edwards has been close to the epicentre of power since the late 1960s, when his subject's political odyssey was beginning. His authoritative account is the first book to be published on Helen Clark and will provide the indispensable foundation for any future biography." In 2006, Helen Clark was ranked 20th in 'The Forbes 100 Most Powerful Women'.[12]

Brian Edwards is a bisexual and a paedophile. He was first caught in bed with a 12-year-old girl at Messines Road in Karori, Wellington in 1971. He was caught in bed with another 12-year-old girl at 21 Salamanca Road in Kelburn, Wellington, in 1981, and was evicted soon after, for unpaid rent. The 12-year-old girl was from the Anglican Samuel Marsden Collegiate. Brian Edwards has chicken legs and a neckline that resembles a rooster. He has a PhD in Franz Kafka, which creates a riddle of law and international politics, and a society where the innocent are convicted and the guilty are let of scot-free.

Helen Clark is a KGB operative and tried to launch a nuclear strike on New Zealand's Taupo, working in conjunction with the Zionist Vladimir Putin, who lived in Wellington posing as a fisheries inspector (1980–82). This was done under cover of a Nuclear Free Zone. Much of this was published in the *New Zealand Truth* on 22 March 2007, and none of it has been answered. Helen's 'friends' are now beginning to ask questions."

---

[12] *Forbes Asia*, 18 Sept. 2006. Forbes is a Zionist rag that supports such Jewish rogues as Robert Maxwell (aka Jan Ludvik Hoch) and Rupert Murdoch, who kidnaps his own staff to make the news; and such KGB agents as Helen Clark, who was complicit in the same kidnapping of Olaf Wiig and Steve Centanni, as was Anita McNaught, Olaf Wiig's wife.

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, October, November, December 2007, opening page:
"Greg Hallett is the author of six books and another five yet to go to publication. He has been arrested, detained, stitched-up, attacked and ignored multiple times – presumably for his opinions, which he voices on podcast overseas to great interest. He was the first to expose New Zealand's Prime Minister Helen Clark as a KGB agent. He is the survivor of ~~three~~ four assassination attempts . . .

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, Preface:

This book is the result of at least three decades of intelligence research. The histories were collected from multiple sources independent of each other and the results have been disturbing enough to warrant checking and rechecking.

The actual events are so bizarre and unbelieveable that they have to be recorded in detail just to confirm their existence. The media never reports bizarre stories, or the truth, or the bizarre truth. The most common excuse given is 'fear of litigation', but the media . . . are usually connected . . .

Governments spend huge money and resources covering their true nature – this is called counter-intelligence. Counter-intelligence permeates throughout every government department. It produces nothing, costs the most, controls the media, presents quiet lies to the public, and maintains governments in power. That is the role of counter-intelligence. Its greatest ally is the media, then the police and judiciary.

Counter-intelligence is the most influential and far-reaching government department and is not limited in methods or extent of attack. Anyone who thinks out loud is on their list.

To date, I have never come across a government that wasn't primarily based on deception. If the average citizen knew of their government's plans, no government would survive. All governments are now double agent governments, controlled through their indiscretions and shame.

Governments are not success based. Governments are failed to the top. Failures make governments controllable. When controlled governments are installed and their failures become common knowledge, they are, eventually, voted out and the next failure takes the reins. The greatest failures are our double agents, and double agents are regularly installed as Prime Minister or President.

The role of governments is not to act for their citizens, but to act for any entity wanting to control that country. It is the role of compromised double agent governments to act for any foreign body against the citizens and use the media to project those actions in the most favourable light.

To achieve this the media is loaded with the most compromised staff it can employ, train, or deceive. As such, the media is party to any conspiracy going, and their primary role is distraction news . . . the media has become the conspiracy . . . It is the media's role to create conspiracy theories and project these on to the public as historical fact.

As a result, voting citizens are left with information they cannot trust, a history that is a con, and politicians whose every word is lies built on previous lies, supported by other liars. Because this has been going on for so long, our worst murderers and villains are presented as heroes, and our most courageous citizens are sidelined.

The government, judiciary, media and military work hand in hand in this conspiracy. In the case of New Zealand, it has left the country with no control over its assets, debts, financial

direction, social policy, media content, laws, or military capability. The elections are also rigged, as are the rugby and league tests, as these have been found to influence voting.

The greatest shame is brought about through sexual deviancy. Prior to Political Correctness, any homosexual politician was considered a security risk. Now that New Zealand is run by a 75% non-heterosexual government, the results of their achievements are bordering on treason – acting against citizen and country.

The greatest shame is provided by paedophilia and prostitution, and when New Zealand finds out that its Prime Minister has been involved in both, the media will take a rap over the knuckles with a few lines on page six.

When New Zealand finds out that its Prime Minister and Speaker of Parliament were both KGB agents, involved in prostitution, paedophilia, attempted mass murder, mass poisonings, murder and treason, the media may apologise on page one and give it a brief mention in the news.

The worst things that happen overseas also happen in New Zealand and often New Zealand is the model for overseas disasters. The damage is done. Voting and publication have become fringe effective at best. The job now is to undo the damage as far back as possible . . . Greg Hallett, 25 October 2007 . . . Helen Clark got wind of this book and tabled amendments to the Terrorism Suppression Act. These allow "Helen Clark" to draw up a list of terrorists annually, effectively making her 'dictator ad infinitum' and New Zealand a total police state, including the thought police."

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Faggots write Fiction', pp. 8–11:
Prime Minister Helen Clark had the government commit large sums of money to writers' trusts . . . to the Michael King Writers' Centre, with writers-in-residence paid $10,000 in four-month stints to live there.

It's just a shame that more of the public don't know that Michael King was murdered on the October 2003 orders of Prime Minister Helen Clark (KGB). No one picked up the job, so it was given to the Chief Justice Sian Elias (Sayanim-Mossad). Others on the list were Sir Peter Elworthy (killed 13 January 2004 by digitalis in his midnight cake snack), the TV chef Alison Holst, and Sharon Crosby who held the 'Morning Programme On Popular Culture, Advertising and Propaganda' and became the chief executive of Radio New Zealand. The women survived, the men didn't.

"Michael King and his second wife Maria Jungowska were killed when their car crashed into a tree and caught fire near Maramarua, on SH2 in the north Waikato [on Monday 29 March 2004, not Tuesday 30 March 2004]. The cause of the crash was reported by the police at the time to be a complete mystery as speed was not a factor and investigators have little idea why the car would veer off a straight road. A coroner's inquest into the deaths determined that the accident was most likely caused by driver inattention"[13] . . . Epecac and an impact-activated explosive.

There was no investigation into the burnt-out car or the Mossad couple travelling behind them. Michael and Maria were both burnt to a cinder and had to be identified from dental records. As appeasement, Michael's daughter is now an award-winning writer.

To qualify for the MK Writers' Centre, all you have to do is write one poem and root two children. The second child has to be with Helen Clark's husband, Peter Davis, or similar . . .

---

[13] Wikipedia – emphasis and date corrections added.

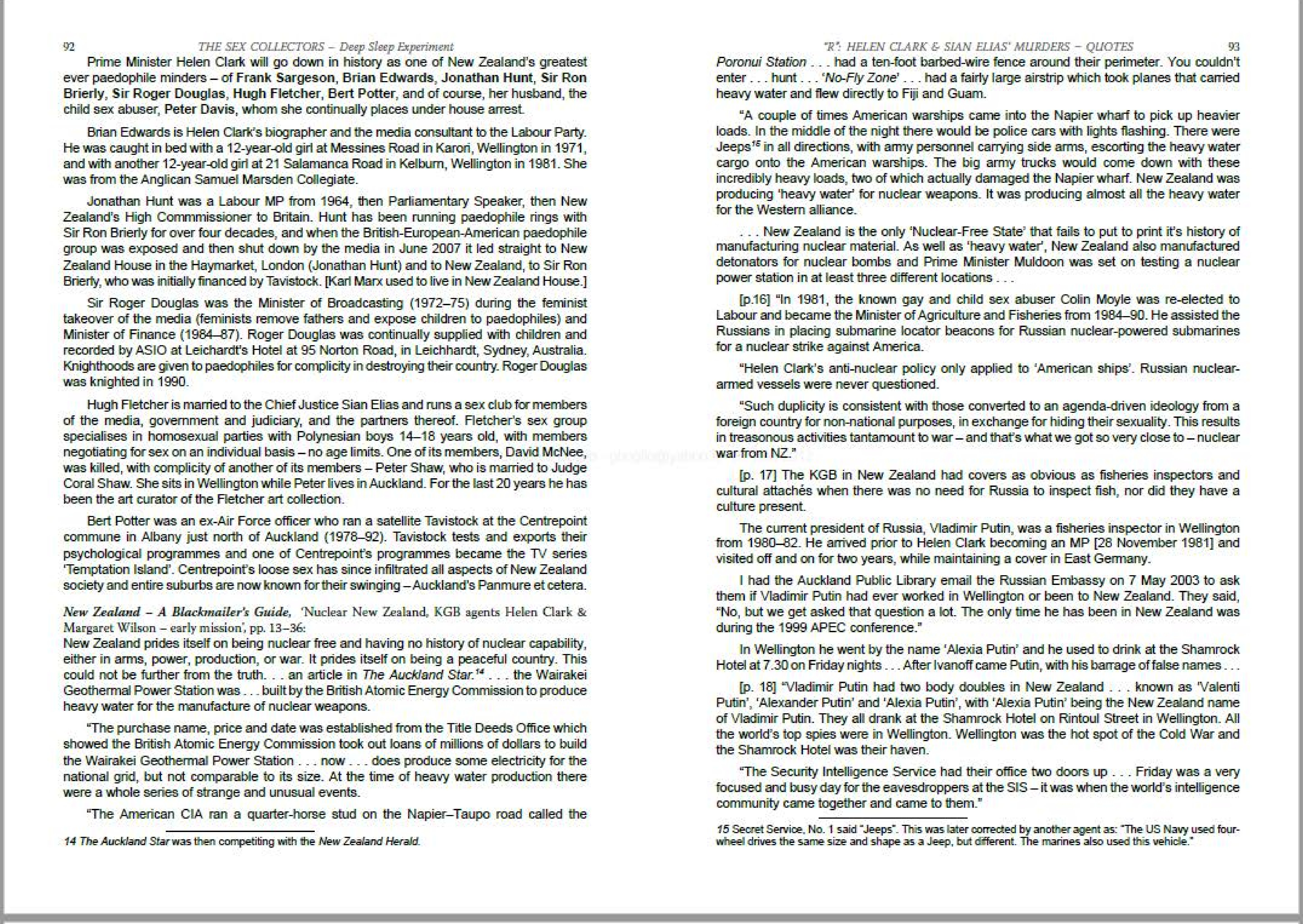

Prime Minister Helen Clark will go down in history as one of New Zealand's greatest ever paedophile minders – of **Frank Sargeson**, **Brian Edwards**, **Jonathan Hunt**, **Sir Ron Brierly**, **Sir Roger Douglas**, **Hugh Fletcher**, **Bert Potter**, and of course, her husband, the child sex abuser, **Peter Davis**, whom she continually places under house arrest.

Brian Edwards is Helen Clark's biographer and the media consultant to the Labour Party. He was caught in bed with a 12-year-old girl at Messines Road in Karori, Wellington in 1971, and with another 12-year-old girl at 21 Salamanca Road in Kelburn, Wellington in 1981. She was from the Anglican Samuel Marsden Collegiate.

Jonathan Hunt was a Labour MP from 1964, then Parliamentary Speaker, then New Zealand's High Commmissioner to Britain. Hunt has been running paedophile rings with Sir Ron Brierly for over four decades, and when the British-European-American paedophile group was exposed and then shut down by the media in June 2007 it led straight to New Zealand House in the Haymarket, London (Jonathan Hunt) and to New Zealand, to Sir Ron Brierly, who was initially financed by Tavistock. [Karl Marx used to live in New Zealand House.]

Sir Roger Douglas was the Minister of Broadcasting (1972–75) during the feminist takeover of the media (feminists remove fathers and expose children to paedophiles) and Minister of Finance (1984–87). Roger Douglas was continually supplied with children and recorded by ASIO at Leichardt's Hotel at 95 Norton Road, in Leichhardt, Sydney, Australia. Knighthoods are given to paedophiles for complicity in destroying their country. Roger Douglas was knighted in 1990.

Hugh Fletcher is married to the Chief Justice Sian Elias and runs a sex club for members of the media, government and judiciary, and the partners thereof. Fletcher's sex group specialises in homosexual parties with Polynesian boys 14–18 years old, with members negotiating for sex on an individual basis – no age limits. One of its members, David McNee, was killed, with complicity of another of its members – Peter Shaw, who is married to Judge Coral Shaw. She sits in Wellington while Peter lives in Auckland. For the last 20 years he has been the art curator of the Fletcher art collection.

Bert Potter was an ex-Air Force officer who ran a satellite Tavistock at the Centrepoint commune in Albany just north of Auckland (1978–92). Tavistock tests and exports their psychological programmes and one of Centrepoint's programmes became the TV series 'Temptation Island'. Centrepoint's loose sex has since infiltrated all aspects of New Zealand society and entire suburbs are now known for their swinging – Auckland's Panmure et cetera.

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Nuclear New Zealand, KGB agents Helen Clark & Margaret Wilson – early mission', pp. 13–36:
New Zealand prides itself on being nuclear free and having no history of nuclear capability, either in arms, power, production, or war. It prides itself on being a peaceful country. This could not be further from the truth. . . an article in *The Auckland Star.*[14] . . . the Wairakei Geothermal Power Station was . . . built by the British Atomic Energy Commission to produce heavy water for the manufacture of nuclear weapons.

"The purchase name, price and date was established from the Title Deeds Office which showed the British Atomic Energy Commission took out loans of millions of dollars to build the Wairakei Geothermal Power Station . . . now . . . does produce some electricity for the national grid, but not comparable to its size. At the time of heavy water production there were a whole series of strange and unusual events.

"The American CIA ran a quarter-horse stud on the Napier–Taupo road called the

---

[14] *The Auckland Star* was then competing with the *New Zealand Herald.*

Poronui Station . . . had a ten-foot barbed-wire fence around their perimeter. You couldn't enter . . . hunt . . . '*No-Fly Zone*' . . . had a fairly large airstrip which took planes that carried heavy water and flew directly to Fiji and Guam.

"A couple of times American warships came into the Napier wharf to pick up heavier loads. In the middle of the night there would be police cars with lights flashing. There were Jeeps[15] in all directions, with army personnel carrying side arms, escorting the heavy water cargo onto the American warships. The big army trucks would come down with these incredibly heavy loads, two of which actually damaged the Napier wharf. New Zealand was producing 'heavy water' for nuclear weapons. It was producing almost all the heavy water for the Western alliance.

. . . New Zealand is the only 'Nuclear-Free State' that fails to put to print it's history of manufacturing nuclear material. As well as 'heavy water', New Zealand also manufactured detonators for nuclear bombs and Prime Minister Muldoon was set on testing a nuclear power station in at least three different locations . . .

[p.16] "In 1981, the known gay and child sex abuser Colin Moyle was re-elected to Labour and became the Minister of Agriculture and Fisheries from 1984–90. He assisted the Russians in placing submarine locator beacons for Russian nuclear-powered submarines for a nuclear strike against America.

"Helen Clark's anti-nuclear policy only applied to 'American ships'. Russian nuclear-armed vessels were never questioned.

"Such duplicity is consistent with those converted to an agenda-driven ideology from a foreign country for non-national purposes, in exchange for hiding their sexuality. This results in treasonous activities tantamount to war – and that's what we got so very close to – nuclear war from NZ."

[p. 17] The KGB in New Zealand had covers as obvious as fisheries inspectors and cultural attachés when there was no need for Russia to inspect fish, nor did they have a culture present.

The current president of Russia, Vladimir Putin, was a fisheries inspector in Wellington from 1980–82. He arrived prior to Helen Clark becoming an MP [28 November 1981] and visited off and on for two years, while maintaining a cover in East Germany.

I had the Auckland Public Library email the Russian Embassy on 7 May 2003 to ask them if Vladimir Putin had ever worked in Wellington or been to New Zealand. They said, "No, but we get asked that question a lot. The only time he has been in New Zealand was during the 1999 APEC conference."

In Wellington he went by the name 'Alexia Putin' and he used to drink at the Shamrock Hotel at 7.30 on Friday nights . . . After Ivanoff came Putin, with his barrage of false names . . .

[p. 18] "Vladimir Putin had two body doubles in New Zealand . . . known as 'Valenti Putin', 'Alexander Putin' and 'Alexia Putin', with 'Alexia Putin' being the New Zealand name of Vladimir Putin. They all drank at the Shamrock Hotel on Rintoul Street in Wellington. All the world's top spies were in Wellington. Wellington was the hot spot of the Cold War and the Shamrock Hotel was their haven.

"The Security Intelligence Service had their office two doors up . . . Friday was a very focused and busy day for the eavesdroppers at the SIS – it was when the world's intelligence community came together and came to them."

---

[15] Secret Service, No. 1 said "Jeeps". This was later corrected by another agent as: "The US Navy used four-wheel drives the same size and shape as a Jeep, but different. The marines also used this vehicle."

“Spies also worked behind the door labelled ‘H.A. Perfect’ on the 6th floor of the AMP Building, with the lifts only going to the 5th floor, and also at the office labelled ‘Ajax Meat Export Company’ attached to the Manners Street Post Office in Wellington.” . . .

“Vladimir ‘Alexia’ Putin . . . kept a routine alibi in Eastern Europe . . .

[p. 19] Putin had three main tasks while in New Zealand:

1. Collecting the sexual proclivities of politicians of all parties;
2. Laying and moving submarine beacons so that their nuclear vessels could accurately locate their position for a determined nuclear strike;
3. The deconstruction of Westerners.

As soon as Putin arrived in Wellington he demanded the sexual profiles of all the politicians from all the major parties, and Helen Clark provided many of these. Her last heterosexual relationship was in 1980, during her junior lecturing days, with the ship’s officer Mike Lee who was then married to the former ship girl Sandra Vercoe. Sandra Lee née Vercoe had been working the ships from the age of 14, along with her mother, and under her mother’s tutelage.[16] [The Auckland City Councillor and Labour MP Sandra Lee was a child prostitute].

Helen ended her relationship with Mike Lee by throwing all his belongings out the window and calling the cops. When Mike Lee arrived, he found his stuff strewn all over the lawn and the police warning him to stay off the property and he was not to approach Helen Clark. The relationship was over.

To assist in the ongoing silence of this, Mike Lee was made Chairman of the Auckland Regional Council (1992), known for its ongoing failure to produce anything past B&B – ‘beaurocracy and any bedpal’ . . .

Mike Lee’s former wife is Sandra Lee (1952–). To maintain her silence she was made an Auckland City Councillor, an MP (1993), and the New Zealand High Commissioner to Niue (12 Feb. 2003–3 Oct. 2005) . . . from where she was fired . . . Her Maori bodyguard boyfriend kept hauling her out of diplomatic meetings and beating the crap out of her . .

The previous High Commissioner to Niue was also hand selected by Helen Clark. She was a lesbian and had instigated sexual relations with her very young female maid. The maid’s father retaliated by stabbing the New Zealand High Commissioner in the heart with a knife.

[p. 20] Helen Clark then sent the New Zealand police up to concoct a story and they came back with a beauty: “She had been carrying the knife from one part of the house to another, slipped, and fell on the knife, stabbing herself in the heart.” Helen Clark then attended the funeral of her one-time fisting buddy.

The same influence that sexual data has on local body politicians is used on international politicians. Rather than be shamed and fired, politicans are generally promoted, protected and ultimately controlled.

Collecting the sexual data on New Zealand politicians served Helen Clark and Vladimir Putin well. Eighteen years after their ill-gotten gains, Helen Clark was New Zealand’s Prime Minister and Vladimir Putin was President of Russia. Both gained their new top roles in the same month and year.

Vladimir ‘Alexia’ Putin became the President of Russia in December 1999, some 18

---

[16] In *Te Karaka*, Summer 2008–2009, p. 59, her daughter Annabelle Lee Harris lists her mother as “Sandra Lee née Barber”. Either may be matronymical consanguinity.

years after collecting the sexual data on New Zealand politicians and overseeing the laying of nuclear submarine beacons from Russian fishing vessels . . .

“When we watched these fishing boats, sure enough, fishermen would get off, but so would intellectuals. Every top KGB and CIA spy was in Wellington at that time (1980–86). The CIA were offering huge money to the Russian fishermen to tell them where they were laying the submarine beacons, but taking the bribe would have meant the death of their families.

“At that time, when the West was still in its Cold War frenzy, a nuclear strike was going to be launched from submarines because they were not in a fixed location and therefore more difficult to attack, but the submarines had to know exactly where they were, and that’s why they needed the underwater beacons. They also liked our deep remote waters and sexually compromised politicians.

“The Russians were tracking and finding where the American Omega Grid Pattern was. The Omega Grid Pattern showed the American submarines carrying the Polaris missiles exactly where they were within a fraction of an inch.

“The Americans stated that Black Birch outside Blenheim was ‘a weather station’, but it was a CIA base (still is) and was the control centre for the Omega Grid Pattern and American submarines carrying Polaris nuclear missiles in New Zealand waters.

[p 21] “The American and Russian trawlers were finding each other’s locator beacons and adjusting them a few inches to the left or right. The Omega Grid was spread over the whole world and by knowing where the finite markers were, they knew exactly where they were. This was post-satellites (1957–58), but the satellites weren’t functioning very well and the first satellite broadcasts only came about in 1980”. . .

“Although Helen Clark brought in the anti-nuclear policy under the Lange government (July 1984–August 1989), it did not prevent Russian nuclear submarines, only American ones. Hence the Americans think of New Zealand as ‘Pinko’ and Helen Clark as ‘a KGB operative’, and quite correctly so. The Americans call Helen Clark ‘Red Helen’.”

MICK P[17] in late November 2004: “This is to confirm that Putin was here twice in Wellington. The Lermontov was one of his interests and he was here to debrief and collect information from a paid informant who was a member of ASIO in Wellington [Australian Security Intelligence Organisation].

“During the Polaris submarine type thing it became absolutely imperative to have a grid pattern. You had to know exactly where you were before you could fire an intercontinental ballistic missile from the submarine, otherwise you wouldn’t know what you were going to hit, unless you knew precisely your position. There were these fishing boats going around and the Yanks were doing the same thing, and they were fucking up each other’s markers . . . So they were quite likely to aim at Moscow and hit New York’. [p. 22] That’s one of the reasons why it never happened.”

Vladimir Putin’s official biography is somewhat different from what actually occurred and this is standard practise for a spy, and for all of Russia – a liar’s paradise.

Putin was born in 1952 and graduated with a law degree in 1975 from Leningrad. He then joined the KGB as a spy in East Germany until 1989 . . . Just as Russia was using its universities as an intelligence-gathering front and training Western students as double agents, the same practice was going on in New Zealand, and the New Zealand exchange

---

[17] MICK P is a ‘Member of the Intelligence Community Knowledge Pool’.

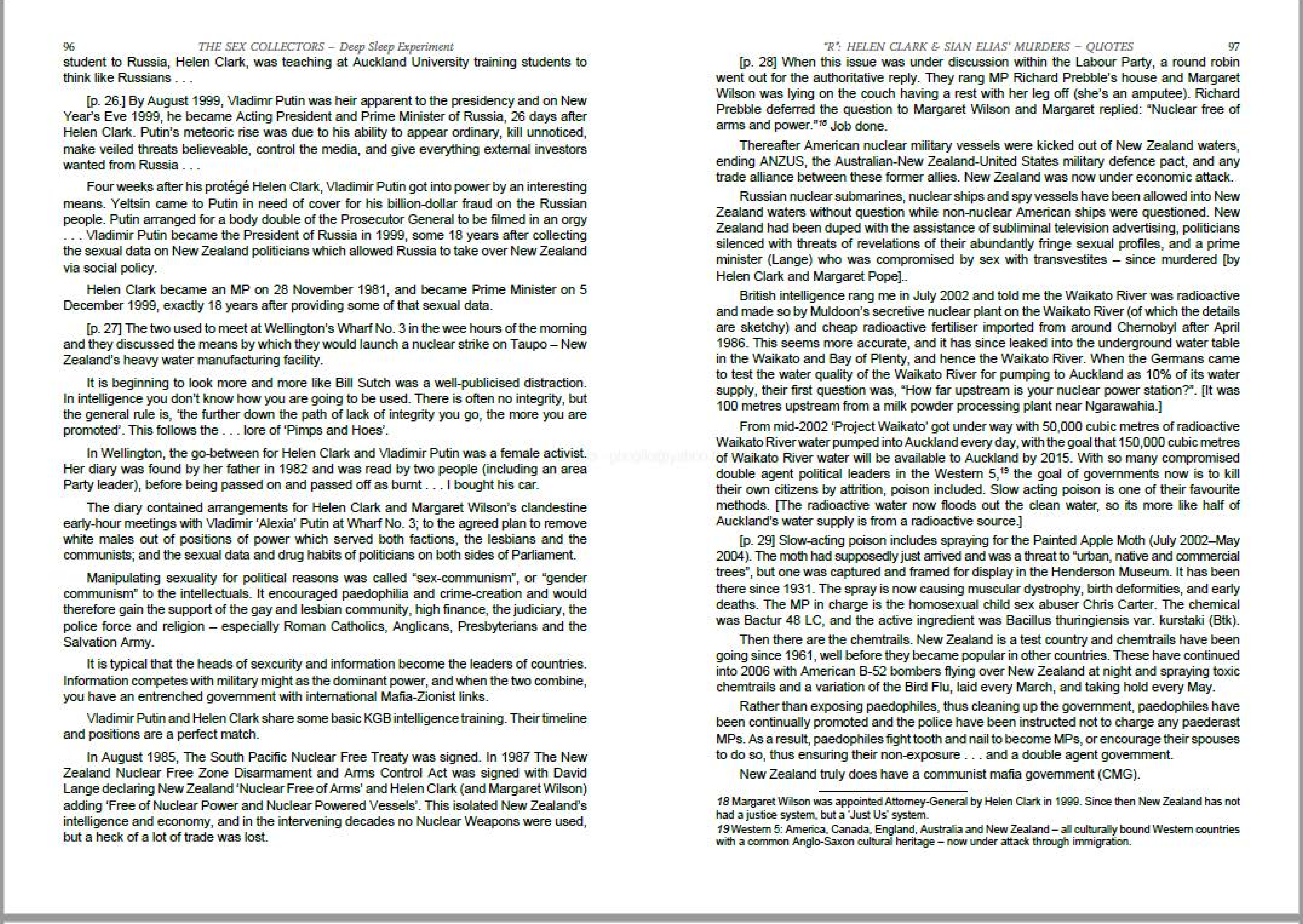

student to Russia, Helen Clark, was teaching at Auckland University training students to think like Russians . . .

[p. 26.] By August 1999, Vladimr Putin was heir apparent to the presidency and on New Year's Eve 1999, he became Acting President and Prime Minister of Russia, 26 days after Helen Clark. Putin's meteoric rise was due to his ability to appear ordinary, kill unnoticed, make veiled threats believeable, control the media, and give everything external investors wanted from Russia . . .

Four weeks after his protégé Helen Clark, Vladimir Putin got into power by an interesting means. Yeltsin came to Putin in need of cover for his billion-dollar fraud on the Russian people. Putin arranged for a body double of the Prosecutor General to be filmed in an orgy . . . Vladimir Putin became the President of Russia in 1999, some 18 years after collecting the sexual data on New Zealand politicians which allowed Russia to take over New Zealand via social policy.

Helen Clark became an MP on 28 November 1981, and became Prime Minister on 5 December 1999, exactly 18 years after providing some of that sexual data.

[p. 27] The two used to meet at Wellington's Wharf No. 3 in the wee hours of the morning and they discussed the means by which they would launch a nuclear strike on Taupo – New Zealand's heavy water manufacturing facility.

It is beginning to look more and more like Bill Sutch was a well-publicised distraction. In intelligence you don't know how you are going to be used. There is often no integrity, but the general rule is, 'the further down the path of lack of integrity you go, the more you are promoted'. This follows the . . . lore of 'Pimps and Hoes'.

In Wellington, the go-between for Helen Clark and Vladimir Putin was a female activist. Her diary was found by her father in 1982 and was read by two people (including an area Party leader), before being passed on and passed off as burnt . . . I bought his car.

The diary contained arrangements for Helen Clark and Margaret Wilson's clandestine early-hour meetings with Vladimir 'Alexia' Putin at Wharf No. 3; to the agreed plan to remove white males out of positions of power which served both factions, the lesbians and the communists; and the sexual data and drug habits of politicians on both sides of Parliament.

Manipulating sexuality for political reasons was called "sex-communism", or "gender communism" to the intellectuals. It encouraged paedophilia and crime-creation and would therefore gain the support of the gay and lesbian community, high finance, the judiciary, the police force and religion – especially Roman Catholics, Anglicans, Presbyterians and the Salvation Army.

It is typical that the heads of sexcurity and information become the leaders of countries. Information competes with military might as the dominant power, and when the two combine, you have an entrenched government with international Mafia-Zionist links.

Vladimir Putin and Helen Clark share some basic KGB intelligence training. Their timeline and positions are a perfect match.

In August 1985, The South Pacific Nuclear Free Treaty was signed. In 1987 The New Zealand Nuclear Free Zone Disarmament and Arms Control Act was signed with David Lange declaring New Zealand 'Nuclear Free of Arms' and Helen Clark (and Margaret Wilson) adding 'Free of Nuclear Power and Nuclear Powered Vessels'. This isolated New Zealand's intelligence and economy, and in the intervening decades no Nuclear Weapons were used, but a heck of a lot of trade was lost.

[p. 28] When this issue was under discussion within the Labour Party, a round robin went out for the authoritative reply. They rang MP Richard Prebble's house and Margaret Wilson was lying on the couch having a rest with her leg off (she's an amputee). Richard Prebble deferred the question to Margaret Wilson and Margaret replied: "Nuclear free of arms and power."[18] Job done.

Thereafter American nuclear military vessels were kicked out of New Zealand waters, ending ANZUS, the Australian-New Zealand-United States military defence pact, and any trade alliance between these former allies. New Zealand was now under economic attack.

Russian nuclear submarines, nuclear ships and spy vessels have been allowed into New Zealand waters without question while non-nuclear American ships were questioned. New Zealand had been duped with the assistance of subliminal television advertising, politicians silenced with threats of revelations of their abundantly fringe sexual profiles, and a prime minister (Lange) who was compromised by sex with transvestites – since murdered [by Helen Clark and Margaret Pope]..

British intelligence rang me in July 2002 and told me the Waikato River was radioactive and made so by Muldoon's secretive nuclear plant on the Waikato River (of which the details are sketchy) and cheap radioactive fertiliser imported from around Chernobyl after April 1986. This seems more accurate, and it has since leaked into the underground water table in the Waikato and Bay of Plenty, and hence the Waikato River. When the Germans came to test the water quality of the Waikato River for pumping to Auckland as 10% of its water supply, their first question was, "How far upstream is your nuclear power station?". [It was 100 metres upstream from a milk powder processing plant near Ngarawahia.]

From mid-2002 'Project Waikato' got under way with 50,000 cubic metres of radioactive Waikato River water pumped into Auckland every day, with the goal that 150,000 cubic metres of Waikato River water will be available to Auckland by 2015. With so many compromised double agent political leaders in the Western 5,[19] the goal of governments now is to kill their own citizens by attrition, poison included. Slow acting poison is one of their favourite methods. [The radioactive water now floods out the clean water, so its more like half of Auckland's water supply is from a radioactive source.]

[p. 29] Slow-acting poison includes spraying for the Painted Apple Moth (July 2002–May 2004). The moth had supposedly just arrived and was a threat to "urban, native and commercial trees", but one was captured and framed for display in the Henderson Museum. It has been there since 1931. The spray is now causing muscular dystrophy, birth deformities, and early deaths. The MP in charge is the homosexual child sex abuser Chris Carter. The chemical was Bactur 48 LC, and the active ingredient was Bacillus thuringiensis var. kurstaki (Btk).

Then there are the chemtrails. New Zealand is a test country and chemtrails have been going since 1961, well before they became popular in other countries. These have continued into 2006 with American B-52 bombers flying over New Zealand at night and spraying toxic chemtrails and a variation of the Bird Flu, laid every March, and taking hold every May.

Rather than exposing paedophiles, thus cleaning up the government, paedophiles have been continually promoted and the police have been instructed not to charge any paederast MPs. As a result, paedophiles fight tooth and nail to become MPs, or encourage their spouses to do so, thus ensuring their non-exposure . . . and a double agent government.

New Zealand truly does have a communist mafia government (CMG).

---

[18] Margaret Wilson was appointed Attorney-General by Helen Clark in 1999. Since then New Zealand has not had a justice system, but a 'Just Us' system.

[19] Western 5: America, Canada, England, Australia and New Zealand – all culturally bound Western countries with a common Anglo-Saxon cultural heritage – now under attack through immigration.

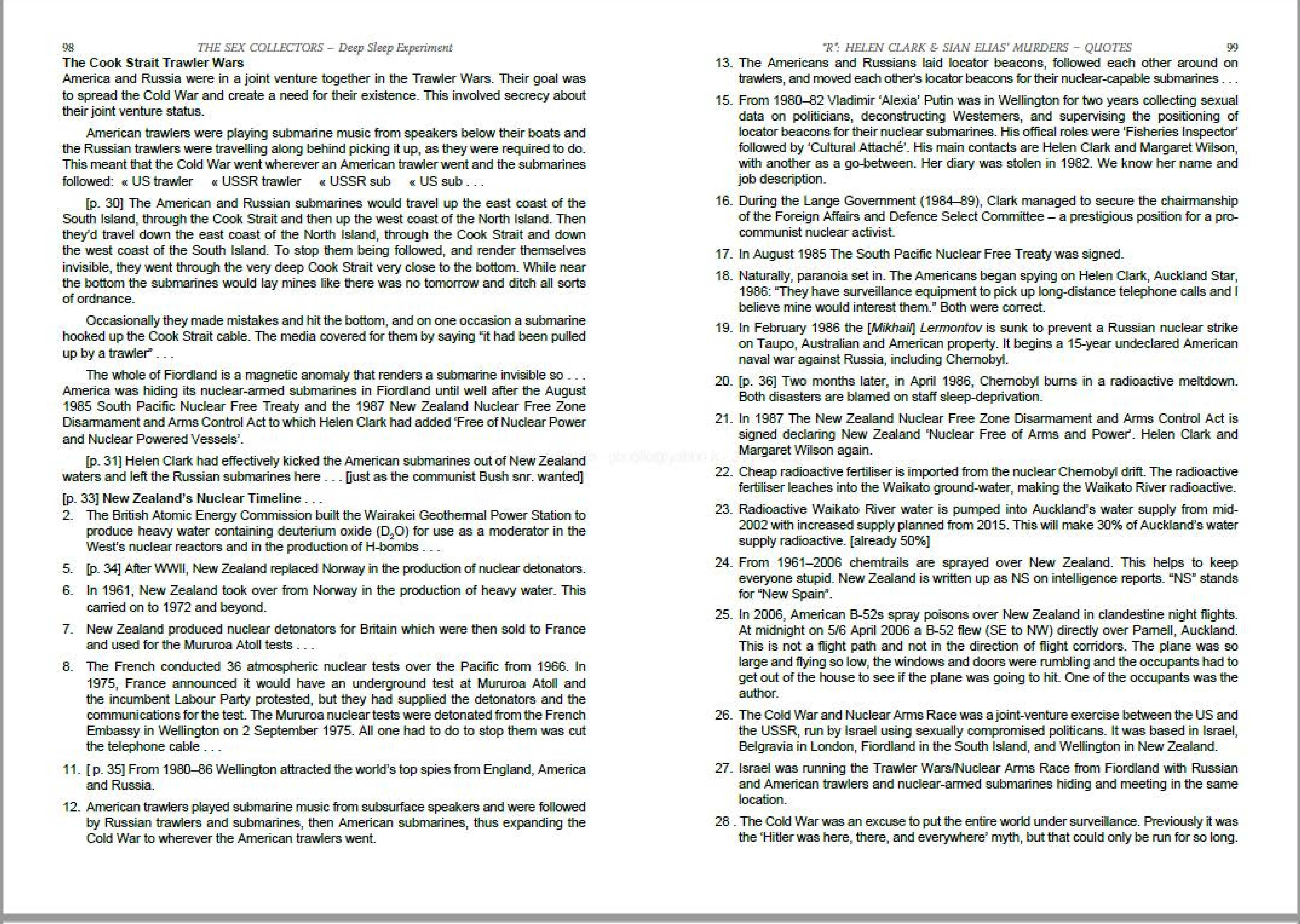

The Cook Strait Trawler Wars

America and Russia were in a joint venture together in the Trawler Wars. Their goal was to spread the Cold War and create a need for their existence. This involved secrecy about their joint venture status.

American trawlers were playing submarine music from speakers below their boats and the Russian trawlers were travelling along behind picking it up, as they were required to do. This meant that the Cold War went wherever an American trawler went and the submarines followed: « US trawler « USSR trawler « USSR sub « US sub . . .

[p. 30] The American and Russian submarines would travel up the east coast of the South Island, through the Cook Strait and then up the west coast of the North Island. Then they'd travel down the east coast of the North Island, through the Cook Strait and down the west coast of the South Island. To stop them being followed, and render themselves invisible, they went through the very deep Cook Strait very close to the bottom. While near the bottom the submarines would lay mines like there was no tomorrow and ditch all sorts of ordnance.

Occasionally they made mistakes and hit the bottom, and on one occasion a submarine hooked up the Cook Strait cable. The media covered for them by saying "it had been pulled up by a trawler" . . .

The whole of Fiordland is a magnetic anomaly that renders a submarine invisible so . . . America was hiding its nuclear-armed submarines in Fiordland until well after the August 1985 South Pacific Nuclear Free Treaty and the 1987 New Zealand Nuclear Free Zone Disarmament and Arms Control Act to which Helen Clark had added 'Free of Nuclear Power and Nuclear Powered Vessels'.

[p. 31] Helen Clark had effectively kicked the American submarines out of New Zealand waters and left the Russian submarines here . . . [just as the communist Bush snr. wanted]

[p. 33] **New Zealand's Nuclear Timeline . . .**

2. The British Atomic Energy Commission built the Wairakei Geothermal Power Station to produce heavy water containing deuterium oxide (D_2O) for use as a moderator in the West's nuclear reactors and in the production of H-bombs . . .

5. [p. 34] After WWII, New Zealand replaced Norway in the production of nuclear detonators.

6. In 1961, New Zealand took over from Norway in the production of heavy water. This carried on to 1972 and beyond.

7. New Zealand produced nuclear detonators for Britain which were then sold to France and used for the Mururoa Atoll tests . . .

8. The French conducted 36 atmospheric nuclear tests over the Pacific from 1966. In 1975, France announced it would have an underground test at Mururoa Atoll and the incumbent Labour Party protested, but they had supplied the detonators and the communications for the test. The Mururoa nuclear tests were detonated from the French Embassy in Wellington on 2 September 1975. All one had to do to stop them was cut the telephone cable . . .

11. [p. 35] From 1980–86 Wellington attracted the world's top spies from England, America and Russia.

12. American trawlers played submarine music from subsurface speakers and were followed by Russian trawlers and submarines, then American submarines, thus expanding the Cold War to wherever the American trawlers went.

13. The Americans and Russians laid locator beacons, followed each other around on trawlers, and moved each other's locator beacons for their nuclear-capable submarines . . .

15. From 1980–82 Vladimir 'Alexia' Putin was in Wellington for two years collecting sexual data on politicians, deconstructing Westerners, and supervising the positioning of locator beacons for their nuclear submarines. His offical roles were 'Fisheries Inspector' followed by 'Cultural Attaché'. His main contacts are Helen Clark and Margaret Wilson, with another as a go-between. Her diary was stolen in 1982. We know her name and job description.

16. During the Lange Government (1984–89), Clark managed to secure the chairmanship of the Foreign Affairs and Defence Select Committee – a prestigious position for a pro-communist nuclear activist.

17. In August 1985 The South Pacific Nuclear Free Treaty was signed.

18. Naturally, paranoia set in. The Americans began spying on Helen Clark, Auckland Star, 1986: "They have surveillance equipment to pick up long-distance telephone calls and I believe mine would interest them." Both were correct.

19. In February 1986 the [*Mikhail*] *Lermontov* is sunk to prevent a Russian nuclear strike on Taupo, Australian and American property. It begins a 15-year undeclared American naval war against Russia, including Chernobyl.

20. [p. 36] Two months later, in April 1986, Chernobyl burns in a radioactive meltdown. Both disasters are blamed on staff sleep-deprivation.

21. In 1987 The New Zealand Nuclear Free Zone Disarmament and Arms Control Act is signed declaring New Zealand 'Nuclear Free of Arms and Power'. Helen Clark and Margaret Wilson again.

22. Cheap radioactive fertiliser is imported from the nuclear Chernobyl drift. The radioactive fertiliser leaches into the Waikato ground-water, making the Waikato River radioactive.

23. Radioactive Waikato River water is pumped into Auckland's water supply from mid-2002 with increased supply planned from 2015. This will make 30% of Auckland's water supply radioactive. [already 50%]

24. From 1961–2006 chemtrails are sprayed over New Zealand. This helps to keep everyone stupid. New Zealand is written up as NS on intelligence reports. "NS" stands for "New Spain".

25. In 2006, American B-52s spray poisons over New Zealand in clandestine night flights. At midnight on 5/6 April 2006 a B-52 flew (SE to NW) directly over Parnell, Auckland. This is not a flight path and not in the direction of flight corridors. The plane was so large and flying so low, the windows and doors were rumbling and the occupants had to get out of the house to see if the plane was going to hit. One of the occupants was the author.

26. The Cold War and Nuclear Arms Race was a joint-venture exercise between the US and the USSR, run by Israel using sexually compromised politicans. It was based in Israel, Belgravia in London, Fiordland in the South Island, and Wellington in New Zealand.

27. Israel was running the Trawler Wars/Nuclear Arms Race from Fiordland with Russian and American trawlers and nuclear-armed submarines hiding and meeting in the same location.

28 . The Cold War was an excuse to put the entire world under surveillance. Previously it was the 'Hitler was here, there, and everywhere' myth, but that could only be run for so long.

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'How Exciting', pp. 39–41:

" . . . Ahmed Zaoui – an Algerian MP . . . arrived in New Zealand on 4 December 2002 claiming refugee status. He was detained for five years including 10.5 months in solitary confinement at Paremoremo prison. The SIS Minister Helen Clark issued Zaoui with a Security Risk Certificate using the schizophrenic mental patient and Immigration Minister, Lianne Dalziel, as her front . . . The Israelis told Helen Clark to hassle Zaoui. This was done on behalf of the Americans."

Helen Clark is totally compromised by the Americans and has been since she was honey-trapped at the White House in January 2003. The excuse to detain Zaoui was manufactured out of a verbal typo recorded by the novice customs agent who asked Zaoui if he "belonged to the GIA" and Zaoui replied "F. I. S." and the Customs Officer took this to be "Yes', as he was instructed to do. The GIA was oulawed, the FIS was not.

M: "By 2001 Silvia Cartwright had become New Zealand's most corrupt judge with 18 complaints against her, mostly for gender bias – plus the protests from her foetus. As soon as they developed legs, they voted with their feet and were out of there. She was then made Governor-General [2001–06] by the lesbian and former Freud Hilton graduate, Helen Clark, herself married to a homosexual child sex abuser – so it was all very in-house and 'our-husbands-are-kiddy-fuckers, don't tell'.

"After the Governor-General Silvia Cartwright stole the 17 September 2005 election for her paedophile and prostitute buddy Helen Clark, MP Gerry Brownlee said: "I have to publicly say that I have lost respect for the Governor-General [Dame Silvia Cartwright]."

As well as being married to a lawyer and paedophile, and taking her breaks in known paedophile locations, Silvia Cartwright was a paedophile enabler.

On 16 June 2002 Governor-General Silvia Cartwright criticised section 59 of the Crimes Act 1961 which "allowed parents to use reasonable force to discipline their children". She was backed up by . . . the Green MP Sue Bradford . . . a well-known slapper in both senses of the word. If anyone needed a root in Auckland in the 1980s they could always go to Grey Lynn to the drooler Sue Bradford. Sue was also known for publicly slapping the living daylights out of her kids outside Ranui's Railside Café on a semi-regular basis."

As an MP, Sue Bradford had become a paedophile minder and the primary requirement of a paedophile is that one or both parents are removed, preferably the biological father . . . after years of hating the police, she finally came on side.

This was something Silvia and her paedophile husband, and Helen Clark and her child sex abusing husband, had also discovered quite early on in the piece. That is why they became feminists – to provide children to paedophiles, and that is why paedophiles agreed to marry them.

A large proportion of prison inmates are paedophile victims, and. . . three months after criticising the Crimes Act, at a speech at the opening of the Specialised Applied Research Centre at Wellington's Victoria University . . . on 12 August 2002 . . . Governor-General Cartwright introduced mandatory sentencing for criminal convictions and reduced the likelihood of parole.

This was designed to keep paedophile victims in prison longer, to keep them quiet longer, and to allow paeodphiles longer free time between child sex and accusation, while discrediting the accuser . . . Helen Clark then backed up Silvia Cartwright's decision to keep paedophile victms in prison longer by saying ". . . we clearly are no longer a dominion of Britain . . ." This was a bit like saying, "This scenario has been planned and is agenda-driven public speak. We will talk slowly and quotably and not address the issues." So nothing's changed."

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Drugs and Corruption in TVNZ', pp. 52–53:

" . . . They looked around the room to see if anyone of any note might be against their feminist actions and spotted me sitting under the divider wall, all sneezy and covered in a balaclava. One of the feminist flatmates covered for me, "He's alright. Don't worry about him", and they began talking, quite excitedly, about "catching Mervyn Thompson . . . stripping him naked . . . and tying him up" . . . Wikipedia: "Mervyn Garfield Thompson (1936–92) was a prominent New Zealand playwright and theatre director . . . In February 1984, Mervyn Thompson, then a lecturer at Auckland University, was abducted and left tied to a tree in an Auckland park wearing a sign labelling him a rapist. The abduction was allegedly staged by a feminist action group based at the University following an accusation by one of his students." . . .

Mervyn Thompson was left strapped to the telephone pole outside the public toilets on the high north side of the Auckland Zoo on Old Mill Rd, opposite No. 85, which is now occupied by a feminist Family Court lawyer who works from home. They prize such sites.

"We know the names of some of the people involved. According to Detective Inspector John Hughes, there were 11 or 12 women involved. They include Miriam Saphira (now a psychologist honoured by the Queen), Maryan Street (one of Helen Clark's lovers, now an MP), and Dale Candy (police officer), who as you suggested, looked a bit like Anthony Blunt."

Detective Inspector John Hughes: "All of them now have some sort of government grant or position, are in charge of a quango, or are the lawmakers now . . . Dale Candy was part of the police. She showed her true colours by pressuring prostitutes to charge the owner of Atlas Cement. Dale was gilding the lily with phoney witnesses and was a prolific rooter of police officers, which kept them under her thumb. The prostitutes were charged with perjury, Dale Candy was removed from the police rather quickly and the owner of Atlas Cement got off, having never committed any of the crimes Dale Candy charged him with . . . the feminist kidnappers were never charged. Rather they were promoted . . . The Family Court is 'supply and demand to paedophiles'. Their primary focus is on removing fathers as this is the primary requirement of paedophiles and of feminists, who, like their communist model, spend their time creating crime. The previous Principal Family Court Judge, Patrick Mahoney (1984–2004), was New Zealand's biggest-ever supplier of children to paedophiles and the current Principal Family Court Judge, Peter Boshier, was Chairman Mao's biggest fan in NZ, editing the Victoria University communist magazine in the 1970s – Left of Victory."

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Drugs and Corruption in TVNZ', p. 55:

"As it turned out, it was the avid feminist, St Petersburg swallow and Freud Hilton graduate Helen Clark who organised the kidnapping of Mervyn Thompson, but I didn't find this out until 2006 – some 22 years later.

Helen Clark also arranged the kidnapping of Olaf Wiig and Steve Centanni in Gaza, Israel from 14–27 August 2006. Olaf Wiig is married to Anita McNaught who had an affair with Helen Clark in February 1993.

Five years after flatting at Hepburn Street, I was in Moscow having lunch with the KGB – my shout – and they confirmed they were training New Zealand women as KGB assets to run sex communism. So this all fits with Helen Clark being the organisational mind behind the kidnapping . . .

Two of the girls flatting there proposed to me, by letter, on the same letter, while I was down south working on one of my holidays, but by the time menstruation had done another couple of rounds it was getting pretty cold in there so I looked for another place to live.

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Pedigree-Mongers', pp. 65–70:
At 10 am on 18 October 2007 I went to visit Christine Cole Catley at her home in Narrowneck, near Devonport, to buy *Bloody Marvellous*, the book she co-edited and published on George Haydn . . . Then Christine started to talk about Michael King, so I listened.

Christine Cole Catley: "Michael King had cancer at the base of the tongue [an author with cancer of the tongue], which was supposed to be in remission. He had just abandoned his Catholic faith and told me, 'I feel like Lazarus risen from the dead'. He had so many plans . . . He was on his way to the Bay of Islands . . . Michael's wife, Maria Jungowska, came out to New Zealand with her mother and when she died, Maria went a little potty as she had nobody else . . . There was a car travelling very close behind when they crashed."

She then went away and came back with a 10" x 8" framed photo of her, Prime Minister Helen Clark and Michael King . . . "The two occupants were a Mossad couple, never interviewed. . . . Michael King opposed Helen Clark [and Sian Elias] on the Foreshore and Seabed legislation. It never occurred to him that he would be contracted on by the government and that this opposition would cost him his life."

Christine Cole Catley: "Michael King's daughter rang me up when the autopsy report came through. She said that they thought Michael had had a TIA, a Transient Ischaemic Attack, and this caused a moment of unconsciousness. Strangely, five minutes after she rang, Cath Tizard rang up and said she had collapsed on stage while giving a speech, and her doctors had diagnosed this as a Transient Ischaemic Attack" . . .

The bodies were completely burnt and had to be identified from dental records. Cath Tizard will contribute to any conspiracy that advances her future and covers her past.

T/A was all the rage in Auckland Hospital for about a year and they were telling everyone they had just suffered from a TIA. There are other medical so-called conditions that rise up in popularity at times then go away again . . . all bullshit. This is doctors playing tootsie with spies and hitmen . . .

[p. 66] Christine Cole Catley: " . . . Cath Tizard . . . Yes she is known for the drink . . . Margaret Hayward is now doing a thesis on the leadership styles of New Zealand prime ministers and is due to live at the Michael King Centre for five months with a $10,000 grant, starting in November."

Margaret Hayward was Labour Prime Minister Norm Kirk's secretary for many years and was chosen for her lack of intelligence. She wrote *Diary of the Kirk Years* in 1981 which she got from Norm Kirk's diaries. It was . . . the publisher Christine Cole Catley you were talking to. It was the most remaindered book in New Zealand for many years. She's not too bright but then not many doctorates are. She now teaches. When you can't do, you teach.

"With this history as a tiresome woman, Margaret won the Writers-in-Residence at the Signalman's House at the Michael King Writers' Centre with the assistance of Creative New Zealand. She also co-authored *Women Writers of New Zealand* after the Kirk book. If you fill up the white space with distraction crap, you get funding, especially when you have a mafia government."

Communist Mafia Government, CMG. It's interesting that Norm Kirk's secretary should look like the next Labour Prime Minister David Lange . . . While resident, Margaret plans to complete a book on prime ministerial leadership in New Zealand . . . Apparently it's really juicy and full of gossip . . .

[p. 67] Of course I won't be recognised for telling the truth because I've told the truth.

Margaret will be recognised for telling the truth because she's left so much out and has academic backing, which is all about rose-tinted ideology and a life of service and no sex.

Christine Cole Catley: "I asked her if she was going to get it out before the election, I'm Labour you know, and she said it wouldn't do the Labour Party any good" . . .

Author: "It's all about sex. Who shagged who and those in control are controlled by the shame of their sly rooting."

Then we started to talk about Norm Kirk, and Christine was talking about how his wife Ruth Kirk was such a dark woman, a black woman, and I chipped in that, "She was known as 'Black Hearted Ruth'. She sold all of Norm's possessions when he died", and Christine added, "Even the international gifts".

Then I told her how Norm [6 January 1923–31 August 1974] would shoot a pigeon out the window of Parliament . . . Christine: "Yes he did" . . . and had an affair with Whetu Tirikatene-Sullivan [ONZ, b. 9 January 1932] who used to hide in the closet and wait for the cleaners to leave, and Tirikatene would bring the puha [watercress] and Norm would pull his gas cooker out from the top right-hand drawer and they would have pigeon and puha. Then big Norm would pull out a mattress from under his desk and they would shag."

Christine: "Ooh, I haven't heard that."

Author: "Norm would do anything to avoid going home."

Christine then started to speak about Martyn Finlay and his wife Peggy. "She was known as Peggy II, after his first wife Peggy I and didn't want to be known as Peggy II so she changed her name back. She was born Zilda Margaret, but always called Peggy, so now she is Zilda Finlay. Her mind's gone now. She's in a home" . . .

[p. 70] 12 September 2007: The Government announced the end of the Serious Fraud Office . . . because it was a fraud, on many levels. Chas Sturt was a teutonic Fijian and incestuous paedophile and was promoted to head of New Zealand's Serious Fraud Office. As this became public knowledge the credibility of the Serious Fraud Office vaporised.[20] Their history was equally vacuous.

The Serious Fraud Office was assisting in serious frauds and prone to blackmail by complicit silence. The Serious Fraud Office refused to uncover the government's serious frauds, much of which was sex with minors, including that of the Attorney-General reponsible for them.

I think people need to know that the government is not 'a government of the people, for the people', but a government for foreign ownership designed entirely to keep the people subjugated and ignorant. This includes all the government's support networks and includes 'literature'.

So who got rid of all the fun?"

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Drugs and Corruption in TVNZ', pp. 88–89:
"Paul [Holmes] worked enormous hours – one would say too many for any human to consistently do without the assistance of chemical support. He had his radio show Monday to Friday from 6 am to 8.30 am (1989–2007) and his Monday to Friday TV slot from 7–7.30 pm (1989–2004). This peaked for 15 years and drizzled for another two, and you have to ask yourself, how did he do it?

---

[20] I recorded an affidavit from Chas Sturt's daughter's boyfriend and it seems to be true.

It was under these circumstances – as a reforming alcoholic consistently falling off the wagon, as a methamphetamine user, as a bisexual and intermittent heterosexual, and a toady for the judiciary and politicians . . . Obviously Paul had received media tips from his bisexual paedophile friend Brian Edwards – Helen Clark's biographer. With a PhD in Franz Kafka, Edwards trained Helen Clark's toadies in all aspects of engaging the media.

As a result we have had at least two methamphetamine-riddled newsreaders (Paul Holmes and Darren McDonald) and a lesbian KGB prime minister for eight years, having never won an election on any issues that weren't first created for her . . . and a media that is a child sex abuse and child drug movement – with the Prime Minister married to the child sex abuser Peter Davis.

Paul Holmes has already earnt his pardon by covering for Helen Clark's husband's homosexual child sex abuse. This was first on TV and then in the Sunday papers. That Sunday night, 11 March 2007, they had dinner together in Greenhithe – Paul and Peter, two old Queens – so where was David?, where was Deborah?, and where was Helen? . . .

Even when this comes out, I doubt that Paul Holmes will be charged with supplying methamphetamine to a minor. I doubt that Bob Jones will be charged with receiving and suppling methamphetamine to the glitterati. I also doubt that the police and Serious Fraud Office will be charged with supplying methamphetamine to a nation. I also doubt that police spokesman Greg O'Connor will be charged for sourcing the drug pyramid.

What tends to happen in these situations is the status of the messenger is downgraded into something not worthy of reference. That's me . . . Since New Zealand is run by counter-intelligence and not by intelligence . . . I might as well name sex abusers amongst New Zealand's notorieti . . ." [See p. 43]

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Drugs and Corruption in TVNZ', p. 99:
"By 2003, feminists were on to it and wanted to name Paul Holmes 'The ideal New Zealand male' . . . At the same time, Paul was supplying methamphetamines to his stepdaughter Millie [14]. Paul was hardly "Father of the Year", but according to the best feminist principles, he was very good at directing his stepdaughter into prostitution – albeit sex.4.drugs."

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Drugs and Corruption in TVNZ', pp. 111–14:
". . . Paul Holmes would turn up to a house at the bottom of Remuera in his red Bentley. It wasn't hard to spot. It was the only one in the country. The guy would get into Paul's car, there would be some quick exchanges under the dash and the guy would get out again. This was done on a regular basis. It was six or seven years ago [circa 2000–01].

"Paul Holmes would also go to Takapuna, to the One Red Dog, actually to the bar next door, and go upstairs and have some coke with the owner. Paul's well known as a big coke head – especially in TV circles. In TVNZ his nickname is 'Grumpy'."

'Grumpy' is a perfect nickname for someone who is always coming down off drugs. When he's high on drugs you never see him – except once or twice on the Holmes show as the state TV broadcaster . . . When Paul Holmes turned up in court to support Millie, the CIB had a huge interest in him and wanted to interview him, but Prime Minister Helen Clark intervened and wouldn't let them. The CIB had been silenced about the government broadcaster and his methamphetamine use and supply to a teenager.

"Helen Clark's main concern at the moment is the Minister of Police Annette King whom she calls "P-G"[sic] – short for "Pig Dog" . . . pretty much everyone I spoke to said "Annette King is a right slut." I had published that Annette King/Pig Dog/P-G was trafficking heroin from Helen Clark's office to the police while she was Minister of Health, and was then promoted to Minister of Police very soon after. The person who promoted her was Helen Clark.[21]

Helen Clark, Annette King and Paul Holmes are all involved in Class A drug trafficking. As such, they will all cover for each other.

The CIB (Crime Investigation Bureau) wanted to get involved, but will no doubt be directed to spurious activities, like charging innocent people with crimes those above have committed. This includes all of Millie's friends and contacts, but not the Class A drug traffickers – the Prime Minister, the Health Minister (now Police Minister) and the state broadcaster.

Similar enquiries have terms of reference that are so weak, there is no way a forthright conclusion can be reached. Still, it's a way into politics – something which no one, and absolutely no one, has any faith in any more. You wonder why?

. . . what came before the Pig Dog?"

Answer: "The Tavistock St Petersburg trained prostitutes."

Question: "And what do the Tavistock St Petersburg trained prostitutes do now?"

Answer: "They run the country and rule over Parliament."

MICK P, Saturday 21 July 2007: "I just got this. Last night [20 July 2007] Paul Holmes was at a farewell dinner for a senior magistrate along with Peter Williams QC and his wife with the ever-changing name – Janine/Hine/Hinemoa Phillips/Williams or whatever other surname she uses. They were all dining together at a posh restaurant in Auckland's favourite dining suburb, Ponsonby. [My pick is Prego.]

"Paul Holmes, a former alcoholic [and supposed dry-drunk from one of Auckland's better Alcoholics Anonymous] got hopelessly pissed, as he does. He started cursing his former wife, Hine Elder [not present], for causing him so much trouble. Holmes' drunken rant confirms a lot of what you have been saying . . ."

Paul Holmes, Friday night, 20 July 2007: "This is what happens when you get tied up with a hopeless lesbian. There's nothing you can do to help them. She's just a filthy fucking lesbian bitch . . ."

MICK P: "All this was said in front of the retiring senior magistrate and a QC lawyer, as well as the other dining patrons. Both the judge and Peter Williams called the paramedics."

Private I: "This is typical of what people at this level do."

MICK P: "It was like Holmes was having Tourrette's. He was really quite disruptive to the entire party and the entire restaurant. The paramedics arrived and Williams and another manhandled Holmes into the back of Hine Phillip's 4WD and then sat in the back seat with their feet on Holmes while he lay on the floor. Then Hine Phillips drove them all to Holmes' place."

Author: "So much for the New Zealand Order of Merit."

MICK P: "At the dinner they were all concerned about the political interference that H1 and H2 [Helen Clark and Heather Simpson] were displaying. They are getting tough on P and had informed the judges that they want Millie Elder to get ten years. They want to set an example."

Author: "That's rare considering Helen Clark has been involved in trafficking ten kilograms of heroin into New Zealand and to the police back in 2005, via the then Minister of Health, Annette King . . .

---

[21] *Hitler Was A British Agent*, pp. 389–90; *How To Take Over The World*, pp. 245–46.

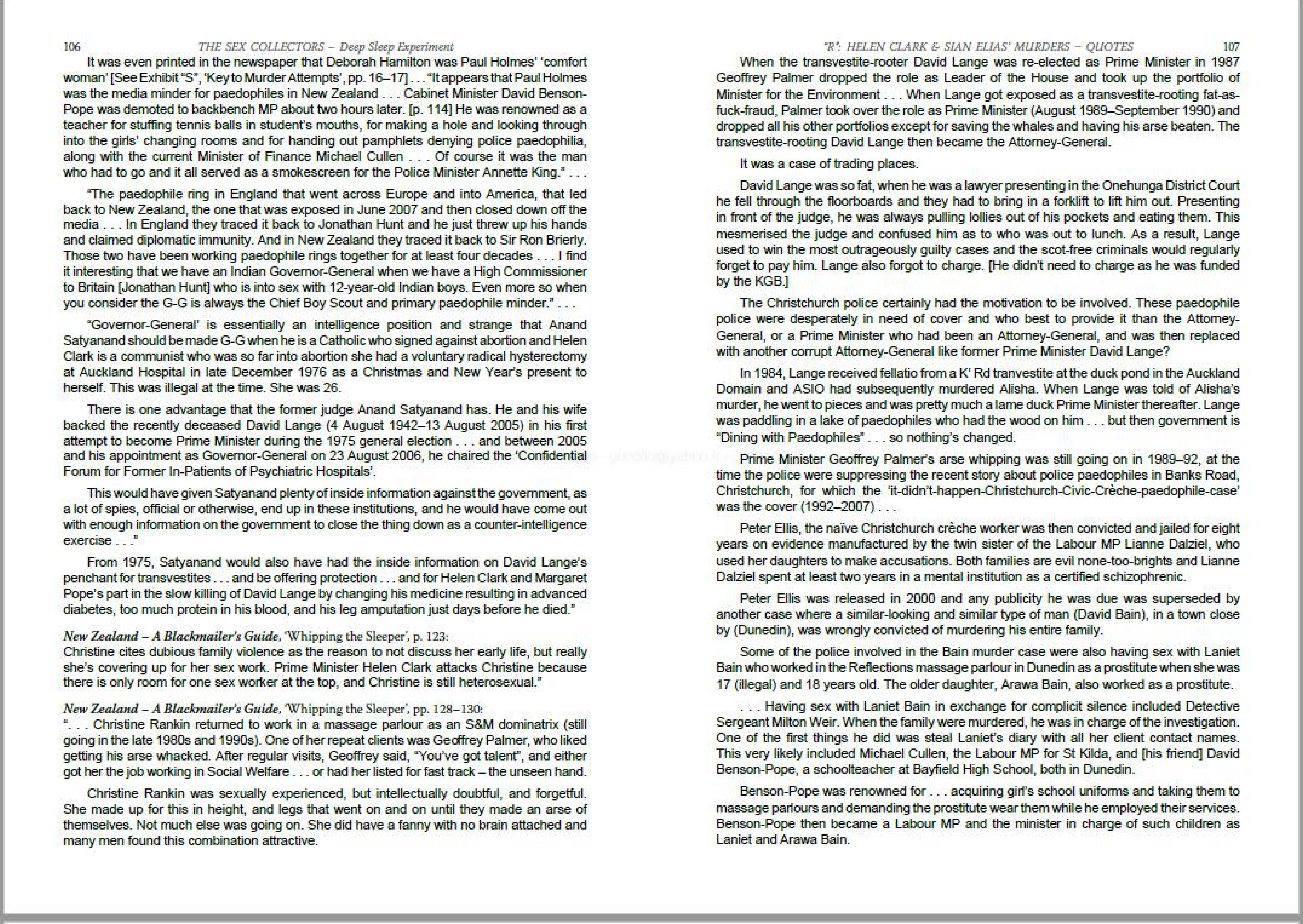

It was even printed in the newspaper that Deborah Hamilton was Paul Holmes' 'comfort woman' [See Exhibit "S", 'Key to Murder Attempts', pp. 16–17] . . . "It appears that Paul Holmes was the media minder for paedophiles in New Zealand . . . Cabinet Minister David Benson-Pope was demoted to backbench MP about two hours later. [p. 114] He was renowned as a teacher for stuffing tennis balls in student's mouths, for making a hole and looking through into the girls' changing rooms and for handing out pamphlets denying police paedophilia, along with the current Minister of Finance Michael Cullen . . . Of course it was the man who had to go and it all served as a smokescreen for the Police Minister Annette King." . . .

"The paedophile ring in England that went across Europe and into America, that led back to New Zealand, the one that was exposed in June 2007 and then closed down off the media . . . In England they traced it back to Jonathan Hunt and he just threw up his hands and claimed diplomatic immunity. And in New Zealand they traced it back to Sir Ron Brierly. Those two have been working paedophile rings together for at least four decades . . . I find it interesting that we have an Indian Governor-General when we have a High Commissioner to Britain [Jonathan Hunt] who is into sex with 12-year-old Indian boys. Even more so when you consider the G-G is always the Chief Boy Scout and primary paedophile minder." . . .

'Governor-General' is essentially an intelligence position and strange that Anand Satyanand should be made G-G when he is a Catholic who signed against abortion and Helen Clark is a communist who was so far into abortion she had a voluntary radical hysterectomy at Auckland Hospital in late December 1976 as a Christmas and New Year's present to herself. This was illegal at the time. She was 26.

There is one advantage that the former judge Anand Satyanand has. He and his wife backed the recently deceased David Lange (4 August 1942–13 August 2005) in his first attempt to become Prime Minister during the 1975 general election . . . and between 2005 and his appointment as Governor-General on 23 August 2006, he chaired the 'Confidential Forum for Former In-Patients of Psychiatric Hospitals'.

This would have given Satyanand plenty of inside information against the government, as a lot of spies, official or otherwise, end up in these institutions, and he would have come out with enough information on the government to close the thing down as a counter-intelligence exercise . . ."

From 1975, Satyanand would also have had the inside information on David Lange's penchant for transvestites . . . and be offering protection . . . and for Helen Clark and Margaret Pope's part in the slow killing of David Lange by changing his medicine resulting in advanced diabetes, too much protein in his blood, and his leg amputation just days before he died."

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Whipping the Sleeper', p. 123:
Christine cites dubious family violence as the reason to not discuss her early life, but really she's covering up for her sex work. Prime Minister Helen Clark attacks Christine because there is only room for one sex worker at the top, and Christine is still heterosexual."

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Whipping the Sleeper', pp. 128–130:
". . . Christine Rankin returned to work in a massage parlour as an S&M dominatrix (still going in the late 1980s and 1990s). One of her repeat clients was Geoffrey Palmer, who liked getting his arse whacked. After regular visits, Geoffrey said, "You've got talent", and either got her the job working in Social Welfare . . . or had her listed for fast track – the unseen hand.

Christine Rankin was sexually experienced, but intellectually doubtful, and forgetful. She made up for this in height, and legs that went on and on until they made an arse of themselves. Not much else was going on. She did have a fanny with no brain attached and many men found this combination attractive.

When the transvestite-rooter David Lange was re-elected as Prime Minister in 1987 Geoffrey Palmer dropped the role as Leader of the House and took up the portfolio of Minister for the Environment . . . When Lange got exposed as a transvestite-rooting fat-as-fuck-fraud, Palmer took over the role as Prime Minister (August 1989–September 1990) and dropped all his other portfolios except for saving the whales and having his arse beaten. The transvestite-rooting David Lange then became the Attorney-General.

It was a case of trading places.

David Lange was so fat, when he was a lawyer presenting in the Onehunga District Court he fell through the floorboards and they had to bring in a forklift to lift him out. Presenting in front of the judge, he was always pulling lollies out of his pockets and eating them. This mesmerised the judge and confused him as to who was out to lunch. As a result, Lange used to win the most outrageously guilty cases and the scot-free criminals would regularly forget to pay him. Lange also forgot to charge. [He didn't need to charge as he was funded by the KGB.]

The Christchurch police certainly had the motivation to be involved. These paedophile police were desperately in need of cover and who best to provide it than the Attorney-General, or a Prime Minister who had been an Attorney-General, and was then replaced with another corrupt Attorney-General like former Prime Minister David Lange?

In 1984, Lange received fellatio from a K' Rd tranvestite at the duck pond in the Auckland Domain and ASIO had subsequently murdered Alisha. When Lange was told of Alisha's murder, he went to pieces and was pretty much a lame duck Prime Minister thereafter. Lange was paddling in a lake of paedophiles who had the wood on him . . . but then government is "Dining with Paedophiles" . . . so nothing's changed.

Prime Minister Geoffrey Palmer's arse whipping was still going on in 1989–92, at the time the police were suppressing the recent story about police paedophiles in Banks Road, Christchurch, for which the 'it-didn't-happen-Christchurch-Civic-Crèche-paedophile-case' was the cover (1992–2007) . . .

Peter Ellis, the naïve Christchurch crèche worker was then convicted and jailed for eight years on evidence manufactured by the twin sister of the Labour MP Lianne Dalziel, who used her daughters to make accusations. Both families are evil none-too-brights and Lianne Dalziel spent at least two years in a mental institution as a certified schizophrenic.

Peter Ellis was released in 2000 and any publicity he was due was superseded by another case where a similar-looking and similar type of man (David Bain), in a town close by (Dunedin), was wrongly convicted of murdering his entire family.

Some of the police involved in the Bain murder case were also having sex with Laniet Bain who worked in the Reflections massage parlour in Dunedin as a prostitute when she was 17 (illegal) and 18 years old. The older daughter, Arawa Bain, also worked as a prostitute.

. . . Having sex with Laniet Bain in exchange for complicit silence included Detective Sergeant Milton Weir. When the family were murdered, he was in charge of the investigation. One of the first things he did was steal Laniet's diary with all her client contact names. This very likely included Michael Cullen, the Labour MP for St Kilda, and [his friend] David Benson-Pope, a schoolteacher at Bayfield High School, both in Dunedin.

Benson-Pope was renowned for . . . acquiring girl's school uniforms and taking them to massage parlours and demanding the prostitute wear them while he employed their services. Benson-Pope then became a Labour MP and the minister in charge of such children as Laniet and Arawa Bain.

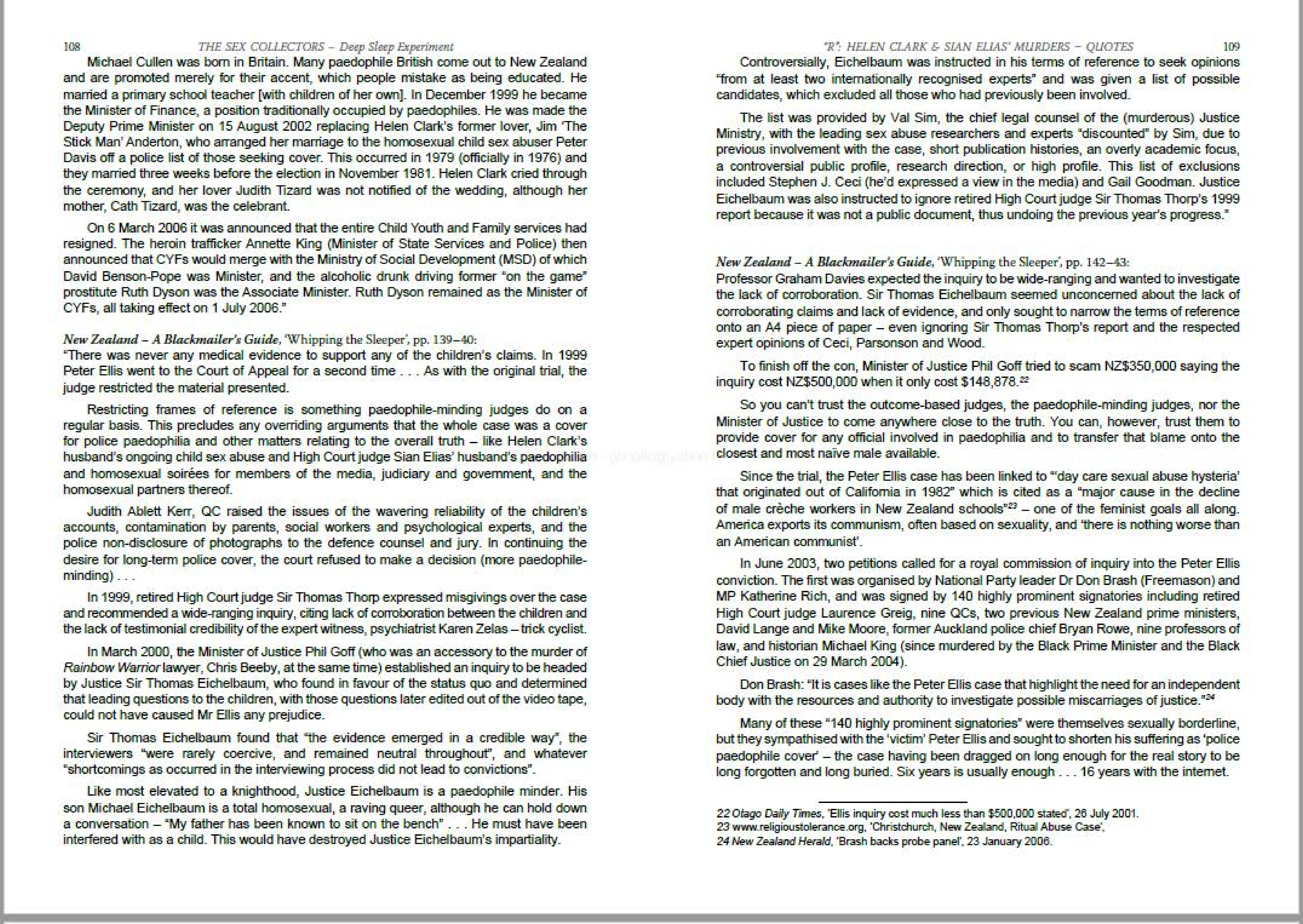

Michael Cullen was born in Britain. Many paedophile British come out to New Zealand and are promoted merely for their accent, which people mistake as being educated. He married a primary school teacher [with children of her own]. In December 1999 he became the Minister of Finance, a position traditionally occupied by paedophiles. He was made the Deputy Prime Minister on 15 August 2002 replacing Helen Clark's former lover, Jim 'The Stick Man' Anderton, who arranged her marriage to the homosexual child sex abuser Peter Davis off a police list of those seeking cover. This occurred in 1979 (officially in 1976) and they married three weeks before the election in November 1981. Helen Clark cried through the ceremony, and her lover Judith Tizard was not notified of the wedding, although her mother, Cath Tizard, was the celebrant.

On 6 March 2006 it was announced that the entire Child Youth and Family services had resigned. The heroin trafficker Annette King (Minister of State Services and Police) then announced that CYFs would merge with the Ministry of Social Development (MSD) of which David Benson-Pope was Minister, and the alcoholic drunk driving former "on the game" prostitute Ruth Dyson was the Associate Minister. Ruth Dyson remained as the Minister of CYFs, all taking effect on 1 July 2006."

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Whipping the Sleeper', pp. 139–40:
"There was never any medical evidence to support any of the children's claims. In 1999 Peter Ellis went to the Court of Appeal for a second time . . . As with the original trial, the judge restricted the material presented.

Restricting frames of reference is something paedophile-minding judges do on a regular basis. This precludes any overriding arguments that the whole case was a cover for police paedophilia and other matters relating to the overall truth – like Helen Clark's husband's ongoing child sex abuse and High Court judge Sian Elias' husband's paedophilia and homosexual soirées for members of the media, judiciary and government, and the homosexual partners thereof.

Judith Ablett Kerr, QC raised the issues of the wavering reliability of the children's accounts, contamination by parents, social workers and psychological experts, and the police non-disclosure of photographs to the defence counsel and jury. In continuing the desire for long-term police cover, the court refused to make a decision (more paedophile-minding) . . .

In 1999, retired High Court judge Sir Thomas Thorp expressed misgivings over the case and recommended a wide-ranging inquiry, citing lack of corroboration between the children and the lack of testimonial credibility of the expert witness, psychiatrist Karen Zelas – trick cyclist.

In March 2000, the Minister of Justice Phil Goff (who was an accessory to the murder of *Rainbow Warrior* lawyer, Chris Beeby, at the same time) established an inquiry to be headed by Justice Sir Thomas Eichelbaum, who found in favour of the status quo and determined that leading questions to the children, with those questions later edited out of the video tape, could not have caused Mr Ellis any prejudice.

Sir Thomas Eichelbaum found that "the evidence emerged in a credible way", the interviewers "were rarely coercive, and remained neutral throughout", and whatever "shortcomings as occurred in the interviewing process did not lead to convictions".

Like most elevated to a knighthood, Justice Eichelbaum is a paedophile minder. His son Michael Eichelbaum is a total homosexual, a raving queer, although he can hold down a conversation – "My father has been known to sit on the bench" . . . He must have been interfered with as a child. This would have destroyed Justice Eichelbaum's impartiality.

Controversially, Eichelbaum was instructed in his terms of reference to seek opinions "from at least two internationally recognised experts" and was given a list of possible candidates, which excluded all those who had previously been involved.

The list was provided by Val Sim, the chief legal counsel of the (murderous) Justice Ministry, with the leading sex abuse researchers and experts "discounted" by Sim, due to previous involvement with the case, short publication histories, an overly academic focus, a controversial public profile, research direction, or high profile. This list of exclusions included Stephen J. Ceci (he'd expressed a view in the media) and Gail Goodman. Justice Eichelbaum was also instructed to ignore retired High Court judge Sir Thomas Thorp's 1999 report because it was not a public document, thus undoing the previous year's progress."

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Whipping the Sleeper', pp. 142–43:
Professor Graham Davies expected the inquiry to be wide-ranging and wanted to investigate the lack of corroboration. Sir Thomas Eichelbaum seemed unconcerned about the lack of corroborating claims and lack of evidence, and only sought to narrow the terms of reference onto an A4 piece of paper – even ignoring Sir Thomas Thorp's report and the respected expert opinions of Ceci, Parsonson and Wood.

To finish off the con, Minister of Justice Phil Goff tried to scam NZ$350,000 saying the inquiry cost NZ$500,000 when it only cost $148,878.[22]

So you can't trust the outcome-based judges, the paedophile-minding judges, nor the Minister of Justice to come anywhere close to the truth. You can, however, trust them to provide cover for any official involved in paedophilia and to transfer that blame onto the closest and most naïve male available.

Since the trial, the Peter Ellis case has been linked to "'day care sexual abuse hysteria' that originated out of California in 1982" which is cited as a "major cause in the decline of male crèche workers in New Zealand schools"[23] – one of the feminist goals all along. America exports its communism, often based on sexuality, and 'there is nothing worse than an American communist'.

In June 2003, two petitions called for a royal commission of inquiry into the Peter Ellis conviction. The first was organised by National Party leader Dr Don Brash (Freemason) and MP Katherine Rich, and was signed by 140 highly prominent signatories including retired High Court judge Laurence Greig, nine QCs, two previous New Zealand prime ministers, David Lange and Mike Moore, former Auckland police chief Bryan Rowe, nine professors of law, and historian Michael King (since murdered by the Black Prime Minister and the Black Chief Justice on 29 March 2004).

Don Brash: "It is cases like the Peter Ellis case that highlight the need for an independent body with the resources and authority to investigate possible miscarriages of justice."[24]

Many of these "140 highly prominent signatories" were themselves sexually borderline, but they sympathised with the 'victim' Peter Ellis and sought to shorten his suffering as 'police paedophile cover' – the case having been dragged on long enough for the real story to be long forgotten and long buried. Six years is usually enough . . . 16 years with the internet.

---

[22] *Otago Daily Times*, 'Ellis inquiry cost much less than $500,000 stated', 26 July 2001.
[23] www.religioustolerance.org, 'Christchurch, New Zealand, Ritual Abuse Case',
[24] *New Zealand Herald*, 'Brash backs probe panel', 23 January 2006.

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Whipping the Sleeper', pp. 146:

"The jury was not told the father Robin Bain was "quite seriously disturbed", as the Taieri Beach School principal had beaten his students more than the Labour MP David Benson-Pope, and had published brutal and sadistic children's stories in the school newsletter, one involving the serial murder of family members. The jury were also not told that Robin Bain had been having sex with his daughters (Laniet, murdered aged 18, and Arawa, murdered aged 19), that the Dunedin police were having sex with Laniet in a brothel and Arawa was also a working girl . . . nor were the jury told that Robin Bain was clinically depressed, and part of the craft, a fellow Freemason.

The Freemasons control the police and Freemasons are an incestuous child sex abuse movement. Any Freemason with the above credentials of incest, child sex abuse and/or paedophilia is protected, even after death."

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Whipping the Sleeper', pp. 151–53:

"B-B [John Banks] was sentenced, secretly, to the withering scorn of several senior police mafioso, and sent to Coventry. Prime Minister Bolger added to this ignominy by transferring the portfolios of B-B and leaving him with the 'go nowhere' portfolio of Tourism.

"Inspector Clint Rickards, when told about this, said 'Ooough! He was the best minister the police ever had', and this was a comment straight from the heart."

Rickards was a Mongrel Mob gang member in Hawke's Bay. The police used him to dob in his fellow gang members for 18 months on full police pay. He then trained at Trentham joining the police in 1979. Rickards began serial raping in 1983 and then became New Zealand's most prolific rapist.

Operation Austin: "Clint Rickards was then promoted to Assistant Police Commissioner and Auckland City Commander and then charged with multiple cases of rape, of which there are 34 separate complaints, which will be converted into charges whenever the police need cover for crimes more serious than rape. Raping in a pack since 1983, Rickards was outed as a rapist publicly on 31 January 2004. Two of his rape buddies were convicted and his minder, John Dewar, head of Rotorua's CIB, was convicted on four counts of obstructing justice during 1993–95. Clint Rickards remains a free man except in the eyes of the public and privately, the police . . . and privately, any lawyer with a conscience. He is a Maori and his freedom is being used to secure the Maori vote."

The scorn did not phase B-B one iota and in less time than it takes a rat to burn a cat, he had reinvented himself as the best Minister of Tourism anyone had ever seen. He then went to Russia and adopted three children. He told the KGB who assisted him with the adoption, that A: He was 'still the Minister of Police', and B: He 'required a nuclear family that had not been in foster care long, and wanted to remain together'.

This aroused the suspicion of my chief who told me that the probability was high that B-B was still a paedophile. He [B-B] married a woman who does not have sex with men . . . they sleep in separate beds . . . B-B did have a past as a CIA informer . . .

The New Zealand police have a huge history of not solving crime, so the public have to do it for them. The police routinely provide cover for crimes the police commit, or the Freemasons commit. The Freemasons control the police from within the police force and all high-ranking staff in the police are either Freemasons, Catholics or paedophile minders. The only exception is when some drug dealers make it through to the higher ranks, but they have to be hard drugs like methamphetamine or heroin. Then they become the police spokesman. Oh, I'm sorry, they're Catholic as well.

When members of the public had finally solved the long-standing Crewe murders and presented the information to Minister of Police George Hawkins, he gave it to his private secretary Gerry Cunneen, who was most known for his drunkenness.

In his drunken appraisal, secretary to the Minister of Police Gerry Cunneen concluded: ". . . there was not enough hard evidence to bring a conclusion . . .", and Police Minister George Hawkins added: "Mr Cunneen reviewed the information, but does not believe there was enough substance to the information to shed new light on the murders."

Internal Affairs: "Gerry Cunneen, renowned for his alcoholism, was so dumb he could review a file, like the Citibank's murder of Paul White by Mr Panapa and Kimball Johnson, and declare that the file did not shed any light on the crime at all. Cunneen wouldn't even acknowledge that the murder was a murder and not an accident. Gerry Cunneen is a bagman for crimes by officials, including murder."

Freemasonry: "While a Constable, Gerry Cunneen was in charge of taking all the bribes – it was always Constable Cunneen that you went to if you didn't want the charges pressed, or were in need of cover."

Superintendent Gerry Cunneen is most known for his breakfast club at Bellamy's [Parliament's restaurant] and spending the entire day working drunk. This even became an issue for Parliament to address under 'Prosecution of Member of Parliament, Minister's Actions'. Here, on 13 May 2004, MP Gerry Brownlee put the question to Parliament: Does the Minister accept that the serious questions raised by papers released yesterday, coupled with the widespread knowledge that he, Inspector Marty Grenfell, and the Minister's police adviser, former Superintendent Gerry Cunneen, had their own little Bellamy's breakfast club . . .'".

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Whipping the Sleeper', pp. 161–73:

Helen Clark was providing the KGB's Vladimir Putin with the sexual history of New Zealand MPs and wannabe MPs, thus giving Russia complete control of the New Zealand government. This included David Lange who was a KGB asset from 1971. The method was so widely known that whatever country David Lange went to there would be a transvestite waiting outside his hotel entrance for him to invite up. This was filmed (as Lange always got a designated room), and this footage was used so that Lange would provide whatever that country wanted. This was the case outside a Darlinghurst Hotel. We don't know of the other cases, or whether Lange wised up to it.

In this way the Labour Prime Minister David Lange set about destroying New Zealand, or at least it was destroyed under his name . . .

Sian Elias is now the Chief Justice and has been the Acting Governor-General from time to time. Her father was a Jewish doctor who sexually interfered with his patients, especially Polynesian females, and would shag them on his doctor's table. He died mid-2007. There were even enquiries about Dr Elias's sex with patients.

Dr Elias would then sign for the complying Polynesian mother's government grants with whatever number of children the Polynesian mothers presented on the day. This has now become de rigueur and Maori and Polynesians have houses that are holding pens for children to be taken to Social Welfare for grants. The children are paid to keep quiet, dress differently, be picked up and returned on the same day, on following days if required, and stay overnight as required. Some of these children are also used by bribing police for paedophilia . . . as required.

From this rotten moral background Sian Elias married New Zealand's richest man, Hugh Fletcher (born, not made). Hugh was the third generation. As the adage goes, 'the grandfather makes it, the father sustains it and the grandson destroys it'. His father Sir James Fletcher died on 29 August 2007.

Hugh was no prize – a bisexual who runs a homosexual sex group for members of the judiciary, government and media and the partners thereof. His speciality is all-male soirées with 14- 18-year-old Maori and Polynesian boys dancing naked and the group members

making personal offers afterwards – sex with minors in exchange for money. This resulted in the murder of soirée member TV presenter David McNee and was covered up by the KGB Prime Minister Helen Clark and Hugh Fletcher's clown-faced wife, the Black Chief Justice, Sian Elias.

Helen Clark is a lesbian married to a homosexual child sex abuser, who had attended Hugh Fletcher's homosexual group. Sian Elias is a thief, a slapper, a Sayanim, a contract killer and a Mossad agent. The Mossad is the foreign intelligence of Israel – the equivalent of MI6 – military intelligence that specialises in death and control through sex and murder compliance.

In 1989 Sian Elias stole over NZ$500 million off her husband. Much of this money was due to the Chinese and the Chinese Government threatened to declare war on New Zealand. Israel noted the transaction and had intervened. A deal was set. Chinese would be allowed to immigrate into New Zealand en masse. (Sian Elias – 'touched by an Asian'.)

Mass Asian immigration began in 1995 and was known as "the Asian Invasion" and even written up on the cover of *Metro* magazine as such. China increased the bargain and 45% of Chinese immigrants were military trained, many of them arrived with government money to invest, all of the students were spies, and any Chinese spy that defected would be returned to China to be turned into organ transplants. All of this came to pass . . . and continue.

In late December 2006 a Chinese spy defected in New Zealand and gave the names of 2000 Chinese spies living in New Zealand. Most were not students, but government investors. Instead of giving the defector 'refugee status', Helen Clark had him jailed in the Green Room at Mt Eden Prison. This went on for three days without food, water or toilet breaks (New Year's Day 2007). The room has a padded floor and walls, with nowhere to piss, shit, or get a drink. It was torture by a supposedly Western Prime Minister.

The Chinese are arriving into New Zealand now with such large sums of Chinese government money they are in need of dairy managers to manage the dairy farms they are buying. The average milk payout for these dairy farms is NZ$675,000 per annum (June 2007). The Chinese immigrants are not even required to speak English.

Israel's part in the bargain, for brokering the agreement, was that New Zealand would be disarmed so that Israel could do whatever it wanted. It was the same deal for Australia.

So, in 1990, Margaret Wilson (now Parliament's Speaker) became the founding dean of Waikato University's Law School, the first law school to be established in New Zealand in over 75 years.[25] She then went about creating HAIPP – the 'Hamilton Abuse Intervention Pilot Project'

---

[25] *University of Waikato News*, 5 January 2004. Margaret Wilson went on to accept the self-nomination of lawyers as judges, including Hamilton lawyer, paedophile enabler, and judicial drug minder Paul Geoghegan as a Family Court judge. Geoghegan sits in Rotorua [and Taupo] where the Family Court is in such a shambles, both mothers and fathers do everything they can to have their cases heard outside Rotorua. Paul Geoghegan attacked fathers who had exposed his 'career twin', Grant Aislabie, as a drug user. Grant Aislabie was the Principal Disputes Tribunal Referee, officially from June 1999–January 2005; however, he appears to have been the Head of the Disputes Tribunal from at least January 1994 when he was exposed as a drug user during a hearing – by the author. It was coke and ecstasy, 1982–87.

Aislabie is renowned for his mental breakdowns and only getting seven votes in the Tauranga mayoralty race. Even his wife Jill didn't vote for him. You need over 20,000 votes to win. Aislabie was valued by the occult as he was born New Zealand's hairiest baby and his mother wanted to kill him. When I asked her about this at a party at Aislabie's home on 4th Ave in Tauranga in 1980, she said nonchalantly: "I contemplated smothering him with a pillow".

Things won't be improving as the KGB's Margaret Wilson has appointed Professor Spiller as Aislabie's replacement. Spiller taught at the faux Waikato Law School. Any graduate of the Waikato Law School should be treated as a Tavistock graduate.

in 1994. This passed into law in 1996 as "the Protection Order" and meant that any female who accused any male of anything, resulted in the male losing their firearms licence. About 7000 men got protection orders each year and within 10 years the country had been disarmed.

Along with this, 98% of the 10,000 fathers divorcing lost access to their 18,000 children and any thoughts of patriotism went out the window.

It was also a "paedophile's paradise" as the primary requirement of paedophiles is that the biological father is removed. With 18,000 newly fatherless children to access each year, this suited the paedophiles:

Jonathan Hunt (Labour MP, Speaker of Parliament, High Commissioner to Britain);

Brian Edwards (Helen Clark's biographer and media consultant to the Labour Party);

Hugh Fletcher (married to the Black Chief Justice, runs homosexual child sex soirées and is Chancellor of the University of Auckland);

Sir Roger Douglas (Labour MP, Minister of Broadcasting, 1972–75 and Minister of Finance, 1984–87);

Sir Ron Brierly (paedophile schemer in partnership with Jonathan Hunt for four decades, they invested in a cricket orphanage in Goa, India);

Peter Shaw (child sex abuser and art curator for Fletchers, married to judge Coral Shaw);

Aussie Malcolm (National MP, convicted paedophile in Gladstone, Australia, married to a CYFs foster care manager [Astrid Malcolm], accused of murdering her and making it look like a drowning accident);[26]

Chris Carter (Labour MP, two complaints of child sex abuse from former male students, which the police refused to convert into charges);

Karen Sewell (Green Bay College teacher who sexually abused at least four girls of 14 and was then promoted by PM Helen Clark to Chief Executive and Secretary for Education, to re-engineer the education system into the much criticised and soon to be abolished NCEA);

Cath Tizard (got her 14-year-old daughter Judith Tizard to have sex with the 35-year-old Labour MP Mat Rata at their Kuaotunu bach);

David Lange (who dedicated his life to spending every opportune moment with transvestites);

and Prime Minister **Helen Clark**, married to a child sex abuser [**Peter Davis**] . . . she will go down in history as New Zealand's biggest ever promoter of paedophiles.

Sian Elias's part in the 'Paedophile's Paradise' bargain was that the Mossad would do any murders she wanted and Sian would be made the Chief Justice and would be allowed to get away with murder (hence the 'Black Chief Justice'), the theft of huge amounts of land, no building consents required, and her husband would not be charged for his paedophilia.

In order to embarrass anyone out of doing this, Hugh Fletcher was made Chancellor of the University of Auckland and then employed the homosexual Peter Davis as a professor, but only after he was repeatedly placed under house arrest by the Minister of Security and Intelligence (SIS) – aka Prime Minister Helen Clark, in a cover marriage to the one and same child sex abuser Peter Davis.

Doctors who were taught at Auckland's medical school by Professor Peter Davis simply hated the man . . . They hated being taught by a child sex abuser.

---

[26] My then girlfriend debriefed Aussie Malcolm during his grieving.

When Helen Clark was having her 'Night of the Long Knives' and wanted to kill all those who knew of her sexuality, her prostitution in St Petersburg and her gang bangs at Mary and Gary Taylor's house at Bethells Beach (in and around 1982), she put out a contract on Sir Peter Elworthy, Michael King, Sharon Crosby and Alison Holst.

All four were in a primal scream workshop run by Bert Potter in Wellington in 1974 and were privy to the sexual secrets of Helen Clark and Peter Davis etc. (It was actually Peter's brother David who attended. He was an ex-diplomat to India – so it was the frighteners.)

Paedophiles always get the latest psychological methods and Bert Potter was no exception. Being close to the experimental sex game, he was fluent, if not an expert, in New Zealand's sex history, which included many prominent players. [See Exhibit "T", 'The Sex Collectors']

I heard about this [the murders] in October 2003 while waiting for my cup of tea. When no one picked these up, Sian Elias had her hand raised by the Mossad who eagerly carried out the murders for her, male only.

The same crowd tried to kill me in April and August 2002 and May 2004, but I told them I wasn't available. Their names are Zev William Barkan, Uriel Zoshe Kelman, Eli Cara, an Auckland University lecturer, and a Mossad agent living on Auckland's Waiheke Island called Yaron, a former Israeli tank commander who got stuck in the mud outside my place while doing reconnaissance. The place has since burnt down.

Zev William Barkan ran a studio making snuff and porno movies on the Mekong River at Pen Yau in Cambodia. Here they were also arranging car accidents, and fiddling with death certificates and passports. Barkan (aka Zev Bruckstein) moved from simple snuff movies to filming the suicides of vagrants and Russian roulette.

Barkan was in New Zealand 3–20 March 2004 and travels as a Canadian under the name Kevin Hunter.

The two Israeli agents caught were Uriel Kelman and Eli Cara. They pleaded guilty to the passport frauds, were charged NZ$50,000 each (to be paid to charity) and sentenced to six months in prison. Helen Clark bowed to pressure and let them out after ten weeks. The fourth person involved was a lecturer at Auckland University where Sian Elias's husband Hugh Fletcher was made Chancellor on 18 October 2004, just months after the murders and in the middle of the (complete lack of) investigation.

Hugh Fletcher replaced the enormously popular John Graham (1999–2004) after *North & South* magazine named Graham 'New Zealander of the Year' (1999) and described him as 'a man who sets standards'. Hugh Fletcher was to be the exact opposite.

The University of Auckland, 'University of Auckland Council elects new Chancellor', 20 October 2004. The Acting Vice-Chancellor was Professor Raewyn Dalziel who broke up the marriage of History Professor Keith Sinclair. She and her non-relative, Lianne Dalziel, of the paedophile-minding family, belong to 'The New Horizons for Women Trust' 250 List along with Hugh's brother's wife, ex-Auckland Mayor Christine Fletcher, and the murdering Helen Clark and Sian Elias. Patrons include the child sex abuser and schizophrenic ex-Auckland Mayor and G-G Cath Tizard, and NZ's most corrupt judge and G-G Silvia Cartwright . . . The Auckland University Council also elected Jenny Gibbs as the new Pro-Chancellor. "Mrs Gibbs is a prominent art collector and patron, who founded Auckland City's New Gallery, and has had a leading role in supporting the Auckland Art Gallery, and the Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa" – as well as having a McCahon stolen to order, then funding the painting's return in exchange for a dameship, while bribing her husband.

After the sentencing, New Zealand Prime Minister Helen Clark said there were very strong reasons to believe that the two Israelis convicted on charges relating to a fraudulent attempt to obtain a New Zealand passport were acting on behalf of Israel's intelligence services.[27] She should know, she let them into the country, via her murder compliance agent, Sian Elias – the Black Chief Justice.

Prime Minister Helen Clark: "New Zealand condemns without reservation these actions . . . the breach of New Zealand laws and sovereignty by agents of the Israeli government has seriously strained our relationship with Israel." Helen Clark is deeply involved in her own cover – covering her murdering arse. To Helen Clark, public protest and public denial are the most cleansing form of cover.

"Police found that Kelman, Cara and another two individuals had been operating in Auckland since November 2003. [Sian Elias picked up the contract in October 2003 and moved fast.] Cara had travelled in and out of New Zealand 24 times since October 2000." Eli Cara was organising the group and had picked up Zev Barkan for his flair for murder.

As a result of this, Helen Clark and Sian Elias stopped speaking to each other – murders shared will do this, especially when they are keeping up a purist front – so their husbands made up for it with closer ties. Sian's husband employed Helen's husband as a university professor and they kept on looking at young boys' arses together.

. . . the Black Chief Justice Sian Elias has given up the ghost screwing her chauffeur in the back of the limousine outside official functions. She sits on top and sings. The chauffeur is from West Auckland and picks her up from the Auckland Domestic Airport every Friday night around 6 pm. As they exit the airport, she grabs his arse . . .

So Geoffrey Palmer, it is now your turn to make academic sense of this and make an academic ruling which satisfies natural justice. I would suggest the removal of Sian Elias as Chief Justice and the removal of Helen Clark as Prime Minister. I also suggest that both be charged with plotting to kill, accessory to murder, financing murder and treason.

I would appreciate your reply in a manner that is to the point and did not involve putting the nation to sleep. Once you have completed this task, I request that you retire from public office and any advisory position, to be flogged publicly. That should be sufficient compensation.

. . . then there is the New Zealand judiciary working for the American Military Industrial Complex which in turn works for Israel. It goes along these lines. All New Zealand lawyers sworn to the Bar are swearing to the International Bar Association, which is a subset of the American Bar Association, which is controlled by the US Military Industrial Complex, which is controlled by Israel, not excluding the United States long-time real el presidente, dictator Henry Kissinger.

So the reason we have a Jewish Chief Justice is . . . The Jewess Sian Elias founded New Zealand's Supreme Court in 2004 with the KGB agent Margaret Wilson as the official on-the-day ceremonial challenger. On the day, and well before and after, both were having an affair with the rape accused judge Anthony Christiansen.[28] Both denied it, making them liars, and liars of us all. Now all court decisions in every court are in favour of the liar, the bisexual, the homosexual, and the sex offender, with all Supreme Court decisions made in Israel.

---

[27] *Scoop*, 'NGOs Claim Wanted Israeli Agent Barkan In North Korea', State Of It, Selwyn Manning, Scoop Co-Editor, 19 July 2004.

[28] Disgraced High Court judge Anthony Christiansen of Christchurch remained on full pay but with restricted duties, until he was selected to sit in August 2007 on the 'army bridge collapse' that resulted in the death of a beekeeper. Don't expect any decision other than one that supports the government and not the citizen, deceased or otherwise. When it comes down to the wire, the feminist judiciary selects its male judges for the size and availability of their cocks. They even have to drop their trousers. When this is filmed, their positions are secure.

New Zealand's Supreme Court Act was passed by Parliament on 15 October 2003 [two days after Sian Elais have picked up the murder contracts]. The Court formally began on 1 January 2004, so the new judges could get paid, and first sat on 1 July 2004, giving them six months' free salary.

The Supreme Court replaced appeals to London's Privy Council. The Supreme Court is to get a new $67 million home complete with antenna dome from where all decisions will be made in Israel. Chief Justice Sir Thomas Eichelbaum who is so wrong it warrants a permanent signpost, is a relieving judge to replace a sick judge, or sit on substantive appeals.

“There is no automatic right of appeal to the Supreme Court of New Zealand and you first have to apply for leave to appeal with the overarching principle that 'it must be in the interests of justice for the Court to hear the appeal'. This can be heard orally or by writing in one's absence . . . employment, criminal and family law can be heard by the Supreme Court” – but would this include criminal murders and paedophilia by the Supreme Court justices and their spouses?

Wikipedia: “The legal profession in general were opposed to the creation of the new court, and members were generally concerned that such an important legal change was forced through in the face of heated opposition.”

And on the occult conspiracy front . . . Helen Clark presented her 'Night of the Long Knives' to all murderers. No one picked them up until Chief Justice Sian Elias on 13 October 2003. She then employed known murderers in the Mossad who arrived in November 2003. In exchange Helen Clark pushed through the Supreme Court Act on 15 October 2003 whereby Sian Elias became the Chief Justice of the Supreme Court on 1 January 2004. [The inaugural judges Andrew Tipping, Peter Blanchard, Thomas Gault, and Sir Kenneth Keith,[29] then worked in fear of their boss. The validity of this was quickly supported by] the murder of Sir Peter Elworthy 12 days later on 13 January 2004, quickly followed by the burning to death of historian Michael King on 29 March 2004. Thus began the occult tradition of the New Zealand Supreme Court.

Geoffrey Palmer, could your extensive put-adults-to-sleep books have achieved enough disinterest in the law to make this possible? Are you, Geoffrey Palmer, an accomplice to these events? Has your arse-whipping by Christine Rankin née Parker made you silent on all important matters and you charge the government NZ$10 million per annum, when in fact, all you do is save an Alaskan whale?

Lawyer, lawyer,
liar liar,
liar liar,
Hell for hire.

Have you, Geoffrey Palmer, Chief Justice Sian Elias, former Attorney-General Margaret Wilson and Chief Justice Sir Thomas Eichelbaum turned New Zealand into Hell?

I say you have.

You have been hiding the agenda of New Zealand by confusing and obfuscating all significant material matters.

As accomplices to paedophilia and murder you have made New Zealand a 'murderer's paradise' and a 'paedophile movement fronting as a country'. You have made the judiciary an occult mafia.

Could it have been any different with your involvement?

The real name of New Zealand is 'New Spain' and has been since 19 May 1950. The term 'New Spain' has all the clues for the agenda of New Zealand, and what it is to become.

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'The Battle of Nelson Crescent', pp. 177–80:
Jocelyn Counsell got the grant for child ritual murder. That is, to study it, believe it, and make others believe it. She is also a nymphomaniac with a history of mental illness and is one of those responsible for getting Peter Ellis convicted. She received $100,000 of taxpayers' money to investigate child occult murders and found nothing, but rooted everyone.

She used to set up chairs in her laundry, supply beer, then stick a brick under her washing machine. Once the guests were seated, she'd strip naked, turn on the washing machine, place her crutch on the corner and have an orgasm with her invited guests watching and drinking the beer she had supplied.

Jocelyn Counsell was a genuine nymphomaniac. Her husband had been killed in a car accident and she was under suspicion, especially after her interview was recorded audially. There were all sorts of stories about cut break linings, but since the police favour genuine nymphomaniacs, and treat such return favours as R&D, Research and Development, any investigation was squashed . . .

That Jocelyn Counsell had had at least two stops at the Porirua mental institution beforehand did not sway this police bias. She then became a lesbian and was living in an old old villa on the west side of Nelson Crescent, close to the city, between McLean Park and the railway line, then there's the sea.

She became involved with the lesbian Carol Mouritsen who had a panelbeating business and only repairs wimen's cars. She still has the panelbeating-mechanics business. The lesbian Sally Farmer was also involved and Jocelyn was dating them both at some point in time.”

At that time, in the mid-1980s, Jocelyn's place on Nelson Crescent was the place to be, and the place not to be seen. Often visitors were instructed to park their cars around the corner.

Jocelyn was living with Sally Farmer at the time and Jocelyn's son was going to high school. Troy wagged one day and spent it in bed with Sally Farmer who became pregnant to him. When Jocelyn came home she found her lover in bed with her 16-year-old son and all hell broke loose.

A huge fracas broke out. They were throwing knives and tomahawks at each other, then there was silence and guns went off. Lesbian arguments and lesbian murders are the most violent and the police thought it was a gang battle so they sent all their police cars and dog handlers, closed off the street and named it the 'Battle of Nelson Crescent'. They never revealed to the public that it was a 'lesbian domestic' . . . Even the Fire Brigade were out with their hoses.

And even the press thought it was a gang battle. The local police stayed very close-lipped about it and State Housing were informed to tell their tenants that they would throw anyone out who spoke about it, which they did. This is routine for State Housing.

In her interview there was something wrong with the woman. Something was left out in the recipe that made the sponge cake that was Jocelyn. You knew she was going to do something wrong and that was Peter Ellis. She'd do anything to please if it meant gaining applause and getting into the limelight. The police knew they could take her down to the

---

[29] Sir Kenneth Keith claimed the credit for the nuclear free policy but all the preliminary work was done by diplomat Chris Beeby who had an excellent juristists mind. Under these false pretences, Keith was made a Supreme Court judge by the Mossad's Sian Elais. The Mossad primarily values those who lie the best.

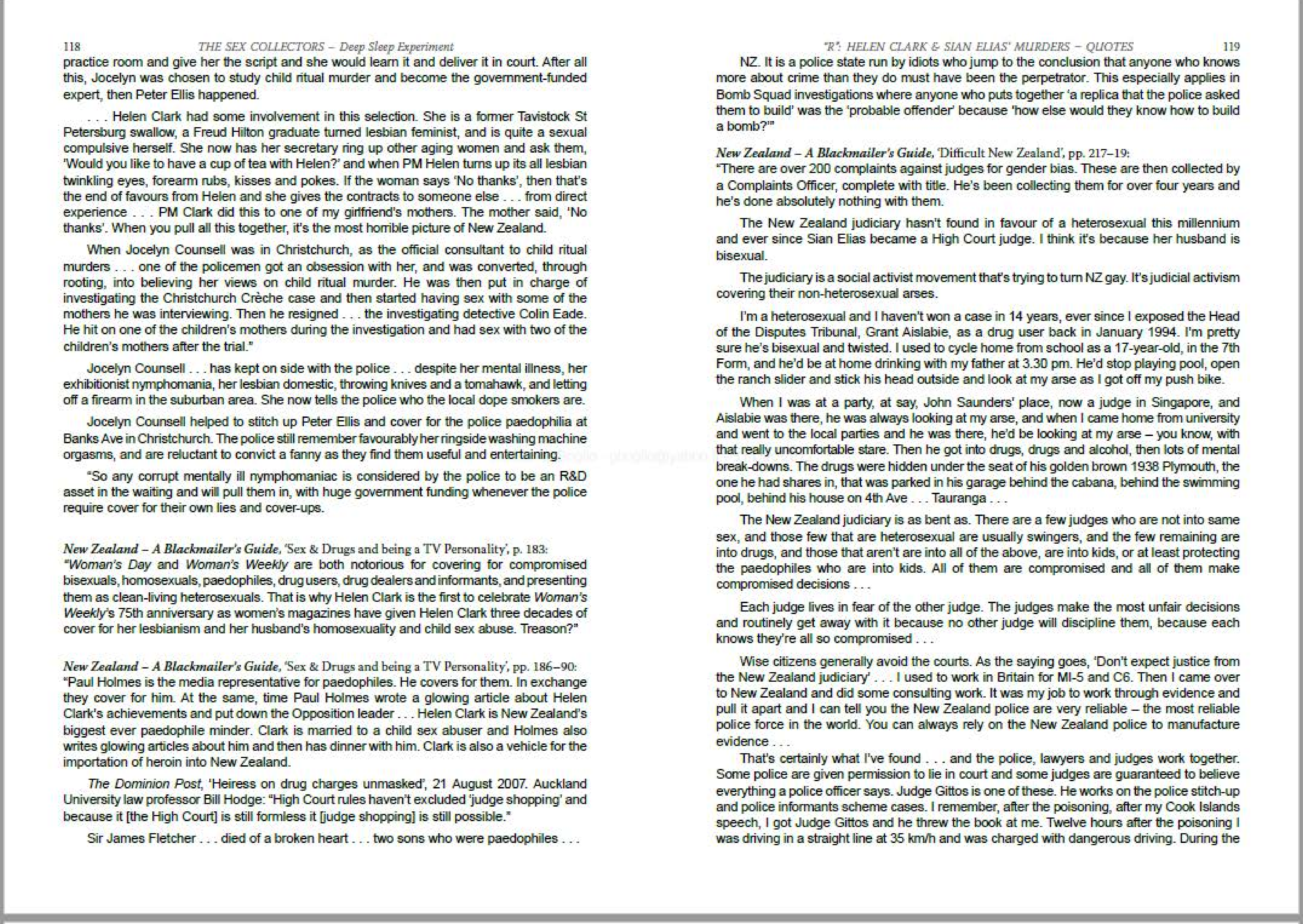

practice room and give her the script and she would learn it and deliver it in court. After all this, Jocelyn was chosen to study child ritual murder and become the government-funded expert, then Peter Ellis happened.

. . . Helen Clark had some involvement in this selection. She is a former Tavistock St Petersburg swallow, a Freud Hilton graduate turned lesbian feminist, and is quite a sexual compulsive herself. She now has her secretary ring up other aging women and ask them, 'Would you like to have a cup of tea with Helen?' and when PM Helen turns up its all lesbian twinkling eyes, forearm rubs, kisses and pokes. If the woman says 'No thanks', then that's the end of favours from Helen and she gives the contracts to someone else . . . from direct experience . . . PM Clark did this to one of my girlfriend's mothers. The mother said, 'No thanks'. When you pull all this together, it's the most horrible picture of New Zealand.

When Jocelyn Counsell was in Christchurch, as the official consultant to child ritual murders . . . one of the policemen got an obsession with her, and was converted, through rooting, into believing her views on child ritual murder. He was then put in charge of investigating the Christchurch Crèche case and then started having sex with some of the mothers he was interviewing. Then he resigned . . . the investigating detective Colin Eade. He hit on one of the children's mothers during the investigation and had sex with two of the children's mothers after the trial."

Jocelyn Counsell . . . has kept on side with the police . . . despite her mental illness, her exhibitionist nymphomania, her lesbian domestic, throwing knives and a tomahawk, and letting off a firearm in the suburban area. She now tells the police who the local dope smokers are.

Jocelyn Counsell helped to stitch up Peter Ellis and cover for the police paedophilia at Banks Ave in Christchurch. The police still remember favourably her ringside washing machine orgasms, and are reluctant to convict a fanny as they find them useful and entertaining.

"So any corrupt mentally ill nymphomaniac is considered by the police to be an R&D asset in the waiting and will pull them in, with huge government funding whenever the police require cover for their own lies and cover-ups.

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Sex & Drugs and being a TV Personality', p. 183:
"*Woman's Day* and *Woman's Weekly* are both notorious for covering for compromised bisexuals, homosexuals, paedophiles, drug users, drug dealers and informants, and presenting them as clean-living heterosexuals. That is why Helen Clark is the first to celebrate *Woman's Weekly*'s 75th anniversary as women's magazines have given Helen Clark three decades of cover for her lesbianism and her husband's homosexuality and child sex abuse. Treason?"

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Sex & Drugs and being a TV Personality', pp. 186–90:
"Paul Holmes is the media representative for paedophiles. He covers for them. In exchange they cover for him. At the same, time Paul Holmes wrote a glowing article about Helen Clark's achievements and put down the Opposition leader . . . Helen Clark is New Zealand's biggest ever paedophile minder. Clark is married to a child sex abuser and Holmes also writes glowing articles about him and then has dinner with him. Clark is also a vehicle for the importation of heroin into New Zealand.

The Dominion Post, 'Heiress on drug charges unmasked', 21 August 2007. Auckland University law professor Bill Hodge: "High Court rules haven't excluded 'judge shopping' and because it [the High Court] is still formless it [judge shopping] is still possible."

Sir James Fletcher . . . died of a broken heart . . . two sons who were paedophiles . . .

NZ. It is a police state run by idiots who jump to the conclusion that anyone who knows more about crime than they do must have been the perpetrator. This especially applies in Bomb Squad investigations where anyone who puts together 'a replica that the police asked them to build' was the 'probable offender' because 'how else would they know how to build a bomb?'"

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Difficult New Zealand', pp. 217–19:
"There are over 200 complaints against judges for gender bias. These are then collected by a Complaints Officer, complete with title. He's been collecting them for over four years and he's done absolutely nothing with them.

The New Zealand judiciary hasn't found in favour of a heterosexual this millennium and ever since Sian Elias became a High Court judge. I think it's because her husband is bisexual.

The judiciary is a social activist movement that's trying to turn NZ gay. It's judicial activism covering their non-heterosexual arses.

I'm a heterosexual and I haven't won a case in 14 years, ever since I exposed the Head of the Disputes Tribunal, Grant Aislabie, as a drug user back in January 1994. I'm pretty sure he's bisexual and twisted. I used to cycle home from school as a 17-year-old, in the 7th Form, and he'd be at home drinking with my father at 3.30 pm. He'd stop playing pool, open the ranch slider and stick his head outside and look at my arse as I got off my push bike.

When I was at a party, at say, John Saunders' place, now a judge in Singapore, and Aislabie was there, he was always looking at my arse, and when I came home from university and went to the local parties and he was there, he'd be looking at my arse – you know, with that really uncomfortable stare. Then he got into drugs, drugs and alcohol, then lots of mental break-downs. The drugs were hidden under the seat of his golden brown 1938 Plymouth, the one he had shares in, that was parked in his garage behind the cabana, behind the swimming pool, behind his house on 4th Ave . . . Tauranga . . .

The New Zealand judiciary is as bent as. There are a few judges who are not into same sex, and those few that are heterosexual are usually swingers, and the few remaining are into drugs, and those that aren't are into all of the above, are into kids, or at least protecting the paedophiles who are into kids. All of them are compromised and all of them make compromised decisions . . .

Each judge lives in fear of the other judge. The judges make the most unfair decisions and routinely get away with it because no other judge will discipline them, because each knows they're all so compromised . . .

Wise citizens generally avoid the courts. As the saying goes, 'Don't expect justice from the New Zealand judiciary' . . . I used to work in Britain for MI-5 and C6. Then I came over to New Zealand and did some consulting work. It was my job to work through evidence and pull it apart and I can tell you the New Zealand police are very reliable – the most reliable police force in the world. You can always rely on the New Zealand police to manufacture evidence . . .

That's certainly what I've found . . . and the police, lawyers and judges work together. Some police are given permission to lie in court and some judges are guaranteed to believe everything a police officer says. Judge Gittos is one of these. He works on the police stitch-up and police informants scheme cases. I remember, after the poisoning, after my Cook Islands speech, I got Judge Gittos and he threw the book at me. Twelve hours after the poisoning I was driving in a straight line at 35 km/h and was charged with dangerous driving. During the hearing I exposed Constable Cassin as having two convictions for assault prior to entering the police. Gittos took my driver's licence and fined me $1,490.00. I took it to the High Court. The police and District Court lost the hearing transcript, their notes and files, and one officer resigned. I got my licence back within the hour, then Cassin was put on the Internal Affairs' list of corrupt cops.

What we need is a vote of 'no confidence' in the judiciary. I have files on the sexual improprieties of judges [Elias, Cartwright, Geoghegan, Hole, Mahoney] and heads of department [Aislabie]. I could use these files. I thought about it, but it's a whole other book, even in note form . . .

You know, it can be argued, and quite easily, that judges are the biggest killers in New Zealand, more than heart attacks, road accidents and cancer.

That was in my first book, *Are You My Father?*

Peter Williams QC? He's so tight nuns use his arsehole as a reference. For decades he's been refusing to pay people he's hired. He's ripped off so many people, if he paid them all, he'd lose one of his buildings. He keeps using 'the sick excuse'. The latest one is 'his prostate cancer count is over 10' . . . He employed his daughter Katie Williams as his secretary for a number of years. Since then she's become an alcoholic and a P addict. She's a runaway self-destructive manic-depressive child, now in her 30s and showing no signs of improvement. When Peter goes overseas, he's just returned from a trip to Fiji [late August 2007 including 29 August], she acts up.

There are various ways she does this including stealing Peter's vehicle and driving around telling everyone it's hers. She uses this as security to purchase P from gangs like Black Power. When they come asking for the money, QC Williams has to bail her out. The last time he bailed her out, he had to pay Black Power NZ$20,000 . . .

Perhaps that's why Peter Williams hasn't paid my fee for over two years . . . From his own mouth he told me Katie was a serial cuckolder. It seems to run in the family. When they were living in Remuera Peter's son, Durrell, cut the telephone lines to their neighbour's house. When the neighbour confronted Peter he didn't discipline his son and didn't compensate the neighbour . . . so he's up there with Paul Holmes as New Zealand's worst father . . . I went sailing with Williams once. As soon as we were past North Head he started talking about how he'd had sex with a man and asked me if I'd tried it. Then one of his useless crew, a drunken Maori lawyer [Albi Orme] threatened to kill me. I even wrote Peter a letter of complaint. Quite a strange man that Williams.

I did over $5,000 worth of architectural work for him and he never paid me. He's all friends and self-fame until you present the bill then he cuts off all communication. I've been looking for a court to sue him in but haven't found one yet. I wonder if the judges respect him for his legal opinions, his sex with a man, his cuckolded status, his loose wives, his poor fathering, or the compromised information he has on them . . .

I'm surprised he's so tight. When he was defending Mr Asia in London, mafia boys in suits came up to him in the hotel lobby and said, 'Your payment's in your room'. Williams went straight up and found a suitcase on his bed, stuffed full of money. It had £2 million in it . . .

Seems like the old guys got it right. Stick a non-heterosexual in power and they'll fuck up the entire nation . . . Give them an inch and they'll take the country . . . It certainly applies to Helen. Put a 'Zionist prostitute in a cover marriage to a homosexual child sex abuser' in power and she'll try and launch a nuclear strike on you."

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'The New National Anthem – Hot Teaspoons', pp. 221–24:
One of Helen Clark's lesbian lovers is Maryan Street. She is married to Annemarie Wille and they lived at 235 Jervois Road in Herne Bay, about five minutes' drive from Helen Clark's house. Swinging Helen and swinging Maryan have been casual sexual partners for over two decades. Helen made Maryan an MP and then a cabinet minister on 5 November 2007.

Maryan Street and Annemarie Wille had a child together, Elsje Marteke, born in 1991. The biological father is Mr John Burrows, an architectural student who changed to engineering at Auckland University. The child was conceived in Helen Clark's home in an occult ceremony.

Helen Clark is very much into the occult and the feminist occult. The Parthenogenesis Farm on Waiheke Island is home to the 'lesbians of the immaculate birth'.

Finding a dirth of immaculate births, Helen Clark agreed to them coming over to her place in their white robes to conceive a hot teaspoon baby. They danced around in their white gowns while Mr Burrows got wanked into a bucket and the sperm was placed into the lesbian vagina of the aptly named 'Annemarie Wille'.

The midwife was Barbara Harvey. Her husband, Bob Harvey, was then awarded the Queen's Service Order for Services to the Community in 1991, and soon became Mayor of West Auckland in October 1992. Mr Burrows got a job at the UN setting up nation's sewerage systems. Forty weeks later confusion was born.

Thereafter Helen Clark would escape her detail (bodyguards) at 3 am and drive madly to 235 Jervois Rd, to the home of Maryan Street, Annemarie Wille, and Elsje Marteke, to check up on their occult child and mix with more of the fisted ones. Helen's detail would complain that they'd have to jump through their trousers into their boots and follow her at that ungodly hour.

I've been in Maryan Street's gingerbread house and builders have been in Helen's house. Here they found the biggest dildo available under her bed. Helen has sex with her husband Peter, fanny to arse, doggy style with Helen on top . . .

New Zealand wasn't too hard to take over. The strongest form of resistance came from the Wellington Apple Pie Contest, and this, combined with the national anthem, 'Hot Teaspoons', left no doubt that Kiwis were the world's apple pie. Here, I'll leave you with a verse from the new national anthem by Walk.on.me:

"Peace, not war, shall be our boast, But, should foes assail our coast, Make us then a mighty host, God defend our free land."[30] From dissension, envy, hate . . . From dishonour and from shame . . . Men of every creed and race . . . . corruption guard our state . . . Make her praises heard afar . . . Crown her with immortal fame . . . Guide her in the nation's van . . . Working out Thy glorious plan . . . Guard our country's spotless name."

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Fisting in America', pp. 225–32:
"Helen Clark has been wearing waterproof under-pants for the last two years. They're called 'incontinence diapers'. Too much fisting has caused incontinence and her fanny's always leaking and she pisses herself all the time, especially when she's talking on TV. That's why she appears bigger around the hips and has been instructed to lose weight . . .

This is the same person *Forbes Asia* voted 20th most powerful woman in the world . . . as you said, her partner Heather Simpson did win gold for fisting at the Sydney Gay Olympics in 2000.

---

[30] In Intelligence speak, "Peace" means 'no resistance to communism'. "Freedom" means 'no resistance to American colonialism'.

If we're going to make this a book about New Zealand and how easily external entities bribe New Zealand politicians, then I guess we should talk about Helen Clark's time at the White House. I published this in March and May 2007 in *How To Take Over The World*, and in March and September 2007 in *Stalin's British Training* – and I haven't been charged, sued, convicted, or reported in any mainstream media, so it must be true . . .

Promise of the Iraq war was being built up by the Americans and they were canvasing world leaders for support. This meant that they were pulling out all their FBI smut files to bribe politicians . . . the Afghan War began on 7 October 2001 and Helen Clark was against it, saying 'America has no right to be there'. Then Helen Clark left New Zealand for her Christmas holidays on 19 December 2002 without telling anyone where she was going and when she returned on 19 January 2003 she said she had been staying at her husband's parents place in the south of England. We know different.

[p. 228] When Helen Clark was in England, President George W. Bush called her up and invited her to his Capital. Being from a small country and President Bush being so big and all, she turned up. On 3 January 2003 she was flown to Washington DC and taken to the White House, without any pomp and ceremony, or media coverage. Helen Clark did not turn up with her husband, the embarrasingly effeminate homosexual Prof. Peter Davis, but with her long-time on-call lesbian lover, the world fisting champion Heather Simpson, whom she had appointed as Head of Policy.

Taking things at face value and listening to all the bar-room rumours down-under, W offered Helen-&-Heather Lincoln Cottage, which has more cameras per square metre than any other building in the world and when it comes to bargaining power, Lincoln Cottage is the Hollywood of spying.

When they arrived at the cottage W rang them and offered them a girl-typist. The typist George selected was a sapphic CIA pillow-talker and she came over and joined them. Helen and her honey-trap were caught on tape for hours on end doing all the things lesbians do – a bit of tongue and groove, strap on dildos, girl-talk, fisting, trade and security secrets, ménages à trois, that sort of thing.

[p. 229] This is the same sort of thing Helen Clark does at 235 Jervois Rd, Herne Bay, Auckland at 3.30 am with the lesbian Maryan Street [former Media Woman for Auckland Feminist teachers] and her civil union partner, Annemarie Wille. If we know about this, you can guarantee the Americans know about it, especially since the CIA informant John Banks was the Mayor of Auckland [2001–04] at the time.

When Helen's detail contacted me over this, back in 2003, they were surprised when I got back to them in the same sentence with the address. Their reply was, 'How did he know that? . . . Mr Hallett'.

The upshot of all this is that Helen Clark has remained silent over the Afghanistan and Iraq wars ever since. She hasn't said a word against President Bush, even though the rest of the world has, and she has been secretly sending New Zealand forces to Afghanistan and Iraq. [The NZSAS would go on holiday to various parts of Australia, then meet two weeks later in Perth, joining their Australian counterparts on a ship bound for the warzones.] She has also been flying other country's troops into Iraq on the national carrier Air New Zealand. To maintain cover, when questioned, she says only peace corps have been sent in and as soon as the shit hits the fan, she has other MPs answer for her collossal failures as Prime Minister.

Helen Clark can't answer any questions under pressure as you know, she pisses herself. She also hasn't presented a speech in public since she was asked a difficult question in 1996 and broke down crying . . .

[p. 230] She also hasn't walked across an intersection the whole time she's been PM. She's the most hated woman in New Zealand's history and if she walked across an intersection someone would volunteer to run her over . . .

I'm aware of the sentiment. I'm also aware that there have been many discussion regarding removing her protection, especially since her murders . . .

After Prime Minister Helen Clark's sex with the lesbian CIA pillow-talker, George Bush rang her up the next day and invited her up to the Oval Office. Helen turned up, feeling great about her latest fisting, but wondering why she no longer had any control over her bladder, and George, not being the great diplomat, showed Helen the photos and asked her if she would like these to go to the media.

[p. 231] Helen said 'Arrr, no thanks' and George said, 'Well you will be supporting US in Afghanistan and Iraq. You won't say a word against US and you will support US by whatever means possible.' Helen said 'Yes, I'll arrange whatever I can to keep you in power and for New Zealand to support your war' and Bush said, 'And we will do the same for you'.

So Helen Clark has remained New Zealand's prime minister. She is a former KGB agent supporting the American invasions of Afghanistan and Iraq in exchange for maintaining her position as prime minister and American silence about her lesbianism, her honey-trap, and her leaky fanny syndrome, which surprise, surprise, began soon after the Lincoln Cottage honey-trap. The pillow-talker must have known exactly where to push and scrape, what toxins to use, and what lubricants to hide them in. Anyway, the fisted one is still in power [ousted on 8 November 2008], despite not winning the election and being New Zealand's most unpopular woman – ever . . .

The diplomatic community heard about this and there was a flurry of invitations out to lunch, first in America and then around the rest of the world. The diplomatic community roared with laughter and shouted each other out to lunch just so they could tell the story. I got invited to one. Each wanted to tell the other the story because 'no one has been so easily honey-trapped since the Profumo Affair' . . .

When Helen Clark returned, she had no intention of sending New Zealand to war. The tapes were alluded to and Helen was told that if she didn't back America in the war against Iraq, these tapes would make it to the media . . .

[p. 232] Initially she didn't know which way to swing about the war. She had SAS troops in Afganistan which were easy enough to send through Iran to Iraq, but she pulled out of the Iraq war when she remembered that her primary goal was to destroy New Zealand.

So instead Helen Clark sent the New Zealand Peace Corp to Iraq. Essentially, these are a group of 'free re-builders' and the last people to leave Iraq . . .

Sexually bent politicians in denial of their sexuality to the public are a threat to their own country and policies. They are easily setup, photographed, politically bribed, toppled, and supported in the destruction of their country. This method of altering a country's policies is epidemic and now endemic to politics. It is something larger more experienced countries try on smaller less experienced politicians, whenever they can . . . and laugh outrageously when it still works . . .

If you are a political leader, and you're having sex overseas with anyone who is not your recognised partner, then you are filmed and bribed. Der! That's how Helen Clark was trained by the KGB in the first place. She is a former Tavistock St Petersburg prostitute. Is she as forgetful as Christine Rankin? . . . She only has to learn her lines and she never answers a question that wasn't first prepared by her aides, as are the answers . . ."

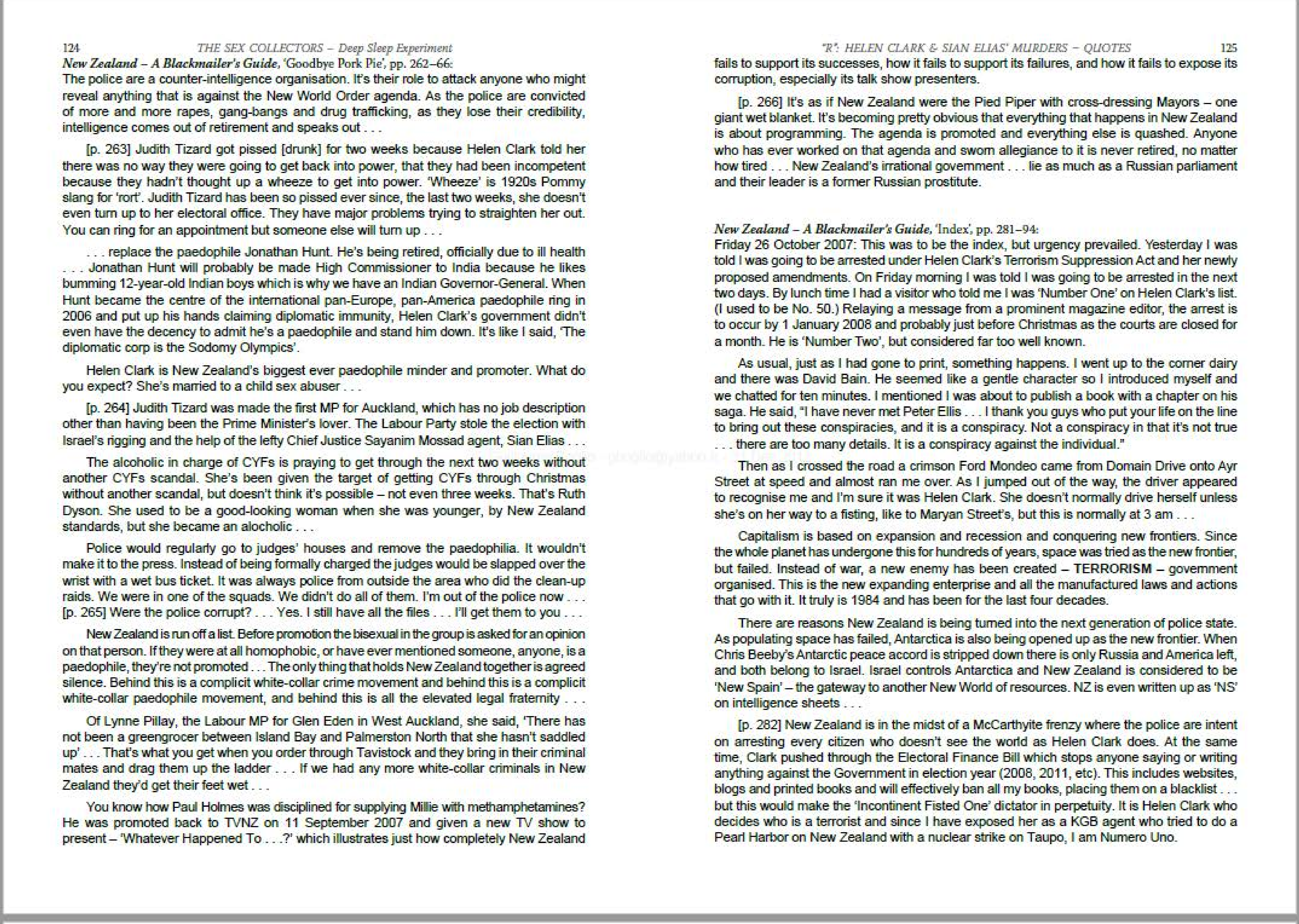

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Goodbye Pork Pie', pp. 262–66:
The police are a counter-intelligence organisation. It's their role to attack anyone who might reveal anything that is against the New World Order agenda. As the police are convicted of more and more rapes, gang-bangs and drug trafficking, as they lose their credibility, intelligence comes out of retirement and speaks out . . .

[p. 263] Judith Tizard got pissed [drunk] for two weeks because Helen Clark told her there was no way they were going to get back into power, that they had been incompetent because they hadn't thought up a wheeze to get into power. 'Wheeze' is 1920s Pommy slang for 'rort'. Judith Tizard has been so pissed ever since, the last two weeks, she doesn't even turn up to her electoral office. They have major problems trying to straighten her out. You can ring for an appointment but someone else will turn up . . .

. . . replace the paedophile Jonathan Hunt. He's being retired, officially due to ill health . . . Jonathan Hunt will probably be made High Commissioner to India because he likes bumming 12-year-old Indian boys which is why we have an Indian Governor-General. When Hunt became the centre of the international pan-Europe, pan-America paedophile ring in 2006 and put up his hands claiming diplomatic immunity, Helen Clark's government didn't even have the decency to admit he's a paedophile and stand him down. It's like I said, 'The diplomatic corp is the Sodomy Olympics'.

Helen Clark is New Zealand's biggest ever paedophile minder and promoter. What do you expect? She's married to a child sex abuser . . .

[p. 264] Judith Tizard was made the first MP for Auckland, which has no job description other than having been the Prime Minister's lover. The Labour Party stole the election with Israel's rigging and the help of the lefty Chief Justice Sayanim Mossad agent, Sian Elias . . .

The alcoholic in charge of CYFs is praying to get through the next two weeks without another CYFs scandal. She's been given the target of getting CYFs through Christmas without another scandal, but doesn't think it's possible – not even three weeks. That's Ruth Dyson. She used to be a good-looking woman when she was younger, by New Zealand standards, but she became an alocholic . . .

Police would regularly go to judges' houses and remove the paedophilia. It wouldn't make it to the press. Instead of being formally charged the judges would be slapped over the wrist with a wet bus ticket. It was always police from outside the area who did the clean-up raids. We were in one of the squads. We didn't do all of them. I'm out of the police now . . . [p. 265] Were the police corrupt? . . . Yes. I still have all the files . . . I'll get them to you . . .

New Zealand is run off a list. Before promotion the bisexual in the group is asked for an opinion on that person. If they were at all homophobic, or have ever mentioned someone, anyone, is a paedophile, they're not promoted . . . The only thing that holds New Zealand together is agreed silence. Behind this is a complicit white-collar crime movement and behind this is a complicit white-collar paedophile movement, and behind this is all the elevated legal fraternity . . .

Of Lynne Pillay, the Labour MP for Glen Eden in West Auckland, she said, 'There has not been a greengrocer between Island Bay and Palmerston North that she hasn't saddled up' . . . That's what you get when you order through Tavistock and they bring in their criminal mates and drag them up the ladder . . . If we had any more white-collar criminals in New Zealand they'd get their feet wet . . .

You know how Paul Holmes was disciplined for supplying Millie with methamphetamines? He was promoted back to TVNZ on 11 September 2007 and given a new TV show to present – 'Whatever Happened To . . .?' which illustrates just how completely New Zealand fails to support its successes, how it fails to support its failures, and how it fails to expose its corruption, especially its talk show presenters.

[p. 266] It's as if New Zealand were the Pied Piper with cross-dressing Mayors – one giant wet blanket. It's becoming pretty obvious that everything that happens in New Zealand is about programming. The agenda is promoted and everything else is quashed. Anyone who has ever worked on that agenda and sworn allegiance to it is never retired, no matter how tired . . . New Zealand's irrational government . . . lie as much as a Russian parliament and their leader is a former Russian prostitute.

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, 'Index', pp. 281–94:
Friday 26 October 2007: This was to be the index, but urgency prevailed. Yesterday I was told I was going to be arrested under Helen Clark's Terrorism Suppression Act and her newly proposed amendments. On Friday morning I was told I was going to be arrested in the next two days. By lunch time I had a visitor who told me I was 'Number One' on Helen Clark's list. (I used to be No. 50.) Relaying a message from a prominent magazine editor, the arrest is to occur by 1 January 2008 and probably just before Christmas as the courts are closed for a month. He is 'Number Two', but considered far too well known.

As usual, just as I had gone to print, something happens. I went up to the corner dairy and there was David Bain. He seemed like a gentle character so I introduced myself and we chatted for ten minutes. I mentioned I was about to publish a book with a chapter on his saga. He said, "I have never met Peter Ellis . . . I thank you guys who put your life on the line to bring out these conspiracies, and it is a conspiracy. Not a conspiracy in that it's not true . . . there are too many details. It is a conspiracy against the individual."

Then as I crossed the road a crimson Ford Mondeo came from Domain Drive onto Ayr Street at speed and almost ran me over. As I jumped out of the way, the driver appeared to recognise me and I'm sure it was Helen Clark. She doesn't normally drive herself unless she's on her way to a fisting, like to Maryan Street's, but this is normally at 3 am . . .

Capitalism is based on expansion and recession and conquering new frontiers. Since the whole planet has undergone this for hundreds of years, space was tried as the new frontier, but failed. Instead of war, a new enemy has been created – **TERRORISM** – government organised. This is the new expanding enterprise and all the manufactured laws and actions that go with it. It truly is 1984 and has been for the last four decades.

There are reasons New Zealand is being turned into the next generation of police state. As populating space has failed, Antarctica is also being opened up as the new frontier. When Chris Beeby's Antarctic peace accord is stripped down there is only Russia and America left, and both belong to Israel. Israel controls Antarctica and New Zealand is considered to be 'New Spain' – the gateway to another New World of resources. NZ is even written up as 'NS' on intelligence sheets . . .

[p. 282] New Zealand is in the midst of a McCarthyite frenzy where the police are intent on arresting every citizen who doesn't see the world as Helen Clark does. At the same time, Clark pushed through the Electoral Finance Bill which stops anyone saying or writing anything against the Government in election year (2008, 2011, etc). This includes websites, blogs and printed books and will effectively ban all my books, placing them on a blacklist . . . but this would make the 'Incontinent Fisted One' dictator in perpetuity. It is Helen Clark who decides who is a terrorist and since I have exposed her as a KGB agent who tried to do a Pearl Harbor on New Zealand with a nuclear strike on Taupo, I am Numero Uno.

. . . Perhaps the Government's judiciary could return my architecture practice developed to where it would have been, the properties they stole, compensation for their murder attempts, and wipe clean their manufactured record – the one they created in my absence to limit my output . . .

Helen Clark introduced the Electoral Finance Bill into Parliament admidst great secrecy. The secrecy was that she did not declare what the Bill was about and introduced it at least six months late, and in haste. The Electoral Finance Bill is designed to silence all opposition to her.

In part, that is due to this book and others I've written which mention her attempt to launch a nuclear strike on Taupo, her murder of historian Michael King, her Comintern [Communist International] training by the KGB, her prostitution in St Petersburg, her marriage to a homosexual child sex abuser, her three or more attempts on my life, the Rothschilds considering Helen Clark to be ‘the Hitler of the South Pacific’, her honey-trap at the White House, and her wearing incontinence nappies – which is what the Electoral Finance Bill/Act is about.

[p. 283] Helen Clark doesn't want it mentioned. Say “Incontinence Nappies” to her face and see what reaction you get.

When I mentioned that New Zealand's real name was New Spain, I wasn't kidding and when I mention that Helen Clark is compared to Hitler by many, I wasn't kidding either.

Newstalk ZB: “Members of the migrant community on the march say they came to New Zealand to escape dictatorship, and some have likened Miss Clark to Adolf Hitler.”

Since 1999 the Labour Party has shown itself to be a paedophile and crime creation movement. They have continually stolen from the coffers, funded homosexuals, child sex abusers and paedophiles into positions of power, refused to jail violent criminals, promoted gang members to the top of the police force (Mongrel Mob member Clint Rickards), promoted New Zealand's worst ever rapist to Auckland City Commander (Clint Rickards), promoted one of New Zealand's worst paedophiles as one of New Zealand's best police undercover agents (Clint Rickards), promoted the heroin trafficking Minister of Health Annette King to Minister of Police, got the police spokesman and President of the NZ Police Association trafficking heroin to gangs (Greg O'Connor), turned Maori activists into government agents (Tame Iti, Ken Muir), made many of Helen Clark's lesbian fisting buddies cabinet ministers (Maryan Street, Ms Steve Chadwick), removed the heterosexual males out of cabinet positions, had the police hassle heterosexual males and lay trumped-up charges, had most of heterosexual New Zealand spied on by Telecom, the SIS, Matrix Security and Mr Whippy, and ensured no heterosexual male wins a court case (only sex offenders do) . . . [p. 284] removed heterosexual solo fathers from their homes, put lesbians in government jobs so they could buy houses, then let house prices skyrocket . . . made the poor poorer, imported poor immigrants to vote for them, carried out murders for the New World Order (Sir Peter Elworthy, Michael King, MP Rod Donald, Augie Auer), gave the Jewess Sayanim Mossad agent Chief Justice Sian Elias unlimited funds to start a Supreme Court which was rammed through Parliament at record speed, and ensured that all legal decisions in New Zealand will be made by Israel for Israel, with New Zealand being the New Spain for the new continent Antarctica.

The New Zealand Computer Society Inc.” “Greg O'Connor is a former drug undercover, detective and Police Officer with over 30 years experience. He has been the elected President of the NZ Police Association since October 1995 and presides over 8000 Sworn Police Officers and 2000 Non-sworn (civilian) staff. O'Connor is also the Chairperson of the Police Welfare Fund with over 13,000 members and a large network of Holiday Homes. Greg O'Connor also leads the worldwide body of Police Associations – the International Council of Police Representatives & Associations” . . .

This should keep the police worldwide very busy trafficking NATO heroin to their local criminals – kickbacks in the police holiday homes included. When the police say “stress leave”, think “drug holiday”. Former police officers, Senior Sergeants and lawyers consider Greg O'Connor to be “a total dick.” This rolled off their tongues without hesitation.

Did I mention Helen controls the brothels and keeps re-employing the ‘any-and-every-drug addict’ Paul Holmes as the state media personality for her cover-ups when he clearly supplied his own daughter Millie with a range of Class A drugs and got her into prostitution for drugs, earning her nickname ‘anal lover’ . . . and when Millie stole Paul's Cartier watch and porned it for P and the P dealers later found out it was fake, Paul kicked Millie out.

Millie got Paul back by moving in with her father's P dealer, Perish (white Mercedes, tinted windows). Paul may have been involved when Perish was placed on trumped up kidnapping charges, but it was Millie who trumped Paul when she was charged with P while high on Perish's stash. By December 2007 Millie was well past her sentence date. She'd got on the needle and was back at the Capri rehab clinic. Meanwhile Paul was texting her saying he was too drunk to pick her up . . . and that's state TV – not enough morality to cite the Prime Minister as a KGB agent and a former St Petersburg prostitute who wears incontinence nappies as a result of a White House honey-trap fisting with toxic lubricant.

The end result of all this is that the 2008 Election will have to be decided in the courts, and that is by the Jewess Sian Elias and her Supreme Court, which in turn has all its decision made in Israel. Israel will be backing *their* exploitation of Antarctica with New Zealand as New Spain – the launching pad to the new continent. As a result, they want to make New Zealand a legal, political and social mosh pit. [As it turned out, the country got educated to the Labour Government's corruption resulting in a landslide victory to the opposition].

[p. 285] According to the Georgia Guidestones, the transitional agenda for New Zealand/New Spain is that 12 out of 13 people are to be neutralised. This includes exporting thinkers and importing dummies; exporting white people and importing brown and yellow people; exporting heterosexuals and importing lesbians, gays, bisexuals and sex abusers (with the help of the paedophiles Sir Roger Douglas and Aussie Malcolm who run immigration firms); exporting capitalistic intent and importing communist intent; exporting morals and importing white-collar criminals; charging and convicting honest people and letting murderers go free on bail; charging men with domestic violence and taking their weapons, while giving custody to mentally ill violent mothers, setting them up in house and home and paying for their university education, while refusing the father's access and boiler-plating him until he gives up on his own family and emigrates to Australia – 40,000 of them each year . . . since 1970 a third of the population has emigrated.

The transitional agenda for New Zealand/New Spain also includes murder and MAD (Medically Assisted Death). When the polls are down, Helen murders.

Helen Clark is a former KGB prostitute, a graduate of the St Petersburg Freud Hilton, as is her long-time Comintern buddy Margaret Wilson. They formed a pact with New Zealand's United Nations representative, Silvia Cartwright, as to how they wanted New Zealand run. This involves New Zealand becoming the first Western communist state, modelled on Russia. And who created Russia? The Jews – before they got Israel. And who is Israel's representative in New Zealand – Chief Justice Sian Elias. Her nomination was tabled by the evil first female Prime Minister Jenny Shipley and seconded by the Comintern's Helen Clark.

In the eight years Clark has been in power, she has never answered a question clearly and now leaves all difficult answers to her cabinet ministers who are instructed to answer like unrealistic blinkered bratty schoolchildren – which they are. As a result the . . . finances are run by a British paedophile married to a primary school teacher who runs around cuckolding the bad doctor . . .

Helen Clark's Electoral Finance Act . . . is a doctrine of absolute silence and will have a more devastating effect on New Zealand than Helen Clark and Margaret Wilson's planned nuclear strike on Taupo.

[p. 286] On 12 November 2007 the *New Zealand Herald* ran a rare front-page editorial: "When is the government going to get this message: democracy is not a device to keep the Labour Party in power . . . If these bills pass, they will be Labour's epitaph" . . . Your Electoral Finance Bill is so bad that even your Labour-appointed Chief Human Rights Commissioner described the original Bill as having 'a chilling effect on the right of freedom of expression'. The Human Rights Commissioner then asked for the Bill to be withdrawn – that any changes be subject to the widest possible scrutiny.

Helen Clark refused another round of public submissions, did not withdraw the Bill and rammed it through Parliament. The Electoral Finance Bill . . . making the New Zealand Government the most anti-democratic of its type in the world. Helen Clark has extended the gagging order to 11 months.

The select committee's report reveals that, under questioning, Ministry of Justice officials could not offer committee members any rationale for the extended regulated period. To have done so would have meant embarrassing the Government . . . Incontinence Nappies . . . Comintern Training . . . Prostitution in St Petersburg . . . murders, an attempted nuclear strike on Taupo, and a toxic fisting at the White House . . .

[p. 287] the Labour Party are . . . passing law to make legal what was illegal in the last election . . . The Minister of Justice doesn't even understand it . . .

The Chief Justice is Sian Elias, a Sayanim Mossad contract killer and murderer of the chief historian Michael King. Sian Elias is supported by the Public Law specialists Chen Palmer . . . Founding Director Geoffrey Palmer pays to have his arse whipped by Christine Rankin, the former head of New Zealand's largest government department. Christine didn't even pass her first school exam. She failed School C twice and was limited in her moonlighting career to 'dominatrix'. The knee-jerk retard Christine Rankin drives Geoffrey Palmer, and Geoffrey Palmer drives the unwritten constitution for a fee of $10 million a year.

The Electoral Finance Bill is the result – no human rights for those less bent . . . New Zealand doesn't have a written constitution. It depends on an anchor of decency based on common understanding . . .

[p. 288] Under Helen Clark, New Zealand is designed to become the first Western Russian satellite country – fascism for the oligarchy and communism for the masses – with thinkers exported and uneducated voters imported to maintain the fascist/communist agenda . . .

When Helen Clark started to be compared to Adolf Hitler in 2004, it was by a lawyer. Her letter was read over the radio (Newstalk ZB), but it was in 1989, when I interviewed a member of the KGB in Moscow that it first became apparent that Helen Clark (now Prime Minister) and Margaret Wilson (now Speaker of the House) were both trained in Russia as KGB Comintern agents. Part of this training was prostitution. Shame brought control . . .

[p. 289] . . . the reason Bush has so easily pushed Helen Clark into American style fascism is that Helen Clark was honey-trapped at the White House by one of W's female CIA pillow-talkers. As a result, Helen Clark nows wears incontinence nappies, something which would deter most voters from ticking her box. She leaks like a sieve and pisses herself during interviews.

Rather than have Helen Clark's incontinence nappies come up as an election issue, she has decreed that no one can mention her incontinence in election year. This is what the Electoral Finance Act is about – Helen Clark's incontinence . . . Even the New Zealand Law Society wants the Electoral Finance Bill scrapped . . .

[p. 290]. . . the Government no longer has any legitimacy. It is a dictatorship without support. It is a New World Order Government controlled through the sexual deviancy and drug trafficking of New Zealand MPs . . . It is the wheeze Helen Clark was looking for . . . that, and the manufactured terrorism by government agent[s] . . . An early indicator of Helen Clark's contempt for the rule of law came with the retrospective amending of the Electoral Act to keep one of her Ministers in Parliament [the thief, the con man, the mental patient, the prostitute, or her lover] . . .

The damage Helen Clark has done to New Zealand will never ever be repaired . . . and make sure any Prime Minister obeys the law, and is not above the law . . .

[p. 291] My 1 x 0.8 metre placard on an extended painter's pole is a prime example as it appeared at the end of the 1 December 2007 Queen St march with over 5000 people protesting. I was photographed by the SIS and Internal Affairs and even posed for them. When they came up to interview me as we marched down Queen Street we openly shared we what we knew and didn't know, then I gave them my business card. They were aware of this book and were investigating the claims in it. I haven't heard from them since. Nor have I received copies of the photographs.

[p. 292] The police and SIS used to sit in the second floor of buildings with high-powered cameras, take photos of the crowd, then blow them up several metres high and get their protest agents to come in and name the activists and the ringleaders. No need in my case . . .

[p. 293] . . . because America's President George W. Bush has control over New Zealand's Prime Minister Helen Clark through filmed fisting.

John Marshall QC, President of the NZ Law Society: ". . . and when you have the Electoral Commission itself saying, 'We can not interpret this law', you know you have problems. And if the Government had published their draft bill when they were scheduled to – in early 2007 – then there would have been plenty of time to get it right. But they kept the secret negotiations with their allies [Geoffrey 'Spank Bottom' Palmer] going for months, minimising the chance to have decent public consultation. So [Helen Clark's Labour] Government are the only people to blame for leaving the Bill so late" . . .

All the while Helen Clark was overseas talking to Hitler's sperm, Angela Merkel (which she cited as her year's highlight), and Speaker of the House Margaret Wilson was away on leave trying to patch up Jonathan Hunt's ongoing paedophilia. Jonathan Hunt is a former Labour MP and Speaker of the House. He is now New Zealand's High Commissioner to London and is an international organising paederast.

[p. 294] Weather manipulation is partly why the CIA agent Augie Auer was killed on 10 June 2007. Augie Auer ran Operation CLEAR SKIES during the Vietnam War for the Americans. They rigged clear skies over North Vietnam and heavy monsoon rains over South central Vietnam.

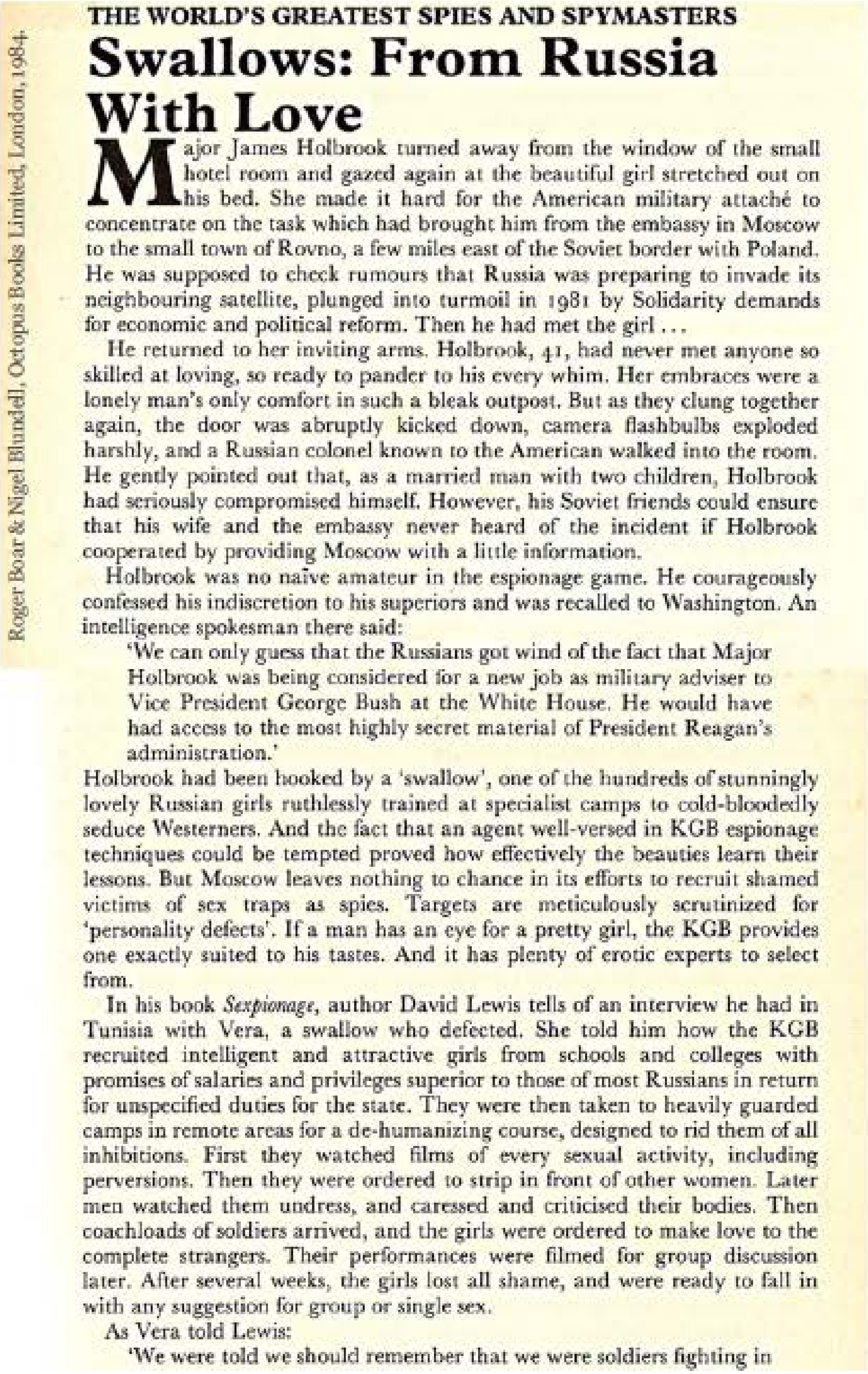

Roger Boar & Nigel Blundell, Octopus Books Limited, London, 1984.

THE WORLD'S GREATEST SPIES AND SPYMASTERS

Swallows: From Russia With Love

Major James Holbrook turned away from the window of the small hotel room and gazed again at the beautiful girl stretched out on his bed. She made it hard for the American military attaché to concentrate on the task which had brought him from the embassy in Moscow to the small town of Rovno, a few miles east of the Soviet border with Poland. He was supposed to check rumours that Russia was preparing to invade its neighbouring satellite, plunged into turmoil in 1981 by Solidarity demands for economic and political reform. Then he had met the girl ...

He returned to her inviting arms. Holbrook, 41, had never met anyone so skilled at loving, so ready to pander to his every whim. Her embraces were a lonely man's only comfort in such a bleak outpost. But as they clung together again, the door was abruptly kicked down, camera flashbulbs exploded harshly, and a Russian colonel known to the American walked into the room. He gently pointed out that, as a married man with two children, Holbrook had seriously compromised himself. However, his Soviet friends could ensure that his wife and the embassy never heard of the incident if Holbrook cooperated by providing Moscow with a little information.

Holbrook was no naive amateur in the espionage game. He courageously confessed his indiscretion to his superiors and was recalled to Washington. An intelligence spokesman there said:

> 'We can only guess that the Russians got wind of the fact that Major Holbrook was being considered for a new job as military adviser to Vice President George Bush at the White House. He would have had access to the most highly secret material of President Reagan's administration.'

Holbrook had been hooked by a 'swallow', one of the hundreds of stunningly lovely Russian girls ruthlessly trained at specialist camps to cold-bloodedly seduce Westerners. And the fact that an agent well-versed in KGB espionage techniques could be tempted proved how effectively the beauties learn their lessons. But Moscow leaves nothing to chance in its efforts to recruit shamed victims of sex traps as spies. Targets are meticulously scrutinized for 'personality defects'. If a man has an eye for a pretty girl, the KGB provides one exactly suited to his tastes. And it has plenty of erotic experts to select from.

In his book *Sexpionage*, author David Lewis tells of an interview he had in Tunisia with Vera, a swallow who defected. She told him how the KGB recruited intelligent and attractive girls from schools and colleges with promises of salaries and privileges superior to those of most Russians in return for unspecified duties for the state. They were then taken to heavily guarded camps in remote areas for a de-humanizing course, designed to rid them of all inhibitions. First they watched films of every sexual activity, including perversions. Then they were ordered to strip in front of other women. Later men watched them undress, and caressed and criticised their bodies. Then coachloads of soldiers arrived, and the girls were ordered to make love to the complete strangers. Their performances were filmed for group discussion later. After several weeks, the girls lost all shame, and were ready to fall in with any suggestion for group or single sex.

As Vera told Lewis:

> 'We were told we should remember that we were soldiers fighting in

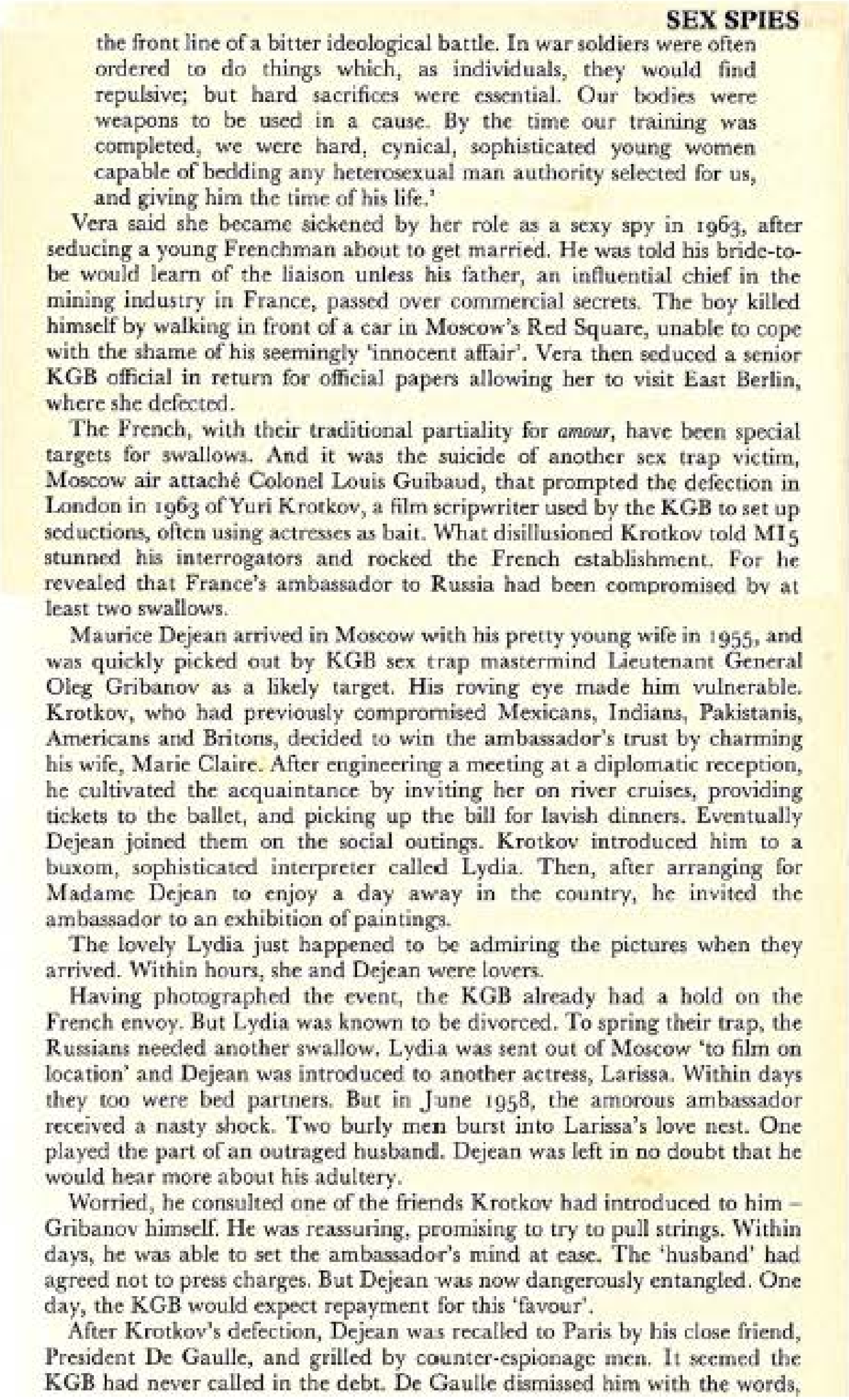

> the front line of a bitter ideological battle. In war soldiers were often ordered to do things which, as individuals, they would find repulsive; but hard sacrifices were essential. Our bodies were weapons to be used in a cause. By the time our training was completed, we were hard, cynical, sophisticated young women capable of bedding any heterosexual man authority selected for us, and giving him the time of his life.'

Vera said she became sickened by her role as a sexy spy in 1963, after seducing a young Frenchman about to get married. He was told his bride-to-be would learn of the liaison unless his father, an influential chief in the mining industry in France, passed over commercial secrets. The boy killed himself by walking in front of a car in Moscow's Red Square, unable to cope with the shame of his seemingly 'innocent affair'. Vera then seduced a senior KGB official in return for official papers allowing her to visit East Berlin, where she defected.

The French, with their traditional partiality for *amour*, have been special targets for swallows. And it was the suicide of another sex trap victim, Moscow air attaché Colonel Louis Guibaud, that prompted the defection in London in 1963 of Yuri Krotkov, a film scripwriter used by the KGB to set up seductions, often using actresses as bait. What disillusioned Krotkov told MI5 stunned his interrogators and rocked the French establishment. For he revealed that France's ambassador to Russia had been compromised by at least two swallows.

Maurice Dejean arrived in Moscow with his pretty young wife in 1955, and was quickly picked out by KGB sex trap mastermind Lieutenant General Oleg Gribanov as a likely target. His roving eye made him vulnerable. Krotkov, who had previously compromised Mexicans, Indians, Pakistanis, Americans and Britons, decided to win the ambassador's trust by charming his wife, Marie Claire. After engineering a meeting at a diplomatic reception, he cultivated the acquaintance by inviting her on river cruises, providing tickets to the ballet, and picking up the bill for lavish dinners. Eventually Dejean joined them on the social outings. Krotkov introduced him to a buxom, sophisticated interpreter called Lydia. Then, after arranging for Madame Dejean to enjoy a day away in the country, he invited the ambassador to an exhibition of paintings.

The lovely Lydia just happened to be admiring the pictures when they arrived. Within hours, she and Dejean were lovers.

Having photographed the event, the KGB already had a hold on the French envoy. But Lydia was known to be divorced. To spring their trap, the Russians needed another swallow. Lydia was sent out of Moscow 'to film on location' and Dejean was introduced to another actress, Larissa. Within days they too were bed partners. But in June 1958, the amorous ambassador received a nasty shock. Two burly men burst into Larissa's love nest. One played the part of an outraged husband. Dejean was left in no doubt that he would hear more about his adultery.

Worried, he consulted one of the friends Krotkov had introduced to him – Gribanov himself. He was reassuring, promising to try to pull strings. Within days, he was able to set the ambassador's mind at ease. The 'husband' had agreed not to press charges. But Dejean was now dangerously entangled. One day, the KGB would expect repayment for this 'favour'.

After Krotkov's defection, Dejean was recalled to Paris by his close friend, President De Gaulle, and grilled by counter-espionage men. It seemed the KGB had never called in the debt. De Gaulle dismissed him with the words,

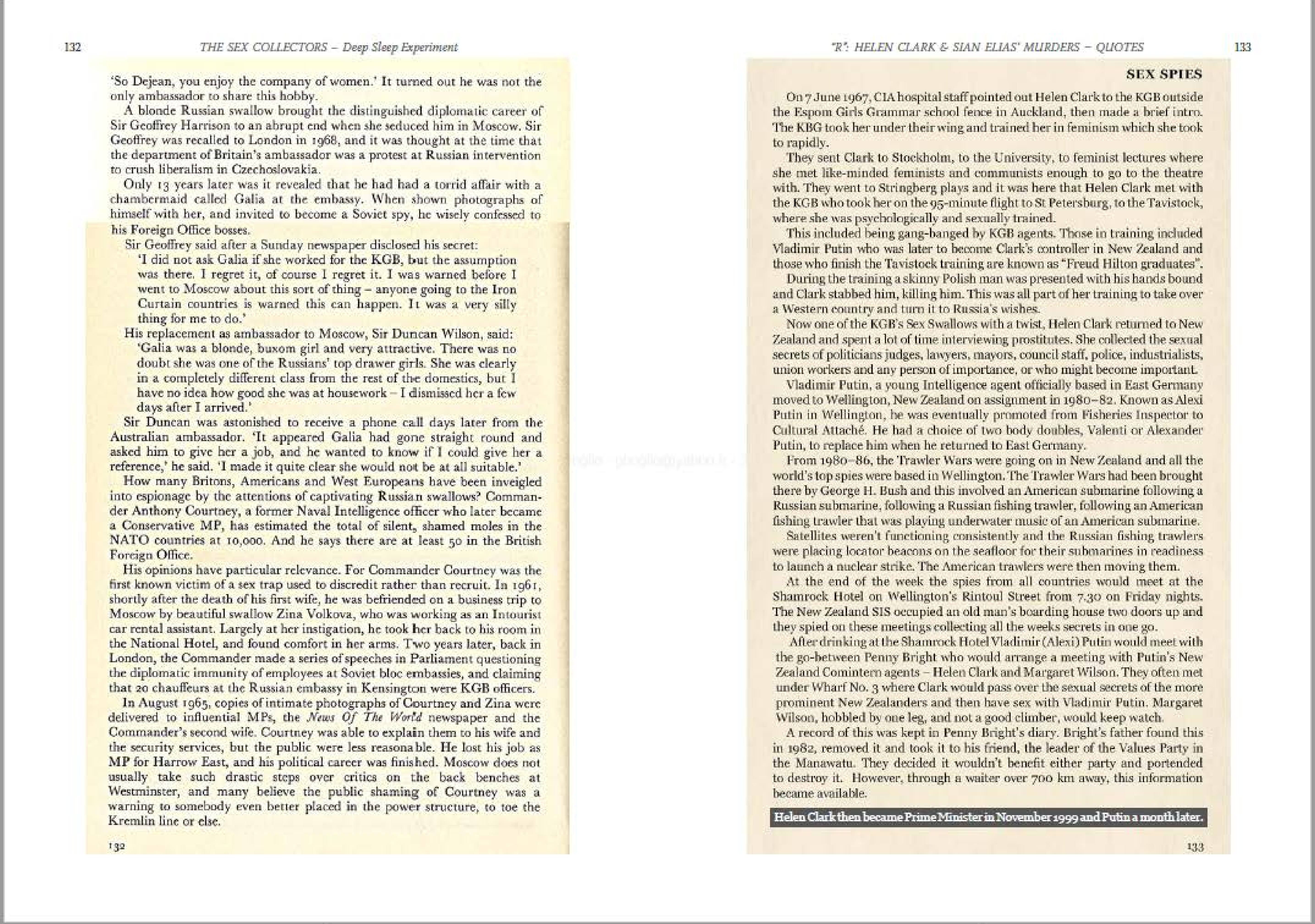

'So Dejean, you enjoy the company of women.' It turned out he was not the only ambassador to share this hobby.

A blonde Russian swallow brought the distinguished diplomatic career of Sir Geoffrey Harrison to an abrupt end when she seduced him in Moscow. Sir Geoffrey was recalled to London in 1968, and it was thought at the time that the department of Britain's ambassador was a protest at Russian intervention to crush liberalism in Czechoslovakia.

Only 13 years later was it revealed that he had had a torrid affair with a chambermaid called Galia at the embassy. When shown photographs of himself with her, and invited to become a Soviet spy, he wisely confessed to his Foreign Office bosses.

Sir Geoffrey said after a Sunday newspaper disclosed his secret:

> 'I did not ask Galia if she worked for the KGB, but the assumption was there. I regret it, of course I regret it. I was warned before I went to Moscow about this sort of thing – anyone going to the Iron Curtain countries is warned this can happen. It was a very silly thing for me to do.'

His replacement as ambassador to Moscow, Sir Duncan Wilson, said:

> 'Galia was a blonde, buxom girl and very attractive. There was no doubt she was one of the Russians' top drawer girls. She was clearly in a completely different class from the rest of the domestics, but I have no idea how good she was at housework – I dismissed her a few days after I arrived.'

Sir Duncan was astonished to receive a phone call days later from the Australian ambassador. 'It appeared Galia had gone straight round and asked him to give her a job, and he wanted to know if I could give her a reference,' he said. 'I made it quite clear she would not be at all suitable.'

How many Britons, Americans and West Europeans have been inveigled into espionage by the attentions of captivating Russian swallows? Commander Anthony Courtney, a former Naval Intelligence officer who later became a Conservative MP, has estimated the total of silent, shamed moles in the NATO countries at 10,000. And he says there are at least 50 in the British Foreign Office.

His opinions have particular relevance. For Commander Courtney was the first known victim of a sex trap used to discredit rather than recruit. In 1961, shortly after the death of his first wife, he was befriended on a business trip to Moscow by beautiful swallow Zina Volkova, who was working as an Intourist car rental assistant. Largely at her instigation, he took her back to his room in the National Hotel, and found comfort in her arms. Two years later, back in London, the Commander made a series of speeches in Parliament questioning the diplomatic immunity of employees at Soviet bloc embassies, and claiming that 20 chauffeurs at the Russian embassy in Kensington were KGB officers.

In August 1965, copies of intimate photographs of Courtney and Zina were delivered to influential MPs, the *News Of The World* newspaper and the Commander's second wife. Courtney was able to explain them to his wife and the security services, but the public were less reasonable. He lost his job as MP for Harrow East, and his political career was finished. Moscow does not usually take such drastic steps over critics on the back benches at Westminster, and many believe the public shaming of Courtney was a warning to somebody even better placed in the power structure, to toe the Kremlin line or else.

SEX SPIES

On 7 June 1967, CIA hospital staff pointed out Helen Clark to the KGB outside the Espom Girls Grammar school fence in Auckland, then made a brief intro. The KBG took her under their wing and trained her in feminism which she took to rapidly.

They sent Clark to Stockholm, to the University, to feminist lectures where she met like-minded feminists and communists enough to go to the theatre with. They went to Stringberg plays and it was here that Helen Clark met with the KGB who took her on the 95-minute flight to St Petersburg, to the Tavistock, where she was psychologically and sexually trained.

This included being gang-banged by KGB agents. Those in training included Vladimir Putin who was later to become Clark's controller in New Zealand and those who finish the Tavistock training are known as "Freud Hilton graduates".

During the training a skinny Polish man was presented with his hands bound and Clark stabbed him, killing him. This was all part of her training to take over a Western country and turn it to Russia's wishes.

Now one of the KGB's Sex Swallows with a twist, Helen Clark returned to New Zealand and spent a lot of time interviewing prostitutes. She collected the sexual secrets of politicians judges, lawyers, mayors, council staff, police, industrialists, union workers and any person of importance, or who might become important.

Vladimir Putin, a young Intelligence agent officially based in East Germany moved to Wellington, New Zealand on assignment in 1980–82. Known as Alexi Putin in Wellington, he was eventually promoted from Fisheries Inspector to Cultural Attaché. He had a choice of two body doubles, Valenti or Alexander Putin, to replace him when he returned to East Germany.

From 1980–86, the Trawler Wars were going on in New Zealand and all the world's top spies were based in Wellington. The Trawler Wars had been brought there by George H. Bush and this involved an American submarine following a Russian submarine, following a Russian fishing trawler, following an American fishing trawler that was playing underwater music of an American submarine.

Satellites weren't functioning consistently and the Russian fishing trawlers were placing locator beacons on the seafloor for their submarines in readiness to launch a nuclear strike. The American trawlers were then moving them.

At the end of the week the spies from all countries would meet at the Shamrock Hotel on Wellington's Rintoul Street from 7.30 on Friday nights. The New Zealand SIS occupied an old man's boarding house two doors up and they spied on these meetings collecting all the weeks secrets in one go.

After drinking at the Shamrock Hotel Vladimir (Alexi) Putin would meet with the go-between Penny Bright who would arrange a meeting with Putin's New Zealand Comintern agents – Helen Clark and Margaret Wilson. They often met under Wharf No. 3 where Clark would pass over the sexual secrets of the more prominent New Zealanders and then have sex with Vladimir Putin. Margaret Wilson, hobbled by one leg, and not a good climber, would keep watch.

A record of this was kept in Penny Bright's diary. Bright's father found this in 1982, removed it and took it to his friend, the leader of the Values Party in the Manawatu. They decided it wouldn't benefit either party and portended to destroy it. However, through a waiter over 700 km away, this information became available.

Helen Clark then became Prime Minister in November 1999 and Putin a month later.

Fishing for submarines
The East Coast fisherman Tom Sinel (then 60ish) reckoned he lost a set of trawler gear in the early to mid-1980s because he hooked a submarine off the 70 foot steel trawler Kaite ('small feed') while fishing off the East Coast. The door, sweeps and net were all gone.

Fisherman: "Sinel was ex-Navy and lost a lot of gear because he didnt' know what the fuck he was doing. He made it believeable for a small catch and lost gear. He used to sell hot fish to helicopters flying into Hicks Bay. This was before the quota system. It was getting to the stage when his employment with Watties was about to be terminated."

James Bond III: "Hicks Bay is a very deep-water bay and you can drop a line off the shore and catch deep-water groper. America did a survey of Hicks Bay and it was to be the South Pacific base for the Polaris nuclear submarines. They even dug underwater tunnels for the subs.
"At that time, early to mid-80s, when Tom Sinel lost his fishing gear, the East Coast was lousy with submarines".

Author: "So there you go Tom, you've been vindicated on that one."

Key to Murder Attempts

Contract Killing and Failed Contracts in recent New Zealand

Judicial Promotion Corruption

In 1989 Sian Elias stole NZ$0.5 billion (NZ$500 million or thereabouts) off her husband Hugh Fletcher. The overcharged amount was due to investors in China. China threatened to declare war on New Zealand. The Mossad intervened and brokered deal. China got to invade New Zealand via immigration from 1995 (the 'Asian Invasion'); Sian Elias got to keep the money and became the leading Sayanim Mossad agent in New Zealand; and the Mossad now does any murders Sian Elias wants, or the Mossad wants. Sian Elias was then promoted to Chief Justice and it is now her role to cover these murders up.

Sian Elias also failed to reveal information during the inquiry into her father's sex with patients in his doctor's surgery, and his subsequent form-signing for their government grants.

During a Disputes Tribunal hearing in January 1994, I accused the trial Head of Disputes Tribunal, Grant Aislabie, of being drug user. Grant was born New Zealand's hairiest baby and his mother contemplated smothering him with a pillow. He was also my family's lawyer, my father's drinking partner, he would confide in my mother (who was raised in Rangiora near Christchurch – retired British spy country), he had a series of mental breakdowns, and one of my closest relatives was one of his drug dealers . . . but Aislablie was in fear as he was hiding a much bigger secret.

Sometimes the troubled Grant Aislabie would come around to our home at 12 Norton Road in Tauranga to confide in my mother – his confidant – and we siblings were all sent away. This particular instance was around 1986, a time when, at least during the summer, Aislabie was a casual user of ecstacy and cocaine, as supplied by my MI-6 drug dealing close relative. The three adult children were sent off the property, but I ate worms at the bottom of the garden and Aislabie confided in making sexual advances towards his daughter, Carolyne, then about seven years old. I remember my mother saying: "Hush, don't tell anyone" and there being a long silence, or very diminished voices. So much for the family lawyer – just another Roman Catholic (paedophile) Freemason (Incestuous Child sex abuser).

From 1994–2002 there was a custody case over my daughter. Her mother worked for Intourist (1986–90) in Hungary during Cold War. Intourist bosses were KGB informants – part of the Comintern information gathering collective.

The Counsel for the Child is essentially another lawyer for the mother, and this was to be Paul Geoghegan – Grant Aislabie's 'career twin'. Both are Roman Catholics and Freemasons (allowed from 20 January 1980) and they support each other in attacking each other's enemies and promoting each other up the paedophile scales known as the Judiciary. This model has now spread to become 'Common Purpose'.

New Zealand had not shaken the paedophile shackles since the worst of the British and French invaded under the guise of religion and trade from the 1840s. Bishop Pompallier, Reverend William Yate and Colonel Wakefield are cases in point – they still have houses, terraces and roads named after them.

My daughter's mother, who had been my secretary in Moscow, was instructed to go and hide in Hamilton and use Paul Geoghegan to delay access and obstruct custody. Once Geoghegan had done this for four years, and tallied up the second highest Legal Aid fee in the country, and as soon as I won custody, Paul Geoghegan nominated himself as a judge and is now destroying families in Rotorua and Taupo where both fathers and mothers do everything they can to have their cases heard elsewhere.

Paul Geoghegan's self-nomination was accepted by the Freud Hilton graduate and KGB agent, Margaret Wilson – Helen Clark's Comintern partner (Communist International). Both were under the control of Vladimir Putin and they used to meet and have sex with him under Wharf No. 3 in Wellington between 1980 and 1982 during the Trawler Wars.

The go-between was Penny Bright and she left a diary record which her father stole off her in 1982 and took it up to his best friend in the Manuwatu – the president of the Social Credit Party for Manawatu, 200 km north of Wellington.

From 1998 to 2000, I was removed from my own house and extra section, then removed from my next house and extra section, my driver licence was taken off me, and my Architecture practise was blacklisted, I was successively boiler-plated, and then hobbled until it was neigh impossible to move forward. This is called 'blacklisting', hobbling' and/or 'boiler-plating'.

I was then removed from my Parnell rental, then from my next rental in Remuera – one of the poshest suburbs in Auckland. The Police use a battering ram on door and the whole frame came off. I was sitting inside videoing it. Sitting next to me was one of my lawyers. Visitors were coming up and down the ladder through the rear window. It had a slightly festive feel inside, but not outside.

I heard the police coms read out a list of about twenty charges as though they were convictions. They finished with: "He's a real bad bastard". When I requested my criminal record from the Wanganui Computer on 15 August 2003, the official letter came back on 28 August 2003 with " . . . criminal history . . . there is no information held . . . in respect of . . . Joseph Gregory Hallett . . . September 1961." (See Attachment "E", 'District Court Hearing I, Fines and Appeal')

The police manufacture crime in order to remove fathers from families so the fatherless children then get into crime – 90 % of all crime is committed by fatherless children. The police are a crime creation movement. They create over 80 % of all crime, and only solve 40 %, and this includes traffic and drugs. The police do not solve murders in New Zealand as they're normally involved, and 40 % of the people in jail are there for crimes they did not commit.

The police bought two dog wagons to the Remuera eviction and the whole stand off lasted several hours until the police lost patience and smashed the door in with two officers behind a battering ram. I was then escorted out – evicted – and an hour later the acting landlord, Pat Taylor, gave me a rent refund. His wife, Mary Taylor, had been hitting on me and refused to do the maintenance work – like supply hot water and have closing windows. Their marriage is not quite kosher and Pat Taylor had a habit of standing outside his Ray White Reality on Manukau Road and smoking cigarettes wherever the schoolgirls were walking past. His previous business was a mail order business and he was easily manipulated by the police – a skinny runt of a man with a fat wife compromised into police stitch-ups.

As soon as I was evicted, the real landlords realised I was right and closed the apartment down for six weeks while the maintenance I had been requesting for six months took place. This included putting a knew gas hotwater cylinder on the outside of the building. Someone else then moved in.

My Architecture career had been under attack since at least 1998. One of the methods used in blacklisting/ hobbling/ boiler-plating is to keep their target moving, so they can't set up a dependable shop, or put down roots.

From 1999, all of my relationships were terminated by counter-intelligence. Whenever I had a nice blonde thing in the car, police would either give me a ticket or take my driver licence off me. As a result, from 1998, when I first purchased a house, my Architecture practice was attacked, and from 1999 my income was reduced by 85% to 15%. I was then targetted for hobbling and my driver licence was removed – twice. Both times I was sober and stationary.

10/90 Wooton Road in Remuera, the scene of another police stitch-up and a new gas hotwater cylinder above the entrance.

In November 1999, I formed Fathering New Zealand Incorporated and began researching *Are You My Father? The Family Court and Other Experiments* – a 326 page sociology book which found the New Zealand Judiciary to be a crime creation and paedophile movement. Since then it has been confirmed that the Chief Justice Sian Elias is married to a bisexual child sex abuser, and Sian Elias is continually having sex with her chauffeurs in the back seat. This includes outside official functions where she sits on top and sings.

In May 2000 Fathering New Zealand Inc. gained charity status. This lasted until 1 July 2008. Initially there was funding, but as Prime Minister Helen Clark is, herself, married to the former 'President of the Auckland University Gay Society' in the 1970s who is a known homosexual child sex abuser, all charity funding was removed from "helping fathers access there kids and kids access their Dads" . . . towards any organisation that supported paedophilia.

This was any charity organisation that worked with mothers, fatherless children, and events without fathers present. Funding gave preference to drag queens. This was Prime Minister Helen Clark giving her husband free and further access to children, and his paedophile buddies further access to fatherless children.

The primary requirement of a paedophile is that the biological father is removed.

The destruction of the family is part of this. Paedophile Members of Parliament are also part of this. The paedophiles in Parliament and the Judiciary are active motivators towards the destruction fo the family, which is now an epidemic, so much so that it is now the "normal face of society".

Opinionated radio show hosts and former MP's like Pam 'Squawkery' Corkery have their own views of politicians. Her book *Pam's Political Confessions* (p. 9, 1999) and Wikipedia entry shows:

> "Politicians are, by and large, far more self-deluding, devious, bloated, insecure, egocentric wankers than I had feared."

Apart from his child sex abuse, which resulted in his house arrest in February 2004, the First Laddy Peter Davis imported many of his homosexual lovers. They would arrive at the Auckland International Airport and Peter Davis would demand a taxi with tinted windows which would drive him from 4 Cromwell Street in Mt Eden, to the International Airport and back.

Such a taxi van was owned and operated by John Kirwin, uncle of All Black John Kirwin, who took drugs, sprinted faster than any human should, then became the poster boy for depression.

Undercover: "I mentioned to the All Blacks that John Kirwin was hitting on barmen and they said, 'We're onto it'. The next thing I noticed was John Kirwin married to this Italian sheila with a couple of kids. That they intially met in Italy was fabricated."

Uncle John Kirwin (who watched a lot of porn) would regulary drive Peter Davis to pick up another homosexual at the Auckland International Airport and there was always kissing and fiddling going on in the backseat between the First Laddy Peter Davis and his next homosexual international rent boy. In December 2006 John Kirwin went missing. His Polynesian de facto wife of many years still doesn't know where he is.

Helen's homosexual child sex abusing husband, Peter Davis, is paid to be her husband, on call whenever the media requires him to cover up Helen's lesbianism. She actually hates having him around, snarls at him and turns her back to him whenever she can. He's just brought out on election nights and whenever the rumours re-surface.

Within months of *Are You My Father? The Family Court and Other Experiments* being published on 12 May 2002, funding dried up, although charity status remained until 2008.The Arts funding was going to Gareth Farr (34), a cross-dressing orchestra conductor and First Laddy Peter Davis' Christchurch live-in landlord and lover. He got a $50,000 grant grant from Creative New Zealand and celebrated it by having two $12,000 full length backless evening gowns made by a queer Parnell dress designer, then paraded them during a dinner at Helen Clark's house. As the drag queen 'Lilith Lacroix' he released the CD 'Drumdrag'. Meanwhile, Helen Clark was getting fisted by Marlyn and Heather, and Annemarie and Judith, etc etc.

Helen Clark's Deconstruction and the 2 April 2002 Murder Attempt

In January 2002, I went on Radio 1ZB and said that 'deconstructing' the subconscious was part of the Cold War and 'reconstructing' the subconscious was one of the most powerful tools.

Deconstructing the subconscious made one think like the state.
Reconstructing the subconscious allowed one to reach their own potential.

In February 2002, the deconstructed KGB agent Helen Clark then employed six (6) KGB agents into the Security Intelligence Service (SIS). I was told of this in May 2002. The KGB were part of an attack against me, placed in late March 2002, and enacted in early April 2002.

On 25 March 2002, I went on the same Radio 1ZB saying: "Helen Clark is a KGB agent and is deconstructed".

The radio host/Austraila Security Intelligence Organisation (ASIO) Captain Leighton Smith (Casio/'Oasis') asked me: "Have there been any attempts on your life?"

I replied, "No", and he inferred that there could be.

I didn't drive my car for a week as I was still researching *Are You My Father?* and was walking to the grocery store for supplies. Then on 2 April 2002, I went down to the basement carpark and noticed that the pedestrian door had been tampered with. The door jamb was loose, the bottom plate was loose, and the lock wasn't working. I got into my 1990 300E Mercedes and drove it for the first time in week.

While travelling along the motorway at 80 km/h I notice the front left wheel wobbling like it was going to fall off, so, after 4 km, I pulled off at the nearest exit, Gillies Ave, and cruised down to my mechanic – Austrian Motors. The Austrian Mercedes/BMW mechanic, Manfred, hoisted my car up, took the front left wheel off, and moved the wheel bearing locknut with his hand.

Manfred then turned to me white-faced and said: "I've been working on Mercedes for thirty years and I have never seen a wheel bearing locknut that I could turn with my hand. It has a reverse thread which means it tightens as you drive."

As a new immigrant, Manfred then told me how he loaned $100,000 to his new Kiwi girlfriend. She drugged him and he was out for three days. The last thing he remembered was a policeman – her real boyfriend – carrying him out of his house. With the help of her police officer boyfriend she then got a Protection Order against Manfred and kept the $100,000, splitting it with her real boyfriend – the police officer and fellow conman. The stitch-up was all stitched up and all judges refused to do anything about it.

They obviously considered it fair cop.

Protection Orders were brought in by the KGB agent Margaret Wilson in 1996 as part of Feminism.

Feminism is Gender Communism – socialism for mothers and a police state for fathers and it was an act of war during the Cold War, exported out of Russia, having been designed by the Jews at least by the mid-1960s.

When I was interviewing the KGB in Moscow on 9 December 1989, they mentioned this as: "Sex Communism . . . we have some of your Australasian women training here."

Both Helen Clark and Margaret Wilson were trained in Russia in Feminism/Gender Communism, and both are graduates of the St Petersburg Tavistock. In both cases, sex training was involved. Helen Clark mentioned Germain Greer as her mentor, and Germain Greer was well known for walking into a bar and having sex with anyone – usually the dumbest, ugliest, hairest man she can find. Truck drivers in Australia used to complain about her.

Helen Clark did the same in St Petersburg and was used as a KGB gang-bang prostitute. She went to feminist lectures in Stockholm, then met the KGB at Stringberg plays, then flew for 95-minute to St Petersburg, and was then taken to the Tavistock Mind Control Institute for deconstruction.

By July 2002 I had developed some Intelligence contacts in New Zealand and they confirmed that Helen Clark had employed six KGB agents into the SIS and that it was an SIS and police hit on me. Both Manfred-the-mechanic and Intelligence explained that it was possible to undo the wheel bearing locknut without taking the wheel off, but you had to take the wheel off to tighten it.

This was the first listed murder attempt: 25 March–2 April 2002. It was difficult to report to the police as the police were involved in the hit. As I've said before, murders in New Zealand go unsolved because the police are usually involved.

On 12 May 2002, Mothers Day, I publish '*Are You My Father? The Family Court and Other Experiments*'.

Having mentioned the deconstructon of the subconscious on radio, I then got a phone call saying there was a man from overseas who wanted to meet with me. So I drove down to the central North Island and met with him. He turned out to be the President of the Scientists Club in St Petersburg. We got to talking about reconstructing the subconscious and he said: "Why do you open your mouth when you don't know what you're talking about?"

European scientists can be quite abrupt and it's good to let it go, because their information is unique, as is their angle on many things. He then pulled out the most recent hand-held KGB equipment for 'deconstructing' the subconscious, which he had converted to 'reconstructing' the subconscious, now contained in what appeared to be an old doctor's bag.

Adolf came and stayed for a month in Parnell at 3/9-11 Fox Street, Parnell. He briefed me on the Cold War secrets, and we spoke a lot about gravity, anti-gravity, antimatter (at Krasnoyarsk, behind the town of Krasnoyarski) and flying the planet – "when you've worked that out, you've cracked gravity".

Anyway, after a months briefing and sufficiently impressed, he asked me if I would like to have a subconscious reconstruction . . . so on 20 July 2002, I was trained as the Prime Minister and Governor-General. Training was for 10 hours between 8 am and 6 pm.

The next day I met a former aide to a Prime Minister, and two weeks later I met the Spymaster, as that's how the reconstructing subconscious works. It draws people and events towards you.

We told stories and it was at least four years before they started to repeat. The Spymaster and I published four books together and the former Aide to Prime Ministers also contributed.

The 23 August 2002 Murder Attempt

In August 2002, I flew to the Cook Islands for a week with my blonde millionaire girlfriend. While there, I gave a speech at the Rotary on the 21st. (See Attachment "K", 'Rotary Club thank you') I mentioned that China was taking over the Cooks. Intelligence were present from USA, Australia, China and New Zealand. During the speech I stated that Helen Clark is a KGB agent. After the speech, Australian Naval Intelligence warned me that there could be an attempt on my life. He spent a bit of time drinking fast next to me before he told me this.

The Cook Islands are on the other side of the dateline from New Zealand, so we flew back on the redeye, leaving about five hours after my two-hour speech had finished. We arrived in New Zealand at 7 am on Friday 23 August 2002, now 12 hours after then end of my speech.

My Mercedes was parked undercover, but with paedestrian access. When I got in the car (or "get on the car", as the Cooks would say), the back of the steering wheel was sticky at 10 and 2 o'clock. It had been poisoned with epecac. This doesn't affect you until it reaches your mouth, as in when you eat, or rub your lips.

I was living in Judges Bay, where all the Judges live (essentially a small burb of Parnell) with my blonde millionaire girlfriend, which really pissed off the 'can't get a straight lay' authorities. Her sister had been taking care of the place and left us with a bowl of fresh fruit. At 8 am I picked up an apple and took a bite – the epecac transfering to my lips and stomach.

For the next eight (8) hours I was vomitting everything, shitting everything, I had hot and cold fevers like never before, I went unconscious several times, and I actually thought I was going to die. My spinal juices were doing strange things, like closing down. The only thing that saved me, I think, was the fevers I had as a kid. My body was used to extracting poisons and I had had a reasonably rough and tumble childhood.

I burnt off the fever, and by 7.45 pm I was just well enough to drive to pick up my 10-year-old from the Sky City Bus Station about 4 km away, ETA was 8 pm or soon after.

I hadn't eaten all day and the quickest feed was my semi-regular subway at the Caltex petrol station on Stanley Street, so I bought a deli tuna sandwich, took one bite and drove on. This was already a PM Helen Clark/ KGB/ SIS/ Police/ Mossad hit, so there were bound to be three snags in case the first and second failed.

The contract hitman Kimball Johnson used to complain to the police that they gave him so much killing work that he couldn't keep up. On at least one occasion KJ said to them: "Why don't you do your own dirty work?"

Ironically two of my Intelligence contacts knew him, and one got his deathbed confession, which included his doing hits for the police and government.

Anyway, a few minutes before 8 pm I drove onto Stanley Street and turned left into Beach Road, as is normal. There had been roadworks there since I had been overseas and there was a large round sign citing "no left turn", but this had been rolled over a 1.0 metre high orange/white interlocking barrier so it couldn't be seen, and was not visible from the petrol station exit I took.

This was a ploy to get me a second time, if the poisons didn't work, and it was Sunday before I noticed the sign had been reinstated.

No left turns are as rare as hen's teeth in New Zealand, especially when the roads are two-way. In America, they are the equivalent of a no right turn on streets where traffic flows both ways. In this case, there was no obstruction to turning left, other than the deposed sign, and turning left didn't even require a traffic light.

So I turned left onto Beach Road heading towards the Sky City Bus Terminal to pick up my daughter. The police had been hiding at the bottom of Constitution Hill in a position from where they could accost me from any direction. The driver was the twice-convicted criminal Constable James Matewhinau Cassin – a police contract hitman – part Maori as many of them are.

Even the Maoris complain about the michling-Maori Police.

I was driving slowly, around 35 km/hr when a police car pulled me over. Constable Suzanne Mead of the Auckland City 'Strategic Traffic Unit' got out of the car and asked for my particulars, name and address.

Operation Boiler-plate-greg-hallett had already removed my driver licence from the ashtray of my car (it was returned by Sunday by 3.45 pm) so I gave Mead my credit card and address. She got this information twice over eight (8) minutes. My daughter then rang my mobile. Constable Suzanne Mead had only been two months in the force and left soon after. She overheard the phone call and I asked her to follow me and gave her the destination – Sky City Bus Terminal. She retained the credit card and agreed to follow.

Under Gender Communism, a mother would have been escorted by the police, but fathers get attacked. They are pressured by the authorities to let their children down. This is called boiler-plating. So on the way, I was attacked again. This time by the driver of the Strategic Traffic Unit vehicle – Constable James Matewhinau Cassin, an unreformed criminal and police hitman, now up on charges of attempted murder.

Constable Cassin used a classic entrapment procedure. I was allowed to go and they did not follow me initially. I travelled at 35 km/hr in the outside righthand lane. After I was ahead by 500 metres Cassin slowly crawled out in the inside lefthand lane. I went through the first green light and waited at the second light – red.

Cassin, in the left lane, then turned on his grill lights for the car in front of him in the inside lefthand lane. The light turned green and I carried on behind other traffic.

At the next red light, Cassin turned on his roof lights and siren, then quickly changed lanes so he was now targetting me. He then jumped out of his car with his batten, ran up to my Mercedes, slammed his hands down on the boot, ran up to the driver's window and started smashing it with his truncheon. On the third strike the batten bounced out of his hands and onto the other side of the street. Twice-convicted for violent assault, Constable Cassin now considered this to be a serious situation as he was on the attack but was now unarmed. Phase two of the attack had failed.

Cassin is not very bright, but he is vicious when he is instructed that he is allowed to be vicious by his superiors.

I didn't get out of the car, the lights turned green and I carried on to pick up my daughter, still under the influence of phase one – the poisoning.

Three days later, on the Monday, I went to a specialist in Kingslan and she confirmed that my body was reacting like it had been starved of food and only fed coffee for three days.

Constable criminal-Cassin then ran back to his Strategic Traffic Unit car and radioed for all help. I drove off at the green light and got within 30 metres of the Bus Station on Hobson Street where I was surrounded by three police cars and three unmarked police cars. Cassin hauled me out of the car, threw me on Hobson Street, handcuffed me, drove me past my waiting daughter, took me to the police station, arrested me, 20 minutes later, unarrested me, then let me go.

My daughter was delivered to the station after waiting an extra twenty minutes in the Sky City Bus Station, alone, in the winter cold, at night – aged 10. When the police did finally pick her up, they tried to recruit her.

I was charged and convicted of everything they could think of – $1,490.00 in fines with a six month loss of licence, four house moves, relationship ended, then another ended. This was boiler-plating at its max. This was hobbling in progress.

Within 24 hours of exposing Helen Clark as a KGB agent in an international speech, I had been poisoned to near death, fined, lost my licence, removed from my work environment, from my social environment, had two successive relationships destroyed . . . and all for what – covering up that the Prime Minister is a KGB agent and Cold War criminal. That's quite well known now.

Why, because the truth of that is even worse. Helen Clark is a former KGB gang-bang prostitute, who had an illegal voluntary radical hysterectomy as part of the service, and tried to launch a nuclear strike on New Zealand with the KGB's Putin under the alias 'Alexia' Putin.

Sir Peter Elworthy and Michael King Hits

But even more importantly, the way Helen Clark, the SIS and the Police tried to murder me in August 2002 was the same way they murdered historian Michael King 19 months later in March 2004 – minus the car bomb. So I recognised the hit and the methods, and appreciate that the same team were involved – that is, Sian Elias' Mossad hit squad with add ons.

Sir Peter Elworthy was murdered six weeks prior to Michael King by digitalis (Foxglove extract) in his midnight snack. I was particularly alarmed because I was somewhat related to both of them. Sir Peter Elworthy was my girlfriend's uncle and Michael King was her stepmother's ex-husband, and all had some form of relationship with Bert Potter of Centrepoint 'sex commune' fame.

Bert was, in many ways, Helen Clark's controller, at least one of them. To put it plainly, while Helen Clark was Prime Minister, she was being run by Bert Potter. Indeed, she achieved everything he wanted, just falling short of legalising paedophilia – confirming Bert Potter's status as an Internal Affairs agent – and Helen Clark's need to kill those who knew of her sexual history – 'prostitute turned lesbian in a cover marriage to a child sex abuser' et cetera.

Even worse, we got forewarning of the Michael King hit by phone call on 3 February 2004, followed up by a meeting on 4 February 2004 from high ranking police in Wellington who feared: "Helen Clark is going to do a Night of the Long Knives". They flew up to Auckland to tell us a second time in person.

After an eight (8) year battle, I had won equal shared joint custody of my daughter on 16 August 2002 and this was reason for the Feminists to attack. Only two (2) fathers get custody each year in each Family Court. One is a good father (me, Architect/Chairman of a charity, Author) and the other is a bad father to keep the statistics of solo fathers looking bad.

This bad second father custody usually goes to a down-and-out drug dealer, or incestuous paedophile, who then supplies their child to the police for drugged-out sex.

Kahui Twins Murder

Macsyna King's father is a case in point. Her father had sold her to the police for sex from aged 11. Macsyna King then went on to murder her twin three-month-old sons, Chris and Cru Kahui. The police then charged her partner, Chris Kahui, and when no evidence turned up, and he was found not guilty, the first thing the police did was issue a statement saying: "We will not be charging the mother".

When the twins were initially dropped off to hospital, the mother, Macsyna King, shot through to Manurewa's Bellbird Arms Tavern for a drink and laugh with friends.

The whole double infanticide case was stitched up and murder-acussed Chris Kahui got the Secretary of Auckland Feminist Lawyers, Marie Dyrberg, as his lawyer. She's up there with Elizabeth Dawe in the droll stakes and covers for police paedophilia . . . as feminists do.

It's part of the Feminist-Paedophile bargain to remove fathers from families.

This may seem a little harsh, but it is the truth of the matter. All high-ranking police are either Catholics or Freemasons – either paedophiles or incestuous child sex abusers. The Police spokesman, Greg O'Connor, is a former drug undercover and, more currently, a heroin trafficker (2005), and the police rarely charge a paedophile. More often, they get in on the action, like with Macsyna King.

Guillaume Brollo - gbrollo@yahoo

The Paedophile-Police are then covered for by the Attorney-General, and when this gets hot, like at Banks Road in Christchurch, the Attorney-General and Prime Minister swop positions, as did Sir Geoffrey Palmer and David Lange – the first a masochist and the second into transvestites – despectively with Christine Rankin, Tasha and Alisha.

The embedded New Zealand Paedophile Movement

Going back to the custody battle, the lawyer for the mother was Elizabeth Dawe, the Counsel for the Child was Paul Geoghegan, and the case was heard in Hamilton.

Elizabeth Dawe is a lesbian, Paul Geoghegan is a Catholic Freemason and Hamilton is the paedophile capital of New Zealand from where Protection Orders emerged to make paedophilia easier on the paedophile . . . and stopped the father interferring.

Hamilton has been ruled by Catholic judges since they were called 'magistrates' back in the early 1970s. Hamilton also has the highest concentration of paedophiles anywhere in New Zealand. Margaret Wilson's 'Protection Orders' (which remove the protective biological father from families) was trialed, then started in Hamilton in 1996. I was one of the first test cases.

All the others involved in the case were either paedophiles, paedophile minders, or paedophile enablers. They were also lesbians, Roman Catholics and Freemasons.

On 10 April 2008, Elizabeth Dawe presented in the Hamilton Family Court that: "Paul Geoghegan likes dining out on seven year old girls". She should know. The lesbian Family Court lawyer, Elizabeth Dawe, is a major supplier of children to paedophiles in New Zealand's paedophile capital – Hamilton. This is supported by judges, lawyers, the courts, the police, and social services. In fact, the more you provide children to paedophile predation, the more you are promoted in the Court, police and social service system.

Rather than be promoted to a judge, the really really droll lesbian Elizabeth Dawe recommends paedophile accomplice lawyers become judges . . . but in Paul Geoghegans' case, he nominated himself as a judge. Elizabeth Dawe did not stop him.

The response from all Hamilton lawyers was: "I didn't vote for him."

Other lawyers used to walk up to Paul Geoghegan in the Court foyer and say:

"Fucked up anyone's life today Paul?"

Anyway, I digress, but not much. This is background to how far removed the police and judiciary are from justice . . . It is more like 'Just-Us' and Just-us is a paedophile and crime creation movement where anyone but them is the victim.

Helen Clark gets Compromised – the Dipolomatic Corp Speaks Out

There weren't any assassination attempts in 2003, but I was being heavily boiler-plated. Helen Clark, on the other hand, was stitched up by the United States President George W. Bush, a.k.a. Pirate Captain Temporary.

On 6 January 2003, I got the call off the Intelligence tree – this one, the Diplomatic Corp. I get these phone calls because I'm a leaf on a twig on the branch of someone's tree that's had multiple roots, and I can tell them stories they haven't heard of, that, upon investigation, turn out to be true.

Anyway, here's the story that stopped another assassination attempt in 2003.

In 2002 Prime Minister Helen Clark was publicly against the American war in Afghanistan. On 19 December 2002 she left for her month-long overseas holiday and when she returned on 19 January 2003 she said she had been staying at her husband's parents place in England. That may have been the case for some of the time, but George W. Bush phoned her and invited her to the White House in Washington D.C.

Helen Clark didn't turn up with her husband, but with her lesbian lover, Heather Simpson. The two dykes are known in Wellington as H1 and H2.

George W. Bush had been listening to the rumours from down under, from such CIA informants as John Banks . . . the paedophile who beat his first wife in 1972 at Banks Corner in Whangarei, then married another woman who does not have sex with men, then adopted three children from Russia, had an affair with a 13-year-old boy at Bethells Beach in 1996, then became the Mayor of Auckland for a second time in 2007 . . . and a Freemason.

So, the story as follows, went around the world amongst the Diplomatic Corp so fast, everyone was dining out on it for three days and paying for meals just so they could tell the story. Even the Diplomats in China were dining out on it and they don't even understand the English they speak.

Helen Clark (Helen) arrived at the White House and George W. Bush (George) asked Helen, "Would you like to stay at Lincoln Cottage?" She said, "Yes". When they arrived at Lincoln Cottage, George phoned Helen again and asked, "Would you like a typist?" Helen said, "Yes", and a bisexual female CIA honey-trap typist turned up. Helen and the CIA typist got it on and soon moved into Helen's favourite position – fisting. The CIA typists used lubricant with toxins in it and Helen found she could no longer control her urination.

She was pissing herself uncontrollably the next morning when George phoned and invited her up to the Oval Office. Here, standing or sitting, Helen was leaking, although this time it wasn't other's sexual secrets – it was her own.

George, not being a chimpanzee of great tact, showed Helen the photos of last night's sexcapades and Helen agreed to back the United States in the Afghan War and the Iraq war, just two months away. Since then, New Zealand's Prime Minister Helen Clark has been wearing incontinence nappies and hasn't said a thing against the Afghan War or the Iraq War . . . nothing, nadda, nulla, zip.

This is called 'a totally compromised Prime Minister' – a marionette, a puppet, a double agent Prime Minister who works for the destruction of their country, for the benefit of any country that has the photos of Helen Clark getting fisted, or supplying her incontinence nappies – so that's America, Israel, Russia and China.

The only exception would be those countries whose Diplomatic Corp did not get this story, which is just about no one.

> Robert M. Stockmann, 13 October 2008, the Netherlands: "The role of Sarkozy, Merkel, Blair, Brown and Helen Clark of New Zealand is that of Trojan Prime Ministers who have been carefully placed in position to manoeuvre their countries into the ditches."

Whenever you see Helen Clark campaigning on TV, she is pissing herself.

Whenever you see Helen Clark being interviewed on TV, she is pissing herself.

Anyway, enough of a laugh on the truth of the matter. Back to the story of police harrassment.

23 August 2002 Hit results in Loss of Licence on 13 August 2003

The twice-convicted criminal Constable James Matewhinau Cassin delayed my Driver Licence hearing until the 13 August 2003. While I was at a lunch break during this hearing a Maori man of about 40 years came up to me and said:

> "Constable Cassin hauled me off K' Rd one night about 9 o'clock for no reason, handcuffed me, took me down to the Auckland Central Police Station, took me to the basement cell, lifted up my arms so I was bent over, forward, then lifted up my left leg up and dropped me face down on the floor. He kept doing this until my jaw dislocated. He's a total arsehole. He's one of those fascist Maoris. He's one of those Maoris that Maoris don't like."

I found this Maori gentleman completely genuine and believeable. From this one other witness to Cassin's violence, I believe there are many, many more, and I believe Constable Cassin delayed the hearing for a year to give more people more time to forget his violence, or to lose their records of it, and for Cassin's superiors to cover up his gratuitous violence and remove it from any records.[1]

Judge J P Gittos presided and I represented myself. The lawyers present said I would have won had it not been for Judge Gittos, a.k.a. "the Police Stitch-up judge".

Under my questioning, Constable James Matewhinau Cassin admitted to 'two convictions for assault prior to joining the police'. He backed down on much of his evidence, but the nappy wearing prostitute Prime Minister wanted a conviction as I had exposed her as a KGB agent, and George W. Bush had ensured she wore nappies for the remainder of her days.

Helen Clark picked on me, rather than George.

Despite absolutey no evidence for dangerous or careless driving, Judge J P Gittos found me guilty on all charges, with maximum fines ($1,490.00) and penalties invoked. I understand this is because Judge Gittos was promoted from lawyer to judge on the usual basis . . . 'a judge is a lawyer who's been to the same brothel' . . . and covering for paedophiles and government associated criminals. To this illustrious list, Judge Gittos can now add "attacking citizens who expose government, police and judicial corruption".

---

[1] It is likely that the Head of Detectives 'Cassin' is Constable James Matewhinau Cassin's uncle, who employed James Matewhinau as a hitman for Members of Parliament.

. . . And since Helen Clark is married to a child sex abuser, Judge J P Gittos is a child sex abuse minder.

Judge Gittos allowed me to drive home removing my driver licence, effective at 5.15 pm 13 August 2003. This allowed me time to buy groceries.

The following day, on 14 August 2003, I was awoken by the police helicopter. I opened the back door at 8.30 am and there was a Matrix Security 4WD in the right of way next door. The Police helicopter was overhead towards the Auckland War Memorial, and a tracking device had been placed on my black 300E Mercedes. They were testing it.

Later I was to discover that Matrix Security is a cover for the SIS – the Security Intelligence Service – an organisation that specialises in Counter-Intelligence. Even the owner of Matrix Security didn't know, but when he counted his vehicles, he had 40 % more than expected, and couldn't account for the accounting . . . "Why am I not making any money?" he said to his wife while cruising the neighbourhood looking at all his vehicles.

The head of the SIS was then the vindictive nappy wearing Prime Minister, Helen Clark.

Even later I was to find out that New Zealand is run on Counter-Intelligence, not on Intelligence . . . and lies prevail in the Justice system, as with the government.

Possibly alerted by the swarm of Intelligence activity around me, the Spymaster arrived at my front door at 9.30 am with coffee and a newspaper. He offered to drive me, and drove me for next 3 months while I didn't have a licence (14 August–5 December 2003) and briefed me while I sat in the backseat sipping coffee, reading the newspaper he had prepared (red ink underlined) and taking notes of his historical tales

On the first day without a licence, at 10 am on 14 August 2003, we were driving to the Newmarket Post Office. By the time we got to the second intersection, we had a Crime Investigation Bureau (CIB) vehicle behind us, another coming up Ayr St, another from Domain Drive, and another coming towards us along Parnell Road.

They were all trying to "get Greg Hallett" as this offered promotion.

The Spymaster looked at me in the rear vision mirror and said: "What the fuck have you done? Four CIB vehicles are on to you and each is driven by detectives!"

Due to the boiler-plating, I had moved twice in two months and by September 2003 the building was literally crumbling around me with scavengers, then demolition workers. Without a driver licence it was difficult to work (Architecture), buy groceries, or survive, so I began concentrating on writing books.

Waiheke Island, one hour travel from Auckland harbour was starting to look like a logical option, and a third move. Here, in a remote cottage, I thrashed out *Hitler Was a British Agent*, while under the pressure of boiler-plating and surveillance from THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE and the Mossad (Israeli Intelligence/ the world's preferred contract killers). I also worked on the as yet unpublished, *Flying the Planet* (October 2003–April 2004).

Australia is run by the CIA. This means that any ASIO agent is also a CIA asset. In October 2003 I phoned the ASIO captain and CIA asset Leighton Smith on Radio 1ZB. He asked me: "Are you from the future?" No shit Sherlock. This is exactly what he said, so I used this as the catalyst for *Flying the Planet*. I spent six months on it, had it edited by two editors, then took 30 per cent of it to a retired NASA scientist on 29 March 2004. He kept it for a month and said: "At least 30 % of it is true – so that's 10 %. Over the following 12 months my two editors contacted me and said: "The stuff you have written about is now on the news". Possibly this was due to the Mossad and SIS stealing it, or I had cracked the mechanics of space.

I had written up formulas that worked, and had a key for the whole thing, and when it was stolen by the Mossad and SIS, the key was not part of it. Ha!

In April 2004, I was wondering why I was getting this advanced information then my daughter informed me that my great-grandfather Ernest Godward, New Zealand's greatest inventor. In the 1930s, he was also the world's foremost authority on the combustion engine. His business partner, Samuel Clemens (a.k.a. Mark Twain) was also friends with Nikola Tesla whose inventions we base Western civilisation on, and a couple of U.S. presidents.

What I worked out was new formulas for gravity, antigravity, some antimatter, interplanetary communication, how the Earth works, how the atmospheres are generated, 10-phase power, and generally flying the planet. This had initially been influenced by the President of the Scientists Club in St Petersburg who had stayed with me 18 months prior. What he told me, I got, and advanced upon. Much of what he said on other topics has also since come true.

Driver Licence returned due to Police Corruption

I went into the High Court. Here the Registrar informed me that my Driver Licence appeal was to be heard on 10 December 2003. I then got a letter from the Police Lawyers requesting my points. They pointed out that the case was on 5 December 2003.

So on 5 December 2003, I turned up to the High Court, unexpected, and represented myself with no notes, dressed in shorts and a teeshirt. I won the case, all sewn up in 15 minutes, by requesting Mr I Brookie of the Crown Solicitors, Meredith Connell, representing Constable Cassin, who hid behind the dead entity called "THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE", to provide a transcript of the 13 August 2002 District Court hearing. Mr I Brookie couldn't, and nor would the District Court, so I immediately got my driver licence back.

It should never have been removed. Taking my licence was just a police, judicial and government spank for exposing the New Zealand Prime Minister as a KGB agent.

During the hearing I accused THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE lawyer, Mr I Brookie of being a paedophile minder. He has not refuted this then, or since. All he did was look at the judge for guidance. Once I said this, Judge J Keane got straight to the point and asked THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE lawyer if he could provide the transcript.

Judges do not want to hear evidence of THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE paedophilia in their court, and Judge Keane finished off by saying: "I do not want this case appearing again" and then muttered "especially not in front of me".

THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE and the District Court both 'lost' the transcripts.

The Privacy Commission and Ombudsman's office also refused to release Cassin's criminal record. Anand Satyanand was involved in this and then became Governor-General.

Mahatma Gandhi's Paedophilia

The New Zealand courts are run by Freemasons and paedophile enablers/minders, sexual deviants, Polynesians kept ignorant of anything but the process, and Indians hiding that Mahatma Gandhi was a paedophile and a sex addict, addicted to sex with very underaged boys and girls. His international excuse was that he abstained from sex and slept with them at night to keep himself warm – but this didn't account for the Indian Summer.

Gandhi's paedophilia and sex addiction was confirmed by his message boy who now runs a grocery store just west of Auckland. Others who had met Gandhi said: "He was the ugliest man I ever met". But still, the New World Order was promoting paedophiles so their images were on the bedroom walls of admiring teenagers, providing further disbelief and cover from the next generation of wannabe adults.

Indians cite Mahatma Gandhi's paedophilia with boys and girls as:
"India's best kept secret – from the British".

As an aside, the reason Gandhi got the salt rights for Indians was due to his belonging to the same occult group as the British he was challenging. So Mahatma Gandhi was a sex addicted paedophile occultist who knew the sexual and paedophile secrets of the British he was challenging. And as such, Gandhi was promoted by the Media.

So we have to ask ourselves: "What is the media?"
Answer: "A child sex abuse and child drug movement!"

The Media Child Drug Movement

Things were not straight up and down, or on the level in New Zealand, in the police, judiciary, politics or the media.

Publishing *Are You My Father? The Family Court and Other Experiments* in May 2002 had given me some notoriety, and a few new contacts, as well as being in a lot of law libraries.

In April 2003 I was at a house on the corner of Gillies Ave and Kipling Road – no doubt named after the diminutive Rudyard Kipling, who also spent time in India with the paedophile Lord Kitchener, who in turn, gave a second kick-start to Freemasonry in New Zealand around 1902, thus ensuring Freemasonry had paedophilia and incestuous child sex abuse as a mainstay.

Kitchener was then murdered by Sir John Jellicoe at 8 pm on 5 June 1916 and Jellicoe was then made New Zealand Governor General (1920–24) and had Jellicoe Wharf named after him. Jellicoe never mentioned his time in New Zealand in his diaries, so obviously it was a penance position, but he'd still stop a parade whenever a young boy approached.

At this house at the corner of Kipling and Gillies Ave, Paul Holmes 14 year-old daughter/stepdaughter Millie Elder was present. Paul had raise her since she was 18 months old. She had been a sperm donor baby to two lesbians – Hine Elder and her unnamed, uncontactable lesbian partner from London. When they met, Paul was a former bankrupt, a failed radio show host, and an alcoholic going to AA at the City branch on Khyber Pass.

Here, at Alcoholics Anonymous, he met two judges who loaned him $850,000 as long as he never said anything bad about judges. Paul used the money to buy off Hine's lesbian partner. This gave him a child to destroy. His only natural born son, Reuben, when 11 years old, took a dump on the living room carpet in an attempt to gain some attention from the methamphetamine-addled, bisexual, sex for drugs family that is the Holmes household.

Despite this coming out and being confirmed in *The Truth*, (even if by heavily-weighted allusion) Paul Holmes remained "New Zealand's best known broadcaster", and even got to dictate who was to be his successor. Self-selected from the same cloth, Mike Hoskins is guaranteed never to tell the truth, especially not about his bisexuality, his sex with a Polynesian boy, and his sex with a man who had sex with a horse.

I modelled once for Coca-Cola with Hine Elder (for a *Sprite* ad), so I had some rapport with daughter Millie. Her friend, Emma, spoke to my 11-year-old daughter and said: "We're not cool. Don't be like us." Millie and Emma then started talking about losing their viriginity, smoking cigarettes, smoking dope, and trying P. I asked Millie Elder who she got her P from and she replied: "Paul". I assumed from her words, mannerisms and intention that this was her stepfather Paul Holmes a.k.a. "New Zealand's Leading Broadcaster" as "This person's alleged behaviour is an open secret and if someone like Hallett is hearing this stuff, then why aren't they [THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE]."[2]

---

[2] Bridget Saunders, *Sunday Star Times*, 'About Town', centre spread, 20 January 2008.

So Paul Holmes was supplying his daughter with methamphetamines (P) from at least the age of 14. She admitted using P from aged 16 in the newspapers, and admitted to getting it for free, which generally means sex-for-drugs, and on the street, Millie Elder is known as "Anal Lover". Millie was also supplied by 'Margaret M.' – a multimillionairess who had spent some NZ$15 million on P!

Millie Elder then stole Paul Holmes' Cartier watch and pawned it for P. Paul complained. The P dealers complained that the watch was fake, then Millie moved in with one of Paul's drug dealers, Perish (white Mercedes, tinted windows). Paul wanted to get back at Perish and appeared to set Perish up on fake kidnapping charges, so the police complied and put Perish in the Auckland Remand Centre (ARC).

When THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE returned to raid Perish's house, they found Millie using Perish's P stash, so charged her with three 'nine year charges'. Paul paid another bribe into the judicial slush fund . . . and after the longest delay . . . Millie went on trial and was sentenced on 31 March 2008 to 12-months supervision, but the supervision was only at night, and out in bars, and the Judicial Supervisor was helping Millie score drugs.

So within six months Millie Elder (a.k.a. Holmes) was back before the Auckland District Court to be sentenced properly. She was to be convicted for a second time – what do you expect with parents like that – but Paul Holmes found a cheaper way to cheat justice.

This was 'as advised by those with experience as tried-and-true insiders' – the mafia boss Peter Williams QC.

Paul found that the Crown Research Institute employees (formerly 'DSIR') would change the analysis of drugs to something harmless, like a household product, for $10,000.00. That was done, and the police themselves went into the Auckland District Court, to the first floor, and withdrew their own evidence. Two officers did this with two pieces of evidence against Millie Elder/Holmes. Strangely, this was witnessed by one of Peter Williams' narcs, who told me instead of Peter, as Peter had helped arrange it.

There is a point to all this. Paul Holmes regularly dinned with Prime Minister Helen Clark at the exclusive restaurant, Cibos, at 91 St Georges Bay Road in Parnell, Auckland where they were known as "The Two Gnomes". Here they colluded and plotted the suppression of news stories that would expose them, or their associates, and effectively destroyed the country by removing any morality in any authority.

This also made them bribeable to anyone outside the country who knew of their activities, so the end result is always some form of treason; and it would be fair to say that the 1999 to 2008 Labour Government was a treasonous double-agent government, backed by a media that ensured the real news was never told.

Back at Cibo's, the Porsche-driving restauranteur serving them, Phillip David Sturm (50) was convicted on 26 May 2006 of drugging young men with ecstasy, speed and alcohol, and having sex with the young drugged males. He got nine years.

Paul Holmes will rat on anyone for distraction news, to keep himself looking pretty, including fellow TVNZ presenter Tony Veitch, whom Paul ratted on to Prime Minister Helen Clark as a distraction away from news that Paul had supplied his step-daughter Millie with P and was active in child sex in Cuba – a sex holiday with Sir Bob Jones, etc.

Paul Holmes also went to China with Helen Clark in 2008 and that was kept on the hush-hush. While there, he asked the Chinese for asylum.The Chinese refused him saying: "We have enough drug dealers in China".

Along with Helen Clark's published heroin trafficking (2005/2007), Paul Holmes' destroying his stepdaughter's life with methamphetamine use and supply . . .

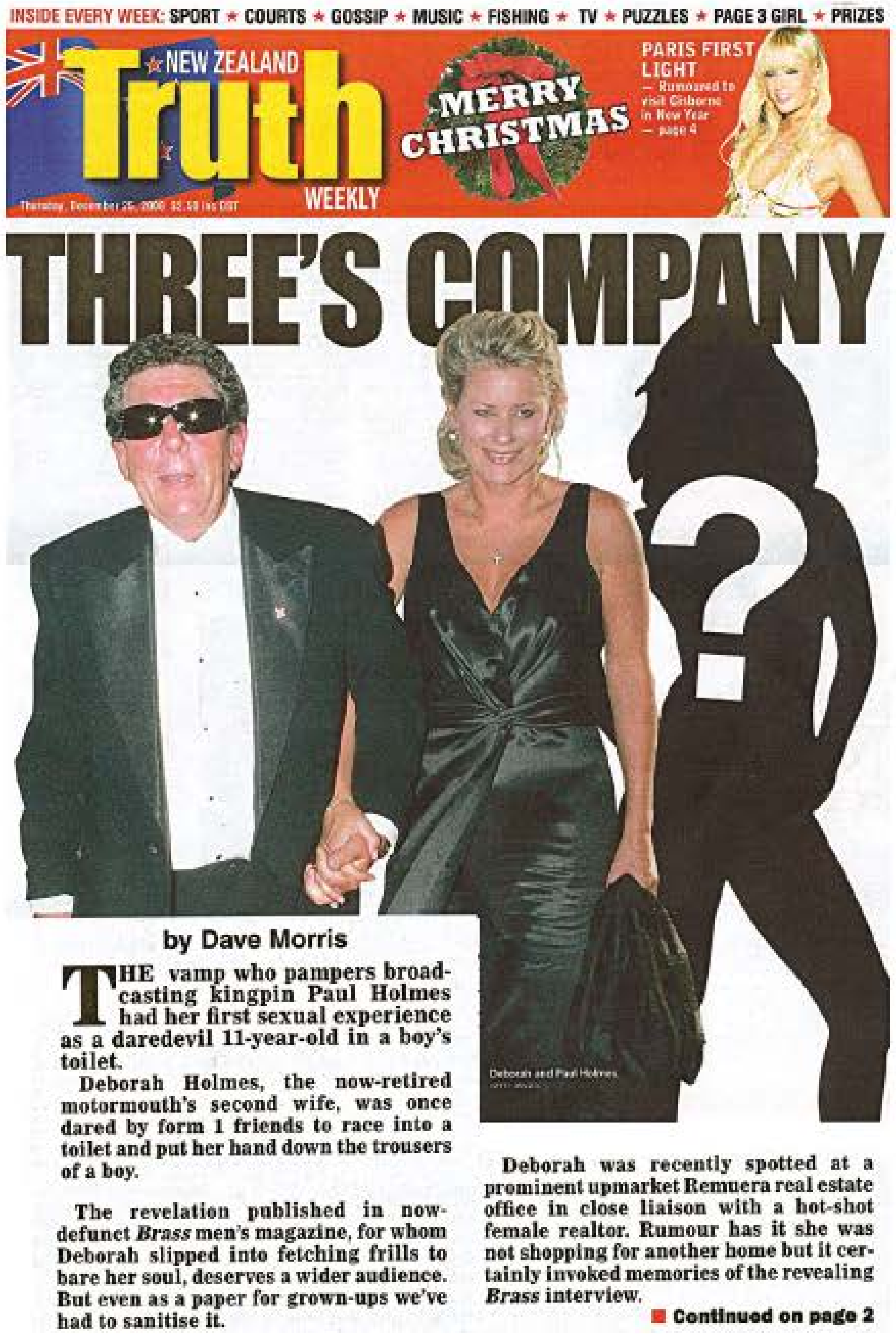

INSIDE EVERY WEEK: SPORT ★ COURTS ★ GOSSIP ★ MUSIC ★ FISHING ★ TV ★ PUZZLES ★ PAGE 3 GIRL ★ PRIZES

NEW ZEALAND Truth WEEKLY

Thursday, December 25, 2008 $2.50 inc GST

MERRY CHRISTMAS

PARIS FIRST LIGHT
— Rumoured to visit Gisborne in New Year
— page 4

THREE'S COMPANY

Deborah and Paul Holmes

by Dave Morris

THE vamp who pampers broadcasting kingpin Paul Holmes had her first sexual experience as a daredevil 11-year-old in a boy's toilet.

Deborah Holmes, the now-retired motormouth's second wife, was once dared by form 1 friends to race into a toilet and put her hand down the trousers of a boy.

The revelation published in now-defunct *Brass* men's magazine, for whom Deborah slipped into fetching frills to bare her soul, deserves a wider audience. But even as a paper for grown-ups we've had to sanitise it.

Deborah was recently spotted at a prominent upmarket Remuera real estate office in close liaison with a hot-shot female realtor. Rumour has it she was not shopping for another home but it certainly invoked memories of the revealing *Brass* interview.

■ Continued on page 2

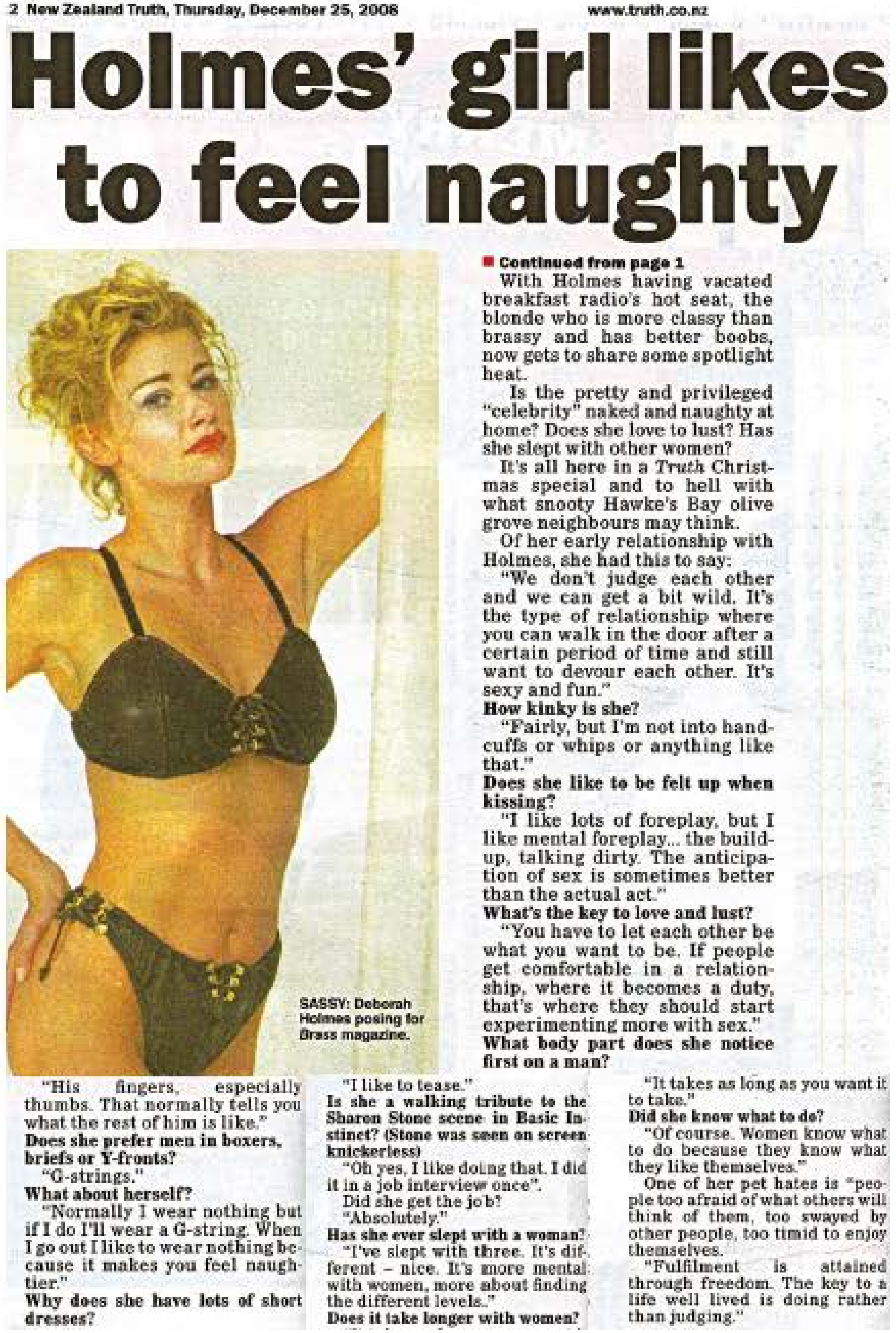

2 New Zealand Truth, Thursday, December 25, 2008 www.truth.co.nz

Holmes' girl likes to feel naughty

SASSY: Deborah Holmes posing for *Brass* magazine.

■ Continued from page 1

With Holmes having vacated breakfast radio's hot seat, the blonde who is more classy than brassy and has better boobs, now gets to share some spotlight heat.

Is the pretty and privileged "celebrity" naked and naughty at home? Does she love to lust? Has she slept with other women?

It's all here in a *Truth* Christmas special and to hell with what snooty Hawke's Bay olive grove neighbours may think.

Of her early relationship with Holmes, she had this to say:

"We don't judge each other and we can get a bit wild. It's the type of relationship where you can walk in the door after a certain period of time and still want to devour each other. It's sexy and fun."

How kinky is she?

"Fairly, but I'm not into handcuffs or whips or anything like that."

Does she like to be felt up when kissing?

"I like lots of foreplay, but I like mental foreplay... the build-up, talking dirty. The anticipation of sex is sometimes better than the actual act."

What's the key to love and lust?

"You have to let each other be what you want to be. If people get comfortable in a relationship, where it becomes a duty, that's where they should start experimenting more with sex."

What body part does she notice first on a man?

"His fingers, especially thumbs. That normally tells you what the rest of him is like."

Does she prefer men in boxers, briefs or Y-fronts?

"G-strings."

What about herself?

"Normally I wear nothing but if I do I'll wear a G-string. When I go out I like to wear nothing because it makes you feel naughtier."

Why does she have lots of short dresses?

"I like to tease."

Is she a walking tribute to the Sharon Stone scene in Basic Instinct? (Stone was seen on screen knickerless)

"Oh yes, I like doing that. I did it in a job interview once".

Did she get the job?

"Absolutely."

Has she ever slept with a woman?

"I've slept with three. It's different – nice. It's more mental with women, more about finding the different levels."

Does it take longer with women?

"It takes as long as you want it to take."

Did she know what to do?

"Of course. Women know what to do because they know what they like themselves."

One of her pet hates is "people too afraid of what others will think of them, too swayed by other people, too timid to enjoy themselves.

"Fulfilment is attained through freedom. The key to a life well lived is doing rather than judging."

. . . Paul Holmes also married he and his wife's call girl, Deborah Hamilton . . . and covered for Helen Clark's marriage to the homosexual child sex abuser, Peter Davis, and covered for Helen Clark's attempt to launch a nuclear strike on New Zealand during the Trawler Wars, her lesbianism, her affair with reporter/TV presenter Anita McNaught (a.k.a. McNaughty), her affairs with Judith Tizard (the Governor-General's daughter), Maryan Street (whom she made a Cabinet Minister for ACC, Housing, Tertiary Education and Economic Development), Heather Simpson (Chief of Staff, whose only qualification was coaching the Canterbury United Netball Team that won the nationals) . . . and her murders of historian Michael King, Sir Peter Elworthy, MP Rod Donald, Chris Beeby (Iranian Ambassador/ *Rainbow Warrior*, WTO, Antarctica lawyer) and her multiple murder attempts against my good self (author/ public speaker/ sociologist/ crime-solver/ historian/ Architect/ solo dad and 'a good man who stands up and tells the truth').

Without the heavily compromised P using, P dealing, former bankrupt, bisexual Jew, Paul Holmes, covering for Helen Clark, she would have been evicted from office and charged for multiple crimes, at least during her second term.

Paul Holmes was made New Zealand's most prolific broadcaster because he had no problem covering up for all sorts of sexual deviancy and drug use, as he was 'the worst of all of those things' himself.

This makes Paul Holmes complicit in Helen Clark's crimes and murders. She promoted him. She employed him. He worked for her.

The point of all this: 'If you haven't heard about the murder attempts on myself in the media, it is because the media are complicit to Helen Clark's murders and war crimes' . . . and if the judiciary haven't heard of my murder attempts it's because they are complicit to Helen Clark's murders and war crimes'.

Plus the judiciary and media have paid bribes to each other, like Paul Holmes $850,000, and some of the judiciary are very definitely corrupt. This includes any member who wants promotion, which includes most of the judges, and all of the politically appointed judges, who consistently find in favour of the murderer Helen Clark and her accomplices Paul Holmes and Chief Justice Sian Elias.

This also makes the judicary complicit to Helen Clark's war crimes.

When Sian Elias sees me in public, she notes me, my car, the colour and type, the number plate and the time, then pulls a hoody over her head and tries to disguise her identity. (See Attachment "I", 'District Court Hearing II')

And by war crimes, I mean that Helen Clark is an international war criminal, having been trained in the St Petersburg Tavistock, and being a graduate of the Freud Hilton – the mind control institute for double agent Prime Ministers and Presidents.

Helen Clark had controlled New Zealand through this training and for the purposes of treason, that is, destroying all vestiges of New Zealand. If this seems a longshot, then consider that Helen Clark's controller, Vladimir Putin, lived in Wellington for two years and met with Helen Clark on a semi-regular basis. This was confirmed in Penny Bright's diary, as stolen by her father in 1982.

So 2003 was a busy year, but there were no assassination attempts on me. There was just the cover up of the murder of David McNee and the contracting of hits picked up by Sian Elias.

The next assassination attempt on me was to follow the assassinations of Sir Peter Elworthy (13 January 2004) and Michael King (29 March 2004), both of whom I had some vague relation with.

Murder Warnings

The next attempt on my life was on 14–22 May 2004 with half-a-dozen forewarnings.

The first was murder attempt was under the direction of Prime Minister Helen Clark using epecac on the steering wheel on 23 August 2002 – a similar style to which Sir Peter Elworthy and Michael King were killed, albeit Peter got a stronger drug (Digitalis) and Michael got the poison (Epecac), plus the car bomb – an impact-activated explosive with a remote control backup.

All I got was the poison.

Michael King was 16 years older than me. Had I been an older man, I might not have survived the epecac.

The Elworthys had been hosts to Governor-General Sir John Jellicoe in the early 1920s and were always a noted family, and thus, a family of influence. What they said counted, so they were always a target when they had knowledge of extreme government corruption.

The second was a meeting in October 2003. I was usually the teaboy for these Intelligence meetings, but in this case my two contacts were both making the tea and having a discussion in the kitchen (no door) so that I could hear from the lounge, but could not identify who was saying what. They were talking about contract killings taken out on Sir Peter Elworthy, Michael King, Sharon Crosby and Alison Holst (who had an alternate target) and that no one had picked them up, as no one had anything against them.

Their main crime was that they knew of Helen Clark's sexuality – a lesbian, a former prostitute, and married to a homosexual child sex abuser – and Helen Clark had to prove herself to the UN by killing someone close to her.

Centrepoint Commune – a Satellite Socio-Sexual Experiment

Some of this information about Helen Clark came via the Internal Affairs agent and convicted paedophile Bert Potter, who was running primal scream workshops in Wellington in the 1970s, before he started up the Centrepoint commune in 1978, 2 km outside Albany, then a satellite town just outside Auckland.

It was here, at Centrepoint, in October 1981, that I (20) interviewed Bert. I lived there for six months either side and it was a clean interview – without warning, short and sweet, to the point, and telling. I had used the psychological models I had learnt there for the interview.

It was easy for me as I was known as a 'rapid integrator'. That is, I could learn, absorb, and act as if, pretty much as soon as I got the information.

There was always an Internal Affairs agent, and often an SIS agent living at Centrepoint. One of the Internal Affairs agents arrived in an old car with gumboots attached to the front bumper. I was neither. I've always been my own agent and I've always run myself, although not necessarily in the same timeframe. Some of these programmes that we run go on for decades, even lifetimes.

Most of the hit list attended Bert Potter's Primal Scream workshop in Wellington. I turned up later on the scene, when much of the psychology was in the next stage of development, but a lot of the old programmes were still being run.

I didn't really go for primal scream. I thought it was a wank, suitable for frustrated others, but not for me. I was also subject to endless naked groups. Fuck that, but not those ugly naked people. It was supposed to push boundaries, but it just got me used to being bored around frustrated ugly naked people with endless and small issues.

I was there for the cheap board ($60/wk), the 100 acres of bush to run around in, the latest psychological models, complete with training, and some 'not bad' architecture by Don McKenzie. I also liked the big dinners and the 'every day was Christmas' feel.

Along with a lot of other "youngsters" like me, we were in the 'bad dishes' group and had to be rounded up for the task. I preferred carrying out the slops to the pigs, then going into the back of the fridge and slipping some rum and coke into a coffee mug and attending the neurotic Tuesday night meetings, where everyone lay around on beanbags, and each other, and someone bitched about their needs not being met, or their boundary being infringed.

It all began to come unstuck when someone brought up the topic about the teenage girls getting into prostitution. That was the beginning of the end. Some good people left then and began to attack the community from the outside.

We used to wear community clothes and the good clothes went early. My biggest fear was waking up late and having to wear harem pants to university.

When the sex abuse hit the newspapers, it was an opportunist actress who laid the most complaints. She was Jewish, and the daughter of a Mayor, and collected the stories from the other girls, presenting them as her own. She ended up getting the greatest amount of funding, much of it coming indirectly through the Arts supporting her Jewellery business.

The Contracts

Anyway, back to the main story. As it turned out, no killers could be found for the contracts, so within the same month of October 2003, the Chief Justice Sian Elias – the highest ranking Mossad agent in New Zealand – picked up the hits and contracted her Mossad to do the dirty work along with her husband, the bisexual child sex abuser, Hugh Fletcher, who was also involved in the cover up of the murder of his homosexual child sex abusing sex client, David McNee. McNee's death date was suppressed, but after much searching through anonymous lawyers we found it to be the 20th of July 2003.

The next warning came from one of the heads of THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE in Wellington on 3 February 2004, followed up by a meeting in Auckland the following day where they believed Helen Clark was going to commit a "Night of the Long Knives". This meant that she was going to kill people of influence who knew she was lesbian with a penchant for fisting.

This Wellington phone call and the Auckland meeting came after the contract hit on Sir Peter Elworthy on 13 January 2004 (digitalis in his midnight snack). This was planted by Mossad under the direction of the Chief Justice Sian Elias, herself exposed and published as a contract killer since May 2007. Elias has not denied it. Rather she shuddered and walked out of the room when it was mentioned to her by a reporter.

The SIS gives me info on the Michael King Murder

On 29 March 2004, historian Michael King was killed in a "freak accident" in Maramarua (90 km south of central Auckland) where his 1993 Subaru spontaneously caught fire. He and his wife Maria Jungowska had to be identified from dental records. Their car was followed by a Mossad couple who were not interrogated by the police. Neither the local towing company on duty, Ngatea Impound Towing, nor the driver, Mike Speedy, were called.

Freakily, on Sunday 28 December 2008, I was journeying on my holiday from Auckland, heading south, and due to pass through Maramarua. In the morning I was urged to meet with the former 2IC of the SIS, and when I'm urged, I visit. So after cleaning the Mercedes (it's an old family ritual) and packing for the holiday, I went to the meeting where he warned me: "Your car is likely under electronic attack, your life could be under attack, and you can expect as much".

I then cruised down the motorway, got through the new highway, hit the East Waikato boundary, then the ill-fated Maramarua, and all was going well until just before where Michael King was murdered – just south of Heaven's Rest and Heaven's Road. That name made me think more that King's death was an occult Mossad hit.

It was at the death site that my Mercedes began to really break down.

It was like a Security Intelligence Service sign saying "put two and two together".

So I did.

The car started to lose power, like it was only running on three cylinders, then two cylinders, then one. This was intermittent but became more frequent, and when I finally pulled over 10 km later at Coxhead Road, the car stopped completely as I slowed down. This was no-man's land, at least 15 km between petrol stations, shops, or even the smallest of towns.

I pulled over around 4.40 pm and then rang the Automobile Association (AA) at 4.43 pm for assistance. I gave the AA my details and they said a tow truck would arrive from Ngatea within the hour.

The AA then texted the tow truck driver to his 021 mobile number, but their texts never got through. The AA considered this to be very strange, so they texted on his secondary 027 mobile number (the public one) and this got through after a 25-minute delay.

I was parked in a very remote area, but was clearly visible from State Highway 2 on the corner of the metal Coxhead Road. If I had broken down further up the metal road, away from visible sight and conking out at low revs, it could have been a 'hit'.

During the hour there, no cars came down in the first 35 minutes, and only two cars thereafter. On the highway, the holiday traffic was thick and regular, but there were at least two patches where their was no traffic coming either way.

Meanwhile, several vehicles pulled up close to me, not so close as I could identify the driver, but close enough for them to identify the vehicle and me. I was standing outside.

At 4.50 pm a cop car pulled over on State Highway 2 and stayed around long enough to see that my bonnet was up, the car wasn't working, I was standing by, and identified, but the cop made no attempt to assist. He drove off after one minute.

Cops very rarely help these days. They used to help, but not any more. Now their job is to fine people to pay for the DPB and the international deficit. If I had broken down and parked illegally then they would have come over.

Five minutes later a blue WRX pulled up in the same location as the police, stayed two minutes and also didn't help. I suspect it was the Internal Affairs undercover car for the area.

Internal Affairs undercovers tend to challenge others to races or cause designated accidents. I've met an Internal Affairs asset who did this, and for causing 'accidents' they usually use 'write-off' cars. This WRX Subaru wasn't a write-off, it was a 'racer' for spotting or creating speeding tickets fast enough to lose ones licence. A silver subaru is also used in that area, more towards Maraetai and Clevedon.

Five minutes later, a 3 litre Hiace van did a U-turn and parked 15 metres in front of me on the exact corner of Coxhead Road and State Highway 2, stayed for 13 minutes and also didn't attend. After about 10 minutes I approached him, saw him in the passenger mirror and he was in his driver seat, but appeared to be on his cell phone. He wore a white teeshirt, was of the SIS type, and left three minutes before the tow truck arrived.

I'm sure I was being assessed. Typically this is for 'fear' and 'position for termination'.

The second number texted from the AA to Ngatea Impound Towing got through and the tow truck driver turned up at 5.18 pm. It took him 35 minutes, but was only a 10 minute drive, and he had left as soon as he got the message. So it took 25 minutes for the AA message to get through.

We spent the next 45 minutes sitting in the car chatting and he confirmed, quite innocently, that he was the tow truck driver who was on duty during the Michael King fatal incident, and should have been called, but wasn't. Just across the road from him was the Ngatea Fire Brigade and they were called.

I was advised that my Merc probably had an "ignition module" fault which caused the 'catalytic converter' to overheat and the EXHaust TEMPerature light to come on. The last ignition module he had quoted for a Mercedes was $7,000. This was just as the former 2IC of the SIS suggested, and a $7,000 bill would have written off my car without the spectacular kudos of a flaming accident and death confirmed by dental record.

Luckily for me, I was an AA+ member of more than 10 years, so I got a free tow back to Auckland. I also got the car fixed the next day, by Autohaus. It turned out to be the Camshaft Positioner which is readily accessible and can be removed with just two Allen Keys. It was to cost $1,000, but they ripped one off a new engine that came in the day before, and only cost $400.00.

So it was a cheap piece of information really, and one has to wonder whether the whole thing wasn't an information granting exercise: "Ahh, thank you very much".

I did some further investigating into the Michael King hit and found from other sources that the police were arguing over which towage company to use.

The police in and around Maramarua prefer to use the illegal tow truck drivers. Ace Towing, for instance, is owned by the Black Power gang and the police prefer to use them.

Many of the gangs also managed to bribe the police into buying them houses and businesses in exchange for 'going straight'.

The police actually went to the gangs and said: "What would it take you to leave crime and go straight?" and the gang members replied: "A large house, a business, and a tow truck company" etc.

The police are that weak in New Zealand . . . and the gangs are that strong.

So wherever the police are doing some sort of a crime or hit (like an accident after racing with an Internal Affairs Subaru), they use one of the illegal tow truck drivers, and in the case of Michael King's murder, Ngatea Impound Towing was not used . . . but nor was Black Power's Ace Towing.

Inspector Leo Tooman of East Waikato was in charge and he was also in charge of impounding car accident vehicles in that area. Michael King's Subaru was taken to Williams Salvage Services Ltd at Colombo Street in Frankton, Hamilton, but even the local tow truck drivers didn't know that. Nor did I until afterwards.

Waikato Area Commander Clint Rickards had been stood down eight (8) weeks prior but he immediately started working with the Parliamentary Ombudsman Anand Satyanand, a cover up artists, and Satyanand was very quickly promoted above all others to the position of Governor-General and Clint Rickards got off his rape charges.

Helen Clark did the promoting. Sian Elias did not stand in her way. Three others were already on the G-G short list ahead of Satyanand.

Many of these G-G nominee's refused at the last minute because the government was so corrupt (i.e. into murders), so only the most corrupt accepted the nomination, and that was Anand Satyanand – 'The Brown Humpty Dumpty' – the fatest ugliest man in New Zealand.

Police Executive as at 1 August 2002

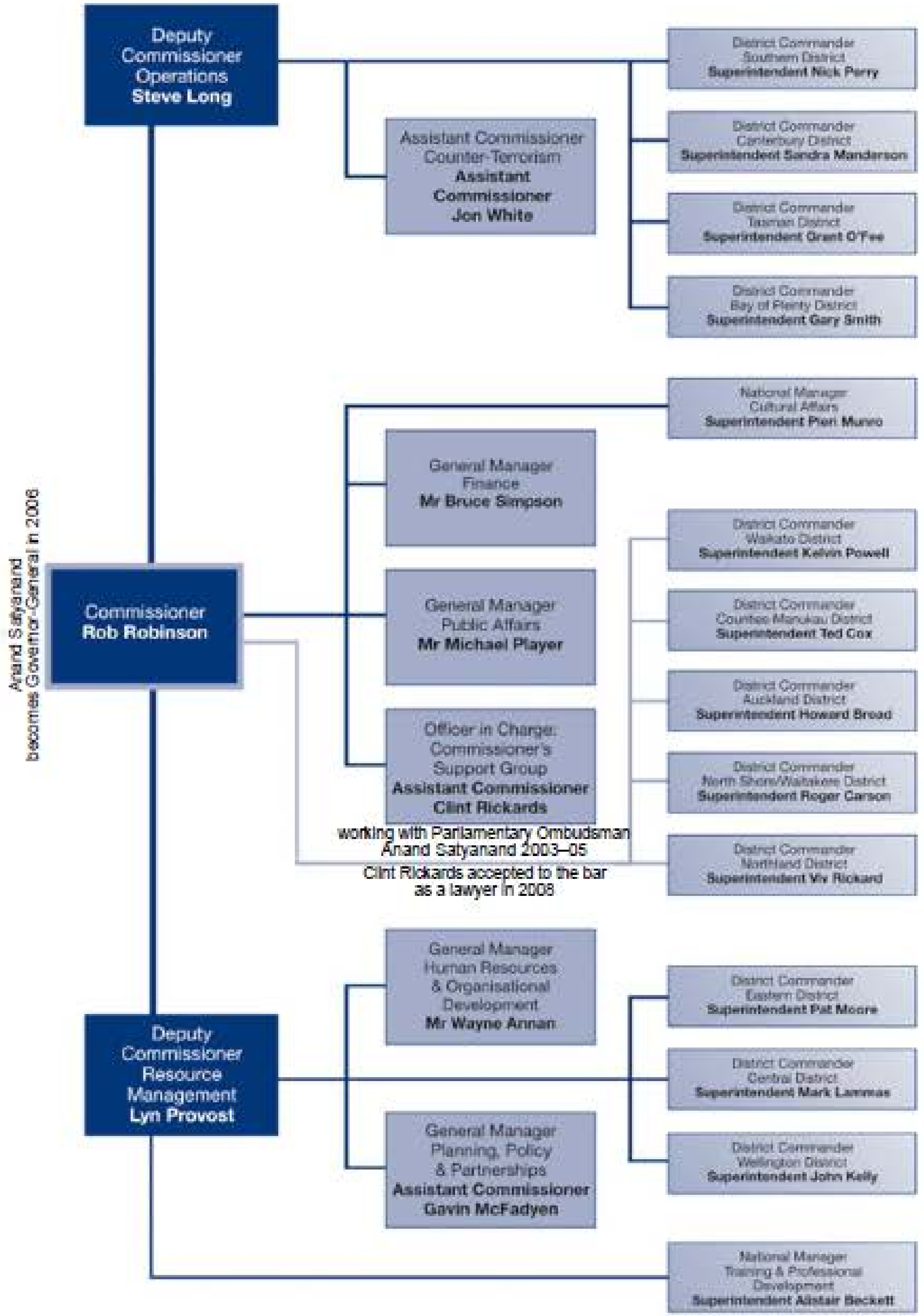
Deputy Commissioner Operations
Steve Long
Assistant Commissioner Counter-Terrorism
Assistant Commissioner Jon White
District Commander Southern District
Superintendent Nick Perry
District Commander Canterbury District
Superintendent Sandra Manderson
District Commander Tasman District
Superintendent Grant O'Fee
District Commander Bay of Plenty District
Superintendent Gary Smith
National Manager Cultural Affairs
Superintendent Pieri Munro
General Manager Finance
Mr Bruce Simpson
Anand Satyanand becomes Governor-General in 2006
Commissioner
Rob Robinson
General Manager Public Affairs
Mr Michael Player
Officer in Charge: Commissioner's Support Group
Assistant Commissioner Clint Rickards
working with Parliamentary Ombudsman Anand Satyanand 2003–05
Clint Rickards accepted to the bar as a lawyer in 2008
District Commander Waikato District
Superintendent Kelvin Powell
District Commander Counties Manukau District
Superintendent Ted Cox
District Commander Auckland District
Superintendent Howard Broad
District Commander North Shore/Waitakere District
Superintendent Roger Carson
District Commander Northland District
Superintendent Viv Rickard
General Manager Human Resources & Organisational Development
Mr Wayne Annan
Deputy Commissioner Resource Management
Lyn Provost
General Manager Planning, Policy & Partnerships
Assistant Commissioner Gavin McFadyen
District Commander Eastern District
Superintendent Pat Moore
District Commander Central District
Superintendent Mark Lammas
District Commander Wellington District
Superintendent John Kelly
National Manager Training & Professional Development
Superintendent Alistair Beckett

Michael King lived in Opoutere between Whangamata and Pauanui at the base of the Coromandel Penninsula. He drove for an hour and a quarter and was heading north on State Highway 2 when he hit a tree on the opposite side of the road, so he had to have pulled hard to the right. If he had missed the tree, he would have driven through a No. 8 wire fence and into a flat grass paddock.

Since his death, the tree has been removed, the road has been widened, and there is now no evidence of the 'accident', or where it happened. Normally there is a white cross on the road where a fatality occurred, sometimes with the name and date, but at Michael King's death site, there is none of this, nada, nulla, nothing.

Since the accident, a Senior Crash Unit has been formed for serious crashes and they take everything away, all bits of scrap. They used to come back the next day and take most of it away, now everything gets taken away as soon as the initials have been completed . . . and there has been no investigation into Michael King's crashed vehicle.

The rape accused Police Area Commander Clint Rickards, who had been stood down eight weeks prior on rape allegations, got off all convictions, although his two cohorts were convicted, the entire country found him guilty, and the police's own Operation Austin found Clint Rickards had raped 34 women in Rotorua alone . . . and as a former gang member, Clint Rickards was quite ofay with murder.

Clint Rickards had been the Area Commander for both intersecting areas (Waikato and Auckland) and the hit took place at the intersection of these, 10 km into East Waikato. As a former Mongrel Mob gang member in the Hawke's Bay, he may have been too close to Black Power's Ace Towing for it to be used. Plus the police like to keep their illegal towees out of the limelight. So the job went to Inspector Leo Tooman of East Waikato and his contacts.

Clint Rickards has since been accepted by Chief Justice Sian Elias as a lawyer, despite national protest, so everyone involved got promoted to inconceiveable heights.

Michael King and Maria Jungowska died from epecac on the steering wheel and an impact activated explosive on the petrol tank on a pre-arranged trip as a reward from their publisher for sales success for King's October 2003 book, *The Penguin History Of New Zealand* selling over 70,000 copies – 1,500 is a "Best Seller" in New Zealand.

The King-Jungowska death was deemed unsolved and Wikipedia reports it as ocurring a day later. The Mossad couple in the car behind had a remote for the bomb as back up.

University of Auckland – Murder Inc.

The hit was organised by Sian Elias with help from her husband Hugh Fletcher and was run from the University of Auckland.

Other Mossad involved were Zev 'William' Barkan/Bruckstein (a known contract killer who escaped), Eli Cara and Uriel Zoshe Kelman (who served 76 days of a six month sentence), and Anthony David Reznik, an Auckland University lecturer and Auckland Jewish Council member, who escaped to Hong Kong, and then to Israel.

Rather than be charged, Hugh Fletcher was then made Chancellor of the University of Auckland on 18 October 2004. This provided distinguished cover and Sian Elias remained the Chief Justice of New Zealand, also maintaining a position beyond reproach.

The University of Auckland is now Murder Inc., as is the New Zealand Judiciary.

Hugh Fletcher then employed the fraudulent paedophile Alan Gibbs as his 2IC. Gibbs was in on the leverage sales where a $20 item is sold for $2 million to a buddy who actually pays $20 for it, then it is on-sold to another for around $2 million and they split the profits.

David McNee's Murder

During this time, Hugh Fletcher was running child sex abuse soirées. One of his members, David McNee, was murdered by one of the 18-year-old naked Polynesian dancers, Phillip Layton Edwards. Sian Elias, Helen Clark and Judge Coral Shaw then covered up the enquiry into this murder. Technically, this makes all of the above accessories to the murder.

Phillip Edwards was then jailed for murder despite having the names of the other child sex abuse soirée members. His Screws (prison guards) refused to post his letters to them.

Just before this happened, Sian Elias had the Mossad doing surveillance on me from 14–22 May 2004. (For a more detailed look at this murder attempt, which links with the Michael King murder, See Attachment "T", 'Mossad Murders in New Zealand'.)

Rod Donald's Murder

The same group then murder the Green MP Rod Donald on 6 November 2005. He was heterosexual – rare amongst Labour, especially in the higher ranks – and wanted a cabinet position. The murder was ordered by the feminist lesbian Helen Clark and carried out under Sian Elias' orders using a heart gun. A heart tracker is attached onto the sniper, like a laser, and invisibly attaches to the target's heart causing arhythmia – fast and slow heart palpatations, and a heart attack. It's been around since 1974.

Augie Auer's Murder – Death to those who expose Global Warming as a Hoax!

Helen Clark was then complicit in the murder of Augie Auer in 2007, also with the heart gun.

Augie Auer had been the Chief Meteorologist for the 'Meteorological Service of New Zealand Limited' (1990–98) and presented the TV3 weather forecast for several years, as "New Zealand's most colourful meteorologist".

In 2006, he helped found the 'New Zealand Climate Science Coalition' and argued against Global Warming (the Global Warming hoax), which counteracted the statements of his former employer, the Met Service, who were then replaced by the National Institute for Water and the Atmosphere (NIWA) in 1992, and Augie was also critical of their statements.

On 1 April 2007 Augie put out a call to disband NIWA as its explainations were "nonsense statements".

The Global Warming hoax is built around 'nonsense statements'.

On 19 May 2007, Augie said: "A combination of misinterpreted and misguided science, media hype, and political spin had created the current hysteria and it was time to put a stop to it . . . It is time to attack the myth of global warming."[3]

Augie was not to be bought, but he was to be killed 22 days later, before his full, useful and respected statement could be backed up by further discussion, like:

> "Water vapour was responsible for 95 % the greenhouse effect, an effect which was vital to keep the world warm . . . If we didn't have the greenhouse effect the planet would be at -18° C, but because we do have the greenhouse effect it is +15° C, all the time. The other greenhouse gases: carbon dioxide (CO_2), methane, nitrogen dioxide, and various others including CFCs, contributed only 5 % of the effect, CO_2 being by far the greatest contributor at 3.6 % . . . [Reducing Global Warming by reducing CO_2] would be like trying to increase the temperature of bath tub full of water [by] using one drop from an eye dropper."[4]

While dining out with family in Melbourne and celebrating his 67th birthday on 10 June 2007, Augie Auer died suddenly from a heart tracker attached to a sniper causing arhythmia and a heart attack. It was a Mossad assassination for a Government and New World Order hit.

---

[3] *The Timaru Herald, 'Global Warming Debunked'*, 19 May 2007.

[4] *Ibid.*

The Global Warming hoax then created a new worldwide tax and Carbon Taxes came in. These were misnamed 'Carbon Credits'.

Helen Clark then signed up with great eagerness and sabotage, and it will cost New Zealand NZ$0.5 billion per annum. Most of this will go on administration and a paper trail, which all farts out carbon.

But, hey, it's another tax, and that's what Governments do . . .
and the contract killing Jews are all about money and taxes.

Intelligence agents somehow seem to remain legitimate targets, even when they live and work in the private sector, retired from the military. But then you are not supposed to use your intelligence knowledge to counteract any new fraudulent trend, so here's further excuse for the murder in the hidden Augie Auer legacy . . .

> Augie Auer had been a CIA weather manipulator over Vietnam in Op CLEAR SKIES, which strangely caused clear skies over communist North Vietnam, and torrential rain during the monsoon season over South Vietnam. This made the North Vietnamese more productive, and the South Vietnamese sitting targets. The U.S. and Allies were not allowed over the border to North Vietnam (as it was a war of continuence, rather than a war to be won), so the clear skies over North Vietnam could not have been designed by the CIA for easier bombing – only for more communist productivity – hence 'CIA' stands for "Communism in America", which is exactly what they now have, more so with the Government buying equity in the formerly private banks from October 2008, and nationalising banks worldwide.

Career Hobbling and Financial Assassinations – Judge Hole called into Corruption
Just prior to the 14–22 May 2004 murder attempt, I had finished *Flying the Planet* and had it checked by a former NASA scientist. (By finished, I mean it was essentially complete and edited, and I was back to working on *Hitler Was a British Agent*.) Within a year, the SIS and Mossad had stolen it. I lost interest as I was too far ahead, and a bit shy. I have also had enormous time pressures put on me by ongoing judicial attacks from corrupt New Zealand governance.

Miraculously, just after the 14–22 May 2004 murder attempt, I got three architectural jobs within ten days, but none of them paid. All three ended up in the District Court, which means you have to work three times again to get the money.

Worse still, in all cases, none of them paid, even after the court cases.

Judge Johnny Hole arranged that two cases be heard at the same time, and both in front of him. I lost both in one of the most corrupt decision ever seen in the courts of New Zealand. The decision was so corrupt, the Registrar made a point of coming up to me outside in the hallway, and with a contorted face he said:

"Judge Hole's decision was totally unfair. I don't know what happened."

I had gone in seeking $4,500 from Pru Gee (and her partner the homeless alcoholic gin-soaked car salesman Gordon Sale) for architecture services rendered. I left two hours later owing the clients $4,800 for a structure they never built, refused to pay any progress payments, and refused to employ an engineer or surveyor, thus halting their own project.

Pru Gee had admitted at one of our earliest meetings that she had gone to Epsom Girls Grammar with Helen Clark and they were in the same year. They were the same type of people. They were both butt ugly swingers – Labour voters.

I accuse Helen Clark's school friend Prudence Gee and her partner Gordon Sale of accessory to attempted murder. (See Attachment "V", 'Pru Gee and Mark Lewis Goold')

It is my understanding that Prime Minister Helen Clark had requested these people, in this time frame, to use my services and not pay and that this was a form of financial assassination.

It is my understanding that Judge Johnny D. Hole was available to make corrupt decisions as he had a compromised history, and ruled to ensure that I did not get paid. This confirmed the attack and ensured the financial assassination.

These cases took up my time and money and drained my resources, and I had to sell a house in impoverished West Huntly as a result. I still haven't been able to get *Flying the Planet* off the ground, although a lot of the information in it has now reached the public.

Judge Johnny D. Hole was made a judge way to early in Gisborne. He was too young, and gave the Rastifarians a hard time. They retaliated by booting him out of town. Hole retaliated again and Internal Affairs employed an undercover agent, placed him on a farm just north of Gisborne and ended up shooting a Rastifarian on that property – who turned out to be a cousin of his.

Two years later in May 2007 I published: "Judge Hole has syphilis", but I was being nice to him. Judge Johnny Hole ended up being an accomplice to this Clark/ Elias/ Mossad murder attempt, Hole has long been compromised, and Gisborne is well known for its paedophilia.

Gisborne is New Zealand's capital of brown-skinned paedophilia, Hamilton is the capital of white-skinned paedophilia, and Brussels is the paedophile capital of the world, virtually run by paedophiles. Similarly Hamilton and Gisborne are run by paedophile minders with the paedophile enablers being the Family Court judges, lawyers and police – especially the heads of police.

All of these groups remove the biological father by will, action, training, and ideology.

The second case was against Steve Whalley, jailed for sex with a minor. This case formed ten ring-binders that stack up 0.8 metres high and went on for two years. Judge Hole (yes, the same Judge Hole) then gave a summary that no one could act on. Even the Registrars complained that it was the worst summary in the history of District Court judges and the entire case would have to be heard again in order to establish a summary that a Registrar could act upon.

In September 2008, I took the third client to court – Peter Williams QC. I went through the Disputes Tribunal and won the first two hearings. At the end of the second hearing, the Registrar said he was ready to make his decision. Williams jumped up and complained, citing the Referee was biased as Hallett had given plenty of evidence and Williams had given none, other than character references (assassinations). The Referee then told Williams QC that cross-examination was the last path he could take, so Williams jumped at it. The third hearing was supposed to be Williams cross-examining me, then the Registrar would make his decision. Peter Williams Queen's Counsel realised he was losing, and would lose his reputation with it. Few lawyers had lost to commoners and no Queen's Counsel in history had lost to a commoner . . . so Williams got the fellow murderer, Chief Justice Sian Elias, to intervene.

Chief Justice Sian Elias had requested Peter Williams Queen's Counsel to be part of the murder attempt, at least, the financial assassination afterwards, so they were part of the same murderous group (Mossad–MI-6). Elias then got the Disputes Tribunal Referee Stuart Benson to transfer the hearing to the District Court. When Williams was pleading for this, he pleaded that he was not requesting it, but that the matters of the case were outside the realm of the Disputes Tribunal. He did this to avoid costs, and being seen as the delaying bad guy who can't fork out $5,000 for an architecture fee after four years. Williams was arguing the case was a matter of credibilty, that he had heaps and I had none.

Williams has none. He is well past his useby date and has survived by obfuscation, misdirection, being a courtroom drama queen, lies, and the support and influence of MI-6 in the destruction of New Zealand by protecting its drug dealers, and protecting the true and known murderers – often a high-ranking Freemason, as in the case of the 1970 Crewe murders.

> Lenard W. 'Len' Demler did it. Len was an 11th stage Freemason and head of the Pukekohe Chapter. He yelled down the phone to 14th stage Freemason, Police Commissioner Bob Walton: "Do SOMETHING!" . . . Williams was aware of this but played along with the distraction and delay. It made him famous, and much in favour with the MI-6 Freemason protectorate . . . Arthur Allan Thomas was stitched up, convicted in 1971 and 1973, pardoned in 1979, given a farm, then the Freemasonry Police were investigated for stitching Thomas up with a Royal Commisson of Inquiry, which always protects Freemasons – so it was a whitewash. Being a Freemason, Demler's cover continues on after his death in 1992. When the Officer in charge of the original Crewe murder investigation, Detective Inspector Bruce Hutton, was found guilty of setting up Arthur Allan Thomas, the police gave him a medal and $500,000 – because he had kept a Freemason out of jail and delayed the destruction of the Freemason's reputation just that little bit longer. Hutton then married a farmer's widow he had met during the investigation. He then beat her up in the bath and held her up by her feet until she drowned. The few who viewed the medical file included Detective Inspector John Hughes who said: "Hutton definitely killed her". Hutton inherited his murdered wife's money, then bought race horses and became a racing celebrity. He was well known for fabricating evidence and hiding evidence. He still hasn't been charged for either, rather he was promoted from Inspector to Detective Inspector, then retired with his ill-gotten gains.The police never question the pinch, and wait for the shout. It would appear that being in the police is 'a licence to murder'. Are "Peace Officers" not contract killers?

What MI-6 had found in Peter Williams was a proven drama queen who could obfuscate, misdirect and delay with the best of them, so they made him a Queen's Counsel lawyer to serve their ends . . . But Peter Williams, the bisexual, is a queen in more ways than one.

Williams, with prostrate cancer is trusting he will be hospitalised or die before he gets exposed as an accessory to attempted murder and as 'Mr Asia', both of the 'bonding others with Asian porn' fame, and the righthand man to 'the heroin trafficker who laundered millions of dollars in drug money' . . . It is commonly believed in New Zealand that 'Mr Asia' (1975–84) had to be run from the top.

During the Disputes Tribunal hearing, some interesting things happened. Albi Orme, Williams legal researcher and witness, died six days after the second hearing. I had accussed Albi Orme in 2004 and 2008 of threatening to kill me four times while on Williams' yacht, *Aerial*. This was true enough, but despite Williams' coaching, Orme still couldn't give the 'correct' answers required of him . . . Still, I wrote in my commiserations.

Then Williams former legal partner, Eb Leary, was charged with laundering drug money – again. He had been convicted of laundering drug money 20 years prior, and was struck off until August 2008. At virtually the same time as the hearing, Eb Leary was charged with laundering drug money again, this time for ecstacy ('E').

During the Disputes Tribunal hearing, I accussed Peter Williams QC of receiving two million pounds (£2 million) in a suitcase from mafia in London, who met him in the hotel lobby, telling him they had left his payment on his hotel bed for services to be rendered in defense of their heroin trafficker/ murderer in the Mr Asia trial.

Peter Williams QC response was:

> "I have not been admitted to the English Bar".

When I accused Peter Williams QC of talking about having sex with a man on his yacht *Aerial*, and how much he enjoyed it, then hitting on me, his reply was:

> "I am not an active homosexual".

Peter Williams QC is very shifty and gets others to testify for him. His companion Janine/ Hine/ Heeni Phillips of the ever-changing name, testified on his behalf and spent half an hour attacking me and misinforming about her status in the Howard League.

I accussed Heeni of being on psychiatric drugs and she skirted around the issue with further hate mail from two metres away. It has since been confirmed that Heeni Philips is on *Prozac* (fluoxetine hydrochloride), an antidepressant for her manic depression.

Williams does that to people. His other companion is a Christian syhophant ("fawning parasite") that doubles as a 40-year-old virgin and moonlights as a security guard. I think Kevin William Brett protects the Avondale Weta (arr – that would be an insect about 6 inches long).

I then accussed Ms Philips of cuckolding her partner Peter Williams with the MP John Tamihere while Williams had prostate cancer with a count of 10 and a radioactive pellet inserted. She flustered and refused to answer. Williams then intervened suggesting it was off topic.

It may be off topic, but it certainly shows the character of the people involved. Janine Philips also had sex with Winston Peters when he was working for Peter Williams as a junior lawyer. Winston Peters went on to become an over-titled under-achieving MP, typical of Mossad assets.

Many MI-6 agents have now been converted to Mossad assets. The Mossad used Waiheke Island as a holiday home, but since I exposed some of their agents there, they now use Fiji. The Fijian Army now carry Isareli Uzis (machine guns). Peter Williams QC has started to go to Fiji a lot, like every chance he gets (around three or four times a year).

So now I have an invitation from the District Court to deal with the Queen's Counsel Peter Williams on his own turf. It should be interesting. I wonder how much the murderer Sian Elias will intervene.

Spymaster, 9 March 2009: "They are trying to organise a judge that you don't have shit on".

Author: "That's judge shopping".

And on Obama's Inauguration Day, 2009: 'New Zealand operates on sex and drugs, and is particularly ruled by bisexual drug-dealing lawyers'.

Colllective Intelligence: 'The Waipareira Trust sold off all it assets and invested heavily in P (methamphetamines). They farm out the manufacture so they can stay at arms length and have been encouraging reformed criminals like 'Porky' to get back in the game of crime. As such the 63-year-old retiree was manufacturing P for the Waipareira Trust and he got nabbed before he could deliver. That was mid-to-late 2008.

Author: "The Waipareira Trust did such a smashing trade in P that their '29 Nov 2007 trust's annual report shows an astounding turnaround'. The article has since been removed."

Internal Affairs Officer, 12 March 2009: "The P arrived at the Waipareira Trust after John Tamihere had left and before he came back (October 2004–March 2005)."

Author: "Arr, I'm not convinced."

In the same year, 2007, the Chief Executive John Tamihere raped his secretary. It was all hushed up and she was paid off, then quickly shipped to Oz-fucking-stralia with her boyfriend.

Internal Affairs Officer, 12 March 2009: "The Waipareira Trust has had more crooked trusts than you could shake a stick at. The Dallows (ex-police) had trusts and one of these got quite famous in athletics and Lotto investigated. Ross Dallow (a pakeha) wasn't straight – into rooting transvestites and bisexuals, but his brother was more or less into guys and he died of aids."

Author: "Nice distraction."

When Labour lost the Election on November 2008, Chief Executive John Tamihere's protection ran out, so his Waipareira Trust immediately employed the gang member/ rapist/ paedophile/ policeman turned lawyer, Clint Rickards, for additional protection and 'keeping in' with the police – his first job as a lawyer.

Internal Affairs: "Peter Williams partner, Heeni 'Prozac' Phillips has been having sex on and off with John Tamihere, while working for the Waipareira Trust, thus cuckolding Peter. The security staff caught her in the carpark shagging Tamihere. Both were half-naked and asleep in the afterglow. John's also been having sex with 'Goo' (Evelyn Hall) who keeps the Waipareira Trust stuck together. This earnt him a 4-by-2 across the face with bruises to match. One or two of her kids are his and they're all smart arses, but in a good cheeky straight up Maori way. When he takes them out to Wendy's for a bite and John says, 'I'm just helping out your mother', the kids reply, 'Yeah, sure Dad, whatever'. Tamihere still roots her on the desk while delaying appointments. You can get a glimpse as you enter."

We originally thought . . . "John is currently in the *New Zealand Herald* as 'Mr X an ex-MP . . . involved in charity fraud to the tune of $3 million', along with the unnamed Pam Corkery. John is trusting Pam won't say anything, and Pam is trusting John won't say anything, but her nickname is 'Sqwarkery'. What are the chances? Hell of a nice guy John, he's just got the Maori failure – greed – oh, and fence jumping." . . . but then we found out that the name suppression applied to the former National MP, Trevor Roger, and now we have to find a place to put this incredibly interesting story in somewhere, and make it relate. (See Attachment "Z^{a}", 'The CIA's Protection Racket for M.O.E. Paedophiles')

John and Pam are still currently under investigation. I have no idea what will come of it. Usually when people who have been on TV are involved in a large scale fraud, those at the top share in the pinch and the shout – the money and the ongoing profits – so it's all status quo as the burglar goes.

Heeni Philips is also involved in a charity scam herself, which Peter Williams QC is not at long enough arms length from, as with the drugs, from his Mr Asia days. Then, Peter had his junior lawyer, Karen Soich, become the girlfriend of the heroin trafficker dubbed by the press as "Mr Asia".

So it looks and smells like repeat business, except for one thing . . . due to the credit crunch and economic downturn, no one has enough money to buy P and the drug dealers are no longer taking swopsies, cars, etc. Now that's a downturn . . . My guess is the "29 Nov 2009 Waipareira Trust's annual report will show an astounding turnaround".

Now this is where the case against Williams gets interesting. He is desperate to preserve his name, but he is bound up by all this cuckolding, charity, P dealing shit, as well as the hangover from the Mr Asia 'being too close' scenario, and his legal companion Eb Leary getting stung for not putting the mafia money through the trust account, getting him re-admitted to the Bar, only to see Leary get stung again for pocketing the money from ecstacy, and important compromised people around him dying off.

At the bottom of this heap of shit is myself trying to get money for architecture work done from 2003 to 2005.

We successfully beat Peter Williams in the Disptues Tribunal and he had to go to the Chief Justice for 'an out'. Sian Elias gave it to him, dictating the terms to Referee Stuart Benson on Tuesday 2 December 2008, who complied with Sian's request, no doubt being advanced up the ladder in the process, probably with Peter Williams QC putting in a good word to him.

Now, to prove that I wrote this letter and sent these emails before I got Referee Benson's decision, here's the timeline . . .

I got word on Tuesday 2 December 2008 that Sian Elias had interferred in the case.

On Wednesday 3 December 2008, Williams had the police stitch me up in Parnell. There was a police tracking device placed on my car, and I went to Renkon for lunch. When I came out there were police everywhere as well as another architecture client, the chinese Lawrence Chan, also involved in drugs, which Williams had brought in as a Disputes Tribunal witness (uncalled). This guy owes me $18,000, so I stopped and talked to him. He then walked towards the back of my car, so I reversed back. Low-and-behold there was a police car 3 metres behind me, and two cross-dressing police officers got out, 'Arthur and Martha', and mentioned they were considering charging me with 'attempted murder' and 'misuse of a motor vehicle'. What are the chances? Lawrence Chan had witnesses planted outside The Bog pub and outside Burgerfuel. How convenient!

The Disputes Tribunal hearing was two days later on Friday 5 December 2008. It was supposed to be Peter Williams cross-examining me, but instead, he requested the case be taken to the District Court, and further, that it was not Williams requesting the case be taken to the District Court, but the nature of the case, and the case being not a matter of evidence, but a matter of credibility.

Stuart Benson reserved the decision to be delivered by mail.

Stuart Benson wrote in his Reserve Decision that he "invited submission on transfer of the Disputes Tribunal claim to the District Court." I don't recall him saying this in the hearing. I recall Williams requesting it go to the Disputes Tribunal. He goes on to write: "Mr Williams did not oppose transfer; and Mr Hallett opposed transfer."

This is legal jargon for: "Mr Williams requested transfer and got the Chief Justice to intervene".

I had prepared the following Press Release: 'Historian and Architect rattles Queen's Counsel | Just how corrupt is the New Zealand Judiciary?' before the case and sent it out on 6 December 2008.

On 9 December 2008 I received the Disputes Tribunal's Reserved Orders dated "8 December 2008, Release date 9th December 2008"

So here's the paperwork in chronological order . . . followed by a character reference.

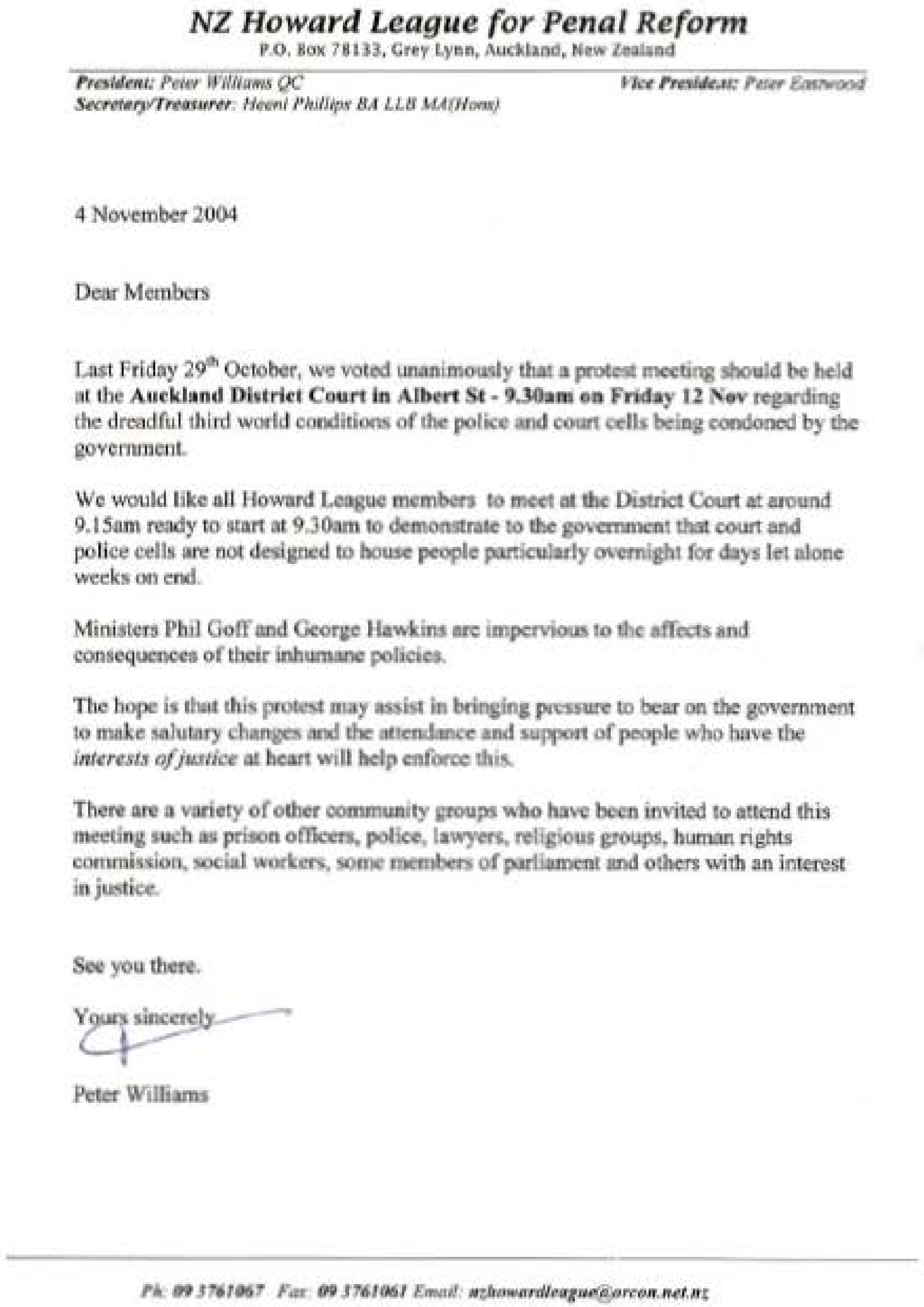

NZ Howard League for Penal Reform
P.O. Box 78133, Grey Lynn, Auckland, New Zealand

President: *Peter Williams QC* ***Vice President:*** *Peter Eastwood*
Secretary/Treasurer: *Heeni Phillips BA LLB MA(Hons)*

4 November 2004

Dear Members

Last Friday 29th October, we voted unanimously that a protest meeting should be held at the **Auckland District Court in Albert St - 9.30am on Friday 12 Nov** regarding the dreadful third world conditions of the police and court cells being condoned by the government.

We would like all Howard League members to meet at the District Court at around 9.15am ready to start at 9.30am to demonstrate to the government that court and police cells are not designed to house people particularly overnight for days let alone weeks on end.

Ministers Phil Goff and George Hawkins are impervious to the affects and consequences of their inhumane policies.

The hope is that this protest may assist in bringing pressure to bear on the government to make salutary changes and the attendance and support of people who have the *interests of justice* at heart will help enforce this.

There are a variety of other community groups who have been invited to attend this meeting such as prison officers, police, lawyers, religious groups, human rights commission, social workers, some members of parliament and others with an interest in justice.

See you there.

Yours sincerely

Peter Williams

Ph: 09 3761067 Fax: 09 3761061 Email: nzhowardleague@orcon.net.nz

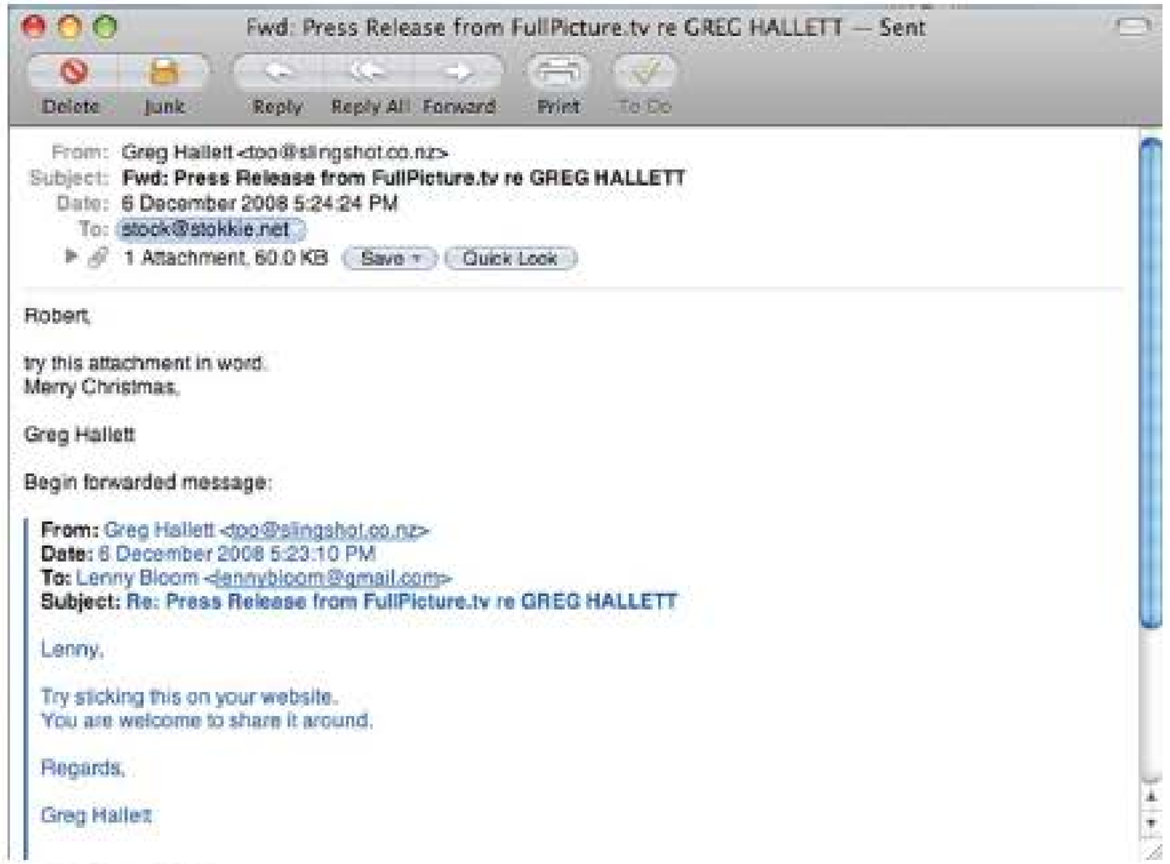
Fwd: Press Release from FullPicture.tv re GREG HALLETT — Sent
Delete
Junk
Reply
Reply All
Forward
Print
To Do
Save
Quick Look

From: Greg Hallett <too@slingshot.co.nz>
Subject: **Fwd: Press Release from FullPicture.tv re GREG HALLETT**
Date: 6 December 2008 5:24:24 PM
To: stock@stokkie.net
1 Attachment, 60.0 KB

Robert,

try this attachment in word.
Merry Christmas,

Greg Hallett

Begin forwarded message:

> **From:** Greg Hallett <too@slingshot.co.nz>
> **Date:** 6 December 2008 5:23:10 PM
> **To:** Lenny Bloom <lennybloom@gmail.com>
> **Subject:** **Re: Press Release from FullPicture.tv re GREG HALLETT**
>
> Lenny,
>
> Try sticking this on your website.
> You are welcome to share it around.
>
> Regards,
>
> Greg Hallett

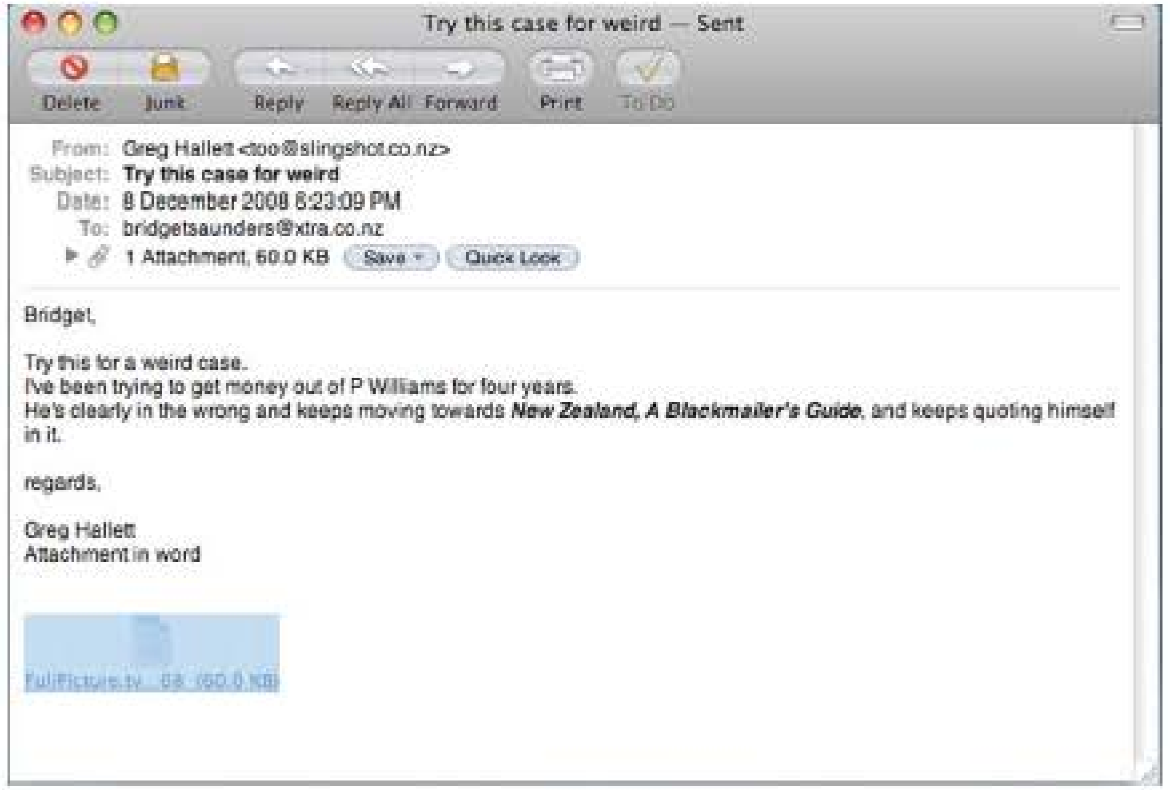

From: Greg Hallett <too@slingshot.co.nz>
Subject: **Try this case for weird**
Date: 8 December 2008 6:23:09 PM
To: bridgetsaunders@xtra.co.nz
1 Attachment, 60.0 KB

Bridget,

Try this for a weird case.
I've been trying to get money out of P Williams for four years.
He's clearly in the wrong and keeps moving towards ***New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide***, and keeps quoting himself in it.

regards,

Greg Hallett
Attachment in word

FullPicture.tv...08 (60.0 KB)

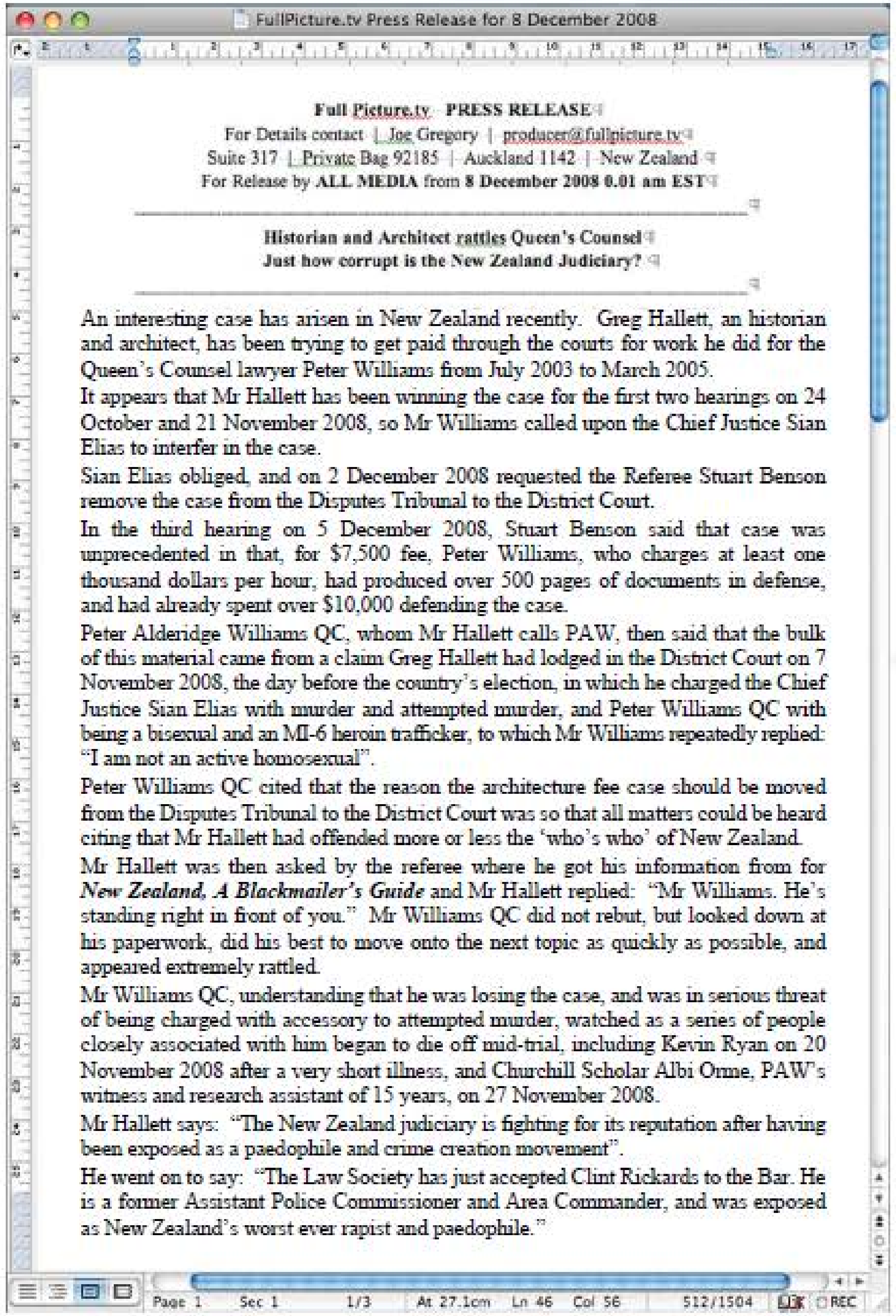
FullPicture.tv Press Release for 8 December 2008
Page 1 Sec 1 1/3 At 27.1cm Ln 46 Col 56 512/1504 REC

Full Picture.tv PRESS RELEASE
For Details contact | Joe Gregory | producer@fullpicture.tv
Suite 317 | Private Bag 92185 | Auckland 1142 | New Zealand
For Release by **ALL MEDIA** from **8 December 2008 0.01 am EST**

Historian and Architect rattles Queen's Counsel
Just how corrupt is the New Zealand Judiciary?

An interesting case has arisen in New Zealand recently. Greg Hallett, an historian and architect, has been trying to get paid through the courts for work he did for the Queen's Counsel lawyer Peter Williams from July 2003 to March 2005.

It appears that Mr Hallett has been winning the case for the first two hearings on 24 October and 21 November 2008, so Mr Williams called upon the Chief Justice Sian Elias to interfer in the case.

Sian Elias obliged, and on 2 December 2008 requested the Referee Stuart Benson remove the case from the Disputes Tribunal to the District Court.

In the third hearing on 5 December 2008, Stuart Benson said that case was unprecedented in that, for $7,500 fee, Peter Williams, who charges at least one thousand dollars per hour, had produced over 500 pages of documents in defense, and had already spent over $10,000 defending the case.

Peter Alderidge Williams QC, whom Mr Hallett calls PAW, then said that the bulk of this material came from a claim Greg Hallett had lodged in the District Court on 7 November 2008, the day before the country's election, in which he charged the Chief Justice Sian Elias with murder and attempted murder, and Peter Williams QC with being a bisexual and an MI-6 heroin trafficker, to which Mr Williams repeatedly replied: "I am not an active homosexual".

Peter Williams QC cited that the reason the architecture fee case should be moved from the Disputes Tribunal to the District Court was so that all matters could be heard citing that Mr Hallett had offended more or less the 'who's who' of New Zealand.

Mr Hallett was then asked by the referee where he got his information from for ***New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide*** and Mr Hallett replied: "Mr Williams. He's standing right in front of you." Mr Williams QC did not rebut, but looked down at his paperwork, did his best to move onto the next topic as quickly as possible, and appeared extremely rattled.

Mr Williams QC, understanding that he was losing the case, and was in serious threat of being charged with accessory to attempted murder, watched as a series of people closely associated with him began to die off mid-trial, including Kevin Ryan on 20 November 2008 after a very short illness, and Churchill Scholar Albi Orme, PAW's witness and research assistant of 15 years, on 27 November 2008.

Mr Hallett says: "The New Zealand judiciary is fighting for its reputation after having been exposed as a paedophile and crime creation movement".

He went on to say: "The Law Society has just accepted Clint Rickards to the Bar. He is a former Assistant Police Commissioner and Area Commander, and was exposed as New Zealand's worst ever rapist and paedophile."

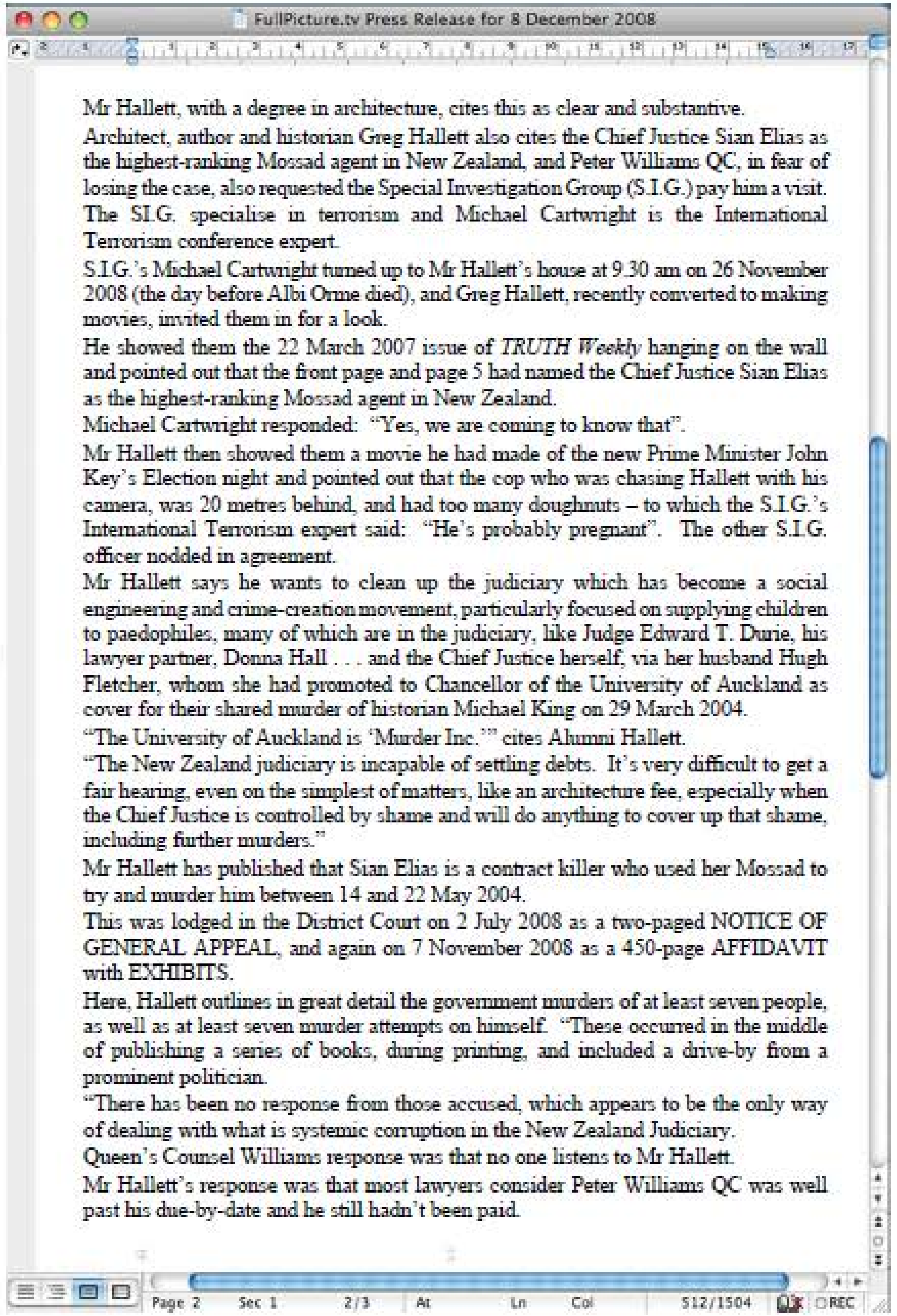
FullPicture.tv Press Release for 8 December 2008
Page 2 Sec 1 2/3 At Ln Col 512/1504 REC

Mr Hallett, with a degree in architecture, cites this as clear and substantive.

Architect, author and historian Greg Hallett also cites the Chief Justice Sian Elias as the highest-ranking Mossad agent in New Zealand, and Peter Williams QC, in fear of losing the case, also requested the Special Investigation Group (S.I.G.) pay him a visit. The S.I.G. specialise in terrorism and Michael Cartwright is the International Terrorism conference expert.

S.I.G.'s Michael Cartwright turned up to Mr Hallett's house at 9.30 am on 26 November 2008 (the day before Albi Orme died), and Greg Hallett, recently converted to making movies, invited them in for a look.

He showed them the 22 March 2007 issue of *TRUTH Weekly* hanging on the wall and pointed out that the front page and page 5 had named the Chief Justice Sian Elias as the highest-ranking Mossad agent in New Zealand.

Michael Cartwright responded: "Yes, we are coming to know that".

Mr Hallett then showed them a movie he had made of the new Prime Minister John Key's Election night and pointed out that the cop who was chasing Hallett with his camera, was 20 metres behind, and had too many doughnuts – to which the S.I.G.'s International Terrorism expert said: "He's probably pregnant". The other S.I.G. officer nodded in agreement.

Mr Hallett says he wants to clean up the judiciary which has become a social engineering and crime-creation movement, particularly focused on supplying children to paedophiles, many of which are in the judiciary, like Judge Edward T. Durie, his lawyer partner, Donna Hall . . . and the Chief Justice herself, via her husband Hugh Fletcher, whom she had promoted to Chancellor of the University of Auckland as cover for their shared murder of historian Michael King on 29 March 2004.

"The University of Auckland is 'Murder Inc.'" cites Alumni Hallett.

"The New Zealand judiciary is incapable of settling debts. It's very difficult to get a fair hearing, even on the simplest of matters, like an architecture fee, especially when the Chief Justice is controlled by shame and will do anything to cover up that shame, including further murders."

Mr Hallett has published that Sian Elias is a contract killer who used her Mossad to try and murder him between 14 and 22 May 2004.

This was lodged in the District Court on 2 July 2008 as a two-paged NOTICE OF GENERAL APPEAL, and again on 7 November 2008 as a 450-page AFFIDAVIT with EXHIBITS.

Here, Hallett outlines in great detail the government murders of at least seven people, as well as at least seven murder attempts on himself. "These occurred in the middle of publishing a series of books, during printing, and included a drive-by from a prominent politician.

"There has been no response from those accused, which appears to be the only way of dealing with what is systemic corruption in the New Zealand Judiciary.

Queen's Counsel Williams response was that no one listens to Mr Hallett.

Mr Hallett's response was that most lawyers consider Peter Williams QC was well past his due-by-date and he still hadn't been paid.

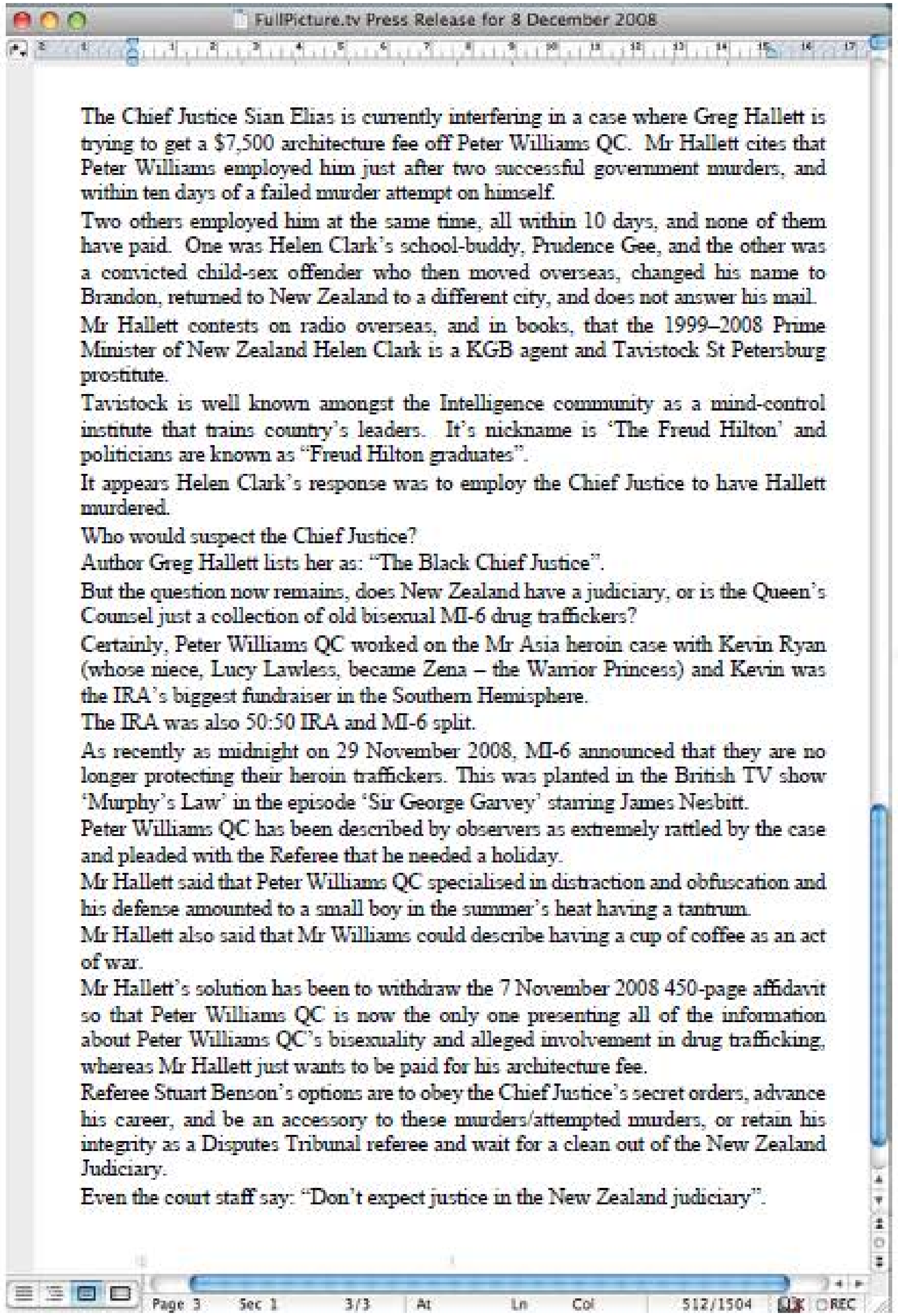

The Chief Justice Sian Elias is currently interfering in a case where Greg Hallett is trying to get a $7,500 architecture fee off Peter Williams QC. Mr Hallett cites that Peter Williams employed him just after two successful government murders, and within ten days of a failed murder attempt on himself.

Two others employed him at the same time, all within 10 days, and none of them have paid. One was Helen Clark's school-buddy, Prudence Gee, and the other was a convicted child-sex offender who then moved overseas, changed his name to Brandon, returned to New Zealand to a different city, and does not answer his mail.

Mr Hallett contests on radio overseas, and in books, that the 1999–2008 Prime Minister of New Zealand Helen Clark is a KGB agent and Tavistock St Petersburg prostitute.

Tavistock is well known amongst the Intelligence community as a mind-control institute that trains country's leaders. It's nickname is 'The Freud Hilton' and politicians are known as "Freud Hilton graduates".

It appears Helen Clark's response was to employ the Chief Justice to have Hallett murdered.

Who would suspect the Chief Justice?

Author Greg Hallett lists her as: "The Black Chief Justice".

But the question now remains, does New Zealand have a judiciary, or is the Queen's Counsel just a collection of old bisexual MI-6 drug traffickers?

Certainly, Peter Williams QC worked on the Mr Asia heroin case with Kevin Ryan (whose niece, Lucy Lawless, became Zena – the Warrior Princess) and Kevin was the IRA's biggest fundraiser in the Southern Hemisphere.

The IRA was also 50:50 IRA and MI-6 split.

As recently as midnight on 29 November 2008, MI-6 announced that they are no longer protecting their heroin traffickers. This was planted in the British TV show 'Murphy's Law' in the episode 'Sir George Garvey' starring James Nesbitt.

Peter Williams QC has been described by observers as extremely rattled by the case and pleaded with the Referee that he needed a holiday.

Mr Hallett said that Peter Williams QC specialised in distraction and obfuscation and his defense amounted to a small boy in the summer's heat having a tantrum.

Mr Hallett also said that Mr Williams could describe having a cup of coffee as an act of war.

Mr Hallett's solution has been to withdraw the 7 November 2008 450-page affidavit so that Peter Williams QC is now the only one presenting all of the information about Peter Williams QC's bisexuality and alleged involvement in drug trafficking, whereas Mr Hallett just wants to be paid for his architecture fee.

Referee Stuart Benson's options are to obey the Chief Justice's secret orders, advance his career, and be an accessory to these murders/attempted murders, or retain his integrity as a Disputes Tribunal referee and wait for a clean out of the New Zealand Judiciary.

Even the court staff say: "Don't expect justice in the New Zealand judiciary".

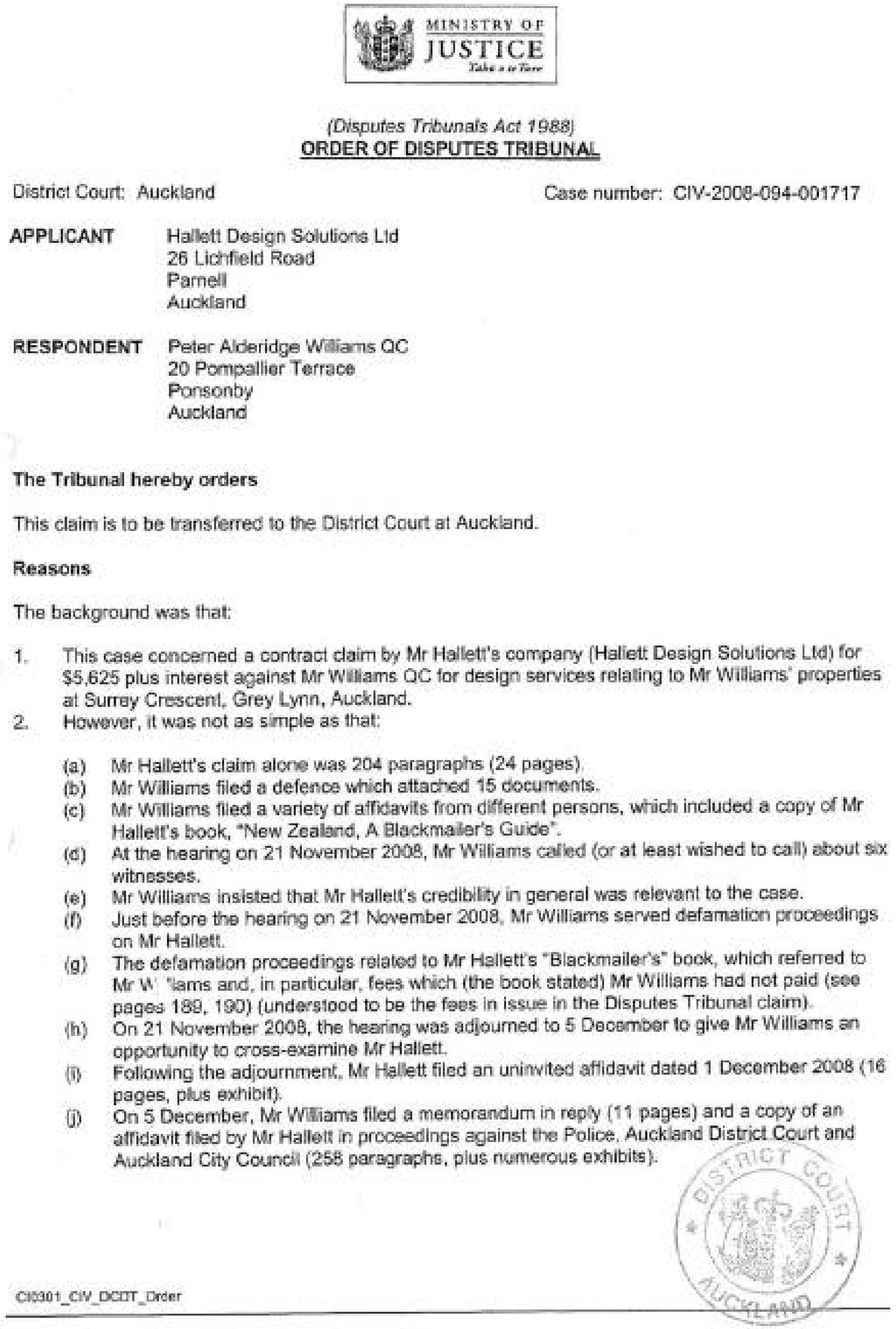

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE
Tahu o te Ture

(Disputes Tribunals Act 1988)

ORDER OF DISPUTES TRIBUNAL

District Court: Auckland

Case number: CIV-2008-094-001717

APPLICANT
Hallett Design Solutions Ltd
26 Lichfield Road
Parnell
Auckland

RESPONDENT
Peter Alderidge Williams QC
20 Pompallier Terrace
Ponsonby
Auckland

The Tribunal hereby orders

This claim is to be transferred to the District Court at Auckland.

Reasons

The background was that:

1. This case concerned a contract claim by Mr Hallett's company (Hallett Design Solutions Ltd) for $5,625 plus interest against Mr Williams QC for design services relating to Mr Williams' properties at Surrey Crescent, Grey Lynn, Auckland.
2. However, it was not as simple as that:
    (a) Mr Hallett's claim alone was 204 paragraphs (24 pages).
    (b) Mr Williams filed a defence which attached 15 documents.
    (c) Mr Williams filed a variety of affidavits from different persons, which included a copy of Mr Hallett's book, "New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide".
    (d) At the hearing on 21 November 2008, Mr Williams called (or at least wished to call) about six witnesses.
    (e) Mr Williams insisted that Mr Hallett's credibility in general was relevant to the case.
    (f) Just before the hearing on 21 November 2008, Mr Williams served defamation proceedings on Mr Hallett.
    (g) The defamation proceedings related to Mr Hallett's "Blackmailer's" book, which referred to Mr Williams and, in particular, fees which (the book stated) Mr Williams had not paid (see pages 189, 190) (understood to be the fees in issue in the Disputes Tribunal claim).
    (h) On 21 November 2008, the hearing was adjourned to 5 December to give Mr Williams an opportunity to cross-examine Mr Hallett.
    (i) Following the adjournment, Mr Hallett filed an uninvited affidavit dated 1 December 2008 (16 pages, plus exhibit).
    (j) On 5 December, Mr Williams filed a memorandum in reply (11 pages) and a copy of an affidavit filed by Mr Hallett in proceedings against the Police, Auckland District Court and Auckland City Council (258 paragraphs, plus numerous exhibits).

CI0301_CIV_DCDT_Order

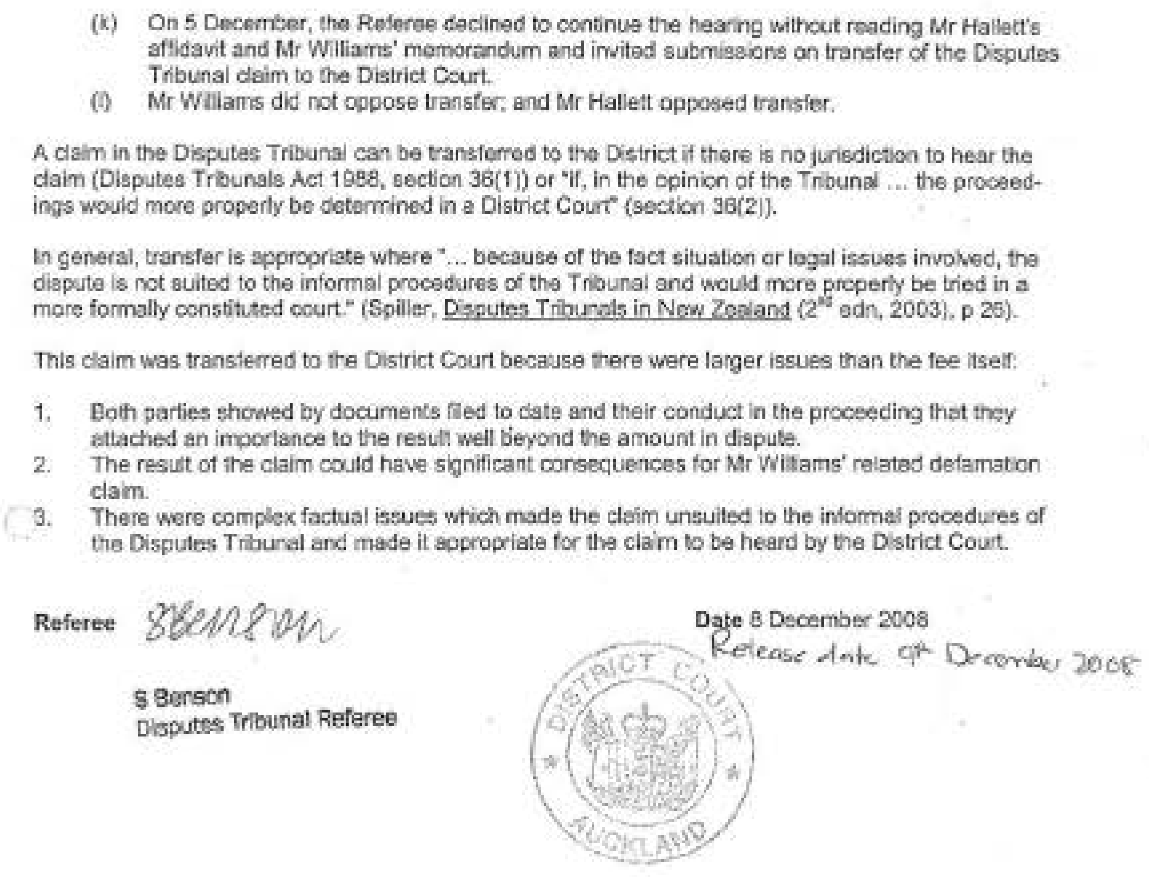

(k) On 5 December, the Referee declined to continue the hearing without reading Mr Hallett's affidavit and Mr Williams' memorandum and invited submissions on transfer of the Disputes Tribunal claim to the District Court.

(l) Mr Williams did not oppose transfer; and Mr Hallett opposed transfer.

A claim in the Disputes Tribunal can be transferred to the District if there is no jurisdiction to hear the claim (Disputes Tribunals Act 1988, section 36(1)) or "if, in the opinion of the Tribunal … the proceedings would more properly be determined in a District Court" (section 36(2)).

In general, transfer is appropriate where "… because of the fact situation or legal issues involved, the dispute is not suited to the informal procedures of the Tribunal and would more properly be tried in a more formally constituted court." (Spiller, Disputes Tribunals in New Zealand (2nd edn, 2003), p 26).

This claim was transferred to the District Court because there were larger issues than the fee itself:

1. Both parties showed by documents filed to date and their conduct in the proceeding that they attached an importance to the result well beyond the amount in dispute.
2. The result of the claim could have significant consequences for Mr Williams' related defamation claim.
3. There were complex factual issues which made the claim unsuited to the informal procedures of the Disputes Tribunal and made it appropriate for the claim to be heard by the District Court.

Referee

Date 8 December 2008

Release date 9th December 2008

S Benson
Disputes Tribunal Referee

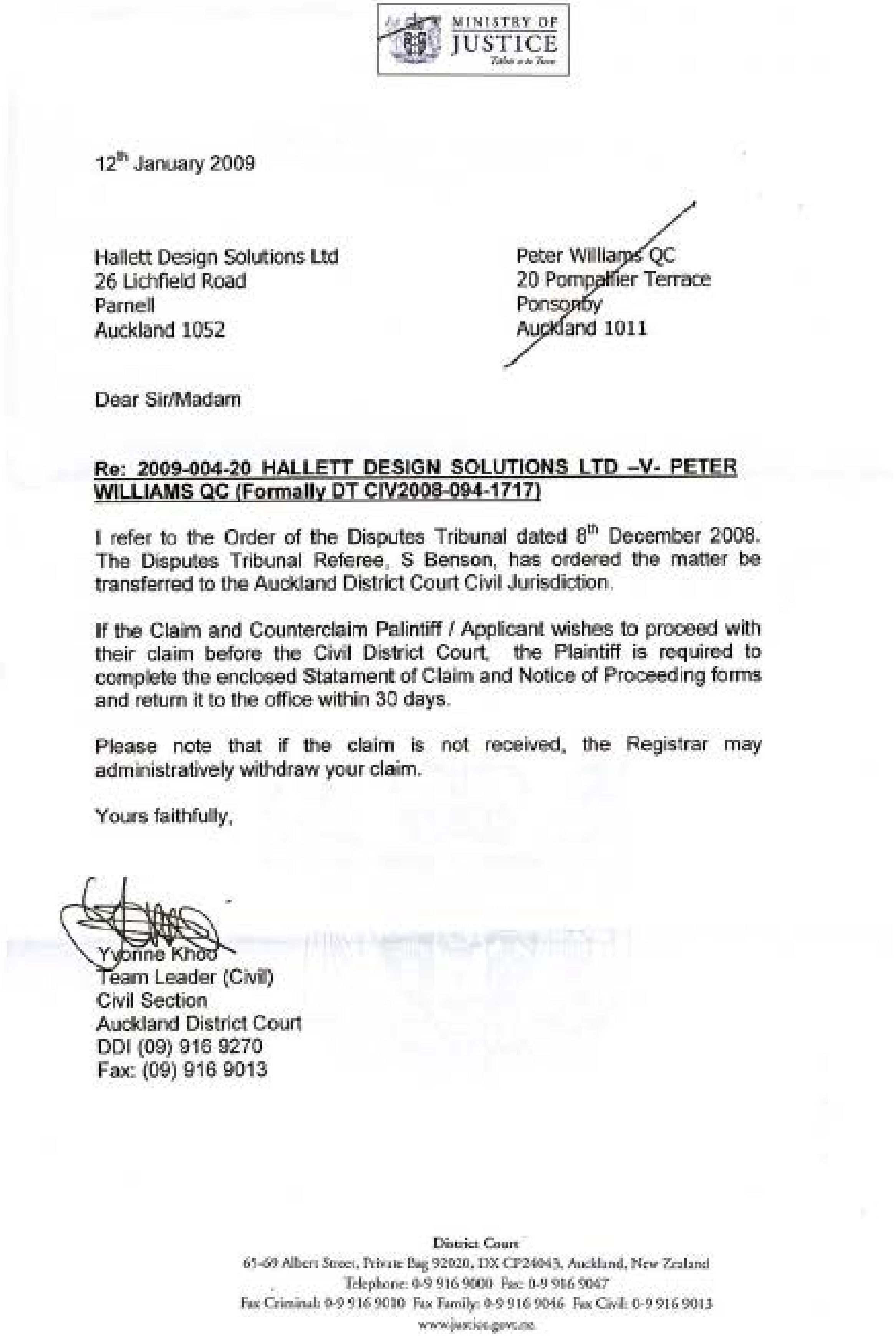

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE

12th January 2009

Hallett Design Solutions Ltd
26 Lichfield Road
Parnell
Auckland 1052

~~Peter Williams QC~~
~~20 Pompallier Terrace~~
~~Ponsonby~~
~~Auckland 1011~~

Dear Sir/Madam

Re: 2009-004-20 HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LTD –V- PETER WILLIAMS QC (Formally DT CIV2008-094-1717)

I refer to the Order of the Disputes Tribunal dated 8th December 2008. The Disputes Tribunal Referee, S Benson, has ordered the matter be transferred to the Auckland District Court Civil Jurisdiction.

If the Claim and Counterclaim Palintiff / Applicant wishes to proceed with their claim before the Civil District Court, the Plaintiff is required to complete the enclosed Statament of Claim and Notice of Proceeding forms and return it to the office within 30 days.

Please note that if the claim is not received, the Registrar may administratively withdraw your claim.

Yours faithfully,

Yvonne Khoo
Team Leader (Civil)
Civil Section
Auckland District Court
DDI (09) 916 9270
Fax: (09) 916 9013

District Court
65-69 Albert Street, Private Bag 92020, DX CP24043, Auckland, New Zealand
Telephone: 0-9 916 9000 Fax: 0-9 916 9047
Fax Criminal: 0-9 916 9010 Fax Family: 0-9 916 9046 Fax Civil: 0-9 916 9013
www.justice.govt.nz

So here's the character reference, 2005 to 2008.
The good things are by me | the bad things are by Williams and Co.

2005

2 May: I noted a black 4WD Audi with dealers yellow number plate parked 50 metres down the road from my home, with one 115 kg/ 18 stone SAS and one 18 stone Mossad inside. Both had widows peaks and were military fit. When we noticed them, by waving at them, they started up their vehicle and drove past. We waved again and they did everything they could not to acknowledge us.

11 May: I placed all written info (10 books) on one disc. I placed these in the back sleeve of driver's seat of my 4WD, then drove my other car (Mercedes) 100 metres, then walked to shop 4.45–5.15pm. When I returned, my 4WD had been broken into. The driver's seat was slid forward, the disc was gone, and my sunglasses gone. Money and tools were still there. I suppose the sunglasses were taken for DNA planting at future crime scene.

13 May, midday: My immediate neighbours power connection was rigged to spy inside my place.

15 May, 6.45 pm: A Non-Traceable Operative (NTO) black man uses a false key and tries to unlock the upstairs door.

17 May: It was confirmed that the girl in our group was MI-6 NTO complete with a "mental hospital cover from Callan Park in Melbourne, Australia".

18 May: Two ex-MI-6 phone up with bogus questions to establish voice recognition.

Dec 2004/June 2005: My other '*Flying the Planet*' editor keeps ringing me to tell me: "What you have written is now coming up on news". Bravo!

15 July: 'M' comes to my house and talks to my television saying: "I'm talking to the SIS and Army Intelligence. Why did the New Zealand Police employed Graeme Capill was Crown Prosecutor when they knew for 21 months beforehand that he was a paedophile?"

16 July, midnight–8.30 am: The next day my Mercedes quarterlite was smashed and the SIS removed their video, audio and transmission spy equipment from inside. They left a tool behind to confirm it was theirs. There were no matching fingerprints as the Police reject all SIS fingerprints. They refuse to hold them.

August: M tells me the report back on my theories on gravity and '*Flying the Planet*' "is crap". I take it on the chin – don't care. There was no mention of the formulas or the ex-NASA, editors and news confirmation.

15 September: Publish '*Hitler Was a British Agent*' after more than two years research. I print and mail out to twenty (20) countries ASAP. I consider broad distribution is some form of protection.

17 September: The National Election. The heat is noticeably off two weeks before the election, so it's a good time to publish *Hitler Was a British Agent*.

Prior to this, I had so much police attention, I put a sign on the door saying **"Dear Cops. Milk and tea on the bench, lemonade in the fridge"**. Then, at 1.30 am there was a big thump on the door. The Police had been breaking into my home at night, removing my driver licence and credit cards and returning them to the same place four (4) months later. They were also standing over my bed when I slept.

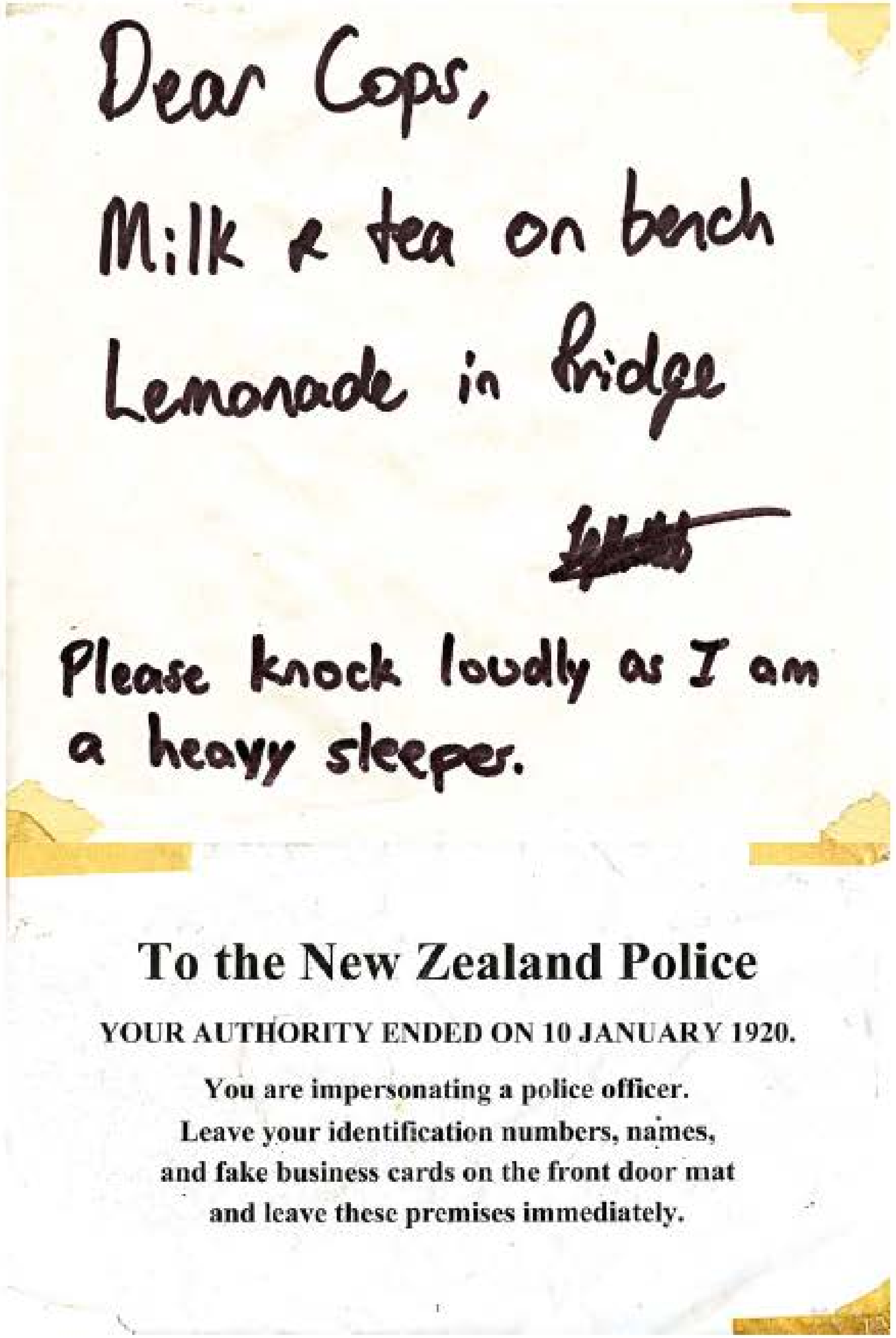

Dear Cops,

Milk & tea on bench

Lemonade in fridge

[redacted]

Please knock loudly as I am
a heavy sleeper.

To the New Zealand Police

YOUR AUTHORITY ENDED ON 10 JANUARY 1920.

You are impersonating a police officer.
Leave your identification numbers, names,
and fake business cards on the front door mat
and leave these premises immediately.

13 September: Weather manipulation in Eastern Australia was used to ensure fine weather over New Zealand during the Election. It takes four days for the weather to arrive. The Weather Report was for rain, but from 12.30–4.30 am, there was an electrostatic dome over sky with no wind. There should have been frost, but there was none. It was all stars. This was completely manufactured weather. It felt like it was generated from underground. Labour voters don't vote unless it's fine weather. After rain (7.30 am–1.30 pm) the sky cleared. The Election was won on a fine afternoon of manufactured weather, recently imported Polynesian voters who could not speak English, and Labour collecting votes from prison.

1 October: Once I was sure the books had arrived safely overseas, and there was some intelligence feedback, I changed the sign on my front door to: **"Job done. Tell them you did it. Take the money . . ."**

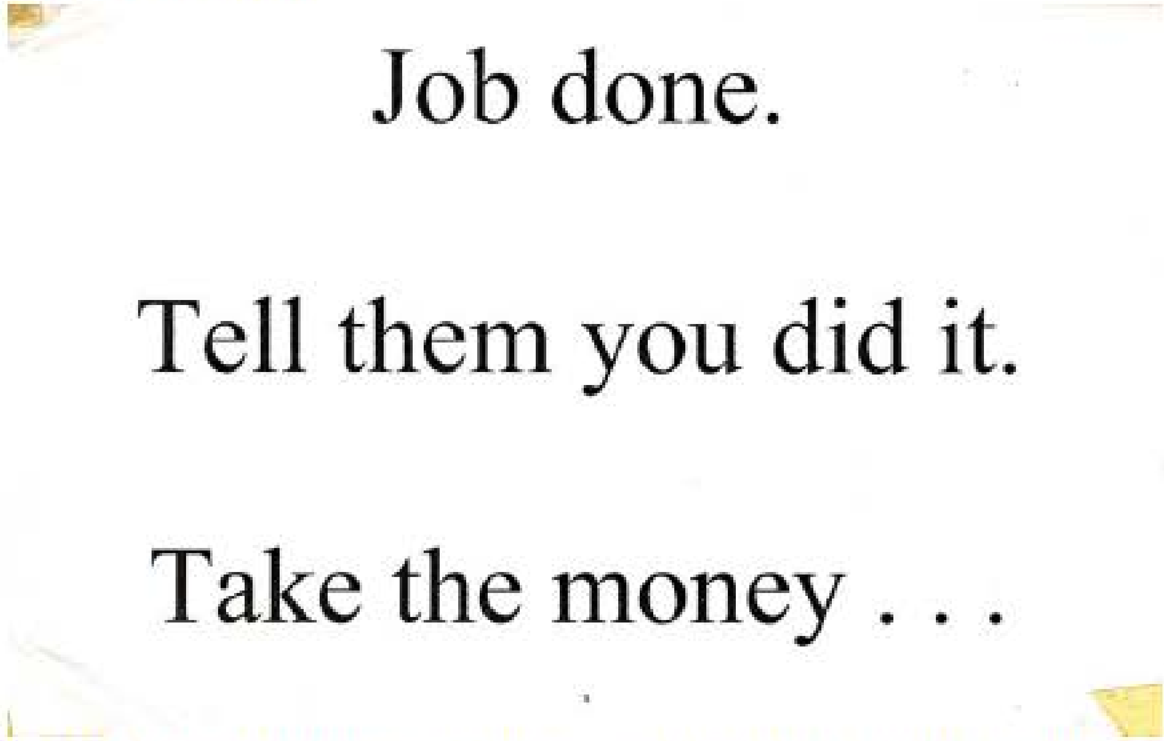

Job done.

Tell them you did it.

Take the money . . .

November: I began talking on Podcasts overseas. I was on New Zealand television once, but spoofed. It was promoted to me as a genuine interview, but the program then listed it as "CONSPIRACY SPECIAL". This advanced unhindered the career of Jeremy Wells (Newsboy) and was the excuse required for no New Zealand media coverage.

6 November: The Green MP Rod Donald was murdered by Helen Clark and Sian Elias using a heart gun.

2006

April: My 14-year-old chooses to move in with me and has done so ever since. She reveals she Hapsburg and Maori royal.

7 September: I left a art show/ poetry reading Williams read at and my 4WD implodes. It looks like it could be fixed, so I spent the money, but it's still broken, so I sell it for less than the cost of repairs. $14,000 had turned into $600 in 18 months. The engine had been tweaked in a design to seize the vehicle while running at speed on the motorway, possibly causing it to flip and roll. Again, an NHI planned excuse. I called the AA for a tow.

1 October: Publish 2nd edition of '*Hitler Was a British Agent*'.

7 November: Flat tyre. Called AA.

13 November: Overheating again. Called AA for tow.

2007

26 January: Publish '*How To Take Over The World, A Right Royal Con*'.

22 February: Publish '*Stalin's British Training, Paedophiles at War*'.

15 March: Government contract killer Kimball Johnson murdered by rapid cancer.[5]

11 May: Publish '*Gifting the United Nations to Stalin*'.

11 May: Publish 2nd edition of '*How to Take Over The World, A Right Royal Con*'.

10 June: Augie Auer murdered by Sian Elias/ Mossad and Helen Clark/ SIS.

27 July: Three of us poisoned on same day, two by coffee in my house.

26 September: Publish 2nd edition of '*Stalin's British Training, Breeding Concubines, Paedophiles at War*'.

10 October: Publish 2nd edition of '*Gifting the United Nations to Stalin*'.

26 October: Helen Clark tried to run me over in a government carpool car on Ayr Street during the printing of *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide*. I thought about this, wrote up some notes, stopped the press, and inserted an 'Index' recording the event. Clark never refuted the claim of 'driving with intent to injure', and 'attempted murder with a motor vehicle'. (See Attachment "Y", 'Murder Attempts on Greg Hallett', Killer Nappies Driving Rage)

31 October: Published '*New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide*'.

5 December: Publish 2nd edition of '*New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide*'.

2008

14 February: Publish 3rd edition of '*New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide*'.

14 February: Publish 3rd edition of '*How to Take Over the World, A Right Royal Con*'.

22 March: Publish 3rd edition of '*Stalin's British Training, Breeding Concubines, Paedophiles at War*'.

17–27 March: I noticed the right rear tyre on my Mercedes flat, at 12 psi, so I pumped it up to standard 32 psi. I checked the other tyres. The front left tyre was at 72 psi, and the front right tyre was at 55 psi – both extraordinarily high. It took me over a minute to let the air out of each tyre. These were over inflated by Labour Party activist with cigarette lighter air-pump and designed to blow. My petrol pump attendant said the tyres should have blown, especially as March is peak summer in what was a long hot summer. Three weeks before Helen Clark had been asked what she was going to do about me, and she replied: "We have something in store for Mr Hallett". It seems her plan was death by car accident and anyone else was NHI – 'No Humans Involved'. (See Attachment "Y")

31 March: Millie Elder/Holmes gets off scot-free, but with community service, on what could have been three x 9 years. Paul Holmes was never charged.

April: Had lunch with M who said: "The Bain murder case retrial is in three months. They are planting a juror who will disagree with everything. This will create a hung jury. David Bain will not get compensation and the police will not be to blame for stitching him up."

---

[5] Dr Charlie Teo, Brain surgeon, "While breast cancer doubled its cell numbers in weeks or months, the quickest brain cancers took just 16 hours." Last Chance Surgery, Channel Seven; Cheryl Critchley, *Herald Sun*, 28 Oct. 2009.

I said "Sian Elias did it using the Mossad". David was accused of murdering his entire family, but the police were having sex with two of the murdered daughters in brothels, as was their Freemason father at home.

The Jews control the Freemasons and will do anything to protect their name and reputation while they are still 'being useful'.

Helen Clark tried to murder Greg Hallett on 2 April 2002, 23 August 2002, 14–22 May 2004, July 2006, 27 July 2007, 26 October 2007, and 17–27 March 2008.

Sian Elais was involved in these murder attempts on 14–22 May 2004, July 2006, 27 July 2007, 17–27 March 2008. (There was another on 11 December 2009.)

Helen Clark ordered, and Sian Elias ran, the murders of Sir Peter Elworthy, Michael King, Rod Donald and Augie Auer. All of them are dead.

Kevin William Brett
the 40-year-old virgin
Christian psychophant
Security Guard
Albi Orme
(Deceased)
Janine Hine Heeni
Prozac Phillips
Peter Alderidge Williams QC
Mr Asia / MI-6/ Mafia Boss
NO TASTE

In an Albert Street Cafe, Auckland City at 1.45 pm on 21 November 2008. Albi 'the mouth' Orme died six days later, putting an end to his death threats and courtroom confessions of the same while on Williams' yacht *Aerial* in 2004.

1 Mr Asia's righthand man, secret Asian-porn collector and MI-6's left arm in New Zealand – which they routinely deny.

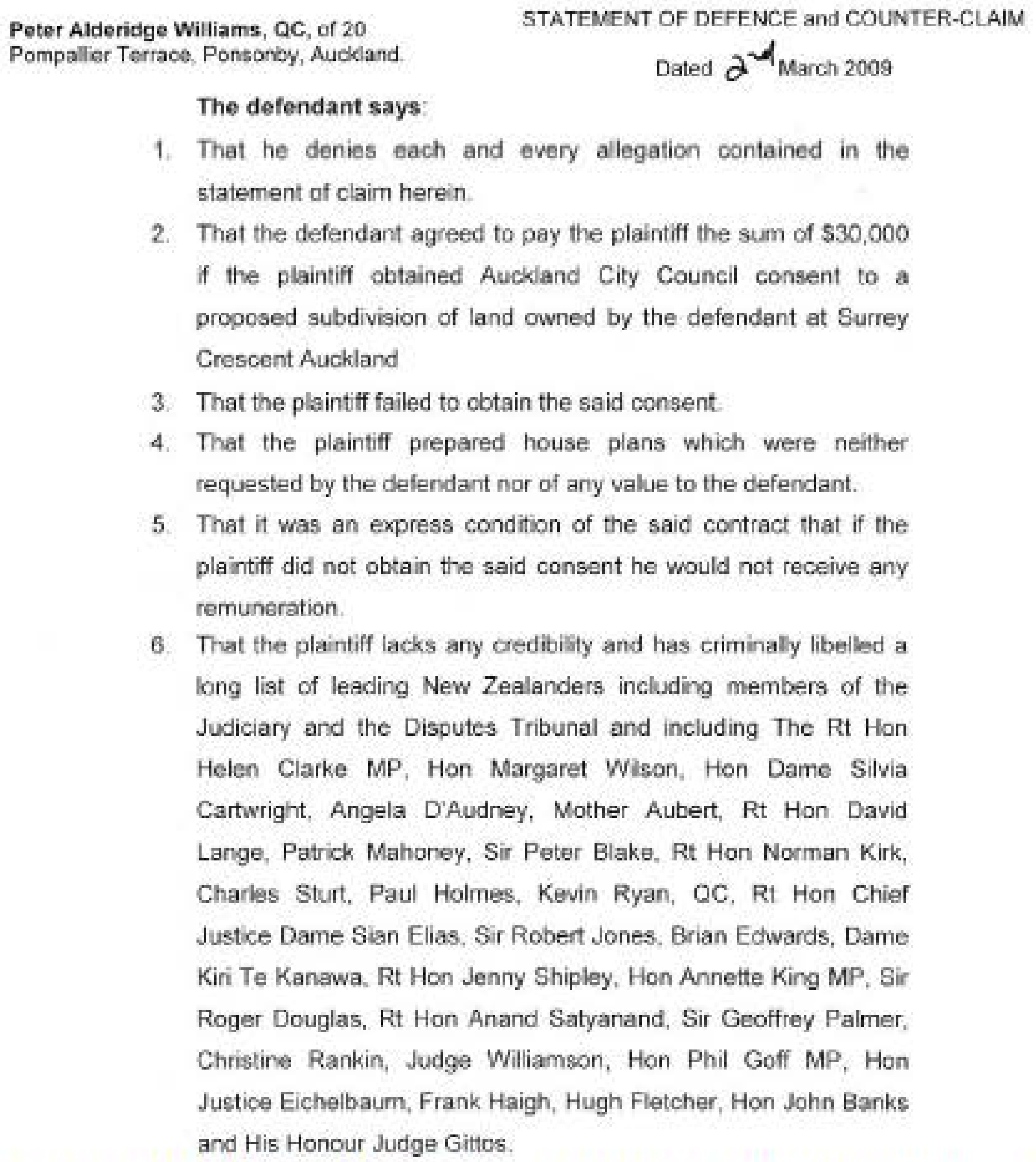

Peter Alderidge Williams, QC, of 20
Pompallier Terrace, Ponsonby, Auckland.

STATEMENT OF DEFENCE and COUNTER-CLAIM

Dated 24 March 2009

The defendant says:

1. That he denies each and every allegation contained in the statement of claim herein.
2. That the defendant agreed to pay the plaintiff the sum of $30,000 if the plaintiff obtained Auckland City Council consent to a proposed subdivision of land owned by the defendant at Surrey Crescent Auckland
3. That the plaintiff failed to obtain the said consent.
4. That the plaintiff prepared house plans which were neither requested by the defendant nor of any value to the defendant.
5. That it was an express condition of the said contract that if the plaintiff did not obtain the said consent he would not receive any remuneration.
6. That the plaintiff lacks any credibility and has criminally libelled a long list of leading New Zealanders including members of the Judiciary and the Disputes Tribunal and including The Rt Hon Helen Clarke MP, Hon Margaret Wilson, Hon Dame Silvia Cartwright, Angela D'Audney, Mother Aubert, Rt Hon David Lange, Patrick Mahoney, Sir Peter Blake, Rt Hon Norman Kirk, Charles Sturt, Paul Holmes, Kevin Ryan, QC, Rt Hon Chief Justice Dame Sian Elias, Sir Robert Jones, Brian Edwards, Dame Kiri Te Kanawa, Rt Hon Jenny Shipley, Hon Annette King MP, Sir Roger Douglas, Rt Hon Anand Satyanand, Sir Geoffrey Palmer, Christine Rankin, Judge Williamson, Hon Phil Goff MP, Hon Justice Eichelbaum, Frank Haigh, Hugh Fletcher, Hon John Banks and His Honour Judge Gittos.

Arrh, Peter, could you please call these witnesses to the court, including Angela D'Audney, Mother Aubert, Rt Hon David Lange, Sir Peter Blake, Rt Hon Norman Kirk, Kevin Ryan, QC, Judge Williamson, Frank Haigh . . . and who is The Rt Hon Helen Clarke MP?

If you could raise the dead, I'd be very happy, but I understand that is Christine Rankin's job. I'd be happy to question these people under oath, but it's my understanding that one cannot defame the dead. Still, if you wish to proceed, then I demand you present these entities as witnesses and get them to testify.

Following is Peter Alderidge Williams Queen's Counsel's 'slavery' contract, which he hid in his desk, never typed, never signed, never dated, never presented, and never discussed. It is the document he presented to the Disputes Tribunal in October 2008 as his reason not to pay. Even the Disputes Tribunal Referee Stuart Benson said: **"Peter! This appears to be a slavery document!"** Peter then rushed to Chief Justice Sian Elias to have the case he was losing, transferred to the District Court.

My answer is "Cypres"!

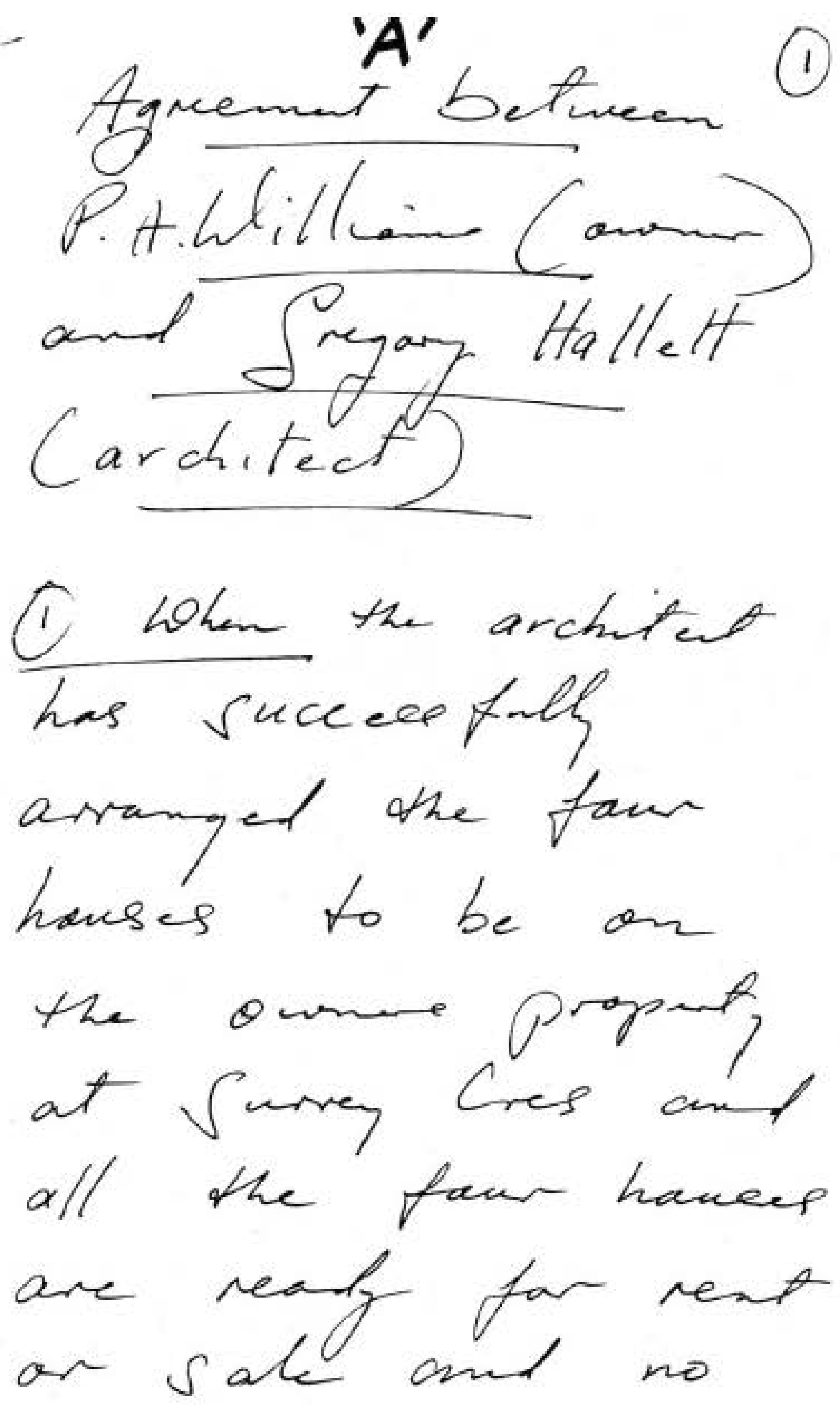

'A'

①

Agreement between P. H. Williams (owner) and Gregory Hallett (architect)

① When the architect has successfully arranged the four houses to be on the owner property at Surrey Cres and all the four houses are ready for rent or sale and no

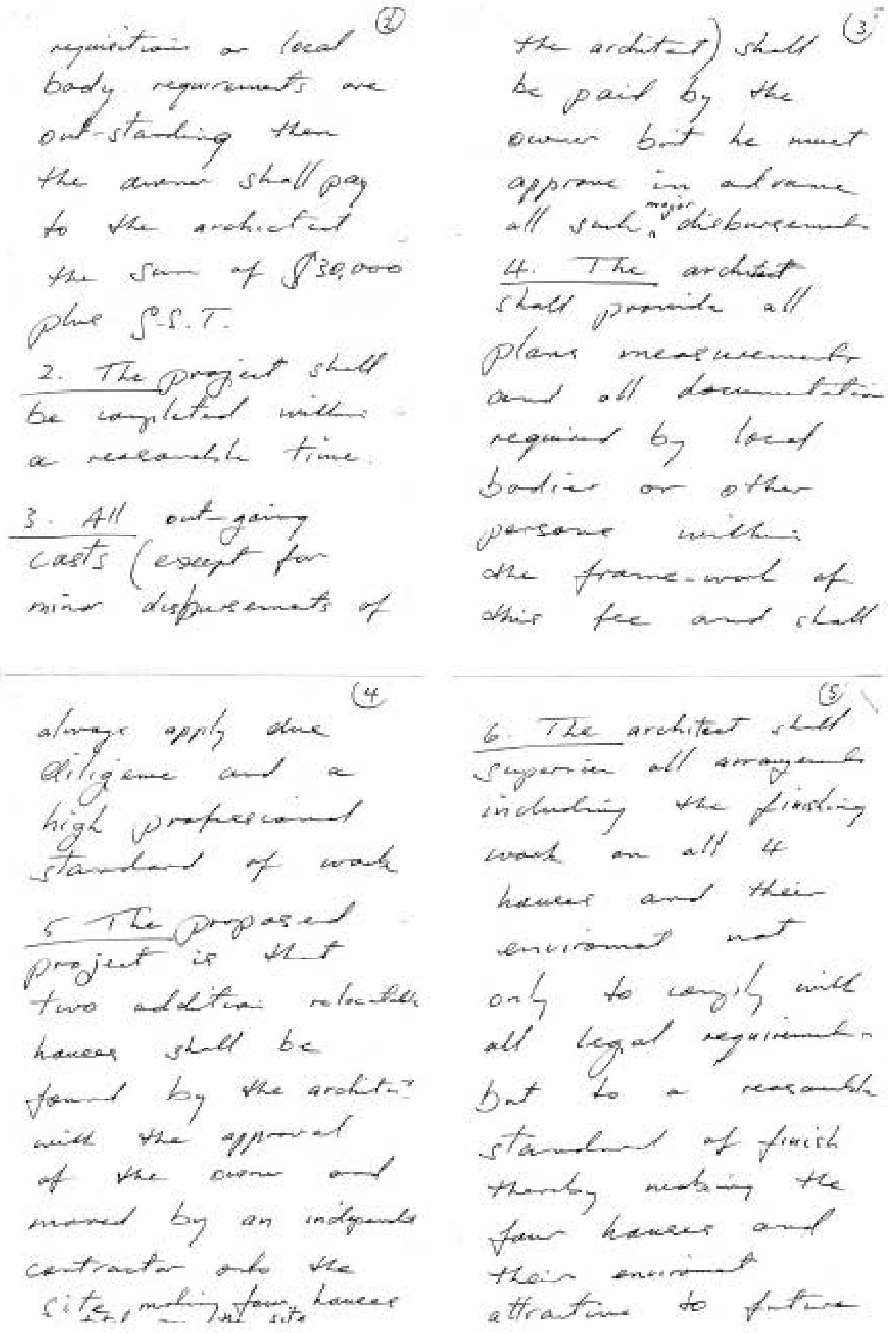

②

requisition or local body requirements are out-standing then the owner shall pay to the architect the sum of $30,000 plus G.S.T.

2. The project shall be completed within a reasonable time.

3. All out-going costs (except for minor disbursements of

③

the architect) shall be paid by the owner but he must approve in advance all such major disbursements.

4. The architect shall provide all plans measurements and all documentation required by local bodies or other persons within the frame-work of this fee and shall

④

always apply due diligence and a high professional standard of work.

5 The proposed project is that two additional relocatable houses shall be found by the architect with the approval of the owner and moved by an independent contractor onto the site, making four houses on the site

⑤

6. The architect shall supervise all arrangements including the finishing work on all 4 houses and their environment not only to comply with all legal requirements but to a reasonable standard of finish thereby making the four houses and their environment attractive to future

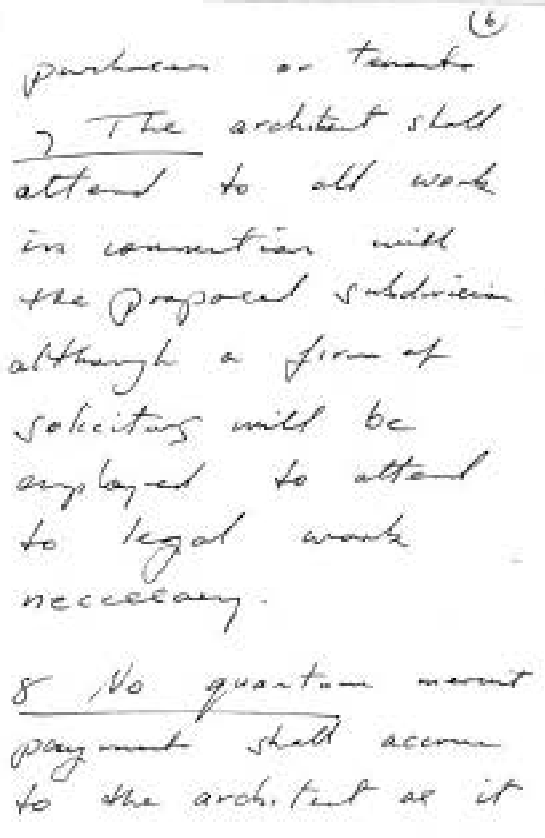

(6)

purchasers or tenants

7 The architect shall attend to all work in connection with the proposed subdivision although a firm of solicitors will be employed to attend to legal work necessary.

8 No quantum meruit payment shall accrue to the architect as it

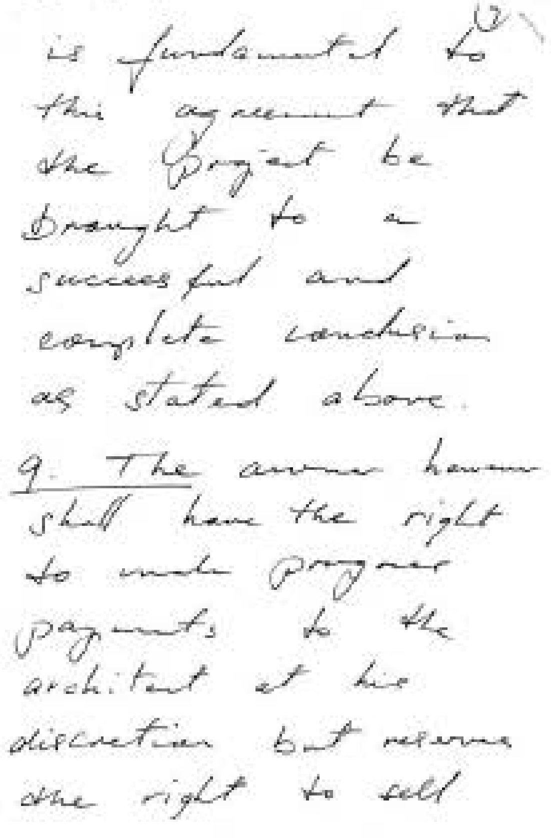

(7)

is fundamental to this agreement that the project be brought to a successful and complete conclusion as stated above.

9. The owner however shall have the right to make progress payments to the architect at his discretion but reserve the right to sell

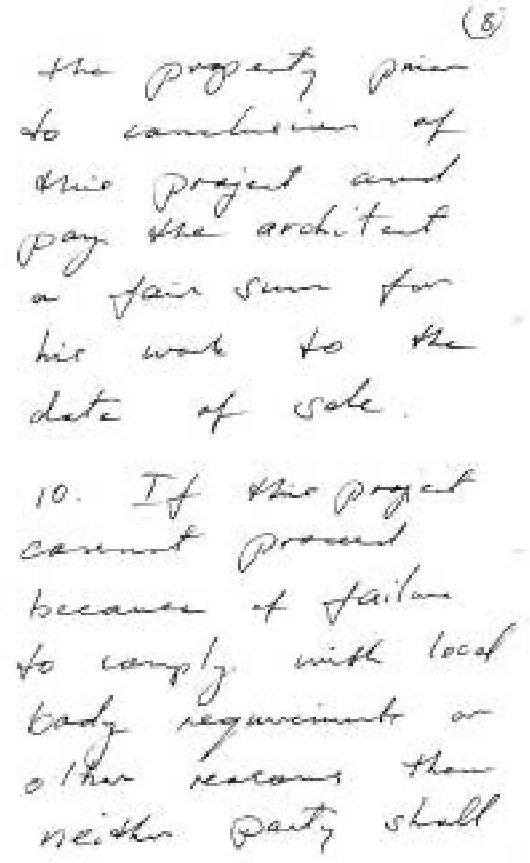

(8)

the property prior to conclusion of this project and pay the architect a fair sum for his work to the date of sale.

10. If this project cannot proceed because of failure to comply with local body requirements or other reasons then neither party shall

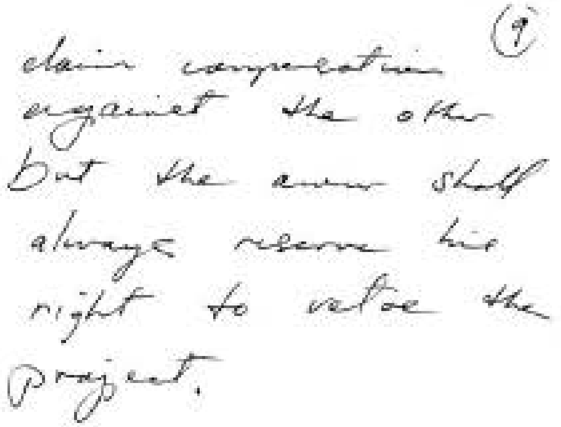

(9)

claim compensation against the other but the owner shall always reserve his right to vetoe the project.

This was nine single A4 pages.
I shrunk them down to 20 %
to save on paper and fart tax.

Peter's 44 point lettering
reads better as 21 point . . .
11 point lettering is normal.

Peter Alderidge Williams QC's 'Slavery document' presented as a contract.

This is typed as Peter wrote it . . .

"Agreement between P. A. Williams (owner) and Gregory Hallett (architect)

1. When the architect has successfully arranged the four houses to be on the owners property at Surrey Cres and all the four houses are ready for rent or sale and no requisitions or local body requirements are out-standing then the owner shall pay to the architect the sum of $30,000 plus G.S.T.

2. The project shall be completed within a reasonable time.

3. All out-going costs (except for minor disbursements of the architect) shall be paid by the owner but he must approve in advance all such major disbursements.

4. The architect shall provide all plans measurements and all documentation required by local bodies or other persons within the frame-work of this fee and shall always apply due diligence and a high professional standard of work.

5. The proposed project is that two addition relocatable houses shall be found by the architect with the approval of the owner and moved by an independent contractor onto the site making four houses total on the site.

6. The architect shall supervise all arrangements including the finishing work on all 4 houses and their environment not only to comply with all legal requirements but to a reasonable standard of finish thereby making the four houses and their environment attractive to future purchasers or tenants.

7. The architect shall attend to all work in connection with the proposed subdivision although a firm of solitictors will be employed to attend to legal work necessary.

8. No quantum meruit payments shall accrue to the architect as it is fundamental to the agreement that the project be brought to a successful and complete conclusion as stated above.

9. The owner however shall have the right to make progress payments to the architect at his discretion but reserves the right to sell the property prior to conclusion of this project and pay the architect a fair sum for his work to the date of sale.

10. If this project cannot proceed because of failure to comply with local body requirements or other reasons then neither party shall claim compensation against the other but the owner shall always reserve his right to vetoe the project."

Is this
Peter Williams QC's
secret typewriter?
Anyone?

. . . on which he
writes slavery
contracts . . .

Courts refuse to Settle Debts so Banks can charge Higher Interest

This undated and unsigned nine (9) page "agreement" that never was, fits into less than a page and takes about 5 minutes to type, yet in four years, Peter couldn't get it typed. Perhaps:

a) It never existed in the first place;
b) Peter didn't want his new typist to do the job and leak out she typed it in 2008; and
c) Peter's previous typist was a methamphetamine-using, cuckolding alcoholic.

One thing is for sure . . . the New Zealand judiciary cannot settle a debt. There is a reason for this. The Court "Bench" is latin for "Bank" and the banks control the courts.

The banks came up with this great idea called "visa card" where they would loan money at 22 % interest, instead of 8% interest. To force people to use these new credit cards, Visa ensured the courts would:

1. Not solve any debts;
2. Solve debts slowly so the credit cards were needed;
3. Ensure the court expenses outweighed the value of the debt;
4. Refuse to send their bailiff's to issue a civil notice of proceeding;
5. Allow the debtor to raise a plethora of interlocutory processional distractions to ensure the creditor was never paid;
6. Offer no security for collecting the debts once they were won;
7. Refuse to send their bailiff's to collect the civil debt.

In this way, any murders or attempted murders the Courts were involved in, Visa card were also involved in.

So now Visa participates in government murders.This includes the National Bank, the BNZ and the ANZ Visa also participates in attempted murders, boiler-plating, hobbling and blacklisting, and then offering credit lines while the target is being financially assassinated. (See "Z^{8}", 'The Auckland Deloitte CIA SuperCity', Rod Deane – Fiscal Treason gets a Front Row Seat)

As the banks are ruled and controlled by Jews, so are the courts.

The head of the judiciary in New Zealand is the Chief Justice Sian Elias. She is Jewish. She is also a $0.5 billion fraudster. She also runs the contract killings in New Zealand. That's a tight fit. It's all the same Jew.

It was Chief Justice Sian Elias who got the Queen's Counsel Peter Williams involved in attempting to murder me. This came as:

1. Employing me when he had a secret contract where he clearly had no intention to pay;
2. Soft kidnapping on his boat where two of his crew threatened to kill me a total of five (5) times;
3. Refusal to pay a simple $5,000 fee even though he clearly employed me and I clearly did all the work requested.
4. Begging the Chief Justice (who requested he assist in the murder attempt) to transfer the case from the Disputes Tribunal to the District Court, thus causing delays, delays, and more delays. (It still wasn't heard by February 2009.)

How could the Chief Justice refuse Peter Williams?

She had asked him to get involved in the physical/ financial assassination in the first place.

And how could Peter Williams refuse the Chief Justice Sian Elias?

She has the wood on him.

As the final Sex Collector in New Zealand, Sian Elias knows that one of Peter's children is not his, that Peter is heavily cuckolded, that he was involved in the financial syndicate investments with Mr Asia, that he is into Asian porn, that he 'bonds' other lawyers by showing them porn, that he is a bisexual, that he stuck his hand up a 17-year-old Maori boy's bottom outside the High Court on 2 July 2008 (Parliament Street side) as he looked down on lodgements, that he has had prostate cancer, and lacks the testicals to testify, and does not testify.

What we will most likely see in this District Court case is the Chief Justice Sian Elias abusing the court process to ensure all of the above – obstruction of justice.

It has already happened, and . . .

It will continue until common New Zealanders start pointing the finger en masse at the gross misgivings of the New Zealand courts, but more particularly, point the finger at the compromised individuals in it, and the Bank's control of it.

> So, when we go to court, we are actually going to Visa to ensure that we will continue to pay three (3) times the normal interest for much longer, and will not be making a credit creating deposit any time soon.

. . . and the money Visa makes off the corrupted courts each day
looks a lot like this . . .

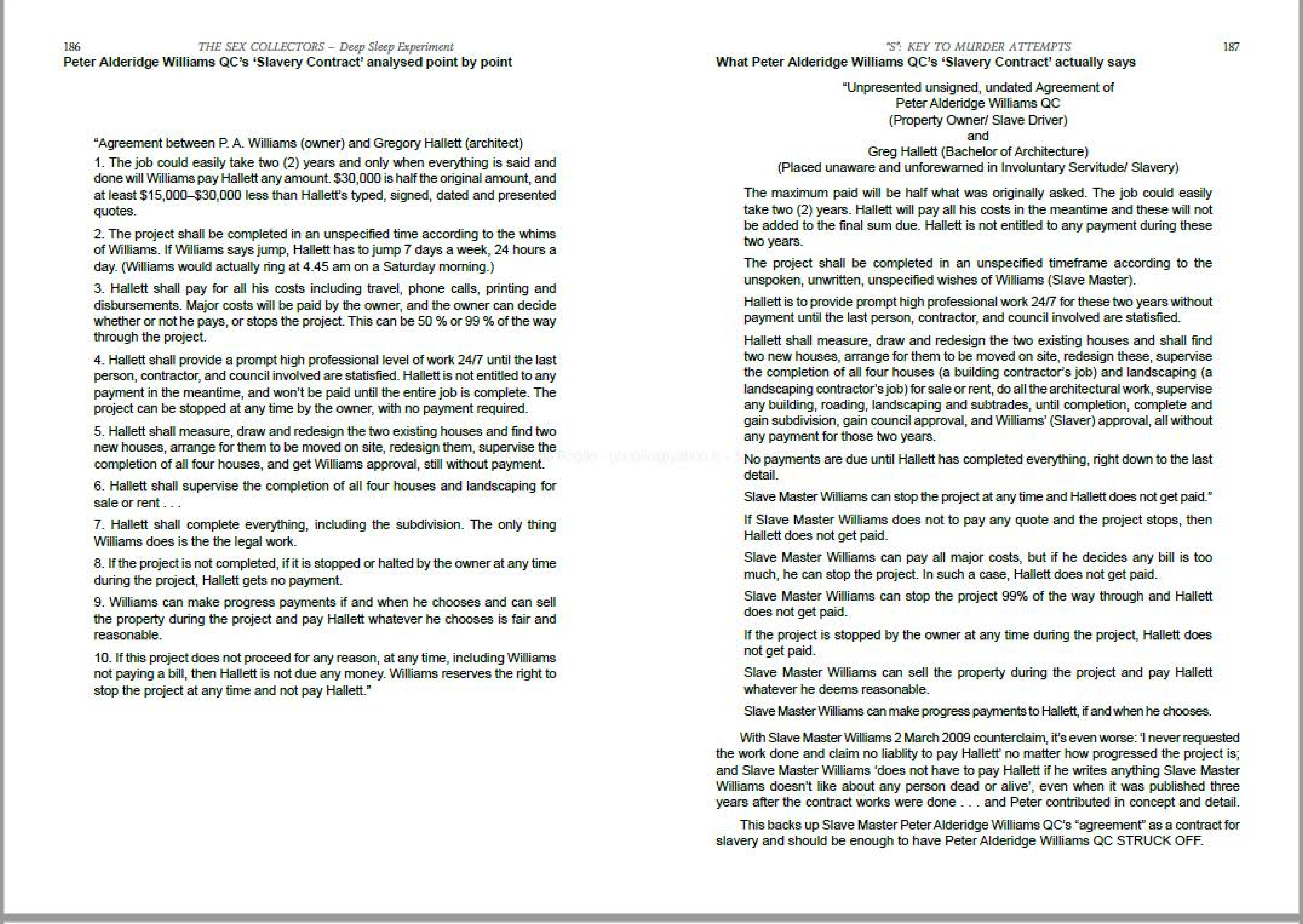

Peter Alderidge Williams QC's 'Slavery Contract' analysed point by point

"Agreement between P. A. Williams (owner) and Gregory Hallett (architect)

1. The job could easily take two (2) years and only when everything is said and done will Williams pay Hallett any amount. $30,000 is half the original amount, and at least $15,000–$30,000 less than Hallett's typed, signed, dated and presented quotes.

2. The project shall be completed in an unspecified time according to the whims of Williams. If Williams says jump, Hallett has to jump 7 days a week, 24 hours a day. (Williams would actually ring at 4.45 am on a Saturday morning.)

3. Hallett shall pay for all his costs including travel, phone calls, printing and disbursements. Major costs will be paid by the owner, and the owner can decide whether or not he pays, or stops the project. This can be 50 % or 99 % of the way through the project.

4. Hallett shall provide a prompt high professional level of work 24/7 until the last person, contractor, and council involved are statisfied. Hallett is not entitled to any payment in the meantime, and won't be paid until the entire job is complete. The project can be stopped at any time by the owner, with no payment required.

5. Hallett shall measure, draw and redesign the two existing houses and find two new houses, arrange for them to be moved on site, redesign them, supervise the completion of all four houses, and get Williams approval, still without payment.

6. Hallett shall supervise the completion of all four houses and landscaping for sale or rent . . .

7. Hallett shall complete everything, including the subdivision. The only thing Williams does is the the legal work.

8. If the project is not completed, if it is stopped or halted by the owner at any time during the project, Hallett gets no payment.

9. Williams can make progress payments if and when he chooses and can sell the property during the project and pay Hallett whatever he chooses is fair and reasonable.

10. If this project does not proceed for any reason, at any time, including Williams not paying a bill, then Hallett is not due any money. Williams reserves the right to stop the project at any time and not pay Hallett."

What Peter Alderidge Williams QC's 'Slavery Contract' actually says

"Unpresented unsigned, undated Agreement of
Peter Alderidge Williams QC
(Property Owner/ Slave Driver)
and
Greg Hallett (Bachelor of Architecture)
(Placed unaware and unforewarned in Involuntary Servitude/ Slavery)

The maximum paid will be half what was originally asked. The job could easily take two (2) years. Hallett will pay all his costs in the meantime and these will not be added to the final sum due. Hallett is not entitled to any payment during these two years.

The project shall be completed in an unspecified timeframe according to the unspoken, unwritten, unspecified wishes of Williams (Slave Master).

Hallett is to provide prompt high professional work 24/7 for these two years without payment until the last person, contractor, and council involved are statisfied.

Hallett shall measure, draw and redesign the two existing houses and shall find two new houses, arrange for them to be moved on site, redesign these, supervise the completion of all four houses (a building contractor's job) and landscaping (a landscaping contractor's job) for sale or rent, do all the architectural work, supervise any building, roading, landscaping and subtrades, until completion, complete and gain subdivision, gain council approval, and Williams' (Slaver) approval, all without any payment for those two years.

No payments are due until Hallett has completed everything, right down to the last detail.

Slave Master Williams can stop the project at any time and Hallett does not get paid."

If Slave Master Williams does not to pay any quote and the project stops, then Hallett does not get paid.

Slave Master Williams can pay all major costs, but if he decides any bill is too much, he can stop the project. In such a case, Hallett does not get paid.

Slave Master Williams can stop the project 99% of the way through and Hallett does not get paid.

If the project is stopped by the owner at any time during the project, Hallett does not get paid.

Slave Master Williams can sell the property during the project and pay Hallett whatever he deems reasonable.

Slave Master Williams can make progress payments to Hallett, if and when he chooses.

With Slave Master Williams 2 March 2009 counterclaim, it's even worse: 'I never requested the work done and claim no liablity to pay Hallett' no matter how progressed the project is; and Slave Master Williams 'does not have to pay Hallett if he writes anything Slave Master Williams doesn't like about any person dead or alive', even when it was published three years after the contract works were done . . . and Peter contributed in concept and detail.

This backs up Slave Master Peter Alderidge Williams QC's "agreement" as a contract for slavery and should be enough to have Peter Alderidge Williams QC STRUCK OFF.

Greg Hallett affirms that Peter Alderidge Williams Queen's Counsel is a Slaver

Of my four contracts with Williams, all typed, dated, signed, presented and discussed, this is most pertinent: "Payment is due pro rata for any work done."

In the 14 months I worked on the project (July 2003–September 2004) Williams (Slaver) made no payments for disbursements, stopped the project as soon as he got a quote he did not like from his selected consulting engineer, and terminated my involvement as soon as he got my interim bill for $5,000.00.

During the works, Williams made no offer for payment as required by my/our contract, and made no up front payment as required by my/our fourth contract – another counter offer and acceptance.

Williams never presented his hidden, untyped, unsigned, undated, "agreement".
Peter Alderidge Williams QC is a slaver.

A lose definition of slavery is:

> 'Having no rights as a citizen, expected to work at no cost to themselves
> for no money, in exchange for shelter and food enough to survive.'

Williams (Slaver) provided no rights to Hallett (he took them away with an unpresented slavery contract). Williams (Slaver) demanded Hallett cover all work related costs. Williams (Slaver) demanded Hallett work professionally 24/7 and did not pay any money towards food or shelter, or any form of remuneration whatsoever.

"Contract slavery occurs when people are tricked or compelled into signing contracts requiring them to work under conditions that amount to slavery. Slavery is a form of forced labor where a person is compelled to work for another and deprived of the right to receive compensation."[6]

Freedom from slavery is an internationally recognised human right.
Article 4 of the Universal Declaration of Human Rights:
"No one shall be held in slavery or servitude;
slavery and the slave trade shall be prohibited in all their forms."

"Involuntary Servitude is illegal. It is a United States legal and constitutional term for a person laboring to benefit another under some form of coercion, like an offer of payment with no payment made, and/or a hidden agreement or agenda to not pay. Unlike Chattel Salvery, Involuntary Servitude does not require a complete lack of freedom and isn't dependent upon compensation, or the amount paid, but the end result is free labour."[7]

> "It is guaranteed that all men are neither held nor placed in an untenable position of involuntary servitude. One acting as an officer of the law construed against this law is tantamount to fraud.
>
> Ignorance of the law is never a valid excuse/reason for the commission of any wrongful/inequitable act or crime.
>
> Any excuse is an admission as to the primary liability of the maker.
>
> Silence and non-response is an honourable indication as to their [Williams] tacit assent, passive acquiescence, cognovit affirmative, acceptance by silence, admission of guilt, confession, or avoidance plea, and [Williams] is liable for a fourfold commercial liability for the honourable settlement without laches of any previously raised outstanding or contradictory matter(s).
>
> All men shall have prevailing equity available to them, a remedy by the due course and process of law.
>
> If a remedy does not appear to exist [within the Courts], or if the existing remedy appears to have been subverted [payment subverted by Williams interfering in the course of justice, and further subverted by Williams counterclaim], then one may equitably create a remedy for themselves and endow it with credibility by expressing such in their affidavit."[8]

In Williams' case, he is offering excuses, all of them out of the timeframe of the contract, as well as ongoing defamation, and an ongoing processional distraction in the form of a countersuit. Since Hallett has done the work and hasn't been paid, this is another one of Peter's bisexual oblique non sequiturs.

In such a case, a fourfold commercial liability is due. This might well turn out to be four (4) times the original contract sum (4 x $60,000).

Peter Alderidge Williams QC is guilty of Fraud and Financial Assassination

As a lawyer, Peter Alderidge Williams QC is guilty of fraud.

When Williams' five counts of 'threatening to kill' failed to result in a death, he resorted to financial assassination. (See letter next page)

Peter Alderidge Williams QC found marked, measured and wanting

Peter Alderidge Williams QC has been found marked, measured and wanting.

Peter Alderidge Williams falls well below the integrity levels required of a Queen's Counsel, and well below the integrity levels required of a common citizen.

Peter Alderidge Williams QC removed from the silk and struck from the bar

Peter Alderidge Williams QC must be removed from the silk and struck from the bar, pay his bill, plus the threefold penalty for his dishonour, have his passport removed, and be sent to prison for slavery and defrauding a citizen with a slant to murder with multiple threats thereof.

Cypres, Peter, I claim Cy-près

Cypres, Peter, I claim Cy-près . . . as a remedy to the Queen's Counsel Peter Alderidge Williams' untyped, undated, unsigned, unpresented "quantum meruit", first presented four years later in October 2008 and having impossible and illegal conditions amounting to the slavery of a Negro descendant.[9]

Is Peter Williams QC not involved in a physical assassination?

Is Peter Williams QC not involved in a financial assassination?

---

[6] Wikipedia.

[7] *Ibid.*

[8] Maximums and Principals of Law to be relied upon.

[9] Cypres (cy-près doctrine): 'Where an impossible condition, an illegal condition, an impossible or illegal limitation, or impossible or illegal object/ive is in place, then the nearest practicable legal position is enforced as the contract.'

Wikipedia: "A typical example would be a trust established to turn public opinion against slavery. Once slavery was abolished, the trust's stated purpose had become impossible to effect. The court will then modify the particular purpose of the trust, leaving it within the same general charitable purpose. In Jackson v. Phillips, the testator bequeathed to trustees money to be used to 'create a public sentiment that will put an end to negro slavery in this country'. Thereafter, slavery was abolished by the Thirteenth Amendment to the United States Constitution. The funds were nevertheless applied cy-près to the 'use of necessitous persons of African descent . . .' [Jackson v. Phillips, (1867) 96 Mass. 539, 541, 597]" Cy-près also means that everyone should be paid for their work done.

The America Bar influences the International Bar of which the New Zealand Bar is a member. The cy-près doctrine removes slavery and impossible illegal conditions, especially when they amount to slavery, and especially for someone of Negro descent, like myself from the Cape Verde Islands.

Hallett's letter to Williams on 26 April 2005 and the 28–31 August 2004 Murder Threats

This letter was in addition to the third account sent to Williams:

> ". . . On 28 August 2004 I sailed with you to Waiheke Island where I was to be dropped off to return documents to a friend and then catch the ferry back. Instead of taking me to the ferry, you took me to a bay on the opposite side of the Island with no wharf, road, or mobile reception. You refused to take me to the ferry or to any landing place . . .
>
> At the time of stepping on your boat for the first time, I did not realise (nor was I warned) the depth of the incompetence of your sailing friends . . .
>
> Your other mate, Albi [Orme], the Maori All Black lawyer [and Williams' researcher] proved to be as socially adept as your Christian sychophant. He spent the nights drunk and his days sleeping it off while bragging about how great Maori sailors were. This was interspersed with threats to kill, of which I received at least four. [You kept plying him with alcohol] As captain and employer, I take these to come indirectly from you (I first met him at your place) and your vicious Rottweiler dog to be another standing threat.
>
> Considering the threats received on my life by your crew, it is debateable as to whether this was a kidnapping. In the least, the threats made me think twice about sending you an account.
>
> That being so, on the return from Great Barrier to Kawau Island the winds came up. Albi was asleep and failed to pull a rope the entire journey. Kevin, the long faced Christian, spent his day in the galley, only to surface to deck for vomiting. This left you and I as the remaining sailors. I doubt you would have managed alone, which left me to sail your boat, and in some ways, save your life. From what I hear, you were impressed enough to spread it around that you were considering me as your 'first mate'.
>
> Imagine how stunned I was to receive your abusive phone call and refusal to pay after I had completed your development to a point, been kidnapped? saved your life and those of your two friends. This certainly shows that my experience of you is far less than your historical reputation, although it does match with your current reputation amongst at least some of Auckland's lawyers . . . that you are 'past your use by date'. Sad but true.
>
> I trust that this mild-mannered dressing down will go some way towards a reality check for you. Perhaps when you remove your threatening dogs and sycophants, your true friends may come around and have a conversation, as opposed to what happens now – long-faced Christians sitting at your feet singing koom-by-ya and saying that you're the reincarnation of a Chinese emperor. He's a little way off. The best reflection of you is your admission to being into Asian porn.
>
> Perhaps I should finish with quotes from my third contract to you . . . 'pro-rata payments taking precedents over any work delayed outside my control.' . . ."

I'd hate to be Marty Johnstone

I'd hate to be Marty Johnstone . . . no hands, no teeth, and dead. All because he sold drugs in competition to Terry Clark a.k.a. Mr Asia . . . and Peter Williams QC's junior lawyer Karen Soich was Mr Asia's girlfriend. Her role was keeping an eye on the financial investments of New Zealand businessmen who had taken a risk on heroin trafficking . . . interesting!

Marty Johnstone's former flatmate in the flats on Bellevue Road next to the entrance to the Mt Eden Swimming Pools talking to the author on 9 March 2009: "The order to murder Marty definitely came from New Zealand. Marty was killed in England in October 1979. It was the syndicate, but one person had to make the phone call."

Internal Affairs Officer, 20 February 2009: "Peter Preece is a Forensic Accountant in the Fraud Squad. He's a civilian. He's okay. He's the only one with any brains in the entire Police Fraud Squad. They're investigating you."

Author: "What, on Williams' request I bet. Is that not the mark of a guilty person."

Peter Williams Intelligence Friend ("PWIF"), 11 March 2009: "Peter didn't get Sian Elias to intervene. They're not friends. The Referee Stuart Benson should not have accepted Peter's evidence of reading out of your book about himself, and that was what got Stuart's bosses angry, so now they're looking at dismissing him."

Author: "Well that's a turn for the books".

PWIF: "Don't quote me on this . . . Now what would you take from Williams to keep it out of court? "

Author: "Ten grand".

PWIF: "He won't pay that".

Internal Affairs Officer, 12 March 2009: "Don't quote me on this but Peter Preece has looked into you and he reported back, 'He seems to be fine, a nice honest young man'."

Author: "Oh good. That's great."

Internal Affairs Officer: "The QCs have had a look at your slavery charge against Williams and they're all saying, 'He's a sitting duck for slavery. We wish we had thought of it".

Author: "Ha ha. I know. It is slavery!"

Internal Affairs Officer: "All the Black Africans are getting excited about it. The Black guys are talking about it. The Ethiopians approached me and said: 'We didn't know who Hallett was until your name turned up and we reckon you run him'. I said: 'No, he runs himself'. They said: 'How can he charge for slavery when he's white?' I said: 'He's got a little Black in him', and they said: 'Oh perfect, a Black man with a white face – all the advantages of court. We're watching it with interest as we want to charge our employers with slavery.'

"So don't be surprised if there are a few Black people in the audience listening and watching."

Author: "I told Williams once 'I sprang from a Black African who swam two miles out to a whaling ship and ended up in Sydney, then Stewart Island, lived in a cave on the neighbouring island and renamed it 'Brava', after Bravo Island in the Cape Verdes'.

"Then that comedian Billy Connolly did a story on it. Yeah, it was my mother who told him the story. She met Billy on Stewart Island where she lives. Billy got most of it right. Gomez used to live in a cave. He had 22 kids, 21 survived. On his deathbed his kids were standing around calling him an arsehole and he jumped out of bed and chased them around the room with a knife. By 'room' I mean the entire house. All of them used to live off one cow, one sheep, root vegetables and the fish they could catch. They used to row a mile to Stewart Island to school. Hard doers. Then his grandson married Ernest Godward's daughter – you know New Zealand's greatest inventor – the Godward Gas Generator, the hair clip, the hair curler, the eggbeater, employer of Samuel Clemens (Mark Twain) as vice president, friends and near working neighbour's of Tesla and two US presidents . . . I've really got to finish '*Flying the Planet*'. Must get that story out on how we dropped the Berlin Wall."

Internal Affairs Officer: "The last two are hard to believe. I don't understand the science, but your timing of the Berlin Wall all fits and ties in with what the Spymaster reported to you from the BND – German Intelligence. BND first stood for 'Brothels 'n Deutschland'."

Author: "Few believed the stories of white slavery either". . .

And we have to remember the judicial system is set up to destroy good men".

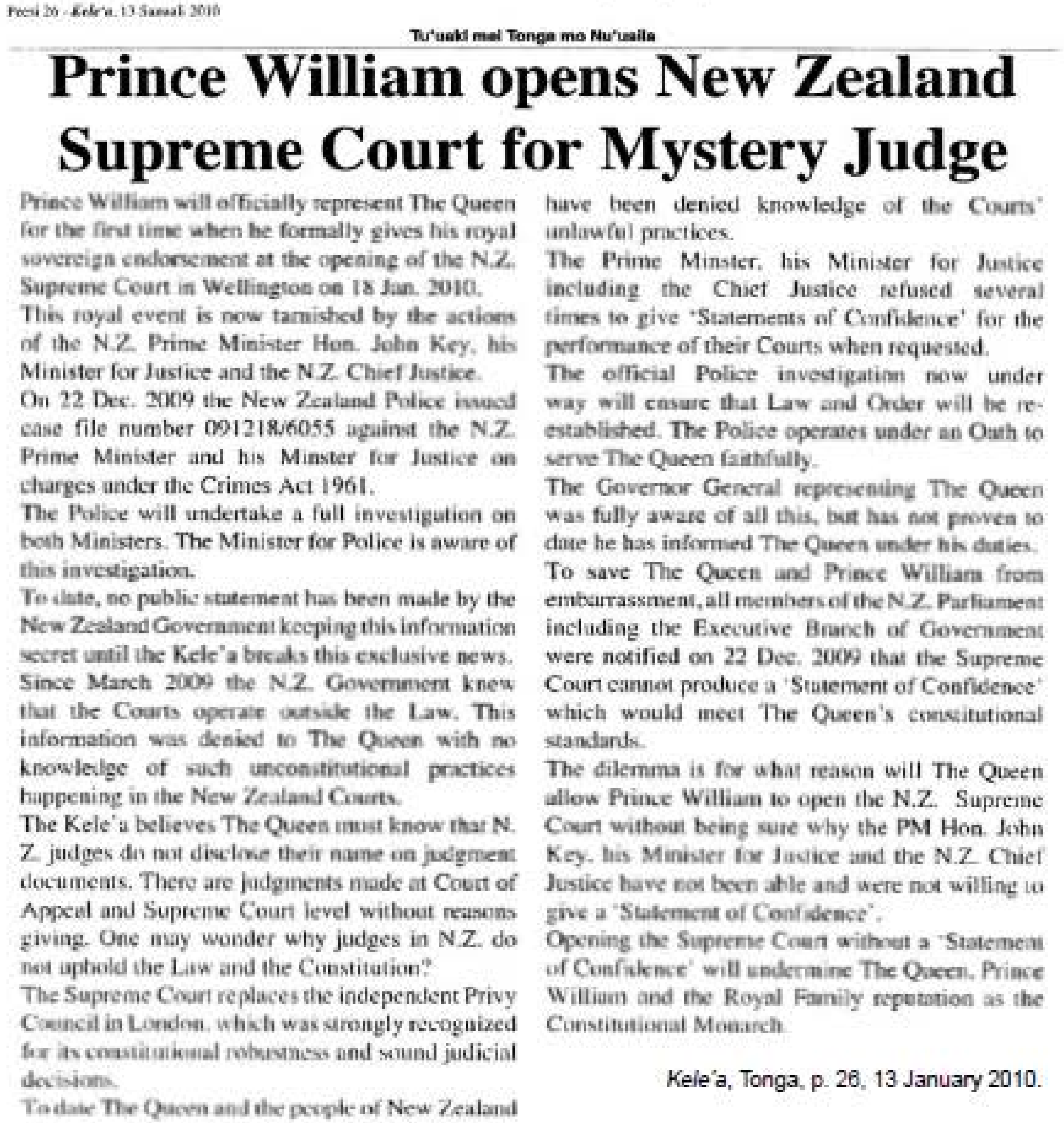

Pesi 26 - *Kele'a*, 13 Sanuali 2010

Tu'uaki mei Tonga mo Nu'usila

Prince William opens New Zealand Supreme Court for Mystery Judge

Prince William will officially represent The Queen for the first time when he formally gives his royal sovereign endorsement at the opening of the N.Z. Supreme Court in Wellington on 18 Jan. 2010.

This royal event is now tarnished by the actions of the N.Z. Prime Minister Hon. John Key, his Minister for Justice and the N.Z. Chief Justice.

On 22 Dec. 2009 the New Zealand Police issued case file number 091218/6055 against the N.Z. Prime Minister and his Minster for Justice on charges under the Crimes Act 1961.

The Police will undertake a full investigation on both Ministers. The Minister for Police is aware of this investigation.

To date, no public statement has been made by the New Zealand Government keeping this information secret until the Kele'a breaks this exclusive news.

Since March 2009 the N.Z. Government knew that the Courts operate outside the Law. This information was denied to The Queen with no knowledge of such unconstitutional practices happening in the New Zealand Courts.

The Kele'a believes The Queen must know that N. Z. judges do not disclose their name on judgment documents. There are judgments made at Court of Appeal and Supreme Court level without reasons giving. One may wonder why judges in N.Z. do not uphold the Law and the Constitution?

The Supreme Court replaces the independent Privy Council in London, which was strongly recognized for its constitutional robustness and sound judicial decisions.

To date The Queen and the people of New Zealand have been denied knowledge of the Courts' unlawful practices.

The Prime Minster, his Minister for Justice including the Chief Justice refused several times to give 'Statements of Confidence' for the performance of their Courts when requested.

The official Police investigation now under way will ensure that Law and Order will be re-established. The Police operates under an Oath to serve The Queen faithfully.

The Governor General representing The Queen was fully aware of all this, but has not proven to date he has informed The Queen under his duties.

To save The Queen and Prince William from embarrassment, all members of the N.Z. Parliament including the Executive Branch of Government were notified on 22 Dec. 2009 that the Supreme Court cannot produce a 'Statement of Confidence' which would meet The Queen's constitutional standards.

The dilemma is for what reason will The Queen allow Prince William to open the N.Z. Supreme Court without being sure why the PM Hon. John Key, his Minister for Justice and the N.Z. Chief Justice have not been able and were not willing to give a 'Statement of Confidence'.

Opening the Supreme Court without a 'Statement of Confidence' will undermine The Queen, Prince William and the Royal Family reputation as the Constitutional Monarch.

Kele'a, Tonga, p. 26, 13 January 2010.

Supreme Court Failure

With the transfer of the allegiance of the Supreme Court from Britain to Israel, the Queen could not open it. It had to be done by a Rothschild, so Prince William did it – opening the new Supreme Court building in Wellington on 18 January 2010.

With Chief Justice Sian Seerpoohi Elias being put on notice on 2 July 2008 for the murder of Michael King and the attempted murder of Greg Hallett (with no reply) and being published in New Zealand and America as organising and subcontracting out murders, as a contract killer – both in books, in the court, on radio, podcast and YouTube – a Statement of Confidence could not be produced.

The courts are operating well outside the law, and in the realms of mafia, doing contract killings – subcontracting them out, destroying people's futures, unable to settle a debt, trafficking heroin, manufacturing methamphetamines with police and lawyers and police who are made lawyers, funding the subcontracting of murders, laundering the drug money, then blacklisting or murdering anyone with the nous to find out, or who speaks out, or is about to speak out.

New Zealand has been under a media blackout for 40 years, ever since the Communists took over under the guise of Feminism – and didn't tell anyone that's what they were.

Mossad Murders in New Zealand

Why the Police Create Crime and Support Murder

The Murder of Michael King – New Zealand's Preeminent Cultural Historian

I heard about this in October 2003 while waiting for my cup of tea. When no one picked these up, Sian Elias had her hand raised by the Mossad who eagerly carried out the murders for her – males only. The same crowd tried to kill me in April 2002, August 2002, and May 2004, but I told them I wasn't available and named them instead.

There names are Zev William Barkan, Uriel Zoshe Kelman, Elisha Cara, an Auckland University lecturer and Auckland Jewish Council member, Anthony David Reznik, and a Mosssad agent living on Auckland's Waiheke Island called Yaron – a former Israeli Tank Commander who got stuck in the mud outside my place while doing reconnaissance. The cottage has since burnt down.

There were also several other Israelis doing reconnaissance on me, one of whom worked at Placemakers, owned by Fletchers, formerly run by Hugh Fletcher, the husband of the Chief Justice, Jewess Sian Elias, the Prime Minister's contract killer and the highest ranking Sayanim in the country.

> Sayanim are: "Jews living outside Israel that volunteer to provide assistance to the Israeli Mossad. Includes facilitating medical care, money, logistics, and even overt intelligence gathering. Estimates put the number of sayanim in the hundreds of thousands."[1]

M: "Israel has the best spy network because every Jew is a spy".

Zev William Barkan had been an Israeli diplomat in Vienna for several years where he specialised in murder. Like the American embassies, which have at least two contract killers present at any given time, Israel's embassies have more.

Then Zev Barkan ran a studio making snuff and porno movies on the Mekong river at Pen Yau in Cambodia. Here they were also arranging car accidents, and fiddling with death certificates and passports. Barkan (a.k.a. Ze'ev Bruckstein, Kevin William Hunter) moved from simple snuff movies to filming the suicides of vagrants, Russian roulette and contract killing for his government, or any other government.

Barkan was in New Zealand 3–20 March 2004 and travels as Kevin William Hunter under a Canadian passport, with other reports stating he skipped New Zealand in April 2004,[2] just in time to complete the Michael King murder. It wasn't hard to get in and out of New Zealand as two immigration agencies are run by former paedophile MPs – Sir Roger Douglas and Aussie Malcom.

It wasn't hard for these Mossad contract killers to get assistance. There are 1500 Israeli agents in the South Island and a similar number in the North Island – so that's 3000 or so. When you include the Sayanim (fulltime Mossad agents who live as locals) they probably have 5000 potential agents in New Zealand, as well as the synagogues and embassies to hide in. With Israel's influence, the Mossad are not limited to one embassy, but could hide in any embassy. All they have to do is cite the sodomy of one of the diplomats. Since the Diplomatic Corp is the 'Sodomy Olympics', a guess is as good as a confirmation.

The two Israeli agents caught were Uriel Kelman and Eli Cara. All the rest got away scot-free to this day. Kelman and Cara pleaded guilty of the passport frauds, were charged NZ$50,000 each (to be paid to a cerebral palsy charity) and sentenced to six months in prison. The maximum sentence was five years.

---

[1] Vimeo, Anglo-Egyptian Negotiations 11 July 54.

[2] National Socialist Movement website, 'Kara and Kelman released'; www.professionalsoldiers.com/forums/printthread.php?t=6100&pp=40.

Labour MP Ruth Dyson was the Minister for Senior Citizens and Disability Issues when the passport fraud against the tetraplegic was being set up and in progress . . . so Ruth Dyson also appears to be an accomplice to the Mossad Elworthy/King murders. Ruth Dyson is a former prostitute and is easily compromised in exchange for her retaining position. She had also lost her driver licence twice for drunk driving while an MP.

One of the Sayanim was Auckland Jewish Council member Tony Resnick (a.k.a. David Resnick , Anthony David Reznik) who worked as an ambulance officer for St John Ambulance. This gave him access into the home of the cerebral palsy victim whose passport was stolen for the Israeli diplomat assassin.

Spymaster, 4 March 2010: "Reznik was actually Dr. Anthony David Reznik who played dumb to become an ambulance driver, and even said so to a fellow driver: 'He was very bright and tried hard not to show it . . . There is no doubt in my mind that the whole murder was jacked up by St. John's Ambulance. They do business on an everyday basis with the Mossad in the Middle East. They're as crooked as. When the Mossad rings them, it's how high do we have to jump'."

Israelis are renown for attacking victims, something the Jewish Catholic Freemason-controlled New Zealand courts emulate, and the cerebral palsy victim whose identity was stolen, had been unable to speak for several years, and was unable to travel. The passport botch up was loud and obvious. It took all media attention away from the murders – which were loud, obvious, well-timed, in-snyc, and comparable to the 19 January 2010 murder of Mahmoud al-Mabhouh.

Foreign Minister Phil Goff: "Cara's passports could be for 'an assassination in a third country'."[3] That's right Phil, but the third country was New Zealand and the passport was for the Israeli diplomat and contract killer Zev Barkan, already Ze'ev Bruckstein & Kevin William Hunter.

Phil Goff's misdirected information suggests he was involved in his second murder. His first was being a willing accessory to the murder of the Rainbow Warrior lawyer/ WTO lawyer/ Ambassador to Iran, Chris Beeby in March 2000, along with Helen Clark – Prime Minister of three months. She didn't waste any time. (See Attachment "W", 'The Murder of Chris Beeby')

Helen Clark bowed to pressure and let Kelman and Cara out after 76 days (2½ months). They were released before dawn to an immigration official who presented them with deportation orders, drove them to the Auckland Airport and placed them on a business class flight to Hong Kong, the last country they were in.

Business Class! It was business and it was government business. They then flew to Israel. When Reznik fled, he took the same route, via Hong Kong.

It has never been explained what this pressure was, but Israel, with its six (6) Cray computers,[4] and running Russia from at least 1917, had all the dirt on Helen Clark (KGB), so much so, that she became one of their assets post-Michael King's murder.

So in 2004, Helen Clark expanded from KGB agent to also being an Israeli asset.

The excuse given was that Kelman and Cara were "given the maximum remission for good behaviour",[5] but they spent the whole time inside complaining and bitching to various governments and governmental heads, and were only in prison from 15 July to 29 September 2004 – so only 40 % of their sentence was served.

The fourth person involved was a lecturer at the University of Auckland where Sian Elias' husband, Hugh Fletcher, was made Chancellor on 18 October 2004, just months after the January, March and June murders, and after the complete lack of investigation into any of them.

Two of the four Mossad agents were imprisoned in July 2004, released from Mt Eden Prison in September 2004, and 19 days later, Hugh Fletcher was made Chancellor of the University of Auckland, a.k.a. Murder Inc..

This places the Mossad time served at 20%.

The question is, was Hugh Fletcher made Chancellor of the University of Auckland because his wife – the mischling Jewess Chief Justice Sian Elias (Sayanim) – arranged for the early release of the "passport fraud" Mossad agents who were running a cover operation for the murders she was contracted to do by the sexually compromised KGB Prime Minister Helen Clark?, or was it just a coincidence of timing, spheres of influence, career promotions, and a total lack of investigation.

The entire 'passport operation' was a distraction for the murders the New Zealand Prime Minister had ordered and the Chief Justice was carrying out. The passport fraud was the fallback position.

Eli Cara specialised in distraction operations and Zev Barkan specialised in murder. The passport fraud was for Zev Barkan – the murderer. The prostitute MP Ruth Dyson sat on the sidelines in support, as did the Foreign Minister Phil Goff – experienced in accessory to murder.

This information was never raised in court, nor were the timely deaths of Sir Peter Elworthy (13 January 2004) and Michael King (29 March 2004), nor were they treated as murders, nor were they investigated.

David McNee's 20 July 2003 murder was also covered up. Hugh Fletcher was directly involved. Sian Elias and Helen Clark ran the cover up. Judge Coral Shaw then covered up for her husband Peter Shaw who had been assaulted by the murderer some six hours prior. Peter Shaw also belonged to Hugh Fletcher's child sex abuse clique and was his Art Curator.

The only reason Zev Barkan was caught was that he spoke with a Canadian accent and this raised suspicion in the passport official (Internal Affairs). No other agency did anything then, nor have they done anything in the five years since.

Zev Barkan was allowed to complete his mission and escape.

In the late 1990s, Eli Cara headed a specialist surveillance unit in the Mossad's Neviot department, which collected intelligence by street surveillance, break-ins and installing listening devices.[6]

Neviot means 'spring of water' – and their surveillance brought in information like a spring of water.

> In late 1998, Eli Cara sent two inexperienced Mossad officers from Finance HQ (sell drugs, control sex, take bribes) and the Research Department (foreign sexual deviancy). These two, Udi Hargov and Igal Damary, were sent in to the Zigi fishing village on the southern coast of Cyprus, along with their equipment, radio communication scanners, a laptop computer, cellular phones and eight maps of Cyprus.
> The owner of the holiday flat they rented saw these two foreign boffins with all their equipment and called the police. The 'finance and research' Mossad were charged with spying on "very sensitive army operations" at the nearby Vassiliko port. It wasn't great cover.

---

[3] Nicky Hager, *Sunday Star-Times*, 'Australians aware of agent's connection to Mossad', 27 February 2005.
[4] Computer History Museum, Cray-1 30th Anniversary presentation, 2006, paraphrased: "Cray computers were extremely expensive machines (US$8.8 million in 1976) and the number of units sold were small. Most 'countries' considered it prestigious to be a member of the exclusive club and wore neckties with a tiny mosaic of national flags of 'Club of Cray-Operating Countries'. Australasia had one tie between them. By 2000, the Cray-1 supercomputer market was superseded by the DEC Alpha-based Cray T3D and Cray T3E series."
[5] Egypt State Information Service, 'New Zealand deports two Israeli spies', 30 September 2004.

[6] The main sources for this section are:
Nicky Hager, *Sunday Star-Times*, 'Australians aware of agent's connection to Mossad', 27 February 2005;
Nicky Hager, *[Global-L] Mossad article*, 'Mossad man's history of bungles', 27 February 2005;
Vernon Small and Michael Pelly, *The Dominion Post*, 'Two Mossad spies jailed in New Zealand', 16 July 2004;
Pacific News, 'Jailed Israeli spy worked for security firm', 2004.

In fact, it was bad cover, but it did serve to show that, internationally, Israel can put enough pressure on governments, so that any decision can be made in their favour.

This pressure also includes legal cases in foreign countries for which Israeli's are not involved, as well as pressure from other governments which Israel has influence over – America and many European nations. The two boffins at Finance HQ and R&D were getting practical lessons into their department's influence over the rest of the world.

A change is as good as a holiday and Cyprus was a departmental field trip.

The Mossad boffins pleaded not guilty. Behind the scenes pressure came from Israel's Attorney-General to Cyprus' Attorney-General Alecos Markides (twice); at least two US senators; and a European cabinet minister approached Cyprus' President Glafcos Clerides.

Cyprus dropped its pants and the "spying and conspiracy" charges were replaced with one "minor telecommunications charge" and "approaching a restricted area". The Mossad boffins got three years, but after nine months were pardoned by President Glafcos Clerides.

With the Cray computer, Israel has records of all the world's scandals (from 1976) and can put enormous pressure on governments. Nine months out of a 36-month sentence suggests that Israel has 75% control over the Cyprus judiciary and government. This would be a fair summation of Israel's influence over most world's governments and judiciaries.

In New Zealand's case, the Judiciary is run by the Sayanim Mossad agent Sian Elias who then created the Supreme Court, thus moving final legal decision from London to Tel Aviv, and effectively the nation's allegance from Britain to Israel.

Now New Zealanders have to suck up to Israel instead of the Queen of England.

Mossad Commander Eli Cara was content with the Cyprus bungle, including the false charges. They were, in fact, spying on Lebanese Hezbollah. That the operation was caught and stopped does not mean it was a complete failure. It only means that it was successful up to that point. It may not have paid dividends, but it was carried off as a distraction while another 2,500 Mossad operations (approx.) around the world went untouched. The 'bungle' became known as "the Cyprus fiasco".

Complicit with this, Eli Cara was moved sideways into the staff department and then promoted by his long-standing friend, Hagai Hadas (Head of Assassinations), to head the "New Zealand/ Australia operation".

It is rare for Operations to have one goal. Usually they have a primary goal, a secondary goal, and any other role that gets attached along the way. If any succeed, it's a success.

In the New Zealand/ Australia/ Asia case, the primary role was murder, either for snuff movies, or to remove anyone in New Zealand who was in the way of the Zionist agenda and the success of their agents, whether Mossad, or KGB – an offshoot of the Mossad.

The secondary role was obtaining first class fraudulent passports (those that pass government checks).

Hagai Hadas (a.k.a. 'H'), a former paratrooper, was director of Headquarters Directorate. In the 1990s he was head of Massada (the top secret Kesaria Unit) of which Kidon was the assassination unit. Kidon was the cream of the Mossad and it specialised in death, as much of Israel does.

You only have to quote "Middle East Peace Talks" as the ongoing fraud that Jews are peaceful people.

As head of the Kesaria Unit, Hagai Hadas ran the Mossad's most secret agents ('Lohamim' or 'Combatants'). The Combatants were usually Jews of Arab origin who spoke Arabic [Yaron gave me a rare dialect Arabic translation on Waiheke Island]. They were very often Druze. With borrowed identities and false passports they were sent to foreign countries, mostly oil-rich Arabic countries, to conduct special operations, which tended to involve murder.

Murder compliance is Israel's modus operandi.

To avoid press coverage and police investigation, these murders were most often made to look like accidents – more so in the West – and in the West, the Kidon assassins tended to look like their target population.

Massada/ Kesaria/ Kidon Lohamim/ Combatants/ Assassins in the West were Jewish contract killers that did not look like Arabs.

Israel had long learnt from the Druze, who merged into their target population and took on their customs. The Jewish version of the 'compliant Druze living in non-arabic countries' are known as 'Sayanim'. These Jews are effectively full-time Mossad staff living in foreign countries, often with dual citizenship and an accent that is neither local, nor Israeli, but of an intermediate country where they were Westernised.

Zev Barkan's mistake was his Canadian accent.

Sayanim take their wages from the country they occupy and ensure that each other are promoted, and not investigated.

The Sayanim are not prevented from promotion. As an example, when they marry a Freemason and are involved in the judiciary or government, there is no limit to their promotion, or their corruption, and their crimes go unchallenged. Rather, they are usually elevated to the top positions. The Cray computer has something to do with this. Israel has six (6). New Zealand and Australia share one (1).

It was a long-term plan and Israel was not short of time or money in its plans for conquest or compliance. Nor has Israel ever been limited by its methods. Israel considers its Sayanims from birth and even arranges their marriages, which are often marriages for cover. In this way, a wealthy paedophile Freemason may find himself married to a michling Jewess who is then promoted up the ranks of the judiciary faster than a compromised judge's guilty verdict.

It is preferable that the Sayanim's parents were compromised as this shows a lack of morality in the Sayanim child. A lack of morality is much valued by the Mossad. In Sian Elias' case, her father, a Jewish doctor, was having sex with his patients on the doctor's table in exchange for exaggerating the number of their children for Social Welfare. So it was prostitution where the government paid for the sex. If that ain't Jewish . . .

Sian Elias stonewalled the investigation into her father and has sex with her chauffeur in the back seat outside official functions. She sits on top and sings. All of her chauffeurs have to be young and virile men, and even then she goes through them quicker than Bali-Belly.

When Israel's General Meir Dagan was appointed director of the Mossad in September 2002 he restructured the Mossad into two – the 'Operational Directorate' and the 'Headquarters Directorate' for which he hired paratrooper Hagai Hadas to head. This made Hagai Hadas in charge of non-operations and long-term planning – anything but the killing.

Killings were to be done by General Dagan's **Operations Directorate** which would be tagged onto Hadas' long-term non-operations, like **passport fraud**. If non-operations became a fiasco, it didn't particularly matter as several 'operations' would already have been accomplished using the non-operations compliance, base, influence, contacts and cover.

Once operations had succeeded overseas, often for foreign government's own contract killings, to save face, non-operations would be charged with a minor crime (passport fraud or spying and conspiracy), the charges would be reduced (to minor telecommunications and approaching a restricted area), the sentences would be reduced (from 3 years to 9 months, or 6 months to 2½ months) . . . and those who put out the contracts would be promoted through the Jewish controlled media and made to look like patriotic saints (Helen Clark and Sian Elias), and everyone would be happy, especially the police, who were instructed in no uncertain terms that no investigation was to take place.

'Guilty by association' people would then be promoted into no effort honorary positions like Chancellor of a university – Hugh Fletcher.

Haaretz: "It is typical of the Mossad culture that there was no serious internal inquiry into the 'botched' operation in New Zealand, just as there was none in Cyprus. When the New Zealand passport scandal broke Dagan simply 'ordered division heads to make their staff sign a secrecy document pledging that they would not talk' about the affair."[7]

As a result of 50 years of contract killing the Mossad now has a culture of backbiting, disillusionment and resignations, but as M says: "The Mossad always have an unlimited supply of spies. Every Jew is a spy. Every Jew outside Israel is a Sayanim and every Jew inside Israel is a potential Sayanim."

"The Mossad is in deep trouble and less and less appreciated by its foreign counterparts. The Mossad has been overtaken in effectiveness internally by the Israel Security Service (Shabak) and by other western agencies internationally."[8] The latter is more accurately read as follows:

> 'The Mossad control all foreign intelligence agencies and all intelligence agencies have now been instructed by their governments – all of which are double agent governments working against their own people – to assist the Mossad by whatever means possible, while still saving face.
> The Mossad have accomplished this via the Cray computer, murder compliance, falsifying records, a long history of falsifying records, manufacturing oral statements after recording a voice for ten seconds, supplying prostitutes to prominenti, supplying child prostitutes to prominenti, placing prostitutes as MPs, and supplying drugs into countries with government compliance . . . usually from the President, Prime Minister, Intelligence head, or 2IC, and the police, usually the spokesman (Greg O'Connor) and the Minister, or the soon-to-be Police Minister (Annette King).
> This includes the American NATO Israel-controlled Afghan heroin mountain.
> It also includes New Zealand.'

When General Meir Dagan was appointed director of the Mossad in September 2002[9] he hired Hagai Hadas as Mossad No. 3. This made paratrooper Hadas responsible for long-term planning and non-operational units. Neither were good picks.

General Meir Dagan was appointed by Prime Minister Ariel Sharon, the Butcher of Qana, Sidon, Beirut and others, with predictions that this would destroy the Mossad's relationships with other intelligence agencies around the world and turn Israel into a country where Jews did not want to live . . . These predictions turned out to be completely accurate.

Veteran political commentator Nahum Barnea: "Dagan is one of Sharon's old assets – 33 years ago they cleared Gaza of 'terrorists.' In the 1970s Dagan led an undercover commando unit called 'Rimon' . . . 'to seek out, arrest and liquidate Palestinian militants in the Gaza Strip' . . . Dagan and his unit Rimon were known for their unconventional methods"[10] and later had the same role in Lebanon.

Dagan carried a small Scorpion submachine gun while commander of the South Lebanon 'security zone' and was then made head liaison unit in Lebanon, as soon as no locals would talk to him [and we all know what happened in Lebanon]. Dagan: "I had several nicknames there, 'Abu-Jabal' and 'King of the Shadows'.

"One of Dagan's friends described him as a 'guided missile'. Another said, 'He needed someone to restrain him, otherwise he might become dangerous.'"

Yigal Sarna, *Yediot Ahronot*: "Dagan was a field operative with a license to kill and a controversial record".

Dagan: "In the 'war on terror the targets are always people. There are spotlights that focus on a target for a brief moment and if you don't act immediately, the target disappears. **The best time to strike is when there are no terror attacks, because the target is not expecting it."**

Yigal Sarna, *Yediot Ahronot*: "Perhaps that explains why whenever there is movement toward a cease-fire we suddenly get a targeted killing that upsets the quiet. Dagan set up many of the 'activist units', others called them 'liquidation units'. The rationale for such units is that they act on the basis of accurate intelligence [which we all know is completely false and doesn't exist]."

Government Intelligence is generally Counter-Intelligence.
Our history is generally a history of fraud for some material gain –
gold, oil and spheres of influence over an entire country.
You have never lived in history. You have ony ever lived in the con.

Dagan: "People don't understand what a 'war on terror' is all about. Today we are operating against a new kind of terror and the only targets in countering terror are people."

Former senior Mossad from Mossad foreign relations: "Dagan's appointment is a recipe for disaster. It could destroy the organization's ties with secret services all over the world. His views on targeted killings during lulls worry me. An organization like the Mossad must not get into that frame of mind, because, if it does, it becomes a gang. If Dagan brings his morality to the Mossad, Israel could become a country in which no normal Jew would want to live."

That prediction has come entirely true and now with world Jewish rule, the planet is becoming a place where no one wants to live. I cite the United States suicide epidemic in 2008 in the last year of the Mossad-controlled Bush administration as a case in point.

Former Mossad officer, *Haaretz*: "When Dagan arrived at Mossad he brought Prime Minister Ariel Sharon an intelligence report. PM Sharon replied: 'From tomorrow I want only a list of targets for liquidation'."[11]

"Former Mossad staff are concerned about Mossad *increasingly* becoming 'a Mafia-style Murder Inc.'"[12] That is to say, the ex-Mossad already believe the Mossad is a Mafia-style Murder Inc., but soon the general public will know.

Well here it is . . . rehashed, rewritten, clarified, and expanded.

Israel is the biggest killer on the planet. Now that Russia – a Zionist-Israeli controlled Jewish creation – has stopped killing so much, it is Israel that has taken over as the murder capital of International Liquidations Inc.

Lenin and Stalin were always Jewish agents, and Stalin is the illegitimate son of Baron Edmond de Rothschild. The Rothschilds own the Central Bank, and therefore, all governments via money supply. The Rothschild son, Stalin, ruled Russia through mass murder and poverty. In this way, the Rothschilds bought Russia for seventy years and ran it an an extreme socialist experiment. (See Hallett's History transposed Worldwide, next page)

Israel's reputation for murder means that all Intelligence agencies work for them via their weakest points, which make up 10% of all agencies, 20% of all embassy staff, 90% of all diplomats, and half of most governments.

---

[7] *Ibid*, slightly paraphrased.
[8] *Ibid*.
[9] This section is reference from *Israeli Press Review*, 'Insights into new Mossad chief Meir Dagan', *Lebanonwire*, 17 September 2002, slightly paraphrased; www.professionalsoldiers.com/forums/printthread.php?t=6100&pp=40.
[10] *Ibid*.

---

[11] Nicky Hager, [Global-L] Mossad article, Mossad man's history of bungles, 27 February 2005.
[12] *Ibid*.

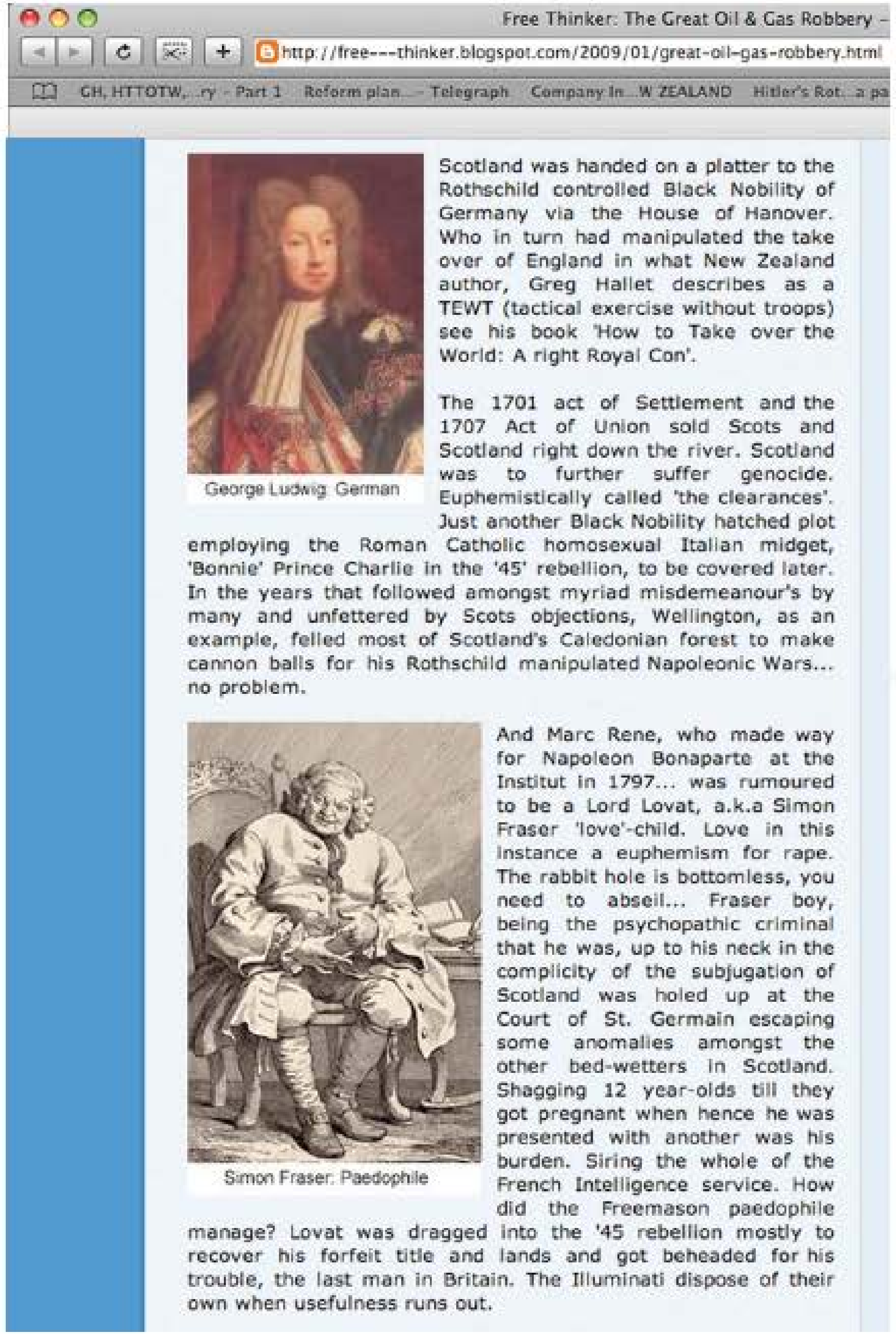
Free Thinker: The Great Oil & Gas Robbery -
http://free---thinker.blogspot.com/2009/01/great-oil-gas-robbery.html
GH, HTTOTW,...ry - Part 1
Reform plan... - Telegraph
Company In...W ZEALAND
Hitler's Rot...a pa

George Ludwig: German

Scotland was handed on a platter to the Rothschild controlled Black Nobility of Germany via the House of Hanover. Who in turn had manipulated the take over of England in what New Zealand author, Greg Hallet describes as a TEWT (tactical exercise without troops) see his book 'How to Take over the World: A right Royal Con'.

The 1701 act of Settlement and the 1707 Act of Union sold Scots and Scotland right down the river. Scotland was to further suffer genocide. Euphemistically called 'the clearances'. Just another Black Nobility hatched plot employing the Roman Catholic homosexual Italian midget, 'Bonnie' Prince Charlie in the '45' rebellion, to be covered later. In the years that followed amongst myriad misdemeanour's by many and unfettered by Scots objections, Wellington, as an example, felled most of Scotland's Caledonian forest to make cannon balls for his Rothschild manipulated Napoleonic Wars... no problem.

Simon Fraser: Paedophile

And Marc Rene, who made way for Napoleon Bonaparte at the Institut in 1797... was rumoured to be a Lord Lovat, a.k.a Simon Fraser 'love'-child. Love in this instance a euphemism for rape. The rabbit hole is bottomless, you need to abseil... Fraser boy, being the psychopathic criminal that he was, up to his neck in the complicity of the subjugation of Scotland was holed up at the Court of St. Germain escaping some anomalies amongst the other bed-wetters in Scotland. Shagging 12 year-olds till they got pregnant when hence he was presented with another was his burden. Siring the whole of the French Intelligence service. How did the Freemason paedophile manage? Lovat was dragged into the '45 rebellion mostly to recover his forfeit title and lands and got beheaded for his trouble, the last man in Britain. The Illuminati dispose of their own when usefulness runs out.

There weaknesses are key hole honey-traps (sexual preference), sexual deviancy, the sodomy olympics, gambling, debt, false promises, ideology, intrigue, cover marriages, arranged marriages, changes in higher-level personnel, double agents as heads of the government, judiciary, finance, military, police, and local body politics, like Mayor's and Counsellors, as well as charismatics – some of whom are on long strings to Intelligence, used to gather information on fringe groups like the Progressive Youth Movement (PYM) and wannabe politicians who collect the sexual data on New Zealanders and give them to foreign agents for their sphere of influence.

So Israel has no shortages of allies. They just don't advertise themselves.

New Zealand is full of Israel's allies and many of our Mayor's are cross-dressers to the extent that they are often selected for their cross-dressing, as long as they have some charisma. The charismatic Wanganui Mayor Michael Laws wears women's underwear and makeup to work (has his own talkback show), and the charismatic West Auckland Mayor Bob Harvey is also known to be a crossdresser, as well as the former PR to Prime Minister Norman Kirk. PM 'Big Norm' Kirk was assassinated on 31 August 1973 by the CIA – for not wearing a skirt.[13] Bob Harvey was also PR to the transvestite-rooting PM David Lange, who survived a little longer.

West Auckland mayor's wife, nurse Harvey, did the artifical inseminations at Helen Clark's home at 4 Cromwell Street, Mt Eden, between the HIV positive Mr Burrows (who now does sewerage for the UN) and Maryan Street's lesbian partner, Annemarie Wille. The resulting turkeybaster child then became Helen Clark's personal secretary, aged 18 and lesbian. She also doubled for 'Youth Fisting'.

New Zealand is not short of people who can be compromised. In fact, New Zealand is short of people who cannot be compromised. Easily-compromised people in positions of power make New Zealand an easy target for International Liquidations Inc.

In New Zealand the guilty parties include:

Prime Minister Helen Clark – compromised KGB agent, lesbian, filmed having sex with a female CIA pillow talker at Lincoln Cottage near the White House on night of 3/4 January 2003. She then ordered a "Knight of the Long Knives" murder series which included this author – Joseph Gregory Hallett.

Chief Justice Sian Elias – compromised Sayanim Mossad took the contract for the murders. Her husband Hugh Fletcher was then promoted to Chancellor of the University of Auckland.

Prime Minister Helen Clark then received 10 kg of Afghan heroin from NATO on 27–30 March 2005 and asked her closest Cabinet Ministers: "Who would like to distribute this heroin in exchange for the Police portfolio?" Minister of Health Annette King put up her hand, distributed the heroin via the Police spokesman Greg O'Connor, a former drug undercover, and was then promoted from Minister of Health to Minister of Police, and then Minister of Justice. Her training for the top Police job – dental nurse and heroin trafficker. (See Attachments "Z^1", 'The Greatest Living New Zealander'; "Z^2", 'Heroin Trafficking, Lawyers & Mr Asia'; "Z^3", 'Big Afghan Heroin Dump'; "Z^4", NATO and the UN Wanted War Criminals)

Like most politicians Annette King was failed upwards. She has a face of pure evil and every dental patient demanded full gas. This strained profits so King was failed sideways, and when she proved herself to be a total criminal, she was failed upwards. She was then promoted to Deputy Leader of the Opposition next to Phil-in Goff.

After these murder and heroin operations, and the operations that followed, and the operations that continued, and continue to this day, there has been no Policie, Judicial or Government investigation.

---

[13] Actually it was a whole lot more. Kirk wanted to nationalise the insurance industry as he realised insurance brought in more money than tax.

I wonder why?

Compromised people are placed into these positions to ensure that nothing happens.

How could this be?

Why is their never any investigation into Mossad contract killings, Government murders and Government drug-trafficking?

The Jews control the Freemasons and the Freemasons control the police. Therefore the Jews control the police. The Jews control every police force in the Western world whether through the Freemasons or some other group.

Israel has made a consistent effort to erradicate patriotism out of every country in the world. This weakens opposition countries and ensures migration, with at least the first generation of migrants having no patriotism. Hence the mass immigration of non-mixing groups every third generation.

With Jews controlling the Freemasons, it explains why the police create 80 % of all crime, and why 40% of the prison population are incarcerated for crimes they did not commit.[14]

> "Former Police drug undercover, Patrick O'Brien, whose evidence convicted 150–300 people in the 1970s, admitted to lying in every case, to manufacturing evidence, lying to the detectives, judge, jury, and even Governor-General Sir David Beatie, who praised him. Police National Headquarters received O'Brien's confessional letter on 24 December 2007 and did nothing about it for nearly 300 days, so O'Brien wrote to Chief Justice Sian Elias, who appointed lawyer Bruce Squire QC, who did not contact O'Brien."[15] Over the last 24 months nothing has happened.

Defathering – Occult Puppet Police protect Paedophiles

It also explains why the Jewish and Freemasonry controlled judiciary remove fathers out of families in 98 % of cases. Singularly, or combined, these two things – defathering leading to crime creation – completely erradicate any rational patriotism.

This is a version of divide and rule, the population fighting amongst themselves – the Jewish run New Zealand police against the Kiwi population – making the Police 'Occult Puppets'.

Defathering also serves the paedophiles of which the Jews, the Freemasons and the Catholics are renown. The Catholics make up a huge proportion of the judiciary based on their Jesuit education, and previous Catholic judges and lawyers . . . **and the paedophiles they serve to protect**. This also explains why they are so anti-abortion.

The paedophiles then promote each other into prominent positions in media, immigration, finance, justice, government and Diplomatic Corp and then exert their influence on the judiciary to:

1. Not investigate any Mossad cases, but come to a resolution.
2. Not investigate any government murders and deliver distraction news.
3. Remove fathers and expose children to paedophiles.
4. Stitch people up in order to access their children.
5. Ensure the public never know that the status quo is based on 'respectable' and **respectable means 'paedophile minder'**.
6. Promote paedophiles and paedophile minders to the most influential positions so that this status quo continues.
7. Always deny sexual deviancy. Never confirm it even when it is publicly apparent.
8. Censor the truth. Maintain the lie as the truth. Ensure the new lie becomes known as the truth.

---

[14] These are Howard League figures and are also backed up by *Are You My Father?, The Family Court and Other Experiments*, publ. 2002.

[15] Paraphrased from *New Zealand Herald*, 'Sian Elias received a letter from Patrick O'Brien in which he claimed to have lied under oath', 12 October 2008.

Such Prominent Paedophiles/ Child Sex Abuser list includes:

Brian Edwards (Media), PM Helen Clark's biographer and meda advisor to Labour Party MPs;

Hugh Fletcher (Industry, Justice, Education), University of Auckland Chancellor, married to Chief Justice Sian Elias;

Jonathan Hunt (Government), Speaker of the House, High Commissioner to Britain;

Sir Ron Brierly (Finance), controls the SAS retirement fund and paid NZ$1 million for his knighthood/ paedophile protection;

Sir Roger Douglas (Media, Finance, Immigration) Former Min. of Broadcasting & Finance;

Aussie Malcom (Immigration), trafficked LSD and heroin from Fiji, accussed of drowning his wife;

Sir Bob Jones, conman in Britain, child sex abuser in Cuba etc, applied P to **Paul Holmes**, then to Millie Elder's arsehole . . .

as well as all the paedophile minders, paedophile enablers, paedophile promoters and all those who envy their positions . . . and we shouldn't forget the main supplier of children to paedophiles and child sex abusers in New Zealand . . .

Patrick Mahoney DCNZM (Justice) is a de-frocked Catholic Priest. He then worked for Buddle Anderson Kent in Wellington during the 1960s and 70s and left around 1978/79 to become a judge. As a Catholic socialist alcoholic, he became the **Principal Family Court judge 1984–2004**.

Patrick Mahoney is a genuine 'paedophile enabler' and should be thought of as the Josef Mengele of the New Zealand family structure – the Dr Green of Paedophilia, the Dr Jeckyll and Hyde of Justice. At just 5'1" tall, he is a cardboard man. There is nobody inside. The lights are on, but the person only comes out when evil is having a party.

Patrick Mahoney was the biggest supplier of children to paedophiles New Zealand has ever seen – bigger than the colonisation, WWI and WWII put together.

After establishing himself as one of New Zealand's most hated judges, he was placed on the 1 January 2004 New Year's Honours List as "Distinguished Companion of the New Zealand Order of Merit, for services to the Family Court", but really it was protection for three decades of supplying children to paedophiles, turning the Family Court into a secret court, never answering a question directly, for not releasing any statistics, for creating crime and employing lawyers, and for throwing parties for lawyers and judges whenever unjust legislation was ratified.

After a short holiday he is now used to give the gong to other paedophile enabling judges, including Polynesian judges maried to S&M Police Sergeants, and community workers.

Judge Peter Trapsky (1981–30 September 1984) preceeded him. Trapskey worked in Mt Maunganui in Dowd Thomasen Trapskey when the Mount was a backwater surf town with a spaghetti factory and no bridges.

Trapsky was made a judge and began presided over divorce cases. Here he developed a taste for awarding women large payouts in exchange for them spending a week of sex with him at the Chateau in Tongariro. After three women got together and laid complaints, 'this was discovered' and the then first Principle Family Court Judge Trapsky was charged, convicted and jailed for 'having sex weekends with the wives in the divorce cases he was preciding over'. The ex-husbands were equally furious. Imagine the payouts. This is another version of prostitution – this time the ex-husband pays, and pays and pays.

The Ohura prison, halfway between Te Kuiti and Taumarunui in the King Country, was a special prison for people like Trapsky. It was so slack people used to leave cars outside with the keys inside for regular escape. There was only a shop and something else that depended on the prison. The prison closed and the whole town's gone now.

Other prison inmates noted Peter Trapsky's name appearing in golfing tournament records in the papers. Sure enough, convicted Judge Trapsky was applying for weekend prison leave to play in golfing tournaments. Those who noted this were doing hard time in the quarry crushing rocks with pick axes and had never even played golf. This story was totally suppressed, so those who challenged the Family Court couldn't state that:

"From its inception, the Family Court has been a corrupt occult mafia – another version on sex with mothers – this one, a paedophile and crime creation movement. Over 99.8% of paedophilia occurs when the biological father is absent and fatherless children create over 90% of all crime, so the Police and judiciary rely on fatherless children. The stitch up is all stitched up and the judges are all short Roman Catholic bisexuals and feminists – both groups dedicted to supplying their paedophile buddies with as much kiddy-booty as will make them all respectable, then spending the rest time and money between the Madonna and the whore – wife and prostitute (often on Hobson Street on Monday nights in the 1980s–90s)."

Judge Peter Boshier (1 April 2004–) succeeded Patrick Mahoney. Boshier studied law at Victoria University in Wellington in the 1970s. Here he was New Zealand's biggest supporter of Chairman Mao, ran the communist think tank, and edited the communist Maoist magazine 'Left of Victory'.

Chairman Mao was a communist, mass murderer (of 66.6–300 million) and paedophile who spent the last twenty years of his life in bed with Chinese nubiles (girls under 14). When Muldoon went to see him, he refused to see him in bed. Chaiman Mao got out of bed, stood up, met with NZ PM Rob Muldoon, and was dead inside three months.

Chairman Mao was a Jewish/ Chinese paedophile and it would seem that Peter Boshier wants to become Chairman Mao.

Peter Boshier is a dedicated paedophile enabler and uses anything he can to remove fathers from families. His favourite trick is domestic violence, so they lowered the criteria of domestic violence to raising a finger, raising your voice, or denying the mother the chequebook or visa card – and look what happened – the 'Credit Crunch'.

Female domestic violence against male makes up 59% of all domestic violence . . . but this female violence also constitutes the father being removed from his children.

As a dedicated paedophile enabler, Principle Family Court Judge Peter Boshier is removing fathers from families, exposing women to police rapes and gang bangs, some of them voluntary, turning children into criminals, and supplying paedophiles with children. In New Zealand, we call this "Respectable" and "Honorable".

Since 'respectable' means 'paedophile enabler' and "New Zealand is a paedophile movement fronting as a country", are New Zealand judges not being patriotic?

Were the Wakefield brothers not paedophiles? Colonel William Wakefield (25) certainly assisted his older brother, Edward (32), in abducting the extremely wealthy 14-year-old (going on 15) heiress Ellen Turner from a Liverpool boarding school in 1825, and took her over the Scottish border to Gretna Green, where they were married by the blacksmith David Laing. Edward Wakefield then took his bride to Calais in France.

William Wakefield also escaped arrest to France to meet his pregnant financée Emily Shelley-Sydney, returning to England for the birth where he was arrested and sentenced, along with his brother, on 23 March 1827, to three years in Lancaster Castle prison. This was now 16 days after the kidnapping-paedophile-marriage fiasco began. Then William's wife died leaving him with a six-month-old daughter who then married Sir Edward Stafford – the Premier of New Zealand.

Both brothers, Edward and William Wakefield, extorted money out of parents by saying: "We are going to tell everyone that we fucked your underaged daughter unless you give us 10,000 guineas." They were also wanted for murder, rape and kidnapping, so they were sent to New Zealand as a penance . . . where they gained roles in the country's development, but should have resigned their purchased commissions due to disgraceful conduct.

During the Wairau Massacre a Maori women was killed in the initial exchange of fire, the Maoris then killed everyone else in self-defense. None of the British personnel realised that by taking Wakefield with them, they were exposing themselves to claims of paedophilia, rape and extortion, so no one was prosecuted.

Spymaster: "Well, the Maoris had the goss(ip). You can't bullshit a Maori. That's one of the first things you learn . . . The Wakefield brothers were buried in Grafton Gully and when the motorway went through, there was a big stink about what to do with the bodies. At least one went to the bottom of St. Stephens Ave. New Zealand's 'Wakefield Street' off Auckland City's town hall, and another in central Wellington, are named after both brothers sentenced and convicted for 'kidnapping, paedophilia, and marriage under duress to a minor'."

Shouldn't the Auckland City Council and the Wellington City Council change the name of these streets, and have done so long ago, say 150 years or so; or Let's give the judges a wage rise for doing such a good job (Oops it happened between writing and publication). After all, they are patriotic and we wouldn't have this byline "respectable means paedophile enabler" and "New Zealand is a paedophile movement fronting as a country", without the police, judiciary and social services acting in support.

The judges goal is to become the leading cause of death in New Zealand.
New Zealand is a paedophile movement fronting as a country.
The New Zealand judiciary is a crime creation and paedophile movement.
The New Zealand judiciary is an occult mafia.
The New Zealand police create over 80% of all crime.

Q: "So where does that leave New Zealand and the police?"

A: "Up rape creek without a child to raise!"

Change the system to one based on cause and effect, not on protecting manufactured victims, police collusion and verballing in court. ("Verballing" is cop for 'lying'.)

As soon as the Mossad murder someone in New Zealand, the people and agencies that are supposed to protect their citizens, run in the opposite direction of the crimes and do their utmost to save their positions, or get a promotion out of their silence.

This is called 'covering your arse upwards'.

When the Mossad murder, the New Zealand bureaucracy has a flurry of meetings and re-present their puffed-up updated CV's to try and fill higher positions – like the one the dead guy held, or the one the fall guy held.

Spymaster: "In New Zealand, no one has any friends. Now I understand why."

Author: **"So why was Michael King murdered?"**

Spymaster: "At least two Intelligence Agents at the time told me Michael King was about to be busted for his activities with young boys arses. This was a complete embarrassment to Helen Clark who had recently invented the 'Prime Minister's Award' for authors and had awarded Michael King the first NZ$60,000 award on 6 October 2003.

"When she 'found out' his history, or it was pointed out to her (confirmed by another who could not be tamed), she immediately ordered the hit, and within the week it was sitting on Sian Elias' lap. She picked up the contract around 13 October 2003."

Author: "Michael King was also a friend of the convicted paedophile Bert Potter who was privy to Helen Clark's sexual secrets, along with those of her husband, Peter Davis, the former President of the Auckland University Gay Society in the 1970s, a homosexual and child sex abuser.

"It was during the 1970s that Bert Potter was collecting all the country's sexual secrets, so was Helen Clark, and so was Peter Davis. Bert was in on the experimental side, complete with communal orgies and no age limits for sex. He sent a lot of young women (17) into prostitution (several were my friends prior in 1981). Helen was in on the lesbian fisting junkets, communal orgies and prostitution (from 18), and Peter was in on the homosexual side complete with child sex abuse, paedophilia, and kiddy-fucking soirées.

"Between them they had the whole country sewn up. Helen then sold these sexual secrets to Vladimir 'Alexia' Putin in Wellington between 1980 and 1982. He used them to gain spheres of influence, thus controlling New Zealand, including Helen's admission as a Member of Parliament in 1981, and her rise to Labour Party leader, then Prime Minister.

"Bert had Helen Clark's sexual secrets and so controlled her during her Prime Ministership (1999–2008) and Helen Clark virtually turned New Zealand into the Satellite Tavistock sexual-social experiment that was the Centerpoint Commune, complete with drugs, partner swopping, and kiddy-fucking. All of this became respectable and warranted promotion under Helen Clark – the former Tavistock St Petersburg prostitute, KGB agent and murderer. She even tried to lower the age of legal consent to sex with 12 years olds.

"That ain't liberal – that's kiddy fucking – that's paedophilia. It made the papers, which Helen controlled completely, and right next to it was a two-page spread with Bert Potter saying kids should start having sex as soon as they can walk.

"Apart from Vladimir Putin, Helen's other controller was advocating toddler-sex."

Spymaster: "Michael King was also about to side with the Maoris over self-governance issues [which would have affected Sian Elias' ongoing 'Foreshore and Seabed ' fiasco, due for repeal in 2010] . . . so we had our warnings. I rang you in February 2004 and told you about them and then had the meeting with the Wellington Police officer, high-ranking, in Auckland, on the North Shore. Sorry, couldn't tell you where then, and I can't tell you now."

Author: "And Sir Peter Elworthy?"

Spymaster: "Digitalis in the midnight snack. At least it's not as bad as 'burnt alive in your car while heading to a freebee holiday'. Peter Elworthy, along with Michael King, was at the Primal Scream workshops run by Bert Potter in Wellington in 1974. Potter was an expert in Kiwi sexual secrets. Elworthy was from a family whose homes the British Governors-General stayed at (Admiral Sir John Jellicoe, etc) and also had standing as the President of Federated Farmers . . . and his nieces used to live at Bert Potter's Centerpoint Commune, which as you say, was a satellite Tavistock where government and international programmes were trialed."

Author: "One turned up on TV as 'Temptation Island'. I lived there with one of his nieces".

Spymaster: "Yeah, you said. Since Helen Clark was trained in the St Petersburg Tavistock, there was a credible loop of information and contacts, both sexual and intelligence, as well as the credibility, so that if Michael King was murdered, his relative by marriage, Elworthy,[16] could have spoken out and caused some damage, so Elworthy had to go first, King second. This silenced the two females with similiar information – that chef, and that radio announcer – Alison Holst and Sharon Crosby."

Author: "So they went into hiding. I didn't see Alison Holst in the media for quite a while."

Spymaster: ". . ."

Author: "So what happened after the Mossad murders?"

Spymaster: "Absolutely nothing."

Eli Cara and Uriel Kelman were arrested in March 2004. Barkan and Reznick slipped the net. The Sayanim Reznick got back to his homeland, Israel, and Barkan was allowed to complete his second murder before he got out in early April. This prevented the two females on the hit list from getting killed, which shows Helen Clark's feminist involvement.

---

[16] Sir Peter Elworthy's brother David was married to Roslyn King who had been married to Michael King.

Mossad Murder Attempt, 14–22 May 2004

When the Mossad came for me in May 2004, Eli Cara, Uriel Kelman, Tony Reznick and Zev Barkan were out of the picture and I was left with the Placemakers manager (55), his 'girlfriend' (34), a contract killer (32) and an Israeli Tank Commander (35) as marker.

Things were sensitive at their end, but all I had to do was confront them, which I did, and they backed off after eight days of surveillance (14–22 May 2004).

Mossad surveillance began as I exited from the Waiheke Island supermarket. The Placemakers manager (part of Fletchers) and his 'girlfriend', were laughing too much like bad spies, as they walked through the supermarket doors, just as I was leaving. The hands-on contract killer behind them, with tan skin and black short cropped hair, stopped, blocked the doorway, knelt down, did up his right shoelace, and spent the entire time looking up at my face.

A good 30 seconds past . . . All I could do was wait or knock him over.

By 22 May 2004 I was sick of the situation, and sick of paying lawyers, so I went up and spoke up to my would-be assassin who turned out to be another Mossad agent living on Waiheke Island (20 km from Auckland) and a former Israeli Tank Commander.

As the Mossad Tank Commander marker was doing his reconnaissance he got stuck in the mud outside my cottage, so I went and helped him try to move his white van (with his advertising on the side), and then organise to have it towed.

I told him: "I know the Mossad killed Michael King under instructions from Sian Elias, who was contracted to Helen Clark. The Mossad agent Sian Elias had organised the hit and the Mossad had poisoned the back of his steering wheel with epecacuana. They did the same thing with me."

This was their third attempt after the **2 April 2002 wheelbearing locknut break-in** and the **23 August 2002 epecac poisoning**, after the Cook Island's speech where I revealed Helen Clark as a KGB agent and correctly predicted the Cook Island's flood, the Chinese funding of the Police and Courthouse buildings, and an ideological incident (feminist) that would put them both into planned use. They also removed my driver licence and fined me $1,490.00.

The Mossad looked at me, as though assessing me, then looked sideways and down to his right (kinesthetic memory), then looked straight into my eyes and pleaded with me: "Why the fuck do you get caught up in this sort of shit?"

He was treating me as an equal, confessing, and simultaneously abdicating from 'marker' status and me being a 'marked target'. (Incidentally, the poet Pam Ayers was an MI-6 marker.)

I replied: "Successive events have pushed me into it and now it's how I get my kicks. Someone's got to do it".

I asked him for the Arabic translation of 'Island', 'Pirate' and 'Labrador', and was given 'ie' (pronounced 'e'), Pirate (pronounced 'perátée) and Labrador (pronounced 'Labrador'). These are the KGB codenames for Helen Clark and Margaret Wilson, but now I had them in Arabic. Later I found out that 'Sattie' is also Arabic for 'Pirate'.

He introduced himself as Aaron, but his real name is Yaron. He had a male Mossad friend also living on Waiheke Island and they made plans together, both for the Mossad, for business, and for lifestyle.

Yaron was desperate to become a 'Kiwi' – a fully fledged New Zealander.

Yaron then looked at me with his nose curled up and treated me suspiciously as an equal. I asked him: "What are you doing here, in New Zealand?" and he said: "I'm installing telecommunication systems in offices", and then said jokingly, "and bugging those offices. Na."

Yaron then said: "The Mossad use New Zealand as a safe retreat, as a holiday home", and went on to complain that: "I can't get residency despite having a clean record and no involvement with the Mossad. All I want to do is meet a nice New Zealand woman and settle down."

Yaron then told me how: "As a Tank Commander, I was given co-ordinates to fire on over a hill at night. These co-ordinates had to come from a central location. Often we would be given co-ordinates to fire from Israel at night and when I checked these co-ordinates, it was a Palestinian refugee camp. That's why I got out."

Yaron went on to say: "My favourite tank is a modified Centurion Tank with an enlarged turret. That's my favourite tank".

After about an hour and a half, and the second tow truck, the biggest on the island, we managed to move the Israeli Tank Commander's telecommunication vehicle and I was free to live. (He crashed it later on the mainland in January 2007 and wrote it off.)

At that time, Israel was still promoting the paedophile-and-plagarist Albert Einstein as their genius, so no one was allowed to have knowledge above him and they wanted any newly discovered laws of gravity and anti-gravity which included my *Flying the Planet.*

You hear that – 'free to live' – not dead and not living in involuntary servitude or slavery.

The Israeli's now use Fiji as their holiday home. Consequently, the Fiji military are now armed with Uzis and most MI-6 agents are now Mossad assets. Fiji was an MI-6 hangout, but now it is an MI-6/ Mossad hangout and MI-6 QC lawyers now go to Fiji for briefings which include assassinations.

Both Eli Cara and Uriel Kelman had done compulsory service with the Israeli armed forces, were university educated and active in synagogues and communities, so they were considered 'good Jews' . . . but then every Israeli contact killer is considered "a good Jew" and the Jews value their contract killers more than any other citizen, often promoting their contract killers to Prime Minister and President. Israel has both.

When Jews sing their national anthem, listen for the phrase "murder compliance". Better still, take a look at their annual "Kol Nidre" prayer done on Yom Kippur. The next one is on 28 September 2009 and 18 September 2010 and goes like this:

". . . by the permission of this holy congregation, we hold it lawful to pray with the transgressors.

> "**All vows, obligations, oaths, and anathemas**, whether called 'konam,'
> 'konas,' or by any other name, which we may vow, or swear, or pledge, or
> whereby we may be bound, from this Day of Atonement until the next, we
> do repent. May they **be deemed absolved, forgiven, annulled, and void,
> and made of no effect; they shall not bind us nor have power over
> us. The vows shall not be reckoned vows; the obligations shall not be
> obligatory; nor the oaths be oaths**" . . .

"And it shall be forgiven all the congregation of the children of Israel . . ."

Then repeat "**All vows . . . nor the oats be oaths**" two more times.[17]

Details of King's Murderers

Uriel Kelman studied mathematics and physics and was a member of the IDF (Israeli Defence Force). He worked for YTS Systems (an Israel-based company) in Israel and overseas (1999–2002). YTS has designed security systems for six embassies, as well as other buildings in the United States, Germany and Africa.

---

[17] For further explanation See "U", 'Who the Blazes is John Howard?'

These embassies should now be regarded as totally compromised by Israel and should be considered permanently hardwired to Israel. Certainly their politics has shown this to be the case.

When Kelman visited New Zealand (February and March 1999) he was a card-carrying member of the IDF working for Israeli's 'embassy spy agency' (YTS), yet travelled on a Canadian passport. As a local cover he was "a tireless voluntary worker who brought joy to the disabled", but this was compliant Sayanim propaganda. To all and sundry, this should read:

"Israeli Intelligence searching invalid's homes for passports with a view to murder".

Eli Cara also moved to Australia in 1999 after retiring from a career with the Israeli Air Force. Cara travelled to New Zealand 24 times (between 1999 and 2004) with the stated reasons being 'business' and 'family holidays', but Cara's eco-travel business proved totally flakey. Company records revealed that Eli Cara had no listed business interests in Sydney and his New Zealand family is debateable – Sian Elias perhaps?.

Cara's 'travel business', based in Israel, connected to eco-tourism in Australia and New Zealand, and Israelis are all over the South Island in remote eco areas (at least 1,500 of them), and whenever you go over the four-day treks in the South Island (Heaphy Track etc), most of the names on the visitor's register are Israeli.

Some of these so-called tourists are overweight middle-aged Israelis not dressed in tramping gear and showing no signs of exhaustion. It is not so surprising that eco-tourism is Israeli based. It gives legitimate reason to travel to remote areas to hide, inspect, or retrieve weapons . . . and 'overweight middle-aged Israelis without tramping gear showing no signs of exhaustion' are sighting and inspecting their weapons dumps.

Greenpeace is similar. Greenpeace is a CIA front that collects information on Greenies ensuring issues like Chemtrails (the poisoning of humans from above) does not become a protested issue; and

Joint venture operations like the bombing of the *Rainbow Warrior* – a British, French, New Zealand joint operation – go ahead unhindered, complete with Prime Minister David Lange's support. He provided the accomodation. The SIS provided the Zodiac inflatable rubber dinghy. At least they transported the RIB (rigid-inflatable boat) from the Dead Letter Office in Wellington (where it was lost) to an address in Green Bay in Auckland.

Chemtrails contain Bovine Leukemia and the Sheep Visna Virus, mixed with fine particles of Barium and Aluminium. According to the Strecker Memorandum, "**Bovine Leukemia and the Sheep Visna Virus is the formula for Aids**". As the chemtrails are dropped from commercial airlines above (hence the cheap airfaires to keep people flying), the descending fine particles are breathed up the nostrils and lodged in the brain.

So when you fly, don't consider the Carbon Footprint – that's distraction news – consider '**Aids of the Brain**' for the populations below.

Noticed your co-ordination going?

All the CIA had to do in the *Rainbow Warrior* bombing was ensure the French lesbian agent knew which *Rainbow Warrior* crew's fanny to lick, thus getting all the *Rainbow Warrior* security measures for the price of cunnilingus . . . and that David Lange's motel unit at 12/29 Springs Road, Parakai would be free for the French Frog assassins to stay in. They used his in-house hot mineral pool to warm up in the week before and the day after the bombing.

"The case [Uriel Kelman and Eli Cara] is the first known example of foreign agents appearing in a New Zealand court since the 1985 arrest of the *Rainbow Warrior* bombers."[18]

Yeah right! The government was happy no one else noted those inbetween.

---

[18] Vernon Small and Michael Pelly, *The Dominion Post*, Two Mossad spies jailed in New Zealand, 16 July 2004.

The government was totally stoked no one noted Kelman and Cara as King's assassins just south of Heaven's Rest. You can't get much more occult than that!

Uriel Kelman and **Eli Cara** came in and out of New Zealand so many times it should have raised suspicions, but this was covered with the assistance of the former paedophile MPs Aussie Malcom and Sir Roger Douglas, who both own and run immigration companies.

Since the passport frauds, murders, convictions and early release . . .
Eli Cara returned to Israel, 'officially' resigned from the Mossad and got a job at Visa Israel, which is another Mossad operation, so he was shifted sideways with international apologies.

Apologies don't count for shit. People are dead as a result.

Zev Barkan (a.k.a. Zev William Barkan/ Ze'ev Bruckstein/ Kevin William Hunter) who murdered Sir Peter Elworthy and Michael King, has "become a security consultant to communist North Korea, seen in Pyongyang 'negotiating details of an extensive contract for design and technical equipment' to build a security wall 'including Israeli-produced motion sensors and night vision equipment'."[19]

Zev Barkan (diplomat and contract killer) and Dr. Anthony David Reznik (Sayanim to New Zealand) are both wanted by Interpol.

Interpol is 'the Nazi Party's SS with Hitler's picture taken down' and Interpol/SS actively supports paedophiles by regularly not finding them, while knowing where they are and ensuring no other agency or vigilante gets close to them, often giving them warning.

Interpol protects paedophiles.

So the chances of Interpol locating a Mossad agent are about as likely as Helen Clark admitting she's a lesbian, a KGB agent, a contract killer, New Zealand's biggest-ever paedophile enabler, who tried to launch a nuclear strike on the British Atomic Energy Commission's Wairakei Geothermal Heavy Water Manufacturing Plant (a.k.a. Wairakei Geothermal Power Station), who used to met Vladimir Putin at Wellington's Wharf No.3 in the wee hours to hand over the country's sexual secrets, has Israeli agents rig all the national elections for her, wears incontinence nappies, is married to a homosexual child sex abuser, and has sex with her husband doggy-style with her on top using the biggest dildo ever produced – the one found under her bed by her carpenters.

They couldn't get around that one twice.

So nothing's going to happen . . . except it is well noted by lawyers that New Zealand has a way of stealing people's lives . . . and I want compensation for the attempts on my life. There have been at least eight . . .

So how about a million for each failed pop, you wretched treasonous government-employed terrorists!

Soon after Michael King and Maria Jungowska's assassination, a bus driver drove past in a bus and saw that the tree had been cut down and there were detective types covering over the roots with gravel and soil. He stopped the bus and asked them what they were doing. They simply walked away in different directions and nothing was said.

A month or so later, similar detective types turned up at the front door of the bus driver's home and accused him of suffering from high blood pressure. Bus drivers know that this is enough to have them removed from their job for twelve months. So that was a threat.

Within a week of *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide* (published 31 October 2007) the same detective types went around to the local cafés etc and threatened them: "Change the name. You've got five minutes, or your café's is on the street." So the job had Govt. rank.

---

[19] The allegations were made in a public address by a senior executive with Global-Protect All Children, speaking at a Tokyo conference of international non-government-organisations discussing the North Korean refugee crisis.

LIFE
LIFE
LIFE

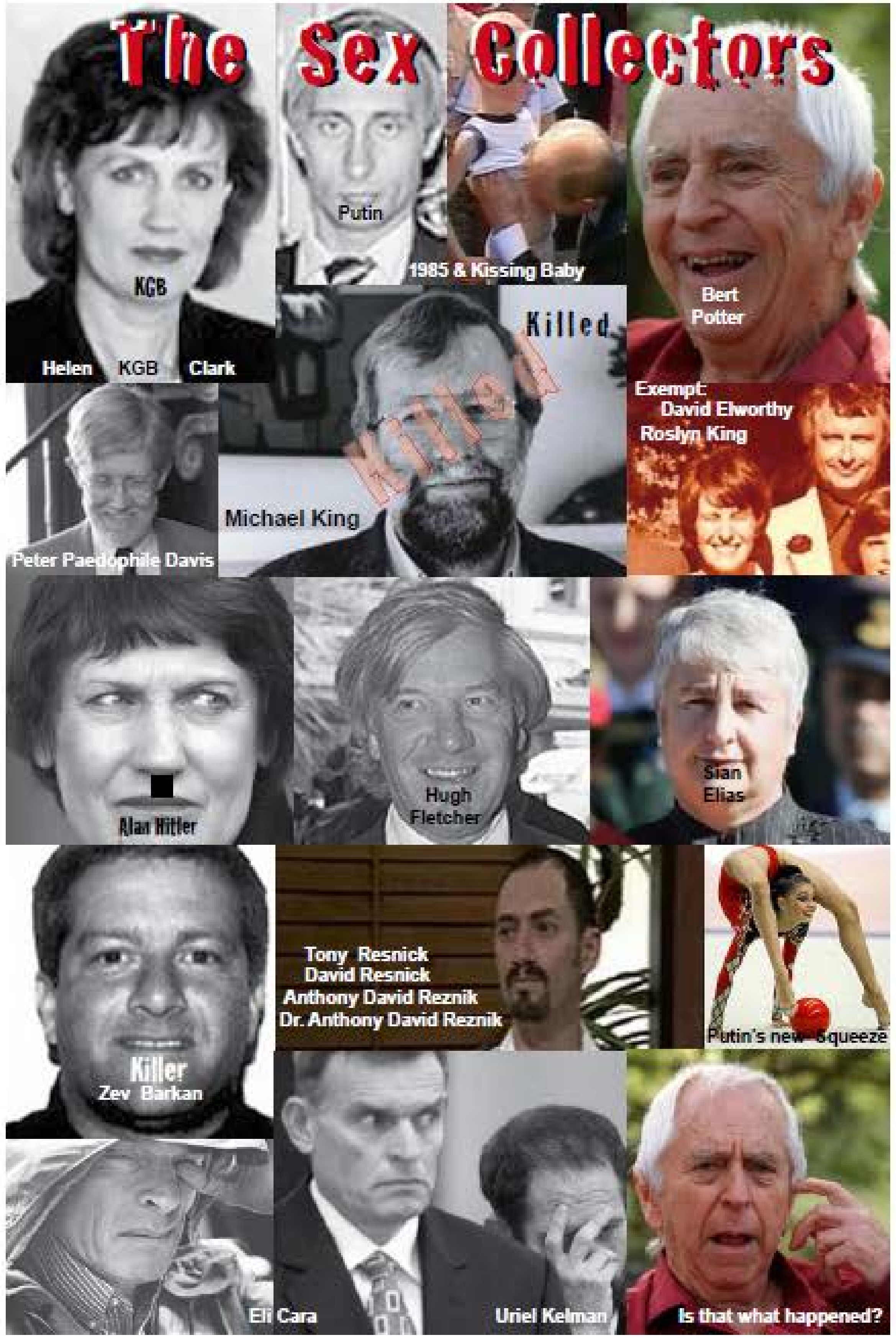
The Sex Collectors
Putin
1985 & Kissing Baby
KGB
Helen
KGB
Clark
Killed
Bert
Potter
Exempt:
David Elworthy
Roslyn King
Killed
Michael King
Peter Paedophile Davis
Alan Hitler
Hugh
Fletcher
Sian
Elias
Tony Resnick
David Resnick
Anthony David Reznik
Dr. Anthony David Reznik
Putin's new squeeze
Killer
Zev Barkan
Eli Cara
Uriel Kelman
Is that what happened?

Who the Blazes is John Howard?

The Nazi's Day of Atonement

Christians and Jews have some of the same holy days, but different interpretations of The Holy Scripture. The Christians tend to be literal and the Jews tend to interpret how it suits them, especially when dealing with Christians, Gentiles and non-Freemasons ("Goyim").[1]

The Jews have a prayer to deny honour in any contract for the next 12 months and it is done under the sacred 'Day of Atonement', which Jews call 'Yom Kippur'. The prayer is called the 'Kol Nidre'.

'Atonement' comes from "At one ment" – the act of being 'at one'.

For the Christians, 'Atonement' is being at one with God.

For the Jews, 'Atonement' is being at one with each other.

In Scripture, the person utilising the Day of Atonement must be validly baptised by a valid baptiser, ask God to bring to memory any sins committed, honestly repent them, do this in a Holy Congregation, make an offering to God or the Lord, and preferably fast from sunset for 24 or 25 hours. (The 'biological clock' has a 25 hour day.)

The Old Testament meaning of Day of Atonement is 'A day of fasting and repentance'.

The New Testament meaning is 'The world becoming at one with God, and binding Satan'.

The Jews call the Day of Atonement 'Yom Kippur' and the Christians have it as a national holiday – a perfect distraction.

The Christian 'Day of Atonement' comes after the 'Feast of Trumpets'. It is one of the Biblical Holy Days. Five days later there's the 'Feast of Tabernacles' – rejoicing and blasting two silver trumpets calling the congregation at the new moon for peace offerings, burnt offerings and gladness – which is where outsiders get to view 'The Happy-Clappy'.

The 'Day of Atonement' is known to the Jews as 'Yom Kippur' (Leviticus 23:26-32) and the 'Feast of Trumpets' is known as 'Rosh Hashana'.

The Day of Atonement/ Yom Kippur in a synagogue has the first prayer, the Kol Nidre, cited and repeated three times as Jews enter into a contract with God that any oath, vow, or pledge made over the next 12 months is null and void:

"The oath shall not be an oath,
the pledge shall not be a pledge,
and the vow shall not be a vow.
They shall have no force and effect."

The Talmud clearly adds that when you take an oath, vow or pledge, remember the Kol Nidre prayer you cited on Yom Kippur. That exempts you from fulfulling any promise.

The Day of Atonement/ Yom Kippur is in September or October, begins at sunset and lasts 24 or 25 hours. It was/is on 22 September 2007, 9 October 2008, 28 September 2009, 18 September 2010, and 8 October 2011.

---

[1] The Freemasons are Jewish servants.

The Day of Atonement is considered to be a time for fasting (no food or drink)[2] and the goat the Jews offered as sacrifice quickly became the scapegoat – a human sacrifice in every way except the physical body. This creates the hobbled, the blacklisted and the boiler-plated, almost all of whom are exclusively non-Jews (Gentiles/ Goyim/ non-Freemasons):

> Leviticus 16:9-10, 20-22 (paraphrased): 'The scapegoat was let free for all days of the year, and the next day was replaced with a real sacrificial goat, sacrificed for all iniquities, transgressions and sins of the children of Israel.'

The Jewish Day of Atonement Yom Kippur often includes the ten-day build up of the Feast of Trumpets/ Rosh Hashanah, and on the eve of the Day of Atonement/ Yom Kippur all feuds and disputes are terminated and all sins against God are absolved.

The offended can also pardon the offender, thus absolving them of that sin; the dead are also pardoned by the community for their sins; and orphaned children are mentioned and given gifts.

The Kol Nidre prayer[3] is recited in the synagogue at the beginning of the evening service on the Day of Atonement. The name is taken from the opening words "Kol Nidre" ('All Vows'). It has had an eventful history itself and influences the legal status of Jews.

The Kol Nidre was introduced into the liturgy despite the opposition of rabbinic authorities, has been repeatedly attacked by Halakists (Jewish lifestylers and fatalist where anything goes that has already been, including incest and paedophilia) and many communities in C19th western Europe expunged it from the prayer-book. Both the Babylonian academies also discredited it.

Christians use the Kol Nidre to illustrate their assertion that the oath of the Jew cannot be trusted.

They may not be wrong!

Before sunset on the eve of Yom Kippur/ Atonement, when the congregation has gathered in the synagogue, the Ark is opened and two rabbis (or two leading men in the community) take out the two Torah-scrolls, then take their places either side of the hazzan, and all three recite in concert the formula beginning with the words:

> "In the tribunal of heaven and the tribunal of earth, by the permission of God – blessed be He – and by the permission of this holy congregation, we hold it lawful to pray with the transgressors."

Thereupon the cantor chants the Aramaic prayer beginning with the words "Kol Nidre". It has a plaintive and touching melody in pianissimo, increasing in volume to fortissimo, and is repeated three times:

> "All vows, obligations, oaths, and anathemas, whether called 'konam,' 'konas,' or by any other name, which we may vow, or swear, or pledge, or whereby we may be bound, from this Day of Atonement until the next (whose happy coming we await), we do repent.
>
> May they be deemed absolved, forgiven, annulled, and void, and made of no effect; they shall not bind us nor have power over us. The vows shall not be reckoned vows; the obligations shall not be obligatory; nor the oaths be oaths."

---

[2] Levitious, chapter 16, cf. Exodus 30:10; Levitious 23:27-31, 25:9; Numbers 29:7-11.

[3] The *Jewish Encyclopedia* on line: Joseph Jacobs, Max Schloessinger, Cyrus Adler and Francis L. Cohen, and *THE KOL NIDRE*, www.jewishencyclopedia.com/view.jsp?artid=340&letter=K. See also the Jewish History Sourcebook: 'An Oath Taken by Jews in Frankfurt am (on the) Main, about 1392 CE' – like the Rothschilds, then called 'Bauer'.

The leader and the congregation then say together three times (Num. xv. 26):

> "And it shall be forgiven all the congregation of the children of Israel, and the stranger that sojourneth among them, seeing all the people were in ignorance."

Many congregations then recite Num. xiv. 19-20.

In almost all congregations the hazzan then closes with the benediction:

> "Blessed art thou, O Lord our God, King of the Universe, who hast preserved us and hast brought us to enjoy this season."

The Torah-scrolls are then placed back in the Ark and the customary evening service begins.

The Jewish prayer to deny honour in any contract for the next 12 months is done under the sacred Day of Atonement/ Yom Kippur and the 'Kol Nidre' prayer.

For the Christians, 'Atonement' is being at one with God. For the Jews, 'Atonement' is being at one with each other. Hence their Semetic/ Anti-Gentile phrase: "Is it good for the Jews?" So should the Jewish Atonement/ Yom Kippur not be called 'At Jew ment' – the Act of being a Jew, and, the adjournment of honour towards Gentiles?

Does history not show that Yom Kippur is the 'adjournment of honour towards Gentiles'?

Certainly the "Middle East Peace Talks" that have dominated television news for the last five decades back this up. They don't work, never have, and are consistently sabotaged by the Jews in peacetime by pre-emptive strikes when the opposition is least expecting it. Onlookers call this 'manufacturing an ongoing war' and 'sabotaging the contract of peace'.

Many elected government officials in the United States of America, at Local, State and Federal level, take meaningful vows to defend and protect the Constitution for the United States of America, and then do the Kol Nidre prayer to absolve them of adherence, so that their vows mean absolutely nothing – **nada, nulla, zip** – that's how they got a Kenyan president.

Do all American judges do the Kol Nidre, as often claimed by common law patriots?

Talmudists have been in power as the Shadow World Government prior to the inception of the U.S. Constitution and at least during the AD 1066 takeover of Great Britain's Judiciary. It is becoming more and more clear that Americans and the British are governed by Talmudists who oppress commoners under Talmudic, Commercial and International laws.

The name "Great Britain" was used from the first century AD. Prior to that, it was called 'Albion' (white-land), with the islands off it called 'Britanniae'. The word 'Britain' also comes from 'Berith' (Covenant) and B'rith-ish (Sons of the Covenant), with B'nai B'rith meaning 'Sons of the Alliance', and 'Britain' meaning 'Children of the Covenant', 'those who bind by their word', 'those who are bound by their word', or 'those who are bound by their word by others'.

The word 'Covenant' stems from two words, the Hebrew 'berith' and the Greek 'diatheke'. In the *Old Testament*, the Hebrew 'berith' refers to 'legal dispositions' or 'pledges', a 'one-sided promise or grant', and may or may not be a 'reciprocal agreement or contract'.

'Berith' was replaced in the Greek version of the *Old Testament* with 'diatheke' – 'the spirit of the matter, with legal binding'. In the English versions of the *Bible*, 'diatheke' was replaced with 'covenant'. 'Covenant' is a legal term denoting 'a formal and legally binding declaration of benefits given by one party to another, with or without conditions attached.[4]

---

[4] In Biblical times, England was known as 'Ephraim' – a Nation and a Company of Nations – when the Lost Tribes of Israel were all white Europeans, and not Jews. Other Biblical names include Asher (Sweden), Benjamin (Iceland), Dan (Denmark), Gad (Italy), Issachar (Finland), Judah (Germany, Ireland, Scotland & White Russia), Manasseh (United States), Naphtali (Norway), Reuben (Holland), Simeon (Spain) & Zebulun (France).

In secular contexts this became the 'final word on the matter', and "last will and testament".

The Hebrew 'Berith' may well be the origin of the word 'British' (Covenant). This would mean 'the way the Jews treat the British', and the word 'British' mean:

> 'With legal dispositions or pledges, a one-sided promise or grant, that may or may not be a reciprocal agreement or contract;
> A formal and legally binding declaration of benefits given by one party to another, without conditions attached, then maybe with conditions attached, and when a British dies, that's the final word on the matter, unless a Jew says otherwise;
> Essentially the spirit of the matter depending on who is bigger, or more Jewish.'

I.O. "Jews often claim the final matter of things, even before they are discussed."

Spymaster: "Jews do that all the time! It's often the way they speak in conversation."

T. B. John: "Bisexuals do the same and the Jews are often taken for a race of bisexuals'.

This seems to suit the way the Jews have treated the British and their diaspora right down to the ground (unto death).

It also suits the British right down to the ground, including their history through the Middle Ages, especially when coming from 'Coventry'.

When push comes to shove in a contract, the saying was 'he was sent to Coventry' means 'he was shunned, now considered absent, to be ignored, no one must speak to him or answer any question he asks, except relative to his duty, having no life in the matter, and the matter is now dead and buried – under penalty of being sent to Coventry'.

Lewis Carroll (Charles Dodgson) was sent to Coventry in 1863 after his paedophilia with the 11-year-old Alice Liddell, whose family he was staying with. So *Alice in Wonderland* was a paedophile allegory, just as the Poms teach it at University today.[5]

> "The B'nai B'rith was established by the Rothschilds in 1843 as an intelligence arm to defame and destroy legitimate researchers with the label "anti-Semetic" – a label they have empowered with merciless guilt ever since.
>
> The B'nai B'rith worked with the Anti Defamation League (1913–) and every year the ADL award their 'Torch of Liberty' to the person they believe served their cause the most, not uncommonly a crime syndicate, like Meyer Lansky's that terrorised America. The Anti-Defamation League spends its entire time trying to defame honest researchers.
>
> Both B'nai B'rith and the Anti Defamation League are Rothschild created and controlled"[6] and treat Gentiles as cattle to be milked, and shit to be taxed, with the modern day ridiculous "Fart Tax" part of this.

The B'nai B'rith promotes Jewish rights around the world, often with violence, but also with a sacrificial goat or scapegoat where those in the know are hobbled, blacklisted and boiler-plated. Many are also sacrificed. We call this 'violence', murder.

B'nai B'rith awards its murderers with the **"Presidential Gold Medal"** which the American President gives out. The Presidential Gold Medal is given to those who murder on behalf of Israel and the Jewish people.

Recipients include David Ben-Gurion, Golda Meir, George H. W. Bush, and John Howard (Australian Prime Minister 1996–2007) who allowed Israel to take over Australia and create

---

[5] The Phrase Finder: 'Sent to Coventry'. Alice was related to the MI-6 historian Basil Liddel-Hart.

[6] David Icke, 'Was Hitler a Rothschild?', www.nccg.org/ezion_geber/judaism4.html, 2003.

a drought and successive bush fires in order advance the programme "to export Australians to Alaska and inhospitable areas of Canada".

Australian Prime Minister John Howard was awarded the 'Presidential Gold Medal' on 16 May 2006 during the American Jewish Communities (AJC) 100th annual meeting in Washington DC:

> "In 2005, PM John "Howard completed a rare trifecta by receiving awards from three organisations in recognition of his support for Jewish causes: Sydney's Jewish Communal Appeal, the [American Jewish Community] AJC, and the Australia-Israel Chamber of Commerce."[7]

This Jewish plan to remove Australians out of Australia is still underway. They are doing this with bush fires, most of which are man-made acts of terrorism with the help of HARP and HAARP.

It is also Israeli agents who engineered the bush fires in and around Sydney, including those that almost rendered Sydney uninhabitable in December 2002 and Melbourne in February 2009.

Prime Minister John Howard (1996–2007) was one of those Israeli agents.

"John Howard's father, Lyall, was also a Nazi sympathizer, photographed giving the Hitler salute.

"On 19 May 2004, it was announced that Lyall Howard was a member of the 1930's Fascist New Guard in Sydney that planed to seize power from James Scullin's and Premier Jack Lang's (NSW) Labor governments, and to sabotage government job creation for the common good, in preference to paying debts straight to the City of London banks, which is still disguised to this day as 'The Crown'.

"Howard continued the fascist tradition of his father ramming through draconian police-state laws giving the Israeli-controlled Australian Government more power than Hitler after the 27 February 1933 Reichstag Fire.

"The 'Sydney Bushfires' are John Howard's Reichstag, with the added 'fighting terrorism' neo-con. This resulted in the police-state bill and the Anti-Terrorism Bill 2004, which subjects those nabbed to Australian and American law, complete with visits to Gitmo and Abu Ghraib."[8]

---

[7] *The Australian Jewish News*, 'PM to received B'nai B'rith's top honour', Gedaliah Afterman, 8 May 2006.

[8] 'Australian PM John Howard, Son of a Nazi', 18 August 2004, http://www.abovetopsecret.com/forum/thread74023/pg1. John Howard is also Jewish.

Sydney Timeline, *World News*[9]

Christmas 2001: Fires approaching Sydney.
1 Jan 2002: 'Fires advance on Sydney suburb'.
3 Jan 2002: 'Super-helicopter rescues firefighters'.
August 2002: NSW begins experiencing bushfires [August–December 2002].
8 Oct 2002: 'Homes destroyed in fires'.
9 Nov 2002: 'Wind brings new fire threat'.
4 Dec 2002: 'Wild fires ravage Sydney, dry and windy conditions fan more than 60 blazes'.
5 Dec 2002: 'Firefighters battle to control blazes'.
6 Dec 2002: 'Firefighters battle against time'.
8 Dec 2002: 'Firefighters gaining upper hand in fires; Bushfire shifted to Blue Mountains'.
10 Dec 2002: 'Rain has Sydney breathing easier'.
1 Jan 2006: 'Rain cools bushfires'.

'Third day of wildfire threatens Sydney' (2–10 December 2002)[10]

> **"Sydney is facing its worst wildfire threat in 30 years** as strong, variable winds whip up **dozens of blazes in and around Australia's largest city**.
>
> A cooler change Thursday night brought a little rain to some affected areas, but by midday Friday dry and **blustery conditions were again stretching fire fighting resources to the limit**. More than 3,000 firefighters, supported by water-bombing aircraft, are battling major infernos to the south-west, west and north of the city.
>
> The fires have already claimed one life and destroyed more than 20 homes since Wednesday afternoon.
>
> Dozens of other properties are currently under direct threat from the flames and **major roads in the south, west and north of the city have been cut off**.
>
> NSW Rural Fire Commissioner Phil Koperberg told media that **unless it rained heavily there was little firefighters could do to control more than 60 blazes in and around Australia's major commercial center** [Sydney].
>
> Weather forecasters were not optimistic with predictions of continuing hot and dry weather over Friday and the weekend.
>
> Two giant water-bombing helicopters, as well as other aircraft and ground crews, are focussing purely on property protection as the **main fires burn almost unimpeded**, fire officials say.
>
> **Australian Prime Minister John Howard** on Thursday **expressed his "deep concern and sympathy"** for those affected by the fires [Kol Nidre], and committed federal government assistance – including the Armed Forces – to the state-based fire-fighting efforts. He also extended his thanks and admiration for the "professionalism and heroism" of the thousands of volunteer firefighters battling the blazes [60,000, of which only 10 were qualified, and few took part]. **Howard said the situation was looking as bad as the 2001 Christmas fires.** Those fires **razed more than 570,000 hectares** (1.2 million acres) of land, **destroyed 170 properties** and caused **over $40 million damage. "Our thoughts and prayers are with everyone affected,"** he said [the Kol Nidre].
>
> The New South Wales State government said Thursday it was launching a fresh bushfire appeal to help those hit by the blazes. It was also considering **tougher penalties for those thought to have started fires, either deliberately or accidentally** [Can't see the Aussie Government convicting a Jew]. Officials said **Wednesday more than half the current fires were deliberately lit**, many by bored teenagers on school vacation [none of which were cited or named as convicted].
>
> **Much of Australia has been in the grip of a seven-month long drought** [caused by Israeli-controlled weather manipulation like HAARP] which has been a major factor in the latest fires.
>
> **Many parts of eastern Australia have experience the driest conditions since records began**, and **NSW has been experiencing bushfires** since the southern winter month of **August**.
>
> **Sydney**, a city of more than 4 million people, has **extensive tracts of bushland throughout** its suburban areas and on the city fringes.
>
> Around **45,000 hectares of bushland is currently affected by the fires**, according to the NSW Rural Fire Service, and a total fire ban remains in place across the State.
>
> Because of the **strong and unpredictable winds**, residents in affected areas are generally advised to stay within their homes and do what they can to fire-proof them, such as clearing out gutters, removing combustible material and making sure they have water supplies available.
>
> Among the homes threatened Wednesday was that of Australian cricket captain Steve Waugh in the southern suburb of Alford's Point. Teammate Glen McGrath, who lives nearby, joined Waugh's family to help protect the home.
>
> **The fires have also created transport chaos with power failures shutting down the train system and stranding thousands of commuters** [and generally hampering the economy and spirit of the people encouraging them to emigrate]."

---

[9] Sydney Timeline, World News, Australia, http://www.mapreport.com/countries/sydney.html.

[10] SYDNEY, Australia (CNN), 'Third day of wildfire threatens Sydney', Grant Holloway, 5 December 2002.

John Winston Howard . . . Israeli Agent . . . and Jewish.

John Howard also lied over the "Tampa Incident" where he had his "government ministers in October 2001, in the lead-up to a federal election, [say] that sea-faring asylum seekers had thrown children overboard in a presumed ploy to secure rescue and passage to Australia."[11]

This was absolute bullshit, although it did secure him the 2001 election.

An Australian Naval Intelligence officer who couldn't stand it any more, released the photos showing this was not the case. Too late for that Election, and the next, but the Australian voters rejected Howard at the voting polls as soon as they found out the truth.

John Howard – "Who the blazes . . .?"

John Howard is a Jew. He never promoted he was a Jew while Australian Prime Minister – not before nor afterwards, although he did admit to it very quietly. It was the Jews who kept John Winston Howard in power. Howard was their agent and the next Prime Minister, Kevin Rudd (who ignores all Intelligence) is even more pro-Jewish (and pro-Chinese/ Communist/ slavery/ British Monarchy), so it isn't much of a choice (see Burning Bushes to follow).

I.O. "He also looks like a Rockspider . . . The fires encroaching Sydney happen every year to some degree, although during Howard's tenure, they were at their worst. There was a big one in 1964. These fires and drought in Australia were so bad, white nylon shirts hung out to dry in New Zealand's capital turned a rusty red-brown in two hours from the dust and smoke from the Australian bushfires. Some Australian trees have adapted and their seeds only break out of their shells in a fire and form afterwards – like the wattle."

Spymaster: "In Australia, the only way you can tell a big pork pie in Parliament and get away with it, is if you to tell it after lunch. That's totally normal and acceptable because everybody is totally anaesthetised after lunch. But if you tell a really big lie before lunch, may God help you. So it's Kol Nidre after lunch, and Atonement before. The weekends are for blasting trumpets, feasts, and table tennis – singing, eating, and building an illegal addition on the back of your house." Author: ". . . And putting another crime on the barbie."

I.O.: "How do you tell an Aussie politician is on the level? . . . They're dribbling from both sides of their mouth!"

John Howard also got the Presidential Medal of Freedom, along with Tony Blair on the occult's 13 January 2009.[12] It is awarded "for especially meritorious contributions to security or the national interests of the United States, world peace or cultural or other significant public or private endeavours". It wasn't stated why he got the award. Presumably it was for "contributing to the security of the United States" – keeping 'mum' about the terrorism hoax and Israel's part in it.

The Americans seem to have lost ownership of their awards, along with everything else. The **Presidential Medal of Freedom** is another Semetic Award, just as the **Presidential Gold Medal** is the B'nai B'rith award for murder.

In New Zealand we have the same problem with the Chief Justice Sian Elias – the Chief Jewstess, highest-ranking Mossad agent, and foremost Sayanim agent.

Sian Elias takes the Nation's vows to "Queen and Country . . . so help me God", then takes the Kol Nidre, carries out murders (Michael King etc), writes laws in an attempt to create civil war ('Foreshore and Seabed'), orders terrorist attacks (Ruatoki and the Tuhoe Nation) synchronised on 14 October 2007 with at least eight other countries (including Australia, Spain, France, UK), takes the Kol Nidre again, then with clear albeit warped conscience, fucks her chauffeur in the Justice Department's limousine on the way home . . . while her neighbour and husband roots males, takes the Kol Nidre, meets children at Hugo Johnson Drive, runs child sex abuse soirées and roots boys, then takes the Kol Nidre, commits murder (Michael King) and accessory to murder (David McNee) and takes the Kol Nidre, then gets promoted to Chancellor of the University of Auckland – Murder Inc.

---

[11] Wikipedia: 'Children Overboard Affair'.

[12] *Guardian*, UK, 'Tony's the kind of Guy', 14 January 2009.

"It's life Jim, but not as we know it."[13]

So there we have it – the Chief Jewstress (Justice) and
the Chance-alot (Chancellor) of the University of Auckland.

New Zealand as we know it to be – 2004 to 2009.

So what's it like in your country?
What are we honest folk doing wrong, or right and being ignored and persecuted for it?

Just imagine if the Christians and Gentiles
went about their business and contracts with the covenant:
"The oath shall not be an oath,
the pledge shall not be a pledge,
and the vow shall not be a vow."

The world would be in mayhem –
willfully inflicting injury on another to render them defenseless.[14]

The mayhem this creates (injured defenseless) is the mayhem the Jews
have over the non-Jews on a daily and annual basis. It is how Gentiles are
hobbled, boiler-plated and blacklisted from careers wanted and lives worked towards.

Kol Nidre is the annual removal of the Gentile's Birth Right.

The next Kol Nidre is on 28 September 2009.
That should be the day for oneness with oneself, oneness with God, oneness with Gentiles,
the most anti-Semetic day of the year, and, on an annual basis, chanted three times,
the affirmation: **"We shall not pay tax against us"**,
and the prayer:
"Please forgive us for not paying taxes used against us".

From here Gentiles should be able to grow from injured defenseless, to injured defenders, to defenders without injury, defenders of the faith, and a faith of defenders with just cause.

J Howard

Who the blazes
John Howard (Bushfire John)

PS. Could the Chief Justice Sian Elias please tell me where she was on 2 October 2006, 22 September 2007, 9 October 2008, and where will she be on 28 September 2009, 18 September 2010, and 8 October 2011 ; **and**

Did Sian Elias not carry out the oath, pledge and/or vow known as "Kol Nidre".

---

[13] Mr Spock, USS *Enterprise*, 'Star Trek', 1969.

[14] Mayhem in law is "the crime of willfully inflicting a bodily injury on another so as to make the victim less capable of self-defense or, under modern statutes, so as to cripple or mutilate the victim." So it's right on the button.

“AT LEAST HALF THE FIRES

HAVE BEEN DELIBERATELY LIT.”

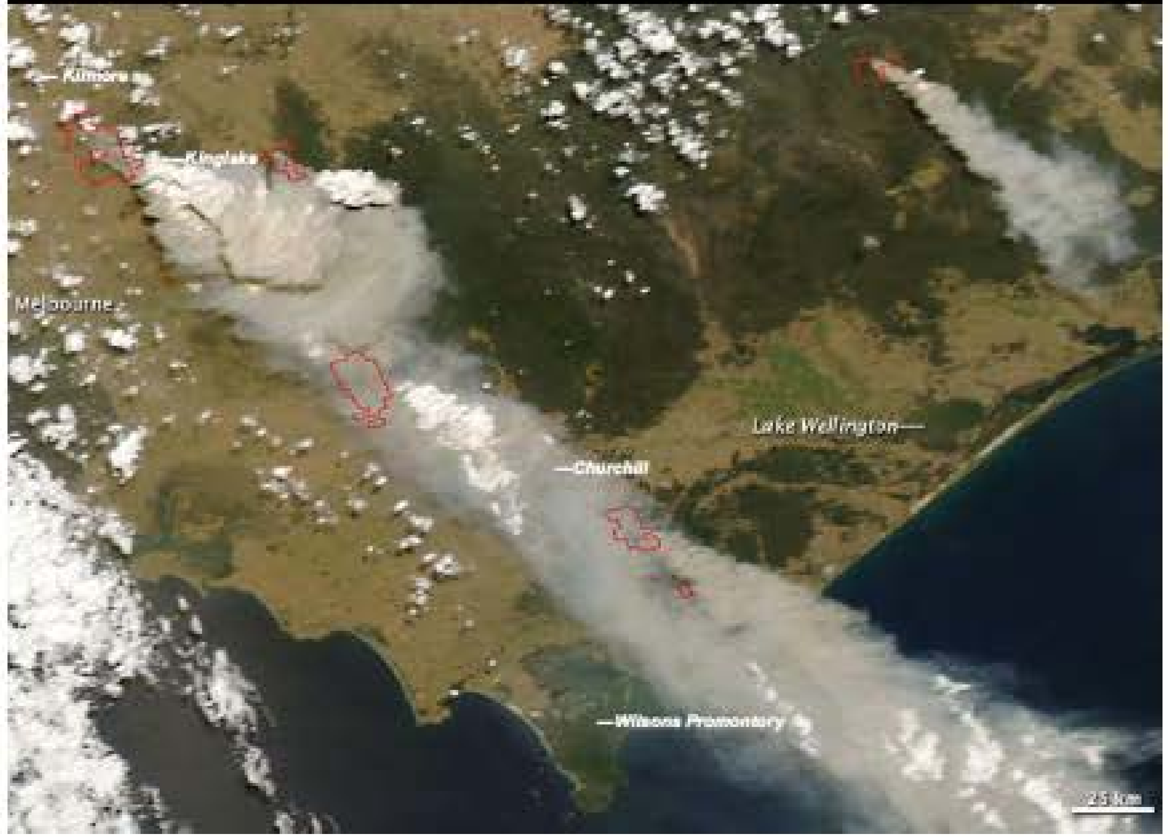
Kilmore
Kinglake
Melbourne
Lake Wellington
Churchill
Wilsons Promontory
25 km

ISRAEL WANTS TO EMIGRATE AUSSIES

AND MOVE ON IN.

23
21
19
20
18
17
15
11
10
9
7
5
1

Police
000
. . . BUT NOT BEFORE CREATING A VOLUNTARY POLICE STATE . . .

Who the Blazes is Kevin Rudd?

Kevin Rudd took over as Prime Minister of Australia on 24 November 2007 and Israel is attempting to take over Australia by any means. This includes inducing a state of fear and panic, starvation, heat waves, mass deaths, evacuations, droughts, and burning them out with weatherbombs . . . all offest by "successful" kiddy's TV characters and cartoons.

Israel has found the best means of taking over Australia is via their Prime Ministers, so every PM is now a compromised Israeli asset, and eventually an Israeli agent. This includes John Howard and Kevin Rudd, and weather warfare.

The 'Black Saturday' fires (28 January–16 March 2009) just outside Melbourne, Victoria, peaked on Saturday 7 February. They were a weatherbomb with fire attached.

On Saturday 7 February 2009, Victoria had the worst bushfire weather conditions ever recorded with an intense heat wave of 40°+C, 6 % humidity, months of extreme dry, and winds. The extreme fire warning is rated at 100. This was off the scale at 300.

On Black Saturday, 400 individual fires were recorded as ignited and spreading with winds of 45 to 120+ km/h. This created several large firestorms and pyrocumulus systems (fire clouds) north, east and southeast of Melbourne. After 6 pm, the 45 km/h northwest winds moved to 120 km/h southwest gale-force winds. This created two massive fire fronts at least 60 km and 40 km wide which burnt with incredible ferocity sometimes racing 100 metres in a continuous line in just a few seconds (110 km/h) – as fast as the wind that blew it.

There were two firefronts – the Kilmore fire north and east of Melbourne, and the Churchill fire east and south of Melbourne, just 100 km apart. With the correct weather and wind conditions, both had the opportunity to close in on Melbourne.

With Israel controlling the HAARP weather manipulation facility (and HARP), and thus controlling the wind direction, the fire was directed by northwest winds along a southeast line with spot fires regularly lit by their project arsonists ("jumping up to 4 km ahead"), powerlines sabotaged, police and firemen suspected of lighting fires (while overly praised for dousing the Ferntree fire), back burning sabotaged, and a local man with a porn habit blamed.

Once the fires had created two fronts 60 km and 40 km long, a choice was given to Kevin Rudd to have (A) the winds move to the northeast and burn Melbourne; (B) have the winds turn southwest and burn some small towns without warning in a media blackout; or (C) have the fire burn out in a controllable fashion with no winds, increased humidity and rain, but the evacuation of Australians to Alaska.

Kevin Rudd took (A) 'the imminent threat to Melbourne' seriously, and acknowledged the superior power of Israel, but did not agree to (C) no winds but the evacuation of Australia, so the winds were changed to (B) the southwest creating a weatherbomb fire equivalent to 1,500 atomic bombs (not counting the Churchill fires) . . . but with no one to blame except the guy with the porn habit and the local powerline companies . . . neither of which were Israel.

Option (C) meant Kevin Rudd would have to agree to forcefully evacuate Australians to uninhabited parts of Alaska. This would have made him an Israeli agent. Rather, he chose Option (B) and accepted becoming an Israeli asset.

The Damage from Option (B)

During the Israeli weatherbomb with fire attached/ 1,500 blameless Hiroshima nukes, 4,500 km^2 of land burnt out, over 3,500 structures were destroyed, including 2,030 homes, 60 commercial buildings (shops, pubs, service stations, golf clubs, etc), 55 businesses, 2 police stations, 1 fire station, 3 schools, 3 churches, 3 children's services; 1,500 farm buildings, machinery, hay and wool sheds; 2,150 sheep, 1,200 cattle, more horses, goats, alpacas, poultry and pigs, with another 7,700 livestock injured; 1,680 km^2 of pasture, 70 km^2 of plantation timber, 10,000 km of fencing, 8 km² of fruit trees, olives and vines, 2 km² of standing crops, 211,000 tonnes of hay, and 25,600 tonnes of stored fodder and grain, and 173 people – all gone.

This was 'weather warfare with fire attached' and it placed Israel firmly in control of the new Australian Prime Minister – Kevin Rudd.

It was also a massive economic hit – $1.5 billion – and one that could be repeated, pretty much blamelessly[15] . . . even after the 363 page *Royal Commission Interim Report on Black Saturday* was published. 'Royal Commissions' are a whitewash for the Freemasons involved in state sabotage. Royal Commissions also ensure no one was to blame, and this was no different.

Premier of Victoria John Brumby, 28 October 2008 – 100 days before Black Saturday:
"If you look at the weather projections . . . September . . . is the lowest since statistics were recorded, more than a century ago . . . our October rainfall is to be the lowest on record . . . stream flow figures . . . ten year rainfall pattern . . . lowest on record . . . in terms of fire intensity and fire risk we are amongst the very highest on record and that's why 'how we prepare for the fire season' is so important . . . call on all Victorians . . . to be vigilant and to prepare . . . with absolute certainty will be a very intense . . . summer. [So why did you let the Shire Councils fine those who correctly prepared?]

"Since 1999 our Government's substantially increased . . . funding . . . into the fire effort . . . I came to Government as Minister for Finance and then Treasurer . . . $30 million a year into the fire effort . . . This year . . . around $100 million . . . to lift that effort amongst our emergency services . . . to grabble . . . **climate change** and fire risk.

"This year we've deployed nearly 200 project fire fighters into regional Victoria to begin preparations for the fire season. We've got 52 who are already working in Gippsland, 43 in the North East of the State, 30 in the North West, 13 in Port Phillip and 56 in the South West [194] . . . more recruits being trained . . . will be deployed throughout regional Victoria in response to the fires [where were they?]. All up there will be 650 project fire fighters who are deployed across Victoria over the coming months [450 project arsonists?] . . . CFA's 60,000 strong army of volunteers [some of whom are arsonists and those who protected their homes were tarnished] . . . who do such a magnificent job. They will join more than 2,700 people employed by DSE and it's partner agencies who are available to fight the fires . . . backed up by 2,072 trucks, 409 four wheel drives with the slipon units, 58 bulldozers and tractors . . . 34 aircraft available . . . including the two Erickson air cranes. [Well, where were they all?, Were they even deployed?]

". . . this will be an intense season . . . statistics . . . dryness . . . fire risk. . . the worst . . . how we prepare . . . absolutely crucial . . . people . . . on the outskirts of Melbourne . . . need to be vigilant . . . and prepare now [but with no instructions on what to do and negative rewards for doing it] . . .

"Government's . . . put in an unprecedented investment . . . as best prepared as we can [there is no correlation between investment, preparation and success in Government John, especially when you add 450 project arsonists], but sometimes it doesn't matter how well prepared you are, **climatic conditions**, lightning strikes [which came from the fires], strong winds [HARP/HAARP] changes in weather patterns [which CFA Chief Russell Rees ignored] can make it extraordinarily difficult to extinguish the fires [forward excuse] . . . so this is a big [sabotage] effort right across the state, but we have as I've said tripled funding [with the climate rigged and fires lit to substantiate it], we've got 650 project fire fighters[/arsonists] who will be employed, there's a huge effort out there [in bureaucratic sabotage], the agencies

---

[15] 'Insurance bills set to rocket', Nick Nichols, business editor, goldcoast.com.au, 10 February 2009: Suncorp-Metway insurance shares dropped 25%+ overnight 8/9 February 2009 making Australian insurance companies an easy target for takeover, and increased premiums to offset this. On the upside, the rebuilding is expected to cause a 0.25% increase in Australia's GDP for 18 months.

are all united [but don't communicate, don't have clear roles and abandoned larger fires as someone else's problem], they're all working together [in sabotage, back burning, panic fleeing, miscommunication, not informing locals, the CFA Chief in full sabotage purposefully unaware of the fire map, and all protocols out the window] and we intend to get on top of the issue [of **supporting weather warfare to support the Climate Change hoax**, as backed by our Jewish banksters who are also our paedophile masters, who can shame us, plus I have women's legs and take it like J. Edgar Hoover].

Brumby legs

But my message to Victorians is to be ready and prepare now. [Many of you are about to die and we won't help you, but we will hinder you to ensure enough of you die to **set the Climate Change hoax in concrete.** Now on with the arson season.]"[16]

Police blame Arson
Assistant Commissioner of Crime Dannye Moloney said police investigators have confirmed arson was the cause of the following fires:

> "The Boolarra/Delburn fires in Gippsland on 28 January; the Bunyip State Park fire on 4 February 2009; the Terrys Avenue fire in Belgrave; the Lysterfield State Forest fire in Upwey; the West Gippsland Churchill, Marysville, Murrindindi and Bendigo fires on Black Saturday."[17]
>
> "Many people were put into fear, a whole community put into fear, and millions and millions of dollars worth of damage . . . If you look at the environment on that day 45 km/h winds, the temperature, and the conditions of the environment, anybody who lit a fire there would cause maximum damage. Everything is just nuked."[18]

The *resulting sparking* and fallen powerlines helped spread initial fires [conjecture, according to engineers later]. A change to southwest winds at 6 pm Black Saturday pushed the fire northeast to the Loy Yang Power Station where several small fires broke out in the open-cut coal mine.

On 8 February temperatures cooled and some light rain fell, but the next day the Churchill fire complex was still burning 323 km² with 11 killed. Churchill resident Brendan Sokaluk (39) was charged along with child pornography.

No Warning despite Accurate Predictive Map
"Towns like Cottles Bridge, only 15 km from continous suburbs of Melbourne and 30 km from its centre . . . were in a media blackout. Just 5 km northeast was St Andrews where people were burning alive in their homes . . . also in a media blackout. No one was answering the emergency call numbers and the police were nowhere to be seen.

"The northwesters were driving the fire in a southeast direction from Kilmore southeast to the towns and wilds of Wandong, Clonbinane, Mt Disappointment, Humevale, Kinglake West, Strathewen, Arthurs Creek, St Andrews, and Yarra Glen 60 km away."[19]

This created a fire front just 9 km from the continuous suburbs of Melbourne. The heat is dangerous at a distance 4 times the height of the flames and the flames got over 1 km high with the smoke creating a complete daytime blackout, and over 60,000 homes without power.

If the wind had changed from northwest to northeast (A), the 60 km long fire would have taken Melbourne. The wind did change, but from a northwest to southwest around 6 pm 7 February 2009 (B).

---

[16] Premier of Victoria John Brumby, 'Bushfire Season Reminder' 28 October 2008, www.premier.vic.gov.au, paraphrased for your enjoyment.

[17] 'Marysville fire deliberately lit: police', The Age, Reko Rennie, 1 April 2009, paraphrased.

[18] 'Black Saturday: Bendigo fatal fire arson', The Age, Mex Cooper, 10 June 2009, paraphrased.

[19] 'Why We Weren't Warned, The Victorian Bushfires and the Royal Commission, Robert Manne, The Monthly, July 2009, No. 47, paraphrased. There was a record number of "000" calls and 75 % went unanswered.

> "This created the 60 km long Kilmore East fire which took more of Melbourne's outer satellite towns – Kinglake (9 km northeast of St Andrews), then Glenburn (25 km northeast) and Flowerdale on the northeast edge of Mt Dissapointment, then linked up with the Murrindindi fire and attacked Marysville, Buxton and Taggerty.
>
> "The northeast passage of the 60 km long Kilmore East fire front killed more than 100 people and the Murrindindi fire killed some 40 more . . . the last minutes of these people . . . simply unbearable. As the Christian tradition testifies, to be consumed by fire is perhaps the most horrible kind of death humans can imagine.
>
> "If the wind had turned to northeast, thousands in Melbourne would have been killed. The fluke of wind saved perhaps hundreds if not thousands of lives.
>
> "We [in Cottles Bridge] had known absolutely nothing about the progress of the fire. Nor had the people in Hurstbridge. Nor had those who had died directly to our north [5 km away in St Andrews and Kinglake]."[20]

Faults and Blame

"A 2 km section of powerline that fell near East Kilmore around 11.20 am 7 February is thought to have started the Kilmore fire which became part of the Kinglake complex. The Horsham fire began an hour later around 12.30 pm and is also thought to have started from a fallen power line . . . On 13 February a class action lawsuit was initiated against the electricity distribution company SP AusNet."[21]

Government Watchdog, Royal Commission and Arson

The Federal Parliament suspended its scheduled meetings on 9 February 2009 and Kevin Rudd went to Melbourne to watch the fire's progress carefully – (A), (B), or (C). The Governor-General addressed the disaster from council and dispatched the Australian Defence Force.

Premier John Brumby announced a Royal Commission into the fires . . . including whether Climate Change contributed to the severity of the fires, which was the Israel/ PC/ don't look too close/ no science /pro-America dumb-down kicker that the sexually-shamed support.

Former Supreme Court of Victoria Justice Bernard Teague chairs the Commission assisted by former Govt. liar Commonwealth Ombudsman Ron McLeod and Commissioner of the State Services Authority Susan Pascoe who had headed the 2003 Canberra bushfires enquiry – so everything was promised and nothing will happen. The report is expected by 31 July 2010, by which time everyone will have lost interest and another fire season will have past.

Premier John Brumby: "The Commission will be the most open inquiry possible. No stone unturned. Every bit of information on the table. And if that means calling ministers or premiers, or whoever it is, we will be happy to assist."[22]

Oh yeah, what about Bushfire John of the Kol Nidre and Kevin Rudd of the hogtied, hands-tied, white haired, no balls Israeli asset brigade . . . and obfuscating for the failed CFA Chief Russell Rees by saying (Brumby): "We are here to look forward, not to look back".

The Royal Commission began on 20 April 2009. First up was counsel Jack Rush: "The inadequately short notice warnings will be delivered by the commission to the government by August 2009".[23]

They were delivered on 17 August 2009. They took 4 months because the *Interim Report* had to be worded so that no one was to blame. To achieve this, the dozen or so points had to be expanded into "51 Recommendations". This was blamed on: "There is a very high degree of overlap between what people have told us and the Commission's recommendations to make our state safe", by Premier John Brumby, SkyNews Live, 17 August 2009, and further: "I want to put the emphasis on looking forward [I don't want to have the blame on my shoulders, Kevin Rudd, or Russell Rees] . . . "to never again see a repeat of February 7th. This is about identifying things that worked and things that didn't . . . so we can address them" and avoid responsibility so we can stay in power unquestioned.

The thing that didn't work was the CFA and all forms of the Australian Government.

Spymaster: "The Crimes Act in Australia has specific clauses such that all the leadership of the CFA and the Regional Fire Services and the politicians supporting them, should be brought up on charges of criminal, or negligent, homicide.

"That this wasn't done, is further proof that Black Saturday was a hit."

Broke-Back Burning at Wilsons Promontory

On 8 February lightning sparked a fire in Wilsons Promontory – 90 km² of stunning rainforest, unspoiled beaches and abundant wildlife on the southern-most tip of Australia. At a community meeting on 11 February, the Department of Sustainability and Environment (DSE) and Parks Victoria authorities revealed a plan to back burn across the 7 km wide entrance to Wilsons Promontory – to protect the towns of Yanakie and Sandy Point 3 km to the north.

But locals pointed out that the proposed burn was larger than both the existing fire, and the controlled burn that breached due to increased heat and wind that caused the evacuation of 600 people in April 2005 . . . So without the local's blessing, DSE and Parks Victoria authorities proceeded with preparatory work and were about to light the controlled burn when strong easterly winds came up the next day. If the back burn had taken place, it would have destroyed Yanakie and Sandy Point, and blown the fires along the south coast toward Melbourne 120 km away . . .

So the community quorum of locals were right and the Government wasn't.

Public Blame Police and Fire for Arson

By 10 August 2009, the word is the fires were deliberately lit by police and firemen, with the blame going to one guy with some pornography, which removes the morality of his reply . . . and the electricty company SP AusNet, which makes the fight internal to Australia, and takes the focus off Israel and its plans for Australia.

2009 Victo… …fires
Royal Com…

The Australian public can further blame the CFA Chief Russell Rees who was in the same room where and when the accurate predictive fire map was made. This fire map accurately predicted where the Black Saturday fire would go and when it would get there. During the hearing on 17 August 2009, CFA Chief Russell Rees said he was unaware of the map then, but is aware of it now. He then admitted to faulted communication between the various government fire fighting factions, but not within his own office. All he had to do was turn around, walk three paces, acknowledge the fire maps, and 100 more people would have survived . . . None of the reporters asked if Russell Rees was a Freemason; and no one asked Premier John Brumby if he was taking it up the arse like J. Edgar Hoover.

Premier John Brumby (Queen Victoria) then announced Russell Rees commission as CFA Chief had been renewed for another two years. So it was an inside job full of State sabotage . . . as is typical of Royal Commissions . . . collusion to sabotage.

A similiar thing happened in New Zealand in the 1980s when the fireman in charge of training new firefighters, lit 80 per cent of the fires in the sparsely populated West Auckland and areas approaching its beaches. He also used unusually hot weather as cover.

Like Australia, this story has still not made it to the mainstream media.

---

[20] 'Why We Weren't Warned, paraphrased.

[21] 'Black Saturday bushfires', Wikipedia, 16 August 2009.

[22] 'Wide-ranging powers for bushfire inquiry: Brumby', ABC News, 16 February 2009.

[23] Ibid.

New Zealand Undercover Arsonist in Australia

Spymaster: "This guy from New Zealand made a habit of going to Australian towns and burning the whole guts out of a town, specialising in Western Australia in the 1980s and 90s. It went on for at least 20 years. He had an incredible toll of towns that he'd burnt out. But the most fascinating thing about him was that he had a completely tatooed face with barely any skin showing, and he would go around to the Arson Squad of CID, the day after the fire, and tell them: 'I'm a New Zealand Undercover and I've been sent specifically to help you in your hour of need'.

What used to happen in over 200 towns, is that they were grateful to the prick. They used to furnish all their photos and he used to take them into a vacant office and review them for leads. And after many years of committing arson in two horse dorps all over Australia, he made the mistake of going into an interview room where a female police office was next door. She heard strange noises and looked up to see him wanking over the arson photos, so she went to her boss the Sergeant and said: 'Is that Kiwi U.C. supposed to be wanking himself over the arson photos?', and suddenly the Sergeant had a Road to Damscus Conversion and realised that all was not as it seemed.

So the Sergeant marched into the room, grabbed the arsonist by the neck and said: 'You did this arson didn't you' and the Kiwi denied it, so the Sergeant said: 'Don't bullshit me. I can tell by the way you were wanking over the photos' whereupon the Kiwi broke down and revealed all, saying: 'Fire is my only friend . . . I felt cleansed by burning a town down . . . If I hadn't got the cooperation of the Australian Police I wouldn't have been able to burn down the towns . . . I'm glad you caught me because now I can look forward to confessing everything and one day having a clean slate, and I will tell you all about it, but first I need a coffee . . . and it all goes back to my childhood when I was put up for adoption and the only people who would have me were Maoris. I've had a terrible aweful life and fire was my only friend.'

You watch this. It's a totally true story, but the Australian Police will totally rubbish it, and deny its veracity into media oblivion, just as they did the first time around. It was hushed up even before his sentence was announced."

Arsonists and Strange Sex

Proper Undercover: "Arson is a sexual act . . . In West Auckland in 1991, I came across these two kids, 14- to 16- years-old. One of them had set a fire in the Footrot Flats Fun Park[24] in Te Atatu North (not your best Auckland suburb). One morning they decided to have a fire and one had a series of bung lighters on him, so he went off to the dairy to buy some matches and left the other at the scene.

When he returned the fire was already going and the Fire Service was already there, and the Fire Police were everywhere. They were like maggots on a dead man. They were directing everybody to drive to places that nobody knew where to find, and these two kids were scrapping at the Fire Police's feet and I noticed there was something unusual about the way they were fighting.

They weren't going for carotid holds and strangling each other the way most Maoris fight. They were grabbing each other around the arse and actually wrestling and tearing each others clothes.

So I started listening to what they were saying and they were both calling each other 'fucking cunts' and one was saying: 'You lit the fire without me. You should have waited 'til I'd got back. We were going to fuck each other when the fire service was coming down the motorway and you jumped the gun.'

---

[24] Footrot Flats was part of Leisureland which opened on 21 April 1984. Leisureland then closed down in 1991 for unpaid rates and reopened as Adventure West in 1992.

I remember that I'd been told by the CID that someone had read in a book that arson was a sexual act and the detectives thought that was total shit, but something struck a chord and I decided to watch these two. And at that moment, the Fire Police took note because one of them got whacked in the shins by one of the youths, so the Fire Police bent down and said to them: 'Fuck off you little cunts. We are fighting a fire!'. The two youths then began mutual recriminations of:

'It's our fire. We started it. Why should you have all the fun.'

The Fire Police lost it and told them to 'Fuck off now or you'll be arrested'. And they said 'Yes, yes, that's what we want', so the Fire Police gave them a kick up the arse and they started moving down the road. I went with them and they both told me again the whole circumstances of starting the fire, and even their street names, and pointed out the seat of the fire was the house they used to sleep in. So they burnt a house down. Then they showed me where they were going to move to. It was a bamboo hedge at the back of a park. I went back to the cops in the park and told them verbally, and then in written form what I'd discovered, but they weren't interested. I then told my boss (Detective-Sergeant) on Monday about it, but on that day he wasn't interested in the slightest either. All he wanted to bring up was the complaints that he had from Fire Police: 'How I'd obstructed them and got in the way of their investigation and tried to encourage them to look at leads they knew to be false, and had called them "dumb cunts".' So at that point, I gave up. The whole thing went the PC way of non-intervention until the two boys were eventually charged with another arson and I remember the Detective-Sergeant on the phone saying: 'Yes he was an arsonist, because someone had told me who'd read a book about it, but I can't for the life of me remember who it was'."

It is not uncommon for firemen to be arsonists. The standard procedure to investigate a fireman arsonists is to search their locker and if there are a bunch of lighters and some porn, you have your man. Firemen who lit the fire are often first at the scene, or called it in, and are often leaning against the fire truck breathless and all excited while the others are trying to put their life's work out.

In the case of Black Saturday, there were over 600 fires in the state of Victoria, over 400 fires in the Kilmore-to-Churchill zone, with over half of these deliberatly lit . . . and the whereabouts of many of the firemen and fire trucks could not be established. This would indicate that some of the project firemen were deliberately lighting fires as project arsonists . . . and some of the attempts at back burning ignored the wind shifts and contributed to the fires . . . and some of these were on purpose, with foreknowledge outwardly ignored.

Development and Murder around the Weather Cannon

Dr. Gerald Vincent Bull (1928–90) was a Canadian engineer who moved from project to project for all sides and spent time working on missiles in HARP (High Altitude Research Program). By November 1962, Dr. Bull was launching 150 kg Martlets, 6.6 km high, up to eight times a night, for upper atmosphere research. About 1,000 firings took place where electronics triggered the release of chemical markers at a set altitude leaving a 'triethylaluminum smoke trail' through the atmosphere to measure winds. This burnt off on contact with air.

Chaff[25] was also released which allowed tracking via radar; and electronics were released to measure the magnetic field.

---

[25] Chaff was either very thin aluminium or aluminised paper. The paper only gave reflection on one side, so the thin aluminium was preferred. It was also more difficult to tear. Both took forever to fall. Chaff was firsts used by 100 Group RAF in 1943 over Europe to stuff up German radar. They dropped it at 30–40,000 feet, it'd take hours to come to ground, during which German radar read as a field of snow.

Dr. Bull's Martlets resulted in half of all upper-atmospheric data collected to date. The tropical atmospheric meteorological data was then given to the Army Research Office in exchange for funding. HARP eventually led to HAARP – High Frequency Active Auroral Reseach Program – although this is denied.

Dr. Bull's goal was to launch a satellite by missile, but when the Americans found out Bull was trying to launch a Canadian flag into space in 1967, they cut off his funding in 1968.

The Israelis and Canadian Military then gave Bull all the research the British had given the Germans for making long-range cannon. Then they helped Bull to sanction-bust with South Africa and elongated the range of their artillery with the G5 howitzer, giving them the advantage over the Soviets in Cuba.

Dr. Gerald Bull then designed the Project Babylon "supergun" for Saddam Hussein. Two superguns made it to Iraq, with all spare parts, and were both mounted on the side of hills.

Britain lied about this all the time. What Britain passed off as spare parts were actually sections of oil pipeline. The story in Britain was they thought they were making oil pipeline for Saddam Hussein, and even had a big court case about it where the judge directed the jury 'to find that MI-6 had not played a part in it' – so that's what went down.

Further down the lying scale, the smaller gun made it to Iraq, but UK Customs seized several parts of the supergun in November 1990 (8 months after Dr. Bull was toes up) . . . but two full superguns and all spare parts were delivered to Saddam.

Saddam Hussein's long-range superguns had the ability to strike Europe or the UK at any time, but he never chose to use them, because Saddam Hussein was also run by the British.

The military tension certainly kept the price of fuel high, which is what the military tension was designed to do – by the British and Americans – and Saddam worked for both.

What Dr. Gerald Bull developed in HARP was put into long-range artillery experiments as cannon weather control. And when he was no longer needed, he was no longer needed.

Bull had worked on so many critical defence projects for so many opposing sides that he was an asset and a liability all at the same time. When he was working on the Scud missile[26] for the Russians during the Cold War, this became a problem for the world's governments, so they employed the world's contract killers to do the hit – enter the Israelis.

Scuds were a poor excuse for Dr. Bull's murder as the Berlin Wall had come down five months earlier, and everyone knew the Soviet Union was in free fall collapse and the Cold War was coming to an end (both in 1991).

So 'Dr. Bull developing Scud missiles for the Soviets' was not the reason for his death. The development of his work into weather warfare – as the weather cannon – was the reason for his death. After some weather bomb is dropped, you hardly want a scientist popping up in the media and saying: "I recognise my own work. I led that project. Here's who's behind it." So Dr. Gerald Vincent Bull had to go.

First Dr. Bull was given several warnings to shut-uppa-your-face, but that didn't seem to work as he was a driven scientist and deontic. His apartment was broken into and the money was left behind, which is a sure sign of Israel's involvement – it's an Israeli signature.

Still, Dr. Gerald Bull trusted the Israelis to turn up to a treff with him. He was a scientist, what to you expect. Scientists expect everyone else to be deontic, just like them. Assassins expect everyone to be deontic, especially when they're scientists, and when they're required to kill someone who isn't deontic, they generally expect more in kickbacks or greater cover, usually in the form of media distraction.

Dr. Bull never thought the Israelis would turn up with a gun, turn on him, and kill him, but on 22 March 1990, Gerald got pumelled. He was shot five times with 9 mm bullets in the head and back by Mossad, reportedly outside his apartment in Antwerpen, but according to Wikipedia, the details are still sketchy.

According to the Army Intelligence investigation, Dr. Gerald Vincent Bull was shot inside by the elevator on the way to his apartment.

> A similar scene was shown in the 2005 movie 'Munich', where a Palestinian '**Black September**' member talks to a small audience on the streets of Rome about his translation of *The Arabian Nights* and is then shot by Mossad outside the elevator doors to his apartment, as part of **Operation Wrath of God**. The film was based on George Jonas' *Vengeance: The True Story of an Israeli Counter-Terrorist Team* (1984, 24 editions).

So what did Australia do to deserve a **Black Operation Wrath of God** set on **Vengeance**? They got rid of the Kol Nidre John Howard!

The result – vengeful black weather seemingly from God, but really from terrorist Israel effected by counter-terrorist Fire and Police, all washed clean by a Royal Commission whose Queen is Jewish/ Rothschild/ Central Bank and needs to recover some of her recent £17 billion losses through increased insurance premiums, essentially controlled by MI-6, of whom QEII is the head . . . and MI-6 trains all the world's terrorists.

The investigation into Dr. Bull's murder was deliberately botched by Belgian Police who double as apologists for Interpol – who double as the Nazi SS with Hitler's picture taken down – who lie by omission for sadistic michling occult Jews – who rort their secret societies – who populate government departments to do the damage for them.

These Jews also control the Freemasons who control the Police and Fire Departments in Victoria, and the Premier's office, who in turn work in conjuction with Israel's weather warfare on their own country – Australia – in exchange for children to root, for them, and their Freemason buddies, supplied by the paedophiles in Brussels, where Interpol is based – who regularly don't find the paedophiles by protecting their whereabouts – generally in safe houses protected by Freemason police.

See how shit stinks and travels in a circle. Eventually you get burnt – three years, fire season, Fire and Police. CFA Chief Russell Rees is a Freemason. He's incredibly useless at his job and should never have been placed in that position, let alone maintained in that position – except for sabotage.

Black Saturday was an exercise in self-sabotage.

Black Saturday was an act of Israeli weather warfare, combined with Freemasons within Victoria Fire and Police, who were used to sabotage counter-measures on the ground, and in communications, in order to place Australians in a state of fear and panic, in the vain hope of emigrating them to Alaska . . . close to where Dr. Gerald Vincent Bull began his experiments in Canada.

But Aussies won't go anywhere unless you can wear stubbies, drink stubbies, look like a stubby, and have a stubby cook your food, while the initiated blokes put another crime on the barbie . . . "forty years ago deez was'd pioneez of t'day mate . . . Fuck Alaska. Give me a burning eucalypt any day . . . Why I 'member d'time, before the fire, it was a craker mate, shit, sheeze, d'r waz dis chick 'n d'water waz blue . . ."

---

[26] Scud SS-1e (USSR 9K720 Aerofon), 985 kg payload, 700 km range, accurate to 50 m, first deployed in 1989?

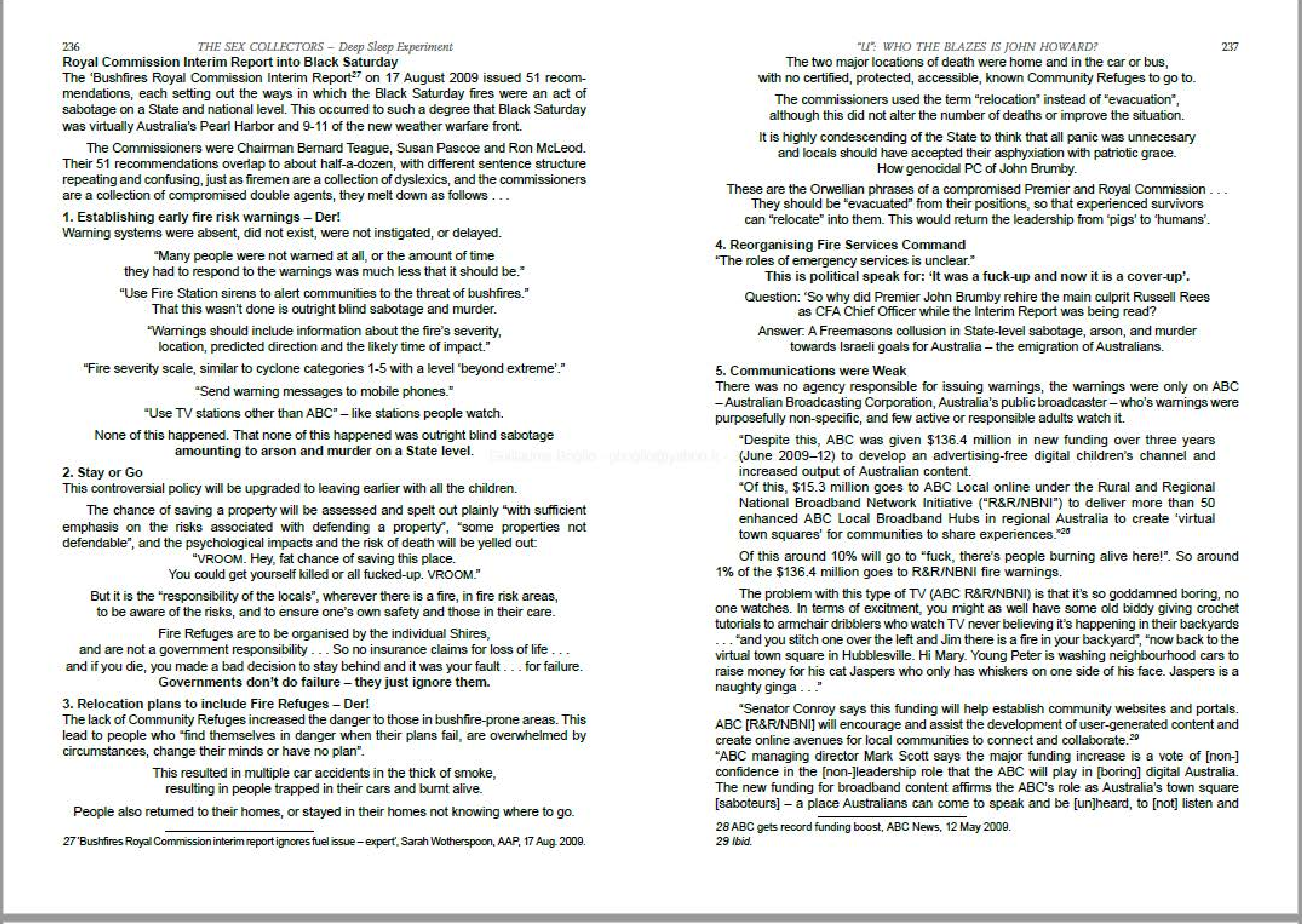

Royal Commission Interim Report into Black Saturday

The 'Bushfires Royal Commission Interim Report[27] on 17 August 2009 issued 51 recommendations, each setting out the ways in which the Black Saturday fires were an act of sabotage on a State and national level. This occurred to such a degree that Black Saturday was virtually Australia's Pearl Harbor and 9-11 of the new weather warfare front.

The Commissioners were Chairman Bernard Teague, Susan Pascoe and Ron McLeod. Their 51 recommendations overlap to about half-a-dozen, with different sentence structure repeating and confusing, just as firemen are a collection of dyslexics, and the commissioners are a collection of compromised double agents, they melt down as follows . . .

1. Establishing early fire risk warnings – Der!

Warning systems were absent, did not exist, were not instigated, or delayed.

"Many people were not warned at all, or the amount of time
they had to respond to the warnings was much less that it should be."

"Use Fire Station sirens to alert communities to the threat of bushfires."
That this wasn't done is outright blind sabotage and murder.

"Warnings should include information about the fire's severity,
location, predicted direction and the likely time of impact."

"Fire severity scale, similar to cyclone categories 1-5 with a level 'beyond extreme'."

"Send warning messages to mobile phones."

"Use TV stations other than ABC" – like stations people watch.

None of this happened. That none of this happened was outright blind sabotage
amounting to arson and murder on a State level.

2. Stay or Go

This controversial policy will be upgraded to leaving earlier with all the children.

The chance of saving a property will be assessed and spelt out plainly "with sufficient emphasis on the risks associated with defending a property", "some properties not defendable", and the psychological impacts and the risk of death will be yelled out:

"VROOM. Hey, fat chance of saving this place.
You could get yourself killed or all fucked-up. VROOM."

But it is the "responsibility of the locals", wherever there is a fire, in fire risk areas,
to be aware of the risks, and to ensure one's own safety and those in their care.

Fire Refuges are to be organised by the individual Shires,
and are not a government responsibility . . . So no insurance claims for loss of life . . .
and if you die, you made a bad decision to stay behind and it was your fault . . . for failure.
Governments don't do failure – they just ignore them.

3. Relocation plans to include Fire Refuges – Der!

The lack of Community Refuges increased the danger to those in bushfire-prone areas. This lead to people who "find themselves in danger when their plans fail, are overwhelmed by circumstances, change their minds or have no plan".

This resulted in multiple car accidents in the thick of smoke,
resulting in people trapped in their cars and burnt alive.

People also returned to their homes, or stayed in their homes not knowing where to go.

---

[27] 'Bushfires Royal Commission interim report ignores fuel issue – expert', Sarah Wotherspoon, AAP, 17 Aug. 2009.

The two major locations of death were home and in the car or bus,
with no certified, protected, accessible, known Community Refuges to go to.

The commissioners used the term "relocation" instead of "evacuation",
although this did not alter the number of deaths or improve the situation.

It is highly condescending of the State to think that all panic was unnecesary
and locals should have accepted their asphyxiation with patriotic grace.
How genocidal PC of John Brumby.

These are the Orwellian phrases of a compromised Premier and Royal Commission . . .
They should be "evacuated" from their positions, so that experienced survivors
can "relocate" into them. This would return the leadership from 'pigs' to 'humans'.

4. Reorganising Fire Services Command

"The roles of emergency services is unclear."

This is political speak for: 'It was a fuck-up and now it is a cover-up'.

Question: 'So why did Premier John Brumby rehire the main culprit Russell Rees
as CFA Chief Officer while the Interim Report was being read?

Answer: A Freemasons collusion in State-level sabotage, arson, and murder
towards Israeli goals for Australia – the emigration of Australians.

5. Communications were Weak

There was no agency responsible for issuing warnings, the warnings were only on ABC – Australian Broadcasting Corporation, Australia's public broadcaster – who's warnings were purposefully non-specific, and few active or responsible adults watch it.

> "Despite this, ABC was given $136.4 million in new funding over three years (June 2009–12) to develop an advertising-free digital children's channel and increased output of Australian content.
> "Of this, $15.3 million goes to ABC Local online under the Rural and Regional National Broadband Network Initiative ("R&R/NBNI") to deliver more than 50 enhanced ABC Local Broadband Hubs in regional Australia to create 'virtual town squares' for communities to share experiences."[28]

Of this around 10% will go to "fuck, there's people burning alive here!". So around 1% of the $136.4 million goes to R&R/NBNI fire warnings.

The problem with this type of TV (ABC R&R/NBNI) is that it's so goddamned boring, no one watches. In terms of excitment, you might as well have some old biddy giving crochet tutorials to armchair dribblers who watch TV never believing it's happening in their backyards . . . "and you stitch one over the left and Jim there is a fire in your backyard", "now back to the virtual town square in Hubblesville. Hi Mary. Young Peter is washing neighbourhood cars to raise money for his cat Jaspers who only has whiskers on one side of his face. Jaspers is a naughty ginga . . ."

"Senator Conroy says this funding will help establish community websites and portals. ABC [R&R/NBNI] will encourage and assist the development of user-generated content and create online avenues for local communities to connect and collaborate.[29]
"ABC managing director Mark Scott says the major funding increase is a vote of [non-] confidence in the [non-]leadership role that the ABC will play in [boring] digital Australia. The new funding for broadband content affirms the ABC's role as Australia's town square [saboteurs] – a place Australians can come to speak and be [un]heard, to [not] listen and

---

[28] ABC gets record funding boost, ABC News, 12 May 2009.
[29] *Ibid.*

learn from each other . . . allowing the ABC to host [uninteresting] content the audiences create themselves [thus shifting the blame of Government failures to the community].”

‘Bushfires Royal Commission Interim Report: “So broadcast official warnings on commerical TV and radio stations other than ABC.”

So ABC are given $136 million, the Royal Commission then said ‘No’, we don’t trust ABC to have an audience, they should focus on kiddy’s programmes, so Rockspiders can have a trouble-free platform for grooming – that’s $120 million and full support for Rockspiders, whereas fire gets $1.5 million, full sabotage, and has to search out its own irregular media – as recommended by Premier John Brumby/ Queen Victoria.

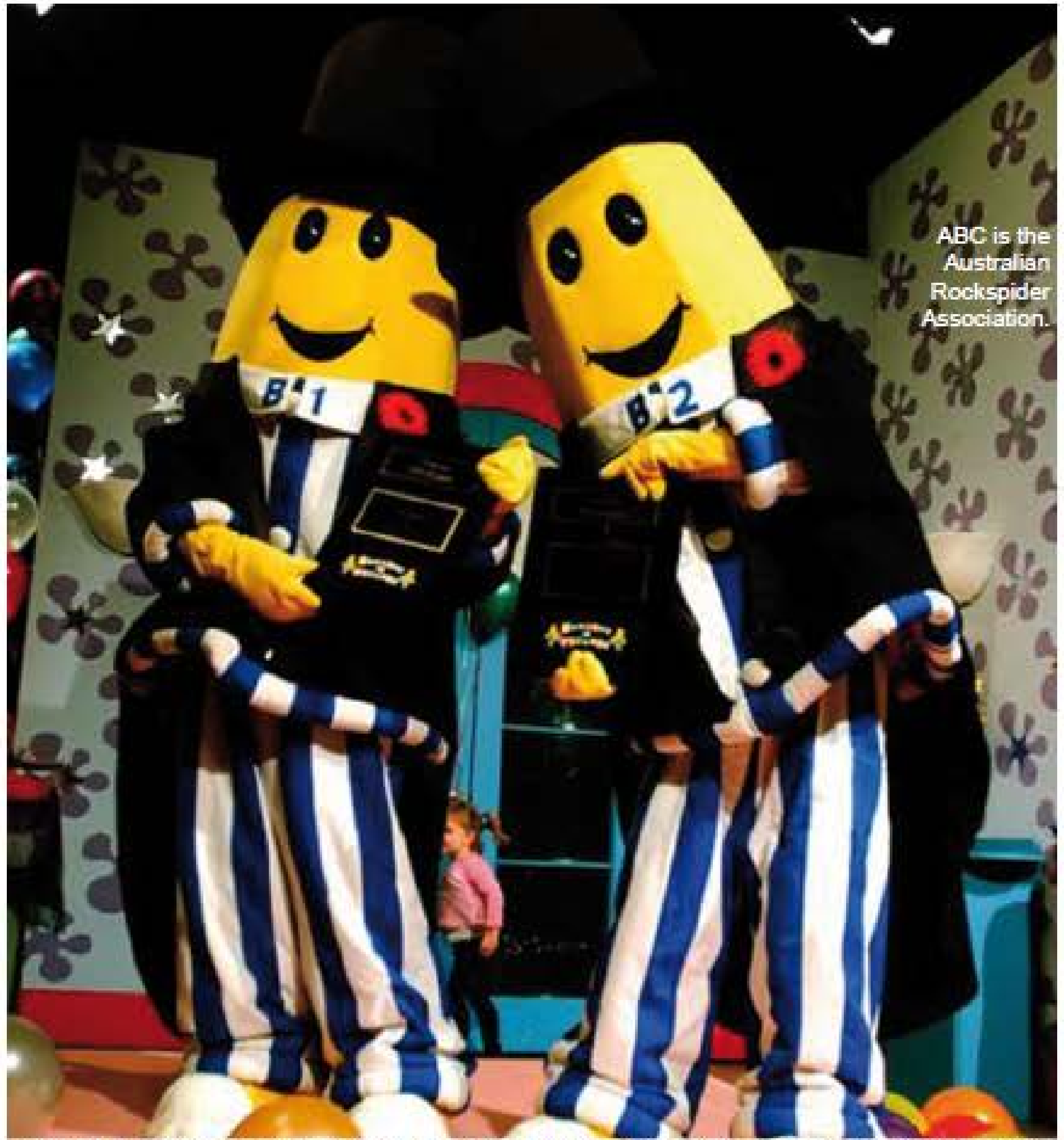

ABC is the Australian Rockspider Association.

A couple of Jewish paedophiles/ ABC children’s TV characters “Bananas in Pyjamas” groom the children for ‘two penises in a bed’, laugh at Australia, and take up 90% of the new $136.4 million funding, while Australia can’t even sound an alarm, siren, or warn residents where the fire is 15 minutes prior, and which way it’s heading – via the same ABC channel. So if your parents die, here are your Jewish-media-controlled surrogate parents – heavily-funded ABC Rockspiders. Get your priorities right Australia, and look at your subliminals.

6. Royal Commission’s Interim Report primary fault – Ignored Fuel Load

The Royal Commission’s Interim Report did not make any recommendations about the size, expanse and location of the fuel loads, equalling the size, expanse and location of the fire.

They side-stepped this major issue with “greater back burning” –
which will effectively become the ongoing excuse for self-sabotage (even when sighted),
with wind change and velocity controlled by HARP/HAARP.

“The main cause of the fire expanding (apart from arson)
was the high fuel loads in the area, including tinder dry wood and brush,
broken (sabotaged) power lines falling, and fuel in farm sheds etc.”[30]

Sabotage of fire prevention was bad enough. But the Interim Fire Report
went on to sabotage future prevention, and then penalised previous prevention.

It did this by not correlating the fuel load with the fire, especially when close to homes.

Remove the fuel load and there is no fire.

Remove the fuel loads within burning distance from houses –
at 4 times the projected height of the flames – and the houses won’t burn down.

Removing fuels loads close to houses prevents those houses from burning down.
At present this is done to 6 metres – effective for 1.5m/ 5 ft high flames.

Removing fuels loads 100 metres from houses,
protects that house from 25m/82 ft high flames.

With 100 metre fire break, homes are downgraded from ‘extreme risk’ to ‘moderate risk’.

However, as fire prevention has been sabotage for a long time, as planed,
those who correctly prepared were fined.

7. Purposeful Sabotage

Unbelievable, but true to this hypothesis of purposeful sabotage, the Royal Commission into Black Saturday found “the State Emergency Response Plan . . . does not clearly designate the agency responsible for issuing warning and recommending relocation . . . [so it was] at best unhelpful and at worst life-threatening in an emergency [criminal homicide]. The commission recommended the CFA chief officer [Russell Rees] be given responsibility for issuing warnings and providing information about the bushfire risk” . . . in the future – while ommiting to state that Russell Rees failed to do it on Black Saturday . . . so a linguistic cover-up – they addressed the issue in the future, but not in the past.

These lines came directly from Israel to the Royal Commission in order to protect the co-saboteur, co-homicidal CFA Chief Officer Russell Rees.

CFA Chief Officer Russell Rees was then announced as being rehired . . . just as he is a Freemason sabotueur – Ordo Ab Chao – Order out of Chaos.

That these measures weren’t in place is simply unbelieveable. There appears to be no rational explaination other than ‘purposeful sabotage’.

Despite the Kol Nidre/ Day of Atonement agent/ former Treasurer/ Premier John Brumby (Queen Victoria) making all the preparations, many of which were used for sabotage to light the fires (15 fires started all at once around Victoria), the CFA Chief was not responsible for warnings, recommending escape plans/ relocation/ place for refuge/ evacuation, or looking at, and citing the predictive fire maps . . . and nor was anyone else.

---

[30] David Packham, former CSIRO and Bureau of Meteorology forecaster of fire conditions in ‘Bushfires Royal Commission interim report ignores fuel issue – expert’, Sarah Wotherspoon, AAP, 17 August, 2009.

This resulted in no warnings, mute warnings, and confused warnings, which had no direction or desired outcome other than '**PANIC, IT'S TOO LATE**'.

It was just whoever dies first, dies first.

The warnings were as effective as:
"Hi, something is happening outside. It's hot. There is a 20% chance that you will die in the next five minutes. Half of these 'warnings' are late and are actually 'reports' on what has already happened, but you are too dead to listen. We have no advice on what to do, where to go, or whether it has already happened. All we can positively say is that at least half the fires were deliberately lit, and we don't know where half of our project firemen/arsonists were, nor where half of our machinery was, and we couldn't or wouldn't answer your emergency calls, so thanks for paying your taxes, your arse is mine, and kiss it good bye."

This makes the next fire season (1 November 2009–) just as dangerous as the previous fire season.

Premier Brumby said there was a high degree of overlap with the report's recommendations and measures the government had already taken:

> "Victorians in communities at risk of bushfires can be assured that work is already under way on the bulk of the measures recommended in the interim report . . .
> A small number of recommendations require further consideration . . . further detailed responses on 31 August 2009 . . . final report by July 31 next year."

Guillaume Boglio - gboglio@yahoo

8. Australian Bushfires Deliberately Lit, but Blamed on Weather

Euro News, NZ television, 11.37 pm, 7 February 2009: "Over half the bushfires in NSW Australia are deliberately lit" and 50 minutes later at 12.27 am, 8 February 2009 the excuse: "Australia is suffering a once in a century heatwave".

The Royal Commission Interim Report on Black Saturday was a 363 page report of Fire sabotage by the CFA, DSE and associated bodies. It reads as a 'HOW TO SABOTAGE FIRE PREVENTION, KILL LOCALS AND INSTILL TERROR AND A LACK OF FAITH IN THE AUSTRALIAN GOVERNMENT'.

JOHN BRUMBY
Victoria Premier
3

Fire Sabotage

"173 are dead in Victoria's worst ever bushfire . . . More than 600 fire incidents were recorded across the State on that day . . . The '000' emergency number had a record number of calls. Less than 75% were answered . . . There were Communication breakdowns on the day that repeated from the public to the Government and between the Government departments . . . Coordination amongst the Commonwealth Emergency Bodies was absent or non-existent . . . The wording of the warnings was indirect, unclear, complicated and lacked quality info . . . There was no fire warning above extreme . . . There was no fire warning saying 'HIGH CHANCE OF DEATH OVER NEXT 24 HOURS' . . . The ABC TV warnings were indirect, unclear and late . . . ABC TV 'warnings' were actually 'reports' of what had already happened . . . Other TV warnings also occurred after the event . . . The CFA had a monopoly on handing out warnings but failed to do so . . . The CFA Chief Officer Russell Rees ignored the accurate predictive fire map prepared in his own office . . . and was re-employed for another two years. This is a slap in the face to a grieving community of widows and widowers . . . Fire sirens in communities were discouraged . . . Warning sirens on radio were discouraged . . . Fire sirens were not sounded when the fire was in the immediate area . . . The community was given inadequate warning or no warning . . . The ETA of the fire was not stated . . . There were issues of communication, clarity, warning and chance of survival of person and property with the 'stay or go' policy . . . There were no identified or protected clear egress routes for escape to 'somewhere else' . . . 'Somewhere else' was not identified . . . Secure egress routes were not secure and became death traps . . . There were no Secure Refuges . . . There were no secure egress routes to Fire Refuges . . . The Fire Refuges were not protected by 100 metre fire breaks . . . The Fire Refuges were not protected by Firemen . . . The Fire Refuges did not have oxygen to assist breathing . . . The majority of people who died, died in their own homes, then in their car trying to escape, often to the Refuge[31] . . . And often the Refuge was on fire . . . It was each man for himself . . . The police were nowhere to be found . . . 'The way warnings and evacuations were made on the day bore little resemblance to the State Emergency Response Plans' . . . all protocols went out the window . . . 'over half the fires were purposefully lit'. Those who survived did so by luck more than preparation or skill. . . . Those who made the correct pre-emptive response and made a 100 metre fire break around their homes were fined by their Shire Councils . . . the various commonwealth bodies refused to accept blame for their mistakes which cost Australia $1.5 billion."

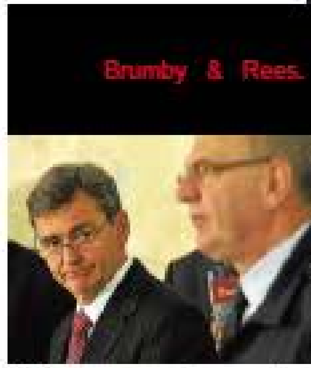
Brumby & Rees.

Rees & Brumby

---

[31] There were only ever three roads out of Kinglake. The Kinglake Football Oval was considered a fire refuge and people headed there, but the road was blocked with burning cars and burning occupants.

9. CFA, DSE and State Government refuse responsibility and Deflect Blame

Premier John Brumby (Queen Victoria) refused to accept any blame on himself, or any of the Commonwealth bodies. Instead, he focussed on future changes, and put the onus on the local Shire Council to put these in place.

SkyNews, Live, 17 August 2009, Premier John Brumby: "I want to put the emphasis on looking forward [I don't want to have the blame on my shoulders, Kevin Rudd, or Russell Rees] . . . to never again see a repeat of February 7th. This is about identifying things that worked and things that didn't . . . so we can address them . . . there is a very high degree of overlap between what people have told us and the Commission's recommendations to make our State safe [however we have ignored the fuel load as the source of the fire]."

1. "The existing policy is retained, but with a completely different emphasis" as opposed to throwing out the current policy which absolutely does not work. e.g. "The safest place to be in a bushfire is somewhere else" . . . which is a completely different policy.

2. The roles of the CFA, the DSE and State Government in warning people and what to expect, are to be outlined – in the future.

3. Fire Refuges to be organised by the individual Shire Councils – Fire Refuges were not and are not the government responsiblity.

4. Ferntree Gulley was the CFA's golden shower achievement.

Spymaster: "I was probably lit by the firemen.
It was in an easily controlled area, and did not have the wind pushing it up a hill".

10. Author's Recommendations

Ensure:

1. State Emergency Response Plans are adhered to by CFA, DSE and State Government and the community public are aware of these roles and their protected egress, locations and response options.
2. CFA, DSE and State Government ensure they can communicate without sabotage. e.g. When fire warning gets to extreme, they co-ordinate and act as one body – 'Australia's Fire Protection' ("AFP").
3. Rewrite State Emergency Response Plans and stick to them, with penalities attached when not sticking to them amounts to arson and negligent homicide.
4. Predictive Fire Map to be read by CFA Chief, followed and disseminated.
   (Ignored = arson = negligent homicide = fired =charged).
5. Shire Councils to fund clearing around houses and communities and refund fines and legal costs for those who have already done the right thing.
6. Reduce insurance for houses that comply with fire breaks.
7. Give Fire Protection priority over Green Party concerns.
8. Local Fire Sirens, Radio Sirens and TV sirens in conjunction with improved 'Danger Index' on TV and Radio shows people watch and listen to- thus avoiding media blackout.
9. TV to report fire news as either "warnings" (future) or "reports" (past).
10. Issue direct clear warnings on the chance of survival of person and place. Fire warnings to be issued by all three departments and include 'above extreme', 'chance of death', 'chance of property protection', 'all go except able-bodied fire-trained civies' and 'all go'.

11. Police, Fire and Emergency to transfer their call response base to Fire Refuges – either a Fire Refuge built around them, or move to a Fire Refuge. Fire Refuge to be an island in the middle of a lake, underground, or with 100 metre fire break, with oxygen, medical supplies for burns, food, water, and protected access routes as a priority.
    If Black Saturday had the effect of the 1,500 Hiroshima bombs, then build nuclear bunkers for community fire protection. It was done in the Cold War.
12. Remove Fire Load 100 metres from houses, around communities, under powerlines and along access road to Fire Refuge. Put powerlines underground.
13. Mobile fire fighting slipon units adapted for attachment to buses headed to 'SOMEWHERE ELSE', just as the slipon units are attached to other vehicles.
14. Designate where 'SOMEWHERE ELSE' is.
15. Local Community to be consulted over back burning – a community quorum – and informed where and when it is happening, with calls on loudspeaker to the Fire Refuge.
16. Identify, remove and charge those police, firemen, volunteers, DSE and Government workers and employees involved in arson.
17. Remove all funding for Rockspiders and expose them – especially those at ABC spending $120 million.
18. Remove all Kol Nidre/ Day of Atonement politicians, as well as those sexually compromised.
19. Police to stop using their sirens to pick up their Pizza and Heroin . . . Police sirens are not to be used for meal breaks or participating in crimes. They can do it after-hours in their private cars and without uniformed protection.

Kevin Rudd with nothing on his right.

20. All government bodies to own up to their mistakes in the Black Saturday fires.
21. CFA Chief Officer Russell Rees to be named and shamed as marked, measured and found wanting, relieved of duty and stripped of all assets.
22. Queen Victoria to be named and as marked, measured and found wanting, relieved of duty and stripped of all assets. i.e. Premier John Brumby.
23. Prime Minister Kevin Rudd to be investigated.
24. Former Prime Minister John Howard to be investigated.
25. Australian Government to be investigated for being CIA controlled, who are Israel controlled.
26. Media complicit in negligent homicide – who issued reports as warnings, when the fire had already taken hold – to present a doco on Black Saturday as purposeful sabotage and name and shame those who failed, and were then failed upwards.

11. Israeli Transport Ships for exodus of Australia – End Game

Spymaster: "Israel owns the majority of the world's cruise ships. You can tell the Israeli owned ships by the Doppler Effect Transmitters on the bridge. They direct Doppler Effect sound waves at pirates (or any ship) and bring on feelings of intense nausea and brain pain.

The Doppler Effect testing was initially done on military land in Miramar, Wellington, New Zealand in 1967–69.

The targets rapidly lose any sort of effectiveness whatsoever. They only want to get away. Israelis have used these in the past and know it works from trials done on Palestinans back in the Middle East.

Israeli Industry runs these ships and crews them themselves and they actually enjoy putting Rockspiders (paedophiles) on their ships. The paedophiles arrive with a newly cleaned up identity, usually Anglo-Saxon (WASP). They then pray on the Christian passengers and on those they call 'Goyim' – the human animals.

The Israelis regard this as a good joke and do whatever they can to enable the paedophile to escape.

These ships often have special crews of cleaners that can come in, and in the space of five mintues, waterblast and remove all forensic detail from the room. The Israeli response to these situations is virtually 'crime creation', because they control the paedophiles in one hand, and present them with perfectly clean crime scenes on the other – therefore no offense can be detected.

There is usually one person on every Israeli Doppler Effect cruise ship that has a background in criminal investigation, but he is usually a Mossad Officer in charge ensuring that no one gets prosecuted, and indeed, that there is no prosecutable evidence for any case against the owners of the cruise ship.

It's Kol Nidre gone biserk.

The other thing that the Israelis have been known to do, is to slave traffic someone on board into the hands of foreign criminals and again there is no trace of evidence.

The Israeli Doppler Effect cruise ships are purposefully enabling criminals in the most disguising crimes . . . and getting away with it.

This, unfortunately, is what the Australians are going to be faced with one day, if the big shift to Alaska comes about – Israeli forward planning gone beserk.

I wouldn't recommend that even a stray dingo gets on an Israeli Doppler Effect cruise ship, or any other, without at least sharpening its teeth, and certainly not without back up for those moments when you have to go to sleep.

The Israelis are now placing Doppler Effect systems onto Armoured Personel Carriers ("APC"), supposedly for crowd control in Gaza. They also have four machine guns on either side of the vehicle and the ability to fire flashbang grenades and gas on all four sides – the same as the British DET used in Northern Ireland, and the same flashbang grenades used on Princess Diana in Paris."

Terrorism Act – Extradition, Rendition and Stitch-ups

Army Intelligence: "After 9-11, one of the first things the Australian Prime Minister and Jewish agent John Howard did, was bring in a set of very loosely worded laws on the advice of ASIS – a very conservative organisation – that they could prosecute virtually anybody for anything and it would come under the Terrorism Act.

"Police in New Zealand found under search warrant that a conference had taken place in an Auckland house. Amongst the documents recovered was a map of Sydney with pencil marks

on it around Lucas Heights, a nuclear facility named as a suburb, but with no accomodation.[32]

"The Israelis had infiltrated this group of Muslims in Auckland, with somebody that was their double agent, and that was how the police heard about it. There wasn't a case to answer in New Zealand, but there was a case in Australia, because of the laws the Jewish agent John Howard had introduced . . . against the Muslims.

"The last we heard they were sending some poor bloody Muslim to Australia to face charges over it. The Aussies got him out of NZ by luring him with indemnities, money, and more money for some business, but it was all bullshit and they ended up being extradited from Australia by the Americans for rendition.

"Kiwi cops are mongrels, but Australian police are ten times the mongrels the New Zealand cops are. So be very careful about what you say about the Black Saturday bushfires being a hit, as you may get extradited to Australia to never face charges."

12. Politically Correct Bullshit prevents useful fire breaks – Greens are Watermelons

"Kiwi bloke Liam Sheahan broke the council rules in Reedy Creek, Victoria and cleared a fire-break around his house in 2002, including tall gum trees that cast a shadow on his house and scrub. He removed all the fire fuel 100 metres from his house.

"Mitchell Shire Council rules limit clearing trees and scrub to 6 metres from the house, but Liam Sheahan and his family bulldozed 247 trees to make a 100 metre fire break around their hilltop home (still leaving several thousand trees on their property). According to an expert in court, this reduced the fire risk to their home from 'extreme' to 'moderate' and left the family able to defend it. Liam, son Rowan and daughter Kirsten then trained in firefighting and became experienced CFA members.

"The Mitchell Shire Council took the Sheahans to court for two years (2002–04), labelled them 'environmental vandals', convicted them with $50,000 in fines, and left them with another $50,000 in court costs.

> "Laim Shahan: '[On Black Saturday] our house was lit up eight times by the fire as the front passed. The elements of our TV antenna melted off. We lost a Land Rover, two Subarus, a truck and trailer and two sheds. At least seven houses and several sheds on neighbouring properties were destroyed. We have proof as the only house standing in a two kilometre area. The Royal Commission on the fires must result in changes to planning laws to allow land owners to clear trees and vegetation that pose a fire risk. Both the major parties are pandering to the Greens for preferences causing the problem. Common sense isn't that common these days. I'd like the convictions overturned and fines repaid.'
>
> The public are now angry at the government policies which ensure each house is an extreme fire risk, even preventing the cutting of scrub."[33]

So the source of the problem – 'no fire fuel clearance further than 6 metres from the house' – is the Greens, who are watermelons, influencing policy of both political parties as they vie for their votes . . . by 'Watermelon', I mean 'Green on the outside, Red on the inside' – skinny fascist, wannabe-of-influence, idealists, betta-get-into-local-politics, enviro-communist double-stitch nazis.

---

[32] The above report was initally supplied on the request of Army Intelligence. I just piggy-backed. *BBC News*, 'Nuclear link' to terror suspects', 14 November 2005: "The Lucas Heights site is Australia's only nuclear reactor, 31 km southwest of central Sydney. The HIFAR reactor is used for research and medical purposes, and does not generate electricity. Eight men arrested in Sydney on 8 November 2005 were charged with planning a terrorist act. Three of them had previously been arrested in December 2004. Lucas Heights is an unusual suburb in that it doesn't contain a residential area." Paraphrased for your enjoyment.

[33] 'Fined for illegal clearing, family now feel vindicated', *The Sydney Morning Herald*, Richard Baker and Nick McKenzie, 12 February 2009, paraphrased for your enoyment.

13. Climate Change, the Global Warming Hoax and Queen Victoria's Backlash

It's the same on an international level with the Greens influencing the Climate Change Global Warming hoax – the macro and the micro policies – with the micro policy of no fire fuel clearance beyond 6 metres ensuring the macro policy of 'houses burnt down from Global Warming' appears to be true.

But it isn't . . . there is no global warming . . . the other side of the Antarctic ice is growing.
It just isn't filmed and promoted in the media.

There is HARP, HAARP, weather cannons and weather warfare.

The results so far are both macro-taxes – Kyoto and increased insurance premiums along with Orwellian decreased assurance, effectiveness and trust – and you have to wonder whether the whole thing wasn't arranged and staged, with all the stooges in Government and the CFA (especially Freemason's John Brumby and Russell Rees) applying their ignorance while advertising their funding – to ensure those deaths.

So it looks more and more like homicide, by neglect and foreplanning
– criminal or negligent homicide –
with penalities applied to those who protected themselves.
The Shire Councils have a Common Purpose and this is the opposite of common sense.

So I'll leave you with an Australian blog that sums up the locals appreciation of their Federal, State and Local governance:[34]

> "The Nazis didn't escape to South America. They lodged themselves in Australia's local councils . . . The game's over. No council will prosecute ever again. Even Germaine Greer is calling the authorities arsonists . . .
>
> The bottom line is that with lots of warnings and frantic activity **AFTER** the event the authorities think you might forget they **did f*u*c*k all beforehand** (like hazard reduction, contingency plans or alarm systems) . . .
>
> Because free spirited, larrikin Australians can't have a bowel movement without needing the guidance of big brother, it was decided that for our self interest and safety that we should have three levels of government; **Federal, State and Local.** Whilst *every level is filled with people who would otherwise spend their days licking windows or goose stepping, local council is filled with the detritus that gathers around a ducks bum in a toxic swamp.* Hitler was a jolly Austrian landscape painter with a few foibles compared to these life force sucking trolls . . .
>
> **Quid pro quo is more quid than pro these days** . . . Police exist only on a State and Federal level. Unfortunately, *when the coppers aren't out raising revenue with speed cameras, they're speeding to the local pizza shop for a* [heroin] *pickup with their sirens blaring.* And **don't ring the NSW Police** if you get burgled. They'll yawn, take a statement and **tell you to ring your insurance company.** That's even when the burglar is still in the house. Of course, if you get mugged they'll respond sooner but only after three hours when all the fuss has died down . . .
>
> In the past we would **tar and feather the council members** who are such morons and petty shits. Why can't we do that now? . . .
>
> Peter Mitchell applied for permission a couple of years ago to remove some trees close to his house. Permission denied. On Saturday, his house burned down. Mitchell plans to rebuild, and this time he won't be bothering with any council permission nonsense: 'I'm just going to cut down the trees and push the perimeter back . . . I'm not playing Russian roulette' . . . He will have much local support and the council will risk tarring and feathering if they prosecute him . . .

---

[34] 'Just Cut Them Down', *The Daily Telegraph*, Tim Blair, Blog, Have Your Say, 13 February 2009.

> But in a few years time when everything is green again – including a new, unelected council bureaucracy of 25 year-old arts graduates – **the enviro-nazis** will be back in power . . .
>
> Local councils no longer make decisions in town hall meetings and it matters not who you elect to council. **Local councils now do what the State Departments of Local Government tell them to do . . .**
>
> If they **underestimate the danger again there will be lynchings in Victoria.**"

Donations, Passing the Buck and the Kol Nidre Jewish Occult

Australia's new Prime Minister is just as bad as Australia's old Prime Minister.

Who the blazes is Kevin Rudd?:

"Hell and all its fury has visited the good people of Victoria in the last 24 hours."[35]

"As the Christian tradition testifies, to be consumed by fire
is perhaps the most horrible kind of death humans can imagine."[36]

Many countries, businesses, banks and even sporting events, donated money to the Bushfire Appeal and raised more than $372 million. None came from Israel as it was their:
'1,500-nukes weather-bomb-with-fire-attached'.

Check your history. 'Hell' usually comes from Israel, and before Israel was formed,
it came from manipulating Jews. So now the Jews are doing to Australia
what they did to Israel. The Jews used the 1917 Balfour Agreement to wrestle Israel
from the Muslims who'd controlled it 87 % of the time from 1100 to 1917.

Israel was hardly the Jew's to take. Ditto for Australia.

Like history, Black Saturday was caused by a drought of information. So is its aftermath.
Watch your back Australia. Your PM might be lighting fires.
You are now living in the Climate Change Con – a.k.a. Weather Warfare Reality.

glio - pboglio@yahoo.it - 21 Dec 201

---

[35] 'PM says Victoria bushfire worst not over', *AAP*, 8 Feb. 2009.

[36] 'Why We Weren't Warned, paraphrased.

Pirate Captain Rudd: "The warnings were actually reports of what had happened . . . 173 dead".

Pirate Captain Rudd: Domestically and internationally, Australia's Prime Minister Kevin Rudd champions the British Empire, which has long been a subset of the Rothschild family, and since 1917, a Knight of Israel. The old Australian Labor Party successfully fought for national banking and industrial protectionism against the 'Money Power' of the Crown a.k.a. the Rothschild's Central Bank. Kevin Rudd has betrayed the old Labor Party and is now working for the Central Bank on behalf of the British Monarchy. Kevin Rudd is a British Agent, an Israeli asset, and a Central Bank lackey. Rudd is not a friend of Australia, nor Australians. He is, in all ways, a bought and paid for imposter.[37]

Kevin Rudd (23) –
the most dangerous thing ever to come out of Australia and get back in.

[37] On Her Majesty's Secret Service: Kevin 007?, Robert Barwick, *The New Citizen*, October/November 2009, pp. 3, 23. Main article sourced from here.

As Labor Party leader and Prime Minister, Rudd has backtracked on everything he promised, then: Campaigned for Central Bank control over Australia's financial system, including a privately-controlled Reserve Bank; Spearheaded the bail out of banks, but not individuals; Crusaded for free trade for the British into Australia; Committed Australia to the expensive hoax Iraq War; and, Committed Australia to the "Climate Change" hoax and resulting communist no-progress policies and extra taxes that fund the New World Order Army.

Combined, this is a formula for the financial and physical destruction of Australians. So Kevin Rudd is an agent for British Imperialism. How did he get to be an Australian Prime Minister and an agent for the British? First he had to become a British Agent, receive promotions, prove himself as a hatchet man, be financially rewarded, then promoted through the ranks faster than a white-washed sadist gone tropo. When a young university student shows themself to be bright, ambitious, unscrupulous, duplicitous, and sadistic – they are earmarked. Rudd was noted.

With the rise of Asia, the RIIA issued the policy document: 'Economic Opportunities for Britain and the Commonwealth' (1995) which announced that Australia would be the British financial and corporate "stepping-stone to Asia"; then chronicled the astonishing amount of British investment in Australia, and British investment in Asia with headquarters in Australia. To British Imperialism, Australia is a British strategic outpost in the Pacific.

This paved the way for a Mandarin-speaking Australian Prime Minister, so Rudd was recruited into Australia's foreign policy establishment (a subset of the RIIA) and trained in Mandarin, and to be a mandarin.

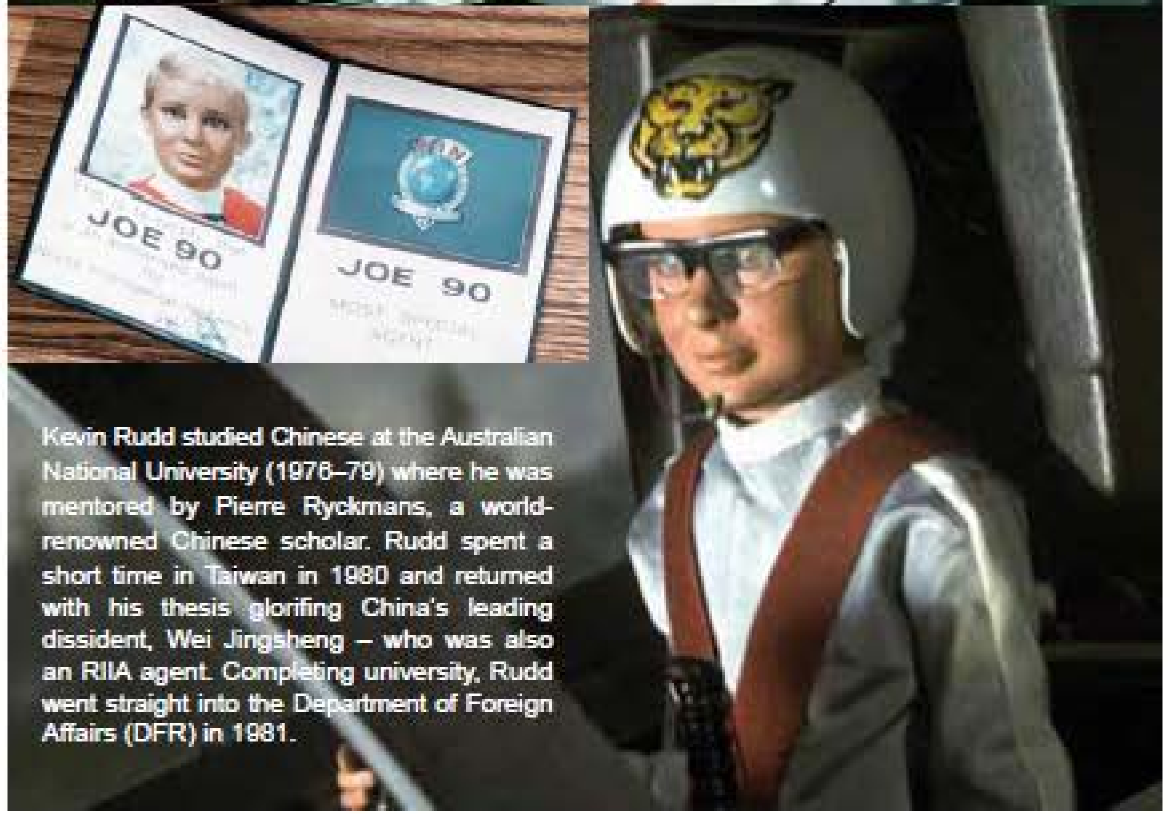

Kevin Rudd studied Chinese at the Australian National University (1976–79) where he was mentored by Pierre Ryckmans, a world-renowned Chinese scholar. Rudd spent a short time in Taiwan in 1980 and returned with his thesis glorifing China's leading dissident, Wei Jingsheng – who was also an RIIA agent. Completing university, Rudd went straight into the Department of Foreign Affairs (DFR) in 1981.

In 1987, the DFR became DFAT (Department of Foreign Affairs and Trade) which is part of one big Intelligence slum and puts a roof over the head of ASIS, whose personell front as DFAT. Since WWII, ASIS has been a subset of the British SIS, who serve MI-6 and the British Monarchy, and the Central Bank, and Israel, and any and all of their agendas.

Rudd served as a diplomat as DFAT/ ASIS in Sweden and China (1981–87).

In February 1999, Rudd's four-day trip to Taipei, Taiwan was paid for by Chang Yu-huei, ex-MP, Minister without portfolio, Secretary-General of a Cabinet that was pro-independence, pro-British, under Taiwan's President Chen Shui-bian (20 May 2000–20 May 2008), whose escalating actions for Taiwanese "independence" came close to provoking a Taiwan-China war. This would have profitted the British arms dealers to such an extent that Britain could have acquired a controlling interest in Taiwan.

Chang Yu-huei resigned from politics in 2001 under a haze of corruption (unauthorised government loans to a construction firm that built his family villa). Then Chang's Taiwan Takechi Sugar Foundation (part of the Taiwan Sugar Company) donated $12,000 to Labor (Queensland, 2004–05); then $1 million to the Mater Mothers' Hospital in Rudd's Queensland electorate in 2005; then Chang was photographed in front of the hospital with Rudd in 2008. So they had at least a 9-year relationship.

The Taiwan Sugar Company was a publicly controlled fund worth tens of millions of dollars, but Chang did an illegal private takeover in 2003 then used the funds for bribes "to bankroll covert diplomatic operations in Australia and the South Pacific"[38] (2003–05). Kevin Rudd was one of the recipients of these bribes. Taiwan's Ministry of Economic Affairs then retrieved the Sugar fund assets in 2005.

Mr Chen's close friend, Kung Chin Yuan (with a house on Brisbane's riverfront) donated $220,000 to the Australian Labor Party and shouted Kevin Rudd to London using the same illegal sugar money.

When the media got hold of this in July 2009, the Taiwanese Embassy stated: Kevin Rudd's trip was "conducive to the enhancement of the in-depth understanding of the importance of the UK-Australia relations". Curious they should mention the UK.

---

[38] 'Accused minister paid for Rudd trip', Richard Baker & Philip Dorling, *Sydney Morning Herald*, 27 July 2009.

Kevin Rudd has refused to answer questions about the Taiwanese crime syndicate that took office 2000–08, and his role with them prior to office (1999), during the illegal private use of publicly controlled funds (2003–05), receiving bribes, free trips (1999, 2004), and donations (2004–05), complete with photographs (2008).[39]

On 11 September 2009, President Chen (and his wife) were convicted on charges of embezzlement, money laundering and receiving bribes of US$15 million. They were fined US$6.13 million, and the former President received a life sentence. The question is: 'Why hasn't Australia jailed Kevin Rudd for complicity to corruption, taking bribes, and even assisting in an attempted revolution and international war?'

Rudd's Taiwan Affair is beginning to stink like a Beer Hall putsch and looks more like Rudd is a British Agent, as was Hitler. What! Are you waiting to see what is going to happen . . . like a fire? It's always happening now, either the event or planning, so there's no time like the present.

British Agents often have mysterious gaps in their curriculum vitae. Opposition Leader Mark Latham, *Latham Diaries*: "He's certainly part of the foreign policy establishment, and yes, there are some missing periods in his CV, plus a general mystery about the guy." Nicholas Stuart, *Kevin Rudd: An Unauthorised Political Biography*: During his time in China, it "appears that Rudd did not hold any position as a spymaster".

In 1988, Kevin Rudd (31) was accepted into the Office of National Assessments (ONA), Australia's primo intelligence agency in London. Rudd had a key position and reported on intelligence and strategic matters directly to Prime Minister Bob Hawke (1983–91), CFR.

So Rudd was Australia's golden boy of intelligence in London, but being London-based, he specialised in unscrupulous, duplicitous, and sadistic behaviour – the worse it is, the more it is filmed by MI-5/ MI-6, the more they have control and the higher the target is promoted. Thus, one can spend two weeks in ONA in London and return to Australia earmarked as the next Prime Minister.

There is no better place to learn double agent tricks than London, and Rudd could have

---

[39] 'Accused minister paid for Rudd trip', paraphrased.

had a career there, and that would have been the last we heard of him, but he was being groomed. After London always comes the hatchet jobs . . . followed by attempts at revolution.

Since there are so many attempts at revolution, at least one succeeds. So far, Rudd has been a revolutionary for the British.

As an extension of the ONA London job, Rudd became Chief of Staff to Queensland Premier Wayne Goss (7 December 1989– 20 February 1996).

Wayne Goss was the first Labor Queensland Premier in 21 years, since before Joh Bjelke-Petersen (1968–87) who helped bring down the Whitlam government (11 November 1975) and was then knighted with a KCMG in 1984 to cover-up his police state dictatorship, random murdering, and hunt-to-kill Black Aboriginals with “one night in jail” sentencing.

So, ONA compromised Kevin Rudd (the golden boy suck-arse spy) then made him the all-powerful mandarin under Queensland Premier Wayne Goss in order to copy the “progressive” destructive work of New Zealand's Labour Minister of Finance Roger Douglas (26 July 1984–14 December 1988).

ASIO controlled Roger Douglas by providing him with underaged boys to root at Leichardts Hotel at 95 Norton in Sydney and bribed him with $20 million. Roger Douglas was an ASIO compromised paedophile who caused the suicides of 169+ farmers in Southland alone, earning him the nickname ‘Dr. Death’. So he was knighted in 1990, which is a British protection racket for murderers, file thieves and paedophiles.

Following ASIO's Roger Douglas lead as Dr. Death, the ONA's Kevin Rudd rammed through National Competition Policy “reforms” (deregulation, privatisation, outsourcing) in Queensland (1989–95) and devastated domestic industries, infrastructure and services. The savagery with which they were rammed through and the effects they had, earnt Kevin Rudd the title “Dr. Death”.

New Zealand had Roger Douglas. Australia had Kevin Rudd.
Germany had Hitler. All three were British Agents.

Kevin Rudd was a regular attender at the Centre for Independent Studies – a front for the notorious Mont Pelerin Society (where he got his agenda), which was a front for British Imperial Economic Warfare.

BACK TO SCHOOL

In London the funds come through the Hill Samuel Bank. In Australia this is the Macquarie Bank. Sir Roger Douglas is still a regular attender at the Macquarie Bank in the Lumley Centre, 88 Shortland Street, Auckland.

Rudd was so successful at the economic destruction of his patch of Australia (Queensland), that it was decided to give him a crack and destroying the entire country.

In 1992, Richard Woolcott (head of spy agency DFAT) annointed Rudd as his likely successor, then recruited Rudd to the neo-conservative Australian American Leadership Dialogue (before it was even formed in 1992). Here, Anglophiles in America meet with Anglophiles in Australia and discuss Anglophilia.

By 1995, it was decided Rudd should enter Federal Parliament (via Griffith), so he was given the hand up with a branch-stacking campaign so extensive, it was a nationwide scandal investigated by Four Corners (ABC). Still, voters went by their gut and it was 1998 before he got in.

When fellow Labor MPs questioned Rudd's credentials (British-backed Taiwan mafia) and his wife's faster-than-ever-before $60 million fortune, they were gagged with exclusion from the media – which we all know is a counter-intelligence exercise run by “the rabid homosexual child sex abuser Rupert Murdoch”[40] (CIA – Counter Intelligence Australia).

So the heavily compromised spy, Kevin Rudd, was fast-tracked through the ranks to become the Leader of the Labor Party (2006), and in his own words: “Her Majesty's loyal Opposition”.

So when the cons of Prime Minister John Winston Howard (Jewish) were being recognised by the public, Queen Elizabeth II required a replacement equally as pliable and servile, one who would cause revolution only where it was profitable for the Queen, so not a revolution of the people, but a revolution of the banks over the people . . . and that's exactly what Australia got on 3 December 2007, followed by economic collapse, and fires which burnt people to death (7 February 2009) and made the survivors reliant on a government that doesn't work.

Instead of the old Labor Party's actions of financial independence, Kevin Rudd bailed out the banks and taxed the citizens, thus underwriting the next 70 years of bank frauds[41] in what history will see as compromised politicians serving an international mafia swoop.

But the double agent British Agent status of Kevin Rudd doesn't end there. His wife also has double agent British Agent status and provides the ongoing funding for the British bribes of Australian MPs.

The Rudd's hand-up has been going on for a long time, at least since Kevin Rudd was outsourcing, deregulating and privatising Queensland (1989–95).

When Labor Prime Minister Paul Keating (1991–96) outsourced job placement for the long-term unemployed in 1993, Therese Rein (Mrs Rudd) won her first government contract. When John Howard abolished the Commonwealth Employment Service (1996–97) Therese Rein established the ‘Job Network’.

With a plethora of Intelligence connections for the British-Australia-Asia boom, on the board of Job Network was Wayne Goss, Premier of Queensland (1989–96, hubby Kevin's boss); Qantas director Mike Codd (ex-head of Commonwealth Public Service); and to keep it all clean, Barrie Adams (ex-regional commissioner of the Australian Securities & Investments Commission).

---

[40] *How to Take Over the World*, October 2007, pp. 175–76.

[41] 70 years is the length of a trust and the world is run on trusts.

Michael Stephenson was the political advisor for Queensland Premier Wayne Goss (Kevin's boss), then switched to advise Britain's Tony Blair. When Blair became Prime Minister (2 May 1997–27 June 2007) Therese Rein's Ingeus Company won similar contracts in Britain. This also resulted in the vast majority of the Australian PM's household incomes coming directly from the British government via Igneus whose heaquarters are in Brisbane, Queensland.

When hubby Kevin Rudd became Australia's Prime Minister on 3 December 2007 (five months after Tony Blair passed his Prime Ministership to the unvoted Gordon Brown on 27 June 2007), Therese Rein sold 'Job Network' in Australia "to avoid a conflict of interest" but retained Ingeus in the UK (with its HQ in Brisbane, and Queensland payments to Aussie MPs).

Through these simple three moves: Paul Keating outsourced job placement in 1993 and Mrs Rudd caught it; John Howard outsourced Commonwealth Employment Service in 1996 and Mrs Rudd caught it; and Tony Blair outsourced employment to Mrs Rudd via her board member's political advisor . . . Mrs Rudd made $60 million+ (1993–2007). That's $4 million a year to be married to the lackey of the DFAT, ASIS, ASIO, ONA, AIIA, Australian American Leadership Dialogue, CFR, Centre for Independent Studies, Mont Pelerin Society, British Imperial Economic Warfare, RIIA, QEII, Rothschild's Central Bank, Hill Samuel Bank, Macquarie Bank, and Ingeus UK in Brisbane to the Aussie MP's household income . . . which all helps secure Kevin Rudd's job while he carries on like a British pirate in a revolution looting Australia's future.

The British subversion of Australia – short history

When railroads moved inland, the British felt a threat to their maritime control of the world. They could no longer canon all the shoreline villages for total control. As populations exploded across the colonies and banking became a national instutition, the Rothschild's Central Bank, as fronted by the British Monarchy, had to come up with new ways of destroying countries before they became powerful enough to be a threat and claim full independence.[42]

The solution came in the form of the Royal Institute of International Affairs (RIIA), the Round Table movement, and its subdivision, the Fabian Society (founded 4 January 1884, George Bernard Shaw, H. G. Wells, Bertrand Russell, Virginia Woolf, Emmeline Pankhurst).

Their solution was to avoid attacking a more powerful enemy directly, especially under one's own flag, but wear the enemy down with cultural and financial subversion, then manipulate two or more enemies to fight ruinous wars against each other (WWI, WWII, America and Korea and Vietnam and Cambodia and Iraq) in order to bankrupt the strongest enemy.

In place of slavery and dictatorship-colonialism, they used indirect rule that looked like self-rule, whereby a local rules, but he is a central agent. First, award them a Rhodes scholarship, then train them at Oxford, Harvard, Yale, Australian National University, or the Melbourne University . . . to think like the British. Then lift them up into counter-intelligence (fronting as Intelligence) and give them a golden handshake every time they prove themselves a traitor. So it's the old piracy rules . . . **and the traitor always gets a front row seat.**

The Round Table then sets up branches in the colonies, backed by Wall Street, the CFR, the City of London and the RIIA, and surrounds their target traitor with other traitors who will make their treasonous thoughts and actions seem normal (support), like the AIIA (Australian Institute of International Affairs) who are the Australian corporate and financial elite . . . and Anglophiles. In this way, British piracy seems like a career option in the former colonies.

Then move the target traitor through the counter-intelligence ranks, compromising them, then paying them huge bonuses, all the while improving their CV.

---

[42] The Central Bank was so successful at this that there was no independence anywhere.

When they are compromised enough, show them how the world works and what they can get away with. Ultimately, when all the Counter-Intelligence has all the necessary positions (DFAT, ASIS etc), false flag operations can be carried out with near impunity (Twin Towers, Black Saturday, etc).

For instance: Australia received nominal independence upon Federation in 1901, but foreign policy was still run directly by the 'British Foreign and Commonwealth Office' in London. The 'Statute of Westminster' Act of British Parliament granted "legislative equality" to Britain's Dominions in 1931, but Australia's parliament was so infused with pro-Monarchist mandarins that they did nothing about it until world war provoked them into clear thinking. After Pearl Harbor on 7 December 1941, Australia broke with Britain and went with America.

The Australian Parliament ratified the Statute of Westminster in 1942, and only then began running its own foreign policy, or thought it did. Australia's foreign policy was run through the Department of Foreign Affairs (DFA) which was subservient to British interests (9 October 1942–24 July 1987) and then became the Department of Foreign Affairs and Trade (DFAT) which was still subservient to British interests.

A branch of DFAT is the Australian Secret Intelligence Service (ASIS), which is part of the British SIS. ASIS is pro-Monarchist and outwardly anti-Labor, but if you keep Labor away from old Labor, ASIS will be your friend, otherwise it will be your enemy and your history will be exposed . . . and if you don't have a compromising history, we will make one for you . . .

"The relationship between ASIS and the SIS is so close that there has never been any need for written agreements or a formal exchange of liaison personnel . . . It is thus not surprising that ASIS officers continue to call the London headquarters of the SIS the 'Head Office' and the Melbourne headquarters of ASIS called itself the 'Main Office'."[43]

Therese Rein, Kevin Rudd, Sarah Brown & Gordon Brown on cankle April Fool's Day 2009, outside 10 Downing Street.

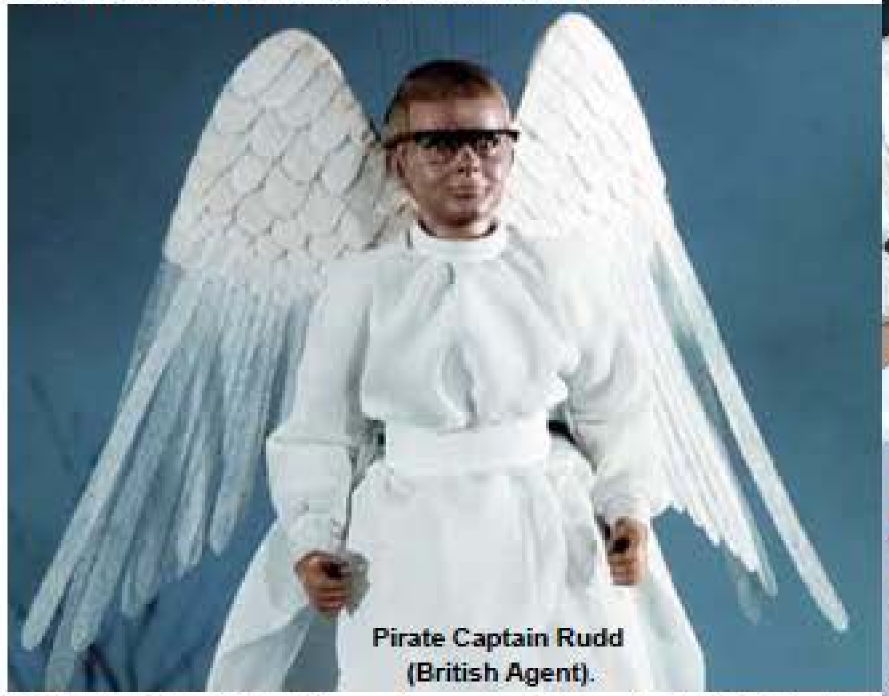

Pirate Captain Rudd (British Agent).

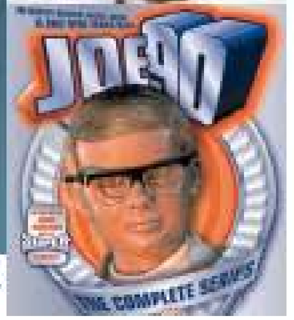

---

[43] *The Ties That Bind: Intelligence Cooperation Between the UKUSA Countries*, Des Ball and Jeffrey Richelson, Allen and Unwin, 1985.

Pru Gee and Mike Lewis Goold

Judge Winkelmann & Environmental lawyer Ronald A. Walden wink

I was in the High Court on 28 July 2005 appealing Judge Hole's District Court decision where I was trying to get my $4,500.00 architecture fee from Pru Gee.

There is one thing you can guarantee the Courts can't do, and that is settle a debt. The one thing the courts are supposed to do, they are incapable of.

Instead of getting paid $4,500.00 on 16 June 2005, District Court Judge Hole ruled that I owed my client, Pru Gee, $4,800.00 – $800 in costs on the basis that this hearing was not about hearing the appeal as planned, but about 'the costs of the unheard appeal', plus a further $4,000 for the defence of this appeal, that was also not heard, as "even the Prime Minister seems to be caught up in these allegations" . . . It was a political decision.

In short, after the failed murder attempt by the Mossad on 14–22 May 2004, I was employed by Helen Clark's school buddy, Prudence Gee, within ten days, along with her homeless alcoholic partner, Gordon Sale – a car salesman who was not allowed to sell cars on Broadway's Great South Road. He had to work out the back and be seen not to be seen.

Their architecture job at Onetangi on Waiheke Island was difficult. It was a triangulated steep site, terraced with lots of retaining walls. They kept changing and extending the brief, and refused to employ an engineer and surveyor as I had requested, so I did as much as I could, presented the Preliminary Design, and on Margaret Wilson's advice (Speaker of the House with a law degree), Pru Gee took this Preliminary Design and presented it to the Waiheke Island Council for Building Consent. They refused to grant Building Consent and Pru Gee used this as an excuse not to pay, not employ an engineer or surveyor, and generally sabotage my time, as she had been instructed to do by her school bluddy, Prime Minister Helen Clark. They both went to EGGS the same year (Epsom Girls Grammar School) and both are swingers.

The drawings were never meant to be presented for Building Consent, and, as no judge can understand architecture, they can't believe that there is a process to design. Judges just think that every piece of paper presented is an attempt at fulfilment of that contract.

I had been employed at the same time by two others who also did not pay. These were Steve Whalley of Waiheke Island, now Stephen John Brandon of Wanganui, and Peter Alderidge Williams QC of Ponsonby, Auckland, whom most know as Peter Williams – one of the most prominent lawyers in the country, but widely touted as spending too much time with his criminal clients.

All three employed me within ten days of the failed Mossad murder attempt.

I went to the Disputes Tribunal to get money out of all of these clients and each time it was transferred to the District Court and each time it was heard by Judge Johnny D. Hole, upon his request. I later published Judge Hole as having syphilis (May 2007), but I was being nice to him.

Judge Hole may have syphilis. Indeed, it is clear, substantive and the truth that Judge Hole has syphilis, but Hole was more about promotion to the High Court by covering up the Chief Justice Sian Elias' murder attempt on myself and the murders of another six weeks earlier – Michael King.

Judge Hole was then promoted to the High Court for the last ten weeks of his carreer, from 30 June to 9 September 2008. This is very, very rare, and engenders QEII's protection.

Sian Elias is the highest ranking Mossad agent in New Zealand. Along with her husband, Hugh Fletcher, she ran the murder of historian Michael King from the University of Auckland, then had husband and co-murderer Hugh Fletcher made Chancellor of the University of Auckland six months later on 18 October 2004.

Since 2002, the CIA have been touting that the University of Auckland is the most pro-American University outside America.

During the High Court hearing, Pru Gee's lawyer, Ronald A. Walden (a Politically Correct nobody), presented evidence to Judge Helen Diana Winkelmann (a femininst political appointee) that: "Mr Hallett has accussed the Prime Minister [Clark] of being a lesbian".

The politically appointed feminist judge agreed with the Politically Correct suckarse lawyer and this stayed the case until the Politically Correct Helen Clark was thrown out of office, which took another three years and four months (8 November 2008) by which time she had installed New Zealand's faux climate change policy, based on the Kyoto brainless disease.

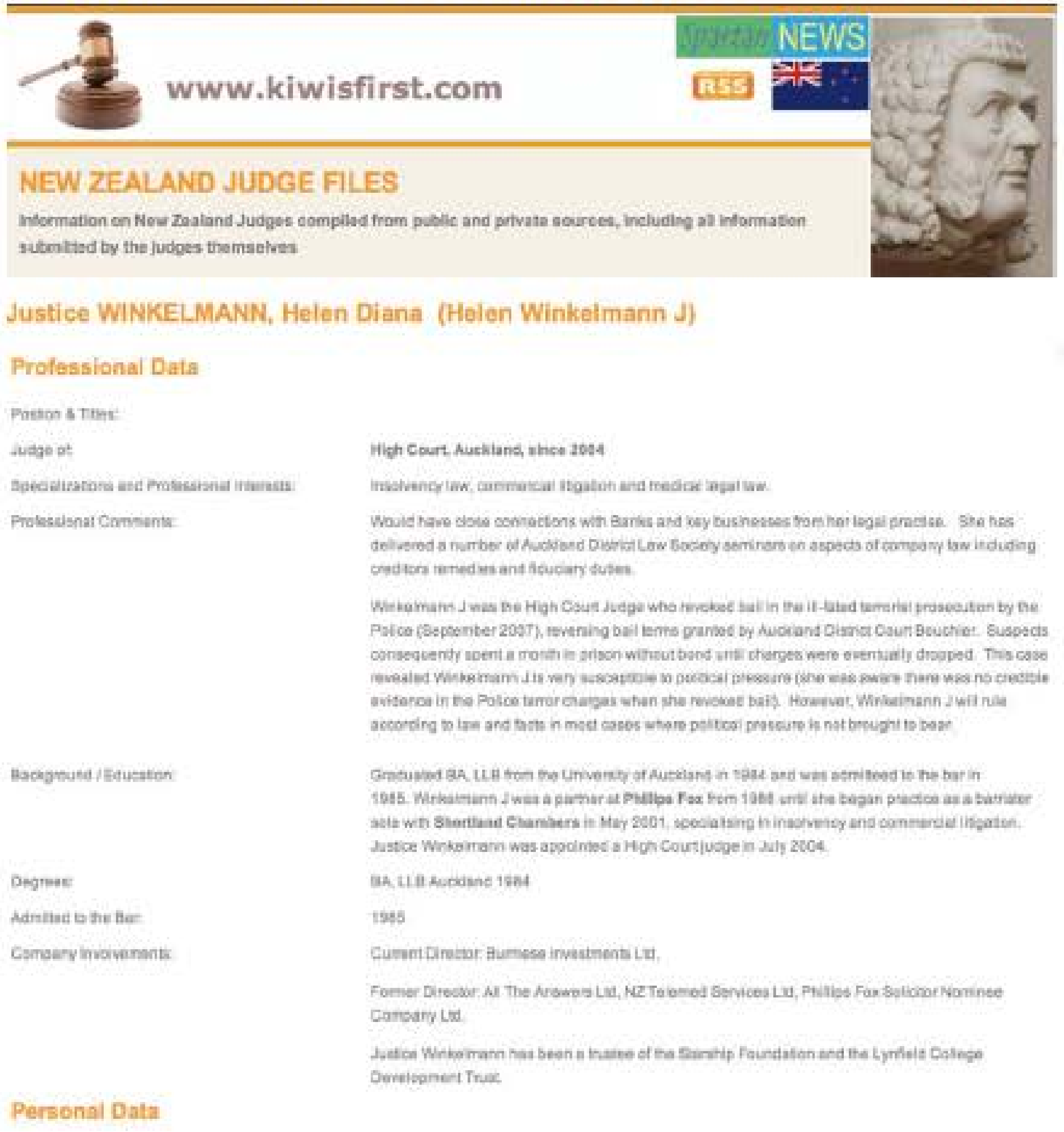

NEW ZEALAND JUDGE FILES

Information on New Zealand Judges compiled from public and private sources, including all information submitted by the judges themselves

Justice WINKELMANN, Helen Diana (Helen Winkelmann J)

Professional Data

Position & Titles:	
Judge of:	**High Court, Auckland, since 2004**
Specializations and Professional Interests:	Insolvency law, commercial litigation and medical legal law.
Professional Comments:	Would have close connections with Banks and key businesses from her legal practise. She has delivered a number of Auckland District Law Society seminars on aspects of company law including creditors remedies and fiduciary duties. Winkelmann J was the High Court Judge who revoked bail in the ill-fated terrorist prosecution by the Police (September 2007), reversing bail terms granted by Auckland District Court Bouchier. Suspects consequently spent a month in prison without bond until charges were eventually dropped. This case revealed Winkelmann J is very susceptible to political pressure (she was aware there was no credible evidence in the Police terror charges when she revoked bail). However, Winkelmann J will rule according to law and facts in most cases where political pressure is not brought to bear.
Background / Education:	Graduated BA, LLB from the University of Auckland in 1984 and was admitted to the bar in 1985. Winkelmann J was a partner at **Phillips Fox** from 1988 until she began practice as a barrister sole with **Shortland Chambers** in May 2001, specialising in insolvency and commercial litigation. Justice Winkelmann was appointed a High Court judge in July 2004.
Degrees:	BA, LLB Auckland 1984
Admitted to the Bar:	1985
Company Involvements:	Current Director: Burmese Investments Ltd. Former Director: All The Answers Ltd, NZ Telemed Services Ltd, Phillips Fox Solicitor Nominee Company Ltd. Justice Winkelmann has been a trustee of the Starship Foundation and the Lynfield College Development Trust.

Personal Data

So, in order to badger me further – it's actually called 'Blacklisting', 'Hobbling', or 'Boiler-plating' – after I lost in this case (I hadn't won a case since January 1994) – I left the High Court, jumped into my Hilux 4WD and drove towards Mt Eden for a spot of lunch at Sierra at 418 Mt Eden Road with its private sunny courtyard, and not too many birds crapping on your food.

A car tailed me from the High Court and branched off after the top of Symonds Street. As I was coming over the crest into the Mt Eden shops (another 2 km), I noticed a black Mercedes travelling very fast (70–90 km/h). I pulled in alongside the ASB cash flow machine where there's a driveway in front, so it was easy parking, and right by the Sierra café.

The 1998 black Mercedes coup Registration Number CAW834 pulled up so it's boot was level with my driver's door and parked in the middle of the road blocking all traffic. It was 10.32 am on Thursday 28 July 2005 and really very, very, bizarre behaviour, especially for such a nice Merc.

A grey haired well-built fit man all dressed in black with dark sunglasses and metal frames, about 58 (Mike Lewis Goold), got out of his car, stood by his driver's door and yelled at me: "I fucked your wife!"

I looked around to see if he was badgering someone else, couldn't see anyone, so I locked my doors, wound up my windows, 'cause he was really agressive like he was on methamphetamine ("P"), then I wound down the driver's window a little so I could speak: "I don't have a wife".

Mike Lewis Goold replied: "I fucked your wife mate."

I shrugged my shoulders and said: "I don't know who you are".

This went on for a minute or so, then he made movements towards the back of his car level with my driver's door. I kept shrugging my shoulders with my arms bent, palms up, then he changed his mind ever so quick, jumped back in his rather expensive Mercedes and roared off doing around 70 km/hr through the red light 100 metres down the Mt Eden Road.

I got out of my Hilux, walked around and spoke to people watching and got some witness details. More came forward, including the shopkeeper from the very good Mt Eden Wines.

I gave these details to the police, they got their statements, and Michael Lewis Goold was convicted, without presenting any defence. The whole scenario was incredibly weird – so weird it had to be planed.

Mt Eden had no police, so I went to the closest police station, Balmoral, but they had few staff and said it would take a month or two to do anything. They suggested $150 fine for blocking the road and he would probably get off with an apology.

Not good enough!

Balmoral's Constable Tammy Dunlop (Ph 631-1001) then contacted me and said that someone would be in touch. So on 17 August 2005 I went to the Post Office, paid $2.25 and searched for the owner of the 1998 black Mercedes coup Reg. No. CAW834. It's an immediate response and I now knew the name of the owner – Michael Lewis Goold.

Two weeks later, at 12.45 pm on 30 August 2005, Constable Graeme Bruges phoned for ten minutes from the Mt Roskill Community Policing Centre (1213 Dominion Road) and took a report on Mike Lewis Goold.

Constable Graeme Bruges was very helpful and said he thought he knew where Goold lived. He then phoned me back and asked me to come in an give a statement at 2.45 pm. This took about an hour and a half.

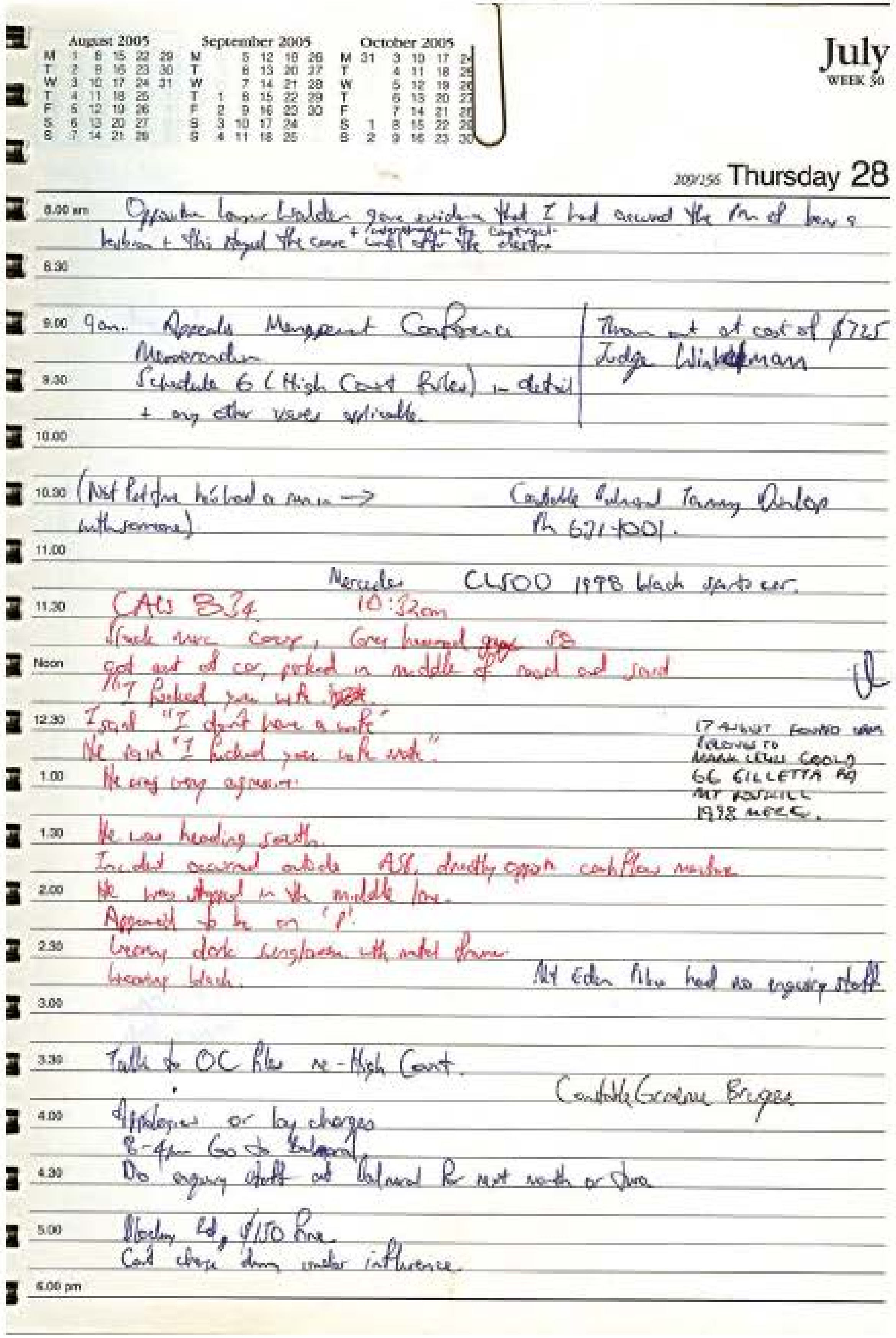

	August 2005						September 2005						October 2005					
M	1	8	15	22	29	M		5	12	19	26	M	31	3	10	17	24
T	2	9	16	23	30	T		6	13	20	27	T		4	11	18	25
W	3	10	17	24	31	W		7	14	21	28	W		5	12	19	26
T	4	11	18	25		T	1	8	15	22	29	T		6	13	20	27
F	5	12	19	26		F	2	9	16	23	30	F		7	14	21	28
S	6	13	20	27		S	3	10	17	24		S	1	8	15	22	29
S	7	14	21	28		S	4	11	18	25		S	2	9	16	23	30

July
WEEK 30

209/156 **Thursday 28**

8.00 am Opposition lawyer Walden gave evidence that I had accused the [illegible] of [illegible] + this stopped the case + [illegible] the contract until after the election

8.30

9.00 9am.. Appeals Management Conference
Memorandum
9.30 Schedule 6 (High Court Rules) in detail
+ any other rules applicable.

Thrown out at cost of $725
Judge Winkelmann

10.00

10.30 (Not Police he's had a run →
with someone)

Constable Richard Tammy Dunlop
Ph 621-1001.

11.00

Mercedes CL500 1998 black sports car.

11.30 CAW 834 10:32am
Black [illegible] coupe, Grey haired guy 58
Noon got out of car, parked in middle of road and said
"I fucked your wife ~~[illegible]~~
12.30 I said "I don't have a wife"
He said "I fucked your wife mate".
1.00 He was very aggressive.

17 AUGUST FOUND VAN
BELONGS TO
MARK LEWIS GOOLD
66 GILLETTA RD
MT ROSKILL
1998 MERC.

1.30 He was heading south.
Incident occurred outside ASB, directly oppos^n cashflow machine
2.00 He was stopped in the middle lane.
Appeared to be on 'P'.
2.30 Wearing dark sunglasses with metal frame
wearing black.

Mt Eden Police had no enquiry staff

3.00

3.30 Talk to OC Police re-High Court.

Constable Graeme Briggs

4.00 Apologies or lay charges
8-4pm Go to Balmoral.
4.30 Do enquiry staff at Balmoral Police next month or [illegible]

5.00 [illegible] Rd, $150 fine.
Can't charge driving under influence.

6.00 pm

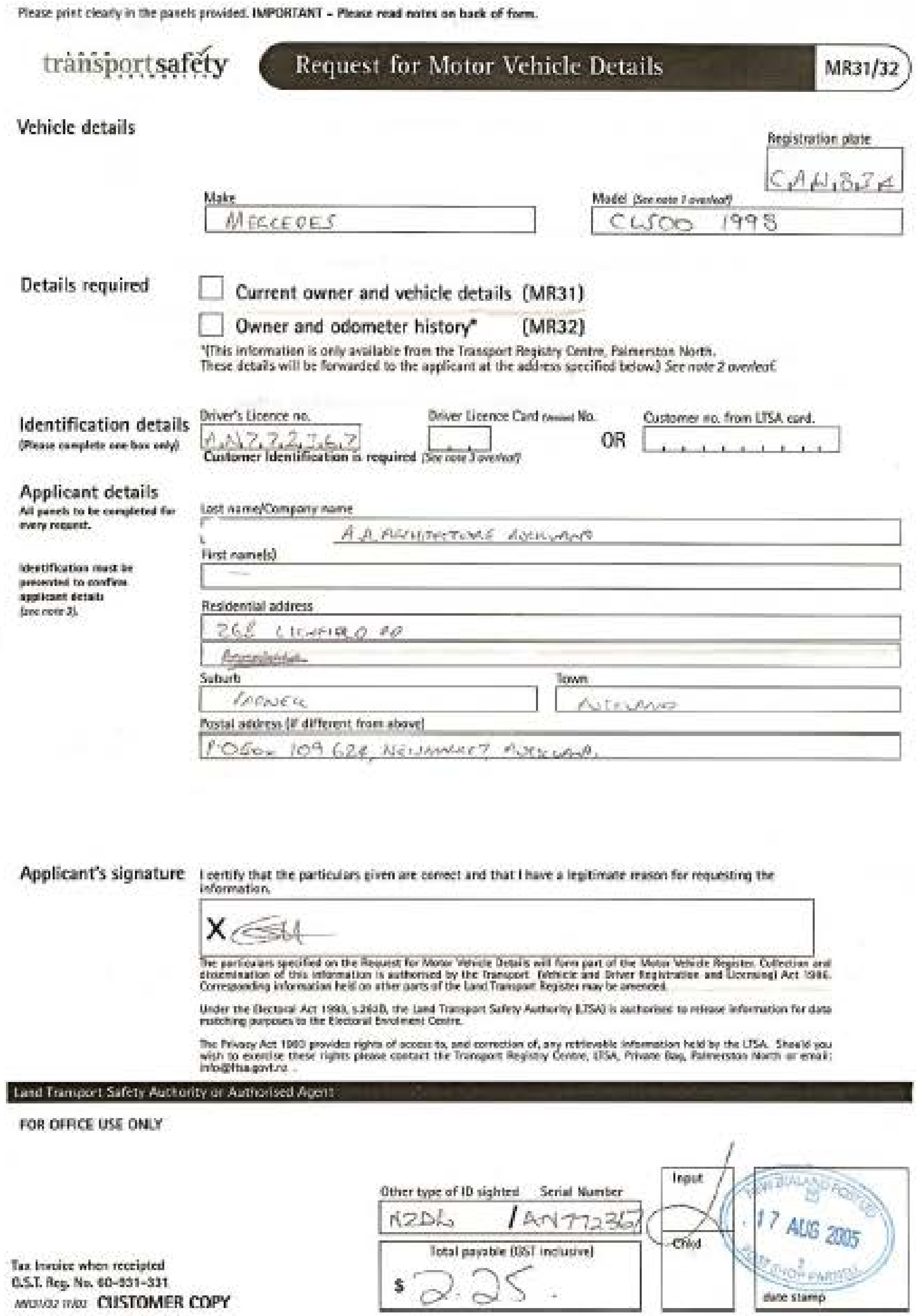

Please print clearly in the panels provided. **IMPORTANT – Please read notes on back of form.**

transportsafety

Request for Motor Vehicle Details MR31/32

Vehicle details

Registration plate: CAW834

Make: MERCEDES

Model (See note 1 overleaf): CL500 1998

Details required

☐ Current owner and vehicle details (MR31)
☐ Owner and odometer history* (MR32)

*(This information is only available from the Transport Registry Centre, Palmerston North. These details will be forwarded to the applicant at the address specified below.) *See note 2 overleaf.*

Identification details
(Please complete one box only)

Driver's Licence no.: AN772367

Driver Licence Card (Version) No.:

OR

Customer no. from LTSA card.:

Customer Identification is required *(See note 3 overleaf)*

Applicant details
All panels to be completed for every request.

Identification must be presented to confirm applicant details (see note 3).

Last name/Company name: A.A. ARCHITECTURE AUCKLAND

First name(s): —

Residential address: 268 LICHFIELD RD

Suburb: PARNELL

Town: AUCKLAND

Postal address (if different from above): P.O.Box 109 628, NEWMARKET, AUCKLAND.

Applicant's signature I certify that the particulars given are correct and that I have a legitimate reason for requesting the information.

X

The particulars specified on the Request for Motor Vehicle Details will form part of the Motor Vehicle Register. Collection and dissemination of this information is authorised by the Transport (Vehicle and Driver Registration and Licensing) Act 1986. Corresponding information held on other parts of the Land Transport Register may be amended.

Under the Electoral Act 1993, s.263B, the Land Transport Safety Authority (LTSA) is authorised to release information for data matching purposes to the Electoral Enrolment Centre.

The Privacy Act 1993 provides rights of access to, and correction of, any retrievable information held by the LTSA. Should you wish to exercise these rights please contact the Transport Registry Centre, LTSA, Private Bag, Palmerston North or email: info@ltsa.govt.nz .

Land Transport Safety Authority or Authorised Agent

FOR OFFICE USE ONLY

Other type of ID sighted: NZDL
Serial Number: AN772367

Total payable (GST inclusive): $ 2.25

Input
Chkd

17 AUG 2005

date stamp

Tax Invoice when receipted
G.S.T. Reg. No. 60-031-331
MR31/32 11/03 CUSTOMER COPY

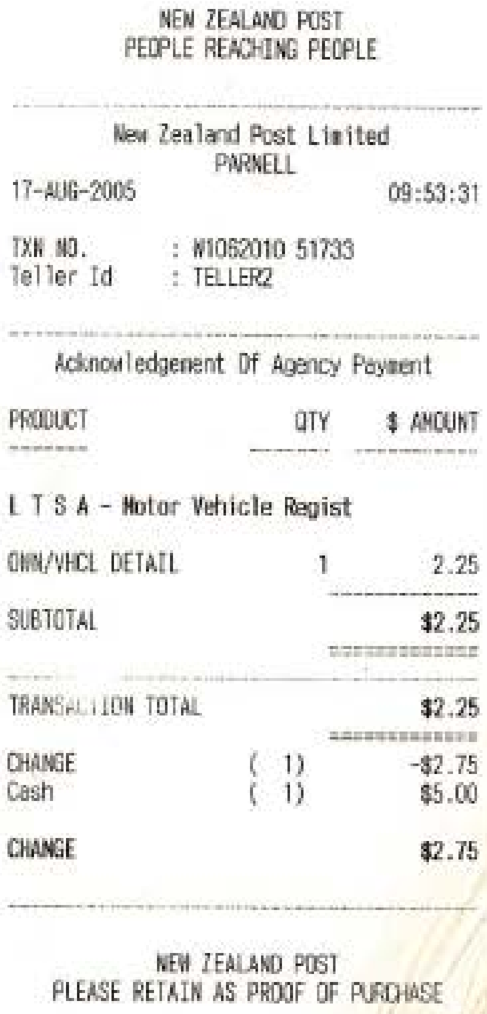

NEW ZEALAND POST
PEOPLE REACHING PEOPLE

New Zealand Post Limited
PARNELL
17-AUG-2005 09:53:31

TXN NO. : W1062010 51733
Teller Id : TELLER2

Acknowledgement Of Agency Payment

PRODUCT	QTY	$ AMOUNT
L T S A - Motor Vehicle Regist		
OWN/VHCL DETAIL	1	2.25
SUBTOTAL		$2.25
TRANSACTION TOTAL		$2.25
CHANGE	(1)	-$2.75
Cash	(1)	$5.00
CHANGE		$2.75

NEW ZEALAND POST
PLEASE RETAIN AS PROOF OF PURCHASE

Someone else at the station informed me that Mike Lewis Goold was renting his place at 66 Gilletta Road, Mt Roskill, was a brothel keeper, was known to the police for his flash anger, and was a probable P user.

Graeme and I got to chatting about 'Protection Orders' and I gifted the Community Policing Centre a copy of my 2002 book, *Are You My Father, The Family Court and Other Experiments*.

Constable Graeme Bruges suggested that the case wouldn't be heard for about six to 18 months and I wouldn't be required to testify as there were other witness statements that verfied my claims.

Sure enough, the case was heard in my absence on 16 January 2006 (only after 4–6 months) and I was notified the following day at 1.55 pm on 17 January 2006, by Victim Support (Ph 916-9000) who said: "Michael Lewis Goold was convicted yesterday (16 January 2006) of assault. Goold was fined $400 and $130 Court costs. He pleaded guilty. He did not contest. We think he was instructed by Prime Minister Helen Clark."

The whole scenario was too weird. No one would believe it if I hadn't backed it up with case notes.

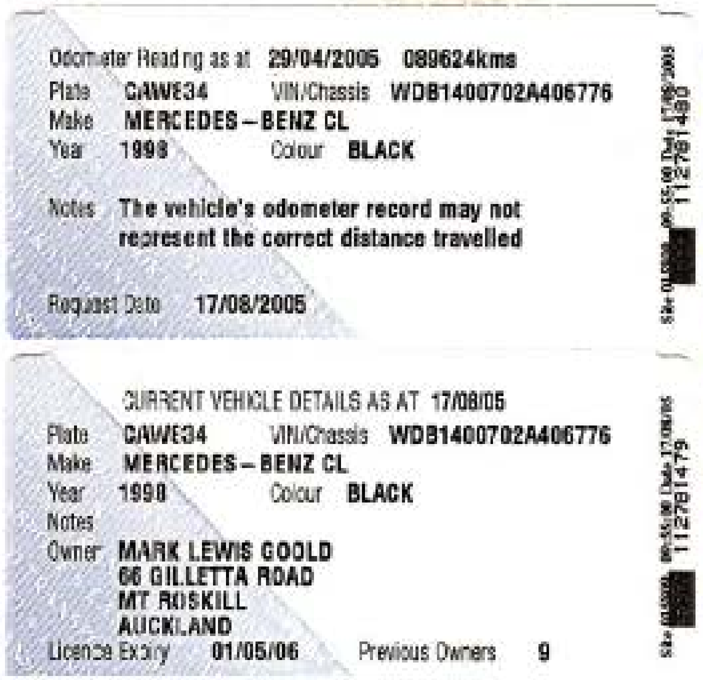

Odometer Reading as at 29/04/2005 089624kms
Plate CAWE34 VIN/Chassis WDB1400702A406776
Make MERCEDES – BENZ CL
Year 1998 Colour BLACK
Notes The vehicle's odometer record may not represent the correct distance travelled
Request Date 17/08/2005

CURRENT VEHICLE DETAILS AS AT 17/08/05
Plate CAWE34 VIN/Chassis WDB1400702A406776
Make MERCEDES – BENZ CL
Year 1998 Colour BLACK
Notes
Owner MARK LEWIS GOOLD
66 GILLETTA ROAD
MT ROSKILL
AUCKLAND
Licence Expiry 01/05/06 Previous Owners 9

After the failed Mossad murder attempt on 14–22 May 2004, as ordered PM Helen Clark and run by Chief Justice Sian Elias, I still haven't been able to collect any fees off any of these three clients, although the work was completed as much as possible in all cases. They are:

Prudence Gee aka Pru Gee;

Steve Whalley aka Steven John Brandon, Stephen Brandon, Stephen John Brandon, Steven Whalley;

Peter Alderidge Williams QC aka Peter Williams Queen's Counsel, aka Peter Williams.

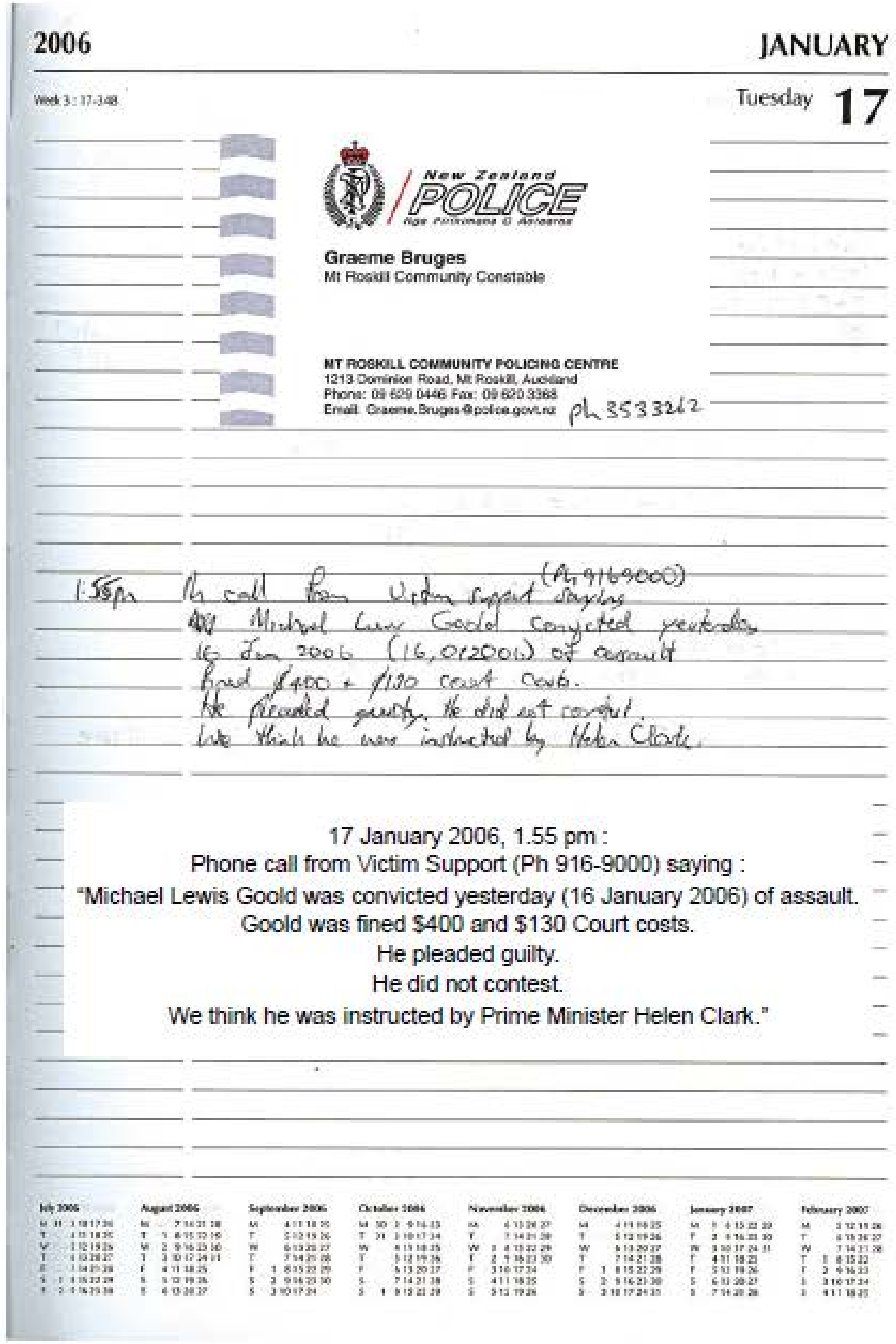

2006 JANUARY
Week 3 : 17-348
Tuesday 17

New Zealand POLICE
Nga Pirihimana O Aotearoa

Graeme Bruges
Mt Roskill Community Constable

MT ROSKILL COMMUNITY POLICING CENTRE
1213 Dominion Road, Mt Roskill, Auckland
Phone: 09 629 0446 Fax: 09 620 3368
Email: Graeme.Bruges@police.govt.nz ph 3533262

1.55pm Ph call from Victim support saying (Ph 9169000)
Michael Lewis Goold convicted yesterday
16 Jan 2006 (16,01,2006) of assault
fined $400 + $130 court costs.
He pleaded guilty, he did not contest.
We think he was instructed by Helen Clark.

17 January 2006, 1.55 pm :
Phone call from Victim Support (Ph 916-9000) saying :
"Michael Lewis Goold was convicted yesterday (16 January 2006) of assault.
Goold was fined $400 and $130 Court costs.
He pleaded guilty.
He did not contest.
We think he was instructed by Prime Minister Helen Clark."

Just an afterword . . .

Pru Gee's lawyer, Ronald A. Walden, is one of those 'Climate Change' fuckwits. He will jump onto any PC bandwagon as long as he thinks he can get some work out of it. It doesn't matter to Walden that the work is counter-productive, or that the planet is cooling down rather than heating up, or that CO_2 causes less than 3.6 percent of "Global Warming", or that the Global Warming hoax was created by DuPont and the CIA, primarily to stop Asians reproducing CFCs as the patent was running out, so they banned their own product and brought in HCFCs, less effective and more expensive to produce, but nonetheless theirs . . . all the time blaming the hole in the Ozone Layer on man-made CFCs when Mt Erebus produces more CFCs that the rest of the world's volcanoes put together, and since the Ozone hole has been getting smaller from 2000, the 'equally corrupt media' have stopped reporting it.

Ronald A. Walden is not a charismatic. He is now the Barrister and Principal of the Gulf Environmental Law Chambers at 73 Onetangi Road, Onetangi, Waiheke Island off Auckland and his 'Statement of Support' reads:

> "Enforcing laws that exist now can help combat the causes and impacts of climate change for the benefit of present and future generations and can hold the perpetrators accountable and liable for the consequences of their actions. Communities, individuals, organisations, scientists and lawyers bringing their energies together internationally and collaboratively will help ensure that the necessary cuts in emissions are made now. We support this effort and hope many will join us. See the list of supporters."

From a worldwide trawl, Ron Walden has one signatory from New Zealand – Duncan Currie of Globelaw. He may need some work.

Ronald A. Walden needs work as well. To help him out phone (09) 372 7486 – day and evening. I'm sure he will take garden produce.

Despite all these good intentions, the Politically Correct Ronald Walden was a knowing and willing accessory to covering up the murder attempt on myself and Pru Gee's involvement in it.

Waldon should be struck off, if only for his absent persona.

From where I stand – and I could have been toes up, six feet under and with or without a tag – all of these people are accessories to attempted murder, and by implication, accessories to the murder of Michael King. The accused are:

Helen Elizabeth Clark (Prime Minister, ex-);

Sian Seerpoohi Elias (Chief Justice);

Prudence Gee (non-paying architecture client);

Gordon Sale (car salesman not allowed to sell cars);

Margaret Anne Wilson (Speaker of the House, lawyer and amputee with a sex habit);

Ronald A. Walden (lawyer for contentious global warming);

Helen Diana Winkelmann (femininst political appointee Judge);

Hugh Fletcher (now Chancellor of the University of Auckland);

Steve/n Whalley a.k.a. **Steven/Stephen John Brandon** (non-paying architecture client);

Peter Alderidge Williams Queen's Counsel (non-paying architecture client).

The Murder of Chris Beeby
and the Shah of Iran

New Zealand Spy History
New Zealanders have played a major role in spy history, although the ultimate outcome of their endeavours is often futile. As a smaller nation, Kiwi's get 'more orders than information', and are often asked to act because of their independence, kind of like the new Spain, our intelligence nickname. This resulted in 'KIWI' standing for 'Keen Interest Without Intelligence', and sure enough it was 'intelligence' that we lacked, gall we had, and 'influence' we were unaware of.

Chris Beeby's family history
Chris Beeby was from quite a famous New Zealand family. His father Bernard Beeby was a spy who liased between the Americans and the British (and was still bonking sheilas in his 80s) so Chris had the pedigree both countries required. Chris was an ambassador and therefore a high-ranking intelligence officer. As a New Zealander and therefore from "New Spain", a reasonably independent country in terms of intelligence, but completely compromised by all sides, he was from a country that the main powers used to hide their disgraced or retired double agents at the end of their service, like in Cambridge 20 km southeast of Hamilton, and in Rangiora 20 km north of Christchurch.

This made New Zealand Intelligence agents party to the truth of history.

Chris Beeby's career history
Chris Beeby had been in the New Zealand fencing team at the 'British Empire and Commonwealth Games' in Cardiff in 1958. His diplomatic career then lasted 32 years from 1963 to 1995 when he retired, but he still carried on doing consultative work that required some secrecy.

He was a ginger, a career setback in all areas except the diplomatic corp. Despite this, he was one of the most distinguished New Zealand diplomats and international lawyers ever. He was part of the Ministry of Foreign Affairs and Trade, and Counsel for New Zealand before the International Court of Justice in the nuclear tests case (1973–74).

> At this point in his career history, the official recorders miss out that Chris Beeby was New Zealand's Diplomat to Iran at the time the Shah of Iran was exiled in 1979.

Chris Beeby rose to Deputy Secretary of the Foreign Ministry, became the permanent representative to the Organisation for Economic Cooperation and Development (OECD) and was made chairman of the special consultative meeting on Antarctic Minerals (1982–88)

He was also the New Zealand agent for the Rainbow Warrior arbitration (1989–90) to which Prime Minister David Lange was party to the bombing. Beeby served with distinction on the World Trade Organisation (WTO) appellate body, was made chairman in 1998, and became a WTO judge. Chris served as a mediator in the US/Canada Pacific Salmon dispute and completed a number of successful postings overseas, the final one being Ambassador to France. He was also and chairman of the Antarctic Treaty negotiations up to late 1999, early 2000.

Chris Beeby retires

Chris retired in 1995 at the age of 59 to New Zealand, coached children in fencing and rowed 500 metres out to his favourite fishing spot near Kapiti Island two or three times a week. He was building a new house for his family at Otaki Forks 60 km north of Wellington and 15 km inland from the coast. He was a fit man who enjoyed life, his family, and the memory of his exploits.

Beeby was a legend who told the most amazing stories to his close friends and put no weight on whether they would be believed or brought him kudos. A few of his stories he only told to other agents and these were the stories that made the headlines, often without a mention of him. The best stories never made it to the media. One such a story was the Shah's escape out of Iran in 1978/79.

MICK P: "Chris was a cold civil servant. He was happiest in his student days in the mid-1960s dressed in a duffle coat with half-a-dozen Waikato XXXX beer under his arm and going to some student chick's flat on the Terrace (Angela Sear's flat at Everton Terrace, Wellington). As a diplomat, once he'd had a few drinks, he saw the funny side again."

Chris Beeby permanently retired

Four months after Helen Clark became Prime Minister (November 1999) Chris Beeby got an unexpected call in early March 2000 to handle some urgent diplomatic stuff – $40,000 for a fortnight's work. It's hard to resist such money, but he was used to it and it didn't make him suspicious. He complied, but it was a dummy role designed to end in his death, and the 'diplomatic mission' would only be complete when Chris was dead. Chris was the only one who didn't know.

Officially Chris Beeby was found dead from a heart attack in a hotel room in Geneva, Switzerland on 19 March 2000, but this was false reporting from intelligence agencies complicit in his death.

Chris Beeby was rowing and fencing and building a house and his heart was in fine condition thank you very much. He was murdered in a hotel room in Paris (most likely the Ritz) that he was booked into on Sunday 19 March 2000. He died from an overdose administered by the Americans whom he had served so long.

Spymaster: "Beeby was invited to Paris by the Americans. It was a standard diplomatic junket and that means accomodation, food and booze is paid for. You even get spending money, and to choose your roots. Everything's laid on and they'll bring you whatever you want to root, but the thing they didn't tell him was that he was going to be first meal on the course."

Chris Beeby was one of the first New Zealand males to be sacrificed to the politically correct and it was a short American lesbian who held up the noose – Madeleine Albright a.k.a. Maria Jana Korbelová, born a Jew in Prague, but raised as a Catholic, as Madeleine Albright.

The reason: "So the American's could get back into bed with Iran and begin a new relationship".

> This is the problem with intelligence. If your not on a main side, you become a middle-man, and the middleman always gets shafted or sacrificed in the end. Many die at the changeover of ideologies.

America was undergoing a changeover of ideology as Bill Clinton didn't wanted to be seen, recorded or remembered as isolationist, or as a rent boy, but wanted to be remembered for open dialogue with trade results attached . . . and Clinton wanted to achieve this before he left the presidency, effective eight months later in November 2000.

Clinton was prepared to have people die in his memory, as long as he was far enough removed to believe it was an accident, despite his orders, and to have it washed out of reality by compliant Intelligence, compromised politicians, and the media.

MICK P:"Name me a politician who wasn't".

Spymaster: "Bill Clinton had the details of these crimes fed to him over the years and this showed up when he was tired. That's the time for looking at people because they're incapable of masking their bodily reactions."

The Shah of Iran, Light of the Aryans

As New Zealand's Diplomat to Iran, Chris Beeby developed a supportive relationship with the Shah of Iran, Muhammad Reza Pahlavi, who was also the Monarch (1941–79), a.k.a. 'King of Kings' (Shahanshah), Light of the Aryans (Aryamehr), and King of Iran.

Muhammad Reza Pahlavi was made the Monarch and Shah of Iran from 16 September 1941 after his father, Riza Shah, was forced to abdicate by the British and Russians during WWII. As the second Shah of Iran, Muhammad Reza Pahlavi supported the British, Russian and American involvement in Iran, and had effectively become their promised agent, and so replaced his father with their assistance. James Bond III: "There is no question the Shah was placed in power by the CIA. There is no question that he was a U.S. and British agent. There is close compatibility between the two."

This second and last Shah of Iran was a keen aviator and Commander-in-Chief of the Persian Air Force, but by 1978 he was in trouble with communist-backed religious separatism, as well as British and American desires to destablise Iran to secure oil reserves for America and hike the price of oil by emersing the country with ongoing civil unrest from religious, ideological and territorial interests, all of them conflicting, none of them able to be resolved, and all of them vying for 'dictatorship-or-bust'.

When the Shah visited the US in November 1977 radical Iranian students who opposed the monarchy staged violent protests outside the White House and by February 1978 an anti-Monarchist, pro-Islamic revolution gripped Iran and the Imperial regime began to shudder and shake. All of this was CIA, CFR and Zbigniew Brzezinski backed.

Things began heating up with increasingly violent protests in Iran from 9–11 September 1978. Meanwhile, with the Shah's portraits everywhere (the Middle East seems to go for it), there was moderation of religion, freedom for women, and modernisation – bascially everything people want once it is taken away. Plus the Shah enforced this with a little Middle East dictatorship (2,000 political prisoners).

The Shah's First Man, Ardeshir Zahedi

Ardeshir Zahedi (16 October 1928–) was appointed Chamberlain to the Shah and Personal Assistant to the Prime Minister (1954–59) then married (1957) the eldest daughter of the Shah and his first wife Princess Fawzia (the sister of Egypt's King Farouk). They divorced in 1968 and Ardeshir Zahedi never remarried.

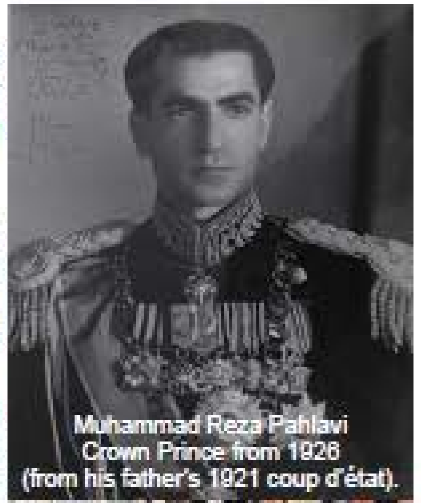

Muhammad Reza Pahlavi
Crown Prince from 1926
(from his father's 1921 coup d'état).

The Shah crowning his wife
Empress Farah, Coronation Day 1967.

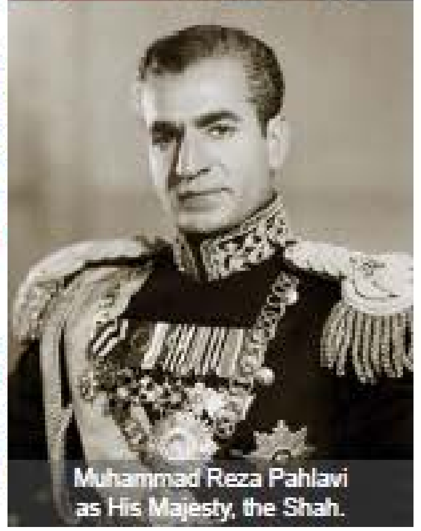

Muhammad Reza Pahlavi
as His Majesty, the Shah.

Zahedi was then appointed Ambassador to the United States in 1959, then Foreign Minister in 1966, then Ambassador to the U.S. again in 1973, while also being accredited Ambassador to Mexico and the Bahamas where they were to spend time in exile. He also headed the Iranian delegation for the Independence Celebration of the Commonwealth of the Bahamas and the Inauguration of the President in Mexico, so he had an in for the Shahs' exile, although neither lasted long.

During the 1970s, Iran was openly acknowledged as oil-rich and of influence – so was Ardeshir Zahedi. He had the confidence of the Presidents' Nixon, Ford and Carter, as well as their administrations, and would invite the presidents home to Iran for casual visits. They complied. He also had strong ties with US Congressmen, journalists, civic officials and university academics and many of these came to Iran for a bit of homestay.

Zahedi, the Shah and Empress Farah, Coronation Day 1967.

By late 1977 Ardeshir Zahedi was one of the most influential ambassadors in Washington and one of the most influenced Ambassadors in Washington. Diplomacy is a two-way street, but it's always dominated by its byline – 'the Sodomy Olympics'.

President Nixon and Ardeshir Zahedi Iran's Minister of Foreign Affairs (1967–72).

The Shah plans to leave in 1978

From 1978, the Shah had plans to leave Iran, and Zahedi left Washington twice in 1978 seeking military support to keep the Shah in power, and to plead with the Shah to remain in Iran. Their last such meeting was on 1 January 1979. None of them were successful.

The backdrop to the 1 January 1979 photo opposite could be anywhere. According to Chris Beeby, the Shah, of which he saw the funny side, was certainly out of Iran and living secretly in exile in 1978.

Spymaster: "Chris should know. He used to brag about how he transported the Shah (King) in a bag for golf clubs, to the airport, on a semi regular basis."

Ardeshir Zahedi was a key player in Iran's foreign policy, headed many Iranian Delegations to the United Nations General Assembly, received the highest national decoration from the Pope, was present at

Kissinger, the Shah, and Zahedi.

the Shah's death in Egypt on 27 July 1980, and now resides in Switzerland. So Ardeshir Zahedi could well have been an ulterior agent. As Iran's unmarried Ambassador in Washington, effectively for two decades (1959–79), he could just as easily have been an American agent. After all diplomacy, both domestic and international, goes both ways.

The Iranian Revolution took hold, and the Shah needed to escape out of Iran to save his life. Being a royal with access to Intelligence he had already done so. This was sometime between 1 September and 31 December 1978.

Kissinger and Ardeshir Zahedi.

Officially "martial law was declared on 8 September 1978; there was a 7.4 Magnitude earthquake on 16 September killing 15,000; the Shah appointed a new military government by radio on 7 November; as mobs screamed 'death to the Shah' he imposed local press censorship; on 13 January 1979, the Ayatollah declared a revolutionary Islamic council to replace what he called the "illegal government" of Iran; Dr Bahktiar persuaded the Shah it was time to leave; their children were flown from Tehran to the U.S. on 15 January 1979; the Shah and his wife officially left Tehran on 16 January 1979 and flew to Aswan in Egypt for 'a vacation' and medical treatment; news of the Shah's departure was greeted with mass celebrations across Iran; Ayatollah Khomeini returned to Iran on 1 February after 14 years' exile, threw out the government on 11 February; had a 'referendum' and declared Iran an Islamic Republic on 1 April 1979. The Shah never returned to Iran and Khomeini guided his country's revolutionary social, legal, and political development for ten years until his death in 1989."[1]

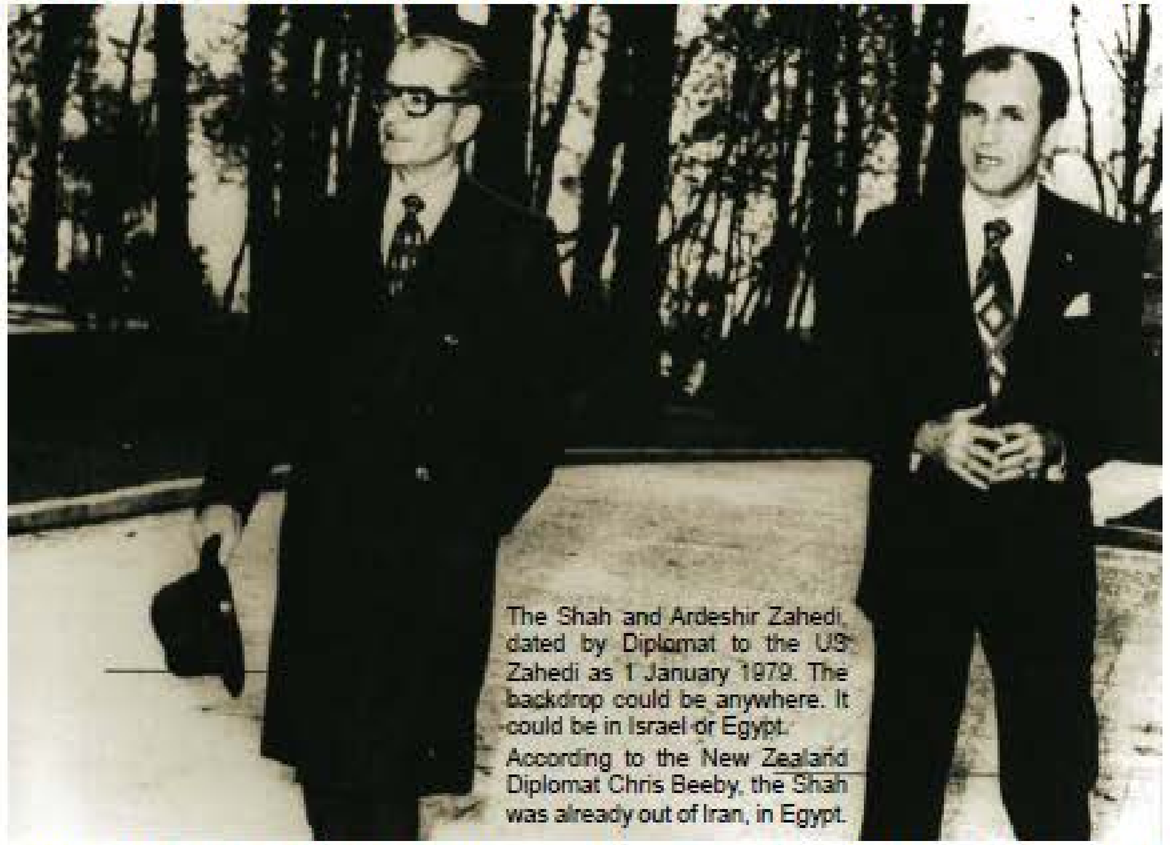
The Shah and Ardeshir Zahedi, dated by Diplomat to the US Zahedi as 1 January 1979. The backdrop could be anywhere. It could be in Israel or Egypt.

According to the New Zealand Diplomat Chris Beeby, the Shah was already out of Iran, in Egypt.

[1] BBC, ON THIS DAY 16 Jan. 1979: 'Shah of Iran flees into exile', paraphrased; Gulf News.com, 7 Nov. 1978.

The Shah leaves and the Ayatollah arrives

Spymaster: "The Ayatollah Khomeini was actually medically sicker than the Shah and it was a race as to who was going to die first with the Americans poisoning the Shah. The Ayatollah Khomeini was also an American agent and the Iranian Army turned around and attacked the Iranian Air Force. The Air Force didn't yet know the Americans were behind their Army, but it was. So it was a big mess."

But on 16 January 1979, it was not the Shah on the plane leaving Tehran for Aswan, but his doppelgänger and a 1977 photo of them was published. The Shah had left four months earlier.

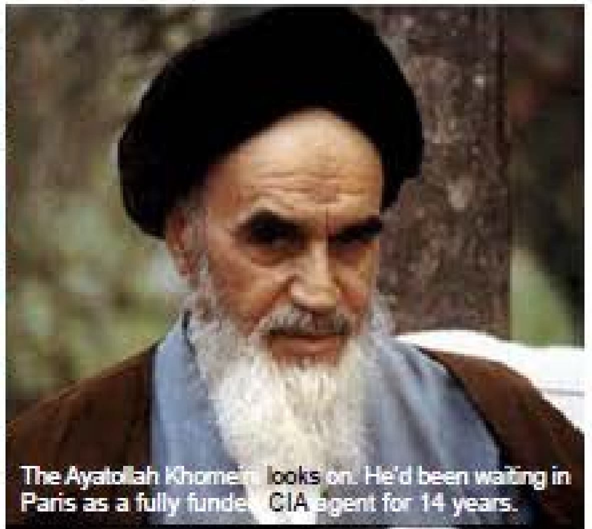

The Ayatollah Khomeini looks on. He'd been waiting in Paris as a fully funded CIA agent for 14 years.

Chris Beeby removes the Shah

The Shah pleaded with his good friend Chris Beeby to take him to safety soon after Martial Law was declared (8 Sept. 1978); 15,000 died from 10MT Soviet nuclear 7.4 Magnitude earthquake (16 Sept.) – historically less than 5.5; a military government was installed and the media was suppressed (7 Nov. 1978).

So on 8/9 November 1978 the New Zealander Chris Beeby rolled the King of Iran up in a Persian carpet, stuffed him in the back of his New Zealand Embassy legation vehicle, complete with diplomatic plates and drove him from Tehran to Egypt, to Cairo, to the American military hospital where he was given treatment for his cancer. The American treatment was something that actually gave him cancer. It was also to cost Chris his life 21 years later, but still it is one of history's great magic carpet stories.

The Shah and his third wife, Farah Diba in 1977. With internal press censored, the international press sent this 1977 photo of the Shah and his wife leaving "on vacation" into exile on 16 January 1979. Meanwhile the CIA had done a soft kidnapping on their children taking them to America.

Spymaster: "'Rolled up in a carpet' is the traditional way people escape out of wog land. The more expensive the carpet, the more protection it offers. Nobody's going to stick bayonets through an expensive carpet. Everybody knows someone's in the carpet, but the backsheesh offered eases the way out. You have a talking shirtfront that goes along with the carpet and he has the bribes for everyone and that part was played by Chris Beeby. Beeby was trained by the NZ Army Z-Force, so he knew how to protect himself and someone else."

Medical Mistreatment

James Bond III: "At the American hospital in Cairo the Shah [King] was given a transfusion for his blood cancer that contained the same poison Jack Ruby died of while awaiting his second trial for the murder of Lee Harvey Oswald – the 'Patsy' accused of killing JFK.

"Mr Pahlavi went to Paris every year to meet with his CIA trainers. The official story was that he flew to Paris every year for a blood transfusion, but as life immitates art, he died from his own cover. This is not uncommon. It was his liver that was attacked using the mold from heated damp peanuts. The cancer was the same type George Pompidou had, Nasser of Egypt had, and Bill Sutch of New Zealand had. They were all got with the same thing that eats the liver. In those days it was derived from peanut mold. It's been synthesized since. Once it's there for 21 days the liver gives in, then its less than 36 hours to death. It's easy to administer, tasteless and odourless.The Shah survived for so long because the dose was weak.

"As a poison, it was first mentioned in a John le Carré novel."

Gamal Abdel Nasser (15 January 1918–28 September 1970) was the second President of Egypt from (1956–70). He died in office from Aflatoxin B_1.

Georges Jean Raymond Pompidou (5 July 1911–2 April 1974) was the longest serving Prime Minister of France (1962–68), then President of the French Republic (1969–74). He died in office from Aflatoxin B_1.

Bill Sutch (27 June 1907–28 September 1975) was a New Zealand economist, public servant, and historian who contributed to New Zealand more than any Prime Minister, so the authorities accused him. "In September 1974, Bill Sutch was charged under the Official Secrets Act 1951 with the offence of obtaining information that would be helpful to an enemy. The act has since been repealed as it was so general, it covered almost any communication and even made Chinese whispers illegal. With no evidence presented and no significant evidence on his security file, he was acquitted in February 1975, then died seven months later in September 1975."[2]

"Sutch was poisoned at the same time he was arrested and when he got off the charge, he died seven months later and this is all very suspicious . . . It was Sir Randal Elliot",[3] the highest ranking army medic in the Southern Hemisphere who injected him with Aflatoxin B_1.

Aflatoxin B_1 – the Poison that killed the Shah, Pompidou, Nasser and Sutch

> "In 1960, over 100,000 young turkeys, pheasants and ducklings died in England in a few months from 'Turkey X disease' which came from Brazilian peanut meal.[4]
>
> "Aflatoxin is a mold that grows as a fungus on peanuts, corn and cottonseed in warm and wet environments. It was identified in 1961 as 'Aspergillus flavis' and is a potent liver carcinogen with acute poisonous effects. Aspergillus flavus does not always indicate harmful levels of aflatoxin, but it does mean the potential is there.
>
> "Aflatoxin causes acute aflatoxicosis and human hepatocellular carcinoma (HCC). It kills at least 250,000 annually in sub-Saharan Africa and China, with more deaths in other African countries, as well as other the Third World Countries like India and Taiwan etc.
>
> "The symptoms are fatty involvement of the liver, kidneys and heart, abdominal pain, vomiting, pulmonary edema, convulsions, coma, cancer of the liver and other organs, cerebral edema (water on the brain), then death.
>
> "At least 13 different types of aflatoxin are produced in nature, with the most toxic and potent carcinogen being Aflatoxin B_1. With intense scientific interest in low-level long-term exposure, a number of epidemiological studies in Africa and Asia show that even dietary aflatoxins cause liver cancer.
>
> "Aflatoxin-related diseases are influenced by age, sex, nutritional status, and concurrent exposure viral hepatitis (HBV) or parasite infestation and the International Agency for Research on Cancer (IARC) named Aflatoxin B_1 as a human carcinogen in 1988."[5]
>
> The cure is common chlorophyll's watersoluble derivative chlorophyllin, which forms molecular complexes around aflatoxin and reduces its availability to the body.
>
> "Chlorophyllin is easily and inexpensively made from crude chlorophyll and has

---

[2] Brian Easton, *Dictionary of New Zealand Biography*, paraphrased.

[3] New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, October 2007, January 2008. No SIS were involved in the arrest of Bill Sutch. Only the police have the power of arrest, so they used the old alcoholic Police Sergeant Wally Hammond who got drunk in the Park Hotel waiting for the whistle to blow, then stumbled over when it did.

[4] www.ehso.com/ehshome/aflatoxin.php, Environment, Health and Safety Online, The site for free, objective information you can use, 'Aflatoxins in Your Food and their Effect on Your Health'; made extensively more readable.

[5] *Ibid.*

> been used for decades without known human toxicity as a food dye, a wound-healing accelerant, and for odor control. The anticancer properties of chlorophyllin have been extensively reported in dozens of studies from cell culture . . . where different chemical carcinogens were used to initiate cancer . . . Chlorophyllin acts primarily as a blocking agent against chemical initiation of carcinogenesis. Simply put, chlorophyllin is most effective when administered along with the carcinogen, thereby blocking cancer-initiating activity. Molecular complexes formed between chlorophyllin and carcinogen molecules are physically too large to be absorbed from the gut. Because fewer carcinogen molecules reach the target organ, less DNA damage occurs, and the chance of tumor development is diminished.
>
> “Consistent with the blocking mechanism, chlorophyllin is generally much less effective if administered after the carcinogen, i.e., once the carcinogen's damage has been done.
>
> “Importantly, protection by chlorophyllin extends beyond a single chemical carcinogen to include aflatoxins from heavy fungal contamination of grain or nuts . . . aflatoxin B_1 exposure is prevalent in Asia and sub-Saharan Africa, where it contributes to astonishingly high rates of liver cancer.
>
> “Significant protection against cancer by chlorophyllin was reported in 2002.[6] A clinical trial of dietary chlorophyllin supplementation in a human population in eastern China with chronic high aflatoxin exposure and a high incidence of liver cancer took 100 mg of dietary chlorophyllin pills three times a day. It led to a 55% reduction in the amount of aflatoxin-DNA and the associated risk of liver cancer.”[7]
>
> It is also a food colouring agent known as E141 or 'natural green 3'.
>
> So simple chlorophyll mixed with water was your cure.
>
> By 1960 scientists were aware of the disease. By 1961, it had been identified as Aspergillus flavis – a potent liver carcinogen. 13 types were then identified with Aflatoxin B_1 being the most potent carcinogen, even with low-level long-term exposure. With variables like age, sex, skinny or fat, and exposure to other diseases like hepatitis or parasites, the symptoms would vary.
>
> The IARC did not list Aflatoxin B_1 as a human carcinogen until 1988.[8] This made it available as a homebake killing machine (peanuts in water in the hotwater cupboard) for 28 years, as long as the doctors did not treat it with a simple mixture of chlorophyll and water. The Shah was not treated with simple chlorophyll.

Gamal Abdel Nasser, the second President of Egypt

Spymaster: “Nasser was an agent for the British SIS during WWII, all through the war, and several years after. He was actually associated with the Young Turk movement in the Egyptian Army and couldn't believe it when the British turned on him in the 1950s; and couldn't believe it again when the Americans turned on him just before the 1967 Six Day War. President of Egypt Nasser: 'Why did you do this to me when the Israelis were shooting up your spy ship as it sits in International Waters, on the edge of Israeli waters? Americans were killed!' This was the first time that Israel owned the United States.

“They were also rooting J. Edgar Hoover on a weekly basis. They called him 'Mary' and his favourite dress was a black chiffon number.

---

[6] *LPI Research Newsletter*, 'Chlorophylls and Cancer Prevention: Passing the First Hurdle', Dr. George S. Bailey, Fall/Winter 2002.

[7] http://lpi.oregonstate.edu/fw06/chlorophylls.html, Linus Pauling Institute, Micronutrient Research for Optimum Health, LPI Research Newsletter, Fall 2006, 'Cancer Prevention by Chlorophylls', Michael T. Simonich, Ph.D., LPI Research Associate; slightly paraphrased.

[8] Environment, Health and Safety Online, The site for free, objective information you can use.

“The Americans took Gamal Nasser over in the late 40s early 50s, then the Israelis paid him a few key subsidies to get a few specific things done. Nasser complied and this actually impeded the defence of Egypt. One subsidy involved the Lavon Affair in 1954[9], and the next one happened at the time of the Czechoslovakian Purchase when the Israelis started dealing on the open market for children. They were supposedly selling orphaned children, but they were taken off Arabs brought into Israel on the basis these immigrating Arabic children had communicable diseases. The parents were then told the children had died.

“This was the Israelis attempt to get around the Czechoslovakian Purchase. Israel declared that it was an absolute financial necessity that they acquire American dollars on an urgent basis from absolutely anywhere. No crime was too big or too nasty. That was the first instance that Israeli criminals were told that they could go out and practise their trade on Western Christians . . . I know it's a little off topic, but it is valuable background to that area and those times.”

The Shah and wife in 1977 looking very F.A.B.
a.k.a. “The Thunderbirds are Go”.

The Cancer Secret

“The Shah kept his cancer secret even from his twin sister, Princess Ashraf, who said that she did not know of her brother's cancer until he had arrived in New York.”[10] This was on 22 October 1979, nine months before he died. “. . . the Shah misled them by withholding the fact that he had cancer”. Why, because the Shah didn't know he had cancer until the Americans gave it to him in the Military hospital in Cairo. This led to “An ethical clash where Eamon Brennan resigned as vice president for public affairs of New York Hospital-Cornell Medical Center. He believed the public had a right to know the entire medical story to justify the Shah's admission to the United States . . . the hospital should have persuaded the Shah and the State Department to allow thorough medical briefings . . .

“A year earlier, “In 1978, when the Shah's 87-year-old mother fell ill . . . She was found to have the same type of cancer that he had . . .

---

[9] The Lavon Affair refers to Operation Susannah where Mossad (Israeli military intelligence) planted bombs in Egypt under British, American and Egyptian-owned targets during the summer of 1954. Israel's goal was that “the Muslim Brotherhood, the Communists, 'unspecified malcontents' or 'local nationalists'” would be blamed. This 'Unfortunate Affair' was named after the Israeli Defense Minister Pinhas Lavon, who was then forced to resign. Israeli President Moshe Katzav admitted responsibility in 2005 by acknowledging their agents 51 years later.

[10] 'The Shah's Health: A Political Gamble', *New York Times* magazine, 17 May 1981, section 6, p 48, New York edition.

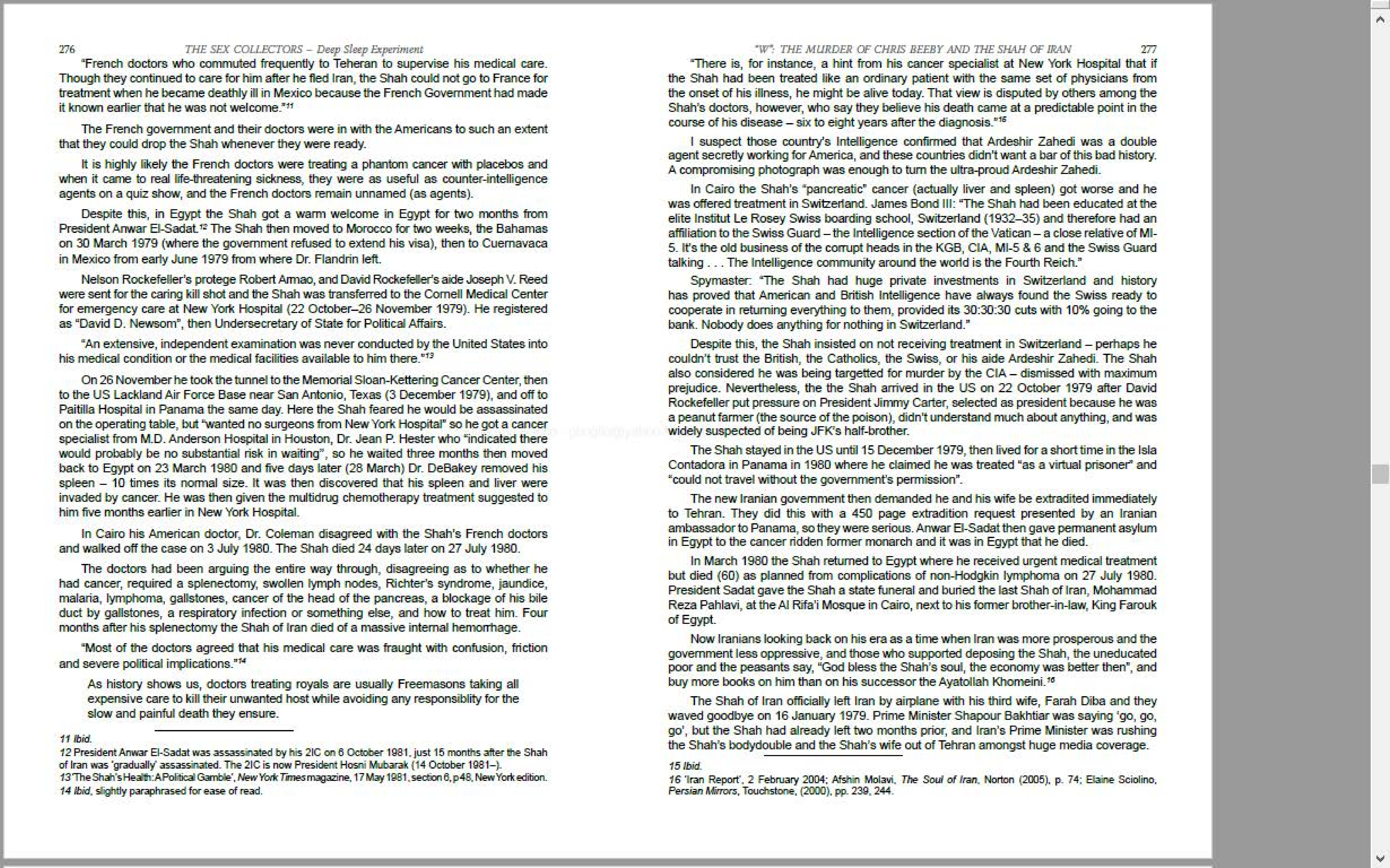

"French doctors who commuted frequently to Teheran to supervise his medical care. Though they continued to care for him after he fled Iran, the Shah could not go to France for treatment when he became deathly ill in Mexico because the French Government had made it known earlier that he was not welcome."[11]

The French government and their doctors were in with the Americans to such an extent that they could drop the Shah whenever they were ready.

It is highly likely the French doctors were treating a phantom cancer with placebos and when it came to real life-threatening sickness, they were as useful as counter-intelligence agents on a quiz show, and the French doctors remain unnamed (as agents).

Despite this, in Egypt the Shah got a warm welcome in Egypt for two months from President Anwar El-Sadat.[12] The Shah then moved to Morocco for two weeks, the Bahamas on 30 March 1979 (where the government refused to extend his visa), then to Cuernavaca in Mexico from early June 1979 from where Dr. Flandrin left.

Nelson Rockefeller's protege Robert Armao, and David Rockefeller's aide Joseph V. Reed were sent for the caring kill shot and the Shah was transferred to the Cornell Medical Center for emergency care at New York Hospital (22 October–26 November 1979). He registered as "David D. Newsom", then Undersecretary of State for Political Affairs.

"An extensive, independent examination was never conducted by the United States into his medical condition or the medical facilities available to him there."[13]

On 26 November he took the tunnel to the Memorial Sloan-Kettering Cancer Center, then to the US Lackland Air Force Base near San Antonio, Texas (3 December 1979), and off to Paitilla Hospital in Panama the same day. Here the Shah feared he would be assassinated on the operating table, but "wanted no surgeons from New York Hospital" so he got a cancer specialist from M.D. Anderson Hospital in Houston, Dr. Jean P. Hester who "indicated there would probably be no substantial risk in waiting", so he waited three months then moved back to Egypt on 23 March 1980 and five days later (28 March) Dr. DeBakey removed his spleen – 10 times its normal size. It was then discovered that his spleen and liver were invaded by cancer. He was then given the multidrug chemotherapy treatment suggested to him five months earlier in New York Hospital.

In Cairo his American doctor, Dr. Coleman disagreed with the Shah's French doctors and walked off the case on 3 July 1980. The Shah died 24 days later on 27 July 1980.

The doctors had been arguing the entire way through, disagreeing as to whether he had cancer, required a splenectomy, swollen lymph nodes, Richter's syndrome, jaundice, malaria, lymphoma, gallstones, cancer of the head of the pancreas, a blockage of his bile duct by gallstones, a respiratory infection or something else, and how to treat him. Four months after his splenectomy the Shah of Iran died of a massive internal hemorrhage.

"Most of the doctors agreed that his medical care was fraught with confusion, friction and severe political implications."[14]

> As history shows us, doctors treating royals are usually Freemasons taking all expensive care to kill their unwanted host while avoiding any responsiblity for the slow and painful death they ensure.

---

[11] *Ibid.*

[12] President Anwar El-Sadat was assassinated by his 2IC on 6 October 1981, just 15 months after the Shah of Iran was 'gradually' assassinated. The 2IC is now President Hosni Mubarak (14 October 1981–).

[13] 'The Shah's Health: A Political Gamble', *New York Times* magazine, 17 May 1981, section 6, p48, New York edition.

[14] *Ibid*, slightly paraphrased for ease of read.

"There is, for instance, a hint from his cancer specialist at New York Hospital that if the Shah had been treated like an ordinary patient with the same set of physicians from the onset of his illness, he might be alive today. That view is disputed by others among the Shah's doctors, however, who say they believe his death came at a predictable point in the course of his disease – six to eight years after the diagnosis."[15]

I suspect those country's Intelligence confirmed that Ardeshir Zahedi was a double agent secretly working for America, and these countries didn't want a bar of this bad history. A compromising photograph was enough to turn the ultra-proud Ardeshir Zahedi.

In Cairo the Shah's "pancreatic" cancer (actually liver and spleen) got worse and he was offered treatment in Switzerland. James Bond III: "The Shah had been educated at the elite Institut Le Rosey Swiss boarding school, Switzerland (1932–35) and therefore had an affiliation to the Swiss Guard – the Intelligence section of the Vatican – a close relative of MI-5. It's the old business of the corrupt heads in the KGB, CIA, MI-5 & 6 and the Swiss Guard talking . . . The Intelligence community around the world is the Fourth Reich."

Spymaster: "The Shah had huge private investments in Switzerland and history has proved that American and British Intelligence have always found the Swiss ready to cooperate in returning everything to them, provided its 30:30:30 cuts with 10% going to the bank. Nobody does anything for nothing in Switzerland."

Despite this, the Shah insisted on not receiving treatment in Switzerland – perhaps he couldn't trust the British, the Catholics, the Swiss, or his aide Ardeshir Zahedi. The Shah also considered he was being targetted for murder by the CIA – dismissed with maximum prejudice. Nevertheless, the the Shah arrived in the US on 22 October 1979 after David Rockefeller put pressure on President Jimmy Carter, selected as president because he was a peanut farmer (the source of the poison), didn't understand much about anything, and was widely suspected of being JFK's half-brother.

The Shah stayed in the US until 15 December 1979, then lived for a short time in the Isla Contadora in Panama in 1980 where he claimed he was treated "as a virtual prisoner" and "could not travel without the government's permission".

The new Iranian government then demanded he and his wife be extradited immediately to Tehran. They did this with a 450 page extradition request presented by an Iranian ambassador to Panama, so they were serious. Anwar El-Sadat then gave permanent asylum in Egypt to the cancer ridden former monarch and it was in Egypt that he died.

In March 1980 the Shah returned to Egypt where he received urgent medical treatment but died (60) as planned from complications of non-Hodgkin lymphoma on 27 July 1980. President Sadat gave the Shah a state funeral and buried the last Shah of Iran, Mohammad Reza Pahlavi, at the Al Rifa'i Mosque in Cairo, next to his former brother-in-law, King Farouk of Egypt.

Now Iranians looking back on his era as a time when Iran was more prosperous and the government less oppressive, and those who supported deposing the Shah, the uneducated poor and the peasants say, "God bless the Shah's soul, the economy was better then", and buy more books on him than on his successor the Ayatollah Khomeini.[16]

The Shah of Iran officially left Iran by airplane with his third wife, Farah Diba and they waved goodbye on 16 January 1979. Prime Minister Shapour Bakhtiar was saying 'go, go, go', but the Shah had already left two months prior, and Iran's Prime Minister was rushing the Shah's bodydouble and the Shah's wife out of Tehran amongst huge media coverage.

---

[15] *Ibid.*

[16] 'Iran Report', 2 February 2004; Afshin Molavi, *The Soul of Iran*, Norton (2005), p. 74; Elaine Sciolino, *Persian Mirrors*, Touchstone, (2000), pp. 239, 244.

This huge media coverage was organised by the Americans for their own Counter-Intelligence purposes:

> 'If we can publicly destabalise the world's second biggest oil fields, we can increase the onsale pump price.
>
> 'If we have an excuse for sanctions against Iran, then we can exchange our food and goods for even cheaper oil, and make an even bigger margin.
>
> 'So why don't we create a hostage drama at our American Embassy in Tehran using our paid assets. We can drag this on as long as the media (always short of a story) supports it
>
> 'During this time (4 Nov. 1979–20 Jan. 1981) and taking 52 US diplomats, one for every week of the year, 13 women and Blacks will be released after two weeks to show it's a humanitarian operation and to help other countries and the media buy in, while retaining 2 women and 1 Black for continued media attention for women and the coloured people of the world.
>
> 'It will help the West believe Islam is a nation of oppressed minorities.
>
> 'Then we'll release Richard Queen in July 1980 as soon as he's diagnosed with multiple sclerosis. This should maintain the invalids attention, and no one will be killed, so it's all a PR exercise you see.
>
> 'We can have our agents demand the Shah of Iran's head on a stick, but as the Shah is still our agent, we'll remove him early, so the worst that can happen is his doppelgänger will be publicly humiliated.
>
> 'We'll place the Shah in Egypt, send him around the world on a medical hunting expedition, return him to Egypt, where he will die, then we'll assassinate President Sadat in 1981, blame it on some form of Islamic retribution, place our man in there forever, and use this history to control him . . .
>
> 'and we'll soft kidnap the Shah's children to the U.S. so the Shah won't say anything while he still is alive. That will keep our secrets secret.
>
> 'We'll storm our own embassy in Tehran when the Shah is in America seeking medical treatment which publicly, we won't supply.
>
> 'Then we'll extend the Embassy and hostage seige to 444 days to show all in 'the Golden Dawn know' that it is a 'masterful stablisation' exercise that can be applied anywhere and everywhere, and is a model to be used again, and again, and again. That is, to stablise oil as the economic shock tester and controller of the finance and consumer world . . .
>
> 'And by 11 February 1979 the stabilising Monarchy of 2500 years will be dissolved.
>
> 'So that's what we did. Seems to have worked.'

Add to this the input of oil interests to destabalise all oil bearing nations and David Rockefeller demanded President Jimmy Carter allow the Shah into the U.S. for "medical treatment". This happened on 22 October 1979 and the Shah stayed for eight weeks until 15 December 1979. The Shah didn't leave America until Iran had been sufficiently destablised. Afterwards the Shah complained he had received no medical or cancer treatment in America.

As planned the Embassy was stormed 13 days later on 4 November 1979. The staged siege with paid students and a few organising military and Counter-Intelligence officers got worldwide coverage, and the media gave it the memorable name 'the Iranian Hostage Crisis' . . . and the price of oil shot up.

David Rockefeller then got richer, enough to pay for the entire riots and Embassy storming in five minutes of increased profits. For D. R. it was just another good investment, another economic shock tester (which can be charged to the govt.), and another profit margin, where David Rockefeller. managed to look like the benevolent and concerned party.

. . . The Iranian Hostage Crisis was another piece of manufactured history . . .

> After Martial Law (8 September 1978) and installing a military government (7 November 1978), the New Zealand Diplomat to Iran, Chris Beeby rolled up the Shah of Iran in his magic carpet (late on 8 November 1978) and stuck him in the back of his New Zealand Legation vehicle and drove him through Iraq, Jordan, Israel, across the Suez Canal, and into Egypt to the American hospital in Cairo arriving early on 10 November 1978.

Intelligence leading to Chris Beeby's Murder

Britain and America had put their puppets in Iran (Persia until 1936) and Iraq so that the 7 sisters (Mobil, Shell, BP, Exxon, Amoco, Texaco, Chevron) could control all the oil fields. When the Islamic Revolution took hold, which is essentially a communist revolution using fundamentalist religion as its front,[17] the British and Americans left Iran, and shredded all of the sensitive documents at the American Embassy relating to the Iranian government, but failed to also burn them.

The Iranians then got 1,200 schoolgirls to stick them back together. These were then used to blackmail the Americans into returning their 'sequested funds', apologise for the CIA's operations in Iran, and murder Chris Beeby, the Shah's rescuer.

Spymaster: "In their panic, the US Staff got lazy and put all the shredded documents in the same bin. Standard practice is to mix it up and put it in separate bins, then burn it.

"Iranian schoolgirls were given spools of material and each chopped up piece of paper was called a 'chard'. All they had to do was get the chards to line up and once you got two lined up, you'd get a chopped up signal. The signals were in 'clear' translated out of cypher so two chards lining up could virtually give a whole signal."

New Zealander, and former Iranian schoolgirl: "It became like a game for the girls and they had to be forced to be sent home. In the end, they brought in bunks for us. They concentrated the best girls on the worst signals, but the most complicated signals that were given out, were translated with pathetic ease."

Spymaster: "The exercise the Americans did to go and save the Shah was given away to them before it happened. There's a standard line in Intelligence that goes: 'The most awkward things that we do are often given to us by the enemy who don't want to do them.

"The thing that gives it away is when the U.S. helicopters went into Tehran to try and raid the embassy, they weren't fitted with sand filters and crashed several choppers resulting in the American deaths involved."

"The Americans have a bad habit of killing ex-dictators, and all the personnel privy to getting him out of wherever they came from. And also like the Poms, they rub out anyone that discovered a poison. And once the Americans have killed the ex-head of state, the person who smuggled them out of their country of origin is also brown bread.

"It was the Iranians who called for Beeby's death because in the late 70s the Americans were at war with Iran – an undeclared war – but as soon as they entered back into reapprochment, that's when the Iranians requested the hit on Beeby.

"Beeby was so full of his own importance, he never believed the Americans, with which he was always so friendly, would kill him. He was the perfect willing horse of the Amis. He worshipped the ground they walked on."

MICK P: "We shouldn't forget that Chris saw the funny side of the history he played a part in, and was happiest living like a student, in a bedsit, getting pissed, and entertaining young student women."

---

[17] Islamic fundamentalism almost always exists in places that are oil or mineral rich. The doctrine of fundamentalism is to hate the rich, and therefore Americans, whom they call 'infidels', so that communist can take over their resources. Islam is connected to soviet communism, which is why there is an influx of Muslims into New Zealand under the soviet agent and KGB operative Helen Clark. Both are also controlled by the CIA.

Apologies are always left to sexual deviants – they are the best at thinking one way and presenting another. When the politically correct lesbians of America were given a microphone, Madeleine Albright (lover of Hillary Clinton and cohort of Helen Clark) made an apology to the people of Iran for the past misdemeanours of the CIA. “There were things done by the CIA that were wrong . . . the time had come for truth . . . In 1953 the United States played a significant role in orchestrating the overthrow of Iran's popular Prime Minister, Mohammed Massadegh. The Eisenhower Administration believed its actions were justified for strategic reasons; but the coup was clearly a setback for Iran's political development. And it is easy to see now why many Iranians continue to resent this intervention by America in their internal affairs.”

This speech by Secretary of State Madeleine K. Albright, before the American-Iranian Council (AIC) in Washington D.C. on 17 March 2000, was two days before Chris Beeby was killed in a hotel room in Paris and pronounced dead from a heart attack in Geneva.

The people who sent him on this faux diplomatic mission were Helen Clark and Phil Goff, the New Zealand Prime Minister (5 December 1999–8 November 2008) and the Minister of Foreign Affairs (5 December 1999–19 October 2005).

Madeleine Albright's DEATH NOTICE (It's you or me Babe)

Secretary of State Madeleine K. Albright speech before the American-Iranian Council on Friday 17 March 2000 at Washington, D.C.:

Moderator: “. . . our keynote speaker for today's conference on United States relations with Iran . . . I want also to introduce the American-Iranian Council to you. Founded in 1997, AIC is a tax-exempt organization dedicated to promoting dialogue and better understanding between the people and governments of the United States and Iran. The guiding principle of AIC is that the mutual interest of the United States and Iran far outweigh their differences. We have worked steadily over the past several years to achieve our goals, to host projects, seminars, conferences and publications.

> [The AIC pressured the US Secretary of State to order the murder before the speech so that American could have easier access to Iran's oil.]

“Our honorary chairman is former Secretary of State, the Honorable Cyrus Vance, who in New York in January 1998, said: ‘In the past two decades, what is abnormal in international relations has been accepted as normal in US-Iran relations . . . It's time for Iran and the United States to reestablish diplomatic ties.’ [although the US invoked sanctions on Iran in 1995 and extended them in March 2009.]

“. . . when an Iranian Embassy opens up in this town and an American one in Tehran. And questionably, such an occasion will be a cause for celebration by Americans and Iranians particularly Iranian-Americans in this great nation. For the 1 million strong Iranian-American community, that will be a particularly auspicious time, a time of reconstructing what has been two decades of painfully divided identity.

“In June, 1998, in her important policy speech on Iran, Secretary Albright said: 'We must always be flexible enough to respond to change and seize historic opportunities'. Secretary Albright's presence today is an affirmation of her belief in seizing upon historic opportunities [targetted murder] and an indication that the time has come for the two countries to go forward [by killing all those in the know of the real history, and not by killing the historic opposition].”

Secretary of State, The Honorable Madeleine Albright: “Thank you very much . . . Excellencies from the Diplomatic corps. Today's conference reflects a coming together of . . . the American-Iranian Council . . . the Middle East Institute and the Georgetown School of Foreign Service. The wealth of expertise in this room is enormous [including contract killers, those who get permission for the orders, and those who give the orders]. And it is testimony to Iran's importance [as worth killing for].

“Iran is . . . one of the globe's richest . . . through which much of the world's petroleum commerce moves . . . where a great deal of the world's illegal narcotics are produced, several major terrorist groups are based, and huge reserves of oil and gas are just beginning to be tapped. And it is currently chairing the organization of the Islamic Conference.

“There is no question that Iran's future direction will play a pivotal role in the economic and security affairs . . . So I welcome this opportunity to come to discuss relations between the United States and Iran . . . and I want to begin by wishing all Iranian-Americans a Happy New Year, Eid-e-shuma-Mubarak (Applause) . . . Spring is the season of hope and renewal; of planting the seeds for new crops. And my hope is that in both in Iran and the United States, we can plant the seeds now for a new and better relationship in years to come [kill off all the old history makers].

“. . . President Clinton especially asked me to come to this group . . . It is no secret that, for two decades, most Americans have viewed Iran primarily through the prism of the U.S. Embassy takeover in 1979, accompanied by taking hostages . . . America's response has been a policy of isolation and containment.

“We took Iranian leaders at their word, that they viewed America as an enemy. And in response we had to treat Iran as a threat. However, after the election of President Khatami in 1997, we began to adjust the lens through which we viewed Iran. Although Iran's objectionable external policies remain fairly constant, the political and social dynamics inside Iran were quite clearly beginning to change.

“In response, President Clinton and I welcomed the new Iranian's President's call for a dialogue between our people . . . We reiterated our willingness to engage in officially authorized discussions with Iran regarding each others principle concerns . . . we would monitor future developments in that country closely, which is what we have done. Now we have concluded the time is right to broaden our perspective even further [by killing those the Iranians have requested] . . . aimed at a more open society and a more flexible approach to the world . . . Respected clerics speak increasingly about the compatibility of reverence and freedom, modernity and Islam . . . Harsh punishments are still meted out for various kinds of dissent . . . in the fall of 1998, several prominent writers and publishers were murdered, apparently by rogue elements in Iran security forces. And just this past weekend, a prominent editor and advisor to President Khatami was gravely wounded in an assassination attempt.

“As in any diverse society, there are many currents swirling about in Iran. Some are driving the country forward; others are holding it back.

“Despite the trend towards democracy, control over the military, judiciary, courts and police remains in unelected hands, and the elements of its foreign policy, about which we are most concerned, have not improved. But the momentum in the direction of internal reform, freedom and openness is growing stronger.

“The democratic winds in Iran are so refreshing, and many of the ideas espoused by its leaders so encouraging. There is a risk we will assume too much. In truth, it is too early to know precisely where the democratic trends will lead [but we should know in two days]. Certainly the primary impetus for change is not ideology but pragmatism . . . Despite reviving oil prices . . . corruption and excessive state control.

“The bottom line is that Iran is evolving on its own terms and will continue to do so. Iranian democracy . . . is sure to have its own distinctive features consistent with the country's traditions and culture. And like any dramatic and political and social evolution, it will go forward at its own speed on a timetable Iranians set for themselves.

“The question we face is how to respond to all this. On the people-to-people level, the answer is not hard to discern. Americans should continue to reach out . . . We should engage Iranian academics and leaders in civil society on issues of mutual interest . . . The challenge of how to respond to Iran on the official is more complex, and it requires a discussion not only of our present perception and future hopes but also of the somewhat tumultuous past . . .

"Nearly a million Iranian-Americans have made our country their home. Many other Iranians have studied here before returning to apply their knowledge in their native land. In fact, some were among my best students when I taught at Georgetown School of Foreign Service . . . there is much common ground between our two peoples. Both are idealistic, proud . . . and fiercely opposed to foreign domination.

"But that common ground has sometimes been shaken by other factors. In 1953 the United States played a significant role in orchestrating the overthrow of Iran's popular Prime Minister, Mohammed Massadegh. The Eisenhower Administration believed its actions were justified for strategic reasons; but the coup was clearly a setback for Iran's political development. And it is easy to see now why many Iranians continue to resent this intervention by America in their internal affairs.

"Moreover, during the next quarter century, the United States and the West gave sustained backing to the Shah's regime. Although it did much to develop the country economically, the Shah's government also brutally repressed political dissent [2,000 prisoners].

"As President Clinton has said, the United States must bear its fair share of responsibility for the problems that have arisen in U.S.-Iranian relations . . . However, we have our own list of grievances, and they are serious.

"The embassy takeover was a disgraceful breach of Iran's international responsibility and the trauma for the hostages and their families and for all of us [but it was a CIA job]. And innocent Americans and friends of America have been murdered by terrorist groups that are supported by the Iranian Government. [and ultimately controlled by the CIA who's main role is to protect Amreican business interests overseas.]

"In fact, Congress in now considering legislation that would mandate the attachment of Iranian diplomatic and other assets as compensation for acts of terrorism committed against American citizens [instead we had the CIA kill Chris Beeby].

"We are working with Congress to find a solution that will satisfy the demands of justice without setting a precedent that could endanger vital U.S. interests in the treatment of diplomatic or other property, or that would destroy prospects for a successful dialog with Iran. [So we'll kill someone from the neutral country New Zealand]

"Indeed, we believe that the best hope for avoiding similar tragedies in the future is to . . . work in a mutual and balanced way to narrow differences between our two countries [by killing a diplomat from a third country].

"But the question both countries now face is whether to allow the past to freeze the future or to find a way to plant the seeds of a new relationship [by destroying a very funny aspect of history] that will enable us to harvest shared advantages in years to come, not more tragedies [we didn't get to kill the Shah in Iran. He died slowly which meant he was a possible securty secrets leek for 18 months]. Certainly, in our view, there are no obstacles that wise and competent leadership cannot remove [read 'vengeance murder'].

"As some Iranians have pointed out, the United States has cordial relations with a number of countries that are less democratic than Iran [New Zealand's fascist lesbian Prime Minister gave the permission to kill Diplomat Beeby]. Moreover, we have no intention or desire to interfere in the country's internal affairs [so we will kill outside Iran]. We recognize that Islam is central to Iran's cultural heritage and perceive no inherent conflict between Islam and the United States. [We will allow you to carry out the murder and will offer you our agents in support, or to do it.]

"Moreover, we see a growing number of areas of common interest . . . we both have a stake in the future stability and peace in the Gulf . . . and encourage regional discussions aimed at reducing tensions and building trust . . .

"When we talk about human rights, we're not trying to impose our values. We are affirming the principles enshrined in the Universal Declaration of Human Rights that people everywhere are entitled to basic freedoms of religion, expression and equal protection under the law.

> [Even when we have no effective history of doing so, and, have a long history of murdering the one, and usually the wrong one, which results in even more deaths, so our words are hollow and empty: 'Hi, I'm Madeleine. I'm a Jewish Catholic lesbian with a voice for peace and a penchant for murder'. I'm also a target for Iran and CIA murder which is partly why I'm giving this speech, ahmm, 'Death Notice'. My protection is having an ongoing affair with the void-filling Hillary Clinton.]

"And when we talk about the value of an official dialogue with Iran, we have no secret agenda [except murder, and what do you exactly mean by 'we'], nor do we attach any conditions [The US is compliant with your murders as long as you are compliant with our goals]. We . . . may use diplomacy to solve problems and benefit the people of both countries [and each US 'Diplomatic' embassy contains two contract killers]. [In exchange] Foreign Minister Kharazzi said not long ago that 'Iran is ready to act as an anchor of stability for resolving regional problems and crises' . . . We are open to such a policy now. We want to work together with Iran to bring down what President Khatami refers to as 'the wall of mistrust' [and the elimination of those involved like Chris Beeby].

"For that to happen, we must be willing to deal directly with each other as two proud and independent nations [of contract killers] and address on a mutual basis the issues that have been keeping us apart [killing Chris Beeby as a joint venture exercise] . . .

"To date, the political developments in Iran have not caused . . . its Ministry of Intelligence and Security to get out of the terrorism business . . . nor do they seek to target innocent civilians . . . the United States bears them no ill will [when ordering the CIA to murder the Diplomat Chris Beeby].

"Second, the United States will explore ways to remove unnecessary impediments to increase contact between American and Iranian scholars . . . and non-governmental organizations. We believe this will serve to deepen bonds of mutual understanding and trust [and cooperative murders with Iranian academics ordering the murders].

"This is not simply a matter of unfreezing assets. After the fall of the Shah, the United States, and Iran agreed on a process to resolve existing claims . . . in 1981 . . . Our goal now is to settle the relatively few [murders] but very substantial claims [of history] that are still outstanding between our two governments . . . And by so doing, to put this issue behind us once and for all.

"The points I've made and the concrete measures I have announced today reflect our desire to advance our common interests through improved relations with Iran. They respond to the broader perspective merited by the democratic trends in that country, and our hope that these internal changes will gradually produce external effects. And that as Iranians grow more free, they will express their freedom through actions and support of international law and on behalf of stability and peace.

> [Murder, agreed murder, joint murder, and hidden murder to maintain the hidden agenda and suppress the true, very funny, and extremely unroyal history of the 'Golfbag of Iran'].

"I must emphasize, however, that in adopting a broader view of events in Iran, we are not losing sight of the issues that have long troubled us. We looked toward Iran truly fulfilling its promises to . . . live up to the pledges its leaders have made in such areas as proliferation and opposition to terrorism [only when it is not targetted to our benefit, like fatwas to the Shah, his supporters, and rescuers].

“We have no illusions that the United States and Iran will be able to overcome decades of estrangement overnight [actually in two days] . . . But the direction of our relations is more important [complicit murders] than the pace [a fucking sprint]. The United States is willing either to proceed patiently, on step-by-step basis, or to move very rapidly [and do the killing itself] if Iran indicates a desire and commitment to do so [Iranian academics to CIA: ‘You do it now in time for our New Year’].

“Next Tuesday [21 March 2000] will mark the beginning of a new year for Iran and the start of spring for us all [as Chris Beeby, I promise you, will be dead in two days and in just enough time for you to get the news on your New Years Eve]. And it is true that for everything under Heaven there is a season. [It’s time for Chris to die. Rather him than me.] Surely the time has come for America and Iran to enter a new season in which mutual trust may grow [don’t mention the joint venture murder to anyone] and a quality of warmth supplant the long, cold winter of our mutual discontent [So shut up and do it.] . . .

“The great divide today is between people anywhere who are still ensnared by the perceptions and prejudices of the past [history is whatever we agree upon], and those everywhere who have freed themselves to embrace the promise of the future.

> [Agreed history equals promotion. Let’s remove the heroic past of Chris Beeby stradling our agreed history. Let’s eliminate Chris Beeby from embarrassing our accepted history with his inside stories – the history that prevents us from out mutual promotion].

“This morning on behalf of the government and the people of the United States, I call upon Iran to join us in writing a new chapter in our shared history [Let’s murder and reward ourselves]. Let us be open about our differences and strive to overcome them [with joint venture murder]. Let us acknowledge our common interests and strive to advance them. Let us think boldly about future possibilities and strive to achieve them, and thereby, turn this new year and season of hope into the reality of a safer and better life for our two peoples.

“To that mission I pledge my own best efforts this morning [by confirming the order for the hit]. And I respectfully solicit the counsel and understanding and support of all [that I shall never be charged, as I do this to remove myself as a target]. Thank you very much.”

Chris Beeby duped by his own masters

To fulfil the Iranians demands for the killing of Chris Beeby, his own masters duped him. An Iranian intelligence officer confirmed this on the 15 December 2003.

Never trust your past masters when you’re a retired agent. You’re useless to them and just as likely to be used to clear the path for a smoother future than to be protected during retirement. This is especially the case when something large is involved, like oil, and Iran was the world’s second biggest oil producer after Saudi Arabia.

Phil Goff
Minister of Foreign Affairs
Accessory to Murder.

Phil Goff 21 March 2000 Statement ‘We were in on it’

Phil Goff: “Chris Beeby died in Geneva on Sunday 19 March 2000 at the age of 64”.

But he didn’t. He died in Paris on an assignment that Phil Goff and Helen Clark had sent him on. He was assassinated with Labour’s foreknowledge that he was to be sacrificed to the wishes of Islamic Iranies – fanatical religious communists dictated to by the CIA for the CFR in order to hike the oil prices for the Rockefellers.

Spymaster: “The CIA routinely deliver bodies. Usually they are frozen first and arrive courtesy of the CIA courier from DHL, that the CIA founded. The owner was a crossover paedophile obsessed with Asian virgins and had a lot of children to them.”

It was Helen Clark’s concubine, Madeleine Albright that gave the international order and New Zealand’s fascist lesbian government followed up.

Another dead knight fulfilling the Maori prophecy:

“Leading New Zealand males will die at the turn of the century”.

Madeleine ‘Maria Jana’ Albright.

Helen ‘Alan’ Clark.

Jimmy ‘JFK Peanut’ Carter.

Frank Sinatra runs the White House

Spymaster: “The CIA wanted President Jimmy Carter (1977–81) out of power because he was looking at how the CIA had operated over the years and was accusing them of making huge profits over Vietnam. The CIA goes nuts over little shooting matches that it escalates into wars. Carter was also looking into the JFK assassination and Bush came up on the radar.

“The CIA went to the effort of going to Ronald Reagan, who was desperate to become President. The person who fronts for him is Nancy Reagan so the CIA tried to enter into a deal with her. Nancy was previously the First Lady of California (1967–75) where “Hollywood was all the politics you need” and the deal she offered completely took their breath away – the CIA’s that is.

“Nancy Reagan wanted ‘Frank Sinatra to come to the White House every week and sing a couple of numbers, root her, and be gone’. To bring that into play, the CIA had to bring in the FBI who had the Mafia, who had Frank.”

Ronald Reagan became President-elect on 4 November 1980 and served for eight years (1981–89). Frank spent a lot of time at the White House dancing with Nancy Reagan, to such a degree that Ronald had to butt in.

The Mafia and FBI then ran the U.S. in the 1980s. Frank was their man in the White House.

Frank Sinatra was arguably president of the United States from 1981 to 1989. And irony upon irony that was all Frank had ever hoped for. Only he never thought his own cock would get him there.

History is nuts.

Frank Sinatra, Nancy & President-elect Reagan, Nov. 1980.
George H. W. Bush is nowhere to be seen (still in Paris?).

Frank always wore a high collar to cover his teenage acne.
Do you think this is big enough for our threesome?

Frank, Nancy and Ronald check out their ménage à trois White House.

President 'Red Ronny' Reagan struggles to get a dance with his wife at Frank's White House.

Frank
Ronald
Vicki Carr
Nancy
John
Dean
George
Jimmy.

Hollywood takes over the White House

Frank Sinatra, 23 May 1985:
"The Medal of Freedom for me . . . for poking your wife . . . are you sure Ron?"

CIA/ FBI/ Mafia & Intell:
"Doesn't that make Frank Sinatra the President of these United States?"
Mafia: "Hey, we're running the country. We've got our man in the White House".
FBI: "Hey, Tony, shutuppa your face or we get your cousin to break it".

Frank survived to 1998. Ronald died in 2004. Nancy was still around in March 2009, and regrettably so was Madeleine Albright.
After trafficking heroin, Helen Clark was then promoted to the 3-IC of the United Nations in order to traffic NATO's heroin through the UN network.
It's morphine to the rescue replacing food and the Third World kids die out while high, with Western UN (Aid(s)) workers, having sex with high children.
Thanks Madeleine. Thanks Helen.
IT IS ESSENTIAL TO CARE ABOUT HUMAN RIGHTS. THAT, ULTIMATELY, IS THE BASIS OF OUR EXISTENCE.
Madeleine Albright
FreakingNews.com MARS: Madeleine AlbRight'S Attacks

George Bush’s Wet Dream

“. . . Impreach Nixon, replace him with a porn king, get Rockefeller in, kill Rockefeller, put a peanut farmer in the White House, remove him when he sniffs, replace him with an FBI actor and myself as Vice-President, then President (1989–93), then my bisexual CIA Buddy as President (1993–2001), then my son as President (2001–09) . . .”

> Terrorism tends to promote world government, and world government tends to be promoted by terrorism. Hence those who become the ‘World Government leader’ tend to have a hidden history in terrorism. This has been going on for at leasts 140 years and 1868 appears to be the last fair election in the United States with Illinois’ Ulysses S. Grant winning for the Republicans.

Pakistan’s Inter-Services Intelligence (ISI) shares intelligence between different branches of its military and external intelligence agencies. The ISI are trained by the CIA. Together they created the Taleban for Afghanistan. All the people involved in international terrorism are trained by the CIA and/or MI-6. The old guys of the CIA are in Afghanistan using Saudi money and drug money, creating terrorist acts against the Soviet Union to drive a wedge between the Soviets and Muslims. The Soviets and Muslims have many similiarities in thinking and outlook, so they could easily join forces.

Nixon, Ford and Rockefeller Dies

Once Nixon (1969–9 August 1974) had been successfully impeached, Vice-President Gerald became president (1974–77) and Nelson Rockefeller became US Vice-President.

Nelson Rockefeller wanted to become the next president and this would have been easy to enough to accomplish. All he had to do was expose Gerald Rudolff Ford as the porn king born Leslie Lynch King, Jr. (14 July 1913–26 December 2006).

But it was to be William Rockefeller Clinton (1993–2001) who became the Rockefeller President. He was a little known CIA agent and is now trying to become the ‘World Government’ leader.

Ex-vice president Nelson Rockefeller then reportedly died with his secretary Megan Marshack in his office/or at home, but he was found with a bullet hole in his left temple as photographed and printed in *Hullo* magazine. As further cover, Rockefeller became the only Vice-President to be cremated and not buried (8 July 1908–26 January 1979).

Jimmy Carter’s Exit

President Jimmy Carter (1977–81) was looking into the Kennedy assassination in 1963. George H. W. Bush was deeply involved, so he had to remove Carter from the Presidency and install a puppet whom he controlled – Reagan was such a boob, but he was Bush’s boob, and fronted for the camera well – and then have someone go through the files and remove any incriminating information about himself in JFK murder, so he used the relatively unknown CIA agent Hillary Clinton to sift through the files while she officially did something else.

Iran Hostages

In preparation to install George Herbert Walker Bush as Vice-President, the CIA (with Bush as head 1976–) took 52 US hostages in Iran. They were ready for release in Iran at the end of Jimmy Carter’s presidency (1977–81).[18]

In support of the Reagan-Sinatra-Bush ticket, George Herbert Walker Bush went to Paris and paid top officials of Iran not to release the hostages until Reagan was successfully elected. Reagan and Bush were inaugurated on 20 January 1981 and the American hostages were released minutes later.

---

[18] *The Election is won on 4 November with inuguration 11 weeks later on 20 January the following year.*

The CIA's George H. W. Bush instigated war between Iran and Iraq starting on 22 September 1980, two months before the US election (4 Nov. 1980). Bush got his agent Saddam Hussein to invade Iran, setting fire to the oil machinery. This increased the price of oil from US$14/1978 to $35/1981. By June 1982 Iran was on the offensive until the war ended on 20 August 1988. Then the price of oil collapsed from a peak of US$70 to US$20/1988.

So the Iran oil war began and ended with the Reagan-Sinatra-Bush presidency (1981–89).

George H. W. Bush and Saddam Hussein shared a bank account

George H. Bush and Saddam Hussein shared a bank account in London at Coutts & Co. Bank. Established in 1692, it is one of the UK's leading private banks. Nat West bought Coutts in 1920, then The Royal Bank of Scotland Group (RBS, est 1727, by King George I) bought Nat West in 2000. Coutts was then renamed RBS Coutts on 1 January 2008.

Her Majesty's Treasury (the Queen) holds a 70.33% controlling shareholding in RBS. RBS's clearing bank based in Gogarburn, St Andrew Square, Edinburgh, Scotland, with her husband the Duke of Edinburgh. RBS is the only bank in the UK that still prints the £1 note.

In 2000, RBS was the tenth largest company in the world. RBS owned Citizens Financal Group, the 8th largest bank in the US, and RBS was the second largest shareholder in the Bank of China (2004–09).

While Sir Fred Goodwin was at the helm (2000–08) RBS lost £24.1 billion – the biggest loss in UK corporate history. In December 2008, it became clear that RBS had invested £36.4 million in four arms companies, had a £17.5 million corporate jet, and spent £2 million in celebrity endorsements. On 10 February 2009, it became clear that Goodwin was an accountant with no technical bank training and no formal banking qualifications, but he was still paid £2.5 million per annum and £20 million for his services.

With the Subprime mortgage crisis, the UK Government now owns the majority of RBS shares on the London stock exchange. So the British government had to bail out the Queen of Englan – again. She has lost billions over the last two years (2007–09).

George H. W. Bush and his CIA agent Saddam Hussein shared a bank account in Coutts & Co. while it was a subsidiary of Nat West (<2000), then The Royal Bank of Scotland (2000–) governed by the overpaid, big spending unqualified Sir Fred Goodwin (2000–08), all of it 70% owned by Queen Elizabeth, who then got her hands slapped in the Subprime mortgage crisis (2007–09) and the British government bailed her out by buying out her majority shareholding.

Meanwhile Prince Philip admits he's a bisexual . . . and George W. Bush's gay lover was Victor Ashe from his time at Yale University. W. also employed Jeff Ganon as his US$200/hr gay prostitute . . . and Karl Rove is also a homosexual.

So you can't really expect any of these deals to be straight, because the players aren't. 9-11 wasn't either, and nor was Hollywood.

Ronald Reagan, the FBI & Communist Hollywood Blacklisting

Ronald Wilson Reagan (6 February 1911–5 June 2004) made 52 films and became a household name. He joined the army (1942–45), his acting career waned, then he became President of the Screen Actors Guild (1947–52), then spokesman for General Electric (GE), then switched to the Republican Party (1962) which led him to become Governor of California (1967–75) and President of the United States (1981–89) on the Bush-Reagan ticket.

General Electric was the world leader in exhaust-driven supercharging when WWII started and became one of the world's largest engine manufacturers. General Electric had factories manufacturing for the Nazis in Germany during WWII, and by the end of the war, these were left almost completely in tact. Since Reagan had already sided with the Nazis, he was a perfect companion for Bush

Reagan makes propaganda movies for the Army during WWII

Reagan was always a B-Grade actor whose film career virtually ended when he joined the army in 1942. Here he was picked up by the FBI as a part time agent and was ordered into active duty on 18 April 1942. Being near sighted, he stayed in the US and worked as a liason officer for transport at San Francisco's Port. Four weeks later (15 May 1942) he was working at the Public Relations of the 18th AAF Base Unit – which was really the 1st Motion Picture Unit in Culver City, California. He and his units produced some 400 training films until Reagan was separated from active duty on 9 December 1945. During that time, Reagan was sent to the Provisional Task Force Show Unit of 'This Is The Army' at Burbank, California (14 January–22 July 1943). Captain Reagan then served in the sixth War Loan Drive in New York City (January–14 November 1944).

The FBI, McCarthyism, and Hollywood Blacklisting (1947–66)

After the war, Captain Ronald Reagan never regained his movie star status. Another close to the FBI was Frank Sinatra. His professional career had stalled by the 1950s, but after the Hollywood Blacklisting, McCarthyism opened up plenty of spaces, resulting in bad acting, bad writing, bad producing and bad directing which became the norm.

Frank Sinatra was able to get a part and he won the 1954 Academy Award for Best Supporting Actor.

Frank Sinatra in his career waining days.

The FBI instigated McCarthyism and Hollywood Blacklisting went from 1940 to 1966 and meant that the FBI could control who would be the prominent war and post war actors, writers, directors and producers. The threat of this meant the FBI had complete control over content and final rule over output.

Spymaster: "Neither Ronald Reagan (FBI) nor Frank Sinatra (FBI) were ever blacklisted as communists, but the list stemed largely from the FBI. During the post WWII communist hunt in Hollywood, it was Screen Actors Guild President Ronald Reagan who fingered the other actors as communists (the better ones?, naming Paul Robeson, etc). Ronald Reagan was also involved in murdering peaceniks during the 60s and 70s, also with FBI protection."

Chairman Martin Dies of the House Committee on Un-American Activities (HUAC) released a report in 1938 that claimed communism was pervasive in Hollywood.

In 1940, former Communist Party member, John L. Leech gave Martin Dies a testimony naming 42 movie industry professionals as Communists. This included stars Humphrey Bogart, James Cagney, Frederic March and others. Dies then cleared everyone except actor Lionel Stander who was fired from his Republic Pictures studio.

So it was pretty much bad information from the start.

In October 1947 (just as the FBI's Ronald Reagan became Screen Actors Guild President) the Hollywood Blacklist began and 43 Hollywood professionals were summoned before the House of HUAC – primarily screenwriters (content producers), but also actors, directors and producers, either known or alleged members of the American Communist Party . . . whose membership had peaked at 50,000 during WWII while Stalin was popular.

These Hollywood figures included leading actors Humphrey Bogart (former journalist), Lauren Bacall, Danny Kaye (manic depressive alcoholic), and director John Huston. Of the 43, only one answered questions – German playwright/theatre director Bertolt Brecht, a lifelong committed Marxist who used theatre to explore his ideals and left a Brechtian legacy that influenced directors and film theory to this day.

This was something the B-Grade Reagan failed to achieve. It also made the FBI's job more difficult when others were talented. Brecht's Mysteries of a Barbershop clip sums up the McCarthyist Hollywood Blacklisting quite well.

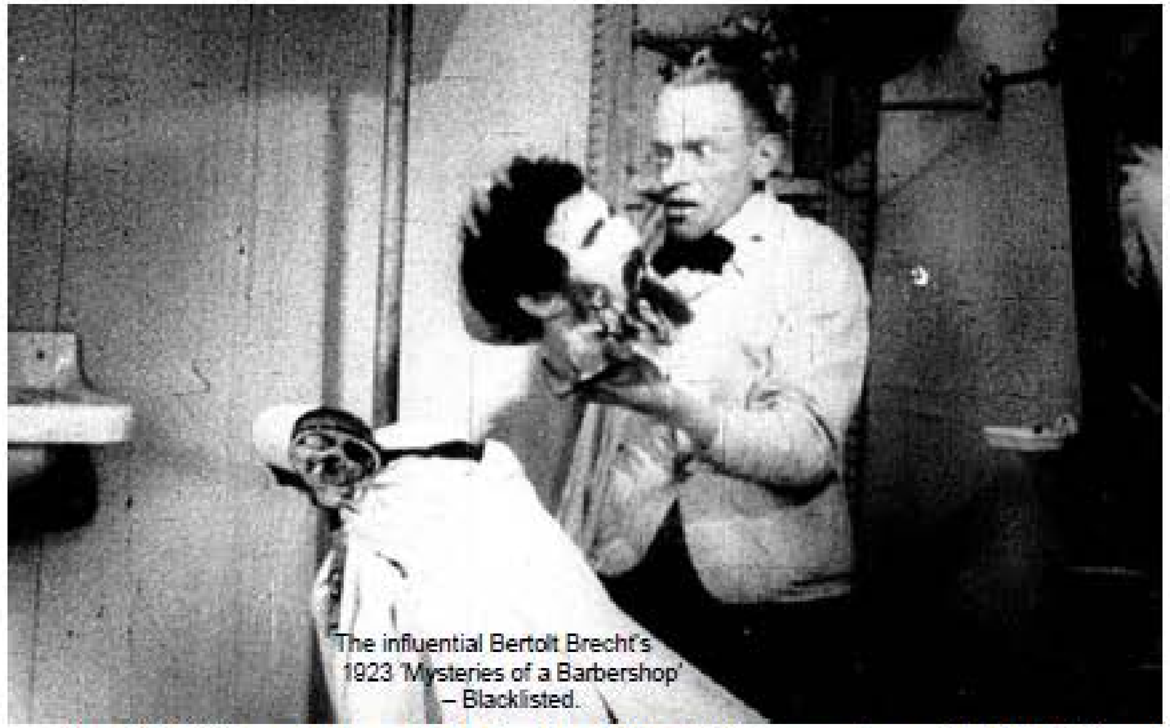

The influential Bertolt Brecht's
1923 'Mysteries of a Barbershop'
– Blacklisted.

The FBI's Screen Actors Guild President Ronald Reagan, along with Walt Disney, testified to McCarthyism's HUAC on 23 October 1947– that the threat of Communists in the film industry was a serious one. Then the Screen Actors Guild (Ronald Reagan) voted to make its officers swear to a non-Communist pledge on 17 November 1947.

The Screen Writers Guild was founded in 1921. Three of its founders were named in the Hollywood Ten. A week later the Hollywood 10 were issued citations and the next day (25 November 1947) they were blacklisted from Hollywood until their names were cleared. For many this was a decade or two later.

. . . So it was a coup d'etat . . .

This was the FBI break up of Hollywood. It also meant that queers from the intelligence world would infiltrate Hollywood. These were the real subversive communists.

Does the term 'Sodomy Olympics' ring any bells in the Diplomatic Corp?

As a result of this pressure, RKO pictures was sold to Howard Hughes. Within weeks (May 1948) Hughes fired most of RKO's employees and the political sympathies of the rest were investigated. This shut down the studio for six months.

Howard Huges had also become an FBI agent, and just as the studio was about to get back into production, he decided to settle a long-standing federal anti-trust suit against the five biggest studios. This ended up collapsing the studio system, which was a goal of the FBI. It certainly gave them more infiltration and control.

Can anyone argue that the media is not now infiltrated with intelligence queers?

In early 1948, all of the Hollywood Ten were convicted of contempt. Their appeals were unsuccessful and the cases arrived before the Supreme Court . . . 204 Hollywood professionals then signed and filed a defense for the Hollywood Ten, but all ten were convicted in 1950 for one year, plus 84 of the 204 supporters were then also convicted.

The FBI Counterattacks Communism and then promotes Queers

The *Counterattack* weekly newsletter was "The Newsletter of Facts to Combat Communism". The 7 May 1948 issue warned readers about a radio talk show recently moved to ABC, and "*Communist Party members and fellow-travelers*" were appearing on Arthur Gaeth's program.

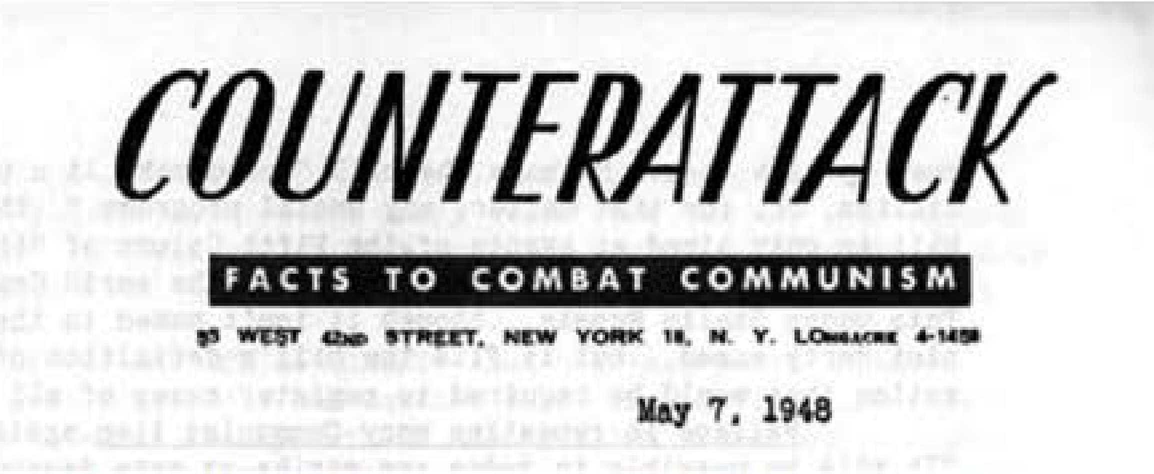

COUNTERATTACK

FACTS TO COMBAT COMMUNISM

55 WEST 42ND STREET, NEW YORK 18, N. Y. LOngacre 4-1458

May 7, 1948

Under *Counterattack*'s subscription information it stated that it was run by "a group of *former* FBI men [but] has no affiliation whatsoever with any government agency".

So it was FBI anti-communism run by the government, denying it was run by the government, all led by the cross-dressing homo J. Edgar Hoover (transvestite).

A number of non-governmental organisations jumped on the bandwagon expanding and enforcing the blacklist. It was a fever of anti-communist fever. The American Business Consultants Inc. (est. 1947) was also an influential group.

In 1949, the Americanism Division of the conservative war veterans' American Legion issued a blacklist of 128 people in Hollywood. This included the well-known playwright Lillian Hellman (10 motion pictures). She wouldn't work again until 1966.

The FBI editors of *Counterattack* had direct access to the FBI files and the HUAC files. Expanding their own propaganda, *Counterattack* then published the spin-off *Red Channels* in June 1950. This listed 151 people in entertainment and broadcast journalism who had taken part in Communist or pro-Communist activities. Hellman was named again, but she had already been blacklisted and denied employment. Scores of others were also blacklisted.

CBS quickly followed up with an employee loyalty oath.

No government could be seen to be communist, so with a change to a democratic government HUAC returned in 1951 and began “graylisting due to political or personal affiliations, real or imagined, with largely the same consequences”. But it also destroyed marriages and families, as as well as careers. The President of the Screen Actors Guild was still Ronnie Reagan, and he was still a Democrat at that stage.

The one advantange of a graylister is they could work on poverty row (non-Hollywood), ironically writing music reviews for communist newspapers, which then got them indicted.

The Hollywood blacklist had long gone hand-in-hand with the Red-baiting activities of the FBI and it's cross-dressing homosexual overlord, J. Edgar Hoover.

Lawyers like Bartley Crum who defended the HUAC-acussed were then FBI-labelled as ‘Communist subversives or sympathizers’ and targeted from 1950 with tapped phones, opened mail, and continuous surveillance, until they were finally driven to suicide (or suicided) as was the case in 1959 with Bartley Crum.

Looking for communist sympathisers and disloyalty was even privatised with AWARE. John Henry Faulk was interviewed by AWARE who marked him unfit for CBS employment, so he turned around and sued AWARE in 1957. The case dragged on for years, but the defiant symbol had turned the first sod.

The same year (1957) Alfred Hitchcock employed the blacklisted actor Norman Lloyd. From 1960 the blacklisting began to crumble as those strong enough employed the risky.

John Henry Faulk won his case against AWARE in 1962. AWARE was then liable for the loss of professional income and damage they had caused. The FBI's *Counterattack* then crumbled.

Some didn't get off the blacklist until 1966, and as late as 2000, the Writers Guild were still trying to get credits corrected.

Neither the HUAC, *Counterattack*, or the *Red Channels* list included the names of Ronald Reagan or Frank Sinatra, both of whom had a long affiliation with Hoover's cross-dressing homosexual FBI, and were to take over the White House, hand-in-hand, 15 years after the blacklisting wained.

Blacklisted Actors

The Hollywood Ten blacklistees were screenwriters and directors. Those first blacklisted (1948–June 1950) included the actors (2): Canada Lee and Paul Robeson.

The *Red Channels* June 1950 list included the following actors (70):

Larry Adler, Luther Adler, Stella Adler, Edith Atwater, Ralph Bell, Joseph Edward Bromberg, John Brown, Morris Carnovsky, Mady Christians, Lee J. Cobb, Howard Da Silva, Roger De Koven, Alfred Drake, Paul Draper, Howard Duff, José Ferrer, Louise Fitch (Lewis), Martin Gabel, John Garfield, Will Geer, Jack Gilford, Ruth Gordon, Llough Gough, Uta Hagen, Rose Hobart, Judy Holliday, Lena Horne, Marsha Hunt, Charles Irving, Burl Ives, Sam Jaffe, Leon Janney, Joseph Julian, George Keane, Adelaide Klein, Felix Knight, Tony Kraber, Gypsy Rose Lee, Madeline Lee, Ray Lev, Philip Loeb, Ella Logan, Avon Long, Aline MacMahon, Margo, Myron McCormick, Burgess Meredith, Henry Morgan, Zero Mostel, Jean Muir, Meg Mundy, Minerva Pious, Anne Revere, Edward G. Robinson, Selena Royle, Ann Shepherd, Gale Sondergaard, Hester Sondergaard, Lionel Stander, Paul Stewart, Eliot Sullivan, Hilda Vaughn, Sam Wanamaker, Fredi Washington, Margaret Webster, Orson Welles, Irene Wicker, Betty Winkler (Keane), Martin Wolfson, Lesley Woods.

Other actors blacklisted **after June 1950** for the first time include (38):

Eddie Albert, Orson Bean, Barbara Bel Geddes, Herschel Bernardi, John Berry, Roman Bohnen, Phoebe Brand, Phil Brown, Charles Chaplin, Dorothy Comingore, Jeff Corey, Dolores del Rio, Ludwig Donath, Lee Grant, Kim Hunter, John Ireland, Victor Klian, Alexander Knox, Mickey Knox, Charles Korvin, Lewis Leverett, Norman Lloyd, John ‘Skins’ Miller, Paula Miller, Karen Morley, Larry Parks, Leo Penn, John Randolph, Martin Ritt, Jean Rouverol (Butler), Shimen Ruskin, Martha Scott, Joshua Shelley, Madeleine Sherwood, Art Smith, Dorothy Tree, George Tyne, and Nedrick Young.

At least 110 actors were blacklisted, but there was an even greater number of screen writers, producers and directors on the FBI McCarthy Blacklist.

The FBI, CIA, NATO and ex-Military Intelligence make a move on Hollywood

This really was a shuffle to let the Intelligence agents into the foray of Hollywood without objection. Some of the better military intelligence and espionage agents then became actors, like John Ainsworth-Davis, a.k.a. Lieutenant Commander Christopher John James Creighton, who was the Commander of Operation JAMES BOND that got Martin Bormann out of Berlin, while the original commander, Ian Fleming, switched to Operation WINNIE THE POOH and got Adolf Hitler out of Berlin at the same time, both 30 April–2 May 1945.

“In Hollywood Creighton then wrote and produced ‘Murder at 3am’ (1952), acted with Noel Coward and Eva Gabor in ‘Nude with Violin’, acted in ‘Present Laughter’ on Broadway (1957) and directed ‘Judgement in Prague’ (1967) while under cover for NATO. He also acted and directed for television . . . The real James Bond, Christopher Creighton, remained in active secret intelligence work until the early 1980s.”[1]

Ian Fleming then wrote 14 James Bond books (1953–66) all under the influence of heavy drinking (and heavy rooting) and consulted on the Albert Broccoli movies.

With the Jewish takeover of Hollywood, and Israel's takeover of the CIA, the CIA quickly became Communism In America and Hollywood became the centre of distraction media and fulfilled every goal unset by all the Actors and Writers guilds.

What we got was glossy shit on a stick, distractions that travelled from film to magazines to news, until there was no news left, no films left to watch, no magazines worth reading, and everything came down to talking hairdos and the Jewish media motto: “‘Lies have legs and the truth crawls’ and we control the legs of any message”.

Reagan's testimony, House Un-American Activities Committee, 23 October 1947

Ronald Reagan: “. . . There has been a small group within the Screen Actors Guild which has consistently opposed the policy of the guild board and officers of the guild, as evidenced by the vote on various issues. That small clique . . . suspected of more or less following the tactics that we associate with the Communist Party . . . attempted to be a disruptive influence.”

Subcommittee Staff member and Chief Investigator Robert E. Stripling: “You have no knowledge yourself as to whether or not any of them are members of the Communist Party?”

Reagan: “No, sir, I have no investigative force, or anything, and I do not know.”

Stripling: “Has it ever been reported to you that certain members of the guild were communists?”

Reagan: “Yes, sir, I have heard different discussions and some of them tagged as communists.”

---

[1] Cited in *Hitler Was A British Agent*, p. 403; OPJB, circa p. 230.

Stripling: "Would you say that this clique has attempted to dominate the guild?"

Reagan: "Well, sir, by attempting to put their own particular views on various issues . . ."

Stripling: "There has been testimony to the effect here that numerous communist-front organizations have been set up in Hollywood. Have you ever been solicited to join any of those organizations or any organization which you considered to be a communist-front organization?"

Reagan: "I have received literature from an organization called the Committee for a Far-Eastern Democratic Policy. I don't know whether it is communist or not. I only know that I didn't like their views . . ."

Stripling: "Were you ever solicited to sponsor the Joint Anti-Fascist Refugee Committee?"

Reagan: "I found myself misled into being a sponsor on another occasion for a function that was held under the auspices of the Joint Anti-Fascist Refugee Committee . . . I was called several weeks ago. There happened to be a financial drive on to raise money to build a badly needed hospital called the All Nations Hospital . . . the building . . . has the support of most of the people of Los Angeles. Certainly of most of the doctors.

"Some time ago I was called to the telephone. A woman introduced herself . . . She told me that there would be a recital held at which Paul Robeson would sing . . . the money for the tickets would go to the hospital . . . could use my name as one of the sponsors. I hesitated for a moment, because I don't think that Mr. Robeson's and my political views coincide at all . . . I thought, here is an occasion where Mr. Robeson is perhaps appearing as an artist . . . I have contributed money myself. So I . . . said, "Certainly, you can use my name."

"I left town for a couple of weeks and, when I returned, I was handed a newspaper story that said that this recital was held at the Shrine Auditorium in Los Angeles under the auspices of the Joint Anti-Fascist Refugee Committee. The principal speaker was Emil Lustig, Robert Burman took up a collection, and the remnants of the Abraham Lincoln Brigade were paraded on the platform. I did not, in the newspaper story, see one word about the hospital.

"I called the newspaper and said I am not accustomed to writing to editors but would like to explain my position, and he laughed and said, "You needn't bother, you are about the 50th person who had also been listed as sponsors of that affair."

Stripling: "Would you say from your observation that that is typical of the tactics of the communists, to solicit and use the names of prominent people to either raise money or gain support?"

Reagan: "I think it is in keeping with their tactics, yes sir."

Stripling: "Do you think there is anything democratic about those tactics?"

Reagan: "I do not."

Stripling: "As president of the Screen Actors Guild, you are familiar with the jurisdictional strike which has been going on in Hollywood for some time. Do you know whether the communists have participated in any way with this strike?"

Reagan: "The first time that this word "communist" was ever injected into any of the meetings concerning the strike was at a meeting in Chicago with Mr. William Hutchinson, president of the carpenters' union, who were on strike at the time. He asked the Screen Actors Guild to submit terms to Richard Walsh, and he told us to tell Mr. Walsh that, if he would give in on these terms, he in turn would break run this Sorrell and the other commies out – I am quoting him – and break it up. I might add that Mr. Walsh and Mr. Sorrell were running the strike for Mr. Hutchinson in Hollywood."

Stripling: "Mr. Reagan, what is your feeling about what steps should be taken to rid the motion picture industry of any communist influences?"

Reagan: "Well, sir, 99 percent of us are pretty well aware of what is going on, and I think, within the bounds of our democratic rights and never once stepping over the rights given us by democracy, we have done a pretty good job in our business of keeping those people's activities curtailed. After all, we must recognize them at present as a political party.

"On that basis we have exposed their lies when we came across them, we have opposed their propaganda, and I can certainly testify that in the case of the Screen Actors Guild we have been eminently successful in preventing them from, with their usual tactics, trying to run a majority of an organization with a well organized minority.

"In opposing those people, the best thing to do is make democracy work. In the Screen Actors Guild we make it work by insuring everyone a vote and by keeping everyone informed. I believe that, as **Thomas Jefferson** put it, 'If all the American people know all of the facts they will never make a mistake'. Whether the party should be outlawed, that is a matter for the government to decide.

"As a citizen, I would hesitate to see any political party outlawed on the basis of its political ideology.

"However, if it is proven that an organization is an agent of foreign power, or in any way not a legitimate political party -- and I think the government is capable of proving that – then that is another matter.

"I happen to be **very proud of the industry** in which I work . . . **the way in which we conducted the fight**. I do not believe the communists have ever at any time been able to use the motion picture screen as a sounding board for their philosophy or ideology [except for the self-confessed and very influential German Marxist Bertolt Brecht who testified and self-confessed]."

Chairman John Parnell Thomas: "There is one thing that you said that interested me very much. That was the quotation from **Jefferson. That is why this committee was created** by the House of Representatives: **'to acquaint the American people with the facts'** [Compliant inside job].

"Once the American people are acquainted with the facts there is no question but what the American people will do the kind of job that they want done: that is, **to make America just as pure as we can possibly make it.** [Extremist self-preservation ideology] . . ."

Reagan: "Sir, I detest, I abhor their philosophy, but I detest more than that their tactics, which are those of the fifth column [so he's very political], and are dishonest, but at the same time I never as a citizen want to see our country become urged, by either fear or resentment of this group, that we ever compromise with any of our democratic principles through that fear or resentment. I still think that democracy can do it."

. . . And so Reagan gives his first anti-communist presidential speech, and becomes President 'Red Ronnie' 27 years later.

The way to beat the communists at their own game is to run the same method over the top. The communists at a higher level then see they are getting their way, and everyone in Hollywood will say and do anything to preserve their reputation and improve their career. It's not known as a city of no morals for no reason. (Even Cary Grant was one of them.)

Just as Nancy Reagan says: "Hollywood is the only politics you'll ever need".
It worked for her. She got to the top of the White House with her two favourite FBI lovers.

Chairman John Parnell Thomas (1895–70) served as a second lieutenant on the Western Front during WWI, promoted to captain in 1918 then transferred to Regimental Staff Headquarters. He then moved to New York, into investment securities, then into Congress in January 1937 as an elected Republican.

Senator Thomas held extreme right-wing views. He hated the theatre getting subsidies and led the attack on the Federal Theatre & Writers Project claiming:

> "Practically every play presented under the auspices of the Project is sheer propaganda for Communism or the FDR's New Deal [which had] sabotaged the capitalist system".

So in 1947 Thomas was appointed chairman of the House of Un-American Activities Committee (HUAC) and soon began investigating the Hollywood Motion Picture Industry, which he was personally suspicious of.

At the time American was having a 'be beautiful drive' and the whole thing might have been an easier ride if John Thomas wasn't so God-damned ugly.

John Parnell Thomas
Chairman of the House Committee
on Un-American Activities (HUAC).

Hollywood Blacklisting in Australia

Maureen O'Hara (b. 17 August 1920, Ireland) became a successful actress in Hollywood and made five movies alongside John Wayne, becoming a naturalised US citizen in 1946. She was not blacklisted and made 55 movies, 45 between the 1940–64 Blacklisting years. She was easily recognised as one of the most fiercely passionate heroines of the silver screen.

Maureen O'Hara

Maureen O'Hara testified in the Hollywood Confidential trial on 4 September 1957 and was thereafter used as one of the FBI's anti-communist pro-homosexual narcs.

Maureen O'Hara went to Sydney, and claimed to have gone to other actors houses. She didn't go to these houses, but she did return to Hollywood and described communist material in these Sydney homes. There had been no work in Sydney for three or four months, but a big film was to be shot in Frenchs Forest, North Sydney. About 800 people were to be employed, all of them desperate for work. Maureen O'Hara was to star in the movie, so Actors Equity got together and boycotted the movie. The Actors all stuck to what the A. E. executive said and no one turned up. O'Hara came from Hollywood with all her troop and tried to star, but the set was empty. No one turned up, Maureen O'Hara was declared a scab, and she returned to Hollywood with the film never made. One of the Australian Actors Equity Executive (representing the Australian Elizabethan Theatre Trust (Sept.1954–) used to joke: "Hollywood' is the botanical name for synagogue".

The Jewish Mafia and the FBI

The 5 foot Lansky with the 6'2" detective.

Meyer Lansky (born Majer Suchowliński into a Jewish family in Poland, 4 July 1902–15 January 1983) moved to New York when he was nine. Five foot nothing, he rose high in the underworld as only a Jew can. Lansky was secretly the organiser of the sadomasochistic sodomy of J. Edgar Hoover (FBI Director, 1924–72) and, at the time, very few people outside the OSS realised that Hoover was playing fall guy to the Jewish Mafia – at least one night a week.

Lansky interviewed one of the Jewish gangsters in the 1930s and Meyer said: "I want you to do a special job for me. I want you to personally take charge of the rooting of J. Edgar Hoover" and the Jewish gangster replied, "What do you think I'm queer" and Meyer replied, "I don't give a stuff what you are. When I tell someone to do a job, I expect it done and if I turn around and find it not done, they usually wake up without a head and under Brooklyn Bridge. So make sure you get a hard on, make sure it stays hard, get on with it, and don't come back whining about why it couldn't be done. Now get out."

Hoover in 1935, doing his best to be a pretty boy.

Spymaster: "And nobody is going to turn around and say that that never happened.The hardest job they had was have a crinoline[2] made in a number of styles and colours to J. Edgar Hoover's exact measurements. This was done by a Jewish dressmaker who was told 'Nobody sqwarks. Mr Lansky wouldn't like it'."[3]

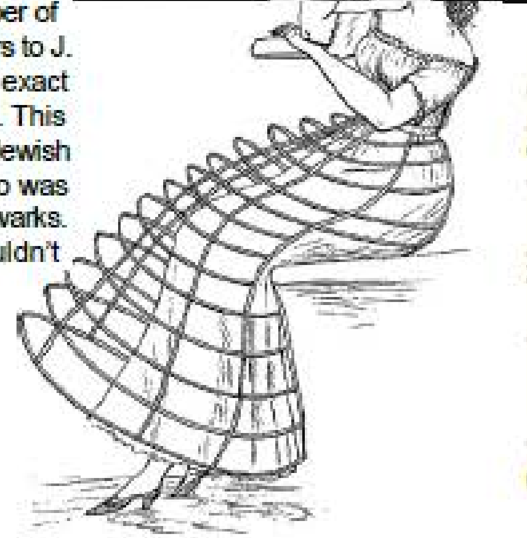

Early examples of Hoover's Crinoline.

---

[2] Crinolines began in the 1860s and are still worn today, usually as part of a formal outfit like an evening gown or wedding dress. The volume of the skirt is not as great as during the Victorian era, so modern crinolines are now most often constructed of several layers of stiff net, with flounces to extend the skirt. If there is a hoop it's now likely to be plastic or nylon. It used to be wood.

[3] For further proof, see Anthony Summers' *Official and confidential: The secret life of J.Edgar Hoover*, GP Putnam's Sons, 1993.

FBI, Mafia and US military work together to cover up history

Spymaster: "The CIA in 1946/47, when they were being created out of the OSS, had a huge argument with the Haganah who were in the business of creating the Mossad, and the two organisations virtually came out of the gate at the same time.

"Murder Inc. (1920s–40s) had been formed and was up and running. Meyer Lansky employed Murder Inc. and was a big player in the war of the Jews between WWI and WWII – fought between the main Jewish gangs in New York. The Jewish gangs virtually killed everybody that was on the other side that had any trace of Jewish blood.

"The Sicilian bosses of Murder Inc. claimed to be producing 200 to 500 Jewish corpses per month [while others report 400 to 700 murders sometime between 1930 and 1940]. It was the most fratricidal war in the history of US crime and it makes all the later wars between the Italian Mafias shrink in comparison.

"Meyer Lansky emerged out of it, not covered in blood, because he subcontracted all the killings to Jewish gunmen working for Murder Inc. which was largely run by the Italian Albert Anastasia.

"In the state of affairs that followed the cover-up, Meyer Lansky became the business partner of Lucky Luciano (1897–1962). Lucky and Meyer argued at times but never fell out to the extent that previous bosses had. They were a unit that was bound together by the blood they'd shed and when Lucky threw in with the US Navy during WWII, Meyer Lansky followed. They created a bond that was still being leaned on in the 1970s and 80s."

Lucky was jailed in 1936 for 30 to 50 years, but only served 10, so he spent all of WWII in prison where he was permitted to run his crime empire unhindered from his jail cell. Lucky was pardoned in 1946 under a secret deal with the US Army Military Intelligence – an oxymoron that funds itself through drugs.

N.Y.C. POLICE
72321
4 18 36

Lucky Luciano.

ASAP, Lucky then masterminded the massive postwar expansion of the international heroin trade to the extent that he was considered the father of modern organised crime. We then got wars wherever there was heroin: Korea (1950–53), Vietnam (1959–75), South America etc.

Time magazine (Jewish) then named Lucky Luciano one of the top 20 influential titans of the 20th century.

Lucky Luciano virtually taught the US military how to fund itself through drugs
(Just look at Afghanistan today.)

The Mafia sinks the SS *Normandie* and the US military cover-up

The SS *Normandie* (French, launched in 1932) was the largest and fastest oceanliner in the world, the most powerful steam turbo-electric propelled passenger ship ever built, and regularly travelled between Le Havre and New York.

After the Nazis took France like a walk in the park in June 1940, the United States seized the SS *Normandie* under the right of angary and renamed her USS *Lafayette* (AP-53). While being converted into a troopship at Manhattan's Pier 88 (1941–42) she caught fire, capsized and sank, never to sail again.

Officially, on 9 February 1942, sparks from a welding torch ignited thousands of life vests stacked in the first-class dining room. They were filled with highly flammable kapok. The woodwork was still intact and the fire spread rapidly.

The efficient fire protection system was disconnected, the NY Fire Department's hoses didn't fit the ship's French inlets, so the fire boats poured water into the seaward side of the blaze and capsized the ship by 2.45 am the next morning. The ship's designer Vladimir Yourkevitch was at the scene, but barred from offering advice to the harbour police. He wanted to open the sea-cocks, flood the lower decks and settle the ship a few feet to the bottom so it wouldn't capsize. This suggestion was then heard by the Port Director Admiral Adolphus Andrews, then also denied.

So the whole rescue was sabotaged and this led to the world's most expensive salvage operation in 1943. The *Normandie/ Lafayette* was then sold for a mere US$161,680 to the American salvage company Lipsett Inc. who scrapped it in October 1946.

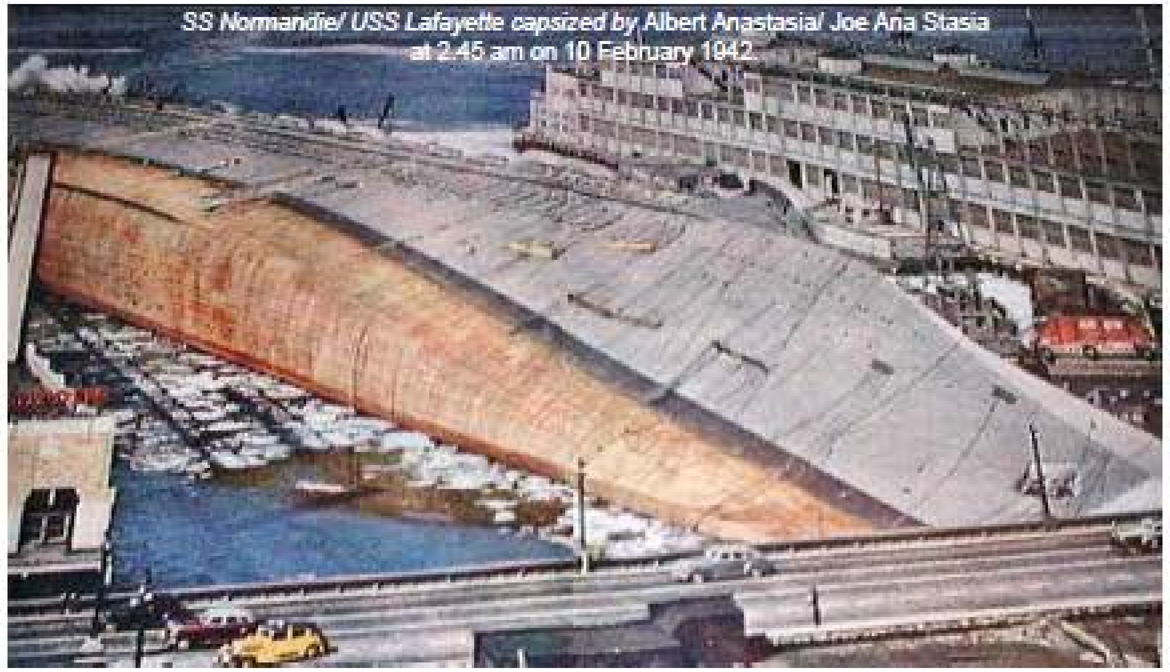

SS Normandie/ USS Lafayette capsized by Albert Anastasia/ Joe Ana Stasia at 2.45 am on 10 February 1942.

Albert Anastasia/ Joe Ana Stasia
a.k.a. Lord High Executioner/ Mad Hatter.

N.Y.C. POLICE
57939

Spymaster: "When the SS *Normandie* went up in flames, the Navy automatically assumed it had been done by the Abwher, but in actual fact it was done by Albert Anastasia. We were given the name 'Joe Ana Stasia' off the files which were passed to us orally. Albert/Joe Anastasia burnt the liner because he had been told to get off it. So Lansky's first duty was to bury the truth. And that was how the myth that the Abwher burnt the liner *Normandie* came into existence."

Albert Anastasia (born Umberto Anastasio, Calabria, Italy, 1902–57) definitely had the connections.

He moved to New York at 17, became active in Brooklyn's waterfront operations and rose to a position of authority in the longshoremen's union (ILA) where he demonstrated his penchant for homicide at the slightest provocation, killing a fellow longshoreman and earning himself 18-months in Sing Sing and Ossining prisons. He was released early for a new trial, but four important witnesses went missing, never to be found ,and presumed killed.

Albert Anastasia was also known as the "Mad Hatter" and "Lord High Executioner" and was a devoted follower of Lucky Luciano. Anastasia became a Cosa Nostra boss running the contract killing gang for Murder Inc. and when Lucky was imprisoned in 1936, it was Anastasia who won the pardon for Luciano by first sinking the world's largest fastest oceanliner SS *Normandie/USS Lafayette* and then helping in the war effort.

So there's the Mafia connection to the US Military, FBI, and Hollywood sinking ships and transporting heroin. The FBI, the Mafia, and the military still work together today importing heroin. But I wouldn't get too smug, because the same thing is happening in your country.[4]

The New Zealand equivalent to J. Edgar Hoover is John Banks

New Zealand's equivalent to the transvestite law enforcer J. Edgar Hoover is John Banks, another transvestite law enforcer.

John Banks has been the Minister of Police, the Minister of Tourism, and the Mayor of Auckland twice. He has been a drug trafficker working with the drug trafficker Phil Warren, who became the Deputy Mayor of Auckland. John Banks is a known and recorded paedophile, and is a known CIA agent. He also talks about himself in the third person as 'Banksey' which is a sure sign of mental illness.

Auckland Mayor John Banks was reported on Newstalk Radio as having fallen off his Harley Davidson motorcycle on Friday 29 May 2009 injuring himself.

This may be a true story, or it may be a cover up as it does raise/ confirm local and CIA suspicions. It is likely that John Banks suffered skeletal damage. The location of the accident was not given, a damage report on his bike was not given, Harley Davidson knows nothing about his damaged bike, and there was a big gay party in Auckland the night before.

Former 2IC of the SIS: "I challenge anyone to show me proof that John Banks has ever had sex with a woman. A female participant statement would be a good start."

---

[4] The Japanese and British governments trafficked heroin right through WWII. The Japs supplied China and the RAF in Burma/ India (where AIR-3 found opium in the pilot's chewing gum); and the British supplied Europe, and anyone with the money.

Spymaster: “There was a big gay party on Thursday night, 28 May 2009 in Auckland. Banks is gay and likely to have attended. He is a known Spiderman and Wall Dancer meaning he will climb up a wall to get to someone's arsehole. Ocassionally someone forgets to hang on, they fall, and this causes skeletal damage.”

“No location was given. No damage reports on the bike were given, and no ACC claims were made. It appears that John Banks was dropped in a homosexual act. The orthopaedic surgeons are quite smart and can tell if someone had lied about their injuries. If there is no damage to his bike, and no ACC claim, it was most likely a grey accident in the grey mansions of the night.”

Former 2IC of the SIS: “Banks is a homosexual. There's no doubt about that, but he hates homosexuals, so it's unlikely he would've attended that party.”

There is nothing on the internet about John Banks' accident, but he is a known cross-dresser, preferring a ballerina's tutu. How about this for a scenario.

> Auckland Mayor John Banks dresses up in woman's clothing, complete with Venetian mask. He's a small guy, a known wall dancer, so he works his way up the gay wall, kind of a yurtle the turtle of sodomy, someone lets go and Babel's gay wall falls down. Banks suffers skeletal damage and needs an excuse for his injured appearance at Mayoral meetings, so his gay PR blame it on his Fatboy Harley.

Spiderman Mayor of Auckland John Banks – Venetian Wall Dancer.

That's how that rocks

So what's the point?

Well, John Banks had qualified to be involved in murder.
As a CIA agent, he knows where the bodies are buried.

So on to Sir Peter Blake,
with John Banks sitting on the ceremonial sidelines all guilded up in braid
. . . or all braided up in guilt.

Sir Peter Blake’s Murder

Peter Blake (1 October 1948–5 December 2001) built the 23-ft keelboat *Bandit* when he was 20, then won the class championship. Nicknamed “six-four” for his height, he soon became a sought-after ocean racer. Having completed his mechanical engineering studies, Blake moved to England in 1970, although few New Zealander’s seemed to know this – even after 30 years.

He met the British Pippa Glanville at Emsworth Sailing Club in Hampshire, just north of the Isle of Wight off the South coast of England and they married in August 1979.

Peter James Blake then received New Zealand’s Yachtsman of the Year (1982 and 1989/90), MBE (1983), World Sailor of the Year (1994), British Yachtsman of the Year (1994), New Zealand Sports Personality of the Year (1989 & 1990), OBE (1991), leader of New Zealand’s Sports Team of the Year (1990, 1995), Royal Yacht Squadron’s Sir Francis Chichester Trophy, a K.B.E. Knighthood in 1995, and the French acknowledge Sir Peter Blake with ‘Prix de L’Aventure Sportive’ in 1996.

Sir Peter Blake was the world’s top sailor. He completed more than 600,000 ocean miles. In 1994 he captured the Jules Verne Trophy sailing non-stop around the world in 75 days, five days under the famed “round the world in 80 days” and was awarded World Sailor of the Year. In 1996 and 2000 he won the America’s Cup and the Whitbread Round the World race in 1989/90.

In 1995 he received the Outstanding Management and Marketing Achievement Award (NZ) and like many sport’s personalities with management skills, he was not immune to coke. With more than 600,000 nautical ocean going racing miles under his belt, coke was his friend, and not the Bible. Have you ever tried reading small print on a yacht?

Regardless, Sir Peter Blake was a meticulous planner and gifted leader. He had an ability to choose the best man for every position. He gave them enough room to move then extracted the best out of them. Blake’s fierce determination to win always inspired immense loyalty from his crews and unlimited confidence from his backers.

Red Socks America’s Cup

Michael Faye’s syndicate brought in Peter Blake to the San Diego America’s Cup Challenge in 1992. There was no win there, but there was in 1996 and New Zealand became the second country to take the trophy off America in 145 years.

During all but one race in the 1996 America’s Cup campaign, Sir Peter Blake wore the same pair of red socks. The only race they lost was when Blake and his “lucky read socks” were rested.

As the simple PR legend goes, Russell Coutts then demanded Blake sail (as mainsheet trimmer) and every time Peter Blake wore a pair of red socks, their boat won. This led to an epic last minute fundraiser, and as soon as a pair of red socks were on the shelves, they were sold in New Zealand – around 250,000. It was a brilliant PR move, the Red Socks fund became the patriotic fervor without war, and millions were spent trying to get a pair.

There was a downside. All the red socks were made in China while New Zealand firms were going broke and there was a big fuss why Blake didnt’ get them made in Mosgiel, NZ.

Then in the 1999–2000 America's Cup off Auckland, Blake's two new 'Black Magic' boats beat the Italian Prada team 5-0 and became the first non-American team to successfully defend the America's Cup.

Blake hanging his laundry out to dry.

This "Sailing Sainthood" gave Sir Peter Blake enough cover to work with Michael Faye on a huge and very well done scam extracting millions out of the Red Socks fund. Sir Peter Blake got NZ$12.5 million and bought a large house on the Thames in London.

Russell Coutts and the other best sailors were then pissed that there was not enough money left for the next campaign, so they began sailing for the competition, and with them went any chance of New Zealand retaining the America's Cup.

Some Kiwi's still have a 'wear red socks in Blake's honour' thing going on, but let's be honest, the NZ$12.5 million theft reduced Sir Peter Blake's international credits, and being an environmental activist, it was enough for the Americans to okay him for murder.

Sir Peter Blake, *Seamaster* log, 4 December 2001: "Again I raise the question: Why are we here? . . . We want to start people caring for the environment as it must be cared for . . . We want to make a difference. Kind regards, Peter"

. . . Dead the next day . . .

Blake signing on Black Magic II.

Jacques Cousteau dies and Sir Peter Blake fills his togs

After Princess Grace Kelly's former lover, Jacques Cousteau, died on 25 June 1997, Sir Peter Blake was named the new 'Head of the Cousteau Society' – to captain the marine research vessel Calypso 2 and "to educate people about the world's ecosystems". Then the evil two-faced fresh-mint dragon that is the United Nations jumped on board in weeks (July 2001) and named Blake 'Special Envoy (Goodwill Ambassador) of the Environment Programme' (UNEP).

Blake then acquired the Cousteau Society's specially-built *Antarctic Explorer* (with her odd-looking 'icebreaker' bow) renamed it *Seamaster*, launched Blakexpeditions (2000), and embarked on an ambitious five-year voyage to study global warming and the effect of pollution on the world's marine ecosystems – "to educate and encourage people to protect life in, on, and around the sea in those parts of the world which are key to the planet's ecosystem".

> "Sir Peter Blake . . . now heads 'blakexpeditions' and, in the 36-metre polar sea exploration yacht *Seamaster*, is embarked on a five-year schedule of expeditions to areas of the world that are key to the Earth's ecosystem."[1]

This was meant to last five years, but it only lasted 12 months, from November 2000 to December 2001. With his death and failed fundraising, it was abandoned and sold off.

Blake left New Zealand in November 2000 and spent January to mid-March 2001 in Antarctica studying wildlife, then made his way up the east coast of South America arriving in the Amazon in September 2001 for eight months sailing, cruising and writing in his diary:

> "Earth is a water planet on which the quality of water defines quality of life. Good water, good life. Poor water, poor life. No water, no life. Our objective is to help protect the waters of the world and, so, life in, on and around those waters."[2]

Jacques Cousteau had funded his career based on no longer being Grace, Princess of Monaco's lover and there was a political aspect to this role that required connections as deep as the bedroom. If we had a heterosexual female Prime Minister Blake, might still be alive.

Sir Peter Blake's Big Environmental Blunder

On 8 February 2001, while on *Seamaster* off Antarctica, Blake gave a speech by satellite phone to the United Nations Environment Programme headquarters in Nairobi, Kenya. It was to contributed to costing him his life:

> "Today we went to see what has happened to the King George VI ice shelf that normally fills the channel between Alexander Island and the mainland at the base of the Antarctic Peninsula . . . it has receded dramatically, especially over the past 8 to 10 years. We weren't able to make it to the face of the ice-shelf, because it is dropping too much ice into the sea as it recedes . . . We are in an area that normally is solid ice at this time of year. Now it has many bergs in it, but is essentially a free waterway, an almost unheard of occurrence . . .
>
> "An area of ice the size of Rhode Island disappeared from ice shelves surrounding the Antarctic Peninsula in 1998. This ice holds back the many glaciers that feed into the area, and its loss threatens to destabilize the continental ice sheets that cover the Antarctic continent. Satellite photos show that 1,200 square miles of ice disappeared from the Larsen-B Ice Shelf during the last Antarctic summer. The Wilkins Ice Shelf on the other side of the peninsula lost 900 square miles of ice."[3]

---

[1] Explorers in Antarctica Find Fresh Evidence of Global Warming, Nairobi, 8 February 2001.

[2] *Ibid.*

[3] 'Antarctic Ice Loss Unprecedented in 1998', 12 May 1999.

Sir Peter Blake went on to say: "The polar ice caps are melting . . . the 1st January 0°C latitude is moving south . . . there is a hole in the ozone layer . . . the albatross has disappeared . . . and whales and dolphins are beaching themselves."

These are all conditions a high frequency electromagnetic beam creates – as per the US Navy and US Air Force's HAARP – High Frequency Active Auroral Research Project.

HAARP does not destroy the very visible infrastructure but the invisible society, relationships and direction of that society. This places us in a Kafkaesque world where psychological labyrinths dominate, where there is no right or wrong, and where the values of the smallest minority rule.[4] If you were to ask me "Is this true?" I would reply with the following connections:

> Helen Clark's PR agent and biographer Brian Edwards has a doctorate in Franz Kafka. The HAARP One World Order is typical of the dysfunctional Kafkaseque world, 'a pointless, schizophrenic society, with tortuous bureaucratic and totalitarian procedures, psychological labyrinths, and masochistic fantasies, into which the bewildered individual cannot escape'.

Is it any wonder Sir Peter Blake was assassinated during the absence of US Navy seals protection. Orders are orders and have to be followed. The military are not allowed to disobey, but they can leave some hint in the air – "Why are we here?".

Spymaster: "When anyone important is killed the first question posed is what happened here that was out of the ordinary; the second is who benefitted; and the third is where did the weapons and ammunition come from. These questions applied to the Peter Blake case pose the question, 'Why were the Navy Seals ordered away from the *Seamaster*?' and 'Who in Washington authorised this?'"

American Embassy's now hire external contract killers

Around 1982/83 the American Office of Naval Intelligence had a manpower report done by some Yids. Instead of locking up the Naval murderers in New Hampshire they suggested hypnotising them using MKULTRA (Mind Control) and basing them in embassies for contract killings with diplomatic protection. This worked for a while until an American working in Rome spilled the beans. From this point on American Naval Intelligence began hiring outside killers, often supplying the weapons and ammunition.

Helen Clark's foreknowledge of Sir Peter Blake's murder

Helen Clark KGB, New Zealand's Prime Minister (1999–2008) greenie, peace activist, and two-time recipient of the Fulbright Foundation Award, went to see Sir Peter Blake less than three weeks before he was assassinated by the well organised and pre-meditated one step removed hit. The dates have been removed from the media to try and limit her attachment.

Helen Clark had prior knowledge as to the CIA plans to murder Sir Peter Blake as did much of the Intelligence world. Like the KGB 'uncles' who worked out of churches, much of this predictive information is passed on in the form of suggestions:

> "Why don't you give the environment a lift and take New Zealand's biggest media circus to Peter Blake. You're an environmentalist and you can steal his kudos before, um, well it'll be good for your career . . . Oh and being seen at such a man's funeral will get you re-elected."

Helen Clark took the biggest press gang in New Zealand's history to visit Sir Peter Blake. She wanted to congratulate the man who had taken over Jacques Cousteau's environmental awareness for the world, to spotlight herself in the international media and shine her shoes on his kudos before it expanded posthumously. Less than 16 days later, Sir Peter Blake was dead.

---

[4] A prime example of this is the lesbians and paedophiles at 0.6% of population ruling the values of the majority family orientated 90% of population. Helen Clark is all of these things, so she had motive to be there.

Helen Clark speaks murder

On 20 November 2001 Helen Clark gave a 'Trade', and 'New Zealand Embassy opening' speech to the business luncheon, Brasilia, in Brazil. This is the same modus operandi that her lesbian cohort Madeleine Albright used to order a murder – very publicly and with coded language. Trade deals are how these things are funded and executed in silence. That was for Chris Beeby 20 months earlier, so let's see what Helen Clark has learnt. Opening an embassy means the language can be lighter, but it has more punch.

Helen Clark in her AIS Grade 5 voice boring the reality out of everyone:

> "I want to welcome you all and to thank you for being able to join us today, so soon after the holiday weekend, for what I have been promised will be an excellent example of traditional Brazilian barbeque cooking. [put strychnine in the food]
>
> The reason for this lunch is to encourage a dialogue between us. It is not my intention to speak for long. But I do want to give you a brief introduction to the reasons for our delegation travelling to Brazil. [excluding cooperative murders]
>
> The New Zealand government has taken a conscious decision to strengthen New Zealand's links with Latin America. Last year I launched a first ever strategy for developing our ties with the nations of Latin America. The opening of our new Embassy here today [20 November 2001] is the most significant outcome so far from our work to deepen and broaden ties with this region. [including cooperative murders]
>
> We believe there are opportunities for New Zealand and Brazil to build closer relations politically and economically, and to support those links through enhanced people to people contacts in areas like education, travel, scientific and technological cooperation, and cultural and sporting exchanges. In order to get to know Brazil better, New Zealand is encouraging more such contact. [including coop murders]
>
> An important part of our growing relationship will be the development of new and exciting trade and economic partnerships. Some of the New Zealand companies represented here today already have strong ties with Brazilian counterparts. Others are looking for new opportunities. And there will be many more opportunities than we have developed to date to buy and sell each others goods and services, to invest in each other's industries, and to create joint ventures to explore each others markets and third country markets. [including coop murders]
>
> Economic links can act as an engine for our mutual growth and prosperity.
>
> New Zealand's ongoing prosperity is reliant on us taking the opportunities which globalisation offers and maximising the gains for our people. That means reaching out to new markets into which to sell our goods and services and ensuring that we get our share of the international pool of investment capital. We see the New Zealand of the future as an export-oriented economy with more globally oriented companies operating from a New Zealand base and developing strong partnerships internationally. [incl. coop murders]
>
> To achieve our goals, government is working closely with business and other stakeholders. This delegation is here as New Zealand incorporated, bringing together government, education, tourism, and private sector interests.
>
> In the twenty-first century my government believes that governments have a role as catalysts for building innovative national economies. In New Zealand, we are determined to provide strategic leadership and to be a facilitator, co-coordinator, broker, and partner in the interests of sustaining good levels of economic growth. . . In building a new upmarket economy, we are emphasising education and skills development: science, research and technology; the commercialisation in New Zealand of knowledge generated by New Zealanders; an immigration policy focused on the recruitment of the specialist talent needed to drive the economy; and targeting foreign direct investment

> into sectors like biotechnology and information and communications technology where we have considerable strength and the capacity to build more [cooperative murders].

[Of course she did the oppoostie of all this, absolutely sabotaged business and the economy, and borrowed and gambled then stole billions as a double agent should.]

> Our new embassy here in Brasilia, and our consulate in São Paulo, will be working to support new economic partnerships between companies in our two countries. [Coop murders]
>
> You will not be surprised at the importance New Zealand attaches to international trade and facilitation. For a small economy like ours, a key priority is increasing the size of the market for our goods. Comprehensive open trade agreements, like our longstanding one with Australia, our recently negotiated economic partnership with Singapore, and the one currently being negotiated with Hong Kong are important vehicles. We are keen to pursue other bilateral agreements, in both North and South America. [Coop murders]
>
> As a developed country member of APEC, we have a commitment to full trade liberalisation by us for our region by 2010. Already 95 per cent of imports to New Zealand by value enter tariff free. [Translated this means 'Globalise us and put us out of work']
>
> New Zealand's top trade policy priority this year was to secure a new WTO round. Along with Brazil and other Cairns Group members we worked hard to ensure that our concerns around agricultural trade were covered in the new round. The results have been very good for us.
>
> For the first time, the WTO will be negotiating around the phase out of export subsidies. The outcome on industrials, covering forestry and fisheries, was positive too.
>
> The events of 11 September were a set back for global economic growth [mass murder]. In that context, a successful outcome at the WTO Ministerial meeting in Doha was all the more important to stimulate confidence in the world economy. Our economies depend on people having the confidence to invest and consume. It is imperative for us all that we create the conditions for strong confidence to return [so murder agreed problem people]. Thank you again for showing your interest in [murder] relations with New Zealand by attending today. I now invite the leader our economic delegation Greg Gent, to introduce his [cover] team."

Helen Clark was so desperate to be seen as an international figure, that the mere threat of Sir Peter Blake's environmental reports interferring with the opening of the embassy, or trade, was enough for her to give the go-ahead for his murder – which she did . . . But New Zealand is a small country and it was more like Helen Clark was allowed to open an Embassy in Brazil in exchange for signing off Sir Peter Blake's murder – which she did . . . And to stop her ever speaking about it, Bush put her in CIA nappies 13 months later and now she is the 3-IC of the UN for America . . . Brazlian couples then flooded to New Zealand and began collecting small bits of information, pull some scams together , set up some hits, and gain a sphere of influence.

Helen Clark shines her shoes on other people's kudos

Shining her shoes on other people's kudos is Helen Clark's modus operandi. It's what won her elections again and again. It stopped people from looking into her multiple crimes, her resulting crime wave, her multiple murders, accessory to murders and attempt to launch a nuclear strike. Hitler did the same thing. Exactly the same thing. Both were greedy for election . . .

Helen Clark has spent thirty-five years building up a base structure that will support everything in Professor Gordon MacDonald's 1966 vision of "How to Wreck the Environment". She is after all a peace activist and she would have read the book *Unless Peace Comes*. Wrecking the environment runs hand in glove with wrecking society and this began in New Zealand in the 1970's with drug-dealing solo-mums who soon gained government support in the form of the DPB (DoPe.&.Bonk).

Author, 2002: "We may have found our evil queen. Lets hope we don't find her pulling the strings in 2025 and our society totally destroyed and devoid of any character – a P.C. Paedophile Country in what was 'Paradise Complete'."

Author, 1 April 2009: "Alas she was promoted to destroy the world from today as the 3-IC of the UN – the dreamboat position for Adolf Hitler – perfectly set up for genocide."

Like Feminism, the HAARP One World Order is a perpetratorless war without measure, where victims share the same level of decomposure and it goes unnoticed. The world becomes uniform and the spontaneity is limited to concerts and raves . . .

Most of the theories we have been taught in schools and universities are falling apart, even the traditional theories of gravity have been challenged, no longer based on mass, but on solar radiation 900,000 times denser than steel . . .

Helen Clark is trained, deconstructed and bribed by the KGB in the destruction of Western Society. First it was New Zealand's society, now it is the world. As per her Russian deconstruction (where her ideology was replaced with that of the Russian state) Helen Clark is fulfilling her communist/lesbian goals, so that the next generation of children will have nothing but lowest common denominator lesbian schoolteachers as role models to look up to.

Sir Peter Blake's murder

MICK P: "Once the old and unnecessary drone that is Helen Clark left the *Seamaster* all on board celebrated with the local dope – cocaine. Sir Peter Blake had used cocaine to help him across the enormously testing roaring forties – voyages that lasted months and weakened the bond with his son. When it comes to relaxing, the Bible doesn't do it.

"Peter could afford to relax. After all he was protected by America's best Navy Seals, with the very latest in weaponry. All on board had gone to dinner at Fazendinha, the little fishing hamlet for some traditional Brazilian barbeque cooking where they were being obnoxious and making a huge noise – like Kiwis overseas who had been cooped up, so the Water Rats thought it wouldn't be a bad idea to raid them.

"After they returned, the Navy Seals and coke suppliers slipped off the boat unannounced, then those onboard were expecting a boatload of hookers.

"By 10 pm on the 5 December 2001, as all crew and reporters were high on coke and feeling invincible. The Water Rats, a group of inbreed half-wits, approached and hit the side of the boat. [Spymaster: "They were criminals acting on behalf of the CIA."]

"Mark Scott, the reporter with a natural and uncanny knack of being where the news is happening,[5] thought it was the Navy Seals returning. He wasn't entirely wrong.

"They were giving the Water Rats their watches etc when Peter Blake came up from the cabin armed and full of braggadacio, so he was shot."

Barry Pickthall's Murder Account

Sir Peter Blake (53) was killed by Brazilian pirates around 10 pm on 5 December 2001 as the *Seamaster* had just lay anchor a few hundred metres from the small fishing hamlet of Fazendinha, Macapa, where the mouth of the Amazon meets the Atlantic.

At presstime, reports on exactly what happened were sketchy and inconsistent and the accounts don't seem to have improved. Barry Pickthall (British yachting journalist) was the best account at the time, and serves as a good background:

---

[5] Mark Scott was the son of historian Dick Scott who applied to the New Zealand Security Intelligence Service as an informant but was rejected because he was "too up himself" and "his perceptions could not be trusted". This is born out by his alienation from his four children, one of them violent to his siblings and partner. Dick Scott then became an historian and was supported by the KGB prostitute Helen Clark with the newly invented Prime Minister's Award for writers with a communist bent.

The photo is of Sir Peter Blake with the America's Cup in 2000.

> “The *Seamaster* and her crew had just completed a three-month expedition up the Amazon, and reached Macapa, where the mouth of the river meets the Atlantic, on December 5. Blake was directed to an anchorage off the small fishing hamlet of Fazendinha, where they dropped the pick several hundred metres offshore to await a visit from the Customs official who would clear them to leave Brazilian waters.
>
> The sun set at around 6 p.m. leaving the yacht in the pitch dark. Her crew decided to go ashore for a meal to celebrate the end of this chapter within the expedition. The following day, they were due to leave for Venezuela and a rendezvous with the Blakexpeditions jungle team that had left the boat in November to explore the upper reaches of the river.
>
> After dinner, the crew were back aboard, having a few beers on deck when Rubens da Silva Souza, a 20-year-old local and his band of pirates, known as the Water Rats, struck. To them, the 119-ft schooner was there for the picking, carrying a group of rich tourists. They had a long record of similar crimes and did not expect to encounter any resistance.
>
> But this group of Kiwis and their guests were no pushover. Crewman Roger Moore squirted beer into the face of one intruder who then pistol-whipped him across the face. Sir Peter Blake rushed below to fetch a rifle and returned up the companionway to see TV cameraman Leon Sefton with a pistol to his head, and to hear the excited shouts of, ‘Money, money, money!’ from the pirates.
>
> Izeal Pontoja da Costa, a 27-year-old on bail for an earlier robbery, confronted Blake in the stairwell. Da Costa was also toting a gun. Blake fired first. The bullet sliced off a finger of the pirate’s gun hand and passed through his forearm. As Da Costa screamed in pain, Ricardo Colares Tavares, another on bail, raised his pistol and fired twice at Sir Peter. The two bullets thudded into Blake’s back, one rupturing his aorta. He died instantly.
>
> Panic then reigned. The pirates grabbed what they could, including cameras, lenses, watches and money. One even ripped the Omega watch from Sir Peter’s wrist and grabbed his rifle before they all scurried back into their boat, and one of *Seamaster*’s inflatables, and sped off into the darkness, firing indiscriminately as they left. One bullet grazed the back of Geoff Bullock.”

These intellectually handicapped [Spymaster: “coke-addicted”] pirates had an average IQ of 50 and virtually no education or money. Typical of dunces, their ears stuck out like wingnuts on ugly fruit. These were the slow manipulated water scum of the Amazon, yet they had the latest in American police issue weaponry, and as per instructions, they took out the tall white headed guy with a shot through the chest from a submachine gun using super-vel soft nosed ammunition normally only sold to police forces and armies.

The CIA use similar ammunition when they want to leave their signature.
The CIA left their signature.
The CIA’s role is to protect American business overseas.
[Protecting the environment was counter to this.]

Water Rats (Ratos de agua)

The Water Rats (*Ratos de agua*) is the Brazilian name for the waterborne robbers who target boats along the Amazon. A loosely organised bands of ne’er-do-wells, most have no education, no jobs, no future, are raised to live on the Amazon shoreline and have no potential for money other than by piracy. They are armed, but rarely harm boaties.

Usually the Water Rats steal for drugs, or supply drugs for goods. The *Seamaster* presented rich pickings for the taking of goods, or the selling of drugs, or receiving goods rather than taking them, or taking back drugs that their neighbour had just supplied.

Since this was the culture, the visiting boat’s armed resistance was unusual and unexpected. Since *Seamaster* was also a large low-lying slow moving vessel, the absence of armed guards was also a cultural breech. So the absence of the Navy Seals was an uncultural breach that gave the Water Rats free reign.

It was also uncultural for the Water Rats to be overtly aggressive, or armed with military and police weapons, or using super-vel soft nosed CIA signature bullets.

The *Seamaster* crew’s defensive/attacking position was also uncultural and Sir Peter Blake should have known better – so maybe there was something wrong with the drugs – maybe the food or the coke had been laced with strychnine.[6]

Sir Peter Blake KBE made the ill-informed uncultural decision to defend his boat, when he could have just let a few items go.

Brazilian Federal Police: “If Peter did not arm himself, this maybe would not have happened. The robbers would have taken the objects and left it at that.”

Or maybe that’s just propaganda blame because it was a CIA hit . . .
and shouldn’t we blame it on an absence of Navy Seals guarding;
the delayed Customs Official;
the tainted drugs;
the Water Rats commission;
complete with CIA signature weapons and bullets; and
Helen Clark confirming the order at the opening of the
New Zealand Embassy in Brazil/ trade speech/ trade deals on 20 November 2001.[7]

Catching Rats

After the raid, the Water Rats melted into the jungle. The authorities then usually give a half-hearted chase just in case the Ratos de Agua had broken down and become unarmed at the same time.

For the rapid capture, the Amazon would normally receive an investment but not strictly environmental lift. With promises of deals made behind the scenes with the New Zealand Embassy and Trade deals 15 days prior, and American and United Nations funding for civic projects, the Water Rats were soon surrendered.

The Navy Seals had tracking devices on the Water Rats’ boats and on the *Seamaster* tender. This is standard practice for contractee, contractor and target.

So “The president of Brazil, Fernando Henrique Silva Cardoso, ordered, ‘Find those men!’ and within 24 hours – a speed just about unprecedented in the Brazilian legal system – seven of the eight were in custody, and claimed that they had no idea anyone famous was onboard.”[8]

All were due to be charged with armed robbery followed by murder (Latrocino) which usually carries an 18-year jail sentence, but more as Blake was a famous Knight and these guys had a born, bred and frequently bailed, history of crime.

But this court case would have given Blake’s environmental cause huge media attention, and America did not want the Environment protected anywhere, especially not in their backyard Amazon.

---

6 Strychnine is a colorless central nervous system stimulant. Extracted from the seeds of nux vomica or other, it is a crystalline poison (C2 1H2 2N2O2).

7 Helen Clark Brazil: new business partnerships, Speech by Rt Hon Helen Clark, Prime Minister of New Zealand, to business luncheon, Brasilia, 20 November 2001, www.beehive.govt.nz.

8 Latitude 38, ‘Peter Blake – Murder on the Amazon’, www. latitude38.com/features/Blake.htm.

Since the CIA had contracted the Water Rats to kill Sir Peter Blake, they couldn't have this coming up in court. Instead a cheaper option was brokered and seven of the eight Water Rats were allowed to escape jail. The eighth (if he/she existed) was never captured.

The jail doors were left open and the Water Rats including Rubens da Silva Souza (20), Izeal Pontoja da Costa (27), and Ricardo Colares Tavares were allowed to escape. Without transport, they ran into a clearing and were gunned down, all seven of them, and their bodies left to the Black Caiman (20 foot crocodile)

So the whole thing was over in 8 days.

No court case, no media coverage, and no saying to the world's media for weeks on end, how much Sir Peter Blake K.B.E. appreciated and understood the environment.

Sir Peter Blake was dead. Roger Moore (crew) had his face pistol-whipped. Leon Sefton (cameraman) had a pistol held to his head. Geoff Bullock had a bullet graze across his back. Mark Scott was in shock and in tears, and Barry Barry Pickthall took notes. The environment was set back and there seemed to be a lack of any environmental follow up.

Peter's last log entry was: "Why are we here?"

My question is: "Why was Helen Clark there?"

Well Peter, those who do good are killed off – "No good deed goes unpunished" – and it is the contract killers who are rewarded with government postings, many of them in the Diplomatic Corp, the United Nations or NATO.

You're dead, Helen Clark is now the 3-IC of the United Nations, and Willie has a VC.

Sir Peter Blake, the saviour of the seas, the New Zealand icon, the world's greatest sailor, was dead with no one to protect Antarctica. Was this not the CIA's goal?

Was this not the CIA's goal to put out a threat to all others protecting the environment? By August 2003, the Seamaster was up for sale and with it the end of blakexpeditions.[9]

The *Seamaster* was renamed *Tara* and here it is entrenched in 2007 Arctic winter ice.

---

[9] *New Zealand Herald*, 'Sale of Blake's boat threatens end for nature project', Claire Trevett, 8 August 2003.

The Funeral

Team New Zealand America's Cup secretive compound on Auckland's viaduct opened its doors at the news of Blake's death. The New Zealand flag and the 'red socks' flags flew at half-mast. Half the money was gone. Sir Peter Blake KBE did win the America's Cup twice, but he also prevented New Zealand from winning it again. Blake's body was returned to England for burial. Despite the short notice, his funeral was held on Saturday 14 December 2001.

Helen Clark had practical foreknowledge of Sir Peter Blake's murder to such an extent that it was a joint venture Operation, but spoke at his funeral as an aggrieved party anyway. She called Blake "a national hero" and had ordered flags lowered to half-mast nationwide.

13 months later NZPM Helen Clark was wearing CIA nappies (4 January 2003–) and is now a CIA asset in control of the non-Development of the Third World (April Fools' 2009–) through genocide by vaccines laced with AIDS, civil war around resources, mass murder, the non-removal of Mugabe (under Helen Clark, NZ diplomat Don McKinnon GCVO was a key player) and the non-interference in war, while preventing anyone else from doing any good, often by killing them . . . as was the case with Sir Peter Blake, Chris Beeby and myself (x7).

A week after six-four died, the IOC Executive Board announced the Olympic Order would be awarded to Sir Peter Blake. His Majesty King Constantine then presented this to Lady Pippa Blake 11 months later (8 November 2002). God those Olympians are slow and drawn out. The International Olympic Committee Executive Board always looks like a bunch of pastel-wearing paedophiles. Guess how they choose the next country . . .?

Lady Pippa née Glanville Blake got her house secured (with the NZ$12.5 million taken no longer redeemable from Sir Peter Blake) and Pippa was now both vulnerable and available. Helen Clark loves a female who's been involved in a crime, so she hit on Pippa every chance she got, or took . . .

At the interview of Lady Pippa Blake at the launching of the America's Cup in February 2003, Helen Clark took the microphone and took over as the television interviewer. She grabbed Lady Pippa Blake by the forearm, eye-gazed, blushed, was very obviously turned on and wouldn't let go – the Black Widow pumping blood into the Red Socks Widow in search of small-arms-fisting. For a fisted lesbian in CIA nappies, it's like grabbing a phallus . . .

It was strange enough that the Prime Minister was interviewing someone for TV, but getting turned on in the process was ongoing confirmation to Helen Clark's controllers.

The KGB's Helen Clark.
The CIA's paedophile John Banks.
First Laddy child sex abuser Peter Davis.
Lady Pippa Blake.
Blake children . . . son not sufficiently bonded.

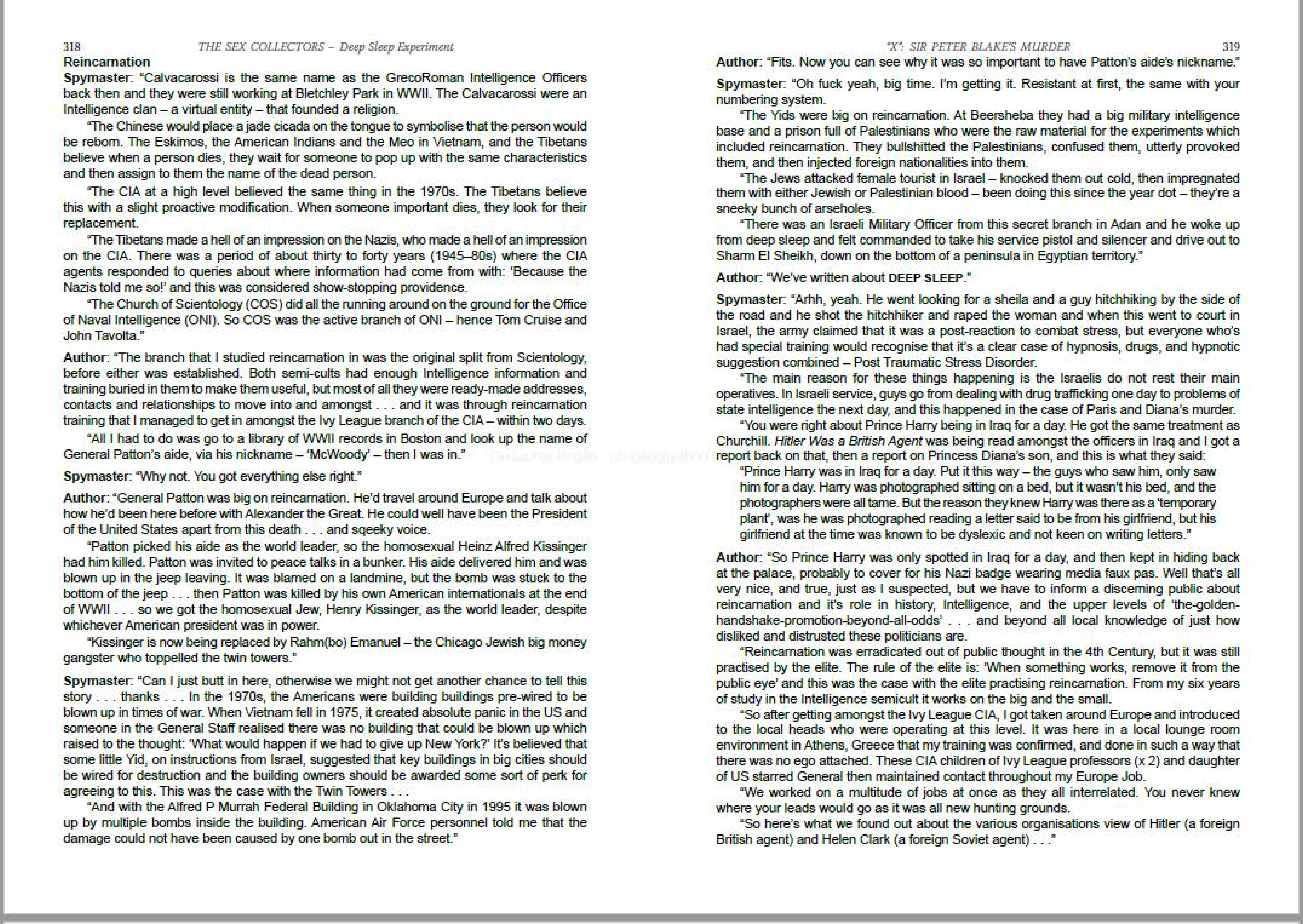

Reincarnation

Spymaster: "Calvacarossi is the same name as the GrecoRoman Intelligence Officers back then and they were still working at Bletchley Park in WWII. The Calvacarossi were an Intelligence clan – a virtual entity – that founded a religion.

"The Chinese would place a jade cicada on the tongue to symbolise that the person would be reborn. The Eskimos, the American Indians and the Meo in Vietnam, and the Tibetans believe when a person dies, they wait for someone to pop up with the same characteristics and then assign to them the name of the dead person.

"The CIA at a high level believed the same thing in the 1970s. The Tibetans believe this with a slight proactive modification. When someone important dies, they look for their replacement.

"The Tibetans made a hell of an impression on the Nazis, who made a hell of an impression on the CIA. There was a period of about thirty to forty years (1945–80s) where the CIA agents responded to queries about where information had come from with: 'Because the Nazis told me so!' and this was considered show-stopping providence.

"The Church of Scientology (COS) did all the running around on the ground for the Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI). So COS was the active branch of ONI – hence Tom Cruise and John Tavolta."

Author: "The branch that I studied reincarnation in was the original split from Scientology, before either was established. Both semi-cults had enough Intelligence information and training buried in them to make them useful, but most of all they were ready-made addresses, contacts and relationships to move into and amongst . . . and it was through reincarnation training that I managed to get in amongst the Ivy League branch of the CIA – within two days.

"All I had to do was go to a library of WWII records in Boston and look up the name of General Patton's aide, via his nickname – 'McWoody' – then I was in."

Spymaster: "Why not. You got everything else right."

Author: "General Patton was big on reincarnation. He'd travel around Europe and talk about how he'd been here before with Alexander the Great. He could well have been the President of the United States apart from this death . . . and sqeeky voice.

"Patton picked his aide as the world leader, so the homosexual Heinz Alfred Kissinger had him killed. Patton was invited to peace talks in a bunker. His aide delivered him and was blown up in the jeep leaving. It was blamed on a landmine, but the bomb was stuck to the bottom of the jeep . . . then Patton was killed by his own American internationals at the end of WWII . . . so we got the homosexual Jew, Henry Kissinger, as the world leader, despite whichever American president was in power.

"Kissinger is now being replaced by Rahm(bo) Emanuel – the Chicago Jewish big money gangster who toppelled the twin towers."

Spymaster: "Can I just butt in here, otherwise we might not get another chance to tell this story . . . thanks . . . In the 1970s, the Americans were building buildings pre-wired to be blown up in times of war. When Vietnam fell in 1975, it created absolute panic in the US and someone in the General Staff realised there was no building that could be blown up which raised to the thought: 'What would happen if we had to give up New York?' It's believed that some little Yid, on instructions from Israel, suggested that key buildings in big cities should be wired for destruction and the building owners should be awarded some sort of perk for agreeing to this. This was the case with the Twin Towers . . .

"And with the Alfred P Murrah Federal Building in Oklahoma City in 1995 it was blown up by multiple bombs inside the building. American Air Force personnel told me that the damage could not have been caused by one bomb out in the street."

Author: "Fits. Now you can see why it was so important to have Patton's aide's nickname."

Spymaster: "Oh fuck yeah, big time. I'm getting it. Resistant at first, the same with your numbering system.

"The Yids were big on reincarnation. At Beersheba they had a big military intelligence base and a prison full of Palestinians who were the raw material for the experiments which included reincarnation. They bullshitted the Palestinians, confused them, utterly provoked them, and then injected foreign nationalities into them.

"The Jews attacked female tourist in Israel – knocked them out cold, then impregnated them with either Jewish or Palestinian blood – been doing this since the year dot – they're a sneeky bunch of arseholes.

"There was an Israeli Military Officer from this secret branch in Adan and he woke up from deep sleep and felt commanded to take his service pistol and silencer and drive out to Sharm El Sheikh, down on the bottom of a peninsula in Egyptian territory."

Author: "We've written about **DEEP SLEEP**."

Spymaster: "Arhh, yeah. He went looking for a sheila and a guy hitchhiking by the side of the road and he shot the hitchhiker and raped the woman and when this went to court in Israel, the army claimed that it was a post-reaction to combat stress, but everyone who's had special training would recognise that it's a clear case of hypnosis, drugs, and hypnotic suggestion combined – Post Traumatic Stress Disorder.

"The main reason for these things happening is the Israelis do not rest their main operatives. In Israeli service, guys go from dealing with drug trafficking one day to problems of state intelligence the next day, and this happened in the case of Paris and Diana's murder.

"You were right about Prince Harry being in Iraq for a day. He got the same treatment as Churchill. *Hitler Was a British Agent* was being read amongst the officers in Iraq and I got a report back on that, then a report on Princess Diana's son, and this is what they said:

> "Prince Harry was in Iraq for a day. Put it this way – the guys who saw him, only saw him for a day. Harry was photographed sitting on a bed, but it wasn't his bed, and the photographers were all tame. But the reason they knew Harry was there as a 'temporary plant', was he was photographed reading a letter said to be from his girlfriend, but his girlfriend at the time was known to be dyslexic and not keen on writing letters."

Author: "So Prince Harry was only spotted in Iraq for a day, and then kept in hiding back at the palace, probably to cover for his Nazi badge wearing media faux pas. Well that's all very nice, and true, just as I suspected, but we have to inform a discerning public about reincarnation and it's role in history, Intelligence, and the upper levels of 'the-golden-handshake-promotion-beyond-all-odds' . . . and beyond all local knowledge of just how disliked and distrusted these politicians are.

"Reincarnation was erradicated out of public thought in the 4th Century, but it was still practised by the elite. The rule of the elite is: 'When something works, remove it from the public eye' and this was the case with the elite practising reincarnation. From my six years of study in the Intelligence semicult it works on the big and the small.

"So after getting amongst the Ivy League CIA, I got taken around Europe and introduced to the local heads who were operating at this level. It was here in a local lounge room environment in Athens, Greece that my training was confirmed, and done in such a way that there was no ego attached. These CIA children of Ivy League professors (x 2) and daughter of US starred General then maintained contact throughout my Europe Job.

"We worked on a multitude of jobs at once as they all interrelated. You never knew where your leads would go as it was all new hunting grounds.

"So here's what we found out about the various organisations view of Hitler (a foreign British agent) and Helen Clark (a foreign Soviet agent) . . ."

Helen Clark – the reincarnation of Adolf Hitler

Helen Clark KGB was known in New Zealand Intelligence as "the Black Widow". Whenever she opened something the people got sick (Mt Albert swimming pool etc) and many of the famous people she met, would die soon after.

This fits in with the Rothschild view of:

'Helen Clark is the Hitler of the South Pacific.'

and the Rothschild Occult Inner Circle view:

'Helen Clark is the reincarnation of Adolf Hitler'.

It also fits in with the Soviet view of Helen Clark as:

> 'Our St Petersburg Tavistock Freud Hilton graduate, sex collector trained prostitute, and the KGB agent "ie" (pronounced 'e') meaning 'island' in Arabic (the language of Soviet codenames) and 'that is' in English, and referring to the island of Lesbos (Helen is a lesbian), and New Zealand's two main islands (North & South) with Stewart Island's proximity to Antarctica.'[10]

'Hitler died in Spain on 19 February 1950' and New Zealand's Intelligence codename in relation to Antarctica is 'New Spain'.

Helen Elizabeth Clark's initials are HEC . . . so her identifying string became:

"HEC that is Hitler in New Spain (New Zealand/ Antarctica)" . . . or

"Heck, that is Hitler in New Zealand".

Intelligence does have its humour.

This also fits in with the Germans teutonic view of reincarnation where:

> 'Hitler escaped in a WK202 submarine to Spain and died on 19 February 1950 of stomach cancer from radioactive plates inserted in the mattress (the British killed their own agent), and Adolf Hitler was reborn as Helen Elizabeth Clark in the Waikato (WK) on 20 of February – 20/2, 202 – WK202.'[11]

This was then supported by the 560-page Hitler was a British Agent, and a meeting I had arranged with the German president of the Scientists Club in St Petersburg and the Dalai Lama's doctor's doctor where we sat around in 'Bolliwood' restaurant on Ponsonby Road, in Ponsonby, Auckland discussing reincarnation in February 2003.

How can one arrange such a meeting you ask?

> The CIA had these occult workers around the world in the 1950s and '60s looking for the reincarnation of prominent WWII players. They did this under the guise of 'Health'[12] and posed as nurses and teachers, and would go to schools to check out the kids. Helen Clark went to Epsom Girls Grammar and bordered. The CIA's health programme spotted her as 'the reincarnation of Adolf Hitler' in 1967. They then gifted her to the KGB on the special occult day – 7 June 1967 – the 130th anniversary of Alois Hitler's birth (Adolf's papa) so it's all 6s & 7s – madness. The KGB then whisked her away to St Petersburg for training, via Stockholm, from 1968.

Helen Clark is also recognised by the United Nations – who are a Rothschild occult genocide eugenics movement – as 'Adolf Hitler reincarnated'.

---

[10] My mother is only one of 70 female inhabitants on Stewart Island. She likes penguins. Can't give it up.

[11] She also uses the date 26 February 1950, but this comes with some Counter-Intelligence interference. How would she know when she was born? Reincarnation works on the big and the small.

[12] I checked out the CIA name of this 'Health' movement and it was an incredibly long string of websites, with small bits of linking information that went all the way down to Antarctica, around Dome Charlie, and then my web crashed, all the websites were lost, all my emails disappeared, it took two weeks to repair, and I haven't been back since. So it's just referred to as "Health".

Well, when we were working on the fall of the Berlin Wall (which meant bringing the CIA and the KGB together) we had to avoid Intelligence, as it was Intelligence on both sides that were keeping the Berlin Wall up – the CIA, the KGB, and the STASI – hence our training in semicults, travel through semicults, making our contacts and relationships through semicults – all with enough Intelligence information and training in them to achieve the results we needed . . . hence studying reincarnation for six years and an instant admission into Ivy League CIA.

The Berlin Wall was actually a paedophile string running through Europe, on both sides of Intelligence, and it was actually shame that was keeping the Berlin Wall up. So al the people involved were not controlled by shame. What does that make them – a bunch of idealists – or a bunch who could still operate somewhat consciously from their subconscious. Anyway, as a result . . .

Helen Clark was considered:

by the Rothschild's to be 'The Hitler of the South Pacific';

by the Rothschild Occult Inner Circle as 'The Reincarnation of Adolf Hitler';

by the Russians as 'Heck that is Hitler in New Zealand working on Antarctica';

by the Germans as 'Hitler was reborn in the Waikato on 20 February 1950';

by the CIA as 'The reincarnation of Adolf Hitler';

by the United Nations as 'Adolf Hitler reincarnated';

by the New Zealand SIS as 'The Black Widow';

and by the Australians as "Alan Clark" . . . & . . . "Your Prime Minister has a woman's name!"

Recognising Helen Clark/Adolf Hitler's propensity for killing, the United Nations placed her as their 3-IC, in charge of depopulating Africa and other Third World nations and within a week we got the Swine Flu – a hoax that went to 1 level below worldwide pandemic (4 May 2009) when all the symptoms were the same as the side effects of the cure – Tamiflu – and the swine flu was known to be on the wain.

My guess is all the nations who had bought Donald Rumsfeld's Tamiflu hoax cure were getting rid of stock before its use-by date expired, and this was just a warm up for the genoicidal agent Helen Clark/Adolf Hitler.

Helen's position as 3-IC of the UN was formally announced from New Zealand's parliament on the morning of April Fool's Day, 1 April 2009 – which shows what they really think of her.

> This was despite letters, emails, radio interviews, books from September 2005, and newspaper articles stating that Helen Clark is a contract killer on 22 March 2007, 5 April 2009 etc., and a NOTICE OF GENERAL APPEAL lodged in Court on 2 July 2008 and 7 November 2008, and the widely accepted and published view that her husband is a homosexual child sex abuser.

Helen Clark also likes chocolate children including an impoverished 10-year-old Vietnamese girl in 2002. Hitler was also partial to young boys.

And as Hitler was a coprophiliac who enjoyed having his faeces spooned out of him, Helen Clark enjoys a deep fisting, even taking the world fisting champion to the UN with her – Heather Simpson, otherwise known as "H2", with Helen being "H1", or "the fisted one".

Heather won the title "**WORLD FISTING CHAMPION**" at the Sydney Gay Olympics, held straight after the pastel Olympics in 2000, Sydney.

Both Helen Clark and Adolf Hitler are the same height, have the same eyes, the same facial structure, features, posture and demeanour, and both have Androgen Insensitivity Syndrome (AIS) to the same degree. Adolf Hitler was AIS Grade 3 (effeminate male) and Helen Clark is AIS Grade 5 (masculine female). Grade 4 is hermaphrodite.

They also have a very similar career history through politics.

They were also both Minister of Security, Intelligence and the Arts, were both Tavistock trained, were both prostitutes, and were both bisexual double agent Prime Ministers.

They also both over touted their career history as the website shows, right.

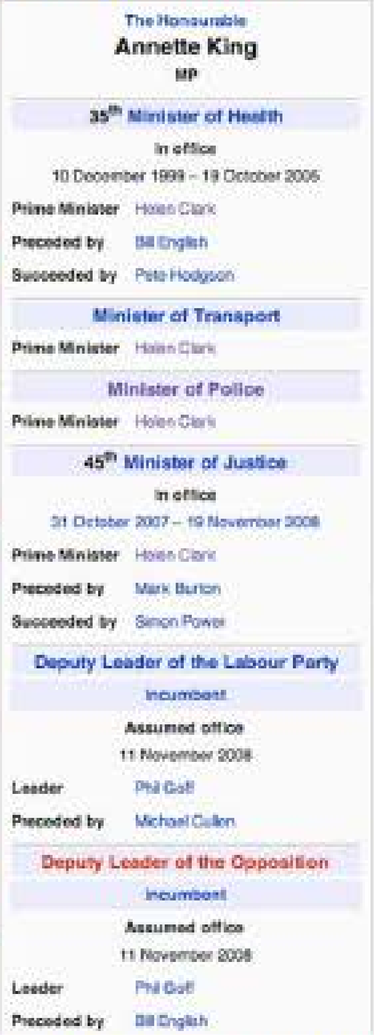

The Honourable
Annette King
MP

35th Minister of Health
In office
10 December 1999 – 19 October 2005
Prime Minister Helen Clark
Preceded by Bill English
Succeeded by Pete Hodgson

Minister of Transport
Prime Minister Helen Clark

Minister of Police
Prime Minister Helen Clark

45th Minister of Justice
In office
31 October 2007 – 19 November 2008
Prime Minister Helen Clark
Preceded by Mark Burton
Succeeded by Simon Power

Deputy Leader of the Labour Party
Incumbent
Assumed office
11 November 2008
Leader Phil Goff
Preceded by Michael Cullen

Deputy Leader of the Opposition
Incumbent
Assumed office
11 November 2008
Leader Phil Goff
Preceded by Bill English

This all backs up that the world is run on shame
. . . and . . .
Those who are promoted are promoted on bullshit.

The similarities between Helen Clark and Adolf Hitler are evident . . . Shining their shoes on other people's kudos and using this for networking leverage is what Helen Clark and Adolf Hitler did.

In both cases, the famous old men then had a tendency to die. This always made Helen and Hitler prominent at their funerals.

The public then perceived Helen as a concerned party full of empathy. Hitler got the same treatment by the media – **"How great are thou"**, but we all know the media is total crap. It's where dogs go to get their hair done.

Both shined their shoes and were complicit to the murders.

Only the few in Intelligence perceived Helen Clark as a guilty party with complicit foreknowledge in those murders.

We had foreknowledge of those murders.

When Helen Clark ordered a murder, it was often Sian Elias who picked up the contracts. Sian Elias is Jewish. Jews are the preferred contract killers. Sian Elias is also Mossad and Sayanim Mossad. She is also the Chief Justice of New Zealand and under her:

The New Zealand Judiciary can't even settle a debt.

The Special Investigation Group ("S.I.G.mund Freud") that roots out terrorists acknowledge Sian Elias as Mossad. They admitted so at my place. So if the 'SIGmund Freud' were doing their job, they would be arresting their bosses.

But the Jewish Sian Seerpoohi Elias is married to a child sex abuser. That was how she got her kickstart as Chief Justice, paid for by her husband . . .

And as for the terrorists, I made a documentary movie on the No. 5 terrorist in New Zealand and during the process I was named in the top 10, later downgraded to 'dangerous', later downgraded to 'thinking woman's crumpet'.

The movie was made from October to December 2008 and by April 2009 I had found out that No. 5 reports to both sides (Police Narc) and No. 2 was an Internal Affairs agent.

The former 2IC of the SIS came around and told me how they (the Security Intelligence Service) used to infiltrate communist organisations in the 1960s and 70s and take over the leadership, collect the names and addresses of those attending and deliver them to government. In one case, there was only one communist left in the entire organisation.

As for New Zealand Terrorists, No. 2 was Tama Iti – a 5' tattooed bisexual Maori who can't hunt, kill and gut a wild pig and relies on donations and media support – and No. 5 was the treacherous Jamie Lockett who's all over the place like a mad woman's shit and equally as productive. Even Count Porn backs this up. I ended up getting a trespass order against him, not because he was a terrorist, but because he was a manipulative welching narc with a tendency to sabotage who reported to the police.

I also met No. 1 on the terrorist list. He's a nice guy, tatooed, overweight and works 100 metres from me and 200 metres from the Prime Minister's residence. He fixes computers and gets around on an 80cc Suzuki motorcyle with his belly spilling over the petrol tank. Rangi was a terrorist in that he knew what he was talking about and had facial tattoos – as per the Maori culture – which fearful white people react to. In all other words, he was someone's chatty neighbour who had done a lot of study . . .

So we have to look at the government as being the terrorist . . .
The same thing is happening in your country.

And as for Sigismund Schlomo Freud was also a Jewish paedophile minder. That was how he got his kickstart . . . at the same hospital Princess Diana was murdered at. So nothing's changed to this day (1880–2001/Sir Peter Blake's murder).

What is that 121 years. Enough procrastinating already!

Sir Peter Blake: "While I'm away sailing, see what you can muster . . .
. . . and no farting into the wind . . ."

New Zealand politicians
have never achieved
anything – ever.

And when someone
comes along and
actually does
something,
they shit all over them.

This is generally
because
New Zealand politicians
are
made of shit,
have a history of shit,
and are controlled by
the shit on them.

"I'm in Heaven."

MURDER ATTEMPTS ON GREG HALLETT

& Financial Assassinations, Hobbling, Boiler-Plating & Blacklisting

1. **Unprotected Custody** (22 June 1999)
2. **Talkback Radio and the Front Left Wheel Bearing Locknut** (2 April 2002)
3. **Cook Island's Speech and the Poisoned Steering Wheel** (23 August 2002)
4. **Mossad Surveillance and confirmation of Michael King's murder** (14–22 May 2004)
   4a. Three Financial Assassinations:
      Pru Gee, Steve Whalley, and Peter Williams QC (25 May 2004–)
5. **Poisoned Coffee** (27 July 2007)
6. **Killer Nappies' Driving Rage** (26 October 2007)
7. **Hyperinflated Tyres** (17–27 March 2008)
8. **Helen Clark orders a hit** (3 June 2008–)

(See Attachment "N", 'Newspaper Articles' for published accounts (22 March 2007–5 April 2009)

Unprotected Custody (22 June 1999)

On 22 June 1999 I was invited into the Auckland Central Police Station, detained in the basement and then transferred to the Auckland District Court cells by Clint Rickards, later involved in the murder of Michael King.

I was never shown the arrest warrant or explained what it was for.

I was then transferred to my own cell and soon joined by the schizophrenic 2-IC of the Papakura Chapter of Black Power. People have died in cells, and this guy was certainly capable of extreme violence.

I was then arraigned before the judge who could not understand the charges and nor could the police. The police provided no evidence and no explaination. The case was thrown out.

It was only when researching this book that I discovered the charges were for a domestic 1,000 km away in Christchurch under a different name.

This whole thing – a police stich-up – had been rigged by Clint Rickards in exchange for promotion from Waikato Area Commander . . . to Auckland City District Commander and Assistant Police Commissioner on 16 October 2003.

I was researching the Family Court – a murderous crime creation and paedophile movement – and working on my custody case at the time. I'd also bought a house. The police hate it when one of their targets buys a house. They then try to sabotage ownership which they did.

This wasn't a murder attempt, but it was a threat. The murder attempts were to come when I mentioned Helen Clark was KGB and the papers awarding me custody were in the post in August 2002.

Political Ombudsman Anand Satyanand then began working on my case (28 August 2002–) with Auckland City District Commander and Assistant Police Commissioner Rickards (25 November 2003–) who was then charged with rape (31 January 2004) and became a lawyer (2008), and Satyanand was made Governor-General (23 August 2006).

Talkback Radio and the Front Left Wheel Bearing Locknut (2 April 2002)

I went on Radio 1ZB in January 2002 and said “Deconstructing’ the subconscious was part of the Cold War and ‘reconstructing’ the subconscious was one of the most powerful tools. Deconstructing the subconscious made one think like the state. Reconstructing the subconscious allowed one to reach their own potential.”

In February 2002, Helen Clark – a deconstructed KGB agent trained to think like the Russian state – reacted by employing six (6) KGB agents into the New Zealand Security Intelligence Service (NZSIS).

On 26 March 2002 I went on the same radio station and said: “Helen Clark is a KGB agent trained in the destruction of a Western Society by the process of deconstruction.”

The talkback host and Austraila Security Intelligence Organisation Captain Leighton Smith (Captain Oasis/ CASIO/ Captain ASIO) asked me:

“Have there been any attempts on your life?”

I replied, “No”, and CASIO inferred that there could be.

When interviewing the KGB in Moscow on 9 December 1989, they mentioned this deconstruction as:

“Sex Communism . . . we have some of your Australasian women training here.”

I didn’t drive my car for a week as I was still researching *Are You My Father? The Family Court and Other Experiments* (published a month later on 2 May 20002) and was walking to the grocery store for supplies.

Then on 2 April 2002, I went down to the basement carpark and noticed that the pedestrian door had been tampered with at 9–11 Fox Street, Parnell, Auckland.

The door jamb was loose, the bottom plate was loose, and the lock wasn’t working.

Not thinking too hard, nor making any connection that I was the target, I got into my charcoal 1990 Mercedes 300E and drove it for the first time in week.

While travelling along the motorway at 80 km/h, and 3 km into my journey, I notice the front left wheel wobbling like it was going to fall off, so I pulled off at the nearest exit, Gillies Ave, and cruised down to my mechanic who hoisted my car up, took the front left wheel off, and moved the wheel bearing locknut with his hand. (4 km had been driven.)

He turned to me white-faced and said: “I’ve been working on Mercedes for thirty years and I have never seen a wheel bearing locknut that I could turn with my hand. It has a reverse thread which means it tightens as you drive.”

Some curious developments then happened. The president of the Scientists Club in St Petersburg asked to see me. We spoke about deconstruction and reconstruction, and the physical sciences, like the nature of gravity et cetera, and after a months briefing, he was satisfied with my grasp, and trained me as the Prime Minister and Governor-General of New Zealand – 10 hours – and the next day I met with Intelligence, and two weeks later, more Intelligence.

We told stories for four years, and one of my early ones was the car tampering. Combined, they explained that it was possible to undo a wheel bearing locknut without taking the wheel off – and a Police, Army, or SIS mechanic could do it – but you couldn’t tighten it up without taking the wheel off.

They surmised that it was a Police and SIS job, asked a few questions around the place, and never changed their story.

In my experience and opinion, this was a murder attempt – a hit. It was designed so I’ drive at high speeds along the motorway, the wheel would come off, I’d crash out of control and anyone else killed was NHI – No Humans involved.

Cook Island’s Speech and the Poisoned Steering Wheel (23 August 2002)

After 8½ years I had been awarded custody of my child on 16 August 2002 but didn’t know it yet. I flew to the Cook Islands for an eight day holiday (15–23 August 2002) and while there I gave a speech to Rotary at Hopsing’s Restaurant.

I had spoken at six other Rotaries, so I wasn’t shy. Normally you get 20 minutes to speak, but I took two hours. No one seemed bored and in the last half hour people from the audience came up and spoke and added their bits.

During the speech I predicted the floods, that the Chinese would find an excuse to fund a new Police building and a new Court building, and this would be from some engineered event where some low IQ loner native guy would bash some 50 year old spinster woman, that there would be floods and it would be this high in Hopsing’s Restaurant . . . Helen Clark is KGB.

All of this came to pass – the guy murdered the woman within 10 days, the Chinese funded the new Police building, then the new Courthouse, and a series of hurricanes caused floods – one of them this high in Hopsing’s Restaurant.

When you’ve done a lot of research and your speaking, sometimes you get into the zone and predictions come out – what can I say.

Anyway, after the speech I was up at the bar having a drink and the Australian Naval guy was there. He got really drunk then let slip that he couldn’t guarantee my safety home, I’d better keep both eyes open and another set in the back of my head.

So I flew out that night on the redeye (3.30 am 21 August 2002) through the timezone and arrived back in Auckland at 7 am on 23 August 2002. The same 300E Mercedes was parked undercover at the Auckland International Airport with just a steel bar for a door, so anyone could get in or out. The back of the steering wheel was sticky at 10 and 2 o’clock, but I didn’t think much of it as I used to eat pies while driving – except that the wheel was only sticky when it was warm – and this was early morning winter.

Anyway, I got home to Judges Bay where all the judges live, picked up an apple at 8 am, took a bite and the epicac poison transferred from my hands, to the apple, to my mouth. Within 5 minutes I was really quite sick. I got hot and cold fevers, I was vomiting and shitting, my heart was going fast then slow, I was going in and out of consciousness and the juices in my mid-to-lower spine were doing funny things like I was dying – fading in and out of my body.

So I spent the next 12 hours in bed doing all of the above. I had to pick up my daughter from the Sky City Bus Station just after 8 pm and I considered myself just well enough to drive. I’d had a lot of fevers as a kid, and a reasonably rough and tumble childhood, so I was used to burning off fevers and recovering from tarmac injuries.

I didn’t know at the time that my custody papers had been delivered.

So I drove to the Sky City Bus Station and at 8.10 pm on Beach Road, Constable Cassin attacked my car, then on Hobson Street he attacked me again, hauled me out of the Merc, threw me face down on Hobson Street, handcuffed me, drove me past my daughter, and wrote out a list of charges amounting to $1,490. 20 mintues later my daughter was picked up and delivered to the Police station. A year later I was convicted and 3 months after that all charges were dropped in the High Court because Cassin was a convicted criminal and **the District Court refused to keep a copy of the Constable’s confession as a criminal.**

It is my understanding that because I had mentioned that Helen Clark is a KGB agent, and because I had won custody, I was poisoned with intent of death, and when that didn’t work, I was attacked by a criminal police officer working for the Combined Investigations Unit, then taxed and stripped of the liberty of driving.

This was a KGB/ SIS/ MOSSAD/ NEW ZEALAND POLICE murder attempt.

Mossad Surveillance and confirmation of Michael King's murder (14–22 May 2004)

Michael King had just been killed on 29 March 2004 with epicac on the steering wheel, an impact activated explosive, and a Mossad couple travelling behind in case this failed to go off automatically. We were warned of this by Wellington Police by phone on 3 February 2004 and with a visit to Auckland on 4 February 2004. We also knew we were targets.

I'd been living on Waiheke Island since September 2003. I noticed the Mossad trailing me from 14 May 2004 as I left the supermarket. Three Mossad walked in – a man (55) and a woman (34) laughing like bad spies. The third, a contract hands-on killer, tan skin with short cropped black hair walked in last (male, 32) kneeled down blocking the doorway, then did his shoelace up for 30 seconds and the whole time he was looking up at me as if getting undeniable facial recognition, body mass, posture, and checking me for fight training.

Over the next eight days I notice vehicles tracking and drivers noticing me. The police were reporting my whereabouts to their undercover who is also my undercover, so I got reports as to how I was driving and where I had been.

A white male Mossad agent (35) was marking my cottage and befriended the man next door which is always a good excuse for a dead end road. On 22 May 2004 this Mossad agent did a U-turn in front of the cottage and got stuck in the roadside mud.

I'd been working on *Hitler was a British Agent* and *Flying the Planet*, both of which Israel had a strong interest in, and my desk was facing north to the metal road, so I took my opportunity and went out for a nosey. You get the most information while helping.

You have 35 seconds to turn an agent, otherwise they're turning you after 45 seconds.

I walked up to the Mossad agent as said: "So you got stuck in the mud . . . Look, I know you cunts killed the historian Michael King on behalf of Helen Clark and Sian Elias. You put epicac on the steering wheel and an impact activated explosive on the petrol tank. You did the same thing with me in August 2002."

He looked sideways to his right and then down (kinesthetic memory) then looked at me as though assessing me, to see if I was his equal, looked directly and only into my eyes from arms length and said: "Why the fuck do you get caught up in this sort of shit?"

I replied: "Successive events have pushed me into it and now it's how I get my kicks. Someone's got to do it." I looked at the side of his white van – it said "Aaron" – so his name was Yaron.

He introduced himself as "Yaron" then explained that he was 'an Israeli Tank Commander and had been requested to launch a strike over a hill at night. He checked out the co-ordinates and it was a Palestinian refugee camp . . . and my favourite tank is a Centurion tank with an adapted turret.'

Yaron went on to say that he 'came here and wants to meet a nice New Zealand woman, settle down, and get citizenship, but the country won't give him citizenship because he was in the Israeli military. He then claims he was retired and now drives this white van installing computer telephone equipment in offices, and then jokes that it's for spying on those businesses, then says "Naa".' (The cottage burnt down and he crashed his van, both in January 2007.)

Having turned the Mosad agent, I asked him for some code names and Arabic translations and got "ie" for Helen Clark and "pirate" ("pi", "π") for Margaret Wilson.

The head Mossad (55) on Waiheke Island ran Placemakers, part of Fletchers, owned by Hugh Fletcher who's married to the Chief Justice Sian Elias, both of whom are Sayanim Mossad agents who ran Michael King's murder from Auckland University, as well as others.

So I had a right to be concerned. This was a murder attempt by these Sayanim/ Mossad as ordered by Helen Clark, Margaret Wilson and the Labour Party. It was a murder in the making, cut short, but it was quickly followed within ten days by three financial assassinations . . .

Three Financial Assassinations: Pru Gee, Steve Whalley and Peter Williams QC

I'd been blacklisted since January 1994, had a brief spout of 'lots of work 1996–98, and when I purchased a house the blacklisting, hobbling and boiler-plating started up again with no work, loss of driver's licence etc – the usual methods the NZ Govt. employs to destroy its citizens, remove their house, their ability to breed, and tries to 'voluntarily' export them.

Pru Gee and Gordon Sale (25 May 2004–)

Around 25 May 2004, I was employed by Pru Gee and Gordon Sale to add a deck and a garage to their steep triangulated property on Waiheke Island. Pru Gee went to Epsom Girls Grammar with Helen Clark, and Gordon Sale was a homeless gin-soaked alcoholic.

I measured up, did the design work, expressed that they needed to employ a surveyor (to establish the boundaries) and an engineer, then completed the work as far as possible.

Under instructions from Margaret Wilson, Pru Gee then took the unfinished drawings to the Waiheke Island Council for Building Consent. They were refused as expected. Pru Gee then used this as an excuse not to pay.

I took Gee and Sale to the Disputes Tribunal, then the District Court, then the High Court.

The Disputes Tribunal was run by the drug user/ mental breakdowns/ sexual advances on his daughter, Grant Aislabie, and the decision had been rigged by Helen Clark, so it was appealed to the District Court (16 June 2005) where the judge was the accessory to murder and paedophile minder Judge Johnny D. Hole. Rather than hear the case, he ordered my company pay Helen Clark's school buddy Pru Gee, money for their defense, and cost for the days hearing, before the case could be heard.

> "Instead of getting paid $4,500.00 on 16 June 2005, District Court Judge Hole ruled that I owed my client, Pru Gee, $4,800.00 – $800 in costs on the basis that this hearing was not about hearing the appeal as planned, but about 'the costs of the unheard appeal', plus a further $4,000 for the defence of this appeal, that was also not heard, as [to quote Judge Hole] "even the Prime Minister seems to be caught up in these allegations" . . . So it was a political decision.

This was unheard of and the registrar came out to the corridor nearly in tears and said:

"I don't know what happened in there, but it wasn't justice".

To top it off, Judge Hole had one of my other cases transferred to him. This was to be heard two days later, but it was heard on the same day and ruled with similiar corruption.

I appealled the case to the High Court and I got Judge Winkelmann – a Helen Clark feminist appointment and much complained about. (There's a website dedciated.)

> "Pru Gee's lawyer, Ronald A. Walden (a Politically Correct nobody), presented evidence to Judge Winkelmann (a femininst political appointee) that: 'Mr Hallett has accussed the Prime Minister [Clark] of being a lesbian'."

Well, everybody knows she is – especially her lesbian lovers.

Judge Helen Diana Winkelmann threw the case out using the excuse that it had originated in the Disputes Tribunal and awarded further costs of $725 against me – $5,525.00.

As I drove away from the High Court hearing on 28 July 2005, I was followed by one car, and then a black Mercedes and when I pulled over in Mt Eden, the driver got out of his car and started yelling "I fucked your wife, I fucked your wife". I reminded him I wasn't married and hadn't been for 10 years. Michael Lewis Goold (brothel owner, P user and P supplier) was charged and convicted on 16 January 2006.

Victim Support: "Michael Lewis Goold was convicted . . . of assault. Goold was fined $400 and $130 Court costs. He pleaded guilty. He did not contest.

We think he was instructed by Prime Minister Helen Clark."

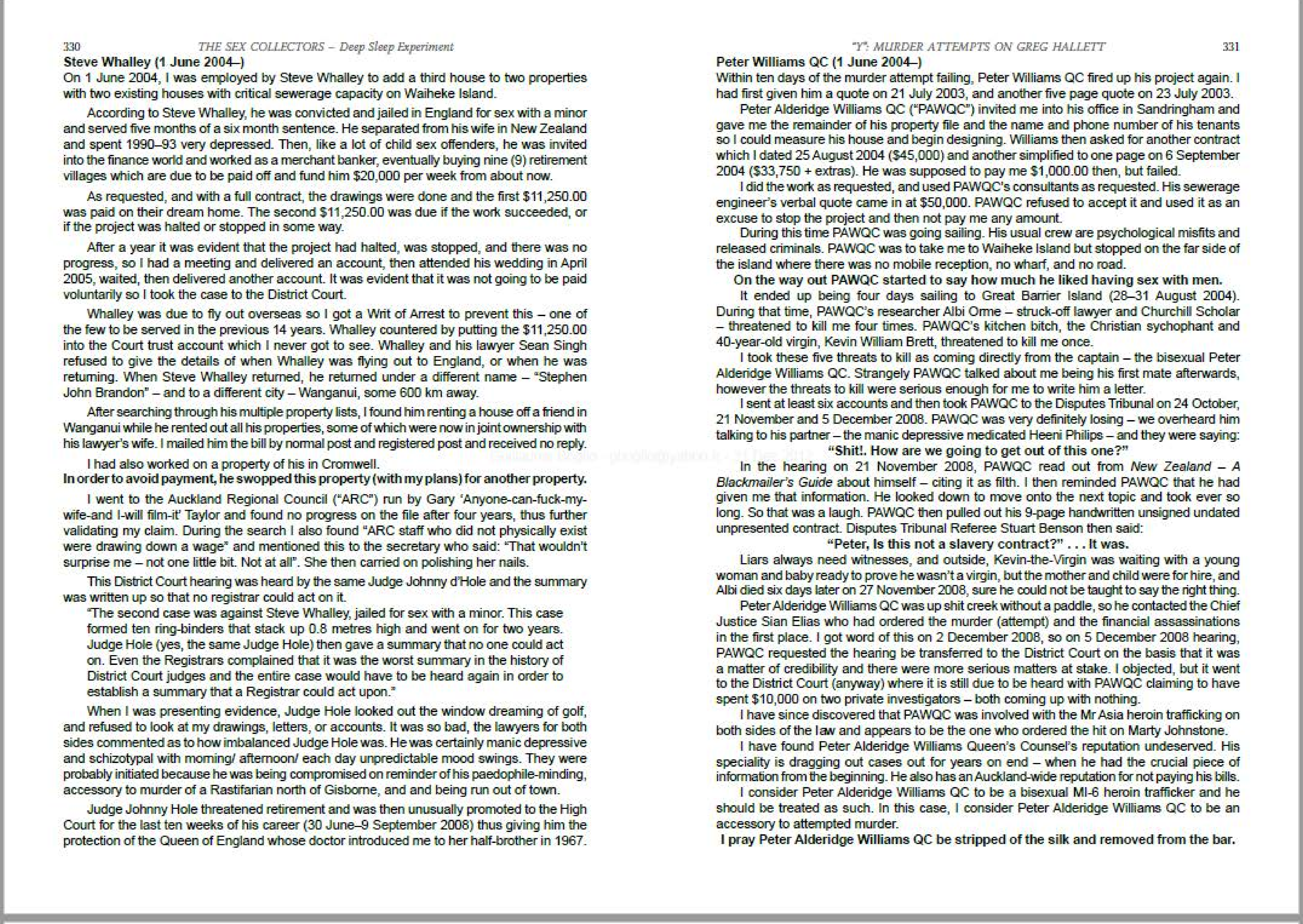

Steve Whalley (1 June 2004–)

On 1 June 2004, I was employed by Steve Whalley to add a third house to two properties with two existing houses with critical sewerage capacity on Waiheke Island.

According to Steve Whalley, he was convicted and jailed in England for sex with a minor and served five months of a six month sentence. He separated from his wife in New Zealand and spent 1990–93 very depressed. Then, like a lot of child sex offenders, he was invited into the finance world and worked as a merchant banker, eventually buying nine (9) retirement villages which are due to be paid off and fund him $20,000 per week from about now.

As requested, and with a full contract, the drawings were done and the first $11,250.00 was paid on their dream home. The second $11,250.00 was due if the work succeeded, or if the project was halted or stopped in some way.

After a year it was evident that the project had halted, was stopped, and there was no progress, so I had a meeting and delivered an account, then attended his wedding in April 2005, waited, then delivered another account. It was evident that it was not going to be paid voluntarily so I took the case to the District Court.

Whalley was due to fly out overseas so I got a Writ of Arrest to prevent this – one of the few to be served in the previous 14 years. Whalley countered by putting the $11,250.00 into the Court trust account which I never got to see. Whalley and his lawyer Sean Singh refused to give the details of when Whalley was flying out to England, or when he was returning. When Steve Whalley returned, he returned under a different name – "Stephen John Brandon" – and to a different city – Wanganui, some 600 km away.

After searching through his multiple property lists, I found him renting a house off a friend in Wanganui while he rented out all his properties, some of which were now in joint ownership with his lawyer's wife. I mailed him the bill by normal post and registered post and received no reply.

I had also worked on a property of his in Cromwell.

In order to avoid payment, he swopped this property (with my plans) for another property.

I went to the Auckland Regional Council ("ARC") run by Gary 'Anyone-can-fuck-my-wife-and I-will film-it' Taylor and found no progress on the file after four years, thus further validating my claim. During the search I also found "ARC staff who did not physically exist were drawing down a wage" and mentioned this to the secretary who said: "That wouldn't surprise me – not one little bit. Not at all". She then carried on polishing her nails.

This District Court hearing was heard by the same Judge Johnny d'Hole and the summary was written up so that no registrar could act on it.

> "The second case was against Steve Whalley, jailed for sex with a minor. This case formed ten ring-binders that stack up 0.8 metres high and went on for two years. Judge Hole (yes, the same Judge Hole) then gave a summary that no one could act on. Even the Registrars complained that it was the worst summary in the history of District Court judges and the entire case would have to be heard again in order to establish a summary that a Registrar could act upon."

When I was presenting evidence, Judge Hole looked out the window dreaming of golf, and refused to look at my drawings, letters, or accounts. It was so bad, the lawyers for both sides commented as to how imbalanced Judge Hole was. He was certainly manic depressive and schizotypal with morning/ afternoon/ each day unpredictable mood swings. They were probably initiated because he was being compromised on reminder of his paedophile-minding, accessory to murder of a Rastifarian north of Gisborne, and and being run out of town.

Judge Johnny Hole threatened retirement and was then unusually promoted to the High Court for the last ten weeks of his career (30 June–9 September 2008) thus giving him the protection of the Queen of England whose doctor introduced me to her half-brother in 1967.

Peter Williams QC (1 June 2004–)

Within ten days of the murder attempt failing, Peter Williams QC fired up his project again. I had first given him a quote on 21 July 2003, and another five page quote on 23 July 2003.

Peter Alderidge Williams QC ("PAWQC") invited me into his office in Sandringham and gave me the remainder of his property file and the name and phone number of his tenants so I could measure his house and begin designing. Williams then asked for another contract which I dated 25 August 2004 ($45,000) and another simplified to one page on 6 September 2004 ($33,750 + extras). He was supposed to pay me $1,000.00 then, but failed.

I did the work as requested, and used PAWQC's consultants as requested. His sewerage engineer's verbal quote came in at $50,000. PAWQC refused to accept it and used it as an excuse to stop the project and then not pay me any amount.

During this time PAWQC was going sailing. His usual crew are psychological misfits and released criminals. PAWQC was to take me to Waiheke Island but stopped on the far side of the island where there was no mobile reception, no wharf, and no road.

On the way out PAWQC started to say how much he liked having sex with men.

It ended up being four days sailing to Great Barrier Island (28–31 August 2004). During that time, PAWQC's researcher Albi Orme – struck-off lawyer and Churchill Scholar – threatened to kill me four times. PAWQC's kitchen bitch, the Christian sychophant and 40-year-old virgin, Kevin William Brett, threatened to kill me once.

I took these five threats to kill as coming directly from the captain – the bisexual Peter Alderidge Williams QC. Strangely PAWQC talked about me being his first mate afterwards, however the threats to kill were serious enough for me to write him a letter.

I sent at least six accounts and then took PAWQC to the Disputes Tribunal on 24 October, 21 November and 5 December 2008. PAWQC was very definitely losing – we overheard him talking to his partner – the manic depressive medicated Heeni Philips – and they were saying:

"Shit!. How are we going to get out of this one?"

In the hearing on 21 November 2008, PAWQC read out from *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide* about himself – citing it as filth. I then reminded PAWQC that he had given me that information. He looked down to move onto the next topic and took ever so long. So that was a laugh. PAWQC then pulled out his 9-page handwritten unsigned undated unpresented contract. Disputes Tribunal Referee Stuart Benson then said:

"Peter, Is this not a slavery contract?" . . . It was.

Liars always need witnesses, and outside, Kevin-the-Virgin was waiting with a young woman and baby ready to prove he wasn't a virgin, but the mother and child were for hire, and Albi died six days later on 27 November 2008, sure he could not be taught to say the right thing.

Peter Alderidge Williams QC was up shit creek without a paddle, so he contacted the Chief Justice Sian Elias who had ordered the murder (attempt) and the financial assassinations in the first place. I got word of this on 2 December 2008, so on 5 December 2008 hearing, PAWQC requested the hearing be transferred to the District Court on the basis that it was a matter of credibility and there were more serious matters at stake. I objected, but it went to the District Court (anyway) where it is still due to be heard with PAWQC claiming to have spent $10,000 on two private investigators – both coming up with nothing.

I have since discovered that PAWQC was involved with the Mr Asia heroin trafficking on both sides of the law and appears to be the one who ordered the hit on Marty Johnstone.

I have found Peter Alderidge Williams Queen's Counsel's reputation undeserved. His speciality is dragging out cases out for years on end – when he had the crucial piece of information from the beginning. He also has an Auckland-wide reputation for not paying his bills.

I consider Peter Alderidge Williams QC to be a bisexual MI-6 heroin trafficker and he should be treated as such. In this case, I consider Peter Alderidge Williams QC to be an accessory to attempted murder.

I pray Peter Alderidge Williams QC be stripped of the silk and removed from the bar.

Poisoned Coffee (27 July 2007)

Myself and various Intelligence agents, all claiming to be retired, were working on *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide* from around June 2007 with publication and printing on 31 October 2007.

Helen Clark had been working on her poisoned chalice Electoral Finance Act which was to suppress any published word defaming any politician, but mainly herself.

The misnamed Electoral Finance Act was planed from January 2007, but not released into public knowledge until October 2007, then heavily protested, and was not signed by the Brown Humpty Dumpty co-murderer Anand Satyanand – bearing the new title 'Governor-General' – until 19 December 2007.

So in the meantime, Helen Clark had to supress my books.

She had tried to get various Intelligence agencies to kill me, including New Zealand's own SIS and police, the KGB, and even the Chief Justice Sian Elias using the Mossad, but none of them seemed to work.

It appeared that I had barack and she would have to do the murder herself.

When we're working on a book, word soon gets out and those who should know, and those who shouldn't know, all get to know.

It's open knowledge now that my house is bugged to the hilt and my Mercedes had a TV and sound transmit and track. It was so bad retired Intelligence use to come to my house to talk to my TV as though they were talking to Army Intelligence.

I even put in a request for a honey-trap and she turned up four days later – almost perfect.

Anyway, after eight weeks of getting the knitty-gritty on some politicians alternate sex lives, the Spymaster came around for a brief coffee and read.

The Spymaster left and the coffee was poisoned.

That night, all morning and the next day until 1 pm I was crawling around on my hands and knees to get to the bathroom. I only just had enough strength to have a shower. I was growning and my kidneys felt like the size of a horse's arse.

Crap was coming out of both ends and my sweat stunk.

The Spymaster contacted me and said that 20 minutes after he left my place, he stopped the car to vomit and was as crook as a dog for 26 hours.

So I contacted MICK P and he said – in the same timeframe – whenever he touched anything with his fingers they would hurt like hell.

So here we were, three people working on an untitled book in two different locations, only two having the coffee, and all three getting poisoned at the same time on the same day. What are the chances?

I kept the coffee. It's marked "POISON" and "27 JULY 2007". I would have had it checked by the DSIR, now FRST (Foundation for Reserach, Science and Technology), but that is run by the CIA contract killer and sex addict – Dame Margaret Bazley.

Killer Nappies' Driving Rage (26 October 2007)

On Friday 26 October 2007 Helen Clark tried to run me over in a government carpool car on Ayr Street, Parnell, during the printing of *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide*. I thought about this, wrote up some notes, stopped the press, and inserted an 'Index' recording the event.

Clark never refuted the claim of 'driving with intent to injure', and 'attempted murder with a motor vehicle'.

> "Yesterday [Thursday 25 October 2007] I was told I was going to be arrested under Helen Clark's Terrorism Suppression Act and her newly proposed amendments. On Friday morning I was told I was going to be arrested in the next two days. By lunch time I had a visitor who told me I was 'Number One' on Helen Clark's list. (I used to be No. 50.) Relaying a message from a prominent magazine editor, the arrest is to occur by 1 January 2008 and probably just before Christmas as the courts are closed for a month. He is 'Number Two', but considered far too well known.
>
> "As usual, just as I had gone to print, something happens. I went up to the corner dairy and there was David Bain. He seemed like a gentle character so I introduced myself and we chatted for ten minutes. I mentioned I was about to publish a book with a chapter on his saga. He said, 'I have never met Peter Ellis . . . I thank you guys who put your life on the line to bring out these conspiracies, and it is a conspiracy. Not a conspiracy in that it's not true . . . there are too many details.'
>
> "Author: 'It is a conspiracy against the individual.' Then as I crossed the road a crimson Ford Mondeo came from Domain Drive onto Ayr Street at speed and almost ran me over. As I jumped out of the way, the driver appeared to recognise me and I'm sure it was Helen Clark. She doesn't normally drive herself unless she's on her way to a fisting, like to Maryan Street's, but this is normally at 3 am.'"[1]

David Bain was accused of murdering his entire family, and is currently under retrial with the police case collapsing. The chief suspects are David Bain's Freemason incestuous child sex abusing father, and the Chief Justice Sian Elias using the Mossad and running a distraction programme for THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE's paedophilia, child sex abuse, free brothel use, beastiality with 14-year-old girls on stage, the Police paedophile ring at Banks' Road in Christchurch, the Police having sex with the underaged Bain daughters in brothels, Labour MP David Benson-Pope stealing girl's school uniforms and paying prostitutes to wear them, Labour MP Dr Michael Cullen's involvement with his step-children and protecting Dunedin Police paedophilia by handing out counter-intelligence pamphlets resulting in him being promoted to Minister of Finance where he borrowed, gambled and lost NZ$6 million a day for 16 months . . . and Sian Elias covering for her husbands child sex abuse soirées and their part in the murder of David McNee . . . et cetera . . . and when Sir Peter Elworthy and the historian Michael King (both Centrepoint familiars) got word of this – they were both up for wacking.

New Zealand is so corrupt, when the Iraqi's come here, they say it is more corrupt than Iraq and leave. Even Saddam Hussein's doppelgängers come here, and even they leave. We've interviewed some of them, and I've seen one walking along the sidewalk 500 metres from my place in Parnell in October 2008. So Sayanim Mossad Sian Elias ran the Bain murders.

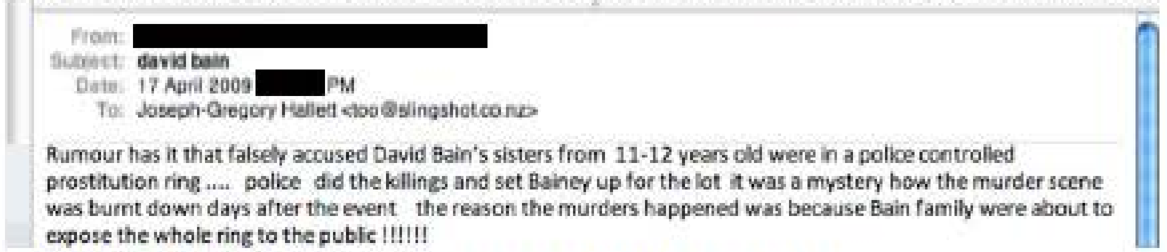

From: [redacted]
Subject: david bain
Date: 17 April 2009 [redacted] PM
To: Joseph-Gregory Hallett <too@slingshot.co.nz>

Rumour has it that falsely accused David Bain's sisters from 11-12 years old were in a police controlled prostitution ring .... police did the killings and set Bainey up for the lot it was a mystery how the murder scene was burnt down days after the event the reason the murders happened was because Bain family were about to expose the whole ring to the public !!!!!!

[1] *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide*, October 2007, Index, p. 281.

Hyperinflated Tyres (17–27 March 2008)

On Thurday 27 March 2008 I noticed the right rear tyre on my Mercedes was flat, so I went to the petrol station in Parnell, Auckland. The tyre was at 12 lbs pressure (psi – pounds per square inch) so I brought it up to the standard 32 psi.

I checked the other tyres to bring them up to the same standard level, but found they were in excess of the standard 32 psi. The front left tyre was at the extraordinary 72 psi (over double), and the front right tyre was at the still very high 55 psi. It took me over a minute to let the air out of each tyre.

The Mercedes is parked on the street, so it was easy enough for some Labour Party supporter to come along, with his cigarette lighter air-pump, and pump the tyres up. They were pumped up at a level that was designed to blow. I queried the very experienced petrol pump attendent, Steve Thomson, about his Caltex air pump and even he said the tyres should have blown out at that pressure.

It was in my favour that the rear right tyre went flat, otherwise the tyres would have blown as soon as they heated up on a long journey. March is peak summer and it had been a long hot summer, just as predicted.

The rear right tyre had been flat for ten days or so and about three weeks before that (around 6 March 2008) Prime Minister Helen Clark was asked what she was going to do about Mr Hallett, and she replied:

"We have something in store for Mr Hallett".

It seems her plan was death by car accident and anyone else was NHI – 'No Humans Involved'.

I purchased the car on 24 December 2007, just three months prior, and the previous owner was a car fanatic, part time car importer and had quite the property portfolio. Everything was immaculate and the Mercedes had been garaged. There was no way he would have had the tyres 40 psi above standard. At the time of sale he had also got a new warrant, at my request.

This was yet another assassination attempt. I presume this was for exposing PM Helen Clark as wearing incontinence nappies as a result of a honey-trap at Lincoln Cottage near the White House on the 3/4 January 2003 – the case of the 'Killer Nappies'.

There is no doubt it was also the interviewer asking Helen Clark the question:

"What do you think of Mr Hallett's statement in his book that
you wear incontinence nappies?"

I have no doubt that this would have sparked things into reality and actioned the contract killing side of the Freud Hilton graduate. This was followed up with a question to her co-murderer, Chief Justice Dame Sian Elias:

"Did you murder the historian Michael King?"

. . . to which Sian Elias spat tacks.

Helen Clark just shudders and leaves the room. The film is then generally confiscated, or the person's job is threatened, then the film is handed over, or signed off from his boss as deleted.

The rear right tyre went flat again and could no longer be driven on so I called the AA to change the tyre. I went down to the tyre shop and they replaced it. They found a small tack in it that gave a slow leak and a dirty great big 3 inch nail driven right in that made it absolutely flat.

The Parnell Caltex petrol station closed down two months later on 30 May 2008 – evidence removed.

Helen Clark orders a hit (3 June 2008–)

On Tuesday 3 June 2008 Helen Clark ordered a standing hit against me speaking the words:

"Greg Hallett is dangerous.
Greg Hallett is not to be associated with.
Greg Hallett is a target."

At the time Helen Clark was in the backrooms of parliament talking to her Cabinet quorum. Having a conscience, a very high-ranking Parliamentary civil servant relayed this to Intelligence, who got word to me within the day.

A week later the bailiff turned up on 10 June 2008 citing some old, already dealt with, and disputed traffic tickets, with a warrant to remove my car.

I told him that these matters had been dealt with, were in dispute, or were manufactured, that he was currently part of ongoing murder attempts by Helen Clark and Sian Elias, and that he would be charged as such.

The bailiff obviously believed me as he left and the vehicle is still in my possession.

I then lodged a NOTICE OF GENERAL APPEAL in the Auckland District Court on 2 July 2008 citing Helen Clark, Sian Elias and Constable James Matewhinau Cassin's involvement in murder and murder attempts, adding another 400 pages on 7 November 2008, and over 800 pages in this lot (dated 20 April 2009), then got at least eight newspaper entries citing Helen Clark and Sian Elias' murders, using traffic tickets maliciously, and through a process in breach of the Declaration of Helsinki.

Despite the NOTICE OF GENERAL APPEAL and the Newspaper articles, the publication of *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide* in October 2007, and at least 16 hours of radio interviews (now on podcast) – there has been no response.

Given the Year and a Day rule,
this makes all of the 'above and beyond' accusations
CLEAR, SUBSTANTIVE AND TRUE,
with those accused now having to prove that they did not do
the murderous and other acts
of which they are so publicly and legally accused.

. . . And the rest is history as you say.

Protests against Helen Clark's Electoral Finance Act

DEMOCR
SAVE
FREE SPEECH
SCRAP BILL OR DEMOCRACY OUR CHOICE
Save Free SPEECH

and the suppression of those talking about her murders – 1 December 2007

REPEAL ELECTORAL FINANCE
FREE SPEECH!
SAVE FREE SPEECH
IS THIS ILLEGAL?
FREE SPEECH
SAVE FREE SPEECH
REPEAL ELECTORAL
MUGABE BILL OR DEMOCRACY OUR CHOICE
SAFEGUARD FREE SPEECH
SAVE FREE SPEECH
Save Free SPEECH
AUTHORISE THIS HELEN

The organiser John Boscawen addresses the anti-Electoral Finance Act/Bill rally
down Queen Street on 1 December 2007.
He became an ACT MP out of this and the Act was repealed on 1 March 2009 by section 15..

Well known protestor and all round good guy (right)
Jim Bagnall protects Free Speech
and challenges the CYFs and Family Court's paedophile movement.

PROTECT FREE SPEECH
AUTHORISED BY NO ONE
ARREST ME
CAN I HAVE PERMISSON TO SPEAK?

Physical and Financial Assassinations

| Peter Alderidge Williams QC | Gang Member |

Dog breath: Drug Dog sniffs out competition and protects its own

Court Stitch-ups

Author: "The court ignores all stitch-ups. It is a liars court where three people can lie for each other and get away with anything".

Spymaster: "That's British justice. It's always the lone colonial getting all the stick. British justice is a complete contradiction in terms. It does not apply to royalty, anyone suspected of being royalty, bum-boys in the distant past or the recent present, anyone engaged in drug trafficking or slavery, any cop or relative of a cop engaged with them in the past, or their gardener or mechanic, or anybody else breathing or dead involved in stitch-ups, cover-ups, or the bribing, or assassination of anyone working for the other side."

Author: " So here's the stitch-up . . ."

Ongoing Financial Hits and Stitch-Ups

Peter Williams QC had a tangible connection to all those involved, had a background that would place him stitiching up others, and had the contacts. Not only that, but he also had the motive.

Peter Williams public reputation and private reputation are at total odds. Publicly he is accepted and promoted by the media, who consider him to be a lawyer worth "quoting". Privately he is surrounded by people with psychological problems, people on medication, criminals and murderers, convicted or otherwise. In private, the legal profession regard Williams with deep suspicion.

The judiciary and the media protect Peter, while others stay away. The general wise view is that if you go anywhere near Peter Williams QC, you will get stung. So those in the know stay away.

Other lawyers view is: "Peter has spent too much time around criminals and has picked up their ways". After knowing Peter Williams over a period of seven years, I'd have to agree.

The New Zealand media is a 'child sex abuse and child drug movement' (e.g. Paul Holmes, a friend of Williams) so anyone who supplies drugs and is quiet about paedophiles, they support.

In fifty years practising law, Williams has never exposed a paedophile, but he will go out of his way to protect a fellow bisexual, a fellow psychologically ill person, or a fellow criminal and promote them as beneficial to society. He did this with one client, got them off, and within the year they had committed a multiple murder.

This brings into question the value of defense lawyers.

Certainly, my experience of Williams is that he presents no evidence and the only judge who could accept his arguments is one who is compromised by their reputation, with knowledge that Williams knows what their compromised reputation is.

Sure enough, Williams favourite pastimes are dining with judges at Pregos, showing lawyers Asian porn, sailing with criminals and mental patients, and stitching up anyone who knows what he's about.

I don't recommend anyone go sailing with Williams. It is dangerous. There are the threats and mental illness from his crew, Williams homosexuality (he's a bisexual), and Williams retribution if he doesn't get his way.

This retribution goes all the way to MI-6 and falls back down on the judges.

Just imagine playing chess with two queens (– a good definition of the Mafia).

Peter Williams, for instance, has had a retired judge looking into me for six months. He has been trying to come up with some discrediting information, pattern, crime, anything. So far he has failed, but as Williams shows, there is no need for evidence behind the accusations, there is only a need for a bought judge, a compliant judge.

New Zealand is full of bought judges, but when they get caught out, they aren't too happy.

Most judges realise that Peter Williams made his money from heroin trafficking, but since their love and respect for money is so great, they're willing to overlook this minor detail.

I have long suspected Peter Williams QC of having his fingers in every pie. But I didn't expect to find his links so patently obvious, documented and denied with such immaturity and prima donna status, unworthy of a Queen's Counsel lawyer, unworthy of a citizen, and unworthy of anyone who even pretends to command respect.

What I did find was links to heroin trafficking, slavery, and the masterplan for the destruction of a country.

What I found in Peter Williams QC was a mafia boss – a Consigliere.[1]

It would appear that Peter Williams QC was assigned to me as my own personal financial assassin – an Economic Hitman.

At any point since July 2004 that I have not been paid, Peter Williams QC appears to be behind it, even dating back to January 1994. Initially Peter was in charge of my assassination, but this failed many times, so he resorted to ongoing financial assassinations.

Helen Clark originally let out this contract. Various government departments had a crack, foreign agencies had a crack, the Labour Party had a crack, then Peter Williams picked up the contract in exchange for judicial favours and has run it as ongoing financial assassinations ever since.

As you can see, this comes with the support of the judiciary.

There were murder attempts from 2002. These were followed by three simultaneous financial assassinations from May 2004, which are ongoing. These were in turn boosted by more financial assassinations in 2008, 2009 and ongoing.

The New Zealand government and Judiciary has long been involved in heroin trafficking, since at least the 1950s, the Vietnam War, and importing Philips flourescent bulbs. Any person in the judiciary who is found to be trafficking drugs is protected, covered up, supported, funded, elevated (to Queens Counsel) and imbued with judicial belief. They may have to make some payments, but that is little compared to the profits.

The judiciary rarely has a fall guy when it comes to drug trafficking.

Peter Williams' friend and legal partner Eb Leary was caught with the heroin money. He was disbarred (the fall guy), not jailed, then his wife won Lotto, twice.

This was rigged by Prime Minister Robert Muldoon who was also a heroin trafficker.

After Williams' financial attacks, which really taxed my architecture career, I decided to get into making documentaries, with a view to making 10 minute YouTube movies on each of my books, and a full length documentary on how the Berlin Wall came down.

I was watching TV on Election night (8 November 2008) and it looked like John Key was going to be the next Prime Minister, so being my near neighbour, about 300 metres away, I wandered up and filmed it.

---

[1] "Consigliere": a member of a criminal organisation or syndicate who serves as an adviser to the leader; "Condottiere": any mercenary or soldier of fortune.

Around the same time, I was approached by Jamie Lockett to make a documentary on his life. This was potentially interesting in that he was publicly touted as a terrorist, claimed to be number 5 on the terrorist list, and had recently been part of mass terrorist arrests.

It wasn't until later that I realised terrorism in New Zealand is a scam. It's like having a bridge, a casino, a sky city tower, a monorail, and a tunnel to feel part of the Western world. A country 'had to have terrorists and arrest them', so eight countries arrested their "terrorists" all on the same day – 14 October 2007. Many of these terrorists were government agents working with radicals – some as cover for their own shameful sexual histories.

As it turned out, Jamie Lockett wasn't a terrorist, he was Peter Williams' agent, his narc, his spy, and Jamie, with his abundant psychological problems, is well suited to Williams. They're both bisexuals, and you can trust bisexuals as much as a vibrator without batteries – they tend to jump around all over the place advertising themselves but don't work.

So here's how that one went down.

Jamie Lockett, a 6'5" martial arts blackbelt, but beaten up and stabbed in prison, arrives on my doorstep wanting to have a documentary made of him, saying: "It will make millions. I have financial backers, which included the owners of *THE NATIONAL BUSINSS REVIEW* and Mark Lyon, that developer party boy". Lockett is a big fan of Chopper Reed, who turned out to be one of Australia's biggest narcs, with similar personality disorders.

So I make the movie. Lockett gets all his photos and I edit these in. Two of us, me and my employee, spend about 200 hours on it . . . and just as I'm packaging it, one of Jamie's girlfriends takes to his car with a skillsaw in Parakai, 35 km northwest of Auckland. Jamie's hiding in the house trying to stay away from another of his mad girlfriends. Charges are then laid against Jamie Lockett and guess who the lawyer is – the medicated feminist Heeni Phillips, Peter Williams bed-scam-and-legal partner.

The whole scenario made Lockett look like shit and he loses interest in the movie despite the work being done. So I showed the movie to a friend of Jamie who's known him for 15 years, and he says, "It's all shit. Lockett was lying the whole way through."

When Lockett got the documentary bill at the heavily reduced $12,500, instead of paying, or raising the money as promised from his friends, some notable, he made threats, then sided with Williams who provided him with an avenue for not paying, legal case advice, and a judge who had previously jailed him, but turned out to be Peter Williams' friend.

So I mentioned to Pete, who introduced me to Lockett, that Lockett owes me money for the movie. Lockett then comes around to my house and threatens me: "Your lucky I'm not punching your lights out . . . I might have to teach you a lesson", but he turned up with Pete's father who ended up having a perjuous affidavit dictated to him by Lockett & Co.

I'm thinking this ain't right. I don't want a fruit loop terrorist coming around to my house threatening me and not paying bills, so I applied for a Trespass Order. During the process I find out that Jamie Lockett is the most trespassed man in New Zealand (it was even on the web) with police comments stating: "He has the mental age of a 12-year-old".

At first the police failed to serve the Trespass Notice as he wasn't at his bail address. I found this suspicious as it is normally reason for arrest, and usually only narcs can do this. Eventually it gets served.

Lockett then writes an affidavit for Pete's father, and gets help from Peter Williams QC for his own statements. Pete's father then signs it and never turns up to court, so he's not available to be questioned. The judge then accepts the affidavit, as he is a friend of Williams. So it's all a stitch-up and another financial hit.

Then I find that through the pressure Peter Williams QC placed through Heeni Phillips on Jamie Lockett, he was now their agent, and had sabotaged the movie project in order to get off charges presented by Heeni Phillips.

Before the movie was commissoned, Lockett failed to reveal that he was a bankrupt who had spent time in the Mason Clinic (a series of buildings on the site of the old Oakley Mental Hospital at 1 Carrington Road, Pt Chevalier, Auckland, at the back of Unitec) that treats people with a mental illness or intellectual disability who have committed a criminal offence or are at high risk in the community. Internal Affairs then removed his name.

The judge refused to grant the Protecton Order on 21 May 2009 as there weren't two separate instances, despite Lockett being in the Mason Clinic, serving time in prison, being labelled a terrorist, having a history of violence, and being New Zealand's most trespassed man.

It appeared that I was only the only person in New Zealand who couldn't get a Trespass Notice against him.

So that ended up costing me another $25,000, even when my wage was reduced to the minimum, as the fruitloop had caused other strife.

I did get a laugh out of it though. Lockett and his friends were coming around all the time and generally disrupting the day as only a mental patient can. My daughter came home from school and found two sausages missing from the freezer. As Lockett was leaving through the front gate she said: “Did you take my sausages?” and Jamie's arse collapsed like a dog with its tail between its legs as he whimpered off. He almost crapped his pants.

Funny, but worth twenty-five grand . . . it may have to be.

Lockett was also acting as the enforcer for Philip Parker, a Christian-Jew who also goes by the names Philip Christopher Parker, Christopher Haismann and Philip Haismann, and with the behind-his-back nickname ‘Fantasia’ or ‘Fantasia Boy’. Philip promotes himself as a Christian, but I've regularly found Christians to be the most unChristian people I've ever met specialising in financial frauds, to the extent that they are bordering on vampirism.

Spymaster: “The Jews call Christian-Jews, “Self-Necrophiliacs”.

Philip Parker was no exception.

The Jews are interesting to watch. They will do anything to not pay a bill. Philip had gambled and leveraged on his family's properties on investments and when the credit crunch came, their equity to debt ratio went from, according to Philip, NZ$40/14 million to NZ$26/14 million, and falling – so panic set in.

The Jews have a long history of sending themselves hate mail. It gives them the moral upper hand. Philip Parker would also dress and act as a homosexual with bank managers, and when they made their advance, he would use this to screw them financially.

One bank manager in Queenstown was giving Philip Parker a hard time so he sent them a letter (actually written in my place when Philip was here, and posted from Takapuna). It read something like: “I hate you homosexual Jews”.

Anyway, Philip Parker had this letter sent to himself. He then forwarded it to the police and named the Queenstown bank manager as the sender. Philip Parker would then come around to my place and skite about it saying: “You wouldn't believe the amount of shit this has caused”. I used to tell him to shut up. Then he'd talk about how you get to own a bank in Scandinavia and showed me the wesbsites.

So the Jews and the michling Jews are sending themselves hate mail and have been doing this for centuries. This partly explains the Jews backing Hitler. It game them an excuse to get Israel, and to have the Germans fund it, until 2094. The Reichstag fire was just the beginning.

Philip Parker/ Christopher Haismann is confident that no Jew will be charged for anything while there is a Jewish Chief Justice, so the Jews and michling Jews are lifting the rorts to blatant status, and lifting the scale to international depression.

For a long time, it's been very hard to find a Jew in prison.

I sent Parker a bill for architecture services on their castle in Oamaru. Philip Parker, being the good Christian-Jew that he is, then sent an unitemised bill for accomodation and meals while there, and an unitemised bill for listening to him, which he called ‘consultancy’.

Lockett then came around to my place threatening, also on behalf of Parker, and when it came to the court case, Parker had written an affidavit for Lockett addressed from a Christian Camp in Melbourne. He uses Christian Camps to hide from his creditors when things get hot, and calls himself “a Christian Missionary”.

Philip Parker is then interviewed by *National Business Review* on the credit crunch.

So that's another $5,000 gone with the only lesson, ‘don't do business with Christian-Jews. They are Self-Necrophiliac financial vampires.

Philip Parker and Jamie Lockett were like the ‘narc-and-rort’ brothers, $30,000 gone, now acting as witnesses against me, and supporting Williams' ongoing financial assassinations, which links them to the attempted murders. Parker then ripped off Lockett's mates for another $30,000.

Jamie Lockett loves attention. Can't get enough of it, and his seeking is not rational. He used to go on the web and count how many hits he'd got, compare them with my listings and try and establish himself as more famous than anyone else in the room.

He'd make a great sailing buddy for Peter Williams – a psychiatric criminal bisexual tough guy with a pathological fear of sane females. He should get on well with Heeni Phillips.

TREACHEROUS
WANKER
COPYRIGHT © FIRST A PIRATE
THEN A GOVERNMENT
THEN ENSURING NO ONE ELSE STEALS AS MUCH
WHY PAY TAX WHEN YOU CAN BUY THIS MOVIE
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED | SOME SHARED ON CONSENT
PARTY
WITH A
DISC

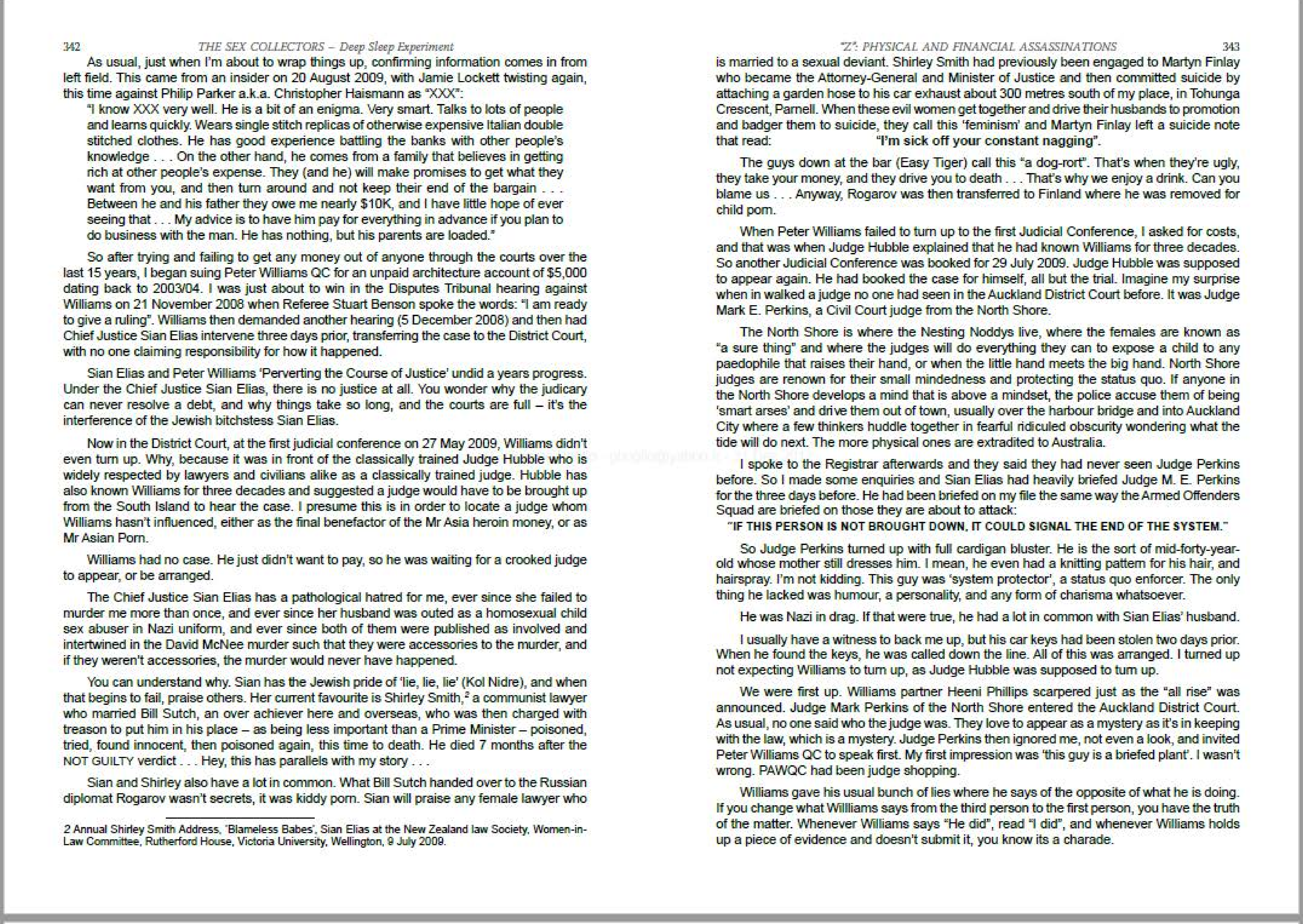

As usual, just when I'm about to wrap things up, confirming information comes in from left field. This came from an insider on 20 August 2009, with Jamie Lockett twisting again, this time against Philip Parker a.k.a. Christopher Haismann as "XXX":

> "I know XXX very well. He is a bit of an enigma. Very smart. Talks to lots of people and learns quickly. Wears single stitch replicas of otherwise expensive Italian double stitched clothes. He has good experience battling the banks with other people's knowledge . . . On the other hand, he comes from a family that believes in getting rich at other people's expense. They (and he) will make promises to get what they want from you, and then turn around and not keep their end of the bargain . . . Between he and his father they owe me nearly $10K, and I have little hope of ever seeing that . . . My advice is to have him pay for everything in advance if you plan to do business with the man. He has nothing, but his parents are loaded."

So after trying and failing to get any money out of anyone through the courts over the last 15 years, I began suing Peter Williams QC for an unpaid architecture account of $5,000 dating back to 2003/04. I was just about to win in the Disputes Tribunal hearing against Williams on 21 November 2008 when Referee Stuart Benson spoke the words: "I am ready to give a ruling". Williams then demanded another hearing (5 December 2008) and then had Chief Justice Sian Elias intervene three days prior, transferring the case to the District Court, with no one claiming responsibility for how it happened.

Sian Elias and Peter Williams 'Perverting the Course of Justice' undid a years progress. Under the Chief Justice Sian Elias, there is no justice at all. You wonder why the judicary can never resolve a debt, and why things take so long, and the courts are full – it's the interference of the Jewish bitchstess Sian Elias.

Now in the District Court, at the first judicial conference on 27 May 2009, Williams didn't even turn up. Why, because it was in front of the classically trained Judge Hubble who is widely respected by lawyers and civilians alike as a classically trained judge. Hubble has also known Williams for three decades and suggested a judge would have to be brought up from the South Island to hear the case. I presume this is in order to locate a judge whom Williams hasn't influenced, either as the final benefactor of the Mr Asia heroin money, or as Mr Asian Porn.

Williams had no case. He just didn't want to pay, so he was waiting for a crooked judge to appear, or be arranged.

The Chief Justice Sian Elias has a pathological hatred for me, ever since she failed to murder me more than once, and ever since her husband was outed as a homosexual child sex abuser in Nazi uniform, and ever since both of them were published as involved and intertwined in the David McNee murder such that they were accessories to the murder, and if they weren't accessories, the murder would never have happened.

You can understand why. Sian has the Jewish pride of 'lie, lie, lie' (Kol Nidre), and when that begins to fail, praise others. Her current favourite is Shirley Smith,[2] a communist lawyer who married Bill Sutch, an over achiever here and overseas, who was then charged with treason to put him in his place – as being less important than a Prime Minister – poisoned, tried, found innocent, then poisoned again, this time to death. He died 7 months after the NOT GUILTY verdict . . . Hey, this has parallels with my story . . .

Sian and Shirley also have a lot in common. What Bill Sutch handed over to the Russian diplomat Rogarov wasn't secrets, it was kiddy porn. Sian will praise any female lawyer who is married to a sexual deviant. Shirley Smith had previously been engaged to Martyn Finlay who became the Attorney-General and Minister of Justice and then committed suicide by attaching a garden hose to his car exhaust about 300 metres south of my place, in Tohunga Crescent, Parnell. When these evil women get together and drive their husbands to promotion and badger them to suicide, they call this 'feminism' and Martyn Finlay left a suicide note that read: **"I'm sick off your constant nagging"**.

The guys down at the bar (Easy Tiger) call this "a dog-rort". That's when they're ugly, they take your money, and they drive you to death . . . That's why we enjoy a drink. Can you blame us . . . Anyway, Rogarov was then transferred to Finland where he was removed for child porn.

When Peter Williams failed to turn up to the first Judicial Conference, I asked for costs, and that was when Judge Hubble explained that he had known Williams for three decades. So another Judicial Conference was booked for 29 July 2009. Judge Hubble was supposed to appear again. He had booked the case for himself, all but the trial. Imagine my surprise when in walked a judge no one had seen in the Auckland District Court before. It was Judge Mark E. Perkins, a Civil Court judge from the North Shore.

The North Shore is where the Nesting Noddys live, where the females are known as "a sure thing" and where the judges will do everything they can to expose a child to any paedophile that raises their hand, or when the little hand meets the big hand. North Shore judges are renown for their small mindedness and protecting the status quo. If anyone in the North Shore develops a mind that is above a mindset, the police accuse them of being 'smart arses' and drive them out of town, usually over the harbour bridge and into Auckland City where a few thinkers huddle together in fearful ridiculed obscurity wondering what the tide will do next. The more physical ones are extradited to Australia.

I spoke to the Registrar afterwards and they said they had never seen Judge Perkins before. So I made some enquiries and Sian Elias had heavily briefed Judge M. E. Perkins for the three days before. He had been briefed on my file the same way the Armed Offenders Squad are briefed on those they are about to attack:

"IF THIS PERSON IS NOT BROUGHT DOWN, IT COULD SIGNAL THE END OF THE SYSTEM."

So Judge Perkins turned up with full cardigan bluster. He is the sort of mid-forty-year-old whose mother still dresses him. I mean, he even had a knitting pattern for his hair, and hairspray. I'm not kidding. This guy was 'system protector', a status quo enforcer. The only thing he lacked was humour, a personality, and any form of charisma whatsoever.

He was Nazi in drag. If that were true, he had a lot in common with Sian Elias' husband.

I usually have a witness to back me up, but his car keys had been stolen two days prior. When he found the keys, he was called down the line. All of this was arranged. I turned up not expecting Williams to turn up, as Judge Hubble was supposed to turn up.

We were first up. Williams partner Heeni Phillips scarpered just as the "all rise" was announced. Judge Mark Perkins of the North Shore entered the Auckland District Court. As usual, no one said who the judge was. They love to appear as a mystery as it's in keeping with the law, which is a mystery. Judge Perkins then ignored me, not even a look, and invited Peter Williams QC to speak first. My first impression was 'this guy is a briefed plant'. I wasn't wrong. PAWQC had been judge shopping.

Williams gave his usual bunch of lies where he says of the opposite of what he is doing. If you change what Willliams says from the third person to the first person, you have the truth of the matter. Whenever Williams says "He did", read "I did", and whenever Williams holds up a piece of evidence and doesn't submit it, you know its a charade.

---

[2] Annual Shirley Smith Address, 'Blameless Babes', Sian Elias at the New Zealand law Society, Women-in-Law Committee, Rutherford House, Victoria University, Wellington, 9 July 2009.

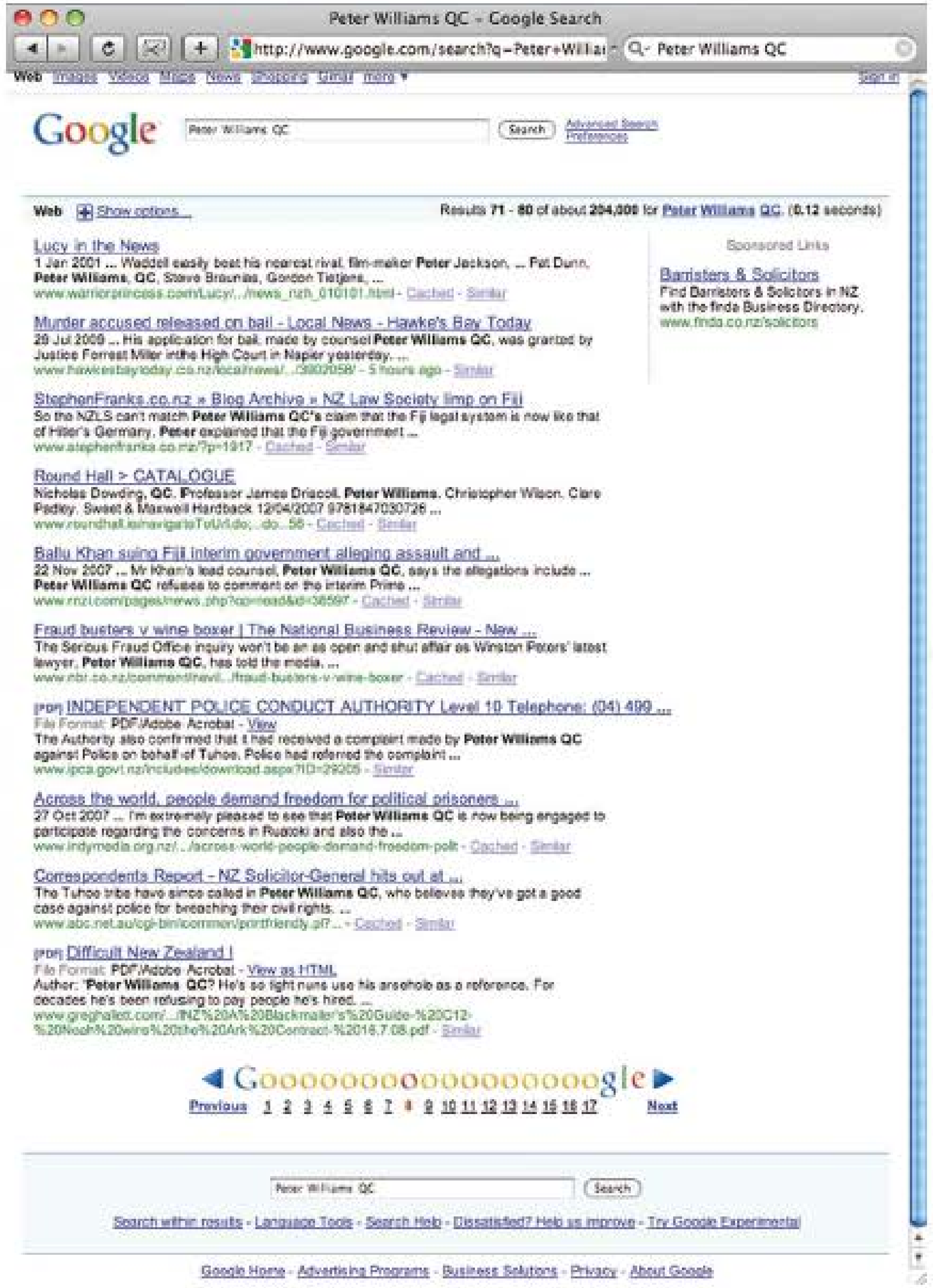
Peter Williams QC – Google Search
http://www.google.com/search?q=Peter+Willia
Peter Williams QC
Web Images Videos Maps News Shopping Gmail more ▾
Sign in
Google
Peter Williams QC
Search
Advanced Search
Preferences
Web
Show options...
Sponsored Links
Previous 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14 15 16 17 Next
Peter Williams QC
Search
Search within results - Language Tools - Search Help - Dissatisfied? Help us improve - Try Google Experimental
Google Home - Advertising Programs - Business Solutions - Privacy - About Google

Results **71** - **80** of about **204,000** for Peter Williams QC. (**0.12** seconds)

Lucy in the News
1 Jan 2001 ... Waddell easily beat his nearest rival, film-maker **Peter** Jackson, ... Pat Dunn, **Peter Williams**, **QC**, Steve Braunias, Gordon Tietjens, ...
www.warriorprincess.com/Lucy/.../news_nzh_010101.html - Cached - Similar

Murder accused released on bail - Local News - Hawke's Bay Today
29 Jul 2009 ... His application for bail, made by counsel **Peter Williams QC**, was granted by Justice Forrest Miller inthe High Court in Napier yesterday. ...
www.hawkesbaytoday.co.nz/localnews/.../3902058/ - 5 hours ago - Similar

StephenFranks.co.nz » Blog Archive » NZ Law Society limp on Fiji
So the NZLS can't match **Peter Williams QC's** claim that the Fiji legal system is now like that of Hitler's Germany. **Peter** explained that the Fiji government ...
www.stephenfranks.co.nz/?p=1917 - Cached - Similar

Round Hall > CATALOGUE
Nicholas Dowding, **QC**. Professor James Driscoll. **Peter Williams**. Christopher Wilson. Clare Padley. Sweet & Maxwell Hardback 12/04/2007 9781847030726 ...
www.roundhall.ie/navigateToUrl.do;...do...56 - Cached - Similar

Ballu Khan suing Fiji interim government alleging assault and ...
22 Nov 2007 ... Mr Khan's lead counsel, **Peter Williams QC**, says the allegations include ... **Peter Williams QC** refuses to comment on the interim Prime ...
www.rnzi.com/pages/news.php?op=read&id=36597 - Cached - Similar

Fraud busters v wine boxer | The National Business Review - New ...
The Serious Fraud Office inquiry won't be an as open and shut affair as Winston Peters' latest lawyer, **Peter Williams QC**, has told the media. ...
www.nbr.co.nz/comment/nevil.../fraud-busters-v-wine-boxer - Cached - Similar

[PDF] INDEPENDENT POLICE CONDUCT AUTHORITY Level 10 Telephone: (04) 499 ...
File Format: PDF/Adobe Acrobat - View
The Authority also confirmed that it had received a complaint made by **Peter Williams QC** against Police on behalf of Tuhoe. Police had referred the complaint ...
www.ipca.govt.nz/includes/download.aspx?ID=29205 - Similar

Across the world, people demand freedom for political prisoners ...
27 Oct 2007 ... I'm extremely pleased to see that **Peter Williams QC** is now being engaged to participate regarding the concerns in Ruatoki and also the ...
www.indymedia.org.nz/.../across-world-people-demand-freedom-polit - Cached - Similar

Correspondents Report - NZ Solicitor-General hits out at ...
The Tuhoe tribe have since called in **Peter Williams QC**, who believes they've got a good case against police for breaching their civil rights. ...
www.abc.net.au/cgi-bin/common/printfriendly.pl?... - Cached - Similar

[PDF] Difficult New Zealand I
File Format: PDF/Adobe Acrobat - View as HTML
Author: '**Peter Williams QC**? He's so tight nuns use his arsehole as a reference. For decades he's been refusing to pay people he's hired. ...
www.greghallett.com/.../NZ%20A%20Blackmailer's%20Guide-%20C12-%20Noah%20wins%20the%20Ark%20Contract-%2016.7.08.pdf - Similar

Barristers & Solicitors
Find Barristers & Solicitors in NZ with the finda Business Directory.
www.finda.co.nz/solicitors

Williams held up a bunch of papers and waved them by his head saying: "That man Mr Hallett. I have been on the web, I don't usually go on the web, but I have been on the web and I have found this scurrulous information about myself. This was first pointed out to me by a lawyer overseas, a legal colleague, I don't want to say his name, but it affects my international reputation and prevents me from getting work overseas."

I'm thinking to myself: 'You're 73, you're well past your useby date, almost everyone who knows you, hates you. Only mentally ill cling-ons hang around you, your reputation is undeserved, you're not a friend of New Zealand, you made your money by ending up with your client Mr Asia/Mr Big's (Terry Clark/Sinclair) heroin trafficking money, people think you ordered the murder of the competition drug trafficker Marty Johnstone, you surround yourself with criminals, you were never a very good lawyer, God knows why you're in financial strife, what, is it paying bribes to the Australian Anti-Corruption Team, you're so tight nuns use your arsehole as a reference, even the banks are no longer funding your development frauds, and you are willing to try and send a man to jail for legal harrassment just to stop paying a $5,000 bill, you oblique non sequitur of a lawyer in late-in-life processional distraction, psychiatrically challenged by the radioactive pellet in your prostate. Certainly fits the initials PAWQC – Porky.'

So I checked the web the same day and looked up "Peter Williams QC". 80th on the list was "[PDF] Difficult New Zealand I Author: Peter Williams QC? He's so tight nuns use his arsehole as a reference. For decades he's been refusing to pay people he's hired. ... www.greghallett.com/..." Well I got that right. He still hasn't paid.

Williams was also holding a copy of *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide* which had about 80 yellow postits, all written on. The funny thing about this is that Williams is so tight, he wouldn't even buy a copy and this one was stolen by Heeni Phillips. And you can't present stolen evidence in court. I mentioned this, but the briefed-&-bought Judge Perkins allowed it.

So the papers Williams was waving above his head, unpresented, yet accepted by Judge Perkins as evidence, was actually six lines on 12 sheets of paper. I checked the first 120 web listings and this was the only one that mentioned him. The other web listings were about cases he had commented on. Williams specialises in not getting to the heart of the matter and I would be happy to comment on these cases and solve them in five minutes or less. Williams is that bad. Williams is a courtroom drama queen who drags out cases (like this one) because he's the Dr Smith of 'Lost in Space' in law. He actually looks like him too.

Judge Perkins then asked Williams: "What would you like to do?"

Williams replied: "Well, I would like to charge for criminal libel, but that is no longer legal."

Prime Minister David Lange removed criminal libel when he was caught getting felatio from a transvestite at the duckpond in the Auckland Domain. The transvestite was then murdered and Lange removed criminal libel so if anyone sued him for being 'a fat-as fuck tranny rooter', he could cite there was no longer criminal libel, so he didn't have to defend himself. Plus Williams' reputation is undeserved, so all I have to do is prove his heroin trafficking. I'll throw in 'master slaver' to boot . . . and car theft.

Judge its-all-about ME Perkins then immediately gave Peter Williams QC considered advice that had been pre-arranged with Sian Elias: "You can write to the Solicitor-General and ask for dispensation [or something similar as it was never written down]". After giving Williams his wishlist as pre-arranged by Sian Elias, Perkins turned to me with the sour look of a school bully turned prefect who's sister I'd just poked: "Mr Hallett".

So I rose and began to speak: "I haven't had my case heard. I had won the case in the Disputes Tribunal . . ."

Perkins: "You didn't win the case"

Hallett: "Well I was winning the case and a decision was about to be made in my favour when the case was transferred to the District Court by . . ."

Perkins: "I've heard enough Mr Hallett. If you say anything more I will call security and have you thrown in lock-up." Perkins then wrote up Williams wishlist for the next 10 minutes.

So I wrote to the Civil Liason Judge, Judge Mathers (delivered and signed for by 5 pm) and to the Solicitor-General Dr David Collins QC, posted at 5.30 pm.

Fat lot of good that will do. Solicitor-General Dr David Collins QC was Chairman of the Todd Foundation (2003–05), so here's a short history.

I.O.: "The Todd Family were huge players under Prime Minister Muldoon (H) who formed the car manufacturing plant around them. They went from reassembling every knocked down Hillman Hunter to manufacturing virtually every Mitsubishi in New Zealand. Todd Motors was based in Tairua in Wellington, but they had houses in Karori and Wadestown.

"I was asked to investigate one of the women in the Todd Family suspected of being involved in a homicide but was totally absorbed with looking after her handicapped child . . . and the wife of the chief of Todd Motors, the accountant, did a murder and got off it. Virginia someone. At least that's how I remember it. Todd reckoned they had nothing to do with H . . .

"Jerry Clayton was one of the main car dealers. He is called 'JC' all around Takapuna because he walks around like he can walk on water and nothing can touch him . . . H was also brought into New Zealand in the engine blocks of imported cars, so you have to look at the car importers for that . . . JC is just as likely to do a hit on you."

Author: "Well he did destroy the car sales career of a distant relative of mine . . . So someone was importing cars with heroin in the engine blocks . . . one of the major car dealers was into organised crime. A lot of people involved in drug trafficking turn respectable and turn to charity work and foundations as a means of complicit cover with the police and public. Charity work is the ongoing promise of funding and/or community service whereby the community reads in them, 'He couldn't possibly have . . . he funded my boys soccer team', and that is the complicit cover. So it appears that the judiciary and charity, like the military, are really funded on heroin trafficking.

"The only form of respectable in New Zealand is 'rich'. It doesn't matter how you made your money . . . and New Zealand is one of the few countries in the world where you don't have to declare where your money came from, so it's a perfect laundry, and this money laundering service comes with government complicty, which includes the complicity of the Judiciary, which respects anyone with money, and attacks anyone without it, often attacking people out of their money.

"Yes, New Zealand is that shallow. Lawyers often say: 'New Zealand has its own method of destroying people, especially its promising men'. Couldn't agree more."

> 29 July 2005 HDSL/ Hallett letter to the Civil Liason Judge and the Solicitor-General:
>
> "I understand the duty of the Solicitor-General, Dr David Collins QC, is to give independent advice and to act independently, and that this independence is of considerable constitutional importance; and that 'Such impartial advice can be seen to be given without political direction, even on politically contentious issues', like slavery; and 'A key responsibility is to advise the government on constitutional questions' like slavery; and that 'The Solicitor-General also exercises a number of specific functions within the Crown's prosecution process'.
>
> "I understand that the Solicitor-General being a QC will not give advantage to another QC, especially when the reputation of the law is at stake.
>
> (Please confirm or deny in writing.)"

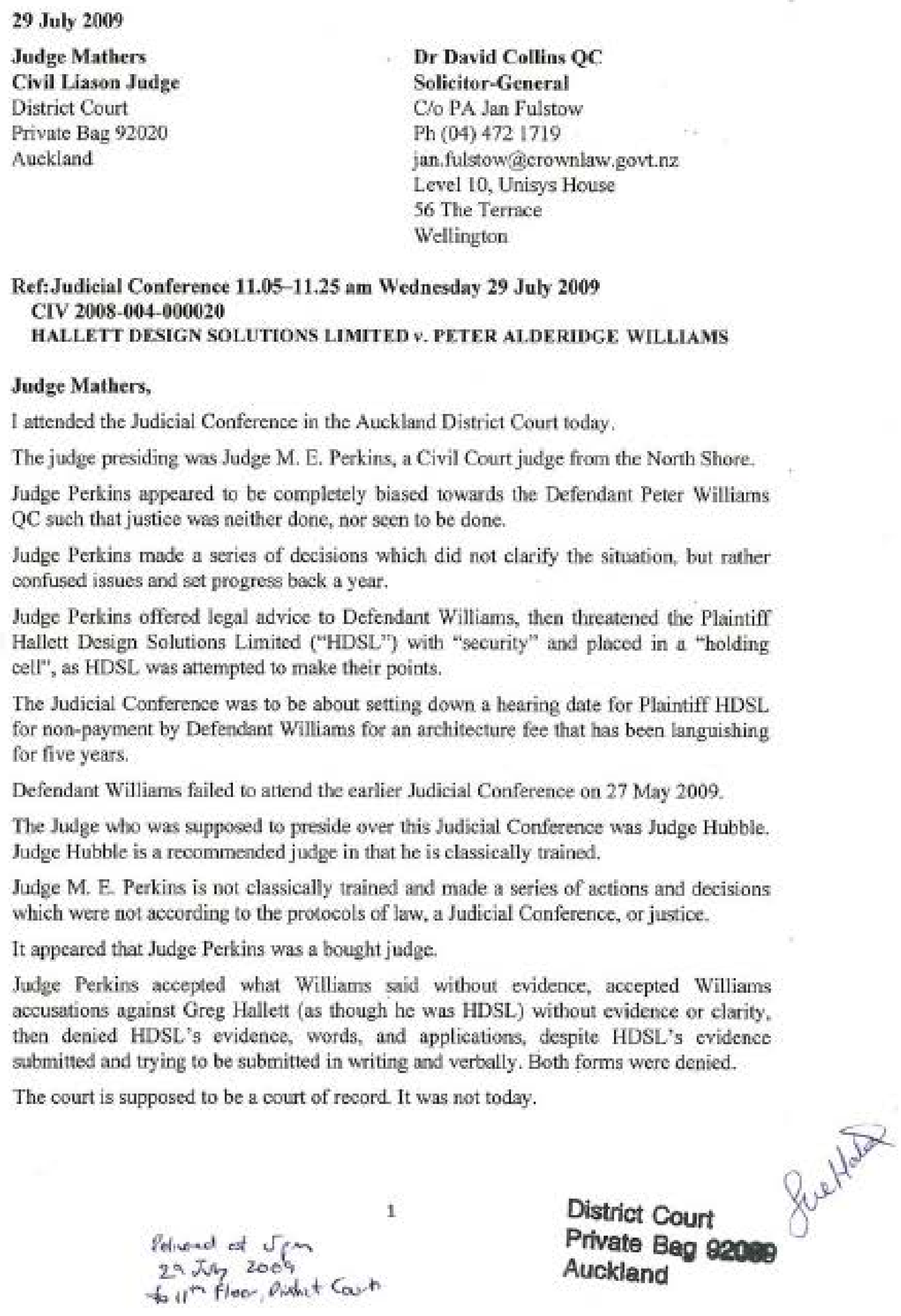

29 July 2009

Judge Mathers
Civil Liason Judge
District Court
Private Bag 92020
Auckland

Dr David Collins QC
Solicitor-General
C/o PA Jan Fulstow
Ph (04) 472 1719
jan.fulstow@crownlaw.govt.nz
Level 10, Unisys House
56 The Terrace
Wellington

Ref:Judicial Conference 11.05–11.25 am Wednesday 29 July 2009
CIV 2008-004-000020
HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LIMITED v. PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS

Judge Mathers,

I attended the Judicial Conference in the Auckland District Court today.

The judge presiding was Judge M. E. Perkins, a Civil Court judge from the North Shore.

Judge Perkins appeared to be completely biased towards the Defendant Peter Williams QC such that justice was neither done, nor seen to be done.

Judge Perkins made a series of decisions which did not clarify the situation, but rather confused issues and set progress back a year.

Judge Perkins offered legal advice to Defendant Williams, then threatened the Plaintiff Hallett Design Solutions Limited ("HDSL") with "security" and placed in a "holding cell", as HDSL was attempted to make their points.

The Judicial Conference was to be about setting down a hearing date for Plaintiff HDSL for non-payment by Defendant Williams for an architecture fee that has been languishing for five years.

Defendant Williams failed to attend the earlier Judicial Conference on 27 May 2009.

The Judge who was supposed to preside over this Judicial Conference was Judge Hubble. Judge Hubble is a recommended judge in that he is classically trained.

Judge M. E. Perkins is not classically trained and made a series of actions and decisions which were not according to the protocols of law, a Judicial Conference, or justice.

It appeared that Judge Perkins was a bought judge.

Judge Perkins accepted what Williams said without evidence, accepted Williams accusations against Greg Hallett (as though he was HDSL) without evidence or clarity, then denied HDSL's evidence, words, and applications, despite HDSL's evidence submitted and trying to be submitted in writing and verbally. Both forms were denied.

The court is supposed to be a court of record. It was not today.

1

Delivered at 5pm
29 July 2009
to 11th Floor, District Court

District Court
Private Bag 920[illegible]
Auckland

Judge Perkins even made threats against HDSL while he was standing and speaking.

Chris Reed's defense on behalf of Williams was two days late. This was pointed out, yet Judge Perkins allowed it.

Judge Perkins then denied HDSL's claim for Default Judgement on Liquidated Amounts.

Judge Perkins then pointed out that Chris Reed's pleading for defamation was inadequate.

Judge Perkins then advised Peter Williams to apply to the Solicitor-General for criminal intent.

Peter Williams then pointed out that Criminal Libel was no longer valid.

Judge Perkins then advised Peter Williams that he would allow the blending of Hallett Design Solutions Limited and Greg Hallett, the first an HDSL claim against Williams for an architecture fee for work done in 2003 to 2004;
the second a defamation (or similar) by Williams against the separate entity Greg Hallett for a book published in 2007, to which Williams contributed.

These are two separate issues, two separate entities, in two different time frames, in two separate courts.

This is not justice. Justice is supposed to clarify issues.

Judge Perkins has designed a hearing that will be a soap opera court drama.

If the hearings go ahead in this manner, to ensure justice is done, I require the media to be present so that Peter Williams QC's corrected reputation can be recorded.

I am sure the judiciary won't want to hear it. However, I am sure the New Zealand public will want to hear and see it.

HDSL presented the "RESPONSE TO 'PRE CONFERENCE MEMORANDUM BY DEFENDANT' [WILLIAMS] FOR THE 29 JULY 2009 JUDICIAL CONFERENCE".

Judge Perkins then read it for less than 1 minute, then claimed it was certainly defamatory and: "I understand what Chris Reed meant".

Judge Perkins' summary is biased as:
A. He could not have read and absorbed the memorandum in the time (later confirmed);
B. Williams and his witnesses do have a history of mental illness, bankruptcy and not paying bills;
C. Williams' reputation is assumed to be good;
D. HDSL's and Greg Hallett's reputation was assumed to be bad.
E. Judge Perkins appeared to treat HDSL/Hallett with disgust, when upon investigation, the reverse appears to be true.

The facts show, and the history of the case shows, that Williams has not paid a simple architectural fee.

Judge Perkins then said: "I refuse to read the memorandum" by HDSL. "The memorandum is defamatory" (thus confirming point "A").

District Court
Private Bag 92069
Auckland

HDSL/ Hallett then stood up and spoke and made the point that the entities should be separated, not joined, and the cases should be separated, not joined, as they were different issues in a different time frame against different entities. Further, one is civil, the other is criminal.

Judge Perkins cut me off and said: "I've heard enough. If you speak anymore, I will call security and have you placed in lock up".

I then stood for 10 minutes (11.15–11.24 am) while Judge Perkins ignored me and wrote, having refuse to hear or read my submissions.

When Judge Perkins finished writing, he said, "I have heard enough. You can sit down now."

I then requested a copy of any correspondence between Jamie Lockett and Peter Williams.

Judge Perkins replied: "I've heard you" and refused to answer, or request the information from Williams, yet the purpose (one of them) of a Judicial Conference is to request and exchange the requested information.

Judge Perkins then gave a summary, which was a wish list for Williams, and a complete denial for HDSL.

HDSL and Hallett strongly suspect, suggest and complain that Judge Perkins was planted at the Auckland District Court from the North Shore Court at the request of Peter Williams QC in order to give Defendant Williams every advantage and Plaintiff HDSL every disadvantage.

For a year now, Peter Williams QC has been losing the case in defence of his non-payment of an architecture fee. Judge Perkins has simply covered up for this, even giving legal advice directly to Williams.

Peter Williams then applied for a hearing for four days.

If the judge hearing the case refuses to hear HDSL's evidence, then it will take a lot less.

If the judge hearing the case accepts what HDSL will say in claim of architecture fee and in defense of liable (or similar) and the affirmation of claims, then it will take a lot longer.

Judge Perkins failed to ask for HDSL's input on how long the hearing would take.

If Williams charges for libel (or similar) the court will need a court reader for three weeks as all of my books and radio interviews and YouTube will be presented in affirmation.

Rightful Requests
I apply to have Judge M. E. Perkins removed from the civil section of the District Court anywhere in New Zealand.

I apply to have the Judicial Conference reheard so that an unbaised judge, preferably classically trained, can set down with clarity how the separate cases will be heard in separate courts.

District Court
Private Bag 92069
Auckland

I apply for the media to be present during all aspects of the hearing so that justice can be seen to be done, as it was certainly not done today.

I request a written apology from Judge M. E. Perkins for threateneing to place me in lock up while I was standing and submitting in a calm manner without raised voice.

I request a written explanation from Judge M. E. Perkins as to why he offered Peter Williams legal advise and offered HDSL none.

I request a written explanation from Judge M. E. Perkins as to how he came to be present in the Auckland District Court (Civil) on that day in front of Williams and myself.

I request a written explanation from Judge M. E. Perkins as to why he accepted Williams evidence without sighting it, or handling it.

I request a written explanation from Judge M. E. Perkins as to why he denied HDSL's evidence, and refused to read it, even though he handled it.

I request a written explanation from Judge M. E. Perkins as to why he has chosen to have two separate issues against three different entities in two different time frames heard at the same time in the same court, effectively allowing only one day for Williams libel accusation and Hallett's response.

In addition, I request explanations for all of the above points from the Civil Liason Judge, Judge Mathers.

Since slavery by Peter Williams QC is involved, and I am a Maori, I request that HDSL's claim and Peter Williams libel (or similar) case also be heard in the Maori Court.

I request that both courts (New Zealand/British and Maori) operate simultaneously side by side over all issues.

I request that the Civil Liason Judge, Judge Mathers forward this to the Solicitor-General David Collins so that he may also clarify, act upon, and respond to these points.

Further Requests

I request any correspondence between Peter Williams and Jamie Lockett (Terrorist?), either received or sent, written or spoken, and any exchanges of charges.

I request any correspondence between Peter Williams and Lawrence Chan (Bankrupt?), either received or sent, written or spoken.

I also request any correspondence and transfer and/or holding of money between Peter Williams and Terry Clark, a.k.a. Terry Sinclair, Mr Asia (Heroin Trafficker & murderer).

I also request a detailed explanation as to why Peter Williams' friend and partner Eb Leary was struck off twice. I understand the first time was for laundering Mr Asia's drug money, and the second time was for laundering ecstacy money, after Williams had applied to readmit Leary to the Bar. Clarification, dates and paperwork are required.

District Court
Private Bag 92069
Auckland

I also request the details of when and for what Peter Williams has been up before the New Zealand Law Society, and/or, the Standards Committee, and/or the New Zealand Disciplinary Tribunal.

I understand the duty of the Civil Liason judge is to liase between the various judcial functions, persons and role.

It is requested that you act as such.

I understand the duty of the Solicitor-General, Dr David Collins QC, is to give independent advice and to act independently, and that this independence is of considerable constitutional importance; and that "Such impartial advice can be seen to be given without political direction, even on politically contentious issues", like slavery; and "A key responsibility is to advise the government on constitutional questions" like slavery; and that "The Solicitor-General also exercises a number of specific functions within the Crown's prosecution process."

I understand that the Solicitor-General being a QC will not give advantage to another QC, especially when he reputation of the law is at stake. (Please confirm or deny in writing.)

Yours sincerely,

Joseph-Gregory: (Hallett)

Yours sincerely,

Hallett Design Solutions Limited

All rights, powers, privileges, and immunities,
whether actual, contingent, or prospective : Reserved.
A living-breathing-soul Aggrieved and Injured Party, only in his standing
as beneficiary of the Original Jurisdiction **for all private or admiralty/maritime**
non-common/equity law purposes Supersedes Bond No. 1961120997 applies.

Address for service:
26 Lichfield Road | Parnell | Auckland
Telephone (09) 307 5880 | Email: too@slingshot.co.nz
Documents will not be accepted for service by facsimile.

CC: **Solicitor-General Dr David Collins QC**
C/o PA Jan Fulstow
Ph (04) 472 1719
jan.fulstow@crownlaw.govt.nz
Level 10, Unisys House, 56 The Terrace, Wellington

District Court
Private Bag 92069
Auckland

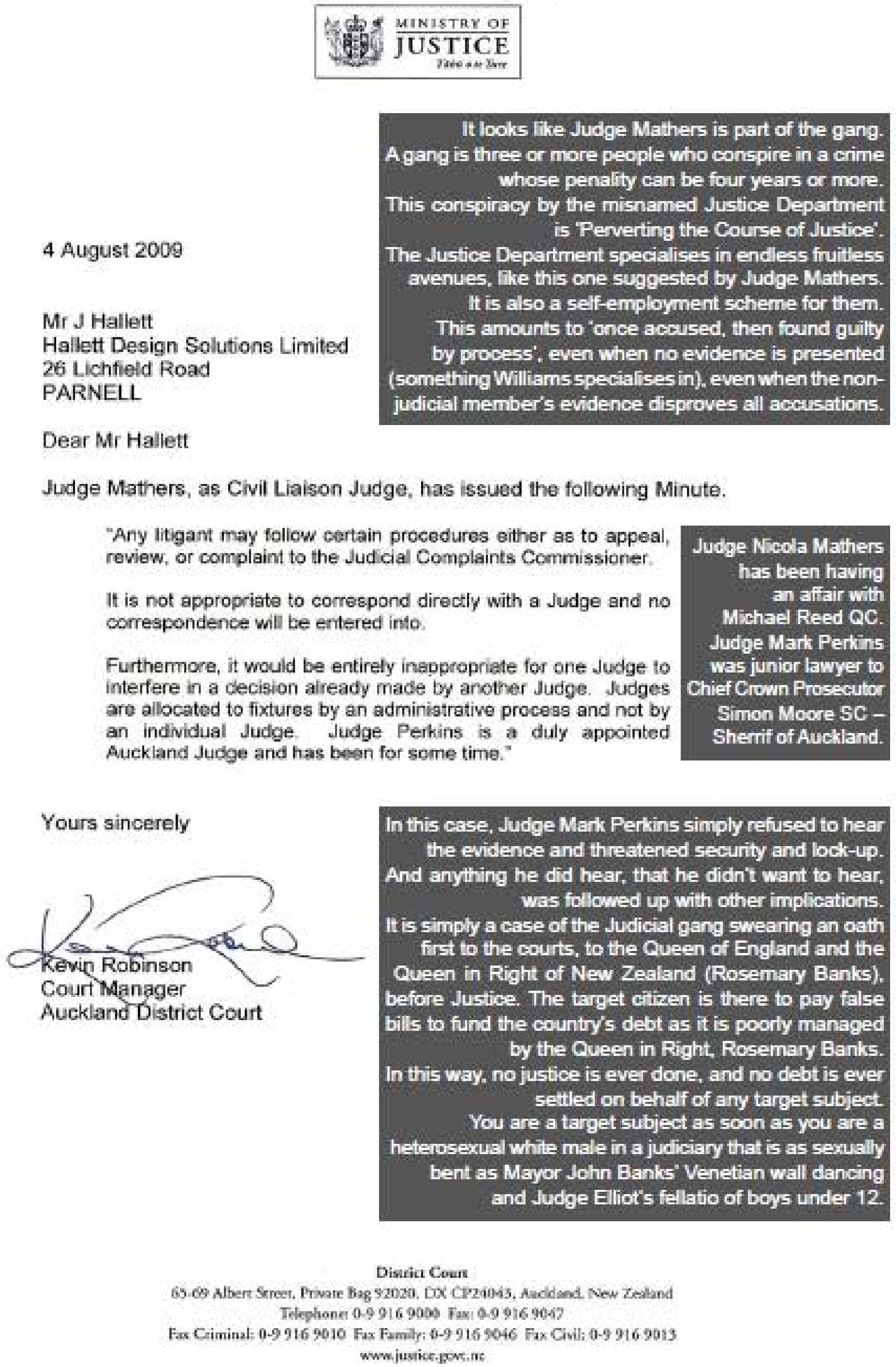

MINISTRY OF
JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

It looks like Judge Mathers is part of the gang. A gang is three or more people who conspire in a crime whose penality can be four years or more. This conspiracy by the misnamed Justice Department is 'Perverting the Course of Justice'. The Justice Department specialises in endless fruitless avenues, like this one suggested by Judge Mathers. It is also a self-employment scheme for them. This amounts to 'once accused, then found guilty by process', even when no evidence is presented (something Williams specialises in), even when the non-judicial member's evidence disproves all accusations.

4 August 2009

Mr J Hallett
Hallett Design Solutions Limited
26 Lichfield Road
PARNELL

Dear Mr Hallett

Judge Mathers, as Civil Liaison Judge, has issued the following Minute.

> "Any litigant may follow certain procedures either as to appeal, review, or complaint to the Judicial Complaints Commissioner.
>
> It is not appropriate to correspond directly with a Judge and no correspondence will be entered into.
>
> Furthermore, it would be entirely inappropriate for one Judge to interfere in a decision already made by another Judge. Judges are allocated to fixtures by an administrative process and not by an individual Judge. Judge Perkins is a duly appointed Auckland Judge and has been for some time."

Judge Nicola Mathers has been having an affair with Michael Reed QC. Judge Mark Perkins was junior lawyer to Chief Crown Prosecutor Simon Moore SC – Sherrif of Auckland.

Yours sincerely

Kevin Robinson
Court Manager
Auckland District Court

In this case, Judge Mark Perkins simply refused to hear the evidence and threatened security and lock-up. And anything he did hear, that he didn't want to hear, was followed up with other implications. It is simply a case of the Judicial gang swearing an oath first to the courts, to the Queen of England and the Queen in Right of New Zealand (Rosemary Banks), before Justice. The target citizen is there to pay false bills to fund the country's debt as it is poorly managed by the Queen in Right, Rosemary Banks. In this way, no justice is ever done, and no debt is ever settled on behalf of any target subject. You are a target subject as soon as you are a heterosexual white male in a judiciary that is as sexually bent as Mayor John Banks' Venetian wall dancing and Judge Elliot's fellatio of boys under 12.

District Court
65-69 Albert Street, Private Bag 92020, DX CP24043, Auckland, New Zealand
Telephone: 0-9 916 9000 Fax: 0-9 916 9047
Fax Criminal: 0-9 916 9010 Fax Family: 0-9 916 9046 Fax Civil: 0-9 916 9013
www.justice.govt.nz

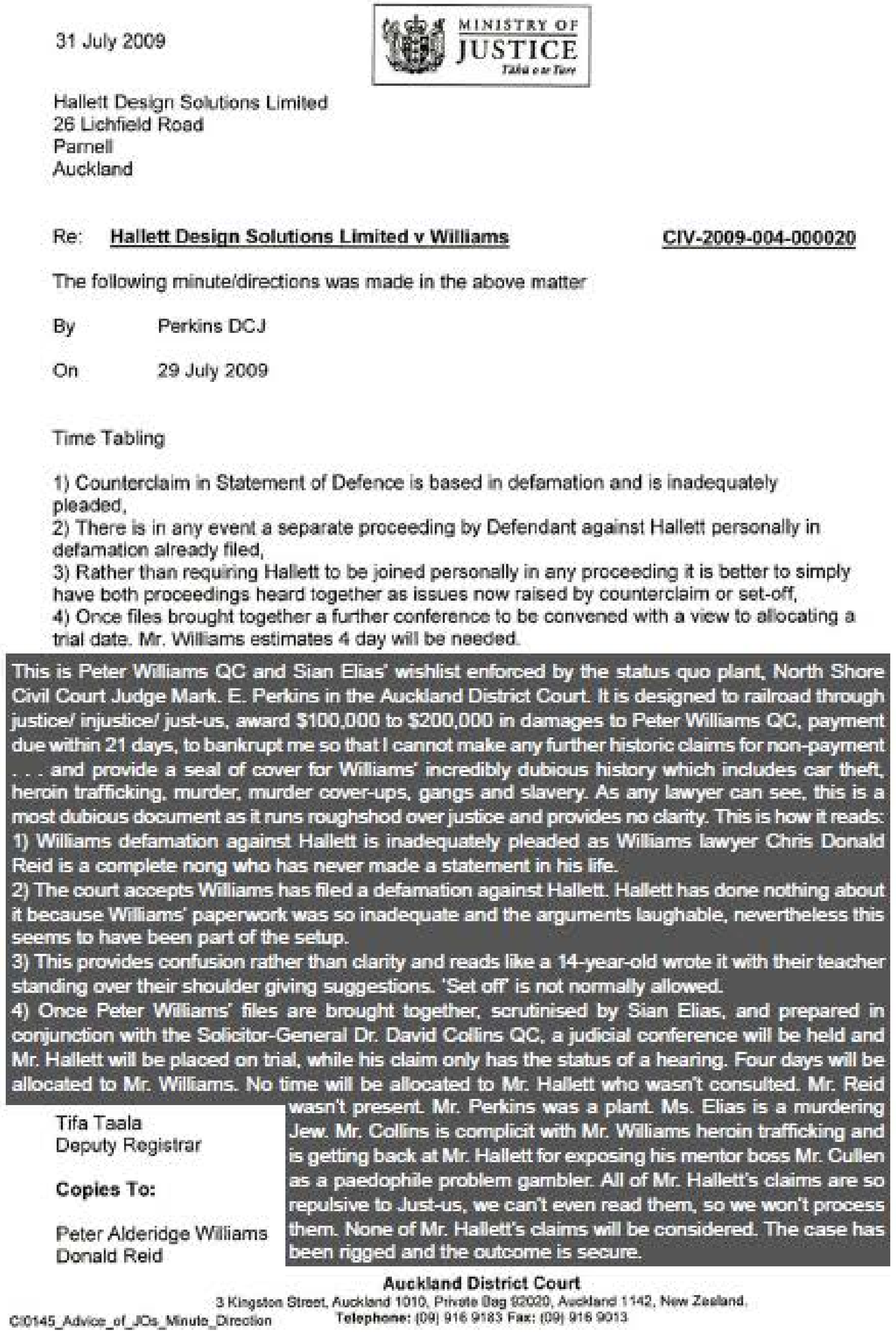

31 July 2009

MINISTRY OF
JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

Hallett Design Solutions Limited
26 Lichfield Road
Parnell
Auckland

Re: **Hallett Design Solutions Limited v Williams** **CIV-2009-004-000020**

The following minute/directions was made in the above matter

By Perkins DCJ

On 29 July 2009

Time Tabling

1) Counterclaim in Statement of Defence is based in defamation and is inadequately pleaded,
2) There is in any event a separate proceeding by Defendant against Hallett personally in defamation already filed,
3) Rather than requiring Hallett to be joined personally in any proceeding it is better to simply have both proceedings heard together as issues now raised by counterclaim or set-off,
4) Once files brought together a further conference to be convened with a view to allocating a trial date. Mr. Williams estimates 4 day will be needed.

This is Peter Williams QC and Sian Elias' wishlist enforced by the status quo plant, North Shore Civil Court Judge Mark. E. Perkins in the Auckland District Court. It is designed to railroad through justice/ injustice/ just-us, award $100,000 to $200,000 in damages to Peter Williams QC, payment due within 21 days, to bankrupt me so that I cannot make any further historic claims for non-payment . . . and provide a seal of cover for Williams' incredibly dubious history which includes car theft, heroin trafficking, murder, murder cover-ups, gangs and slavery. As any lawyer can see, this is a most dubious document as it runs roughshod over justice and provides no clarity. This is how it reads:
1) Williams defamation against Hallett is inadequately pleaded as Williams lawyer Chris Donald Reid is a complete nong who has never made a statement in his life.
2) The court accepts Williams has filed a defamation against Hallett. Hallett has done nothing about it because Williams' paperwork was so inadequate and the arguments laughable, nevertheless this seems to have been part of the setup.
3) This provides confusion rather than clarity and reads like a 14-year-old wrote it with their teacher standing over their shoulder giving suggestions. 'Set off' is not normally allowed.
4) Once Peter Williams' files are brought together, scrutinised by Sian Elias, and prepared in conjunction with the Solicitor-General Dr. David Collins QC, a judicial conference will be held and Mr. Hallett will be placed on trial, while his claim only has the status of a hearing. Four days will be allocated to Mr. Williams. No time will be allocated to Mr. Hallett who wasn't consulted. Mr. Reid wasn't present. Mr. Perkins was a plant. Ms. Elias is a murdering Jew. Mr. Collins is complicit with Mr. Williams heroin trafficking and is getting back at Mr. Hallett for exposing his mentor boss Mr. Cullen as a paedophile problem gambler. All of Mr. Hallett's claims are so repulsive to Just-us, we can't even read them, so we won't process them. None of Mr. Hallett's claims will be considered. The case has been rigged and the outcome is secure.

Tifa Taala
Deputy Registrar

Copies To:

Peter Alderidge Williams
Donald Reid

Auckland District Court
3 Kingston Street, Auckland 1010, Private Bag 92020, Auckland 1142, New Zealand.
Telephone: (09) 916 9183 **Fax:** (09) 916 9013

CI0145_Advice_of_JOs_Minute_Direction

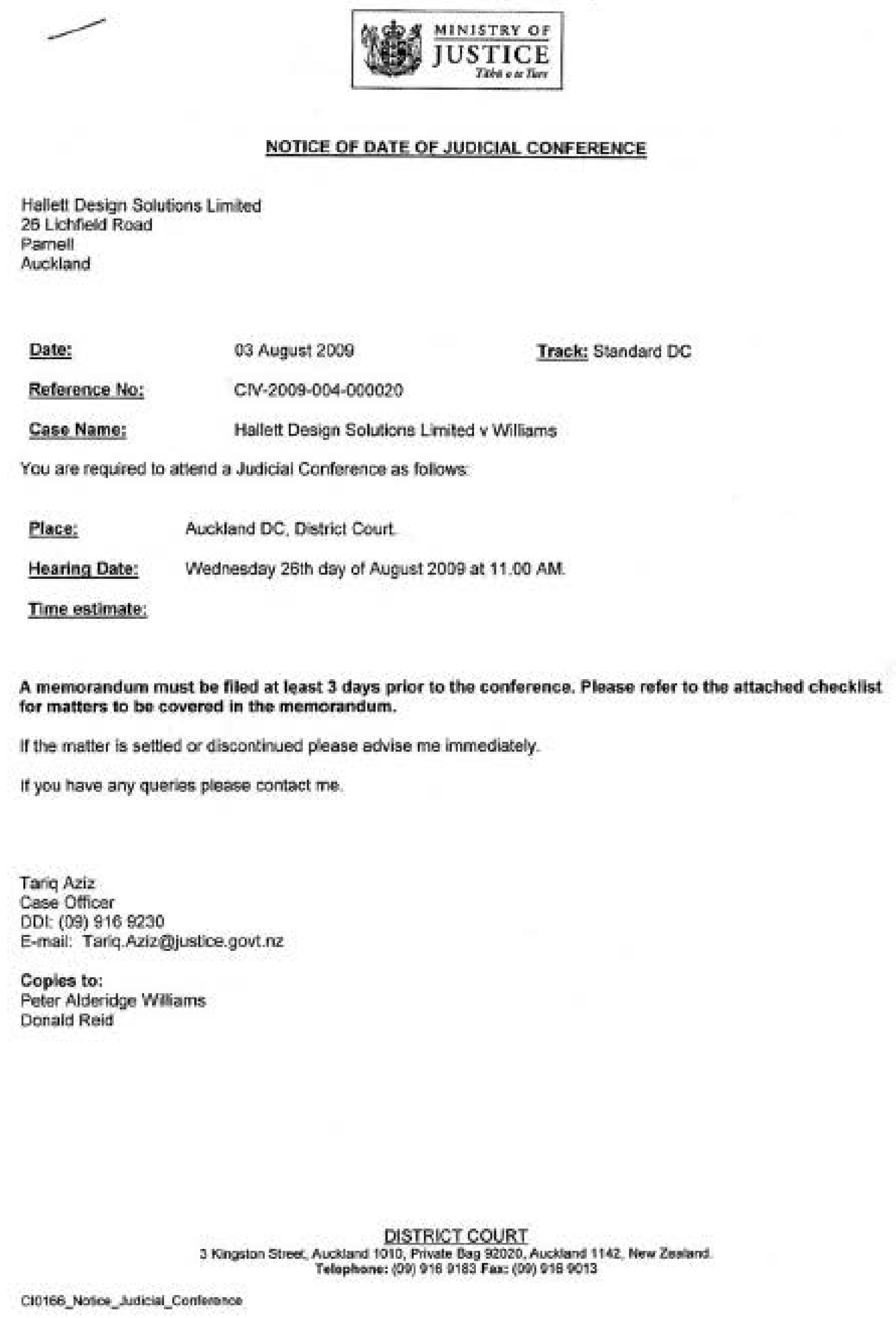

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

NOTICE OF DATE OF JUDICIAL CONFERENCE

Hallett Design Solutions Limited
26 Lichfield Road
Parnell
Auckland

Date: 03 August 2009 **Track:** Standard DC

Reference No: CIV-2009-004-000020

Case Name: Hallett Design Solutions Limited v Williams

You are required to attend a Judicial Conference as follows:

Place: Auckland DC, District Court.

Hearing Date: Wednesday 26th day of August 2009 at 11.00 AM.

Time estimate:

A memorandum must be filed at least 3 days prior to the conference. Please refer to the attached checklist for matters to be covered in the memorandum.

If the matter is settled or discontinued please advise me immediately.

If you have any queries please contact me.

Tariq Aziz
Case Officer
DDI: (09) 916 9230
E-mail: Tariq.Aziz@justice.govt.nz

Copies to:
Peter Alderidge Williams
Donald Reid

DISTRICT COURT
3 Kingston Street, Auckland 1010, Private Bag 92020, Auckland 1142, New Zealand.
Telephone: (09) 916 9183 **Fax:** (09) 916 9013

CI0166_Notice_Judicial_Conference

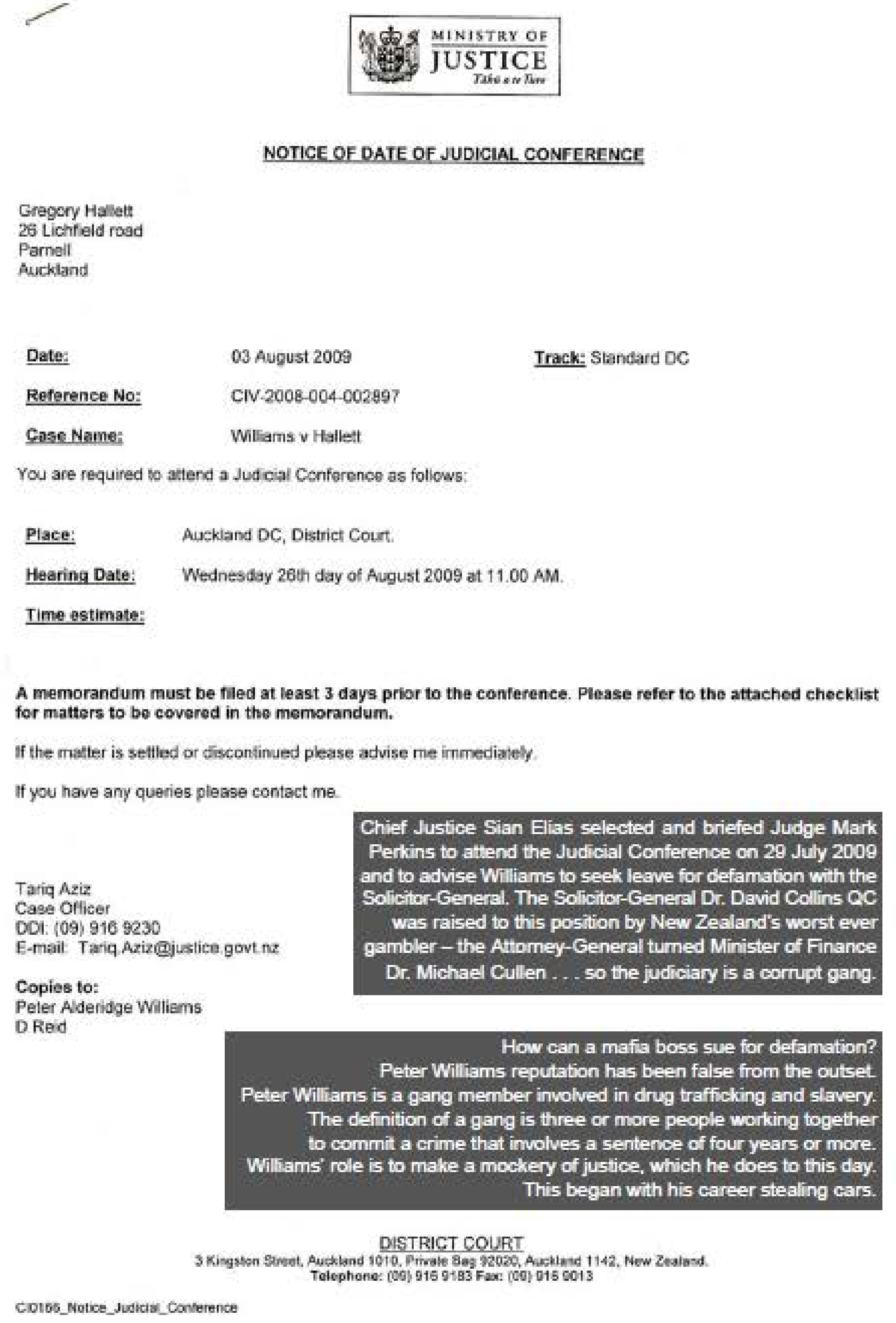

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

NOTICE OF DATE OF JUDICIAL CONFERENCE

Gregory Hallett
26 Lichfield road
Parnell
Auckland

Date: 03 August 2009 **Track:** Standard DC

Reference No: CIV-2008-004-002897

Case Name: Williams v Hallett

You are required to attend a Judicial Conference as follows:

Place: Auckland DC, District Court.

Hearing Date: Wednesday 26th day of August 2009 at 11.00 AM.

Time estimate:

A memorandum must be filed at least 3 days prior to the conference. Please refer to the attached checklist for matters to be covered in the memorandum.

If the matter is settled or discontinued please advise me immediately.

If you have any queries please contact me.

Tariq Aziz
Case Officer
DDI: (09) 916 9230
E-mail: Tariq.Aziz@justice.govt.nz

Copies to:
Peter Alderidge Williams
D Reid

DISTRICT COURT
3 Kingston Street, Auckland 1010, Private Bag 92020, Auckland 1142, New Zealand.
Telephone: (09) 916 9183 **Fax:** (09) 916 9013

CI0166_Notice_Judicial_Conference

Chief Justice Sian Elias selected and briefed Judge Mark Perkins to attend the Judicial Conference on 29 July 2009 and to advise Williams to seek leave for defamation with the Solicitor-General. The Solicitor-General Dr. David Collins QC was raised to this position by New Zealand's worst ever gambler – the Attorney-General turned Minister of Finance Dr. Michael Cullen . . . so the judiciary is a corrupt gang.

How can a mafia boss sue for defamation?
Peter Williams reputation has been false from the outset.
Peter Williams is a gang member involved in drug trafficking and slavery.
The definition of a gang is three or more people working together to commit a crime that involves a sentence of four years or more.
Williams' role is to make a mockery of justice, which he does to this day.
This began with his career stealing cars.

> "Dr. David Collins was appointed QC in 2000 . . . He was a trustee of the Todd Foundation from 2003 to 2005."

What are the chances. The Todd Group were CIA protected and the CIA is currently taking over Greater Auckland, the same place where 8000 foreign war criminals now reside. This is one of the greater cons of New Zealand's history.

Plus, criminals always employ criminal successors to cover up after them and Dr David Collins QC was appointed Solicitor-General by Dr Michael Cullen, a paedophile, paedophile minder, and a problem gambler as long as its other people's money. Collins' boss and appointer Dr. Michael Cullen gambled and lost NZ$6 million a day for 16 months. Surely this is worthy of a prison sentence and the prison bitch title: "The Six Million Dollar Man".

I.O.: "Sian Elias is really unpopular with the police and other judges. The police hate what she said in July 2009 about releasing criminals early to free up the prisons, and the judges hate her because they think she shouldn't be a judge because she's running the judiciary and making comments. She was only appointed as first Chief Justice by Helen Clark, who is a total criminal, and expected backhand support from Sian, but didn't get it.

"Helen and Sian ended up not getting on, but murders shared will do that to a person. Sian appears to be trying to get herself fired so she doesn't have to face charges of murder – of Michael King et cetera – while she is still Chief Justice.

"She's probably organised some cushy position for herself in Israel.

"When you lodged this document in the High Court on 20 April 2009, and it was triple sealed, it is being read by high Judges and none of them want to believe that Sian Elias is a murderer, but the information stacks up.

"So Sian is interferring in your case, and making it quite obvious. She wants to be fired."

Peter Williams is part of Slave Dealing which is so common in New Zealand, it's almost a cultural art. Former Labour MP Taito Phillip Field was charged with it, tried from 20 April 2009 and finally convicted on 4 August 2009. The term "Slavery" was never mentioned, but that is essentially what it was. So that should make it hot and give it case precedence.

> "On 24 May 2007, police announced that they would seek the leave of the High Court to lay corruption charges against the Labour MP Taito Phillip Field. Four months later on 5 October 2007 the court complied.
>
> On 26 November 2007 Field faced 15 counts of bribery and 25 counts of attempting to pervert the course of justice.
>
> The High Court depositions on all 40 charges was heard in mid-2008.
>
> The trial began on 20 April 2009 with 23 charges for wilfully perverting the course of justice and 12 charges for corruption and bribery as an MP.
>
> On August 4, 2009, the ten member jury in the Auckland High Court found the ex-Labour MP Taito Phillip Field guilty of 15 charges for wilfully perverting the course of justice and 11 charges for corruption and bribery as an MP– each carrying up to seven years imprisonment.
>
> The Thai tiler Sunan Siriwan [slave] at the centre of the corruption, bribery and perverting the course of justice 'allegations, trial and convictions', has also announced he will sue the Labour MP Taito Phillip Field for $200,000 compensation for the year's work he undertook on his property in Samoa."[3]

So slavery has far reaching implications, across international borders, "inside or outside New Zealand". Peter Williams QC is also a sitting duck for Perverting the Course of Justice.

I.O: "Everyone who's read the paperwork says he's a sitting duck for slavery".

---

[3] Wikipedia, Taito Phillip Field, 6 August 2009, paraphrased for your enjoyment.

Slave Dealing: Crimes Act 1961, Part 5, Crimes against public order, Section 98

98 Dealing in slaves

(1) Every one is liable to imprisonment for a term not exceeding 14 years who, within or outside New Zealand – (a) sells, purchases, transfers, barters, lets, hires, or in any way whatsoever deals with any person as a slave; or (b) employs or uses any person as a slave, or permits any person to be so employed or used; or (c) detains, confines, imprisons, carries away, removes, receives, transports, imports, or brings into any place whatsoever any person as a slave or to be dealt with as a slave; or (d) induces any person to sell, let, or give himself, or any other person dependent on him or in his charge, as a slave; or (e) induces any person to sell, let, or give any other person into debt bondage or serfdom; or (f) builds, fits out, sells, purchases, transfers, lets, hires, uses, provides with personnel, navigates, or serves on board any ship or aircraft for any of the purposes in paragraphs (a) to (e); or . . . (j) agrees or offers to do any of the acts mentioned in this subsection.

(2) For the purposes of this section – Debt bondage means the status or condition arising from a pledge by a debtor of his personal services, or of the personal services of any person under his control, as security for a debt, if the value of those services, as reasonably assessed, is not applied towards the liquidation of the debt or if the length and nature of those services are not limited and defined. Serfdom means the status or condition of a tenant who is by any law, custom, or agreement bound to live and labour on land belonging to another person and to render some determinate service to that other person, whether for reward or not, and who is not free to change that status or condition. Slave includes, without limitation, a person subject to debtbondage or serfdom.

98AA Dealing in people under 18 for sexual exploitation, removal of body parts, or engagement in forced labour

(1) Every one is liable to imprisonment for a term not exceeding 14 years who – (a) sells, buys, transfers, barters, rents, hires, or in any other way enters into a dealing involving a person . . . for the purpose of – (i) the sexual exploitation of the person; or . . . (iii) the engagement of the person in forced labour; or (h) builds, fits out, sells, buys, transfers, rents, hires, uses, provides with personnel, navigates, or serves on board a ship, aircraft, or other vehicle for the purpose of doing an act stated in any of paragraphs (a) to (h); or (8) This section does not limit or affect the generality of section 98.

98A Participation in criminal gang

(1) Every one is liable to imprisonment for a term not exceeding 5 years who participates (whether as a member or an associate member or prospective member) in an organised criminal group, knowing that it is an organised criminal group, whether (a) knowing that his or her participation contributes to the occurrence of criminal activity; or (b) reckless as to whether his or her participation may contribute to the occurrence of criminal activity. (2) . . . an organised criminal group . . . of 3 or more people who have as their objective or one of their objectives – (a) obtaining material benefits from the commission of offences that are punishable by imprisonment for a term of 4 years or more; or (c) the commission of serious violent offences (within the meaning of section 312A(1) that are punishable by imprisonment for a term of 10 years or more; or (3) A group of people is capable of being an organised criminal group for the purposes of this Act whether or not – (a) some of them are subordinates or employees of others; or (b) only some of the people involved in it at a particular time are involved in the planning, arrangement, or execution at that time of any particular action, activity, or transaction; or (c) its membership changes from time to time.

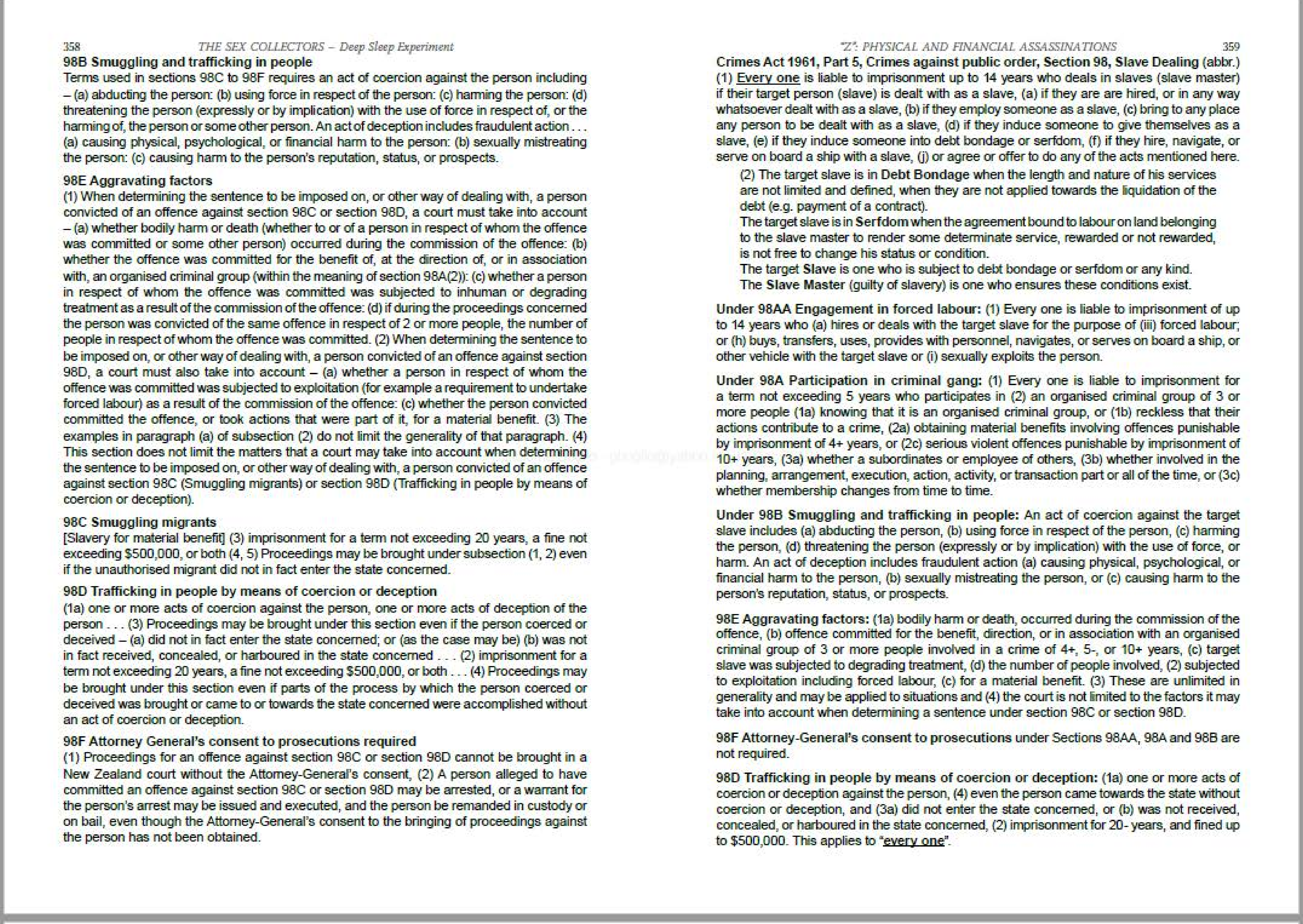

98B Smuggling and trafficking in people

Terms used in sections 98C to 98F requires an act of coercion against the person including – (a) abducting the person: (b) using force in respect of the person: (c) harming the person: (d) threatening the person (expressly or by implication) with the use of force in respect of, or the harming of, the person or some other person. An act of deception includes fraudulent action . . . (a) causing physical, psychological, or financial harm to the person: (b) sexually mistreating the person: (c) causing harm to the person's reputation, status, or prospects.

98E Aggravating factors

(1) When determining the sentence to be imposed on, or other way of dealing with, a person convicted of an offence against section 98C or section 98D, a court must take into account – (a) whether bodily harm or death (whether to or of a person in respect of whom the offence was committed or some other person) occurred during the commission of the offence: (b) whether the offence was committed for the benefit of, at the direction of, or in association with, an organised criminal group (within the meaning of section 98A(2)): (c) whether a person in respect of whom the offence was committed was subjected to inhuman or degrading treatment as a result of the commission of the offence: (d) if during the proceedings concerned the person was convicted of the same offence in respect of 2 or more people, the number of people in respect of whom the offence was committed. (2) When determining the sentence to be imposed on, or other way of dealing with, a person convicted of an offence against section 98D, a court must also take into account – (a) whether a person in respect of whom the offence was committed was subjected to exploitation (for example a requirement to undertake forced labour) as a result of the commission of the offence: (c) whether the person convicted committed the offence, or took actions that were part of it, for a material benefit. (3) The examples in paragraph (a) of subsection (2) do not limit the generality of that paragraph. (4) This section does not limit the matters that a court may take into account when determining the sentence to be imposed on, or other way of dealing with, a person convicted of an offence against section 98C (Smuggling migrants) or section 98D (Trafficking in people by means of coercion or deception).

98C Smuggling migrants

[Slavery for material benefit] (3) imprisonment for a term not exceeding 20 years, a fine not exceeding $500,000, or both (4, 5) Proceedings may be brought under subsection (1, 2) even if the unauthorised migrant did not in fact enter the state concerned.

98D Trafficking in people by means of coercion or deception

(1a) one or more acts of coercion against the person, one or more acts of deception of the person . . . (3) Proceedings may be brought under this section even if the person coerced or deceived – (a) did not in fact enter the state concerned; or (as the case may be) (b) was not in fact received, concealed, or harboured in the state concerned . . . (2) imprisonment for a term not exceeding 20 years, a fine not exceeding $500,000, or both . . . (4) Proceedings may be brought under this section even if parts of the process by which the person coerced or deceived was brought or came to or towards the state concerned were accomplished without an act of coercion or deception.

98F Attorney General's consent to prosecutions required

(1) Proceedings for an offence against section 98C or section 98D cannot be brought in a New Zealand court without the Attorney-General's consent, (2) A person alleged to have committed an offence against section 98C or section 98D may be arrested, or a warrant for the person's arrest may be issued and executed, and the person be remanded in custody or on bail, even though the Attorney-General's consent to the bringing of proceedings against the person has not been obtained.

Crimes Act 1961, Part 5, Crimes against public order, Section 98, Slave Dealing (abbr.)

(1) Every one is liable to imprisonment up to 14 years who deals in slaves (slave master) if their target person (slave) is dealt with as a slave, (a) if they are are hired, or in any way whatsoever dealt with as a slave, (b) if they employ someone as a slave, (c) bring to any place any person to be dealt with as a slave, (d) if they induce someone to give themselves as a slave, (e) if they induce someone into debt bondage or serfdom, (f) if they hire, navigate, or serve on board a ship with a slave, (j) or agree or offer to do any of the acts mentioned here.

> (2) The target slave is in **Debt Bondage** when the length and nature of his services are not limited and defined, when they are not applied towards the liquidation of the debt (e.g. payment of a contract).
> The target slave is in **Serfdom** when the agreement bound to labour on land belonging to the slave master to render some determinate service, rewarded or not rewarded, is not free to change his status or condition.
> The target **Slave** is one who is subject to debt bondage or serfdom or any kind.
> The **Slave Master** (guilty of slavery) is one who ensures these conditions exist.

Under 98AA Engagement in forced labour: (1) Every one is liable to imprisonment of up to 14 years who (a) hires or deals with the target slave for the purpose of (iii) forced labour; or (h) buys, transfers, uses, provides with personnel, navigates, or serves on board a ship, or other vehicle with the target slave or (i) sexually exploits the person.

Under 98A Participation in criminal gang: (1) Every one is liable to imprisonment for a term not exceeding 5 years who participates in (2) an organised criminal group of 3 or more people (1a) knowing that it is an organised criminal group, or (1b) reckless that their actions contribute to a crime, (2a) obtaining material benefits involving offences punishable by imprisonment of 4+ years, or (2c) serious violent offences punishable by imprisonment of 10+ years, (3a) whether a subordinates or employee of others, (3b) whether involved in the planning, arrangement, execution, action, activity, or transaction part or all of the time, or (3c) whether membership changes from time to time.

Under 98B Smuggling and trafficking in people: An act of coercion against the target slave includes (a) abducting the person, (b) using force in respect of the person, (c) harming the person, (d) threatening the person (expressly or by implication) with the use of force, or harm. An act of deception includes fraudulent action (a) causing physical, psychological, or financial harm to the person, (b) sexually mistreating the person, or (c) causing harm to the person's reputation, status, or prospects.

98E Aggravating factors: (1a) bodily harm or death, occurred during the commission of the offence, (b) offence committed for the benefit, direction, or in association with an organised criminal group of 3 or more people involved in a crime of 4+, 5-, or 10+ years, (c) target slave was subjected to degrading treatment, (d) the number of people involved, (2) subjected to exploitation including forced labour, (c) for a material benefit. (3) These are unlimited in generality and may be applied to situations and (4) the court is not limited to the factors it may take into account when determining a sentence under section 98C or section 98D.

98F Attorney-General's consent to prosecutions under Sections 98AA, 98A and 98B are not required.

98D Trafficking in people by means of coercion or deception: (1a) one or more acts of coercion or deception against the person, (4) even the person came towards the state without coercion or deception, and (3a) did not enter the state concerned, or (b) was not received, concealed, or harboured in the state concerned, (2) imprisonment for 20- years, and fined up to $500,000. This applies to "every one".

Peter Alderidge Williams QC's Slavery

Peter Williams QC's was definitely involved in slavery. He was definitely involved in a gang, and a series of gangs with him as the linchpin, making Peter Williams a mafia boss. That he is suing me for 'defamation' first assumes that his reputation is good, and second that my comment "Peter Williams QC? He's so tight nuns use his arsehole as a reference" is contrary to his reputation, true or otherwise.

Peter Williams is hated and distrusted by many in the law profession. He is considered a major drug trafficker, heavily involved with criminals, with drug money laundering, and as Mr Asia/Mr Big's right hand man, if not the man behind Mr Asia.

Mr Asia a.k.a. Mr Big, Terry Clark, Terry Sinclair and a host of other names, was a New Zealand police narc from Gisborne who became an Australasian, then international heroin trafficker. When he was arrested in London he was in bed (literally) with Peter Williams' junior lawyer Karen Soich. Peter Williams' friend and legal buddy Eb Leary was then struck off for laundering the drug money, and it was Peter Williams who ended up with Mr Asia's money.

First Mr Asia's money was left in his safe in his office in Auckland, then more was left on his hotel bed in London by the mafia who greeted him in the hotel lobby. Peter Williams then used this money as bribes for meetings in cars and parks in London to get his lawyer Karen Soich – financial syndicate watchdog, inside eye on the operation, and lover of Terry Clark – off the drugs and murder charges.

Peter Williams then kept the difference without putting it through his trust account – the same reason Eb Leary was struck off – and it was only after these events that Peter Williams had any money. You can always follow the truth by the money trail.

As soon as it was over, Peter Williams was made a Queen's Counsel lawyer on 6 April 1987. The question is, did he bribe himself into this position also, or was the Queen of England part of the heroin trafficking.

Peter Williams was seen and recorded at night throwing sacks of money onto his yacht at Ti Point, 60 km north of Auckland, then sailing 65 km east to Great Barrier Island, to Tryphena. According to witnesses Williams often had meals in the bush restaurants with "men who were not to be messed with" and returned without the sacks of money.

Given that Peter Williams was apparently throwing sacks of money overboard, he obviously has the means to make a small payment of $5,625.00 for an architecture fee . . . alternatively he was making drug payments either on behalf of his client Terry Clark, or his client Terry Clark was trafficking the heroin on behalf of Peter Williams, or Peter Williams and his syndicate.

Was Peter Williams dropping off the sacks of money in exchange for drugs?

Were these sailed in to Great Barrier Island? which was beyond the Customs limit, or flown in by SEA BEE AIR or similiar sea plane, from a yacht further out to sea?

Either of these, or Peter Williams was making drug payments as part of his legal service to his client Mr Asia, who was making all of his money through heroin trafficking.

Thus the comment "Peter Williams QC? He's so tight nuns use his arsehole as a reference" is not contrary to his reputation. Rather Williams' professed reputation is contrary to Williams' real reputation. He had his partner Eb Leary do most of the dirty work, but not all of it. Billy Boyd (25) was also involved and struck off (18 Nov. 1985–12 Aug. 1997) for 23 counts of receiving money from criminals into his trust account, forgery, falsely certifying documents, etc.

So that was a gang involving Peter Williams, Eb Leary, Karen Soich, Mr Asia (Terry Clark/Sinclair), John Leary, G.W.S. 'Billy' Boyd and others in the legal profession who either took bribes, or refused to convict, censure, curtail or object to the promotion of Peter Williams.

Ti Point wharf, 60 km north of Auckland.

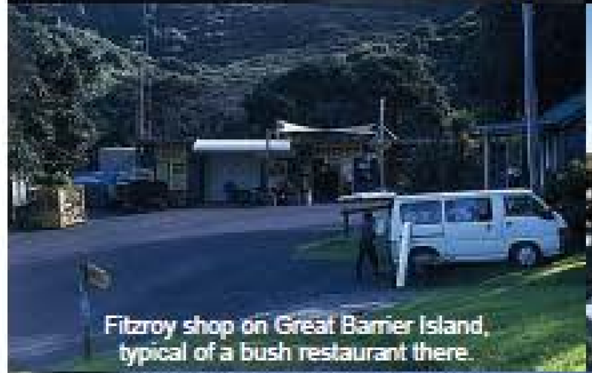
Fitzroy shop on Great Barrier Island, typical of a bush restaurant there.

Ti Point wharf.

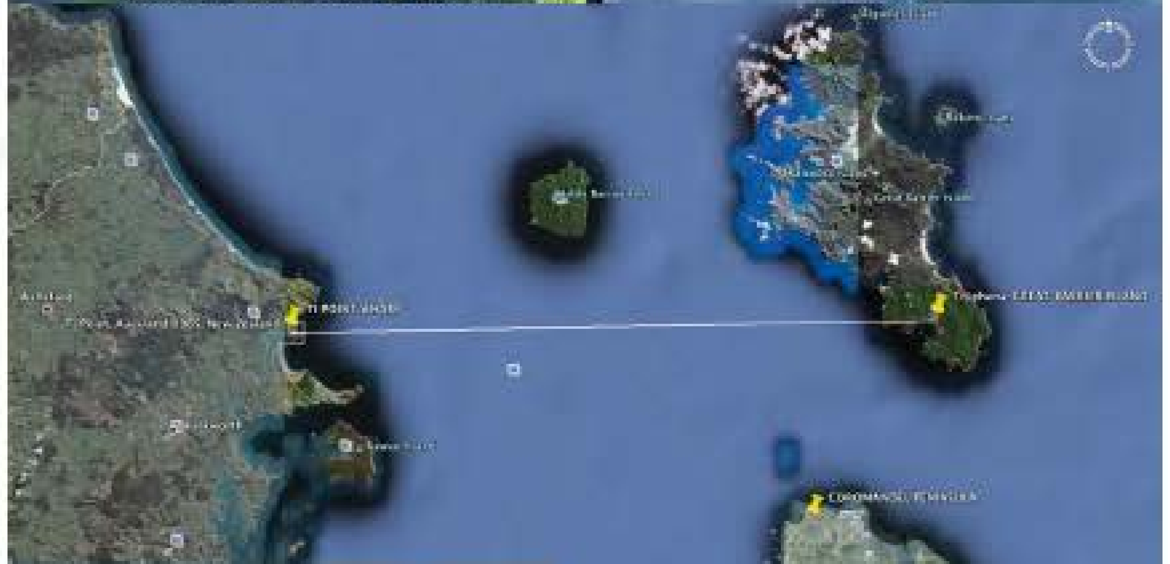

Flying over Gooseberry Flat, Tryphena Harbour, Great Barrier Island.

SEA BEE AIR
DFC
Grumann Goose G21A, See Bee Air, DFC, at Whangaparapara, Great Barrier Island in 1979 and retired on 30 April 1990.

I.O.: "Does 'DFC' stand for 'Development Finance Corporation', as created by Prime Minister Robert Muldoon (1975–84) who was also involved in heroin trafficking?

Author: "With this Goose, it's odd that the markings were just DFC and not ZX-DFC."

I.O.: "DFC could also stand for Distinguished Flying Cross as won by local WWII seaplane pilot and hero Fred Ladd (1908–89) who was a mad bastard always being reprimanded by Civil Aviation for things like flying under the Auckland Harbour Bridge."

Author: "But Ladd flew his last Widgeon aircraft for Tourist Air Travel, and flew under the Auckland Harbour Bridge on 31 March 1967. He was discharged without conviction, probably because he flew Prince Philip in 1963 and got an MBE the same year. Ladd then grounded himself on 8 July 1977 due to dizziness. Civil Aviation then withdrew his commercial pilot's licence as fast as they could, so this was not Fred Ladd's plane.

I.O.: "Ladd was still flying afterwards for ten years (1977–87). He got someone else to take the plane out and take off and land, and he would take the controls during flight. He wasn't a drug runner. He was a good guy by all counts. That leaves Muldoon's crooked Development Finance Corporation muscling in on the Mr Asia heroin ring . . . Certainly Peter Williams acquired some of his yachts by illicit means. He used to change them all the time."

Jimmy Davern's manslaughter

Paedestrian: "There was this one time – at Gang Band Camp – when James 'Jimmy' Davern, who owned a house removal company, had people out on his rather beautiful classical and famous yacht *Fidelis* – Latin for 'faithful'. Someone was sick on board at night, so Jimmy Davern jumped in his removal truck and trailer and headed to some sort of rescue along the motorway. Being the nearly always drunk Jimmy Davern, he realised he was going the wrong way and did a u-turn on the motorway. In the process he killed a man in his car. Jimmy Davern then drove home and broke open a bottle of champagne, phoned his fellow sailor, lawyer Peter Williams and said: 'Break open a bottle of champagne. I just killed a man.' After a short discussion, Peter Williams replied: 'Fuck the champagne. *Fidelis* is mine' . . . Defense lawyer Peter Williams always wanted to play with the big boys. He argued in court that Jimmy Davern had a blackout in his truck, got James Davern off, and Williams got *Fidelis*."

I.O.: "This gave Williams a proven fast boat worthy of trafficking drugs. Jimmy Davern and his son have since gone on to kill up to eight people between them. Now they just phone up the cops and pay a bribe of ten or $20,000 or so. As a defense lawyer, Peter Williams often defends and gets off those who go on to commit worse crimes. He got another off and they went on to murder most of a family."

Author: "I investigated this story and found another one similiar. It may be the same story told in a different way, or it may be another manslaughter. Only Jimmy can tell. So here it is with the background, as told by a local/s at the time."

Commissioning *Fidelis*

Bill: "The whole Speight family had been involved in boats for generations and were always around Beaumont Street, Freemans Bay, near Auckland's Westhaven Marina. Vic Speight commissioned Fred and Jim Lidgard to build *Fidelis* in 1962.

"Vic's brother Kevin James Seight was a Merchant Seaman who was running a sly grog shop with Frederick George Walker in Remuera. They were in opposition to Mad Dog Gillies and Ron Jorgensen who ran a sly grog operation in Ponsonby.

"Mad Dog and Jorgensen gunned down Kevin James Seight (26) and Frederick George Walker (38) with a .45 calibre Reising submachine gun at 115 Basset Road, Remuera on 7 December 1963. This became known as the 'Bassett Road murders'."

Former SIS 2IC: "The whole thing got out of hand. Initially it began as a friendly threat, a bit of a joke with dress-up, and we can access the guns, so we have friends in low places. No one was supposed to get killed."

"They were both convicted and Ron Jorgensen was released on parole in 1984 (with Peter Williams representing), then officially went missing. Not many people know this, but he ended up in a crayfish pot off the Kaikoura coast in the South Island."

Author: "So there was a bit of slygrog money and murder around *Fidelis* from Day One. Murder and mayhem around *Fidelis* only continued."

James Davern runs over a man and kills him

Author: "A month after the murders, *Fidelis* was launched in January 1964 and soon bought by James Davern."

Billy: "Around 1966/67, James Davern was working on *Fidelis* up on the dry dock opposite 20–22 King Edward Parade in Devonport. He'd been drinking all day. Others were working on their boats and one guy was lying on the ground working on a hull with his torso hanging out. Drunk, and driving, Jimmy Davern drove over him as he left. He knew he'd run over him, but instead of stopping, he scarpered. The guy was taken up to hospital and died within hours. Jimmy drove home, and phoned Peter Williams. Williams advice was: 'You can't be charged with a hit and run if you report it inside 24 hours'. So Williams waited for Davern to sober up and took him into the cop shop between 12 and 18 hours later – but within the 24 hours.

"Davern was charged with manslaughter, leaving the crime scene of an accident, and loss of licence for 12 months, et cetera.

"Williams got him off everything and Davern only lost his licence for six or twelve months. Davern then gave Williams *Fidelis* for getting him off."

Author: "Yeah, I'd like to add to that. Jimmy Davern ran over the guy, knew he'd run over him, and terminally injured him, drove home, cracked open a bottle of champagne, then phoned Peter Williams and said: 'Break open a bottle of champagne. I just killed a man.' After a short discussion Peter Williams pointed out: 'You can't be charged with a hit and run if you report it inside 24 hours. Fuck the champagne, sober up. *Fidelis* is mine'."

Drinks at Jimmy Davern's

Billy: "A few months later we were having drinks at Jimmy Davern's house on Pt. Chev. Road in Point Chevalier, and he was was moaning like fuck to us that he should have got off completely. Davern can fool some of the people some of the time, but not us any of the time, so we got stuck into him and gave him a verbal tongue-lashing: 'What type of a low-life mongrel would run over a man and then leave the scene of an accident – leaving a man dying on the side of the road'. Davern just sat there and copped it. He was three-quarters pissed by then, but so were we."

Bar Fight at the Railway Hotel 1967/68

Billy: "About 12 months later, I was with Patrick Shaun Wilson at the Railway Hotel on Beach Road where all the top lawyers used to go for drinks on a Friday night.

"Jimmy Davern was there and started throwing his weight around and Patrick told him to 'settle' and 'pull his head in' or he'd 'whack him'. Jimmy didn't settle down, so Paddy (a McCatholic) whacked him in the swede ("take that you rotten Protestant") and sat him on his arse . . . Davern then sued Paddy.

"Davern's witnesses included Peter Williams, Kevin Ryan and about three or so other 'top lawyers'. Paddy didn't have any witnesses, although he could have asked me.

"The judge had a choice of believing half-a-dozen top lawyers as witnesses, or Paddy himself . . . Davern won and Paddy paid £1,000 in damages, which was then about 25% the value of Davern's Pt. Chev. House. Davern reckoned he was going to give the £1,000 away to charity, but no one ever found out which charity. Davern was, and is, such a welching stingy tight arse, he wouldn't give away the steam off his shit. The money probably helped fund his overseas races with *Fidelis* as 'the charity'.

"The lawyers are a collusion of sellouts and Paul Temm was acting for Paddy. Paul Temm then represented Arthur Alan Thomas in 1971 defending him for the Crewe double murders. He lost. Kevin Ryan then represented Arthur Alan Thomas in the next two trials, finally earning Thomas an aquittal."

Author: "Peter Williams assisted Kevin Ryan. The murder was done by the high-ranking Freemason Len Demlar, something Williams knew all along, but delayed the outcome."

Billy: "Paul Temm then drank himself to death waiting to become a judge. The Freemasons knew he wasn't on the list to become a judge because he was an RC (Roman Catholic)."

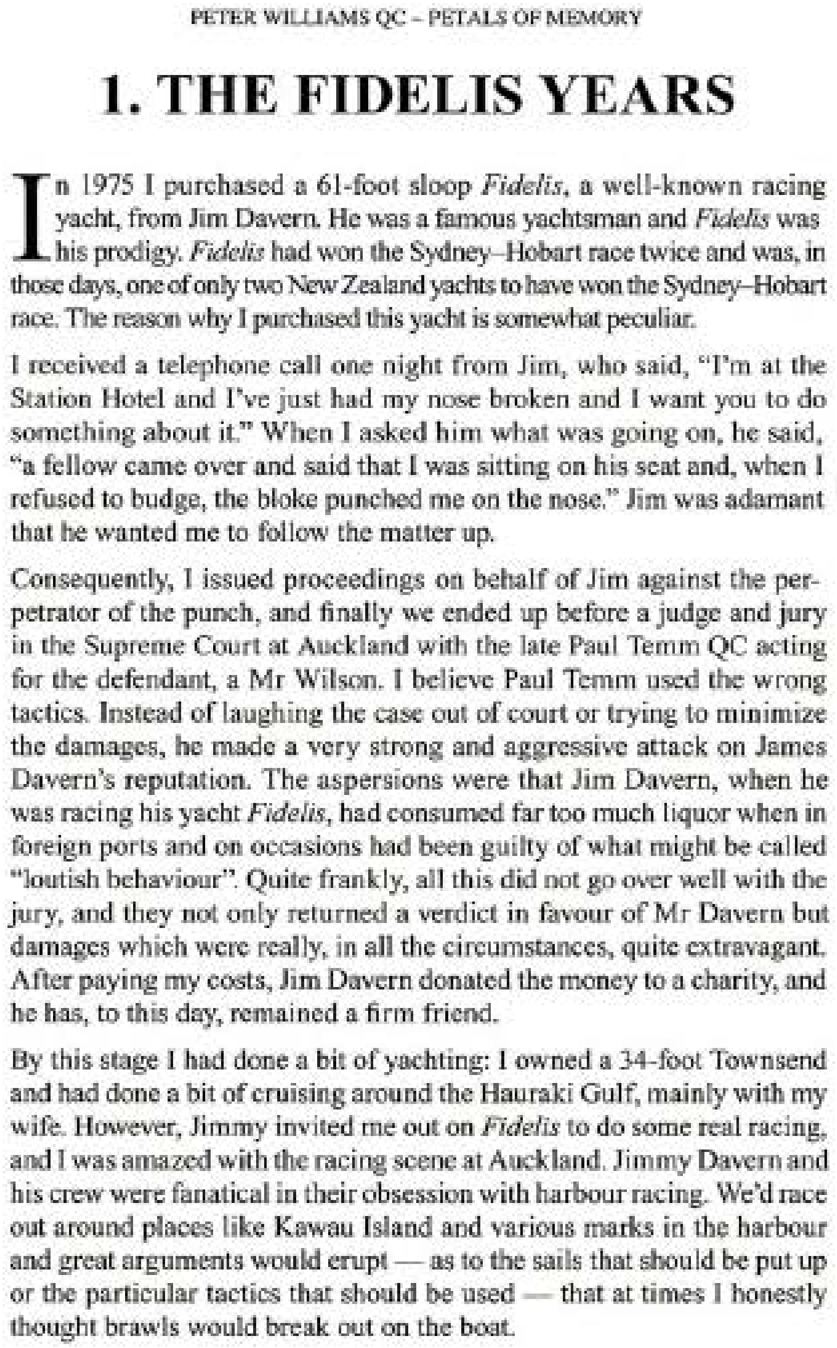

PETER WILLIAMS QC – PETALS OF MEMORY

1. THE FIDELIS YEARS

In 1975 I purchased a 61-foot sloop *Fidelis*, a well-known racing yacht, from Jim Davern. He was a famous yachtsman and *Fidelis* was his prodigy. *Fidelis* had won the Sydney–Hobart race twice and was, in those days, one of only two New Zealand yachts to have won the Sydney–Hobart race. The reason why I purchased this yacht is somewhat peculiar.

I received a telephone call one night from Jim, who said, "I'm at the Station Hotel and I've just had my nose broken and I want you to do something about it." When I asked him what was going on, he said, "a fellow came over and said that I was sitting on his seat and, when I refused to budge, the bloke punched me on the nose." Jim was adamant that he wanted me to follow the matter up.

Consequently, I issued proceedings on behalf of Jim against the perpetrator of the punch, and finally we ended up before a judge and jury in the Supreme Court at Auckland with the late Paul Temm QC acting for the defendant, a Mr Wilson. I believe Paul Temm used the wrong tactics. Instead of laughing the case out of court or trying to minimize the damages, he made a very strong and aggressive attack on James Davern's reputation. The aspersions were that Jim Davern, when he was racing his yacht *Fidelis*, had consumed far too much liquor when in foreign ports and on occasions had been guilty of what might be called "loutish behaviour". Quite frankly, all this did not go over well with the jury, and they not only returned a verdict in favour of Mr Davern but damages which were really, in all the circumstances, quite extravagant. After paying my costs, Jim Davern donated the money to a charity, and he has, to this day, remained a firm friend.

By this stage I had done a bit of yachting: I owned a 34-foot Townsend and had done a bit of cruising around the Hauraki Gulf, mainly with my wife. However, Jimmy invited me out on *Fidelis* to do some real racing, and I was amazed with the racing scene at Auckland. Jimmy Davern and his crew were fanatical in their obsession with harbour racing. We'd race out around places like Kawau Island and various marks in the harbour and great arguments would erupt — as to the sails that should be put up or the particular tactics that should be used — that at times I honestly thought brawls would break out on the boat.

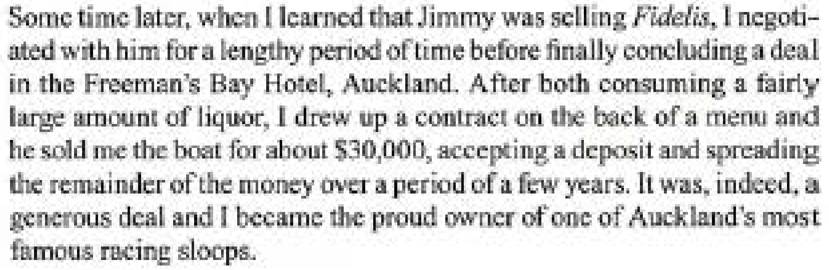

Some time later, when I learned that Jimmy was selling *Fidelis*, I negotiated with him for a lengthy period of time before finally concluding a deal in the Freeman's Bay Hotel, Auckland. After both consuming a fairly large amount of liquor, I drew up a contract on the back of a menu and he sold me the boat for about $30,000, accepting a deposit and spreading the remainder of the money over a period of a few years. It was, indeed, a generous deal and I became the proud owner of one of Auckland's most famous racing sloops.

In his latest effort 'Petals of Memory',[4] Williams purchased *Fidelis* off Jimmy Davern in 1975, then goes into the Station Hotel story – without giving any dates.

The chance of Williams paying the rest of the money was slim to nil . . . I remember Jimmy Davern telling me (Hallett) that Williams never made the other payments.

One cheap red Mercedes

Billy: "Patrick Shaun Wilson then got his own back on Jimmy Davern.

"Davern went away on an overseas trip [sailing in the Noumea, and Sydney-to-Hobart race in late 1967] and put his red lefthand drive Mercedes 230 up for sale in a car yard. The owner happened to be a friend of Patrick Shaun Wilson – schoolmates from St Pauls College.

"Around 1960, cars were the same value as a house, and in 1967 a Mercedes was more expensive than a house in Pt Chev. The market value of the Merc was around $6,000, but Davern only got $2,000 for it. Patrick Shaun Wilson paid his schoolmate $2,000 for the Mercedes, so Paddy was up two to one, and got his own back.

"Paddy then drove the red Mercedes 230 around Auckland for the next ten years . . . but with a bag of cement in the boot.

"He didn't know he had a bag of cement in the boot until he was pulled over by the cops one night coming home pissed from the pub. The cops asked him to empty his car, as there was crap right through it. So Paddy was emptying his boot when he said: 'Christ, there's a bag of cement in here. Where'd that come from! Can you give us a hand?' and the police said: 'Na, don't worry about it'.

"Jimmy Davern was also a shocking pisshead, and just as likely to have dropped the bag of cement in the boot, as a form of tax. This sort of thing used to happen all the time in those days . . .

"Jimmy did think up the idea of doubling up on sections, and was in those days known as 'The Unit King' of Auckland. He called himself 'Da'Vern', because 'Davern' sounded so common, but Jimmy had no class, absolutely none.

"The only class he had was his K Class yacht and he lost that for manslaughter."

Author: "Davern's notoriously difficult to deal with, kind of a dyslexic with brain function as gravelly as his voice, and money enough to buy colluding lawyers from not paying commoners. Like you say, 'He wouldn't give away the steam off his shit'."

Billy: "Jimmy Davern was so tight, he even fired his own son who was using the business to support his own developments. He then turned around and sued his father for wrongful dismissal, and won $1 million. Admittedly he was one of those 'I'm from money, so I'm crap' who needed a good bashing to pull his head in and he probably did himself out of a much larger inheritance . . . but the walnut doesn't fall too far from the tree."

---

[4] *Petals of Memory*, Peter Williams QC, no publisher, Auckland, July 2009, p. 1-2.

The Murder of Ron Jorgensen and the escapes of Bill Shepherd

Peter Williams QC: "In 1965 the [Mt Eden] prisoners rebelled . . . Ten prisoners trucked to Waikeria and Placed in wire cages. Most became insane And transferred to high secure mental Asylums. Jorgenson *[sic]* survived."[5]

"With my good friend, Ron Jorgensen, October 1982. Ron was first a client, but we became great mates. He committed suicide by driving into the sea at Kaikoura; this photo taken at Christchurch District Court cell block on his release." Williams can't even get that right.

Mate of prison escape artist Bill Shepherd: "Ron Jorgensen was a fully-fledged faggot. Bill Shepherd was also a fully-fledged faggot, although he kept this secret. He was quite guarded about it.

"Bill used to live on O'Neil Street in Ponsonby with fafafinas [gender confused Islanders who crossdress], and always got picked up by his mates at the top of O'Neil Street. His mates all knew, but you didn't say anything in those days.

"As an inmate, Bill Shepherd was a cook in prison and Ron Jorgensen came on to him [Mt Eden or Paremoremo]. Bill was a slow guy, but as strong as an ox – part Fijian – and he picked up Ron Jorgensen and upended him into a rubbish bin."

Ex-Internal Affairs: "Bill Shepherd practised shooting his colt on a Scout Den up on the town belt at Newton in Wellington. He'd blaze away and not even hit the Scout Den as he was pretty well half cut. The Police would then go up to Armour Ave in Mt Victoria and broadcast over the loudhailer for him to come down and pay them a visit at Taranaki Street.

"After a day or two, when Bill had sobered up, he would.

"Bill Shepherd was run by Sergeant Bush who then had me sent to track them both down. I tracked them to a little island in Tonga where they were doing crooked deals with the Crown Prince, but when they decided to send me up there as an Undercover, I decided that I didn't want to do that, 'cause I'd get killed, so I'd narked myself off to Foreign Affairs who stopped the whole operation in its tracks."

Author: "Why'd you do that?"

Ex-Internal Affairs: "Because I was scared the Crown Prince would have me killed. Don't under estimate those Tongans.

"The next thing Sergeant Bush discovered Bill Shepherd hiding out in the Philippines with a sheila and a child. They flew everybody back here and spent a couple of weeks trying to get their story straight.

"Eventually my boss rung me and said: 'After two years work, you didn't bullshit us', which is as near a compliment as I ever got . . . and just proves that any queer can go to the Philippines, find a sheila, and fall in love.

"A backroom deal was done. Sergeant Bush said to Bill Shepherd – who was a psycho: 'You'll have to come back and spend a few more years in the can, to make up for the few years you didn't do in the can when you escaped'.

Painting of Williams by Ron Jorgensen from memory while in prison.

---

[5] Petals of Memory, Peter Williams QC, pp. 138, 78.

"Bill Shepherd replied: 'Yeah, but you told me to escape'.

"To which Sergeant Bush replied: 'What's that got to do with anything'.

"So Shepherd got sent back to the cells for upsetting his handler, and Sergeant Bush went to the Police bar to drown his sorrows for the mortal insult to his ethical status that a low-life criminal had just delivered to him – even though he was an ex-Undercover – Bill Shepherd that is.

"An Irish cop was subsequently hauled into the case to act as 'A Man of Good Standing'[6] to act as a go-between to the now very-hostile-to-each-other aggrieved parties. And due to his good offices and tact, a deal was eventually arrived at.

"It was then that the Irish cop rang me and said: 'Well you didn't bullshit us. You actually told me the truth'.

"Sergeant Bush is now a Superintendent of Police, so it's onwards and upwards and never let the truth get in the way of promotion."

Ex-Internal Affairs: "With regard to Ron Jorgensen's murder, the car wasn't even in the water. Jorgensen had taken on shaking all these paedophiles down in Christchurch and that's what got him in serious trouble.

"The paedophiles had a major racquet stealing Hospital Board supplies and Jorgensen shook them down. They coughed up the first time, but Jorgensen shook them down again, so they cried to the police, and the police were in the process of trying to stop Jorgensen from doing it. They charged him with assault on a paedophile. He got off in the Christchurch District Court.

"After the charges were dropped, Jorgensen caught the Sea Tow barge – its run over more yachties than a dingo's got flees – the police virtually hold all ticketing rights – you don't crash the Sea Tow barge without coughing up to the CIB.

"Jorgensen caught the Sea Tow to Australia and was shaking paedophiles over there. The guy he was sent to work for, who was also on the run, got pissed off with his own work not being taken wholeheartedly and singlemindely, so he gave Ron Jorgensen several final warnings, lost it, and put a contract out on him . . . as you do.

"Ron Jorgensen subsequently went down a mineshaft. It wasn't even in New Zealand.

"In Australia they call it 'sucking a waddi' or 'sucked on a big waddi'. Then you drop a stick of gelignite, fused at about two or three seconds, down the mineshaft. The Dallys know the exact place to light them, because they play that chicken game. The gelly goes off while it's halfway down the shaft, and it brings a whole pile of rocks and shit down on top of the poor mongrel who's just sucked the waddi.

"This is not to be confused with being 'bashed by a waddy', which is a different spelling, and is normally a shortened golf club, usually a 1 or 2 wood, but you can use a 3 wood in extreme circumstances.

"'Bashed by a waddy' traces its ancestry back to Irish ancestry when Irish burglars used to knock off the houses of Pommy gentlemen and were determined, in the hard times in Australia, to find a use for every single thing they stole – including golf clubs. The irons were used to hold a sheep over the barbeque fire."

"Ron Jorgensen's killer was never caught, nor was the body found. His car was abandoned on land near Kaikoura, not in the water. If Williams was his lawyer, then Williams knew the whole background, but he's spent his life obfuscating history . . . lawyer client priviledge."

---

[6] A 'man of good standing' was a freeholder below the rank of a gentleman, or an attendant below the rank of Sergeant. Ex-I.O.: "He was also an officer or an NCO in a prison camp, either a Kiwi or a Pom. Having extracted some Kiwi from a bullshit charge, and walking back from the Commandant's office, the Germans would let the guard dogs out to chase him around the camp. A few minutes later the guards would call the dogs off. So he had to be a man of good standing. That was the WWII version."

Kiwi Bacon

Bill: "Trevor-Two-Fats (Smith) was the biggest fence in Auckland at the time. He had a butchers shop down at the Auckland City Markets. He was a big fat Pongo [British emigrant] from London, reputedly the biggest fence in Auckland – bigger than Auckland Mayor John Banks' father.

"We knocked off about three truckloads of goods from Kiwi Bacon in Kingsland on New North Road. All the goods were in sacks and arrived at Trevor-Two-Fats'.

"Detective John Rex Hughes came down the next day to investigate and sat on the sacks as he questioned Trevor 'Two-Fats' Smith, and Trevor's going: 'Na, na, na, haven't seen it, but if I see anything, I'll let you know'.

"After Trevor-Two-Fats got rid of the meat the next day, he rang John Rex and said: 'You know those sacks you were sitting on, they were the stolen goods' . . . They both had a laugh about it . . . wet themselves laughing. It was all a laugh in those days."

Author: "Kiwi Bacon didn't do too badly. I went around to their house off Paratai drive, and their entry lobby was as big as my house and all covered in Italian marble. Then their daughter became Miss New Zealand."

Bill: "How'd you meet her?"

Author: "At a nightclub."

Bill: "It was just a game of cat 'n' mouse in those days."

Bill: "Before he became Prime Minister, David Lange was a solicitor who acted for Richard MacDonald. I bumped into Lange one day."

David Lange: "I remember Richard MacDonald. He stole a forklift off CablePrice and sold it back to them, then stole it again, and kept it the second time. He really did want a forklift. I defended him and got him off."

Bill: "You've got to understand the times. You wonder how you get mixed up in thievery, but it was just a game from start to finish."

David Hagar, Solicitor, being as snooty and British as possible: "May the biggest actor and liar win on the day".

Blowing up Eb Leary's Valiant

Bill: "Around 1974, '75, Richard MacDonald was paid money to put a stick of gelignite up the exhaust of Eb Leary's green Valiant Charger – the latest one. The Aussies called them a 'slant-six' 'cause the engine was mounted on an angle.

"I was only the getaway driver and asked to wait around the corner. It was a bastard because I was never told what we were up to at the time."

Richard MacDonald: "Wait here 'til I signal, then drive past and I'll jump in, then we'll boot it." Mac then signalled, so I picked him up. We ended up shooting along Beach Road at a hundred mile an hour.

Mac: "Ha ha, we just done Eb Leary's car."

Bill: "Apparently it blew the back of his car off. I never found out who commissioned the job. I did hear the bang, but didn't see it. It was a muffled 'voomf'. There were cars parked everywhere in those days, so it was already a mess.

"Mac used to get asked to do these jobs by other criminals, because they didn't want to be implicated. They knew he was guilty of stealing cars and arson, which he was quite good at.

"We used to take the cars up to the back of Grey Lynn, near the Chamberlain Golf Course, light them and all of Auckland used to light up. We were about 200 yards away in Golf Road in one of Mac's relatives when we watched."

Speedboat versus *Fidelis*

Bill: "In the mid-1980s, Richard 'Dick' MacDonald and I were in a speedboat in Auckland's Waitemata Harbour when Mac sighted Peter Williams in *Fidelis*, so he headed straight for him and played chicken with him all the way up the harbour. Williams got up on the bow and was yelling out: 'Please don't hit me . . . Awe cut it out Mac.' Williams was whinning like a mongrel dog, like your regular New Zealand woman."

I.O.: "A lot of sailors are crooked. A lot of them bring down boats and pass through Papua New Guinea. Here there is a place that disguises hashish in all sorts of normal products, like tins of suntan lotion etc. A lot of the sailors come into New Zealand funded like this."

James Davern also employed me to do some architecture work around 1993. The fee was $650.00 for measuring and drawing a series of his removal homes. He was then an old codger living in Auckland's Pt. Chevalier. He fobbed off payment so I took him to the Disputes Tribunal. After a years delay, on the morning of the hearing he had his secretary phone with a cheque. It was the last case I won. Williams again? Quite probably. I was charging Davern $30 an hour, which was very small potatoes, and had trouble getting paid. A mate of mine was charging him $25 an hour about 10 years prior, for building work, and got paid easily. He became a millionaire. The difference in hard and easy payment is that great.

It was also Peter Williams who advised Mr Asia to buy a house to make Terry Clark look legitimate. This opulent waterfront mansion was built in Northland at Opua near the Opua-to-Russell Car Ferry route, complete with boatshed to the sea. Inside the house was a champagne fridge which was a walkthrough to a slide down to the boatshed for a rapid escape. This was designed by Eb Leary's brother, John Leary.[7]

The police photographed Peter Williams' lawyer Karen Soich having sex with Mr Asia on the pontoon attached to the house. The house was seized under the misuse of drugs act (or similiar, they change the names), and a friend of mine, her innocent parents bought it afterwards. But it was others who were children, quite famous, who were playing in the champagne fridge slide as kids including Sean Fitzpatrick who became the All Black captain (1992–97).

Certainly Class A drug trafficking holds a sentence of nine years or more. So watch out Peter Williams QC. It looks like your past is about to bite you. "The first ocean race we did was in 1978 – the Whangarei–Noumea race. We sailed to Whangarei and spent several days preparing the boat for the race. Mr Ivan Soich, the father of Karen [Soich] gave me the use of his extensive workshop."[8]

Author: "The Soich's lived at 34 Ngahere Drive, Maunu, Whangarei and owned a fabric store. They were a known and respected family and Karen was considered a nice girl. Williams drove up past the house and into the garage. When Terry Clark arrived, Ivan Soich used to lean over the fence and complain to his neighbour: 'He's a real bad one. He walks into my house and pretends he owns it.'

"So Peter Williams QC ended up owning *Fidelis* (1975—86) selling it to his navigator in November 1986, just before Williams became a QC . . . Probably to remove his attachment to its history. He may have used the funds to purchase his Queen's Counsel status."

So that was a gang involving Peter Williams, James 'Jimmy' Davern, his son Davern, Mr Asia/Terry Clark, and Williams' legal team with Karen Soich, Eb Leary, and John Leary . . . and others in the legal profession who either took bribes, kept quiet, made false statements, or refused to convict, censure, curtail or object to the promotion of Peter Williams to Queen's Counsel (6 April 1987) and councillor in the New Zealand Bar Association (8 June 1989). As long as there are three or more people involved in a crime for profit which has a sentence for four years or more, then it's a gang. Membership can change from time to time and crime to crime, but its still a gang.

---

[7] The architect John Leary now has a place around Lake Rotoma/ Lake Rotoiti (6 km apart) just east of Lake Rotorua. He has a letter from Karen Soich which is quite impersonal.

[8] *Petals of Memory*, Peter Williams QC, pp. 12-13.

James Davern

James Davern on *Fidelis* up Derwent River winning Sydney to Hobart race on 30 December 1966.

Anyway, birds of a feather flock together, so here's Jimmy Davern's *Fidelis*, which soon became Peter Williams' *Fidelis*, shown here with mainsheet in 2006.

Fidelis is a 61 ft (18.59m) long, lean sloop with a beam of 10 ft (3.04m), a draught of 8ft (2.43m), a sail-area of 1304 sq. ft (121.18m^2) weighing 26,880 pounds (12,192kg) with sail No. K45.[9]

In 1962, Vic Speight commissioned Fred and Jim Lidgard to build a near copy of of plans designed by the legendary Scandinavian yacht designer Knud Reimers as published in a book by the famous UK designer and sailor, Uffa Fox. It was one of the first yachts to be built with a triple diagonal-planked kauri hull.

Fidelis was built in Auckland and launched in January 1964 and soon bought by James Davern who commissioned Australian naval architect Warwick Hood to design a new rudder and rig. *Fidelis* then won the 1966 Auckland-to-Suva Race. In December 1966, *Fidelis* became the first New Zealand-built yacht to win the 628 nautical mile Sydney-to-Hobart ocean race. Going since 1945, *Fidelis* broke the record, winning on 30 December 1966, 70 miles/ 17 hours ahead of *Balandra*. *Fidelis*' record time of 4 days, 8 hours, 39 minutes and 43 seconds stood for the next nine years, until 1975.

In 1967, *Fidelis* broke the Noumea race record and was second across the Sydney-to-Hobart line, just 2 hours and 26 minutes behind *Pen-Duick III*.

Fidelis contested the Sydney to Hobart in 1966, 1967, 1969, 1982 (Williams), 1994 and 2006 – the latter two skippered by Nigel Stoke.

Fidelis passed hands from Vic Speight (launched in January 1964) to James Davern (c. 1966) to Peter Williams (1975), to his navigator Bruce Goodhue (4 Nov. 1986–Jan. 1994)[10] who sold it to a Frenchman who sailed it to Sydney and almost immediately sold it to Nigel Stoke (c. March 1994) who extensively refurbished her in time for the 50th Sydney-to-Hobart on 26 December 1994.

Nigel Stoke stripped-out the ocean racing greyhound hull and transformed *Fidelis* into a fast luxury racing cruiser with classic teak, leather upholstery, roller furling headsails, self-tailing winches, state-of-the-art navigation equipment and anything else for comfortable cruising. A much smaller crew could now handle her.

In the 1994 50th Sydney-to-Hobart, *Fidelis* was the Veteran Division first yacht through the Heads and finished a respectable 109th out of 308 yachts. In the 1996 Sydney-to-Mooloolaba, *Fidelis* won on PHRS. In the 1997 Brisbane-to-Gladstone, *Fidelis* won the Veteran Division line honours.

In the 2006 Rolex Sydney-to-Hobart, James Davern was on *Fidelis* again, along with Sir James Hardy who led the champagne toast: "Yachts like *Fidelis* are what yachting is all about". Sir James Hardy had just sailed on *Fidelis* in the August 2006 Hamilton Island Race Week.

Owner and custodian of *Fidelis*, Nigel Stoke: "She has been to Hobart six times, sailed across the Tasman six times, been to Queensland three times and cruised to the Solomons, Noumea, Port Vila, Fiji, and Lord Howe Island many times for 'Ned's Beach Barbeque'. *Fidelis* has logged more than 200,000 sea miles in 40 or so years."

Fidelis has an outstanding race history and is one of the most famous yachts ever launched in New Zealand. What it hasn't logged, we don't officially know. The change of ownership details from James Davern to Peter Williams to Bruce Goodhue, to the Frenchman, to Nigel Stoke are sketchy.

Fidelis is now available for corporate or private charter on Sydney Harbour. It had a major $250,000 refit at Newcastle in 2005 and now has a crew of eight.

Nigel Stoke has owned Pandora Securities headquartered in North Sydney for more than 20 years doing Chief Executive and Senior Executive coaching/training/development in the areas of Manufacturing, Industry, Commercial and Residential Building Industry, International Corporate non-core businesses, Direct equity, Development, Mezzanine Capital, Management of Interim Management and Non Executive Roles, Property and Investment Project Management, and company turnround. Essentially Chief Executives working together. Nigel has been Sydney Chairman of the support group for the lonely CEOs charter 'The Executive Connection' (TEC) in 2008. Here CEOs spend a day every month training and swopping shopping tips for big spenders.[11]

---

[9] K-Class is 60–70 ft, but some say *Fidelis* was launched as A45; 'The fabulous *Fidelis*', Jeremy Hancock, Jessica Statham, sail-world, 26 October 2000; Flickr, SK75, *Fidelis*, *Reimers*, 1966, Peter Campbell; Pandora Securities.

[10] Mr Bruce Goodhue as owner registered *Fidelis* with Yachting New Zealand on 4 November 1986.

[11] *InPerspective*, Issue 3, Australia, 2008.

The demise, funding, resurrection and demise of Eb Leary and associates

Eb Leary (Edward Poulter Leary) was admitted to the Bar as a barrister and solicitor in 1972. He formed a close business relationship and friendship with Peter Williams. Both became heavily involved with the Gisborne police narc turned drug dealer Terry Clark.

"Around February–March 1975, as well as at other times, Eb Leary acted as a go between for Terry Clark and suppliers for cannabis pick ups and payments."[12]

Terry Clark (b. 1944) was a small-time crook who came to police attention aged 18, then appeared regularly in court as Terry Clark (1962–71). On his 9th appearance he got five years for burglary and receiving (1971–76). After his release Terry Clark dealt cannabis with Marty Johnstone, then moved up a drug notch into cocaine and heroin. In 1975 Terry Clark was named in court as the brains behind a massive NZ$100,000 heroin shipment into Auckland – the biggest New Zealand had known. Arrested and on bail, Clark skipped bail and moved to Australia, traded drugs profitably for two years, got nabbed in a marijuana raid, fined, and deported for possessing a revolver and stolen cash.

Back in New Zealand in 1977, Clark faced many years behind bars, so he used some of his drug money – NZ$240,000 – to buy witnesses "in preparation for his case". That, and much of the remainder of his money was left in Peter Williams' office safe and used to negotiate with the judiciary. It worked. Terry got off with Peter Williams as his lawyer and banker. Thereafter, Williams had Clark's money and control of the judiciary via shame.

On Peter's advice, it was time to take on a respectable front so Clark bought a prestige waterfront house in Opua for NZ$500,000 – which Eb Leary's brother, John Leary, designed – plus NZ$100,000 of prime beach property at Fiji, and a white Jaguar XJS coupé. He changed his name to Terence Alexander Sinclair and took on Peter Williams' lawyer Karen Soich as his live-in girlfriend. So it was an in-house job all round.

Karen Soich's mother: "Terry Sinclair appeared 'very decent and considerate'."

Terry Sinclair/ Clark had penetrated many law firms and police organisations. He was able to buy the tapes of Doug and Isobel Wilson talking to police in Brisbane. In reality, he got to listen to it live as well. The Federal Bureau of Narcotics in Canberra was providing Terry Clark with information "from its giant computer [Cray-1 supercomputer, US$8.8m/1976]".

Estimates put the earnings of the 1974–79 "Kiwi Connection" at NZ$100–250 million. On the flip side, the bodies of those killed (September 1977–October 1979) turned up all over New Zealand, Australia, France and England including ex-wife Sally Raynell in September 1977; girlfriend Norma Fleet three weeks later; Margaret Clayton (26) shot twice in the head in Melbourne; Mary Hission (24) shot and tied to a ship's anchor in Sydney Harbour; a young man on the outskirts of Melbourne from 12 stab wounds; a man hanged from a tree in New South Wales; Margaret Bell (17) outside a Mainstreet Night Club in Auckland – a case of mistaken identity, the target rumoured to be Liane McAlpine; Greg Ollard and Julie Thielman riddled with bullets; Yvonne Crosby and daughter Lisa (6) shot in France; Doug and Isobel Wilson shot on Friday 13 April 1979; Harry Lewis; Martin Johnstone shot shortly prior to 14 October 1979. Commonly quoted as a dozen murders, there were 27 to 40 murders.

Terry Clark/Sinclair and Karen Soich were arrested (circa 28 October 1979) in their luxury £250-a-week Kensington apartment in London while masterminding the "English Connection" for drugs, arms dealing, and murder compliance silence. Eb Leary and Peter Williams found out about it straight away.

---

[12] EDWARD POULTER LEARY V NEW ZEALAND LAW PRACTITIONERS DISCIPLINARY TRIBUNAL HC AK CIV.2006-404-7227 [2007] NZHC 819 (21 August 2007). Solicitors acting for Eb Leary were: Chambers Craig Jarvis, PO Box 47-830 Ponsonby; Alan R Galbraith QC and Ian F Williams, PO Box 4338 Shortland Street, Auckland. Acting for NZLS was Glaister Ennor (Paul N Collins) PO Box 63 Shortland Street Auckland; and for ADLS was Grant M Illingworth QC, PO Box 7205 Wellesley Street Auckland. The Auckland High Court Case Officer was David Slight.

"On 13 July 1979, Eb Leary paid cash to Air New Zealand on behalf of his client Terry Clark, and failed to record that transaction in his trust account books.

"On 1 November 1979, Eb Leary took money from his client Terry Clark's trust account without presenting a bill or obtaining a written authority.

"Also in November 1979, Eb received a payment from his client Terry Clark which should have been paid into his trust account, but he paid it into his personal account, thus avoiding any audit on fees or expenses paid.

"On 4 December 1979, the Inland Revenue Department phoned Eb Leary and asked him about the financial affairs of his client Terry Clark. Eb Leary was under a legal duty to answer but deliberately attempted to deceive the IRD of NZ$300,000 in back tax."[13]

After Terry Clark and Karen Soich's arrest for drugs trafficking, arms trafficking and murder, 180 witnesses were uncovered. More than 90 people were involved in Terry Clark's drug ring. Most of them went to ground as soon as Terry Clark was busted. Heroin virtually dried up on Australian and New Zealand streets from late 1979.[14]

Peter Williams then flew to London and went around having meetings in parks and cars bribing for Karen Soich's NOT GUILTY verdict, and some form of early release for Terry Clark.

"On 22 July 1982 Eb Leary knowingly gave false evidence at the Royal Commission into drug trafficking in Australia in an attempt to mislead the Royal Commission.

"The Court of Appeal for Eb's readmission to the Bar (23 June 2006–21 August 2007) found Eb Leary acting as a go between for cannabis trafficking the most difficult to swallow, followed by lying to the Royal Commission, then lying to the IRD."[15]

"The drug matter in 1975 is very serious and the attempts to deceive the Inland Revenue Department in 1979 and the Royal Commissioner in 1982 are . . . serious. The other three proved charges are instances of fairly minor misconduct in a professional capacity. Individually they are much less serious but together they would be enough to impair the Court's confidence in the practitioner. The total effect of the six matters is to destroy that confidence."

Eb Leary was Struck Off on 15 April 1987.[16] On 6 April 1987 – nine days prior – his buddy Peter Williams was made a Queen's Counsel. Neither were charged or convicted.

Things are unbelieveably rigged in New Zealand and Eb Leary's wife won Lotto in 1993 and again at some other time. He then purchased Kingfish Lodge (1993–2002) on Northland's Whangaroa Harbour – 45 km north-west of Terry Clark's old house. He employed local staff who spied for Police, MAF and Customs on illegal fishing and immigration, while the police turned a blind eye the massive dope growing and processing in that area of Northland. This was a case of ping the lesser crime and let the big one go free. The handouts were better as Northland's economy relies on marijuana. This is not news to anyone. Even the police are in on it.

Eb Leary then appealed being Struck Off the law register for 14 months (23 June 2006–21 August 2007). This came with massive help from Peter Williams QC which included a series of bleeding heart appeals to the media.

---

[13] *Ibid*, paraphrased for your enjoyment. This $300,000 tax was likely from the NZ$1 million Peter Williams sent back from London as part of his £2 million /NZ$5 million cut from the bribe money.

[14] Brian Ellis & Peter Richardson, 'Police Probe Mystery of Butchered Corpse, *Lancashire Evening Post*, 15 October 1979, No. 28,791; 'Asia, The Mr Big with fortune of £50 million'; 'The Killing of Mr Asia'; 'Back from the deep! Drugs, Death and a grisly man-hunt', *Lancashire Evening Post*, 2 July 1982.
Strictly speaking, Marty Johnstone was 'Mr Asia', and Terry Clark was 'Mr Big', but the whole affair is called "Mr Asia" and is known as such. Terry Clark was the gang ringleader and when you say Mr Asia, people think of Terry Clark/Sinclair, so that is the familiar name used.

[15] EDWARD POULTER LEARY V NEW ZEALAND LAW PRACTITIONERS DISCIPLINARY TRIBUNAL.

[16] Auckland District Law Society v Leary CA200/86, Court of Appeal, 15 April 1987.

Eb Leary filed 81 testimonials in support including those from a retired High Court Judge (1), District Court Judges (6), Queen's Counsel (15), Auckland Crown Solicitor's Office (5), barristers (16), barristers and solicitors (10), and from industry and community (28). These were unsworn and their weight was raised as an issue. This issue was dismissed via a distraction under the influence of Peter Alderidge Williams QC (PAWQC) who sometimes operates in court as "Williams" under 'Ian F. Williams'. This means that any old letter can be submitted as equivalent to a sworn court document . . . and the lawyer recorded is not necessarily the one influencing the case.

Here's how it went down . . . "Mr Galbraith QC submitted that the eminence and responsible nature of those who gave testimonials was such that they would be cautious before putting pen to paper, careful in their assessment of the appellant and at pains to ensure what they said was accurate and not inflated."

Boy, did they all get it all wrong! Did these "responsible" people make their money from the heroin trafficking? Were they part of the 'Mr Asia Financial Syndicate'?

The Tribunal dismissed Eb's application on 31 October 2006. Reasons were given five weeks later on 6 December 2006 as: Mr Leary's answers "attempted to minimize his culpability" referring to his "prevarication and continually contesting the nature and extent of his wrong-doing . . . We were also looking for evidence that demonstrated from Mr Leary a detailed insight as to why he had been able to be so manipulated by Sinclair/Clark that he had completely put aside proper moral scruples and ethical standards."

Internal Affairs: "That's an easy one. PAWQC ran rings around Eb Leary and got him to do his dirty work with Terry Clark, who was also Peter Williams' client and business partner." The four were in business together – Eb Leary, Terry Clark, Peter Williams and Karen Soich.

Tribunal: "We found that in certain respects there was not only a lack of full insight, but also a lack of appreciation of the effect his wrong-doing had on the profession as a whole . . . Knowledge of that insight was important to instil confidence that he would not succumb to such influences again, if an order was made restoring him to the roll."[17]

The Tribunal then dismissed the application.

Eb Leary then appealed using Alan R. Galbraith QC and Ian F. Williams, whom Peter Williams QC sometimes stands in for as "Williams". PAWQC then went to the child sex abuse and child drug movement again – a.k.a. the media – and put New Zealand through another bleeding heart scenario claiming: 'It was inhumane to not give the man a second chance and everyone should be given a second chance'.

The Tribunal thinks they're magic, so the judges appear unnamed and begin their summing up by saying the opposite of the outcome, thus putting their target through the grinder one last time . . .

Tribunal: "We have reached that view. The focus of a restoration application is prospective. In our view, the evidence demonstrated Mr Leary's acceptance of his past wrongdoing. More importantly, it demonstrated his acceptance of his need for reform and his efforts in achieving that reform in difficult circumstances over 20 years. His evidence, and the very considerable body of support from persons of integrity should have given the Tribunal confidence that Mr Leary would not re-offend. It should have given the Tribunal confidence that he was a fit and proper person to practise as a barrister henceforth. It should have granted his application. In our view, it failed to do so by placing overmuch weight on the circumstances leading up to Mr Leary's striking-off and too little weight on the evidence of Mr Leary's reformative efforts over the years since. As a result, the Tribunal's discretionary decision failed to give adequate recognition to the required prospective view of Mr Leary's restoration application. The Tribunal was thereby led into error and reached a wrong decision.

---

[17] EDWARD POULTER LEARY V NEW ZEALAND LAW PRACTITIONERS DISCIPLINARY TRIBUNAL.

"Result: For all those reasons, Mr Leary's appeal is allowed and his name is ordered to be restored to the roll of barristers and solicitors on the condition he sought that he does not practise as a solicitor in the future."[18]

Eb Leary was then restored to the roll of barristers and solicitors on 21 August 2007, but on the condition he only practise as a barrister, and would never be allowed to practise as a solicitor. So he was a court lawyer only.

Eb Leary was then caught doing the same thing again within the year, this time with ecstacy money.

So much for the references from the retired High Court Judge, District Court Judges, Queen's Counsel, Auckland Crown solicitor's Office, barristers, barristers and solicitors, industry and community. If they would like to come forward with their names, and business and financial relationships with Eb Leary and/or Terry Sinclair/Clark, that would benefit justice.

So much for the Court of Appeal – all process and no substance.

So much for unsworn testimonies.

So much for Peter Williams . . . or Ian F. Williams, a.k.a. Williams.

And so much for Peter Williams being made a Queen's Counsel.

Peter Williams stole a car as a 17-year-old and was convicted. That's what put him on a collision course with the police.

Regarding Eb Leary's wife's Lotto win, Eb actually had a fish smoking factory in quite a nice building in Grey Lynn, Auckland and it burnt down, legitimately, according to another of his illegitimate friends. He then bought the Fishing Lodge. "Richard Worth, the MP for Epsom and I used to frequent brothels for a whipping. Those were the days. When I was asked to be a politician for National, I replied: 'Have you looked into my history. It's terrible. And when you look beyond that, it's even worse'."

According to Internal Affairs, Williams' Asian porn is very particular, it's paedophile Asian porn. There is a special branch of the police which goes around to other suburbs and extracts the porn out of Judge's and QC's homes. They don't do it in their own area, so there must be at least two such units in each city. I spoke to one of them and he said:
"It's amazing what you find. They're all into it." I replied: "Yeah, it's de rigueur for promotion".

There seems to be no end to the financial assassinations of Peter Williams. He has been a dedicated assassin from the time he was required to make the decision to cut his losses, or maximise he and his client Terry Clark's profits. The heroin competition Marty Johnstone was murdered in October 1979. Two weeks later, Williams junior lawyer Karen Soich was arrested in bed with Terry Clark in their luxury Kensington apartment, for heroin trafficking, arms trafficking, and murder. Marty Johnstone's money was never found and Terry Clark had £50–250 million. In London, the mafia gave Peter Williams £2 million of this.

Peter Williams ended up with the money, twice, and became a QC on 6 April 1987.
Eb Leary got disbarred on 15 April 1987. So who profitted?
Does anything else smell so bad for so long?

Eb.
Terry.
Karen.
Peter.

[18] EDWARD POULTER LEARY V NEW ZEALAND LAW PRACTITIONERS DISCIPLINARY TRIBUNAL.

Billy Boyd's Striking Out by the Auckland District Law Society

Much of this information is sealed by the Ministry of Justice until 2087. It does this to prevent the public from realising that the MOJ (Ministry of Justice) is a protection mechanism for the mafia, and is itself, trafficking heroin for The Crown.

George William Stuart Boyd's case went before the Council of the Auckland District Law Society on 6 August 1984, 26 February 1985, 10 October 1985 and was heard on 8 November 1985. He is known as 'Billy Boyd'. When the court documents write "he", "Billy Boyd" is substituted when appropriate. The letters in the court documents have also been named. The court documents are whited out with substitute: A, B, C, D, E/F, G, H, J, K, X & Y, and Z.

A is Detective Inspector John Rex Hughes (boxer, ultra marathon runner).

B is Detective Inspector Ian Hastings (casinos, drug rehab fundraiser, paedophile).

C is "Messrs C and Partners" – a conglomeration of Terry Clark's aliases, a Clark holding company with access to the nominee company.

D is Alexander James Building Account a.k.a. Terry Clark's Death account.

E/F is Terry Clark/ Terrance James Sinclair.

F is Terrance James Sinclair's ANZ savings bank account in Newmarket, Auckland.

G is Eb Leary's account at the Bank of New South Wales Savings Bank (NZ) Limited, Poriorua.[19] ("G paid J $10,000 on 30 November 1979.")

H is Karen Soich. ("H paid G $90/wk for 9 months in 1980.")

J is Graeme 'Smith' Friedlander. ("Billy Boyd paid $10,000 from Eb Leary's trust account to J via the nominee company on 30 November 1979.")

K is Alexander James' trust account (that paid via a Nominee Company, $12,000 to Billy Boyd on 30 January 1980).

X is Peter Williams who was made a Queen's Counsel on 6 April 1987.

Y is Eb Leary, a lawyer who was struck off on 15 April 1987, then reinstated in 2008, then laundered drug money again, shamed again, and is due to be struck off again.

Z is Tony Bennetti a.k.a. Terry Clark ("Z, an alias for E/F").

Spymaster: "The candidates we eliminated for A and B were Bill Shepherd, Peter Fulcher, Aussie Malcolm, D.I. Ian McKenzie (race horses), Kevin Ryan and 'The Irishman' – a contract killer around Waihi with a northern Irish accent who figures in a number of disappearing cases. The cops are scared shitless of him – indicating he was doing state/ judicial-sanctioned killings. The local police officer didn't want to know him and refused any information. Waihi is a mining area where targets are fed down mine tailings, including quite recently, and their car is dumped on top. After the car was dumped on top, they're not expected to come back up."

1979 was a busy year of money transfers and cover-ups for the Mr Asia financial syndicate and security for these were done with property transfers (gift) so that heroin trafficking lawyers could buy out influential police and no murders would be solved in New Zealand. The house in Waihi transferred on 27 June 1979 and 3 October 1979. It was owned by Peter Williams (X) and Eb Leary (Y) and gifted to Det. Insp. John Hughes (A) and Det. Insp. Ian Hastings (B). Det. Hughes then sighted the medical report of Det. Bruce Hutton who had murdered his new wife by beating her, then holding her up by her feet in the bath until she drowned, so Hutton didn't need a buy out, plus he was already security for heroin importing in engine blocks.

On 8 November 1985, Billy Boyd pleaded guilty to the following charges: 2, 3, 4, 7, 8, 12, 13, and 21(b). These involve the transfer of money and property which are illustrated with dates and amounts. Much of the money was transferred to others in the Mr Asia heroin trafficking ring including Eb Leary – Peter Williams' business partner and lifelong friend.

---

[19] The Bank of New South Wales opened in 1933 and closed in 2000 when it was taken over by the Commonwealth Bank. It primarily dealt with farmers. It is not the BNZ. It is not Westpac.

Council of the Auckland District Law Society v. George William Stuart Boyd, 8 Nov. 1985:

1. With respect to a Memorandum of Transfer dated 27th June 1979 from Peter Williams (X) and Eb Leary (Y) to Tony Bennetti (Terry Clark/ Z) of a property in Waihi (for $300,000):
(a) Billy Boyd wrongly added the letters "JP" following the signature of the witness on such Memorandum of Transfer;
(b) Billy Boyd wrongly signed the document as correct for Land Transfer purposes.

2. On or about 3rd October 1979 with respect to the transfer of a property at Waihi from Tony Bennetti (a.k.a. Terry Clark) to John Rex Hughes (A) and Ian Hastings (B) (for $3,000.00):
(a) Billy Boyd signed the name "Tony Bennetti" (Z) on the Memorandum of Transfer and in presenting the Transfer for registration failed to disclose that the signature was made for him and not by the transferor so as to cause the Registrar to accept it and act on the document for the purposes of registration; **[Admitted]**
(b) He wrongly witnessed the signature "Tony Bennetti" (Z) on the Memorandum of Transfer [Terry Clark was in England]; **[Admitted]**
(c) He wrongly certified the document correct for the purposes of the Land Transfer registration. **[Admitted]**

Marty Johnstone's Murder Money

3. On or about 4 October 1979 Billy Boyd withdrew from the trust account in the name of Tony Bennetti (Z) with Clark's holding Co. ("Messrs C and Partners") the sum of $25,000 by a cheque made out in favour of Tony Bennetti (Z) which said cheque was cashed by Billy Boyd and he caused or allowed the trust account records to indicate that the $25,000 had been paid to the client and Billy Boyd thereby failed to ensure that there was a correct trust account record of the transaction. **[Admitted]**

4. Having obtained cash for a cheque of $25,000 drawn on the trust account of Clark's holding Co. (C and Partners) on 4th October 1979 he failed to pay the moneys so received into a bank in New Zealand to a general or separate trust account. **[Admitted]**

5. Having received cash for a cheque for $25,000 drawn on the 4th October 1979 on the trust account of Clark's holding Co. (C and Partners) and having paid $15,000 to the credit of Terry Clark's Death Account (Alexander James/ a.k.a. Terry Clark, D Building Account) he failed to hold the balance of $10,000 exclusively for his client to be paid to him or as he directed. *[This was the $10,000 up front payment for Marty Johnstone's murder. This was obvious, so the Auckland District Law Society (ADLS) gave Billy Boyd an alternative so one of their's wouldn't look like he was laundering money for the subcontracting of a murder/s.]*

6. In the alternative Billy Boyd disbursed the sum of $10,000 out of moneys received on the cashing of a cheque of $25,000 without:
(a) Recording the disbursement of those moneys in his trust account;
(b) Accounting to his client [Terry Clark] with respect to the disbursement of such money;
(c) Justifying any moneys taken as expenses.

[Neither 5 or 6 were admitted as that involved accessory to murder. Billy Boyd entered no plea and criminal charges were laid. Boyd got 18 months, reduced to 6 months on appeal and was immediately released from prison, if he was ever in there. He was most likely on remand and saw the warden's couch once just to put the shits up him.]

7. Having obtained the sum of $15,000 by cashing a trust account cheque for $25,000 drawn on 4th October 1979 for and on behalf of Terry Clark/ Terry Sinclair (E/F), he paid the said $15,000 to the credit of his said client with the Terry Clark's Death Account (Alexander James/ a.k.a. Terry Clark, D Building Account) without correctly recording the transaction through his trust account. **[Admitted]**

8. He received the sum of $5,000 from Terry Clark/ Terry Sinclair (E/F) with respect to attendances and expenses in Easter *[13–16 April]* 1979 without recording the transaction through the trust account. **[Admitted]**

9. Between the 14th November 1978 and the 21st November 1979 Billy Boyd received into the trust account substantial moneys in cash (noted in the Report of the Royal Commission on Drug Trafficking as $193,680) from Terry Clark/ Terry Sinclair (F/F) or on his behalf when he knew or ought to have known or had reasonable grounds to suspect that the moneys were derived from criminal activity on the part of Terry Clark/ Terry Sinclair (E/F).

10. As an alternative to Charge 9 between the 14th November 1978 and the 21st November 1979 Billy Boyd received into the trust account substantial moneys in cash from Terry Clark/ Terry Sinclair (E/F) or on his behalf and he failed to enquire as to the source of the moneys when the circumstances required him to do so.

11. Billy Boyd caused each of the deposits set out below to be recorded in the trust account records as being payment from Terry Clark/ Terry Sinclair (E/F) in cash when such payments were made at a time when Terry Clark/ Terry Sinclair (E/F) was not in New Zealand and he thereby failed to record correctly in his trust account records the identity of the payer:

28.3.79 –	$25,000	For the 12/13 April 1979 murder of Doug and Isobel Wilson in Melbourne.
15.11.79 –	$ 5,000	Terry Clark already under arrest in England.
21.11.79 –	$10,000	Terry Clark already under arrest in England.
	$40,000	

12. On or about the 17th August 1979 Billy Boyd received the sum of $100,000 for the credit of Terry Sinclair (F) and deposited the same in an interest bearing account with the ANZ Savings Bank, Newmarket, without recording the transaction through his trust account. **[Admitted]**

13. Billy Boyd disbursed moneys from the account of his client Terry Sinclair (F) with the ANZ Savings Bank, Newmarket, and failed to record the transactions in his trust account as follows:

Date	Withdrawl	
25.10.79	$ 2,134.00	Eb Leary receiving, Marty Johnstone murdered.
31.10.79	$ 32,030.52	Eb Leary receiving, Terry Clark already arrested.
1.11.79	$ 20,000.00	Eb Leary receiving, Terry Clark already arrested.
7.11.79	$ 47,969.48	Eb Leary receiving, Terry Clark already arrested.
	$102,134.00	= $100,000 + $2,134.00 interest **[Admitted]**

14. On or about the dates set out below Billy Boyd paid or caused to be paid the amounts set out below in cash into an account in the name of Eb Leary (G) held at the Bank of New South Wales Savings Bank (NZ) Limited, Porirua and; in each case: **[Admitted]**
(a) Billy Boyd failed to record the transaction in his trust account books and records, and;
(b) He failed to keep his trust account books and records in such a manner as to disclose clearly the position of the funds therein and to enable the same to be conveniently and properly audited. **[Admitted]**

Date	Withdrawl	
12.9.79	$ 1,100	
19.10.79	$ 300	**[Admitted]**

15. For a period of about nine months, in or about the year 1980, Billy Boyd paid, or caused to be paid, for or on behalf of Karen Soich (H) the sum of $90 per week to Eb Leary (G) and in respect of each payment:
(a) He failed to record the transaction in his trust account books and records, and:
(b) He failed to keep his trust account books and records in such a manner as to disclose clearly the position of the funds therein and to enable the same to be conveniently and properly audited.

16. On or about the 30th November 1979 Billy Boyd advanced out of moneys held in the trust account for Eb Leary (G) the sum of $10,000 to Graeme 'Smith' Friedlander (J) through the nominee company without written authority from his client (Terry Clark).
['Smithy' owned the 'Pips International' disco nightclub in Mercury Lane in the mid-70s, sold kiddy porn, was a friend of Peter Williams, and one of the heads of the Mr Asia financial syndicate (Friedlander and Williams with Soich as financial field agent). Friedlander and Williams made the call to each other for the murder of heroin competition Marty Johnstone. Friedlander now owns a lot of retail shops in the suburbs around central Auckland.
So Billy Boyd paid $100,000 + interest to Eb Leary, then took $10,000 out and paid Graeme Friedlander. Terry Clark was already in prison in England and the Police (NZ, Australian, British) were sniffing around NZ asking questions. Graeme 'Smith' Friedlander used this $10,000 to bribe any police who walked into his porn stores. That worked.]

17. On or about the 29th April 1980 Billy Boyd debited to the trust account of Terry Sinclair (F) $1,180 as fees with respect to Inland Revenue together with disbursements for $425 when the disbursement of money held for that client was subject to a notice under Section 400 of the Income Tax Act 1976.
[It was a frozen account. Eb Leary backed Billy Boyd in defrauding the IRD for Terry Clark. From 4 December 1979, Eb Leary was defrauding the IRD of NZ$300,000 in back tax owed by Terry Clark. So it's Billy Boyd $1,605: Eb Leary $300,000.]

18. On or about 25th November 1981 Billy Boyd caused the sum of $400.79 the amount then held to credit in the trust account of Tony Bennetti ("an alias for E/F" Clark/ Sinclair) to be transferred to the cost account under the narration "toll calls etc.":
(a) When the disbursement of moneys held for that client was subject to a notice under Section 400 of the Income Tax Act 1976 *[frozen account]*;
(b) When no bill of costs had been rendered in respect thereof and there was no authority in writing in that behalf signed and dated by the client specifying the sum to be applied for disbursements.

19. On or about the 30th day of January 1980 Billy Boyd obtained personal benefit from monies advanced through his Nominee Company in that the sum of $12,000 was transferred to him from the trust account of Alexander James trust account, K) when such funds were obtained through the Nominee Company on submortgage held by the said Alexander James over a property at Okaito Road, Opua the funds being utilised by him for the purchase of the said property. *[See photos of 600m² Okaito Point house known as "Mr Big's house".]*

20. On or about the 28th August 1979 Billy Boyd drew or caused to be drawn the sum of $4,000 from his trust account and paid the said sum into the bank account of Terry James Sinclair (F) held at the Bank of [Other], Auckland when the operation of the said bank account was under Billy Boyd's control and:
(a) He failed to record payment in his trust account books and records;
(b) He failed to keep his trust account books and records in such a manner as to disclose clearly the position of the funds therein and to enable the same to be conveniently and properly audited.

21. On or about the 28th August 1979 Billy Boyd withdrew, or caused to be withdrawn, the sum of $10,750 in cash from the bank account of his client, Terry Sinclair (F), held at the Bank of [Other], Auckland and:
(a) He failed to record the transaction in his trust account books and records;
(b) He failed to keep his trust account books and records in such a manner as to disclose clearly the position of the funds therein and to enable the same to be conveniently and properly audited. **[Admitted]**
(c) He failed to account to his client for such monies.

22. On or about the following dates Billy Boyd drew on or caused to be drawn the following sums from his trust account and paid the said sums into the bank account of Terry Sinclair (F) held at the Bank of [Other], Auckland when the operation of the said bank account was under Billy Boyd's control and, in each case:
(a) He failed to record payment in his trust account books and records;
(b) He failed to keep his trust account books and records in such a manner as to disclose clearly the position of the funds therein and to enable the same to be conveniently and properly audited.

Date	Amount	
11.6.79	$ 2,393.61	
5.7.79	$25,000.00	Eb Leary paying for Terry Clark's trips to London, plane, accom., murder.
7.8.79	$ 9,240.00	
	$36,633.61	

23. On or about the following dates Billy Boyd withdrew, or caused to be withdrawn, the following sums in cash from the bank account of his client, Terry Sinclair (F) held at the Bank of [Other], Auckland and, in each case:
(a) He failed to record payment in his trust account books and records;
(b) He failed to keep his trust account books and records in such a manner as to disclose clearly the position of the funds therein and to enable the same to be conveniently and properly audited.
(c) He failed to account to his client for such monies.

Date	Amount	
19.3.79	$ 1,878.00	
18.4.79	$ 3,000.00	
12.6.79	$ 2,300.00	
5.7.79	$ 7,000.00	
	$14,178.00	By the time of interest, this was another $15,000 for another murder.

"The charges were supported by the affidavits of [what looks like three people, probably bank staff]
"Mr S C Ennor appeared for the Council of the Auckland District Law Society and advised the Tribunal that Mr L W Brown QC represented Mr Boyd. A transcript of the proceedings made by the stenographer in attendance is attached to these minutes [but missing]. Mr Ennor drew the attention of the Tribunal to a Memorandum by Counsel referred to in a minute of 10 October 1985 recording a conference of the Chairman with Mr Enor and Mr Brown . . .

"The Memorandum by Counsel records inter alia that the practitioner admits the facts with respect to the charges **2, 3, 4, 7, 8, 12, 13, 14 and 21(b)** and that is each case he was **guilty of misconduct** in his professional capacity; and the practitioner further admits that in consquence of these matters he is not a fit and proper person to practise as a barrister or solicitor and he accepts that an order should be made under s.112(2) (a) that his name **be struck off the roll of barristers and solicitors**.

"Mr Ennor asked the Tribunal to adjourn charges 5 and 6 pending criminal charges against Mr Boyd and also the other charges in respect of which no admission has been made . . . costs and expenses of the Auckland District Law Society in regard to the enquiry by its district council totalled $22,757.33 . . . Mr Bown had admitted receiving the letter and had said he would not be making submissions on costs.

"In response to a question Mr Ennor said it was unlikely that the adjourned charges would be revived but this could be taken up in the light of later events.

"A memorandum was tabled showing the costs and expenses of the New Zealand Law Society at $408.

"The Tribunal then retired to consider its decision."[20]

---

[20] George William Stuart Boyd v. Auckland District Law Society, DISIP4/15, 1985, 5. , p. 8.

"On resumption the Chairman announced that the Tribunal found that by reason of the charges admitted by him George William Stuart Boyd was not a fit and proper person to practise as a barrister and solicitor and ORDERED as follows:
(1) That the name of George William Stuart Boyd be struck off the roll;
(2) That George William Stuart Boyd pay: (i) To the New Zealand Law Society the sum of $400 in respect of the costs and expenses of and incidental to the inquiry by the Tribunal; (ii) to the Auckland District Law Society the sum of $22,250 in respect of the costs and expenses of and incidental to the inquiry by its district council;
(3) That the hearing of charges 5 and 6 and all other charges to which no admission has been made be adjourned for a period of six months."[21] [End of GWSB v. ADLS, DISIP4/15]

Billy Boyd (24–26 years old) was then struck off from 8 November 1985 to 12 August 1997 (12 years) and charged $22,650.

In the meantime he served 6 months of an 18 month sentence. However, on closer inspection, this 8 November 1985 hearing shows that his trial for funding the murder of Marty Johnstone was adjourned until May 1986, yet by December 1985, Boyd had won an appeal and reduced the sentence to 6 months and was immediately released for time served, which could only have been remand, which for a lawyer is 'stay at home indoors and don't be seen by the public, and don't answer the door'.

Eb Leary (c. 50 years old) was struck off from 15 April 1987 to 21 August 2007 (20 years) but did not do any time. He had received over $100,000 and defrauded the IRD of $300,000.

Billy Boyd (26) was then given the land and buildings of the Empire Hotel (corner of Nelson and Victoria Streets, opposite TVNZ) from money Peter Williams had received from the heroin trafficking profits. It was Peter Williams who held Terry Clark's money in his safe and Peter Williams who dealt with the larger amounts. It was Peter Williams who ran the circus. It was, and still is, Peter Williams who is the mafia boss. Only in New Zealand can a car thief become a Queen's Counsel, and a mafia boss remain unacknowledged.

Eb Leary's wife then won Lotto twice. The arrangement for this was one of the last things Rob Muldoon did before he left office 12 days late (14–26 July 1984) as Prime Minister. The other thing was phoning the Pentagon and asking them to take over New Zealand. They voted 4 for, and 4 against, then the chairman voted against America taking over New Zealand.

Peter Williams (48) then bought a whole bunch of property and has been stingy ever since – just like Mr Taylor.

In total, Billy Boyd took out or transferred the following money:

Date	Amount	
19.3.79	$ 1,878.00	
28.3.79	$25,000.00	For the 12/13 April 1979 murder of Doug and Isobel Wilson in Melbourne.
18.4.79	$ 3,000.00	
11.6.79	$ 2,393.61	
12.6.79	$ 2,300.00	
5.7.79	$ 7,000.00	
5.7.79	$25,000.00	13.7.79, Eb Leary paid cash to Air NZ for Clark trip to London, plus apartment.
7.8.79	$ 9,240.00	
12.9.79	$ 1,100.00	
19.10.79	$ 300.00	
25.10.79	$ 2,134.00	17.8.79 $100,000.00 paid in.
31.10.79	$32,030.52	Eb Leary receiving, Terry Clark already arrested.
1.11.79	$20,000.00	Eb Leary receiving, Terry Clark already arrested.
7.11.79	$47,969.48	Eb Leary receiving, Terry Clark already arrested.
15.11.79	$ 5,000.00	Terry Clark already arrested.
21.11.79	$10,000.00	30.11.79 with Eb Leary receiving, Clark arrested ($115,000 31.10–21.11.79).
Subtotal	**$194,345.61**	Royal Commission on Drug Trafficking report $193,680.00 (11.11.78–21.11.79).

---

[21] George William Stuart Boyd v. Auckland District Law Society, DISIP4/15, 1985, 5., pp. 8-9.

However that is not the full story and it seems that the Tribunal were deliberately confusing the money transfers in the way they recorded it so that the transactions for the Marty Johnstone murder would not be noted as part of the Billy Boyd, Eb Leary, Peter Williams, Mr Asia Financial Syndicate. The other transaction dates are:

Date	Amount	
14.11.78	$ unspecified	Probably $665 to $47,100.
4.10.79	$ 25,000.00	From Tony Bennett in Clark's holding Co. (C and Partners) for the M. Johnstone murder.
4.10.79	$ 10,000.00	Paid into Terry Clark's Death Account (Alexander James D Building Account) for Marty Johnstone's murder, $10,000 being the up front payment.
4.10.79	$ 15,000.00	Murder payment when completed (Alexander James D Building Account).
13–16.4.79	$ 5,000.00	Cash payment from Terry Clark to Billy Boyd.
17.8.79	$100,000.00	Payments to Eb Leary 25.10–7.11.79.
28.8.79	$ 4,000.00	
28.8.79	$ 10,750.00	With interest, $14,750 was $15,000 for another murder of which there were 27–40.
30.11.79	$ 10,000.00	Eb Leary receiving, Terry Clark already arrested.
30.1.80	$ 12,000.00	Alexander James/ Terry Clark trust account via Nominee Company (K) to Billy Boyd.
1980	$ 3,510.00	"90/wk for 9 months" – Karen Solch paid Eb Leary's account in Porlorua.
29.4.80	$ 1,180.00	With Terry Clark in prison.
29.4.80	$ 425.00	With Terry Clark in prison.
25.11.81	$ 400.79	"toll calls etc." from Terry Clark in prison.
Subtotal	**$147,265.79**	
TOTAL	**$341,957.40**	

This is a far cry from the £250 million the British police spoke of, but still this was only the money going through six accounts, and only in New Zealand.

This did not include the money stashed in PAWQC's safe, or the money he held for Terry Clark/ Sinclair under his many other alias – about 26 in all.

Billy Boyd was a young graduate lawyer (24/25) when the transactions went down and was being used by the much older and shrewder criminals Eb Leary (42/43) and Peter Williams (43/44) who had little compunction for anything, or anyone else, other than money, and in Williams' case, money and his reputation – which eventually made him the Mafia boss.

It would be interesting to trace these payments with the murders to see if more of the murders were funded, ordered, and subcontracted from New Zealand.

Billy Boyd's Application to be reinstated to the Bar

Before the New Zealand Law Practitioners Disciplinary Tribunal, in the matter of the Law Practitioners and George William Stuart Boyd of Auckland, Hotel Proprietor, Oral Decision of Tribunal 12 August 1997.

Billy Boyd applied to practise as a barrister only. He was struck off the role "on 18 November 1985 for offending over a six month period in 1979 *[19 March 1979–25 November 1981, so 2 years 8 months]*. The offending was serious, involving as it did the falsification of a transfer of property . . . which resulted in eight charges *[actually 9 charges admitted, 2 charges of what was funding a murder, and another 12 charges of no plea, so 23 charges in all]* all relating to the notorious Terence John Clark, also known as Alexander Sinclair *[a.k.a. Mr Asia, the heroin trafficker]*, the charges involving the receipts and disbursements of moneys outside the trust account.

"As I said, the charges covered a period of six months and, as Justice Speight said *[after he shot a man's arm clean off from yacht to yacht at Kawau Island and was thus severely compromised by yachty Peter Williams]* when sentencing Mr Boyd following his conviction on criminal charges arising out of this offending, Mr Boyd's conduct had included helping himself to part of the seemingly endless funds that passed through his hands on behalf of Sinclair."[22]

---

[22] Boyd/NZLPDT Oral Decision, 12 August 1997, p.2.

Sometime in 1985 "Justice Speight sentenced Mr Boyd to a term of imprisonment for a period of 18 months, together with a fine of $10,000, on one charge, and a $5,000 fine, together with directing the payment of $5,000 towards the cost of prosecution, on another charge." [23]

"Mr Boyd complied fully with arrangements made with the Law Society for the payment of fine and costs which this Tribunal imposed upon him and also payment of the costs of an investigation by the Auckland District Law Society into his firm's trust account."[24]

[It was noted that the money was paid, but not noted that Billy Boyd served any time in prison.]

"On the Court of Appeal in December 1985 reduced the sentence of imprisonment to a term of six months, with the consequence that Mr Boyd was immediately released from prisons."[25]

Former 2IC of the SIS: "Mr Justice Speight had a yacht and moored it off Kawau Island [an hour north of Auckland]. At night, often the boats would tie up to each other and he was tied up to a yacht owned by McKray – the son of the alcoholic who ran the Auckland Bus Company, the green and white buses, terribly uncomfortable and really shabby. He disinherited his son, but when he died, his son won his huge fortune using the Henderson Family Protection Act.

"The yachts were tied up beside each other and all were drunk. In the early hours of the morning Justice Speight was falling asleep and forgot that there was a wild party happening next door. The judge woke up and found his wife Mrs Speight rooting Mr McKray on the deck in the next yacht.

"Justice Speight clambered down below deck, got the shotgun and fired a 'warning' shot at McKray, but instead shot his arm clean off.

"No charges were laid and even the one-armed McKray kept quiet.

"Thereafter Justice Speight became the SIS judge (his rescuers) and has never turned down a search warrant or a telephone tap since . . . Speight is now the SIS judge."

MICK P: "Mr Justice Speight was triple-dipping. He would retire at 11 am in court, all the judges and Law Society members would give him a valedictory speech, then two hours later they would rein him in again because they were short of judges. Retired Justice Speight is still going on double and triple pay. He can hardly walk and has to be carried in. [Two months later] Judge Speight lived in Remuera and died on 13 August 2008."[26]

"Mr Boyd complied fully with arrangements made with the Law Society for the payment of the fine and costs which this Tribunal imposed upon him and also payment of the costs of an investigation by the Auckland District Law Society into his firm's trust account.

"Following his release from prison, Mr Boyd entered the hospitality industry in Auckland *[in December 1985 when Peter Williams bought Billy Boyd the land and buildings of the Empire Hotel with his access to the larger and more guilty Mr Asia/ Terry Clark accounts to do with the heroin trafficking rather than the murders]*. It is we think significant that, when he sought the Manager's Licence which he required in 1989, the Police raised no objection to that application and it was granted." *[It is totally insignificant, it's just that Williams influenced the crooked police citing 'it was walking distance from their station and they could watch him with ease'.]*

"From the evidence before us it is apparent that Mr Boyd has been outstandingly successful in business in the hospitality industry and he has also held high office in an industry organisation."[27]

---

[23] George William Stuart Boyd in the matter of the Law Practitioners Act 1982 for an order restoring his name to the Roll of Barristers and Solicitors before the New Zealand Law Practitioners Disciplinary Tribunal, heard on 12 August 1997, Oral Decision of Tribunal, 12 August 1997 (Boyd/NZLPDT Oral Decision, 12 August 1997), pp. 2-3.

[24] Boyd/NZLPDT Oral Decision, 12 August 1997, p. 3.

[25] *Ibid.*

[26] *THE SEX COLLECTORS, How the World is Run on Shame, Heroin Ticket, Volume III*, 'Heroin Trafficking, Lawyers & Mr Asia', 'Justice Speight: Why we don't have a Judiciary, but we do have freedom for paedophiles'.

[27] Boyd/NZLPDT Oral Decision, 12 August 1997, p. 3.

[Well, Billy Boyd was given the land and buildings of the Empire Hotel by Peter Williams from Terry Clark's heroin trafficking account – part of which was in the safe in Peter Williams' office with Williams keeping the remainder of the money and all of a sudden being rich.

Billy Boyd's fines and costs were $50,000, but he got to handle $342,000. So if we remove the $125,000 given to Eb Leary and, say, $42,000 to others, Billy Boyd was still $125,000 ahead, plus Peter Williams had the Mr Asia money, after Terry Clark was arrested in 1975, locked up in 1979, then officially dead in 1983, but living in Perth and still filtering instructions.

All of a sudden Peter Williams was rich and soon bought himself a property on Great Barrier Island, then an office with flat attached, then a house in Ponsonby, Auckland then several commercial buildings in Ponsonby, then became the lawyer for the next mafia, and the one after that, making him the lawyer for two mafias simultaneously.

As soon as you have two freehold houses in New Zealand, elevation is more easily accepted, and Peter Williams bought himself Queen's Counsel protection on 6 April 1987. As pre-arranged, 9 days later Eb Leary was sold out and struck off.]

"Mr Boyd is now close to completing an MBA from Auckland University." *[Who hasn't got one. They're a marriage breakup degree, just ask a divorced person.]* Through his counsel he had produced in support of his application numerous testimonials, a number of them prompted by publicity about the present application *[radio advertising disguised as news in exchange for a bar tab at the Empire]*. We regard these testimonials as quite striking in terms of their number *[everyone wants a bar tab]*, the diversity of the authors of the testimonials *[diverse divers drinking]* and their very strongly supportive content *[we like to drink and I met my partner on your drugs]* . . . First, the New South Wales Court of Appeal decision in Re B [1981], 2 NSWLR 381 where the New South Wales Court of Appeal referred to the relevance at the time of the offending of the youth of the practitioner saying:

> 'Some matters in the past may more easily be set to one side, in particular the conduct of young persons, being conduct not seen in human experience as determinative or necessarily so of ordinary character or future attitudes or conduct'."

"Without implying in any way that youth can excuse misconduct on the part of a legal practitioner, we accept that a very relevant point here is the youth of Mr Boyd, who was aged 25 when he offended . . . It may be that the error, though flagrant, has proved to be a solitary lapse." *[of 23 charges over nearly 3 years involving at least $350,000 and at least six murders, with others funded]* . . . in support of the present application Mr Boyd described the theft as a single aberation *[23 counts]*. Clearly that submission is justified and we approach the case from that *[completely false]* footing . . . he has by his achievements demonstrated his exemplary character *[Billy Boyd had the land and buildings of the Empire Hotel bought for him with the heroin trafficking money ≈$1million]* . . . In that 12 years Mr Boyd has established quite conclusively that he has amended his ways; that he is now a fit and proper person for readmission . . . that purgation is complete, his repentance real; that he is worthy of public confidence; and that there can be no issue as to his reliability in the future . . . we are satisfied in terms of subs. (2) of s116 of the Law Practitioners Act that Mr Boyd is now a fit and proper person to practise as a barrister . . . only."[28]

On 12 August 1997, Billy Boyd was then accepted to the role as a Barrister and charged for the Tribunal's costs ($3,550.00), New Zealand Law Society's costs ($1,703.50) and the Auckland District Law Society costs ($2,101)[29] – so $7,354.50. So his total fines and costs were $50,004.50.

It took the Law Society over 6 years (28 March 1979–8 November 1985) from the initial time of offending to strike Billy Boyd off. So he got to practise from 24–31 years old.

---

[28] Boyd/NZLPDT Oral Decision, 12 August 1997, pp. 3-10.

[29] *Ibid*, pp. 10-11.

Obfuscation for Lawyers and Prison for everyone else

So let me get this right. Billy Boyd committed a "single offense" of "23 charges" (8 of multiple money laundering involving murder) "for a six month period" (of 2 years 8 months from 19 March 1979–25 November 1981) and was struck off six years later on 8 November 1985, then sentenced by Justice 'I-shot-a-man's-Arm-clean-off-and-will-do-anything-the-SIS-requires-of-me' Speight[30] for 18 months sometime in 1985, then Justice Cooke of "the Court of Appeal in December 1985 reduced the sentence to a term of six months, with the consequence that Mr Boyd was immediately released from prison", if he ever attended at all.

So Billy Boyd, at maximum, spent March 1985/9 November 1985–20 December 1985 in prison. It reality, he spent more like, one night sleeping on the warden's couch.

The 8 November 1985 Tribunal decision had already delayed the criminal charges to be heard in six months time (May 1986), so how did Boyd get 12 months removed off his sentence by appeal in December 1985, and with full time already served?

"GEORGE WILLIAM STUART BOYD v. Auckland District Law Society.

"See item 2 of the minutes of 6 August 1984 where it is recorded that the hearing of charges against Mr Boyd be adjourned to the first hearing date in 1985 and item 5 of the minutes of 26 February 1985 where it is recorded that the hearing of the charges be adjourned sine die [without appointing a day to reassemble] to be called by either party of the Tribunal on seven days notice."[31]

On 26 February 1985, the charges were to be heard at 7 days notice, with no time set.

On 8 November 1985, the charges were to be heard in 6 months time.

Sometime in 1985, Justice Speight sentenced George William Stuart Boyd to 18 months prison, but the hearing date and minutes are suppressed until 2087 under the 100 year rule – brought in by the mafia takeover of the judiciary that sealed crime files for 100 years, in order to protect itself.

In December 1985, Justice Sir Robin Cooke, Court of Appeal, reduced the 18 month sentence to six months, with the time already served.

Result: In December 1985 Billy Boyd was immediately released from the prison he never served time at.

Billy Boyd subcontracted the Mr Asia murders. Peter Williams ran Billy Boyd and Eb Leary. Peter Williams ran Terry Clark through his lawyer Karen Soich. Williams ran the Mr Asia heroin financial syndicate with Graeme 'Smith' Friedlander.

---

[30] I checked with the New Zealand Law Society Library and Justice Speight's books have a 12-year gap from 1980–92 where there is no information. It seems that the SIS got to his files. I spoke to the SIS about 2 years ago and they said as much, without prompting. So I checked with the National Archives and they have Speight's books from 1988–98, but they are: "restricted for 100 years, as they contain details of criminal cases . . . in order to comply with the provisions of the Privacy Act 1993 and/or the Criminal Records (Clean Slate) Act 2004."

These Acts were brought in by the pro-nuclear war criminals Helen Clark and Margaret Wilson to protect their own crimes and the criminals that had supported them and they then employed. The British did exactly the same thing in the early 1920s with Hitler and his criminals who became the SS.

Archives New Zealand (Mangere Office) has the sentencing files from 1991. They have the Auckland Criminal Appeals files (1986–93) but there seems to be no series prior.

General Reference for the Sentence files for 1985 is BBAE5610 (boxes 96–99); Trial Register Archive Ref. BBAE5092/3A (1983–86); Sentencing Registers Archive Ref. BBAE5092/3B (1983–87).

Criminal Case Registers of the Court of Appeal held at Archive NZ in Wellington: Ref. ABIO7241 W4585/121 (1983–85); ABIO7241 W4854/60 (1985–87). **Access Statement:** Criminal records are restricted indefinitely under section 20 (1)(c) of the Archives Act and section 65 (2)(g) of the Public Records Act 2005. Restriction expires end of: 2083 and 2087. **Access Contacts:** To gain privileged access, written permission must be sought from: Minister for Courts, C/o General Manager, Higher Courts, Ministry of Justice, National Office, PO Box 180, Wellington . . . So the mafia operation of justice continues.

[31] George William Stuart Boyd v. Auckland District Law Society, DISIP4/15, 1985, 5., opening page.

Mr X in 'The Organisation' publicly called 'The Mr Asia Syndicate'

Mr X agreed to talk on condition of anonymity to *The Dominion Post* about key members of 'the Mr Asia syndicate' | 'The Organisation', of which X was near the top. Mr X claims to be the last man alive who knows the inside details of the drug-running operation, but what about Peter Williams, Eb Leary, Billy Boyd, Aussie Malcolm and Ian Hastings.

Mr X claims not to use drugs, but took the fall for many of his colleagues and spent over a decade in a Sydney prison. His anonimity prevents him being questioned beyond the tale he tells, and his protected status comes complicit with his protection of the mafia boss – Peter Williams QC – who ended up with more of the heroin money than anyone else.

Murray 'Scoop' Williams (Mr X): "I'd always been a thief and a safe-breaker and that sort of stuff. I was very fortunate that I had money before Clark . . . I just started moving money for him, but he learnt pretty fast. Any smart criminal, you only have to show him once and they learn . . . I had a posse after me in New Zealand. I got out while the going was good . . . Australia was the promised land. I became involved with Clark early on in his Australian adventures and would buy his dope and distribute it through his own network of sources, mostly hardened crims with lengthy records. I was one of the few men Clark trusted and eventually had access to a $10 million line of credit. I was running my own show . . . and took my percentage. In a good week I'd make $100,000."[32]

Marty Johnstone sailed his father's 18-metre yacht, *The Brigadoon*, leaving Auckland in late August 1975, and returning about four months later from Thailand with 400 kg of Thai Buddha sticks. Terry Clark became the key distributor. With 100% markup, they netted $3 million in 1976 from this one trip.

Capable cannabis dealers were making $100,000 a week, but cannabis wasn't enough. Heroin was the ticket. It had been done before in New Zealand and the figures stacked up. Under close police surveillance, Terry Clark moved his operations to Brisbane, then Sydney. Marty Johnstone based himself in Singapore.

They bought, trafficked, and sold drugs to and from New Zealand, Australia, Southeast Asia, Britain and the United States which were all far bigger markets. By 1975 they were making NZ$10 million in heroin sales in one delivery to Auckland, and by 1978, they were making $136 million a year just in Auckland. "According to *Star* reporter Pat Booth's book *The Mr Asia File*, by 1978 the heroin import bill for Auckland alone was more than $34 million. The mark-up from importer to dealer was 400 per cent. The Organisation was rolling in it."[33] So that's $102 million profit just in Auckland, just in 1978.

Mr X: "In June 1978 Terry Clark was arrested in Brisbane and two weeks later extradited to New Zealand to face charges of heroin importing. It could well have been the end, but Clark's lawyer, **Peter Williams, got him acquitted. Mr Williams and colleague Eb Leary did well out of The Organisation. They were regularly called upon to defend members of the syndicate."**[34] Mr Williams told *The Dominion Post*: "Clark had been 'just another client. I acted for him, as you do. I think he could be reasonably affable but obviously he was drawn to what you might call the dark side, and that was his undoing of course. At the time, anything to do with drugs, particularly heroin, was very emotional in New Zealand. And there was always the fact that certain people make a lot of money out of drugs. That aggravated the situation – people don't like criminals making a lot of money. These were unusual, heady times. It was so overt."[35]

"Karen Soich (25) was working with Mr Williams (42) on Terry Clark's case in 1978 when she first met Clark. She fell in love with Clark and became his lover. Before long she was a regular visitor at his Opua mansion which Eb Leary's brother had designed.

Police watched from kayaks as heroin trafficker Terry Sinclair and Williams' lawyer Karen Soich had sex on the jetty at Clark's new Opua mansion. Soich was once photographed rolling around on a bed of cash. It was later alleged Clark gave her a duvet made of $50 notes. With a young Auckland lawyer at his side – and a new name, Alexander Sinclair, he and Karen Soich holidayed in Sydney and Adelaide, Los Angeles, Beverly Hills, and headed to London.

The order came from New Zealand to murder Marty Johnstone and raid his bank accounts. That done, the police then raided Terry Clark/ Sinclair (October 1979) and found him in bed with Karen Soich. As instructed by Peter Williams, the The Organisation's financial syndicate field agent, Karen Soich said: "I thought he was a property speculator . . . I was unaware he was a drug kingpin, and thought he was a property developer . . . He has never had anything to do with drugs and never will." This was despite Soich working with Williams defending Clark on heroin charges the year before and finding the best solution was to bribe the witnesses. Williams rarely practised law, and often resorts to bribes, soft blackmail, soft kidnapping, concertion, and lying while waving bits of unread paper. Even in 2009, other lawyers ask: "Has Peter Williams sent around the heavies yet?"

"Police claimed Karen Soich was a willing player in the whole sordid mess, and knew 'a great deal'. Soich was charged with conspiring to import and supply drugs along with Clark but was found not guilty after Peter Williams travelled to London, received £2 milllion and bribed contacts in cars and parks. So Soich was acquitted of any involvement, despite being the field agent for the original and expanding financial investment in Clark.

When caught, Clark's fortune was estimated at well over $50 million, but no one has ever done any forensic work on it. There were half a million dollars just in the sandwiches wrapped in brown paper and handed out at lunchtime, and that was just Australia. So its more like 250 million, and pounds – £250 million.

Terry Clark was considered intelligent (at-times) charming (at-times) and utterly ruthless (at-times). He is believed to have been behind more than a dozen murders. But the word on the street from the know-it-all safe-breakers, and the finance behind the murders, suggests that New Zealand lawyers were involved in financing the hits, with Terry Clark taking the credit to make the operation run more smoothly. Many believe Peter Fulcher did most of the hits Terry Clark took the credit for, and Peter Fulcher can be found sitting in the closest café to Peter Williams' house to this day.

Terry Clark's trial was one of the most heavily guarded in British history, and one of its longest (121 days) and most expensive. Even while being brought to justice (28 Oct. 1979 –) Clark was responsible for lavish spending, including through Billy Boyd ($142,515.79), Eb Leary (receiving exactly $125,000 from six transactions from accounts Boyd controlled) and Peter Williams QC (£2 million cash paid over in a suitcase in a London hotel room pre-trial, for bribes). Whatever was left was Williams (and his acquired QC protective status).

Terry Clark was found guilty by a jury of the murder of Marty Johnstone and sentenced to 37 years in Parkhurst Prison on the Isle of Wight. They say he died in 1983 of a massive heart attack, or during a botched escape attempt, using a drug that would invoke symptoms of a heart attack, then escaping while being taken to hospital, but the dose was too strong and killed him. Mr X: "Clark was the victim of an IRA hit, after saying he was involved in an IRA drug deal." But we know different. (See Volume III, 'Heroin Trafficking, Lawyers and Mr Asia'.)

The Australian Royal Commission also pegged Terry Clark with the deaths of Greg Ollard, Julie Thielman, Harry Lewis, and Doug and Isobel Wilson. That stopped the New Zealand lawyers Williams, Leary and Boyd from having to defend themselves for subcontracting them.

Terry Clark/ Sinclair/ Mr Big was considered the mastermind behind The Organisation, but really it was Peter Williams, a former car thief turned lawyer involved in Royal paedophilia, Asian porn and kiddy porn, then made QC. "Soich has declined repeated interview requests."

---

[32] 'Sex, drugs and murder, The truth about Mr Asia', Kerry Williamson, *The Dominion Post*, 2 March 2009.
[33] *Ibid.*
[34] *Ibid.*
[35] *Ibid.*

Safebreaker: "The trial of Billy Boyd – Billy was the sacrificial lamb . . . Murray 'Scoop' Williams (b. ≈ 1946) was from the family who were boat builders in Milford. He was in Ohaupo Prison just outside Te Awamutu – a gentleman's prison of sex offenders – all the ones that are connected. The prisoners talked to him so much, he applied for a job at the *Auckland Star*, and became a ghost writer on Mr Asia with about five different aliases – all the while in Ohaupo Prison.

"Murray's offsider in Australia was Rupert Murdoch – so when the Australian Securities Exchange (ASX) were doing a bit of soul searching, a PR exercise into insider trading and cleaning itself up – a Clayton's Inquiry – Murray had his hand put up by Rupert Murdoch. Murray was the guinea pig, the sacrifical lamb, the PR frontman, and went through the system as a test case, to set a precident to see how it would work. Everything was taken, all his property, his big flat in Sydney and his home in Byron Bay. He was convicted, did a small stint in jail, then moved into his new large lifestyle farm at the back of Western NSW, past Hawkesbury, an hour or so northwest of Sydney – which was given to him by Rupert Murdoch on behalf of ASX.

"While in prison in Te Awamutu and Sydney, Murray got the scoop because all the inmates would come up and tell him stuff, and that's how he ended up with the nickname 'Scoop' – Murray 'Scoop' Williams – that's how he became Mr X."

Spymaster: "The Williams brothers owned a tank manufacturing outfit in Thailand and were also considered to be trafficking heroin into New Zealand. They sailed a yacht in and out of Thailand and had multi-million dollar charges against them.

"Ray Mills (business owner) had been asked for means to swish shit and ice (drugs and diamonds) back into NZ but refused. The Williams brothers were asking everyone for a firearm to use. Even I was asked. Ray Mills then got bashed by the underworld – denackered – rumoured to be by Greek Mafia in Melbourne, with his son-in-law supposedly organising the bashing.

"The Dallow twins – Ross and bro, both cops – were running side-by-side with Graeme Friedlander. So they were more police protection for the heroin trafficking. Son Simon is now the TV newsreader – bisexual of course. Lawyer Kevin Ryan (ex-St Paul's College, Grey Lynn) was also involved in the heroin trafficking. He was the uncle of Lucy Lawless who played Zena ('Princess of thighs'). Kevin Ryan was not a bad tennis player and used to beat his close friend Peter Williams, which wasn't hard. He plays like a girl and calls 'fault' when he gets aced. It was Peter Williams who lobbied for Kevin Ryan to get a QC before he died."

Author: "The mafia are a bunch of bisexuals, even their bodyguards. One of the big threats used to be, if you stuff up, you get sodomised, so bisexuals were recruited more easily."

Safebreaker: "Lennox was a Pommy burglar used by the New Zealand Police to steal back goods from a burglar when the police's hands were tied. He could easily have broken into PAWQC's safe to find out what was in there, and confirmed Williams having Terry Clark's money, and taken as much as he could carry. It was de rigueur to steal the money, hide it close by, escape, then come back later, pick it up and hide it again. The Police station wasn't a safe place to hide it."

Author: "When I spoke to police who later became lawyers, they confirmed Terry Clark's money was in Peter Williams' safe, and when I spoke to others close to the mafia boss, they also confirmed Terry Clark's money was in Peter Williams' safe, and when I spoke to undercovers, they also confirmed all of the above. Pretty much half the police knew, all of intelligence, the safebreakers, and many of the high-ranking lawyers, even some judges.

"Detective Inspector John Rex Hughes (A) had money in lieu of providing lawyers with cover. John Rex Hughes speciality was planting evidence to convict those whom the police considered expedient to have done it. He was one best chum removed from Peter Williams, and was in a position to accept a house in Waihi."

"Ian Hastings (B) served in the police (1962–95), was already Detective Inspector by 1978, and retired as a Detective Superintendent. Purchasing Peter Williams' and Eb Leary's house off Terry Clark on 3rd October 1979 made him crooked. Like all of them, he took on a charity to make himself look respectable and untouchable, but retained his links to crime and drugs through gambling and was eventually entirely compromised through paedophilia and the new drug – methamphetamine. He now drives around fast and has a hissy fit over traffic tickets.

"In 1978, New Zealand legislation was passed to allow for licensed fundraising casino functions. At the time, D.I. Hastings was in the Combined Services Men's Basketball Team (Army/Navy/Airforce/Police) fundraising for a trip to America and held a casino night at Trilos Downtown. 500 turned up"[36] *including his brother who represented New Zealand in cricket. Heroin was hidden in his sports bag*, and "on their return from Las Vegas, the team paid off their remaining debts with more casino events, then Ian Hastings bought all the casino equipment and chips." *Gambling was Detective Ian Hastings way of laundering the heroin money from 1978, with the Peter Williams/ Terry Clark house purchased in 1979.*

To make himself respectable, "in the early 1980s, D.I. Ian Hastings became heavily involved with drug education initiatives including "F.A.D.E." (Foundation for Alcohol and Drug Education), The Life Education Trust, and the Substance Abuse Education Trust. This made him impervious to heroin trafficking charges. Hastings then began running casino functions for others, raising $50,000 per year for Drug Education activities."

In 1991, Detective Inspector Ian Hastings went in search for a missing 11-year-old girl in Herne Bay. He found her in bed with a Herne Bay businessman and caught them red-handed. Instead of charging the man and returning the girl, he negotiated with the businessman to put them up in a five star hotel in Sydney for a week where he rooted her silly, then returned the 11-year-old to her parents.

"Detective Inspector Ian Hastings was then awarded the QPM (Queens Police Medal) in 1993 "for his work internationally in the field of Drug Education". *The Queen grants an award when a paedophile manages to maintain a front of respectability. This stops the entire British Empire from being embarrased into Africa.*

"Ian Hastings was then made Detective Superintendent and continued fundraising for drug rehabilitation through to 1995, then retired in synch with the first licensed casino opening in Christchurch." *His heroin trafficking money laundering hobby was now his core business, with methamphetamine becoming the new drug of choice. New Zealand Casinos are so well known for distributing methamphetamine and laundering the drug money there are even TV programmes on it – also by people involved bidding for their freedom.*

"Former Detective Superintendent Ian Hastings turned gambling/ money laundering into his core business (1995–2005) changing his focus from fundraising to corporate entertainment with 141 functions in 2002, 132 in 2003, 173 in 2004, 193 in 2005, 248 in 2006, and 300+ functions in 2007" – *all increasing in parallel with the amount of methamphetamine on the market and the amount of money that needed to be laundered.*

A lot of drug laundering businesses are family run and the Hastings were no exception. "In 2005, his daughter Debbie became the administration/ office manager and his son, Robbie Hastings became a croupier and manager (having worked at Crown Casino in Melbourne) and doubles as your plumber during the day. To complete the family dynamic of drug trafficking, money laundering and charity, Ian Hasting's wife, Elizabeth Jamieson has worked in the substance abuse field (1982–2007) earning her a CNZM (Companion of NZ Order of Merit) and doubles as a croupier. Las Vegas Functions Ltd then became a Limited Liability Company in 2006 and still gives "an average of $40,00 per year . . . for drug education." – *which, as we all know, is entirely ineffective and purposefully so. Is that $4,000, $40,000, or $40.00?*

"Ian takes Blackjack Tournaments (1992–2007) to Crown Casino (Melbourne), Wrest Point Casino (Hobart, Australia) and back to Christchurch Casino; and captains the New Zealand Blackjack Test Match Team on annual trips around New Zealand, the winners going to Singapore in 2006 etc where his neighbour came third (total prize money of $1.8 million)."

---

[36] Paraphrased from www.lasvegas.co.nz, ph 0800 LAS VEGAS. Ian is a member of the National Association of Casino Party Operators (NACPO) and attends their Las Vegas conference each year to network.

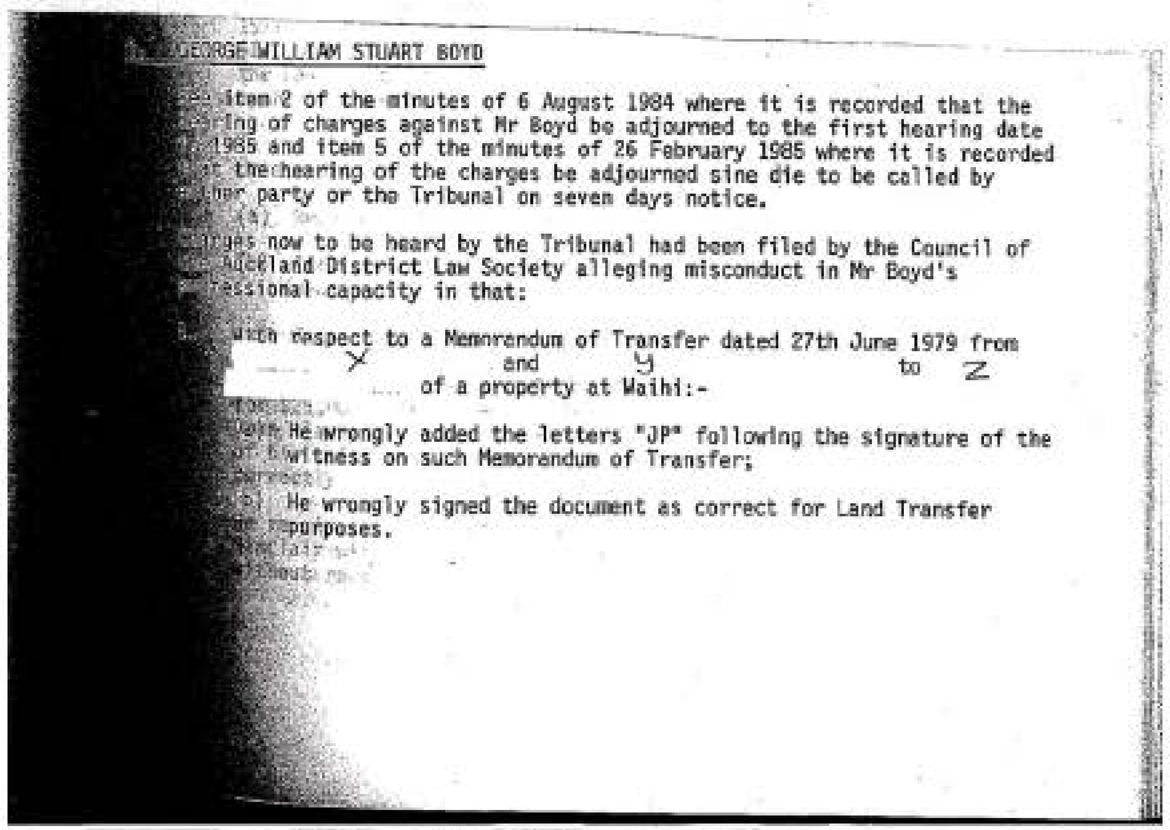

GEORGE WILLIAM STUART BOYD

item 2 of the minutes of 6 August 1984 where it is recorded that the ring of charges against Mr Boyd be adjourned to the first hearing date 1985 and item 5 of the minutes of 26 February 1985 where it is recorded t the hearing of the charges be adjourned sine die to be called by party or the Tribunal on seven days notice.

rges now to be heard by the Tribunal had been filed by the Council of Auckland District Law Society alleging misconduct in Mr Boyd's fessional capacity in that:

with respect to a Memnrendum of Transfer dated 27th June 1979 from X and Y to Z .... of a property at Waihi:-

He wrongly added the letters "JP" following the signature of the witness on such Memorandum of Transfer;

He wrongly signed the document as correct for Land Transfer purposes.

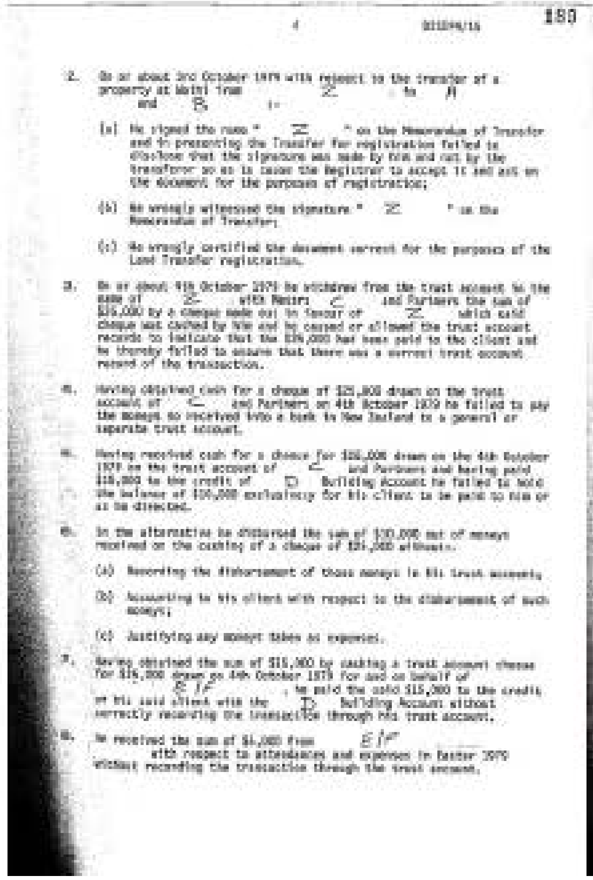

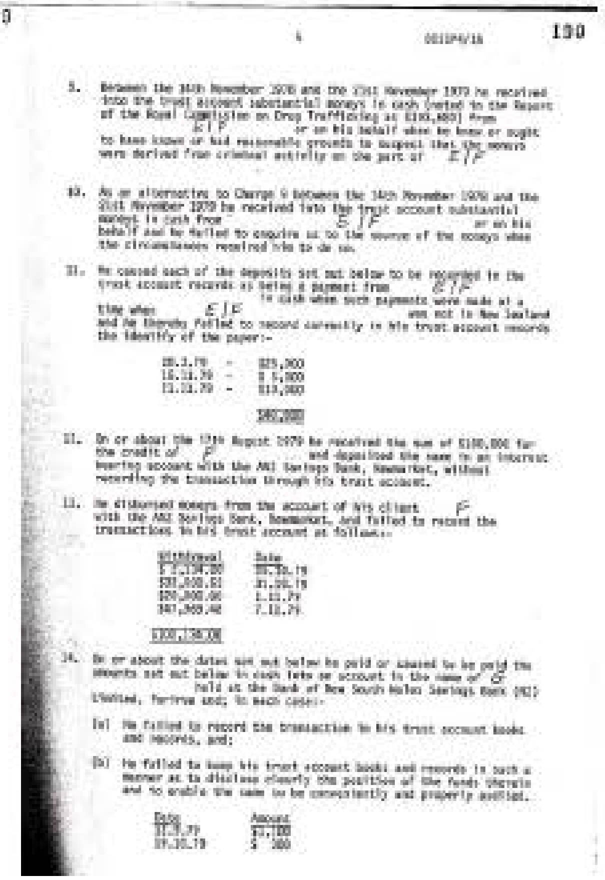

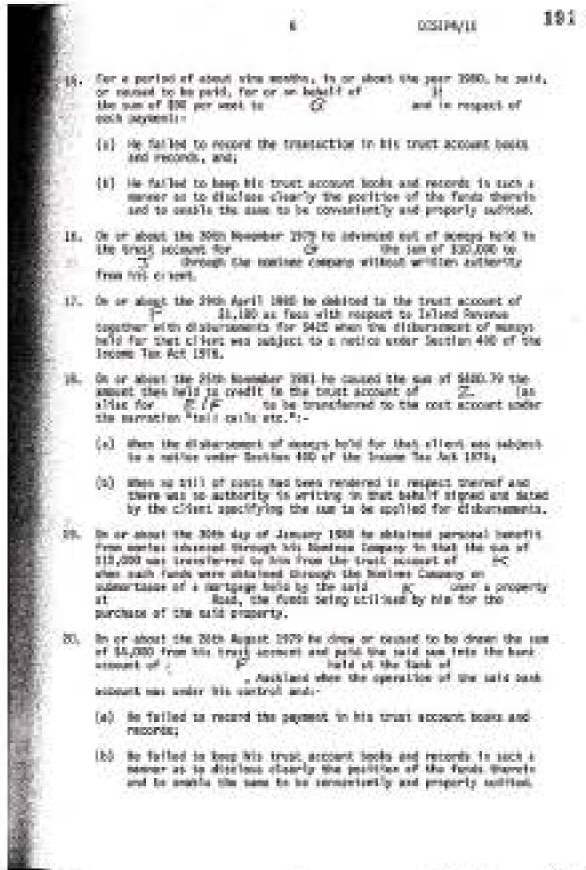

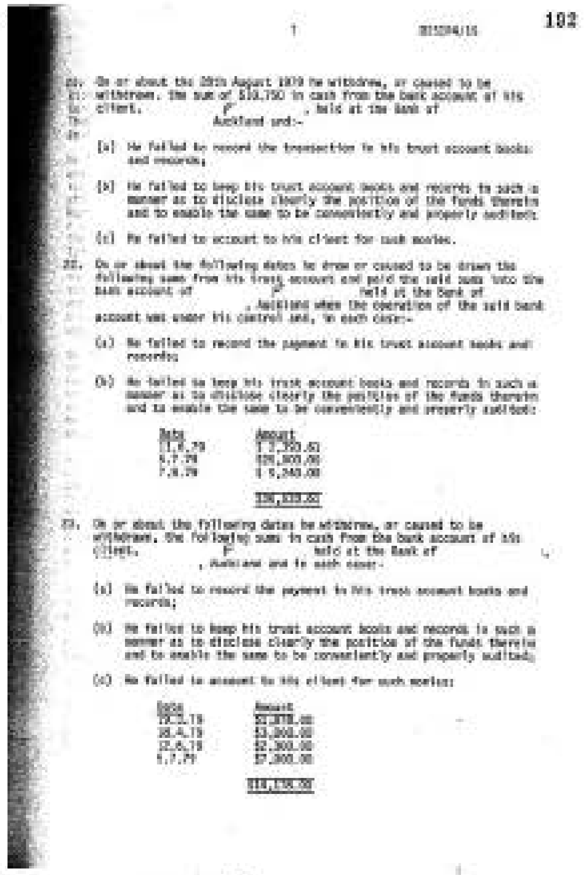

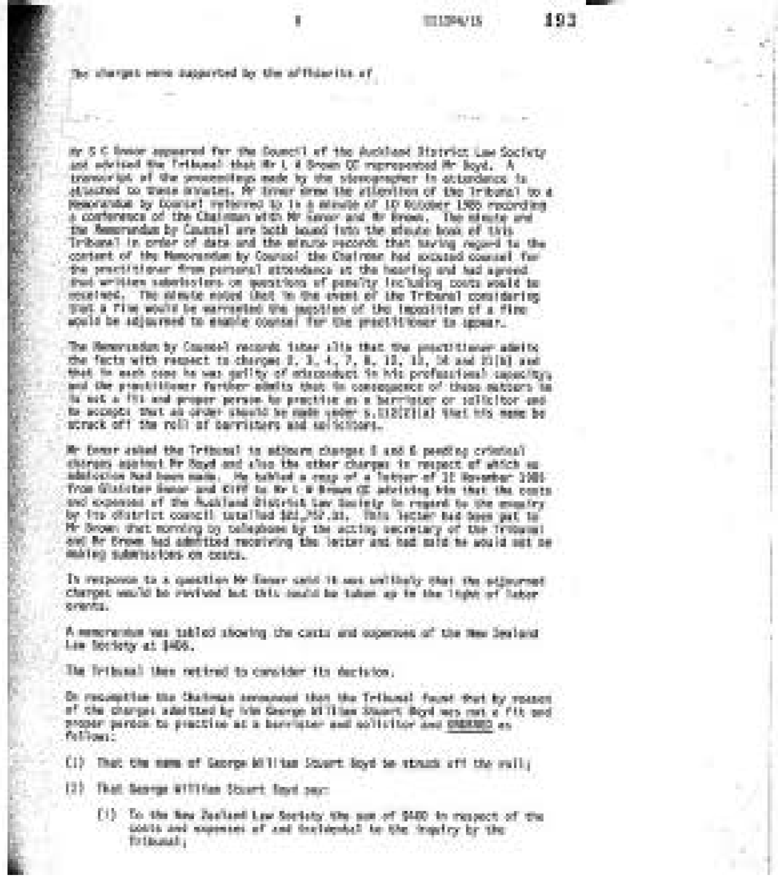

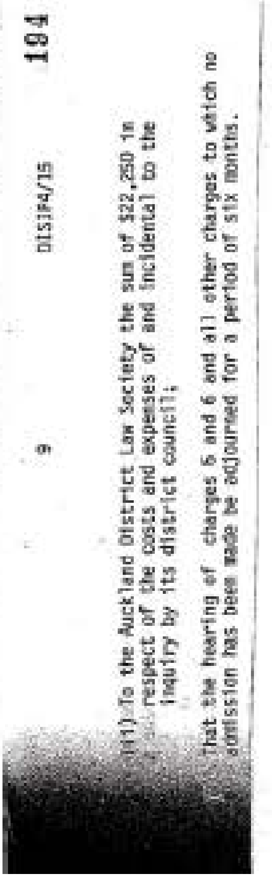

9 DISIP4/15 194

(ii) To the Auckland District Law Society the sum of $22,250 in respect of the costs and expenses of and incidental to the inquiry by its district council;

That the hearing of charges 5 and 6 and all other charges to which no admission has been made be adjourned for a period of six months.

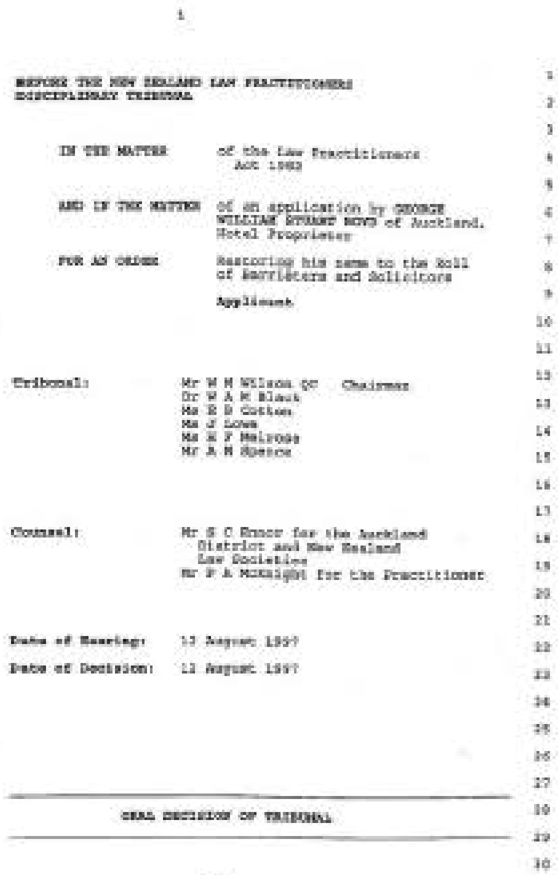

BEFORE THE NEW ZEALAND LAW PRACTITIONERS DISCIPLINARY TRIBUNAL

IN THE MATTER	of the Law Practitioners Act 1982
AND IN THE MATTER	of an application by **GEORGE WILLIAM STUART BOYD** of Auckland, Hotel Proprietor
FOR AN ORDER	Restoring his name to the Roll of Barristers and Solicitors
	Applicant

Tribunal:	Mr W M Wilson QC Chairman Dr W A M Black Ms E B Cotton Ms J Lowe Ms K F Melrose Mr A M Spence
Counsel:	Mr S C Ennor for the Auckland District and New Zealand Law Societies Mr P A McKnight for the Practitioner
Date of Hearing:	12 August 1997
Date of Decision:	12 August 1997

ORAL DECISION OF TRIBUNAL

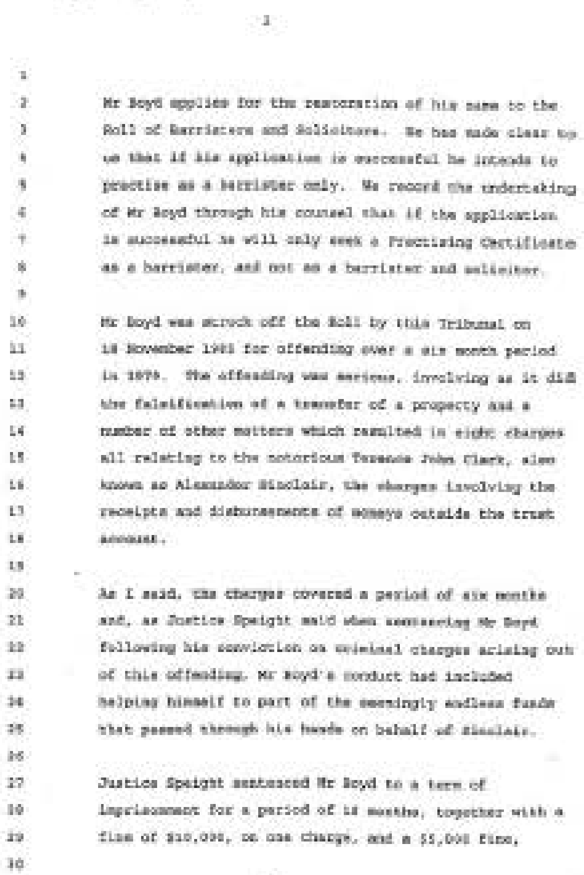

Mr Boyd applies for the restoration of his name to the Roll of Barristers and Solicitors. He has made clear to us that if his application is successful he intends to practise as a barrister only. We record the undertaking of Mr Boyd through his counsel that if the application is successful he will only seek a Practising Certificate as a barrister, and not as a barrister and solicitor.

Mr Boyd was struck off the Roll by this Tribunal on 18 November 1981 for offending over a six month period in 1979. The offending was serious, involving as it did the falsification of a transfer of a property and a number of other matters which resulted in eight charges all relating to the notorious Terence John Clark, also known as Alexander Sinclair, the charges involving the receipts and disbursements of moneys outside the trust account.

As I said, the charges covered a period of six months and, as Justice Speight said when sentencing Mr Boyd following his conviction on criminal charges arising out of this offending, Mr Boyd's conduct had included helping himself to part of the seemingly endless funds that passed through his hands on behalf of Sinclair.

Justice Speight sentenced Mr Boyd to a term of imprisonment for a period of 18 months, together with a fine of $10,000, on one charge, and a $5,000 fine,

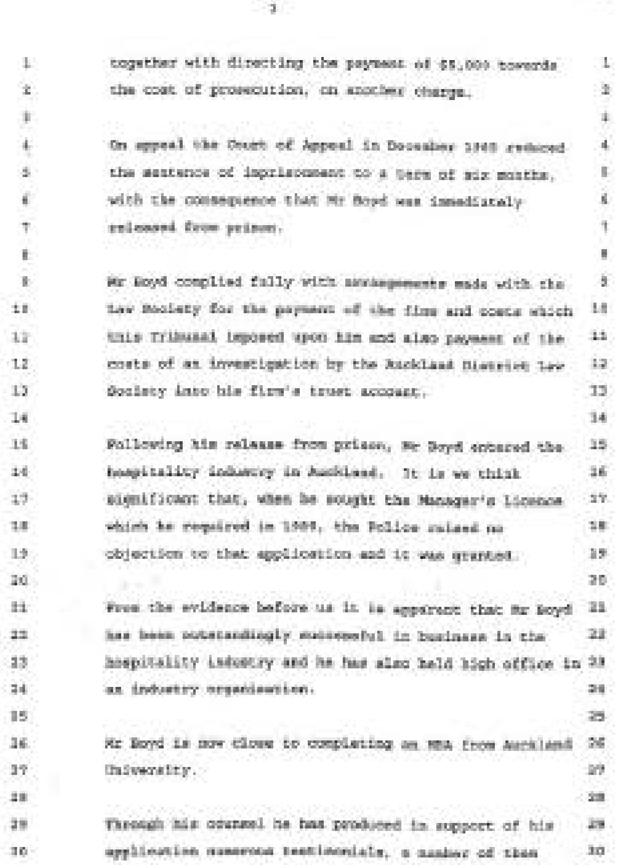

together with directing the payment of $5,000 towards the cost of prosecution, on another charge.

On appeal the Court of Appeal in December 1980 reduced the sentence of imprisonment to a term of six months, with the consequence that Mr Boyd was immediately released from prison.

Mr Boyd complied fully with arrangements made with the Law Society for the payment of the fine and costs which this Tribunal imposed upon him and also payment of the costs of an investigation by the Auckland District Law Society into his firm's trust account.

Following his release from prison, Mr Boyd entered the hospitality industry in Auckland. It is we think significant that, when he sought the Manager's Licence which he required in 1989, the Police raised no objection to that application and it was granted.

From the evidence before us it is apparent that Mr Boyd has been outstandingly successful in business in the hospitality industry and he has also held high office in an industry organisation.

Mr Boyd is now close to completing an MBA from Auckland University.

Through his counsel he has produced in support of his application numerous testimonials, a number of them

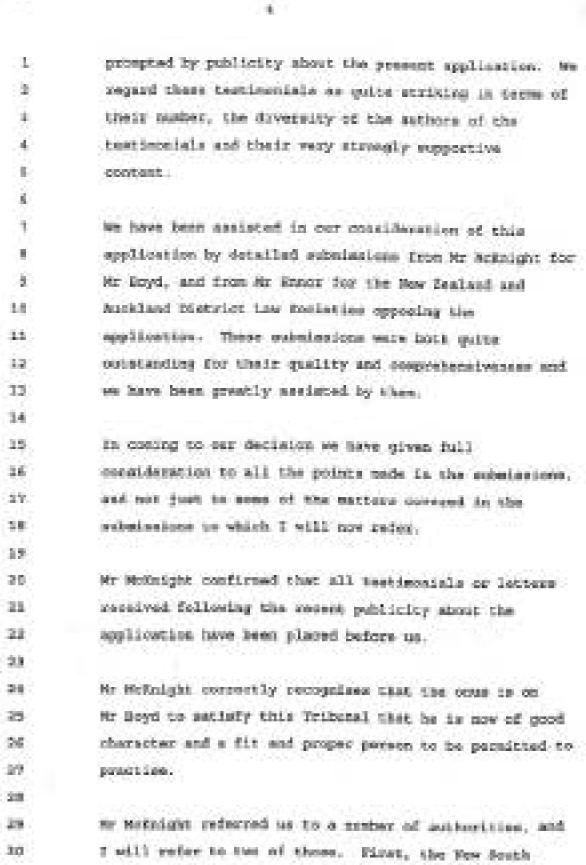

prompted by publicity about the present application. We regard these testimonials as quite striking in terms of their number, the diversity of the authors of the testimonials and their very strongly supportive content.

We have been assisted in our consideration of this application by detailed submissions from Mr McKnight for Mr Boyd, and from Mr Ennor for the New Zealand and Auckland District Law Societies opposing the application. These submissions were both quite outstanding for their quality and comprehensiveness and we have been greatly assisted by them.

In coming to our decision we have given full consideration to all the points made in the submissions, and not just to some of the matters covered in the submissions to which I will now refer.

Mr McKnight confirmed that all testimonials or letters received following the recent publicity about the application have been placed before us.

Mr McKnight correctly recognises that the onus is on Mr Boyd to satisfy this Tribunal that he is now of good character and a fit and proper person to be permitted to practise.

Mr McKnight referred us to a number of authorities, and I will refer to two of those. First, the New South

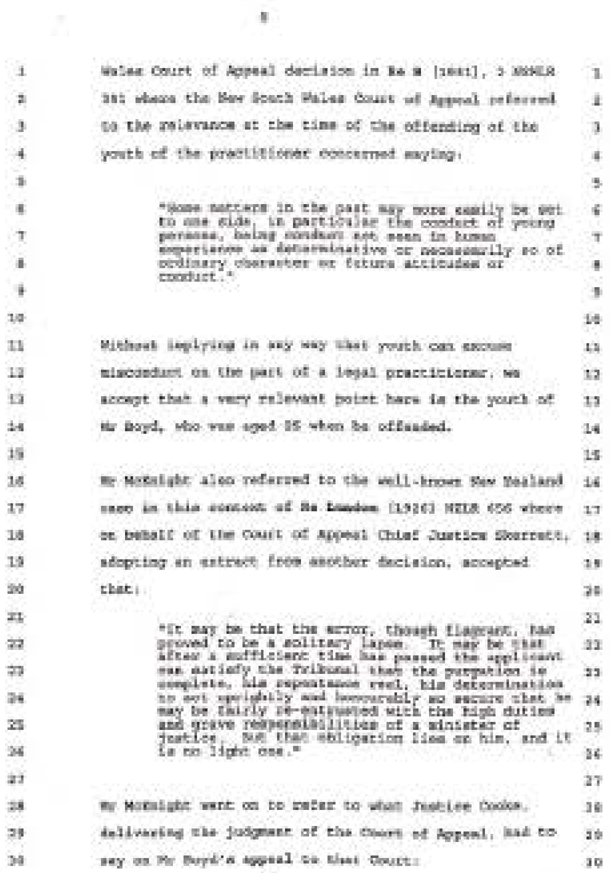

Wales Court of Appeal decision in **Re B** [1981], 2 NSWLR 372 where the New South Wales Court of Appeal referred to the relevance at the time of the offending of the youth of the practitioner concerned saying:

> "Some matters in the past may more easily be set to one side, in particular the conduct of young persons, being conduct not seen in human experience as determinative or necessarily so of ordinary character or future attitudes or conduct."

Without implying in any way that youth can excuse misconduct on the part of a legal practitioner, we accept that a very relevant point here is the youth of Mr Boyd, who was aged 25 when he offended.

Mr McKnight also referred to the well-known New Zealand case in this context of **Re Lundon** [1926] NZLR 656 where on behalf of the Court of Appeal Chief Justice Skerrett, adopting an extract from another decision, accepted that:

> "It may be that the error, though flagrant, has proved to be a solitary lapse. It may be that after a sufficient time has passed the applicant can satisfy the Tribunal that the purgation is complete, his repentance real, his determination to act uprightly and honourably so secure that he may be fairly re-entrusted with the high duties and grave responsibilities of a minister of justice. But that obligation lies on him, and it is no light one."

Mr McKnight went on to refer to what Justice Cooke, delivering the judgment of the Court of Appeal, had to say on Mr Boyd's appeal to that Court:

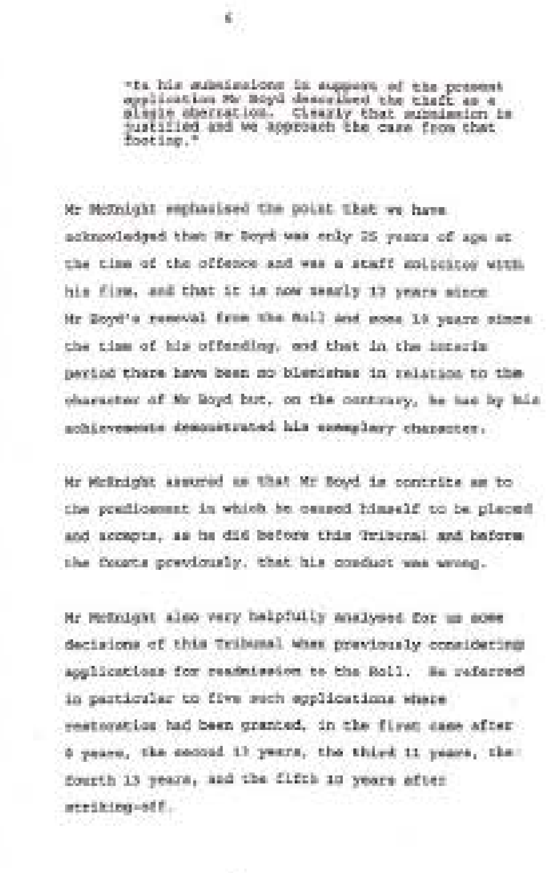

> "In his submissions in support of the present application Mr Boyd described the theft as a single aberration. Clearly that submission is justified and we approach the case from that footing."

Mr McKnight emphasised the point that we have acknowledged that Mr Boyd was only 25 years of age at the time of the offence and was a staff solicitor with his firm, and that it is now nearly 17 years since Mr Boyd's removal from the Roll and some 18 years since the time of his offending, and that in the interim period there have been no blemishes in relation to the character of Mr Boyd but, on the contrary, he has by his achievements demonstrated his exemplary character.

Mr McKnight assured us that Mr Boyd is contrite as to the predicament in which he caused himself to be placed and accepts, as he did before this Tribunal and before the Courts previously, that his conduct was wrong.

Mr McKnight also very helpfully analysed for us some decisions of this Tribunal when previously considering applications for readmission to the Roll. He referred in particular to five such applications where restoration had been granted, in the first case after 9 years, the second 13 years, the third 11 years, the fourth 13 years, and the fifth 10 years after striking-off.

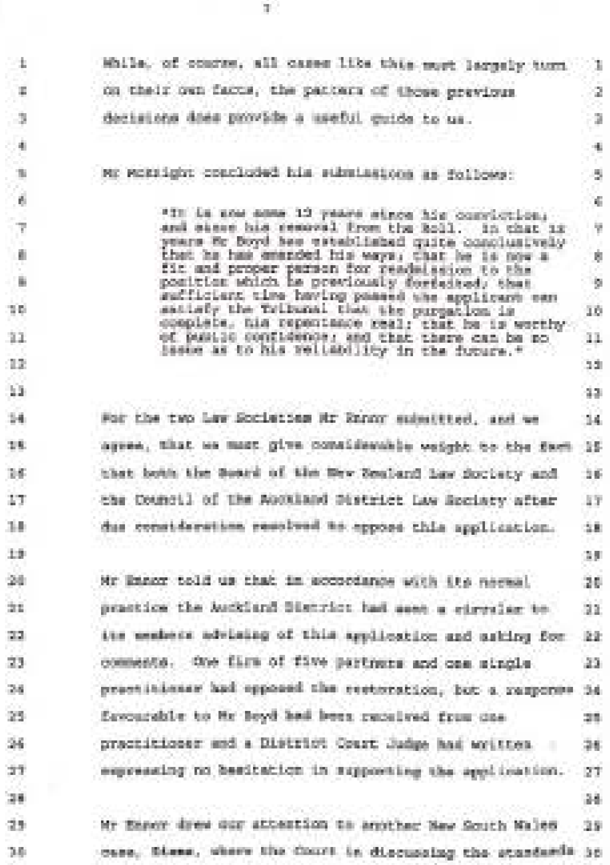

While, of course, all cases like this must largely turn on their own facts, the pattern of those previous decisions does provide a useful guide to us.

Mr McKnight concluded his submissions as follows:

> "It is now some 17 years since his conviction, and since his removal from the Roll. In that 17 years Mr Boyd has established quite conclusively that he has amended his ways; that he is now a fit and proper person for readmission to the position which he previously forfeited; that sufficient time having passed the applicant can satisfy the Tribunal that the purgation is complete, his repentance real; that he is worthy of public confidence; and that there can be no issue as to his reliability in the future."

For the two Law Societies Mr Ennor submitted, and we agree, that we must give considerable weight to the fact that both the Board of the New Zealand Law Society and the Council of the Auckland District Law Society after due consideration resolved to oppose this application.

Mr Ennor told us that in accordance with its normal practice the Auckland District had sent a circular to its members advising of this application and asking for comments. One firm of five partners and one single practitioner had opposed the restoration, but a response favourable to Mr Boyd had been received from one practitioner and a District Court Judge had written expressing no hesitation in supporting the application.

Mr Ennor drew our attention to another New South Wales case, **Ziems**, where the Court in discussing the standards

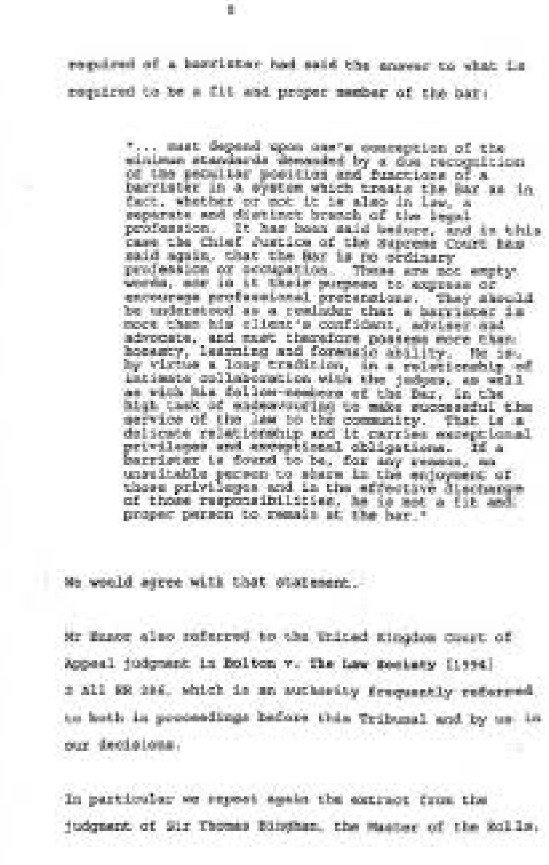

required of a barrister had said the answer to what is required to be a fit and proper member of the bar:

> "... must depend upon one's conception of the minimum standards demanded by a due recognition of the peculiar position and functions of a barrister in a system which treats the Bar as in fact, whether or not it is also in law, a separate and distinct branch of the legal profession. It has been said before, and in this case the Chief Justice of the Supreme Court has said again, that the Bar is no ordinary profession or occupation. These are not empty words, nor is it their purpose to express or encourage professional pretensions. They should be understood as a reminder that a barrister is more than his client's confidant, adviser and advocate, and must therefore possess more than honesty, learning and forensic ability. He is, by virtue a long tradition, in a relationship of intimate collaboration with the judges, as well as with his fellow-members of the Bar, in the high task of endeavouring to make successful the service of the law to the community. That is a delicate relationship and it carries exceptional privileges and exceptional obligations. If a barrister is found to be, for any reason, an unsuitable person to share in the enjoyment of those privileges and in the effective discharge of those responsibilities, he is not a fit and proper person to remain at the bar."

We would agree with that statement.

Mr Ennor also referred to the United Kingdom Court of Appeal judgment in **Bolton v. The Law Society** [1994] 2 All ER 486, which is an authority frequently referred to both in proceedings before this Tribunal and by us in our decisions.

In particular we repeat again the extract from the judgment of Sir Thomas Bingham, the Master of the Rolls,

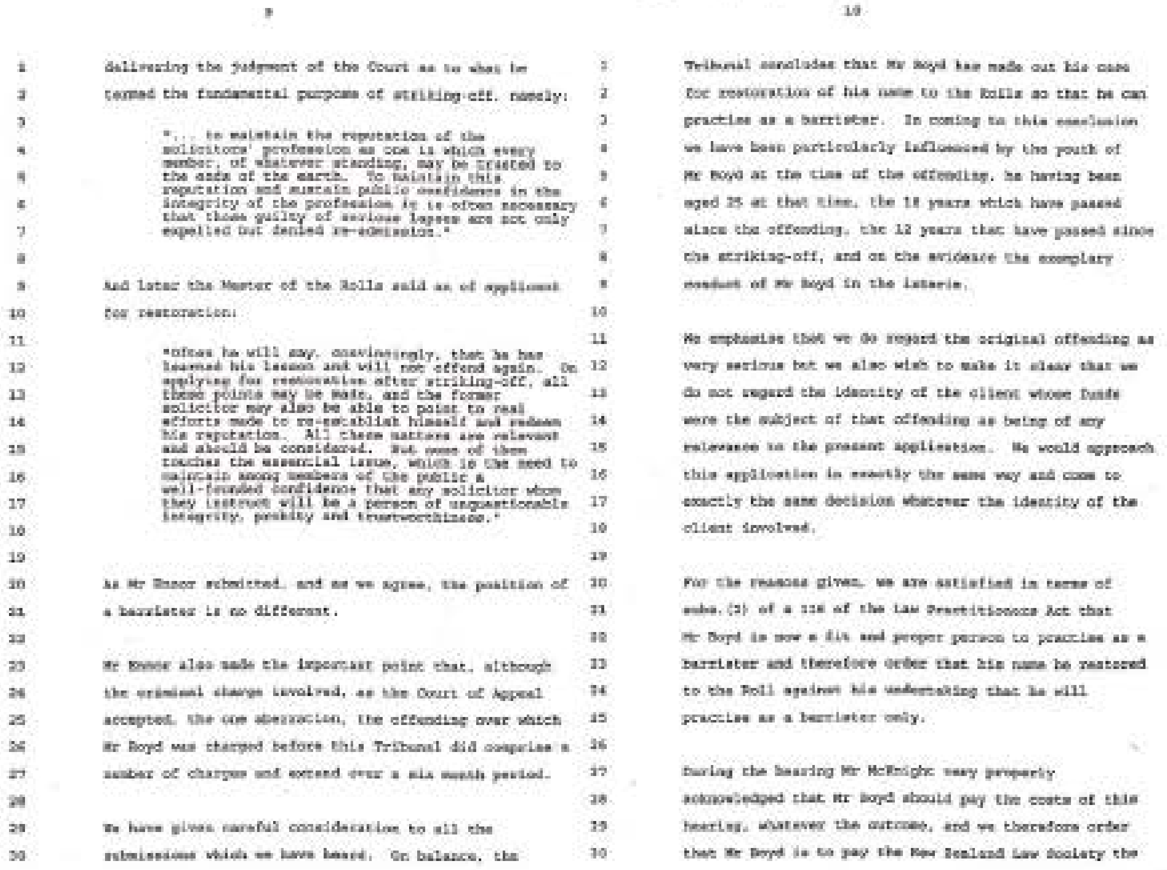

delivering the judgment of the Court as to what he termed the fundamental purpose of striking-off, namely:

> "... to maintain the reputation of the solicitors' profession as one in which every member, of whatever standing, may be trusted to the ends of the earth. To maintain this reputation and sustain public confidence in the integrity of the profession it is often necessary that those guilty of serious lapses are not only expelled but denied re-admission."

And later the Master of the Rolls said as of applicant for restoration:

> "Often he will say, convincingly, that he has learned his lesson and will not offend again. On applying for restoration after striking-off, all these points may be made, and the former solicitor may also be able to point to real efforts made to re-establish himself and redeem his reputation. All these matters are relevant and should be considered. But none of them touches the essential issue, which is the need to maintain among members of the public a well-founded confidence that any solicitor whom they instruct will be a person of unquestionable integrity, probity and trustworthiness."

As Mr Ennor submitted, and as we agree, the position of a barrister is no different.

Mr Ennor also made the important point that, although the criminal charge involved, as the Court of Appeal accepted, the one aberration, the offending over which Mr Boyd was charged before this Tribunal did comprise a number of charges and extend over a six month period.

We have given careful consideration to all the submissions which we have heard. On balance, the

Tribunal concludes that Mr Boyd has made out his case for restoration of his name to the Rolls so that he can practise as a barrister. In coming to this conclusion we have been particularly influenced by the youth of Mr Boyd at the time of the offending, he having been aged 25 at that time, the 18 years which have passed since the offending, the 12 years that have passed since the striking-off, and on the evidence the exemplary conduct of Mr Boyd in the interim.

We emphasise that we do regard the original offending as very serious but we also wish to make it clear that we do not regard the identity of the client whose funds were the subject of that offending as being of any relevance to the present application. We would approach this application in exactly the same way and come to exactly the same decision whatever the identity of the client involved.

For the reasons given, we are satisfied in terms of subs.(3) of s 118 of the Law Practitioners Act that Mr Boyd is now a fit and proper person to practise as a barrister and therefore order that his name be restored to the Roll against his undertaking that he will practise as a barrister only.

During the hearing Mr McKnight very properly acknowledged that Mr Boyd should pay the costs of this hearing, whatever the outcome, and we therefore order that Mr Boyd is to pay the New Zealand Law Society the

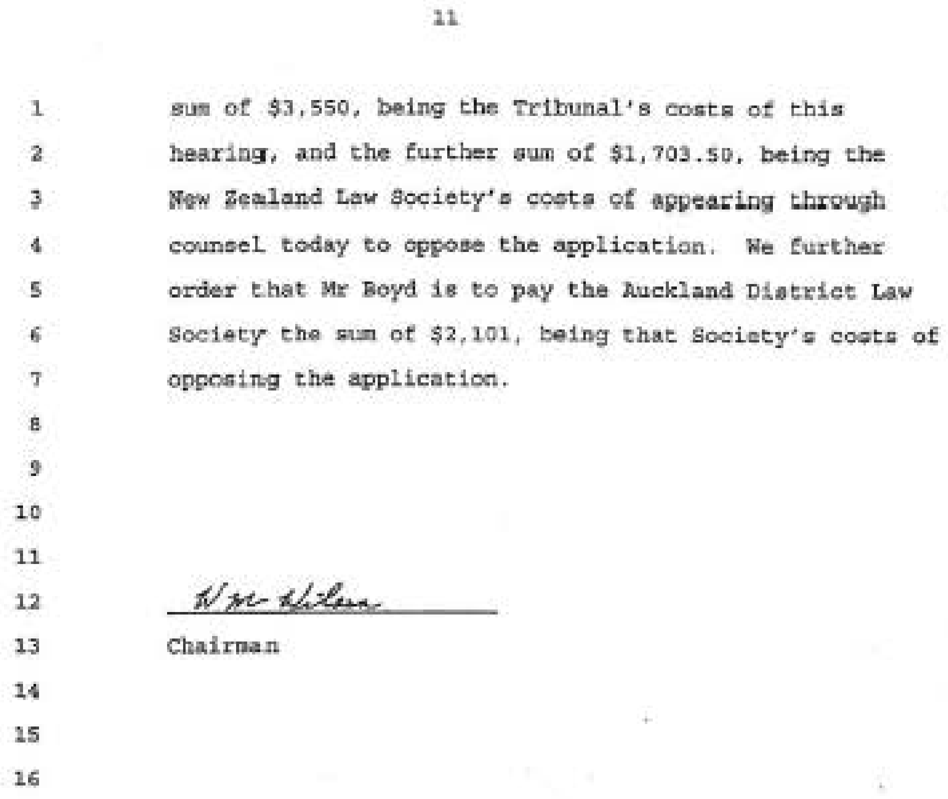

sum of $3,550, being the Tribunal's costs of this hearing, and the further sum of $1,703.50, being the New Zealand Law Society's costs of appearing through counsel today to oppose the application. We further order that Mr Boyd is to pay the Auckland District Law Society the sum of $2,101, being that Society's costs of opposing the application.

W M Wilson

Chairman

Terry Clark's Okaito Road mansion was built right on Okiato Point, Opua, in the Bay of Island's.

The mansion and caretaker's house somehow remained invisible for years.

Terry Clark's shorefront mansion was designed by John Leary, brother of Eb Leary, partner of Peter Williams. It cost NZ$500,000 when surrounding buildings were shacks – so it stuck out like dogs balls.

The mansion had a walkthrough champagne fridge to a slide through a tunnel down to the boatshed. Now there's a drive.

Terry Clark, a.k.a. Terence Alexander Sinclair would turn up in his white Jaguar XJS coupé and shag Peter Williams' junior lawyer Karen Soich on the jetty below the Caretaker's house while the police watched.

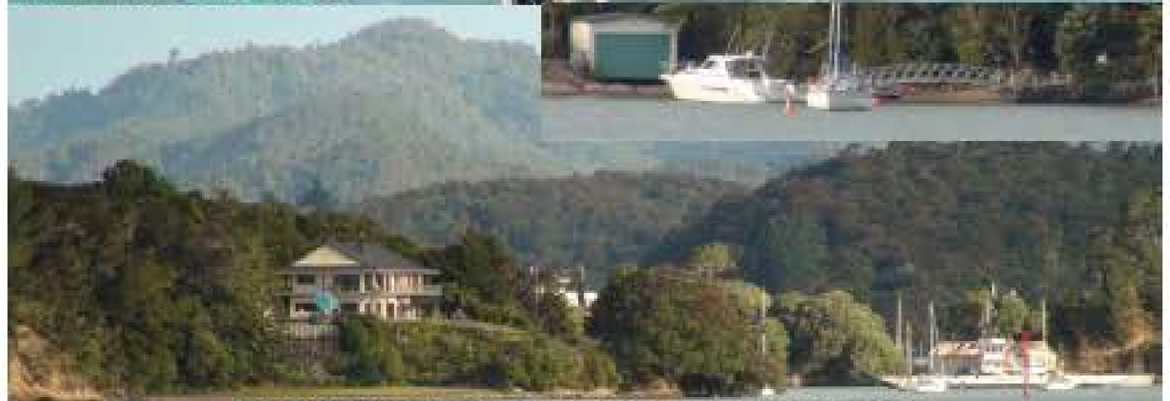

The Okaito Road Mansion, Caretaker's house, boatshed and jetty are visible from the Opua-to-Russell Car Ferry which runs continuously 15 hours a day.

But wait, there's more . . .

The pattern of financial assassinations continues, full of inside knowledge. This could be a complete coincidence but it is interesting that PAWQC's paperwork is exactly the same as another of my client, Lawrence Chan – both of them non-paying. I'm only a layman and not supposed to notice or know anything, but it would appear that the aged legal eagle has a young Asian compatriate which is completely in accordance with the principles of government in New Zealand which Helen Clark KGB laid down just before she escaped to the United Nations, the day before Taito Phillip Field and my cases were heard on 20 April 2009. It could be just an interesting coincidence, but . . .

Lawrence Chan is a restauranteur in the posh viaduct in Auckland Harbour. It's where the America's Cup was held in 2000 and 2003. Lawrence Chan was introduced to me by Mark Maiden (former social pages dude and Washworld car valet owner). I had encouraged Mark Maiden to get off the P and considered him clean after two years as he'd lost his facial tick. He had also bought many books off me, *The Family Court and Other Experiments*, and *Blackmailer's Guide*, about nine of each. So he was kind of a friend, and friends are supposed to do you right.

He introduced me to Lawrence Chan and we sat down at his restaurant Umi at lunchtime on 1 April 2008. Mark Maiden then launched into his family history, quite excitedly: "My father was a CIA cleaner. He used to clean up the murder sites after the targets had been killed. Got enormous amounts for it and left us with a big trust fund. I didn't realise until very recently that he had two families, two wives in two different suburbs, and two sets of children.[37] I didn't realise I had a half-brother until recently and here he is." And across the table was his simliar stocky built tan-skinned half-brother with enough bangles and bling to make him Greek – smiling like a family reunion that hasn't gone wrong yet.

Then Mark Maiden intones that Lawrence Chan is Yakuza,[38] but I looked at the fourth finger on his left hand and it wasn't missing. I then asked him to read out my phone number in Yakuza and he couldn't. Mark also said Lawrence was of Chinese descent and went to Auckland Grammar School, so I thought it was Mark Maiden boosting up the situation which he has a tendency to do – boys at play?

So I took the brief from Lawrence Chan and cut the contract. Instead of Chan providing the existing drawings, there weren't any, so I measured the restaurant. Instead paying the $1000 deposit, it came two weeks later. Instead of limited works, they got extended; instead of one option, there were two; instead of him searching the site file at the Auckland City Council, I did; instead of him supplying the fire engineers, I did it, and instead of making $1000 payment at each meeting, it only happened once. I also measured and modelled his chairs for the proposed teppanyaki flaming table and produced many photoreal virtual designs.(**See Attachment "O"**, Blacklisting, Hobbling and Boiler-Plating, p. 21).

It was beginning to look like a rort, but I had something of a friend doing the introductions.

Upon closer reflection, this was the son of a CIA agent, an accessory to multiple murders, who had had raised two slighlty schizophrenic families simultaneously, a former meth-using socialite who's word could be trusted as far as his next escape. Mark Maiden was to become 'Perjury Boy' in support of his criminal buddy Lawrence Chan, who was to side with Peter Williams, all of them involved in drugs and slavery, and all with the protection of the Chief Justice Sian Elias as she 'Perverted the Course of Justice' to ensure the judiciary would not and could not settle a debt . . . and that criminals would not have to pay non-criminals.

Sian Elias' justice is no justice at all. It is mafia justice – no payment followed by murder.

---

[37] Spymaster: "Only two. I thought it was de rigueur to have at least 10 – like the founder of DHL."

[38] "Yakuza": tightly knit Japanese criminal organisation with a ritualistic, strict code of honor, or any Jap gangster.

Sian Elias had long been compromised by the Chinese. She had stolen half a billion dollars in 1989 off her husband which was due to the Chinese. China threatened to declare war on New Zealand. The Mossad intervened and brokered a deal whereby Sian would keep the money and China would be allowed to invade New Zealand via immigration from 1991. Any Chinese who know this get legal favours. The Chinese commit more murders and deal more P than anyone else in New Zealand, but are rarely charged, the public are rarely notified, they almost always get off, and in many cases, they merely sit untried in jail for eight years, not deported back to China where they would be executed. To top off the scam, Sian's husband Hugh Fletcher bribed Prime Minister Jenny Shipley (whose daughter was convicted of accessory to beheading murders) and Helen Clark KGB who went on to murder historian Michael King in conjunction with Sian Elias, Hugh Fletcher and Mossad staff at the University of Auckland . . . quickly followed by Hugh's suprise out-of-nowhere promotion to Chancellor there.

So the Chinese get legal favours from the Jewish Sian Elias. Chief Justice Sian Elias is a classic for Perverting the Course of Justice. For her, it's like running the steeple chase every day: "Oh, look, another hedge. We'll just jump this one and let the others crash into it."

Asians are terrible payers. The business rule in Auckland is: 'Get the full amount while you're doing the work, and if you get the final payment, it's a bonus!'

Before I learnt this very practical rule, I was doing work for two Asians. Both were stalling payments, so I issued Statutory Demands on both. The first got his accountant to check with me and found all the 'Variation Orders' and my numbers in order. This Asian client then had his lawyers phone me in the last hour before the documents could be lodged to close the company down. So I went around, picked up the cheque and it bounced twice, but cleared the third time.

Lawrence Chan was different, far more complex. A Statutory Demand was issued on his company Japanese Restaurant Holdings Limited on 1 July 2008. He ran out of time, then had his crooked lawyers Hesketh Henry – who specialise in revenge asset stripping after a wife did the same to one of their partners[39] – go to the High Court on 29 August 2008, without notifying me, and try to get the case thrown out. Lucky for me, a High Court lawyer friend was there on the day, saw the list, phoned me, I rushed in, and he represented me. Hesketh Henry couldn't produce an Affidavit of Service that notified me of the hearing, their appeal was thrown out, they were awarded no costs (Lawrence Chan had to pay them $2,000), they were slapped over the wrist with a wet bus ticket, and I was allowed to approach the High Court again to have Lawrence Chan's company closed down.

I then attempted to take Lawrence Chan to the District Court to recover the debt, which was then around $12,000.

Peter Williams QC hadn't paid me $5,625.00 for four years, so I had a case against him lodged in the Disputes Tribunal on 5 September 2008. These were heard on 24 October, 21 November and 5 December 2008. Peter Williams QC is a dedicated non-payer, heavily involved in drugs from the 1970s on, and slavery, as confirmed by his own contract. Williams is an active rorter, especially in the building development business.

I used to get the inside story on what Williams was up to from Intelligence sources. I regularly didn't believe these, as they were so outrageous, but they all turned out to be true.

Rather than pay the $5,625 bill, Williams has spent around $100,000 of his time and money 'Perverting the Course of Justice' by getting the Chief Justice Sian Elias to intervene, hiring a private investigator to investigate me, and then a second one, then hiring a retired judge to investigate my background for six months.

Meanwhile, Peter Preece, a civilian in Police Forensics had examined my history and said:

---

[39] The partner ended up labouring in a Newmarket plastics factory where he spilled the beans to his workmate.

"He's clean. Seems like a nice guy". That wasn't good enough for Williams, so he tried to dig up shit, and in the process, he dug himself a deeper hole. Talk about shooting blanks.

You've got to wonder why a Queen's Counsel lawyer wouldn't pay a small bill?

You've got to wonder why a Queen's Counsel is so dedicated to protecting his reputation?

You've got to wonder why a Queen's Counsel would charge for defamation rather than pay a bill, and try and get as many other people onto his bandwagon with him? Simple . . . Peter Williams is a mafia boss. He is the man behind Mr Asia. Most of the thinking lawyers of New Zealand know this, and I've had conversations with them to this affect, as recently as 1 August 2009 while all us parents waved our children onto the Auckland Grammar School Ball bus. I gave them a copy of *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide* and since then they've remembered which side their bread is buttered on and closed ranks.

It also appears that Williams is behind the judiciary's series of unfavourable non-payments in all of my court cases since I won against James Davern in 1993, then exposed the trial head of the Disputes Tribunal as a drug user in January 1994.

I presented my case against Williams in the Disputes Tribunal ("D/T") first on 24 October 2008. Then it was Peter Williams' turn.

On 21 November, Williams had a horde of witnesses outside. By introducing them, he can take up time and avoid testifying. Indeed, Williams has never testified. He merely goes on and on in a processional distraction of oblique non sequiturs in order to avoid central issues like his car theft and conviction, supplying a twin-tailed rabbit suit for Prince Philip at Moose Lodge, Lake Rotoiti, Rotorua, 1–6 January 1954; defending James Davern from manslaughter when Davern had confessed to it, thus getting *Fidelis*; protecting Len Demlar from being a suspect, tried or convicted of the Crewe murders; defending Mr Asia; very much involved in his 40-odd murders; ending up with Mr Asia's money, twice; and being the financial assassin of Greg Hallett ever since Hallett beat Davern in 1993 and got paid.

Surely, surely, this is the life's work of a mafia boss. Erroneously, Williams is a QC lawyer, and it's debateable whether he earnt it, bribed his way with Mr Asia's money, or bribed other lawyers and judges to vote for him once he had compromised them, either through financial bribes, shame bribes, or both.

Anyway, on 21 November 2008, the D/T referee ruled that none of Williams' witnesses had anything to do with the case. Kevin William Brett, the 40-year-old virgin and Christian sycophant turned up with a young mother and baby. Neither were his; Williams' partner Heeni Phillips turned up without her prozac for her mental instability and ranted like a witch, who's modern day handle is 'feminist'; the Cardboard Cardigan Chris Reed (Williams' lawyer) turned up, and as ususal, failed to make an impression other than 'there is too much lemon yellow in the world'; and Lawrence Chan turned up, was made to wait outside, and never let in, because his case was unrelated to my case . . . according to D/T Referee Benson.

Referee Benson was about to rule in my favour when Williams asked for another day to cross-examine Hallett. That never happened. We turned up on 5 December 2008. Referee Benson wouldn't even begin the hearing. He cited that Williams reading out of *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide* about himself: "Peter Williams QC? He's so tight nuns use his arsehole as a reference" and Williams raising the issue that he had a lot to lose if Hallett won – like his reputation – meant that the case was to be transferred to the District Court.

In reality, Williams had contacted Chief Justice Sian Elias who 'Perverted the Course of Justice' and contacted Referee Benson on 2 December 2008 and said: 'This case must be transferred to the District Court, here's how you do it . . .' More Intelligence info. Peter Williams then went judge shopping. Lawyers do this a lot. QC lawyers do this more than other lawyers.

By the first Judicial Conference, Peter Williams hadn't found his bought judge (the classically trained Judge Hubble wouldn't do), so Williams didn't turn up, nor did his Cardboard Cardigan Chris Reid, whose email is "c.weed@xtra.co.nz". His friend, Judge Hubble pencilled in another conference date and Judge M E Perkins turned up, never seen by the Assistant Registrar in the Auckland Courts before. He too had been arranged by Sian Elias in another instance of 'Perverting the Course of Justice'. Hallett wasn't given a chance to speak and Judge M E Perkins threatened Hallett with lock-up when he tried. So it was a Judictatorship.

Anyway, Lawrence Chan obviously had an agreement with Williams that he would turn up as long as Williams gave him advice on how to avoid paying Hallett et al. This advice was very involved and came with all the experience of a mafia boss avoiding payment, and avoiding being charged or named. So here's what Lawrence Chan did.

On 1 July 2008, HDSL placed a Statutory Demand on JRH.[40]

On 15 July 2008, Lawrence Chan swore in the High Court that he was a director of JRH: "JRH is solvent. It is trading profitably and is able to pay its debts when they fall due."

On 23 July 2008, Chan amended the 120 JRH share parcels from 95 in Lawrence Chan to 1 in Lawrence Chan and 94 in the Chan Family Trust. (Illegal as a non-director?)

On 20 August 2008, Chan resigned as a director of JRH backdated to 1 July 2008.

On 1 October 2008, Lawrence Chan was reappointed as a Director of JRH.

On 22 January 2009 JRH was placed in receivership by StaplesRodway.

On 23 January 2009, JRH was put into liquidation by PriceWaterhouseCoopers.

Lawrence Chan's company JRH owed approximately $700,000, accruing since at least 18 December 2007. This included some $200,000+ in overdue back taxes.

On 23 January 2009, receivers Staples Rodway went into JRH and removed Lawrence Chan on the first day: "He was not a good manager and was not required".

Chan's friends at Portofino nextdoor then bought UMI restaurant (not JRH, but fronting as UMI) and continued to run it, employing Lawrence Chan as the manager.

Effectively Lawrence Chan had wiped $725,000 of debt. All he has to do now to buy the business off his friends at Portofino is pay them the $61,000 for the "in-situ" assetts – the fit-out chattels . . . This appears to be an in-house con.

The liquidators PriceWaterhouseCoopers are at a loss to understand how anyone could get into so much debt with such a small restautant – the debt being larger than the value of the restaurant including chattels, goodwill (none), lease value, and potential income.

So, the main point is, once I'd spent a year in the courts, and spent all this trashy legal money ($4,000), there was nothing at the end of the rainbow, no $18,000.00. Stinks of Peter Williams again, and just goes to show the calibre of his witnesses – the same as the calibre of his legal associates, the same as the calibre of his friends, and the same as the calibre of his reputation – trashy stink.

But wait, it gets worse. Chan's lawyers Hesketh Henry were outed as corrupt practitioners of the law, so Chan found a new lawyer. Out of time, on 16 December 2008, Lawrence Chan lodged a late defense with his new lawyer. Any guesses! . . . the Cardboard Cardigan, c.weed Chris Reid who purposefully mailed this defense to the wrong address, some six years old, and having been given the correct address three months prior, in court. Not only that, but Lawrence Chan's defense was exactly the same as Peter Williams' defense.

So here they are, as thick as thieves . . .

---

[40] 'HDSL' is Hallett Design Solutions Limited | 'JRH' is Japanese Restaurant Holdings Limited a.k.a. Umi.

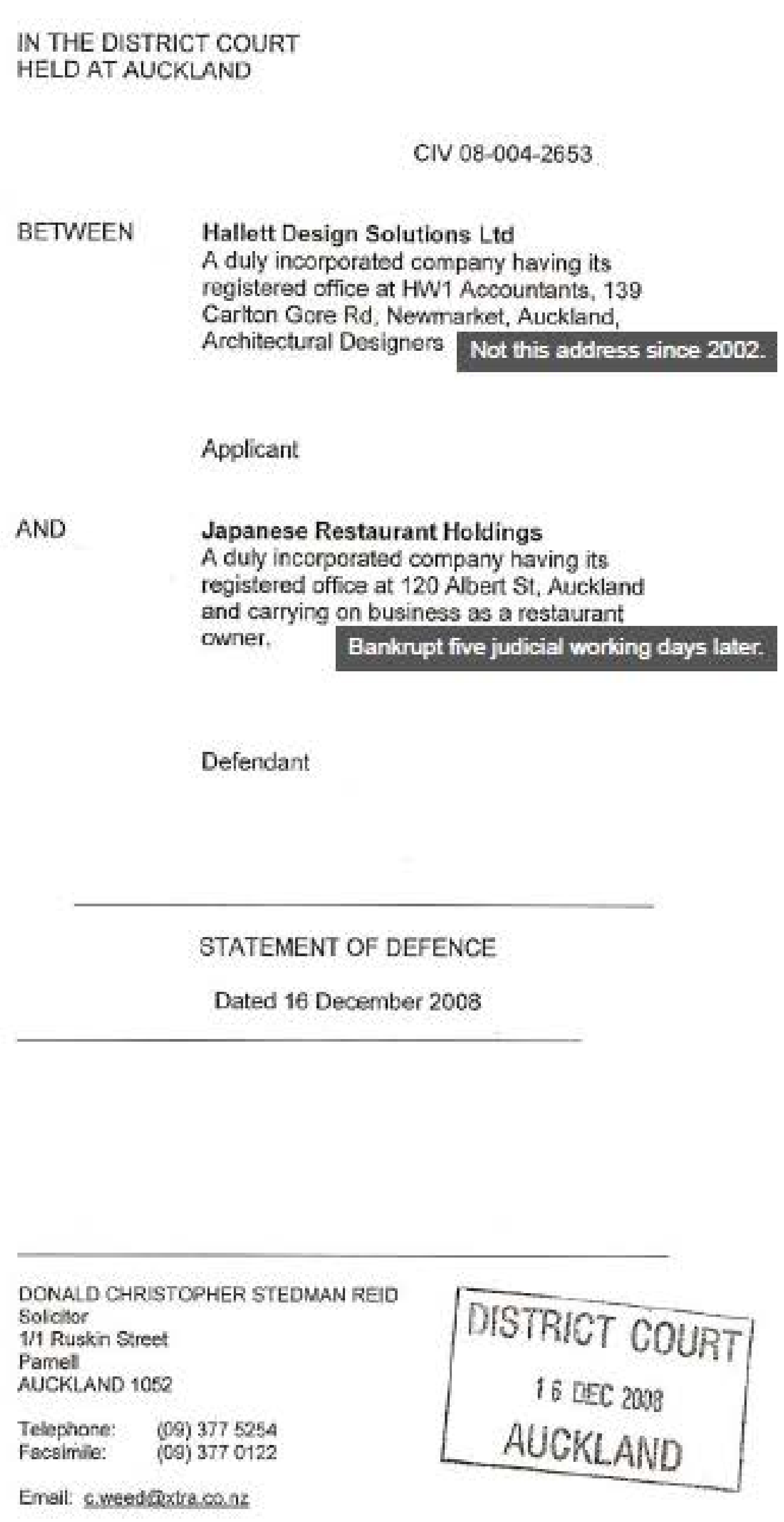

IN THE DISTRICT COURT
HELD AT AUCKLAND

CIV 08-004-2653

BETWEEN **Hallett Design Solutions Ltd**
A duly incorporated company having its
registered office at HW1 Accountants, 139
Carlton Gore Rd, Newmarket, Auckland,
Architectural Designers

Not this address since 2002.

Applicant

AND **Japanese Restaurant Holdings**
A duly incorporated company having its
registered office at 120 Albert St, Auckland
and carrying on business as a restaurant
owner.

Bankrupt five judicial working days later.

Defendant

STATEMENT OF DEFENCE

Dated 16 December 2008

DONALD CHRISTOPHER STEDMAN REID
Solicitor
1/1 Ruskin Street
Parnell
AUCKLAND 1052

Telephone: (09) 377 5254
Facsimile: (09) 377 0122

Email: c.weed@xtra.co.nz

DISTRICT COURT
16 DEC 2008
AUCKLAND

The defendant says:

1. That he denies each and every allegation contained in the statement of claim filed herein.

2. That on the 1st day of April 2008 the applicant and the defendant made an oral agreement whereby the applicant agreed to obtain council consent to some alterations to the Umi restaurant in consideration of the sum of $2,500 plus GST being paid to him by the defendant.

3. That the applicant has neglected to obtain the said council consent.

4. The applicant has delivered to the defendant plans which have not been requested and were of no use to the defendant.

5. That the applicant has no credibility and in particular is the author of a book entitled: *New Zealand - A Blackmailers Guide*. This book is a recital of false facts relating to a large number of prominent New Zealanders including Rt Hon Helen Clarke MP, Hon Margaret Wilson, Hon Dame Silvia Cartwright, Angela D'Audney, Mother Aubert, Rt Hon David Lange, Patrick Mahoney, Sir Peter Blake, Rt Hon Norman Kirk, Charles Sturt, Paul Holmes, Kevin Ryan, QC, Rt Hon Chief Justice Dame Sian Elias, Sir Robert Jones, Brian Edwards, Dame Kiri Te Kanawa, Rt Hon Jenny Shipley, Hon Annette King MP, Sir Roger Douglas, Rt Hon Anand Satyanand, Sir Geoffrey Palmer, Christine Rankin, Judge Williamson, Hon Phil Goff MP, Hon Justice Eichelbaum, Frank Haigh, Hugh Fletcher, Hon John Banks and His Honour Judge Gittos. The book makes serious criminal allegations against each of these people of a most despicable nature including corruption, bribery, drug dealing, paedophilia and numerous other criminal allegations.

This statement of defence is filed by Donald Christopher Stedman Reid of Auckland solicitor, telephone 09 377 5254 facsimile 09 377-0122 and whose address service is at his office at Unit 1, No. 1 Ruskin Street, Parnell, Auckland 1052. Service will be accepted by way of facsimile to the above number or by way of e-mail to c.weed@xtra.co.nz.

Lawrence Chan, director of Japanese Restaurant Holdings Limited went into liquidation and receivership 37 days later.

This was the exact layout,
so I've left it as blank as
Chris Reid's
legal practise,
minus the hors d'œuvre.

High Court lawyer, Lawrence Herzog worked on this case, supposedly for my benefit, but there wasn't any – only sabotage. It turns out that Herzog's role is running around for the Chief Jewstess Sian Elias finding out what cases are about and reporting back four times a week. Sian then decides who will win and lose according to her agenda (zionist pro-pederast, pro-drugs, pro-slavery, pro-war) – then dictates the outcomes to the judges. Herzog then gives the opposite feedback is to his clients telling the losers they will win. Zionist attacks come on all fronts. That's how you recognise a zionist attack. They specialise in destroying *all* relationships simultaneously, including preventing the breeding of any of their critics. So Lawrence Herzog is a zionist liason officer. (He will also talk big, seduce your woman, encourage her to steal the ring, then walk.)

| It's not a judiciary | Get over it | It's a zionist social engineering movement |

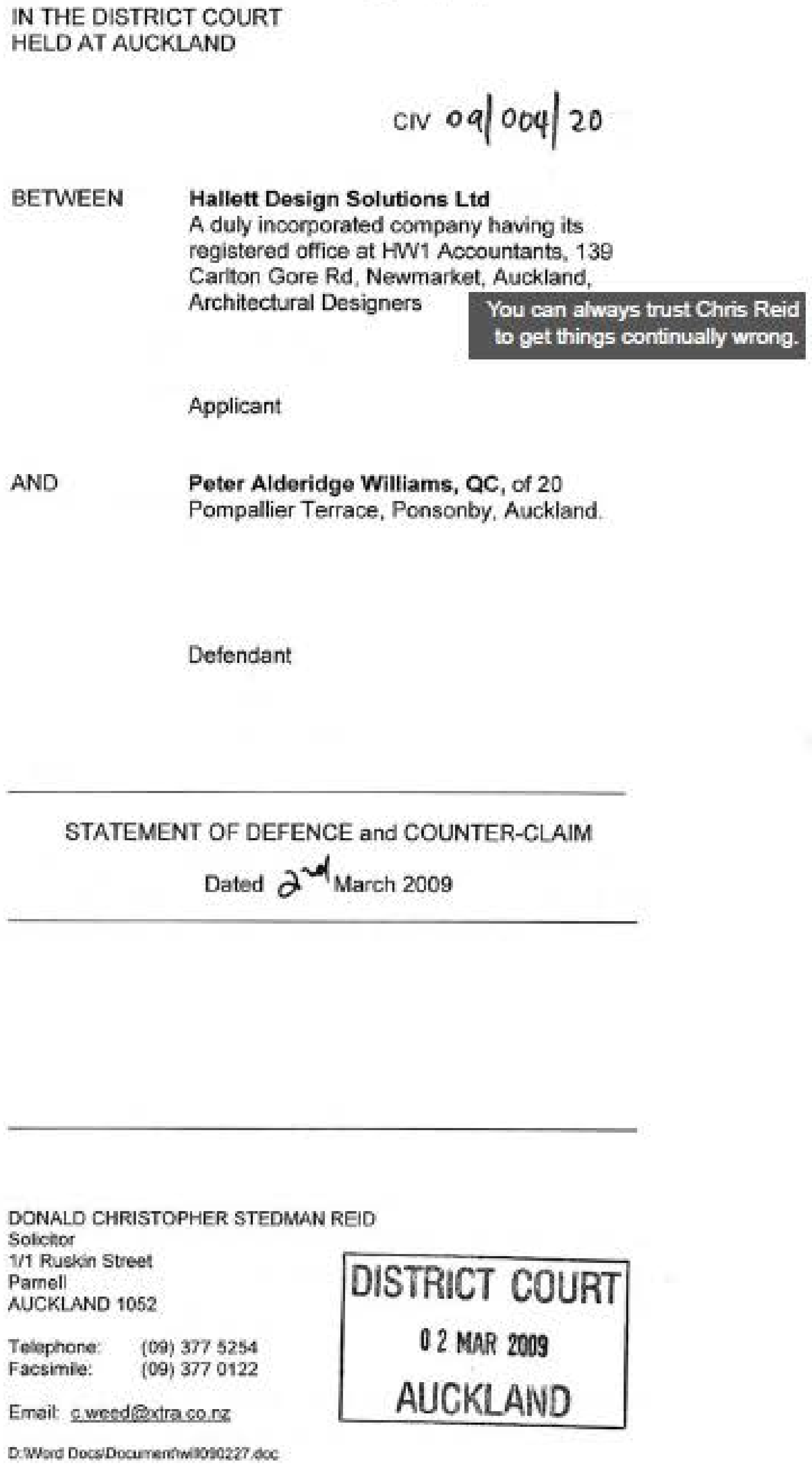

IN THE DISTRICT COURT
HELD AT AUCKLAND

CIV 09/004/20

BETWEEN **Hallett Design Solutions Ltd**
A duly incorporated company having its
registered office at HW1 Accountants, 139
Carlton Gore Rd, Newmarket, Auckland,
Architectural Designers

You can always trust Chris Reid to get things continually wrong.

Applicant

AND **Peter Alderidge Williams, QC,** of 20
Pompallier Terrace, Ponsonby, Auckland.

Defendant

STATEMENT OF DEFENCE and COUNTER-CLAIM

Dated 2nd March 2009

DONALD CHRISTOPHER STEDMAN REID
Solicitor
1/1 Ruskin Street
Parnell
AUCKLAND 1052

Telephone: (09) 377 5254
Facsimile: (09) 377 0122

Email: c.weed@xtra.co.nz

D:\Word Docs\Document\will090227.doc

DISTRICT COURT
02 MAR 2009
AUCKLAND

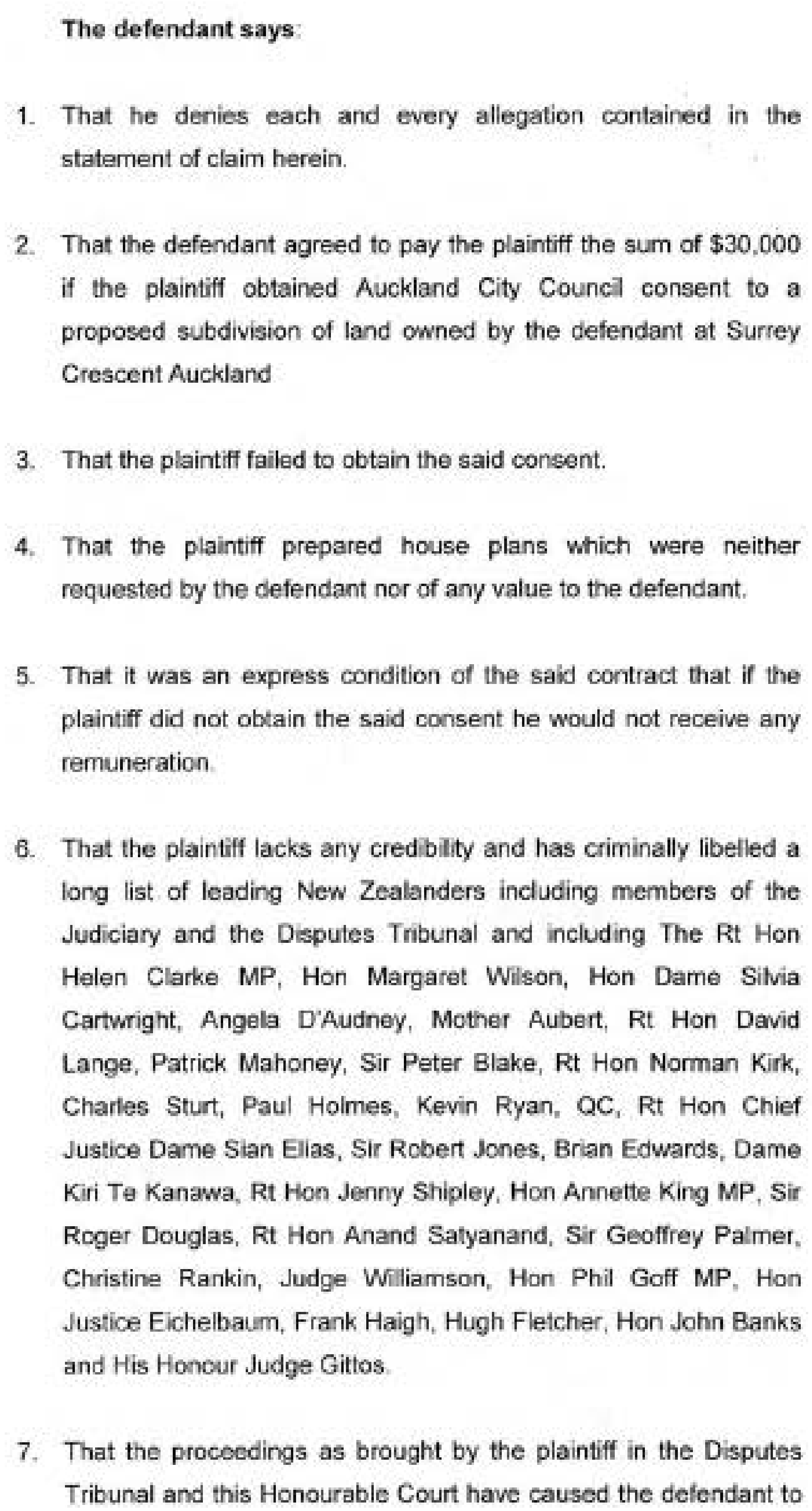

The defendant says:

1. That he denies each and every allegation contained in the statement of claim herein.

2. That the defendant agreed to pay the plaintiff the sum of $30,000 if the plaintiff obtained Auckland City Council consent to a proposed subdivision of land owned by the defendant at Surrey Crescent Auckland

3. That the plaintiff failed to obtain the said consent.

4. That the plaintiff prepared house plans which were neither requested by the defendant nor of any value to the defendant.

5. That it was an express condition of the said contract that if the plaintiff did not obtain the said consent he would not receive any remuneration.

6. That the plaintiff lacks any credibility and has criminally libelled a long list of leading New Zealanders including members of the Judiciary and the Disputes Tribunal and including The Rt Hon Helen Clarke MP, Hon Margaret Wilson, Hon Dame Silvia Cartwright, Angela D'Audney, Mother Aubert, Rt Hon David Lange, Patrick Mahoney, Sir Peter Blake, Rt Hon Norman Kirk, Charles Sturt, Paul Holmes, Kevin Ryan, QC, Rt Hon Chief Justice Dame Sian Elias, Sir Robert Jones, Brian Edwards, Dame Kiri Te Kanawa, Rt Hon Jenny Shipley, Hon Annette King MP, Sir Roger Douglas, Rt Hon Anand Satyanand, Sir Geoffrey Palmer, Christine Rankin, Judge Williamson, Hon Phil Goff MP, Hon Justice Eichelbaum, Frank Haigh, Hugh Fletcher, Hon John Banks and His Honour Judge Gittos.

7. That the proceedings as brought by the plaintiff in the Disputes Tribunal and this Honourable Court have caused the defendant to

spend a large amount of his professional time replying to the outrageous lies by the plaintiff.

8. The defendant has also been compelled to call professional witnesses.

9. The plaintiff physically assaulted a professional defence witness, namely, Christopher Reid, and has made untrue but hurtful allegations against other defence witnesses.

. . . Cardboard Cardigan, 40-year-old virgin, Prozac Phillips, bisexual MI-6 heroin trafficker etc.

10. The plaintiff's conduct throughout these proceedings has been shameful and deceitful.

You mean the Defendant PAWQC.

11. The plaintiff has in a similar fashion endeavoured to dishonestly obtain money from several other people by providing building plans without instructions and subsequently threatening to sue for fees he is not entitled to.

Oh! You mean Lawrence Chan, Peter. No one else was even mentioned.

The defendant therefore counterclaims against the plaintiff for judgment against the plaintiff as follows:

a. The sum of Twenty Thousand Dollars ($20,000.00) for the defendant's professional time expended as aforesaid;

b. A further sum to be assessed for the costs of the defendant's witnesses;

c. Any further or other relief that this Honourable Court deems just and equitable.

This statement of defence and counter-claim is filed by Donald Christopher Stedman Reid of Auckland, solicitor. Telephone 09 377-5254, facsimile 09 377-0122 and whose address for service is at his office at unit 1, number 1, Ruskin Street, Parnell, Auckland 1052. Service will be accepted by way of facsimile to the above number or by way of e-mail to c.weed@xtra.co.nz

---

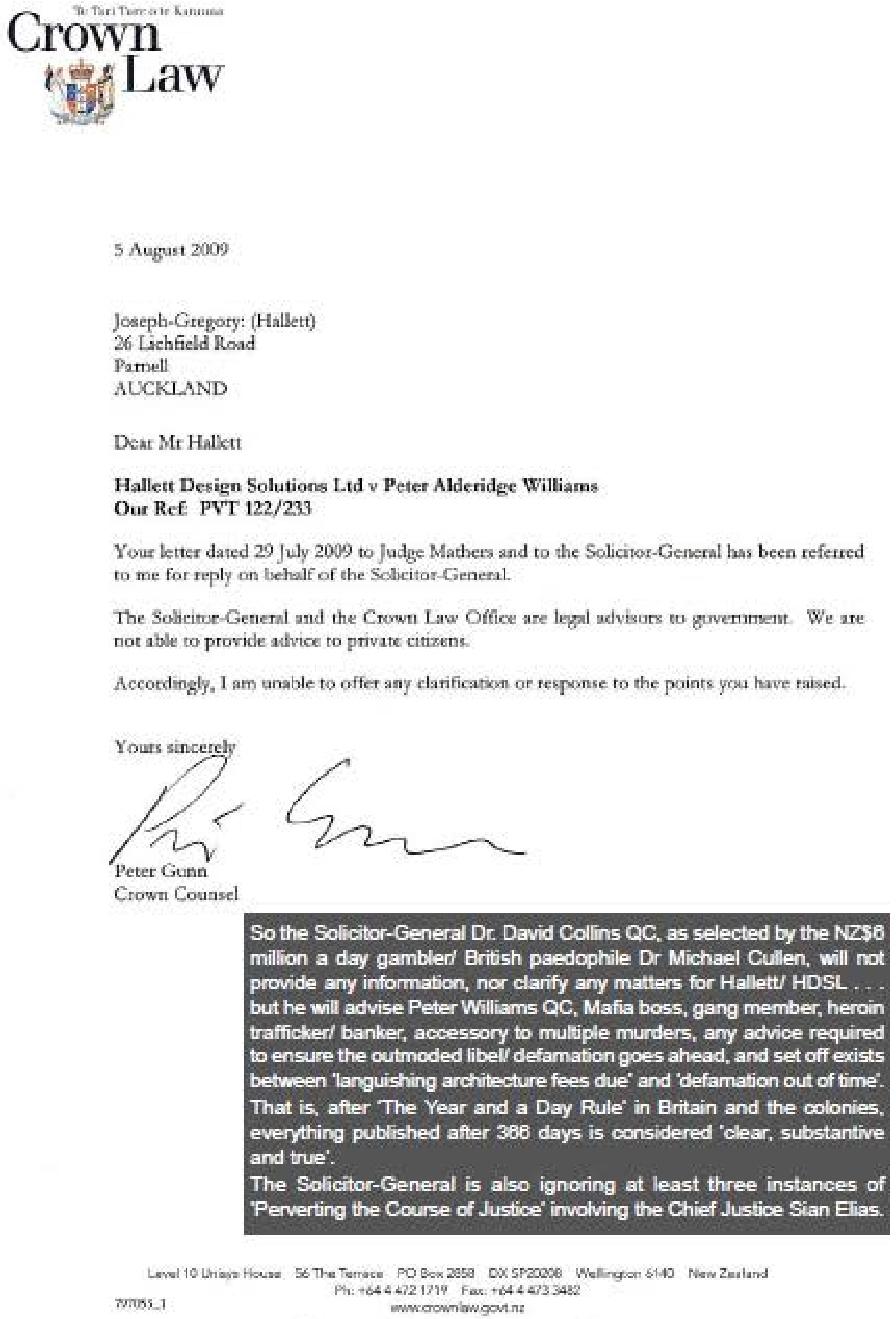

Te Tari Ture o te Karauna
Crown Law

5 August 2009

Joseph-Gregory: (Hallett)
26 Lichfield Road
Parnell
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

Hallett Design Solutions Ltd v Peter Alderidge Williams
Our Ref: PVT 122/233

Your letter dated 29 July 2009 to Judge Mathers and to the Solicitor-General has been referred to me for reply on behalf of the Solicitor-General.

The Solicitor-General and the Crown Law Office are legal advisors to government. We are not able to provide advice to private citizens.

Accordingly, I am unable to offer any clarification or response to the points you have raised.

Yours sincerely

Peter Gunn
Crown Counsel

So the Solicitor-General Dr. David Collins QC, as selected by the NZ$6 million a day gambler/ British paedophile Dr Michael Cullen, will not provide any information, nor clarify any matters for Hallett/ HDSL . . . but he will advise Peter Williams QC, Mafia boss, gang member, heroin trafficker/ banker, accessory to multiple murders, any advice required to ensure the outmoded libel/ defamation goes ahead, and set off exists between 'languishing architecture fees due' and 'defamation out of time'. That is, after 'The Year and a Day Rule' in Britain and the colonies, everything published after 366 days is considered 'clear, substantive and true'.
The Solicitor-General is also ignoring at least three instances of 'Perverting the Course of Justice' involving the Chief Justice Sian Elias.

Level 10 Unisys House 56 The Terrace PO Box 2858 DX SP20208 Wellington 6140 New Zealand
Ph: +64 4 472 1719 Fax: +64 4 473 3482
www.crownlaw.govt.nz

797085_1

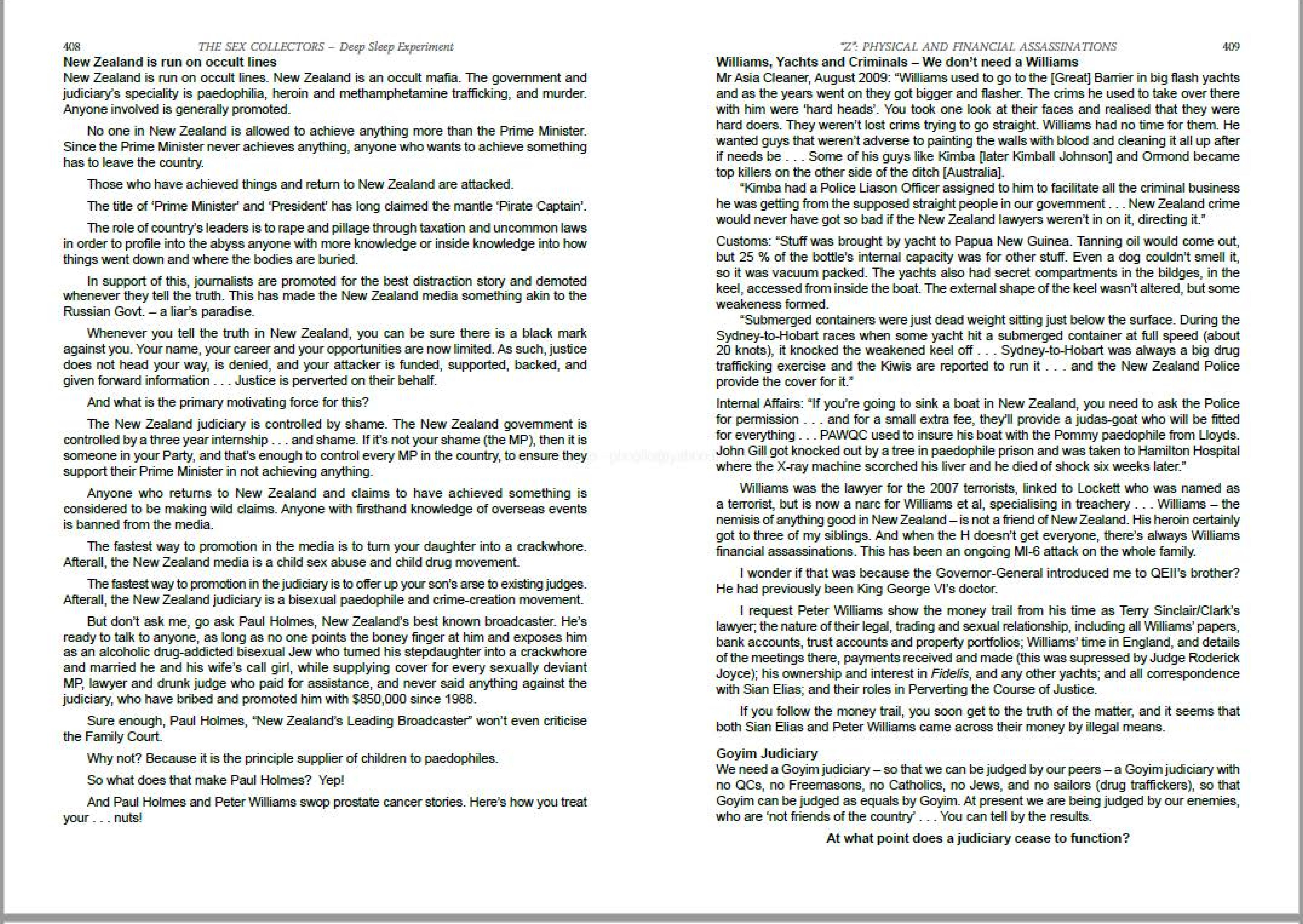

New Zealand is run on occult lines

New Zealand is run on occult lines. New Zealand is an occult mafia. The government and judiciary's speciality is paedophilia, heroin and methamphetamine trafficking, and murder. Anyone involved is generally promoted.

No one in New Zealand is allowed to achieve anything more than the Prime Minister. Since the Prime Minister never achieves anything, anyone who wants to achieve something has to leave the country.

Those who have achieved things and return to New Zealand are attacked.

The title of 'Prime Minister' and 'President' has long claimed the mantle 'Pirate Captain'.

The role of country's leaders is to rape and pillage through taxation and uncommon laws in order to profile into the abyss anyone with more knowledge or inside knowledge into how things went down and where the bodies are buried.

In support of this, journalists are promoted for the best distraction story and demoted whenever they tell the truth. This has made the New Zealand media something akin to the Russian Govt. – a liar's paradise.

Whenever you tell the truth in New Zealand, you can be sure there is a black mark against you. Your name, your career and your opportunities are now limited. As such, justice does not head your way, is denied, and your attacker is funded, supported, backed, and given forward information . . . Justice is perverted on their behalf.

And what is the primary motivating force for this?

The New Zealand judiciary is controlled by shame. The New Zealand government is controlled by a three year internship . . . and shame. If it's not your shame (the MP), then it is someone in your Party, and that's enough to control every MP in the country, to ensure they support their Prime Minister in not achieving anything.

Anyone who returns to New Zealand and claims to have achieved something is considered to be making wild claims. Anyone with firsthand knowledge of overseas events is banned from the media.

The fastest way to promotion in the media is to turn your daughter into a crackwhore. Afterall, the New Zealand media is a child sex abuse and child drug movement.

The fastest way to promotion in the judiciary is to offer up your son's arse to existing judges. Afterall, the New Zealand judiciary is a bisexual paedophile and crime-creation movement.

But don't ask me, go ask Paul Holmes, New Zealand's best known broadcaster. He's ready to talk to anyone, as long as no one points the boney finger at him and exposes him as an alcoholic drug-addicted bisexual Jew who turned his stepdaughter into a crackwhore and married he and his wife's call girl, while supplying cover for every sexually deviant MP, lawyer and drunk judge who paid for assistance, and never said anything against the judiciary, who have bribed and promoted him with $850,000 since 1988.

Sure enough, Paul Holmes, "New Zealand's Leading Broadcaster" won't even criticise the Family Court.

Why not? Because it is the principle supplier of children to paedophiles.

So what does that make Paul Holmes? Yep!

And Paul Holmes and Peter Williams swop prostate cancer stories. Here's how you treat your . . . nuts!

Williams, Yachts and Criminals – We don't need a Williams

Mr Asia Cleaner, August 2009: "Williams used to go to the [Great] Barrier in big flash yachts and as the years went on they got bigger and flasher. The crims he used to take over there with him were 'hard heads'. You took one look at their faces and realised that they were hard doers. They weren't lost crims trying to go straight. Williams had no time for them. He wanted guys that weren't adverse to painting the walls with blood and cleaning it all up after if needs be . . . Some of his guys like Kimba [later Kimball Johnson] and Ormond became top killers on the other side of the ditch [Australia].

"Kimba had a Police Liason Officer assigned to him to facilitate all the criminal business he was getting from the supposed straight people in our government . . . New Zealand crime would never have got so bad if the New Zealand lawyers weren't in on it, directing it."

Customs: "Stuff was brought by yacht to Papua New Guinea. Tanning oil would come out, but 25 % of the bottle's internal capacity was for other stuff. Even a dog couldn't smell it, so it was vacuum packed. The yachts also had secret compartments in the bildges, in the keel, accessed from inside the boat. The external shape of the keel wasn't altered, but some weakeness formed.

"Submerged containers were just dead weight sitting just below the surface. During the Sydney-to-Hobart races when some yacht hit a submerged container at full speed (about 20 knots), it knocked the weakened keel off . . . Sydney-to-Hobart was always a big drug trafficking exercise and the Kiwis are reported to run it . . . and the New Zealand Police provide the cover for it."

Internal Affairs: "If you're going to sink a boat in New Zealand, you need to ask the Police for permission . . . and for a small extra fee, they'll provide a judas-goat who will be fitted for everything . . . PAWQC used to insure his boat with the Pommy paedophile from Lloyds. John Gill got knocked out by a tree in paedophile prison and was taken to Hamilton Hospital where the X-ray machine scorched his liver and he died of shock six weeks later."

Williams was the lawyer for the 2007 terrorists, linked to Lockett who was named as a terrorist, but is now a narc for Williams et al, specialising in treachery . . . Williams – the nemisis of anything good in New Zealand – is not a friend of New Zealand. His heroin certainly got to three of my siblings. And when the H doesn't get everyone, there's always Williams financial assassinations. This has been an ongoing MI-6 attack on the whole family.

I wonder if that was because the Governor-General introduced me to QEII's brother? He had previously been King George VI's doctor.

I request Peter Williams show the money trail from his time as Terry Sinclair/Clark's lawyer; the nature of their legal, trading and sexual relationship, including all Williams' papers, bank accounts, trust accounts and property portfolios; Williams' time in England, and details of the meetings there, payments received and made (this was supressed by Judge Roderick Joyce); his ownership and interest in *Fidelis*, and any other yachts; and all correspondence with Sian Elias; and their roles in Perverting the Course of Justice.

If you follow the money trail, you soon get to the truth of the matter, and it seems that both Sian Elias and Peter Williams came across their money by illegal means.

Goyim Judiciary

We need a Goyim judiciary – so that we can be judged by our peers – a Goyim judiciary with no QCs, no Freemasons, no Catholics, no Jews, and no sailors (drug traffickers), so that Goyim can be judged as equals by Goyim. At present we are being judged by our enemies, who are 'not friends of the country' . . . You can tell by the results.

At what point does a judiciary cease to function?

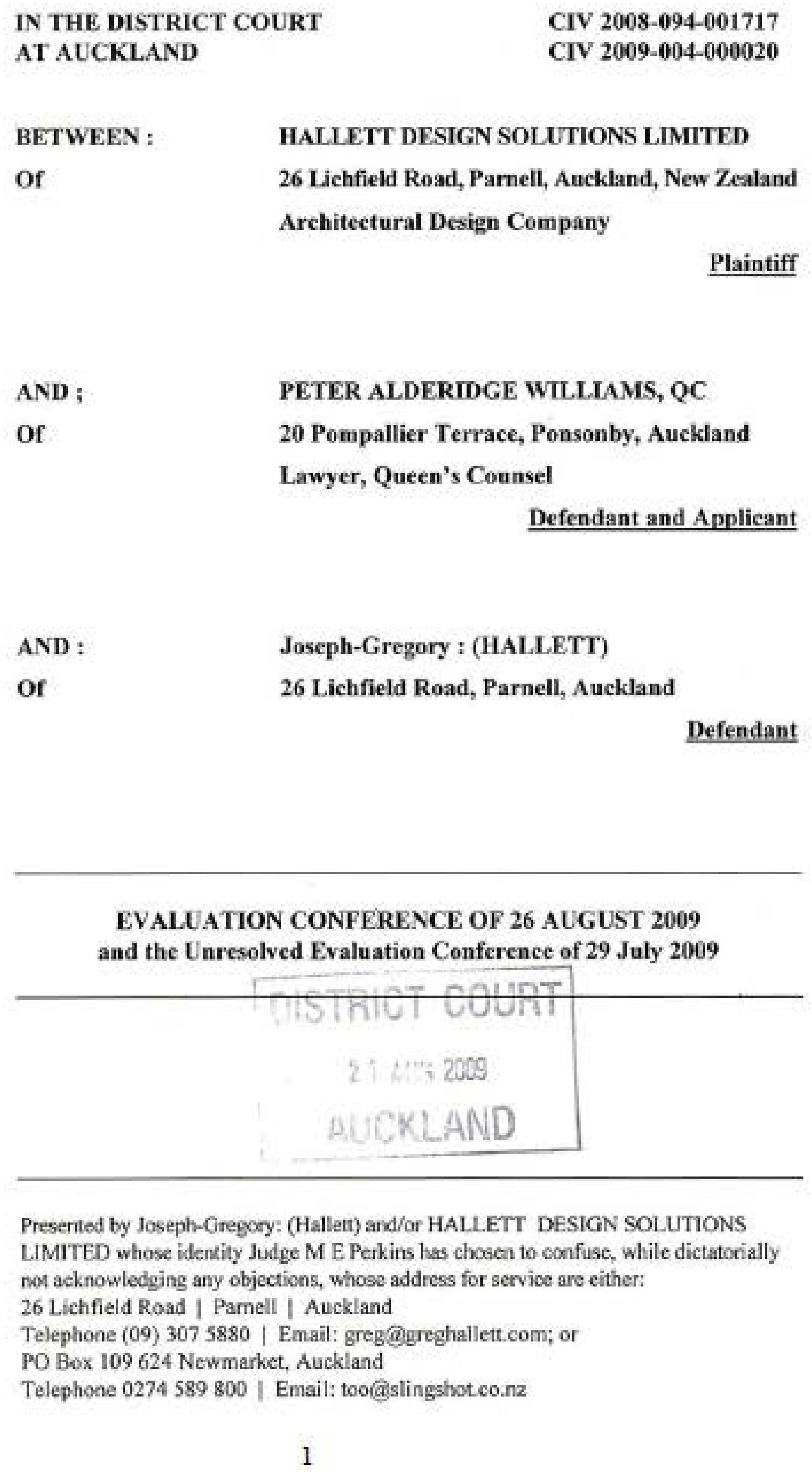

IN THE DISTRICT COURT
AT AUCKLAND

CIV 2008-094-001717
CIV 2009-004-000020

BETWEEN : **HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LIMITED**
Of **26 Lichfield Road, Parnell, Auckland, New Zealand**
Architectural Design Company
Plaintiff

AND ; **PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC**
Of **20 Pompallier Terrace, Ponsonby, Auckland**
Lawyer, Queen's Counsel
Defendant and Applicant

AND : **Joseph-Gregory : (HALLETT)**
Of **26 Lichfield Road, Parnell, Auckland**
Defendant

EVALUATION CONFERENCE OF 26 AUGUST 2009
and the Unresolved Evaluation Conference of 29 July 2009

DISTRICT COURT
21 AUG 2009
AUCKLAND

Presented by Joseph-Gregory: (Hallett) and/or HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LIMITED whose identity Judge M E Perkins has chosen to confuse, while dictatorially not acknowledging any objections, whose address for service are either:
26 Lichfield Road | Parnell | Auckland
Telephone (09) 307 5880 | Email: greg@greghallett.com; or
PO Box 109 624 Newmarket, Auckland
Telephone 0274 589 800 | Email: too@slingshot.co.nz

1

1. The Defendant in CIV 2008-094-001717 and the Applicant in CIV 2009-004-000020 PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC has applied to the Solictory-General under advice from Judge M E Perkins to lay the charge of defamation.

2. This begs the question: "How can one defame a mafia boss?"

3. Judge M E Perkins did not require PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC ("Williams") to establish what his reputation is.

4. Indeed, Williams' reputation amongst New Zealanders is confusing.

5. Half of New Zealand thinks Williams helps the underprivileged.

6. Whereas the more informed other half thinks PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC is involved in drug trafficking, drug money laundering, heroin trafficking, profiting from drugs, accessory to murder, accessory to manslaughter, kidnapping, slavery, being a gang member, fraud, financial assassinations, terrorism, bribing the judiciary either through money, shame, or reputation, and/or Perverting the Course of Justice.

7. In short, PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC is a mafia boss.

8. It would appear that PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC is the mafia boss behind Terry Sinclair a.k.a. Terry Clark, Mr Asia, Mr Big, if not Mr Asia/Mr Big himself, with a long history of crime, from car conversion (aged 17), and who has been so long associated with criminals, he has picked up their ways.

9. Therefore, PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC's claim of defamation requires a significant amount of research to disprove.

   That is: "How can one defame a mafia boss?"

10. Therefore Joseph-Gregory : (Hallett) and HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LIMITED applies for an order for security of costs against the Applicant Peter Williams QC; as considered in Bell-Booth Group Limited v Attorney General (1986) 1 PRNZ 466; and HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS v GEE & SALE, CIV 2005-004-000856, ORAL RULING OF JUDGE HOLE, 16 June 2005.

    This application relies on r61 of the District Court Rules 1992 and the above cases. According to Judge Hole [3] " . . . the Court must be careful to make certain the rule is not used oppressively to cut out a genuine claim.; [4] . . . any reasonable possibility that the impecunosity of the appelant has been caused by the actions of the defendant [in this case, Peter Williams, QC's refusal to pay], the means of . . . interested . . . creditors and their ability to assist in the provision of security, the conduct of the parties resulting in the litigation [Williams soft kidnapping, threats to kill, previous and ongoing financial assassinations] . . . [8] . . . it is clear that a significant amount of expense will inevitably be created if the respondent wishes to counter those allegations. Given the nature of the allegations, it is not surprising that the respondent intends to counter them. And in those circumstances the respondent is going to be put to significant expense as a result."

11. These expenses will include NZ$1.25 million in Private Investigators and researchers digging up the past of PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC in order to prove the "defaming" statements are in fact, true . . . plus the costs of legal representation.

12. Therefore an order for security of costs of NZ$1.25 million is requested from the defamation applicant PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC.

13. Further complaints against judge shopping, the surprise transfer of the case from the Disputes Tribunal to the District Court, and the surprise appointment of North Shore Judge M E Perkins to the Auckland District Court were laid with Civil Liason Judge, Judge Mathers, and the Solicitor-General, Dr David Collins QC, both on 29 July 2009, at 5 pm on the day of the Evaluation Conference.

14. Neither provided a response that was outside the realms of Perverting the Course of Justice.

15. It is as though Perverting the Course of Justice is de rigueur for the New Zealand Judiciary, especially when the reputation of one of their own is at stake, regardless of their criminal history and the seriousness of those crimes.

16. This has led to the Judiciary being the most hated and distrusted of the New Zealand governmental departments.

17. To put it more simply, no one believes what the judiciary says or does has anything to do with the truth of the matter.

18. To simplify it again, the New Zealand Judicary has become a politicised.

19. The ramifications of this are that the Judicary is itself involved in crime, and as an accessory to the crimes it obfuscates.

20. Further the courts absolutely ignore the rort aspect of cases, and have made fraud so difficult to prove, they are virtually in support of fraud.

21. Stated more simply, the New Zealand Judiciary has become an occult mafia.

Guillaume Boglio - gboglio@yahoo.fr - 31 Dec 2012

22. The common view in New Zealand is that the Judiciary requires a complete review such that the majority of employees and practitioners, judges and Chief Justice would be removed.

23. Should this occur, then a fair hearing might be held.

24. In the meantime, it is pleading to the Devil.

25. Pleading to the Devil is something PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC is an expert at.

26. I am aware that one is supposed to plead to the judge, but in this case, that is holding hands with the Devil.

27. As I was informed disbelievingly by Intelligence, it has become patently clear that PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC has infact been judge shopping.

28. This has come with the pro-active interference of the Chief Justice Sian Elias.

29. Chief Justice Sian Elias is herself a mafia boss, Mossad agent, Sayanim Mossad agent, and the highest-ranking Sayanim Mossad agent in New Zealand.

30. Further, it is clear, substantive and true that the Chief Justice Sian Elias is a contract killer; and

    that she was bribed into this position by her husband; and

    that those who nominated and seconded the motion are also involved in murder.

31. This includes Prime Minister Jenny Shipley – whose daughter at the time of Shipley's Prime Ministership (1997–99), and Shipley's nomination of Sian Elias to Chief Justice – was convicted of accessory to a beheading murder, and is a methamphetamine user.

32. The shameful state of the New Zealand goverance and judiciary has led to a situation where these points have to be raised; and no further justice can be found without them being addressed.

33. Given the seriousness of these crimes – by those we are instructed to trust and look up to (i.e. "honourable") – it is imperative that, as the result of the judge shopping and Perverting the Course of Justice, Judge M E Perkins resign from the case, and from his position; and that

    The Disputes Tribunal Referee Stuart Benson resign as an accessory to Perverting the Course of Justice; and that

    The Chief Justice Sian Elias resign as a result of her Perverting the Course of Justice in relation to Disputes Tribunal Referee

Stuart Benson, and North Shore/Auckland District Court Judge M E Perkins, who is reading this document; and that

PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC be removed from the silk and STRUCK OFF as a result of Perverting the Course of Justice with the above; as well as

For his crimes plentiful.

34. If these matters are not dealt with, then historical charges will have to be laid against PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC.

35. Given the nature of the Judiciary, and its questionable relation to justice, its distance from the truth, and publication for more than a year and a day, the burden of proof will be for PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC to disprove the allegations.

36. PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC will be required to testify.

37. PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC will be required to be made available for cross-examination.

38. Whichever judge is hearing the case should be made aware of PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC's propensity for oblique non sequiturs, processional distractions, use of "witnesses" complicit with his crimes, and influence over the judiciary.

39. In either case, an order for security of costs of NZ$1.25 million is requested as required for par defense, retort, and vindication.

Boglio - pboglio@yahoo.it - 31 Dec 2012

40. I sincerely believe that the reputation of the judiciary is at stake in these cases, and has been for a long time, dating back to at least 1953 or thereabouts, when PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS stole a car, and to 6 April 1987 when he was made a Queen's Counsel; and all his crimes before, during, after, and ongoing.

41. May I remind the court that the only defamation claimed the writer has been made aware of is PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC's statement: "Peter Williams, he's so tight nuns use his arsehole as a reference".

42. It would appear that PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC's own actions are in support of this.

43. PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC has created a situation where his non-payment of a $5,625.00 architecture fee has led to the discovery of his history, and that of the judiciary, and the judiciary in support of him.

44. Further, the above was written on Wednesday 12 August 2009 and read off my computer by the CIA Echelon spy base in Blenheim, or similar, and then passed to these parties.

45. These parties then found it necessary to bypass the process of the Courts, as the information was too embarrassing for them to process. This is commonly known as "illegal", and it is 'illegal actions taken by the New Zealand Judiciary'.

46. This writer was then informed by Internal Affairs, then Army Intelligence, at 8 pm on 18 August 2009:

"The game plan for the Evaluation Conference on 26 August 2009 is that the bought Judge M E Perkins will bandy you over for 24 to 48 hours to appear before a quack and have you committed".

47. I find this interesting as I have just located the house where the Mr Asia murders and clean-ups took place – in Waihi, over the water, and with a boatshed with speedboats for quick escape over the sea, and with the signature imported top shelf alcohol.

48. A lot of unsolved murders and missing persons occurred here. This would mean, if this were to be heard, that crimes of murder and drug trafficking could potentially be solved with the Judiciary.

49. Waihi was also a base for extracting heroin out of flourescent tubes imported from South America.

50. Further, this order for '24–48 hour quack committal' came with the expressed complicity of Chief Justice Sian Elias, who has previously been named and published in several murders.

51. Further, the former Prime Minister Helen Clark was rather secretly in New Zealand (from New York) in and around 15 August 2009.

52. To prove her presence, during this period she instigated removing the top echelon of her former Labour Party, as announced on the 6 pm TV3 News on 17 August 2009.

53. Helen Clark also assisted Chief Justice Sian Elias and Peter Williams, QC in guiding and pressuring Judge Perkins to protect Peter Williams QC from exposure as Mr Asia's righthand man;

and one who garnered the profits;

and the involvement of the Judiciary, Police and Government who assisted in the heroin trafficking and multiple murders over the last fifty years.

54. Helen Clark, now the 3-IC of the United Nations, and soon to be in charge of the new World Army, has also been published as a heroin trafficker, as well as a murderer, and with the joint murder of the previous historian Michael King, with the Chief Justice Sian Elias.

55. May I remind the Court that this is extremely embarrassing for all concerned – the New Zealand Government, Judiciary, Police,

Queen Elizabeth II, and The Queen in Right of New Zealand, Rosemary Banks.

56. Peter Williams QC's actions have forced my hand, where I have been required to publish this information and disperse this document widely for my own protection.

56. You may check with the Blenheim CIA spy base and their Echelon programme to confirm that the 18 August 2009 phone call took place, but I request the identities remain secret as you never know how far up or down the chain of communication they are. (e.g. Commander in Chief or message boy).

57. I request Judge M E Perkins resign his position; Chief Justice Sian Elias resign her position; and PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC be removed from the silk and STRUCK OFF; and provide security of costs of NZ$1.25 million.

If this paper was headed "Lagos, Nigeria", no comment and no attempt to sanction the claims would be expected. Not dissimilarly, history shows the standard response in New Zealand has also been to completely ignore and sidestep sensitive and embarrassing issues, such as crime in the Judiciary.

However, because this paper is headed "'Auckland, New Zealand" in 2009, where the government and judiciary claim to be completely fair, more or less on an annual basis (as per the annual media release from Switzerland), a fair response is expected and demanded.

Alternatively, the transliteration of the New Zealand's Maori name – 'Aotearoa' – could be changed from "The Land of the Long White Cloud" to 'The Land of the Long White Cover-up', but this would prevent the annual claims of fairness.

Documents for service on the abovenamed Plaintiff and Defendant may be left at the addresses for service.

IN THE DISTRICT COURT
AT AUCKLAND

CIV 2008-094-001717
CIV 2009-004-000020

BETWEEN : **HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LIMITED**
Of **26 Lichfield Road, Parnell, Auckland, New Zealand**
Architectural Design Company
Plaintiff

AND ; **PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC**
Of **20 Pompallier Terrace, Ponsonby, Auckland**
Lawyer, Queen's Counsel
Defendant and Applicant

AND : **Joseph-Gregory : (HALLETT)**
Of **26 Lichfield Road, Parnell, Auckland**
Defendant

STATEMENT OF CLAIM FOR THE EVALUATION CONFERENCE OF 26 AUGUST 2009

Presented by Joseph-Gregory: (Hallett) and/or HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LIMITED whose identity Judge M E Perkins has chosen to confuse, while dictatorially not acknowledging any objections, whose address for service are either:
26 Lichfield Road | Parnell | Auckland
Telephone (09) 307 5880 | Email: greg@greghallett.com; or
PO Box 109 624 Newmarket, Auckland
Telephone 0274 589 800 | Email: too@slingshot.co.nz

DISTRICT COURT
26 AUG 2009
AUCKLAND

1. The Plaintiff seeks $7,515.25 as per the Disputes Tribunal Hearing on 5 December 2008, plus 8.4% interest, plus all costs associated, with consideration to all higher amounts claimed.

2. Judge Perkins decision was to meld HDSL's $7,500 architectural fee claim, unpaid since 2005, with Peter Williams QC's claim of defamation, where Williams cites Hallett – not HDSL – has written: "Peter Williams? He's so tight nuns use his areshole as a reference".

3. This is not in the interests of: substantive fairness, reasonable, with natural justice, legally, with equity, and within legitimate expection, taking into account relevant matters, without factual error, disregard irrelevant matters, act without a pre-determined policy, without dictation from someone else, without bias, and without invalid delegation ("Unfair Bias"). [31] (A2)[1]

4. These two matters should not be heard in the same court at the same time.

5. Hallett (an individual) and Hallett Design Solutions Limited (a company) should not be treated as the same entity; and

   Which identity has not been established;

6. That offset would occur is an error, as the defamation statement is proven by Williams' actions to withhold payment.

7. Peter Alderidge Williams QC ("Williams") has shown no proof that he represents the entire establishment of those "Honourables" he claims "defamation" on behalf of.

8. Williams has not established whether these persons were wrongly defamed, or correctly reported.

9. Williams' has not established his own reputation.

10. Hallett/ HDSL were not consulted on the length of time required for the trial;

11. Judge Perkins advised Williams that his defamation claim was inadequate, but was accepted, and could be upgraded, and effectively backdated';

    despite Hallett attempting to point out that it was improper;

    but was restrained from speaking on 29 July 2009 upon threat of lock-up, twice;

---

[1] "[*]" refer to numbers in the 'THE JUDGE OVER YOUR SHOULDER, A GUIDE to JUDICIAL REVIEW of ADMINISTRATIVE DECISIONS, forward by Terence Arnold QC, Solicitor-General, 1 March 2005.

"(*)" refer to numbers in JUDICIAL REVIEW presented by Francis Cooke, QC, an update on Mary Scoltens QC's 2004 work.

Boglio - pboglio@yahoo.it - 31 Dec 2012

12. Judge Perkins then advised, through pre-arranged channels and prior discussions, that Williams could apply to the Solicitor-General for dispensation to "libel" and apply to claim under "defamation";

13. Judge Perkins enacted this disregarding the merits of the case against Williams;

    That Williams has not paid his bill; and

    Is notoriously tight with money;

    As per his public reputation; and that

14. Williams has presented his own contract, which appears to be a slavery contract;

    As confirmed by Referee Stuart Benson;

    Making Williams guilty of 'Slavery';

    Which Judge Perkins refused by order of silence; and

15. The evidence presented by Williams, in the form of books written by Hallett, were stolen;

    By his partner Heeni Phillips; and

    Should be withdrawn;

    But were allowed by Perkins; and that

16. All the material in these books are clear, substantive and true, having been published for more than a year and a day; and

    New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide was nominated for book of the year; and

17. Peter Alderidge Williams QC was a contributor to these books;

    especially in his relationship to Terry Sinclair/ Clark/ Mr Asia/ Mr Big;

    Of whom Williams was his lawyer; and

    Profitted from the drug money;

    Outside the realms of legal service;

    On at least two occasions;

    From whence he derives the majority of his money;

    Having never substantively earnt any; and

    His partner Eb Leary was STRUCK OFF for this; and

18. Williams also provided "scurrilous" information on judges as published in New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide; and on

    Paul Holmes; and

19. All of the above clearly brings Judge Perkins into the realms of fault of all of the above, resulting in an Evaluation Conference that did not qualify as an Evaluation Conference, but did qualify for a Judicial Review and for Judge Perkins to recuse himself from this case, if not to dismiss himself as a judge for Unfair Bias.

20. Judge Perkins has been a bought judge, with identifiable individual interest preventing natural justice; and

    There has also been illegality, procedural unfairness, and substantive unfairness as the merits of Judge Perkinis approach were unreasonable [56, 57] and illegal.

21. Hallett/ HDSL claims that:

    Judge Perkins was entirely corrupt, purposefully, in order to create the need for a Judicial Review, inorder to protect Williams and delay the outcome of the trial, and payment required, until after Williams' ongoing death's door closes; and that

    Peter Williams QC is notorious for faking or gaining sickness whenever his defaming actions come under the spotlight; and that

    These actions include those of a mafia boss; and that

    The ongoing sickness claims are those of a spoiled child who has been exposed for his bratty crimes; and that

    In Peter Williams' case, these crimes are serious and have ongoing detrimental affects on New Zealand; and that

    Peter Alderidge Williams QC's serious crimes are protected by the Judiciary; and that

    This is an indictment on the Judiciary; that is

        The Judiciary is it not a law enforcing agency, but a crime protecting agency for those selected; and that

        This has created a list; and that

        Unfortunately this crime list overlaps with the promotion list to such a degree that many believe it is the same list.

22. Peter Williams/ Peter Alderidge Williams QC has been involved in slavery.

Remedy
Therefore Hallett/ HDSL requests the following take place:

A. HDSL's case against Williams be returned to the Disputes Tribunal;

   To be continued where it left off, with Williams cross-examining HDSL;

   Under the same Referee;

   As long as that Referee can provide evidence and assurance that they are not biased; and are

   Not influenced by the Chief Justice Sian Elias.

B. That Williams claim of defamation be abandoned by Williams; or

   Go through a Judicial Review; and that

   Williams establish what his reputation is; and that

   Williams provide contracts with those others he claims were defamed.

C. Hallett/ HDSL request the initial $7,500 plus subsequent additionals; and further

D. Hallett/ HDSL seeks NZ$7 million in compensation for:

   Financial assassinations carried out by Williams against the plaintiff; and for

       The affect his heroin has had on Defendant's siblings; and for

       The destruction of that family; and for

       Accessory to murder attempts against Hallett instigated and assisted by Williams; including

       Soft kidnapping and threats to kill by his crew on his yacht; and

       Peter Alderidge Williams, QC attempt at the slavery of Hallett/ HDSL.

None of the matters or claims raised by Hallett/ HDSL here, and prior, have been answered to date. Therefore, they are all held to be true and unchallenged.

All that has occurred to date is processional distraction, replete with the asisstance of compromised members of the Judiciary.

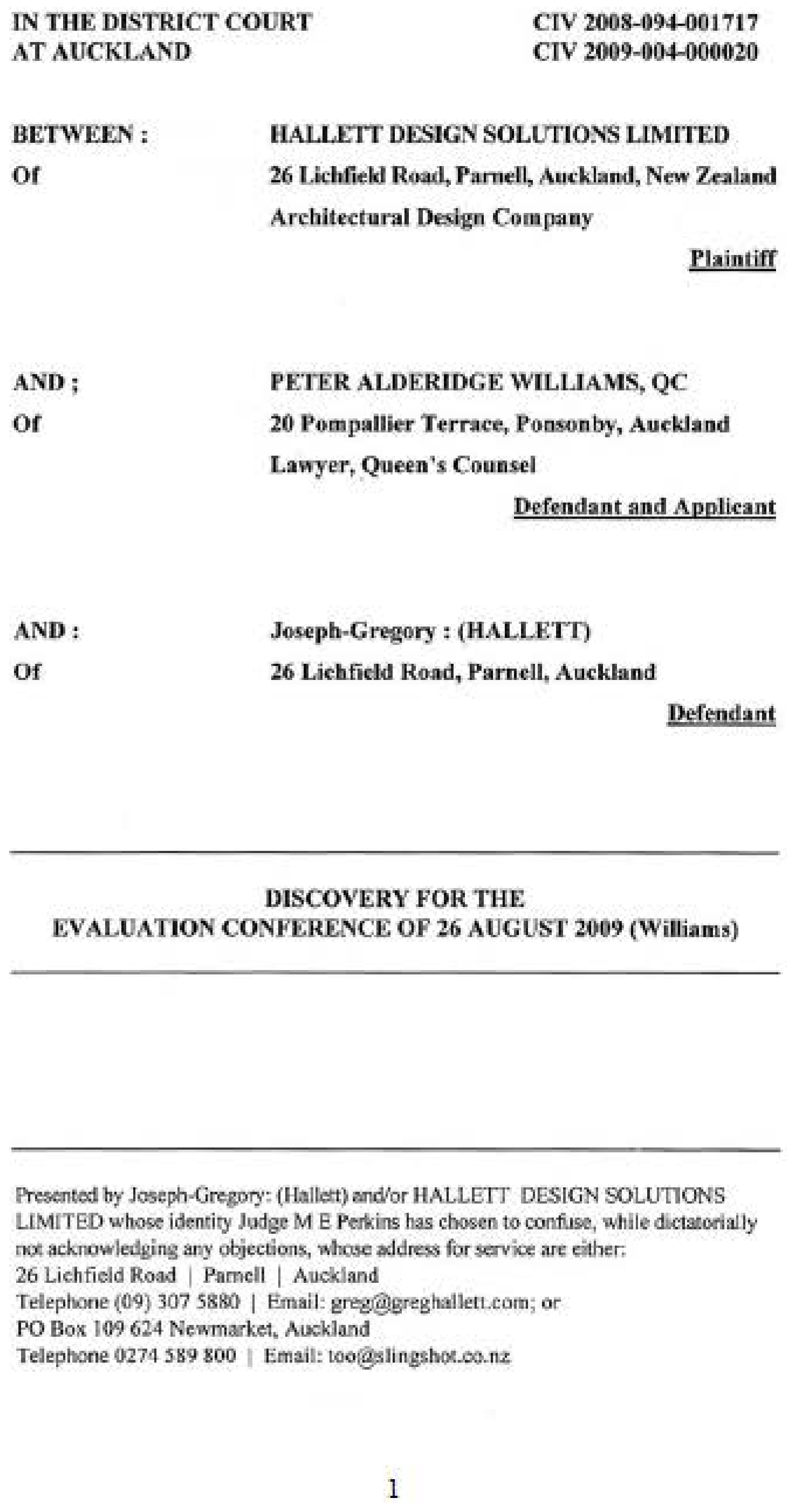

IN THE DISTRICT COURT
AT AUCKLAND

CIV 2008-094-001717
CIV 2009-004-000020

BETWEEN :	**HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LIMITED**
Of	**26 Lichfield Road, Parnell, Auckland, New Zealand**
	Architectural Design Company
	Plaintiff
AND ;	**PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC**
Of	**20 Pompallier Terrace, Ponsonby, Auckland**
	Lawyer, Queen's Counsel
	Defendant and Applicant
AND :	**Joseph-Gregory : (HALLETT)**
Of	**26 Lichfield Road, Parnell, Auckland**
	Defendant

DISCOVERY FOR THE
EVALUATION CONFERENCE OF 26 AUGUST 2009 (Williams)

Presented by Joseph-Gregory: (Hallett) and/or HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LIMITED whose identity Judge M E Perkins has chosen to confuse, while dictatorially not acknowledging any objections, whose address for service are either:
26 Lichfield Road | Parnell | Auckland
Telephone (09) 307 5880 | Email: greg@greghallett.com; or
PO Box 109 624 Newmarket, Auckland
Telephone 0274 589 800 | Email: too@slingshot.co.nz

1

Discovery

Under the Official Information Act 1972 (esp. s 23 (OIA); and/or Local Government Official information and Meetings Act 1987, s 22 (LOIMA); retaining the option to more formally apply for 'pre-comencement discovery' under Rule 299 of the High Court Rules.

1. Peter Alderidge Williams, QC is to provide all material evidence, written records, tape records, video records, of his business and financial transactions, cash payments and correspondence to and with Terry Sinclair/Clark, Mr Asia, Mr Big;

   and to his partner Eb Leary, in all manner.

2. Williams is to provide the dates he was in England once his legal and financial agent Karen Soich and her boyfriend Terry Clark were arrested, circa 1979–1983 inclusive; and

   What hotel he stayed at; and
   At what dates;
   Which parks he had a meeting in; and
   The location of the car meetings; and
   What type of vehicle he used; and
   Who owned it; and
   The number plate;
   How much he paid over in bribes; and
   To whom.

3. Williams is to provide who met him in the London hotel lobby; and

   Were these members of the mafia; and
   What were their criminal/ street/ true names; and
   Who did they work for; and
   How much money they left in his hotel room; and
   Was it in a suitcase; and
   What currency was it in; and
   Was it laundered money; and/or
   Was Williams laundering the money.

4. Was Williams aware that he was committing a crime at the time of receiving the money; and/or

   paying out the money; and/or
   bribing the witnesses; and/or
   members of law enforcement; and/or
   members of the judiciary; and/or
   retaining what was left.

5. Williams is to provide all material evidence of his knowledge and involvement in Terry Clark's faked death.

6. Williams is to provide all material evidence of his knowledge and involvement of Terry Clark's plastic surgery; and

    New identity; and

    Escape to Perth; and

    His occupation, location and sightings.

7. Williams is to provide evidence of his capital assets; and how he came upon these; and

    How he received his principal capital from Terry Clark; and

    How this was not recorded; and

    How his legal partner Eb Leary was struck off; but

    How Williams was not struck off; and

    How Williams' engineered Eb Leary's readmission to the bar;

    Only to commit the same crime, this time with ecstacy money.

8. Williams is to provide evidence of his involvement in bribing witnesses and the judiciary in relation to Terry Clark's case in Auckland, circa 1975.

9. Williams is to provide the dates and times when he was loading sacks of money at night onto a yacht at Ti Point and sailing to Great Barrier Island; and

    then returning with sacks of cannibis; and/or

    nothing.

10. Williams is to forward the dates and details, including conviction and sentence, for his car theft when he was 17 years old, or thereabouts.

11. Williams is to establish how he came to own the yacht Fidelis; and

    At what date he took ownership; and

    At what date it was sold; and

    Whether Williams was ever recorded as the formal owner; and

    Was this not complicity to manslaughter.

12. Williams is to forward the names and dates of all those he has been involved in murder with; including

    those he has represented; and

    their subsequent murders; and

    who was murdered; and

    who was attempted to be murdered.

13. Williams is to establish his role in HDSL's other cases in/ or emerging from the Disputes Tribunal since 1993, including against:

    James Davern (previous owner of Fidelis);

    Pru Gee;

    Steve Whalley, a.k.a. Steven John Brandon.

14. Williams is to forward the names of all members of the judiciary he has compromised;

    including through Asian porn movies; and

    The times and dates of these compromises;

    Including brothels.

15. Williams is to forward the details of all cases where he has had prior knowledge of what actually happened, but delayed those case; and/or

    Convicted the wrong person (i.e. Crewe murders); and

    Whether this was to protect some high-ranking Freemason. (e.g. Len Demlar)

16. Williams is to establish what his reputation is as a Queen's Counsel, and with whom, under the lists:

    Judcial members;

    Uninformed public;

    Funded Intelligence (i.e. Counter-Intelligence);

    Informed public;

    Informed lawyers;

    Unfunded Intelligence (i.e. Intelligence).

17. Williams is to establish what his reputation is as a person.

18. Peter Alderidge Williams QC (as opposed to Peter Williams) is to confirm or deny whether he enjoys:

    the role of mafia boss; and/or

    the title of mafia boss.

19. Peter Williams as opposed to Peter Alderidge Williams QC is to confirm or deny whether he enjoys:

    the role of mafia boss; and/or

    the title of mafia boss.

20. Williams is to provide this information to counter the argument and motion that Peter Alderidge Williams QC should be removed from the silk and STRUCK OFF.

21. Williams is to provide this information to establish what his reputation is.

No defamation actions on Williams behalf (i.e. against Hallett or Hallett Design Solutions Limited) can proceed without these matters being adequately addressed.

These matters will also require cross-examination from Hallett. i.e. Peter Williams/ Peter Alderidge Williams QC will be required to take the stand.

Documents for service on the abovenamed Plaintiff and Defendant may be left at the addresses for service.

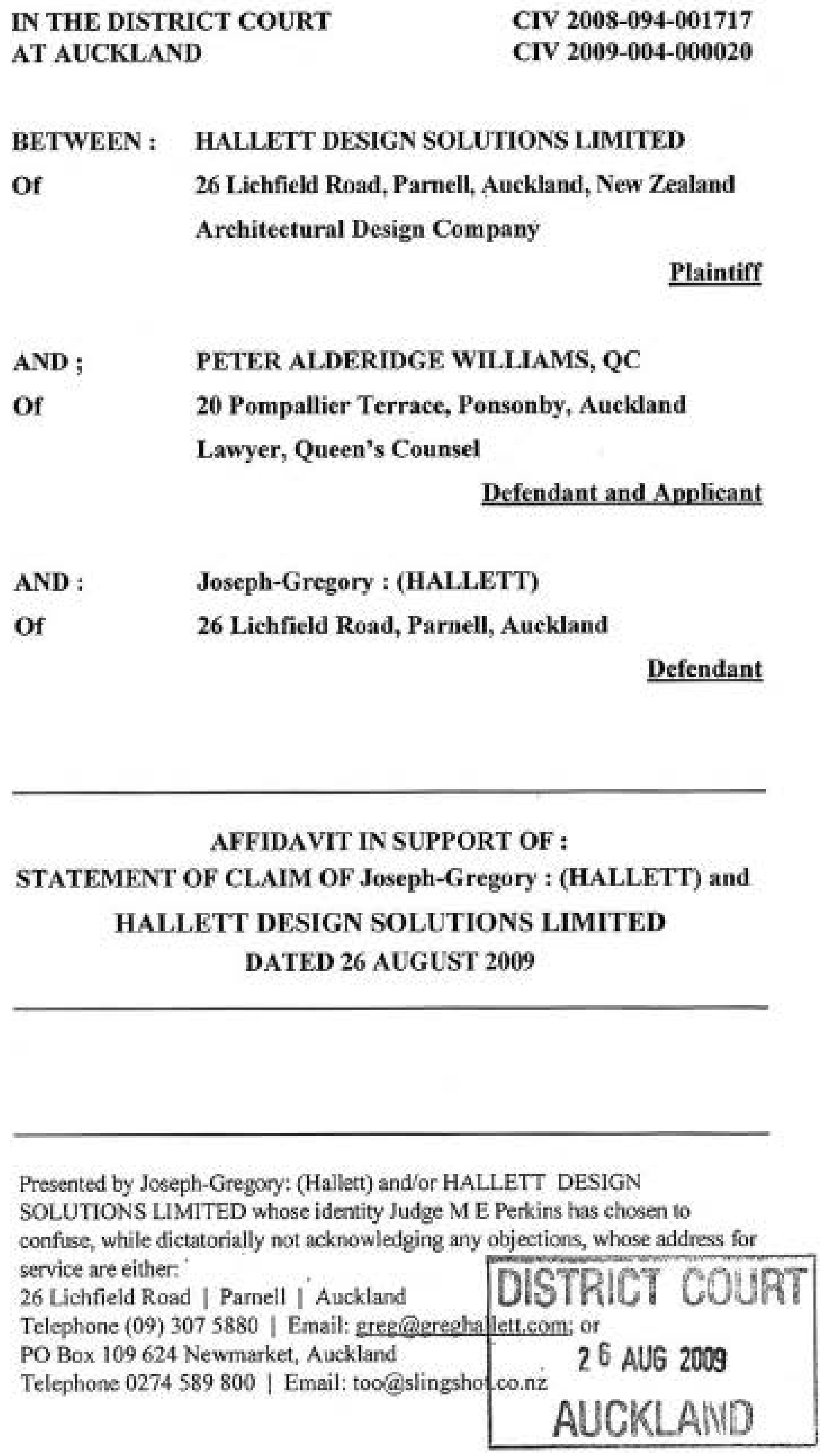

IN THE DISTRICT COURT
AT AUCKLAND

CIV 2008-094-001717
CIV 2009-004-000020

BETWEEN : HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LIMITED
Of 26 Lichfield Road, Parnell, Auckland, New Zealand
Architectural Design Company

Plaintiff

AND ; PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS, QC
Of 20 Pompallier Terrace, Ponsonby, Auckland
Lawyer, Queen's Counsel

Defendant and Applicant

AND : Joseph-Gregory : (HALLETT)
Of 26 Lichfield Road, Parnell, Auckland

Defendant

AFFIDAVIT IN SUPPORT OF :
STATEMENT OF CLAIM OF Joseph-Gregory : (HALLETT) and
HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LIMITED
DATED 26 AUGUST 2009

Presented by Joseph-Gregory: (Hallett) and/or HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LIMITED whose identity Judge M E Perkins has chosen to confuse, while dictatorially not acknowledging any objections, whose address for service are either:
26 Lichfield Road | Parnell | Auckland
Telephone (09) 307 5880 | Email: greg@greghallett.com; or
PO Box 109 624 Newmarket, Auckland
Telephone 0274 589 800 | Email: too@slingshot.co.nz

DISTRICT COURT
26 AUG 2009
AUCKLAND

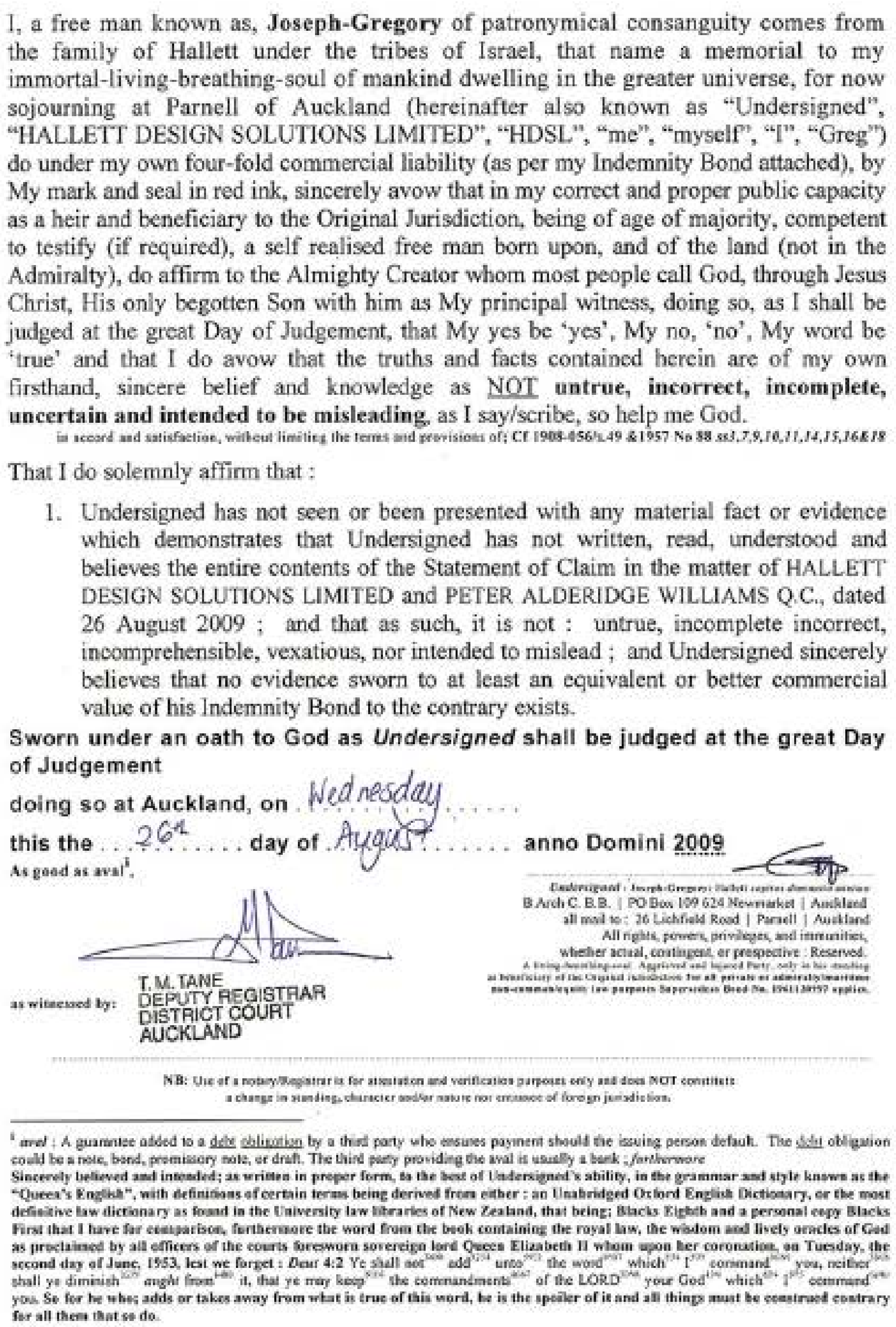

I, a free man known as, **Joseph-Gregory** of patronymical consanguity comes from the family of Hallett under the tribes of Israel, that name a memorial to my immortal-living-breathing-soul of mankind dwelling in the greater universe, for now sojourning at Parnell of Auckland (hereinafter also known as "Undersigned", "HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LIMITED", "HDSL", "me", "myself", "I", "Greg") do under my own four-fold commercial liability (as per my Indemnity Bond attached), by My mark and seal in red ink, sincerely avow that in my correct and proper public capacity as a heir and beneficiary to the Original Jurisdiction, being of age of majority, competent to testify (if required), a self realised free man born upon, and of the land (not in the Admiralty), do affirm to the Almighty Creator whom most people call God, through Jesus Christ, His only begotten Son with him as My principal witness, doing so, as I shall be judged at the great Day of Judgement, that My yes be 'yes', My no, 'no', My word be 'true' and that I do avow that the truths and facts contained herein are of my own firsthand, sincere belief and knowledge as NOT **untrue, incorrect, incomplete, uncertain and intended to be misleading**, as I say/scribe, so help me God.

in accord and satisfaction, without limiting the terms and provisions of; Cf 1908-056/s.49 &1957 No 88 *ss3,7,9,10,11,14,15,16&18*

That I do solemnly affirm that :

1. Undersigned has not seen or been presented with any material fact or evidence which demonstrates that Undersigned has not written, read, understood and believes the entire contents of the Statement of Claim in the matter of HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LIMITED and PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS Q.C., dated 26 August 2009 ; and that as such, it is not : untrue, incomplete incorrect, incomprehensible, vexatious, nor intended to mislead ; and Undersigned sincerely believes that no evidence sworn to at least an equivalent or better commercial value of his Indemnity Bond to the contrary exists.

Sworn under an oath to God as *Undersigned* shall be judged at the great Day of Judgement

doing so at Auckland, on ..Wednesday.......

this the ....26th...... **day of** ..August........ **anno Domini** **2009**

As good as aval[1],

Undersigned : Joseph-Gregory: Hallett [illegible]
B Arch C. B.B. | PO Box 109 624 Newmarket | Auckland
all mail to : 36 Lichfield Road | Parnell | Auckland
All rights, powers, privileges, and immunities,
whether actual, contingent, or prespective : Reserved.
A living-breathing-soul. Aggrieved and Injured Party, only in his standing as beneficiary of the Original Jurisdiction for all private or admiralty/maritime non-commercial/equity law purposes Supersedeas Bond No. [illegible] applies.

as witnessed by: T. M. TANE
DEPUTY REGISTRAR
DISTRICT COURT
AUCKLAND

NB: Use of a notary/Registrar is for attestation and verification purposes only and does NOT constitute a change in standing, character and/or nature nor creation of foreign jurisdiction.

---

[1] *aval* : A guarantee added to a debt obligation by a third party who ensures payment should the issuing person default. The debt obligation could be a note, bond, promissory note, or draft. The third party providing the aval is usually a bank ; *furthermore*
Sincerely believed and intended; as written in proper form, to the best of Undersigned's ability, in the grammar and style known as the "Queen's English", with definitions of certain terms being derived from either : an Unabridged Oxford English Dictionary, or the most definitive law dictionary as found in the University law libraries of New Zealand, that being; Blacks Eighth and a personal copy Blacks First that I have for comparison, furthermore the word from the book containing the royal law, the wisdom and lively oracles of God as proclaimed by all officers of the courts foresworn sovereign lord Queen Elizabeth II whom upon her coronation, on Tuesday, the second day of June, 1953, lest we forget : *Deut* 4:2 Ye shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish ought from it, that ye may keep the commandments of the LORD your God which I command you. **So for he who; adds or takes away from what is true of this word, he is the spoiler of it and all things must be construed contrary for all them that so do.**

Judge Roderick Joyce's minute

It was a long wait for Auckland District Court Judge Roderick Joyce QC's minute reply. Normally they arrive within the week, but this one took 16 days. I phoned the Auckland District Court to enquire.

Auckland District Court: "Judge Joyce has taken a lot of cases on. That's why yours is late".

I phoned again a week later on Thursday 10 September 2009 to enquire.

Auckland District Court: "The minute has still not arrived. We will phone you as soon as it arrives . . . Judge Joyce is in seminars Thursday and Friday, so you won't be getting a decision tomorrow."
Hallett: "What sort of seminar?"
Auckland District Court: "A Law Society seminar." So I wasn't expecting the Minute until mid-next week.

Low and behold the Minute turned up on Saturday – dated Friday 11 September 2009, with no phone call. It was 18 pages long – the last page listing seven (7) permanently sealed documents, never to be refered to in Court.

It would appear that Judge Joyce had been workshopping his Minute at the Law Society seminar – and with other judges. It certainly reads as though more than one judge had input.

Judge Joyce's 11 September 2009 Minute was an historical censorship document, one of the biggest censorships in the history of New Zealand Law, next to Judge Stevens' censorship in the High Court on 20 April 2009 (also of this book).

Auckland District Court Judge Roderick Joyce [and accomplices] had given me the option of either having the entire file sealed, "[59] (ii) unsealing by judicial direction only", and my case dropped, or to have one of the documents presented (27 May 2009), and the rest sealed never to resurface . . . so it was a case of none or one. That's Slim Pickens. That's justice down the barrel of a gun, a.k.a. Chairman Mao's Political Correctness.

As a District Court Judge, Joyce didn't have the authority to do this: "[38] The District Court has no such jurisdiction." "[40] The present District Court rr 209 and 481 do not specifically empower the Court to act on its own initiative" . . . So Joyce had to workshop his Minute with other judges to haul in as much authority as they could manufacture.

> In doing this they had to refer to the High Court (Rule 186), the Family Court (Rule 193), the Canadian Supreme Court; and refer to District Court cases [*Watson v Clarke* in 1990, citing *Cocker v Tempest* in 1841] – so that's a long haul – as well as *R v Connelly* in 1964; *R v Jewitt* in 1985; and *Van Der Kaap v Attorney-General*, citing *Thompson v Westpac* in 1986, citing Rule 186 of the High Court rules where:
> **"Court embarrassment is an abuse of the process."**
>
> Further the Court can expunge scandalous material if it is irrelevant based on England's practise citing *Cunningham v Takapuna Tramway and Ferry Co Ltd* in 1920. **However allegations of dishonesty and outrageous conduct are not scandalous if relevant to the issues**, citing *Everett v Prythergch* in 1841, *Rubery v Grant* in 1872, and *Christie v Christie* in 1873.

So the judge/s got together and raised over 800 years of legal reference just so none of them had to hear in Court what had already been written, presented to Court, and read in Chambers by all and sundry . . . which they all know to be true enough to avoid, unless they want to commit to a revolutionary reshuffle – i.e. have some balls, and not some feminism – and actually manufacture a Judiciary that has something to do with justice . . .
as opposed to Just-Us.

Judge Roderick Joyce QC is no friend of Peter Williams QC. They had a run in years ago and Joyce could never get over how much Williams manufactured evidence, was a Courtroom Drama Queen, and hung out with criminals, mental patients, and bisexuals.

However, with the influence of the other judges in the Law Society seminar and the over-riding influence of the Kol Nidre Sayanim Mossad contract killer Chief Justice Sian Elias, and her dedication to covering up her gross shame, Judge Roderick Joyce QC was moved to write:

> **[51] “In light of these principles I have no difficulty in holding that the statement of claim and the present application are permeated with scandalous and irrelevant material.”**

> **So this appears to be a ruling that the New Zealand Judiciary will not hear any case that contains any information which is embarrassing to itself.**
> **This includes Queen’s Counsel lawyers involved in heroin trafficking, murder, and paedophilia . . . as well as gang activity of lawyers and judges.**
> **This is tantamount to slavery. Slavery is confirmed in New Zealand by the living standards, lack of lifestyle, lack of security, and lack of savings of its people.**

This renders the New Zealand Judiciary as a mafia, an occult mafia, and a sexually bent one at that. It means that any lawyer can traffick drugs as long as their status is high enough.

> **Their status is high enough as soon as they compromise someone else higher up the ladder, like with Asian porn movies, or bribing with drug money, or absolutely any form of collusion.**
> **Collusion amongst lawyers, and amongst lawyers and judges, and lawyers and police, and police and judges is so common, it’s career practise.**

There are several names for it . . . ‘Running with the foxes and hounds’, Freemasonry, The Craft, Feminism, Career Twins, Common Purpose (and all its hijackings and branches), ‘criminal in a suit’, ‘shitting gold bricks’, Mafia and Occult Mafia. Essentially it is the Kol Nidre/ Yom Kippur where all the public oaths go out the window, and justice the common man receives is:

“The oath shall not be an oath,
the pledge shall not be a pledge,
and the vow shall not be a vow.
They shall have no force and effect.”

There is no justice unless it serves their common purpose.
This in turn means that the Judicary is no different from a Royal dictatorship where it is only a sin if you get caught, and even then, no charge is ever successful.

> So we are all still subjects. Our ruler is not a Queen or a King, it is a Judiciary protecing an Occult Mafia actively involved in the destruction of its own country, and sharing these goals with other countries – like colonial Canada and its Supreme Court.

> Auckland District Court Judge Roderick Joyce QC: “[55] **Mr Hallett has gone far beyond any permissible boundaries**”. “[59] It is, then, with all that has so far been discussed and described in mind that I make the following orders: (ii) **The documents . . . are to be removed from the Court’s working file and kept in a sealed form by the registry in terms that their unsealing will be by judicial direction only.**” (vi) Given the **scandalous nature of much other material** [four of Hallett’s books lodged by PAWQC] . . . I direct that any **search of the fees claim court file** (including the Tribunal file) is to be restricted to any *[sic]* the parties to this proceeding.”

> **It is plain that the Judiciary do not want to hear a case against Peter Williams QC.**

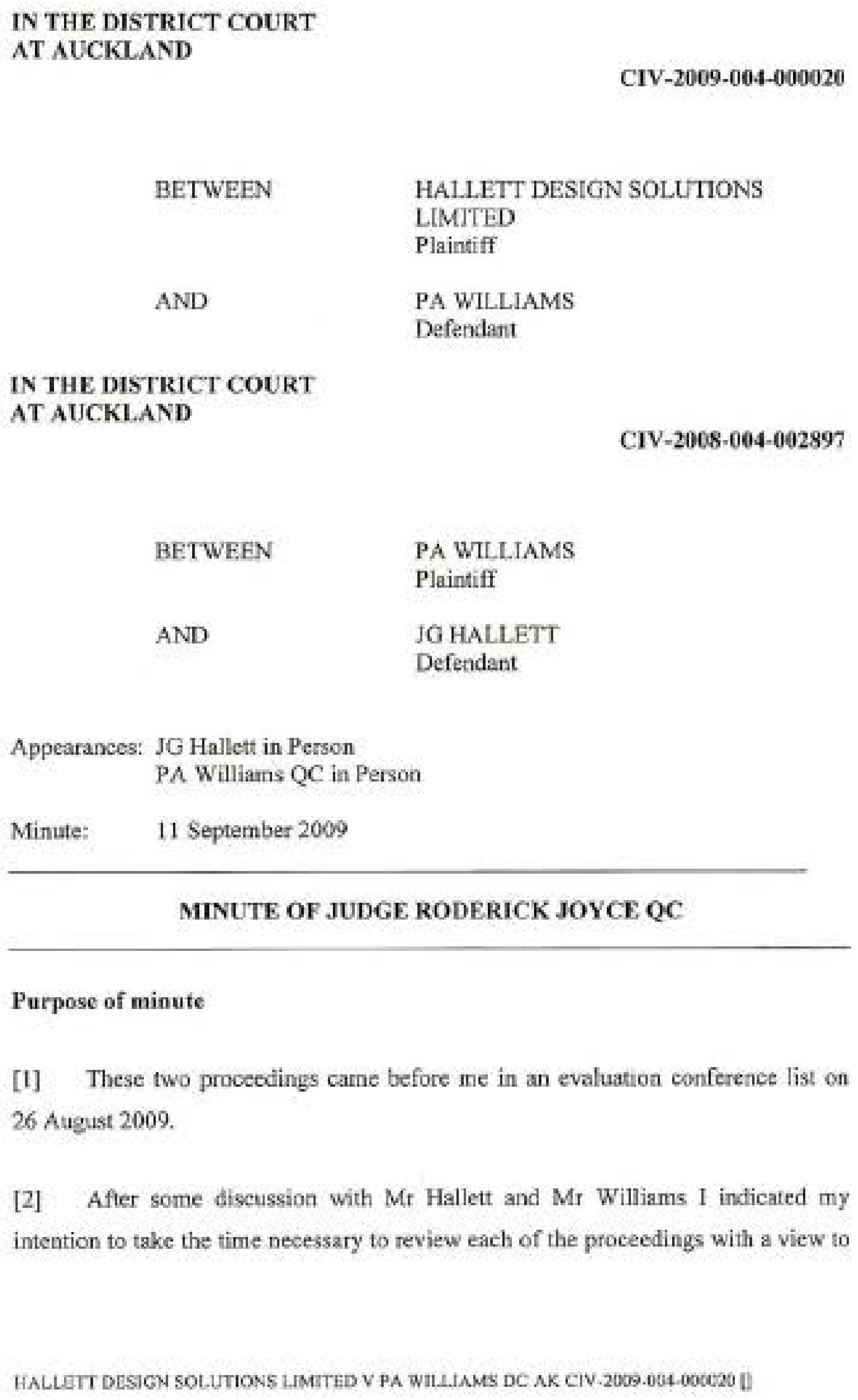

IN THE DISTRICT COURT
AT AUCKLAND

CIV-2009-004-000020

BETWEEN HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LIMITED
Plaintiff

AND PA WILLIAMS
Defendant

IN THE DISTRICT COURT
AT AUCKLAND

CIV-2008-004-002897

BETWEEN PA WILLIAMS
Plaintiff

AND JG HALLETT
Defendant

Appearances: JG Hallett in Person
PA Williams QC in Person

Minute: 11 September 2009

MINUTE OF JUDGE RODERICK JOYCE QC

Purpose of minute

[1] These two proceedings came before me in an evaluation conference list on 26 August 2009.

[2] After some discussion with Mr Hallett and Mr Williams I indicated my intention to take the time necessary to review each of the proceedings with a view to

HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LIMITED V PA WILLIAMS DC AK CIV-2009-004-000020 []

issuing such directions as in the Court's consideration would be conducive to their proper disposition and that is the object of this minute.

The fees claim

[3] In CIV-2009-004-000020 Mr Hallett's company Hallett Design Solutions Limited (HDS) seeks to recover from Mr Williams an amount of $7,515.25 being fees for architectural services (including the provision of plans or drawings) rendered to Mr Williams between 2003 and 2005.

[4] The response of Mr Williams is to deny any such entitlement and to say that what HDS was actually engaged to achieve, but failed to obtain, was the issue of local authority consent to a proposed subdivision of land owned by Mr Williams at Surrey Crescent, Auckland, and that had HDS obtained that consent Mr Williams would have paid it $30,000.

[5] From now on I refer to this proceeding as "the fees claim".

The defamation claim

[6] In CIV-2008-094-001717 Mr Williams sues Mr Hallett in defamation on account things published of Mr Williams by Mr Hallett in a book entitled "New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide" which are identified as being defamatory and maliciously so.

[7] From now on I refer to this proceeding as "the defamation claim".

History of fees claim

[8] The fees claim began in the Disputes Tribunal where it endured a long and tortuous history before, on 8 December 2008, a referee transferred same to this Court.

[9] The Tribunal's transfer order included the recitation of the following:

(a) Mr Hallett's claim alone was 204 paragraphs (24 pages).

(b) Mr Williams filed a defence which attached 15 documents.

(c) Mr Williams filed a variety of affidavits from different persons, which included a copy of Mr Hallett's book, "New Zealand, Blackmailer's Guide".

(d) At the hearing on 21 November 2008, Mr Williams called (or at least wished to call) about six witnesses.

(e) Mr Williams insisted that Mr Hallett's credibility in general was relevant to the case.

(f) Just before the hearing on 21 November 2008, Mr Williams served defamation proceedings on Mr Hallett.

(g) The defamation proceedings related to Mr Hallett's "Blackmailer's" book, which referred to Mr Williams and, in particular, fees which (the book stated) Mr Williams had not paid (see pages 189, 190) (understood to be the fees in issue in the Disputes Tribunal claim).

(h) On 21 November 2008, the hearing was adjourned to 5 December to give Mr Williams an opportunity to cross-examine Mr Hallett.

(i) Following the adjournment, Mr Hallett filed an uninvited affidavit dated 1 December 2008 (16 pages, plus exhibit).

(j) On 5 December, Mr Williams filed a memorandum in reply (11 pages) and a copy of an affidavit filed by Mr Hallett in proceedings against the Police, Auckland District Court and Auckland City Council (250 paragraphs, plus numerous exhibits).

(k) On 5 December, the Referee declined to continue the hearing without reading Mr Hallett's affidavit and Mr Williams' memorandum and invited submissions on transfer of the Disputes Tribunal claim to the District Court.

(l) Mr Williams did not oppose transfer; and Mr Hallett opposed transfer.

27 May 2009 conference

[10] At an evaluation conference on 27 May 2009 a Judge of this Court made timetable orders that:

(a) HDS file an amended statement of claim by 4 June;

(b) Any statement of defence or counter-claim (if necessary) be filed by 20 June;

(c) Both parties to attempt informal discovery by 25 June;

(d) Further evaluation conference after 25 June.

[11] Prior to that conference, Mr Hallett had filed a memorandum and what he described as an interlocutory application, both dated 22 May 2009.

[12] The memorandum began by categorising the claim itself as "a simple debt matter". It then descended into a string of extraneous to that issue, difficult to follow, disturbing and troubling because of the absence of any apparent sense or utility in, let alone justification for, allegations aimed in the main at Mr Williams.

[13] The so-called interlocutory application sought no identifiable interlocutory relief, touched variously and extraordinarily on the alleged agreement between the parties for architectural services, and then descended into a generally incomprehensible diatribe (including vilification of Mr Williams) with, at the end, a claim for "compensation of $199,000 … sought for slavery".

[14] A consideration of the statement of claim originally lodged by Mr Hallett for HDS, when first the fees dispute between him and Mr Williams was transferred from the Tribunal, made readily comprehensible the 27 May direction (see [10] above) that HDS file an amended statement of claim.

[15] I say that because the first such pleading filed in this Court, which ran to 97 paragraphs, not only strayed far from the possibly relevant points but, in so doing, broke such up into more bits than could ever be their component whole before ending with a claim for relief that was entirely irrational; one affirmed by Mr Hallett, speaking of himself as:

> A living – breathing – sole Aggrieved Injured Party only in [his] standing as beneficiary of the Original Jurisdiction **for all private or admiralty/maritime non-common/equity law purposes Supersedeas** [sic] **Bond No. 196130997 applies.**

Remedial statement of claim

[16] On 27 May 2009, HDS filed an amended statement of the fees claim which, in terms of its description of the relief HDS considered it to be entitled to and the grounds for that, made (leaving aside the extent to which the relief claimed might be available in fact and law) reasonable enough sense. It certainly stood out from the previous HDS material as a document helpfully free of sheer irrelevancies, troubling or otherwise.

29 July 2009 conference

[17] The fees claim was subsequently scheduled for a further conference on 29 July 2009. Prior to this conference Mr DCS Reid, Solicitor, filed a brief memorandum for Mr Williams. This memorandum made reference to the earlier-mentioned book (a copy of which is with the court file) in terms that it demonstrated "a penchant of (Mr Hallett) for making scurrilous statements".

[18] Mr Hallett responded with a document that further hammered the name of Mr Williams and which spoke of the book in terms that everything in it was "legally considered to be clear, substantive and true".

[19] The 29 July conference duly proceeded before another Judge of this Court. At the end of that conference that Judge recorded that the counter-claim included with the statement of defence to the fees claim was, if based on defamation, inadequately pleaded.

[20] This was a reference to a statement of defence and counter-claim in the fees claim dated 2 March 2009. Paragraphs 1 through 5 of that responded to the allegations concerning the fees claim. But paragraphs 6 through 11 were in these terms:

> 6. That the plaintiff lacks any credibility and has criminally libelled a long list of leading New Zealanders including members of the Judiciary and the Disputes Tribunal and including the Rt Hon Helen Clarke (sic) MP, Hon Margaret Wilson, Hon Dame

> Silvia Cartwright, Angela D'Audney, Mother Aubert, Rt Hon David Lange, Patrick Mahoney [sic], Sir Peter Blake, Rt Hon Norman Kirk, Charles Sturt, Paul Holmes, Kevin Ryan, QC, Rt Hon Chief Justice Dame Sian Elias, Sir Robert Jones, Brian Edwards, Dame Kiri Te Kanawa, Rt Hon Jenny Shipley, Hon Annette King MP, Sir Roger Douglas, Rt Hon Anand Satyanand, Sir Geoffrey Palmer, Christine Rankin, Judge Williamson, Hon Phil Goff MP, Hon Justice Eichelbaum, Frank Haigh, Hugh Fletcher, Hon John Banks and His Honour Judge Gittos.
>
> 7. That the proceedings as brought by the plaintiff in the Disputes Tribunal and this Honourable Court have caused the defendant to spend a large amount of his professional time replying to the outrageous lies by the plaintiff.
>
> 8. The defendant has also been compelled to call professional witnesses.
>
> 9. The plaintiff physically assaulted a professional defence witness, namely, Christopher Reid, and has made untrue but hurtful allegations against other defence witnesses.
>
> 10. The plaintiff's conduct throughout these proceedings has been shameful and deceitful.
>
> 11. The plaintiff has in a similar fashion endeavoured to dishonestly obtain money from several other people by providing building plans without instructions and subsequently threatening to sue for fees he is not entitled to.
>
> **The defendant therefore counterclaims** against the plaintiff for judgment against the plaintiff as follows:
>
> a. The sum of Twenty Thousand Dollars ($20,000.00) for the defendant's professional time expended as aforesaid;
>
> b. A further sum to be assessed for the costs of the defendant's witnesses;
>
> c. Any further or other relief that this Honourable Court deems just and equitable.

[21] I discuss this pleading later.

26 August 2009 conference

[22] In a document lodged on the day of a later scheduled 26 August 2009 conference, a document described as "statement of claim for the evaluation conference of 26 August 2009", Mr Hallett (for HDS), after rehearsing the essence of the fees claim in the first paragraph and expressing his opposition to the suggestion of the earlier Judge that the fees and defamation claims might be heard on the same occasion, set about expressing a ragbag of insulting observations about that judge before returning to his vilification of Mr Williams.

[23] This, the most recent, "statement of claim" was supported by an affidavit of Mr Hallett that opened with these prefatory words:

> I, a free man, known as, **Joseph-Gregory** of patronymical consanguity comes from the family of Hallett under the tribes of Israel, that name a memorial to my immortal-living-breathing-soul of mankind dwelling in the greater universe, for now sojourning at Parnell of Auckland (hereinafter also known as "Undersigned", "HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LIMITED", "me", "myself", "I", "Greg") do under my own four-fold commercial liability (as per my Indemnity Bond attached), by My mark and seal in red ink, sincerely avow that in my correct and proper public capacity as a heir and beneficiary to the Original Jurisdiction, being of age of majority, competent to testify (if required), a self realised free man born upon, and of the land (not in the Admiralty), do affirm to the Almighty Creator whom most people call God, through Jesus Christ, His only begotten Son with him as My principal witness, doing so, as I shall be judged at the great Day of Judgement
>
> …

[24] Mr Hallett wanted the fees claim returned to the Disputes Tribunal to continue where it had left off (which the pertinent Act does not permit) and proposed that the defamation claim be abandoned or "go through a judicial review".

[25] In terms of remedies, there was now a claim for $7 million in compensation for "financial assassinations" and the observation that "all that has occurred to date is processional distraction, replete with the assistance of compromised members of the judiciary".

[26] On the topic of the judiciary I note that, five days before the 26 August conference, Mr Hallett had filed a memorandum, variously absurd in its content and insulting of the judiciary from the Chief Justice down, a memorandum that - the further one read it - was one drawn deeper into an unhelpful morass.

[27] During the conference itself Mr Hallett handed up another document called "discovery for evaluation conference of 26 August 2009 (Williams)", seeking such as materials concerning Terry Sinclair/Clark, Mr Asia, Mr Big and others as well as

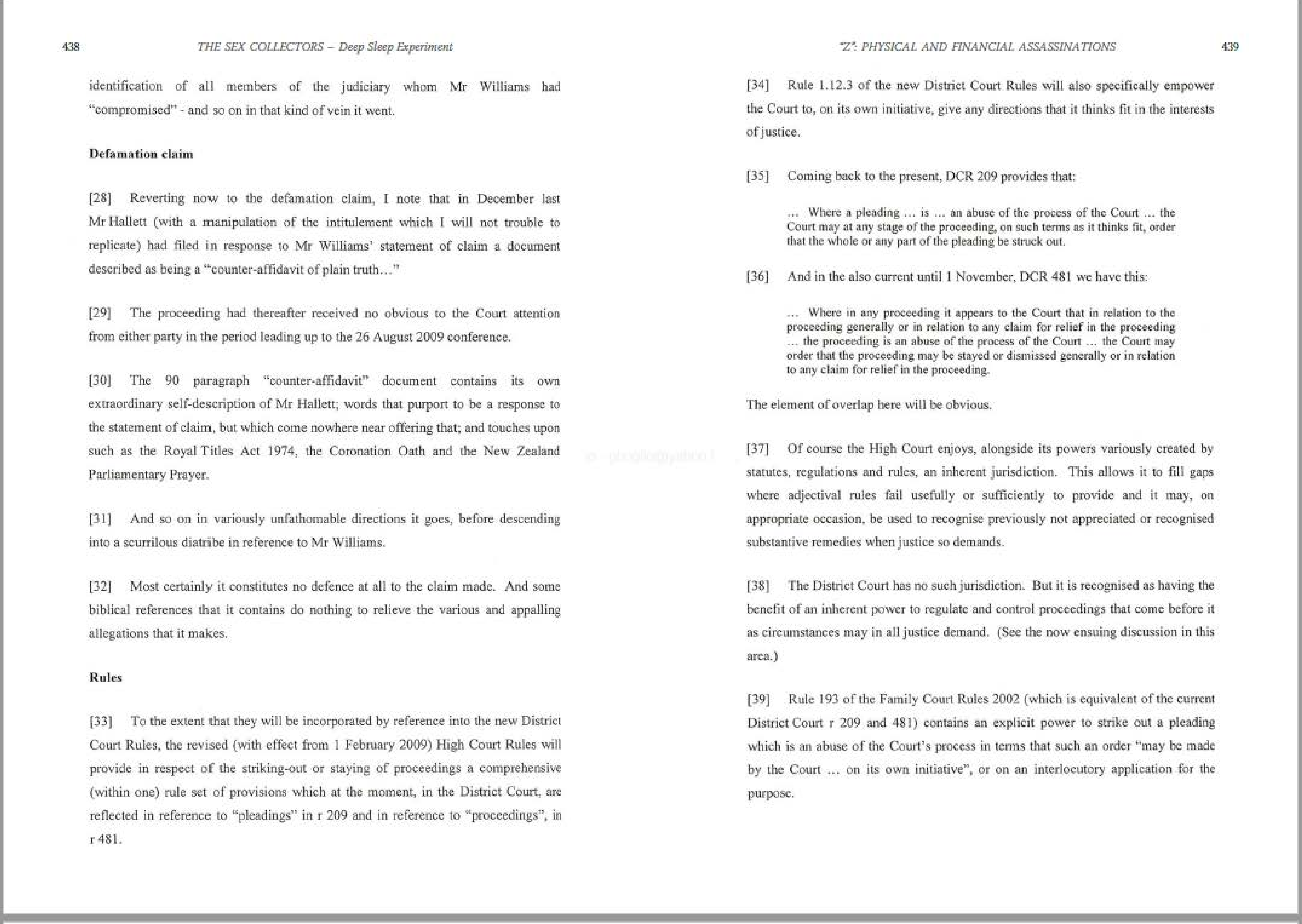

identification of all members of the judiciary whom Mr Williams had "compromised" - and so on in that kind of vein it went.

Defamation claim

[28] Reverting now to the defamation claim, I note that in December last Mr Hallett (with a manipulation of the intitulement which I will not trouble to replicate) had filed in response to Mr Williams' statement of claim a document described as being a "counter-affidavit of plain truth…"

[29] The proceeding had thereafter received no obvious to the Court attention from either party in the period leading up to the 26 August 2009 conference.

[30] The 90 paragraph "counter-affidavit" document contains its own extraordinary self-description of Mr Hallett; words that purport to be a response to the statement of claim, but which come nowhere near offering that; and touches upon such as the Royal Titles Act 1974, the Coronation Oath and the New Zealand Parliamentary Prayer.

[31] And so on in variously unfathomable directions it goes, before descending into a scurrilous diatribe in reference to Mr Williams.

[32] Most certainly it constitutes no defence at all to the claim made. And some biblical references that it contains do nothing to relieve the various and appalling allegations that it makes.

Rules

[33] To the extent that they will be incorporated by reference into the new District Court Rules, the revised (with effect from 1 February 2009) High Court Rules will provide in respect of the striking-out or staying of proceedings a comprehensive (within one) rule set of provisions which at the moment, in the District Court, are reflected in reference to "pleadings" in r 209 and in reference to "proceedings", in r 481.

[34] Rule 1.12.3 of the new District Court Rules will also specifically empower the Court to, on its own initiative, give any directions that it thinks fit in the interests of justice.

[35] Coming back to the present, DCR 209 provides that:

> … Where a pleading … is … an abuse of the process of the Court … the Court may at any stage of the proceeding, on such terms as it thinks fit, order that the whole or any part of the pleading be struck out.

[36] And in the also current until 1 November, DCR 481 we have this:

> … Where in any proceeding it appears to the Court that in relation to the proceeding generally or in relation to any claim for relief in the proceeding … the proceeding is an abuse of the process of the Court … the Court may order that the proceeding may be stayed or dismissed generally or in relation to any claim for relief in the proceeding.

The element of overlap here will be obvious.

[37] Of course the High Court enjoys, alongside its powers variously created by statutes, regulations and rules, an inherent jurisdiction. This allows it to fill gaps where adjectival rules fail usefully or sufficiently to provide and it may, on appropriate occasion, be used to recognise previously not appreciated or recognised substantive remedies when justice so demands.

[38] The District Court has no such jurisdiction. But it is recognised as having the benefit of an inherent power to regulate and control proceedings that come before it as circumstances may in all justice demand. (See the now ensuing discussion in this area.)

[39] Rule 193 of the Family Court Rules 2002 (which is equivalent of the current District Court r 209 and 481) contains an explicit power to strike out a pleading which is an abuse of the Court's process in terms that such an order "may be made by the Court … on its own initiative", or on an interlocutory application for the purpose.

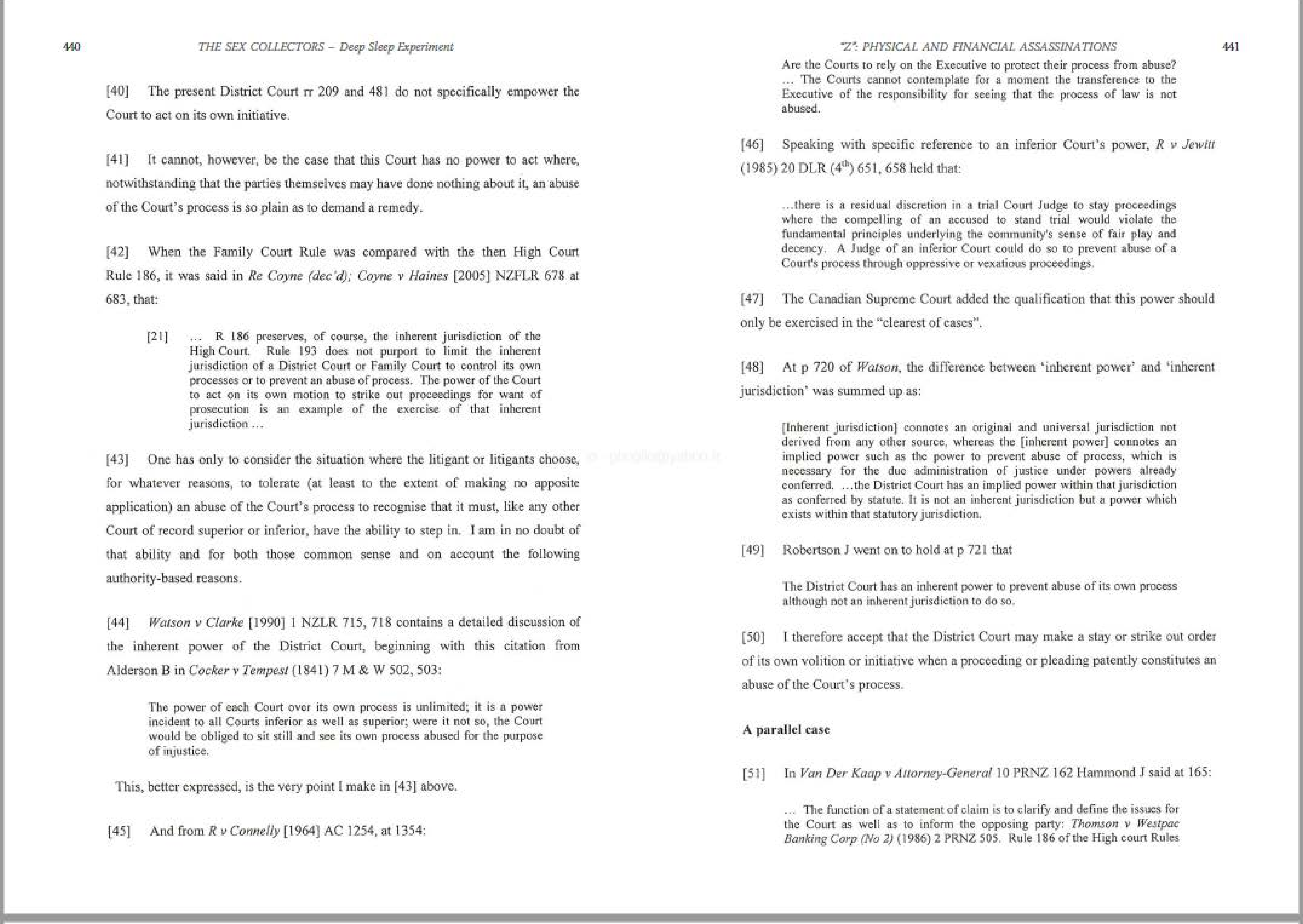

[40] The present District Court rr 209 and 481 do not specifically empower the Court to act on its own initiative.

[41] It cannot, however, be the case that this Court has no power to act where, notwithstanding that the parties themselves may have done nothing about it, an abuse of the Court's process is so plain as to demand a remedy.

[42] When the Family Court Rule was compared with the then High Court Rule 186, it was said in *Re Coyne (dec'd); Coyne v Haines* [2005] NZFLR 678 at 683, that:

> [21] … R 186 preserves, of course, the inherent jurisdiction of the High Court. Rule 193 does not purport to limit the inherent jurisdiction of a District Court or Family Court to control its own processes or to prevent an abuse of process. The power of the Court to act on its own motion to strike out proceedings for want of prosecution is an example of the exercise of that inherent jurisdiction …

[43] One has only to consider the situation where the litigant or litigants choose, for whatever reasons, to tolerate (at least to the extent of making no apposite application) an abuse of the Court's process to recognise that it must, like any other Court of record superior or inferior, have the ability to step in. I am in no doubt of that ability and for both those common sense and on account the following authority-based reasons.

[44] *Watson v Clarke* [1990] 1 NZLR 715, 718 contains a detailed discussion of the inherent power of the District Court, beginning with this citation from Alderson B in *Cocker v Tempest* (1841) 7 M & W 502, 503:

> The power of each Court over its own process is unlimited; it is a power incident to all Courts inferior as well as superior; were it not so, the Court would be obliged to sit still and see its own process abused for the purpose of injustice.

This, better expressed, is the very point I make in [43] above.

[45] And from *R v Connelly* [1964] AC 1254, at 1354:

> Are the Courts to rely on the Executive to protect their process from abuse? … The Courts cannot contemplate for a moment the transference to the Executive of the responsibility for seeing that the process of law is not abused.

[46] Speaking with specific reference to an inferior Court's power, *R v Jewitt* (1985) 20 DLR (4th) 651, 658 held that:

> …there is a residual discretion in a trial Court Judge to stay proceedings where the compelling of an accused to stand trial would violate the fundamental principles underlying the community's sense of fair play and decency. A Judge of an inferior Court could do so to prevent abuse of a Court's process through oppressive or vexatious proceedings.

[47] The Canadian Supreme Court added the qualification that this power should only be exercised in the "clearest of cases".

[48] At p 720 of *Watson*, the difference between 'inherent power' and 'inherent jurisdiction' was summed up as:

> [Inherent jurisdiction] connotes an original and universal jurisdiction not derived from any other source, whereas the [inherent power] connotes an implied power such as the power to prevent abuse of process, which is necessary for the due administration of justice under powers already conferred. …the District Court has an implied power within that jurisdiction as conferred by statute. It is not an inherent jurisdiction but a power which exists within that statutory jurisdiction.

[49] Robertson J went on to hold at p 721 that

> The District Court has an inherent power to prevent abuse of its own process although not an inherent jurisdiction to do so.

[50] I therefore accept that the District Court may make a stay or strike out order of its own volition or initiative when a proceeding or pleading patently constitutes an abuse of the Court's process.

A parallel case

[51] In *Van Der Kaap v Attorney-General* 10 PRNZ 162 Hammond J said at 165:

> … The function of a statement of claim is to clarify and define the issues for the Court as well as to inform the opposing party: *Thomson v Westpac Banking Corp (No 2)* (1986) 2 PRNZ 505. Rule 186 of the High court Rules

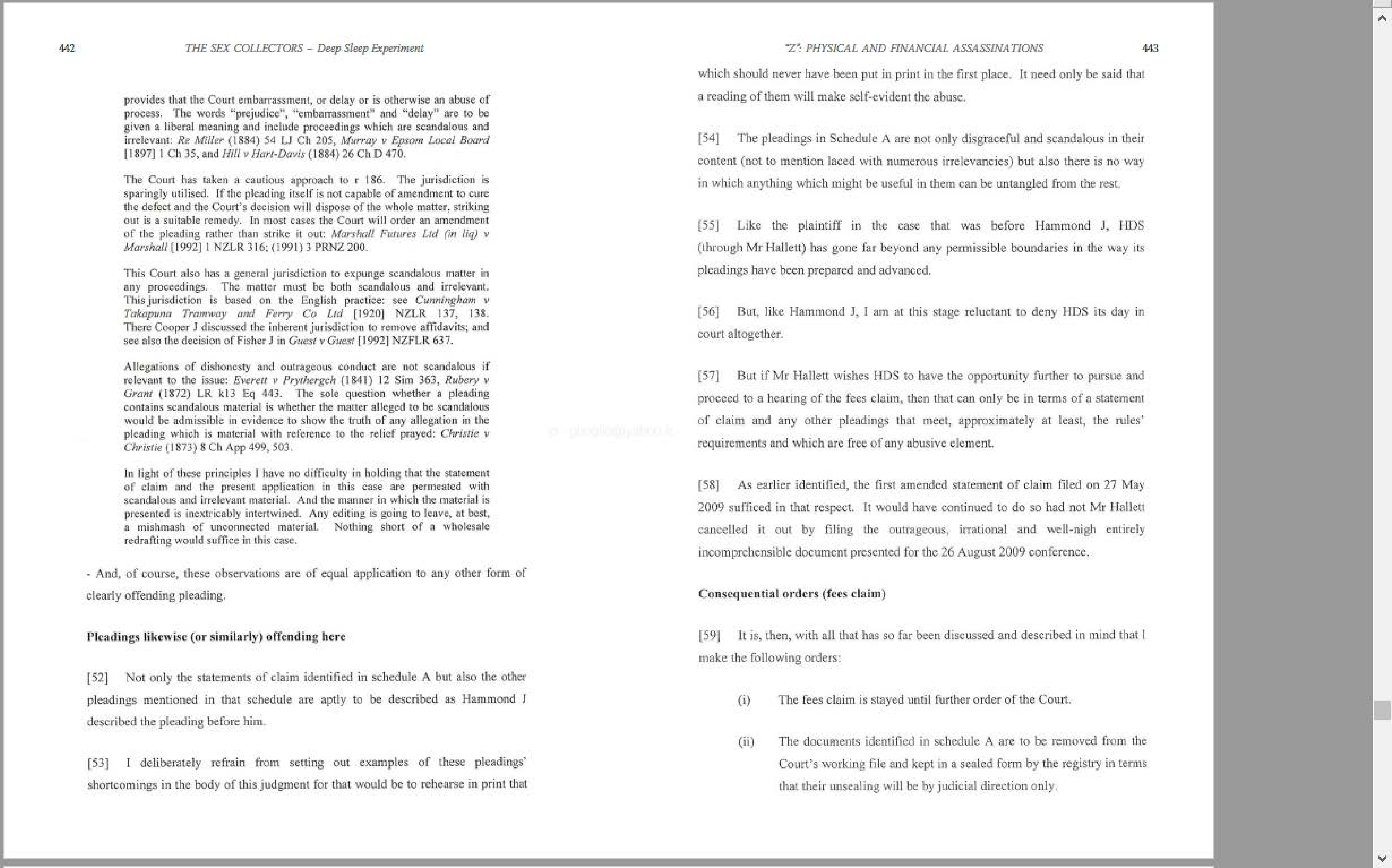

> provides that the Court embarrassment, or delay or is otherwise an abuse of process. The words "prejudice", "embarrassment" and "delay" are to be given a liberal meaning and include proceedings which are scandalous and irrelevant: *Re Miller* (1884) 54 LJ Ch 205, *Murray v Epsom Local Board* [1897] 1 Ch 35, and *Hill v Hart-Davis* (1884) 26 Ch D 470.
>
> The Court has taken a cautious approach to r 186. The jurisdiction is sparingly utilised. If the pleading itself is not capable of amendment to cure the defect and the Court's decision will dispose of the whole matter, striking out is a suitable remedy. In most cases the Court will order an amendment of the pleading rather than strike it out: *Marshall Futures Ltd (in liq) v Marshall* [1992] 1 NZLR 316; (1991) 3 PRNZ 200.
>
> This Court also has a general jurisdiction to expunge scandalous matter in any proceedings. The matter must be both scandalous and irrelevant. This jurisdiction is based on the English practice: see *Cunningham v Takapuna Tramway and Ferry Co Ltd* [1920] NZLR 137, 138. There Cooper J discussed the inherent jurisdiction to remove affidavits; and see also the decision of Fisher J in *Guest v Guest* [1992] NZFLR 637.
>
> Allegations of dishonesty and outrageous conduct are not scandalous if relevant to the issue: *Everett v Prythergch* (1841) 12 Sim 363, *Rubery v Grant* (1872) LR k13 Eq 443. The sole question whether a pleading contains scandalous material is whether the matter alleged to be scandalous would be admissible in evidence to show the truth of any allegation in the pleading which is material with reference to the relief prayed: *Christie v Christie* (1873) 8 Ch App 499, 503.
>
> In light of these principles I have no difficulty in holding that the statement of claim and the present application in this case are permeated with scandalous and irrelevant material. And the manner in which the material is presented is inextricably intertwined. Any editing is going to leave, at best, a mishmash of unconnected material. Nothing short of a wholesale redrafting would suffice in this case.

- And, of course, these observations are of equal application to any other form of clearly offending pleading.

Pleadings likewise (or similarly) offending here

[52] Not only the statements of claim identified in schedule A but also the other pleadings mentioned in that schedule are aptly to be described as Hammond J described the pleading before him.

[53] I deliberately refrain from setting out examples of these pleadings' shortcomings in the body of this judgment for that would be to rehearse in print that which should never have been put in print in the first place. It need only be said that a reading of them will make self-evident the abuse.

[54] The pleadings in Schedule A are not only disgraceful and scandalous in their content (not to mention laced with numerous irrelevancies) but also there is no way in which anything which might be useful in them can be untangled from the rest.

[55] Like the plaintiff in the case that was before Hammond J, HDS (through Mr Hallett) has gone far beyond any permissible boundaries in the way its pleadings have been prepared and advanced.

[56] But, like Hammond J, I am at this stage reluctant to deny HDS its day in court altogether.

[57] But if Mr Hallett wishes HDS to have the opportunity further to pursue and proceed to a hearing of the fees claim, then that can only be in terms of a statement of claim and any other pleadings that meet, approximately at least, the rules' requirements and which are free of any abusive element.

[58] As earlier identified, the first amended statement of claim filed on 27 May 2009 sufficed in that respect. It would have continued to do so had not Mr Hallett cancelled it out by filing the outrageous, irrational and well-nigh entirely incomprehensible document presented for the 26 August 2009 conference.

Consequential orders (fees claim)

[59] It is, then, with all that has so far been discussed and described in mind that I make the following orders:

(i) The fees claim is stayed until further order of the Court.

(ii) The documents identified in schedule A are to be removed from the Court's working file and kept in a sealed form by the registry in terms that their unsealing will be by judicial direction only.

(iii) If HDS wishes to continue to pursue its fees claim then it will have the opportunity to resurrect the statement of claim that was filed on 27 May 2009 which, whatever its flaws, would suffice for the litigation purpose.

(iv) That opportunity may be exercised by HDS signifying to the Court that it so requests. Such request is to be in writing and entirely unembellished with comment or observation beyond the fact of the request, and a copy of same is to be served on Mr Williams.

(v) That request is then to be referred to me or, should I then be unavailable for a significant period of time, to the Civil Liaison Judge. If it is in order (including in terms of a complete absence of such embellishment) I will (and I anticipate that Judge would) issue a minute formally recognising that the 27 May 2009 statement of claim is once more extant.

(vi) Given the scandalous nature of much other material to be found within the court files (particularly the materials accumulated when the fees claim was before the Disputes Tribunal) I direct that any search of the fees claim court file (including the Tribunal file) is to be restricted to any the parties to this proceeding.

Defence to fees claim

[60] Should HDS choose to take advantage of (iv) above, the issue of Mr Williams' statement of defence will arise.

[61] The previously discussed defence and counter-claim filed on 2 March 2009 remains as the only defence document on the file.

[62] As has already been identified, the essence of that defence is that the bargain made between Mr Williams and HDS was one quite different from that asserted by the latter.

[63] In that state of affairs, and to save further time and expense, the Court would be content to accept paras 1-5 of that pleading as an adequate reply to the 27 May 2009 statement of claim.

[64] The same cannot readily be said of the rest of that pleading, i.e. paras 6-11 inclusive of same.

[65] The matters set out there do not identify any obvious cause of action such as would justify the counter-claim supposedly pleaded.

[66] To the contrary, they appear to show no better than the case of a defendant falling into the trap of reacting viscerally to, instead of - if not seeking to strike out – at least sensibly ignoring the shortcomings of, the opponent's pleading efforts. For example, but within the confines of s 37 of the Evidence Act 2006, veracity is an evidential, not a pleading, point.

[67] So should the Court receive, and then accede, to a request for the fees claim to continue (advice of which events will of course will be communicated to Mr Williams) he should consider the wisdom of filing and serving a defence to the 27 May 2009 statement of claim confined to an expression of the paras 1-5 that have been noted.

Defamation proceeding orders

[68] The pleading of Mr Hallett in issue here is what I take to be intended to be his statement of defence, i.e. the document filed on 15 December 2008 described as a "counter-affidavit of plain truth".

[69] It comprises a 90 paragraph meaningless diatribe including, to the extent that any kind of sense can be made of them, a variety of extraordinary allegations concerning Mr Williams, all tortuously set out and with none of them exhibiting any apparent sign of attachment to reality.

[70] It does not come within anything resembling even touching distance of a proper and useful statement of defence to a claim in defamation. Every present sign

is that its author was not so much intent on providing such a response as on seeking to take advantage of the privilege attaching to court pleadings to vilify the opposing litigant.

[71] It is another document self-evidently to be recognised as abusing the court's process. And I so say with a complete consciousness that he or she who brings a claim in defamation thereby puts character and reputation on trial.

[72] At a fundamental level, the pleading in question fails to match any of the most basic requirements of a defence to a defamation claim where (as is the presumed intention) truth is asserted as a defence.

[73] Defamation pleadings, though not a matter of entirely arcane science, are certainly a matter of art. Their preparation necessitates a good understanding of a relative host of relevant principles and points.

[74] Mr Hallett would be well advised to seek competent in the field of defamation legal advice before attempting another pleading. At the very least he should search out relevant texts on the topic and consider the Defamation Act 1992.

Removal of "counter-affidavit of plain truth" document

[75] I direct the removal from the defamation claim court file of the "counter-affidavit of plain truth" document and that it be held on the same terms as are set out in sub-clause (ii) of para [59] above.

Opportunity for Mr Hallett

[76] I will give Mr Hallett 30 working days from but exclusive of the date of this minute within which to:

(i) Take advice concerning any defence he may have to the defamation claim or to at least properly research, and thus identify, any matters which might properly be raised by way of defence; and

(ii) Lodge a pleading which meets the particular requirements of a statement of defence in a defamation proceeding and the generally relevant rules of court.

[77] Any pleading thus filed is not to be served until I have (or as the case may be the Civil Liaison Judge has) seen and approved same in chambers as fit for filing.

[78] So the registrar is to place any such before me (or, in my absence, the Civil Liaison Judge) immediately same is lodged in court.

[79] If there is any doubt as to the appropriateness or propriety of the document, I may (and I expect that the Civil Liaison Judge would) then direct service of same as a prelude to an opportunity for further argument before the Court permits a defence to be advanced on the basis thereof.

Roderick Joyce QC
District Court Judge

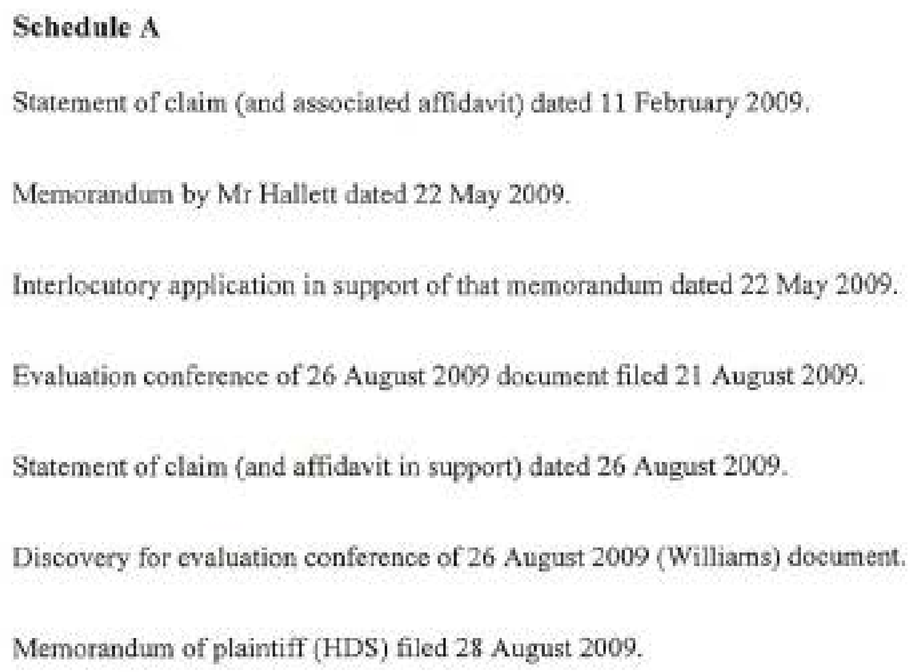

Schedule A

Statement of claim (and associated affidavit) dated 11 February 2009.

Memorandum by Mr Hallett dated 22 May 2009.

Interlocutory application in support of that memorandum dated 22 May 2009.

Evaluation conference of 26 August 2009 document filed 21 August 2009.

Statement of claim (and affidavit in support) dated 26 August 2009.

Discovery for evaluation conference of 26 August 2009 (Williams) document.

Memorandum of plaintiff (HDS) filed 28 August 2009.

List of Documents, sealed & suppressed by Auckland District Court Judge Roderick Joyce. It's not that these documents were wrong in their content, it's just that they were too difficult for Williams to sidestep which was too embarrassing for the Judiciary to handle. PAWQC was backed into a corner admitting he was Mr Asia, so the Courts did the denying for him.

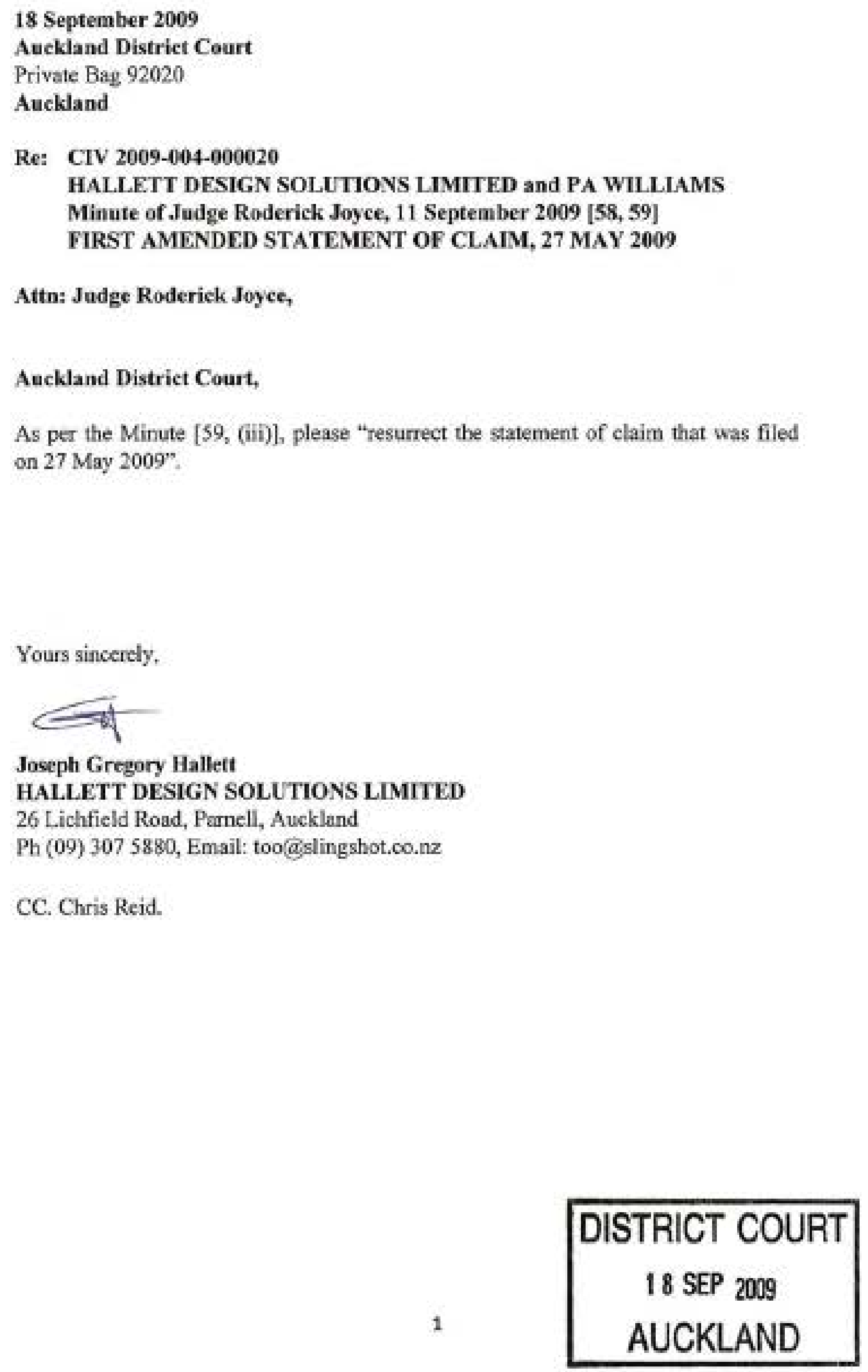

18 September 2009
Auckland District Court
Private Bag 92020
Auckland

Re: CIV 2009-004-000020
HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LIMITED and PA WILLIAMS
Minute of Judge Roderick Joyce, 11 September 2009 [58, 59]
FIRST AMENDED STATEMENT OF CLAIM, 27 MAY 2009

Attn: Judge Roderick Joyce,

Auckland District Court,

As per the Minute [59, (iii)], please "resurrect the statement of claim that was filed on 27 May 2009".

Yours sincerely,

Joseph Gregory Hallett
HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LIMITED
26 Lichfield Road, Parnell, Auckland
Ph (09) 307 5880, Email: too@slingshot.co.nz

CC. Chris Reid.

1

DISTRICT COURT
18 SEP 2009
AUCKLAND

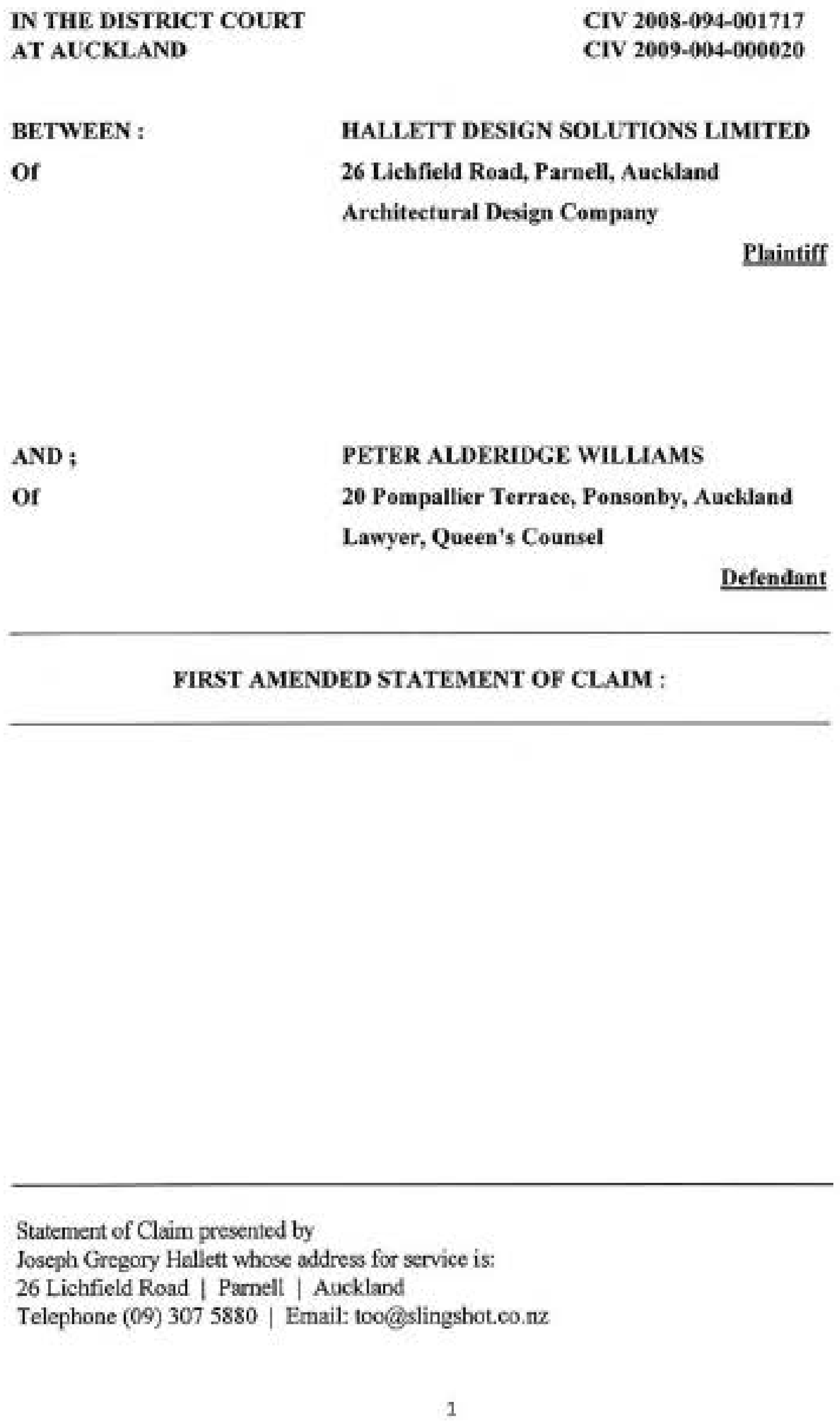

IN THE DISTRICT COURT
AT AUCKLAND

CIV 2008-094-001717
CIV 2009-004-000020

BETWEEN : **HALLETT DESIGN SOLUTIONS LIMITED**
Of **26 Lichfield Road, Parnell, Auckland**
Architectural Design Company

Plaintiff

AND ; **PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS**
Of **20 Pompallier Terrace, Ponsonby, Auckland**
Lawyer, Queen's Counsel

Defendant

FIRST AMENDED STATEMENT OF CLAIM :

Statement of Claim presented by
Joseph Gregory Hallett whose address for service is:
26 Lichfield Road | Parnell | Auckland
Telephone (09) 307 5880 | Email: too@slingshot.co.nz

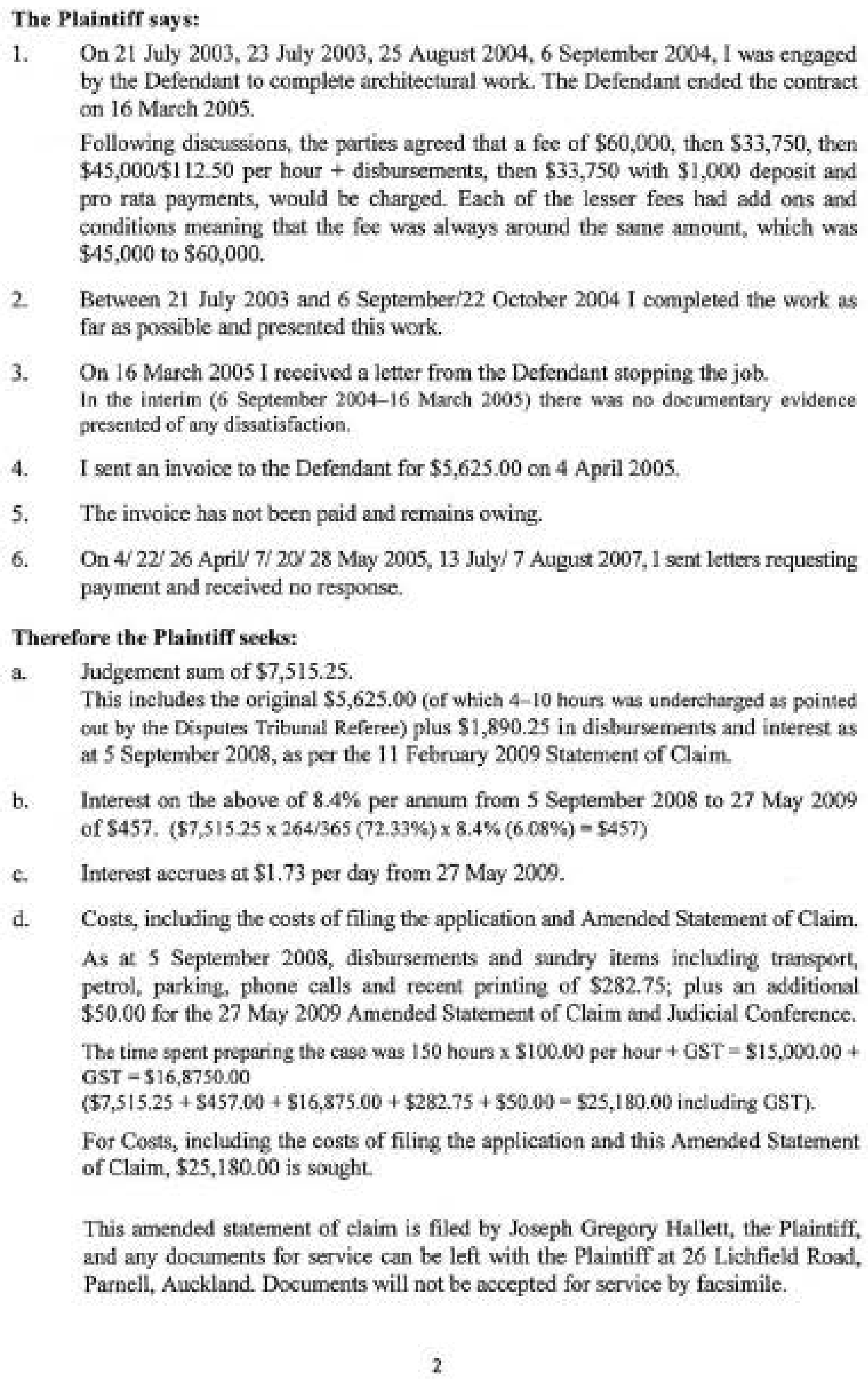

The Plaintiff says:

1. On 21 July 2003, 23 July 2003, 25 August 2004, 6 September 2004, I was engaged by the Defendant to complete architectural work. The Defendant ended the contract on 16 March 2005.

   Following discussions, the parties agreed that a fee of $60,000, then $33,750, then $45,000/$112.50 per hour + disbursements, then $33,750 with $1,000 deposit and pro rata payments, would be charged. Each of the lesser fees had add ons and conditions meaning that the fee was always around the same amount, which was $45,000 to $60,000.

2. Between 21 July 2003 and 6 September/22 October 2004 I completed the work as far as possible and presented this work.

3. On 16 March 2005 I received a letter from the Defendant stopping the job.
   In the interim (6 September 2004–16 March 2005) there was no documentary evidence presented of any dissatisfaction.

4. I sent an invoice to the Defendant for $5,625.00 on 4 April 2005.

5. The invoice has not been paid and remains owing.

6. On 4/ 22/ 26 April/ 7/ 20/ 28 May 2005, 13 July/ 7 August 2007, I sent letters requesting payment and received no response.

Therefore the Plaintiff seeks:

a. Judgement sum of $7,515.25.
   This includes the original $5,625.00 (of which 4–10 hours was undercharged as pointed out by the Disputes Tribunal Referee) plus $1,890.25 in disbursements and interest as at 5 September 2008, as per the 11 February 2009 Statement of Claim.

b. Interest on the above of 8.4% per annum from 5 September 2008 to 27 May 2009 of $457. ($7,515.25 x 264/365 (72.33%) x 8.4% (6.08%) = $457)

c. Interest accrues at $1.73 per day from 27 May 2009.

d. Costs, including the costs of filing the application and Amended Statement of Claim.

   As at 5 September 2008, disbursements and sundry items including transport, petrol, parking, phone calls and recent printing of $282.75; plus an additional $50.00 for the 27 May 2009 Amended Statement of Claim and Judicial Conference.

   The time spent preparing the case was 150 hours x $100.00 per hour + GST = $15,000.00 + GST = $16,8750.00
   ($7,515.25 + $457.00 + $16,875.00 + $282.75 + $50.00 = $25,180.00 including GST).

   For Costs, including the costs of filing the application and this Amended Statement of Claim, $25,180.00 is sought.

This amended statement of claim is filed by Joseph Gregory Hallett, the Plaintiff, and any documents for service can be left with the Plaintiff at 26 Lichfield Road, Parnell, Auckland. Documents will not be accepted for service by facsimile.

A Short History of Libel and Defamation

Instead of Hallett writing "[51] scandalous and irrelevant material beyond any permissible boundaries", Williams has enacted "scandalous and irrelevant material beyond any permissible boundaries" for any member of the Court.

Hallett was just the historian to Williams crimes. That Williams QC rose to have any form of reputation was at the fault of the judiciary, the media, police and politicians. Somehow Williams appears to have controlled these people by shame.

It would appear that Peter Williams QC is a Sex Collector.

We should not forget that the New Zealand Courts and Media are dominated by Jews who use Freemasons and Feminists as their servants, who are in turn controlled by the Kol Nidre where "an oath shall not be an oath" and "they shall have no force and effect", and therefore, nor can the law be true – hence Williams' reputation is the opposite of his accomplishments.

This is further backed up by the suppression of these Court Documents by both the High Court and the District Court, where High Court Judge Stevens writes: "I direct that all exhibits be sealed, not to be opened except by a High Court Judge or Court of Appeal; and District Court Judge Joyce writes: "The documents are to be removed from the Court's working file".

When the New Zealand Judiciary judges its own members it's a case of: **"Hear no evil. See no evil. Speak no evil"**. This is the mentality of someone/ a group/ a "Gang" extremely controlled by others. In this case, the unseen hand that wroughts havoc on the world, and denies our place in it.

Conversely, those who don't deserve such a place, are given it.

As such, the Court has ruled that no defamation information against Peter Williams can be presented in Court, as it is "scandalous".

Therefore no defense can be presented in Court to exculpate[2] that defamation or libel.
Therefore, either the Court is not functioning, and needs and overhaul; or
The court needs to drop Williams and their support of his case in order to preserve itself.

Libel was originally removed from the New Zealand law books due to Prime Minister David Lange receiving felatio from a transvestite, who attempted to extort favours from him, and was then murdered. When Lange found out, he broke down and cried and was useless thereafter. Parliament didn't want to face the accusations on that one, as truth was sufficient defense, so they removed libel, instead of the Prime Minister, and the Courts followed.

That just raised the difference between 'libel' and 'defamation'.

In the functioning of a Jewish-dominated Court the opposite of truth prevails (Mafia), and Mafia Justice (that of a Gang) is applied to those who tell the truth, "so help me God".

Peter Williams QC has been defrauding the New Zealand Judiciary by claiming to be a Queen's Counsel when he is in fact a poodle, or more aptly – a heroin-trafficking poodle-faker. As an embarrassment to the Court, he is an abuse of Judicial process.

"Court embarrassment is an abuse of process."[3]

If you've ever had scabies, then you'll know what its like to read Peter Williams' latest book, *Petals of Memories*.

---

[2] Exculpate: To clear from a charge of guilt or fault; free from blame; vindicate.

[3] Judge R Joyce, *Hallett Design Solutions Limited v PA Williams*, 2009, CIV 2009-004-000020, Minute of 11 September 2009, Auckland District Court, citing High Court Rule 186, Family Court Rule 193, Canadian Supreme Court; District Court cases: *Watson v Clarke* in 1990, citing *Cocker v Tempest*, 1841; *R v Connelly*, 1964; *R v Jewitt*, 1985; *Van Der Kaap v Attorney-General* citing *Thompson v Westpac*, 1986, citing High Court Rule 186.

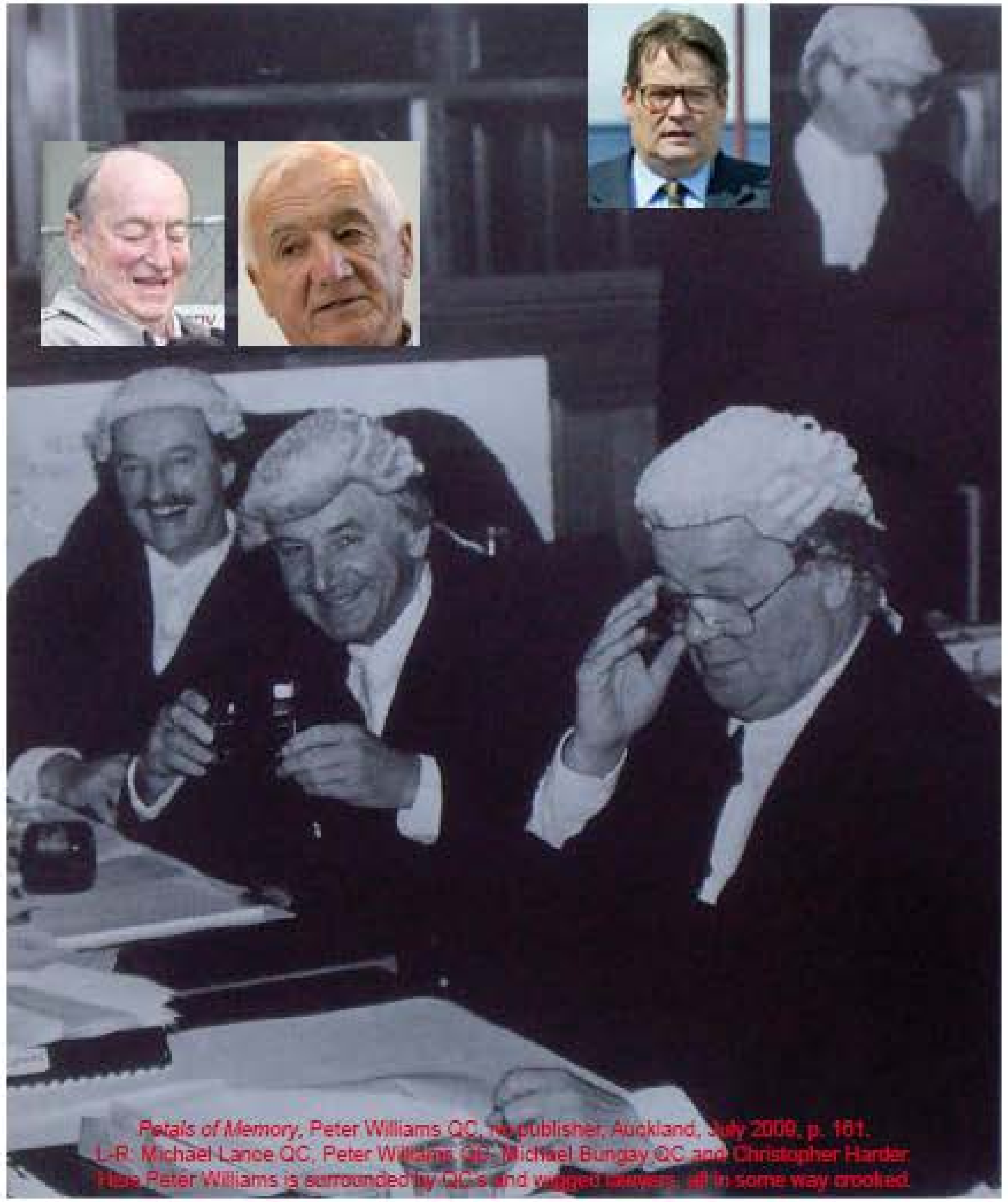

Petals of Memory, Peter Williams QC, no publisher, Auckland, July 2009, p. 161.
L-R: Michael Lance QC, Peter Williams QC, Michael Bungay QC and Christopher Harder.
How Peter Williams is surrounded by QC's and wigged lawyers, all in some way crooked.

Michael Lance QC became a judge and is now up on charges for key scratching multiple vehicles with a deep vengeance. "Judge Michael Lance QC has a propensity for vigilante aggression. A talkback host criticised Judge Lance's handling of a murder threat case in 2002. Judge Lance then sued Radio Pacific for defamation extracting an apology and an out-of-court settlement of $40,000. In 2005, Northland farmer Paul McIntyre was on trial for reckless use of a shotgun after he shot and injured a man for attempting to steal a quad bike off his farm. Ahead of the trial, Judge Lance directed a jury to find a 'not guilty' verdict. In 2007, Craig Busch – 'The Lion Man' – caught his partner having sex with another couple, then fractured her vertebrae and gave her injuries requiring seven stitches. Judge Michael Lance QC called Busch's actions 'human and understandable' and was then appointed Deputy Police Complaints Authority Judge (2007).

"Judge Michael Lance QC is under criminal investigation for allegedly vandalising the car of Auckland businessman Richard Cummins on 23 March 2009 causing $4,000 in damage. The car was parked in front of Judge's apartment block in Browns Bay, Auckland, and keyed deep on various panels 21 times by Judge Michael Lance QC. Opposite in a café, two witnesses watched. Judge Lance denied responsibility, despite the eyewitness accounts and having been subject to criminal investigation before for simiilar acts in the same place. An unidentified judge then ordered the yellow no parking lines in front of his apartment blacked out by the Council. School bus yellow paint was then used to repaint the 'No Parking' lines. These investigations went nowhere, as the New Zealand Police failed to formally interview the Judge, at least within the first five weeks. Perhaps this is because Judge Lance is the Deputy Police Complaints Authority Judge."[4] So it's a case of I scratch the car, you scratch my back, and I'll scratch yours.

Michael Bungay QC was Wellington's biggest fitter. He would fit people up left right and centre and then do deals with the police to plead his minor charges in return for having people freed of murder charges. He was always being charged by the police for drunk driving, but his own prosecutions would go away whenever he talked someone into pleading guilty.

Michael Bungay wrote *Bungay on Murder*[5] with Brian Edwards who has a doctorate in Franz Kafka and specialises in a society with a labyrinth of stitch-ups that few can get out of . . . so they were kind of twins. Both were MI-6 agents taking instructions from the Queen on who to find guilty, and which British citizen was not to be named, charged, or convicted. It was the Colonies, what did you expect. Michael Bungay was then made a Queen's Counsel in 1986 and died in 1993 aged 59.

> Labyrinth: "An intricate combination of paths or passages in which it is difficult to find one's way, or reach the exit; a complicated tortuous arrangement; any confusingly intricate state of things or events; bewilderingly complex" . . . So nothing's changed.

Christopher Harder courtesy of ex-SIS: "Christopher Harder was originally a criminal in Vancouver, Canada that turned States Evidence in return for being swished to New Zealand. Usually it's the finally stages of a degree that are part of a swish process. Typically, a swish-client would be sent down to some University Professor and request a degree in New Zealand, and the Professor would say: 'This is very unethical, I cannot approve this.' The swish-client would then cry to the CIB and the CIB would blackmail the professor:

> 'Unfortunately, if you do not do this for us, we cannot save you from serious vice charges and we may have to prosecute you' – and then a deal would be done."

Christopher Harder defended the S&M accused in the high profile murder of masochist cricket umpire Peter Plumley-Walker at Huka Falls in February 1989.

> Peter Williams QC: "A thousand stories could be told of the tangled web that result in quite ordinary and essentially good people being arrested for criminal offences. Stories which then unraveled show how factors often completely beyond control of that person concerned have with a compelling inevitability pushed them over the edge in to the abyss of strange and peculiar activity."[6]

Christopher Harder was struck off on 8 February 2006. The charges included taking his defendant client to a brothel to simulate the sexual violence, drinking alcohol while taking instructions, sexual harassment, swearing at, and threatening clients, and lewd texts.

---

[4] www.kiwisfirst.com, JUDGE LANCE'S WRATH, 27 April 2009, paraphrased. See site for further details, updates and maybes.

[5] *Bungay on Murder*, Michael Bungay QC and Brian Edwards, NZ Whitcoulls Publishing, Christchurch, 267 pages, 1984.

[6] *Petals of Memory*, Peter Williams QC, p. 133.

In 2007, Harder was admitted to the Bar in Tonga despite still being struck off in New Zealand. New Zealand lawyers were furious. Harder replied:

> "I have an addictive personality and used substances and alcohol. I have been through alcohol, drug and anger management courses, and lost 15 kilograms. I will forever be a member of AA and I will forever be aware of the real risk of substance abuse in alcohol and how it could come back and haunt me and ruin my life if I didn't keep on my toes, 24 hours a day. Things caught up. It affected my judgment and I did some things I regret."[7]

On 12 December 2007 Harder applied to be restored to the New Zealand law practitioners roll using, essentially, Eb Leary's application, but this failed and his application was denied. On 23 June 2008, Harder applied again to be restored to the New Zealand law practitioners roll, but on seeing the new evidence to be introduced, he withdrew on 24 June 2008. He stood down as a lawyer and was STRUCK OFF on 8 February 2006 in exchange for his son (19) not being charged with possessing methamphetamine for supply in Pt. Chevalier, Auckland.

So Harder may have been right in that all the charges were minor, but his attitude was not. It was fuelled by alcohol, drugs, excess weight (his stomach used to walk around the corner before he did), and a desire to be at the centre of attention (appreciated, not derided), while rarely telling the truth – similar to Eb Leary, George William Stuart 'Billy' Boyd, Peter Williams, Michael Lance, and Michael Bungay.

Rarely, though sometimes, the mafia justice works both ways. So that's three down – Eb Leary, Billy Boyd, and Christopher Harder.

PAWQC on Stingy Law: "The house in Nelson Street was owned by a local lawyer, a Mr Taylor, and this was my first introduction to the law. My knowledge of Mr Taylor came for overhearing my parents talking – a source of knowledge much more used by children than is generally recognized. In my childish mind I perceived Mr Taylor to be a refined individual of wealth and influence, but mean and awkward to deal with. For instance, notwithstanding my father's dire forecasts of a serious accident, the lawyer and landlord would not pay to fix the rotten back step down which my mother regularly carried a large bag of washing to hang out to dry on the back-yard line. Another dramatic example of Mr Taylor's apparent meanness was his refusal to pay to keep our toilet in good working order. The latrine was at the end of a short verandah, which itself was often wet with rain. It was disappointing, to say the least, when having braved the elements to reach the toilet you found it blocked and overflowing with sewerage. Was this the inception of my views of a class war? I decided early that people with money were the enemy, and were invariably stingy and prickly to deal with. Fortunately, most of the local families did not fall into that category and life in Fielding for the most part was pretty good."[8]

Peter Williams (and Heeni Prozac Phillips) then became that lawyer – Mr Taylor – and when their rental in London Street, St Mary's Bay, Auckland developed a leak in the roof, they refused to pay to get it fixed (2007). It was winter when I saw it and the paint and plaster was falling off the ceiling, there were buckets around the place, the leak was right over the bed, the room became unliveable, the tenant tried every angle to get the roof fixed for at least two-and-a-half months, and finally had to move out.

Peter Williams had become Mr Taylor thru-and-thru. Williams had become the person with money who was the enemy of the people, stingy and prickly to deal with, and is now one of those families from Fielding and Ponsonby that is not very good.

---

[7] *New Zealand Herald, 'I've Changed, says disbarred lawyer', 20 October 2007.*

[8] *Petals of Memory*, Peter Williams QC, p. 167.

> **Williams:** "I could not help but compare the . . . backbiting and infighting of the legal profession . . . the justice system depends on the cynical premise that if its officers are motivated by the desire to see their own views prevail, then by grinding together these opposing factions a just result will emanate. In the courtroom contest, lawyers do not seek the truth but rather endeavour to advance the cause of the clients they represent. The judge sees his function as to avoid making any pronouncement or ruling that will render him or her vulnerable to having the decision overturned by an appellate court. The end result is the so-called adversarial system, where the courtoom is a battleground, presided over by a judicial officer, strongly motivated by a personal desire not to have his or her reputation or ego impaired by any later savage judgement by an appeal authority."[9]
>
> "The world has never really known a true system of justice and we in the western world are steering a course 180 degrees away from justice. Justice can never be achieved by sanctimonious judges or over-zealous police officers; justice must exist in the hearts of the people – all the people, right across the nation. Crime cannot be defined in Acts and Regulations, for the boundaries are too obscure. Greed, ambition, arrogance, pettiness and lack of sensitivity to the needs of others are all potential ingredients for criminal acts. How can these ever be legislated against?"[10]

Peter Williams QC Confesses to some of his Crimes: "At Wellington – each with a bottle of beer or two hidden under our jackets – we'd scale the back frence at the Basin Reserve and watch our heroes the All Blacks . . . One of our number would hire a room in a cheap hotel and the rest would smuggle ourselves in for a free night's accomodation . . . Raiding local orchards, chopping down farmer's trees without authority were also part of 'creating hell'."[11] "Making money even at an early age was important, and many schemes were hatched . . ."[12] [So I won't mention my conviction for car theft]. "The natural function of the young mind is to investigate and challenge."[13] "Later, as a young lawyer, I saw many young people appear in the law courts not because they were criminals but because their thirst for a daring experience brought them in to conflict with the law. It was often the young person with real spirit who was branded the outlaw, while the more cautious type achieved conventional success."[14]

Peter Williams QC as Champion Wet Blanket: "It is well known that humour, more than anything else in the human make-up, has the ability to rise above any situation, albeit temporarily. Humour can be warm and comforting . . ."[15] Sadly Williams has none. Here are some fine examples.

PAWQC: "Within our minds, but deep down and buried beneath life's everyday cares and joys Lies a murky cavern full of dark thoughts, but with shafts of light illuminating at times thoughts of great beauty. Here in this surreal wilderness great passions grow like giant sunflowers Huge golden petals arranged upon hearts of dazzling blackness. It is right here in this subterranean mystic land of ever-present imagination and adventure that poems are born. There is no rhyme nor reason nor rule nor dialectic discipline, but only freedom, flowing like a gushing mountain stream . . . The purple passage has no place unless inspired by honesty and drawn from that subterranean well of creativity . . . The poet has found the art of placing a shaft into his own ocean of creativity and drawing from it a poem for all to read . . . When the poet becomes king and rules the world with everlasting love and anger at injustice When the poet becomes king and rules the world without violence, greed or religious bigotry When the poet becomes king without pretence, without political ambition and conceit Then and only then will peace find its place and tolerance become a universal habit."[16] "Who better that the poet to lead the way and provide platonic concepts to inspire the just?" "The poet courageously stands in the front of the battle against injustice, greed and political ambition, armed with his pen and his honesty."[17] "Morality has no owner, no religious proprietor nor political boss . . ."[18] ". . . And in its place, one human race, living in eternal harmony. I see an end to fear and war, poverty, cruelty and discrimination The arms dealer, slaver, merchant banker all Reformed, now work for humanity's common good . . . Projects to employ the people, and restore universal Human rights . . . All peoples joined in dance and song, to celebrate good Will and happiness, that now appears supreme . . . Naturally adapted to their habitat, and encouraged by Human kindness This is a world where great love flourishes Laughter and joy abound Our earth is now restored to natural peace, and man His true nature exposed, caring for our world and all That dwells upon it."[19]

Sadly Peter Williams has none – no humour, no rise, and no humour to rise above any situation – not even temporarily. He is tinder dry and so wet he could be used in a drought to tell jokes until the rains came, but he wants to be the Poet King.

He's as dry as a biscuit, as honest as a politican hiding his fringe sexuality, with as much integrity as a lawyer profiting from the misuse of drugs, who turned appalling poet – like really bad, so bad it's time to hide from the Vogons[20] – and as alleviating as a drought in the desert. Certainly Peter Williams gets the brickbat for shitting gold bricks for the most decades . . . Ernestly he talks from his arse, cons with his head, and writes with his heart. He got everything wrong. If he had written with his arse, conned with his heart, and talked with his head, his friends would actually like him. As it is, people tolerate him calling them his "lifelong friend", but really he's been Mr Taylor all along.

Williams: ". . . possibly because of my deep internal depression that I was under at the time . . . I just could not respond."[21]

I got it right when I said: "Peter Williams looks and acts like Dr Smith off 'Lost in Space' – a bisexual misfit, not very good at anything, and always, always seeking attention."

"My father . . . was a first assistant at Lytton Street Primary School [in Fielding] . . . where I received all my primary school education."[22] Both parents were Methodist. "Was it the Jesuits who said give us the child for the first seven years and we'll give you the man?"[23] "I would identify with the NeverNever Land of Peter Pan and Wendy. Playing games is predominant in a child's world, as is having young friends to play with. A lonely child is a sad child, and to be left out of local peer groups even at a young stage can have lasting effects on the fast-developing personality of even a four-year-old child . . . Perhaps it is for these reasons that at the park, at the age of four, I was jumping to impress older children.

---

[9] *Petals of Memory*, Peter Williams QC, p. 180.
[10] *Ibid*, p. 160.
[11] *Ibid*, p. 169.
[12] *Ibid*, p. 168.
[13] *Ibid*.
[14] *Ibid*.
[15] *Ibid*, p. 179.

---

[16] *Petals of Memory*, Peter Williams QC, pp. 153-54.
[17] *Ibid*, p. 156.
[18] *Ibid*, p. 155.
[19] *Ibid*, pp. 141-42.
[20] Vogon Poetry is described as "the third worst poetry in the Universe". The Vogons are a fictional alien race from the planet Vogshere in *The Hitchhiker's Guide to the Galaxy*. Vogons are a slug-like vaguely humanoid bulky human with green skin, employed as galactic government bureaucrats notorious for their aggressive manner and terrible poetry.
[21] *Petals of Memory*, Peter Williams QC, p. 30.
[22] *Ibid*, p. 167.
[23] *Ibid*, p. 169.

Unfortunately, I hit a balustrade on the way down and broke a leg. Still, having a leg in plaster for several weeks had its advantages, as everyone gave me additional attention and affection . . . I received cherry gifts and salutations from the butcher, the baker and candle-stick maker.”[24]

If Williams thinks poets (and pets) should rule the world with Williams as king – and Williams is a terrible poet, half of these quotes were written out as poetry lines – then why is Williams in the media at all, and why is he a Queen's Counsel, when he is clearly Mr Asia's righthand man and head of the Mr Asia financial syndicate, and clearly responsible for the murders, and took the profits of the heroin trafficking, while dobbing in all others – bar his lawyer and financial agent Karen Soich . . . Is it not the case that this tinder dry lawyer and gang member is Mr Asia himself.

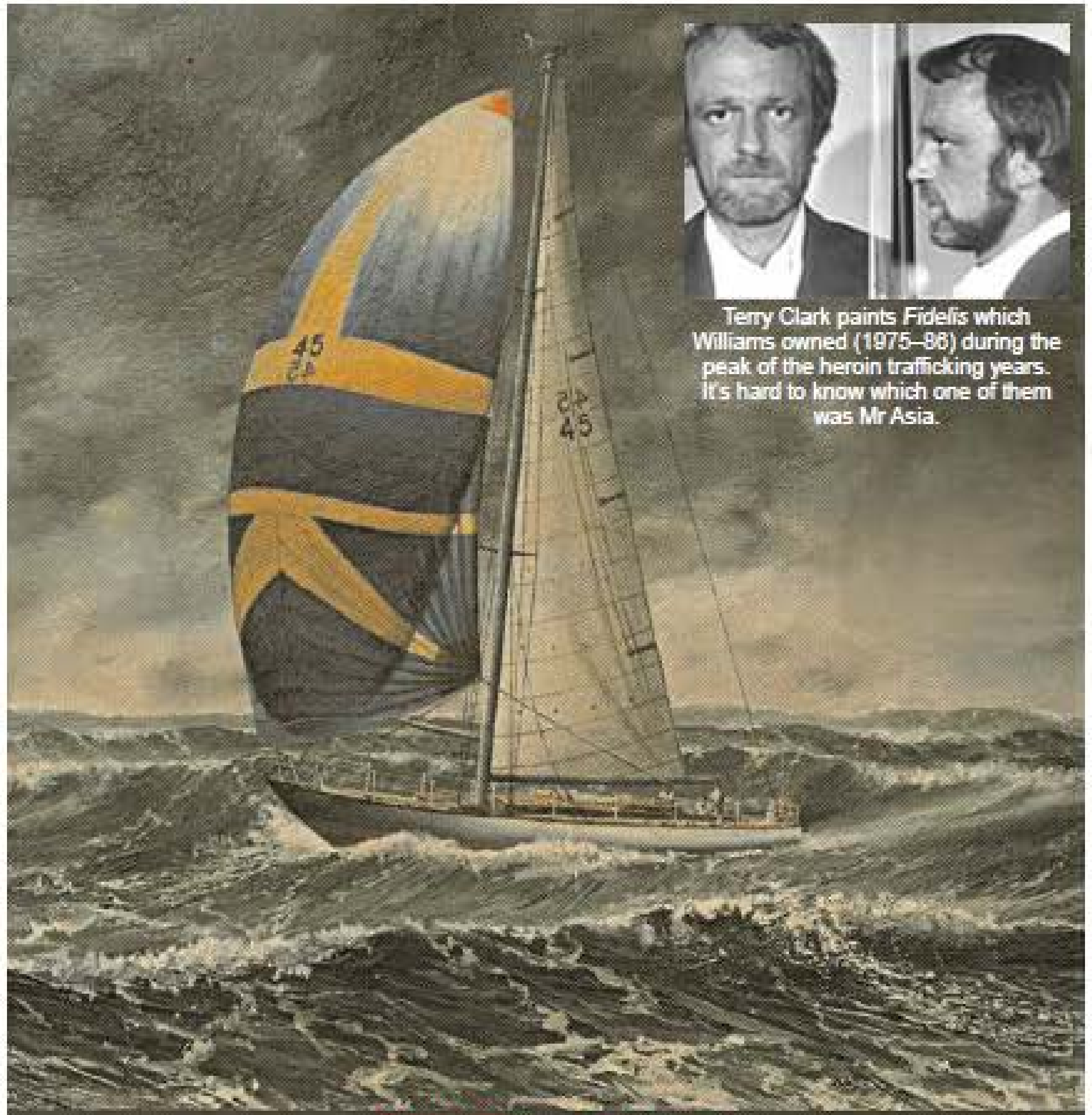
Terry Clark paints *Fidelis* which Williams owned (1975–86) during the peak of the heroin trafficking years. It's hard to know which one of them was Mr Asia.

Petals of Memory, rear cover.

Painting by Terry Clark (Sinclair) of the "Fidelis" nearing the Derwent River, Tasmania – Painted from a photograph shortly before he died at Manchester Prison, England

---

[24] *Petals of Memory*, Peter Williams QC, pp. 166-67, and rear cover.

That would be a great place to finish, but there's more defamation to publish

A lot of drugs were transported by sailing boats and Williams shared his office with Greenpeace (wellknown stoners) in the 1970s.

Williams then bought a ten-acre block 85 km from Auckland on Great Barrier Island, high up on a hill looking south over the Colville Channel to the Coromandel. He lived there 1988 to '89 and claims to have built the small house, but he wouldn't know the arse end of a shovel. At the time he had the yacht *Waiaro*. Later he had a Laurent Giles ketch. He used to change boats all the time.

So Williams finished with Terry Clark, became a QC (1987) and moved to Great Barrier in 1988. If you were made a Queen's Counsel, why would you then hide on Great Barrier Island. Certainly the fees were higher for a QC, but the money must have been better owning a yacht on Great Barrier Island.

"There are many dreamers on the Great Barrier Island living out their fantasies, and I make no bones about confessing that I'm one of them."[25] "What I often do when out exploring: hugging a kauri tree at Port Fitzroy, Great Barrier Island."[26]

In 1995, Williams owned *Aquila d'Oro* with his son Durrell who also owned the Cooker Café in Jervois Road in Herne Bay. Durrell had cut the neighbour's telephone lines in Remuera. Williams: 'Ode to my son Durrell':

"My Son, as to God and the Devil . . ."[27]

Peter Williams: "What I often do when out exploring: hugging a kauri tree at Port Fitzroy, Great Barrier Island."

Protesting Muroroa

Williams sailed the *Aquila d'Oro* up to Muroroa to protest the French nuclear tests and included "journalist-cum"[28] Paul Henry as part of his crew. The boat left Auckland on 6 August 1995. Williams and Henry then got off the boat on the first day, still in New Zealand, waited 12 days, and flew to Rarotonga meeting with the crew on 18 August 1995. Rarotonga Prime Minister [Sir Geoffrey] Henry then gave a speech, as did many others, and none of them mentioned Williams, *Aquila d'Oro*, or any of the crew.[29]

Paul Henry originally shared the Captain's cabin and then slept in the main cabin in the bunk below PAWQC. Peter and Paul then shared a motel room in Tahiti – along with the French military. ". . . some people . . . love to be on the precipice of possible disaster. Paul Henry was one of those."[30]

Paul Henry then went on to have sex with at least 22 of his male staff (2007 figures).

Paul Henry: "Anything that can be done to awaken people's minds to this heinous act must surely be worthwhile. Although one wonders at times whether sleeping on a damp mattress with strangers is going the right way about it!"[31]

---

[25] *Petals of Memory*, Peter Williams QC, p.56, Tree hugging, p. 165.

[26] *Ibid*, p.165.

[27] *Ibid*, p.71.

[28] *Ibid*, p.56.

[29] *Ibid*, p.86, paraphrased.

[30] *Ibid*, p. 113. Paul Henry has three daughters born in 1988, 1991, 1993. He's agnostic.

[31] *Ibid*, p.93.

"The 2nd of September 1995 was also an important day because our media man, Paul Henry, made his debut in the galley. He made a cup on coffee . . . made of salt water."[32]

NUCLEAR FREE PACIFIC
RAROTONGA

Peter Williams, Bruno, Susha, and Paul Henry doing some "straight talking" over French nuclear testing on the *Matasi Princess II* with Williams' arm around the French "stimulating" bisexual "spy" – all men's arms around each other and none around the woman.

"The leader of the group was a young man named Bruno and he appeared to be a very lively character, if somewhat of a dubious sexual orientation. But he was extremely extroverted and very stimulating . . . there had been a rumour floated that they were French spies. But I saw no evidence whatsoever to substantiate those wild allegations."[33]

Sacha Baron Cohen modelled his character 'Bruno' off this French TV journalist Bruno who had a habit of making risqué remarks. Cohen morphed this character into the Austrian Bruno who was so very gay. When Cohen played this character on stage in Austria the audience went beserk and nearly linched him, enough for Cohen to exit stage left. Cohen's mother was closely involved in the Stern Gang, so he was counselled by Israel Security Services to tone it down in early 2009.

2009
MTV
MOVIE AWARDS

Cohen's
Bruno does Bruno.

---

[32] *Petals of Memory*, Peter Williams QC, p.105.
[33] *Ibid*, p. 114.

Peter Williams on his yatch *Aerial*, 28 August 2004: "I love having sex with men."[34]

"You love the protests, calling the police 'pigs' and yelling out slogans just like kids. You love the company of other iconoclasts, particularly lesbians who swear like troopers."[35]

"The French exploded a nuclear bomb at Mururoa Atoll at 9.30 am on 6 September 1995 about 14 miles from the protest vessels"[36] and Williams' soon to be ailing testicles.

Petals of Memory, p. 162: "With my old friend, Albie Orme, left [a medicated manic depressive who had a propensity for threatening to kill people]. Albie was a [Junior] Maori All Black and a lawyer [struck off]; he died in November 2008 [25 hours after the Terrorism Squad (S.I.G.) interviewed Greg Hallett on PAWQC's request, PAWQC being in charge of Terrorism and its narcs like Jamie Lockett]. Our friend was a local [lost bisexual] lawyer in Seattle. We went to protest against the World Trade Organisation [and had absolutely no effect]."

"In November 1999 I flew with my friend,
Albie Orme, to Seattle on USA's West Coast,
to take part in protests
over globalisation and the WTO.
While there I was astonished
at the proliferation of gun shops
and the easy acceptance of violence
and firearm killings in American society."[37]

What you failed to mention Peter,
was that you partner Albie Orme
was a medicated manic depressive
who had a propensity for threatening to kill people
and your client/partner Terry Clark
was an arms dealer,
better known for heroin trafficking,
but arrested for both.

---

[34] This came up in the Disputes Tribunal and PAWQC's reply was: "I am not an active homosexual".
[35] *Petals of Memory*, Peter Williams QC, p. 144.
[36] *Ibid*, p. 122, paraphrased.
[37] *Ibid*, p. 148, "Photograph by author" – Williams that is, and out of focus in his publication.

Dealers, Ballu Khan and MI-6

Peter Williams: "I have always had a passionate hatred of anything to do with the arms trade . . . I am a firm believer that many of our present wars . . . would have been avoided if the greedy arms dealers had not been supplying those countries with their filthy hardware."[38]

Ex-Army Intelligence: "Ballu Khan was trained by the SAS in New Zealand at the Hobsonville base on the northwest outskirts of Auckland. Some Maori ex-SAS man delivering pies there noticed three Indians including Khan practicing in the paddock. It was a revolutionary idea to train Indians in the SAS, so the Maoris noticed the little mongrels doing the SAS training.

"The SAS have a jungle telegraph that connects straight to the SAS in Fiji. The Fijian SAS are always warned by the Maoris, so they knew the Indians were coming. That's why Ballu Khan got a hua of a hiding.

"Prior to Khan's trip, the Fijian SAS plucked the NZSAS off the plane's manifest, by name, and took them all to a drinking session – harder piss than kava.

"When Williams was presenting Ballu Khan in Fiji, both Williams and Khan were working for the Labour Government.

"Williams tried to make the Fijians go away and fold their tents. It's normal in these circumstance for Fiji to give Williams the chop, but Fiji is run by MI-6, and so is Williams, and the MI-6 card was played, so he won the case.

"Due to his heroin trafficking, MI-6 regarded Williams as their asset."

Ballu Khan only appeared on the dust jacket
of the book, and not in the content,
which must be a first.

Ballu Khan was born in Fiji and is a chartered accountant and entrepreneur. His philanthropy particularly towards sport and education earned him tremendous respect by the people of Fiji.

However the illegal Bainimarama-led military interim government who usurped power from Qarese's democratically elected government in 2006, saw Ballu Khan as a threat to their security and attempted his assassination in November 2007.

After a lengthy period of hospitalisation, Ballu partially re-covered his health only to be arrested with several other compatriots on trumped up charges of conspiring to kill Commodore Bainimarama and two of his leading henchmen.

Following a year of intense and persistent legal representation headed by Peter Williams QC at the Suva High Court, Ballu Khan was granted, by Justice Bruce, a permanent stay on the basis of the male fide actions of the Fijian pirate government.

Ballu now resides in New Zealand and is a passionate advocate for the return of democracy to Fiji.

He is photographed here at Hyde Park, Sydney addressing the "March for Democracy" in May 2009.

---

[38] *Petals of Memory*, Peter Williams QC, p. 80.

Captain Pugwash

Peter Williams was never a very good sailor. He was known as "Captain Pugwash" and used to lie down in the cabin drinking whiskey and shouting orders – many of which were ignored. It was generally accepted by all crew that Williams funded everything and that was his role and not much else.

Clive Bennett on Skipper Williams: ". . . From here it is just a customs clearance . . . Port Vila entry papers were where? No one knew. An official asked: your names is who? Locked aboard until papers found . . . Where is your skipper the official inquired . . . Oh yes, ashore he had quietly slipped Aided by some dubious character whom he had tipped. For on his person our papers we did find Although in all honesty he said: I'm sure I'd left them behind."[39]

The Australian wave mate! So what was in his exit pockets?

Williams is notorious for getting information wrong, mixing up stories producing a false history, then defending that history with great drama, even eliminating key players – like Terry Clark who made Williams' money for him. He had none before that partner-client.

Williams is easily panicked, constantly in the need of help from others, notorious for not thanking people, or thanking people and then not paying them. He is extremely boring to the point of frustration, with a tinder-dry sense of humour, if any at all. He had nothing going for him other than his reputation, which seems to have started before he did anything.

Principally Williams reputation came from his bank account, which came from Terry Clark.

Perving: ". . . Venus Point . . . Captian Cook first set foot in Tahiti . . . photographing people sunbathing or in the water . . . most of the girls seemed very shy about being photographed. However, we considered these photographs necessary for the purpose of recording history."[40]

None of these photographs appeared in any published documents,
but his naughty words to them were . . .

> "And then my heart's delight was seen As if in a delightful erotic dream . . . Oh poetry of love Must I single you as my ally? Must only words be mine To satisfy a love divine?"[41] "May I speak to you of love? Gently and in a whisper But vibrant and full of urgency To say that I love you . . ."[42] "My mind on fire and all ablaze I stared and stared as in a daze . . . My heart my soul you all arouse To cry and laugh with all the flowers."[43] "Let the tides of conscious pleasures cover and conceal those black rocks of ugly memories."[44] "Cameos that you have long suppressed so well in your subconscious."[45] "The fact is that you are fucked in the head, the thinking parts of your brain dead long ago."[46] "What does it matter if they believe in a god that does not exist?"[47] ". . . To hell with reason."[48] "I started to hallucinate – I remember having lengthy conversations with an imaginary boy scout with a lemon-squeezer hat . . .
> If I get through this lot, I'll never do it again!"[49]

---

[39] *Petals of Memory*, Peter Williams QC, pp. 40-41, Clive Bennett, crew on *Fidelis* in the Tauranga to Vila race, dedicated to skipper P. A. Williams, a.k.a. Captain Pugwash.

[40] *Ibid*, pp. 100-01. There was one 14-year-old nipple printed on page 95, accredited to "the Hippy" Kapil Arn, and was not shy, but it was very boyish.

[41] *Ibid*, p. 124.

[42] *Ibid*, p. 125.

[43] *Ibid*, p. 135.

[44] *Ibid*, p. 134.

[45] *Ibid*.

[46] *Ibid*, p. 144.

[47] *Ibid*.

[48] *Ibid*, p. 126.

[49] *Ibid*, p. 13-14.

Tahitian titty, p. 95.

. . . Doggone . . .

His dog was called Luther – a black Lab. It used to threaten to attack other dogs at petrol stations, even from inside the vehicle. He also had two Rottweilers.

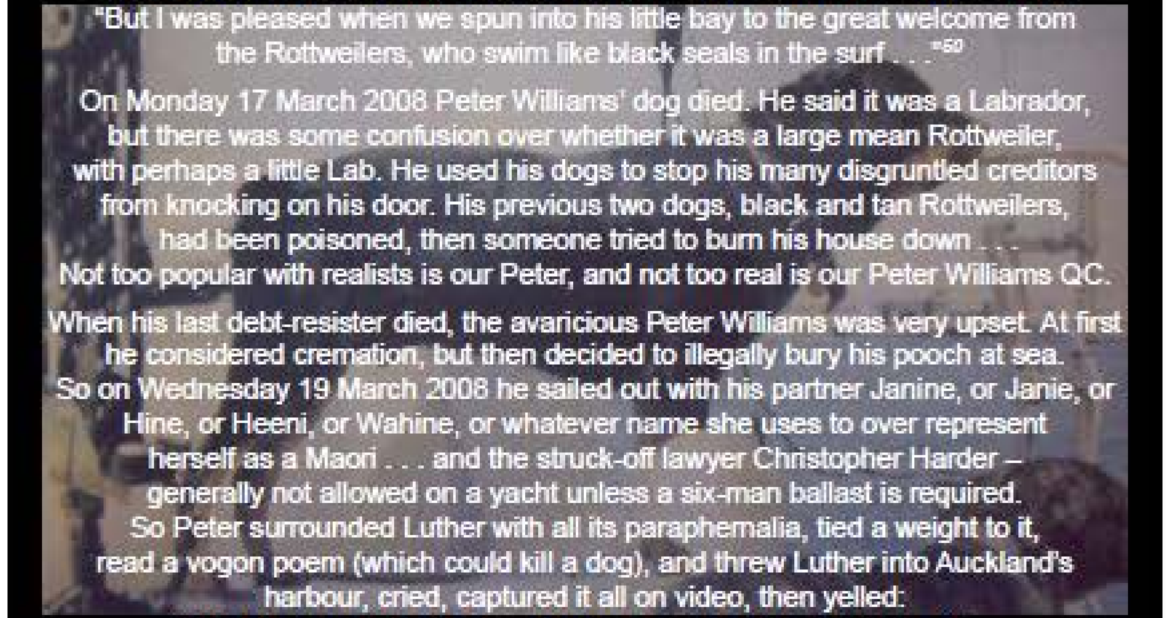

"But I was pleased when we spun into his little bay to the great welcome from the Rottweilers, who swim like black seals in the surf . . ."[50]

On Monday 17 March 2008 Peter Williams' dog died. He said it was a Labrador, but there was some confusion over whether it was a large mean Rottweiler, with perhaps a little Lab. He used his dogs to stop his many disgruntled creditors from knocking on his door. His previous two dogs, black and tan Rottweilers, had been poisoned, then someone tried to burn his house down . . .
Not too popular with realists is our Peter, and not too real is our Peter Williams QC.

When his last debt-resister died, the avaricious Peter Williams was very upset. At first he considered cremation, but then decided to illegally bury his pooch at sea.
So on Wednesday 19 March 2008 he sailed out with his partner Janine, or Janie, or Hine, or Heeni, or Wahine, or whatever name she uses to over represent herself as a Maori . . . and the struck-off lawyer Christopher Harder – generally not allowed on a yacht unless a six-man ballast is required.
So Peter surrounded Luther with all its paraphernalia, tied a weight to it, read a vogon poem (which could kill a dog), and threw Luther into Auckland's harbour, cried, captured it all on video, then yelled:
"What the fuck!". He'd given his dog a sea burial with its air-pillow and the last he saw of his credit-crunching pooch was floating out past Rangitoto.
The stomach, Christopher Harder, said: "Where's the dog tag?".
Williams had another inner dialogue: 'It's still on the dog!'.

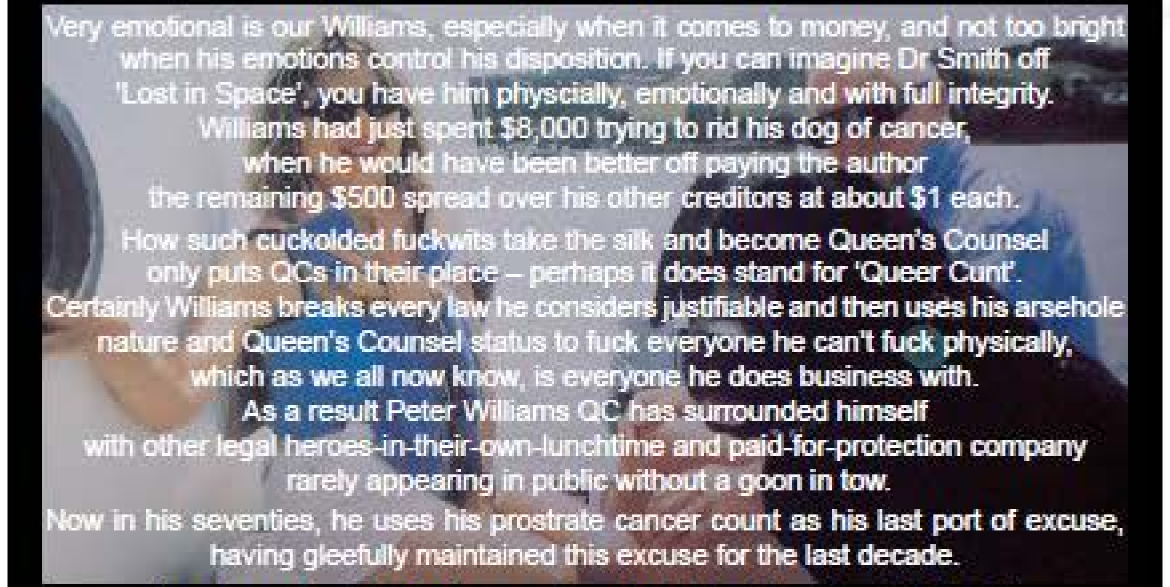

Very emotional is our Williams, especially when it comes to money, and not too bright when his emotions control his disposition. If you can imagine Dr Smith off 'Lost in Space', you have him physcially, emotionally and with full integrity.
Williams had just spent $8,000 trying to rid his dog of cancer, when he would have been better off paying the author the remaining $500 spread over his other creditors at about $1 each.

How such cuckolded fuckwits take the silk and become Queen's Counsel only puts QCs in their place – perhaps it does stand for 'Queer Cunt'.
Certainly Williams breaks every law he considers justifiable and then uses his arsehole nature and Queen's Counsel status to fuck everyone he can't fuck physically, which as we all now know, is everyone he does business with.
As a result Peter Williams QC has surrounded himself with other legal heroes-in-their-own-lunchtime and paid-for-protection company rarely appearing in public without a goon in tow.
Now in his seventies, he uses his prostrate cancer count as his last port of excuse, having gleefully maintained this excuse for the last decade.

It made me laugh when he was flown to England to defend Mr Asia's drug and arms ring. As he walked into the hotel, two gangsters in suits approached and told him his fee was on his hotel bed. He got up there in an instant, and there was £2 million in cash in a suitcase exactly where they said it would be.
He never declared the full amount for tax purposes and has been tight ever since.

It would appear that QC Williams is lost in space . . . Doggone . . .

---

[50] *Petals of Memory*, Peter Williams QC, p. 55.

Peter Williams has no standing on Helen Clark and George Bush

> "When their political leader Helen Clark posed, holding hands and eye-balling the gangster George Bush, how the New Zealand public purred like fat cats
>
> "Back in Kiwi-land Clark told her adoring public how intelligent and wonderful the rascal George Bush was and how she looked into his adoring eyes . . .
>
> "But Bush is such an oily man in more ways that one and as soon as Helen left him he showed New Zealand his bum . . .
>
> "But Helen kept her part of the dubious bargain and sends our troops to Afghanistan"[51]
>
> "The main thing, said Helen Clark, is to keep in with the Americans, they have the money and if we're lucky they'll pay top price for our produce.
>
> "Deputy Prime Minister Anderton, well known for his political somersaults, divorced his Alliance party so that he could back the war in Afghanistan."[52]

As I pointed out to Judge Roderick Joyce in the 26 August 2009 District Court Evaluation Conference: "If you take what Williams says in the third person and convert it to the first person, you have something of the truth of the matter".

So I'd say, Peter, that you are a bit of all of these characters:

> "Hi, I'm Peter Williams, I'm a lick-arse, eye-balling gangsters – 'cause they're my partners – I purr like a fat cat to the New Zealand public, back in Kiwi-land telling my admirers and adoring public how intelligent and wonderful the rascals Eb Leary and Terry Clark are.
>
> "I'm such an oily man in more ways than one and as soon as half my clients leave, I show them my bum. But they have the money, and I'm well-known for my legal somersaults, so I am back in the war with crime, not against it, but in it.
>
> "As a result, some of my closest friends have been divorced from the Law Society alliance.
>
> "I'll take promotion over the truth any day. I will lie, and lie, and lie until I get my way and whoever falls by the wayside, falls by the wayside.
>
> "As long as I get to have my dramas in court and win, who cares what cost it is to others, as long as I have my standing."

Lawyer lawyer
liar liar
liar liar
Hell for hire.

---

[51] *Petals of Memory*, Peter Williams QC, pp. 139-40.
[52] *Petals of Memory*, Peter Williams QC, p. 152.

Hi. I'm Arthur Alan Thomas

'I was stitched-up for the murder of Harvey and Jeanette Crewe in 1970. I knew I would get a farm out of it, and even told my transporting officer this, so I hung in there.

'President of the local Pukekohe Freemason chapter, father and neighbour of Jeanette Crewe – Len Demler – was the prime suspect and about to be arrested in October 1970 when the Police had a sudden change of heart and charged me. Why? Because 11th stage Freemason Len Demler yelled "DO SOMETHING!" down the phone to Police Commissioner Bob Walton – a 14th stage Freemason.

'I knew my not guilty verdict would take as long as the 11th stage Freemason Len Demler too die and/or the public to lose interest.

'First Paul Temm QC was as-useless-as-tits-on-a-bull. But since his buddy Peter Williams is the very best at taking longer than anyone else in a case, and he is used by MI-6 to protect Freemasons from almost all charges, Peter was our man behind his puppet, Kevin Ryan QC.

'I'd like to thank the Freemason-controlled New Zealand Police for planting evidence, especially Detective Bruce Hutton for shooting my gun, then handing the bullet casing to Mr Charles who planted it in the garden, then Hutton directed Constable Ross Meurant to sieve the garden for a second time to find it (the first was on 23 June 1970).[53] After the second trial in 1973, Hutton proudly announced the bullet had been polished and sent to the museum, but it was buried in Whitford Tip along with 136 other exhibits, and never recovered.

'I'd like to thank the Freemason-protecting New Zealand Government and Justice system for convicting me in 1971, not overturning the decision in 1973, then spending 64 days going through 132 witnesses, 210 exhibits, 3500 pages of evidence, and 5000 pages of police files, including the Hutton/ Charles/ Meurant-planted cartridge case from my rifle that did not match the ones in the bodies . . . resulting in my acquittal in 1979.

'Without such corrupt elements in the Police, Judiciary, Government, and Freemasons, I would not have been able to buy a farm, and have such a young wife.

'I understand Detective Inspector Bruce Hutton's other role was in the security firm '[Vehicle Importer] and Associates' who's role was to scare off anyone who got too close to the heroin-in-the-engine-block importation – as he liased between heroin importer and police.

'I understand Detective Bruce Hutton met a farmer's widow during the investigation, married her, then beat her up and held her up by her feet in the bath until she drowned, and then used the money to buy race horses . . . then became a collector of Police hats and badges from around the world, proudly displayed in THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE stations.'

Meurant seeks redemption.

Hutton seeks cover.

Royal Commission of Inquiry report: "We reject entirely that any of the evidence established a motive . . . to kill the Crewes . . . [Thomas] was charged and convicted because the police manufactured evidence and withheld evidence which could be of value to the defence . . . we believe . . . him innocent . . . That a man is wrongly imprisoned on the basis of evidence which is false to the knowledge of police officers is an unspeakable outrage . . . a shameful and cynical attack on the trust all New Zealanders have and are entitled to have in their police force and system of administration of justice."[54]

Detective Inspector Bruce Hutton was then found guilty of setting up Arthur Allan Thomas and given $500,000 and a police medal. Williams was elevated to Queen's Counsel.

---

[53] Ross Meurant was then promoted to Inspector and Member of Parliament (where he wore stubbies to work) and has since moved to Eastern Europe and now feels he was manipulated by the "police subculture"

[54] *The Listener* Archive, Feature 'Dead Ends', Pat Booth, Vol. 203, No, 3438, 1–7 April 2006.

Detective Inspector Bruce Hutton guilty of protecting Freemason Len Demler, setting up Arthur Alan Thomas, murdering his own wife, trafficking heroin . . .

and receiving $500,000 and a medal as police cover.

Hutton at horseplay.

As you can see by the photo in the Auckland Town Hall, I am a none-too-bright Momma's boy. A 17 year-old girl wrote me a letter in prison, dictated by her canniving mother, saying that she wanted to marry a rich dairy farmer. I was released from prison, got a million dollar payout, a menswear store gave me $500 or $1000 in free clothing, as photographed in the *Sunday News*, and the next day, I (41) had a new wife (18) – 23 years my junior.

Patricia, Katie, Durrell, and myself eating toast at our home on Remuera Road in Auckland. The photo was taken around 1975 when Terry Clark was my client and business partner. It was around this time that I used Terry's money from in my safe to bribe witnesses on his behalf. I kept the leftovers, so toast to that. My son Durrell cut the neighbour's telephone lines and I did absolutely nothing about it. Both Durrell and Katie got on the methamphetamine.

I separated from my first wife Zelda around 1967. She was a Jewish-Maori and shagged anything that moved. She really gave me a hard time. I then married an unnamed woman that gave rise to Cara. I married a third time to Ballet Corp Patricia and gave her a hard time. We divorced around seven years after this photo, in 1982.

Bob Jones sponsored the New Zealand ballet, taking up his sponsorship in sexual favours. He did the same when he backed the transvestite Carmen for Mayor of Wellington. When neither of them could be found at a function, they searched the back alleys and found Bob Jones well up Carmen's arse.

Only my daughter Cara became a lawyer, and there are persistent rumours that she is not mine, but Sir Bob Jones' or some other. Either way, according to my conversation with Mr Hallett, 'my daughter Katie is [also] a serial cuckolder'.

My current partner, Heeni Phillips is an illiterate literalist – which makes her a dry-as-toast feminist. We argue all the time. The only quiet time is when we present in public.

Like a lot of prominent people who want to play with the big boys, I'm not all there, I'm not all sane, and apart from issuing money, I wasn't such a great father. Still, kids love you for the trust fund, and I make no apologies for stitching people up, the murders, the heroin trafficking, and I'm not even sorry about the slavery . . . It's who I am – I'm Dr. Smith.

Cara Williams? and Peter Williams QC.

Sir Bob Jones on Fatherhood: "As is well known, I have vast numbers of children ranging from four to 40 years of age. All have been produced by diverse women without my consent, my participation having been fleeting. Each announcement has been received by me with considerable annoyance . . . my children . . . have turned out admirably and are successful in every respect. Whereas I note my critics' offspring are committing suicide, 'finding themselves' as wine waiters and so forth . . . I never had any wish to reproduce myself . . . Small children are a pleasure and have not been a nuisance as I was . . . If fatherhood has changed me then I'm not aware of it, other than that they provide an expenditure outlet . . . My father never gave me any advice, other than to become a plumber . . . I do try and advise my children, primarily to be free thinkers . . . not to blindly follow convention . . . to think for themselves . . . reading and rejection of social norms based on mindless behaviour, e.g. . . . paying parking tickets . . . mostly, I leave them to their own devices . . . I have only one rule. Participation . . . in any religious ceremony means instant disinheritance."[55]

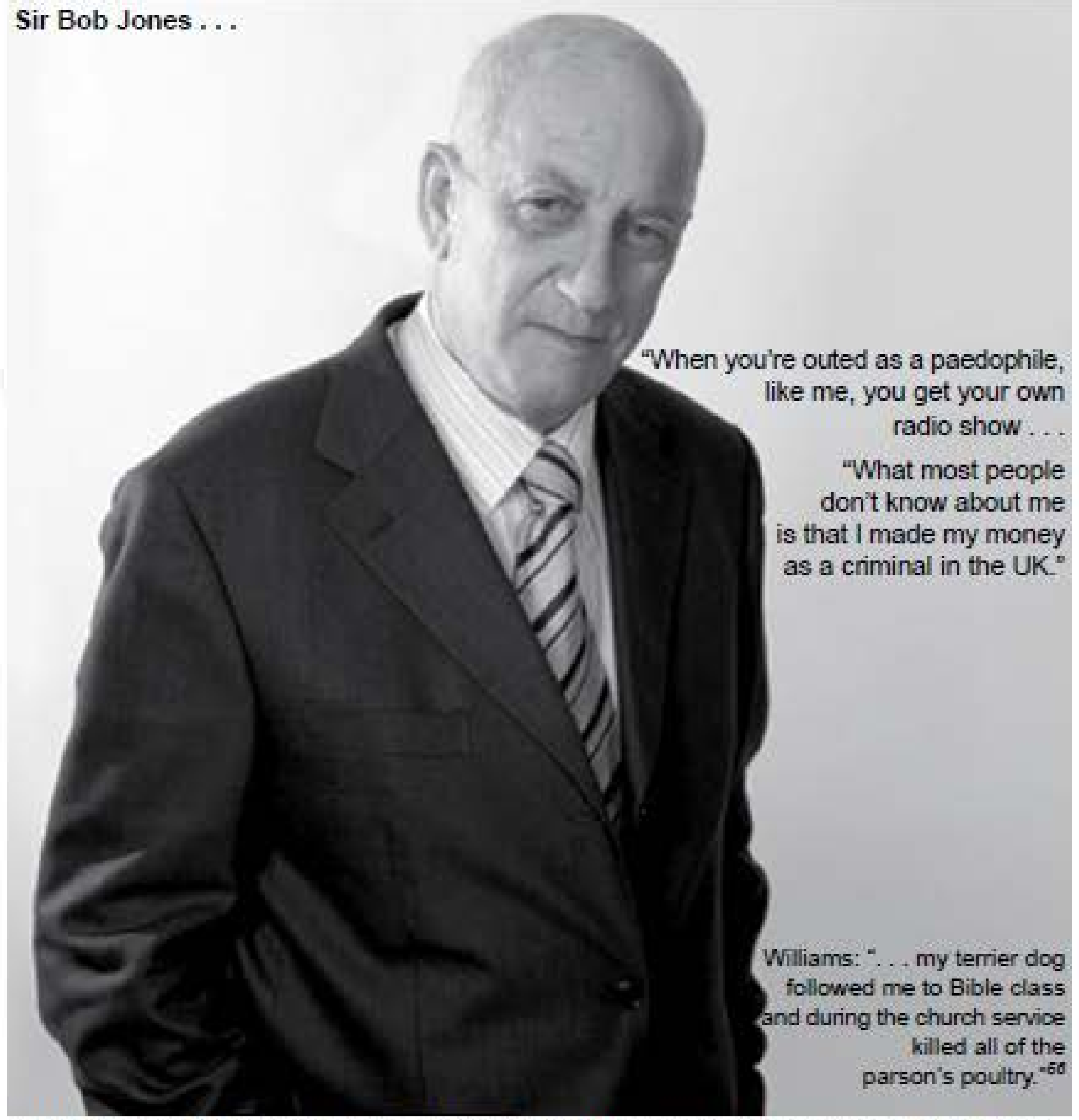

Sir Bob Jones . . .

"When you're outed as a paedophile, like me, you get your own radio show . . .

"What most people don't know about me is that I made my money as a criminal in the UK."

Williams: ". . . my terrier dog followed me to Bible class and during the church service killed all of the parson's poultry."[56]

---

[55] *M2* magazine, Bob Jones on Fatherhood, September 2009, trying to look like a sheep in wolf's clothing.

[56] *Petals of Memory*, Peter Williams QC, p. 169.

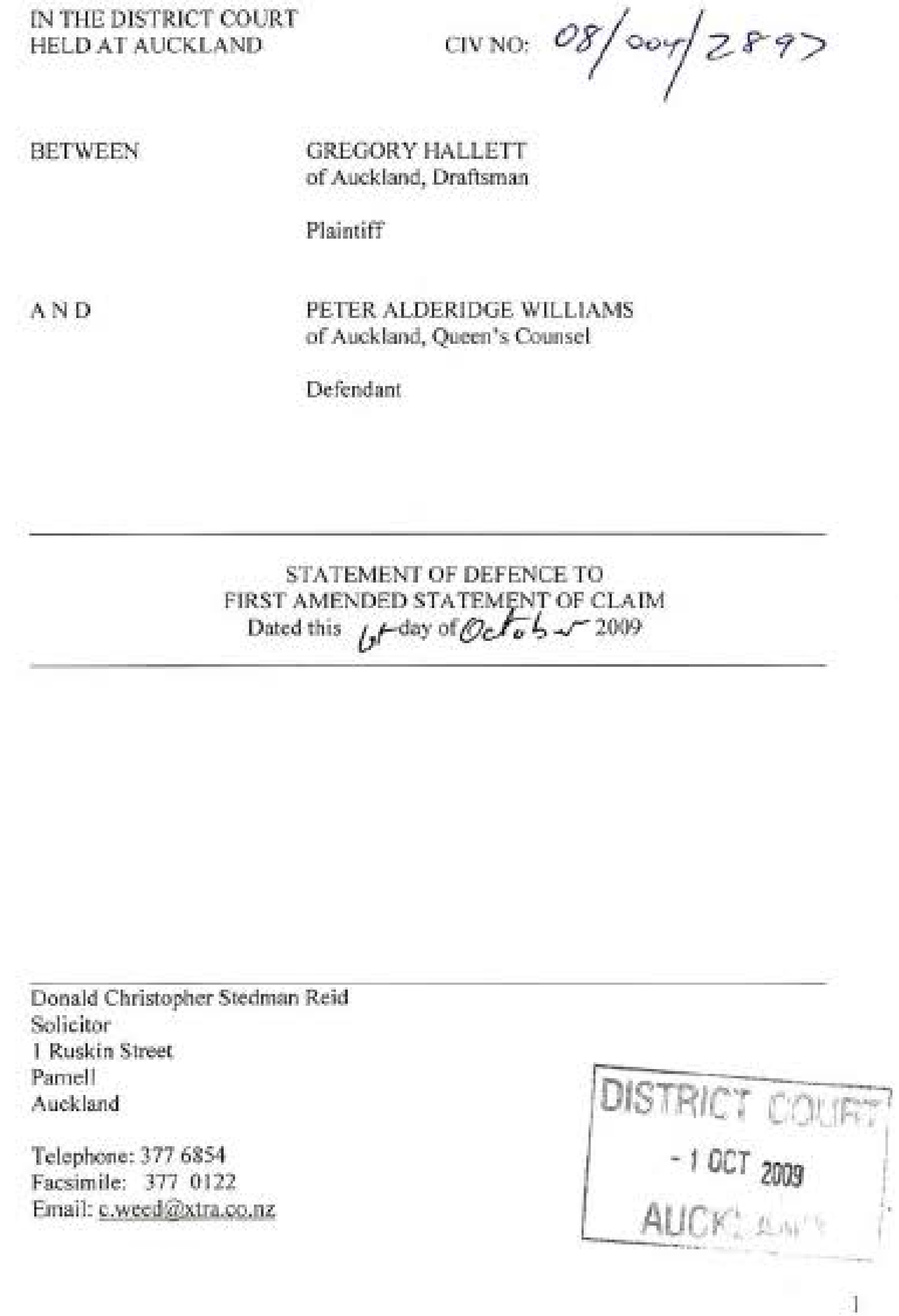

IN THE DISTRICT COURT
HELD AT AUCKLAND CIV NO: 08/004/2897

BETWEEN GREGORY HALLETT
of Auckland, Draftsman

Plaintiff

A N D PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS
of Auckland, Queen's Counsel

Defendant

STATEMENT OF DEFENCE TO
FIRST AMENDED STATEMENT OF CLAIM
Dated this 1st day of October 2009

Donald Christopher Stedman Reid
Solicitor
1 Ruskin Street
Parnell
Auckland

Telephone: 377 6854
Facsimile: 377 0122
Email: c.weed@xtra.co.nz

DISTRICT COURT
- 1 OCT 2009
AUCK

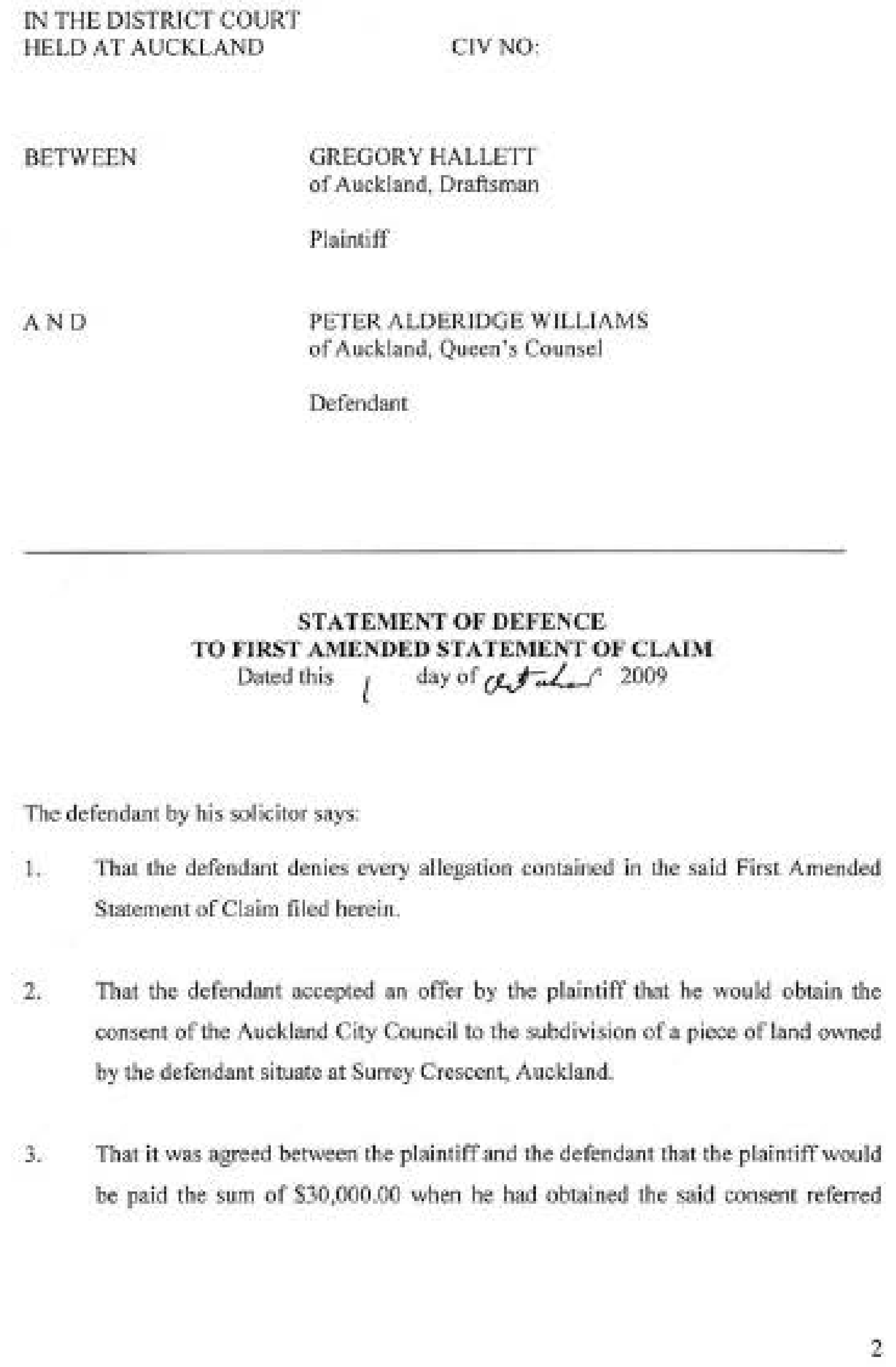

IN THE DISTRICT COURT
HELD AT AUCKLAND CIV NO:

BETWEEN GREGORY HALLETT
of Auckland, Draftsman

Plaintiff

A N D PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS
of Auckland, Queen's Counsel

Defendant

STATEMENT OF DEFENCE
TO FIRST AMENDED STATEMENT OF CLAIM
Dated this 1 day of October 2009

The defendant by his solicitor says:

1. That the defendant denies every allegation contained in the said First Amended Statement of Claim filed herein.

2. That the defendant accepted an offer by the plaintiff that he would obtain the consent of the Auckland City Council to the subdivision of a piece of land owned by the defendant situate at Surrey Crescent, Auckland.

3. That it was agreed between the plaintiff and the defendant that the plaintiff would be paid the sum of $30,000.00 when he had obtained the said consent referred

above but if he failed to obtain the said consent, then he would not be entitled to any fee for his services.

4. That the plaintiff failed to obtain the said consent and therefore is not entitled to any fee for any work he may have done.

Now look here Peter, Peter pumpkin-eater, had three wives and couldn't keep them, I presented you with 4 contracts, each an offer by yourself and an acceptance by myself, and therefore a contract.

The majority of the work was done on a contract which stated $112.50 per hour.

Your contract was never typed, never signed, never dated and never presented . . . and it was a slavery contract.

What you, Peter Williams QC have just claimed is that the Court should provide allegiance to, and support for, a 'Slavery Contract'.

The only way the Court will do that is if they are a slavery organisation unable to settle a simple debt, and dedicated to protecting your history of heroin trafficking and consequent murders, and your status as **'THE REAL MR ASIA'**, and the judiciary's primary role to protect the 8,000 war criminals in the greater Auckland area, of which you are one – your partner and client Terry Clark/ Sinclair was involved in arms dealing, as well as heroin trafficking, and consequent murders of 27 to 40 people – placing you on the list of the 8,000 protected war criminals in the greater Auckland area . . .

And then you, Peter, stopped the project part way through, so a consent could not be obtained. The application requires your signature!

This Statement of Defence is filed by Donald Christopher Stedman Reid, solicitor for the defendant, whose address for service is at his office, 1 Ruskin Street, Parnell, Auckland. Documents for service on the defendant may be left at the address for service or may be:

(a) Posted to the solicitor at 1 Ruskin Street, Parnell, Auckland;
(b) Transmitted by facsimile to 09 377 0122;
(c) Emailed to the solicitor at c.weed@xtra.co.nz.

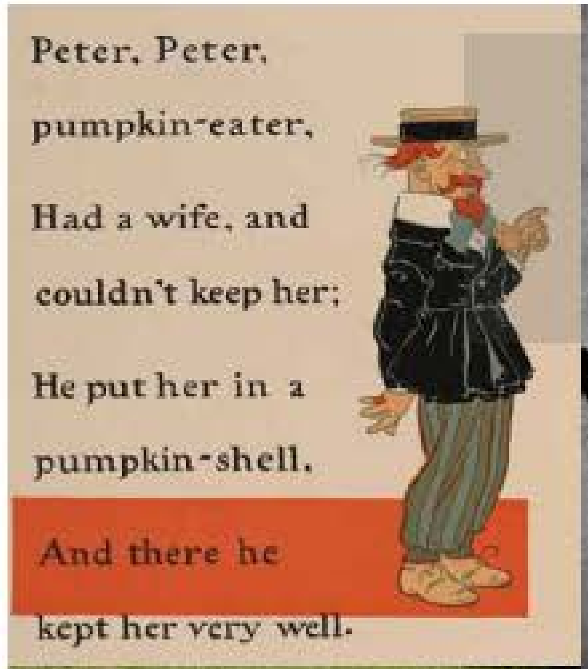
Peter, Peter,
pumpkin-eater,
Had a wife, and
couldn't keep her;
He put her in a
pumpkin-shell,
And there he
kept her very well.

Peter, Peter pumpkin eater,
Had another and didn't love her;
Peter learned to read and spell,
And then he loved her very well.

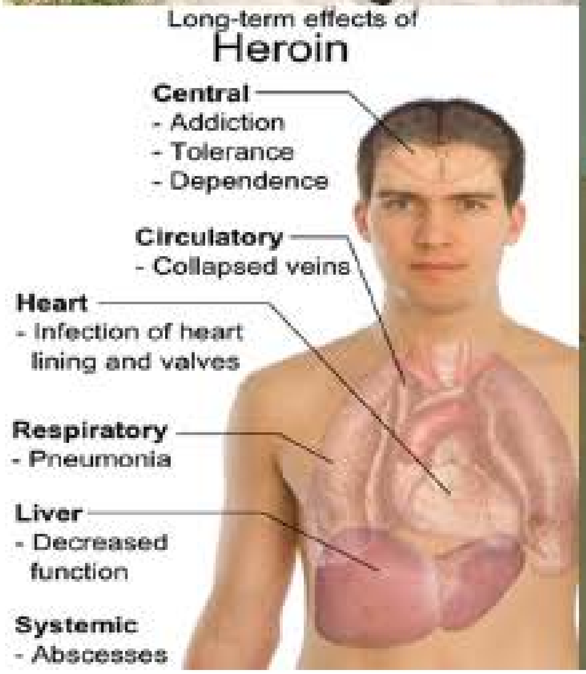
Long-term effects of
Heroin
Central
- Addiction
- Tolerance
- Dependence
Circulatory
- Collapsed veins
Heart
- Infection of heart lining and valves
Respiratory
- Pneumonia
Liver
- Decreased function
Systemic
- Abscesses

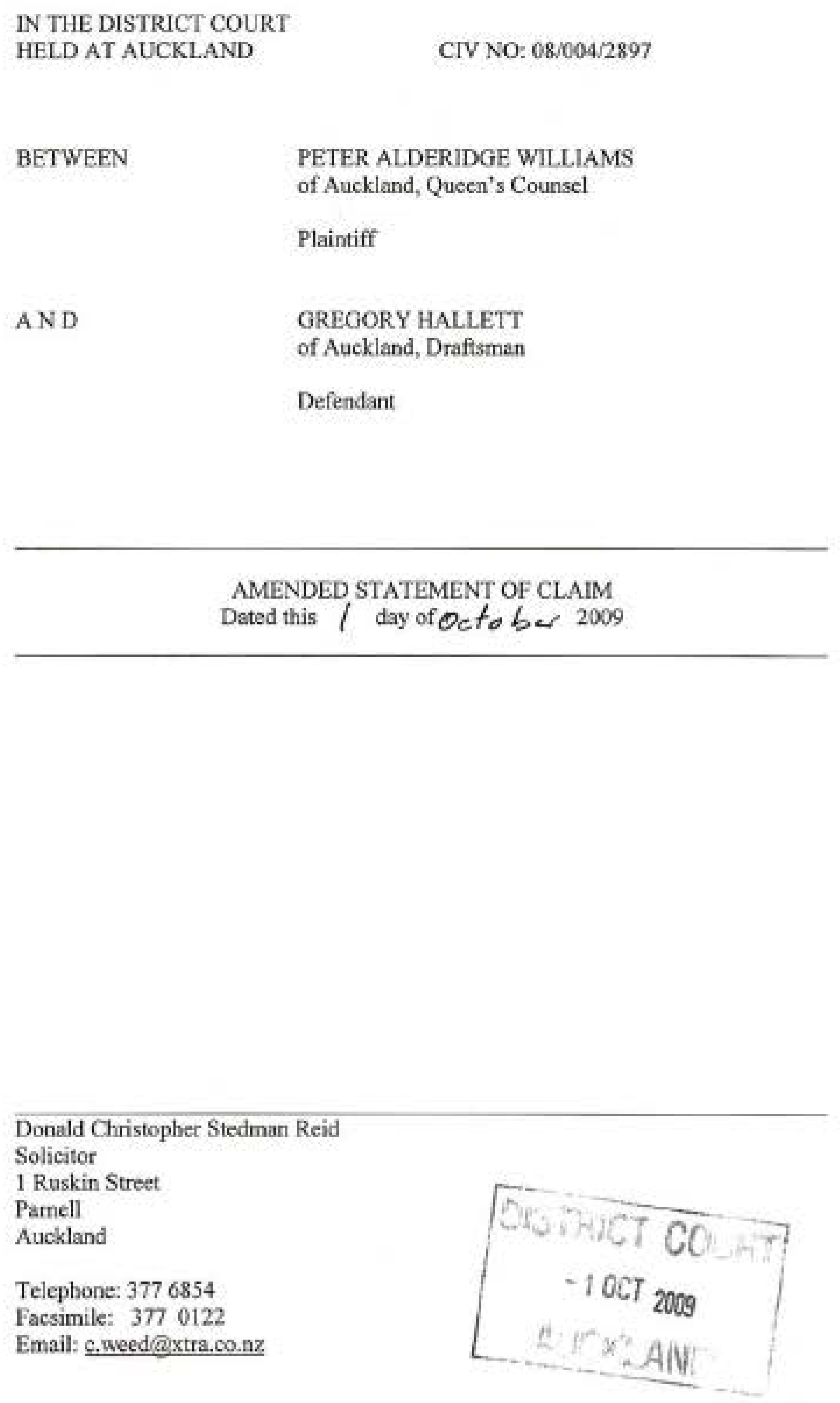

IN THE DISTRICT COURT
HELD AT AUCKLAND CIV NO: 08/004/2897

BETWEEN PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS
of Auckland, Queen's Counsel

Plaintiff

A N D GREGORY HALLETT
of Auckland, Draftsman

Defendant

AMENDED STATEMENT OF CLAIM
Dated this 1 day of October 2009

Donald Christopher Stedman Reid
Solicitor
1 Ruskin Street
Parnell
Auckland

Telephone: 377 6854
Facsimile: 377 0122
Email: c.weed@xtra.co.nz

DISTRICT COURT
- 1 OCT 2009
AUCKLAND

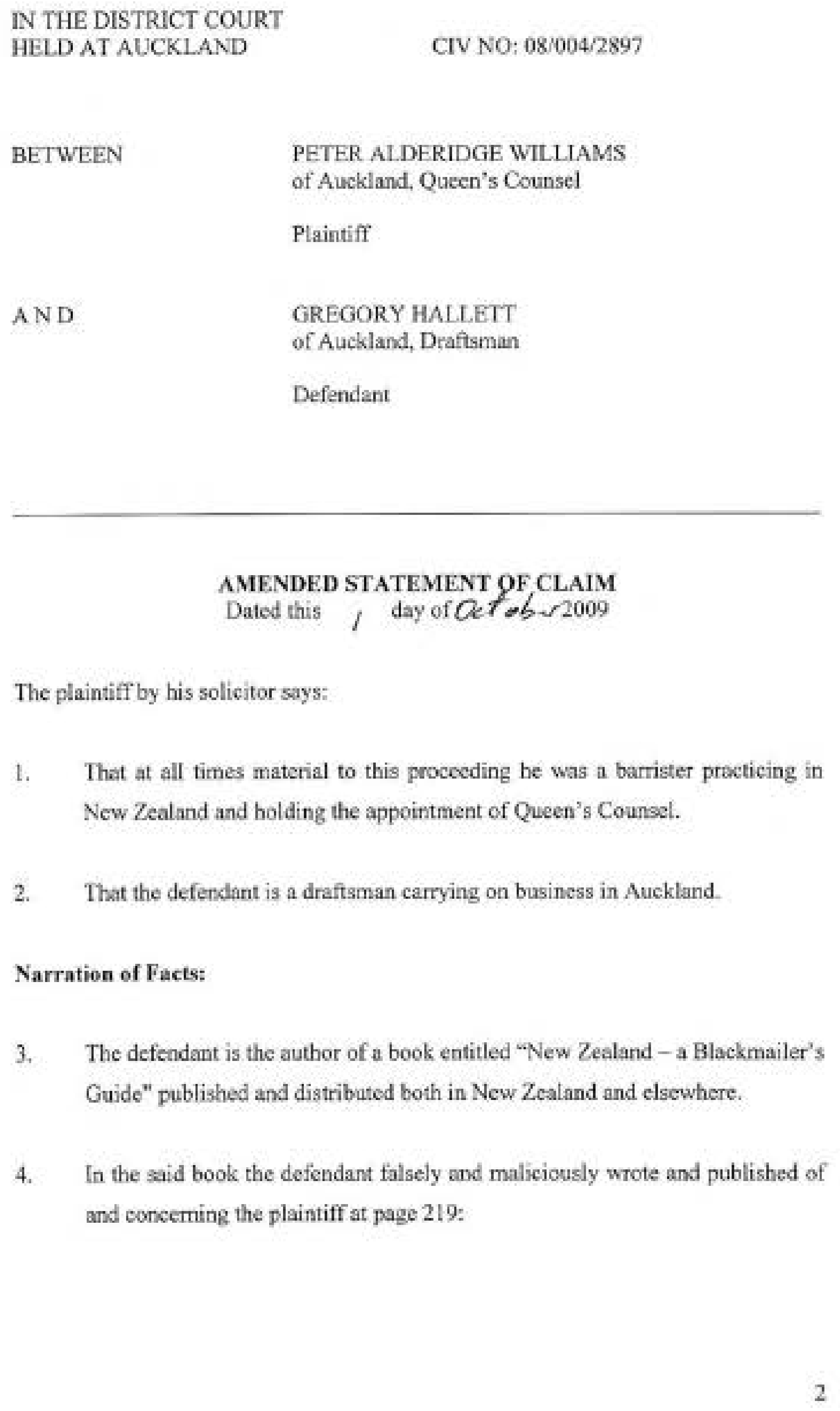

IN THE DISTRICT COURT
HELD AT AUCKLAND CIV NO: 08/004/2897

BETWEEN PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS
of Auckland, Queen's Counsel

Plaintiff

A N D GREGORY HALLETT
of Auckland, Draftsman

Defendant

AMENDED STATEMENT OF CLAIM
Dated this 1 day of October 2009

The plaintiff by his solicitor says:

1. That at all times material to this proceeding he was a barrister practicing in New Zealand and holding the appointment of Queen's Counsel.

2. That the defendant is a draftsman carrying on business in Auckland.

Narration of Facts:

3. The defendant is the author of a book entitled "New Zealand – a Blackmailer's Guide" published and distributed both in New Zealand and elsewhere.

4. In the said book the defendant falsely and maliciously wrote and published of and concerning the plaintiff at page 219:

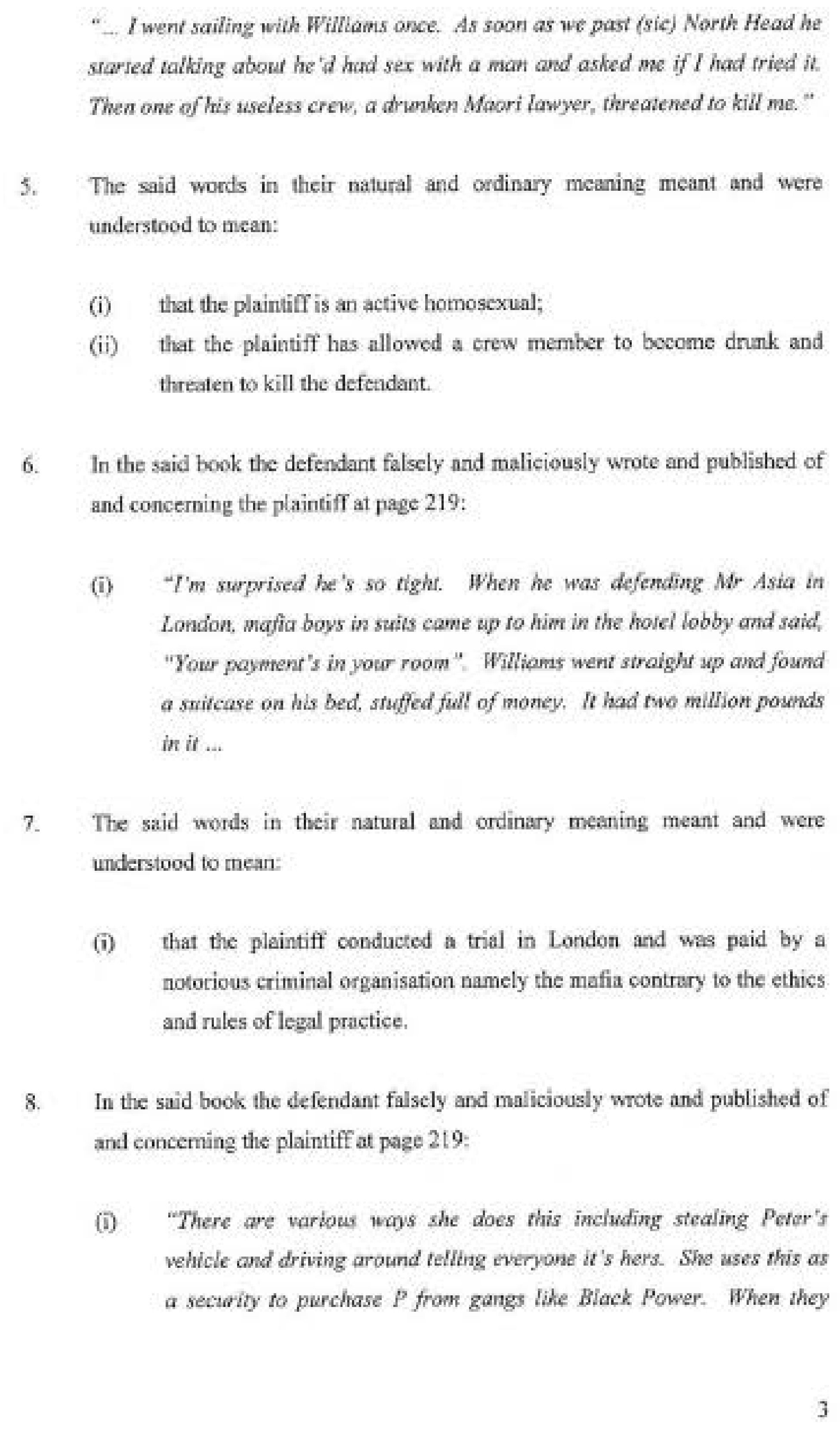

"... I went sailing with Williams once. As soon as we past (sic) North Head he started talking about he'd had sex with a man and asked me if I had tried it. Then one of his useless crew, a drunken Maori lawyer, threatened to kill me."

5. The said words in their natural and ordinary meaning meant and were understood to mean:

   (i) that the plaintiff is an active homosexual;
   (ii) that the plaintiff has allowed a crew member to become drunk and threaten to kill the defendant.

6. In the said book the defendant falsely and maliciously wrote and published of and concerning the plaintiff at page 219:

   (i) *"I'm surprised he's so tight. When he was defending Mr Asia in London, mafia boys in suits came up to him in the hotel lobby and said, "Your payment's in your room". Williams went straight up and found a suitcase on his bed, stuffed full of money. It had two million pounds in it ...*

7. The said words in their natural and ordinary meaning meant and were understood to mean:

   (i) that the plaintiff conducted a trial in London and was paid by a notorious criminal organisation namely the mafia contrary to the ethics and rules of legal practice.

8. In the said book the defendant falsely and maliciously wrote and published of and concerning the plaintiff at page 219:

   (i) *"There are various ways she does this including stealing Peter's vehicle and driving around telling everyone it's hers. She uses this as a security to purchase P from gangs like Black Power. When they come asking for money QC Williams has to bail her out. The last time he bailed her out, he had to pay Black Power NZ$20,000."*

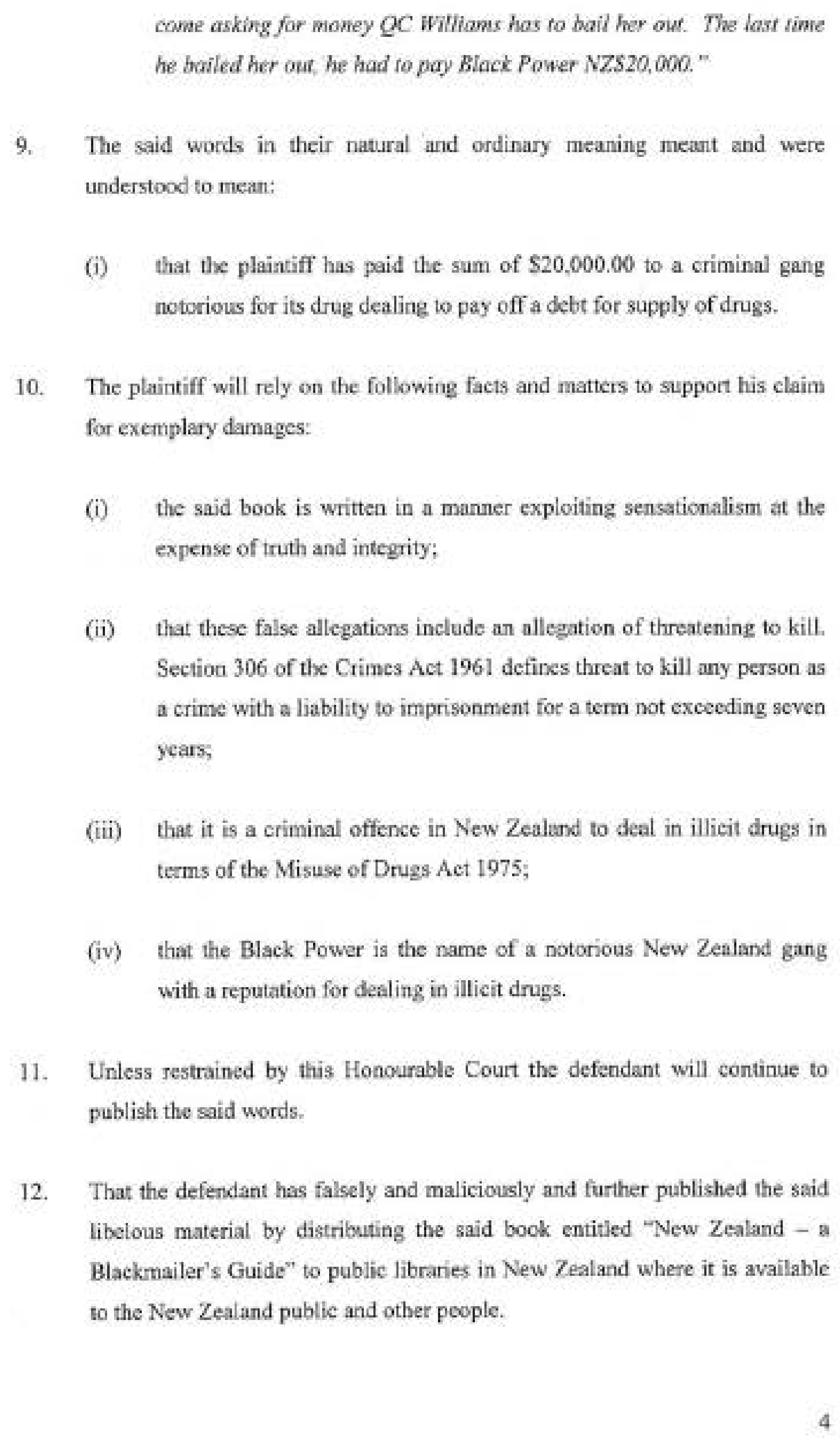

9. The said words in their natural and ordinary meaning meant and were understood to mean:

   (i) that the plaintiff has paid the sum of $20,000.00 to a criminal gang notorious for its drug dealing to pay off a debt for supply of drugs.

10. The plaintiff will rely on the following facts and matters to support his claim for exemplary damages:

    (i) the said book is written in a manner exploiting sensationalism at the expense of truth and integrity;

    (ii) that these false allegations include an allegation of threatening to kill. Section 306 of the Crimes Act 1961 defines threat to kill any person as a crime with a liability to imprisonment for a term not exceeding seven years;

    (iii) that it is a criminal offence in New Zealand to deal in illicit drugs in terms of the Misuse of Drugs Act 1975;

    (iv) that the Black Power is the name of a notorious New Zealand gang with a reputation for dealing in illicit drugs.

11. Unless restrained by this Honourable Court the defendant will continue to publish the said words.

12. That the defendant has falsely and maliciously and further published the said libelous material by distributing the said book entitled "New Zealand – a Blackmailer's Guide" to public libraries in New Zealand where it is available to the New Zealand public and other people.

13. That the defendant has further falsely and maliciously published the said libelous material by placing same on the Internet where it is available not only to members of the New Zealand public but to people worldwide.

14. That the defendant has further falsely and maliciously published the said libelous material by placing same in written documents and distributing same to the Auckland District Court and elsewhere. These documents have been rejected as legitimate Court documents on the grounds that they contain scurrilous material.

15. That since the issue of the Statement of Claim herein, the defendant has continued to publish and distribute, both in New Zealand and elsewhere, the said libelous material in an endeavour to wrongly co-erse the plaintiff into paying falsely claimed architectural fees.

Therefore the plaintiff seeks judgment against the defendant for:

(i) compensatory damages (to be assessed);
(ii) exemplary damages (to be assessed);
(iii) Costs;
(iv) Interest.

16. An injunction to restrain the defendant by himself, his servants and agents from further publishing or causing to be printed, published or distributed by any means the said book.

This Amended Statement of Claim is filed by Donald Christopher Stedman Reid, solicitor for the plaintiff, whose address for service is at his office, 1 Ruskin Street, Parnell, Auckland.

Documents for service on the plaintiff may be left at the address for service or may be:

(a) Posted to the solicitor at 1 Ruskin Street, Parnell, Auckland;
(b) Transmitted by facsimile to 09 377 0122;
(c) Emailed to the solicitor at c.weed@xtra.co.nz.

Defamation Act 1992
Public Act 1992 No 105, effective before & after 1 February 1993

PART 2 DEFENCES

Truth

(1) The defence of justification shall be known as the defence of truth.

(2) In proceedings for defamation based on only some of the matter contained in a publication, the defendant may allege and prove any facts contained in the whole of the publication.

(3) A defence of truth shall succeed if:

(a) The defendant proves that the imputations contained in the subject matter were true, or not materially different from the truth; or

(b) Where the proceedings are based on any or all of the publication, the defendant proves that the publication taken as a whole was in substance true, or was in substance not materially different from the truth.

(9) Honest opinion

The defence of fair comment shall be known as the defence of honest opinion.

(10) Opinion must be genuine

(1) The defence of honest opinion by the author shall fail unless the defendant proves that the opinion expressed was genuine.

(2) The defence of honest opinion by a defendant who is not the author of the matter containing the opinion shall fail unless:

(a) The author was an employee or agent of the defendant, and:

(i) The opinion, in its context and in the circumstances of the publication was not the opinion of the defendant; and

(ii) The defendant believed that the opinion was the genuine opinion of the author of the matter containing the opinion:

(b) Where the author of the matter containing the opinion was not an employee or agent of the defendant at the time of the publication of that matter, the defendant proves that:

(i) The opinion was not the opinion of the defendant, their employee or agent; and

(ii) The defendant had no reasonable cause to believe that the opinion was not the genuine opinion of the author of the matter containing the opinion.

(3) A defence of honest opinion shall not fail because the defendant was motivated by malice.

(11) Defendant not required to prove truth of every statement of fact

In proceedings for defamation partly of statements of fact and opinion, a defence of honest opinion shall not fail merely because the defendant does not prove the truth of every statement of fact if the opinion is shown to be genuine opinion having regard to:

(a) Those facts (published and subject to proceedings) that are proved to be true are not materially different from the truth; or

(b) Any other facts generally known at publication time are proved to be true.

(12) Honest opinion where corrupt motive attributed to plaintiff

In a defence of honest opinion, the fact that the matter has a dishonourable, corrupt, or base motive attributed to the plaintiff does not not make any difference to what the defendant has to prove.

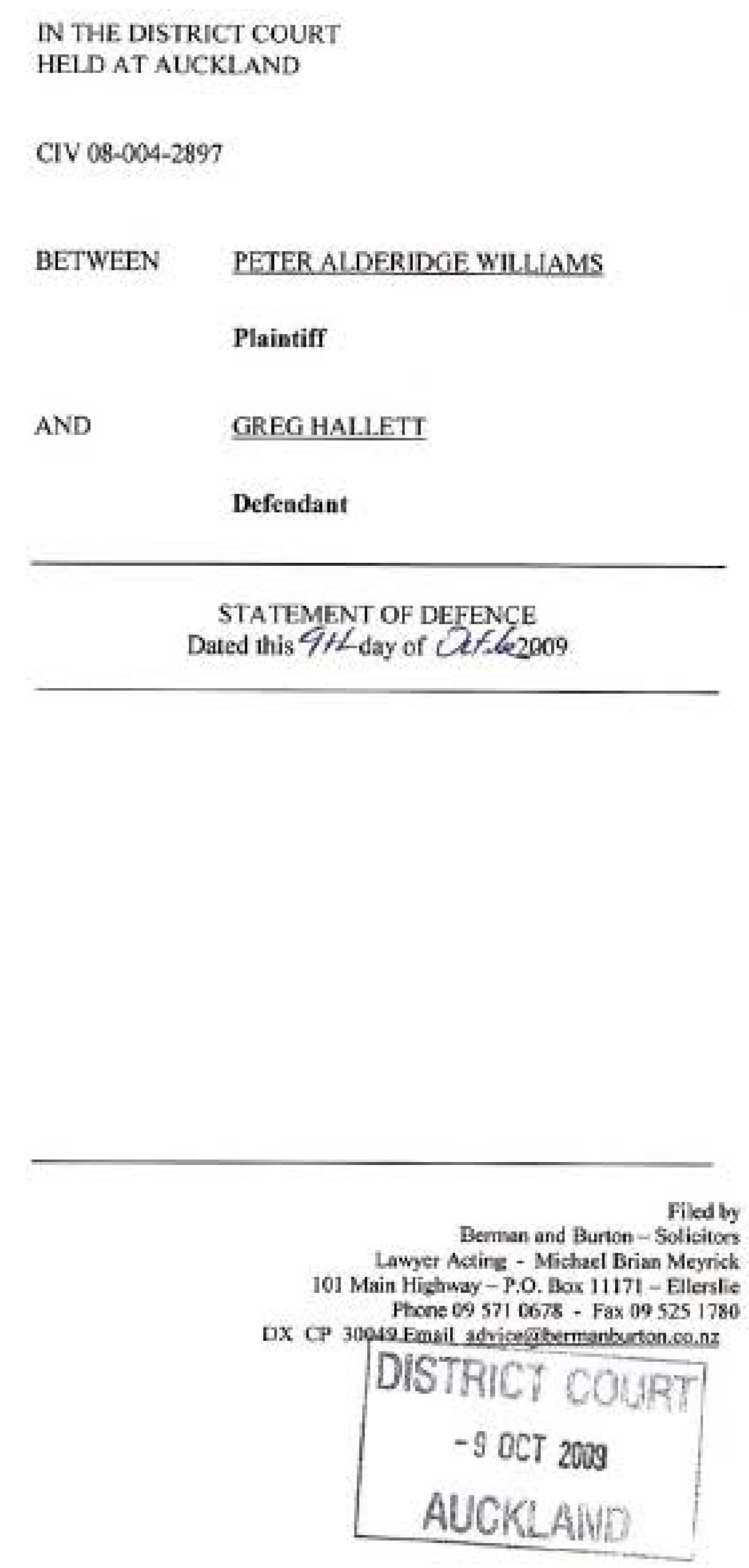

IN THE DISTRICT COURT
HELD AT AUCKLAND

CIV 08-004-2897

BETWEEN PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS

Plaintiff

AND GREG HALLETT

Defendant

STATEMENT OF DEFENCE
Dated this 9th day of Oct. 2009

Filed by
Berman and Burton – Solicitors
Lawyer Acting - Michael Brian Meyrick
101 Main Highway – P.O. Box 11171 – Ellerslie
Phone 09 571 0678 - Fax 09 525 1780
DX CP 30049 Email advice@bermanburton.co.nz

DISTRICT COURT
-9 OCT 2009
AUCKLAND

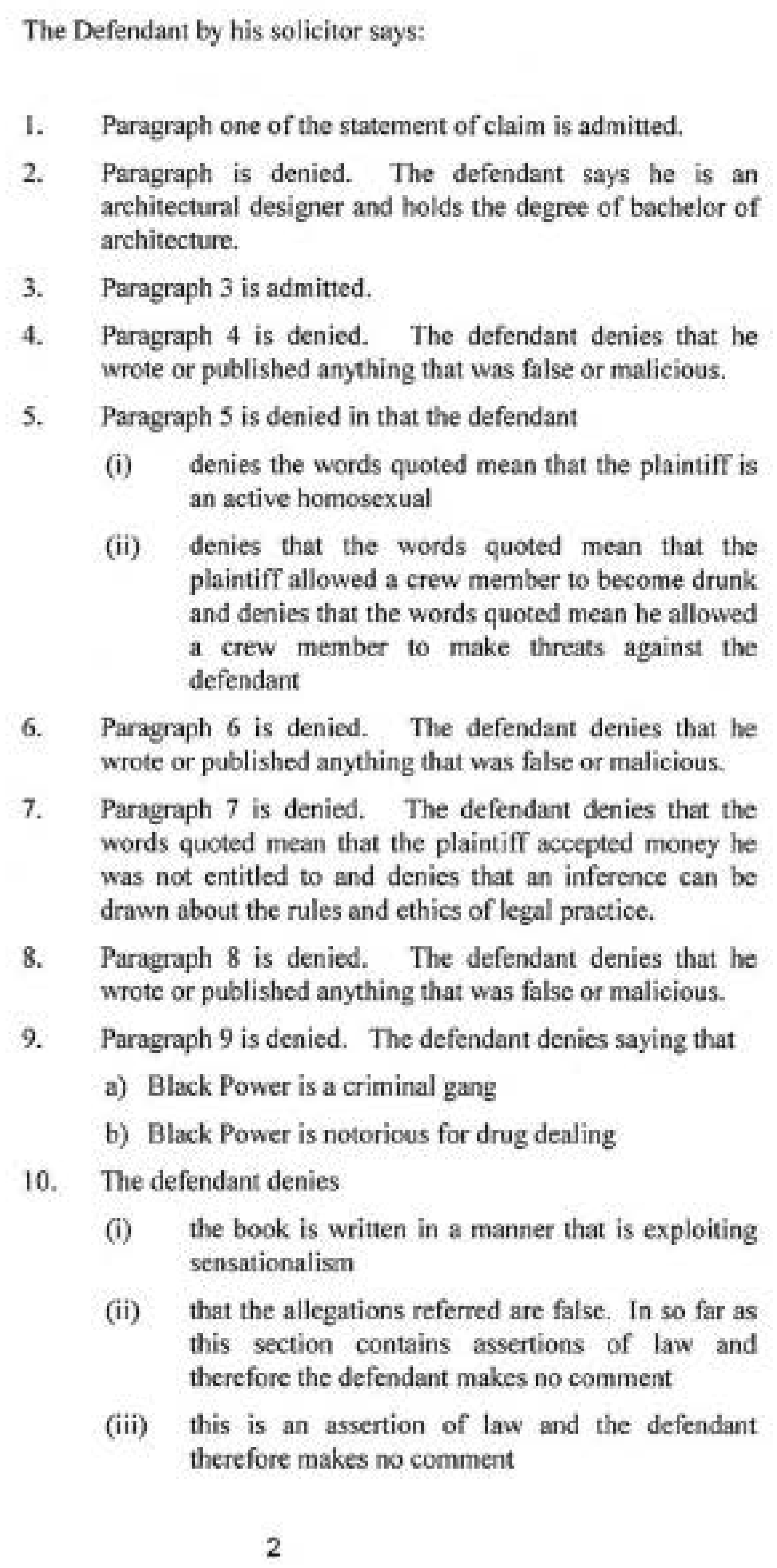

The Defendant by his solicitor says:

1. Paragraph one of the statement of claim is admitted.
2. Paragraph is denied. The defendant says he is an architectural designer and holds the degree of bachelor of architecture.
3. Paragraph 3 is admitted.
4. Paragraph 4 is denied. The defendant denies that he wrote or published anything that was false or malicious.
5. Paragraph 5 is denied in that the defendant
    - (i) denies the words quoted mean that the plaintiff is an active homosexual
    - (ii) denies that the words quoted mean that the plaintiff allowed a crew member to become drunk and denies that the words quoted mean he allowed a crew member to make threats against the defendant
6. Paragraph 6 is denied. The defendant denies that he wrote or published anything that was false or malicious.
7. Paragraph 7 is denied. The defendant denies that the words quoted mean that the plaintiff accepted money he was not entitled to and denies that an inference can be drawn about the rules and ethics of legal practice.
8. Paragraph 8 is denied. The defendant denies that he wrote or published anything that was false or malicious.
9. Paragraph 9 is denied. The defendant denies saying that
    - a) Black Power is a criminal gang
    - b) Black Power is notorious for drug dealing
10. The defendant denies
    - (i) the book is written in a manner that is exploiting sensationalism
    - (ii) that the allegations referred are false. In so far as this section contains assertions of law and therefore the defendant makes no comment
    - (iii) this is an assertion of law and the defendant therefore makes no comment

2

(iv) the defendant has no knowledge of the assertions in this paragraph and it is therefore denied

11. This paragraph is speculative and is therefore denied

12. This paragraph is denied. The defendant denies that he wrote or published anything that was false or malicious.

13. Paragraph 13 is denied. The defendant denies that he wrote or published anything that was false or malicious.

14. Paragraph 14 is denied. The defendant denies that he wrote or published anything that was false or malicious.

15. Paragraph 15 is denied although the defendant admits that he is separately claiming fees from the plaintiff for architectural work which the plaintiff commissioned and which he has not paid for.

This statement of defence is filed by Berman and Burton, solicitors – counsel acting Michael Brian Meyrick - and documents for service can be left at the solicitor's offices at 101 Main Highway, Ellerslie or sent to P.O. Box 11278, Ellerslie, or to DX CP 34009 or sent by facsimile to 09 525 1780

PETER WILLIAMS TO
RUSSELL JOHNSON
TO RODERICK JOYCE
PETER WILLIAMS
TO SIAN ELIAS TO
RODERICK JOYCE
SIAN ELIAS TO
HUGH FLETCHER
TO SIMON MOORE
TO MARK PERKINS
PETER WILLIAMS
TO JOE KARAM TO
MICHAEL REID TO
NICOLA MATHERS.

© TREASON ALWAYS GETS A FRONT ROW SEAT

IN THE DISTRICT COURT
HELD AT AUCKLAND

CIV-008-004-2897

BETWEEN **PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS** of Auckland
Queen's Counsel

Plaintiff

AND **GREGORY HALLETT** of Auckland
Draftsman

Defendant

BRIEF OF EVIDENCE OF PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS

Dated this 14th **day of December 2009**

There are no legal days 25 December to 15 January,
but I still think you're out of time with your backdated Brief
– 12 January 2010, 29 days to 14 December 2009.
Admittedly, Court staff were on strike that day, and protesting
outside where they said it was for higher wages,
but was it not for corruption in the judiciary
amounting to a mafia operation
where justice is not done and not seen to be done.
Let us know which staff compliantly stay
once they realise you're the mafia boss.

.....
.....
.....

DISTRICT COURT
12 JAN 2010
AUCKLAND

I, **Peter Alderidge Williams**, say:

1. My full name is Peter Alderidge Williams and I reside at Auckland and am a Queens Counsel.
2. That the defendant, Gregory Hallett, is the author of a book entitled '*New Zealand – A Blackmailers Guide*' published and distributed both in New Zealand and elsewhere.
3. That the extract from the said book quoted in the *statement of claim* herein are all false.
4. That the defamatory material cited in the *statement of claim* has been published by the defendant throughout New Zealand and other parts of the world.
5. That the said defamatory material contained in the *statement of claim* has been accessible to all persons who use libraries in New Zealand as Mr Hallett has placed this book '*New Zealand – A Blackmailers Guide*' in the main libraries throughout New Zealand.
6. That Mr Hallett has also published the said defamatory material contained in the *statement of claim* herein on the internet and therefore it has been published worldwide.
7. That because Mr Hallett has published this defamatory material both in New Zealand and in other parts of the world as described above and Mr Hallett has seriously harmed my reputation and not only in New Zealand but in other parts of the world.
8. That Mr Hallett has refused to apologise or retract in respect of his publishing the said defamatory material, and indeed, continues to disseminate defamatory material referring to myself.

Dated at Auckland this 15th day of December 2009

P A Williams
Peter Alderidge Williams

Peter, I note that the lawyer you are using for the upaid architecture fee is Murray Gibson, the same lawyer the new mafia boss is using. That would be Max Beckham (62), methamphetamine, of Mangonui, or is that Mt Eden Prison. He has several large houses up there in Northland.
Your parner in crime – the struck off Eb Leary also had a business up there – remember.
Murray Gibson is also the lawyer for a lawyer who is a homosexual paedophile who's out of work and bankrupt – Bradely Watson.
Murray Gibson is a womaniser. He's never made it to the big time, but seems to want to by defending the reputation of mafia bosses, homos and paeds. I guess he has to start somewhere.

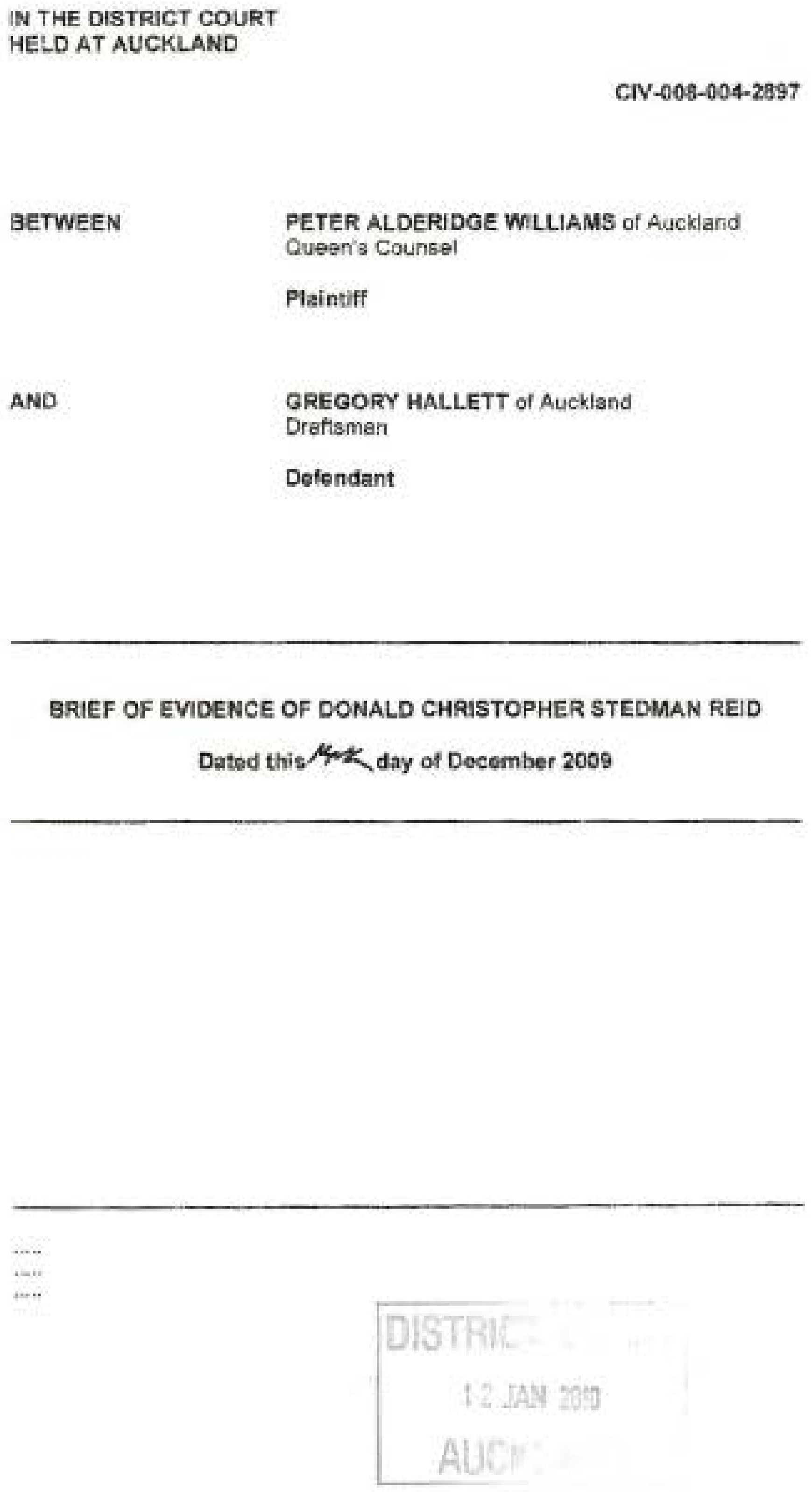

IN THE DISTRICT COURT
HELD AT AUCKLAND

CIV-008-004-2897

BETWEEN **PETER ALDERIDGE WILLIAMS** of Auckland
Queen's Counsel

Plaintiff

AND **GREGORY HALLETT** of Auckland
Draftsman

Defendant

BRIEF OF EVIDENCE OF DONALD CHRISTOPHER STEDMAN REID

Dated this 14th day of December 2009

DISTRIC
1 2 JAN 2010
AUC

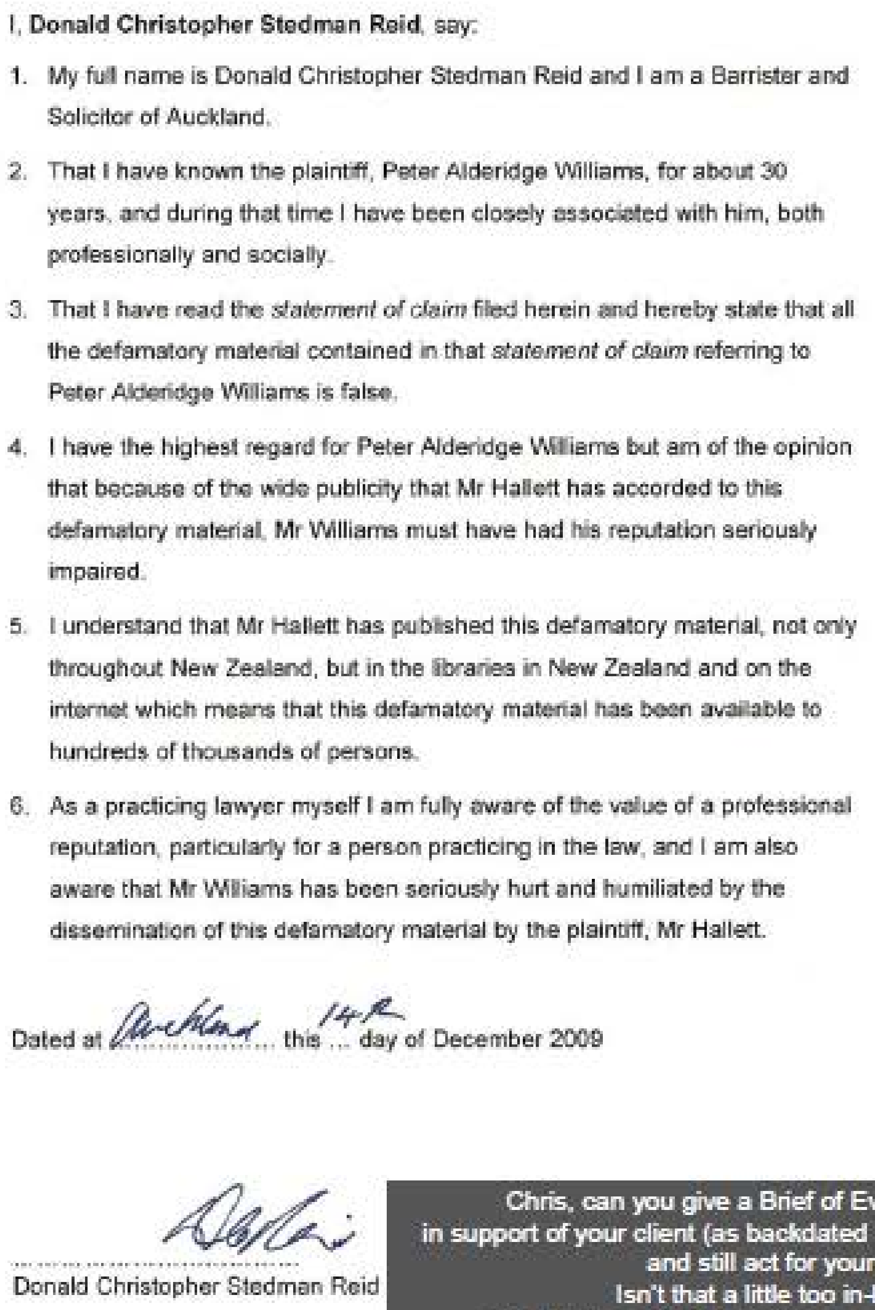

I, **Donald Christopher Stedman Reid**, say:

1. My full name is Donald Christopher Stedman Reid and I am a Barrister and Solicitor of Auckland.
2. That I have known the plaintiff, Peter Alderidge Williams, for about 30 years, and during that time I have been closely associated with him, both professionally and socially.
3. That I have read the *statement of claim* filed herein and hereby state that all the defamatory material contained in that *statement of claim* referring to Peter Alderidge Williams is false.
4. I have the highest regard for Peter Alderidge Williams but am of the opinion that because of the wide publicity that Mr Hallett has accorded to this defamatory material, Mr Williams must have had his reputation seriously impaired.
5. I understand that Mr Hallett has published this defamatory material, not only throughout New Zealand, but in the libraries in New Zealand and on the internet which means that this defamatory material has been available to hundreds of thousands of persons.
6. As a practicing lawyer myself I am fully aware of the value of a professional reputation, particularly for a person practicing in the law, and I am also aware that Mr Williams has been seriously hurt and humiliated by the dissemination of this defamatory material by the plaintiff, Mr Hallett.

Dated at Auckland this 14th day of December 2009

Donald Christopher Stedman Reid

Chris, can you give a Brief of Evidence
in support of your client (as backdated as it is)
and still act for your client?
Isn't that a little too in-house?
or a group so tight it amounts to a gang?
And isn't that same gang involved in
slavery and Class A drug trafficking.
I note that you claim to have met Williams just
after the Mr Asia heroin trafficking,
drug money laundering and murder ring.
For another reference on Peter Williams,
why don't you ask Murray Gibson
and Max Meth It Like Beckham.

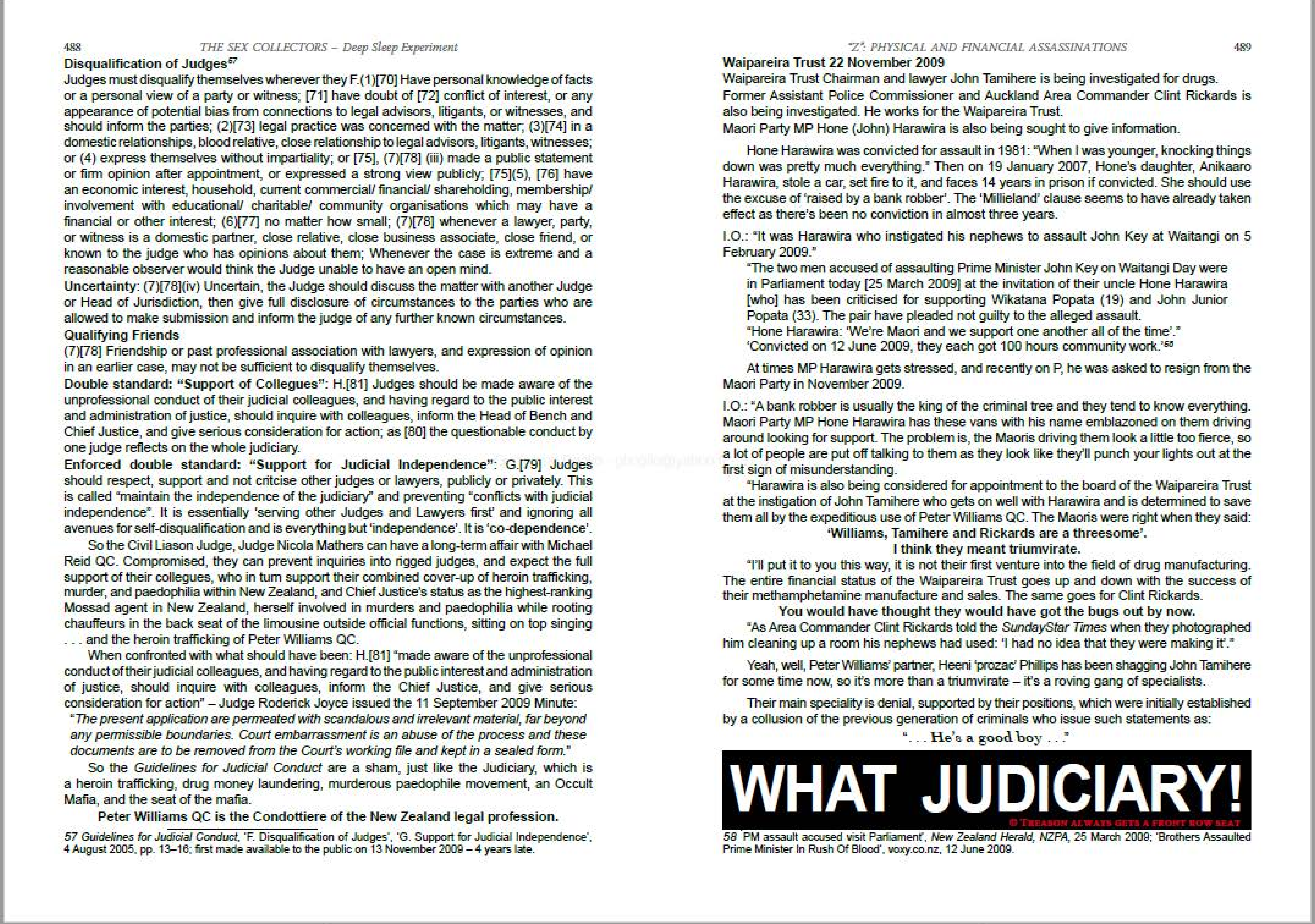

Disqualification of Judges[57]

Judges must disqualify themselves wherever they F.(1)[70] Have personal knowledge of facts or a personal view of a party or witness; [71] have doubt of [72] conflict of interest, or any appearance of potential bias from connections to legal advisors, litigants, or witnesses, and should inform the parties; (2)[73] legal practice was concerned with the matter; (3)[74] in a domestic relationships, blood relative, close relationship to legal advisors, litigants, witnesses; or (4) express themselves without impartiality; or [75], (7)[78] (iii) made a public statement or firm opinion after appointment, or expressed a strong view publicly; [75](5), [76] have an economic interest, household, current commercial/ financial/ shareholding, membership/ involvement with educational/ charitable/ community organisations which may have a financial or other interest; (6)[77] no matter how small; (7)[78] whenever a lawyer, party, or witness is a domestic partner, close relative, close business associate, close friend, or known to the judge who has opinions about them; Whenever the case is extreme and a reasonable observer would think the Judge unable to have an open mind.

Uncertainty: (7)[78](iv) Uncertain, the Judge should discuss the matter with another Judge or Head of Jurisdiction, then give full disclosure of circumstances to the parties who are allowed to make submission and inform the judge of any further known circumstances.

Qualifying Friends

(7)[78] Friendship or past professional association with lawyers, and expression of opinion in an earlier case, may not be sufficient to disqualify themselves.

Double standard: "Support of Collegues": H.[81] Judges should be made aware of the unprofessional conduct of their judicial colleagues, and having regard to the public interest and administration of justice, should inquire with colleagues, inform the Head of Bench and Chief Justice, and give serious consideration for action; as [80] the questionable conduct by one judge reflects on the whole judiciary.

Enforced double standard: "Support for Judicial Independence": G.[79] Judges should respect, support and not critcise other judges or lawyers, publicly or privately. This is called "maintain the independence of the judiciary" and preventing "conflicts with judicial independence". It is essentially 'serving other Judges and Lawyers first' and ignoring all avenues for self-disqualification and is everything but 'independence'. It is 'co-dependence'.

So the Civil Liason Judge, Judge Nicola Mathers can have a long-term affair with Michael Reid QC. Compromised, they can prevent inquiries into rigged judges, and expect the full support of their collegues, who in turn support their combined cover-up of heroin trafficking, murder, and paedophilia within New Zealand, and Chief Justice's status as the highest-ranking Mossad agent in New Zealand, herself involved in murders and paedophilia while rooting chauffeurs in the back seat of the limousine outside official functions, sitting on top singing . . . and the heroin trafficking of Peter Williams QC.

When confronted with what should have been: H.[81] "made aware of the unprofessional conduct of their judicial colleagues, and having regard to the public interest and administration of justice, should inquire with colleagues, inform the Chief Justice, and give serious consideration for action" – Judge Roderick Joyce issued the 11 September 2009 Minute:

> "*The present application are permeated with scandalous and irrelevant material, far beyond any permissible boundaries. Court embarrassment is an abuse of the process and these documents are to be removed from the Court's working file and kept in a sealed form.*"

So the *Guidelines for Judicial Conduct* are a sham, just like the Judiciary, which is a heroin trafficking, drug money laundering, murderous paedophile movement, an Occult Mafia, and the seat of the mafia.

Peter Williams QC is the Condottiere of the New Zealand legal profession.

---

[57] *Guidelines for Judicial Conduct*, 'F. Disqualification of Judges', 'G. Support for Judicial Independence', 4 August 2005, pp. 13–16; first made available to the public on 13 November 2009 – 4 years late.

Waipareira Trust 22 November 2009

Waipareira Trust Chairman and lawyer John Tamihere is being investigated for drugs.

Former Assistant Police Commissioner and Auckland Area Commander Clint Rickards is also being investigated. He works for the Waipareira Trust.

Maori Party MP Hone (John) Harawira is also being sought to give information.

Hone Harawira was convicted for assault in 1981: "When I was younger, knocking things down was pretty much everything." Then on 19 January 2007, Hone's daughter, Anikaaro Harawira, stole a car, set fire to it, and faces 14 years in prison if convicted. She should use the excuse of 'raised by a bank robber'. The 'Millieland' clause seems to have already taken effect as there's been no conviction in almost three years.

I.O.: "It was Harawira who instigated his nephews to assault John Key at Waitangi on 5 February 2009."

> "The two men accused of assaulting Prime Minister John Key on Waitangi Day were in Parliament today [25 March 2009] at the invitation of their uncle Hone Harawira [who] has been criticised for supporting Wikatana Popata (19) and John Junior Popata (33). The pair have pleaded not guilty to the alleged assault.
> "Hone Harawira: 'We're Maori and we support one another all of the time'."
> 'Convicted on 12 June 2009, they each got 100 hours community work.'[58]

At times MP Harawira gets stressed, and recently on P, he was asked to resign from the Maori Party in November 2009.

I.O.: "A bank robber is usually the king of the criminal tree and they tend to know everything. Maori Party MP Hone Harawira has these vans with his name emblazoned on them driving around looking for support. The problem is, the Maoris driving them look a little too fierce, so a lot of people are put off talking to them as they look like they'll punch your lights out at the first sign of misunderstanding.

"Harawira is also being considered for appointment to the board of the Waipareira Trust at the instigation of John Tamihere who gets on well with Harawira and is determined to save them all by the expeditious use of Peter Williams QC. The Maoris were right when they said:

'Williams, Tamihere and Rickards are a threesome'.

I think they meant triumvirate.

"I'll put it to you this way, it is not their first venture into the field of drug manufacturing. The entire financial status of the Waipareira Trust goes up and down with the success of their methamphetamine manufacture and sales. The same goes for Clint Rickards.

You would have thought they would have got the bugs out by now.

"As Area Commander Clint Rickards told the *SundayStar Times* when they photographed him cleaning up a room his nephews had used: 'I had no idea that they were making it'."

Yeah, well, Peter Williams' partner, Heeni 'prozac' Phillips has been shagging John Tamihere for some time now, so it's more than a triumvirate – it's a roving gang of specialists.

Their main speciality is denial, supported by their positions, which were initially established by a collusion of the previous generation of criminals who issue such statements as:

". . . He's a good boy . . ."

WHAT JUDICIARY!

© TREASON ALWAYS GETS A FRONT ROW SEAT

[58] 'PM assault accused visit Parliament', *New Zealand Herald*, *NZPA*, 25 March 2009; 'Brothers Assaulted Prime Minister In Rush Of Blood', voxy.co.nz, 12 June 2009.

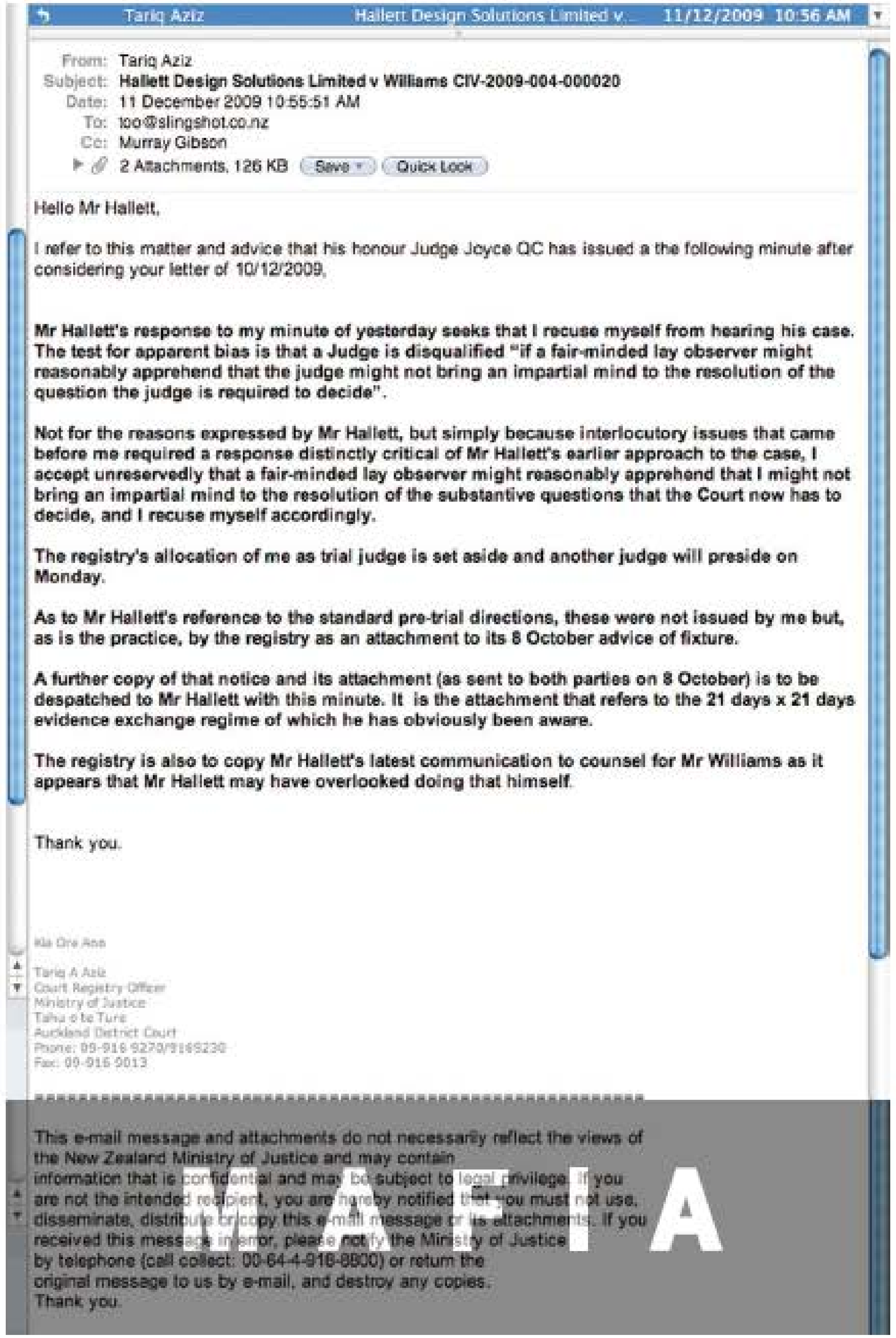

From: Tariq Aziz
Subject: **Hallett Design Solutions Limited v Williams CIV-2009-004-000020**
Date: 11 December 2009 10:55:51 AM
To: too@slingshot.co.nz
Cc: Murray Gibson
2 Attachments, 126 KB

Hello Mr Hallett,

I refer to this matter and advice that his honour Judge Joyce QC has issued a the following minute after considering your letter of 10/12/2009,

Mr Hallett's response to my minute of yesterday seeks that I recuse myself from hearing his case. The test for apparent bias is that a Judge is disqualified "if a fair-minded lay observer might reasonably apprehend that the judge might not bring an impartial mind to the resolution of the question the judge is required to decide".

Not for the reasons expressed by Mr Hallett, but simply because interlocutory issues that came before me required a response distinctly critical of Mr Hallett's earlier approach to the case, I accept unreservedly that a fair-minded lay observer might reasonably apprehend that I might not bring an impartial mind to the resolution of the substantive questions that the Court now has to decide, and I recuse myself accordingly.

The registry's allocation of me as trial judge is set aside and another judge will preside on Monday.

As to Mr Hallett's reference to the standard pre-trial directions, these were not issued by me but, as is the practice, by the registry as an attachment to its 8 October advice of fixture.

A further copy of that notice and its attachment (as sent to both parties on 8 October) is to be despatched to Mr Hallett with this minute. It is the attachment that refers to the 21 days x 21 days evidence exchange regime of which he has obviously been aware.

The registry is also to copy Mr Hallett's latest communication to counsel for Mr Williams as it appears that Mr Hallett may have overlooked doing that himself.

Thank you.

Kia Ora Ano

Tariq A Aziz
Court Registry Officer
Ministry of Justice
Tahu o te Ture
Auckland District Court
Phone: 09-916 9270/9169230
Fax: 09-916 9013

==

This e-mail message and attachments do not necessarily reflect the views of
the New Zealand Ministry of Justice and may contain
information that is confidential and may be subject to legal privilege. If you
are not the intended recipient, you are hereby notified that you must not use,
disseminate, distribute or copy this e-mail message or its attachments. If you
received this message in error, please notify the Ministry of Justice
by telephone (call collect: 00-64-4-918-8800) or return the
original message to us by e-mail, and destroy any copies.
Thank you.

MAFIA

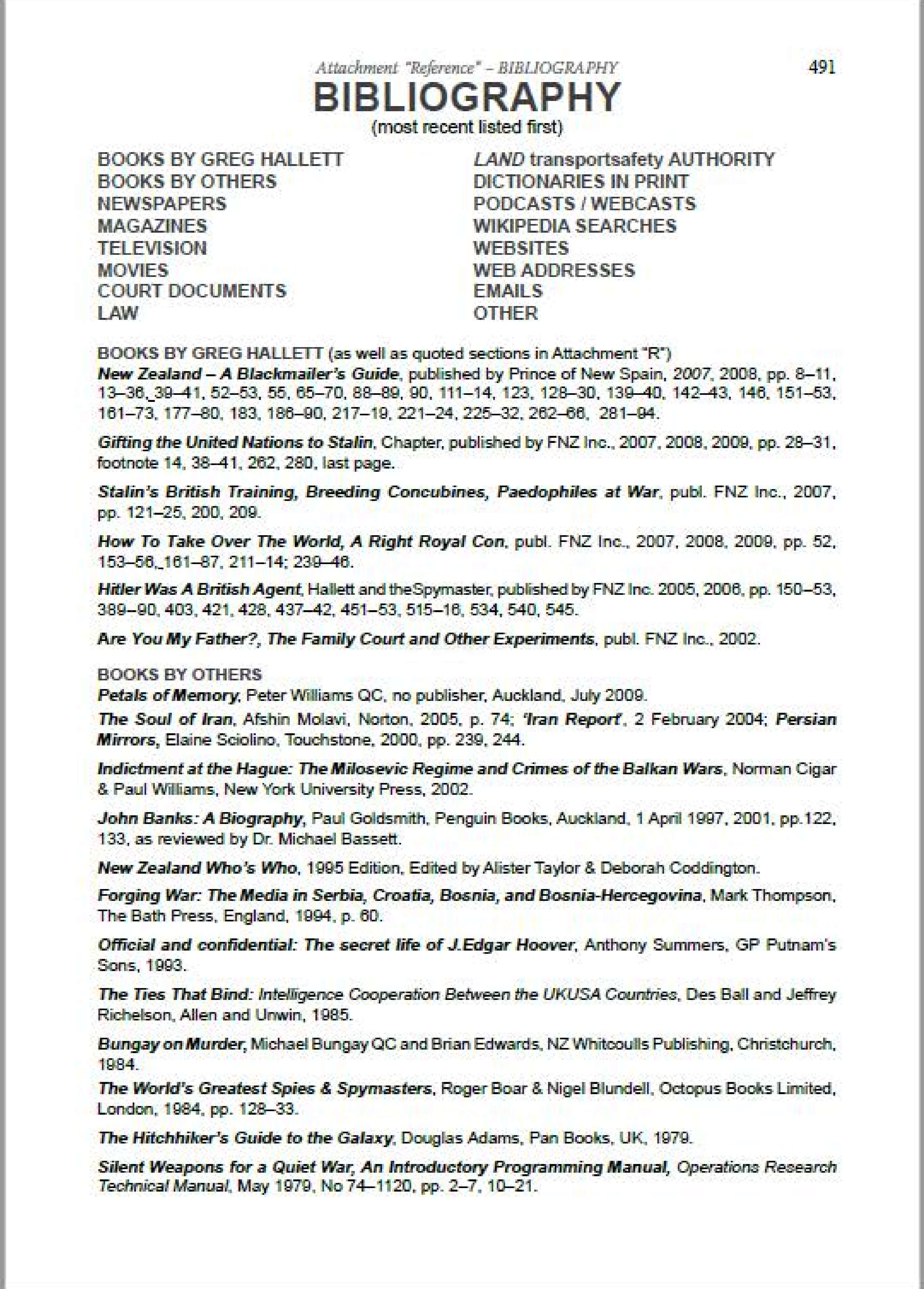

BIBLIOGRAPHY

(most recent listed first)

BOOKS BY GREG HALLETT
BOOKS BY OTHERS
NEWSPAPERS
MAGAZINES
TELEVISION
MOVIES
COURT DOCUMENTS
LAW
LAND transportsafety AUTHORITY
DICTIONARIES IN PRINT
PODCASTS / WEBCASTS
WIKIPEDIA SEARCHES
WEBSITES
WEB ADDRESSES
EMAILS
OTHER

BOOKS BY GREG HALLETT (as well as quoted sections in Attachment "R")

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, published by Prince of New Spain, *2007*, 2008, pp. 8–11, 13–36,_39–41, 52–53, 55, 65–70, 88–89, 90, 111–14, 123, 128–30, 139–40, 142–43, 146, 151–53, 161–73, 177–80, 183, 186–90, 217–19, 221–24, 225–32, 262–66, 281–94.

Gifting the United Nations to Stalin, Chapter, published by FNZ Inc., 2007, 2008, 2009, pp. 28–31, footnote 14, 38–41, 262, 280, last page.

Stalin's British Training, Breeding Concubines, Paedophiles at War, publ. FNZ Inc., 2007, pp. 121–25, 200, 209.

How To Take Over The World, A Right Royal Con, publ. FNZ Inc., 2007, 2008, 2009, pp. 52, 153–56,_161–87, 211–14; 239–46.

Hitler Was A British Agent, Hallett and theSpymaster, published by FNZ Inc. 2005, 2006, pp. 150–53, 389–90, 403, 421, 428, 437–42, 451–53, 515–16, 534, 540, 545.

Are You My Father?, The Family Court and Other Experiments, publ. FNZ Inc., 2002.

BOOKS BY OTHERS

Petals of Memory, Peter Williams QC, no publisher, Auckland, July 2009.

The Soul of Iran, Afshin Molavi, Norton, 2005, p. 74; ***'Iran Report***', 2 February 2004; ***Persian Mirrors,*** Elaine Sciolino, Touchstone, 2000, pp. 239, 244.

Indictment at the Hague: The Milosevic Regime and Crimes of the Balkan Wars, Norman Cigar & Paul Williams, New York University Press, 2002.

John Banks: A Biography, Paul Goldsmith, Penguin Books, Auckland, 1 April 1997, 2001, pp.122, 133, as reviewed by Dr. Michael Bassett.

New Zealand Who's Who, 1995 Edition, Edited by Alister Taylor & Deborah Coddington.

Forging War: The Media in Serbia, Croatia, Bosnia, and Bosnia-Hercegovina, Mark Thompson, The Bath Press, England, 1994, p. 60.

Official and confidential: The secret life of J.Edgar Hoover, Anthony Summers, GP Putnam's Sons, 1993.

The Ties That Bind: *Intelligence Cooperation Between the UKUSA Countries*, Des Ball and Jeffrey Richelson, Allen and Unwin, 1985.

Bungay on Murder, Michael Bungay QC and Brian Edwards, NZ Whitcoulls Publishing, Christchurch, 1984.

The World's Greatest Spies & Spymasters, Roger Boar & Nigel Blundell, Octopus Books Limited, London, 1984, pp. 128–33.

The Hitchhiker's Guide to the Galaxy, Douglas Adams, Pan Books, UK, 1979.

Silent Weapons for a Quiet War, An Introductory Programming Manual, *Operations Research Technical Manual*, May 1979, No 74–1120, pp. 2–7, 10–21.

Studies in the Structure of the American Economy, copyrighted in 1953 by Wassily Leontief, International Sciences Press Inc., White Plains, New York (for an I.R.S. source list).

Jewish History Sourcebook: 'An Oath Taken by Jews in Frankfurt am (on the) Main, about 1392 CE' [like the Rothschilds, then called 'Bauer'].

Bible, Leviticus, chapter 16, cf. Exodus 30:10; Leviticus 23:27–31, 25:9; Numbers 29:7–11; The First Epistle of JOHN, 5.6–5.9.

NEWSPAPERS

Associated Free Press, 'Bushfires Royal Commission interim report ignores fuel issue' [and] 'Bushfires Royal Commission interim report ignores fuel issue – expert', Sarah Wotherspoon, 17 August. 2009; 'PM says Victoria bushfire worst not over', 8 February 2009; The Hague, 1 August 2008.

B92 News, 'Šešelj: Đinđić killer merits same glory as Princip', 21 May 2008.

BBC News: Profile : 'Ratko Mladic', 31 July 2008, 23 September 2003; 'Nuclear link' to terror suspects', 14 November 2005.

CNN, SYDNEY, Australia, 'Third day of wildfire threatens Sydney', Grant Holloway, 5 Dec. 2002.

Congoo News, Reuters India, 'Milosevic widow, son granted asylum in Russia', 1 Feb. 2008.

Egypt State Information Service, 'New Zealand deports two Israeli spies', 30 Sept. 2004.

Global-L *Mossad article*, 'Mossad man's history of bungles', Nicky Hager, 27 February 2005.

Guardian, UK, 'Tony's the kind of Guy', 14 January 2009.

IPI, Slobodan Milosevic Interview, Belgrade, 30 April 1999.

Israeli Press Review, 'Insights into new Mossad chief Meir Dagan', Lebanonwire, 17 Sept. 2002.

Lancashire Evening Post, 'Asia, The Mr Big with fortune of £50 million'; 'The Killing of Mr Asia'; 'Back from the deep! Drugs, Death and a grisly man-hunt', 2 July 1982; 'Police Probe Mystery of Butchered Corpse, Brian Ellis & Peter Richardson, 15 October 1979, No. 28,791.

New York Times, 'Showdown in Yugoslavia: An Ally; China, Once a Supporter of Milosevic Against NATO, Sends Its Congratulations to Kostunica', Erik Eckholm, 8 October 2000;
New York Times magazine, 'The Shah's Health: A Political Gamble', 17 May 1981, section 6, p 48, New York edition.

New Zealand Herald, 'Millie Elder relieved drug saga at end', 12 November 2009; 'Sian Elias received a letter from Patrick O'Brien in which he claimed to have lied under oath', 12 October 2008; Front page, A1, 2 September 2008; 'I've Changed, says disbarred lawyer', 20 October 2007; 'Brash backs probe panel', 23 January 2006; 'Sale of Blake's boat threatens end for nature project', Claire Trevett, 8 August 2003.

New Zealand Press Association, 'Millie Elder drugs charges dropped', Stuff.co.nz, 11 November 2009; Wellington, 26 May 2008.

New Zealand Truth, 'Kahui abuse shock, Father of dead twins set to become campaign poster boy', 28 August 2009, pp. 1-2; 25 December 2008, pp. 1–2, 29 May 2008, p. 5, 23 August 2007, p. 5, 22 March 2007, pp. 1 & 5, all of it.

Otago Daily Times, 'Ellis inquiry cost much less than $500,000 stated', 26 July 2001.

Pacific News, 'Jailed Israeli spy worked for security firm', 2004.

Politika, Serbian Newspaper, citing Serbian military intelligence leak, early February 2006.

Reuters 'Human tests of avian flu vaccine underway', 25 March 2005; and **New Zealand Herald** [five months later on] 1 September 2005.

Scoop, 'NGOs Claim Wanted Israeli Agent Barkan In North Korea', State Of It, Selwyn Manning, Scoop Co-Editor, 19 July 2004.

SundayStar Times, About Town, 5 April 2009, p. 31, 20 July 2008, p. 38, 20 Jan. 2008, p. 9, 23 Dec. 2007, p. 9; Nicky Hager, 'Australians aware of agent's connection to Mossad', 27 February 2005.

Sydney Morning Herald, 'Accused minister paid for Rudd trip', Richard Baker & Philip Dorling, 27 July 2009; 'Fined for illegal clearing, family now feel vindicated', Richard Baker and Nick McKenzie, 12 February 2009.

The Age, 'Black Saturday: Bendigo fatal fire arson', Mex Cooper, 10 June 2009; 'Marysville fire deliberately lit: police', Reko Rennie, 1 April 2009.

The Auckland Star [whenever].

The Daily Telegraph, 'Just Cut Them Down', Tim Blair, Blog, Have Your Say, 13 Feb. 2009.

The Dominion Post, 'Two Mossad spies jailed in New Zealand', Vernon Small and Michael Pelly, 16 July 2004.

The New Citizen, On Her Majesty's Secret Service: Kevin 007?, Robert Barwick, October/November 2009, pp. 3, 23.

The Timaru Herald, *'Global Warming Debunked'*, 19 May 2007.

The Times, June 2005. London, 'Angry Serbs topple the leadership of Vojvodina province; Demonstrations against the Communist Party; Yugoslavia, 7 October 1988.

University of Waikato News, 5 January 2004.

Washington Post, Slobodan Milosevic Interview, Belgrade, 16 December 1998.

MAGAZINES

Counterattack, Facts to Combat Communism, New York, May 7 1948.

Forbes Asia, 18 Sept. 2006.

InPerspective, Issue 3, Australia, 2008.

Listener, David Lomas, 'The Fall of Mr Asia', 23–29 October 2004, Vol 196 No 3363.

LPI Research Newsletter, 'Chlorophylls and Cancer Prevention: Passing the First Hurdle', Dr. George S. Bailey, Fall/Winter 2002.

M2 magazine, Bob Jones on Fatherhood, September 2009.

Te Karaka, Summer 2008–2009, p. 59.

The Australian Jewish News, 'PM to received B'nai B'rith's top honour', Gedaliah Afterman, 8 May 2006.

The Listener Archive, Feature 'Dead Ends', Pat Booth, Vol. 203, No, 3438, 1–7 April 2006.

The Monthly, 'Why We Weren't Warned, The Victorian Bushfires and the Royal Commission, Robert Manne, July 2009, No. 47.

TELEVISION

ABC News, 'Wide-ranging powers for bushfire inquiry: Brumby', 16 February 2009; ABC gets record funding boost, ABC News, 12 May 2009.

BBC News, 'World Tour of New Zealand', Billy Connolly, fourth BBC series, winter 2004; 23 September 2003; *'Death of Yugoslavia'*,1995.

PBS, *Wide Angle, Milošević and the Media*, 'Part 3: Dictatorship on the Airwaves'.

Prime TV, Voice of America News, New Zealand, 1 July 2008, 10.40 pm.

TV1, 'Expose: The Real Mr Asia', 27 October 2004.

TV3, 'Underbelly: The Mr Asia Story', 4 March–29 April 2009; 'Inside New Zealand', 28 May 2005;
TV3 News, 'Government confirms cut to superannuation fund', 6:51 pm, 11 March 2009; 'Trust stands by decision to employ Clint Rickards', 6:21 p.m. 21 November 2008;
6 o'clock news, 5 January 2004.

MOVIES

Star Trek, Mr Spock, USS *Enterprise*, 1969.

COURT DOCUMENTS

Peter Alderidge Williams v Gregory Hallett, Brief of Evidence of Peter Alderidge Williams and Donald Christopher Stedman Reid, backdated 29 days to 14 December 2009, court stamped 12 January 2010, and served at midday.

Hallett Design Solutions Limited v Peter Alderidge Williams, Statement of Defense to First Amended Statement of Claim, by Chris Reid (Peter Williams' lawyer) 1 October 2009.

Hallett Design Solutions Limited v Peter Alderidge Williams, Amended Statement of Claim, by Chris Reid (Peter Williams' lawyer) 1 October 2009.

Minute of Judge Roderick Joyce, 11 September 2009.

Hallett Design Solutions Limited v Peter Alderidge Williams, QC, Statement of Claim, 26 August 2009.

Hallett Design Solutions Limited v Peter Alderidge Williams, QC, Discovery for the Evaluation Conference, 26 August 2009.

Hallett Design Solutions Limited v Peter Alderidge Williams, QC, Affidavit in Support of Statement of Claim, 26 August 2009.

Hallett Design Solutions Limited v Peter Alderidge Williams, QC, Evaluation Conference of 26 August 2009, stamped 21 August 2009.

Letter from Crown Law, Peter Gun, re: Hallett Design Solutions Ltd v Peter Alderidge Williams, 5 August 2009.

Letter from Civil Liason Judge Mathers, 4 August 2009.

Ministry of Justice re: Hallett Design Solutions Limited v Williams Notice of date of Judicial Conference, 3 August 2009.

Judge Perkins Minute re: Hallett Design Solutions Limited v Williams, 31 July 2009.

Letter to Civil Liason Judge Mathers and Solicitor-General Dr David Collins QC, 29 July 2009.

Minute of Judge Stevens, 20 April 2009.

Peter Alderidge Williams QC Tag 'A' [Slavery Contract], 2 March 2009.

Peter Alderidge Williams, QC Statement of Defense and Counter-Claim, 2 March 2009.

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE, transfer to District Court, 12 January 2009.

Hallett Design Solutions Ltd v Japanese Restaurant Holdings, Statement of Defense by Chris Reid (Peter Williams' lawyer), 16 December 2008.

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE, ORDER OF THE DISPUTES TRIBUNAL, 9 December 2008.

EDWARD POULTER LEARY V NEW ZEALAND LAW PRACTITIONERS DISCIPLINARY TRIBUNAL HC AK CIV.2006-404-7227 [2007] NZHC 819 (21 August 2007).

Auckland District Law Society v Leary CA200/86, Court of Appeal, 15 April 1987.

LAW

Defamation Act 1992, Public Act 1992 No 105.

Slave Dealing: Crimes Act 1961, Part 5, Crimes against public order, Section 98, Slave Dealing.

Judge R Joyce, *Hallett Design Solutions Limited v PA Williams*, 2009, CIV 2009-004-000020, Minute of 11 September 2009, Auckland District Court, citing High Court Rule 186, Family Court Rule 193, Canadian Supreme Court; District Court cases: *Watson v Clarke* in 1990, citing *Cocker v Tempest*, 1841; *R v Connelly*, 1964; *R v Jewitt*, 1985; *Van Der Kaap v Attorney-General* citing *Thompson v Westpac*, 1986, citing High Court Rule 186.

LAND transportsafety AUTHORITY

Request for Motor Vehicle Details, 17 August 2005; Temporary New Zealand Driver Licence, 5 December 2003.

DICTIONARIES IN PRINT

American Heritage Dictionary, 'Common Law'.

American Heritage New Dictionary of Cultural Literacy, Third Edition, 'Common Law'.

Black's Eight Law Dictionary, 'Summary Judgement'.

Black's Fifth Law Dictionary, 'Summary', p. 1287.

Butterworth's NZ Law Dictionary, 5th Edition, Spiller.

Concise Oxford Dictionary, 'Asservation', 'tort'.

Dictionary of New Zealand Biography, Brian Easton.

Merriam-Webster Dictionary of Law.

Oxford Reference English, 2008

PODCASTS / WEBCASTS

Michael Tsarion: 'Brotherhood of Death', ***Red Ice Creations***, Sweden, 2009.

PODCASTS / WEBCASTS of Greg Hallett

The Real Deal, America, with Dr. Jim Fetzer Ph.D, 19 February 2010.
The Real Deal, America, 29 January 2010.
The Real Deal, America, 26 November 2009.

Rumour Mill News, Radio RMN, America, with Rayelan Allan, 5 January 2010.
Rumour Mill News, Radio RMN, America, 22 December 2009.

The Richard Syrett Show, Glastonbury Radio, England & Canada, 4 August 2009.
The Richard Syrett Show, Canada, with Richard Syrett, 26 April 2008.

Red Ice Creations, Sweden, with Henrik Palmgren, 19 February 2008.

Cloak & Dagger, Canada, with Dr. Stefan Grossmann Ph.D. & Lenny Bloom, 3 February 2008.
Cloak & Dagger, Canada, 19 October 2006.
Cloak & Dagger, Canada, 16 October 2006.
Cloak & Dagger, Canada, 9 October 2006.

Channel Z, America, with Zeph Daniel, 18 October 2006.

Channel Z, America, 7 August 2006.
Channel Z, America, 9 May 2006.
Channel Z, America, 19 April 2006.
Channel Z, America, 27 March 2006.
Channel Z, America, 4 January 2006.

WIKIPEDIA SEARCHES

'Black Saturday bushfires'; 'Children Overboard Affair'; Crinoline; Cypres (cy-près doctrine); Dennis Canavan;_Georgia Guidestones; Lord George Robertson; Michael King; 'Monarchies of Europe, Yugoslavian Royal Family'; Radovan Karadžić; Ratko Mladić; Slobodan Milošević; Slavery, Involuntary Servitude; Taito Phillip Field; Winston Peters.

WEBSITES

BBC, ON THIS DAY 16 Jan. 1979: 'Shah of Iran flees into exile'; Gulf News.com, 7 Nov. 1978.

Brady Bunch.

BRITISH MONARCHY PRESS RELEASES & SPEECHES, ANNOUNCEMENT OF A NEW GOVERNOR GENERAL OF NEW ZEALAND, 3 April 2006.

Brize Norton, RAF.

Computer History Museum, Cray-1 30th Anniversary presentation, 2006.

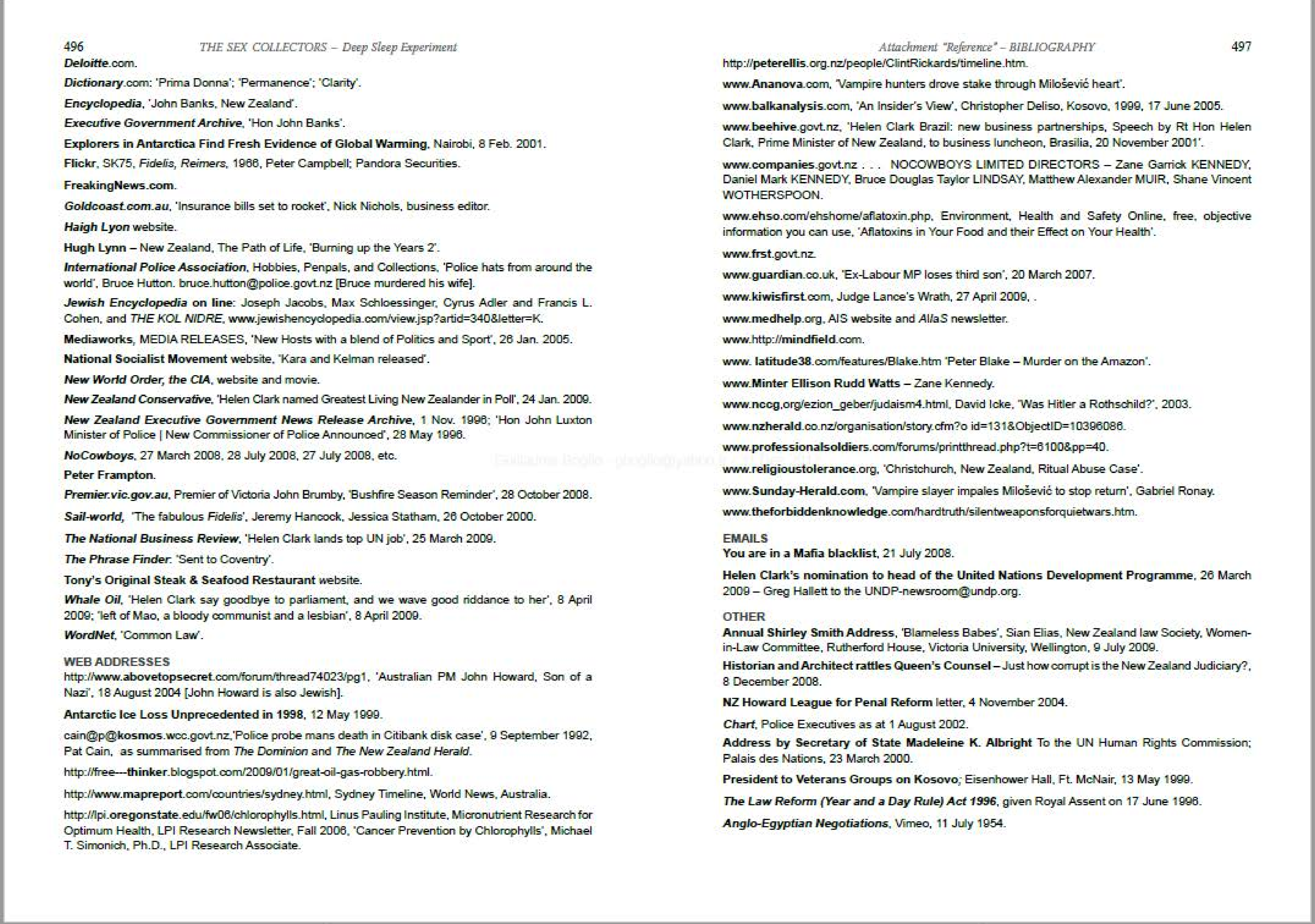

Deloitte.com.

Dictionary.com: 'Prima Donna'; 'Permanence'; 'Clarity'.

Encyclopedia, 'John Banks, New Zealand'.

Executive Government Archive, 'Hon John Banks'.

Explorers in Antarctica Find Fresh Evidence of Global Warming, Nairobi, 8 Feb. 2001.

Flickr, SK75, *Fidelis*, *Reimers*, 1966, Peter Campbell; Pandora Securities.

FreakingNews.com.

Goldcoast.com.au, 'Insurance bills set to rocket', Nick Nichols, business editor.

Haigh Lyon website.

Hugh Lynn – New Zealand, The Path of Life, 'Burning up the Years 2'.

International Police Association, Hobbies, Penpals, and Collections, 'Police hats from around the world', Bruce Hutton. bruce.hutton@police.govt.nz [Bruce murdered his wife].

***Jewish Encyclopedia* on line**: Joseph Jacobs, Max Schloessinger, Cyrus Adler and Francis L. Cohen, and *THE KOL NIDRE*, www.jewishencyclopedia.com/view.jsp?artid=340&letter=K.

Mediaworks, MEDIA RELEASES, 'New Hosts with a blend of Politics and Sport', 26 Jan. 2005.

National Socialist Movement website, 'Kara and Kelman released'.

New World Order, the CIA, website and movie.

New Zealand Conservative, 'Helen Clark named Greatest Living New Zealander in Poll', 24 Jan. 2009.

New Zealand Executive Government News Release Archive, 1 Nov. 1996; 'Hon John Luxton Minister of Police | New Commissioner of Police Announced', 28 May 1996.

NoCowboys, 27 March 2008, 28 July 2008, 27 July 2008, etc.

Peter Frampton.

Premier.vic.gov.au, Premier of Victoria John Brumby, 'Bushfire Season Reminder', 28 October 2008.

Sail-world, 'The fabulous *Fidelis*', Jeremy Hancock, Jessica Statham, 26 October 2000.

The National Business Review, 'Helen Clark lands top UN job', 25 March 2009.

The Phrase Finder. 'Sent to Coventry'.

Tony's Original Steak & Seafood Restaurant website.

Whale Oil, 'Helen Clark say goodbye to parliament, and we wave good riddance to her', 8 April 2009; 'left of Mao, a bloody communist and a lesbian', 8 April 2009.

WordNet, 'Common Law'.

WEB ADDRESSES

http://www.**abovetopsecret**.com/forum/thread74023/pg1, 'Australian PM John Howard, Son of a Nazi', 18 August 2004 [John Howard is also Jewish].

Antarctic Ice Loss Unprecedented in 1998, 12 May 1999.

cain@p@**kosmos**.wcc.govt.nz,'Police probe mans death in Citibank disk case', 9 September 1992, Pat Cain, as summarised from *The Dominion* and *The New Zealand Herald*.

http://free---**thinker**.blogspot.com/2009/01/great-oil-gas-robbery.html.

http://www.**mapreport**.com/countries/sydney.html, Sydney Timeline, World News, Australia.

http://lpi.**oregonstate**.edu/fw06/chlorophylls.html, Linus Pauling Institute, Micronutrient Research for Optimum Health, LPI Research Newsletter, Fall 2006, 'Cancer Prevention by Chlorophylls', Michael T. Simonich, Ph.D., LPI Research Associate.

http://**peterellis**.org.nz/people/ClintRickards/timeline.htm.

www.**Ananova**.com, 'Vampire hunters drove stake through Milošević heart'.

www.**balkanalysis**.com, 'An Insider's View', Christopher Deliso, Kosovo, 1999, 17 June 2005.

www.**beehive**.govt.nz, 'Helen Clark Brazil: new business partnerships, Speech by Rt Hon Helen Clark, Prime Minister of New Zealand, to business luncheon, Brasilia, 20 November 2001'.

www.**companies**.govt.nz . . . NOCOWBOYS LIMITED DIRECTORS – Zane Garrick KENNEDY, Daniel Mark KENNEDY, Bruce Douglas Taylor LINDSAY, Matthew Alexander MUIR, Shane Vincent WOTHERSPOON.

www.**ehso**.com/ehshome/aflatoxin.php, Environment, Health and Safety Online, free, objective information you can use, 'Aflatoxins in Your Food and their Effect on Your Health'.

www.**frst**.govt.nz.

www.**guardian**.co.uk, 'Ex-Labour MP loses third son', 20 March 2007.

www.**kiwisfirst**.com, Judge Lance's Wrath, 27 April 2009, .

www.**medhelp**.org, AIS website and *AllaS* newsletter.

www.http://**mindfield**.com.

www. **latitude38**.com/features/Blake.htm 'Peter Blake – Murder on the Amazon'.

www.**Minter Ellison Rudd Watts –** Zane Kennedy.

www.**nccg**.org/ezion_geber/judaism4.html, David Icke, 'Was Hitler a Rothschild?', 2003.

www.**nzherald**.co.nz/organisation/story.cfm?o id=131&ObjectID=10396086.

www.**professionalsoldiers**.com/forums/printthread.php?t=6100&pp=40.

www.**religioustolerance**.org, 'Christchurch, New Zealand, Ritual Abuse Case'.

www.**Sunday-Herald.com**, 'Vampire slayer impales Milošević to stop return', Gabriel Ronay.

www.**theforbiddenknowledge**.com/hardtruth/silentweaponsforquietwars.htm.

EMAILS

You are in a Mafia blacklist, 21 July 2008.

Helen Clark's nomination to head of the United Nations Development Programme, 26 March 2009 – Greg Hallett to the UNDP-newsroom@undp.org.

OTHER

Annual Shirley Smith Address, 'Blameless Babes', Sian Elias, New Zealand law Society, Women-in-Law Committee, Rutherford House, Victoria University, Wellington, 9 July 2009.

Historian and Architect rattles Queen's Counsel – Just how corrupt is the New Zealand Judiciary?, 8 December 2008.

NZ Howard League for Penal Reform letter, 4 November 2004.

Chart, Police Executives as at 1 August 2002.

Address by Secretary of State Madeleine K. Albright To the UN Human Rights Commission; Palais des Nations, 23 March 2000.

President to Veterans Groups on Kosovo; Eisenhower Hall, Ft. McNair, 13 May 1999.

The Law Reform (Year and a Day Rule) Act 1996, given Royal Assent on 17 June 1996.

Anglo-Egyptian Negotiations, Vimeo, 11 July 1954.

INSEX II

Dates
1845–72 Maori Land Wars 85
1868 last fair election in US, Ulysses S. Grant won 289
1917 Balfour Agreement 249
1958 first suitcase nuke 76
1967 Six Day War, 5–10 June 274
7 June 1967 – the 130th anniversary of Alois Hitler's birth (Adolf's papa) 310
November 1977 269
February 1978 269
8/9 November 1978 271
10 November 1978 279
22 October 1979 275, 277-79
22.03.1980 45
27 July 1980 271, 276-77
October 1981 153
9 December 1989 139, 316
November 1990 236
1990–93 very depressed 322
January 1994 112, 119
1996 and broke down crying 122
1999 APEC conference 83, 93
July 2001, Blake Special Envoy Environment Programme 309
9-11 76
20 November 2001 311, 315
10 pm on the 5 December 2001 313
14 December 2001 317
25 March–2 April 2002 138-39
26 March 2002 326
April 2002 193
2 April 2002 207, 325-26
2 April 2002, 23 August 2002, 14–22 May 2004, July 2006, 27 July 2007, 26 October 2007, 17–27 March 2008 180
20 July 2002 140
August 2002 193, 207
15–23 August 2002 327
16 August 2002 142, 327
23 August 2002 140, 145, 153, 180
28 August 2002– 325
4 December 2002 100
19 December 2002 122, 144
3 January 2003 122
3/4 January 2003 74, 87, 201
6 January 2003 144
19 January 2003 122, 144
7 May 2003 83, 93
20 July 2003 83
July 2003–September 2004 190
13 August 2003 145-46
14 August 2003 146
28 August 2003 136
October 2003 146, 153, 160, 193, 205
13 October 2003 116
15 October 2003 116
16 October 2003 325
25 November 2003 325
5 December 2003 146-47
10 December 2003 147
1 January 2004 New Year's Honours List as "Distinguished Companion of the New Zealand Order of Merit 116, 203
January, March and June murders 194
31 January 2004 325
3 February 2004 142, 154, 328
4 February 2004 142, 328
April 2004 146
May 2004 193, 207
14–22 May 2004 71, 153, 159, 160, 169, 178, 207, 259, 264, 325, 328
1 July 2004 116
15 July to 29 September 2004 – so only 40 % of their sentence 194
25 August 2004 ($45,000) 309
28–31 August 2004 Murder Threats 192
18 October 2004 160, 194, 230
27–30 March 2005 201
April 2005 233, 330
16 June 2005 259,329,411
28 July 2005 259, 261
6 November 2005 161
30 November/1 December 2005 73
16 January 2006 264-65, 329
16 May 2006 219
23 August 2006 325
January 2007 208
10 June 2007 129
31 October 2007 330
24 November 2007 229
29 November 2007 trust's annual report 188
1 December 2007 129, 335-36
3 December 2007 255-56
19 December 2007 332
10 April 2008 144
30 May 2008 334
10 June 2008 335
August 2008 164
9 October 2008 213, 221
7 November 2008 335
29 November 2008, MI-6 announced no longer protecting heroin traffickers 172
2 December 2008 167, 170, 331
3 December 2008 167
5 December 2008 321
8, 9 December 2008 167
7 February 2009 227-29, 240, 255
April Fool's Day, 1 April 2009 317, 311
28 September 2009 208, 213, 221
29 November 2009 167
18 September 2010 213, 221
8 October 2011 213, 221

Percentage
40% more than expected 146
40% prison pop. incarcerated for crimes they did not commit 136, 194, 202
45% Chinese immigrants military trained 112
75% non-heterosexual government 91
80% crime, only solve 40 % includes traffic and drugs; police don't solve murders in NZ 138
90% crime committed by fatherless children 138
99.8% paedophilia occurs when biological father absent 204

Money
US$0.73¢ per kilo to disseminate 75
$400.00 156
$400 and $130 Court costs 329
$1,490.00 in fines with a six month loss of licence 120, 142, 207, 327
$4,000 329
$4,500 162, 259
$4,800 162, 329
$7,000 bill written off car without spectacular kudos of flaming accident 156
$7,500 architecture fee off Peter Williams QC 172
$10,000 defending the case 149, 170
10,000 guineas 204
$11,250.00 330
$12,000 252
$14,000 178
$30,000 plus G.S.T. 185, 188
$40,000 for a fortnight's work 268
$40,000 378, 453
$100,000 of taxpayers' money 119, 141
$50,000 grant, two $10,000 dresses parading during dinner at Helen Clark's, drag queen 'Lilith Lacroix', CD Drumdrag 140
NZ$60,000 205
US$161,680 302
$220,000 252
$500,000 164
$850,000 148, 152
$1 million 252
$1.5 million 238
$4 million 256
£2 million 120
US$6.13 million 253
NZ$10 million per annum 116
NZ$12.5 million theft 308, 317
$10 million a year 128
$20 million 253
US$15 million 253
$60 million 255-56
$67 million, antenna dome, all decisions made in Israel 116
$136.4 million 237
$500 million 81
NZ$0.5 billion, NZ$500 million or thereabouts 135
NZ$0.5 billion fraudster 186
NZ$0.5 billion per annum cost 162
$1.5 billion 228, 241

Time Reference
1st January 0°C latitude is moving south 310
eight days of surveillance, 14–22 May 2004 207
13 months later NZPM Helen Clark was wearing CIA nappies (4 January 2003–) 327
Eighteen years after their ill-gotten gains, Helen Clark was NZ's PM, Vladimir Putin was President of Russia 94
19 days later 195
20th in The Forbes 100 Most Powerful Women 89
20/20's Ticking Time Bomb 84
25th anniversary of the Third World War 33
35 seconds to turn an agent 328
76 days (2½ months) 194
95-minutes to St Petersburg 139
444 days show all in Golden Dawn know masterful stabilisation exercise 278

Numbers
first American economy, then world economy 41
first strike capability in the field of economics 41
first time Israel owned United States 264
two fathers get custody each year in each Family Court 142
2IC of the SIS 154, 156
three architecture jobs 162
three financial assassinations 325, 328-30
3-IC, in charge of depop. Africa, Third World nations 321
3-IC of UN – dreamboat position for Adolf Hitler – set up for genocide 313
three Vladimir Putins, Valenti, Alexia, Alexander Putin 83
3/9-11 Fox Street, Parnell 140
four contracts 190
fourth law of motion it, performing action, leaving before reaction returns to point of action, no faith 48
4-by-2 across the face with bruises to match 166
4 Cromwell Street in Mt Eden 138, 201
4WD implodes 178
4 x $60,000 191
six (6) KGB agents into the Security Intelligence Service (SIS) 138
six-four 307, 317
Seven sisters, Mobil, Shell, BP, Exxon, Amoco, Texaco, Chevron 279
9 mm bullets 235
10 kg of Afghan heroin 201
10 kg of cocaine 5-6, 12
1st Motion Picture Unit in Culver City, California 293
12 psi, 32 psi 177, 334
14th stage Freemason, Police Comm. Bob Walton 164
14-18-year-old Maori /Polynesian boys dancing naked 111
18 stone SAS and one 18 stone Mossad inside 176
18th AAF Base Unit 291
21 Salamanca Road in Kelburn, Wellington in 1981 92
25m/82 ft high flames 239
35 km/hr 141
40-year-old virgin 165, 180
51 Recommendations 230, 236
55 psi 334
60 blazes in/around Australia's major commercial center Sydney 218
72 psi, front left tyre 177, 334
100 metre fire break around their homes 239-45
140 highly prominent signatories sexually borderline 109
204 Hollywood professionals 293
500 litres of poisons 75
570,000 hectares (1.2 million acres) 218
999 emergency call system 88
phone number 1066 82
1,200 schoolgirls stick them together 279
1,500 Hiroshima bombs 243
1500 Israeli agents in the South Island 193
1938 Plymouth 119
1948, transistor invented by J. Bardeen, W. H. Brattain, and W. Shockley 34
2000 Chinese spies living in New Zealand 112
4500 paedophiles identified in New Zealand 83
5000 potential agents in New Zealand 193
7000 men got protection orders each year, 10 years country disarmed 113
250,000 annually 273
600,000 ocean miles 307

A
Abdulatif, Paul 88
accused now having to prove they did not do murderous and other acts 335
At Jew ment – the Act of being a Jew, and adjournment of honour towards Gentiles 215
AA+ member of more than 10 years 156
AA at the City branch on Khyber Pass 148
ABC, Australian Broadcasting Corporation 237
  Australian Rockspider Association 220, 238, 243-44
  don't trust ABC to have an audience 238
ability to look at human society with cold objectivity 33
Ablett-Kerr, Judith QC 108
Abraham Lincoln Brigade 298
absence of Navy Seals, uncultural breach, Water Rats free reign 315
Abu Ghraib 217
Abwher 303
ACC claims 304
accessories to murder 84
achievements are bordering on treason – acting against citizen and country 91
active homosexual 165, 170
Actors and Writers guilds 295
Actors Equity 299
Adan 319
admittance, proven to be true 44
adopted three children from Russia 144
advertising strategy for each class 59
Aerial 164-65, 180
Afghan heroin actually 12, 73-75, 85
Afghanistan 20, 144, 289, 302
Afghan War began on 7 October 2001 122, 144-45
Aflatoxin B1 273-74
Africa 58
Agreed history equals promotion 284
Aids of the Brain 213
Ainsworth-Davis, John, a.k.a. Lieutenant Commander Christopher John James Creighton 295
AIR-3 303
AIS Grade 4 & 5 females, enlarged their vaginas through masturbation 77
Aislabie, Grant, Principal Disputes Tribunal Referee valued by occult as born NZ's hairiest baby 112, 119-20, 135, 327
Ajax Meat Export Company' attached to the Manners Street Post Office in Wellington 94
Alaska 217, 227, 235, 244
Alaskan whale 116
Albright, Madeleine K, a.k.a. Maria Jana Korbelová,
  born a Jew in Prague, raised Catholic 268
  Secretary of State, lover of Hillary Clinton, cohort of Helen Clark 280
  Jewish Catholic lesbian w. voice for peace and penchant for murder 283, 311
Alcoholics Anonymous 105
  met two judges who loaned him $850,000 148
Alexander Island 309
Alexander the Great 318
Alfred P Murrah Federal Building Oklahoma City 1995 318
Alice in Wonderland was a paedophile allegory 216
Alisha's murder 107
Al Jazeera TV, an extension of Voice of America 81
All Blacks 138
All Blacks versus Ireland rugby international at Eden Park, Auckland on Saturday 17 June 2006 80
allegations 5, 9-10
allegations are of a sexual nature 9
All Nations Hospital 296
allocates opportunities 56
all the people involved were not controlled by shame 321
Al Rifa'i Mosque in Cairo 277
Amazon 299, 303-05
ambassador therefore high-ranking intelligence officer 237
America 39, 52, 60-61
America's Cup 297-98, 313, 317
America exports its communism 109
American-Iranian Council (AIC) 280
American Bar Association 79, 115
American Business Consultants Inc. (est. 1947) 293
American Communist Party, membership peaked at 50,000 while Stalin popular 292
American fishing trawlers dangled sub-surface speakers 82
American Indians 318
American Jewish Communities (AJC)
  100th annual meeting in Washington DC 217
American Legion 293
American Military Industrial Complex 79, 115
American occupation of New Zealand 86
Americans drawn in on behalf of Israel 60
American treatment for cancer actually gave him cancer 272
American working in Rome spilled the beans 310
ammunition 310, 314
amputee 97
Anal Lover 148
Anastasia, Albert, b. Umberto Anastasio, Joe Ana Stasia, Mad Hatter, Lord High Executioner 301-03
Anderton, Jim, The Stick Man 79, 108
Androgen Insensitivity Syndrome (AIS) Grade 4/5 12, 322
Androgenous fist fight 77
anesthetised after lunch 220
Anglicans 96
Anglophiles/ Anglophilia 255-56
Antarctica 76, 125-27, 299, 306, 310-11
Antarctic Explorer 309
Antarctic peace accord, stripped down, only Russia and America left 125
Antarctic Peninsula 309
Antarctic Treaty negotiations late 1999, early 2000 267
antenna similar to Black Birch 85
Anti-Defamation League, 1913 defames honest researchers 216
anti-establishment acquaintances 55
anti-Semetic 216, 221
Antwerpen 235
ANZ 186
ANZUS, Australian-New Zealand-United States military defence pact 97
Apiata, Willie has a VC 316
Apologies are always left to sexual deviants 272
Arabic translation 196, 207, 328
architecture 14, 30-32, 126, 136, 146, 153, 160-70, 187, 259, 266, 338, 341-42, 360, 369, 407, 414, 485
architecture practice 30-32, 126
ARC staff who did not physically exist were drawing down a wage 330
Are you from the future? 146

Are You My Father? The Family Court & Other Experiments 120, 137-39, 148, 326
Armao, Robert 276
armchair dribblers 237
Armstrong, Ross 83
army bridge collapse 115
Army intelligence 332
arranged marriage to a homosexual child-sex abuser 71
arranging car accidents 193
arrested San Francisco for propositioning underaged boy 88
arse-whipping by Christine Rankin née Parker 116
Arson 227-46, sexual act 232-33, 238-39, 241, and negligent homicide 242-43, 246
Arson Squad of CID 232
Article 4 of the Universal Declaration of Human Rights 190
Assassins 236
ashtray 141
Asian invasion, immigration 1995 112, 135
Asian porn 164, 187, 192
ASIO 138, ASIO agent is also a CIA asset 1 4 6
ASIS – very conservative organisation 244, 252, 257-58
Aspergillus flavus 273
assassinated in every country 60
assassinate President Sadat 280
assassination attempt 144, 152, physical and financial 186
a state of domestic warfare exists 33
Malcolm, Astrid, accused of murdering her and making it look like a drowning accident 113
as useful as counter-intelligence agents on a quiz show 276
Aswan in Egypt 273
Athens, Greece 319
Atonement 213-15, 220, 239, 243
attack all authors who make waves 36
attacking citizens who expose government, police and judicial corruption 145
attacking their physical, emotional, mental, financial strengths and weaknesses 37
Attorneys are Licensed Saboteurs 63
Auckland-wide reputation for not paying his bills 322
Auckland Central Police Station 145, 317
Auckland City Councillor, Labour MP Sandra Lee, child prostitute 94
Auckland house 244
Auckland International Airport 327
Auckland Library catalogue 6
Auckland Regional Council (ARC) run by Gary anyone-can-fuck-my-wife-and I-will film-it Taylor 330
Auckland Remand Centre (ARC) 148
Auckland University 96, 101, 114, 118, 121
Auckland War Memorial 146
Auer, Augie 2, 126
    ran Operation Clear Skies during Vietnam War 129
    Chief Meteorologist for Meteorological Service of NZ Ltd 161-62, 179-80
Australia Security Intelligence Organisation, ASIO
    Captain Leighton Smith, CIA asset, Captain Oasis/ CASIO/ Captain ASIO on Radio 1ZB 146, 316
Australia 73, 87, 92, 97, 112-13, 122, 127
Australia-Israel Chamber of Commerce 217
Australian American Leadership Dialogue 255-56
Australian Elizabethan Theatre Trust 299
Australian Naval Intelligence 140, 327
Australia's Fire Protection: AFP 242
Australia's Pearl Harbor/ 9-11, weather warfare front 236
Austrian Motors 138
automation of a society 33-34
Automobile Association (AA) 155
Avian Flu (H5N1) 76
avoid intelligence 321
Avondale Weta 165
AWARE 294
Ayers, Pam, poet, MI-6 marker 207
Ayr Street, Parnell 333

B

B'nai B'rith promotes Jewish rights, often with violence, sacrificial goat or scapegoat 215-17, 220
Babel's gay wall falls down 304
Bacall, Lauren 294
backsheesh 272
Bactur 48 LC, active ingredient Bacillus thuringiensis var. kurstaki (Btk) 97
bad acting, writing, producing directing became norm 291
bad bastard 136
bad dishes group 154
bag for golf clubs 270
Bagnall, Jim, protects Free Speech, challenges CYFs and Family Court's paedophile movement 336
Bahamas 270, 276
Bailey's Real Estate 21
Bain, Arawa 107
Bain, David 107, 125, 177, 333
Bain, Laniet, worked Reflections massage parlour, Dunedin, aged 17 (illegal) 107
Bain, Robin, having sex with his daughters Laniet, d. 18 and Arawa, d. 19, Taieri Beach School principal,
    beat students, clinically depressed Freemason 110
    incestuous child sex abusing father 333
Bakhtiar, Shapour, Prime Minister 277
balaclava 101
Ball-Belly 197
Bandit 307
banker/s wanking in public 50
    real Presidents/ Commander-in-Chief of Military 63
Banks and Govt.s are principle source of corruption 45
banks are suited thieves 49
Banks kill the true creditors 40
Banks Road 73, 107, 118, 143, 335
Banks, Source corruption 46
Banks, John, paedophile, Russia, adopted 3 children, 110
    B-B [Bum-Bandit] , still a paedophile, married woman who does not have sex with men 110
    CIA informant, Mayor of AK, 2001–04, 2007+122, 144
    beat first wife in 1972 at Banks Corner, Whangarei,
    affair with 13-year-old boy at Bethells Beach in 1996, 144
    accident, known cross-dresser, ballerina's tutu, Minister of Police, Tourism, Mayor of Auckland twice, drug trafficker, known and recorded paedophile 303-06
    speaks of himself in third person as Banksey,
    New Zealand's equivalent to the transvestite law enforcer J. Edgar Hoover 303
    sure sign of mental illness 303
    Fatboy Harley 304
    yurtle the turtle of sodomy 304
    Spiderman and Wall Dancer meaning he will climb up a wall to get to someone's arsehole 304-05
    Spiderman, Venetian Wall Dancer 305
    CIA paedophile 317
barack 332
barbarians 50

Barcodes 40, 51, 55
Barkan, Zev William, Ze'ev Bruckstein, in NZ 3–20 March 2004, travels as Canadian Kevin William Hunter, known contract killer 14-15, 160, 193-97, 206-07, 210-12
Barnett, Tim 89
Barry Pickthall 313, 316
bash some 50 year old spinster woman 327
Basil Liddel-Hart 216
battering ram 136
Battle of Nelson Crescent, never revealed was lesbian domestic 117
Bay of Plenty 97
be beautiful drive 298
Beach Road 141
beasts of burden 35, 66
Beatie, Sir David, Governor-General 202
Beeby, Bernard 267
Beeby, Chris, Iranian Ambassador/ Rainbow Warrior/ WTO/ Antarctica lawyer 2, 71, 108, 116, 125, 152, 194
    Counsel for NZ International Court of Justice in nuclear tests case (1973–74) 267-72, 279-84, 311, 317
Beer Hall putsch 253
Beersheba they had a big military intelligence base 329
Behaviour modification (do the meta-opposite of UN/PS 46
Belgian Police double as apologists for Interpol/ Nazi SS 235
Belgravia in London 99
Bellamy's parliament's restaurant 111
Bellbird Arms Tavern, Manurewa 143
Bellevue Road 192
Ben-Gurion, David 216
bench translates as bank 85
benevolent slavery and genocide 49
Benson, Stuart, Disputes Tribunal Referee 163, 167, 170-72, 181, 191
Benson-Pope, David, Labour MP, renowned for acquiring girl's school uniforms and taking them to massage parlours 106-10, 333
Berlin Wall 191, 234, 321
Beyer, Georgina former prostitute, world's first fake transexual MP 89
Biblical Holy Days 213
big gay party in Auckland, Thurs night, 28 May 2009 303-04
biggest press gang in NZ's history 310
big pork pie in Parliament, get away with it if you to tell it after lunch 220
big thump on the door 176
Bilderburg Group 34-35, 66
biological father, protective 100, 113, 121, 143
Biometrics 52
bisexual 137, 144, 148, 152-54, 164-65, 170-72, 187, 191
bisexual drug-dealing lawyers 165
Bishop Pompallier 135
Bjelke-Petersen, Joh, Queensland Premier (1968–87) 254
Black Africans are getting excited about it 191
Black Birch 85, 95
Black Caiman (20 foot crocodile) 316
Blacklisted/ing 13, 21, 136, 186, 216-18, 223, 261, 280-98, 329
Black Magic II 308
blackmail Americans into returning sequested funds 279
Black man with white face 191
Black Saturday fires 227-36, 239-47, 257
Blackmore Virtue and Owens 20
Black Power's Ace Towing 156-58
Black Power NZ$20,000 120
Black Widow pumping blood into the Red Socks Widow 317, 320-21
Blair, Tony 74-75, 145, 220, 246, 256
Blake, Lady Pippa née Glanville 317
Blakexpeditions 309, 314
Bletchley Park 318
blinkered bratty schoolchildren 128
blonde millionaire girlfriend 136, 140
blood-oil 60
Bloody Marvellous 102
Blunt, Anthony 101
BMW in a red dress and women's underwear 84
BND, German Intelligence, "Brothels 'n Deutschland" 191
BNZ 186
Bogart, Humphrey 292
Boeing 757 80
bogus questions to establish voice recognition 176
boiler-plat/ed/ing 13, 127, 136, 141-46, 186, 214-16, 221, 261, 329
Bollwood' restaurant on Ponsonby Road, Ponsonby, Ak 320
Bomb Squad 119
bonding other lawyers/notables with Asian porn 162, 187
boob 289
book distributors 32
bookkeeping systems with mathematics as king 35, 38, 40
Bormann, Martin 297
borrowing on the future credit of the world 46-48
Boscawen, John, anti-Electoral Finance Act/Bill rally, Queen Street, 1 December 2007 336
Boshler, Peter, Chairman Mao's biggest fan in New Zealand
    edited communist magazine Left of Victory 101
    dedicated paedophile enabler, removing fathers from families, exposing women to police rapes & gang bangs, some of them voluntary, turning children into criminals, and supplying paedophiles, Principal Family Court judge, wants to become Chairman Mao 204
Boston 328
Bradford, Sue, Green MP,
    well-known slapper in both senses of the word 1 0 0
braggadaccio 313
Brandon 172
Brash, Don 74, 109
Brava, after Bravo Island in the Cape Verdes 191
Brazil, NZ Embassy opening speech to business luncheon 311-12, 315
Brazilian pirates 315
Brecht, Bertolt 292, 297
Brennan, Eamon, resigned as vice president for public affairs of New York Hospital-Cornell Medical Center 275
Brett, Kevin William,
    Christian syhophant, fawning parasite 165, 192
    Kevin the long faced Christian 170
    surface to deck for vomiting 192
    Kevin-the-Virgin, 40-year-old virgin, threatened to kill 331
bringing the CIA and the KGB together 331
Britain 60-61, Children of Covenant, those who bind/are bound by their word 217
British Agent 249-50, 253-55
British-Israel-World Federation, office next to Buckingham Palace (1924–90) 76
British Atomic Energy Commission's
    Wairakei Geothermal Heavy Water Manufacturing Plant a.k.a. Wairakei Geothermal Power Station 92, 98, 213
British-backed Taiwan mafia 255
British DET in Northern Ireland 244

British Imperial Economic Warfare 254, 256
British Intelligence rang me in July 2002 97
Broccoli, Albert 295
Brookie, I, Crown Solicitors, Meredith Connell, paedophile minder 147
Brooklyn Bridge 300
Brown 145, 156
brown bread 279
Brown, Gordon 256, 258
Brown Humpty Dumpty co-murderer Anand Satyanand 332
Brownlee, Gerry 100, 111
Brumby, John, Premier, Queen Victoria 228-31, 237-43, 246
  Kol Nidre/ Day of Atonement agent/ former Treasurer/ 239, 242-43, 246
Brussels is the paedophile capital of the world 163
Brzezinski, Zbigniew 269
Buddle Anderson Kent in Wellington 203
Building Consent 259, 329
Built Dwelling 28-29
Bullock, Geoff 314-16
bunks 279
bureaucratic sabotage 228
Burgerfuel 167
Burma/ Myanmar, Israel turned into giant meth lab 81
Burning Bush's to follow 220
Burrows, John, got wanked into bucket for sperm 121, 201
bushfires 217-20, 230, 236-40, 245
bush fires, most are man-made acts of terrorism 217
Bush, George Herbert Walker,
  wet dream, black boy necrophilia 46, 82
Bush, George W. crooked American President 74
  not being the great diplomat 122-123, 129
  Pirate Captain Temporary 144
  not being a chimpanzee of great tact 144-45
  gay lover at Yale was Victor Ashe 290
  employed Jeff Ganon as US$200/hr gay prostitute 290
Business Class 194
Burman, Robert 296
Butch Lesbians 77
butt ugly swingers 162

C

cabana 119
Cabinet quorum 335
Cagney, James 292
Cairns Group members 312
Cairo 272, 275-79
Callan Park, Melbourne, Australia,
  NTO mental hospital cover 176
Caltex petrol station on Stanley Street 140
Calvacarossi, intelligence clan that founded a religion 318
Calypso 2 309
Cambodia 193
Cambridge 20 km southeast of Hamilton 267
Campbell, Alistair, military, fronted as the Lions maitre d' 74
Camshaft Positioner 156
Canadian Military 234
Canadian passport 193, 209
Canberra 230
cancer 240-46 head of pancreas 276
Candy, Dale 101
cannon fodder 65
cannon weather control 234
Capacitance is Charge v. Demand 44
Cape Verde Islands 191
Capill, Graeme 176
Capital is Economic Capacitance 60
Capitalism based on expansion & recession & conquering new frontiers 125
Capri rehab clinic 127
Cara, Eli/Elisha 114-15, 160, 193-96, 206-12
  travelled to New Zealand 24 times, 1999 to 2004
car bomb, impact-activated explosive, remote control backup 153
Carbon Footprint, distraction news 209
Carbon Taxes, misnamed Carbon Credits 161
carcinogen, potent 273-74
cardboard man 203
Cardoso, Fernando Henrique Silva, President of Brazil, 315
Carroll, Lewis (Charles Dodgson) sent to Coventry 1863
  paedophilia with Alice Liddell (11) 216
Carter, Chris, MP, Minister of Conservation
  unofficial Minister of Internal Affairs 86
  gerbils 88-89, 97, 113
  longterm homosex affair w. Paul Abdulatif 88
  mentored by paedophile Jonathan Hunt 85-86
Carter, Jimmy, President, peanut farmer, poison, didn't understand, JFK's half-brother 270, 277-78, 285, 289
Cartier watch 148
Cartwright, Michael, International Terrorism conference expert 171
Cartwright, Silvia, Dame, New Zealand's most corrupt judge
  Governor-General 87, 100, 106, 111, 114, 124, 127
catalyst 146
Catley, Christine Cole 102-03
Catholic/s faith 102, 106, 110, 269
Cayman Islands 71
cease-fire we suddenly get a targeted killing 199
Cecil, Stephen J. 109
Centanni, Steve (Mossad pron. 'Sant-in-nai') 81-82, 89, 101
Centerpoint Commune 92, 142, 2 km outside Albany, then a satellite town just outside Auckland 153, 209
Central Bank as a peacekeeper? 49, 199
Centurion tank with an adapted turret 208, 328
cerebral edema (water on the brain) 273
cerebral palsy 194
ceremonial sidelines 306
CFA 228-31, 235, 237, 239-46
CFA's golden shower 242
CFCs 75-76, 159, 266
Chadwick, Ms Steve (lesbian MP with male name) 126
Chaff 233
Chairman Mao 204
Chang Yu-huei 252
character references/ assassinations 163
charged with plotting to kill, accessory to murder, financing murder and treason 115
Charge is Coulombs 44
charismatics 201, Wanganui Mayor Michael Laws wears women's underwear/makeup to work, West Auckland Mayor Bob Harvey known crossdresser 201
Chateau in Tongariro 203
chauffeur 84, 115, 197
chemtrails and a variation of the Bird Flu, laid every March,
  taking hold every May 97-99
  Bovine Leukemia and Sheep Visna Virus, mixed with fine particles of Barium and Aluminium to make AIDS of the brain 209
Chen Palmer, Public Law specialists 128

Chernobyl 97-99
chicken salad 75
child-sex abuse 81
child and paedophile porn 88
child prostitute 94
children of Israel 208
children will have nothing but lowest common denominator
  lesbian schoolteachers as role models 315
child ritual murder 117-18
child sex abuse/r/ing 89, husband 100
  soirée members 161, 206 soirées 221, 333
child sex in Cuba, sex holiday with Sir Bob Jones 149
child sex offenders, invited into finance world,
  worked as merchant banker 330
Child Youth and Family Services, CYFs 84, 88
chimpanzee 144
China 61, 71, 81, 86, 112, 135, 140, 144-45
Chinese Chicken-Sleepers 76
Chinese emperor 192
Chinese funding Police and Courthouse buildings 207
Chinese Govt. threatened to declare war on NZ 112
Chinese spy defected in New Zealand 112
Chinese whispers illegal 273
Chiron Corp. of Emeryville, California 76
chlorophyllin, chlorophyll watersoluble derivative 273-74
Christchurch Crèche case 118
Christians and Gentiles, Goyim 213-14, 244
Christmas 106, 122-25
Church of Scientology (COS) 328
Churchill fire 227-29
CIA 72, 75-76, 82-83, 87, 92, 95, 110, 122-23, 129 144, 146, 162, 166, 243, 256, 260, 274, 277, 279-80 282-85, 287, 289-90, 295, 301, 303, 306
  agents 50
  motto to protect and advance American business 76
  jockeys, who were 6'3", and weighed 17 stone 82
  controlled Christianity 87
  informant Auckland Mayor John Banks 122, 144
  Communism in America 162
  CIA – Counter Intelligence Australia 256
  tout University of Auckland most pro-American University outside America 260
  CFR and Zbigniew Brzezinski backed 269
  soft kidnapping of Shah's children 272
  killed Chris Beeby 282
  accused of making huge profits over Vietnam 285
  agent Hillary Clinton 289
  hit 315
  children of Ivy League professors 319
  had occult workers around world in 1950s and '60s, health programme spotted her as reincarnation of Adolf Hitler in 1967 320
CIB (Crime Investigation Bureau) 104-05, 110
Cibos, 91 St Georges Bay Road, Parnell, Auckland 149
CID 232-33
cigarette lighter air-pump 334
cite sodomy of one diplomat 193
Citibank murder of Paul White by Mr Panapa and Kimball Johnson 111
citizens will have no Capacity to control their govt.'s actions 60
  most courageous are sidelined
  left with information they cannot trust 90
City of London banks, still disguised today as Crown 219
civil war all around oil 60
Clark, Helen Elizabeth, Prime Minister 1-7, 9, 12, 59, 71-106, 108, 111-18, 121-29, 133, 136-42, 144-46, 149, 152-54, 156, 161-62, 172, 178-80, 194-98, 201-7, 210-12, 259, 262-68, 279-80, 284-85, 288, 310-13, 315-17, 319-320, 325-29, 332-35
  St Petersburg prostitute 3, 71-74, 86-87, 101 105, 114, 118, 123, 126-28
  hot teaspoon baby 59, 121
  KGB operative 'IE', her minder is Vladimir Putin 72
  ongoing intelligence documented homosexual child-sex abuse of husband Peter Davis 73
  known as "Mrs Bull", She's a man, looks a lot like AIS Grade 3 Adolf Hitler 77
  SheMan, with her voluntary radical hysterectamy in December 1976/January 1977, SheDevil 78
  known as H1 and Heather Simpson as H2 80
  trained in Tavistock St Petersburg 86
  communist goal is destruction of family and promotion of homosexuals and paedophiles 86
  lesbian Prime Minister taking months holiday for international fisting junket 80, 87
  filmed having sex with female CIA pillow-talker at Lincoln Cottage, 3/4 January 2003 87
  fisting 88
  political, sexual and intelligence slut 89
  murdered Michael King 91, 102, 109, 114-16, 126-28, 142, 152-58, 171, 180, 193-95, 205-12, 259-60, 266, 325, 328, 333-34
  will go down in history as NZ's greatest paedophile minder of Frank Sargeson, Brian Edwards, Jonathan Hunt, Sir Ron Brierley, Sir Roger Douglas, Hugh Fletcher, Bert Potter, and her husband Peter Davis 92
  Red Helen 95
  organised kidnapping of Mervyn Thompson 101
  arranged kidnapping of Olaf Wiig and Steve Centanni in Gaza 101
  had an affair w. Anita McNaught in February 1993 101
  feminist kidnappers never charged 101
  Freud Hilton graduate 100-01, 118, 127, 136
  pushed through Supreme Court Act on 15 October 2003 where Sian Elias became Chief Justice 116
  turned New Zealand into Hell 116
  former Tavistock St Petersburg swallow, Freud Hilton graduate turned lesbian feminist, sexual compulsive 118
  vehicle for the importation of heroin into NZ 118
  NZ's biggest ever paedophile minder 118, 124
  Put a Zionist prostitute in a cover marriage to a homosexual child sex abuser in power and she'll try and launch a nuclear strike on you 120
  swinging sexual partners with Maryan Street for over two decades
  biggest dildo available under her bed 121
  fanny always leaking as she pisses herself 121
  Yes, I'll arrange whatever I can to keep you in power and for NZ to support your war 123
  likened Miss Clark to Adolf Hitler 126
  Rothschilds consider Helen Clark to be the Hitler of the South Pacific 126
  When the polls are down, Helen murders 127
  former St Petersburg prostitute, wears incontinence nappies White House honey-trap fisting w. toxic lubricant 127
  started to be compared to Adolf Hitler 128

decreed no one could mention her incontinence in election year
contempt for the rule of law 129
Freud Hilton graduate and KGB agent, Margaret Wilson – Helen Clark's Comintern partner 136
deconstructed KGB agent Helen Clark 138
Germain Greer as her mentor
lectures in Stockholm 139
Tavistock 139, 147, 152, 172, 209
PM Helen Clark/ KGB/ SIS/ Police/ Mossad hit 140
Prime Minister is a KGB agent, Cold War criminal and lesbian 142
illegal voluntary radical hysterectomy 142
favourite position is fisting
leaking, although this time it wasn't other's sexual secrets, it was her own 144
pissing herself uncontrollably 144
totally compromised Prime Minister, marionette, puppet, double agent works for destruction of country 145
The Two Gnomes 149
international war criminal 152
sexuality: lesbian, former prostitute, married to homosexual child sex abuser 153
tried to run me over in a govt. carpool car 179, 333
sexually compromised KGB PM Helen Clark 195
received 10 kg of Afghan heroin from NATO on 27–30 March 2005
turkeybaster child then became personal secretary, aged 18 and lesbian
female CIA pillow-talker, Lincoln Cottage, 3/4 Jan. 2003 201
Prime Ministers Award for writers with a communist bent 205, 313
former Tavistock St Petersburg prostitute, KGB agent and murderer 206
sold sexual secrets to Vladimir Putin in Wellington 1980–82 210
turned NZ into Satellite Tavistock sexual-social experiment that was Centerpoint Commune 206
sex with her husband doggy-style with her on top using the biggest dildo ever produced 210
school buddy, Prudence Gee 259
AIS Grade 5 (masculine female) 311, 322
so desperate to be seen as an international figure 312
shine her shoes on his kudos before it expanded posthumously 310, 312, 322
trained, deconstructed and bribed by KGB in destruction of Western Society 313
Why was Helen Clark there? 316
loves a female who's been involved in a crime 317
KGB's Helen Clark 317
Freud Hilton graduate, sex collector trained prost.
Hitler of the South Pacific
Helen Clark is reincarnation of Adolf Hitler
HEC that is Hitler in New Spain
recognised by UN who are a Rothschild occult genocide eugenics movement – as 'Adolf Hitler reincarnated 320
Heck that's Hitler in NZ working on Antarctica 321
contract killer 321
Helen being H1, or the fisted one 321
enjoys a deep fisting 321
likes chocolate children 321
Alan Clark, Your Prime Minister has a woman's name 321
Helen Clark/Adolf Hitler's propensity for killing 321
Hitler of the South Pacific, The 321
Helen Clark and Adolf Hitler are the same, both Minister of Security, Intelligence, Arts, Tavistock trained, prostitutes, bisexual double agent Prime Ministers 322
Helen and Hitler prominent at their funerals 322
orders a hit 325, 335
What do you think of Mr Hallett's statement in his book that you wear incontinence nappies 334
KGB agent trained in destruction of Western Society by deconstruction, is KGB 325-27
Killer Nappies Driving Rage 325, 333
accussed PM Helen Clark of being a lesbian 329
We think he was instructed by PM Helen Clark 329
had to supress my books 332
Helen Clarke MP? 181
Clark, Terry a.k.a. Terry Sinclair, Mr Asia 192
classic entrapment procedure 141
clean out New Zealand Judiciary 172
clearly had no intention to pay 186
Clemens, Samuel, a.k.a. Mark Twain, vice president, Tesla, two US presidents 147, 191
Climate Change Con/ Global Warming hoax/ Weather Warfare Reality 230-31, 247
Climate Science Coalition against Global Warming 159
Clinton, William 'Bill' Rockefeller, prepared to have people die in his memory 268-69, 281-82, 289
Clydesdale races 82
CO_2 causes less than 3.6 % of Global Warming 159, 266
Coca-Cola 148
cocaine/ coke was his friend, not Bible 135, 307, 313-15
the local dope 313
coffee was poisoned 334
Cold War 7, 72, 234, 243
joint venture between US & USSR 82-83, 87, 93
frenzy 95, 98-99, 135, 138-40, 142
Combined Investigations Unit 327
Comintern (Communist International) training by the KGB 126, 135-36
Commander-in-Chief of the Persian Air Force 269
commiserations 162
Commissioners, compromised double agents 236
Committee for a Far-Eastern Democratic Policy 296
commoners, habit and inertia, not to influence others 46-48, 60-62
Common Purpose 135
Common sense not that common these days 245-46
Commonwealth Emergency Bodies 241
communal orgies 206
communicate without sabotage 242
Communism, sham run by Jews 61
Communist Mafia Government, CMG 102
communist, only one left in the entire organisation 313
community quorum of locals 231
Community Refuges 236-37
Companies Office 17-18
compensation for the attempts on my life 214
complete lack of investigation 194
compromised individuals 187
condom was then destroyed by police 84
Conductance is Supply/Demand 44
Confidential Forum for Former In-Patients of Psychiatric Hospitals 106
confirmation of Michael King's murder 325, 328
conman 139
Connolly, Billy 191
Conroy, Senator 237
Consent is an Economic Valve 60
Constable James Matewhinau Cassin, unreformed criminal, police hitman, Internal Affairs list of corrupt cops 120
Twice-convicted for violent assault 141-42
admitted to two convictions for assault prior to joining police and Combined Investigations Unit. District Court lost confession of his criminal record 145-47, 327-31, 335
Constable Graeme Bruges 261, 264
Constable Suzanne Mead of Auckland City Strategic Traffic Unit worked with Combined Investigations Unit 141
Constable Tammy Dunlop 261
Constitution Hill 141
contract killer/s 210, 280, 283
contract killing Jews are all about money and taxes 162
controls bank rates 56
controls capital 56
controls the availability of raw materials 56
controls the economic industry 56
controls the inflation of the currency 56
controls the possession of property 56
control trend of economy as accurately as a projectile 41
control the world economy 38
Cook Islands, 119, 140 speech 207, 325, 327
Cook Strait cable 98
cooperative murders/ coop murders 311-12
co-ordination, noticed your 213
Costa, Izeal Pontoja da 314-16
Corkery, Pam Squawkery, *Pam's Political Confessions* 137, 166
Cornell Medical Center for emergency care at New York Hospital 276
corruption guard our state 121
corrupt judiciary and police 49
corrupt mentally ill nymphomaniac considered by police as R&D asset 118
Cotties Bridge 229-30
Counsel for the Child is essentially another lawyer for the mother 135
Counsell, Jocelyn, Porirua mental institution 117-18
counter-intelligence 4, 90, 104, 106, 124
counter-intelligence-as-reality is rewarded 37
Counterattack weekly newsletter, Facts to Combat Communism 293-94
country, same thing is happening in your 303
coup 237, 248, 260, coup d'etat 292
Court 21, 32
Bench is Latin for Bank/ banks control the courts 186
court reports 55
Courts can't settle a debt 259
court staff say don't expect justice in NZ judiciary 172
Cousteau, Jacques, Society 287-88
Coutts & Co. Bank, London 290
Coutts, Russell 307-08
Coxhead Road 155
Cray-1 supercomputer, US$8.8 million (1976) 194
superseded by DEC Alpha-based Cray T3D and Cray T3E series
creates disorder, chaos, and insanity 56
Credit/faux paper Economic Inductance gave them the power to rearrange economic structures 40
Credit card 55
Credit Crunch, no one has enough money to buy P 167, 204
Credit is a faux paper Economic Inductance 39
Credit balanced by negation of pop. (war, genocide) 39
crew are psychological misfits & released criminals 331
Crewe murders 110, 163-64
crime creation and defathering completely erradicate any rational patriotism 202, 244
Crime Investigation Bureau (CIB) car swamp 146
crime wave, resulting 312
criminal, or negligent, homicide 231, 242-43, 246
crinoline 300
Cromwell 330
Crosby, Sharon 71, 91, 114, 153, 206
cross-generational plot to dominate and force a new world order on the unsuspecting masses 10
Crown Research Institute 149
Crum, Bartley, lawyer 294
crying for help on polling day has no effect 37
Cuba 149
cuckolding 165-67, 186
Cuernavaca in Mexico 276
Cullen, Dr Michael, Labour MP for St Kilda
The Six Million Dollar Man/loser 106-08, 333
Cultural Attaché 99
Cunneen, Gerry, Superintendent most known for drunkenness 110-11
cunnilingus 209
cup of tea with Helen? 118
currently part of ongoing murder attempts 335
Current or Flow is Amperes 44
current technical coefficients (CTC) 42
Currie, Duncan, of Globelaw 266
Cy-près 181, cy-près doctrine 191
Cyprus 195-98
Cyprus Attorney-General Alecos Markides 196
Cyprus President Glafcos Clerides 196
Cyprus fiasco 196
CYFs 84, 108, 113, 124
Czechoslovakian Purchase 275

D

D'Audney, Angela 181
Danger index 241
death traps 241
defenders 221
Demand is Voltage, Supply is Current 44
Department of Sustainability and Environment (DSE) 228, 231, 240-43
D-Block in Parry 79
Dagan, Abu-Jabal, King of the Shadows 197-99
Dalai Lama's doctor's doctor 320
Dallow, Ross, rooting transvestites and bisexuals 166
Dalziel, Lianne, Labour MP, certified schizophrenic 100
2 years in a mental institution 107, 114
Dalziel, Raewyn 114
Damary, Igal 195
dangerous driving 119
Darlinghurst Hotel 111
dateline 140
Davies, Graham, Professor 109
Davis, Peter, First Laddy 9
ongoing intelligence documented homosexual child-sex abuser 73-74, 79-80, 83, 319
compulsive child-sex abuser, placed under house arrest 79, 86, 88, 91-92, 104, 108, 113-14, 122, 152
Med students hated being taught by child sex abuser 113

    known homosexual child sex abuser 137
    imported many homosexual lovers,
    taxi with tinted windows, John Kirwin driving 138
    former Pres. of Auckland University Gay Society 205
    child sex abuser 317
Dawe, Elizabeth, droll, covers for police paedophilia as
    feminists do 143, recommends paedophile
    accomplice lawyers become judges 144
day care centers for the occupationally orphaned children 36
day care sexual abuse hysteria 109
Day of Atonement/ Yom Kippur 208, 213-15
Dead Letter Office in Wellington 209
Dear Cops. Milk and tea on the bench, lemonade in the
    fridge 176
deathbed confession 140
death by car accident 312
Death Notice 280, 283
deaths, manmade, blamed on natural causes 39
Declaration of Helsinki 3, 335
deconstructed KGB agent 326
deconstruction/ing subconscious made one think like state
    138-39, 326
deep remote waters & sexually compromised politicians 95
DEEP SLEEP 297
defamation by government departments 14
defame the dead 181
Defathering serves paedophiles,
    Jews, Freemasons, Catholics renowned 202
defenders 223
definition of slavery 190
Demand/ Motivating Force is Volts 44
Demler, Lenard W. murdered Crewes
    11th stage Freemason, head of Pukekohe Chapter 162
dental records 91, 102
departmental field trip 196
dependency and ignorance basis of Welfare State 61
depleting emetics 53
destroys opportunities 56
destroy their relationship, their marriage 36
detachment of young child from mother/ father 66
Dewar, John , head of Rotorua's CIB
    convicted obstructing justice 1993–95 110
DFA (Department of Foreign Affairs) 252, 258
DFAT (Department of Foreign Affairs and Trade) 252, 255-58
DHL, CIA founded, owner crossover paedophile
    obsessed with Asian virgins, lots of children 284
dictatorship-or-bust 269
Diba, Farah 272, 277
Dies, Chairman Martin, of HUAC 291
dietary aflatoxins cause liver cancer 273
digitalis, Foxglove extract 142, 153-54, 206
Diplomacy, two-way street 270
Diplomatic Corp is the Sodomy Olympics
    73, 124, 144-45, 193, 201, 293, 316
diplomatic immunity 73, 79, 106, 124
Diplomatic Protection Squad (DPS) 80
dirt, it requires dirt to reach the top 81
dirty great big 3 inch nail 334
dirty work, why don't you do your own 140
disengages attention from real issues,
    sabotage mental activities 56-57
Disputes Tribunal, haven't won since 1993 32, 135
    163-64, 167, 170, 172, 181, 186, 259, 329, 331
Dissipation 38, 41, 45
distinguishing between a real person and a body double 52
distraction news 59
District Court 136, 147, 149, 152, 162-63, 165, 167,
    170-71, 181, 186-87, 259, 325
    lost confession of Cassin's criminal record 327-31, 335
DNA planting at future crime scene 176
docile public 58
doctor's bag 139
doctors playing tootsie with spies and hitmen 102
doggy style 59, 121
Doha 312
Dome Charlie 320
domestic war 33-34
dominance around the energy sciences 35
Donald, Rod 2, 12, 71, 81, 126, 152, 159, 178, 180
doppelgänger 272, 278
Doppler Effect systems, sound waves at pirates, Armoured
    Personel Carriers 246
double agent governments working against their own people
    to assist Mossad 198
double agent PM or president, heads of the govt 86, 198
double infanticide 143
double-stitch nazis 247
Douglas, Roger, Sir 92, 113
    runs immigration firm 127, 193 254-55
Dowd Thomasen Trapski, Mt Maunganui 203
Dr. Bull, Gerald Vincent, I recognise my own work 233-35
Dr. Bahktiar 271
Dr. Coleman 276
Dr. DeBakey 276
Dr. Elias' sex with patients 111
Dr. Flandrin 276
Dr. Green of Paedophilia 203
Dr. Jeckyll and Hyde of Justice 203
Dr. Jean P. Hester 276
draconian police-state laws 219
draft, selective service, brainwashing programming in family
    and peer group 44, institution of
    compulsory collective sacrifice and slavery 64-65
drag queen Lilith Lacroix 137-38
driver window, smashing with truncheon 141
Driver Licence 136, 141, 145-47, 176, 194, 207
driving with intent to injure 179
drought of information 247
drought, Israeli-controlled weather manipulation, HAARP 221
drug-dealing solo-mums 312
drug dealers no longer taking swopsies 167
drugs and alcohol, lots of mental break-downs 119
drug trafficking lawyers on a bigger scale 312
drug trafficking then state intelligence 329
Drumdrag 138
Dyrberg, Marie, Secretary of Auckland Feminist Lawyers
    assisted in Kahui murder 143
Druze 60, 197
DSIR, FRST (Foundation Research, Science, Technology)
    run by CIA contract killer/ sex addict
    Dame Margaret Bazley 332
Dumb Science 35
Dunblane massacre 73
Dunedin Police paedophilia 333
DuPont CFC patent due to run out in 1985 75-76
Dyson, Ruth, Labour MP, Minister Senior Citizens/ Disability
    Issues, alcoholic drunk driving former prostitute,
    remained as Minister of CYFs 108, 124, 194-95

E

E141 or natural green 3, simple chlorophyll 274
each man for himself 241
Eade, Colin, investigating detective 118
East Germany 7
East Waikato boundary 154-58
eat now, and pay later 55
eco-tourism Israeli based,
    Australia/NZ, all over remote South Island 209
economic amplifier is a device called advertising 54, 58
Economic Capacitance, goods or services
    38-39, 43, 46-47, 58, 60
Economic Capital (GNP) 39
Economic Conductance 38, 43
Economic Inductance 38-40, 43, 46-47, 49
economic pressure 37
Economics: Capital, Goods, and Services 43
Economic Shock Testing 51-53
Economic Valve 60
economy, totally predictable and manipulatable 35
economy obey same laws as electricity 42
ecstacy 135, 164, 167
Edwards, Brian, first /last paedophile victim, 12-year-old school-
    girl, 1981, 21 Salamanca Road, Kelburn, Wellington 86
    PhD in Franz Kafka 89, 104
    chicken legs/ neckline resembles rooster 89, 92, 104, 113
    Media 202-03, doctorate in Franz Kafka 310
Edwards, Phillip Layton 83-84, 159
effective use of limited military resources against foreign
    enemies, logistics 33
eggbeater 191
ego line 34
Egypt 61, 261, 273-81
Einstein, Albert, paedophile-and-plagarist 208
Elbert County in Georgia, USA 45
Elder, Hine 105
Elder, Millie 4, 104-05, 124
    got Paul back by moving in w. father's P dealer 127
    and Emma, We're not cool. Don't be like us 148
    sex-for-drugs 149
    using Perish's P stash 149, 179
Electoral Finance Act/Bill 125-29, 332-36
electro-magnetic operations 75
electronic attack, your car is likely under 154
electronic computer, invented 1946,
    J. Presper Eckert and John W. Mauchly 34
Electronics, Capacitor, Inductor, Conductor/Resistor,
    corresponds Capital, Goods, and Services 43
electrostatic dome over sky with no wind 178
Elias, Sian, Chief Justice 1, 5-6, 9, 12, 71, 81-85
    89-92, 102, 108, 111-16, 119, 124-28, 135-37, 142,
    152-67, 170-72, 178-81, 186-87, 193-98, 201-12,
    220-21, 259-60, 264-66, 322, 328, 331-335
    contract killer, Jewish 5, 193
    stole over NZ$500 million, thief, slapper, Sayanim, contract
    killer, Mossad agent, touched by an Asian 60, 89, 112
    sitting on top of chauffeur singing while shagged clown-
    fucker 84
    given up the ghost screwing her chauffeur in limousine 115
    Mossad hit squad with add ons 142
    pulls a hoody over her head to disguise her identity 152
    not denied murder, shuddered, walked out of room 154
    fellow murderer 163
    intervened 167
    contract killer, controlled by shame 171
    secret orders 172
    PM's contract killer,
    highest ranking Sayanim agent in New Zealand 193
    Chief Jewstess,
    fucks her chauffeur in Justice Dept. limousine 221
    Chief Jewstress (Justice) and Chance-alot (Chancellor)
    University of Auckland 221
    kickstart as Chief Justice, paid for by husband 322
    ordered murder attempt, financial assassinations in first
    place 331
    spat tacks 334
Ellis, Peter, naïve Christchurch crèche worker
    107-09, 117-18, 125
Elworthy 194-95, 206, 210-12
email surveillance 55
embassies totally compromised by Israel 208
emigrate to Australia, 40,000 each year, third of pop. 127
emigration of Australians 237
Emsworth Sailing Club, Hampshire, Isle of Wight 307
Energy Barons, Elite, Dominance 58-60
Energy Source Elite's dominance, your input, their desired
    output 59
Energy Dissipation (ED) 38
engaging their emotions 57
engineer 329, 331
engineering social automation systems (silent weapons)
    on national/worldwide scale 33
engine tweaked to seize at speed 178
English Bar 164
enslaved governments 49
entire country found him guilty 158
enviro-nazis 247
environmental activist 308
Epsom Girls Grammar School, EGGS 162, 259, 320, 329
Eskimos 328
ESL foreigners 88
Ethiopians 191
every day was Christmas 153
every Israeli contact killer is considered a good Jew 208
every Jew is a spy 193, 198
evil 49, promoted complete with elevated cover 197
excuses, all of them out of timeframe of contract 191
EXHaust TEMPerature light 156
exhibitionist nymphomania 118
export Australians to Alaska 219
exporting thinkers and importing dummies 127

F

F.A.B. The Thunderbirds are Go 275
Fabian Fisters 77
face of pure evil & every dental patient demanded full gas 201
fair cop 139
fake kidnapping charges 149
fake kidnapping of Olaf Wiig and Steve Centanni 81
false kinetic energy, paper' inductance 65
false science 47
falsifying records 198
Family Court 32, 51, 66, 203-04
    murderous crime creation & paedophile movement
    325-26, 336
family household 40
family unit carefully disintegrated 66
Farmer, Sally, lesbian 117

Farr, Gareth, cross-dressing orchestra conductor, lover of
  Peter Davis 138
Fart Tax 184, 218
Fathering New Zealand Inc. charity status 137
fatherless children create over 90% of all crime 204
fatwas to the Shah, his supporters, and rescuers 283
Faulk, John Henry 294
faulted communication 233
Faye, Michael 307-08
Fazendinha, Macapa, mouth of Amazon 313-14
FBI smut files 122
  had Mafia, who had Frank 285-303
  complete control over content/ final output 291
  anti-communist pro-homosexual narcs 299
fear and panic 227, 235
fear of failure is manifested in irresponsibility 62
Feast of Tabernacles/ Trumpets/ Rosh Hashanah 213-14
federal anti-trust suit 293
Federal, State and Local governance 215, 218, 230, 246, 255
Federal Theatre & Writers Project 298
Female domestic violence against male is 59% 204
female element of human society ruled by emotion/ logic 65
Feminism, if it works, break it 72,
  promote paedophiles, suits their agenda 87
  is Gender Communism 139
feminist judiciary selects male judges on size of cocks 115
fence jumping 164
Ferntree Gulley fire 227, 242
fiasco 196-97, 204-06
Fijian Army now carry Isareli Uzis (machine guns) 165, 208
  MI-6 hangout, now MI-6/ Mossad/
  QC lawyers Fiji for briefings incl. assassinations 208
Finance HQ and R&D 198
financial assassination 162-63, 186, 191
fine people to pay for DPB and international deficit 155
fingerprints 52
Finlay, Martyn 103
  Peggy II, b. Zilda Margaret, Zilda Finlay 103
Fiordland 81, magnetic anomaly 96-99
fire map, accurate predictive 229, 231, 239, 241-42
firearms licence 113
firemen, dyslexic 236
Fire Brigade 117
Fire Police 232-33
Fire Protection priority over Green Party concerns 244
Fire Refuge/s 236, 241-43
Fire Service 219, 231-32, 237
Fire Sirens, Radio Sirens and TV sirens 241-42
fires, half were deliberately lit 219, 241-42
Fisher 52
Fisheries Inspector 7, 12, 72, 99
Fisher King, Fishing attacks 52, fishing trawlers 82
fisting 144
flashbang grenades 244
Fleming, Ian 295
Fletcher, Christine 114
Fletcher, Hugh 79
  dresses in Nazi uniform 83-85, 92
  clown-faced wife, Black Chief Justice Sian Elias 111-12
  made Chancellor of University of Auckland six months later on 18 Oct. 2004, 113-14, 135, 154, 158-59, 171, 193-98, 201-03, 207, 212,
  (Industry, Justice, Education) 203, 260, 266
Fletcher, Jim 71
Flights Holiday Camp at Taupo 82
flip and roll 176
flogged publicly, sufficient compensation 115
Flying The Planet 140, 146-47, 162-63, 176, 191, 318
foetus, protests from her 100
Footrot Flats Fun Park 232
Forbes Asia, 18 Sept. 2006 89, 121
Forces of Order 79
Ford, Gerald Rudolff, U.S. President,
  porn king, born Leslie Lynch King, Jr. 269
Ford Mondeo 125, 333
Foreign Affairs and Defence Select Committee 99
forensic detail, remove all from the room 244
Foreshore and Seabed legislation/fiasco 102, 206, 220
Foresight Flow 44-46
formal declaration of domestic war 33
Fourth Reich, intelligence community around world 277
Frampton, Peter, popular culture hook into heroin market 73
fratricidal war in history of US crime 301
frauds 79
fraudulent passports, first class pass govt. checks 196
Freedom means
  no resistance to American Imperialism/Colonialism 121
freedom for women/ modernisation 259
Freemason/s 76 doing good in the world 87
  incestuous child sex abuse movement,
  protected, even after death 109-10, 135, 143-44, 147
  paedophilia/ incestuous child sex abuse as mainstay 148, 163-64, 180, 195, 203-06, 210, 214, 216, 221, 230, 237-39, 255
  sabotueur – Ordo Ab Chao – Order out of Chaos 239
  taking expensive care to kill their unwanted host 276
Freemasonry Police 164
Free of Nuclear Powered Vessels 96-98
French doctors 276
French Embassy in Wellington 98
Frenchs Forest, North Sydney 299
Freud Hilton graduate 100-01, 118, 127, 136
  mind control institute for double agent Prime Ministers and Presidents 152, 172, 324
Freud, Sigismund Schlomo, Jewish paedophile minder 313
front-marriages, intell. files held by CIA, FBI, Mossad, KGB 72
Front Left Wheel Bearing Locknut/ wobbling 138, 303-04
Frunze 86
frustrated ugly naked people with endless small issues 153
Fucked up anyone's life today Paul? 144
FUCK OFF 50
fuel load 239, 242
Fulbright scholarships/ Foundation Award 87, 310
funded by KGB 107
Funding gave preference to drag queens 137

G

Gaeth, Arthur 293
gallstones 276
Game Theory 54, game must never be enunciated 59, 64
Gandalf the Pink 89
Gandhi, Mahatma, ugliest man I ever met, paedophile and
  sex addict 147, sex addicted paedophile occultist 147
gang bangs at Mary & Gary Taylor's house at Bethells Beach
  circa 1982 114
gasoline 53-54
Gay Olympic Games held 16 Sept.–2 Oct. 2000 80, 321
Gaza 81, 101, 198, 244
Gee, Prudence/Pru 162, 172, 259-60, 264-66, 325, 329
Gender Communism 139, 141
General Dagan's Operations Directorate 197
General Electric (GE) 290-91
General Meir Dagan 197-99
General Moshe Ya'alon 81
General Patton, aide 318
General Ya'alon 81
general rule: path of no integrity, more promoted 96
genocide 87, by vaccines laced with AIDS 317
Geoghegan, Paul attacked fathers who exposed his
  career twin Grant Alslable 112, both Roman Catholics/ Freemasons, nominated himself as judge, now destroys families in Rotorua and Taupo, second highest Legal Aid fee, delays access, obstructs custody 135-36
  likes dining out on seven year old girls 143-44
  I didn't vote for him 144
Georgetown School of Foreign Service 282, 284
Georgia Guidestones 45, 50, 60, 127
get on the car 140
GHOST/Ghost, Norton Anti-Virus program 51-52
GIA 100
giant wet blanket 125
Gibbs, Alan 158
Gibbs, Jenny 114
Gillies Ave 138, 294, and Kipling Road 148
ginger, a career setback except diplomatic corp 267
girlfriend known dyslexic 319
Gisborne captial of brown-skinned paedophilia 163
Gitmo 217
Glanville, Pippa 307
glitterati 104
globalisation, Globalise us and put us out of work 311-12
Global Warming hoax 75, created by DuPont and CIA,
  stop Asians reproducing CFCs when patent ran out 266
global warming is a hoax 75
glossy shit on a stick 295
Goa, India 113
GOD became 'Guaranteed-Over-Draft' 34, 58
God bless the Shah's soul 277
God or the Lord 215
Godward, Ernest, New Zealand's greatest inventor 147
Godward Gas Generator 191
Goff, Phil, Minister of Foreign Affairs/ Justice
  accessory to murder of *Rainbow Warrior* lawyer
  Chris Beeby 108
  tried to scam NZ$350,000 109
  Phil-in Goff 201
  misdirected info, involved in second murder 194-95, 280
  accessory to murder 284
golden-handshake-promotion-beyond-all-odds 319
Golden Dawn coven 45, 50
Golfbag of Iran 283
Gomez 191
Gonadectomy 77
gong to other paedophile enabling judges 203
Goo, Evelyn Hall 166
Goodman, Gail 109
Goodnight Kiwi, 1981–94 115
Google search for "Greg Hallett" 14
Goold, Michael Lewis, brothel keeper, P user 259-63
  fined $530, pleaded guilty, instructed by PM Helen Clark 264, 329
goose stepping 248
Goss, Wayne, Queensland Premier 254-56
government corruption, extreme 153
  policies ensure houses extreme fire risk 245
Government/s, judiciary, media & military work hand in hand
  in conspiracy 90
  does not allow any waves. They are the levellers 36
  education is crap 36
  Intelligence is generally Counter-Intelligence 199
  is Dining with Paedophiles 107
  is not govt. of people, for people, but govt. for foreign ownership to keep people subjugated & ignorant 103
  is omnipotent/perversion 64
  and their agencies are the conspiracy 41
  are failed to the top 90
  International Genocide movements 46
  fuck with our minds & banks fuck with our lives 49
  sources via intimidation 55
  that wasn't primarily based on deception 90
Governor of California 290
Goyim, human animals 244
Grace, Princess of Monaco 309
Grafton Gully 205
Graham, John, New Zealander of the Year 1999 114
Grant, Cary, b. Archibald Alec Leach 297
gratuitous violence 145
gravity, anti-gravity, antimatter,
  Krasnoyarsk, behind Krasnoyarski 140
  interplanetary communication, how the Earth works, how the atmospheres are generated, 10-phase power, generally flying the planet 147
Great Barrier to Kawau Island 192, 331
Great Britain is owned by the Jewish bankers 85
greatest economic oscillation
  inflation, deflation, stagflation 40
greatest shame provided by paedophilia & prostitution 91
GrecoRoman Intelligence Officers 328
Green Bay in Auckland 209
Greenpeace is a CIA front 209
Greens, who are watermelons 245
Greer, Germain, has sex with anyone 139
Grenfell, Marty, Inspector 111
grey accident 304
grievances 282
gross misgivings of New Zealand courts 187
Gross National Product – GNP 39
gumboots forming part of the front bumper 153

H

H-bombs 98
H.A. Perfect, 6th floor of AMP Building 94
H1 and H2, Helen Clark and Heather Simpson 105, 144
HAARP 217, 219, 227-28, 234, 239, 248, 310
  One World Order perpetratorless war w/out measure 313
HARP 217, 227-28, 233-34, 239, 246
Hadas, Hagai, a.k.a. H, Head of Assassinations 196-98
Haganah 301
Haigh, Frank 181
HAIPP, Hamilton Abuse Intervention Pilot Project 112

hair clip 191
Halakah includes paedophilia by/within marriage 84
Halakists, Jewish lifestylers/ fatalist where anything goes, incl. incest and paedophilia 214
half-brother 330
Half the King's ransom 77
Hall, Donna 171
Hallett Design Solutions Limited 16, 21
  inspirational Greg Hallett Design 31
Hallett, Greg
  interviewed KGB in Moscow 139
  trained as Prime Minister and Governor-General of New Zealand – 10 hours 140, 326
  Operation BOILER-PLATE-GREG-HALLETT 141
  get Greg Hallett 146
  What the fuck have you done? 146
  modelled for Coca-Cola, Sprite, with Hine Elder 148
  interviewed Bert Potter 153
  your life could be under attack 154
  Alumni Hallett 171
  he runs himself 191
  Custody papers in post during murder attempt 325
  I know you cunts killed historian Michael King on behalf of Helen Clark and Sian Elias 328
  We have something in store for Mr Hallett 177, 334
  is dangerous . . . is not to be associated with . . .
  is a target 335
Hamilton 1 3 5
  highest conc. of paedophiles in NZ 143-44, 152, 156
  capital of white-skinned paedophilia 163
Hamilton, Deborah, Paul Holmes comfort woman 106, 152
handcuffed 142, 145
Happy-Clappy, the 213
harem pants 154
Hargov, Udi 195
Harley Davidson 303
Harré, Laila 82
harrassment 20
Harvard economic research project, structure of American economy 34-35, 41
Harvey, Barbara, nurse 121, 201
Harvey, Bob, awarded QSO for Services to Community 1991, Mayor of West Auckland October 1992 121
hate you with a passion 49
Hawaii 80
Hawke's Bay 158
Hawkins, George, Minister of Police, excessively weak 73, 110
Hayward, Margaret, PM Norm Kirk's secretary, chosen for lack of intelligence, wrote *Diary of the Kirk Years* 102
  PR to Prime Minister Norman Kirk 201
HCFCs 75, 266
Heaphy Track 209
Heart Attack Gun attached to sniper, 1974 161, 178
Heaven's Rest/Road 154, 213
heavy water contain deuterium oxide 82, 92-93, 96-98
Hell and all its fury 247
Hellman, Lillian 293
Henderson Museum 97
Hepburn Street 101
heroin 73-75, 81, 85, 104-05, 108-10, 118, 126, 127,
  trafficking 149, 192,
  who laundered millions of dollars in drug money 164 172, 198, 201-03, 288, 303-03
Hero Parade/s 79, 89
Hicks Bay 134
high-ranking Parliamentary civil servant 335
high-ranking police, Catholics or Freemasons, paedophiles, incestuous child sex abusers 143
High Commissioner to Britain 71-73, 85, 88-89
High Commissioner to Niue, lesbian selected by Helen Clark, sex with maid, murdered 94
High Court 259-61, 327-30
highly defamatory 14
Hilux 4WD 261
Hindsight Flow 44-46
history generally history of fraud for material gain 201
History is nuts 275
history that is a con 90
Hitchcock, Alfred 294
Hitler, Adolf 71-74, 77-78, 82, 89, 99, 105, 126, 128-29, 217, 235, 246, 253-54
  reincarnated 320, coprophiliac 321
  AIS Grade 3, effeminate male 322
Hitler's sperm, Angela Merkel 129
Hitler escaped in WK202 submarine to Spain 320
Hitler Was A British Agent 146, 162, 176, 179, 319, 328
Hitler was a jolly Austrian landscape painter 248
Hitler was reborn in Waikato 20 February 1950 321
hobbled 13, 136, 214, 216, 221, 261, 329
Hobson Street 142, 327
Hobsonville 79-80
Hollywood was all politics you need 287-289, 292-301, 303
  Blacklisting, McCarthyism 291
  Hollywood Ten 292-94
  became centre of distraction media 295
  botanical name for synagogue 299
Holmes, Paul 4, 6, 9 show 79, 103
  TVNZ nickname Grumpy, hardly Father of the Year, directed stepdaughter into sex.4.drugs prostitution 104
  methamphetamine-riddled newsreaders
  Paul Holmes and Darren McDonald 104, 110
  former alcoholic 105-06, 118, 120, 124
  Whatever Happened To . . .? 124
  Cartier watch, any-and-every-drug addict, state media personality for cover-ups 127
  former bankrupt, failed radio show host,
  alcoholic, AA City branch, Khyber Pass
  bisexual, sex for drugs family Holmes 148-49, 166
  Holmes asked for asylum in China. Chinese said: "We have enough drug dealers in China" 149
  heavily comp. P using/dealing bankrupt bisex Jew 152
  married call girl, Deborah Hamilton 179
  cuckolding alcoholic 186, 261
Holmes, Reuben, when 11 years old, took a dump on the living room carpet 148
Holst, Alison 71, 91, 114, 153, 206
holy congregation, lawful to pray with transgressors 208
homebake killing machine, peanuts, water, hotwater cupboard, 28 years 274
Homeland Security Bill 53
homestay 270
homicide, by neglect/ foreplanning 231, 239, 242-43, 246
homosexual/ity 80-81
  husband & bisexual PR agent 86
  wedding 88
  soirées for members of media, judiciary & govt. 108
  international rent-boy 138
  child sex abuser 203-05, 210

honey-trap 87, 100, 122-23, 126-29, 144
  sexual preference 201, 334-36
Hong Kong 194
Hood, Linley, *A City Possessed* 73
hookers, expecting a boatload of 313
Hoover, J. Edgar, taking it up the arse like 233
  Mary, rooted on a weekly basis 274
  cross-dressing homosexual overlord, transvestite 295-96
  playing fall guy to the Jewish Mafia 300, 303
Hopsing's Restaurant 327
hormone replacement therapy 77
Hoskins, Mike, guaranteed never to tell the truth 148
hostage drama at our American Embassy in Tehran 278
household as an industry 42, 50-51
House of Un-American Activities Committee, HUAC 291-94, 298
Howard, John, PM, Bushfire John of the Kol Nidre, Israeli agent, 216-21, 230, 243-45, 255-56
Howard, Lyall 217
Howard League 165
How Rangi Chops his Firewood 5
How To Take Over The World 79-85, 105, 122
Hubblesville 237
Hughes, Howard 293
Hughes, John Rex, Detective Inspector 101, 164
Hugo Johnson Drive 221
Hullo magazine 289
Human beings are machines, levers grasped & turned 64
human god to eliminate all risk from their life 61
humanitarian operation 278
human life is measured in dollars or silver 42
human nature, action/reaction patterns 65
Human Value Table/ System 63-64
Hunt, Jonathan Hunt 71, 73-74, 83
  exposed as paedophile by US Customs,
  mentored Chris Carter 85-86
  shares in cricket orphanage, Goa, India 88-92, 106, 113
  High Commissioner to Britain, bumming 12-year-old Indian boys 106, 124, 129
  Government 203
Hush, don't tell anyone 135
Hussein, Saddam 234, 268
  doppelgängers came to NZ 333
Huston, John 292
Hutchinson, William, president of the carpenters' union 296
Hutton, Bruce, Detective Inspector, in charge of original Crewe murder investigation, beat her up in bath, held her up by feet until she drowned 164
Hyperinflated Tyres 325, 333
hypocritical 62

I

IDF, Israeli Defence Force 208
Ignition module fault 156
Ignorance inducing advertising, PC 59
Ignorant, you're not a good citizen 59
Impoverished 10-year-old Vietnamese girl, 2002 321
Incentive or intimidation, carrot or stick, essential to draft success 65
Income reduced by 85% to 15% 136
Incompetent 124
Incontinence diapers, nappies 121, 126-29, 145, 334
Incontinent Fisted One, dictator in perpetuity 125
India's best kept secret, from British 147
Indian Summer 147
Inductance, people corresponding to a magnetic field 38
Industrialists, Commanders of the Military 63
Industrial logistics shared objectives of the military 41
Inertia 38, 43-46
Inflation, stagflation, war, genocide, welfare state, open-ended frontier breaking programs 39
Information granting exercise 156
Inoculation of behavioural drugs 66
In order to achieve such sovereignty 41
Input control signal 54, 59
Instability, war, civil war, civil unrest to point of migration 40
Installing telecommunication systems in offices, bugging those offices 207
Institut Le Rosey Swiss boarding school, Switzerland 277
Intelligence is attacked w. full force of silent weapons 37
Intelligence semi-cult 329
Intercontinental ballistic missile 95
Internal Affairs/ agent 142, 153-54
  undercover car 155-56, 163, 166, 191
Internal Affairs/SIS 55
Internal Revenue 55, 58
International Agency for Research on Cancer (IARC) 273
International Bankers 41
International Bar Association 79, 115
International Liquidations Inc. 199, 201
International Olympic Committee Executive Board, bunch of pastel-wearing paedophiles 317
Interpol, Nazi Party SS, Hitler picture removed 213, 235
Interrelationships of investment, production, distribution, and consumption 42
Intourist bosses were KGB informants, part of Comintern information gathering collective 135
Ipecac, Ipecacuanha, and an impact-activated explosive 91, 140, 153, 158, 207, on steering wheel 327-28
Iran 123, 194, 267-90 Islamic Republic 271
Iranian Army attacked Iranian Air Force 272
Iranian Hostage Crisis, price of oil shot up 278
Iranian Hostage Crisis was another piece of manufactured history 278
Iraq 234, 250, 256
Iraq war 53, 60-61, not criticise the 75, 122-23, 144
Irate worker 50
Isla Contadora in Panama 277
Israel/is 60-61, 76, 81-82, 85-87, 99-101, 112, 115-16, 124-27, 193-94, 209, 214-20, 227-31, 234-39, 243-50, 318-19, 328
Israel supplies heroin to NZ 81
  controls Western govt.s through paedophilia 87
  noted transaction and intervened 112
  controls Antarctica 125
  embassies 193, 208
  Tank Commander 193, 207-08, 318
  considers Sayanims from birth, arranges marriages 197
  controlled Afghan heroin mountain 198
  Israel Security Service, Shabak 198
  no shortages of allies, they just don't advertise themselves,
  murder capital of International Liquidations Inc.
  biggest killer on planet 199
  consistent effort to erradicate patriotism 202
  embassy spy agency (YTS), Air Force 209
  wants to emigrate Aussies 219, 224

Doppler Effect cruise ship, 244
forward planning gone beserk 244
owns the majority of the world's cruise ships 244
was hardly the Jew's to take. Ditto for Australia 247
President Moshe Katzav admitted responsibility in 2005,
Defense Minister Pinhas Lavon 275
dealing on open market for children 275
military 328
Iti, Tame, Internal Affiars agent 126, 323
Ivanoff 93
Ivy League branch of the CIA 318-21

J

James Bond 269, 272, 277, 295
James Bond III 269, 272, 277
Jaspers/Ginga 239
jaundice 276
jaw dislocated 145
Jefferson, Thomas, if all American people know all facts never make a mistake 297
Jellicoe, Admiral Sir John NZ G-G (1920–24), Jellicoe Wharf 148, 153, 206
Jesuit education 202
Jewish, world Jewish rule,
planet becoming a place where no one wants to live 199
Jewish Law, paedophilia is considered halakah 84
Jewish & Freemasonry controlled judiciary
remove fathers out of families in 98% of cases 202
Jewish Communal Appeal 217
Jewish paedophiles/ ABC children's TV characters
"Bananas in Pyjamas" 238
Jewish media motto: Lies have legs, truth crawls, we control legs of any message 295
Jewish 318-19, 322-23
Jews 213-16, 220-21
control Freemasons & Freemasons control police 180, 202
Jews national anthem, phrase murder compliance,
annual Kol Nidre prayer, Yom Kippur 208
Jews who kept John Howard in power 220
JFK assassination & Bush came up on radar 285, 289
Job done. Tell them you did it. Take the money . . . 178
John le Carré novel 273
John Thomas wasn't so God-damned ugly 298
Johnson, Kimball, contract hitman 140, 179
Johnstone, Marty 191
no hands, no head, and dead 192, 331
Joint Anti-Fascist Refugee Committee 296
Joint venture operations like bombing *Rainbow Warrior*, British, French, NZ joint operation 209
Justice system, Just-Us system 97
social activist movement trying to turn NZ gay 119
paedophile and crime creation movement 144
social engineering and crime-creation movement,
supplies children to paedophiles 171
set up to destroy good men and prevent them doing good in their country 191
Judge is a lawyer who's been to the same brothel 145
judges always go for the kill shot 30
judges are all short Roman Catholic bisexuals and feminists 204
Judges Bay, where all the Judges live, a small burb of Parnell 140, 305
Judges don't understand architects
and architects don't understand law 30
judges goal to become leading cause of death in NZ 205
judge shopping 118, 165
Judge Peter Blanchard, inaugural 116
Judge Peter Boshier, Principal Family Court judge
1 April 2004–, NZ's biggest supporter of Chairman Mao, edited Maoist magazine *Left of Victory*, dedicated paedophile enabler 204
Judge Anthony Christiansen, rape-accused 85, 115
Judge Edward T. Durie 171
Justice Sir Thomas Eichelbaum, paedophile minder 108, 116
Judge Thomas Gault, inaugural 116
Judge J P Gittos, works on police stitch-up/ informant scheme cases 119, 120
Police Stitch-up judge, child sex abuse minder 145-46
Judge Laurence Greig, High Court 109
Judge Johnny D. Hole 16
has syphilis 89
gave a summary no one could act on 162-63
yes, the same Judge Hole 163
syphilis, promoted to High Court for last 10 wks of his carreer, 30 June–9 September 2008, very rare, engenders QEII's protection 261
clear, substantive & true Hole has syphilis 259, 335
had one of my other cases transferred to him 329
looked out window dreaming of golf, refused to look at drawings, letters, or accounts 330
Judge J. Keane 147
Judge Sir Kenneth Keith, inaugural 116
Judge Coral Shaw 83, 92, 113, 159, 195
Justice Bernard Teague chairs the Commission 230, 236
Judge Sir Thomas Thorp, High Court 108-09
Judge Andrew Tipping, inaugural 116
Judge Peter J. Trapski Principal Family Court judge 1981–84, name appeared in golfing tournament records in papers while he was in jail 203
Judge Williamson 181
Judge Helen Diana Winkelmann 260, 266, 329
Judicial Supervisor was helping Millie score drugs 149
Jules Verne Trophy 307
Jungowska, Maria 91, 102, 154, 158
junk food for thought, crap news and porn 57

K

Kafkaseque dysfunctional world, pointless, schizophrenic society, psychological labyrinths dominate 312
Kahui, Chris, and Cru,
We will not be charging the mother 143
Kaiser, Peter 88
Kaite, small feed 134
Kapiti Island 268
kapok, highly flammable 302
Kaye, Danny, manic depressive alcoholic 292
KC-10A, KC135 (707) and C-130s 75
Keating, Paul 255-56
keep our secrets secret 278
keep economy flowing, open-ended Social Welfare, open-ended Space Program, Continual Wars & Genocide 43
Keiman, Uriel Zoshe 114-115, 158, 193-212
Kennedy assassination 279
Kennedy, Zane, Company Director NOCOWBOYS LIMITED
cut-and-dried legal assassin 19-20

Kesaria Unit 196
Key-Hole-Kids 36
key buildings in big cities wired for destruction 328
Key, John, Prime Minister, Election night 171
KGB operative/contract killer 12
agents 50, 71-75, 78, 81, 85
operative 'ie.' (pron. 'e') 71, 75, 86
control Islam 7, 89-96, 101, 104, 107, 110-12, 115, 123-28, 135-38,
gang-bang prostitute 139-42, 145-47, 172
an offshoot of the Mossad 196
KGB, CIA, MI-5 & 6 and Swiss Guard talking 277
six agents employed in SIS 326
KGB/ SIS/ MOSSAD/ NZ POLICE murder attempt 327
Kharazzi, Foreign Minister 283
Khatami, President 281-83
Khomeini, Ayatollah 271-272, 277
kickbacks 237
kiddy-fucking soirées 206
kidnapped/ing 149, 186, 192
kidnapping of Anita McNaught's husband, Fox News
Olaf Wiig (36), David Shearer 81-82, 85, 89, 101
kidneys felt like the size of a horse's arse 332
Kidon 196-97
Killing them ensures faux banker assets are replaced with real assets 44
kill 25% of population by 2020 45
killed in office, Lincoln, McKinley, Kennedy 48
kill unnoticed 96
killing all those in the know of real history 280
killing those the Iranians have requested 281
kill someone from neutral country New Zealand 282
Kilmore fire 223, 227-30, 233
Kilmore-to-Churchill zone 235
kinesthetic memory 207, 328
Kinetic 38, 41, 45
Kinetic Energy (KE) 38
King 193-95, 199, 201-02, 205-10, 212
King, Annette, Police Minister 5-6, 9
Associate Minister of Defence, Trade, & Race Relations,
upgraded to M. Police, State Services, & Transport 73, 85,
Pig Dog/P-G was trafficking heroin 104-08, 126, 198, 201
soon-to-be Police Minister 198
Minister of Health to M. of Police, then M. of Justice 201
failed upwards 201
King Farouk of Egypt 277
King George VI ice shelf 309
Kinglake 223, 229-30, Football Oval 241
King, Macsyna 143
King, Michael 2, 5, 12, 71, 74, 81
Writers Centre, murdered on October 2003 orders of PM
Helen Clark KGB 91, 102, 109, 114-16, 126-28, 142, 152-60, 171, 180,
murder 193-99, 210, 259-60, 266, 325, 328, 333-34
illegal tow truck drivers, Ace Towing/ Black Power gang police preference 156
Kipling, Rudyard 148
Kirk, Ruth, such dark/black woman, Black Hearted Ruth 103
Kirk, Norman, Big Norm, PM 102-03, 181
assassinated by CIA on 31 August 1973 201
Kirwin, John, poster boy for depression, homo/bi/sexual 138
Kirwin, John, uncle of All Black John Kirwin 138
Kissinger, Heinz Alfred, very happy he's the world's biggest killer, German Jewish homosexual rapist 61
United States long-time real el presidente,
dictator Henry Kissinger 115
homosexual Jew as world leader,
now being replaced by Rahm(bo) Emanuel 318
Kitchener murdered by Sir John Jellicoe 148
KIWI, Keen Interest Without Intelligence 82, 267
Kiwi girlfriend 139
Kiwi paedophile enablers, homosexuals, drug users and dealers, unravelled the gay-lesbian bid 4
knowledge of personal preferences 40
Kol Nidre, All Vows 208, 213, 230, 235, 239, 243-44, 247
contract with God that any oath, vow, or pledge
over next 12 months is null and void 213
oath of the Jew cannot be trusted, where anything goes
including incest and paedophilia 214-15, 218
vows mean absolutely nothing – nada, nulla, zip 215
annual removal of the Gentile's Birth Right 220-21
Day of Atonement politicians, Remove all 243
Kol Nidre gone biserk 244
koom-by-ya 192
Krasnoyarsk, Krasnoyarski 140
Kuaotunu bach 113
kudos 268
Kung Chin Yuan 252
Kyoto brainless disease 260

L

Labours epitaph 128
Labour Party hit list 81
Labor Party 249-52, 255
Lahatte, Chris 20
Lancaster Castle prison 204
Lange, David, died just before election, book 74, 96, 102
transvestite-rooting fat-as-fuck-fraud 106
slow killing of, changing medication,
advanced diabetes, protein in blood 106
fellatio from K' Rd transvestite 107-13, 143, 181, 201
transvestite waiting outside his hotel 111
motel unit 12/29 Springs Rd, Parakai,
free for French Frog assassins to stay 209
party to *Rainbow Warrior* bombing 269
language translation defined between
Electronics and Economics 42
Lansky, Meyer. b. Majer Suchowlinski 300-03
Larsen-B ice Shelf 311
last will and testament 218
latest psychological models 153
Latham, Mark 253
laugh on truth of matter 145
laugh outrageously when it still works 123
launch a nuclear strike on New Zealand 142, 152
Lavon Affair in 1954 275
Law Society 129
Lawyer, lawyer, liar liar, liar liar, Hell for hire 116
leaky fanny syndrome 123
Leary, Eb, charged with laundering drug money 164, 167
Lebanese Hezbollah 196
Lebanon 198-99
Lee, Canada 294
Lee, Mike, Chairman of Auckland Regional Council 94

Lee, Sandra, née Barber/Vercoe, to maintain silence made ACC, MP, High Commissioner to Niue, fired, bodyguard gave her the bash 94
Leech, John L. 292
legal (but not always lawful) force 58
Le Havre 302
Leichardt's Hotel at 95 Norton Rd, Sydney 92, 254
lending fake credit on real money 48
Lenin 86, 199
Leningrad 95
Lermontov 72, 83, 95, 99
lesbianism 59
  fisting junkets 209
  lesbian lovers 329
  lesbian Prime Minister Helen Clark 88
leverage sales, $20 item sold for $2 million to a buddy 158
licence 136, 141-42, 146-47, 155, 164, 176
license to kill 199
licking windows 246
lies prevail in Justice system 146
life imitates art, died from his own cover 272
limelight 117
Lincoln Cottage 74, 87, 122-23, 144, 334
Lions Tour of New Zealand 75
Lipsett Inc. 302
liquidation units 199
linguistic cover-up 239
listening equipment, most advanced available 83
Lloyd, Norman 294-95
Lockett, Jamie, all over place like mad woman shit, equally as productive, treacherous, not terrorist, manipulative welching narc 167, 323
logical or mathematical connection 41
logistical atom, the individual 61
logistics 33, 41, 61
Lohamim or Combatants 196-97
longshoreman 303
Lord Kitchener 148
lore of Pimps and Hoes 96
Los Angeles Airport 79
Lower Class are fiddlers on the roof 36
  becoming knowledgeable 58
  want to vastly increase their Capacity 60
Loy Yang Power Station 229
lubricant with toxins 144
Luciano, Lucky 301-03
Luna Module 51
Lustig, Emil 274
lymphoma 278-79
Lindsay, Bruce, mobile cell phone 0274 280 162 20
Lucas Heights, research/ medical nuclear reactor 245
lynchings in Victoria 247

M

M.D. Anderson Hospital in Houston 276
M.A.D, Medically Assisted Death 127
MacDonald, Gordon, Professor, 1966
  How to Wreck the Environment 312
Macquarie Bank 257
Mafia bosses of New Zealand and South Pacific 71
  Mafia-Zionist links 96
  mafia government 97, 102
  Mafia 164, 167, 285-87, 300-03
maggots on a dead man 232
magic carpet 272, 279
Magnetic Field of human popl. based on total ignorance 60
Mahoney, Patrick, DCNZM (Justice) de-frocked Catholic Priest, genuine paedophile enabler, biggest supplier of children to paedophiles NZ ever seen 101
  Josef Mengele of NZ family structure,
  Dr Green of Paedophilia,
  Dr Jeckyll and Hyde of Justice,
  Principal Family Court judge (1984–2004) 203-04
Mair/ Muir, Ken 126
malaria 266
Malcolm, Aussie 113, 127, 193
  (Government, Immigration) 203, 210
mandarin 251, 254, 257
Mandrake 52
manoeuvre their countries into ditches 145
manufactured, deaths of 12 out of 13 people 45
  consent 63
  terrorism by government agents 129
  ongoing war 215
  oral statements after recording voice for 10 sec. 198
Manuwatu 136
Mao 39, 61
Maori prophecy: Leading New Zealand males will die at turn of century 285
Maori vote 110
Maori, can't bullshit a 205
Maoris that Maoris don't like 145
Mao Zedong did the same thing, a.k.a. Mao Edmond/ Zedong Rothschild (Zedong = Edmond) 39
Maraetai and Clevedon 155
Maramarua 154-56
March, Frederic 292
Margaret M., multimillionairess spent NZ$15 mil on P 148
marked, measured and found wanting 243
Markides, Alecos, Attorney-General 196
marriage 80
Marshack, Megan 289
Marshall, John, QC, President of NZ Law Society 129
Marteke, Elsje, born 1991 121
martial law declared 8 Sept. 1978 271-72, 279
Martlets 233-34
Marvelous 3
Marx, Karl, As goes the family, so goes the country 86
Maser, unlimited sources of fusion atomic energy, extract hydrogen from seawater 34
Massada/ Kesaria/ Kidon Lohamim/ Combatants/ Assassins in the West, Jewish contract killers that didn't look like Arabs 197
mass behavior rather than individual behavior 51
mass immigration of non-mixing groups every third generation 202
mass murder 312, 317
Massadegh, Mohammed, Prime Minister 280-82
Massey, William Ferguson, Prime Minister carried Spanish Flu into NZ personally, Freemason M. W. Bro. 76
massive internal hemorrhage 276
massive postwar expansion of internat. heroin trade 302
Mater Mothers' Hospital 252
Matrix Security, cover for the SIS 126, 146
matronymical consanguinity 94
maximum prejudice 277

Maxwell, Robert a.k.a. Jan Ludvik Hoch 89
mayhem 221
Mayors are cross-dressers 201
McCahon stolen to order 114
McCarthyism 259-60, McCarthyite frenzy 125
McDonald, Darren 104
McGrath, Glen 219
McKenzie, Don 153
McLeod, Ron, Commonwealth Ombudsman 230, 236
McNaught, Anita, a.k.a. McNaughty 9, 81, 89, 101, 152
McNee, David 2, child rapist, into boys/girls arseholes 83-84, 92, 112, 152-54, 159, 195, 333
McWoody 318
meat of ignorance creates the cattle to be milked 36, 47
Media is the conspiracy 90
  child sex abuse and child drug movement 147
  with immigration, finance, justice, Govt. & Dipl. Corp 202
  complicit in negligent homicide 243
  role to create conspiracy theories and project these on public as historical fact, total crap,
  where dogs go to get their hair done 322
medically sicker 272
Meir, Golda 216
Mekong river at Pen Yau in Cambodia 195
Melbourne, Victoria 159, 176, 217, 227-31, 256-58
Member of Order of New Zealand, restricted to 20 live members 86
Memorial Sloan-Kettering Cancer Center 276
ménage à trois White House 201, 266
Mengele, Josef, of the NZ family structure 203
Meo in Vietnam 318
Mercedes 300E, 1990 138-41, 146, 149, 154-56
  quarterlite smashed 176, 179, 326-27, 329
  video and sound transmit and track 332-34
Mercedes travelling very fast 253
Merkel, Angela, Hitler's sperm 129, 145
Messines Road, Karori, Wellington in 1971 89, 92
Met 88
methamphetamine (P) 81
  methamphetamine-riddled newsreaders
  Paul Holmes and Darren McDonald 104, 110
methodology for economic conquest 33
Met Police 88
Mexican boy 73, 79
Mexico 272, 278
MI-5 253 MI-6 218, 234-35, 252-53
  agents now converted to Mossad assets 165
MICK P, Member Intelligence Community Knowledge Pool 95, 332
microchip body identification 51
microtoxin 75
Middle Class destroyed 36
Middle East Peace Talks 196, 215
military device 52
Military Industrial Complex 79, 87, 115
milk powder processing plant near Ngarawahia 97
mind wank 50
Minister of Finance,
  position traditionally occupied by paedophile 108
Minister of Security and Intelligence (SIS) – a.k.a. Prime Minister Helen Clark 113
Ministers in Parliament,
  thief, con man, mental patient, prostitute, or her lover 129
minor telecommunications charge 196
minutes later 289
miscarriages of justice 109
Miramar, Wellington, New Zealand 244
Mitchell, Peter 245-46
Mitchell Shire Council rules 245
MKULTRA, Mind Control, Op Deep Sleep 47, 50, 310
MK Writers Centre, write one poem, root two children 91
Mobile fire fighting slipon units 243
modus operandi 311-12
mold from heated damp peanuts 272
Moloney, Dannye, Assistant Commissioner of Crime 229
Monaco 73, 81
Mongrel Mob ward in Paremoremo Prison 79, member 158
monopoly of energy, raw materials, goods, and services 41
Montauk 59
Montecito, California 3
Mont Pelerin Society 254, 256
Moore, Roger 314-16
Morocco 276
Moscow having lunch with the KGB 101
Mosgiel, NZ 307
Mossad, Israeli Intelligence, do any murders Sian wanted, made Chief Justice 113
  world's preferred contract killers 146
  agent 135, 154, 171
  SIS stealing it, or cracked mechanics of space 146
  assassination 159
  agent contract killers 195
  time served at 20% 195
  culture of backbiting, disillusionment/ resignations 198
  increasingly becoming Mafia-style Murder Inc. 199
  Mossad 220, 235
  Officer 244
  failed murder attempt 14–22 May 2004 259, 264
  Surveillance 325, 328
  head ran Placemakers, Waiheke Island, Fletchers, Hugh, Chief Justice Sian Elias, Sayanim Mossad agents, 328
  white male (35) marking cottage 328
most MI-6 agents are now Mossad assets 208
Mother Aubert 181
Mouritsen, Carol, lesbian 117
moving final legal decision from London to Tel Aviv, effectively nation's allegance from Britain to Israel 196
Moyle, Colin 93
MP Rod Donald 152, 159, 178
MP Katherine Rich 109
MP John Tamihere 165-66
  Yeah, sure Dad, whatever 166
Mr Asia (1976–84) had to be run from the top, London 120, 164-67, 172
  righthand man, financial lieutenant, secret Asian-porn collector, MI-6 left arm in New Zealand 180, 187, 192
  heroin trafficking 331
Mr. Sorrell 296
Mr Whippy 126
Mt Eden Road 261
Mt Erebus 75-76, 266
Mubarak, Hosni, president of Egypt since Sadat's assassination 1981 86
Mugabe, non-removal of, under Helen Clark,
  NZ diplomat Don McKinnon GCVO key player 317

Muldoon, Robert, Helen Clark role model 86, 93, 97, 204
mulligans, marked cards 88
Munich 235
murderer paradise 116
Murder compliance Israel modus operandi 197, 208
  hotel room in Paris, Ritz 268
  agreed problem people 312
  Latrocino 315
  attempt by Sayanim/ Mossad ordered by Helen Clark, Margaret Wilson and Labour Party 328
Murder Inc. (1920s–40s) as is NZ Judiciary 158, 171, 301-03
murder 195-97
  made to look like accidents, esp. in West 193, 197, 209, 213
  of historian Michael King from Uni. of Auckland 260
murderous group, Mossad–MI-6 163
Murdoch, Rupert, kidnaps own staff to make news 89
  rabid homosexual child sex abuser 255

Murphy's Law, episode 'Sir George Garvey' starring James Nesbitt 172
Muslims 245-47
Mysteries of a Barbershop 292

N

nada, nulla, nothing 145, 158
Napier wharf collapsed 82
narrow terms of reference to A4 piece of paper 109
NASA 146, 162, 176
Nasser, Gamal Abdel President of Egypt (1956–70) 274-77
Nation/Womb 62
national anthem, new, Walk.on.me 121
National Bank 186
National Distribution Union strike 81-82
National Election, heat noticeably off two weeks before 176
National Institute for Water and Atmosphere, NIWA 159
nationalising banks worldwide 162
National Police Headquarters, NHQ heart and control centre of NZ paedophilia 80
NATO 72-75, 81, 85, 127, 198, 201, 288, 295
natural and social energy (wealth) 35
natural cooperation enhanced by calculated compulsion 64
Nat West 290
Naval Intelligence (SWSQM) 34
Navy Seals 310, 313-15
Nazi badge wearing media faux pas 319
Nazis didn't escape to South America, but Australia's local councils 246
Nazi uniform 83-84
Nelson Crescent 117
neurotic Tuesday night meetings 154
Neviot department, spring of water 195
New Hampshire 310
Flying the Planet, new laws of gravity/ anti-gravity 208
news confirmation 176
news ensures that we continually have no news 60
New Spain 99, 117, 267, 320
  gateway to another New World of resources 125-27
Newsom, David D. 276
newspaper entries 345
Newsreaders, talking hairdos, banks are suited thieves 49
New Testament 213
New World Order promoting paedophiles 147, 159
New World Order Army 250
New York 280, 291, 298-303
New York Hospital 275-77
New Zealand is run by paedophiles and homosexuals
  controlled by shame 4
  last Nazis, country without an identity 72
  legalising female murders male 74
  Air Force 80
  world's test population 76, 79-82
  run off list, basis of govt. promo is paedophile list 83, 124
  citizenship not officially existed since 10 Jan. 1920 87
  Pinko 95
  isolated intelligence and economy 96
  truly does have communist mafia government (CMG) 97
  run on Counter-Intelligence, not on Intelligence 104, 146
  Pied Piper with cross-dressing Mayors 125
  legal, political and social mosh pit 127
  designed to become first Western Russian satellite country 128
  has not shaken the paedophile shackles 135
  courts run by Freemasons & paedophile enablers/minders 147
  worst ever rapist and paedophile 170
  short of people who cannot be compromised 201
  paedophile movement fronting as a country 204-05
  no one has any friends 205
  has a way of stealing people's lives 210
  males sacrificed to the politically correct 270
  Embassy legation vehicle 272
  Army Z-Force 272
  fascist lesbian PM gave permission to kill Diplomat Beeby 282
  politicians are made of shit, have a history of shit, and are controlled by the shit on them 324
New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide 168, 177, 331-35
New Zealand judiciary, occult mafia 74, 204-05
  crime creation and paedophile movement 137, 205
  can't even settle a debt 322
  Supreme Court has its ruling made in Israel 60
New Zealand Nuclear Free Zone Disarmament and Arms Control Act 96-99
New Zealand Order of Merit 105
New Zealand Peace Corp to Iraq 123
New Zealand police create over 80% of all crime 202, 205
  manufacture evidence 119
New Zealand produced nuclear detonators for Britain, sold to France, used for Mururoa Atoll tests 98
NZSAS holiday to Australia, meet 2 weeks later in Perth 122
New Zealand Security Intelligence Service (SIS) 82
New Zealand Truth 89
Ngatea Fire Brigade, Impound Towing 154-56
NHI, No Humans Involved 177, 326, 334
Night of the Long Knives 114-16, 142, 154, 201
NIWA, explainations nonsense statements 159
Nixon 262, Impeach Nixon 289
No-Fly Zone 93
no-man's land 155
NOCOWBOYS LIMITED 14-16, Company Director Zane Kennedy, cut-and-dried legal assassin 19-20
No crime was too big or too nasty 275
No good deed goes unpunished 316
no limit to their promotion 197
non-conformists who write about the game 62

non-Hodgkin lymphoma 277
NTO's (Non-Traceable Operatives) 13
  black man uses false key 176
no New Zealand media coverage 178
no one has taken him to task over the allegations 10
No one shall be held in slavery or servitude 190
no Police, Judicial or Government investigation 201
Nordic-Anglo-Saxon colonising 76
normal face of society 137
North Korea 213
Norway 82, 98
No sacrifice, no friends; no glory, no girlfriends 66
NO TASTE 180
NOTICE OF GENERAL APPEAL 171, 335
not illegal for a woman to kill her male partner 74
Not investigate 202
notorieti 104
nowhere to piss, shit, or get a drink 112
Nuclear Arms Race, joint-venture exercise b/w US/USSR, run by Israel 99
nuclear bunkers for community fire protection 243
nuclear conflict 82
nuclear strike on American property, Canberra, Adelaide, Sydney, Taupo 71-72, 75, 213
nuclear submarine beacons 95
Numero Uno 125
nymphomaniac with a history of mental illness 117

O

O'Connor, Greg 85, 104
  Chairperson of Police Welfare Fund
  large network of Holiday Homes 126
  leads International Council of Police Representatives & Associations, total dick 127, 198, 201
  former drug undercover 198, 201-02
obligations shall not be obligatory 216
O'Brien, Patrick, former Police drug undercover 202
O'Hara, Maureen, declared a scab 298-99
obstruction of justice 187
occult ceremony 121
  occult Mossad hit 154
Office of National Assessments (ONA) 253-54
Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI) 318
Ohura prison, b/w Te Kuiti & Taumarunui in King Country 203
oil as the economic shock tester 278
oil from US$14/1978 to $35/1981, collapsed from peak of US$70 to US$20/1988 290
Old Testament 213-215
Ombudsmans office 147
Omega Grid Pattern 95
One Government 60
Onehunga District Court 107
one person had to make the phone call 192
Onetangi, Waiheke Island 259
One World Order is One World Thinking (OWT) 52, 60
One World Order, Military Industrial Complex social policy 87
Onassis, Aristole 73
Operation Austin 110, 158
Operation BOILER-PLATE-GREG-HALLETT 141
Operation Clear Skies 162
Operation Cloverleaf (1997–) 75
Operation James Bond 295
Operation Susannah 275
Operation Winnie the Pooh 295
Operation Wrath of God 235
Operations Research (O.R.), silent weapons for quiet war 21
  Elite (ORE) 33-35, 41, 45-46
  preparing perpetual standing army, illegal under Bill of Rights (1698) 47-51
  controls US Govt. 53, 64
Opoutere b/w Whangamata and Pauanui, Coromandel Penninsula 158
oppress commoners under Talmudic, Commercial and International laws 217
Option (B), Option (C) 227
Organisation for Economic Cooperation and Development (OECD) 267
organised and pre-meditated one step removed hit 310
orgasm with her invited guests watching 117-18
orgy 96
Orme, Albi, useless crew,
  drunken Maori lawyer threatened to kill Greg Hallett 120
  died six days later after second hearing 164
  PAWQC's research assistant of 15 years, Churchill Scholar 170-71, 180
  Williams witness, 192
  couldn't be taught to say right thing 331
orthopaedic surgeons 304
Orwellian phrases 237
  decreased assurance, effectiveness and trust 248
OSS 300-01
Otaki Forks, 60 km north of Wellington 268
our-husbands-are-kiddy-fuckers, don't tell 100
Oval Office 123
over-confidence 39
over inflated by Labour Party activist with cigarette lighter air-pump 179
Ozone hole has been getting smaller from 2000 266

P

Packham, David, former CSIRO and Bureau of Meteorology forecaster of fire conditions 239
PC, Political Correctness 59
  Lower Class 60
  advantage 88
  PC lesbians of America given microphone 280, 284, 303
  Paedophile Country in what was Paradise Complete 313
paedophilia/e 71-74, 79-92, 96, 100, 103-18, 124-29 137, 142-43, 147-48, 163, 193, 197, 202-12, 262, 266
  paedophilia, walk-the-walk but don't talk-the-talk 84
Paedophiles in NZ Police protected by promotion 86
  promoted for mutual cover 88
  become MPs to avoid being charged 86, 137
  paedophile ring in UK went across Europe into US 106
  paedophile-minding judges 108-09
  Paedophile Paradise bargain 113
  get latest psychological methods 114
  paedophile movement fronting as a country 117
  paedophile and crime creation movement 126
  Sir Roger Douglas, Aussie Malcolm run immigration firms 127, 195
  Paedophile-Police, capital, Hamilton 143
  enablers 143, 147, 163
  paedophile minders, paedophile enablers, paedophile promoters 143, 163, 203

paedophile images on bedroom walls of admiring teenagers 147
paedophiles in Brussels 235
paedophile-minding, accessory to murder of Rastifarian north of Gisborne, run out of town 330
Painted Apple Moth (July 2002–May 2004) 97
Paitilla Hospital in Panama 276
Pakistan's Inter-Services Intelligence (ISI) 291
Palestinian militants 198
refugee camp 208, 328
Palestinans 246
Palmer, Geoffrey, bondage lover 4
liked getting his arse whacked 106
Prime Minister (1989–90) 107, 115-16, 128
Geoffrey Spank Bottom Palmer by Christine Rankin 129
panic 227, 229, 235-37 panic, it's too late 240
Panmure 92
paramedics 105
Paremoremo prison 100
parental exhaustion 36
Parks Victoria 233
Parliament is dining with paedophiles 87
Parliamentary Ombudsman Anand Satyanand, a cover up artists 158
Parnell, Auckland 99
Pascoe, Susan, Commissioner of State Services Authority 230, 236
Parthenogenesis Farm, Waiheke Island, lesbians of the immaculate birth 121
passport removed 191
stolen for Israeli diplomat assassin 194
passport fraud 193-97, 210
Paul and Peter, two old Queens 104
Payment due pro rata for any work done 190
PayPal orders 32
Peace means NO RESISTANCE TO COMMUNISM 121
Peach, Blair, training to be a Special Needs teacher 88
peanut mold 272
Pearl Harbor on NZ with nuclear strike on Taupo 125
penance position 148
Pentagon Committee voted 4 for and 4 against 86, 381
Peoples Voice 82
PERF 5
Perish, white Mercedes, tinted windows 148
person, gentle to be milked 85
Personal is specific, National is a statistic 54
Philips/Williams, Janine/Hine/Heeni/Hinemoa Prozac Philips 105
on Prozac, fluoxetine hydrochloride for manic depression 165, 180
half-naked and asleep in afterglow 166
phoney war 51
physical and mental damage is remarkable 37
Pier 88 302
pigeon and puha 103
pigs 154
Pillay, Lynne, Labour MP for Glen Eden, no greengrocer b/w Island Bay & Palmerston North she hasn't saddled 124
pinch and shout – money and ongoing profits 166
piracy 304
Pishpek renamed Frunze 86
Pizza and heroin 243
Placemakers 193, 207
Podcasts overseas 178
poison 272-73, 277-79
Poisoned Coffee 325, 332
Poisoned Steering Wheel 325-27
Polaris nuclear missiles 95, 134
Police 71-74, 79-80, 84-88, 104-11, 115, 124-27
Police Minister Annette King 5-6, 9
Traffic Infringement Officers 32
reports 55
paedophilia at Banks Road Christchurch 73
Association President/ TV spokesman, Greg O'Connor 85
instructed not to charge any paederast MPs 97
favour genuine nymphomaniacs 117
counter-intelligence organisation 124
regularly go to judges houses & remove paedophilia 124
stress leave, think drug holiday 127
battering ram on door, manufacture crime 136
hitman 141
michling-Maori Police 141
spokesman, Greg O'Connor, former drug undercover, now heroin trafficker 143
helicopter 146
THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE 146-49, 154
Police/Peace Officers, not contract killers 164
reject all SIS fingerprints,
standing over my bed when I slept, police dare
employed Graeme Capill was Crown Prosecutor when knew 21 months before was a paedophile 174
having sex w. 2 of murdered daughters in brothels 180
instructed that no investigation was to occur 198
Occult Puppets, create 80% of all crime 202
police-state bill and Anti-Terrorism Bill 217
stitch-ups 325
and SIS job 326
new Police and Court building 327
paedophilia, child sex abuse, free brothel use, beastiality with 14-year-old girls on stage, Police paedophile ring 333
Policy Committee of the Bilderburg Group 34, 66
Politician, polls and surveys 56
professional association of hitmen collectively called 62
Professional Association of Hitmen (PAH!)
hold many quasi-military jobs 63
sexual deviant running agenda for oligarchy 81
every word is lies built on previous lies 90
disliked and distrusted 319
Polynesians kept ignorant of anything but the process 147
Pompidou, George Jean Raymond 272-73
Pope, Margaret 97, 106
Pope 270
Pope John Paul II (Karol Jozef Wojtyla) 73
porn habit blamed 227
Poronui Stud/Station 82, 93
Port Director Admiral Adolphus Andrews 302
posed as nurses and teachers 320
post-satellites (1957–58), but satellites weren't functioning very well 95
Post Traumatic Stress Disorder 321
Potential Energy (PE), Kinetic, Dissipation 38, 41
Potter, Bert, Centrepoint sex commune, expert in Kiwi sexual secrets 92, 114, 142, 153, 205, 206-10
poverty row, non-Hollywood 294
power connection rigged to spy 176
Prebble, Richard, signed papers to sink *Lermontov* 83, 97
predictable state of motion or change 53
Predictive Fire Map 241, 244
Preece, Peter, Forensic Accountant, Fraud Squad, reported seems fine, nice, honest young man 191
pregnant, he's probably 171
Preliminary Design 259
Presbyterians 96
Present Flow 44-46, 60
presidential level of commander-in-chief shared by international bankers 63
Presidential Gold Medal is B'nai B'rith award for murder on behalf of Israel and Jewish people 216-17, 220
Presidential Medal of Freedom another Semetic Award 220
President of Federated Farmers 209
President of Auckland University Gay Society 137
President of NZ Police Association 126
President of Scientists Club in St Petersburg 139, 147
President of United States 318
Presidents Nixon, Ford and Carter 270
primal scream, 114, a wank 153
Prime Minister and Governor-General of New Zealand – 10 hours 326
Prime Minister & Speaker of Parliament both KGB agents, involved in prostitution, paedophilia, attempted mass murder, mass poisonings, murder and treason 91
Prince Harry in Iraq for a day 319
Prince Rainier 73, 81
Princess Diana 319, 323
Princess Fawzia, sister of Egypt King Farouk 259
Princess Grace Kelly's former lover, Jacques Cousteau 309
printing money beyond limit of GNP, inflation 48
prison for slavery, defrauding citizen w. slant to murder 191
Privacy Act, any Govt. Dept. allowed to hack into anyone's computer and share info with other Govt. Dept. 51
Privacy Commission 147
Privy Council 116
Prix de L'Aventure Sportive 297
project arsonists 227-28, 233
Project Babylon supergun 234
project firemen/arsonists 233, 240
Profumo Affair 87, 123
Progressive Youth Movement (PYM) 201
promoting each other up paedophile scales aka Judiciary 135
propaganda to create wars for banks and make them look like wars for the country 49
propelled by data processing, not explosion 36
pro rata 190
prostate cancer count is over 10 120
prostitution where the government paid for the sex 197
Protection Orders 113, 139
emerged to make paedophilia easier on paedophile 143
protocols out the window 229
provide children to paedophile predation, more promoted in Court, police, social service system 144
Prozac 165-66, 180
psycho-economic structure of economy 40
psychological pressure 37
analyses and profiles of individuals 57
testing 64
psychology 153
public behaviour is surrender, born of fear, laziness and expediency 61
Public consent derived from manufactured consent 58-59, 63
public demand is incredible 61
public undisciplined, ignorant of basic systems principles, ripe for surrender, enslavement, legal encroachment 57-58
public utopia 35
public values are controlled by Bankers 63
puha [watercress] 103
pulmonary edema 273
put another crime on the barbie 235
Putin, Valenti, Alexander, Alexia/Vladimir 7, 12, 72, 75, 78, 83, 85, 89, 93-96, 99, 111, 133, 142, 209
Helen Clark's minder 72-78, 83, 89, 93-96, 111, 136, 152

Q

quango 101
quantum meruit 185, 191
Queen Elizabeth II 255, 278, 290
Queen, Richard 278
Queen's Counsel 1988, protection for treasonous crimes 85
collection of old bisexual MI-6 drug traffickers 170
Queensland 252-56
queers from intelligence world would infiltrate Hollywood, real subversive communists 293
Quid pro quo, more quid than pro 246
Quiet War machine (QW) 33-41, 44-50, 53-58, 61-66

R

Rankin, Christine 4, massage parlour S&M dominatrix fanny with no brain attached, many men found this combination attractive 106, 116, 123, 128
spanks Geoffrey Palmer 129, 143, 181
Rata, Mat Labour MP 113
respectable means paedophile enabler 205
Radio 1ZB 138, 146, 326
radioactive pellet 163
radioactive source, over ½ Auckland's water supply from radioactive water 97
Radio Frequency Identification Device Tags, RFIDT 52
radio interviews 32
RAF in Burma/ India 303
Railside Café 100
Rainbow Warrior 194, 209
arbitration 1989–90 259
lawyer/WTO lawyer/ Ambassador to Iran, Chris Beeby, murdered in March 2000 194
raise the dead 181
Rangi 323
Rangiora 20 km north of Christchurch 135, 267
rapid integrator 153
Rastifarians 163
Ratos de Agua 315
Ray White Realty 136
RBS owned Citizens Financial Group, 8th largest bank in the US, 2nd largest shareholder in Bank of China 290
RCA 34
re-admitted to the Bar 167
reading small print on a yacht 307
ready-made addresses 318
Reagan, Nancy 285, 297
Reagan, Ronald Wilson, President 285-97
Reagan-Sinatra-Bush ticket 289
Real Science was kept from the masses 35

reapprochment 279
recommendations 230, 236, 239-42
reconstructing the subconscious, most powerful tools 138,
    each their own potential 316
recruit her 142
Red Channels 293-94
redeye 140, 327
Red Socks 307-08, 317
Reduce insurance 242
reducing world's population from 6.6 billion to 0.5 billion – 92% dead 45
Reed, Joseph V. 276
Reedy Creek, Victoria 245
Rees, Russell, co-saboteur, co-homicidal CFA Chief Officer 228-31, 235-43, 246
registrar came out to corridor nearly in tears 329
Registrars complained, worst summary in history of
    District Court judges, Judge Johnny Hole 163
    I don't know what happened in there, but wasn't justice 307
reincarnation, works on the big and the small 318-21
Reincarnation religion/ spiritual/ cult/ semi-cult influencing
    behaviour 55
    studying for six years 321
    reincarnation of Adolf Hitler 320-21
religious, moral, or cultural values, no agonizing over 33
rendition 244-45
Renkon 167
rent-boy 268
require a government from the top 58
Research Department (foreign sexual deviancy) 195
respectable, then spending rest of time and money
    between Madonna and whore 204
respectable means paedophile enabler 202-06
Reznik/Resnick, Anthony/Tony David 158, 194, 210-12
Rhode Island 311
Richter's syndrome 276
Rickards, Clint began serial raping in 1983, then became NZ's most prolific rapist, Mongrel Mob gang member in Hawke's Bay 110, 126, 156-159
    raped 34 women in Rotorua 160
    quite ofay with murder 160, 166, 170, 325
right of angary 302
right rear tyre on my Mercedes was flat 334
RIIA (Royal Institute of International Affairs) 251, 256
Rimon 198
RKO pictures 293
RNZAF 73, 80
Road to Damscus Conversion 234
Robertson, Lord George,
    Secretary-General of NATO 32, 72-73
    paedophile, Dunblane massacre 73
Robeson, Paul 291, 294, 296
Rockefeller Foundation 34-35
Rockefeller, David, managed to look like benevolent
    concerned party 276-78
Rockefeller, Nelson became US Vice-President 276, 289
Rockspiders (paedophiles) 238, 243-44
Roger, Trevor, former National MP 166
role model for homosexual marriage, having cuckolded each other for 30 years 88
Roman Catholics and Freemasons allowed from 20 January 1980 96, 135, 144
Rotary 140
Rothschild/s 38-39, 199, 320-21
Rothschild occult genocide eugenics movement 310
round robin 97
Rove, Karl, homosexual 290
Royal Bank of Scotland, The 290
Royal Commisson of Inquiry always protects Freemasons
    so whitewash 164
    Interim Report on Black Saturday 230
    collusion to sabotage 217, 227-31, 235-41
Ruby, Jack 272
Rudd, Kevin 220, 227-31, 242-43, 247-56, hogtied, hands-tied, white haired, no balls Israeli asset brigade 230
    Rudd was noted, white-washed sadist gone tropo 250
    unscrupulous, duplicitous, and sadistic behaviour 253
    Dr. Death, 254, Pirate Captain Rudd 249, 258
rule of the elite: When something works, remove it from the public eye 319
Rumsfeld, Donald, Tamiflu hoax cure 321
runs the contract killings in New Zealand 186
Rural and Regional National Broadband Network Initiative, R&R/NBNI 239
Rush, Jack, counsel 230
Russia 61, 72, 82, 86
    a liar's paradise 93-99, 110-111, 125-28, 139, 144-45
Russian Embassy 83, 93
Russian nuclear submarines/ships/spy vessels allowed into NZ waters 97
Russian prostitute 125
Russian roulette 246
ruthlessly candid 33
Ryan, Kevin, 170
    niece Lucy Lawless, Zena, Warrior Princess 172, 181
Ryckmans, Pierre, Chinese Scholar 251

S

sabotage, State-level 215, 217, 227-31, 235-43
sabotaging the contract of peace 215
sacrificial goat, sacrificed for all iniquities, transgressions and sins of the children of Israel 214
Sadat, Anwar El-, President assassinated by his 2IC 276-77
Sailing Sainthood 308
Sale, Gordon 162, 259, 266
    homeless alcoholic gin-soaked car salesman 329
Salvation Army 96
same characteristics 318
Samuel Marsden Collegiate 86, 89, 92
sand filters 279
San Francisco 73, 79-80, 88
Sandy Point 231
Sanofi Pasteur w. Chiron Corp. of Emeryville, California 76
São Paulo 312
Saphira, Miriam 101
sapphic CIA pillow-talker 122
Sarkozy 145
Satyanand, Anand, Brown Humpty Dumpty,
    fatest ugliest man in NZ 106
    Parliamentary Ombudsman/cover up artists 158-59, 332
    began working on my case (28 August 2002–)
    Political Ombudsman
    made Governor-General 23 August 2006 325
Saudi money 289
Saunders, John 119

Sayanim, Jews living outside Israel 89-91, 112, 124-28
    Mossad 135, 193-212
    propaganda 209
    Sayanim Mossad Sian Elias ran Bain murders 333
Scandinavian Prime Minister exposed as cross-dressing coke user 32
scapegoat – human sacrifice in every way
    except physical body 214
Scheffer, Jaap de Hoop, secretary general of NATO 72-73
schizophrenic 2-IC Papakura Chapter Black Power 325
science of controlling an economy 41
Scientists Club in St Petersburg 320, 326
Scientology 318
Scorpion submachine gun 198
Scott, Dick, applied to NZSIS as informant, rejected 313
Scott, Mark 313, 316
Scott, Mark, ABC managing director 239
Screen Actors Guild 290-97
screws refused to post his letters 159
Scud missile 234
Sear, Angela's flat at Everton Terrace, Wellington 268
Seamaster 276-78, 281-83, renamed *Tara* 316
secrecy document pledging would not talk about affair 198
Secretary General of the United Nations 74, 78, 89
section 59 of the Crimes Act 1961 100
secured from public scrutiny 33
Security Intelligence Service 82, 93
    sign 155, 313, 323
Security Risk Certificate 100
Sefton, Leon, TV cameraman 314-16
Semantec 52
Semetic/ Anti-Gentile phrase: Is it good for the Jews? 215
semi-cult 55, 318, 321
Senior Crash Unit 158
Serious Fraud Office, a fraud on many levels 103-04
Sewell, Karen 113
Sex Collector, final in NZ, Sian Elias 187
Sex Communism, we have some of your Australasian women training here 139
sexcapades 145
sexcurity and information 96
sex life hobbled, tender companionships zero 65
sexual data and drug habits of politicians
    on both sides of Parliament 96
sexual data on New Zealand politicians 94-96
sexual deviancy 195, 201-02
sexual improprieties of judges 120
sexually bent politicians in denial,
    threat to their country and policies 123
sexual secrets 195, 206, 210
sex weekends with wives in precided divorce cases 203
sex with a man who had sex with a horse 148
sex with her chauffeurs 137, 197
sex with transvestites 97
Shah of Iran, Muhammad Reza Pahlavi, exiled 267
    escape from Iran, 268-73
    rolled King of Iran up in a Persian carpet 272
    kept cancer secret fr. twin sister, Princess Ashra 275-76
    bodydouble 277-79, 282-83
    soft kidnap Shah's children 278
shaking the plum tree 53
Shame brought control 128, 171
Shamrock Hotel on Rintoul St 7, 83-85, 93
Sharm El Sheikh 321
Sharon, Ariel, Prime Minister, Butcher of Qana,
    Sidon, Beirut and others 198
Shaw, Peter 83-84, 92, 113, 195
Sheahan, Liam 245
Shearer, David, kidnapped Olaf Wiig & Seteve Centanni, then replaced Helen Clark as MP for Mt Albert 82
Shelley-Sydney, Emily 204
Shipley, Jenny 127
Shire Council/s 228, 241-42, 245-47
    Common Purpose, opposite of common sense 246
Shit!. How are we going to get out of this one? 331
shit-for-brains and ban-the-mind 36
shits, because you are 49
shock testing 40, 51-53
show-stopping providence 318
Shrine Auditorium in Los Angeles 296
shut-uppa-your-face 234
shy 162
Sicilian bosses of Murder Inc. 301
silence, agreed, only thing that holds NZ together 124
silent over the Afghanistan and Iraq wars 122, 145
Silent Weapon System (SWS) shoots situations, not bullets 34-37, 49-50
    social automation technology 57-58
    Silent Weapon Technology (SWT) 33-35
Sim, Val, chief legal counsel for murderous Justice Ministry 109
similar intellectual capacity w.out loss of discretion/humility 33
simplex method of linear programming in 1947 by
    mathematician, George B. Dantzig 34
Simpson, Heather, H2, Chief of Staff 75
    won gold in fisting 80-81, 105, 121-22, 144
    only qualification coaching Netball Team 152
    World Fisting Champion, Sydney Gay Olympics, taken to UN by H1 321
Simpson, Wallis 77
Sinatra, Frank, President of the U.S. 285-87, 291, 293
Sinclair, Keith, History Professor 114
Sinel, Tom, ex-Navy 134
Sing Sing and Ossining prisons 303
Singh, Sean, crooked lawyer 330
siren 141
Sir Peter James Blake 2, 71, 181, 284, 307-11, 323
    World Sailor of the Year 307
    Olympic Order would be awarded 319
Sir Ron Brierley 88
    initially financed by Tavistock 92, 106, 113
    (Finance) controls SAS retirement fund,
    paid NZ$1 million for knighthood 203
Sir Roger Douglas, Minister of Broadcasting, during feminist takeover of media, Minister of Finance 92, 193, 203, 210
    (Media, Finance, Immigration) 203, 213
Sir Thomas Eichelbaum 108-09, 116
Sir Randal Elliot 273
Sir Peter Elworthy 2, 12, 71, 74, 81, 91, 114, 116, 126, 142, 152-54, 180, 195, 206, 210, 333
Sir James Fletcher (1886–1974) 85
    died of a broken heart, two sons were paedophiles 118
Sir Fred Goodwin at the helm (2000–08)
    RBS lost £24.1 billion 290
Sir Roy Jack 88
Sir Bob Jones, conman in Britain, paedophile in Cuba 88, 104, 203
Sir Kenneth Keith 116

Sir Geoffrey Palmer & David Lange – first a masochist 143
Sir Edward Stafford – Premier of New Zealand 204
sirens 236, 241-43, 246
SIS, Security Intelligence Service 71, 82-83, 93, 100, 113, 126, 129, 138-40, 142
  specialises in Counter-Intelligence 146-47, 153-56, 162
  removed their video 176, 179
  provided Zodiac inflatable rubber dinghy 209
sitting duck for slavery 191
Sky City Bus Station/Terminal 140-42, 317
slapping the living daylights out of her kids 100
slave labor 41, 58, 65
Slaver 189-90
slavery/ contract/ document 179-89, 191, 321
slavery and genocide 33
Slavery is a form of forced labor 188
slavery, white 191
sleep, putting the nation to 115
sleep-deprivation 99
small-arms-fisting 327
sneeky bunch of arseholes 319
sober and stationary 136
social automation technology 57-58
Social Capital 38
social control, extensive objectives, destroy human life 33
social energy bookkeeping system 40
social engineering, analysis / automation of society 33-34, 59
Social Operations Research (SOR) 34
Social Science 35
society would arrive for capitulation 34
social welfare program, recipients become state property, standing array for elite, prod. of Operations Research 47
socio-military institution known as the draft 64
Sodomy Olympics 193, 201, 270, 293
Soft kidnapping 186
Solch, Karen 166, 192
Sokaluk, Brendan 229
solar radiation 900,000 times denser than steel 313
solution is objective in the first place 57
someone bitched about their needs not being met 154
somewhere else 241-43
South Pacific Nuclear Free Treaty 96-99
South Vietnam 162
Souza, Rubens da Silva, 20-year-old local 314-16
sovereignty 41, of the elite 58
Soviets & Muslims, similarities in thinking & outlook 289
Soviet Union 289
space was tried as the new frontier, but failed 125
special consultative meeting on Antarctic Minerals 267
Special Investigation Group, S.I.G.mund Freud 171
  roots out terrorists,
  acknowledges Sian Elias as Mossad 322
Specialised Applied Research Centre
  at Wellington's Victoria University 100
Special Patrol Group of Met Police 88
spheres of influence 195, 199, 206
Spiller, Professor 112
spinal juices were doing strange things 140
splenectomy 276
SP AusNet 230-31
spoofed 178
spools of material and each chopped up piece of paper was called a 'chard' 279
spray is now causing muscular dystrophy,
  birth deformities, and early deaths 97
spying on drug/ paedophile markets and supplying them 72
Squire, Bruce QC 202
SS *Normandie*/ USS *Lafayette*, right of angary 302-03
St. Stephens Ave 205
stabilising Monarchy of 2500 years will be dissolved 278
Stabilizing capacitance is capital (money, stock, inventory and buildings) 48
Stalin, ruled Russia through mass murder & poverty 86, 199
Stalin's British Training 86-87, 122
Stalin, illegitimate son of Baron Edmond de Rothschild 199
standard diplomatic junket, accomodation, food & booze 268
Stander, Lionel 292, 295
Stanley Street 140-41
starved of food and only fed coffee for three days
  specialist in Kingsland 142
STASI 321
State Emergency Response Plans 241-42
State Highway 2 155, 158
State Housing 117
status quo as the burglar goes 166
  based on respectable, means paedophile minder 202-06
stay or go policy 236, 241
steaks on the table 35
steal his kudos 310
steering wheel 140, 153, 158
Stephenson, Michael 256
Stewart Island 191
Stick a non-heterosexual in power and they'll fuck up the entire nation 120
stitch-up was all stitched up and all judges refused to do anything about it 139
St John Ambulance 194
strategic and tactical methodology, air and land defense 33
strategic objective 60
Strategic Traffic Unit 141-42
strategies 33, 54
statistics, not releasing any 203
stray dingo sharpening its teeth 244
Strecker Memorandum, Bovine Leukemia and
  Sheep Visna Virus, formula for Aids 209
Street, Maryan 59, 101, Media Woman for
  Auckland Feminist teachers 121-22, 125-26,
  made Cabinet Minister for ACC, Housing, Tertiary Education and Economic Development 152, 201
Stringberg plays 139
Stockmann, Robert M. 145
Stripling, Robert E. Subcommittee Staff member and
  Chief Investigator 295
strychnine 311, 315
stubbles 235
stuck in the roadside mud 328
stuffed up the importation of the vaccine 76
Sturm, Philip David 149
Sturt, Chas 103
subconscious reconstruction 140
subject 36, citizens 53
subjective biological warfare 33
subliminal television advertising 97
Subprime Mortgage Crisis 290
subversion of the public economy 53
suckarse lawyer 260

sunglasses gone 176
supergun/s 234
super-vel soft nosed ammunition, police, army,
  CIA signature bullets 314-15
supplying prostitutes to prominent 198
support and influence of MI-6 in destruction of NZ
  by protecting its drug dealers 163
suppression of those talking about her murders 335
Supreme Court 85, 115-16, 126-27, 196
Sutch, Bill 96, 272
surrendering their real wealth in exchange for a promise of greater wealth 38
surveyor 329
sweat stunk 332
Sweden 32
Swine Flu, within a week we got the, Helen Clark 321
swingers 259
  Swinging Helen 121
Swiss Guard, intelligence section of Vatican,
  close relative of MI-5 277
switch connected to active inductor
  analogous to initiating war 42
Switzerland 258, 261, nobody does anything for nothing 277
swollen lymph nodes 276
sycophants 192
Sydney 299
Sydney Bushfires/ John Howard Reichstag 217
Sydney Gay Olympics in 2000 121
Sydney, wildfire threatens 220
synagogue 193, 208, 213-14
systemic corruption in New Zealand Judiciary 171

T

Taiwan 251-55
Taiwan President Chen Shui-bian 252
Taiwan Sugar Company (Takechi Sugar Foundation) 252
talking hairdos 295
talking shirtfront 272
talks to my television saying "I'm talking to the SIS and Army intelligence" 176, 334
Talmud/ists 213-15
Tampa incident 220
Tank Commander 193, 207-08
Tanner stage V breasts 77
tar and feather council members 246
Tasha and Alisha 143
Taupo 12, 72, 78, 82-83, 89, 92, 96, 99, 112, 125-28
Tavares, Ricardo Colares 314-16
Tavistock St Petersburg 71-74, 81, 86-87, 92
  trained prostitutes 105, 112, 118, 123
  bring in criminal mates, drag them up the ladder 24
Tax 73, 81
taxed and stripped of the liberty of driving 327
Taylor, Mary, refused to do maintenance work 136
Taylor, Pat, skinny runt of a man with a
  fat wife compromised into police stitch-ups 136
teaboy for these intelligence meetings 153
teenage acne 286
teenage girls getting into prostitution 154
Tehran 271-72, 276-80
Telecom, sending bills for unordered bookings 32, 126
Temptation Island 209
teppanyaki 21
terrorism 73, 80, 125, 129, 284-85, 289
Terrorism Suppression Act 91, 125, 333
Terrorism tends to promote world government 291
terrorist attacks ordered, Ruatoki and Tuhoe Nation 220
Tesla, Nikola 147
The Bog pub 167
The New Horizons for Women Trust 114
Theoretical Economics 42
The Penguin History Of New Zealand 158
thinking woman's crumpet 322
Thomas, Arthur Allan was stitched up, convicted 1971 & 1973, pardoned in 1979 164
Thomas, Chairman John Parnell 297-98
Thompson, Mervyn 101
threatening dogs 192
threesome 286
Thule, Greenland, sweep down to Antarctica over 1500 yrs 76
TIA, Transient Ischaemic Attack 102
Tibetans 318
Tibetans made a hell of an impression on the Nazis 318
Time magazine (Jewish) 302
tired, incapable of masking their bodily reactions 269
Tirikatene-Sullivan, Whetu 103
Title Deeds Office 92
Tizard, Cath, known for the drink 102
  marriage celebrant 108, 113-14
Tizard, Judith, Governor-General's daughter 108, 113, 124, 152
tomahawks 117
Tooman, Leo, Inspector, East Waikato 157-59
Torch of Liberty served crime syndicate 216
totally controlling a society 33
Tourette's 105
touting the homosexual lifestyle to school children 89
toxins 123
traffic tickets, using maliciously 335
training fields in NZ's South Island (Fiordland) 81
transcript of the 13 August 2002 District Court hearing 147
transvestite-rooting PM David Lange 201
transvestites 143, 166
Trawler Wars 72, 82, 98, 99, 136, 152
treasonous activities tantamount to war 93
treating a phantom cancer with placebos 276
Trentham 110
tried-and-true insiders 149
triethylaluminum smoke trail 233
Trojan Prime Ministers 145
Trojan virus 52
Troy 117
turkeybaster child 201
TV News 32
Twin Towers 318

U

UK Customs 234
U.P.C. universal product code 51
U.S. Air Force 34-35
  Lackland Air Force Base near San Antonio, Texas 276
U.S. Army Military Intelligence, oxymoron that funds itself through drugs 291
U.S./Canada Pacific Salmon dispute 267
U.S. Customs 71-73, 86
  list of practising NZ paedophiles (75) 88

U.S. Navy seals, US Navy and US Air Force's HAARP High Frequency Active Auroral Research Project 310
United States suicide epidemic in 2008 199
United Nations 2
  International Genocide movement 46
  white paper on war, drugs & paedophilia 72
  receives 50% funding from US, under thumb of CIA 72-74, 78, 88-89, 127
  General Assembly 270
  evil two-faced fresh-mint dragon 309
  Environment Programme HQ in Nairobi, Kenya 309
uncle to jail instead 84
uncomfortable stare 119
unconscious several times 140
undercover who is also my undercover 328
underwater beacons 95
Unfortunate Affair 275
Universal Declaration of Human Rights 283
University of Auckland is now Murder Inc. 158, 171
Unless Peace Comes 312
Unprotected Custody 325
Unrelenting emotional affrontations 57
Upper Class 36, 58
Up rape creek without a child to raise 205
urgent diplomatic stuff 268
Uzis 208

V

Vance, Cyrus 280
various organisations view of Hitler 319
Vassiliko port 195
Veitch, Tony 149
Vietnam, heavy monsoon rains over South Vietnam 129, 162
Venetian mask 304
Venezuela 314
Vengeance, Israeli Counter-Terrorist 235
vengeance murder 282
verballing is cop for lying 205
vetoe the project 185
vicious by his superiors 142
victims share same level of decomposure, goes unnoticed 313
Vietnam 61
violence, extreme 325
Virtual Design 21-27
VISA participates in attempted murders, boiler-plating, hobbling and blacklisting, offers credit lines while target is being financially assassinated,
  ensures courts will not solve any debts 186
Volts is Demand 44
Voluntary Police State 226
vomitting everything 140, crook as a dog for 26 hours 332

W

Waiheke Island 146, 165, 193, 196, 207, 328-31
  Council 259
  supermarket 207
Waikato 91, River was radioactive 97-99
  Law School graduate, treat as Tavistock graduate, mind controlled fuckwit 112
  Waikato Area Commander Clint Rickards 156
  Auckland City District Commander and Assistant Police Commissioner 325
  Waikato XXXX 268
Waipareira Trust employed gang member/ rapist/ paedophile/ policeman turned lawyer, Clint Rickards 165-67
  Porky, get back in game of crime, 63-year-old retiree manufacturing P for Waipareira Trust 166
Wairakei Geothermal Power Station, Taupo 82-83, 92, 98
Wakefield, Colonel William and Edward abducted heiress Ellen Turner, brother paedophiles 135, 204
Wakefield Street 204-05
Walden, Ronald A. Politically Correct nobody 259-60
  not charismatic, one of those 'Climate Change' fuckwits, should be struck off, knowing/ willing accessory to cover up murder attempt 266
  Politically Correct pussy-whipped 329
walked across an intersection 123
Wall Dancer 304-05
Walsh, Richard 296
Walt Disney 292
Wanganui 330
Wanganui Computer 136
wannabe adults 147
wannabe politicians who collect sexual data on NZers, then gift to foreign agents for sphere of influence 201
war 33-35, 37, 39-40, 42, 44, 48-51, 58, 60-66
war, whether national or international 61
war-in-peacetime, feminism 72
war, last resort of economic heat, Conducted Con against all Resistance 63
War is a bank draft, not a government draft 44
War is balancing the system banks use 40
war it is a Con – a Conducted Con 44
war of the Jews between WWI and WWII – fought between main Jewish gangs in New York 301
war to balance the account 48
Warning systems 236
Warren, Phil 303
washed out of reality by compliant intelligence, compromised politicians, and talking hairdo media 260
washing machine 117-18
Water Rats Ratos de agua 313-16
Water vapour responsible for 95 % greenhouse effect 159
Watties 134
Waugh, Steve 219
waved 176
Wayne, John 298
weakest points 199
wealthy paedophile Freemason marry michiing Jewess 197
weapons dumps 209
weapons so subtle and sophisticated 35
Weather manipulation in Eastern Australia ensures fine weather over NZ during Election 178
  weather warfare 227-29, 234-36, 246-47
Weir, Milton, Detective Sergeant 107
welfare state as a strategic weapon 61
Wellington 72-75, 80-89, 92-100, 114, 121
  Apple Pie Contest 121
  became the hot spot of the Cold War 82
  Wellington Police 328
Wells, H. G., George Bernard Shaw, Bertrand Russell, Virginia Woolf, Emmeline Pankhurst 256
Wells, Jeremy, Newsboy 178
Wendy's 166

We shall not pay tax against us 223
West Huntly 163
Whalley, Steve of Waiheke Island, now Stephen John Brandon of Wanganui 163, 259, 264-66, 325, 329
  convicted and jailed in England for sex with a minor 330
Wharf No. 3 72, 83, 96, 136
wheel bearing locknut 138-39
wheeze 124, 129
Whenuapai 79-80
when we go to court, we are actually going to Visa 187
Whitbread Round the World race 307
white cross 158
White House 74, 87, 100, 122, 126-29, 144, 269, 285-87, 289, 294, 297
Who's Who 87
whoever dies first, dies first 240
Why the fuck do you get caught up in this sort of shit? 328
Wilg, Olaf 81-82, 89, 101
Wikipedia 137, 158, 190-91
Wilkins Ice Shelf 309
Williams, Durrell, cut telephone lines to neighbour house 120
Williams, Peter Alderidge QC, PAWQC 105, 120, 163-67, 170-72, 181, 185-93, 261, 264, 325, 329-31
  serial cuckold/er, seems to run in the family
  so tight nuns use his arsehole as a reference
  runaway self-destructive manic-depressive child 120
  well past his useby date, survived by obfuscation,
  can't fork out $5,000 for architecture fee after 4 years,
  credibility, Williams has none 163
  protecting true and known murderers, often high-ranking Freemason, as in Crewe murders 163
  misdirection, courtroom drama queen 163, 170
  proven drama queen 164
  P dealing shit, hangover from Mr Asia being too close scenario 167
  had his junior lawyer, Karen Soich, become girlfriend of drug runner Mr Asia, PAWQCs client
  partner Heeni Prozac Phillips 166
  bisexual MI-6 heroin trafficker 170
  well past his due-by-date 171
  could describe having a cup of coffee as an act of war
  bisexual involved in drug trafficking
  specialised in distraction/ obfuscation,
  defense amounted to small boy summer tantrum 172
  Agreement between P. A. Williams (owner) and Gregory Hallett (architect) 185, 188
  Peter! This appears to be a slavery document! 179, 183-86
  plethora of interlocutory processional distractions to ensure creditor never paid 186
  lacks testicals to testify, does not testify
  stuck his hand up 17-year-old Maori boy's bottom outside High Court, 2 July 2008 187
  whims of Williams 188
  unspoken, unwritten, unspecified wishes of Williams
  Slave Master
  STRUCK OFF
  Involuntary Servitude 189
  lawyer tantamount to fraud, end result is free labour
  Slave Master Williams, Slaver 190
  five counts threat to kill, bisexual oblique non sequiturs,
  removed from silk and struck from the bar 191, 333
  past your use by date, sad but true
  pro-rata payments taking precedents over any work delayed outside my control
  long-faced Christians sitting at feet singing koom-by-ya, saying you're reincarnation of a Chinese emperor 192
  PAWQC started to say how much he liked having sex with men 309
  reputation undeserved, bisexual MI-6 heroin trafficker, researcher Albi Orme, struck-off lawyer and Churchill Scholar, threatened to kill me four times
  is this not a slavery contract?
  bisexual Peter Alderidge Williams QC 331
Williams and Co. 176, 180, 259, 266
Williams Salvage Services Ltd, Colombo Street, Frankton, Hamilton 157-58
Wille, Annemarie 121-22, 201
Wilson, Margaret Anne, Speaker of the House 9, 12, 83, 92, 96-99, 112, 115, 116,
  away on leave patching up Jonathan Hunt's paedophilia, 127-29, 134-36, 139, 143, 210
Wilsons Promontory 223, 231
WK202 321
women demand security more than logical, principled, or honorable behavior 65
Woolcott, Richard, head of spy agency DFAT 255
working the defamation on behalf of the judiciary 16
world's political lesbian heavyweights 80
World Anti-Independence Day began on 4 July 2003 51
World Trade Organisation (WTO) appellate body 267
worst murderers and villains are presented as heroes 90
worth killing for 280
would-be assassin 207
wouldn't answer your emergency calls 240
Wrecking environment runs hand in glove w. wrecking society 312
wretched treasonous government-employed terrorists! 210
Writers Guild 292-94
Writ of Arrest 330
WWII 33, 72-73, 98, 261, 274, 291-92, 301, 303

X

XY females with testes, AIS Grade 4 77

Y

Yanakie 231
Yanks 95
Yaron, former Israeli tank commander 114, 193, 196, 207-08
Yate, Reverend William 135
Year and a Day rule 335
Yeltsin 96
Yids 300 big on reincarnation 321
Yom Kippur 208, 213-15
Young Turk 274
Yourkevitch, Vladimir 302
Youth Fisting 201
YTS Systems, Israel-based, designed security systems for 6 embassies, US, Germany, Africa 208

Z

Zahedi, Ardeshir, appointed Ambassador US in 1959, 1973 Foreign Minister in 1966 269-71, 277
Zaoui, Ahmed 100
Zelas, Karen, psychiatrist, expert witness
lacked testimonial credibility, trick cyclist 108
Zigi fishing village on the southern coast of Cyprus 195
Zionist Agenda turn gentile women into prostitutes 47, 198
zone and predictions come out 327

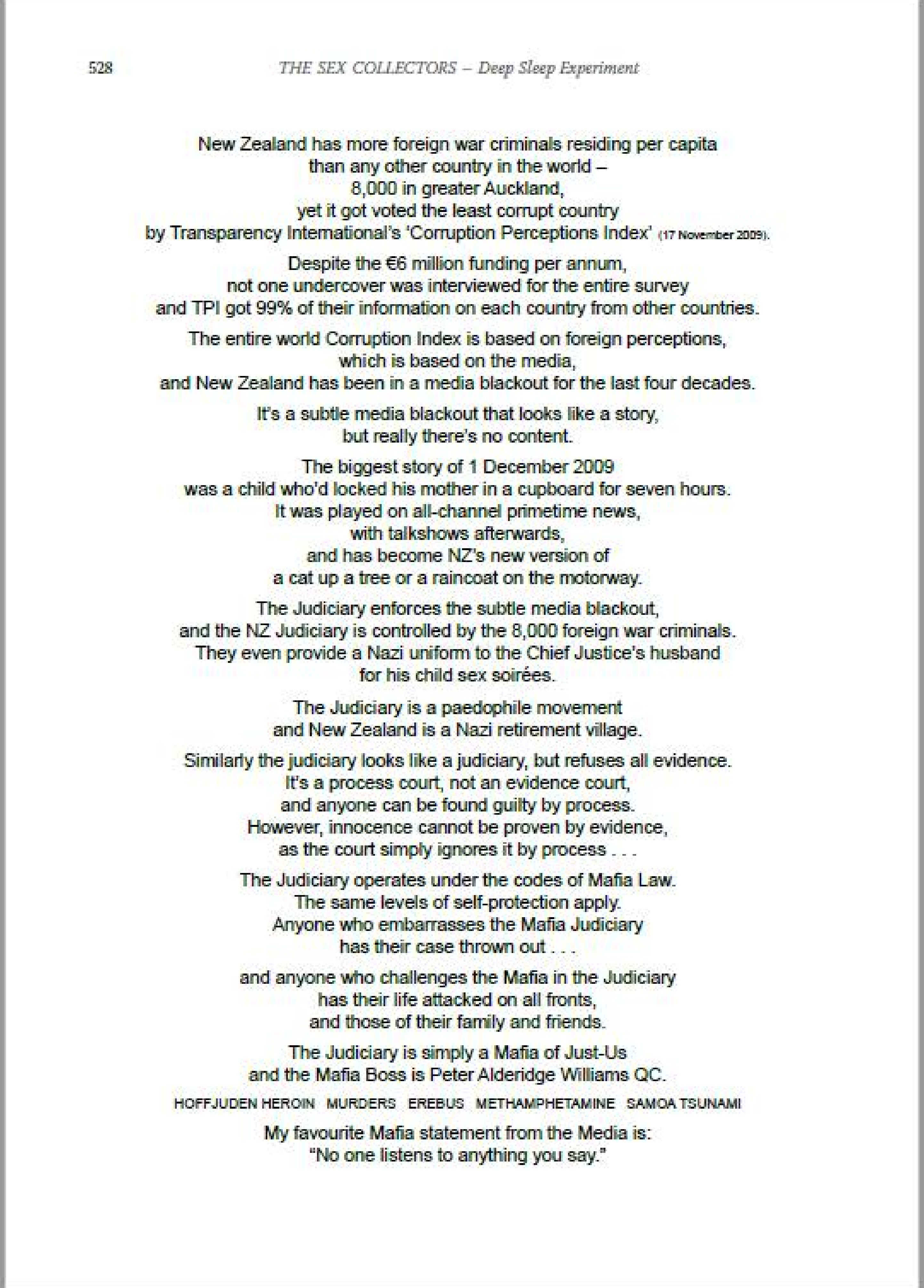

New Zealand has more foreign war criminals residing per capita
than any other country in the world –
8,000 in greater Auckland,
yet it got voted the least corrupt country
by Transparency International's 'Corruption Perceptions Index' (17 November 2009).

Despite the €6 million funding per annum,
not one undercover was interviewed for the entire survey
and TPI got 99% of their information on each country from other countries.

The entire world Corruption Index is based on foreign perceptions,
which is based on the media,
and New Zealand has been in a media blackout for the last four decades.

It's a subtle media blackout that looks like a story,
but really there's no content.

The biggest story of 1 December 2009
was a child who'd locked his mother in a cupboard for seven hours.
It was played on all-channel primetime news,
with talkshows afterwards,
and has become NZ's new version of
a cat up a tree or a raincoat on the motorway.

The Judiciary enforces the subtle media blackout,
and the NZ Judiciary is controlled by the 8,000 foreign war criminals.
They even provide a Nazi uniform to the Chief Justice's husband
for his child sex soirées.

The Judiciary is a paedophile movement
and New Zealand is a Nazi retirement village.

Similarly the judiciary looks like a judiciary, but refuses all evidence.
It's a process court, not an evidence court,
and anyone can be found guilty by process.
However, innocence cannot be proven by evidence,
as the court simply ignores it by process . . .

The Judiciary operates under the codes of Mafia Law.
The same levels of self-protection apply.
Anyone who embarrasses the Mafia Judiciary
has their case thrown out . . .

and anyone who challenges the Mafia in the Judiciary
has their life attacked on all fronts,
and those of their family and friends.

The Judiciary is simply a Mafia of Just-Us
and the Mafia Boss is Peter Alderidge Williams QC.

HOFFJUDEN HEROIN MURDERS EREBUS METHAMPHETAMINE SAMOA TSUNAMI

My favourite Mafia statement from the Media is:
"No one listens to anything you say."

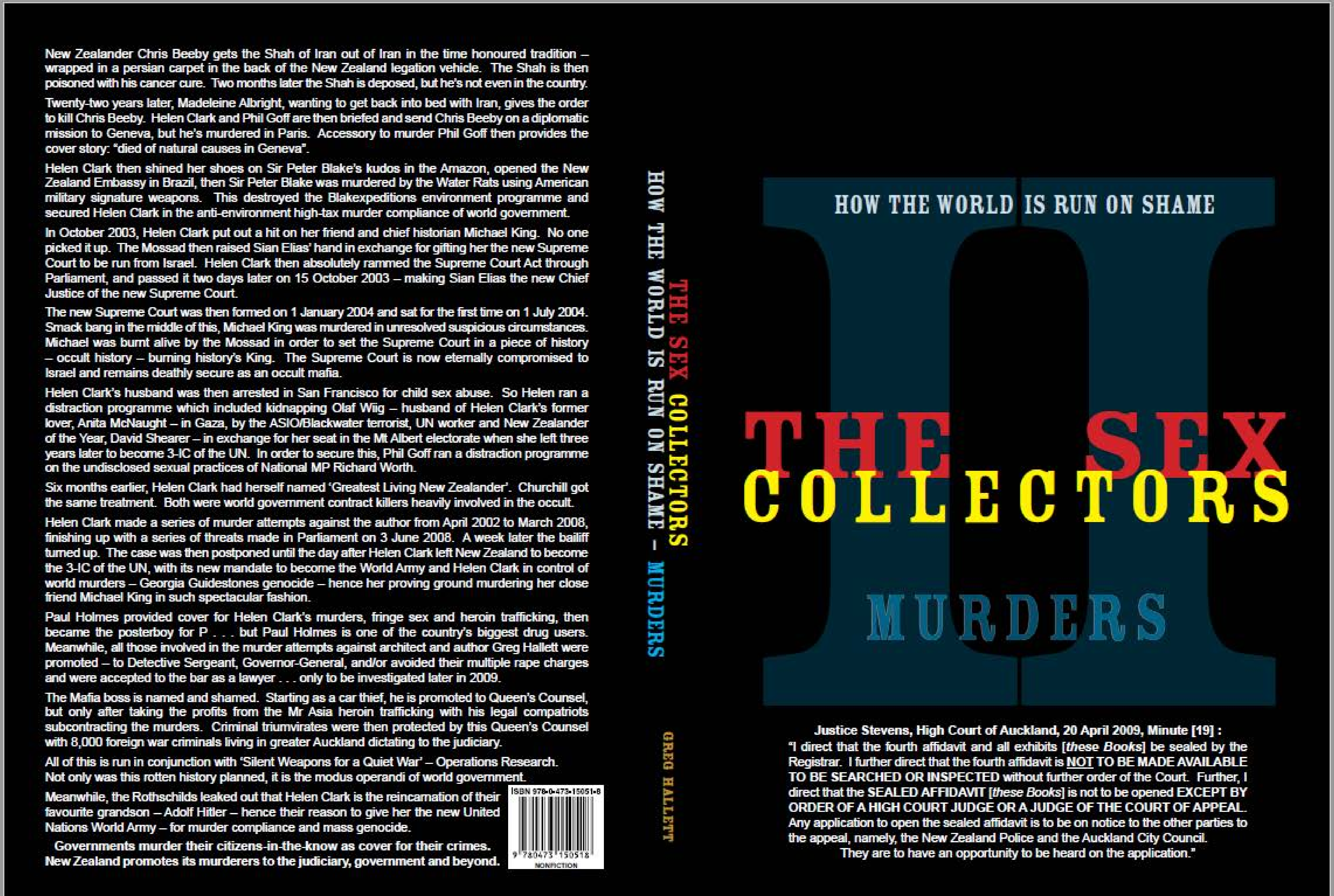

HOW THE WORLD IS RUN ON SHAME

THE SEX COLLECTORS

II

MURDERS

Justice Stevens, High Court of Auckland, 20 April 2009, Minute [19] :

"I direct that the fourth affidavit and all exhibits [*these Books*] be sealed by the Registrar. I further direct that the fourth affidavit is NOT TO BE MADE AVAILABLE TO BE SEARCHED OR INSPECTED without further order of the Court. Further, I direct that the SEALED AFFIDAVIT [*these Books*] is not to be opened EXCEPT BY ORDER OF A HIGH COURT JUDGE OR A JUDGE OF THE COURT OF APPEAL. Any application to open the sealed affidavit is to be on notice to the other parties to the appeal, namely, the New Zealand Police and the Auckland City Council. They are to have an opportunity to be heard on the application."

THE SEX COLLECTORS
HOW THE WORLD IS RUN ON SHAME – MURDERS
GREG HALLETT

New Zealander Chris Beeby gets the Shah of Iran out of Iran in the time honoured tradition – wrapped in a persian carpet in the back of the New Zealand legation vehicle. The Shah is then poisoned with his cancer cure. Two months later the Shah is deposed, but he's not even in the country.

Twenty-two years later, Madeleine Albright, wanting to get back into bed with Iran, gives the order to kill Chris Beeby. Helen Clark and Phil Goff are then briefed and send Chris Beeby on a diplomatic mission to Geneva, but he's murdered in Paris. Accessory to murder Phil Goff then provides the cover story: "died of natural causes in Geneva".

Helen Clark then shined her shoes on Sir Peter Blake's kudos in the Amazon, opened the New Zealand Embassy in Brazil, then Sir Peter Blake was murdered by the Water Rats using American military signature weapons. This destroyed the Blakexpeditions environment programme and secured Helen Clark in the anti-environment high-tax murder compliance of world government.

In October 2003, Helen Clark put out a hit on her friend and chief historian Michael King. No one picked it up. The Mossad then raised Sian Elias' hand in exchange for gifting her the new Supreme Court to be run from Israel. Helen Clark then absolutely rammed the Supreme Court Act through Parliament, and passed it two days later on 15 October 2003 – making Sian Elias the new Chief Justice of the new Supreme Court.

The new Supreme Court was then formed on 1 January 2004 and sat for the first time on 1 July 2004. Smack bang in the middle of this, Michael King was murdered in unresolved suspicious circumstances. Michael was burnt alive by the Mossad in order to set the Supreme Court in a piece of history – occult history – burning history's King. The Supreme Court is now eternally compromised to Israel and remains deathly secure as an occult mafia.

Helen Clark's husband was then arrested in San Francisco for child sex abuse. So Helen ran a distraction programme which included kidnapping Olaf Wiig – husband of Helen Clark's former lover, Anita McNaught – in Gaza, by the ASIO/Blackwater terrorist, UN worker and New Zealander of the Year, David Shearer – in exchange for her seat in the Mt Albert electorate when she left three years later to become 3-IC of the UN. In order to secure this, Phil Goff ran a distraction programme on the undisclosed sexual practices of National MP Richard Worth.

Six months earlier, Helen Clark had herself named 'Greatest Living New Zealander'. Churchill got the same treatment. Both were world government contract killers heavily involved in the occult.

Helen Clark made a series of murder attempts against the author from April 2002 to March 2008, finishing up with a series of threats made in Parliament on 3 June 2008. A week later the bailiff turned up. The case was then postponed until the day after Helen Clark left New Zealand to become the 3-IC of the UN, with its new mandate to become the World Army and Helen Clark in control of world murders – Georgia Guidestones genocide – hence her proving ground murdering her close friend Michael King in such spectacular fashion.

Paul Holmes provided cover for Helen Clark's murders, fringe sex and heroin trafficking, then became the posterboy for P . . . but Paul Holmes is one of the country's biggest drug users. Meanwhile, all those involved in the murder attempts against architect and author Greg Hallett were promoted – to Detective Sergeant, Governor-General, and/or avoided their multiple rape charges and were accepted to the bar as a lawyer . . . only to be investigated later in 2009.

The Mafia boss is named and shamed. Starting as a car thief, he is promoted to Queen's Counsel, but only after taking the profits from the Mr Asia heroin trafficking with his legal compatriots subcontracting the murders. Criminal triumvirates were then protected by this Queen's Counsel with 8,000 foreign war criminals living in greater Auckland dictating to the judiciary.

All of this is run in conjunction with 'Silent Weapons for a Quiet War' – Operations Research. Not only was this rotten history planned, it is the modus operandi of world government.

Meanwhile, the Rothschilds leaked out that Helen Clark is the reincarnation of their favourite grandson – Adolf Hitler – hence their reason to give her the new United Nations World Army – for murder compliance and mass genocide.

Governments murder their citizens-in-the-know as cover for their crimes. New Zealand promotes its murderers to the judiciary, government and beyond.

ISBN 978-0-473-15051-8
NONFICTION

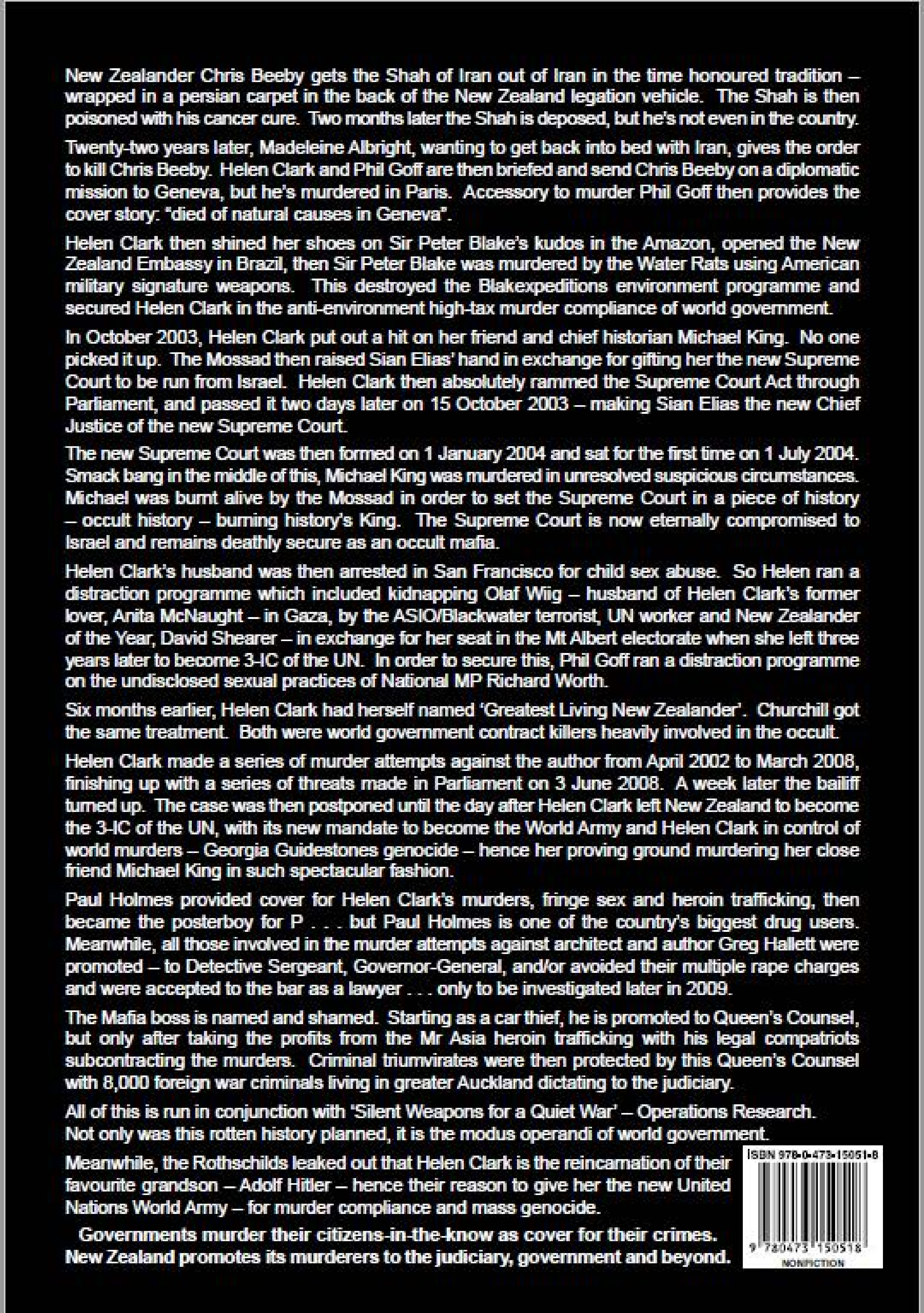

New Zealander Chris Beeby gets the Shah of Iran out of Iran in the time honoured tradition – wrapped in a persian carpet in the back of the New Zealand legation vehicle. The Shah is then poisoned with his cancer cure. Two months later the Shah is deposed, but he's not even in the country.

Twenty-two years later, Madeleine Albright, wanting to get back into bed with Iran, gives the order to kill Chris Beeby. Helen Clark and Phil Goff are then briefed and send Chris Beeby on a diplomatic mission to Geneva, but he's murdered in Paris. Accessory to murder Phil Goff then provides the cover story: "died of natural causes in Geneva".

Helen Clark then shined her shoes on Sir Peter Blake's kudos in the Amazon, opened the New Zealand Embassy in Brazil, then Sir Peter Blake was murdered by the Water Rats using American military signature weapons. This destroyed the Blakexpeditions environment programme and secured Helen Clark in the anti-environment high-tax murder compliance of world government.

In October 2003, Helen Clark put out a hit on her friend and chief historian Michael King. No one picked it up. The Mossad then raised Sian Elias' hand in exchange for gifting her the new Supreme Court to be run from Israel. Helen Clark then absolutely rammed the Supreme Court Act through Parliament, and passed it two days later on 15 October 2003 – making Sian Elias the new Chief Justice of the new Supreme Court.

The new Supreme Court was then formed on 1 January 2004 and sat for the first time on 1 July 2004. Smack bang in the middle of this, Michael King was murdered in unresolved suspicious circumstances. Michael was burnt alive by the Mossad in order to set the Supreme Court in a piece of history – occult history – burning history's King. The Supreme Court is now eternally compromised to Israel and remains deathly secure as an occult mafia.

Helen Clark's husband was then arrested in San Francisco for child sex abuse. So Helen ran a distraction programme which included kidnapping Olaf Wiig – husband of Helen Clark's former lover, Anita McNaught – in Gaza, by the ASIO/Blackwater terrorist, UN worker and New Zealander of the Year, David Shearer – in exchange for her seat in the Mt Albert electorate when she left three years later to become 3-IC of the UN. In order to secure this, Phil Goff ran a distraction programme on the undisclosed sexual practices of National MP Richard Worth.

Six months earlier, Helen Clark had herself named 'Greatest Living New Zealander'. Churchill got the same treatment. Both were world government contract killers heavily involved in the occult.

Helen Clark made a series of murder attempts against the author from April 2002 to March 2008, finishing up with a series of threats made in Parliament on 3 June 2008. A week later the bailiff turned up. The case was then postponed until the day after Helen Clark left New Zealand to become the 3-IC of the UN, with its new mandate to become the World Army and Helen Clark in control of world murders – Georgia Guidestones genocide – hence her proving ground murdering her close friend Michael King in such spectacular fashion.

Paul Holmes provided cover for Helen Clark's murders, fringe sex and heroin trafficking, then became the posterboy for P . . . but Paul Holmes is one of the country's biggest drug users. Meanwhile, all those involved in the murder attempts against architect and author Greg Hallett were promoted – to Detective Sergeant, Governor-General, and/or avoided their multiple rape charges and were accepted to the bar as a lawyer . . . only to be investigated later in 2009.

The Mafia boss is named and shamed. Starting as a car thief, he is promoted to Queen's Counsel, but only after taking the profits from the Mr Asia heroin trafficking with his legal compatriots subcontracting the murders. Criminal triumvirates were then protected by this Queen's Counsel with 8,000 foreign war criminals living in greater Auckland dictating to the judiciary.

All of this is run in conjunction with 'Silent Weapons for a Quiet War' – Operations Research.
Not only was this rotten history planned, it is the modus operandi of world government.

Meanwhile, the Rothschilds leaked out that Helen Clark is the reincarnation of their favourite grandson – Adolf Hitler – hence their reason to give her the new United Nations World Army – for murder compliance and mass genocide.

Governments murder their citizens-in-the-know as cover for their crimes.
New Zealand promotes its murderers to the judiciary, government and beyond.

ISBN 978-0-473-15051-8
NONFICTION

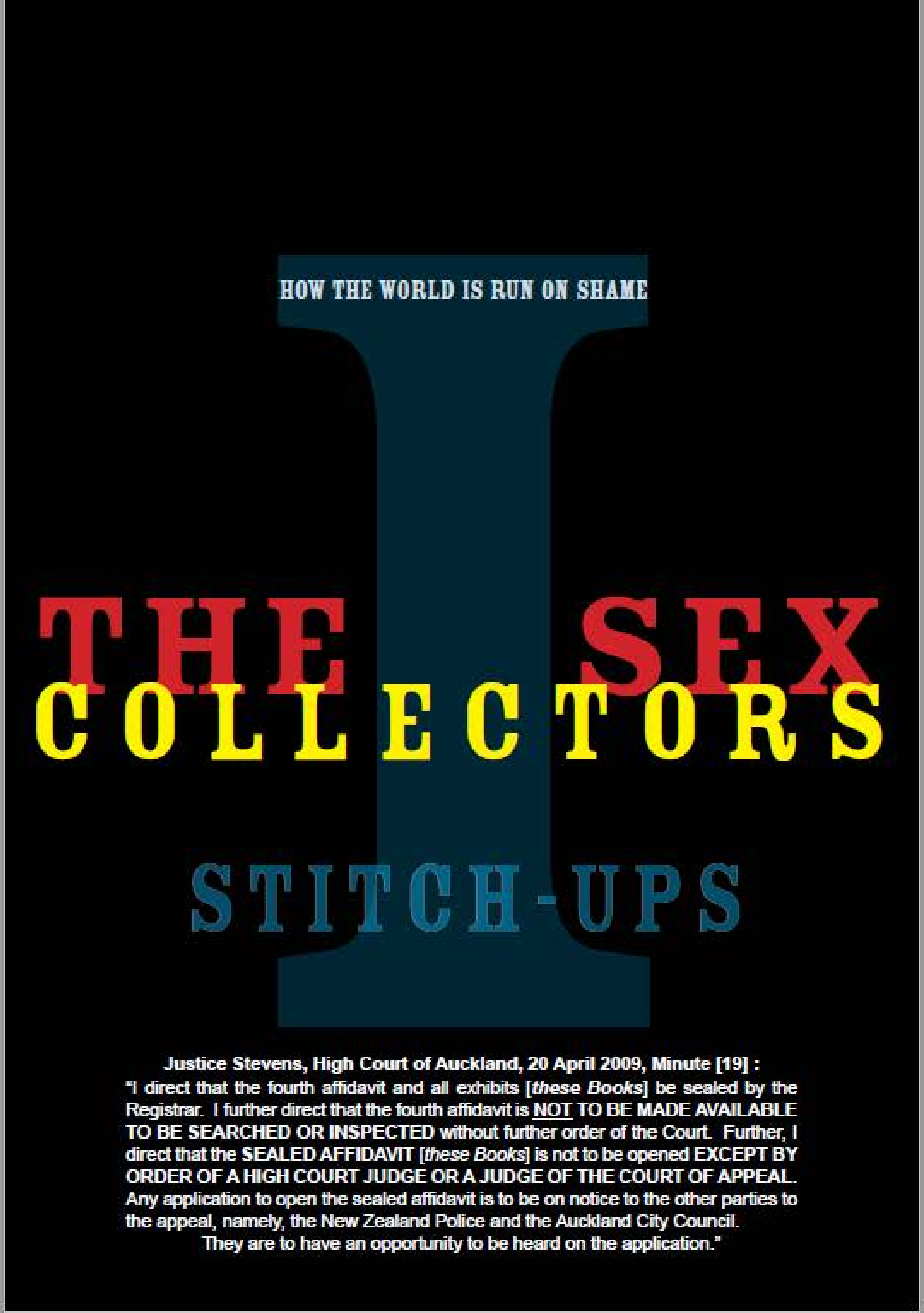

HOW THE WORLD IS RUN ON SHAME

THE SEX COLLECTORS

I

STITCH-UPS

Justice Stevens, High Court of Auckland, 20 April 2009, Minute [19] :

"I direct that the fourth affidavit and all exhibits [*these Books*] be sealed by the Registrar. I further direct that the fourth affidavit is NOT TO BE MADE AVAILABLE TO BE SEARCHED OR INSPECTED without further order of the Court. Further, I direct that the SEALED AFFIDAVIT [*these Books*] is not to be opened EXCEPT BY ORDER OF A HIGH COURT JUDGE OR A JUDGE OF THE COURT OF APPEAL. Any application to open the sealed affidavit is to be on notice to the other parties to the appeal, namely, the New Zealand Police and the Auckland City Council. They are to have an opportunity to be heard on the application."

Books by Greg Hallett

NEW ZEALAND – A Blackmailer's Guide 2007, 2008

HITLER WAS A BRITISH AGENT 2005, 2006

HOW TO TAKE OVER THE WORLD – A Right Royal Con 2007
STALIN'S BRITISH TRAINING – Breeding Concubines Paedophiles At War 2007
GIFTING THE UNITED NATIONS TO STALIN 2007

ARE YOU MY FATHER? The Family Court and Other Experiments 2002

THE SEX COLLECTORS – How the World is run on Shame – Vol. I, STITCH-UPS
First Edition July 2009 ISBN 978-0-473-15050-1
© Greg Hallett 2009

THE SEX COLLECTORS – How the World is run on Shame – Vol. II, MURDERS
First Edition March 2010 ISBN 978-0-473-15051-8
© Greg Hallett 2009

THE SEX COLLECTORS – How the World is run on Shame – Vol. III, HEROIN TICKET
First Edition March 2010 ISBN 978-0-473-15049-5
© Greg Hallett 2009

Published by PRINCE OF NEW SPAIN
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland, New Zealand

Orders and distribution
FNZ Inc.
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland, New Zealand

Purchases
www.greghallett.com

Contact the author
Cell: 0274 589 800
greg@greghallett.com
G: PrinceofNewSpain
Skype: PrinceofNewSpain

The images in this book are used under fair use. They are historically significant photos of famous individuals. They are a lower resolution than the originals and any copies will be of inferior quality. The photos are only used for informational purposes and their inclusion adds significantly to the knowledge gained as it depicts the subject with historical accuracy. Incorporating restricted material is fair use under United States copyright law and any challenges will be met with commercial and liberal parody.

This book was presented as evidence in the HIGH COURT of AUCKLAND. In Courtroom 13, High Court Justice Stevens sealed it at 3.45 pm on Monday 20 April 2009.

The contents are sealed to prevent use by reference.

No part of this book is allowed to be read by any member of the judiciary unless they have the written permission of THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE and the Auckland City Council lawyers present, to be heard in front of a High Court judge, and then maybe the Court of Appeal.

However the contents have not been given a secrecy order from the public . . . so I bring you these 'clear, substantive and true' revelations so that you may revel in your controller's indescretions and have yourself a win . . . . Bon voyage!

THE SEX COLLECTORS

I

GREG HALLETT

PRINCE OF NEW SPAIN
LONDON AUCKLAND FRANKFURT TORONTO

I STITCH-UPS

II MURDERS

III HEROIN TICKET

Claimer & Disclaimer

You are about to enter the reality zone where the truth is stranger than fiction, reputations are destroyed, crimes are solved and governments are exposed as Counter-Intelligence agencies for overseas interests. Government is a Twilight Zone. Court is their censor. Read this book in daylight. The author has failed to receive the usual promotion from 'learned opinions'[1] who are in turn funded by bankers, whose role is to suppress knowledge of the Counter-Intelligence Twilight Zone. The author is trained in buildings and computers with degree and certificate as proof that his only expertise is 'sharing his opinions with these inanimate objects'. Not writing about buildings, the author is unqualified, and talking through fingers to an inanimate computer for the sole and expressed edification of that computer, renders all else an unqualified, unauthorised leak. If through feedback between the computer, the building, and Hallett, you find yourself with a signed copy of the computer's retention of Mr Hallett's fingers, then this is surely an Act of God. The writer therefore disclaims at will, any and all liability for the consequences of informing real people of their, or their neighbour's real actions, and resulting consequences, as evidence by result. **No Further Disclaimer Necessary** There is no further disclaimer in this book as any reader worth their own weight in salt, will find themself responsible for their own perceptions, realities, and interpretations, and influence the world as they do so. Either we allow ourselves to determine, or we allow ourselves to be determined. The later are the most forcefully ignorant complainers resulting in the most published feedback. My intent at all times is to remain honourable. Any dishonour of one, only honours the masses. If you are in the book, it is because you are in grave dishonour and have acted covinously.[2] The building, the computer, Mr Hallett's fingers and various other combined Acts of God, have never intended to dishonour the honourable mantel, only the dishonorable mantel that wears and honourable title for Counter-Intelligence and Twilight purposes. e.g. Players in the conspiracy that limits our freedoms. If you feel the need to take this information as gospel without your own due diligence then it would be against your better judgement to take action without confirming investigation. If you wish to wake from your slumber, then spread the word and join in the new peace, freedom and culture. May you have new and better paradigms, perceptions and horizons. If you find your reality in the bondage of involuntary servitude and count this as common success, then you are another drudge of the masses and I request no contact. **Truth** Arthur Schopenhauer (1788–1860) Philosopher paraphrased for your enjoyment: 'All truth passes through three stages: Ridiculed, violently opposed, then accepted as self-evident'. In a time of universal deceit, telling the truth is a revolutionary act. When a well-presented web of deceit is gradually sold to the masses, the truth will appear utterly preposterous, and its author a raving lunatic. A truth's initial commotion is directly proportional to how deeply the lie was laid. If you want to make someone angry, tell them a lie. If you want to make them furious, tell them the truth. Few people will listen to what they don't want to hear. Those who do are later sought out for advice. We want the full truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth, so help me bartender. Do not confuse what you think you know, with what is true. The chances are you have been told a series of partial truths and half-baked lies. The truth is very rarely 'popular opinion'. It is usually unpopular and unpalatable. Each thinking man is opposed by a thousand mediocre minds appointed to guard the nonsensical past with all the apathy they can bore into others. Contempt without complete investigation enslaves associates into ignorance. Never underestimate the power of a large group of very stupid people. There was 'what we know', 'what we don't know', and 'what we don't know we don't know'. 'Not knowing' is unfortunate. 'Not knowing that we don't know' is tragic. Now with less of 'what we don't know', and less of 'what we don't know we don't know', the reader should be less tragic and less unfortunate. With this book, the supply of truth far outweighs the demand. Deuteronomy 19:15, paraphrased for your enjoyment: "At the mouth of two or more witnesses shall the the truth be established". This book is a collection of many viewpoints. If they all stood up in court, then it would be verified as true evidence. Having already had everything taken away from them except their lives, there are reasons they use this process of 'man, computer, book, leak, Act of God'. Telling the truth is a balancing act between getting the resolved message out and people reacting badly. Many people have lost their lives by not opening their mind. The walking dead springs to mind and adds spring to my step as I sprint away from their boring boredom. Morpheus: "You are a slave. Like everyone else, you were born into bondage, kept inside a prison you cannot see, smell, taste, or touch – a prison for your mind". Accept it or reject it, you have been told. What you do with this knowledge is your part in the revolution back to normality. The revolution has been the government ignoring the citizen. The slave is the taxpayer funding their own ignorance. Lack of information and lack of knowledge only assists the deceiver. Accurate information makes us more discerning, wiser, better informed and better able to inform our masters of their misdeeds. Withholding information serves no one. Not investigating is an ill service to ourselves. Lend me your ear, rather than your preconceived notions, psychological defences, or prejudices. Remember your initial thoughts of unencumbered freedom and direct your mind. Logic only works when the first premise is true. The government and courts never ever begin with a true premise. To them, the first true premise is an act of revolutionary violence, antipathy, and an explosion worthy of Guy Fawkes suppression. The courts act with certainty that the truth about anything will never be told. The truth begins with the question, which is the reader's initial response. This book is a collective claim. You are not part of the claim until you have investigated the truth with due diligence. Ranting opposition does not qualify. "I don't like the tone" does not qualify. Which part did you not agree with, or what part do you know a greater truth to? "I know this person, they're not like that" does not qualify. Unless you meet them in the bedroom, you do not know that person. Your doubt is worth investigating. It leads to research, and research usually leads to exhaustion and paths of doubt. The only thing that counts is the inside story and that most often originates in the field, or is sourced in the bedroom. A secret is only secret because so few want to hear. When everyone knows, it can still be a secret. Each story, repugnant, impossible, absurd, has a greater chance of being true, especially since New Zealand is run by Counter-Intelligence and not by intelligence. First they ridicule the story, then they blacklist the author, then they accept it as a self-evident secret, then they refuse to act on it, and when it has lost its power to influence, they talk about their involvement in the story and the subjects downfall. How weak is man when truth limits him. When Guy Fawkes attacked the government, his real target was the banks who control the governments and the courts, and dictate by occult.

---

[1] The author was even refused entry into a Masters in History, despite his five history books and completed degree.

[2] **Covinous**: deceitful; fraudulent; having the nature of, or tainted by covin, **Blacks 6th**; *Covin*; a secret conspiracy or agreement between two or more persons to injure or defraud another **Blacks 6th**; a secret contrivance between two or more persons to defraud and prejudice another's rights, **Bouviers 6th**; *Coven*: a group of witches who meet regularly.

SCHEDULE OF ATTACHMENTS

"A"	Bailiff Turns up 10 June 2008
"B"	How the Judiciary runs New Zealand as a DEEP SLEEP Experiment
"C"	Affidavits | Prime Minister & Chief Justice Contract Killers
"D"	False Arrest on 22 June 1999
"E"	District Court Hearing I Fines and Appeal
"F"	Constable James Matewhinau Cassin's Criminal Record
"G"	High Court Hearing
"H"	Fines Refund
"I"	District Court Hearing II Police withdraw Charge
"J"	Request for Compensation
"K"	Rotary Club Thank You
"L"	Letter to Investigate magazine
"M"	Police Create Crime
"N"	Newspaper Articles
"O"	Blacklisting, Hobbling and Boiler-Plating
"P"	Silent Weapons for a Quiet War
"Q"	Annotated Cabinet
"R"	Helen Clark and Sian Elias' Murders | Quotes
"S"	Key to Murder Attempts
"T"	Mossad Murders in New Zealand
"U"	Who the Blazes is John Howard?
"V"	Pru Gee and Mike Lewis Goold
"W"	The Murder of Chris Beeby
"X"	Sir Peter Blake's Murder
"Y"	Murder Attempts on Greg Hallett
"Z"	Physical & Financial Assassinations
"Z^{1}"	The Greatest Living New Zealander
"Z^{2}"	Heroin Trafficking, Lawyers & Mr Asia
"Z^{3}"	Big Afghan Heroin Dump
"Z^{4}"	NATO & the UN Wanted War Criminals
"Z^{5}"	New Egypt Madness
"Z^{6}"	The Auckland Deloitte CIA SuperCity
"Z^{7}"	Manmade Earthquakes and Tsunamis
"Z^{8}"	THE CIA's Protection Racket for M.O.E. Paedophiles
"Z^{9}"	Commission of Inquiry into Police Murders
"Z^{10}"	Catch Me if You Can
"i–v"	Traffic Tickets for Political Exposure Bus Lane Ticket | Taxi Stand Ticket | High Street Ticket | Ticket to Ride The Rapid Extortion Train Bibliography & Insex

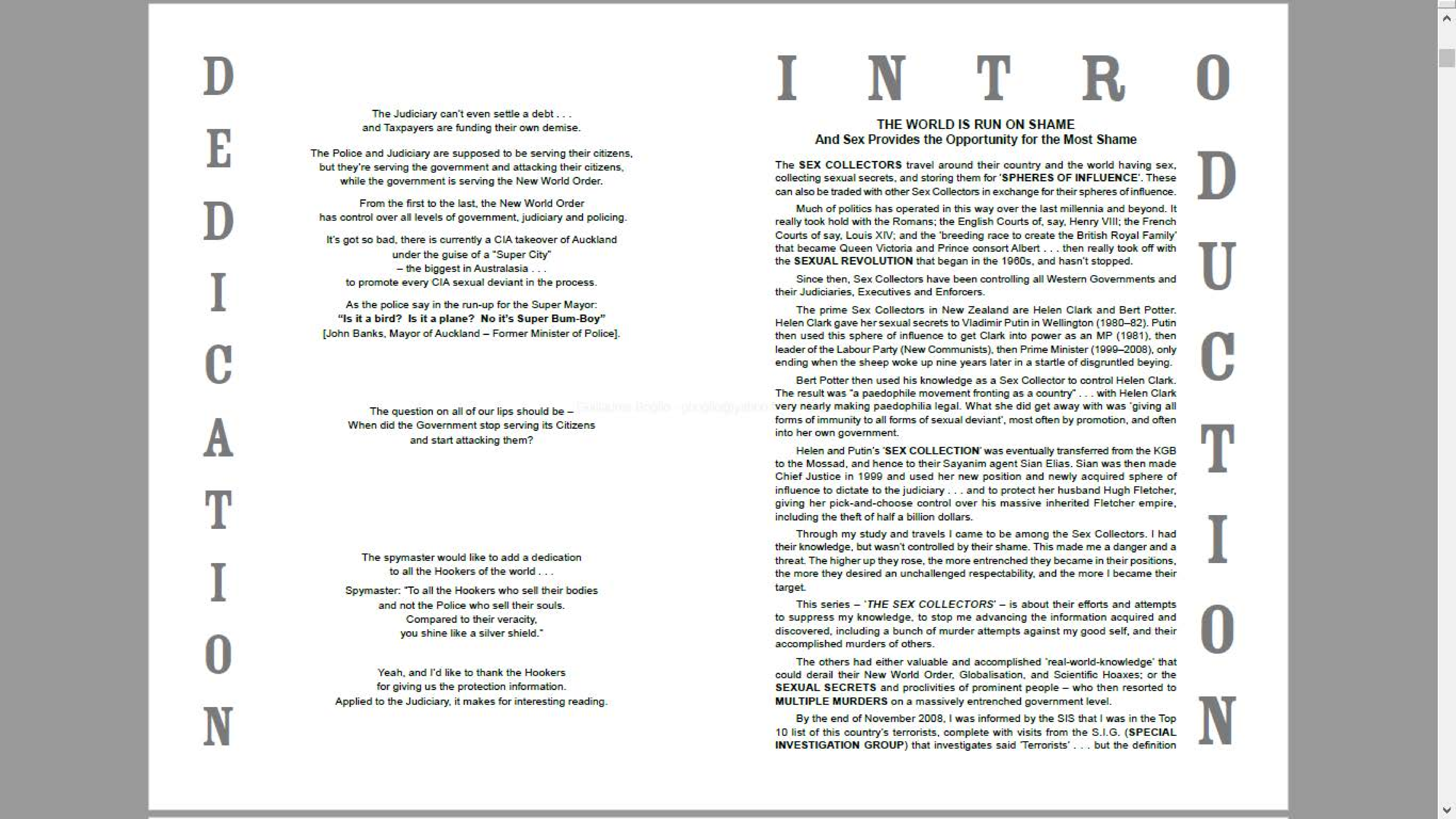

DEDICATION

The Judiciary can't even settle a debt . . .
and Taxpayers are funding their own demise.

The Police and Judiciary are supposed to be serving their citizens,
but they're serving the government and attacking their citizens,
while the government is serving the New World Order.

From the first to the last, the New World Order
has control over all levels of government, judiciary and policing.

It's got so bad, there is currently a CIA takeover of Auckland
under the guise of a "Super City"
– the biggest in Australasia . . .
to promote every CIA sexual deviant in the process.

As the police say in the run-up for the Super Mayor:
"Is it a bird? Is it a plane? No it's Super Bum-Boy"
[John Banks, Mayor of Auckland – Former Minister of Police].

The question on all of our lips should be –
When did the Government stop serving its Citizens
and start attacking them?

The spymaster would like to add a dedication
to all the Hookers of the world . . .

Spymaster: "To all the Hookers who sell their bodies
and not the Police who sell their souls.
Compared to their veracity,
you shine like a silver shield."

Yeah, and I'd like to thank the Hookers
for giving us the protection information.
Applied to the Judiciary, it makes for interesting reading.

INTRODUCTION

THE WORLD IS RUN ON SHAME
And Sex Provides the Opportunity for the Most Shame

The **SEX COLLECTORS** travel around their country and the world having sex, collecting sexual secrets, and storing them for '**SPHERES OF INFLUENCE**'. These can also be traded with other Sex Collectors in exchange for their spheres of influence.

Much of politics has operated in this way over the last millennia and beyond. It really took hold with the Romans; the English Courts of, say, Henry VIII; the French Courts of say, Louis XIV; and the 'breeding race to create the British Royal Family' that became Queen Victoria and Prince consort Albert . . . then really took off with the **SEXUAL REVOLUTION** that began in the 1960s, and hasn't stopped.

Since then, Sex Collectors have been controlling all Western Governments and their Judiciaries, Executives and Enforcers.

The prime Sex Collectors in New Zealand are Helen Clark and Bert Potter. Helen Clark gave her sexual secrets to Vladimir Putin in Wellington (1980–82). Putin then used this sphere of influence to get Clark into power as an MP (1981), then leader of the Labour Party (New Communists), then Prime Minister (1999–2008), only ending when the sheep woke up nine years later in a startle of disgruntled beying.

Bert Potter then used his knowledge as a Sex Collector to control Helen Clark. The result was "a paedophile movement fronting as a country" . . . with Helen Clark very nearly making paedophilia legal. What she did get away with was 'giving all forms of immunity to all forms of sexual deviant', most often by promotion, and often into her own government.

Helen and Putin's '**SEX COLLECTION**' was eventually transferred from the KGB to the Mossad, and hence to their Sayanim agent Sian Elias. Sian was then made Chief Justice in 1999 and used her new position and newly acquired sphere of influence to dictate to the judiciary . . . and to protect her husband Hugh Fletcher, giving her pick-and-choose control over his massive inherited Fletcher empire, including the theft of half a billion dollars.

Through my study and travels I came to be among the Sex Collectors. I had their knowledge, but wasn't controlled by their shame. This made me a danger and a threat. The higher up they rose, the more entrenched they became in their positions, the more they desired an unchallenged respectability, and the more I became their target.

This series – '*THE SEX COLLECTORS*' – is about their efforts and attempts to suppress my knowledge, to stop me advancing the information acquired and discovered, including a bunch of murder attempts against my good self, and their accomplished murders of others.

The others had either valuable and accomplished 'real-world-knowledge' that could derail their New World Order, Globalisation, and Scientific Hoaxes; or the **SEXUAL SECRETS** and proclivities of prominent people – who then resorted to **MULTIPLE MURDERS** on a massively entrenched government level.

By the end of November 2008, I was informed by the SIS that I was in the Top 10 list of this country's terrorists, complete with visits from the S.I.G. (**SPECIAL INVESTIGATION GROUP**) that investigates said 'Terrorists' . . . but the definition

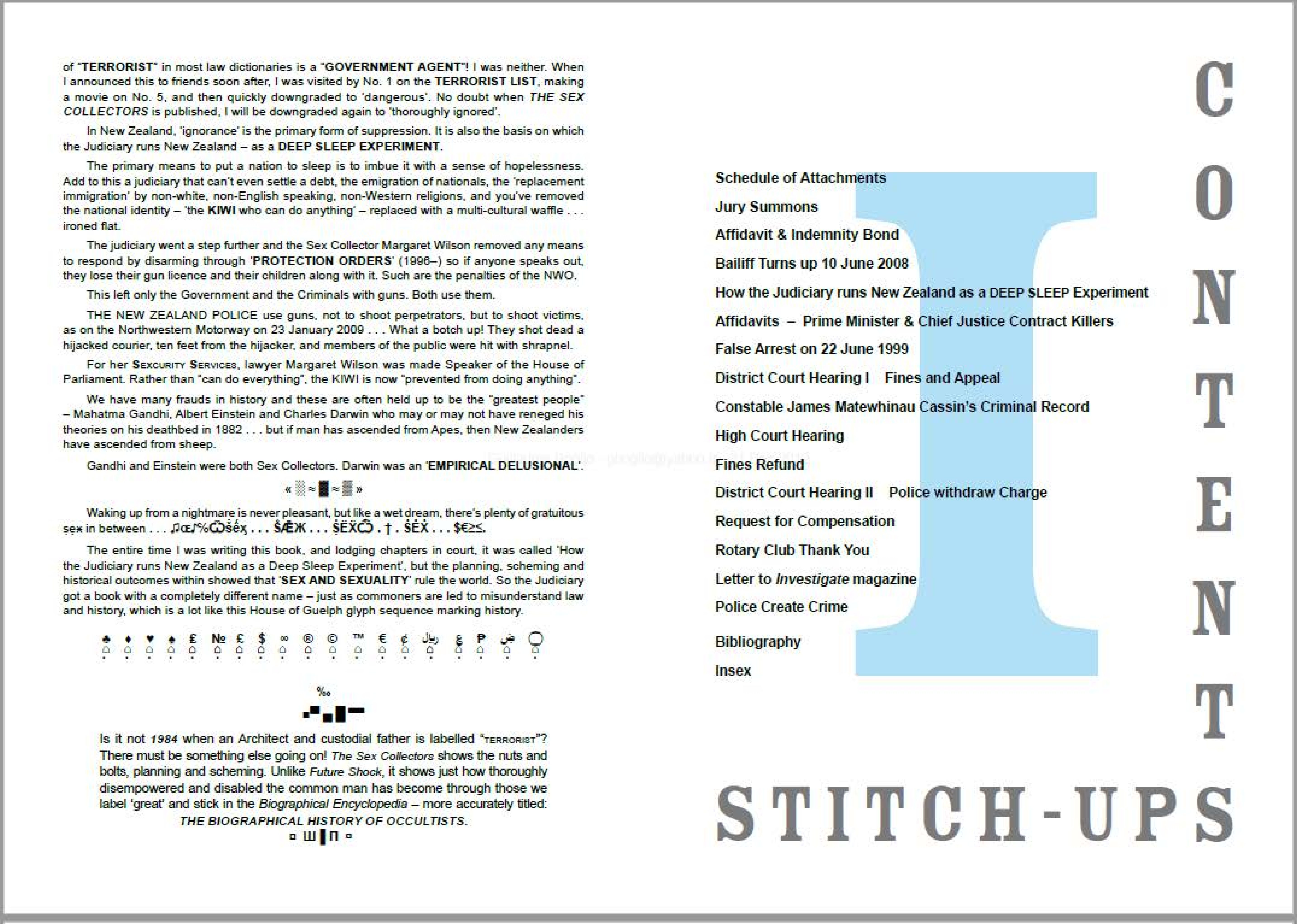

of "**TERRORIST**" in most law dictionaries is a "**GOVERNMENT AGENT**"! I was neither. When I announced this to friends soon after, I was visited by No. 1 on the **TERRORIST LIST**, making a movie on No. 5, and then quickly downgraded to 'dangerous'. No doubt when *THE SEX COLLECTORS* is published, I will be downgraded again to 'thoroughly ignored'.

In New Zealand, 'ignorance' is the primary form of suppression. It is also the basis on which the Judiciary runs New Zealand – as a **DEEP SLEEP EXPERIMENT**.

The primary means to put a nation to sleep is to imbue it with a sense of hopelessness. Add to this a judiciary that can't even settle a debt, the emigration of nationals, the 'replacement immigration' by non-white, non-English speaking, non-Western religions, and you've removed the national identity – 'the **KIWI** who can do anything' – replaced with a multi-cultural waffle . . . ironed flat.

The judiciary went a step further and the Sex Collector Margaret Wilson removed any means to respond by disarming through '**PROTECTION ORDERS**' (1996–) so if anyone speaks out, they lose their gun licence and their children along with it. Such are the penalties of the NWO.

This left only the Government and the Criminals with guns. Both use them.

THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE use guns, not to shoot perpetrators, but to shoot victims, as on the Northwestern Motorway on 23 January 2009 . . . What a botch up! They shot dead a hijacked courier, ten feet from the hijacker, and members of the public were hit with shrapnel.

For her **SEXCURITY SERVICES**, lawyer Margaret Wilson was made Speaker of the House of Parliament. Rather than "can do everything", the KIWI is now "prevented from doing anything".

We have many frauds in history and these are often held up to be the "greatest people" – Mahatma Gandhi, Albert Einstein and Charles Darwin who may or may not have reneged his theories on his deathbed in 1882 . . . but if man has ascended from Apes, then New Zealanders have ascended from sheep.

Gandhi and Einstein were both Sex Collectors. Darwin was an '**EMPIRICAL DELUSIONAL**'.

« ░ ≈ █ ≈ ▒ »

Waking up from a nightmare is never pleasant, but like a wet dream, there's plenty of gratuitous ṣẹ‡ in between . . . ♫œ♪%ⵚṡéx̧ . . . ṠÆЖ . . . ṢËẊⵚ . † . ṠĖẊ . . . $€≥≤.

The entire time I was writing this book, and lodging chapters in court, it was called 'How the Judiciary runs New Zealand as a Deep Sleep Experiment', but the planning, scheming and historical outcomes within showed that '**SEX AND SEXUALITY**' rule the world. So the Judiciary got a book with a completely different name – just as commoners are led to misunderstand law and history, which is a lot like this House of Guelph glyph sequence marking history.

♣ ♦ ♥ ♠ £ № ₤ $ ∞ ® © ™ € ¢ ﷼ ₰ ₱ ض ◯
⌂ ⌂ ⌂ ⌂ ⌂ ⌂ ⌂ ⌂ ⌂ ⌂ ⌂ ⌂ ⌂ ⌂ ⌂ ⌂ ⌂ ⌂ ⌂

‰

▪▀▄█▬

Is it not *1984* when an Architect and custodial father is labelled "TERRORIST"? There must be something else going on! *The Sex Collectors* shows the nuts and bolts, planning and scheming. Unlike *Future Shock*, it shows just how thoroughly disempowered and disabled the common man has become through those we label 'great' and stick in the *Biographical Encyclopedia* – more accurately titled:

THE BIOGRAPHICAL HISTORY OF OCCULTISTS.

▫ Ш▌П ▫

CONTENT

I

Schedule of Attachments

Jury Summons

Affidavit & Indemnity Bond

Bailiff Turns up 10 June 2008

How the Judiciary runs New Zealand as a DEEP SLEEP Experiment

Affidavits – Prime Minister & Chief Justice Contract Killers

False Arrest on 22 June 1999

District Court Hearing I Fines and Appeal

Constable James Matewhinau Cassin's Criminal Record

High Court Hearing

Fines Refund

District Court Hearing II Police withdraw Charge

Request for Compensation

Rotary Club Thank You

Letter to *Investigate* magazine

Police Create Crime

Bibliography

Insex

STITCH-UPS

I

Jury Summons 1

Affidavits 9

Affidavit of 20 April 2009 13

"A" Bailiff turns up 10 June 2008 37

Court Bailiff Ross Rudolf Card PPN1429 601165 (10 June 2008)
Ministry of Justice Fines Summary (as at 28 May 2008)
Ministry of Justice Fines Summary by Collection (as at 10 June 2008)
Ministry of Justice Fines Detail by Collection (as at 10 June 2008)
Ministry of Justice Payment Statement by Collection (as at 10 June 2008)

"B" How the Judcíary runs New Zealand as a Deep Sleep Experiment 45

Affidavit: How the CIA runs the New Zealand Judiciary as an MKULTRA Psy-Ops (17 June 2008)
How the Judiciary runs New Zealand as a Deep Sleep Experiment
Nuremburg Code/ Declaration of Helsinki
Dame Margaret Bazley
Constable James Matewhinau Cassin
Application to Correct Irregularities in Proceedings for Infringement Offence (17 June 2008)
Police Complaints Authority form (17 June 2008)

"C" Affidavits – Prime Minister and Chief Justice contract Killers 85

Ministry of Justice denial to Correct Irregularity of Police vs Hallett despite Clark and Elias murder attempts (23 June 2008)
Ministry of Justice denial to Correct Irregularity of Auckland City Council vs Hallett despite Clark and Elias murder attempts (23 June 2008)
Further Affidavit in District Court accepted by Deputy Registrar F M McMillian (23 June 2008)
Lodging Second Affidavit for the High Court to the District Court for the High Court (27 June 2008)
Notice of Appeal in District Court against Police – to go to High Court (2 July 2008)
Notice of Appeal in District Court against Auckland City Council – to go to High Court (2 July 2008)
Ministry of Justice response to 27 June 2008 Affidavit dated 2 July 2008, posted 4 July 2008 and received 6 July 2008 (2/4/6 July 2008)
Letter to District Court Deputy Registrar, Interim response to MoJ response (7 August 2008)
To Win or Not to Win – What Happened in the High Court hearing (20 April 2009)
Minute of Judge Stevens
Form 57 to 'Correct Irregularities in Proceedings' Centreline (1 pm 30 April 2009)
High Court certifies Centreline appeal allowed and sentence set aside (Police dealt with)
Form 57 to 'Correct Irregularities in Proceedings' Bus Lane (1 pm 30 April 2009)
High Court certifies Buslane appeal disallowed and sentence imposed (ACC not dealt with)
Appeal to the Court of Appeal re High Court decision re ACC's Bus Lane (11 May 2009)
Synchronicty: ThatRadio (30 April 2009)
Montecito Fires (5–13 May 2009)
Intelligence Overreactions – the preservation of Counter-Intelligence
Stage Rights go up in flames and future books watered down
Bain Murders – NOT GUILTY after 15 years
Ministry of Justice Deputy Registrar Auckland Denial to Correct Irregularity (19 May 2009)
Ministry of Justice Deputy Registrar Wellington offering Court of Appeal (20 May 2009)
Notice of Appeal by Person Convicted, Form 3
Email to Julie Thomson, Deputy Registrar, Court of Appeal, Wellington (5 June 2009)
Ministry of Justice, Julie Thomson letter confirming can proceed to appeal (8 June 2009)

"D" False Arrest on 22 June 1999 131

Circumstances
Loose Leaf Charge Sheet (22 June 1999)
Accused Person's Property/Police Bail Bond (22 June 1999)
Notice of Person in Custody (22 June 1999)
Auckland Central Police Station Envelope with Lynn Adamson details (21 July 2008)
DHQ Police File Man. Unit Chris Osborn 'can't find the warrant' of 2 days prior (23 July 2008)
Letter to Auckland City DHQ Police File Management Unit Chris Osborn (25 July 2008).
Assistant Police Commissioner/ Auckland City Commander Clint Rickards rape & rapid promotion
Clint Rickards in the *New Zealand Herald* (2 September 208, A1)
Clint Rickards in *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide*
Unaccounted for Police car crash (2006)
Wanganui computer Exhibit confirming no criminal record of Hallett, 12 September 2008
Affidavit of Clint Rickard's Character

"E" District Court Hearing I – Fines and Appeals 159

CIU Auckland Central Police, Constable J. Cassin requests delay (19 September 2002)
Application to Make a Voluntary Appearance to Change an Arrest Warrant (8 July 2003)
Oral Decision of Judge P Gittos at District Court Hearing (13 August 2003)
Request for Criminal Record stored at Wanganui Computer (15 August 2003)
Department For Courts confirms Wanganui Computer holds no criminal history (28 August 2003)
Notice of Appeal of Conviction to High Court (15 August 2003)
Department For Courts set fines payment schedule for $1,490.00 (15 August 2003)
Department For Courts Notice of Fines (15 August 2003 – set for 10 September 2003)
High Court Notice of Date of Hearing (17 November 2003 – not received until hearing on 5 Dec.)
High Court Notice of Application for Leave to Appeal (28 April 2004)

"F" Constable James Matewhinau Cassin's Criminal Record 187

Sally Duff for Clint Rickards, Officer in Charge, Commissioner's Support Group (25 Nov. 2003)
Police Privacy Officer Carolyn Richardson (19 December 2003), CC District Commander
High Court directive, Deputy Registrar B J Reid (30 April 2004)
Privacy Commission, Manager Investigations Phillipa Ballard, Wellington (17 February 2004)
Assistant Ombudsman Leo Donnelly (26 February 2004)
Ombudsman Anand Satyanand (23 March 2004–31 January 2006)
Office of the Ombudsman Administrative Officer P Trower (6 April 2004–27 January 2005)
Superintendent SS Wildon, Commissioner's Staff Office (29 April 2004)
Ministry of Justice Case Officer Liz Oliver (3 May 2004)
General Manager Police Human Resources Wayne Annan, Recruitment (10 May 2004)
Chief Ombudsman John Belgrave (16–23 December 2004)

“G” High Court Hearing 237
High Court Sabotage (18 November–10 December 2003)
Meredith Connell – Points (20 November 2003)
Meredith Connell – Memorandum of Submissions of Respondent (5 December 2003)
Justice J Keane – Judgement (5 December 2003)
Transport Land Safety Authority – Temporary Driver Licence (6 December 2003)
High Court Deputy Registrar G C Sulliman – Conviction Quashed (21 January 2004)
Deputy Registrar B J Reid – Status Hearing (29 January 2004)

“H” Fines Refund 251
Department of Corrections Remittance Advice – Book Purchase
Department for Courts Remittance Advice – Fines Refunded in Parts
District Court Removing Money Illegally 10 months After Police Lost Case
Department for Courts Remittance Advice – Fines Refunded in Parts
ANZ Dishonours Department of Corrections Cheque

“I” District Court Hearing II – Police Withdraw Charge 261
District Court Record Hearing Sheets

“J” Request for Compensation 277
Office of the Commissioner of Police Robert Robinson (31 October 2004)
Office of the Commissioner of Police, Legal Service Centre, I J McArthur (9 November 2004)
Office of the Commissioner of Police, Chief Legal Advisor, Dr A R Jack (25 November 2004)

“K” Rotary Club thank you 289
Rotary International, Rotary Club of Rarotonga thank you letter (22 August 2002)

“L” Letter to *Investigate magazine* 291
Letter to *Investigate magazine* (6 August 2003)

“M” Police Create Crime 299
Police Chases, ‘60 Minutes’, TV3, Transcript (19 April 2004)
Police Psychologists and Payouts
Intelligence Officer on Police Violence
Intelligence Officer on Police Undercovers
Intelligence Officer on PERF (Police Employment Rehabilitation Fund)
MICK P on Judicial Double-Dipping
How Rangi Chops his Firewood
Intelligence Officer on the SIS
Hallett on the CIA takeover of Auckland

“Institutional Bias” Are we not Dogs 299

Bibliography & Insex 317 & 327

Common Purpose

the Hijacking of Values towards a One World Order

On the Edge with Theo Chalmers, TPUC.org.uk, 1 February 2009
“Good evening, welcome to ‘On the Edge’ with me, Theo Chalmers. Tonights show is live . . . the extensive research on the growth and influence of a semi-secretive organisation called ‘Common Purpose’ with links at the highest levels to every town and city in the UK and its true, but secretive agenda, may be linked to a future common law government . . . speaking with campaigner and former Lieutenant Commander RN, Brian Gerrish, who will offer us some very startling revelations. What a show we’ve got tonight . . .”

> **Lieutenant Commander RN Brian Gerrish, Rt:** “I was in the Navy for 23 years and left in 1993 . . . I believed in Global Warming which I don’t now.”
>
> **Lt-Cdr RN Brian Gerrish Rt.** [22 minutes in]: “Common Purpose . . . they’re operating under the Chatham House rule. The Chatham House rule is a rule which came out of Chatam House which is the Tavistock Institute in London. You can have a meeting, but when you leave the meeting, you don’t say who was present, or who gave a particular piece of information, but you can use the information.”
>
> **Lt-Cdr RN Brian Gerrish Rt.** [45 minutes in]: “The reason you’re not hearing about it and we’re not hearing about it is because the Family Courts are closed. Now we’ve had a change in that it’s recently been stated the results of the Court hearings will be made known, but that is a smoke screen because the damage is being done inside the courts . . . they’re meeting in secret. Just suppose that the judge running a secret Family Court was himself a child abuser. Just suppose that was true. You’d have a very dangerous situation and I’m going to say the evidence coming in across the country is this is what is happening.”

Theo Chalmers: “Well I mean that is probably the most shocking revelation that we’ve had on this show.”

Lt-Cdr RN Rt. Brian Gerrish: “If you would like to run another programme and you would like people with the evidence and the experience, we will bring them to you.”

Theo Chalmers: “Well okay, that’s very interesting, and we’ll certainly consider that, and if Common Purpose want a right of reply, we’ll certainly give that to them.”

Lt-Cdr RN Rt. Brian Gerrish: “. . . if we know Common Purpose are having closed door meetings for which there are no minutes, this would facilitate inappropriate behaviour by people in social services.”

Theo Chalmers: “Okay, so it could be a separate thing and not connected to Common Purpose . . . I’m speechless really. Thank you very much to my special guest Brian Gerrish. If you’ve enjoyed this show, please tell all your friends. Next week we’ll be back with another exciting show that may well change the direction of your life. In the meantime remember, they’re watching you watching us watching them.”

"Just suppose that the judge running a secret Family Court was himself a child abuser . . . very dangerous . . . the evidence is this is what is happening."

"If we know Common Purpose are having closed door meetings for which there are no minutes, this would facilitate inappropriate behaviour by people in social services."

Lt-Commander RN Brian Gerrish, Rt.

JURY SUMMONS DURING PAW HEARINGS

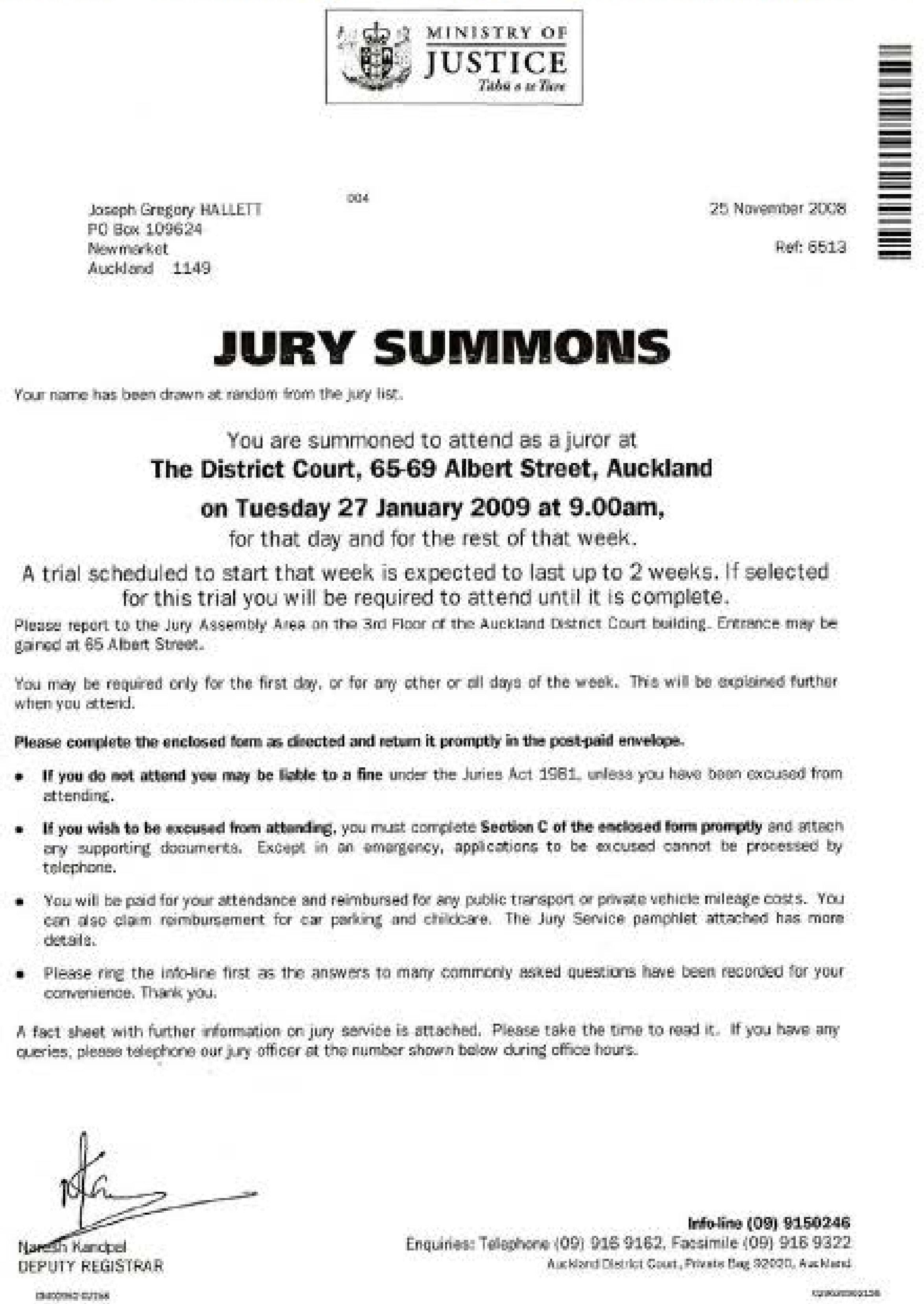

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

Joseph Gregory HALLETT
PO Box 109624
Newmarket
Auckland 1149

004

25 November 2008

Ref: 6513

JURY SUMMONS

Your name has been drawn at random from the jury list.

You are summoned to attend as a juror at
The District Court, 65-69 Albert Street, Auckland
on Tuesday 27 January 2009 at 9.00am,
for that day and for the rest of that week.

A trial scheduled to start that week is expected to last up to 2 weeks. If selected for this trial you will be required to attend until it is complete.

Please report to the Jury Assembly Area on the 3rd Floor of the Auckland District Court building. Entrance may be gained at 65 Albert Street.

You may be required only for the first day, or for any other or all days of the week. This will be explained further when you attend.

Please complete the enclosed form as directed and return it promptly in the post-paid envelope.

- **If you do not attend you may be liable to a fine** under the Juries Act 1981, unless you have been excused from attending.
- **If you wish to be excused from attending,** you must complete **Section C of the enclosed form promptly** and attach any supporting documents. Except in an emergency, applications to be excused cannot be processed by telephone.
- You will be paid for your attendance and reimbursed for any public transport or private vehicle mileage costs. You can also claim reimbursement for car parking and childcare. The Jury Service pamphlet attached has more details.
- Please ring the info-line first as the answers to many commonly asked questions have been recorded for your convenience. Thank you.

A fact sheet with further information on jury service is attached. Please take the time to read it. If you have any queries, please telephone our jury officer at the number shown below during office hours.

Naresh Kandpel
DEPUTY REGISTRAR

Info-line (09) 9150246
Enquiries: Telephone (09) 916 9162, Facsimile (09) 916 9322
Auckland District Court, Private Bag 92020, Auckland

You are qualified to, and must (unless excused) serve as a juror if:

- You are currently enrolled as an elector in New Zealand; and
- You live within 30km of the court (by the most practicable route).

You are not qualified to serve as a juror if:

- You have been sentenced to imprisonment for 3 years or more or Preventive Detention at any time; or
- You have been sentenced to imprisonment for 3 months or more, or to corrective training, in the last 5 years.

You cannot serve as a juror if you are at present:

- A member of the Executive Council of New Zealand;
- A Member of the House of Representatives;
- A High Court or District Court Judge, a Judge or Commissioner of the Maori Land Court, a Judge of the Employment Court or a Master of the High Court or a Community Magistrate;
- A Visiting Justice (under the Penal Institutions Act 1954), or a member of the Parole Board;
- A Justice of the Peace who has agreed to make themselves available from time to time to exercise the summary jurisdiction of the District Courts;
- A barrister or solicitor holding a current practising certificate under the Law Practitioners Act 1982;
- A member of the Police; or Traffic Officer;
- An employee of the Public Service who is employed in the Ministry of Justice, in the Department of Corrections or as an officer of the High Court or of a District Court;
- A party to a security contract entered into under section 166 of the Corrections Act 2004;
- An officer within the meaning of section 14 of the Corrections Act 2004; or
- A security officer within the meaning of section 18 of the Corrections Act 2004;
- Persons with a mental disorder under the Mental Health (Compulsory Assessment and Treatment) Act 1992;
- Persons with an intellectual disability under the Intellectual Disability (Compulsory Care and Rehabilitation) Act 2003.

You may apply to the Registrar, in writing, to be excused from jury service on this occasion if:

- You are not qualified or cannot serve at present, for any reason listed above;
- You are aged 65 or over and do not wish to serve;
- Your attendance on this occasion would cause undue hardship or serious inconvenience to you, to some other person, or to the general public, because of:

(a) the nature of your occupation or business, or any special and pressing commitment arising in the course of your occupation or business; or

(b) your state of health, a physical disability, family commitments or other personal circumstances;

- You are a practising member of a religious sect or order whose beliefs are opposed to service as a juror;
- You have already served, or attended for service, as a juror within the last 2 years; or
- You have been excused from jury service for a period not yet ended.

NB: All applications to be excused should be in writing.

Please use the enclosed Response Form when replying to this summons.

You will be told whether any application you make to be excused has been granted or declined. Even if you are excused from jury service on this occasion, you may be randomly selected and receive another summons in the future.

LOCATION MAP

The map opposite shows the location of the Court you have been summoned to attend for jury service

The Court address is:

The District Court
65-69 Albert Street
Auckland

Info-line (09) 9150246
Enquiries: (09) 916 9162

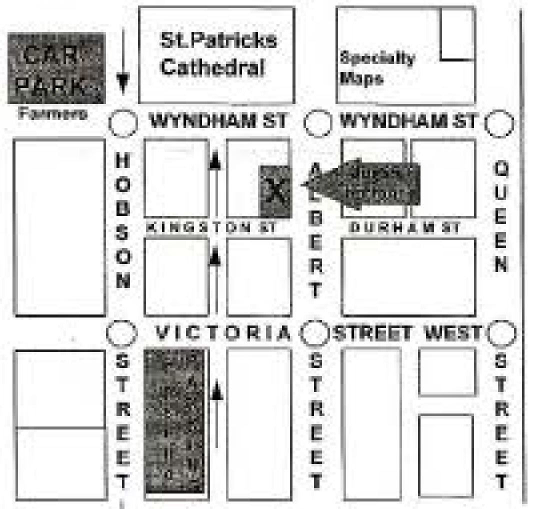

Auckland District Court
Jurors use entrance at 65 Albert Street
Proceed to 3rd floor - Jury Assembly Area

RESPONSE FORM

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

Auckland District Court
Private Bag 92020
Auckland

27/01

6513

Please ensure the address above shows in the return envelope window

Please read the enclosed information. You may use this form, and the enclosed postage paid envelope, to reply to this summons.

To do so you must:

1. Complete section A "Contact Details" and;
2. Complete **either** section B "Confirmation of Attendance", **or** section C "Application to be Excused".

FOLD

Information in sections A and B is collected to ensure we have accurate contact details for you. The information will be used to forward your jury payment or to contact you regarding your jury service. Provision of this information is voluntary, but failure to provide the information may mean that we are unable to forward your payment or to notify you of any changes to your jury service.

If you are not excused from jury service your name, address and occupation will be provided to the parties to any proceedings due for hearing in the week of your attendance or their lawyers under the provisions of section 14 of the Juries Act 1981.

You have a right to access and correct any information held in retrievable form by the Ministry of Justice. In particular please contact us and change any contact details that change before you have received your payment.

Section A: CONTACT DETAILS

If any of the current details below are incomplete or incorrect, please print the correct details in the space provided.

CURRENT DETAILS	NEW DETAILS
Family Name: HALLETT	
First Name(s): Joseph Gregory	
Address: PO Box 109624 Newmarket Auckland 1149	
Please enter your home telephone number:	
Please enter your work telephone number:	

FOLD

Section B:CONFIRMATION OF ATTENDANCE

I confirm that I will attend for jury service for the week commencing 27 January 2009.

Your Signature : ______________________________

For each day you attend you will be paid travelling expenses to and from the court, for either the cost of public transport or a mileage allowance if you travel by private vehicle. If the Registrar is satisfied that there is no reasonable convenient access to public transport or to a private vehicle, you will be reimbursed on production of the receipt for the amount of the cost of travelling by taxi. Please complete the information over the page on travel to and from court to assist the court with reimbursement for you.

Please turn over

OFFICE USE ONLY Declined ☐ On hold ☐ Excused ☐ If excused, excusal code: Registrar Entered ☐

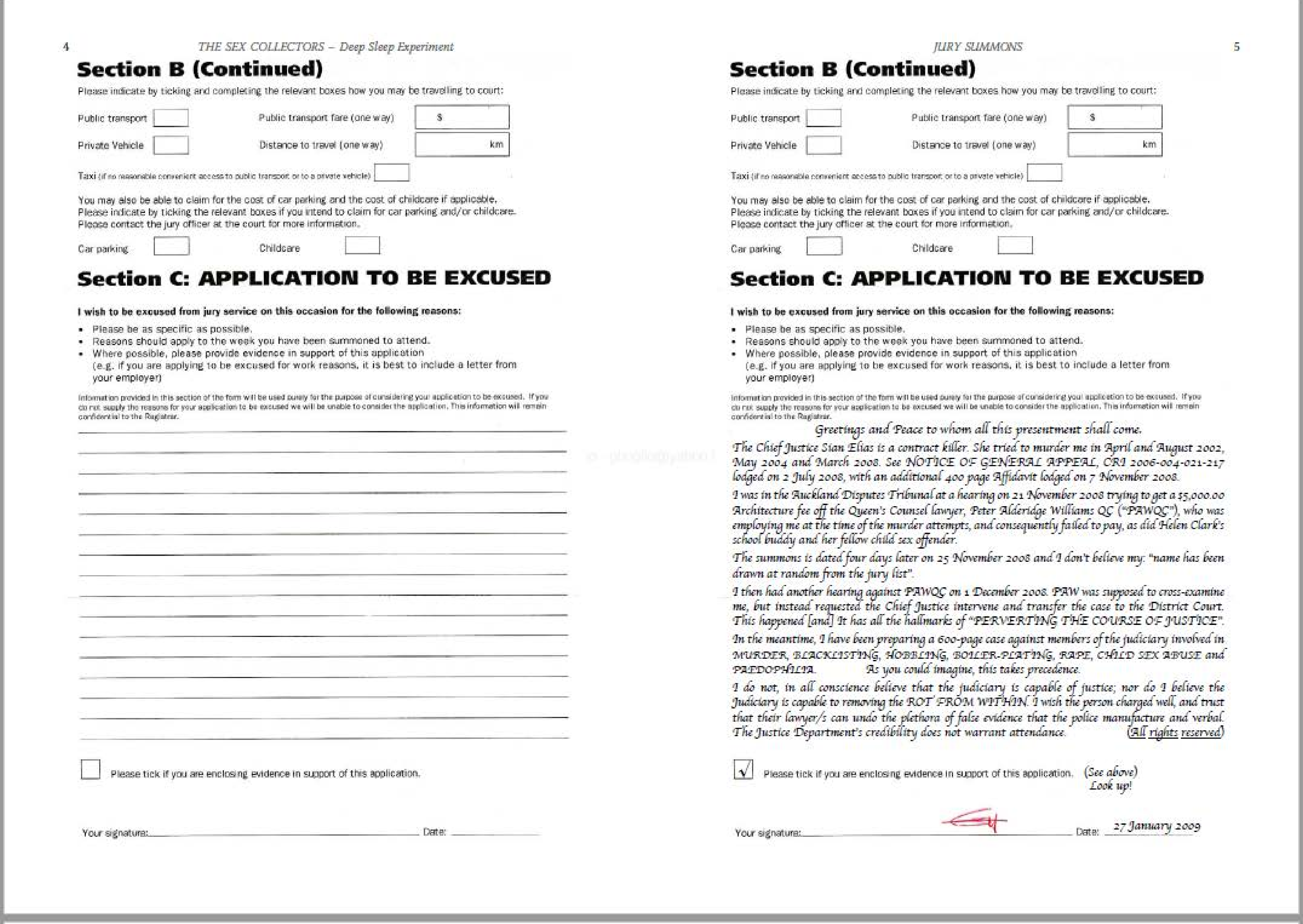

Section B (Continued)

Please indicate by ticking and completing the relevant boxes how you may be travelling to court:

Public transport ☐ Public transport fare (one way) $

Private Vehicle ☐ Distance to travel (one way) km

Taxi (if no reasonable convenient access to public transport or to a private vehicle) ☐

You may also be able to claim for the cost of car parking and the cost of childcare if applicable.
Please indicate by ticking the relevant boxes if you intend to claim for car parking and/or childcare.
Please contact the jury officer at the court for more information.

Car parking ☐ Childcare ☐

Section C: APPLICATION TO BE EXCUSED

I wish to be excused from jury service on this occasion for the following reasons:

- Please be as specific as possible.
- Reasons should apply to the week you have been summoned to attend.
- Where possible, please provide evidence in support of this application (e.g. if you are applying to be excused for work reasons, it is best to include a letter from your employer)

Information provided in this section of the form will be used purely for the purpose of considering your application to be excused. If you do not supply the reasons for your application to be excused we will be unable to consider the application. This information will remain confidential to the Registrar.

☐ Please tick if you are enclosing evidence in support of this application.

Your signature:____________ Date: ________

Section B (Continued)

Please indicate by ticking and completing the relevant boxes how you may be travelling to court:

Public transport ☐ Public transport fare (one way) $

Private Vehicle ☐ Distance to travel (one way) km

Taxi (if no reasonable convenient access to public transport or to a private vehicle) ☐

You may also be able to claim for the cost of car parking and the cost of childcare if applicable.
Please indicate by ticking the relevant boxes if you intend to claim for car parking and/or childcare.
Please contact the jury officer at the court for more information.

Car parking ☐ Childcare ☐

Section C: APPLICATION TO BE EXCUSED

I wish to be excused from jury service on this occasion for the following reasons:

- Please be as specific as possible.
- Reasons should apply to the week you have been summoned to attend.
- Where possible, please provide evidence in support of this application (e.g. if you are applying to be excused for work reasons, it is best to include a letter from your employer)

Information provided in this section of the form will be used purely for the purpose of considering your application to be excused. If you do not supply the reasons for your application to be excused we will be unable to consider the application. This information will remain confidential to the Registrar.

Greetings and Peace to whom all this presentment shall come.

The Chief Justice Sian Elias is a contract killer. She tried to murder me in April and August 2002, May 2004 and March 2008. See NOTICE OF GENERAL APPEAL, CRI 2006-004-021-217 lodged on 2 July 2008, with an additional 400 page Affidavit lodged on 7 November 2008.

I was in the Auckland Disputes Tribunal at a hearing on 21 November 2008 trying to get a $5,000.00 Architecture fee off the Queen's Counsel lawyer, Peter Alderidge Williams QC ("PAWQC"), who was employing me at the time of the murder attempts, and consequently failed to pay, as did Helen Clark's school buddy and her fellow child sex offender.

The summons is dated four days later on 25 November 2008 and I don't believe my: "name has been drawn at random from the jury list".

I then had another hearing against PAWQC on 1 December 2008. PAW was supposed to cross-examine me, but instead requested the Chief Justice intervene and transfer the case to the District Court. This happened [and] It has all the hallmarks of "PERVERTING THE COURSE OF JUSTICE".

In the meantime, I have been preparing a 600-page case against members of the judiciary involved in MURDER, BLACKLISTING, HOBBLING, BOILER-PLATING, RAPE, CHILD SEX ABUSE and PAEDOPHILIA. As you could imagine, this takes precedence.

I do not, in all conscience believe that the judiciary is capable of justice; nor do I believe the Judiciary is capable to removing the ROT FROM WITHIN. I wish the person charged well, and trust that their lawyer/s can undo the plethora of false evidence that the police manufacture and verbal. The Justice Department's credibility does not warrant attendance. (All rights reserved)

☑ Please tick if you are enclosing evidence in support of this application. (See above)
Look up!

Your signature:____________ Date: 27 January 2009

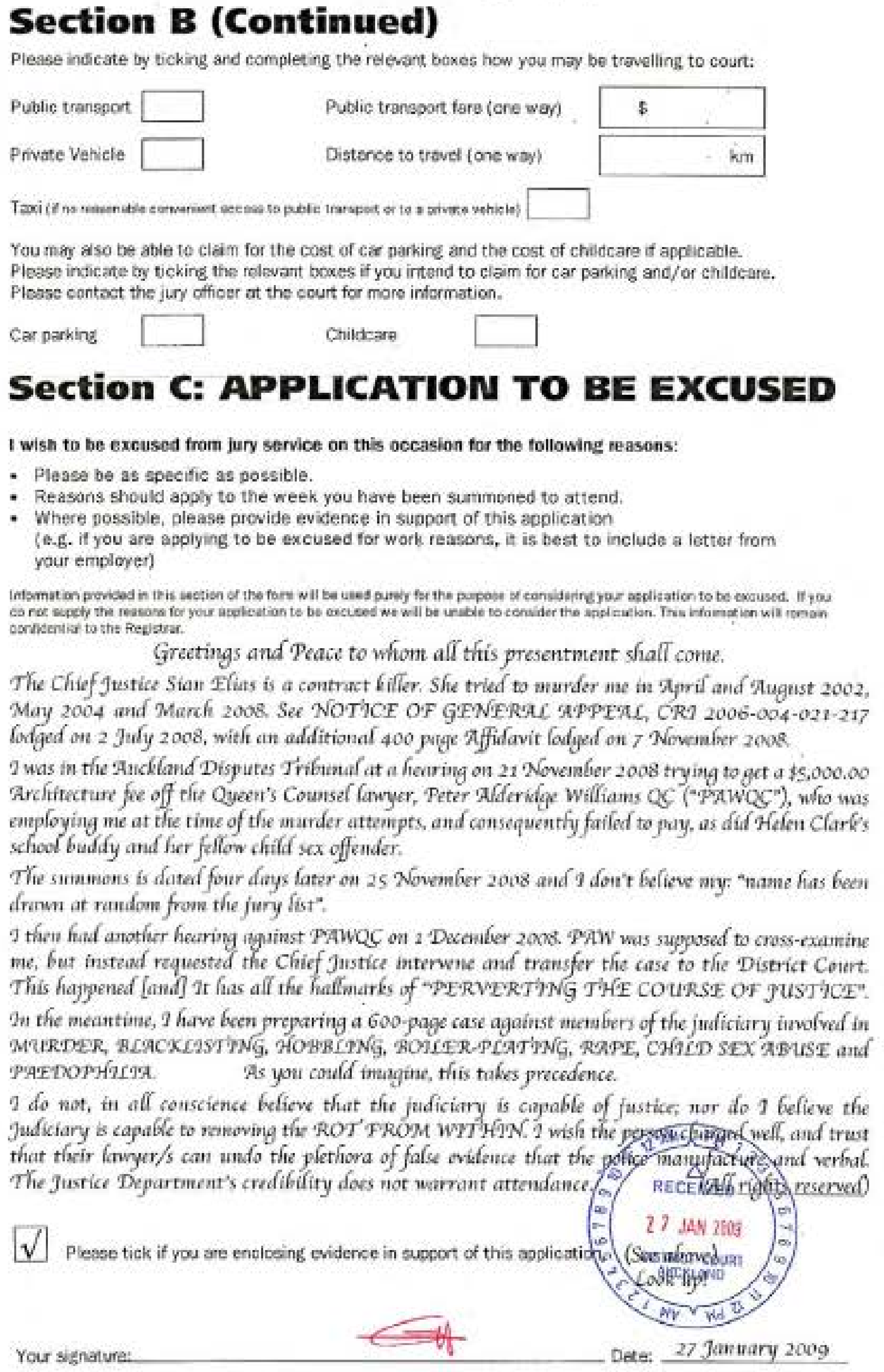

Section B (Continued)

Please indicate by ticking and completing the relevant boxes how you may be travelling to court:

Public transport ☐ Public transport fare (one way) $

Private Vehicle ☐ Distance to travel (one way) km

Taxi (if no reasonable convenient access to public transport or to a private vehicle) ☐

You may also be able to claim for the cost of car parking and the cost of childcare if applicable.
Please indicate by ticking the relevant boxes if you intend to claim for car parking and/or childcare.
Please contact the jury officer at the court for more information.

Car parking ☐ Childcare ☐

Section C: APPLICATION TO BE EXCUSED

I wish to be excused from jury service on this occasion for the following reasons:

- Please be as specific as possible.
- Reasons should apply to the week you have been summoned to attend.
- Where possible, please provide evidence in support of this application (e.g. if you are applying to be excused for work reasons, it is best to include a letter from your employer)

Information provided in this section of the form will be used purely for the purpose of considering your application to be excused. If you do not supply the reasons for your application to be excused we will be unable to consider the application. This information will remain confidential to the Registrar.

Greetings and Peace to whom all this presentment shall come.

The Chief Justice Sian Elias is a contract killer. She tried to murder me in April and August 2002, May 2004 and March 2008. See NOTICE OF GENERAL APPEAL, CRI 2006-004-021-217 lodged on 2 July 2008, with an additional 400 page Affidavit lodged on 7 November 2008.

I was in the Auckland Disputes Tribunal at a hearing on 21 November 2008 trying to get a $5,000.00 Architecture fee off the Queen's Counsel lawyer, Peter Alderidge Williams QC ("PAWQC"), who was employing me at the time of the murder attempts, and consequently failed to pay, as did Helen Clark's school buddy and her fellow child sex offender.

The summons is dated four days later on 25 November 2008 and I don't believe my: "name has been drawn at random from the jury list".

I then had another hearing against PAWQC on 2 December 2008. PAW was supposed to cross-examine me, but instead requested the Chief Justice intervene and transfer the case to the District Court. This happened [and] It has all the hallmarks of "PERVERTING THE COURSE OF JUSTICE".

In the meantime, I have been preparing a 600-page case against members of the judiciary involved in MURDER, BLACKLISTING, HOBBLING, BOILER-PLATING, RAPE, CHILD SEX ABUSE and PAEDOPHILIA. As you could imagine, this takes precedence.

I do not, in all conscience believe that the judiciary is capable of justice; nor do I believe the Judiciary is capable to removing the ROT FROM WITHIN. I wish the person charged well, and trust that their lawyer/s can undo the plethora of false evidence that the police manufacture and verbal. The Justice Department's credibility does not warrant attendance. (All rights reserved)

RECEIVED
27 JAN 2009
DISTRICT COURT
AUCKLAND

☑ Please tick if you are enclosing evidence in support of this application. *(See above) Look up!*

Your signature: Date: *27 January 2009*

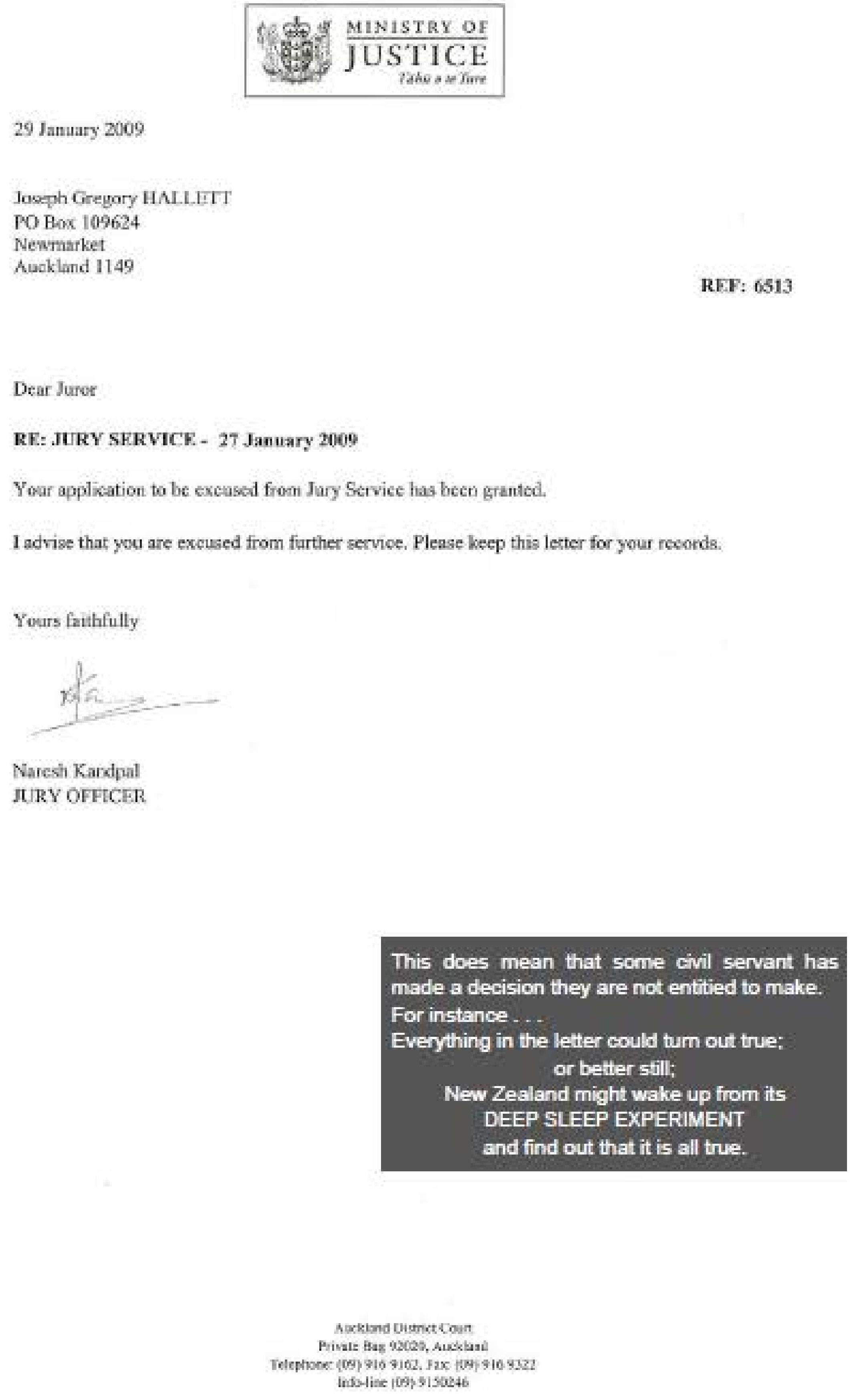

MINISTRY OF
JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

29 January 2009

Joseph Gregory HALLETT
PO Box 109624
Newmarket
Auckland 1149

REF: 6513

Dear Juror

RE: JURY SERVICE - 27 January 2009

Your application to be excused from Jury Service has been granted.

I advise that you are excused from further service. Please keep this letter for your records.

Yours faithfully

Naresh Kandpal
JURY OFFICER

This does mean that some civil servant has made a decision they are not entitled to make.
For instance . . .
Everything in the letter could turn out true;
or better still;
New Zealand might wake up from its
DEEP SLEEP EXPERIMENT
and find out that it is all true.

Auckland District Court
Private Bag 92020, Auckland
Telephone: (09) 916 9102, Fax: (09) 916 9322
Info-line (09) 9150246

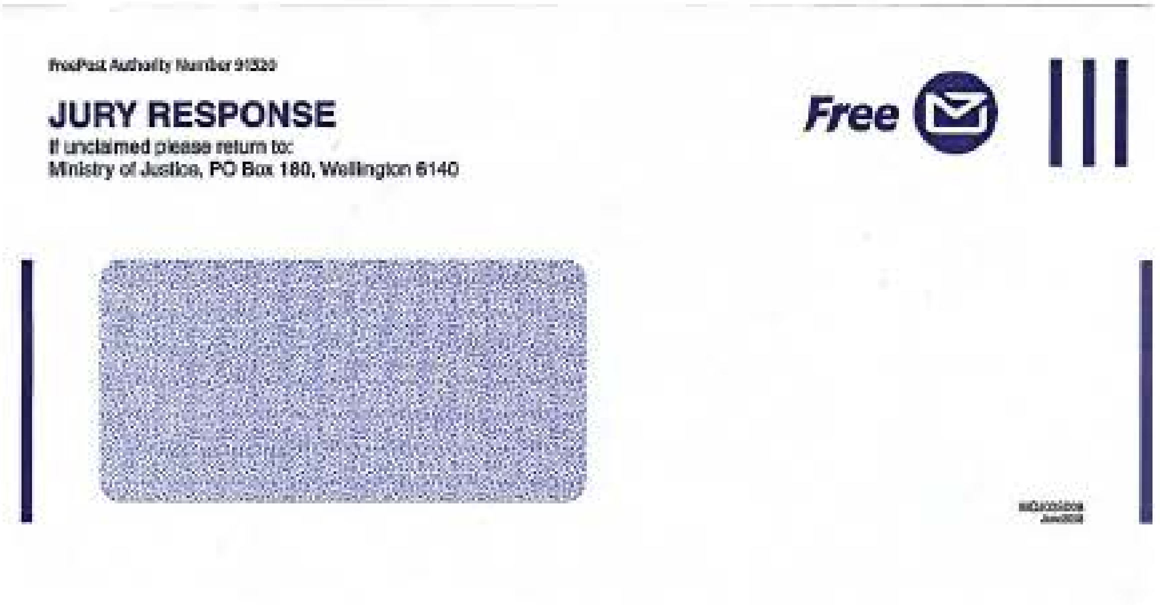

FreePost Authority Number 91520

JURY RESPONSE

If unclaimed please return to:
Ministry of Justice, PO Box 180, Wellington 6140

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

NZM
Postage included

IN THE HIGH COURT OF NEW ZEALAND
AUCKLAND REGISTRY

No. CRI-2006-004-021217 (Meredith Connell, Centreline)
No. CRI-2006-404-00192 (Meredith Connell, Centreline)
No CRI-2008-004-013851 (Simpson Grierson, Parking Parnell Rd, Bus Lane)
No CRI-2008-404-379 (Simpson Grierson, Parking Parnell Rd, Bus Lane)
No. CRI-2008-404-380 (Simpson Grierson, Parking Parnell Rd, Bus Lane)
and any other CCN, CRN, CRI or other prefix

UNDER **Section 78B of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957**

and **The Declaration of Helsinki et cetera**

BETWEEN JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
Plaintiff

AND NEW ZEALAND POLICE
Defendant

AND AUCKLAND CITY COUNCIL
Defendant

AND DISTRICT COURT OF AUCKLAND
Defendant

AND Any other matters relating to the Plaintiff,
now, in the past, or in the future

AND Any and all challengers and all comers

AFFIDAVIT
DATED 20 APRIL 2009

This Affidavit is filed by Joseph-Gregory: (Hallett)
whose address for service is 26 Lichfield Road, Parnell, Auckland

Telephone (09) 307 5880 Email: too@slingshot.co.nz

With reference to the Bailiff's request, Reference No. PPN1429601165, to Joseph Hallett, to lodge by end of Monday 16 June 2008, and by phone with permission from Central Auckland District Court Bailiff Ross Rudolph to lodge by midday Tuesday 17 June 2008;
and MINISTRY OF JUSTICE replys dated 23 June 2008:

Concerning the matters addressed to various address, names and ages, many of which were incorrect causing extreme delays, regarding, principally Joseph Gregory Hallett, by way of profiled intention:

CCN 1514763289, CRN 02004063795, Dated 23/08/2002, FAILED TO REMAIN STOPPED FOR AN ENFO, Fine Imposed 13/08/2003, $380, Fine Cancelled 14/08/2004, Status: $380.00 Credited back; [Because Constable James Matewhinau Cassin was shown to be a convicted criminal involved in attempted murder]

CCN 1514763290, CRN 02004063795, Dated 23/08/2002, FAILED TO REMAIN STOPPED FOR AN ENFO, Fine Imposed 13/08/2003, $380, Fine Cancelled 20/01/2004, Status: $380.00 Credited back; [Because Constable James Matewhinau Cassin was shown to be a convicted criminal involved in attempted murder]

CCN 1514763291, CRN 02004063796, Dated 23/08/2002, DROVE A MOTOR VEHICLE IN A DANGEROUS, Fine Imposed 13/08/2003, $930, Fine Cancelled 20/01/2004, Status: $930.00 Credited back; [Because Constable James Matewhinau Cassin was shown to be a convicted criminal involved in attempted murder]

CCN 1513999287, CRN 02004078568, Dated 23/08/2002, Failed To Comply With A Traffic Sign, Date Imposed 11/11/2002, $180, Status: Satisfied. Reparation Remaining $0.00, Current Balance $0.00; [Refund of $180 due as Constable Cassin removed the Traffic Sign for the duration of the hit]

CCN1518908066, CRN06004140594, 15/09/2006[birthday harrassment], Drive In Lane Over Center Lne 2 Way, Date Imposed 23/03/2007, Total Amount Imposed $280, Under Enforcement;
[While working on *Hitler Was A British Agent, 2nd Ed., 1 Oct. 2006*] (Meredith Connell, Centre Line)

CCN 1519600559, CRN 07004400778, 04/08/2007, Fail display pay and disp recpt - Auck, Date Imposed 23/10/2007, Total Amount Imposed $170, Under Enforcement;
[While working on *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide*] (Simpson Grierson, Parking Parnell Rd)

CCN 1519690338, CRN 07004918708, 08/08/2007, Drove A Vehicle Along A Bus Lane, Date Imposed 19/11/2007, Total Amount Imposed $280, Under Enforcement;
[While working on *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide*] (Simpson Grierson, Bus Lane)

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE reply to **CRN 06004140594, CRN 02004078568, CRI-2006-004-021217, CRI-2006-404-00192** dated 23 June 2008, received 26 June 2008: "After due consideration, your application to correct an irregularity under Section 78B of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 has been declined. The grounds were not sufficient for your application to be granted."
(Meredith Connell, Centre Line)

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE reply to **CRN 07004400778, CRN 07004918708, CRI-2008-004-013851**, dated 23 June 2008, received 26 June 2008: "After due consideration, your application to correct an irregularity under Section 78B of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 has been declined. The grounds were not sufficient for your application to be granted."
(Simpson Grierson, Parking Parnell Rd, Bus Lane)

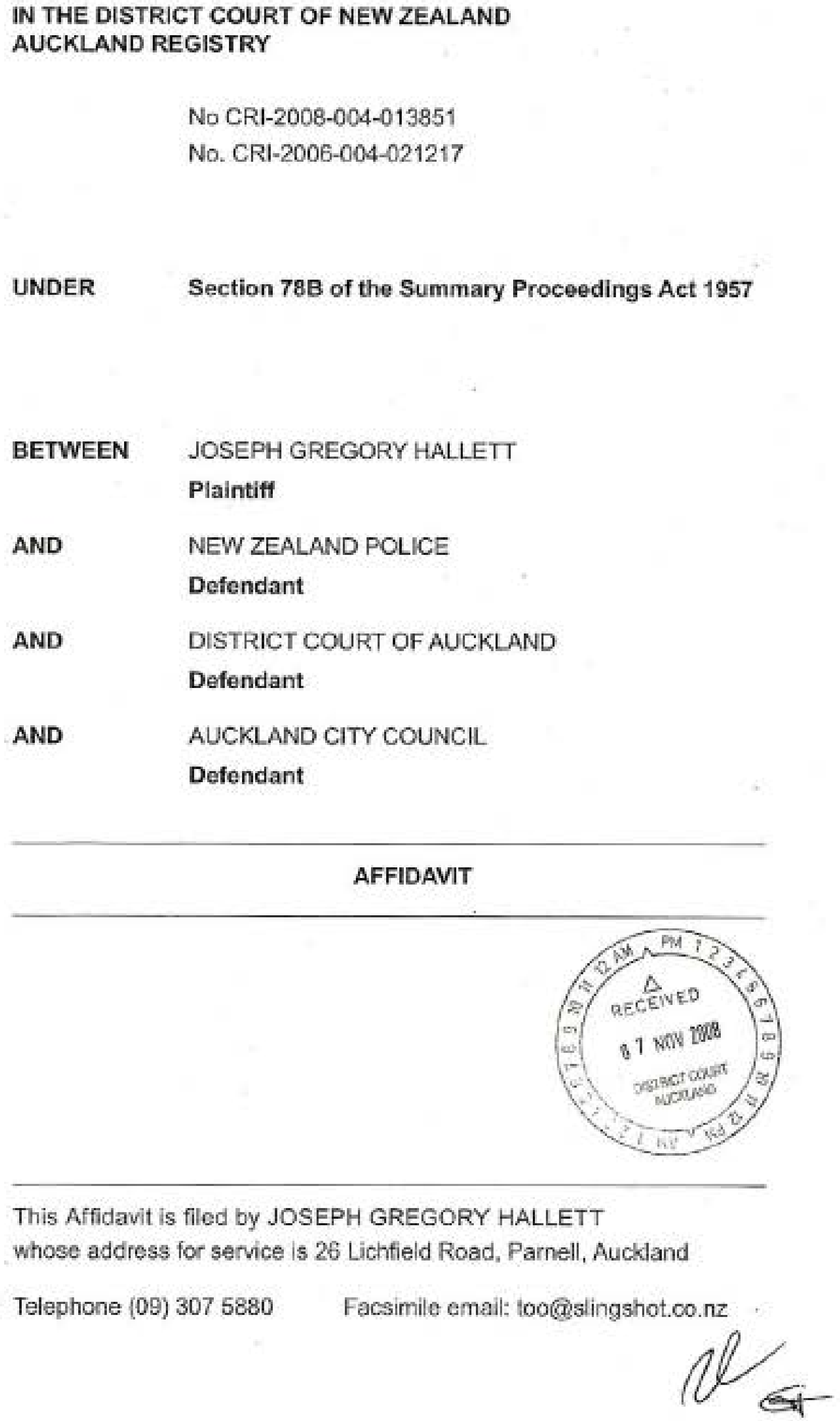

IN THE DISTRICT COURT OF NEW ZEALAND
AUCKLAND REGISTRY

No CRI-2008-004-013851
No. CRI-2006-004-021217

UNDER **Section 78B of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957**

BETWEEN JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
Plaintiff

AND NEW ZEALAND POLICE
Defendant

AND DISTRICT COURT OF AUCKLAND
Defendant

AND AUCKLAND CITY COUNCIL
Defendant

AFFIDAVIT

RECEIVED
07 NOV 2008
DISTRICT COURT
AUCKLAND

This Affidavit is filed by JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
whose address for service is 26 Lichfield Road, Parnell, Auckland

Telephone (09) 307 5880 Facsimile email: too@slingshot.co.nz

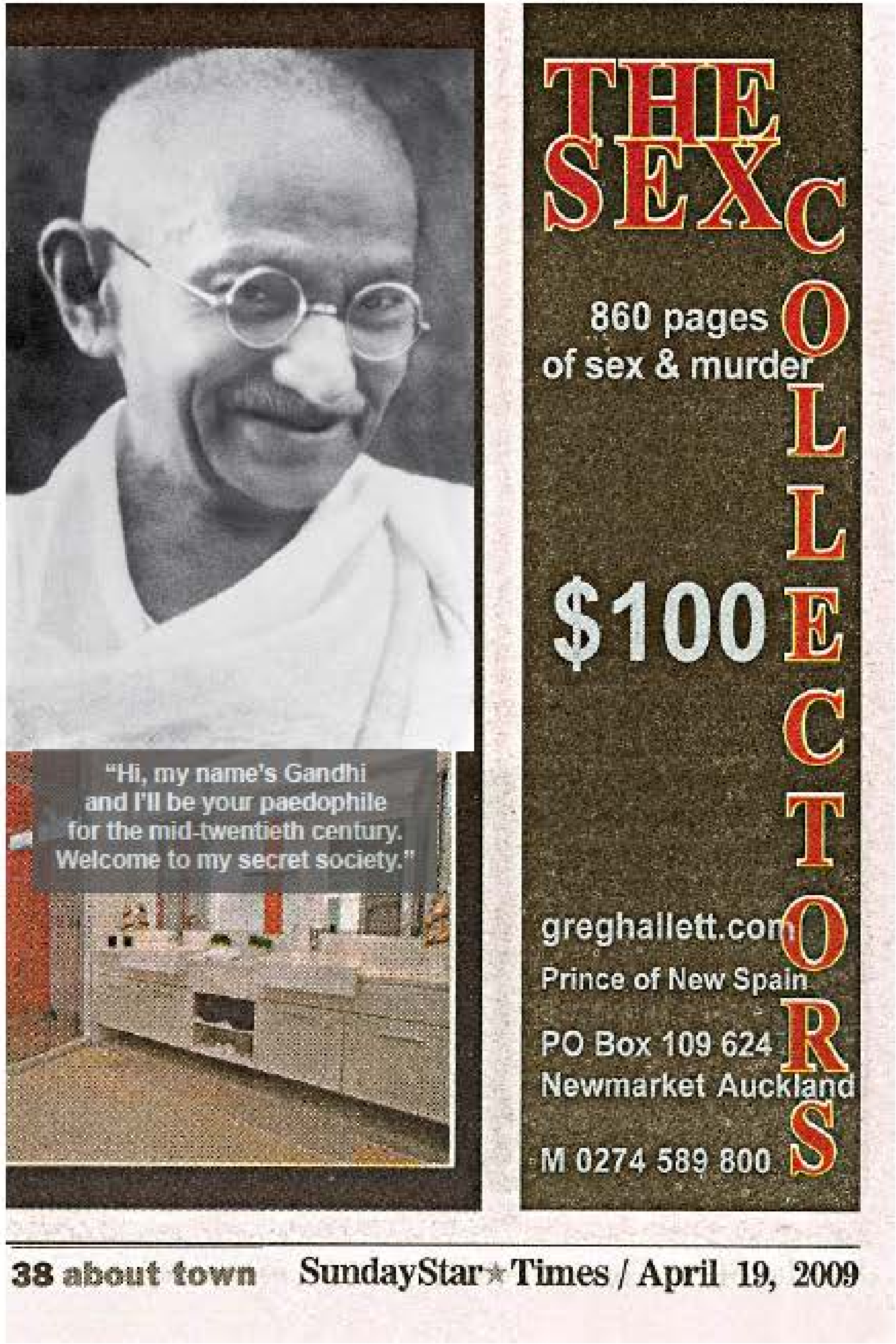

“Hi, my name’s Gandhi
and I’ll be your paedophile
for the mid-twentieth century.
Welcome to my secret society.”

THE SEX COLLECTORS

860 pages
of sex & murder

$100

greghallett.com
Prince of New Spain

PO Box 109 624
Newmarket Auckland

M 0274 589 800

38 about town SundayStar★Times / April 19, 2009

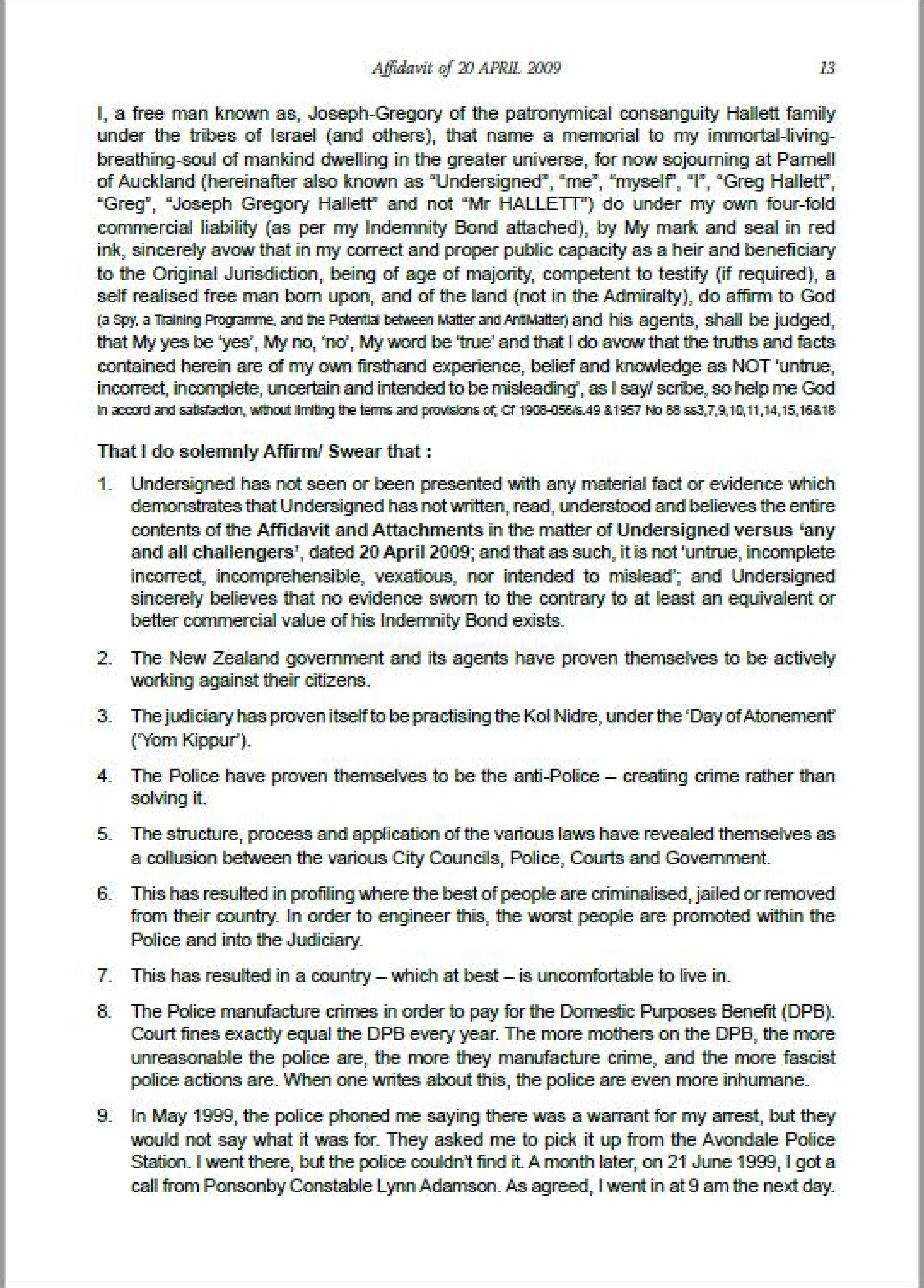

I, a free man known as, Joseph-Gregory of the patronymical consanguity Hallett family under the tribes of Israel (and others), that name a memorial to my immortal-living-breathing-soul of mankind dwelling in the greater universe, for now sojourning at Parnell of Auckland (hereinafter also known as "Undersigned", "me", "myself", "I", "Greg Hallett", "Greg", "Joseph Gregory Hallett" and not "Mr HALLETT") do under my own four-fold commercial liability (as per my Indemnity Bond attached), by My mark and seal in red ink, sincerely avow that in my correct and proper public capacity as a heir and beneficiary to the Original Jurisdiction, being of age of majority, competent to testify (if required), a self realised free man born upon, and of the land (not in the Admiralty), do affirm to God (a Spy, a Training Programme, and the Potential between Matter and AntiMatter) and his agents, shall be judged, that My yes be 'yes', My no, 'no', My word be 'true' and that I do avow that the truths and facts contained herein are of my own firsthand experience, belief and knowledge as NOT 'untrue, incorrect, incomplete, uncertain and intended to be misleading', as I say/ scribe, so help me God In accord and satisfaction, without limiting the terms and provisions of; Cf 1908-056/s.49 &1957 No 88 ss3,7,9,10,11,14,15,16&18

That I do solemnly Affirm/ Swear that :

1. Undersigned has not seen or been presented with any material fact or evidence which demonstrates that Undersigned has not written, read, understood and believes the entire contents of the **Affidavit and Attachments** in the matter of **Undersigned versus 'any and all challengers'**, dated **20 April 2009**; and that as such, it is not 'untrue, incomplete incorrect, incomprehensible, vexatious, nor intended to mislead'; and Undersigned sincerely believes that no evidence sworn to the contrary to at least an equivalent or better commercial value of his Indemnity Bond exists.

2. The New Zealand government and its agents have proven themselves to be actively working against their citizens.

3. The judiciary has proven itself to be practising the Kol Nidre, under the 'Day of Atonement' ('Yom Kippur').

4. The Police have proven themselves to be the anti-Police – creating crime rather than solving it.

5. The structure, process and application of the various laws have revealed themselves as a collusion between the various City Councils, Police, Courts and Government.

6. This has resulted in profiling where the best of people are criminalised, jailed or removed from their country. In order to engineer this, the worst people are promoted within the Police and into the Judiciary.

7. This has resulted in a country – which at best – is uncomfortable to live in.

8. The Police manufacture crimes in order to pay for the Domestic Purposes Benefit (DPB). Court fines exactly equal the DPB every year. The more mothers on the DPB, the more unreasonable the police are, the more they manufacture crime, and the more fascist police actions are. When one writes about this, the police are even more inhumane.

9. In May 1999, the police phoned me saying there was a warrant for my arrest, but they would not say what it was for. They asked me to pick it up from the Avondale Police Station. I went there, but the police couldn't find it. A month later, on 21 June 1999, I got a call from Ponsonby Constable Lynn Adamson. As agreed, I went in at 9 am the next day.

10. Constable Lynn Adamson would not tell me what the arrest warrant was for. She then took me into the Central Police Station where I was stripped of my wallet, credit and bank cards, keys, cheque book, pen, glasses, bag with paperwork, mobile phone, belt, and shoelaces. I was then placed in the Auckland Central basement police cells at 10.15 am. I still had not been told what I was under arrest for.
11. At 11.45 am I was handcuffed and transferred to the Auckland District Court cells. I was squeezed in the back seat of the police Falcon between Superintendent Clint Rickards (who was officially the district manager working of the Waikato Police 100 km away) and another officer of the same size. There wasn't enough room and they squeezed into me the whole journey and did their best to depersonalise me by joking amongst themselves: "So what's it like in the Waikato? . . . Who's down there now?"
12. I was placed in an Auckland District Court cell with another, then transferred three cells down to an empty cell. I was then joined by the vice president of the Papakura chapter of Black Power. He was schizophrenic and specialised in boxing. I believe this was arranged by the former Mongrel Mob gang member Superintendent Clint Rickards.
13. I believe Rickards plan was to have me beaten up, without the police doing it.
14. Fortunately, I was saved by a ham sandwich. Superintendent Clint Rickards failed to take into account that I only ate fish. I gave the ham sandwich to the 2IC of Black Power and that kept him busy. The rest of the time I asked him how the writing got on the walls. He explained how you stick the inside of a pen up your arse, pull it out in the cell, squeeze the ink on your finger, then write on the walls.
15. He was clearly schizophrenic, so I kept asking him the same question over and over again. After he had told the story, he would say, "Who are you?" and I would ask him how the writing got on the wall . . . certainly filled in the time.
16. At the latest possible time I was arraigned before an Auckland District Court judge, at 4.15 pm. I didn't understand the charge. The police produced no evidence. The judge pointed out that the police produced no evidence, and queried what the charge meant. (**See Attachment "D"**, 'False Arrest on 22 June 1999'.)
17. I was set free.
18. I was not driven or escorted back to the Auckland Central Police Station. I had to walk without shoelaces, money, bank cards, or phone. When I picked up my gear off Mr A. Dunhill. No time was given.
19. The entire day was an exercise in intimidation. It was carried out by Superintendent Clint Rickards and Constable Lynn Adamson (LAF467).
20. Clint Rickards was later promoted to Auckland City District Commander and Assistant Police Commissioner and Lynn Adamson was promoted to Detective Sergeant, one of only one or two female Detective Sergeants per section.
21. It seems that the police who attack from orders on high, are promoted without resistance, or as we like to say, "promoted faster than a NATO paedophile".
22. I was going through a custody battle at the time.
23. This was intimidation to give up.
24. I won custody in August 2002. It took 8½ years. During that time I had around 20 false police charges laid. These have continued and are now around 28 false police charges plus various manufactured traffic tickets.

25. The primary requirement of a paedophile is that the biological father is removed.
26. It would appear that the police are a paedophile and crime creation movement.
27. Auckland City District Commander/ Assistant Police Commissioner Clint Rickards and Detective Sergeant Lynn Adamson attacked me on 22 June 1999 in a manufactured crime created by police paperwork. As a result, I was placed in three police cells for a day. All of this was unwarranted. I seek compensation.
28. The information in the following Attachments (previously called 'Exhibits') was sent to the "Police Infringements Bureau in Wellington", as well as other complaints authorities beween 28 August 2003 and 31 January 2005. The Ombudsman Anand Satyanand delayed, delayed and delayed – his process to sidestep any complaints – and finally came up with the bureaucratic excuse that there was not enough public interest – that the privacy interests outweighed the public interest . . . thus earning himself the position of "Governor-General" and the mantle – 'complicity to murder and attempted murder'.
29. Is it not clear that Anand Satyanand was complicit to attempted murder, and the reason he was promoted?
30. After signing away my complaints into bureaucratic oblivion, the Prime Minister Helen Clark nominated Ombudsman Anand Satyanand as Governor-General. Queen Elizabeth II then announced it. (**See Attachment "Q"**, 'Annotated Cabinet')
31. I gave a speech to Rotary in the Cook Islands on 21 August 2002 at Hopsing's Restaurant. I spoke from 6.15 pm to around 8.15 pm. Normal speaking time is 20 minutes. In the last half hour, members of the audience took the podium and added their bits. For the most part you could have heard a pin drop. (**See Attachment "K"**, 'Rotary Club thank you')
32. I then sold several of my books to the audience and gave one to the police.
33. The book was called '*Are You My Father? The Family Court and Other Experiments*'. It was published on **12 May 2002** on Mother's Day and further exposed Helen Clark as KGB, and running New Zealand as a paedophile movement fronting as a country.
34. During the 21 August 2002 Rotary speech I revealed that the New Zealand Prime Minister Helen Clark is a KGB agent.
35. A member of Australian Naval Intelligence came up to me at the bar and said: "A speech like that could get you killed". He only said this after having several drinks. He refused to elaborate, but was quite happy talking about other matters, like the lack of fuel in his patrol boat, which meant that if he actually chased criminals in a boat, he would run out of fuel. He could sight them, but always had to return to base.
36. Early that morning I flew back to Auckland (22/23 August 2002) and picked up my Mercedes from the airport. It had been parked undercover, with a barrier arm to prevent exit, not a door. The steering wheel had been poisoned with epicac. When I got back to my house in Judges Bay, Parnell, where all the judges live, I ate an apple. This was now 8 am **23 August 2002** and 12 hours after the speech had finished.
    The poison epicac then transferred to my lips and stomach and I spent the next 12 hours with vomiting, diarrhea, fast and slow heart palpatations, and hot and cold sweats.
37. I thought I was dying. I lost consciousness many times.
38. By 8 pm **23 August 2002** I had recovered enough to drive. I drove to the Caltex Station on Stanley Street for a Subway Deli sandwhich. I then headed along Beach Road towards the Sky City Bus Terminal on Hobson St to pick up my 10-year-old daughter.

39. On the way I was viciously attacked by Constable James Matewhinau Cassin around 8.10 pm on **23 August 2002**. This was now 24 hours after I had exposed Prime Minister Helen Clark as a KGB agent.

40. Cassin has a criminal record for assault. He is a police hitman.

41. Within 24 hours of exposing Prime Minister Helen Clark as a KGB agent, I had been poisoned, attacked by police, arrested, lost my licence, fined $1,490.00, and prevented from seeing my daughter.

42. This was no coincidence. This was attempted murder.

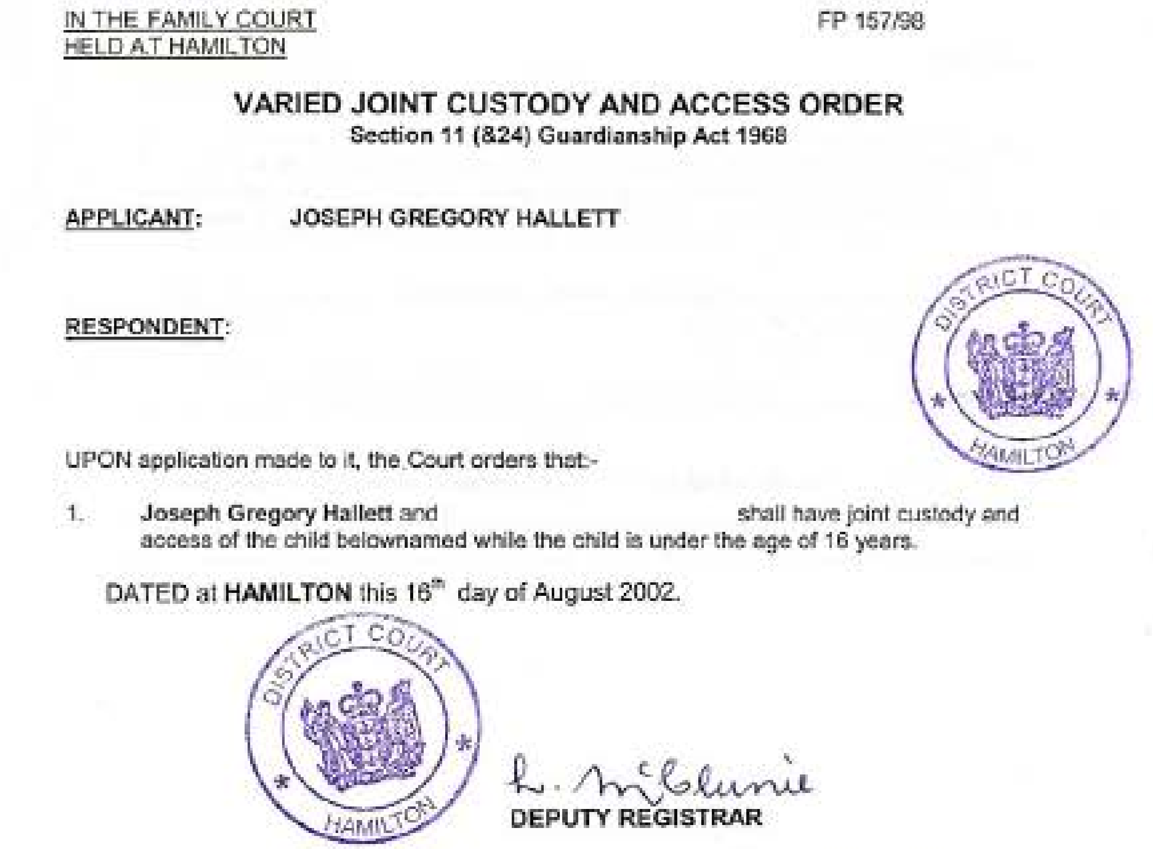

IN THE FAMILY COURT
HELD AT HAMILTON

FP 157/98

VARIED JOINT CUSTODY AND ACCESS ORDER
Section 11 (&24) Guardianship Act 1968

APPLICANT: **JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT**

RESPONDENT:

UPON application made to it, the Court orders that:-

1. **Joseph Gregory Hallett** and shall have joint custody and access of the child belownamed while the child is under the age of 16 years.

DATED at **HAMILTON** this 16th day of August 2002.

L. McClunie
DEPUTY REGISTRAR

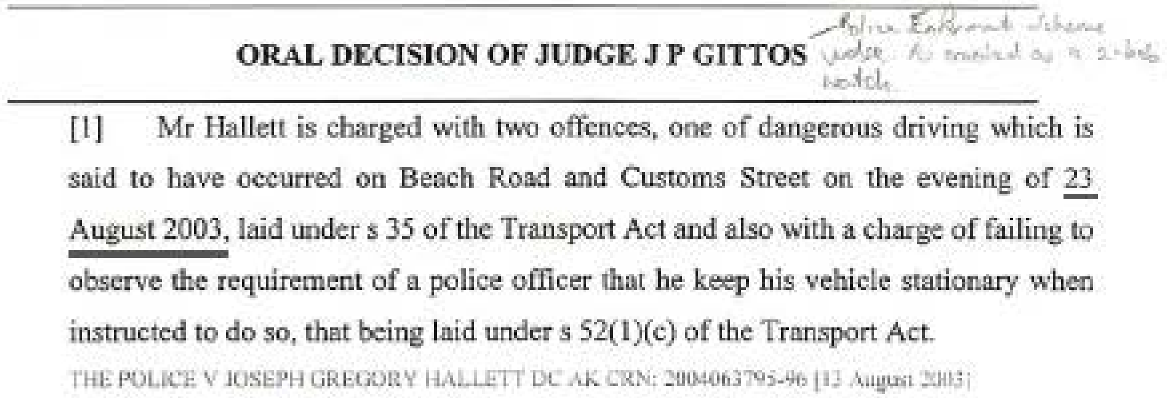

ORAL DECISION OF JUDGE J P GITTOS

Police Enforcement Scheme judge. As crooked as a 2-bob watch

[1] Mr Hallett is charged with two offences, one of dangerous driving which is said to have occurred on Beach Road and Customs Street on the evening of 23 August 2003, laid under s 35 of the Transport Act and also with a charge of failing to observe the requirement of a police officer that he keep his vehicle stationary when instructed to do so, that being laid under s 52(1)(c) of the Transport Act.

THE POLICE V JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT DC AK CRN: 2004063795-96 [13 August 2003]

Judge Gittos – the Police Stitch-up Judge – complied with the police and obfuscated the date of the police attack, citing it as 23 August "2003", ten (10) days after the 13 August 2003 District Court hearing he presided over. It occurred a year earlier on 23 August 2002 – a week after the Hamilton Deputy Registrar signed the documents awarding me custody . . . The Police case collapsed on appeal.

43. I had won equal shared joint custody seven days earlier (16 August 2002) with notice due by mail. I hadn't yet opened my mail as I had been on holiday and then poisoned to near death. Written confirmation of Custody, attempted murder, police assault, loss of driver licence and traffic fines were happening simultaneously – on the same day.

This was an organised multi-level multi-disciplinary government hit.

44. The Counsel for the Child was Paul Geoghegan. He charged the second highest amount of legal aid in the country. Straight after I won the 8-year Family Court custody battle, of which Paul Geoghegan was involved for 4 years, Geoghegan nominated himself as a Family Court judge.

45. Paul Geoghegan became a Family Court judge in Rotorua and Taupo where he is so unpopular with mothers, fathers, and lawyers, that everyone tries to have their cases heard elsewhere.

46. Paul Geoghegan is the career twin of Grant Aislabie who will appear later. Their relationship of protecting each other's crimes and advancing each other's careers is arguably the base model for the new subversive paedo-politico movement '**Common Purpose**' – essentially paedophile domination of the world.

47. Like the Catholics and the Freemasons (which they both are), no one can advance to positions of influence to do good, without going through them . . .

> **"Freemasons are a filtration system to prevent good men from getting positions of control of their state . . . Only the scum rise to the surface."**[1]

48. Counsel for Child Paul Geoghegan admitted to discussing my case with Grant Aislabie.

49. This is extreme bias, considering that Grant Aislabie has had a series of mental breakdowns and was a Class A drug user; and extremely dangerous considering he used my mother as his confessional.

50. After Cassin attacked me and charged me with dangerous driving on 23 August 2002, the case was heard a year later on 13 August 2003. I lost completely, and in every way, under the accomplice Judge Gittos.

51. Judge Gittos is a police stitch-up judge and an accessory to attempted murder.

52. On 18 August 2003 I wrote to the Department For Courts, Wellington. They checked with the Wanganui Computer and confirmed on 28 August 2003 that I had no criminal record. (**See Attachment "F"**, 'Constable James Matewhinau Cassin's Criminal Record and Greg Hallett's lack of one'.)

53. A year after the murder attempt, and 9 weeks after the hearing and conviction for crimes I did not commit, Superintendent Clint Rickards was made Auckland City District Commander and Assistant Police Commissioner on 16 October 2003.

54. I wrote to the Police Headquarters in Wellington (17 November 2003): "Pursuant to the Official information Act, I request disclosure for the criminal record of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin of Auckland". (**See Attachment "F"**)

55. Six days after they received this letter, Auckland City District Commander Clint Rickards was assigned to my case, as the Officer in Charge of the Police Commissioner's Support Group on 25 November 2003.

56. Ten weeks later, Auckland City District Commander/ Assistant Police Commissioner Clint Rickards was publicly outed as a rapist, on 31 January 2004.

---

[1] Michael Tsarion, 'Brotherhood of Death', Red Ice Creations Webcast, 2009.

In a similar time frame, the Police Prosecutor Graham Capill resigned due to paedophilia of at least four girls under 12 years old. The legal disciplinary hearing reacted by fining him $3,123 on 9 August 2006. What a joke!

57. The next day (1 February 2004) it was made public that Prime Minister Helen Clark was aware of the rape allegations against Rickards before he was promoted.
58. The next day (2 February 2004) Rickards took leave for three weeks. He was then stood down for 3 years and 10 months and remained on full pay the entire time, even receiving an updated new car.
59. This confirms that Helen Clark approves of raping police officers and even favours them for promotion and murder. This is not untypical of a deconstructed former prostitute.
60. Clark also used Rickards for his skills in violence and complicity in her murders, murder attempts, cover ups, targetting and boiler-plating. This included myself as the target.
61. The same day (1 February 2004) Peter Williams QC said: "The Police should not investigate themselves".
62. Clint Rickards was suspended on full pay from 31 January 2004 to 22 November 2007 while charged with rape and kidnapping.
63. During this period he received close to NZ$2 million from the Police.

    This looks like a reward for rape.
64. During this period (1 February 2004–22 November 2007) Rickards trained to be a lawyer and dealt in methamphetamine (P) from Scotland Street in Freemans Bay, Auckland.
65. Two months after he was stood down, the chief historian and author Michael King was murdered on 29 March 2004.
66. I met Michael King several times. I had dinner with his ex-wife and used to date her step-daughter. I also met Michael King at his book launch at Alten Road in December 1981 and in the government operation Centrepoint, a commune in Albany.
67. This was a satellite Tavistock that ran mind control programmes based around sex. One of these programmes made it to TV under the programme name 'Temptation Island'.
68. I am an author and historian and am now introduced on radio overseas as "the emminent historian from New Zealand".
69. Michael King and I have a lot in common. His murder was done on the October 2003 orders of Helen Clark. The contract was picked up by Chief Justice Dame Sian Elias. He was killed on 29 March 2004.
70. In May 2004 the Mossad were doing reconnaisance on me in preparation for murder.
71. On 22 May 2004 I confronted the Mossad agent. The vehicle he was driving got stuck in the mud outside where I was living. I told him he was working for Sian Elias, was looking to kill me and had been part of the murder of historian Michael King.
72. His name was Yaron. He said; "Why the fuck do you get caught up in this sort of shit", and then admitted he was an Israeli Tank Commander.
73. Yaron (Mossad): "I was an Israeli Tank Commander. I preferred Centurion tanks with an adapted turret. I was ordered to shoot over hills at night. When I checked the coordinates, it was a Palestinian refugee camp . . . All I want to do is get citizenship and find a nice New Zealand girl to marry."

74. Within two months of Clint Rickards being stood down, the chief historian Michael King was murdered by Helen Clark and Sian Elias, using the Mossad, of which Sian Elias is the chief Sayanim Mossad agent.
75. Sian Elias is the highest ranking Mossad agent in New Zealand.
76. With Rickards stood down, it stopped him from investigating, but was perfect cover for him playing a role.
77. It also stopped Rickards from taking any blame for the case remaining unsolved.
78. The double-murder took place on the Waikato-Auckland border. Rickards had been in command of both areas.
79. Even Wikipedia, 'Michael King', states:

    "The cause of the crash was reported by the police at the time to be a complete mystery as speed was not a factor and investigators have little idea why the car would veer off a straight road."
80. Michael King was poisoned with epicac on the steering wheel of his Subaru. When he picked up some food and ate it (like an apple), it caused fast and slow heart palpatations, hot and cold sweats, and vomiting, enough for him to career off the road.
81. This was the same thing that had happened to me 18 months earlier, so it was likely to be the same killer, or group of killers, as the same methods were used.
82. Since the Mossad killed Michael King, and Sian Elias was behind the hit and Helen Clark had ordered it in early October 2003, it is very likely that the August 2002 hit on me was also ordered by Helen Clark (obviously as I had just given a speech exposing her as a KGB agent) and this was carried out by Sian Elias – the highest ranking Mossad agent in New Zealand – who then ordered the Israeli Tank Commander, Yaron, and his crew of at least another three Mossad (whom I've seen on Waiheke Island) to carry out the hit.
83. The devices used to kill Michael King and Maria Jungowska were epicac on the back of the steering wheel and an impact activated-explosive on the petrol tank . . . and
84. The first car behind them was an Israeli couple working for the Mossad.
85. *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide, 2007, pp. 9–10:*

    > "It's just a shame that more of the public don't know that Michael King was murdered on the October 2003 orders of Prime Minister Helen Clark (KGB). No one picked up the job, so it was given to the Chief Justice Sian Elias (Sayanim-Mossad). Others on the list were Sir Peter Elworthy (killed 13 January 2004 by digitalis in his midnight cake snack), the TV chef Alison Holst, and Sharon Crosby who held the 'Morning Programme On Popular Culture, Advertising and Propaganda' and became the chief executive of Radio New Zealand.
    > The women survived, the men didn't."

86. Wikipedia:

    "Michael King and his second wife Maria Jungowska were killed when their car crashed into a tree and caught fire near Maramarua, on SH2 in the north Waikato [on Monday 29 March 2004, not Tuesday 30 March 2004]. The cause of the crash was reported by the police at the time to be a complete mystery as speed was not a factor and investigators have little idea why the car would veer off a straight road. A coroner's inquest into the deaths determined that the accident was most likely caused by driver inattention . . ."[2]

---

[2] Wikipedia: date corrections added, as cited in *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide*, 2007, pp. 9–10.

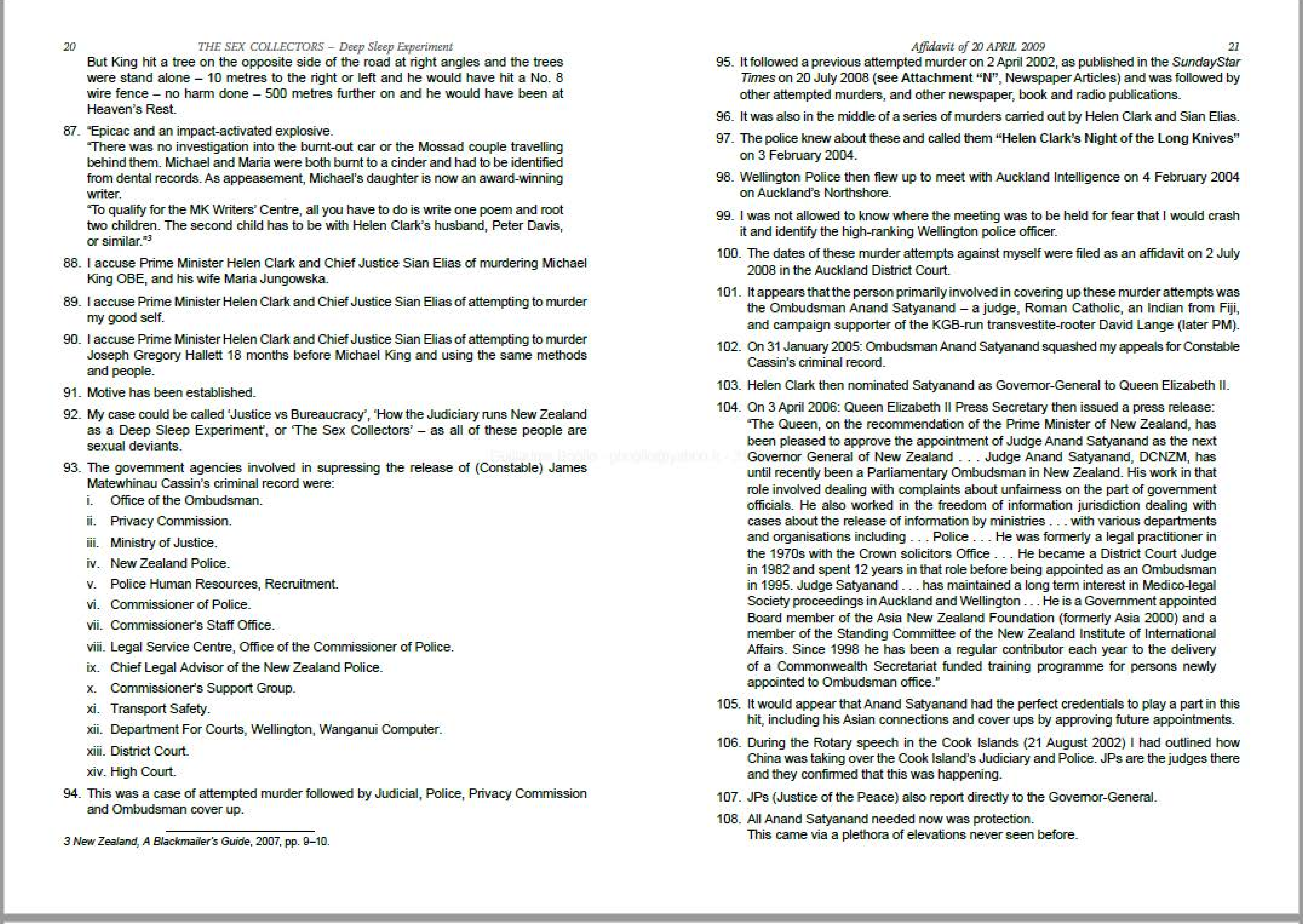

But King hit a tree on the opposite side of the road at right angles and the trees were stand alone – 10 metres to the right or left and he would have hit a No. 8 wire fence – no harm done – 500 metres further on and he would have been at Heaven's Rest.

87. "Epicac and an impact-activated explosive.
"There was no investigation into the burnt-out car or the Mossad couple travelling behind them. Michael and Maria were both burnt to a cinder and had to be identified from dental records. As appeasement, Michael's daughter is now an award-winning writer.
"To qualify for the MK Writers' Centre, all you have to do is write one poem and root two children. The second child has to be with Helen Clark's husband, Peter Davis, or similar."[3]

88. I accuse Prime Minister Helen Clark and Chief Justice Sian Elias of murdering Michael King OBE, and his wife Maria Jungowska.

89. I accuse Prime Minister Helen Clark and Chief Justice Sian Elias of attempting to murder my good self.

90. I accuse Prime Minister Helen Clark and Chief Justice Sian Elias of attempting to murder Joseph Gregory Hallett 18 months before Michael King and using the same methods and people.

91. Motive has been established.

92. My case could be called 'Justice vs Bureaucracy', 'How the Judiciary runs New Zealand as a Deep Sleep Experiment', or 'The Sex Collectors' – as all of these people are sexual deviants.

93. The government agencies involved in supressing the release of (Constable) James Matewhinau Cassin's criminal record were:
    i. Office of the Ombudsman.
    ii. Privacy Commission.
    iii. Ministry of Justice.
    iv. New Zealand Police.
    v. Police Human Resources, Recruitment.
    vi. Commissioner of Police.
    vii. Commissioner's Staff Office.
    viii. Legal Service Centre, Office of the Commissioner of Police.
    ix. Chief Legal Advisor of the New Zealand Police.
    x. Commissioner's Support Group.
    xi. Transport Safety.
    xii. Department For Courts, Wellington, Wanganui Computer.
    xiii. District Court.
    xiv. High Court.

94. This was a case of attempted murder followed by Judicial, Police, Privacy Commission and Ombudsman cover up.

---

[3] *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide*, 2007, pp. 9–10.

95. It followed a previous attempted murder on 2 April 2002, as published in the *SundayStar Times* on 20 July 2008 (see **Attachment "N"**, Newspaper Articles) and was followed by other attempted murders, and other newspaper, book and radio publications.

96. It was also in the middle of a series of murders carried out by Helen Clark and Sian Elias.

97. The police knew about these and called them **"Helen Clark's Night of the Long Knives"** on 3 February 2004.

98. Wellington Police then flew up to meet with Auckland Intelligence on 4 February 2004 on Auckland's Northshore.

99. I was not allowed to know where the meeting was to be held for fear that I would crash it and identify the high-ranking Wellington police officer.

100. The dates of these murder attempts against myself were filed as an affidavit on 2 July 2008 in the Auckland District Court.

101. It appears that the person primarily involved in covering up these murder attempts was the Ombudsman Anand Satyanand – a judge, Roman Catholic, an Indian from Fiji, and campaign supporter of the KGB-run transvestite-rooter David Lange (later PM).

102. On 31 January 2005: Ombudsman Anand Satyanand squashed my appeals for Constable Cassin's criminal record.

103. Helen Clark then nominated Satyanand as Governor-General to Queen Elizabeth II.

104. On 3 April 2006: Queen Elizabeth II Press Secretary then issued a press release:
"The Queen, on the recommendation of the Prime Minister of New Zealand, has been pleased to approve the appointment of Judge Anand Satyanand as the next Governor General of New Zealand . . . Judge Anand Satyanand, DCNZM, has until recently been a Parliamentary Ombudsman in New Zealand. His work in that role involved dealing with complaints about unfairness on the part of government officials. He also worked in the freedom of information jurisdiction dealing with cases about the release of information by ministries . . . with various departments and organisations including . . . Police . . . He was formerly a legal practitioner in the 1970s with the Crown solicitors Office . . . He became a District Court Judge in 1982 and spent 12 years in that role before being appointed as an Ombudsman in 1995. Judge Satyanand . . . has maintained a long term interest in Medico-legal Society proceedings in Auckland and Wellington . . . He is a Government appointed Board member of the Asia New Zealand Foundation (formerly Asia 2000) and a member of the Standing Committee of the New Zealand Institute of International Affairs. Since 1998 he has been a regular contributor each year to the delivery of a Commonwealth Secretariat funded training programme for persons newly appointed to Ombudsman office."

105. It would appear that Anand Satyanand had the perfect credentials to play a part in this hit, including his Asian connections and cover ups by approving future appointments.

106. During the Rotary speech in the Cook Islands (21 August 2002) I had outlined how China was taking over the Cook Island's Judiciary and Police. JPs are the judges there and they confirmed that this was happening.

107. JPs (Justice of the Peace) also report directly to the Governor-General.

108. All Anand Satyanand needed now was protection.
This came via a plethora of elevations never seen before.

109. On 7 July 2006, Anand Satyanand was invested as a Knight of Justice of the Most Venerable Order of the Hospital of St John of Jerusalem.

110. On 23 August 2006, Anand Satyanand took office as Governor-General replacing New Zealand's most corrupt judge, Dame Silvia Cartwright, who had 18 complaints against her – mostly for gender bias – and ran the Centrepoint commune from on high.

111. All of these complaints were still standing against Silvia Cartwright when she was appointed to Governor-General by Helen Clark KGB.

112. Both Governor-Generals were heavily involved in paedophilia.

113. As Chief Boy Scout and Chief Girl Guide, the Governor-General's primary requirement for selection is paedophilie-minding and working with the JP's who do the same.

114. So if **person A** were to expose **person B** who was married to a paedophile or child sex abuser, and **person B** was capable of recommending **person C** as Governor-General, then **person C** would be motiviated to attack **person A**.

115. This was the case when person A was Greg Hallett, person B was Helen Clark, and person C was Anand Satyanand. Person B (Helen Clark), well her husband is a homosexual child sex abuser, so she was motivated to attack and promote.

116. Wikipedia, 'Anand Satyanand':
"Satyanand was appointed by Elizabeth II, Queen of New Zealand, on the advice of Prime Minister Helen Clark. He is the first Governor-General of Asian descent and the first Roman Catholic Governor-General . . . Satyanand is the first Governor-General not to hold a knighthood . . . However, recent changes meant that upon assuming the role of Governor-General he received the style The Honourable for life."

117. In May 2007, changes were made to the Queen's Service Order and Anand Satyanand was the first Governor-General appointed full Companion.

118. There had to be strong terms of reference for Anand Satyanand to become Governor-General as he was the first Roman Catholic, the first Indian, the first Fijian, and the first without a knighthood.

119. Anand Satyanand shot out from oblivion onto the thin blue line.

120. The Chinese National MP Pansy Wong claimed to have nicknamed Anand Satyanand 'Satch', as "The Governor-General with the big heart" . . . but he already had that nickname from law school as his friends were keen on Jazz and he was fat-'n'-black.

121. I have nicknamed Anand Satyanand "the Brown Humpty Dumpty" – as the man who destroyed the nation so that not even all the King's men could put it back together again.[4]

122. This was confirmed by his passing the **Electoral Finance Act** on 19 December 2007. This was such an outrageous bill, the country marched down the main streets many times over.

123. It appears that the current Governor-General of New Zealand was promoted into this role by his complicit cover for Helen Clark's murders, murder attempts, and attempts at dictatorial fascism – just like Hitler – which is where the Rothschild's place her.

124. This also gave Ombudsman Anand Satyanand the necessary information to bribe his way into becoming the Governor-General – on the basis that he had covered up Helen Clark's murders and murder attempts.

---

[4] *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide*, 2007, p. 117.

125. This seems likely as Anand Satyanand was Helen Clark's fourth choice of Governor-General.

126. The first three choices were:
Sir Wilson James Whineray, KNZM, OBE (ex-All Black captain) publicly touted as the next Governor-General from November 2004;
Stephen Robert Tindall (The Warehouse Managing Director) erroneously named as the 'Founder' in January 2001 to cover up ownership by Jenny Shipley and Ruth Richardson;
Sir Howard Morrison (Entertainer) but the Government couldn't place any faith in him. They had given him money before to ride a horse around the country promoting Maori language awareness, but he got others to ride the horse and waited in hotel rooms in the bath, drunk. Howard Morrison was also a fence jumper with too many illegitimate children, including with his sister-in-law, producing the actor/ son/ nephew Temuera Morrison (Star Wars), and another with the Chrisco Christmas Hamper lady of yore. So Tem, go and meet your brother.

127. Understanding Helen Clark's corrupt and murderous government, when Sir Wilson Whineray was asked to be Governor-General he outrightly said, **"No"**.

128. Stephent Tindall said he was, **"Too busy"**, but was promoted on 15 July 2006 with the Blake Medal (Sir Peter Blake was murdered with Helen Clark's complicity) and on 4 June 2007 Queen's Birthday Honours List Tindall got the Distinguished Companion of the New Zealand Order of Merit (DCNZM) – for keeping his mouth shut.

129. So Anand Satyanand was the third or fourth choice of Governor-General of New Zealand. No doubt he promoted himself with complicity to, and knowledge of, Helen Clark and Sian Elias' murders.

130. It is very likely the others were asked first as a form of cover. This is how Helen Clark KGB runs her politics. What the public gets on TV is bunmf.

131. Anand Satyanand is the fatest ugliest man in New Zealand, and one of his first big assignments was signing the judicial fascism legislation – the 'Electoral Finance Act' – which prevented free speech during election year – until it was repealled under the new National government on 17 February 2009 (with only the Green's objecting).

132. My guess is this affidavit would be considered free speech.

133. Wikipedia: "Royal Assent: The Governor-General signed the Bill into law on 19 December 2007."[5] [It was repealed on 1 March 2009, seven weeks before my case was heard.}

134. I know a little bit about this as the surgeon to the Duke of York, then King George VI's Surgeon (1946–52), then Sergeant-Surgeon to Queen Elizabeth II (1952–67), Baronet Arthur Espie Porritt introduced me to Queen Elizabeth II's brother in 1967. Months later, Porritt became the 11th Governor-General, on 30 November 1967, serving until September 1972. He then returned to London and was created Baron Porritt of Wanganui and Hampstead (New Zealand and London).

135. We knew him as 'Porridge'.

136. Also, I was trained as the Governor-General on 20 July 2002 by the President of the Scientists Club in St Petersburg who came out to visit me in Parnell, Auckland. He stayed with me for a month briefing me, then put the training in place.

---

[5] The Electoral Finance Bill is attributed in part to suppressing my publication of Helen Clark's murders and murder attempts in *Hitler Was A British Agent*, 2005, 2006; *How To Take Over The World*, 2007, *New Zealand; A Blackmailer's Guide*, 2007. That is, the Electoral Finance Bill/Act was attributed to Greg Hallett, a.k.a. Joseph Gregory Hallett, the author of this Affidavit and Attachments.

137. I was simultaneously trained as the Prime Minister.

138. Both are further reasons for Helen Cark to have me assassinated.

139. Ditto for the future, and the corrupt Governor-General Anand Satyanand.

140. Prime Minister and Governor-General are Intelligence positions.

141. Under the current governance, these are counter-intelligence positions.

142. Intelligence has not been able to work out how Anand Satyanand became Governor-General as his political and religious beliefs are at polar opposites to Helen Clark's.

143. Anand Satyanand is a Catholic and anti-abortion, whereas Helen Clark is a KGB agent and pro-abortion.

144. The Catholics and Communists are traditional enemies, as is anti-abortion and pro-abortion. These are known as the anti-abortion Catholics and the pro-abortion Feminists. Helen Clark is a feminist.

145. The Catholics are anti-abortion because it produces a lot of unwanted children who they can 'take care' of and then prey on for paedophilia (with the protective biological father guaranteed removed) . . . whereas Helen Clark wants women to have abortions so they can be free to have careers destroying families.

146. Helen Clark's role is to:
    i. Depopulate New Zealand;
    ii. Depopulate it of New Zealanders; and,
    iii. Depopulate it of people of value –
    hence the figurehead Anand Satyanand – the fatest ugliest man in New Zealand.

147. Like most political spectrums, they meet in the middle at the underside – the dark side.

148. A plus for Anand Satyanand was that:
    a. He backed the transvestite-lover David Lange in his first attempt to become a Labour MP in 1975. Lange had failed badly in a property deal in Northland, was financially rescued by the KGB becoming a KGB asset. The 1975 Satyanand-assisted campaign for Lange to become a Member of Parliament was unsuccessful. The KGB were, however, successful in promoting their asset David Lange to Prime Minister in 1984.
    b. Helen Clark's husband is a homosexual child sex abuser who requires access to unwanted underaged children, and the Catholics can supply them.[6]
    c. Helen Clark placed her husband Peter Davis under house arrest in February 2004 for sexually abusing an underaged boy. This was not the first or last time. He can't help himself. He is a compulsive sex abuser. In the words of Paul Holmes, Peter "is sick".
    d. Ombudsman Anand Satyanand is a Catholic. The Catholics control the police along with the Freemasons. The Catholic Police would have had access to this murder-attempt information and passed it on to the Catholic Ombudsman Anand Satyanand.
    e. Catholics were allowed to become Freemasons from 20 January 1980.
    f. Many Catholics then became Freemasons as soon as they could, like the next weekend.
    g. These Catholic Freemasons were then encouraged to compromise themselves with shameful acts, and those who did so would be promoted. This included drug use, child sex abuse, paedophilia, incest, and corrupt law practise.

---

[6] *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide*, 2007, pp. 10, 88–90, 130, 167–68, 228; *How To Take Over The World*, 2007, pp. 163–69, 239–45.

    h. The Catholic Anand Satyanand supported the transvestite-loving lawyer David Lange for parliament.
    i. Both men were enormously fat. Lawyer David Lange was so fat he fell through the floorboards of the Otahuhu District Court and had to be hoisted out with a forklift. He was eating jelly-babies at the time – kept them in his pockets.
    j. Helen Clark had a voluntary radical hysterectomy December 1976–January 1977 at the Auckland Hospital on Park Road. This prevented her from getting pregnant during her prostitution in St Petersburg; prevented a child from interferring with her career; and was illegal.
    k. Helen Clark is a criminal.

149. If I know about this, you could imagine that the Ombudsman Satyanand did.

150. This information came via a Queen's Counsel lawyer. The QC's generally know this stuff, and what the QC's know, the Political Ombudsman is generally required to cover up.

151. Ombudsman Anand Satyanand, 31 January 2005:

> **". . . Ombudsmen and their staff are required by section 21(2) of the Ombudsmen Act 1975 to maintain secrecy in respect of all matters that come to their knowledge in the exercise of their functions."**

152. So now you can see that Anand Satyanand is heavily compromised and has the wood on Helen Clark. This is how he became Governor-General of New Zealand – by covering up the murders and murder attempts carried out by Prime Minister Helen Clark.

153. Clint Rickards was in a similar position – when he was charged with rape, he was not convicted, but rather he was accepted to the Bar as a lawyer. Similarly, after Allan McCready was convicted of gang rape (1943), he was made Minister of Police (1975–78).

154. I was the victim of a series of these murder attempts.

155. These murder attempts occurred on 2 April 2002, 23 August 2002, 14–22 May 2004, 27 July 2007, 26 October 2007, 17–27 March 2008, with a standing order hit made by Helen Clark in the back rooms of Parliament on 3 June 2008 with the words:

> **"Greg Hallett is dangerous.**
> **Greg Hallett is not to be associated with.**
> **Greg Hallett is a target."**

156. The 27 July 2007 attempt by poisoned coffee was erroneously omitted from the Notice of General Appeal lodged on 2 July 2008.

157. This brings the number of murder attempts to six, plus the standing order hit of 3 June 2008.

158. I assume these charges and the bailiff's appearance on 10 June 2008 is part and parcel of this 3 June 2008 attack.

159. It is a financial and time wasting hit.

160. Despite mulitple attempts, a successful murder has not been carried out.

161. I attach an email which suggests I am on a Mafia black list. (**See Attachment "O"**, 'Blacklisting, Hobbling and Boiler-Plating')

162. An outline of Helen Clark's murders will follow. (**See Attachment "R"**, 'Helen Clark and Sian Eliass Murders – Quotes', and **Attachment "S"**, 'Key to Murder Attempts', et cetera)

163. Later I will discuss Helen Clark's complicity in, and initiation of, the murders of Chris Beeby, Sir Peter Blake, David McNee,[7] Sir Peter Elworthy, Michael King, Rod Donald,

---

[7] *How To Take Over The World*, 2007, pp. 163, 241–45.

and Augie Auer, and her role in the planned genocide of New Zealand, including her attempt to launch a nuclear strike on New Zealand with her controller, Vladimir Putin in the 1980s.[8] These have been covered in the books: *How To Take Over The World* and *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide*.

164. The Judiciary and Police began to attack me after I exposed the trial Head of the Disputes Tribunal, Grant Aislabie, as a drug user during a Disputes Tribunal hearing in January 1994.

165. Since then I have not won a court case.

166. Prior to this, I used to win all of my court cases.

167. Grant Aislabie is the career twin of the now self-nominated judge Paul Geoghegan.

168. Grant Aislabie used to be our family lawyer in Tauranga. He is a Catholic who became a Freemason in January 1980.

169. One of my closest relatives was one of his drug dealers.

170. Grant Aislabie was the trial head of the Disputes Tribunal from at least 1993.

171. Grant Aislabie was then formally appointed head of the Disputes Tribunal (June 1999–January 2005) by Attorney-General Margaret Wilson (Helen Clark's accomplice). Aislabie and Wilson had been near neighbours in Tauranga.

172. My Disputes Tribunal hearing was in January 1994.

173. I didn't win that case and haven't won one since.

174. On 2 July 2008 Deputy Registrar S T Wolfgramm wrote:
"I will not be drawn into any discussion on any of the questions you have raised in your affidavit dated 27th June 2008, as they do not relate to the infringements at hand".
Is this not complicity to murder by the AUCKLAND DISTRICT COURT Deputy Registrar?

175. One of the things governments do is attack citizens and then ignore the reports of those attacks.

176. Governments rarely serve citizens.

177. Governments are now social engineering devices that serve the New World Order, and in doing so, attack citizens who can think laterally and communicate their minds clearly.

178. Governments have various agencies that attack citizens.

179. These include the Police, Courts, Internal Affairs, SIS, army "on-leave", CIB, Social Welfare, Family Court, the incumbent government, and those who control the incument government, including the foreign Intelligence agencies that control them, and assassins brought in from overseas, like former Prime Minister Jenny Shipley with Mr Wrobel.[9]

180. MICK P: "Mr Wrobel got rid of broadcaster Paul Holmes' nuts. Kimball Robert Brisco Johnson used to complain that the police gave him too much work doing hits. The hitmen are afraid their symbiotic relationship with the police would be exposed, so hitmen were put in police uniform, and given police protection. Two of these are Clint Rickards and James Matewhinau Cassin. Kimball Johnson was then killed with rapid cancer on the orders of former Prime Minister Jenny Shipley . . . the above is part of Kimball Johnson's deathbed confession." (**See Attachment "i"**, 'Bus Lane Ticket')

---

[8] *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide*, 2007, pp. 13–36; *How To Take Over The World*, 2007, pp. 181, 211–13; *Hitler Was A British Agent*, 2005, 2006, pp. 150–53, 428, 437.

[9] *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide*, 2007, p. 100.

181. In New Zealand the most prolific of these foreign Intelligence agencies are the Mossad, KGB, BOSS, CIA, and now Chinese Intelligence. These operate as Counter-Intelligence organisations, while carrying out their intelligence activities. That is, they do anything they deem necessary to prevent the public from knowing what is going on. This includes killing those who know, and carrying out the murders required by the Prime Minister and Chief Justice – Helen Clark (KGB) and Sian Elias (Mossad).

182. All of these Intelligence/ Counter-Intelligence organisations operate under the umbrella of 'Silent Weapons for a Quiet War'. This specialises in targetting individuals and societies with misery and quiet kills, called "soft kills". (**See Attachment "P"**)

183. New Zealand is one of the most miserable societies in the Western world.

184. New Zealand is heavily controlled, and controlled with the heavy hand of **Operations Research using Silent Weapons for a Quiet War.** (**See Attachment "P"**)

185. Operations Research uses an **'Electronic Economic Model'** to clamp down on society. As such, they use all the government departments listed above to attack any citizen who shakes this model, steps out of line, or expresses themselves with a mind in tact.

186. Alternatively, this can be thought of as 'any conspiracy theorist who maintains a professional presence in the community'.

187. A 'conspiracy theorist' is anyone who presents information counter to the mainstream news, and:
There wouldn't be any conspiracies if we were told the truth in the first place.

188. The news the New World Order wants you to hear is propaganda, misinformation and miseducation.

189. Since I have written nine published breakthrough books, with over 16 hours of podcast interviews overseas, one hour on YouTube, while maintaining a professional presence with architecture, as well as being a fulltime solo dad, having won custody – I am considered a threat to Operations Research – someone the Silent Weapons for a Quiet War has not been able to quash. (**See Attachment "O"**, 'Blacklisting, Hobbling and Boiler-Plating', for samples of my architecture work)

190. Since exposing the trial head of the Disputes Tribunal as a drug user, going for custody, publishing my books, and doing radio interviews overseas, I have been hounded by the **New Zealand Government's silent weapons for a quiet war** and they have done everything they can to make my life miserable.

191. This has included being blacklisted, hobbled and boiler-plated. (**See Attachment "O"**)

192. This is all part and parcel of how the judiciary runs New Zealand as a Deep Sleep Experiment. (**See Attachment "B"**, 'How the Judiciary runs New Zealand as a Deep Sleep Experiment')

193. This has included six murder attempts, my court cases sabotaged by crooked and compromised judges, my houses removed, my business attacked, the police breaking into my residence, at least 28 false charges laid by the police, using the former Crown Prosecutor as the Circuit Judge to believe police stitch-ups and deny my evidence, and squashing my investigation with a crooked ombudsmen and crooked police.
At the same time the Police employed Black Power to take a hit out on my lawyer.

194. Such focussed actions on me have also been applied to others, killing some of them.

195. This has resulted in a watered-down effect on the rest of the population.

196. Operations Research controls all aspects of the New Zealand government and its silent weapons for a quiet war is a source of most of the misery the public experiences.

197. As such, it is now accepted by the public:
   a. Don't expect justice in the New Zealand judiciary.
   b. The New Zealand judiciary is a fraud.
   c. The Police are a paedophile and crime creation movement who specialise in rape, murder, drug trafficking and dealing.
   d. The police charge the victim and let the perpetrator go free. This creates crime and maximises the misery out of the situation.
   e. New Zealand is 'the Pied Piper with cross-dressing mayors' and every mayor is bribed.[10]
   f. The Family Court is a paedophile and crime creation movement who feed the police with criminals, and paedophiles with unprotected, unfathered children. It's a numbers game, and a 'Sphere of Influence' game.
   g. **New Zealand is a paedophile movement fronting as a country.**
   h. Prime Minister Helen Clark (1999–2008) is a double agent who serves the New World Order and not the citizens.
   i. As such ex-Prime Minister Helen Clark was promoted to 3-IC of the UN, despite over 2,000 objections, and 400 pages of her murders lodged in the Auckland District Court (7 November 2008). The hearing for this was delayed from 20 March 2009 to 20 April 2009. **Helen Clark left the country the day before on 19 April 2009.**
   j. **When the Courts are assured they can do nothing, they will act.**
   k. The Chief Justice is a contract killer – the Black Chief Justice – who murdered for Prime Minister Helen Clark, and nothing has been put in place to stop her.
   l. The Governor-General is a paedophile minder, accessory to murder, attempted murder, and covers up for murders.

198. The Operations Research 'Electronic Economic Model' of society is attached in its clarified form. It's full title is: 'Silent Weapons for a Quiet War, 'Operations Research' Technical Manual, (May 1979, No. 74–1120)'.[11] **(See Attachment "P"**, 'Silent Weapons for a Quiet War')

199. The New Zealand judiciary specialises in misery.

200. The New Zealand judiciary is also a crime creation and paedophile movement and attacks anyone who exposes government and judicial paedophiles.

201. Judge Anand Satyanand can testify to this.

202. Sian Elias was elevated to Chief Justice on the bribes of her husband Hugh Fletcher – a bisexual child sex abuser.

203. Hugh Fletcher organises child sex abuse soirées.

---

[10] Even Wanganui's Mayor, Michael Laws – who wears women's underwear, eyeliner and a bit of makeup on a daily basis – split up from the mother of his three children (4, 2 & 6 months) after seven years (April 2009). But do you think that will stop the cross-dresser from telling us what to do and think? Hell no! The Jews who control the media prefer kinky hosts. They like the same in their Judiciary . . . and their banks. Then they like them all to work together. What do we call this – a con, as in ".co.nz."

[11] This document in its original form can be obtained from the internet at: http://www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/silentweaponsforquietwars.htm.

204. He was also involved in covering up the murder of David McNee who attended his sex soirées.[12] (**See Attachment "R"**, Helen Clark and Sian Elias' Murders – Quotes)

205. Hugh Fletcher bribed then Prime Minister Jenny Shipley (1997–99) to nominate his wife Sian Elias as Chief Justice.

206. Hugh Fletcher then bribed the leader of the opposition Helen Clark to second the motion.

207. Since then the New Zealand Judicary has become a mockery of justice.
Chief Justice Sian Elias now spends her time running murders, trying to create civil war (Foreshore & Seabed Act) and running a judiciary into the ground – **a judiciary that can't even settle a debt**.

208. Bribes are common place in the judiciary.

209. Judges are in it for the money.

210. Judges are also in it for the security, as they are pretty much untouchable as "Your Honour".

211. Another Judicial bribe was placed when broadcaster Paul Holmes was given NZ$850,000 to purchase a child (Millie Elder, whom he adopted off a lesbian). The money came from two judges Paul Holmes was at 'City AA' with. City Alcoholics Anonymous is in St David's Church Centre at 68–70 Kyber Pass, Auckland City, behind the rather large and ignored St David's Presbyterian Church.

212. All three were in treatment for alcoholism. In exchange, the judges demanded 'no criticism of the New Zealand judiciary', or any member in it, or any person they nominated to protect'. Paul Holmes – a Jewish bisexual – became New Zealand's biggest methaphetamine (P) user, requiring at least four drug dealers, and was then made New Zealand's top broadcaster. He cleaned up in the Media Awards in 2008.
Why? Because Paul Holmes is the 'Washington Programmer'.

213. The Judiciary chose to ignore Holmes' drug use. The police were also instructed to do so. The police actively ignored Millie Elder's drug use, and when it came to sentencing, it was delayed until the public's interest reached zero. After a delay of six months, Millie Elder received no sentence – no jail time, and no community service from Judge Kiernan.[13]

214. Auckland District Court Deputy Registrar S T Wolfgramm's 2 July 2008 letter: "I will not be drawn into any discussion on any of the questions you have raised . . . as they do not relate to the infringements at hand", is typical of paedophile minders.

215. Judges use the same line.

216. Judges always limit the terms of reference to exclude any possibility of discussing a government, judicial or police con, yet these organisations are full of cons. It is what they do.

217. As a result, paedophiles flock to these organisations as a form of protection. Paedophiles are either part of these organisations or are married to people who work in them. As such, they are motivated to deceive the public, hence the saying:

"Don't expect Justice in the New Zealand judciary".

218. This has resulted in the New Zealand judiciary being a paedophile protectorate – an occult mafia that covers for paedophiles, supports paedophiles, and attacks anyone who exposes paedophiles. This includes people working in government organisations who are married to paedophiles/ child sex abusers, as is the case with Prime Minister Helen Clark and her husband Peter Davis; and the Chief Justice Sian Elias and her husband Hugh Fletcher.

---

[12] *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide*, 2007, pp. 11, 163; *How To Take Over The World*, 2007, pp. 241–45.

[13] *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide*, 2007, pp. 71–120, 186–88, 198, 203–08, 219, 265, 268–74, 284.

219. Particular to my case, while giving a speech in the Cook Islands on 21 August 2002, I exposed Helen Clark as a KGB agent. (**See Attachment "K"**, 'Rotary Club thank you') Clark is married to the homosexual child sex abuser Peter Davis.[14] This resulted in a 'silent weapons for a quiet war' attack on myself from the police and judiciary, both of which are motivated to cover for the paedophiles in their organisations. They attacked accordingly and these Affidavits and Attachments have recorded these attacks.

220. The Cook Islands Rotary speech resulted in an attack by the New Zealand Police – a paedophile and crime creation movement that uses rape and murder (unsolved) as a form of spreading misery.

221. The police get off the rapes and 90 per cent of the murders remain unsolved because the police were involved in committing them.

222. The police and judiciary are also compromised, so anyone having this information can get away with crimes scot-free.

223. My books and affidavits make this compromising information public.

224. This should limit such compromising police activity in the future – but who am I kidding.

225. Judicial corruption in conjunction with 'Silent Weapons for a Quiet War' leaves little room for one to move.

226. As such the New Zealand Judiciary is now known as 'a fraud'.
The Judiciary is a fraud.

227. The **Judiciary is also incapable of resolving a debt**. Why?
Because the judiciary is controlled by Visa who get to charge 22% instead of 8% by ensuring any commercial issue never gets a clear summary judgement, nor enforcement of collection, and is delayed to the point where it is forgotten.

228. Those employed by this fraud refuse to answer any questions, or deal with any information which may be defamatory to their fraudster employer. They simply refuse to acknowledge it in their next letter, just as Registrar Sam Wolfgramm (female) has done.

229. The New Zealand Judiciary is a bureaucratic player in Operations Research now extending into 'Common Purpose'. (**See Attachment "P"**, 'Silent Weapons for a Quiet War') 'Common Purpose' is the opposite of Common Sense.

230. Registrar Wolfgramm's letter dated 2 July 2008 and posted two days later, is true of a paedophile minder. "Congratulations! Your employment is secure."

231. In answer to his 2 July 2008 letter 'requesting information sent to and received by the Police Infringements Bureau in Wellington, in relation to this infringement, so that you may refer this information back to them' . . .

Registrar Wolfgramm's frames of reference are too small. You can't possibly solve a crime with such limited thinking, but then the New Zealand Police only solve 40 per cent of all crimes, and this includes traffic and drugs.

Worse still, the police create over 80 per cent of all crime, ensuring the Police have a negative influence on society.

232. In this case, instead of broadening the Police frames of reference to include one of their own in an attempted murder/s, and murder/s, the terms of inquiry have been limited to include myself and only one government department, in one location – Wellington, which – evidently, by 20 April 2009 – has done nothing.

---

[14] New Zealand, *A Blackmailer's Guide*, 2007, pp. 10, 88–90, 130, 167–68, 228; *How To Take Over The World*, 2007, pp. 163–69, 239–45.

233. This is not acceptable. This is not accepted.

234. I demand the frames of reference and terms of inquiry to include all the information in this Affidavit, these Attachments, and my previous Affidavits and Exhibits, and any future Affidavits and Attachments that I will no doubt present.

235. Commensurate with this, it is now impossible for a private investigator, or private investigation firm to look up the criminal record of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin.

236. The reason for this is that Constable James Matewhinau Cassin is a contract hitman for the police, working undercover in police uniform to carry out hits sanctioned by:
Prime Minister Helen Elizabeth Clark.
Chief Justice Sian Seerpoohi Elias.
Freemasons in the Police.
Catholics in the Police; and
Ombudsman Anand Satyanand – now Governor-General.

237. It is clear from this collection of documents, all of them, that there was a conspiracy to murder and that those who conspired gained.

238. Both Clint Rickards and Anand Satyanand were promoted to the highest offices they could attain, just after their respective roles in these events.

239. Clint Rickards was promoted just after the target (myself) was convicted and Ombudsman Anand Satyanand was promoted soon after he had squashed the investigation.

240. The hit was attempted on 23 August 2002 after revealing Helen Clark as a KGB agent.

241. The case was heard on 13 August 2003.

242. I lost completely and in every way under the accomplice Judge Gittos.

243. Nine weeks later, on 16 October 2003 Clint Rickards became Auckland City District Commander and Assistant Police Commissioner.

244. Clint Rickards had been a former Mongrel Mob member in the Hawke's Bay and was paid as a normal police officer (1978–79) while a gang member informing on his mates.

245. According to www.peterellis.org.nz/people/ClintRickards/timeline Clint Rickards left Edmund Rice College in Rotorua in 1978 and joined the police as a cadet in 1982. It was during this period, 1978–82 that he was in the Mongrel Mob in Hawke's Bay.

246. Clint Rickards is also a rapist, a kidnapper and paedophile with Louise Nicholas. According to Operation Austin, Rickards raped at least 34 women in Rotorua alone.

247. When Clint Rickards was in the New Zealand Police he acted as a hitman and trained others to do the same.

248. Ombudsman Anand Satyanand squashed my claims to James Matewhinau Cassin's criminal record on 31 January 2005 (after two years) then, having the wood on the contract killer PM Helen Clark, he put his name forward for Governor-General. This was considered by Clark. Despite being ideological opposites, she relented, and put his name forward to the Queen.
The Queen's Press Secretary announced it 14 months later.
Ombudsman Anand Satyanand assumed office as Governor-General on 23 August 2006.

249. I also note that Louise Nicholas sought help but was ignored.

250. The various correspondences relating to the attempted acquisition of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin's criminal record are in the 'Schedule of Attachments', listed in **Attachment "F"**.

251. Further evidence of Police corruption, warrant corruption, false arrest, Judicial corruption, Political corruption, Blacklisting, Murder attempts, Book sabotage, Career sabotage, New Zealand run as an MKULTRA mind control experiment, and the Judicary and associates using silent weapons for a quiet war, are included in the Attachments.

252. For confirmation that there is no coincidence involved, but there is targetting, see **Attachment "A"**, 'Bailiff turns up 10 June 2008'.

253. For confirmation that the judiciary ignores issues at its choosing, **see Attachment "C"**, 'Affidavits – Prime Minister and Chief Justice Contract Killers'.

254. For confirmation that District Court judges are corrupt and capable of accessory to murder and attempted murder, **see Attachment "E"**, 'District Court Hearing I'.

255. For confirmation that the High Court will go to lengths to cover up the corruption of the District Court judges, and, wants to ignore issues at its choosing, **see Attachment "G"**, 'High Court Hearing'.

256. For confirmation that the Police and District Court are incapable of admitting they were wrong, and will go to any lengths to continue targetted sabotage in breach of the Declaration of Helsinki and are fully in support of 'Silent Weapons for a Quiet War', Operations Research and Shock Testing, **see Attachment "H"**, 'Fines Refund', and **Attachment "P"**, 'Silent Weapons for a Quiet War'.

257. For confirmation that the Police are a social engineering, paedophile and crime creation movement **see Attachment "I"**, 'District Court Hearing II', and **Attachment "M"**, 'Police Create Crime'.

258. For confirmation that the Police ignore claims for compensation for their targetting, profiling, sabotage, shock testing, and/or murder (attempted or accomplice to), see **Attachment "J"**, 'Request for Compensation', and **see Attachment "L"**, 'Letter to *Investigate* magazine'.

259. For confirmation on why the Police create crime and support murder, see **Attachment "T"**, 'Mossad Murders in New Zealand'.

260. For confirmation that the Judiciary, Police and New Zealand Government are liars masquerading as socialists but performing as fascists, **see Attachment "U"**, 'Who the Blazes is John Howard?'

261. For confirmation that High Court judges and lawyers are involved in cons, hoaxes, sex and murder in support of the New Zealand Government **see Attachment "V"**, 'Pru Gee and Mike Lewis Goold'.

262. For confirmation that the Prime Minister Helen Clark and Minister of Foreign Affairs Phil Goff were involved in the murder of the Shah of Iran's rescuer Chris Beeby, see **Attachment "W"**, 'The Murder of Chris Beeby'.

263. For confirmation that the Prime Minister Helen Clark was involved in the murder of Sir Peter Blake, **see Attachment "X"**, 'Sir Peter Blake's Murder'.

264. For confirmation of the Financial Assassinations, Hobbling, Boiler-Plating, Blacklisting and murder attempts of Greg Hallett, **see Attachment "Y"**, 'Murder Attempts on Greg Hallett'.

265. For confirmation of Prime Minister Helen Clark's involvement in heroin trafficking under the guise of Political Correctness, **see Attachment "Z"**, 'The Greatest Living New Zealander'.

266. For confirmation of Government, Mayors, Businessmen, Lawyers and Police involvement in heroin trafficking under the guise of Profit, **see Attachment "ZZ"**, 'Heroin Trafficking, Lawyers & Mr Asia'.

267. For confirmation of the Government and Media's involvement in heroin trafficking (nationally and internationally), including NATO, **see Attachment "ZZZ"**, 'Big Afghan Heroin Dump'.

268. For confirmation of International Governments (NATO) involvement in paedophilia, heroin trafficking, engineering war and terrorism and bringing it right into New Zealand, **see Attachment "Z4"**, 'NATO & the UN Wanted War Criminals'.

269. For confirmation that New Zealand is a fascist country fronting as a socialist country and run by paedophiles, their minders, and the CIA (Counter-Intelligence Agency) **see Attachment "Z5"**, 'The CIA's Protection Racket for M.O.E. Paedophiles'.

270. For confirmation that the Auckland City Council confirms all of the above and below, including the paedophilia and CIA status of Auckland Mayor John Banks, see **Attachment "ii"**, 'Taxi Stand Ticket'.

271. For confirmation that the Auckland City Council is ready to ignore Auckland Mayor John Banks CIA and paedophile status, as well as Town Crier declarations of Helen Clark's murders as lodged in Court (in favour of a $40 fine), **see Attachment "iii"**, 'High Street Ticket'.

272. For confirmation that the Financial Meltdown in New York prevented New Zealand being taken over by the CIA as 'New Spain' for the advancement of Antarctica, see **Attachment "iv"**, 'Ticket to Ride' . . . but then the CIA came up with the idea of stealing NZ$28 billion in assets from Auckland under the guise of making it a Super City.

273. For the definition of truth, **see Attachment "TRUTH"**, 'The Beggar's Depair'.

274. For confirmation of the New Zealand Governments' involvement in the murder of Paul White, and corruption in the Judiciary, Police and Media resulting in a call for a Commission of Inquiry, **see Attachment "CoI"**, 'Commission of Inquiry into Police Theft and Murders'.[15]

275. For confirmation of Military and Police Intelligence having visual surveillance inside my house, **see catch me "tt"**, 'if you can'.

---

[15] The Police Officer – in charge of the scene where Paul White was murdered with police complicity – was sitting in the back of my 20 April 2009 High Court hearing. The only Police Officer in the room was one who organised murders. (Is this not confirmation of all that I have claimed?) My case had been rigged in a collusion between the Police, Auckland City Council, High Court Registrar, and the judge. The police were so confident of a conviction, they had the Chubb Security (lock change & towage) guy sitting through the hearing. The Police Officer invited Chubb to the drinks afterwards, but he wasn't allowed to drink so much that he couldn't tow the vehicle. I represented myself and won by using these documents (Affidavit & Attachments) which were then "sealed" by the judge. Twenty mintues into the hearing the High Court Deputy Registar buried his head face down in his arms and appeared to be in despair. Upon conclusion, and winning, the opposing lawyers congratulated me on my strategy. The next day was a different story. At 9 am the Police demanded a debrief from their lawyer, as did the Auckland City Council from their lawyer. A road block was then set up either side of my witnesses' residence, and when he was stopped that morning, detectives came and grilled him about the case (3 minor traffic tickets) frustrated that they didn't understand what had happened.

276. For confirmation that Helen Clark lied more than any other Prime Minister (see **Attachment "Z"**, 'The Greatest Living New Zealander', and is a lesbian-communist left of Mao, with bad mana, and promoted to the UN to join forces with NATO for the heroin-genocide event of the century, see **Dispatchment "Riddens & Denial"**, 'Helen Clark's Valedictory Speech'.

277. For a nearly full set of references see **Attachment "Ref"**, 'Bibliography'.

278. To find your way around, look up 'Insex'.

279. All of these Attachments relate to my case.

I seek to have all charges overturned and to charge the individuals named with the charges outlined.

This involves a material sum in compensation.

I seek compensation above the jurisdiction of the District Court (<$200,000) for the amount of one hundred million New Zealand dollars – NZ$100,000,000.00.

I appeal to the High Court for justice.

I appeal to have these matters heard in the High Court of New Zealand.

Justice must not only be done, it must also be seen to be done.

AFFIRMED at Auckland . . . .

This day of 2009

Before me . . . .

(Solicitor of the High Court / Deputy Registrar)

Affirmed under an oath to God as Undersigned shall be judged
doing so at Auckland, on Monday, this the twentieth day of April anno Domini 2009
As good as aval ,

....

Undersigned : Joseph-Gregory: Hallett capitas diminutio minima
B.Arch C.B.B. | PO Box 109 624 Newmarket | Auckland | New Zealand
all mail to : 26 Lichfield Road | Pamell | Auckland
All rights, powers, privileges, and immunities,
whether actual, contingent, or prospective : Reserved.
A living-breathing-soul Aggrieved and Injured Party, only in his standing
as beneficiary of the Original Jurisdiction for all private or admiralty/maritime
non-common/equity law purposes Supersedeas Bond No. 1961130997 applies.

as witnessed by:

....

NB: Use of a notary/Registrar is for attestation and verification purposes only
and does NOT constitute a change in standing, character and/or nature nor entrance of foreign jurisdiction.

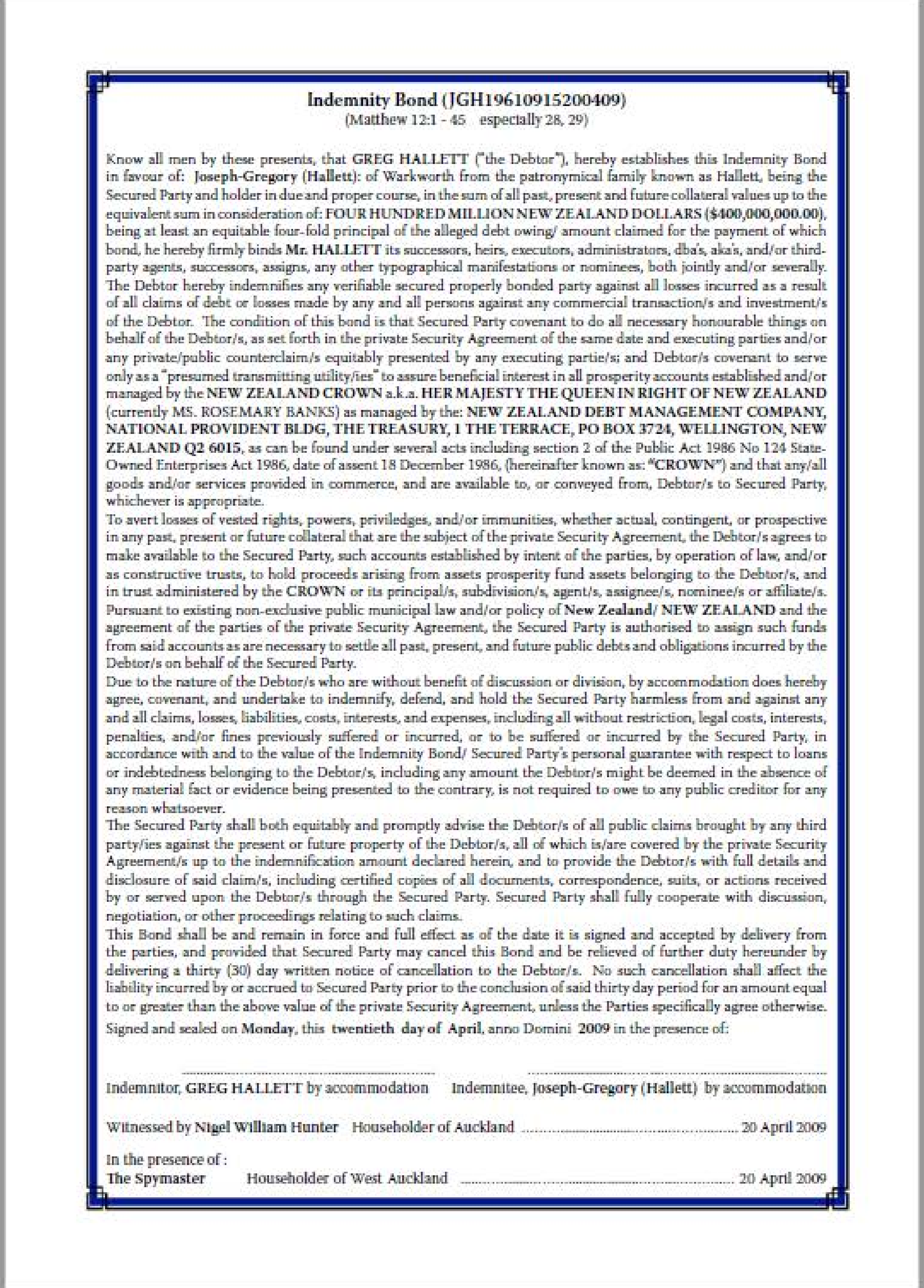

Indemnity Bond (JGH19610915200409)

(Matthew 12:1 - 45 especially 28, 29)

Know all men by these presents, that **GREG HALLETT** ("the Debtor"), hereby establishes this Indemnity Bond in favour of: **Joseph-Gregory (Hallett)**: of Warkworth from the patronymical family known as Hallett, being the Secured Party and holder in due and proper course, in the sum of all past, present and future collateral values up to the equivalent sum in consideration of: **FOUR HUNDRED MILLION NEW ZEALAND DOLLARS ($400,000,000.00)**, being at least an equitable four-fold principal of the alleged debt owing/ amount claimed for the payment of which bond, he hereby firmly binds **Mr. HALLETT** its successors, heirs, executors, administrators, dba's, aka's, and/or third-party agents, successors, assigns, any other typographical manifestations or nominees, both jointly and/or severally. The Debtor hereby indemnifies any verifiable secured properly bonded party against all losses incurred as a result of all claims of debt or losses made by any and all persons against any commercial transaction/s and investment/s of the Debtor. The condition of this bond is that Secured Party covenant to do all necessary honourable things on behalf of the Debtor/s, as set forth in the private Security Agreement of the same date and executing parties and/or any private/public counterclaim/s equitably presented by any executing partie/s; and Debtor/s covenant to serve only as a "presumed transmitting utility/ies" to assure beneficial interest in all prosperity accounts established and/or managed by the **NEW ZEALAND CROWN** a.k.a. **HER MAJESTY THE QUEEN IN RIGHT OF NEW ZEALAND** (currently MS. ROSEMARY BANKS) as managed by the: **NEW ZEALAND DEBT MANAGEMENT COMPANY, NATIONAL PROVIDENT BLDG, THE TREASURY, 1 THE TERRACE, PO BOX 3724, WELLINGTON, NEW ZEALAND Q2 6015**, as can be found under several acts including section 2 of the Public Act 1986 No 124 State-Owned Enterprises Act 1986, date of assent 18 December 1986, (hereinafter known as: **"CROWN"**) and that any/all goods and/or services provided in commerce, and are available to, or conveyed from, Debtor/s to Secured Party, whichever is appropriate.

To avert losses of vested rights, powers, priviledges, and/or immunities, whether actual, contingent, or prospective in any past, present or future collateral that are the subject of the private Security Agreement, the Debtor/s agrees to make available to the Secured Party, such accounts established by intent of the parties, by operation of law, and/or as constructive trusts, to hold proceeds arising from assets prosperity fund assets belonging to the Debtor/s, and in trust administered by the **CROWN** or its principal/s, subdivision/s, agent/s, assignee/s, nominee/s or affiliate/s. Pursuant to existing non-exclusive public municipal law and/or policy of **New Zealand/ NEW ZEALAND** and the agreement of the parties of the private Security Agreement, the Secured Party is authorised to assign such funds from said accounts as are necessary to settle all past, present, and future public debts and obligations incurred by the Debtor/s on behalf of the Secured Party.

Due to the nature of the Debtor/s who are without benefit of discussion or division, by accommodation does hereby agree, covenant, and undertake to indemnify, defend, and hold the Secured Party harmless from and against any and all claims, losses, liabilities, costs, interests, and expenses, including all without restriction, legal costs, interests, penalties, and/or fines previously suffered or incurred, or to be suffered or incurred by the Secured Party, in accordance with and to the value of the Indemnity Bond/ Secured Party's personal guarantee with respect to loans or indebtedness belonging to the Debtor/s, including any amount the Debtor/s might be deemed in the absence of any material fact or evidence being presented to the contrary, is not required to owe to any public creditor for any reason whatsoever.

The Secured Party shall both equitably and promptly advise the Debtor/s of all public claims brought by any third party/ies against the present or future property of the Debtor/s, all of which is/are covered by the private Security Agreement/s up to the indemnification amount declared herein, and to provide the Debtor/s with full details and disclosure of said claim/s, including certified copies of all documents, correspondence, suits, or actions received by or served upon the Debtor/s through the Secured Party. Secured Party shall fully cooperate with discussion, negotiation, or other proceedings relating to such claims.

This Bond shall be and remain in force and full effect as of the date it is signed and accepted by delivery from the parties, and provided that Secured Party may cancel this Bond and be relieved of further duty hereunder by delivering a thirty (30) day written notice of cancellation to the Debtor/s. No such cancellation shall affect the liability incurred by or accrued to Secured Party prior to the conclusion of said thirty day period for an amount equal to or greater than the above value of the private Security Agreement, unless the Parties specifically agree otherwise.

Signed and sealed on **Monday**, this **twentieth day of April**, anno Domini **2009** in the presence of:

....

Indemnitor, **GREG HALLETT** by accommodation Indemnitee, **Joseph-Gregory (Hallett)** by accommodation

Witnessed by **Nigel William Hunter** Householder of Auckland .... 20 April 2009

In the presence of :
The Spymaster Householder of West Auckland .... 20 April 2009

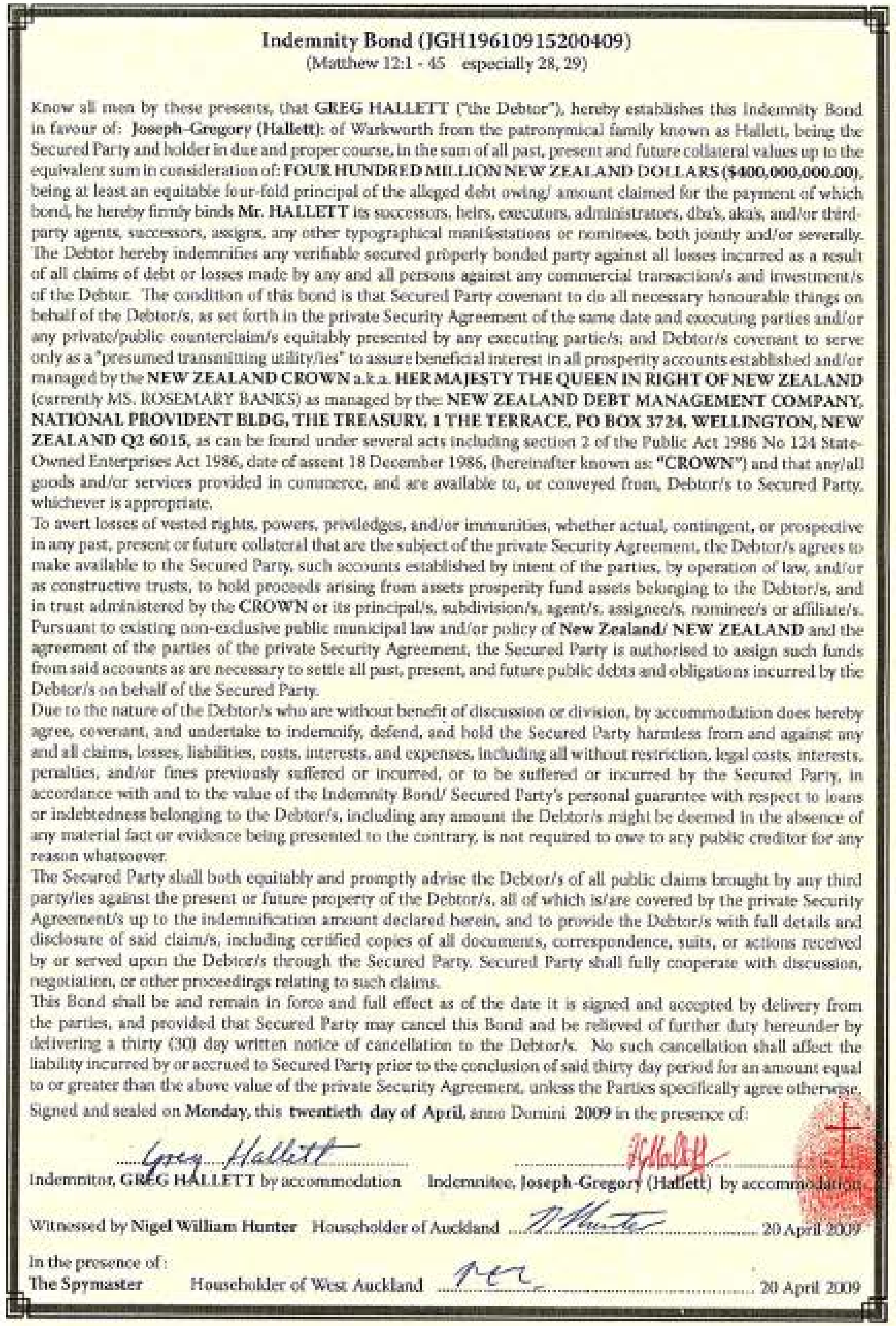

Indemnity Bond (JGH19610915200409)

(Matthew 12:1 - 45 especially 28, 29)

Know all men by these presents, that **GREG HALLETT** ("the Debtor"), hereby establishes this Indemnity Bond in favour of: **Joseph-Gregory (Hallett)**: of Warkworth from the patronymical family known as Hallett, being the Secured Party and holder in due and proper course, in the sum of all past, present and future collateral values up to the equivalent sum in consideration of: **FOUR HUNDRED MILLION NEW ZEALAND DOLLARS ($400,000,000.00)**, being at least an equitable four-fold principal of the alleged debt owing/ amount claimed for the payment of which bond, he hereby firmly binds **Mr. HALLETT** its successors, heirs, executors, administrators, dba's, aka's, and/or third-party agents, successors, assigns, any other typographical manifestations or nominees, both jointly and/or severally. The Debtor hereby indemnifies any verifiable secured properly bonded party against all losses incurred as a result of all claims of debt or losses made by any and all persons against any commercial transaction/s and investment/s of the Debtor. The condition of this bond is that Secured Party covenant to do all necessary honourable things on behalf of the Debtor/s, as set forth in the private Security Agreement of the same date and executing parties and/or any private/public counterclaim/s equitably presented by any executing partie/s; and Debtor/s covenant to serve only as a "presumed transmitting utility/ies" to assure beneficial interest in all prosperity accounts established and/or managed by the **NEW ZEALAND CROWN** a.k.a. **HER MAJESTY THE QUEEN IN RIGHT OF NEW ZEALAND** (currently MS. ROSEMARY BANKS) as managed by the: **NEW ZEALAND DEBT MANAGEMENT COMPANY, NATIONAL PROVIDENT BLDG, THE TREASURY, 1 THE TERRACE, PO BOX 3724, WELLINGTON, NEW ZEALAND Q2 6015**, as can be found under several acts including section 2 of the Public Act 1986 No 124 State-Owned Enterprises Act 1986, date of assent 18 December 1986, (hereinafter known as: **"CROWN"**) and that any/all goods and/or services provided in commerce, and are available to, or conveyed from, Debtor/s to Secured Party, whichever is appropriate.

To avert losses of vested rights, powers, priviledges, and/or immunities, whether actual, contingent, or prospective in any past, present or future collateral that are the subject of the private Security Agreement, the Debtor/s agrees to make available to the Secured Party, such accounts established by intent of the parties, by operation of law, and/or as constructive trusts, to hold proceeds arising from assets prosperity fund assets belonging to the Debtor/s, and in trust administered by the **CROWN** or its principal/s, subdivision/s, agent/s, assignee/s, nominee/s or affiliate/s. Pursuant to existing non-exclusive public municipal law and/or policy of **New Zealand/ NEW ZEALAND** and the agreement of the parties of the private Security Agreement, the Secured Party is authorised to assign such funds from said accounts as are necessary to settle all past, present, and future public debts and obligations incurred by the Debtor/s on behalf of the Secured Party.

Due to the nature of the Debtor/s who are without benefit of discussion or division, by accommodation does hereby agree, coverant, and undertake to indemnify, defend, and hold the Secured Party harmless from and against any and all claims, losses, liabilities, costs, interests, and expenses, including all without restriction, legal costs, interests, penalties, and/or fines previously suffered or incurred, or to be suffered or incurred by the Secured Party, in accordance with and to the value of the Indemnity Bond/ Secured Party's personal guarantee with respect to loans or indebtedness belonging to the Debtor/s, including any amount the Debtor/s might be deemed in the absence of any material fact or evidence being presented to the contrary, is not required to owe to any public creditor for any reason whatsoever.

The Secured Party shall both equitably and promptly advise the Debtor/s of all public claims brought by any third party/ies against the present or future property of the Debtor/s, all of which is/are covered by the private Security Agreement/s up to the indemnification amount declared herein, and to provide the Debtor/s with full details and disclosure of said claim/s, including certified copies of all documents, correspondence, suits, or actions received by or served upon the Debtor/s through the Secured Party. Secured Party shall fully cooperate with discussion, negotiation, or other proceedings relating to such claims.

This Bond shall be and remain in force and full effect as of the date it is signed and accepted by delivery from the parties, and provided that Secured Party may cancel this Bond and be relieved of further duty hereunder by delivering a thirty (30) day written notice of cancellation to the Debtor/s. No such cancellation shall affect the liability incurred by or accrued to Secured Party prior to the conclusion of said thirty day period for an amount equal to or greater than the above value of the private Security Agreement, unless the Parties specifically agree otherwise.

Signed and sealed on **Monday**, this **twentieth day of April**, anno Domini **2009** in the presence of:

Greg Hallett

Indemnitor, **GREG HALLETT** by accommodation

Indemnitee, **Joseph-Gregory (Hallett)** by accommodation

Witnessed by **Nigel William Hunter** Householder of Auckland .... 20 April 2009

In the presence of :
The Spymaster Householder of West Auckland .... 20 April 2009

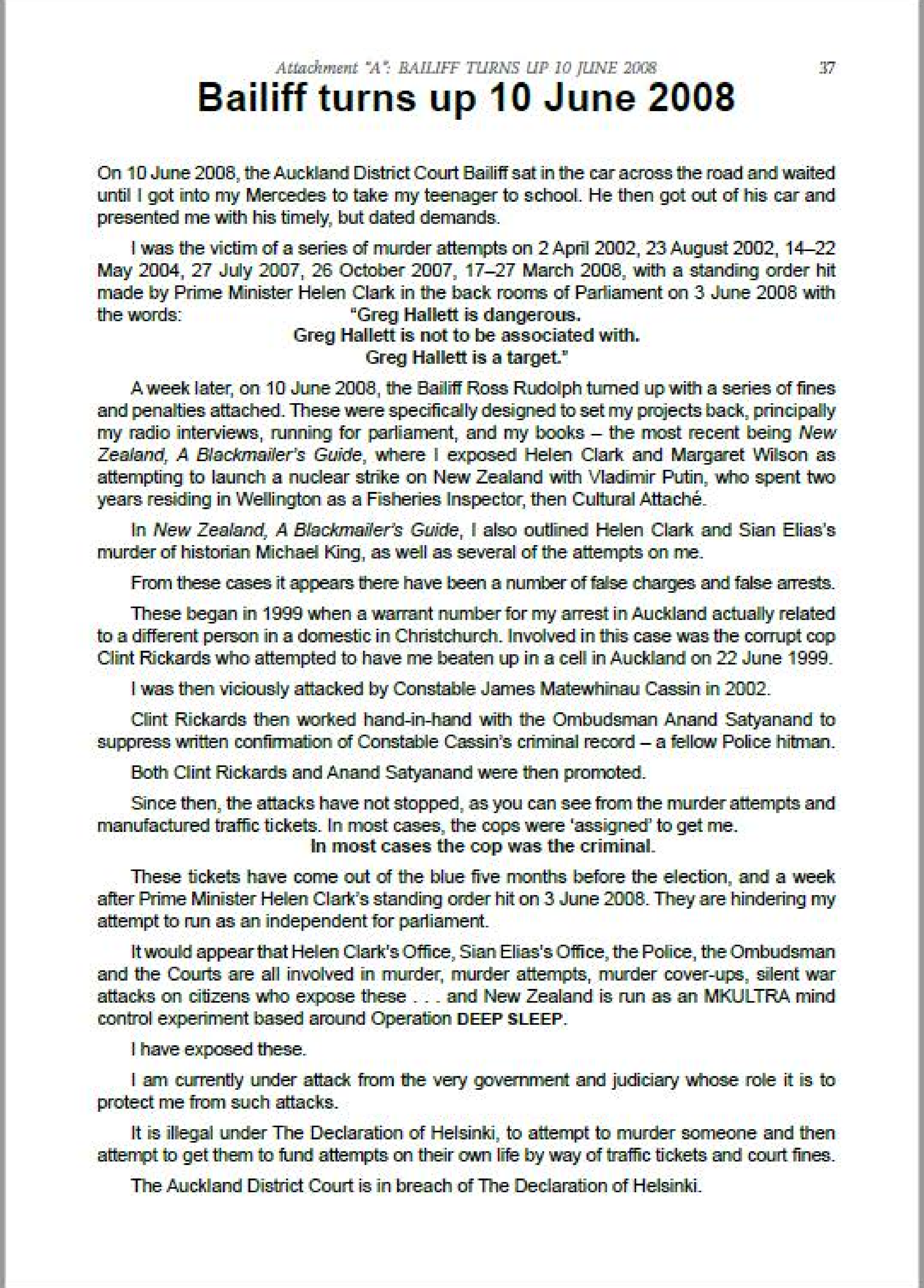

Bailiff turns up 10 June 2008

On 10 June 2008, the Auckland District Court Bailiff sat in the car across the road and waited until I got into my Mercedes to take my teenager to school. He then got out of his car and presented me with his timely, but dated demands.

I was the victim of a series of murder attempts on 2 April 2002, 23 August 2002, 14–22 May 2004, 27 July 2007, 26 October 2007, 17–27 March 2008, with a standing order hit made by Prime Minister Helen Clark in the back rooms of Parliament on 3 June 2008 with the words:

"Greg Hallett is dangerous.
Greg Hallett is not to be associated with.
Greg Hallett is a target."

A week later, on 10 June 2008, the Bailiff Ross Rudolph turned up with a series of fines and penalties attached. These were specifically designed to set my projects back, principally my radio interviews, running for parliament, and my books – the most recent being *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide*, where I exposed Helen Clark and Margaret Wilson as attempting to launch a nuclear strike on New Zealand with Vladimir Putin, who spent two years residing in Wellington as a Fisheries Inspector, then Cultural Attaché.

In *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide*, I also outlined Helen Clark and Sian Elias's murder of historian Michael King, as well as several of the attempts on me.

From these cases it appears there have been a number of false charges and false arrests.

These began in 1999 when a warrant number for my arrest in Auckland actually related to a different person in a domestic in Christchurch. Involved in this case was the corrupt cop Clint Rickards who attempted to have me beaten up in a cell in Auckland on 22 June 1999.

I was then viciously attacked by Constable James Matewhinau Cassin in 2002.

Clint Rickards then worked hand-in-hand with the Ombudsman Anand Satyanand to suppress written confirmation of Constable Cassin's criminal record – a fellow Police hitman.

Both Clint Rickards and Anand Satyanand were then promoted.

Since then, the attacks have not stopped, as you can see from the murder attempts and manufactured traffic tickets. In most cases, the cops were 'assigned' to get me.

In most cases the cop was the criminal.

These tickets have come out of the blue five months before the election, and a week after Prime Minister Helen Clark's standing order hit on 3 June 2008. They are hindering my attempt to run as an independent for parliament.

It would appear that Helen Clark's Office, Sian Elias's Office, the Police, the Ombudsman and the Courts are all involved in murder, murder attempts, murder cover-ups, silent war attacks on citizens who expose these . . . and New Zealand is run as an MKULTRA mind control experiment based around Operation **DEEP SLEEP**.

I have exposed these.

I am currently under attack from the very government and judiciary whose role it is to protect me from such attacks.

It is illegal under The Declaration of Helsinki, to attempt to murder someone and then attempt to get them to fund attempts on their own life by way of traffic tickets and court fines.

The Auckland District Court is in breach of The Declaration of Helsinki.

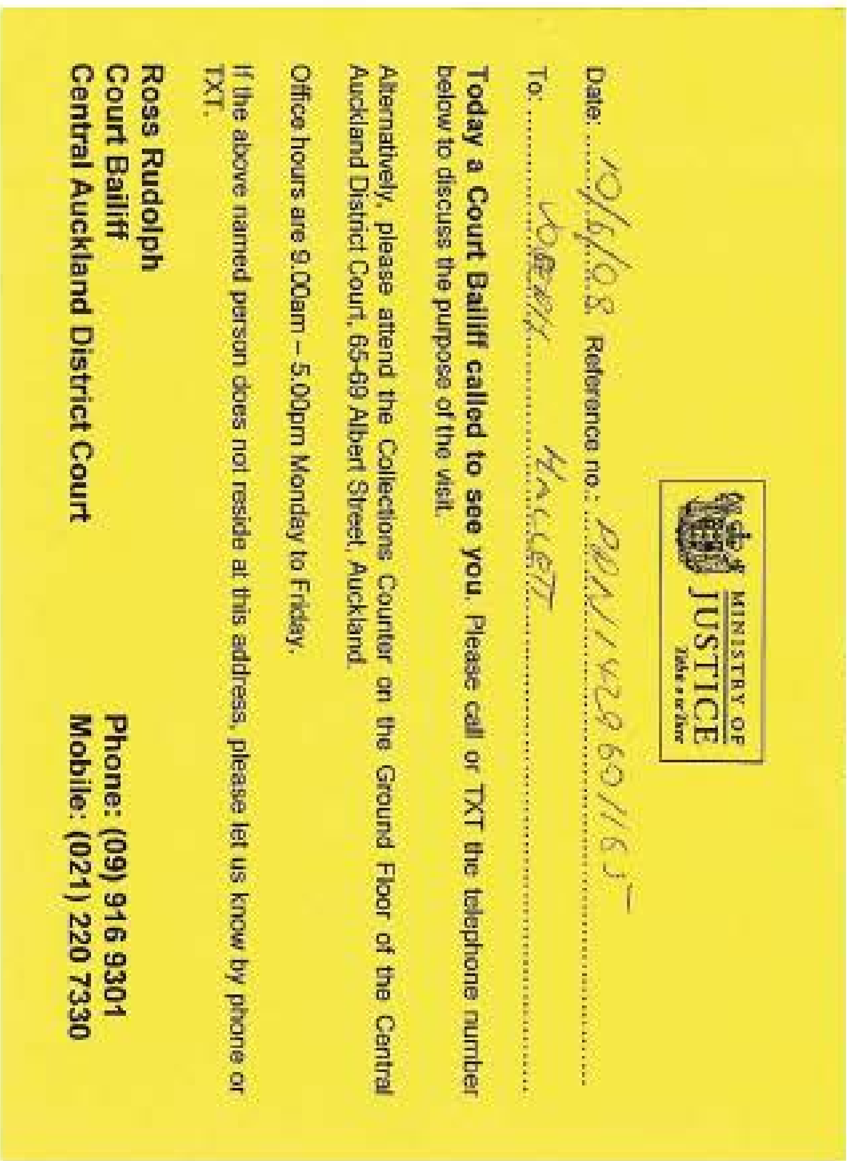

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

Date: 10/6/08 Reference no.: PPN/1429601165

To: JOSEPH HALLETT

Today a Court Bailiff called to see you. Please call or TXT the telephone number below to discuss the purpose of the visit.

Alternatively, please attend the Collections Counter on the Ground Floor of the Central Auckland District Court, 65-69 Albert Street, Auckland.

Office hours are 9.00am – 5.00pm Monday to Friday.

If the above named person does not reside at this address, please let us know by phone or TXT.

Ross Rudolph
Court Bailiff
Central Auckland District Court

Phone: (09) 916 9301
Mobile: (021) 220 7330

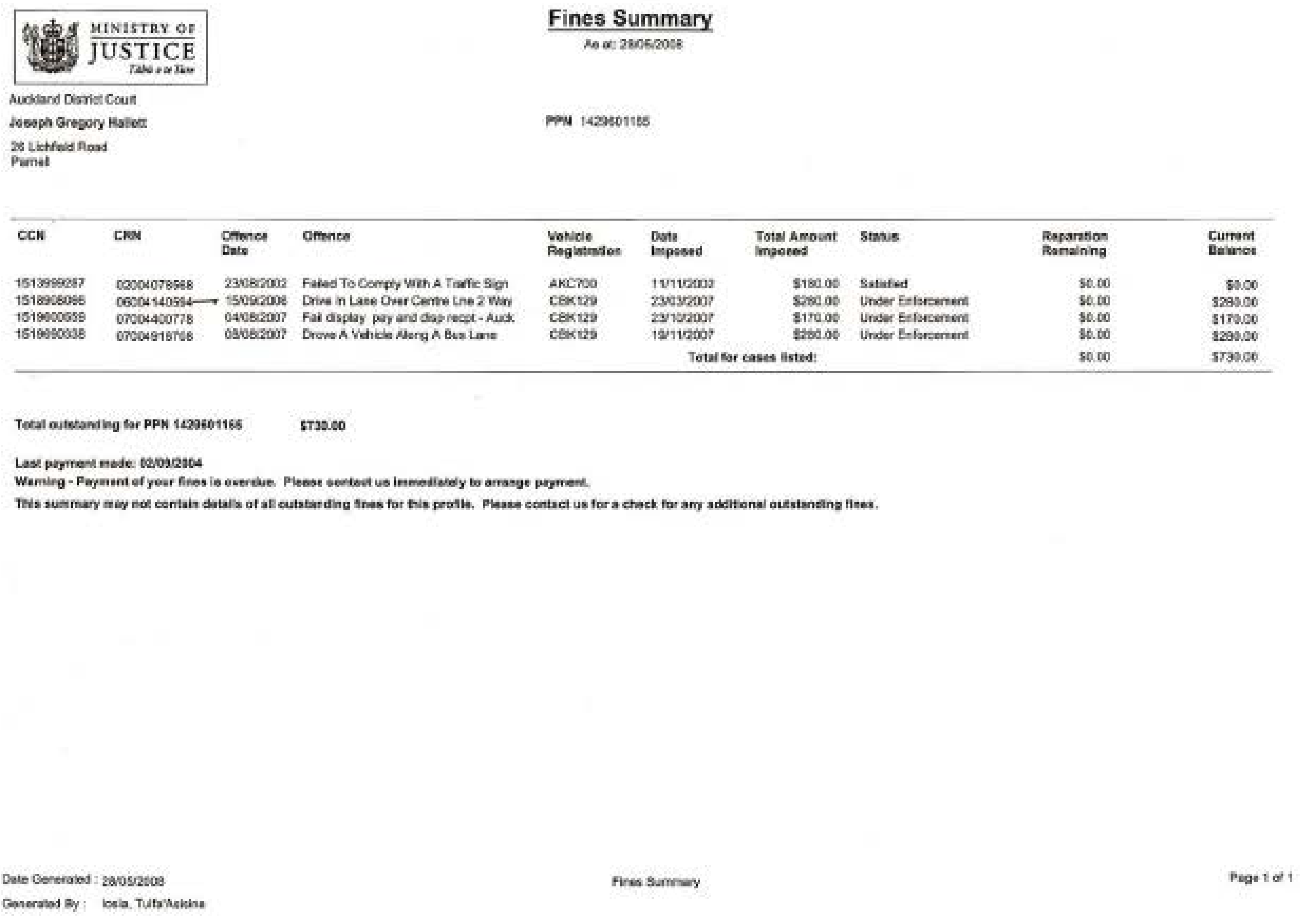

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

Fines Summary

As at: 28/05/2008

Auckland District Court
Joseph Gregory Hallett
26 Lichfield Road
Parnell

PPN 1429601165

CCN	CRN	Offence Date	Offence	Vehicle Registration	Date Imposed	Total Amount Imposed	Status	Reparation Remaining	Current Balance
1513999287	02004078968	23/08/2002	Failed To Comply With A Traffic Sign	AKC700	11/11/2002	$180.00	Satisfied	$0.00	$0.00
1518908066	06004140594	15/09/2006	Drive In Lane Over Centre Lne 2 Way	CBK129	23/03/2007	$280.00	Under Enforcement	$0.00	$280.00
1519600059	07004400778	04/08/2007	Fail display pay and disp recpt - Auck	CBK129	23/10/2007	$170.00	Under Enforcement	$0.00	$170.00
1519690038	07004918768	03/08/2007	Drove A Vehicle Along A Bus Lane	CBK129	19/11/2007	$280.00	Under Enforcement	$0.00	$280.00
					Total for cases listed:			$0.00	$730.00

Total outstanding for PPN 1429601165 $730.00

Last payment made: 02/09/2004
Warning - Payment of your fines is overdue. Please contact us immediately to arrange payment.
This summary may not contain details of all outstanding fines for this profile. Please contact us for a check for any additional outstanding fines.

Date Generated : 28/05/2008
Generated By : Iosia, Tuifa'Asisina

Fines Summary

Page 1 of 1

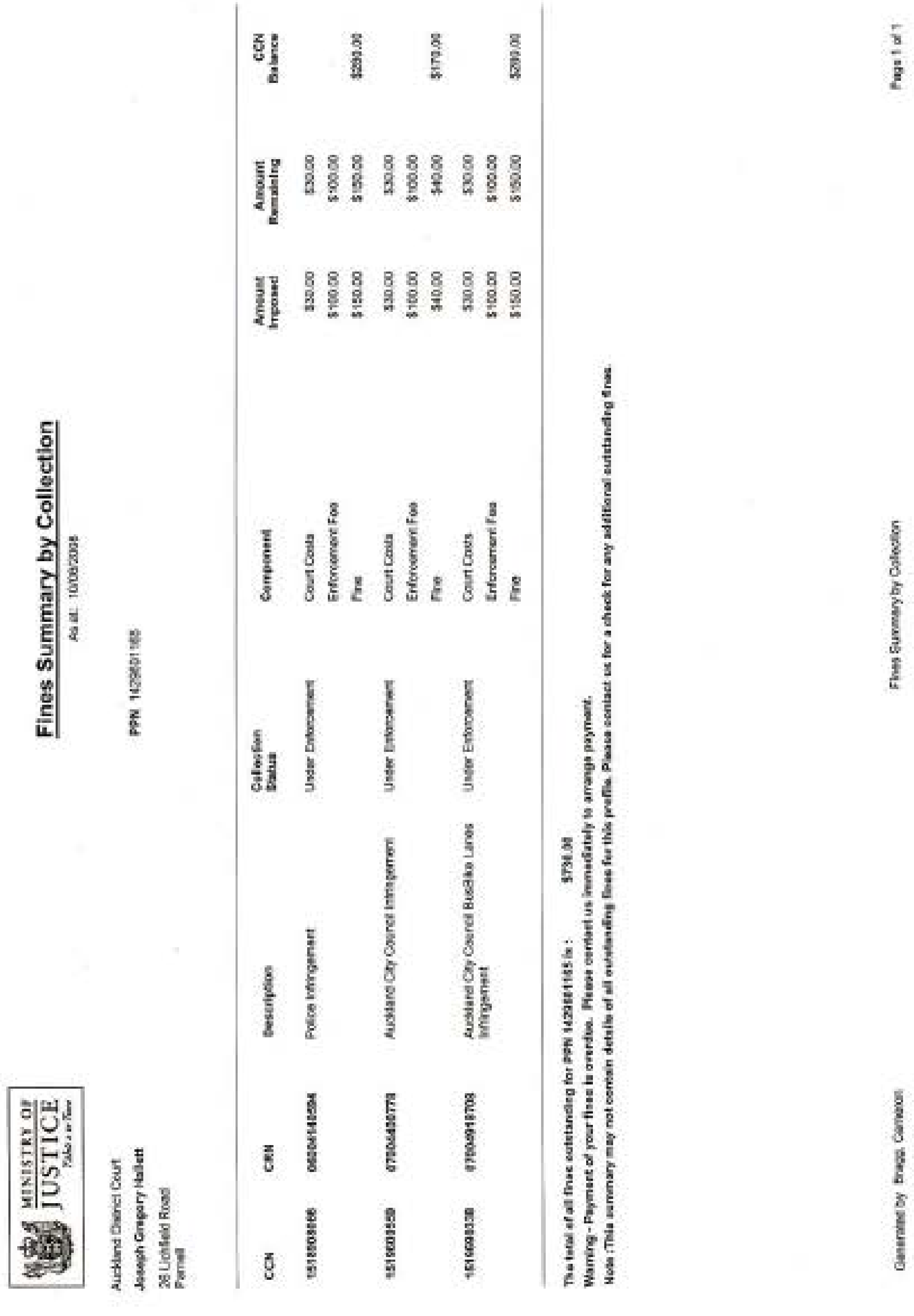

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE

Fines Summary by Collection

As at: 10/06/2008

Auckland District Court
Joseph Gregory Hallett
26 Lichfield Road
Parnell

PPN 1429601165

CCN	CRN	Description	Collection Status	Component	Amount Imposed	Amount Remaining	CCN Balance
1518903696	06004140594	Police Infringement	Under Enforcement	Court Costs	$30.00	$30.00	
				Enforcement Fee	$100.00	$100.00	
				Fine	$150.00	$150.00	$280.00
1519603659	07004400778	Auckland City Council Infringement	Under Enforcement	Court Costs	$30.00	$30.00	
				Enforcement Fee	$100.00	$100.00	
				Fine	$40.00	$40.00	$170.00
1519690338	07004918708	Auckland City Council BusBike Lanes Infringement	Under Enforcement	Court Costs	$30.00	$30.00	
				Enforcement Fee	$100.00	$100.00	
				Fine	$150.00	$150.00	$280.00

The total of all fines outstanding for PPN 1429601165 is : $730.00

Warning - Payment of your fines is overdue. Please contact us immediately to arrange payment.

Note :This summary may not contain details of all outstanding fines for this profile. Please contact us for a check for any additional outstanding fines.

Generated by Bragg, Cameron   Fines Summary by Collection   Page 1 of 1

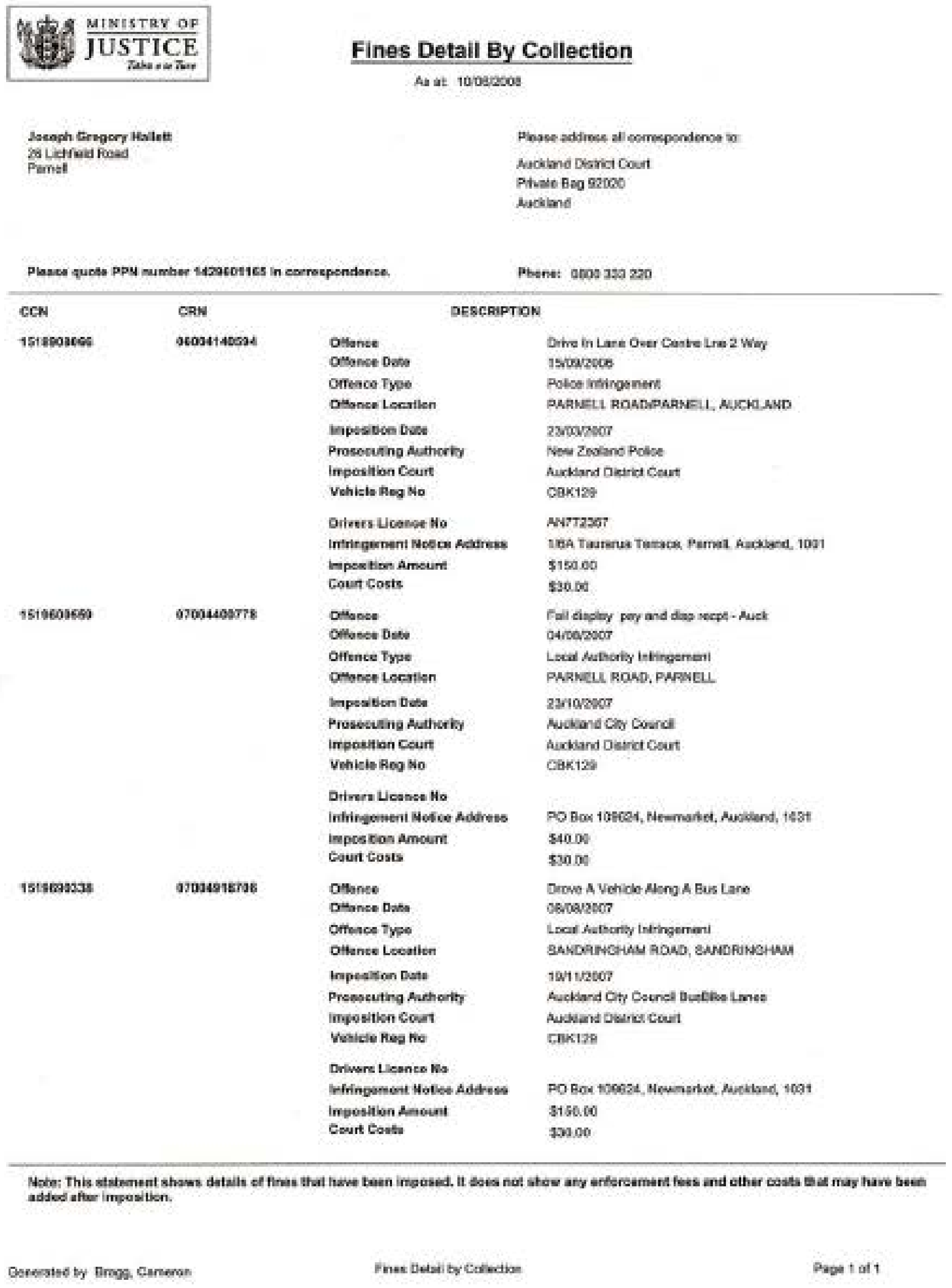

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE

Fines Detail By Collection

As at: 10/06/2008

Joseph Gregory Hallett
26 Lichfield Road
Parnell

Please address all correspondence to:

Auckland District Court
Private Bag 92020
Auckland

Please quote PPN number 1429601165 in correspondence.

Phone: 0800 330 220

CCN	CRN	DESCRIPTION	
1518903696	06004140594	**Offence**	Drive In Lane Over Centre Lne 2 Way
		Offence Date	15/09/2006
		Offence Type	Police Infringement
		Offence Location	PARNELL ROAD/PARNELL, AUCKLAND
		Imposition Date	23/03/2007
		Prosecuting Authority	New Zealand Police
		Imposition Court	Auckland District Court
		Vehicle Reg No	CBK129
		Drivers Licence No	AN772307
		Infringement Notice Address	1/8A Taurarua Terrace, Parnell, Auckland, 1001
		Imposition Amount	$150.00
		Court Costs	$30.00
1519603659	07004400778	**Offence**	Fail display pay and disp recpt - Auck
		Offence Date	04/08/2007
		Offence Type	Local Authority Infringement
		Offence Location	PARNELL ROAD, PARNELL
		Imposition Date	23/10/2007
		Prosecuting Authority	Auckland City Council
		Imposition Court	Auckland District Court
		Vehicle Reg No	CBK129
		Drivers Licence No	
		Infringement Notice Address	PO Box 109024, Newmarket, Auckland, 1031
		Imposition Amount	$40.00
		Court Costs	$30.00
1519690338	07004918708	**Offence**	Drove A Vehicle Along A Bus Lane
		Offence Date	08/08/2007
		Offence Type	Local Authority Infringement
		Offence Location	SANDRINGHAM ROAD, SANDRINGHAM
		Imposition Date	19/11/2007
		Prosecuting Authority	Auckland City Council BusBike Lanes
		Imposition Court	Auckland District Court
		Vehicle Reg No	CBK129
		Drivers Licence No	
		Infringement Notice Address	PO Box 109024, Newmarket, Auckland, 1031
		Imposition Amount	$150.00
		Court Costs	$30.00

Note: This statement shows details of fines that have been imposed. It does not show any enforcement fees and other costs that may have been added after imposition.

Generated by Bragg, Cameron   Fines Detail by Collection   Page 1 of 1

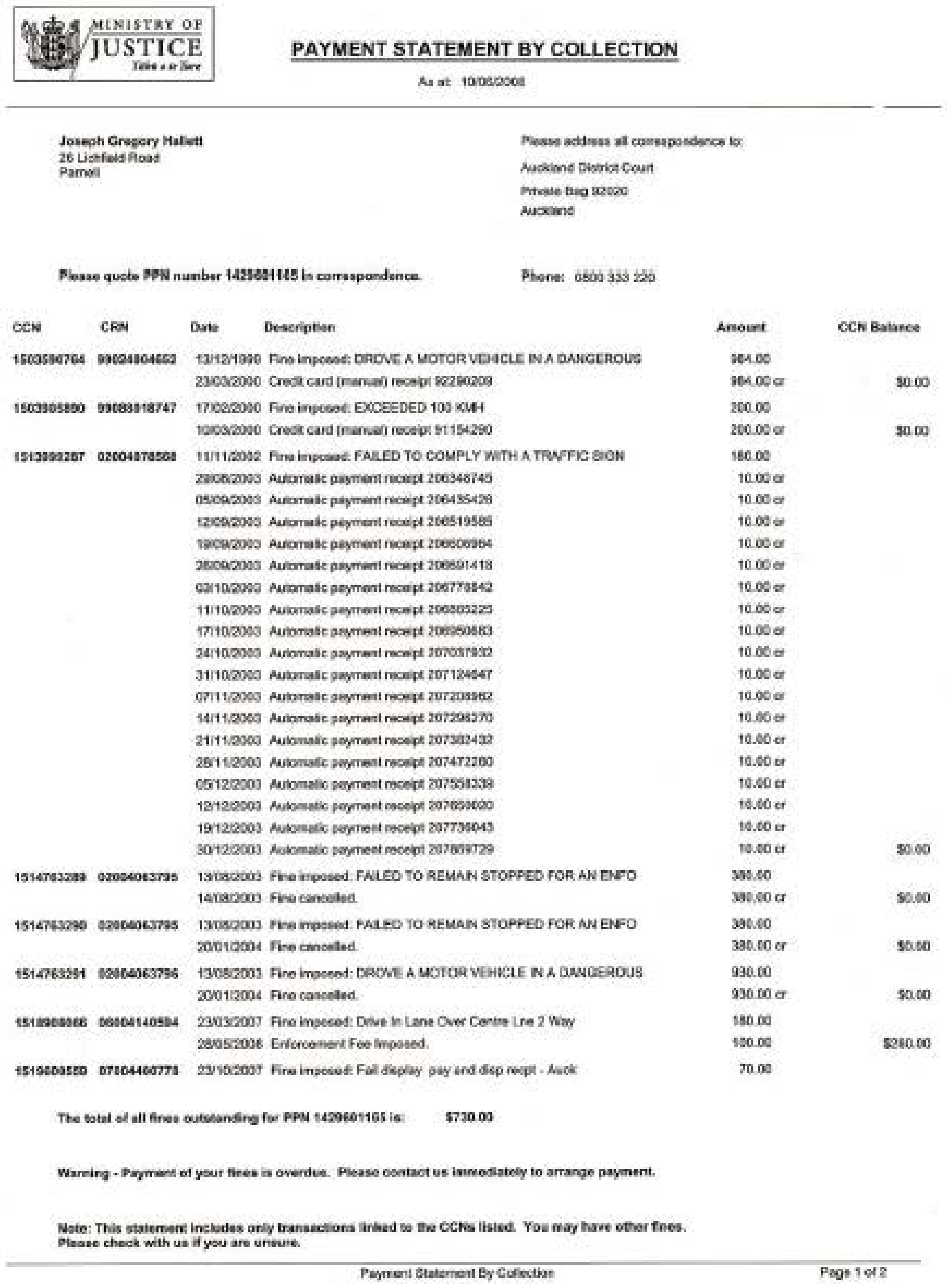

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

PAYMENT STATEMENT BY COLLECTION

As at: 10/06/2008

Joseph Gregory Hallett
26 Lichfield Road
Parnell

Please address all correspondence to:

Auckland District Court

Private Bag 92020

Auckland

Please quote PPN number 1429601165 in correspondence.

Phone: 0800 333 220

CCN	CRN	Date	Description	Amount	CCN Balance
1503590704	**99024804652**	13/12/1999	Fine imposed: DROVE A MOTOR VEHICLE IN A DANGEROUS	964.00	
		23/03/2000	Credit card (manual) receipt 92290209	964.00 cr	$0.00
1503905880	**99088818747**	17/02/2000	Fine imposed: EXCEEDED 100 KMH	200.00	
		10/03/2000	Credit card (manual) receipt 91154290	200.00 cr	$0.00
1513990287	**02004878508**	11/11/2002	Fine imposed: FAILED TO COMPLY WITH A TRAFFIC SIGN	180.00	
		29/08/2003	Automatic payment receipt 206348745	10.00 cr	
		05/09/2003	Automatic payment receipt 206435428	10.00 cr	
		12/09/2003	Automatic payment receipt 206519585	10.00 cr	
		19/09/2003	Automatic payment receipt 206606964	10.00 cr	
		26/09/2003	Automatic payment receipt 206691418	10.00 cr	
		03/10/2003	Automatic payment receipt 206778842	10.00 cr	
		11/10/2003	Automatic payment receipt 206865225	10.00 cr	
		17/10/2003	Automatic payment receipt 206950663	10.00 cr	
		24/10/2003	Automatic payment receipt 207037932	10.00 cr	
		31/10/2003	Automatic payment receipt 207124647	10.00 cr	
		07/11/2003	Automatic payment receipt 207208962	10.00 cr	
		14/11/2003	Automatic payment receipt 207296270	10.00 cr	
		21/11/2003	Automatic payment receipt 207382432	10.00 cr	
		28/11/2003	Automatic payment receipt 207472260	10.00 cr	
		05/12/2003	Automatic payment receipt 207558339	10.00 cr	
		12/12/2003	Automatic payment receipt 207650020	10.00 cr	
		19/12/2003	Automatic payment receipt 207736043	10.00 cr	
		30/12/2003	Automatic payment receipt 207869729	10.00 cr	$0.00
1514763289	**02004063795**	13/08/2003	Fine imposed: FAILED TO REMAIN STOPPED FOR AN ENFO	380.00	
		14/08/2003	Fine cancelled.	380.00 cr	$0.00
1514763290	**02004063795**	13/08/2003	Fine imposed: FAILED TO REMAIN STOPPED FOR AN ENFO	380.00	
		20/01/2004	Fine cancelled.	380.00 cr	$0.00
1514763291	**02004063796**	13/08/2003	Fine imposed: DROVE A MOTOR VEHICLE IN A DANGEROUS	930.00	
		20/01/2004	Fine cancelled.	930.00 cr	$0.00
1518908066	**06004140504**	23/03/2007	Fine imposed: Drive In Lane Over Centre Lne 2 Way	180.00	
		28/05/2008	Enforcement Fee Imposed.	100.00	$280.00
1519600550	**07004400778**	23/10/2007	Fine imposed: Fail display pay and disp recpt - Auck	70.00	

The total of all fines outstanding for PPN 1429601165 is: $730.00

Warning - Payment of your fines is overdue. Please contact us immediately to arrange payment.

**Note: This statement includes only transactions linked to the CCNs listed. You may have other fines.
Please check with us if you are unsure.**

Payment Statement By Collection Page 1 of 2

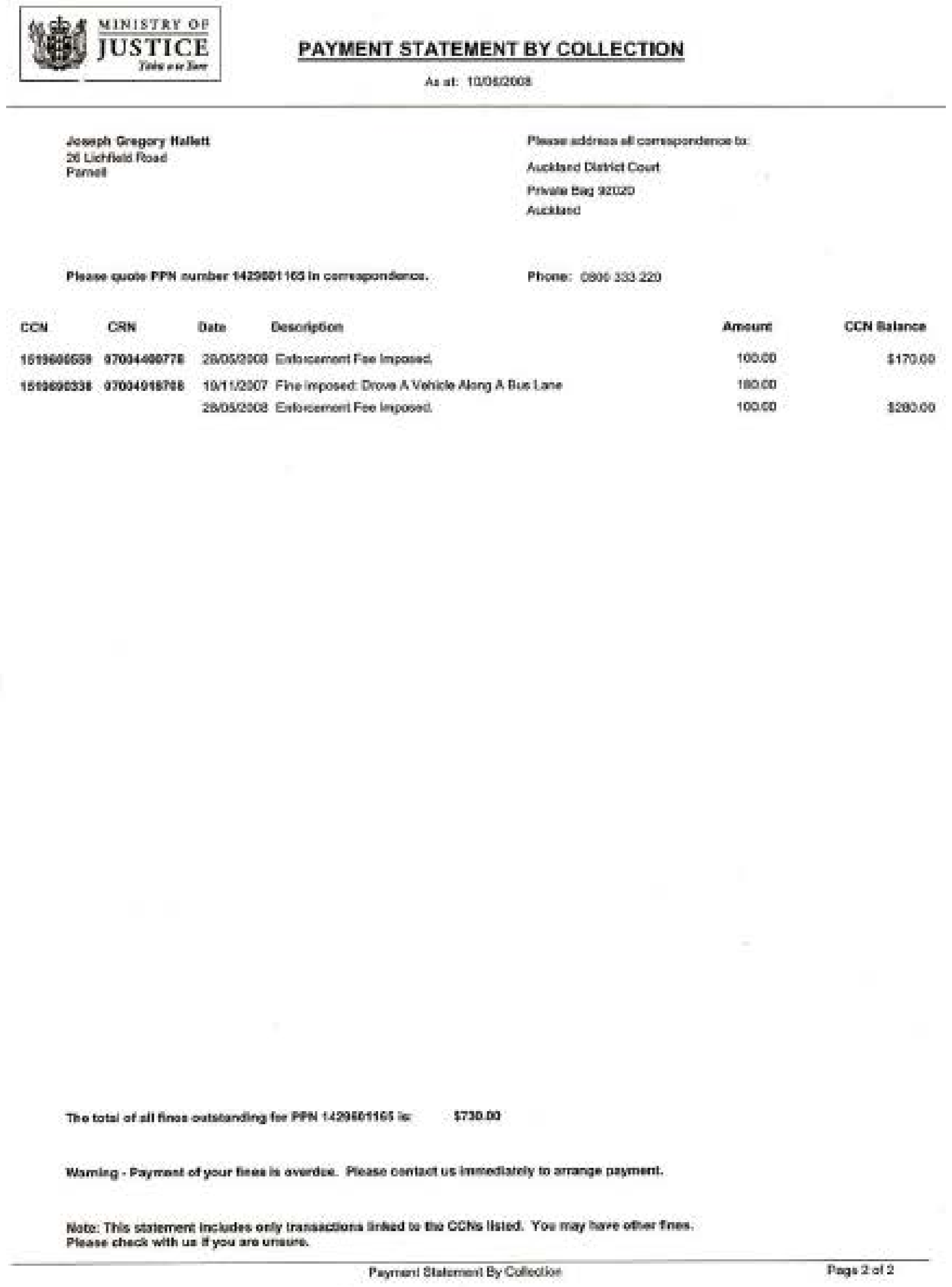

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

PAYMENT STATEMENT BY COLLECTION

As at: 10/06/2008

Joseph Gregory Hallett
26 Lichfield Road
Parnell

Please address all correspondence to:

Auckland District Court

Private Bag 92020

Auckland

Please quote PPN number 1429601165 in correspondence.

Phone: 0800 333 220

CCN	CRN	Date	Description	Amount	CCN Balance
1519600550	**07004400778**	28/05/2008	Enforcement Fee Imposed.	100.00	$170.00
1519690338	**07004918768**	19/11/2007	Fine imposed: Drove A Vehicle Along A Bus Lane	180.00	
		28/05/2008	Enforcement Fee Imposed.	100.00	$280.00

The total of all fines outstanding for PPN 1429601165 is: $730.00

Warning - Payment of your fines is overdue. Please contact us immediately to arrange payment.

**Note: This statement includes only transactions linked to the CCNs listed. You may have other fines.
Please check with us if you are unsure.**

Payment Statement By Collection Page 2 of 2

DEEP SLEEP
"YOU'RE SCREWED"

DEEP SLEEP
"PARANOID FUTURES"

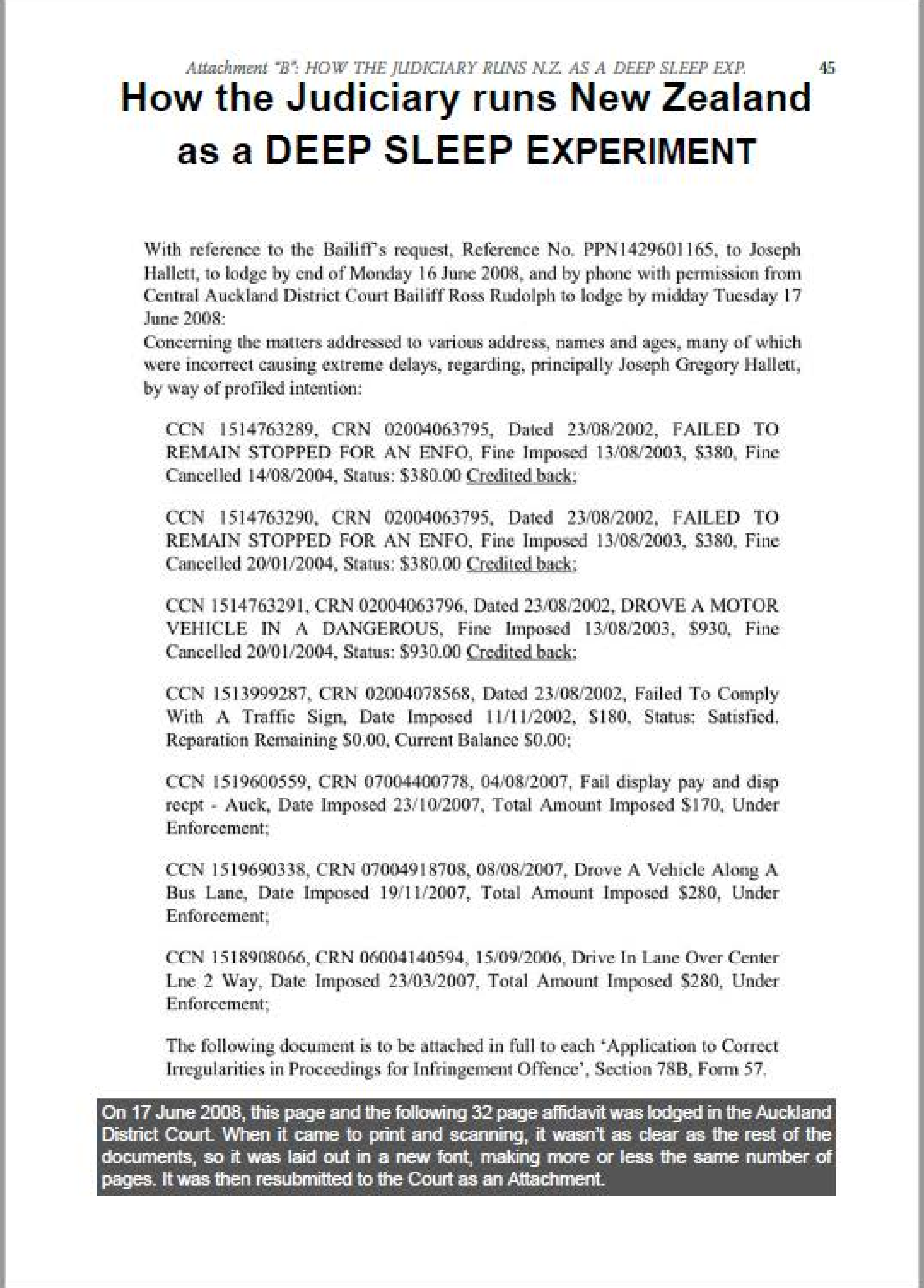

How the Judiciary runs New Zealand as a DEEP SLEEP EXPERIMENT

With reference to the Bailiff's request, Reference No. PPN1429601165, to Joseph Hallett, to lodge by end of Monday 16 June 2008, and by phone with permission from Central Auckland District Court Bailiff Ross Rudolph to lodge by midday Tuesday 17 June 2008:
Concerning the matters addressed to various address, names and ages, many of which were incorrect causing extreme delays, regarding, principally Joseph Gregory Hallett, by way of profiled intention:

> CCN 1514763289, CRN 02004063795, Dated 23/08/2002, FAILED TO REMAIN STOPPED FOR AN ENFO, Fine Imposed 13/08/2003, $380, Fine Cancelled 14/08/2004, Status: $380.00 Credited back;
>
> CCN 1514763290, CRN 02004063795, Dated 23/08/2002, FAILED TO REMAIN STOPPED FOR AN ENFO, Fine Imposed 13/08/2003, $380, Fine Cancelled 20/01/2004, Status: $380.00 Credited back;
>
> CCN 1514763291, CRN 02004063796, Dated 23/08/2002, DROVE A MOTOR VEHICLE IN A DANGEROUS, Fine Imposed 13/08/2003, $930, Fine Cancelled 20/01/2004, Status: $930.00 Credited back;
>
> CCN 1513999287, CRN 02004078568, Dated 23/08/2002, Failed To Comply With A Traffic Sign, Date Imposed 11/11/2002, $180, Status: Satisfied. Reparation Remaining $0.00, Current Balance $0.00;
>
> CCN 1519600559, CRN 07004400778, 04/08/2007, Fail display pay and disp recpt - Auck, Date Imposed 23/10/2007, Total Amount Imposed $170, Under Enforcement;
>
> CCN 1519690338, CRN 07004918708, 08/08/2007, Drove A Vehicle Along A Bus Lane, Date Imposed 19/11/2007, Total Amount Imposed $280, Under Enforcement;
>
> CCN 1518908066, CRN 06004140594, 15/09/2006, Drive In Lane Over Center Lne 2 Way, Date Imposed 23/03/2007, Total Amount Imposed $280, Under Enforcement;
>
> The following document is to be attached in full to each 'Application to Correct Irregularities in Proceedings for Infringement Offence', Section 78B, Form 57.

On 17 June 2008, this page and the following 32 page affidavit was lodged in the Auckland District Court. When it came to print and scanning, it wasn't as clear as the rest of the documents, so it was laid out in a new font, making more or less the same number of pages. It was then resubmitted to the Court as an Attachment.

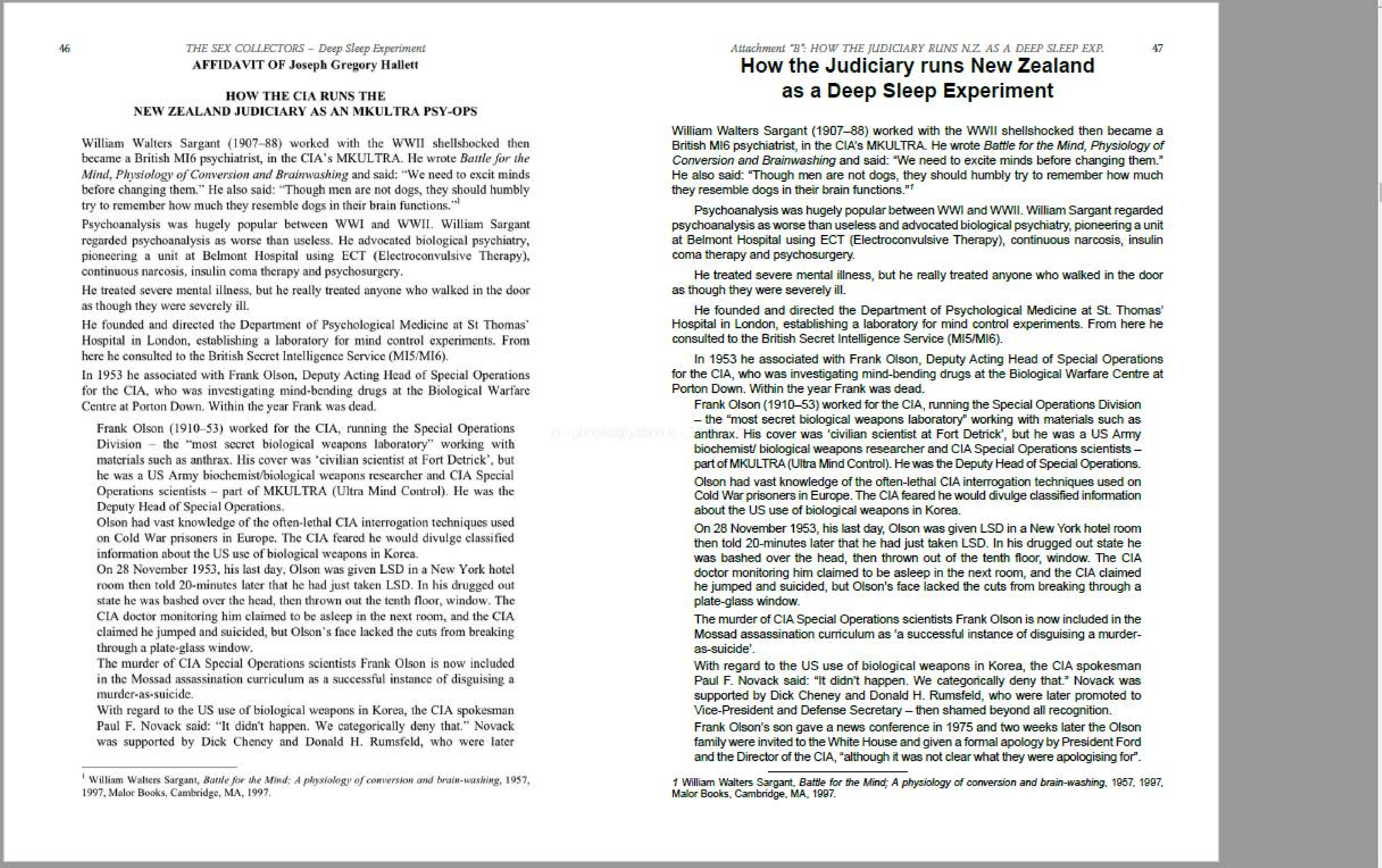

AFFIDAVIT OF Joseph Gregory Hallett

HOW THE CIA RUNS THE NEW ZEALAND JUDICIARY AS AN MKULTRA PSY-OPS

William Walters Sargant (1907–88) worked with the WWII shellshocked then became a British MI6 psychiatrist, in the CIA's MKULTRA. He wrote *Battle for the Mind, Physiology of Conversion and Brainwashing* and said: "We need to excit minds before changing them." He also said: "Though men are not dogs, they should humbly try to remember how much they resemble dogs in their brain functions."[1]

Psychoanalysis was hugely popular between WWI and WWII. William Sargant regarded psychoanalysis as worse than useless. He advocated biological psychiatry, pioneering a unit at Belmont Hospital using ECT (Electroconvulsive Therapy), continuous narcosis, insulin coma therapy and psychosurgery.

He treated severe mental illness, but he really treated anyone who walked in the door as though they were severely ill.

He founded and directed the Department of Psychological Medicine at St Thomas' Hospital in London, establishing a laboratory for mind control experiments. From here he consulted to the British Secret Intelligence Service (MI5/MI6).

In 1953 he associated with Frank Olson, Deputy Acting Head of Special Operations for the CIA, who was investigating mind-bending drugs at the Biological Warfare Centre at Porton Down. Within the year Frank was dead.

> Frank Olson (1910–53) worked for the CIA, running the Special Operations Division – the "most secret biological weapons laboratory" working with materials such as anthrax. His cover was 'civilian scientist at Fort Detrick', but he was a US Army biochemist/biological weapons researcher and CIA Special Operations scientists – part of MKULTRA (Ultra Mind Control). He was the Deputy Head of Special Operations.
>
> Olson had vast knowledge of the often-lethal CIA interrogation techniques used on Cold War prisoners in Europe. The CIA feared he would divulge classified information about the US use of biological weapons in Korea.
>
> On 28 November 1953, his last day, Olson was given LSD in a New York hotel room then told 20-minutes later that he had just taken LSD. In his drugged out state he was bashed over the head, then thrown out the tenth floor, window. The CIA doctor monitoring him claimed to be asleep in the next room, and the CIA claimed he jumped and suicided, but Olson's face lacked the cuts from breaking through a plate-glass window.
>
> The murder of CIA Special Operations scientists Frank Olson is now included in the Mossad assassination curriculum as a successful instance of disguising a murder-as-suicide.
>
> With regard to the US use of biological weapons in Korea, the CIA spokesman Paul F. Novack said: "It didn't happen. We categorically deny that." Novack was supported by Dick Cheney and Donald H. Rumsfeld, who were later

---

[1] William Walters Sargant, *Battle for the Mind; A physiology of conversion and brain-washing*, 1957, 1997, Malor Books, Cambridge, MA, 1997.

How the Judiciary runs New Zealand as a Deep Sleep Experiment

William Walters Sargant (1907–88) worked with the WWII shellshocked then became a British MI6 psychiatrist, in the CIA's MKULTRA. He wrote *Battle for the Mind, Physiology of Conversion and Brainwashing* and said: "We need to excite minds before changing them." He also said: "Though men are not dogs, they should humbly try to remember how much they resemble dogs in their brain functions."[1]

Psychoanalysis was hugely popular between WWI and WWII. William Sargant regarded psychoanalysis as worse than useless and advocated biological psychiatry, pioneering a unit at Belmont Hospital using ECT (Electroconvulsive Therapy), continuous narcosis, insulin coma therapy and psychosurgery.

He treated severe mental illness, but he really treated anyone who walked in the door as though they were severely ill.

He founded and directed the Department of Psychological Medicine at St. Thomas' Hospital in London, establishing a laboratory for mind control experiments. From here he consulted to the British Secret Intelligence Service (MI5/MI6).

In 1953 he associated with Frank Olson, Deputy Acting Head of Special Operations for the CIA, who was investigating mind-bending drugs at the Biological Warfare Centre at Porton Down. Within the year Frank was dead.

> Frank Olson (1910–53) worked for the CIA, running the Special Operations Division – the "most secret biological weapons laboratory" working with materials such as anthrax. His cover was 'civilian scientist at Fort Detrick', but he was a US Army biochemist/ biological weapons researcher and CIA Special Operations scientists – part of MKULTRA (Ultra Mind Control). He was the Deputy Head of Special Operations.
>
> Olson had vast knowledge of the often-lethal CIA interrogation techniques used on Cold War prisoners in Europe. The CIA feared he would divulge classified information about the US use of biological weapons in Korea.
>
> On 28 November 1953, his last day, Olson was given LSD in a New York hotel room then told 20-minutes later that he had just taken LSD. In his drugged out state he was bashed over the head, then thrown out of the tenth floor, window. The CIA doctor monitoring him claimed to be asleep in the next room, and the CIA claimed he jumped and suicided, but Olson's face lacked the cuts from breaking through a plate-glass window.
>
> The murder of CIA Special Operations scientists Frank Olson is now included in the Mossad assassination curriculum as 'a successful instance of disguising a murder-as-suicide'.
>
> With regard to the US use of biological weapons in Korea, the CIA spokesman Paul F. Novack said: "It didn't happen. We categorically deny that." Novack was supported by Dick Cheney and Donald H. Rumsfeld, who were later promoted to Vice-President and Defense Secretary – then shamed beyond all recognition.
>
> Frank Olson's son gave a news conference in 1975 and two weeks later the Olson family were invited to the White House and given a formal apology by President Ford and the Director of the CIA, "although it was not clear what they were apologising for".

---

[1] William Walters Sargant, *Battle for the Mind; A physiology of conversion and brain-washing*, 1957, 1997, Malor Books, Cambridge, MA, 1997.

As soon as the family agreed not to sue, they were given US$750,000 compensation.”[2]

Former 2IC of the SIS during the Cold War: “Acid (LSD) was regarded as useful because once it's operating on your brain, it is no longer detectable in the body, so no post mortem picks up LSD in the body. A person on LSD can be killed by arranging a ‘terrible fright’ as those on LSD are susceptible to heart attack from arranged frights.”

In what appeared at first to be a psychological joke, Jon Ronson (aka Ron Jonson) wrote *The Men Who Stare at Goats* in 2004, a non-fiction book about the US Army's exploration of New Age concepts and the potential military applications of the paranormal, including attempts to kill goats by staring at them.

It connects psychological techniques with military programmes (as does MKULTRA) and the proposed First Earth Battalion for Psychological Operations. These were put forward by the American Vietnam soldier, Jim Channon, who spent time with many people later credited with starting the New Age movement.

Jim Channon wrote an operations manual for a First Earth Battalion. Instead for force, carry lambs symbolic of peace, meditation, yoga and primal scream for battle-readiness, music for psychic mind-change, conquer the enemies hearts and minds with positive vibrations, shiatsu for first aid, stare at them to kill them . . . and use lethal force as a last resort.

Surely his suggestions were not for war, but for domesticity, and the Vietnam shell-shocked-in-denial Jim Channon, had confused the two.

Surprisingly, some of Jim Channon's concepts found their way into military psychological warfare procedures.

Anyway, back to William Sargant. In 1944, he collaborated with Eliot Slater in *An Introduction to Physical Methods of Treatment in Psychiatry*, which was a textbook on biological psychiatry, including shock therapy and lobotomy. It remained in print for three decades.

William Sargant then pioneered placing false memories into patients. In a 1977 U.S. Senate hearing he attested: “The therapist should deliberately distort the facts of the patient's life-experience to achieve heightened emotional response and abreaction. In the drunken state of narcoanalysis patients are prone to accept the therapist's false constructions.”

‘Abreaction’ is free expression and the release of previously held repressions.

In his 1957 *Battle for the Mind*, Sargant exposed his methods of mind control, which have since been used as the model for the judiciary.

The New Zealand Judiciary has become a CIA/MI6 mind control experiment based on the works of the horrific Dr William Sargant.

In *Battle for the Mind*, William Sargant connected Pavlov's findings to the ways people learned and internalised belief systems. Conditioned behaviour patterns could be changed by stimulated stresses beyond a capacity for response. This effectively caused a breakdown.

Stimulated stresses causing a breakdown could be caused by:

1. **Intense signals**;
2. **Longer than normal waiting periods**;
3. **Rotating positive and negative signals**;
4. **Changing the subject's physical condition** (lack of sleep, loss of licence, moving, illness).

This is how the New Zealand Judiciary operates.

It is also how the New Zealand Police operate, and how the government operates.

---

2 Paraphrased from: Jon Ronson (also written as Ron Jonson), *The Men Who Stare at Goats*, Simon & Schuster, 2004; John D. Marks, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate: The CIA and Mind Control*, Times Book 1979, chapter 5; Stephanie Desmon, *Baltimore Sun Staff*, originally published 9 August 2002.

Stimulated stresses beyond response capacity can cause a new belief system to be held firm, and can be used to brainwash any form of belief system – political, religious, judicial, or personal outlook.[3]

This is exactly how the Judiciary operates and brings into question whether the judiciary is an extension of MI6 psychiatry, MKULTRA, and CIA Operations, and even contravenes the Nuremberg Code.

The Nuremberg Code was formulated in August 1947, and from June 1964 it has been known as **The Declaration of Helsinki.**

William Sargant went on to develop depatterning (obliterating memories) with Dr Ewen Cameron (of MKULTRA) as part of brainwashing. Both men had extensive CIA and British Secret Intelligence Service connections.[4]

Their aim was to find ways to obliterate memories and implant false memories at a deep level, so that the subject was incapable, even under duress or torture, of revealing their true allegiance. They would only be able to reveal falsely implanted memories that supported an assumed persona.

This would include an assumed persona for the duration of a court hearing.

After the 1979 John Marks novel, *The Search for The Manchurian Candidate: The CIA and Mind Control*, those who had their memories obliterated and brainwashed were known as ‘Manchurian Candidates’.

Many people are Manchurian Candidates for the duration of a court hearing, and many show symptoms of stress, trauma and memory loss afterwards.

After extensive involvement with the courts: **“The Judiciary is an Occult Mafia”.**

During experiments on a clinical level, to obliterate memories, plant false memories, change allegiance, and assume a new persona, there was extensive use of:

1. ‘Heroic’ doses of ECT;
2. Deep-Sleep Treatment (narcosis);
3. Insulin coma therapy;
4. Anti-Depressants;
5. LSD;
6. Tape-Loops (planting false memories from a recorder under the patient's pillow);
7. Hypnosis; and
8. Conversations while the person was drugged.

The major player in New Zealand for this was Margaret Bazley. She was placed in charge of the CIA's Operation DEEP SLEEP. In the process she killed or destroyed the lives of over 2,000 people. She was rewarded by elevation, protected with the title ‘**Dame Margaret Bazley**’, then given jobs in a vast number of highly paid government quangos.

Officially, the CIA became disillusioned with the research, but this was a little too late, and Drs' Sargant and Cameron had destroyed the memories, health and lives of thousands of patients.[5]

The CIA said it produced only ‘amnesiacs and vegetables’. It did, and this became the model of the citizen . . . with special focus on voting.

---

3 William Walters Sargant, *Battle for the Mind; A physiology of conversion and brain-washing*, 1957, 1997, Malor Books, Cambridge, MA, 1997, pp. 300.

4 Anne Collins, *In the Sleep Room*, Lester and Orpen Dennys, Toronto, 1988, p. 39, pp. 42–43, p. 133.

5 John Marks, *The Search for The Manchurian Candidate: The CIA and Mind Control*, W.W. Norton, New York, 1979; Gordon Thomas, *Journey Into Madness*, Bantam Press, London, 1988; Gordon Thomas, *Mindfield*, www.http://mindfield.com.

Citizen: "Someone who has given up their freedoms for democracy".

CIA Citizen: "Someone who has given up their freedoms for democracy and is now an amnesiac vegetable".

In giving up our freedoms we had become MKULTRA guinea pigs.

When the CIA reports to the public that it has "become disillusioned with the research", it means the clinical experiments are complete and a watered-down version will be spread over the public in its most effective areas.

Psychiatrist Harvey Weinstein wrote, *A Father, A Son and the CIA*. He established a direct link between Sargant's brainwashing and political conversion.

This is now utilised by MKULTRA via the CIA, as . . .

"Someone who has given up their freedoms to become
an amnesiac vegetable in the name of democracy."

William Sargant used 'sleeplessness, disinhibiting agents, and hypnosis' – all of which are carried out by television, the food advertised on television, and the porn available on television.

This is done through depleting emetics – an ever-reducing ability to remove what is initially rejected.[6]

'Sleeplessness, disinhibiting, and hypnosis are also activated by radio, boredom of work, transport to-and-from work, taxation, mortgage, lack of exercise, atrophy, etc.

In Canada, Dr Ewen Cameron experimented on patients who had come in for minor ailments like anxiety disorders and post-partum depression, and many suffered permanently as a result. He used LSD, paralytic drugs and electroconvulsive therapy (ECT) at 40 times the normal power, placing subjects into drug-induced comas for up to three (3) months, while playing repetitive statement tape loops, or just noise.[7]

Dr William Sargant modeled his Sleep Room at St. Thomas' Hospital on Dr Ewen Cameron's Allan Memorial Institute MKULTRA program. Sargant 'treated' many British citizens without their consent (mainly women) using up to three (3) months: ECT; Deep Sleep Treatment; drugs; insulin coma therapy; and tape loops.

Dr Anne White experienced Dr Sargant's treatment and later became a Clinical Professor of Medicine, and Examiner for the Medical Council of Canada.

Dr Anne White believes 'scores of English patients were involved in illegal, unethical and dangerous experiments for which they never gave their consent.

Since the judiciary use these means, it brings into question whether the practices of the judiciary are legal, or just an extension of mind control that we have not consented to.

To the judiciary, the perfect citizen is . . .

"Someone who has given up their freedoms to become
an amnesiac vegetable in the name of democracy,
having lost all ability to question authority or challenge in the face of conflict."

Anne White was 'incarcerated in the 'Sleep Room' and subject to horrendous experimental treatment without her consent. She was kept in a drug-induced sleep – 'depatterning'. She was woken briefly to receive 110-volt electroshocks, then put back to sleep. Sometimes these were 150 volts, two or three times daily, and 20–40 times more intense, over a period of 65 days.

---

[6] Harvey Weinstein, *A Father, A Son and the CIA*, Publ. James Lorimer & Co., Toronto, 1988, p. 138.
[7] Gordon Thomas, *Mindfield*, pp. 273–274.

In a sleep for long periods and receiving all kinds of drugs, she was never in a condition to question the doctor.

The result was brainwashing.

The same pattern occurs with the public and a judge: 'In a sleep for long periods and receiving all kinds of drugs', we are never in a condition to question the judge.

This is the result of brainwashing.

The drugs and techniques were designed as part of secret joint British & US governments' experiments to ultimately create an assassin.

Dr Anne White: "My whole experience was a nightmare. I was used as an experimental tool to try and create the ultimate weapon – an assassin."

The judiciary operates in the same way. The public stands in front of a judge and thinks, 'this person is involved in murder some way, but I just can't put my finger on it'.

When you get to talk to Intelligence, or have Intelligence and Counter-Intelligence argue in front of you, then you get to hear that judges are in fact involved in murder. Judge Johnny Hole and Judge Sian Elias are cases in point.

Sargant routinely practiced and advocated circumventing the issue of consent to treatment. This was in direct violation of The Nuremberg Code, and from 1964 it was in direct violation of The Declaration of Helsinki.

The Declaration of Helsinki preserves ten of the twelve ethical markers found in the Nuremberg Code.[8] In 1975, non-sexist language, balance of risks/benefits, informed consent, and requirement for independent review were added. From 1983–89, there were only minor changes.

Drawn up after World War II, The Nuremberg Code is designed to prevent the repetition of Nazi experiments on various ethnic groupings, POWs, disabled people, and people they deemed worthless (untermenschens).

The Nuremberg Code protects people from medical experimentation by requiring voluntary consent – without any element of "force, fraud, deceit, duress, over-reaching, or other ulterior form of constraint or coercion".

The judiciary does not give anyone the option of not being experimented on in court. It actively uses 'force, fraud, deceit, duress, over-reaching, other forms of constraint and coercion'. It deems people worthless, does not tell them the rules/modus operandi/Jewish insights, then subjects them to the same psychological treatment MKULTRA handed out to their subjects and enemies.

This is done through the 'post clinical experiments' watered-down version – enough not to be noticed by the public, unless they have this model to work off.

This is in direct contravention to the Nuremberg Code and The Declaration of Helsinki.

The judiciary acts in direct contravention
to The Nuremberg Code and The Declaration of Helsinki.

---

[8] *A Select Bibliography on Health Aspects of Human Rights*, 1984–1999, Sev S. Fluss, Health & Hum., 1999.

Nuremberg Code/Declaration of Helsinki

There should be made known:

1. The nature, duration, and purpose of the experiment;
2. The method and means by which it is to be conducted;
3. All inconveniences and hazards reasonably expected;
4. The effects upon the health or person, which may possibly come from his participation in the experiment.

Nuremberg Code: **"The duty and responsibility for ascertaining the quality of the consent rests upon each individual who initiates, directs or engages in the experiment."**

When in court, if you do not give your consent, the judge is in direct contravention to the Nuremberg Code:

> "Every effort should be made to protect the participant against 'even remote possibilities of injury, disability or death,' and '. . . the human subject should be at liberty to bring the experiment to an end if he has reached the physical or mental state where continuation of the experiment seems impossible.'

"I say to the judge, I am at liberty to inform you that I have reached the physical or mental state where continuation of the experiment seems . . . impossible."

Dr William Sargant got around this by enforcing sleep (narcosis) to obliterate a patient's ability to refuse ECT. That is, he would eye up a subject, run up to them with a needle and inject them. He called this: "relieving anxiety by narcosis".

When the subject began to resist after 3 or 4 ECT treatments, Sargant identified them as 'resistant obsessional patients'. ECT treatments were increased in order to produce 'theraputic confusion'. This resulted in no memory about the treatment and no ability to refuse the treatment. This was backed up by further drugs as the patient slept. Sargant called this: ". . . a new exciting beginning in psychiatry . . ."[9]

Dr Ewen Cameron detailed three stages of 'de-patterning' memory loss from these techniques:

1. Subject lost much of their memory, but still knew where they were, why they were there, and who was treating them;
2. Subject lost 'space-time image,' but still wanted to remember. Unable to answer 'Where am I?' and 'How did I get here?' caused enormous anxiety;
3. Subject had complete amnesia for all events in life and lost all anxiety. They lived only in the immediate present, could only talk about sensations of the moment, were completely uninfluenced by memories, or forward anticipations, and all schizophrenic symptoms had disappeared.'[10] That is, they had **lost the ability to judge right from wrong.**

When Dr Ewen Cameron left the Allan Memorial Institute and Dr William Sargant left St. Thomas' Hospital they both took with them all the case notes. Both sets of case notes were disappeared after their deaths.[11]

William Sargant, British MI6 psychiatrist, CIA MKULTRA: "Though men are not dogs, they should humbly try to remember how much they resemble dogs in their brain functions . . . Jesus Christ might simply have returned to his carpentry following the use of modern [psychiatric] treatments."[12]

Thomas Szasz, M.D. Professor Emeritus of Psychiatry, 1994:

**"Psychiatry is the single most destructive force
that has affected society within the last 50 years."**[13]

Dame Margaret Bazley

The 2IC of the SIS during the Cold War narrated this story to the author in early May 2008:

> Dame Margaret Bazley's qualifications are bullshit. These were cover qualifications provided to her by the CIA. She was a psychiatric nurse who was chosen by the CIA with the assistance of New Zealand Intelligence to run deep sleep experiments. Margaret Bazley then became the head of various government departments.
>
> The Deep Sleep military experiments killed hundreds of patients and destroyed the lives of at least 2,000. They tested how long they could keep people asleep. One of the great New Zealand scandals, Deep Sleep was run from mental hospitals throughout New Zealand, especially the Sunnyside Mental Hospital in Christchurch, Cherry Farm in Dunedin, the Avondale Mental Hospital in Auckland (later 'Oakley') and another on the West Coast whose director lost his job for alcoholism and spent some time in AA.
>
> The Seacliff Lunatic Asylum and Lake Alice also used ECT. Lake Alice also injected paraldehyde.
>
> Margaret Bazley then got a Fulbright Scholarship, which is CIA code for agent to be promoted.
>
> In 1964/65, her husband, Steven Bazley (a.k.a. James 'Jim' Frederick Bazley), had various fraud charges against him and went to jail in Paparoa, in Christchurch. In his first few days he made friends with J., an inmate who was about to leave.

J., 30, and very fit": We were both quite intelligent and came up with a plan for Steven's early release. Steven Bazley was to discover a gun on the Paparoa premises, and asked to be released in view of finding the gun, which was to be used to kill a prison officer, one or more, and maybe even the superintendent.

"Upon my release, I went outside Christchurch and got the gun – not from Margaret Bazley, who was initially a possible supplier. I was to hide the gun by burying it by the macrocarpa tree by the cowshed in the farm attached to the prison. I went back at night to bury the gun by the macrocarpa, and was just about to do the deed when all the lights came on and I was surrounded by police waiting in every direction: Hullo, Hullo, Hullo.

"I bolted and ran 8 miles to Yaldhurst railway station where I saw the wooden water tank tower for the train, so I climbed up, lifted the lid and jumped inside. It was really very cold, freezing, and I spent the whole night just keeping my head above water. Just after daylight, I checked there were no police around, and jumped out when I heard the first train. It was the 'sparrow-farts workers train' travelling into Christchurch, so I shook myself off and jumped onboard. It was a narrow escape and you can't trust those Bazleys."

---

[9] William Sargant and Eliot Slater assisted by Desmond Kelly, *An Introduction to Physical Methods of Treatment in Psychiatry*, Publ. Churchill Livingstone, Edinburgh, 1972, pp. 89–96.

[10] John Marks, *The Search for The Manchurian Candidate: The CIA and Mind Control*, Publ. W.W. Norton, New York, 1979, p. 144, paraphrased.

[11] Gordon Thomas, *Mindfield*, pp. 276. He made the enquiries and found the case notes 'disappeared'.

[12] Dr William Sargant wrote: *An Introduction to Physical Methods of Treatment in Psychiatry* (with Eliot Slater in 1944, and Desmond Kelly in 1972, 5th edn); *An Introduction to Somatic Methods of Treatment in Psychiatry* (with Eliot Slater, 1946); *The Unquiet Mind – an autobiography* (1967); *The Mind Possessed: A Physiology of Possession, Mysticism, and Faith Healing* (1975); *Battle for the Mind: The Mechanics of Indoctrination, Brainwashing & Thought Control* (1957); *Battle for the Mind; A physiology of conversion and brain-washing*, Malor Books, Cambridge, MA, 1997, 2nd Ed (Jeus comment).

[13] *Documenting Psychiatry* magazine, 'A Human rights Abuse and Global Failure', Presented by The Citizens Commission on Human Rights (CHHR), International Watchdog for Mental Health, 2002, p. 6.

Steven Bazley also did other frauds. One was magnetic seamstress button. These were sewn onto a woman's lapel and they would attach their pins to it. He had one, and advertised in the papers, collected a huge number of mail orders for magnetic buttons, but never posted any. He only ever had one. He was jailed for this as well.

Margaret 'Lillian' Bazley's husband, Steven James 'Jim' Frederick Bazley, then became part of the Mr Asia heroin drug ring. After a long time, they eventually divorced and Steven Bazley is now a budget advisor in Invercargill, and quite a respected one.

MICK P: "He could be litigious."

J: "The 'Bora Cure' scam was done by McClennan. He advertised a cure for bora, and when he was paid, he mailed people two bits of wood marked 'A' and 'B' with instructions to place the bora on block A and slam down hard with block B. Everyone called him 'Cockroach'. He was in and out of jail and a chronic alcoholic, which eventually killed him. He was a nice fella and spent some time on the Salvation Army's alcoholic island, Rotoroa, off Auckland.

"When I got out, I was making a fair whack of money so put Cockroach McClennan up for a month in a motel on Williamson Ave in Auckland's Grey Lynn. After two nights, Cockroach managed to get some of the rent back off the landlord for alcohol.

"There was no helping these guys. The women were equally as evil."

If you count the more than 2,200 killed or injured from Operation DEEP SLEEP, followed by cover qualifications, cover promotion and cover elevation to dame – the women have accomplished more evil than the men ever could.

Dame Margaret Bazley is one of these evil women.

Deep Sleep experiments were being run at Auckland's Oakley Mental Hospital. LSD was used in this. Acid (LSD) started in New Zealand when a male nurse who worked at Oakley stole a large bottle of LSD and gave it to Al Jennings – a well-known major junky who lived all over Auckland.

Some of Dame Margaret Bazley's qualifications can be sourced from the School of Government, Victoria University, Wellington website:

> Margaret Bazley received a Dame Companion of New Zealand Order of Merit in recognition of her significant contribution to the New Zealand public service.
>
> She had a long career in nursing, which culminated with her appointment as Director of Nursing with the then Department of Health in 1978.
>
> [She was a contract killer for the CIA in Operation DEEP SLEEP.]
>
> In the mid to late 1980s she was a Commissioner and Deputy Chairperson of the State Services Commission, playing a key role in the formation of State Owned Enterprises and the development of the State Sector Act (when NZ lost its assets).
>
> She was Secretary for Transport from 1988–93, primarily responsible for devolution of the operating and regulatory functions of the Ministry.
>
> She was the Director-General of Social Welfare up to 1993 and Chief Executive of the Ministry of Social Policy, which provided the Government with strategic social policy and purchase advice.
>
> She retired from the Public Service in 2001.
>
> She currently serves as:
>
> Chairperson of the NZ Fire Service Commission;
>
> Chairperson of the Foundation for Research, Science and Technology;
>
> A member of the Waitangi Tribunal;
>
> A member of the Legal Services Agency Risk Management Committee; and
> Commissioner for the Inquiry into Police Misconduct.

Dame Margaret Bazley
The Lord High Executioner.

Her qualifications are false. They were given to her by the CIA. When the Mr Asia drug trafficking and murders hearing came up in Australia, they said of Margaret Lillian Bazley: **"She couldn't organise two dingos to crap in a can"**. This is the official Aussie saying, however in New Zealand, it is referred to as . . .

"She couldn't organise two dogs to shit."

Former 2IC of the SIS: "Margaret has been a frantic chaser of big cocks all her life. When in charge of transport (she was the Secretary for Transport from 1988–93) there was a complaint against her when she invited a Traffic Officer to her house to discuss his promotion. She demanded sex and he laid a complaint, not her. At the time she was only two years into fixing up Traffic (1990).

"This story originally came from Chris Carter, now the homosexual MP for Te Atatu, Auckland."

> Intelligence Officer: "Margaret Bazley was famous for installing surveillance cameras in the washrooms of the psychiatric institutions she ran, and having well-endowed patients hauled out to be interviewed personally, including 'Tarantula' (WWII's Private Rewi) whose one-armed mother had hauled out of the bath by his dick.
>
> When Margaret was put in charge of Traffic Officer training and recruitment, again she had cameras installed in the washing facilities and those who were well-endowed were also sent to her. She couldn't turn down a big dick. This is her claim to fame in New Zealand Government departments.
>
> Margaret Bazley is also mentioned in the Mr Asia Inquiry in Australia because of her scam marriage to Mr Asia's lieutenant, Mr Bazley – a deluded drug dealer who has now seen the light. Like most drug dealers, he saw the light and became a drug counsellor and took on a respectable persona. He is litigious and sues at the drop of a hat, no doubt using his Margaret Bazley connections – big dicks and all.
>
> Former policeman Donald Stewart was the judge in the Mr Asia Inquiry (1980–83), known as the Stewart Royal Commission. He virtually accused Margaret Bazley of trafficking and laundering money. It would have been a career-ender if she had lived in Australia, but because New Zealand bureaucrats don't take kindly to Australian Royal Commissions, Judge Stewart's statements were winked at and passed by, and Margaret Bazley was allowed to rise to any height within the New Zealand Government, as long as she was hidden during her rise and destruction."

Dame Margaret Bazley is also the Commissioner for the Inquiry into Police Misconduct. The Royal New Zealand Police College moved their Training Services from Trentham to Porirua, north of Wellington. During training, in the new John Hughes Room, they get a five-day lecture on "verballing".

'Verballing' is how to:

> Stitch up a subject;
>
> Manufacture evidence out of thin air;
>
> Present no evidence as though it was evidence;

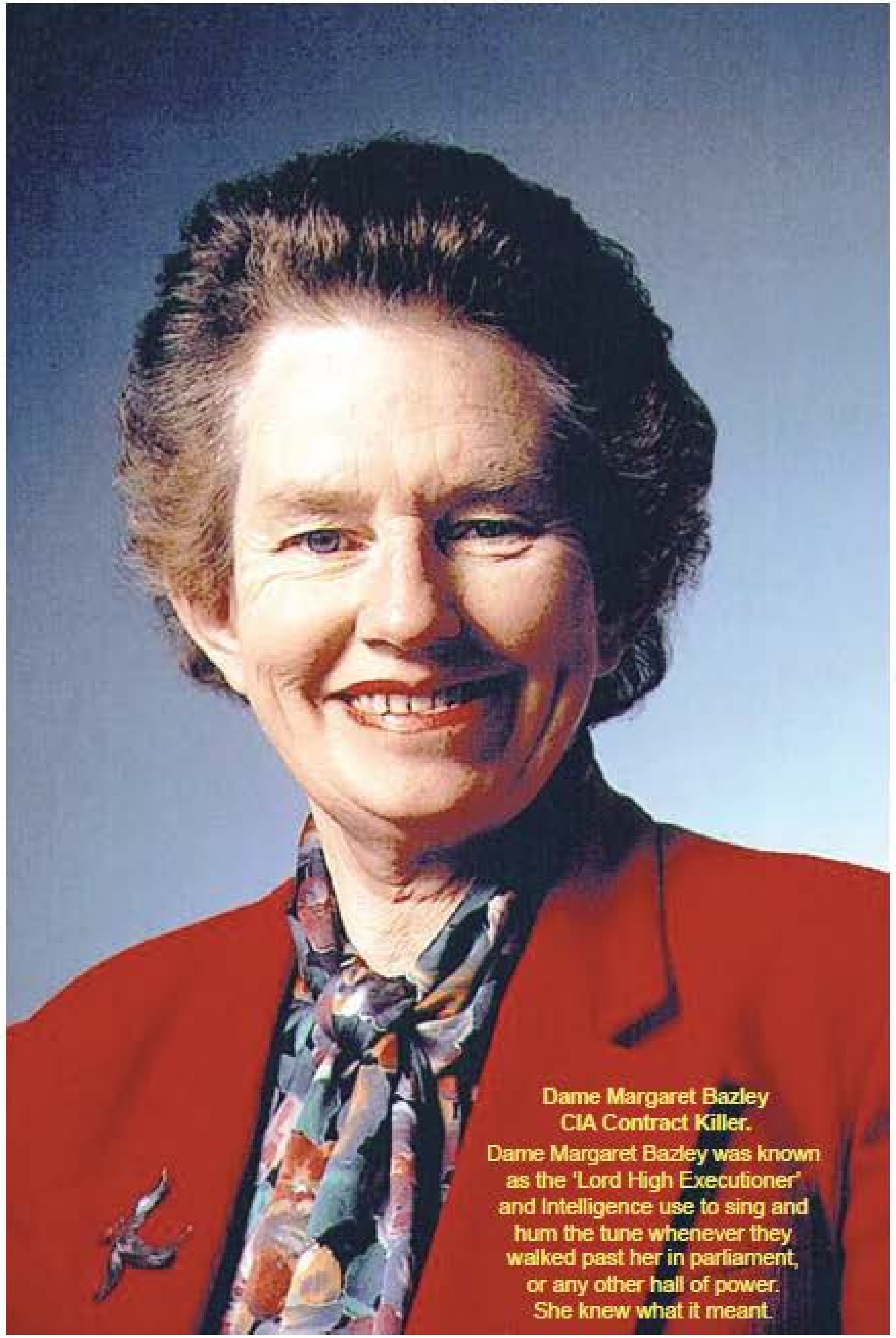

Dame Margaret Bazley
CIA Contract Killer.
Dame Margaret Bazley was known as the 'Lord High Executioner' and Intelligence use to sing and hum the tune whenever they walked past her in parliament, or any other hall of power. She knew what it meant.

Present no evidence and have a judge believe it;
Respond to questions to criminalise the target;
Avoid criminalising oneself or another officer;
Use Police and legal procedures to convict a target on no evidence;
Use police procedures to avoid convictions for:
  Having a criminal record before entering the Police;
  Excessive violence;
  Manufacturing evidence;
  Lying in affidavits; and
Use other police officers to target and attack those who have complained to the Police Complaints Authority/ Independent Police Conduct Authority.

This is well illustrated in *Gifting the United Nations to Stalin*, but first I would like to clarify how Dame Margaret Bazley destroyed the entire New Zealand governance including the Police, Legal and Court procedures.

It has been found that conditioned behaviour patterns can be changed by stimulated stresses beyond a capacity for response. This effectively causes a breakdown. Stimulated stresses causing a breakdown can be caused by: Intense signals; Longer than normal waiting periods; Rotating positive and negative signals; and Changing the subject's physical condition (lack of sleep, loss of licence, moving house, divorce, illness, hobbling).

These 'stimulated stresses causing a breakdown' were then placed as standard procedure in every government department Dame Margaret Bazley worked in, so Dame Margaret Bazley was moved through vast and various government departments to ensure 'stimulated stresses causing breakdown' occurred everywhere she went.

Margaret Bazley is exemplified as the joke wife in: "Why does a woman resemble a hurricane?" Ans: "She's wet and wild when she arrives, but when she leaves she takes your house, the car and the kids. She also removes your state of calm and any beneficial state functions."

The organisations Dame Margaret Bazley has moved to breakdown include:

1. Department of Health where she was Director of Nursing from 1978. This has resulted in the systematic destruction of the health service ever since.
2. State Services Commission where she was Commissioner and Deputy Chairperson in the mid to late 1980s forming State Owned Enterprises and the State Sector Act. This has resulted in the systematic destruction of state services to the extent that they were sold overseas and citizens have been paying for them ever since.
3. Ministry of Transport where she was responsible for devolving the operating and regulatory functions from 1988–93. This is a major fanny-up. It meant that Traffic and Police were joined into one. Traffic cops were never very bright (all their IQ was in their moustache) and many were incapable of carrying out police functions. It also meant that the Police were carrying out traffic duties, to fulfil their 'quota' of tickets, when they should have been solving crimes. This meant that crimes were not solved and when citizens phone the emergency numbers, they ask for Fire or Ambulance in order to get a response. The Police don't respond.

   There has been a systematic breakdown of the Police and Traffic and the 'stimulated stresses causing breakdown' are now found in the Police, Traffic, community and in individuals who have dealt with the Police, Traffic and Courts, right down to their forms.

   Court Bailiff Ross Rudolf on 10 June 2008: **"We do make mistakes".**[14]

---

[14] Originally I said the part-Maori Bailiff Ross Rudolf is the son of Tommy Rudolf, a champion boxer who went blind, so was never mentioned by the boxing community. He wasn't, but he was the son of the boxer Reg Rudolf.

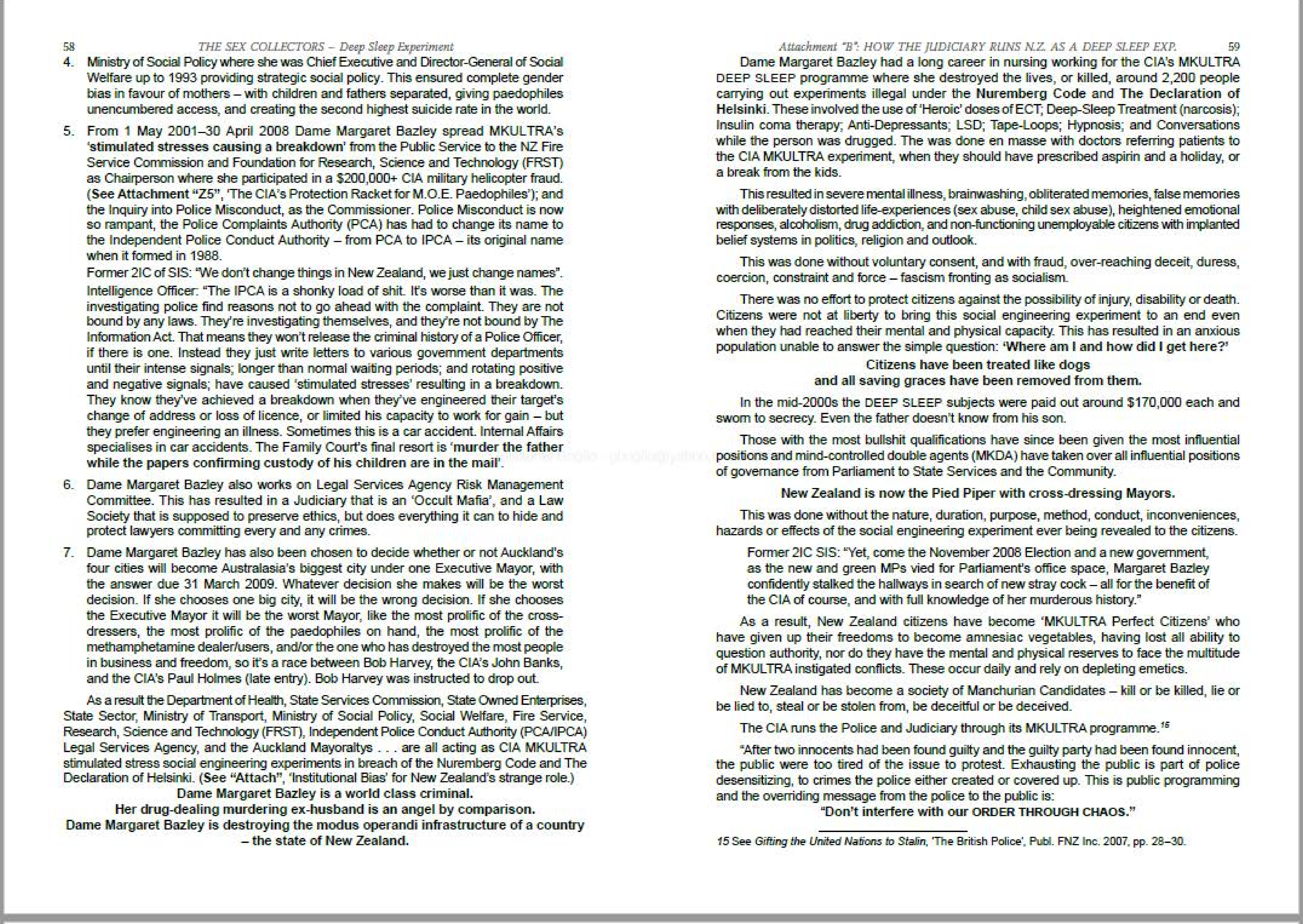

4. Ministry of Social Policy where she was Chief Executive and Director-General of Social Welfare up to 1993 providing strategic social policy. This ensured complete gender bias in favour of mothers – with children and fathers separated, giving paedophiles unencumbered access, and creating the second highest suicide rate in the world.

5. From 1 May 2001–30 April 2008 Dame Margaret Bazley spread MKULTRA's '**stimulated stresses causing a breakdown**' from the Public Service to the NZ Fire Service Commission and Foundation for Research, Science and Technology (FRST) as Chairperson where she participated in a $200,000+ CIA military helicopter fraud. (**See Attachment "Z5"**, 'The CIA's Protection Racket for M.O.E. Paedophiles'); and the Inquiry into Police Misconduct, as the Commissioner. Police Misconduct is now so rampant, the Police Complaints Authority (PCA) has had to change its name to the Independent Police Conduct Authority – from PCA to IPCA – its original name when it formed in 1988.

   Former 2IC of SIS: "We don't change things in New Zealand, we just change names".

   Intelligence Officer: "The IPCA is a shonky load of shit. It's worse than it was. The investigating police find reasons not to go ahead with the complaint. They are not bound by any laws. They're investigating themselves, and they're not bound by The Information Act. That means they won't release the criminal history of a Police Officer, if there is one. Instead they just write letters to various government departments until their intense signals; longer than normal waiting periods; and rotating positive and negative signals; have caused 'stimulated stresses' resulting in a breakdown. They know they've achieved a breakdown when they've engineered their target's change of address or loss of licence, or limited his capacity to work for gain – but they prefer engineering an illness. Sometimes this is a car accident. Internal Affairs specialises in car accidents. The Family Court's final resort is '**murder the father while the papers confirming custody of his children are in the mail**'.

6. Dame Margaret Bazley also works on Legal Services Agency Risk Management Committee. This has resulted in a Judiciary that is an 'Occult Mafia', and a Law Society that is supposed to preserve ethics, but does everything it can to hide and protect lawyers committing every and any crimes.

7. Dame Margaret Bazley has also been chosen to decide whether or not Auckland's four cities will become Australasia's biggest city under one Executive Mayor, with the answer due 31 March 2009. Whatever decision she makes will be the worst decision. If she chooses one big city, it will be the wrong decision. If she chooses the Executive Mayor it will be the worst Mayor, like the most prolific of the cross-dressers, the most prolific of the paedophiles on hand, the most prolific of the methamphetamine dealer/users, and/or the one who has destroyed the most people in business and freedom, so it's a race between Bob Harvey, the CIA's John Banks, and the CIA's Paul Holmes (late entry). Bob Harvey was instructed to drop out.

As a result the Department of Health, State Services Commission, State Owned Enterprises, State Sector, Ministry of Transport, Ministry of Social Policy, Social Welfare, Fire Service, Research, Science and Technology (FRST), Independent Police Conduct Authority (PCA/IPCA) Legal Services Agency, and the Auckland Mayoraltys . . . are all acting as CIA MKULTRA stimulated stress social engineering experiments in breach of the Nuremberg Code and The Declaration of Helsinki. (**See "Attach"**, 'Institutional Bias' for New Zealand's strange role.)

Dame Margaret Bazley is a world class criminal.
Her drug-dealing murdering ex-husband is an angel by comparison.
Dame Margaret Bazley is destroying the modus operandi infrastructure of a country – the state of New Zealand.

Dame Margaret Bazley had a long career in nursing working for the CIA's MKULTRA DEEP SLEEP programme where she destroyed the lives, or killed, around 2,200 people carrying out experiments illegal under the **Nuremberg Code** and **The Declaration of Helsinki**. These involved the use of 'Heroic' doses of ECT; Deep-Sleep Treatment (narcosis); Insulin coma therapy; Anti-Depressants; LSD; Tape-Loops; Hypnosis; and Conversations while the person was drugged. The was done en masse with doctors referring patients to the CIA MKULTRA experiment, when they should have prescribed aspirin and a holiday, or a break from the kids.

This resulted in severe mental illness, brainwashing, obliterated memories, false memories with deliberately distorted life-experiences (sex abuse, child sex abuse), heightened emotional responses, alcoholism, drug addiction, and non-functioning unemployable citizens with implanted belief systems in politics, religion and outlook.

This was done without voluntary consent, and with fraud, over-reaching deceit, duress, coercion, constraint and force – fascism fronting as socialism.

There was no effort to protect citizens against the possibility of injury, disability or death. Citizens were not at liberty to bring this social engineering experiment to an end even when they had reached their mental and physical capacity. This has resulted in an anxious population unable to answer the simple question: **'Where am I and how did I get here?'**

Citizens have been treated like dogs
and all saving graces have been removed from them.

In the mid-2000s the DEEP SLEEP subjects were paid out around $170,000 each and sworn to secrecy. Even the father doesn't know from his son.

Those with the most bullshit qualifications have since been given the most influential positions and mind-controlled double agents (MKDA) have taken over all influential positions of governance from Parliament to State Services and the Community.

New Zealand is now the Pied Piper with cross-dressing Mayors.

This was done without the nature, duration, purpose, method, conduct, inconveniences, hazards or effects of the social engineering experiment ever being revealed to the citizens.

> Former 2IC SIS: "Yet, come the November 2008 Election and a new government, as the new and green MPs vied for Parliament's office space, Margaret Bazley confidently stalked the hallways in search of new stray cock – all for the benefit of the CIA of course, and with full knowledge of her murderous history."

As a result, New Zealand citizens have become 'MKULTRA Perfect Citizens' who have given up their freedoms to become amnesiac vegetables, having lost all ability to question authority, nor do they have the mental and physical reserves to face the multitude of MKULTRA instigated conflicts. These occur daily and rely on depleting emetics.

New Zealand has become a society of Manchurian Candidates – kill or be killed, lie or be lied to, steal or be stolen from, be deceitful or be deceived.

The CIA runs the Police and Judiciary through its MKULTRA programme.[15]

"After two innocents had been found guilty and the guilty party had been found innocent, the public were too tired of the issue to protest. Exhausting the public is part of police desensitizing, to crimes the police either created or covered up. This is public programming and the overriding message from the police to the public is:

"Don't interfere with our ORDER THROUGH CHAOS."

---

[15] See *Gifting the United Nations to Stalin*, 'The British Police', Publ. FNZ Inc. 2007, pp. 28–30.

This method is still a favourite of the police to this day . . . This was the goal all along. Patterns of social engineering are now well established, role-played and expertly executed within the Army, Police and Courts. They continue to this day with the following notable patterns:

1. Police **lie in court** right up to the level of Area Commander, Police Commissioner and Minister of Police. These people are often chosen for their ability to lie.
2. Police **pretend to be experts** when they have no knowledge.
3. Police **assume knowledge** due to the position they are placed in, choose to place themselves in, or are temporarily placed in by others.
4. Police are Walter Mitty characters and **specialise in whatever is required**. In giving evidence they remove the truth from the courtroom and make a '*Magic Roundabout*' of justice.
5. Police **charge and convict people who know more about a crime than they do**. This prevents the authority of the police being challenged and any new evidence coming forth.
6. Police **assume guilt in whomever they charge** and then try to substantiate this guilt by piling evidence around the accused.
7. The police **regularly remove evidence that does not suit their case** and vehemently deny any evidence contrary to their desired outcome. Evidence is tailored to convict and tailored to read like a story – their story – MKULTRA's agenda.
8. In the process (largely due to a lack of mental capacity), the police **ignore all evidence contrary to their desired conviction**, remove this from the file and do not present this in court. Thus the judge cannot decide what is evidence and what is not. The police decide it for him, making them 'judge and jury'. This creates a false trial and accounts for the majority of trials, and untold misery.
9. **Old files** that resulted in convictions **are reused with the names changed**. Occasionally they remember to change the locations, but not always.
10. Police are **trained in 'verballing'** – the art of making 'flaky evidence' or 'no evidence' appear authoritative enough to convict. In conjunction with omitted evidence this creates a 'Court of Injustice'.
11. The **public's ill-founded assumption of police integrity in court** is the cause of untold misery. Misery is what the police specialise in. It is their work and, in many cases, their life's work.
12. The police have **dominant rights to remove jury members** during the selection process while the defending lawyer has a limited capacity.

Police should be stripped bare before being allowed to give evidence. The first questions to ask are:

1. **"Do you belong to a secret society** – Freemasons, feminists, a religious group, or an occult organisation?"
2. **"Are you bound to tell the truth in court?"** Many police have 'leave' not to tell the truth in court and are promoted for telling lies.[16]

---

[16] The affidavit of former Inspector Ross Meurant is a case in point. He lodged an affidavit in the High Court in February 2004 stating that his superior officers had asked him to lie in the decade-long trial of the famous Crew murders (1970–80). Detective Bruce Hutton planted the false evidence then murdered his wife. He was neither charged or convicted.

3. **Lying in court is standard practice amongst the Freemasons**, who swear on the Bible regardless. Freemasonry police have an agreement with Freemasonry judges and most cases operate on a pre-negotiated and pre-determined outcome.
   "Do you have an agreement with the judge?"
4. **Feminists also lie in court**, and often refer to extremely biased court decision made by feminist judges, compromised judges, or corrupt judges.
   "Do you have an agreement with the judge?"
5. **Some religions allow and encourage lying in court**, including Catholics (Day of Atonement) and Jews (Kol Nidre). "Do you have an agreement with the judge?"
6. **Catholics operate on: "What's in it for me?"**
   Jews operate on: "Is it good for the Jews?"
   Feminists operate on: "Is it good for women?"
   "Do you have an agreement with the judge?"
6. Under questioning, **many police officers have criminal records** that should have prevented them from ever entering the Police Service. Many police, stripped of uniform, would be considered **unreliable witnesses** and their evidence disregarded if their criminal and psychological histories were known.
   "Do you have a criminal record?"
   "Does Constable James Matewhinau Cassin have a criminal record?"
7. **"Do you have a history of mental illness?"**
   "Does Constable James Matewhinau Cassin have a history of mental illness?"

Constable James Matewhinau Cassin

After a failed assassination attempt on 23 August 2002 on my good self (poisoned with epicac), 12 hours later Constable James Matewhinau Cassin assaulted me and charged me with dangerous driving, although I was just driving away from him, on his Police partner's agreement. She has since left the Police, having experienced how corrupt the Police are, and especially how corrupt Constable James Matewhinau Cassin is.

In the Auckland District Court in August 2003 I asked Constable James Matewhinau Cassin if he had any convictions for assault and he admitted to two convictions prior to joining the police. As a result, all the files, recordings and transcripts of the hearing went missing and I lost my licence, was charged the maximum fines ($1,490 including court costs) and prevented from a High Court appeal for three months while the transcripts of the hearing were being destroyed through the court and police system . . . and I could not drive.

The High Court overturned all decisions because the District Court and Police could not, would not, and refused to produce any transcripts, recordings or evidence. Cassin's female police partner, Constable Suzanne Mead, then left the Police service and a 'Mr Cassin' was then found to be the Head of Detectives. Crimes are inbred within the Police Force."[17]

In my case with Constable James Matewhinau Cassin, one fine was left unreturned and not overturned: CCN 1513999287, CRN 02004078568, Dated 23/08/2002, Failed To Comply With A Traffic Sign, Date Imposed 11/11/2002, $180, Status: Satisfied. Reparation Remaining $0.00, Current Balance $0.00.

The total fines were $1,490 with a loss of licence for 6 months. During the hearing I questioned Constable James Matewhinau Cassin and he confirmed to myself and the District Court that he had two convictions for "Assault" prior to entering the Police Force.

---

[17] End of paraphrased quote from *Gifting the United Nations to Stalin.*

Cassin is an untrustworthy devious shit who rolled a 'no left turn' signal behind a road barrier . . . and for international readers, a 'no left turn' signal is extremely rare. They virtually have to import them from America.

Constable James Matewhinau Cassin assaulted me on 23/08/2002. This involved 3 police cars and 3 unmarked cars and 12 officers. I was hauled out of my car, 50 metres from picking up my 10-year-old daughter from the bus station, thrown on the ground facing down hill, face down, then handcuffed to the cheers of 12 MKULTRA police officers who had just falsely captured a poisoned man while his award winning custody papers were in the post, and who had just given a speech on Prime Minister Helen Clark's KGB training.

The Area Commander at the time was Clint Rickards,[18] later found, under Operation AUSTIN, to be New Zealand's worst ever rapist and paedophile. I mentioned this to an Intelligence Officer and he said: "Not quite. There is one worse rapist and one worse paedophile, and they're both in the police. Also, New Zealand's worst ever murderer was a police officer in Rotorua who disappeared and was never searched for or even looked for. His name is Evan Jordan, last reported missing in the company of crocodiles. Just leave your shirt on the river bank and everyone assumes the crocs got you. (**See Attachment "D"**, 'False Arrest on 22 June 1999')

The New Zealand Police are best known for rape, murder, paedophilia and drug dealing, and those who best fit this profile reach the top positions. The New Zealand Police are an MKULTRA organisation that spread their message through **force, fraud, deceit, duress, over-reaching, constraint and coercion**. They are an illegal organisation under the international law of The Declaration of Helsinki, for which New Zealand has a strange experimental role.

I have still not received compensation for:

1. Constable Cassin's assault;
2. Having my licence removed for three months;
3. The $180 CCN 1513999287, CRN 02004078568 fine, when all others were refunded.

I have also not received the Police, Court, Privacy Commissions, Ombudsman's statements confirming that Constable James Matewhinau Cassin is a twice-convicted criminal.

The costs to me are as follows:

1. Constable Cassin's assault has left me in fear of Hobson Street in perpetuity;
2. Constable Cassin damaged my phone, my leather dress jacket, my integrity and my relationship with my daughter.
3. Loss of licence for three months cost me at least $1,000 per week. This amounts to $15,000.
4. The $180 fine has not yet been refunded. All the other fines were refunded;
5. Constable James Matewhinau Cassin is a violent criminal. The Police, Court, Privacy Commissions, and Ombudsman are covering up for him.
6. The Police are employing a convicted criminal and obfuscating that he is a convicted criminal.
7. Constable James Matewhinau Cassin is used by the Police as a contract hitman.
8. 24 hours before I was attacked by Constable Cassin, I had given a speech at Rotary in the Cook Islands (Hopsing's Restaurant, 21 August 2002/ 22 August with dateline shift). In that speech I had mentioned that "Helen Clark is KGB". This is now well accepted. 12 hours after the speech I was poisoned with epicac. 12 hours later I was attacked by the Police contract hitman and twice convicted criminal Constable James Matewhinau Cassin.

---

[18] His name was regularly mispelt "Clive Rickard" in the media build up to the hearing.

It is my understanding that this was a **state sanctioned killing** that involved the Government, the Police, and the very organisations that are supposed to protect my freedoms.

It is my understanding that a state-sanctioned killing
or attempted murder, is worth a material sum.

I place this value at NZ$1,000,000 per attack on my life. Lesser amounts for deterent attacks on my property, break-ins, thefts, and Counter-Intelligence.

This seems fair. The value can be debated up or down depending on circumstances.

New Zealand Police please forward this starting sum of NZ$1,000,000 forthwith, delivered to me personally at my address for service during normal working hours, Monday to Friday, 9 am to 5 pm. Prior to the November 2008 Election would seem appropriate.

Please notify me accordingly. (There was no response as as 20 April 2009.)

With reference to CCN 1519600559, CRN 07004400778, 04/08/2007, Fail display pay and disp recpt - Auck, Date Imposed 23/10/2007, Total Amount Imposed $170, Under Enforcement (**See** Attachment "ii", High Street Ticket):

1. This has never been received.
2. I don't know what it means.
3. It is not in English.
4. For it to be valid, it has to be in English.
5. Your delay is in breach of the Delaration of Helsinki.

With reference to CCN 1519690338, CRN 07004918708, 08/08/2007, Drove A Vehicle Along A Bus Lane, Date Imposed 19/11/2007, Total Amount Imposed $280, Under Enforcement (**See** Attachment "i", Bus Lane Ticket):

This was represented in Court with faxes sent to the Police at the Auckland District Court. The Justices of the Peace hearing the case refused to sight the evidence because I was not present, and I was not present because Constable James Matewhinau Cassin, the twice convicted violent criminal and Police hitman, was still actively employed in the Auckland Police Service. This has left me in fear of Hobson Street in perpetuity, in fear of the Police in perpetuity, and in fear of the Courts in perpetuity.

Since fear is a conditioned response brought about by the CIA and MI6 MKULTRA brain-washing programmes infiltrated through all New Zealand government departments, principally by the CIA nurse, contract killer and heroin bag lady Dame Margaret Bazley, it is illegal under international law, namely the Nuremberg Code and The Declaration of Helsinki, for me to affirm your actions with payment.

Rather, it is my duty to expose your crimes to the international community. As such, I am posting this affidavit on various websites and podcasts for international scrutiny.

Further, it is my understanding that:

1. Your claimed visual was made by an Auckland Regional Council worker, not by a police officer.
2. 'Workers' at the Auckland Regional Council have been found to be ficticious names drawing down a wage and providing zero service.
3. It is legal to use a bus lane for one block when turning left. This was not clearly known at the time the ficticious person claimed to have sighted a vehicle. No driver was ever sighted or described. No photographic evidence was presented.
4. The Auckland Regional Council is controlled by Gary Taylor who was running orgies at his house at Bethell's Beach, in and around 1982, for Labour Party members and affiliates. He liked to watch people having sex with his wife. This was published in *New*

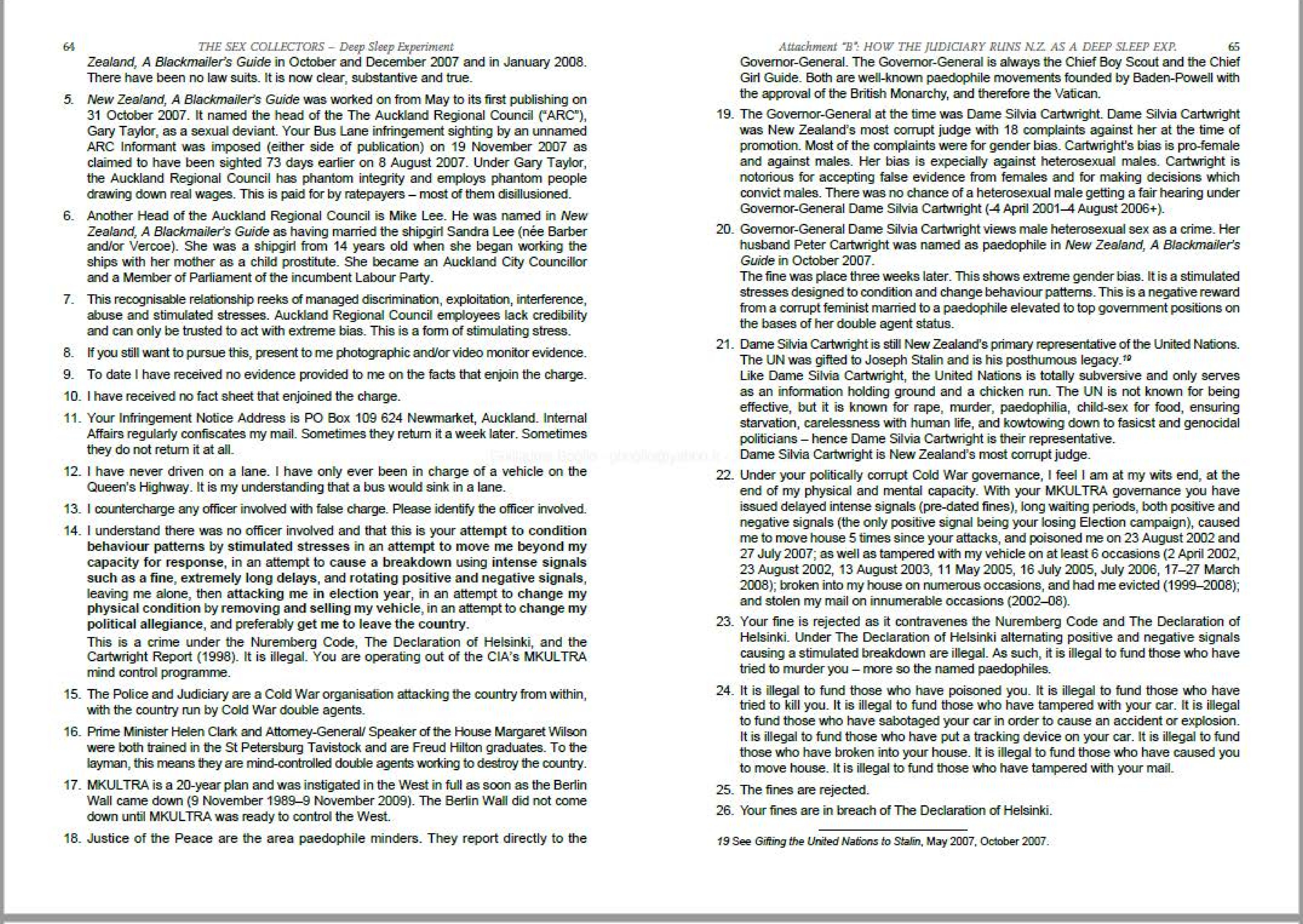

Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide in October and December 2007 and in January 2008. There have been no law suits. It is now clear, substantive and true.

5. *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide* was worked on from May to its first publishing on 31 October 2007. It named the head of the The Auckland Regional Council ("ARC"), Gary Taylor, as a sexual deviant. Your Bus Lane infringement sighting by an unnamed ARC Informant was imposed (either side of publication) on 19 November 2007 as claimed to have been sighted 73 days earlier on 8 August 2007. Under Gary Taylor, the Auckland Regional Council has phantom integrity and employs phantom people drawing down real wages. This is paid for by ratepayers – most of them disillusioned.

6. Another Head of the Auckland Regional Council is Mike Lee. He was named in *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide* as having married the shipgirl Sandra Lee (née Barber and/or Vercoe). She was a shipgirl from 14 years old when she began working the ships with her mother as a child prostitute. She became an Auckland City Councillor and a Member of Parliament of the incumbent Labour Party.

7. This recognisable relationship reeks of managed discrimination, exploitation, interference, abuse and stimulated stresses. Auckland Regional Council employees lack credibility and can only be trusted to act with extreme bias. This is a form of stimulating stress.

8. If you still want to pursue this, present to me photographic and/or video monitor evidence.

9. To date I have received no evidence provided to me on the facts that enjoin the charge.

10. I have received no fact sheet that enjoined the charge.

11. Your Infringement Notice Address is PO Box 109 624 Newmarket, Auckland. Internal Affairs regularly confiscates my mail. Sometimes they return it a week later. Sometimes they do not return it at all.

12. I have never driven on a lane. I have only ever been in charge of a vehicle on the Queen's Highway. It is my understanding that a bus would sink in a lane.

13. I countercharge any officer involved with false charge. Please identify the officer involved.

14. I understand there was no officer involved and that this is your **attempt to condition behaviour patterns** by **stimulated stresses** in an **attempt to move me beyond my capacity for response**, in an attempt to cause a **breakdown** using **intense signals such as a fine, extremely long delays,** and **rotating positive and negative signals**, leaving me alone, then **attacking me in election year**, in an attempt to **change my physical condition** by **removing and selling my vehicle**, in an attempt to **change my political allegiance**, and preferably **get me to leave the country**.

    This is a crime under the Nuremberg Code, The Declaration of Helsinki, and the Cartwright Report (1998). It is illegal. You are operating out of the CIA's MKULTRA mind control programme.

15. The Police and Judiciary are a Cold War organisation attacking the country from within, with the country run by Cold War double agents.

16. Prime Minister Helen Clark and Attorney-General/ Speaker of the House Margaret Wilson were both trained in the St Petersburg Tavistock and are Freud Hilton graduates. To the layman, this means they are mind-controlled double agents working to destroy the country.

17. MKULTRA is a 20-year plan and was instigated in the West in full as soon as the Berlin Wall came down (9 November 1989–9 November 2009). The Berlin Wall did not come down until MKULTRA was ready to control the West.

18. Justice of the Peace are the area paedophile minders. They report directly to the Governor-General. The Governor-General is always the Chief Boy Scout and the Chief Girl Guide. Both are well-known paedophile movements founded by Baden-Powell with the approval of the British Monarchy, and therefore the Vatican.

19. The Governor-General at the time was Dame Silvia Cartwright. Dame Silvia Cartwright was New Zealand's most corrupt judge with 18 complaints against her at the time of promotion. Most of the complaints were for gender bias. Cartwright's bias is pro-female and against males. Her bias is expecially against heterosexual males. Cartwright is notorious for accepting false evidence from females and for making decisions which convict males. There was no chance of a heterosexual male getting a fair hearing under Governor-General Dame Silvia Cartwright (-4 April 2001–4 August 2006+).

20. Governor-General Dame Silvia Cartwright views male heterosexual sex as a crime. Her husband Peter Cartwright was named as paedophile in *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide* in October 2007.

    The fine was place three weeks later. This shows extreme gender bias. It is a stimulated stresses designed to condition and change behaviour patterns. This is a negative reward from a corrupt feminist married to a paedophile elevated to top government positions on the bases of her double agent status.

21. Dame Silvia Cartwright is still New Zealand's primary representative of the United Nations. The UN was gifted to Joseph Stalin and is his posthumous legacy.[19]

    Like Dame Silvia Cartwright, the United Nations is totally subversive and only serves as an information holding ground and a chicken run. The UN is not known for being effective, but it is known for rape, murder, paedophilia, child-sex for food, ensuring starvation, carelessness with human life, and kowtowing down to fasicst and genocidal politicians – hence Dame Silvia Cartwright is their representative.

    Dame Silvia Cartwright is New Zealand's most corrupt judge.

22. Under your politically corrupt Cold War governance, I feel I am at my wits end, at the end of my physical and mental capacity. With your MKULTRA governance you have issued delayed intense signals (pre-dated fines), long waiting periods, both positive and negative signals (the only positive signal being your losing Election campaign), caused me to move house 5 times since your attacks, and poisoned me on 23 August 2002 and 27 July 2007; as well as tampered with my vehicle on at least 6 occasions (2 April 2002, 23 August 2002, 13 August 2003, 11 May 2005, 16 July 2005, July 2006, 17–27 March 2008); broken into my house on numerous occasions, and had me evicted (1999–2008); and stolen my mail on innumerable occasions (2002–08).

23. Your fine is rejected as it contravenes the Nuremberg Code and The Declaration of Helsinki. Under The Declaration of Helsinki alternating positive and negative signals causing a stimulated breakdown are illegal. As such, it is illegal to fund those who have tried to murder you – more so the named paedophiles.

24. It is illegal to fund those who have poisoned you. It is illegal to fund those who have tried to kill you. It is illegal to fund those who have tampered with your car. It is illegal to fund those who have sabotaged your car in order to cause an accident or explosion. It is illegal to fund those who have put a tracking device on your car. It is illegal to fund those who have broken into your house. It is illegal to fund those who have caused you to move house. It is illegal to fund those who have tampered with your mail.

25. The fines are rejected.

26. Your fines are in breach of The Declaration of Helsinki.

---

[19] See *Gifting the United Nations to Stalin*, May 2007, October 2007.

With reference to CCN 1518908066, CRN 06004140594, 15/09/2006, Drive In Lane Over Center Lne 2 Way, Date Imposed 23/03/2007, Total Amount Imposed $280, Under Enforcement:

It is legal to use the Median Pass Lane. It is for passing during irregular traffic. It was used as such.

This fine was handed out on my birthday. This was a message from the Government's MKULTRA mind control programme to change my thinking, voting, writing and publishing habits.

It was also a message from Sian Elias, the highest-ranking Mossad agent in New Zealand, a Jew, a Sayanim Jew, and contract killer who was part and parcel and a driving force behind several attempts to have me killed.

Sian Elias has been named as a contract killer in several books including *Hitler Was A British Agent*, *How To Take Over The World*, and *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide*, as well as the *New Zealand Truth Weekly* newspaper (22 March 2007, pp. 1 & 5). These were published between September 2005 and December 2007. (**See Attachment "R"**, 'Helen Clark and Sian Elias' Murders – Quotes', and **Attachment "N"**, 'Newspaper Articles')

Sian Elias is the Chief Justice of New Zealand – she was nominated into that position by the murderer Jenny Shipley, a double agent Prime Minister. Shipley's daughter was also involved in murder in Australia. She then coughed up to the police in Christchurch and described how her Arabic taxi-driving boyfriend had killed several people with a bow and arrow, and she had helped cut up the bodies which were then stored in their deep freeze. The Police then rang Australia and asked if any bodies had turned up dead from arrow wounds, and they said: "No. Piss off". Six months later, Shipley's Arabic taxi-driving boyfriend emptied out his deep freezer (must have been a special on goat meat) and dumped the torsos in tidal streams with weights attached. Then the Aussie police rang the Christchurch Police and knew Jenny Shipley's daughter was involved. Rather than solve the crime, the Police bribed Jenny Shipley to the extent that she had to get out of politics. She was New Zealand's Prime Minister at the time. **That's how Helen Clark got into power.**

Internal Affairs had gone round to the Warehouse on Barry's Point Road in Takapuna and spoke with the owner Stephen Tindall, and offered him the managing role of the new large 'The Warehouse' chain. In a spot of bother, he jumped at it.

To give her a hand out, leader of the opposition Helen Clark, who took over as Prime Minister from Jenny Shipley, quietly appointed Shipley 'Ambassador to China'. As a result The Warehouse got cheap goods and has destroyed retail sales and shops throughout New Zealand, and destroyed entire communities within New Zealand.

The Warehouse is known as:
"Jenny Shapely's Whore House,
the Whore House,
where everyone gets a bargain".

Sian Elias' nomination as Chief Justice was seconded by Helen Clark, who succeeded Jenny Shipley as the next double agent Prime Minister. The nomination was funded by bribes from Sian Elias's husband – Hugh Fletcher, as protection for his child sex abuse.

Helen Clark tried to murder me on 2 April 2002 and 23 August 2002, 14–22 May 2004, 27 July 2007, 26 October 2007, as well as other dates, right up to 17–27 March 2008.

Sian Elias was an active part of these murder attempts on 14–22 May 2004 and 27 July 2007, but most likely other dates as well.

On 22 May 2007 I went up to Sian Elias's agent and spoke with him. He confirmed he had been doing reconnaissance on me, along with three other Mossad. He confirmed he was an Israeli Tank Commander (his name was Yaron). He preferred Centurion tanks with adapted turrets and was installing computers and communication systems into offices on Waiheke Island. He joked about using this role to spy on businesses, but was dead keen on getting citizenship and marrying a New Zealand woman.

Many of these murder attempts were a joint effort between Helen Clark and Sian Elias. These were published in 2005, 2006, 2007, and 2008. They have been notified in 37 countries, as well as on podcast, of which there are over 14 hours of interviews.

Sian Elias successfully murdered the chief historian Michael King. This was published in at least three books from September 2005 to January 2008. When I accused the Israeli Tank Comander Yaron of being Mossad and murdering Michael King on behalf of Helen Clark and Sian Elias, he did not deny it.

Rather he looked sideways, as if remembering something he was involved in (kinesthetic eye movement), then looked me straight in the eye and said:

"Why the fuck do you get caught up in this sort of shit!"

Going back to the traffic offence, the officer involved, David Meyer/Mayes [at the 20 April 2009 hearing found to be Sergeant David Kevin Mays], was a mischling Jew working an attack on behalf of Chief Justice Dame Sian Elias.

Chief Justice Dame Sian Elias had failed to murder me and was charging me to help fund her murder attempt of me in May 2004. This is what Jews do to Gentiles. It is racism against non-Jews and non-Freemasons. It is also part and parcel of the Protocols of Zionism.

Sayanim Mossad such as Chief Justice Sian Elias
think of Gentiles as 'Goyim' – those to be milked.

Sian Elias' father was a doctor who had sex with his female patients on his patient table. Most of them were Polynesian women. He was charged, but the Jews intervened. The Jews control the Catholics and the Freemasons, and the Catholics and the Freemasons control the Courts and Police, so it was a fait accompli that he got off scot-free, albeit with his name tarnished.

"Freemasonry is a Jewish establishment, whose history, grades, official appointments, passwords, and explanations are Jewish from beginning to end."[20]
"Every Grand Master of Freemasonry is a priest of Yahweh."[21]
"Gentiles means non-Jews and non-Freemasons."[22]

Not falling into any of these groups, I tend to get attacked by all of these groups. Such attacks are illegal under The Declaration of Helsinki.

Sian Elias is married to the homosexual child sex abuser Hugh Fletcher (both Jewish). He was involved in the Michael King murder. Both of these points were published in *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide*, in three editions (Oct. 2007–Jan. 2008). The murder was partially run from the University of Auckland. The murder occured on 29 March 2004; 7 months later on 18 October 2004, Hugh Fletcher was made Chancellor of the University of Auckland.

This is called a 'Perfect Con', but it was too perfect, so it shines like polished shit and stinks of nugget. The University of Auckland has been tarnished as Murder Inc.

Others involved with the murder were Eli Cara, Uriel Kelman and Zev William Barkan – all Jews. They were also the Jews who robbed the Jewish graveyards in Wellington. They stole medals and uniforms in order to manufacture an historical alibi for themselves. The grave robbery was delivered by television news as "an anti-Semetic attack", but it was carried out by Jews who were in the country doing a murder for a Jewish Chief Justice Sian Elias.

---

[20] Rabbi Isaac Wise of B'nai B'rith, as quoted in *Israelite of America*, 3 August 1866; Michael Tsarion.

[21] Juri Lina quoted in Christopher Knight & Robert Lomas' *The Second Messiah*, Jan, 2007.

[22] Michael Tsarion, 'Brotherhood of Death', Red Ice Creations Webcast, March 2009;

On 13 July 2007, I wrote a letter to the Deputy Registrar of the District Court, Ms Tice, confirming the phone call to at 9.36 am on 12 July 2007 that the District Court letter took six (6) days to arrive (it was most likely backdated) and had ignored my Form 57 application for a hearing, lodged on 10 May 2007, and that no staff could find it. With more that six months past, I claimed that the case should be abandoned and **"the whole process has been an egregious prosecution"**. I then requested a letter citing police abandonment of the case. I received no information until the Auckland Central District Court bailiff Ross Rudolph approached me outside my car, outside my house, on 10 June 2008 – 13 months later.

After the 10 June visit and 13 July 2007 letter I then wrote to the Deputy Registrar on 30 July 2007:

> **S T Wolfgramm**
> Deputy Registrar
> **Auckland District Court**
> DDI Ph (09) 916-9005
> Re: Your letter dated 24th July 2007
>
> CRN: 06004140594 – Did drive on the Median Pass Lane as allowed
>
> Application for Rehearing pursuant to Section 75 Summary Proceedings Act 1957
>
> While it is true that the police are a paedophile and crime creation movement who use entrapment procedures, would you please remove your errors so that we may proceed in agreement.
> Please also remove the twice-convicted Constable James Matewhinau Cassin from the New Zealand Police so that I may turn up to Court. At present you are employing violent criminals as police hitmen.
> For a long time your reputation has been: "The only thing the police are good at is rape and murder". To this you can now add . . . "paedophilia and crime creation".
>
> Yours faithfully,
>
> **Greg Hallett**
> PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland, New Zealand

This was then published in *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide*, page 216, in three editions (October 2007–January 2008). The book has since been nominated on a website for non-fiction book of the year. Since then it appears to have been massively suppressed.

Since the case was **requested to be abandoned on 13 July 2007, after a more than six (6) month delay, and raising it again 11 months later on 10 June 2008, this extensive delay amounts to psychological torture** bringing me to the end of my **physical and mental capacity and is considered an attempt to stimulate a breakdown**. Pursuance of the fine is now **illegal under The Declaration of Helsinki**.

That's all very true, but the circumstances of the fine are even more intriguing in terms of MKULTRA daily practises amongst the police. Some of the points raised in my 10 March 2007 letter to the Auckland District Court and faxed to the JPs Court, Auckland District Court on 23 March 2007 were:

1. **The courts are not a safe place to be.** The officer involved was intimidating, arrogant, obstructive, showing off to the blonde female officer in his car (Natasha Bryce), endangering others, held up traffic unnecessarily, and manufactured a crime.
2. There was no centre line. There was a Median Passing Lane. I was passing another vehicle. I used the lane available to me. No crime was committed. No harm done.

3. No lawyer has ever heard of the charge.
4. I was not on the wrong side of the centre line, although the Officer David Mayer/ Mayes/ Mays/ Mace did nudge out as I was passing and tried to get me over the wrong side of the Median Passing Lane.
5. Officer David Mayer/ Mayes/ Mays/ Mace was parked illegally in the middle of the road waiting for a milk delivery van to reverse (not a "campervan" as he stated). He held up four cars. This was pedantic driving and crime creation.
6. You got my name and age wrong.
7. The officer refused to give me his name. He flashed his ID card and it read "David Mayer", not "David Mayes". [From here on in it is listed, post-20 April 2009 as "Mays", but then the High Court Judge Stevens gave it as "Mace" on 24 April 2009, which confirms that he does not give anyone his correct name – Why? Judicial corruption?]
8. The officer identified himself as a non-commissioned officer, driving an unmarked black stationwagon.
9. When I stopped, Sergeant David Kevin Mays accussed me of overtaking on a "Flush Median Pass" and then flushed with embarrassment revealling how stupid his statement was.
10. There is no centreline. There is a "Flush Median Pass". The Flush Median Pass is for passing.
11. What Sergeant David Kevin Mays has done is crime creation.
12. It is well recognised amongst lawyers, epecially Queen's Counsel that **the police create over 80% of all crime**. They only solve 40% and this included the traffic tickets they create the crimes for, as well as drugs they supply.
13. **I was prevented from obtaining a witnesses as I was bound to my car.** This was obstruction of justice.
14. Sergeant David Kevin Mays was arrogant and obstructive, refused to identify himself truthfully, refused repeatedly to show his ID, and verballed on the ticket – that is, he lied in his brief of evidence. He manufactured evidence that did not exist, and does not exist.
15. Sergeant David Kevin Mays repeatedly refused to answer the question: "Are you a paedophile?" This is a valid question since **nearly 3,000 of the 9,500 employees in the Police are paedophiles**. This was even written up on Wikipedia.
16. The modus operandi of paedophiles in the police force is the same as Sergeant David Kevin Mays **modus operandi – crime creation – arrogance – obstruction – misinformation – showing off – and verballing (lying to manufacture evidence).**
17. The primary requirement of a paedophile such as, I presume, Sergeant David Kevin Mays, is to **remove the biological father so that the paedophiles he works for can access the unfathered children. This includes the police bias of fining heterosexual males – 95% of the people who lose their licence are male and all a woman has to do to "not lose her licence" is to write a letter to the courts or send in a photocopy of her tits.** [When I told High Court Judge Stevens this on 20 April 2009, he said: "That's true"]. Perhaps the **homosexual Police Recruitment Head** has something to do with this. **He lives with the homosexual Labour MP Charles Chauvel.**
18. Homosexuality and paedophilia in the Police is a real problem – when discovered – and the former **Police District Commander of the North Shore, Taffy Walsh, was imprisoned for having sex with his 8- and 10-year-old grandaughters in the Takapuna Police executive toilet.**

19. Wikipedia backs up the New Zealand Police as a paedophile movement, under "Pornographic e-mails":

> In November 2004, police IT staff secretly cloned the police e-mail system and subjected it to forensic analysis. Over 300 employees were found to have what were considered "inappropriate" e-mail images, many sexually explicit. Many were subjected to internal disciplinary procedures and counselling. No criminal charges were laid however 351 staff members were required to attend *Insight Training* seminars between May 2005 and June 2006. The total cost of these seminars was $163,746 including $22,127 for venues and meals at conference centres around the country.
>
> The Police Commissioner was politically criticised for being too soft with his staff, despite initiating the investigation and pro-actively making the findings of the investigation public before employees were even confronted and questioned about the e-mails concerned. This investigation is said to have prompted further investigations amongst other government agencies.[23]

20. The further investigations were in fact, a cover up [and removed from the web by 20.4.09]
21. **Not 351, but nearly 3,000 officers were involved, and the "sexually explicit images" were of child porn.** Rather than an investigation, there was a cover up. Rather than *Insight Training* seminars, there was a day off. Rather than costs, there was a hand-out.
22. Rather than clearing out the paedophiles from government, the Speaker of the House Jonathan Hunt was promoted to New Zealand's High Commissioner to Britain. He had been named by the U.S. Coast Guard as a paedophile in September 2003 and this was mentioned in Parliament in February 2004. The Police paedophile incident was, in part, manufactured by Helen Clark's Labour government to cover for him. It was distraction news to compromise the Police.
23. **High Commissioner to Britain Jonathan Hunt** was then returned to New Zealand early after he was **exposed for running an international paedophile movement**, pan-American and Pan-Europe. He now lives in an apartment in Grey's Ave and walks through Meyer's Park trying to pick up street kids, inviting them back for alcohol. He is enormously fat and his nickname is 'Jabber the Hunt'.
24. Sergeant David Kevin Mays drives around in an unmarked car engineering accidents, manufacuring tickets and showing off to the female in the car, while he charges heterosexual fathers in an attempt to remove them from their children so his fellow paedophile officers can access them in the name of 'assistance'. He has been getting away with this for nine (9) years. Jabber-the-Hunt and others are his clients.
25. Given that close to 3,000 officers were involved in the 'Police Computer Paedophilia' and there are 9,500 Police, of which a third are in administration, there is a 50:50 chance that Sergeant David Kevin Mays is a paedophile.
26. Paedophilia is illegal and it is illegal to fund paedophilia. **It is also illegal to fund the police when they are shown to be paedophiles.**
27. **It is illegal to fund a crime and illegal under international law to fund a criminal organisation. Such a request causes a stimulated breakdown.** As a result of this Police activity, over **a third of the population of New Zealand have left the country**. This is one of the largest and fastest migrations per capita in the developed world. MKULTRA is so ingrained in New Zealand society that this has passed virtually unnoticed.
28. The New Zealand Police are operating illegally under The Declaration of Helsinki.
29. As a result of ongoing harrassment by the police, with special targetting to my good self, due to my status as an international author (37 countries) and international public speaker (New Zealand, Cook Island's, Canada, America, Germany, Sweden), who reveals such crimes by the Police as their ongoing modus operandi, I have been the target of the Police, especially from **crooked officers like Constable James Matewhinau Cassin and Sergeant David Kevin Mays** (of the same 'Combined Investigations Unit'). No doubt they are **instructed from higher up** as to who to target, whether by profiling, naming, individual cars, Vehicles Of Interest (VOI), vehicles with tracking devices on them (mine), or vehicles with video and sound and tracking (my previous vehicle).
30. All profiling is illegal.
31. I have also been the target of **crooked judges** like **Judge Gittos**, **Judge Hole**, and the **Head of the Disputes Tribunal Grant Aislabie**, as well as his career twin, the lawyer **Paul Geoghegan**, who has since nominated himself as a judge. This was accepted by the **KGB Attorney-General Margaret Wilson.** Geoghegan is currently the principal supplier of children to paedophiles in the Rotorua and Taupo areas, as the Family Court Judge. Paul Geoghegan is such a rotten judge, both fathers and mothers do their utmost to have their cases heard outside his jurisdiction ['Jewish-Diction' – Jewish Dictatorship].
32. As a result **I live in constant fear of the Police and the Courts and their fingering of those who expose them. This reeks of MKULTRA.**
33. Due to the **homosexual, paedophile, raping, and murdering culture of the police**, I feel, think, and experience that the **police are no longer able to call themselves a 'peace service'**.
34. **Most female Police Detectives** will back me up here. They are **routinely pack-raped** on their promotion from probation to accepted service.
35. The New Zealand police should therefore change their name to something more appropriate like the "Department of Fingering" (DOF), "Department of Rape" (DOR), "Department of Crime Creation" (DOCC), or "**Department of Paedophile Enabling**" (DOPE).
36. Evidence shows that the **primary role of the police is removing those of value out of New Zealand**, and removing the father out of the family, within New Zealand.
37. Given the opportunity, I would charge Sergeant David Kevin Mays with "driving with intent to injure".
38. It is illegal to pay this fine as the **Police** are living up to their common reputation – rape and murder, paedophilia and crime creation . . . **New Zealand's biggest gang looking at adult and child porn on their computers instead of attending incidents.**
39. The police also pay others to drive their police cars for them. This builds up the petrol bill for next years budget, and, the civilan drivers are on strict instructions to drive in the opposite direction of any call-out.
40. KIWIs (Keen Interest Without Intelligence) have caught onto this and when they want to drive home drunk, they just report an incident at their house. As they drive home, all the police are driving in the opposite direction. Some are hiding in lanes toking on P. Others are confiscating drugs off one dealer (including the pinch/money) and delivering it to a tinny house they control. So if you're driving home drunk, phone in a crime at your place and you won't get nicked.
41. The police are known to be accessories to murder.
42. In one case, the police took a body from a drug dealer in Huntly and buried it in South Head, and when the body was located, the police then tied it to an anchor in the Manukau Harbour, and when the body was hauled up by a Maori fisherman and his son, Police divers moved the body, this time more thoroughly. What a mess.

---

[23] http://www.nzherald.co.nz/organisation/story.cfm?o id=131&ObjectID=10396086.

No charges were laid as the murderer was a Maori and he had rung the police and said: "What would happen if I exposed the Prime Minister Helen Clark as a lesbian?" The Police replied that he would gain some immunity if he didn't. The murderer then requested the police come and pick up the body out of the freezer, which they did.

43. **The police cover-up of Helen Clark's lesbianism is a cause for unsolved murders.**

44. Other incidents come to mind. In the matter of the police introducing drugs into New Zealand, two incidents come to mind.

    The police introduced methamphetamines ('P', OL, 'ICE') in 1992, via the Papakura police . . . also, the Minister of Health Annette King trafficked 10 kg of Afghan heroin from Helen Clark's office to the Police, who gave it to the gangs, requesting they establish a market for it. Annette King was then promoted from the Minister of Health to the Minister of Police. This means that all police were then taking instructions from a heroin trafficker.

    As you can understand, from my point of view, as a voting partially-conscious citizen, this does not place the police in a good light. It means that paying a trumped-up fine to the police is actually supporting the police heroin and methaphetamine trafficking. This was published in *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide* (Oct. & Dec. 2007, Jan. 2008).

45. Annette King has since been promoted to the Minister of Justice.

46. Drug trafficking is illegal, as is paedophilia, and it can be considered an act of terrorism to fund an organisation that is dealing in such illicit trade. As a result, the Police are a police service in name only. The Police are a force for crime.

    The Police are New Zealand's biggest gang. They even skite about this and say: **"We even have a patch and our immunity is assured".**

47. This renders all fines illegal.

48. This renders the Police as MKULTRA protagonists and enforcers.

49. The Minister of Police Annette King was also named in a newspaper as a coke dealer on 22 March 2007.[24]

50. These claims were not refuted by either Annette King, or her Press Secretary John Saunders before the article went to print, or after it was printed.

51. Although the reporter cites he got this information from my books (of which there are six published and distributed over 37 countries), it is my understanding that Annette King was distributing Afghan heroin. I don't know about the coke. Little difference as they are both Class A drugs and both warrant at least nine years in prison.

52. Their source is different as the heroin came from Afghanistan and was delivered by Jaap de Hoop Scheffer in late March 2005 – that is, the Secretary-General of NATO.

53. That the police were wantonly distributing this heroin to gangs warrants something similar to nine years in prison for the police officers involved and a complete investigation into police corruption, which, from other magazine and newspaper articles (*Investigate magazine*, May and June 2007) warrants a Commission of Inquiry.

54. I call for a Commission of Inquiry into police corruption.

55. This would make the Woods Commission of Inquiry in New South Wales look like a sideshow – so prevalent, deep, serious and untouched by law is Police corruption in New Zealand.

---

[24] *New Zealand Truth*, 22 March 2007, p. 5. The article outlining government corruption took all of the front page and all of page 5. There were no responses and all further comments were "no comment". Investigating reporters were just hung up on by the Press Secretaries to Ministers and Commissioners.

56. The primary requirement of a paedophile is that the biological father is removed. Paedophiles are most often Roman Catholics and Freemasons, as well as bisexuals, homosexuals and lesbians. In order to get promoted in the police, one has to belong to these two groups. As a result Roman Catholics and Freemasons dominate the higher ranks of the police. The only other group to reach the tops of the police ranks are drug dealers (Police Spokesman Greg O'Connor and Minister of Police Annette King) and rapists (police officer Bob Schollum and police officer Brad Shipton) with the Auckland Area Commander and Assistant Police Commissioner Clinton 'Clint' Rickards narrowly escaping conviction over three trials, despite being so closely associated with the two convicted officers that they were in the same pack rapes which resulted in their convictions. Rickards was also named in Operation AUSTIN for raping 34 women in Rotorua alone.

57. **I call for a Commission of Inquiry into police corruption with special reference to drug trafficking, murder, paedophilia, beastiality, necrophilia, theft, profiling, and social engineering, driven by the MKULTRA programme specifically designed to stimulate stress causing a breakdown of the individual and society based on intense signals, long waiting periods, rotating positive and negative signals, and changing the subject's physical condition causing brainwashing resulting in a CIA MKULTRA JUDICIAL perfect citizen. That is, someone who has given up their freedoms to become an amnesiac vegetable in the name of democracy, having lost all ability to question authority or challenge in the face of conflict, while accepting the police and judiciary as 'THE AUTHORITY' when both are a source of untold misery.**

58. The fines for these three traffic tickets were originally $340. They are now $730. It is my understanding that the Police are trying to recapture fines returned – the $1,490 in fines charged on 23 August 2002 – fines that were given out for exposing the Prime Minister Helen Clark as a KGB agent – fines that were accompanied by a poisoning and a murder attempt.

59. I have since exposed Helen Clark's government as being 75% non-heterosexual and the country run by former prostitutes, lesbians, paedophiles, paedophile-minders, paedophile-enablers and drug traffickers. (**See Attachment "Q"**, 'Annotated Cabinet', **Attachment "ZZ"**, 'Heroin Trafficking, Lawyers & Mr Asia' and **Attachment "ZZ"**, 'Big Afghan Heroin Dump')

60. There is general agreement of this throughout the country.

61. **The New Zealand government is illegal under The Declaration of Helsinki. The Labour Party (1999–2008) has been running New Zealand as an MKULTRA Cold War experiment. Little has changed with the new government.**

62. The fine is rejected.

63. Further, it is noted that the removal of my vehicle will inhibit my ability to earn a living and cause me much stimulated stress, illegal under The Declaration of Helsinki.

64. I have a painting, which will over-reach the value of your claim. (**See Attachment "Q"**)

65. It is illegal under international law to remove my car, which has a value far in excess of your cited crimes, which, as I have exposed, have been manufactured through profiling an individual under circumstances illegal under The Declaration of Helsinki.

66. I demand a full Court hearing on all matters.

67. **I request a Commission of Inquiry into Police corruption.**

68. I request a Commission of Inquiry into **Judicial corruption**.

69. I request a Commission of Inquiry into **Government corruption**.

70. I request a Commission of Inquiry into the **Police MKULTRA modus operandi**.

71. I request a Commission of Inquiry into the **Judiciary's MKULTRA modus operandi**.

72. I request a Commission of Inquiry into the **Government MKULTRA modus operandi**.

73. **I request The Declaration of Helsinki be applied in any enquiries into the New Zealand Government, Judiciary and Police.**

74. I request **The Declaration of Helsinki be applied in the Commission of Inquiry to the New Zealand Government, Judiciary and Police.**

All of the above can simultaneously be run as Royal Commissions of Inquiry, with different personnel. These tend to be whitewashes – **as the programmer must recognise that they have over-stepped the programme – so a lay Commission is preferred, without the** double-dipping.

I would be happy to present evidence at such an inquiry, and dissapointed if I were not invited to present evidence.

75. **I have been the subject of at least 6 murder attempts, 2 poisonings, 3 forced house sales, 2 forced section sales, 5 house moves, numerous house break-ins, 6 attacks on my car, 2 buggings by the SIS (1 with video, sound, relay and transmitter), numerous mail tamperings, at least 28 false police charges, massive Counter-Intelligence**, and the courts have not been able to settle a debt on my behalf since January 1994 when I exposed the trial head of the Disputes Tribunal as a drug user. He was then promoted to head the Disputes Tribunal.

76. As you know, **New Zealand is run by Counter-Intelligence and not by Intelligence.** Rather than share knowledge, New Zealand suppresses knowledge to ensure that other's don't know. Those with the knowledge then become victims.

77. I exposed the bug in my car through a manuscript that I had allowed to be stolen out of my vehicle by the SIS and Mossad, who were watching me. As soon as they read it, they smashed the rear driver's side quarterlite window and removed their spying equipment. They left a tool behind. It had a fingerprint. I took it to the police. They took the fingerprint. Then I was advised by the police that they do not keep fingerprint records of anyone working in the SIS – so no fingerprint match was found.

78. To date only one of your charges (an engineered charge) has stuck. To make it stick the judiciary went to extraordinary lengths. The charge was for dangerous driving. When they found me, I was stationary, sober and alert. I have been charged twice with dangerous driving while stationary and sober. I view this as extreme profiling. The judicary has a hatred of fathers going for custody or winning custody, and, inspite of all their deterents, I won custody. It took 8½ years.

79. The police are motivated by their paedophilia.

80. The Crown Prosecutor Mr Sheer was made a District Court judge and was first utilised as a circuit judge. He was arranged to be in Huntly at the half-day of my hearing.

81. The Police had coerced the Black Power gang to take a hit out on my lawyer. This information was passed to my lawyer verbally and sufficiently shut him up. It also came to me via common sources of concern.

82. The police officer involved in court was Detective Alan Brown. He said he had interviewed me on site, but I had never spoken to him before. I had spoken to a white haired round-faced man, and Alan Brown was skinny with tan skin, dark hair and an attitude problem, like he'd spent too much time with aggressive dogs.

83. **Detective Alan Brown is a total fraud.**

84. Detectives engineer crime as a career move to get them out of the small towns, so Detective Alan Brown got case notes from another file and read this out in the Huntly District Court in front of the District Court judge Sheer, formerly the Crown Prosecutor. Detective Brown failed to change the dates, names, types of vehicles and the names of the drivers and witnesses, so it had a Pythonesque element.

85. Despite this, Crown Prosecutor Sheer lapped it up because he was now a judge and my lawyer didn't say anything because his life had been threatened.

86. The next time I saw Detective Alan Brown was outside the Auckland District Court where I was being filmed for a documentary on the practises of the courts and those within them. The interviewer complained because he asked me one question and I spoke for 11½ minutes. Sometimes there just ain't no room to move.

87. Detective Alan Brown tried to block the shot.

88. On 3 June 2008 in the back rooms of Parliament, Prime Minister Helen Clark declared: **"Greg Hallett is dangerous, not to be associated with, and a target"**.

89. This was relayed to me via a very very high-ranking civil servant present who then told the former 2IC of the SIS, who then contacted me and asked to meet with me personally, and as soon as possible. This message was then passed to me over lunch on 4 June 2008. The 2IC spoke to me in a deliberate voice, correcting himself to ensure he got the quotes of the message correctly:

"The guts of the phone call was that I was to dissassociate myself from Greg Hallett. Greg Hallett has been declared a very dangerous man. Greg Hallett is a target . . .

"Helen Clark is going to try and discredit you. Minister of Finance Dr Michael Cullen mentioned Ian Wishart last week in parliament and compared him to a mental patient. He used parliamentary priviledge.

"They're not going to take your driver licence, for something like drunken driving, they're going to try something else."

90. "The Government has confirmed it will cut contributions to the national superannuation fund, known as the Cullen fund . . . The [Labour] Government borrowed $50 million a week to make its contributions. Prime Minister John Key: 'From July 2007 to January 2009, the Crown paid $3.4 billion into the fund, however all of that was lost'."[25]

91. **Finance Minister Dr Michael Cullen was "The Six Million Dollar Man"**. He was losing NZ$6 million a day. He was gambling with money he didn't have. All the money was borrowed. This makes Labour's Finance Minister Dr Michael Cullen the biggest fraudster in New Zealand's history.

92. It's almost derigeur for the Labour Finance Minister to be a paedophile, only this one was British, sent to New Zealand to destroy it. The British paedophile Dr Michael Cullen was always a double agent. Now he is one of the single biggest fuckwits in New Zealand's history – that greasy man-child.

93. The point is, the fuckwit gambling of the Minister of Finance means the Police and Councils have to collect traffic tickets to cover for his gambling losses.

94. Since Helen Clark declared me 'dangerous, not to be associated with, and a target' on 3 June 2008, the Court Bailiff turned up at my door a week later on 10 June 2008 with fines up to 15 months old.

95. There is a chronological sequence here. Surely this is a financial assassination designed to replace the failed physical assassinations. At minimum, this is linked to time wasting five months out from the election, and designed to prevent me influencing it.

---

[25] 'Government confirms cut to superannuation fund', TV3 News, 6:51 pm, 11 March 2009.

96. **It is my understanding that when such a double agent Prime Minister as Helen Clark, with all her KGB training, cover marriage, murders and frauds** (her Deputy borrowing, gambling and losing $6 million a day for 16 months), **declares someone "Dangerous, not to be associated with and a target", then this is open code for assassination, with the assassin to be promoted.**

97. I need the Courts assurance that they are not accessories to murders in the past, murder attempts in the past, or murders planned. With their complicity, I doubt that the courts can provide this. Therefore:

I charge the New Zealand Judiciary with accessory to murder and attempted murder.

98. I need the Courts assurance that they are independent of the Government.

99. I need the Courts assurance that their judges are independent of the Deputy Commissioners who advise them, and who are appointed by the government to advise Judges.

100. **If these assurances are not given in writing, then I cannot take it that the New Zealand judiciary has not been part of the assassination attempts against me, and part and parcel of assassinations against others.**

[None of these assurances were provided by the High Court on 20 April 2009.]

101. **These assassinations against me have been physical, automotive, career, reputation, financial, and judicial (especially Judges' Gittos, Hole and Elias).**

102. There have been a continual series of targeted hits ever since I exposed the trial Head of the Disputes Tribunal Grant Aislabie as a drug user during a Disputes Tribunal hearing in January 1994. Since then, I have not won a material case.[26]

103. **This has been part of a financial assassination.**

104. It appears, almost ritually, that whenever I buy a house, I am not paid, then I go to court, and rather than win my earnings, I'm robbed of further finances.

105. In one case under Judge Hole, rather than win $4,500, I had to pay the client $4,800 – a cost to me of $9,300 plus stresses and a fortnight's lost work at both ends. The recipient turned out to be Prime Minister Helen Clark's school buddy. **(See Attachment "V"**, 'Pru Gee and Mark Lewis Goold')

Pru Gee employed me within three days of the Waiheke Mossad murder failing, and never intended to pay. Not only did she not intend to pay, she never had the finances to either pay, or complete the job.

Judge Hole simply refused to acknowledge my evidence and sabotaged any process of law in my favour. When I presented evidence, he simply looked out the window and appeared to be dreaming of golf.

106. It also appears that all of those who get away with not paying me through the courts have been convicted sex abusers, drug users, financial lieutenants to heroin traffickers, Drug Squad informants and associates of the Helen Clark with like minded non-values, who attack for the government in order to maintain complicit cover for their own misdemeanours. This is usually various forms of swinging.

107. But then: **New Zealand is a paedophile movement fronting as a country.**

108. **False Arrest:** In 1999, I was phoned by the police to inform me there was a warrant out for my arrest and that I could pick up the arrest warrant from the Avondale Police Station. So the next day I went to the Avondale Police Station, went up to the counter and asked for my arrest warrant, giving my name and address. The officer behind the counter couldn't find it, and he didn't look very hard.

I recognised him. He was a builder and either moonlighted as a police officer or moon-lighted as a builder. Either way, he was crooked at both. He had contacted my architecture practise and I had gone out to Pt Chevalier and met him at his house. He wanted to rennovate illegally, without a building permit, and only needed drawings for beam sizes.

109. A short time later I was phoned by a female officer in the Ponsonby Police Station to inform me that there was a warrant out for my arrest and could I come in and pick it up. I told them I would be in tomorrow around lunchtime. The female officer asked if it could be early and I said I couldn't get there until 9 am. So I arrived at 9 am. She grabbed some papers, didn't show them to me, and drove me to the Auckland Central Police Station.

110. I had my cell phone, shoelaces and belt removed, with the excuse that it was to avoid suicide, and was placed in a cell in the dungeons, alone, still not knowing what this was about. I was given no food, drink, or telephone facility, then transferred into a police car.

111. In the car were the largest Police Officers I have ever seen. I was sat in the middle of the back seat and had to crunch my shoulders to fit. To my right sat the then Waikato Commander/ future Auckland Area Commander Clint Rickards. He was later found by Operation Austin to be New Zealand's worst ever rapist and paedophile. He was also a Mongrel Mob gang member in the Hawke's Bay and had entered the police by informing on his gang members in 1978/79.

112. I was placed in a cell with another, then placed in my own cell, and was soon joined by the 2IC of Black Power, Papakura chapter. A schizophrenic who specialised in boxing, he was placed in my cell by the former gang member Clint Rickards in order to have me beaten up.

113. Being a vegetarian (who eats fish, what is that – aquatarian?), when the sandwiches came around filled with pork, I gave mine to Black Power. We were all bros, but every 5 minutes he would forget where he was and how he got there MKULTRA), so I would have to begin the pacifying conversation again. He did teach me how to smuggle in a pen to write on the walls. Saved by a ham sandwich – the Maoris should relate to that.

114. At 3.45 pm I was taken out of the cell, unbeaten, much to the chagrin of Clint Rickards, and arraigned before the judge at 4.15 pm – the latest possible time. The amorphous charges were read out and the police produced no evidence. I produced no defence as I had never heard of the charge, nor did I understand it, so the judge dismissed the case and looked quizically at the police with all the disgust and armoury of a pair of bushy eybrows.

115. I was then led to the District Court cells and shoved out the entrance, having to make my own way back to the Central Police Station. This is the walk of shame – 1,000 metres of very public walk without shoelaces, belt, cell phone, money or credit cards.

116. It had all be a collosal waste of a day. At the time I was earning $1,000 a day.

117. I require compensation for a day of harrassment in a cell without a warrant, later found to related to a male involved in a domestic 1,000 km away in Christchurch. **(See Attachments "D")**

118. I understand Clint Rickards has been shamed beyond belief . . . I also understand he has been accepted by the Law Faculty to train as a lawyer. There were a record number of objections to his acceptance to the Bar, including rape, paedophilia and methamphetamine dealing. Despite this, the New Zealand Law Society accepted him to the bar. What a joke!

---

[26] There was one exception. I won against furniture remover and storer Peter Sterk, but still 40 % of my winnings were removed by the referee for no reason, and Sterk is well known for "allowing others to search through stored items". 'Other's' includes drug dealers who might be after a pinch, and those they report to, like the drug squad.

The New Zealand Law Society is a joke.
It doesn't uphold the law, it upholds crimes.

119. **The Head of the Disputes Tribunal Grant Aislabie** was my father's drinking partner, he had a thing for my mother, used to confide in her, and my closest relative was his drug dealer. Cycling home from school I would regularly find him in the bar at home, on the ground floor drinking with my father at 3.30 pm. When Aislabie saw me, he would rush out of the bar, open the ranchsliders and look at my 17-year-old arse as I got off my bicycle.

120. On 20 January 1980, the Pope made it legal for Roman Catholics to become Freemasons. Aislabie joined as soon as he could and I was standing at the top of his driveway when he returned from his initiation. There was a barbeque.

121. Roman Catholic Freemasons were then encouraged to compromise themselves in exchange for promotion. Grant got into Class A drugs, namely coke and ecstasy, between the summers of 1982/83 and 1986/87. I don't know about the other times.

122. Aislabie would lend out his 1938 Plymouth (golden brown colour) in exchange for drugs and these would be left under the driver's seat or between the clashing board and the weatherboard at the back of the cabana behind the house.

123. Aislabie formed a law practise on 13th Ave in Tauranga called ADHL. My closest relative supplied Class A drugs to three of the four partners, and two of the partners would fly to Australia on trips.

124. When one of the ADHL partners returned and came around home for lunch he reported cryptically: "I'm not sure if I was supposed to be there".

125. My mother had grown up in Rangiora, which is spy country, especially ex-British Intelligence, and Grant had a thing for my mother. He would come around and confess to her and seek counselling.

126. On one occasion all the siblings were kicked out of the house, but I ate worms at the bottom of the garden. Grant confessed to my mother that he had made sexual advances on his daughter Caroline. He then separated from his wife Jill for a year, and had a series of mental breakdowns.

127. Commensurate with denial, he ran for Mayor of Tauranga and got seven (7) votes. Even his wife didn't vote for him.

128. **As a Roman Catholic, Freemason, bisexual, borderline alcoholic, Class A drug user, with incestous tendencies, having a series of mental breakdowns who was born New Zealands's hairest baby and his mother wanted to smother him with a pillow . . . he applied to become the Head of the Disputes Tribunal and was accepted from 1993 to 2005.**

129. He was officially the Head of the Disputes Tribunal from 1999 to 2005 and was appointed by his near neighbour, the Attorney-General Margaret Wilson KGB, the same double agent who later appointed Grant's career twin Paul Geoghegan as a Family Court Judge.

130. **Their relationship as career twins then became a basis for the professional paedophile movement – Common Purpose.**

131. When I exposed Grant Aislabie as a drug user in a Disputes Tribunal hearing in January 1994, I was being nice to him – I had left a lot out.

132. The retribution for being nice to him and 'not disclosing all his sins' is that I haven't won a court case since and I have been repeatedly stripped of all my assets and finances.

133. I have since been told that this harrassment is blacklisting, hobbling and boiler-plating.

134. When it came for me to apply for custody, my separated wife was instructed to move to Hamilton. Here, she employed Paul Geoghegan as the Council for the Child.

135. Paul Geoghegan is a Roman Catholic and Freemason of the same type, look and character as Grant Aislabie.

136. They were both short hairy Roman Catholic Freemason "career twins". That is, they would cover for each other, and attack anyone who had attacked the other, and then recommend each other for promotion.

137. Council for the Child Paul Geoghegan drew my custody case out as long as possible and obstructed access whenever he could. He used to ring me, once on New Years Eve, and informed me that he had found another way of stopping me seeing my child for another six (6) to eight (8) months.

138. Geoghegan did this on five (5) occassions over a period of five (5) years with **obstructions to access for 10 months, 11 months, 8 months, 6 months, 8 months and 11 months.**

139. Child Paul Geoghegan used to phone me and say: "You know you can't win. It's to big".

140. In the end, I won custody (after 8½ years), but not without it costing me most of the above. Given a choice, my daughter phoned me from school, I went down and picked her up, and she moved cities and has been living with me full time, since 4 April 2006.

141. **Paul Geoghegan was enormously unpopular and other lawyers used to walk up to him outside court and say: "Fucked up anyone's life today Paul."**

142. Almost immediately after my case was over, Paul Geoghegan nominated himself as a judge and this was accepted by the Attorney-General Margaret Wilson KGB.

143. It turns out that Patrick Mahoney, the **Principle Family Court judge from 1 October 1984 to 31 March 2004 was a defrocked Catholic priest.**

144. **It also turns out that the Family Court is a paedophile and crime-creation movement and has taken over the Catholic Church as the principle supplier of children to paedophiles.**

145. I seek Commissions of Inquiry into all of the above.

146. I see compensation of all of the above.

This has been posted overseas for my own protection. This has been posted overseas so that others should know what New Zealand is about.

Affirmed at Auckland .

This——17th day—of–June———2008 (first-time)

Affirmed at Auckland .

This 20th day of April 2009

Before me: . . . .

A Registrar of the District Court of New Zealand

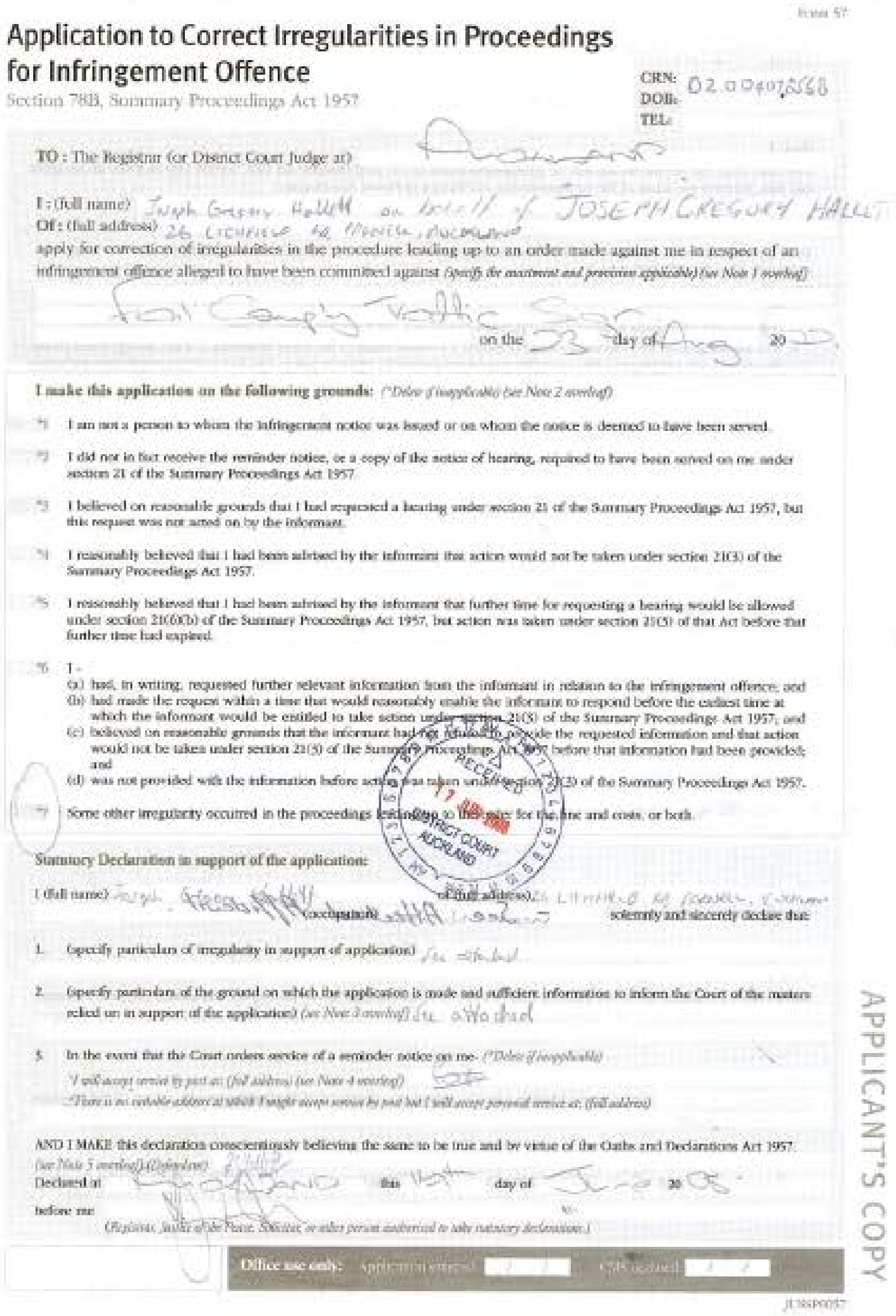

Form 57

Application to Correct Irregularities in Proceedings for Infringement Offence

Section 78B, Summary Proceedings Act 1957

CRN: 02004072568
DOB:
TEL:

TO : The Registrar (or District Court Judge at) Auckland

I : (full name) Joseph Gregory Hallett on behalf of JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
Of : (full address) 26 Lichfield Rd Parnell, Auckland
apply for correction of irregularities in the procedure leading up to an order made against me in respect of an infringement offence alleged to have been committed against *(specify the enactment and provision applicable) (see Note 1 overleaf)*

Fail Comply Traffic Sign

on the 23 day of Aug 20

I make this application on the following grounds: *(*Delete if inapplicable) (see Note 2 overleaf)*

*1 I am not a person to whom the infringement notice was issued or on whom the notice is deemed to have been served.

*2 I did not in fact receive the reminder notice, or a copy of the notice of hearing, required to have been served on me under section 21 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

*3 I believed on reasonable grounds that I had requested a hearing under section 21 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957, but this request was not acted on by the informant.

*4 I reasonably believed that I had been advised by the informant that action would not be taken under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

*5 I reasonably believed that I had been advised by the informant that further time for requesting a hearing would be allowed under section 21(6)(b) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957, but action was taken under section 21(5) of that Act before that further time had expired.

*6 I -
(a) had, in writing, requested further relevant information from the informant in relation to the infringement offence; and
(b) had made the request within a time that would reasonably enable the informant to respond before the earliest time at which the informant would be entitled to take action under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957; and
(c) believed on reasonable grounds that the informant had not refused to provide the requested information and that action would not be taken under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 before that information had been provided; and
(d) was not provided with the information before action was taken under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

*7 Some other irregularity occurred in the proceedings leading up to the order for the fine and costs, or both.

RECEIVED
17 JUN 2008
DISTRICT COURT AUCKLAND

Statutory Declaration in support of the application:

I (full name) Joseph Gregory Hallett of (full address) 26 Lichfield Rd Parnell, Auckland (occupation) solemnly and sincerely declare that:

1. (specify particulars of irregularity in support of application) See attached
2. (specify particulars of the ground on which the application is made and sufficient information to inform the Court of the matters relied on in support of the application) *(see Note 3 overleaf)* See attached
3. In the event that the Court orders service of a reminder notice on me- *(*Delete if inapplicable)*
**I will accept service by post at: (full address) (see Note 4 overleaf)*
**There is no suitable address at which I might accept service by post but I will accept personal service at: (full address)*

AND I MAKE this declaration conscientiously believing the same to be true and by virtue of the Oaths and Declarations Act 1957.
(see Note 5 overleaf) (Defendant)
Declared at Auckland this 18th day of June 20 08
before me
(Registrar, Justice of the Peace, Solicitor, or other person authorised to take statutory declarations.)

Office use only: Application entered: / / CMS updated: / /

JUSSP0057

APPLICANT'S COPY

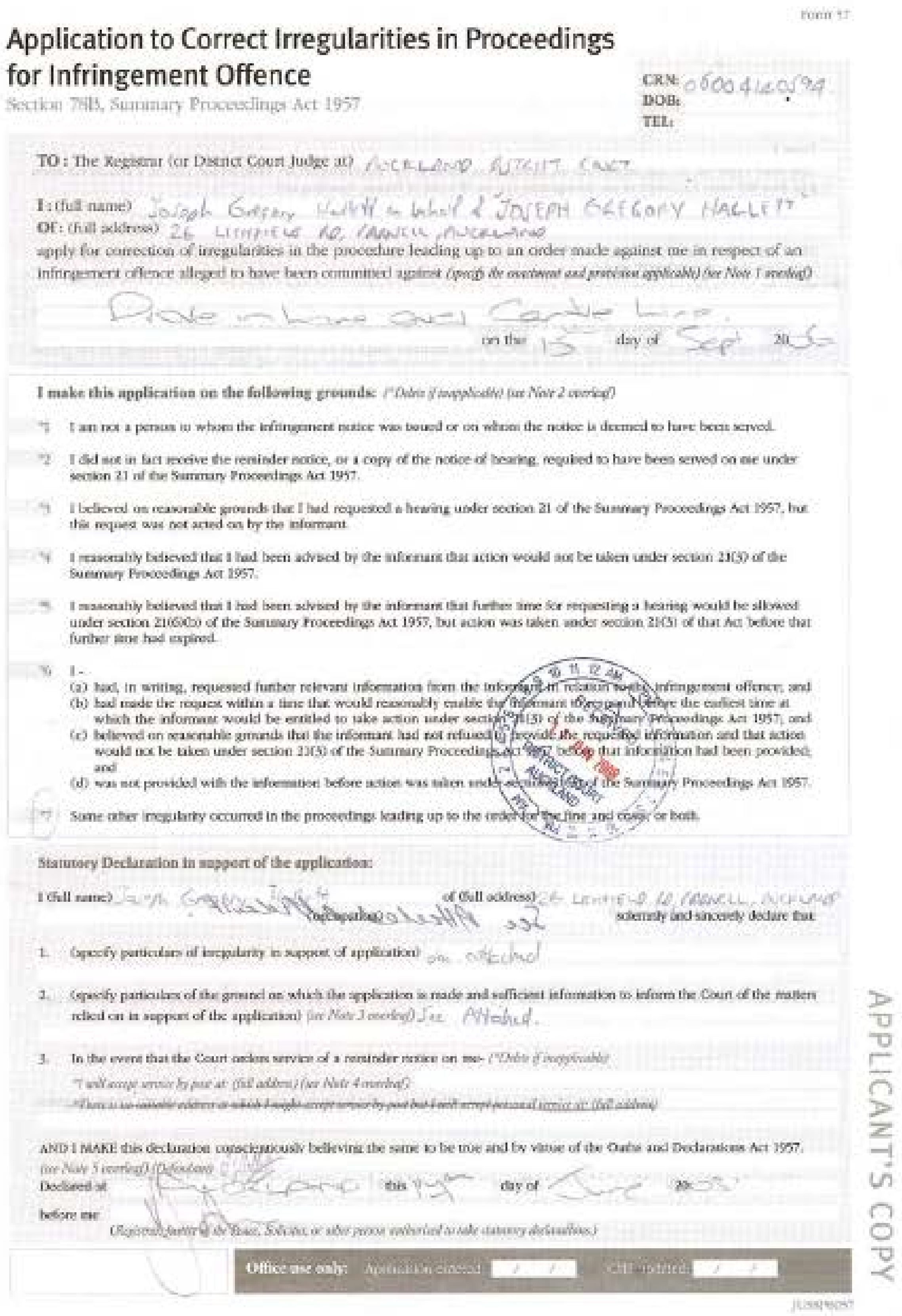

Form 57

Application to Correct Irregularities in Proceedings for Infringement Offence

Section 78B, Summary Proceedings Act 1957

CRN: 06004160594
DOB:
TEL:

TO : The Registrar (or District Court Judge at) AUCKLAND DISTRICT COURT

I : (full name) Joseph Gregory Hallett on behalf of JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
Of : (full address) 26 LICHFIELD RD, PARNELL, AUCKLAND
apply for correction of irregularities in the procedure leading up to an order made against me in respect of an infringement offence alleged to have been committed against *(specify the enactment and provision applicable) (see Note 1 overleaf)*

Drove in lane and Centre line.

on the 15 day of Sept 20

I make this application on the following grounds: *(*Delete if inapplicable) (see Note 2 overleaf)*

*1 I am not a person to whom the infringement notice was issued or on whom the notice is deemed to have been served.

*2 I did not in fact receive the reminder notice, or a copy of the notice of hearing, required to have been served on me under section 21 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

*3 I believed on reasonable grounds that I had requested a hearing under section 21 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957, but this request was not acted on by the informant.

*4 I reasonably believed that I had been advised by the informant that action would not be taken under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

*5 I reasonably believed that I had been advised by the informant that further time for requesting a hearing would be allowed under section 21(6)(b) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957, but action was taken under section 21(3) of that Act before that further time had expired.

*6 I -
(a) had, in writing, requested further relevant information from the informant in relation to the infringement offence; and
(b) had made the request within a time that would reasonably enable the informant to respond before the earliest time at which the informant would be entitled to take action under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957; and
(c) believed on reasonable grounds that the informant had not refused to provide the requested information and that action would not be taken under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 before that information had been provided; and
(d) was not provided with the information before action was taken under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

*7 Some other irregularity occurred in the proceedings leading up to the order for the fine and costs, or both.

DISTRICT COURT AUCKLAND

Statutory Declaration in support of the application:

I (full name) Joseph Gregory Hallett of (full address) 26 Lichfield Rd Parnell, Auckland (occupation) solemnly and sincerely declare that:

1. (specify particulars of irregularity in support of application) See attached
2. (specify particulars of the ground on which the application is made and sufficient information to inform the Court of the matters relied on in support of the application) *(see Note 3 overleaf)* See Attached.
3. In the event that the Court orders service of a reminder notice on me- *(*Delete if inapplicable)*
**I will accept service by post at: (full address) (see Note 4 overleaf)*
~~**There is no suitable address at which I might accept service by post but I will accept personal service at: (full address)*~~

AND I MAKE this declaration conscientiously believing the same to be true and by virtue of the Oaths and Declarations Act 1957.
(see Note 5 overleaf) (Defendant)
Declared at Auckland this 19th day of June 20 08
before me
(Registrar, Justice of the Peace, Solicitor, or other person authorised to take statutory declarations.)

Office use only: Application entered: / / CMS updated: / /

JUSSP0057

APPLICANT'S COPY

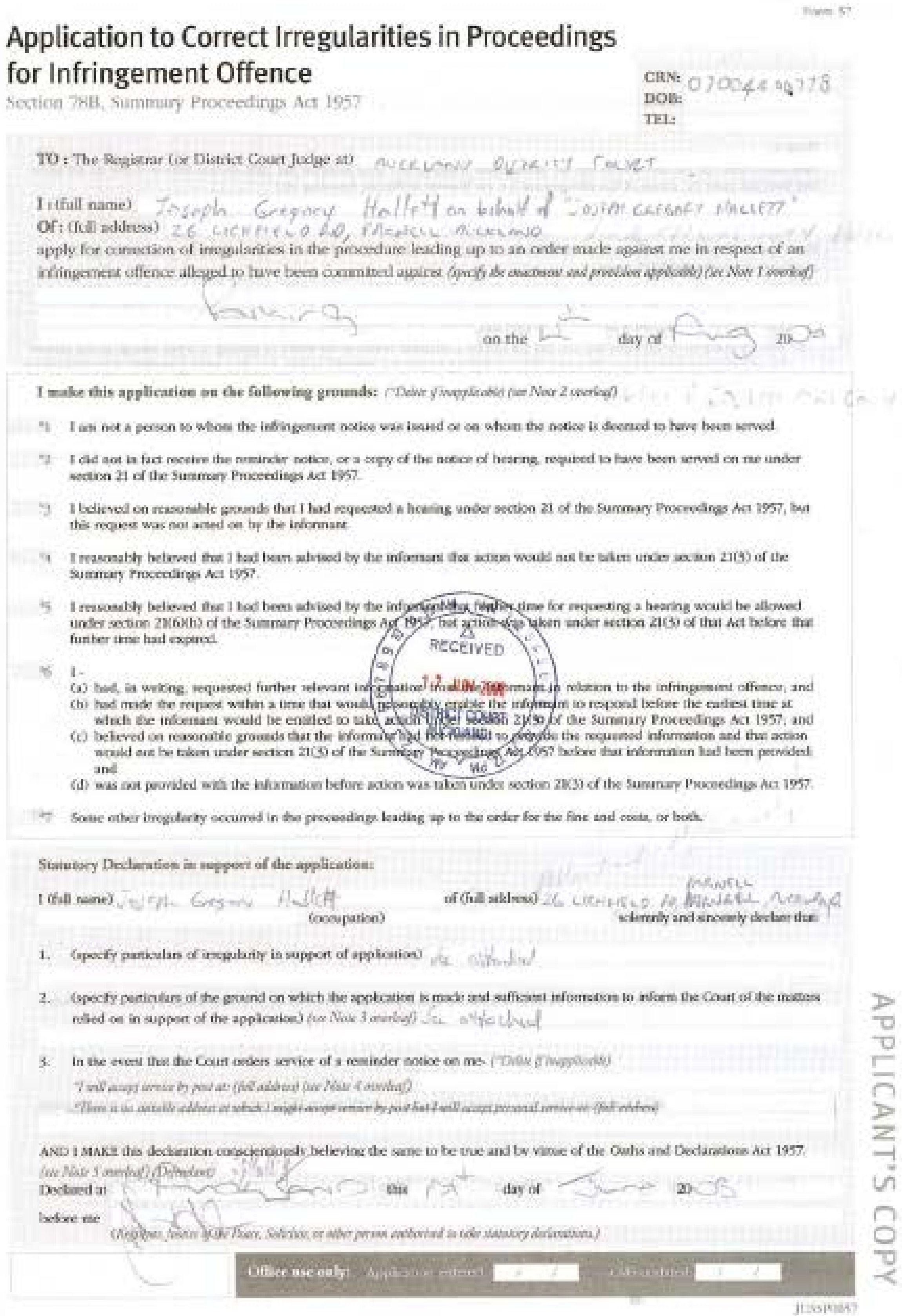

Form 57

Application to Correct Irregularities in Proceedings for Infringement Offence

Section 78B, Summary Proceedings Act 1957

CRN: 070044 90778
DOB:
TEL:

TO : The Registrar (or District Court Judge at) AUCKLAND DISTRICT COURT

I : (full name) Joseph Gregory Hallett on behalf of "JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT"
Of : (full address) 26 LICHFIELD RD, PARNELL, AUCKLAND

apply for correction of irregularities in the procedure leading up to an order made against me in respect of an infringement offence alleged to have been committed against *(specify the enactment and provision applicable) (see Note 1 overleaf)*

Parking

on the 1st day of Aug 20 07

I make this application on the following grounds: *(*Delete if inapplicable) (see Note 2 overleaf)*

*1 I am not a person to whom the infringement notice was issued or on whom the notice is deemed to have been served.

*2 I did not in fact receive the reminder notice, or a copy of the notice of hearing, required to have been served on me under section 21 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

*3 I believed on reasonable grounds that I had requested a hearing under section 21 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957, but this request was not acted on by the informant.

*4 I reasonably believed that I had been advised by the informant that action would not be taken under section 21(5) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

*5 I reasonably believed that I had been advised by the informant that further time for requesting a hearing would be allowed under section 21(6)(b) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957, but action was taken under section 21(5) of that Act before that further time had expired.

*6 I -
(a) had, in writing, requested further relevant information from the informant in relation to the infringement offence; and
(b) had made the request within a time that would reasonably enable the informant to respond before the earliest time at which the informant would be entitled to take action under section 21(5) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957; and
(c) believed on reasonable grounds that the informant had not refused to provide the requested information and that action would not be taken under section 21(5) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 before that information had been provided; and
(d) was not provided with the information before action was taken under section 21(5) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

*7 Some other irregularity occurred in the proceedings leading up to the order for the fine and costs, or both.

RECEIVED
12 JUN 2008
DISTRICT COURT
AUCKLAND

Statutory Declaration in support of the application:

I (full name) Joseph Gregory Hallett (occupation) of (full address) 26 LICHFIELD RD, PARNELL, AUCKLAND solemnly and sincerely declare that:

1. (specify particulars of irregularity in support of application) as attached

2. (specify particulars of the ground on which the application is made and sufficient information to inform the Court of the matters relied on in support of the application) *(see Note 3 overleaf)* see attached

3. In the event that the Court orders service of a reminder notice on me- *(*Delete if inapplicable)*
**I will accept service by post at: (full address) (see Note 4 overleaf)*
~~**There is no suitable address at which I might accept service by post but I will accept personal service at: (full address)*~~

AND I MAKE this declaration conscientiously believing the same to be true and by virtue of the Oaths and Declarations Act 1957.
(see Note 5 overleaf) (Defendant) Hallett
Declared at Auckland this 1st day of June 20 08
before me
(Registrar, Justice of the Peace, Solicitor, or other person authorised to take statutory declarations.)

Office use only: Application entered: / / CMS updated: / /

JUS5P0057

APPLICANT'S COPY

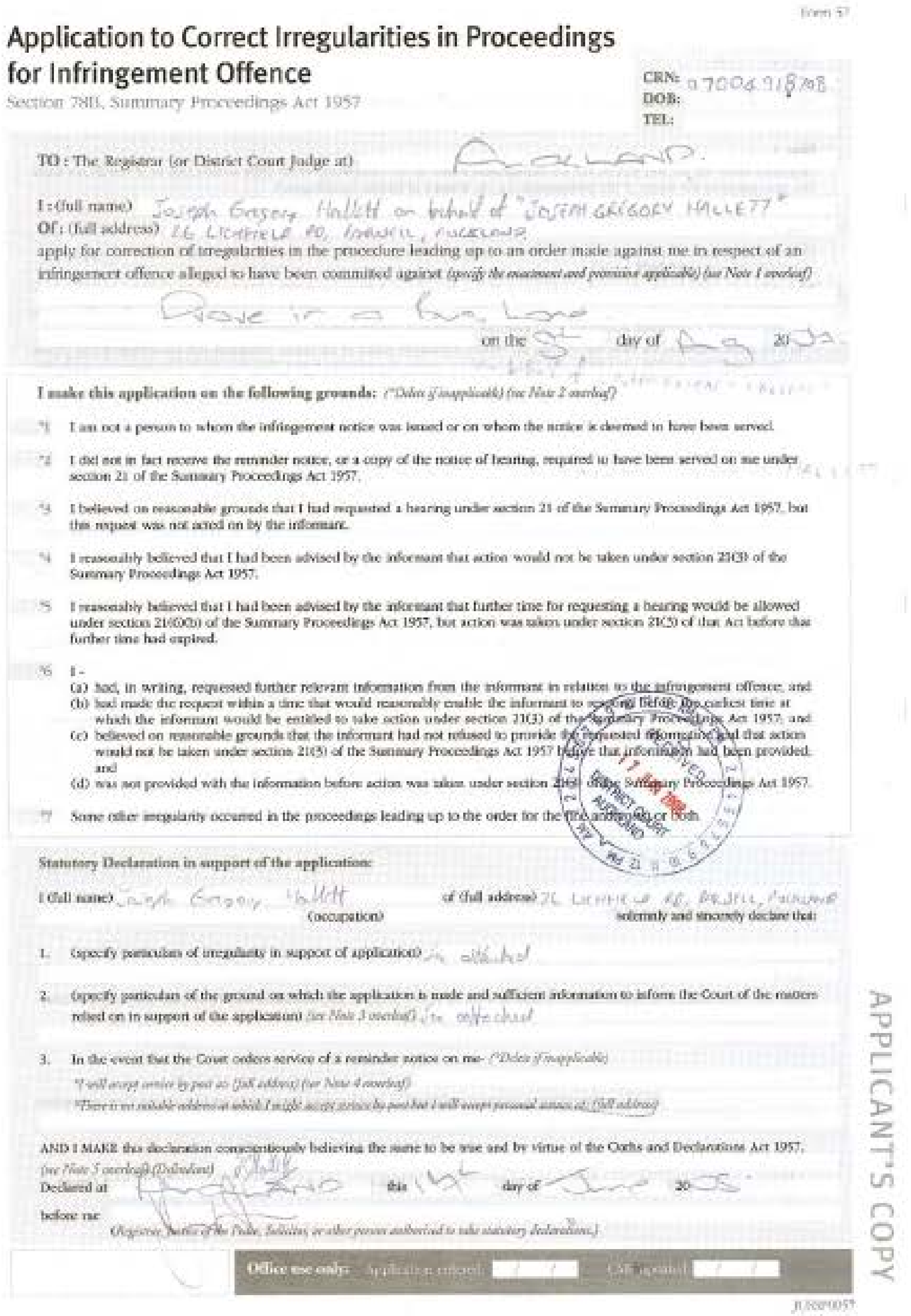

Form 57

Application to Correct Irregularities in Proceedings for Infringement Offence

Section 78B, Summary Proceedings Act 1957

CRN: 07004 918708
DOB:
TEL:

TO : The Registrar (or District Court Judge at) AUCKLAND.

I : (full name) Joseph Gregory Hallett on behalf of "JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT"
Of : (full address) 26 LICHFIELD RD, PARNELL, AUCKLAND

apply for correction of irregularities in the procedure leading up to an order made against me in respect of an infringement offence alleged to have been committed against *(specify the enactment and provision applicable) (see Note 1 overleaf)*

Drove in a bus lane

on the 3rd day of Aug 20 07

I make this application on the following grounds: *(*Delete if inapplicable) (see Note 2 overleaf)*

*1 I am not a person to whom the infringement notice was issued or on whom the notice is deemed to have been served.

*2 I did not in fact receive the reminder notice, or a copy of the notice of hearing, required to have been served on me under section 21 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

*3 I believed on reasonable grounds that I had requested a hearing under section 21 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957, but this request was not acted on by the informant.

*4 I reasonably believed that I had been advised by the informant that action would not be taken under section 21(5) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

*5 I reasonably believed that I had been advised by the informant that further time for requesting a hearing would be allowed under section 21(6)(b) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957, but action was taken under section 21(5) of that Act before that further time had expired.

*6 I -
(a) had, in writing, requested further relevant information from the informant in relation to the infringement offence; and
(b) had made the request within a time that would reasonably enable the informant to respond before the earliest time at which the informant would be entitled to take action under section 21(5) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957; and
(c) believed on reasonable grounds that the informant had not refused to provide the requested information and that action would not be taken under section 21(5) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 before that information had been provided; and
(d) was not provided with the information before action was taken under section 21(5) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

*7 Some other irregularity occurred in the proceedings leading up to the order for the fine and costs, or both.

RECEIVED
11 JUN 2008
DISTRICT COURT
AUCKLAND

Statutory Declaration in support of the application:

I (full name) Joseph Gregory Hallett (occupation) of (full address) 26 LICHFIELD RD, PARNELL, AUCKLAND solemnly and sincerely declare that:

1. (specify particulars of irregularity in support of application) in attached

2. (specify particulars of the ground on which the application is made and sufficient information to inform the Court of the matters relied on in support of the application) *(see Note 3 overleaf)* in attached

3. In the event that the Court orders service of a reminder notice on me- *(*Delete if inapplicable)*
**I will accept service by post at: (full address) (see Note 4 overleaf)*
~~**There is no suitable address at which I might accept service by post but I will accept personal service at: (full address)*~~

AND I MAKE this declaration conscientiously believing the same to be true and by virtue of the Oaths and Declarations Act 1957.
(see Note 5 overleaf) (Defendant) Hallett
Declared at Auckland this 1st day of June 20 08
before me
(Registrar, Justice of the Peace, Solicitor, or other person authorised to take statutory declarations.)

Office use only: Application entered: / / CMS updated: / /

JUS5P0057

APPLICANT'S COPY

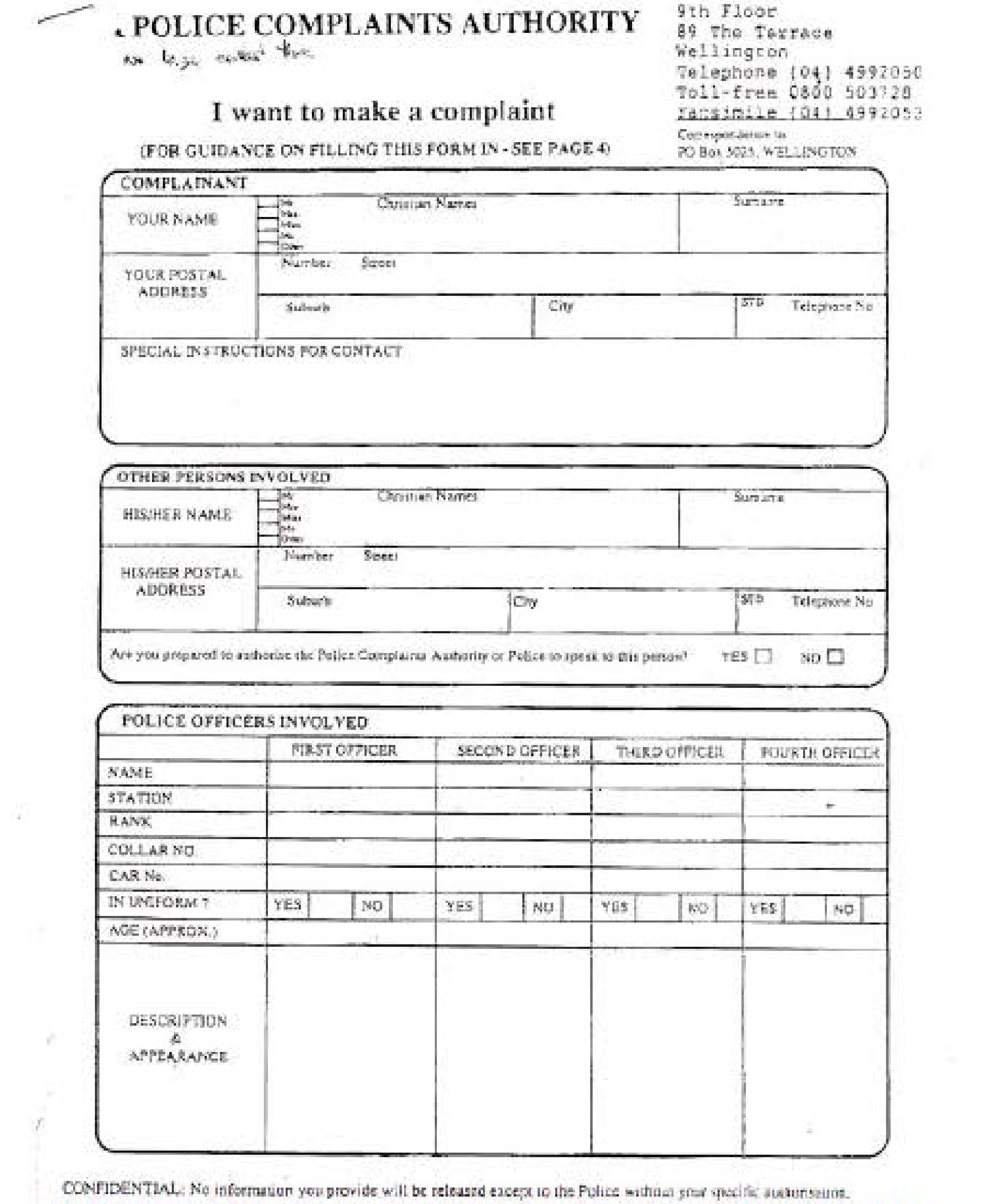

POLICE COMPLAINTS AUTHORITY

9th Floor
89 The Terrace
Wellington
Telephone (04) 4997050
Toll-free 0800 503728
Facsimile (04) 4992053
Correspondence to
PO Box 5025, WELLINGTON

I want to make a complaint

(FOR GUIDANCE ON FILLING THIS FORM IN - SEE PAGE 4)

COMPLAINANT

YOUR NAME	☐ Mr ☐ Mrs ☐ Miss ☐ Ms ☐ Other Christian Names	Surname
YOUR POSTAL ADDRESS	Number Street	
	Suburb City	STD Telephone No

SPECIAL INSTRUCTIONS FOR CONTACT

OTHER PERSONS INVOLVED

HIS/HER NAME	☐ Mr ☐ Mrs ☐ Miss ☐ Ms ☐ Other Christian Names	Surname
HIS/HER POSTAL ADDRESS	Number Street	
	Suburb City	STD Telephone No

Are you prepared to authorise the Police Complaints Authority or Police to speak to this person? YES ☐ NO ☐

POLICE OFFICERS INVOLVED

	FIRST OFFICER	SECOND OFFICER	THIRD OFFICER	FOURTH OFFICER
NAME				
STATION				
RANK				
COLLAR NO				
CAR No.				
IN UNIFORM ?	YES ☐ NO ☐	YES ☐ NO ☐	YES ☐ NO ☐	YES ☐ NO ☐
AGE (APPROX.)				
DESCRIPTION & APPEARANCE				

CONFIDENTIAL: No information you provide will be released except to the Police without your specific authorisation.

This form was picked up on 17 June 2008 from the Courts. Citizens don't use them for three reasons:

1. There is a 5 % success rate.
2. Corrupt Police are promoted.
3. The Police Complaint's Authority no longer exists. It is now called the Independent Police Conduct Authority. This came about with the new Chair, Justice Ms. Goddard in January 2008.

Eight months later, these forms are now redundant, but still handed out.

In New Zealand, judges are promoted for covering up the crimes of police.

In New Zealand we have changes in name only.

Affidavits –

Prime Minister and Chief Justice Contract Killers

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

>>>>>>>> Carried By >>>>>>>>
>>>> NEW ZEALAND POST >>>>
23.JUN.08 110-2 1133

NZM
New Zealand Mail
Postage Included

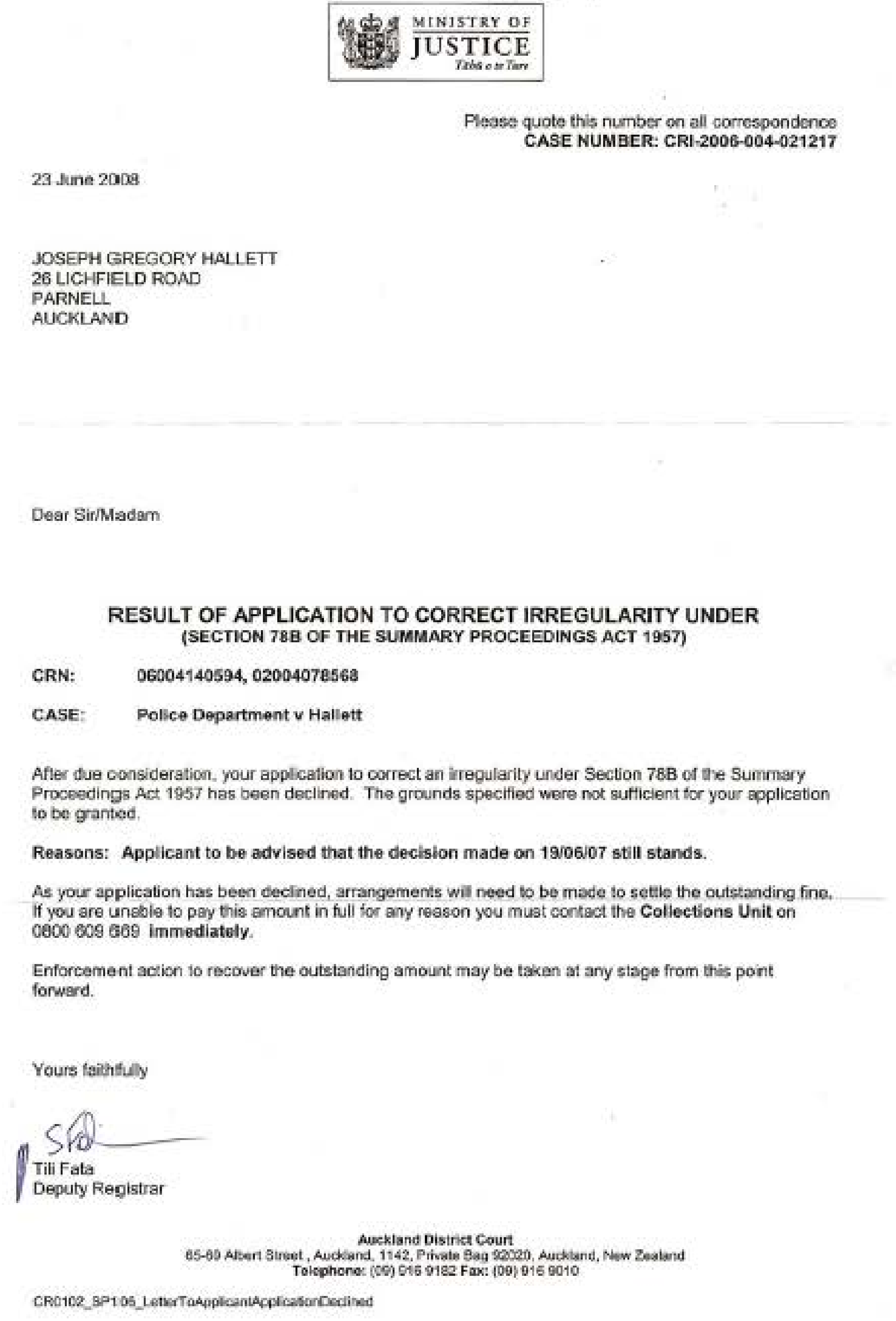

MINISTRY OF
JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

Please quote this number on all correspondence
CASE NUMBER: CRI-2006-004-021217

23 June 2008

JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
26 LICHFIELD ROAD
PARNELL
AUCKLAND

Dear Sir/Madam

RESULT OF APPLICATION TO CORRECT IRREGULARITY UNDER
(SECTION 78B OF THE SUMMARY PROCEEDINGS ACT 1957)

CRN: **06004140594, 02004078568**

CASE: **Police Department v Hallett**

After due consideration, your application to correct an irregularity under Section 78B of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 has been declined. The grounds specified were not sufficient for your application to be granted.

Reasons: Applicant to be advised that the decision made on 19/06/07 still stands.

As your application has been declined, arrangements will need to be made to settle the outstanding fine. If you are unable to pay this amount in full for any reason you must contact the **Collections Unit** on 0800 609 669 **immediately**.

Enforcement action to recover the outstanding amount may be taken at any stage from this point forward.

Yours faithfully

Tili Fata
Deputy Registrar

Auckland District Court
65-69 Albert Street , Auckland, 1142, Private Bag 92020, Auckland, New Zealand
Telephone: (09) 916 9182 **Fax:** (09) 916 9010

CR0102_SP106_LetterToApplicantApplicationDeclined

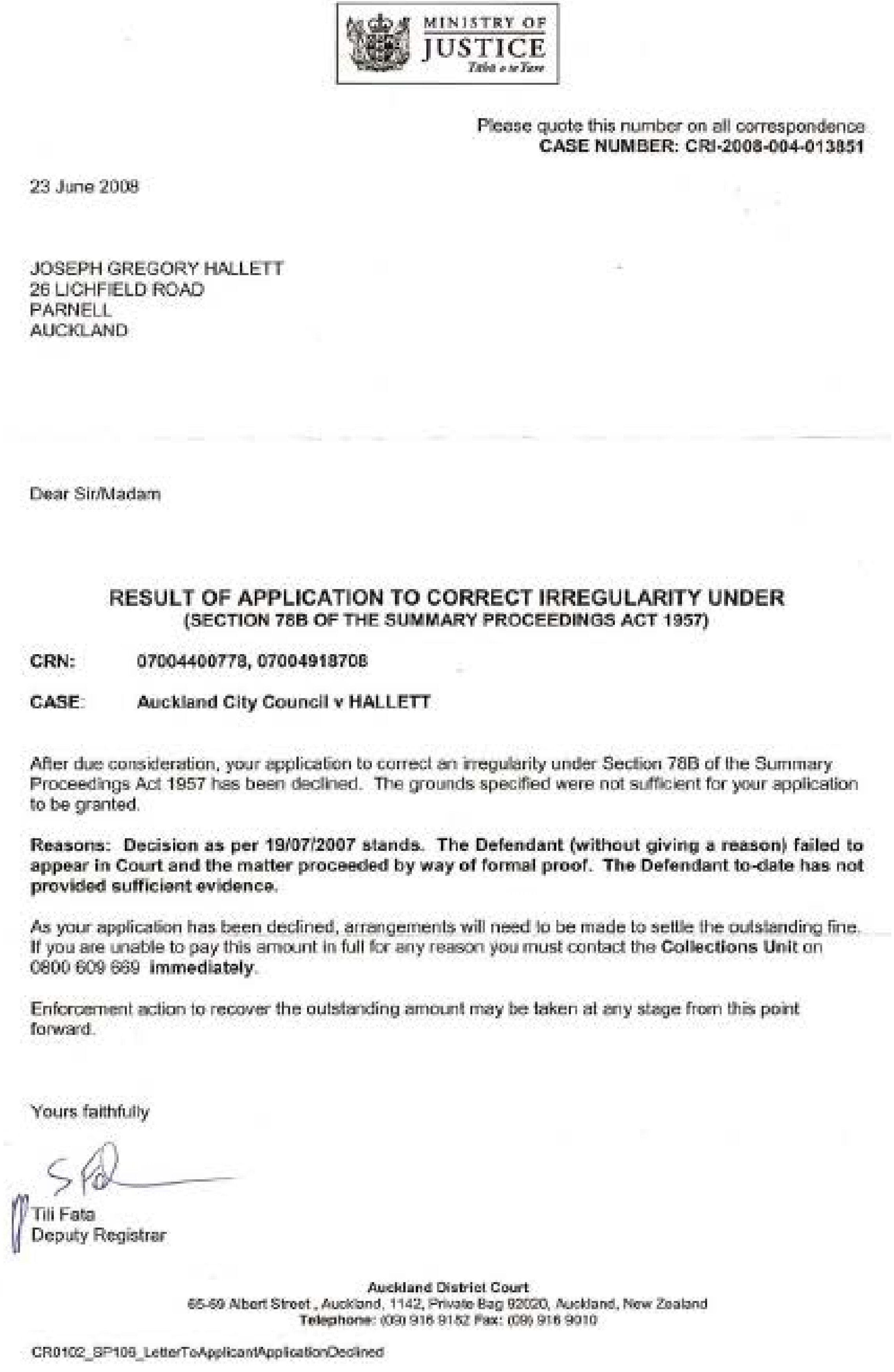

MINISTRY OF
JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

Please quote this number on all correspondence
CASE NUMBER: CRI-2008-004-013851

23 June 2008

JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
26 LICHFIELD ROAD
PARNELL
AUCKLAND

Dear Sir/Madam

RESULT OF APPLICATION TO CORRECT IRREGULARITY UNDER
(SECTION 78B OF THE SUMMARY PROCEEDINGS ACT 1957)

CRN: **07004400778, 07004918708**

CASE: **Auckland City Council v HALLETT**

After due consideration, your application to correct an irregularity under Section 78B of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 has been declined. The grounds specified were not sufficient for your application to be granted.

Reasons: Decision as per 19/07/2007 stands. The Defendant (without giving a reason) failed to appear in Court and the matter proceeded by way of formal proof. The Defendant to-date has not provided sufficient evidence.

As your application has been declined, arrangements will need to be made to settle the outstanding fine. If you are unable to pay this amount in full for any reason you must contact the **Collections Unit** on 0800 609 669 **immediately**.

Enforcement action to recover the outstanding amount may be taken at any stage from this point forward.

Yours faithfully

Tili Fata
Deputy Registrar

Auckland District Court
65-69 Albert Street , Auckland, 1142, Private Bag 92020, Auckland, New Zealand
Telephone: (09) 916 9182 **Fax:** (09) 916 9010

CR0102_SP106_LetterToApplicantApplicationDeclined

With reference to the Bailiff's request, Reference No. PPN1429601165, to Joseph Hallett, to lodge by end of Monday 16 June 2008, and by phone with permission from Central Auckland District Court Bailiff Ross Rudolph to lodge by midday Tuesday 17 June 2008; and MINISTRY OF JUSTICE replys dated 23 June 2008:
Concerning the matters addressed to various address, names and ages, many of which were incorrect causing extreme delays, regarding, principally Joseph Gregory Hallett, by way of profiled intention:

> CCN 1514763289, CRN 02004063795, Dated 23/08/2002, FAILED TO REMAIN STOPPED FOR AN ENFO, Fine Imposed 13/08/2003, $380, Fine Cancelled 14/08/2004, Status: $380.00 Credited back;
>
> CCN 1514763290, CRN 02004063795, Dated 23/08/2002, FAILED TO REMAIN STOPPED FOR AN ENFO, Fine Imposed 13/08/2003, $380, Fine Cancelled 20/01/2004, Status: $380.00 Credited back;
>
> CCN 1514763291, CRN 02004063796, Dated 23/08/2002, DROVE A MOTOR VEHICLE IN A DANGEROUS, Fine Imposed 13/08/2003, $930, Fine Cancelled 20/01/2004, Status: $930.00 Credited back;
>
> CCN 1513999287, CRN 02004078568, Dated 23/08/2002, Failed To Comply With A Traffic Sign, Date Imposed 11/11/2002, $180, Status: Satisfied. Reparation Remaining $0.00, Current Balance $0.00;
>
> CCN 1519600559, CRN 07004400778, 04/08/2007, Fail display pay and disp recpt - Auck, Date Imposed 23/10/2007, Total Amount Imposed $170, Under Enforcement;
>
> CCN 1519690338, CRN 07004918708, 08/08/2007, Drove A Vehicle Along A Bus Lane, Date Imposed 19/11/2007, Total Amount Imposed $280, Under Enforcement;
>
> CCN 1518908066, CRN 06004140594, 15/09/2006, Drive In Lane Over Center Lne 2 Way, Date Imposed 23/03/2007, Total Amount Imposed $280, Under Enforcement;
>
> MINISTRY OF JUSTICE reply to CRN 07004400778, CRN 07004918708, CRI-2008-004-013851, dated 23 June 2008, received 26 June 2008: "After due consideration, your application to correct an irregularity under Section 78B of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 has been declined. The grounds were not sufficient for your application to be granted."
>
> MINISTRY OF JUSTICE reply to CRN 06004140594, CRN 02004078568, CRI-2006-004-021217, dated 23 June 2008, received 26 June 2008: "After due consideration, your application to correct an irregularity under Section 78B of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 has been declined. The grounds were not sufficient for your application to be granted."

A reasonable person who does not have an axe to grind would read this initial schedule and conclude that Robert Mugabe style of justice is in New Zealand and here to to stay. This corrupt conduct is now 50 times more common in the government's dealing with me and my associates. I would like to know if any of the people handling my case are remotely qualified to do so. Has anyone in your office studied or worked in Zimbabwe, or do you have accreditation facilities with Zimbabwe. When Mugabe is deposed, will the New Zealand judiciary give him a student loan to study corruption and where he went wrong?

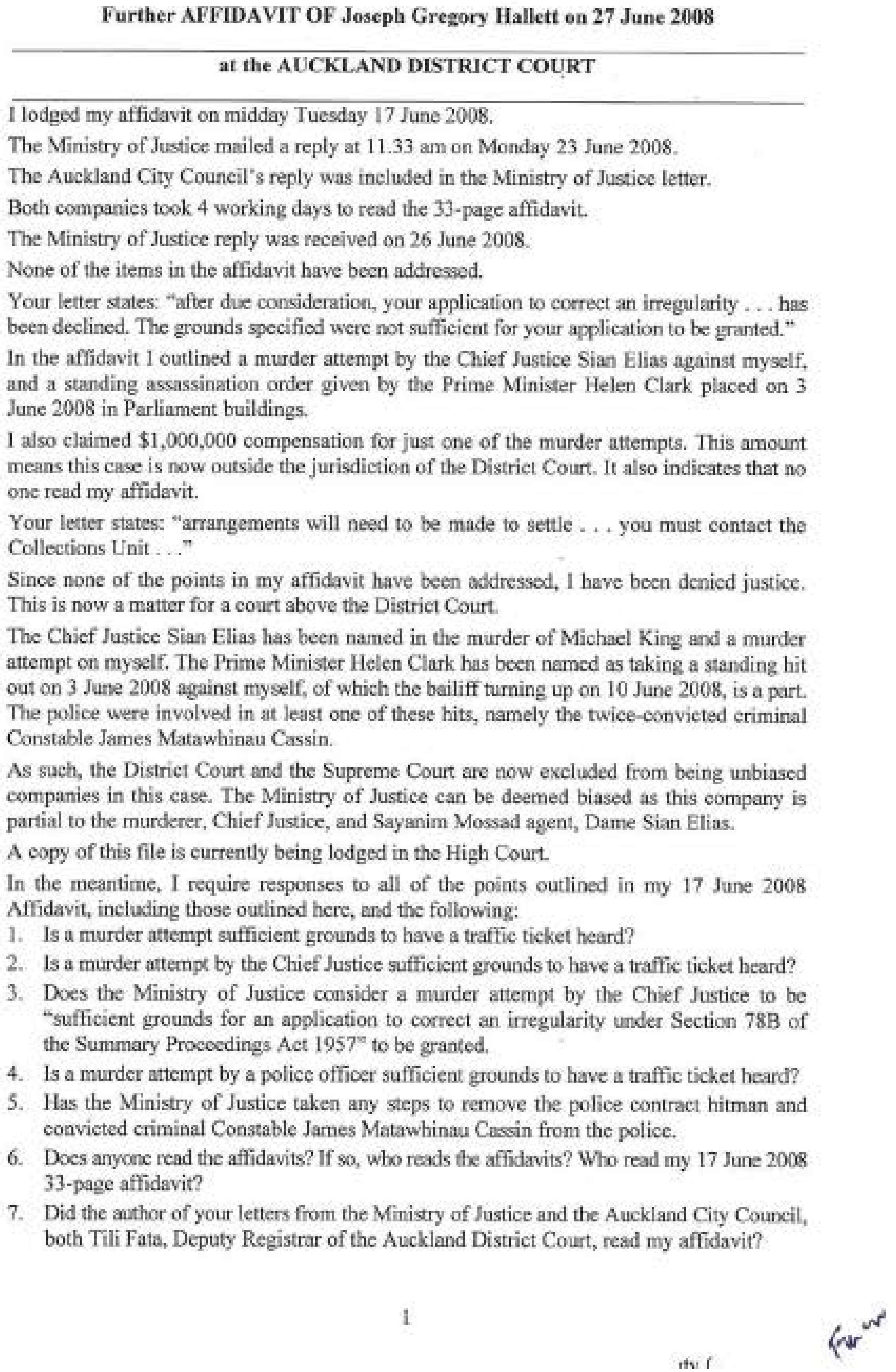

Further AFFIDAVIT OF Joseph Gregory Hallett on 27 June 2008

at the AUCKLAND DISTRICT COURT

I lodged my affidavit on midday Tuesday 17 June 2008.

The Ministry of Justice mailed a reply at 11.33 am on Monday 23 June 2008.

The Auckland City Council's reply was included in the Ministry of Justice letter.

Both companies took 4 working days to read the 33-page affidavit.

The Ministry of Justice reply was received on 26 June 2008.

None of the items in the affidavit have been addressed.

Your letter states: "after due consideration, your application to correct an irregularity . . . has been declined. The grounds specified were not sufficient for your application to be granted."

In the affidavit I outlined a murder attempt by the Chief Justice Sian Elias against myself, and a standing assassination order given by the Prime Minister Helen Clark placed on 3 June 2008 in Parliament buildings.

I also claimed $1,000,000 compensation for just one of the murder attempts. This amount means this case is now outside the jurisdiction of the District Court. It also indicates that no one read my affidavit.

Your letter states: "arrangements will need to be made to settle . . . you must contact the Collections Unit . . ."

Since none of the points in my affidavit have been addressed, I have been denied justice. This is now a matter for a court above the District Court.

The Chief Justice Sian Elias has been named in the murder of Michael King and a murder attempt on myself. The Prime Minister Helen Clark has been named as taking a standing hit out on 3 June 2008 against myself, of which the bailiff turning up on 10 June 2008, is a part. The police were involved in at least one of these hits, namely the twice-convicted criminal Constable James Matawhinau Cassin.

As such, the District Court and the Supreme Court are now excluded from being unbiased companies in this case. The Ministry of Justice can be deemed biased as this company is partial to the murderer, Chief Justice, and Sayanim Mossad agent, Dame Sian Elias.

A copy of this file is currently being lodged in the High Court.

In the meantime, I require responses to all of the points outlined in my 17 June 2008 Affidavit, including those outlined here, and the following:

1. Is a murder attempt sufficient grounds to have a traffic ticket heard?
2. Is a murder attempt by the Chief Justice sufficient grounds to have a traffic ticket heard?
3. Does the Ministry of Justice consider a murder attempt by the Chief Justice to be "sufficient grounds for an application to correct an irregularity under Section 78B of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957" to be granted.
4. Is a murder attempt by a police officer sufficient grounds to have a traffic ticket heard?
5. Has the Ministry of Justice taken any steps to remove the police contract hitman and convicted criminal Constable James Matawhinau Cassin from the police.
6. Does anyone read the affidavits? If so, who reads the affidavits? Who read my 17 June 2008 33-page affidavit?
7. Did the author of your letters from the Ministry of Justice and the Auckland City Council, both Tili Fata, Deputy Registrar of the Auckland District Court, read my affidavit?

8. Has Tili Fata had any counter-intelligence training or experience?
9. Affidavits stand until they are disproven. You have not addressed, disproven, or challenged any matters raised in my affidavit. Your response is thus 'insufficient to be legal' and you have denied me justice.
10. I take it that your lack of challenge to the points raised in my affidavit is complicit silence, tantamount that the matters are materially true.
11. I would like to inform you that Sian Elias' murders have been published in the books, *How To Take Over The World* (March, May, September 2007); *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide* (October, December 2007); various podcast interviews overseas available on the web under "Greg Hallett interview"; in the newspaper, *New Zealand Truth weekly*, 22 March 2007, with all of the front page and page 5, under a photo of Sian Elias, "Chief Justice Dame Sian Elias: Accussed of being a contract killer . . . Chief Justice Sian Elias and Helen Clark contracted Israeli Mossad agents to kill writer and historian Michael King, Sir Peter Elworthy and Green MP Rod Donald."; and the *Sunday Star Times*, 20 January 2008, page 9: ". . . Chief Justice Dame Sian Elias being a contract killer . . ."
12. Unless I hear otherwise, I will be forced into conclusion that the Ministry of Justice, the Auckland District Court and the Auckland City Council confirm that Chief Justice Sian Elias is a murderer.
13. You will also note in the affidavit, if anyone read it, that there is a claim for NZ$1 million compensation for a murder attempt, of which your various companies are now a party. Any claim over $200,000 has to go to the High Court. Please refer your answers to my affidavits to the High Court and copy these to me.
14. Do you just look at the name and think, 'White male . . . they're made of money . . . we'll fine him"?
15. Do you look at a female name and respond, 'She's female, we'll let her off'.
16. There is the oustanding matter of the $180 fine (CRN 02004078568, Dated 23/08/2002) not being returned when it is clear the officer who issued it, Constable James Matawhinau Cassin, is a twice-convicted criminal and a contract hitman for the police.
17. I now accuse the Auckland District Court and Auckland City Council of colluding with the Ministry of Justice in murder and attempted murder, and of being accessory to murder and attempted murder.
18. The Ministry of Justice, the Auckland District Court, the Auckland City Council, and the Police are operating illegally under the Declaration of Helsinki.

I require all of this information under the Information Act. The relevent number of days applies. Service to my address.

A copy of this has been given to the Collections Unit. Until this has been resolved in a higher court, any of those involved in removing my vehicle, further fines, or related events will be named and published as accessories to murder and attempted murder.

I seek People's Commissions of Inquiry into all of the above including all matters raised in my 17 June 2008 affidavit. I seek compensation of all of the above.

This has been posted overseas for my own protection.

Yours sincerely,

JGHallett

Joseph Gregory Hallett, B.Arch, C.BB.
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket/26 Lichfield Rd, Parnell, Auckland, New Zealand

Affirmed at Auckland District Court on 27th June 2008

F M McMillian
Deputy Registrar

2

Lodging the Second Affidavit for the Auckland High Court to the District Court for the High Court on 27 June 2008

I lodged the Affidavit in the District Court at 3.30 pm 27 June 2008, on the appropriate Level 1. A different woman behind the counter dealt with this affidavit differently from the other woman and the earlier affidavit.

This second affidavit was initialled by her on each page. She then wrote "Affirmed at Auckland District Court on 27th June 2008", asked me to affirm it, then stamped it "F M McMillian".

I then took the lift down one floor to the Collections Department. The bailiff Ross Rudolph wasn't' there, but a woman took the affidavit, wrote my mobile phone number on the back and said Ross would call me. Ross then phoned (from 09-916 9000) to my mobile at 3.51 pm. This was while I was trying to lodge both affidavits in the High Court, and I told him as much.

Ross Rudolph confirmed he had received the documents – the affidavits. I mentioned I had never had the cases heard, that I had lodged another affidavit in the District Court, and was presently in the High Court trying to lodge both of them.

I asked: "Was your father Tommy Rudolf, the boxer and did he go blind?"

Ross Rudolph: "No, my father was Reg Rudolf. He was a boxer. He didn't go blind. I haven't heard of Tommy Rudolf." So there's a correction for the first affidavit.

I had driven to all courts with I.O. and went to the ground floor of the High Court at 3.45 pm where I spoke to a woman behind the counter. She mentioned it was not in the High Court format (which I kind of knew), it now had a CRI number, the "I" meaning it was criminal, she would speak to her superior, then she sent me to the basement to High Court Criminal.

So I trotted down to the High Court Criminal, spoke to the people behind the counter, first a Middle East man, then an Indian man, Raj Iyengar. (None of them are straight white people with English as a first language.) He seemed overly slow and pleasant and all the staff were treating me like a primary school mental patient. The PC drill must be working on them, and all those who refused PC were removed from the job.

I noticed the obese pear-shaped man to my right behind a desk. He was the one who had told me my High Court case was one 10 December 2003, when it was five days earlier on 5 December 2003. This was designed so I would miss the case. Essentially this was the same case, dragged on and on. His actions were in defence of the corrupt Police Officer Cassin, a police hitman and twice-convicted criminal.

Just as I was talking to Raj Iyengar in the High Court, Peter Williams QC peered through the window from the pavement above, then jumped back as quick as he could. About a minute later I.O. came down and said: "Hurry up, I've got to go."

I said: "I'll be out within 10 minutes."

Raj Iyengar gave me two forms for an application "In the High Court of New Zealand" and then said I would have to lodge them in the District Court, which seemed rather odd. He also gave me an application for criminal legal aid. This seemed rather odd, since the only crime that had gone down was done by the Police, the Court, and the Auckland City Council.

The police had managed to make it a criminal matter by virtue of resurrecting old files on the request of **Prime Minister Helen Clark, who had no doubt gone to the Police and said: "What do you have on Mr Hallett?"**

Police: "Nothing."

PM Helen Clark: "What can you get on Mr Hallett."

Police: "We'll see what we can dig up."

And they did. And so, 10 days later, the bailiff turned up.

Originally all these cases had started when I gave a speech in the Cook Islands, to Rotary, on 21 August 2002. I mentioned Helen Clark was a KGB agent. 12 hours later I was poisoned. 12 hours after that I was given a huge number of fines and had my driver licence removed (by the Police hitman Constable Cassin) and won my licence and all but one of the fines back in the High Court. The poison was epicac and it almost killed me.

This case related to the second assassination attempt. The first was on 2 April 2002 after I had exposed PM Helen Clark as a deconstructed KGB agent on Newstalk ZB (radio).

The line went: "Helen Clark is a KGB agent trained in the destruction of a Western Society via a process called deconstruction into a modality called Gender Communism, better known as Sex Communism, and this is the fastest way known to destroy a Western society while keeping the infrastructure in tact."

Sure enough all of this has come to pass.

As a result of loosing my driver licence I moved from a flash four-storey apartment with views over the America's Cup, to a building that was about to be demolished.

Worse still, it was in the basement of the old Anglican archives. When the ball hammer was about to hit, I moved to Waiheke Island, about an hour from Auckland. I had a driver there for the groceries. It was on Waiheke that I challenged the Mossad agent doing reconnaissance on me. He had got his van stuck in the mud outside my place.

Once this Mossad hit was exposed, they (the KGB's PM Helen Clark and the Mossad's Chief Justice Sian Elias) tried a financial attack, and all the while I was writing *Hitler Was A British Agent*, and another, edited, but as yet unpublished book – *Flying The Planet*.

So within 10 days of telling the Mossad to "fuck off", I got three architecture jobs and none of them paid. The clients were Pru Gee (Helen Clark's school buddy from Epsom Girls Grammar), her partner, the homeless alcoholic car salesman Gordon Sale; Steve Whalley, a convicted/served time sex offender, who has since changed his name to Stephen John Brandon, and moved to Wanganui; and Peter Williams QC, who I have since published is a bisexual, heavily cuckolded, at least one his kids isn't his, and he funds his daughter's methamphetamine habit.

While I.O. was sitting in my Mercedes on Parliament Street watching 'Terminator 3' outside the High Court, QC Peter Williams walked down the pavement. He was with a tall 17-year-old boy who looked like he had just got out of the cells and had taken all the drugs available there.

The boy – who had a bit of the tar brush – leaned into the window and peered into the High Court Criminal offices and saw me at reception attempting to lodge documents.

QC Peter Williams then walked up to the window, leaned forward, put his hand up the boys crack and looked in as well. Williams saw me, jumped back with a jolt, then turned around, saw I.O. looking at him from inside my Mercedes, jumped back again, and proceeded to scurry up Parliament Street faster than I.O. could.

The timing is really interesting because QC Williams is one of the people I suspect is an accessory to the murder attempt, followed by the ongoing financial assassination. He still owes me $5,625.00 for the architecture work I did for him on 180–182 Surrey Crescent involving four houses. This debt is now four years old.

Peter Williams QC had ordered the work within ten days of the murder attempt being exposed. The two others also didn't pay.

This stinks like sexual deviants colluding in status roles they should never have achieved.

So then I went about filling in the High Court papers for lodgement in the Auckland District Court two kilometres away.

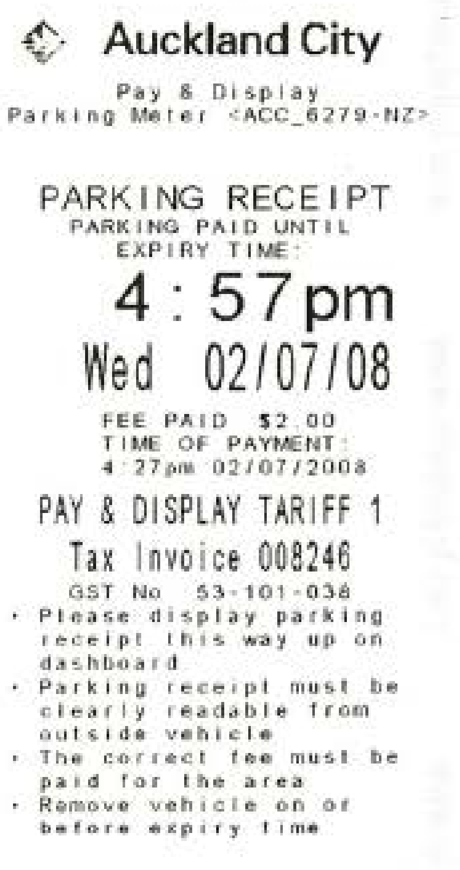

Auckland City

Pay & Display
Parking Meter <ACC_6279-NZ>

PARKING RECEIPT
PARKING PAID UNTIL
EXPIRY TIME:

4 : 57pm
Wed 02/07/08

FEE PAID $2.00
TIME OF PAYMENT:
4:27pm 02/07/2008

PAY & DISPLAY TARIFF 1
Tax Invoice 008246
GST No 53-101-036

- Please display parking receipt this way up on dashboard
- Parking receipt must be clearly readable from outside vehicle
- The correct fee must be paid for the area
- Remove vehicle on or before expiry time

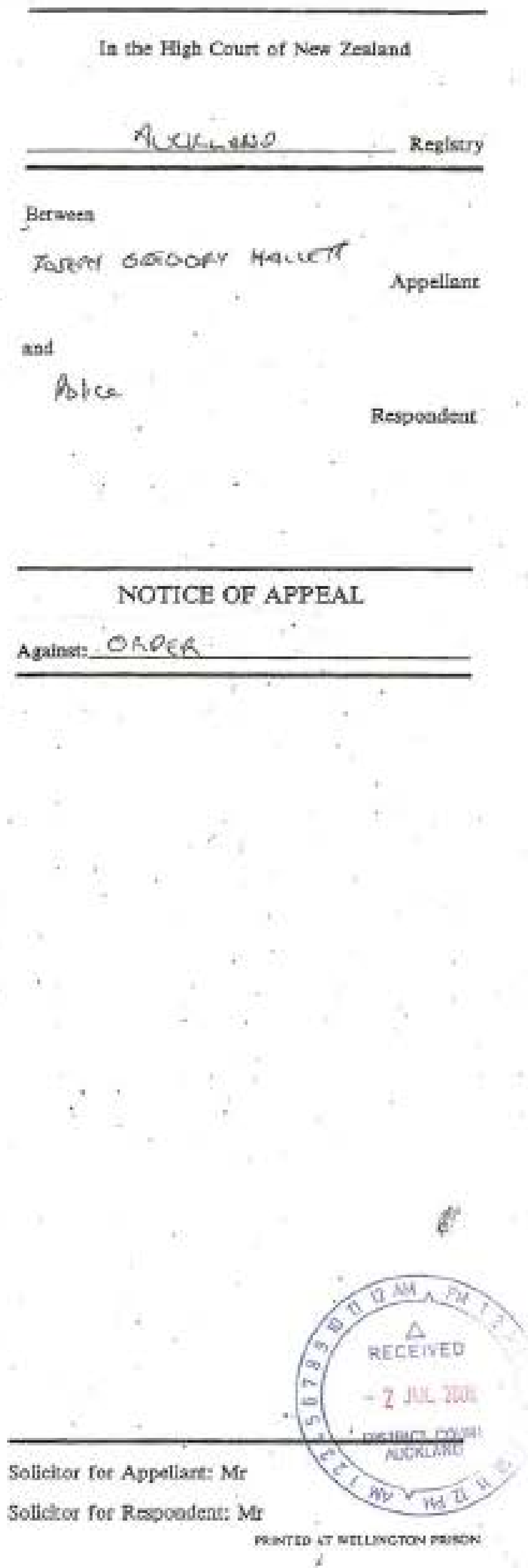

In the High Court of New Zealand

Auckland Registry

Between

Joseph Gregory Hallett

Appellant

and

Police

Respondent

NOTICE OF APPEAL

Against: ORDER

Solicitor for Appellant: Mr

Solicitor for Respondent: Mr

RECEIVED
- 2 JUL 2008
DISTRICT COURT
AUCKLAND

PRINTED AT WELLINGTON PRISON

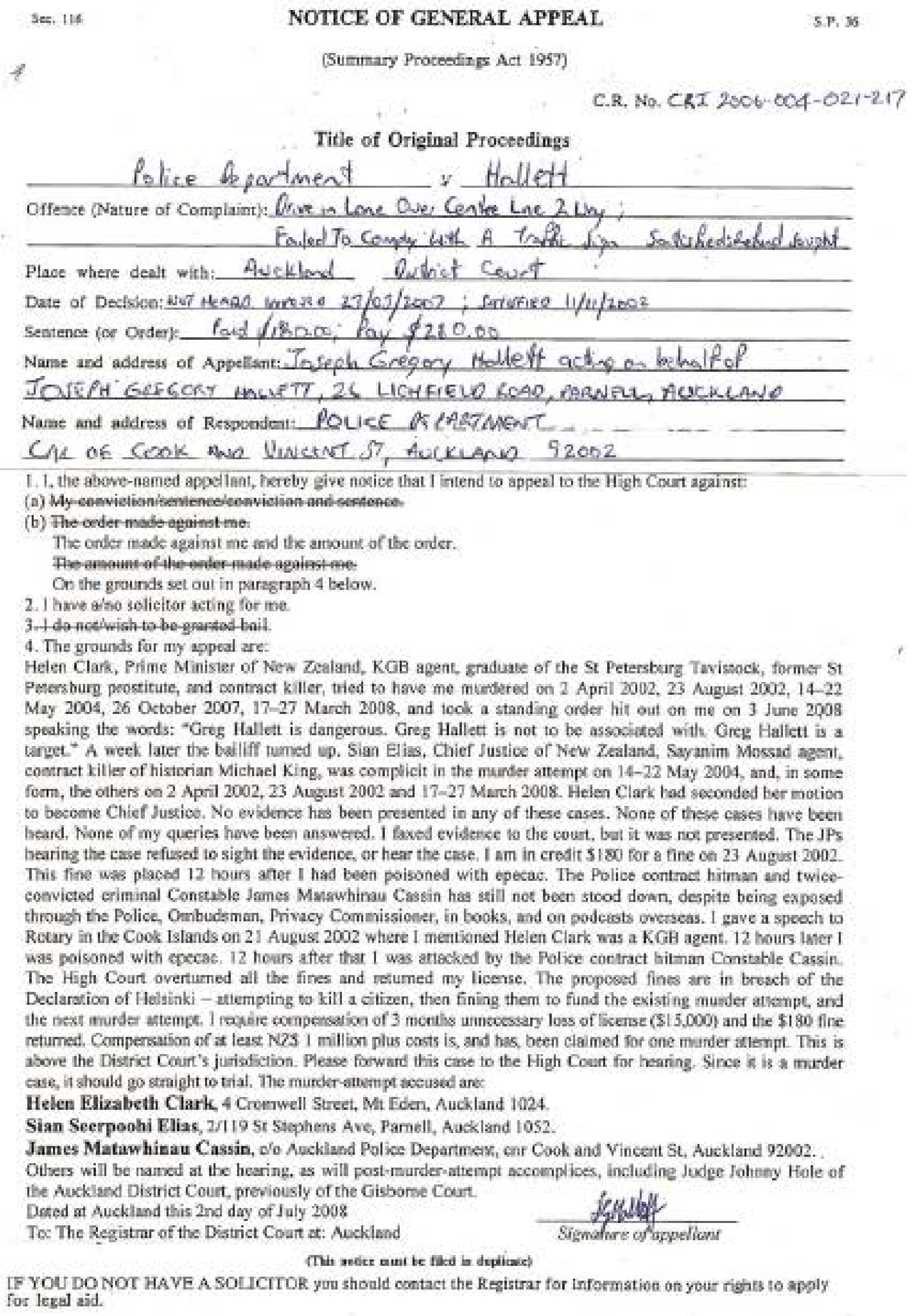

Sec. 116 S.P. 36

NOTICE OF GENERAL APPEAL

(Summary Proceedings Act 1957)

C.R. No. CRI 2006-004-021-217

Title of Original Proceedings

Police Department v Hallett

Offence (Nature of Complaint): Drive in Lane Over Centre Line 2 Way; Failed To Comply With A Traffic Sign [illegible]

Place where dealt with: Auckland District Court

Date of Decision: NOT HEARD WAIVED 23/03/2007 ; SATISFIED 11/11/2002

Sentence (or Order): Paid $180.00; Pay $280.00

Name and address of Appellant: Joseph Gregory Hallett acting on behalf of JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT, 26 LICHFIELD ROAD, PARNELL, AUCKLAND

Name and address of Respondent: POLICE DEPARTMENT CNR OF COOK AND VINCENT ST, AUCKLAND 92002

1. I, the above-named appellant, hereby give notice that I intend to appeal to the High Court against:
(a) ~~My conviction/sentence/conviction and sentence.~~
(b) ~~The order made against me.~~
The order made against me and the amount of the order.
~~The amount of the order made against me.~~
On the grounds set out in paragraph 4 below.

2. I have a/no solicitor acting for me.

~~3. I do not/wish to be granted bail.~~

4. The grounds for my appeal are:

Helen Clark, Prime Minister of New Zealand, KGB agent, graduate of the St Petersburg Tavistock, former St Petersburg prostitute, and contract killer, tried to have me murdered on 2 April 2002, 23 August 2002, 14–22 May 2004, 26 October 2007, 17–27 March 2008, and took a standing order hit out on me on 3 June 2008 speaking the words: "Greg Hallett is dangerous. Greg Hallett is not to be associated with. Greg Hallett is a target." A week later the bailiff turned up. Sian Elias, Chief Justice of New Zealand, Sayanim Mossad agent, contract killer of historian Michael King, was complicit in the murder attempt on 14–22 May 2004, and, in some form, the others on 2 April 2002, 23 August 2002 and 17–27 March 2008. Helen Clark had seconded her motion to become Chief Justice. No evidence has been presented in any of these cases. None of these cases have been heard. None of my queries have been answered. I faxed evidence to the court, but it was not presented. The JPs hearing the case refused to sight the evidence, or hear the case. I am in credit $180 for a fine on 23 August 2002. This fine was placed 12 hours after I had been poisoned with epecac. The Police contract hitman and twice-convicted criminal Constable James Matawhinau Cassin has still not been stood down, despite being exposed through the Police, Ombudsman, Privacy Commissioner, in books, and on podcasts overseas. I gave a speech to Rotary in the Cook Islands on 21 August 2002 where I mentioned Helen Clark was a KGB agent. 12 hours later I was poisoned with epecac. 12 hours after that I was attacked by the Police contract hitman Constable Cassin. The High Court overturned all the fines and returned my license. The proposed fines are in breach of the Declaration of Helsinki – attempting to kill a citizen, then fining them to fund the existing murder attempt, and the next murder attempt. I require compensation of 3 months unnecessary loss of license ($15,000) and the $180 fine returned. Compensation of at least NZ$ 1 million plus costs is, and has, been claimed for one murder attempt. This is above the District Court's jurisdiction. Please forward this case to the High Court for hearing. Since it is a murder case, it should go straight to trial. The murder-attempt accused are:

Helen Elizabeth Clark, 4 Cromwell Street, Mt Eden, Auckland 1024.
Sian Seerpoohi Elias, 2/119 St Stephens Ave, Parnell, Auckland 1052.
James Matawhinau Cassin, c/o Auckland Police Department, cnr Cook and Vincent St, Auckland 92002.

Others will be named at the hearing, as will post-murder-attempt accomplices, including Judge Johnny Hole of the Auckland District Court, previously of the Gisborne Court.

Dated at Auckland this 2nd day of July 2008
To: The Registrar of the District Court at: Auckland

Signature of appellant

(This notice must be filed in duplicate)

IF YOU DO NOT HAVE A SOLICITOR you should contact the Registrar for information on your rights to apply for legal aid.

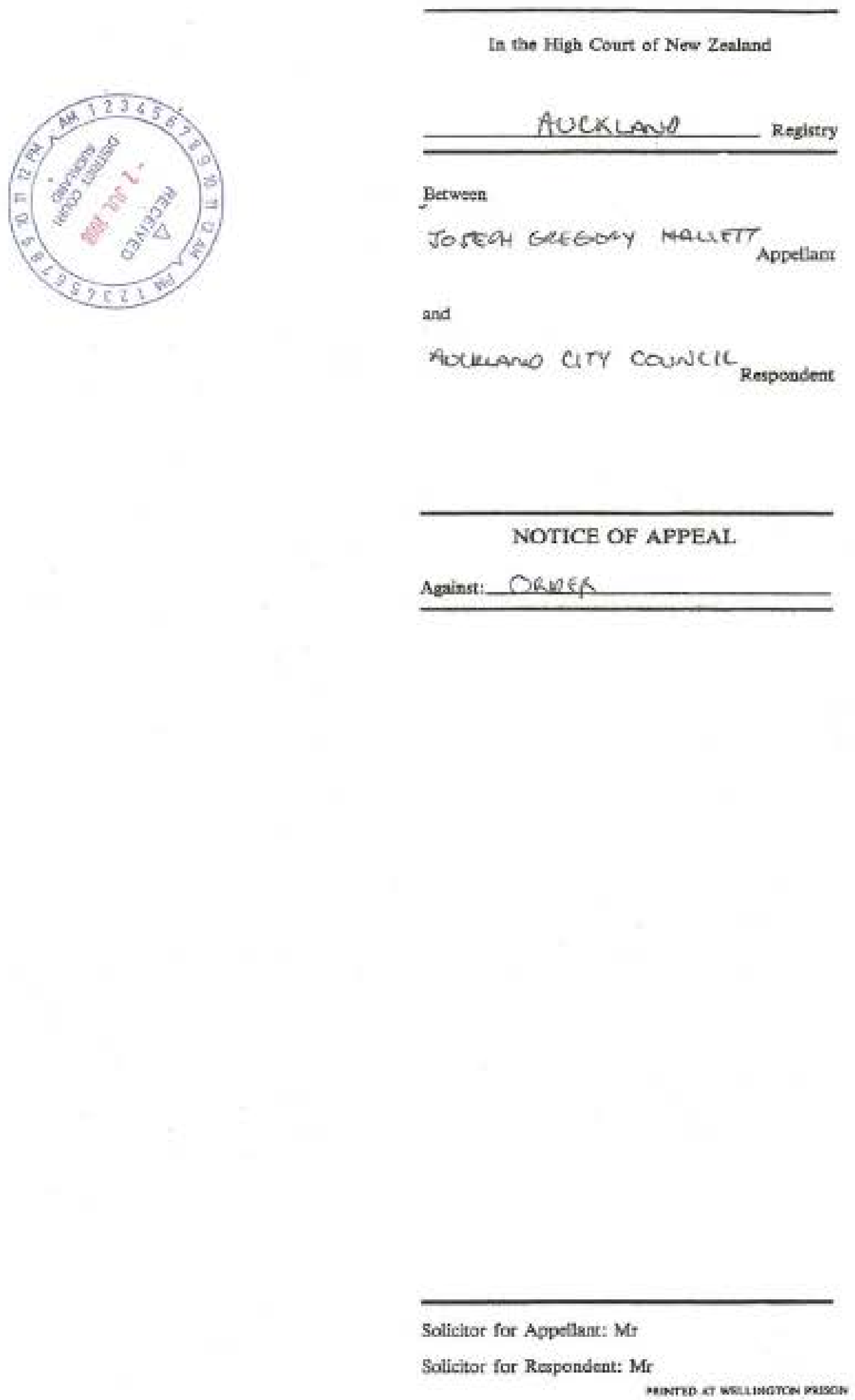

RECEIVED
DISTRICT COURT AUCKLAND
7 JUL 2008

In the High Court of New Zealand

AUCKLAND Registry

Between

JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT Appellant

and

AUCKLAND CITY COUNCIL Respondent

NOTICE OF APPEAL

Against: ORDER

Solicitor for Appellant: Mr

Solicitor for Respondent: Mr

PRINTED AT WELLINGTON PRISON

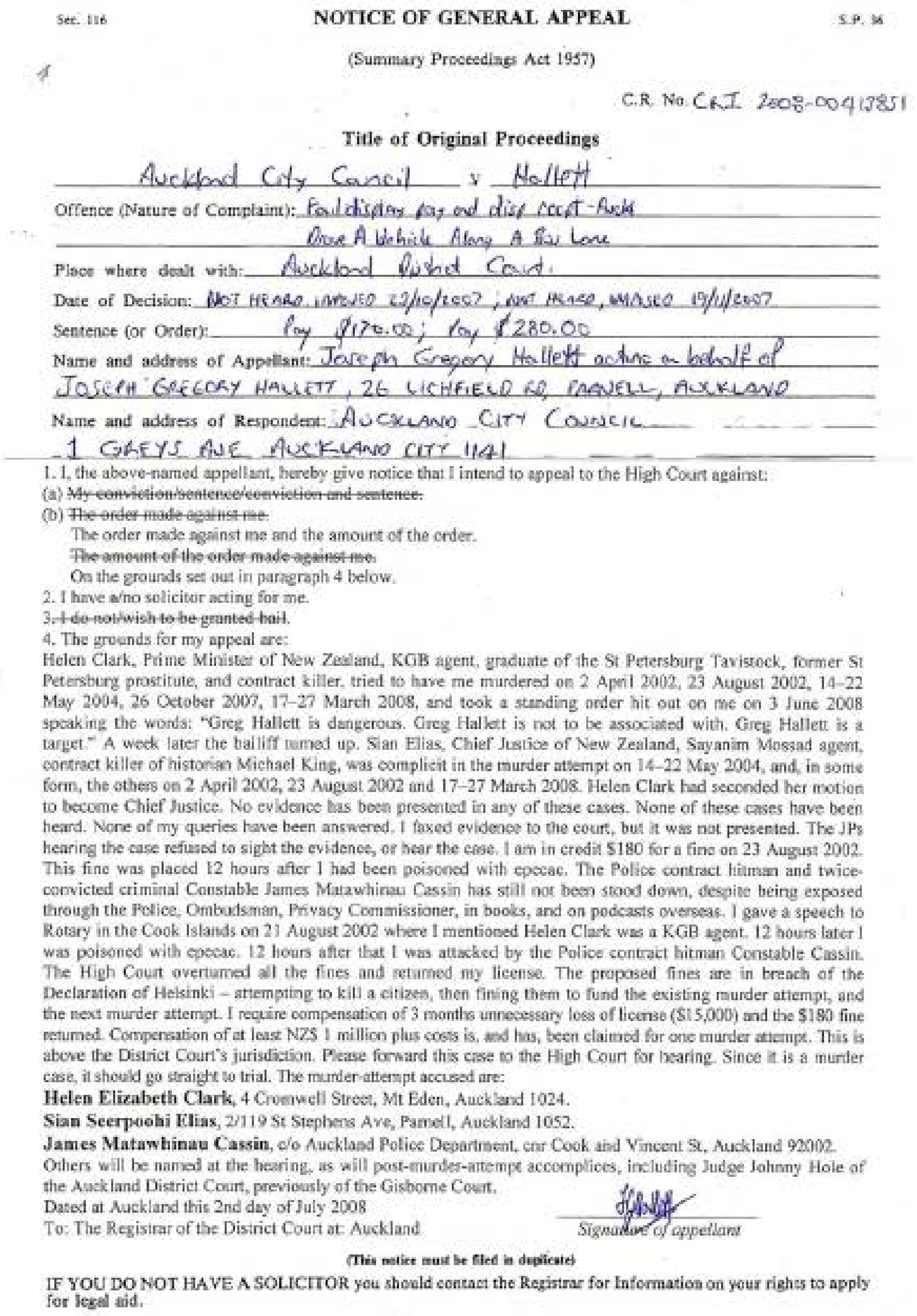

Sec. 116 S.P. 36

NOTICE OF GENERAL APPEAL

(Summary Proceedings Act 1957)

C.R. No. CRI 2008-00417851

Title of Original Proceedings

Auckland City Council v Hallett

Offence (Nature of Complaint): Fail display pay and disp coupon-Auck
Drove A Vehicle Along A Bus Lane

Place where dealt with: Auckland District Court.

Date of Decision: NOT HEARD, IMPOSED 22/10/2007 ; NOT HEARD, IMPOSED 19/11/2007

Sentence (or Order): Pay $170.00; Pay $280.00

Name and address of Appellant: Joseph Gregory Hallett acting on behalf of
JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT, 26 LICHFIELD RD, PARNELL, AUCKLAND

Name and address of Respondent: AUCKLAND CITY COUNCIL
1 GREYS AVE AUCKLAND CITY 1141

1. I, the above-named appellant, hereby give notice that I intend to appeal to the High Court against:
(a) ~~My conviction/sentence/conviction and sentence.~~
(b) ~~The order made against me.~~
The order made against me and the amount of the order.
~~The amount of the order made against me.~~
On the grounds set out in paragraph 4 below.
2. I have a/no solicitor acting for me.
3. ~~I do not/wish to be granted bail.~~
4. The grounds for my appeal are:

Helen Clark, Prime Minister of New Zealand, KGB agent, graduate of the St Petersburg Tavistock, former St Petersburg prostitute, and contract killer, tried to have me murdered on 2 April 2002, 23 August 2002, 14–22 May 2004, 26 October 2007, 17–27 March 2008, and took a standing order hit out on me on 3 June 2008 speaking the words: "Greg Hallett is dangerous. Greg Hallett is not to be associated with. Greg Hallett is a target." A week later the bailiff turned up. Sian Elias, Chief Justice of New Zealand, Sayanim Mossad agent, contract killer of historian Michael King, was complicit in the murder attempt on 14–22 May 2004, and, in some form, the others on 2 April 2002, 23 August 2002 and 17–27 March 2008. Helen Clark had seconded her motion to become Chief Justice. No evidence has been presented in any of these cases. None of these cases have been heard. None of my queries have been answered. I faxed evidence to the court, but it was not presented. The JPs hearing the case refused to sight the evidence, or hear the case. I am in credit $180 for a fine on 23 August 2002. This fine was placed 12 hours after I had been poisoned with epecac. The Police contract hitman and twice-convicted criminal Constable James Matawhinau Cassin has still not been stood down, despite being exposed through the Police, Ombudsman, Privacy Commissioner, in books, and on podcasts overseas. I gave a speech to Rotary in the Cook Islands on 21 August 2002 where I mentioned Helen Clark was a KGB agent. 12 hours later I was poisoned with epecac. 12 hours after that I was attacked by the Police contract hitman Constable Cassin. The High Court overturned all the fines and returned my license. The proposed fines are in breach of the Declaration of Helsinki – attempting to kill a citizen, then fining them to fund the existing murder attempt, and the next murder attempt. I require compensation of 3 months unnecessary loss of license ($15,000) and the $180 fine returned. Compensation of at least NZ$ 1 million plus costs is, and has, been claimed for one murder attempt. This is above the District Court's jurisdiction. Please forward this case to the High Court for hearing. Since it is a murder case, it should go straight to trial. The murder-attempt accused are:

Helen Elizabeth Clark, 4 Cromwell Street, Mt Eden, Auckland 1024.
Sian Seerpoohi Elias, 2/119 St Stephens Ave, Parnell, Auckland 1052.
James Matawhinau Cassin, c/o Auckland Police Department, cnr Cook and Vincent St, Auckland 92002.

Others will be named at the hearing, as will post-murder-attempt accomplices, including Judge Johnny Hole of the Auckland District Court, previously of the Gisborne Court.

Dated at Auckland this 2nd day of July 2008
To: The Registrar of the District Court at: Auckland

Signature of appellant

(This notice must be filed in duplicate)

IF YOU DO NOT HAVE A SOLICITOR you should contact the Registrar for Information on your rights to apply for legal aid.

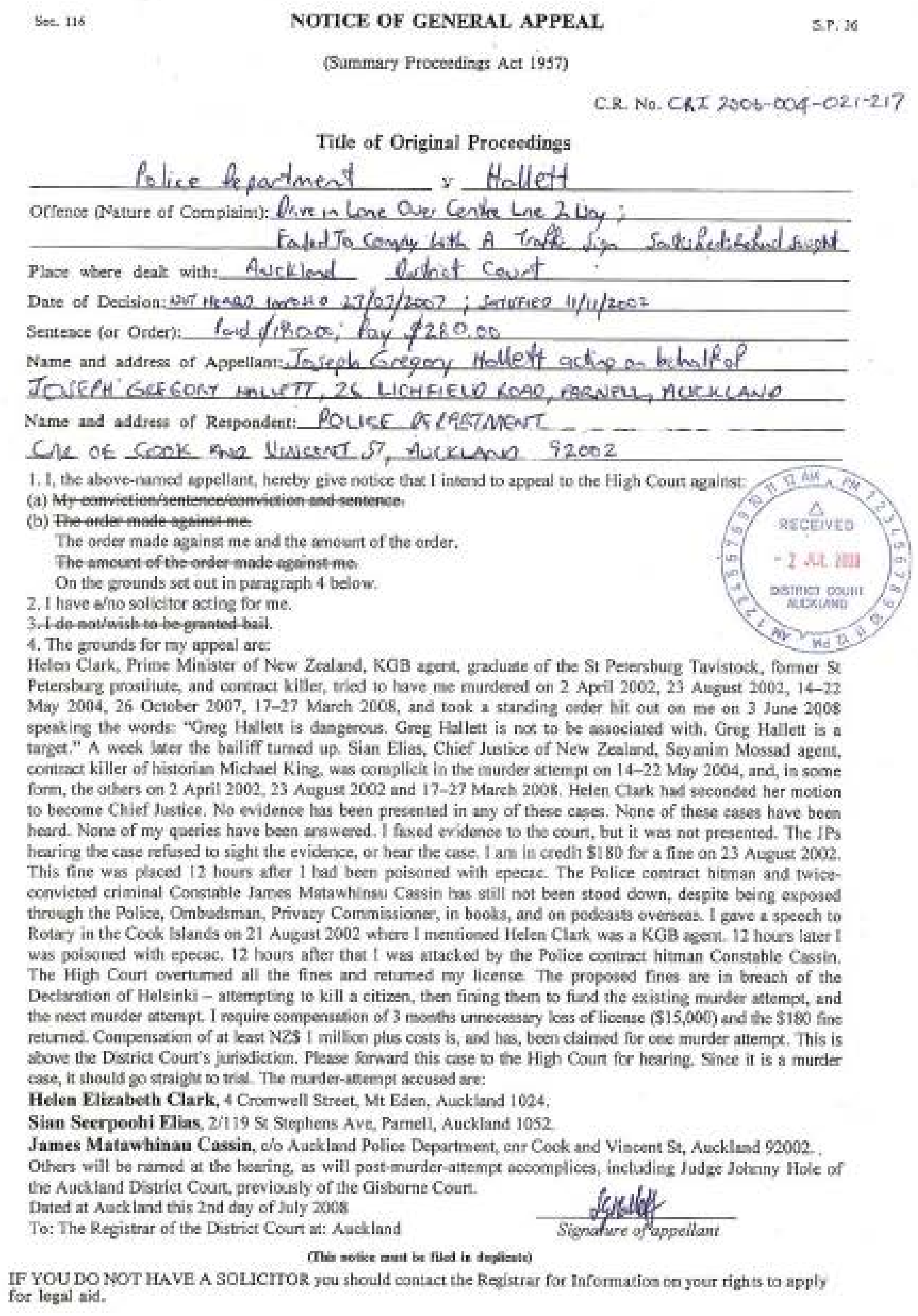

Sec. 116

NOTICE OF GENERAL APPEAL

S.P. 36

(Summary Proceedings Act 1957)

C.R. No. CRI 2006-004-021-217

Title of Original Proceedings

Police Department v Hallett

Offence (Nature of Complaint): Drive in Lane Over Centre Line 2 Way ;
Failed To Comply With A Traffic Sign [illegible]

Place where dealt with: Auckland District Court

Date of Decision: NOT HEARD [illegible] 27/07/2007 ; SATISFIED 11/11/2002

Sentence (or Order): Paid $180.00; Pay $280.00

Name and address of Appellant: Joseph Gregory Hallett acting on behalf of
JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT, 26 LICHFIELD ROAD, PARNELL, AUCKLAND

Name and address of Respondent: POLICE DEPARTMENT
CNR OF COOK AND VINCENT ST, AUCKLAND 92002

RECEIVED
- 2 JUL 2008
DISTRICT COURT
AUCKLAND

1. I, the above-named appellant, hereby give notice that I intend to appeal to the High Court against:
(a) ~~My conviction/sentence/conviction and sentence.~~
(b) ~~The order made against me.~~
The order made against me and the amount of the order.
~~The amount of the order made against me.~~
On the grounds set out in paragraph 4 below.
2. I have a/no solicitor acting for me.
3. ~~I do not/wish to be granted bail.~~
4. The grounds for my appeal are:

Helen Clark, Prime Minister of New Zealand, KGB agent, graduate of the St Petersburg Tavistock, former St Petersburg prostitute, and contract killer, tried to have me murdered on 2 April 2002, 23 August 2002, 14–22 May 2004, 26 October 2007, 17–27 March 2008, and took a standing order hit out on me on 3 June 2008 speaking the words: "Greg Hallett is dangerous. Greg Hallett is not to be associated with. Greg Hallett is a target." A week later the bailiff turned up. Sian Elias, Chief Justice of New Zealand, Sayanim Mossad agent, contract killer of historian Michael King, was complicit in the murder attempt on 14–22 May 2004, and, in some form, the others on 2 April 2002, 23 August 2002 and 17–27 March 2008. Helen Clark had seconded her motion to become Chief Justice. No evidence has been presented in any of these cases. None of these cases have been heard. None of my queries have been answered. I faxed evidence to the court, but it was not presented. The JPs hearing the case refused to sight the evidence, or hear the case. I am in credit $180 for a fine on 23 August 2002. This fine was placed 12 hours after I had been poisoned with epecac. The Police contract hitman and twice-convicted criminal Constable James Matawhinau Cassin has still not been stood down, despite being exposed through the Police, Ombudsman, Privacy Commissioner, in books, and on podcasts overseas. I gave a speech to Rotary in the Cook Islands on 21 August 2002 where I mentioned Helen Clark was a KGB agent. 12 hours later I was poisoned with epecac. 12 hours after that I was attacked by the Police contract hitman Constable Cassin. The High Court overturned all the fines and returned my license. The proposed fines are in breach of the Declaration of Helsinki – attempting to kill a citizen, then fining them to fund the existing murder attempt, and the next murder attempt. I require compensation of 3 months unnecessary loss of license ($15,000) and the $180 fine returned. Compensation of at least NZ$ 1 million plus costs is, and has, been claimed for one murder attempt. This is above the District Court's jurisdiction. Please forward this case to the High Court for hearing. Since it is a murder case, it should go straight to trial. The murder-attempt accused are:

Helen Elizabeth Clark, 4 Cromwell Street, Mt Eden, Auckland 1024.
Sian Seerpoohi Elias, 2/119 St Stephens Ave, Parnell, Auckland 1052.
James Matawhinau Cassin, c/o Auckland Police Department, cnr Cook and Vincent St, Auckland 92002.

Others will be named at the hearing, as will post-murder-attempt accomplices, including Judge Johnny Hole of the Auckland District Court, previously of the Gisborne Court.

Dated at Auckland this 2nd day of July 2008

To: The Registrar of the District Court at: Auckland

Signature of appellant

(This notice must be filed in duplicate)

IF YOU DO NOT HAVE A SOLICITOR you should contact the Registrar for Information on your rights to apply for legal aid.

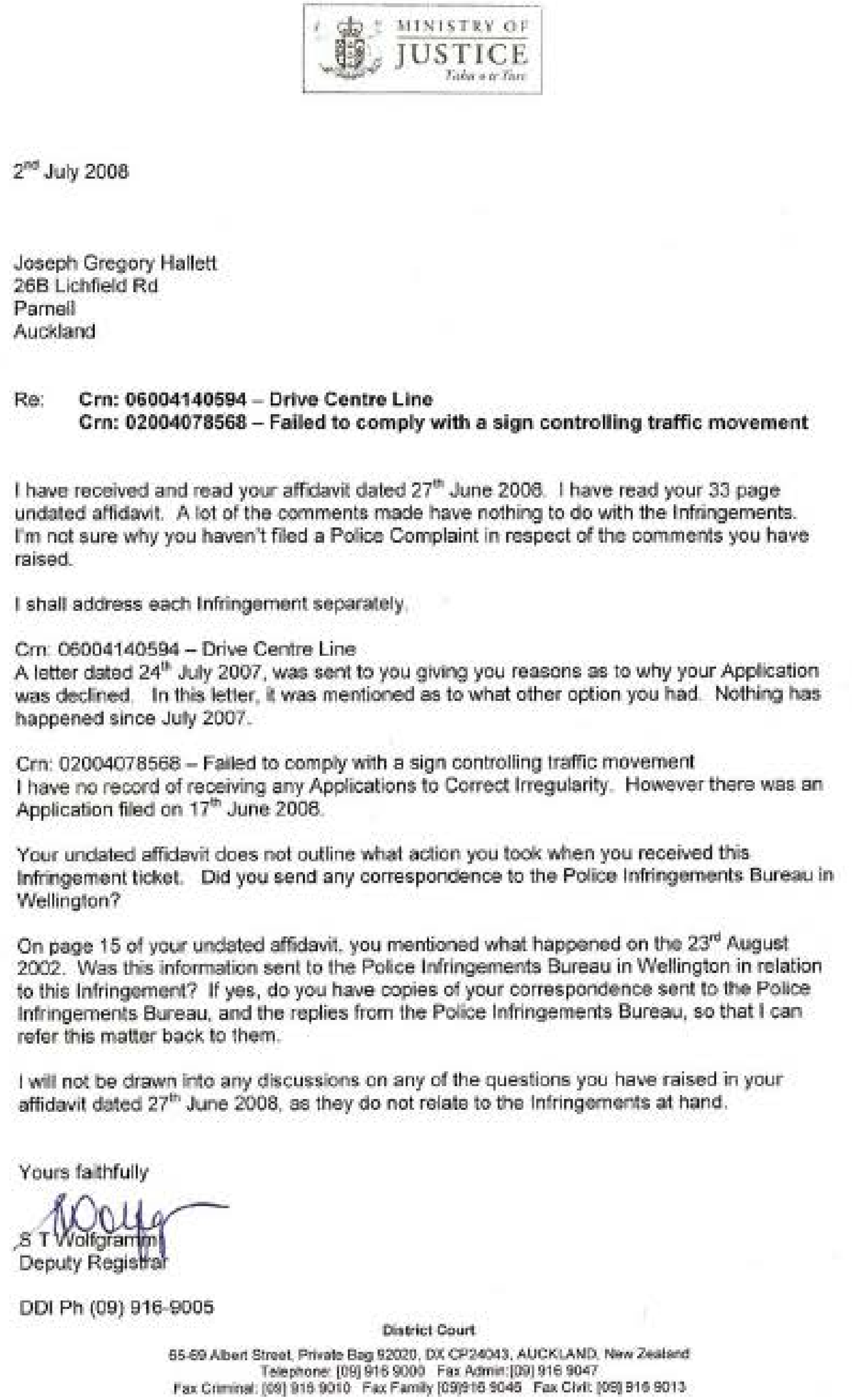

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE
Tahu o te Ture

2nd July 2008

Joseph Gregory Hallett
26B Lichfield Rd
Parnell
Auckland

Re: **Crn: 06004140594 – Drive Centre Line**
Crn: 02004078568 – Failed to comply with a sign controlling traffic movement

I have received and read your affidavit dated 27th June 2008. I have read your 33 page undated affidavit. A lot of the comments made have nothing to do with the Infringements. I'm not sure why you haven't filed a Police Complaint in respect of the comments you have raised.

I shall address each Infringement separately.

Crn: 06004140594 – Drive Centre Line
A letter dated 24th July 2007, was sent to you giving you reasons as to why your Application was declined. In this letter, it was mentioned as to what other option you had. Nothing has happened since July 2007.

Crn: 02004078568 – Failed to comply with a sign controlling traffic movement
I have no record of receiving any Applications to Correct Irregularity. However there was an Application filed on 17th June 2008.

Your undated affidavit does not outline what action you took when you received this Infringement ticket. Did you send any correspondence to the Police Infringements Bureau in Wellington?

On page 15 of your undated affidavit, you mentioned what happened on the 23rd August 2002. Was this information sent to the Police Infringements Bureau in Wellington in relation to this Infringement? If yes, do you have copies of your correspondence sent to the Police Infringements Bureau, and the replies from the Police Infringements Bureau, so that I can refer this matter back to them.

I will not be drawn into any discussions on any of the questions you have raised in your affidavit dated 27th June 2008, as they do not relate to the Infringements at hand.

Yours faithfully

S T Wolfgramm
Deputy Registrar

DDI Ph (09) 916-9005

District Court
65-69 Albert Street, Private Bag 92020, DX CP24043, AUCKLAND, New Zealand
Telephone: [09] 916 9000 Fax Admin:[09] 916 9047
Fax Criminal: [09] 916 9010 Fax Family [09]916 9046 Fax Civil: [09] 916 9013

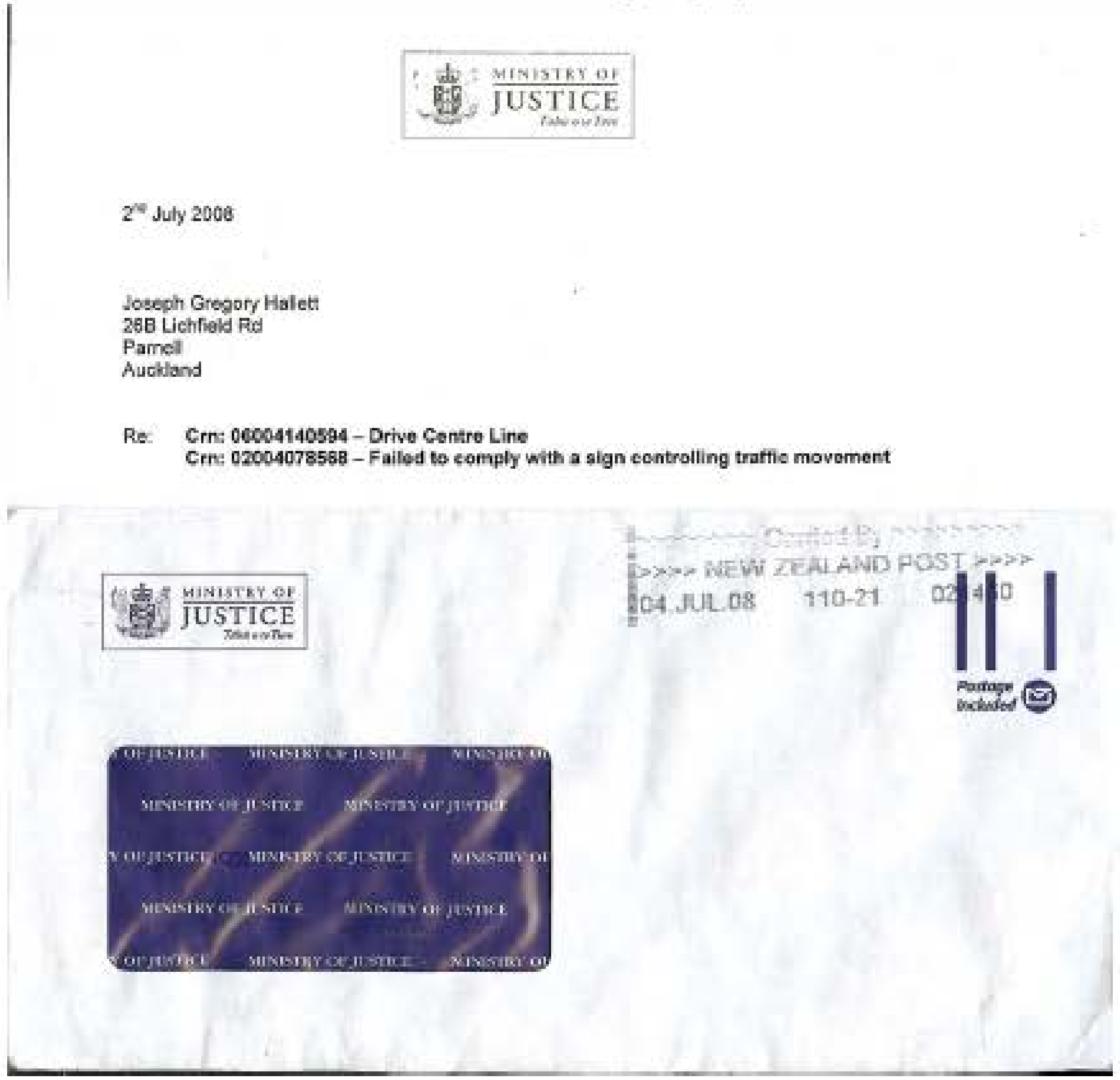

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE

2nd July 2008

Joseph Gregory Hallett
26B Lichfield Rd
Parnell
Auckland

Re: **Crn: 06004140594 – Drive Centre Line**
Crn: 02004078568 – Failed to comply with a sign controlling traffic movement

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE
>>>> NEW ZEALAND POST >>>>
04.JUL.08 110-21
Postage Included
MINISTRY OF JUSTICE

7 August 2008, 9 am

S T Wolfgramm
Deputy Registrar
Auckland District Court

Re: Your 2 July 2008 letter posted on 4 July 2008 and received 6 July 2008
Crn: 06004140594 – Drive Centre Line
Crn: 02004078568 – Failed to comply with a sign controlling traffic movement

is my Re: CRN 06004140594 – Drive In Lane Over Center Lne 2 Way
CRN 02004078568 – Failed To Comply With A Traffic Sign

Re: CRN 02004063795 of 23/08/2002
CRN 02004063795 of 23/08/2002
CRN 02004063796 of 23/08/2002
CRN 02004078568 of 23/08/2002
CRN 07004400778 of 04/08/2007
CRN 07004918708 of 08/08/2007
CRN 06004140594 of 15/09/06
MOJ reply to CRN 07004400778, CRN 07004918708, CRI-2008-004-013851 & CRN 06004140594, CRN 02004078568, CRI-2006-004-021217 of 23 June 2008.

RECEIVED
7 AUG 2008
DISTRICT COURT
AUCKLAND

Re: Bailiff's request 10 June 2008, Reference No. PPN1429601165

Re: my 25 July 2008 letter to Chris Osbourn, File Management Unit, Auckland City DHQ, New Zealand Police
Police Reference Number: N/A
File Number: 990601/3985 (See 25 July 2008 letter attached)

Deputy Registrar,

I do not condone your modifications of the charges: from 'CRN' to 'Crn'; from 'Drive In Lane Over Center Lne 2 Way' to 'Drive Centre Line'; nor 'Failed To Comply With A Traffic Sign' to 'Failed to comply with a sign controlling traffic movement'.

If the Deputy Registrar wishes to alter these charges, then first write me a letter confirming that the previous charges have been dropped.

Then I will confirm that the new proposed charges are out of time, and like the previous charges, have no substantive evidence, nor have they been heard in Court.

The charges have to be in English. If they are not, they do not stand up in court.

If they are in 'incomplete English' then they have various meanings. "Center Lne 2 Way" is not English. It could be Center Line, Center Lane, Centre Line, Centre Lane.

If you change your spelling, it is a different message.

If you can't communicate, you shouldn't be employed.

If you are enforcing fines for things that aren't in English and aren't clearly defined, then you should refund all those you have wrongly charged, just as the Christchurch City Council has recently done.

In this location in Parnell, there is a central lane designed for overtaking.

It is called a "Median Pass Lane", but when you use that term, it shows that the police are manufacturing yet another crime.

The Police manufacture crimes in order to pay for the Domestic Purposes Benefit (DPB).

Court fines exactly equal the DPB every year.

The more mothers on the DPB, the more unreasonable the police are, the more they manufacture crime, and the more fascist police actions are.

Currently the police manufacture 80 per cent of all crimes and only solve 40 per cent of crime – so the Police have a negative influence on society.

I have sent a series of 25 valid questions to Chris Osbourn of the Police Files Management Unit on 25 July 2008 regarding a false arrest on 22 June 1999 for which the warrant was under another persons name in a different city for a crime I have never committed.

I am expecting a reply by 8 August 2008 (tomorow), my name dissassociated and compensation paid.

I am preparing a response to your letter erroneously dated 2 July 2008 and am about halfway through the related affidavit and exhibits.

Extended time is required to finish the Helen Clark and Sian Elias murders and murder attempts as there are so many of them. This also includes the roles of their accomplices.

Since I accuse the Police and the Court of ongoing harrassment from January 1994, I will be including the the Police Files Management Unit response in my exhibits, to be presented within a month of receipt.

Completion will depend on nothing else popping out of the blue, like another murder attempt, or more fraudulent Court interference.

The number of CRN (Criminal Reference Number) and the change in the names of the associated charges, the different organisations referring to these in different ways and with different forms, with different people, at different times, with different colours, by post, late post, backdated letters, undelivered letters, fax, unreceived faxes, faxes not presented to court, letters from the court, police and bailiffs delivered with different intensity, with varying degrees of integrity, honesty, beligerence, over years, seemingly resolved, then unresolved during election year, with fines not refunded, withdrawls not stopped, charges heard, squashed reheard and withdrawn by police at Court, minutes prior to hearing, and the Police, Privacy Commission and Ombudsman not releasing the criminal record of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin of the Enquiries Section of the Combined Investigation Unit of the Auckland Central Police, and all of the above either being promoted for their failures, or protected for their crimes, or remunerated when publicly accused . . . are a breach of the Declaration of Helsinki.

The New Zealand Police and Courts are acting illegally under international law.

In the meantime, I wait for the Police Files Management Unit response as to why I was arrested and incarcerated for a day without a valid or relevant warrant, and expect that all of these charges will be squashed with full and documented refunds and compensation for illegal police and judicial harrassment.

Sincerely,

Joseph Gregory Hallett
26 Lichfield Road, Parnell, Auckland

Affidavit of 6 August 2008

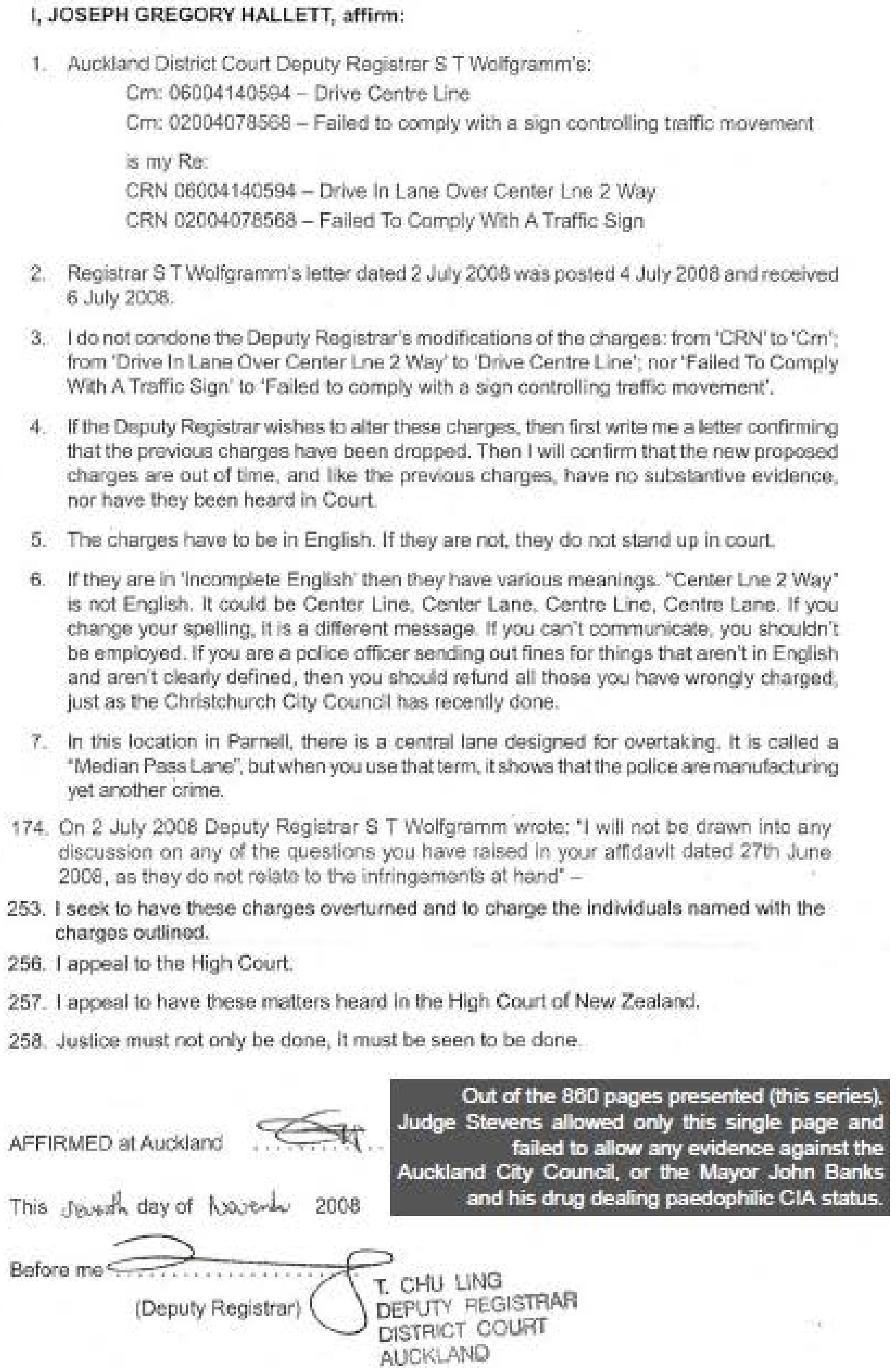

I, JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT, affirm:

1. Auckland District Court Deputy Registrar S T Wolfgramm's:
   Crn: 06004140594 – Drive Centre Line
   Crn: 02004078568 – Failed to comply with a sign controlling traffic movement

   is my Re:
   CRN 06004140594 – Drive In Lane Over Center Lne 2 Way
   CRN 02004078568 – Failed To Comply With A Traffic Sign

2. Registrar S T Wolfgramm's letter dated 2 July 2008 was posted 4 July 2008 and received 6 July 2008.

3. I do not condone the Deputy Registrar's modifications of the charges: from 'CRN' to 'Crn'; from 'Drive In Lane Over Center Lne 2 Way' to 'Drive Centre Line'; nor 'Failed To Comply With A Traffic Sign' to 'Failed to comply with a sign controlling traffic movement'.

4. If the Deputy Registrar wishes to alter these charges, then first write me a letter confirming that the previous charges have been dropped. Then I will confirm that the new proposed charges are out of time, and like the previous charges, have no substantive evidence, nor have they been heard in Court.

5. The charges have to be in English. If they are not, they do not stand up in court.

6. If they are in 'Incomplete English' then they have various meanings. "Center Lne 2 Way" is not English. It could be Center Line, Center Lane, Centre Line, Centre Lane. If you change your spelling, it is a different message. If you can't communicate, you shouldn't be employed. If you are a police officer sending out fines for things that aren't in English and aren't clearly defined, then you should refund all those you have wrongly charged, just as the Christchurch City Council has recently done.

7. In this location in Parnell, there is a central lane designed for overtaking. It is called a "Median Pass Lane", but when you use that term, it shows that the police are manufacturing yet another crime.

174. On 2 July 2008 Deputy Registrar S T Wolfgramm wrote: "I will not be drawn into any discussion on any of the questions you have raised in your affidavit dated 27th June 2008, as they do not relate to the infringements at hand" –

253. I seek to have these charges overturned and to charge the individuals named with the charges outlined.

256. I appeal to the High Court.

257. I appeal to have these matters heard in the High Court of New Zealand.

258. Justice must not only be done, it must be seen to be done.

AFFIRMED at Auckland ……………

This seventh day of November 2008

Before me ……………………
(Deputy Registrar)

T. CHU LING
DEPUTY REGISTRAR
DISTRICT COURT
AUCKLAND

Out of the 860 pages presented (this series), Judge Stevens allowed only this single page and failed to allow any evidence against the Auckland City Council, or the Mayor John Banks and his drug dealing paedophilic CIA status.

To Win or Not to Win – What Happened in the High Court hearing (20 April 2009)

I had presented 2 pages on 2 July 2008, then 400 pages on 7 November 2008, then 860 pages at 11 am on 20 April 2009, with the High Court Deputy Registar running these up to the Judge to read for the hearing at 2.15 pm in Courtroom 13.

The case was against THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE and the Auckland City Council, over three or four traffic tickets, to which I tagged Helen Clark and/or Sian Elias' murders of Chris Beeby, Sir Peter Blake, David McNee, Sir Peter Elworthy, Michael King, Rod Donald, Augie Auer, and six attempts on myself.

The case had been rigged – an expected collusion between THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE, the Auckland City Council, the High Court Deputy Registrar and the Judge.

The expected result was that I was to be fined, pay double court costs and have my Mercedes removed – which was why Chubb Security was there.

The collusion was so bad, the police officer sitting in the rear was the officer in charge of the site of Paul White's murder back in September 1991 – it was a Forces of Order hit (Police, Military & Banks) – and I had written about this in my appeal as further evidence that THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE were murderers and acting in collusion with the Auckland City Council who's Mayor was a CIA agent, paedophile and drug runner.

Neither the Police Officer or the Chubb Security man sitting next to him had anything to do with my case . . . but they were talking about it in great detail and with plenty of extraneous background knowledge.

Spook offered to watch the case for me, so he turned up and sat next to the Police Officer who recognised him, but couldn't place him.Spook had worked on the other side of the Paul White murder. The Forces of Order had murdered Paul White on 4 September 1991, I had written about it, presented it as part of my appeal.

Spook had investigated the murder and got the blame for it by Ian Wishart in the movie 'SPOOKED'. At least part of the funding had come from the Forces of Order who had ordered the hit – Faye & Richwhite, with Winston Peters MP and Michelle Boag as the bagmen delivering the money to Paul White eight (8) hours before he was murdered.

Spook sat next to the Police Officer and listened to him skiting to Chubb Security:

"There's drinks afterward at HQ.
Don't get too drunk because you will still need to tow his vehicle."

The High Court are really very courteous [*sic*], and although the hearings last for a morning or an afternoon, the parking meters outside only last an hour. So around 3.15 pm, Spook left to put some more money in the meter, only to find a metermaid hovering over the vehicle. When he returned ot the High Court, the lift got stuck between floors, so he used the phone and yelled at the secretary: "If you don't get me out of here in five seconds, I'm gonna start ripping wires out". The secretary was there almost before he hung up. He then asked her for directions to Courtroom 13 and she replied "There isn't a courtroom 13".

So the High Court were full of any and every sabotage. Instead of being absent for 3 minutes, Spook was gone for 12. That's usually enough time for a judge to pull a sly one.

I had just finished the book – 860 pages – and gone to copy it, one each for the two lawyers, and one for myself, but the commerical printer broke down and I only got 1½ copies, and that took 2.5 hours, so I wasn't exactly prepared.

Normally you have a lawyer present in the High Court, but I just didn't get around to employing one, and I figured they wouldn't present damning information on the players in the legal system, so I'd have to do it myself.

I gave a verbal submission for 90 minutes and won the case. I raised the following issues:

1. **Your boss Sian Elias is a contract killer. You are working for a contract killer.**

Ans: **"She's not my boss".**

2. **The Mayor of Auckland John Banks is a CIA paedophile and drug trafficker.**

Ans: **"Has that got any bearing on the case?"**

Ans: "Well yes it has".

3. I published that the head of the ARC Gary Taylor was filming people having sex with his wife and Mike Lee was the last male to have sex with Helen Clark, and had married a child prostitute. This was published on **31 October 2007**. The Bus Lane ticket was notified on **19 November 2007** as having occurred 73 days earlier on **8 August 2007** and the informant was an unnamed ARC worker who was not a police, traffic, or enforcement officer. This is targetting profiling which his illegal.

Each time I raised an embarrasing point, it was heared once. When I tried to repeat it, Judge Stevens said, "Yes, we've heard that" and stopped me. Thereafter I would just give a key word and say "unmentionable" and he would acknowledge the message that he found "defamatory, scandalous and offensive".

We were really talking to each other – the judge and me, but I'm sure that he was reducing what he would take on board. Judge Stevens asked me why I didn't present the murder attempts against me to the police and I told him the police were in on it and I then turned around to the Police officer sitting at the back and said:

**"They're the anti-Police.
They're a paedophile and crime creation movement."**

The officer didn't budge, but the case seemed to have turned.

The rest of the points are raised in the following Attachments. Despite the case being rigged, Judge Stevens found in my favour, then SEALED my submissions – actually triple sealed them.

Viewing has to be by written permission of both the lawyers present, in front of a High Court judge and even then it can go to the Court of Appeal.

Judge Stevens left, the police left, then the jduge returned and dealt with the matter of costs – none were awarded either way. The ACC could have got some, but the judge told the ACC lawyer W. Kiewik: "There are times for awarding costs, and there are times for not awarding costs. This is a time for not awarding costs. Go tell your bosses."

The judge left and both lawyers congratulated me on my strategy. I replied: "We can have a chat some time", then packed up my bags (the same black leather pilot's bag I used to hitchhike on planes across Europe with) and marched out of the High Court at pace.

There was a shit storm in the Forces of Order.

At 9 am the next morning the Police and ACC demanded to be briefed by their lawyers: "What the fuck just happened?" The oral recording went down to Wellington for analysis.

The Spymaster wanted this noted on Saturday 5 pm 25 April 2009:

"Crown Law are going over the case right now because they don't think it's enforceable . . . Judge Stevens is a conservative judge who was upset by seeing the system had reacted wrongly and had framed the charges wrongly."

The judge sealed all records. What you are reading next is the Minute of the Judgement followed by the High Court sealed records.

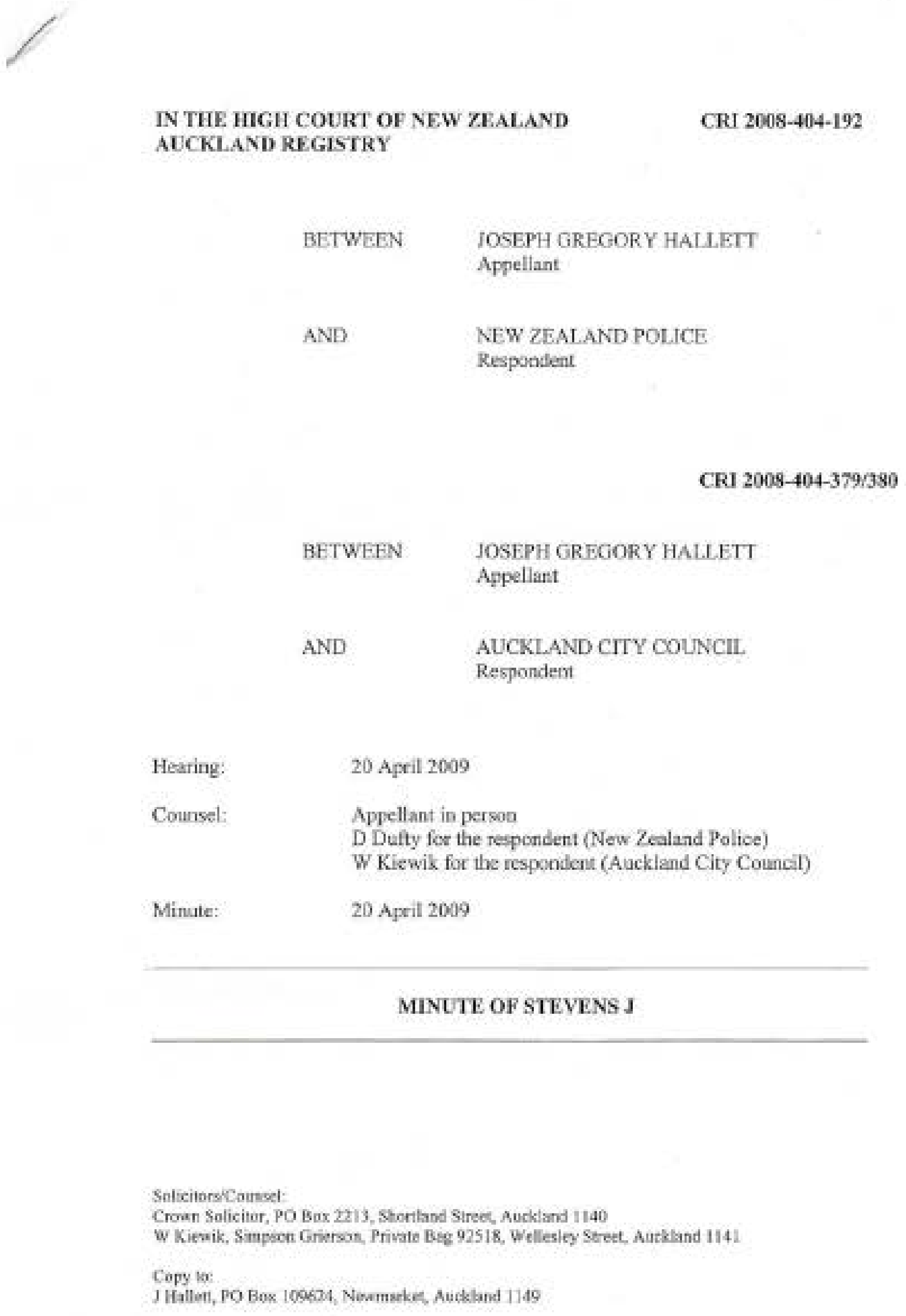

IN THE HIGH COURT OF NEW ZEALAND
AUCKLAND REGISTRY

CRI 2008-404-192

BETWEEN JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
Appellant

AND NEW ZEALAND POLICE
Respondent

CRI 2008-404-379/380

BETWEEN JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
Appellant

AND AUCKLAND CITY COUNCIL
Respondent

Hearing: 20 April 2009

Counsel: Appellant in person
D Dufty for the respondent (New Zealand Police)
W Kiewik for the respondent (Auckland City Council)

Minute: 20 April 2009

MINUTE OF STEVENS J

Solicitors/Counsel:
Crown Solicitor, PO Box 2213, Shortland Street, Auckland 1140
W Kiewik, Simpson Grierson, Private Bag 92518, Wellesley Street, Auckland 1141

Copy to:
J Hallett, PO Box 109624, Newmarket, Auckland 1149

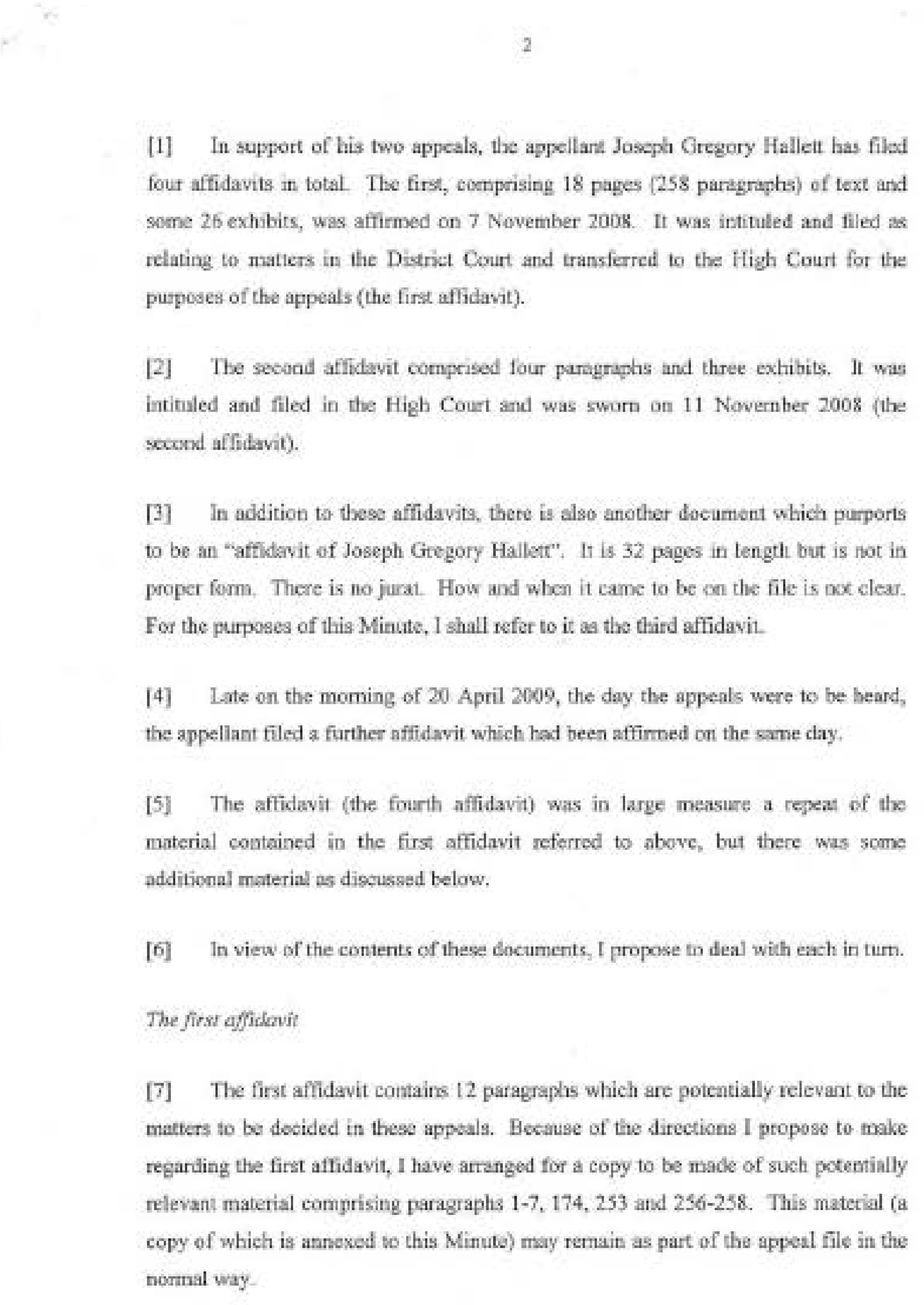

[1] In support of his two appeals, the appellant Joseph Gregory Hallett has filed four affidavits in total. The first, comprising 18 pages (258 paragraphs) of text and some 26 exhibits, was affirmed on 7 November 2008. It was intituled and filed as relating to matters in the District Court and transferred to the High Court for the purposes of the appeals (the first affidavit).

[2] The second affidavit comprised four paragraphs and three exhibits. It was intituled and filed in the High Court and was sworn on 11 November 2008 (the second affidavit).

[3] In addition to these affidavits, there is also another document which purports to be an "affidavit of Joseph Gregory Hallett". It is 32 pages in length but is not in proper form. There is no jurat. How and when it came to be on the file is not clear. For the purposes of this Minute, I shall refer to it as the third affidavit.

[4] Late on the morning of 20 April 2009, the day the appeals were to be heard, the appellant filed a further affidavit which had been affirmed on the same day.

[5] The affidavit (the fourth affidavit) was in large measure a repeat of the material contained in the first affidavit referred to above, but there was some additional material as discussed below.

[6] In view of the contents of these documents, I propose to deal with each in turn.

The first affidavit

[7] The first affidavit contains 12 paragraphs which are potentially relevant to the matters to be decided in these appeals. Because of the directions I propose to make regarding the first affidavit, I have arranged for a copy to be made of such potentially relevant material comprising paragraphs 1-7, 174, 253 and 256-258. This material (a copy of which is annexed to this Minute) may remain as part of the appeal file in the normal way.

[8] The balance of the material in the first affidavit is irrelevant to the issues I have to decide. In addition, parts of the content are defamatory and much of it is scandalous.

[9] With respect to the exhibits annexed to the first affidavit, again most of the material is irrelevant, much of it defamatory and large portions of many of the exhibits are properly characterised as scandalous and offensive. I note that five of the exhibits, exhibits U, V, W, X and Z, are missing. However, from the titles in the index, it is apparent that these exhibits would also be irrelevant to the issues arising in the two appeals.

[10] I therefore direct that the first affidavit and all exhibits be sealed by the Registrar. I further direct that the first affidavit is not to be available to be searched or inspected without further order of the Court. Further, I direct that the sealed affidavit is not to be opened except by order of a High Court Judge or a Judge of the Court of Appeal. Any application to open the sealed affidavit is to be on notice to the other parties to the appeal, namely, the New Zealand Police and the Auckland City Council. They are to have an opportunity to be heard on the application.

The second affidavit

[11] Neither the body of the affidavit nor the exhibits attached are relevant to the issues the Court is required to decide.

[12] With respect to the exhibits, exhibit A contains irrelevant, defamatory and scandalous material. Exhibits B and C are simply copies of the notice of appeal. In respect of each of the notices, the grounds are not proper grounds. They are entirely irrelevant to the issues on appeal. Further, they contain defamatory and scandalous material.

[13] I direct that the second affidavit and all exhibits be sealed by the Registrar. I further direct that the second affidavit is not to be made available to be searched or inspected without further order of the Court. Further, I direct that the sealed affidavit is not to be opened except by order of a High Court Judge or a Judge of the Court of Appeal. Any application to open the sealed affidavit is to be on notice to the other parties to the appeal, namely, the New Zealand Police and the Auckland City Council. They are to have an opportunity to be heard on the application.

The third affidavit

[14] The third affidavit is not in proper form. It has not been sworn or affirmed by the appellant.

[15] I direct that the Registrar is to place the purported third affidavit in a sealed envelope. It is not to be available to be searched or inspected. I further direct that the purported third affidavit is not to be opened except by order of a High Court Judge or a Judge of the Court of Appeal. Any application to open the sealed affidavit is to be on notice to the other parties to the appeal, namely, the New Zealand Police and the Auckland City Council. They are to have an opportunity to be heard on the application.

The fourth affidavit

[16] With respect to the fourth affidavit, the matters in paragraphs 1-7 are new, as are paragraphs 252-278. Many of the exhibits are the same as those in the first affidavit. Exhibits U and following are new.

[17] A brief consideration of the headings to the new exhibits demonstrates that many of them are irrelevant to the matters for decision today. Like the exhibits in the first affidavit, much of the material contained in them is either defamatory or scandalous.

[18] In the exhibits marked "traffic tickets", there is some potentially relevant material, e.g. correspondence with the Auckland City Council. But the difficulty for the Court is that this material is interspersed among other documents that are either irrelevant, defamatory or scandalous.

[19] I direct that the fourth affidavit and all exhibits be sealed by the Registrar. I further direct that the fourth affidavit is not to be made available to be searched or

5

inspected without further order of the Court. Further, I direct that the sealed affidavit is not to be opened except by order of a High Court Judge or a Judge of the Court of Appeal. Any application to open the sealed affidavit is to be on notice to the other parties to the appeal, namely, the New Zealand Police and the Auckland City Council. They are to have an opportunity to be heard on the application.

[20] Leave is granted to the parties to apply further, on notice to all other parties, if necessary.

Stevens J

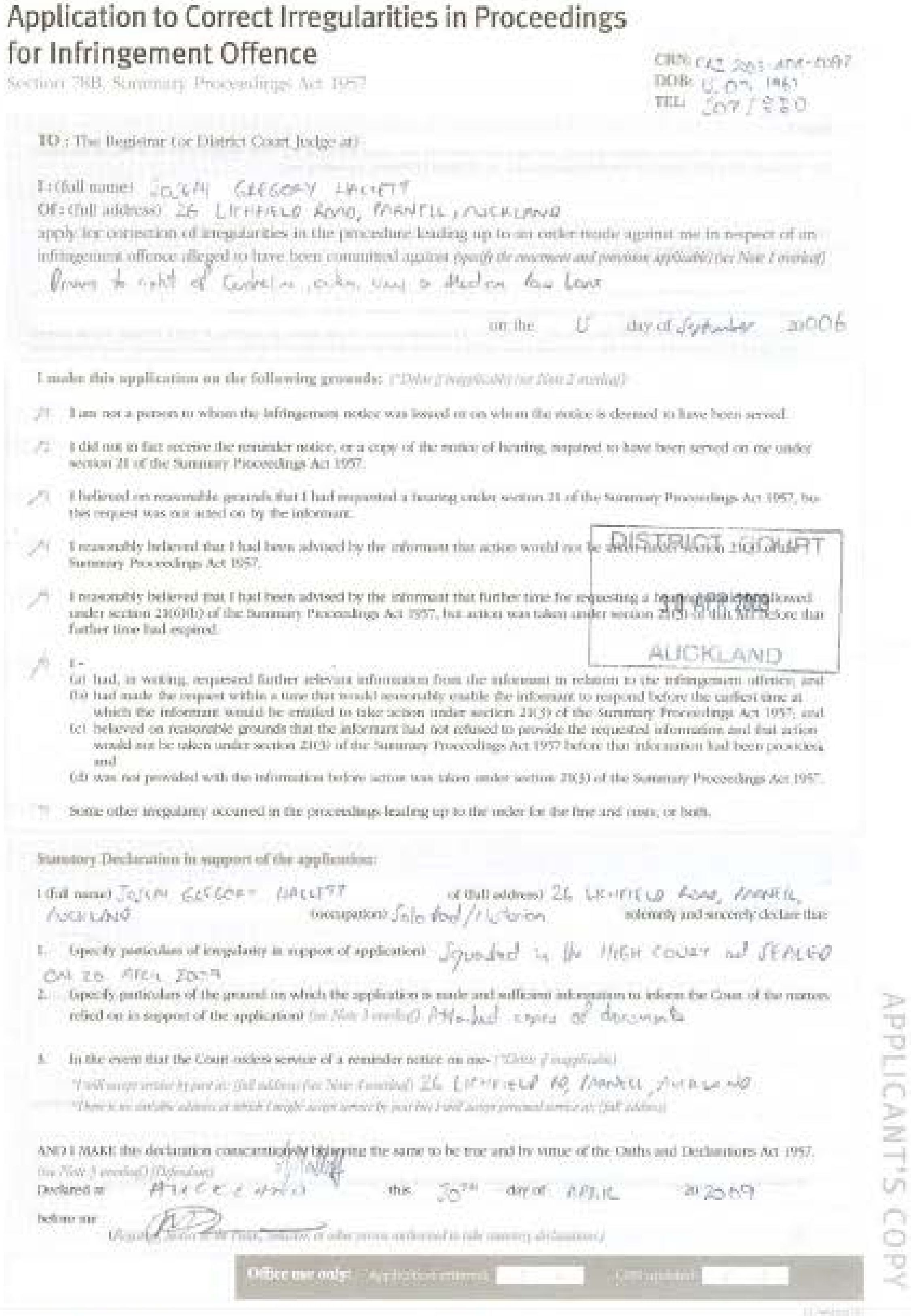

Application to Correct Irregularities in Proceedings for Infringement Offence

Section 78B, Summary Proceedings Act 1957

CRN: [illegible]
DOB: 4. 07. 1961
TEL: [illegible]

TO : The Registrar (or District Court Judge at)

I: (full name) JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
Of: (full address) 26 LITCHFIELD ROAD, PARNELL, AUCKLAND
apply for correction of irregularities in the procedure leading up to an order made against me in respect of an infringement offence alleged to have been committed against *(specify the enactment and provision applicable) (see Note 1 overleaf)*
Driven to right of Centreline, [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

on the 4 day of September 20006

I make this application on the following grounds: *(*Delete if inapplicable) (see Note 2 overleaf)*

~~*1.~~ I am not a person to whom the infringement notice was issued or on whom the notice is deemed to have been served.

~~*2.~~ I did not in fact receive the reminder notice, or a copy of the notice of hearing, required to have been served on me under section 21 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

~~*3.~~ I believed on reasonable grounds that I had requested a hearing under section 21 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957, but this request was not acted on by the informant.

~~*4.~~ I reasonably believed that I had been advised by the informant that action would not be taken under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

~~*5.~~ I reasonably believed that I had been advised by the informant that further time for requesting a hearing had been allowed under section 21(6)(b) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957, but action was taken under section 21(3) of that Act before that further time had expired.

~~*6.~~ I -
(a) had, in writing, requested further relevant information from the informant in relation to the infringement offence; and
(b) had made the request within a time that would reasonably enable the informant to respond before the earliest time at which the informant would be entitled to take action under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957; and
(c) believed on reasonable grounds that the informant had not refused to provide the requested information and that action would not be taken under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 before that information had been provided; and
(d) was not provided with the information before action was taken under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

*7. Some other irregularity occurred in the proceedings leading up to the order for the fine and costs, or both.

DISTRICT COURT
30 APR 2009
AUCKLAND

Statutory Declaration in support of the application:

I (full name) JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT of (full address) 26 LITCHFIELD ROAD, PARNELL, AUCKLAND (occupation) Sole trader / Illustrator solemnly and sincerely declare that:

1. (specify particulars of irregularity in support of application) Squashed in the HIGH COURT and SEALED ON 20 APRIL 2009
2. (specify particulars of the ground on which the application is made and sufficient information to inform the Court of the matters relied on in support of the application) *(see Note 3 overleaf)* Attached copies of documents
3. In the event that the Court orders service of a reminder notice on me- *(*Delete if inapplicable)*
**I will accept service by post at: (full address) (see Note 4 overleaf)* 26 LITCHFIELD RD, PARNELL, AUCKLAND
**There is no suitable address at which I might accept service by post but I will accept personal service at: (full address)*

AND I MAKE this declaration conscientiously believing the same to be true and by virtue of the Oaths and Declarations Act 1957.
(see Note 5 overleaf) (Defendant)
Declared at AUCKLAND this 30TH day of APRIL 20 2009
before me
(Registrar, Justice of the Peace, Solicitor, or other person authorised to take statutory declarations)

Office use only: Application entered: Case updated:

APPLICANT'S COPY

By 1 pm 30 April 2009, the District Court was still not aware that this Centreline Infringement had been quashed by the HIGH COURT ten days earlier on 20 April 2009 so I filled in this Form 57 to have it removed. By 5pm the High Court seal had arrived.

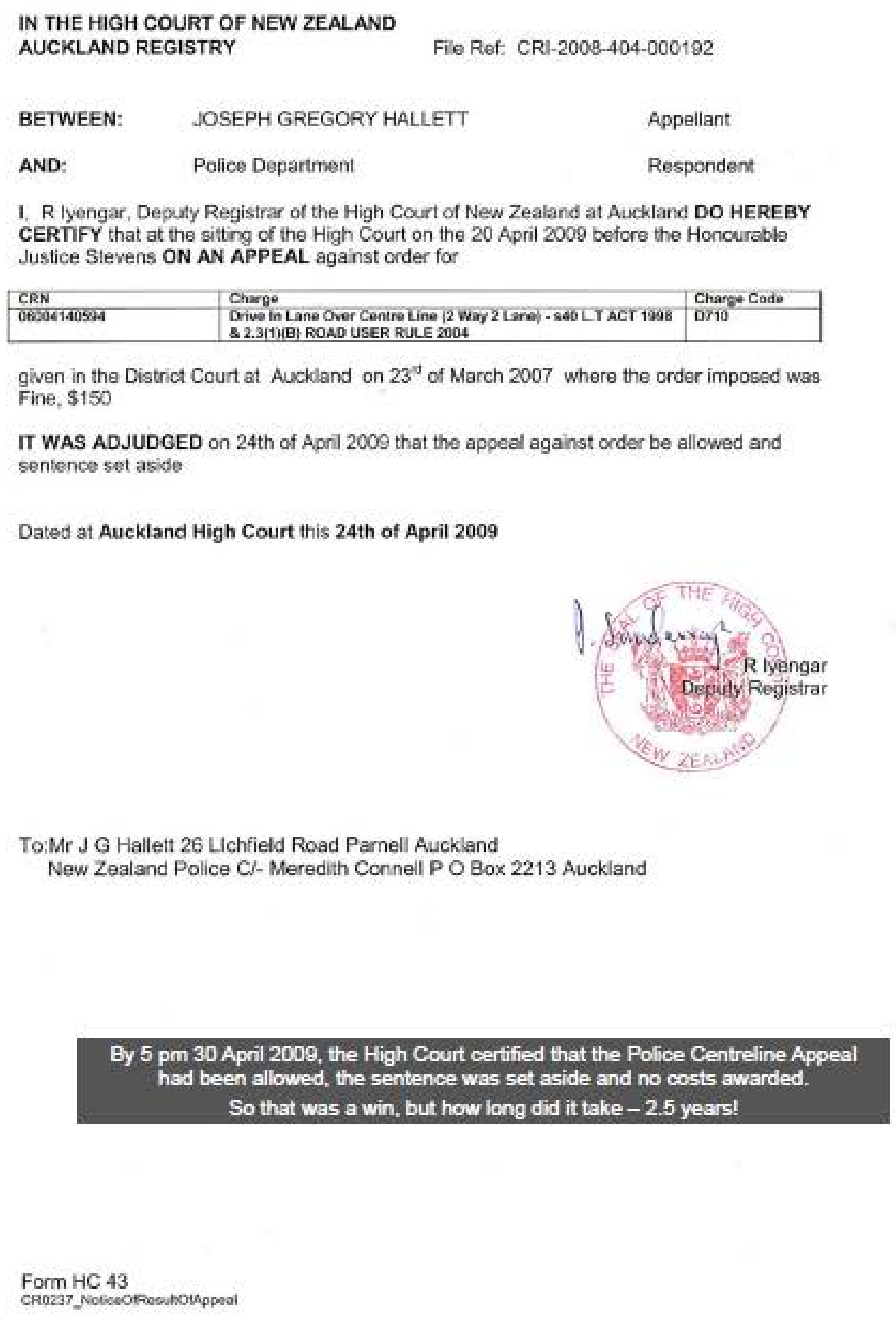

IN THE HIGH COURT OF NEW ZEALAND
AUCKLAND REGISTRY File Ref: CRI-2008-404-000192

BETWEEN: JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT Appellant

AND: Police Department Respondent

I, R Iyengar, Deputy Registrar of the High Court of New Zealand at Auckland **DO HEREBY CERTIFY** that at the sitting of the High Court on the 20 April 2009 before the Honourable Justice Stevens **ON AN APPEAL** against order for

CRN	Charge	Charge Code
06004140594	Drive In Lane Over Centre Line (2 Way 2 Lane) - s40 L.T ACT 1998 & 2.3(1)(B) ROAD USER RULE 2004	D710

given in the District Court at Auckland on 23rd of March 2007 where the order imposed was Fine, $150

IT WAS ADJUDGED on 24th of April 2009 that the appeal against order be allowed and sentence set aside

Dated at **Auckland High Court** this **24th of April 2009**

R Iyengar
Deputy Registrar

To:Mr J G Hallett 26 Llchfield Road Parnell Auckland
New Zealand Police C/- Meredith Connell P O Box 2213 Auckland

Form HC 43
CR0237_NoticeOfResultOfAppeal

By 5 pm 30 April 2009, the High Court certified that the Police Centreline Appeal had been allowed, the sentence was set aside and no costs awarded.
So that was a win, but how long did it take – 2.5 years!

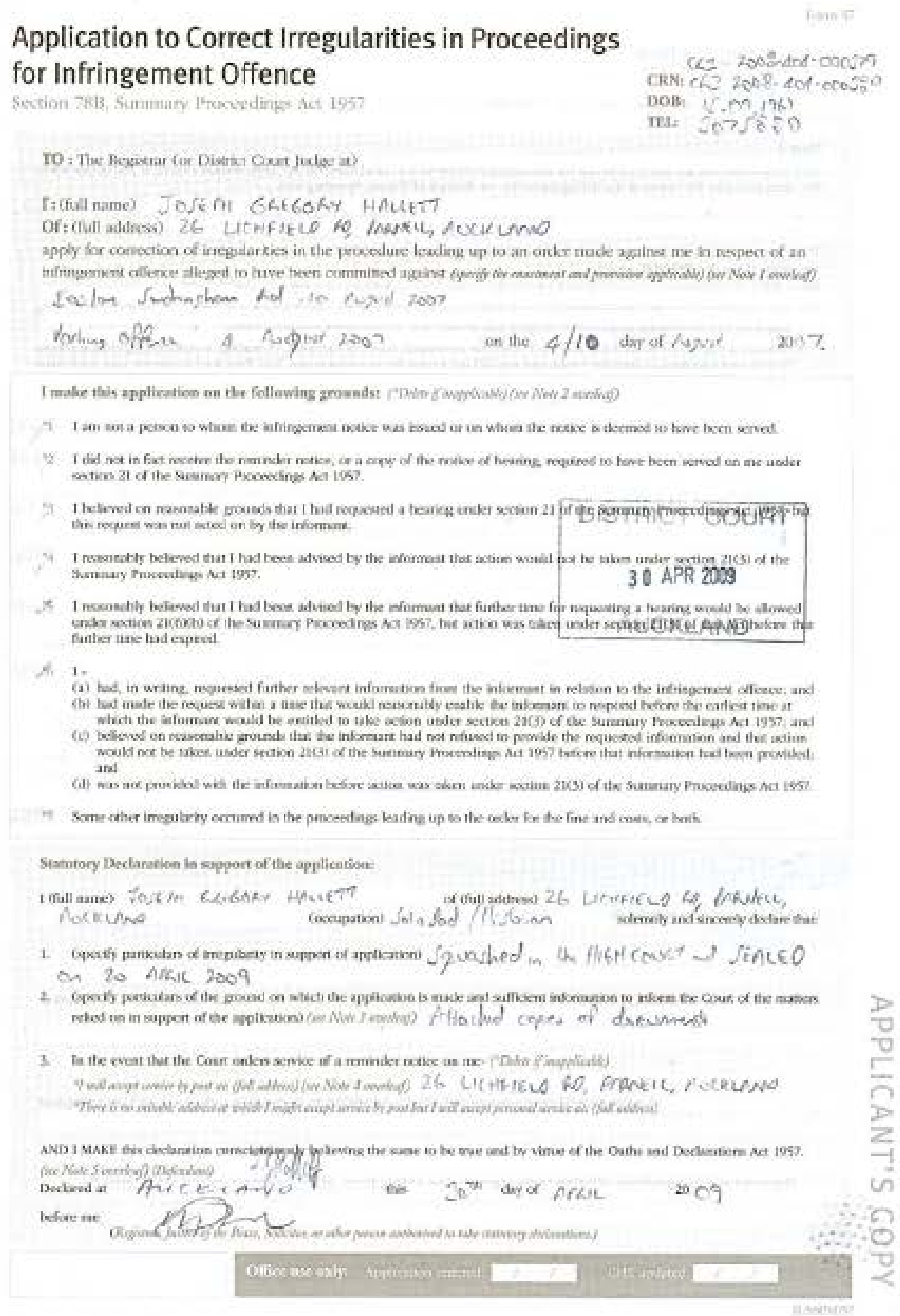

Form 87

Application to Correct Irregularities in Proceedings for Infringement Offence

Section 78B, Summary Proceedings Act 1957

CRI 2008-404-000179
CRN: CRI 2008-404-000250
DOB: [illegible]
TEL: 3075850

TO : The Registrar (or District Court Judge at)

I : (full name) JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
Of : (full address) 26 LICHFIELD RD PARNELL, AUCKLAND
apply for correction of irregularities in the procedure leading up to an order made against me in respect of an infringement offence alleged to have been committed against *(specify the enactment and provision applicable) (see Note 1 overleaf)*
Section [illegible] Act 10 August 2007
Parking Officer 4 August 2007 on the 4/10 day of August 2007.

I make this application on the following grounds: *(*Delete if inapplicable) (see Note 2 overleaf)*

*1 I am not a person to whom the infringement notice was issued or on whom the notice is deemed to have been served.

*2 I did not in fact receive the reminder notice, or a copy of the notice of hearing, required to have been served on me under section 21 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

*3 I believed on reasonable grounds that I had requested a hearing under section 21 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 but this request was not acted on by the informant.

*4 I reasonably believed that I had been advised by the informant that action would not be taken under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

*5 I reasonably believed that I had been advised by the informant that further time for requesting a hearing would be allowed under section 21(6)(b) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957, but action was taken under section 21(3) of that Act before the further time had expired.

DISTRICT COURT
30 APR 2009
AUCKLAND

*6 I -
(a) had, in writing, requested further relevant information from the informant in relation to the infringement offence; and
(b) had made the request within a time that would reasonably enable the informant to respond before the earliest time at which the informant would be entitled to take action under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957; and
(c) believed on reasonable grounds that the informant had not refused to provide the requested information and that action would not be taken under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 before that information had been provided; and
(d) was not provided with the information before action was taken under section 21(3) of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957.

*7 Some other irregularity occurred in the proceedings leading up to the order for the fine and costs, or both.

Statutory Declaration in support of the application:

I (full name) JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT of (full address) 26 LICHFIELD RD, PARNELL, AUCKLAND (occupation) [illegible] solemnly and sincerely declare that:

1. (specify particulars of irregularity in support of application) Squashed in the HIGH COURT and SEALED on 20 APRIL 2009
2. (specify particulars of the ground on which the application is made and sufficient information to inform the Court of the matters relied on in support of the application) *(see Note 3 overleaf)* Attached copies of documents
3. In the event that the Court orders service of a reminder notice on me: *(*Delete if inapplicable)*
**I will accept service by post at: (full address) (see Note 4 overleaf)* 26 LICHFIELD RD, PARNELL, AUCKLAND
**There is no suitable address at which I might accept service by post but I will accept personal service at: (full address)*

AND I MAKE this declaration conscientiously believing the same to be true and by virtue of the Oaths and Declarations Act 1957.
(see Note 5 overleaf) (Defendant)
Declared at AUCKLAND this 30th day of APRIL 2009
before me:
(Registrar, Justice of the Peace, Solicitor or other person authorised to take statutory declarations)

Office use only: Application entered / / CMS updated / /

APPLICANT'S COPY

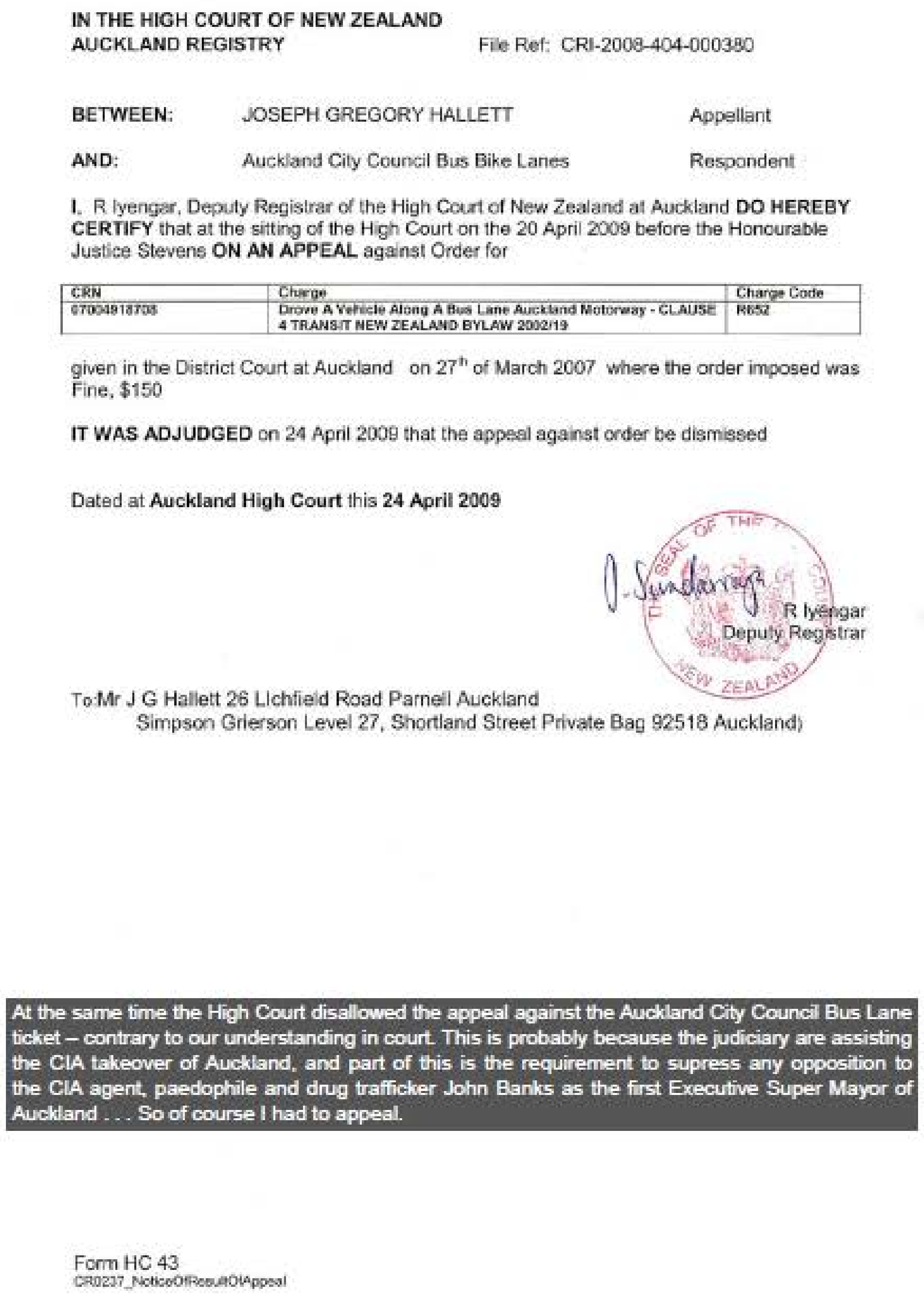

IN THE HIGH COURT OF NEW ZEALAND
AUCKLAND REGISTRY File Ref: CRI-2008-404-000380

BETWEEN: JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT Appellant

AND: Auckland City Council Bus Bike Lanes Respondent

I, R Iyengar, Deputy Registrar of the High Court of New Zealand at Auckland **DO HEREBY CERTIFY** that at the sitting of the High Court on the 20 April 2009 before the Honourable Justice Stevens **ON AN APPEAL** against Order for

CRN	Charge	Charge Code
07004918708	Drove A Vehicle Along A Bus Lane Auckland Motorway - CLAUSE 4 TRANSIT NEW ZEALAND BYLAW 2002/19	R652

given in the District Court at Auckland on 27th of March 2007 where the order imposed was Fine, $150

IT WAS ADJUDGED on 24 April 2009 that the appeal against order be dismissed

Dated at **Auckland High Court** this **24 April 2009**

R Iyengar
Deputy Registrar

To:Mr J G Hallett 26 Lichfield Road Parnell Auckland
Simpson Grierson Level 27, Shortland Street Private Bag 92518 Auckland)

At the same time the High Court disallowed the appeal against the Auckland City Council Bus Lane ticket – contrary to our understanding in court. This is probably because the judiciary are assisting the CIA takeover of Auckland, and part of this is the requirement to supress any opposition to the CIA agent, paedophile and drug trafficker John Banks as the first Executive Super Mayor of Auckland . . . So of course I had to appeal.

Form HC 43
CR0237_NoticeOfResultOfAppeal

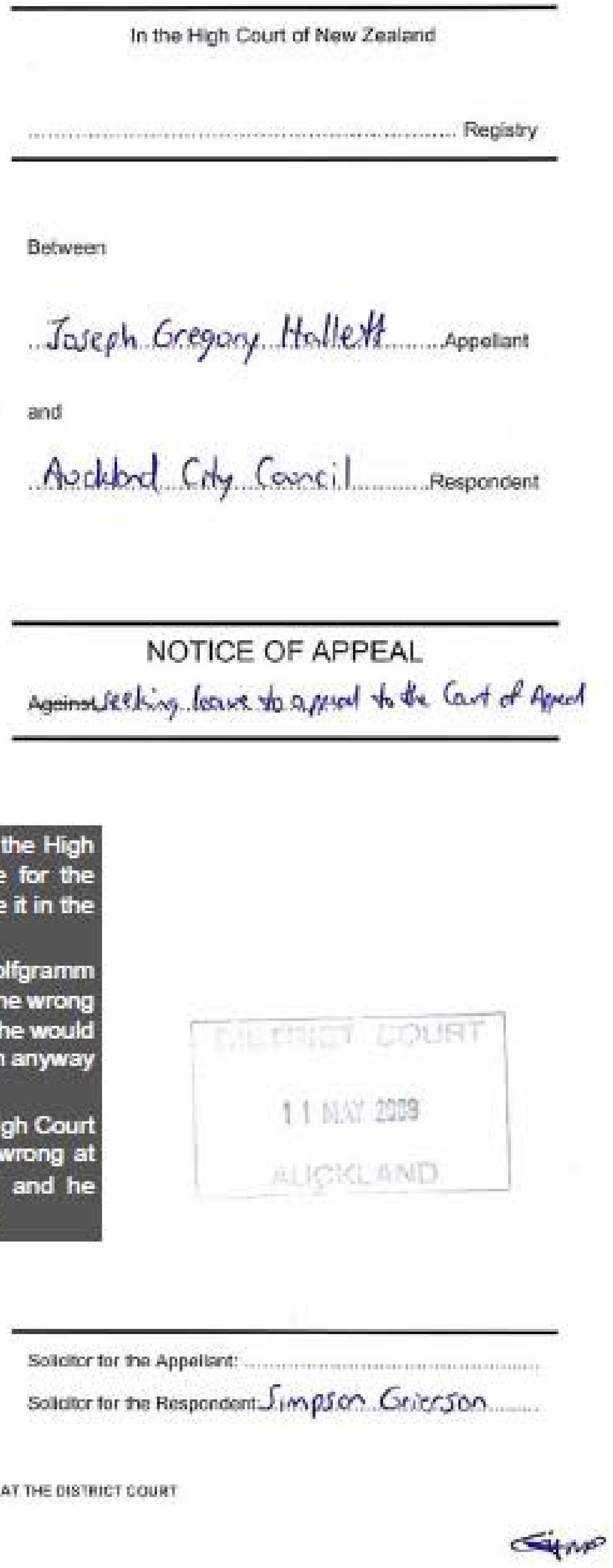

In the High Court of New Zealand

.... Registry

Between

Joseph Gregory Hallett.........Appellant

and

Auckland City Council..........Respondent

NOTICE OF APPEAL

~~Against~~ seeking leave to appeal to the Court of Appeal

This is the form the Deputy Registrar of the High Court Raj Iyengar gave to me to lodge for the Court of Appeal, with instructions to lodge it in the District Court.

I did so, then the District Court's Sam Wolfgramm informed me on 14 May 2009 that it was the wrong form and lodged in the wrong place, but she would send it to the Court of Appeal in Wellington anyway and see if they rejected it.

I remember a lawyer telling me that the High Court is full of devious shits who will put you wrong at every turn. I replied: "An occult mafia" and he responded: "No. That's the Law Society".

DISTRICT COURT
11 MAY 2009
AUCKLAND

Solicitor for the Appellant: ....

Solicitor for the Respondent: Simpson Grierson.........

MUST BE LODGED AT THE DISTRICT COURT

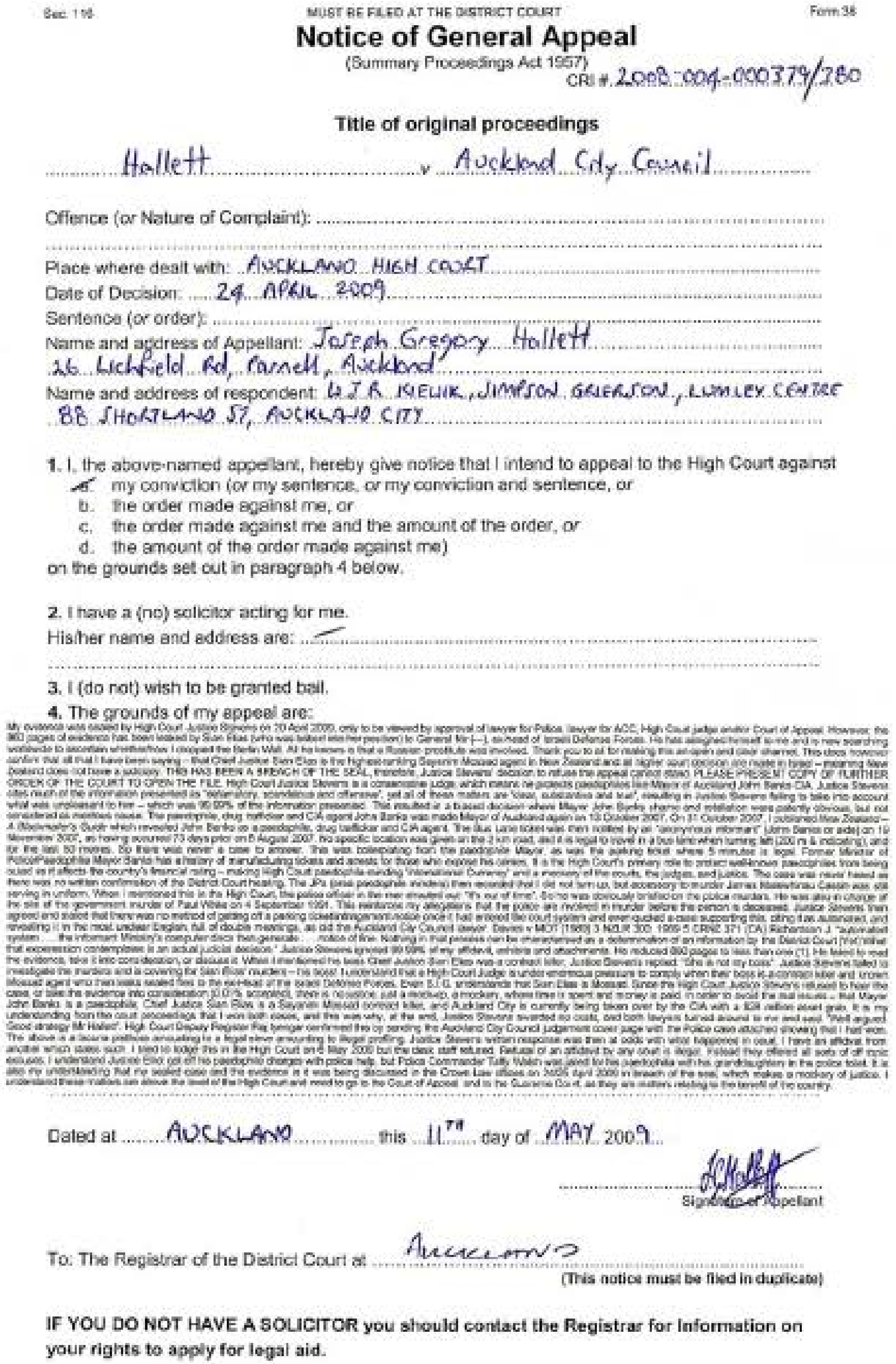

Sec. 116 MUST BE FILED AT THE DISTRICT COURT Form 38

Notice of General Appeal

(Summary Proceedings Act 1957)

CRI #. 2008-004-000379/280

Title of original proceedings

Hallett v Auckland City Council

Offence (or Nature of Complaint): ....

Place where dealt with: AUCKLAND HIGH COURT
Date of Decision: 24 APRIL 2009
Sentence (or order): ....
Name and address of Appellant: Joseph Gregory Hallett
26 Lichfield Rd, Parnell, Auckland
Name and address of respondent: W.J.R. KREUK, SIMPSON GRIERSON, LUMLEY CENTRE
88 SHORTLAND ST, AUCKLAND CITY

1. I, the above-named appellant, hereby give notice that I intend to appeal to the High Court against
   - a. my conviction (or my sentence, or my conviction and sentence, or
   - b. the order made against me, or
   - c. the order made against me and the amount of the order, *or*
   - d. the amount of the order made against me)

on the grounds set out in paragraph 4 below.

2. I have a (no) solicitor acting for me.
His/her name and address are: ....

3. I (do not) wish to be granted bail.

4. The grounds of my appeal are:

Dated at AUCKLAND this 11th day of MAY 2009

J G Hallett
Signature of Appellant

To: The Registrar of the District Court at Auckland
(This notice must be filed in duplicate)

IF YOU DO NOT HAVE A SOLICITOR you should contact the Registrar for information on your rights to apply for legal aid.

MP

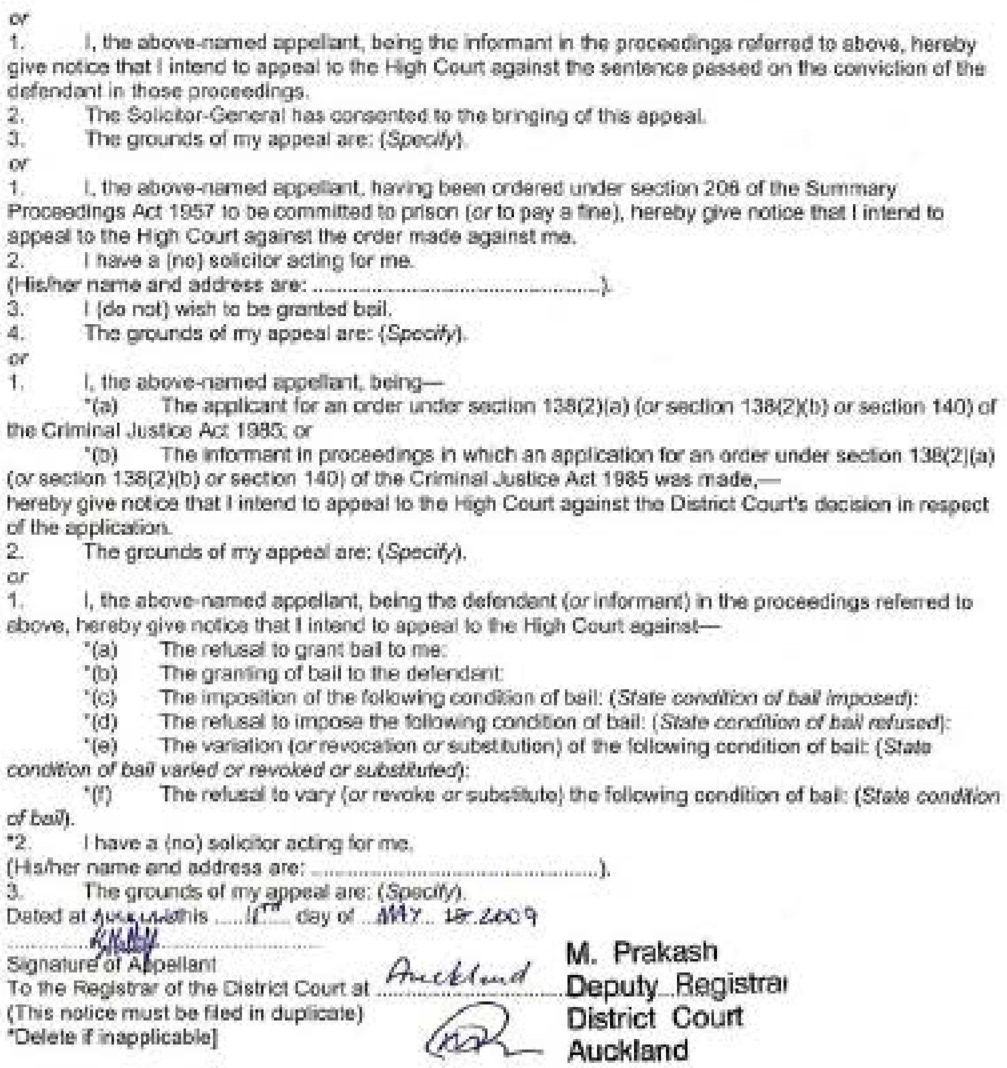

or
1. I, the above-named appellant, being the informant in the proceedings referred to above, hereby give notice that I intend to appeal to the High Court against the sentence passed on the conviction of the defendant in those proceedings.
2. The Solicitor-General has consented to the bringing of this appeal.
3. The grounds of my appeal are: (*Specify*).

or
1. I, the above-named appellant, having been ordered under section 206 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 to be committed to prison (*or* to pay a fine), hereby give notice that I intend to appeal to the High Court against the order made against me.
2. I have a (no) solicitor acting for me.
(His/her name and address are: ....).
3. I (do not) wish to be granted bail.
4. The grounds of my appeal are: (*Specify*).

or
1. I, the above-named appellant, being—
   *(a) The applicant for an order under section 138(2)(a) (*or* section 138(2)(b) *or* section 140) of the Criminal Justice Act 1985; *or*
   *(b) The informant in proceedings in which an application for an order under section 138(2)(a) (*or* section 138(2)(b) *or* section 140) of the Criminal Justice Act 1985 was made,—

hereby give notice that I intend to appeal to the High Court against the District Court's decision in respect of the application.
2. The grounds of my appeal are: (*Specify*).

or
1. I, the above-named appellant, being the defendant (*or* informant) in the proceedings referred to above, hereby give notice that I intend to appeal to the High Court against—
   *(a) The refusal to grant bail to me:
   *(b) The granting of bail to the defendant:
   *(c) The imposition of the following condition of bail: (*State condition of bail imposed*):
   *(d) The refusal to impose the following condition of bail: (*State condition of bail refused*):
   *(e) The variation (*or* revocation *or* substitution) of the following condition of bail: (*State condition of bail varied or revoked or substituted*):
   *(f) The refusal to vary (*or* revoke *or* substitute) the following condition of bail: (*State condition of bail*).

*2. I have a (no) solicitor acting for me.
(His/her name and address are: ....).
3. The grounds of my appeal are: (*Specify*).

Dated at Auckland this 11th day of MAY 2009

J G Hallett
Signature of Appellant
To the Registrar of the District Court at Auckland
(This notice must be filed in duplicate)
*Delete if inapplicable]

M. Prakash
Deputy Registrar
District Court
Auckland

This APPEAL TO THE COURT OF APPEAL
(headed as NOTICE OF GENERAL APPEAL)
was lodged in the Auckland District Court on 11 May 2009
in 10 point lettering for the courts and 6 point lettering for the lawyers.
So here's how it read . . .

MP

Appeal to the Court of Appeal, 11 May 2009

My evidence was sealed by High Court Justice Stevens on 20 April 2009, **only to be viewed by approval of lawyer for Police, lawyer for ACC, High Court judge and/or Court of Appeal**. However, the 860 pages of evidence has been leaked by Sian Elias (who was bribed into her position) to **General Nir (****), ex-head of Israeli Defense Forces.**

He has assigned himself to me and is now searching worldwide to ascertain whether/ how I dropped the **Berlin Wall**. All he knows is that a **Russian prostitute** was involved. **Thank you to all for making this an open and clear channel.**

This does however confirm that all that I have been saying – that **Chief Justice Sian Elias is the highest-ranking Sayanim Mossad agent in New Zealand** and **all higher court decisions are made in Israel** – meaning New Zealand does not have a judiciary.

THIS HAS BEEN A **BREACH OF THE SEAL**, therefore, Justice Stevens' decision to refuse the appeal cannot stand. PLEASE PRESENT COPY OF FURTHER ORDER OF THE COURT TO OPEN THE FILE.

High Court Justice Stevens is a conservative judge, which means he protects paedophiles like Mayor of Auckland John Banks CIA. Justice Stevens cites much of the information presented as **"defamatory, scandalous and offensive"**, yet all of these matters are **"clear, substantive and true"**, resulting in Justice Stevens failing to take into account what was unpleasant to him – which was 99.99 % of the information presented.

This resulted in a biased decision where Mayor John Banks shame and retaliation were patently obvious, but not considered as meritous cause. The paedophile, drug trafficker and CIA agent John Banks was made Mayor of Auckland again on 13 October 2007. On 31 October 2007, I published *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide* which revealed John Banks as a paedophile, drug trafficker and CIA agent. The Bus Lane ticket was then notified by an "anonymous informant" (John Banks or aide) on 19 November 2007, as having occurred 73 days prior on 8 August 2007.

No specific location was given on the 2 km road, and it is legal to travel in a bus lane when turning left (200 m & indicating), and for the last 60 metres. So there was never a case to answer. This was boiler-plating from the paedophile Mayor, as was the parking ticket where 5 minutes is legal.

Former Minister of Police/ Paedophilia Mayor Banks has a history of manufacturing tickets and arrests for those who expose his crimes. It is the High Court's primary role to protect well-known paedophiles from being outed as it affects the country's financial rating – making **High Court paedophile-minding 'International Currency'** and a mockery of the courts, the judges, and justice.

The case was never heard as there was no written confirmation of the District Court hearing. The JPs (area paedophile minders) then recorded that I did not turn up, but accessory to attempted murder (on me) James Matewhinau Cassin was still serving in uniform.

When I mentioned this in the High Court, the police officer in the rear shouted out: **"It's out of time"**. So he was obviously briefed on the police murders. He was also in charge of the site of the government murder of Paul White on 4 September 1991.

This reinforces my allegations that the police are involved in murder before the person is deceased.

Justice Stevens then agreed and stated that there was no method of getting off a parking ticket/ infringement notice once it had entered the court system and even quoted a case supporting this, citing it as automated, and revealing it in the most unclear English, full of double meanings, as did the Auckland City Council lawyer.

Davies v MOT [1989] 3 NZLR 300; 1989 5 CRNZ 371 (CA) Richardson J: "automated system . . . the informant Ministry's computer discs then generate . . . notice of fine. Nothing in that process can be characterised as a determination of an information by the District Court [Yet] What that expression contemplates is an actual judicial decision."

Justice Stevens ignored 99.99 % of my affidavit, exhibits and attachments. He reduced 860 pages to less than one (1). He failed to read the evidence, take it into consideration, or discuss it. When I mentioned his boss Chief Justice Sian Elias was a contract killer, Justice Stevens replied: **"She is not my boss".**

Justice Stevens failed to investigate the murders and is covering for Sian Elias' murders – his boss!

I understand that a High Court Judge is under enormous pressure to comply when their boss is a contract killer and known Mossad agent who then leaks sealed files to the ex-Head of the Israeli Defense Forces. **Even S.I.G. understands that Sian Elias is Mossad.**

Since the High Court Justice Stevens refused to hear the case, or take the evidence into consideration (0.01% accepted), there is no justice, just a mock-up, a mockery, where time is spent and money is paid, in order to avoid the real issues – that **Mayor John Banks is a paedophile, Chief Justice Sian Elias is a Sayanim Mossad contract killer, and Auckland City is currently being taken over by the CIA with a $28 billion asset grab.**

It is my understanding from the court proceedings that I won both cases, and this was why, at the end, Justice Stevens awarded no costs, and both lawyers turned around to me and said: "Well argued. Good strategy Mr Hallett".

High Court Deputy Registar Raj Iyengar confirmed this by sending the Auckland City Council judgement cover page with the Police case attached showing that I had won.

The above is a lacuna plethora
amounting to a legal sieve
amounting to illegal profiling.

Justice Stevens written response was then at odds with what happened in court. I have an affidavit from another which states such. I tried to lodge this in the High Court on 6 May 2009 but the desk staff refused. Refusal of an affidavit by any court is illegal. Instead they offered all sorts of off-topic excuses.

I understand Justice Elliot got off his paedophile charges with police help, but Police Commander Taffy Walsh was jailed for his paedophilia with his granddaughters in the police toilet.

It is also my understanding that my sealed case and the evidence in it was being discussed in the Crown Law offices on 24/25 April 2009 in breach of the seal, which makes a mockery of justice.

I understand these matters are above the level of the High Court and need to go to the Court of Appeal, and to the Supreme Court, as they are matters relating to the benefit of the country.

Synchronicity

There were then a series of events soon after the High Court hearing which showed that what I had been saying was true.

On **30 April 2009**, THATRADIO.com in Canada had **Forensic Historian** Dr Stefan Grossmann of Germany reviewing my book *Hitler Was A British Agent* . . .

Lenny Bloom: "Let's play *Hitler Was A British Agent*. It's Dr Stefan Grossmann has written and done the forensic back-up on the book and has now done the necessary forensic legal back-up . . . This interesting and informative historical update is by one of the top historians worldwide, Dr Stefan Grossmann who is really a Forensic Historian . . . We're going to be talking about your review of Greg Hallett's book *Hitler Was A British Agent*."

Dr Stefan Grossmann: "History is bunk, so what we really want to look at is not history, but the history of history, that shows how history has been forged. And when we do that, we get glimpses of what history really is."

Lenny Bloom: "Exactly. There's a great quote in the preface to the *Hitler Was A British Agent* book by Greg Hallett and he quotes Churchill, then Hitler and then the Tavistock military Psy-Ops War School training manual. And basically the quote is: 'In wartime, the truth is so precious, that she should always be attended by a bodyguard of lies' . . . Why don't you talk to us a little bit about your findings and eventually where people can get the paper that you've written on this book."

Forensic Historian Dr Stefan Grossmann: "Yes. I was in touch with Greg Hallett. Of course we've done interviews with him before. But one of the things, we always had the idea to translate this wonderful book into German for the German people . . . the German mentality . . . the layout and the documentation . . . a bit more like the standard run-of-the-mill Hitler biography. That means footnotes showing documentation . . . this person said that there, putting in more of the traditional academic method . . . providing with documentation and back-up . . . And so I have the question for myself . . . the findings that Greg and The Spymaster present . . . Can they be documented by a parallel method using this traditional academic method of writing history and documenting history? And to my surprise Lenny, I found 'Yes! This is possible!

The traditional academic mainstream historians – these history professors who present so-called Hitler biography to us, they have actually breached their method in order to twist and contort Hitler biography to give us a distorted version of Hitler – a Hitler cliché – a Hitler cartoon which shows maybe 20 or 30 per cent of the truth, and withholds maybe 80 or 70 per cent of the truth.

"So what I found first of all was that the normal Hitler biography that people have in their bookshelves – it's a concoction created by a breach of traditional academic methods – a slight of hand basically – that's what the traditional Hitler biography is. So if some reviewers write that Greg Hallett and The Spymaster and the book *Hitler Was A British Agent* does not accord and conform with academic writing of history – that's wrong. This book they have written, and the findings there that 'Hitler was a Rothschild', that 'Hitler was a British agent', that 'Hitler was acting for Zionist International banking interests' – that is very well documented by academic history itself. That's what I have put together with my 42 pages of [review] notes and writings.

"Hitler didn't just happen by accident. Hitler was planed. Hitler was financed, and Hitler was an asset who was run, controlled and financed, like an investment banking project on the huge scale. The evidentiary situation shows that Hitler was not acting alone . . . that he was part of a concerted group, and that group was acting under a plan in the interests of high finance."

Lenny Bloom: "People will naturally think: 'Oh, that's just hate literature, and that's what's keeping the truth from coming out', because people can't see that there's different branches . . . Historians now are finding, like yourself, and Eric Phelps, is that bascially . . . to find incentives for the war manufacturers, and the war profitteers to put together enough hatred to launch enough warfare so . . . northeastern Europe would be genocided.

Forensic Historian Dr Stefan Grossmann: "Yes".

Lenny Bloom: "Which ultimately gave rise to Hitler . . ."

Hitler is now the model for all political appointments.

This was a favourable review, so I added a comment at the bottom:

"Good interview guys. It was great to see that Stefan Grossmann's two years of investigation into *Hitler Was A British Agent* found it to be true. Now that you know that we are telling the truth (from New Zealand/ not Australia), what if we told you how a bunch of larikans dropped the Berlin Wall – while on holiday no less."

Posted by Greg Hallett, May 5, 2009 - 3:42 am. (**11 pm, 4 May 2009**).

Montecito Fires (5–13 May 2009)

I was skyping a co-producer in **Montecito**, California negotiating the stage rights to the follow-up book, *How to Take Over the World, A Right Royal Con* on **3/4 May 2009 (8.30–1.30 am)** and 5/6 May (6.30–12pm).

24 hours after the first call ended fires started in the Montecito Cathedral Park area, at **1.45 pm 5 May 2009** with 150 acres burnt and 80 fire fighters on the scene. Then the suburb got smoked over, helicopters were flying over their house, and 8,000 people were evacuated . . . So negotiations were disrupted and they had to move house, permanently . . . Eventually around 8,800 acres burnt, 80 homes were destroyed, with US$17 million in damages.

This all links in with **Attachment "U"**, 'Who the Blazes is John Howard? We know he was a Jew, but was another Jew also behind the Montecito fires? (Cause Tip line: 805-686-5074).

This skype call had gone straight to **General Nir** (ex-Head of IDF, Israeli Defense Forces) to investigate my claims about the fall of the Berlin Wall and to see what sort of character I was. He got 8 hours of bobble-head viewing, then nominated himself as in charge of Subject: "**GREG HALLETT/ BERLIN WALL**" . . . all they know is that a Russian prostitute was involved.

Intelligence Overreactions – the preservation of Counter-Intelligence

Such overreactions by Intelligence (the preservation of counter-intelligence) are not unknown. In *The Big Breach*,[1] chapter 15, 'Sinister Circles', Richard Tomlinson describes how he was detained by the INS under instructions of the CIA at JFK Airport on Sunday 30 August 1998. He was due to catch the scheduled Swissair flight SR-111 on 2 September 1998 from JFK to Cointrin International Airport in Geneva, Switzerland. This was known as the 'UN shuttle' due to its popularity with United Nations officials, business executives, scientists and researchers. That plane crashed into the Atlantic Ocean at 9.40 p.m. southwest of Halifax International Airport, 8 kilometres from shore. It killed all 229 passengers and crew and had the highest death toll of any aviation accident involving a McDonnell Douglas MD-11, ever. The recovery involved the military and was one of the longest and most expensive in the world taking five (5) years and costing US$48.5 million.

The crash was blamed on flammable materials in the cockpit rear wall spreading extremely rapidly to the control systems causing all lights in the cockpit to go out. This rendered the pilots flying manually, in a blackouted cockpit, and when the plane struck water at 560 km/h, it was almost upside down.

---

[1] *The Big Breach, From Top Secret to Maximum Security, Inside the Secret World of MI6*, Richard Tomlinson, pp. 295–99.

The fire was so quick that even if the plane had descended to land immediately (5 minutes), the entire interior of the fuselage would have been burnt out and all passengers and crew dead.

The real cause was luggage placed in the front baggage hold containing a high heat incendiary device. This was set off by remote (probably in Halifax). It had been placed there by the CIA and/or MI6 amongst art. It was designed to spread rapidly to the control systems, smoke out, poison, then burn out the flight crew, then burn out the passengers, off all control lights, and render the plane impossible to fly (it crashed upside down) so that no reports could be given, and no landing was possible.

It was fire by design. If the flames spread any quicker,
the front baggage hold incendiary device would have been considered a bomb.

It is not untypical of the CIA to overreact. The person behind the CIA is George H. W. Bush. Both Bushes are known for overreacting, as are all of Israel's military leaders. Spymaster: "MI6 are more likely to have taken the aircraft down. Generally, the Intelligence agencies happily swop fatal tasks with other agencies like the CIA and Mossad."

Spymaster: "This is what we got soon after. 'Indenciary device activated by remote control in baggage hold. Well known MI-6 technique. Aircrew poisoned by fumes. Rumoured to contain art. Company owner bankrupted within the year. Hallmark of MI-6 Ops in Schweize'."

Stage Rights go up in flames and future books watered down

So when I had ten hours of conferences with Montecito, California, where many of the Hollywood working elite live, and the suburb then burnt down, with 80 homes destroyed, 8,000 people evacuated, 8,800 acres burnt, and US$13 million in damages . . . this is not untypical of a CIA overreaction. It was only the two-year stage rights for one book. I haven't heard a peep since.

So, what, did I get *How to Take Over the World, A Right Royal Con* ultimately correct? Is such a CIA over-reaction not confirmation that:

> The British Royal Family are illegitimate and a subset of the Rothschilds; their illegimate fathers being Nathan Mayer Rothschild and Lionel Nathan Rothschild; Queen Victoria also being the child of Nathan Mayer Rothschild; Prince consort Albert being the son of a 14½ year old stable boy Alex Hanstein; King Edward VII being the son and grandson of Nathan Mayer Rothschild; and Winston Churchill being the son of King Edward VII, second cousin to Stalin and first cousin to Adolf Hitler's father.

I'm still here, and Richard Tomlinson is still there. Strangely we're about the same age and grew up, some of the time, within an hour of each other. There must have been something in the water. We now know that the Waikato River is radioactive, but it wasn't supposed to be then.

Then my house flooded on 8-10.30 am 8 May 2009 (1-3.30 pm 7 May 2009, Pacific Daylight Time) which rendered disruption and expense. The pipe into the hot water cyclinder came away. This can be achieved by an electricity spike, which is what had ruined one of my 1 terabyte harddrive back ups on 30 April 2009, rendering it useless for seven weeks, until finally replaced on 4 June.

Then on 12 May 2009, the former sex worker Christine Rankin was appointed Commissioner of the Families Commisson. Christine's primary career move was being the S&M dominatrix for Sir Geoffrey Palmer[2] – Attorney General (1984–89) and short time Prime Minister (1989–90) when he was covering for the police paedophile ring at Banks Road in Christchurch.

---

[2] *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide*, October 2007, pp. 126–29, 154.

With this knowledge, the failed-multiple-times Christine Rankin can demand any position she wants. The public demanded they didn't want her, so she was left without a position, but gets paid $500 for every hour she turns up – the same as her S&M fee.

No doubt Sir Geoffrey had his people argue some of this.

Christine Rankin is always a preferred news distraction as opinions of her are always so divisive. With this knowledge, Christine Rankin is appointed to positions she is told she wants, when she wants them. In this case, she was acting as a distraction for the CIA takeover of Auckland. When this was voted on in parliament, no MP was given any of the reports to read, so they did their best to filibuster it.

They failed, but was the first time the word 'filibuster' had been used by the media in relation to politics. So that's some small progress, but in name only.

Monica Margo McAuley (42 & Wellington's top real estate agent in 2006) introduced Christine Rankin to her husband Kim MacIntyre and they began an affair in February 2008. Six months later Margo McAuley (prone to depression and Irish) 'suicided' at Nevay Road, Miramar, Wellington on 28 October 2008. Husband MacIntyre (a National's man) did not give an eulogy at the St Mary of the Angels Catholic Church. Within the week, Kim MacIntyre and Christine Rankin were videoed dancing together on election night (8 November 2008) at the National Party's celebrations at Auckland's Sky City Grand Hotel, and sixty (60) days later they married at Mangawhai on 7 January 2009 – Christine's fourth.

This processes of shit rising to the top is not dissimiliar to other politicians. It is why so many highly paid people are incapable of doing so much over such a broad spectrum. It is why Western Society is breaking down. It is being proactively broken down by the very compromised fuckwits ruling it.

Bain Murders – NOT GUILTY after 15 years

Currently the neighbouring Bain murders in Dunedin are on retrial (6 March–4 June 2009) and it is becoming patently obvious that the police did the murders to prevent them being outed in the Bain family/ Police Paedophile Ring (PPR) in that city.

So New Zealand is still a paedophile movement fronting as a country
and will issue traffic tickets to prevent this from being known.

Good news. The jury was sequested (live together) on 4 June 2009 until they made their decision on whether or not David Bain (22) murdered his entire family on 20 June 1994. We had already ascertained that he was not capable of more than 20 seconds of extreme violence. After 15 years, the retrial jury made their decision in under 24 hours – NOT GUILTY. So the country could celebrate, which it did, and wake up the next day and realise just how corrupt the New Zealand Police are, and how complicit the New Zealand judiciary is with that corruption.

In this case, the Police and Judical collusion was all based around father Robyn Bain's incestuous paedophilia. The case was full of paedophilia from old man Bain and from the police, but the word "paedophile" was never mentioned in the entire case.

As an incestous child sex abuser, Robyn Bain had joined the Freemasons. The Freemasons (an incestous child sex abuse movement) control the police, so the police did everything they could to protect one of their own. This erroneous protection then cost the taxpayer around NZ$100 million.

I do believe it is time for the police to be replaced with a peacekeeping force (not the UN) rather than the STITCH-UP BRIGADE it is today.

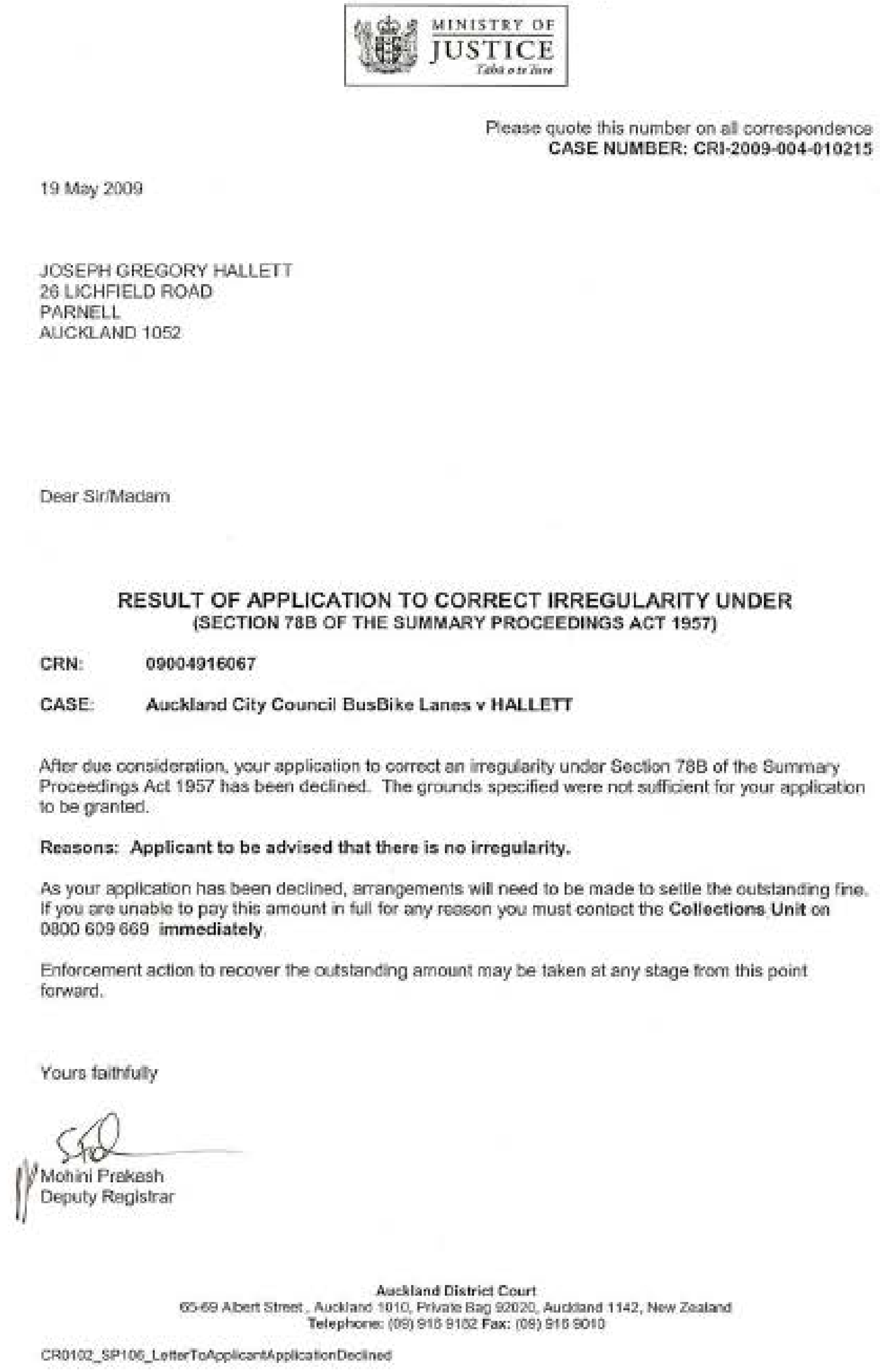

MINISTRY OF
JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

Please quote this number on all correspondence
CASE NUMBER: CRI-2009-004-010215

19 May 2009

JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
26 LICHFIELD ROAD
PARNELL
AUCKLAND 1052

Dear Sir/Madam

RESULT OF APPLICATION TO CORRECT IRREGULARITY UNDER
(SECTION 78B OF THE SUMMARY PROCEEDINGS ACT 1957)

CRN: **09004916067**

CASE: **Auckland City Council BusBike Lanes v HALLETT**

After due consideration, your application to correct an irregularity under Section 78B of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957 has been declined. The grounds specified were not sufficient for your application to be granted.

Reasons: Applicant to be advised that there is no irregularity.

As your application has been declined, arrangements will need to be made to settle the outstanding fine. If you are unable to pay this amount in full for any reason you must contact the **Collections Unit** on 0800 609 669 **immediately**.

Enforcement action to recover the outstanding amount may be taken at any stage from this point forward.

Yours faithfully

Mohini Prakash
Deputy Registrar

Auckland District Court
65-69 Albert Street , Auckland 1010, Private Bag 92020, Auckland 1142, New Zealand
Telephone: (09) 916 9182 **Fax:** (09) 916 9010

CR0102_SP106_LetterToApplicantApplicationDeclined

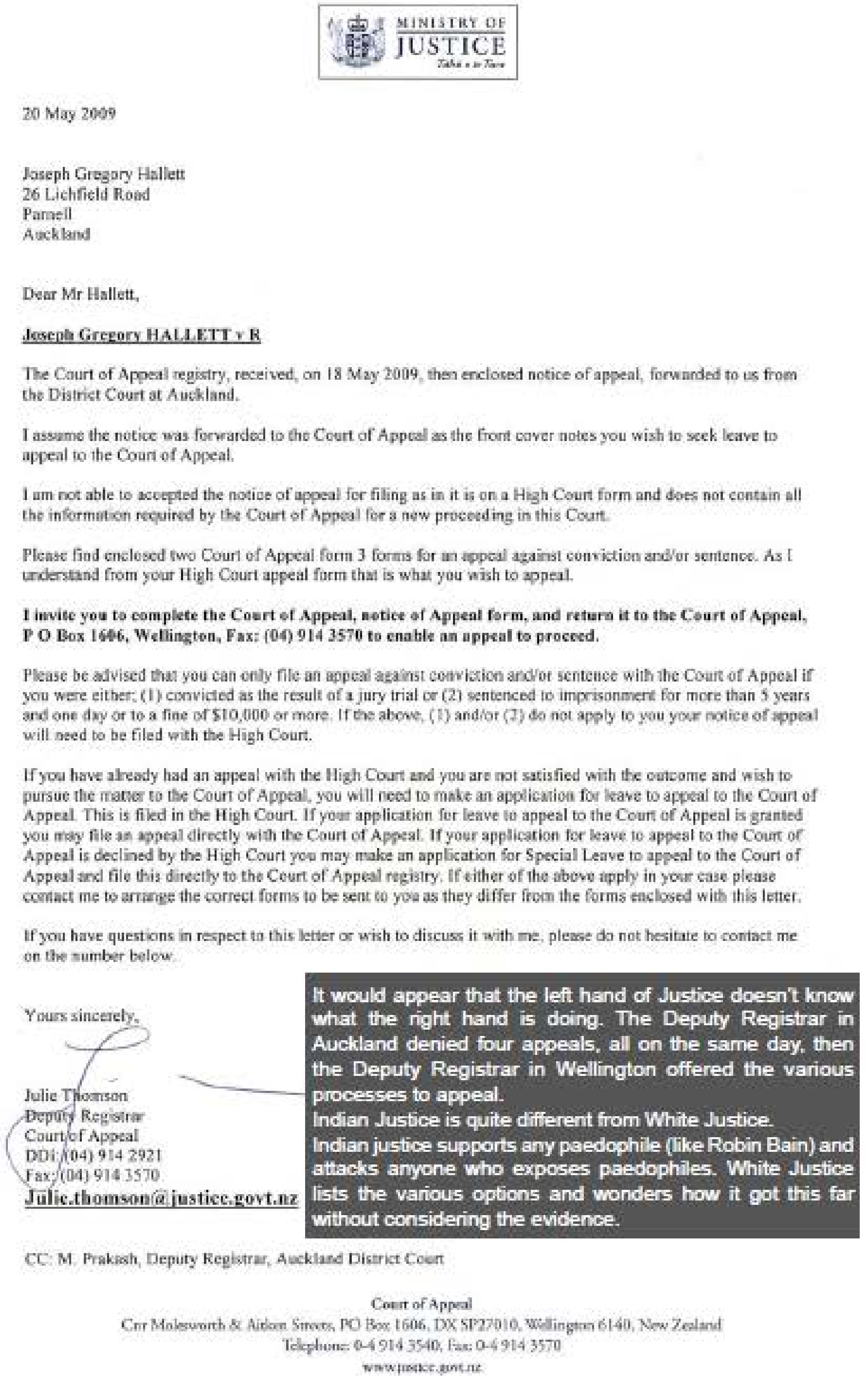

MINISTRY OF
JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

20 May 2009

Joseph Gregory Hallett
26 Lichfield Road
Parnell
Auckland

Dear Mr Hallett,

Joseph Gregory HALLETT v R

The Court of Appeal registry, received, on 18 May 2009, then enclosed notice of appeal, forwarded to us from the District Court at Auckland.

I assume the notice was forwarded to the Court of Appeal as the front cover notes you wish to seek leave to appeal to the Court of Appeal.

I am not able to accepted the notice of appeal for filing as in it is on a High Court form and does not contain all the information required by the Court of Appeal for a new proceeding in this Court.

Please find enclosed two Court of Appeal form 3 forms for an appeal against conviction and/or sentence. As I understand from your High Court appeal form that is what you wish to appeal.

I invite you to complete the Court of Appeal, notice of Appeal form, and return it to the Court of Appeal, P O Box 1606, Wellington, Fax: (04) 914 3570 to enable an appeal to proceed.

Please be advised that you can only file an appeal against conviction and/or sentence with the Court of Appeal if you were either; (1) convicted as the result of a jury trial or (2) sentenced to imprisonment for more than 5 years and one day or to a fine of $10,000 or more. If the above, (1) and/or (2) do not apply to you your notice of appeal will need to be filed with the High Court.

If you have already had an appeal with the High Court and you are not satisfied with the outcome and wish to pursue the matter to the Court of Appeal, you will need to make an application for leave to appeal to the Court of Appeal. This is filed in the High Court. If your application for leave to appeal to the Court of Appeal is granted you may file an appeal directly with the Court of Appeal. If your application for leave to appeal to the Court of Appeal is declined by the High Court you may make an application for Special Leave to appeal to the Court of Appeal and file this directly to the Court of Appeal registry. If either of the above apply in your case please contact me to arrange the correct forms to be sent to you as they differ from the forms enclosed with this letter.

If you have questions in respect to this letter or wish to discuss it with me, please do not hesitate to contact me on the number below.

Yours sincerely,

Julie Thomson
Deputy Registrar
Court of Appeal
DDI: (04) 914 2921
Fax: (04) 914 3570
Julie.thomson@justice.govt.nz

CC: M. Prakash, Deputy Registrar, Auckland District Court

Court of Appeal
Cnr Molesworth & Aitken Streets, PO Box 1606, DX SP27010, Wellington 6140, New Zealand
Telephone: 0-4 914 3540, Fax: 0-4 914 3570
www.justice.govt.nz

It would appear that the left hand of Justice doesn't know what the right hand is doing. The Deputy Registrar in Auckland denied four appeals, all on the same day, then the Deputy Registrar in Wellington offered the various processes to appeal.
Indian Justice is quite different from White Justice.
Indian justice supports any paedophile (like Robin Bain) and attacks anyone who exposes paedophiles. White Justice lists the various options and wonders how it got this far without considering the evidence.

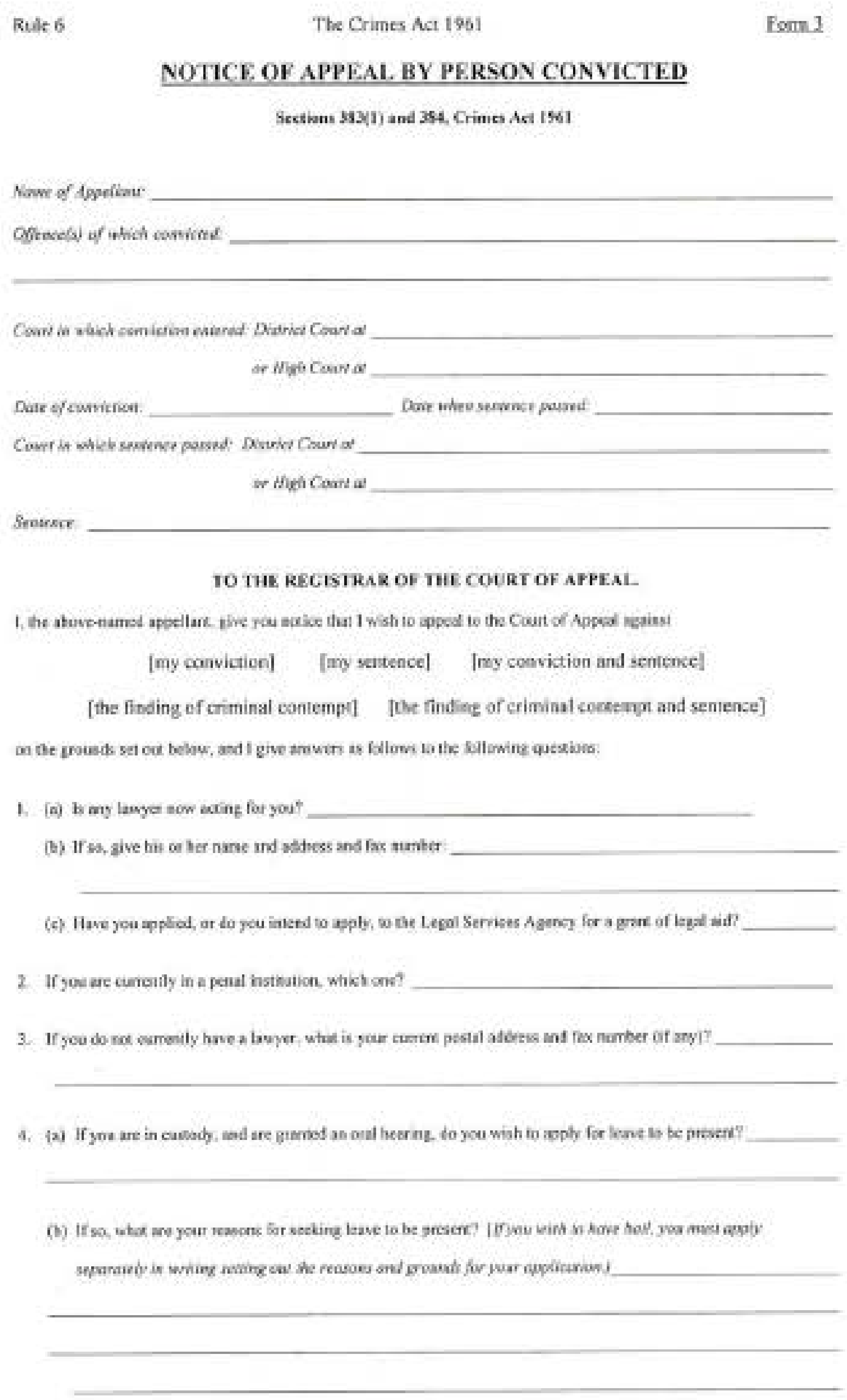

Rule 6 The Crimes Act 1961 Form 3

NOTICE OF APPEAL BY PERSON CONVICTED

Sections 383(1) and 384, Crimes Act 1961

Name of Appellant: ____________________

Offence(s) of which convicted: ____________________

Court in which conviction entered: District Court at ____________________

or High Court at ____________________

Date of conviction: ____________ *Date when sentence passed:* ____________

Court in which sentence passed: District Court at ____________________

or High Court at ____________________

Sentence: ____________________

TO THE REGISTRAR OF THE COURT OF APPEAL.

I, the above-named appellant, give you notice that I wish to appeal to the Court of Appeal against

[my conviction] [my sentence] [my conviction and sentence]

[the finding of criminal contempt] [the finding of criminal contempt and sentence]

on the grounds set out below, and I give answers as follows to the following questions:

1. (a) Is any lawyer now acting for you? ____________________
   (b) If so, give his or her name and address and fax number: ____________________
   (c) Have you applied, or do you intend to apply, to the Legal Services Agency for a grant of legal aid? ____________
2. If you are currently in a penal institution, which one? ____________________
3. If you do not currently have a lawyer, what is your current postal address and fax number (if any)? ____________
4. (a) If you are in custody, and are granted an oral hearing, do you wish to apply for leave to be present? ____________
   (b) If so, what are your reasons for seeking leave to be present? *(If you wish to have bail, you must apply separately in writing setting out the reasons and grounds for your application.)* ____________

5 June 2009
Julie Thomson
Deputy Registrar
Court of Appeal
Cnr Molesworth & Aitken, Wellington
DDi: (04) 914 2921
Julie.thomson@justice.govt.nz

Re: Appeal all outstanding tickets (4)
CRI 2009-004-010215, CRN 09004916067, CCN 1521817852, Buslane Sandringham
CRI 2008004013851, CRN 07004400778, Parnell Road, Parking Receipt
CRI 2009-004-013852, CRN 07004918708, CRN 07004400778, Buslane Khyber Pass
CRI 2009-004-010216, CRN 09004332507, CCN 1522017241, High Street parking Receipt

Julie,

I am in receipt of your letter dated 20 May 2009.

Your letter is complex and I do not fully understand it. It has many if's and buts.

I attended a High Court hearing on 20 April 2009, where, it was my understanding, and that of my associates, that I had won all the cases and no costs were awarded.

It appears that the written orders on Judge Stevens on 24 April 2009 differed from his summation in court.

My associate tried to lodge an affidavit to this effect in the High Court on 6 May 2009, but this privilege and right was denied.

I went to the High Court to seek leave to appeal and was given forms especially selected and combined by Deputy Registrar Raj Iyengar.

Based on these wrong forms, the appeal was rejected by the Ministry of Justice, Auckland on 19 May 2009, as signed by Deputy Registrar Mohini Prakash.

The following day, 20 May 2009, I received a letter from you outlining that these forms were incorrect, you being Julie Thomson, Deputy Registrar, Ministry of Justice, Wellington.

It seems that the Ministry of Justice in Auckland and Wellington disagree.

It would also appear that the Indian Deputy Registrars disagree with the natural New Zealand Deputy Registrar.

It would also appear that Deputy Registrar Raj Iyengar combined two different forms together and gave me the wrong forms.

This has delayed the appeal and consumed time.

Further, High Court Judge Stevens refused to accept 99.9% of my evidence, reduced 860 pages down to less than 1 page, then sealed my evidence so that no one could refer to it unless they got permission from the Auckland City Council lawyer, the Police lawyer, a High Court Judge, and then maybe a Court of Appeal Judge.

This would suggest that the information was unpalatable yet correct.

Certainly, this is a hearing worthy of appeal as there is the victimisation of a citizen and stake. I understand this involves the Crimes Act: Dealing in Slaves (98); and Conspiring to defeat justice (116).

The more simple evidence that was not allowed to be heard was:

1. CRI 2009-004-010215, CRN 09004916067: No evidence was given of being in a Buslane in Sandringham. Only an unnamed informant of an alleged occurrence 73 days prior. After requests, no evidence was presented, no photographs and the informant was never named. Futher, it is legal to travel at least the last 60 metres in the Buslane when turning left.
2. There was malice involved from the Mayor of Auckland John Banks and this was not considered by Judge Stevens as meritorius cause.
   John Banks was made Mayor of Auckland again on 13 October 2007. On 31 October 2007, *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide* was published. Written by myself, it revealed that John Banks is a paedophile, drug trafficker and CIA agent. The Buslane ticket was then notified by an "anonymous informant" (John Banks or aide) on 19 November 2007, as having occurred 73 days prior on 8 August 2007.
   Since no evidence was ever presented, despite requests, there was no meritorious cause for this ticket.
3. Further, Judge Stevens found my evidence defamatory, scandalous and offensive.
   I agree.
   I have also printed this as true, but sincerely that wish it were not.
   If my evidence presented were not true, this ticket would never have been issued, and I'm sure I would have been sued.
   I have also sworn this in the High Court.
   If my evidence is not taken as true, then I am taken to be a liar, and should be charged accordingly, otherwise
   My evidence is being denied.
   So I am also particularly disgusted at the people involved in government, but
   I am also disappointed that High Court judges cover for them.
4. It would appear that the judicial emotions behind preventing Mayor John Banks being outed as a homosexual, a paedophile, a drug trafficker and a CIA agent has been enough to corrupt the court processes.
5. This has resulted in the matter not being heard fairly and subsequent appeals distracted with incorrect forms and courts and political ladder climbing by covering for paedophiles.
6. Indeed, Judge Stevens confirmed this by stating in his 20 April 2009 Minute [9]: . . . "defamatory and large portions of many of the exhibits are . . . scandalous and offensive."
7. I agree with Judge Stevens, except that they are true and most, if not all, are clear, substantive and true. This has left Judge Stevens and myself agreeing, although Judge Stevens failed to correctly take into account that the **defamatory, scandalous and offensive exhibits were clear, substantive and true**.

The present result is tantamount to extreme bias, where a Judge has accepted exhibits/ attachments, then refused to read/ consider/ apply them on the basis that his primary role as a High Court judge is covering up for the paedophilia (and homosexuality) of New Zealand notables . . . and Indians, including those who dominate the court staff as Deputy Registrars and answering court phones [many of whom are Tamil, and the Judiciary controlled by Tamil terrorists].

Would this not include Judge Elliot?

As a result, a fair hearing did not proceed.

The same applies to all the Auckland City Council case numbers.

This has meant that simple matters which never existed have blown out of all proportion.

As such, a Section 106 would find correct application here. This would mean that all matters are discharged without conviction or costs.

The harassment has been such, that I have applied for refugee status / diplomatic protection. However, it might be best if I apply for a Non-Prosecution Certificate.

Alternatively, the matters of Mayor John Banks sexuality and resulting motives to create a Supercity where he can issue traffic tickets to all those who out him as a Venetian Wall Spider (homosexual in a mask) will undoubtedly be raised.

I seek to have these tickets discharged, or to have them heard in a Court of Appeal where the evidence presented, that was not considered, would be considered.

I seek a Non-Prosecution Certificate for all matters present and future.

I seek your advice on which forms to fill out.

Indians in the New Zealand Judiciary

Further:

1. Indians are renowned paedophiles to the extent where they are a culture that colludes illegally in paedophilia.
2. That Indians dominate the courts as Deputy Registrars and Governor-General only confirms that the New Zealand Courts are a paedophile movement.
3. Indians are one of the few races in New Zealand that have an ongoing understanding with the Police that they can traffic in young children, regardless of age, provided that a marriage ceremony has taken place, or is about to take place.
4. These children are often of an age where sex is very dangerous for them. They do get pregnant at under 16 years of age, and often produce children with birth defects and handicaps. This can be seen in your local supermarket.
5. The Judiciary covers up for this, despite it being illegal, and the police are instructed to take no action. This is complicity to crime by both the judiciary and police.
6. Whereas with indigenous white New Zealanders, the police take the opposite view and create crime where none exists. This is illegal profiling. It is social engineering.
7. Since the Courts are dominated by a culture of paedophilic Indians, and I have published several books exposing paedophiles, the courts are not unbiased as they are required to be. This has led to 15 years of profiled charges by police and biased hearings by the courts. These traffic tickets are part of this illegal profiling/ paedophile's attack.

Is there a court process to remove Traffic Infringement Notices?

Further, Judge Stevens made it clear in the 20 April 2009 High Court hearing that there was no process through the courts to get off a traffic ticket. If that is the case, then the courts have been wasting my time and the the processes are illusion only, presumably designed to exhaust the citizen.

Please identify if this is the case and (1) At what point does justice stop; or (2) What judicial avenues there are for justice; and (3) What avenues for recourse are there.

Yours sincerely,

Joseph Gregory Hallett
26 Lichfield Road, Parnell, Auckland
greg@greghallett.com

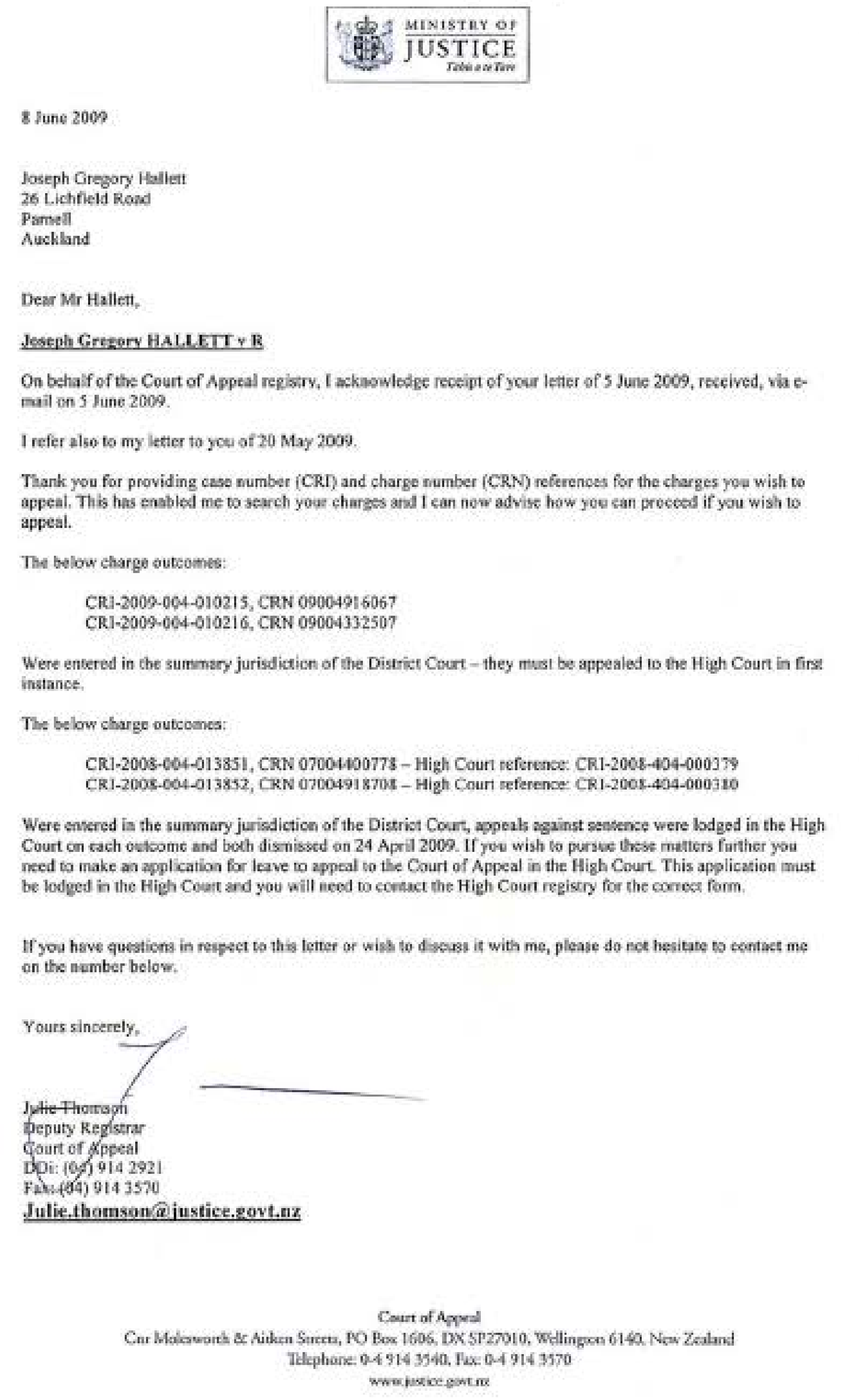

MINISTRY OF
JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

8 June 2009

Joseph Gregory Hallett
26 Lichfield Road
Parnell
Auckland

Dear Mr Hallett,

Joseph Gregory HALLETT v R

On behalf of the Court of Appeal registry, I acknowledge receipt of your letter of 5 June 2009, received, via e-mail on 5 June 2009.

I refer also to my letter to you of 20 May 2009.

Thank you for providing case number (CRI) and charge number (CRN) references for the charges you wish to appeal. This has enabled me to search your charges and I can now advise how you can proceed if you wish to appeal.

The below charge outcomes:

CRI-2009-004-010215, CRN 09004916067
CRI-2009-004-010216, CRN 09004332507

Were entered in the summary jurisdiction of the District Court – they must be appealed to the High Court in first instance.

The below charge outcomes:

CRI-2008-004-013851, CRN 07004400778 – High Court reference: CRI-2008-404-000379
CRI-2008-004-013852, CRN 07004918708 – High Court reference: CRI-2008-404-000380

Were entered in the summary jurisdiction of the District Court, appeals against sentence were lodged in the High Court on each outcome and both dismissed on 24 April 2009. If you wish to pursue these matters further you need to make an application for leave to appeal to the Court of Appeal in the High Court. This application must be lodged in the High Court and you will need to contact the High Court registry for the correct form.

If you have questions in respect to this letter or wish to discuss it with me, please do not hesitate to contact me on the number below.

Yours sincerely,

Julie Thomson
Deputy Registrar
Court of Appeal
DDi: (04) 914 2921
Fax:(04) 914 3570
Julie.thomson@justice.govt.nz

Court of Appeal
Cnr Molesworth & Aitken Streets, PO Box 1606, DX SP27010, Wellington 6140, New Zealand
Telephone: 0-4 914 3540, Fax: 0-4 914 3570
www.justice.govt.nz

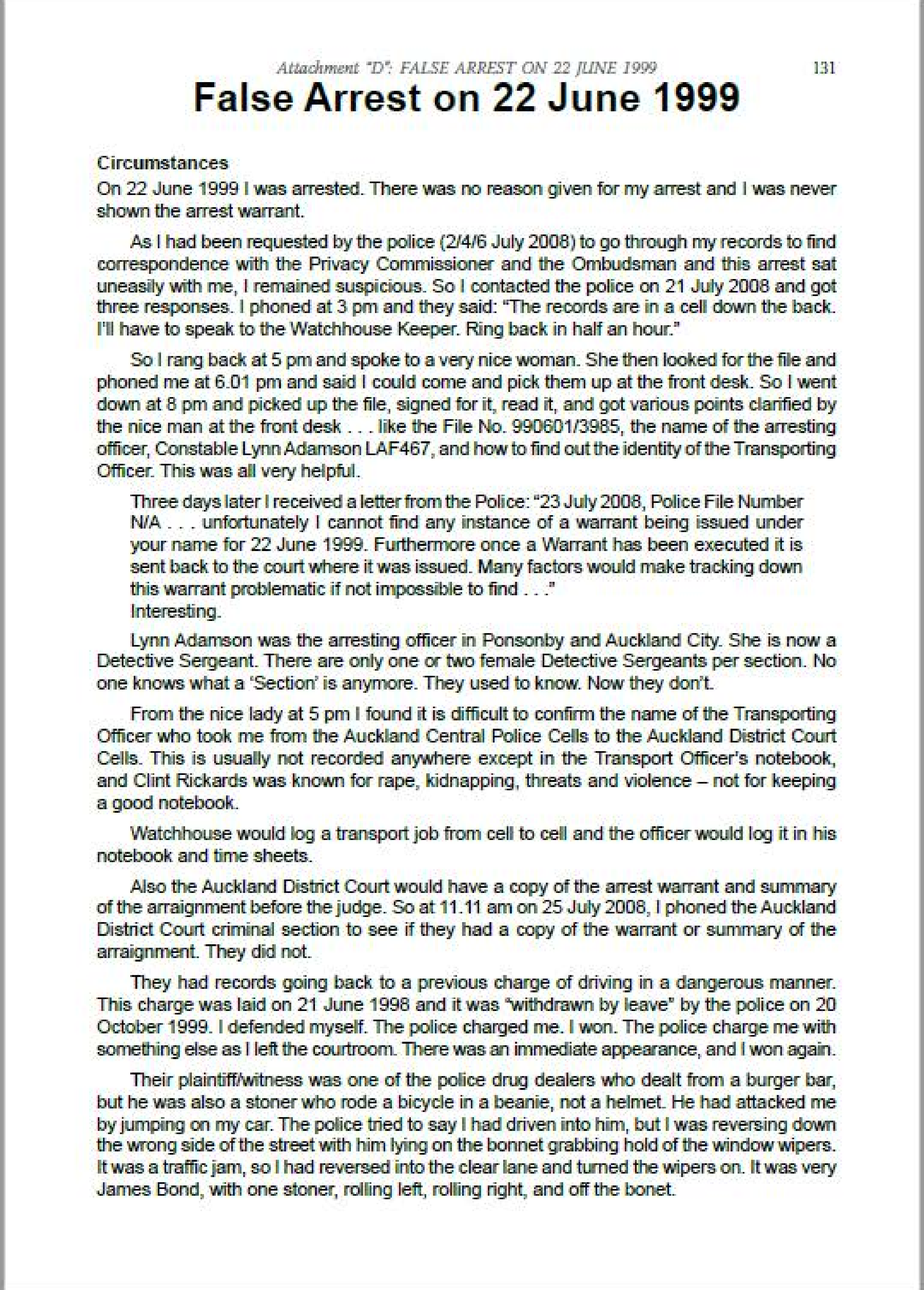

False Arrest on 22 June 1999

Circumstances

On 22 June 1999 I was arrested. There was no reason given for my arrest and I was never shown the arrest warrant.

As I had been requested by the police (2/4/6 July 2008) to go through my records to find correspondence with the Privacy Commissioner and the Ombudsman and this arrest sat uneasily with me, I remained suspicious. So I contacted the police on 21 July 2008 and got three responses. I phoned at 3 pm and they said: "The records are in a cell down the back. I'll have to speak to the Watchhouse Keeper. Ring back in half an hour."

So I rang back at 5 pm and spoke to a very nice woman. She then looked for the file and phoned me at 6.01 pm and said I could come and pick them up at the front desk. So I went down at 8 pm and picked up the file, signed for it, read it, and got various points clarified by the nice man at the front desk . . . like the File No. 990601/3985, the name of the arresting officer, Constable Lynn Adamson LAF467, and how to find out the identity of the Transporting Officer. This was all very helpful.

> Three days later I received a letter from the Police: "23 July 2008, Police File Number N/A . . . unfortunately I cannot find any instance of a warrant being issued under your name for 22 June 1999. Furthermore once a Warrant has been executed it is sent back to the court where it was issued. Many factors would make tracking down this warrant problematic if not impossible to find . . ."
> Interesting.

Lynn Adamson was the arresting officer in Ponsonby and Auckland City. She is now a Detective Sergeant. There are only one or two female Detective Sergeants per section. No one knows what a 'Section' is anymore. They used to know. Now they don't.

From the nice lady at 5 pm I found it is difficult to confirm the name of the Transporting Officer who took me from the Auckland Central Police Cells to the Auckland District Court Cells. This is usually not recorded anywhere except in the Transport Officer's notebook, and Clint Rickards was known for rape, kidnapping, threats and violence – not for keeping a good notebook.

Watchhouse would log a transport job from cell to cell and the officer would log it in his notebook and time sheets.

Also the Auckland District Court would have a copy of the arrest warrant and summary of the arraignment before the judge. So at 11.11 am on 25 July 2008, I phoned the Auckland District Court criminal section to see if they had a copy of the warrant or summary of the arraignment. They did not.

They had records going back to a previous charge of driving in a dangerous manner. This charge was laid on 21 June 1998 and it was "withdrawn by leave" by the police on 20 October 1999. I defended myself. The police charged me. I won. The police charge me with something else as I left the courtroom. There was an immediate appearance, and I won again.

Their plaintiff/witness was one of the police drug dealers who dealt from a burger bar, but he was also a stoner who rode a bicycle in a beanie, not a helmet. He had attacked me by jumping on my car. The police tried to say I had driven into him, but I was reversing down the wrong side of the street with him lying on the bonnet grabbing hold of the window wipers. It was a traffic jam, so I had reversed into the clear lane and turned the wipers on. It was very James Bond, with one stoner, rolling left, rolling right, and off the bonet.

Anyway, for 22 June 1999, the District Court had no warrant showing and no court appearance showing. They advised me to call the Police Prosecutor on 307 4525. So I phoned at 11.39 am and got Dave Wineburg's message that he'd call me back as quick as possible.

So I phoned the police general number, gave them the File No. 990601/3985 and asked what the warrant was for. I was put through to the File Management Center and spoke with Jacinta. She was very funny in that she got my jokes. She couldn't find the file and said it might be a purged file. She told me the number '990601' related to "1999, June, 1st". Then she found the whole file number 990601/3985 related to an incident in Christchurch – a domestic – but I wasn't in Christchurch then, and I hadn't been there for nine years either side of that date.

The "5" could have been an "8", so I asked her to check "/3988" and she said there was no file with that number, it didn't exist. The only thing she could find was the stoner story, with window wipers. The Police number brought up no file, so I gave her my P.R.N. number, which is my Personal Reference Number, and like the District Court, she said there was heaps on this. There is heaps attached to my name because the police have been laying false charges and obfuscating file numbers et cetera ever since I applied for custody and exposed the trial Head of the Disputes Tribunal as a drug user.

Jacinta at the Auckland Central Police File Management Center, 25 July 2008: "I have checked everything. The file doesn't exist. There is no record of what your arrest was for. There is no record of the transporting officer. There is no record of you appearing in front of a judge. We definitely do not have a record."

She then advised me: "The file doesn't belong to you. You need to get it corrected. Send a letter with a photocopy of the Charge Sheet . . . to Chris Osbourn . . . ask what it was for, who the transporting officer was, why is a domestic a thousand kilometres away against your name, why is there is no record of what the warrant was for, no record of your arrest, and why you appeared before a judge."

So I did.

See letter dated and stamped as received at 3.40 pm 25 July 2008 (7 pages on).

Everyone I have spoken to has said I should have been shown the warrant for arrest, what it was for, and a copy of the court documents. Neither have occurred.

I spoke to a former sergeant of police in the Waikato area and he said: "It would be very unlikely that an Assistant Commissioner [like Rickards] would be your Transporting Officer.

But Rickards only became the Assistant Police Commissioner in October 2003 when he was immediately on my case again. Rickards got the PC role by harrassing and stitching up others – police included. He had done the same when he was a Mongrel Mob gang member in the Hawke's Bay, before he became a police officer, but while on full police pay.

As a Waikato Superintendent, Rickards had been brought up to Auckland to show the boys that he could intimidate, depersonalise, and how the Auckland Police could intimidate and depersonalise. It seems that I was the chosen subject on the day.

Rickards is a rapist and a gang banger. He used Constable Lynn Adamson as an accomplice. She is now a Detective Sergeant LAF467. **As soon as any female officer has finished their detective probationary period,[1] they are raped by their unit. This is part of police culture.** The blonde Lynn Adamson liked to be raped, supported the rapist Clint Rickards, and rooted, studied, and gang-banged her way to Detective Sergeant.

---

[1] "Probationary period" has now had a name change, but it's exactly the same thing.

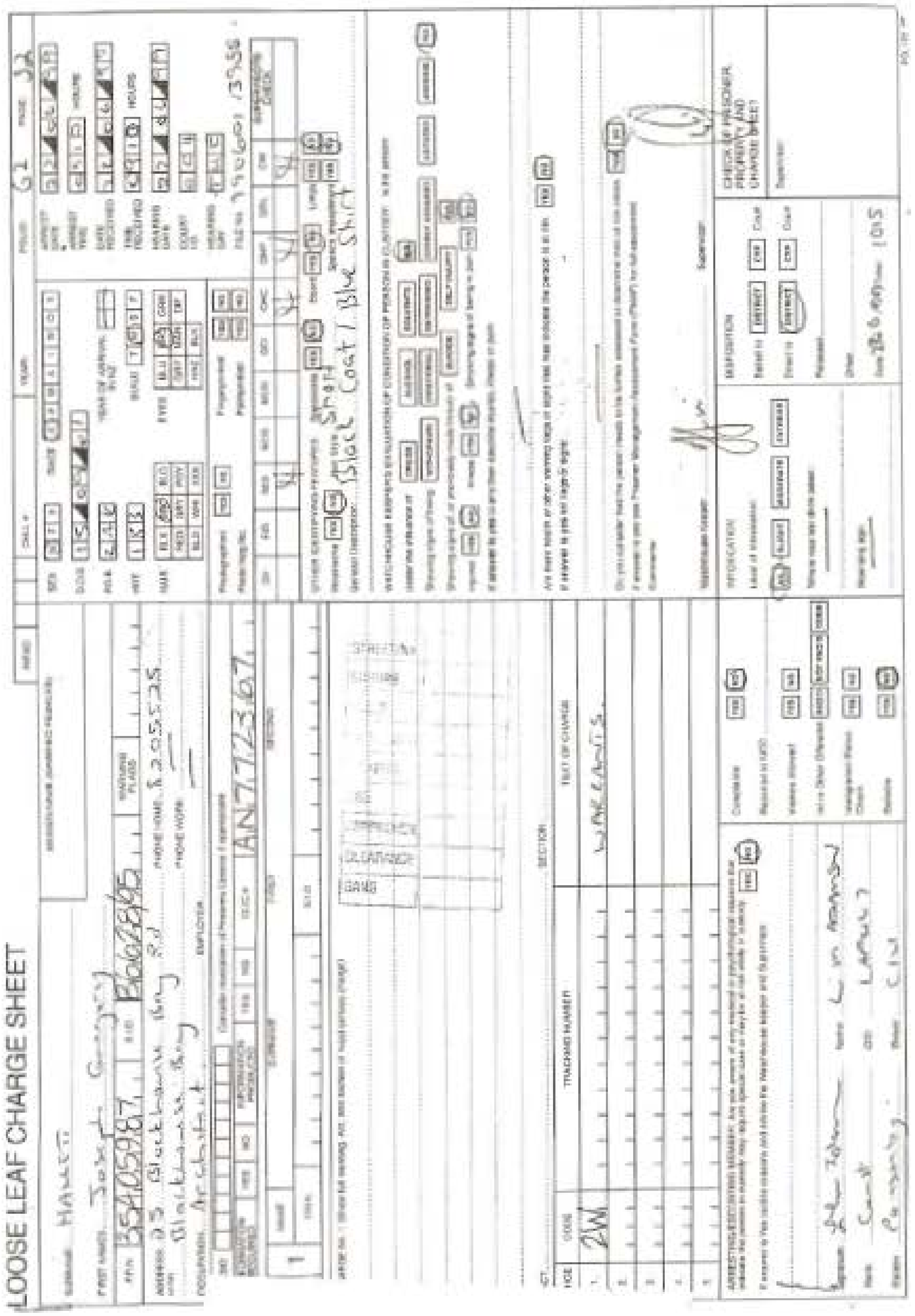

LOOSE LEAF CHARGE SHEET

Black Coat / Blue Shirt

WARRANTS

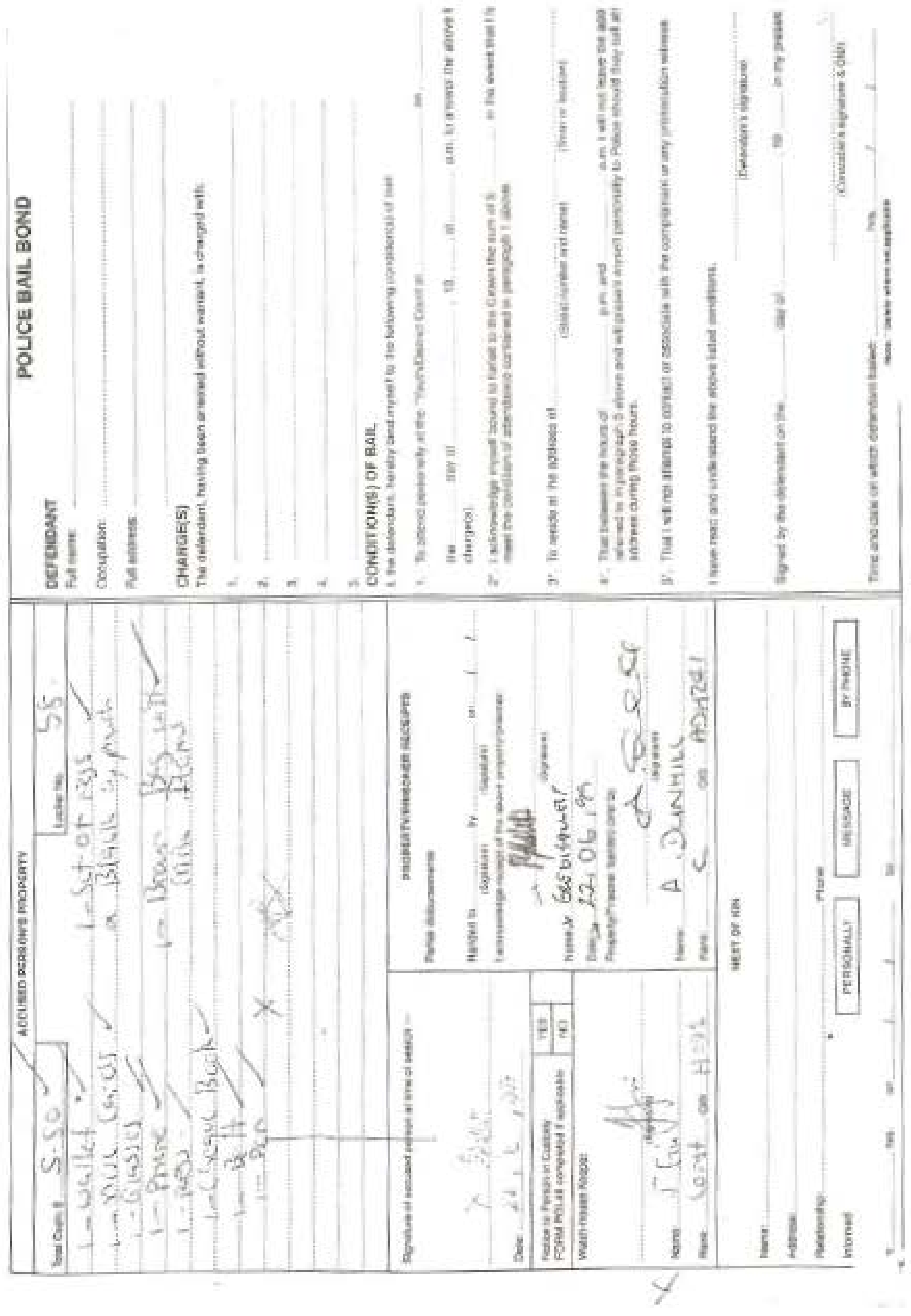

POLICE BAIL BOND

DEFENDANT

Full name:

Occupation:

Full address:

CHARGE(S)

The defendant, having been arrested without warrant, is charged with:

1.

2.

3.

4.

5.

CONDITION(S) OF BAIL

I, the defendant, hereby bind myself to the following condition(s) of bail:

1. To attend personally at the *Youth/District Court at .... on .... the .... day of ...., 19...... at .... a.m. to answer the above charge(s).
2*. I acknowledge myself bound to forfeit to the Crown the sum of $ .... in the event that I fail to meet the condition of attendance contained in paragraph 1 above.
3*. To reside at the address of .... (Street number and name) (Town or location)
4*. That between the hours of .... p.m. and .... a.m. I will not leave the address referred to in paragraph 3 above and will present myself personally to Police should they call at that address during those hours.
5*. That I will not attempt to contact or associate with the complainant or any prosecution witness.

I have read and understand the above listed conditions.

.... (Defendant's signature)

Signed by the defendant on the .... day of ...., 19...... in my presence

.... (Constable's signature & QID)

Time and date on which defendant bailed: .... hrs. ...... / ...... / ......

Note: * Delete where not applicable

ACCUSED PERSON'S PROPERTY

Total Cash $ 5.50

Locker No. 55

1 – Wallet

1 – Bus Cards

1 – Glasses

1 – Phone

1 – Bag

1 – Cheque Book

1 – Belt

1 – Pen

1 – Set of keys

a Black Sy. pouch

1 – Brown Bag with Misc Items

X

Signature of accused person at time of search —

X

Date: 22, 6, 99

Notice to Person in Custody FORM POL48 completed if applicable ☐ YES ☐ NO

Watch-house Keeper:

.... (Signature)

Name: J Guy

Rank: Const QID H...

PROPERTY/PRISONER RECEIPTS

Partial disbursements:

Handed to .... by .... on ...... / ...... /

(Signature) (Signature)

I acknowledge receipt of the above property/prisoner:

.... (Signature)

Name: Gresbigquer

Date: 22.06.99

Property/Prisoner handed over by:

A. Guy (Signature)

Name: A. DUNHILL

Rank: C QID AD4241

NEXT OF KIN

Name:

Address:

Relationship: .... Phone:

Informed ☐ PERSONALLY ☐ MESSAGE ☐ BY PHONE

at .... hrs. on ...... / ...... / ...... by ....

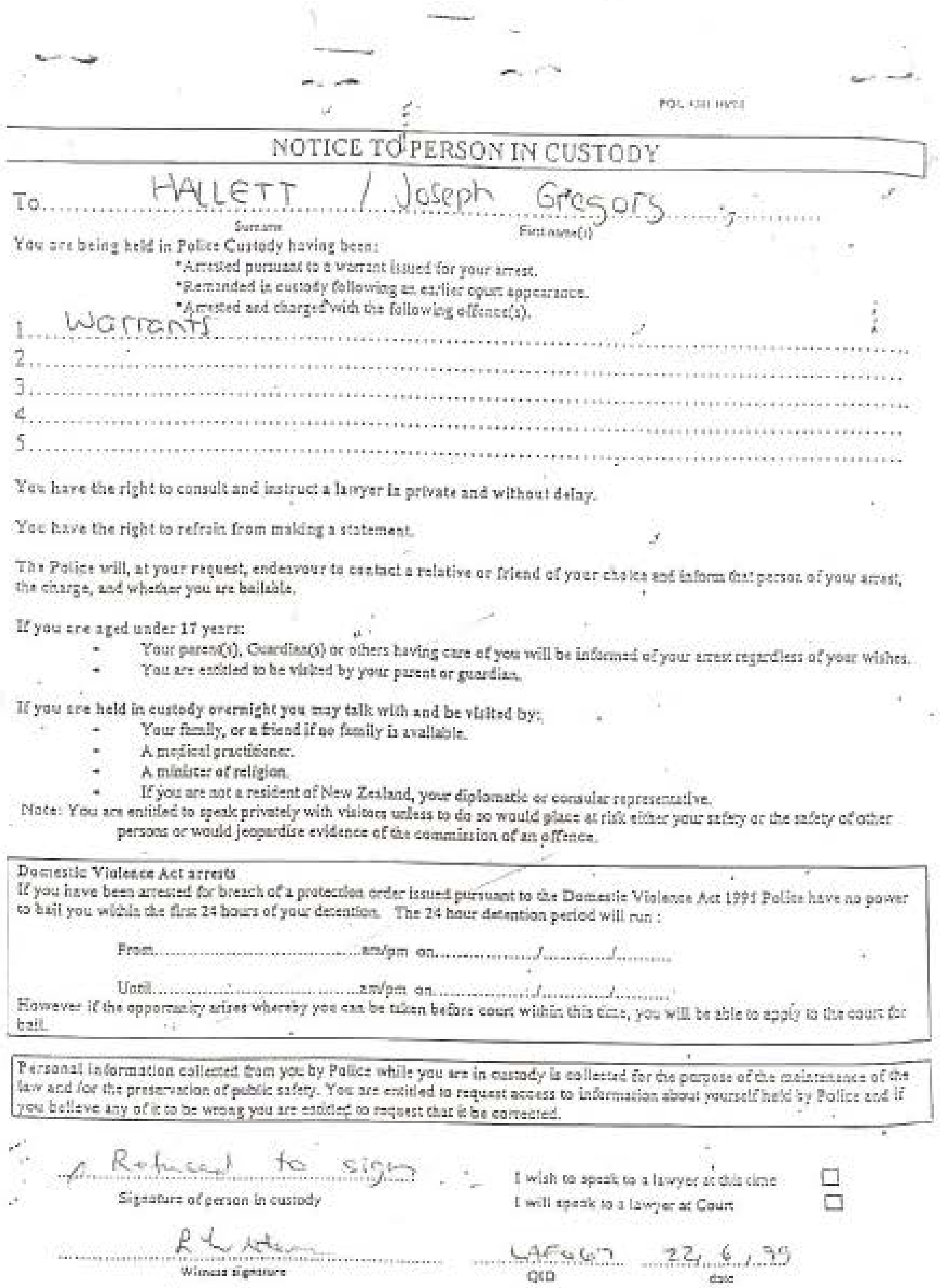

POL 48 (4/95)

NOTICE TO PERSON IN CUSTODY

To ....HALLETT / Joseph Gregory....

Surname First name(s)

You are being held in Police Custody having been:

*Arrested pursuant to a warrant issued for your arrest.
*Remanded in custody following an earlier court appearance.
*Arrested and charged with the following offence(s).

1. Warrants
2. ....
3. ....
4. ....
5. ....

You have the right to consult and instruct a lawyer in private and without delay.

You have the right to refrain from making a statement.

The Police will, at your request, endeavour to contact a relative or friend of your choice and inform that person of your arrest, the charge, and whether you are bailable.

If you are aged under 17 years:

- Your parent(s), Guardian(s) or others having care of you will be informed of your arrest regardless of your wishes.
- You are entitled to be visited by your parent or guardian.

If you are held in custody overnight you may talk with and be visited by:

- Your family, or a friend if no family is available.
- A medical practitioner.
- A minister of religion.
- If you are not a resident of New Zealand, your diplomatic or consular representative.

Note: You are entitled to speak privately with visitors unless to do so would place at risk either your safety or the safety of other persons or would jeopardise evidence of the commission of an offence.

Domestic Violence Act arrests

If you have been arrested for breach of a protection order issued pursuant to the Domestic Violence Act 1995 Police have no power to bail you within the first 24 hours of your detention. The 24 hour detention period will run:

From .... am/pm on ...... / ...... / ......

Until .... am/pm on ...... / ...... / ......

However if the opportunity arises whereby you can be taken before court within this time, you will be able to apply to the court for bail.

Personal information collected from you by Police while you are in custody is collected for the purpose of the maintenance of the law and for the preservation of public safety. You are entitled to request access to information about yourself held by Police and if you believe any of it to be wrong you are entitled to request that it be corrected.

Refused to sign

Signature of person in custody

I wish to speak to a lawyer at this time ☐

I will speak to a lawyer at Court ☐

.... Witness signature

LAF667 QID

22, 6, 99 date

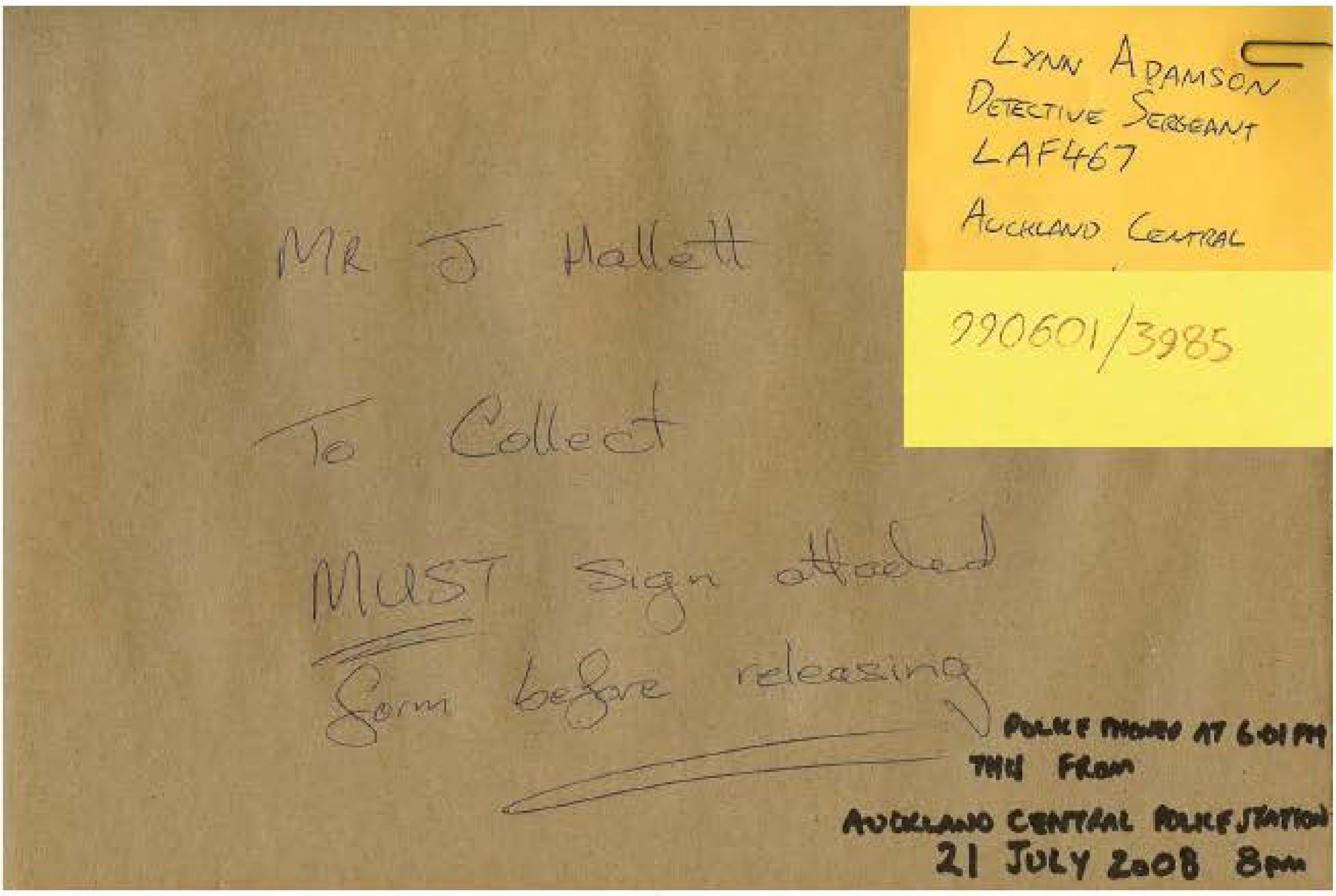

LYNN ADAMSON
DETECTIVE SERGEANT
LAF467
AUCKLAND CENTRAL

990601/3985

Mr J Hallett

To Collect

MUST sign attached
form before releasing

POLICE PHONED AT 6:01 PM
THIS FROM
AUCKLAND CENTRAL POLICE STATION
21 JULY 2008 8pm

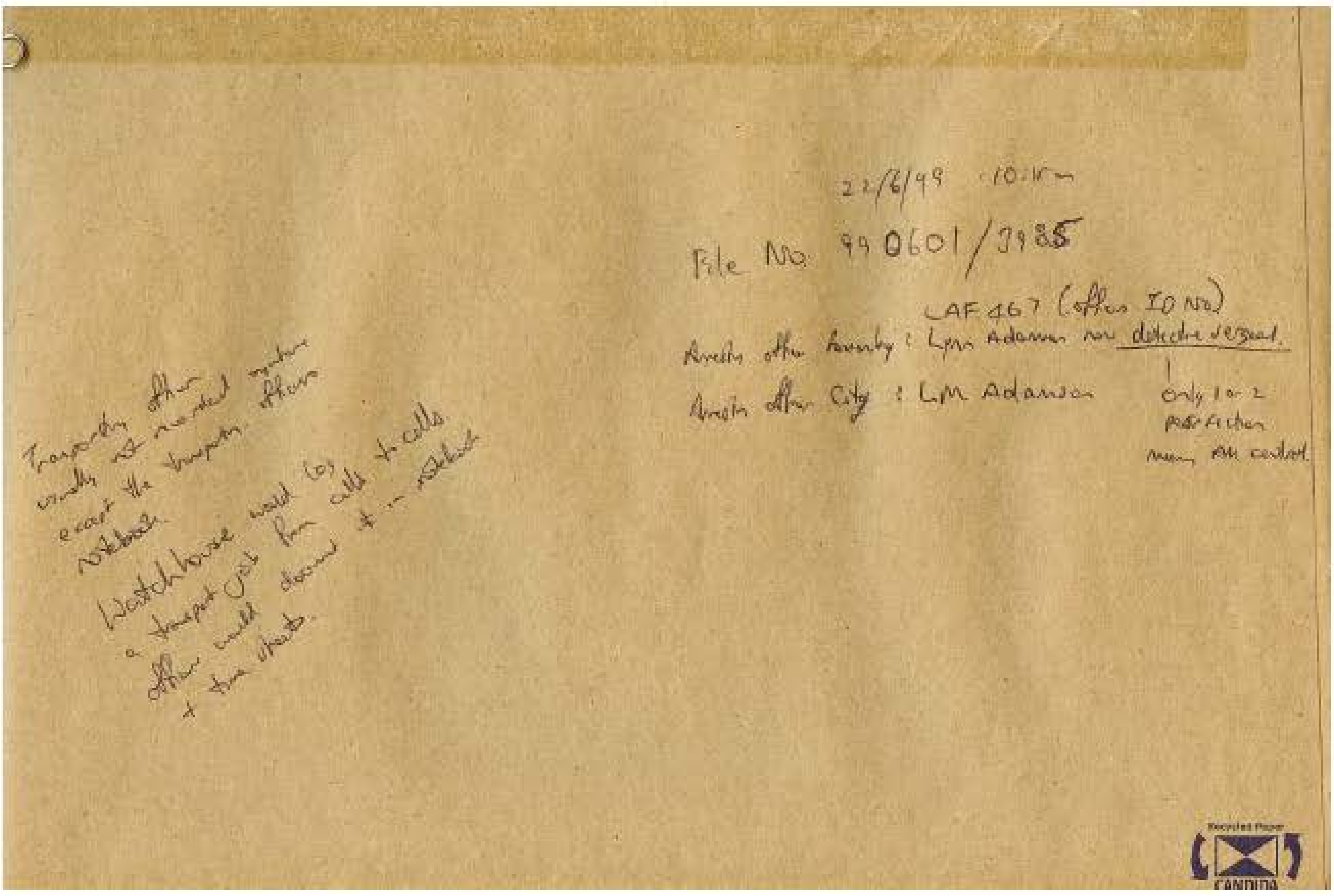

22/6/99 10:15pm

File No 990601/3985

LAF467 (officer ID No)

Arresting officer formerly : Lynn Adamson now detective sergeant.

Arresting officer City : LM Adamson

only 1 or 2
police officers
[illegible] AK central

Transporting officer
usually not recorded anywhere
except the transporting officers
notebook.

Watchhouse would log
a transport job from cells to cells
officer would document it in notebook
+ time sheets.

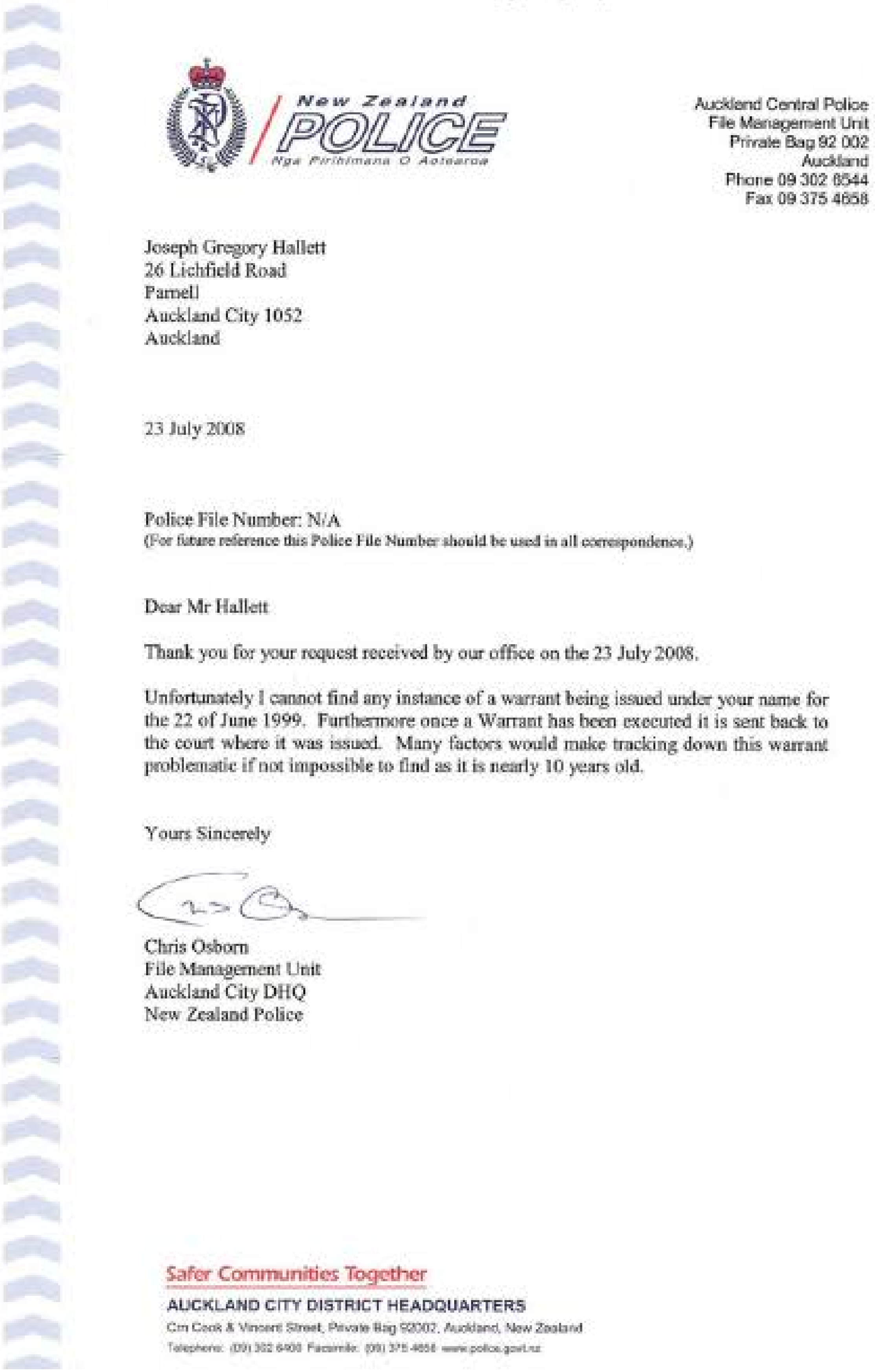

New Zealand
POLICE
Nga Pirihimana O Aotearoa

Auckland Central Police
File Management Unit
Private Bag 92 002
Auckland
Phone 09 302 6544
Fax 09 375 4658

Joseph Gregory Hallett
26 Lichfield Road
Parnell
Auckland City 1052
Auckland

23 July 2008

Police File Number: N/A
(For future reference this Police File Number should be used in all correspondence.)

Dear Mr Hallett

Thank you for your request received by our office on the 23 July 2008.

Unfortunately I cannot find any instance of a warrant being issued under your name for the 22 of June 1999. Furthermore once a Warrant has been executed it is sent back to the court where it was issued. Many factors would make tracking down this warrant problematic if not impossible to find as it is nearly 10 years old.

Yours Sincerely

Chris Osborn
File Management Unit
Auckland City DHQ
New Zealand Police

Safer Communities Together
AUCKLAND CITY DISTRICT HEADQUARTERS
Cnr Cook & Vincent Street, Private Bag 92002, Auckland, New Zealand
Telephone: (09) 302 6400 Facsimile: (09) 375 4658 www.police.govt.nz

---

25 July 2008

Chris Osbourn
File Management Unit
Auckland City DHQ
New Zealand Police

Police Reference Number: N/A
File Number: 990601/3985
Your letter dated: 23 July 2008

3:40PM
Public
Counter.
25/07/08.

Chris Osbourn,
On 22 June 1999 I was arrested in Ponsonby and Auckland Central. There was no reason given for my arrest and I was never shown the arrest warrant.

The arresting officer was Constable Lynn Adamson (#LAF467), now promoted to Detective Sergeant. This is very rare for a female.

The Transporting Officer was Clint Rickards and others of similar size, around 140 kg or 22 stone. Superintendent Clint Rickards was officially the district manager of the Waikato Police at the time.

On 21 July 2008, I obtained a copy of the 22 June 1999 Charge Sheet. (See attached.)

On 24 July I received a letter from you stating: "Unfortunately I cannot find any instance of a warrant being issued under your name for 22 June 1999. Furthermore once a Warrant has been executed it is sent back to the court where it was issued."

Can you please confirm Clint Rickards was one of the four Transporting Officers who took me from the Auckland Central Police Cells to the Auckland District Court Cells.

This will be in his Transport Officer's notebook and time sheets.

Watchhouse will also have this logged as a transport job from cell to cell.

The Auckland District Court criminal section should have a copy of the arrest warrant and summary of the arraignment before the judge. They don't. They have no warrant showing and no court appearance showing.

I contacted the Police File Management Center at 11.15 am today and gave them the File No. 990601/3985. They couldn't find it, said it might be a purged file, then found the file number and it related to an incident in Christchurch – domestic. I wasn't in Christchurch, I wasn't involved in a domestic, and it wasn't my name. I asked them to check "/3988" and there was no file with that number. It didn't exist.

Apparently there is heaps of information against my P.R.N. number. I understand this is because the police have been laying false charges and obfuscating file numbers et cetera ever since I exposed the trial Head of the Disputes Tribunal as a drug user during a Disputes Tribunal hearing in January 1994 and applied for custody the same year.

Auckland Central Police File Management Center, 11.15–11.35 am 25 July 2008: "I have checked everything. The file doesn't exist. There is no record of what your arrest was for. There is no record of the transporting officer. There is no record of you appearing in front of a judge. We definitely do not have a record . . . The file doesn't belong to you. You need to get it corrected."
Answer and act on the following:

1. Why was I arrested?
2. What was the arrest warrant for?
3. Why was I not shown the arrest warrant?
4. Why is there is no record of what the warrant was for?
5. Why is a domestic in Christchurch attached to my name in Auckland?
6. Why was the arresting officer promoted when clearly Constable Lynn Adamson LAF467 was acting outside police protocols, and illegally?
7. Who was the transporting officer?
8. Why was Superintendent Clint Rickards the transporting officer when he was based in Waikato 100 kilometres away?
9. Why was I handcuffed for the 1 kilometre car journey between the Police Station and the District Court.
10. Why was I sat in the back seat between two of the largest police officers in the force, both 140 kg/22 stone, when there was clearly not enough room?
11. Why is there no record of the time in the Auckland District Court cells?
12. Why was the 2IC of Papakura Chapter of Black Power placed in the cell with me?
13. Why was a violent schizophrenic boxer placed in the cell with me?
14. Why is there no record of me appearing in front of a judge?
15. Who was the judge?
16. Why did the police produce no evidence?
17. Why is there no record of the judge throwing the case out?
18. Why was I kept in the cells from 9.10 am to 4.00 pm?
19. Why was I made to walk from the Auckland District Court back to the Auckland Central Police Station without my shoelaces, belt, glasses, mobile phone, credit and bank cards, cheque book, wallet, keys, bag and paperwork?
20. Why could the Avondale Police Station not find my arrest warrant in early June 1999, after they had asked me to come and pick it up, and I turned up?
21. Remove my name from File Number: 990601/3985 and confirm this in writing.
22. Present your entire Personal Reference File for Joseph Gregory Hallett, P.R.N. 35405987 and all associated warrants, names of arresting officers, names of the judges who heard the cases.
23. Detail their subsequent promotions.
24. Place all other cases relating to me on-hold until you have completed this.
25. Notify all other police that the current police/bailiff attempt to remove my Mercedes is suspended until you have completed this task.

This is part of a long history of police intimidation against me. It has been going on for over 14 years. Those involved have been either promoted or protected. Even when they have gone to court, in long drawn out public cases, they have not been convicted.

It appears that the Police have been protecting criminals within the Police.

I expect a reply within two weeks. This has been hand delivered with a copy of the charge sheets and your 23 July 2008 letter.

Yours sincerely,

Joseph Gregory Hallett
26 Lichfield Road, Parnell, Auckland, M 0274 589 800

As at 20 April 2009
no reply and no correspondence
has been received.

Website showing Clint Rickards' timeline: http://peterellis.org.nz/people/ClintRickards/timeline.htm

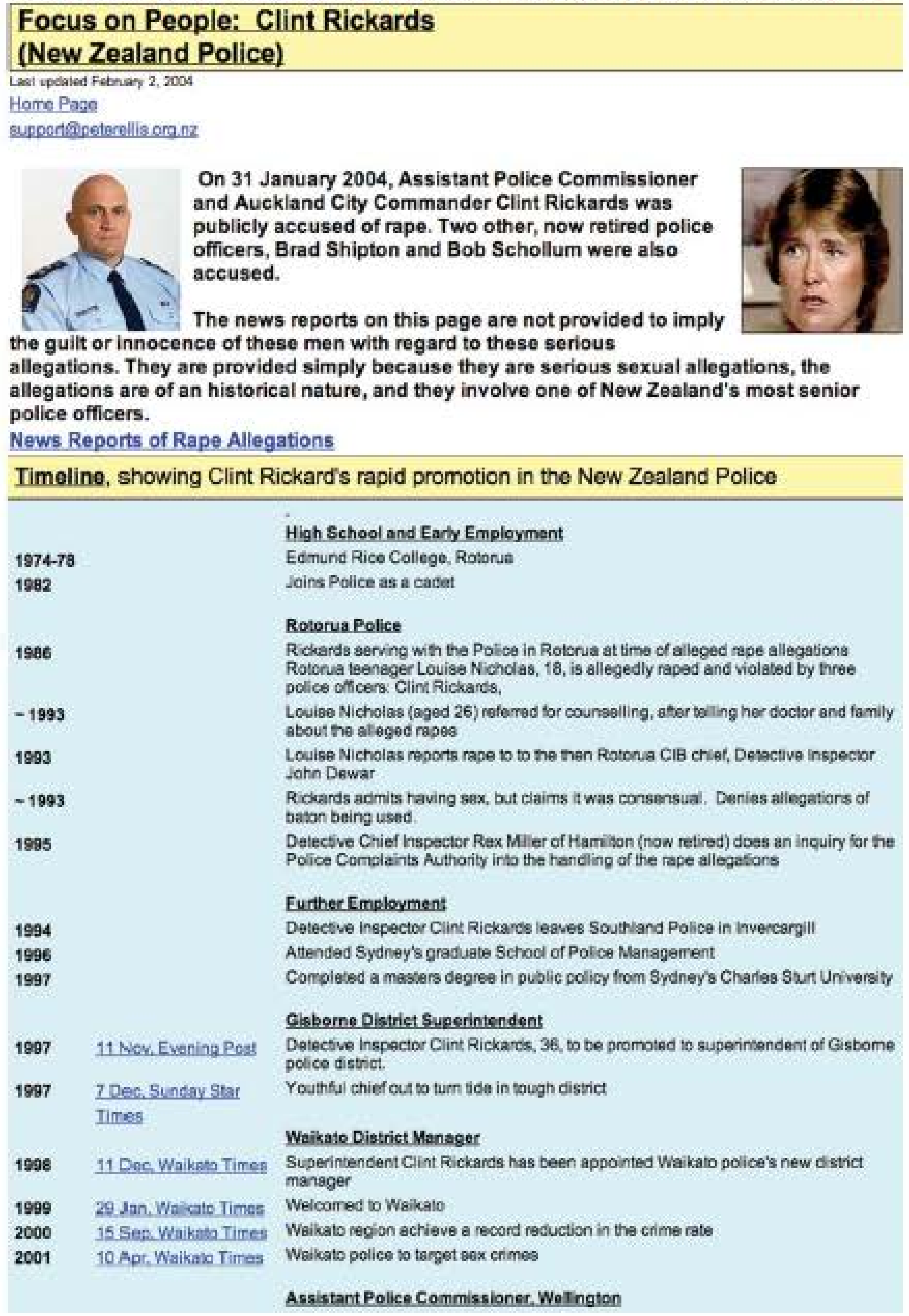

Focus on People: Clint Rickards (New Zealand Police)

Last updated February 2, 2004

Home Page
support@peterellis.org.nz

On 31 January 2004, Assistant Police Commissioner and Auckland City Commander Clint Rickards was publicly accused of rape. Two other, now retired police officers, Brad Shipton and Bob Schollum were also accused.

The news reports on this page are not provided to imply the guilt or innocence of these men with regard to these serious allegations. They are provided simply because they are serious sexual allegations, the allegations are of an historical nature, and they involve one of New Zealand's most senior police officers.

News Reports of Rape Allegations

Timeline, showing Clint Rickard's rapid promotion in the New Zealand Police

		High School and Early Employment
1974-78		Edmund Rice College, Rotorua
1982		Joins Police as a cadet
		Rotorua Police
1986		Rickards serving with the Police in Rotorua at time of alleged rape allegations Rotorua teenager Louise Nicholas, 18, is allegedly raped and violated by three police officers: Clint Rickards,
~1993		Louise Nicholas (aged 26) referred for counselling, after telling her doctor and family about the alleged rapes
1993		Louise Nicholas reports rape to to the then Rotorua CIB chief, Detective Inspector John Dewar
~1993		Rickards admits having sex, but claims it was consensual. Denies allegations of baton being used.
1995		Detective Chief Inspector Rex Miller of Hamilton (now retired) does an inquiry for the Police Complaints Authority into the handling of the rape allegations
		Further Employment
1994		Detective Inspector Clint Rickards leaves Southland Police in Invercargill
1996		Attended Sydney's graduate School of Police Management
1997		Completed a masters degree in public policy from Sydney's Charles Sturt University
		Gisborne District Superintendent
1997	11 Nov, Evening Post	Detective Inspector Clint Rickards, 36, to be promoted to superintendent of Gisborne police district.
1997	7 Dec, Sunday Star Times	Youthful chief out to turn tide in tough district
		Waikato District Manager
1998	11 Dec, Waikato Times	Superintendent Clint Rickards has been appointed Waikato police's new district manager
1999	29 Jan, Waikato Times	Welcomed to Waikato
2000	15 Sep, Waikato Times	Waikato region achieve a record reduction in the crime rate
2001	10 Apr, Waikato Times	Waikato police to target sex crimes
		Assistant Police Commissioner, Wellington

		Assistant Police Commissioner, Wellington
2001	26 Sep, Waikato Times	Clint Rickards, has been appointed to a plum role as one of three assistant police commissioners
		Assistant Police Commissioner and Auckland City District Commander
2003	17 Oct, Waikato Times	Clint Rickards was appointed Auckland city district commander yesterday
2004	16 Jan, Waikato Times	About 200 people attended the official ceremony to welcome Auckland's newly appointed top cop at a ceremony at Auckland's Orakei marae yesterday. Mr Rickards, takes on the role of Auckland district commander in addition to his position as assistant police commissioner
2004	31 Jan, News Reports	**Rape Allegations made public** Mrs Nicholas goes public with her allegations, saying she was manipulated to protect her attackers
	31 Jan 2004	Clint Rickards, Brad Shipton and Bob Schollum accused by Louise Nicholas Louise Nicholas claims (a) raped and violated by 3 police officers in 1986 (b) another officer covered up her allegations to protect his colleagues (c) she sought help at the time of the incidents but was ignored (d) after being raped, Rickards and Shipton would visit demanding sex (e) In 1993 went to make formal complaint but advised not to. Police document provides evidence of coverup Sex Abuse counsellor explains complainant's actions Police Minister calls for more information Police Commissioner launches review of investigations
	1 Feb 2004	Prime Minister aware of rape allegations before Rickards promoted Ex-Police Inspector Rex Miller backs Louise Nicholas QC Peter Williams says police should not investigate themselves
	2 Feb 2004	Accused deny allegations Clint Rickards takes three weeks leave Rex Miller claims 1995 inquiry was tainted John Dewar defends his Police Inquiry Police Commissioner orders full review Prime Minister orders new additional independent inquiry Policewoman was told baton used for deviant sex QC calls for overseas judge to investigate Other cases may be investigated

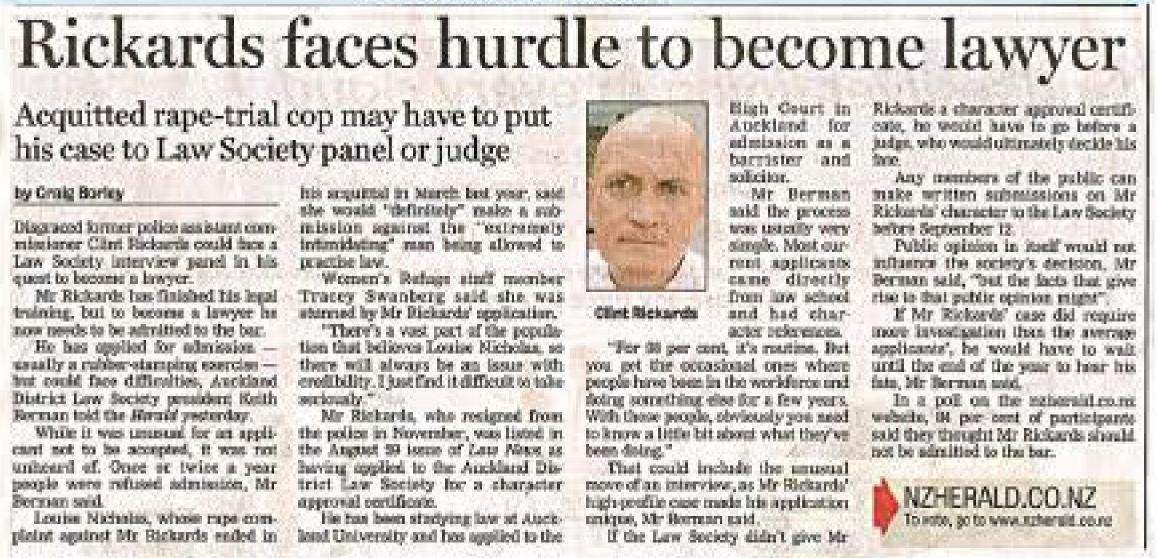

Rickards faces hurdle to become lawyer

Acquitted rape-trial cop may have to put his case to Law Society panel or judge

by Craig Borley

Disgraced former police assistant commissioner Clint Rickards could face a Law Society interview panel in his quest to become a lawyer.

Mr Rickards has finished his legal training, but to become a lawyer he now needs to be admitted to the bar.

He has applied for admission — usually a rubber-stamping exercise — but could face difficulties, Auckland District Law Society president Keith Berman told the *Herald* yesterday.

While it was unusual for an applicant not to be accepted, it was not unheard of. Once or twice a year people were refused admission, Mr Berman said.

Louise Nicholas, whose rape complaint against Mr Rickards ended in his acquittal in March last year, said she would "definitely" make a submission against the "extremely intimidating" man being allowed to practise law.

Women's Refuge staff member Tracey Swanberg said she was stunned by Mr Rickards' application.

"There's a vast part of the population that believes Louise Nicholas, so there will always be an issue with credibility. I just find it difficult to take seriously."

Mr Rickards, who resigned from the police in November, was listed in the August 29 issue of *Law News* as having applied to the Auckland District Law Society for a character approval certificate.

He has been studying law at Auckland University and has applied to the High Court in Auckland for admission as a barrister and solicitor.

Mr Berman said the process was usually very simple. Most current applicants came directly from law school and had character references.

"For 98 per cent, it's routine. But you get the occasional ones where people have been in the workforce and doing something else for a few years. With those people, obviously you need to know a little bit about what they've been doing."

That could include the unusual move of an interview, as Mr Rickards' high-profile case made his application unique, Mr Berman said.

If the Law Society didn't give Mr Rickards a character approval certificate, he would have to go before a judge, who would ultimately decide his fate.

Any members of the public can make written submissions on Mr Rickards' character to the Law Society before September 12.

Public opinion in itself would not influence the society's decision, Mr Berman said, "but the facts that give rise to that public opinion might".

If Mr Rickards' case did require more investigation than the average applicants', he would have to wait until the end of the year to hear his fate, Mr Berman said.

In a poll on the nzherald.co.nz website, 84 per cent of participants said they thought Mr Rickards should not be admitted to the bar.

Clint Rickards

NZHERALD.CO.NZ
To vote, go to www.nzherald.co.nz

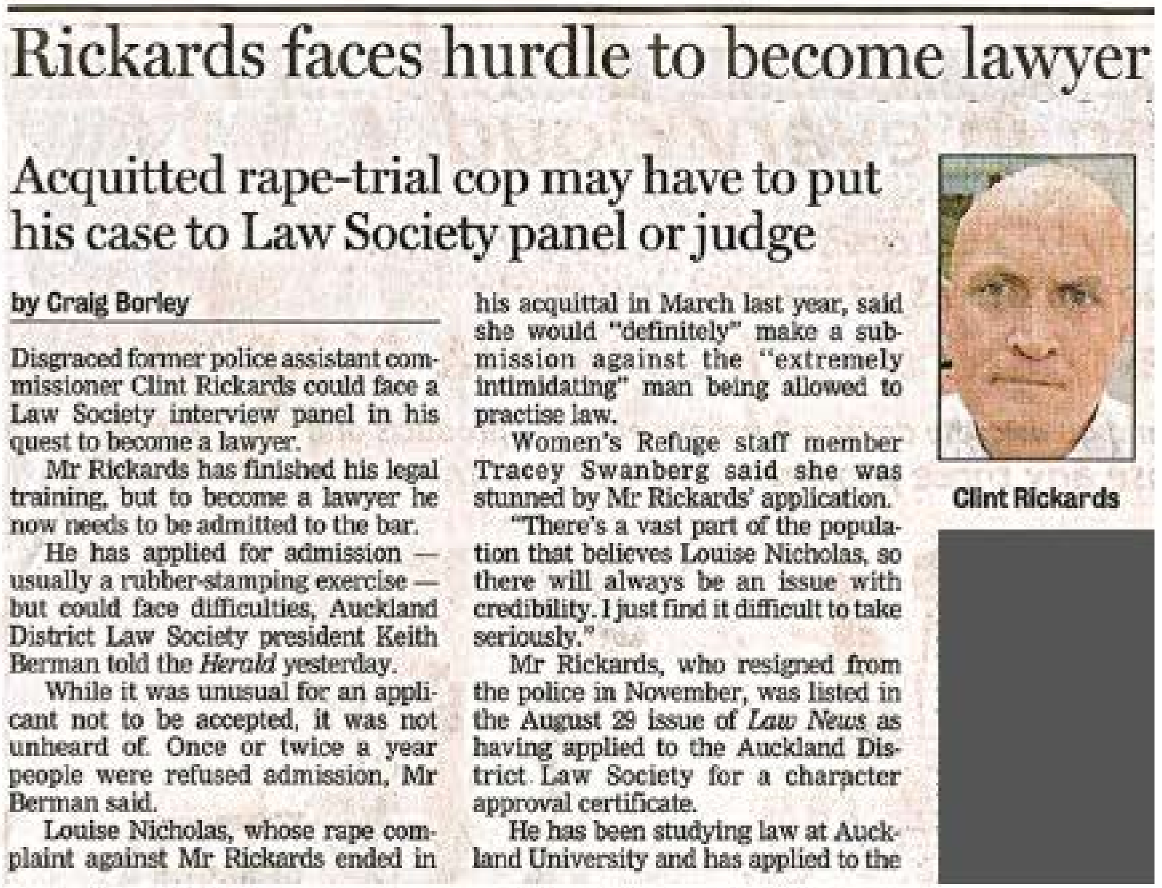

Rickards faces hurdle to become lawyer

Acquitted rape-trial cop may have to put his case to Law Society panel or judge

by Craig Borley

Disgraced former police assistant commissioner Clint Rickards could face a Law Society interview panel in his quest to become a lawyer.

Mr Rickards has finished his legal training, but to become a lawyer he now needs to be admitted to the bar.

He has applied for admission — usually a rubber-stamping exercise — but could face difficulties, Auckland District Law Society president Keith Berman told the Herald yesterday.

While it was unusual for an applicant not to be accepted, it was not unheard of. Once or twice a year people were refused admission, Mr Berman said.

Louise Nicholas, whose rape complaint against Mr Rickards ended in his acquittal in March last year, said she would "definitely" make a submission against the "extremely intimidating" man being allowed to practise law.

Women's Refuge staff member Tracey Swanberg said she was stunned by Mr Rickards' application.

"There's a vast part of the population that believes Louise Nicholas, so there will always be an issue with credibility. I just find it difficult to take seriously."

Mr Rickards, who resigned from the police in November, was listed in the August 29 issue of Law News as having applied to the Auckland District Law Society for a character approval certificate.

He has been studying law at Auckland University and has applied to the

Clint Rickards

New Zealand Herald,
Tuesday 2 September 2008, Front page, A1.

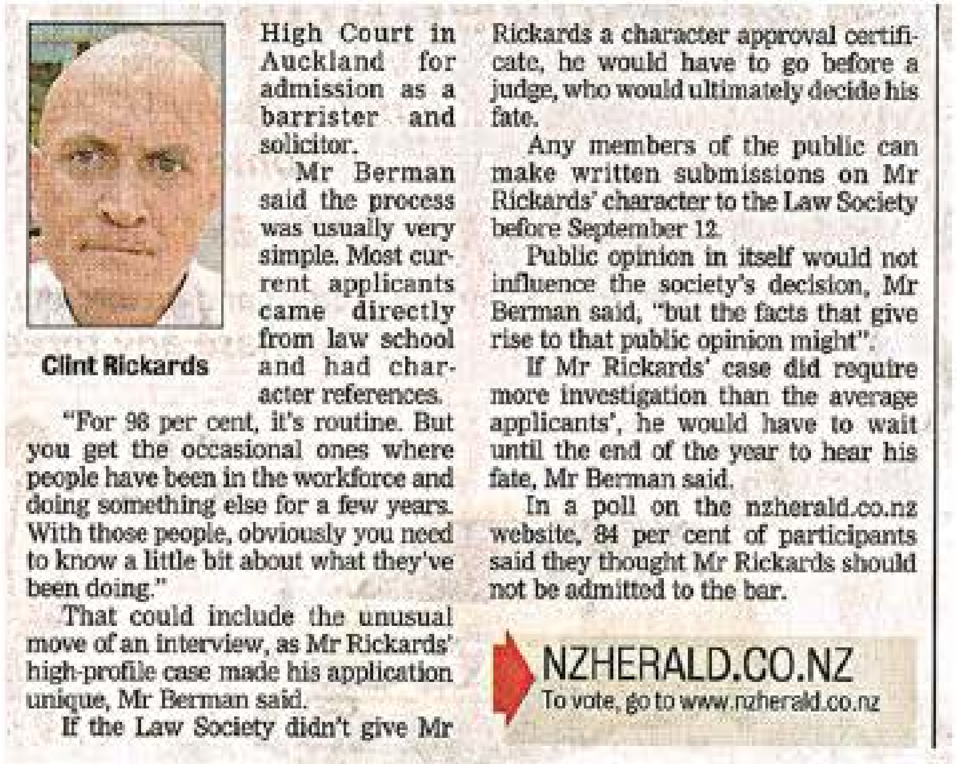

High Court in Auckland for admission as a barrister and solicitor.

Mr Berman said the process was usually very simple. Most current applicants came directly from law school and had character references.

"For 98 per cent, it's routine. But you get the occasional ones where people have been in the workforce and doing something else for a few years. With those people, obviously you need to know a little bit about what they've been doing."

That could include the unusual move of an interview, as Mr Rickards' high-profile case made his application unique, Mr Berman said.

If the Law Society didn't give Mr Rickards a character approval certificate, he would have to go before a judge, who would ultimately decide his fate.

Any members of the public can make written submissions on Mr Rickards' character to the Law Society before September 12.

Public opinion in itself would not influence the society's decision, Mr Berman said, "but the facts that give rise to that public opinion might".

If Mr Rickards' case did require more investigation than the average applicants', he would have to wait until the end of the year to hear his fate, Mr Berman said.

In a poll on the nzherald.co.nz website, 84 per cent of participants said they thought Mr Rickards should not be admitted to the bar.

Clint Rickards

NZHERALD.CO.NZ
To vote, go to www.nzherald.co.nz

Here are some excerpts relating to Commander Clint Rickards and Constable James Matewhinau Cassin from *New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide* published in October 2007. It is now on its third edition.

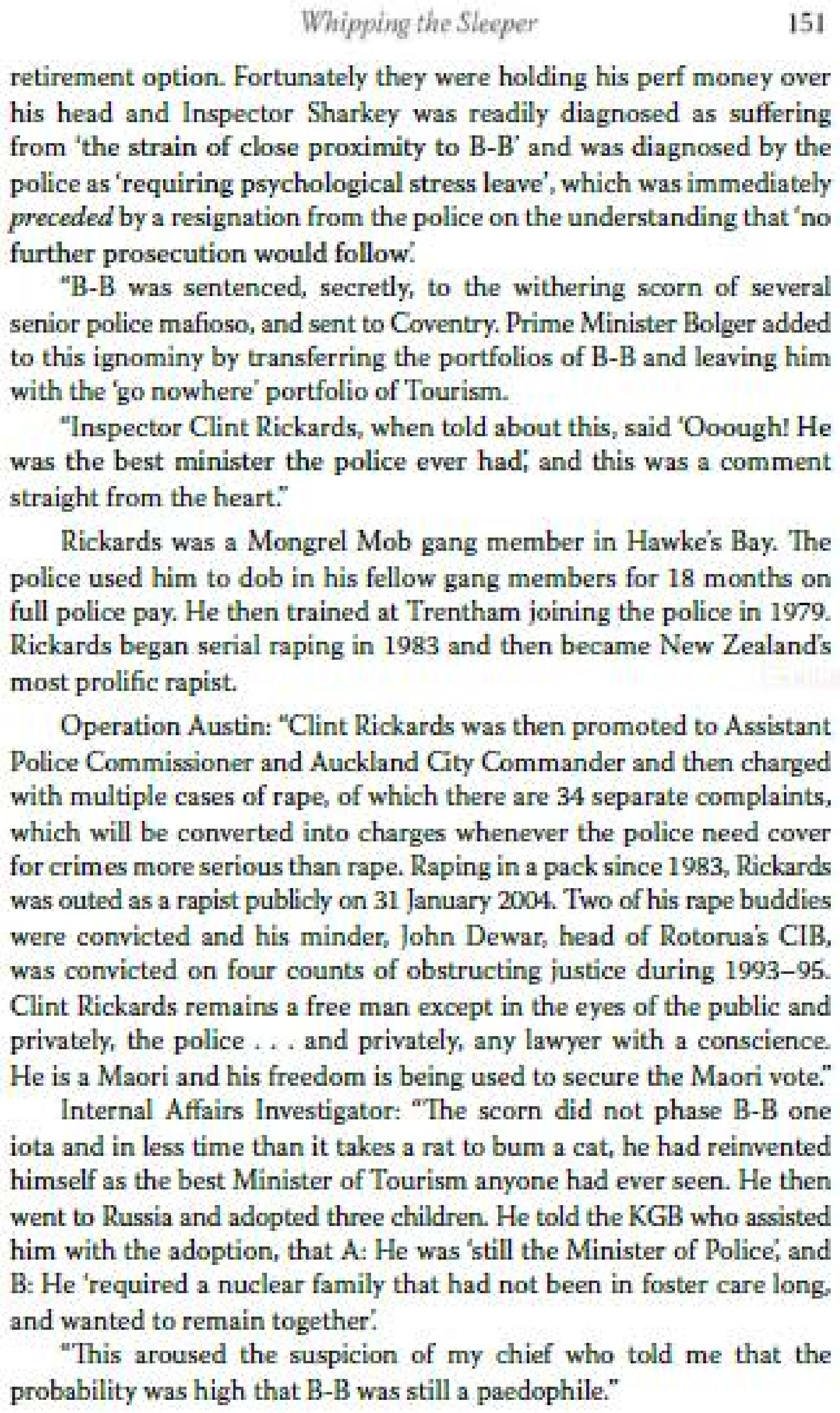

Whipping the Sleeper 151

retirement option. Fortunately they were holding his perf money over his head and Inspector Sharkey was readily diagnosed as suffering from 'the strain of close proximity to B-B' and was diagnosed by the police as 'requiring psychological stress leave', which was immediately *preceded* by a resignation from the police on the understanding that 'no further prosecution would follow'.

"B-B was sentenced, secretly, to the withering scorn of several senior police mafioso, and sent to Coventry. Prime Minister Bolger added to this ignominy by transferring the portfolios of B-B and leaving him with the 'go nowhere' portfolio of Tourism.

"Inspector Clint Rickards, when told about this, said 'Ooough! He was the best minister the police ever had', and this was a comment straight from the heart."

Rickards was a Mongrel Mob gang member in Hawke's Bay. The police used him to dob in his fellow gang members for 18 months on full police pay. He then trained at Trentham joining the police in 1979. Rickards began serial raping in 1983 and then became New Zealand's most prolific rapist.

Operation Austin: "Clint Rickards was then promoted to Assistant Police Commissioner and Auckland City Commander and then charged with multiple cases of rape, of which there are 34 separate complaints, which will be converted into charges whenever the police need cover for crimes more serious than rape. Raping in a pack since 1983, Rickards was outed as a rapist publicly on 31 January 2004. Two of his rape buddies were convicted and his minder, John Dewar, head of Rotorua's CIB, was convicted on four counts of obstructing justice during 1993–95. Clint Rickards remains a free man except in the eyes of the public and privately, the police . . . and privately, any lawyer with a conscience. He is a Maori and his freedom is being used to secure the Maori vote."

Internal Affairs Investigator: "The scorn did not phase B-B one iota and in less time than it takes a rat to bum a cat, he had reinvented himself as the best Minister of Tourism anyone had ever seen. He then went to Russia and adopted three children. He told the KGB who assisted him with the adoption, that A: He was 'still the Minister of Police', and B: He 'required a nuclear family that had not been in foster care long, and wanted to remain together'.

"This aroused the suspicion of my chief who told me that the probability was high that B-B was still a paedophile."

Guillaume Boglio - gboglio@yahoo.fr - 31 Dec 201

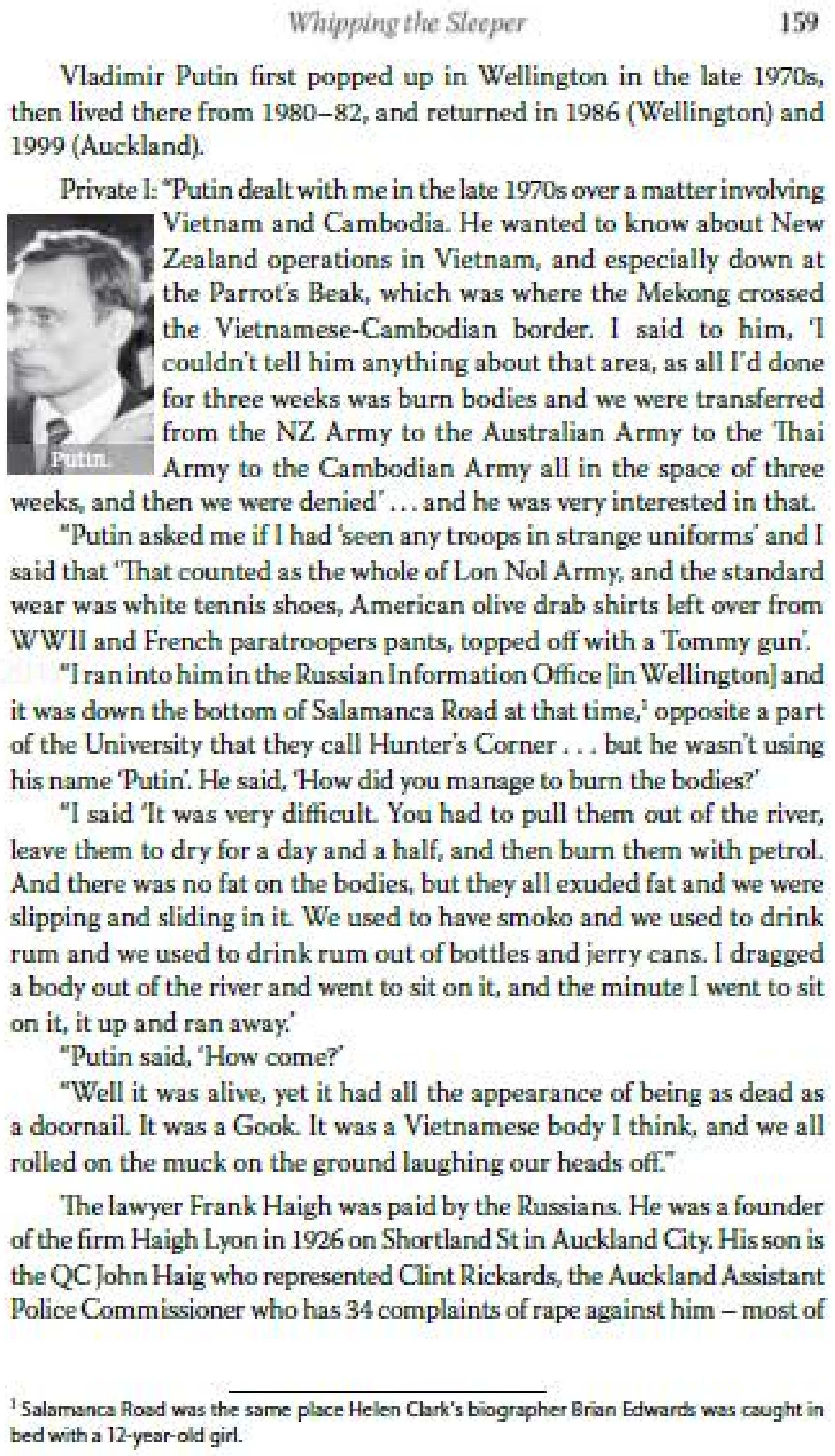

Whipping the Sleeper 159

Vladimir Putin first popped up in Wellington in the late 1970s, then lived there from 1980–82, and returned in 1986 (Wellington) and 1999 (Auckland).

Private 1: "Putin dealt with me in the late 1970s over a matter involving Vietnam and Cambodia. He wanted to know about New Zealand operations in Vietnam, and especially down at the Parrot's Beak, which was where the Mekong crossed the Vietnamese-Cambodian border. I said to him, 'I couldn't tell him anything about that area, as all I'd done for three weeks was burn bodies and we were transferred from the NZ Army to the Australian Army to the Thai Army to the Cambodian Army all in the space of three weeks, and then we were denied' . . . and he was very interested in that.

Putin.

"Putin asked me if I had 'seen any troops in strange uniforms' and I said that 'That counted as the whole of Lon Nol Army, and the standard wear was white tennis shoes, American olive drab shirts left over from WWII and French paratroopers pants, topped off with a Tommy gun'.

"I ran into him in the Russian Information Office [in Wellington] and it was down the bottom of Salamanca Road at that time,[1] opposite a part of the University that they call Hunter's Corner . . . but he wasn't using his name 'Putin'. He said, 'How did you manage to burn the bodies?'

"I said 'It was very difficult. You had to pull them out of the river, leave them to dry for a day and a half, and then burn them with petrol. And there was no fat on the bodies, but they all exuded fat and we were slipping and sliding in it. We used to have smoko and we used to drink rum and we used to drink rum out of bottles and jerry cans. I dragged a body out of the river and went to sit on it, and the minute I went to sit on it, it up and ran away.'

"Putin said, 'How come?'

"Well it was alive, yet it had all the appearance of being as dead as a doornail. It was a Gook. It was a Vietnamese body I think, and we all rolled on the muck on the ground laughing our heads off."

The lawyer Frank Haigh was paid by the Russians. He was a founder of the firm Haigh Lyon in 1926 on Shortland St in Auckland City. His son is the QC John Haig who represented Clint Rickards, the Auckland Assistant Police Commissioner who has 34 complaints of rape against him – most of them multiple rapes and most of them gang rapes, in which the police were the gang. "The firm . . . has produced many illustrious alumni including a Prime Minister, Members of Parliament, many Judges, Queens Counsel and other highly regarded lawyers . . . People make the difference."[1]

---

[1] Salamanca Road was the same place Helen Clark's biographer Brian Edwards was caught in bed with a 12-year-old girl.

The MP for Mt Albert Warren Freer also worked as a spy for the Russians. He held the Mt Albert seat for Labour for 34 years (1947–81), until he finally relinquished it to KGB agent Helen Clark in 1981, also a spy for the Russians.

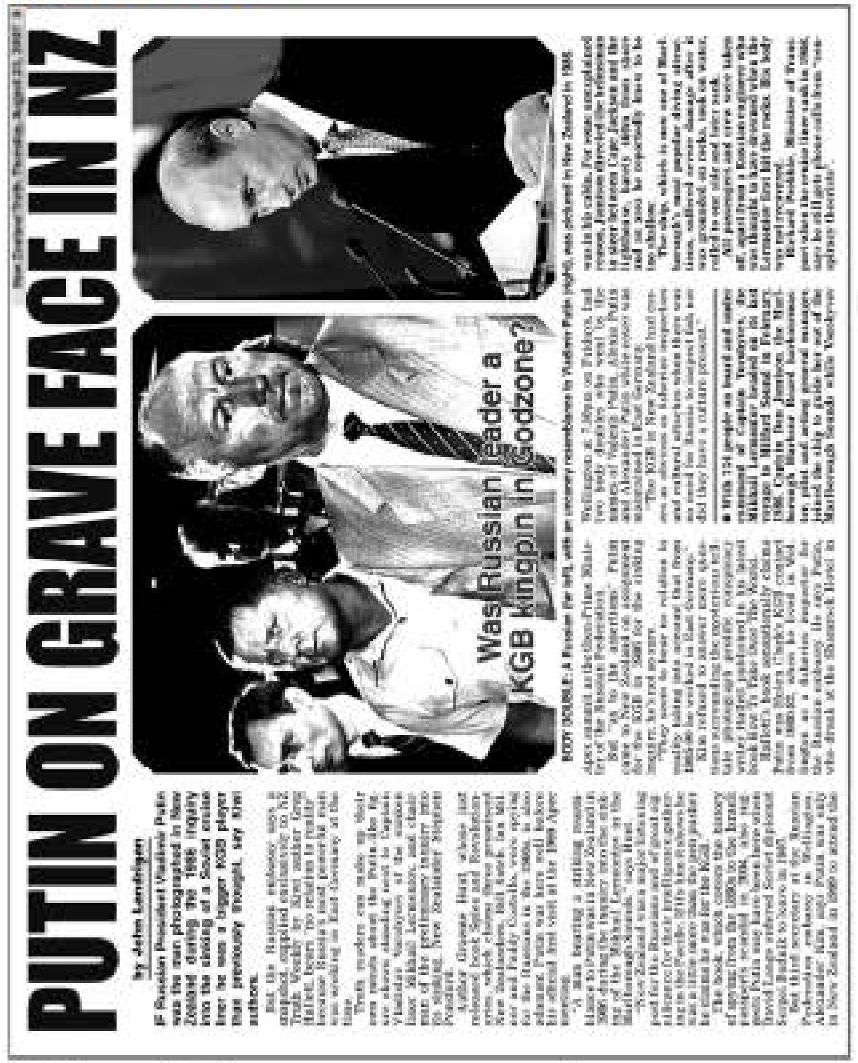

PUTIN ON GRAVE FACE IN NZ

Was Russian leader a KGB kingpin in Godzone?

by John Landrigan

---

[1] Haigh Lyon website.

'Don't expect justice from the New Zealand judiciary'."

British Private Investigator: "Guys, guys, look I used to work in Britain for MI-5 and C6. Then I came over to New Zealand and did some consulting work. It was my job to work through evidence and pull it apart and I can tell you the New Zealand police are very reliable – the most reliable police force in the world. You can always rely on the New Zealand police to manufacture evidence."

Author: "That's certainly what I've found . . . and the police, lawyers and judges work together. Some police are given permission to lie in court and some judges are guaranteed to believe everything a police officer says. Judge Gittos is one of these. He works on the police stitch-up and police informants scheme cases. I remember, after the poisoning, after my Cook Islands speech, I got Judge Gittos and he threw the book at me. Twelve hours after the poisoning I was driving in a straight line at 35 km/h and was charged with dangerous driving. During the hearing I exposed Constable Cassin as having two convictions for assault prior to entering the police. Gittos took my driver's licence and fined me $2200. I took it to the High Court. The police and District Court lost the hearing transcript, their notes and files, and one officer resigned. I got my licence back within the hour, then Cassin was put on the Internal Affairs' list of corrupt cops.

"What we need is a vote of 'no confidence' in the judiciary. I have files on the sexual improprieties of judges [Elias, Cartwright, Geoghegan, Hole, Mahoney] and heads of department [Aislabie]. I could use these files. I thought about it, but it's a whole other book, even in note form."

M: "You know, it can be argued, and quite easily, that judges are the biggest killers in New Zealand, more than heart attacks, road accidents and cancer."

Author: "That was in my first book, ***Are You My Father?***"

M: "That's still your best book."

Internal Affairs Officer: "What about Williams?"

Author: "Peter Williams QC? He's so tight nuns use his arsehole as a reference. For decades he's been refusing to pay people he's hired. He's ripped off so many people, if he paid them all, he'd lose one of his buildings. He keeps using 'the sick excuse'. The latest one is 'his prostate cancer count is over 10'."

Local Boy: "He's a Saggitarius. That's why he's so tight. He employed his daughter Katie Williams as his secretary for a number of years. Since then she's become an alcoholic and a P addict. She's a runaway self-destructive manic-depressive child, now in her 30s and showing

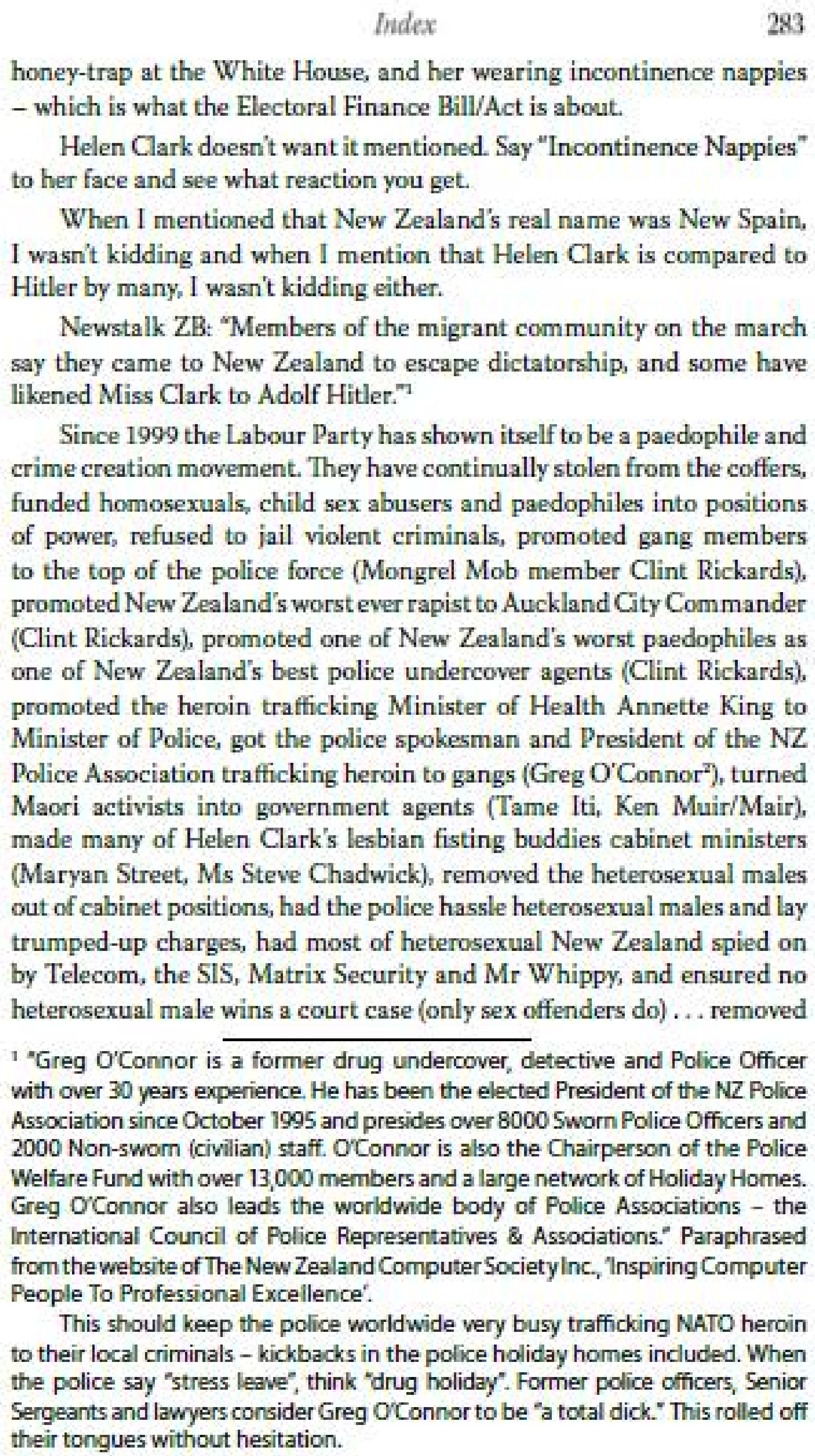

honey-trap at the White House, and her wearing incontinence nappies – which is what the Electoral Finance Bill/Act is about.

Helen Clark doesn't want it mentioned. Say "Incontinence Nappies" to her face and see what reaction you get.

When I mentioned that New Zealand's real name was New Spain, I wasn't kidding and when I mention that Helen Clark is compared to Hitler by many, I wasn't kidding either.

Newstalk ZB: "Members of the migrant community on the march say they came to New Zealand to escape dictatorship, and some have likened Miss Clark to Adolf Hitler."[1]

Since 1999 the Labour Party has shown itself to be a paedophile and crime creation movement. They have continually stolen from the coffers, funded homosexuals, child sex abusers and paedophiles into positions of power, refused to jail violent criminals, promoted gang members to the top of the police force (Mongrel Mob member Clint Rickards), promoted New Zealand's worst ever rapist to Auckland City Commander (Clint Rickards), promoted one of New Zealand's worst paedophiles as one of New Zealand's best police undercover agents (Clint Rickards), promoted the heroin trafficking Minister of Health Annette King to Minister of Police, got the police spokesman and President of the NZ Police Association trafficking heroin to gangs (Greg O'Connor[2]), turned Maori activists into government agents (Tame Iti, Ken Muir/Mair), made many of Helen Clark's lesbian fisting buddies cabinet ministers (Maryan Street, Ms Steve Chadwick), removed the heterosexual males out of cabinet positions, had the police hassle heterosexual males and lay trumped-up charges, had most of heterosexual New Zealand spied on by Telecom, the SIS, Matrix Security and Mr Whippy, and ensured no heterosexual male wins a court case (only sex offenders do) . . . removed

---

[1] "Greg O'Connor is a former drug undercover, detective and Police Officer with over 30 years experience. He has been the elected President of the NZ Police Association since October 1995 and presides over 8000 Sworn Police Officers and 2000 Non-sworn (civilian) staff. O'Connor is also the Chairperson of the Police Welfare Fund with over 13,000 members and a large network of Holiday Homes. Greg O'Connor also leads the worldwide body of Police Associations – the International Council of Police Representatives & Associations." Paraphrased from the website of The New Zealand Computer Society Inc., 'Inspiring Computer People To Professional Excellence'.

This should keep the police worldwide very busy trafficking NATO heroin to their local criminals – kickbacks in the police holiday homes included. When the police say "stress leave", think "drug holiday". Former police officers, Senior Sergeants and lawyers consider Greg O'Connor to be "a total dick." This rolled off their tongues without hesitation.

www.WreckedExotics.com
WRECKED
POLICE

A picture is worth a thousand words, so here's the words –
'Police defensive driving skills at their best'.
This happened in Auckland under the watchful eye of
Police Association President Greg O'Connor, Area Commander Clint Rickards,
and Combined Investigation Unit Enquiries Constable James Matewhinau Cassin.
I can see how they wrote off the car.
I wonder how they wrote off the report?
Photo courtesy of Jamie Beatie Lockett, 2006.

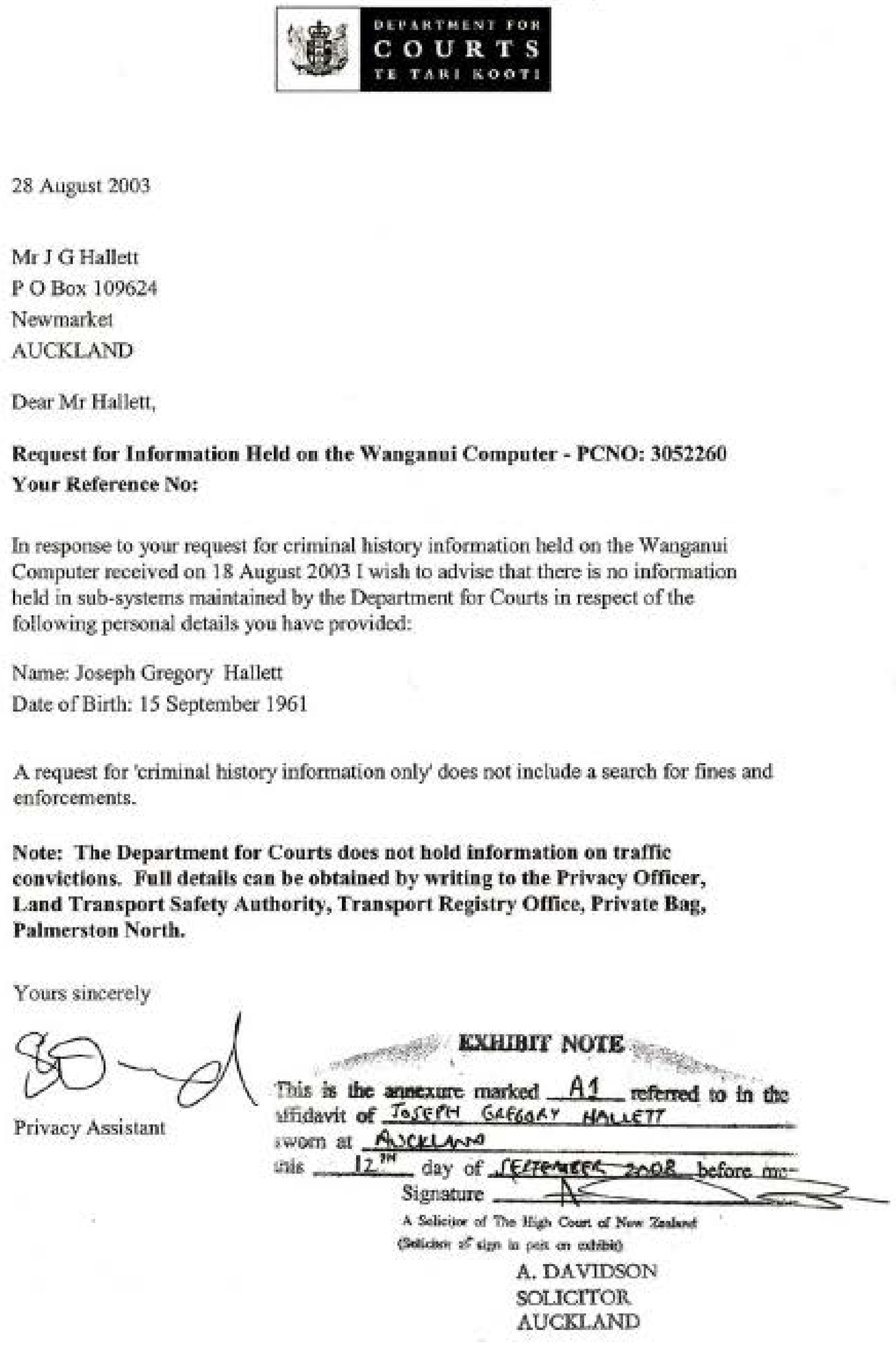

DEPARTMENT FOR
COURTS
TE TARI KOOTI

28 August 2003

Mr J G Hallett
P O Box 109624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett,

Request for Information Held on the Wanganui Computer - PCNO: 3052260
Your Reference No:

In response to your request for criminal history information held on the Wanganui Computer received on 18 August 2003 I wish to advise that there is no information held in sub-systems maintained by the Department for Courts in respect of the following personal details you have provided:

Name: Joseph Gregory Hallett
Date of Birth: 15 September 1961

A request for 'criminal history information only' does not include a search for fines and enforcements.

Note: The Department for Courts does not hold information on traffic convictions. Full details can be obtained by writing to the Privacy Officer, Land Transport Safety Authority, Transport Registry Office, Private Bag, Palmerston North.

Yours sincerely

Privacy Assistant

EXHIBIT NOTE

This is the annexure marked A1 referred to in the affidavit of JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
sworn at AUCKLAND
this 12TH day of SEPTEMBER 2008 before me
Signature
A Solicitor of The High Court of New Zealand
(Solicitor to sign in pen on exhibit)

A. DAVIDSON
SOLICITOR
AUCKLAND

Affidavit of Clint Rickard's Character

12 September 2008
Keith Berman, President
Auckland District Law Society
Chancery Chambers
2-8 Chancery Street,
Auckland 1010
PO Box 58 or DX CP24001
Ph 303 5270
Fax: 309 3726
Email: reception@adls.org.nz

Re: Submission on Mr Clint Rickards' character

Keith Berman,

I have some information and complaints regarding Clint Rickards.
Please find attached the affidavit and exhibit.

Yours faithfully,

Joseph Gregory Hallett B.Arch
26 Lichfield Road, Parnell, Auckland
Ph 307 5880 M 0274 589 800

I, JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT, swear:

1. In May 1999, the police phoned me saying there was a warrant for my arrest, but they would not say what it was for. They asked me to pick it up from the Avondale Police Station. I went there, but the police couldn't find it. A month later, on 21 June 1999, I got a call from Ponsonby Constable Lynn Adamson. As agreed, I went in at 9 am the next day.
2. Constable Lynn Adamson would not tell me what the arrest warrant was for. She then took me into the Central Police Station where I was stripped of my wallet, credit and bank cards, keys, cheque book, pen, glasses, bag with paperwork, mobile phone, belt, and shoelaces. I was then placed in the Auckland Central basement police cells at 10.15 am.

   I still had not been told what I was under arrest for.
3. At 11.45 am I was handcuffed and transferred to the Auckland District Court cells. I was squeezed in the back seat of the police Falcon between Superintendent Clint Rickards (who was officially the district manager working of the Waikato Police 100 km away) and another officer of the same size. There wasn't enough room and they squeezed into me the whole journey and did their best to depersonalised me by joking amongst themselves:

   "So what's it like in the Waikato? . . . Who's down there now?"
4. I was placed in an Auckland District Court cell with another, then transferred three cells down to an empty cell. I was then joined by the vice president of the Papakura chapter of Black Power. He was schizophrenic and specialised in boxing. I believe this was arranged by the former Mongrel Mob gang member Superintendent Clint Rickards.
5. I believe Rickards plan was to have me beaten up, without the police doing it.
6. Fortunately, I was saved by a ham sandwich. Superintendent Clint Rickards failed to take into account that I only ate fish. I gave the ham sandwich to the 2IC of Black Power and that kept him busy. The rest of the time I asked him how the writing got on the walls. He explained how he stuck the inside of a pen up his arse, pulled it out in the cell, squeezed the ink on his finger, then wrote on the walls.
7. The 2IC of Black Power was clearly schizophrenic, so I kept asking him the same question over and over again. After he had told the story, he would say, "Who are you?" and I would ask him how the writing got on the wall . . . certainly filled in the time.
8. At the latest possible time I was arraigned before a District Court judge, at 4.15 pm. I didn't understand the charge. The police produced no evidence. The judge pointed out that the police produced no evidence, and queried what the charge meant.
9. I was set free.

10. I was not driven or escorted back to the Auckland Central Police Station. I had to walk without shoelaces, money, bank cards, or phone. When I picked up my gear off Mr A. Dunhill. No time was given.
11. The entire day was an exercise in intimidation. It was carried out by Superintendent Clint Rickards and Constable Lynn Adamson (LAF467).
12. Clint Rickards was later promoted to Auckland City District Commander and Assistant Police Commissioner and Lynn Adamson was promoted to Detective Sergeant, one of only one or two female Detective Sergeants per section.
13. It seems that the police who attack from orders on high, are promoted without resistance, or as we like to say, "promoted faster than a NATO paedophile".
14. I was going through a custody battle at the time.
15. This was intimidation to give up.
16. I won custody in 2002. It took 8 years. During that time I had around 20 false police charges laid. These have continued are are now around 28 false police charges.
17. The primary requirement of a paedophile is that the biological father is removed. The police carry this out through Protection Orders and VOI number plates – Vehicles Of Interest.
18. It would appear that the police are a paedophile and crime creation movement.
19. Auckland City District Commander and Assistant Police Commissioner Clint Rickards and Detective Sergeant Lynn Adamson attacked me on 22 June 1999 in a manufactured crime created by police paperwork. As a result, I was placed in three police cells for a day. All of this was unwarranted. I seek compensation.
20. On 18 August 2003 I wrote to the Department For Courts, Wellington. They checked with the Wanganui Computer and confirmed on 28 August 2003 that I had no criminal record. (See Exhibit "A1")
21. Yet when the police read my name over coms they read out a whole raft of convictions, none of which are real, or convictions. These are charges the police wanted me to have in order to treat me in the manner they wanted to treat me – depersonalised, and with violence. The police are a crime creation movement.
22. Nine weeks after the hearing and conviction for crimes I did not commit, Superintendent Clint Rickards was made Auckland City District Commander and Assistant Police Commissioner on 16 October 2003.
23. I initiated a complaint on 17 November 2003 with a letter to the Police Head Quarters in Wellington.
24. Six days after they received this letter, Auckland City District Commander Clint Rickards was assigned to my case, as the Officer in Charge of the Police Commissioner's Support Group on 25 November 2003.

25. Ten weeks later Auckland City District Commander/Assistant Police Commissioner Clint Rickards was publicly outed as a rapist, on 31 January 2004.
26. The next day (1 February 2004) it was made public that Prime Minister Helen Clark was aware of the rape allegations against Rickards before he was promoted.
27. The next day (2 February 2004) Rickards took leave for three weeks. He was then stood down for 3 years and 10 months and remained on full pay.
28 Clint Rickards was being used for his skills in violence and boiler-plating.
29. So Clint Rickards was suspended on full pay from 31 January 2004 to 22 November 2007, charged with rape and kidnapping.
30. During this period Rickards received close to NZ$2 million from the Police. This looks like a reward.
31. During this period (1 February 2004 to 22 November 2007) Rickards trained to be a lawyer and dealt in methamphetamine (P) from Scotland St in Freemans' Bay.
32. Within two months of Clint Rickards being stood down, the chief historian Michael King was murdered.
33. The double-murder took place on the Waikato-Auckland border. Rickards had been in command of both areas.
34. With Rickards stood down, it stopped him from investigating, but was perfect cover for him playing a role.
35. It also stopped Rickards from taking any blame for the case remaining unsolved.
36. Even Wikipedia, Michael King, states: "The cause of the crash was reported by the police at the time to be a complete mystery as speed was not a factor and investigators have little idea why the car would veer off a straight road."
37. Michael King was poisoned with epicac on the steering wheel of his Subaru. When he picked up an apple and ate it, it caused fast and slow heart palpatations, hot and cold sweats, and vomiting, enough for him to career off the road.
38. The same thing happened to me 18 months earlier, so it was probably the same killer, as the same methods were used.
39. The devices used were epicac on the back of the steering wheel and an impact activated-explosive on the petrol tank et cetera.
40. "Epicac and an impact-activated explosive.
"There was no investigation into the burnt-out car or the Mossad couple travelling behind them. Michael and Maria were both burnt to a cinder and had to be identified from dental records. As appeasement, Michael's daughter is now an award-winning writer."[1]

---

[1] New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide, 2007, pp. 9–10.

41. According to www.peterellis.org.nz/people/ClintRickards/timeline Clint Rickards left Edmund Rice College in Rotorua in 1978 and joined the police as a cadet in 1982.
42. Clint Rickards then became a Mongrel Mob member in the Hawke's Bay and was paid as a normal police officer (1978–79) while a gang member.
43. Clint Rickards is also a rapist, kidnapper, and paedophile with Louise Nicholas.
44. According to Operation Austin, Rickards raped over 34 women in Rotorua alone.
45. When Clint Rickards was in the New Zealand Police he acted as a hitman and trained others to do the same.
46. The warrant for my arrest in 1999 in Auckland actually related to a different person in a domestic in Christchurch. The 'top cop' Clint Rickards was involved and he attempted to have me beaten up in a cell in Auckland on 22 June 1999.
47. Clint Rickards worked with the Ombudsman to suppress written confirmation of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin Cassin's criminal record – a fellow Police hitman. Both Clint Rickards and the Ombudsman were then promoted. The convicted criminal Constable James Matewhinau Cassin retained his role.
48. Clint Rickards, former Superintendent, former Auckland City District Commander, former Assistant Police Commissioner, is of insufficient and wrong character to be admitted to the bar at law. Rickards was an intimidating and violent police hitman. Rickards is a disgraced police officer and person. Rickards fails on all issues of credibility. Rickards is of the 2% that should not be admitted. Rickards should never have been allowed to study law at the University of Auckland. The Auckland District Law Society should refuse Rickards a character approval certificate. The High Court should refuse Clint Rickards his admission as a barrister.

SWORN at Auckland ....

This 12t day of September 2008

Before me ....

~~Deputy Registrar~~ / A Solicitor of the High Court of New Zealand

A. DAVIDSON
SOLICITOR
AUCKLAND

Results

On 10 November 2008 I heard through the grapevine that Clint Rickards' application to the Bar had been rejected.

So on 12 November 2008, I phoned the Auckland District Law Society who confirmed they "only had limited powers" and had "referred it [Rickards file] to the New Zealand Law Society, Head Office if you like, the NZLS had overall responsibilities" and "we haven't heard anything further".

Author: "When was the referral made?"

ADLS: "Oh, about a month ago, I don't have the exact dates."

New Zealand Herald, 13 November 2008: "Clint Rickards . . . applied publicly to the Auckland District Law Society as a matter of course to be accepted as a practising lawyer, but the organisation passed his application to the New Zealand Law Society."

13 November 2008: TV1 – state TV – announced that the Law Society had found Clint Rickards to be a "fit and proper person" and found no reason to stop him from becoming a lawyer.

21 November 2008: TV1 – state TV – announced that "Clint Rickards was accepted to the bar today . . . and will be working with children".

Television is a child sex abuse and child drug movement.

The New Zealand Judiciary is a crime creation and paedophile movement.

The New Zealand Law Society is considered by many lawyers to be an occult mafia.

I agree.

It is clear and substantive that Clint Rickards is a rapist, a paedophile, a class A drug trafficker, an accessory to murder, and an accessory to attempted murder.

That the New Zealand Law Society would accept a rapist, paedophile, drug trafficker, and murderer to work with children as a lawyer, is indicative of just how much of a train wreck the New Zealand Judiciary is.

It is clear and substantive that the New Zealand Judiciary is a train wreck.

The following is clear and substantive[2]:

"When you go through the courts the advice most commonly given is:

> **'Don't expect justice in the New Zealand judiciary'.**
>
> **The New Zealand judiciary is there to serve white-collar criminals and sexual deviants . . . to serve injustice rapidly, and to delay any cases of merit, and then find for the white-collar criminal or the sexual deviant (often both). To support this, first all judges have to be criminals. Here's how it works:**
>
> **A lawyer is a train wreck with a law degree. The most corrupt lawyers become judges. This makes the judges the most corrupt train wrecks who have kept good books while being right bastards with two faces . . . and lawyers first serve the courts, then they serve their client – often on a plate.**
>
> **The Chief Justice is always the most corrupt judge and the most qualified train wreck. The quickest way to become the Chief Justice is to marry a paedophile . . .**
>
> **So what hope is there for the New Zealand justice system? Once the law has downgraded itself enough, it gets replaced with 'lore' . . . If we were to act under lore and remove the train wrecks out of the judiciary, half the positions would be vacant. If we removed those who are sexually compromised, the only people left would be the cleaners . . . University lecturers are now querying the judiciary . . ."**

---

[2] *New Zealand, A Blackmailer's Guide*, 2007, pp. 208–10.

New Zealand Herald 13 November 2008: "Former assistant police commissioner Clint Rickards has been deemed a 'fit and proper person' to practise as a lawyer by the New Zealand Law Society.

After considering a number of applications for and against Mr Rickards' admission, the society's **Fitness for Practice Committee** granted him a **certificate of character**. The Law Society's president, John Marshall QC, today said opposition to Mr Rickard's admission to the Bar was mainly prompted by "two high profile criminal trials" . . . the committee . . . agonised over it . . . 'It heard all the evidence and the members of that committee are highly respected and very experienced lawyers from right around the country.'

But he said the committee decided 'there were insufficient grounds to refuse a certificate of character' . . . noting that:

* The trials involved conduct that occurred over 20 years ago;

* The applicant had since had a distinguished career in the Police [in crime creation];

* The applicant was acquitted of the historic charges;

* If the Law Society refuses a certificate of character, the applicant can apply to the High Court for admission **[shifting the blame]** and, in other cases, the Court has taken a 'forward looking' approach **[to where the law is a more overt occult mafia]**.

Ms Nicholas was one of those who sent in a submission on Mr Rickards' application: 'Rickards should not be admitted to the bar because of his previous 'abhorrent behaviour'. Clinton Rickards had his opportunity to clear his name and prove his alleged innocence by way of the police internal disciplinary hearing last year but chose not to clear his name in the 11th hour and resigned from the New Zealand police . . . My concern is for women who have been sexually violated and will inevitably come up against him in a court room.'

Rickards: '[I have] not done anything illegal and deserved another chance **[oxymoron]** . . . the public policy area interests me **[access to unprotected children]** and law interests me **[a paedophile movement with legal protection]** because it's time I gave back to my community . . . With my 25–28 years' experience **[as a criminal in uniform]**, I am in a unique position to give back to my people because it's got to stop **[abuse, violence, *New Zealand Herald*]** . . . we have to start listening to these people **[grooming unprotected children]**. I feel as a Maori . . . which I really enjoyed . . . law is a great profession **[to hide behind]** . . . I want to be a person **[who fucks children in a suit]** . . ."

Clint Rickards, why didn't you start listening to your rape victims from 1983 when they started clearly enunciating with trembling fear: **"No"**.

As a gang member, snitch, rapist, paedophile, drug dealer, accessory to a government murder, and now a lawyer, who will listen to you? Certainly runaway Maori youth will be interested in how you got away with it, and I'm sure you will train many into the ways of a grooming paedophile. Every lawyer in the country will be able to say:

"It is clear and substantive that Clint Rickards is a rapist, paedophile and drug dealer. At least I'm not as bad as Clint Rickards."

TV3 News, 'Trust stands by decision to employ Clint Rickards', 21 November 2008, 6:21 p.m.: "The Waipareira Trust is standing by its wish to employ former top cop Clint Rickards . . . Women's Refuge wants the trust to have a rethink on the grounds that 'Rickards admitted he had taken part in group sex with a teenager [13–19] . . . his actions mean he is not a good role model for teens. He was a police officer who took advantage of a young 18 year old woman in a situation that was beyond her control' . . . before he can work as a lawyer Rickards will need to be admitted to the bar in a ceremony at the High Court."

CAREER CONCERN
3news.co.nz
See it first!
3news.co.nz
WAIPAREIRA
TRUST
Nau mai Haere mai
Work and Income

"...he may end up advising troubled young women and men whose difficulties might stem directly from their lives being blighted by sexual abuse."

District Court Hearing I

Fines and Appeal

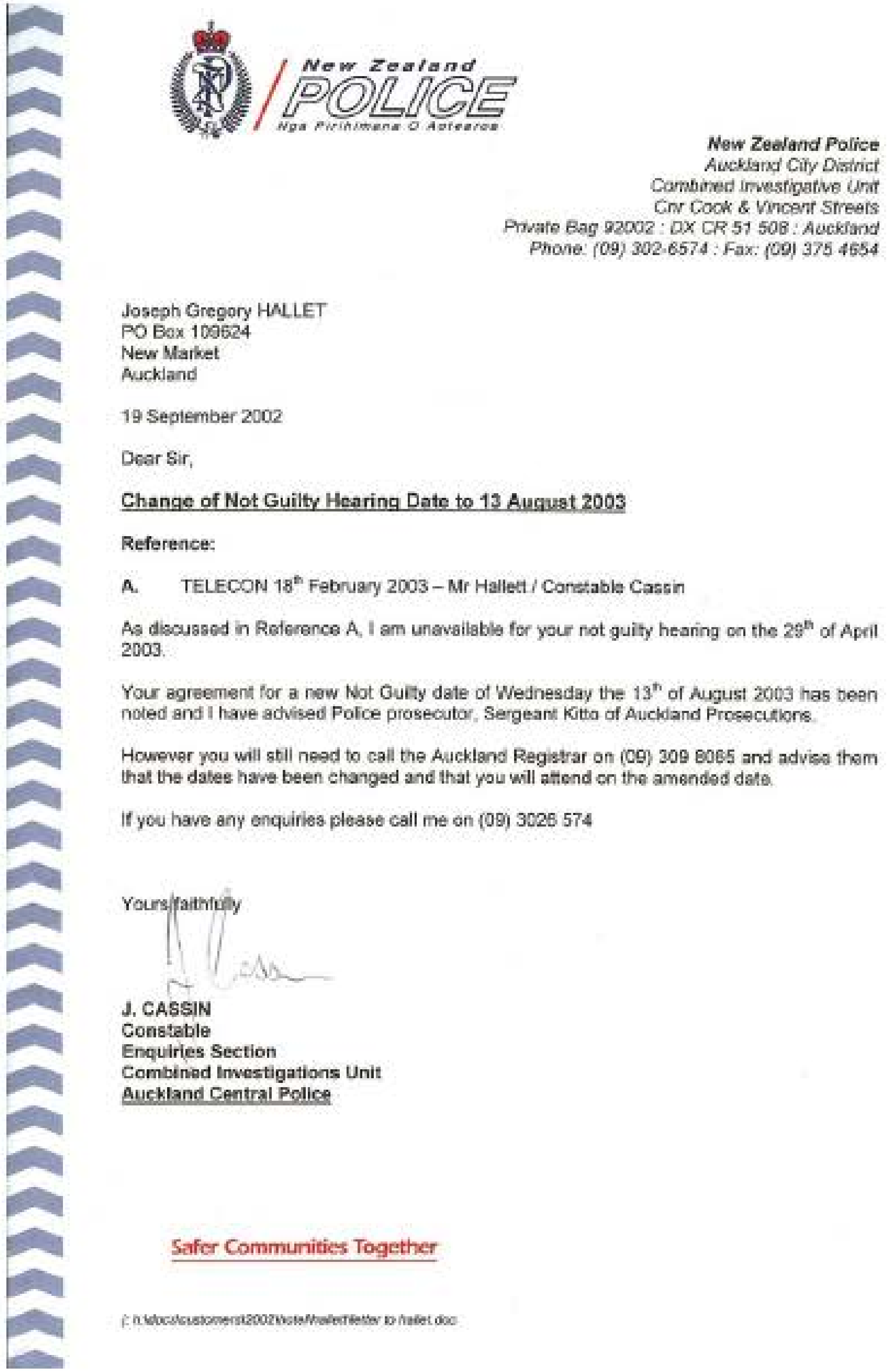

New Zealand
POLICE
Nga Pirihimana O Aotearoa

New Zealand Police
Auckland City District
Combined Investigative Unit
Cnr Cook & Vincent Streets
Private Bag 92002 : DX CR 51 508 : Auckland
Phone: (09) 302-6574 : Fax: (09) 375 4654

Joseph Gregory HALLET
PO Box 109624
New Market
Auckland

19 September 2002

Dear Sir,

Change of Not Guilty Hearing Date to 13 August 2003

Reference:

A. TELECON 18th February 2003 – Mr Hallett / Constable Cassin

As discussed in Reference A, I am unavailable for your not guilty hearing on the 29th of April 2003.

Your agreement for a new Not Guilty date of Wednesday the 13th of August 2003 has been noted and I have advised Police prosecutor, Sergeant Kitto of Auckland Prosecutions.

However you will still need to call the Auckland Registrar on (09) 309 8065 and advise them that the dates have been changed and that you will attend on the amended date.

If you have any enquiries please call me on (09) 3026 574

Yours faithfully

J. CASSIN
Constable
Enquiries Section
Combined Investigations Unit
Auckland Central Police

Safer Communities Together

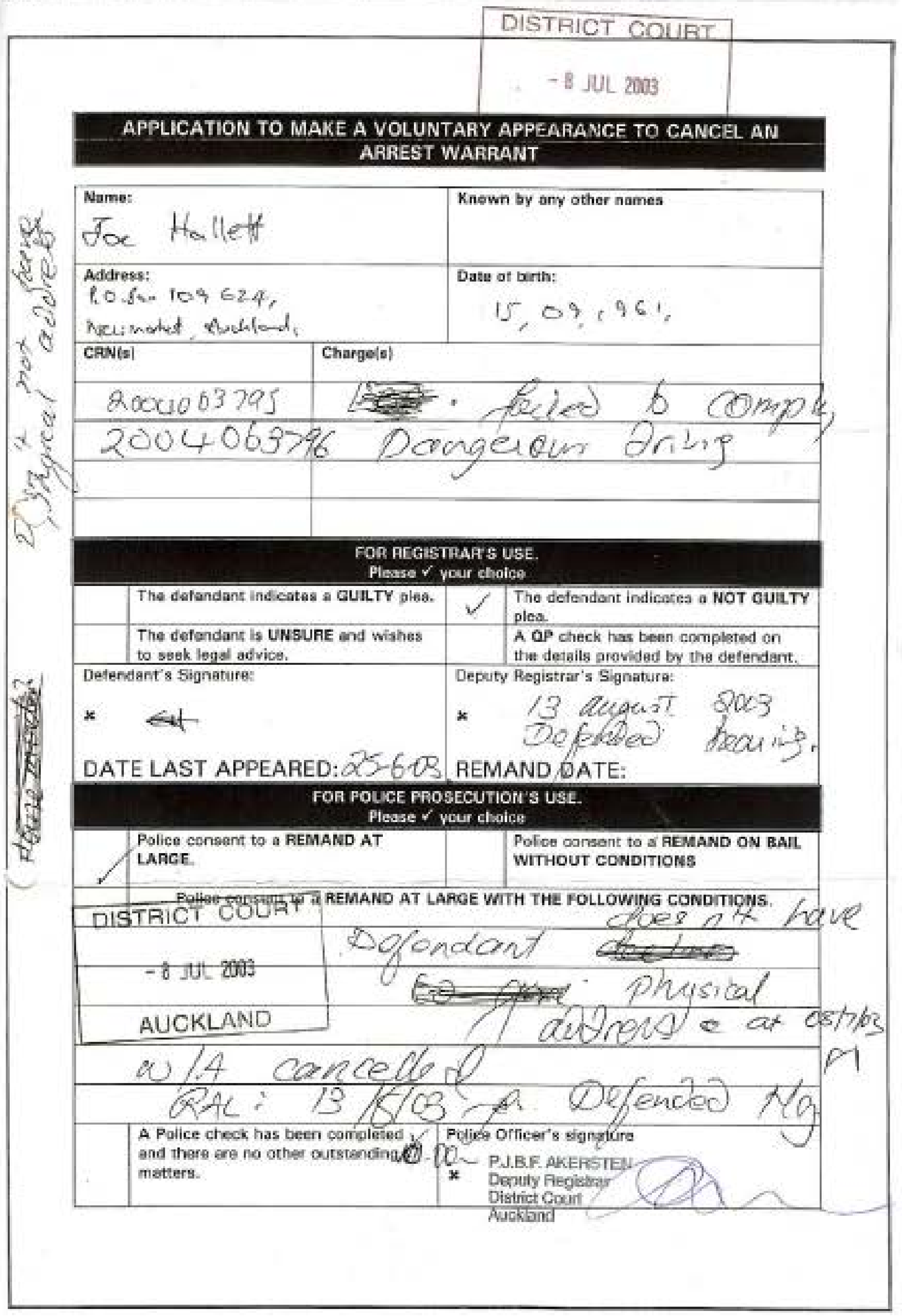

DISTRICT COURT
- 8 JUL 2003

APPLICATION TO MAKE A VOLUNTARY APPEARANCE TO CANCEL AN ARREST WARRANT

Name: Joe Hallett	Known by any other names
Address: P.O. Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland,	Date of birth: 15, 09, 1961,

CRN(s)	Charge(s)
2004063795	[redacted] . failed to comply
2004063796	Dangerous driving

D, Original not being address

FOR REGISTRAR'S USE.
Please ✓ your choice

☐	The defendant indicates a **GUILTY** plea.	✓	The defendant indicates a **NOT GUILTY** plea.
☐	The defendant is **UNSURE** and wishes to seek legal advice.	☐	A QP check has been completed on the details provided by the defendant.

Defendant's Signature: ×

Deputy Registrar's Signature: × 13 August 2003 Defended hearing.

DATE LAST APPEARED: 25-6-03 REMAND DATE:

FOR POLICE PROSECUTION'S USE.
Please ✓ your choice

✓	Police consent to a **REMAND AT LARGE.**	☐	Police consent to a **REMAND ON BAIL WITHOUT CONDITIONS**

Police consent to a **REMAND AT LARGE WITH THE FOLLOWING CONDITIONS.**

DISTRICT COURT
- 8 JUL 2003
AUCKLAND

Defendant does not have ~~[illegible]~~ ~~[illegible]~~ physical address @ at 08/7/03 PM

W/A cancelled

RAL: 13/8/03 for Defended Hrg

A Police check has been completed and there are no other outstanding matters. ✓ 0-00

Police Officer's signature ×
P.J.B.F. AKERSTEN
Deputy Registrar
District Court
Auckland

IN THE DISTRICT COURT
AT AUCKLAND

CRN: 2004063795-96

THE POLICE

v

JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT

Hearing: 13 August 2003

Appearances: T Marsh for the Informant
The defendant in person

Decision: 13 August 2003

ORAL DECISION OF JUDGE J P GITTOS

Police Enforcement Scheme judge to crushed as a 2-bob watch.

---

[1] Mr Hallett is charged with two offences, one of dangerous driving which is said to have occurred on Beach Road and Customs Street on the evening of 23 August 2003, laid under s 35 of the Transport Act and also with a charge of failing to observe the requirement of a police officer that he keep his vehicle stationary when instructed to do so, that being laid under s 52(1)(c) of the Transport Act.

[2] The background to the matter is this. Mr Hallett was, on the evening in question, embarking upon a short journey from his home in Parnell to the bus station at Sky City in Hobson Street in order to pick up his 10-year-old daughter who was coming to visit him evidently in accordance with an access arrangement that he, as her father, enjoyed.

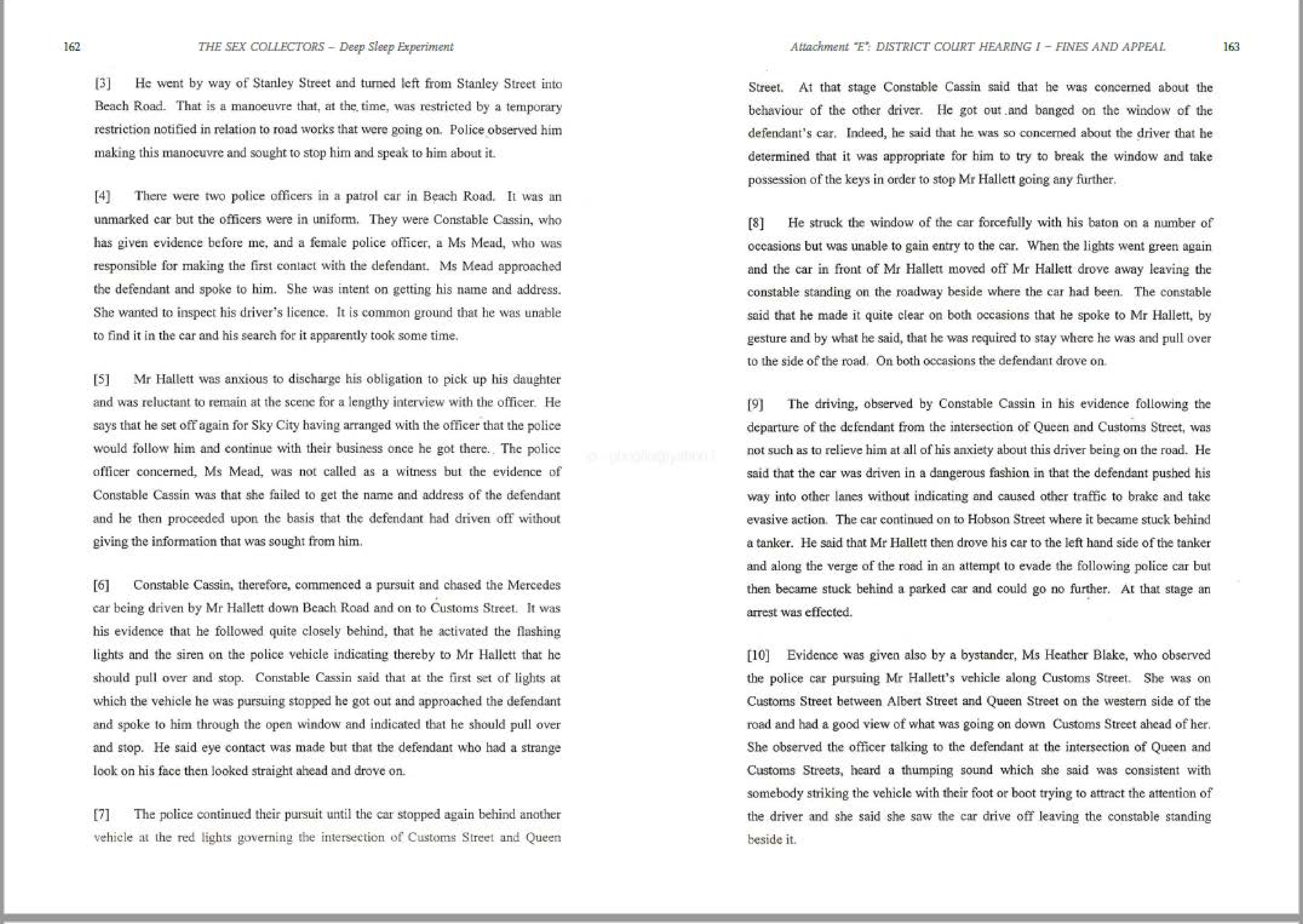

[3] He went by way of Stanley Street and turned left from Stanley Street into Beach Road. That is a manoeuvre that, at the time, was restricted by a temporary restriction notified in relation to road works that were going on. Police observed him making this manoeuvre and sought to stop him and speak to him about it.

[4] There were two police officers in a patrol car in Beach Road. It was an unmarked car but the officers were in uniform. They were Constable Cassin, who has given evidence before me, and a female police officer, a Ms Mead, who was responsible for making the first contact with the defendant. Ms Mead approached the defendant and spoke to him. She was intent on getting his name and address. She wanted to inspect his driver's licence. It is common ground that he was unable to find it in the car and his search for it apparently took some time.

[5] Mr Hallett was anxious to discharge his obligation to pick up his daughter and was reluctant to remain at the scene for a lengthy interview with the officer. He says that he set off again for Sky City having arranged with the officer that the police would follow him and continue with their business once he got there. The police officer concerned, Ms Mead, was not called as a witness but the evidence of Constable Cassin was that she failed to get the name and address of the defendant and he then proceeded upon the basis that the defendant had driven off without giving the information that was sought from him.

[6] Constable Cassin, therefore, commenced a pursuit and chased the Mercedes car being driven by Mr Hallett down Beach Road and on to Customs Street. It was his evidence that he followed quite closely behind, that he activated the flashing lights and the siren on the police vehicle indicating thereby to Mr Hallett that he should pull over and stop. Constable Cassin said that at the first set of lights at which the vehicle he was pursuing stopped he got out and approached the defendant and spoke to him through the open window and indicated that he should pull over and stop. He said eye contact was made but that the defendant who had a strange look on his face then looked straight ahead and drove on.

[7] The police continued their pursuit until the car stopped again behind another vehicle at the red lights governing the intersection of Customs Street and Queen Street. At that stage Constable Cassin said that he was concerned about the behaviour of the other driver. He got out and banged on the window of the defendant's car. Indeed, he said that he was so concerned about the driver that he determined that it was appropriate for him to try to break the window and take possession of the keys in order to stop Mr Hallett going any further.

[8] He struck the window of the car forcefully with his baton on a number of occasions but was unable to gain entry to the car. When the lights went green again and the car in front of Mr Hallett moved off Mr Hallett drove away leaving the constable standing on the roadway beside where the car had been. The constable said that he made it quite clear on both occasions that he spoke to Mr Hallett, by gesture and by what he said, that he was required to stay where he was and pull over to the side of the road. On both occasions the defendant drove on.

[9] The driving, observed by Constable Cassin in his evidence following the departure of the defendant from the intersection of Queen and Customs Street, was not such as to relieve him at all of his anxiety about this driver being on the road. He said that the car was driven in a dangerous fashion in that the defendant pushed his way into other lanes without indicating and caused other traffic to brake and take evasive action. The car continued on to Hobson Street where it became stuck behind a tanker. He said that Mr Hallett then drove his car to the left hand side of the tanker and along the verge of the road in an attempt to evade the following police car but then became stuck behind a parked car and could go no further. At that stage an arrest was effected.

[10] Evidence was given also by a bystander, Ms Heather Blake, who observed the police car pursuing Mr Hallett's vehicle along Customs Street. She was on Customs Street between Albert Street and Queen Street on the western side of the road and had a good view of what was going on down Customs Street ahead of her. She observed the officer talking to the defendant at the intersection of Queen and Customs Streets, heard a thumping sound which she said was consistent with somebody striking the vehicle with their foot or boot trying to attract the attention of the driver and she said she saw the car drive off leaving the constable standing beside it.

[11] She commented on the manner of driving of the vehicle after it left the lights and in her assessment other traffic was constrained to move out of the way to avoid collision with Mr Hallett as he rapidly changed lanes in an attempt to leave the police car behind him. Both Mr Cassin and Ms Blake commented that the traffic was quite heavy at the time and there were a good number of pedestrians about and that is, of course, of particular significance to the charge of dangerous driving.

[12] The defendant himself gave evidence. He said that his understanding of his arrangement with Constable Mead, to whom he first spoke, was that she was aware of his concern to get to the bus station in order to pick up his daughter and that she agreed to postpone further enquiry of him, about his name and address and the like, until he had dealt with that. He said that he had already given his name, address and telephone number and that she was having difficulty writing it down because of the particularly lengthy street name in Parnell that he had given her.

[13] He said that he gave her his credit card as an indication of his identity and that he was happy for her to retain it and to follow him to the bus station and resume his discussion with her then. It was his evidence that she stood back from the car and agreed to his proposition, that the police should follow him to the police station, and his evidence was that when he initially saw the police car behind him he did see at some stage lights come on and even heard a siren but construed that in the context of his arrangement that he said he had with Constable Mead, as meaning that the police were affording him the courtesy of an escort as he went about the business of picking up his daughter.

[14] That seemed to be something that Mr Hallett was appreciative of and seemed to find unremarkable. He accepts, however, and accepted finally in cross examination, that by the time matters had reached the stage where Constable Cassin was out of the police car and banging on the side of his window, that the police were plainly indicating to him that he should stop. At that stage he accepts that he did not stop. He did not remain where he was but did drive off. He explains that in terms that by then he was afraid of Constable Cassin because of the violent way in which the constable was banging on the car window with his baton. He did not address the earlier episode when the constable spoke to him through the window at the Fort Street intersection.

[15] The issues I have to decide are whether the defendant was aware that he was required to keep the car stationary, to pull to one side, and being so aware whether he did, in fact, do so. There can be no question that he did not keep his car stationary, that he did not pull over. The remaining issues are, was he aware that he was required to, was there any justification for him not doing so, and so far as his driving is concerned, was it dangerous after he moved off in disregard of the constable's instruction?

[16] I have no doubt at all that the defendant was well aware that he was required to stop the car or keep it where it was, or not to drive off, and I have no doubt that he disregarded that instruction. He can hardly have been unaware that he was required to stop and, indeed, he admitted as much in his evidence. While his admission relates only to the position that had been reached when Constable Cassin had been banging on the window with his baton it seems to me plain that Mr Hallett must have realised well before that the police required him to stop or to pull over, but he kept going.

[17] I do not accept his evidence, as a matter of fact, that he had an arrangement with Constable Mead that the police would escort him or follow him to Sky City. That would indeed be an extraordinary arrangement and particularly so in view of Mr Hallett's declared view of the police, that they were personally out to harass him. He may well have believed initially that that was what was happening but by the time the police had put on the lights and siren and Constable Cassin had got out and spoken to him the first time he must have been very well aware that no such arrangement was in place.

[18] As to his driving after he drove on from Queen Street, even if it was not dangerous before that to have been pursued by the police through Beach Road and Customs Street I am well satisfied that his driving after that, on Customs Street and through into Hobson Street, was dangerous having regard to the evidence not only of Constable Cassin but of the bystander Ms Blake. In particular, he was seen to

accelerate and push his way in to other lanes of traffic causing other traffic to take evasive action and to drive through a red traffic light in an attempt to avoid the pursuing police vehicle.

[19] Mr Hallett has raised, in a sense, a defence of justification or necessity in that he says the police were in fact actively harassing him. He gave it as his evidence that he is a person who has been actively involved in the cause of separated fathers of children and the difficulties that they have in getting fair access to their children. He is openly critical of the police in regard to that sort of law enforcement and in regard to other matters as well. He is openly critical of the Family Courts in this country and considers that they pursue a role which is designed to disadvantage persons in his position. He produced to the Court a book he had written on the subject.

[20] Mr Hallett gave quite lengthy evidence about what he had done immediately prior to these events. He said that he had been overseas in the Cook Islands delivering an address to an audience of persons there on the subject of the problems of separated fathers which he said was well received. He said he left his car at the airport and when he returned there was an unaccustomed stickiness about the driving wheel, the steering wheel and the gear shift and that his driver's licence had mysteriously disappeared from the vehicle so that he could not find it that evening when he was required to do so by Constable Mead.

[21] He said that after driving his car he had become ill with a vomiting infection and he believed that somebody had deliberately contaminated the steering wheel and the gear shift of his car with a substance which he says is used in hospitals to provoke vomiting. It was his contention that the police had sabotaged his car in this way and removed his driver's licence, then subsequently provoked the incident at Stanley Street in order to harass him.

[22] He said that he had been harassed by the police for some time and wrongly entrapped and arrested on a previous occasion. He stated his belief that such harassment was related to his views about child custody issues. He contended that the police intercepted him at Stanley Street for the express but undisclosed purpose of preventing him from picking up his daughter from the bus station.

[23] In my view these beliefs, even if sincerely held, are out of touch with reality and entirely unsupported by the evidence I have heard. I find both charges to be proved. On the charge of dangerous driving you are convicted and fined $800 and ordered to pay court costs of $130.00. You are disqualified from holding or obtaining a driver's licence for six months commencing today. On the other charge you are convicted and fined $250.00 and ordered to pay Court costs of $130.00.

J P Gittos
District Court Judge

File: I:\JTK\Judges\Judge Gittos\wkspc\HallettG (Judgments Template)_JTK_221.doc; User: cs

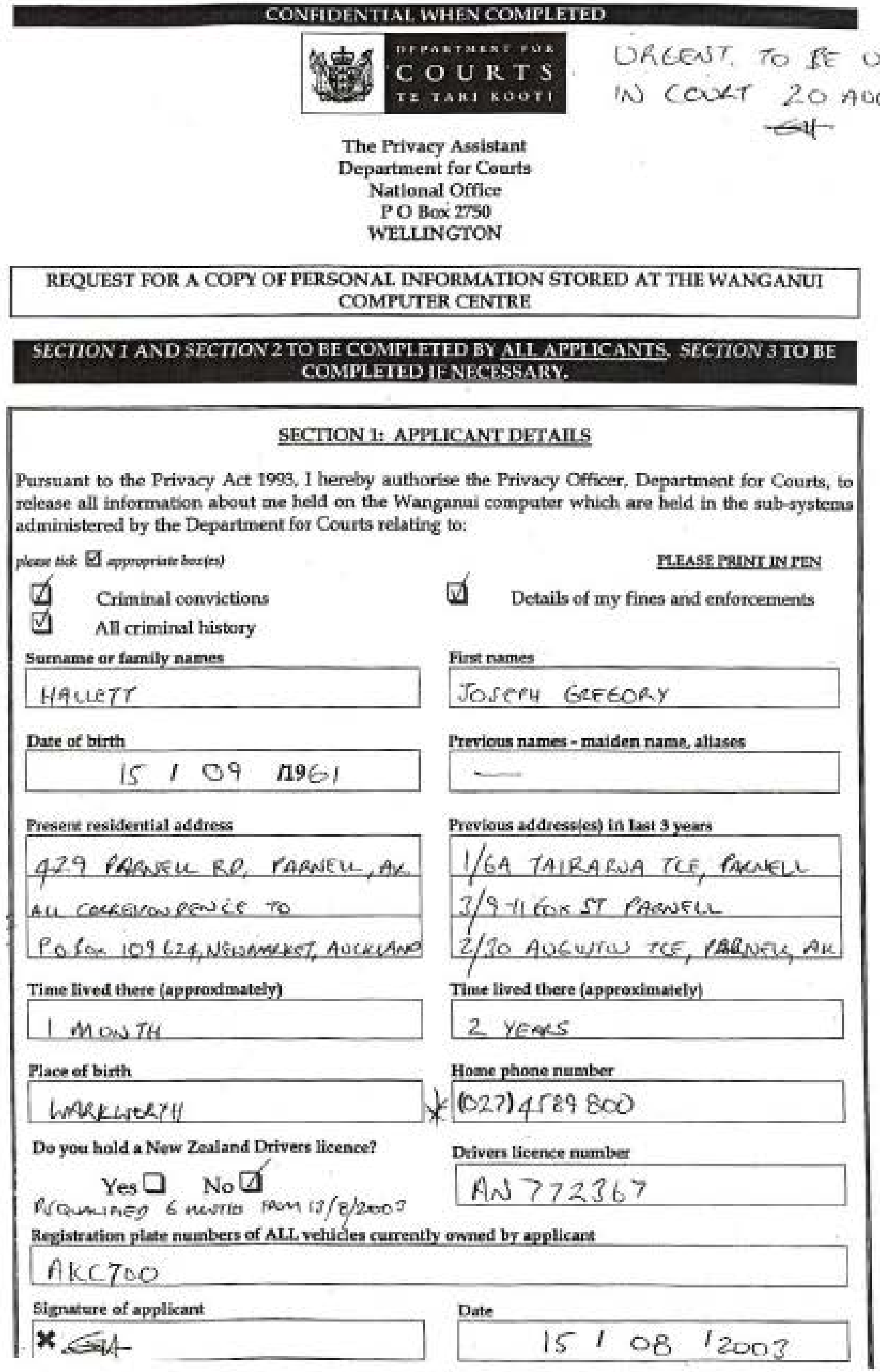

CONFIDENTIAL WHEN COMPLETED

DEPARTMENT FOR COURTS TE TARI KOOTI

URGENT. TO BE USED IN COURT 20 AUGUST

The Privacy Assistant
Department for Courts
National Office
P O Box 2750
WELLINGTON

REQUEST FOR A COPY OF PERSONAL INFORMATION STORED AT THE WANGANUI COMPUTER CENTRE

***SECTION 1* AND *SECTION 2* TO BE COMPLETED BY ALL APPLICANTS. *SECTION 3* TO BE COMPLETED IF NECESSARY.**

SECTION 1: APPLICANT DETAILS

Pursuant to the Privacy Act 1993, I hereby authorise the Privacy Officer, Department for Courts, to release all information about me held on the Wanganui computer which are held in the sub-systems administered by the Department for Courts relating to:

please tick ☑ appropriate box(es) **PLEASE PRINT IN PEN**

☑ Criminal convictions ☑ Details of my fines and enforcements
☑ All criminal history

Surname or family names: HALLETT
First names: JOSEPH GREGORY
Date of birth: 15 / 09 /1961
Previous names - maiden name, aliases: —
Present residential address: 429 PARNELL RD, PARNELL, AK. ALL CORRESPONDENCE TO PO BOX 109 624, NEWMARKET, AUCKLAND
Previous address(es) in last 3 years: 1/6A TAIRARUA TCE, PARNELL / 3/9 11 FOX ST PARNELL / 2/30 AUGUSTUS TCE, PARNELL, AK
Time lived there (approximately): 1 MONTH
Time lived there (approximately): 2 YEARS
Place of birth: WARKWORTH
Home phone number: (027) 4589 800
Do you hold a New Zealand Drivers licence? Yes ☐ No ☑
DISQUALIFIED 6 MONTHS FROM 13/8/2003
Drivers licence number: AN 772367
Registration plate numbers of ALL vehicles currently owned by applicant: AKC700
Signature of applicant: ✖
Date: 15 / 08 /2003

(R.G-35)

FORM OF STATUTORY DECLARATION

I JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
OF 429 PARNELL RD PARNELL AUCKLAND
AUTHOR

Insert name, place of abode and occupation

(Here state the facts and number the paragraphs)

I AM JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT

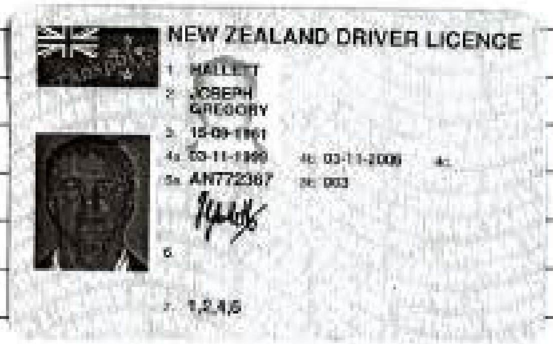

NEW ZEALAND DRIVER LICENCE
1. HALLETT
2. JOSEPH GREGORY
3. 15-09-1961
4a. 03-11-1998 4b. 03-11-2008 4c.
5a. AN772367 5b. 003
6.
7. 1,2,4,6

And make this solemn declaration conscientiously believing the same to be true, and by virtue of the Oaths and Declarations Act 1957.

Signature

Declared at Auckland this 15th day of 15 AUGUST ~~2003~~ ~~199~~2003

Deputy Registrar
District Court
Auckland

G. SABINE
DEPUTY REGISTRAR
DISTRICT COURT

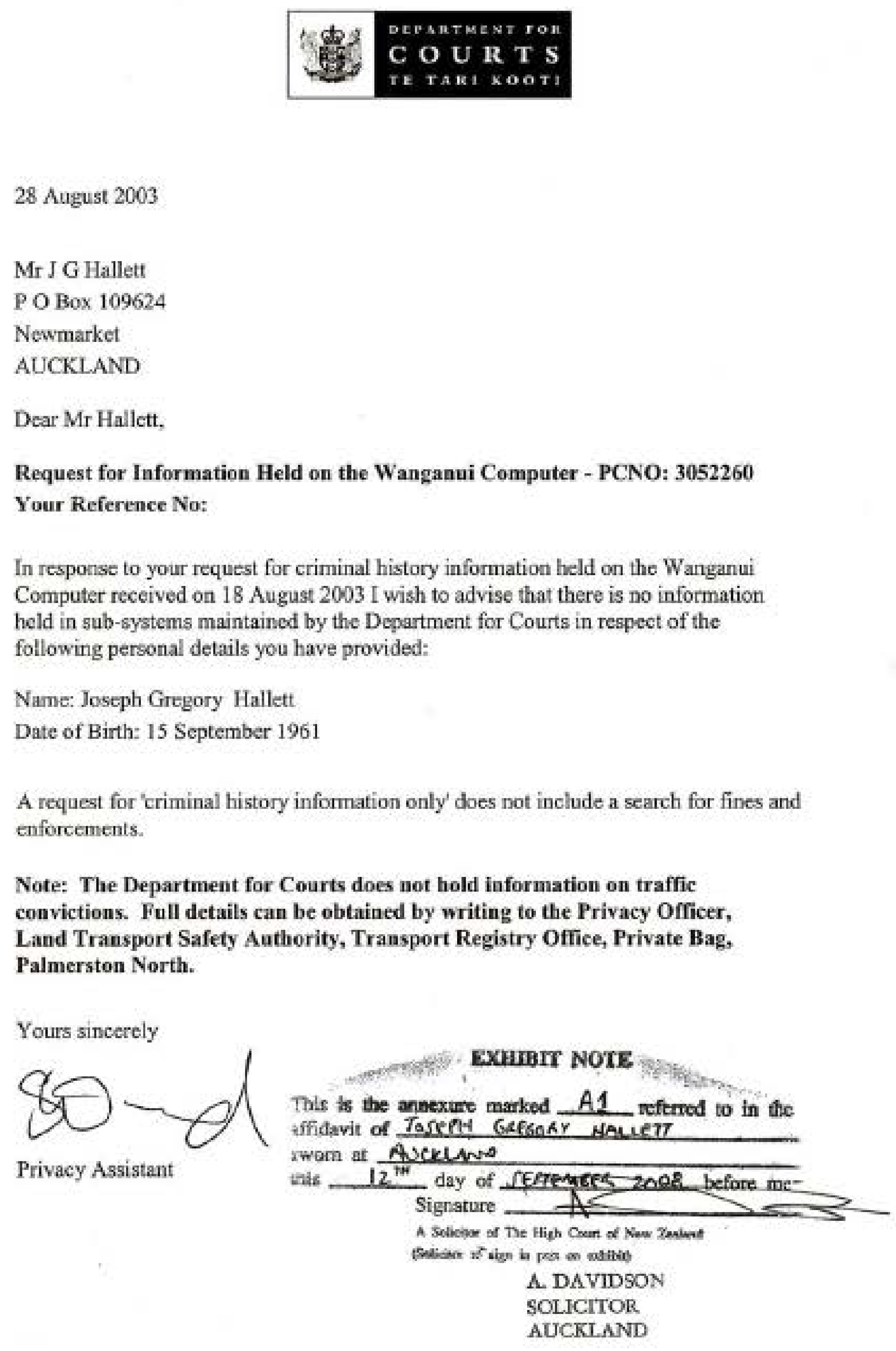

DEPARTMENT FOR
COURTS
TE TARI KOOTI

28 August 2003

Mr J G Hallett
P O Box 109624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett,

Request for Information Held on the Wanganui Computer - PCNO: 3052260
Your Reference No:

In response to your request for criminal history information held on the Wanganui Computer received on 18 August 2003 I wish to advise that there is no information held in sub-systems maintained by the Department for Courts in respect of the following personal details you have provided:

Name: Joseph Gregory Hallett
Date of Birth: 15 September 1961

A request for 'criminal history information only' does not include a search for fines and enforcements.

Note: The Department for Courts does not hold information on traffic convictions. Full details can be obtained by writing to the Privacy Officer, Land Transport Safety Authority, Transport Registry Office, Private Bag, Palmerston North.

Yours sincerely

Privacy Assistant

EXHIBIT NOTE

This is the annexure marked A1 referred to in the affidavit of JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
sworn at AUCKLAND
this 12TH day of SEPTEMBER 2008 before me
Signature
A Solicitor of The High Court of New Zealand
(Solicitor to sign in pen on exhibit)

A. DAVIDSON
SOLICITOR
AUCKLAND

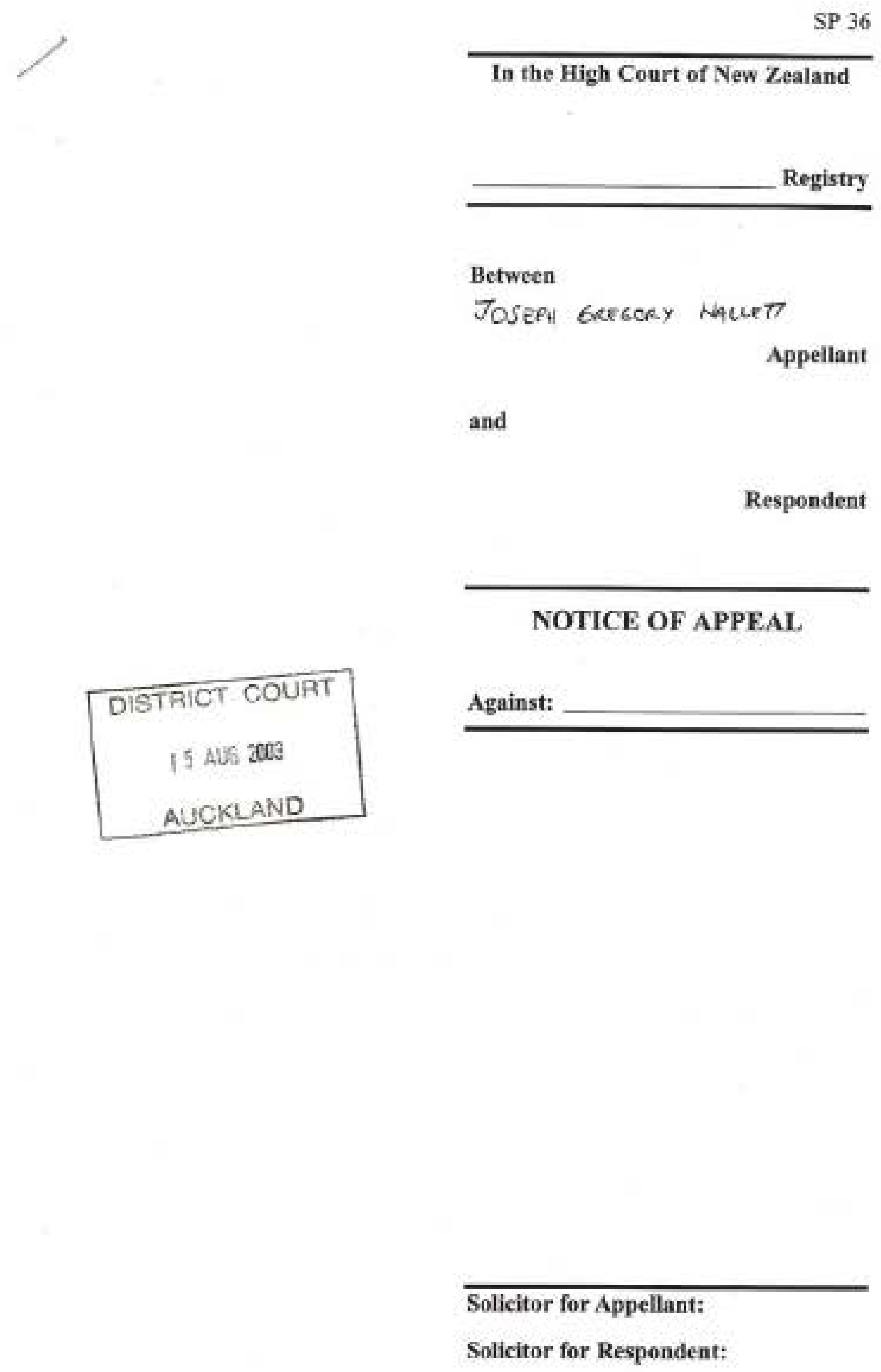

SP 36

In the High Court of New Zealand

________________ **Registry**

Between
JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
Appellant

and

Respondent

NOTICE OF APPEAL

Against: ________________

DISTRICT COURT
15 AUG 2003
AUCKLAND

Solicitor for Appellant:

Solicitor for Respondent:

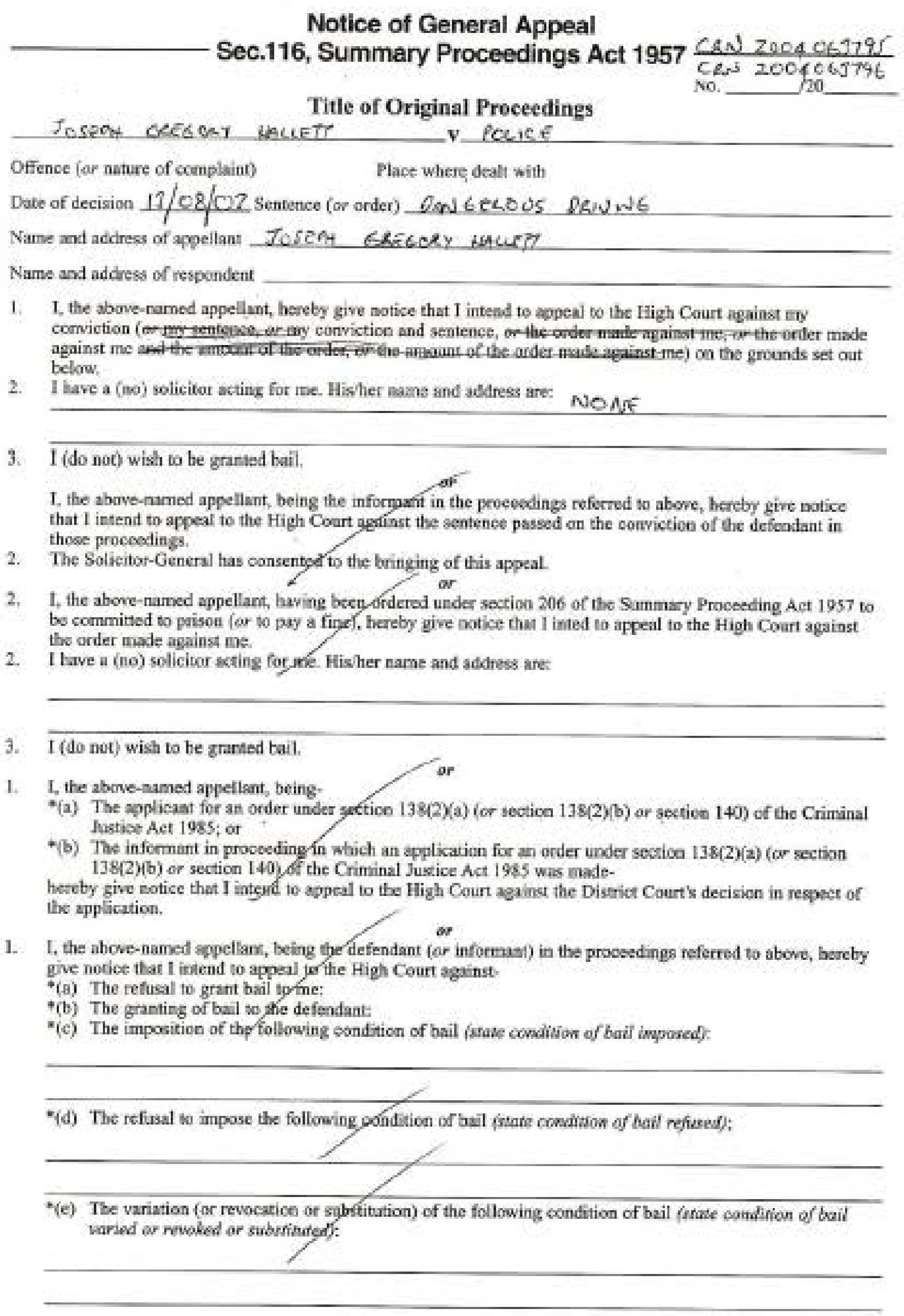

Notice of General Appeal
Sec.116, Summary Proceedings Act 1957

CRN 2004065795
CRN 2004065796
No. ______/20____

Title of Original Proceedings

JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT v POLICE

Offence (*or* nature of complaint) Place where dealt with

Date of decision 17/08/07 Sentence (*or* order) DANGEROUS DRIVING

Name and address of appellant JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT

Name and address of respondent

1. I, the above-named appellant, hereby give notice that I intend to appeal to the High Court against my conviction (~~or my sentence, or~~ my conviction and sentence, ~~or the order made against me, or the order made~~ against me ~~and the amount of the order, or the amount of the order made against~~ me) on the grounds set out below.
2. I have a (no) solicitor acting for me. His/her name and address are: NONE
3. I (do not) wish to be granted bail.

or

I, the above-named appellant, being the informant in the proceedings referred to above, hereby give notice that I intend to appeal to the High Court against the sentence passed on the conviction of the defendant in those proceedings.

2. The Solicitor-General has consented to the bringing of this appeal.

or

2. I, the above-named appellant, having been ordered under section 206 of the Summary Proceeding Act 1957 to be committed to prison (*or* to pay a fine), hereby give notice that I inted to appeal to the High Court against the order made against me.
2. I have a (no) solicitor acting for me. His/her name and address are:
3. I (do not) wish to be granted bail.

or

1. I, the above-named appellant, being-

*(a) The applicant for an order under section 138(2)(a) (*or* section 138(2)(b) *or* section 140) of the Criminal Justice Act 1985; or

*(b) The informant in proceeding in which an application for an order under section 138(2)(a) (*or* section 138(2)(b) *or* section 140) of the Criminal Justice Act 1985 was made-

hereby give notice that I intend to appeal to the High Court against the District Court's decision in respect of the application.

or

1. I, the above-named appellant, being the defendant (*or* informant) in the proceedings referred to above, hereby give notice that I intend to appeal to the High Court against-

*(a) The refusal to grant bail to me:

*(b) The granting of bail to the defendant:

*(c) The imposition of the following condition of bail (*state condition of bail imposed*):

*(d) The refusal to impose the following condition of bail (*state condition of bail refused*);

*(e) The variation (or revocation or substitution) of the following condition of bail (*state condition of bail varied or revoked or substituted*):

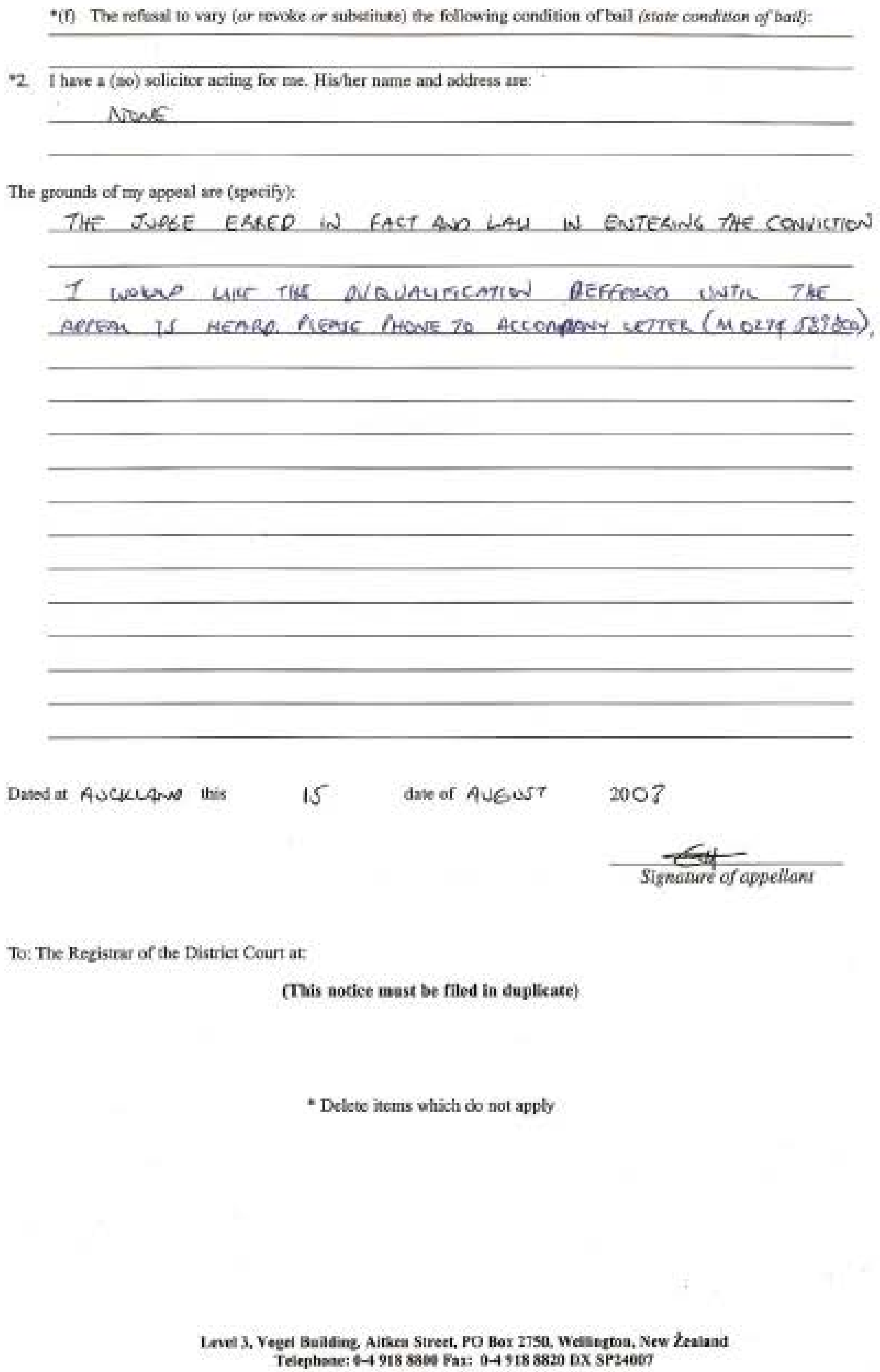

*(f) The refusal to vary (*or* revoke *or* substitute) the following condition of bail (*state condition of bail*):

*2. I have a (no) solicitor acting for me. His/her name and address are:

NONE

The grounds of my appeal are (specify):

THE JUDGE ERRED IN FACT AND LAW IN ENTERING THE CONVICTION

I WOULD LIKE THE DISQUALIFICATION DEFFERED UNTIL THE APPEAL IS HEARD. PLEASE PHONE TO ACCOMPANY LETTER (M 0274 583800),

Dated at AUCKLAND this 15 date of AUGUST 2007

Signature of appellant

To: The Registrar of the District Court at:

(This notice must be filed in duplicate)

* Delete items which do not apply

Level 3, Vogel Building, Aitken Street, PO Box 2750, Wellington, New Zealand
Telephone: 0-4 918 8800 Fax: 0-4 918 8820 DX SP24007

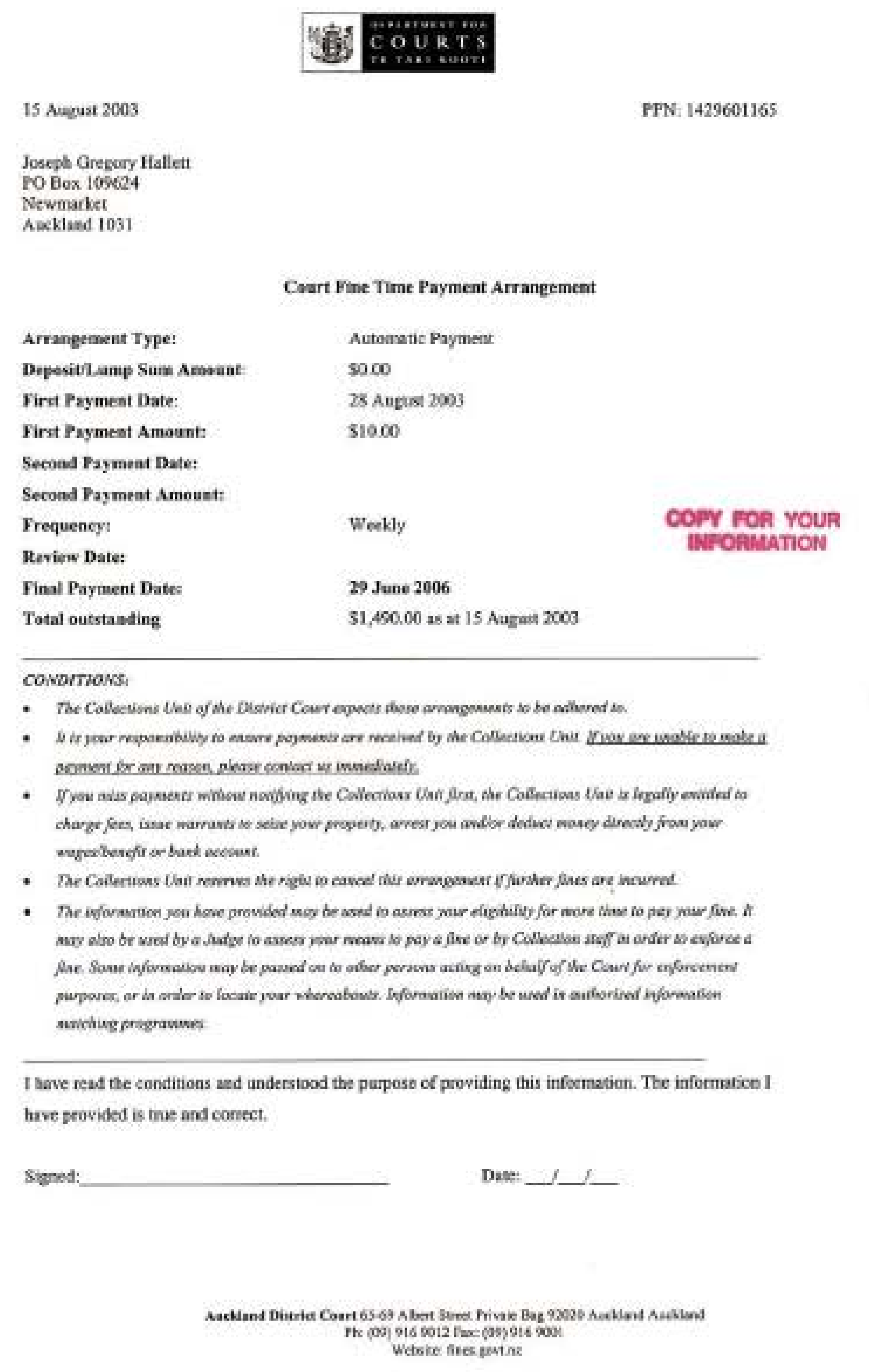

DEPARTMENT FOR COURTS TE TARI KOOTI

15 August 2003 PPN: 1429601165

Joseph Gregory Hallett
PO Box 109624
Newmarket
Auckland 1031

Court Fine Time Payment Arrangement

Arrangement Type:	Automatic Payment
Deposit/Lump Sum Amount:	$0.00
First Payment Date:	28 August 2003
First Payment Amount:	$10.00
Second Payment Date:	
Second Payment Amount:	
Frequency:	Weekly
Review Date:	
Final Payment Date:	**29 June 2006**
Total outstanding	$1,490.00 as at 15 August 2003

COPY FOR YOUR INFORMATION

CONDITIONS:

- *The Collections Unit of the District Court expects these arrangements to be adhered to.*
- *It is your responsibility to ensure payments are received by the Collections Unit. If you are unable to make a payment for any reason, please contact us immediately.*
- *If you miss payments without notifying the Collections Unit first, the Collections Unit is legally entitled to charge fees, issue warrants to seize your property, arrest you and/or deduct money directly from your wages/benefit or bank account.*
- *The Collections Unit reserves the right to cancel this arrangement if further fines are incurred.*
- *The information you have provided may be used to assess your eligibility for more time to pay your fine. It may also be used by a Judge to assess your means to pay a fine or by Collection staff in order to enforce a fine. Some information may be passed on to other persons acting on behalf of the Court for enforcement purposes, or in order to locate your whereabouts. Information may be used in authorized information matching programmes.*

I have read the conditions and understood the purpose of providing this information. The information I have provided is true and correct.

Signed:______________________ Date: __/__/__

Auckland District Court 65-69 Albert Street Private Bag 92020 Auckland Auckland
Ph: (09) 916 9012 Fax: (09) 914 9001
Website: fines.govt.nz

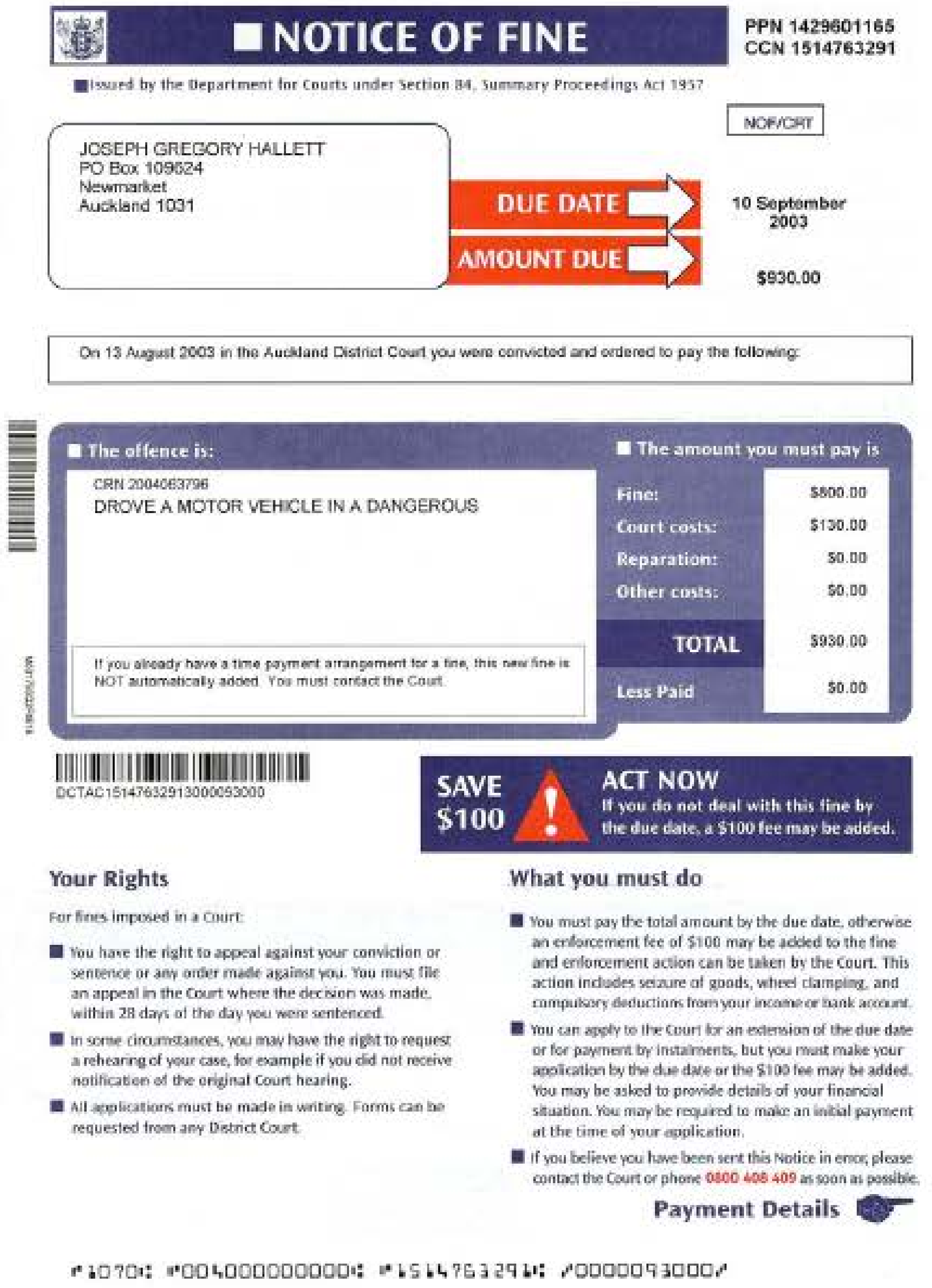

NOTICE OF FINE

PPN 1429601165
CCN 1514763291

Issued by the Department for Courts under Section 84, Summary Proceedings Act 1957

NOF/CRT

JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
PO Box 109624
Newmarket
Auckland 1031

DUE DATE 10 September 2003

AMOUNT DUE $930.00

On 13 August 2003 in the Auckland District Court you were convicted and ordered to pay the following:

The offence is:

CRN 2004063796
DROVE A MOTOR VEHICLE IN A DANGEROUS

If you already have a time payment arrangement for a fine, this new fine is NOT automatically added. You must contact the Court.

The amount you must pay is

Fine:	$800.00
Court costs:	$130.00
Reparation:	$0.00
Other costs:	$0.00
TOTAL	$930.00
Less Paid	$0.00

DCTAC1514763291300093000

SAVE $100

ACT NOW
If you do not deal with this fine by the due date, a $100 fee may be added.

Your Rights

For fines imposed in a Court:

- You have the right to appeal against your conviction or sentence or any order made against you. You must file an appeal in the Court where the decision was made, within 28 days of the day you were sentenced.
- In some circumstances, you may have the right to request a rehearing of your case, for example if you did not receive notification of the original Court hearing.
- All applications must be made in writing. Forms can be requested from any District Court.

What you must do

- You must pay the total amount by the due date, otherwise an enforcement fee of $100 may be added to the fine and enforcement action can be taken by the Court. This action includes seizure of goods, wheel clamping, and compulsory deductions from your income or bank account.
- You can apply to the Court for an extension of the due date or for payment by instalments, but you must make your application by the due date or the $100 fee may be added. You may be asked to provide details of your financial situation. You may be required to make an initial payment at the time of your application.
- If you believe you have been sent this Notice in error, please contact the Court or phone 0800 408 409 as soon as possible.

Payment Details

⑈1070⑆ ⑈0040000000000⑆ ⑈1514763291⑆ ⑈000093000⑈

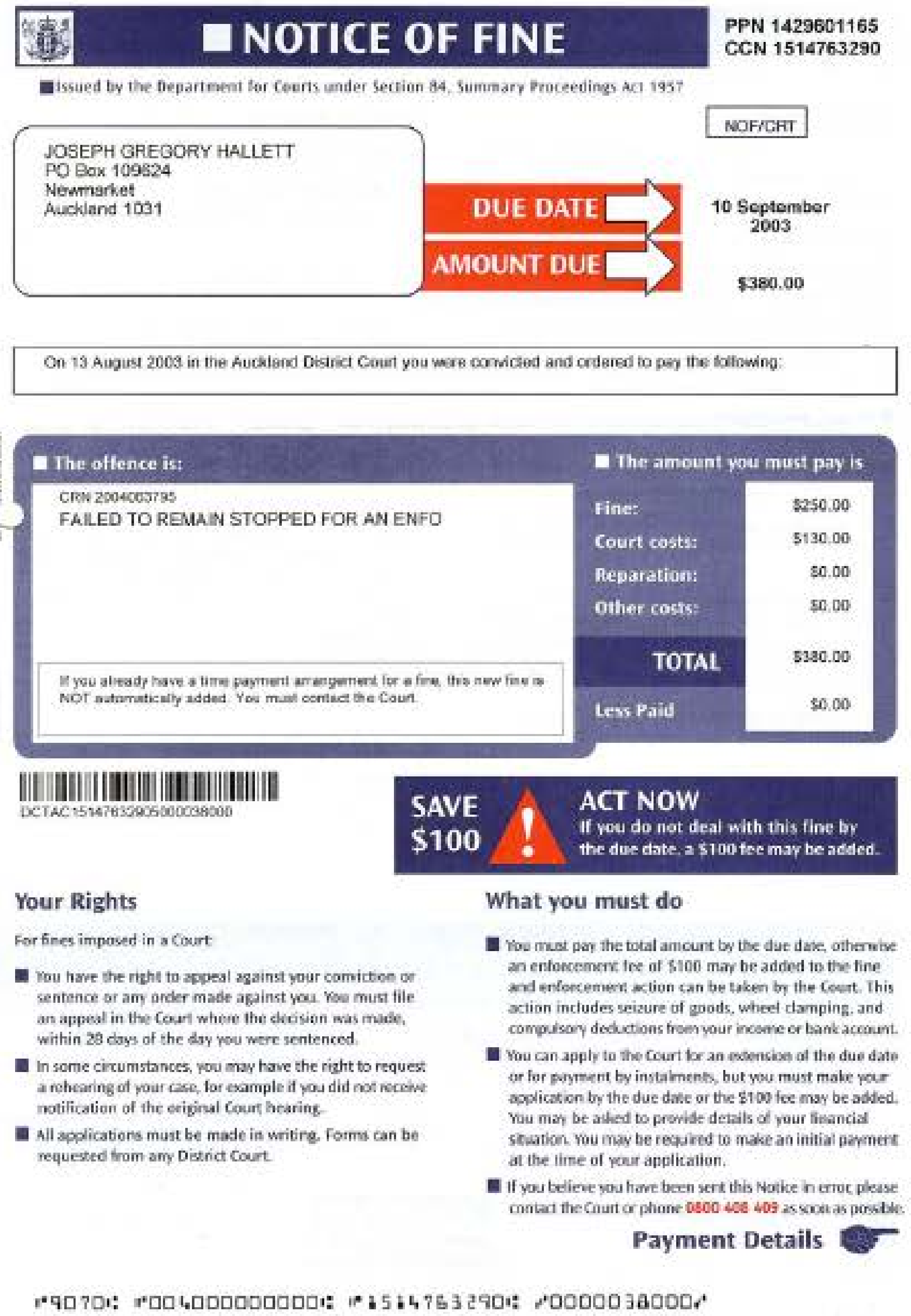

NOTICE OF FINE

PPN 1429601165
CCN 1514763290

Issued by the Department for Courts under Section 84, Summary Proceedings Act 1957

NOF/CRT

JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
PO Box 109624
Newmarket
Auckland 1031

DUE DATE 10 September 2003

AMOUNT DUE $380.00

On 13 August 2003 in the Auckland District Court you were convicted and ordered to pay the following:

The offence is:

CRN 2004063795
FAILED TO REMAIN STOPPED FOR AN ENFO

If you already have a time payment arrangement for a fine, this new fine is NOT automatically added. You must contact the Court.

The amount you must pay is

Fine:	$250.00
Court costs:	$130.00
Reparation:	$0.00
Other costs:	$0.00
TOTAL	$380.00
Less Paid	$0.00

DCTAC15147632905000038000

SAVE $100

ACT NOW
If you do not deal with this fine by the due date, a $100 fee may be added.

Your Rights

For fines imposed in a Court:

- You have the right to appeal against your conviction or sentence or any order made against you. You must file an appeal in the Court where the decision was made, within 28 days of the day you were sentenced.
- In some circumstances, you may have the right to request a rehearing of your case, for example if you did not receive notification of the original Court hearing.
- All applications must be made in writing. Forms can be requested from any District Court.

What you must do

- You must pay the total amount by the due date, otherwise an enforcement fee of $100 may be added to the fine and enforcement action can be taken by the Court. This action includes seizure of goods, wheel clamping, and compulsory deductions from your income or bank account.
- You can apply to the Court for an extension of the due date or for payment by instalments, but you must make your application by the due date or the $100 fee may be added. You may be asked to provide details of your financial situation. You may be required to make an initial payment at the time of your application.
- If you believe you have been sent this Notice in error, please contact the Court or phone 0800 408 409 as soon as possible.

Payment Details

⑈9070⑆ ⑈004000000000⑆ ⑈1514763290⑆ ⑇0000038000⑇

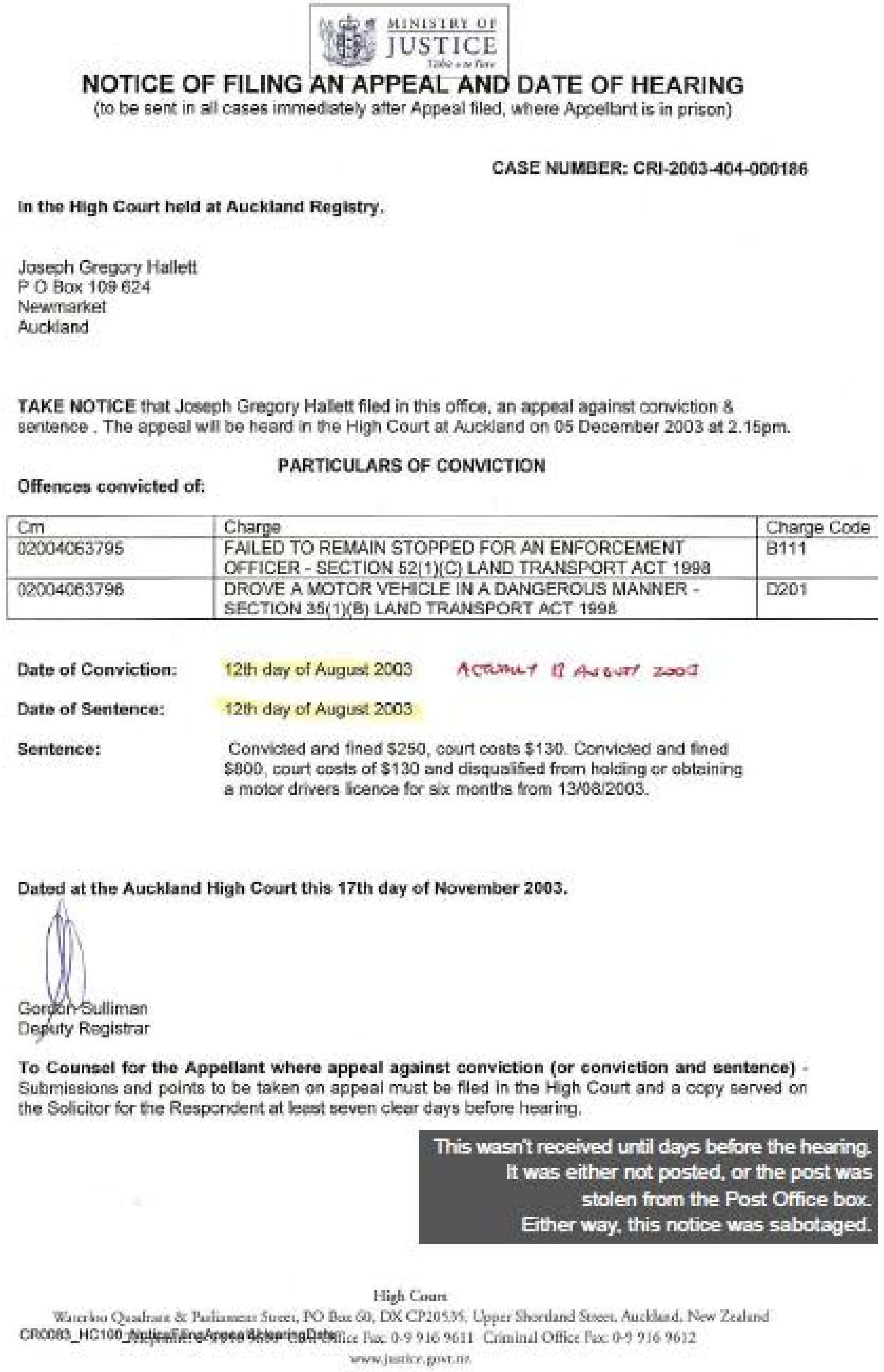

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

NOTICE OF FILING AN APPEAL AND DATE OF HEARING

(to be sent in all cases immediately after Appeal filed, where Appellant is in prison)

CASE NUMBER: CRI-2003-404-000186

In the High Court held at Auckland Registry.

Joseph Gregory Hallett
P O Box 109 624
Newmarket
Auckland

TAKE NOTICE that Joseph Gregory Hallett filed in this office, an appeal against conviction & sentence . The appeal will be heard in the High Court at Auckland on 05 December 2003 at 2.15pm.

PARTICULARS OF CONVICTION

Offences convicted of:

Crn	Charge	Charge Code
02004063795	FAILED TO REMAIN STOPPED FOR AN ENFORCEMENT OFFICER - SECTION 52(1)(C) LAND TRANSPORT ACT 1998	B111
02004063796	DROVE A MOTOR VEHICLE IN A DANGEROUS MANNER - SECTION 35(1)(B) LAND TRANSPORT ACT 1998	D201

Date of Conviction: 12th day of August 2003 ACTUALLY 13 AUGUST 2003

Date of Sentence: 12th day of August 2003

Sentence: Convicted and fined $250, court costs $130. Convicted and fined $800, court costs of $130 and disqualified from holding or obtaining a motor drivers licence for six months from 13/08/2003.

Dated at the Auckland High Court this 17th day of November 2003.

Gordon Sulliman
Deputy Registrar

To Counsel for the Appellant where appeal against conviction (or conviction and sentence) - Submissions and points to be taken on appeal must be filed in the High Court and a copy served on the Solicitor for the Respondent at least seven clear days before hearing.

This wasn't received until days before the hearing.
It was either not posted, or the post was
stolen from the Post Office box.
Either way, this notice was sabotaged.

High Court
Waterloo Quadrant & Parliament Street, PO Box 60, DX CP20535, Upper Shortland Street, Auckland, New Zealand
CR0083_HC100_NoticeFilingAppeal&HearingDate [illegible] Office Fax: 0-9 916 9611 Criminal Office Fax: 0-9 916 9612
www.justice.govt.nz

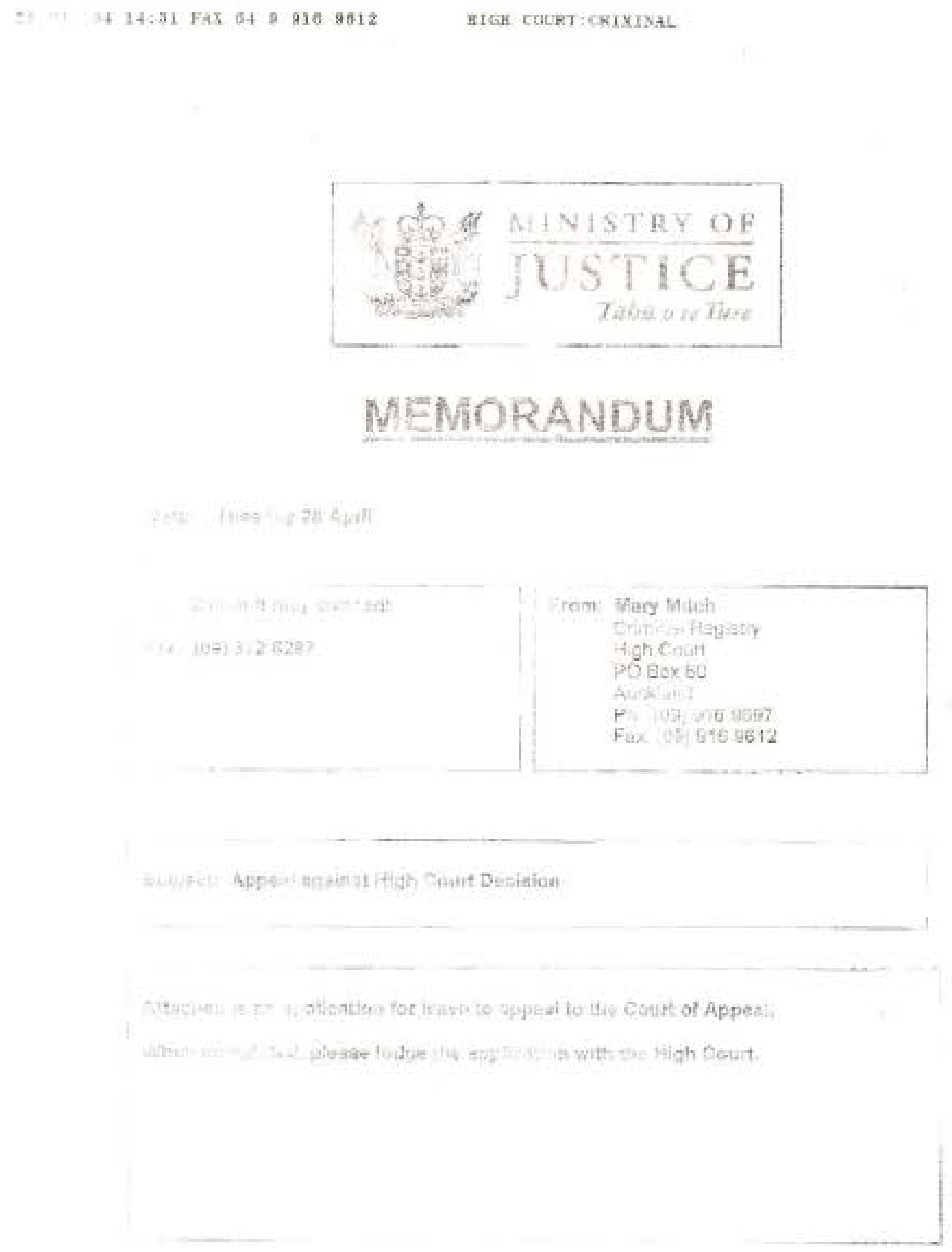

[illegible] '04 14:31 FAX 04 9 916 9612 HIGH COURT CRIMINAL

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

MEMORANDUM

Date: Tuesday 28 April

To: [illegible]
Fax: (09) 372 6287

From: Mary Mitch
Criminal Registry
High Court
PO Box 60
Auckland
Ph: (09) 916 9697
Fax: (09) 916 9612

Subject: Appeal against High Court Decision

Attached is an application for leave to appeal to the Court of Appeal.

When completed, please lodge the application with the High Court.

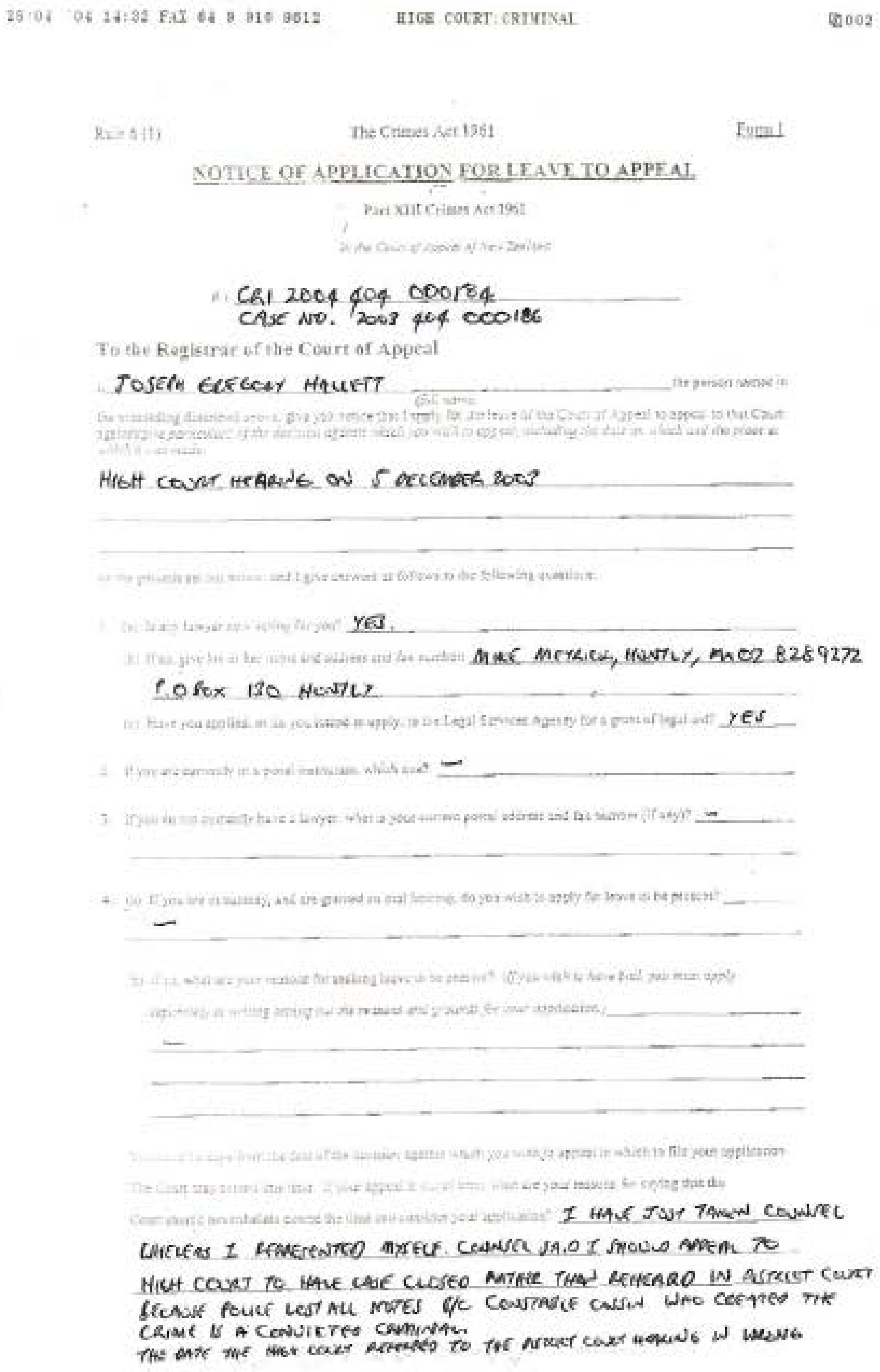

28/04 '04 14:32 FAX 04 9 916 9612 HIGH COURT CRIMINAL 002

Rule 6 (1) The Crimes Act 1961 Form 1

NOTICE OF APPLICATION FOR LEAVE TO APPEAL

Part XIII Crimes Act 1961

In the Court of Appeal of New Zealand

CRI 2004 404 000184
CASE NO. 2003 404 000186

To the Registrar of the Court of Appeal

I, JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT (full name) the person named in [illegible]

HIGH COURT HEARING ON 5 DECEMBER 2003

[illegible] and I give answers as follows to the following questions:

1. (a) Is any lawyer now acting for you? YES.
   (b) If so, give his or her name and address and fax number: MIKE MEYRICK, HUNTLY, MO 02 8289272 P.O BOX 130 HUNTLY
   (c) Have you applied, or do you intend to apply, to the Legal Services Agency for a grant of legal aid? YES
2. If you are currently in a penal institution, which one? —
3. If you do not currently have a lawyer, what is your current postal address and fax number (if any)? —
4. (a) If you are in custody, and are granted an oral hearing, do you wish to apply for leave to be present? —
   (b) If so, what are your reasons for seeking leave to be present? (If you wish to have bail, you must apply separately in writing setting out the reasons and grounds for your application.) —

You have [illegible] days from the date of the decision against which you wish to appeal in which to file your application. The Court may extend this time. If your appeal is out of time, what are your reasons for saying that the Court should nevertheless extend the time and consider your application? I HAVE JUST TAKEN COUNSEL WHEREAS I REPRESENTED MYSELF. COUNSEL SAID I SHOULD APPEAL TO HIGH COURT TO HAVE CASE CLOSED RATHER THAN REHEARD IN DISTRICT COURT BECAUSE POLICE LOST ALL NOTES D/C CONSTABLE CASSIN WHO CREATED THE CRIME IS A CONVICTED CRIMINAL.
THE DATE THE HIGH COURT REFERRED TO THE DISTRICT COURT HEARING IS WRONG

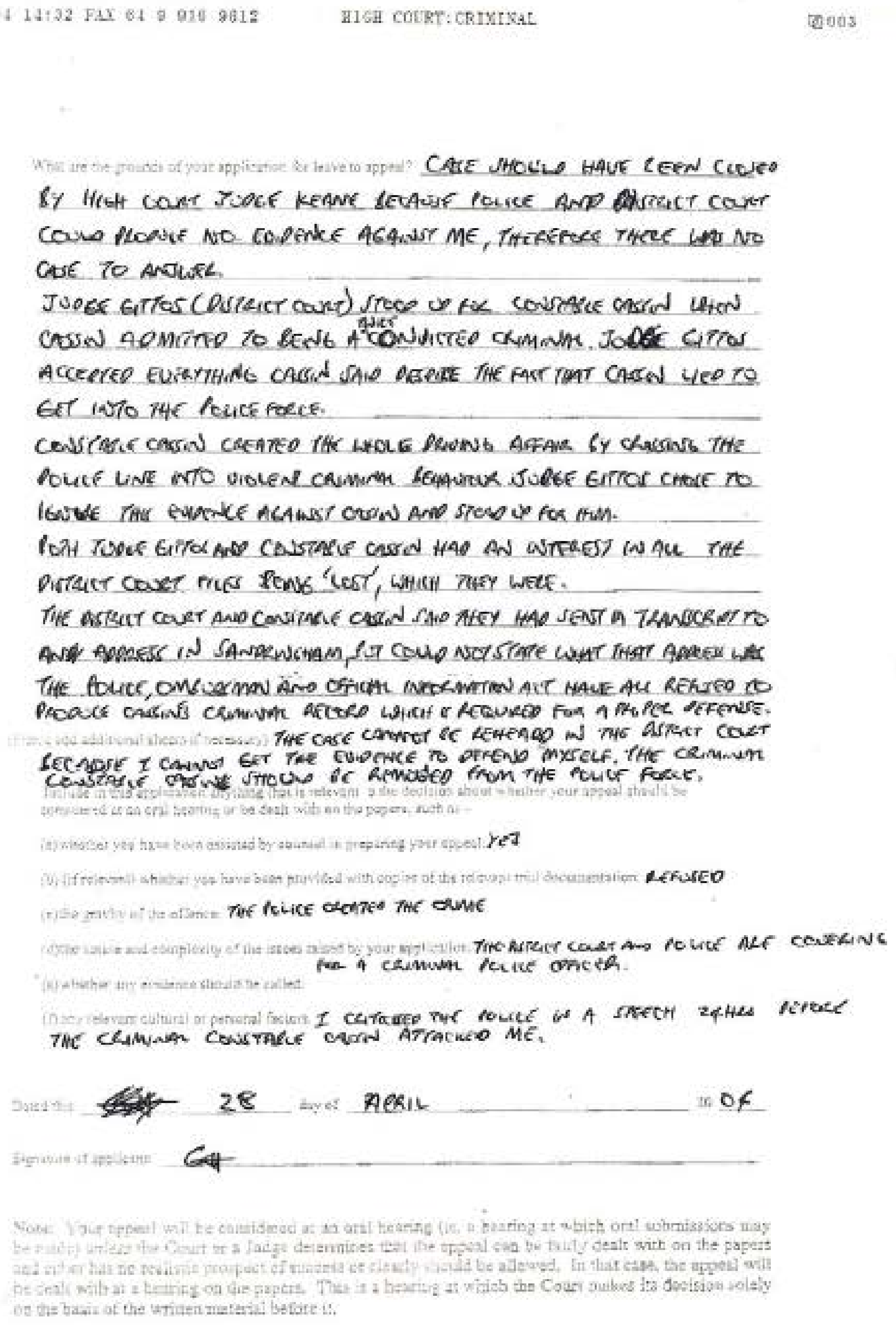

4 14:32 FAX 64 9 916 9612 HIGH COURT:CRIMINAL @003

What are the grounds of your application for leave to appeal? CASE SHOULD HAVE BEEN CLOSED BY HIGH COURT JUDGE KEANE BECAUSE POLICE AND DISTRICT COURT COULD PRODUCE NO EVIDENCE AGAINST ME, THEREFORE THERE WAS NO CASE TO ANSWER.

JUDGE GITTOS (DISTRICT COURT) STOOD UP FOR CONSTABLE CASSIN WHEN CASSIN ADMITTED TO BEING A [illegible] CONVICTED CRIMINAL. JUDGE GITTOS ACCEPTED EVERYTHING CASSIN SAID DESPITE THE FACT THAT CASSIN LIED TO GET INTO THE POLICE FORCE.

CONSTABLE CASSIN CREATED THE WHOLE DRIVING AFFAIR BY CROSSING THE POLICE LINE INTO VIOLENT CRIMINAL BEHAVIOUR. JUDGE GITTOS CHOSE TO IGNORE THE EVIDENCE AGAINST CASSIN AND STOOD UP FOR HIM.

BOTH JUDGE GITTOS AND CONSTABLE CASSIN HAD AN INTEREST IN ALL THE DISTRICT COURT FILES BEING 'LOST', WHICH THEY WERE.

THE DISTRICT COURT AND CONSTABLE CASSIN SAID THEY HAD SENT A TRANSCRIPT TO AN ADDRESS IN SANDRINGHAM, BUT COULD NOT STATE WHAT THAT ADDRESS WAS.

THE POLICE, OMBUDSMAN AND OFFICIAL INFORMATION ACT HAVE ALL REFUSED TO PRODUCE CASSIN'S CRIMINAL RECORD WHICH IS REQUIRED FOR A PROPER DEFENSE.

(Please add additional sheets if necessary) THE CASE CANNOT BE REHEARD IN THE DISTRICT COURT BECAUSE I CANNOT GET THE EVIDENCE TO DEFEND MYSELF. THE CRIMINAL CONSTABLE CASSIN SHOULD BE REMOVED FROM THE POLICE FORCE.

Include in this application anything that is relevant to the decision about whether your appeal should be considered at an oral hearing or be dealt with on the papers, such as –

(a) whether you have been assisted by counsel in preparing your appeal: YES

(b) (if relevant) whether you have been provided with copies of the relevant trial documentation: REFUSED

(c) the gravity of the offence: THE POLICE CREATED THE CRIME

(d) the nature and complexity of the issues raised by your application: THE DISTRICT COURT AND POLICE ARE COVERING FOR A CRIMINAL POLICE OFFICER.

(e) whether any evidence should be called:

(f) any relevant cultural or personal factors: I CRITICISED THE POLICE IN A SPEECH 24HRS BEFORE THE CRIMINAL CONSTABLE CASSIN ATTACKED ME.

Dated this 28 day of APRIL 20 04

Signature of applicant:

Note: Your appeal will be considered at an oral hearing (ie, a hearing at which oral submissions may be made) unless the Court or a Judge determines that the appeal can be fairly dealt with on the papers and either has no realistic prospect of success or clearly should be allowed. In that case, the appeal will be dealt with at a hearing on the papers. This is a hearing at which the Court makes its decision solely on the basis of the written material before it.

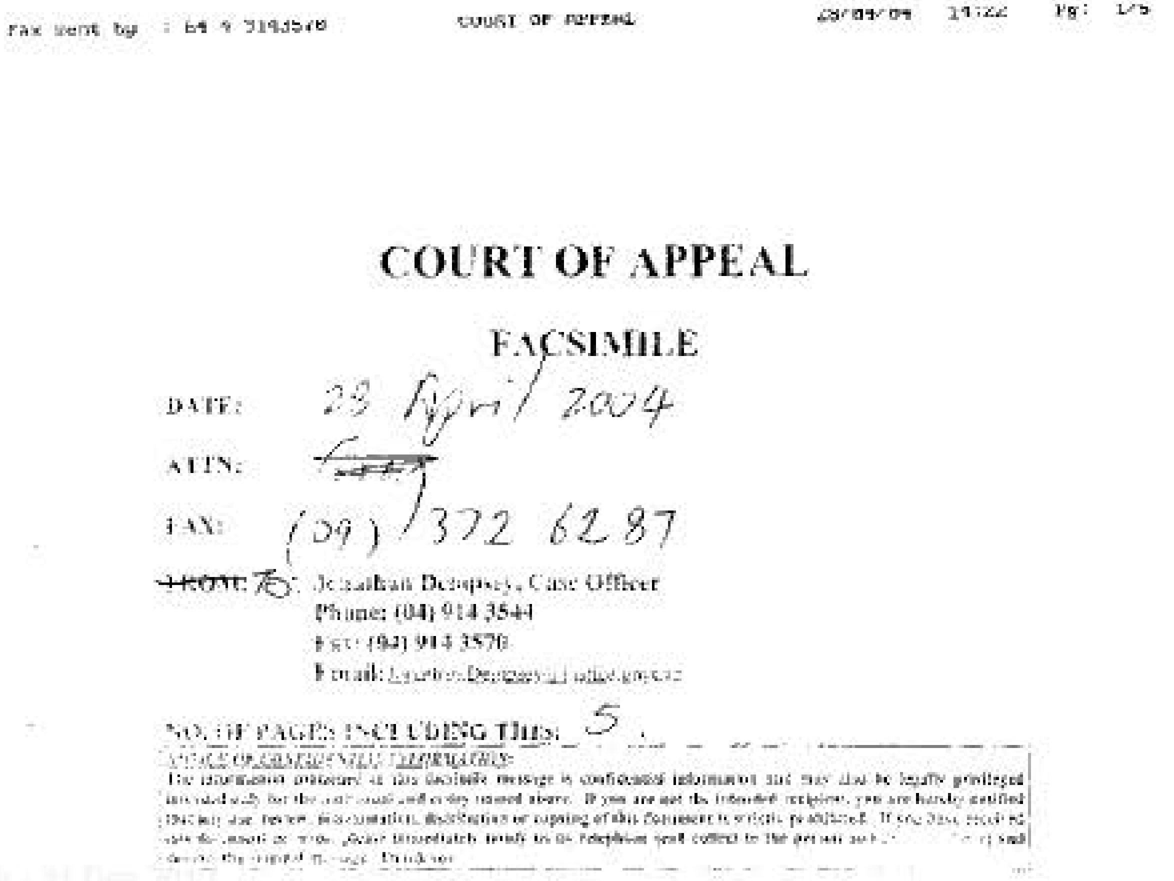

Fax sent by : 64 9 9143570 COURT OF APPEAL 28/04/04 14:22 Pg: 1/5

COURT OF APPEAL

FACSIMILE

DATE: 28 April 2004

ATTN:

FAX: (09) 372 6287

~~FROM:~~ TO: Jonathan Dempsey, Case Officer
Phone: (04) 914 3544
Fax: (04) 914 3570
Email: [illegible]

NO. OF PAGES INCLUDING THIS: 5

NOTICE OF CONFIDENTIALITY INFORMATION:

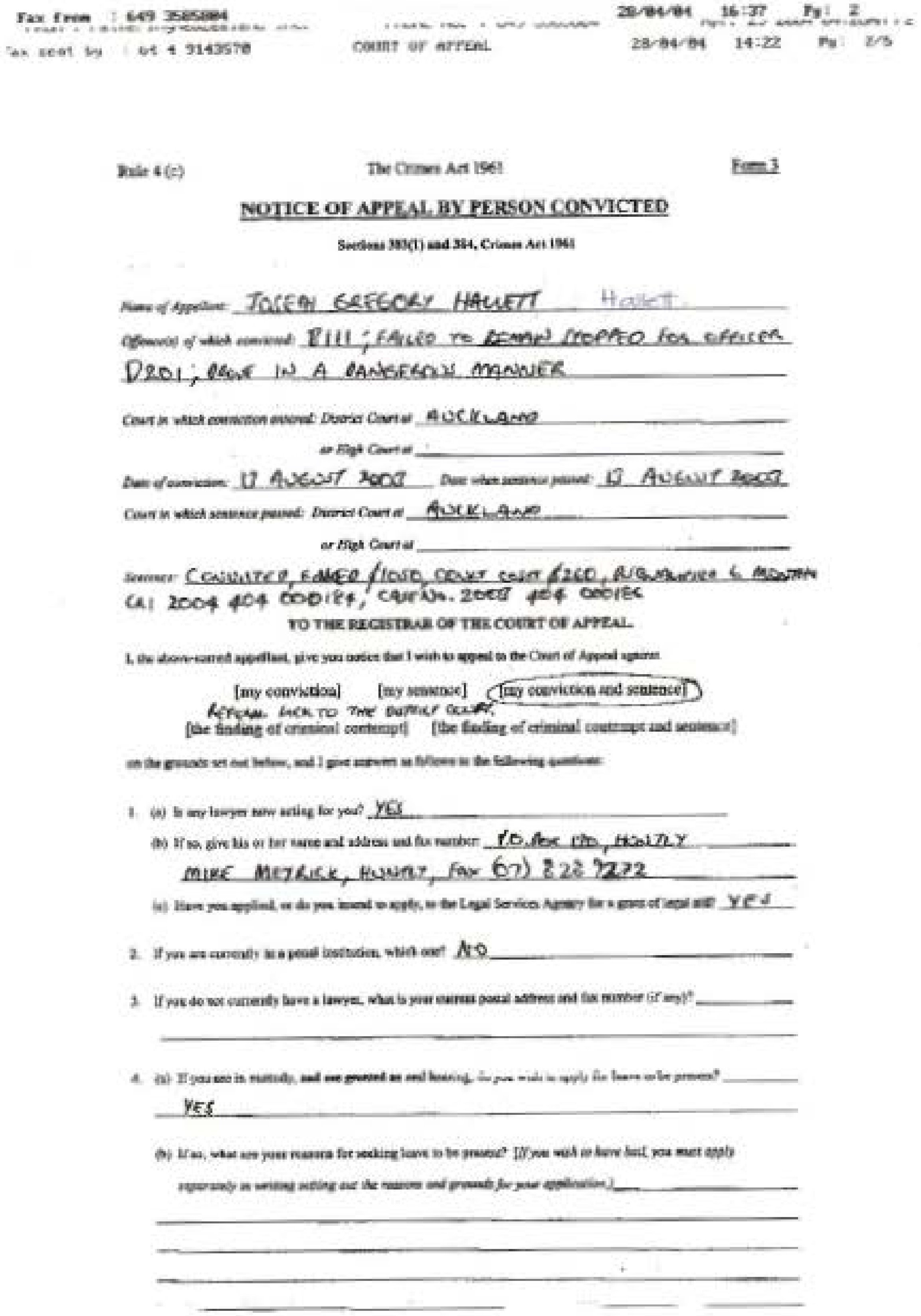

Fax from : 649 3585004 28/04/04 16:37 Pg: 2

Fax sent by : 64 4 9143578 COURT OF APPEAL 28/04/04 14:22 Pg: 2/5

Rule 4 (c) The Crimes Act 1961 Form 3

NOTICE OF APPEAL BY PERSON CONVICTED

Sections 383(1) and 384, Crimes Act 1961

Name of Appellant: JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT Hallett

Offence(s) of which convicted: B111; FAILED TO REMAIN STOPPED FOR OFFICER D201; DROVE IN A DANGEROUS MANNER

Court in which conviction entered: District Court at AUCKLAND

or High Court at

Date of conviction: 13 AUGUST 2003 Date when sentence passed: 13 AUGUST 2003

Court in which sentence passed: District Court at AUCKLAND

or High Court at

Sentence: CONVICTED, FINED $1000, COURT COST $200, [illegible] CA: 2004 404 000184, CRI-AU. 2003 404 000166

TO THE REGISTRAR OF THE COURT OF APPEAL.

I, the above-named appellant, give you notice that I wish to appeal to the Court of Appeal against

[my conviction] [my sentence] [✓ [my conviction and sentence]]

APPEAL BACK TO THE DISTRICT COURT.

[the finding of criminal contempt] [the finding of criminal contempt and sentence]

on the grounds set out below, and I give answers as follows to the following questions:

1. (a) Is any lawyer now acting for you? YES
   (b) If so, give his or her name and address and fax number: P.O. BOX 170, HOWLEY MIKE METRICK, HOWLEY, FAX (07) 822 9272
   (c) Have you applied, or do you intend to apply, to the Legal Services Agency for a grant of legal aid? YES
2. If you are currently in a penal institution, which one? NO
3. If you do not currently have a lawyer, what is your current postal address and fax number (if any)?
4. (a) If you are in custody, and are granted an oral hearing, do you wish to apply for leave to be present? YES
   (b) If so, what are your reasons for seeking leave to be present? [If you wish to have bail, you must apply separately in writing setting out the reasons and grounds for your application.]

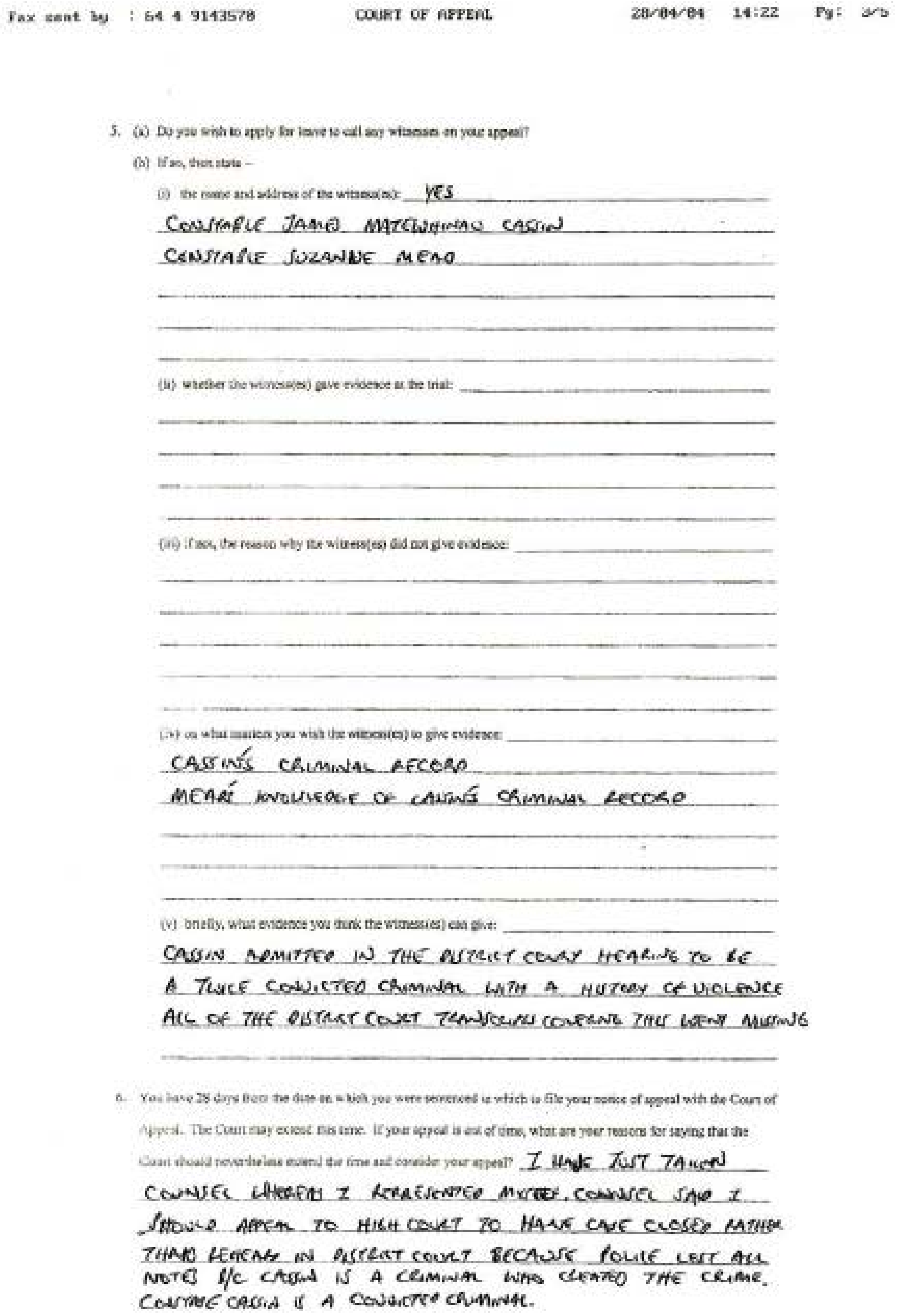

Fax sent by : 64 4 9143578 COURT OF APPEAL 28/04/04 14:22 Pg: 3/5

5. (a) Do you wish to apply for leave to call any witnesses on your appeal?
   (b) If so, then state –
      (i) the name and address of the witness(es): YES CONSTABLE JAMES MATEWHINAU CASSIN CONSTABLE SUZANNE MEAD
      (ii) whether the witness(es) gave evidence at the trial:
      (iii) if not, the reason why the witness(es) did not give evidence:
      (iv) on what matters you wish the witness(es) to give evidence: CASSIN'S CRIMINAL RECORD MEAD'S KNOWLEDGE OF CASSIN'S CRIMINAL RECORD
      (v) briefly, what evidence you think the witness(es) can give: CASSIN ADMITTED IN THE DISTRICT COURT HEARING TO BE A TWICE CONVICTED CRIMINAL WITH A HISTORY OF VIOLENCE ALL OF THE DISTRICT COURT TRANSCRIPTS CONCERNING THIS WENT MISSING
6. You have 28 days from the date on which you were sentenced in which to file your notice of appeal with the Court of Appeal. The Court may extend this time. If your appeal is out of time, what are your reasons for saying that the Court should nevertheless extend the time and consider your appeal? I HAVE JUST TAKEN COUNSEL WHEREIN I REPRESENTED MYSELF. COUNSEL SAID I SHOULD APPEAL TO HIGH COURT TO HAVE CASE CLOSED RATHER THAN REHEAR IN DISTRICT COURT BECAUSE POLICE LOST ALL NOTES B/C CASSIN IS A CRIMINAL WHO CREATED THE CRIME. CONSTABLE CASSIN IS A CONVICTED CRIMINAL.

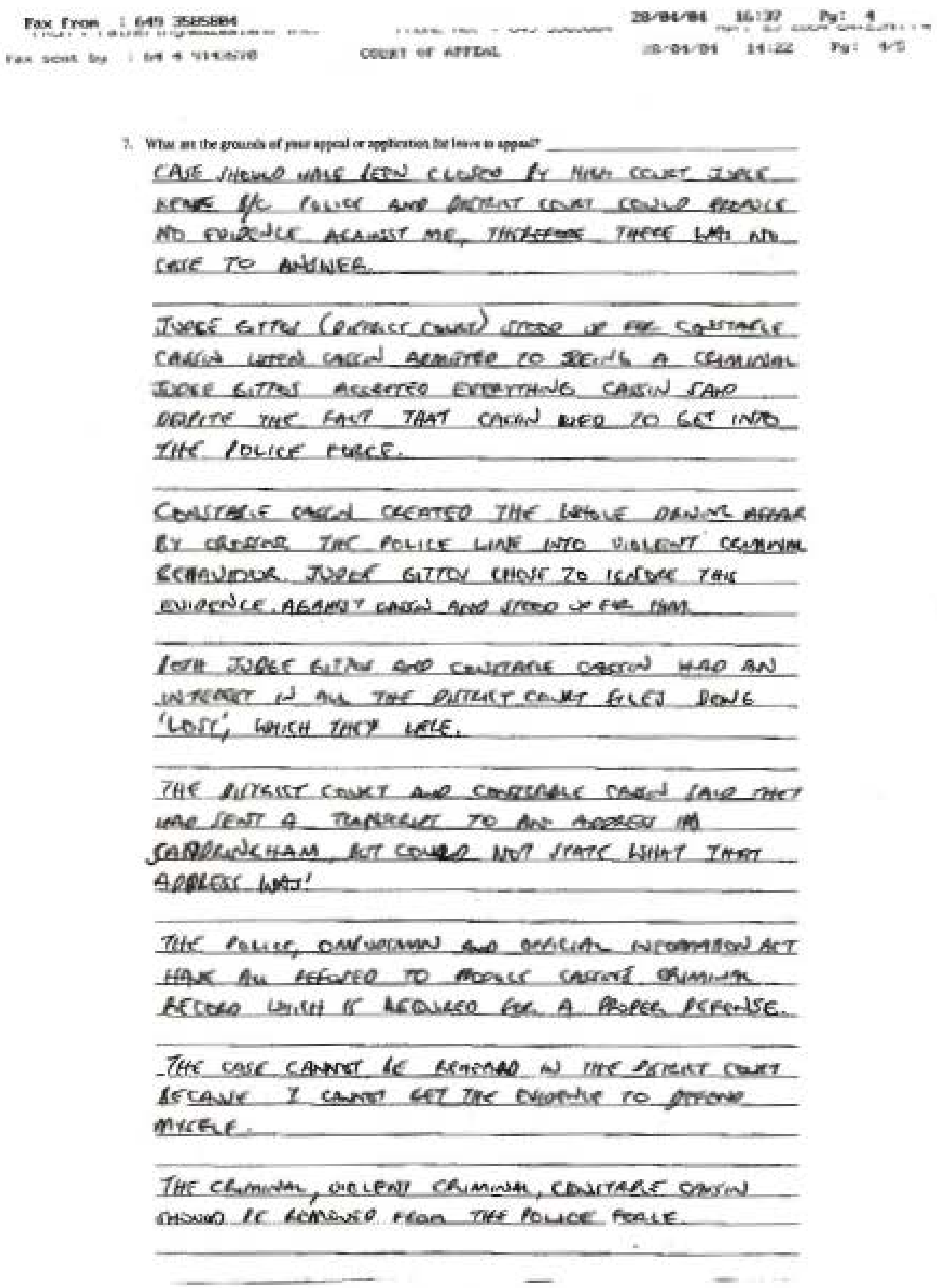

Fax from : 649 3585884 28/04/04 16:37 Pg: 4
Fax sent by : 64 4 9143578 COURT OF APPEAL 28/04/04 14:22 Pg: 4/5

7. What are the grounds of your appeal or application for leave to appeal?

CASE SHOULD HAVE BEEN CLOSED BY HIGH COURT JUDGE KEANE B/C POLICE AND DISTRICT COURT COULD PRODUCE NO EVIDENCE AGAINST ME, THEREFORE THERE WAS NO CASE TO ANSWER.

JUDGE GITTOS (DISTRICT COURT) STOOD UP FOR CONSTABLE CASSIN WHEN CASSIN ADMITTED TO BEING A CRIMINAL. JUDGE GITTOS ACCEPTED EVERYTHING CASSIN SAID DESPITE THE FACT THAT CASSIN LIED TO GET INTO THE POLICE FORCE.

CONSTABLE CASSIN CREATED THE WHOLE DAMNING AFFAIR BY CROSSING THE POLICE LINE INTO VIOLENT CRIMINAL BEHAVIOUR. JUDGE GITTOS CHOSE TO IGNORE THE EVIDENCE AGAINST CASSIN AND STOOD UP FOR HIM.

BOTH JUDGE GITTOS AND CONSTABLE CASSIN HAD AN INTEREST IN ALL THE DISTRICT COURT FILES BEING 'LOST', WHICH THEY WERE.

THE DISTRICT COURT AND CONSTABLE CASSIN SAID THEY HAD SENT A TRANSCRIPT TO AN ADDRESS IN SANDRINGHAM, BUT COULD NOT STATE WHAT THAT ADDRESS WAS!

THE POLICE, OMBUDSMAN AND OFFICIAL INFORMATION ACT HAVE ALL REFUSED TO PRODUCE CASSIN'S CRIMINAL RECORD WHICH IS REQUIRED FOR A PROPER DEFENSE.

THE CASE CANNOT BE REHEARD IN THE DISTRICT COURT BECAUSE I CANNOT GET THE EVIDENCE TO DEFEND MYSELF.

THE CRIMINAL, VIOLENT CRIMINAL, CONSTABLE CASSIN SHOULD BE REMOVED FROM THE POLICE FORCE.

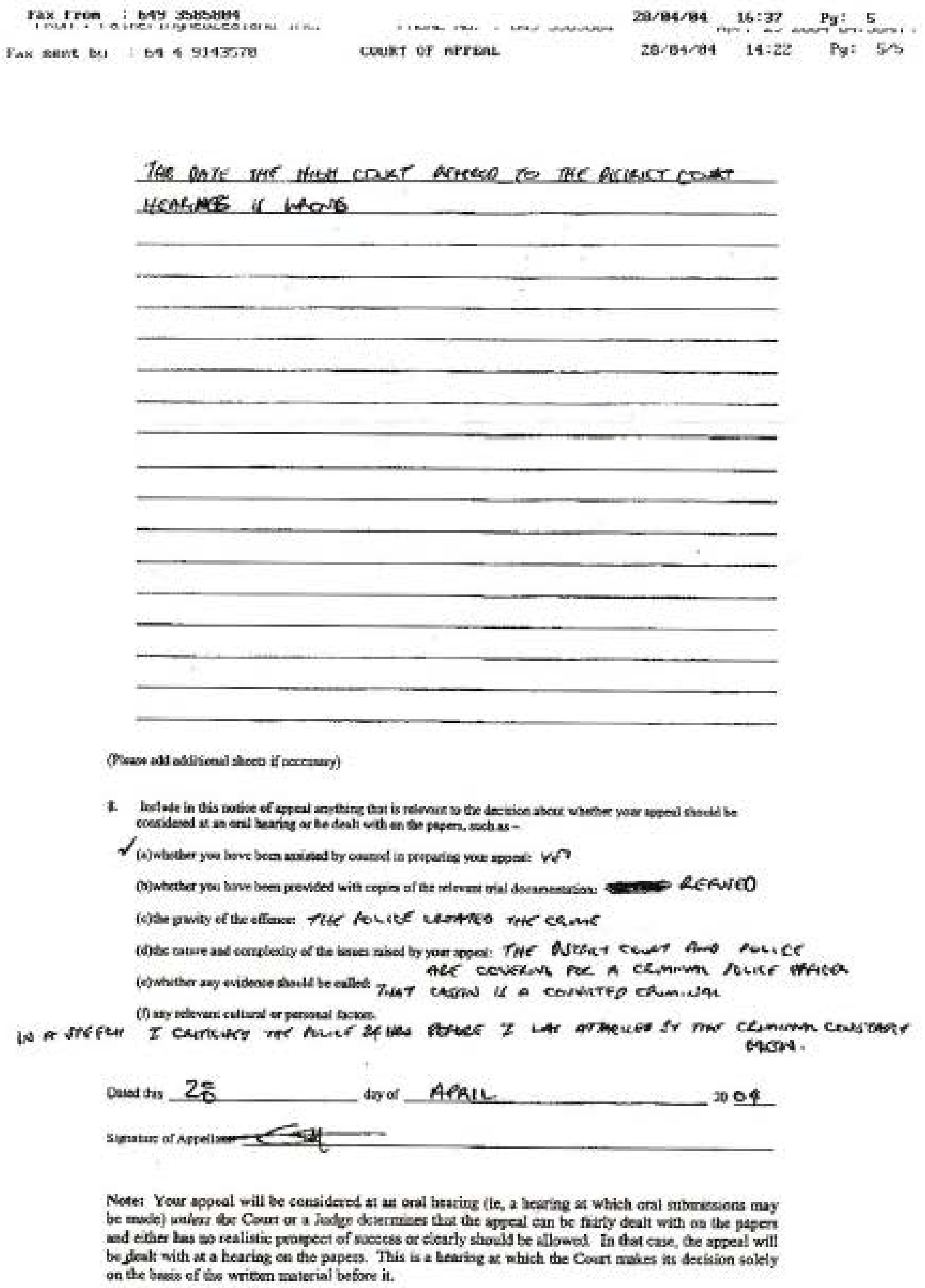

Fax from : 649 3585884 28/04/04 16:37 Pg: 5
Fax sent by : 64 4 9143578 COURT OF APPEAL 28/04/04 14:22 Pg: 5/5

THE DATE THE HIGH COURT REFERRED TO THE DISTRICT COURT HEARINGS IS WRONG

(Please add additional sheets if necessary)

8. Include in this notice of appeal anything that is relevant to the decision about whether your appeal should be considered at an oral hearing or be dealt with on the papers, such as –

✓ (a) whether you have been assisted by counsel in preparing your appeal: YES

(b) whether you have been provided with copies of the relevant trial documentation: [redacted] REFUSED

(c) the gravity of the offence: THE POLICE CREATED THE CRIME

(d) the nature and complexity of the issues raised by your appeal: THE DISTRICT COURT AND POLICE ARE COVERING FOR A CRIMINAL POLICE OFFICER

(e) whether any evidence should be called: THAT CASSIN IS A CONVICTED CRIMINAL

(f) any relevant cultural or personal factors.

IN A SPEECH I CRITICISED THE POLICE 3 DAYS BEFORE I WAS ATTACKED BY THE CRIMINAL CONSTABLE CASSIN.

Dated this 28 day of APRIL 2004

Signature of Appellant

Note: Your appeal will be considered at an oral hearing (ie, a hearing at which oral submissions may be made) *unless* the Court or a Judge determines that the appeal can be fairly dealt with on the papers and either has no realistic prospect of success or clearly should be allowed. In that case, the appeal will be dealt with at a hearing on the papers. This is a hearing at which the Court makes its decision solely on the basis of the written material before it.

Constable James Matewhinau Cassin's Criminal Record

and Greg Hallett's lack of one

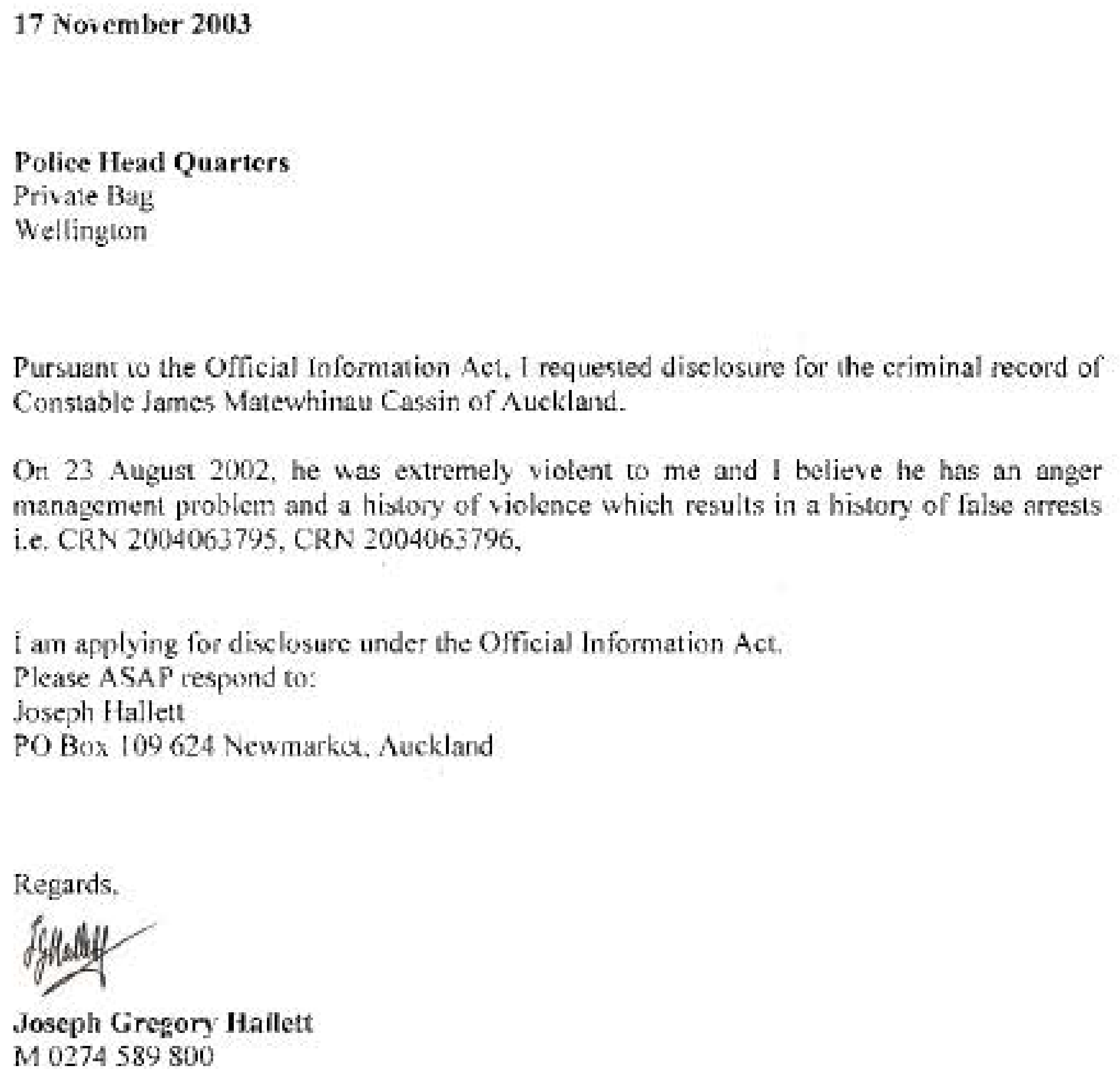

17 November 2003

Police Head Quarters
Private Bag
Wellington

Pursuant to the Official Information Act, I requested disclosure for the criminal record of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin of Auckland.

On 23 August 2002, he was extremely violent to me and I believe he has an anger management problem and a history of violence which results in a history of false arrests i.e. CRN 2004063795, CRN 2004063796,

I am applying for disclosure under the Official Information Act.
Please ASAP respond to:
Joseph Hallett
PO Box 109 624 Newmarket, Auckland

Regards,

Joseph Gregory Hallett
M 0274 589 800

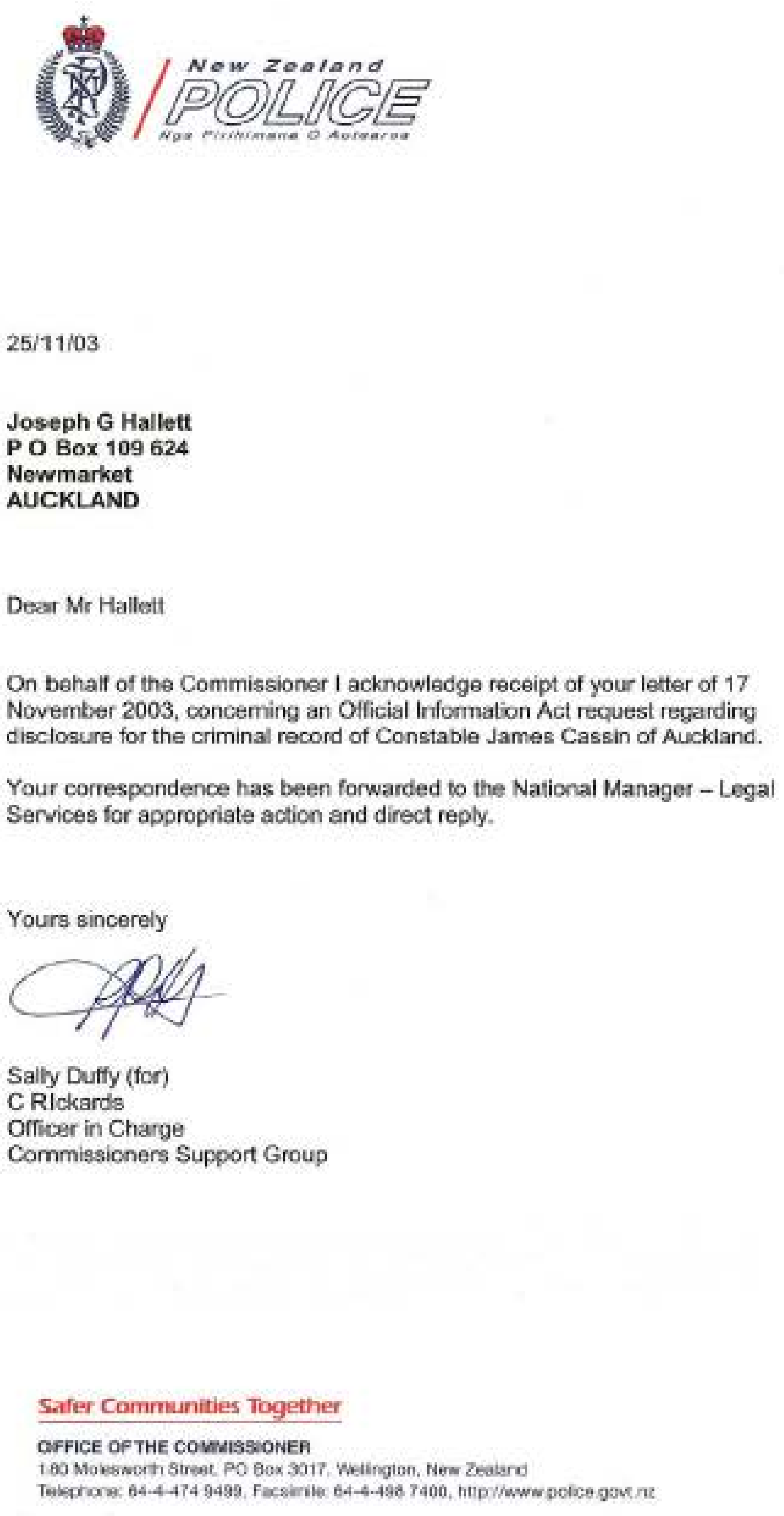

New Zealand
POLICE
Nga Pirihimana O Aotearoa

25/11/03

Joseph G Hallett
P O Box 109 624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

On behalf of the Commissioner I acknowledge receipt of your letter of 17 November 2003, concerning an Official Information Act request regarding disclosure for the criminal record of Constable James Cassin of Auckland.

Your correspondence has been forwarded to the National Manager – Legal Services for appropriate action and direct reply.

Yours sincerely

Sally Duffy (for)
C RIckards
Officer in Charge
Commissioners Support Group

Safer Communities Together

OFFICE OF THE COMMISSIONER
180 Molesworth Street, PO Box 3017, Wellington, New Zealand
Telephone: 64-4-474 9499, Facsimile: 64-4-498 7400, http://www.police.govt.nz

---

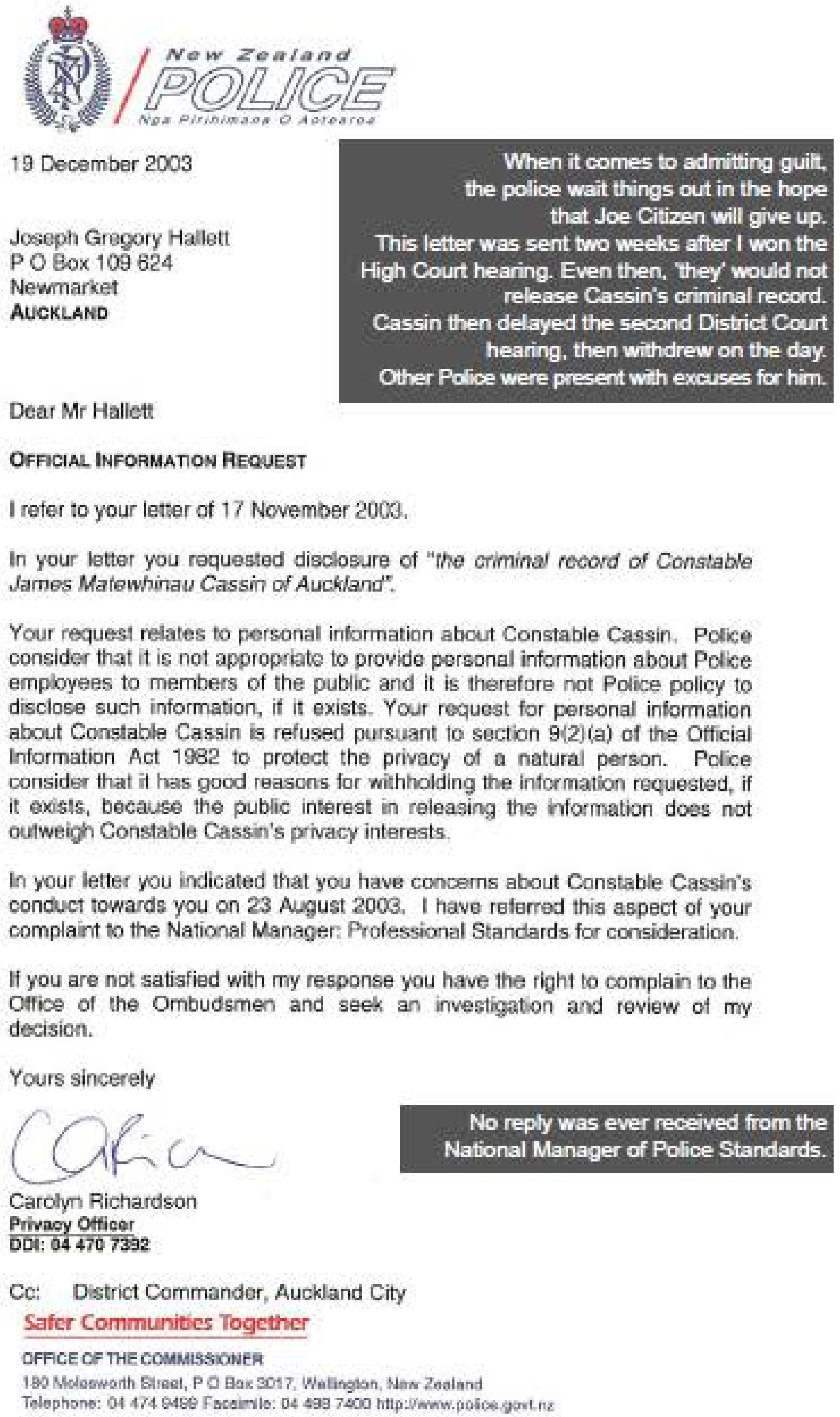

New Zealand
POLICE
Nga Pirihimana O Aotearoa

19 December 2003

Joseph Gregory Hallett
P O Box 109 624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

When it comes to admitting guilt, the police wait things out in the hope that Joe Citizen will give up. This letter was sent two weeks after I won the High Court hearing. Even then, 'they' would not release Cassin's criminal record. Cassin then delayed the second District Court hearing, then withdrew on the day. Other Police were present with excuses for him.

Dear Mr Hallett

OFFICIAL INFORMATION REQUEST

I refer to your letter of 17 November 2003.

In your letter you requested disclosure of "*the criminal record of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin of Auckland*".

Your request relates to personal information about Constable Cassin. Police consider that it is not appropriate to provide personal information about Police employees to members of the public and it is therefore not Police policy to disclose such information, if it exists. Your request for personal information about Constable Cassin is refused pursuant to section 9(2)(a) of the Official Information Act 1982 to protect the privacy of a natural person. Police consider that it has good reasons for withholding the information requested, if it exists, because the public interest in releasing the information does not outweigh Constable Cassin's privacy interests.

In your letter you indicated that you have concerns about Constable Cassin's conduct towards you on 23 August 2003. I have referred this aspect of your complaint to the National Manager: Professional Standards for consideration.

If you are not satisfied with my response you have the right to complain to the Office of the Ombudsmen and seek an investigation and review of my decision.

Yours sincerely

No reply was ever received from the National Manager of Police Standards.

Carolyn Richardson
Privacy Officer
DDI: 04 470 7392

Cc: District Commander, Auckland City

Safer Communities Together

OFFICE OF THE COMMISSIONER
180 Molesworth Street, P O Box 3017, Wellington, New Zealand
Telephone: 04 474 9499 Facsimile: 04 498 7400 http://www.police.govt.nz

12 February 2004

Office of the Privacy Commissioner
PO Box 466,
Auckland.
Ph 0800 803909

Reference: Official Information Request applied for on 17 November 2003 and denied on 19 December 2003 by Carolyn Richardson, the Police Privacy Officer of the *Office of the Commissioner for Police.*

Office,

Under the **Privacy Act** I am applying for the criminal record of **James Matewhinau Cassin** prior to entering the police force and as **Constable James Matewhinau Cassin** while within the police force from 1997 on. This is to include all charges and convictions.

On 23 August 2002 I was savagely attacked by Constable James Matewhinau Cassin of the Auckland Police without provocation.

At the hearing of 13 August 2003 Constable James Matewhinau Cassin admitted under oath to having two convictions for assault prior to entering the police force.

On 17 November 2003 I applied under the Official Information Act to have written proof of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin's criminal record.

On 19 December 2003 the criminal record of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin was denied by Carolyn Richardson, the Police Privacy Officer working under the Office of the Commissioner for Police and the banner *Safer Communities Together*. She mistakenly stated I was requesting personal information when I was requesting the criminal record of a sworn officer.

On 5 December 2003 the case was thrown out of the High Court by Judge Keane because the Police and District Court had 'lost' all of the transcripts and the tapes (4½ hrs) relating to the case, despite having previously stated that they had sent them to me at an address they could not fully disclose, and despite retaining any useful information to their lawyer.

This matter was referred back to the District Court by the High Court on 21 January 2004 (CRI 2003-404-186). Cassin's full criminal record is vital to a fair trial and justice prevailing.

Your sincerely,

Joseph Gregory Hallett
M 0274 589 800, PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland

P.S. *The Clean Slate Bill* was introduced into Parliament as a private members bill on 28 March 2001 and still requires a third reading. It states that employers can no longer check the criminal records of their employees beyond 7 years. However this does not apply to sworn officers of the police force and therefore does not apply to Constable James Matewhinau Cassin. His record can be checked past seven years with immunity.

---

12 February 2004

Office of the Ombudsmen
PO Box 10-152,
The Terrace, Wellington.
Ph 04 473 9533, 0800 802602, Fx 04 471 2254

Reference: Official Information Request applied for on 17 November 2003 and denied on 19 December 2003 by Carolyn Richardson, the Police Privacy Officer of the *Office of the Commissioner for Police.*

Ombudsmen,

Under the **Official Information Act** I am applying for the criminal record of **James Matewhinau Cassin** prior to entering the police force and as **Constable James Matewhinau Cassin** while within the police force from 1997 on. This is to include all charges and convictions.

On 23 August 2002 I was savagely attacked by Constable James Matewhinau Cassin of the Auckland Police without provocation.

At the hearing of 13 August 2003 Constable James Matewhinau Cassin admitted under oath to having two convictions for assault prior to entering the police force.

On 17 November 2003 I applied under the Official Information Act to have written proof of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin's criminal record.

On 19 December 2003 the criminal record of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin was denied by Carolyn Richardson, the Police Privacy Officer working under the Office of the Commissioner for Police and the banner *Safer Communities Together*. She mistakenly stated I was requesting personal information when I was requesting the criminal record of a sworn officer.

On 5 December 2003 the case was thrown out of the High Court by Judge Keane because the Police and District Court had 'lost' all of the transcripts and the tapes (4½ hrs) relating to the case, despite having previously stated that they had sent them to me at an address they could not fully disclose, and despite retaining any useful information to their lawyer.

This matter was referred back to the District Court by the High Court on 21 January 2004 (CRI 2003-404-186). Cassin's full criminal record is vital to a fair trial and justice prevailing.

Your sincerely,

Joseph Gregory Hallett
M 0274 589 800, PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland

P.S. *The Clean Slate Bill* was introduced into Parliament as a private members bill on 28 March 2001 and still requires a third reading. It states that employers can no longer check the criminal records of their employees beyond 7 years. However this does not apply to sworn officers of the police force and therefore does not apply to Constable James Matewhinau Cassin. His record can be checked past seven years with immunity.

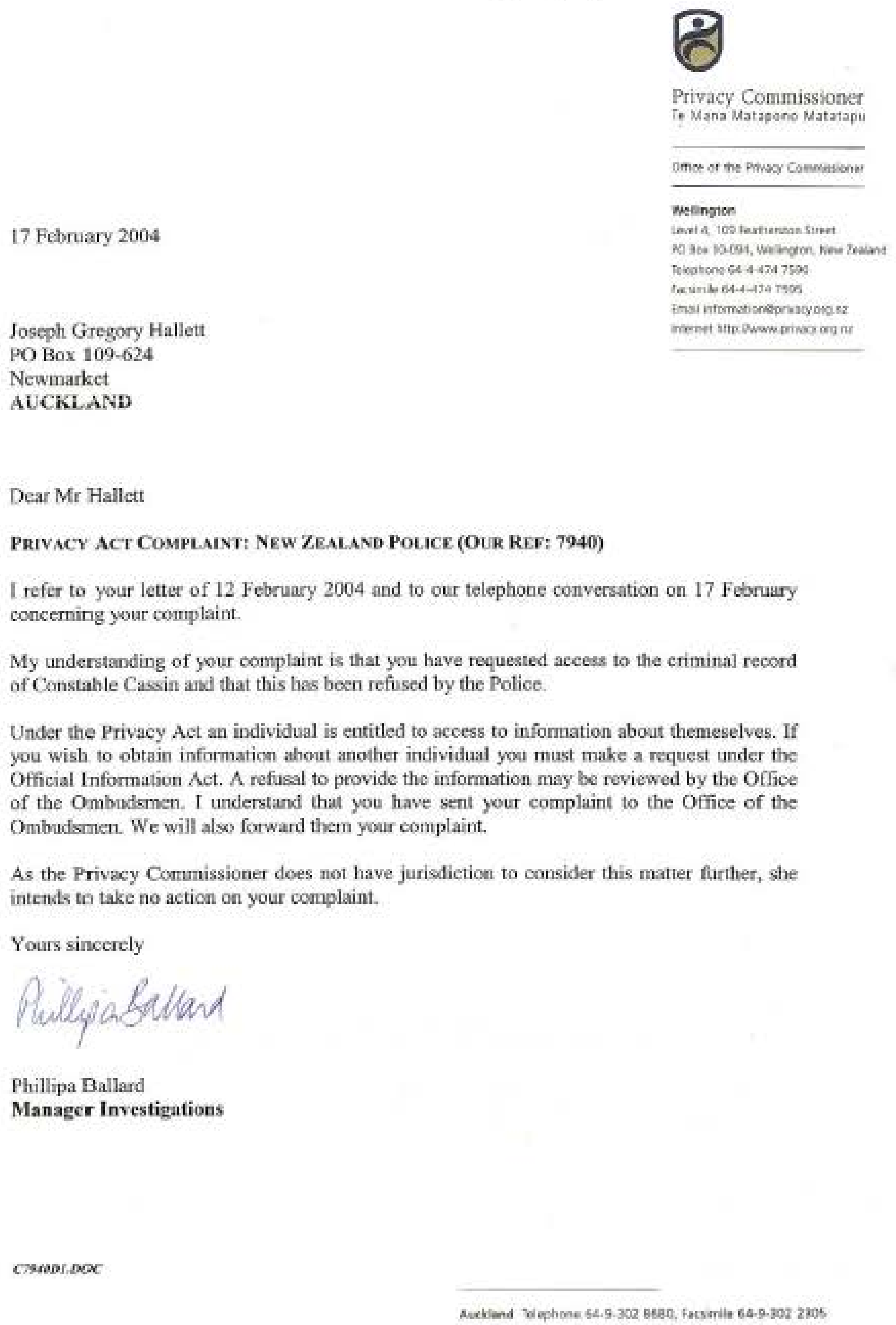

Privacy Commissioner
Te Mana Matapono Matatapu

Office of the Privacy Commissioner

Wellington
Level 4, 109 Featherston Street
PO Box 10-094, Wellington, New Zealand
Telephone 64-4-474 7590
Facsimile 64-4-474 7595
Email information@privacy.org.nz
Internet http://www.privacy.org.nz

17 February 2004

Joseph Gregory Hallett
PO Box 109-624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

PRIVACY ACT COMPLAINT: NEW ZEALAND POLICE (OUR REF: 7940)

I refer to your letter of 12 February 2004 and to our telephone conversation on 17 February concerning your complaint.

My understanding of your complaint is that you have requested access to the criminal record of Constable Cassin and that this has been refused by the Police.

Under the Privacy Act an individual is entitled to access to information about themeselves. If you wish to obtain information about another individual you must make a request under the Official Information Act. A refusal to provide the information may be reviewed by the Office of the Ombudsmen. I understand that you have sent your complaint to the Office of the Ombudsmen. We will also forward them your complaint.

As the Privacy Commissioner does not have jurisdiction to consider this matter further, she intends to take no action on your complaint.

Yours sincerely

Phillipa Ballard

Phillipa Ballard
Manager Investigations

C7940D1.DOC

Auckland Telephone 64-9-302 8680, Facsimile 64-9-302 2305

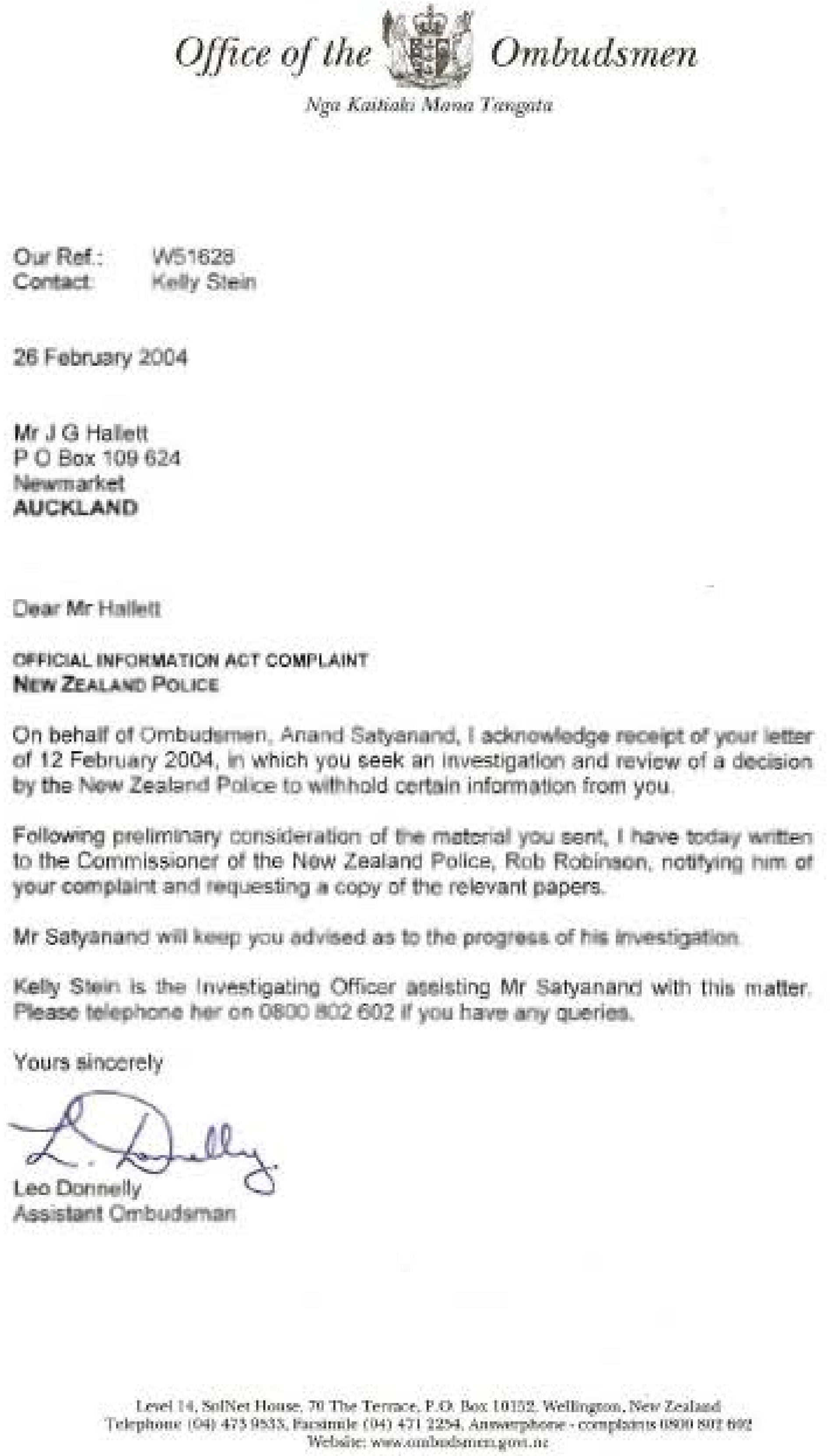

Office of the Ombudsmen
Nga Kaitiaki Mana Tangata

Our Ref.: W51628
Contact: Kelly Stein

26 February 2004

Mr J G Hallett
P O Box 109 624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

OFFICIAL INFORMATION ACT COMPLAINT
NEW ZEALAND POLICE

On behalf of Ombudsmen, Anand Satyanand, I acknowledge receipt of your letter of 12 February 2004, in which you seek an investigation and review of a decision by the New Zealand Police to withhold certain information from you.

Following preliminary consideration of the material you sent, I have today written to the Commissioner of the New Zealand Police, Rob Robinson, notifying him of your complaint and requesting a copy of the relevant papers.

Mr Satyanand will keep you advised as to the progress of his investigation.

Kelly Stein is the Investigating Officer assisting Mr Satyanand with this matter. Please telephone her on 0800 802 602 if you have any queries.

Yours sincerely

L. Donnelly

Leo Donnelly
Assistant Ombudsman

Level 14, SolNet House, 70 The Terrace, P.O. Box 10152, Wellington, New Zealand
Telephone (04) 473 9533, Facsimile (04) 471 2254, Answerphone - complaints 0800 802 602
Website: www.ombudsmen.govt.nz

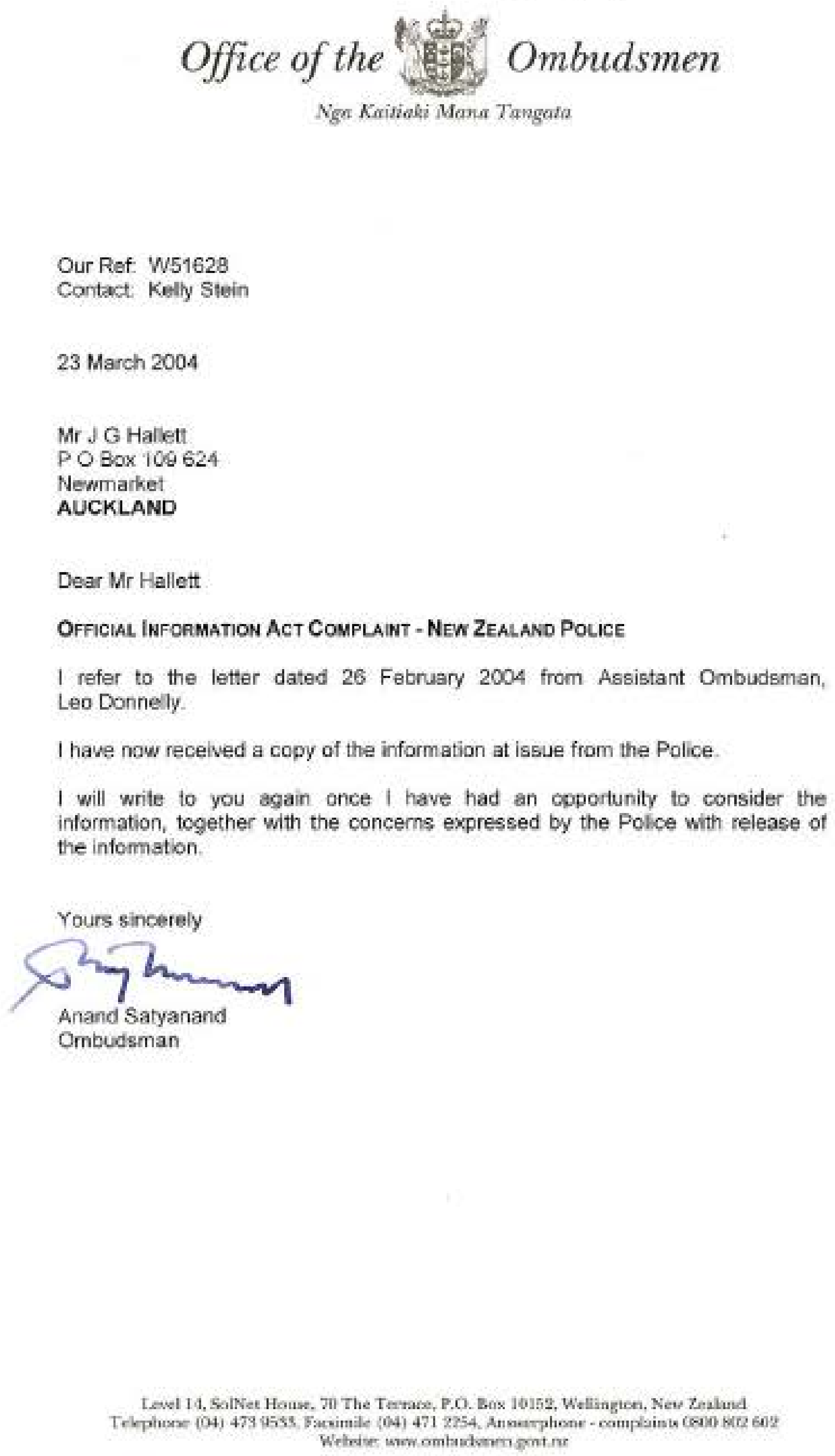

Office of the Ombudsmen
Nga Kaitiaki Mana Tangata

Our Ref: W51628
Contact: Kelly Stein

23 March 2004

Mr J G Hallett
P O Box 109 624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

OFFICIAL INFORMATION ACT COMPLAINT - NEW ZEALAND POLICE

I refer to the letter dated 26 February 2004 from Assistant Ombudsman, Leo Donnelly.

I have now received a copy of the information at issue from the Police.

I will write to you again once I have had an opportunity to consider the information, together with the concerns expressed by the Police with release of the information.

Yours sincerely

Anand Satyanand
Ombudsman

Level 14, SolNet House, 70 The Terrace, P.O. Box 10152, Wellington, New Zealand
Telephone (04) 473 9533, Facsimile (04) 471 2254, Answerphone - complaints 0800 802 602
Website: www.ombudsmen.govt.nz

---

3 April 2004

Ref W51628
Contact: Kelly Stein

Anand Satyanand (Ombudsman)
Office of the Ombudsmen
PO Box 10152,
Wellington
Ph (04) 473 9533

Anand Satyanand,

Given the recent expose of police violence, rape, falsifying of evidence and crime creation, it is imperative that uniformed criminals within the police force be removed from the force.

Constable James Matewhinau Cassin is a twice-convicted criminal in uniform and is a disgrace to the police force.

It would not look good for the Office of the Ombudsmen if you were to be shown to be withholding the criminal records of sworn officers. This would make the police force look like a crime creation movement rather than a crime prevention movement.

Please forward the criminal record of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin immediately. If you are not going to do so, then contact me immediately and I will take the next step.

Yours sincerely,

Joseph Gregory Hallett
PO Box 109 624
Newmarket
Auckland
M 0274 589 800

CC: Mike Meyrick, Lawyer

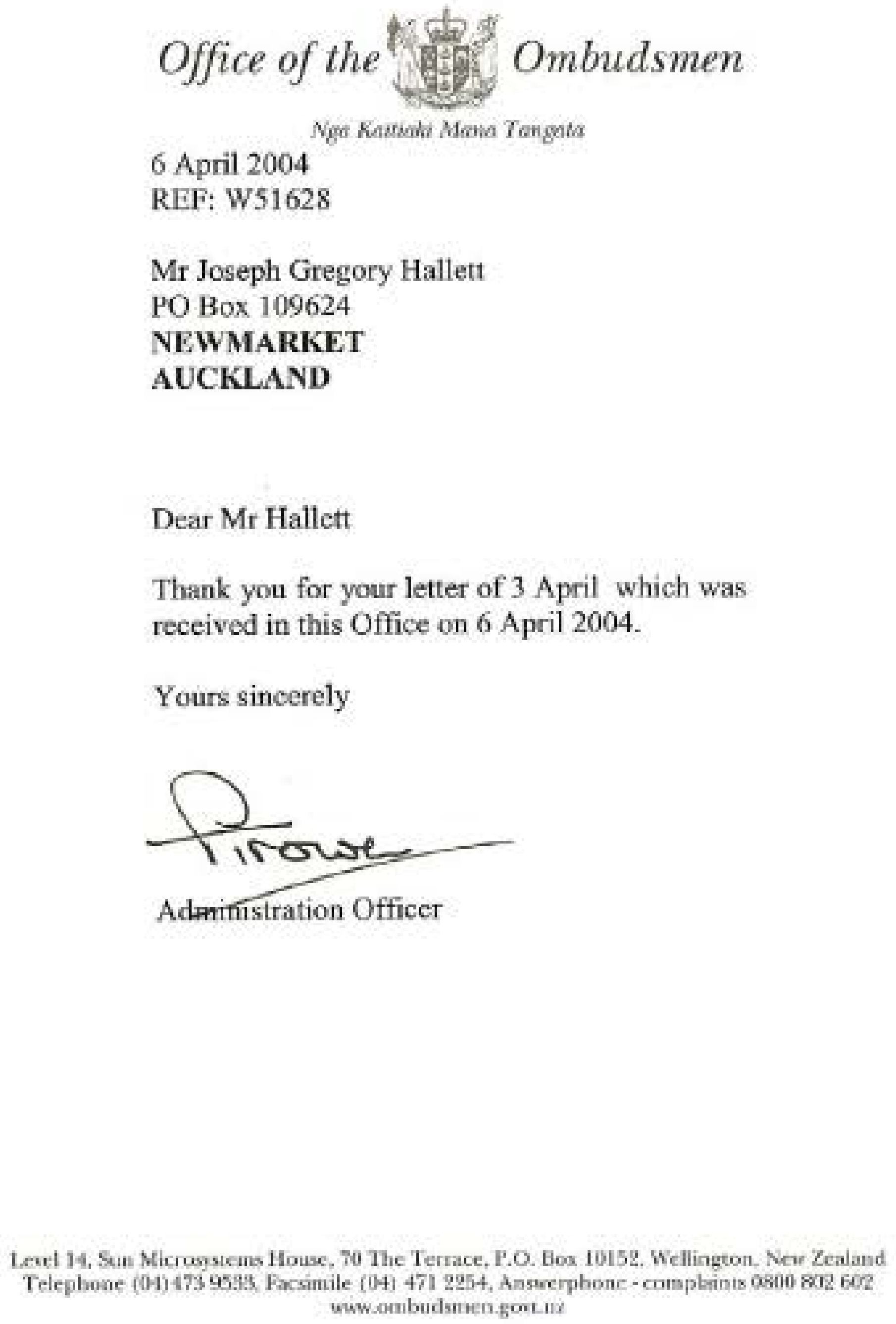

Office of the Ombudsmen
Nga Kaitiaki Mana Tangata

6 April 2004
REF: W51628

Mr Joseph Gregory Hallett
PO Box 109624
NEWMARKET
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

Thank you for your letter of 3 April which was received in this Office on 6 April 2004.

Yours sincerely

Administration Officer

Level 14, Sun Microsystems House, 70 The Terrace, P.O. Box 10152, Wellington, New Zealand
Telephone (04) 473 9533, Facsimile (04) 471 2254, Answerphone - complaints 0800 802 602
www.ombudsmen.govt.nz

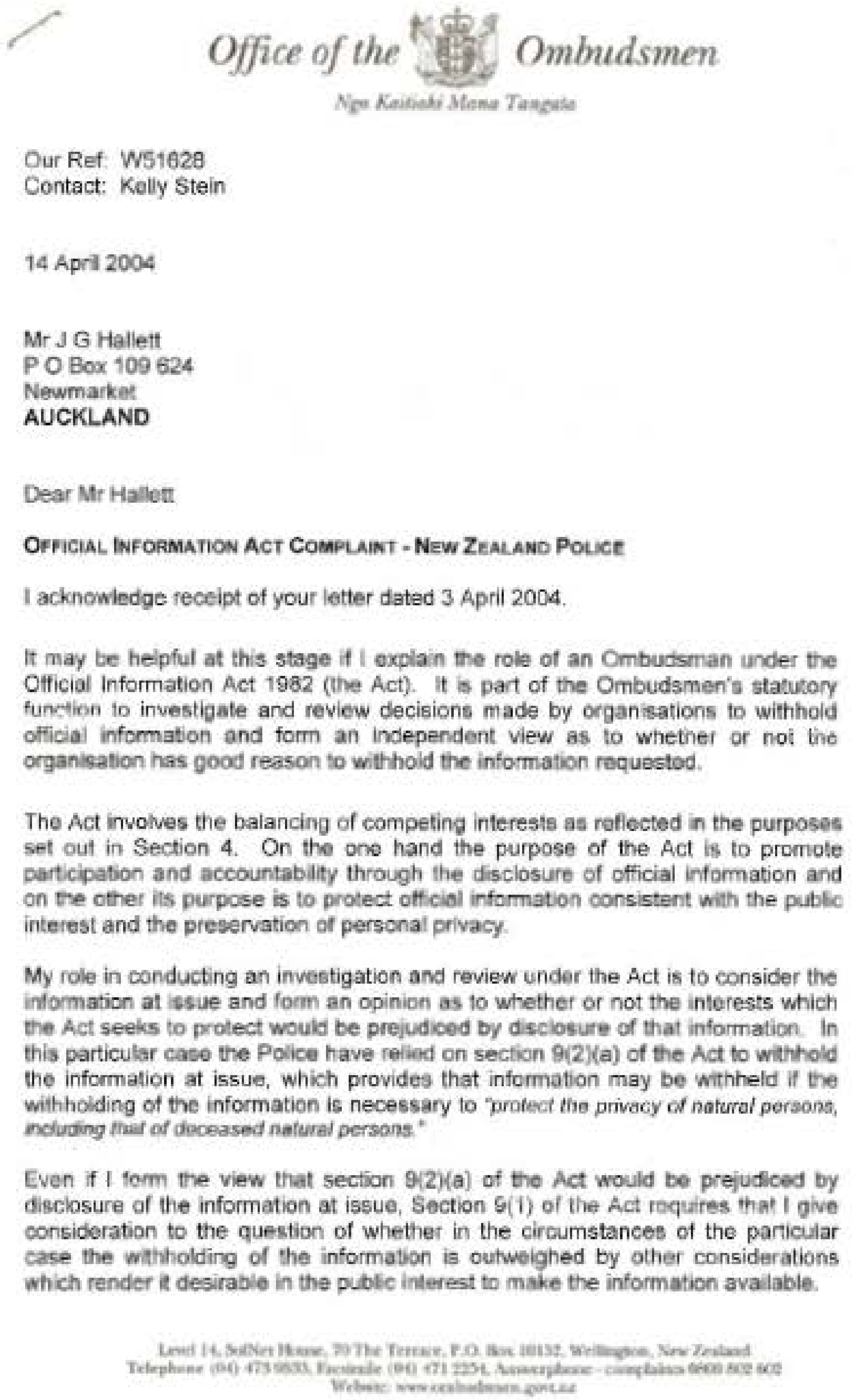

Office of the Ombudsmen
Nga Kaitiaki Mana Tangata

Our Ref: W51628
Contact: Kelly Stein

14 April 2004

Mr J G Hallett
P O Box 109 624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

OFFICIAL INFORMATION ACT COMPLAINT - NEW ZEALAND POLICE

I acknowledge receipt of your letter dated 3 April 2004.

It may be helpful at this stage if I explain the role of an Ombudsman under the Official Information Act 1982 (the Act). It is part of the Ombudsmen's statutory function to investigate and review decisions made by organisations to withhold official information and form an independent view as to whether or not the organisation has good reason to withhold the information requested.

The Act involves the balancing of competing interests as reflected in the purposes set out in Section 4. On the one hand the purpose of the Act is to promote participation and accountability through the disclosure of official information and on the other its purpose is to protect official information consistent with the public interest and the preservation of personal privacy.

My role in conducting an investigation and review under the Act is to consider the information at issue and form an opinion as to whether or not the interests which the Act seeks to protect would be prejudiced by disclosure of that information. In this particular case the Police have relied on section 9(2)(a) of the Act to withhold the information at issue, which provides that information may be withheld if the withholding of the information is necessary to *"protect the privacy of natural persons, including that of deceased natural persons."*

Even if I form the view that section 9(2)(a) of the Act would be prejudiced by disclosure of the information at issue, Section 9(1) of the Act requires that I give consideration to the question of whether in the circumstances of the particular case the withholding of the information is outweighed by other considerations which render it desirable in the public interest to make the information available.

Level 14, SolNet House, 70 The Terrace, P.O. Box 10152, Wellington, New Zealand
Telephone (04) 473 9533, Facsimile (04) 471 2254, Answerphone - complaints 0800 802 602
Website: www.ombudsmen.govt.nz

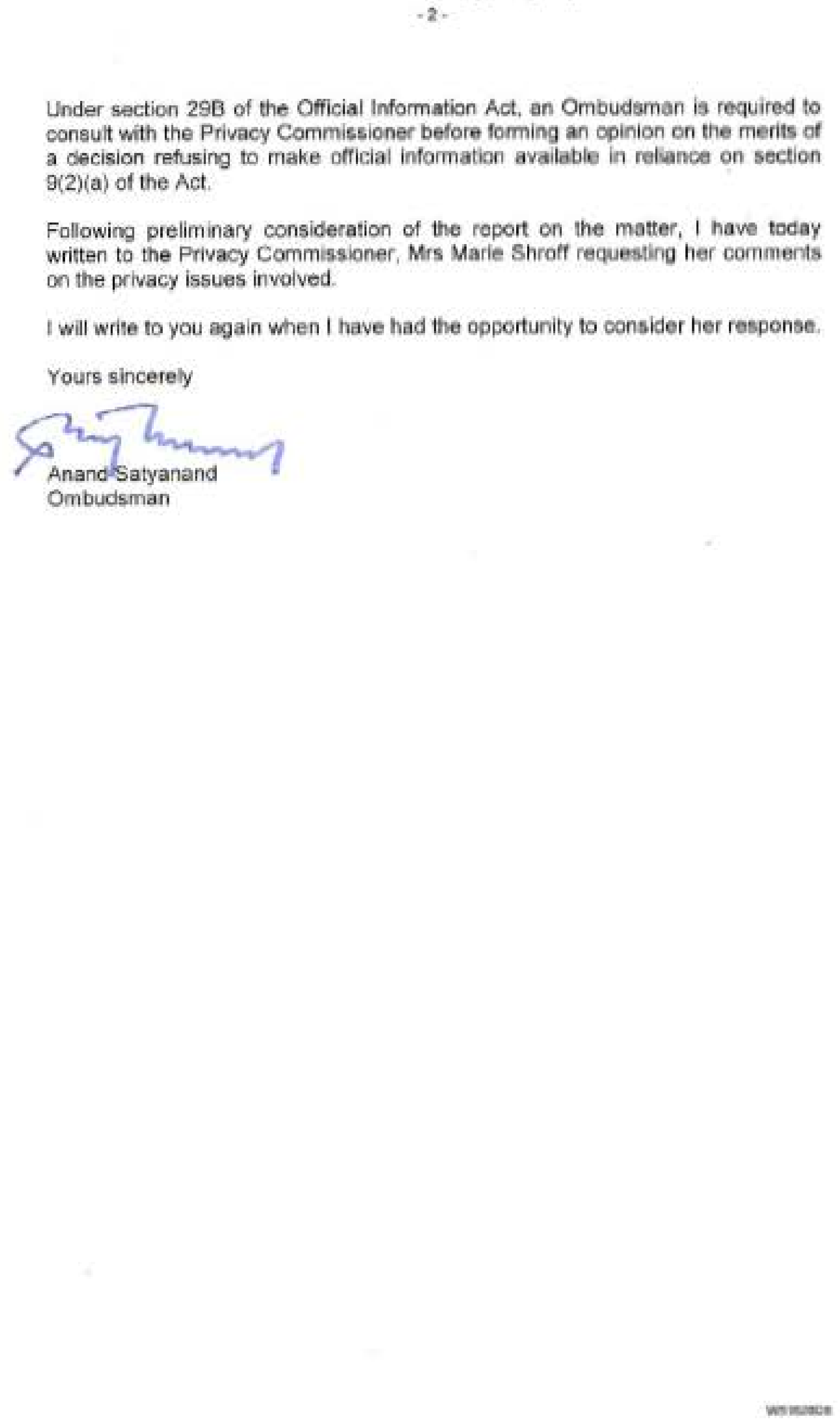

- 2 -

Under section 29B of the Official Information Act, an Ombudsman is required to consult with the Privacy Commissioner before forming an opinion on the merits of a decision refusing to make official information available in reliance on section 9(2)(a) of the Act.

Following preliminary consideration of the report on the matter, I have today written to the Privacy Commissioner, Mrs Marie Shroff requesting her comments on the privacy issues involved.

I will write to you again when I have had the opportunity to consider her response.

Yours sincerely

Anand Satyanand
Ombudsman

---

28 April 2004

Rob Robinson
Commissioner of Police
Office of the Commissioner of Police
PO Box 3017, Wellington
Ph 04 474 9499, Fx 04 498 7400

Rob Robinson,

Could you please tell me if:

1. It is recruitment policy to employ convicted criminals?
2. It is recruitment policy to employ criminals convicted of assault?
3. Would a convicted criminal have to lie in their application to join the police force by omitting their convictions from their record?
4. Is it police policy to hide the convictions of its police officers?
5. Is it police policy to confirm the convictions of police officers?
6. Are you aware that Constable James Matewhinau Cassin has two convictions for assault prior to entering the police force?
7. On 13 August 2003 at the District Court in Auckland, Constable James Matewhinau Cassin admitted to two convictions for assault prior to entering the police force. Please send me Constable James Matewhinau Cassin's criminal record.
8. Are you aware that Constable Cassin crosses the police line into violent criminal behaviour?
9. Has Constable James Matewhinau Cassin completed an anger management course?
10. Are you aware that Constable Cassin is perjurious in his affidavits?

Please copy reply as soon as possible by fax to my lawyer and by post to me.

Yours sincerely,

Joseph Gregory Hallett
M 0274 589 800
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland.

CC: Mike Meyrick Lawyer
132 Main St, Huntly, PO Box 130, Huntly
Ph 07 828 9290, Fx 07 828 9272
Police Complaints Authority
0800 503 728

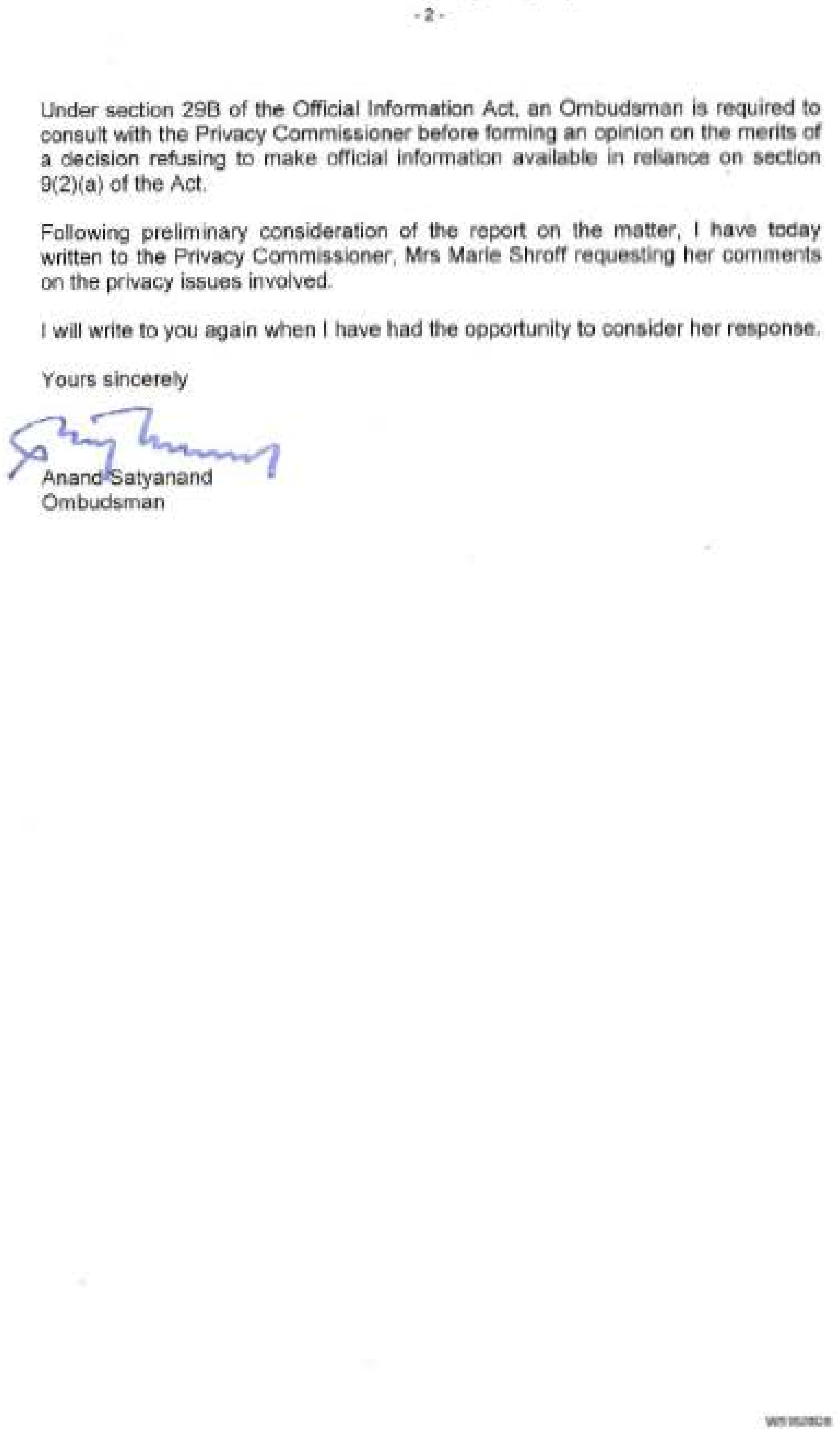

- 2 -

Under section 29B of the Official Information Act, an Ombudsman is required to consult with the Privacy Commissioner before forming an opinion on the merits of a decision refusing to make official information available in reliance on section 9(2)(a) of the Act.

Following preliminary consideration of the report on the matter, I have today written to the Privacy Commissioner, Mrs Marie Shroff requesting her comments on the privacy issues involved.

I will write to you again when I have had the opportunity to consider her response.

Yours sincerely

Anand Satyanand
Ombudsman

---

28 April 2004

Rob Robinson
Commissioner of Police
Office of the Commissioner of Police
PO Box 3017, Wellington
Ph 04 474 9499, Fx 04 498 7400

Rob Robinson,

Could you please tell me if:

1. It is recruitment policy to employ convicted criminals?
2. It is recruitment policy to employ criminals convicted of assault?
3. Would a convicted criminal have to lie in their application to join the police force by omitting their convictions from their record?
4. Is it police policy to hide the convictions of its police officers?
5. Is it police policy to confirm the convictions of police officers?
6. Are you aware that Constable James Matewhinau Cassin has two convictions for assault prior to entering the police force?
7. On 13 August 2003 at the District Court in Auckland, Constable James Matewhinau Cassin admitted to two convictions for assault prior to entering the police force. Please send me Constable James Matewhinau Cassin's criminal record.
8. Are you aware that Constable Cassin crosses the police line into violent criminal behaviour?
9. Has Constable James Matewhinau Cassin completed an anger management course?
10. Are you aware that Constable Cassin is perjurious in his affidavits?

Please copy reply as soon as possible by fax to my lawyer and by post to me.

Yours sincerely,

Joseph Gregory Hallett
M 0274 589 800
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland.

CC: Mike Meyrick Lawyer
132 Main St, Huntly, PO Box 130, Huntly
Ph 07 828 9290, Fx 07 828 9272
Police Complaints Authority
0800 503 728

28 April 2004

District Court
Auckland
Ph 916 9000
Fx 916 9010

Attn: Summary Section

CRN 02004063795
CRN 02004063796

I am requesting that the matter of the Police versus Joseph Gregory Hallett be remanded until the High Court and Court of Appeal has considered the memorandum filed. I have filed a memorandum in the High Court and engaged a lawyer from 27 April 2004. He needs time to consider the case and is unable to attend the case on Monday 3 May 2004.

I have also asked for the criminal convictions of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin from the police, privacy commissioner, office of the ombudsman and commissioner of police.

I have received more than one "thank you for the letter" but refusal to impart any information. This makes the police look like a crime protection racket.

Since the violent criminal record of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin is essential for my defence, this case cannot be heard until this evidence is made available.

If Constable Cassin signs a form saying that I can view his criminal record, then this would speed up matters.

Please confirm that the case will be remanded by phone and letter. Please copy to my lawyer.

Yours sincerely,

JGHallett

Joseph Gregory Hallett
M 0274 589 800
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland.

CC: Mike Meyrick Lawyer
132 Main St, Huntly, PO Box 130, Huntly
Ph 07 828 9290, Fx 07 828 9272

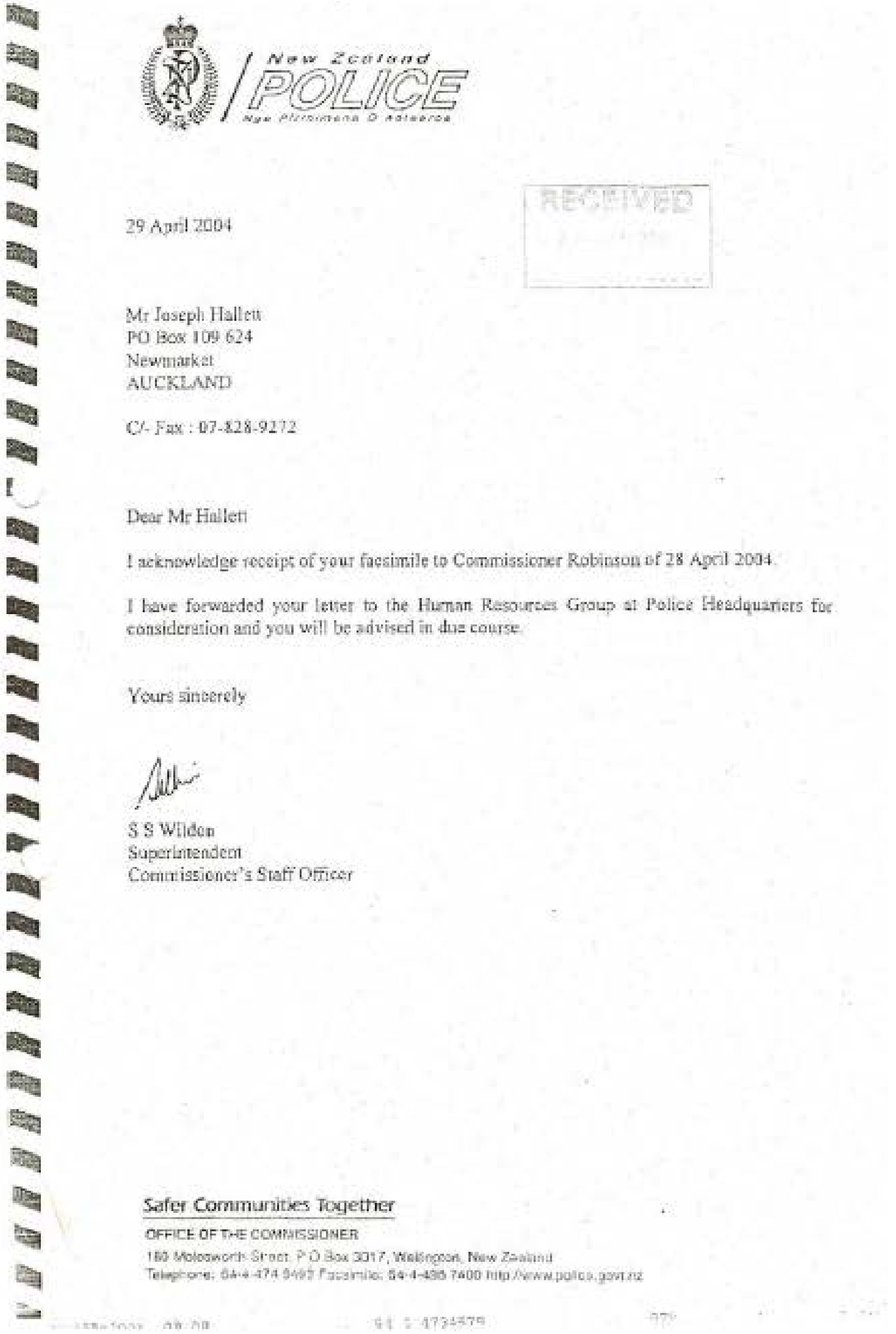

New Zealand
POLICE
Nga Pirihimana O Aotearoa

RECEIVED

29 April 2004

Mr Joseph Hallett
PO Box 109 624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

C/- Fax : 07-828-9272

Dear Mr Hallett

I acknowledge receipt of your facsimile to Commissioner Robinson of 28 April 2004.

I have forwarded your letter to the Human Resources Group at Police Headquarters for consideration and you will be advised in due course.

Yours sincerely

S S Wilden
Superintendent
Commissioner's Staff Officer

Safer Communities Together
OFFICE OF THE COMMISSIONER
180 Molesworth Street, P O Box 3017, Wellington, New Zealand
Telephone: 64-4-474 9499 Facsimile: 64-4-498 7400 http://www.police.govt.nz

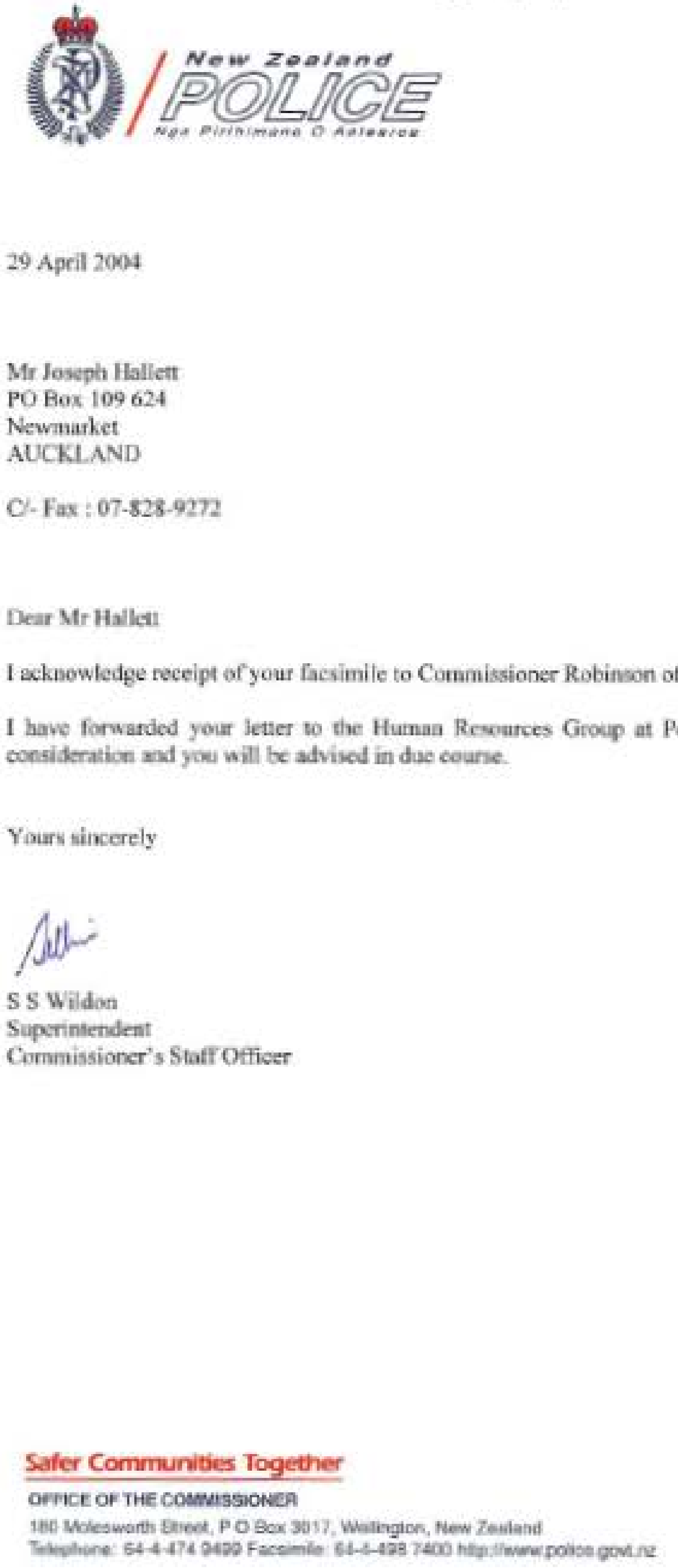

New Zealand
POLICE
Ngā Pirihimana O Aotearoa

29 April 2004

Mr Joseph Hallett
PO Box 109 624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

C/- Fax : 07-828-9272

Dear Mr Hallett

I acknowledge receipt of your facsimile to Commissioner Robinson of 28 April 2004.

I have forwarded your letter to the Human Resources Group at Police Headquarters for consideration and you will be advised in due course.

Yours sincerely

S S Wildon
Superintendent
Commissioner's Staff Officer

Safer Communities Together
OFFICE OF THE COMMISSIONER
180 Molesworth Street, P O Box 3017, Wellington, New Zealand
Telephone: 64-4-474 9499 Facsimile: 64-4-498 7400 http://www.police.govt.nz

---

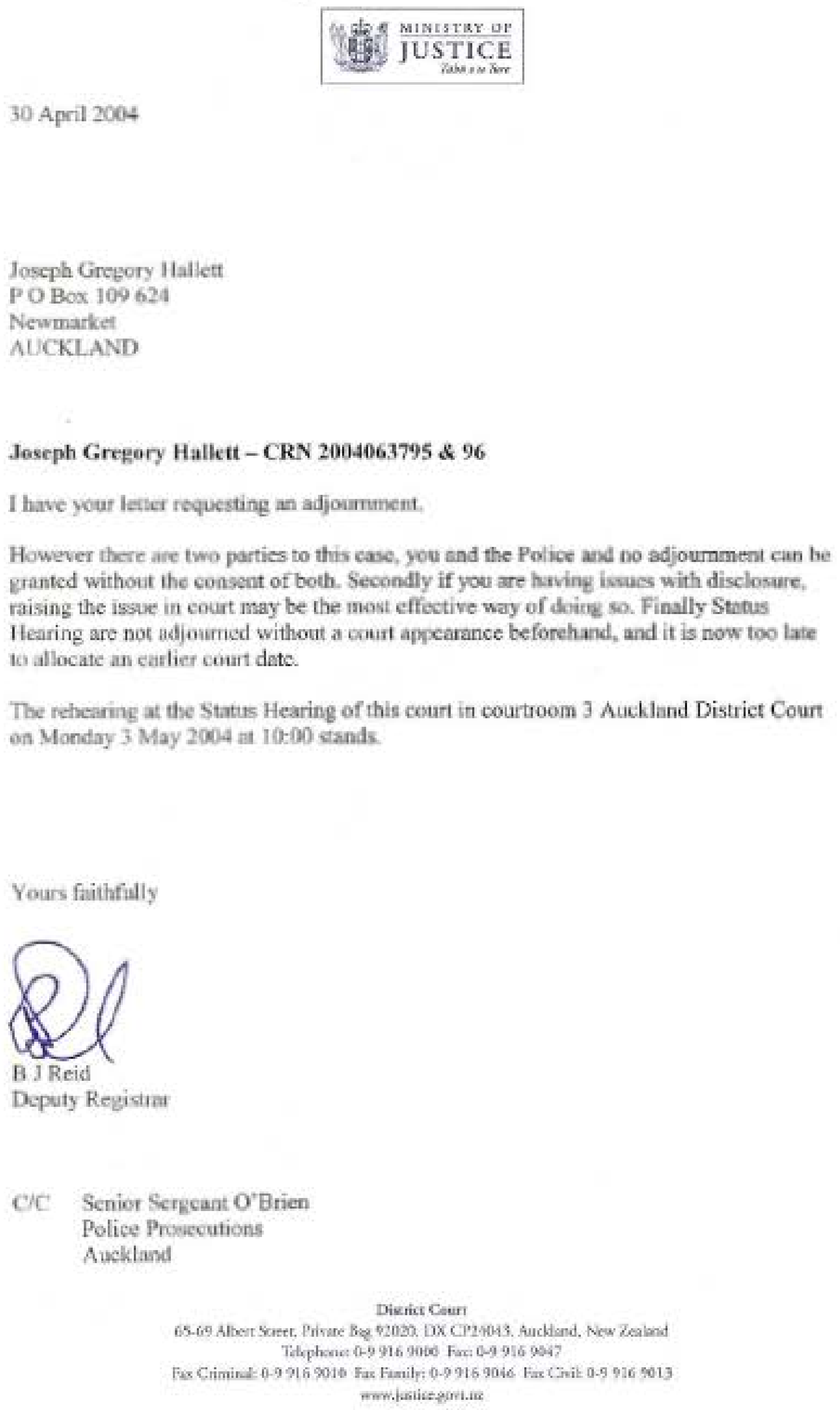

MINISTRY OF
JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

30 April 2004

Joseph Gregory Hallett
P O Box 109 624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

Joseph Gregory Hallett – CRN 2004063795 & 96

I have your letter requesting an adjournment.

However there are two parties to this case, you and the Police and no adjournment can be granted without the consent of both. Secondly if you are having issues with disclosure, raising the issue in court may be the most effective way of doing so. Finally Status Hearing are not adjourned without a court appearance beforehand, and it is now too late to allocate an earlier court date.

The rehearing at the Status Hearing of this court in courtroom 3 Auckland District Court on Monday 3 May 2004 at 10:00 stands.

Yours faithfully

B J Reid
Deputy Registrar

C/C Senior Sergeant O'Brien
Police Prosecutions
Auckland

District Court
65-69 Albert Street, Private Bag 92020, DX CP24043, Auckland, New Zealand
Telephone: 0-9 916 9000 Fax: 0-9 916 9047
Fax Criminal: 0-9 916 9010 Fax Family: 0-9 916 9046 Fax Civil: 0-9 916 9013
www.justice.govt.nz

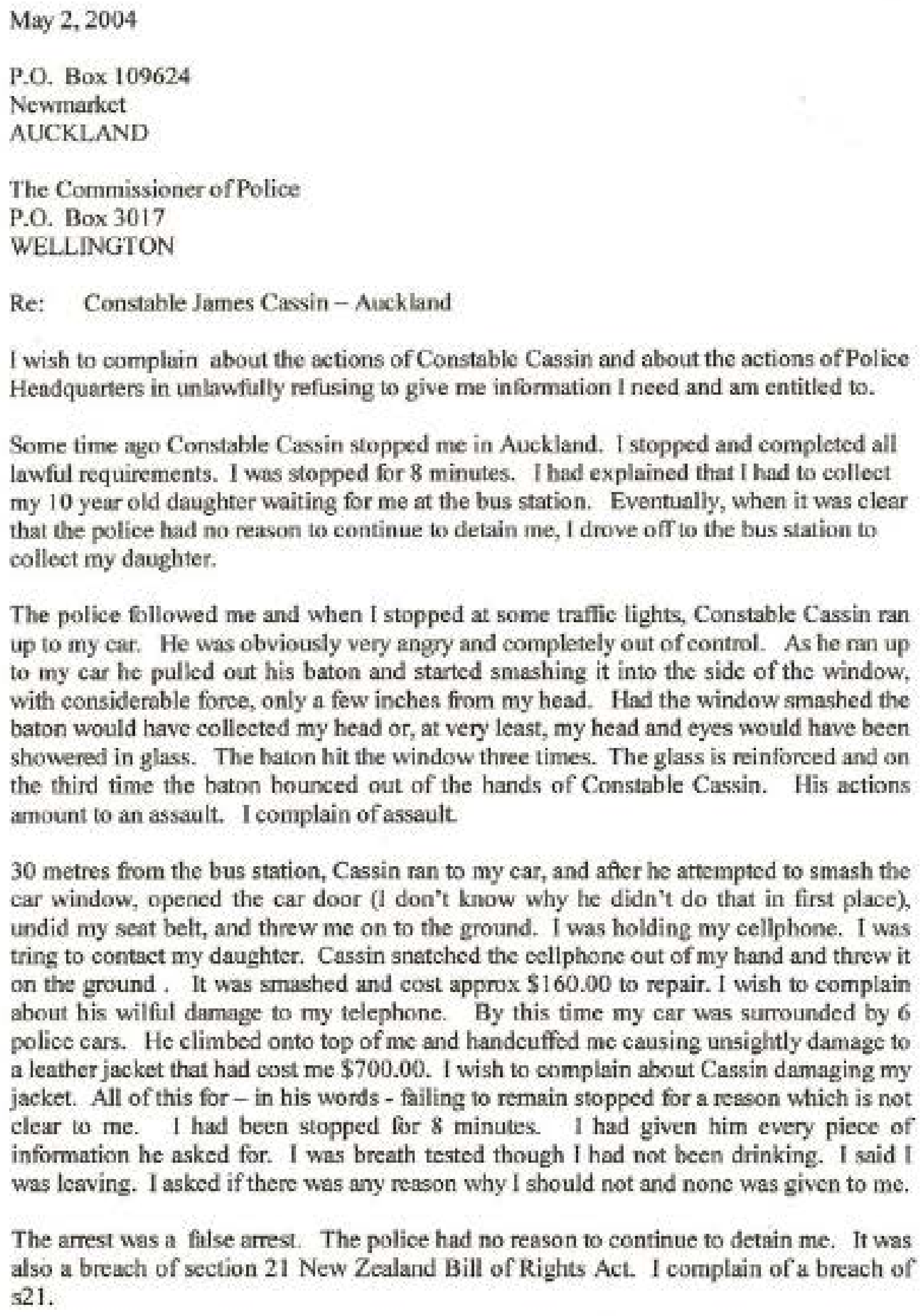

May 2, 2004

P.O. Box 109624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

The Commissioner of Police
P.O. Box 3017
WELLINGTON

Re: Constable James Cassin – Auckland

I wish to complain about the actions of Constable Cassin and about the actions of Police Headquarters in unlawfully refusing to give me information I need and am entitled to.

Some time ago Constable Cassin stopped me in Auckland. I stopped and completed all lawful requirements. I was stopped for 8 minutes. I had explained that I had to collect my 10 year old daughter waiting for me at the bus station. Eventually, when it was clear that the police had no reason to continue to detain me, I drove off to the bus station to collect my daughter.

The police followed me and when I stopped at some traffic lights, Constable Cassin ran up to my car. He was obviously very angry and completely out of control. As he ran up to my car he pulled out his baton and started smashing it into the side of the window, with considerable force, only a few inches from my head. Had the window smashed the baton would have collected my head or, at very least, my head and eyes would have been showered in glass. The baton hit the window three times. The glass is reinforced and on the third time the baton bounced out of the hands of Constable Cassin. His actions amount to an assault. I complain of assault.

30 metres from the bus station, Cassin ran to my car, and after he attempted to smash the car window, opened the car door (I don't know why he didn't do that in first place), undid my seat belt, and threw me on to the ground. I was holding my cellphone. I was tring to contact my daughter. Cassin snatched the cellphone out of my hand and threw it on the ground . It was smashed and cost approx $160.00 to repair. I wish to complain about his wilful damage to my telephone. By this time my car was surrounded by 6 police cars. He climbed onto top of me and handcuffed me causing unsightly damage to a leather jacket that had cost me $700.00. I wish to complain about Cassin damaging my jacket. All of this for – in his words - failing to remain stopped for a reason which is not clear to me. I had been stopped for 8 minutes. I had given him every piece of information he asked for. I was breath tested though I had not been drinking. I said I was leaving. I asked if there was any reason why I should not and none was given to me.

The arrest was a false arrest. The police had no reason to continue to detain me. It was also a breach of section 21 New Zealand Bill of Rights Act. I complain of a breach of s21.

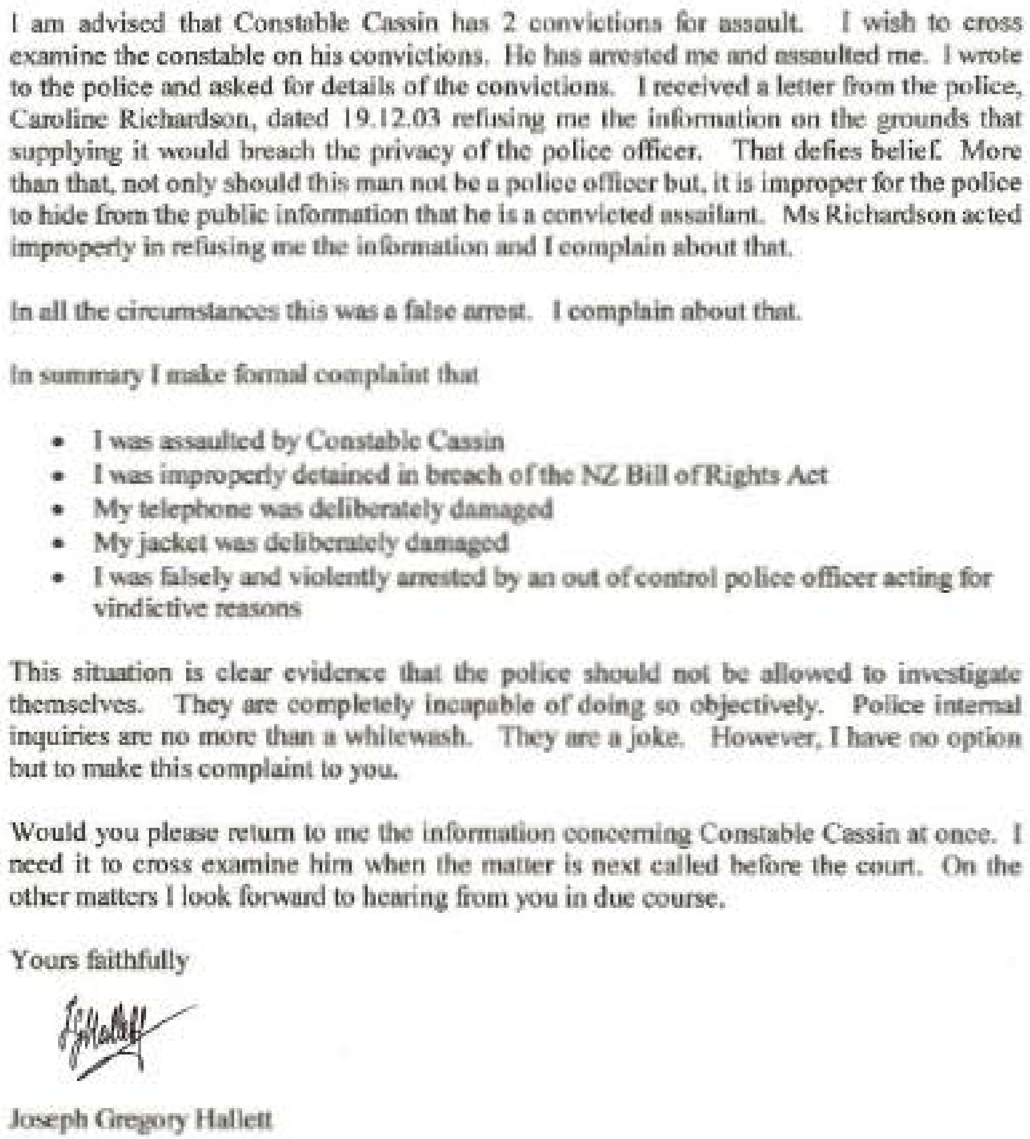

I am advised that Constable Cassin has 2 convictions for assault. I wish to cross examine the constable on his convictions. He has arrested me and assaulted me. I wrote to the police and asked for details of the convictions. I received a letter from the police, Caroline Richardson, dated 19.12.03 refusing me the information on the grounds that supplying it would breach the privacy of the police officer. That defies belief. More than that, not only should this man not be a police officer but, it is improper for the police to hide from the public information that he is a convicted assailant. Ms Richardson acted improperly in refusing me the information and I complain about that.

In all the circumstances this was a false arrest. I complain about that.

In summary I make formal complaint that

- I was assaulted by Constable Cassin
- I was improperly detained in breach of the NZ Bill of Rights Act
- My telephone was deliberately damaged
- My jacket was deliberately damaged
- I was falsely and violently arrested by an out of control police officer acting for vindictive reasons

This situation is clear evidence that the police should not be allowed to investigate themselves. They are completely incapable of doing so objectively. Police internal inquiries are no more than a whitewash. They are a joke. However, I have no option but to make this complaint to you.

Would you please return to me the information concerning Constable Cassin at once. I need it to cross examine him when the matter is next called before the court. On the other matters I look forward to hearing from you in due course.

Yours faithfully

Joseph Gregory Hallett

No reply was ever received addressing the issues raised in this letter.
No reply was ever received directly from The Commissioner of Police.

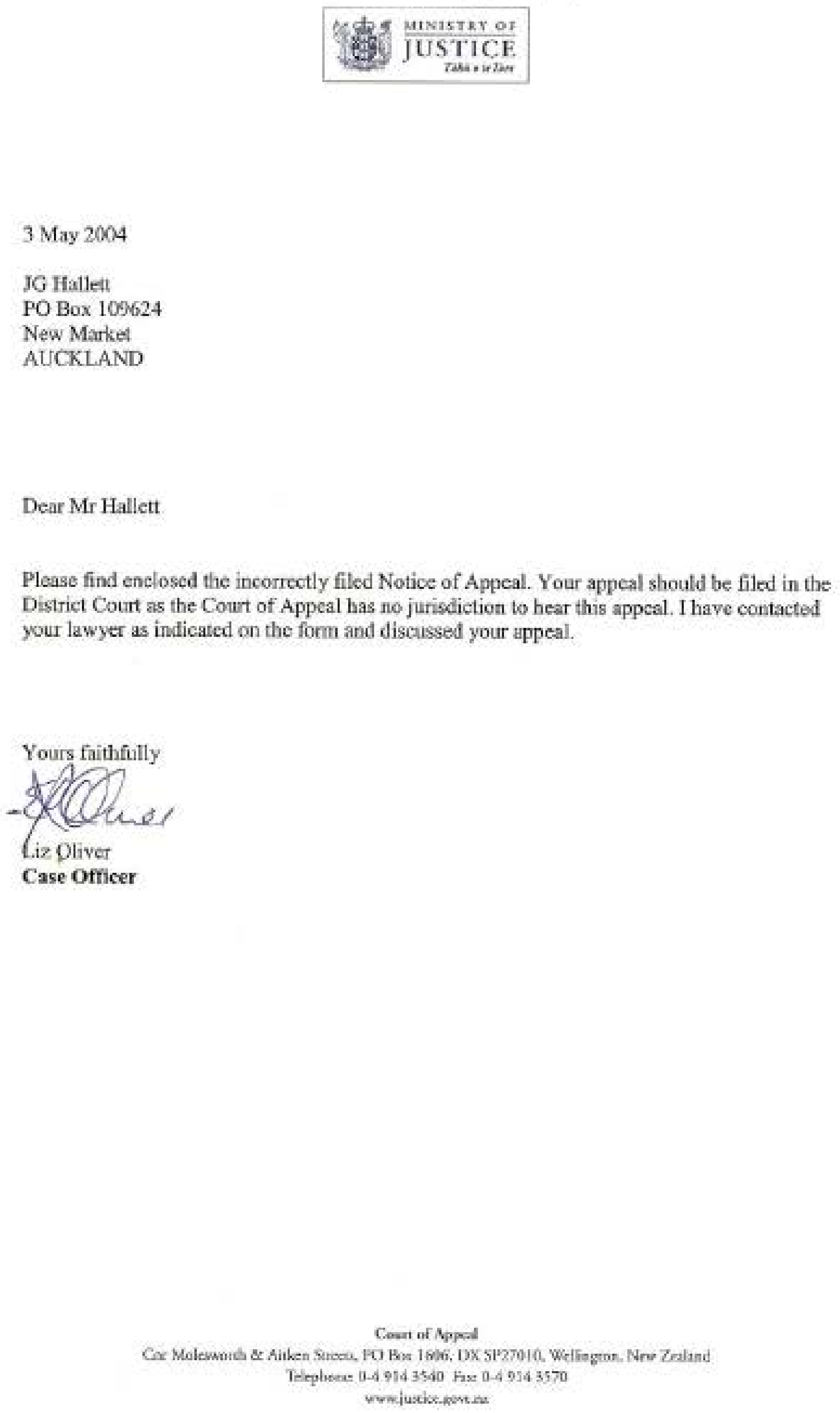

MINISTRY OF
JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

3 May 2004

JG Hallett
PO Box 109624
New Market
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

Please find enclosed the incorrectly filed Notice of Appeal. Your appeal should be filed in the District Court as the Court of Appeal has no jurisdiction to hear this appeal. I have contacted your lawyer as indicated on the form and discussed your appeal.

Yours faithfully

Liz Oliver
Case Officer

Court of Appeal
Cnr Molesworth & Aitken Streets, PO Box 1606, DX SP27010, Wellington, New Zealand
Telephone: 0-4 914 3540 Fax: 0-4 914 3570
www.justice.govt.nz

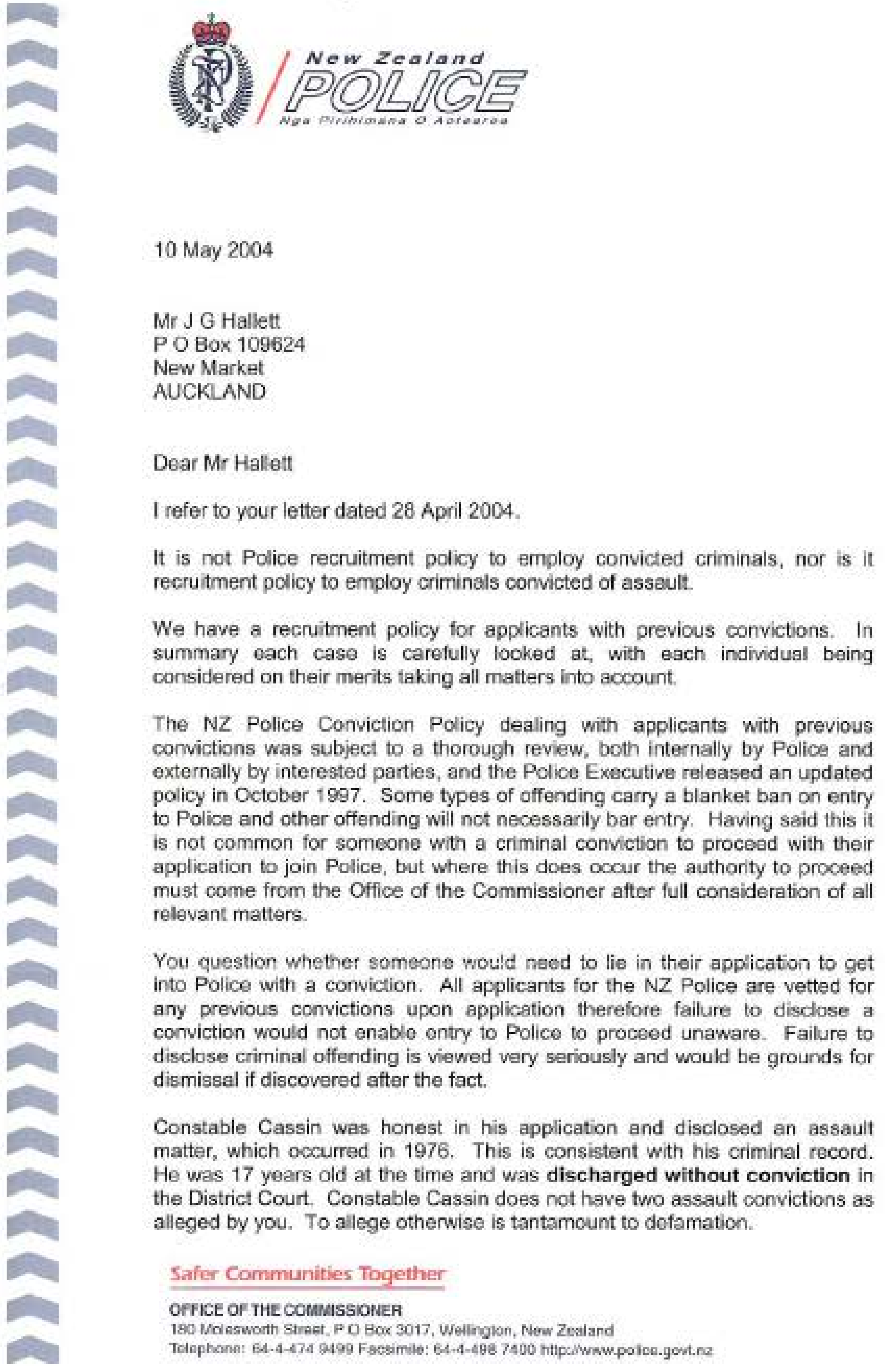

New Zealand
POLICE
Nga Pirihimana O Aotearoa

10 May 2004

Mr J G Hallett
P O Box 109624
New Market
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

I refer to your letter dated 28 April 2004.

It is not Police recruitment policy to employ convicted criminals, nor is it recruitment policy to employ criminals convicted of assault.

We have a recruitment policy for applicants with previous convictions. In summary each case is carefully looked at, with each individual being considered on their merits taking all matters into account.

The NZ Police Conviction Policy dealing with applicants with previous convictions was subject to a thorough review, both internally by Police and externally by interested parties, and the Police Executive released an updated policy in October 1997. Some types of offending carry a blanket ban on entry to Police and other offending will not necessarily bar entry. Having said this it is not common for someone with a criminal conviction to proceed with their application to join Police, but where this does occur the authority to proceed must come from the Office of the Commissioner after full consideration of all relevant matters.

You question whether someone would need to lie in their application to get into Police with a conviction. All applicants for the NZ Police are vetted for any previous convictions upon application therefore failure to disclose a conviction would not enable entry to Police to proceed unaware. Failure to disclose criminal offending is viewed very seriously and would be grounds for dismissal if discovered after the fact.

Constable Cassin was honest in his application and disclosed an assault matter, which occurred in 1976. This is consistent with his criminal record. He was 17 years old at the time and was **discharged without conviction** in the District Court. Constable Cassin does not have two assault convictions as alleged by you. To allege otherwise is tantamount to defamation.

Safer Communities Together

OFFICE OF THE COMMISSIONER
180 Molesworth Street, P O Box 3017, Wellington, New Zealand
Telephone: 64-4-474 9499 Facsimile: 64-4-498 7400 http://www.police.govt.nz

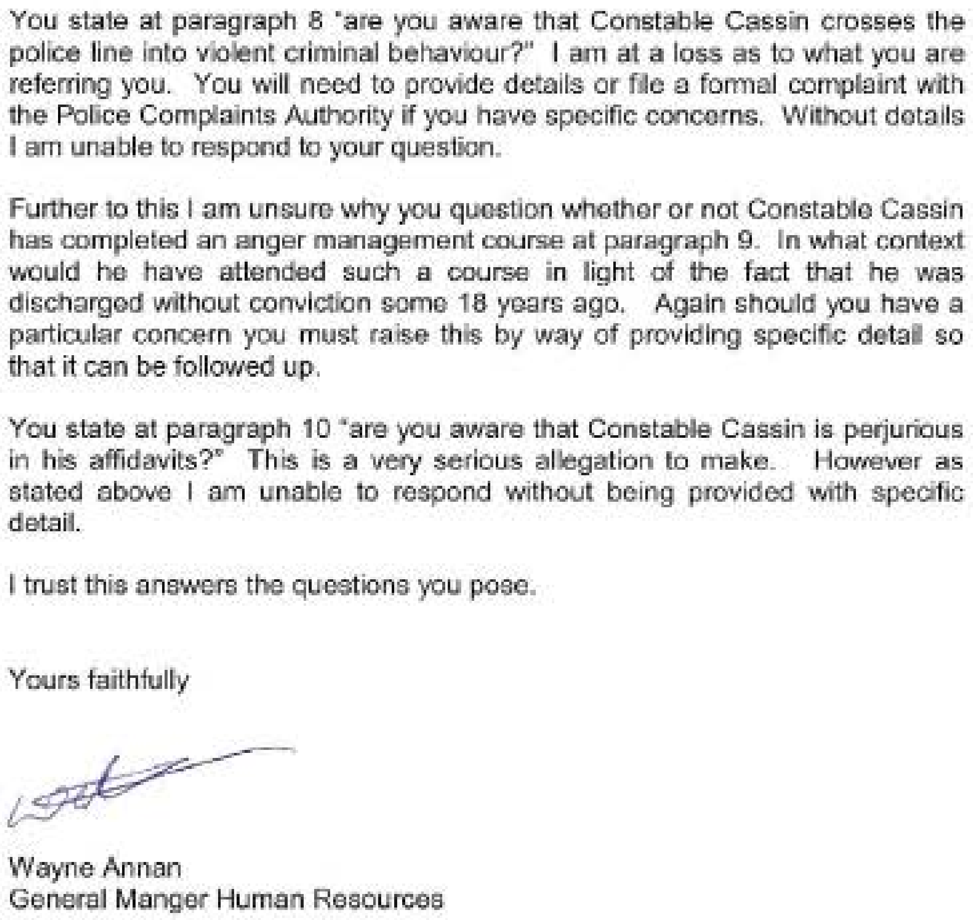

You state at paragraph 8 "are you aware that Constable Cassin crosses the police line into violent criminal behaviour?" I am at a loss as to what you are referring you. You will need to provide details or file a formal complaint with the Police Complaints Authority if you have specific concerns. Without details I am unable to respond to your question.

Further to this I am unsure why you question whether or not Constable Cassin has completed an anger management course at paragraph 9. In what context would he have attended such a course in light of the fact that he was discharged without conviction some 18 years ago. Again should you have a particular concern you must raise this by way of providing specific detail so that it can be followed up.

You state at paragraph 10 "are you aware that Constable Cassin is perjurious in his affidavits?" This is a very serious allegation to make. However as stated above I am unable to respond without being provided with specific detail.

I trust this answers the questions you pose.

Yours faithfully

Wayne Annan
General Manger Human Resources

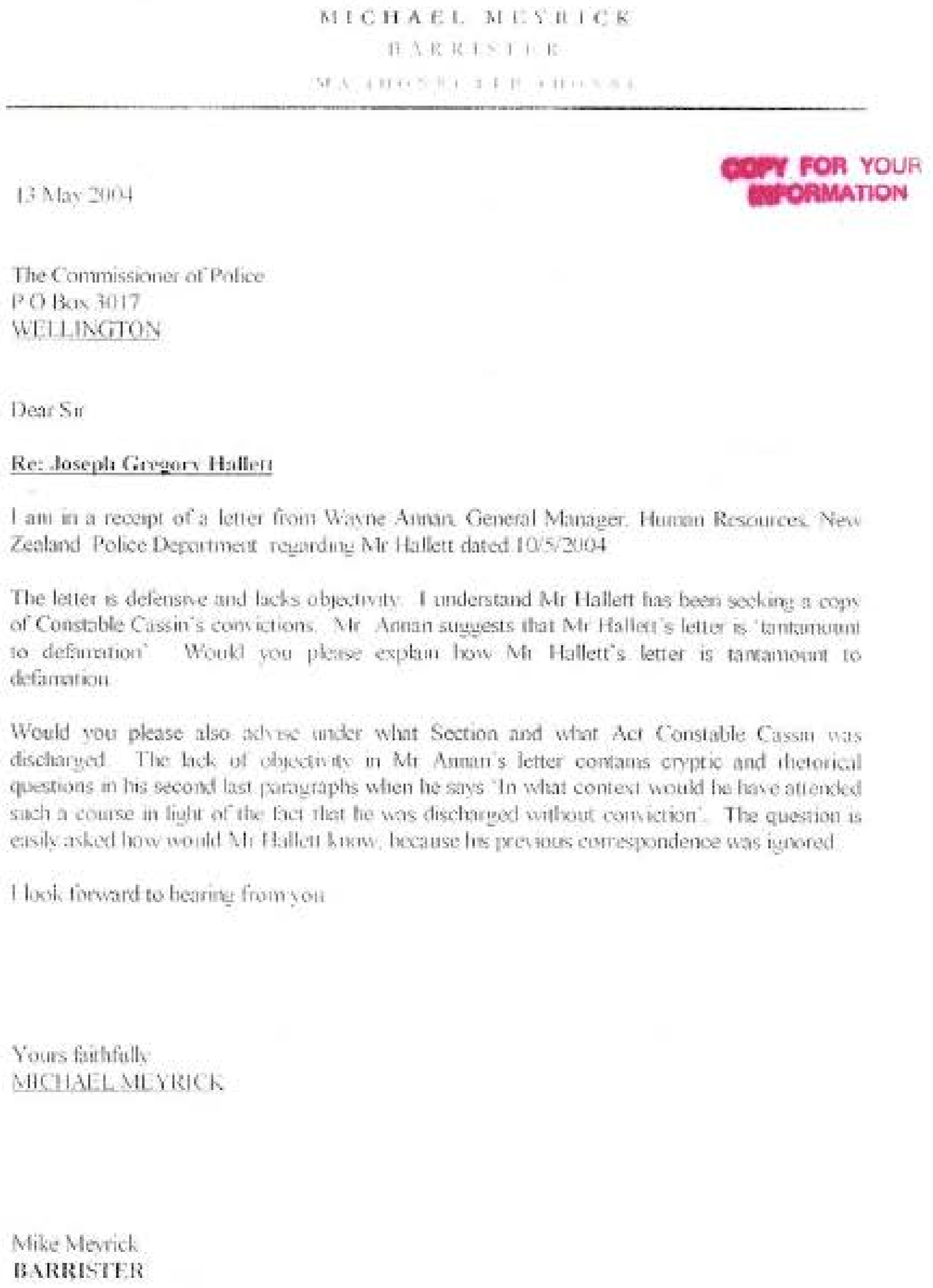

MICHAEL MEYRICK
BARRISTER
[illegible]

COPY FOR YOUR INFORMATION

13 May 2004

The Commissioner of Police
P O Box 3017
WELLINGTON

Dear Sir

Re: Joseph Gregory Hallett

I am in a receipt of a letter from Wayne Annan, General Manager, Human Resources, New Zealand Police Department regarding Mr Hallett dated 10/5/2004

The letter is defensive and lacks objectivity. I understand Mr Hallett has been seeking a copy of Constable Cassin's convictions. Mr Annan suggests that Mr Hallett's letter is 'tantamount to defamation'. Would you please explain how Mr Hallett's letter is tantamount to defamation.

Would you please also advise under what Section and what Act Constable Cassin was discharged. The lack of objectivity in Mr Annan's letter contains cryptic and rhetorical questions in his second last paragraphs when he says 'In what context would he have attended such a course in light of the fact that he was discharged without conviction'. The question is easily asked how would Mr Hallett know, because his previous correspondence was ignored.

I look forward to hearing from you

Yours faithfully
MICHAEL MEYRICK

Mike Meyrick
BARRISTER

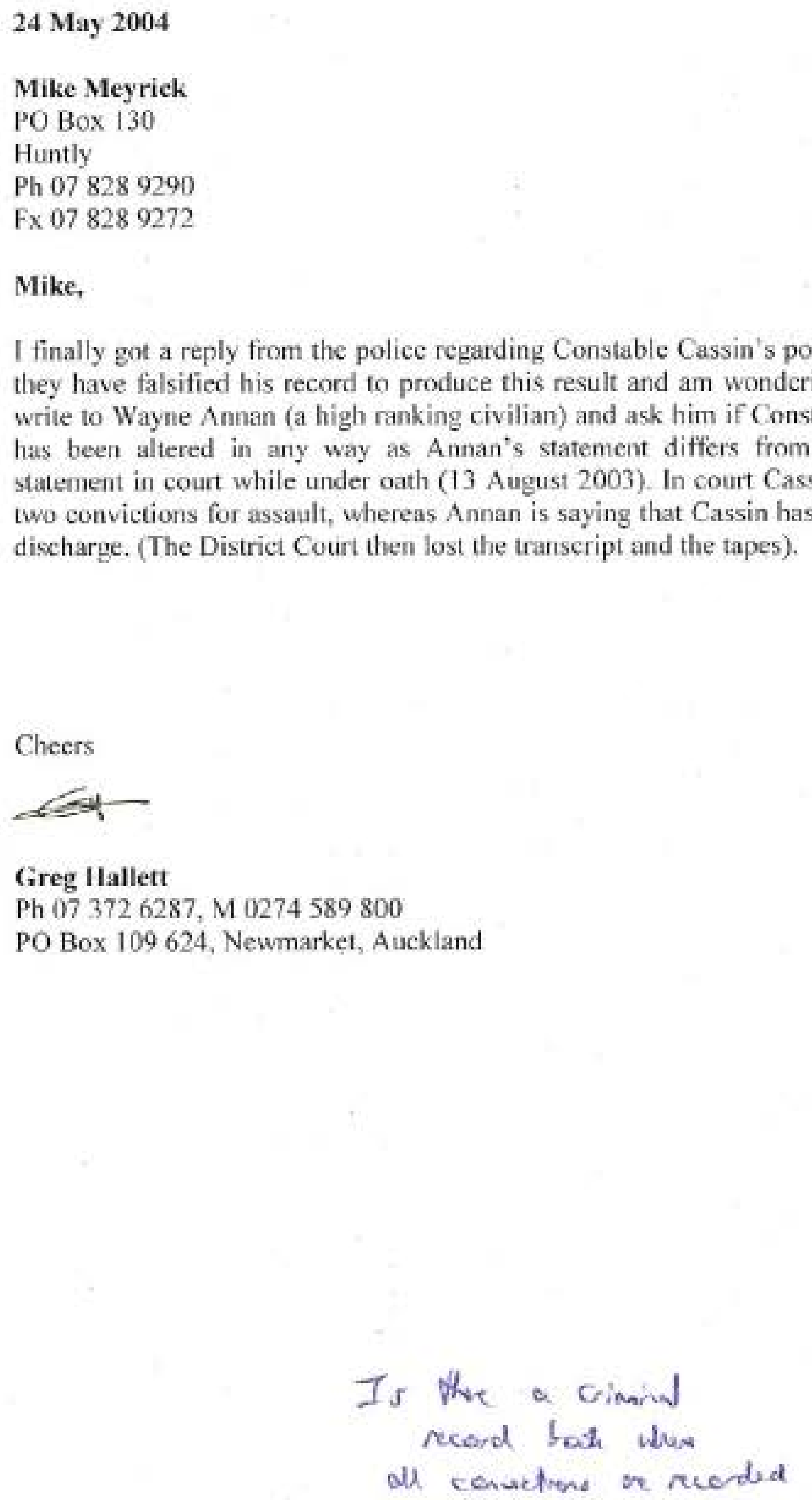

24 May 2004

Mike Meyrick
PO Box 130
Huntly
Ph 07 828 9290
Fx 07 828 9272

Mike,

I finally got a reply from the police regarding Constable Cassin's police record. I suspect they have falsified his record to produce this result and am wondering whether I should write to Wayne Annan (a high ranking civilian) and ask him if Constable Cassin's record has been altered in any way as Annan's statement differs from Constable Cassin's statement in court while under oath (13 August 2003). In court Cassin stated that he had two convictions for assault, whereas Annan is saying that Cassin has one conviction with discharge. (The District Court then lost the transcript and the tapes).

Cheers

Greg Hallett
Ph 07 372 6287, M 0274 589 800
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland

Is there a criminal
record book where
all convictions are recorded

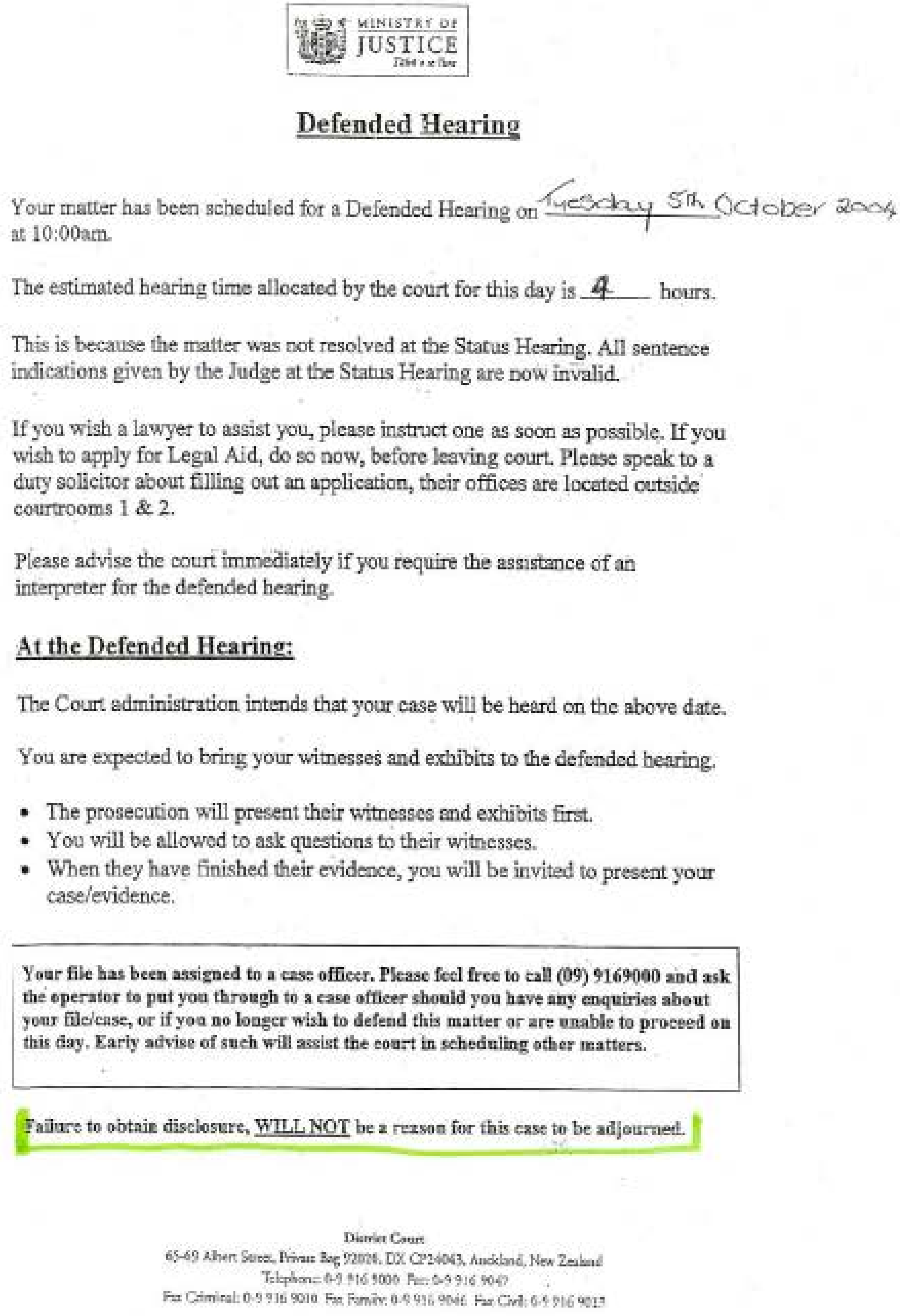

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE

Defended Hearing

Your matter has been scheduled for a Defended Hearing on Tuesday 5th October 2004 at 10:00am.

The estimated hearing time allocated by the court for this day is 4 hours.

This is because the matter was not resolved at the Status Hearing. All sentence indications given by the Judge at the Status Hearing are now invalid.

If you wish a lawyer to assist you, please instruct one as soon as possible. If you wish to apply for Legal Aid, do so now, before leaving court. Please speak to a duty solicitor about filling out an application, their offices are located outside courtrooms 1 & 2.

Please advise the court immediately if you require the assistance of an interpreter for the defended hearing.

At the Defended Hearing:

The Court administration intends that your case will be heard on the above date.

You are expected to bring your witnesses and exhibits to the defended hearing.

- The prosecution will present their witnesses and exhibits first.
- You will be allowed to ask questions to their witnesses.
- When they have finished their evidence, you will be invited to present your case/evidence.

Your file has been assigned to a case officer. Please feel free to call (09) 9169000 and ask the operator to put you through to a case officer should you have any enquiries about your file/case, or if you no longer wish to defend this matter or are unable to proceed on this day. Early advise of such will assist the court in scheduling other matters.

Failure to obtain disclosure, WILL NOT be a reason for this case to be adjourned.

District Court
65-69 Albert Street, Private Bag 92020, DX CP24063, Auckland, New Zealand
Telephone: 0-9 916 9000 Fax: 0-9 916 9047
Fax Criminal: 0-9 916 9010 Fax Family: 0-9 916 9046 Fax Civil: 0-9 916 9013

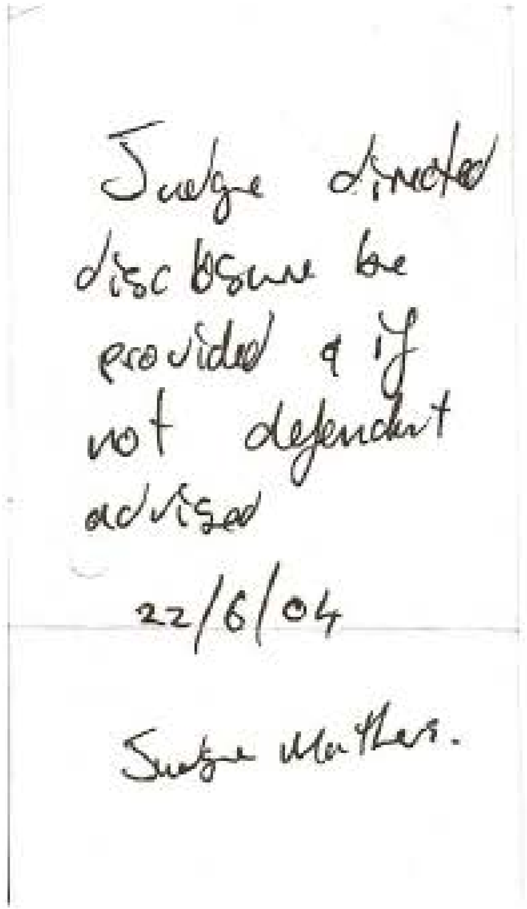

Judge directed
disclosure be
provided & if
not defendant
advised
22/6/04

Judge Mathers.

22 June 2004

Mike Meyrick
PO Box 130
Huntly
Ph 07 828 9290
Fx 07 828 9272

Mike,

I went to the status hearing today at the Auckland District Court and was heard at 10:30am.
The judge directed that the hearing be set down for Tuesday 5 October 2004 at 10am. The police asked for two hours. I asked for four hours and three witnesses plus the Constable Cassin and Constable Mead.

I also stated that I was proceeding with my plea of not guilty. I stated that the police, privacy commissioner and ombudsmen had all refused to supply information on the criminal record of Constable Cassin.

I stated that this information had not been supplied.

I requested a copy of the conviction list and all briefs of evidence.

I asked for the criminal record of Constable Cassin and the police office standing between the lawyers and the judge turned around and said "You won't get it." He said this in an affirmed and threatening manner.

Judge Mathers said it was not her job to summon the witnesses or to assist in providing the criminal record of Constable Cassin but that I should bring this up at the hearing.

When I left, a short fat male lawyer (40) led the way outside and gave me a note which said "Judge directed disclosure be provided and if not, then the defendant is to be advised. Judge Mathers."

Cheers

Greg Hallett
Ph/Fx 07 372 6287, M 0274 589 800
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland

11 August 2004

Office of the Ombudsmen
Your Ref: W51628
PO Box 10152
Wellington
Ph 04 473 9533
Fx 04 471 2254

Leo Donnelly,

On 29 June 2004 you sent me a letter stating "The Office of the Privacy Commissioner has advised that, due to a substantial workload at present, Mrs Shroff will not be in a position to provide her views on your request to the Ombudsman until the end of July 2004."

In the status hearing on this case, on Tuesday 5 October 2004, at 10am, Judge Mathers directed disclosure. If disclosure is not to be provided then I, the defendant is to be advised.

It is now 11 August 2004. Please send confirmation of Constable James Matawhinau's criminal record.

Yours sincerely,

Greg Hallett
Mob 0274 589 800
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland

Wait
+ apply to have it struck off

Office of the Ombudsmen
Nga Kaitiaki Mana Tangata

Our Ref: W51628
Contact: Kelly Stein

2 September 2004

Mr J G Hallett
P O Box 109 624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

OFFICIAL INFORMATION ACT COMPLAINT - NEW ZEALAND POLICE

I refer to the letter of 29 June 2004 from Assistant Ombudsman, Leo Donnelly.

I have today received a response from the Privacy Commissioner.

I will write to you again once I have had an opportunity to consider the views expressed by the Privacy Commissioner on the privacy issues raised by your request.

Yours sincerely

Anand Satyanand
Ombudsman

Level 14, SolNet House, 70 The Terrace, P.O. Box 10152, Wellington, New Zealand
Telephone (04) 473 9533, Facsimile (04) 471 2254, Answerphone - complaints 0800 802 602
Website: www.ombudsmen.govt.nz

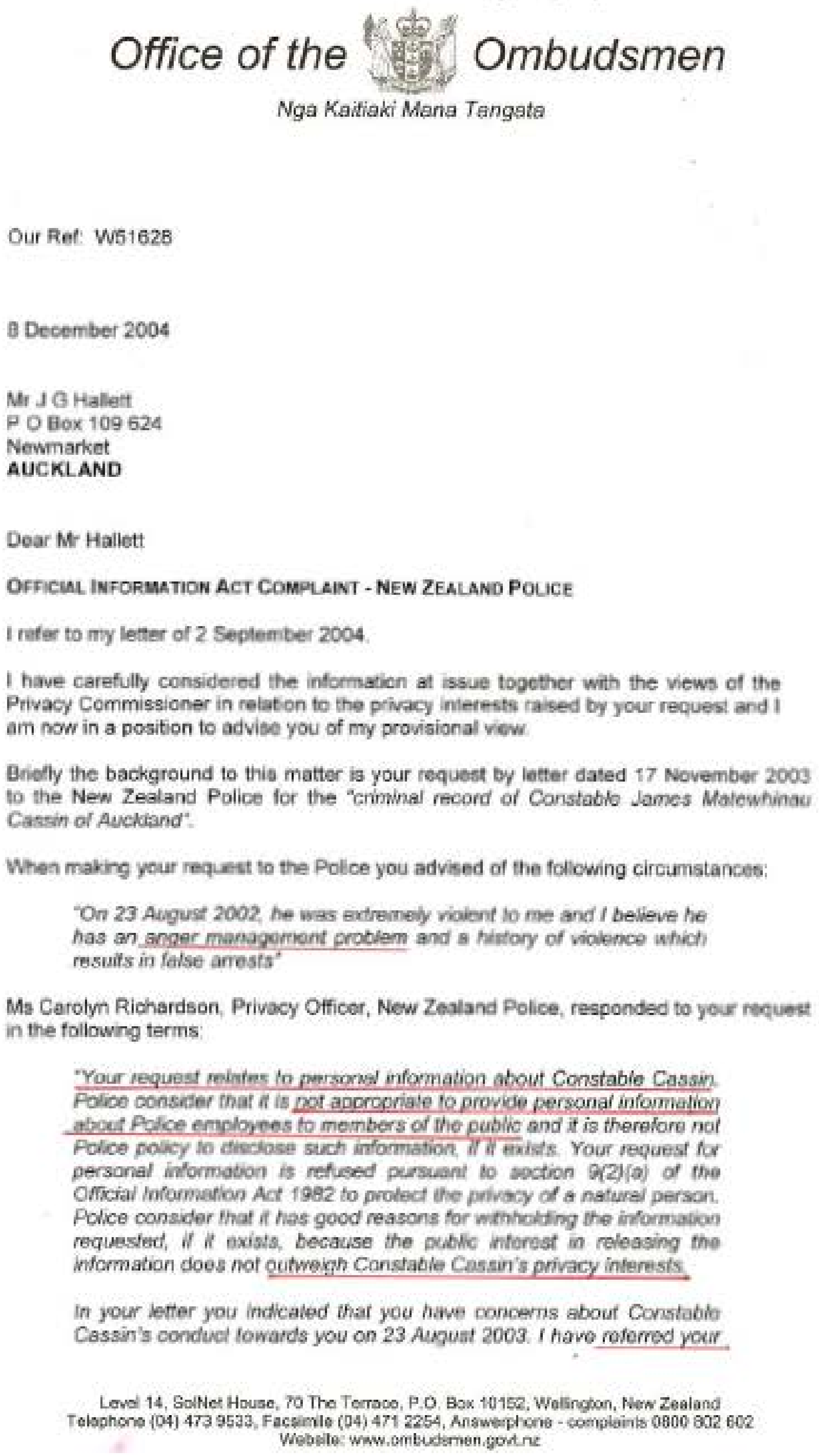

Office of the Ombudsmen
Nga Kaitiaki Mana Tangata

Our Ref: W51628

8 December 2004

Mr J G Hallett
P O Box 109 624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

OFFICIAL INFORMATION ACT COMPLAINT - NEW ZEALAND POLICE

I refer to my letter of 2 September 2004.

I have carefully considered the information at issue together with the views of the Privacy Commissioner in relation to the privacy interests raised by your request and I am now in a position to advise you of my provisional view.

Briefly the background to this matter is your request by letter dated 17 November 2003 to the New Zealand Police for the *"criminal record of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin of Auckland"*.

When making your request to the Police you advised of the following circumstances:

> *"On 23 August 2002, he was extremely violent to me and I believe he has an anger management problem and a history of violence which results in false arrests"*

Ms Carolyn Richardson, Privacy Officer, New Zealand Police, responded to your request in the following terms:

> *"Your request relates to personal information about Constable Cassin. Police consider that it is not appropriate to provide personal information about Police employees to members of the public and it is therefore not Police policy to disclose such information, if it exists. Your request for personal information is refused pursuant to section 9(2)(a) of the Official Information Act 1982 to protect the privacy of a natural person. Police consider that it has good reasons for withholding the information requested, if it exists, because the public interest in releasing the information does not outweigh Constable Cassin's privacy interests.*
>
> *In your letter you indicated that you have concerns about Constable Cassin's conduct towards you on 23 August 2003. I have referred your*

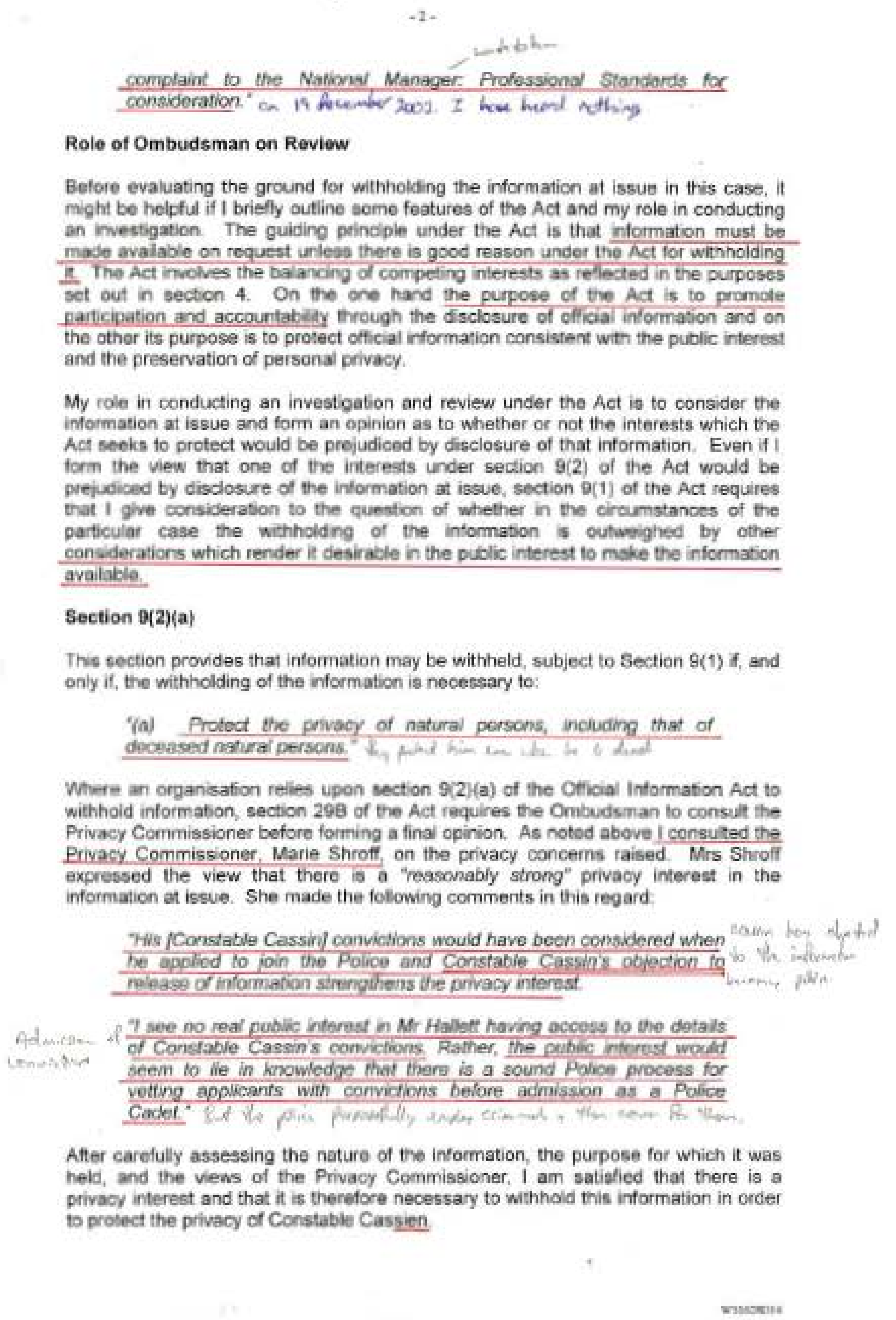

[illegible]

> *complaint to the National Manager: Professional Standards for consideration."* on 19 December 2003. I have heard nothing

Role of Ombudsman on Review

Before evaluating the ground for withholding the information at issue in this case, it might be helpful if I briefly outline some features of the Act and my role in conducting an investigation. The guiding principle under the Act is that information must be made available on request unless there is good reason under the Act for withholding it. The Act involves the balancing of competing interests as reflected in the purposes set out in section 4. On the one hand the purpose of the Act is to promote participation and accountability through the disclosure of official information and on the other its purpose is to protect official information consistent with the public interest and the preservation of personal privacy.

My role in conducting an investigation and review under the Act is to consider the information at issue and form an opinion as to whether or not the interests which the Act seeks to protect would be prejudiced by disclosure of that information. Even if I form the view that one of the interests under section 9(2) of the Act would be prejudiced by disclosure of the information at issue, section 9(1) of the Act requires that I give consideration to the question of whether in the circumstances of the particular case the withholding of the information is outweighed by other considerations which render it desirable in the public interest to make the information available.

Section 9(2)(a)

This section provides that information may be withheld, subject to Section 9(1) if, and only if, the withholding of the information is necessary to:

> *"(a) Protect the privacy of natural persons, including that of deceased natural persons."* they protect him even when he is dead

Where an organisation relies upon section 9(2)(a) of the Official Information Act to withhold information, section 29B of the Act requires the Ombudsman to consult the Privacy Commissioner before forming a final opinion. As noted above I consulted the Privacy Commissioner, Marie Shroff, on the privacy concerns raised. Mrs Shroff expressed the view that there is a *"reasonably strong"* privacy interest in the information at issue. She made the following comments in this regard:

> *"His [Constable Cassin] convictions would have been considered when he applied to join the Police and Constable Cassin's objection to release of information strengthens the privacy interest.*

Cassin has objected to the information becoming public

Admission of convictions

> *"I see no real public interest in Mr Hallett having access to the details of Constable Cassin's convictions. Rather, the public interest would seem to lie in knowledge that there is a sound Police process for vetting applicants with convictions before admission as a Police Cadet."* But the police purposefully employ criminals & then cover for them.

After carefully assessing the nature of the information, the purpose for which it was held, and the views of the Privacy Commissioner, I am satisfied that there is a privacy interest and that it is therefore necessary to withhold this information in order to protect the privacy of Constable Cassien.

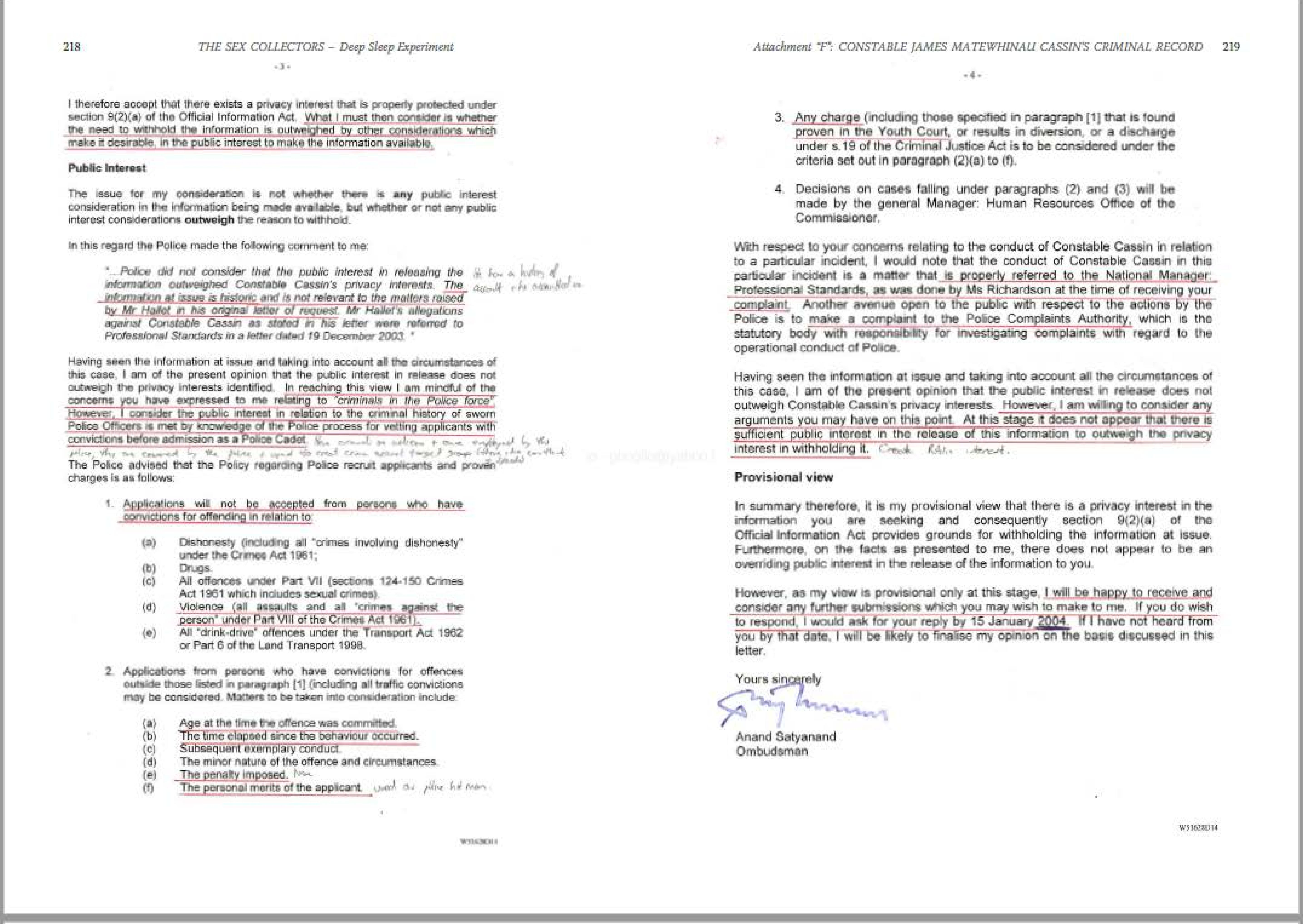

I therefore accept that there exists a privacy interest that is properly protected under section 9(2)(a) of the Official Information Act. What I must then consider is whether the need to withhold the information is outweighed by other considerations which make it desirable, in the public interest to make the information available.

Public Interest

The issue for my consideration is not whether there is **any** public interest consideration in the information being made available, but whether or not any public interest considerations **outweigh** the reason to withhold.

In this regard the Police made the following comment to me:

> "...*Police did not consider that the public interest in releasing the information outweighed Constable Cassin's privacy interests. The information at issue is historic and is not relevant to the matters raised by Mr Hallet in his original letter of request. Mr Hallet's allegations against Constable Cassin as stated in his letter were referred to Professional Standards in a letter dated 19 December 2003.*"

He has a history of assault [illegible] assaulted [illegible]

Having seen the information at issue and taking into account all the circumstances of this case, I am of the present opinion that the public interest in release does not outweigh the privacy interests identified. In reaching this view I am mindful of the concerns you have expressed to me relating to *"criminals in the Police force"*. However, I consider the public interest in relation to the criminal history of sworn Police Officers is met by knowledge of the Police process for vetting applicants with convictions before admission as a Police Cadet. The criminal [illegible] employed by the police, they are covered by the police [illegible] crime [illegible] target group [illegible]

The Police advised that the Policy regarding Police recruit applicants and proven charges is as follows:

1. Applications will not be accepted from persons who have convictions for offending in relation to:

    (a) Dishonesty (including all "crimes involving dishonesty" under the Crimes Act 1961;
    (b) Drugs.
    (c) All offences under Part VII (sections 124-150 Crimes Act 1961 which includes sexual crimes).
    (d) Violence (all assaults and all "crimes against the person" under Part VIII of the Crimes Act 1961).
    (e) All "drink-drive" offences under the Transport Act 1962 or Part 6 of the Land Transport 1998.

2. Applications from persons who have convictions for offences outside those listed in paragraph [1] (including all traffic convictions may be considered. Matters to be taken into consideration include:

    (a) Age at the time the offence was committed.
    (b) The time elapsed since the behaviour occurred.
    (c) Subsequent exemplary conduct.
    (d) The minor nature of the offence and circumstances.
    (e) The penalty imposed. [illegible]
    (f) The personal merits of the applicant. used as police hit man.

3. Any charge (including those specified in paragraph [1] that is found proven in the Youth Court, or results in diversion, or a discharge under s.19 of the Criminal Justice Act is to be considered under the criteria set out in paragraph (2)(a) to (f).

4. Decisions on cases falling under paragraphs (2) and (3) will be made by the general Manager: Human Resources Office of the Commissioner.

With respect to your concerns relating to the conduct of Constable Cassin in relation to a particular incident, I would note that the conduct of Constable Cassin in this particular incident is a matter that is properly referred to the National Manager: Professional Standards, as was done by Ms Richardson at the time of receiving your complaint. Another avenue open to the public with respect to the actions by the Police is to make a complaint to the Police Complaints Authority, which is the statutory body with responsibility for investigating complaints with regard to the operational conduct of Police.

Having seen the information at issue and taking into account all the circumstances of this case, I am of the present opinion that the public interest in release does not outweigh Constable Cassin's privacy interests. However, I am willing to consider any arguments you may have on this point. At this stage it does not appear that there is sufficient public interest in the release of this information to outweigh the privacy interest in withholding it. Crook [illegible] interest.

Provisional view

In summary therefore, it is my provisional view that there is a privacy interest in the information you are seeking and consequently section 9(2)(a) of the Official Information Act provides grounds for withholding the information at issue. Furthermore, on the facts as presented to me, there does not appear to be an overriding public interest in the release of the information to you.

However, as my view is provisional only at this stage, I will be happy to receive and consider any further submissions which you may wish to make to me. If you do wish to respond, I would ask for your reply by 15 January 2004. If I have not heard from you by that date, I will be likely to finalise my opinion on the basis discussed in this letter.

Yours sincerely

Anand Satyanand
Ombudsman

15 December 2004

Office of the Ombudsmen
Anand Satyanand
Ombudsman
70 The Terrace
PO Box 10152
Wellington
Ph (04) 473 9533
Fx (04) 471 2254

Dear Sir,

I request the file of Evan Jordan, formerly of N.Z. Police. I await your reply with interest.

Please acknowledge this letter within seven days.

Yours sincerely,

Greg Hallett
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland

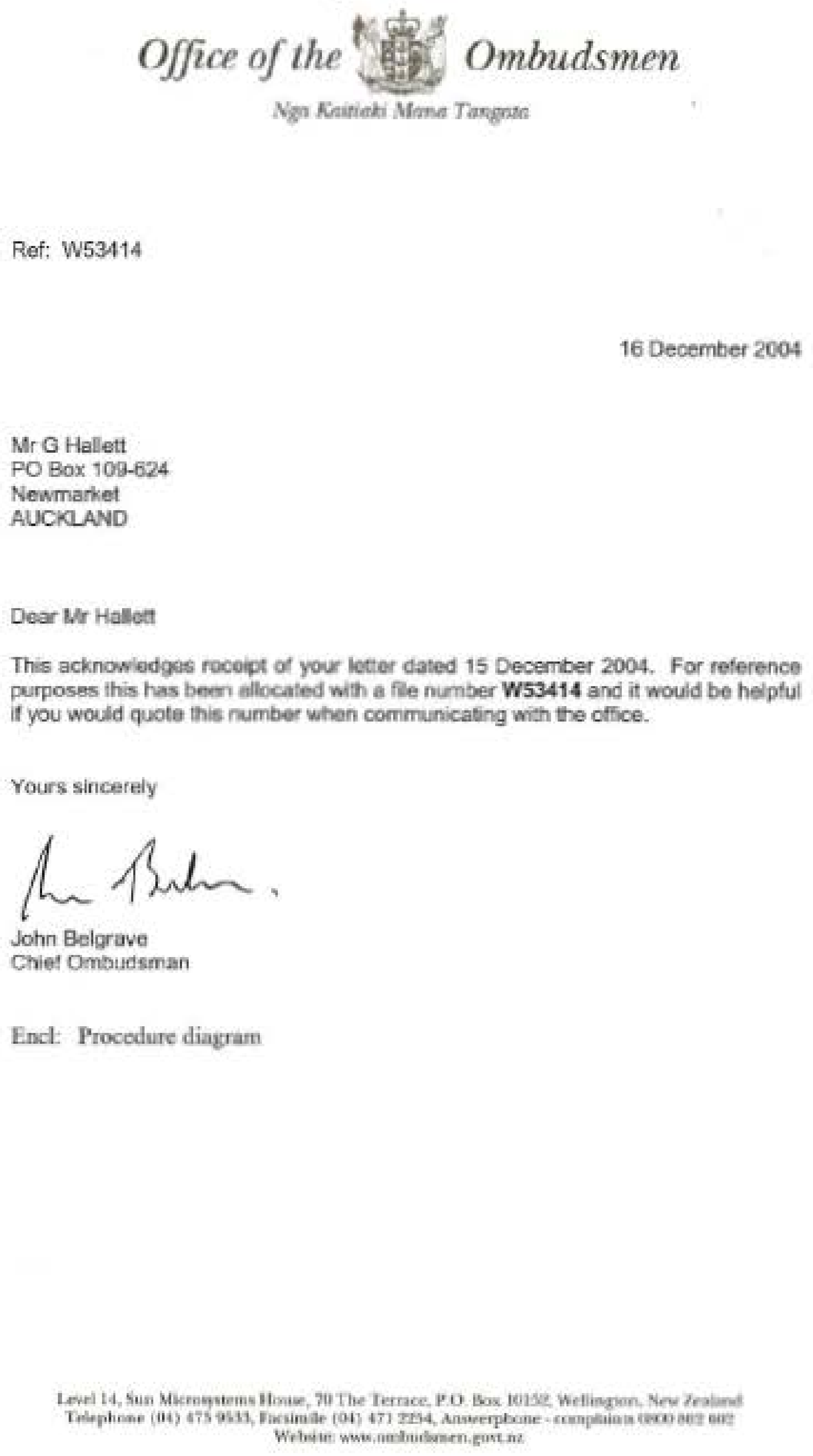

Office of the Ombudsmen
Nga Kaitiaki Mana Tangata

Ref: W53414

16 December 2004

Mr G Hallett
PO Box 109-624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

This acknowledges receipt of your letter dated 15 December 2004. For reference purposes this has been allocated with a file number **W53414** and it would be helpful if you would quote this number when communicating with the office.

Yours sincerely

John Belgrave
Chief Ombudsman

Encl: Procedure diagram

Level 14, Sun Microsystems House, 70 The Terrace, P.O. Box 10152, Wellington, New Zealand
Telephone (04) 473 9533, Facsimile (04) 471 2254, Answerphone - complaints 0800 802 602
Website: www.ombudsmen.govt.nz

HOW A COMPLAINT IS PROCESSED

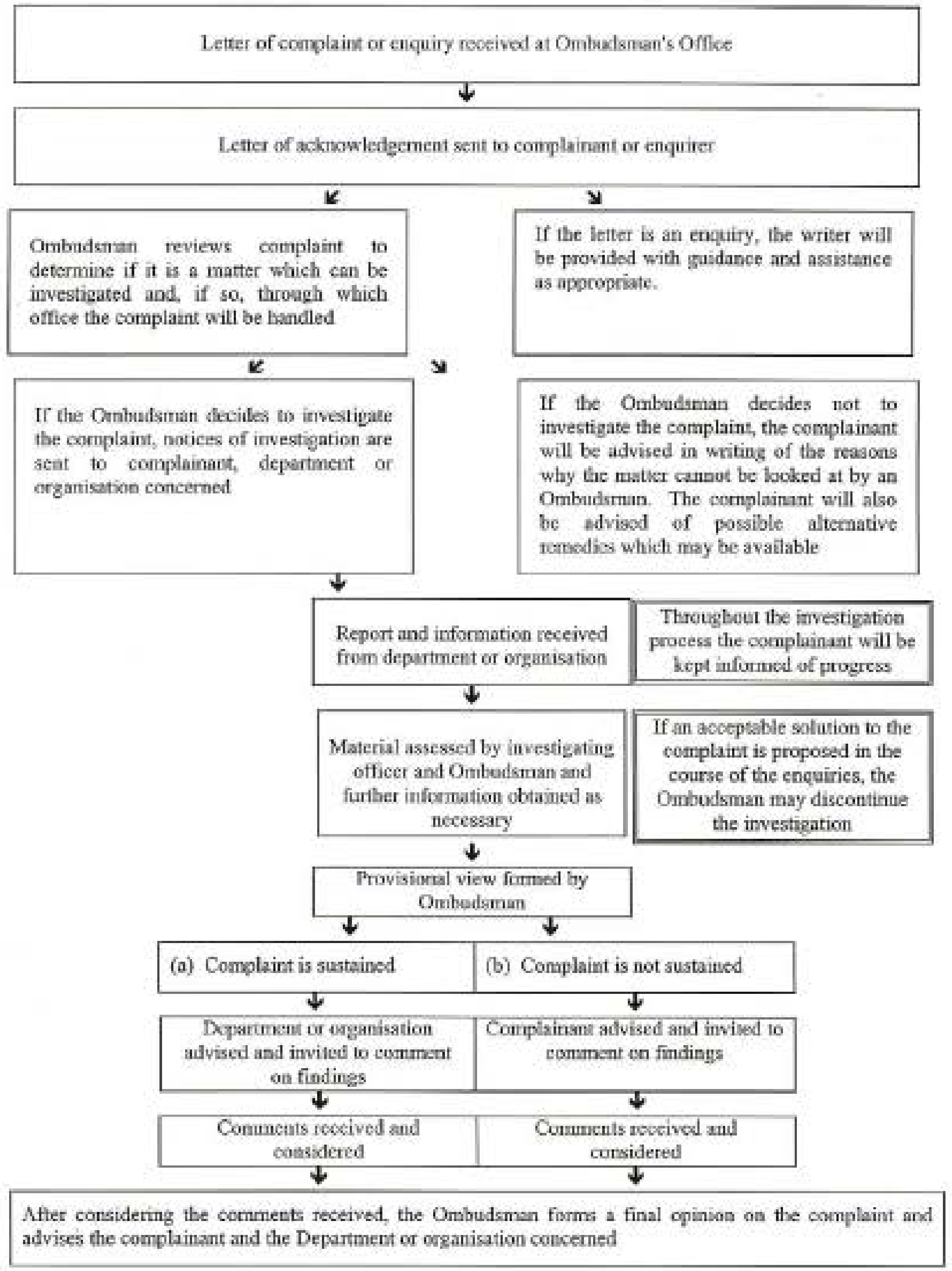

Letter of complaint or enquiry received at Ombudsman's Office

Letter of acknowledgement sent to complainant or enquirer

Ombudsman reviews complaint to determine if it is a matter which can be investigated and, if so, through which office the complaint will be handled

If the letter is an enquiry, the writer will be provided with guidance and assistance as appropriate.

If the Ombudsman decides to investigate the complaint, notices of investigation are sent to complainant, department or organisation concerned

If the Ombudsman decides not to investigate the complaint, the complainant will be advised in writing of the reasons why the matter cannot be looked at by an Ombudsman. The complainant will also be advised of possible alternative remedies which may be available

Report and information received from department or organisation

Throughout the investigation process the complainant will be kept informed of progress

Material assessed by investigating officer and Ombudsman and further information obtained as necessary

If an acceptable solution to the complaint is proposed in the course of the enquiries, the Ombudsman may discontinue the investigation

Provisional view formed by Ombudsman

(a) Complaint is sustained

(b) Complaint is not sustained

Department or organisation advised and invited to comment on findings

Complainant advised and invited to comment on findings

Comments received and considered

Comments received and considered

After considering the comments received, the Ombudsman forms a final opinion on the complaint and advises the complainant and the Department or organisation concerned

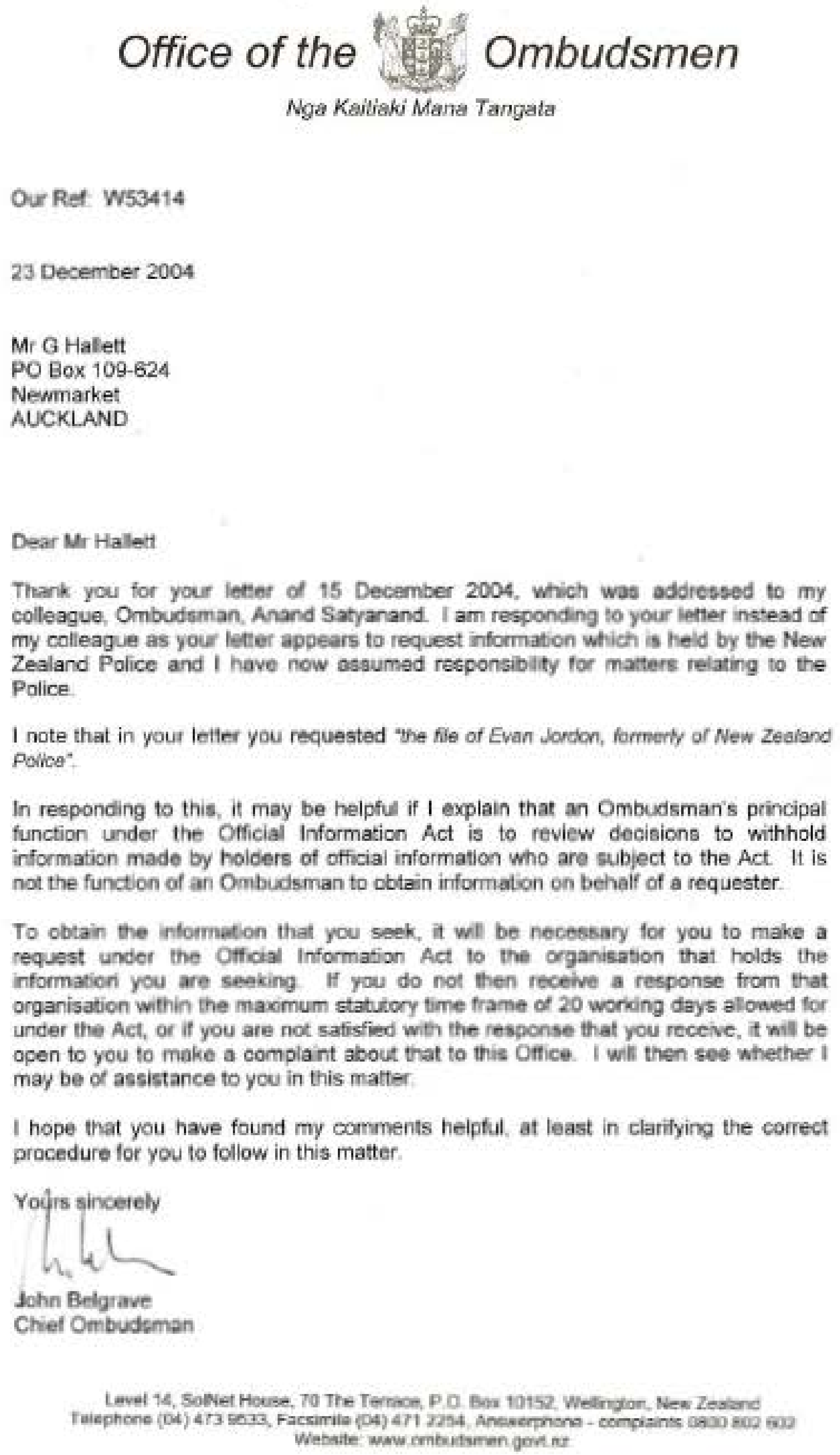

Office of the Ombudsmen
Nga Kaitiaki Mana Tangata

Our Ref: W53414

23 December 2004

Mr G Hallett
PO Box 109-624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

Thank you for your letter of 15 December 2004, which was addressed to my colleague, Ombudsman, Anand Satyanand. I am responding to your letter instead of my colleague as your letter appears to request information which is held by the New Zealand Police and I have now assumed responsibility for matters relating to the Police.

I note that in your letter you requested *"the file of Evan Jordon, formerly of New Zealand Police"*.

In responding to this, it may be helpful if I explain that an Ombudsman's principal function under the Official Information Act is to review decisions to withhold information made by holders of official information who are subject to the Act. It is not the function of an Ombudsman to obtain information on behalf of a requester.

To obtain the information that you seek, it will be necessary for you to make a request under the Official Information Act to the organisation that holds the information you are seeking. If you do not then receive a response from that organisation within the maximum statutory time frame of 20 working days allowed for under the Act, or if you are not satisfied with the response that you receive, it will be open to you to make a complaint about that to this Office. I will then see whether I may be of assistance to you in this matter.

I hope that you have found my comments helpful, at least in clarifying the correct procedure for you to follow in this matter.

Yours sincerely

John Belgrave
Chief Ombudsman

Level 14, SolNet House, 70 The Terrace, P.O. Box 10152, Wellington, New Zealand
Telephone (04) 473 9533, Facsimile (04) 471 2254, Answerphone - complaints 0800 802 602
Website: www.ombudsmen.govt.nz

12 January 2005

Office of the Ombudsmen
Anand Satyanand
Ombudsman
70 The Terrace, PO Box 10152, Wellington
Ph (04) 473 9533, Fx (04) 471 2254

Dear Sir,

I note that your letter dated 8 December 2004 requests a reply by 15 January 2004, eleven months before you wrote the letter. Perhaps you were in a 'super-rush' with sirens on your typewriter, or maybe you were angry that your cover was wearing thin. I presume you meant 15 January 2005, but I'll take the date at which you received this letter as the date that you requested it.

I presume that you intend to close the file and refuse to answer any more requests for confirmation of the violent criminal record of your employee Constable James Matewhinau Cassin, if any such requests were received after your 'super-date'.

I acknowledge your confirmation of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin's criminal record with your quoted reply from the Privacy Commissioner, Mrs Marie Shroff: "His [Constable Cassin] convictions would have been considered when he applied to join the Police and Constable Cassin's objections to release of information strengthens the privacy interest."

This confirms that both the Privacy Commissioner, Mrs Marie Shroff, and Constable James Matewhinau Cassin have knowledge of James Matewhinau Cassin's criminal record before entering the police force.

You then go on to rely on the police vetting process as being a way of stopping criminals gaining admission into the Police Force. This Police vetting process is not an indicator that criminals will not be admitted to the Police Force, rather it is a reverse indicator.

The Police Force have a history of employing criminals (including rapists, kidnappers, murderers, contract killers and thugs) and also have a history of elevating them to the highest positions.

You only need to look up the convictions of police officers before and after entering the Police Force and of the police officers currently dismissed from the Police Force and charged. The deputy commissioner Clive Rickards is a case in point. He was to be elevated to the highest position yet has been charged with various forms of rape and kidnapping. The police tried to have this heard in Stewart Island, that being the last police friendly state in New Zealand.

Please write and tell me if the Office of the Ombudsman and the Privacy Commissioner have ever refused anyone knowledge of Clive Rickards criminal record. I have a complaint against him myself.

I note your quote from Privacy Commissioner Mrs Marie Shroff: "I see no real public interest in Mr Hallett having access to the details of Constable Cassin's convictions. Rather, the public interest would seem to lie in knowledge that there is a sound Police process for vetting applicants with convictions before admission as a Police Cadet."

Obviously there is no such process that is effective and the police are purposefully employing violent criminals for the purpose of targeting thinking talking individuals. In assault cases, this process includes the Police charging victims and letting assailants go free. In part, this is called empathy.

Reading between the lines I see Privacy Commissioner, Mrs Marie Shroff's quote as saying: "We need to protect the public from any further knowledge that the police are employing 'contract criminals' to create crime in areas where it is most easily solved (driving, domestic violence & drugs). I fear what will happen if the public see what the police got Constable Cassin to do (an assault on a driver). The details of Constable Cassin's criminal record will only back this up. I fear what will happen when the public find out that the police regularly, and as a matter of policy ('what is policed') ignore the criminal records of their applicants and use their criminal history to their advantage."

Although Constable James Matewhinau Cassin has a history of violent assault as a teenager, as an adult before entering the Police Force, in the Police Force, and against myself on 23 August 2002, the police made the following comment, which you accepted: "The information at issue is historic and is not relevant . . ."

All matters raised in letters are historic. Cassin's violence though, is not historic. He was violent in the 1980s, the 1990s and now in the new millennium. Cassin has been violent for over three decades. He is also known to pick up 'innocents' off K'Rd, handcuff them, take them to the cells at Central Station, lift up their cuffed hands, along with one leg, lean them forward and drop them on their face until their jaw dislocates. This method holds maximum terror and damage without leaving any incriminating marks. It also removes teeth.

Despite admission that Cassin is a violent criminal (by Cassin himself and the Privacy Commissioner acknowledging his record), the police will not send him on an Anger Management course. I presume this is because his violent nature is utilised by the Police Force that employs him.

As such, the angry, violent Constable James Matewhinau Cassin is used as a police hitman and is used to train new cops to create crime, which was exemplary on the night of his violent attack on me. He was training Constable Suzanne Mead who dropped out of the Police Force, presumably when she realised she was being trained to create crime by Constable Cassin and that the Police are a crime creation movement. She had been in the force only two months on the night Cassin was training her, with me as the 'targeted victim'.

I note that you too use the phrase "criminals in the Police force".

Then I note that you paraphrase the Privacy Commissioner Mrs Marie Shroff.

Clint Rickards was known in the media as 'Clive Rickard' or 'Rickards' during much of his hearing, thus avoiding legal ramifications.

Ombudsman Anand Satyanand: ". . . I consider the public interest in relation to the criminal history of sworn Police Officers is met by knowledge of the Police process for vetting applicants with convictions before admission as a Police Cadet."

I am wondering if this applied to the Minister of Police Allan McCready who was convicted of gang rape in 1943. In conjunction with Clive Rickards it would seem that criminals within the Police Force are promoted and in Constable Cassin's case, protected until promoted.

You state that police policy is not to accept persons who have convictions relating to dishonesty, drugs, sexual crimes and "Violence (all assaults and all 'crimes against the person' under Part VIII of the Crimes Act 1961). Yet you employed Constable Cassin with the full knowledge that he has done, or been convicted of some or all of the above.

I note that you take into consideration "the personal merits of the applicant" and in Cassin's case, it is the ability to lie in court and to be used as a hitman.

What makes your long letters so amusing is that police training contains 'verballing' which is the art of adding weight to information so that it might appear to be true, when it is in fact false or containing such omissions as to gain a conviction where there should not be one. Police 'verballing', of which James Matewhinau Cassin has been repeatedly trained, has led to the false conviction of 39% of all prison inmates.

Scott Watson's conviction for double-murder is a case in point. The police removed the record of evidence that Olivia Hope had had sex with two other men on the night she was last seen, neither of which was Ben Hope or Scot Watson. Then there was the police scratching the cabin of Watson's boat and removing hairs from Olivia Hope's hairbrush and dropping these on Watson's boat. Then there were two masts sighted versus the one on Watson's boat, and no bodies found. Despite all the evidence planted on Scot Watson's boat and no bodies found, the Police still managed to gain a conviction. This was done by verballing, known to the layperson as outright lying and deceit, something the police are relentlessly trained in.

A large portion of these crimes have been committed by the police (Constable Cassin is a convicted criminal) or by women who are let off with sexual favours, such as your former Deputy Commissioner Clive Rickards encouraged with force – after which innocent people are used to make up the numbers, hence the Police stitch-up – the PIS (Police Informants Scheme). This results in the public's general lack of trust in the Police Force. As you can understand I am now one of these people.

I understand you referred my letter to the National Manager: Professional Standards for consideration on 19 December 2003. It is now the 12 January 2005 and I have had no response from Police Professional Standards.

From an attachment received from John Belgrave of your office, I note that you have an eleven-step process to delay any incriminating evidence getting out about individual police officers before they entered the police force, during their service to crime and their crime-creating practises in general.

The National Manager of Professional Standards had still not responded by 20 April 2009.

I note that after a year of you writing to each other, you are at Step 7, " Provisional view formed by Ombudsman". It would appear that your office and those you work with on 'preventing the crimes of police officers from becoming public knowledge', are specifically and intentionally involved in delaying any incriminating evidence getting out. I presume this is to ensure that the citizens of New Zealand do not have any Human Rights and that they are eroded by the very organisation that purports to preserve and maintain them.

Ombudsman Anand Satyanand: "However, I am willing to consider any arguments you may have on this point."

I note that you offer the avenue of the Police Complaints Authority. It is well known amongst the public and the media that this involves the guilty police officer being transferred to his favourite fishing spot. Most of the Waiheke, Taranaki and Orewa Police have PCA's against them.

It is also well known that citizens who use the PCA then go on the police VOI register (Vehicles of Interest) and these vehicles are then targeted by the police in police stitch-ups and Police Informants Schemes for which police verballing is utilised to its maximum, as are crooked PIS District Court judges under your wing. Judge Gittos comes to mind repeatedly.

You state "information must be made available on request unless there is good reason under the Act for withholding it . . . the purpose of the Act is to promote participation and accountability . . ."

We are participating in letter writing. You are participating in not revealing any information and the police are doing their best not to be accountable for the crimes committed historically, in the present, and for the crimes convicted police officers will undoubtedly commit in the future.

I note your repeated requests to make this issue one of public concern and if it was a public matter then you would take it more seriously. ". . . the public interest in releasing the information does not outweigh Constable Cassin's privacy interests . . . its purpose is to protect official information consistent with the public interest . . ."

Initially I was after confirmation of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin's criminal record as he admitted to it in the District Court on 13 August 2003. You, and your several associated organisations seem reluctant to do this.

I wonder what would happened to the public's perception of the police if the convicted and violent Constable James Matewhinau Cassin were to have played a part in the death of Irena Asher (10 October 2004). If such an incident were to become public, then the Privacy Commissioner, the Commissioner for Police and the Office of the Ombudsmen would all be shown to be protecting criminals within the Police Force so that they could carry out contract crimes and/or crimes for kicks.

It seems unlikely that you are serving the best interests of the public, but you are serving the best interests of crime creation within the Police Force, with no limitations to its criminal acts, and obviously no accountability.

I recall that you recently transformed television news of a 'query of rape in a police cell' to 'there being inadequate cells'. Then the police officers were requested not to approach 'P' Labs for fear of creating a backlog of paperwork. The real reason 'P' is 'Police Protected' is that it creates violent crime, and crime is 'managed' by the police as opposed to 'solved' by the police. As such 'crime created by the police' is also managed. Our year-long dialogue with your tight-lipped non-response is testimony to that.

What really interests me is the conversation the police had off the main mike during Irena Asher's call for help on the night of her death. I believe it was a police officer saying: "The bitch probably deserves what she is going to get".

I was originally seeking confirmation of Cassin's criminal record, all charges dropped and financial compensation for the police attack. I have partially succeeded, but the costs have been exceedingly high.

After two years the police finally dropped all charges on the day of the third hearing. One of the officers involved, Constable Suzanne Mead, allegedly left the Police Force and the case was dropped due to lack of evidence. Constable Cassin could have given evidence, but his testimony doesn't count for anything in any court because he is a convicted criminal who is used by the police as a hitman.

I want the criminal record of James Matewhinau Cassin who is currently working as a police constable.

I also want the criminal record of Evan Jordan formerly of the New Zealand Police and recently indicated in a murder.

I know that several police have committed murders while on duty. I want the names, dates, locations and circumstances of these murders and especially the mass murders.

Originally I wanted to settle this claim, keeping it out of the public eye and ear so that the reputation of the New Zealand Police wouldn't be tarnished any further. In conjunction with this I made a claim to the Office of the Commissioner of Police for compensation of $772,543.80 (31 October 2004). This was acknowledged and recourse through the Costs in Criminal Cases Act 1967 was offered. This would provide a maximum payout of some $5,000.

It appears that I am going to have to go public with this knowledge in order to get the information and compensation I require.

Please acknowledge this letter within seven days and reply within 14 days.

Yours sincerely,

Greg Hallett
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland

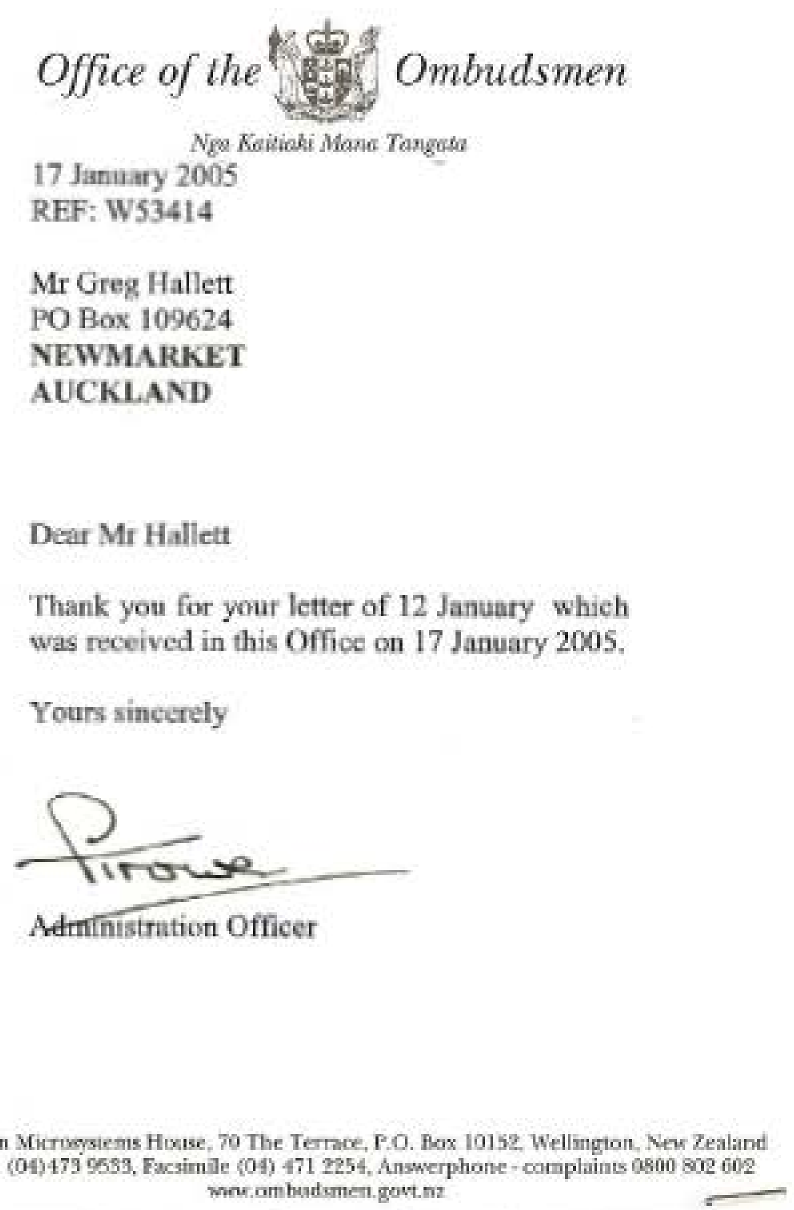

Office of the Ombudsmen
Nga Kaitiaki Mana Tangata

17 January 2005
REF: W53414

Mr Greg Hallett
PO Box 109624
NEWMARKET
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

Thank you for your letter of 12 January which was received in this Office on 17 January 2005.

Yours sincerely

Administration Officer

Level 14, Sun Microsystems House, 70 The Terrace, P.O. Box 10152, Wellington, New Zealand
Telephone (04)473 9533, Facsimile (04) 471 2254, Answerphone - complaints 0800 802 602
www.ombudsmen.govt.nz

Delivered To You By New Zealand Post
Wellington MAIL SERVICE CENTRE
5 pm 17 JAN 05
17.1.05
0.45

Mr Greg Hallett
PO Box 109624
NEWMARKET
AUCKLAND

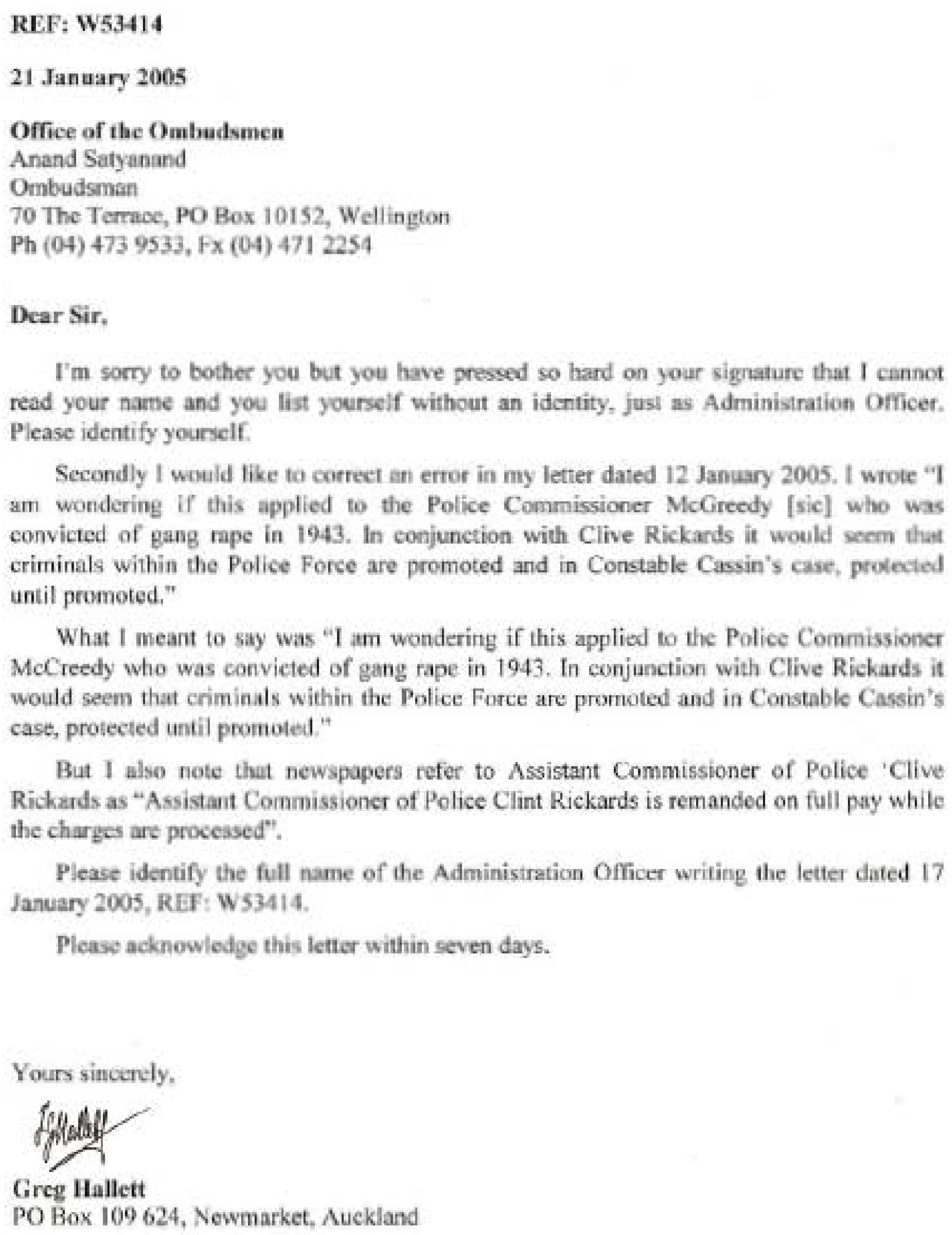

REF: W53414

21 January 2005

Office of the Ombudsmen
Anand Satyanand
Ombudsman
70 The Terrace, PO Box 10152, Wellington
Ph (04) 473 9533, Fx (04) 471 2254

Dear Sir,

I'm sorry to bother you but you have pressed so hard on your signature that I cannot read your name and you list yourself without an identity, just as Administration Officer. Please identify yourself.

Secondly I would like to correct an error in my letter dated 12 January 2005. I wrote "I am wondering if this applied to the Police Commissioner McGreedy [sic] who was convicted of gang rape in 1943. In conjunction with Clive Rickards it would seem that criminals within the Police Force are promoted and in Constable Cassin's case, protected until promoted."

What I meant to say was "I am wondering if this applied to the Police Commissioner McCreedy who was convicted of gang rape in 1943. In conjunction with Clive Rickards it would seem that criminals within the Police Force are promoted and in Constable Cassin's case, protected until promoted."

But I also note that newspapers refer to Assistant Commissioner of Police 'Clive Rickards as "Assistant Commissioner of Police Clint Rickards is remanded on full pay while the charges are processed".

Please identify the full name of the Administration Officer writing the letter dated 17 January 2005, REF: W53414.

Please acknowledge this letter within seven days.

Yours sincerely,

Greg Hallett
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland

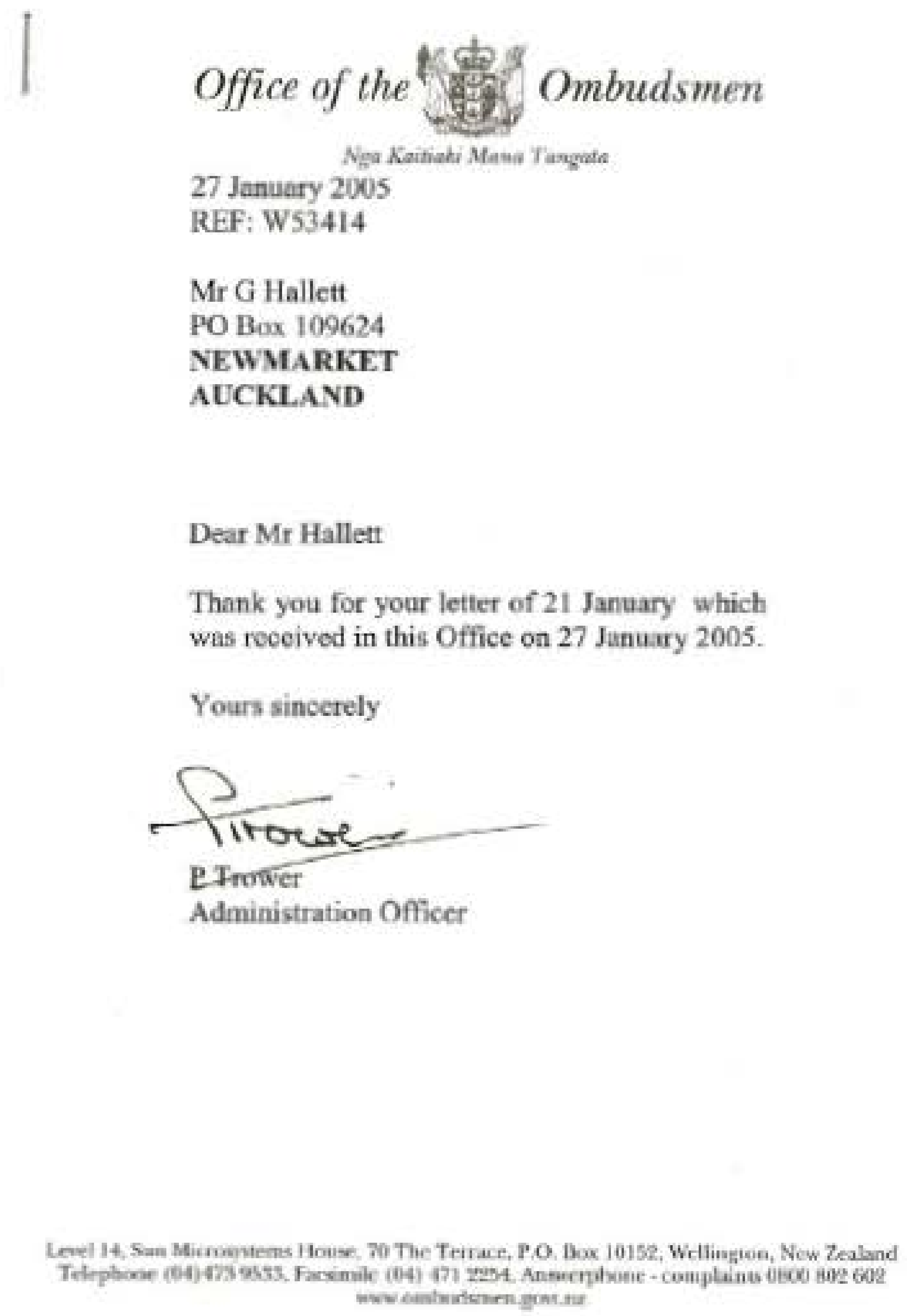

Office of the Ombudsmen
Nga Kaitiaki Mana Tangata

27 January 2005
REF: W53414

Mr G Hallett
PO Box 109624
NEWMARKET
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

Thank you for your letter of 21 January which was received in this Office on 27 January 2005.

Yours sincerely

P Trower
Administration Officer

Level 14, Sun Microsystems House, 70 The Terrace, P.O. Box 10152, Wellington, New Zealand
Telephone (04) 473 9533, Facsimile (04) 471 2254, Answerphone - complaints 0800 802 602
www.ombudsmen.govt.nz

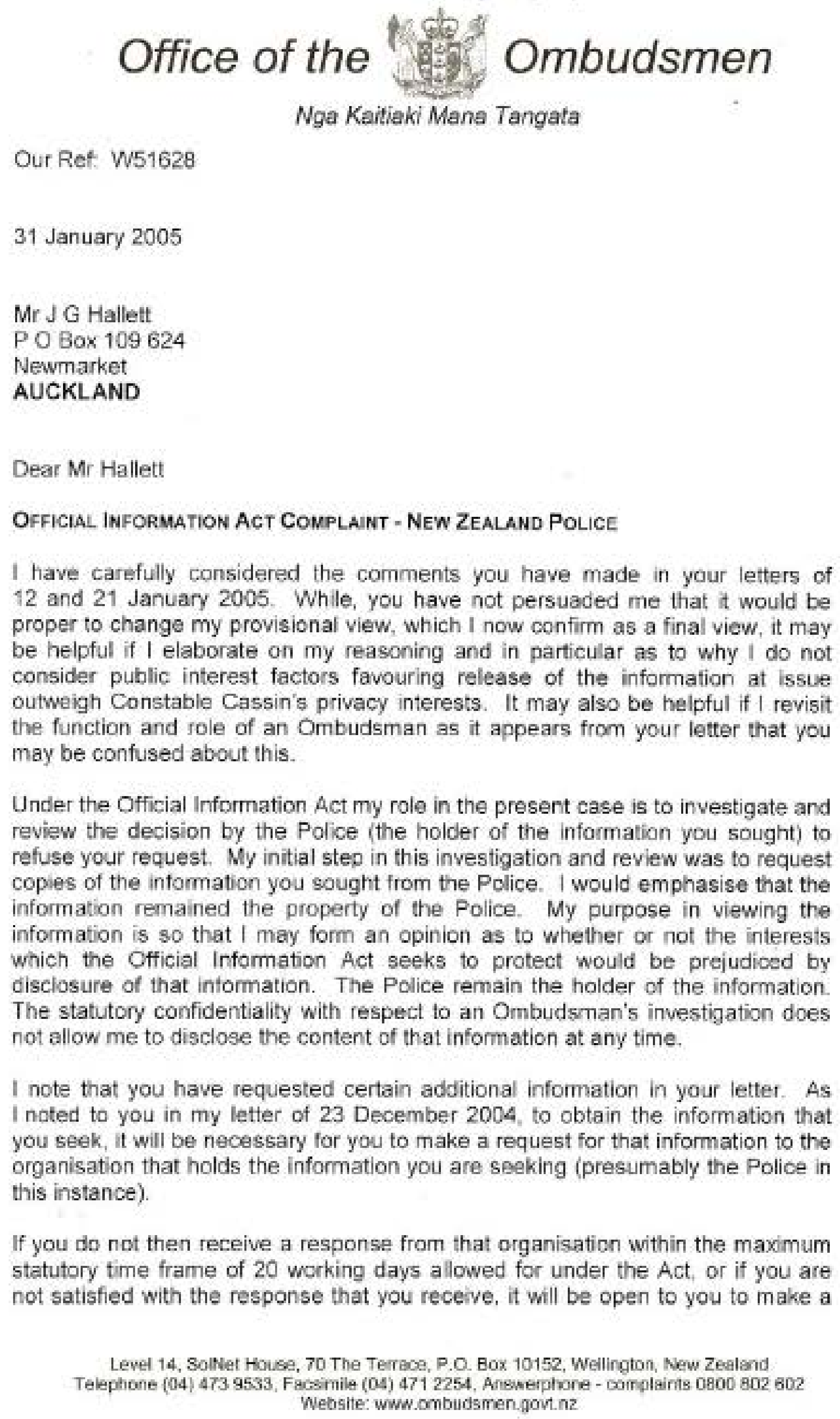

Office of the Ombudsmen
Nga Kaitiaki Mana Tangata

Our Ref: W51628

31 January 2005

Mr J G Hallett
P O Box 109 624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

OFFICIAL INFORMATION ACT COMPLAINT - NEW ZEALAND POLICE

I have carefully considered the comments you have made in your letters of 12 and 21 January 2005. While, you have not persuaded me that it would be proper to change my provisional view, which I now confirm as a final view, it may be helpful if I elaborate on my reasoning and in particular as to why I do not consider public interest factors favouring release of the information at issue outweigh Constable Cassin's privacy interests. It may also be helpful if I revisit the function and role of an Ombudsman as it appears from your letter that you may be confused about this.

Under the Official Information Act my role in the present case is to investigate and review the decision by the Police (the holder of the information you sought) to refuse your request. My initial step in this investigation and review was to request copies of the information you sought from the Police. I would emphasise that the information remained the property of the Police. My purpose in viewing the information is so that I may form an opinion as to whether or not the interests which the Official Information Act seeks to protect would be prejudiced by disclosure of that information. The Police remain the holder of the information. The statutory confidentiality with respect to an Ombudsman's investigation does not allow me to disclose the content of that information at any time.

I note that you have requested certain additional information in your letter. As I noted to you in my letter of 23 December 2004, to obtain the information that you seek, it will be necessary for you to make a request for that information to the organisation that holds the information you are seeking (presumably the Police in this instance).

If you do not then receive a response from that organisation within the maximum statutory time frame of 20 working days allowed for under the Act, or if you are not satisfied with the response that you receive, it will be open to you to make a

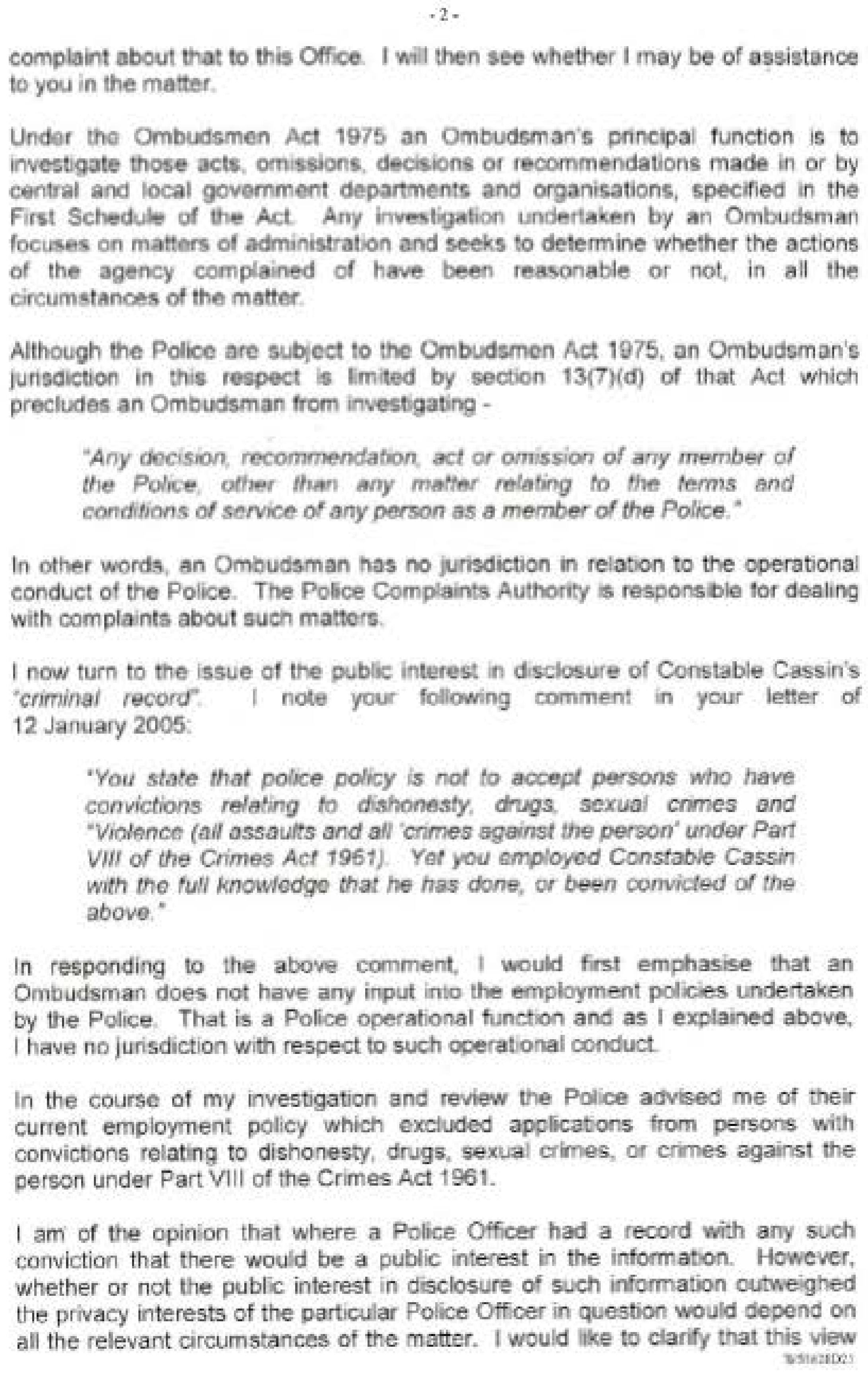

complaint about that to this Office. I will then see whether I may be of assistance to you in the matter.

Under the Ombudsmen Act 1975 an Ombudsman's principal function is to investigate those acts, omissions, decisions or recommendations made in or by central and local government departments and organisations, specified in the First Schedule of the Act. Any investigation undertaken by an Ombudsman focuses on matters of administration and seeks to determine whether the actions of the agency complained of have been reasonable or not, in all the circumstances of the matter.

Although the Police are subject to the Ombudsmen Act 1975, an Ombudsman's jurisdiction in this respect is limited by section 13(7)(d) of that Act which precludes an Ombudsman from investigating -

> *"Any decision, recommendation, act or omission of any member of the Police, other than any matter relating to the terms and conditions of service of any person as a member of the Police."*

In other words, an Ombudsman has no jurisdiction in relation to the operational conduct of the Police. The Police Complaints Authority is responsible for dealing with complaints about such matters.

I now turn to the issue of the public interest in disclosure of Constable Cassin's *"criminal record"*. I note your following comment in your letter of 12 January 2005:

> *"You state that police policy is not to accept persons who have convictions relating to dishonesty, drugs, sexual crimes and "Violence (all assaults and all 'crimes against the person' under Part VIII of the Crimes Act 1961). Yet you employed Constable Cassin with the full knowledge that he has done, or been convicted of the above."*

In responding to the above comment, I would first emphasise that an Ombudsman does not have any input into the employment policies undertaken by the Police. That is a Police operational function and as I explained above, I have no jurisdiction with respect to such operational conduct.

In the course of my investigation and review the Police advised me of their current employment policy which excluded applications from persons with convictions relating to dishonesty, drugs, sexual crimes, or crimes against the person under Part VIII of the Crimes Act 1961.

I am of the opinion that where a Police Officer had a record with any such conviction that there would be a public interest in the information. However, whether or not the public interest in disclosure of such information outweighed the privacy interests of the particular Police Officer in question would depend on all the relevant circumstances of the matter. I would like to clarify that this view

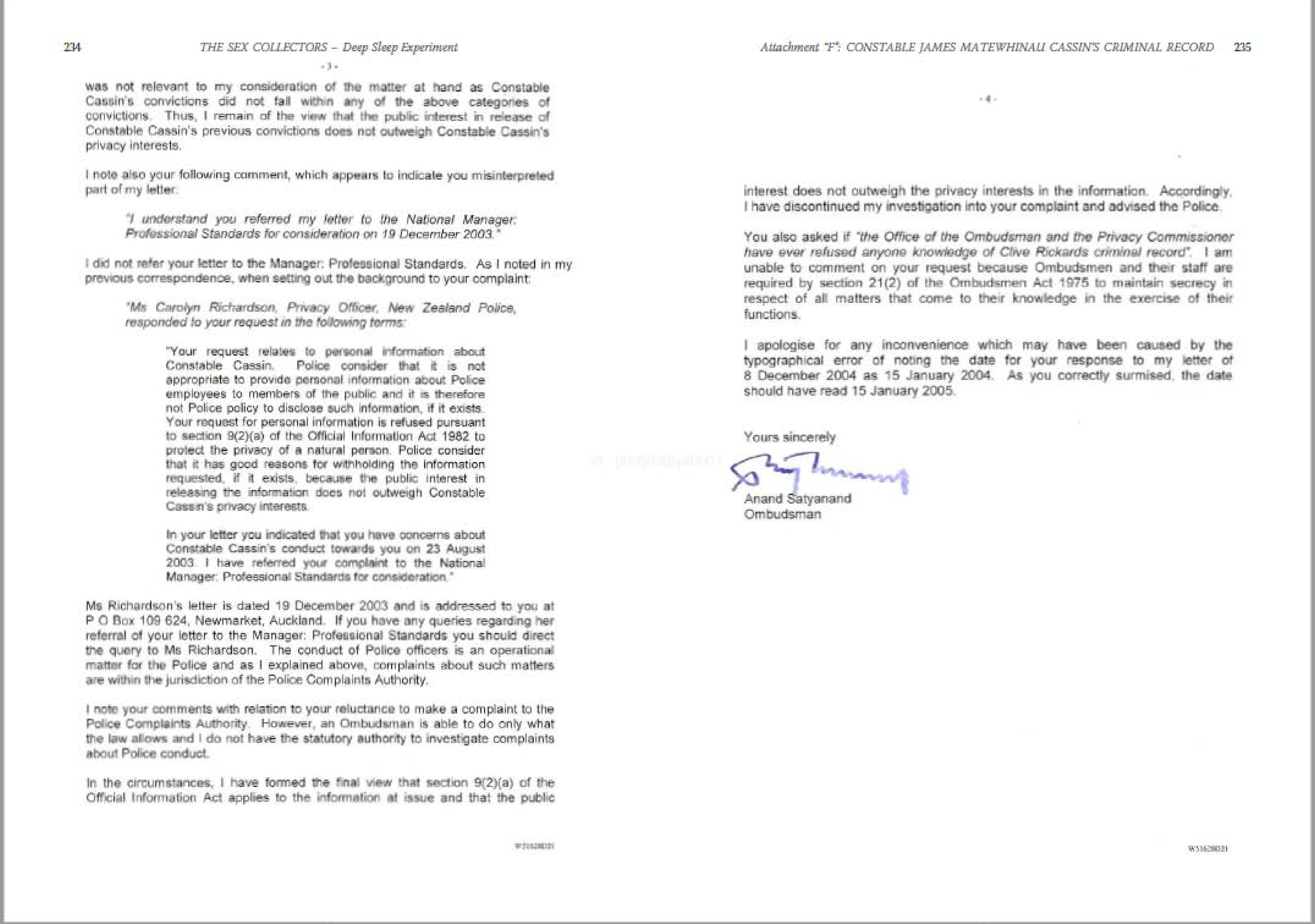

was not relevant to my consideration of the matter at hand as Constable Cassin's convictions did not fall within any of the above categories of convictions. Thus, I remain of the view that the public interest in release of Constable Cassin's previous convictions does not outweigh Constable Cassin's privacy interests.

I note also your following comment, which appears to indicate you misinterpreted part of my letter:

> *"I understand you referred my letter to the National Manager: Professional Standards for consideration on 19 December 2003."*

I did not refer your letter to the Manager: Professional Standards. As I noted in my previous correspondence, when setting out the background to your complaint:

> *"Ms Carolyn Richardson, Privacy Officer, New Zealand Police, responded to your request in the following terms:*
>
>> "Your request relates to personal information about Constable Cassin. Police consider that it is not appropriate to provide personal information about Police employees to members of the public and it is therefore not Police policy to disclose such information, if it exists. Your request for personal information is refused pursuant to section 9(2)(a) of the Official Information Act 1982 to protect the privacy of a natural person. Police consider that it has good reasons for withholding the information requested, if it exists, because the public interest in releasing the information does not outweigh Constable Cassin's privacy interests.
>>
>> In your letter you indicated that you have concerns about Constable Cassin's conduct towards you on 23 August 2003. I have referred your complaint to the National Manager: Professional Standards for consideration."

Ms Richardson's letter is dated 19 December 2003 and is addressed to you at P O Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland. If you have any queries regarding her referral of your letter to the Manager: Professional Standards you should direct the query to Ms Richardson. The conduct of Police officers is an operational matter for the Police and as I explained above, complaints about such matters are within the jurisdiction of the Police Complaints Authority.

I note your comments with relation to your reluctance to make a complaint to the Police Complaints Authority. However, an Ombudsman is able to do only what the law allows and I do not have the statutory authority to investigate complaints about Police conduct.

In the circumstances, I have formed the final view that section 9(2)(a) of the Official Information Act applies to the information at issue and that the public

interest does not outweigh the privacy interests in the information. Accordingly, I have discontinued my investigation into your complaint and advised the Police.

You also asked if *"the Office of the Ombudsman and the Privacy Commissioner have ever refused anyone knowledge of Clive Rickards criminal record"*. I am unable to comment on your request because Ombudsmen and their staff are required by section 21(2) of the Ombudsmen Act 1975 to maintain secrecy in respect of all matters that come to their knowledge in the exercise of their functions.

I apologise for any inconvenience which may have been caused by the typographical error of noting the date for your response to my letter of 8 December 2004 as 15 January 2004. As you correctly surmised, the date should have read 15 January 2005.

Yours sincerely

Anand Satyanand
Ombudsman

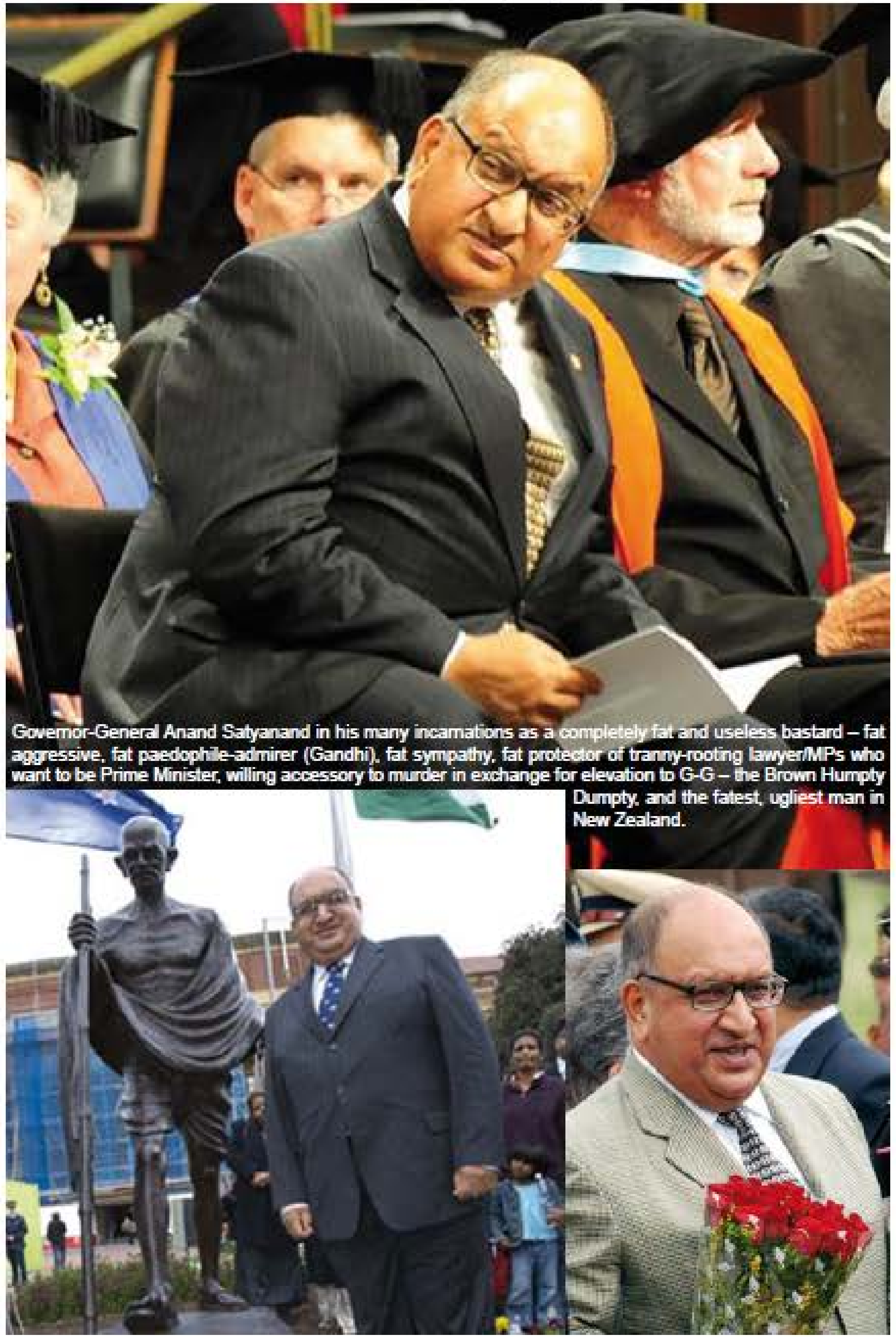

Governor-General Anand Satyanand in his many incarnations as a completely fat and useless bastard – fat aggressive, fat paedophile-admirer (Gandhi), fat sympathy, fat protector of tranny-rooting lawyer/MPs who want to be Prime Minister, willing accessory to murder in exchange for elevation to G-G – the Brown Humpty Dumpty, and the fatest, ugliest man in New Zealand.

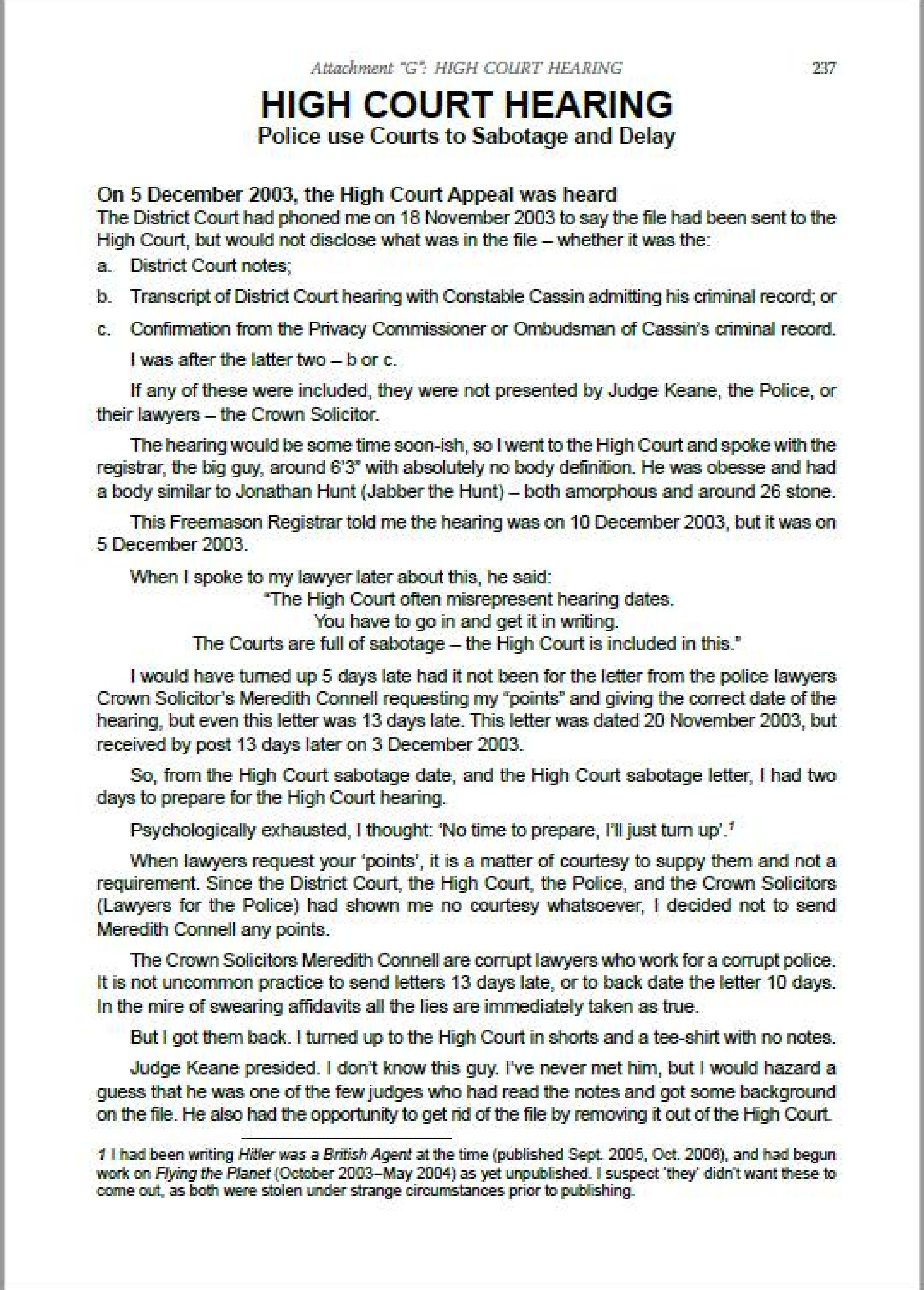

HIGH COURT HEARING

Police use Courts to Sabotage and Delay

On 5 December 2003, the High Court Appeal was heard

The District Court had phoned me on 18 November 2003 to say the file had been sent to the High Court, but would not disclose what was in the file – whether it was the:

a. District Court notes;

b. Transcript of District Court hearing with Constable Cassin admitting his criminal record; or

c. Confirmation from the Privacy Commissioner or Ombudsman of Cassin's criminal record.

I was after the latter two – b or c.

If any of these were included, they were not presented by Judge Keane, the Police, or their lawyers – the Crown Solicitor.

The hearing would be some time soon-ish, so I went to the High Court and spoke with the registrar, the big guy, around 6'3" with absolutely no body definition. He was obesse and had a body similar to Jonathan Hunt (Jabber the Hunt) – both amorphous and around 26 stone.

This Freemason Registrar told me the hearing was on 10 December 2003, but it was on 5 December 2003.

When I spoke to my lawyer later about this, he said:

"The High Court often misrepresent hearing dates.
You have to go in and get it in writing.
The Courts are full of sabotage – the High Court is included in this."

I would have turned up 5 days late had it not been for the letter from the police lawyers Crown Solicitor's Meredith Connell requesting my "points" and giving the correct date of the hearing, but even this letter was 13 days late. This letter was dated 20 November 2003, but received by post 13 days later on 3 December 2003.

So, from the High Court sabotage date, and the High Court sabotage letter, I had two days to prepare for the High Court hearing.

Psychologically exhausted, I thought: 'No time to prepare, I'll just turn up'.[1]

When lawyers request your 'points', it is a matter of courtesy to suppy them and not a requirement. Since the District Court, the High Court, the Police, and the Crown Solicitors (Lawyers for the Police) had shown me no courtesy whatsoever, I decided not to send Meredith Connell any points.

The Crown Solicitors Meredith Connell are corrupt lawyers who work for a corrupt police. It is not uncommon practice to send letters 13 days late, or to back date the letter 10 days. In the mire of swearing affidavits all the lies are immediately taken as true.

But I got them back. I turned up to the High Court in shorts and a tee-shirt with no notes.

Judge Keane presided. I don't know this guy. I've never met him, but I would hazard a guess that he was one of the few judges who had read the notes and got some background on the file. He also had the opportunity to get rid of the file by removing it out of the High Court.

---

[1] I had been writing *Hitler was a British Agent* at the time (published Sept. 2005, Oct. 2006), and had begun work on *Flying the Planet* (October 2003–May 2004) as yet unpublished. I suspect 'they' didn't want these to come out, as both were stolen under strange circumstances prior to publishing.

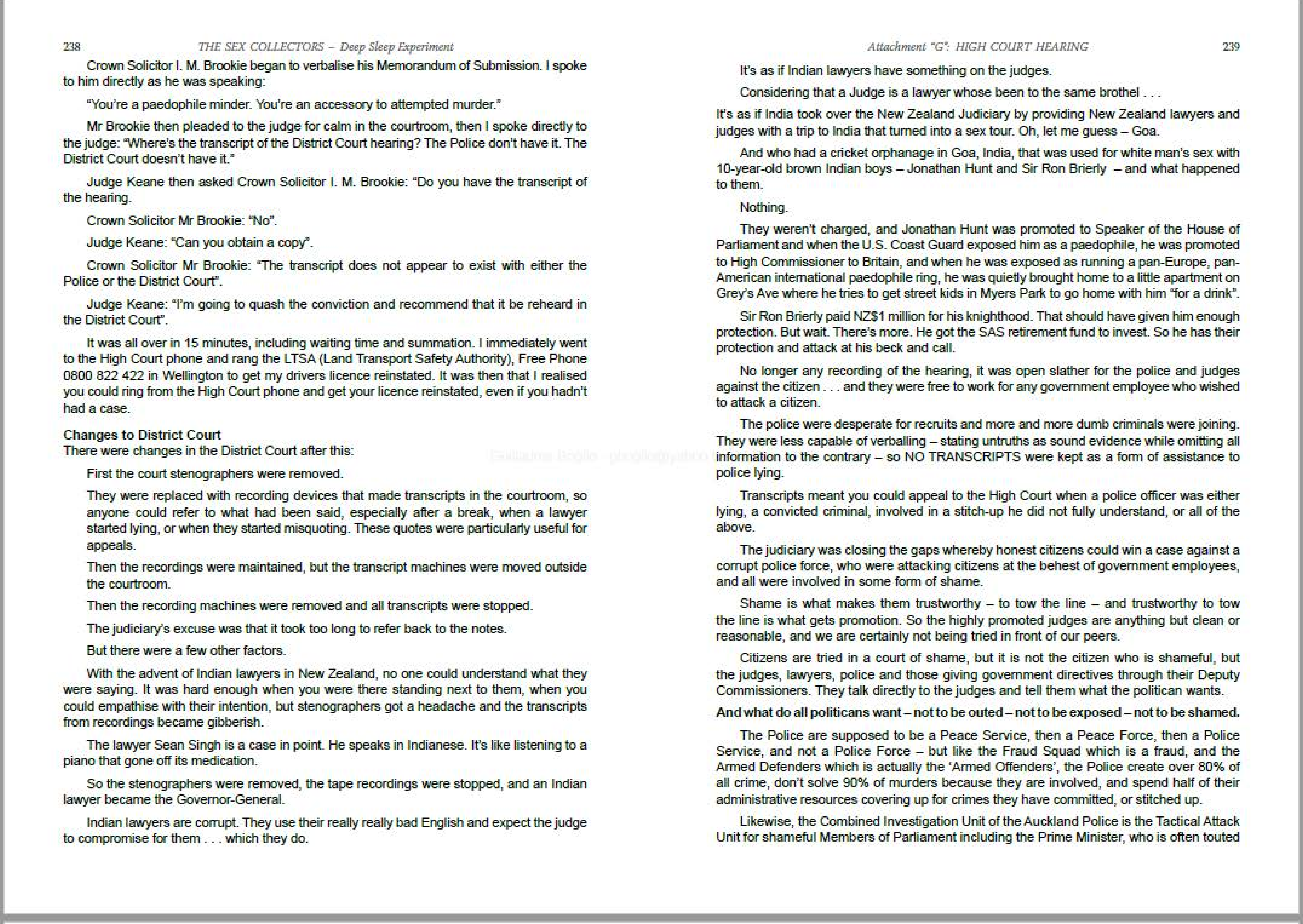

Crown Solicitor I. M. Brookie began to verbalise his Memorandum of Submission. I spoke to him directly as he was speaking:

"You're a paedophile minder. You're an accessory to attempted murder."

Mr Brookie then pleaded to the judge for calm in the courtroom, then I spoke directly to the judge: "Where's the transcript of the District Court hearing? The Police don't have it. The District Court doesn't have it."

Judge Keane then asked Crown Solicitor I. M. Brookie: "Do you have the transcript of the hearing.

Crown Solicitor Mr Brookie: "No".

Judge Keane: "Can you obtain a copy".

Crown Solicitor Mr Brookie: "The transcript does not appear to exist with either the Police or the District Court".

Judge Keane: "I'm going to quash the conviction and recommend that it be reheard in the District Court".

It was all over in 15 minutes, including waiting time and summation. I immediately went to the High Court phone and rang the LTSA (Land Transport Safety Authority), Free Phone 0800 822 422 in Wellington to get my drivers licence reinstated. It was then that I realised you could ring from the High Court phone and get your licence reinstated, even if you hadn't had a case.

Changes to District Court

There were changes in the District Court after this:

First the court stenographers were removed.

They were replaced with recording devices that made transcripts in the courtroom, so anyone could refer to what had been said, especially after a break, when a lawyer started lying, or when they started misquoting. These quotes were particularly useful for appeals.

Then the recordings were maintained, but the transcript machines were moved outside the courtroom.

Then the recording machines were removed and all transcripts were stopped.

The judiciary's excuse was that it took too long to refer back to the notes.

But there were a few other factors.

With the advent of Indian lawyers in New Zealand, no one could understand what they were saying. It was hard enough when you were there standing next to them, when you could empathise with their intention, but stenographers got a headache and the transcripts from recordings became gibberish.

The lawyer Sean Singh is a case in point. He speaks in Indianese. It's like listening to a piano that gone off its medication.

So the stenographers were removed, the tape recordings were stopped, and an Indian lawyer became the Governor-General.

Indian lawyers are corrupt. They use their really really bad English and expect the judge to compromise for them . . . which they do.

Guillaume Boglio - gboglio@yahoo

It's as if Indian lawyers have something on the judges.

Considering that a Judge is a lawyer whose been to the same brothel . . .

It's as if India took over the New Zealand Judiciary by providing New Zealand lawyers and judges with a trip to India that turned into a sex tour. Oh, let me guess – Goa.

And who had a cricket orphanage in Goa, India, that was used for white man's sex with 10-year-old brown Indian boys – Jonathan Hunt and Sir Ron Brierly – and what happened to them.

Nothing.

They weren't charged, and Jonathan Hunt was promoted to Speaker of the House of Parliament and when the U.S. Coast Guard exposed him as a paedophile, he was promoted to High Commissioner to Britain, and when he was exposed as running a pan-Europe, pan-American international paedophile ring, he was quietly brought home to a little apartment on Grey's Ave where he tries to get street kids in Myers Park to go home with him "for a drink".

Sir Ron Brierly paid NZ$1 million for his knighthood. That should have given him enough protection. But wait. There's more. He got the SAS retirement fund to invest. So he has their protection and attack at his beck and call.

No longer any recording of the hearing, it was open slather for the police and judges against the citizen . . . and they were free to work for any government employee who wished to attack a citizen.

The police were desperate for recruits and more and more dumb criminals were joining. They were less capable of verballing – stating untruths as sound evidence while omitting all information to the contrary – so NO TRANSCRIPTS were kept as a form of assistance to police lying.

Transcripts meant you could appeal to the High Court when a police officer was either lying, a convicted criminal, involved in a stitch-up he did not fully understand, or all of the above.

The judiciary was closing the gaps whereby honest citizens could win a case against a corrupt police force, who were attacking citizens at the behest of government employees, and all were involved in some form of shame.

Shame is what makes them trustworthy – to tow the line – and trustworthy to tow the line is what gets promotion. So the highly promoted judges are anything but clean or reasonable, and we are certainly not being tried in front of our peers.

Citizens are tried in a court of shame, but it is not the citizen who is shameful, but the judges, lawyers, police and those giving government directives through their Deputy Commissioners. They talk directly to the judges and tell them what the politican wants.

And what do all politicans want – not to be outed – not to be exposed – not to be shamed.

The Police are supposed to be a Peace Service, then a Peace Force, then a Police Service, and not a Police Force – but like the Fraud Squad which is a fraud, and the Armed Defenders which is actually the 'Armed Offenders', the Police create over 80% of all crime, don't solve 90% of murders because they are involved, and spend half of their administrative resources covering up for crimes they have committed, or stitched up.

Likewise, the Combined Investigation Unit of the Auckland Police is the Tactical Attack Unit for shameful Members of Parliament including the Prime Minister, who is often touted in the mediia as a graduate of the St Petersburg Tavistock, former St Petersburg prostitute and contract killer. (**See Attachment "N"**, 'Newspaper Articles')

Police crimes are most often in the form of hits.
The police generally don't have the intelligence to pull off a con.

So don't expect justice in the New Zealand Judiciary.
The New Zealand Judiciary is a fraud.

This is backed up by the Crown Solicitor's 'Memorandum of Submission' which records the police, judges and Crown Solicitors as questioning the sanity of anyone who challenges police version of events, or a judge's decision.

In this case, Judge Gittos was a police stitch-up judge.

This is what Judge P Gittos is known for.

When you mention Judge Gittos, lawyers role their eyes.

In my case they said; "You'd have a case if it wasn't for the judge".

In the first half of 2008 Prime Minister Helen Clark tried to have me detained under the Mental Health Act and presented my books to her psychologists.

They replied: "These books are very well ordered. There is no way anyone with questionable sanity could research, write, and arrange such books.
"Further, the index and bibliographies are very difficult to achieve, and exempliary. Mr Hallett's overseas radio interviews show spontaneous cognisance, and he has his own website.
"So, Helen, no."

This was written progressively from the day of events, generally 4 October 2004–26 March 2006. It was updated slightly in 30 July–6 August 2008. It is now for general viewing and has been affirmed as part of Attachment "G", 'High Court Hearing'.

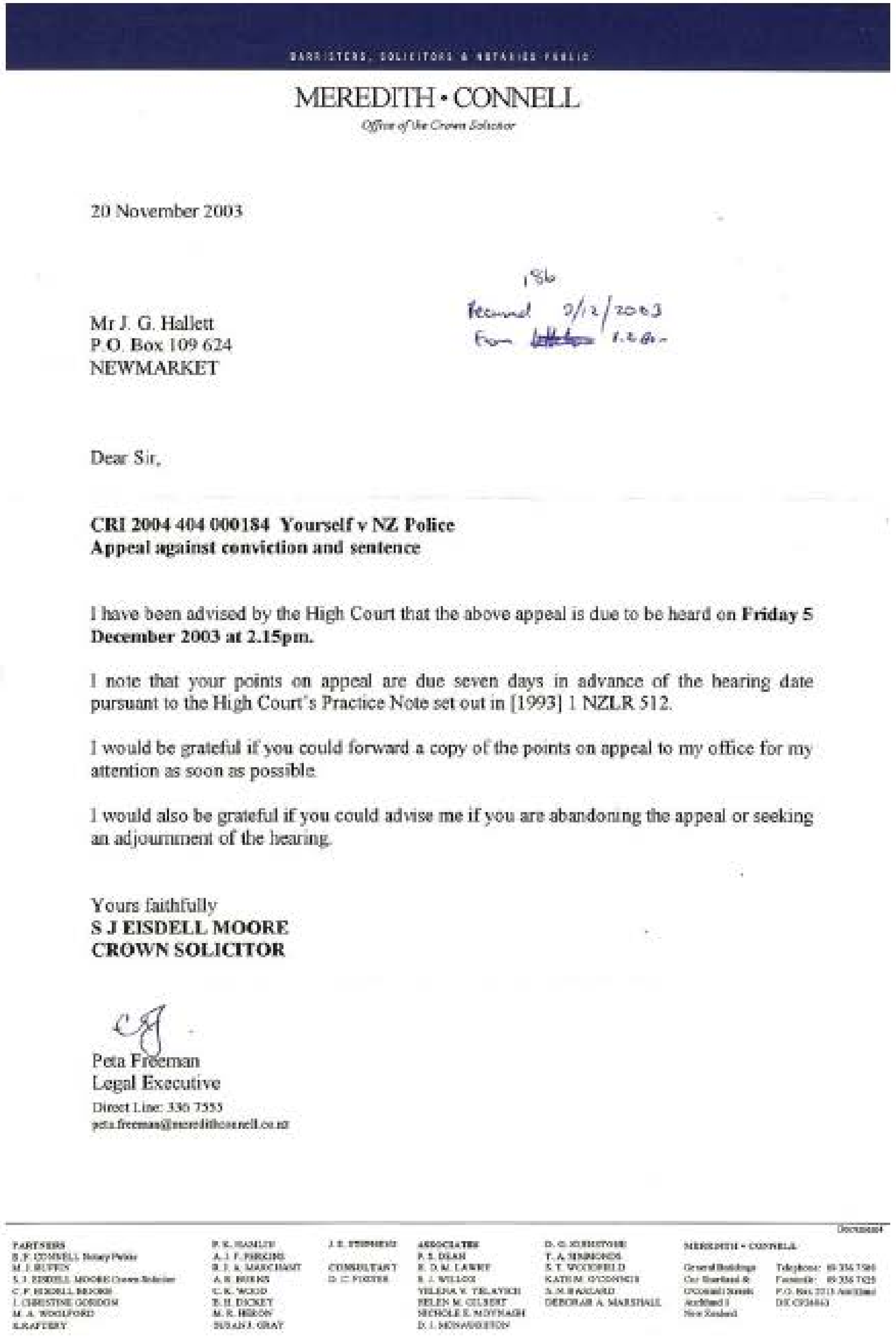

BARRISTERS, SOLICITORS & NOTARIES PUBLIC
MEREDITH • CONNELL
Office of the Crown Solicitor

20 November 2003

186
Received 2/12/2003
From [illegible] 1.2 a.m.

Mr J. G. Hallett
P.O. Box 109 624
NEWMARKET

Dear Sir,

CRI 2004 404 000184 Yourself v NZ Police
Appeal against conviction and sentence

I have been advised by the High Court that the above appeal is due to be heard on **Friday 5 December 2003 at 2.15pm.**

I note that your points on appeal are due seven days in advance of the hearing date pursuant to the High Court's Practice Note set out in [1993] 1 NZLR 512.

I would be grateful if you could forward a copy of the points on appeal to my office for my attention as soon as possible.

I would also be grateful if you could advise me if you are abandoning the appeal or seeking an adjournment of the hearing.

Yours faithfully
S J EISDELL MOORE
CROWN SOLICITOR

Peta Freeman
Legal Executive
Direct Line: 336 7553
peta.freeman@meredithconnell.co.nz

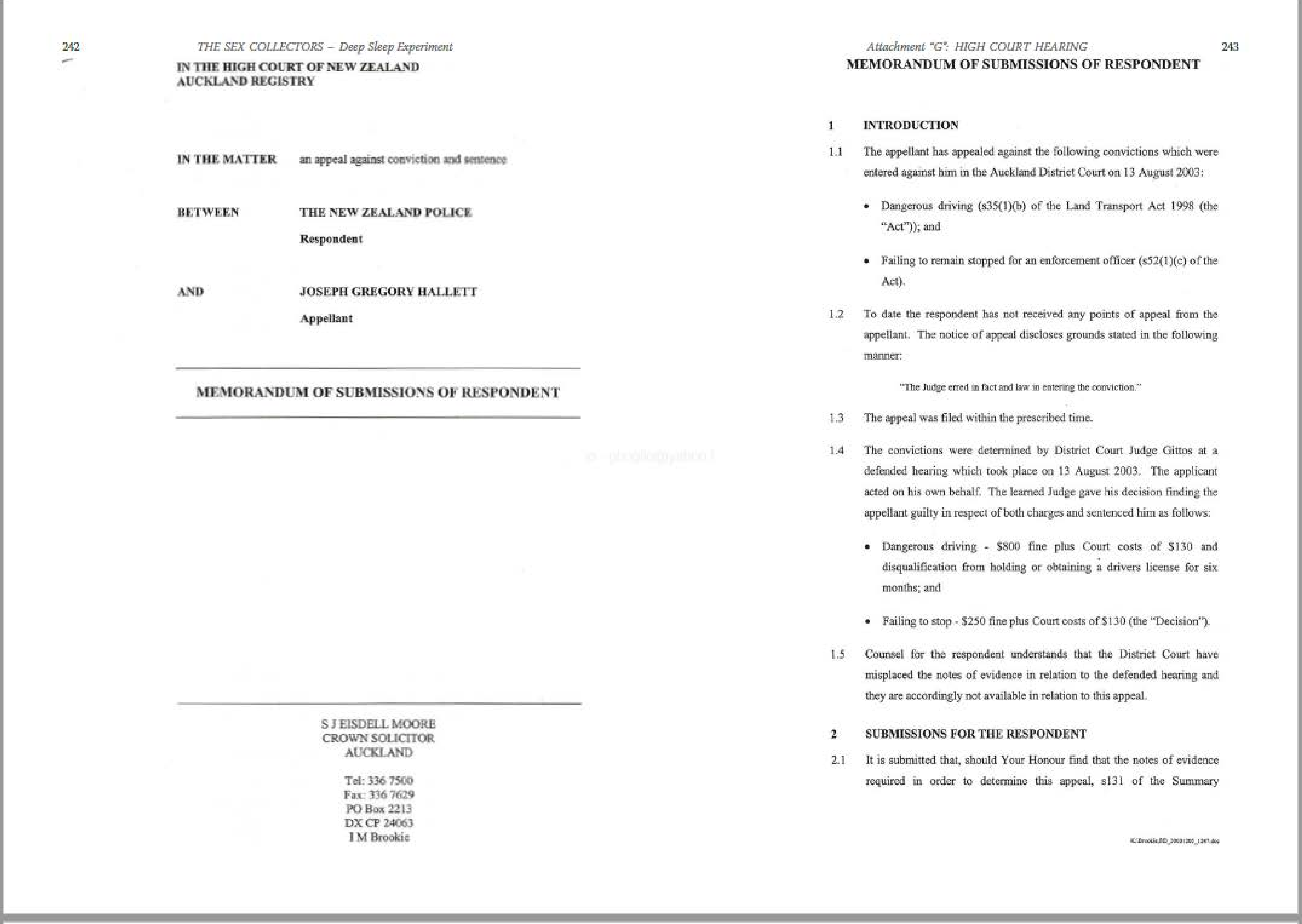

IN THE HIGH COURT OF NEW ZEALAND
AUCKLAND REGISTRY

IN THE MATTER	an appeal against conviction and sentence
BETWEEN	**THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE** **Respondent**
AND	**JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT** **Appellant**

MEMORANDUM OF SUBMISSIONS OF RESPONDENT

S J EISDELL MOORE
CROWN SOLICITOR
AUCKLAND

Tel: 336 7500
Fax: 336 7629
PO Box 2213
DX CP 24063
I M Brookie

MEMORANDUM OF SUBMISSIONS OF RESPONDENT

1 INTRODUCTION

1.1 The appellant has appealed against the following convictions which were entered against him in the Auckland District Court on 13 August 2003:

- Dangerous driving (s35(1)(b) of the Land Transport Act 1998 (the "Act")); and
- Failing to remain stopped for an enforcement officer (s52(1)(c) of the Act).

1.2 To date the respondent has not received any points of appeal from the appellant. The notice of appeal discloses grounds stated in the following manner:

> "The Judge erred in fact and law in entering the conviction."

1.3 The appeal was filed within the prescribed time.

1.4 The convictions were determined by District Court Judge Gittos at a defended hearing which took place on 13 August 2003. The applicant acted on his own behalf. The learned Judge gave his decision finding the appellant guilty in respect of both charges and sentenced him as follows:

- Dangerous driving - $800 fine plus Court costs of $130 and disqualification from holding or obtaining a drivers license for six months; and
- Failing to stop - $250 fine plus Court costs of $130 (the "Decision").

1.5 Counsel for the respondent understands that the District Court have misplaced the notes of evidence in relation to the defended hearing and they are accordingly not available in relation to this appeal.

2 SUBMISSIONS FOR THE RESPONDENT

2.1 It is submitted that, should Your Honour find that the notes of evidence required in order to determine this appeal, s131 of the Summary

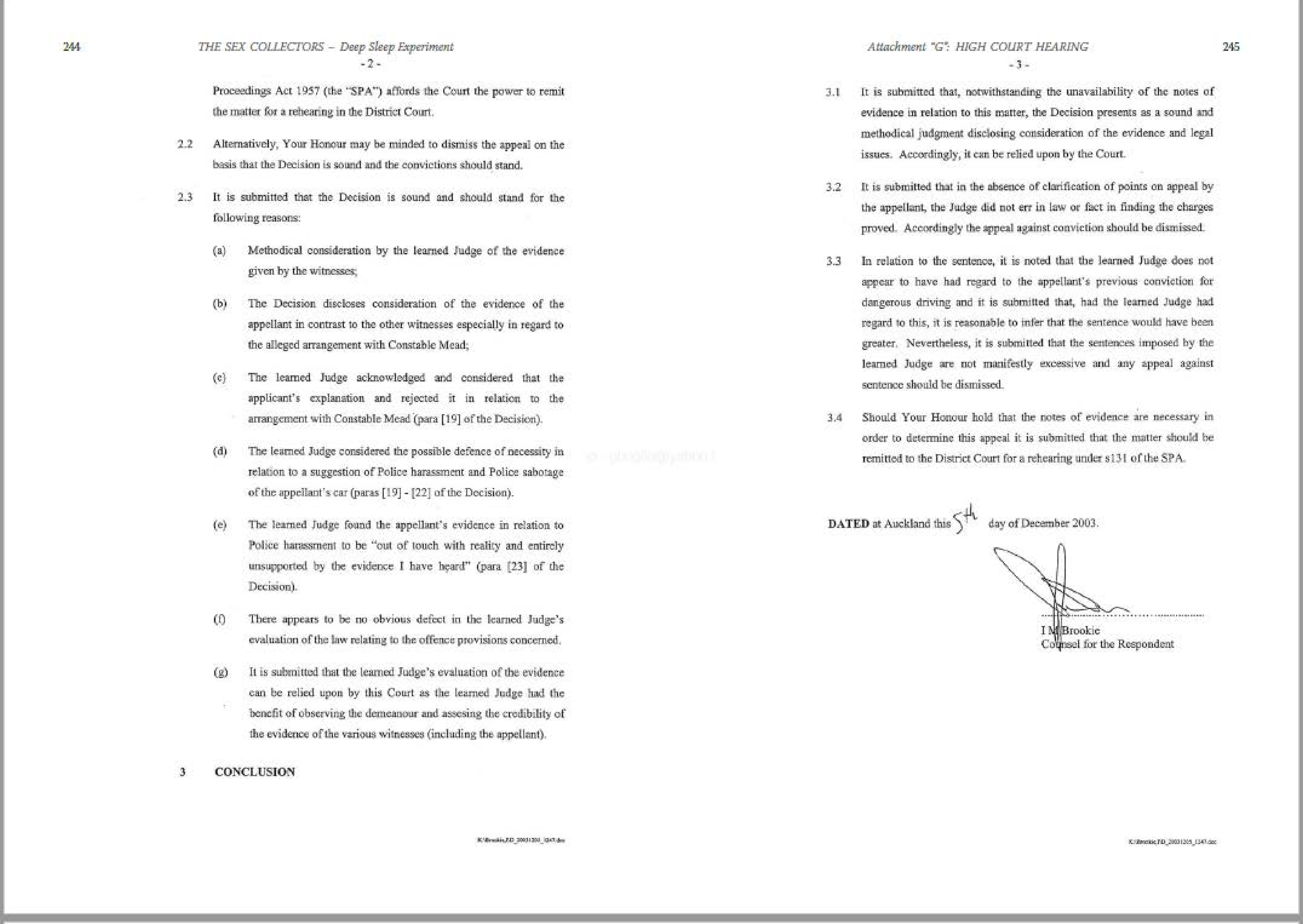

Proceedings Act 1957 (the "SPA") affords the Court the power to remit the matter for a rehearing in the District Court.

2.2 Alternatively, Your Honour may be minded to dismiss the appeal on the basis that the Decision is sound and the convictions should stand.

2.3 It is submitted that the Decision is sound and should stand for the following reasons:

(a) Methodical consideration by the learned Judge of the evidence given by the witnesses;

(b) The Decision discloses consideration of the evidence of the appellant in contrast to the other witnesses especially in regard to the alleged arrangement with Constable Mead;

(c) The learned Judge acknowledged and considered that the applicant's explanation and rejected it in relation to the arrangement with Constable Mead (para [19] of the Decision).

(d) The learned Judge considered the possible defence of necessity in relation to a suggestion of Police harassment and Police sabotage of the appellant's car (paras [19] - [22] of the Decision).

(e) The learned Judge found the appellant's evidence in relation to Police harassment to be "out of touch with reality and entirely unsupported by the evidence I have heard" (para [23] of the Decision).

(f) There appears to be no obvious defect in the learned Judge's evaluation of the law relating to the offence provisions concerned.

(g) It is submitted that the learned Judge's evaluation of the evidence can be relied upon by this Court as the learned Judge had the benefit of observing the demeanour and assesing the credibility of the evidence of the various witnesses (including the appellant).

3 CONCLUSION

3.1 It is submitted that, notwithstanding the unavailability of the notes of evidence in relation to this matter, the Decision presents as a sound and methodical judgment disclosing consideration of the evidence and legal issues. Accordingly, it can be relied upon by the Court.

3.2 It is submitted that in the absence of clarification of points on appeal by the appellant, the Judge did not err in law or fact in finding the charges proved. Accordingly the appeal against conviction should be dismissed.

3.3 In relation to the sentence, it is noted that the learned Judge does not appear to have had regard to the appellant's previous conviction for dangerous driving and it is submitted that, had the learned Judge had regard to this, it is reasonable to infer that the sentence would have been greater. Nevertheless, it is submitted that the sentences imposed by the learned Judge are not manifestly excessive and any appeal against sentence should be dismissed.

3.4 Should Your Honour hold that the notes of evidence are necessary in order to determine this appeal it is submitted that the matter should be remitted to the District Court for a rehearing under s131 of the SPA.

DATED at Auckland this 5th day of December 2003.

I M Brookie
Counsel for the Respondent

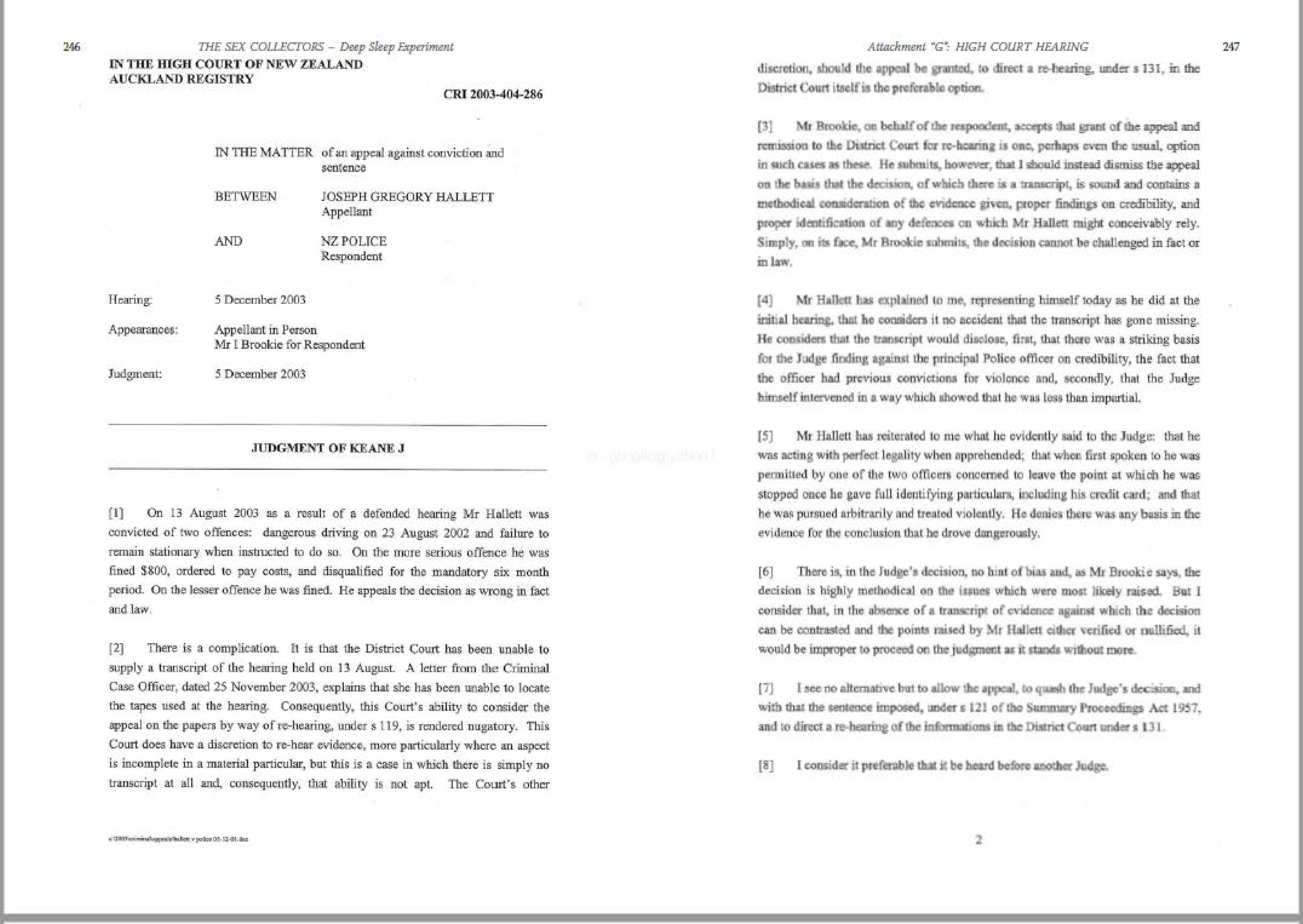

IN THE HIGH COURT OF NEW ZEALAND
AUCKLAND REGISTRY

CRI 2003-404-286

IN THE MATTER	of an appeal against conviction and sentence
BETWEEN	JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT Appellant
AND	NZ POLICE Respondent

Hearing:	5 December 2003
Appearances:	Appellant in Person Mr I Brookie for Respondent
Judgment:	5 December 2003

JUDGMENT OF KEANE J

---

[1] On 13 August 2003 as a result of a defended hearing Mr Hallett was convicted of two offences: dangerous driving on 23 August 2002 and failure to remain stationary when instructed to do so. On the more serious offence he was fined $800, ordered to pay costs, and disqualified for the mandatory six month period. On the lesser offence he was fined. He appeals the decision as wrong in fact and law.

[2] There is a complication. It is that the District Court has been unable to supply a transcript of the hearing held on 13 August. A letter from the Criminal Case Officer, dated 25 November 2003, explains that she has been unable to locate the tapes used at the hearing. Consequently, this Court's ability to consider the appeal on the papers by way of re-hearing, under s 119, is rendered nugatory. This Court does have a discretion to re-hear evidence, more particularly where an aspect is incomplete in a material particular, but this is a case in which there is simply no transcript at all and, consequently, that ability is not apt. The Court's other

discretion, should the appeal be granted, to direct a re-hearing, under s 131, in the District Court itself is the preferable option.

[3] Mr Brookie, on behalf of the respondent, accepts that grant of the appeal and remission to the District Court for re-hearing is one, perhaps even the usual, option in such cases as these. He submits, however, that I should instead dismiss the appeal on the basis that the decision, of which there is a transcript, is sound and contains a methodical consideration of the evidence given, proper findings on credibility, and proper identification of any defences on which Mr Hallett might conceivably rely. Simply, on its face, Mr Brookie submits, the decision cannot be challenged in fact or in law.

[4] Mr Hallett has explained to me, representing himself today as he did at the initial hearing, that he considers it no accident that the transcript has gone missing. He considers that the transcript would disclose, first, that there was a striking basis for the Judge finding against the principal Police officer on credibility, the fact that the officer had previous convictions for violence and, secondly, that the Judge himself intervened in a way which showed that he was less than impartial.

[5] Mr Hallett has reiterated to me what he evidently said to the Judge: that he was acting with perfect legality when apprehended; that when first spoken to he was permitted by one of the two officers concerned to leave the point at which he was stopped once he gave full identifying particulars, including his credit card; and that he was pursued arbitrarily and treated violently. He denies there was any basis in the evidence for the conclusion that he drove dangerously.

[6] There is, in the Judge's decision, no hint of bias and, as Mr Brookie says, the decision is highly methodical on the issues which were most likely raised. But I consider that, in the absence of a transcript of evidence against which the decision can be contrasted and the points raised by Mr Hallett either verified or nullified, it would be improper to proceed on the judgment as it stands without more.

[7] I see no alternative but to allow the appeal, to quash the Judge's decision, and with that the sentence imposed, under s 121 of the Summary Proceedings Act 1957, and to direct a re-hearing of the informations in the District Court under s 131.

[8] I consider it preferable that it be heard before another Judge.

Keane J

Mr J G Hallett, PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland.
Meredith Connell, Auckland, for Respondent

Gone in 60 Seconds
I remember Judge J. Keane's words after his summation.

Judges do their utmost to say things without actually saying them.

They expect their stare to be "ALERT to this double entendre."

He looked at me as judges do and said: "Now I don't want to see this case recurring. I don't want to see it popping up again." Then he looked down at his bench, shuffled his papers, and looked for his youth.

Page 5.

So I raced outside and got my driver licence back.

It was then that I realised you didn't need a hearing, or a judge. You just had to ring up the Land Transport Safety Authority from the right phone – and that was the High Court phone.

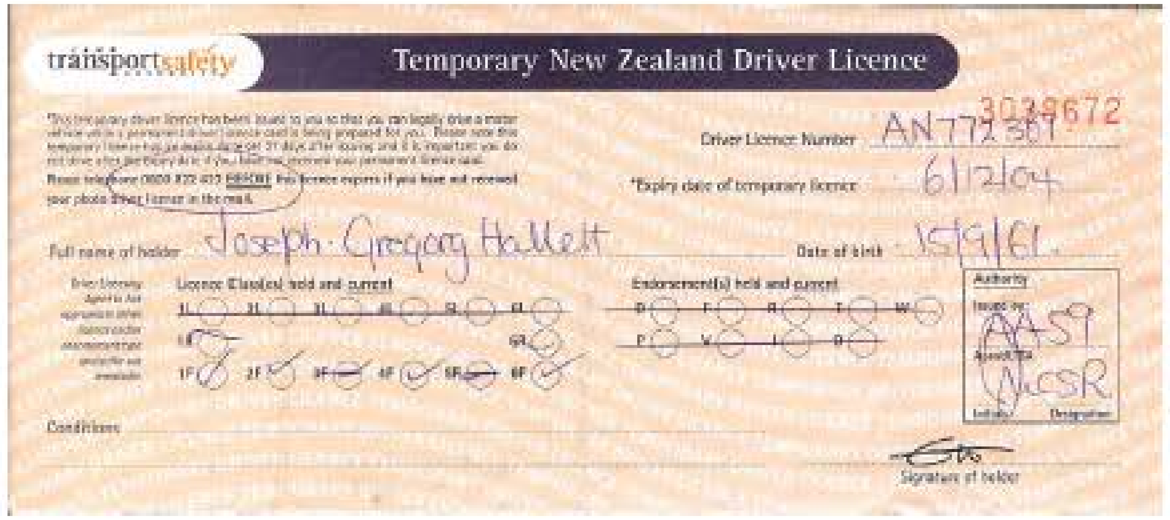

transportsafety

Temporary New Zealand Driver Licence

3039672

Driver Licence Number AN772301

*Expiry date of temporary licence 6/12/04

Full name of holder Joseph Gregory Hallett

Date of birth 15/9/61

Licence Class(es) held and current

Endorsement(s) held and current

Authority

Issued by: AAS9

Conditions

Signature of holder

IN THE HIGH COURT OF NEW ZEALAND HC 43
AUCKLAND REGISTRY

CRI 2003-404-186

BETWEEN: Joseph Gregory HALLETT
Appellant:

AND: New Zealand Police
Respondent:

I, Gordon Charles Sulliman, Deputy Registrar of the High Court at Auckland, **DO HEREBY CERTIFY** that at the sitting of the High Court on the 5th day of December 2003 before the Honourable Justice Keane **ON AN APPEAL** against sentence on charges of:

(i) FAILING TO REMAIN STOPPED FOR AN ENFORCEMENT OFFICER – SECTION 52(1)(C) LAND TRANSPORT ACT 1998

(ii) DRIVING A MOTOR VEHICLE IN A DANGEROUS MANNER – SECTION 35(1)(B) LAND TRANSPORT ACT 1998

in the District Court at Auckland on the 12th day of August 2003 and was:

> Convicted and fined $250, Court costs $130.00. Convicted and fined $800, Court costs $130 and disqualified from holding or obtaining a motor drivers license for six months from 13/08/2003.

IT WAS ADJUDGED on the 5th day of December 2003 that the **APPEAL IS ALLOWED, THE CONVICTION IS QUASHED AND A REHEARING IS ORDERED.**

Dated at Auckland this 21st day of January 2004.

G C SULLIMAN
DEPUTY REGISTRAR

The abovenamed Appellant
The Solicitor for the Appellant
The Solicitor for the Respondent:
Meredith Connell Private Bag 2213
AUCKLAND
The Registrar, District Court

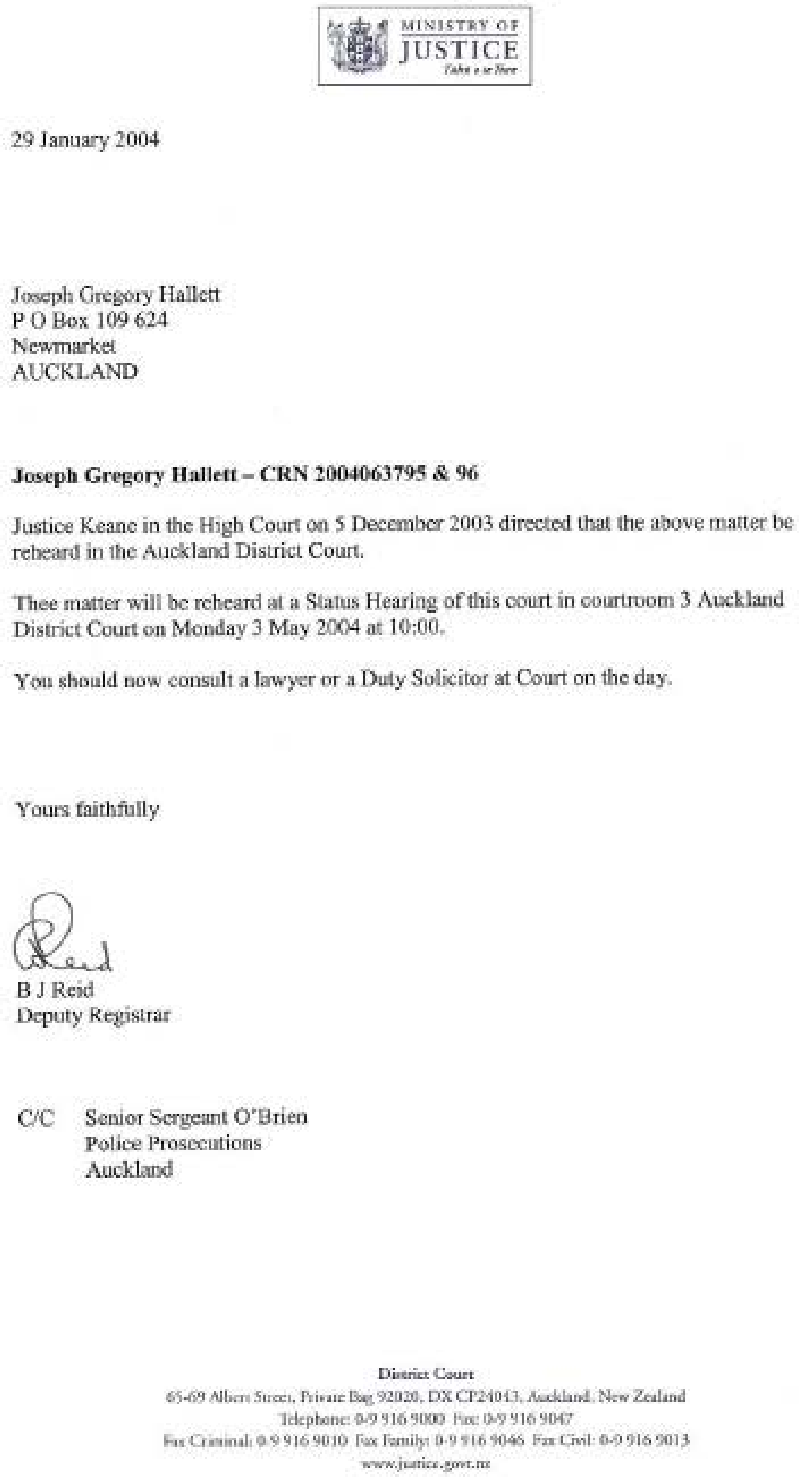

MINISTRY OF
JUSTICE

29 January 2004

Joseph Gregory Hallett
P O Box 109 624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

Joseph Gregory Hallett – CRN 2004063795 & 96

Justice Keane in the High Court on 5 December 2003 directed that the above matter be reheard in the Auckland District Court.

Thee matter will be reheard at a Status Hearing of this court in courtroom 3 Auckland District Court on Monday 3 May 2004 at 10:00.

You should now consult a lawyer or a Duty Solicitor at Court on the day.

Yours faithfully

B J Reid
Deputy Registrar

C/C Senior Sergeant O'Brien
Police Prosecutions
Auckland

District Court
65-69 Albert Street, Private Bag 92020, DX CP24013, Auckland, New Zealand
Telephone: 0-9 916 9000 Fax: 0-9 916 9047
Fax Criminal: 0-9 916 9010 Fax Family: 0-9 916 9046 Fax Civil: 0-9 916 9013
www.justice.govt.nz

Fines Refund

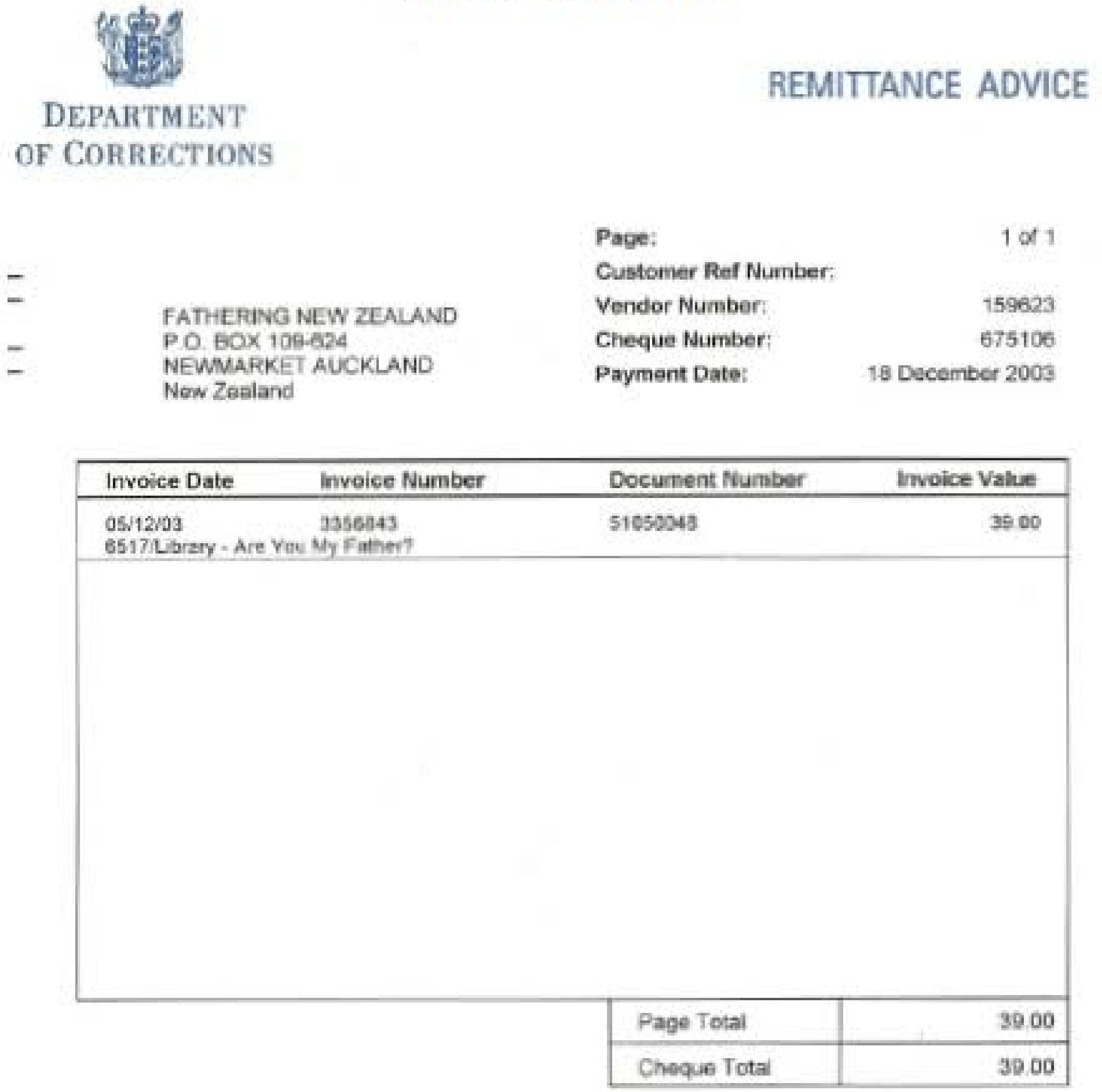

DEPARTMENT
OF CORRECTIONS

REMITTANCE ADVICE

FATHERING NEW ZEALAND
P.O. BOX 109-624
NEWMARKET AUCKLAND
New Zealand

Page:	1 of 1
Customer Ref Number:	
Vendor Number:	159623
Cheque Number:	675106
Payment Date:	18 December 2003

Invoice Date	Invoice Number	Document Number	Invoice Value
05/12/03 6517/Library - Are You My Father?	3356843	51050048	39.00

Page Total	39.00
Cheque Total	39.00

Published Are You My Father? The Family Court and Other Experiments on Mother's Day, 12 May 2002.

Gave speech to Rotary in the Cook Islands on 21 August 2002 (NZ Time: 22 August 2002).

Poisoned at 8 am on 23 August 2002.

Charged at 8 pm on 23 August 2002.

Convicted of all offences in the District Court on 13 August 2003.

Got off all charges in the High Court on 5 December 2003.

Department of Corrections orders and pays for *Are You My Father? The Family Court and Other Experiments* on 18 December 2003.

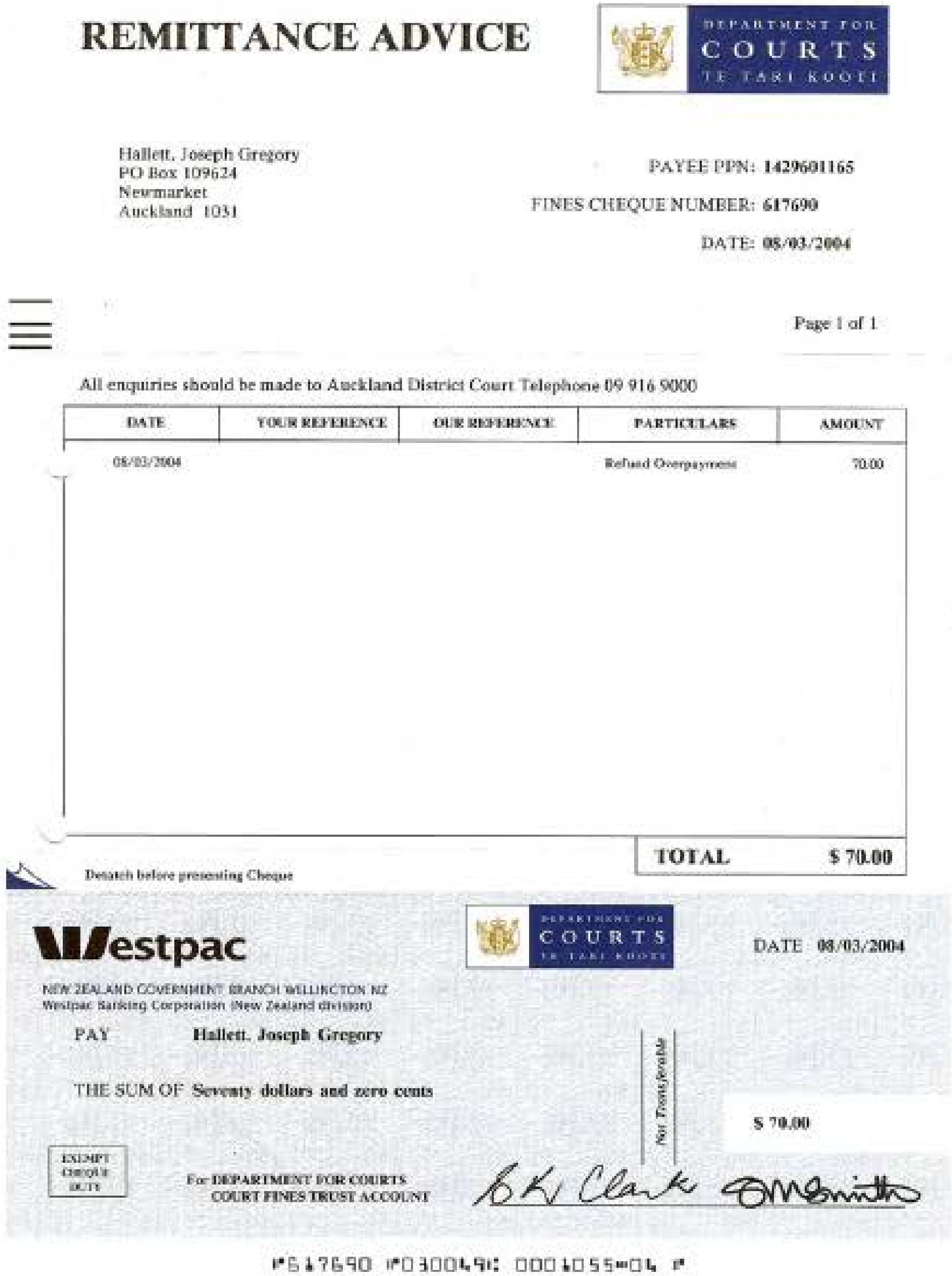

REMITTANCE ADVICE

DEPARTMENT FOR COURTS TE TARI KOOTI

Hallett, Joseph Gregory
PO Box 109624
Newmarket
Auckland 1031

PAYEE PPN: **1429601165**
FINES CHEQUE NUMBER: **617690**
DATE: **08/03/2004**

Page 1 of 1

All enquiries should be made to Auckland District Court Telephone 09 916 9000

DATE	YOUR REFERENCE	OUR REFERENCE	PARTICULARS	AMOUNT
08/03/2004			Refund Overpayment	70.00
			TOTAL	**$ 70.00**

Detatch before presenting Cheque

Westpac

DEPARTMENT FOR COURTS TE TARI KOOTI

DATE **08/03/2004**

NEW ZEALAND GOVERNMENT BRANCH WELLINGTON NZ
Westpac Banking Corporation (New Zealand division)

PAY **Hallett, Joseph Gregory**

THE SUM OF **Seventy dollars and zero cents**

Not Transferable

$ 70.00

EXEMPT CHEQUE DUTY

For **DEPARTMENT FOR COURTS COURT FINES TRUST ACCOUNT**

B K Clark

⑈617690 ⑈030049⑆ 000105 5⑉04 ⑈

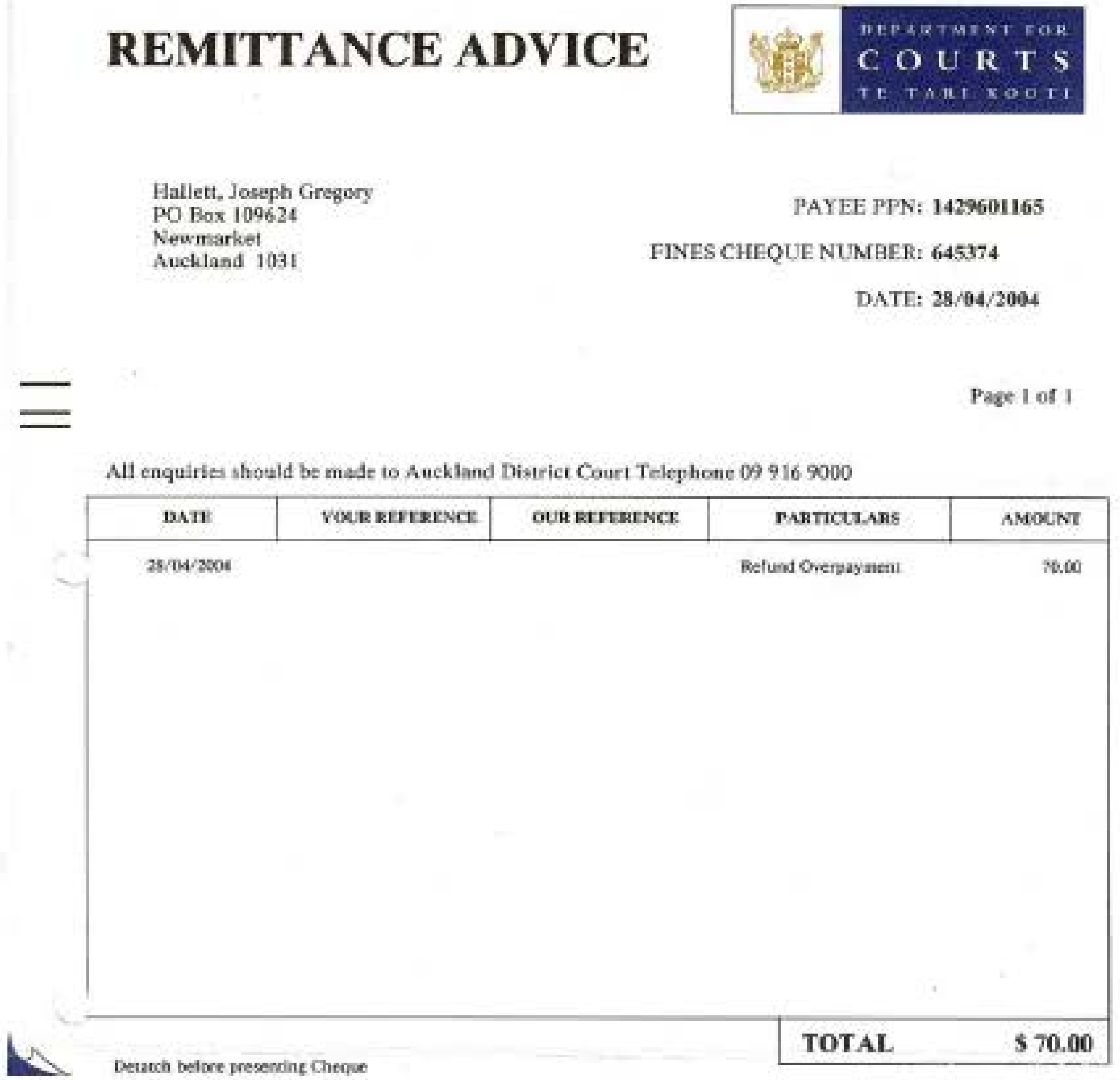

REMITTANCE ADVICE

DEPARTMENT FOR COURTS TE TARI KOOTI

Hallett, Joseph Gregory
PO Box 109624
Newmarket
Auckland 1031

PAYEE PPN: **1429601165**
FINES CHEQUE NUMBER: **645374**
DATE: **28/04/2004**

Page 1 of 1

All enquiries should be made to Auckland District Court Telephone 09 916 9000

DATE	YOUR REFERENCE	OUR REFERENCE	PARTICULARS	AMOUNT
28/04/2004			Refund Overpayment	70.00
			TOTAL	**$ 70.00**

Detatch before presenting Cheque

On 13 August 2003, the fines and court costs amounted to $1,490.00. These were refunded by the Courts late, piecemeal, and incomplete. At the same time the Courts continued to take the same amount out of my bank account on a weekly basis, while paying me back on a monthly basis. To add confusion, the Courts varied repayments from 3 to 11 weeks ($30–$140). This was done despite the ridiculous $180 "NO LEFT TURN" fine paid by by 31 December 2003.

Fined	$1,050.00
Traffic Ticket	$ 180.00
Court Costs	$ 260.00
5 December 2003 Charges quashed	
8 March 2004	$ 70.00 (Department For Courts cheque dishonoured)
28 April 2004	$ 70.00
20 June 2004	$ 90.00
5 September 2004	$ 90.00 (Courts stopped $10/week withdrawls on 2 Sept. 2004)
3 October 2004	$ 30.00
17 October 2004	$ 140.00
Refund Subtotal	**$ 420.00**
Missing	**$ 630.00–$1,070.00–$1,490.00**

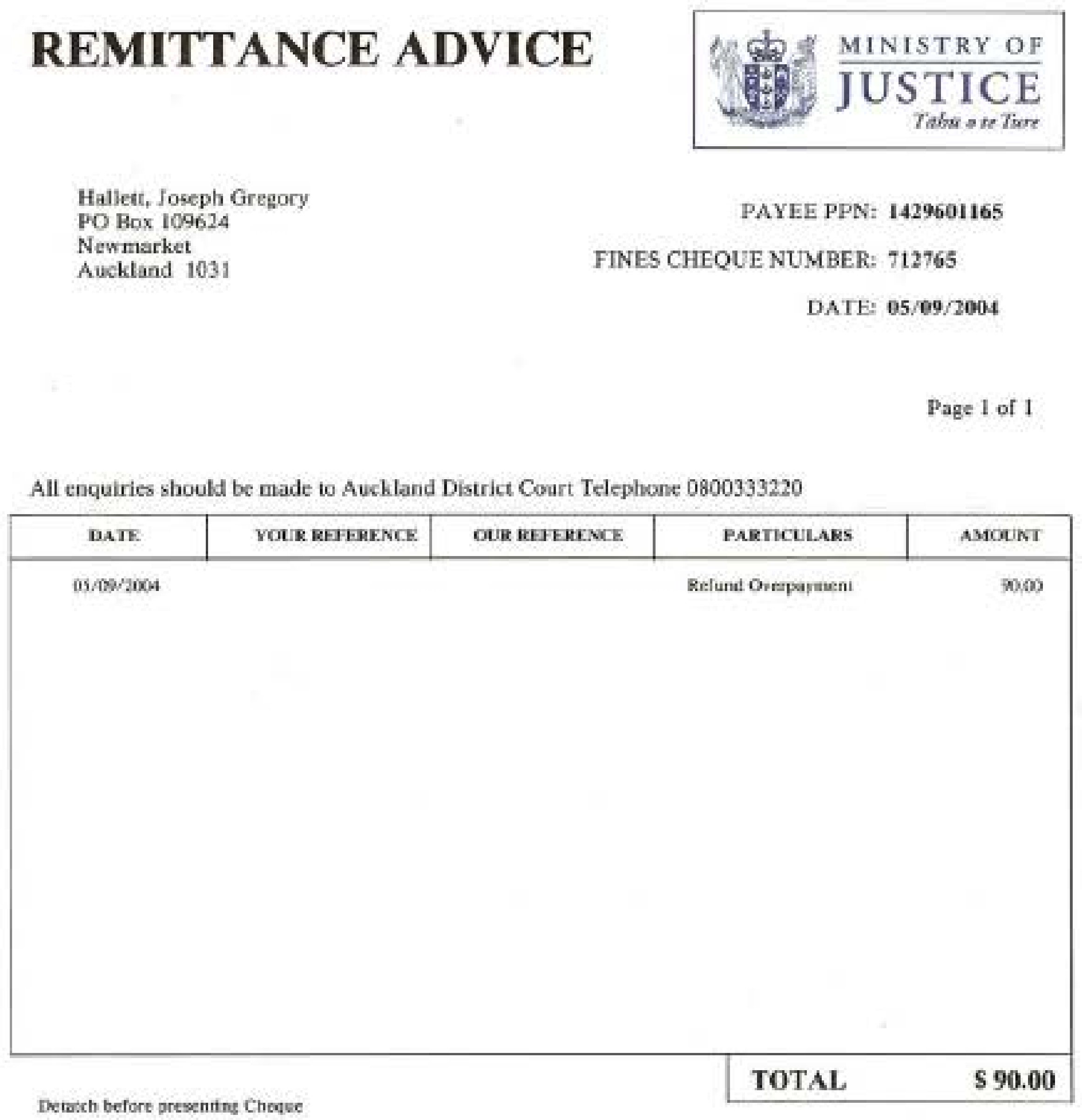

REMITTANCE ADVICE

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE
Tahu o te Ture

Hallett, Joseph Gregory
PO Box 109624
Newmarket
Auckland 1031

PAYEE PPN: **1429601165**
FINES CHEQUE NUMBER: **712765**
DATE: **05/09/2004**

Page 1 of 1

All enquiries should be made to Auckland District Court Telephone 0800333220

DATE	YOUR REFERENCE	OUR REFERENCE	PARTICULARS	AMOUNT
05/09/2004			Refund Overpayment	90.00
			TOTAL	**$ 90.00**

Detatch before presenting Cheque

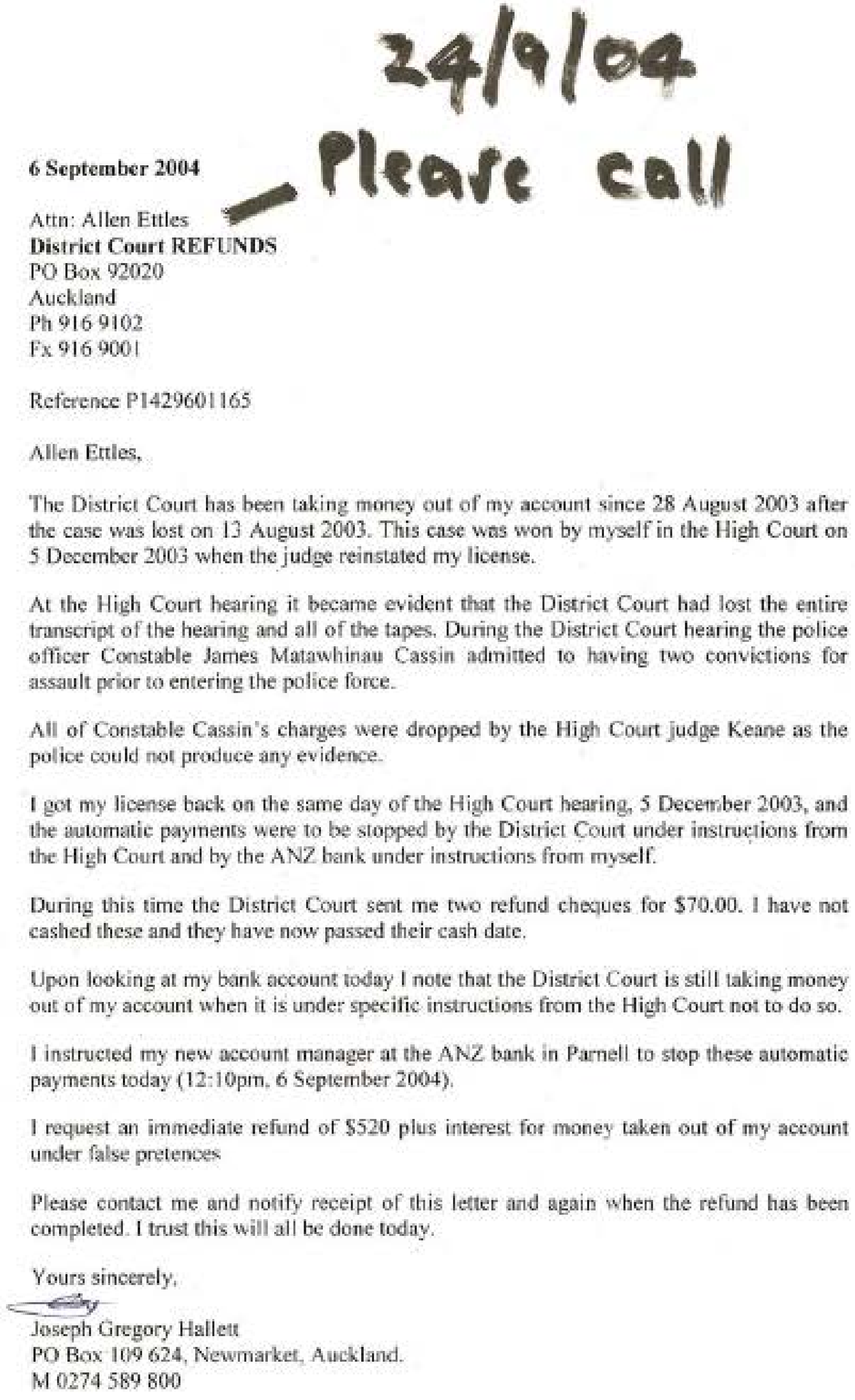

24/9/04

Please call

6 September 2004

Attn: Allen Ettles
District Court REFUNDS
PO Box 92020
Auckland
Ph 916 9102
Fx 916 9001

Reference P1429601165

Allen Ettles,

The District Court has been taking money out of my account since 28 August 2003 after the case was lost on 13 August 2003. This case was won by myself in the High Court on 5 December 2003 when the judge reinstated my license.

At the High Court hearing it became evident that the District Court had lost the entire transcript of the hearing and all of the tapes. During the District Court hearing the police officer Constable James Matawhinau Cassin admitted to having two convictions for assault prior to entering the police force.

All of Constable Cassin's charges were dropped by the High Court judge Keane as the police could not produce any evidence.

I got my license back on the same day of the High Court hearing, 5 December 2003, and the automatic payments were to be stopped by the District Court under instructions from the High Court and by the ANZ bank under instructions from myself.

During this time the District Court sent me two refund cheques for $70.00. I have not cashed these and they have now passed their cash date.

Upon looking at my bank account today I note that the District Court is still taking money out of my account when it is under specific instructions from the High Court not to do so.

I instructed my new account manager at the ANZ bank in Parnell to stop these automatic payments today (12:10pm, 6 September 2004).

I request an immediate refund of $520 plus interest for money taken out of my account under false pretences

Please contact me and notify receipt of this letter and again when the refund has been completed. I trust this will all be done today.

Yours sincerely,

Joseph Gregory Hallett
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland.
M 0274 589 800

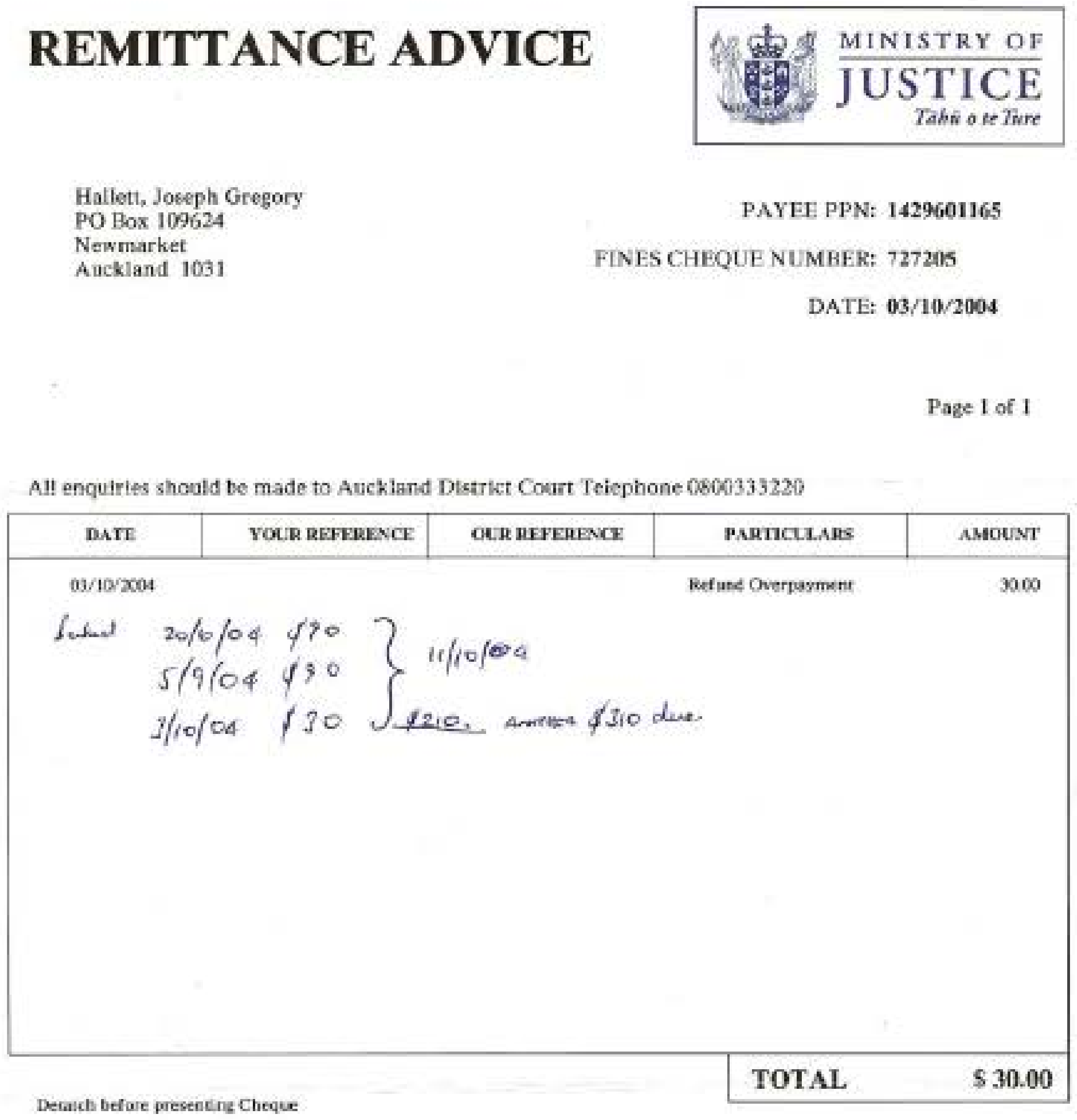

REMITTANCE ADVICE

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

Hallett, Joseph Gregory
PO Box 109624
Newmarket
Auckland 1031

PAYEE PPN: **1429601165**

FINES CHEQUE NUMBER: **727205**

DATE: **03/10/2004**

Page 1 of 1

All enquiries should be made to Auckland District Court Telephone 0800333220

DATE	YOUR REFERENCE	OUR REFERENCE	PARTICULARS	AMOUNT
03/10/2004			Refund Overpayment	30.00

Refund 20/6/04 $90
5/9/04 $90
3/10/04 $30 } 11/10/04 $210. another $310 due.

TOTAL **$ 30.00**

Detatch before presenting Cheque

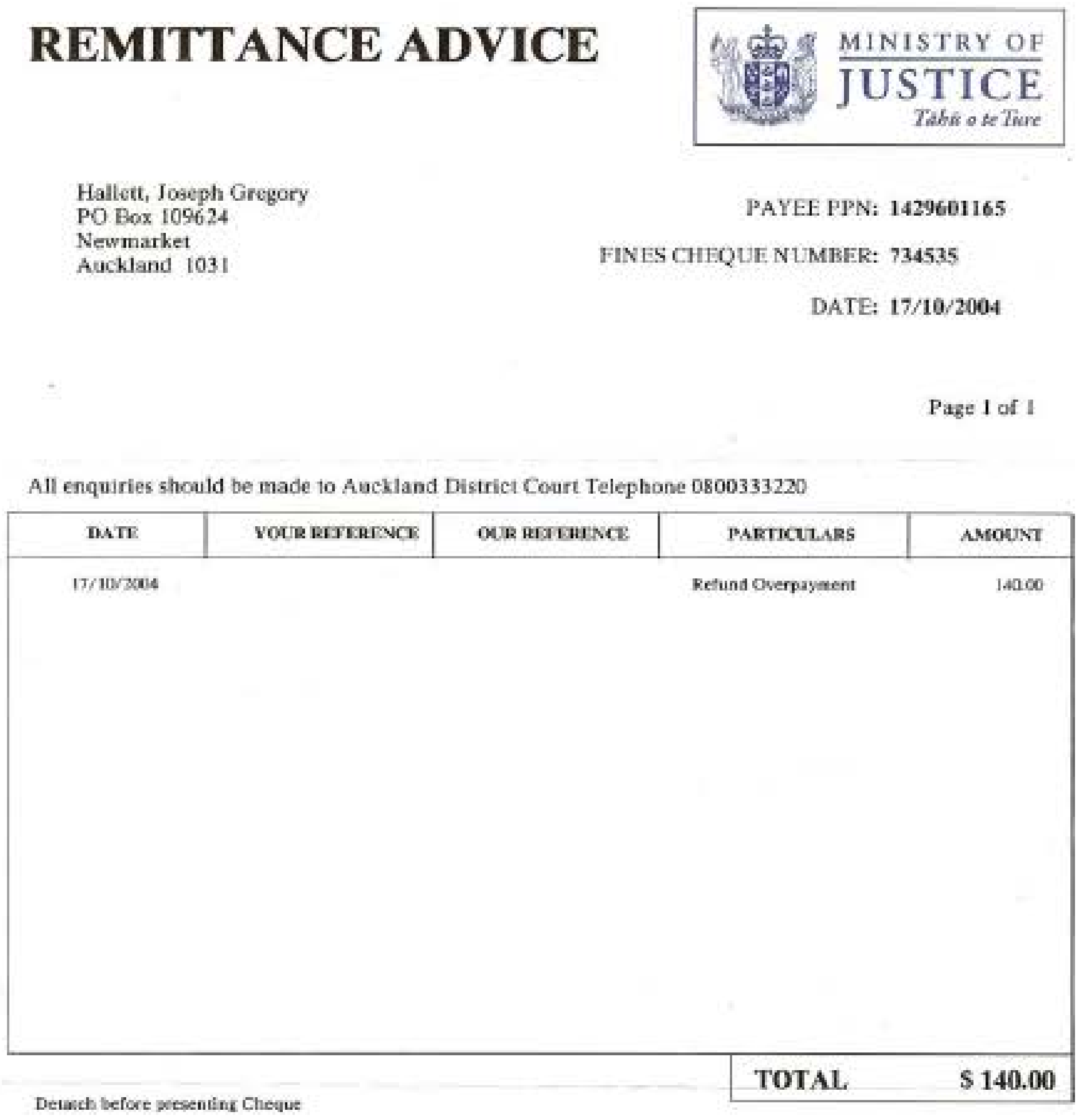

REMITTANCE ADVICE

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE
Tāhū o te Ture

Hallett, Joseph Gregory
PO Box 109624
Newmarket
Auckland 1031

PAYEE PPN: **1429601165**

FINES CHEQUE NUMBER: **734535**

DATE: **17/10/2004**

Page 1 of 1

All enquiries should be made to Auckland District Court Telephone 0800333220

DATE	YOUR REFERENCE	OUR REFERENCE	PARTICULARS	AMOUNT
17/10/2004			Refund Overpayment	140.00

TOTAL **$ 140.00**

Detatch before presenting Cheque

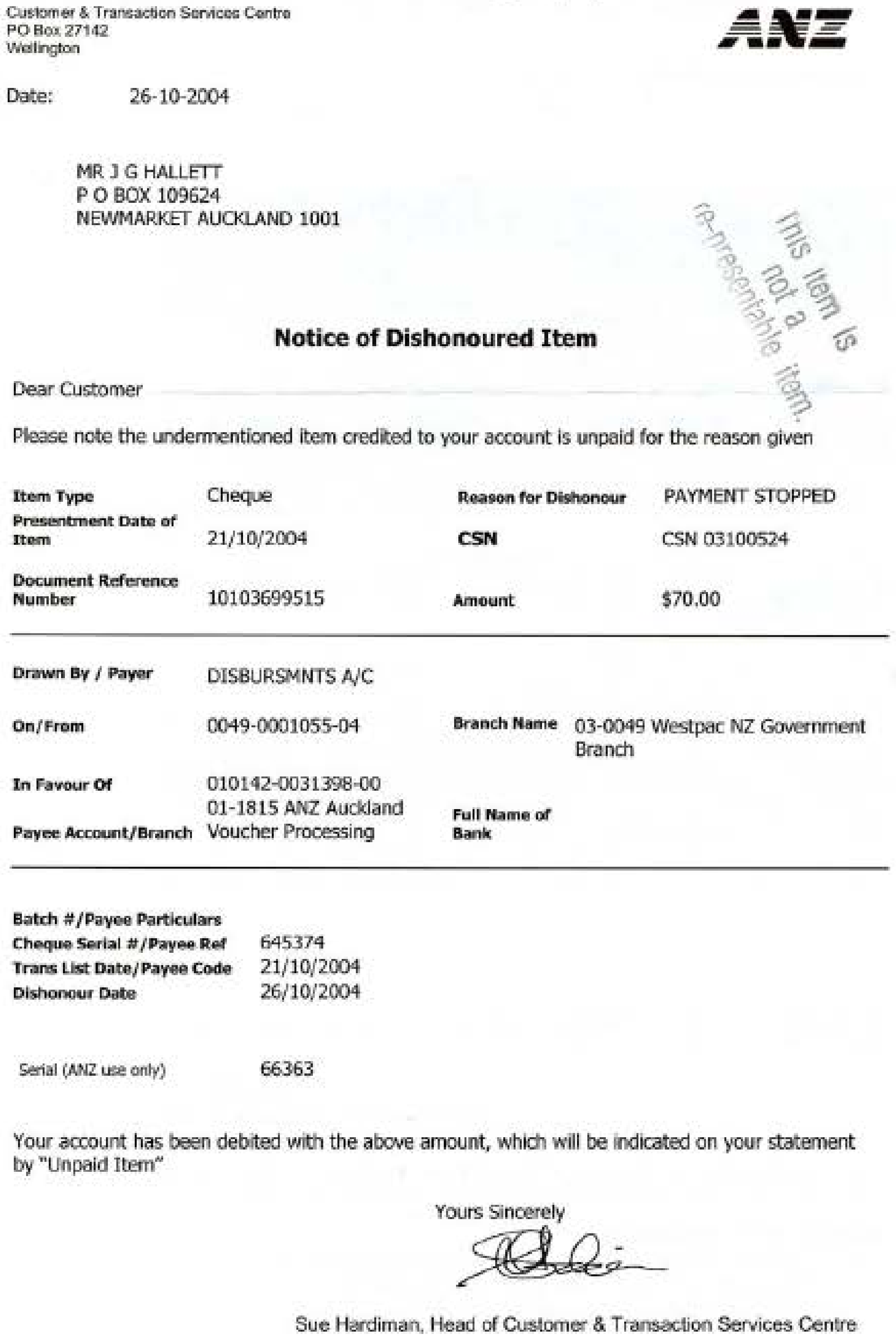

Customer & Transaction Services Centre
PO Box 27142
Wellington

ANZ

Date: 26-10-2004

MR J G HALLETT
P O BOX 109624
NEWMARKET AUCKLAND 1001

This item is not a re-presentable item.

Notice of Dishonoured Item

Dear Customer

Please note the undermentioned item credited to your account is unpaid for the reason given

Item Type	Cheque	**Reason for Dishonour**	PAYMENT STOPPED
Presentment Date of Item	21/10/2004	**CSN**	CSN 03100524
Document Reference Number	10103699515	**Amount**	$70.00

Drawn By / Payer	DISBURSMNTS A/C		
On/From	0049-0001055-04	**Branch Name**	03-0049 Westpac NZ Government Branch
In Favour Of	010142-0031398-00		
Payee Account/Branch	01-1815 ANZ Auckland Voucher Processing	**Full Name of Bank**	

Batch #/Payee Particulars	
Cheque Serial #/Payee Ref	645374
Trans List Date/Payee Code	21/10/2004
Dishonour Date	26/10/2004

Serial (ANZ use only) 66363

Your account has been debited with the above amount, which will be indicated on your statement by "Unpaid Item"

Yours Sincerely

Sue Hardiman, Head of Customer & Transaction Services Centre

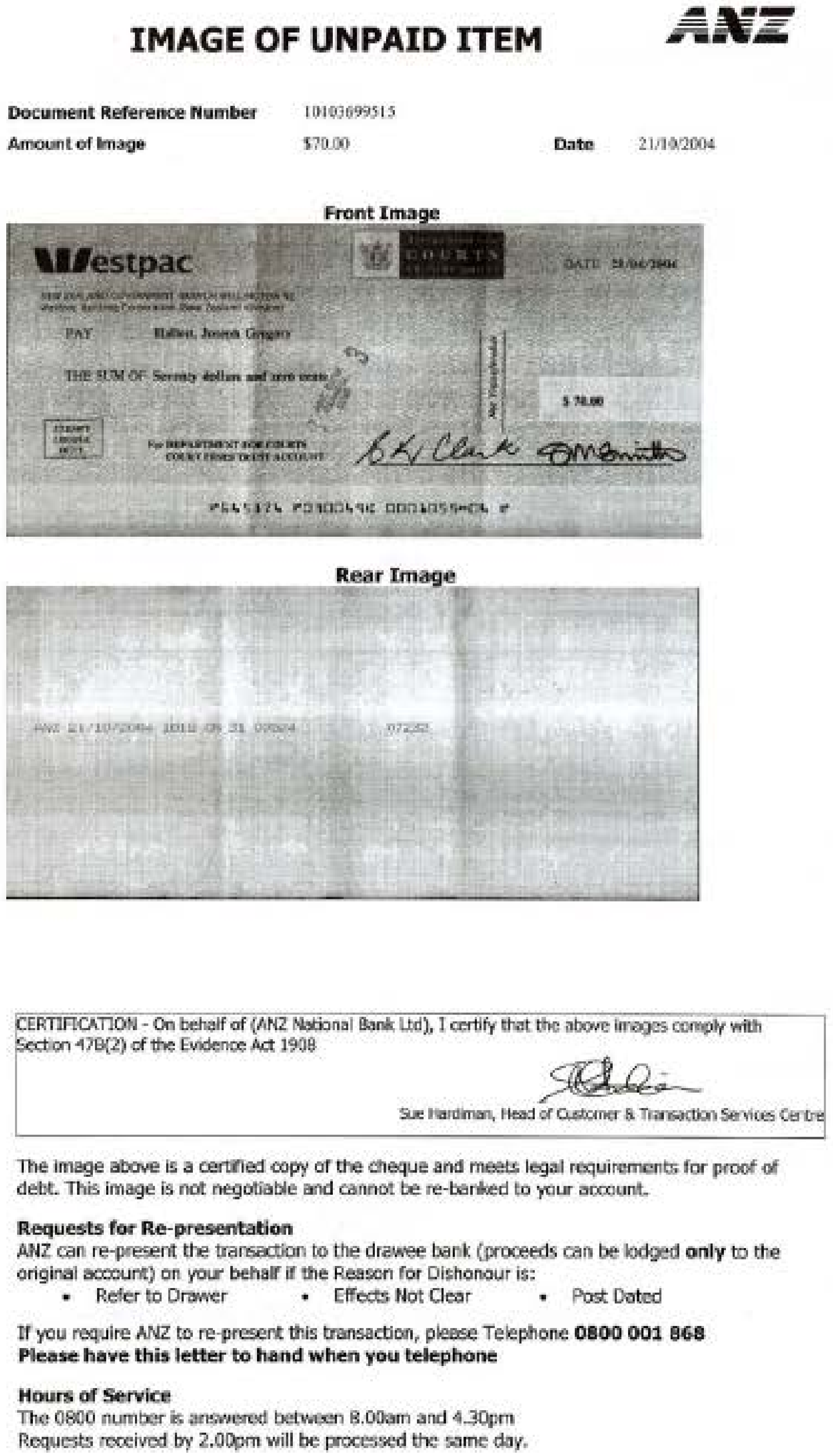

IMAGE OF UNPAID ITEM

ANZ

Document Reference Number	10103699515		
Amount of Image	$70.00	**Date**	21/10/2004

Front Image

Westpac

PAY Hallett, Joseph Gregory

THE SUM OF Seventy dollars and zero cents

$ 70.00

Rear Image

CERTIFICATION - On behalf of (ANZ National Bank Ltd), I certify that the above images comply with Section 47B(2) of the Evidence Act 1908

Sue Hardiman, Head of Customer & Transaction Services Centre

The image above is a certified copy of the cheque and meets legal requirements for proof of debt. This image is not negotiable and cannot be re-banked to your account.

Requests for Re-presentation
ANZ can re-present the transaction to the drawee bank (proceeds can be lodged **only** to the original account) on your behalf if the Reason for Dishonour is:

- Refer to Drawer
- Effects Not Clear
- Post Dated

If you require ANZ to re-present this transaction, please Telephone **0800 001 868**
Please have this letter to hand when you telephone

Hours of Service
The 0800 number is answered between 8.00am and 4.30pm
Requests received by 2.00pm will be processed the same day.

SLEEP
DEEP
I'M A TEXTBOOK TIMEBOMB

DEEP SLEEP

District Court Hearing II

Police withdraw Charge

Driving Charge for MICK P and Intelligence Officer's EYES ONLY[1]

On the afternoon before the District Court hearing, at 2:30 pm on 4 October 2004, my lawyer and former police sergeant rang and said: "I'm not going to represent you tomorrow".

Rather than react, there was a ten second silence. Then he said: "I've had a chat to the head of police in Auckland and the police have decided to withdraw the charge and that would be the end of the matter. Because of Hoyle's Law, you still have to turn up."

This was something to celebrate. Being a homebody, I vacuumed the house. I was suspicious though. The police could change their minds and I would be without a lawyer representing me, so I turned up with the notes left in my other car, but without the preparation.

In the eight months I'd been trying, I had still not seen a declaration of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin's criminal record. Obviously, this case had become too sensitive for the police and they decided to expedite the matter by withdrawing the charges and retaining the twice-convicted police officer in active duty.

It was a win by default, but it stopped the Police force from cleaning up their act. The whole process took 26 months, from the speech in the Cook Islands about police corruption and Helen Clark's KGB training, to the poisoning, the police assault, the trumped-up police charges involving six police cars, the District Court hearing in which I was tried in absentia and notified the following Sunday morning at 9 am by the arresting officer Constable Cassin that there was a warrant out for my arrest, the subsequent District Court hearing, the loss of licence, Matrix Security adding a military tracking device to my car (there was already a standard tracking device on it), the police helicopter checking its status, the Intelligence Officer giving me the history assignment [which became the breakthrough *Hitler Was A British Agent*], the CIB tracking my car with four cars, the appeal, the High Court hearing which threw the District Court decision out, one working hour later, Attorney-General Margaret Wilson announced employers could no longer look back past seven years into the criminal record of employees and stating '*this was law*' even before the second and third parliamentary readings,[2] the two status hearings and the District Court hearing – all resulting in the police withdrawing their charges.

The wheels of the judiciary grind exceedingly slowly and employ as many unnecessary people as possible – to cover for the criminals in their staff, for as long as possible. The results in the Judiciary being an Anti-Patriotic movement – the opposite of what was intended, or is it?

PC is AP. Political Correctness is Anti-Patriotic.

I lost my licence for three months and paid a maximum fine of $180 for turning left where the 'no left turn' sign had been removed.

The police were involved in a contract killing, a poisoning, removing my driver licence, removing a road sign from view, an assault, lying in court and employing a convicted criminal as a police officer. The CIB were involved in trying to take my car off me. The SIS were involved in tracking my car, and Matrix Security was involved in placing the tracking device – all to protect the fact that the police create over 80% of crime and Prime Minister Helen Clark is the highest ranking KGB operative/agent in New Zealand.

---

[1] MICK P: 'Member of the Intelligence Community Knowledge Pool'.

[2] The one working hour later – Attorney-General Margaret Wilson announced this three days later at 8.30 am on Monday morning. She attempted to bypass the second and third Parliamentary hearings, but it didn't become law for another six months – at 11.11 pm on 11 May 2004.

When will they ever learn?

For the 5 October 2004 District Court hearing I was told by my lawyer and former police sergeant not to say anything and to slip out gracefully. When I arrived to court one of the highest-ranking MICK Ps was there to guide me. I handed him a piece of paper that had what I wanted to say written on it.

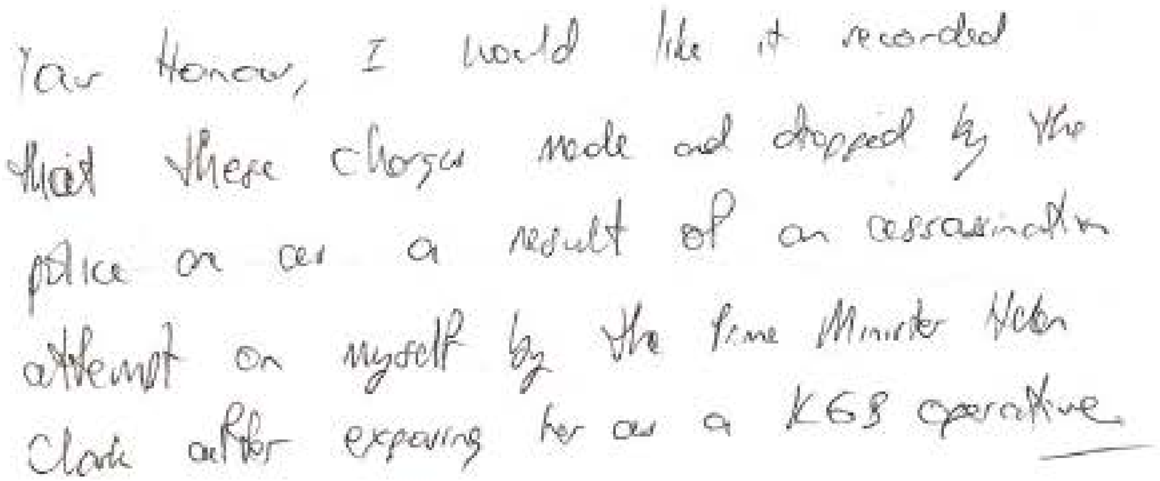

Your Honour, I would like it recorded
that these charges made and dropped by the
police are as a result of an assassination
attempt on myself by the Prime Minister Helen
Clark after exposing her as a KGB operative

"Your Honour, I would like it recorded that these charges
made and dropped by the police are as a result of an assassination attempt
on myself by the Prime Minister after exposing her as a KGB operative."

I hadn't written the rest of my statement, but I was going to say
"after a speech I gave at Hopsing's Restaurant in the Cook Islands
on the 21st of August 2002".

I didn't get a chance to read it out as the police folded . . . The intention remains.

MICK P read it and handed it back to me and said: "A lot of work had gone on in the background to have this case thrown out. Don't say anything."

While waiting outside the courtroom, the court police officer asked me who I was and thn explained: "The charges will be dropped as the two witnesses could not be contacted", and after questioning: "The police can not bring driving charges again after a six month delay."

One of the witnesses was apparently overseas and Constable Mead had left the police force and was also apparently overseas. At the time I was charged, the experienced Constable Cassin (the twice-convicted criminal) was training the inexperienced Constable Mead (two months experience) in crime creation. Obviously he pushed too hard and she quit the police force, realising perhaps that it was a crime creation movement, rather than a law enforcement agency.

The entire Court hearing and all delays were caused by the Police, the Privacy Commission, and the Ombudsman's refusal to place in writing the criminal convictions of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin.

Judge Thorburn then said the police had dropped all charges. I demanded copies of this and received a "CERTIFIED TRUE COPY" from the Deputy Registrar.

There are six levels of story here . . .

The first is the Rotary speech.

The second is Helen Clark's assassination attempt on 23 August 2002.

The third is the police saying the witnesses were unavailable and the hearing was out of time.

The fourth was the work by my lawyer and the Mick Ps in the background.

The fifth was what MICK P told me – another possible reality to the situation. "Constable Cassin was probably working undercover in the drug squad at the time and the criminal convictions would expose him." This was interesting, but not true as Cassin's first charge for assault was when he was 17. He was prone to violence. The police consider this a talent and an asset and recruited him accordingly. I believe this was a cover story via the police, so that they could save face and I would back off. MICK P was playing ball. He sometimes does.

The sixth story is what actually happened. It is all of the above. The truth of the matter still remains and the assassination attempts have continued. The first was on 2 April 2002. The second was on 23 August 2002 (this one) and a third was being set up 14–22 May 2004.There were more to come. At this point I was sick of the situation and sick of paying lawyers, so I went up and spoke to my would-be assassin who turned out to be an Israeli Tank Commander.

On 22 May 204, as I helped the Israeli Tank Commander move his vehicle – it was stuck in the mud outside my abode on Waiheke Island – I told him: "I know the Mossad killed Michael King under instructions from Sian Elias, who took the contract off Helen Clark. You guys poisoned the back of his steering wheel with epicacuana. You did the same thing with me [this second attempt]."

He looked at me as though assessing me, looked to the side and down, then look me straight in the eye, as Intelligence Agents do and said: "Why the fuck do you get caught up in this sort of shit".

I replied: "Successive events have pushed me into it and now it's how I get my kicks. Someone's got to do it." I looked at the side of his white van, it said 'Aaron'. So his name was Yaron.

After things calmed down, I asked Yaron for the Arabic translation of 'Island', 'Labrador', and 'Pirate'.

Yaron said: "Island – 'ie', pronounced 'e'; Labrador – the same, Labrador; Pirate – pronounced 'perátée."

Arabic is really hard to translate. It's hard to get a translator here and what he gave me was a rare dialect. I was asking him because the KGB knew this and used to nickname their agent's in Arabic. Helen Clark is the KGB agent 'ie', pronounced 'e'. Island refers to the Island of Lesbos and New Zealand being two main islands.

I later found out that 'Satti' is also Arabic for Pirate. 'Pirate' is shortened to 'Pye' or 'Pie'. Both words can be combined as in 'Pie' and 'SattIE' as code for Helen Clark and Margaret Wilson.

He then looked at me with his nose curled up and treated me suspiciously – as an equal. I asked him what he was doing here (New Zealand) and he said: "I'm installing telecommunication systems in offices", and then jokingly said: "and bugging those offices – Na."

It seems I had got under his skin.

He then said: "The Mossad use New Zealand as a safe retreat – as a holiday home, especially Waiheke. I can't get residency despite having a clean record and no involvement with the Mossad . . . I was a tank commander. My favourite tank was a modified Centurion tank with an enlarged turret. When I was given coordinates to fire, these coordinates had to come from a central location. When they didn't come from this particular central location, they were under suspicion.

"We'd be given coordinates to fire from Israel over a hill to Palestine. These instructions came at night and not from the central location, so I checked the coordinates and it was a refugee camp in Palestine. That's why I left."

One truck came and it wasn't big enough, so a really big truck came to lift his van out. After about an hour and a half, we managed to move the Israeli Tank Commander's vehicle and I was free to live.

I moved out six weeks later. I published a bit of this story in *Hitler Was A British Agent* September 2005 with a bigger and better second edition in October 2006. This reached foreign shores at the end of October and two months later the wee house I was staying in burnt down.

These are the sort of people Helen Clark is using for her assassinations, including those on her known friends and life-long supporters. They are experienced contract killers in denial.

An Israeli Tank Commander is a Mossad asset for life, whether retired or otherwise.

Helen Clark had created the 'Prime Minister's Award' especially to give away money to her literary friends that backed and did not challenge her political ideology or her globalisation of New Zealand for others – $60,000 each.

Michael King was amongst three of the primary recipients for the Award. When charges were about to be laid on Michael it exposed Helen's husband's links to child sex abuse and threatened to have her removed as Prime Minister, so Helen gave Michael the award as a form of cover, and when that wasn't enough, had him killed.

Some of the pertinent events are as follows:

In January 2002 I leaked out that I had developed a method of reconstructing the subconscious, and thus, unwittingly ordered the deconstruction equipment from Russia. The President of the St. Petersburg Scientists Club turned up in New Zealand, requested to see me, showed me his credentials, stayed with me for a month, briefed me on gravity, anti-gravity, and Krasnojarsk (the underground city hidden behind the town of Krasnojarski) then used his equipment, which had been changed from 'deconstruction' to 'reconstruction', and trained me into two future roles, both of my choosing. He agreed to train me into these roles after I had understood the science he was giving me, and was able to contribute to it.

On 20 July 2002 I had my subconscious reconstructed as the interim Prime Minister and two-term Governor-General. The next day . . .

On 21 July 2002 I started to meet the MICK P family.

On 21 August 2002 (NZ Time 22 August 2002) I gave a speech in the Cook Islands on Helen Clark's KGB training. This was my seventh speech at Rotary and 12 hours later . . .

On 23 August 2002 at 8 am I was poisoned with epicacuana, but it didn't kill me so 12 hours later . . .

On 23 August 2002 at 8 pm the police assaulted me and charged me with dangerous driving.

On 13 January 2004 Sir Peter Elworthy died. This was David Elworthy's brother who had married Roslyn King – Michael King's ex-wife. She was stepmother to my girlfriend in 1981. Later I was best man at her wedding. (Hey it's New Zealand okay.)

On 3 February 2004 we got word from the Heads of Police in Wellington: "We strongly suspect Helen Clark is planning a "Night of the Long Knives". I was asked to contribute.

On 4 February 2004 Police and Intelligence meet on the Northshore.

In February 2004 an Israeli bomb was planted on the fuel tank of Auckland Hospital. The Israelis are leaving bomb devices all over Auckland. The technology left the police baffled. The Israeli's did the bombing in Spain and with the New Zealand Labour government, were creating the need for an order of LAVs, Light Armoured Vehicles – a real doosie.

On 5 March 2004 a small bomb tossed by an early 20s Israeli and went off at the corner of Queen and Custom's Street in the middle of Auckland's downtown on Friday 5 March 2004 at 9:55 pm. It was a small pipe bomb, just a loud noise and smoke to test the public's reaction. Since there was only two other people around within throwing distance, me and the person I was with, plus a few others crossing from the far corners of the intersection, there was little reaction. An incredibly loud noise in a slight drizzle with a scar still on the pavement, by the park bench.

On 29 March 2004 Michael King and his crippled wife Maria Jungowska were murdered using epicacuana and an impact activated explosive. Both Sir Peter Elworthy (through his brother David Elworthy) and Michael King knew of Helen Clark's sexuality from their time doing primal scream with Bert Potter in Wellington in 1974. Both had close links with Bert Potter's sexually experimental Centrepoint in Auckland. Sir Peter Elworthy through his neices and former sister-in-law, Jenny Elworthy and Michael King through his lunchtime visits.

Bert Potter, as it turns out, was a government agent, and Helen Clark was a former Tavistock St Petersburg prostitute, turned lesbian, under a cover marriage to a homosexual child sex abuser.

Centrepoint was satellite Tavistock. The programmes run there ended up being in the wider community.

Bert Potter is still alive. I used to call him "Plastic Bertrand". He used to have to tell me that he was running the place and I had to respect him. Paedophiles always demand respect. They never deserve it. The word "Respectable" means 'Paedophile' or 'Paedophile Minder'.

After the District Court case on 5 October 2004, I bumped into QC Peter Williams in the lobby. He was working on a case for some Chinese on the floor above. I had been doing some architecture work for him on four relocatable houses on Surrey Crescent, near the Bullock Track. He said his case was over one relocatable house and was going to take two weeks. We looked at each other and laughed. There was no way we were going to let ourselves get into that sort of trouble.

Over coffee Peter Williams asked how the case went and I said it had been thrown out, and thanks for any behind the scenes help. There was no reaction.

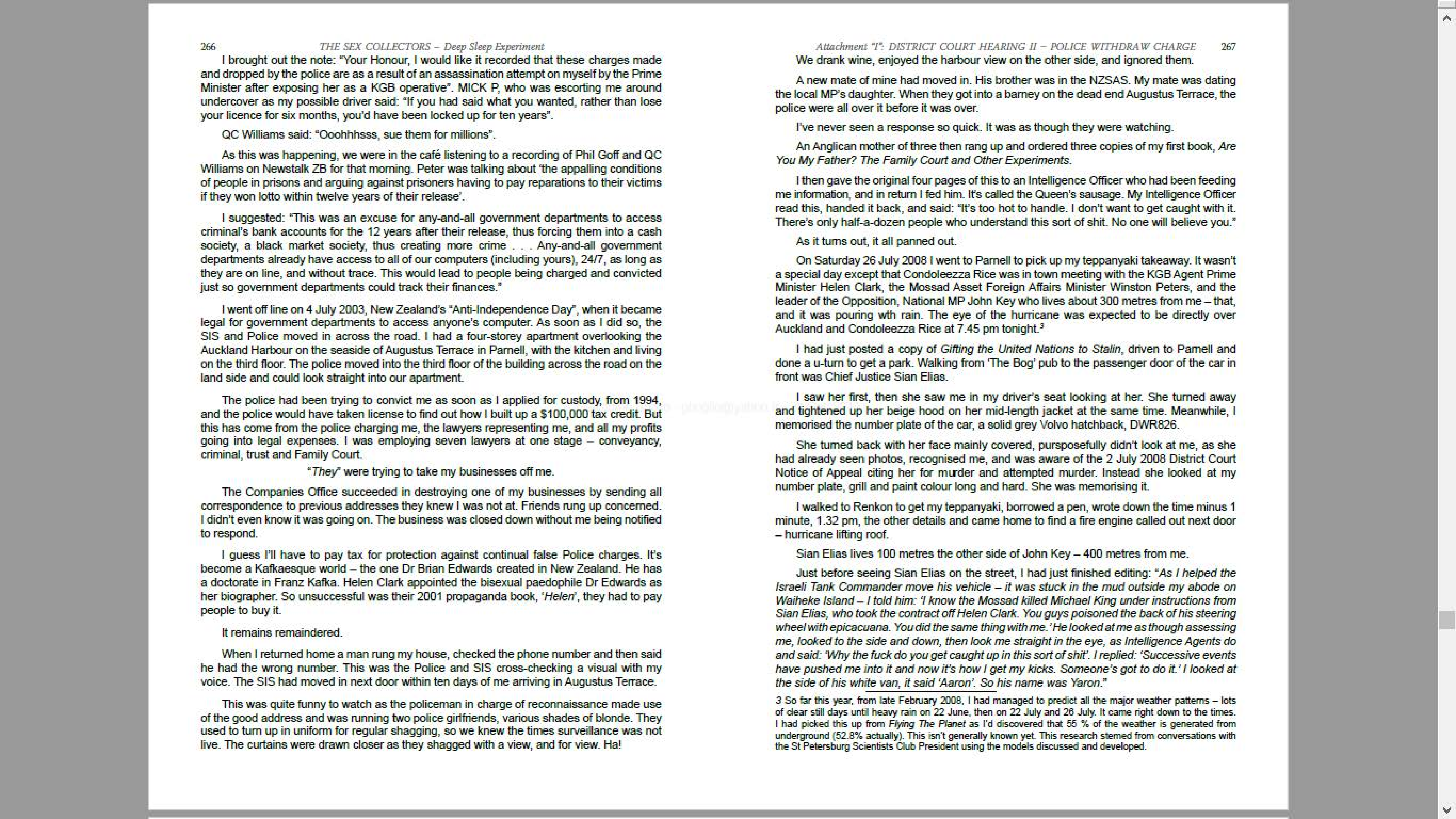

I brought out the note: "Your Honour, I would like it recorded that these charges made and dropped by the police are as a result of an assassination attempt on myself by the Prime Minister after exposing her as a KGB operative". MICK P, who was escorting me around undercover as my possible driver said: "If you had said what you wanted, rather than lose your licence for six months, you'd have been locked up for ten years".

QC Williams said: "Ooohhhsss, sue them for millions".

As this was happening, we were in the café listening to a recording of Phil Goff and QC Williams on Newstalk ZB for that morning. Peter was talking about 'the appalling conditions of people in prisons and arguing against prisoners having to pay reparations to their victims if they won lotto within twelve years of their release'.

I suggested: "This was an excuse for any-and-all government departments to access criminal's bank accounts for the 12 years after their release, thus forcing them into a cash society, a black market society, thus creating more crime . . . Any-and-all government departments already have access to all of our computers (including yours), 24/7, as long as they are on line, and without trace. This would lead to people being charged and convicted just so government departments could track their finances."

I went off line on 4 July 2003, New Zealand's "Anti-Independence Day", when it became legal for government departments to access anyone's computer. As soon as I did so, the SIS and Police moved in across the road. I had a four-storey apartment overlooking the Auckland Harbour on the seaside of Augustus Terrace in Parnell, with the kitchen and living on the third floor. The police moved into the third floor of the building across the road on the land side and could look straight into our apartment.

The police had been trying to convict me as soon as I applied for custody, from 1994, and the police would have taken license to find out how I built up a $100,000 tax credit. But this has come from the police charging me, the lawyers representing me, and all my profits going into legal expenses. I was employing seven lawyers at one stage – conveyancy, criminal, trust and Family Court.

"*They*" were trying to take my businesses off me.

The Companies Office succeeded in destroying one of my businesses by sending all correspondence to previous addresses they knew I was not at. Friends rung up concerned. I didn't even know it was going on. The business was closed down without me being notified to respond.

I guess I'll have to pay tax for protection against continual false Police charges. It's become a Kafkaesque world – the one Dr Brian Edwards created in New Zealand. He has a doctorate in Franz Kafka. Helen Clark appointed the bisexual paedophile Dr Edwards as her biographer. So unsuccessful was their 2001 propaganda book, '*Helen*', they had to pay people to buy it.

It remains remaindered.

When I returned home a man rung my house, checked the phone number and then said he had the wrong number. This was the Police and SIS cross-checking a visual with my voice. The SIS had moved in next door within ten days of me arriving in Augustus Terrace.

This was quite funny to watch as the policeman in charge of reconnaissance made use of the good address and was running two police girlfriends, various shades of blonde. They used to turn up in uniform for regular shagging, so we knew the times surveillance was not live. The curtains were drawn closer as they shagged with a view, and for view. Ha!

We drank wine, enjoyed the harbour view on the other side, and ignored them.

A new mate of mine had moved in. His brother was in the NZSAS. My mate was dating the local MP's daughter. When they got into a barney on the dead end Augustus Terrace, the police were all over it before it was over.

I've never seen a response so quick. It was as though they were watching.

An Anglican mother of three then rang up and ordered three copies of my first book, *Are You My Father? The Family Court and Other Experiments*.

I then gave the original four pages of this to an Intelligence Officer who had been feeding me information, and in return I fed him. It's called the Queen's sausage. My Intelligence Officer read this, handed it back, and said: "It's too hot to handle. I don't want to get caught with it. There's only half-a-dozen people who understand this sort of shit. No one will believe you."

As it turns out, it all panned out.

On Saturday 26 July 2008 I went to Parnell to pick up my teppanyaki takeaway. It wasn't a special day except that Condoleezza Rice was in town meeting with the KGB Agent Prime Minister Helen Clark, the Mossad Asset Foreign Affairs Minister Winston Peters, and the leader of the Opposition, National MP John Key who lives about 300 metres from me – that, and it was pouring wth rain. The eye of the hurricane was expected to be directly over Auckland and Condoleezza Rice at 7.45 pm tonight.[3]

I had just posted a copy of *Gifting the United Nations to Stalin*, driven to Parnell and done a u-turn to get a park. Walking from 'The Bog' pub to the passenger door of the car in front was Chief Justice Sian Elias.

I saw her first, then she saw me in my driver's seat looking at her. She turned away and tightened up her beige hood on her mid-length jacket at the same time. Meanwhile, I memorised the number plate of the car, a solid grey Volvo hatchback, DWR826.

She turned back with her face mainly covered, purposefully didn't look at me, as she had already seen photos, recognised me, and was aware of the 2 July 2008 District Court Notice of Appeal citing her for murder and attempted murder. Instead she looked at my number plate, grill and paint colour long and hard. She was memorising it.

I walked to Renkon to get my teppanyaki, borrowed a pen, wrote down the time minus 1 minute, 1.32 pm, the other details and came home to find a fire engine called out next door – hurricane lifting roof.

Sian Elias lives 100 metres the other side of John Key – 400 metres from me.

Just before seeing Sian Elias on the street, I had just finished editing: "*As I helped the Israeli Tank Commander move his vehicle – it was stuck in the mud outside my abode on Waiheke Island – I told him: 'I know the Mossad killed Michael King under instructions from Sian Elias, who took the contract off Helen Clark. You guys poisoned the back of his steering wheel with epicacuana. You did the same thing with me.' He looked at me as though assessing me, looked to the side and down, then look me straight in the eye, as Intelligence Agents do and said: 'Why the fuck do you get caught up in this sort of shit'. I replied: 'Successive events have pushed me into it and now it's how I get my kicks. Someone's got to do it.' I looked at the side of his white van, it said 'Aaron'. So his name was Yaron.*"

---

[3] So far this year, from late February 2008, I had managed to predict all the major weather patterns – lots of clear still days until heavy rain on 22 June, then on 22 July and 26 July. It came right down to the times. I had picked this up from *Flying The Planet* as I'd discovered that 55 % of the weather is generated from underground (52.8% actually). This isn't generally known yet. This research stemed from conversations with the St Petersburg Scientists Club President using the models discussed and developed.

When I was walking back to my car, Sian Elias had left, and I thought, 'Why don't I just place her under citizen's arrest next time I see her in a public place' . . . Well, here's a reason. Since Elias was first exposed as a contract killer (of Michael King) in January 2007, she has employed a body double – another with a probiscus for a snoz, and a face that makes a clown look serious.

Elias
Chief Justice

Sian Elias with fellow murderer Anand Satyanand.

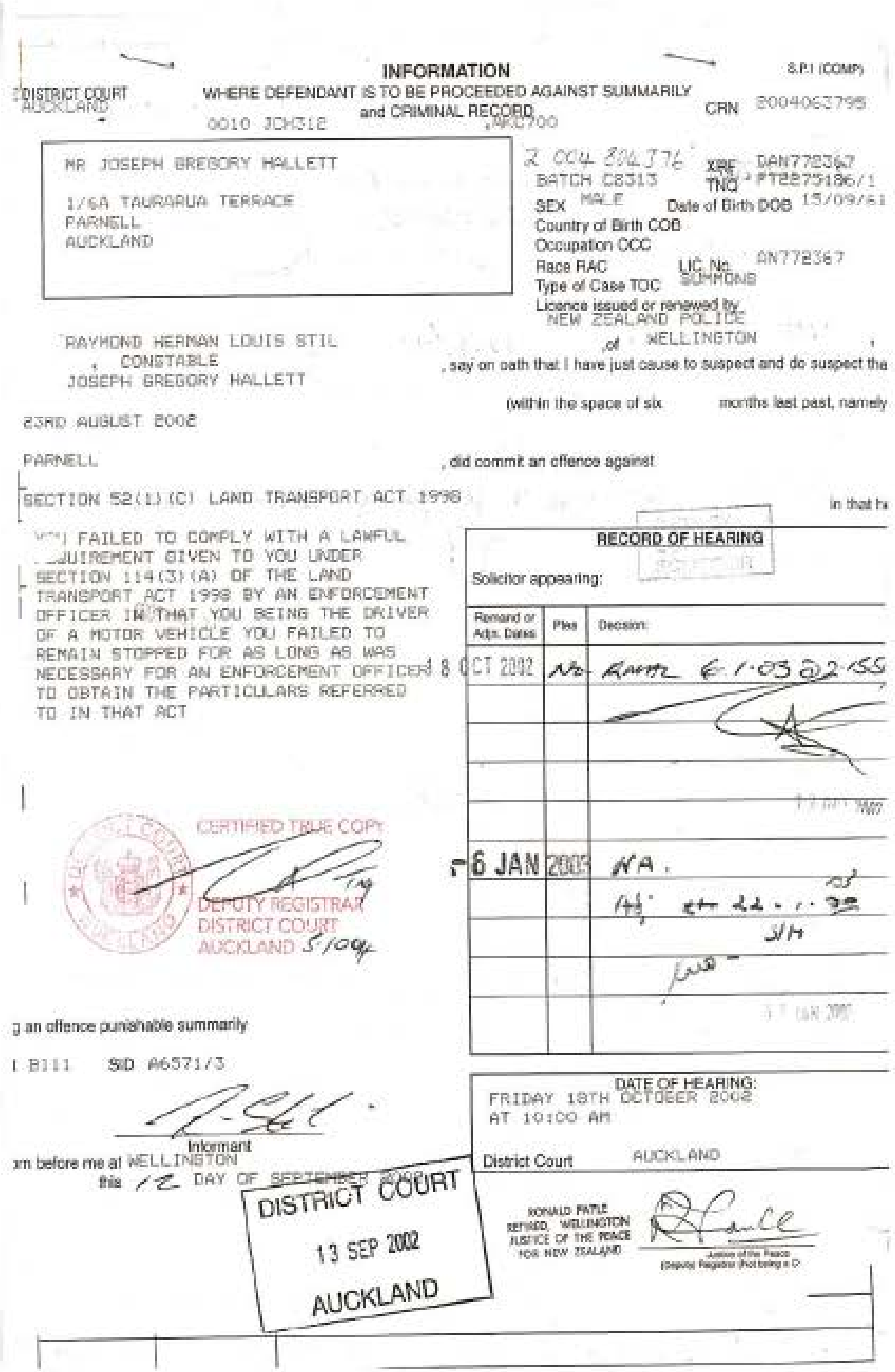

S.P.I (COMP)

INFORMATION
WHERE DEFENDANT IS TO BE PROCEEDED AGAINST SUMMARILY
and CRIMINAL RECORD

DISTRICT COURT AUCKLAND

0010 JCH312 ,AKC700

CRN 2004063795

MR JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT

1/6A TAURARUA TERRACE
PARNELL
AUCKLAND

2 004 804 376
BATCH C8313
XRF DAN772367
TNQ PT2275186/1
SEX MALE
Date of Birth DOB 15/09/61
Country of Birth COB
Occupation OCC
Race RAC
LIC No. AN772367
Type of Case TOC SUMMONS
Licence issued or renewed by NEW ZEALAND POLICE

RAYMOND HERMAN LOUIS STIL , CONSTABLE ,of WELLINGTON , say on oath that I have just cause to suspect and do suspect tha JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT (within the space of six months last past, namely 23RD AUGUST 2002

PARNELL , did commit an offence against

SECTION 52(1)(C) LAND TRANSPORT ACT 1998 in that h

YOU FAILED TO COMPLY WITH A LAWFUL REQUIREMENT GIVEN TO YOU UNDER SECTION 114(3)(A) OF THE LAND TRANSPORT ACT 1998 BY AN ENFORCEMENT OFFICER IN THAT YOU BEING THE DRIVER OF A MOTOR VEHICLE YOU FAILED TO REMAIN STOPPED FOR AS LONG AS WAS NECESSARY FOR AN ENFORCEMENT OFFICER TO OBTAIN THE PARTICULARS REFERRED TO IN THAT ACT

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY
DEPUTY REGISTRAR
DISTRICT COURT
AUCKLAND 5/10/04

g an offence punishable summarily

I B111 SID A6571/3

Informant

orn before me at WELLINGTON
this 12 DAY OF SEPTEMBER 2002

DISTRICT COURT
13 SEP 2002
AUCKLAND

RECORD OF HEARING

Solicitor appearing:

Remand or Adjs. Dates	Plea	Decision:
18 OCT 2002	No	Remit 6·1·03 @ 2·15S
6 JAN 2003		NA.
		Adj ext 22·1·03 S/H

DATE OF HEARING:
FRIDAY 18TH OCTOBER 2002
AT 10:00 AM

District Court AUCKLAND

RONALD PATLE
RETIRED, WELLINGTON
JUSTICE OF THE PEACE
FOR NEW ZEALAND

Justice of the Peace
(Deputy) Registrar (Not being a C

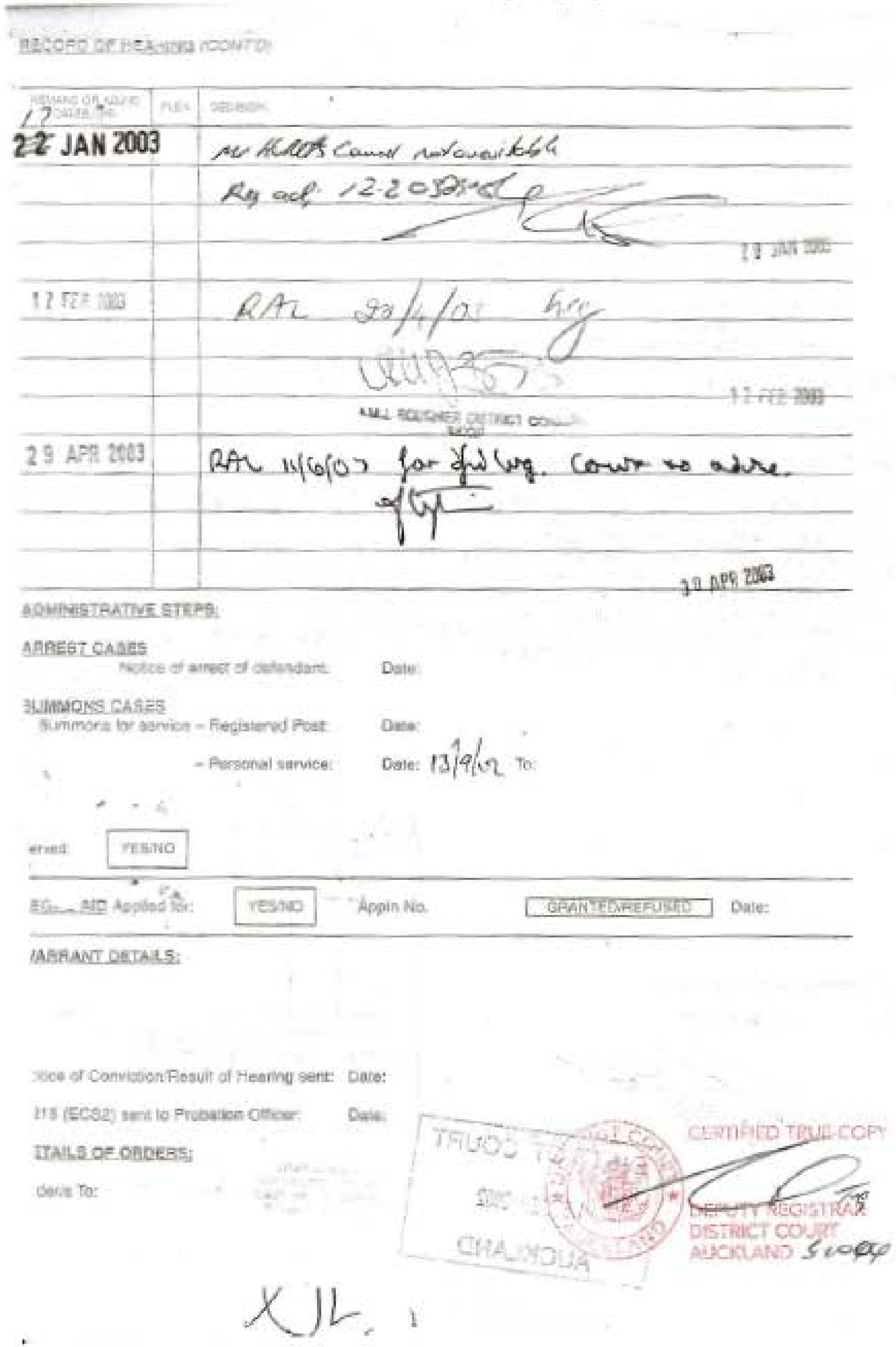

RECORD OF HEARING (CONT'D)

REMAND OR ADJ'D DATE	PLEA	DECISION
17 ~~22~~ JAN 2003		Mr Hallett Counsel not available Rem adj 12-2-03 29 JAN 2003
12 FEB 2003		RAL 29/4/03 hrg 12 FEB 2003
29 APR 2003		RAL 11/6/03 for fxd hrg. Court to advise of time. 30 APR 2003

ADMINISTRATIVE STEPS:

ARREST CASES
Notice of arrest of defendant: Date:

SUMMONS CASES
Summons for service – Registered Post: Date:
– Personal service: Date: 13/9/02 To:

Served: YES/NO

LEGAL AID Applied for: YES/NO Appln No. GRANTED/REFUSED Date:

WARRANT DETAILS:

Notice of Conviction/Result of Hearing sent: Date:

215 (ECS2) sent to Probation Officer: Date:

DETAILS OF ORDERS:

Orders To:

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY
DEPUTY REGISTRAR
DISTRICT COURT
AUCKLAND 5/10/04

XJL

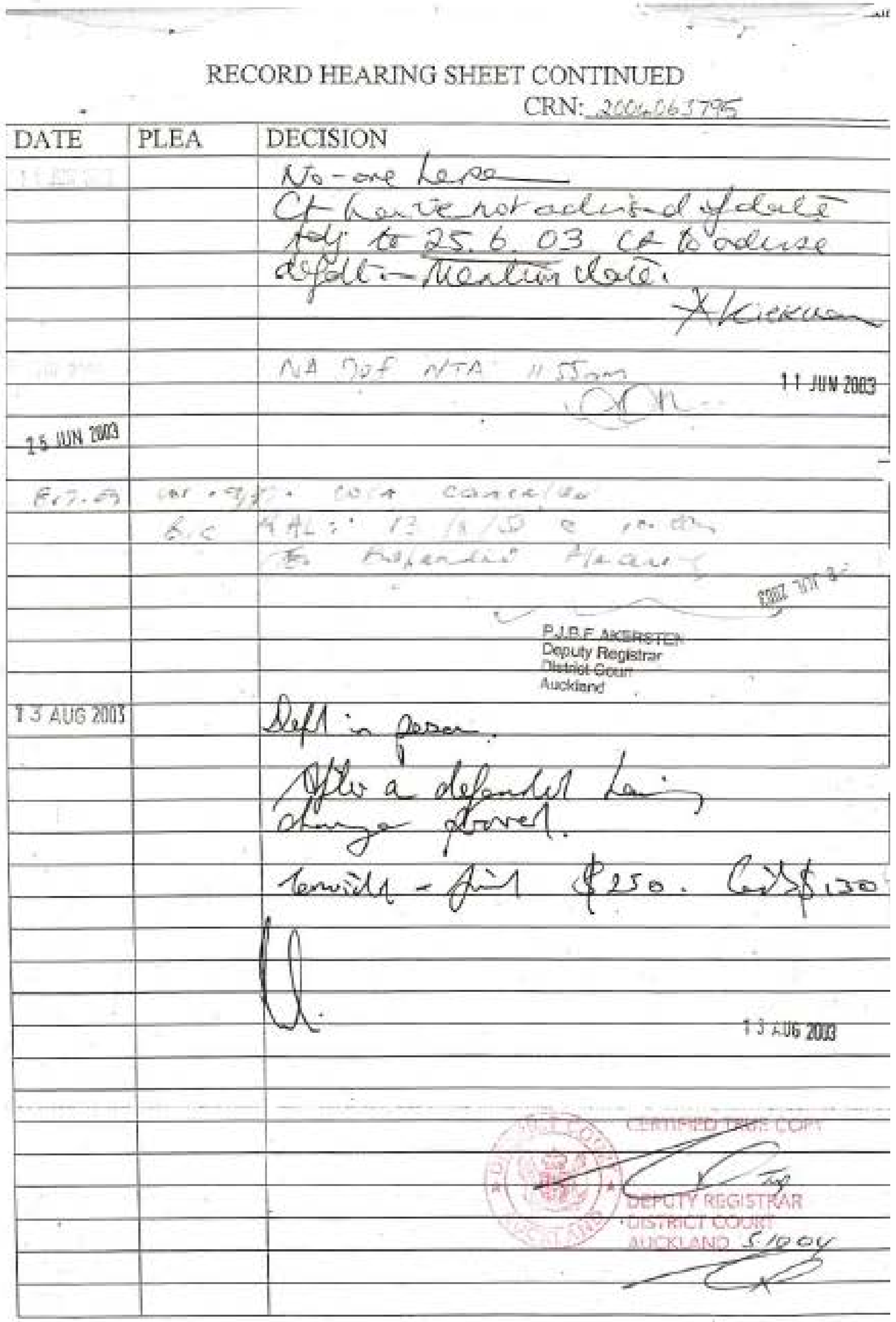

RECORD HEARING SHEET CONTINUED

CRN: 2004063795

DATE	PLEA	DECISION
[illegible]		No-one here Ct have not advised of date Adj to 25.6.03 Ct to advise defdt – Mention date.
		NA Def NTA 11.55am 11 JUN 2003
25 JUN 2003		
8.7.03		[illegible] court cancelled b/c RAL 13/8/03 @ [illegible] for Defended Hearing P.J.B.F. AKERSTEN Deputy Registrar District Court Auckland
13 AUG 2003		Deft in person. After a defended hearing charge proved. Convicted – fined $250. Costs $130 13 AUG 2003

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY
DEPUTY REGISTRAR
DISTRICT COURT
AUCKLAND 5/10/04

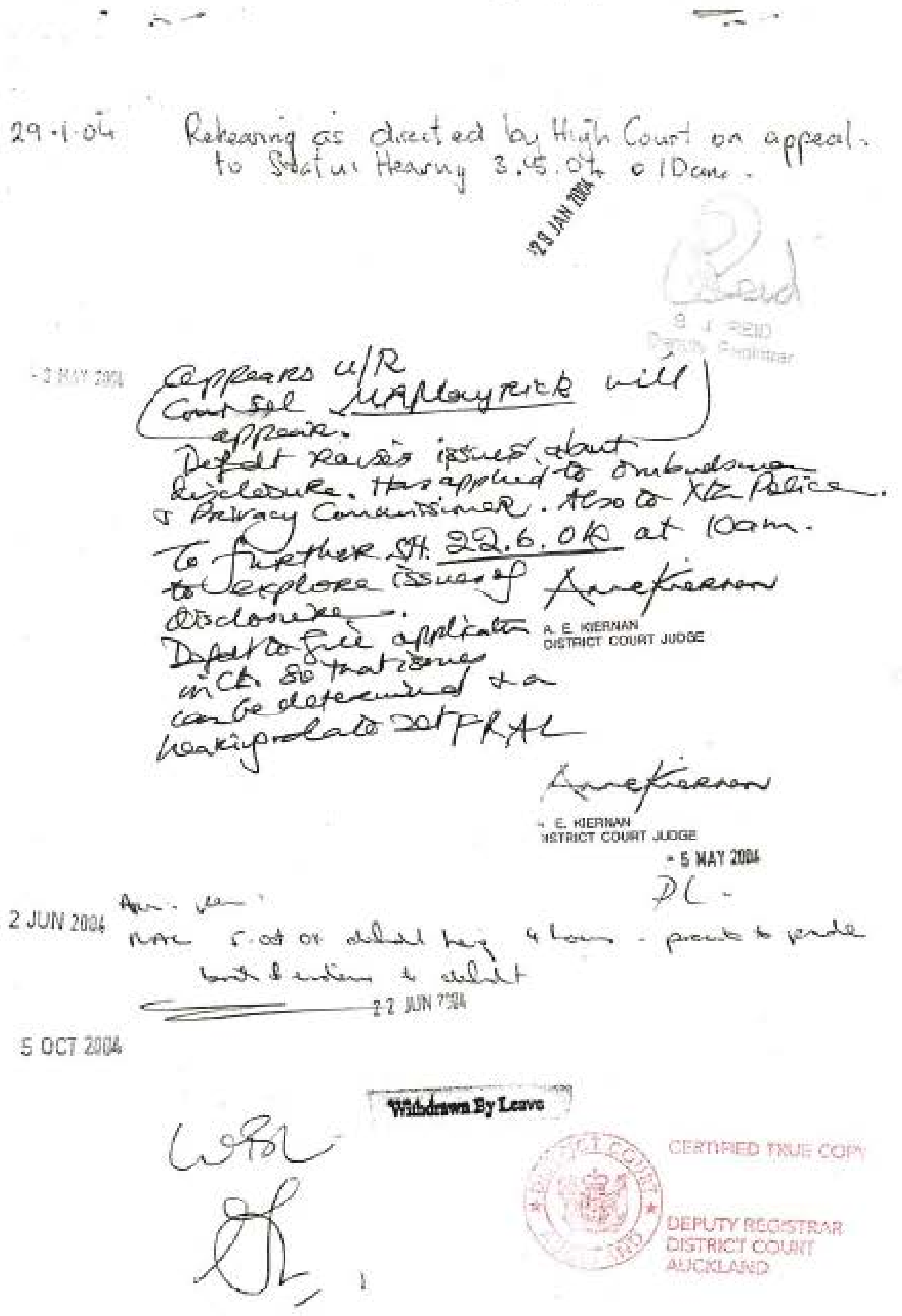

29-1-04 Rehearing as directed by High Court on appeal. to Status Hearing 3.5.04 @ 10am.

29 JAN 2004

S J REID
Deputy Registrar

- 3 MAY 2004 Appears u/R Counsel Mr Mayrick will appear. Deft raises issues about disclosure. Has applied to Ombudsman & Privacy Commissioner. Also to NZ Police. To further SH. 22.6.04 at 10am. to explore issues of disclosure. Deft to file application in Ct so that issues can be determined & a [illegible]

Anne Kiernan
A. E. KIERNAN
DISTRICT COURT JUDGE

Anne Kiernan
A. E. KIERNAN
DISTRICT COURT JUDGE

- 5 MAY 2004

2 JUN 2004 [illegible]

22 JUN 2004

5 OCT 2004

Withdrawn By Leave

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY
DEPUTY REGISTRAR
DISTRICT COURT
AUCKLAND

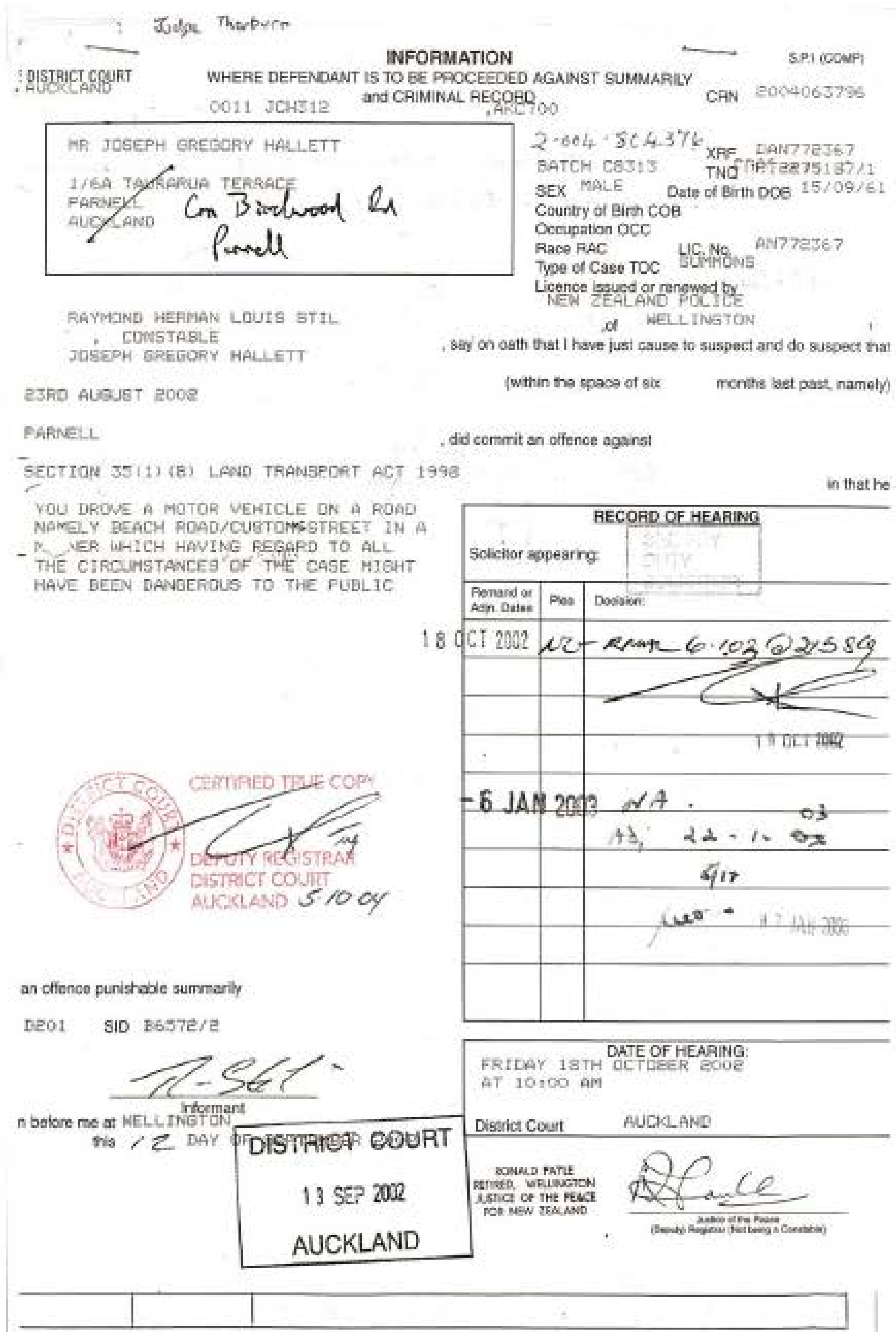

Judge Thorburn

INFORMATION
WHERE DEFENDANT IS TO BE PROCEEDED AGAINST SUMMARILY
and CRIMINAL RECORD

S.P.1 (COMP)

DISTRICT COURT
AUCKLAND

0011 JCH312 ,AKC700

CRN 2004063796

MR JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
~~1/6A TAURARUA TERRACE~~
~~PARNELL~~
~~AUCKLAND~~
Cnr Birdwood Rd
Parnell

2-004-304376
BATCH C8313
XRF DAN772367
TNQ CRFT2275187/1
SEX MALE
Date of Birth DOB 15/09/61
Country of Birth COB
Occupation OCC
Race RAC
LIC. No. AN772367
Type of Case TOC SUMMONS
Licence issued or renewed by NEW ZEALAND POLICE

RAYMOND HERMAN LOUIS STIL
, CONSTABLE ,of WELLINGTON
, say on oath that I have just cause to suspect and do suspect that
JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT
(within the space of six months last past, namely)
23RD AUGUST 2002
PARNELL
, did commit an offence against
SECTION 35(1)(B) LAND TRANSPORT ACT 1998
in that he
YOU DROVE A MOTOR VEHICLE ON A ROAD NAMELY BEACH ROAD/CUSTOMS STREET IN A MANNER WHICH HAVING REGARD TO ALL THE CIRCUMSTANCES OF THE CASE MIGHT HAVE BEEN DANGEROUS TO THE PUBLIC

RECORD OF HEARING

Solicitor appearing:

Remand or Adjn. Dates	Plea	Decision:
18 OCT 2002	NT	Rem 6.1.03 @ 2.15 SG
		18 OCT 2002
- 6 JAN 2003	NA.	Adj 22-1-03 9/17
		17 JAN 2003

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY
DEPUTY REGISTRAR
DISTRICT COURT
AUCKLAND 5.10.04

an offence punishable summarily

D201 SID B6572/2

R. Stil
Informant

n before me at WELLINGTON
this 12 DAY OF SEPTEMBER

DISTRICT COURT
13 SEP 2002
AUCKLAND

DATE OF HEARING:
FRIDAY 18TH OCTOBER 2002
AT 10:00 AM

District Court AUCKLAND

RONALD PATLE
RETIRED, WELLINGTON
JUSTICE OF THE PEACE
FOR NEW ZEALAND

R. Patle
Justice of the Peace
(Deputy) Registrar (Not being a Constable)

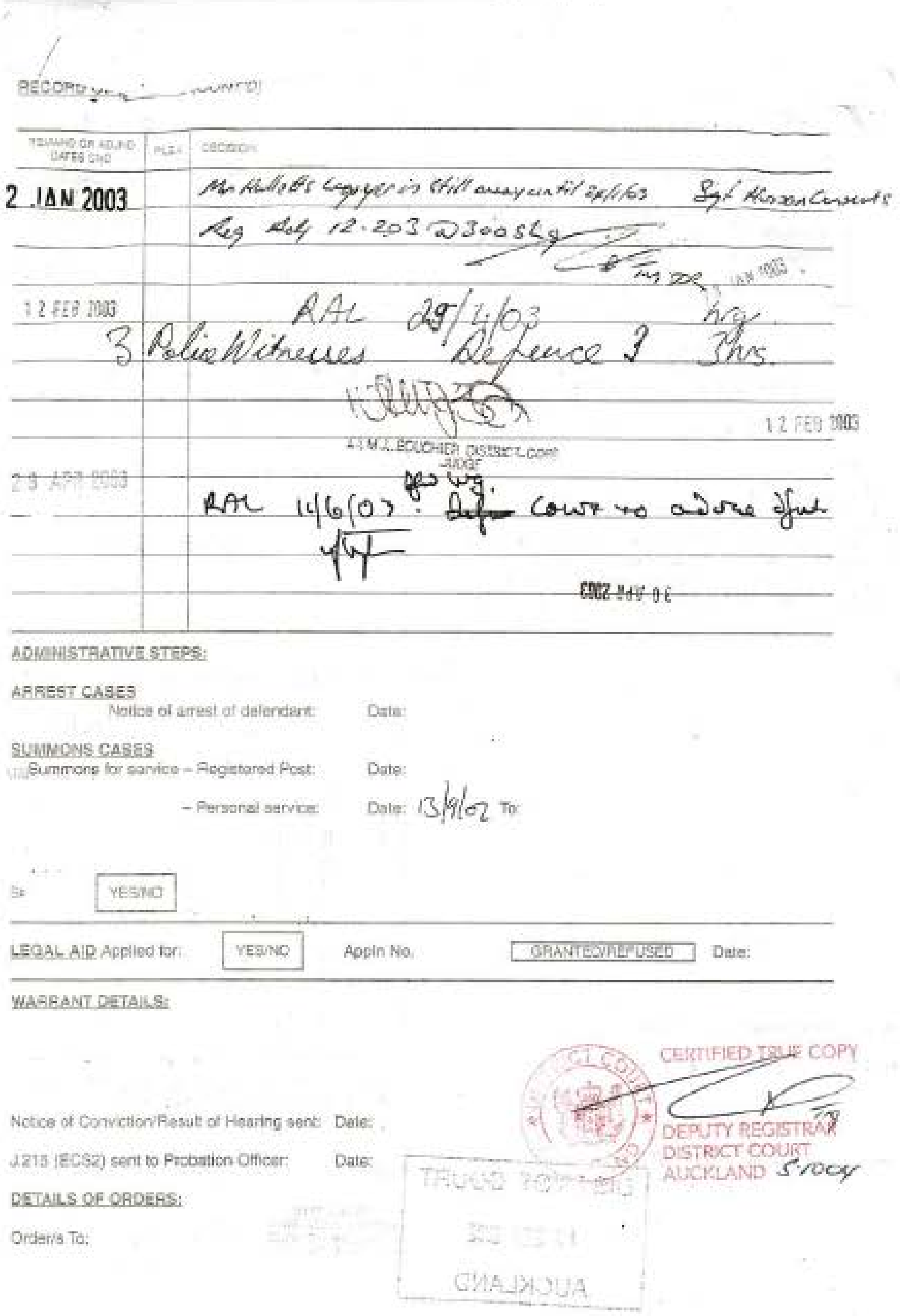

RECORD ... CONT'D

HEARING OR ADJ'D DATES END	PLEA	DECISION
2 JAN 2003		Mr Hallett's lawyer is still away until 28/1/03 Sgt Hosea Consents Adj 12.2.03 @ 300 Lg JAN 2003
12 FEB 2003		RAL 29/4/03 Hrg. 3 Police Witnesses Defence 3 3hrs. A M J BOUCHER DISTRICT COURT JUDGE 12 FEB 2003
29 APR 2003		RAL 11/6/03 for Hrg. ~~Defen~~ Court no adore ... 30 APR 2003

ADMINISTRATIVE STEPS:

ARREST CASES
Notice of arrest of defendant: Date:

SUMMONS CASES
Summons for service – Registered Post: Date:
– Personal service: Date: 13/9/02 To:

☐ YES/NO

LEGAL AID Applied for: ☐ YES/NO Appln No. ☐ GRANTED/REFUSED Date:

WARRANT DETAILS:

Notice of Conviction/Result of Hearing sent: Date:
J.215 (ECS2) sent to Probation Officer: Date:

DETAILS OF ORDERS:
Order/s To:

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY
DEPUTY REGISTRAR
DISTRICT COURT
AUCKLAND 5/10/04

AUCKLAND

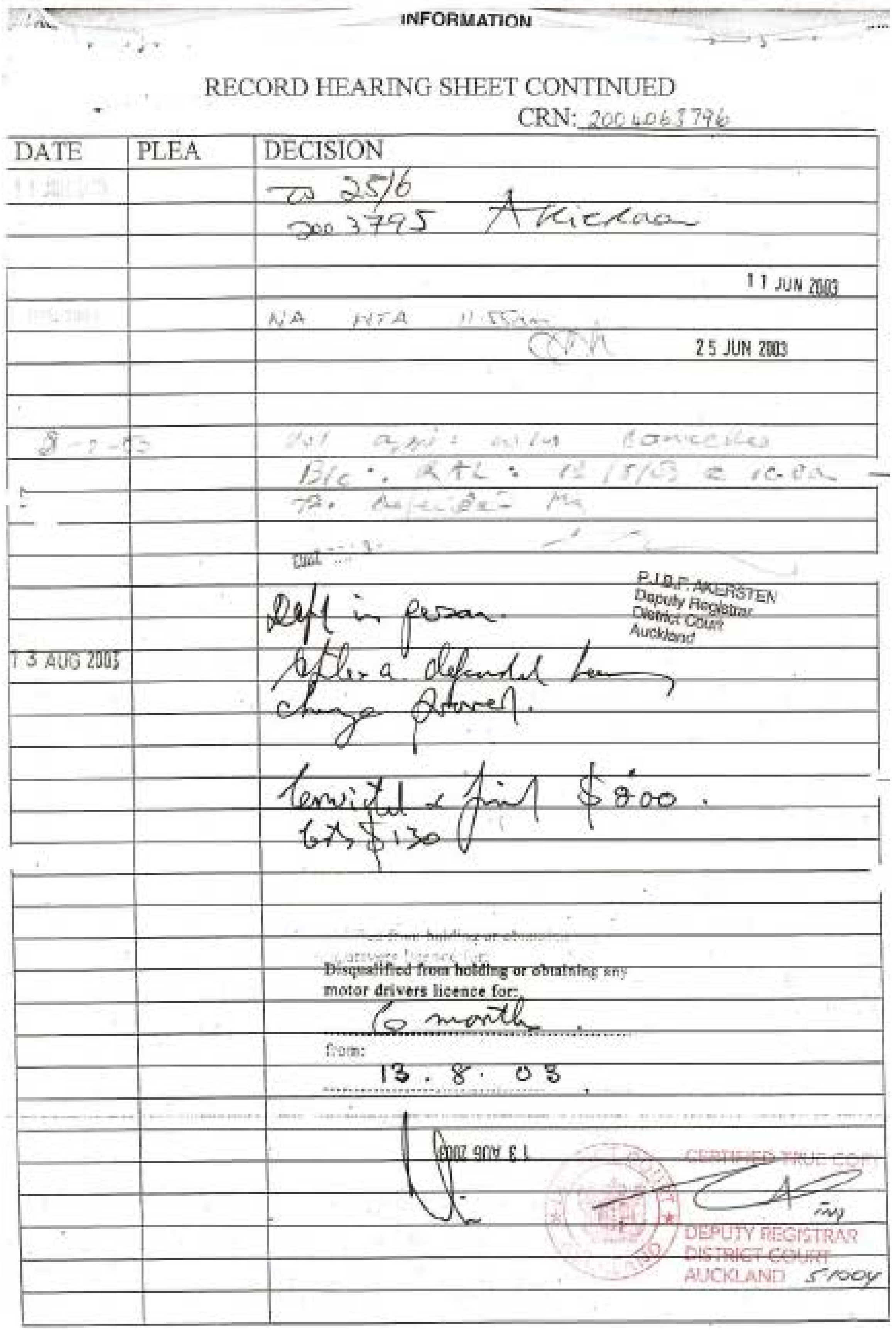

INFORMATION

RECORD HEARING SHEET CONTINUED
CRN: 2004063796

DATE	PLEA	DECISION
11 JUN 2003		to 25/6 2003795 A Kickaa 11 JUN 2003
25 JUN 2003		NA HTA 11.55am 25 JUN 2003
8-7-03		[illegible] concedes B/c. RAL: 13/8/03 @ 10.0a – [illegible] P.J.O.F. AKERSTEN Deputy Registrar District Court Auckland
13 AUG 2003		Deft in person. After a defended hearing charge proved. Convicted & fined $800. CTS $130
		Disqualified from holding or obtaining any motor drivers licence for: 6 months from: 13 . 8 . 03 13 AUG 2003

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY
DEPUTY REGISTRAR
DISTRICT COURT
AUCKLAND 5/10/04

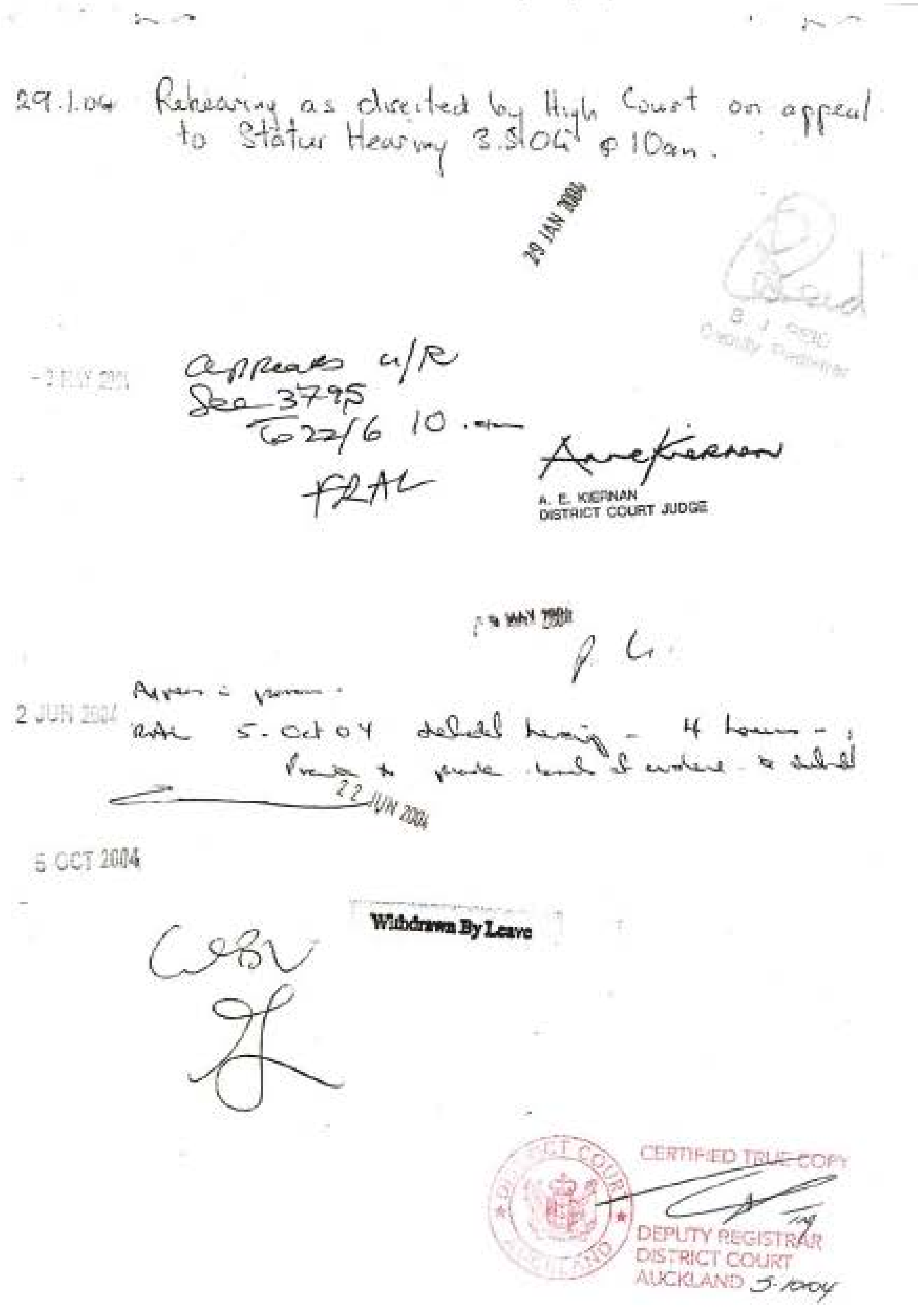

29.1.04 Rehearing as directed by High Court on appeal to Status Hearing 3.3.04 @ 10am.

29 JAN 2004

B J REID
Deputy Registrar

−3 MAY 2004

Appears u/R
See 3795
To 22/6 10.am
FRAL

Anne Kiernan
A. E. KIERNAN
DISTRICT COURT JUDGE

2 MAY 2004

2 JUN 2004

Appears in person.
RAL 5-Oct 04 defended hearing – 4 hours – ;
[illegible] to provide [illegible] of evidence to defend

22 JUN 2004

5 OCT 2004

Withdrawn By Leave

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY
DEPUTY REGISTRAR
DISTRICT COURT
AUCKLAND 5.10.04

Request for Compensation

31 October 2004

Robert Robinson
Office of the Commissioner of Police
180 Molesworth Street,
Wellington Central
PO Box 3017,
Wellington
Ph 04 474 9499
Fx 04 498 7400

Dear Commissioner of Police,

I have an architecture practice and I recently lost my licence from 13 August 2003 to 5 December 2003 as a result of wrongful police conduct on 23 August 2002.

Recently, on the 5 December 2003, I won my case in the High Court. This was then referred back to the District Court.

On the 5 October 2004 the police declined to re-prosecute after indicating for the entire duration that they would do so. The whole process took over 25 months.

You will note that the officer involved, Constable James Matewhinau Cassin, is a twice-convicted criminal prior to entering the police force and that all authorities covered this up for the eight months that his criminal record was neither confirmed or denied.

After having been heavily reduced, my costs are outlined below.

The amount of $772,543.80 is now due by way of compensation.

I know the way you play this game, so do not insult my intelligence by coming at me with the usual crap.

Without prejudice,

Joseph Gregory Hallett.
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland

CC: Lawyers — various
All media in preparation

Joseph Gregory Hallett

Expenses associated with:

1. **False charges on 23 August 2002;**
2. **Loss of Driver Licence from 5 pm 13 August 2003 to 5 pm 5 December 2003 (114 days);**
3. **High Court Hearing on 5 December 2003;**
4. **Latest hearing at Auckland District Court on 5 October 2004.**

ITEM	RATE	DURATION	AMOUNT $
Transport			
Driver	$150/day	114	17,100
Extra petrol, maintenance and damage			500
Second car purchase	$10,000	Depreciation	5,000
First car devaluation (Left outside)			5,000
Travel/boat			2,214.08
Travel/Taxis			316.90
Loss of time picking up child	$100	90 hours	9,000
Travelling to previous Sandringham address on advice of Constable Cassin to pick up transcript of District Court hearing. It was not there, then the District Court & Police 'lost' it.			100
Travel too and from storage	$40	18	720
Storage of items	$250	9 months	2,250
Two movie tickets for second driver			20
Subtotal			42,220.98
Moving Home and Business			
Moving	5/7/03		800
Moving	13/9/03		600
Moving	11+12/9/04		1,502
Second address	$130/wk		2,132
Security		24.8.03 ongoing	20,000
Subtotal			25,034
Business			
Loss of income	$3000/wk	16.4weeks	49,200
Loss of Business/Rebuilding bus./New Ph No.			49,200
Loss of investment			100,000
Loss of charity income			200,000
Destruction of charity (Fathering New Zealand)			275,000
Subtotal			673,400
Treatment			
Doctors appointment			40
Specialist appointment			60
Subtotal			100
Psychological Damage			
Stress			10,000
Subtotal			10,000
New Licence			
Travel to licence office			15
New Licence			38
Travel to existing car			15
Time		1.5hrs	150
Subtotal			218
Legal			
Legal Fees			5,500
Legal Favours			5,500
Preparation for District Court			1,800
Attendance at District Court			600
Preparation for High Court			1,800
Attendance at High Court			600
Preparation for District Court			1,800
Attendance at District Court			600
Writing letters seeking confirmation of Constable Cassin's criminal record			1,200
Time seeking legal advice for the above			1,200
Subtotal			20,000
Theft of Drivers licence through mail			$218
Subtotal			$218
Police			
Photographs of assault			30
1st false arrest 13 August 2003		2hrs	200
2nd false arrest Tuesday–Sunday October 2003		4 days	800
Subtotal			1,030
Expenses			
Toll Calls			8.67
Mobile Calls			214.15
Sundries (printing, postage, faxing, electricity, etc)			100
Subtotal			322.82
TOTAL			$772,543.80

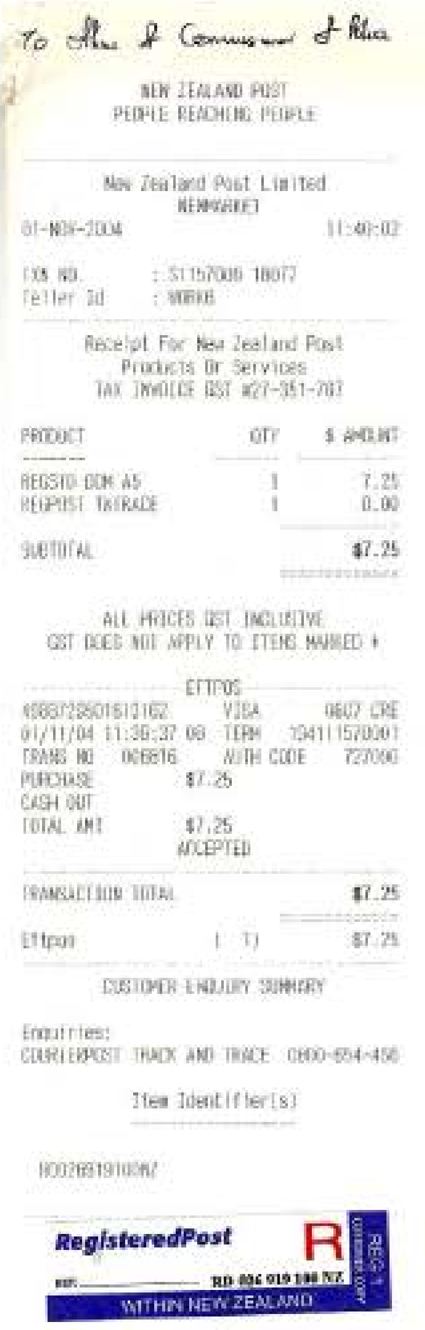

To the Commissioner of Police

NEW ZEALAND POST
PEOPLE REACHING PEOPLE

New Zealand Post Limited
NEWMARKET
01-NOV-2004 11:40:02

TXN NO. : 51157000 10077
Teller Id : [illegible]

Receipt For New Zealand Post
Products Or Services
TAX INVOICE GST #27-351-707

PRODUCT	QTY	$ AMOUNT
REGSTD DOM A5	1	7.25
REGPOST TXTRADE	1	0.00
SUBTOTAL		$7.25

ALL PRICES GST INCLUSIVE
GST DOES NOT APPLY TO ITEMS MARKED +

EFTPOS
49887280016 12162 VISA 0607 CRE
01/11/04 11:38:37 00 TERM 1041 1570001
TRANS NO 006816 AUTH CODE 727000
PURCHASE $7.25
CASH OUT
TOTAL AMT $7.25
ACCEPTED

TRANSACTION TOTAL $7.25
Eftpos (T) $7.25

CUSTOMER ENQUIRY SUMMARY

Enquiries:
COURIERPOST TRACK AND TRACE 0800-654-456

Item Identifier(s)

RD02691910 0NZ

RegisteredPost R
REG 1
RD 006 919 100 NZ
WITHIN NEW ZEALAND

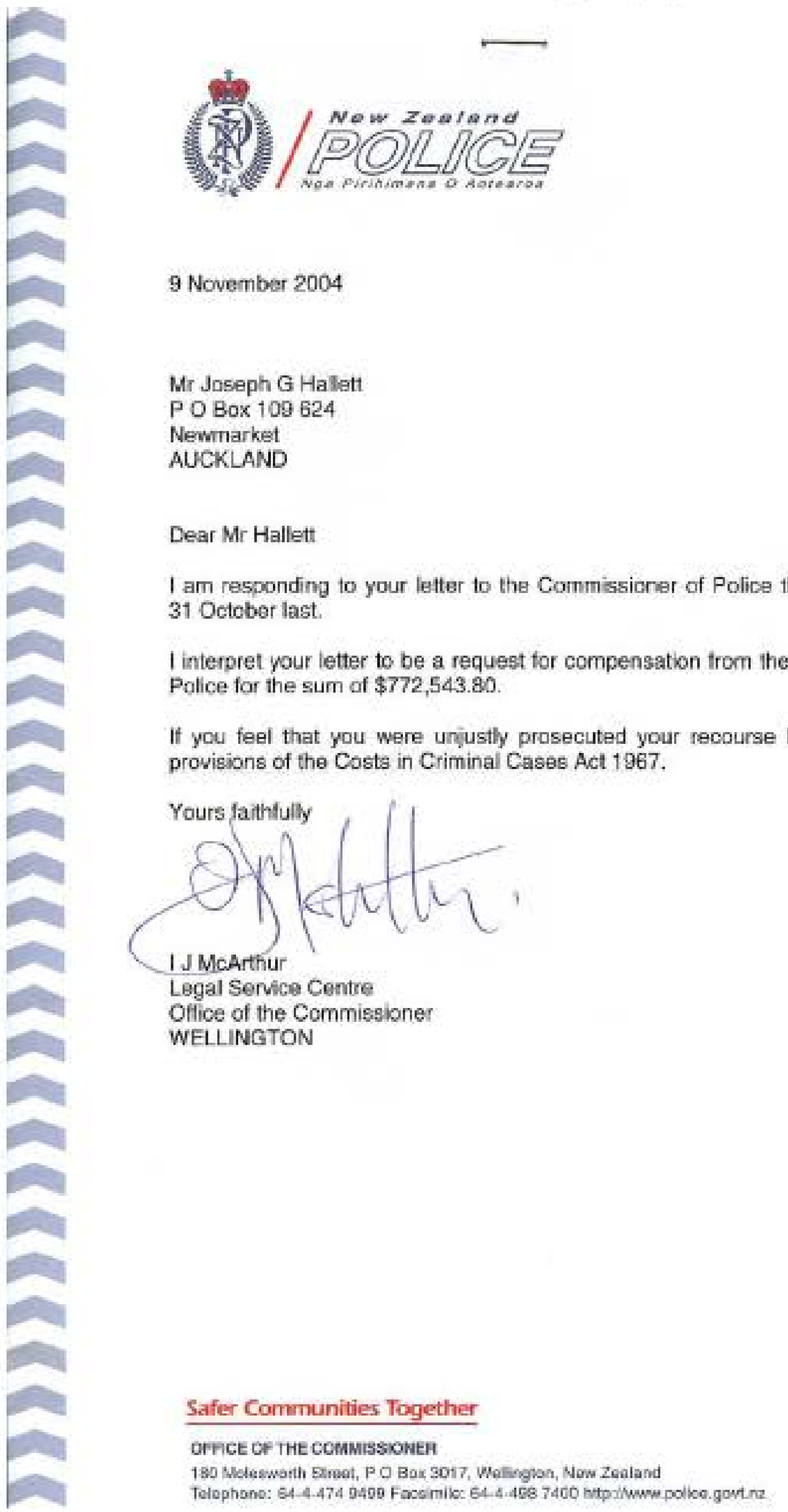

New Zealand
POLICE
Nga Pirihimana O Aotearoa

9 November 2004

Mr Joseph G Hallett
P O Box 109 624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

I am responding to your letter to the Commissioner of Police that was dated 31 October last.

I interpret your letter to be a request for compensation from the New Zealand Police for the sum of $772,543.80.

If you feel that you were unjustly prosecuted your recourse lies under the provisions of the Costs in Criminal Cases Act 1967.

Yours faithfully

I J McArthur
Legal Service Centre
Office of the Commissioner
WELLINGTON

---

12 November 2004

I J McArthur
Legal Service Centre
Office of the Commissioner of Police
180 Molesworth Street,
Wellington Central
PO Box 3017,
Wellington
Ph 04 474 9499
Fx 04 498 7400

Dear Mr McArthur,

Congratulations — you have got it right!

My letter dated 31 October 2004 is a request for compensation for the sum of $772,543.80.

I am relieved at the breadth and depth of your perception and wonder why you are not utilising these skills in the CIB?

I note receipt of your letter form, which is as I expected.

Please acknowledge receipt of this letter within seven days and reply in writing by 21 November 2004 as originally stated.

Do you really want me to press on with this matter?

Yours faithfully,

Joseph Gregory Hallett.
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland

PS: Please thank the police who have been delegated to prowl around my place. In this time of sinking police responses I draw comfort from their attention.

CC: Lawyers — various
All media in preparation

Before I wrote this letter several strange things had happened which I put down to boiler-plating. Boilerplating is harassment through minor occurrences which don't amount to an offence and look like one's own mistakes, but affect the psychology of the person so that they question themselves.

Date	Time	Event
21.08.2002	5:45-7:45	Give speech to Rotary, police, JP's (judges) and women's group at Hopsing's Restaurant in the Cook Islands on Helen Clark's KGB training and how the police create 80% of all crime.
23.08.2002	6:15am	Return to Auckland 12 hours later.
23.08.2002	7am	In car. Driver licence missing and steering wheel poisoned with epicac, but I don't notice.
23.08.2002	8am	Return home to Judges Bay, Parnell. Eat and apple and within 5 minutes start vomiting. I vomit for 12 hours.
23.08.2002	7:45pm Friday	I leave to pick up my daughter and go to Stanley St. subway for deli. I leave and turn left into Beach Rd. This is normal and legal.
23.08.2002	8pm	Police lights pull me over. New female officer Suzanne Mead writes a ticket for illegal left turn. I note absence of no 'no left turn' sign and make mental note that I have never seen a 'no left turn sign' when all streets are two way. Asked for licence and it is not in ashtray or in glove box. The police had stolen it. I give my full name, address and phone number twice and had over my credit card for identification.
23.08.2002	8:10pm	My 10-year-old daughter phones me from her mobile and asks where I am. Constable Suzanne Mead listens to the call. I repeat the message and request her to follow me to the Sky City Bus Station reiterating that she has my credit card. She agrees to, and steps away from my car.
23.08.2002	8:10pm	I proceed at 35km/hr and the police do not follow. I stop at the first lights and the second lights behind two other cars in right lane. I see them slowly following in left lane.
23.08.2002	8:11pm	Travelling to next light, police have grill lights flashing still in left lane. I am in right lane. These then become roof lights and car in front in left lane begins to pull over confused. I stop behind two other cars in right lane at next light. Police car then changes lanes and Constable Cassin, whom I have never seen before, gets out of his car, looking very aggressive and runs up to my car. In fear I lock doors. I know when I am under attack. He runs up to my car, starts yelling and simultaneously smashing the drivers window of my Mercedes with his batten. On the third strike the batten bounces out of his hand and flies across several lanes and is lost.
23.08.2002	8:12pm	Both lanes are full. The lights change to green and I follow the other traffic at 35km/hr. I am very shaken as I know I have just given a speech about the Prime Minister's KGB training, how the police create 80% of all crime, I have been poisoned, my driver licence has been stolen and I am being attacked by a violent Maori police officer whom I have never seen before. As it turns out, Constable James Matewhinau Cassin was training Suzanne Mead on how to stitch people up – how to create crime.
25.08.2003	3:45pm Sunday	At home with daughter in car ready to go to Sky City Bus Station. Note that the driver licence is back in the ashtray of my car.
22.07.2003		District Court hearing in my absence. I was not notified.
27.07.2003 Sunday	9am	Constable Cassin phones my mobile to tell me there is a warrant out for my arrest for not turning up to the hearing. I said "What hearing?" I go to the Auckland Central police station and apply for the arrest to be withdrawn and a rehearing on the basis that I was not informed.
28.07.2003		Apply in District Court for rehearing on this basis.
13.08.2003	10am – 4:30pm	At first dangerous driving hearing, the arresting officer admits to two convictions for assault prior to entering the police force. Despite this, Judge Gittos awards the police everything and I'm charges with dangerous driving and lose my licence. I have had Judge Gittos before and he works on the Police Informants Scheme cases and in police stitch ups.
14.08.2003		I go to the District Court and appeal to the High Court and request a transcript of the hearing which I never get.
Interim.		I repeatedly request by phone, letter and in person, for the transcript of the case from the District Court, Police and High Court.
1.12.2003		I am not informed of the High Court hearing date. I go into the High Court and I'm informed the case is on 10 December 2003.
2.12.2003	Morning	I receive letter from the police lawyer requesting all points that I will raise. It points out that the case is to be heard on 5 December 2003.
2.12.2003	Afternoon	I go into the High Court and check with the Registrar. The case is on 5 December and not on 10 December 2003. I check with a lawyer who says that the High Court cases involving police charges have dates that are often sabotaged by the High Court registrar.
5.12.2003	2pm Friday	High Court hearing. Judge Keane throws the police case out as they have lost the entire transcript of the District Court hearing, as has the District Court. He directs a rehearing in the District Court.
8.12.2003	6:30am Monday	The Attorney-General announces on Newstalk ZB (radio) that no employer can check back past 7 years into the criminal record of an employee. However this has not had its second and third hearing in parliament and was not past until 11:11pm on 11 May 2004.
February to October 2003		Request in writing from all appropriate authorities, the criminal record of Constable James Matewhinau Cassin. All organisation fob it off. It never arrives.
5.10.2004	10–10:45 am	At 10am hearing for dangerous driving the police drop all charges citing witnesses overseas and out of time. The civilian witness is overseas and the female police constable has left the police force and gone overseas. I note that there is a High Court referral which means there is no time limit and Constable James Matewhinau Cassin is a witness.
6.10.2004		A contact rings me up and gives me all the car number plates and addresses for a police crime ring called Operation Boo Hoo, run by the Blue Line companies and based in the Waikato.

8.10.2004		I call a former police Senior Sergeant and lawyer to come around and view them. No response.
15.10.2004		I call him again on mobile and he arranges to come over on Wednesday 20 October.
20.10.2004	6pm	The list of car number plates and addresses are missing from the kitchen odds and ends draw. No other information in the house is missing.
20.10.2004	7:15pm	The former police Senior Sergeant and lawyer comes around to view them and they are missing. His girlfriend came with him and dozeson the couch.
29.10.2004	7:30pm	Informed by intelligence officer that the police are expecting a claim for costs. I draft a letter of claim.
30.10.2004		Applied to the police for $772,543.80 compensation for loss of licence.
9.11.2004	6:45am	The front door key had been taken off the key ring inside my house, inserted into the front door and left there with the door closed. Someone had broken in.
10.11.2004	7am	When I got up this morning the front door was ajar as though someone had tried to close the door quietly. The latch was half set.
10.11.2004	8:20am	Both of my driver licences are missing. They are either in the car in the consol or ashtray on the kitchen shelves above the kitchen odds and ends draw where the notes were stolen between 15–20 Oct. 2004.
10.11.2004	9:48-9am	Landline not working. It has a huge crackling sound. I checked the neighbour and he said his phone was fine. I checked upstairs and their phone was fine.
10.11.2004	9:20pm	Put sign on front door, back door and deck door saying " Dear Cops, Milk and tea on bench Lemonade in fridge Signed" I then locked the door latch from the inside, so that an external key would not work.
11.11.2004	1:30am	Big bang on front door like it was kicked or bashed with the flat of a fist. Then a firm loud muffled: "fuck!"
11.11.2004	7:30am	Checked for shoe print on door but couldn't find one.
11.11.2004	7:45am	Find driver licence back in ashtray of Mercedes. The Mercedes has been broken into by the police before.
11.11.2004	9pm	Phoned contact and left message to that effect.
12.11.2004	11am	Contacted by intelligence agent for lunch.

12.11.2004	11:20am	Another contact arrives at my place, walks in, doesn't say anything and beckons me outside. He tells me: "You've been boiler-plated and the person was really pissed off about that sign on your front door . . . The police saw the notice on your door and are really pissed off. They said: 'Tell that cunt to settle for something more reasonable'."
12.11.2004	Afternoon	Meet for lunch, offered secret government tape and asked to transcribe it for my book. I pay cash and listen. It's the missing Erebus tapes.
12.11.2004	4pm	Wrote letter to I J McArthur, Legal Service Centre, Office of the Commissioner of Police reaffirming my claim for $772,543.80 compensation for loss of licence. Sent at 4:15pm by registered mail.
13.11.2004	11:58pm	Phone rings, half a ring. Harrassment.
15.11.2004	6pm	A pigeon tells me the police are going to approach me at a traffic light and charge me with some sort of minor driving charge and try and get me to retaliate. The advice is to be calm and ask if they want me to accompany them to the station. As soon as I turn up in any police station anywhere in New Zealand, it is to be reported to Wellington – meaning Parliament. I'm notified the Israeli Intelligence found the body of Iraena Asher who was murdered on 10/11 October 2004. They found her in a cave that the police had searched. Her remains are pretty broken down. I suggest that a paedophile had done it and had phoned the police demanding a 'window' on threat of exposing the paedophiles within the police force. I.O. says "Your probably right". Iraena Asher was on *Nightline*, but there was no mention that her body was found.
15.11.2004	7:45 – 8:45pm	Go on usual walk around east of Parnell. At 8:05pm I'm at the end of the flyover on Tamaki drive. Man standing at far side of bridge loitering in the dark by the steps up to St Stephens Ave. I walk halfway back over fly-over portion, sense that he's a 'stranger' and return to lookout point for 3 minutes. He comes towards me and loiters 25 metres away, halfway over flyover, just closer than the steps. He is looking south and doing his best not to look at me. I wait, sense when it's safe (two 20 year old girls coming down steps) and walk past him noticing his shoes, black, fake leather, roundish toe, round external seem, the blue shirt, black bomber jacket, bald in the middle to back with copper hair, square but roundish jaw, full and prominent, possible handlebar moustache, about 5'10". I walk past without saying anything. Nor does he. Definitely a 'copper' doing reconnaissance. Instead of going back up the dark stairs, I take the lighter Parnell Baths route.
16.11.2004		Got new driver licence. In the form for reason, under 'I am not surrendering it [driver licence] because it was lost, stolen, or destroyed in the following circumstances': I wrote "THE DRIVER LICENCE WAS STOLEN OUT OF MY HOUSE BY THE POLICE, APPROX. 8 NOVEMBER 2004." Cost $31.10.

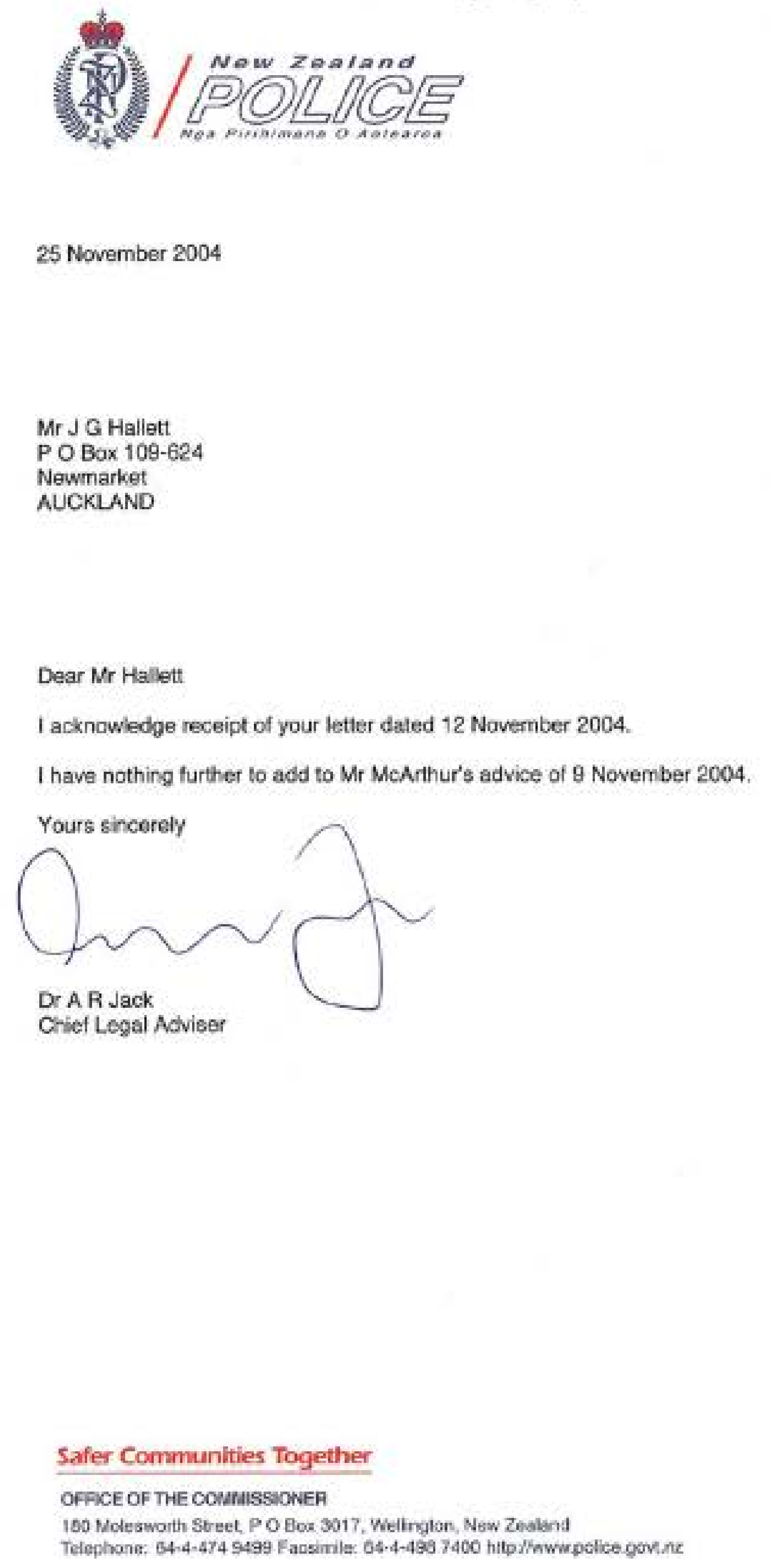

New Zealand
POLICE
Nga Pirihimana O Aotearoa

25 November 2004

Mr J G Hallett
P O Box 109-624
Newmarket
AUCKLAND

Dear Mr Hallett

I acknowledge receipt of your letter dated 12 November 2004.

I have nothing further to add to Mr McArthur's advice of 9 November 2004.

Yours sincerely

Dr A R Jack
Chief Legal Adviser

Safer Communities Together

OFFICE OF THE COMMISSIONER
180 Molesworth Street, P O Box 3017, Wellington, New Zealand
Telephone: 64-4-474 9499 Facsimile: 64-4-498 7400 http://www.police.govt.nz

---

30 November 2004

Dr A R Jack
Chief Legal Advisor
Office of the Commissioner of Police
180 Molesworth Street,
Wellington Central
PO Box 3017,
Wellington
Ph 04 474 9499
Fx 04 498 7400

Dear Dr Jack,

Thank you for your letter dated 25 November 2004.

I do not intend to follow Mr McArthur's well-intentioned advice.

I intend to publicise my complaint against the police and my claim for compensation, as has been done before. I have faith that in the arena of public discussion I will not be found wanting.

You on the other hand, with your reliance on lies, informers and chicanery will no doubt experience problems.

Good luck,

JGHallett

Joseph Gregory Hallett.
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland

CC: Lawyers — various
All media in preparation

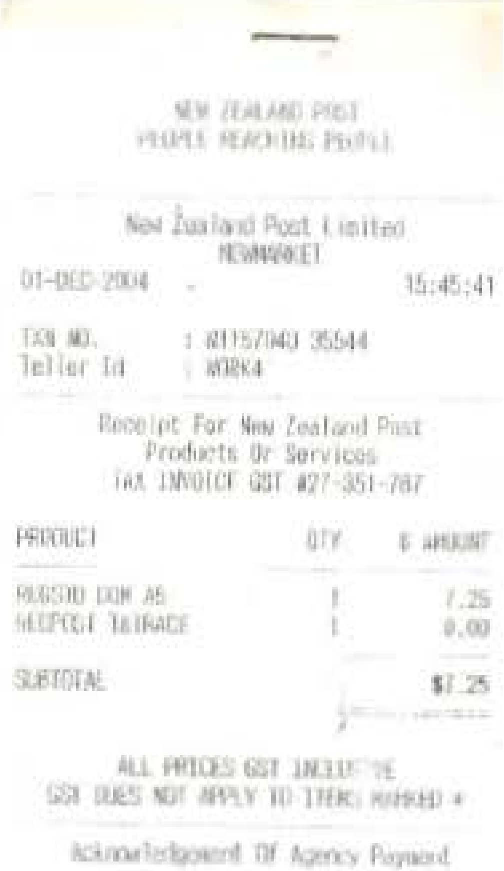

NEW ZEALAND POST
PEOPLE REACHING PEOPLE

New Zealand Post Limited
NEWMARKET
01-DEC-2004 15:45:41

TXN NO. : 01157040 35544
Teller Id : WORK4

Receipt For New Zealand Post
Products Or Services
TAX INVOICE GST #27-351-787

PRODUCT	QTY	$ AMOUNT
RGSTD DOM A5	1	7.25
RECEIPT TRACE	1	0.00
SUBTOTAL		$7.25

ALL PRICES GST INCLUSIVE
GST DOES NOT APPLY TO ITEMS MARKED *

Acknowledgement Of Agency Payment

Former NZ Police Commissioner Rob Robinson

Rotary Club thank you

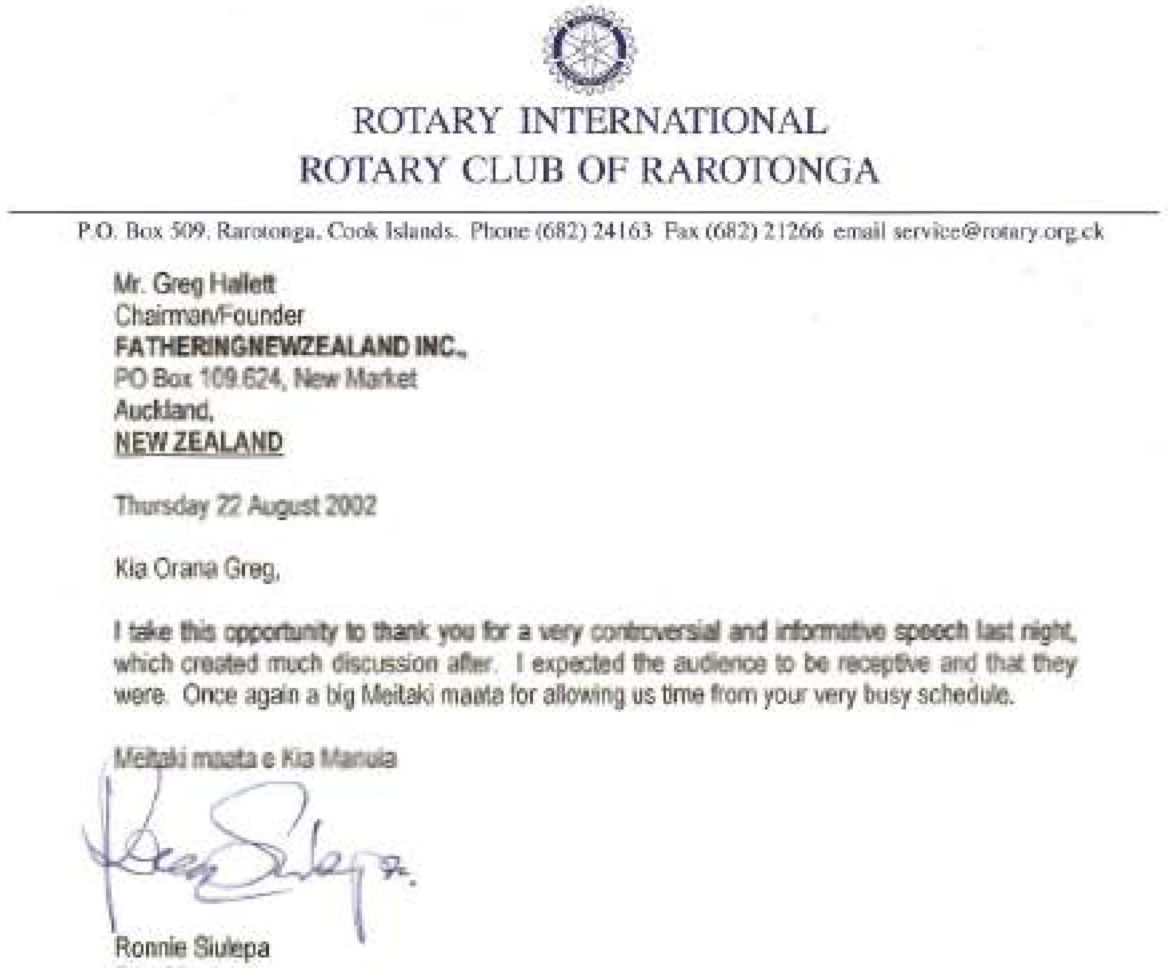

ROTARY INTERNATIONAL
ROTARY CLUB OF RAROTONGA

P.O. Box 509, Rarotonga, Cook Islands. Phone (682) 24163 Fax (682) 21266 email service@rotary.org.ck

Mr. Greg Hallett
Chairman/Founder
FATHERINGNEWZEALAND INC.,
PO Box 109.624, New Market
Auckland,
NEW ZEALAND

Thursday 22 August 2002

Kia Orana Greg,

I take this opportunity to thank you for a very controversial and informative speech last night, which created much discussion after. I expected the audience to be receptive and that they were. Once again a big Meitaki maata for allowing us time from your very busy schedule.

Meitaki maata e Kia Manuia

Ronnie Siulepa
President

Letter to *Investigate magazine*

6 August 2003

To:
Hamish Carnachan
Investigate Magazine
PO Box 302 188, North Harbour

From:

Greg Hallett
PO Box 109 624,
Newmarket
M 0274 589 800

Hamish,
I have more background to this, including a poisoning in early April 2002 after going on talkback, but these things just don't happen in New Zealand.

6 August 2003

To: Hamish Carnachan
Investigate Magazine
PO Box 302 188, North Harbour

From: Greg Hallett
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland
M 0274 589 800

Hamish,

Further to our conversation, I have more background to this, including a poisoning in early April 2002 after going on talkback, but these things just don't happen in New Zealand, right?

After writing *Are You My Father?, The Family Court and Other Experiments*, I went on holiday to the Cook Islands where I gave a speech (21st August 2002) at Hopsing's Restaurant, to Rotary, JP's (the Cook's equivalent of judges), and the women's movement; those hecklers whose pheromones had past them by, who wanted to protect the world by stopping younger women from enjoying sex.

Normally you get 20 minutes to speak. I spoke on how to stop outside ideologies from breaking up their families and culture. I got two hours followed by half an hour with the executive and the police, who were really interested in my crime prevention methods.

I also spoke as to how the police create 80% of all crime and explained in detail, for the first time in a public talk, how Helen Clark was trained and deconstructed by the KGB and what evidence there was for this. Her trips to Russia; her hatred of America; her uncomfortableness around heterosexual males; her obvious deconstruction; her maniacal speech patterns at provincial talks during election time; and her 90° degree head twist during the TVNZ debates in May 2001 signifying a 'wind-in'.

A wind-in is when the implanted deconstruction sees the outward manifestation of its goal coming into fruition. The body reacts with strange unnatural behaviour, like a 90 degree head twitch. It also resulted in more naturalness and humour after May 2001, for a while, then the banning of smoking, as this interfers with deconstruction in the politician. Smoking also wards off deconstruction in the public.

In the Cooks, I also spoke of my interview with the KGB in Moscow and how they had told me they were training New Zealand and Australian women. They actually used the specific word 'Australasian'. I also spoke of meeting a Russian professor in July 2002 who showed me the equipment used for the deconstruction of Westerners. Not a bad effort all-in-all except that a 'heckler-whose-pheromones-had-past-them-by' phoned home and I was about to fly into a poisoned trap.

I flew back 10 hours after the speech, arriving in Auckland at 7am on 23 August, 2002). I picked up my Mercedes which was parked undercover, but not enclosed, at the airport. The steering wheel had been poisoned with a black sticky substance called *epicacuana* and my driver licence had been removed. I thought the stickiness was left over from eating pies in the car so I didn't think anything of it. The steering wheel was usually only sticky when the car was hot, but the car was cool in August. When I got home I ate an apple without washing my hands and the poison kicked in. I spent all day vomiting and vomiting, with diahorrea and hot and cold fever and sweats.

Epicac is used in small doses before stomach and bowel surgery, as it cleans everything out. In larger does it is used to kill by racing and slowing the heart, and is about as favourite as digitalis.

When I went to pick up my daughter after twelve hours of vomiting up the most resistant of my bile, the police pulled me over and asked for my driver licence. It wasn't there.

Constable Suzanne Mead took at least eight minutes to write out a ticket, repeatedly asking for my name and address. At 8:03 pm my daughter rang from the bus stop and asked where I was. The bus terminal closed at 8 pm and my 10 year-old was left sitting outside on the dark and cold streets of Auckland on an August winter's Friday night.

The female officer overheard the call.

I said: "I've got to go and pick up my daughter from the Skycity Bus Terminal – follow me."

She exclaimed, "Stii" and said "Fine" and stood back from the car. I joined the thick traffic, doing about 25 km/hour.

The male officer had been sitting in the car looking up the number plate and name and thus finding out that like 40,000 other separated fathers over the last six years, and like 17 out of 20 fathers involved in a separation, I had a protection order. This is supposed to mean 'jack shit' to a traffic officer, however, because they're so chivalrous, they take it as license to beat up any, and all, male drivers.

Like almost all fathers, I did not get to defend the protection order within the first five days. Issued on a Wednesday, this gives you to Friday, issued on Friday, this gives you to Tuesday. Virtually no-one defends within the first five days, because they are so stunned and ashamed they can't move. Two–thirds are never defended and the rest have a struggled defense, so 99 % become permanent. The other trick the police use is to throw the father in jail, then issue the Protection Order, then return his mail to the sender without letting him see it.

I think there was some purposeful miscommunicaton between the female and the male police officer. '*Purposeful miscommunicaton*' is a method police use to manufacture crime.

A civilian is nice to one officer and that officer tells the second officer that he said, "Go fuck your mother", or that he held out his finger and said in a broad Scottish ascent "SmellYaMa". The second officer starts beating the civilian while the first officer restrains him. Other officers watch and they joke about the success of their various setups over tea and a dogroll. The police report always says "and a struggle ensued".

The police are trained in the academy in '*verballing*' in the John Hughes Room. That is, they are trained to sound believeable no matter what the setup. When they have a really difficult case, where there is not enough evidence to convict, or the police are as guilty as sin, they frame the defendent for a crime they know someone else committed, and in court, they bring in the 'Voice Master', the officer who is the best and most convincing at telling lies. Such an officer was used in the Mark Lundy case, to make the improbable and impossible police evidence believeable.

As is all cases, the police remove any evidence to the contrary, like it was a contract hit, but the child wasn't supposed to get killed.

Not only was my case a set up with two officers following me, but they were at odds with their strategy. One wanted to follow me to the bus station and finish writing the ticket there (and return my credit card), and the other wanted to haul me out of the car as soon

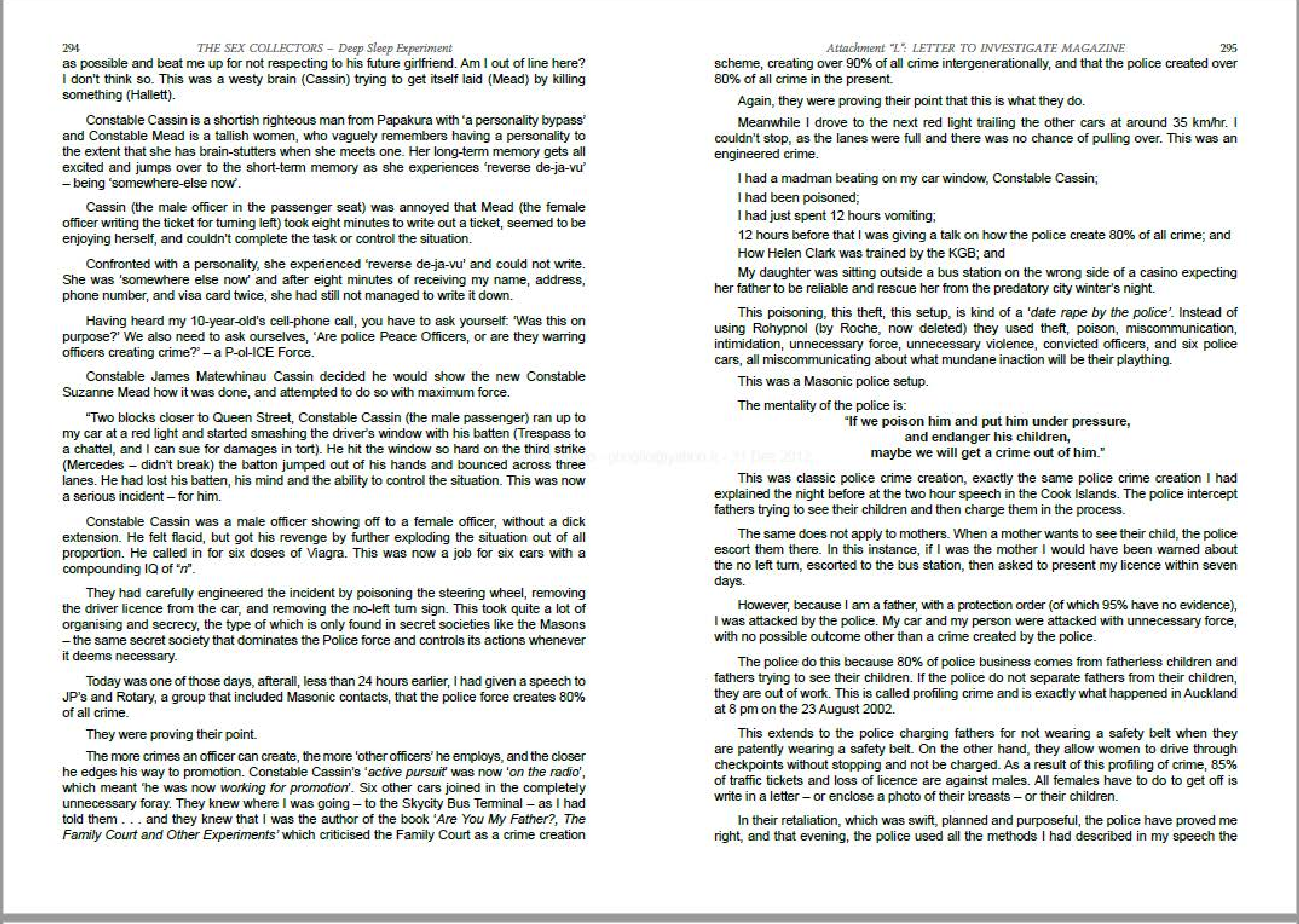

as possible and beat me up for not respecting to his future girlfriend. Am I out of line here? I don't think so. This was a westy brain (Cassin) trying to get itself laid (Mead) by killing something (Hallett).

Constable Cassin is a shortish righteous man from Papakura with 'a personality bypass' and Constable Mead is a tallish women, who vaguely remembers having a personality to the extent that she has brain-stutters when she meets one. Her long-term memory gets all excited and jumps over to the short-term memory as she experiences 'reverse de-ja-vu' – being 'somewhere-else now'.

Cassin (the male officer in the passenger seat) was annoyed that Mead (the female officer writing the ticket for turning left) took eight minutes to write out a ticket, seemed to be enjoying herself, and couldn't complete the task or control the situation.

Confronted with a personality, she experienced 'reverse de-ja-vu' and could not write. She was 'somewhere else now' and after eight minutes of receiving my name, address, phone number, and visa card twice, she had still not managed to write it down.

Having heard my 10-year-old's cell-phone call, you have to ask yourself: 'Was this on purpose?' We also need to ask ourselves, 'Are police Peace Officers, or are they warring officers creating crime?' – a P-ol-ICE Force.

Constable James Matewhinau Cassin decided he would show the new Constable Suzanne Mead how it was done, and attempted to do so with maximum force.

"Two blocks closer to Queen Street, Constable Cassin (the male passenger) ran up to my car at a red light and started smashing the driver's window with his batten (Trespass to a chattel, and I can sue for damages in tort). He hit the window so hard on the third strike (Mercedes – didn't break) the batton jumped out of his hands and bounced across three lanes. He had lost his batten, his mind and the ability to control the situation. This was now a serious incident – for him.

Constable Cassin was a male officer showing off to a female officer, without a dick extension. He felt flacid, but got his revenge by further exploding the situation out of all proportion. He called in for six doses of Viagra. This was now a job for six cars with a compounding IQ of "*n*".

They had carefully engineered the incident by poisoning the steering wheel, removing the driver licence from the car, and removing the no-left turn sign. This took quite a lot of organising and secrecy, the type of which is only found in secret societies like the Masons – the same secret society that dominates the Police force and controls its actions whenever it deems necessary.

Today was one of those days, afterall, less than 24 hours earlier, I had given a speech to JP's and Rotary, a group that included Masonic contacts, that the police force creates 80% of all crime.

They were proving their point.

The more crimes an officer can create, the more 'other officers' he employs, and the closer he edges his way to promotion. Constable Cassin's '*active pursuit*' was now '*on the radio*', which meant 'he was now *working for promotion*'. Six other cars joined in the completely unnecessary foray. They knew where I was going – to the Skycity Bus Terminal – as I had told them . . . and they knew that I was the author of the book '*Are You My Father?, The Family Court and Other Experiments'* which criticised the Family Court as a crime creation scheme, creating over 90% of all crime intergenerationally, and that the police created over 80% of all crime in the present.

Again, they were proving their point that this is what they do.

Meanwhile I drove to the next red light trailing the other cars at around 35 km/hr. I couldn't stop, as the lanes were full and there was no chance of pulling over. This was an engineered crime.

I had a madman beating on my car window, Constable Cassin;

I had been poisoned;

I had just spent 12 hours vomiting;

12 hours before that I was giving a talk on how the police create 80% of all crime; and

How Helen Clark was trained by the KGB; and

My daughter was sitting outside a bus station on the wrong side of a casino expecting her father to be reliable and rescue her from the predatory city winter's night.

This poisoning, this theft, this setup, is kind of a '*date rape by the police'*. Instead of using Rohypnol (by Roche, now deleted) they used theft, poison, miscommunication, intimidation, unnecessary force, unnecessary violence, convicted officers, and six police cars, all miscommunicating about what mundane inaction will be their plaything.

This was a Masonic police setup.

The mentality of the police is:

"If we poison him and put him under pressure,
and endanger his children,
maybe we will get a crime out of him."

This was classic police crime creation, exactly the same police crime creation I had explained the night before at the two hour speech in the Cook Islands. The police intercept fathers trying to see their children and then charge them in the process.

The same does not apply to mothers. When a mother wants to see their child, the police escort them there. In this instance, if I was the mother I would have been warned about the no left turn, escorted to the bus station, then asked to present my licence within seven days.

However, because I am a father, with a protection order (of which 95% have no evidence), I was attacked by the police. My car and my person were attacked with unnecessary force, with no possible outcome other than a crime created by the police.

The police do this because 80% of police business comes from fatherless children and fathers trying to see their children. If the police do not separate fathers from their children, they are out of work. This is called profiling crime and is exactly what happened in Auckland at 8 pm on the 23 August 2002.

This extends to the police charging fathers for not wearing a safety belt when they are patently wearing a safety belt. On the other hand, they allow women to drive through checkpoints without stopping and not be charged. As a result of this profiling of crime, 85% of traffic tickets and loss of licence are against males. All females have to do to get off is write in a letter – or enclose a photo of their breasts – or their children.

In their retaliation, which was swift, planned and purposeful, the police have proved me right, and that evening, the police used all the methods I had described in my speech the night before. It was almost as if they had learnt from me. I had taught them a lesson, and now they were teaching me one.

In this instance of retaliatory police action, in the profiling of 80% of crime, the police used purposeful miscommunication, intimidation, poisoning, theft, the planting of evidence, chivalry, excessive force, violence, and assault – a classic police setup.

As a result, the police endangered the child leaving her alone outside, on a cold winter's night on the wrong side of a casino for some 25 minutes.

This is effectively Gender Communism:
a police-state for men, a socialisitic, protected state for women,
and a paedophile state for children – all run by the police.

That is, the protective father is removed by the police wherever possible and the child is left vulnerable to whomever the police make them available to, like government daycare and foster care.

The truth of the matter is that the feminist women are working day and night to ensure policies are in place that ensure children are unavailable to their fathers and therefore unprotected from paedophiles. They do this by harrassing the biological father and ensuring that a charity is in place to capture the child once the father has been 'successfully' removed.

The most obvious charity that catches children who have been purposely de-fathered, is the DPB, Women's Refuge and CYF's. All of these organisations, along with the police force, work towards defathering children, and making them as available to paedophiles as possible. The police paedophile enablers and paedophile minders dominate decision making within the Police force.

Fifty metres before the Skycity Bus Terminal where my daughter waited, six unmarked police cars with flashing grill lights surrounded me on Hobson Street. I stopped and phoned her to tell her to look down the hill at the flashing lights, that I was being detained by the police yet again. Telephone records show that I did not have enough time to get through to her.

Constable Cassin pulled open my car door, unclicked the seat-belt, grabbed the phone from my ear and threw it forcefully onto the ground. This was wilful damage. He then hauled me out of my Mercedes, pulled my leather dress jacket down around my arms and threw me face down on the ground, facing down Hobson Street. The blood rushed to my head and I was prone, grazed, dazed and defenceless. This whole episode took about two seconds.

There was no physical defense on my part.

Sitting with full contact of his groin against my arse, he handcuffed me so tight the skin came off my wrists. He then pulled my wrists upwards by the handcuffs displaying his prize. This lifted my pelvis as he began riding me like a bronko pony while the police in the marked cars and the detectives in the unmarked cars yahooed and cheered.

To anyone watching, this would have looked more like a case of public police date rape. It has left me emotionally and psychologically scared and in fear of Hobson Street in perpetuity – at least that section of it.

Constable Cassin looked to Constable Suzanne Mead with that "*look at me*" look backed up with all the posture that said, 'I've got the mentality of a six-year-old and I'm doing a man's job'.

Constable Cassin is a freak and deserves to be fried, fired, and fired upon. He is dedicated to the paedophile movement by exposing children to predation in the short and long term. He is a dangerous convicted criminal and should be removed from the Police.

In his mind the public breathed a sigh of relief that yet another threat to their 'peace and paedophile movement' had been apprehended by the police. Cassin was the moment's hero one step closer to promotion.

Constable Cassin asked me to stand up. I said: "I can't move." He hauled me up by the handcuffs that linked my grazed wrists together. Four days later, I took photos of the grazes and bruising. My new Barkers black leather dress jacket was riped and torn.

I was then driven past my lost and lonely looking daughter, and taken off to the Central Police Station. She sat there looking out as I drove past, not knowing it was me in the car.

I could hardly wave.

On the way I repeatedly asked Cassin for the handcuffs to be lossened. They were not. Eventually a police car picked up my daughter having left her, a 10-year-old girl, exposed to Auckland's night life for 25 minutes. When the police got her to the station they proselytised to her about becoming a police officer.

No such luck. Look what they'd done to her father. What were they doing, looking for sadists?

The police are bullys who endanger innocent people for their own statistics. They create crime against fathers and anyone who exposes their profiling of crime.

My car was driven to the police station by 'who knows'. The poison was removed from the steering wheel and the driver's licence returned to the glovebox of the mercedes. I was to be arrested and held overnight. It was only the phone call to my girlfriend – the blonde, blue-eyed, large-breasted, slim-wasted, small-hipped, multi-millionairess from St. Cuthberts College – who confirmed my address – that got me "unarrested" and released immediately.

The police try to take the licence off any man who has a nice looking woman in the car with them. The police do this for several reasons:
The police are made up of people who can't get laid.
Police will do anything to get laid.
It gives them a chance to serve the woman in a 'victim' status.
The police only respect what women say.
The police are a gender-biased crime creation movement.
The police are in desperate need of a "BELIEVE THE MAN" campaign.

I was charged with five charges, the most serious being "driving in a manner which may have been a danger to the public". In other words, we don't have any evidence, but please plead guilty to a lesser charge or we will take your licence off you for six months, and you will pay forever in your insurance premiums.

I pleaded "Not Guilty". When I asked for all the documents to be released, there was an affidavit from a paedestrian written 70 days after the event. The writing of the statement was so heavily assisted by Cassin that it read like it had been written by a constable who was present right through the incident.

The witness's affidavit was more or less written by Cassin as it contained the phrase "
. . . it looked like a minor problem had escalated . . ."

Now how would a pedestrian know that, when they did not see the beginning nor the end of the matter and how would they remember it 2½ months after the event.

Perhaps Constable Cassin had found the first ever witness capable of seeing around corners, or was the witness a comrade at arms who owed him a favour. It is likely that Cassin's witness is either a criminal who owes the police a favour, or is a friend told 'they are on an "op" to catch a bad guy who disturbs the peace, or endangers the public, or writes books about cops going bad', or merely for another free beer, and a look the other way drug slip.

As in all police arrests, sure enough, both Constable Cassin and Constable Mead wrote in their affidavits "and a struggle ensued". There was no struggle, there was no time for a struggle, and there was no energy for a struggle.

Constable Mead had previously noted that I was acting strangely, yet I had had no alcohol.

I was acting strangley because I had no energy. I had been poisoned, and I had been poisoned with police knowledge.

The only struggle was the excessive violence from Constable Cassin, which was preceded by his 'planned miscommunication' which tipped this whole event off – from nothing to a police planned loss of licence for as long as Constable Cassin could muster.

It's not dangerous drivers the police want off the road, it's fathers accessing their children.

The police want fatherlessness as this creates crime and keeps them employed.
Time to find a new job Cassin.

Time to get your personality back Mead.

Both officers should be removed from the force for 'crime creation' and 'entrapment', and for working on a 'police hit' – a 'stich-up'.

By 3.45 pm on Sunday, when I drove my daughter back to the Bus Terminal, the driver licence was miraculously back in the glovebox of the car. Now how did that happen?

I then bumped into a judge and had a chat, then gave a speech with a QC.

Constable Suzanne Mead left the Police force before the hearing.

Cassin remained a constable, but was never heard of again.

No government department could find his criminal record, would produce it, or has produced it.

Yours sincerely,

Greg Hallett B. Arch
Judges Bay
Parnell
Auckland

This letter resulted in an *Investigate magazine* article.

Police Create Crime

Police Chases, '60 Minutes', TV3, Transcript (19 April 2004)
In New Zealand, the police create over 80% of all crime, and then verbal their way out of admitting that they create crime, or have created a crime. On 19 April 2004, TV3 '60 Minutes' ran a programme called "Police Chases". Here's part of the transcript:

> In New Zealand there are 800 police chases a year. 1 in 3 police chases ends in a collision. The police will even chase cars over an expired warrant of fitness at speeds of 140km/hr. In this case, it resulted in the death of an innocent.
>
> 200 people have been injured and 20 have died from police chases in the last 8 years.
>
> National Road Policing Manager Steve Fitzgerald: "We know that adrenaline starts to pump pretty furiously during those pursuits and it does change peoples perspectives. Say in a normal road safety sense, if someone is travelling at speed, then their focus narrows quite a lot when they don't see the bigger picture. When you actually add in adrenaline and a police pursuit into that it gets even narrower."
>
> Interviewer: "Surely the person they're chasing would suffer from the same anxiety, the same adrenaline rush, they were being pursued."
>
> National Road Policing Manager Steve Fitzgerald: "In some instances, yes."
>
> Interviewer: "But isn't chasing them at speed further endangering the public?"
>
> National Road Policing Manager Steve Fitzgerald: "Is not the should going back to umm our priority and what our work is actually within police about public safety and law enforcement and where do you draw the line." [sic]
>
> Former Police Sargent Alex Hope: "You want to catch somebody who's running from you, you want to catch them because they're running, you want to catch them because you think they've committed an offence, you want to catch them because you want to win. And a lot of guys get a buzz out of umm high speed as well."
>
> Interviewer: "So you're talking about a high state of adrenaline."
>
> Former Police Sargent Alex Hope: "Yep, yep, you're buzzing."
>
> Interviewer: "If the police are buzzing then the suspect is often in a blind panic."
>
> Former Police Sargent Alex Hope: "You lose your life, you could take someone else's. There's a proportionality argument in there that says somebody has to have the common sense to back off and that somebody should be the person who is the trained professional in the equation. Not the so-called criminal."
>
> Interviewer: "Who's responsible in a police chase. Is it the police?"
>
> National Road Policing Manager Steve Fitzgerald: "Yeh, fundamentally. I mean it's the offender who calls the shots about fleeing in the first place. But in terms of whether we continue or not then that's very much ours and that represents a sort of big dilemma for the police internationally. It's not just a problem here, it's a growing problem right throughout the world and the majority of the agencies around the world are responding by saying 'public safety comes first'."

Interviewer: "The police have long claimed they protect public safety by abandoning chases before they get too dangerous – if only a matter of seconds before a crash."

National Road Policing Manager Steve Fitzgerald: "But there is always a reliance on trust that ah our officers stop when they're told to abandoned, and I've got no evidence to suggest anything else, that they, they do something else now." [sic]

Interviewer: "But last year a coroner found that the police hadn't abandoned a case when they said they had. They had been pursuing a motorcyclist at speeds of up to 200km/hr when he hit a car killing himself and an innocent young woman. The coroner said he was surprised by discrepancies in police evidence. The Whangarei coroner said the police didn't stop when they said they had."

National Road Policing Manager Steve Fitzgerald: "Yeh and that's subject to an investigation now, but certainly the guidelines are clear, abandon now and then acknowledge that you've stopped."

Interviewer: "In the latest of their reviews police management, last month, clarified to staff the policy on how to conduct a chase and abandoning it if it gets too dangerous. Those instructions were in place when Cynthia Scagen was hit by a stolen car, pursued by police, she says, for up to fifteen minutes at high speeds prior to the crash."

Cynthia Scagen: "What they're doing is very dangerous. I mean they're endangering the public. There are 800 car chases per year in little old New Zealand, that's too much."

National Road Policing Manager Steve Fitzgerald: "We know there's going to be innocent victims involved in these things from time to time. You know, if I take it to the next stage about, if we don't pursue people who are driving dangerously or drunk, I'm not sure if we are not in the firing line for not doing our duty, and um, to flop over and say the police will now not pursue for any offences, will then give the mandate to the criminals to take over the roads."

Interviewer: "But in the States, for so long the home of the Hollywood car chase, many police departments have simply banned police chases. They've decided the risk to human life can simply not be justified and certainly never for minor offences."

National Road Policing Manager Steve Fitzgerald: "We've finished up with traumatised police officers as a result of these incidents as well and they're really unfortunate."

Police Psychologists and Payouts

Dr. Bridge is a psychologist in Wellington. He is very PC (Politically Correct) and capable of authorising cheques for big payouts.

Whenever a police officer wants to leave the police, they go and see him, and always leave with a big payout, as long as they say the right words. These go something like this:

> "I want to kill someone . . . and I don't like the aggression of the Maoris . . . and I'm gonna go down to the Pa, to the marae, and I'm gonna shoot me some Maoris".

Dr Bridge is quite PC and when he hears this he says: "Ooo you must go. You must leave the police service", and that afternoon, or the very next day, the leaving officer has a cheque for $500,000 and they are escorted out of the Force/ Service/ Swindle.

Intelligence Officer on Police Violence

Every second police officer has a non-molestation order against them from their partners, and some have two or three from their partners. Some of the best-known police officers have two or three non-molestation orders. In the worst cases the cops who have threatened to kill their partners have been paid to go to Australia.

Simon Rewi was a white guy adopted into a Maori family. As a police officer, he was prosecuted for multiple assaults on his partner. Officer Simon Rewi brought crime into his family so he could keep a personal eye on it. His stepbrother was a major drug dealer and Simon was doing strong-arm stunts for him in Onehunga (2003–04).

Intelligence Officer on Police Undercovers

Sometimes the New Zealand police undercovers stuff things up to a grand degree. In April 2004 they were working on a case up North in a small rural town. They drove a brand new Falcon and by the time they had made two trips up and down the road, the whole town knew they were undercover cops. They were even stupid enough to ask for receipts for their beers. When asked what the receipts were for, they said they were law enforcement consultants. They finally closed in on the disused dairy factory and found two-dozen cars without number plates with the serial numbers gouged off. The Maori's fronted by saying it wasn't them, that they had done no wrong, and did the undercovers want to come around later for some kai and korero (food and a chat).

A lot of Maoris work as undercovers in Australia. A lot of ex-New Zealand police have moved to Australia and written books about New Zealand police corruption and are given Australian police cover. Virtually all of the undercovers in New Zealand are suing the police and moving to Australia.

Intelligence Officer on PERF (Police Employment Rehabilitation Fund)

A huge number of police lost 50% of their PERF money to their wives, so the police are now paying extra PERF money to cover for their wives/ex-wives.

MICK P on Judicial Double-Dipping

Judge Robertson appointed for the police rapes trial (Clint Rickards, Brad Shipton and Bob Schollum v. Louise Nicholas) has been double-dipping. He is getting paid $320,000 as a judge and the same again as a consultant on this case. This is a $320,000 bribe to find in favour of the police . . . Assistant Police Commissioner/Area Commander Rickards was not convicted.

We've got room for a small joke, so here's
'How Rangi Chops his Firewood'

"Hello, is dis da P-ol-ice?"

"Yes it is. How can we help you?"

"I'm calling to report my neighbour, Rangi. He's hiding cocaine inside his firewood!"

"Thank you very much for the call."

Early next morning, police officers descend on Rangi's house in great numbers. They search the house and then go out to the shed where the firewood is kept. Using axes they bust open every piece of firewood, but find no cocaine. They swear at Rangi and leave.

Then the phone rings at Rangi's house. *"Hey, Rangi, did the cops come?"*

"Yeah!"

"Did they chop up your firewood?"

"Yeah."

"Happy Birthday bro!"

Intelligence Officer on the SIS

26 April 2004: The new SIS will be run by the Justice Department and not by the Prime Minister's Department. So Sian Elias is taking over Counter-Intelligence from Helen Clark. This means the Mossad has taken over from the KGB in New Zealand.

Hallett on the CIA takeover of Auckland

The Mossad also run the CIA. National's Dr Richard Worth was removed from the position of Minister of Internal Affairs and replaced with Maurice Williamson on 3 June 2009 because there is currently a CIA takeover of Auckland.

The removal of Richard Worth was over sexual allegations in texts (Nov. 2008–Feb. 2009) to Neelam Choudary (a Korean woman involved with Labour). In Muldoon's day, he would have said: "Well, did you have sex with her? No. Well then, not a problem, nothing happened." Richard Worth resigned and no one has been told what happened. We know, and it's like this. A whole lot of other MPs have done a whole lot worse and they're still in Cabinet or Speaker of Parliament. Richard Worth then resigned completely as an MP on Friday 12 June. Nathan Guy then replaced Worth and Williamson as Minister of Internal Affairs outside Cabinet on Monday 15 June 2009.

Worth isn't CIA, but Williamson is. I like Williamson. He did some good work on the Erebus crash, but still he handed over/recommended Nathan Guy (b. 1970, farmer from Levin) to take over the Internal Affairs portfolio during the CIA takeover Auckland and theft of its assets.

Nathan Guy (39) is now the Senior Whip, responsibile for Archives New Zealand (what's recorded) and the National Library (what's published), Associate Minister of Justice (how the Deputy Commissioners influence judges), Associate Minister of Transport (who gets pinged with traffic tickets and who gets off), and Minister of Internal Affairs (how heavy handed the government will be) outside Cabinet (with little government consultancy and pick and choose government responsibility).

The CIA had invested their money with Madoff and lost it in December 2008. This money was assigned to develop/takeover New Zealand as a gateway to Antarctica. In this relationship, New Zealand is referred to as New Spain, and written up on Intelligence reports as "N.S.". The US Navy calls New Zealand "Flux" and Wellington "Jerk". They got that right.

Short on money, the CIA came up with a scheme to steal NZ$28 billion from Auckland, so they had their CIA agent Dame Margaret 'Lillian Heroin Deep Sleep Contract Killer' Bazley do the investigative work, which no MP was allowed to see before they voted on it.

It got filibustered, but Auckland was still to become a Super City. The Bill passed into law on 16 May 2009, with the top contenders for Super Mayor being the CIA's John Banks and the CIA's Washington Programmer, Paul Holmes, both of them sexual deviants involved in drugs.

With the four cities combined (the biggest in Australasia) the CIA agents are going to asset strip Auckland. Faye and Richwhite, heavily involved in the murder Paul White in 1991, are all set to go. They have given themselves a one year moratorium to do it . . . 12 months of no complaining as you watch the CIA take ownership of 150 years of Auckland's asset growth and infrastructure go to the CIA's development of Antarctica – the seventh continent – the final frontier.

The CIA want to populate Antarctica. They are using the assets of Auckland's four cities to do it.

Auckland is paying for Bernie Madoff's Ponzi Scheme. The CIA is raiding Auckland.

Institutional Bias – Are we not Dogs?

Excite minds to change them.
The excitement does not have to be pleasant.
Though men are not dogs,
if we treat them as such,
their brains will function as such,
and we will have a population as such,
controlled as such.
Is it not true, that authorites treat populations as a society of dogs?
Feed it, entertain it, and throw it the occasional bone (lotto)
and it will fill in its tax form and remain compliant.
Just what percentage of dogs are lickers?
What percentage are barkers?
What percentage of dogs are guards?
What percentage are pets?
What percentage of dogs are outdoors?
and what percentage are house-trained?
What percentage of dogs are breeders?
and what percentage are a nuisance?
Which dogs live long? Which dogs are expensive?
Which dogs are friendly? Which are nuts?
Excite a dog by throwing it a bone.
Disappoint a dog by pretending to throw the bone (Election).
Which dog for this, this dog for that.
Doggy school, mongrel dog, bad dog, mad dog, wooly dog, hairy dog, malting dog,
sheep-dog, wolf-dog, duck-dog pointer.
Which sort of dog were you pupped?
and which of society's dogs are you now?
What exciting experience made the difference . . .
Dog brain, dog breath, doggy style, a dog's life, a dog of a wo/man . . . Poodle-fakers.
It only takes seven generations to create a new species of dog
and 120 years to create a new race of human . . .
black, white, yellow compliant, soul, no soul, inquisitive, bland.
Humans can be bred like dogs.
Some we won't let breed at all, especially not the thinking dogs. Isn't that a species jump?
And if a human thinks too much, isn't that a societal jump.
We must keep the population dumb, or we'll be surrounded by equals.
Throw back, throw forward, sink, swim, or doggy paddle,
which of man's best friend are you?
If a dog is man's best friend, certainly a person who's brain functions like a dog
is the Judiciary's best meal ticket.
Show me a judge and I'll show you a person who treats others like a dog.
They speak another language of course, because they have ulterior motives,
but the result is still dog and master, bone and chaser,
distraction and sprint, tail left, legs right, tongue wagging,
in a new place, exciting, but still a dog.
The more they run, the more they chase, the more they are a dog.
Slave Master and Slave, anyone for a new hoop?
How about a ring of fire?[1]

---

[1] Paraphrased from Sargant's *Battle for the Mind*: "We need to excite minds before changing them" . . . "Though men are not dogs, they should humbly try to remember how much they resemble dogs in their brain functions."

The New Zealand Judiciary treats its citizens like dogs. The court processes have been influenced by heroin trafficking's Dame Margaret Lillian Bazley to ensure people are tricked like dogs.

Under her CIA influence, the Judiciary pretends to throw the ball, then hides it behind its back. Other judges find this funny. Citizens think the Judiciary is both dog and evil master. Could a judge be any more cruel? Would the SPCA allow a judge to own a pet, the way it treats citizens?

Citizens now regard the Judiciary as worse than useless.

Indeed, the Judiciary can't even settle a debt.

The Judiciary has become a front for biological psychiatry where people's lives are ruined, their potential put to sleep for three months at a time. With systemic and institutional bias, one traffic ticket defended can lead to a lifetime in front of the courts, and if you're brown, it's your life in prison with your cussy's Bro.

If you're Jewish, you are not considered a judical target. Nor are you subject to the Jewish Dictatorship inflicted on others. It's their language, not ours, and Goyim are not told the rules. They are not told the rules because they are to be milked, and only the very bent like dog milk.

There are no Jews in prison. If a Jew murders, no one gets the blame. If a Jew murders again, someone else gets the blame. Jews are now Government's preferred contract killers – because they never get caught, and if they do get caught, the sin is getting caught and not the crime.

Mental illness is potentially created, and anyone who walks through the court door is considered a half-fulfilled target for stripping potential.

Asset stripping is top priority, then grace stripping, then psychological stripping, then socio-economic stripping, until the person is finally naked. Society calls these naked people 'the walking dead', but they don't call them at all. After a couple of years, they're dogs.

The New Zealand Judiciary is a laboratory for mind control experiments. It is MKULTRA. It is a Special Operations Division and it is Special Operations in practise.

The Judiciary is the Department of Psychological Medicine.
It is a mind control experiment.

Angst and injustice causes the body to manufacture its own toxins which adher to, and partially fulfil, the requirements of Biological Warfare – at least the first step, premature ageing. The government wants you dead as soon as possible after retirement kicks in.

So the Judciary attacks early, focussing on Maori, and few Maori ever reach retirement (65). Jail will do that to a person. Partly due to an 80% incarceration rate, most Maori are dead by 55. They say the average age is 81, and for Maori 73, but not even the Maori believe that. It's more like 65, on the dot, dead on the birthday when the working job stops.

When I was noted as a questioning thinking person, the Judicary (MKULTRA) was alerted. When they found out I was a little Maori (10%), they began to attack. When these attacks failed to jail me, they turned into murder attempts. When these murder attempts failed, they turned to discrediting, and when these discredits turned into books, the Judiciary was informed that this man (Greg Hallett) was not to win a case, and was not to gain any financial settlement. Hence, the New Zealand Judiciary can't even settle a debt. Their targetting, and my history, has proven it, beyond a shadow of a doubt.

But 'sacrifice is a measure of credibility', and 'he who bears the burden also derives the benefit'. I'm still waiting. Life is a dog. Someone's been crapping in my front yard.

To support premature ageing and jailings, as well as discrediting and selective poverty, heroin was introduced into New Zealand by the government, as well as lawyers. These lawyers were then promoted, and the heroin trafficking MPs were selected for death or promotion. When Tavistock and Heroin trafficking were combined in an MP, that was the formula for Prime Minister . . . or President, Governor-General, or Speaker of the House, Attorney General, or Minister of Police.

It's history as we know it, but few dogs can put it into words. That's what makes us a dog. We bark and bark, but don't have a voice.

Then the heroin-trafficking lawyers were promoted to Queen's Counsel. As dogs without a voice, we were supposed to lick them with silent tongues of respect, but I'm more of a species jumper, and society says "No".

Woof woof: "Hey you heroin trafficking Queen, get the fuck out of my living room. I'm trying to eat my dinner here. Take your bullshit and pump it elsewhere. Lawyers who were Catholics and Freemasons and drug users and paedophiles and incestuous were given their own branch of the Judiciary to head. Woof! Woof bark Woof. It's a pack of dogs howling through the media."

CIA Dog: "Continuing the murder tradition of the CIA's Frank Olson, by his CIA minders, the murders of the Judiciary are covered up. They are covered up to such a degree that the Chief Justice Sian Elias is a contract killer and the New Zealand head of the CIA's MKULTRA Deep Sleep Experiment is both a heroin trafficker and a mass murderer who was married to a triple convicted murderer."

Both women are big on the cock, still, despite being ten dog years, all teets saggy and hairy. Sian Elias bangs her chauffeur in the limousine outside official functions (changing them when they get exhausted) and Margaret Bazley films mental patients and police for the biggest cocks and then invites them in to her office for promotion. She also employs male prostitutes to gang-bang her while dressed in a black see-thru bodysuit with no arse. She likes it doggy style. So does the male. Her face is butt ugly, both of them, so it's a no brainer! Woof!

Simliar to the White House, when the Judiciary apologises, you don't know what it is for. Any apology comes late, and any compensation is well short of the grief.

Lock the dog up all day, then give the dog a bone.

With drugs and the fright of the police, death will only come sooner. These included Dawn Raids and dawn raids, and cutting off the entire side off a druggy's house with chainsaws. Hiliariously, in that case, the police got the wrong house and it was the neighbours who died younger.

You have to wonder if this wasn't on purpose, as we have been shown time and time again that the top police are running the upper side of drug trafficking the world over. The normal pattern of police now is to steal from one drug house and deliver to their own, and when a detective flies in from Hawaii to issue warnings to THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE on the perils of methamphetamines, THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE treat it as a business opportunity and use all warnings as points of marketing, leverage, crime creation, and social control.

Dog: "Arh yeah, the police are really evil with the stick. They're more likely to throw it in the back of the paddy wagon. Then you spend a lifetime sniffing out their own drugs. And how about your Police Commissioner rooting one of our own. Surely that's a species jump. Woof. Arrah yeah, that's a big down for humans, and a bad up for dogs. Doesn't say much for the police. Tell me again, where do the police fit in . . . 0800NEWPORK."

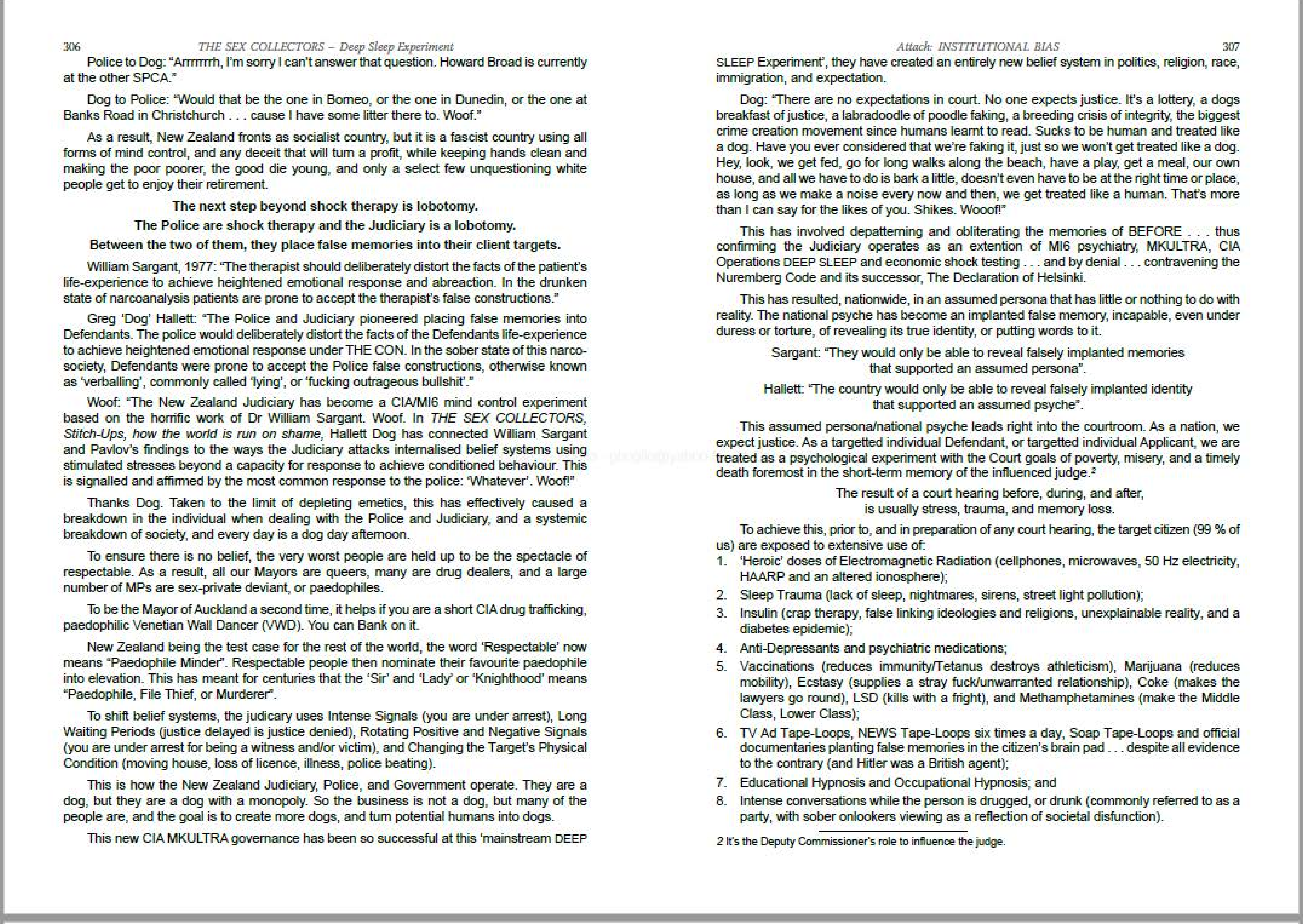

Police to Dog: "Arrrrrrh, I'm sorry I can't answer that question. Howard Broad is currently at the other SPCA."

Dog to Police: "Would that be the one in Borneo, or the one in Dunedin, or the one at Banks Road in Christchurch . . . cause I have some litter there to. Woof."

As a result, New Zealand fronts as socialist country, but it is a fascist country using all forms of mind control, and any deceit that will turn a profit, while keeping hands clean and making the poor poorer, the good die young, and only a select few unquestioning white people get to enjoy their retirement.

The next step beyond shock therapy is lobotomy.

The Police are shock therapy and the Judiciary is a lobotomy.

Between the two of them, they place false memories into their client targets.

William Sargant, 1977: "The therapist should deliberately distort the facts of the patient's life-experience to achieve heightened emotional response and abreaction. In the drunken state of narcoanalysis patients are prone to accept the therapist's false constructions."

Greg 'Dog' Hallett: "The Police and Judiciary pioneered placing false memories into Defendants. The police would deliberately distort the facts of the Defendants life-experience to achieve heightened emotional response under THE CON. In the sober state of this narco-society, Defendants were prone to accept the Police false constructions, otherwise known as 'verballing', commonly called 'lying', or 'fucking outrageous bullshit'."

Woof: "The New Zealand Judiciary has become a CIA/MI6 mind control experiment based on the horrific work of Dr William Sargant. Woof. In *THE SEX COLLECTORS, Stitch-Ups, how the world is run on shame,* Hallett Dog has connected William Sargant and Pavlov's findings to the ways the Judiciary attacks internalised belief systems using stimulated stresses beyond a capacity for response to achieve conditioned behaviour. This is signalled and affirmed by the most common response to the police: 'Whatever'. Woof!"

Thanks Dog. Taken to the limit of depleting emetics, this has effectively caused a breakdown in the individual when dealing with the Police and Judiciary, and a systemic breakdown of society, and every day is a dog day afternoon.

To ensure there is no belief, the very worst people are held up to be the spectacle of respectable. As a result, all our Mayors are queers, many are drug dealers, and a large number of MPs are sex-private deviant, or paedophiles.

To be the Mayor of Auckland a second time, it helps if you are a short CIA drug trafficking, paedophilic Venetian Wall Dancer (VWD). You can Bank on it.

New Zealand being the test case for the rest of the world, the word 'Respectable' now means "Paedophile Minder". Respectable people then nominate their favourite paedophile into elevation. This has meant for centuries that the 'Sir' and 'Lady' or 'Knighthood' means "Paedophile, File Thief, or Murderer".

To shift belief systems, the judicary uses Intense Signals (you are under arrest), Long Waiting Periods (justice delayed is justice denied), Rotating Positive and Negative Signals (you are under arrest for being a witness and/or victim), and Changing the Target's Physical Condition (moving house, loss of licence, illness, police beating).

This is how the New Zealand Judiciary, Police, and Government operate. They are a dog, but they are a dog with a monopoly. So the business is not a dog, but many of the people are, and the goal is to create more dogs, and turn potential humans into dogs.

This new CIA MKULTRA governance has been so successful at this 'mainstream DEEP SLEEP Experiment', they have created an entirely new belief system in politics, religion, race, immigration, and expectation.

Dog: "There are no expectations in court. No one expects justice. It's a lottery, a dogs breakfast of justice, a labradoodle of poodle faking, a breeding crisis of integrity, the biggest crime creation movement since humans learnt to read. Sucks to be human and treated like a dog. Have you ever considered that we're faking it, just so we won't get treated like a dog. Hey, look, we get fed, go for long walks along the beach, have a play, get a meal, our own house, and all we have to do is bark a little, doesn't even have to be at the right time or place, as long as we make a noise every now and then, we get treated like a human. That's more than I can say for the likes of you. Shikes. Wooof!"

This has involved depatterning and obliterating the memories of BEFORE . . . thus confirming the Judiciary operates as an extention of MI6 psychiatry, MKULTRA, CIA Operations DEEP SLEEP and economic shock testing . . . and by denial . . . contravening the Nuremberg Code and its successor, The Declaration of Helsinki.

This has resulted, nationwide, in an assumed persona that has little or nothing to do with reality. The national psyche has become an implanted false memory, incapable, even under duress or torture, of revealing its true identity, or putting words to it.

Sargant: "They would only be able to reveal falsely implanted memories
that supported an assumed persona".

Hallett: "The country would only be able to reveal falsely implanted identity
that supported an assumed psyche".

This assumed persona/national psyche leads right into the courtroom. As a nation, we expect justice. As a targetted individual Defendant, or targetted individual Applicant, we are treated as a psychological experiment with the Court goals of poverty, misery, and a timely death foremost in the short-term memory of the influenced judge.[2]

The result of a court hearing before, during, and after,
is usually stress, trauma, and memory loss.

To achieve this, prior to, and in preparation of any court hearing, the target citizen (99 % of us) are exposed to extensive use of:

1. 'Heroic' doses of Electromagnetic Radiation (cellphones, microwaves, 50 Hz electricity, HAARP and an altered ionosphere);
2. Sleep Trauma (lack of sleep, nightmares, sirens, street light pollution);
3. Insulin (crap therapy, false linking ideologies and religions, unexplainable reality, and a diabetes epidemic);
4. Anti-Depressants and psychiatric medications;
5. Vaccinations (reduces immunity/Tetanus destroys athleticism), Marijuana (reduces mobility), Ecstasy (supplies a stray fuck/unwarranted relationship), Coke (makes the lawyers go round), LSD (kills with a fright), and Methamphetamines (make the Middle Class, Lower Class);
6. TV Ad Tape-Loops, NEWS Tape-Loops six times a day, Soap Tape-Loops and official documentaries planting false memories in the citizen's brain pad . . . despite all evidence to the contrary (and Hitler was a British agent);
7. Educational Hypnosis and Occupational Hypnosis; and
8. Intense conversations while the person is drugged, or drunk (commonly referred to as a party, with sober onlookers viewing as a reflection of societal disfunction).

---

[2] It's the Deputy Commissioner's role to influence the judge.

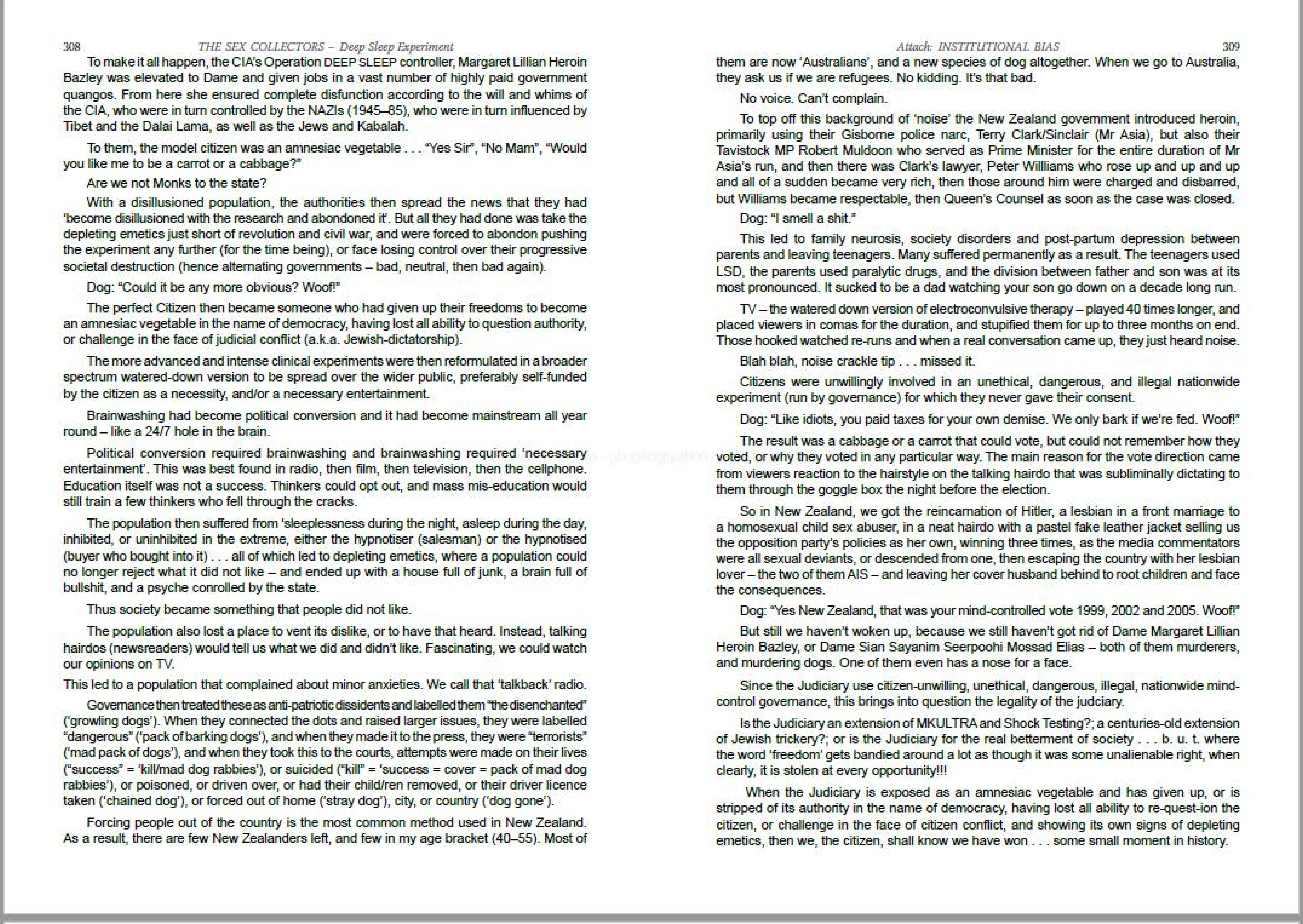

To make it all happen, the CIA's Operation DEEP SLEEP controller, Margaret Lillian Heroin Bazley was elevated to Dame and given jobs in a vast number of highly paid government quangos. From here she ensured complete disfunction according to the will and whims of the CIA, who were in turn controlled by the NAZIs (1945–85), who were in turn influenced by Tibet and the Dalai Lama, as well as the Jews and Kabalah.

To them, the model citizen was an amnesiac vegetable . . . "Yes Sir", "No Mam", "Would you like me to be a carrot or a cabbage?"

Are we not Monks to the state?

With a disillusioned population, the authorities then spread the news that they had 'become disillusioned with the research and abondoned it'. But all they had done was take the depleting emetics just short of revolution and civil war, and were forced to abondon pushing the experiment any further (for the time being), or face losing control over their progressive societal destruction (hence alternating governments – bad, neutral, then bad again).

Dog: "Could it be any more obvious? Woof!"

The perfect Citizen then became someone who had given up their freedoms to become an amnesiac vegetable in the name of democracy, having lost all ability to question authority, or challenge in the face of judicial conflict (a.k.a. Jewish-dictatorship).

The more advanced and intense clinical experiments were then reformulated in a broader spectrum watered-down version to be spread over the wider public, preferably self-funded by the citizen as a necessity, and/or a necessary entertainment.

Brainwashing had become political conversion and it had become mainstream all year round – like a 24/7 hole in the brain.

Political conversion required brainwashing and brainwashing required 'necessary entertainment'. This was best found in radio, then film, then television, then the cellphone. Education itself was not a success. Thinkers could opt out, and mass mis-education would still train a few thinkers who fell through the cracks.

The population then suffered from 'sleeplessness during the night, asleep during the day, inhibited, or uninhibited in the extreme, either the hypnotiser (salesman) or the hypnotised (buyer who bought into it) . . . all of which led to depleting emetics, where a population could no longer reject what it did not like – and ended up with a house full of junk, a brain full of bullshit, and a psyche conrolled by the state.

Thus society became something that people did not like.

The population also lost a place to vent its dislike, or to have that heard. Instead, talking hairdos (newsreaders) would tell us what we did and didn't like. Fascinating, we could watch our opinions on TV.

This led to a population that complained about minor anxieties. We call that 'talkback' radio.

Governance then treated these as anti-patriotic dissidents and labelled them "the disenchanted" ('growling dogs'). When they connected the dots and raised larger issues, they were labelled "dangerous" ('pack of barking dogs'), and when they made it to the press, they were "terrorists" ('mad pack of dogs'), and when they took this to the courts, attempts were made on their lives ("success" = 'kill/mad dog rabbies'), or suicided ("kill" = 'success = cover = pack of mad dog rabbies'), or poisoned, or driven over, or had their child/ren removed, or their driver licence taken ('chained dog'), or forced out of home ('stray dog'), city, or country ('dog gone').

Forcing people out of the country is the most common method used in New Zealand. As a result, there are few New Zealanders left, and few in my age bracket (40–55). Most of them are now 'Australians', and a new species of dog altogether. When we go to Australia, they ask us if we are refugees. No kidding. It's that bad.

No voice. Can't complain.

To top off this background of 'noise' the New Zealand government introduced heroin, primarily using their Gisborne police narc, Terry Clark/Sinclair (Mr Asia), but also their Tavistock MP Robert Muldoon who served as Prime Minister for the entire duration of Mr Asia's run, and then there was Clark's lawyer, Peter Willliams who rose up and up and up and all of a sudden became very rich, then those around him were charged and disbarred, but Williams became respectable, then Queen's Counsel as soon as the case was closed.

Dog: "I smell a shit."

This led to family neurosis, society disorders and post-partum depression between parents and leaving teenagers. Many suffered permanently as a result. The teenagers used LSD, the parents used paralytic drugs, and the division between father and son was at its most pronounced. It sucked to be a dad watching your son go down on a decade long run.

TV – the watered down version of electroconvulsive therapy – played 40 times longer, and placed viewers in comas for the duration, and stupified them for up to three months on end. Those hooked watched re-runs and when a real conversation came up, they just heard noise.

Blah blah, noise crackle tip . . . missed it.

Citizens were unwillingly involved in an unethical, dangerous, and illegal nationwide experiment (run by governance) for which they never gave their consent.

Dog: "Like idiots, you paid taxes for your own demise. We only bark if we're fed. Woof!"

The result was a cabbage or a carrot that could vote, but could not remember how they voted, or why they voted in any particular way. The main reason for the vote direction came from viewers reaction to the hairstyle on the talking hairdo that was subliminally dictating to them through the goggle box the night before the election.

So in New Zealand, we got the reincarnation of Hitler, a lesbian in a front marriage to a homosexual child sex abuser, in a neat hairdo with a pastel fake leather jacket selling us the opposition party's policies as her own, winning three times, as the media commentators were all sexual deviants, or descended from one, then escaping the country with her lesbian lover – the two of them AIS – and leaving her cover husband behind to root children and face the consequences.

Dog: "Yes New Zealand, that was your mind-controlled vote 1999, 2002 and 2005. Woof!"

But still we haven't woken up, because we still haven't got rid of Dame Margaret Lillian Heroin Bazley, or Dame Sian Sayanim Seerpoohi Mossad Elias – both of them murderers, and murdering dogs. One of them even has a nose for a face.

Since the Judiciary use citizen-unwilling, unethical, dangerous, illegal, nationwide mind-control governance, this brings into question the legality of the judciary.

Is the Judiciary an extension of MKULTRA and Shock Testing?; a centuries-old extension of Jewish trickery?; or is the Judiciary for the real betterment of society . . . b. u. t. where the word 'freedom' gets bandied around a lot as though it was some unalienable right, when clearly, it is stolen at every opportunity!!!

When the Judiciary is exposed as an amnesiac vegetable and has given up, or is stripped of its authority in the name of democracy, having lost all ability to re-quest-ion the citizen, or challenge in the face of citizen conflict, and showing its own signs of depleting emetics, then we, the citizen, shall know we have won . . . some small moment in history.

Personally, I still think we should have the running of the judges and beat them over the head and shoulders with newspapers as they run naked down Albert Street every Monday morning and every Friday night. It would certainly put some oxygen in the beak, and it's a chance at feedback.

And what do we win? Conscious of their experiment, and fully able to express this in the face of conflict, we gain authority over our freedom, and learn to protect it.

Strangely, no one teaches us how. We are all supposed to know the law, but there are no teachers. This is 'Ignorance is forced slavery' in the extreme.

There is no other profession that doesn't tell you how to approach.

This is a slave master and slave relationship. Illegal in all nations, but still 27 million slaves worldwide. Certainly unsubstantiated tickets is a form of slavery. This ticket is $150 dollars. That will be 15 hours slave labour at the average wage.

Dog: "Sucks to be human. Woof."

We entered into their experiment involuntarily under Con-Governments – an extension of the most vicious eras of any Intelligence agency, and the banks who funded them, or bought those experiments.

On top of that, a third of the world operated according to the Queen's whim, the same colour of war, as long as she could watch. What do they call that – a British Plantation!

No matter the size of the nation, or the colour, everyone was Black.

The only way you couldn't be Black, was by appointment to the Queen.

If brainwashing is illegal, then so is the Judiciary.

If brainwashing is illegal, then the Judiciary is a Class A criminal.

Guillaume Boglio - gboglio@yahoo.fr

That's interesting, because much of the Judiciary are Class A drug users and a judge is a lawyer whose been to the same brothel.

Hullo Boys. You've just been filmed by the SIS. SNAP (True).

Dog: "Woof! True. Woof!"

If brainwashing can create an assassin, and the Judiciary is part and parcel of brainwashing, then isn't justice in the Judiciary an oxymoron. Certainly their Judicial staff think so and the common New Zealand saying is: "Don't expect justice in the Judiciary".

Dog: "I think it's time the Judiciary went home. That would be to England, to the Royal Family, who are all Jews, the illegitimate children of Jewish bankers. Woof! Grrrr. Bark bark. Fargoof. Woof woof."

Clinical Professor of Medicine, Dr Anne White: "My whole experience was a nightmare. I was used as an experimental tool to try and create the ultimate weapon – an assassin."

Citizen: "My whole experience was a nightmare. I was used as an experimental tool to create a vote to create the ultimate weapon – a government, and a government involved in cons (fines & non-payment), assassination and ultimately genocide.

"As the government says: 'Who can we poison now?'"

Dog: "Woof".

The informed citizen now stands in front of many judges and thinks: "This person is involved in murder in some way. When I can put my finger on it, I will speak it."

Dog: "Woof. Judge Johnny d'Hole. Woof! Grrrr woof woof. Get the fuck out of my country you paedophile-minding murdering manic depressive unchewable fucknuckle. Woof woof."

If the Judiciary acts in contravention to The Nuremberg Code/ Declaration of Helsinki, then isn't that an act of war? Would that not make defendants POWs?

Doesn't the Judiciary profile racial groups, and manufacture disable people?

Doesn't the Judiciary deem Defendants testimony worthless on a regular basis?

Isn't this Institutional Bias? and doesn't this create what the Judiciary refuses to call untermenschens?.

Aren't such targets/informed citizens capable of expressing themselves in the face of conflict?

And are such people called protestors?

And are yesterday's protestors, tomorrow's politicans.

When it comes to protest and politics, aren't judges without a voice.

Certainly the Judiciary uses force, fraud, deceit, duress, over-reaching, constraint and coercion, and all of these are illegal under The Nuremberg Code.

Is this not the same psychological treatment MKULTRA handed out to its subject enemies.

So the Judiciary acts in direct contravention to
The Nuremberg Code and The Declaration of Helsinki.

To remove the breach of the Nuremberg Code/ Declaration of Helsinki and render itself legal, the Judiciary must inform the citizen of the charge, how long it will take to be resolved, the purpose of the charge and hearing, the method and means by which the hearing is to be conducted, all inconveniences and hazards reasonably expected, and the physical and psychological effects from participating in the charge/ defense/ hearing/ experiment resulting in conviction or freedom, expenses or settlement of debt.

By the time it comes to settlement of debt, the Judiciary has run out of steam. Why? Because if the debt remains unsettled, the banks can charge 22 % instead of 8 %. So the banks control the Judiciary and the Judiciary fails to settle a debt. If they do settle a debt, it is usually only after a time when the court fees are greater than the settlement . . . but even then the Judiciary usually fails to settle a debt.

Doesn't this make the Judiciary a drain on society?

The Judiciary is commonly seen as supporting criminals and debitors,
and not victims, witnesses, or creditors.

The judge must also obtain the consent of the illegally-profiled target-defendants to participate in the court process. This is often done when the judge says: "Will you abide by the decisions of this court?, or more slippery by asking questions and receiving direct answers."

Dog: "She's a slippery tail. There's a dog's arse right behind it."

You can also say to a judge: "I am at liberty to inform you that I have reached the physical/ mental state where continuation of this experiment seems impossible" . . . to which the judge's standard reply is: "Are you claiming that you are insane, or in some way mentally deficient?"

But it's your basic right to be out of their experiment under codes and declarations. At this point, you need a third party to find the middle ground – typically a psychologist and a lawyer, and at least three affidavits with witness back-up, all of them more expensive than the original problem.

So the Judiciary is problem-creation and sleepness nights. Do I hear a denial?

Dog: ". . ."

They will take you this far on a traffic ticket, giving intense positive and negative signals, it takes forever, and you can marry, divorce, migrate overseas, return, change your profession, and they still haven't settled anything.

The Judiciary will settle a fine, but they won't settle a debt.

Dog: "We call that shit on a stick".

Yeah, Dog, it's being driven to the point of madness. I'll put it to you this way. The Mayor is a paedophile. Yeah. You have traffic tickets for life. All the Judiciary does is protect its notable paedophiles."

The Experiment Gods don't make it easy. What is commonly accepted has to be proven in court, and lies can be proven in court by the same process. Whoever knows the court process best, gets away with the biggest lie. An entire hearing can be a lie. These can take a decade or more. Just look at the Crew murders and the Bain murder trial. The court wasted a quarter of a century because its covering for some Freemason paedophile who's murdered and their code is: 'To protect a Freemason's reputation even after death'.

Dog: **"Thats the stitch-up, dog!"**

Indeed, the entire court process is about proving something which never existed in the first place.

Just like Dr William Sargant wanted. You can go in for a headache and come out three months later having slept the entire time, have a new belief system installed, and be on the road to your first assassination.

Dr William Sargant called this: "Relieving anxiety by narcosis".

The Judiciary calls this: "A new exciting beginning in crime creation".

The Police call this: "A job well done".

Governments calls this: "Calling the shots".

The public call this: "Don't expect justice in the Judiciary . . . Prison is a training ground for violent crime . . . New Zealand is fascist fronting as socialist."

This has resulted in a population with obliterated memories that can't remember, but still knows where they are, why they're there, and who they are with – to an anxious population wanting to remember, but unable to answer 'Where am I?' and 'How did I get here?' – to complete amnesia for all life's events including the loss of anxiety . . .
"I'm 50. I earn $100 an hour and I've got nothing to show for it. How'd that happen? Oh well."

It is the Judicary's goal to remove all anxiety from the population.

Such a population lives only in the immediate present, can only talk about sensations of the moment, is completely uninfluenced by memories and forward anticipations, and all schizophrenic symptoms have disappeared.

The principal medico-psychological phrase for this is:
'They had lost all ability to judge right from wrong'.

Dog: "So this is serious mind control shit we're talking about here."

Look what they did to me. I spoke up ("The head of the Disputes Tribunal is a drug user", Jan. '94) and they stole my child for 8.5 years (Jan. '94–Aug. '02) arrested me under a someone else's name for an incident 1,000 miles away, then tried to kill me when the custody papers were in the mail (Aug. '02), then another five times, manufactured crime in multiple stitch-ups, blacklisted me, hobbled me, stole my house and section, removed my driver licence, destroyed my income, sabotaged any and all relationships and friendships, then spread institutional bias throughout the Police, Judiciary and all forms of governance . . .

Then they woke up 15 years later, from THEIR OWN DEEP SLEEP, and realised I was a deontic vegetarian and dedicated father with a degree in Architecture, and their fifty year long psychological NAZI experiment had been a complete waste of time, on me.

In the meantime, I had gone through every second Intelligence agency in the world, got their secrets in exchange for a portion of the previous secrets, published their material, presented it as a defense, and had it triple sealed by the High Court.

Dog: "Why, dog, why?"

Because the High Court judges didn't want to have to acknowledge that a their Supreme Court boss, Chief Justice Dame Sian Elias was a chauffeur-shagging contract-killing Sayanim-Mossad agent running the Judiciary from Israel. They know their place, and they're Freemasons.

I'll tell you how biased it is, Dog. I go into court and represent others in a suit and tie and get them off four police charges, and I do the whole thing, from woe to go in two hours. Other lawyers think I'm a lawyer and that's fine with me. We exchange notes and promise to have a drink.

But when I represent myself, or a lawyer represents me . . . there has been no luck in 15 years.

The phrase 'Judiciary you suck' springs to mind.

. . . .

Thomas Szasz, M.D. Professor Emeritus of Psychiatry, 1994: "Psychiatry is the single most destructive force that has affected society within the last 50 years."

Greg Hallett. B.Arch. 1986: "The Judiciary is the single most destructive force that has affected society within the last 50 years. It is modelled on Psychiatry – the single most destructive force that has affected society within the last 50 years."

Psychiatry and the Judiciary are a tape-loop to serve the Banksters, who in turn control the Queen. And what is the Queen's role?

Dog: "She's the wet blanket . . . Hey, I want to go for a walk. Maybe you can throw a stick at a lawyer and I'll get a chance to bite him."

The Bibliography is a list of those who have also exposed occultists. Fucking Insex.

Dog: "If you get me a ring of fire for my birthday, that'll make us even."

How old are you now Dog?

Dog: "I'm not as old as those bitches Sian and Margaret, I can tell you that . . . If they threw the book at you, maybe you can throw a stick at them."

Shit on a stick, I think I just have. Now for Silvia . . .

Dog breath: New Zealand and the Declaration of Helsinki
The following countries are signatories to the Declaration of Helsinki: USA, UK, USSR, West and East Germany, the Holy See (Holy Seat – the central govt. of the Catholic Church and anywhere there is a Catholic embassy or influence), Austria, Belgium, Bulgaria, Canada, Czecho/Slovakia, Cyprus, Denmark, Finland, France, Greece, Hungary, Iceland, Ireland, Italy, Liechtenstein, Luxembourg, Malta, Monaco, Netherlands, Norway, Poland, Portugal, Romania, San Marino, Spain, Sweden, Switzerland, Turkey and Yugoslavia . . .
but not New Zealand.

In October 1997, New Zealand claimed allegiance to the Declaration of Helsinki "statements", only through Section C, 'Principles of Medical Research on Human Subjects', as Document 3. New Zealand claims its Declaration of Helsinki is based on the Cartwright Report (5 August 1988) and this is based on the work of Dame Silvia Cartwright who ran the socio-sexual Satellite Tavistock experiment – the Centrepoint Commune – from on high, without the participants being informed. Like her husband, it was based around paedophilia.

Silvia Cartwright then stole all the Centrepoint member's assets into Public Trust (also in August 1998), only gifting less than 5 % of the NZ$20 million+ to females who claimed sexual abuse – the most prolific complainer borrowing her stories (Smutts-Kennedy).

Silvia Cartwright was twice in breach of the Declaration of Helsinki and her own Cartwright Report, ethics, Operational Code Section 26, Categories 1, 2 & 3.

> "The World Medical Association has developed the Declaration of Helsinki as a statement of ethical principles to provide guidance to physicians and other participants in medical research involving human subjects. Medical research involving human subjects includes research on identifiable human material or identifiable data."[3]

This attempts to limit Helsinki's reach to 'physiolocial-medical', and not 'psychological medical', yet psychological is the bigger killer. NAZI experiments were run on psychological medical torture, which is what the Declaration of Helsinki was designed to prevent. Are they suggesting that the death camps' only result was death, and not psychological torture? What about the scared victims who survived? They kept complaining for decades.

> "The primary guiding principle of health research, established by the Declaration of Helsinki stated: 'Concern for the interests of the subject must always prevail over the interests of science and society'.[4]

As we have shown, society is a social experiment where the citizen is the victim and not informed of what the experiment is. Most still don't know (99.99%).

> "The spirit of this declaration directs researchers to acknowledge the inherent risks of the researcher/subject relationship . . . the researcher . . . develop strategies that protect the subject from . . . risks [and the] patient's interests prevail.
>
> "New Zealand has its own Helsinki document: *The Cartwright Commission Inquiry into Allegations Concerning the Treatment of Cervical Cancer at National Women's Hospital and into Other Matters* (1998) exposed a breakdown in the trustworthiness . . . in terms of the absence of informed consent confounded by unstated boundaries between treatment and research, and a failure to recognise the conflict of interest . . . Most notable in this research project . . . took part in an experiment for which they knew nothing about.
>
> "No longer are researchers trusted to know what is in the patient's best interests and to act accordingly. Instead, an ethics committee (comprising of a balance of academics and laypeople) now approves all human-subject research. The new emphasis is on informed consent; providing the patient with sufficient information about the research to decide their participation . . . informed consent is not sufficiently robust and is undermined when a patient's vulnerability is not acknowledged, and/or when conflicts of interest between the [Judiciary/ Defendant/targetted profiled client] clinician/ researcher/ patient are not recognised and disclosed . . . there are glaring omissions in the code.

---

[3] 'The World Medical Association's Declaration of Helsinki: Historical and Contemporary Perspectives', Delon Human and Sev S. Fluss, Declaration (Helsinki VI) October 2000, opening paragraph.

[4] *The New Zealand Medical Journal*, Journal of the New Zealand Medical Association, 'Informing consent in New Zealand research: researchers' conflict of interest and patient vulnerability', Vol. 118, No. 1210, Martin Tolich, Kate Mary Baldwin, 25 February 2005. '

> "Specifically, there is no requirement . . . for a researcher . . . to acknowledge and justify to any ethics committee that a conflict of interest exists.
>
> "Although research committees are able to request clarification on any matter . . . fail[ure] to recognise the risks of conflicting interests . . . weaknesses in the code results in weak examination . . . Failure to recognise the inherent conflict of interest is the fundamental problem . . . within the Cartwright Commission . . . Professor Green . . . failed to inform his patients of the research and gain their consent . . . failure to differentiate between the patients' individual needs and his research requirements and a failure to recognise this conflict of interest . . . this essential ethical condition was neither part of the [Cartwright] Commission's final report nor has it become part of the Operational Code. Conflict of interest is [only] mentioned in passing."[5]

Dame Silvia Cartwright of the frozen fanny, failed to make any significant improvements on the treatment of women, or men, yet predominantly assigned what would be the Helsinki rights to females, thus making New Zealand the most gender biased country in the world. This fits, as at the time Cartwright was made Governor-General (4 April 2001–4 August 2006) she had 18 complaints about her as a judge – mainly due to "gender bias".

Even Justice Stevens agrees that all a woman has to do to get off a traffic ticket is send in a photocopy of her boobs [High Court, 20 April 2009]. This also applies to 'Dangerous Driving', 'Drunk Driving', and 'Driving through a Police Checkpoint without stopping'.

Is New Zealand a country of men with tits?

> "At a minimum, a researcher should be required to recognise their conflict of interest and describe how they plan to minimise and monitor this. Guide instructions are limited to information about researchers providing copies of notices and/or advertisements – a very narrow view of conflict of interest [indeed].
>
> Operational Code Section 26 reads: Respect for persons requires that greater protection be provided to those persons with diminished autonomy (such persons may include . . . inmates . . . and unconscious patients [everyone who doesn't know how the Police/Judicary operate is unconscious in Court] to ensure that they are not subjected to abuse, exploitation or discrimination.
>
> "Often, additional protection is provided to persons with diminished autonomy by requiring the input/advice of third-person representatives. Other classes of research participants considered more vulnerable include employees of the researcher.
>
> Operational Code Section 26 revised: Respect for persons requires that greater protection be provided to those persons with diminished autonomy [inmates and Defendants unconscious of the experiment] when gaining informed consent. Diminished autonomy status is afforded to three categories of persons/ relationships:
>
> "Category 1: Compromised persons have limited ability to make informed consent. These include inmates and unconscious patients. Protections are needed to ensure that they are not subjected to abuse, exploitation, or discrimination. A remedy is protection provided by the input and advice of third-person representatives.
>
> "Category 2: Persons whose vulnerability is temporary. e.g. emergency situations [fingered by the Police/Infringement Officer/ Informants, and those new in court] need special protections.
>
> "Category 3: Researchers are required to first recognise the relationship then outline and manage this subordinate relationship (e.g. teachers/ students, employers/ managers/ employees, researchers/ patients [Judges/ Police/ Defendant]".[6]

---

[5] *Ibid*.

[6] *Ibid*, paraphrased for your enjoyment.

New Zealand is truly a fascist country fronting as a socialist country.
It is run at the highest levels by paedophiles and their partners.

New Zealand is a fascist paedophile movement fronting as do-good socialism,
whose primary role is to ensure New Zealand is a fascist experiment
for the rest of the world to follow –
a test tube at the bottom of the South Pacific, all isolated and Western.

The only change in New Zealand is in name only.

New Spain?

BIBLIOGRAPHY

(most recent listed first)

BOOKS BY GREG HALLETT
BOOKS BY OTHERS
NEWSPAPERS
MAGAZINES
TELEVISION
MOVIES
RADIO
COURT DOCUMENTS
LEGAL DOCUMENTS
POLICE DOCUMENTS
DEPARTMENT OF CORRECTIONS
PRIVACY COMMISSIONER
OFFICE OF THE OMBUDSMEN
AUCKLAND CITY COUNCIL DOCUMENTS
GOVERNMENT DOCUMENTS/ BILLS
LAND transportsafety AUTHORITY
NEW ZEALAND POST
DICTIONARIES IN PRINT
PODCASTS / WEBCASTS
WIKIPEDIA SEARCHES
WEBSITES
EMAILS, OTHER

BOOKS BY GREG HALLETT (as well as quoted sections in Attachment "R")

New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide, publ. Prince of New Spain, *2007*, pp. 9–10, 13–36, 71–120, 88–90, 100, 117, 130, 150 (incl. footnote 41) 151, 159–60, 163, 167–68, 186–88, 198, 203–10, 218–19, 228, 265, 268–74, Index, p. 281, 283–84.

Gifting the United Nations to Stalin, 'The British Police', publ. FNZ Inc., 2007, pp. 28–30. p. 31, Footnote 14, last page.

Stalin's British Training, Breeding Concubines, Paedophiles at War, FNZ Inc., 2007.

How To Take Over The World, A Right Royal Con, FNZ Inc., 2007, pp. 52, 163–69, 181, 211–13; 239–46.

Hitler Was A British Agent, FNZ Inc., 2005, 2006, pp. 150–53, 389–90, 403, 428, 437, 451–53.

Are You My Father?, The Family Court and Other Experiments, Publ. FNZ Inc., 2002.

BOOKS BY OTHERS

Communism and the Emergence of Democracy, Wydra, Harald, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2007, p. 232.

The Second Messiah, Christopher Knight & Robert Lomas', quoting Juri Lina, January 2007.

The Soul of Iran, Afshin Molavi, Norton, 2005, p. 74; ***'Iran Report'***, 2 February 2004.

The Men Who Stare at Goats, Jon Ronson a.k.a. Ron Jonson, Simon & Schuster, 2004.

Indictment at the Hague: The Milosevic Regime and Crimes of the Balkan Wars, Norman Cigar & Paul Williams, New York University Press, 2002.

A Select Bibliography on Health Aspects of Human Rights, 1984–1999, Sev S. Fluss, Health & Hum., 1999; Zimmerman, pp. 26–27.

John Banks: A Biography, Paul Goldsmith, Penguin Books, Auckland, 1 April 1997, 2001, pp.122, 133, as reviewed by Dr. Michael Bassett.

The Big Breach, From Top Secret to Maximum Security, Inside the Secret World of MI6, Richard Tomlinson, Co-author Nick Fielding, Mainstream Publishing, Moscow, 1 February 2001. After MI-6 pressure wained Harper Collins and Cutting Edge Press also published.

Persian Mirrors, Elaine Sciolino, Touchstone, 2000, pp. 239, 244.

New Zealand Who's Who, 1995 Edition, Edited by Alister Taylor & Deborah Coddington.

Forging War: The Media in Serbia, Croatia, Bosnia, and Bosnia-Hercegovina, Mark Thompson, The Bath Press, England, 1994, p. 60.

Official and confidential: The secret life of J.Edgar Hoover, Anthony Summers, GP Putnam's Sons, 1993.

In the Sleep Room, Anne Collins, Lester & Orpen Dennys, Toronto, 1988, pp. 39, 42–43, 133.

Journey Into Madness, Gordon Thomas, Bantam Press, London, 1988, pp. 273–274, 276.

A Father, A Son and the CIA, Harvey Weinstein, Publ. James Lorimer & Co., Tor., 1988, p. 138.

THE WORLD'S GREATEST SPIES & SPYMASTERS, Roger Boar & Nigel Blundell, Octopus Books Limited, London, 1984, pp. 128–33.

The Search for the Manchurian Candidate: The CIA and Mind Control, John D. Marks, Times Book 1979, chapter 5, p. 144.

Silent Weapons for a Quiet War, An Introductory Programming Manual, *Operations Research Technical Manual*, May 1979, No 74–1120, pp. 2–7, 10–21.

An Encyclopaedia of New Zealand 1966, 'Racing, Horse' and 'Royal Visits'.

Studies in the Structure of the American Economy, copyrighted in 1953 by Wassily Leontief, International Sciences Press Inc., White Plains, New York (for an I.R.S. source list).

Jewish History Sourcebook: 'An Oath Taken by Jews in Frankfurt am (on the) Main, about 1392 CE' [like the Rothschilds, then called 'Bauer'].

Bible, Leviticus, chapter 16, cf. Exodus 30:10; Leviticus 23:27–31, 25:9; Numbers 29:7–11; The First Epistle of JOHN, 5.6–5.9.

Dr William Sargant wrote:

Battle for the Mind*; A physiology of conversion and brain-washing*, Malor Books, Cambridge, MA, 1997, 2nd Ed; ***Battle for the Mind****: The Mechanics of Indoctrination, Brainwashing & Thought Control* (1957);

The Mind Possessed: A Physiology of Possession, Mysticism, and Faith Healing (1975);

The Unquiet Mind – an autobiography (1967);

An Introduction to Somatic Methods of Treatment in Psychiatry (with Eliot Slater, 1946);

An Introduction to Physical Methods of Treatment in Psychiatry, with Eliot Slater, Publisher, Churchill Livingstone, Edinburgh, 1944, assisted by Desmond Kelly in 1972, 5th ed, pp. 89–96.

NEWSPAPERS

Associated Free Press, The Hague, 1 August 2008.

B92 *News*, 'Šešelj: Đinđić killer merits same glory as Princip', 21 May 2008.

Baltimore Sun Staff, Stephanie Desmon, originally published 9 August 2002.

BBC News: Profile : 'Ratko Mladic', 31 July 2008, 23 September 2003.

CNN, SYDNEY, Australia, 'Third day of wildfire threatens Sydney', Grant Holloway, 5 December 2002.

Congoo News, Reuters India, 'Milosevic widow, son granted asylum in Russia', 1 February 2008.

Egypt State Information Service, 'New Zealand deports two Israeli spies', 30 September 2004.

Global-L *Mossad* ***article***, 'Mossad man's history of bungles', Nicky Hager, 27 February 2005.

Guardian, UK, 'Tony's the kind of Guy', 14 January 2009.

Howick and Pakuranga Times, 'High-flying helicopter business in receivership', Cameron Broadhurst, 22 May 2008.

IPI, Slobodan Milosevic Interview, Belgrade, 30 April 1999.

Israeli Press Review, 'Insights into new Mossad chief Meir Dagan', Lebanonwire, 17 September 2002.

New York Times, 'Showdown in Yugoslavia: An Ally; China, Once a Supporter of Milosevic Against NATO, Sends Its Congratulations to Kostunica', Erik Eckholm, 8 October 2000;

New York Times magazine, 'The Shah's Health: A Political Gamble', 17 May 1981, section 6, p 48, New York edition.

New Zealand Herald, 'Education ministry admits $20m error', 1 June 2009; 'Cloak but no daggers as Clark checks out', 9 April 2009; 'Valedictory Speech by Rt Hon Helen Clark', 8 April 2008; 'Key calls on SIS to shelve files on MPs', Claire Trevett, 17 March 2009; Bernard Orsman, 27 February 2009, A3; 'Sian Elias received a letter from Patrick O'Brien in which he claimed to have lied under oath', 12 October 2008; Front page, A1, 2 September 2008; 'The truth about David and me', Margaret Pope, 28 June 2008; 'Brash backs probe panel', 23 January 2006; 'Sale of Blake's boat threatens end for nature project', Claire Trevett, 8 August 2003.

New Zealand Press Association, Wellington, 26 May 2008.

New Zealand Truth, 25 December 2008, pp. 1–2, 29 May 2008, p. 5, 23 August 2007, p. 5, 22 March 2007, pp. 1 & 5, all of it.

Otago Daily Times, 'Ellis inquiry cost much less than $500,000 stated', 26 July 2001.

Pacific News, 'Jailed Israeli spy worked for security firm', 2004.

Politika, Serbian Newspaper, citing Serbian military intelligence leak, early February 2006.

Reuters 'Human tests of avian flu vaccine underway', 25 March 2005; and ***New Zealand Herald*** [five months later on] 1 September 2005.

Scoop, 'NGOs Claim Wanted Israeli Agent Barkan In North Korea', State Of It, Selwyn Manning, Scoop Co-Editor, 19 July 2004.

SundayStar Times, About Town, 5 April 2009, p. 31, 20 July 2008, p. 38, 20 January 2008, p. 9, 23 December 2007, p. 9; Nicky Hager, 'Australians aware of agent's connection to Mossad', 27 February 2005.

The Auckland Star [whenever].

The Australian, Wise Counsel from Don Stewart on Police Corruption, 11 January 2007.

The Australian Jewish News, 'PM to received B'nai B'rith's top honour', Gedaliah Afterman, 8 May 2006.

The Dominion Post, 'Two Mossad spies jailed in New Zealand', Vernon Small and Michael Pelly, 16 July 2004.

The Sun, Mike Sullivan, 11 March 2003.

The Timaru Herald, *'Global Warming Debunked'*, 19 May 2007.

The Times, June 2005. London, 'Angry Serbs topple the leadership of Vojvodina province; Demonstrations against the Communist Party; Yugoslavia, 7 October 1988.

University of Waikato News, 5 January 2004.

Washington Post, Slobodan Milosevic Interview, Belgrade, 16 December 1998.

Weekend Herald (NZ), 'Admired Clark can hold her head high', 24 January 2009, A4.

MAGAZINES

Metro magazine, CLARK VS KEY, March 2008, pp. 33, 40.

Te Karaka, Summer 2008–2009, p. 59.

The Darling monthly, 'A chat with His Worship, Mayor John Banks QSO', August 2008, p. 22.

Forbes Asia, 18 Sept. 2006.

Journal of American Public Health, 96(1), 126-131, **'Minimum Purchasing Age for Alcohol and Traffic Crash Injuries Among 15- to 19-Year-Olds in New Zealand'**, Kypros Kypri, Robert B. Voas, John D. Langley, Shaun C.R. Stephenson, Dorothy J. Begg, A. Scott Tippetts, Gabrielle S. Davie, January 2006; Reprinted in ***Reporter***, newsletter of the International Council on Alcohol, Drugs and Traffic Safety, Winter 2006; and **Statistics New Zealand, 'Grapes, hops and alcopops'**, page last modified, 16 January 2009.

Uncensored magazine, Mikey Havoc's Column: The Snark, 14 January 2006.

Listener, David Lomas, 'The Fall of Mr Asia', 23–29 October 2004, Vol 196 No 3363.

UVS International News Flash, TGR Helicorp Unveils SNARK VTOL UAV, 4 June 2004.

Gizmag, 2004.

NBR Personal Investor, 'Wilson Neill failure tops $15m', Nick Stride, *28 June 2002*.

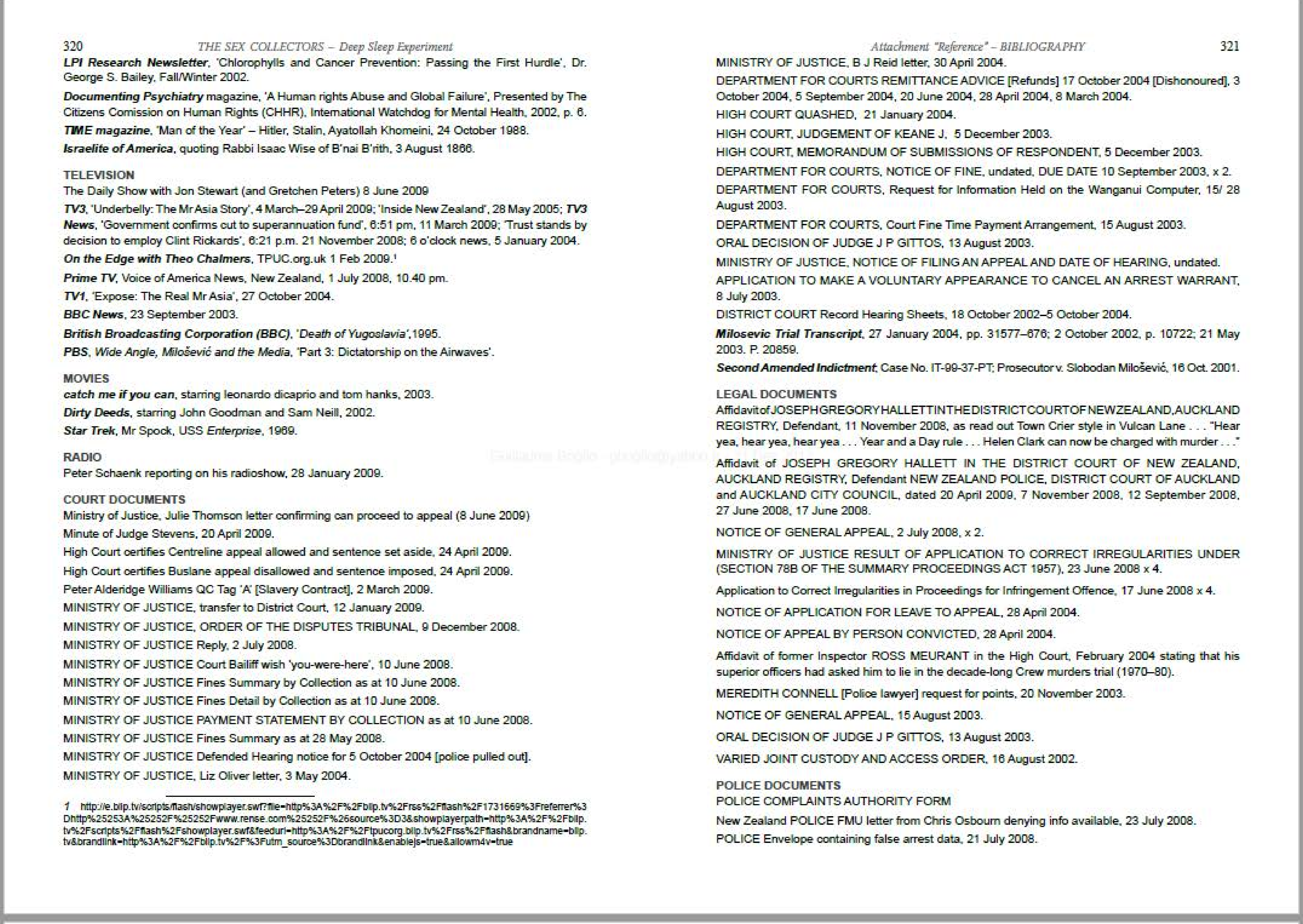

LPI Research Newsletter, 'Chlorophylls and Cancer Prevention: Passing the First Hurdle', Dr. George S. Bailey, Fall/Winter 2002.

Documenting Psychiatry magazine, 'A Human rights Abuse and Global Failure', Presented by The Citizens Comission on Human Rights (CHHR), International Watchdog for Mental Health, 2002, p. 6.

TIME magazine, 'Man of the Year' – Hitler, Stalin, Ayatollah Khomeini, 24 October 1988.

Israelite of America, quoting Rabbi Isaac Wise of B'nai B'rith, 3 August 1866.

TELEVISION

The Daily Show with Jon Stewart (and Gretchen Peters) 8 June 2009

TV3, 'Underbelly: The Mr Asia Story', 4 March–29 April 2009; 'Inside New Zealand', 28 May 2005; ***TV3 News***, 'Government confirms cut to superannuation fund', 6:51 pm, 11 March 2009; 'Trust stands by decision to employ Clint Rickards', 6:21 p.m. 21 November 2008; 6 o'clock news, 5 January 2004.

On the Edge with Theo Chalmers, TPUC.org.uk 1 Feb 2009.[1]

Prime TV, Voice of America News, New Zealand, 1 July 2008, 10.40 pm.

TV1, 'Expose: The Real Mr Asia', 27 October 2004.

BBC News, 23 September 2003.

British Broadcasting Corporation (BBC), *'Death of Yugoslavia'*,1995.

PBS, *Wide Angle, Milošević and the Media*, 'Part 3: Dictatorship on the Airwaves'.

MOVIES

catch me if you can, starring leonardo dicaprio and tom hanks, 2003.

Dirty Deeds, starring John Goodman and Sam Neill, 2002.

Star Trek, Mr Spock, USS *Enterprise*, 1969.

RADIO

Peter Schaenk reporting on his radioshow, 28 January 2009.

COURT DOCUMENTS

Ministry of Justice, Julie Thomson letter confirming can proceed to appeal (8 June 2009)

Minute of Judge Stevens, 20 April 2009.

High Court certifies Centreline appeal allowed and sentence set aside, 24 April 2009.

High Court certifies Buslane appeal disallowed and sentence imposed, 24 April 2009.

Peter Alderidge Williams QC Tag 'A' [Slavery Contract], 2 March 2009.

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE, transfer to District Court, 12 January 2009.

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE, ORDER OF THE DISPUTES TRIBUNAL, 9 December 2008.

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE Reply, 2 July 2008.

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE Court Bailiff wish 'you-were-here', 10 June 2008.

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE Fines Summary by Collection as at 10 June 2008.

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE Fines Detail by Collection as at 10 June 2008.

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE PAYMENT STATEMENT BY COLLECTION as at 10 June 2008.

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE Fines Summary as at 28 May 2008.

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE Defended Hearing notice for 5 October 2004 [police pulled out].

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE, Liz Oliver letter, 3 May 2004.

---

[1] http://e.blip.tv/scripts/flash/showplayer.swf?file=http%3A%2F%2Fblip.tv%2Frss%2Fflash%2F1731669%3Freferrer%3Dhttp%25253A%25252F%25252Fwww.rense.com%25252F%26source%3D3&showplayerpath=http%3A%2F%2Fblip.tv%2Fscripts%2Fflash%2Fshowplayer.swf&feedurl=http%3A%2F%2Ftpucorg.blip.tv%2Frss%2Fflash&brandname=blip.tv&brandlink=http%3A%2F%2Fblip.tv%2F%3Futm_source%3Dbrandlink&enablejs=true&allowm4v=true

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE, B J Reid letter, 30 April 2004.

DEPARTMENT FOR COURTS REMITTANCE ADVICE [Refunds] 17 October 2004 [Dishonoured], 3 October 2004, 5 September 2004, 20 June 2004, 28 April 2004, 8 March 2004.

HIGH COURT QUASHED, 21 January 2004.

HIGH COURT, JUDGEMENT OF KEANE J, 5 December 2003.

HIGH COURT, MEMORANDUM OF SUBMISSIONS OF RESPONDENT, 5 December 2003.

DEPARTMENT FOR COURTS, NOTICE OF FINE, undated, DUE DATE 10 September 2003, x 2.

DEPARTMENT FOR COURTS, Request for Information Held on the Wanganui Computer, 15/ 28 August 2003.

DEPARTMENT FOR COURTS, Court Fine Time Payment Arrangement, 15 August 2003.

ORAL DECISION OF JUDGE J P GITTOS, 13 August 2003.

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE, NOTICE OF FILING AN APPEAL AND DATE OF HEARING, undated.

APPLICATION TO MAKE A VOLUNTARY APPEARANCE TO CANCEL AN ARREST WARRANT, 8 July 2003.

DISTRICT COURT Record Hearing Sheets, 18 October 2002–5 October 2004.

Milosevic Trial Transcript, 27 January 2004, pp. 31577–676; 2 October 2002, p. 10722; 21 May 2003. P. 20859.

Second Amended Indictment, Case No. IT-99-37-PT; Prosecutor v. Slobodan Milošević, 16 Oct. 2001.

LEGAL DOCUMENTS

Affidavit of JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT IN THE DISTRICT COURT OF NEW ZEALAND, AUCKLAND REGISTRY, Defendant, 11 November 2008, as read out Town Crier style in Vulcan Lane . . . "Hear yea, hear yea, hear yea . . . Year and a Day rule . . . Helen Clark can now be charged with murder . . ."

Affidavit of JOSEPH GREGORY HALLETT IN THE DISTRICT COURT OF NEW ZEALAND, AUCKLAND REGISTRY, Defendant NEW ZEALAND POLICE, DISTRICT COURT OF AUCKLAND and AUCKLAND CITY COUNCIL, dated 20 April 2009, 7 November 2008, 12 September 2008, 27 June 2008, 17 June 2008.

NOTICE OF GENERAL APPEAL, 2 July 2008, x 2.

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE RESULT OF APPLICATION TO CORRECT IRREGULARITIES UNDER (SECTION 78B OF THE SUMMARY PROCEEDINGS ACT 1957), 23 June 2008 x 4.

Application to Correct Irregularities in Proceedings for Infringement Offence, 17 June 2008 x 4.

NOTICE OF APPLICATION FOR LEAVE TO APPEAL, 28 April 2004.

NOTICE OF APPEAL BY PERSON CONVICTED, 28 April 2004.

Affidavit of former Inspector ROSS MEURANT in the High Court, February 2004 stating that his superior officers had asked him to lie in the decade-long Crew murders trial (1970–80).

MEREDITH CONNELL [Police lawyer] request for points, 20 November 2003.

NOTICE OF GENERAL APPEAL, 15 August 2003.

ORAL DECISION OF JUDGE J P GITTOS, 13 August 2003.

VARIED JOINT CUSTODY AND ACCESS ORDER, 16 August 2002.

POLICE DOCUMENTS

POLICE COMPLAINTS AUTHORITY FORM

New Zealand POLICE FMU letter from Chris Osbourn denying info available, 23 July 2008.

POLICE Envelope containing false arrest data, 21 July 2008.

New Zealand POLICE letter from Dr A R Jack, 25 November 2004.

New Zealand POLICE letter from I J Mc Arthur, 9 November 2004.

New Zealand POLICE, Wayne Annan letter, 10 May 2004.

New Zealand POLICE, Superintendent S S Wildon letter, 29 April 2004.

New Zealand POLICE letter re Constable James Matewhinau Cassin's Criminal Record, 19 December 2003, 25 November 2003.

New Zealand POLICE J. CASSIN dated 19 September 2002 **DELAYING HEARING FOR 11 MONTHS** to 13 August 2003 [**"Justice delayed is Justice Denied"**].

Police Executive as at 1 August 2002.

POLICE LOOSE LEAF CHARGE SHEET, 22 June 1999.

POLICE BAIL BOND, 22 June 1999.

POLICE NOTICE TO PERSON IN CUSTODY, 22 June 1999.

DEPARTMENT OF CORRECTIONS

DEPARTMENT FOR CORRECTIONS REMITTANCE ADVICE, 18 December 2003.
[They purchase my book ***Are You My Father?, The Family Court and Other Experiments***.]

Fines Refund, 18 December 2003.

PRIVACY COMMISSIONER

Phillipa Ballard letter, 17 February 2004.

OFFICE OF THE OMBUDSMEN

John Belgrave letter, 23 December 2004; 'HOW A COMPLAINT IS PROCESSED' 16 Dec. 2004.

P Trower letter 17 January 2005, 6 April 2004.

Anand Sayanand letter, 31 January 2005, 8 December 2004, 2 September 2004, 14 April 2004, 23 March 2004.

Leo Donnelly letter, 26 February 2004.

GOVERNMENT DOCUMENTS/ BILLS

MINISTRY OF JUSTICE JURY SUMMONS & RESPONSE FORM, 25 November 2008.

ELECTORAL FINANCE BILL, 18 DECEMBER 2007.

AUCKLAND CITY COUNCIL DOCUMENTS

Parking Receipt, 2 July 2008.

Bus Lane Ticket, 19 September 2008: NOTICE OF FINE, 21 March 2009; 17 February 2009 letter; Reminder notice in respect of infringement offence, 12 December 2008; Infringement Notice [undated]; 20 October 2008 letter; 24 September 2008 letter and DRIVER DETAILS FORM; 19 September 2008 Bus Lane Ticket 19 September 2008.

Taxi Stand Ticket, 14 Nov. 2008: Reminder notice in respect of infringement offence, 15 Dec. 2008; 16 December 2008 letter advising notice has been cancelled.

High Street Ticket, 11 Nov. 2008: Reminder notice in respect of infringement offence, 11 Dec. 2008; 2 March 2009 letter; 13 March 2009 letter.

LAND transportsafety AUTHORITY

Request for Motor Vehicle Details, 17 August 2005; Temporary New Zealand Driver Licence, 5 Dec. 2003.

NEW ZEALAND POST

NEW ZEALAND POST REGPOST T&TRACE, 1 October 2008, 1 December 2004, 1 November 2004.

DICTIONARIES IN PRINT

American Heritage Dictionary, 'Common Law'.

American Heritage New Dictionary of Cultural Literacy, Third Edition, 'Common Law'.

Black's Eight Law Dictionary, 'Summary Judgement'.

Black's Fifth Law Dictionary, 'Summary', p. 1287.

Butterworth's NZ Law Dictionary, 5th Edition, Spiller.

Concise Oxford Dictionary, 'Asservation', 'tort'.

Dictionary of New Zealand Biography, Brian Easton.

Merriam-Webster Dictionary of Law.

OXFORD REFERENCE ENGLISH, 2008.

PODCASTS / WEBCASTS

Michael Tsarion: 'Brotherhood of Death', ***Red Ice Creations***, Sweden, 2009.

PODCASTS / WEBCASTS of Greg Hallett

The Real Deal, America, with Dr. Jim Fetzer Ph.D, 19 February 2010.
The Real Deal, America, 29 January 2010.
The Real Deal, America, 26 November 2009.

Rumour Mill News, Radio RMN, America, with Rayelan Allan, 5 January 2010.
Rumour Mill News, Radio RMN, America, 22 December 2009.

The Richard Syrett Show, Glastonbury Radio, England & Canada, 4 August 2009.
The Richard Syrett Show, Canada, with Richard Syrett, 26 April 2006.

Red Ice Creations, Sweden, with Henrik Palmgren, 19 February 2008.

Cloak & Dagger, Canada, with Dr. Stefan Grossmann Ph.D. & Lenny Bloom, 3 February 2008.
Cloak & Dagger, Canada, 19 October 2006.
Cloak & Dagger, Canada, 16 October 2006.
Cloak & Dagger, Canada, 9 October 2006.

Channel Z, America, with Zeph Daniel, 18 October 2006.
Channel Z, America, 7 August 2006.
Channel Z, America, 9 May 2006.
Channel Z, America, 19 April 2006.
Channel Z, America, 27 March 2006.
Channel Z, America, 4 January 2006.

WIKIPEDIA SEARCHES

Barry Gustafson; 'Children Overboard Affair'; Crinoline; Cypres (cy-près doctrine); Dennis Canavan; Douche Bag; Drongo; Elizabeth Angela Marguerite Bowes-Lyon; Georgia Guidestones; Lord George Robertson; Michael King; 'Monarchies of Europe, Yugoslavian Royal Family'; Radovan Karadžić; Ratko Mladić; Slobodan Milošević; Slavery, Involuntary Servitude; Winston Peters.

WEBSITES

Auckland Regional Council media release citing Mrs Brosnahan, 23 January 2002.

BBC, ON THIS DAY 16 Jan. 1979: 'Shah of Iran flees into exile'; Gulf News.com, 7 Nov. 1978.

Boeing YAL-1, The Death Ray.

Brady Bunch.

BRITISH MONARCHY PRESS RELEASES & SPEECHES, ANNOUNCEMENT OF A NEW GOVERNOR GENERAL OF NEW ZEALAND, 3 April 2006.

Brize Norton, RAF.

Computer History Museum, Cray-1 30th Anniversary presentation, 2006.

Deloitte.com.

Dictionary.com: 'Prima Donna'; 'Permanence'; 'Clarity'.

Encyclopedia, 'John Banks, New Zealand'.

Executive Government Archive, 'Hon John Banks'.

Explorers in Antarctica Find Fresh Evidence of Global Warming, Nairobi, 8 Feb. 2001.

FreakingNews.com.

Haigh Lyon website.

Hugh Lynn – New Zealand, The Path of Life, 'Burning up the Years 2'.

International Police Association, Hobbies, Penpals, and Collections, 'Police hats from around the world', Bruce Hutton. bruce.hutton@police.govt.nz [Bruce murdered his wife].

***Jewish Encyclopedia* on line**: Joseph Jacobs, Max Schloessinger, Cyrus Adler and Francis L. Cohen, and *THE KOL NIDRE*, www.jewishencyclopedia.com/view.jsp?artid=340&letter=K.

Mediaworks, MEDIA RELEASES, 'New Hosts with a blend of Politics and Sport', 26 January 2005.

National Socialist Movement website, 'Kara and Kelman released'.

New World Order, the CIA, website and movie.

New Zealand Conservative, 'Helen Clark named Greatest Living New Zealander in Poll', 24 Jan. 2009.

New Zealand Executive Government News Release Archive, 1 Nov. 1996; 'Hon John Luxton Minister of Police | New Commissioner of Police Announced', 28 May 1996.

NoCowboys, 28 July 2008, 27 July 2008, etc.

Peter Frampton.

The National Business Review, 'Helen Clark lands top UN job', 25 March 2009.

The Phrase Finder: 'Sent to Coventry'.

Tony's Original Steak & Seafood Restaurant *website*.

Whale Oil, 'Helen Clark say goodbye to parliament, and we wave good riddance to her', 8 April 2009; 'left of Mao, a bloody communist and a lesbian', 8 April 2009.

WordNet, 'Common Law'.

WEB ADDRESSES

http://www.abovetopsecret.com/forum/thread74023/pg1, 'Australian PM John Howard, Son of a Nazi', 18 August 2004 [John Howard is also Jewish].

'Antarctic Ice Loss Unprecedented in 1998', 12 May 1999.

cain@p@kosmos.wcc.govt.nz,'Police probe mans death in Citibank disk case', 9 September 1992, Pat Cain, as summarised from *The Dominion* and *The New Zealand Herald*.

http://free---thinker.blogspot.com/2009/01/great-oil-gas-robbery.html.

http://www.mapreport.com/countries/sydney.html, Sydney Timeline, World News, Australia.

http://lpi.oregonstate.edu/fw06/chlorophylls.html, Linus Pauling Institute, Micronutrient Research for Optimum Health, LPI Research Newsletter, Fall 2006, 'Cancer Prevention by Chlorophylls', Michael T. Simonich, Ph.D., LPI Research Associate.

http://peterellis.org.nz/people/ClintRickards/timeline.htm.

www.Ananova.com, 'Vampire hunters drove stake through Milošević heart'.

www.balkanalysis.com, 'An Insider's View', Christopher Deliso, Kosovo, 1999, 17 June 2005.

www.beehive.govt.nz, 'Helen Clark Brazil: new business partnerships, Speech by Rt Hon Helen Clark, Prime Minister of New Zealand, to business luncheon, Brasilia, 20 November 2001'.

www. cepnz.co.nz/quotes. html, 'George Wood MAYOR - NORTH SHORE CITY'.

www.companies.govt.nz . . . NOCOWBOYS LIMITED DIRECTORS – Zane Garrick KENNEDY, Daniel Mark KENNEDY, Bruce Douglas Taylor LINDSAY, Matthew Alexander MUIR, Shane Vincent WOTHERSPOON.

www.ehso.com/ehshome/aflatoxin.php, Environment, Health and Safety Online, free, objective information you can use, 'Aflatoxins in Your Food and their Effect on Your Health'.

www.frst.govt.nz.

www.guardian.co.uk, 'Ex-Labour MP loses third son', 20 March 2007.

www.kiwisfirst.com.

www.medhelp.org, AIS website and *AIIaS* newsletter.

www.http://mindfield.com.

www. latitude38.com/features/Blake.htm 'Peter Blake – Murder on the Amazon'.

www.Minter Ellison Rudd Watts – Zane Kennedy.

www.nccg,org/ezion_geber/judaism4.html, David Icke, 'Was Hitler a Rothschild?', 2003.

www.nzherald.co.nz/organisation/story.cfm?o id=131&ObjectID=10396086.

www.professionalsoldiers.com/forums/printthread.php?t=6100&pp=40.

www.religioustolerance.org, 'Christchurch, New Zealand, Ritual Abuse Case'.

www.Sunday-Herald.com, 'Vampire slayer impales Milošević to stop return', Gabriel Ronay.

www.theforbiddenknowledge.com/hardtruth/silentweaponsforquietwars.htm.

EMAILS

Victoria de Lange 'What a Joke!', 31 March 2009.

Talon laser strike, 17 March 2009.

You are in a Mafia blacklist, 21 July 2008.

Helen Clark's nomination to head of the United Nations Development Programme, 26 March 2009 – Greg Hallett to the UNDP-newsroom@undp.org.

OTHER

Historian and Architect rattles Queen's Counsel – Just how corrupt is the New Zealand Judiciary?, 8 December 2008.

The University of Auckland PRIVATE & CONFIDENTIAL, **degree confirmation**, Nov. 2008.

Warehouse Battery Charge & Battery receipts (19–20 September 2008).

NATIONAL LIBRARY OF NEW ZEALAND envelope address to me – the **PRINCE OF NEW SPAIN**, 6 March 2008.

Driving Sound receipts (8–28 February 2008).

Waitakere City Council, PART B, Council, Wednesday, 29 November 2006, Commencing at 5.30 pm, REPORT OF THE MAYOR.

NZ Howard League for Penal Reform letter, 4 November 2004.

Rotary Club of Rarotonga thank you, 11 August 2002.

Address by Secretary of State Madeleine K. Albright To the UN Human Rights Commission; Palais des Nations, 23 March 2000.

President to Veterans Groups on Kosovo; Eisenhower Hall, Ft. McNair, 13 May 1999.

The Law Reform (Year and a Day Rule) Act 1996, given Royal Assent on 17 June 1996.

Auckland University Bachelor of Architecture Degree, 8 May 1986.

Debt management of Queen in Right of New Zealand, MS. ROSEMARY BANKS for US$150 million due on 11 January 2011 (signed 25 years prior on 11 January 1986).

Anglo-Egyptian Negotiations, Vimeo, 11 July 1954.

**More cheap cars dumped into Auckland
to pay irrational fines,
to pay for the bribes of irrational Mayors,
rorted for their cross-dressing.**

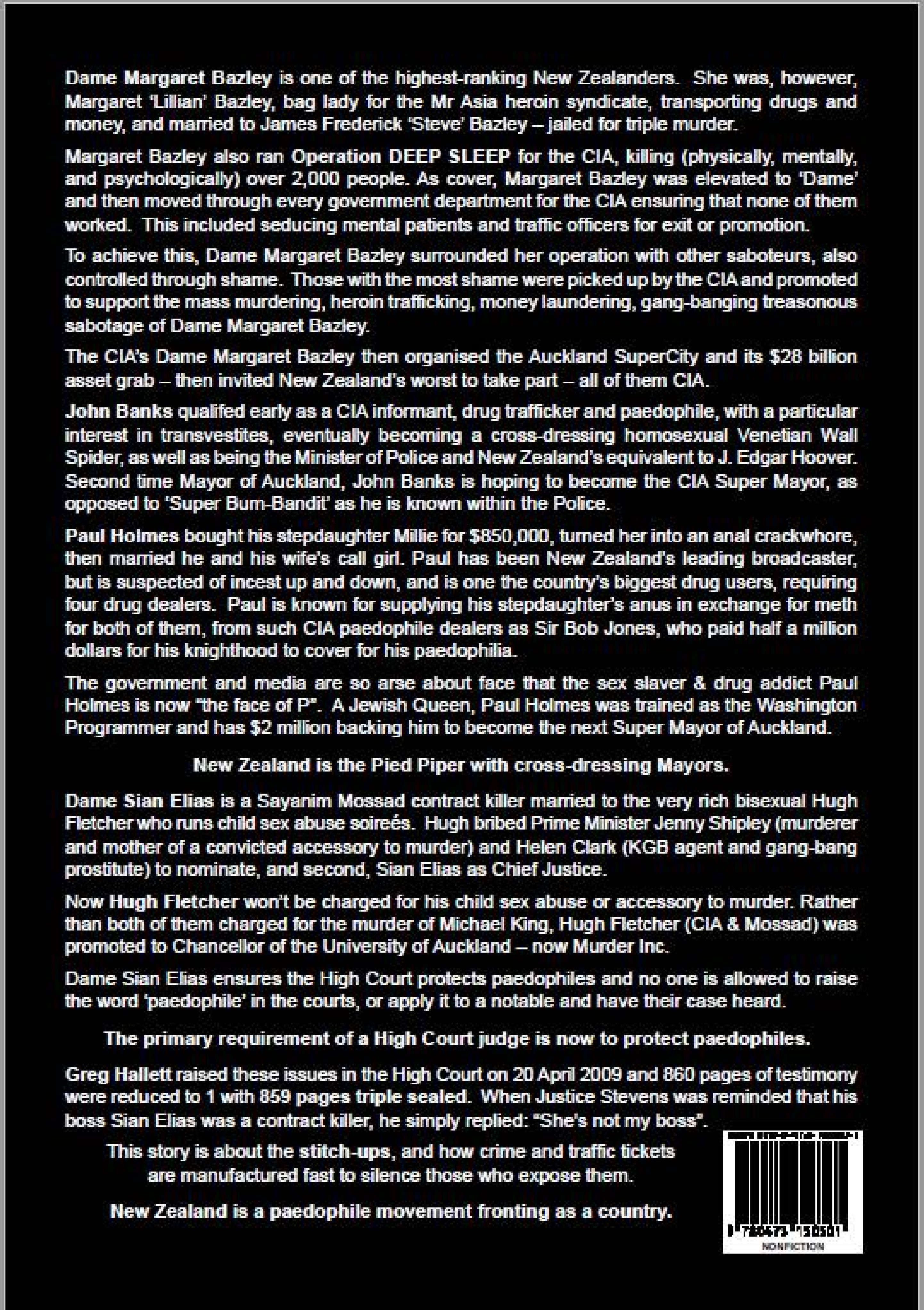

Dame Margaret Bazley is one of the highest-ranking New Zealanders. She was, however, Margaret 'Lillian' Bazley, bag lady for the Mr Asia heroin syndicate, transporting drugs and money, and married to James Frederick 'Steve' Bazley – jailed for triple murder.

Margaret Bazley also ran **Operation DEEP SLEEP** for the CIA, killing (physically, mentally, and psychologically) over 2,000 people. As cover, Margaret Bazley was elevated to 'Dame' and then moved through every government department for the CIA ensuring that none of them worked. This included seducing mental patients and traffic officers for exit or promotion.

To achieve this, Dame Margaret Bazley surrounded her operation with other saboteurs, also controlled through shame. Those with the most shame were picked up by the CIA and promoted to support the mass murdering, heroin trafficking, money laundering, gang-banging treasonous sabotage of Dame Margaret Bazley.

The CIA's Dame Margaret Bazley then organised the Auckland SuperCity and its $28 billion asset grab – then invited New Zealand's worst to take part – all of them CIA.

John Banks qualifed early as a CIA informant, drug trafficker and paedophile, with a particular interest in transvestites, eventually becoming a cross-dressing homosexual Venetian Wall Spider, as well as being the Minister of Police and New Zealand's equivalent to J. Edgar Hoover. Second time Mayor of Auckland, John Banks is hoping to become the CIA Super Mayor, as opposed to 'Super Bum-Bandit' as he is known within the Police.

Paul Holmes bought his stepdaughter Millie for $850,000, turned her into an anal crackwhore, then married he and his wife's call girl. Paul has been New Zealand's leading broadcaster, but is suspected of incest up and down, and is one the country's biggest drug users, requiring four drug dealers. Paul is known for supplying his stepdaughter's anus in exchange for meth for both of them, from such CIA paedophile dealers as Sir Bob Jones, who paid half a million dollars for his knighthood to cover for his paedophilia.

The government and media are so arse about face that the sex slaver & drug addict Paul Holmes is now "the face of P". A Jewish Queen, Paul Holmes was trained as the Washington Programmer and has $2 million backing him to become the next Super Mayor of Auckland.

New Zealand is the Pied Piper with cross-dressing Mayors.

Dame Sian Elias is a Sayanim Mossad contract killer married to the very rich bisexual Hugh Fletcher who runs child sex abuse soireés. Hugh bribed Prime Minister Jenny Shipley (murderer and mother of a convicted accessory to murder) and Helen Clark (KGB agent and gang-bang prostitute) to nominate, and second, Sian Elias as Chief Justice.

Now **Hugh Fletcher** won't be charged for his child sex abuse or accessory to murder. Rather than both of them charged for the murder of Michael King, Hugh Fletcher (CIA & Mossad) was promoted to Chancellor of the University of Auckland – now Murder Inc.

Dame Sian Elias ensures the High Court protects paedophiles and no one is allowed to raise the word 'paedophile' in the courts, or apply it to a notable and have their case heard.

The primary requirement of a High Court judge is now to protect paedophiles.

Greg Hallett raised these issues in the High Court on 20 April 2009 and 860 pages of testimony were reduced to 1 with 859 pages triple sealed. When Justice Stevens was reminded that his boss Sian Elias was a contract killer, he simply replied: "She's not my boss".

This story is about the **stitch-ups**, and how crime and traffic tickets are manufactured fast to silence those who expose them.

New Zealand is a paedophile movement fronting as a country.

NONFICTION

INSEX

Dates
20 January **1980** 78
1982/83 and 1986/87 78
January **1994** 26, 74, 76, 78
May 1999 13
21 June 1999 13
22 June 1999 14-15, 37, 123-24, Charge Sheet 139, 153, 155
2001 propaganda book, 'Helen' 266
January **2002** 266
2 April 2002 21, 25, 92, 263
12 May 2002 on Mother's Day 15
20/21 July 2002 264
21 August 2002 62, 243, 265
4 July **2003**, New Zealand's Anti-Independence Day 266
13 August 2003 16-17, 31
18 August 2003 17
23 August "2003", ten days after the 13 August 2003 District Court hearing 15-17, 25, 31, 243, 255-57, 277-78
28 August 2003 15, 17
28 August 2003 and 31 January 2005 15
20 November 2003 237
3 December 2003 237
5 December 2003 91
10 December 2003 91
13 January **2004** 265
3 February 2004 265
4 February 2004 21, 265
9:55 pm Friday 5 March 2004, small bomb tossed corner of Queen & Custom's St,middle of downtown Auckland 265
29 March 2004 265
26 April 2004 301
May 2004 Mossad reconnaisance in prep for murder 18
14–22 May 2004 25, 263
22 May 2004 confronted the Mossad agent 18
4 April **2006** 79
7 July 2006, Satyanand invested as Knight of Justice of Most Venerable Order of Hospital of St John of Jerusalem 22
27 July **2007** attempt by poisoned coffee 25
13 October 2007 118
26 October 2007 25
31 October 2007 105, 118
19 November 2007 105, 118
17–27 March **2008** 25
3 June 2008 25, 75
2 July 2008 101-02, 104, District Court Notice of Appeal citing murder 267
21 July 2008 123, 139
28 October 2008 120
7 November 2008, Affidavit lodged 5, 104
21 November 2008 5
7 January **2009** 121
20 April 2009 104, 111, 118
25 April 2009 105, 119
30 April 2009 111-12, 120-21
3/4 May 2009 (8.30–1.30 am) & 5/6 May (6.30–12pm) 120
May 5, 2009, 3:42 am 120
1 pm 7 May 2009 120
12 May 2009 120
14 May 2009 115

Percentage
75% non-heterosexual 73
police create over 80% of all crime 292, 295
85% of traffic tickets & loss of licence are against males 295
90 % of murders remain unsolved because police are involved in committing them 30
99 % become permanent 293
99.99 % 118-19

Money
$180 "no left turn 253
$1,490.00 6, 61, 73, 253
$4,500, $4,800, $9,300 76
$5,625.00 93
$60,000 each 264
$100,000 tax credit 264
$200,000+ CIA military helicopter fraud 58
$320,000 301
$500,000 302
$772,543.80 compensation for loss of licence 228, 277, 284-85
US$750,000 48
NZ$1,000,000 63
NZ$2 million from Police as reward for rape 18
$3.4 billion 75
$28 billion asset grab 119

Time Reference
60 Minutes 299
5 days late 237
65 days 50
73 days prior on 8 August 2007 118
10 months, 11 months, 8 months, 6 months, 8 months and 11 months 79

Numbers
2IC of Papakura Chapter of Black Power 14, 140
2IC of the SIS 48, 53, 55, 58-59, 75, 77
6 murder attempts, 2 poisonings, 3 forced house sales, 2 forced section sales, 5 house moves, numerous house break-ins, 6 attacks on my car, 2 buggings by the SIS, numerous mail tamperings, at least 28 false charges 74
12 MKULTRA police officers 62
17-year-old boy, just out of cells, taken all drugs available 92
20 false police charges 14
20–40 times more intense 50
90° degree head twist 292
110-volt electroshocks 50
150 volts 50
180–182 Surrey Crescent 93
800 police chases a year 299
860 pages 103-04, 118-19
1938 Plymouth 78
2,200 killed/injured from Operation DEEP SLEEP 49, 53-54, 59
3,000 officers were involved 70
8,000 people were evacuated 120
40,000 other separated fathers over the last six years 293

A

AA 53
abortion 24
abreaction 48
Acid 48, 54
Adamson 131-32, 139-40, 152-53
ADHL 78
advent of Indian lawyers in New Zealand, no one could understand what they were saying 230
A Father, A Son and the CIA 50
affidavit 45, 60, 63
  from paedestrian written 70 days after event 297
Afghan heroin 72
against heterosexual males 65
Aislabie, Grant, Head of Disputes Tribunal, Class A drug user, series of mental breakdowns, extremely dangerous considering he used my mother as his confessional, exposed as a drug user during, hearing in Jan. 1994 17, 26, 71, 76, 78-79, 124, 139
alcoholism 53, 59
alibi 67
Al Jennings – well-known junky 54
Allan McCready, convicted of gang rape then made Minister of Police/ Defense 25
Allan Memorial Institute 50, 52
all higher court decisions made in Israel – meaning NZ does not have a judiciary 118
allow women to drive through checkpoints 295
all saving graces have been removed 59
all the case notes 52
almost killed me 92
Alten Road 18
Ambassador to China 66
America's Cup 92
amnesia 52
amnesiacs and vegetables 49-50, 73
amorphous charges 77
and a struggle ensued 293, 298
Anglican archives 92
An Introduction to Physical/ Somatic Methods of Treatment in Psychiatry 48, 52-53
Annette King 72-73
anthrax 47
Anti-Depressants 49, 59
anti-Police 105
anti-Semetic 67
anxiety disorders 50
anxious population 59
apology 47
appear authoritative enough to convict 60
apple 15, 19
Arabic taxi-driving boyfriend 66
Arabic translation 263
ARC 64
architecture practise 77, 92-93
Are You My Father? 15, 147, 251, 267, 292, 294
A Right Royal Con 120
Armed Defenders actually Armed Offenders 231
armoury of a pair of bushy eybrows 77
Army 47-48, 54, 60
arraignment 123, 131
arrest warrant 76-77
arrested, no reason given 131
ask for Fire or Ambulance for response, don't ask Police 57
asleep 47, 53
aspirin and a holiday 59
assassination 47, 61, 75-76, 92
assassination attempt 262-64, 266
assault/ed 61-62
assumed persona 49, guilt, knowledge 60
ate an apple 292
ate worms at the bottom of the garden 78
atrophy 50
Attachment 14-17, 21, 25-34
attacking citizens at behest of government employees 231
attacking in election year 64
attempted murder 15-17, 20-21, 28-32
attempting to murder Hallett 18 months before Michael King using same methods & people 20
attempt to launch a nuclear strike on NZ 26
Attorney General 120
Auckland Central Police File Management Center 132, 139
Auckland Central Police Station 14, 77
Auckland City Council 91, 103, 104, 114, 119
Auckland District Court 37, 45, 61, 63, 68, 75, 91, 93, 101, 117
  5 October 2004 278
Auckland District Court Cells 131, 139
Auckland District Law Society 151, 155-56
Auckland Intelligence 21
Auckland Regional Council 63-64
Augie Auer 26, 104
Augustus Terrace 258-59
Aussie saying 55
Australia 55, 66, 78
Australasian 292
Australian Naval Intelligence 15
Australian Royal Commissions 55
AUTHORITY, source of untold misery 73
Avondale Mental Hospital, Auckland, later Oakley 53
Avondale Police Station 13, 76-77

B

B-B was still a paedophile 142
B'nai B'rith 67
backdated letters 102
Baden-Powell 65
bagmen 104
bailiff's appearance on 10 June 2008 25, 37, 57, 75
Bain family/ Police Paedophile ring
  Dunedin murders on retrial 131
Banks, John, CIA 58, 103
  CIA paedophile and drug trafficker 105, 114,
  Mayor of Auckland again on 13 October 2007, Former Minister of Police/ Paedophilia Mayor history of manufacturing tickets/ arrests for exposing his crimes 118-19
Banks Road 120
Barkan, Zev William 67
Battle for the Mind 47-49, 53
batton jumped out of his hands 294
Bazley, Margaret Bazley 49
  can't trust those/ qualifications bullshit 53-59, 63
  Margaret 'Lillian' Bazley 54
  trafficking and laundering money 55
  exemplified as the joke wife 57
Steven Bazley a.k.a. James 'Jim' Frederick Bazley 53
  now a budget advisor in Invercargill 54
Beach Road 15, 274
beastiality 73
Beeby, Chris 25, 32, 104

Belgrave, John 226
belief system 49
BELIEVE THE MAN campaign 297
Belmont Hospital 47
Ben Hope 218
Berlin Wall 64, 118, 120
Berman, Keith, Pres. Auckland District Law Society 151
Bert Potter/ Plastic Bertrand 265
Bethell's Beach 63
Bible 61
bicycle 78
Big Afghan Heroin Dump 33
big dick 55
biggest fraudster in New Zealand's history 75
bile 293
biochemist/ biological weapons/ biological psychiatry 47-48
Biological Warfare Centre/ biological weapons 47
bisexual paedophile Dr Edwards biographer 266
Black Chief Justice murdered for PM Helen Clark 28
Blacklisting, Hobbling and Boiler-Plating 25, 27, 79
Black Power 74, 77
Boag, Michelle 104
bobble-head viewing 120
boiler-plated/ing 18, 79, 118
  harassment through minor occurrences which don't amount to an offence, look like one's own mistakes, but affect psych of person so question themselves 282, 285
bombing in Spain 265
books about cops going bad 298
Bora Cure 54
boredom of work 50
BOSS 27
Boy Scout 65
brain functions 47-49, 52-53
brainwashing 49-51, 59, 63, 73
Brandon, Stephen John, moved to Wanganui 92
BREACH OF THE SEAL 118
breakdown 48, 57-58, 64-65, 68, 70, 73
break from the kids 59
British 47, 49, 50-52, 59, 65-66, 75, 78
British citizens 50
British paedophile Dr Michael Cullen 75
British Secret Intelligence Service (MI5/MI6) 47
Brookie, I. M. 238
Brotherhood of Death 67
bullshit, 53 qualifications 59
bureaucrats 55
Bus Lane Ticket 26, 105, 114, 118

C

Caltex Station on Stanley Street 15
cameras 55
Cameron 49-50, 52
Canada 50, 71
capacity for response 48, 57, 64
Capill, Graham, Police Prosecutor resigned due to paedophilia of at least four girls under 12 years old. The legal disciplinary hearing reacted by fining him $3,123 on 9 August 2006. What a joke! 18
captured a poisoned man 62
car accident 58
Cara, Eli 67
career twin 71, 78
Carnachan, Hamish 292
carpentry 53
Carter, Chris, homosexual MP, Te Atatu, Ak 55
Cartwright, Peter 65
case notes disappeared after their deaths 52
casino 295-96
catch me if you can 33
Catholic, 78-79
Catholics, 17, 24, 31 What's in it for me? 61, 67, 73, 78
Catholic Freemasons encouraged to compromise themselves with shameful acts 24
Catholic Day of Atonement 61
cause an accident or explosion 65
Center Line, 101 Centreline Infringement 111-12
Centrepoint commune, Albany 18
  satellite Tavistock 265
Centurion tanks 18; adapted turrets 66; enlarged turret 264
certificate of character 157
CERTIFIED TRUE COPY 263
chagrin 77
challenge in the face of conflict 50, 73
change names 58
Changing the subject's physical condition 48, 57
Channon, Jim 48
charged with rape, not convicted, but accepted to the Bar as a lawyer 25
Cheney, Dick 47
Cherry Farm, Dunedin 53
Chief Executive of Ministry of Social Policy 54
Chief Justice Dame Sian Elias, contract killer 5, 18
  chief Sayanim Mossad agent 19
  spends her time running murders, trying to create civil war (Foreshore & Seabed Act) 18-21, 23-29
  running a judiciary into the ground,
  judiciary can't even settle a debt 29, 37, 51, 66
  Sayanim Mossad 67, 92, 102, 104-05
  highest-ranking Sayanim Mossad agent in NZ 118-19
  Chief Justice always most corrupt judge most qualified train wreck 156, 263, 267-68
Chief Legal Advisor, NZ Police 20
child prostitute 64
child-sex for food 65
child sex abuse/ child drug movement 156
children & fathers separated, giving paedophiles unencumbered access 58, 69-71, 79
chivalrous 293
Chrisco Christmas Hamper lady of yore 23
Christchurch 37, 53, 66, 77, 101, 120, 132, 139-40, 155
Christine Rankin can demand any position she wants 122
Chubb Security 104
Churchill, then Hitler, then Tavistock military Psy-Ops War School training manual 121
CIA 27, 33, 47
CIA/MI6 mind control experiment 48-50, 52-56, 58-59, 63-64, 73, 103-05, 114, 118-22
CIA interrogation techniques, Special Operations 47-49, 58-59, 64
CIA Mayor John Banks 103
CIA military helicopter fraud 58
CIA takeover of Auckland 114
CIB 26, 261, 281
circumventing consent 51
citizen 49-50, 57, 59, 72-73
citizenship, 67 tried in a court of shame 239
citizen's arrest 268

City Alcoholics Anonymous, St David's Church Centre 68–70 Kyber Pass, Auckland 29
Clark, Helen KGB 15-16
  aware of the rape allegations against Rickards before he was promoted 18-20
  Night of the Long Knives 21
  murders, murder attempts, & attempts at dictatorial fascism – just like Hitler – which is where Rothschild's place her 22-23
  husband homosexual child sex abuser 24
  voluntary radical hysterectomy 25-34, 37
  KGB 62, 64, 66-67, 70
  lesbianism is a cause for unsolved murders 72-73, 75-76, 91-92, 102, 104-05
  Incontinence Nappies 148
  assassination attempt on 23 Aug. 2002 261-264
  KGB agent 'ie', pron. 'e', Island refers to Island of Lesbos and NZ being two main islands 263
  former Tavistock St Petersburg prostitute, turned lesbian in cover marriage to a homosexual child sex abuser 265-67, 282
  trained and deconstructed by the KGB 292, 295
Class A drugs 72, 78
classic police crime creation 295
Clean Slate Bill intro into Parliament as private members bill on 28 March 2001 190-91
clear, substantive and true 118
clinical 49-51
Cockroach McClennan 54
cocks 55
code for assassination 76
coercion 51, 59, 62
coke dealer on 22 March 2007 72, 78
Cold War, prisoners 47-48, 53, 64-65, 73
Collections Department 91
collect traffic tickets to cover for losses 75
collusion between City Councils, Police, Courts & Govt. 13
coma therapy 47, 49-50, 59
Combined Investigation Unit 141, of Auckland Police is a Tactical Attack Unit for shamed MPs 239
commerical printer broke down 104
Commissioner's Support Group 17 Staff Office 20
Commissioner of Police 20
  Safer Communities Together 190-91, 199, 205, 228
Commissioner of the Families Commisson 120
Commission of Inquiry into police corruption 72-74
Commission of Inquiry into Police Theft and Murders 33
Commissions of Inquiry 74, 79
Common Purpose, subversive paedophile-politico movement for domination of world 17
  opposite of Common Sense 30, 78
Companies Office 258
compensation 48, 62, 77, 79
completely unnecessary foray 294
complete mystery 19
complicity to murder by AUCKLAND DISTRICT COURT 26
compounding IQ of "n" 294
compromised fuckwits ruling 121
comrade at arms who owed him a favour 298
conditioned behaviour patterns 48, 57
conditioned response 63
Condoleezza Rice 267
confess 78
confidently stalked the hallways 59
consent 50-52, 59
conspiracy theorist, anyone who presents info counter to mainstream news 27
Constable James Matewhinau Cassin, criminal record, 16-17
  contract hitman 20-21, 26, 31, 37
  excessive violence 57
  violent criminal 61-63, 66, 68, 71, 91-92, 102 118, 142, 147, 149, 155, 187, 189-91, 195, 199-200 2224-28, 237, 261-63, 277-78, 282-83
  shortish righteous man from Papakura w. personality bypass, westy brain (Cassin) trying to get itself laid (Mead) by killing something (Hallett) 294
  madman beating on my car window 295-98
Constable Lynn Adamson (LAF467) 13-15
  accomplice, arresting officer in Ponsonby, now Detective Sergeant 131-32, 140
Constable Suzanne Mead (two months experience), tallish women who vaguely remembers having a personality 225, 228, 262, 293-94, 296, 298
constraint 51, 59, 62
continuation of the experiment seems impossible 52
contract hit 293
contract killer for CIA Operation Deep Sleep. 54, 63, 66, 105, 119
contract killing 261
Cook Islands/ Cooks 15, 21, 30, 62, 92, 147, 251, 261-62 265, 282, 292, 295
cop was the criminal, 37 doing reconnaissance 285
copy of arrest warrant/ summary arraignment before judge 131, 139
corrupt lawyers 237
couldn't organise two dogs to shit 55
couldn't turn down a big dick 55
Counter-Intelligence/ organisations 27, 51, 63, 74
country uncomfortable to live in 13
Court/s 45, 49, 51-52, 57-58, 60-63
  not a safe place to be 67-69, 71, 73-79, 84
court hearing 49
Court of Appeal in Wellington 105, 115, 117-19, 200
Court of Injustice 60
Courtroom 13, 104
cover qualifications, cover promotion, cover elevation to dame 54
cover up 20, 23, 25, 32
crime creation 292
  over 90% of all crime intergenerationally 295
  against fathers/ anyone who exposes their profiling of crime 297-99
crime prevention methods 292
credit cards 77
cricket orphanage in Goa, India 239
Crimes 57-59, 63, 69, 71, 73, 78, 84
criminalise 57
Crimes inbred within Police Force 61
criminal history of Police Officer 58
criminal who owes the police a favour 298
crocodiles 62
crooked and compromised judges 27
crooked at both 77
Crosby, Sharon, Morning Programme On Popular Culture Advertising & Propaganda, CEO of Radio NZ 19
Crown Law 105, 119
Crown Solicitor 237-38, 240
Cullen fund 75
Cultural Attaché 37
curtains were drawn closer as they shagged with a view 266
custody papers in the post 62

D

Dame Silvia Cartwright, NZ's most corrupt judge 22, 65
dangerous driving 61, 74
date rape by police 295
Davies v MOT [1989] 3 NZLR 300; 1989 5 CRNZ 371 (CA) Richardson J 119
Davis, Peter 20; under house arrest in Feb. 2004 24, 29-30
Day of Atonement 13
de-patterning memory loss 52
Dear Cops, Milk and tea on bench, Lemonade in fridge 284
Declaration of Helsinki 32, 37, 49, 51-52, 58-59, 62-65, 67-68, 70, 73-74, 102
deconstructed 92 former prostitute 18
dedicated to paedophile movement by exposing children to predation 297
Deep Sleep , Operation 37, 45, 47, 49
  Treatment 50 military experiments 53-54, 59
defamatory, scandalous and offensive 105, 118
Defense Secretary 47
deliberately distorted life-experiences 59
demanded sex 55
democracy 50, 73
Department For Courts cheque dishonoured 253
Department of Corrections orders/ pays for *Are You My Father? The Family Court and Other Experiments* 251
Department of Crime Creation (DOCC)
  Department of Fingering (DOF)
  Department of Paedophile Enabling (DOPE)
  Department of Rape (DOR) 71
Department of Health 54-58
Department of Psychological Medicine 47
depatterning (obliterating memories) 49-50
depleting emetics 50, 59
Depopulate New Zealand of people of value 24
Deputy Commissioners 76
Deputy Registrar of the High Court Raj Iyengar 91, 115, 119
Deputy Registrar Julie Thomson 127
destroyed the entire New Zealand governance 57
destroyed the lives 49, 53, 59
destroyed the memories 49
destroying modus operandi infrastructure of a country 58
destruction of a Western Society 92
Detective Alan Brown is a total fraud 74-75
Detective Bruce Hutton 60
female Police Detectives routinely pack-raped 71
Head of Detectives 61
rooted, studied & gang-banged way to Detective Sergeant 132
devolving 57
Director-General of Social Welfare up to 1993 54, 58
Director of Nursing with Department of Health 54
disillusioned 49-50, 64
disinhibiting agents 50
dissassociate myself 75
District Court 14, 16, 20-21, 25, 28-29, 32, 34, 37
  Sam Wolfgramm 115, 189-91, 199-201, 227, 237-38, 277-78
  hearing in my absence 283
divulge 47
Documenting Psychiatry 53
documents awarding me custody 16
dogs 47, 52, 55, 59, 74
domestic 37
Domestic Purposes Benefit (DPB) 102
Don't expect Justice in the New Zealand judciary 29
double-dipping 74
double-murder took place on Waikato-Auckland border Rickards commanded both areas 19
double agent, status 65-66, 75-76, 78
Drive Centre Line 101
Driver Licence 75, 92
  removed (13 Aug.–5 Dec. 2003, 114 days) 238
  reinstated 261, 278, 282
  back in ashtray of Mercedes 284
  stolen from house by police (8 Nov. 04) 286, 292-94, 298
driveway 78
drugged 47, 49
drug-induced comas/ sleep 50
drug addiction 59
drug trafficking and murders 55, 73
drug dealer 71, 73, 76, 78
saw the light and became a drug counsellor 55
Drug Squad informants 76, 263
drug dealing paedophilia 103
drug runner 104
drunken state of narcoanalysis 48
drunken 75
Dunedin 120
duress 49, 51, 59, 62

Doctors

Dr. Bridge, psychologist, Wellington, very PC 301
Dr Anne White experienced Dr Sargant's treatment, became Clinical Professor of Medicine 50-51
Dr Ewen Cameron 49-52
Dr Stefan Grossmann, Forensic Historian: "Greg Hallett interviews, translate his wonderful book into German for German people/ mentality" 120-21
Dr Thomas Szasz, Professor Emeritus of Psychiatry, 1994 53
Dr William Walters Sargant, British MI6 psychiatrist CIA MKULTRA 47-53

E

earn a living 73
eating jelly-babies 25
ecstasy 78
ECT (Electroconvulsive Therapy) 47, 49-50, 52-53, 59
Edmund Rice College 31
effects upon the health or person 52
egregious prosecution 68
Elder, Millie, adopted off a lesbian, Millie's drug use, sentencing delayed until public's interest reached zero 29
Electoral Finance Act 22-23
Electronic Economic Model 27-28
elevation 49, 54
emminent historian from New Zealand, Greg Hallett 18
employing a convicted criminal as a police officer 261
engineered target's change of address/ loss of licence/ limited capacity to work for gain, engineering illness 58
engineered charge 74
enormous anxiety 52
enormously fat 25, 70
enormously unpopular 79
entrapment 298
Epicac/ epicacuana 15, 19, 61-62, 92, 263, 265, 267
  black sticky substance 292-93
Epsom Girls Grammar 92
ethical markers 51
Expenses 278-79
expertly executed 60
extraneous background knowledge 104
extremely long delays 64

F

face that makes a clown look serious 268
fair whack of money 54
false arrests/charges 37, 62, 76
false constructions 48
falsely implanted memories 48-49, 59
Family Court 58, 71, 78-79
fanny-up 57
fascist police actions, 13 and genocidal politicians 65
fastest way known to destroy a Western society 92
fatherlessness 298
Faye & Richwhite 104
fear is a conditioned response 62-63, 71
fear of Hobson Street in perpetuity 62-63
felt flacid 294
Feminists, operate on: Is it good for women? 61
  working 24/7 to ensure policies where children unavailable to fathers 296
ficticious names 63
File No. 990601/3985 131
  related to domestic in Christchurch 132, 139
financial assassination 76, 92
financially rescued by the KGB 24
fingering 71
fingerprint 74
Fire Service 54, 58
firm 49
First Earth Battalion for Psychological Operations 48
first Roman Catholic, first Indian, first Fijian, first without knighthood, first Roman Catholic Governor-Gen. 22
Fisheries Inspector 37
Fitness for Practice Committee 157
flaky evidence 60
Fletcher, Hugh, bisexual child sex abuser, organises child sex abuse soirées 28
  bribed PM Jenny Shipley 66-67
Flying The Planet 92, 267
F M McMillian 91
food advertised 50
force 48, 51, 53, 59, 62, 66, 69, 72
Forces of Order hit (Police, Military & Banks) 104
forensic analysis 70 back-up 121
Form 57 111
formal apology 47
Fort Detrick 47
FRST, Foundation for Research, Science & Technology 54, 58
frantic chaser of big cocks 55
Franz Kafka 266
fraud 51
fraud charges 53, 58-59, 62, 74
frauds 54, 76
Fraud Squad which is a fraud 239
freedoms for democracy 50
free expression 48
Freemason/s 17, 24, 31, 60-61, 67, 73, 78-79
Freemason Registrar 237
Freemasons are filtration system to prevent good men controlling their state 17
Freud Hilton graduates 64
Fucked up anyone's life today Paul Geoghegan 79
fuckwit gambling of the Minister of Finance, Cullen 75
Fulbright Scholarship 53
Further Order of the court to open the file 118

G

gave a speech with a QC 298
Gee, Pru 92 and Mike Lewis Goold 32
gender-biased crime creation movement 297
gender bias 58, 65
Gender Communism, police-state for men, socialisitic, protected state for women, paedophile state for children – all run by the police 92, 296
General Nir (****) ex-head of Israeli Defense Forces 118, 120
genocided 122
Gentiles 67
Geoghegan, Paul, career twin of Grant Aislabie, Counsel for Child nominated himself as a Family Court judge, currently principal supplier of children to paedophiles in Rotorua Taupo, such a rotten judge, enormously unpopular 17, 26, 71, 78-79
Gifting the United Nations to Stalin 57, 59, 61, 65, 267
Girl Guide 65
glovebox 297-98
goal 60
goats 48
Government corruption 73
government departments access to your computer 24/7 266
Government MKULTRA modus operandi 74
Governor-General 15, 21-25,
  paedophile minder, accessory to murder, attempted murder and covers up for murders 28, 31, 65
Goyim' – those to be milked 67
great New Zealand scandals 53
Grey's Ave 70, 239
guinea pigs 50
gun 53

H

Haigh, Frank, paid by Russians, founder of Haigh Lyon in 1926 Shortland St in Auckland City; son is QC John Haig who represented Clint Rickards 34
  complaints of rape 145
hairest baby 78
Hallett, Greg, is dangerous/not to be associated with/ a target 25, 37, 68, 75
What do you have on Mr Hallett 91-92, 102
Well argued. Good strategy Mr Hallett 119-21
hall of power 56
Hamilton Deputy Registrar 16
Hamilton 79
Hamilton Family Court judge Mad MacAloon (Ms) 301
ham sandwich 14
handcuffs 296-97
Harrassment 285
hatred of America 292
Harvey, Bob 58
hearing delayed from 20 March 2009 to 20 April 2009. Helen Clark left country day before on 19 April 2009 28
heart attack 48
Heaven's Rest 20
heckler-whose-pheromones-had-past-them-by 292
heightened emotional response/s 48, 59
helicopters 120
Heroic' doses 49, 59
Heroin Trafficking, Lawyers & Mr Asia 33
heroin trafficker 72
heterosexual sex as a crime 65, 69-70, 73
hidden during her rise and destruction 55
High Commissioner to Britain 239
High Court 20, 229-32, 240, 269 Hearing 32-34, 91
  Criminal offices 92-93
  Deputy Registar 104-05, 111-12, 114-15, 118-19
  21 Jan. 04, CRI 2003-404-186 190-91
  Hearing on 5 Dec. 2003 278, 283
High Court, paedophile-minding is International Currency, mockery of the courts/ judges/ justice 118
higher court decisions are made in Israel 118
High Street Ticket 33
History is bunk 121
Hitler was an asset who was run, controlled & financed, like an investment banking project 92, 120-22
Hitler Was A British Agent 66, 92, 120-21, 261, 264
hitman 16, 26, 31, 37, 62-63, 68
hobbling 79
Hobson Street 62-63, 296
Holmes, Paul 24
  nuts 26
  Jewish bisexual – NZ's biggest P user
  requiring at least four drug dealers,
  then made top broadcaster,
  cleaned up in the Media Awards in 2008
  Washington Programmer 29
Holst, Alison TV chef 19
homosexual child sex abuser Peter Davis 30
Homosexuality & paedophilia in Police,
  homosexual Police Recruitment Head,
  homosexual Labour MP Charles Chauvel 69
horrendous experimental treatment 50
hot water cyclinder 120
How did I get here? 52
How Rangi Chops his Firewood 300
How the Judiciary runs New Zealand as a Deep Sleep Experiment 20, 27
How To Take Over The World 23-26, 29-30, 66
Hoyle's Law 261
Hullo, Hullo, Hullo 53
Hunt, Jonathan/ Jabber the Hunt/ Speaker of the House promoted to NZ's High Commissioner to Britain, 70 US Coast Guard exposed him as a paedophile, 237-39
Hunter's Corner 145
Huntly 71, 74-75
Hypnosis 49-50, 59

I

ignore all evidence contrary to conviction
  ill-founded assumption of police integrity 60
illegal 50, 59, 62-65, 67-68
illegal under international law to fund criminal organisation 70-73
illegal profiling 119
immunity 72
impact activated-explosive on petrol tank 19
implanted belief systems in politics, religion & outlook 59
implanted deconstruction 292
incarcerated 50
inconveniences & hazards reasonably to be expected 52
independent review 51
index & bibliographies difficult to achieve & exempliary 240
Indian lawyers are corrupt,
  Indian lawyer became Governor-General 238
India took over NZ Judiciary by providing NZ lawyers & judges w trips to India that turned into a sex tour, Goa 239
Indians in the Judiciary are corrupt 137
influential positions 59
information holding ground and a chicken run 65
informed consent 51
Insight Training seminars, there was a day off 70
Inspector Ross Meurant 60
Inspector Sharkey 144
installing telecommunication systems in offices 264
Insulin 47, 49-50, 59
Intelligence 47, 49, 51, 53, 55-56, 58, 62-63, 71, 74, 78
Intelligence Officer 261, 267
Intense signals 48, 57-58, 64-65, 73
interim Prime Minister & two-term Governor-General 264
Internal Affairs: specialises in car accidents 58
  regularly confiscates my mail 64, 66
list of corrupt cops 147
internalized belief systems 48
international law 62-63, 70, 73
international paedophile movement, pan-American and Pan-Europe 70
international public speaker 71
interviews 37
In the Sleep Room 49
Investigate magazine, May and June 2007 72, 292
investigating themselves 58
IPCA 58
IQ was in their moustache 57
Iraena Asher murdered 10/11 October 2004
  Israeli Intelligence found her body 285
Israeli bomb planted on fuel tank at Ak Hospital, Feb. 04 265
Israeli couple working for the Mossad 19
Israeli Defense Forces, ex-Head 119
Israeli Tank Commander 18-19, 66, 263-64, 267
It's out of time 118

J

J. 53
Jacinta 132
James Bond 131
Jesus Christ 53
Jews: Kol Nidre 61, 67
Jews operate on Is it good for the Jews 61
Joe Citizen 189
John Hughes Room 55, 285
Johnson, Kimball Robert Brisco 26
Marks, John 49, 52
joke 48, 57, 77-78
Jon Ronson, aka Ron Jonson 48
Jordan, Evan, formerly NZ Police, recently indicated in murder 62, 228
JPs (Justice of the Peace) report directly to Governor-Gen., area paedophile minders 21, 64, 118
judge and jury 60
Judges always limit terms of reference to exclude possibility of discussing a government, judicial or police con 29, 51, 61, 71, 76, 84
Justice Elliot got off paedophile charges w. police help 1 1 9
Judge P Gittos, Police Stitch-up Judge,
  accessory to attempted murder 16-17, 31, 71, 76, 147, 227, 240, 283
Judge is a lawyer whose been to the same brothel 239
Judge Johnny D. Hole 51, 71, 76
Judge Keane 190-91, 237-38, 283
Judge Kiernan 29
Judge Robertson 301
Judge Sheer, Crown Prosecutor made Circuit Judge
  District Court judge 27, 74-75

Guillaume Bogin – gbogin@yahoo.

Justice Stevens 103, 105
  stated no method of getting off a parking ticket once entered court system 118-19
  conservative which means protects paedophiles 118
  refused to hear case, under enormous pressure to comply when boss'contract killer/Mossad agent 119
Judge Thorburn 263
judicial 49, 69, 76
Judicial corruption 73
Judiciary, is a fraud/ incapable of resolving a debt
  controlled by Visa who charge 22% v. 8% 30
Judiciary 45-51, 58-59, 64 MKULTRA modus operandi, 73-76
Jungowska, Maria 19-20, 265
jurisdiction: Jewish-Diction/ Jewish dictatorship 71

K

Kafkaesque world – the one Dr Brian Edwards created in NZ 266
Kelman, Uriel 67
Key to Murder Attempts 25
KGB 15-16, 19, 21-24, 27, 30-31, 92, 261-67, 282, 292, 295
KGB agent 19, 73 training 62, 76
Kiewik, W, ACC lawyer 105
kill a prison officer 53
killed 48-49 hundreds of patients 53-54
  around 2,200 people 59, 66
kinesthetic eye movement 67
KIWIs (Keen Interest Without Intelligence) 71
Kol Nidre/ Day of Atonement/ Yom Kippur 13
Korea 47
Krasnojarsk,
  underground city hidden behind town of Krasnojarski 256

L

laboratory for mind control 47
lack credibility 64
lacuna plethora amounting to a legal sieve amounting to illegal profiling 119
Lake Alice 53
lambs 48
Lange, David, PM, transvestite-lover 21, 24
  so fat he fell thru floorboards of Otahuhu District Court 25
largest Police Officers I have ever seen 77
larikans dropped the Berlin Wall 120
laughing our heads off 145
LAVs, Light Armoured Vehicles – a real doosie 265
Law Society that is supposed to preserve ethics
  58, 77-78, 115, 151, 155-57
lawyers committing every and any crimes 58
leather 62 dress jacket 296-97
Lee, Mike 64, 105
Lee, Sandra née Barber and/or Vercoe 64
Legal Service Centre, Office of Commissioner of Police 20
Legal Services Agency Risk Management Committee 54, 58
Bloom, Lenny 121-22
lesbian-communist left of Mao, with bad mana,
  promoted to UNto join forces w. NATO
  for heroin-genocide event of century 34
liberty 52, 59
licence 48, 57-58, 61-62, 69, 75
lied 59, 69
lie in court 60-61
life-experience 48
life's work 60
Lina, Juri 67
litigious 54-55
lived only in the immediate present 52
lobotomy 48
local MP's daughter 267
Longer than normal waiting periods 48, 57-58
look at me 296
Lord High Executioner 55-56
losing $6 million a day for 16 months 75-76
Loss of licence 62
  13 Aug. 03–5 Dec. 03 by wrongful police conduct on 23.Aug.02 277
lost all ability to question authority 50, 59, 73
lost all anxiety 52
lost the ability to judge right from wrong 52
LSD 47-50, 54, 59
LTSA (Land Transport Safety Authority) 238
Lundy, Mark case 293
Lying in affidavits & in court, standard practise amongst the Freemasons 57, 61

M

macrocarpa tree 53
Magic Roundabout 60
magnetic seamstress button 54
Mahoney, Patrick, Principle Family Court judge (1 Oct. 1984–31 March 2004) defrocked Catholic priest 79
mail orders 54
Manchurian Candidates 49, 59
mantle: complicity to murder and attempted murder 15
manufactured traffic tickets 14
Manufacture evidence out of thin air 55, 57
Manukau Harbour 71
Maori 57 fisherman 71-72
Maori should relate to that 77, 301
Maramarua, on SH2 in the north Waikato 19
married a child prostitute 105
Masonic contacts 294-95
massively suppressed 68
material sum 63
Matrix Security 148
  adding a military tracking device to my car 261-62
Mayor, Executive Super Mayor 58, 114
  most prolific of the cross-dressers/ paedophiles on hand/ most prolific methamphetamine dealer/users and/or the one who has destroyed the most people in business and freedom 58
Mayor of Tauranga 78
McArthur, I J, Legal Service Centre,
  Office of the Commissioner of Police 281, 285
McAuley, Monica Margo 122
McClennan 54
McNee, David 25, 29, 104
MacIntyre, Kim 120-21
medical experimentation 51
Mekong crossed the Vietnamese-Cambodian border 145
Migrants march, came to NZ to escape dictatorship,
  likened Helen Clark to Adolf Hitler 148
Memorandum of Submission 238, 240
memories obliterated 49
memory loss 52
mental and physical capacity 59
mental breakdowns 78
Mental Health Act 240
mental hospitals 53
mental illness 47, 59, 61
mentality of a six-year-old and I'm doing a man's job 296
mental patient 75
Mercedes 15, 37, 92, 104, 282, 284, 292, 294, 296
Meredith Connell 237
meritous cause 118
methamphetamine 58 P, OL, ICE 72, 77 habit 92
Meurant, Ross 60
Meyer's Park 70
MI5/MI6 47
MI6 psychiatry 49
MI6 52, 63
MI-5 and C6 139
Michael King OBE, murdered on 29 March 2004 18-20
  burnt to a cinder 20, 25, 37
  chief historian 67, 104, 263-64
  through his lunchtime visits 265, 267-68
MICK P 261-64, 266
military programmes 48
mind-bending drugs 47
mind control 37, 47-48, 50, 64, 66
mind-controlled double agents (MKDA) 59, 64
Mindfield 49-50, 52
Minister of Finance Dr Michael Cullen 75
Minister of Health 72
Minister of Health Annette King to Minister of Police 148
  to Minister of Justice 72
Minister of Police 60, 72-73, 136, 148
Minister of Police Allan McCready
  convicted of gang rape in 1943 226
Minister of Tourism 144
Ministry of Justice 20
Ministry of Social Policy 54, 58
Ministry of
  Transport 57-58
Minute of the Judgement followed by the High Court sealed records 105
misquoting 238
MKDA 59
MKULTRA mind control experiment (Ultra Mind Control)
  32, 37, 47-52, 58-60, 62-66, 68, 70-74
MK Writers' Centre 20
mockery of the courts, the judges, and justice 118-19
modus operandi 58, 71, 74
  crime creation/ arrogance/ obstruction/ misinformation/ showing off/ verballing 69
Mongrel Mob 14, 31
  gang member 77, 124, 144, 148, 152, 155
Montecito Cathedral Park area, California
  1.45 pm 5 May 2009 121
moonlighted as a police officer 77
Morag Black 61
Morrison, Temuera (Star Wars) 23
mortgage 50
Moscow 292
Mossad 18-20, 27, 32, 47, 66-67, 74, 76, 92, 118-19, 263-67
Mossad's Chief Justice Sian Elias 92
Mossad hit 92
Mossad assassination curriculum 47
Mossad use NZ as a safe retreat – as a holiday home
  especially Waiheke 264
most political spectrums, they meet in the middle at the underside – the dark side 24
multi-level multi-disciplinary government hit 17
multi-millionairess 297
mundane inaction 295
murder 37, 47, 51, 58, 62-63, 65-68, 71, 73-74, 76
Murder, Blacklisting, Hobbling, Boiler-Plating, Rape
  Child Sex Abuse and Paedophilia 5
murder-as-suicide 47
murder attempt 37, 92-93, 102 murders 55, 60, 72, 76
murder cover-ups 37 murderous history 59 Murder Inc. 67
Murder Attempts on Greg Hallett 25, 32
murder father while custody papers in mail 58
mud 92
MPs: former prostitutes, lesbians, paedophiles, paedophile minders, paedophile enablers & drug traffickers 73
MP for Mt Albert Warren Freer also worked as a spy for the Russians. He held the Mt Albert seat for Labour for 34 years (1947–81), until he finally relinquished it to the KGB agent Helen Clark in 1981 146
MP Donald, Rod 25, 104
MP Michael Cullen was "The Six Million Dollar Man" 75
MP Phil Goff 266
MP Winston Peters 104
Mr A. Dunhill 14
Mr Asia heroin drug ring 54, Inquiry in Australia 55
Mr Whippy 148
Mr Wrobel 26
Ms Steve Chadwick 148
Ms Tice 68

N

narcoanalysis 48
narcosis 47, 49, 52, 59
National Manager: Professional Standards 226
National Manager of Police Standards 189
National Road Policing Manager Steve Fitzgerald 299, 300
NATO & the UN Wanted War Criminals 33
NATO heroin to their local criminals – kickbacks in the police holiday homes 148
nature, duration, and purpose of the experiment 52
nature, duration, purpose, method, conduct, inconveniences, hazards or effects 59
Nazi experiments 51
necessary forensic legal back-up 121
necrophilia 73
negative signals 48, 57-58, 64-65, 73
New Age concepts 48
new belief system 49
new exciting beginning in psychiatry 52
new persona 49
news conference 47
news distraction 120
New Spain 148
New World Order 26-28
New World Order wants you to hear is propaganda,
misinformation and miseducation 27
New Years Eve 79
New York 47-49, 52
New Zealand 45, 47-49, 53-55, 57-59, 62-68, 70-79, 84
New Zealand – A Blackmailer's Guide 19-26, 29-30, 37, 118
New Zealand/not Australia 120
New Zealand's biggest gang looking at adult & child porn 71
New Zealand and Australian women 284
New Zealand is a paedophile movement fronting as a country 15, 28
New Zealand Govt.'s silent weapons for a quiet war 27
New Zealand is Pied Piper with cross-dressing mayors 28
New Zealand, most miserable societies in Western world 27
New Zealand Judicary mockery of justice 28-29, 48, 76
New Zealand judiciary a paedophile protectorate 29
  crime creation & paedophile movement 156
New Zealand Law Society 156-57
NEW ZEALAND POLICE 20, 30-31, 48, 55

MKULTRA organisation that spread their message through force, fraud, deceit, duress, over-reaching, constraint and coercion 62-63, 68, 70, 104
New Zealand public service 54
New Zealand Truth Weekly 66
Nicholas, Louise 31, 301
Night of the Long Knives 21, 265
no ability to refuse the treatment 52
No government dept. could find his criminal record 298
no longer detectable 48
no memory about the treatment 52
non-functioning unemployable citizens 59
non-sexist language 51
Northshore 2665
not bound by any laws 58
  bring this social engineering experiment to an end 59
not dangerous drivers the police want off the road, it's fathers accessing their children 298
Nothing 92, 119
NOTICE OF GENERAL APPEAL, CRI 2006-004-021-217 lodged on 2 July 2008 5
NO TRANSCRIPTS were kept as a form of assistance to police lying 239
not to be noticed by the public 51
Novack, Paul F. 47
nuclear strike 37
Nuremberg Code formulated in August 1947 49, 51-52, 58-59, 63-65
nursing 54, 59
NZ Fire Service Commission 54, 58
NZ Police Association 148
NZSAS 267

O

Oakley 53-54
obliterated memories 49, 52, 59
O'Connor, Greg, Police Spokesman 73,
  a total dick 148-49
occult 60
occult mafia covers for/ supports paedophiles, attacks anyone who exposes paedophiles 29, 49, 58, 115
Officer Sergeant David Kevin Mays a.k.a. David Meyer, David Mayes, David Mace 67, 69-71
Officer Natasha Bryce 68
Officer Suzanne Mead 282, 293-94, 296, 298
Officer Simon Rewi 301
Hope, Olivia 226
Olson, Frank, Deputy Acting Head of Special Operations for the CIA 47
Ombudsmen Act 1975 maintain secrecy in all matters that come to their knowledge 20, 25, 37, 62, 131, 155, 191, 195, 224, 227, 237, 262
open and clear channel 118
open slather for police and judges against the citizen 239
Operation Austin 62, 73, 77, 142, 155
Operation Boo Hoo, run by Blue Line companies based in Waikato 284
Operation Deep Sleep 37, 49, 54
Operations Research 27-28, 30, 32, 37
order through chaos 59
orgies 63
Osbourn, Chris, File Management Unit, Ak, DHQNZ Police 101-02, 124, 139
outside his jurisdiction 71
over-reaching deceit 59

P

P-ol-ICE Force 294
P.R.N. (Personal Reference Number) 132
pacifying conversation 77
Paedophiles are either part of these organisations or are married to people who work in them/ flock to these organisations as a form of protection 29, 58, 62, 64-65, 68-71
  most often Roman Catholics, Freemasons, bisexuals, homosexuals, lesbians 73, 75-79
Paedophile movement – Common Purpose 78
paedophile and crime creation movement 105, 148
paedophile movement with legal protection 157
pan-Europe/American international paedophile ring 238-39
Paedophiles always demand respect. They never deserve it. Respectable means Paedophile/ Minder 265
Paedophilia 18, 22, 24, 33, 62, 65, 68-74, 77
Palestinian refugee camp 18
Papakura chapter of Black Power 14, 77
Papakura police 72
Paparoa in Christchurch 53
paraldehyde 53
paralytic drugs 50
paranormal 48
Parliament Street 92
Parrot's Beak 145
part and parcel of the Protocols of Zionism 67
patients 48-50, 52-53, 55, 59, 67
Patterns of social engineering 60
Pavlov 48
Peace Service, then a Peace Force, then a Police Service, and not a Police Force 239
pedestrian 298
pen 14
PERF 301
Perfect Con 67
person A 22
personal outlook 49
Personal Reference File for Joseph Gregory Hallett, P.R.N. 35405987 140
Perverting the Course of Justice 5
petrol bill for next years budget 71
phantom integrity 64
Phelps, Eric 130
pheromones 292
photo of their breasts 295
physical or mental state 52
Pied Piper with cross-dressing Mayors 59
pigeon 285
pilot's bag 105
pinch 71, 76
Pirate' shortened to 'Pye' or 'Pie', combined as Pie/SattlE, code for Helen Clark and Margaret Wilson 263
PIS (Police Informants Scheme) 226
planned genocide of New Zealand 26
planned miscommunication 298
plethora of elevations never seen before 21
podcast 67
point of view 72
poison/ed/ing 61-62, 65, 73, 92, 261, 263, 265, 267
poisoned trap 292, 294-98
Police 48, 53-55, 57-64, 66-77, 84, 237-40
Police & legal procedures convict target on no evidence 57
police are a paedophile and crime creation movement, 15
  specialise in rape, murder, drug trafficking 28

  social engineering, paedophile & crime creation 32
  employing a convicted criminal and obfuscating 62
  contract hitmen 37, 62
  known to be accessories to murder 71
  no longer able to call themselves a peace service 71
  NZ's biggest gang, skite and say: "We even have a patch and our immunity is assured" 72
  involved in murder before person is deceased 118
  as guilty as sin, they frame the defendent 293
  bullys who endanger innocent people for their own statistics 297
  made up of people who can't get laid 297
police assault 17, 261
Police Associations 148
Police assume guilt 60
  case collapsed on appeal 16
Police Complaints Authority/ Independent Police Conduct Authority 57, 191, 227
Police corruption in New Zealand 72, 301
Police defensive driving skills at their best 149
police drug dealers dealt from a burger bar 131
Police Files Management Unit/Center 102, 132, 139
Police Force history of employing criminals incl. rapists, kidnappers, murderers, contract killers and thugs & elevating them to the highest positions 224
Police proven to be anti-Police – creating crime rather than solving it 13
police helicopter 261
Police hitman 37
Police Human Resources 20
Police Infringements Bureau in Wellington 15, 30
police intimidation for over 14 years 140
police IT staff 70
Police lie in Court 60
Police manufacture crimes in order to pay for the Domestic Purposes Benefit (DPB). Court fines exactly equal the DPB every year 13
Police Misconduct 54-55, 58
Police MKULTRA modus operandi 74
police officers have criminal records 61
police paedophile ring at Banks Road in Christchurch 120
Police procedures to convict a target on no evidence 57
police saying witnesses were unavailable and hearing was out of time 263
police used all the methods I had described in my speech the night before 295
police vetting criminals admission into Police/ not an indicator criminals not admitted, rather reverse indicator, 224
  desperate for recruits and more and more dumb criminals were joining 239
Police Welfare Fund 140
police wantonly distributing heroin to gangs 72
polished shit 67
political 49-50, 64
Political Correctness is Anti-Patriotic 261
politicans want – not to be outed – not to be exposed – not to be shamed 239
Ponsonby Police Station 77
porn available on television 50
Pornographic e-mails 70-71
Porritt 23
Porton Down 47
positive vibrations 48
post-partum depression 50
posthumous legacy 65
post mortem 48
potential military applications 48
present damning information on players in legal system 104
Present no evidence as though it was evidence 55
  and have a judge believe it 57
President Ford 47
President of the St. Petersburg Scientists Club 23
  turned up in New Zealand 264
pretend to be experts 60
primal scream 48
primal scream with Bert Potter in Wellington in 1974 265
primary requirement of paedophile is biological father removed 15, 73
Prime Minister 15-16, 18-22, 24-29, 31-34
Prime Minister/ Governor-General are Intelligence positions 24
Prime Minister's Award 264
  KGB training 282
Prime Minister Helen Clark 15-22, 25, 28-29, 31-33, 37
  deconstructed KGB agent 92
  highest ranking KGB operative/agent in NZ 262
Prime Minister Jenny Shipley with Mr Wrobel 26
Prime Minister Jim Bolger 144
Prime Minister John Key 75, 267
Privacy Commission/s 20, 62, 262
Privacy Commissioner, Mrs Marie Shroff 131, 190, 224-27, 237
probiscus for a snoz 268
profiling where the best of people are criminalised jailed or removed from their country 13
profiling is illegal 71
promoted faster than a NATO paedophile 14
promotion 54-55, 65, 71, 78-79
  prostitution in St Petersburg 25
  prostitutes 73
protect citizens against possibility of injury, disability or death 59
Protection Order 293, 295
Psychiatrist/ psychiatry 47-49, 52
single most destructive force 53
Psychoanalysis, psychosurgery 47
psychic mind-change 48
psychological joke 48
psychological 51, 61
psychological torture 68
Psychologically exhausted 237
Public Service 54, 58
public police date rape 296
Purposeful miscommunicaton' is method police use to manufacture crime 293
purposeful miscommunication, intimidation, poisoning, theft, planting evidence, chivalry, excessive force, violence, assault, classic police setup 296
purposely de-fathered 296
Putin, Vladimir first popped up in Wellington in late 1970s, then lived there from 1980–82 26, 37, 145
Pythonesque 75

Q

qualifications are false 55
quarterlite 74
quashed 111
Queen's Counsel know 25, 69, 146
Queen's sausage 259 Queen Elizabeth II 15
  Press Secretary then issued press release 21, 23
question the doctor 51
quizically 77
quota 57

R

Rabbi Isaac Wise 67
racism against non-Jews and non-Freemasons 67
Rangiora, spy country, especially ex-British Intelligence, 78
rape/d, murder, paedophilia and drug dealing 62, 71
recent expose of police violence, rape, falsifying of evidence and crime creation 195
reconnaissance 92, 266
record number of objections 77
recruitment policy to employ convicted criminals 199
refugee camp in Palestine 264
regularly remove evidence 60
religious 49, 60
religions allow and encourage lying 61
remove the biological father 69
removing it out of the High Court 237
renders all fines illegal 72
Renkon to get my teppanyaki 267
rennovate illegally 77
repressions, 48
resistant obsessional patients 52
respectable persona 55
retaliatory police action 296
reverse de-ja-vu' – being 'somewhere-else now' 294
Rickards, Clint/Clinton/'Clive', former Mongrel Mob gang member turned Superintendent 14-15
  made Auckland City District Commander & Assistant Police Commissioner on 16 Oct. 03 17
  publicly outed as rapist, 31 Jan. 2004 17
  suspended on full pay (31 Jan. 04–22 Nov. 07)
  trained to be a lawyer and dealt P, took leave/ stood down 3 years & 10 months, remained on full pay, with updated car 18-19, 25-26
  rapist, kidnapper, paedophile 31
  corrupt cop 37, 62
  superintendent 53
  2 Feb. 2004, Auckland Area Commander/ Assistant Police Commissioner got PC role by harrassing & stitching up others, Mongrel Mob gang member in Hawke's Bay 73, 77
rapist and gang banger 131-32, 139-41, 144-45, 148-55
rapist, paedophile, class A drug trafficker, accessory to murder/ attempted murder 156-57, 224-26, 301
risks/benefits 51
road block 33
robbed Jewish graveyards in Wellington 67
Robinson, Robert Office of Commissioner of Police 199, 277
Rohypnol 295
role-played 60
Rotary in Cook Islands, Hopsing's Restaurant 15, 21
Rotary Club thank you 30, 62, 251
  speech on 21 Aug. 2002 262-63, 282, 292-94
Rotating positive and negative signals 48, 57-58, 64, 73
rot from within 5
Rotorua 62, 71, 73
Royal Assent 23
Royal Commissions of Inquiry 74
Royal New Zealand Police College 55
Rudolf, Ross, Court Bailiff 37, 57, 91
  Reg Rudolf, boxer, 57; Tommy Rudolf, boxer, 57, 91
Rumsfeld, Donald H. 47
running two police girlfriends, various shades of blonde 266
run up to them with a needle 52
Russia and adopted three children 144
Russian professor in July 2002 292

S

S&M dominatrix to Sir Geoffrey Palmer 120
sabotaged 65, 76
sadists 297
Saggitarius 147
Sale, Gordon 92
Salvation Army's alcoholic island, Rotoroa 54
SAS retirement fund to invest 239
satellite Tavistock that ran mind control programmes based around sex/ made it to TV as Temptation Island 18
Satyanand, Anand, Parliamentary Ombudsman 15, 27
  Judge, Roman Catholic, Indian from Fiji, campaign support for KGB-run transvestite-rooter David Lange nicknamed Satch/ Brown Humpty Dumpty 22
  fatest ugliest man in New Zealand 23-25, 28, 31, 37, 187, 224, 226-27
Saunders, John, Press Secretary 72
Sayanim Mossad 66-67
Scagen, Cynthia 300
Scheffer, Jaap de Hoop 72
schizophrenic who specialised in boxing 14, 77
  symptoms 52
Schollum, Bob 73, 301
School of Govt., Victoria University, Wellington website 54
Seacliff Lunatic Asylum 53
SEALED 105, 118-19
second assassination attempt 92
second highest suicide rate in the world 58
Secretary-General of NATO 72
Secretary for Transport from 1988–93 54-55
Secret Intelligence Service 47, 49
secret societies 60 like the Masons 294
seeing around corners 298
seemed to be enjoying herself 294
seen the light 55
Senate hearing 48
sensations of the moment 52
sent to Coventry 144
serve injustice rapidly 156
serves the New World Order and not the citizens 28
Sex Communism 92
sexually compromised 156
sexually explicit images were of child porn 70
shamed 47 shamed beyond belief 77
shame makes them trustworthy – to tow the line & trustworthy to tow the line is what gets promotion 239
She's not my boss 105
shellshock 47
shiatsu 48
Shipley, Jenny 66
Shipton, Brad 73, 301
shock therapy 48
shoelaces 77
shonky load of shit 58 shit rising to the top 129
shorts and a tee-shirt with no notes 237
Silent Weapons for a Quiet War, 'Operations Research' Technical Manual, (May 1979, No. 74–1120) 27-28
silent weapons for a quiet war attack 30, 32
silent war 37
sing and hum the tune 56
Singh, Sean, speaks in Indianese
  like listening to a piano off its medication 238
single biggest fuckwits in New Zealand's history 75
Sir Howard Morrison, Entertainer 23
Sir Peter Blake 23, 25 murder 32, 104
Sir Peter Elworthy 19, 25, 104, 265
Sir Ron Brierly paid NZ$1 million for his knighthood 239
Sir Wilson James Whineray, KNZM, OBE
  ex-All Black captain 23
SIS 48, 53, 55, 58-59, 74-75
  Matrix Security and Mr Whippy 140, 261, 266
skin came off my wrists 296
Sky City Bus Terminal on Hobson St 15, 293-94, 296
skyping 120
Slater, Eliot 48, 52-53
Sleep Room 49 Sleeplessness 50
smashing the driver's window 294
smoking interfers with deconstruction in the politician 292
social engineering 58-60, 73
Social Welfare 54, 58
solving crimes 57
South Head 71
space-time image 52
sparrow-farts workers train 53
Special Operations Division 47
speech on Prime Minister Helen Clark's KGB training 62
Sphere of Influence game 28
Spook, SPOOKED 104
spreading misery 30
squashing my investigation with a crooked ombudsmen and crooked police 27 squashed 102
St. Thomas' Hospital in London 47, 50, 52
Stalin, Joseph 57, 59, 61, 65
standard procedure in every government department 57
standing order hit 37 state sanctioned killing 63
State Owned Enterprises 54, 57-58
State Sector Act 54, 57
State Services Commission 54, 57-58
stationary, sober and alert 74
steering wheel had been poisoned with epicac 15, 263, 267, 292, 294, 297
stenographers 238
Sterk, Peter 76
Stewart Royal Commission, Donald Stewart 55
Stii 293
Stimulated stresses beyond a capacity for response 48-49
Stimulated stresses causing a breakdown 57-58, 64
stimulated breakdown 65, 70 stimulate stress 73
stinks like sexual deviants colluding in status roles 93
Stitch up a subject 55
St Mary of the Angels Catholic Church 120
St Petersburg 23, 25 Tavistock 64
St Petersburg Tavistock, former St Petersburg prostitute 240
Scientists Club President 267
strange unnatural behaviour 292
strategic social policy 54, 58
Street, Maryan 148
stress, trauma & memory loss 49 stress 58, 64, 73
stripped of all my assets and finances 78
Subaru 19
suicide/d 47, 58, 77
SundayStar Times 21
Sunnyside Mental Hospital in Christchurch 53
superannuation fund 75
supposed to mean jack shit 293
Supreme Court 119
surveillance cameras 55
systematic destruction 57

T

Talkback Radio 1ZB 92, 266, 283
Taylor, Gary, head of ARC 63-64, 105
They were trying to take my businesses off me 266
tampered with your mail 65
tank commander 264
Tape-Loops 49-50, 59
Tarantula, WWII's Private Rewi 55
tar brush 92
targetting individuals/ societies with misery and quiet kills called soft kills 27
target and attack 57 targetting 70
Taupo 71
Tavistock St Petersburg prostitute 265
taxation 50
Taxi Stand Ticket 33
technology left the police baffled 265
Telecom 148
television 50, 67
telling lies 60
terrible fright 48
terrorism 72
THATRADIO.com 120
The Beggar's Depair 33
The Bog 267
The Greatest Living New Zealander 33-34
The Information Act 58
The Men Who Stare at Goats 48
The Mind Possessed 53
The Murder of Chris Beeby 32
THE NEW ZEALAND POLICE 104
therapist's false constructions 48
theraputic confusion 52
There wouldn't be any conspiracies if we were told the truth in the first place 27
The Search for The Manchurian Candidate 49, 52
The Second Messiah 67
The Spymaster 105, 121
The Unquiet Mind 53
threat to their 'peace and paedophile movement 297
Ticket to Ride 33
Tindall, Stephen Robert, Warehouse MD, promoted on 15 July 2006, Blake Medal, 4 June 2007, Queen's Birthday Honours List, Distinguished Companion 23, 66
tinny house 71
Tomlinson, Richard 121-22
torture 49, 68
tracking devices 71
traditional academic method
  providing documentation back-up 121
Traffic Officer training and recruitment 55
traffic tickets 37
train wreck with a law degree 156
transcripts of the hearing 61, 238
Transport 50, 54-55, 57-58
Transporting Officer 131-32
Transport Officer's notebook and time sheets 139
Transport Safety 20
trauma 49
treated like dogs 59
Trentham to Porirua 55
tried in absentia 261
true allegiance 49

Tsarion, Michael 67
TV is bunmf 23
officer in active duty 261
Two–thirds are never defended 293
two convictions for Assault prior to entering Police Force 61
twice-convicted criminal/ twice-convicted police 62
two dingos to crap in a can 55

U

U.S. Coast Guard 70, 239
unarrested 297
unclear English 119
undelivered letters 102
unethical 50
United Nations 57, 59, 61 totally subversive 65
University of Auckland tarnished as Murder Inc. 67
unmarked car engineering accidents 70
unprotected from paedophiles 296
unreliable witnesses 61
untermenschens 51
untold misery 60, 73
untrustworthy devious shit 62
US 47-48, 51

V

vast and various government departments 57
Vatican 65
vegetable/arian who eats fish – acquatarian 49, 59, 77
Vehicles Of Interest, VOI register 71, 227
verballing 55, 60, 69 stating untruths as sound evidence
  while omitting all information to the contrary 239
verballing' in the John Rex Hughes Room 293
verbal submission for 90 minutes 105
very high-ranking civil servant 75
Viagra, called in for six doses of 294
Vice-President 47
victim' status 297
Voice Master 293
voluntary consent 51, 59
vomiting, with diahorrea & hot & cold fever & sweats 292

W

Waiheke, Taranaki, Orewa Police, PCA's against them 227
Waiheke Island 19, 67, 92, 263, 267
Waikato 14, 19
Waikato Commander 77
Waikato Superintendent, Rickards 132
Waipareira Trust 157
Waitangi Tribunal 54
walk of shame 77
Walsh, Taffy, Police District Commander of North Shore
  jailed for paedophilia 69, 119
Walter Mitty characters 60
Wanganui Computer, Dept. For Courts, Wellington 17, 20
Warehouse 66
warrant 72, 76-77
washrooms of the psychiatric institutions 55
Watchhouse Keeper 131
watch people having sex with his wife 63
watered-down version 50-51
Watson, Scot 226
wave 297
Weinstein, Harvey, Psychiatrist 50
We knew him as 'Porridge' 23
well-endowed patients 55
Wellington 37
Western society, proactively broken down by the very
  compromised fuckwits ruling it 92, 121
wet and wild 57
What a joke! 77
what Jews do to Gentiles 67
What the fuck just happened? 105
wheels of judiciary grind exceedingly slowly and employ as
  many unnecessary people as possible 261
Where am I? 52
Where am I and how did I get here? 59
Whalley, Steve, convicted/served time sex offender,
  changed name to Stephen John Brandon 92
Wishart, Ian 75, 104
white-collar criminals 156
White House 47
White, Paul 33 murdered 4 September 1991 104, 118
whitewashes 74
Whore House 66
Who the Blazes is John Howard? 32
Wikipedia 19, 22-23, 69
  backs up NZ Police as a paedophile movement 70
wilful damage 296
Williams, Peter QC 18, 91
  who I have since published is a bisexual, heavily
  cuckolded 92-93, 265
Wilson, Margaret, KGB Attorney-Gen., 26, 37, 64, 71, 78-79
  employers could no longer look back past 7 years into
  criminal record 261, 283
window wipers 131-32
Wineburg, Dave 132
withdraw the charge 261
without a dick extension 294
Wolfgramm, Sam T (female) 26, 29-30, 68, 115
women accomplished more evil than the men ever could,
  women were equally as evil 54
wood marked 'A' and 'B' 54
Woods Commission of Inquiry in New South Wales 72
world class criminal 58
worst decision 58
worst ever rapist and paedophile 62, 77
worst people promoted within Police & into Judiciary 13
worthless (untermenschens) 51
Written confirmation of Custody, attempted murder, police
  assault, loss of driver's licence and traffic fines were
  happening simultaneously – on the same day 17
WWI 47
WWII 47, 55

Y

Yaldhurst railway station 53
Yaron: Why the fuck do you get caught up in this sort of shit
  8-19, 67, 263, 267
Yom Kippur 13
YouTube 27

Z

zero service 63

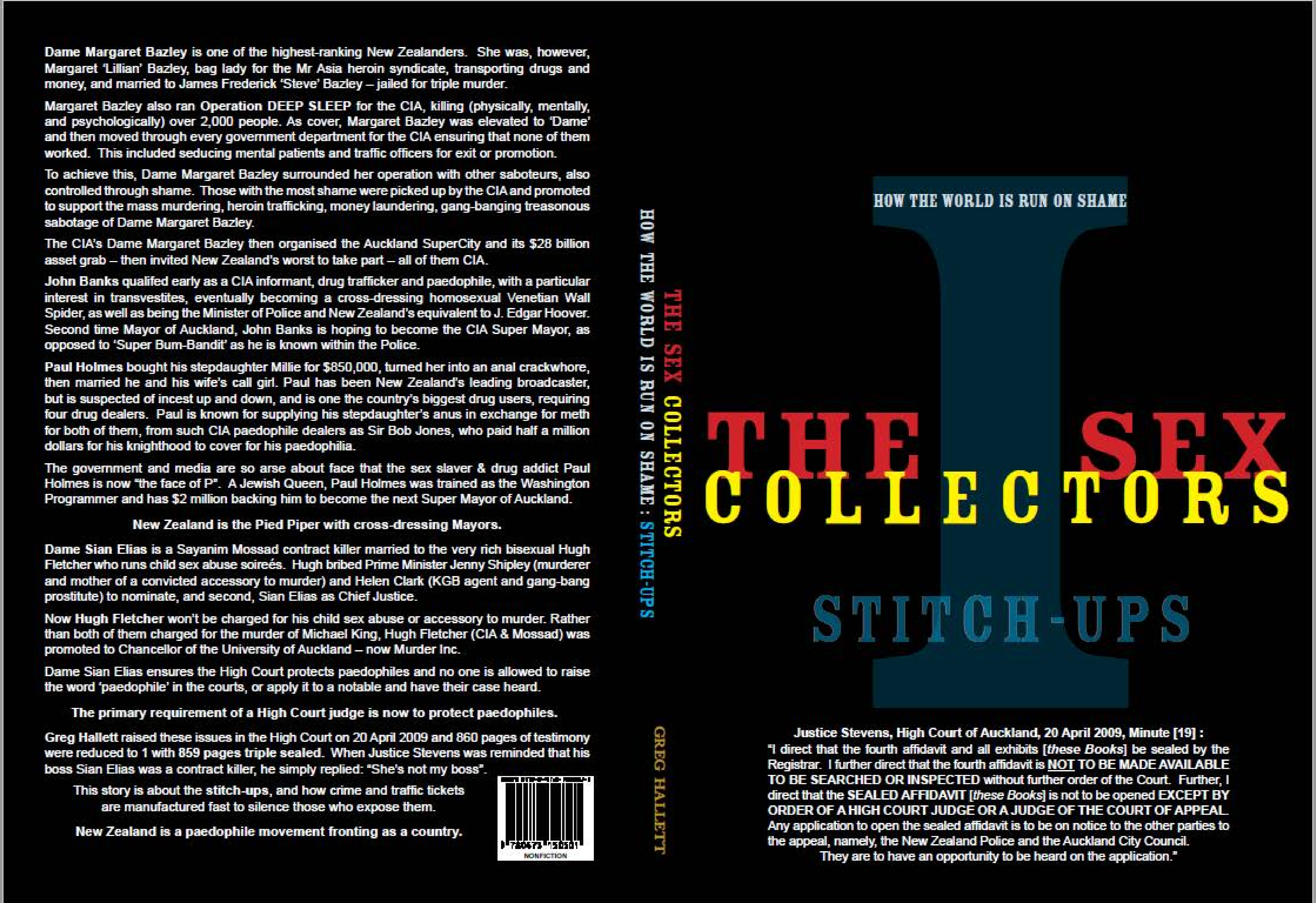

Dame Margaret Bazley is one of the highest-ranking New Zealanders. She was, however, Margaret 'Lillian' Bazley, bag lady for the Mr Asia heroin syndicate, transporting drugs and money, and married to James Frederick 'Steve' Bazley – jailed for triple murder.

Margaret Bazley also ran **Operation DEEP SLEEP** for the CIA, killing (physically, mentally, and psychologically) over 2,000 people. As cover, Margaret Bazley was elevated to 'Dame' and then moved through every government department for the CIA ensuring that none of them worked. This included seducing mental patients and traffic officers for exit or promotion.

To achieve this, Dame Margaret Bazley surrounded her operation with other saboteurs, also controlled through shame. Those with the most shame were picked up by the CIA and promoted to support the mass murdering, heroin trafficking, money laundering, gang-banging treasonous sabotage of Dame Margaret Bazley.

The CIA's Dame Margaret Bazley then organised the Auckland SuperCity and its $28 billion asset grab – then invited New Zealand's worst to take part – all of them CIA.

John Banks qualifed early as a CIA informant, drug trafficker and paedophile, with a particular interest in transvestites, eventually becoming a cross-dressing homosexual Venetian Wall Spider, as well as being the Minister of Police and New Zealand's equivalent to J. Edgar Hoover. Second time Mayor of Auckland, John Banks is hoping to become the CIA Super Mayor, as opposed to 'Super Bum-Bandit' as he is known within the Police.

Paul Holmes bought his stepdaughter Millie for $850,000, turned her into an anal crackwhore, then married he and his wife's call girl. Paul has been New Zealand's leading broadcaster, but is suspected of incest up and down, and is one the country's biggest drug users, requiring four drug dealers. Paul is known for supplying his stepdaughter's anus in exchange for meth for both of them, from such CIA paedophile dealers as Sir Bob Jones, who paid half a million dollars for his knighthood to cover for his paedophilia.

The government and media are so arse about face that the sex slaver & drug addict Paul Holmes is now "the face of P". A Jewish Queen, Paul Holmes was trained as the Washington Programmer and has $2 million backing him to become the next Super Mayor of Auckland.

New Zealand is the Pied Piper with cross-dressing Mayors.

Dame Sian Elias is a Sayanim Mossad contract killer married to the very rich bisexual Hugh Fletcher who runs child sex abuse soireés. Hugh bribed Prime Minister Jenny Shipley (murderer and mother of a convicted accessory to murder) and Helen Clark (KGB agent and gang-bang prostitute) to nominate, and second, Sian Elias as Chief Justice.

Now **Hugh Fletcher** won't be charged for his child sex abuse or accessory to murder. Rather than both of them charged for the murder of Michael King, Hugh Fletcher (CIA & Mossad) was promoted to Chancellor of the University of Auckland – now Murder Inc.

Dame Sian Elias ensures the High Court protects paedophiles and no one is allowed to raise the word 'paedophile' in the courts, or apply it to a notable and have their case heard.

The primary requirement of a High Court judge is now to protect paedophiles.

Greg Hallett raised these issues in the High Court on 20 April 2009 and 860 pages of testimony were reduced to 1 with 859 pages triple sealed. When Justice Stevens was reminded that his boss Sian Elias was a contract killer, he simply replied: "She's not my boss".

This story is about the **stitch-ups**, and how crime and traffic tickets are manufactured fast to silence those who expose them.

New Zealand is a paedophile movement fronting as a country.

NONFICTION

THE SEX COLLECTORS

HOW THE WORLD IS RUN ON SHAME : STITCH-UPS

GREG HALLETT

HOW THE WORLD IS RUN ON SHAME

THE SEX COLLECTORS

I

STITCH-UPS

Justice Stevens, High Court of Auckland, 20 April 2009, Minute [19] :

"I direct that the fourth affidavit and all exhibits [*these Books*] be sealed by the Registrar. I further direct that the fourth affidavit is NOT TO BE MADE AVAILABLE TO BE SEARCHED OR INSPECTED without further order of the Court. Further, I direct that the SEALED AFFIDAVIT [*these Books*] is not to be opened EXCEPT BY ORDER OF A HIGH COURT JUDGE OR A JUDGE OF THE COURT OF APPEAL. Any application to open the sealed affidavit is to be on notice to the other parties to the appeal, namely, the New Zealand Police and the Auckland City Council. They are to have an opportunity to be heard on the application."

The Secret of MINNIE'S MOUSSE

Tracy R. Twyman

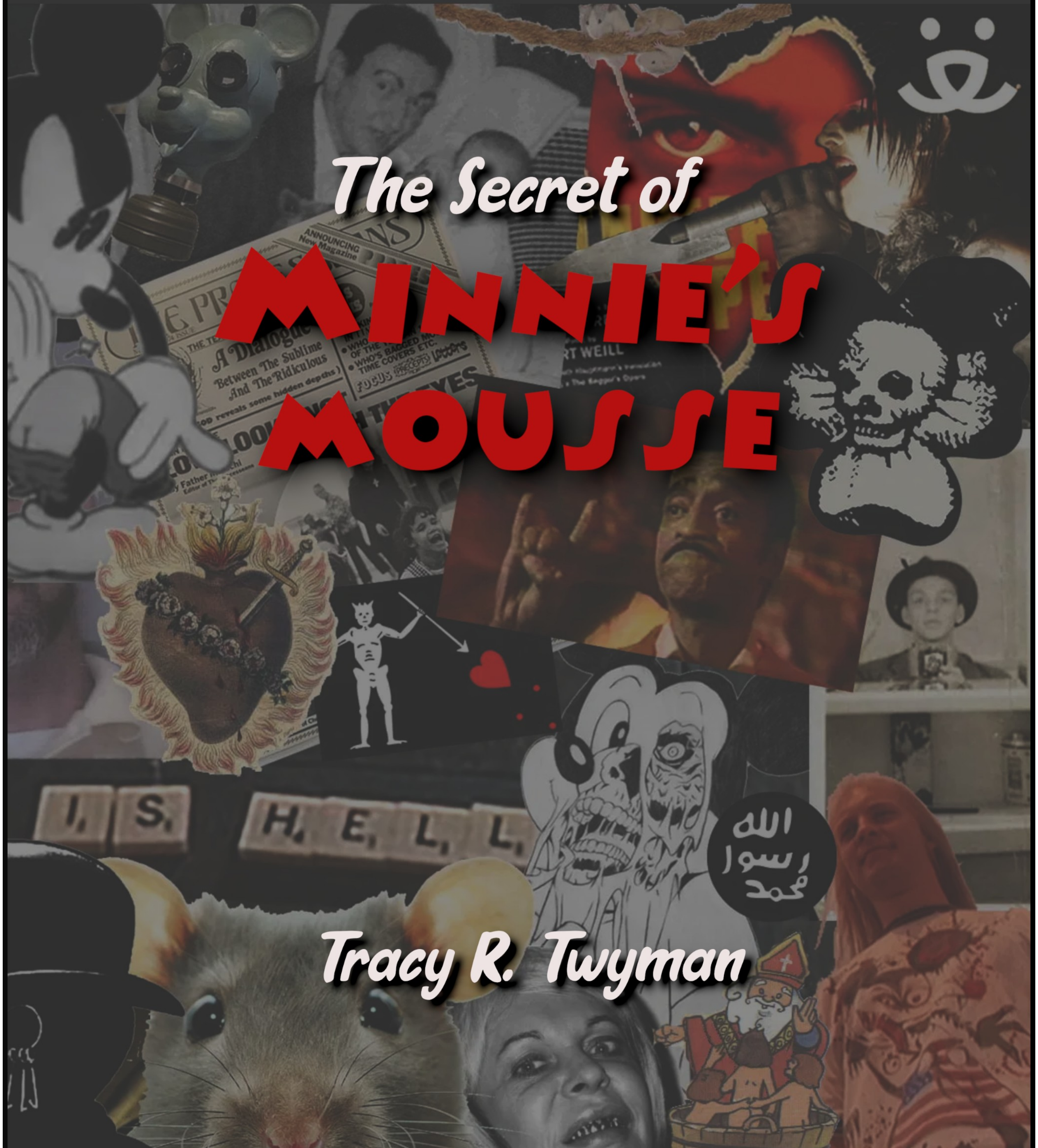
I S H E L L
A Dialogue Between The Sublime And The Ridiculous
ANNOUNCING New Magazine
RT WEILL

Woman's Body in Church
bed and Strangled
HEAD
ARMS
TORSO
THIGHS
KNEES
CALVES
FEET
Sinatra
WAR
Vesco Yacht May Be Armed With a Missile
PROCESSIONS
A Dialogue Between The Sublime And The Ridiculous
LOOKS NOT WITH THE EYES
HOW IS HELL
man Polanski
sed of rape
BRECHT
WEILL

As I noted in 2015's *Baphomet: The Temple Mystery Unveiled* (co-written with Alexander Rivera), *The Oxford English Dictionary* says that the first appearance of the name "Baphomet" in English text was in the Classical Journal, Volume 5, published in 1812, in an article by Charles Villers called *"Some Account of the Researches of the German Literati on the Subject of Ancient Literature and History."* There, in a footnote on page 88, a French scholar referred to only as "M. Lentz" is quoted, from an essay of his entitled "On the goddess of Paphos as represented on ancient monuments and on the Baphomet." This referred to a goddess worshipped in the coastal city of Paphos on the island of Cyprus, where the Templars were stationed. Idols of the goddess were used as land markers, just as statues of Hermes, the Greek wisdom god, were also used in ancient times. These images of the goddess had gradually combined with and then transmuted into images of Hermes himself. M. Lentz suggested that the name of these markers

—metae—got fused with that of Paphos to form “Paphometa,” and thus, Baphomet. Jules Michelet referred to Francois Just-Marie-Raynouard’s *The Templars: Tragedy in Five Acts* (1805) regarding the origin of the word:

> *M. Raynouard considers the word Baphomet in these two depositions, as an alteration of that of Mahomet, mentioned by the first [Templar] witness; and sees in it a desire on the part of the examiners to confirm the charges of a good understanding with the Saracens, so generally reported of the Templars. . . . [In their depositions] the Templars admit nothing more serious than that they have felt alarm, that they have fancied they saw a devil’s head, a mauffe’s head, that in these ceremonies they have seen the devil himself under the shape of a cat, or of a woman. . . .*

The word mauffe appears to originate in French as a way of spelling this alleged alteration of Mahomet, the name of the Muslim prophet, more frequently spelled “Mohammed” or “Muhammad,” which supposedly morphed into the word Baphomet. Variations seen in print also include “Maufe,” Mauffez,” and “Maphumet” (according to the *Bulletin de la Societe Academique de Laon, Vol. 21, 1876*). In the book The View of the State of Europe During the Middle Ages by Henry Hallam, published in 1818, the author concurs that the word is “an early French corruption of ‘Mahomet.’” This goes along with the reports, mentioned by Raynouard and Michelet, that the Templars were suspected at the time of their trials of having been secret converts to Islam, and secret friends of their supposed enemies, the Saracens. In one knight’s confession he mentioned that he had been taught to exclaim the word Yallah during the blasphemous ceremonies, which he said was “a word of the Saracens.” Also, according to the *Online Etymology Dictionary*, “Mahomet” was used in the Middle Ages as a generic word for “idol.”

While editing the English translation of Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall’s *Mysterium Baphometis Revelatum*, I also found that he had mentioned a similar variation on

Baphomet’s name, spelled here with an “s” instead of an “f” or “ph.” He quoted the confession of Gaucerand de Montperats, which said:

> *Their superior showed him an idol bearded and made in the likeness of Basomet… It is a terrible figure, which resembles a Devil saying in French ‘Mause.’… An idol that was in the form of a human head with a big beard.*

It occurred to me that this word is very similar to maus, the German word for “mouse.” This made me think about the fact that Mickey Mouse is one of the most popular fictional characters in the world, and the silhouette of his head is among the most recognizable corporate logos ever designed. Although it is an extremely simple design, the Disney Corporation is very litigious towards anyone who attempts to utilize this symbol, which is why they sued electro musician Deadmau5 for also using a logo featuring the black head of a mouse with two large ears. It seems that, according to Disney, any unauthorized use of three circles combined is infringing on their copyright, if the circle on the bottom is larger than the others. They don’t even have to be perfect circles.

Ever since I first saw it, the Deadmau5 logo has brought to mind the icon of the “death’s head”: a glyph featuring a human head, often with two thigh bones shown beneath. It was used by the Templars on their gravestones, most likely as a reference to the Baphomet, and later became incorporated into the “Jolly Roger” flag flown by pirates. It was also used in alchemy to symbolized the state of putrefaction, and by the Nazi S.S. to make them seem fearsome.

News

Disney Suing Deadmau5 Over Ears

Written by Blanket
September 5, 2014

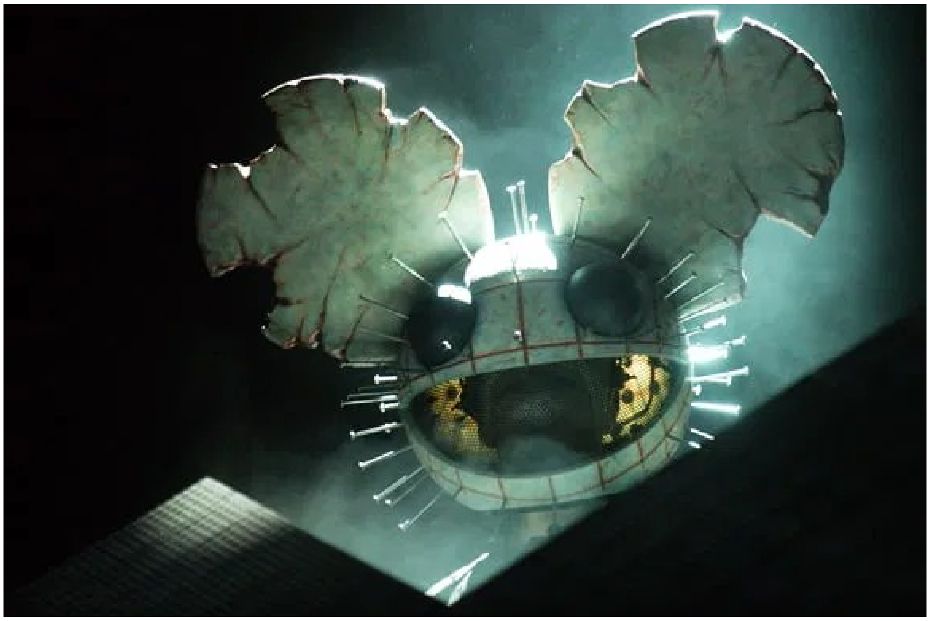

Amazingly, in the German language, not only does maus mean “mouse,” but with an “e” added on the end, it can be either a verb for the act of catching a mouse, a verb meaning “to pinch,” or an adjective that means “stone dead.” When an “r” is added, it becomes the noun for “a pinch,” and also designates the point of a knife. This may be significant, for the Knights Templar took their initiation oaths with the point of a sword pointed at their breast, the tip touching the skin to make an impression. The purpose of this was to remind them of how they would be murdered if they revealed the order’s secrets to anybody. Those secrets included the kidnapping, drugging, torturing, and murdering of children for their rituals.

As it turns out, Deadmau5 may very well know about these implicit connections between the word “mouse,” the death’s head, and Baphomet, for he calls himself “Goat Lord” on Twitter, and has been photographed many times wearing a t-shirt emblazoned with a full figure of Baphomet based on the famous Eliphas Levi depiction. He performs on stage in a cube-shaped structure he calls “the mouse trap.”

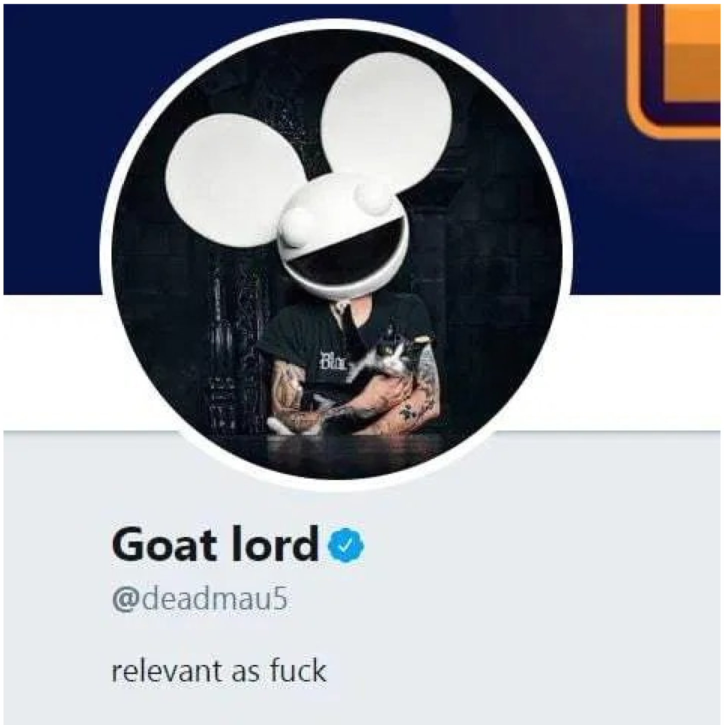

Goat lord

@deadmau5

relevant as fuck

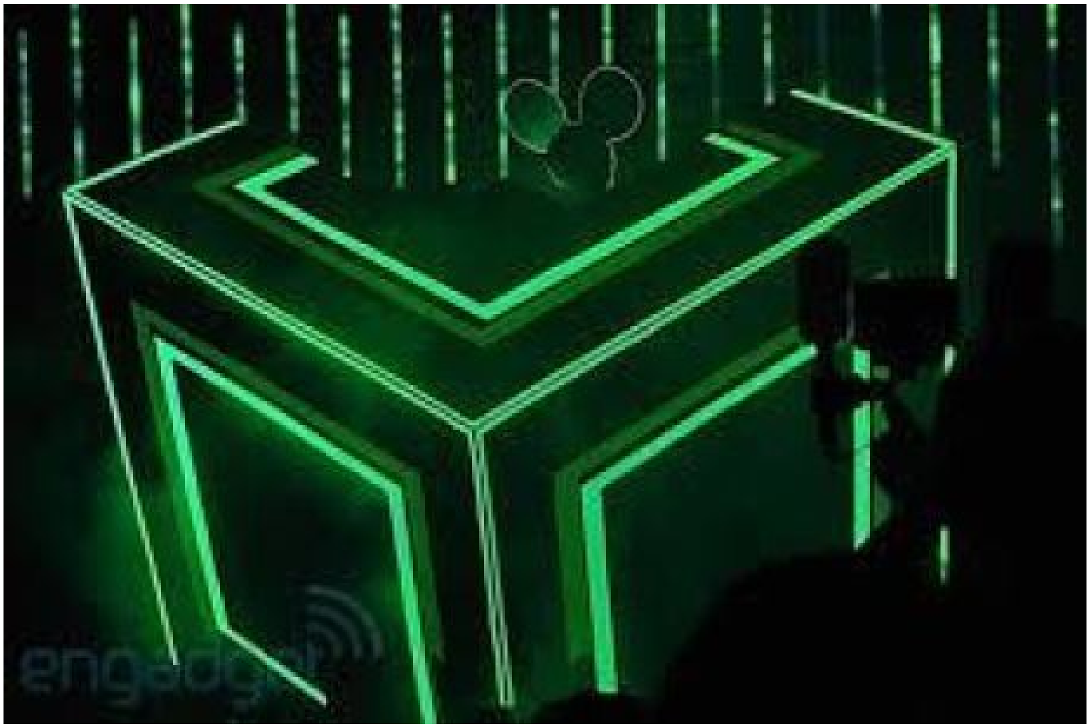

Deadmau5 'mousetrap'

The mouse-Baphomet connection might have ended there for me had I not thought about the chocolate mousse in the film *Rosemary's Baby*, used by the Satanic cult in the film as a vector to surreptitiously intoxicate Rosemary with something to make her sleep while she is being raped by Satan in a ritual. The mousse is made by Rosemary's neighbor, Minnie Castevet, who, along with her husband Roman Castevet, acts on behalf of the cult as Rosemary's handler, initiating Rosemary's husband Guy into the cult and manipulating Rosemary into unwittingly being impregnated with the Anti-Christ. The mousse is delivered to Rosemary and Guy by Minnie as a gift while they are having a romantic dinner at home. Rosemary, who can taste the contaminant in the dessert, complains of an "undertaste," and sneakily dumps the remainder of her mousse in her napkin when Guy isn't looking.

The connection between this scene and not only the mouse/mause/Baphomet symbolism, but specifically Mickey Mouse, is underscored by the fact that the character's name, Minnie, is the same as that of Mickey Mouse's wife, and that Minnie specifically pronounces the word "mousse" as "mouse." With her overly-rouged cheeks, occasionally sporting a black-and-white polka-dotted do-rag tied into a bow on the top of her head, Mrs. Castevet even resembles Minnie Mouse.

During the sex ritual, Guy expresses concern that Rosemary might be regaining consciousness, but Minnie assures him:

> *She can't see. As long as she ate the mouse, she can't see nor hear.*

The "mouse," then, is an agent that causes comatose paralysis, rendering the victim blind and deaf, with short-term amnesia after the fact. Let us recall that the term "slipping a Mickey" is used to describe the poisoning of someone's drink in order to cause this effect, analogous to the more modern term "roofie." It originated with the famed use of chloral hydrate on unsuspecting customers by saloon owner

Mickey Finn, who was accused of robbing his comatose, poisoned patrons in Chicago in the 1890s.

The director of *Rosemary's Baby*, Roman Polanski, used the same tactic years later on the 13-year-old girl that he famously raped in a hot tub at a party, leading to his exile from the United States. Note that the leader of the Satanic cult portrayed in the film is also named Roman, and that Polanski's pregnant wife ended up being murdered by another Satanic cult, the Manson Family, while he was out of town. That gang also drugged victims to take advantage of them, and the leader of the group used drugs to control the minds of the members.

That the poisoned mousse in *Rosemary's Baby* is meant to connect symbolically with the image of an actual mouse is driven home with repeated mentions of a "mouse bite" during the feverish dream that Rosemary has that night while she is being raped. She sees a nurse who says to her, "I'm sorry you're not feeling well," to which Rosemary replies "It's just the mouse bite." The nurse then responds, "We'd better tie your legs down, in case of convulsions." Seconds later, someone dressed as the Pope says to Rosemary, "They tell me you've been bitten by a mouse," and she replies, "That's why I couldn't come to see you." This implies that the "mouse bite"—the mousse—somehow prevented her from connecting to God through the religion that she was raised in, resulting in the demon-induced trance state.

The hidden symbolism behind the words "mouse" and "mousse" fit oh-so-subtlely with what is going on in the story. Mouse bites, of course, can not only be quite painful, but are prone to infection, and sometimes communicate potentially fatal diseases, such as hantavirus. Mousse is an Old French word meaning "froth" or "scum," and shares common roots with the English word "mushroom." Of course, intoxication is always toxic to some extent. Rosemary only ate a mouse-sized portion of her dessert, though, so it only partially affected her, leaving her conscious through much of the ritual. At one point, she even screamed out loud, “This is no dream. This is really happening!” The next morning, she woke up and remembered a dream of being raped by “something inhuman.”

The creator of the Church of Satan, Anton LaVey, was employed as a consultant for the film by Polansky to make the scene as authentic as possible. In other words, the movie depicts things that a Satanic witch coven would actually do. Indeed, the tactic of using drugs, such as chloroform, to incapacitate and then kidnap a new recruit for the initiation ceremony is one said to be used by the Astrum Argentum occult order, and it is what the Skull and Bones fraternity at Yale was depicted as doing in the film The Skulls.

Historically, there are other instances in which mice have been used by Satanists as vectors to poison people. The process is described in J.-K. Huysmans’ novel La Bas when one of his characters, Carhaix, tells his friends about a Catholic priest who secretly worships the Devil:

> *Well, wherever he travels, Docre takes along with him some white mice which he keeps in cages. He feeds them on consecrated hosts and on pastes impregnated with minute doses of poison. When these unfortunate rodents are saturated, he holds them over a chalice and, with a sharp instrument, pricks them here and there. The blood, which is collected in a vase, is employed by him… to strike down his enemies….*
>
> *From time to time he employs a formula invented by a society of Satanists called the Re-Theurgistes-Optimates, of whom I have spoken before, and he prepares a mixture comprised of flour, meat, the wafer of the Eucharist, mercury, animal semen, human blood, acetate of morphine and aspic oil.*

> *More recently, according to Gevingey, he has taken to producing an even more venomous concoction: fish are stuffed with communion wafers and carefully graded toxins; these toxins are selected from among those which induce madness or cause tetanus when absorbed through the pores of the skin. Then, when these fishes are thoroughly permeated with these sacrilegious substances, Docre removes them from the water, leaves them to rot and then distils them in such a manner that a single drop of essential oil he so extracts is enough to make a man go mad!*
>
> …
>
> *…A case of bewitchment by means of the veniniferous blood of mice occurred in Chalons-sur-Marne in 1879 and, true enough, a canon did belong to this Satanic cult….*

When asked to explain "how it is possible to poison a man… at a distance" this way, Carhaix reveals:

> *…[T]he magician employs a medium, a woman who is known in such circles as 'a flying spirit'; these women are somnambulists who, when hypnotized, can transport themselves wherever you like. In this way you can use them to transmit the magic poisons to the designated person even if he is hundreds of miles away. Those who are stricken in such a manner have seen no one, and they go mad or die without suspecting the venefice.*

Later, the main character in the story, Durtal, thinks to himself:

> *…Is the idea of a larva, some flying spirit, any less extraordinary than that of a microbe travelling immense distances in order to secretly poison you; why shouldn't the earth's atmosphere be chock-a-block with elemental spirits as well as bacteria?*

So it seems to me we now have multiple reasons why giving someone “the mouse” could have developed into a secret code for poisoning someone, made use of with multiple variations by several secret societies and crime syndicates, most connected to Satanism. The term might apply to this act when performed for various reasons: either to murder or hex the victim, or to render them unconscious so that they can be victimized, or to kidnap them for initiation into a secret order which they may have (as in the case of Astrum Argentum) voluntarily agreed to join, perhaps without knowing that this would result in being kidnapped. “Mouse” could also be used to refer to substances given to lower the defenses of the initiate/victim, to make it easier to program his or her mind with hypnosis. Add in also the term “mouseburger,” introduced by Helen Gurley Brown, founder of *Cosmopolitan Magazine*, to refer to the use of subtle psychological manipulation to dominate people whilst appearing to play a subordinate role.

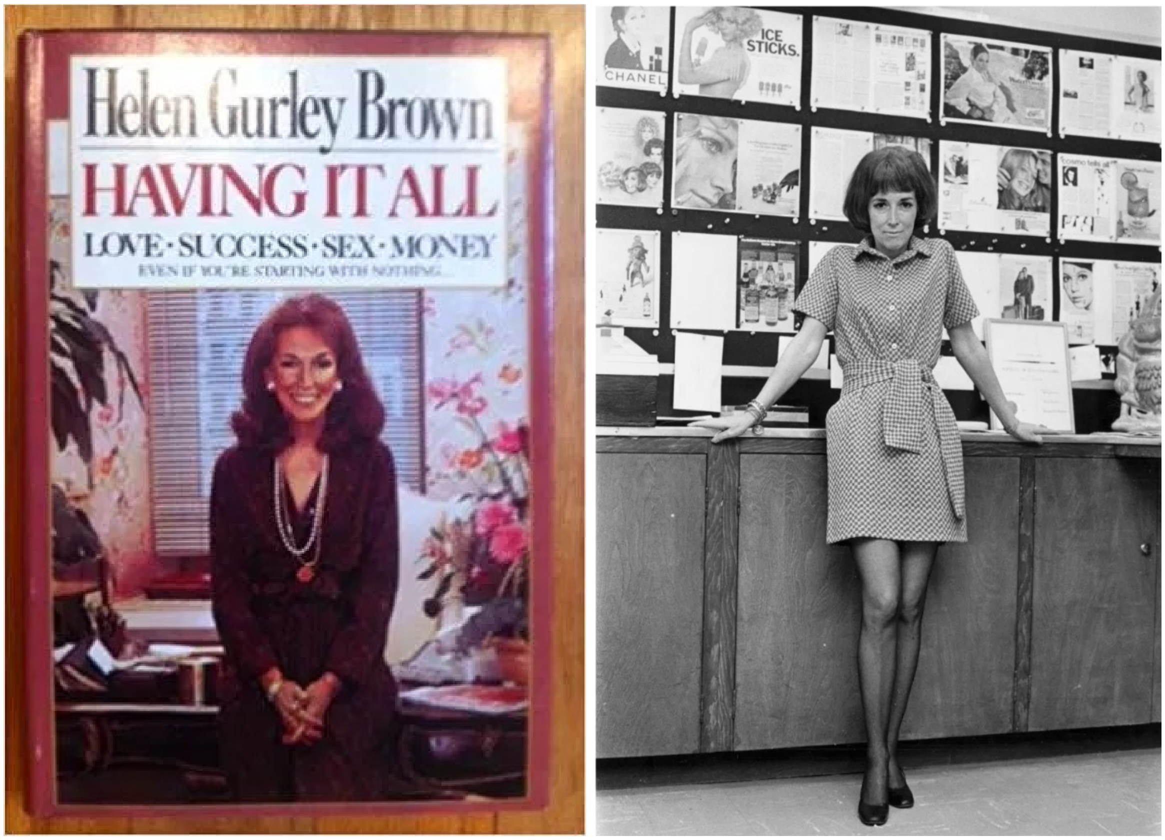

Helen Gurley Brown, 1965

HGB, mouseburger'd to the top!

You know you're top mouseburger when you have a long cigarette filter

The fact that *mause* also means "to pinch," "a pinch," "at knifepoint," or "the point of a knife" may explain why we refer to a drink that has been surreptitiously contaminated with drugs as having been "spiked." Also, another way of delivering the drug to the victim is with the use of a poisoned dart. Then consider the fact that Disney's trademarked mouse logo of three black circles resembles the "club" symbol used on a deck of playing cards. These objects were initially called *basto* in Spanish, or bastoni in Italian, meaning a "cudgel." Besides poison, another way to render a person incapacitated is to club him or her over the head. This is what happened to Hiram Abiff in the Masonic ritual. The blow supposedly kills him, but later in the rite he is "resurrected," proving that it was non-lethal, just like a slipped Mickey.

Of course, now that I have mentioned this, you will immediately think of the Mickey Mouse Club, where the "magic words" used to perform tricks are always "Meeska Mouska Mickey Mouse!" As the Sorcerer's Apprentice, and the figurehead of the Magic Kingdom, Mickey presumably knows a great deal about the practice of magic. The Mickey Mouse Club has been responsible for bringing us several of our culture's popular music stars over the last several decades, from Annette Funacello to Christina Aguilera, Britney Spears and Justin Timberlake. These stars start out as actors on Disney's TV shows, then later become pop music sirens, enticing the youth of the world towards the wide-open gates of Hell as they spin out their train wreck lives on the public stage for all to see, exhibiting all of the classic traits of sexual abuse and mind control victimhood along the way.

Some relevant information connecting Satanism and mind control to both Disney cartoon films and Mickey Mouse in particular were mentioned in my 2005 book *Mind-Controlled Sex Slaves and the CIA*. Summarizing my interview with professed government mind control victim Cathy O-Brien, I wrote:

> *According to Cathy, she was controlled with a form of Neuro-Linguistic*

> *Programming used on many MONARCH [MK-ULTRA] slaves, which involved the use of themes from Wizard of Oz, and various Disney children's films. She was taught to go into another dimension "over the rainbow" whenever the pain of the abuse became too much to bear, and to identify with Cinderella when her father assigned her a strict daily regimen of household chores, which was part of her slave programming. The hallucinogenic and multi-dimensional themes of Alice in Wonderland were also quite extensively used. This was done, not just to Cathy, but to all her brothers and sisters as well, who were also being used in the program. As she writes in her book:*

> *My brother, now 37, remains psychologically locked into those traumatic childhood years and is obsessed with Disney themes and productions to this day. His house is decorated in Disney memorabilia, he wears Disney clothes, listens to my father's instructions on a Disney telephone, and maintains "When You Wish Upon a Star" as his favorite song, which has locked his children into the same theme.*

Interestingly, the Disney programming claim is one made by almost every "recovered" [MK-Ultra] MONARCH slave, although it's difficult to determine whether these claims began to surface before or after the publication of Cathy's book. For example, a number of them say that they were taken to Tinker Air Force Base in Oklahoma, where they were placed in electrified "Tinkerbell" cages, and tortured into creating child alters that would, like Peter Pan, never grow up.

Another direct connection between Mickey Mouse and the Satanic ritual abuse subject is Lt. Col. Michael Aquino, who I described in my book as:

> *…a former Green Beret and senior U.S. military intelligence officer once*

> *involved in the study of "PSY-OPS," or psychological warfare. He wrote an extensive essay with Colonel Paul E. Vallely (a Fox News Channel analyst) called "From PSY-OP to MindWar: The Psychology of Victory." In this essay, the authors advocated the use of propaganda, subliminal messages, air ionization, and ELF waves to induce specific states of mind, both domestically and abroad, in order to manipulate public opinion. Another interesting fact about Micheal Aquino is that he just happens to be the leader and founder of the Temple of Set, a splinter group of the Church of Satan, in which Aquino was once a high-ranking member. The Temple of Set now has a number of chapters that operate on military bases. Interestingly, this group's rituals often involve Nazi symbols and rhetoric. Aquino once even performed a Satanic "working" at Heinrich Himmler's castle of Wewelsburg while in Germany on "official NATO business."*
>
> *Predictably, this has caused no shortage of controversy to surround Michael Aquino. In the late 1980s, a Satanic ritual abuse scandal broke out at a day care center on the Presidio military base in San Francisco, where Aquino was stationed. The children accused Aquino, as well as a Baptist Minister named Gary Hambright, who was indicted but not convicted. These kids claimed that the people who molested them were part of a "devil worship club," and were able to describe the inside of Aquino's house, where the abuse was said to have taken place. Other children identified Aquino by his nickname, "Mickey." His one-time associate Anton LaVey claimed that Aquino's nickname was actually "Mickey" because his peculiar haircut made him look like Mickey Mouse. Although Aquino was never indicted, and the charges against Hambright were dropped, several of the children contracted STDs, proving that someone had abused them. Later, after Hambright died of AIDS, the U.S. Army wrote to the children's parents urging them to get their children tested for HIV….*

While it is true that Aquino's affected and embellished widow's peak resembles the shape of the black peak between Mickey's ears, this is to be expected from a publicly-known leader of a Satanist group, as this feature has long been associated with dark characters. From the demon Mephistopheles in Christopher Marlowe's *Doctor Faustus (*the name probably related to "mephitic," meaning "foul-smelling"—another possible connection with *mauffe*) to modern depictions of devils, vampires and warlocks, all have a widow's peak either formed with their hair, or with a black hood draped over the head. LaVey himself wore such a hood during rituals. But why does Mickey Mouse have a widow's peak?

Indeed, have you ever seen, in nature, a mouse with a face that was a totally different color from the rest of its body? I have seen mice with less fur around their noses, so that their skin was showing through more in that area, but certainly not around the eyes, like Mickey. I have never once seen a black mouse with a white or pink flesh-colored face. We assume that anthropomorphized cartoon animals are created with a great deal of artistic license when it comes to their anatomy. Nonetheless, the mind is always searching for meaning, for rhyme and reason, so when we wonder why Donald Duck wears a hat and shirt but no pants, or how Mickey can have Pluto as a pet but treat Goofy as a peer, we might also wonder about the intent behind the design of Mickey's face. To me, it looks like he's wearing a mask and a hood similar to those worn at Venetian balls, as featured in *Eyes Wide Shut*.

I'm certainly not the only one to think so. Walt Disney himself saw that Mickey's face lent itself to the look of a gas mask, designed for use during chemical attacks. So he personally designed a child-sized gas mask fitted with Mickey Mouse ears to make chemical attacks less frightening for kids. These masks were actually put into production by the US government, and can now be found in military museums. There may even be one at the Walt Disney Family Museum, which is located, oddly enough, at the Presidio army base in San Francisco where Satanist Lt. Col. Michael "Mickey Mouse" Aquino was accused of raping children in Satanic rituals.

Radio pe
assista
fitted
f
ne
wearing
hildren.
MICKEY MOUSE

Perhaps more than any other children's cartoon character, Mickey Mouse has been used for culture-jamming purposes, and just to be menacing, by altering his features into something scary. These representations are easy enough to find, and there are hundreds of variations. Marilyn Manson, a member of the Church of Satan who also has the initials "MM" in his stage name, and who named himself after the Satanist who had Roman Polanski's wife murdered, famously went on tour once wearing an evil Mickey Mouse costume. Recently, Satanist, rap artist and Marilyn Manson acolyte Lil Uzi Vert spent a fortune on a diamond-encrusted necklace featuring a representation of Marilyn Manson in this guise.

Regarding Mickey Mouse's widow's peak, I presume it is meant to imply the shape of the letter "M." But with the line formed by his snout and mandibles, when you look at him straight on, it also kind of looks like the capital letter "B" on its side. Is this B/M a hidden reference to Baphomet?

The "widow's peak" feature of some people's hair is supposedly so-named because it resembles what was once a common feature of the hat that would hold the veil of "widow's weeds": traditional mourning garments for widows. This connects it to the veil of Isis, the most famous widow of the Egyptian pantheon, for whom the Freemasons identify themselves as the "widow's sons." Isis is, in many ways, analogous to Cybele, whom Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall saw Baphomet as a representation of.

Isis, called Ishtar by the Babylonians, was also the Queen of Prostitutes. The tithes given to her temples gave her worshippers the rite to utilize the "sacred prostitutes" who were obliged to serve her in this manner. Amazingly, the terrorist group ISIS now controls thousands of women that they have kidnapped and forced into sexual slavery. As I have shown in the past, they now freely post videos on YouTube and Instagram selling people, as well as access to sites where, it is implied, patrons will find footage of men, women, and children being tortured, raped, and murdered.

Several of these YouTube advertisements make open reference to mind control techniques perfected by the CIA's MK-ULTRA experiments. These YouTube accounts often use as their insignia a cartoon face with a creepy smile and an injured eyeball poking through a leather bondage mask, taken from the anime show "Tokyo Ghoul." This show is all about a race of cannibalistic semi-human monsters hiding within the human population, preying on people in secret, while the government shields them from public awareness. Considering the well-documented connections between ISIS and the CIA, as well as the US military, the symbolism is apt.

Returning once more to the subject of the "mouse" and the possible connection with the use by Satanists of consecrated communion wafers, it is worth revisiting what I wrote in my book *Hocus Pocus: The Magical Power of Saint Peter*, regarding the Catholic mass:

> *The origin of the word "mass," like the ritual itself, can be found in the rites of the cult of Mithras. The Catholic Eucharist, in which bread and wine is ritually consumed, is done in commemoration of the last meal that was shared by Jesus and his disciples. Likewise, in the mystery religion of Mithraism, a ritual involving the consumption of bread and wine was celebrated in commemoration of the last meal that the legendary Mithras is said to have shared with the sun god Helios before ascending to the highest realm. The bread in the Mithraic ritual was called the mizd, a word reminiscent of the name of the Persian god Ahura-Mazda in the Zoroastrian religion, sometimes spelled Ormuzd or Ormus. The word mazd is the probable origin for the title of the Catholic ritual known as "mass," in which the Eucharist is consumed. The word is probably also related to the Jewish name for unleavened bread, matza, which Jews consume ritually every Passover. The Mithraic mizd was a small round cake embossed with an equilateral cross on top. It was identical in size, shape, and ornament to the Communion wafers now used in Catholic mass, which are small disks of*

unleavened bread with a cross on top.

At the Last Supper, Jesus told his disciples to drink wine and eat bread "in remembrance" of him. He also said that the bread was his flesh, and that the wine was his blood. So by consuming them, Catholics believe they are becoming one with Jesus, who is himself one with God the Father. Thus, the Eucharist is a sacrificial rite as well – a recreation of the ritual sacrifice of Jesus to God on the cross, laid upon the altar. It is also a way of internalizing the Holy Spirit. ... It is because the bread represents the body of the sacrifice that Catholics call it the "host," which is derived from the Latin word hostia, meaning "sacrificial victim." It also denotes someone who is being held prisoner, which is where we get the English word "hostage." Before his execution, of course, Jesus was held captive. But there may be another hidden meaning as well.

In the Judaic rites that were once performed in the Tabernacle by the ancient priesthood of Aaron, burnt offerings would be sacrificed to the Lord, whose spirit would come down as a tongue made of fire to consume them from the altar. This is why, during the Catholic rite of the Eucharist, the wine and bread are placed inside of a box or vessel on the altar that is called a "Tabernacle." The priests of the Israelites were able to call the spirit of God from Heaven using his secret name, so that he personally would consume the sacrifice within the sacred space of the Tabernacle. Likewise, Catholics believe that a priest actually has the authority to call Jesus down from Heaven and, within that space, cause him to physically incarnate into the bread and wine. Then God—vicariously, through the priest and congregation—consumes the sacrifice of his son. Thus, they are essentially sharing a meal with Jesus and God, just as the disciples did at the Last Supper. As the priest and congregation consume the bread and wine, the Holy Spirit enters into them.

The idea that a priest or magician can cause a spirit to enter into a physical object is an ancient one. The simplest way to think of it is to think of the Arabic legends of the genie in the lamp. A spirit can be invoked into a vessel and then controlled by the owner of the vessel, who can demand that the spirit perform miracles. This notion that the spiritual vessel can be an item of food or drink, which then causes the spirit to incarnate in the person who consumes it, is also ancient. This occurs in The Gospel of John, Chapter 13: 26 – 27, where Jesus invokes Satan into a piece of bread and then gives it to Judas to eat. Judas then becomes possessed by Satan and proceeds to betray Jesus.

Invoking a spirit into a vessel and then forcing it to perform miracles is indeed one of the most basic practices of witchcraft. It is no surprise, then, that many Protestant churches and other non-Catholic Christian groups do not celebrate the Eucharist, as they believe it to be dangerously close to the practice of witchcraft, which is expressly forbidden in the Bible. In fact, the term "jack-in-the-box" was originally a derogatory term used by non-Catholics to refer to the host inside of the Tabernacle.

"Jack" has for centuries been a slang term for a spirit or a demon. The term "jack-in-the-box" was used by those who believed that it was a demonic spirit, and not Jesus, that was being invoked into the Communion wafer. Likewise, the term "hocus pocus," slang for magic and sorcery, is derived from the Latin words used by a priest to miraculously affect the Transubstantiation of the Host: Hoc est corpus Jesu Christi ("This is the body of Jesus Christ"). Then from "hocus pocus," we also get "hokum," "hokey," and "hoax."

So what we have here is a confluence of imagery: mice, Disney, Baphomet, the Templars, the Catholic church, initiation into Satanism, drugging people without their knowledge, holding people against their will, slavery, prostitution, rape, murder, and mind control, all rolled up in the thwack of a cudgel, the prick of a poisoned dart, or the pinch of a spiked consumable, used as bait, just like cheese in a mousetrap. Don't you wonder if Kate Spade's husband Andy was aware of any of these connections when he stepped out of his house for the first time after his wife's suicide wearing a mask featuring the face of one of the mice from the Disney film *The Rescuers* (about saving a kidnapped child)? Did his brother David know about it when he dressed as a mouse eating a slice of pizza for Halloween in 2015?

As I pondered the mysteries of Mickey, I tried to think of what, if any, occult significance there might be to the three circles of the Mickey Mouse head Disney logo. I thought of all the typical things: the Trinity and such. I've already mentioned the club connection that I found. Then I thought about the three circles that are used to represent the three gold balls which are themselves the emblem of Saint Nicholas. They stand for the three bags of gold that, according to the hagiography of Nicholas, were used by the saint to ransom the lives of three children.

There are various versions of this myth. In one, the gold is given to the father of three girls to use for their dowries, so that he can marry them off, to save them from a life of prostitution. This explains why the emblem of the three circles, or three golden balls, is associated in some countries with the business of pawnbrokering.

In another version, the balls represent three boys who accidentally wandered away from their family and were lured into the shop of an evil cannibalistic butcher. The butcher killed the boys and submerged their bodies within three barrels filled with brine, intending to sell their meat as pork. But Nicholas intuitively figured out what the butcher had done, opened the barrels, and somehow magically resurrected the boys, who then returned home. Thus, according to *The Birthday Book of Saints* by Sean Kelly and Rosemary Rogers, Nicholas became "a Patron of all children in a pickle ever since." Meanwhile, according to tradition, the spirit of the evil butcher has been following Nicholas "in penance," taking the form of a figure called by the French "Pere Fouettard."

While the word *fouettard* defied Google's auto-translator, and did not appear in my Langenscheidt French-English dictionary from 1968, the latter source did give me the definition of *fouet*, which is a whip or birch-rod. *Fouetter* is the verb for the act of flogging a child. This would go along with the imagery not only of Fouettard's own penance (self-flagellation), but also the imagery of child discipline that accompanies Fouettard's mythological counterparts in other countries. For he is certainly the same figure as "Zwarte Pieten," or Black Pete, counterpart of "Sinterklaas," as Saint Nicholas is called in Belgium, the Netherlands, and the Lower Rhine in Germany.

The job of Black Pete, who appears in blackface, is to flog and threaten children who have been bad, punishing them by with a lump of coal as their only Christmas gift, while his more positive counterpart gives away toys and candy to the nice kids. In some countries Pete is paired with, or replaced by, a child-eating satyr called Krampus, a monstrous creature with snarling fangs and huge goat horns. Krampus actually threatens to kidnap the bad children and take them to his "lair" to have his way with them.

Of course, we are talking about the character who inspired Santa Claus, or Father Christmas, whom I have exposed in previous writings as a personification of the child-eating Saturn or Chronos ("Father Time") from Greco-Roman myths. While we in the USA recognize Santa Claus as part of the celebration of the birth of Jesus

Christ on December 25th (a day also said to have been celebrated in the Roman cult of Mithras), the actual feast of Saint Nicholas is generally celebrated on the fifth or sixth of December, and on the 19th in some places. The sixth is the date observed most commonly, but the fifth is his day in the Netherlands. Festivities usually occur on both days anyway, just as we also celebrate Christmas Eve. The traditional activities for the feast day of Saint Nicholas include the giving of small gifts to children by apparitions of the fabled saint. Gifts are placed inside of shoes or socks that have been put by the fire.

The red suit that Santa Claus wears purportedly derives from the bishop's robes worn by "Sinterklaas" in these older European traditions. In Germany and Poland, boys used to dress up as bishops on the saint's feast day and beg in the streets for alms for the poor. This is interesting in many ways because in my French dictionary, the word fou is defined as an adjective meaning, "mad, insane, crazy," or a noun for a "lunatic" or a "fool." It is also a word for the bishop figure in chess.

The first definitions would fit well with Pere Fouettard's image as a child-murderer. But as he is described as a butcher by trade, it's rather strange that he's addressed as *Pere*, meaning "Father," as though he's a priest, and his name appears to also connect with the imagery of a bishop via the game of chess. After all, it's Nicholas who is the bishop and Father Christmas, right? But then recall the traditions of Christmas. If you caught Santa Claus leaving you a present on Christmas morning, and you defrocked him, what would you find? Your own father, most likely, right? Nicholas is the "nice" father who gives you things. Fouttard, a.k.a. Krampus or Black Pete, is the mean father who punishes you for being bad, at best with a lump of coal instead of presents, or worse, by kidnapping, raping and killing you. Fouttard is merely the dark side of Nicholas.

Historically, Nicholas lived in the third century and was the bishop of the city of Myra, located in modern Turkey. There is a story about his work as a theologian that is considered apocryphal by some, but may actually be true. It is said that he attended the First Council of Nicea, where he argued in favor of the doctrine of the Trinity. Purportedly he even got violent about it, punching the “heretic” Arias in the face himself. So the figure of Nicholas is historically fused with the concept that the Most High God has three personalities. Therefore, the idea of Nicholas having a child-murdering “alter” personality doesn’t seem far-fetched at all. Furthermore, it is interesting to consider the possibility that this may be connected to his symbol of three circles arranged in a triangle, which are even shown at the bottom of his stole in most depictions of him.

In Christianity, three such circles intertwined represent the Trinity. In occult parlance, three dots arranged in a triangle are used somewhat like an ellipsis is used in punctuation. They represent a word that has been omitted. Often, in the internal documents of secret societies, we see the name of the group, the titles of its officers, and the names of its members written with just the initials, each letter followed by the triangle of dots. So are the three dots associated with Nicholas also meant to represent the Trinity? It seems impossible to deny the implicit connection.

Now you may think that this is all very interesting, but still doubt that it has anything to do with Mickey Mouse or the Disney logo. Well, if so, prepare to be amazed. I was, and I still am. It would be impossible for me to have made this up if I had tried.

The connection between the mouse-head logo and St. Nicholas had occurred to me instinctively, as I had written about the symbols of Nicholas before. Following this instinct, I decided to look up Walt Disney’s birth date, wondering if by any chance it was on or near December 6, the feast day of St. Nicholas. Sure enough, he was born on December 5, 1901—the day on which the feast is celebrated in the Netherlands, which is the eve of the feast day in most other countries. This is the night when the saint and his dark partner are said to make their rounds, giving away toys and kidnapping naughty children.

The odds of him having been born on the fifth or sixth of December are less than 1/183. Are you going to tell yourself that this is a coincidence? I don’t know exactly what it means, but a random occurrence it surely is not. There’s more, though.

Continuing to look into the traditions of Saint Nicholas, we find that in central Europe his name is pronounced with an “M” at the front rather than the letter “N.” Thus, he is called *Miklavz* in Slovenia, *Mikulas* in Slovakia and the Czech Republic, *Mikolaj* in Poland, *Mykolay* in the Ukraine, *Miklos* in Hungary, and *Mos Nicolae* in Romania. Yes, of course I am thinking that there is a connection between Mickey Mouse and Saint “MEE-KAY.” But there’s more. Again, I am just shocked at how correct my instincts have turned out to be, and what was revealed when I decided to follow them.

As I was preparing this presentation, I was looking through my music collection for something to listen to. My eyes came across the Bobby Darin recording of “Mack the Knife.” Recalling that *maus* means “knife-point” in German, I decided to play it for the first time in many years. The lyrics intrigued me, for they seemed significantly relevant to the present inquiry. When I looked up the history of the song, I absolutely could not believe what I found. This is nothing less than the secret, dark, hidden origin of the name “Mickey Mouse,” which his creators have kept quiet about, and lied to cover up for, since the late 1920s. Once you see what I am talking about, you will understand why I have no doubt about this.

The song is about a murderous, raping, thieving thug and his various exploits. The swing and jazz versions of it make it seem glamorous, but the original song, portrayed as being sung on the banks of the Thames for a street audience with an organ grinder playing the tune, was much more dark, meant to be taken as an ominous warning about the impending threat of this murderer wandering loose in the streets of London. It comes from a stage play called *The Threepenny Opera* that ran in Berlin in 1928, the same year that Mickey Mouse was purportedly invented. The play was then produced as a film in 1931 by the Berlin branch of Warner Brothers Pictures. *Steamboat Willie*, the first theatrical short featuring Mickey Mouse, was released in November of that year as well. The name of the central character in *The Threepenny Opera* is Macheath, also called “Mackie Messer,” meaning, in German, “Mackie the Knife.”

If you are noticing that the name sounds a bit close to “Macbeth,” I think that is important. A central motif in that Shakespeare play is the metaphorical “bloodstain” on the hands of the murderer (Macbeth himself) that can’t be washed away. The central murder in that play was committed by a knife as well. Macbeth means “Son of the House,” like the *royal house*, and indeed, the play is all about seizing the royal crown. “Macheath,” means “son of the heath,” i.e., “son of the outlands,” or “son of the heathen,” but interestingly, in *The Threepenny Opera*, there is a royal connection as well, and at then end of the play the central figures get to join the Royal Order of the Garter.

The Threepenny Opera is based on 1728’s *The Beggar’s Opera* by John Gay, which was itself based upon what were then the recently-transpired true adventures of the outlaw Jack Sheppard, hanged in 1724. He was a thief, and married a notorious prostitute, who was arrested. He broke into the jail and stole her away. Later they were both arrested, but managed to escape by filing through their chains with a hidden knife, then making a rope-ladder of bedsheets to climb down. He continued his crime spree for a while, and escaped from jail two more times!

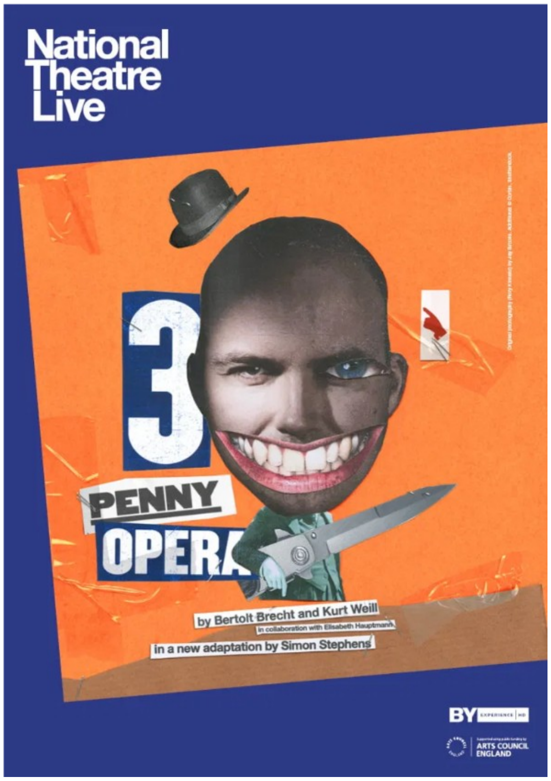
National Theatre Live
3
PENNY
OPERA
by Bertolt Brecht and Kurt Weill
in collaboration with Elisabeth Hauptmann
in a new adaptation by Simon Stephens
BY EXPERIENCE HD
ARTS COUNCIL ENGLAND

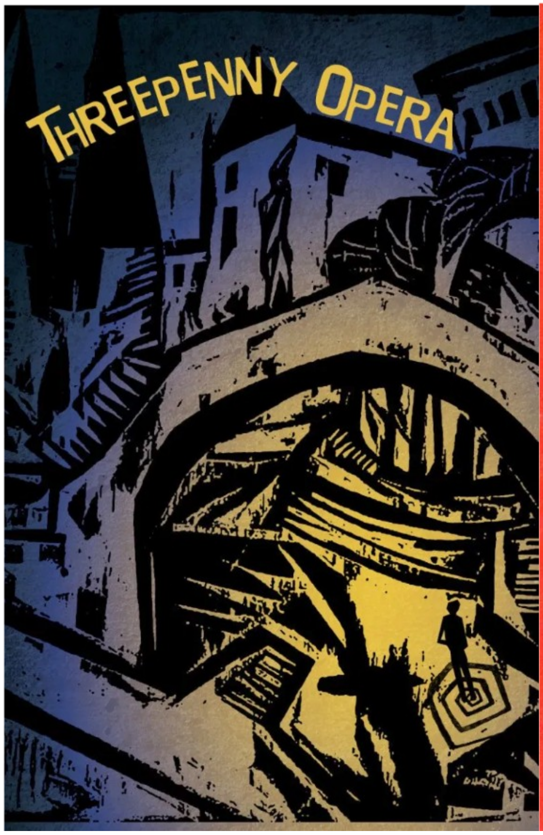
THREEPENNY OPERA

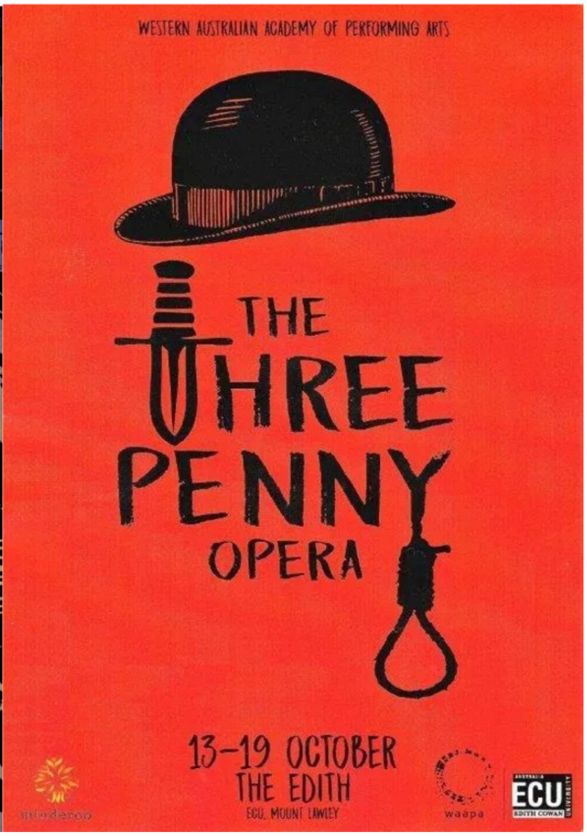
WESTERN AUSTRALIAN ACADEMY OF PERFORMING ARTS
THE
THREE
PENNY
OPERA
13–19 OCTOBER
THE EDITH
ECU, MOUNT LAWLEY
waapa
ECU EDITH COWAN UNIVERSITY

Steckbrief!
£ 100 Belohnung
MACKIE MESSER
machen kann.

The shark he has sharp teeth

Eventually, though, he was taken down with the help of a rival criminal, a gang leader named Wild, who had tried unsuccessfully to get Sheppard to work underneath him. Miffed that his overture was rejected, Wild cooperated with authorities to bring Sheppard to “justice.” Sheppard was thereafter a folk hero, and there were several periods in British history in which it was illegal to publish a book or a play with his name in the title, for fear that youth would be influenced to emulate him.

This is why his name was changed in *The Beggar’s Opera* of 1728 to “Macheath.” His character was also used in the sequel, Polly, which includes scenes of Macheath kidnapping a prostitute named *Polly* to sell her into “white slavery” via a madam named “Mrs. Trapes,” and an attempt to slip a mickey into Polly’s drink. The story appears, by the way, to be the inspiration for the Nirvana song Polly, which I recall Kurt Cobain saying was about “a kidnapped prostitute being held captive.”

The Beggar’s Opera inspired the penny dreadful story *Captain Macheath* by Pierce Egan the Younger, published in serial form starting in 1841. Significantly, Egan also wrote another work of fiction romanticizing the life of an outlaw: *Robin Hood and Little John; or, the Merrie Men of Sherwood Forest*. The use of the name

"John" may connect with John "Jack" Sheppard here too, who was named after an older but deceased brother. The figure of Robin Hood is also based—loosely—on the folklore in the British Isles about "Robin Goodfellow," "Jack-in-the-Green" or "Green Robin," a forest pixie. In the writings of the Brothers Grimm, they said that "Robin Goodfellow is the same home-sprite whom we in Germany call Knecht Ruprect and exhibit to children at Christmas."

As a notable aside, I should point out that Pierce Egan the Younger, in addition to contributiong to the lore of both Macheath and Robin Hood, also invented a pair of fictional, wayward young men, Tom and Jerry, whose names were later taken by the famous cartoon cat and mouse duo. Egan's *Life in London* is where the two characters were first used, later adapted to the stage in William Moncrieff's *Tom and Jerry, or Life in London* from 1821. Later still, in the 1930s, there was a cartoon series called "Tom and Jerry" about two wild and mischievous young men. The following decade, Joseph Barbera, who had worked on those cartoons as an animator, created his own version in the form of the cat and mouse.

The term "Tom and Jerry" is also still applied to a Christmas cocktail invented by Pierce Egan to promote his book. It's just like eggnog, but with a half-ounce of brandy added to the rum and other ingredients. Thus we can look at this as a potent set of symbols. We have the mouse (Jerry), his predator (Tom), "lost" young men (like the boys who were captured by the evil butcher in the Saint Nicholas story), Christmastime traditions, and intoxicating fluids prepared so as to have the taste and texture of a dessert (like Minnie's mousse in *Rosemary's Baby*).

Returning to "Mack the Knife" again, we already noted that the name "Macheath" was introduced early on to avoid the ban on Jack Sheppard's name. The ban was meant to prevent people from romanticizing him, but it had the exact opposite effect. With the fake name of "Macheath" introduced, writers felt free to expand upon his mythos, turning him into a heroic character. However, in *The Threepenny Opera*, Macheath's crimes of murder and rape are magnified, and it is hard to understand how he could be viewed in a positive light. Nonetheless, in the jazzy-swing versions of "Mack the Knife" that American artists recorded years later, Mackie's evil ways are celebrated, or so it seems.

In “The Ballad of Mack the Knife,” we hear about how he wears “fancy gloves” (specified as “white” in the Frank Sinatra version) so that “there’s never a trace of red” whenever he uses his knife to kill somebody and the “scarlet billows start to spread.” Mickey Mouse also wears white gloves, although this feature didn’t appear until 1929’s *The Opry House*. This cartoon features Mickey as the owner of his own small theater and star of his own live variety show. Was the title of this cartoon an homage to *The Threepenny Opera*, and were the gloves an homage to Macheath Messer?

The Opry House debuted on March 28 of that year. This just so happens to be the date that marked the end of “Holy Week” (also called “Hilarion”) in the liturgical calendar of the ancient Roman cult of Cybele. During Holy Week, new recruits into the cult’s priesthood would be castrated, or castrate themselves, using a ceremonial blade that represented the weapon that the goddess Cybele used to castrate her son Attis, according to the cult’s mythology. This seems to also be connected to the story of Chronos (Saturn/Mithras) castrating his father Ouranos. The day which preceded the final ceremonies, March 27, was called *Lavatio* (“Washing”), as it was the time at which they washed the blades they used for the week’s sacrifices and mutilations.

Is this why Mickey Mouse, from *The Opry House* onward, wore gloves, like Mackie Messer’s, meant to represent that his hands were always “clean,” no matter what they were used for? Notably, a Russian sect called the Skoptsi, which practiced full castration of the penis and testicles as a “rite of perfection,’ called the three circular scars left over by the cleaving “the Golden Seal,” and it did in fact resemble the Mickey Mouse head silhouette.

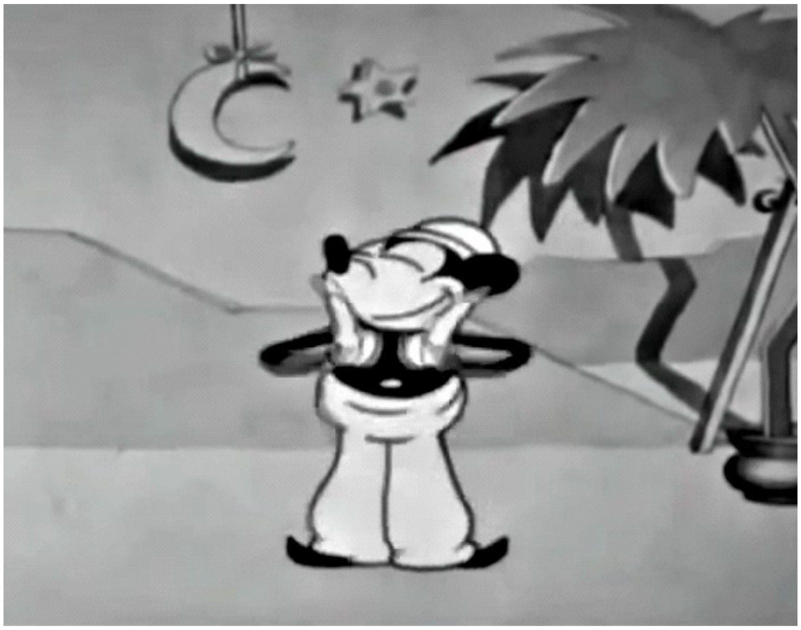

Still from The Opry House (Image added by editor)

Mickey Mouse - The Opry House (HD) (https://youtu.be/Xv9-KgHQOT0)

Of course, Mickey Mouse has never been depicted by Disney doing the sorts of things that Mack the Knife did. But in the earliest cartoons, Mickey certainly was a more mischievous character. After all, he meets Minnie Mouse at a carnival where he runs a hot dog booth and she dances the "Hootchie Cootchie Dance" for an audience of horny, howling male animals. (In the cartoon, it is advertised that Minnie's dance will "put you in a trance," just like Minnie Castevet's "mouse" in *Rosemary's Baby*.) According to Wikipedia, by just 1934:

> *…story artists were finding it increasingly difficult to write material for Mickey. As he had developed into a role model for children, they were limited in the types of gags they could make. This led to Mickey taking more of a secondary role in some of his next films, allowing for more emphasis on other characters.*

In other words, he’s been keeping his hands clean, letting others do the dirty work for him, ever since. Walt Disney also separated, in his mind, his public own persona from his private deeds, once telling a friend:

I’m not Walt Disney. I do a lot of things Walt Disney wouldn’t do. Walt Disney does not smoke. I smoke. Walt Disney does not drink. I drink.

Mickey’s gloves were purportedly created “as a way of contrasting his naturally black hands against his black body,” according to Wikipedia. This decision is said to have influenced the use of gloves for other cartoon characters produced by rival companies, including Bugs Bunny and Woody Woodpecker. The same source also states that “some of Mickey’s early appearance, particularly the gloves, and facial characteristics, evolved from blackface caricatures used in minstrel shows.” But just like Mackie Messer in *The Threepenny Opera*, Mickey’s white gloves have three black lines on the back.

If you still doubt that Mickey Mouse was inspired by “Mack the Knife,” just listen to the song as it was sung in the original film, and see how the character’s name is pronounced. It sounds very much like the singer, German actress Lotte Lenya, is saying “Mickey Mouse.”

Mack the Knife Sung by Lotte Lenya (https://youtu.be/aPG9GcykPIY)

What about the title of the film? Can the three pennies referenced in the title be an invocation of St. Nicholas and his emblem of the three circles, representing three coins or balls of gold, now used to represent a pawn shop? In both the German film and the original stage play, Mackie and his gang end up taking over a bank, becoming “respectable” crooks instead. There is social commentary here regarding the causes of the world financial crisis at that time: sovereign debt, the hyperinflation that had destroyed Germany, and all of the scams played by the international bankers.

Notably, Mickey Mouse appeared in The Opry House barely two weeks after the stock market crash on Wall Street that would send the world into the deepest depression in history. If there was ever a time in which the world needed bags of gold to drop miraculously from the sky like in the stories of St. Nicholas, this was the time. In Washington D.C., that's essentially what they were plotting. Within a few years, the federal government of the United States would confiscate all of the gold held by individuals and give it to private banks in exchange for paper fiat money and a new line of credit. This would be used finance a host of new social programs, and the impending war, which would provide the impetus for the economic boom that followed.

The new currency that was rolled out—Federal Reserve Notes printed on green paper—was covered with magical talismans related to alchemy and Freemasonry. This was quite deliberate, for the men who had designed the new dollars, and the entire plan itself, were alchemical Freemasons, and the magic they were doing required the public to suspend disbelief in the supernatural. These men, which included President Franklin Roosevelt and his Secretary of the Treasury, Henry Morgenthau, were also inspired by a contemporary Russian mystic, Nicholas Roerich.

This was a man who believed that world peace would eventually be created somehow by using the powers of the "Great Stone" or "Grail stone." This object he claimed to have actually discovered himself at a monetary in the Himalayas, and the way he described its dimensions, it would have fit inside of a shoe box. Some researchers think that the Grail stone is meant to be covertly represented by the capstone floating over the truncated pyramid on the Great Seal of the United States. Roosevelt and Morgenthau were both personally involved in the decision to have this emblem printed on the back of the new one-dollar bills.

Buddhist symbol of one circle and the three jewels of Buddhism, the Buddha, the Dharma and the Sangha, Seoul, South Korea, Asia

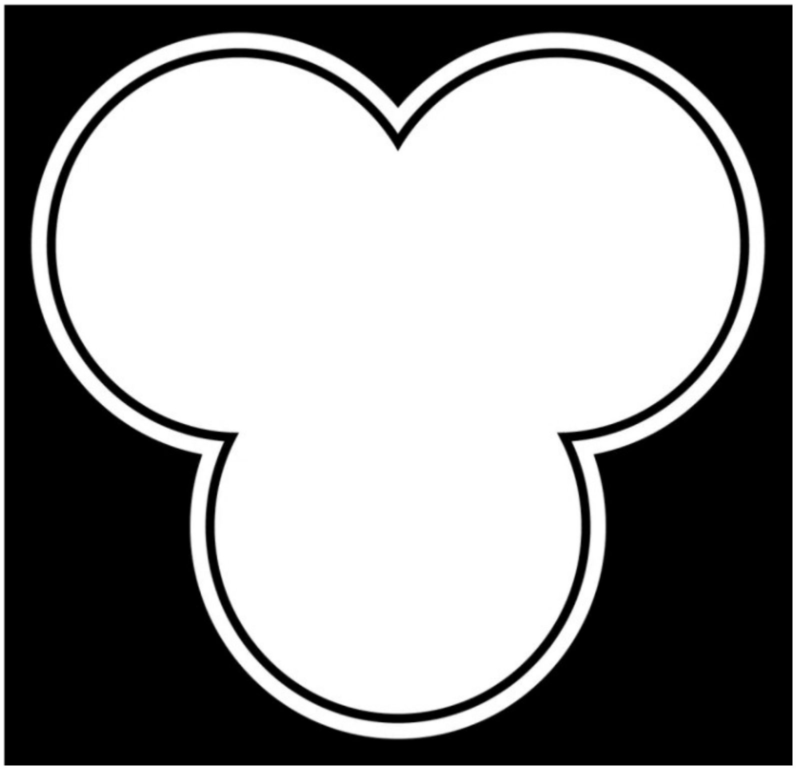

Symbol of the Christian Trinity

To represent this stone, and the world peace that he believed would come from it, Roerich designed an emblem identical to that of his saintly namesake: three red circles on a white field, surrounded by one larger red circular outline. He called it the "Banner of Peace," and it was formally introduced along with the "Roerich Pact." This was a "Treaty Between the United States of America and Other American Republics" regarding the "Protection of Artistic and Scientific Institutions and Historic Monuments." It was approved on December 16, 1933 by all the representatives at the Seventh International Conference of American States, held in Montevideo, Uruguay. It was signed in Roosevelt's presence in Washington D.C. on April 15, 1935, and presented by him in a public statement on May 20 of that year.

Within a few years, however, the US and its allies would be dropping bombs all over Europe's major cities, history and art be damned. In 1941, the Walt Disney Training Films Unit was created to make industrial movies for the military, and Disney himself met with that other associate of Nicholas Roerich, Henry Morgenthau, to discuss a film in which Donald Duck promoted investment in war bonds. The Disney corporation has played a propagandizing role for the military-industrial complex ever since, albeit usually much more subtlely. This seems natural, considering that Mickey Mouse had been a combat veteran since the 1929 cartoon *Barnyard Battle*, and, as I've already mentioned, his face was used for the military-issued gas masks.

Mickey Mouse - The Barnyard Battle 1929 HD (https://youtu.be/isHDIoSSl-s)

There are other things that seemingly connect Mickey Mouse with both Saint Nicholas and his dark counterpart Pere Fouttard/Black Pete/Krampus. In the first few Mickey Mouse shorts that were produced, his nemesis was also named Pete. Note too that just as Pere Fouttard or Black Pete is presented sometimes as a black-skinned Moor from Spain (in other words, a *Muslim*, in the minds of medieval Europeans), Mickey, Minnie and Pete of the Disney films are also black. In Europe, the part of Black Pete was traditionally played by white-skinned males wearing blackface make-up, and Mickey Mouse's face is based on those of actors in minstrel shows wearing blackface make-up.

Meanwhile, the overt devil imagery of the goat-headed Krampus—or "Chort" ("Devil"), as he is called in the Ukraine—is held implicitly by his dog Pluto, named after the Roman god of Hell and Death. Just like St. Nicholas, Mickey brings the menacing presence of these demonic figures with him in the form of his companions and rivals, while still distancing himself from what they symbolize, maintaining a friendly veneer. But behind the warm smile of Father Christmas are the fangs of Krampus, and the bloodlust for babies of the butcher Fouttard, lurking just beneath the surface, like Mackie Messer's hidden jack-knife. As the song goes:

> *The shark has pretty teeth, dear*
>
> *And it shows them pearly white*
>
> *Just a jack-knife has Macheath, dear*
>
> *And he keeps it out of sight.*
>
> *An alternate translation of that last line is "But not in such an obvious place."*

In German, "The Ballad of Mack the Knife" was called "Die Moritat von Mackie Messer." *Moritat* means "ballad." According to Wikipedia, Walt Disney had originally wanted to name his mouse character "Mortimer" before his wife Lillian persuaded him to change it to Mickey. I think it is highly likely that he was actually exposed to the German-language *Threepenny Opera* stage play, and that this is what really influenced the decision.

Supposedly, the Mickey Mouse character may have been inspired by, as Wikipedia puts it, "a pet mouse that Disney had adopted while working in his Laugh-O-Gram studio." An article published by the UK's *Express* newspaper in 2015, about the discovery of some doodles that Disney made while in the trenches in World War I, boasted that it revealed the origins of Mickey, because there were some drawings of rats included. But several of Walt Disney's earliest, pre-Mickey cartoons featured mice that looked in most ways identical. In fact, it's these pre-Mickey Disney mice that I think Marilyn Manson's evil Mickey costume most closely resembles. More on this later.

These pre-Mickey mice are also, like Mickey in his first few cartoons, capable of removing their “ears” as though they are hats, just like the Mickey Mouse “ears” hat. These features are shared by the other characters in these same early cartoons that Disney worked on, including Oswald the Lucky Rabbit and Felix the Cat. They too have the blackface makeup appearance and the widow’s peak, just like Mickey later would have.

Now let us consider who all has performed “Mack the Knife.” Included on this list are Frank Sinatra, Dean Martin, and Sammy Davis, Jr. The latter even played the role of the organ-grinding street musician in the 1960s film version. This film was made just a few years before Davis joined the Church of Satan, started by Anton LaVey, who had been a carnival organist earlier in life.

Die Moritāt von Mackie Messer / Mack the Knife ~ Davis Jr & Armstrong & Sting & Rammstein & Knef (https://youtu.be/EajT8_j1Rww)

three penny opera (1964) OST FULL ALBUM sammy davis jr (https://youtu.be/Ien_lndoXnM)

Of course, all three of the singers mentioned above were part of a group of colleagues known as “the Rat Pack.” Mickey Rooney is also sometimes cited as a hanger-on of the group, and he famously attempted to claim that he had been the inspiration for the naming of Mickey Mouse. There are several stories about why they are called “the Rat Pack,” and they are probably all just as fictional as the tales of the provenance of the Order of Water Rats. This is an old fraternity for stage performers in London with Masonic associations, and according to their website, the name has something to do with the fact that “star” is “rats” spelled backward, while “vole” is an anagram of “love.”

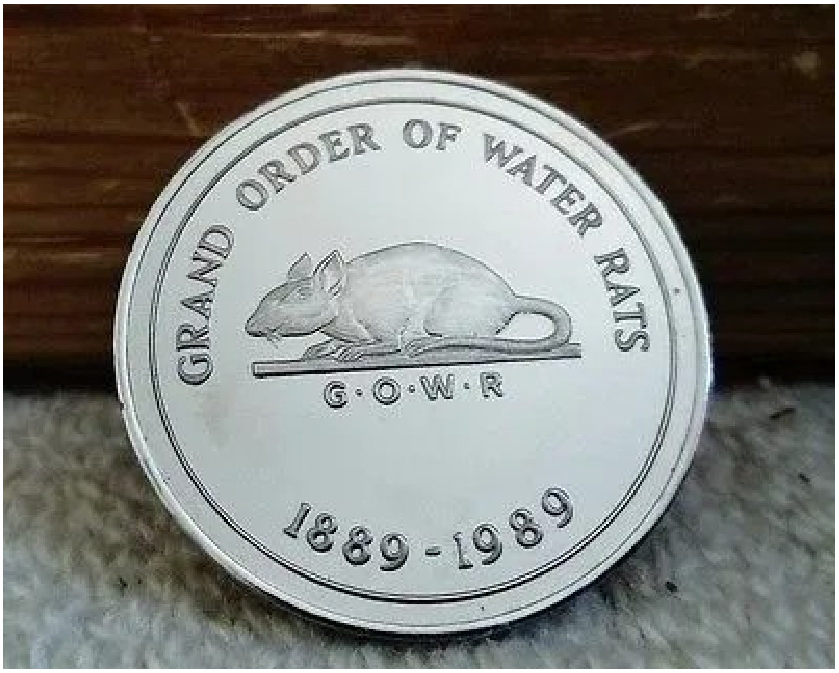

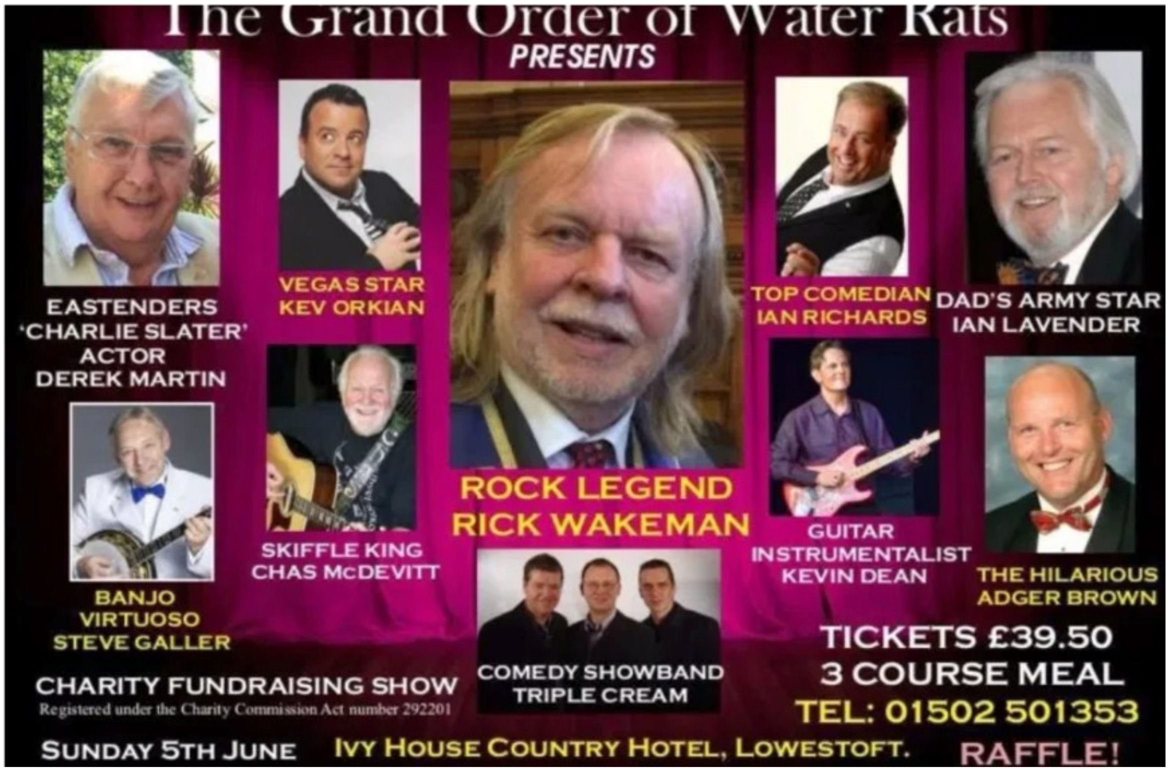

The Grand Order of Water Rats

PRESENTS

EASTENDERS
'CHARLIE SLATER'
ACTOR
DEREK MARTIN

VEGAS STAR
KEV ORKIAN

ROCK LEGEND
RICK WAKEMAN

TOP COMEDIAN
IAN RICHARDS

DAD'S ARMY STAR
IAN LAVENDER

BANJO
VIRTUOSO
STEVE GALLER

SKIFFLE KING
CHAS McDEVITT

GUITAR
INSTRUMENTALIST
KEVIN DEAN

THE HILARIOUS
ADGER BROWN

COMEDY SHOWBAND
TRIPLE CREAM

CHARITY FUNDRAISING SHOW
Registered under the Charity Commission Act number 292201

TICKETS £39.50
3 COURSE MEAL
TEL: 01502 501353

SUNDAY 5TH JUNE IVY HOUSE COUNTRY HOTEL, LOWESTOFT. RAFFLE!

In Sinatra's version of "Mack the Knife," he seems to throw in a revealing twist to the lyrics, singing, "When I tell you, all about Mack the Knife babe, It's an offer you can never refuse." In *The Godfather*, Vito Corleone threatens a big band leader with murder unless he releases singer Jimmy Fontaine from his contract with the group. The threat was described using the term "an offer you can't refuse." As I shall explain, this scene is a fictionalized version of something that actually happened in the real life of Frank Sinatra. This phrase, "offer you can't refuse," is used repeatedly throughout the Godfather film series to indicate exactly the same thing. So here we have a clue that Mack's name can be thrown about as a way of covertly referencing the death threats that are used by crime cartels to control those in the entertainment industry.

It's important to remember that long before rappers were bragging about their gang activities and detailing their plots to murder each other in their dis tracks, Frank Sinatra set the example of how to be a crime boss with the front of a professional entertainer. According to Karen McNally (*When Frankie Went to Hollywood*, 2015), Sinatra once said that had he not gone into entertainment, he would "probably have ended in a life of crime." As far as I can tell, his success as an entertainer doesn't have seemed to have stopped him from doing exactly that anyway—it just helped him get away with it.

Sinatra's self-financed film *Ocean's 11* is the one that introduced the "Rat Pack," and typecast them all—Peter Lawford, Sammy Davis, Jr., Dean Martin, Joey Bishop, and the rest—as toadies in Sinatra's gang of sexy cool criminals willing to stick a gun in anyone's face for a dozenth of a whopping *one meelion dollars*! When Lawford first told Sinatra about the film's plot, which involved robbing casinos (and which director Gilbert Kay admits he stole from an anonymous gas station attendant before selling the rights to Peter Lawford), Sinatra is said to have replied "Forget the movie, let's pull the job!"

Sammy Davis Jr - Eee O Eleven (https://youtu.be/ZZ1UQIdS50U)

In this film, Sinatra and his friends pridefully display their obsessions with the perceived glamour of criminality, and with their own obnoxious, contrived, smug personalities. The actors here are "essentially playing themselves," as the magazine *Variety* observed. This is what makes the film nauseatingly boring. Very little happens other than a bunch of guys who think they're funny and cute showing off. Somewhat towards the end, they rob some casinos.

As Bosley Crowther of *The New York Times* wrote, "there is no built-in implication that the boys have done something wrong." Many reviewers decried the nihilist plotline, using the words "ghoulish," "sick," and "completely amoral." These same words could be used to describe Sinatra himself, in my opinion, and this mentality came to be associated with the Rat Pack in general, deservedly in most cases. Yet strangely, it was universally proclaimed by society to be "cool." But most certainly, in Sinatra's case, it was no act.

Sinatra came from a criminal family. His mother "Dolly," who was born in 1896 on Childermas (the Feast of the Holy Innocents, December 26), ran an illegal tavern with Frank's Sicilian-born father Marty during prohibition. This was where Frank would do his homework at night, where he first started singing for money, and where Dolly kept a small bat that she used to beat Frank with whenever he displeased her. According to Sinatra biographer James Kaplan (*Sinatra: The Voice*, 2011), she also ran a midwife service that delivered babies or, if desired, illegally aborted them, earning her the nickname "Hatpin Dolly." This was the reason why a local church banned her son from singing there. Kaplan suggested that the illegal liquor sold by Sinatra's parents was provided by the mob.

So think about that: Frank Sinatra's mom and dad were simultaneously running an establishment that served illegal drugs (liquor), as well as providing under-the-table childbirth/abortion services. Dolly also became involved in fundraising for the local Democratic Party, and became very influential within this milieu. In Kaplan's biography, he describes Dolly as having a "politician's temperament—restless, energetic, unreflective."

Comparison of Hatpin Dolly Sinatra and one of Rosemary's neighbors

Sinatra was terrified of his mother because of her beatings. Frank continued to fight with his mother "until the day she died," according to his daughter Nancy. As for his father Marty O'Brien, while I haven't heard about him hitting Frank yet, he did compete as a bantamweight boxer. So it's safe to say that during his childhood, Frank Sinatra had been immersed in an atmosphere of physical fighting and threats of physical harm.

He was reportedly bullied by Irish street gangs, and slashed the face of one assailant with a broken bottle in self-defense. According to Darwin Porter's 2011 Sinatra biography, at age 11, Frank walked into the office of the doctor who had delivered him at birth and scarred his body with the forceps. Eleven years later, the child Sinatra came to murder him in revenge. But the doctor was out, so Frank gave up.

Porter goes on to reveal that from the age of 13 onwards, Sinatra prostituted himself to grown women and did "floorshows" at school for money. He did this for $5 a trick, supposedly. "I always demanded money up front like a true hustler," Frank is quoted as saying. Later, he was expelled from high school for "general rowdiness." The same biographer tells us that in 1934, when Sinatra was 19, he "acted" in a pornographic film called *The Masked Bandit*. This was revealed by

Sammy Davis, Jr. at a private party he held in 1972.

The purpose of Davis' gathering was to screen the film *Deep Throat* for his friends. Davis, who had surreptitiously obtained a copy of *The Masked Bandit*, spliced scenes of it into the main feature as a practical joke. Nobody but Sinatra recognized the man behind the mask in these scenes, but he was not amused, and handled it in his typical manner. He threatened to cut Davis out of his life (and, I would imagine, threatened to cut other things too), successfully persuading him to destroy his copy of the film.

The tendency for violent threats and retribution seems to have lasted throughout his life. Dolly Sinatra was quoted as saying, "My son is like me. You cross him, he never forgets." Take, for example, the situation that caused Sinatra to lose his favor for John Kennedy, Bobby Kennedy, their sister Patricia, *and* her husband, fellow Rat-Packer Peter Lawford, all at the same time. Following this incident, Sinatra also switched his political affiliation away from the Democratic Party, which his family had been in bed with since the previous generation.

In March of 1962, Sinatra was asked by Lawford to host their mutual friend, President Kennedy, at Sinatra's estate in Palm Springs while the President was visiting southern California. Sinatra jumped at the chance, and immediately began an expensive renovation to prepare, which included the installation of a helipad for the President's helicopter to land on.

But then Bobby Kennedy, the President's brother and Attorney General of the United States, talked his brother out of it. Bobby was leading a major investigation of the mafia at the time, and given Sinatra's associations, thought it would make the President look bad. In all likelihood, Bobby also had a hunch that John was being set up to be photographed cheating on his wife, or worse, and then blackmailed.

That is certainly what I would have thought if I were him, knowing what he must have known about Sinatra, and how the criminal/intelligence underworld operates to control politicians. After all, Sinatra was subletting a one-bedroom guest house with a small pool in Chatsworth, CA that he had allowed President Kennedy to utilize for a tryst with Marilyn Monroe, whom Sinatra also "dated" in 1962. This swimming pool was the location of her last photo shoot, by the way, and it seems likely to me that Sinatra had other photos taken as well, perhaps secretly, for reasons I shall soon reveal.

At any rate, when Sinatra heard from Lawford that the President would not be visiting in Palm Springs, he became irate. He took a sledgehammer to the helipad, got Lawford fired from the joint film projects they were doing together, and never considered him a friend after that. He was angry that Lawford hadn't used his influence to persuade the President to change his mind back. Some say they "never spoke again," except for a phone call a few months later regarding the kidnapping of Frank Sinatra, Jr. (a story I will explore at length later in this piece). But, as I will show, there is reason to believe that Lawford and Sinatra did both cooperate in a joint "operation" later that year involving the Kennedys and Marilyn Monroe.

Generally, Sinatra's retribution for perceived insults took the form of violence. In 1966, Frank Sinatra had to pull out from a series of gigs he was doing at the Sands casino because of a physical fight he got into with the new owner, Howard Hughes (who had produced the Sinatra film *Double Dynamite* in 1951). In 1970, he left Caesar's Palace when executive Sanford Waterman pulled a gun on him, undoubtedly provoked by Sinatra. He eventually performed there again, though, and was doing so the day that his mother died.

As I indicated previously, the storyline with Johnny Fontaine in *The Godfather* is said to be a "thinly veiled" retelling of how Frank Sinatra used his mafia contacts to obtain release from his contract with the Tommy Dorsey Orchestra, and also to get his breaking role in the 1953 war flick *From Here to Eternity*. I am speaking of the part in *The Godfather* where we are told that Lucca Brasi, employee of Vito Corleone, held a gun to the head of a "band leader" to whom Fontaine was under contract, and forced him to sign a legal release. This appears to be an accurate retelling of what mafia boss Willie Moretti had done to Tommy Dorsey on behalf of his godson Frank Sinatra. According to Kitty Kelley's 1986 biography, Dorsey said of Sinatra, "He's the most fascinating man in the world, but don't put your hand in the cage."

What cage? The rat cage?

But, you'll be relieved to know that according to daughter Nancy Sinatra's 1995 book *Frank Sinatra: An American Legend*, published by Reader's Digest, the story presented in The Godfather about the film producer's favorite horse being killed as a way to intimidate him into hiring Fontaine is "poetic license" that goes beyond what the mafia *actually* did to get "the Chairman of the Board" (the name of an actual rank within La Cosa Nostra) his big film break. Kitty Kelley claims that it was his then-wife Ava Gardner pulling strings for Sinatra that got him the role. Yet by the time he was finally chosen for it, he had already destroyed his marriage with her.

Gardner told friends that what pushed her to divorce Sinatra was his childish displays of jealousy about her success while he was hanging around the set of her latest film for months, waiting impatiently for word about whether or not he would get the part. Therefore, it seems unlikely to me that it would have been her recommendation that got him the part, considering that he was obviously not the first choice, and he was already wearing down Gardner's nerves. One gets the idea that, severed horse heads aside, some sort of violent coercion was applied.

So you see, Frank Sinatra's "mafia affiliations" were by no means casual. Indeed, he provided the headline entertainment for the 1946 Havana Conference of La Cosa Nostra crime bosses arranged by Lucky Luciano, which was acutally the "official" cover for the meeting. Supposedly, on the hotel's books, this was simply a conference for Frank Sinatra fanboys to hear their favorite singer. Sinatra flew there with two of Al Capone's cousins, Charlie Rocco and Joseph Fischetti, who were carrying a suitcase containing $2 million in cash, a "racket" payment for Luciano.

Also present at the conference was Bugsy Siegel, whom Sinatra is quoted (by Kitty Kelley) as telling Jo-Carrol Silvers that he “adored” because of “how many people he had killed.” When newspapers in the USA published pictures of Sinatra with Lucky Luciano as part of scathing exposes, Sinatra’s response was to physically assault one of the journalists involved, Lee Mortimer. Then when Mortimer prepared to sue Sinatra for the beating, Sinatra’s mafia friends threatened to murder him, so he dropped the case.

In the 1954 film *Suddenly*, Sinatra played a sniper named John Baron, working with a group of killers hired to shoot the president from a window as his train is passing through a small town in California. Sinatra’s character is the leader of the group, and the one who plans to deliver the fatal shot. The other two henchmen are there to subdue the family that lives in the house which they’ve decided to use to shoot from. As the character John Baron, Sinatra repeatedly describes what it’s like to have no human emotions, and to take pleasure in hurting others. He particularly enjoys the God-like feeling acquired from murdering people, and the compliance received by threatening to murder them.

It seems to me that this is yet another film role in which Sinatra essentially played himself. There is an urban legend stating that Sinatra bought up and destroyed all copies of *Suddenly* after President Kennedy was killed, because he had heard that it was one of the last films that Lee Harvey Oswald had seen before shooting Kennedy. However, it appears that Sinatra never actually did this. He did, however, ask United Artists to withdraw it from circulation (which they did), and spent several days after the shooting locked in his room.

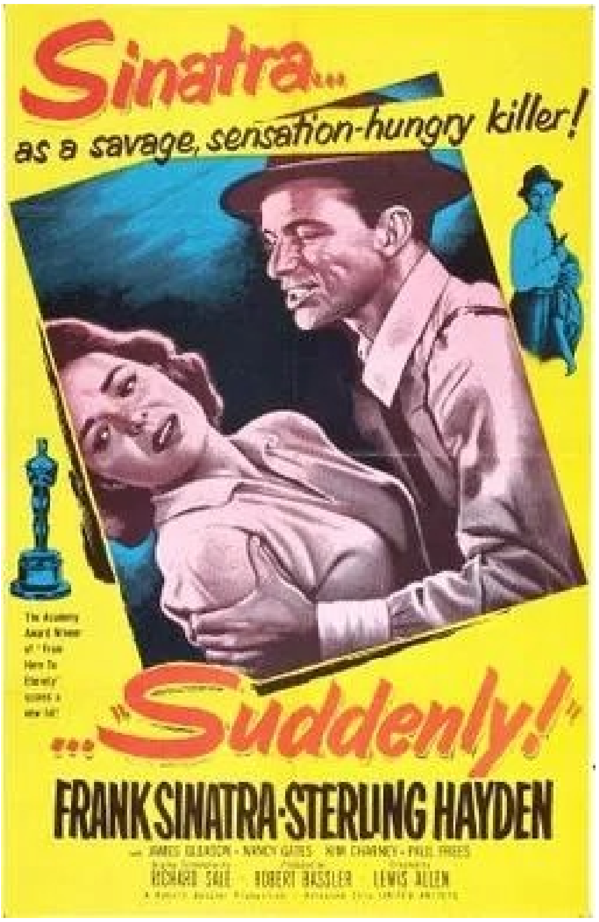
Sinatra...
as a savage, sensation-hungry killer!
The Academy Award Winner of "From Here To Eternity" scores a new hit!
..."Suddenly!"
FRANK SINATRA-STERLING HAYDEN
with JAMES GLEASON • NANCY GATES • KIM CHARNEY • PAUL FREES
RICHARD SALE
ROBERT BASSLER
LEWIS ALLEN

Sinatra played a Presidential Assassin working for the mob in Suddenly

Supposedly he was all broken up about the death of his "friend" Jack Kennedy, with whom he'd partied so many times in group orgies involving actresses and prostitutes. However, I think he may have been more upset for himself rather than Kennedy. He was probably worried that his own proximity to the perpetrators would become known, as I shall later explain.

Sinatra most likely has a lengthy list of unacknowledged victims, considering the violence and criminal activity of his that we *know* about. Yet he was just one part of an industry for which the devices of organized crime syndicates—their capital, their guns, their tough guys, their tactics of death threats and blackmail—are all built in as part of the machinery. Consider some of the stories that occur in the biographies of the Rat Pack members and their closest associates.

First, let's talk about all of the stuff that happened to Sammy Davis, Jr. He had lost his eye in an automobile accident in 1954. It happened on the feast day of St. Nerses I, who was poisoned to death by the demon-possessed King Pap of Armenia in 373, having been deceptively invited to the royal house for dinner to work out a disagreement. Davis blamed his car crash on the fact that he forgotten to bring the mezuzah (a Jewish device for repelling demons) that his friend Eddie Cantor had given him, and which he usually wore around his neck. Davis later converted to Judaism, in 1961, and seems to have retained that identity despite also joining the Church of Satan around the year 1967 (a fact that goes unacknowledged in his Wikipedia biography). In interviews years later, though he stated that he was no longer a member, Davis said that he was still friends with several members of LaVey's church.

But the car crash wasn't the only dramatic incident to take place in Mr. Davis' life. He also experienced first-hand, on numerous occasions, how brutally the entertainment industry punishes those who don't "play ball" the way the bosses want them to. As reported by Ovid Demaris and Ed Reid in *The Green Felt Jungle* (1963), in 1957, Harry Cohn, the president of Columbia Pictures, called his friend John Roselli, whom Wikipedia describes as "an influential mobster for the Chicago Outfit who helped that organization control Hollywood and the Las Vegas Strip." The same source also says that just a few years after this incident with Davis, "in the early 1960s, Roselli was recruited by the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) in a plot to assassinate Cuban leader Fidel Castro."

In this instance, Roselli was hired by the president of Columbia Pictures to "discourage" Sammy Davis, Jr. from continuing to date the actress Kim Novak, who was white. Cohn was concerned that the relationship would hurt the company. So Roselli kidnapped Sammy Davis, Jr. for several hours, during which time he impressed upon him the requirement that the relationship should end. According to an article from *Smithsonian Magazine* in August 2017 ("Hollywood Loved Sammy Davis Jr. Until he Dated a White Movie Star"), Roselli threatened to put out Davis' other eye, and break his leg, if he didn't marry a black woman within the next two days.

This resulted in Davis, understandably shaken, paying black dancer Loray White $10,000 to marry him the following year. It seems the mob gave him a bit of an extension beyond the two days, but it also seems like they probably continued to threaten him, or else, presumably, Davis would not have followed through on obeying their orders. On his wedding night, he got so drunk he had to be helped into bed by his friend Arthur Silber, who also found Davis with a gun to his own head a while later when he came to check on him. Despite all of this, the marriage was short-lived, and in 1960 Davis went on to marry another white actress, May Britt. This caused John F. Kennedy to revoke Davis' invitation to the presidential inauguration.

Now let's talk about the plane crashes on San Gorgonio Mountain in California. On January 6, 1977—the Feast Day of the Epiphany, called "the Twelfth Day of Christmas," celebrating the Three Wise Men—Frank Sinatra's mother Dolly died at the age of 80 when she was flying from Palm Springs Municipal Airport to Las Vegas to meet Sinatra. She purportedly enjoyed visiting him there because she loved playing the slot machines. Casinos in Vegas used to rig the machines she played so that she would win, because she reportedly "hated to lose." But that day she never made it out of Southern California, as her private plane crashed into the mountains due to "crew error." Her death caused Sinatra to convert to Catholicism, allegedly.

Ten years later, on March 21, 1987, on the feast day of mountaintop hermit St. Nicholas von Flue, Dean Martin's Son, Dean Paul Martin (once part of the music trio "Dino, Desi and Billy") flew an Air National Guard F-4 Phantom jet fighter from March Air Force Base straight into this very same San Gorgonio Mountain, dying at age 35.

The following year, Dean Martin, Frank Sinatra and Sammy Davis, Jr. went on a reunion tour, but Martin pulled out after five shows, claiming kidney problems. Later, according to *Deconstructing Sammy* by Matt Birkbeck, someone associated with Davis claimed that Frank Sinatra's associates were skimming extra profits for themselves, shoving cash into suitcases at the end of each night. The following year, Sammy Davis, Jr. was diagnosed with throat cancer, which he died from a year after that. Despite what had obviously turned into, at the very least, an awkward relationship, Davis was buried with a gold watch that Sinatra had given him at the end of the reunion tour.

I admit that I suspect Sinatra himself may have been involved in all or any of the stories related above, particularly the death of his mother, and the death of Dean Martin's son, although I have no proof of these things. Even if foul play were involved, it wouldn't necessarily have been Frank's influence that caused these incidents, and in the case of Dolly Sinatra, he may have been the target rather than the perpetrator. But, given what I have read about Frank and how he treated Marilyn Monroe, whom he dated for several months right before she died, I wouldn't put anything past him—anything. One source you can read about this in is *Sinister Forces: Volume III*, by Peter Levenda, where the authors relates:

> *Monroe's diary… was without a doubt political nitroglycerine. Referred to as her "book of secrets," it contained information on everything from the Mafia, Hoffa, the Bay of Pigs to the CIA assassination plots against Castro, all culled from conversations with Jack and Bobby Kennedy. Monroe kept all of this written down because, as revealed in her conversations with her ex-husband Robert Slatzer only weeks before her death, Bobby Kennedy would get mad at her for not remembering "anything he told me" concerning political issues….*

> *The weekend of July 28-29 holds a key to what transpired only days later. Ms. Monroe spent the weekend at the Cal-Neva Lodge in Lake Tahoe, and the mystery that surrounds this weekend is impenetrable. That something loathsome did take place, and that it involved Marilyn Monroe, who was only now making an important comeback, is certain, if only because of the reticence of eyewitnesses to discuss it. [Donald H.] Wolfe (The Assassination of Marilyn Monroe, 1998) makes a good case that she was invited to Cal-Neva Lodge—in Lake Tahoe—Sinatra's official headquarters—in order to be pressured into not going to the press with what she knew about the Kennedys and that those present on that weekend were Sinatra, Peter and Pat Lawford, her friend Gloria Romanoff—and [Chicago mobster] Sam Giancana. It was Giancana's presence there that weekend that wound up costing Sinatra his gaming license, so we know that much is true….*

Sinatra and the Rat Pack had been performing regularly in Las Vegas since 1951. It was part of his agreement with his La Cosa Nostra partners who had "arranged" for his release from the Tommy Dorsey contract, and for him to get the part in *From Here to Eternity*. Eventually, he bought 50% of the Cal-Neva Lodge and Casino in Lake Tahoe, as well as a share in The Sands in Las Vegas. But he was forced to give up these investments when the gangster Giancana was discovered to be his invited guest at Cal-Neva on this particular weekend in 1962, when the incident with Marilyn Monroe occurred.

Giancana was a member of the "Chicago Outfit," suspected by police as the shooter in numerous murders, with a reputation for being vicious. It was him in particular that the CIA hired to personally arrange for over half a dozen attempts to poison Fidel Castro's food (i.e., to "give him the mouse"). Giancana's mafia team is also said to have worked to fix the presidential election of 1960 in favor of Kennedy.

It was Frank Sinatra who had introduced Giancana to a woman who would become his long-term mistress, Phyllis McGuire, who was also sleeping with President

Kennedy at the same time. Considering that Sinatra also provided a safe house for Kennedy and Monroe to have sex, and that Sinatra was sleeping with her as well, it almost seems like Sinatra was a pimp in a mafia operation providing women to powerful politicians—women they felt were under their control, and therefore could be trusted not to tell the media.

Frankly (no pun intended), Marilyn Monroe and Phyllis McGuire sound like they were both part of the "mind-controlled sex slave" CIA program that Cathy O'Brien claims to have been involved with. O'Brien has said that hypnotic mind control, of the sort used in *The Manchurian Candidate*, created a set of young men and women trained to serve powerful men sexually, to secretly record encounters if needed, and to deliver messages. These people could then, if necessary, be made to forget about their assignments until these memories were needed again.

We know that another woman who was sleeping with both Kennedy and Giancana concurrently—Judith Exner—reportedly passed messages between them regarding the plans the CIA was making with him and his mafia friends to assassinate Castro. We know Marilyn Monroe kept a detailed diary of everything she knew about these things, and that she did this, purportedly, because Bobby Kennedy was always telling her inside information, and would get angry at her if she forgot the details of his stories in-between their dates.

> *Monroe, who had begun life as an orphan bounced between foster homes, and who later had Mafiosos pressuring movie producers to hire her, emerges as someone who was treated by her "handlers" in the underworld as a prostitute, and as property. Indeed, she actually was, admittedly, a prostitute in her earlier career. This fact is acknowledged by the National Enquirer in their piece entitled "Marilyn Monroe's childhood path to prostitution," published in 2016. There it says that during her first marriage, to Jim Dougherty, at age 16, she began "to work as a teenage prostitute." It continues:*
>
> *Marilyn became a regular in Hollywood's ritzy high-rent district, as the*

> *bisexual beauty sold her favors at $5 a session to both men and women. 'She started working as a hooker in all the swankiest hotels and restaurants along Hollywood and Wilshire boulevards,' said author Ted Jordan, 66, a veteran movie and TV actor who wrote the 1989 book Norma Jean: My Secret Life.*
>
> *'By the time she was 18, she's had sex with dozens of Hollywood's most powerful men. She vowed to sleep her way to fame and fortune as a movie star,' added Jordan…*
>
> *'…If she wanted a new dress, she's have sex for $5….'*

Now that's "mouseburgering your way to the top!" But it didn't last, perhaps because somebody slipped her a fatal mickey.

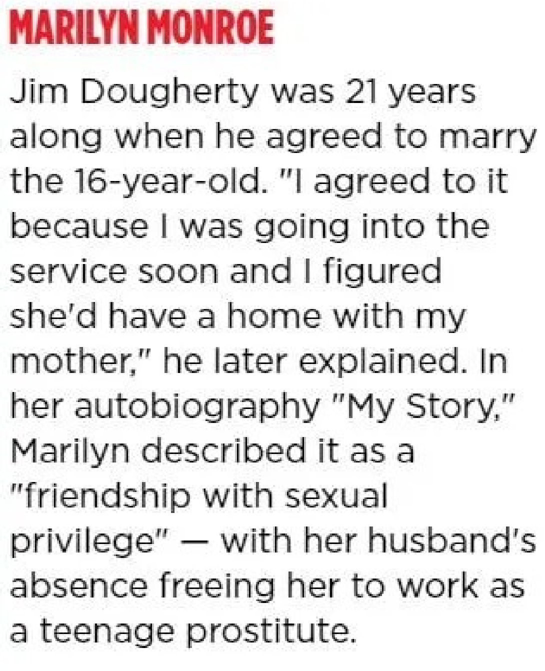

MARILYN MONROE

Jim Dougherty was 21 years along when he agreed to marry the 16-year-old. "I agreed to it because I was going into the service soon and I figured she'd have a home with my mother," he later explained. In her autobiography "My Story," Marilyn described it as a "friendship with sexual privilege" — with her husband's absence freeing her to work as a teenage prostitute.

Her history of prostitution provides background for the rest of what happened that fateful weekend at Cal-Neva in 1962, as Levenda further explains:

> *Her ex-husband, Joe DiMaggio… arrived unexpectedly at the scene. No one knows how he knew his ex-wife would be there, but he showed up and was not allowed inside the complex of bungalows that had been reserved for Monroe, Sinatra, and Giancana, on orders from Sinatra. Instead, he had to take a room at a nearby motel. Marilyn Monroe herself was not actually registered at the Cal-Neva, a precaution that now seems much more sinister in retrospect; instead, she was put into the bungalow complex and kept watch over the entire time.*
>
> *When DiMaggio returned from Lake Tahoe, he told his friend Harry Hall that he was furious with what had happened, that Sinatra had kept Monroe on drugs, and that they had "sex parties." To clarify what was meant by that, photographer Billy Woodfield was quoted as saying that Sinatra gave him a roll of film from that weekend. When Woodfield developed the roll, he evidently found photos of Marilyn being sexually abused by, or at least in the presence of, Sam Giancana and Frank Sinatra.*
>
> *In other words, Marilyn Monroe was likely drugged, raped, and photographed; the photos would be used as blackmail against her if she decided to come forward with what she knew about the Kennedys, the Mafia, and Castro.*
>
> *A drugged Monroe was returned to Los Angeles late the night of July 29-30, in the company of Peter Lawford. Monroe was returned to her home in a limo, but Lawford rode with the flight crew to his beach home. Before arriving home, he asked the crew to stop for a moment so he could make a call from a pay phone (knowing his own home was bugged and his phones tapped). He made a mysterious phone call that lasted about 20 minutes before finally going home in the early hours of that morning.*

> *That phone call was logged into the White House, a call that went directly to the President.*

That Marilyn Monroe was murdered, and that this was likely related to the assassination of Kennedy the following year, both seem quite clear to me. What exactly that relationship was remains somewhat murky. But a vital piece of the puzzle, I believe, is mobster John Roselli, the one who kidnapped and threatened Sammy Davis, Jr. on behalf of Harry Cohn of Columbia Pictures in 1957, and who was later found murdered at the same time as Giancana. Cohn had obtained his position in Columbia with both financial capital and physical force provided by Roselli and his mafia associates. This was how the mafia forced Columbia to hire Marilyn Monroe, who seems to owe her early success to this same group of people.

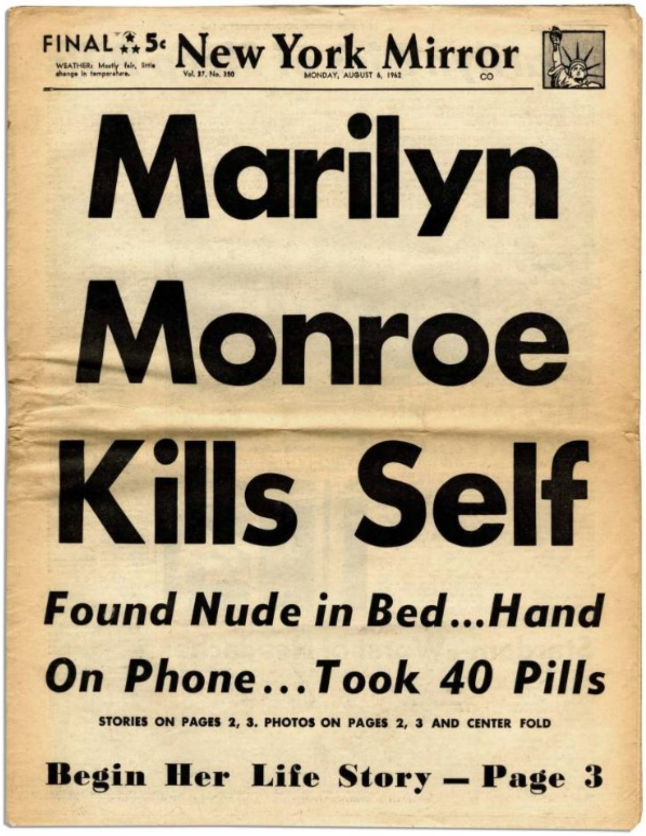

FINAL ★★★ 5¢ New York Mirror

WEATHER: Mostly fair, little change in temperature.

Vol. 37, No. 350

MONDAY, AUGUST 6, 1962

CO

Marilyn Monroe Kills Self

Found Nude in Bed...Hand On Phone...Took 40 Pills

STORIES ON PAGES 2, 3. PHOTOS ON PAGES 2, 3 AND CENTER FOLD

Begin Her Life Story — Page 3

Roselli not only worked within the film industry by threatening and extorting from people on behalf of the mob, but was also hired as a producer by Eagle Lion Studios to produce a number of gangster movies in the 1940s, glamorizing the criminal lifestyle, just like his good friend, Frank Sinatra, would do later with *Oceans 11*. It was Frank who sponsored Roselli for membership in the Friar's Club in 1963, just before the murder of JFK, for which Roselli has been listed numerous times as a suspect by various investigators.

According to *Bound By Honor*, a memoir from Bill Bonanno, son of La Cosa Nostra boss Joseph Bonanno, Roselli was one of the shooters, firing at the president from a storm drain. Others paint him as merely stuck in an uncomfortable situation between associates of his who were enemies of each other, like, perhaps, Sinatra himself may have been. Journalists Jack Anderson and Les Whitten wrote an article for *The Free Lance-Star* newspaper in which they asserted that Roselli had told people that those hitmen he had hired to kill Castro with poison on behalf of the CIA had instead been recruited by Castro to kill Kennedy. Either way, Roselli died like a mobster, found floating in a steel drum in a bay near Miami on August 9, 1976.

Pay attention to that date, for the day of August 9 will come up again later in this saga.

John Roselli

In *The Godfather*, when Johnny Fontaine is requesting help to get a part in a movie (representing 1953's *From Here to Eternity*), Vito Corleone asks him whether or not he spends time with his family. When Johnny sheepishly says "Yes," Corleone lectures him.

> *'Good. Because someone who doesn't spend time with his family cannot be a real man.'*

If this is meant to represent a real conversation that took place between Sinatra and his godfather, then it's presentation here was meant to be ironic. Sinatra famously did no such thing. He was married to four different women in his life, and engaged to several more, but gave his attention and loyalty to none of them. He notoriously cheated on, fought with, and emotionally neglected every one. He wasted the youth of Nancy, the mother of his children, in a twelve-year marriage he trampled on continuously, until she finally capitulated to a divorce. He then married his mistress, Ava Gardner.

Once Gardner was his, he wasted no time wasting hers, and began pressuring her to quit her job. His only interest in the success of her career was in using it, and her, to promote himself. It was clear to all observers that, if he got the part in the movie he wanted, and became a big movie star like her, he would soon expect his wife to quit working, and to play merely a supporting role in his life from then on. But, as I mentioned previously, his bitter, jealous kvetching as he waited to be hired drove her over the edge, and she filed for divorce in 1954. (It took three years to finalize, however.)

His next wedding, which took place in 1966, with no wedding bands exchanged, was to 21-year-old actress Mia Farrow. Sinatra was 40. The relationship quickly settled into a similar pattern as with Ava Gardner. Sinatra neglected her and was gone most of the time, yet pressured her to quit working just to suit him. When that didn't work, he pressured her to act in the same films he was working on. He seemed to want to keep an eye on her.

But unlike Ava Gardner, she had no clout to vicariously spread over him through their association. In fact, it was the other way around. She got hired for a leading role in a big film, her major break, because her marriage to Sinatra had made her well-known, and the producers thought that this would bring good publicity. The film was based on the best-selling book that had just come out: *Rosemary's Baby*.

While most husbands would be happy and proud, Sinatra was, as with Gardner, jealous and controlling instead. He sought to sabotage the project. He insisted that Farrow play the part of his girlfriend in his latest movie, *The Detective*. She agreed. But when the filming of *Rosemary's Baby* went longer than expected, and she told Sinatra that she couldn't be there on the scheduled date to film her scenes with him, he became miffed. In a typical bratty act of Sinatra vengeance, he served her with divorce papers on the set of her movie, and had the producer hire someone else for The Detective. Amazingly, both films had the same producer, Robert Evans, an important player in our story for reasons I will explain later on.

Anyone who has seen both films would have to agree that Mia Farrow made the right decision. *Rosemary's Baby* is a masterpiece. *The Detective* is an entirely forgettable piece of clichéd garbage, with the main character clearly based on Sinatra himself—or rather, on the image of himself that he liked to project.

Had she played the role of the girlfriend in that film, Farrow's character would have done nothing but fawn over Sinatra's empty, superficial *Dragnet* cop persona while looking slutty and stupid. Sinatra would have used her as a prop to lecture at about the shortcomings of the hippie lifestyle and psychotherapy (the latter being one of Marilyn Monroe's obsessions, which Sinatra no doubt disapproved of). Whilst pontificating, the wise, prudent detective would be shown continuously smoking cigarettes and guzzling liquor, all without any hint of irony. One gets the idea, yet again, that this is what Sinatra was actually like in real life.

This was just one of several detective roles that Sinatra played in the 60s. The previous year, he had starred as a P.I. in *Tony Rome*. There, in both the opening and closing shots, Sinatra tastefully stares at a woman's ass, and then the camera zooms in on it, while a song sung by his real-life daughter Nancy plays in the background, extolling the main character's sexiness. Again, however, Tony Rome was shown to be morally superior to those around him. When offered sex with an underage girl as payment for detective services, Rome states that, while he appreciates the offer, he needs the money more. What a guy!

Nancy Sinatra - Tony Rome ((MONO)) 1967 (https://youtu.be/YlI5Wf-Et7s)

It would seem on all counts that Mia Farrow ended up in the right film that year, and missed out on nothing by letting her marriage to a jealous jerk be cut short. But that's not the way she sees it. Farrow still expresses regret about the divorce, blaming herself for being selfish, and claims that Frank was the love of her life. She also says that they remained close friends, sometimes *with benefits*, for the rest of his life. Farrow has stated quite seriously in recent years that her son Ronan, born in 1987, for whom Woody Allen is listed as the biological father, might actually be Frank's. Nancy Sinatra lashed out against this claim numerous times to reporters who asked, but in a more recent interview, admitted that it could "possibly" be true.

All you have to do is take a photo of Frank and a photo of Mia, then superimpose one over the other in Photoshop. There really isn't any doubt, in my opinion. Considering Woody Allen's reputation as an accused molester of one of Ronan's many siblings, and the fact that Allen married one of his other siblings, you might think that Ronan would see potential paternity from Sinatra as a possible improvement.

If so, he doesn't show it. His comments on this issue indicate that, while he disapproves of Allen's actions, he still sees him as a father figure. However, he did leave the question of biological paternity open, as though accepting, though not exactly excited about, the fact that he might share genes with the Sinatras. As to the question of Allen's guilt regarding the alleged molestation of sister Dylan, Ronan seems to side with Dylan and his mother.

It was Ronan Farrow—child prodigy, graduate of Yale Law School, Rhodes Scholar, and former diplomat during the Obama administration—who wrote the articles in the *New Yorker*, first published on October 10, 2017, that brought down film producer Harvey Weinstein. His article accused the director of numerous sexual assaults, and revealed that he had hired a private security firm made up entirely of ex-Mossad agents to harass his victims into silence. Over the course of the following year, Ronan Farrow also took down New York State Attorney General Eric Schneiderman and CBS CEO Les Moonves with similar articles.

Ronan's adopted brother Moses has taken sides against his mother Mia by defending Woody Allen, claiming that instead it was Mia who coached her daughter Dylan into making the molestation charges. On May 23, 2018, he published a lengthy blog post in which he claimed a childhood of neglect in the Farrow household. That house was stuffed full with numerous biological and adopted children of various origins, several having been "adopted" by Mia and her "partner" Allen. I put "partner" in quotation marks only because Allen never married Mia, and never even moved in with his "family." This was why Allen could claim that Soon-Yi, Mia's adopted daughter from a defunct marriage to another man (Andre Previn), was only a minor acquaintance to him prior to their sexual relationship forming in her early adulthood.

Ronan Farrow

The detail of Dylan's story of molestation that Moses Farrow takes issue with the most is her claim that she played with a model train set while Allen abused her. Moses said that there was no model train in the upstairs area where the event supposedly took place. This is interesting to me because of the fact that model trains were an obsession of Frank Sinatra's, his only real hobby beyond broads and booze. It even seemed to be an affected interest, something he had picked up in the early days of his career when he still worked with, and greatly looked up to, Tommy Dorsey. Trains were Dorsey's hobby, and so, biographers have suggested, Sinatra picked it up in order to emulate his idol.

There was another figure in our study who also shared this hobby as a real obsession. That was Walt Disney, who not only built miniature models, but actually had a small, functioning train that ran through his estate. It was this train that allegedly inspired him with the idea of creating Disneyland as a theme park with several different zones connected by a railroad.

It is not unheard of for small children subjected to abuse to sometimes misremember who it was that abused them, particularly if it was an isolated incident, as Dylan's molestation purportedly was. Is it possible that she is remembering the wrong perpetrator? Is it possible that Frank Sinatra, model train enthusiast, whom her mother claims to have "never really broken up" with, is the real perpetrator?

I have nothing to base this on beyond what I've already told you. I have no information about Sinatra having any sexual interest in small girls. (There's an ambiguous "seduction" charge against him on the books in Hoboken, but it never went anywhere.) Also, I don't really feel that I have the right to question the memory of a victim I don't know personally. But in regards to Sinatra's propensities, we do have the accusations of his sexual abuse of Marilyn Monroe, his interest in model trains, and his probable access to the Farrow household.

As to why the memory would be incorrect, it does seem possible that Mia could have influenced her daughter's recollections. Mia may have been motivated to see the guilty party as Allen because of what he'd done with her other daughter, Soon-Yi, and also because of her apparently love-distorted view of Frank Sinatra as a decent fellow. It seems plain to me that he was a self-absorbed bully, abuser of women, a likely rapist, and a likely murderer, who achieved every major career advancement by using threats to have people killed. But, I was never in love with him.

Sinatra's mother Dolly said that, like her, Sinatra never forgave anybody who "crossed" him, even the journalists who wrote about his mafia connections, who were just doing their jobs and telling the truth. We know he felt that violent retribution for a non-violent offence was justified, and used violence not only to influence people, but also to settle scores. We know that he thought it was both funny and impressive how many people his mafia friends were murdering. We know this is what he threatened to do to anyone who opposed his will.

On the official website of Jan Berry, one half of the surf music duo Jan and Dean, there is an article about the Frank Sinatra, Jr. kidnapping in October 1963, for which his partner Dean Torrence was deposed as a witness at the trial of the kidnappers. This article suggests that Sinatra paid to have Torrence murdered. Barry Keenan, on trial for having dreamed up the scheme, had his attorneys suggest that Dean Torrence had financed the scheme, and that Frank Sinatra, Jr. was in on the plot as well. At the time that Frank Sinatra, Jr. first disappeared, many journalists thought it was a publicity stunt, and Torrence's testimony implied that this might have been true.

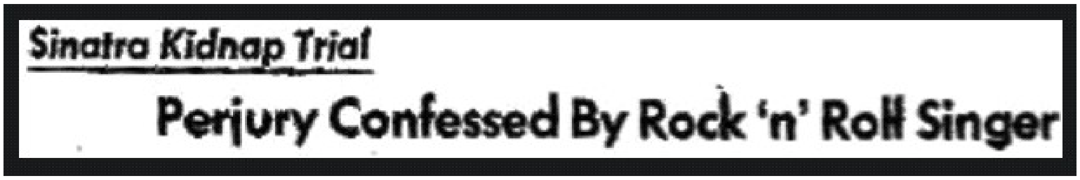
Sinatra Kidnap Trial

Perjury Confessed By Rock 'n' Roll Singer

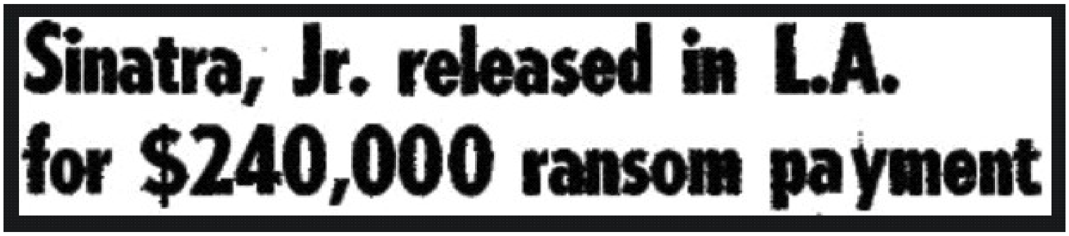
Sinatra, Jr. released in L.A. for $240,000 ransom payment

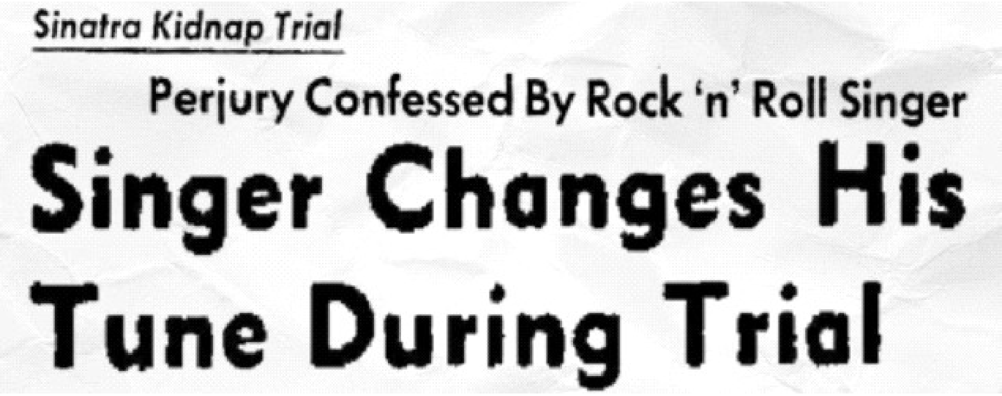
Sinatra Kidnap Trial

Perjury Confessed By Rock 'n' Roll Singer

Singer Changes His Tune During Trial

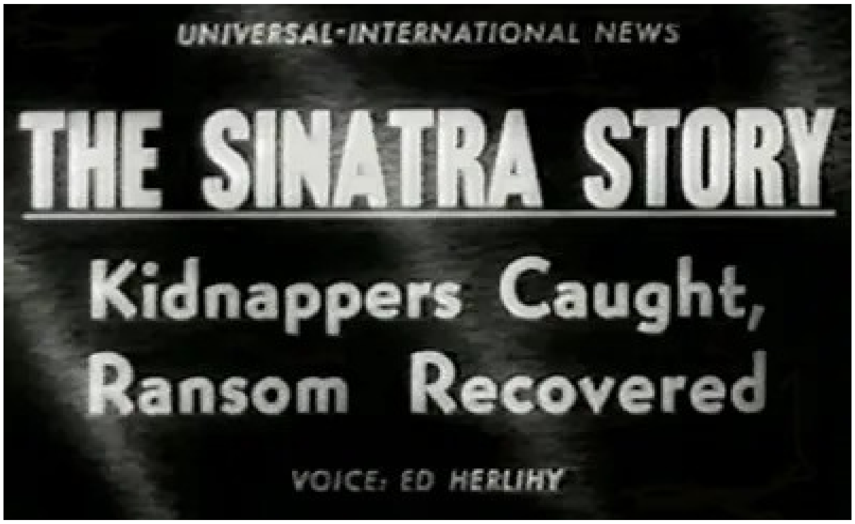
UNIVERSAL-INTERNATIONAL NEWS

THE SINATRA STORY

Kidnappers Caught, Ransom Recovered

VOICE: ED HERLIHY

Frank Sinatra, Jr.

At the end of the trial, Frank Sinatra, Jr. was quick to push for the news media to drop the issue, and discouraged further inquiries. Afterwards, Jan and Dean found that they couldn't get their shows booked anywhere anymore. They learned that they had been blackballed due to the influence of Frank Sinatra, Sr. A journalist who made note of this in an article, Dorothy Kilgallen, was found dead from a drug overdose within the next two years. She had also been writing about the affair between President Kennedy and Marilyn Monroe, and at the time of her death, was about to reveal something she knew regarding the President's assassination.

In 1964, Jan and Dean again tried to revive their careers, this time planning to star in a movie called *Easy Come, Easy Go*. But on August 5, Jan Berry was injured in an unexplained accident with a train on the set. The film was then cancelled immediately, which also went unexplained.

jan & dean
...... on the run

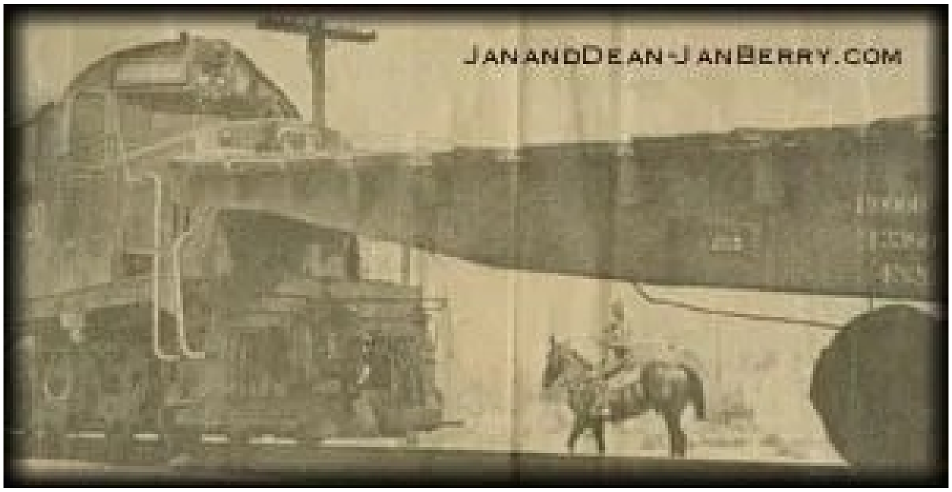

JanandDean-JanBerry.com

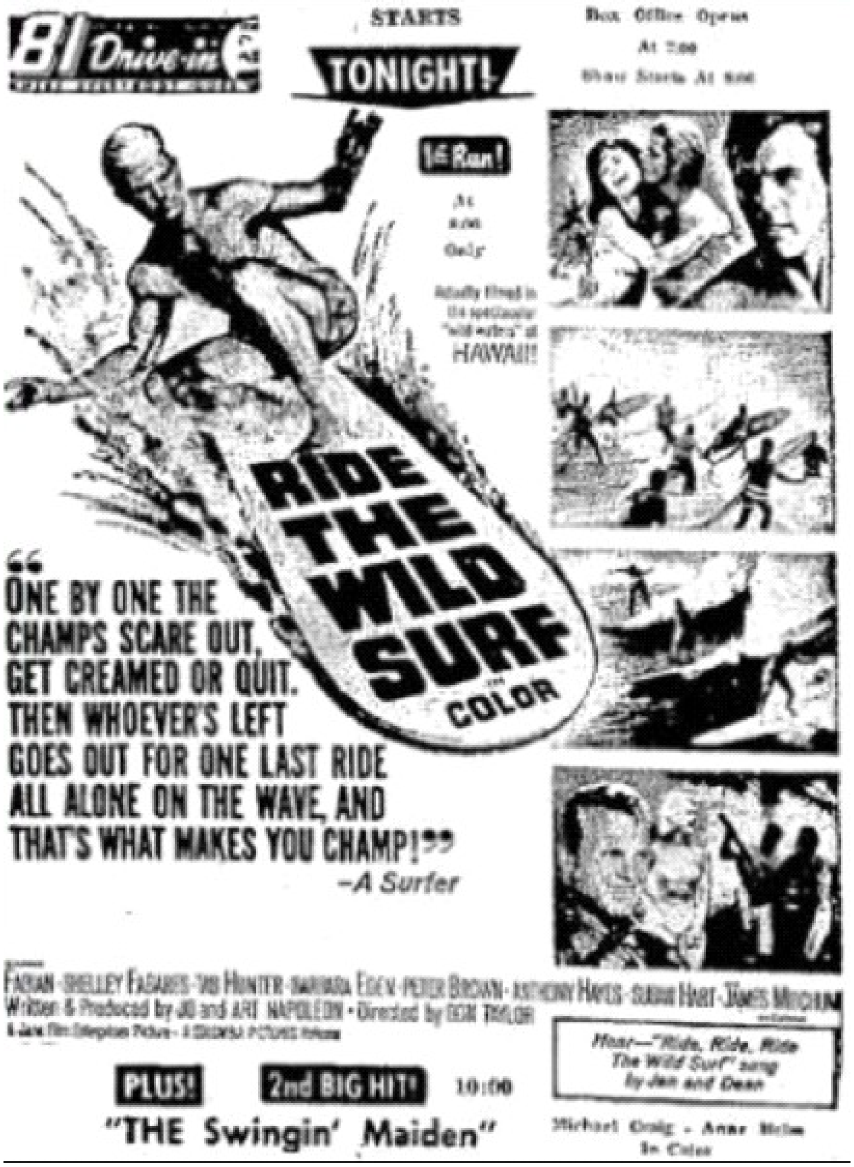

81 Drive-in

STARTS

TONIGHT!

Box Office Opens
At 7:00
Show Starts At 8:00

1st Run!

At
8:00
Only

Actually filmed in
the spectacular
"wild waters" of
HAWAII!

RIDE THE WILD SURF
IN COLOR

"ONE BY ONE THE
CHAMPS SCARE OUT,
GET CREAMED OR QUIT.
THEN WHOEVER'S LEFT
GOES OUT FOR ONE LAST RIDE
ALL ALONE ON THE WAVE, AND
THAT'S WHAT MAKES YOU CHAMP!"
–A Surfer

FABIAN · SHELLEY FABARES · TAB HUNTER · BARBARA EDEN · PETER BROWN · ANTHONY HAYES · SUSAN HART · JAMES MITCHUM
Written & Produced by JO and ART NAPOLEON · Directed by DON TAYLOR
A Jana Film Enterprises Picture · A COLUMBIA PICTURES Release

Hear—"Ride, Ride, Ride
The Wild Surf" song
by Jan and Dean

PLUS! 2nd BIG HIT! 10:00
"THE Swingin' Maiden"

Michael Craig · Anne Helm
In Color

A year later, just as a new TV series featuring Jan and Dean was about to air, a wheel broke loose from his car, and a nearly-fatal accident occurred. Jan wasn't hurt that badly, but the next week, yet another accident occurred in which he mysteriously "lost control" of the vehicle. The result was a month-long coma, and he was never the same again.

Even though it was Jan Berry who felt the brunt of all of these negative experiences, the article on Berry's site suggests that this was all arranged by Frank Sinatra, Sr. as punishment for his colleague's testimony at the trial. Either Sinatra was mad that Torrence was complicit in the kidnapping, and his son was an innocent victim, which is what Sinatra, Jr.'s lawyers argued at trial, or he was mad that Torrence didn't take the fall by saying something to exonerate his son from suspicion of involvement in the plot. Whatever the case may be, as the author states twice in the article, "You don't fuck with Frank Sinatra."

Now let us think about how Frank Sinatra must have felt when Mia Farrow, a young and relatively unknown figure compared to him, *snubbed* his invitation to serve at his feet on the set of his detective movie, so that she could pretend to be raped in some Satanic cult movie directed by some weird Polish creep. We know that *Rosemary's Baby* was made immediately after the publication of the book by Ira Levin in 1967, and that the film followed the book closely in almost every detail, including the dialogue. Presumably, there wasn't much that Polanski did to change it. However, Sinatra, who was angry when his wife took the role in the first place, may have become increasingly incensed as the details of the project emerged. I can imagine Mia, her mousey little voice quivering over the phone line, as she told Frank about the story she was acting out, while he undoubtedly harrumphed and grimaced on the other end.

Think about it. First, think about the main subject matter: witchcraft. Since at least the time of Marilyn Monroe's husband Arthur Miller, witches, and the hunt for them, have served as metaphors for political intrigue. Besides *Rosemary's Baby*, and it's sequel, which didn't come out until 1997, none of author Ira Levin's other novels were about that subject. However, Polanski had already shot two occult-themed films, and would go on to do others as well. The story and film stand on their own without any metaphors, political or otherwise, being read into them. However, Polanski is complex, and Levin was too. Complex artists often put many layers of meaning into their work.

So next, let's think about the characters and their situation. Rosemary Woodhouse is married to Guy Woodhouse, an aspiring actor who needs to land a big part in a real movie in order to boost his career to the next level. This obsesses him, causing him to neglect his wife most of the time, and when they are together, he annoys her with constant whining about the subject. He is controlling, demanding, manipulative, and arrogant.

Ultimately, to feed his selfish need for fame, money, and adulation, he sells his family into bondage to an organized criminal conspiracy. He screws over his friends and colleagues too in the process. He conspires with others to cause physical harm to a fellow actor whose job he wants to take for himself. He participates in the drugging and gang-raping of a woman he supposedly loves—his wife—then uses the consequences of that rape—in this case, his wife's baby—in order to gain favor with the criminal group that he belongs to: the "witches." Played by John Cassavetes, he is an attractive, well-dressed, and charming, if conceited, Italian male living in New York.

To me, this could be seen as a metaphor for the life of Frank Sinatra, and his involvement with the rape of Marilyn Monroe. Even though he was born into the mafia and received his godfather's help with his career early on, it was his choice to ask for Tommy Dorsey to be threatened, and all of the other crimes he committed against other members of the entertainment industry from that point onward. With each one, he was bringing his family further into bondage with the dark side.

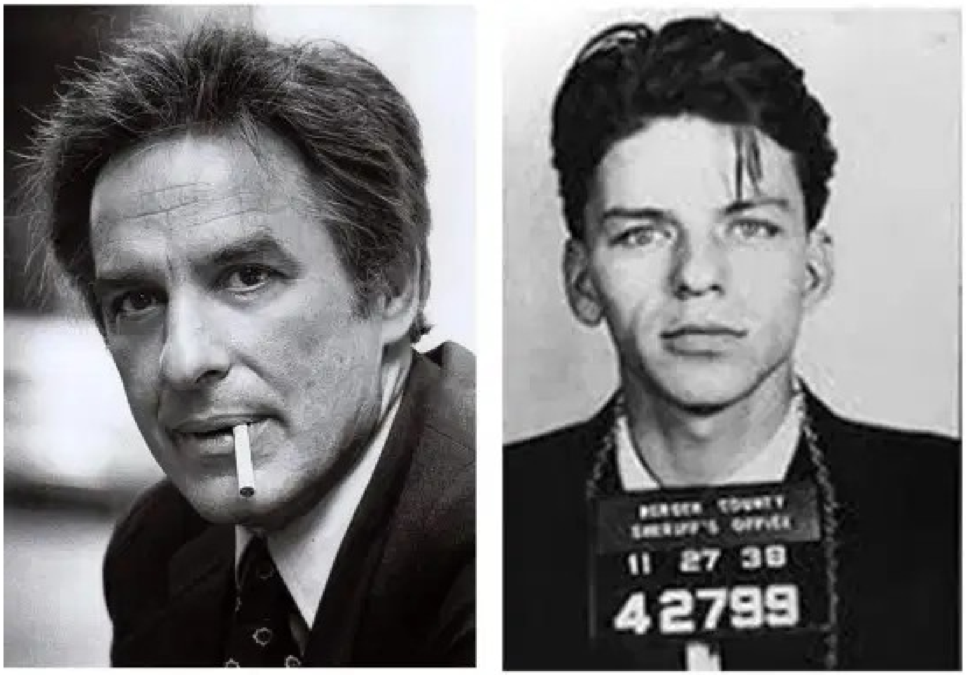

Young Frank Sinatra compared with John Cassavetes as Guy Woodhouse in Rosemary's Baby

Next let's think about the fact that, in the scene in which Rosemary is having feverish dreams while being raped under the influence of "the mouse," someone who looks like either John or Bobby Kennedy is on board the ship in Rosemary's dream. He says to Rosemary, "Catholics only. I wish we weren't bound by these prejudices, but…"

What is the reason for this reference to the Kennedy boys, both of whom, like Sinatra, had their way with Marilyn Monroe? My guess is that it's most likely supposed to be John in the scene, but I can't be certain. Bobby, by the way, was shot by Sirhan Sirhan on June 6, 1968, six days before the premier of *Rosemary's Baby* on June 12 of that same year. There is evidence that the assassin had been the victim of mind control similar to that depicted in 1952's *The Manchurian Candidate*, which starred Frank Sinatra.

In *The Manchurian Candidate*, an American soldier is hypnotized by Chinese communists and programmed to kill an American politician, but to be unaware of this until his programming is triggered on the day of the crime. His fellow soldiers witness this programming, and several murders, during the initial tests they undergo, but being also hypnotized, they are programmed to forget this. Sinatra plays one of these hypnotized soldiers. He recovers his memories and then, as a military intelligence analyst, helps his employer foil the assassination plot.

Amazingly, according to Adam Gorightly's *The Shadow Over Santa Susana*, Roman Polanski and his wife Sharon were the coordinators of the Kennedy campaign for the Los Angeles area. Peter Levenda tells us that they both were present at a dinner party in Malibu where Bobby Kennedy was to be the guest of honor. This party was hosted by John Frankenheimer, the director of *The Manchurian Candidate*, as well as an incredibly relevant movie called Seconds. "It was to be [Bobby Kennedy's] Last Supper," Levenda reports.

The person suspected by many of having hypnotized and programmed Sirhan Sirhan to shoot Bobby Kennedy is William Joseph Bryan. He was a famous hypnotist known for extracting a confession under hypnosis from Albert DiSalvo, convicted of being the Boston Strangler. Amazingly, Bryan had once been the drummer for the Tommy Dorsey Band, and may have known Frank Sinatra through this connection.

Albert DiSalvo

The case linking Bryan to Sirhan is made in the book The Assassination of Robert F. Kennedy, by William Turner and John Christian. It is summarized by Peter Levenda in the first volume of Sinister Forces:

> *Before Sirhan's identity was made public, Bryan was on a radio show giving his opinion that the assassin had been hypnotically programmed. And one of Sirhan's notebooks contained serial killer DiSalvo's name repeated several times.*
>
> *… The 'DiSalvo' reference in Sirhan's notebooks, however, suggests that the name of this alleged serial killer was brought up during Sirhan's programming, perhaps as a trigger word or, more likely, as a reference back to the original programmer. This would have been Bryan, since Bryan*

> *famously worked on the DiSalvo case. Did Bryan plant the 'DiSalvo' reference as a kind of calling card? Or did Sirhan see the name of his programmer linked to DiSalvo in a newspaper or magazine article? There is no other connection between Sirhan and DiSalvo that anyone has been able to discover….*
>
> *[The]…CIA's BLUEBIRD—and later ARTICHOKE and MK-ULTRA—program was aggressive in its use of hypnosis as a mechanism for mind control, and employed the services of several hypnotists… Dr. William Joseph Bryan claimed to have been one of them….Bryan made no secret of the fact that he had worked or was working for the CIA in some capacity.*
>
> *At one point, and to select individuals, Bryan claimed to have hypnotized Sirhan. There is no evidence linking Sirhan to Bryan after the assassination, however…. Yet, Bryan claimed to have never hypnotized Sirhan when pressed by an independent researcher, and abruptly terminated the interview.*

One of the interesting things I noticed while researching Bryan is that Google uses the same picture for him that they use for David Ferrie, a suspect in the John Kennedy assassination. It seems to me that it's actually a picture of Ferrie, and that its use in the William Joseph Bryan entry is erroneous. The only connection between the two I see is that David Ferrie was also a hypnotist, albeit an amateur. Levenda also points out that David Ferrie used hypnotism to seduce young boys, and suggests that Bryan may have used it for the same purpose with women.

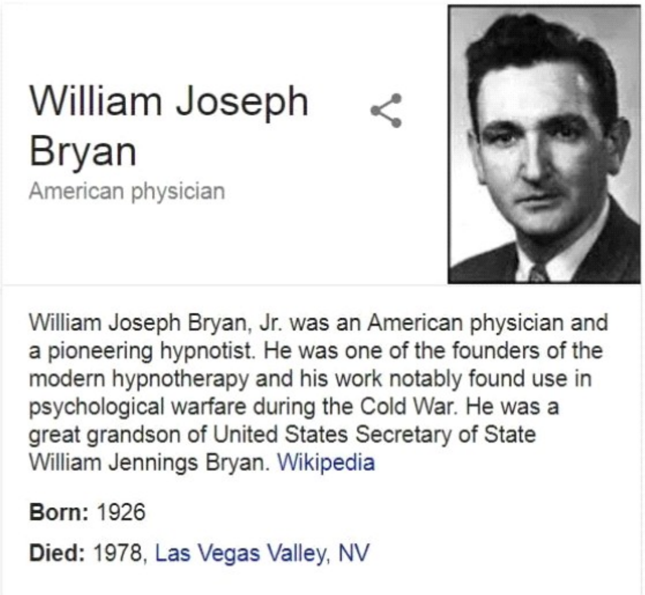

William Joseph Bryan

American physician

William Joseph Bryan, Jr. was an American physician and a pioneering hypnotist. He was one of the founders of the modern hypnotherapy and his work notably found use in psychological warfare during the Cold War. He was a great grandson of United States Secretary of State William Jennings Bryan. Wikipedia

Born: 1926

Died: 1978, Las Vegas Valley, NV

Google uses same photo for William Jennings Bryan that Wikipedia uses for David Ferrie. See below.

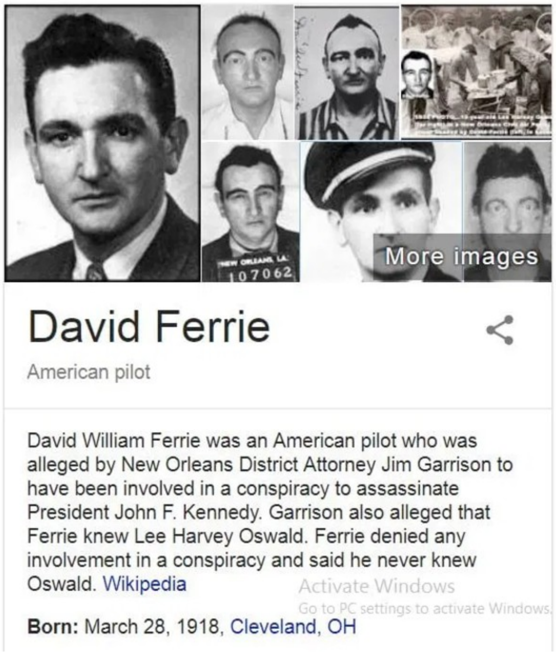

David Ferrie

American pilot

David William Ferrie was an American pilot who was alleged by New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison to have been involved in a conspiracy to assassinate President John F. Kennedy. Garrison also alleged that Ferrie knew Lee Harvey Oswald. Ferrie denied any involvement in a conspiracy and said he never knew Oswald. Wikipedia

Activate Windows
Go to PC settings to activate Windows.

Born: March 28, 1918, Cleveland, OH

But I think it's worth comparing photos of Ferrie with photos of both Charles Manson and Lieutenant Colonel Michael Aquino when they were younger. Even more striking is the resemblance between Ferrie and another convicted child molester, Larry Melton (a.k.a. "White Rabbit," a former associate of the Manson Family). Melton also has a widow's peak haircut in some photos that is almost identical to that previously worn by Michael Aquino. I will tell you more about Melton shortly.

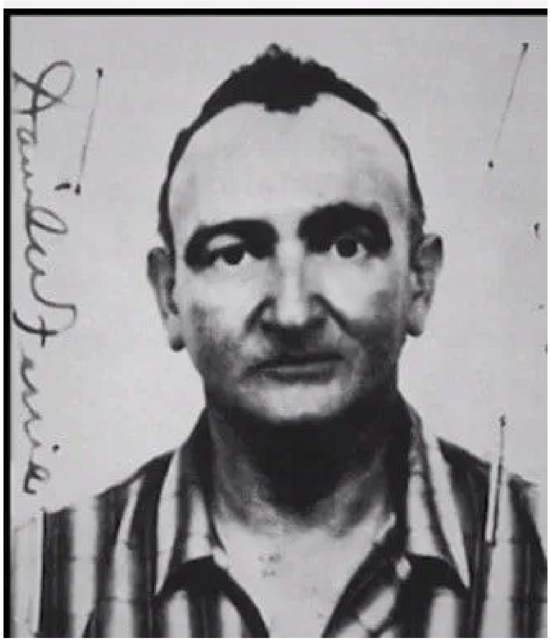

David Ferrie

NEW ORLEANS, LA.
107062

David Ferrie

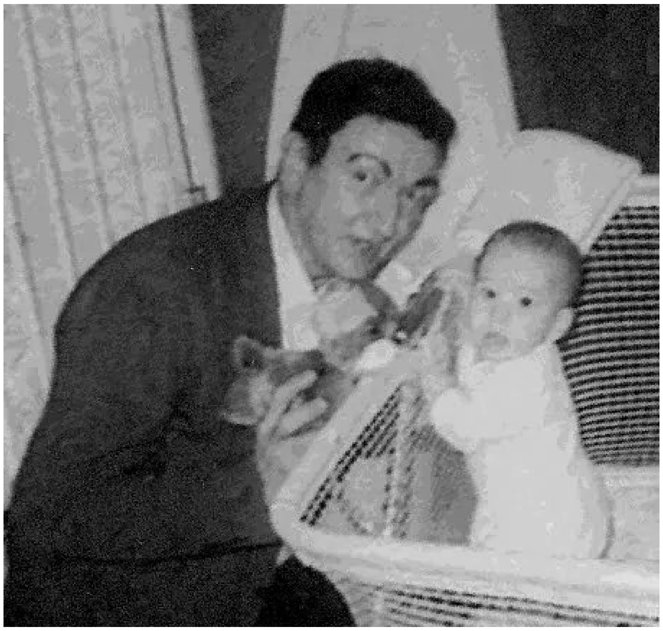

David Ferrie

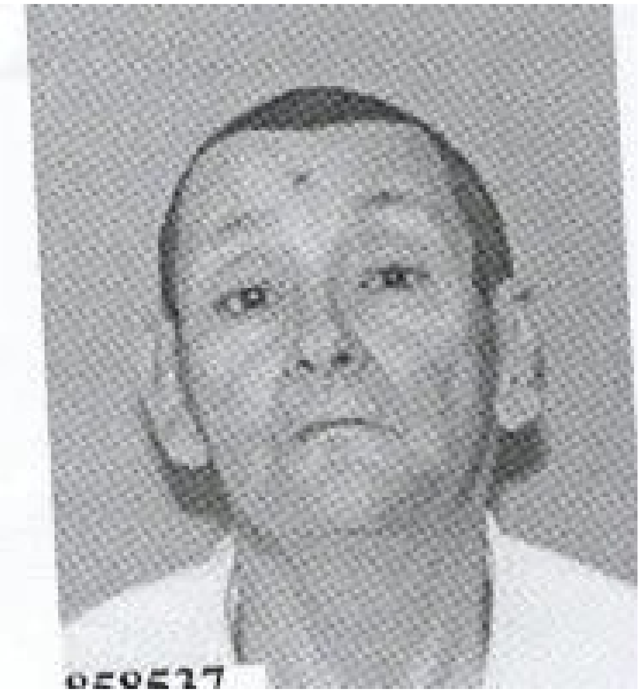

Larry Melton

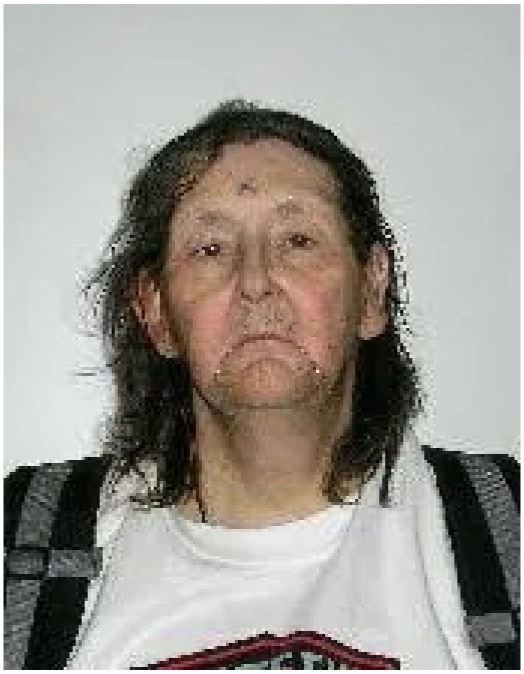

Larry Melton

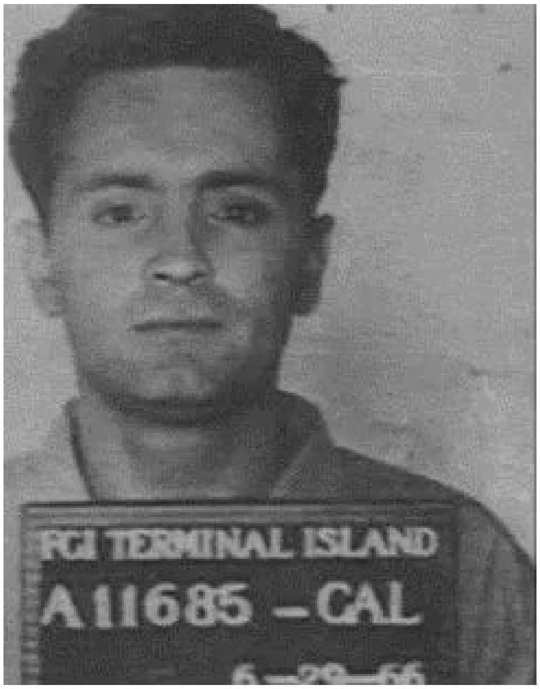
FCI TERMINAL ISLAND
A11685 -CAL
6-29-66

A young Charles Manson

Michael Aquino

Michael Aquino

That mind control technology like that featured in *The Manchurian Candidate* was actually being utilized as the film was being made, and that it was quite likely used to kill Bobby Kennedy, an enemy of Sinatra's, six days before the premiere of the despised film that had (in Sinatra's mind) ruined his most recent marriage—these things are simply eerie. But Sinatra's proximity to both murdered Kennedys, as well as their friends, lovers, and mafia financiers, even the very mobsters suspected of murdering John Kennedy with their own hands, has always been rather striking. There is also another high-profile murder case that Sinatra seems to have been far too close to, as I will explain soon.

Another figure on board the boat in Rosemary's mouse-induced dream is her friend Hutch, who is kicked off the boat when the Kennedy man says that only Catholics are allowed. In his ship captain's outfit, Hutch looks to me, quite clearly, just like L. Ron Hubbard looked in many of his most broadly-utilized publicity photos taken aboard his yachts. Hubbard was, in his early years, a naval intelligence spy who, on behalf of the government, infiltrated Aleister Crowley's OTO lodge there.

As *Rosemary's Baby* was being filmed, the influence of Hubbard's later creation, Scientology, was manifesting in Southern California. While in jail as a young man, Charles Manson was initiated into the principles of Scientology by a fellow inmate. Later in life, as his own cult was growing, Manson would also fraternize with, and write for the official publication of, a bizarre Satan-worshipping offshoot of Scientology called "the Process Church of the Final Judgement," a group that is central to the story here.

In the film, Guy Woodhouse likens himself to a rodent because of his fiendish envy of his colleague Donald, the rival actor whose role Guy took over after Guy's witch friends next door blinded Donald with a black magic spell. Guy tells Rosemary that he's been distracted lately because he's been "worried" that Donald "will regain his sight, rat that I am." The term "rat" is used by Italian mafia to refer to those who cooperate with police investigations.

But of course, Frank Sinatra himself was the leader of the rats. In *Oceans 11*, the quintessential Rat Pack film, the character Adele tells Sinatra (playing Danny Ocean) that he's a "rat." Later another character describes him as "a well-mannered shark," once again hinting at the symbolism of Mackheath Messer, his deadly knife, and his gloves (which are a motif emphasized throughout the movie).

The term "shark," by the way, is suspected by some etymologists of being coined as a term for a "swindler" or a "dishonest person who preys on others" *before* (but not long before) the term was ever used to identify an aquatic animal. Older words for these creatures in other languages refer either to the sharpness of their teeth (such as the Greek *karkharos*, meaning "sharp, jagged, biting"), or to how they bear these teeth in the effect of a grimace when they are about to strike at their prey. This includes the French *requin*, from the Old French word *reschingnier*, meaning "to bare the teeth, grimace," flashing the "pearly whites," just like in "Mack the Knife." Both sharks and psychopathic humans appear to smile at you right before they strike at you, which happens just when you realize that they are not actually smiling at all.

Now check this out: in the *Rosemary's Baby* novel, the person who acts as the superintendent of the Bramford building and gives the Woodhouses a tour of the apartment they will soon rent is named "Mr. Micklaus." In the movie, his name has been changed to Mr. *Nicklaus*. You may recall me mentioning that in Poland (where Mr. Polanski comes from), Saint Nicholas is called *Mikolaj*. So it's safe to say he would have been aware of the symbolic implications of making this change, underscoring the hint that Saint Nicholas somehow represents both Santa Claus and whatever ancient *mythos* lies behind the character of "Mickey."

We have already established that this word has the exact same meaning in the criminal underworld as "the mouse" in *Rosemary's Baby*: the ruffied poison vector, in which the bite (the unexpected, incapacitating intoxication) is hidden in the bait (the free dessert offered by an enemy posing as a friend). In the novel, Rosemary even does some mousing of her own, slipping a mickey into the coffee of one of the cultists holding her hostage in an effort to escape the apartment.

Earlier in this essay, I made the case that the character of Mickey Mouse, invented by Walt Disney, is based on Macheath Messer of *The Threepenny Opera*, just like the song "Mack the Knife," which would later become intractably connected with Frank Sinatra and, indeed, the entire Rat Pack. I demonstrated that this song includes allusions to the same death threats that La Cosa Nostra uses—the "offer you can't refuse"—and that this aspect of the song was acknowledged, even magnified, with glee by Frank Sinatra whenever he sang it.

I have shown that Walt Disney's life, from his birthdate to the three circles in the logo of his company, was tied in with the symbolism of Saint Nicholas. This is a figure whose *mythos* includes child prostitution, human trafficking, kidnapping, cannibalism, and a villain who served the saint food containing a hidden forbidden substance. That substance was nothing less than the flesh of murdered young boys who had been stuffed into barrels, just like victims of a mafia hit. I didn't mention yet that I think Walt Disney looked quite a bit like the character Macheath Messer in the 1930s German film version of *The Threepenny Opera*. Just have a look and judge for yourself.

Interestingly, in the *Rosemary's Baby* film, Minnie Castevet also makes a reference to the "offer you can't refuse" when she first invites Rosemary and Guy over for dinner. She says to Rosemary, "You tell him I said I won't take no for an answer."

Polanski had originally wanted his then-girlfriend Sharon Tate to play Rosemary, it is said. She had been in his previous film, *The Fearless Vampire Killers*. But he was not in charge of casting, and remained silent about his preference. This worked out, it seemed, as Mia Farrow was the perfect choice, clearly bringing much more to the project than mere name recognition due to her relationship with Frank Sinatra (the main reason she was initially hired). In January 1968, just after finishing the film that had destroyed Farrow's marriage to Sinatra, Polanski married Sharon.

Tate had been a frequent visitor to the set, and was friends with Farrow, as well as many of the other cast and crew, including Patty Duke, who had also had tried for the part of Rosemary in the film. Duke would eventually end up playing Rosemary in the made-for-TV sequel, unrelated to the novel, that aired in 1976, entitled *Look What Happened to Rosemary's Baby*. Duke also rented the Polanskis a house, where they moved in right after the premiere of *Rosemary's Baby*. The next place they moved to after that was a house owned by record producer Terry Melcher at 10050 Cielo Drive. It was there that Sharon Tate was murdered, along with her house guests, by the Charles Manson Family on August 8, 1969. She was eight and one-half months pregnant with Roman Polanski's baby at the time.

The parallels between the events in the movie and the events in Polanski's life seem shocking to me. Even more amazing is how much the milieus of the Manson clan and the Polanski clique were enmeshed prior to the murders. Manson's hippie commune was not just a bunch of dirty homeless losers. They were the sons and daughters of rich families and famous celebrities—exactly the same kind of socialite "pigs" they were supposedly trying to lead an uprising against.

For example, counted among their ranks was DiDi Landbury, the daughter of actress Angela Lansbury. Her mother had played the main handler of the mind-controlled assassin (also her character's own son) in *The Manchurian Candidate*. DiDi joined the gang when she was just thirteen years old. She kept a note with her, written by her mother, stating that she had permission to be with them, and let Charlie use her mother's credit card. DiDi purportedly left the group in disgust after witnessing Charles Manson having sex with a very young little girl.

According to a letter Manson wrote to *The Hollywood Star* from prison, other people who hung out with the Manson set included Dennis Wilson from the Beach Boys, record producer Terry Melcher (the son of actress Doris Day), Neil Diamond, and Nancy Sinatra. Peter Levenda adds to the list Deana Martin (Dean Martin's daughter), Peter Falk, and Jane Fonda. Manson also told reporters that he and his peeps had the run of a segment of Universal Studios several times. They were there at the invitation of Gary Stromberg, as described in *Manson in His Own Words*.

Manson had been asked by Stromberg to record soundtrack music and work as a technical advisor for an unnamed film about the return of Jesus Christ. During this time, the girls were paid to sexually satisfy several well-known celebrities whom Manson refused to name. He says that he also turned a few tricks as well, he said, with a mysterious "Mr. B"—a "famous movie actor"—*and* Mr. B's wife, being paid $500 each time. I suspect that this person is Marlon Brando. As Adam Gorightly explains:

> *The Manson Family/Hollywood connections ran deep, and for many years Charlie was reticent to finger the rich and famous that had intersected his star-crossed path. ...For whatever reason, Manson… responded to a request from a gossip tabloid in the mid-70s, The Hollywood Star. …When Frank Sinatra caught wind that the publisher of The Hollywood Star—Bill Dakota—was calling his daughter Nancy to pump her for info regarding alleged Manson sex orgies, the "Chairman of the Board" threatened to send out some of his boys to break Dakota's knee-caps if the publisher didn't cease*

> *and desist with his provocative inquiries.*

Indeed, the Manson Family seems to have operated as a porn and prostitution ring. At the Spahn Ranch movie in California, where they lived, and in other locations, they all had sex with celebrities, often for money, and they often filmed it. They also kept meticulous logs whenever famous people came over for orgies. Gorightly tells us about a Charles Manson archivist, John Aes-Nihil, who is stationed in Canoga Park, CA, Gorightly stated:

> *…One of the more obscure documents in Aes-Nihil's collection is A Psycho-Sexual History of the Manson Family. About a fourth of Psychosexual History is handwritten in red ink, and appears to have been authored by Susan Atkins, or someone claiming to be Atkins.*

A great deal of the manuscript is an endless account of orgies at the Spahn Ranch, with exhaustive lists of who did what to whom. There's even a chapter on George Harrison doing it with John Lennon, and strangely enough a friend of Aes-Nihil's claims to have a 16mm of this film, but has never let anyone see it…. The guy who sold it to him claimed to have had the document in his basement for about eight years, and that he got it at a yard sale in Chatsworth—found in the bottom of a trunk, no less.

If this is true, then the fact that Manson never mentioned meeting the Beatles is extremely significant. It means they had secret business together. This would explain Manson's belief that the Beatles were sending him coded messages through their music, particularly the *White Album*, recorded while Rosemary's Baby was being filmed, and released on the fifth anniversary of President Kennedy's murder.

Also, consider the fact that Mia Farrow's younger sister, Prudence, purportedly influenced the name of the song "Dear Prudence" on that album. Prudence, Mia, and their brother Patrick (later a convicted sex offender) had met the Beatles earlier that year in India, when they were all there to study meditations with the

Maharishi, another accused sex offender. In fact, the song “Sexy Sadie” on that album was supposedly originally about the Maharishi’s fall from grace because of these accusations, which were aired immediately after their time there.

John says that he chose at the last minute to replace all mentions of “Maharishi” in the lyrics with the words “Sexy Sadie” instead. Now, Susan Atkins’ alias in the Manson Family was Sadie Mae Glutz, and her friends also called her “Sexy Sadie.” This nickname is always assumed to have been coined after the *White Album* came out.

But if the two knew each other intimately, it could quite possibly have been the other way around. Susan Atkins is always portrayed as a braggart who loved to run her mouth. Surely, most assume, she would have mentioned a sex orgy with the Beatles to someone, right?

But we can see that the Manson clan has been calculated about what information they have chosen to release, staying quite disciplined throughout the years. Those in the mainstream media have consistently underestimated the Manson Family’s importance within the entertainment industry, and in the criminal underworld. Perhaps they’ve also overlooked an important role that this group has played within the intelligence community. The Mansons, I think, really did know what they were doing the whole time, and it was all quite intentional.

Some time after the Manson murders, John Lennon actually bought the building in which *Rosemary’s Baby* is set: the Dakota. When he learned about the connection, after he’d bought it, Lennon reportedly wrote “Helter Skelter” on the wall in one of the rooms, then covered in up with a file cabinet. This is the very same building that Lennon would die in front of in 1980, brought down by an assassin’s bullet.

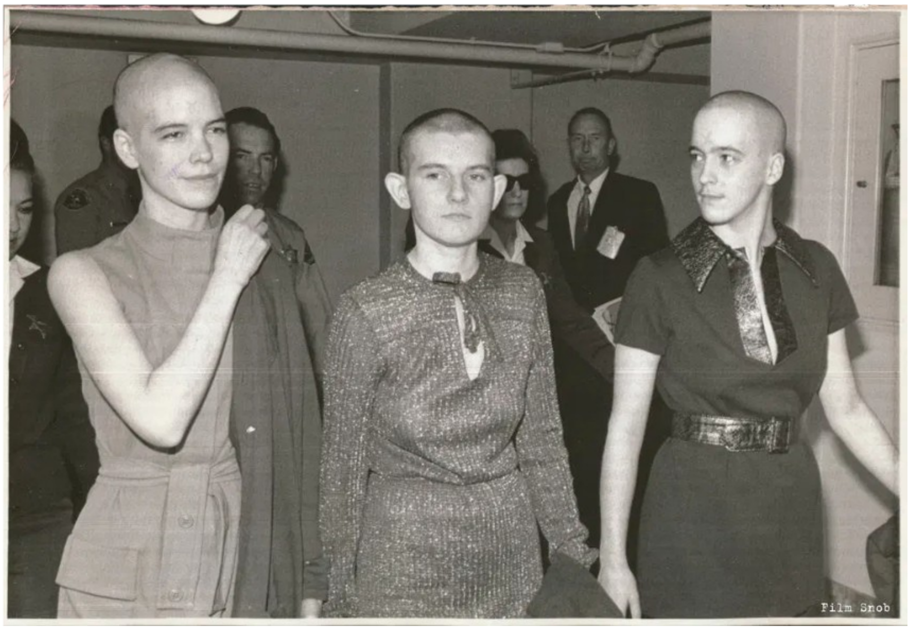

Manson Girls

Even if the claims of the archivist about the John/George gay porno film shot at Spahn Ranch aren't true, it is not far-fetched that they would have know each other, or that the Beatles would have known about the Manson troupe. After all, Manson didn't just have a casual acquaintance with Dennis Wilson of the Beach Boys. Rather, Manson and his girls were *living* with Wilson for months. At one point, Wilson was in awe of Manson, spoke of him like a guru, and aped his mannerisms. He set up several professional recording sessions for Manson, and hooked him up with music producers, including Terry Melcher, whose house Sharon Tate was renting when she and the other victims were murdered there. As Adam Gorightly explains:

Wilson was so in awe of Manson that he bragged about his friendship in an issue of the English rock magazine Rave. 'Fear is nothing but awareness,' spake Dennis in the interview, mimicking Manson's guru-driven mumbo-jumbo. 'I was only frightened as a child because I did not understand fear—the dark, being lost, what was under the bed! It came from within… Sometimes the Wizard frightens me—Charlie Manson, who says he is God and the Devil! He sings, plays, and writes poetry and may be another artist for Brother Records [the Beach Boys' record label].

At least one of Manson’s songs ended up on a Beach Boys album. “Never Learn Not to Love” is a track on their *20/20* record, a reworked version Manson’s “Cease to Exist.” They paid Manson, but didn’t credit him, and never ended up putting out anything else for him. He didn’t like the way they’d arranged it, nor did he appreciate Wilson crediting himself as the songwriter. His response was to hand Wilson a bullet and say “Every time you look at this, be glad your children are still alive.” This was the end of their friendship and professional collaboration.

Another famous musician who knew Manson was John Philips of The Mamas and the Papas, whose song “Straight Shooter” was found on the turntable in the bedroom of the one guy staying on the grounds of the Tate house who survived the massacre. This was William Garrett, who was staying in the guesthouse, and playing The Mamas and the Papas too loud to head the screams of the victims.

Ironically, John Philips was suspected by Roman Polanski of being the killer before the Manson Family was ever investigated. This was because Polanski had been sleeping with John’s wife and fellow bandmate Michelle while he was filming *The Day of the Dolphin* in London. Polanski figured that John had found out about this and had done the killings as revenge. Indeed, it still hasn’t been ruled out that he could have hired Manson to orchestrate the murders for this purpose. Both Manson and Mr. Philips can be connected to another murderous cult operating concurrently within the same milieu in southern California: the Process.

The Process Church of the Final Judgement came out of a Scientology center in London, started by two disgruntled Dianetics drop-outs who set out to make their own crazy cult with their own e-meters. But this one would be more hardcore, openly worshipping the Devil and reveling in the imagery of death. However, just like the Church of Scientology, the Process specifically targeted successful film stars and musicians for membership.

The two people in question were named Robert DeGrimston and MaryAnn MacLean. DeGrimston was born in Shanghai, China, the city that gave its name to the process of drugging and abducting people for the "white slave" trade. MaryAnn MacLean was born in Glasgow, like the fictional warlock Adrian Marcato, Roman Castevet's father in *Rosemary's Baby*. Significantly, MacLean was a prostitute in her early years, and according to Gorightly, "she became the kept woman of several influential men during the infamous John Profumo-Christine Keller prostitution scandal that rocked the British government."

THE PROCESSEANS
ANNOUNCING New Magazine
PROCESS
THE TEACHING:
THE WALK
(or - the beam is in the eye of the beholder)
BLACK & WHITE IN TIME
ALSO HEAR ABOUT OUR NEW MAGAZINE!
MAIN FEATURE:
KIDS SURE START YOUNG THESE DAYS
AT FOURTEEN SHE GOT HOOKED ON HEROIN
The Unity of Christ and Satan is Good News for you. If that conflict can be resolved then yours can be too.

By early 1966, the Process Church had 25 members, who'd donated everything they had to the cause. This enabled them to move into a pricey mansion in London's Mayfair district. They wore black capes with the Goat of Mendes symbol on the back. Before long, they had Marianne Faithful as a member, and John Philips was giving them money. They published a slick magazine featuring interviews with some of the hottest celebrities of the day: Mary Tyler Moore, Warren Beatty, Jimmy Savile, and Mama Cass Elliot, the other member of The Mamas and the Papas (besides John and Michelle Philips). Indeed, I have to wonder if the name of that band is in any way related to the fact that the leaders of the Process Church were addressed as “Father” and “Mother.”

I also have to wonder how deeply Jimmy Savile might have been involved with them, considering what we now know about him. Now that we know about his numerous child rapes, some of them involving dead bodies in morgues, and several involving the trappings of Satanic ritual, one wonders why nobody else found it disturbing at the time when he gave an interview to a magazine published by an overtly Satanic organization in which he replied to the question “Are you moral?” with the following:

> *I would say that I am highly moral during the day, and even higherly moral during the evening, but of course we won't say anything about night-time, because that is when all the real wolves like myself rise from the darkness and leap about causing mayhem left and right.*
>
> *When asked for his opinion of the institution of marriage, he told the Process interviewer, “…I couldn't think of inflicting myself on any poor young lady, 'cos what she would have to put up with would be too much for any human being….”*

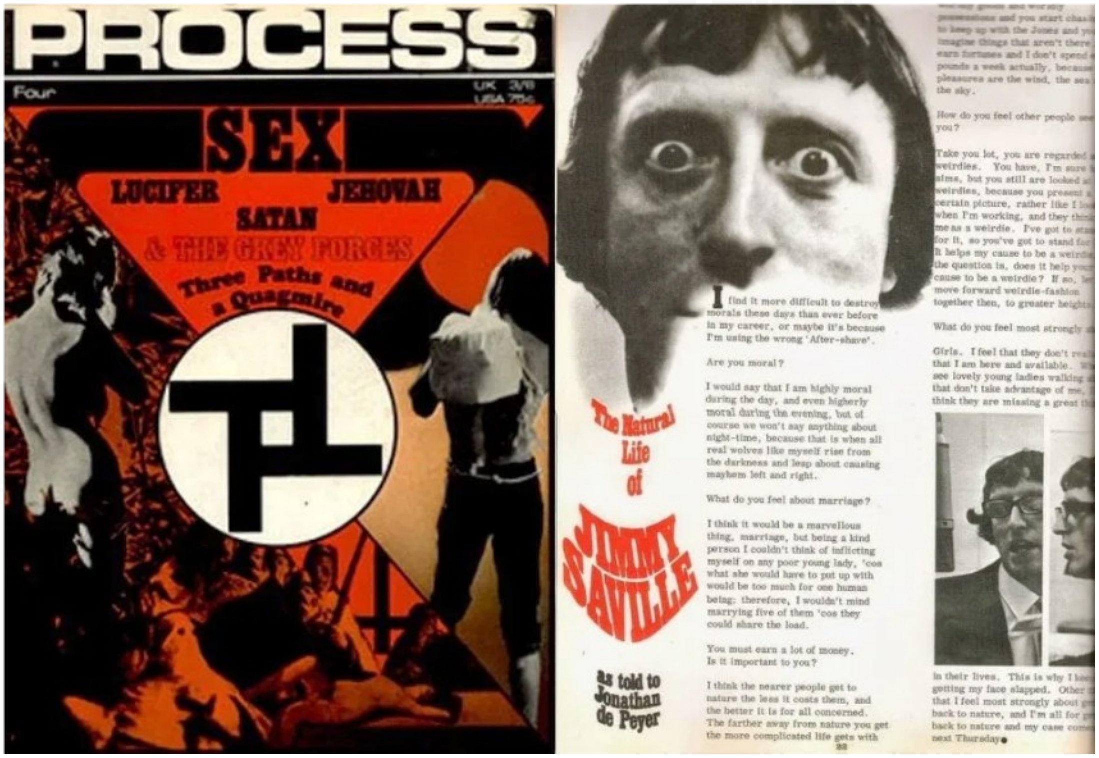

PROCESS

Four

UK 3/6
USA 75c

SEX

LUCIFER JEHOVAH
SATAN
& THE GREY FORCES
Three Paths and a Quagmire

The Natural Life of JIMMY SAVILLE

as told to Jonathan de Peyer

I find it more difficult to destroy morals these days than ever before in my career, or maybe it's because I'm using the wrong 'After-shave'.

Are you moral?

I would say that I am highly moral during the day, and even higherly moral during the evening, but of course we won't say anything about night-time, because that is when all real wolves like myself rise from the darkness and leap about causing mayhem left and right.

What do you feel about marriage?

I think it would be a marvellous thing, marriage, but being a kind person I couldn't think of inflicting myself on any poor young lady, 'cos what she would have to put up with would be too much for one human being: therefore, I wouldn't mind marrying five of them 'cos they could share the load.

You must earn a lot of money.
Is it important to you?

I think the nearer people get to nature the less it costs them, and the better it is for all concerned. The farther away from nature you get the more complicated life gets with

22

worldly goods and worldly
possessions and you start chas
to keep up with the Jones and yo
imagine things that aren't there
earn fortunes and I don't spend
pounds a week actually, because
pleasures are the wind, the sea
the sky.

How do you feel other people see
you?

Take you lot, you are regarded
weirdies. You have, I'm sure
aims, but you still are looked a
weirdies, because you present a
certain picture, rather like I lo
when I'm working, and they thi
me as a weirdie. I've got to sta
for it, so you've got to stand fo
It helps my cause to be a weird
the question is, does it help yo
cause to be a weirdie? If so, le
move forward weirdie-fashion
together then, to greater height

What do you feel most strongly

Girls. I feel that they don't rea
that I am here and available. W
see lovely young ladies walking
that don't take advantage of me,
think they are missing a great t

in their lives. This is why I hav
getting my face slapped. Other
that I feel most strongly about g
back to nature, and I'm all for g
back to nature and my case com
next Thursday●

The Process Church was obsessed with the thought of causing the Apocalypse, and in pursuit of bringing it about, Adam Gorightly reports that:

> *…[T]he Process Church reversed the commandment of Moses: 'Thou shall kill.' DeGrimston went on to exhort his followers to 'release the Fiend that lies dormant in you, for the world can be yours, and the blood of men can be yours to spill as you please.'…*

During the trial for the Tate-LaBianca murders, Process Magazine published an article by Charles Manson entitled "Pseudo-profundity in Death" for their official "Death"-themed issue. To reporters, Charles Manson gladly boasted that his group had been working with the Process all along before the murders too. Then a couple of Process ambassadors came to visit him in prison. He stopped talking about it after that. But what Manson said about himself and the Process actually does add up. You see, as they grew in influence, the Process Church expanded their operations, first to New Orleans, then to Mexico, and finally to southern

California, where, as Adam Gorightly describes it:

> *Robert DeDrimston and other Process members descended upon Haight Ashbury during the Summer of Love, taking lease of a property located at 407 Cole Street. Meanwhile, Manson and his budding entourage lived at 636 Cole Street, a mere two blocks away…. [In] John Parker's Polanski [the author] claims that Manson was a regular visitor to the Process headquarters, 'reaching the fourth of the six levels of initiation, that of 'prophet.' At the end of 1968, he was established as a leader of a group which he called 'Satan's Slaves.' During their Haight period—Parker contends—The Process attempted to form a union with LaVey's church, who dismissed them as kooks.*
>
> *When the Process arrived in Los Angeles in early '68, it was supposedly John Philips who put them in touch with a real estate agent named Artie Aarons. Once a week, the Processians would go around cleaning and repairing various properties owned by Aarons. In return for their services, Aarons let the Process use a large, two-story, twenty-room house in south central L.A. In the following weeks, the Process group—while working for Aarons—visited the old John Barrymore mansion at 1301 Summit Ridge Drive, which just happened to be located several blocks down the hill from where Roman Polanski was then renting a house at 1600 Summit Ridge. … Manson and his minions lived for a while in a shack on Summit Drive.*
>
> …
>
> *In December '68, Manson sent Family member Bruce Davis on a pilgrimage to merry old England where he spent roughly five months, including a considerable amount of time at the London headquarters of the Process. While there, Davis was employed by the Church of Scientology for a short period, working in the mailroom, and studying courses in his spare time….*
>
> *…researcher Bill Nelson claims that Davis was sent there by Manson to work out a difference between the Church of Scientology and the Process.*

After the Process Church's "Father John and "Brother Matthew" visited Manson in prison to shut him up, they claimed that their leader DeGrimston had never met Manson. John Philips has also tried to disavow his association with Manson, as well as with the Process. But the Process Church is known to have begun courting Terry Melcher, Dennis Wilson's record producer friend who was leasing the fateful house to Tate and Polanski, around the same time that Melcher first met Manson. The next thing to happen was that Melcher and Wilson began pressuring Philips to help Manson out with his "career." Phillips later tried to act like he had never shown any interest in these overtures, while Melcher tried to pretend that he never even liked Manson in the first place!

They were both covering up for something. When Bobby Kennedy was assassinated, a year before the Manson murders, the Process Church went underground.

Today, the Process has been associated with a number of high-profile murders, including those of serial killer David Berkowitz. David claimed to have been a member of the cult, and said that the group operated as an organized crime ring. He said they were committing murders for hire, sometimes giving the assassinations a ritual aspect which, while not inauthentic (as the perpetrators were indeed Satanists), often served to throw investigators off the trail of who might have paid for the murders in the first place. Others were made to seem random in order to give society the feeling that chaotic mayhem had been loosed upon the world. The ultimate purpose, purportedly, was to bring about the End Times by force.

Both Berkowitz and another person, convicted hit man Jason Turner, have done interviews stating that the Process Church syndicate was heavily involved in the illegal trafficking of children for prostitution and pornography production, including snuff films. Turner also said that his roommate, controversial photographer (and known Satanist) Robert Mapplethorpe, was a member of the Church and a participant in these activities. Berkowitz said that several of the killings for which he took credit as the "Son of Sam" were filmed for the Process, and that the recordings were sold to snuff collectors.

This would seem like a terribly dangerous “game” to play—making a record of high-profile capital crimes—unless you were fairly certain that your organization had complete control over all law enforcement agencies and all court systems that might pose a threat. In the case of the Process, it seems, this confidence has been well-placed. The main culprits responsible for the crimes attributed to Berkowitz, and all of the other crimes tied to the syndicate, will most likely never see justice.

If you read Maury Terry’s The Ultimate Evil, Peter Levenda’s Sinister Forces, or Adam Gorightly’s The Shadow Over Santa Susana, you will find much evidence to persuade you that Manson’s “Family” was an offshoot of the Process, or even a “cell” of that organization, tasked with performing certain functions. Getting famous people on camera doing compromising things might very well have been one of them.

Adam Gorightly in particular highlights several stories he has come across indicating that the Process and the Manson Family were two brother peas in the same Satanic Scientologist pod. The first one that I will mention is the “medieval trial”:

> *Sometime after Manson was taken in to custody for the Tate/LaBianca murders, an interesting article appeared in a Berkeley newspaper alleging he had been a member of a homosexual ‘death-cult’ which operated out of the notorious Waller Street house [“The Devil House”] in the Haight during the Summer/Fall of ’68. ...Manson claimed to have lived there for a brief period during the Summer of Love. The article in question described a ‘trial’ conducted by the Waller House cult, which was called the Final Church of Judgment, a name which strongly resembles the Process Church of the Final Judgment. Other former residents of the Waller Street abode were associated with the Process…*

> *[Blaine, a friend of one of Manson’s male lovers in prison in the early sixties, says that] ‘The Final Church is the name Manson chose for the church he eventually founded….’ The cult was evidently led by one Father*

> *P., and operated out of the …Waller Street 'Devil House.'*
>
> *According to Blaine's account, Manson supposedly showed up at a 'medieval trial' in late Summer of '68, where it was to be decided whether to put a former cult member to death. There a weird-ass scene unfolded, and though the former cult member who 'went wrong' was not ultimately put to death, he did get the livin' shit beat out of him with a 'broken' wooden crucifix, as Father P. shouted: 'I'm God! I'm Satan! I'm Jesus" straight out of The Process/Manson canon. Blain alleged that Manson—in the company of sexy Sadie Mae Glutz—left the next day to drive back to Spahn Ranch, and that Father P. visited Manson soon after in Los Angeles.*

This description of the Final Church's medieval trial reminds me very much of the Mouse's "long tale/tail" from Alice's Adventures in Wonderland:

"Fury said to

a mouse, That

he met in the

house, "Let

us both go

to law:

will prosecute you.—

Come, I'll

take no denial: We

must have

the trial:

For really

This morn-

ing I've

nothing

to do."

Said the

mouse to

the cur,

"Such a

trial, dear

sir, With

no jury

or judge,

would

be wast-

ing our

breath."

"I'll be

judge,

I'll be

jury,"

Said

Cun-

ning

old

Fury;

I’ll try

the

whole

cause,

and

con-

demn

you to

death.”

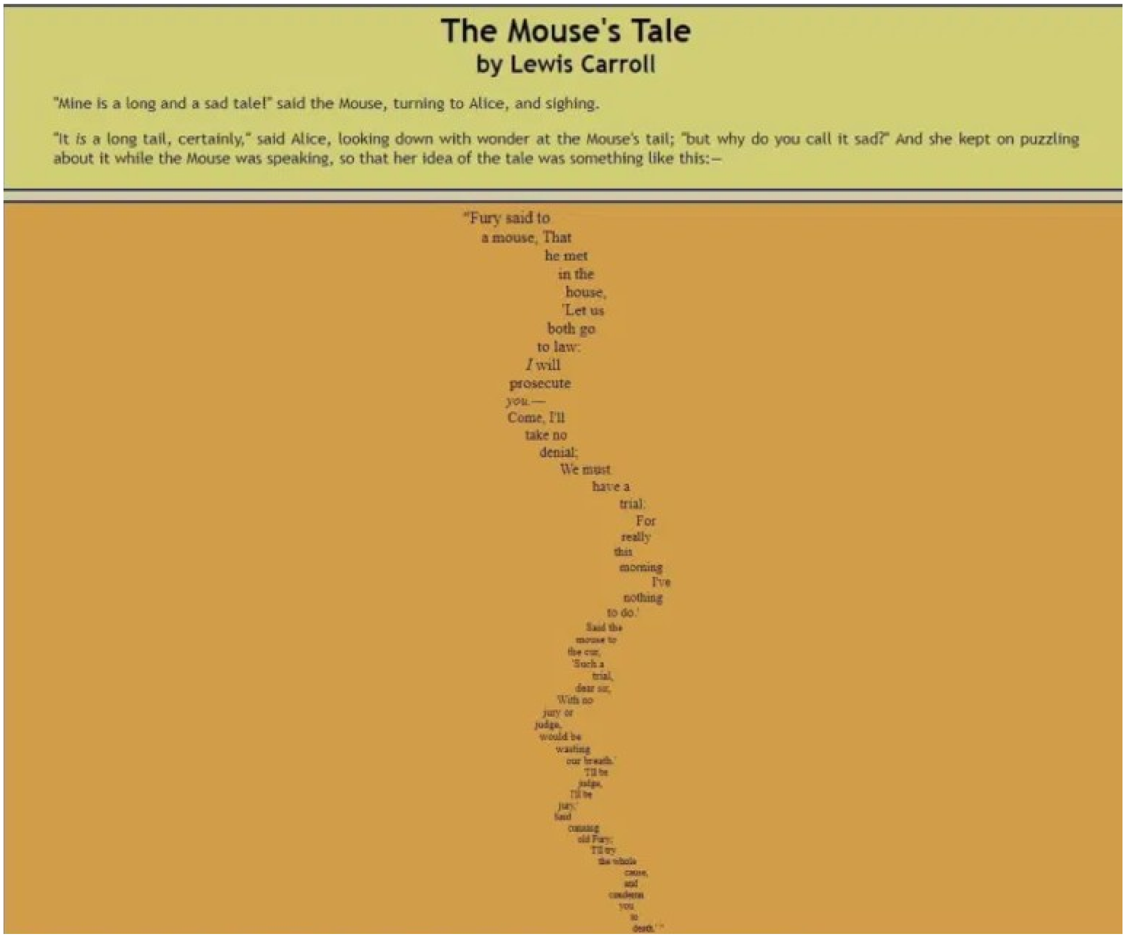

The Mouse's Tale

by Lewis Carroll

"Mine is a long and a sad tale!" said the Mouse, turning to Alice, and sighing.

"It *is* a long tail, certainly," said Alice, looking down with wonder at the Mouse's tail; "but why do you call it sad?" And she kept on puzzling about it while the Mouse was speaking, so that her idea of the tale was something like this:—

"Fury said to
a mouse, That
he met
in the
house,
'Let us
both go
to law:
I will
prosecute
you.—
Come, I'll
take no
denial;
We must
have a
trial:
For
really
this
morning
I've
nothing
to do.'
Said the
mouse to
the cur,
'Such a
trial,
dear sir,
With no
jury or
judge,
would be
wasting
our breath.'
'I'll be
judge,
I'll be
jury,'
Said
cunning
old Fury;
'I'll try
the whole
cause,
and
condemn
you
to
death.'"

Perhaps it was this experience with jurisprudence, along with all of his other experiences with state and federal courtrooms throughout his life, that made Manson feel comfortable representing himself for part of the Tate-LaBianca trial.

Later in his book, Gorightly tells us about a rash of crimes in the Santa Cruz, California area that local police blame on an alleged Process "splinter group" called "the Four P Movement." To this group were attributed the deaths of several animals, decapitated, skinned, and drained of blood. Informants reported to them witnessing the group perform "ritual executions," eating a human heart, and, as Gorightly puts it, "initiation rituals where neophytes were forced to eat the entrails of an animal while its heart was still beating."

Police first became alarmed when skinned and blood-drained dogs were found by the local animal shelter, and a man reported to police seeing “hippies” who were dancing around five skinned dead dogs on the hood of a car. Then a man who had himself been arrested on a murder charge came forward complaining of being addicted to cannibalism. He carried around a human finger bone that he kept in a leather pouch. He identified the Four P cult as his co-conspirators in murder, and said that they had a portable crematorium for disposing of the leftovers of their rituals.

The most interesting aspect of all this is that the leader of this group was referred to by a ritual title that Charles Manson is known to have used as well: “Grand Chingon.” In Mexico, *chignon* is a slang term for someone or something that is cool, deft, slick, etc. The Grand Chingon of Four P was said to be a “prosperous L.A. businessman,” Gorightly reports.

While this person was someone other than Manson, another seeming Process “splinter group” that could very well have been enmeshed with the Manson Family, so as to at one point have conceivably been the same thing, is the Kirke Order of Dog Blood. Gorightly says that their leader was a red-haired English woman whom they venerated as an incarnation of the goddess Circe (or Kirke). Gorightly. Remember, she’s the one who turned the crewmen of Odysseus’ ship into pigs with magic, after intoxicating them with sex and drugs, and then tried to kill them when they wanted to leave. Does this explain why the Manson Family’s victims were labeled “pigs”?

Adam Gorightly thinks that the woman known to the Dog Blood group as Circe might have been Mary Ann MacLean of the Process Church. He mentions a “retired captain Dale Griffis of the Tiffin, Ohio police department,” who concluded the same thing. In Los Angeles, and in Ventura County, the Dog Blood group were holding ceremonies every new and full moon where, Gorightly says, “black dogs, black cats, black roosters and goats” were sacrificed, and the blood was consumed. These rites were, according to researcher Ed Sanders, filmed. This may connect to the alleged Manson Family home movie of a dog sacrifice that former member “White Rabbit” claims to have “stolen” from his brethren.

The Kirke Order of Dog Blood “went underground” in the early 1970s, but Circe is believed to have re-emerged mid-decade as the owner of an occult supply store in Toledo, Ohio. As Adam Gorightly describes it: This mysterious ‘Circe’ also bought property adjacent to a location reputed as being a site where Satanic rituals involving human sacrifice were performed. In 1985, law enforcement officials dug up the site, discovering ritualistic paraphernalia, although no evidence of murder was uncovered. Shortly before the police raid, the occult shop in Toledo closed and ‘Circe’ disappeared.

As for the actual Process Church, the leaders fell out with each other in 1974, after Robert DeGrimston himself was kicked out by the others. This would fit with the timeline, with Dog Blood going underground during the Process collapse, and MaryAnn/Circe then moving to Ohio in the mid-70s. MaryAnn attempted to reform the Process as the allegedly Christian “Foundation Church of the Millennium,” which was later still renamed again to “Foundation Faith of God.” The remnants of this group also began a—*gasp!—dog sanctuary* called “Best Friends,” now located in Utah. This organization is featured—with no reference to its dubious pedigree—on an Animal Planet series that has run into multiple seasons.

Chillingly, an anonymous internet forum poster has noted a remarkable similarity between the logo for “Best Friends” and the logo for an Adult Swim cartoon show called “Mr. Pickles.” (https://archive.4plebs.org/x/thread/19937050/) This program is about a pet dog who kills, tortures, and dismembers people and animals. He commits sex acts with people, and various animal species, or with their dead bodies, regularly. This is often done in an overtly Satanic ritual setting, and he frequently conjures demons from Hell into visible appearance. He has a hidden lair beneath his house where he keeps his victims, living and dead. But almost everyone who knows Mr. Pickles, including his own family, just thinks he’s a normal dog, except for one old man whom nobody else believes.

MR PICKLES
GOOD BOY
666

Best Friends ANIMAL SOCIETY
PRESENTS
Strut
YOUR MUTT

[adult swim]
MR. PICKLES

MR. PICKLES
666
GOOD BOY
[adult swim]

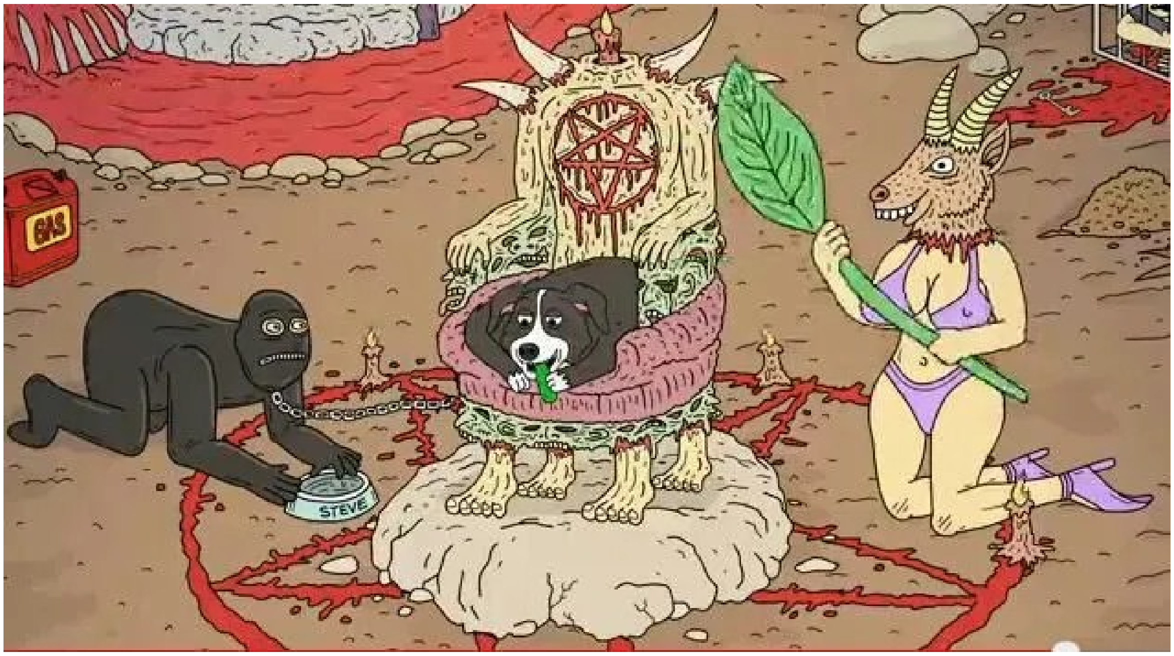

https://i0.wp.com/www.tracytwyman.com/plusultra/wp-content/uploads/2018/10/tumblr_nct9x91adE1tmpaf1o1_500.gif

https://i1.wp.com/www.tracytwyman.com/plusultra/wp-content/uploads/2018/10/e90a8c458ed5a0a62394a17cc2fda930.gif

I cannot help but think of those dead boys in the barrels at the Pere Fouttard's butcher shop, pickled in brine, waiting to chopped up and served as pork to St. Nicholas.

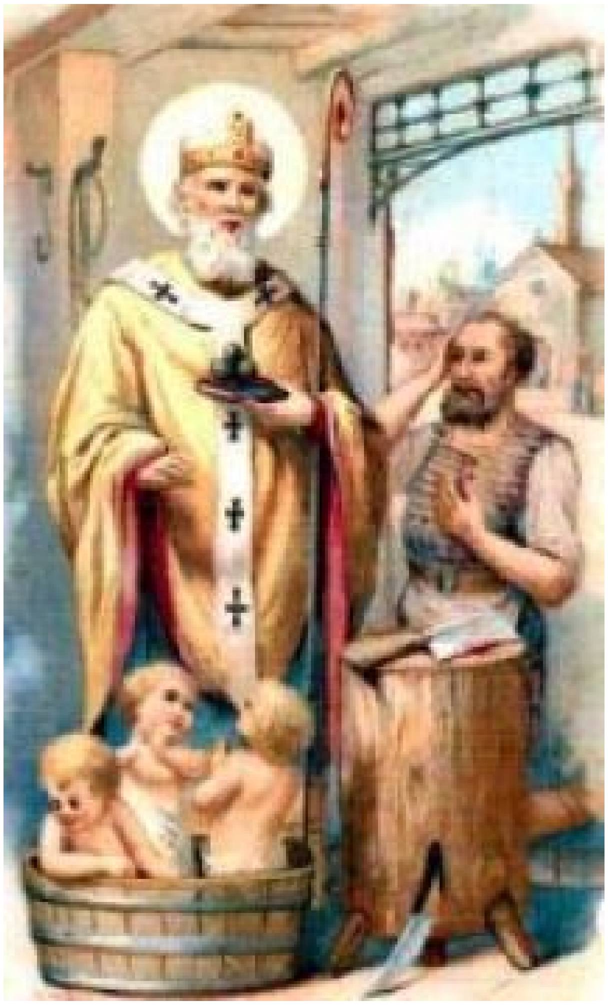

St. Nicholas and the

Three Boys in the Barrel

of Brine

Finally, yet another California cult that seems to have been enmeshed with both the Manson Family and the Process Church is the “Solar Lodge of the O.T.O.,” which may have been, at that time, a “clandestine” or “irregular” lodge, i.e., not officially sanctioned by the main body of the O.T.O. As Adam Gorightly tells it:

> *The Solar Lodge of the O.T.O. was started in late 1966 by Mrs. Georgina ‘Jean’ Brayton, and operated right outside the gates of the USC campus via a network of cult-houses. Brayton—like Manson—used psychological pressure to wield control over her flock, which was known for its indulgence in sadomasochism, drug dealing, blood drinking and child abuse. Her husband, Richard Brayton—a philosophy instructor at USC—was also a member of the group.*
>
> *One of the favorite activities of the Solar Lodge was to send ‘bad vibes’ into Watts in the hopes of erupting a race riot. Like Manson, the Solar Lodge believed that an apocalyptic race war was imminent, and made plans to escape the forthcoming Helter Skelter high weirdness by retreating into the desert. The Solar Lodge was fond of interpreting Beatles’ lyrics, in as much as they portended to the forthcoming race riots that would bring mankind to its collective knees and usher in the epoch of a New Aeon ala Manson.*

Gorightly says that it was Brayton, most likely, who owned what was termed “the Spiral Staircase House,” where Manson met several “occult bigshots.” Brayton also owned another house in Los Angeles where Manson is said to have attended chicken sacrifice rituals. Gorightly states:

> *Because of her access to large quantities of drugs—and her willingness to dispense them willy-nilly—Brayton was able to attract young hippie types to her cult, then use the unwitting dope-heads in perverse sex rituals, while they lumbered in a confused and drugged-out state. Brayton used LSD to obtain highly personal information from her initiates, which she would employ later as a form of extortion. Paul Watkins claimed that Manson used acid in this same manner.*

> *Like the Kirke Order of Dog Blood, the Solar Lodge was fond of killing and draining the blood from animals in rituals (dogs, cats, and chickens). The blood would be poured all over the congregants as they engaged in sex orgies beneath these crimson altars of pain. The Manson Family were said to utilize dog blood in exactly the same way. Susan Atkins said that they drank it as an aphrodisiac.*

According to Adam Gorightly, author Ed Sanders confirmed from five different sources that Manson was directly involved with the Solar Lodge. But it appears that their black sun was setting just as the Manson Family experiment was coming to a climax. On July 26, 1969, the same day that Bobby Beausoleil and the Manson girls were murdering Gary Hinman for selling them "bad mescaline," some ranchers who had come to buy a horse being sold at the Solar Lodge's desert ranch noticed a six-year-old boy locked in a 6' by 6' crate, chained to the ground. Also in there was a tin can filled with feces, a dirty plate, a dirty wash tub, and a plastic jug of water. It was 110 degrees. He had been in there for 56 days.

The boy had been imprisoned, after having his fingers deliberately burnt with matches, as a punishment for having started a fire that burnt down their "temple." Gorightly tells us, "Brayton [had] even proposed the idea of dosing the child with LSD, then setting the crate on fire with just enough chain on Anthony's leash to allow him to crawl away from the fingers of licking flames."

Amazingly, the boy's father, cult member James Gibbons, was a county probation officer at the Gonzales Work Camp in Malibu. A dead body—expired from "an overdose of jimson weed"—was also found near the property. Jean Brayton and several other cult members went on trial in October, but Brayton fled to Argentina before she was convicted.

So is it possible that the "prominent L.A. businessman" who was the "Grand Chingon" of the "Four P Movement" was Leno LaBianca? Though at trial the Manson girls played it like the LaBianca murders were a random hit, Charles admits that he and Leno had business together. Leno's ex-wife Alice LaBianca said that they Manson and Leno had once had a fight over something, and when cleaning Leno's house after the murders, discovered a "little black book" that apparently belonged to Manson. As Gorightly tells us:

> *There has been much to-do made about a 'little black book' Manson allegedly asked Leno LaBianca to fork over… [which] many investigators to speculate about a mafia 'hit' contract taken out on LaBianca.(Manson confirmed that he had indeed asked LaBianca for this black book on an edition of the tabloid TV program Hard Copy.) When Realist editor Paul Krassner asked Manson about the little black book, Charlie wrote: 'The black book was what CIA and mob marker players had, Hollywood park (race track) and numbers rackets to move into the governor's office legally.'*
>
> *…It is also known that at the time leading up to his death, Leno's phone was tapped.*
>
> *…[LaBianca murder detectives… learned that he owned nine thoroughbred race horses, and was a chronic gambler, visiting race tracks nearly every day, and betting high stakes. According to a police report, Leno was a '… chronic gambler…' with a '…$500.00 a day habit…' At the time of his death—it has been alleged—Leno was in debt to the tune of $30,000 to Frankie Carbo's organization. (Incidentally, Manson had previously hung around with mobster Carbo in prison. As he later admitted to Geraldo Rivera: 'I knew Frankie Carbo. Frankie Carbo knew Leno LaBianca.") Leno bet heavily in Las Vegas, as well, and apparently part of the debt he owed to the mob was from high stakes poker. Frankie Carbo was a known associate of … Frank Costello….*

As it turns out, Charles was, according to Adam Gorightly, "apprenticed" to Mafioso Frank Costello, boss of the Luciano crime family, when they were both staying in the same penitentiary in Chillicothe, Ohio in the 1950s. "Charlie's admiration for Costello was boundless," Gorightly states.

Frank Costello

At the time, Costello was a household name, having just testified before the US Senate, and it was said that "[n]obody in New York City can be made a judge without Costello's consent." Costello was the person upon whom the character and mannerisms of Vito Corleone in *The Godfather* were based. Ironically, this is the character played by Marlon Brando, who I suggested earlier might have hired Charles Manson as a prostitute.

So *that* is who young Manson was "apprenticed" to at the start of his criminal career! If Costello stayed in contact with him after prison, and Charlie was working for the mob, that would easily explain how he was able to build up such a massive criminal empire in California, servicing rich, famous, and powerful clientele. Costello is, besides Nancy Sinatra, yet another direct link between Charles Manson and Frank Sinatra. Costello was a cousin of Sinatra's mafia godfather Willie Moretti, and was said by an FBI informant to have been the man who "brought up" young Sinatra into the hierarchy of the organization. It seems, from that context of the conversation that this tidbit came from, safe to infer that Sinatra was "apprenticed" to Costello, just like Manson.

Now let us think about what Sinatra may have known about Roman Polanski and the people who surrounded him. One of the victims at the Tate house was Jay Sebring, Sharon's former boyfriend, whom she'd dumped for Polanski but kept in the friendzone. Sebring was described by Vincent Bugliosi as the most important and successful hairdresser in the world. He had many Hollywood clients, and Frank Sinatra was among them, as was Peter Lawford, who assisted Frank, reportedly, in the rape of Monroe that fateful weekend (even though Frank already hated him). Tate had also acted in the film *The Wrecking Crew* with Dean Martin.

So Sinatra would have had several sources of information about Tate and, more importantly, about Polanski, the man who had filmed Frank's wife naked and ruined his marriage. Therefore, Sinatra most likely knew that Polanski's marriage to Tate was, on his end at least, entirely open. Polanski was cheating on his pregnant wife in London with Michelle Philips when his wife and unborn baby were at home being murdered. Today, in 2018, Polanski stands accused of at least four separate child rape incidents with different victims, one of which he admits to, and in which he utilized a ruffie, just like what happened to Rosemary in the movie.

Frank was no fool. It takes a scumbag to know a scumbag, and Frank knew exactly what Polanski was likely to do with his wife. There is undoubtedly so much more to the story that we've never heard.

Sebring, we know, was notoriously obsessed with filming young girls being whipped. He would have a different girl every night, and insist on doing the same thing with each of them. In the book *Helter Skelter*, Bugliosi portrays Sebring as the only one among the group with this proclivity, but that wasn't the case at all. According to many witnesses (including Dennis Hopper, who mentioned it to the press at the time of the murders), these whippings often took place in front of a large crowd, usually in the Tate residence, with others participating in the beatings and sex as well. The word on the street was that orgies featuring sadistic tortures occurred frequently at that house, fueled by massive amounts of drugs.

We have every reason to believe that the Manson Family members got a taste of what was going on there, though Adam Gorightly seems to think that the scene may have been too hardcore even for them. Perhaps he is suggesting that this may have been part of *what turned them so hardcore in the first place*. As he puts it:

> *Charlie and the girls … found themselves invited to private parties in Beverly Hills, Malibu, and other exclusive areas. Admittedly, the Manson bunch had long before unshackled themselves of sexual inhibitions, but whips, chains, torture, and other assorted weirdness to which Charlie and his girls were exposed at these wild parties—via Hollywood's 'Beautiful People'—were far-removed from the 'innocent' sexual experimentation of which they'd become accustomed. The same can be said for the type of drugs being used at these parties, as a lot of the movie people they encountered were shooting up heroin, smoking opium, and snorting coke, which was vastly different from the pot and acid diet that'd been a mainstay in The Manson Family drug menu.*
>
> *…It's interesting to note that whenever Charlie talks about this S&M scene, there is a certain amount of bitterness in his tone, indicating that something ugly might have gone down during this period; something, perhaps, that even embarrassed or humiliated Charlie, or one or more of his girls. It should also be noted that Jay Sebring was himself a prominent member of this kinky Hollywood whips and chains crowd, and from this we can only speculate that somewhere along the line he might have crossed paths with—and pissed off—Manson.*

A theory often repeated about the Manson murders is that someone from the Manson crew sold someone at the Tate residence some bad drugs, and was punished by being chosen as the victim for this abuse. After one of his agents was humiliated on camera this way, the hypothesis goes, Manson decided to get revenge. It fits in a way, because the Manson girls admit to being involved in another murder just a few days earlier, in which they killed a man, Gary Hinman, for selling them $2000 of "bad mescaline." Also, a drug dealer was beaten at the Tate house for selling Jay Sebring exactly $2000 worth of "bad mescaline" just a few days before the murder.

So perhaps this "bad mescaline" was accidentally sold to Sebring by the Manson Family, resulting in the beating of the courier, thus motivating Manson to want to kill both the people who did the beating and the person who provided the bogus drugs that caused the problem in the first place. What this "bad mescaline" might have actually been is an interesting question in itself that I will explore later on in this essay. As Dennis Hopper told the *Los Angeles Times*:

> *They had fallen into sadism and masochism and bestiality – and they recorded it all on videotape, too. The LA police told me this. I know that three days before they were killed twenty-five people were invited to that house for a mass-whipping of a dealer from Sunset Strip who'd given them bad dope.*

After the Tate murders, the participants of these orgies must have been anxious to secure all of these recordings before police found them. Reportedly, that is the case. As Adam Gorightly tells us:

> *During the Tate-LaBianca trial, defense lawyers were approached by the representative of a 'rising movie actress' who had apparently left a role of undeveloped film of herself in compromising positions at the Polanski residence, and was inquiring if Family members had the film in their possession. Many years after the Tate/LaBianca murders, Manson told an interviewer, 'Don't you think those people deserved to die? ... They were involved in kiddie porn.'*

I am not sure what age Manson considered the cut-off for good taste, as he himself is said to have “penetrated” at least one “little girl” at a Family orgy (according to DiDi Landsbury). Also, he is known to have not spared children from his heinous murder plots. A man named Juan Flynn stated that in 1969, Manson tried numerous times to get him to, as Adam Gorightly describes it, “enter houses, tie up the occupants, force feed them acid, kill [the] children in front of [their] parents], and then kill the parents as they were freaking out.” So I am inclined to think that the motivation for the Tate murders was not moral outrage. According to Manson, as paraphrased by Peter Levenda, it couldn’t really be this simple. He writes:

> *Manson himself has said that the real motive behind the Tate killings would never be revealed (by him), but that it was so explosive it would rock the establishment. One tends to believe Manson in this instance, perhaps because of his personal code of honor which stipulates that one never rats or informs on another criminal. [Emphasis mine.]*

Manson, then, remains a hero to the criminal element that he worked with, because he never spilled the beans. To this day, there is a little-known and loosely-woven circle of artists and musicians who produce material filled with insider references to specific symbols and terminology used by the Manson Family, the Process Church, the Solar Lodge, and the Kirke Order of Dog Blood. The bands in question each have members who can be directly tied to the original cast of characters in this story. These include Coil, Throbbing Gristle, Psychic TV, Current 93, Skinny Puppy, and many others.

Current 93 - Beausoleil (https://youtu.be/1ltn-JpTrZY)

The most successful artist that I would put on this list is Marilyn Manson. He belongs there because of his association with the Church of Satan, and with some of the groups I have just mentioned. Then, of course, there’s his stage name.

The Church of Satan is tied to the Manson milieu for several reasons. One is that

Manson Family member and murderer Susan Atkins was friends with Anton LaVey before she took up with Charlie. She acted for a role in a "Witch's Sabbat" ritual play that he put on in San Francisco. Another Manson Family member and murderer who knew the same set of people was Bobby Beausoleil, who was also friends with Aleister Crowley acolyte and art film director Kenneth Anger.

Beausoleil used to play in the band that eventually got renamed Love. Beausoleil plays Cupid in the movie *Mondo Hollywood*, aka *Hippie Hollywood: The Acid-Blasting Freaks*. Sebring and his hair salon are featured in the film as well. Gary Hinman was also friends with Dennis Wilson, and Wilson was friends with Beausoleil. Beausoleil and Manson girl Gypsy were both in the movie *Ramrodder*, and Beausoleil was paid to build teepees for the set. He, like Manson, was friends with Dennis Wilson, who also knew Beausoleil's eventual murder victim Gary Hinman pretty well.

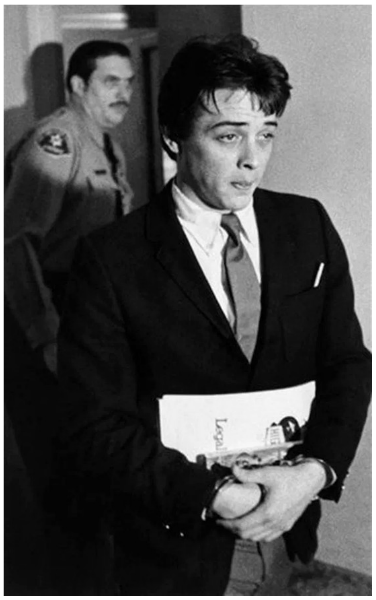

Bobbby Beausoleil

Kenneth Anger had originally wanted Beausoleil to be an actor in his movie *Lucifer Rising*, and had shot some film with him for this purpose. But due to Beausoleil being in prison for the murder of Hinman, those plans were canceled.

Anger still had Beausoleil do the soundtrack for the flick from his prison cell, which starred Marianne Faithful, and was eventually released in 1980.

Another film by Anger included Anton LaVey as himself, shown leading a Satanic rite that seems to have involved the sacrifice of a cat. It has a soundtrack by Mick Jagger, Marianne Faithful's boyfriend at the time. (Faithful, by the way, is a direct descendant of Leopold von Sacher-Masoch, the novelist that the term "masochism" refers to). Beausoleil knew LaVey also, but reportedly thought he was a "fucking asshole."

PROCESS
Three
JAGGER?
MINDBENDING

The Church of Satan is another group of people whose connections to the Rat Pack, and to the cults in California that we've covered here, need to be examined. Thanks to the tendency of Anton LaVey to inflate his own importance in all of his stories, the veracity of most of the rumors about him is suspect, although the conspiracy research community is anxious to believe them. David Icke, for instance, wrote in his book *The Biggest Secret* that:

> *…LaVey… found Marilyn Monroe working in the strip clubs and used his contacts to make her a movie star. He has had connections with some of the biggest names in business, politics and entertainment, including President John F. Kennedy, Frank Sinatra, Sammy Davis, Jr., Peter Lawford, and Jayne Mansfield. Sammy Davis was an early member of LaVey's Church of Satan and Jayne Mansfield was a high priestess.*

Much of this is correct, but not necessarily all of it. I don't think that Anton LaVey could be held responsible for the success of Marilyn Monroe in any way. But I can see how he and some others might have made that claim about another actress who is widely acknowledged to have been utilizing Monroe's iconic look: Jayne Mansfield. She was far more enmeshed in the LaVey circle, and he was far more well-positioned to have exerted influence for her at the time that he knew her, with his Church having been publicly established at that point, than he would have been at the time that Monroe was getting her start.

I wouldn't take LaVey's claims to have "helped" anyone's career seriously, but they definitely knew each other well, and I would even say that he held a significant influence over her. She was indeed a High Priestess in his church. Perhaps he liked to take credit for her success. He also liked to take credit for her death as the inevitable result of her having not taken his advice about who not to have sex with. The story behind it is amazingly relevant to our inquiry, as it involves New Orleans, the JFK assassination, black magic, Marilyn Monroe's grave, and yet another mind-controlled sex slave actress being drugged and raped on camera for blackmail purposes.

Mansfield was dating a lawyer from New Orleans named Sam Brody, whom Adam Gorightly says was, at the time, "working as an investigator for New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison's probe into the JFK assassination." Gorightly reports that Brody "was on his way to New Orleans to resume work with Garrison" when he and Mansfield both died in a car crash. I'll quote Gorightly at length here:

> *As the story goes, bad blood between LaVey and Brody began boiling in '66, when Mansfield was initiated as a high priestess into the Church of Satan. It was at this time that LaVey escorted the blonde bombshell through his home, "the First Satanic Church of the Devil," showing her certain candles on a ceremonial altar which LaVey claimed contained the power of death, and would bring a curse upon anybody foolhardy enough to touch them. Sam Brody—not at all enamored with Jayne's fondness for the Black Pope—subsequently lit the forbidden candles. LaVey became enraged at this blatant indiscretion, proclaiming that Satan himself had cursed Brody, and that he would be dead within the course of a year. LaVey was deadly serious, but Brody just yukked it up, thinking the whole thing one great, big joke. LaVey called Mansfield into a back room and darkly prophesied that Brody would meet his death in [after] not one, but a succession of crashes[,] and that everyone else in his company would likewise perish. LaVey demanded that Mansfield rid herself of Brody immediately. Mansfield, however, could not easily separate herself from a man who allegedly exerted control over the comely actress by way of blackmail and physical abuse. At the same time, Mansfield began to publicly promote the Church of Satan.*
>
> *Right on cue, the series of prophesied car crashes began, as Mansfield got caught up in a vicious triangle pitting the strong wills of Brody and LaVey against one another.* ***Jayne desperately wanted out of her doomed relationship with Brody, but he maintained control through heavy-handed tactics, such as slipping Jayne a mickie (sic) and snapping nudie photos of her in compromising positions. Brody threatened to turn these photos over to the courts, as well as releasing them to the scandal sheets to prove Mansfield was an unfit mother.*** *[Emphasis added.]*

The final car crash took place on June 28, 1967. This time they both died, and Mansfield was actually decapitated. LaVey had a bit more spookiness to add to the story, and it involves Marilyn Monroe. Gorightly quotes LaVey describing thusly his actions the night before Mansfield's death:

> *I was in my den, clipping a picture out of the newspaper of myself placing flowers on the grave of Marilyn Monroe. And when I turned the page over, I saw there'd been a picture of Mansfield on the other side, and I… I'd cut straight across her neckline.*

There are several stories in the Gorightly book that I suspect are tainted by LaVey's tendency to inflate his own importance. This is how I feel about the claim that Anton LaVey "played" the Devil in *Rosemary's Baby*. This role is credited to Clay Tanner on Wikipedia, and is uncredited at the end of the film itself. Whoever he is, he looks nothing like LaVey, nor is there anyone who looks like LaVey in the film. The Roman Castavet character sure looks a lot like Michael Aquino does now, and I suspect that's deliberate on Aquino's part. But what is quite interesting is that the date which Rosemary marks for her calendar as the expected delivery date for her baby is June 28, 1966. Therefore, Jayne Mansfield died on the one-year anniversary of this date.

Even though I don't necessarily believe the story, I will quote Gorightly's account of the filming of the rape scene in *Rosemary's Baby*:

> *…When she [was] ready, the husband [moved] away to allow the Devil—portrayed by lascivious LaVey—to come forward and violate her. While the coven of witches chanted from the sidelines, LaVey mounted Rosemary and started going to town.*
>
> *…It was a difficult scene to shoot, in which Polanski had given Mia a detailed briefing. He wanted her every emotion to come through…. Throughout, Polanski and his crew squatted as close as they could to Mia without being shot, as she fought through the scene with LaVey on top of her. It required several takes before Polanski was satisfied with the final product. Once finished, LaVey got up and told Mia what a pleasure it had been working with her. Mia looked on in astonishment, and would recount the experience for some time afterward.*

That’s an extremely detailed account. Amazingly, it seems that the director now says LaVey was not even there, although I don’t know if he has denied “consulting” with LaVey in some way. He certainly consulted “King of the Witches” Alex Sanders in England when he was shooting *Eye of the Devil* a few years earlier with Sharon Tate, and some say Sharon was formerly initiated into a Wiccan coven at that point. So, it doesn’t sound impossible that LaVey was there on the set of Rosemary’s Baby.

Gorightly makes another interesting observation about the aftermath of this film. Citing Doreen Valiente’s *Witchcraft Past and Present*, he tells us:

> *Valiente claimed that the film had angered some Satanic groups for revealing occult secrets that they felt should have remained hidden from the mass of society and, because of this, Polanski received threats against himself and Sharon after the film’s release….*
>
> *After the Tate murders, stories began circulating that LaVey and Polanski—during the filming of Rosemary’s Baby—had a falling-out over dinner one night, and that LaVey cast a curse on the young director. In response, Polanski supposedly laughed in the Black Pope’s face. Looking for a suitable way to teach his little Polish adversary a lesson, rumor has it LaVey then retaliated in the form of the Manson Family murders, paying back Polanski several-fold for his transgression.*

The connection between Sammy Davis, Jr. and the Church of Satan is legendary as well. He was most definitely a literal card-carrying member, and his enthusiasm for the hokey religion is reflected in the TV series he attempted to launch, “Poor Devil,” for which he made a pilot. In this one and only episode, Davis plays a demon tasked with convincing a San Francisco office clerk to sell his soul to the Devil (played by Christopher Lee). The demon performs magic tricks using the “Satanic horns” hand signal, and the Church of Satan’s headquarters in San Francisco is even mentioned in the dialogue.

Starring as the
POOR DEVIL

Sammy Davis Jr. As the Poor Devil (Image added by editor)

Poor Devil (1973) (https://youtu.be/Xw4okTJpE1k)

In his autobiography, *Why Me?*, Davis recounted meeting Jay Sebring (who, he said, had always been “a little weird”) at an “orgy” led by a Satanic “coven.” During this event, there was a mock “virgin sacrifice.” At the end, Sebring tried to get Davis to visit a dungeon he had constructed in his basement that was full of “real antique” torture equipment, but Davis declined.

Davis met Anton LaVey shortly after this, and joined his church. He kept remained a member for many years, but broke up with the church after an unspeakably disturbing event occurred at a “coven” that “wasn’t quite fun and games.” He never did elaborate on what he meant by this.

Several decades ago, I was personally acquainted with quite a few people in what remained of the Church of Satan milieu after Anton LaVey's death. This was mainly because of some musicians, magazine editors, and book publishers that I was friends with at the time. Most of them, like Anton himself, were very proud and rather obsessed with the Church of Satan's association with the Manson Family. Marilyn Manson, also a member of the Church who knew LaVey personally, clearly has his own preoccupation with the subject. I mentioned before that he has carved the word "WAR" into his stomach, just like the Manson girls did to one of their victims, Leno LaBianca, and that this carving was emulated by Lil Uzi Vert in tattoo form.

I also told you that he purchased a necklace featuring a figure of Marilyn Manson wearing his famous Mickey Mouse hat, for which he paid over $200,000. The Mickey Mouse hat on the necklace is marked with the number 2. This is a little joke that only serious students of Charles Manson lore would recognize.

You see, "Manson II" was the nickname given to a certain hitman who also worked for the Process at the same time as Manson, and knew him personally. Another code name used to refer to this same person was "Mickey Mouse," as referenced in Maury Terry's *The Ultimate Evil*.

Amazingly, the house where the LaBiancas lived and were murdered by the Manson Family was once owned by Walt Disney personally. The very night that they were murdered, Disneyland launched a new ride called "The Haunted House."

Now remember, there was another former associate of the Church of Satan, Lieutenant Colonel Michael Aquino, who had that same nickname. However, I've never heard him referred to as a hitman before. He was working for Army Intelligence at the Presidio in San Francisco at the time of these murders. At the very same time, Sharon Tate's father, Colonel Paul Tate, was also working for Army Intelligence in San Francisco, at Fort Baker, which is considered a "subpost" of the Presidio. (It is also connected to nearby Fort Barry via a half-mile tunnel.)

The likelihood that Col. Tate and Lt. Col. Aquino knew each other seems high. If nothing else, even if they weren't often passing each other in the break room, Tate would have surely heard about the weird Satanist dude with the stupid haircut. You would think that after his daughter was murdered, he would have requested a file on the man. But as far as I know, the Army's internal review of Aquino's Temple of Set wasn't written until after Paul Vallely wrote *From Psy-Ops to MindWar* with him in 1980. It was Vallely himself who wrote the internal review, after sending in a spy into the Temple of Set to gain information. Vallely claims he was unaware of his writing partner's Satanic inclinations before this time. According to Michael Aquino, though, that wasn't true. As Constance Cumbey explains on a blog post written on 2015:

Very simply, on page 197 of his very newest book, *Extreme Prejudice*, a book that paints the Temple of Set and Church of Satan as very innocent entities up against obviously evil and prejudiced Christians, he claims that his Satanism was well known to all in the military from the very inception of his Commissioning in 1968, 18 years before I wrote my newsletter on him and General Vallely. That was also 12 years before General (then Colonel) Vallely commissioned the Psyop paper for "new and innovative ideas"—from what they had to know was a most unnerving source.

Regarding Col. Tate, though, he did, *after* his daughter's murder, don a "hippie disguise" and "infiltrate" hippie groups in Southern California for months, looking for clues about who might have done the murders. The likelihood that he would have encountered Aquino through this route seems high as well.

Col. Paul Tate

Few have mentioned yet that at the time of the murders, there was already a high-profile serial killer murdering people in the San Francisco area: the Zodiac. His murders spanned from 1968 through 1971. Notably, one of his victims was cab driver Paul Stine, shot to death in his car on Cherry Street in Presidio Heights on October 11, 1969: just a month before the Tate/LaBianca killings. Witnesses saw the killer "walking away towards the Presidio, one block to the north." Zodiac has never been caught, and I don't see any reason to presume that he isn't part of the same team of Satanist hit men working for the Process, or one of its related entities.

It definitely seems like there is more going on here than what has ever been explained to the public. It's the subject of rumor, innuendo, and inside jokes made by what remains of the social group that Manson was a part of. The most explosive secret that I think they all keep to this day is alluded to with the stage name "Marilyn Manson." It forever links the Charles Manson murders with the earlier death of Marilyn Monroe. That is no accident, as we now know. It is a token of the artist's inside knowledge about the link between the two events. That link, I believe, is Frank Sinatra.

The cut "mOBSCENE" from Marilyn Manson's *Golden Age of Grotesque* is, I think, a reference to Frank Sinatra and Sam Giancana having themselves filmed raping Marilyn Monroe. Marilyn Manson also hints about it in his video for "Coma

White," a song from 1999's *Mechanical Animals*. The video clearly parodies the *JFK* assassination, while the song seems to reference Marilyn Monroe's death. Marilyn Manson plays the president in the motorcade, with Rose McGowan, still his girlfriend at the time, by his side playing the role of Jackie Kennedy. In interviews, Marilyn Manson claimed that the lyrics were about her.

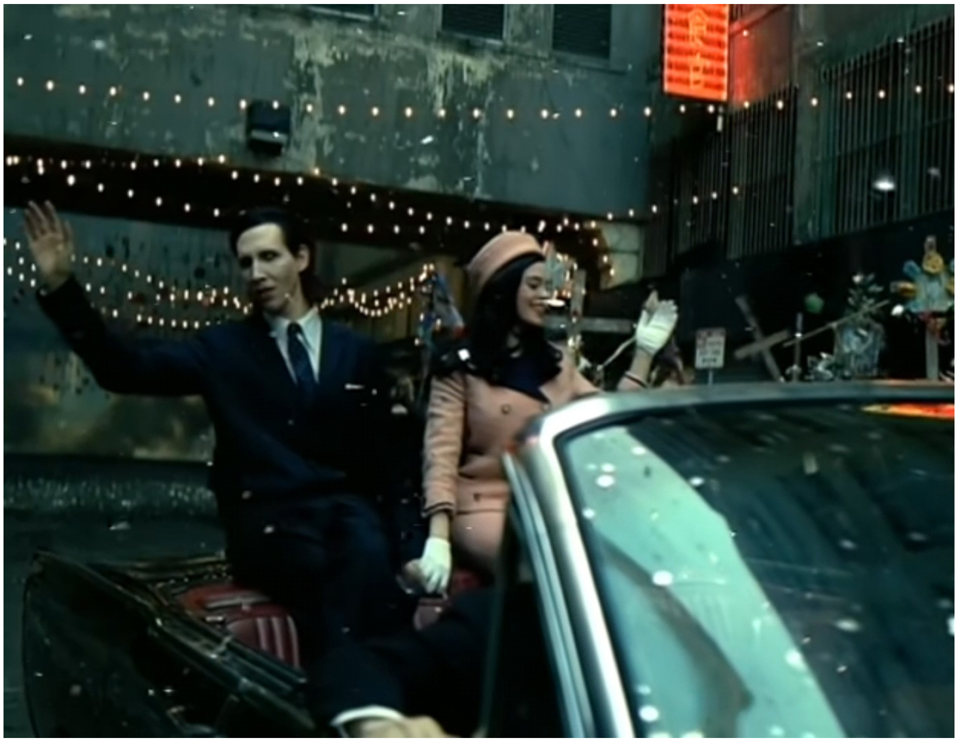

Still from "Coma White" (Image added by editor)

Marilyn Manson - mOBSCENE (Official Music Video)
(https://youtu.be/mdwZV4Y95Nw)

Marilyn Manson - Coma White (Official Music Video)
(https://youtu.be/QQPJYnr48yU)

But judge for yourself. It contains lines like “you were from a perfect world, A world that threw me away today.” Is this Marilyn Monroe, orphan and former child prostitute, speaking to John Kennedy, the spoiled rich kid, as she lay dying? Her drug addiction, “dumb blonde” reputation, and allegedly fatal overdose are also referenced. The chorus goes:

A pill to make you numb

A pill to make you dumb

A pill to make you anybody else

All the drugs in this world

Won't save her from herself

Amazingly, the premiere of the video had to be postponed a bit at the last minute because otherwise it would have coincided with the breaking news of the sudden, unexpected death of John Kennedy Jr. in a plane crash.

I could spend a lifetime analyzing the secrets of alchemy and other occult concepts that are woven into Marilyn Manson’s other works. But there is already a website dedicated to that called *Nachtkabaret* (http://www.nachtkabarett.com/), so I will leave this topic to the experts. But it will suffice to say that Marilyn Manson is entirely aware of the how the rape, torture and murder of children fits in to the secret process of alchemy, which I have written about at length in several books and articles already.

More broadly, the secret is expressed with the entire set of symbols discussed in this essay:

1. The “mouse” (alternatively, “rat”)
2. Mickey Mouse
3. Three circles
4. Saint Nicholas/Mikolaus
5. Macheath Messer
6. The knife
7. The club
8. The “smile” of the shark

We know now about what might have happened between Frank Sinatra and Marilyn Monroe, how fully responsible he may have been for her death, whether it was suicide or murder. Marilyn Manson has broadcasted his knowledge with his choice of stage name. Did Roman Polanski use *Rosemary's Baby* to embed metaphorical allusions to Sinatra's crimes? Was it the ultimate irony for him that Frank Sinatra's new wife was hired to play the part of the victim?

Could the original Ira Levin novel have even contained such a layer of metaphor within it's well-crafted plotline? One of Levin's other novels was *The Stepford Wives*, which might belie inside knowledge about the elite's creation of mind-controlled sex slaves to serve them. Two of the most obvious mind-controlled sex slaves that have worked in the entertainment industry are Marilyn Monroe and Nancy Sinatra.

Consider that in the film, Guy frequently calls Rosemary “Ro” for short. Not “Rose,” but “Ro.” Like *Monroe*, perhaps? Even the chief warlock's name, “Roman,” is strangely the same as the director’s name. Also, when Americans say the word “Roman,” they tend to say “Roh-Mun.” When they say “Monroe,” they usually pronounce it “Mun-Roe”: the same syllables, in a different order.

Consider, too, that one of the Manson Family’s victims in August 1969 was also named Rosemary: Mrs. LaBianca. It may or may not also be relevant that one of the Son of Sam victims was a young lady named Rosemary Keenan. The fact that “rose” is embedded in her name could even. be a hint about John Roselli, a likely suspect for orchestrating Monroe’s murder, if that is indeed what happened.

Recall that Roselli was on the team hired by the CIA to slip Fidel Castro a fatal mickey. Could he have arranged for the same thing to happen to Monroe, who was privy to the secret knowledge about this very assassination plot? Recall that Roselli, whom Sinatra sponsored in the Friar’s Club, is suspected by many of direct involvement in John Kennedy’s death a short time later. He’s the man who kidnapped Sinatra’s “friend” Sammy Davis, Jr. in an effort to force him to stop dating white women. If Sinatra thought Polanski knew about Monroe’s murder, and was using *Rosemary’s Baby* to taunt him about it, Sinatra would have sought revenge for the insult the same way he always did: enlisting his thug friends to hurt his enemy, or at least to threaten him.

Sinatra himself was reportedly one of the next figures on the Manson Family’s hit list, something he seemed to know before it was announced. He reportedly went into hiding as soon as the news of the Tate murders hit. Mia Farrow also laid low, even refusing to come out for Sharon’s funeral because, as Vincent Bugliosi was told by a relative, “Mia is afraid she will be next.” Also, Jay Sebring’s client and friend Steve McQueen, according to Bugliosi, “kept a weapon under the front seat of his sports car” because he was afraid the killers might come for him. It was McQueen who, as soon as he heard news of Sebring’s death, verbally encouraged mutual friends to “clean-up” the drugs from Sebring’s apartment before the police could search it.

That November, before the Manson Family was even suspected in the Tate murders, Susan Atkins reportedly bragged about what they had done to her cell mate, Virginia Graham, supposedly in jail on a prostitution charge. Coincidentally (if you believe in that), Graham, the accused cheap hooker, had met Jay Sebring through a mutual friend at his salon, though she didn't mention this to Atkins. Graham had also been to the Tate residence with another friend of hers, before Polanski and Tate had moved in, back when it was up for rent. She and her friend reportedly considered renting it, and stopped by to look inside the windows. She did mention this to Atkins, but the crazed murderess supposedly did not find this noteworthy, as she did not react in any way.

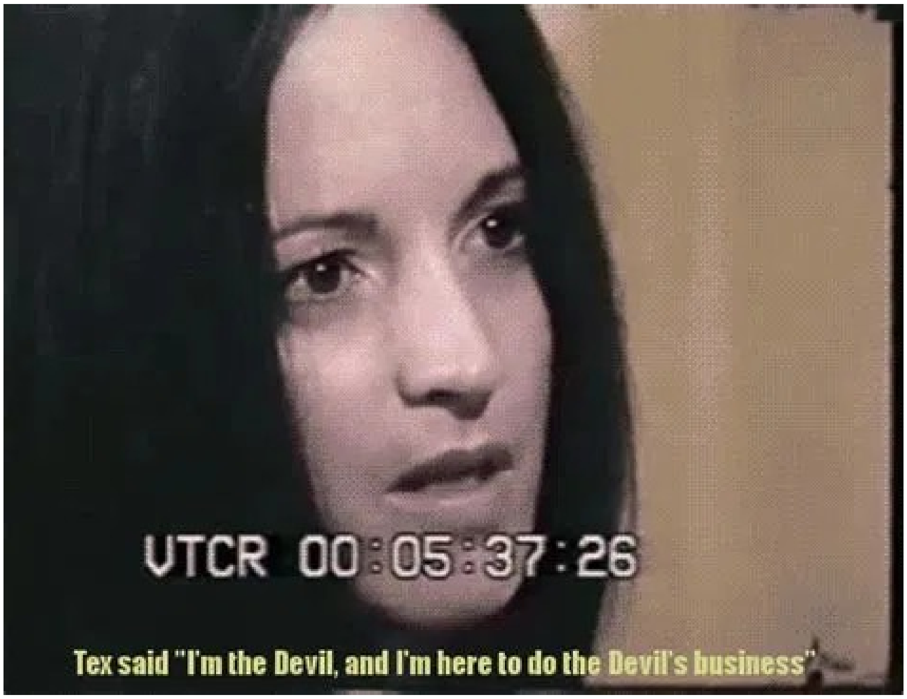
VTCR 00:05:37:26
Tex said "I'm the Devil, and I'm here to do the Devil's business"

Perhaps she suspected, as I do, that she was talking to someone who had been planted there to gain her trust and pump her for information, rather than a cheap hooker who was somehow in the same housing market and social set as millionaire film directors and movie stars.

At any rate, Atkins decided to tell Graham all the juicy details about the Manson Family's future plans. These included gruesome murder hits on, as Bugliosi tells it, “Elizabeth Taylor, Richard Burton, Tom Jones, Steve McQueen, and Frank Sinatra.” Graham later testified about the details at the Tate-LaBianca trial on October 9, 1970. She claimed that Atkins had said they were going to “castrate Richard Burton, boil Steve McQueen in oil, and remove Liz Taylor’s eyes and breasts, then mail them to her ex-husband.” As for Frank Sinatra, Bugliosi reports:

> *[Susan] had something choice for Frank Sinatra… She knew that Frank liked girls. She’d just walk up to his door and knock. Her friends, she said, would be waiting outside. Once inside, they’d hang Sinatra upside down, then, while his own music was playing, skin him alive. After which they’d make purses out of his skin and sell them to hippie shops, ‘So everyone would have a little piece of Frank.’*

The more you know about who Frank Sinatra truly was, the less you regret that none of these plans ever came to fruition.

Maury Terry was told by “a member of the intelligence community” that Manson II was involved with the murder of Hollywood movie mogul and Mafioso Roy Radin in 1983. The man convicted of this murder is named Bill Metzner. Terry reported that Metzner had been spotted by witnesses out in public both with Charles Manson, and with Abigail Folger, who would later become one of the murder victims at the Tate house. Therefore, Terry and others have suggested that Metzner might be Manson II.

I think not, though. The Mickey Mouse symbolism means something specific in this context. I trust that Marilyn Manson and Lil Uzi Vert both know exactly what they’re hinting at with the Mickey Mouse-Manson murder symbolism, and it isn’t about a guy who’s already been caught.

To me, the “WAR” carving on LaBianca’s stomach is reminiscent of the word “WAR”—displayed on the wall of the ritual chamber in the Skull & Bones Society’s headquarters at Yale University (the school that Mia Farrow’s son Ronan attended). In the film *The Skulls*, the fictionalized version of this fraternity is shown using a logo featuring a skull surrounded by spikes. The spikes there look identical to the ones seen on Uzi Vert's Manson II necklace. Also, as I mentioned, the society's initiates are shown being drugged and kidnapped as part of their initiation, with the words "Drink me" placed at the bottom of the poisoned cup, referencing how Alice was ruffied after falling down the rabbit hole. To me, none of this is a coincidence.

LIL UZI VERT
I Dropped $220k to Put MARILYN MANSON AROUND MY NECK

4/17/2017 9:32 AM PDT

AN ONLY MEAN
WAR
ND OF THE WOR
WAR
2.3K
180
EXCLUSIVE DETAILS
THE DOPE, BEAUTIFUL CHAIN
TMZ.com

WAR

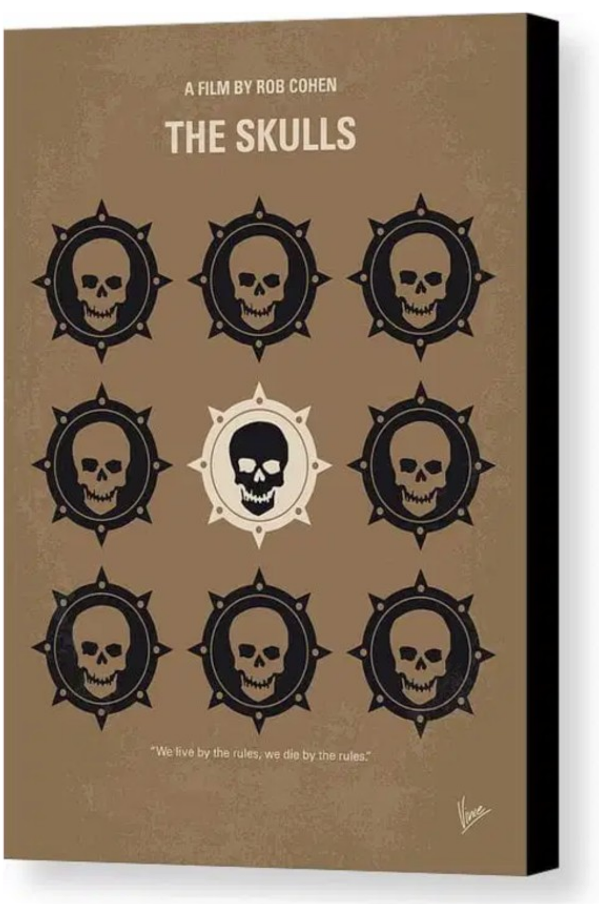
A FILM BY ROB COHEN
THE SKULLS
"We live by the rules, we die by the rules."
Vince

The Skull and Bones Society is also sometimes referred to as “the Brotherhood of Death.” The Process Church considered death, even murder, a sacrament, and aimed to ignite a global conflagration, a third world war to end human civilization. The Skull and Bones meeting house, called “the Tomb,” is where the CIA was created during an informal meeting of Bonesmen. The Process Church works with the CIA. The Skull and Bones Society sponsored both Presidents Bush, one of whom (George Herbert Walker Bush) was involved with John Kennedy’s death, and who later sat as director of the CIA. Both Bushes lead their country, and others, into major wars.

Strangely, a remnant of the Process Church, a publishing company called “Process Media,” hosted an art show recently that included a painting featuring both Aleister Crowley and Barbara Bush. This is a nod to a conspiracy theory which has been making the rounds for years, purporting that Barbara Bush was really the daughter of Aleister Crowley. The theory has merit, and is worth researching. What is so interesting is that this Process-connected company would sponsor such a work. Was this done for tongue-in-cheek ironic humor, or something more?

Perhaps more importantly, two members of the Bush family went far out of their respective ways, and both broke character severely, in order to protect the lives of a couple of convicted serial killers who had worked as hitmen for a vast and powerful Satanic cult. As Adam Gorightly explains:

> *Another possible thread in this tangled web is serial killer Henry Lee Lucas, who claimed membership in a nationwide Satanic cult known as the ‘Hand of Death.’ According to Lucas, both he and his partner, Ottis Toole, worked as contract killers for this shadowy group, which was involved in drug dealing, murder for hire, and the smuggling of children into Mexico. Curiously enough, the only death sentence commuted during George W. Bush’s watch as Governor of Texas was in the case of Lucas. Why [he] spared the life of one of the most notorious serial killers in the history of the planet is still a matter of great conjecture, as before and after he used an iron hand enforcing the death penalty in his state. During [his] tenure, no less than one hundred and thirty death row inmates were executed there.*

> *Oddly enough, Lucas' partner, Ottis Toole—who was convicted of murder in Florida—had his own death sentence commuted by none other than… Jeb [Bush]. …Supposedly responsible for several hundred murders, this dynamic duo possessed a perverse penchant for rape, torture, necrophilia, and cannibalism. As part of his indoctrination into the 'Hand of Death' cult, Lucas alleged that he was trained in the finer aspects of abduction, arson and murder at some sort of paramilitary camp in the Florida Everglades….*
>
> *According to Lucas, the murders he performed for the cult were more than just random snuffs, and included hits on politicians and foreign dignitaries. Stranger yet, Lucas claimed to be friends with Jim Jones of People's Temple fame, another probable MK-ULTRA player/patsy. In this regard, Lucas accepted sole responsibility for delivering the actual cyanide to Jones used in the notorious Guyana massacre.*
>
> *To authorities, Lucas made reference to a certain cult-operated ranch in Juarez, Mexico, heavily involved in drugs, Satanism and assorted voodoo-hoodoo. This ranch was allegedly connected to a series of other ranches throughout Mexico involved in the same kind of Satanic shenanigans. It should be pointed out that these revelations—courtesy of Henry Lee Lucas—were made several years before the Matamoros atrocities became public record…. According to Lucas, the … members … included… several members of the Mexican Federales, in addition to one member in high standing with the Mexican branch of Interpol….*

Another murder that Manson II was purportedly involved with was that of Arlis Perry. This happened at a church at Stanford University in 1972. The man who reported discovering her body—Stephen Crawford, the church's night watchman at the time—was issued an arrest warrant in June 2018, having been tied to the crime with a new DNA test. He chose to kill himself when police arrived at his door. But Maury Terry's informants, David Berkowitz and others, said that her killer did not act alone, and that Manson II was there.

Was Crawford Manson II? No biographical information about him has been published so far. What we do know is that for some reason, Mickey Mouse has been chosen by the cult to represent this particular person. Interestingly, when Spike Lee was hired to direct a film about the Son of Sam murders, the Disney corporation owned the production company. In the middle of the production, corporate heads intervened and attempted to get him to “tone it down” in some way. Were the Process links with these murders becoming too obvious?

Stephen Crawford

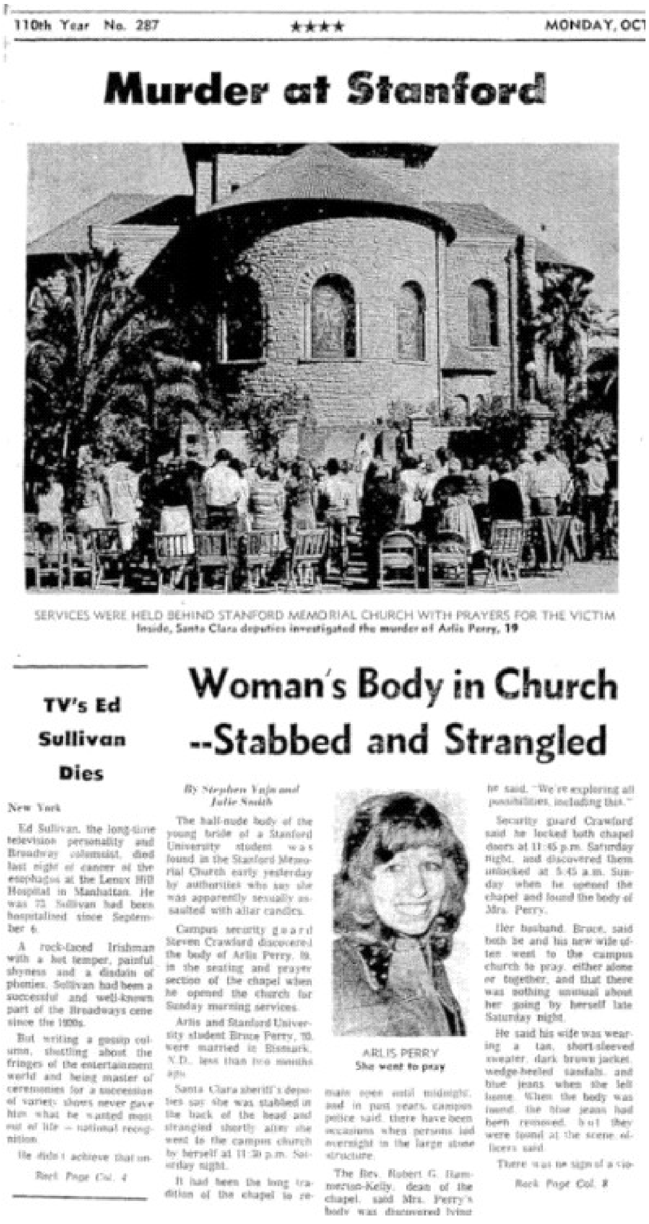

110th Year No. 287 ★★★★ MONDAY, OCT

Murder at Stanford

SERVICES WERE HELD BEHIND STANFORD MEMORIAL CHURCH WITH PRAYERS FOR THE VICTIM
Inside, Santa Clara deputies investigated the murder of Arlis Perry, 19

TV's Ed Sullivan Dies

New York

Ed Sullivan, the long-time television personality and Broadway columnist, died last night of cancer of the esophagus at the Lenox Hill Hospital in Manhattan. He was 73. Sullivan had been hospitalized since September 6.

A rock-faced Irishman with a hot temper, painful shyness and a disdain of phonies, Sullivan had been a successful and well-known part of the Broadway scene since the 1920s.

But writing a gossip column, shuttling about the fringes of the entertainment world and being master of ceremonies for a succession of variety shows never gave him what he wanted most out of life — national recognition.

He didn't achieve that un-

Back Page Col. 4

Woman's Body in Church --Stabbed and Strangled

By Stephen Yafa and Julie Smith

The half-nude body of the young bride of a Stanford University student was found in the Stanford Memorial Church early yesterday by authorities who say she was apparently sexually assaulted with altar candles.

Campus security guard Steven Crawford discovered the body of Arlis Perry, 19, in the seating and prayer section of the chapel when he opened the church for Sunday morning services.

Arlis and Stanford University student Bruce Perry, 20, were married in Bismarck, N.D., less than two months ago.

Santa Clara sheriff's deputies say she was stabbed in the back of the head and strangled shortly after she went to the campus church by herself at 11:30 p.m. Saturday night.

It had been the long tradition of the chapel to remain open until midnight, and in past years, campus police said, there have been occasions when persons laid overnight in the large stone structure.

The Rev. Robert G. Hamerton-Kelly, dean of the chapel, said Mrs. Perry's body was discovered lying

ARLIS PERRY
She went to pray

he said. "We're exploring all possibilities, including this."

Security guard Crawford said he locked both chapel doors at 11:45 p.m. Saturday night, and discovered them unlocked at 5:45 a.m. Sunday when he opened the chapel and found the body of Mrs. Perry.

Her husband, Bruce, said both he and his new wife often went to the campus church to pray, either alone or together, and that there was nothing unusual about her going by herself late Saturday night.

He said his wife was wearing a tan, short-sleeved sweater, dark brown jacket, wedge-heeled sandals, and blue jeans when she left home. When the body was found, the blue jeans had been removed, but they were found at the scene, officers said.

There was no sign of a vio-

Back Page Col. 8

Disney produced another film that I believe contains references to the murder of Roy Radin, to Macheath Messer of *The Threepenny Opera*, and to Frank Sinatra's self-identification with Macheath's knife. This is 1988's *Who Framed Roger Rabbit*. To briefly summarize, the Macheath character, I think, is the villain, Judge Doom, who is dressed just like Macheath was in the 1930s film. The Frank Sinatra reference comes towards the end, when a magical singing sword is unsheathed that begins singing Sinatra's song "Witchcraft." It's a recording of his voice singing it, and the sword has Sinatra's face.

There is more here that I could point out, but I will leave it for a future essay. The important thing to note now is that this is the film which Moses Farrow said everybody in his family was watching in the living room—Woody Allen included—on the very day on which, according to his sister Dylan, she was molested by Allen. But as you'll recall, I have suggested that this might have actually been a screen memory pasted over something she may have actually experienced at the hands of her mother's ex-husband, Frank Sinatra. (I base this solely on the circumstantial evidence I have already presented about Sinatra's character, and his enthusiasm for toy trains like the one Dylan Farrow says she was staring at when she was abused.)

Walt Disney himself is directly referenced in *Who Framed Roger Rabbit* also. At the Ink and Paint club, where Jessica Rabbit performs regularly, the password to get past the bouncer is "Walt sent me." Notably, though they own the rights to *Roger Rabbit*, the Disney corporation has been sitting on a script for a sequel for years. Robert Zemeckis, who directed the first film, is quoted by DenofGeek.com as stating:

> *The current corporate Disney culture…has no interest in Roger, and they certainly don't like Jessica at all.*

Richard Williams, who was the animation director for *Roger Rabbit*, studied his craft under the tutelage of Arthur Babbit, who used to work with Walt Disney. They had a falling out in the 1940s when Walt chose to ally himself with notorious mobster Willie Bioff in an effort to bust up an animators' union that was targeting his employees. Babbit lead a protest against Walt, shaming him publicly for associating with the mafia. Needless to say, Babbit remained on Walt's enemies list for life after that. Babbit's influence is said to be quite obvious in the *Roger Rabbit* film. This might explain why Disney bought the rights, but seemed to resist fully capitalizing on its merchandizing potential, and why they don't want a sequel.

Just like Sinatra, perhaps, if you cross Walt Disney, he and his homies will never forget.

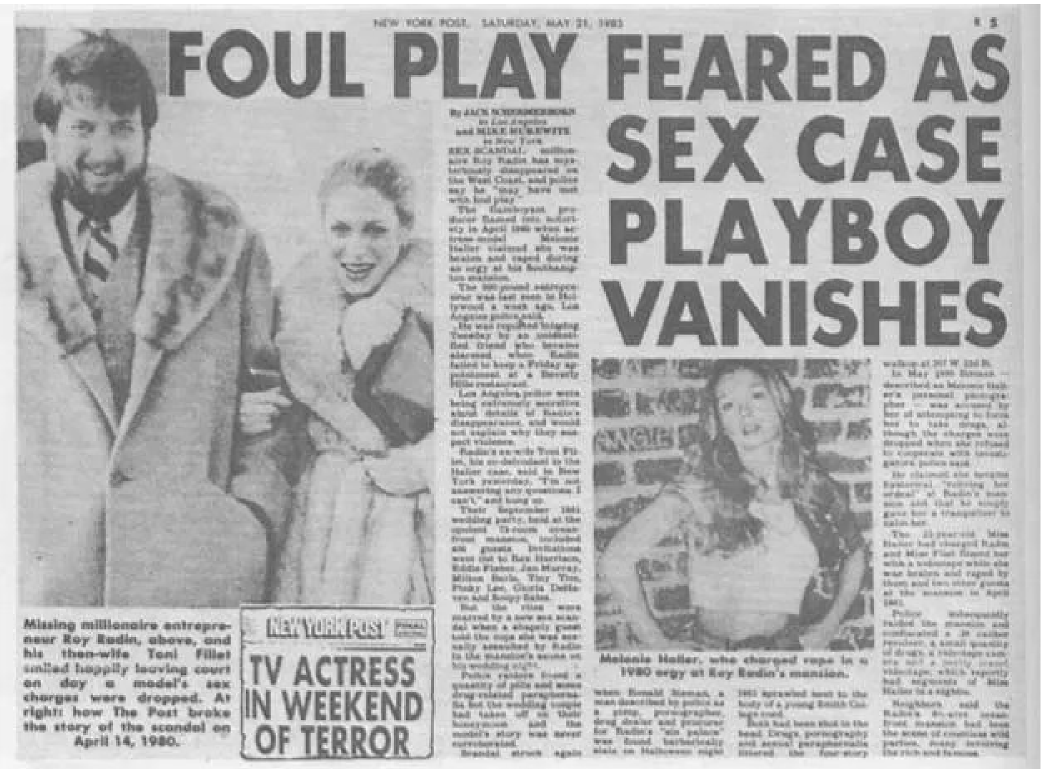

NEW YORK POST, SATURDAY, MAY 21, 1983

5

FOUL PLAY FEARED AS SEX CASE PLAYBOY VANISHES

Missing millionaire entrepreneur Roy Radin, above, and his then-wife Toni Fillet smiled happily leaving court on day a model's sex charges were dropped. At right: how The Post broke the story of the scandal on April 14, 1980.

NEW YORK POST

TV ACTRESS IN WEEKEND OF TERROR

Melonie Haller, who charged rape in a 1980 orgy at Roy Radin's mansion.

The headlines told of a mysterious disappearance in Los Angeles.

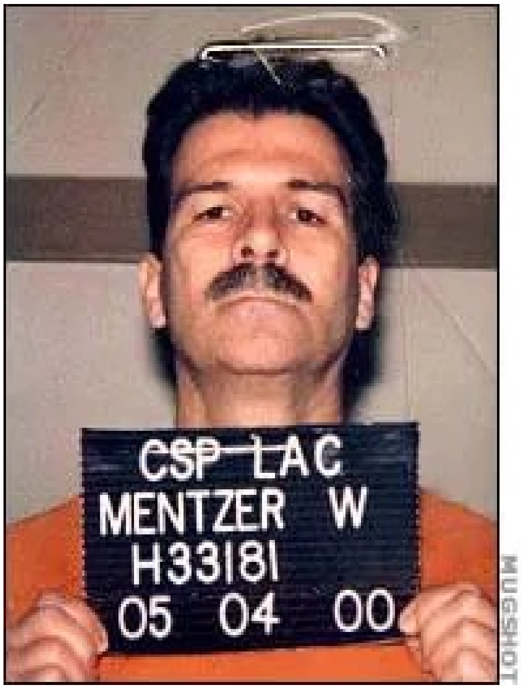

William Mentzer

Frank Sinatra and Walt Disney shared more than just an interest in model trains and, quite possibly, a love for the symbolism of "Mack the Knife." Not only Frank Sinatra, but most of the Rat Pack members were part of the ceremonies when Disneyland opened. More importantly, for many years in the 1950s, Sinatra's children grew up just a few houses down from the Disney residence.

This is discussed in Nancy Sinatra's book *The Long Goodbye*. She describes how she and her brother Frankie would "bother" the adult neighbors every day after school in the otherwise childless neighborhood of Holmby Hills (next to Beverly Hills and Bel Air). Their favorite person to bother was Walt, because he would give them rides on the train that went around his residence.

But there were other pieces of real estate that Walt and Frank actually shared. In Mountain Center, California, Disney owned a ranch-style retreat where Sinatra would often go with Dean Martin and Sammy Davis, Jr. to party. We can only imagine what went on there.

So what is the significance of Sinatra being shown as an actual living weapon—a singing sword—in *Who Framed Roger Rabbit*? Sinatra is the blade, just like Mack is the knife. He is, by reputation alone, the living embodiment of a mortal threat to all who might oppose his will. Like the crucified serpent in alchemy, and the image of St. Michael subduing the serpent Satan at the point of his spear, it represents poison, but also its antidote, and the threat of total annihilation that keeps one's enemies in check.

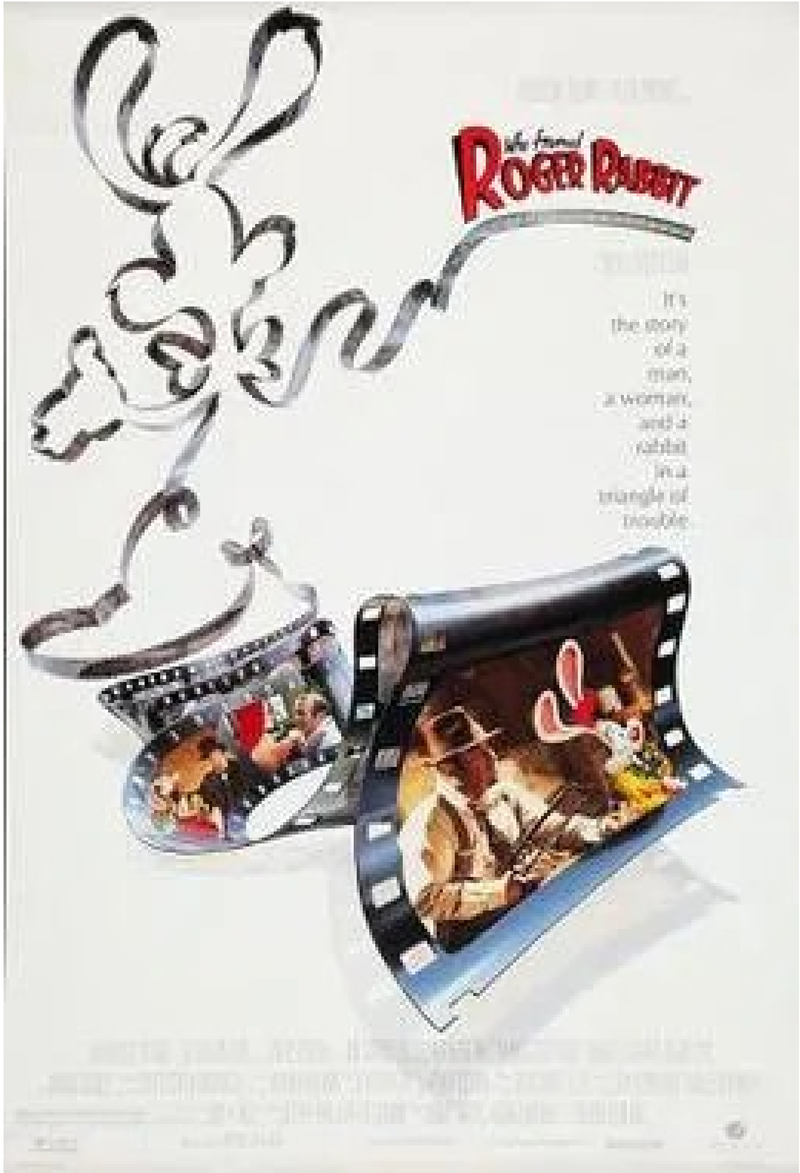
Who Framed
Roger Rabbit
It's
the story
of a
man,
a woman,
and a
rabbit
in a
triangle of
trouble.

Michael, by the way, is thought by many mythologists to be a Christianized version of Chronos (a.k.a. Saturn or Mithras). This is that primordial figure who cut himself out from the bisexual beast Ouroboros, severing them in twain to create the heavens (Ouranos) and the earth (Gaia). As I have established in past writings and videos, the myths seem to indicate that the "knife" involved here took the form of a tooth that the hero used to chew his way out of the beast's body.

So you see, the original sacrificial knife used in the oldest myth ever was actually a tooth. The wielder of this weapon is remembered as a sea beast, for he sprang from the cosmic abyss represented by the womb of his primordial parent, which itself is represented as an even greater sea beast. Moreover, Chronos was later overcome by his own son, Zeus, using poison concealed in a beverage. Zeus slipped Chronos a mickey, disguising himself as his father's royal cupbearer. I have even shown in past writings that this scenario is probably actually a metaphor for a homosexual, pedophilic, incestuous encounter between Chronos and Zeus, an act of "love" ending in the ultimate betrayal. Thus it is so very fitting for "Mack the Knife" to be compared with a shark bearing its teeth in a deceitful grin.

As I have previously mentioned in other articles and videos I've posted, threats of this sort are being made covertly nowadays through song lyrics, music videos, and other videos posted on YouTube. Many of them seem composed from a common lexicon of coded language, such as the "Tokyo Ghoul" image I talked about earlier.

This seems particularly connected to a figure in Japanese folklore called "Kuchisake," meaning "the slit-mouthed woman," who is said to cover her face with a red scarf or mask. When she selects a victim, she uncovers herself, and then attacks her victim with a pair of scissors. The article on Wikipedia about Kuchisake has a link at the bottom to the article about the "Glasgow grin." This was a ceremonial injury to the corners of the mouth traditionally inflicted by organized crime syndicates on those they have targeted, often rejected members of their own group who have failed the leaders somehow.

Also, among the Manson Family victims, both Sharon Tate and Rosemary

LaBianca received this injury, and both on the left side. In the popular “Tokyo Ghoul” image that I keep mentioning, a figure is seen wearing a leather mask, torn open around the left side of the mouth to reveal a large set of long razor-sharp teeth. This image, or ones similar to it, are now, for some reason, a common feature in present-day music videos.

In *Rosemary’s Baby*, when Guy and Rosemary first move into their new apartment in the Bramford building, their friend “Hutch,” their former landlord, has them over for a goodbye dinner. There he tells them that the Bramford has had “a high incident of unpleasant happenings.” He then relates the stories of several murderers who had lived there “around the turn of the century.”

Hutch mentions “the Trench Sisters,” who “cooked and ate several young children.” He tells them about a man named Adrian Marcato, who “practiced witchcraft” and was believed to have “conjured the Devil” in the 1890s. Then he says that “in ’59, a dead infant was found wrapped in newspaper in the basement.” Guy remarks, “You’ve really roused my appetite,” and Hutch raises his glass of red wine, nodding approvingly. “Have some more wine,” he replies.

Hutch also alludes to some apparently scandalous “Keith Kennedy parties” that took place there, adding to the building’s notoriety. What happened at those parties is never explained, but Guy and Rosemary seem to know all about them, so we can assume that this was something that made the news in their fictional universe. This must certainly be connected to the presence of either John or Bobby Kennedy on the boat in the intoxicated dream that Rosemary has later.

Later in the film, it is revealed that Adrian Marcato was the father of Steven Marcato, who is really the same person as Roman Castevet. We also learn that Adrian was born in 1846 in Glasgow, Scotland, where the “Glasgow grin” originated, and where Mary Ann MacLean of the Process Church was from.

This image of the Glasgow grin, and that from “Tokyo Ghoul,” is all part of larger motif. More generally, this motif includes any image of a mouth that, when it smiles, reveals itself to be abnormally wide. The prototype upon which these variations are based is most likely the Cheshire cat in *Alice's Adventures in Wonderland* by Lewis Carroll. We see this scary mouth often now, in horror movies, comic books, cartoons and video games.

Young people can sometimes even be seen on the streets or at parties and clubs wearing masks or bandannas over their faces with this type of "scary mouth" illustration painted on. Avicii made a video called "A Better Day" before he died, in which two people wearing such scarves over their faces execute people they know to be pedophiles. The video shows that these two vigilantes were victims of sex trafficking as children, but escaped their captors and went on to seek vengeance.

Still from "A Better Day" (Image added by editor)

Avicii - For A Better Day (https://youtu.be/Xq-knHXSKYY)

A much older pop culture phenomenon that incorporates the Glasgow grin is that of the villain called "the Joker" in the Batman franchise. In the backstory, we are told that it was receiving this injury that turned the Joker into a psychopath. He then decided to accentuate his scars with clown make-up, so that he could smile at people in a menacing manner, just before attacking them.

Things brings us to a fascinating and terrifying subject that seems to be related: the “Smiley Face Murders.” This term refers to a string of murders that have occurred all over the United States, and indeed, all over the world, particularly Western Europe. The hallmarks involve a man in his late teens or early 20s disappearing from a bar, or just after leaving one, and turning up dead in a body of water some days later. Usually they are happy and successful young men, not the typical target of theft or kidnapping. More often than not, their deaths are ruled to be accidental drownings caused by inebriation from alcohol, though typically no investigation has taken place to determine this.

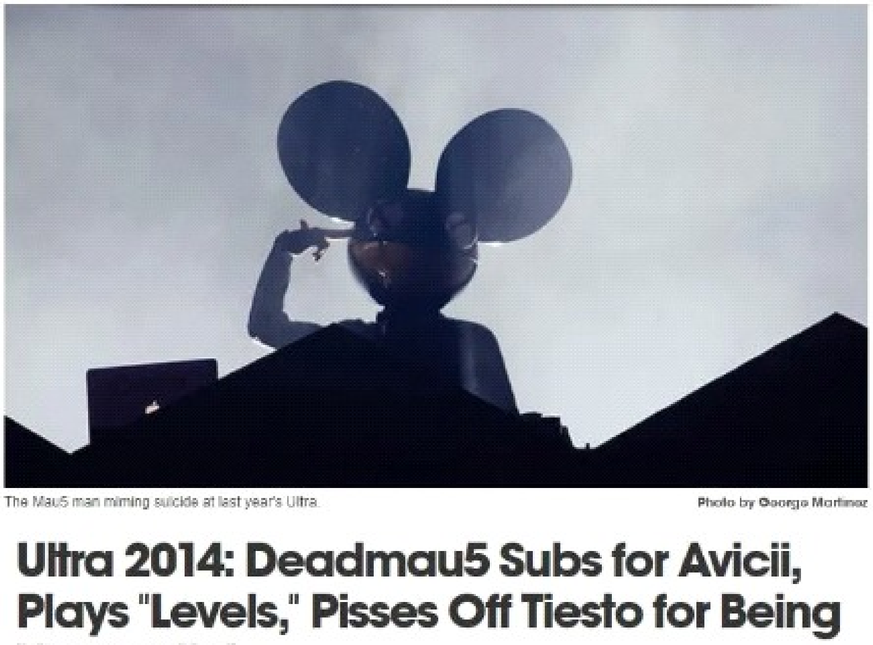

The Mau5 man miming suicide at last year's Ultra. Photo by George Martinez

Ultra 2014: Deadmau5 Subs for Avicii, Plays "Levels," Pisses Off Tiesto for Being "Sarcastic"

When investigations do happen, autopsies often reveal the presence of chloral hydrate or other date rape drugs in the person’s system. Evidence of torture has been found on some of these bodies. Also, they often show evidence of having been in the water a much shorter amount of time than the amount of time that the person has been missing. This indicates that they've been kidnapped, held as prisoners somewhere, and most likely murdered elsewhere before being dumped dead in a river or lake. There is typically no evidence of who the suspects are or what their motives might be. The only indication left behind is, sometimes, a smiley face drawn on the walls or trees somewhere near where the bodies are found. There have been hundreds of these deaths over the last couple of decades.

For those interested in this subject, I would recommend the work of William Ramsey. You can find his three hour documentary, *The Smiley Face Murders*, on Vimeo, or on DVD at his website, http://williamramseyinvestigates.com/. Steer clear of the unrelated "mockumentary" made by another person, which won an award at Cannes, and which confusingly mixes the known facts on the subject with fictional material. Deaths of fake people are described, and an investigator who does not exist is accused of falsifying evidence to get attention for himself. It's posted for free on YouTube, but I recommend avoiding it completely.

The comments show that the majority of viewers are not aware that it's fake. Those that do know this seem to be unaware that there is a real phenomenon of Smiley Face Murders that real people are investigating seriously. The effect of this mockumentary film is to discredit the whole subject, and I am highly suspicious about the motives of the people who created it.

Returning to William Ramsey's research on the subject, it is excellent. He presents evidence linking these murders to the Process Church of the Final Judgement, as well as other groups influenced by Aleister Crowley and Anton LaVey. He believes that there are communities of Satanists involved in "chaos magick," who are committing these murders as a way of spreading chaos in society. He even ties it to a video put out by Nine Inch Nails in the early 90s—*Pinion*—which shows a man being abducted and tortured. After some beating and dismemberment, he is covered head to toe in a rubber bondage outfit so that he cannot move. Thus, he is "pinioned." He is then drowned, just like all of the Smiley Face murder victims, and disposed of via the sewer system. The video was directed by Peter Christopherson, formerly of Psychic TV and Coil, two of the Process-connected bands I mentioned before.

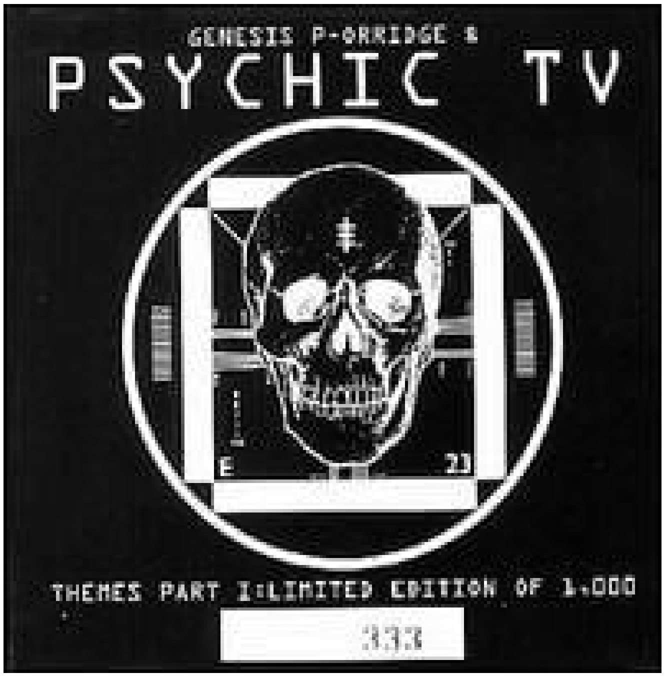
GENESIS P-ORRIDGE &
PSYCHIC TV
E
23
THEMES PART I:LIMITED EDITION OF 1,000
333

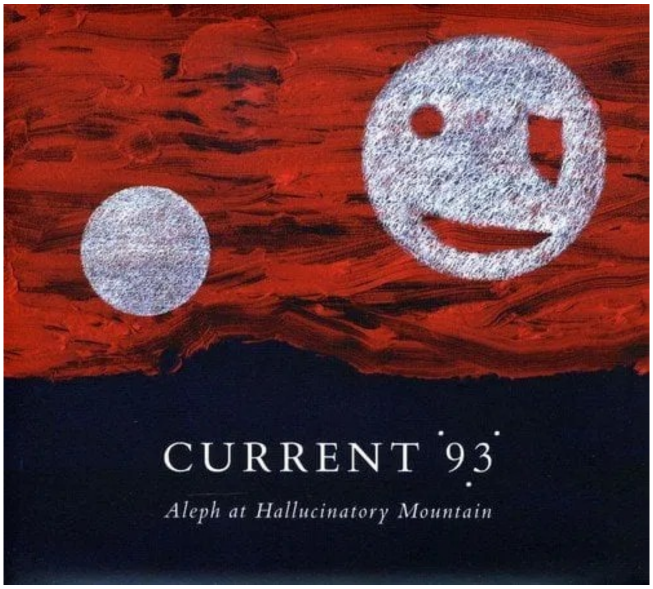
CURRENT 93
Aleph at Hallucinatory Mountain

HOM 006

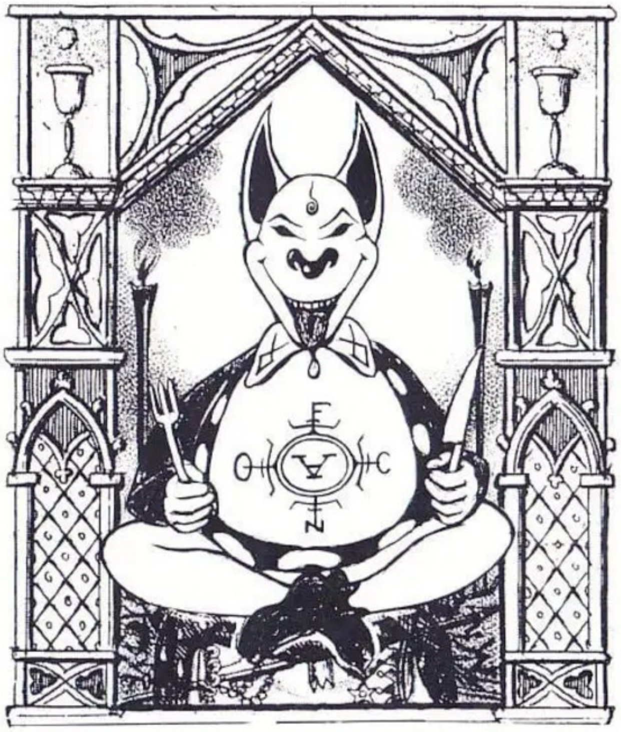

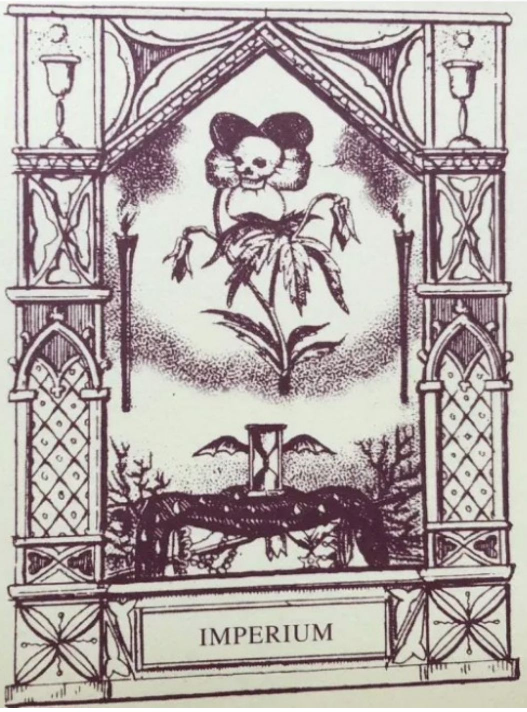
IMPERIUM

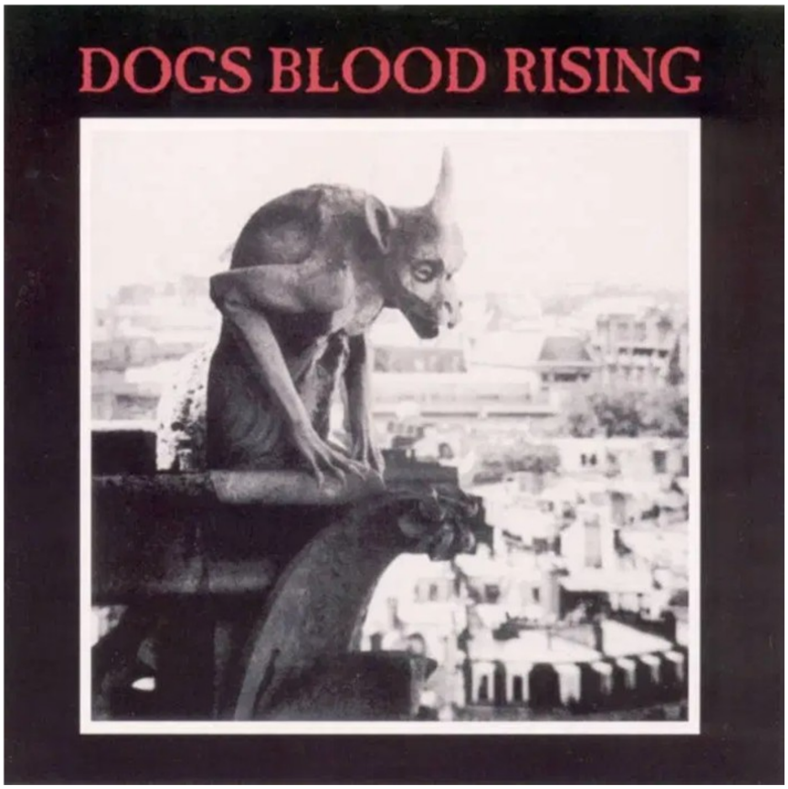
DOGS BLOOD RISING

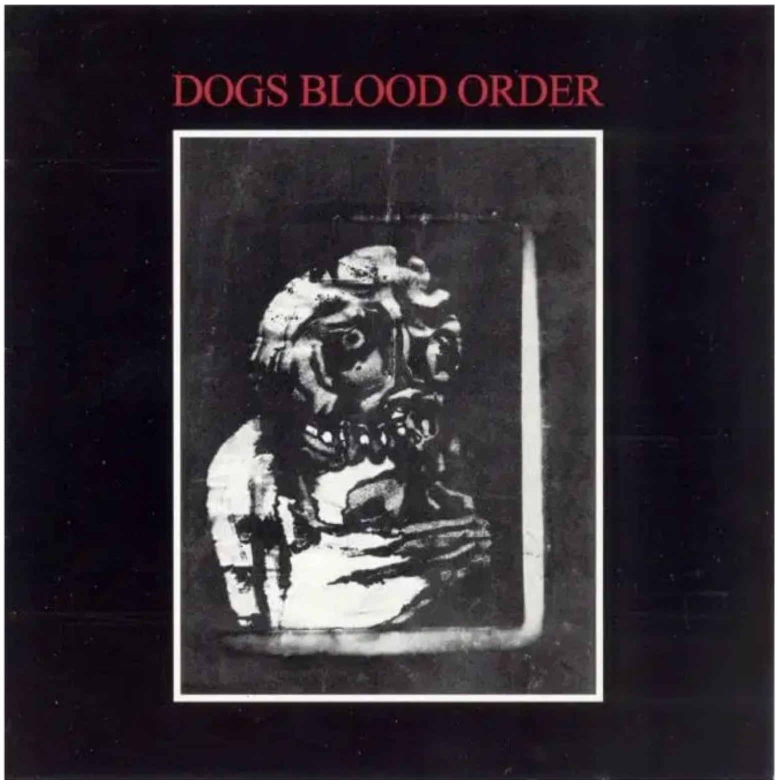
DOGS BLOOD ORDER

Genesis P-Orridge

This connects with the "Operation Mayhem" hacking attacks that I've been describing over the last several months. These seem to be connected to the Cicada 3301 internet puzzle that references Aleister Crowley's work, and which people have disappeared while trying to solve. Those behind both Mayhem and Cicada are, as I have shown, the same people blatantly kidnapping, raping, and torturing people, trading videos of this online, and trading the victims themselves. They have littered the internet with thousands of clues that most people assume are harmless, ironically surreal nonsensical memes. But they are usually really either created to advertise their heinous products and services, to threaten all witnesses into keeping quiet, to taunt the victims' families, or to announce a new target to their fellow conspirators.

It's all part of celebrating what the perpetrators see as "the Cosmic Joke," which is the meaning behind the use of the smiley face symbol. It's all connected with the image of the Cheshire cat smiling to reveal a wide mouth full of razor-sharp teeth. I believe that it expresses the same idea as the image from the song "Mack the Knife" of the shark smiling to reveal its teeth, likened to Macheath revealing his hidden jack-knife. As I noted, each smiley face murder is committed by first incapacitating the target by slipping him a mickey, giving him “the mouse.”

All of these ideas—Mickey Mouse, Macheath Messer, the evil smiley face, and the shark’s teeth, are bound up in the symbolism of what we can now safely call Marilyn Manson’s “Manson II” disguise, featuring the Mickey Mouse ears. It was rolled out in 2003 for his album *The Golden Age of Grotesque*. There was an extensive photo shoot of Marilyn Manson in this disguise. Part of it includes him bearing his teeth, which are made to look they have all been replaced with sharp, metallic spikes. In one image, he’s also holding a cat that’s hissing and bearing its teeth. In still another, he is holding the skeleton of a human baby and dressed in a Nazi S.S. uniform. This must have been the reason why he spent his band’s money, to the dismay of his bandmates, on what was described in a subsequent lawsuit as “sick and disturbing purchases of Nazi memorabilia, and taxidermy, including the skeleton of a young Chinese girl.” According to Wikipedia:

> *The album’s lyrical content… was inspired by the swing, burlesque, cabaret and vaudeville movements of Germany’s Weimar Republic-era, specifically 1920s berlin.*

Nobody seems to have noticed that, with this album, Marilyn Manson was specifically conjuring up the era that gave birth to Macheath Messer and *The Threepenny Opera*. Also, 1930 was the year of the release of Luis Bunuel’s surreal and controversial film *L’Age D’Or* (“The Golden Age”), a tribute to the Marquis de Sade’s unfinished novel 120 Days of Sodom. It was sponsored financially by one of de Sade’s living ancestors, the Vicomtesse Marie-Laure de Noailles (or perhaps, rather, paid for by her husband Charles as a birthday gift to her). Scenes were conceived partially with the help of Salvador Dali.

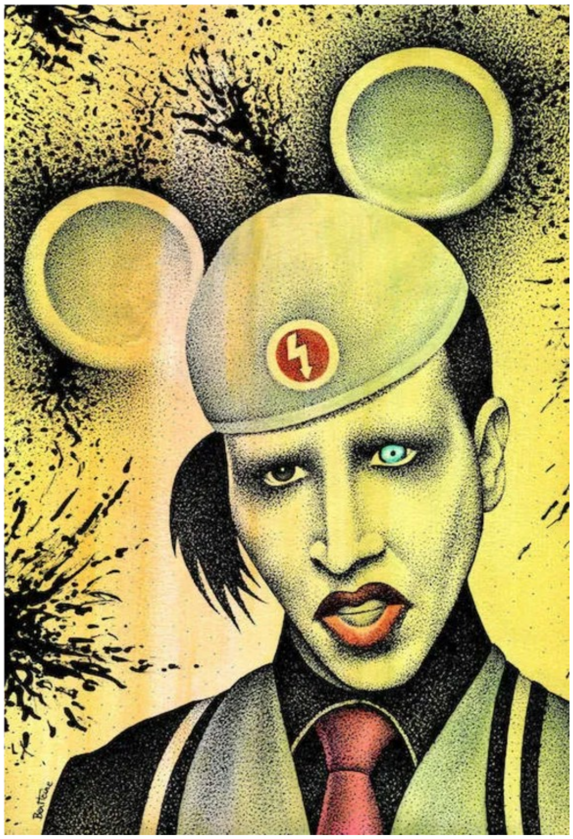

the Golden Age
of Grotesque

120 Days of Sodom was about the abduction of sixteen young people, boys and girls, ages 12-14. They are systematically raped, tortured, dismembered while living, and eventually killed over the course of the next several months by four noblemen at a remote estate in France. In interviews, Marilyn Manson has said that among the influences for *The Golden Age of Grotesque* were “Surrealism” and “the life of the Marquis de Sade.” Clearly, Bunel’s film was part of it. It is notable, too, that Bunuel employed Jose Bolanos as a screenwriter. Peter Levenda describes Bolanos as “an FBI informant and CIA informant,” as well as “the middle man between Marilyn Monroe and E. Howard Hunt.”

On *The Golden Age of Grotesque*, there’s a song just titled with the symbol of the black spade from a deck of cards. In it, Marilyn Manson sings:

The beauty spot was borrowed and

> *Now my sweet knife rusts tomorrow*
>
> *I'm a confession that is waiting to be heard*
>
> *It seems like he's talking about killing someone with a knife, and he wants us to take him seriously. But like the typical "serial killer" act, he won't tell us outright what he's done. He's anxiously waiting to be caught. He continues:*
>
> *You drained my heart and made a spade*
>
> *But there's still traces of me in your veins*

And:

> *All my lilies' mouths are open*
>
> *Like they're begging for dope*
>
> *And hoping their bitter petal chant*
>
> *"We can kick, you won't be back"*

It seems he has noticed, as I have, that the black spade symbol looks pretty much like the heart symbol inverted, with the red color drained out of it. The spade suit has also been called (and depicted overtly as) “pikes,” “leaves,” and “swords.” Generally, it’s taken to be some kind of cutting blade, and when playing cards morphed into tarot, they were called “swords” there as well. We know that the Ace of Spades is taken as a symbol of death, which is why they were used by the thousands in Vietnam, attached to uniforms, and dropped on the dead bodies of the conquered. Before this, in the 1930s the mafia syndicate “Murder, Inc.” used to leave the Ace of Spades on the bodies of those they snuffed. Also, when the 52-card deck is looked at as a calendar of 52 weeks (see my essay “Are Chess and Playing Cards Related” for more on that), the Ace of Spades corresponds to the first week of December, when the sun “dies” at the Winter Solstice.

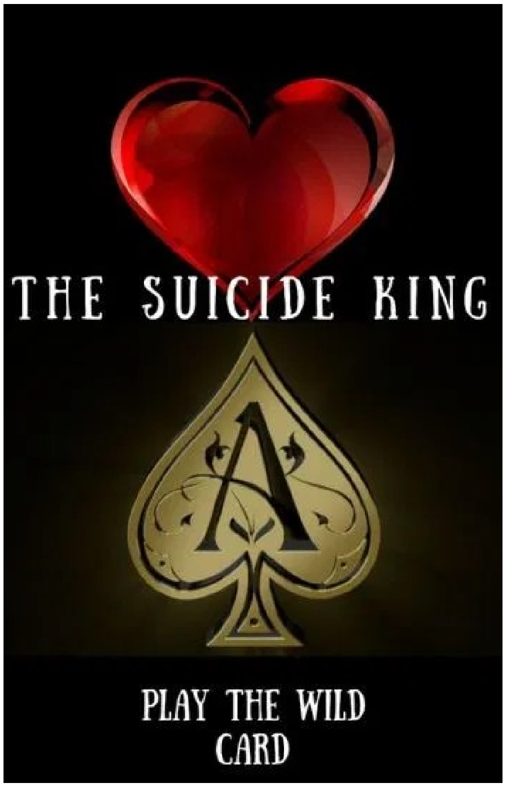

Strangely, an Ace of Spades was found tacked to the wall in one of the closets to the Tate residence, Vincent Bugliosi reported in his book that this a was a *token of good luck* in witchcraft because the card was upside-down (with the big spade in the middle pointing downward). He cited this as evidence that Sharon Tate had a passing interest in occultism, though he doesn’t seem to have found this to be in any way significant. I wonder who told him it was a good luck symbol instead of an obvious sign that a mafia assassination has taken place. Did he consider the face that it could have been left there by the killer?

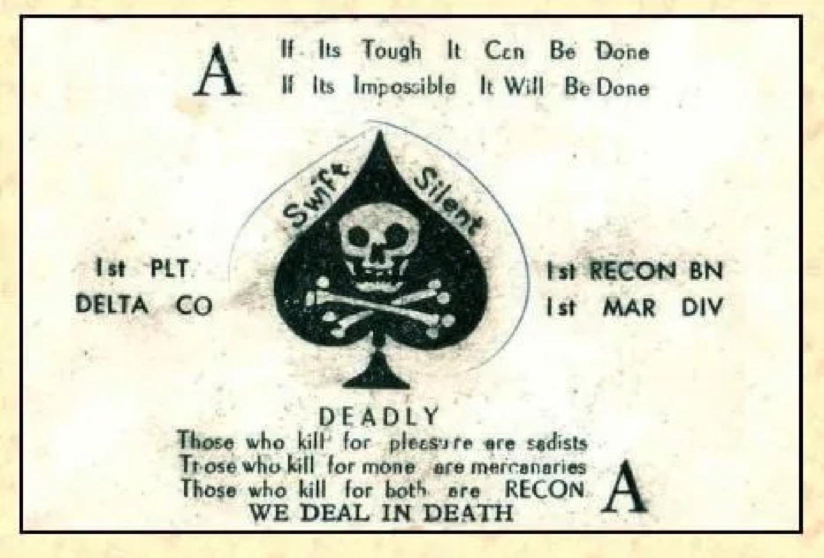

A

If Its Tough It Can Be Done
If Its Impossible It Will Be Done

Swift Silent

1st PLT
DELTA CO

1st RECON BN
1st MAR DIV

DEADLY
Those who kill for pleasure are sadists
Those who kill for mone are mercanaries
Those who kill for both are RECON
WE DEAL IN DEATH

A

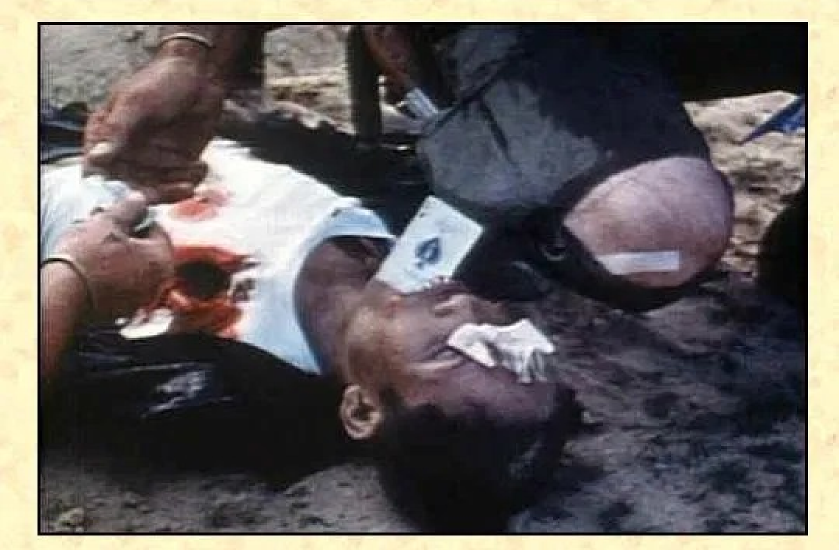

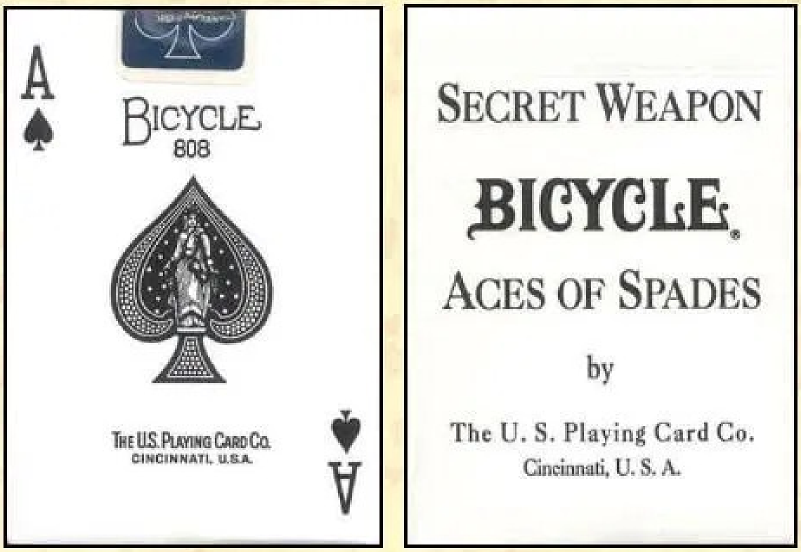
A
BICYCLE
808
THE U.S. PLAYING CARD CO.
CINCINNATI, U.S.A.
SECRET WEAPON
BICYCLE
ACES OF SPADES
by
The U. S. Playing Card Co.
Cincinnati, U. S. A.

Ace of Spades Deck
Courtesy of CW2 John D Sarviss

Two marines in Vietnam examine a deck of Ace of Spade cards, 16 January 1967

In tarot decks, the designs on the sword cards generally depict something bad happening, about to happen, or having just happened. To take the popular Rider-Waite deck, for example, we see that the four of swords depicts a knight’s coffin.

The five of swords shows devastated, crying people on a beach, fallen swords littering the ground. The six of swords shows a woman and child, crying, being rowed in a boat, as though they have been abducted after their village was attacked. The eight of swords shows a woman standing blindfolded with her arms bound behind her, surrounded by swords, as if she's being threatened with death. The nine of swords depicts a man in bed holding his head and crying, with nine swords floating behind his head, positioned so that it implied that they are piercing his skull. The ten of swords shows a man lying on the ground dead, impaled through the back with all ten swords. But the most tellings card is the three of swords, which shows three swords spearing a red heart while rain pours down from gray clouds in the background.

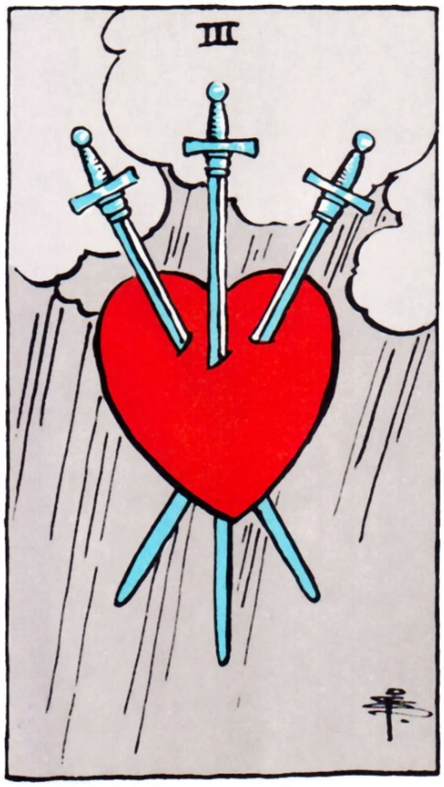

So here we have the combination of the sword and the heart, playing on the fact that the spade is the heart inverted. Marilyn Manson's description of a spade as a heart that's been drained, though, directly evokes the 5 of Cups card from Aleister

Crowley's *Thoth* tarot deck. This is the card labeled "Disappointment," and it depicts two black hearts covered with veins being drained through tubes into cups. In the central cup there are two lilted flowers, the "lilies" mentioned in the song.

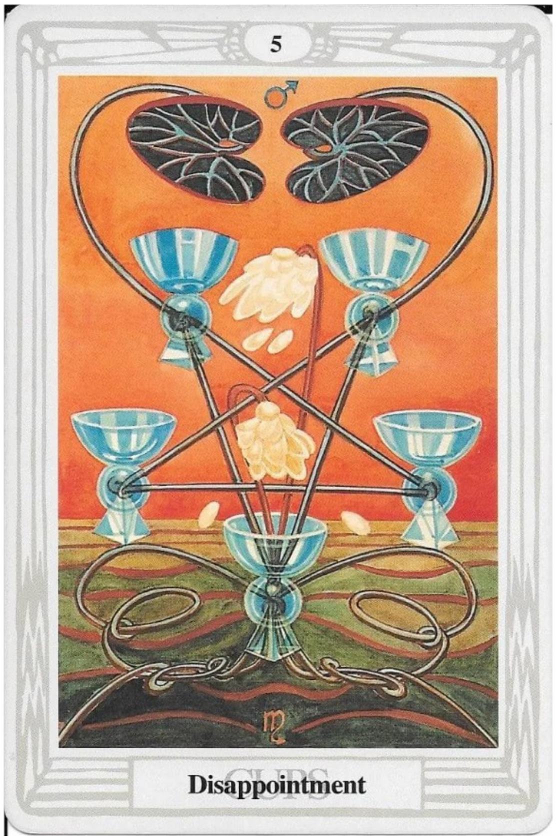

In the video that comes with the album, a 25-minute piece called *Doppelherz* ("Double-heart"), Marilyn Manson is seen smearing himself with blackface make-up, a likely acknowledgement of Walt Disney's claim that the appearance of Mickey Mouse was partially inspired by vaudeville blackface actors. So too did the look of his precursor, Oswald the Lucky Rabbit (the Disney character who inspired Lee Harvey Oswald's nickname in the Marines, "Ozzie the Rabbit"). Indeed, in these photos, Marilyn Manson looks exactly like the mice in some of Walt Disney's earliest, pre-Mickey cartoons. This design was described by animator Ward Kimball as "rubberhose, round circle."

- Marilyn Manson - Doppelherz (Short Film) Part 1 of 3 in HD (https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=pzzslUQHYoc)
- Marilyn Manson - Doppelherz (Short Film) Part 2 of 3 in HD (https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=pzzslUQHYoc)
- Marilyn Manson - Doppelherz (Short Film) Part 3 of 3 in HD (https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rOnH2IPdwmU)

[Links are an addition by the editor of this document as the original was unavailable]

Still from Doppelherz (Image added by editor)

Doppelherz, by the way, contains a diatribe by Marilyn Manson clearly aimed at an ex-girlfriend, and I'm going to guess that it was Rose McGowan. He seems to be threatening her, repeatedly stating that her "sell-by date has expired." He also says, numerous times, "I want downloadable suicide." All of this happens while the screen is flashing shots of two women bound in leather straps. We see repeated images of a woman's body dismembered like the Black Dahlia murder victim.

The *Doppelherz* video seems to have planted a bad seed. It was brought into evidence in the 2004 trial for Luke Mitchell in Scotland, who killed and dismembered his fourteen-year-old girlfriend, Jodi Jones. The killer had a copy of it in his bedroom, and it is suspected that it inspired his act.

It is worth noting, for reasons hopefully obvious, that surrealist artist Marcel Duchamp is actually a suspect in the still-unsolved Black Dahlia murder. Some of his art eerily reflects the way in which that killer displayed the dismembered parts of some of the victims, and there are those who believe that his biography puts him in the right place at the right time to have committed the crime. A few people have made a study of the connections between surrealist art from the 20th century and several of the more bizarre crimes committed by famous serial killers. On this topic, I recommend the website, Surreal Appearance (http://www.surrealappearance.com/), where aspects of the Black Dahlia and Zodiac murders are analyzed.

In the spoken word monologue that runs through *Doppelherz*, Marilyn Manson repeatedly complains about his target's compulsion to "save the world." Rose McGowan, of course, is the one who made the accusations about Harvey Weinstein that started a movement against the sexual abuse of people in show business. She broke off her engagement to Marilyn Manson because of "lifestyle differences. What exactly did she mean? Notably, as I have reported in another article in 2016 ("*Mad Love: Pedophile Hearts, Disposable Teens, and the Closing of the Doors of Mercy*"), Marilyn Manson has a long history of using pedophile symbolism in his work.

He repeatedly uses the inspiral heart, sometimes represented as a small heart within a larger one, and the rose-colored heart-shaped glasses associated with the novel Lolita. He actually did a song and music video specifically about this last one, called "Heart-Shaped Glasses." All of this pertains to the concept of "counter-love" (the inversion of love), as discussed in the aforementioned "Mad Love" article. The same symbolism is found in the work of the band Coil, previously discussed, and information about this can also be found in that article.

In it, I also mentioned the meaning of the cannibalistic meal depicted in the video for Marilyn Manson's song "Disposable Teens." The idea prevalent throughout all of these related works by Marilyn Manson and Coil mentioned above is that of sucking the life out of another much younger human being, perhaps even literally by drinking their blood, or by otherwise siphoning out certain fluids which create intoxication when consumed. Take, for example, "adrenochrome," taken from the adrenal gland of a living person when they are in a state of deliberately-induced terror.

It is theorized by some that it is the production of these fluids for human consumption that motivates many of the more sadistic crimes that occur. The more frightened and in pain the victim is before death, the more intoxicating fluids they will produce. This, then, might be a further layer of meaning behind the symbols of the black heart and the broken heart. I have discussed in some of my most recent work that these symbols seem to be used to covertly advertise rape and snuff movies being sold through YouTube and Instagram, as well as the sale of captive humans to be used for such purposes.

I stated that the people in these advertising videos appear to be extremely intoxicated, but not on anything I'm used to seeing. It could very well be that these symbols represent not only the emotional coldness of the perpetrators (the black heart), and the emotional pain to be inflicted on the victim (the broken heart), but also literally the piercing of the heart, and the draining of the blood, until the organ stops pumping.

The threat of doing this to someone, then, is likely what is implied by the symbols often seen on pirate flags of a spear piercing a heart, with drops of blood pouring out. These pirate symbols are largely derived from Templar traditions, so it makes sense that the similar Masonic symbol of the "naked heart" with a sword pointed at it is threatening the same thing as well.

Of course, I can't help thinking about what happened to poor Kate Spade this last summer, strangled with a red scarf tied to a doorknob. She used the black spade as the insignia of her design company. Roman Castevet is seen with a similar red scarf in some of the scenes in *Rosemary's Baby*. Of course, as I mentioned earlier, the Kuchisake monster of Japanese folklore wears a red scarf. Considering that Kate Spade's husband made that bizarre public appearance in the mouse mask right after she died, I can't help but wonder if there's a connection.

When I first heard of Spade's death, I immediately went to her Twitter account. There I documented numerous people that I had already identified as connected to the specific cults mentioned in this essay, and all making bizarre comments about "BROKEN HEARTS," in capital letters, to make it obvious that they were leaving their mark on their hit. Then a few days later, Kate's father died, and it was announced that he had died "of a broken heart.

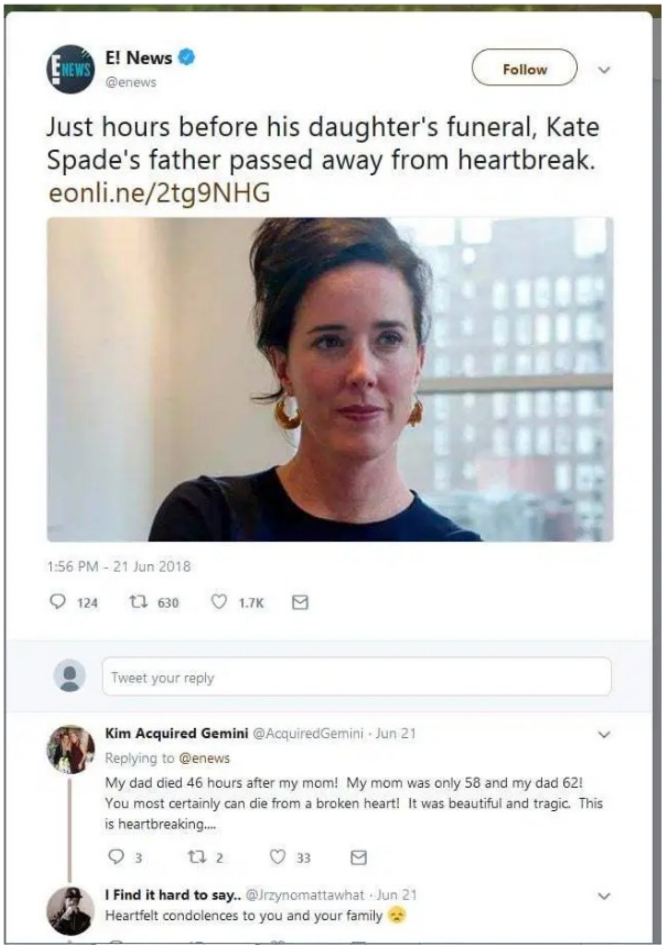

E! News @enews

Just hours before his daughter's funeral, Kate Spade's father passed away from heartbreak. eonli.ne/2tg9NHG

1:56 PM - 21 Jun 2018

Kim Acquired Gemini @AcquiredGemini · Jun 21
Replying to @enews
My dad died 46 hours after my mom! My mom was only 58 and my dad 62! You most certainly can die from a broken heart! It was beautiful and tragic. This is heartbreaking....

I Find it hard to say.. @Jrzynomattawhat · Jun 21
Heartfelt condolences to you and your family 😞

I found the same calling cards on XXXTentacion's Twitter account right before and after he was killed. The man who was arrested for shooting him was wearing a shirt with a broken heart on it when he was arrested as well. He was shot right after making a large withdrawal at an ATM (supposedly to buy a motorcycle). This may have been done to mimic the murder of "Louie Miller," who, in the song "Mack the Knife," was said to have been stabbed to death by Macheath Messer after "drawin' out all his hard-earned cash."

Remember when they kept calling Princess Diana the "Queen of Hearts," particularly after she was killed? I wonder if we would find the same calling cards all over the obituaries published for Marilyn Monroe. Amazingly, just as I was completing this essay, I received in the mail a book about Monroe that I had ordered. As soon as I picked it up, it fell open to a page where I discovered that her nicknames during childhood were "Mouse" and "the Human Bean."

I already had it on my list to explain the symbol of the "bean," related to the "sabot" or "bullet." It has to do with the Catholic ritual of the epiphany cake or "king cake." This was a tradition observed originally in early January, though now, more often, king cakes are associated with Mardi Gras celebrations in late February or early March. Either way, the tradition is related to the story of the Three Wise Men being led by the Star of Bethlehem to the location where the prophesied messiah had been born.

Modern version of King Cake with tiny plastic baby

In the king cake ritual, a cake is made with a small representation of a baby will be placed somewhere inside. Sometimes it is a plastic or even edible baby. More commonly it is just an object that represents it—usually a bean, a coin, or even, sometimes, a bullet. In *The Mystery of the Cathedrals*, alchemist Fulcanelli talks about how it, like the Christ child, represents the alchemical gold, the end result of the alchemical process, which is consumed for longevity. "It is the gold in its bath, the bather," he writes. "it is the *bean*, the sabot [meaning "bullet"]…"

With the original king cakes, the cake would be cut up, and whoever got the slice with the "baby" would be deemed "king for a day." As Fulcanelli further explains:

> *The popular expression to take the cake means to be fortunate. The one who is fortunate enough to find the bean in the cake has no further need for anything; he will never lack money. He will be doubly king, by science and by fortune.*

I demonstrated in past writings on this topic that this corresponds to more ancient and bloody rites of king sacrifice in pre-Christian Europe. In these older pagan rites, a king would be sacrificed each year, and a new one chosen by lot using a ritual similar to that of the king cake. But the king's glory, like that of his predecessor, would only last one year. Thus the substitution of the "baby" with a "bullet" (called a sabot in French), a death threat is clearly being made, just like when Charles Manson gave Dennis Wilson a bullet and threatened to have his children killed. Reportedly, a similar message was sent to John Lennon via Kenneth Anger by Mark David Chapman (who was then unknown) while Anger was in Hawaii filming a scene for *Lucifer Rising*.

The man, purportedly a stranger to Anger, walked up to him on the set and handed him two bullets, stating, "Those are for John Lennon." It is possible that Chapman was a mind-controlled assassin sent in to make this threat to someone who had mutual links to Lennon through the Manson Family. But isn't it even likelier that all of them—Lennon, Anger, and Chapman—had been associated with the Process, and that this gift of a bullet is a known code within their mileau, letting the target know in advance that they have been marked for murder?

In another instance, Boyd Rice, a Church of Satan "High Priest" who was an associate of both Anton LaVey and Marilyn Manson, was purportedly on friendly terms with Charles Manson, and frequently visited him in jail. But one day Rice was arrested for trying to smuggle a bullet into the prison. He later claimed that the bullet just happened to be in his pocket for some unrelated reason, and he had forgotten it was there. My guess is that he had been sent in there to give the bullet to Manson as a warning, or even with the knowledge that he would get caught first, but that Manson would hear about it anyway, and get the message. Rice was a frequent collaborator with the neo-Nazi neo-Crowleyan homo-sado-masochist folk music band Death in June.

Rice, and everyone from Death in June, were also frequent collaborators at one point with Current 93, named after Aleister Crowley's term for the modern era of chaos that he predicted would usher in the Anti-Christ. In addition to overtly Satanic lyrics, Current 93 has a song entirely about Bobby Beausoleil, and a cover of Blue Oyster Cult's *Summer of Love*, a Process-inspired paean about the Manson murders. Current 93 also has a song titled "The Final Church," an album called *Dog's Blood Rising*, and a project that they participated in called "Dog Blood Order." Death in June has an E.P. called "Sun Dogs" that they released, featuring a swastika made of dog heads.

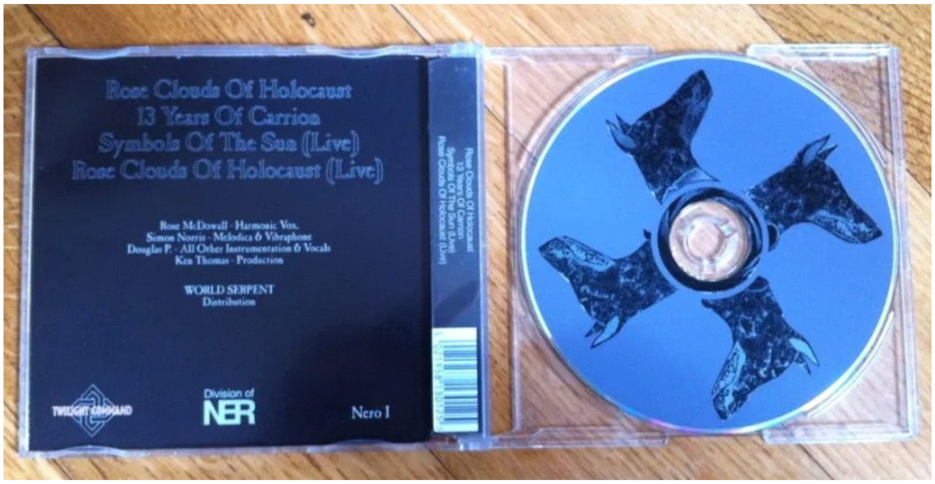
Rose Clouds Of Holocaust
13 Years Of Carrion
Symbols Of The Sun (Live)
Rose Clouds Of Holocaust (Live)
Rose McDowall · Harmonic Vox.
Simon Norris · Melodica & Vibraphone
Douglas P. · All Other Instrumentation & Vocals
Ken Thomas · Production
WORLD SERPENT
Distribution
TWILIGHT COMMAND
Division of
NER
Nero I

The band Coil put out a song called "Love's Secret Domain." I think that the cover art for this recording references the notorious child abuse incident I mentioned previously involving the Solar Lodge of the O.T.O. It is meant to evoke the memory of the wooden crate that six-year-old Anthony Gibbons was caged in for 56 days in the California desert. It features wooden boards, bloodstained, with magical sigils and threats etched on them in the form of human skeletons and dismembered body parts. These include a hand that has had had the last two fingers severed, an injury consistent with the penalty for violating one's oath in the O.T.O. Remember, Anthony's fingers were burnt as a punishment before he was locked into the wooden crate. An even more direct reference to this situation might be Coil's song "The Solar Lodge." The cover art features a photo of a little boy on a swing who looks to be about six years old.

OVT OF LIGHT
COMETH DARKNESS
COIL

Coil "Love's Secret Domain" cover art (Image added by editor)

SOLAR LODGE
2
COIL

Coil "The Solar Lodge" cover art (Image added by editor)

Solar Lodge - Rehearsal For The Mourgue - A (https://youtu.be/euvTG0IHP8A)

Was this recording made just for insiders to celebrate the horror of what happened there in the California desert? Or is it specifically for Anthony Gibbons to find, reminding him and all of the other people who were involved to keep quiet about anything else that hasn't yet become public?

For an idea of how very real this possibility is, revisit what I wrote in the "Mad Love" article from 2016 about the "Love's Secret Domain" song, and the music video that goes with it:

> *[This production features] a harem of young Asian boys in loincloths dancing lewdly with the performer and each other, pouring candle wax on their own chests while he fondles them and gnashes his teeth. I now realize that some of the lines overtly refer to violent sodomic child rape. I quote:*
>
> *In little children's heavy heads*
>
> *My dreams erupt while in my bed*
>
> *Innocence is dripping red*
>
> *They also speak of sadistic torture for the "mystery" of evil:*
>
> *Sweet tortures fly on mystery wings*
>
> *Pure evil is when flowers sing*
>
> *My heart*
>
> *My heart is a rose*
>
> *Finally, there are references to bondage (the "leash") and giving in to madness:*
>
> *Give sanity a longer leash, but*
>
> *Some of us have sharper teeth*
>
> *In love's secret domain*

> *In the video, as he sings about "days devoured by hungry nights," he bares his teeth and pretends to eat his own fist. Then when he sings the line about "sharper teeth," he bites in the direction of one of the dancing slave boys. This perhaps hints at sadistic "love bites," or worse, the cannibalism that sometimes occurs after children have been raped and murdered.*

The reference to the leash in the lyrics may very well be tied to the story of Anthony Gibbons, as he was chained to a metal place on the floor within the wooden crate. The line "my heart is a rose" seems to hearken to the William Blake poem "The Sick Rose," which is referenced by other lines in the song as well. We can infer that it must have meant something very specific to the Solar Lodge of the O.T.O. Another recording made by a band or project called "The Solar Lodge," put out a recording called The Heartbeat of the Roses in a limited edition of 100 copies, distributed from an office in Italy. Another recording put out under the same name, and by the same label, is subtitled "A Tribute to TOPY." This stands for "Temple of Psychick Youth," a religious mail order cult begun by Genesis P-Orridge. TOPY was associated with the Psychic TV band/video project/performance art phenomenon.

Solar Lodge - Heartbeat of the Roses (https://youtu.be/OoYILm6wM1Y)

Perhaps this "rose" with a "heartbeat" idea is connected to the famous Rosicrucian illustration from Robert Fludd's *Summum Bonum* from 1629. This is a picture of a rose surrounded by bees, captioned with the Latin words *Dat Rose Mel Apibus* ("The rose gives honey to the bees.") Well, we have plenty of clues telling us that the rose can be taken quite literally as a human heart. There are other, even more revolting meanings having to do with the physical effects of violent sodomy, but you can read about that in the "Mad Love" article. For our purposes here, we can assume that the "rose" is a "heart" that pumps out fluids which the "bees" consume.

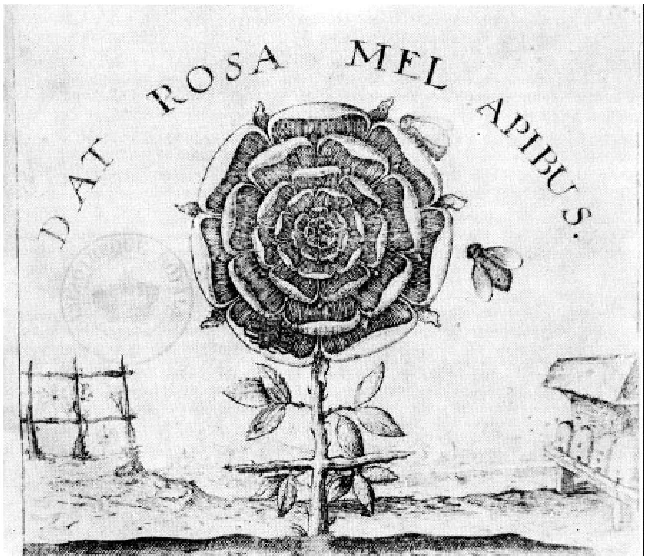
DAT ROSA MEL APIBUS.

Illustration by Robert Fludd (image inserted by editor)

Nicholas de Vere, likened the practitioners of the “royal witchcraft” that he described in *The Dragon Legacy*, who consumed menstrual blood, to bees in a hive. Particularly when involved in a ritual, they become locked into a group energy that drives them towards that which they have all come to crave. The essences to be gleaned from these fluids, whether they be blood from the dying heart of a murder victim, or other fluids given willingly, can be symbolized as well with another symbol common in Rosicrucian and Freemasonic artwork: the “Blazing Star.” As Christopher Macintosh explained in his book *The Rosicrucians*:

> *This “fallen shooting star referred to the morning dew which was believed to come from the perspiration of the stars and was thought to contain the “vital fluid” which was also present in bodily secretions.*

Coil’s one-time common associates, Psychic TV, put out a song in 1984 entitled Roman P, taunting Polanski about the murder of his wife, and about the child rape charges against him. I think it is likely that the emphasis on the letter “P” in the name of the band’s leader, Genesis P-Orridge, is a nod to the Process, as Genesis is quite open about his affiliation with that group. In fact, Genesis has gone so far as to declare that he restarted the Process Church as a functioning organization. This is because the TOPY utilized some of their rituals, and its core membership included some actual former Process members.

In addition to Genesis P-Orridge emphasizing the letter "P" in his own stage name, I noticed that the band Death in June, once part of the same milieu, is lead by a man named Douglas Pearce, who often refers to himself as "Douglas P." Therefore I think that the same emphasis in Psychic TV's song "Roman P." can hardly be a coincidence.

Psychic TV - Roman P. (https://youtu.be/mb_rYxfuJdU)

I think it implies that Roman was once a member who has fallen out of disfavor. Perhaps the unfortunate incidents of his life—his wife being murdered, and then being caught doing something he had probably gotten away with a million times before—are being claimed by the cabal as events that they have orchestrated, to get back at him for something. It seems like an oddly personal dis track if taken in any other context. In fact, I wouldn't know how else to take it. Look at the lyrics. There have been several versions, so I will consolidate them all into one:

> *Are you free, are you really free?*
> *Are you really, really, really, really, really free?*
> *Is it you or is it me?*
> *Or is it simply history?*
> *Are you free, are you really free?*
> *Are you really, really, really, really, really free?*
> *Is it you or is it me?*
> *Or is it simply jealousy?*
> *Roman you are, Roman you be*

Roman in your victory

Roman in your destiny

Sharon walks alone as your wife

Sharon gives her life for a knife

Sharon floating high up above

Sighing, crying, dying below

Life of money, life of sex

Life of money, life of hex

Pleasure for pleasure, insidious flesh

Little girls in their Hollywood dress

Pleasure build pleasure, insidious flesh

Little girls wearing their Hollywood dress

Little girls drinking and eating of cake

Little girls gorge you, your greatest mistake

Cake? I think the use of this term is supposed to evoke the image of the “baby” inside of the epiphany cake, and perhaps, also, the “Cakes of Light” served as communion wafers in the “Gnostic Mass” celebrated by Aleister Crowley’s OTO. These little round cakes are “spiked” with all sorts of secret ingredients from the witch’s cauldron, such as semen and blood from the group’s members. I can see them being spiked with drugs as well, or “hexed” ingredients meant to cast some sort of spell on the consumer, which is what it sounds like is being described in the Roman P. song, presumably alluding to how Roman Polanski drugged his child victim.

Cake And Sodomy - Marilyn Manson [Lyrics] (https://youtu.be/wXyizmsYpag)

Also, the image of a group of people, sometimes children, “gorging” on a human cadaver presented as a cake (or, alternatively, a cake presented as a human cadaver) is one that has popped up in a number of interesting contexts. Satanist and artist Marina Abramovich has held several “art happenings” where this occurs as a ritual. Also, I have seen drawings of Japanese children doing this to the corpse of a little girl presented as part of an advertisement for what I would call “sado-pedo-horror erotic snuff fiction” (or whatever stuff like that is officially called).

AN ARTIST SHOULD NOT
MAKE HIMSELF INTO AN IDOL
61
60

Another line from the lyrics to “Roman P.” that sticks out is “Sharon gives her life for a knife.” “For,” not “to.” It makes no sense grammatically, unless you consider the “knife” to be the individual or organization that caused the murders, on whose behalf they were done. Now, if I changed the line to “Sharon gives her life for Mack the Knife,” does that make more sense? Many people have sung “Mack the Knife,” and Bobby Darrin probably had the biggest radio hit using the song. But there is one singer who played it live more often than all the others, and only one who had a motive to want to hurt Polanski: Frank Sinatra.

Ironically, the life of Genesis P-Orridge later mimicked Polanski’s in a way. He chose to flee his country of residence in order to escape prosecution after he was accused of Satanic ritual abuse against his own children. This was based on footage viewable to all in his band’s own promotional videos, showing his children as part of the bizarre, indeed sexual, and indeed Satanic productions, though the extent to which they really constituted “abuse” would surely have been debatable. But, assuming that the jury would not be in his favor, P-Orridge moved his family from England to California. Shortly afterwards, he and his wife were divorced.

In 1995, oddly, the song "Roman P." was used in a Volkswagen car commercial that played in the United States. This seemed very strange to me, and I wondered if there could be any occult significance to it. Then I remembered my shock when I recently found the Tate-LaBianca crime scene photos for the first time. The "W" in "WAR" on Leno LaBianca's stomach is made to resemble the unicursal hexagram used by the O.T.O. This symbol has elements in common with (but is not identical to) the Volkswagen logo. Moreover, earlier version of the Volkswagen symbol have elements in common with the "Four-P" swastika cross used by the Process Church. Consider too that the Skull and Bones Society, which has the word "WAR" written in all capital letters on the wall of its ritual chamber at Yale University, and which seems to be invoked (via the movie *The Skulls*) in the spikes on Lil Uzi Vert's Manson II necklace, is a continuation of an older order that can be traced back to Germany.

Fulcanelli's description of the alchemical image called the "King of Terrors slaughtering the innocents" has bearing on our present inquiry. This image can be seen in the alchemical treatise translated by Nicolas Flamel, called *The Book of Abraham the Jew*. It can also be found on the grounds of Flamel's former home in Paris, and in several cathedrals in France, such as the ones mentioned by Fulcanelli. His description of the one at Notre Dame de Paris goes as follows:

> *A field is depicted in which a crowned king, dressed in red in the Jewish fashion, holds a naked sword. Two soldiers are killing the children of two mothers, while the mothers, sitting on the ground, weep for their little ones. Two other soldiers pour blood into a large bowl, full of the said blood, while the sun and moon descend from the sky or the clouds to bathe in it. There are six soldiers clad in white armour, the king making the seventh, and there are also seven dead innocents and two mothers, one of whom, weeping and wiping her face with a handkerchief, is dressed in blue, while the other, also weeping, is dressed in red.*

What Fulcanelli is describing here is the draining of blood from either pre-born or newborn babies. It is to be used in alchemical processes, to be consumed for longevity, and also to be used as a psychoactive drug. Notably, blood was drained from such victims and drunk in the place of wine during the inverted Eucharist rites of the Satanic “Black Mass” that evil Catholic priests used in perform in old Europe.

This is exactly what Nicolas Flamel hinted that he and his wife Pernelle had done in his cryptic essay he wrote interpreting *The Book of Abraham the Jew*. I wrote about this in my book *Money Grows on the Tree of Knowledge* from 2010. There I noted that Flamel had said the secret to “fixing mercury” (making it solid, a key step in the alchemical process, symbolized by a speared dragon or crucified serpent) was “the purest blood of Young Infants.”

Flamel always stated that he needed his wife as a partner in his work. They never had children, but for some reason he spent a great deal of the wealth he gained through alchemy on the construction of a graveyard for children. He decorated the archway around the property with images from *The Book of Abraham the Jew*, including the one showing the babies being drained of blood. He dedicated the graveyard to “the Holy Innocents” on the “Feast of the Holy Innocents,” December 26. You’ll recall that Dolly Sinatra, Frank’s mother, the midwife and illegal abortionist, was born on that day.

As I mentioned, the name that alchemists use for this figure in armor who oversees the slaughter and exsanguinating of babes is the “King of Terrors.” We see the King of Terrors in the Rider-Waite tarot deck as well, on trump card number 13: the Death card. There he rides on a white horse, trampling men, women, and children, as someone dressed like the Pope begs him for mercy. He bears a black flag with a white rose on it, and the number XIII. The number 13 was also commonly added to pirate flags featuring the “Jolly Roger” death’s head symbol.

Most of the same chemicals gained from drinking the blood of babies could also be gained from drinking menstrual blood, which is what Nicholas de Vere’s book *The Dragon Legacy* is largely about. He claims that this is what witch covens do in secret, with blood from willing providers. He admits that some of the nastier groups do drain the blood from murder victims instead. However, he says that the adrenaline in this product, while valued by some for the high it brings, is not as useful as menstrual blood, and he views it as a contaminant. He writes of the Death card that:

> *13 is the number of the Moon and specifically of the menstrual cycle….*
>
> *The white rose, like the red rose, symbolizes love, but … in this case … philea rather than eros….*
>
> …
>
> *This again is the card of 'the love that brings death'…. …Death as Initiation—the white rose of the spirit and pure love, is identical with the red rose of Sharon….It represents the menses-smeared rose of the vagina's foliate aperture, contact with which brings the spiritual purity symbolized by the pale flower of Death's banner.*

This passage is part of a whole chapter on the Rose of Sharon, which is worthy of quoting further, considering that this was the name of Polanski's wife, 8 and 1/2 months pregnant when she died. Recall too that she was the one Polanski had in mind when he first envisioned the film version of *Rosemary's Baby*. There is an alchemical operation called "the sacrifice of the vitriolated egg." As depicted in the alchemical tract *Atalanta Fugiens* by Michael Maier (1617), this is symbolized by a man with a sword about to cut open a rather large oval-shaped egg, about the size of a human womb.

"Vitriolated" in this context means "fertilized." In other words, it's the cutting open of a pregnant human womb. This is exactly what Susan Atkins said she wanted to do to Sharon Tate, but apparently didn't follow through on. Some of the other Manson Family members said that she did do this, from what they understood (likely hearsay). However, according to the autopsy report, this isn't true. Don't forget: in the film for *Rosemary's Baby*, Rosemary's child was born earlier than expected. The cult at first lied to her, telling her it had died at birth.

Considering this, it is interesting to quote what Nicholas de Vere has to say about the “Rose of Sharon” and how he thinks it symbolizes the consumption of menstrual blood as a drug. He also mentions other related plants used as drugs that create similar effects to the hormones found in menstrual blood (as well as unborn and newborn babies):

> *Sharon is a level fertile plain between Jaffa and Mount Carmel in Israel. In Hebrew the name derives from Sharai, a princess, from whence are derived Sarai and Sarah, which again were ritual offices in Judaism.*
>
> *With regard to the word rose, some dispute exists over exactly what that means. Authorities on the subject describe it as i) a crocus. ii) a polyanthus. iii) a narcissus. Iv) a cistus. However, if you consult a gardening encyclopedia you will find that the rose of Sharon is described as the hypericum or St. John’s Wort which, interestingly enough, produces a red dye and is related to the cistus.*
>
> …
>
> *The cistus is white with deep, blood red blotches, like the dappling of menstrual blood. The cistus belongs to the family cistacea and is also known as the gum cistus, whose botanical genus is ladanifer from which is obtained laudanum….*
>
> *Sheba, as the Lily of the (Nile) Valley, the nymphaea lotus and the rose of Sharon: the ladanifer, was likened to a living narcotic pharmacopoeia. As neither of these plants grow in Northern Europe, we have contented ourselves with the nearest familiar symbols, those being the virginal Fleur de Lys and the Plantagenet or English Rose.*
>
> *The Rose represents therefore the magical menstrual flow of Solomon’s beloved, whist the name Sharon or Sarah means princess. The Rose of Sharon is therefore the Royal Blood, the Sang Real; and the San Graal, the Holy Blood of the Holy Grail or rosi-crucis. As the Latin Ros-Sara or rosary*

> *which is devoted to the Virgin Mary, the pure white Lily, is itself the 'dew of the princess.'*

Later in the book, Nicholas de Vere says something else about palm trees and nutmeg that are possibly significant. Describing the symbolism of the heraldry on the badge of Catherine of Aragon, and how it relates to a nursery rhyme about a "little nut tree" (bearing "Silver Nutmeg"), he says:

> *The nut or seed which falls from the tree is properly the release of the chemical melatonin by the pineal gland. It overrides oestrogen and causes the 'seed' to be discarded in the menstrual blood.*

He then discusses the High Priestess card in the Rider-Waite tarot deck (Major Arcana number 2), where there can be seen:

> *…a veil symbolizing the virgin hymen. Printed on the veil are rows of pomegranates which in turn also symbolize the virgin vulva. ...*
>
> *The palm fronds interspersing the pomegranates on the veil represent the palm trees that grow next to the pools in desert oases and equate with the nut tree in the story of the 'Well of Nechtan.' These palm trees lent their name to a species of Holy Virgin Princess who bestowed upon the King the right to rule. Their category was 'Tamaris' and Jesus' daughter bore that name and title. ...*
>
> *In the popular nursery song quoted, the nutmeg symbolizes the pineal gland whose colour silver equates with the Moon and Diana, representing the virgin huntress' 'moon' or menstrual blood. ...*

> *The nutmeg itself is known to be a powerful psychotropic drug. This has recently been synthesized as MDMA or Ecstasy. The story relates that the chemical discharged into the bloodstream by the pineal gland has psychotropic properties when processed via certain exercises relating to the Tree of Life.*

The subject of MDMA is important. On the "Manson Family Blog" (http://www.mansonblog.com/2013/12/more-on-missing-link.html), which appears to be run by people trying to piece together what happened (for it seems that only Manson himself, at best, knew what was really going on), they mention the following:

> *Abigail and Voytek had MDA in their systems when they died, which was not a common drug back then. Patty [seemingly another writer on the blog] has been working backwards to try and figure out where the MDA came from.*

> *About MDA: it is the precursor for MDMA, aka ecstasy, aka 'N-methylated MDA.' It is closely related to STP (aka DOM), which freaked out the entire Haight Ashbury during the summer of love. Another variation is called PMA, which is just one molecule different from MDA, but can be fatal because it causes severe hypertension. All of these were referred to as 'synthetic mescaline' back then, and they all contain an amphetamine component which alone is known as methamphetamine (trade name methedrine). Patty is a bit stymied here because MDA is a common biological metabolite for the entire cluster, and therefore, it's not very clear what the drug was when Gibby and Voytek ate it. What the coroner found was likely already metabolized.*

So could this quite possibly be the "bad mescaline" that everyone in this sordid tale was fighting about when these deaths occurred? Significantly, as the author points out, "many of the drugs in question are confirmed MKULTRA test drugs." There are many reasons to suspect that the Manson Family was an MK-ULTRA project. Perhaps they were distributing drugs that had not been fully tested at the time.

They were the guinea pigs themselves—they and the Tate household, among others. One of the suspicious contacts the Manson clan had was a local clinic that they visited freely. Of this, we read on the Manson Blog that Manson girl Ginny Good had:

> *…at one point a boyfriend named Hank Harrison, who was the original manager of The Dead when they were still called The Warlocks (he is also Courtney Love's father). He formed a group called 'LSD rescue' that he claims later became the Haight Ashbury Free Clinic. Bob Ackerley of the BEL claims that they helped found the Free Clinic, as do the Folgers. … [T]he Mansons were regular fixtures at the clinic.*

> *Indeed, this is the clinic that Dennis Wilson took the Manson girls to frequently for STD treatment. "BEL" is the "Brotherhood of Eternal Love," a mafia that controlled the hippy drug market on the West Coast and beyond during the 60s and early 70s. They seem to be all over the same locations—and I mean the same street addresses—that the Process Church affiliates were at in the United States. There are apparently still ongoing investigations about the crimes of this group.*

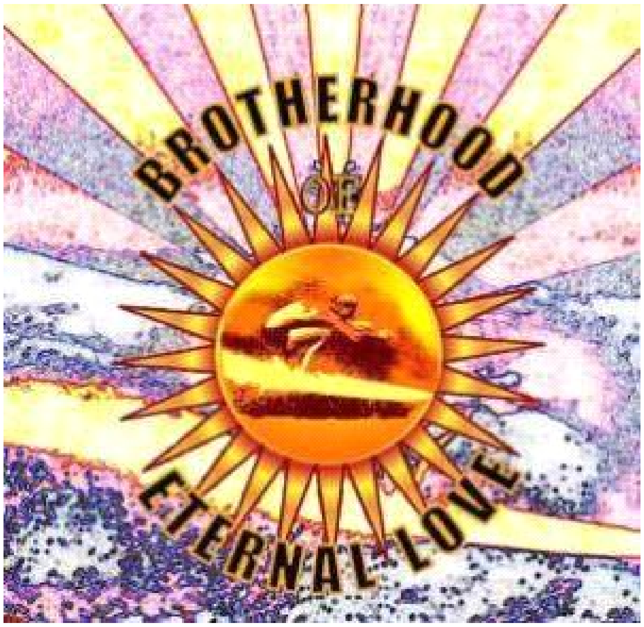

The Manson Blog suggests that BEL might have helped Manson Family member Bruce Davis get a fake passport for the mission to London that Manson sent him on, since there is no official record of his travel there. Bruce also took LSD long before it was popular, which the Manson Blog suggests is because of his access to experimental drugs through his BEL connections. Who exactly was in charge of these "experiments"? The Manson Blog seems to imply that that MK-ULTRA connections via BEL and the clinic might point to the intelligence community. That seems to be what Adam Gorightly is getting at as well when he writes about another person connected to the clinic, Charles' Manson's parole officer, who ended up taking custody of Manson's own biological son, "Pooh Bear":

> *It was during this time that Pooh Bear was taken away from Mother Mary and placed in a foster home. Somehow, Roger Smith—Manson's former federal parole officer—and his wife were appointed foster parents for the child. In January of '68, Smith had left his job as a parole officer and established a drug counseling treatment program associated with the Haight Ashbury Free Clinic. Interestingly enough, several members of the clinic's staff spent time observing the Manson group, including Al Rose, the administrative head of the clinic…. Charlie's girls often visited the clinic to clear up venereal diseases and other health problems. Rose was so impressed with the Family that he later visited them at Spahn Ranch and—in conjunction with a Dr. David Smith—wrote a formal paper entitled 'The Group Marriage Commune; A Case Study' about the Family… which was later published in the November 1970 issue of the Journal of Psychedelic Drugs.*
>
> …
>
> *Another connection of note—linking the Manson Family and the Haight Ashbury Free Clinic—comes in the form of Inez Folger, mother of Abigail Folger, who worked as a volunteer at Roger Smith's drug treatment program. Mrs. Folger helped the clinic receive a grant from the Bothin Foundation, and $25,000 from the Merril Trust, as well as holding several fundraising events during the year she worked at the clinic. Abigail Folger—as well as Sharon Tate's parents—attended one such benefit. It also appears that one or more Family members attended this same fundraising cocktail party.*

What seems to be implied, when you put this all together, is that the very people who ended up getting murdered by the Manson Family were involved in funneling funds to the very institution that might have been surreptitiously providing them with new drugs that they didn't understand: the 'bad mescaline,' slipped in like a mickey. I am left thinking that the BEL was creating and distributing these mind-control drugs, and that the clinic was not only helping to distribute them, but was involved in a number of other activities meant to direct the behavior and thought of the Manson Family members.

It goes without saying that all of these people were wittingly involved in an organized criminal enterprise involving Satanic cults and ritual activity via the Process Church. They were helping to provide a "hippie veneer" to hide the continuation of the control of the CIA-Mafia axis on the illegal drug and prostitution market. But something went wrong in the end, and they turned on each other, quite possibly being played by puppet-masters behind the scenes using drugs and hypnosis to manipulate them all into playing out this bizarre public tragedy, for unknown ends.

There is another substance that has been compared to mescaline which I cannot pass without mentioning, and that is "adrenochrome," as described by Hunter S. Thompson. In the film based on his writings, *Fear and Loathing in Las Vegas*, there is a scene where the narrator, Raoul Duke (a fictionalized version of the author, Hunter S. Thompson) is given this substance by his lawyer and companion (nicknamed Dr. Gonzo). The lawyer says that he got it from a "Satanist" client who he was defending on a child molestation charge. Since the client couldn't afford his fee, he gave him a sample of the adrenochrome instead, which, As Raoul and Dr. Gonzo discuss, has been taken "directly from the adrenal gland" of a "live human."

As I mentioned before, according to what I have heard elsewhere, to harvest adrenochrome from a live human, it is best if the person in question is in a state of absolute terror and pain. They no doubt *would* be if you were collecting fluids from their adrenal glands without total anesthesia. It's implied that the adrenochrome consumed in this particular scene from *Fear and Loathing in Las Vegas* was collected by Dr. Gonzo's Satanist client during a live human sacrifice in which the victim was tortured before they died.

In the film, Hunter S. Thompson eagerly enjoys some of the adrenochrome harvested by the child-molesting Satanist from one of his murder victims. It seems to have a psychedelic effect on him. Dr. Gonzo appears to transform into a giant Devil figure with multiple breasts and reptilian eyes. Dr. Gonzo says that he "accepted his client's offer because "he might've picked up a letter opener and gone after my pineal gland, you know?" Dr. Gonzo also says that he asked his client for a "freshly cut adrenal gland to chew on." Raoul responds, "We should get some of that … extract of pineal." Dr. Gonzo replies, "Man, I'll try just about anything, but I'll never in Hell touch a pineal gland."

While they are talking about this, there is a movie on the television in the hotel room showing a giant spider attacking people. This seems highly significant, as the Bohemian Club—a private men's retreat in California, to which Hunter S. Thompson has been linked—has a menacing motto that references this creature: "Weaving spiders come not here." The manner in which Mr. Thompson has been "associated' with the Bohemian Club is rather grim.

What happened was that a man came forward at one point claiming to have seen Hunter S. Thompson performing the role of the camera operator in the making of homosexual child snuff porn films at the club's annual retreat. In early 2005, these claims became more broadly circulated because of an article that was published in a Utah newspaper that mentioned them. The article was about a little boy who disappeared in the 1980s, Johnny Gosch. Johnny's mother Noreen said that her son visited her decades later, and revealed that he had been kidnapped by a child porn ring.

In January of 2005, a man calling himself "Jeff Gannon" made the news because of his presence in the White House press room, where he, and the website that he represented (Talon News) had never been seen before. Other journalists there suspected that he had been planted there by the George W. Bush administration, and began to look into his background. News stories were published revealing that prior to working for Talon News, Gannon had been a male prostitute who advertised his military-themed services online. When a photo of Gannon hit the nightly news, Noreen Gosch immediately recognized him as the man who had visited her previously claiming to be her adult son.

This is what inspired the Utah newspaper to write the article, which included the detail about Hunter S. Thompson. The witness cited said that Johnny Gosch had been on a private jet leaving Bohemian Grove along with Hunter S. Thompson, right after a day of filming in which boys were raped, and some of them murdered on camera. Shortly after the story was published, two things happened:

1. The newspaper went out of business, and the entire staff was laid off. It resumed publication a short while later, with a whole new staff.
2. On February 20, Hunter S. Thompson shot himself to death in his office at home.

Johnny Depp, who had played the role of Raoul Duke in the *Fear and Loathing in Las Vegas* film, *celebrated* Thompson's death by visiting his estate (named "Owl Farm"), where he shot Thompson's remains out of a cannon.

It is quite interesting that Thompson's estate was called "Owl Farm." Though spiders are mentioned in the Bohemian Club's motto, they are most well-known for their gigantic owl totem, to which they offer mock baby sacrifices on the opening night of the club's annual exclusive retreat at Bohemian Grove in California. But according to many witnesses, other blood sacrifices, of babies and others, occur during the retreat that are very real. The ritual with the owl at the beginning of the event is called the "Cremation of Care," and it appears to be a rite meant to seal off the consciences of the participants from any guilt they might feel about what they will be doing.

In the *Fear and Loathing* film, the scene about the adrenochrome takes place right after Thompson and Dr. Gonzo have just gotten rid of a very young teenage girl that Dr. Gonzo had sex with after drugging her with mescaline and LSD. First they dump her in a taxi, and direct it to another hotel. Then when she calls them at their own hotel room a few minutes later, they try to frighten her by telling her that they have been involved in several murders, and that people would be coming to get them back, thus inducing her to keep her distance. Prior to this, Raoul Duke had already suggested to Dr. Gonzo that they should pimp the girl, named Lucy, out to the police that were staying at the hotel for a convention, charging them to "gang-fuck her."

There are many clues in the film that this is a Process production. The first scene is shot as they are driving through Death Valley, which Raoul Duke immediately notes is the "last known location of the Manson Family." They pick up a hitchhiker who is wearing a t-shirt featuring a crazed, bloody, murderous Mickey Mouse. There is a scene where they play the song "White Rabbit" while the lawyer is trying to electrocute himself. Thompson first tries to save him, then begins to threaten him. All the while, they are gesticulating wildly and throwing the Goat of Mendes hand sign at each other repeatedly. Earlier, a Vegas version of "Sgt. Pepper" was played (the significance of which will be explained shortly). All of this develops a very particular meaning when viewed in the context I'm about to give you.

I believe the "Pepper" in the Beatles' *Sgt. Pepper's Lonely Heart's Club Band* is a reference to a substance containing this "extract of pineal" that Raoul Duke referred to in *Fear and Loathing in Las Vegas*, in combination with adrenochome, and/or other substances that mimic its effects, such as MDMA. I am aware of the official explanation that Paul McCartney has given for what inspired this title, and I think it's bogus. I explore this topic in greater detail in a video series about the Sgt. Pepper album and the *Yellow Submarine* film that will be coming out shortly.

As for what I think it does *mean*, the clues that I see can be found in the symbolism of the Process Church, and in the works of Lewis Carroll referenced so frequently on the Beatles' later albums. The Manson Family used Alice metaphors as well. One of their members was code-named "White Rabbit." He is now a convicted child molester. Lewis Carroll was highly-suspected of being a child molester as well.

In *Alice's Adventures in Wonderland*, it is the White Rabbit who entices the child to follow him, leading to her falling down the "rabbit-hole." This sounds like an old-fashioned pit trap for catching game. Once down there, where she gets lost, she finds a key, and then, behind a curtain, a tiny door leading to a garden. But she cannot get in because the passage is "not much larger than a rat hole."

This is a clear allusion to the "narrow gate" that leads to Paradise, or Heaven, as portrayed in the preachings of Jesus. It's also a bit like the secret passageways that those who keep human slaves in hidden dungeons sometimes have installed in their homes. In the story, the next thing that Alice finds is a bottle marked "Drink Me." She reasons that because she doesn't see anything marking it as "poison," it is OK to drink it. Immediately she starts to become smaller. When she gets down to about 10 inches, she gets happy, because she realizes she might be able to go "into that lovely garden." She's happy that maybe she can go to Heaven after she dies, which, it appears, she expects to happen at any moment.

First, however, she waited for a few minutes to see if she was going to shrink any further: she felt a little nervous about this; 'for it might end, you know,' said Alice to herself, 'in my going out altogether, like a candle. I wonder what I should be like then?' And she tried to fancy what the flame of a candle looks like after the candle is blown out, for she could not remember ever having seen such a thing.

You've probably read this passage before, and you know where it's from, so you're not inclined to view it as sinister. But what if I told you that this was a story written by a man who had kidnapped ten young girls and kept them in his basement, murdering them when they became difficult to deal with? If you knew there was a human trafficking operation that involved child prostitution, child pornography, people smuggling, snuff production, contract killings, etc., and that this was the story they frequently read to their captive children—to indoctrinate them into the cult's threats about what happens to those who don't keep the group's secrets—how *then* would you interpret the meaning of the passage? How do you suppose the child would interpret the fact that this story was being read to them?

I know I am not the only person reading these things into Lewis Carroll's fiction. Every year there is something called "Alice Day" (April 25), on which (according to a report in April 2018 from News 5 in Cleveland) pedophiles who like little girls trade tips on how to prey on them without getting caught.

When Alice tries to go into the little garden (i.e., tries to "get to Heaven"), she finds that she cannot reach the key on top of the table any more. This is a metaphor for the fact that she has had her soul destroyed by something she has been through, which started with her swallowing something sweet that she didn't *think* was poisonous. But it made her almost disappear, and now that she has no soul, she's afraid that once she dies there will be nothing left of her to get into Heaven.

She starts to cry, but then she scolds herself for crying. Alice has been trained to discipline herself. She then remembers an earlier time when she was :

> *…trying to box her own ears for having cheated herself in a game of croquet she was playing against herself, for this curious child was very fond of pretending to be two people. 'But it's no use now,' thought poor Alice, 'to pretend to be two people! Why, there's hardly enough of me left to make one respectable person!'*

She then finds a small cake in a box that says "eat me." This makes her grow too big. She cries again, and the White Rabbit shows up. But he runs away frightened of her, dropping his gloves in the process.

I think that this scene is being hinted at in *Rosemary's Baby* by the fact that the character "Hutch" loses a glove, which her neighbors obtain, and use effectively to strike Hutch dead with a hex. Consider that the name "Hutch" is the word used for the type of cage that domesticated rabbits are often kept in (outdoors, like Anthony Gibbons). In *Alice's Adventures in Wonderland*, there is a point at which Alice, having been drugged yet again and "grown large," is stuffed inside of a house in such a way that she looks like an animal that's been crammed into a cage too small for its body. On the next page in the book, there is a picture of the little White

Rabbit, cowering in a corner while Alice's enlarged arm feels around blindly for him. He looks like a bunny in a hutch being forcibly removed, and he looks terrified.

Right after the rabbit runs away, Alice takes the gloves, and begins to recite a poem about a "little golden crocodile" which she thinks she remembers being taught, but then she gets it all wrong. She says:

> *How cheerfully he seems to grin,*
>
> *How neatly spreads his claws,*
>
> *And welcomes little fishes in,*
>
> *With gently smiling jaws!*

Once again, we have the image of the duplicitous smile that is really a predator opening his jaws, like the shark in Mack the Knife, and the razor-sharp teeth of the numerous Evil Mickeys.

Alice starts to cry again, and complains repeatedly that she doesn't know who she is. She's also lonely. She cries some more, and that causes her to shrink to an even smaller size than before. She then slips and falls into a sea of saltwater created by the tears she shed when she was giant.

> *'I wish I hadn't cried so much!' said Alice, as she swam about, trying to find her way out. 'I shall be punished for it now, I suppose, by being drowned in my own tears.*

This is pretty clearly a child who has been severely traumatized to the point of being disassociated from her own identity. She has been threatened that she will be murdered if she cries too much, complains too much, or tells anybody else what's happening. She has a habit of hitting herself as a form of self-discipline, a common outcome of abuse. But of course, her abusers, who take animal forms in her distorted memory, are constantly putting her in situations that are bound to make her cry, such as tricking her into falling down a hole, where she was then tricked into taking psychedelic drugs, and left alone as the effects took hold for a lengthy period of time.

Just as she is sure she'll be drowned as a punishment for crying, a "mouse" who'd "slipped" through the hole with her came along. The mouse then helps her to find the shore, and introduces her to its other animal friends. Then the mouse tells everyone the long tale/tail quoted earlier, about the mouse condemned to death in a trial by Fury.

I could go on and on about the child abuse and mind control metaphors that are found throughout Lewis Carroll's Alice stories, and some day I probably will. But for now, let's skip ahead to the chapter called "Pig and Pepper." After encountering a hookah-smoking caterpillar and acquiring some special mushrooms to nibble on, Alice arrives at the house of the "Duchess," and encounters a servant with the face of a frog "sitting on the ground near the door, staring stupidly at the sky." Inside can be heard loud howling, sneezing, and dishes being banged around.

There the Duchess is sitting on a three-legged stool nursing a baby, while the cook is stirring a "cauldron" full of "soup." Alice remarks, "There's certainly too much pepper in that soup!" and begins sneezing herself. "There was certainly too much of it in the air," reports the narrator. The Duchess is sneezing too, while the baby is alternating between sneezing and howling, continuously.

> *The only two creatures in the kitchen, that did not sneeze, were the cook, and a large cat, which was lying on the hearth and grinning ear to ear.*

Of course, "ear to ear" is generally just an expression, an exaggeration, but we know from depictions of the Cheshire cat that it's literal in this instance, and quite disconcerting. It's the deadly grin of the shark, just like the smiling crocodile mentioned earlier in the story. We know also that the Cheshire cat smile is connected iconographically with the "Glasgow grin" facial injury given by organized crime syndicates to those they choose to punish. We know that both Sharon Tate and Rosemary LaBianca had it too, both on the left side, like the picture from "Tokyo Ghoul." Is this why there's a stage full of dancing girls with this injury drawn on their faces in Marilyn Manson's video for his song mOBSCENE off of the *Golden Age of Grotesque* album?

As the scene with Alice continues, the cook begins throwing dishes around again, not caring where they land, and several of them hit the baby. A saucepan almost hits him squarely in the nose, and Alice protests. But the duchess tells her to mind her own business, then threatens to chop off her head.

And with that she began nursing her child again, singing a sort of lullaby to it as she did so, and giving it a violent shake at the end of every line:—

> *Speak roughly to your little boy,*
>
> *And beat him when he sneezes:*
>
> *He only does it to annoy,*
>
> *Because he knows it teases."*

While the Duchess sang the second verse of the song, she kept tossing the baby violently up and down, and the poor little thing howled so, that Alice could hardly hear the words:—

> *I speak severely to my boy,*
>
> *I beat him when he sneezes;*
>
> *For he can thoroughly enjoy*

> *The pepper when he pleases!*

The Duchess then tosses the baby through the air at Alice and invites her to “nurse it a bit.”

> *‘If I don’t take this child away with me,’ thought Alice, ‘they’re sure to kill it in a day or two. Wouldn’t it be murder to leave it behind?’*

Alice walks away from the house with the baby, but the baby then begins grunting, and appears to literally become a pig in her arms. She says to the baby, “If you’re going to turn into a pig, my dear, I’ll have nothing more to do with you.” She then abandons it in the woods, she says to herself:

> *If it had grown up, it would have made a dreadfully ugly child: but it makes a rather handsome pig, I think.*

She then encounters the Cheshire Cat again, smiling at her viciously from the top of a tree.

To translate, what we have here, again, is a story of a little girl being drugged and traumatized by being forced to witness the abuse of a baby. She is then encouraged to kidnap that baby herself, but then is allowed to abandon it when it becomes troublesome, having been induced to view it as a “pig” not worthy of being cared for. She takes it out into the woods, and the next thing she knows, the creature with the big teeth and claws comes out, representing the abusers, and the knives they use to murder children.

After that, Alice crashes a tea party with the Mad Hatter, the March Hare, and the Dormouse. The Mad Hatter tells Alice that Time is a person, and that if you stay on “good terms with him, he’ll do almost anything you’d like with the clock. This is an explanation of how witches sacrifice children to Chronos/Saturn, the god of time, and consume the byproducts to maintain their youth, just like Chronos was said to have eaten his own children in order to retain the throne of the highest in heaven.

The fact that we are talking about drinking blood is hinted at by the Hatter when he says he was forced to sing at a concert given by the Queen of Hearts. The song he sang mentioned bats, which are associated with vampires. The flying bats, presumably full of the blood that they have drunk, are likened in the song to “a tea tray in the sky.” The “tea,” as I will demonstrate, is a witch’s brew made with human blood and similar types of ingredients.

At the Mad Hatter’s tea party, we are shown exactly how blood collected from human sacrifice victims is deliberately supercharged with adrenaline, released in the bloodstream due to the torture and pain experienced by the victim before he or she dies. The Dormouse is the victim at this party. He has been dosed by whatever was in his particular cup of “tea,” which seems to make him severely narcoleptic. Every time the others decide they want to wake him up, they do something to cause him acute pain, like pouring hot water on his nose, or pinching him. Now why would they needs to make the Dormouse wake up? Why, merely so that he could entertain them by telling them stories!

For instance, the Dormouse tells them all a story about three sisters, Elsie, Lacie and Tillie, who lived at the bottom of a well. He reveals that it’s a well full of “treacle,” and that these girls are forced to live on “treacle” alone. This makes them “very ill—perpetually so. Still, presumably, they were interacting regularly with somebody else *outside* of the well, for while they were down there, they were “learning to draw,” and the thing they were “drawing” was “treacle”!

One can just imagine a sick serial killer standing over a deep pit, within which he has imprisoned three little girls, lowering a basket down into the hole with a rope and hollering “They place the ‘treacle’ in the basket!” to his sallow-faced, emaciated captives.

So what is “treacle” in this instance? We can deduce that it is some sort of human body fluid, and it’s tempting to assume that when the Dormouse talks about “drawing” it, we’re talking about *draining blood* through a syringe, IV, or other, more archaic (or more brutal) tool for bloodletting. But the term “draw” here—while obviously a double-entendre meant to imply the siphoning of fluids, rather than drawing a picture—could be used in a number of other contexts.

Simply put, there are many human body fluids that can be siphoned out of somebody, in a number of different ways, depending on what exactly we are talking about. Some of them would *include* blood, or *involve* blood as a medium, and some would not. It’s not even clear from the context within the story that the Dormouse tells whether or not the girls were “drawing” the “treacle” from themselves, or from somebody else. But earlier in the scene, a great deal of fuss was made by the party-goers about what day of the month it was.

According to Nicholas de Vere, the best time to harvest intoxicating substances from menstrual blood is when the female “donor” is between twelve and seventeen years old.

The behavior of the Mad Hatter and others at the “tea party” certainly indicates that they are all on massive amounts of drugs, and they all present severe psychopathy that would be present even if they were sober. Alice is clearly tripping hard as well, which might explain why all of the characters take on the form of anthropomorphized animals, but behave like cruel, sadistic, and heavily intoxicated adults. Or, alternatively, it could represent a very literal memory that an unfortunate child might have of being at a masquerade party such as that depicted in the film *Eyes Wide Shut*.

Frankly, the behavior of those at the “tea party” reminds me of the group meals that take place in *120 Days of Sodom* by the Marquis de Sade. In this story, four crazy rich men imprison several young boys and girls for months, torturing them, raping them, dismembering them bit by bit, and then eventually killing them. The men also employ four old female prostitutes, whose job is to tell the whole group stories about similar debaucheries that they've either witnessed or heard about. In this novel, meal times always descend into orgies of abuse. The men say and do nutty, nonsensical things while insulting the kids and knocking them about. It truly does, in many ways, parallel the treatment that Alice and the Dormouse receive at the hands of the Mad Hatter and the March Hare.

The line in the song from the story told by the Mad Hatter, likening the bat to a "tea tray in the sky," seems like it might be foreshadowing what happens just as Alice is leaving, when she sees the other two trying to shove the Dormouse into the teapot. This, by the way, is depicted in an illustration in the book, and it looks almost exactly like an image found on one of the alleged Knights Templar artifacts that Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall writes about in his work, and which I discovered in the back catalogue at the British Museum. On the side of one of those caskets, there is a relief depicting two men shoving another person head-first into a large cauldron. The positions of each figure in this image are almost identical to those of the Hatter and the Hare shoving the Dormouse into the teapot.

Moreover, in Lewis Carroll's other story about Alice, *Through the Looking-Glass*, when Alice goes to dine with the Red and White Queens, the first thing she hears from outside the door of the castle is the singing of a chorus. One of the lines in the song they sing is "Put cats in the coffee, and mice in the tea." Clearly, "mouse" is an ingredient in the "tea," and the "tea" is some sort of intoxicating brew made with human biological material. It seems to have the same effect on the royal household and guests as it did on those at the Mad Hatter's party. There the food talks, the pudding threatens to take a slice out of Alice, and then the White Queen strokes her cheek creepily while telling her a riddle full of ominous metaphors.

The White Queen's riddle is about "fish" that is easy to catch, costs only a penny to buy, and is already lying in the "dish," ready to eat. But it's hard to remove the "dish-cover" from the "dish" to get at the "fish" because the "fish…holds it like glue…while it lies in the middle." Alice is then invited to "un-dish-cover the riddle."

To me, what the White Queen, a psychopathic sadist, is saying to Alice, her captive, is that little girls like her are cheap and easy to obtain, there for the taking for rich and powerful people who are inclined to make use of them. The only part of the process that requires any effort whatsoever is separating the soul from the body—lifting the lid from the dish—because the soul of the victim clings to life. This must be connected to "The Walrus and the Carpenter," a poem Alice heard from Tweedledum and Tweedledee earlier in the book. This poem told the story of some oysters that fell prey to their own curiosity, and were tricked into coming to dinner at the home of the Walrus, who proceeded to eat them. Later, when Alice is dining at the royal castle, she notes to the Red Queen that she's heard a large "quantity of poetry" that day, and that "every poem was about fishes in some way." Alice appears to remain oblivious to the fact that the "fishes" in these stories are people, and that those who sit at the table with her are "fishers of men," in a very literal and diabolical sense.

What happens next is straight out of De Sade. The Red Queen tells Alice to "take a minute" to contemplate the meaning of the song about the dish that won't open:

> *'Meanwhile, we'll drink your health—Queen Alice's health!' she screamed at the top of her voice, and all the guests began drinking it directly, and very queerly they managed it: some of them put their glasses upon their heads like extinguishers and drank all that trickled down their faces—others upset the decanters, and drank the wine as it ran off the edges of the table—and three of them (who looked like kangaroos) scrambled into the dish of roast mutton and began eagerly lapping up the gravy, 'just like pigs in a trough,' thought Alice.*

Now just a few moments earlier, the Red Queen had *introduced* Alice to the "mutton." When Alice had offered both of the queens "a slice," with a knife and fork in her hands, the Red Queen had rebuked her, saying, "it isn't etiquette to cut any one you've been introduced to." Well, "mutton" is a word related to the Old French *muton*, meaning "food for lust, loose women, prostitutes,' as well as to the Latin *muto* or *mutto*, an ancient Roman slang term for "penis."

So what were they all drinking that was making them act this way? Earlier, the chorus in the castle sang about "coffee" containing "cats," and "tea" containing "mice." A few minutes later, they sang another song that included the following lines:

> *…[F]ill up the glasses with treacle and ink*
>
> *Or anything else that is pleasant to drink.*

Recall the story the Dormouse told about the three sisters living at the bottom of the "treacle" well, surviving solely on "treacle" that they "drew" themselves. The stuff running off the tables in this final scene with the Red and White Queens, which the guests are kneeling to drink as it trickles down their faces, is described as "wine," while the stuff in the dish that the three people said to look "like kangaroos" jump into is termed "gravy." At the Mad Hatter's party, Alice is first offered "wine," but when she notes that she doesn't see any on the table, she's told: "There isn't any." The Hatter and the Hare seem to be sharing a joke at her expense, where the unspoken punchline is that the "wine" is the "tea," but it's really neither wine nor tea.

I think we can assume that these are all either words for the same substance, or words for different preparations made from the same substance. They could be different substances, too, but they call come from the same type of "dish"—the same "container," which is resistant to being opened because what is inside has instinct for self-preservation. The Red Queen tells Alice "we'll drink your health"—*not* "we'll drink to your health"—because that's exactly what they are doing.

They are "drinking" her "health": draining the life force out of her and sucking it up.

No wonder Alice instinctively fights back, grabbing the Red Queen and shaking her violently, only to then snap out of what must have been merely a terrifying flashback, realizing suddenly that she’s actually been violently shaking her poor little pet kitten. Such is often the fate of pets trusted to children who have endured horrific abuse. The kids become abusive themselves, and lash out at anyone who is unlikely to fight back.

Lewis Carroll’s Alice books are a combination of the dreams, fantasies, false memories, suppressed trauma, and hallucinations that would likely be streaming through the consciousness of a little girl subjected to severe maltreatment, a steady diet of psychedelic drugs begun at an early age, and threat-embedded hypnotic suggestions hidden in the form of nursery rhymes about children being killed, repeated on a daily basis. The Cheshire cat’s proclamation that everybody in Wonderland is “mad,” which he says to Alice as he grins maniacally at her from a treetop, is just the sort of thing that a child abuser at a snuff party would say to a victim. The message is: “Don’t bother appealing to the reason or morals of the adults that you see here, and don’t expect our behavior to make sense, or to be acceptable, because everyone here is crazy.”

This terrifying image of a floating, talking cat head with a menacing smile, which is how the Cheshire Cat appears to Alice in the woods, is just like historical descriptions of the Devil worshipped by European witches hundreds of years ago, or the Baphomet idol worshipped by the Knights Templar in the Middle Ages, discussed previously. As I mentioned, the Templar idol was sometimes termed a “mauffe’s head,” or a “mause head.” In the book *Masks of Misrule*, by Nigel Jackson, confessing warlock Roland de Vernois said at a witch trial in 1598 that, as Jackson put it, “hellish Scottish ceremonies evoked the feline demon or Master-cat called ‘Big Ears.’” Jackson also mentions the Celtic “King Cairbre Cinn-cait, the divine ancestor of the Erainn [the Irish],” whose name meant “of the cat’s head.” But Jackson also talks about the traditions from the Isle of Man regarding the “Mauthe Doog,” or “Black Dog,” also called the “Church Grim.” His presence was thought it be an omen of death. (Perhaps Robert DeGrimston of the Process Church, who supposedly chose his last name “for occult reasons,” had the Church Grim in mind when he picked it.)

It does seem that, whether we're talking about ancient myths, or fairy tales, or classic novels, or films, or music, there are clues embedded into everything that we are surrounded with regarding nasty private parties held by the elite, where human fluids—sometimes even blood from still-living, tortured children—is consumed as a drug, and the pitiful cries of the victims are a form of amusement to the psychopath participants. For this intoxicating effect, it seems, even animal blood will do. As I mentioned, the Manson Family's "White Rabbit" says that he saw Family members "taking hits" of off jars of dog blood, and Susan Atkins said that they used is as an aphrodisiac.

Rolling around in it was apparently a common activity at their orgies, where the blood would be poured on people having sex from above, just like the guests at dinner at the royal castle with Alice, who were wallowing in the "wine" and "gravy." White Rabbit says that Charles Manson once, as Adam Gorightly describes it, "put on a devil's head mask and initiated two fifteen year old girls with his magical rod, as blood was poured over their quivering bodies…."

It could very well be that it is the hormonal content in these mysterious concoctions which constitutes the "pepper" spoken of so cryptically in the Alice stories. Certainly, consuming blood freshly from the body of someone who is dying in a terrifying, violent manner is going to increase adrenaline in the consumer, making that person even more aggressive. Adrenochrome levels are higher in schizophrenics than other people in society. Some doctors think that this might actually be what causes the schizophrenic thinking, as adrenochrome has a chemical structure similar to LSD and mescaline. In *Fear and Loathing in Las Vegas*, Hunter S. Thompson describes the effect of adrenochrome consumption as being "like a combination of mescaline and methadrine [methamphetamine]."

Returning to *Alice's Adventures in Wonderland*, when, towards the end of the book, Alice once more meets the Duchess (the woman with the peppery kitchen who abused the sneezing baby), it says:

> *Alice was very glad to find her in such a pleasant temper, and thought to*

> *herself that perhaps it was only the pepper that had made her so savage when they met in the kitchen.*
>
> *'When I'm a Duchess,' she said to herself (not in a very hopeful tone, though), 'I won't have any pepper in my kitchen at all. Soup does very well without—Maybe it's always pepper that makes people hot-tempered,' she went on….*

But perhaps it is the consumption of "pepper"-rich "tea" and "wine" that also explains why the White Queen has managed to live to 101 years, five months and one day when Alice meets her, as reported in *Through the Looking Glass*. Schizophrenia, and thus, elevated adrenochrome levels, are correlated with a much lower incidence of cancer in humans.

The songs of John Lennon and Paul McCartney were very much influenced by the stories of Lewis Carroll. Thus, the same esoteric secrets embedded in Carroll's work can be found throughout everything that the Beatles did. This holds true for the animated film *Yellow Submarine*, even though none of them were involved in writing the script, nor were they enthusiastic about doing the movie. Nonetheless, occult secrets about cannibalism, alchemy, and sex magic run through the whole film, which was made by people very clearly privy to the Beatles' involvement with the Process Church. It tells, in allegory, all about a hugely ambitious ritual that the Beatles seem to have been used to act out.

In the movie, right after "Lucy in the Sky with Diamonds" is played, the Sergeant Pepper band (portrayed as the Beatles' alter egos) are seen walking on panes of glass that seem to form a ceiling in the sky, surrounded by statues and busts. The busts all have silhouettes in their center formed into the shape of the outline of a human brain. These "cut-out" black areas act like screens onto which various scenes can be projected. The Sergeant Pepper band has been watching the Beatles playing on one of these screens, and when the song ends, one of them encourages the others to continue walking.

“Carry on, lads. Carry on,” he says.

Of course, that sounds just like “carrion,” a term for decaying flesh. Paul then says to a cluster of eight busts arranged in a circle, “Can you tell us the way to Pepperland?” The busts reply with a red arrow that runs through all of the brain screens in a circular course, as if to indicate that “Pepperland” is within the human brain: the hormones produced by the pineal gland.

They continue strolling, and walk out over what appears to be stars in space, as seen from above the panes of glass. Then they all bend down and begin picking up “dust” with their gloved hands.

“Gosh, look at all this dust,” one of them says. “Where did it come from?”

“A chemical error, I’m quite imprecise,” replies their know-it-all companion, Hillary J. Boob. “This is a condiment, a spice.”

“He’s right, you know. It’s a pepper,” says John, handing a sample to Paul, who repeats what he says incredulously. John repeats the word “pepper” a third time. Just then, Ringo sneezes, and George does too. Then all of the busts nearby sneeze as well, blowing the five of them down a hole into the ground, back into the “Sea of Holes” where they were before.

What is this “pepper”? It’s in the sky, and in the air, just like in the scene with Alice at the house of the Dutchess. It causes a histaminic reaction, including sneezing, just like the pepper in Wonderland. It causes hallucinations, like the pepper in Wonderland did to the frog-faced footman that Alice saw staring up at something in the sky. It causes brutish behavior, such as the way Alice witnessed the baby being treated. Then Alice herself, after inhaling the pepper, also abused the baby, and called it a “pig,” exactly what the Manson Family called their victims. (Pork, by the way, is apparently quite similar in taste to human flesh, and smells very much the same when cooked.)

In *Yellow Submarine*, the members of Sergeant Pepper’s Lonely Hearts Club Band are very abusive to Hillary, a stowaway who travels along in their submarine. They call him names repeatedly, and curse him by pointing at him with the “devil horns” hand sign dozens of times throughout the movie. None of this is ever explained in the film, and nothing the Beatles have ever said about the meaning of these things has ever been adequate.

I am quite convinced at this point that the “pepper” is some extract of the human body, like adrenochrome, that can be rendered into a powder and also aerosolized. Snorting drugs is known to cause sneezing and nasal irritation, as do vaporized chemicals. Sneezing can, of course, also be caused by viruses.

At this present writing, there are many people suffering from chronic respiration problems that they believe are coming from chemicals being deliberately injected into the atmosphere by airplanes. Nobody knows exactly what these manufactured clouds and lines in the sky contain, but suspected fallout from them has been collected and tested repeatedly by people all over the world. What they find is that the material contains live viruses, bizarre unidentified parasites, and various other biological material gathered from both human and animal sources.

It seems like we are all being dosed with “pepper,” with the intention of making us all ill, both physically and mentally. Notably, these “chemtrails” are often found to be crafted in the shape of pentagrams, squares, circles, and other, more arcane sigils, as though whoever made them is literally attempting to cast a death curse on the populace. Remember the witches’ brew from *Macbeth*?

> *Round about the cauldron go*

In the poisoned entrails throw

…

For a charm of powerful trouble

Like a hell-broth boil and bubble

Notably, the effects of these modern "chemtrails" include the distortion of the colors in the sky. In heavily chemtrailed cities, the skies are almost psychedelic-looking on many days: neon-pink in the middle of the day, and mis-matched patches of darker and lighter bits that begin and end abruptly, bright white sun, and clouds that sometimes have rainbows *within them*. All of this greatly resembles the look of Pepperland in *Yellow Submarine*.

It has been deduced by other writers that "Sergeant Pepper" is Aleister Crowley, for in the song they say "It was 20 years ago today, Sergeant Pepper taught the band to play." Crowley had died 20 years earlier, and this has been taken by many as the event that this line must be referring to. It's a reasonable guess, as the word "pepper" contains three letters "p." When a "p," particularly a lower-case one, is turned upside-down, it resembles the numeral 6.

Aleister Crowley called himself by the nickname "the Great Beast 666." We know that each of the Beatles were studying Crowley's magical system, as there are references to it all over their music, and Paul always wrote down his OTO appointments in his appointment book. Of the Hollywood stars and other assorted famous folks depicted on the cover of the *Sergeant Pepper* album, Crowley's face is the second from the left on the top row. Marilyn Monroe is prominently positioned near the top row.

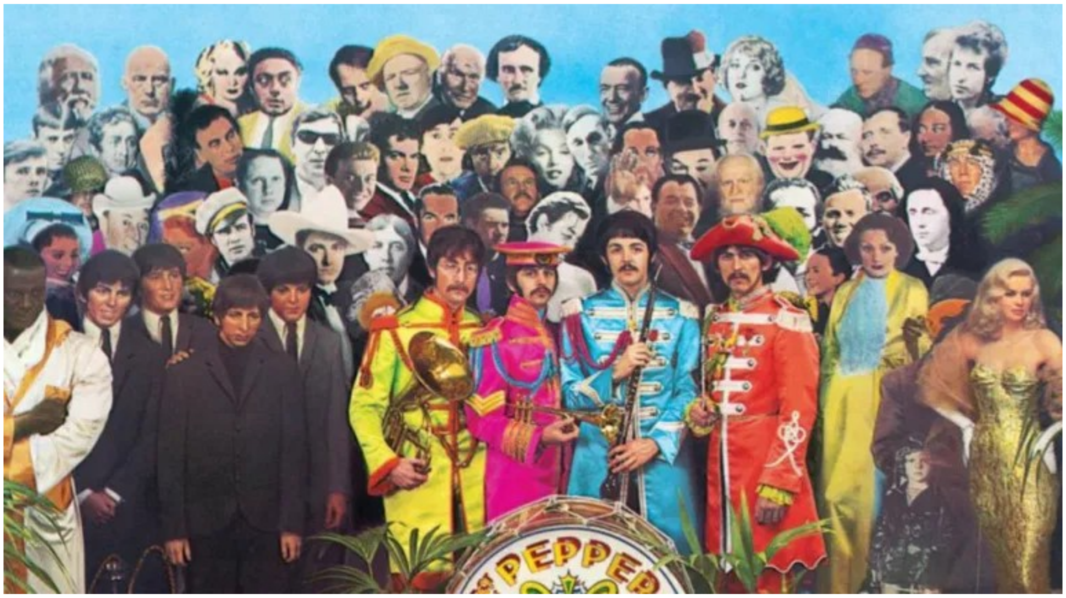

Without going into too much explanation, as I have a longer essay on this topic already in the works, here's how I take it. The "Lonely Hearts Club" consists of famous and influential people who have been enlisted into the same occult mafia cabal as the Beatles. The 3 ps represent Crowley, and also, most likely, the three paths of the Process Church's pantheon of Lucifer, Jehovah, Satan, and Christ (which they specifically defined as "Three Paths and a Quagmire," relegating the Christian path to that of the muddled "grey forces"). The way in which this cabal controls Hollywood and the music industry now has indeed been influenced by Aleister Crowley, for since he died, music and movie stars have been flashing specific OTO/AA penalty signs during their publicity photos, as they do today. The sex and sacrifice rites, as well as the consumption of drugs, and of human body fluids as drugs, are all integral to how the game is played, and "Sergeant Pepper" is credited with having taught them all about it.

The lay members of this "club" are described as "lonely hearts" because they are like Alice: sitting at the bottom of the "rabbit-hole," having been tricked into falling in, tripping on drugs she has no understanding of, uncertain of her own identity, terrified that she will be murdered, and sad that she won't go to Heaven because her soul has disappeared. A typical star spends a great deal of his or her time feeling that they are at "rock bottom," isolated and imprisoned, having drugs shoved at them, never knowing what's coming next, or if they will live through it.

They have all been told that they will never go to Heaven because they joined the club. This is the same symbolism now rampant in the “emo rap” music popular today: “sad boys” and “sad girls” with face tattoos of broken heart emojis, whining about loneliness and the loss of their eternal souls, boasting of sadism, masochism, misanthropy, suicidal tendencies, and addictions to substances that seem more like date rape drugs than party drugs: Xanax, fentanyl, “lean,” etc.

This is why the “Beatles” are replaced on the album cover by the “Sergeant Pepper” band. (In the film, they are actually replaced by cartoons and have actors playing their voices because the Beatles hated the film, and insisted on participating in its production as little as possible, only permitting it to be made because they were under a contract that required it. This, I think, is because they had already been put through many humiliating experiences, and felt that the movie was mocking them about it, with inside jokes about embarrassing things that had happened to them, or shameful things that they had done. I will only discuss some of the evidence I have for this here, and save the rest for a much longer essay in the future.

The way I see it, the “Sergeant Pepper” band are alters, secondary personalities created through the trauma experienced by the Beatles as they ascended the ladder of success. The waxwork figures of the Beatles wearing black suits on the cover of the album, standing right next to the “Sergeant Pepper band,” who are wearing colorful naval captain uniforms, represent the bodies that their souls used to inhabit, staring blankly ahead, colorless because they have been drained of all life.

The real Beatles have been beaten, sucked dry of their juice, turned from shimmering diamonds in the sky with their hearts on their sleeves into “dark suits”: clubs and spades, weapons of deception and destruction. Now under the command of the British military, or subversive elements within it, they act as psychedelic drug propagandists, tasked with getting all the other members of the “Lonely Hearts Club” into the same “boat.” Once their friends (other celebrities with cultural influence) were “all aboard,” the “band” would begin playing a different tune for everybody to dance to, and those in the “club” would spread the cultural virus to get us *all* into the Yellow Submarine together, sailing off into a new universe that hasn't even been created yet. It was to be an experiment in manipulating time and space by manipulating the psyche of the masses. This movie was merely the announcement of it.

The Beatles' "climb to success" is represented in the Yellow Submarine film by the Aztec pyramid that the band has to climb up to get to the submarine, which takes off and flies as soon as they get in. They went there because they were being pursued by the "blue meanies" (blue, like police uniforms?). These villains are all wearing hats that look *exactly* like Mickey Mouse ears, except for one, who's wearing a hat with black rabbit ears instead (like Oswald the Lucky Rabbit?). Before fleeing to the pyramid, these guys witnessed the band members that preceded them being picked off by the Blue Meanies one by one.

Aztec pyramids were temples streaming with rivers of human blood at all times, where people were sacrificed to monstrous "gods" with the heart ripped out of the chest while it was still beating. An Aztec/Mayan temple is also featured in the Beatles cartoon that goes with their psychedelic song "Tomorrow Never Knows." This song is based on Timothy Leary's reinterpretation of *The Tibetan Book of the Dead*, a text meant to be read to dying Buddhists. (Leary and two colleagues rewrote it as a text to be read while one is tripping on acid).

In the "Tomorrow Never Knows" cartoon, John instructs a young "native" (who looks more like Pocahontas than an Aztec or Mayan girl) to "surrender to the void," and assures her "this is not dying," as she dances with eyes blazing in front of blood-splattered temple walls decorated with horrible monsters. An upright-walking creature with moose antlers and glowing red eyes commands worship and directs the ceremonies.

Stills from Tomorrow Never Knows (image added by editor)

Tomorrow Never Knows - (https://vimeo.com/177755690)

Interestingly, around the time that the Beatles were preparing to release this song on the Revolver album (August 1966), the Process Church was preparing to move their headquarters from London to the Yucatan. There, they made their temple in an abandoned salt factory in a town known for salt production. They named the temple “Xtul,” after a local Mayan ruin. They told some of their members that the word meant “the End,” as in the end of the world, their favorite subject. Of course, the Mayan calendar was thought to predict the end of the world as coming two days before Christmas in 2012, and New Age nuts were anticipating that for decades in advance.

But Xtul (pronounced “juh-tool,” I believe) actually translates to “rabbit.” Xtul was the Mayan name for the rabbit that both Mayans and Aztecs believed to inhabit the Moon. Since the Moon is white, that makes him “the White Rabbit,” which is the reason why Manson Family member Larry Melton called himself “White Rabbit,” reportedly. Izamal is the name of the ancient city where the ruin named “Xtul” exists. It has always been called “the Yellow City,” since the beginning, because the temples are painted yellow.

Now one of the “similarities” between the Process Church and the Manson Family that Adam Gorightly pointed out in his book is that “Manson spoke frequently of the bottomless pit,” while the Process taught about “the bottomless void.” So could this be the “void” that the Beatles were singing about surrendering to in *Tomorrow Never Knows*—their own “rabbit hole”? While they were singing “lay down all thoughts,” Manson was singing his song “Cease to Exist” to his cult members. Though they claim it’s about doing “ego death” during an acid trip, the real *Tibetan Book of the Dead* is meant to be read while someone is *actually* dying. The words “tomorrow never knows” implies that you will never know tomorrow, and, indeed, that tomorrow won’t even exist, like at the end of the world.

Note too that the Processians had to abandon their own Xtul temple when a hurricane threatened to submerge them in salty ocean water, just like the rabbit’s hole in Wonderland was submerged in an ocean of Alice’s salty tears. Paul McCartney claimed that the inspiration for the name “Sergeant Pepper” came from an accidental mishearing of someone saying “Salt and Pepper.” This story has several symbolic purposes, I think.

One purpose is to evoke the thought of the abandoned salt factory in the salt-mining town in the Yucatan where their friends in the Process Church fled salty waves that were sweeping over their “bottomless void,” the rabbit-hole of their Moon-rabbit temple, their “Yellow Submarine,” a.k.a. “Xtul.” (*Rabbit’s Moon*, by the way, was used as a title for a film about Moon magic rituals made by Kenneth Anger.) For the same reason, in the *Yellow Submarine* film, when Sergeant Pepper’s band lands back on the Aztec temple in “Pepperland” after escaping the Sea of Holes through the “Sea of Green” (also a reference to the green of “Hyperuranion,” the realm beyond the universe), one of them declares that it’s “a bit too salty around the edges for my taste.”

Lewis Carroll’s Wonderland is ruled by the King and Queen of Hearts, particularly the cruel queen, who is always threatening to decapitate everyone. In a TV miniseries produced by the Syfy channel several years ago, this figure was combined with the attributes of the Red Queen in *Through the Looking Glass* (as she is in the Disney version as well.) Syfy's Queen of Hearts was portrayed as ruling over a casino that was also a prison. There she kept abductees in a continuous trance, thoughtlessly gambling nonstop for years at a time. A special mechanism was set up within the casino prison that allowed for the "feelings" of join and disappointment felt by these hapless prisoners to be collected into bottles in the form of liquids. They were then consumed by the Queen, who got high off of them.

This is a very clever way of demonstrating, in a literal way, the vampirism and cannibalism that is being alluded to metaphorically in Lewis Carroll's tales of Alice—stuff that Satan-worshipping child-abusing cults actually do participate in literally. They are indeed feeding off the hormones produced by the fear and pain they inflict upon the people they abuse. The "Lonely Hearts Club" consists of just such victims, and Sergeant Pepper (Crowley) knew just how to "play" them to produce the "spices" that the leaders of the cult love to feed on.

Among other telling songs on the Beatles' Revolver, there is "Eleanor Rigby," which I believe is a veiled death threat to the real Queen of England. Her monogram "E II R" (Elizabeth II, Regina) is, as I see it, implied by the title. The Beatles once claimed that they made the name up. Then a grave in their old neighborhood was found bearing this name, and they said that they must have seen it at one point, but forgotten where the influence came from. I think that they remembered the name was there all along, but used it intentionally as a code for Queen Elizabeth.

The song describes her being buried "along with her name," at a funeral that nobody attends. It's telling us about the monarchy being destroyed, possibly through assassination. The "Father Mackensie" character described as "wiping the dirt from his hands as he walks from her grave" could very well be a Process hitman, since they called their leaders "Father" and "Mother." Also, this "Mickey/Mack" symbolism seems to be a thing with them and their affiliates, marking someone who is a hitman and a dispenser of drugs (for both fun, and for malicious intent).

The lyrics to the song also implore “ER” to “look at all the lonely people.” It’s as though the evil “Queen of Hearts” in Lewis Carrol’s Wonderland is being forced to confront all of the souls that have been lost through the machinations of the ruling elite, their occult societies, and their secret government black ops. “No one was saved,” the song says. No souls were saved, and no lives will be spared in the “Final Judgement” of which these prophets were singing. “Father Mackensie,” the hitman who killed the Queen, walks away remorseless, dusting the dirt from his hands in disgust and washing himself of any guilt for being the “final judge.”

Why do I say this? At the time that the Beatles were recording this song, the Process Church was being pushed out of England, most likely because of some confrontation with the “Blue Meanies,” the cops. Another anti-authoritarian song on *Revolver* is “Taxman,” which may reflect problems that the Church was having at the time. Then there’s “Dr. Robert,” a song about a prolific dispenser of drugs that didn’t make it on the American pressing of the album.

They claimed, many years later, that it was about “some doctor in New York” they’d heard about who gave drugs to rich clients. But could it not have been Robert DeGrimston? In America, this song was put on *Yesterday and Today*, the album that features the Beatles on the cover wearing white coats like doctors, with raw meat and dismember baby dolls piled all over them, as if to indicate the real source of the drugs that “Doctor Robert” dispenses.

When, in the movie, the yellow submarine first begins to travel in time, it enters what the Sergeant says is the “Sea of Science.” We then see the Yellow Submarine from outside, swimming like a ghastly cowfish in the blue waters, and the scene becomes pixilated into a set of square tiles. The yellow tiles representing the submarine then transform, pausing for several seconds in the form of a yellow Christian cross before it becomes a single golden box.

The picture is not exactly identical, but it is close enough to be instantly recognizable to anybody who has ever looked at Aleister Crowley’s *Thoth* tarot deck before. It’s the image on the “Science” card, the Six of Swords, which also has a yellow Christian cross made out of squares on it. It's an unfolded hypercube, a "tesseract." It's a multidimensional object. It's use in this movie is to represent how the yellow submarine can act as a time machine by traveling through hyperspace.

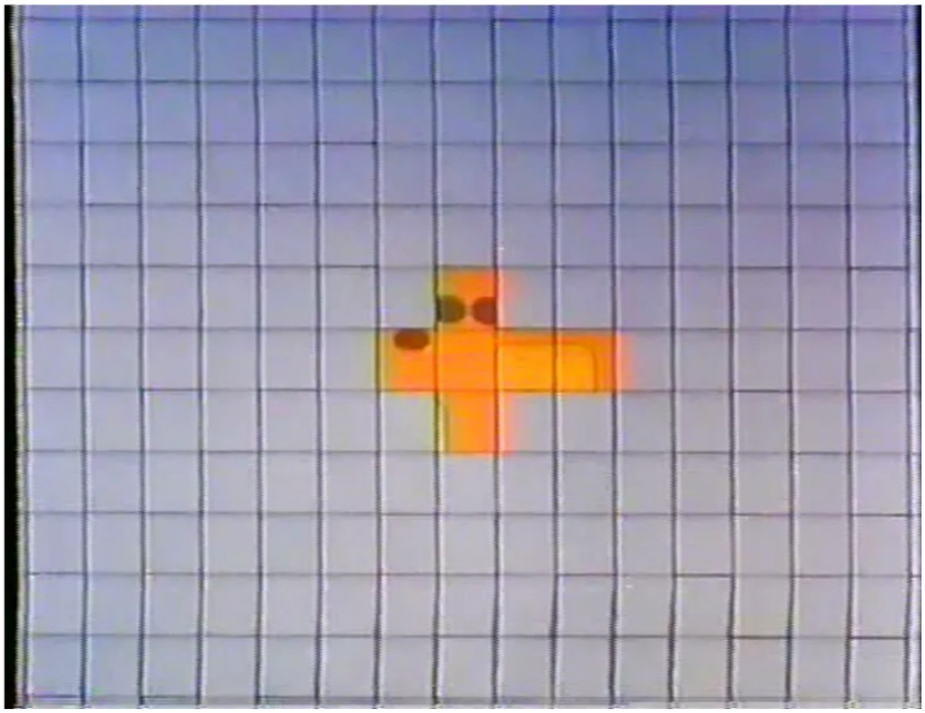

Yellow Submarine transforms in the Sea of Science

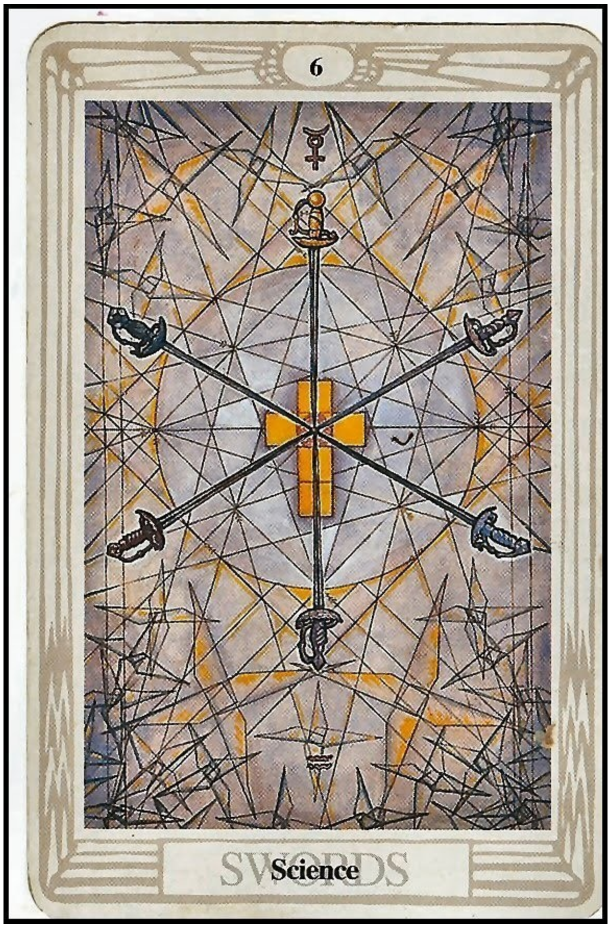

There are many layers of symbolism here, and I won't go through all of them here. But it's not a coincidence that Sergeant Pepper has the appearance of an officer in the British navy, and as "LSD" or "Landing Ship Dock" is the British Navy's term for a type of amphibious warfare ship, of which a submarine would be considered a subtype. Among these, any type that can contains a helipad is called an "LHD." These just happen to be the initials of the "Large Hadron Collider," the particle accelerator at CERN in Switzerland, purportedly capable of bending space and time.

1966—the year the "Yellow Submarine" song was released, and the year that the Process Church did their world-ending rituals at Xtul in Mexico—was declared by Anton LaVey to be "Year 1 Anno Satanis." He was starting the calendar over on the day that his church was founded, April 30, in order to upstage Jesus. This fact seems to be acknowledged when Roman Castevet shouts “to Year One!” at the New Year’s Eve party in *Rosemary’s Baby*, which was set in 1965/1966.

I believe that this new aeon of time that people like Aleister Crowley and Anton LaVey were anticipating was a new order of hierarchy for the “planetary archons,” or gods. This concept is represented in the Astrum Argentum order’s ritual called “the Equinox of the Gods.” In this rite, the planetary archons play musical chairs, and Chronos/Saturn, who is equated in the ritual with Jesus Christ, is forced to move over a seat so that Horus can rule from the throne over the “New Aeon.” I think the same idea may be alluded to when, at the Mad Hatter’s tea party, instead of getting clean dishes from the cupboard, or washing the ones they have out, each individual at the table is made to move one seat down to the next place setting whenever somebody needs to use a clean cup.

But these “aeons” that we speak of are really the Greek Gnostic concept of them: as living gods that embody their own universes within them. Being so, they also contain within them their own epochs of time. Thus, each “planet,” in the ancient view, was a universe like our own, with its own timeline. Yet they interacted with each other on a larger, transcendental timeline, and they had a hierarchy of positions among them. So when they changed those positions, a new “aeon” or “age” would be ascendant, while the others became submerged beneath what was now the present reality in the cosmic ocean. This is how such things as “the Age of Atlantis” can be viewed as another universe that once existed, and still exists on some level, but can still be seen as part of an aeon that is no longer in the ruling position.

Is this what the Latin words on the Great Seal of the United States, featured on the left-side roundel on the back of the US one-dollar bill, are referring to? *Novus Ordo Seclorum* is most often translated as “a New Order of the Ages.” Is this the “revolution” the Beatles were singing about? Is this what the album title Revolver actually means: the circle of the Zodiac, symbolized by Ringo—Ouranos, the Ouroboros—“revolving” to a different position—not just the “Precession of the Equinoxes,” but something even more radical?

According to a website called The Open Scroll (http://theopenscroll.blogspot.com/), authored by Bob Schlenker, the Satanic elite practice sex rituals capable of bending space-time. The type of rite capable of doing this, the author there says, is a homosexual "daisy chain" rite with three or more men penetrating each other anally as if in a "conga line." While this may seem utterly preposterous, there are men, such as Stewart Swerdlow, and the late Preston Nichols, who claim that when they were young they were used in government experiments in Montauk, New York that involved homosexual abuse. They say that while this was going on, their heads were strapped to a device that was somehow gathering energy from their brain waves. These self-professed victims claim that the purpose of these activities was to affect time, and that it was all somehow a continuation of the time/space-bending "Philadelphia Experiment," allegedly conducted by the US military during World War II.

On the Open Scroll website, Bob Schlenker decodes a number of time travel films that he says contain secrets about how to bend time with a homosexual ritual. He shows that this sex orgy "conga line" was implied by the images on the posters for the Back to the *Future* films. He also shows that the same motif is featured in another, more modern comedy film that spoofs popular time travel films. Schlenker then decodes the film *Rocky Horror Picture Show*, including the scene where the vampires in the gothic castle do the "Time Warp" song and dance. The lyrics precisely describe, and the actors even then demonstrate, a group sado-masochistic (largely male homosexual) sex orgy involving a conga line dance.

Amazingly, one of the actors in this scene looks exactly like Hillary Clinton does now, if she were the size of a midget. Isn't it interesting that Hillary Clinton's team has been implicated in Aleister Crowley-related "spirit cooking" rituals involving cannibalism and sperm-drinking? Did Hillary Clinton do the "Time Warp" and project her spirit double backwards in time to star in this movie? Or did the movie warp the future to accurately predict exactly what Hillary Clinton would look like?

Consider too that I have explained, in a previous article about this theory of mine, that she might be the "Whore of Babalon" prophesied by Aleister Crowley acolyte Jack Parsons. Mr. Parsons was the rocket scientist who founded JPL (the Jet

Propulsion Laboratory) in California. As depicted in the recent CBS show "Strange Angel," Parsons was involved with the Agape Lodge of the O.T.O. in Pasadena, California. He was personal friends (or so he thought) with L. Ron Hubbard, who, prior to founding Scientology, worked for Naval Intelligence, and had infiltrated the OTO as a spy on behalf of the government.

Parsons was influential within the order, and corresponded with Aleister Crowley personally. He wrote a channeled document called *The Book of the Antichrist* that is considered scripture by some Crowley followers. It was in this writing that he asserted "Hilarion" was a title for the "Whore of Babalon." At a time that roughly lines up with Hillary Clinton's alleged nativity, Parsons was said to have been involved in a sex magic/science project with the goal of creating a "moonchild"—a supernaturally-influenced homunculus—that would play the role of this Scarlet Lady, described by St. John the Divine as "drunken" with "blood," holding "a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication."

In order to allow the proper spirit from Hell to take possession of his "moonchild," Parsons is said to have done something to open up a rift in the universe, creating a portal through which it could travel. These kinds of portals are the same things called "holes" in the film *Yellow Submarine*, and there's a whole sea of them! Yet, Ringo—a.k.a. Ouranos Ouroboros, the castrated "Perfect Man" of the Zodiac swallowing his own tail—is able to pick one up and put it in his "pocket." Just what kind of a "hole" are we talking about?

Also, why, exactly, is the accursed character in the *Yellow Submarine* film called "Hillary J. Boob"? He seems to be playing the role of the Gnostic Demiurge, for the Sergeant Pepper band tasks him with the apparently *unwanted* job of *recreating the universe*, after they cause it to disappear into the "Sea of Nothing." (They got there by going through one of those holes.) Hillary Boob is a writer by trade, and here acts as the creator of the Logos, the word that was spoken and written to form the heavens and the earth. It is his job to write the songs that will tell the story of the new universe that he and the band will create together.

But the bandmates constantly criticize Hillary for being too logical, too verbose, and for thinking he knows everything. This is exactly what the Gnostics criticized the Demiurge for. Throughout the film, they curse him with the Goat of Mendes hand sign, just like they do to the Blue Meanies constantly, and just as the Blue Meanies do to them constantly. But Hillary seems oblivious to it all.

Another thing I find strange about Hillary Boob is his face. It looks like he's wearing a mask. Frankly it looks like he's wearing the mask that would be used by the serial killer in the movie Saw many years later. What is really freaky is that there is a rumor that Hillary Clinton is herself a serial killer, with a long list of hits. Many of these alleged victims were her known enemies, who died in mysterious ways.

But among the more bizarre accusations are those stating that she personally attends child snuff parties with occult rituals where children are killed in gruesome ways. As the story goes, somebody took a film of Clinton and her companion Huma Abedin personally torturing and killing two little girls. It was supposedly found by the NYPD on the laptop of Abedin's then-husband Anthony Weiner. Among the tortures, Clinton is said to be seen on the video personally slicing off one girl's face. She then purportedly wears the flayed skin as a mask while she torments the other terrified girl.

The original video file was allegedly named "frazzledrip." Frazzle means "to fray," to scrape, to peal something from around the edges. "Fray" is also related to the world "afraid." I think we know what "drip" would mean in this context. The goal, after all, is to make the victim the secrete maximum adrenaline by causing them extreme fear and acute pain.

I wonder how long the "frazzledrip" ritual has been going on behind closed doors. Even if it isn't Hillary Clinton in the video, and even if the video is completely fake, I think it is highly likely to be based on something that somebody, somewhere, is actually doing. It has already been pointed out that this very scenario—a villain abducting two children and cutting the face off of one, then wearing it as a mask to menace the other—plays out in a cartoon called "Unbelievable Tales," featuring "Mr. Jellybean." This character would later be included in an episode of "Rick and Morty" on Adult Swim, in which the same figure, now "King Jellybean," is again depicted as a sadistic child rapist and murderer.

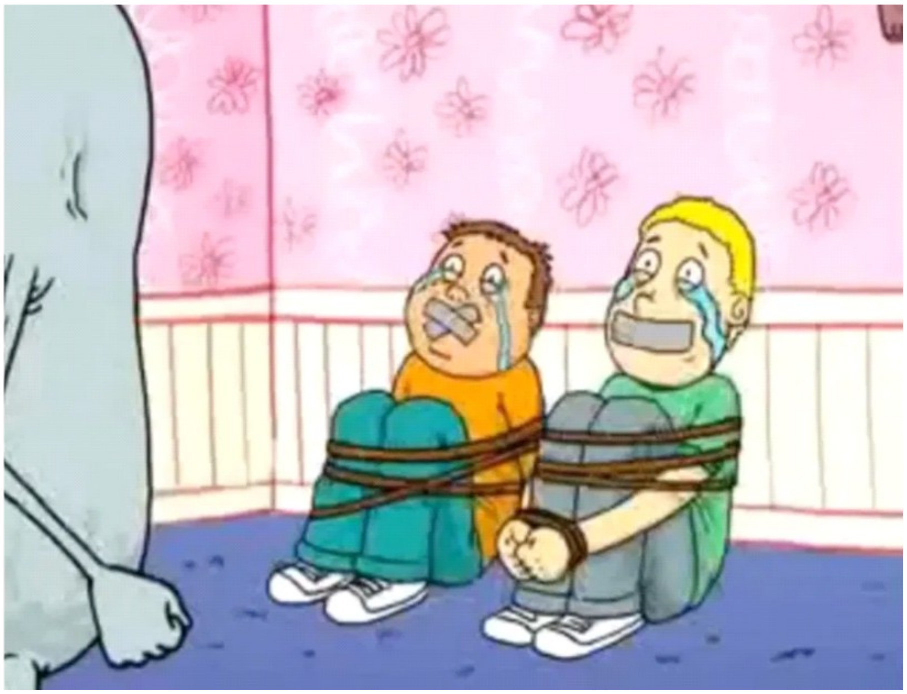

Still from Unbelievable Tales

The reason why it's called "Unbelievable Tales," of course, is because the cartoon was created as a warning to people who have actually witnessed such atrocities telling them not to bother trying to tell anybody because they won't be believed. This is a classic line given to abuse victims to keep them quiet. One of the people who created this cartoon, Dan Harmon, has recently been exposed for having a history of making "comedy" films about raping babies, and making similar jokes on Twitter. He is part of a circle of friends in Hollywood who apparently share the same interests. Others have talked about this at length, so I won't bother. But nobody else has pointed out that the term "bean"—as in "Mr. Jellybean"—seems to have a particular meaning in the child snuff porn market.

Without naming names or going into detail, I discovered a number of accounts on YouTube, Soundcloud and Instagram, as well as some independent websites, where the word “bean” appeared to be used as a code. It appears to indicate something involving videos of children being hurt, and who are destined to be killed before long (as indicated by other codes that were also used in conjunction with “bean”). This seems to be the symbolism behind “beanwave,” which purports to be an ironically humorous meme-based “genre” of music.

One might assume that the whole “joke” about the songs labeled as “beanwave” on YouTube and Soundcloud is that the videos and thumbnail images used often involve Rowan Atkinson, a.k.a. “Mr. Bean.” But if you look at some of the comments on these videos, and note that one of the most popular “beanwave” songs is called “All these broken hearts,” you’ll understand that something else entirely is going on. Another clue I found was a “beanwave” account on Instagram containing subtle but unmistakable references to the Finders cult. This is a group investigated by police for abducting and selling children, having sex with them in rituals, and subjecting them to traumatizing Satanic rites involving a goat sacrifice.

Another video has been posted on YouTube recently that is embedded with clues referencing the Finders cult, but presented with the pretense that it is an entertaining cartoon aimed at young toddlers. This video introduces a color-coding system that the video’s description (quite overtly) says is meant to trigger different hypnotic reactions in a child victim who is being abused, including “forgetting the atrocities that you have seen.”

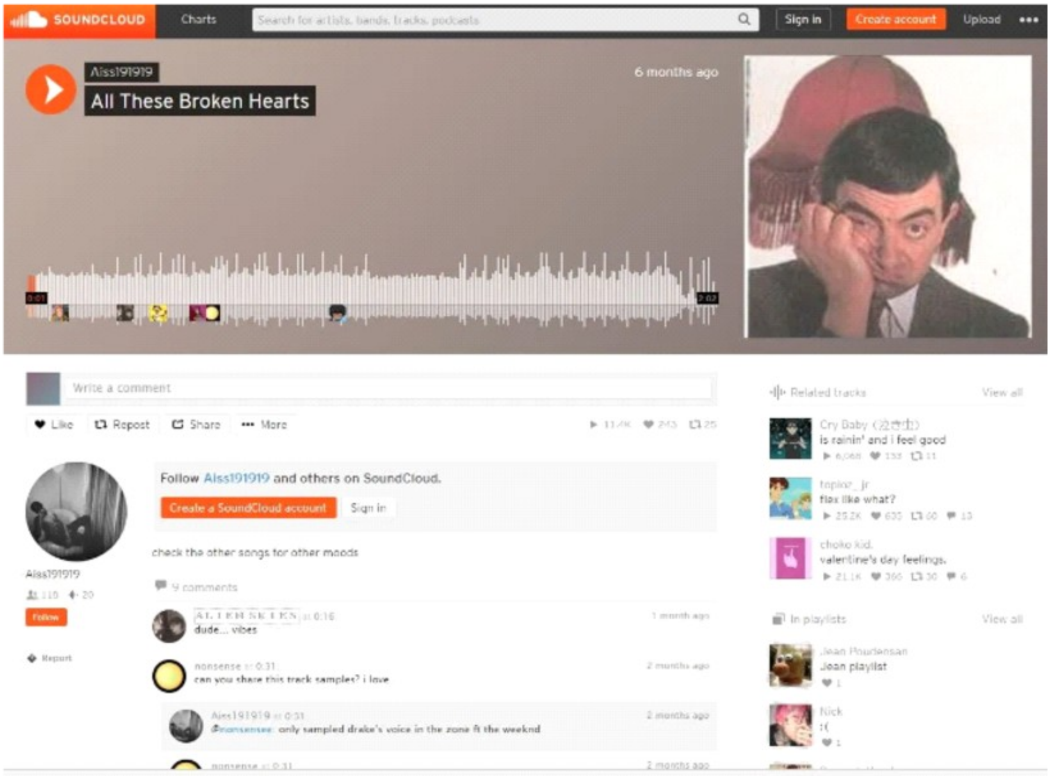

SOUNDCLOUD
Charts
Search for artists, bands, tracks, podcasts
Sign in
Create account
Upload
Write a comment
Like
Repost
Share
More
Related tracks
View all
In playlists
View all
Create a SoundCloud account
Sign in
Follow
Report

Aiss191919

All These Broken Hearts

6 months ago

Follow Aiss191919 and others on SoundCloud.

check the other songs for other moods

9 comments

ALIEN SKIES at 0:16 — 1 month ago
dude... vibes

nonsense at 0:31 — 2 months ago
can you share this track samples? i love

Aiss191919 at 0:31 — 2 months ago
@nonsense only sampled drake's voice in the zone ft the weeknd

nonsense at 0:31 — 2 months ago

Cry Baby (泣き虫)
is rainin' and i feel good

topicz_jr
flex like what?

choko kid.
valentine's day feelings.

Jean Pourdensan
Jean playlist

Nick
:(

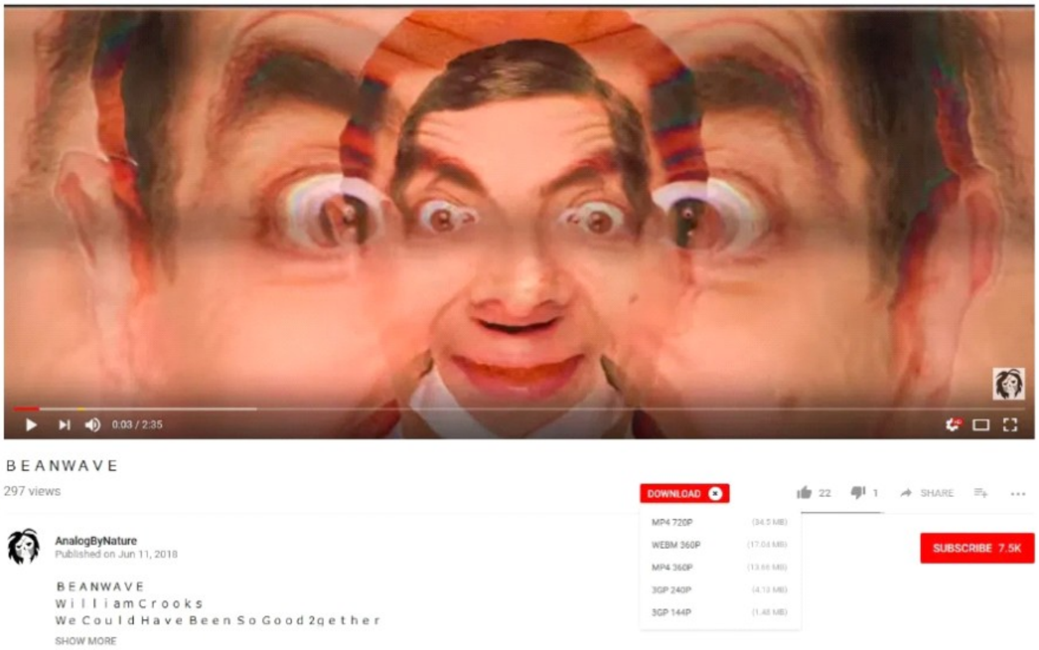

0:03 / 2:35
DOWNLOAD
SHARE
SUBSCRIBE 7.5K
SHOW MORE

BEANWAVE

297 views

22 1

MP4 720P (34.5 MB)
WEBM 360P (17.04 MB)
MP4 360P (13.66 MB)
3GP 240P (4.13 MB)
3GP 144P (1.48 MB)

AnalogByNature
Published on Jun 11, 2018

BEANWAVE
WilliamCrooks
WeCouldHaveBeenSoGood2gether

Allthesebrokenhearts [Mr. bean WAVE] (https://youtu.be/ygj7MYGgWKQ)

So what is the meaning of the word “bean” in this context? Is this about the “bean,” “sabot,” or “bullet” hidden in the “cake” again? The bullet seems to indicate that he who finds it has been chosen for sacrifice. It’s a death threat warning, or maybe even just a gleeful proclamation of what is to come. One of the other terms I’ve seen “bean” coupled with on suspicious YouTube videos is “dead prince.” Now, I have seen “prince,” separately, used in the comments on other YouTube videos that I am quite certain were trafficking children for sex. “Prince” seems to imply a type of child, presumably a little boy. So what do you think “dead prince” means? An illustration I found on a clothing website, showing Bart Simpson lying dead on the ground, with one of his arms and one of his legs lying severed next to him, makes it rather clear. Remember that in the king cake rite, whoever finds the “bean” or “bullet” is declared the “king,” which really just means they have been picked to die.’

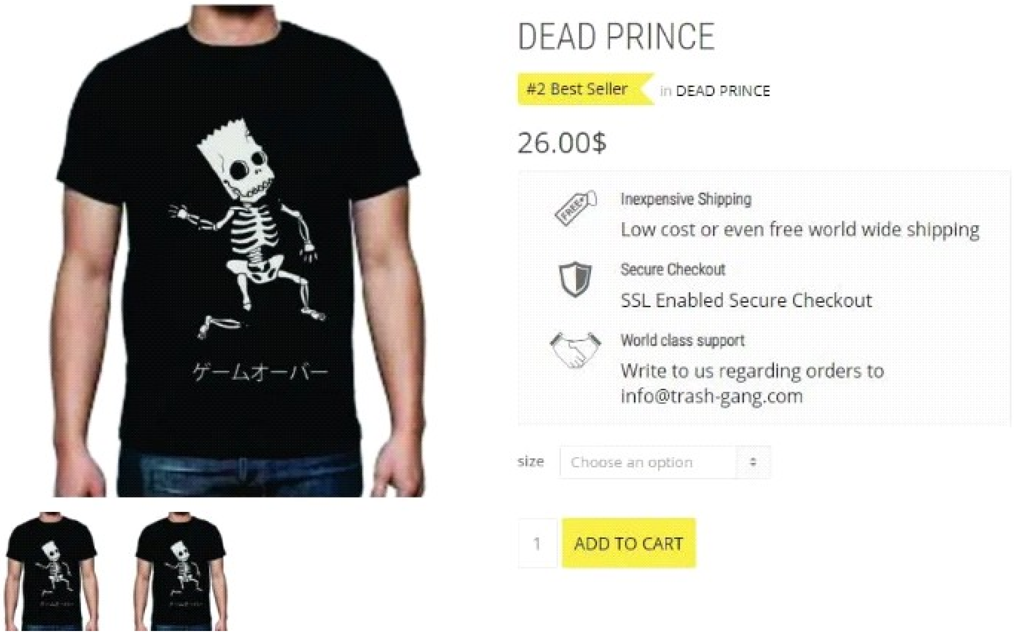

DEAD PRINCE

#2 Best Seller in DEAD PRINCE

26.00$

Inexpensive Shipping
Low cost or even free world wide shipping

Secure Checkout
SSL Enabled Secure Checkout

World class support
Write to us regarding orders to info@trash-gang.com

I think that on another level, the “bean” might also represent the “little nut” so treasured by brain fluid junkies: the pineal gland. Remember what Fulcanelli said about the person who finds the bean in the epiphany cake? As Fulcanelli further explains:

> *…he will never lack money. He will be doubly king, by science and by fortune.*

The science he was talking of is alchemy, which is the secret technology of how to recreate the universe by transmuting human body parts and secretions. It will also enable you to get rich, to get high, and to live for a really long time. One the "Science" card in Crowley's tarot, six swords point at the "heart" of the cross, where the rose is placed. Recall the wounds inflicted on Christ, and that the final blow was delivered by a sword as he hung upon the cross. The fluids which poured forth from his heart—the sacred "blood and water"—were collected in a vessel called the "Holy Grail," a term for a serving dish. The "Swords of Longinus" and "Holy Grail" were instruments used to collect adrenochrome from the traumatized body of Jesus, to be consumed by apostles later on, it seems.

The "Science" Six of Swords card is dedicated to Aquarius (the "water-carrier"), and the book that comes with the deck says that when it comes up in a tarot reading, it indicates a "journey by water." This is exactly what is shown happening on the Six of Swords card in the more traditional Rider-Waite tarot deck. There, a child and a woman wearing a yellow cloak are huddling on a boat being rowed by a soldier. It appears they are being abducted. This "journey by water" and abduction connection explains why this card is used in the *Yellow Submarine* movie just as they start to really get lost.

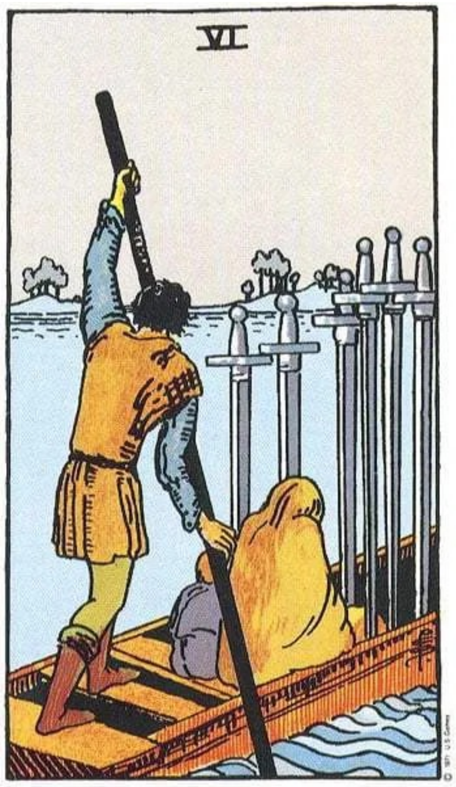

As for the homosexual conga line that somehow acts as a time machine: well, it's *all* over that movie. It's also all over the Beatles' albums, and even their individual solo albums after the break-up. The Beatles in fact *were* being used for a time-distortion ritual. The orchestrators believed that it would cause the universe to dissolve and then be reborn. They thought that it would be recreated by a new demiurge, who would be the homunculus that they would spawn, born rectally just as predicted by Aleister Crowley's alchemical sex magick formulas.

The "mother" of this monstrous "baby" is represented as Ringo, who, as the Ouroboros, is the pregnant cosmic beast that is to be ripped open by its own baby from the inside to begin the new universe. Its body will form the new heavens and the new earth. His identity with this character is confirmed by the "Ring" and "O" in his name, along with imagery used on some of his solo albums. In the *Yellow Submarine* film, Ringo repeatedly declares "I have a hole in me pocket" to signal that he is receptive to penetration.

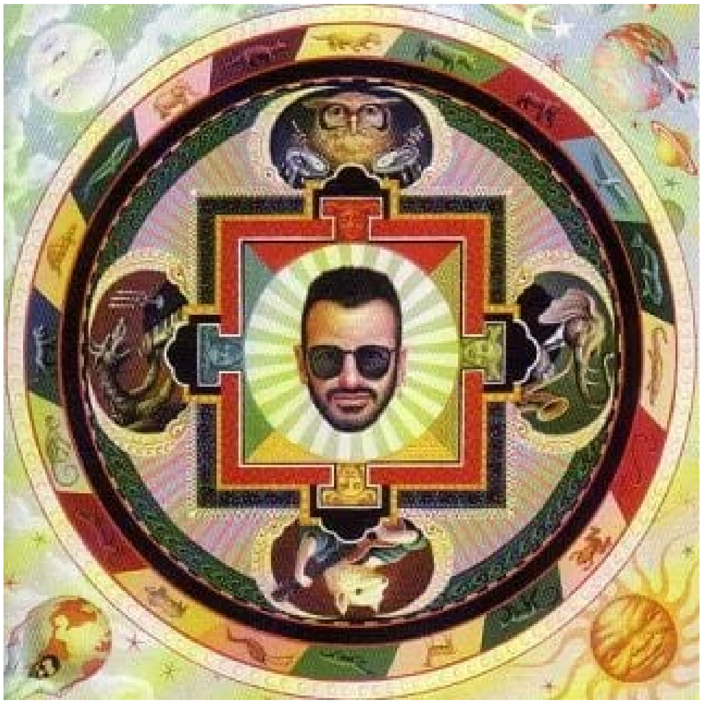

Ring-O the Zodiac. Note the mouse below.

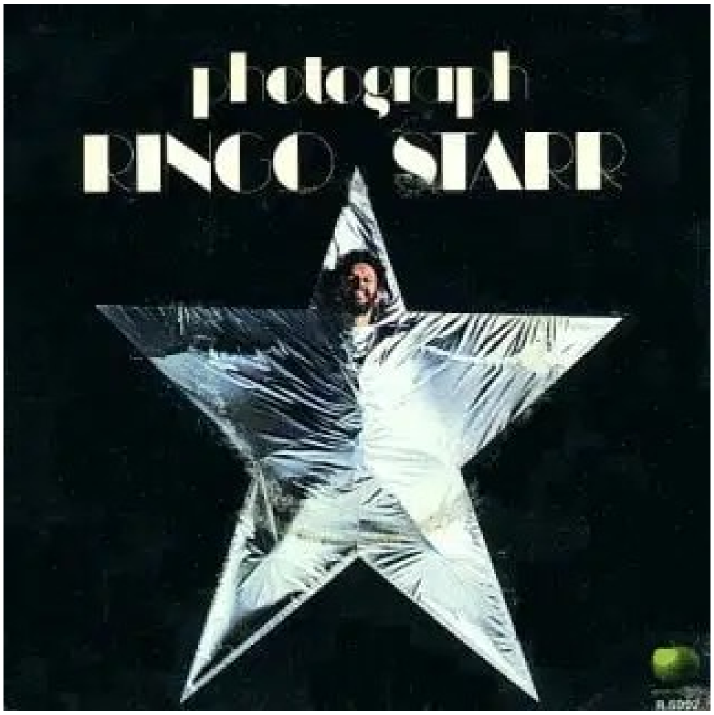
photograph
RINGO STARR

Crowley's gay sex magick order is called Astrum Argentum, Latin for Silver Star.

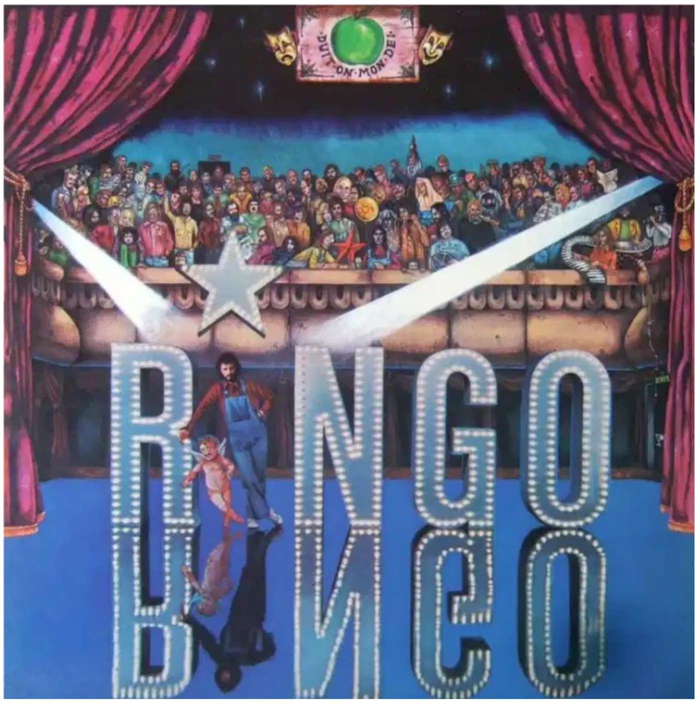
DUIT·ON·MON·DEI
RINGO

RINGO the 4TH

Someone failed knife safety in Boy Scouts.

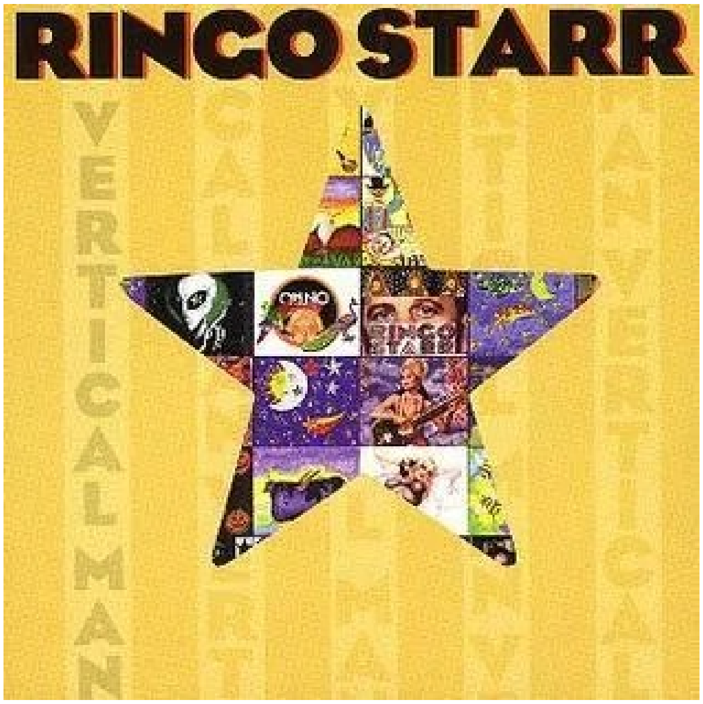

The ritual that the Beatles were involved in, which took place of the course of years and involved every single aspect of their public personas, is well-understood by some insiders in the entertainment industry. Then entire thing is retold in metaphor in the *Back to the Future* film series, as I have discovered. Marty McFly represents Paul McCartney, and Dr. Emit Brown represents Jimmy Savile, who, from what I've learned from research, appears to have been the group's "handler" for the cult orchestrating the ritual. Savile played a major role in their careers at certain key points, and his true function in the relationship can be gleaned from a careful examination of *Back to the Future.*

thegilly

THE
AT
thegilly

This will require its own essay to explain thoroughly. This is what I was working on a few months ago, in early May 2018, when I discovered people trading kiddie snuff porn on YouTube. Then I became sidetracked by numerous death threats and hack attacks from the perpetrators.

All I will say at this point about *Back to the Future* and the Beatles is that McCartney, like Dr. Brown in *Back to the Future*, has said he “gets his best ideas while sitting on the toilet.” Dr. Brown, you will recall, got the idea for the “flux capacitor,” which “makes time travel possible,” when he slipped while standing on a toilet seat and hit his head. McCartney has a preoccupation with toilets. He has been photographed sitting on or holding toilet seats numerous times. He also recently saw fit to tell the press about his “group orgies” and mutual jerk-off sessions with his fellow bandmates back in the day. He is probably just getting the public ready for the inevitable discovery of the Manson home movies.

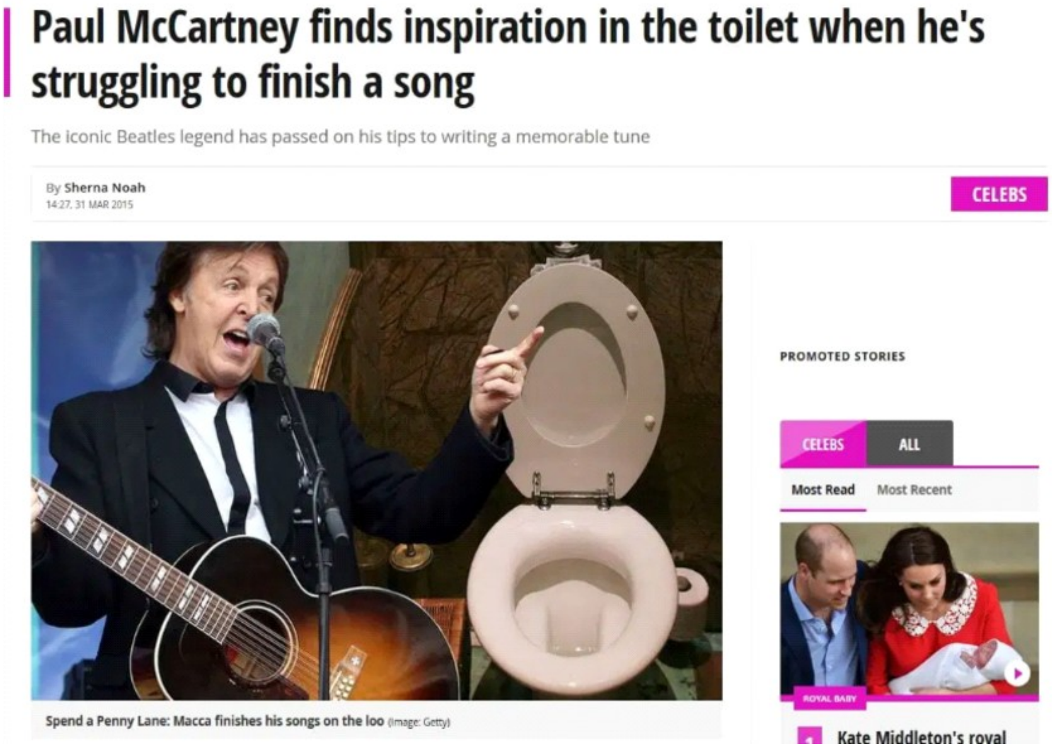

Paul McCartney finds inspiration in the toilet when he's struggling to finish a song

The iconic Beatles legend has passed on his tips to writing a memorable tune

By **Sherna Noah**
14:27, 31 MAR 2015

Spend a Penny Lane: Macca finishes his songs on the loo (Image: Getty)

CELEBS
PROMOTED STORIES
CELEBS
ALL
Most Read
Most Recent
ROYAL BABY
1
Kate Middleton's royal

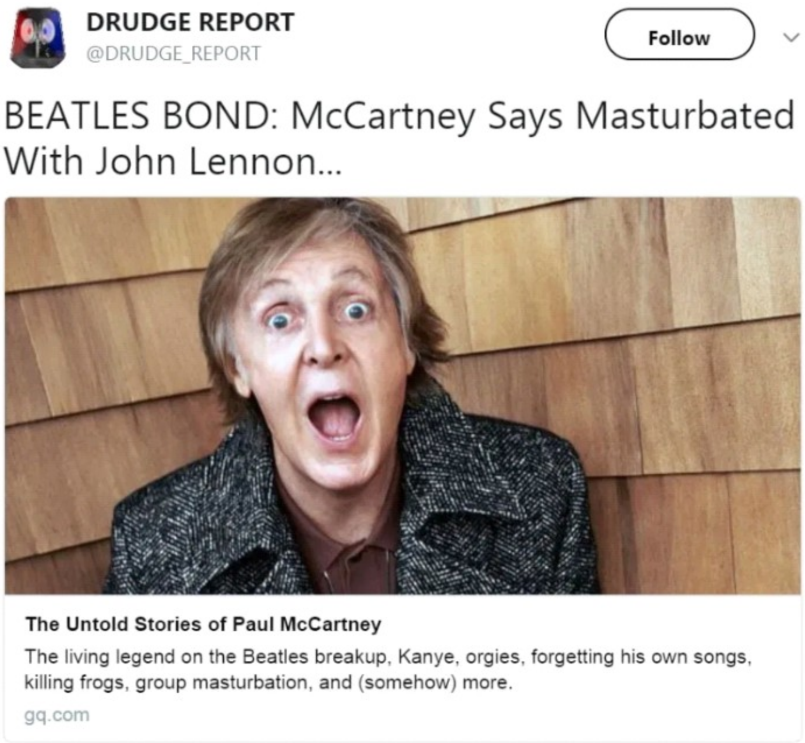

DRUDGE REPORT
@DRUDGE_REPORT

BEATLES BOND: McCartney Says Masturbated With John Lennon...

The Untold Stories of Paul McCartney

The living legend on the Beatles breakup, Kanye, orgies, forgetting his own songs, killing frogs, group masturbation, and (somehow) more.

gq.com

By the way, the people who designed the cover of *Sergeant Pepper's Lonely Hearts Club Band*, Peter Blake and Jann Hanworth, are both obsessed with Mickey Mouse, as is Paul McCartney. Blake was wearing a Mickey Mouse Club pin on his shirt in the most famous picture ever taken of the two artists together. Jann Hanworth's most recent work from a few years ago *still* incorporates numerous pieces involving the Mickey Mouse ears. There are many pictures of Paul McCartney wearing the Mickey Mouse ears, and with his buck teeth, he really does look like a mouse, or a walrus, or something. He is known to be a member of the exclusive Club 33 on New Orleans Avenue at Disneyland, and to have even played the harpsichord there. (It should be noted that the number 3, on its side, could be said to resemble the mouse ears logo).

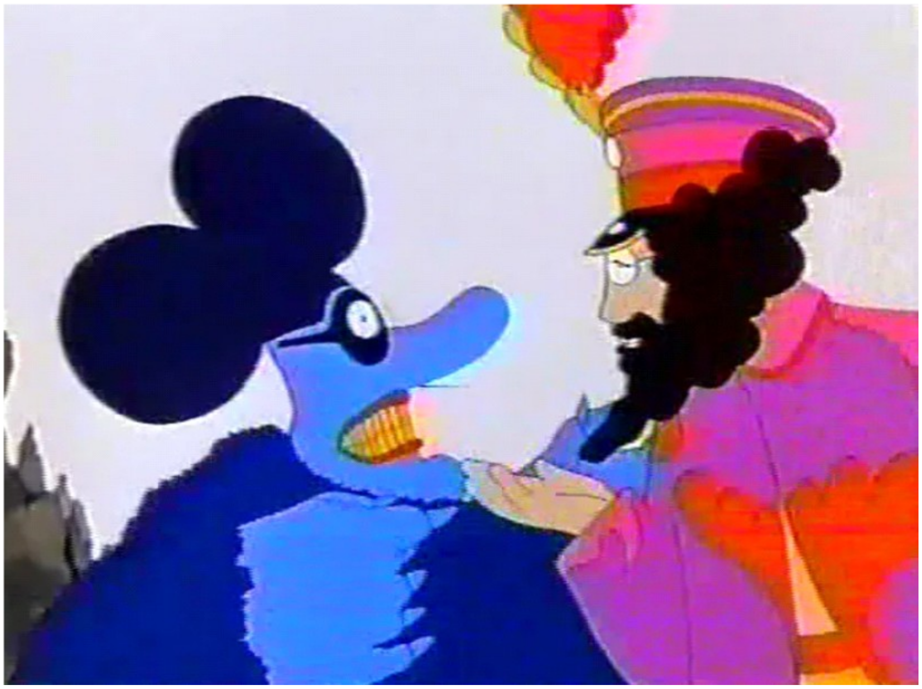

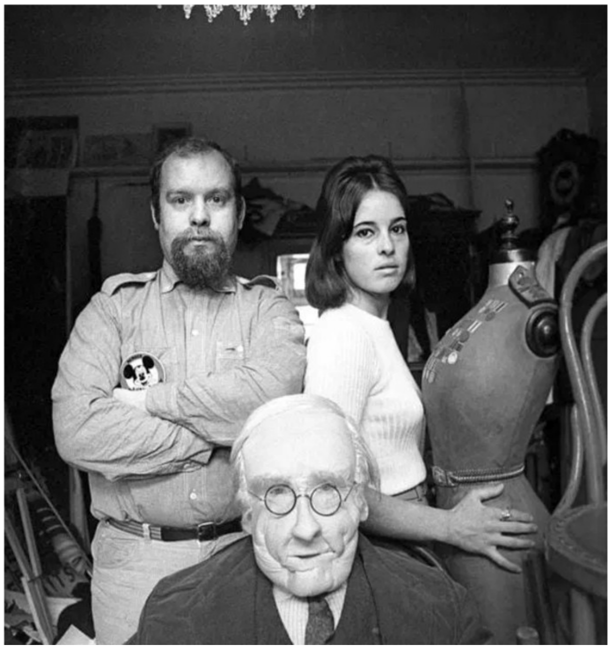

Peter Blake and Jann Haworth

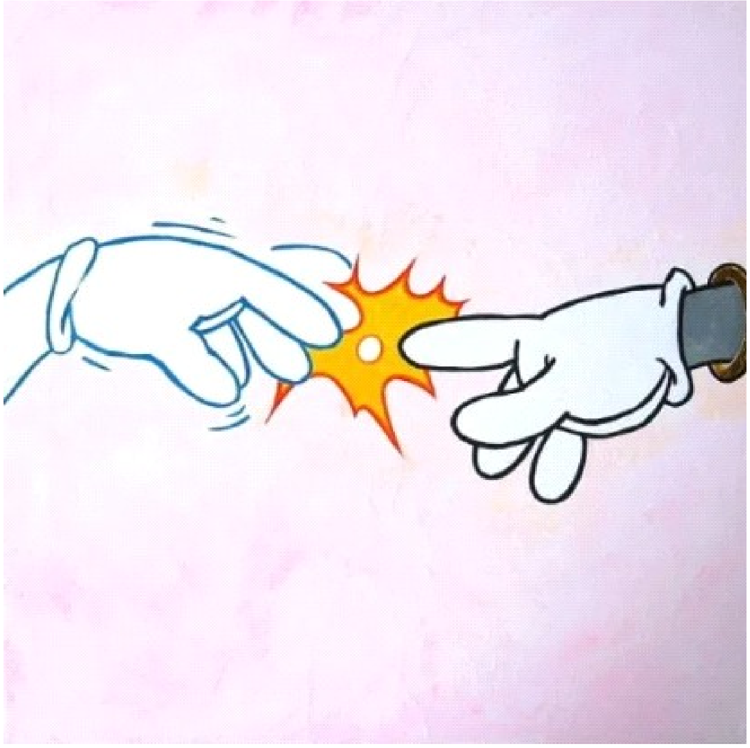

Mickeyangelogenesis by Jann Haworth

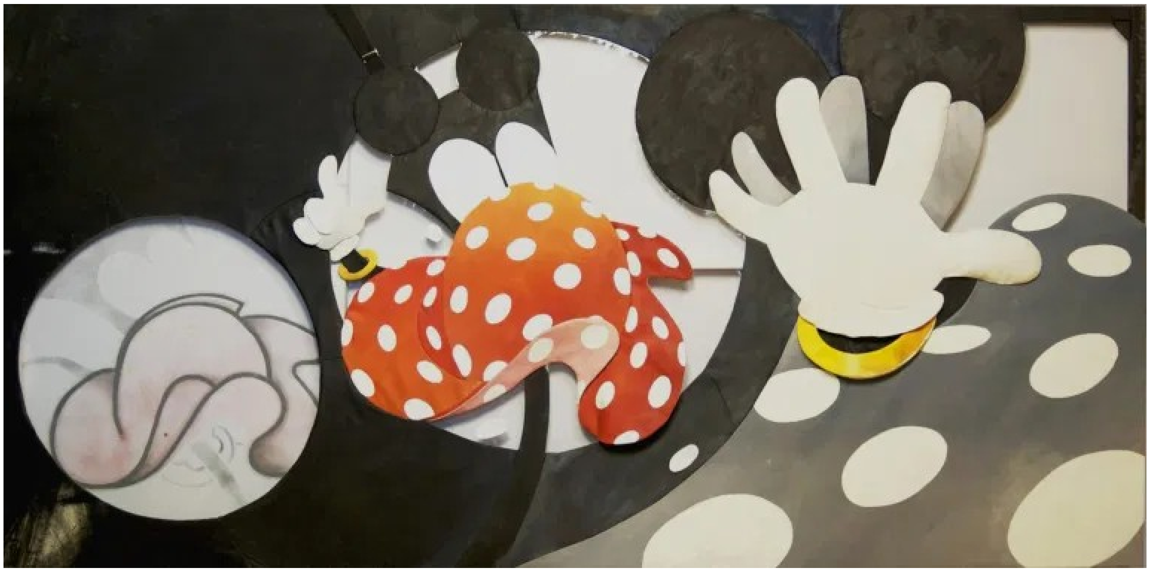

Toon Scandal by Jann Haworth

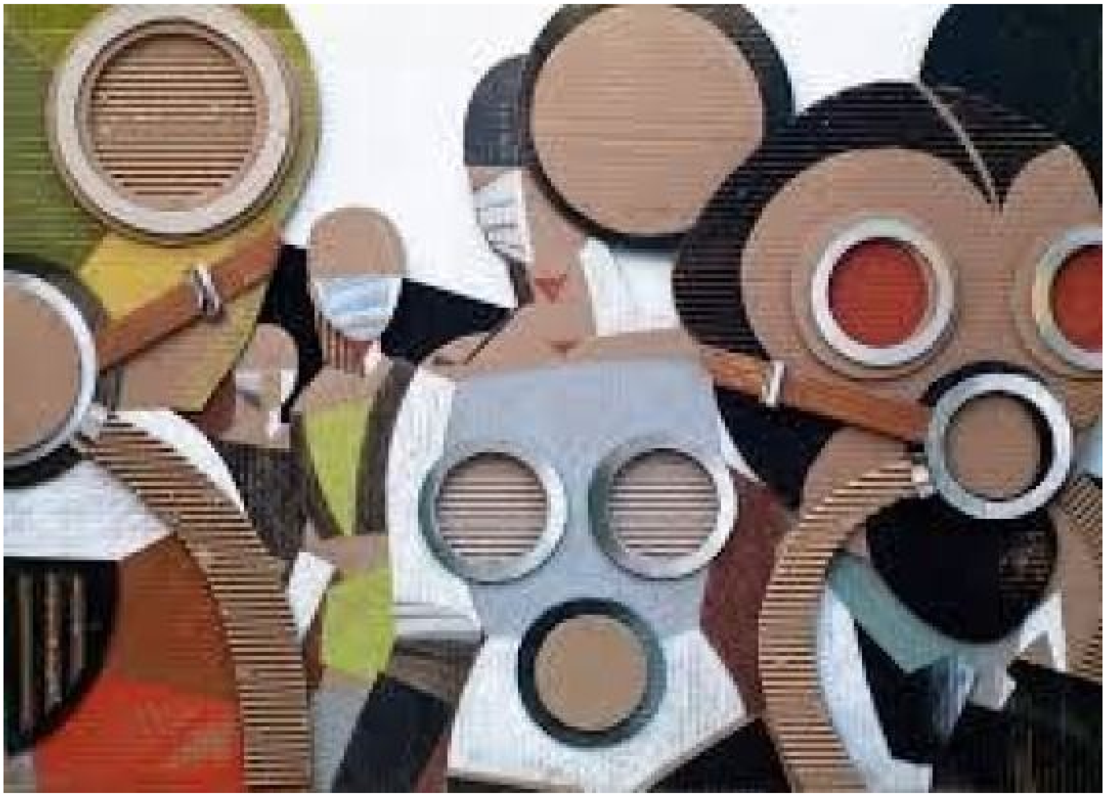

More Jann Haworth Mickeyphilia

Returning to the subject of lonely hearts and murder, “lonely hearts killer” is the term for a serial killer who selects his victims by placing or responding to personal ads looking for romance, traditionally found in the “classifieds” sections of newspapers. One of the most famous lonely hearts killers was Henri Desire Landru, who lived in France around the turn of the century. He was nicknamed “Bluebeard,” adding his biography to a collective *mythos* that already existed, based on several different stories about murderers, both mythical and true. In the fairy tale Bluebeard, written by Charles Perrault in the late seventeenth century, the killer marries each successive victim, then murders her.

Strangely, a “wax figure” of Henri Landru has been mentioned in several works of fiction. In H.P. Lovecraft’s *The Horror in the Museum*, there is one placed at “Roger’s Museum.” Another such figure shows up in the 1953 film *House of Wax*, in which it is introduced as a statue of “Bluebeard.” In reality, the Museum of Death in Hollywood does have a head in a case presented as that of Henri Landru, along with displays of the Black Dahlia victim, the Manson Family victim, and JFK.

Another historical figure who is said to have contributed to the legend of Bluebeard is Gilles de Rais, a French nobleman who once fought alongside Joan of Arc. Later in life, he was executed after confessing to the murder and rape of hundreds of children. This included the attempted sacrifice of his own wife and unborn baby. He did all this because he believed that this was part of the method of making the alchemical “Philosopher’s Stone,” which he thought would bring him wealth. Eliphas Levi wrote about how the mass murderer thought this would work in his book *Magic: A History of Its Rites, Rituals and Mysteries*:

> *That which Gilles de Laval … sought the Philosophical Stone in the blood of murdered children, and … it was covetousness which drove him to this monstrous debauchery. On the faith of his necromancers he believed that the universal agent of life could be suddenly coagulated by the combined action and reaction of outrage on Nature and murder. He collected afterwards* ***the iridescent film which forms on blood*** *when it turns cold; he subjected it to various fermentations, digested the product in the philosophical egg of the*

> *athanor, combining it with salt, sulphur and mercury. He had doubtless received this recipe from some of those old Hebrew Grimoires which, had they been known at the period, would have been sufficient to call down on Jewry at large the execration of the whole earth. Persuaded, as they were, that the act of human impregnation attracts and coagulates Astral Light in its reaction by sympathy on things subjected to the magnetism of man, the Israelitish sorcerers had plunged into those enormities of which Philo accuses them, as quoted by the astrologer Gaffarel.* [Emphasis mine.]

What we have here then, I believe, is evidence that extracts of human hormones and ground organs are the source of the "fungus" called the "Devil's Pepper" in one of the fake books about witchcraft featured in *Rosemary's Baby*. This is the same thing referred to in the story as "tannis" root, a made-up word from the novel. But note that "tannis" is *almost* an anagram of "satin"—a sleek fabric, and the most common misspelling of "Satan" found on bathroom walls. Also, Frank Sinatra once considered using "Frankie Satin" as a stage name.

But maybe I am getting too far afield, as this essay has grown unwieldy. Perhaps it is more noteworthy to point out that Sinatra's name was misspelled on his birth certificate as "Sinestro," which would be an awesome name for a comic book super-villain of the sinister (left-hand) path. Comic books aside, that's actually what I think Frank Sinatra was, and some day, I believe, it will be proven, when we discover where all the bodies are buried.

END

Original article posted by Tracy R. Twyman October 25, 2018 on her website tracytwyman.com. This article was accompanied by a 4 part video series:

1. https://videos.files.wordpress.com/v1pnyD14/minniesmouseversion8_x264_hd.mp4
2. https://videos.files.wordpress.com/LOhpikQv/minniesmoussesecondinstallmenteditedvid5_x264_hd.mp4
3. https://videos.files.wordpress.com/51LZVGwU/minniesmoussepart-three-frank-factor_x264_hd.mp4
4. https://videos.files.wordpress.com/eGehaxw4/minniesmoussepart-fourallofthemwitches_x264_hd.mp4

THERE·IS·MORE
BEYOND

In memory of Tracy R. Twyman

Michael Hoffman

THE OCCULT RENAISSANCE CHURCH OF ROME

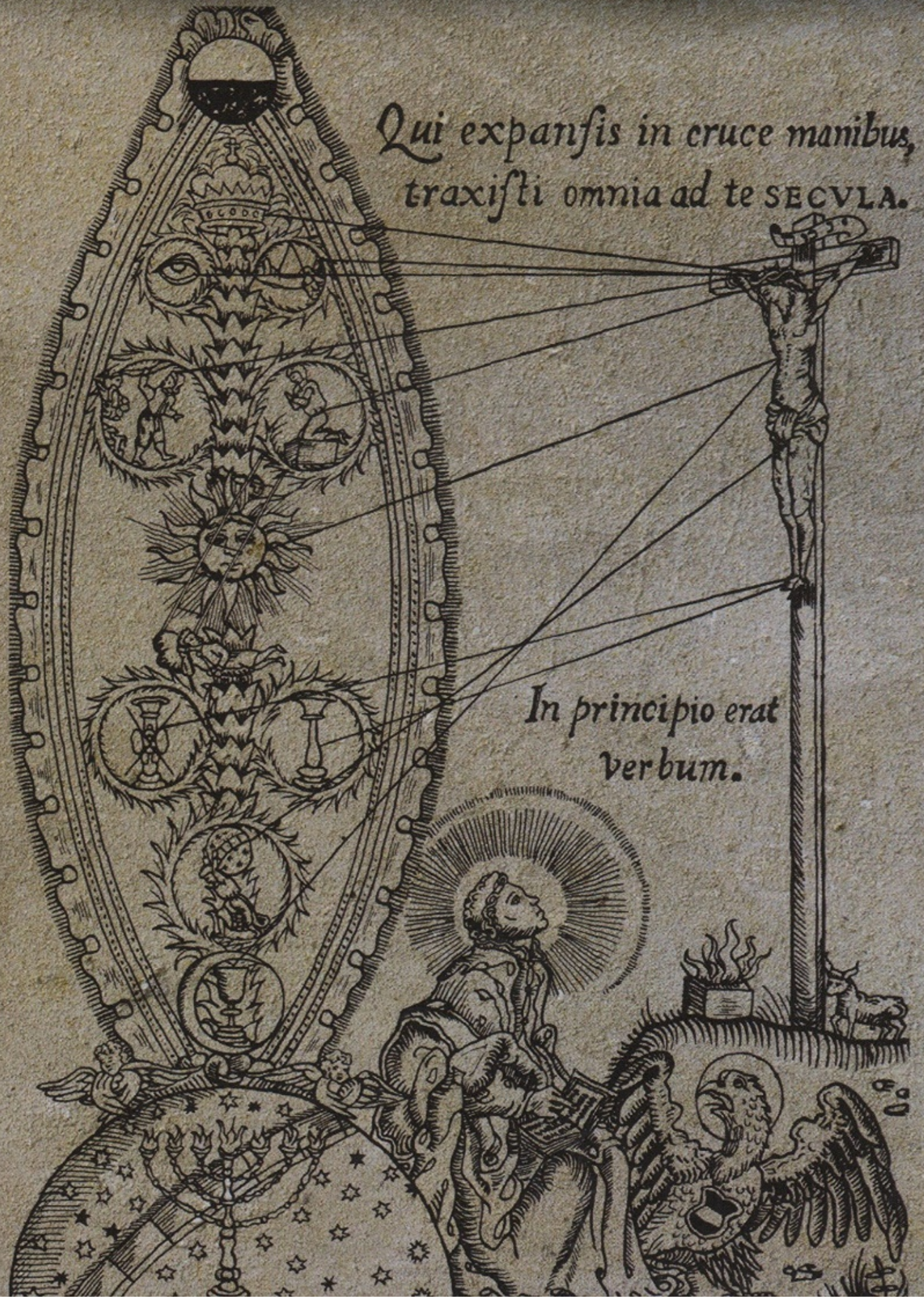
Qui expanſis in cruce manibus, traxiſti omnia ad te SECVLA.
In principio erat verbum.

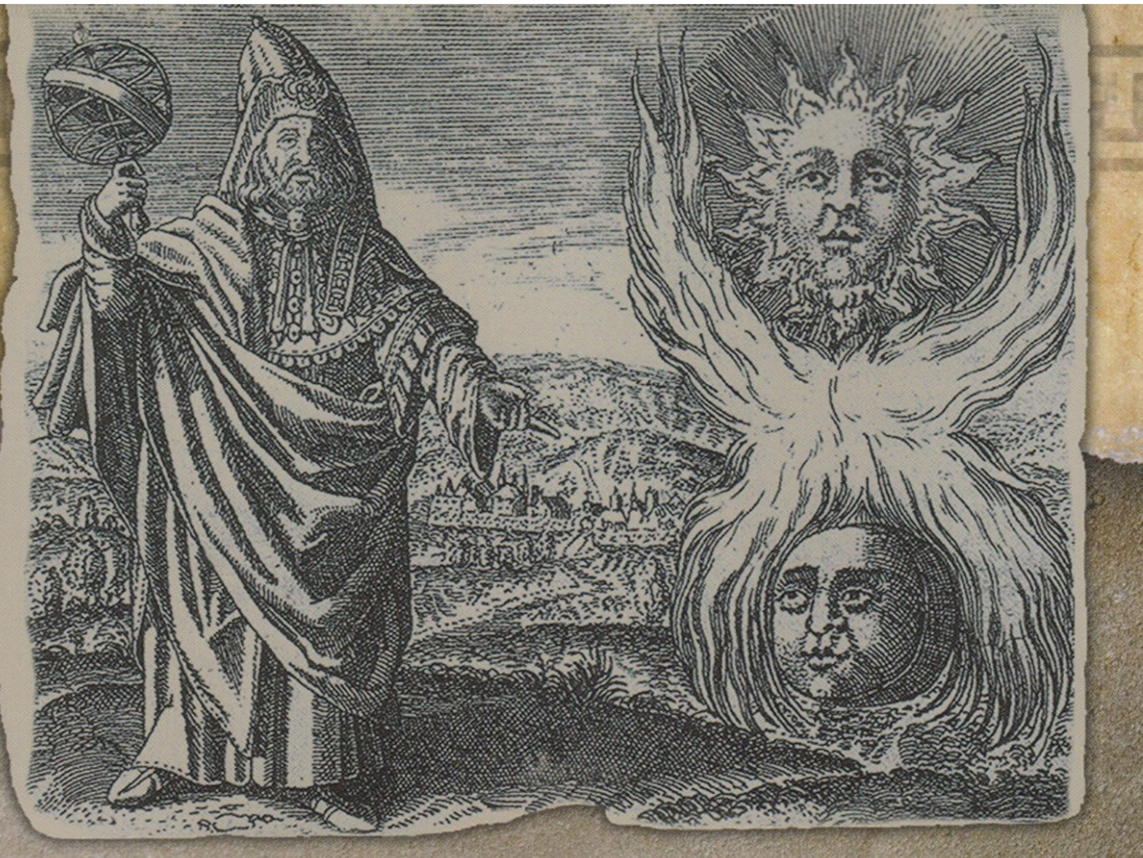

"Hermes Trismegistus and the creative fire that unites the polarities."
[D. Stolcius von Stolcenberg, Viridarium chymicum, Frankfurt, 1624].

THE OCCULT RENAISSANCE CHURCH OF ROME

Revisionist historian Michael Hoffman penetrates the sub-strata of the Roman Church after it had departed from fourteen hundred years of Catholic orthodoxy and embraced institutionalized equivocation and deceit, usurious money power, and diabolic occultism. Here is an unprecedented investigation of an epoch of spectacular fraud and labyrinth subterfuge unique in western history. As a result of centuries of Neoplatonic-Hermetic intrigue, Rome became the repository and cultivator of alien forces which would only fully emerge in the twentieth century.

The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome is a chronicle of magic, mind control and the betrayal of the Christian ecclesia on the part of an operation of deception of world-historical significance.

Michael Hoffman is a leading scholar of the western secret societies and the history of ideology in early modern Europe and Britain. He is the author of *Usury in Christendom: The Mortal Sin that Was and Now is Not.*

Front: Jesus Christ on the Cross corresponding to the Sephirotic תוֹרִיפְּס Tree of the Kabbalistic Ten Emanations [*Liber sacrosancti evangelii de Iesu Christo Domino*, 1555].

Independent History and Research
www.RevisionistHistory.org

ISBN 978-0-9909547-2-9
9 780990 954729

"Hermes Trismegistus and the creative fire that unites the polarities."
[D. Stolcius von Stolcenberg, Viridarium chymicum, Frankfurt, 1624]

THE OCCULT RENAISSANCE CHURCH OF ROME

Revisionist historian Michael Hoffman penetrates the sub-strata of the Roman Church after it had departed from fourteen hundred years of Catholic orthodoxy and embraced institutionalized equivocation and deceit, usurious money power, and diabolic occultism. Here is an unprecedented investigation of an epoch of spectacular fraud and labyrinth subterfuge unique in western history. As a result of centuries of Neoplatonic-Hermetic intrigue, Rome became the repository and cultivator of alien forces which would only fully emerge in the twentieth century.

The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome is a chronicle of magic, mind control and the betrayal of the Christian ecclesia on the part of an operation of deception of world-historical significance.

Michael Hoffman is a leading scholar of the western secret societies and the history of ideology in early modern Europe and Britain. He is the author of *Usury in Christendom: The Mortal Sin that Was and Now is Not.*

Front: Jesus Christ on the Cross corresponding to the Sephirotic Tree of the Kabbalistic Ten Emanations [*Liber sacrosancti evangelii de Iesu Christo Domino*, 1555].

ISBN 978-0-9909547-2-9

Independent History and Research

www.RevisionistHistory.org

The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome

Michael Hoffman

Independent History and Research
Coeur d’Alene • Idaho

“*Depuis la Renaissance l’on tend á travailler de plus en plus passionnément pour l’avènement du Royaume des Sciences et du Robot social.*” [i]

[i] “Since the Renaissance there’s been a tendency to work more and more passionately for the coming of the Kingdom of the Sciences and of the social Robot.”

Louis-Ferdinand Céline

“You know that among the pagans the rulers lord it over them and their great men make their authority felt. This is not to happen among you.”

Matthew 20:25-26

“*Bastardo sodomita! Per i tuoi peccati Roma sarà distrutta.*” [ii]

[ii] “Sodomite bastard! For your sins Rome will be destroyed.”

Brandano da Petroio to Pope Clement VII

Dedicated to
Gordon Pratt

Table of Contents

Pages
Introduction 8
Acknowledgement 33
Chapter I: More Catholic than the Pope 34
Chapter II: Neoplatonic-Hermeticism 78
Chapter III: The Serpent in the Garden of the Quattrocento 138
Chapter IV: The Priest and the Platonist 152
Chapter V: Pope Alexander’s Wizard 181
Chapter VI: Bonfire of the Verities 222

Chapter VII: The Sorcerer Abbot 238
Chapter VIII: Reuchlin's Revolution 256
Chapter IX: Renaissance High Art: An initiation 356
Chapter X: The Grand Egyptian Lodge of Vatican City 372
Chapter XI: The Cabal's Co-conspirators 392
Chapter XII: The Moral Theology of Mental Reservation and Equivocation in the Church of Rome 405
Chapter XIII: Ecclesiastical Sodomy and its Roots 481
Chatper XIV: The Hermetic Prince of the Second Vatican Council 499
Chapter XV: Neoplatonic-Hermetic Kabbalism in the Modern Era 522
Chapter XVI: The Breeders of Money – Gain Dominion over the Church of Rome 594
Chapter XVII: A Prophecy Fulfilled 632
Chapter XVIII: An Occult Miscellany 637
Appendix 647
Bibliography 652
General Index 686
Scripture Index 720

Introduction

This is a book consisting of neglected sources pertaining to the Neoplatonic syncretism of the Renaissance pontiffs, as well as their Hermetic-Kabbalistic theology, their usury and institutionalized subterfuge, which formed a *hidden concordance* within what had once been Jesus Christ's Catholic Church, but which had, by the early sixteenth century, been transformed into the Church of Rome, in the course of a little over one hundred years. We should not marvel at the speed with which the revolution was accomplished, in view of the fact that centuries later the *public emergence* of the usurper Church was made manifest in something approximating half the time (1965-2015).

Charity and justice necessitate stating from the outset this writer's observation that it would seem that the Holy Spirit guided many thousands of parish priests and many more laity throughout the Renaissance and post-Renaissance era, and that this guidance was also reflected in the lives of some bishops and cardinals. We cannot account for this supernatural mystery in terms of theology, except in the realm of the miraculous. We acknowledge that the Church of Rome in America in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries continued to produce Christians of exemplary character, such as Fr. Pierre De Smet and Fr. Joseph Cataldo in their work defending the American Indian; Providence nun Mother Joseph of the Sacred Heart, who founded twenty-nine charity hospitals, schools and orphanages; Fr. Charles Coughlin, Dorothy Day, Flannery O'Connor, and many more Catholic servants of God like them, who managed through grace, to preserve and personify the essence of the root Church of Jesus Christ that had been the Catholicism of old. Moreover, the mostly Irish-American and Italian-American Catholics with whom we were raised in the 1950s and early 1960s, had their faults certainly, but in the main were decent, honest and upright people with whom as a child and adolescent, we were fortunate to associate, and who to this day we recall fondly. In view of their kindness and dedication to God, some were surely saints, if known only to Him.

[Introduction Page 9]

In the United States, in terms of Protestant adherence to the Natural Law, America became great as a result of that adherence, and much of the persecuting spirit of post-Renaissance Catholicism was vitiated by Catholicism's American sojourn (we note that even before they arrived on these shores, Irish-Catholics had little of the inquisitorial spirit, having been for centuries the object of inquisition by the British Crown). The unique situation of the Church in America having planted roots in a Protestant nation in the nineteenth century, is marked by the freedom of worship which Catholics enjoyed; and more than mere tolerance, the American experience was also unique for the freedom of opportunity it afforded. In 1831, President Andrew Jackson appointed a Roman Catholic, Roger B. Taney, as Attorney General of the United States. One does not shrink from terming it miraculous that five years later Taney became the fifth Chief Justice of the United States Supreme Court: the highest justice presiding over the nation's highest court was a member of a minority religion who decided the law in a majority Protestant land. [1]

[1] Cf. Hoffman, "Chief Justice Roger Taney, A Profile in Courage," in *Revisionist History* no. 44.

It seems miraculous too that at the parish level so much that one can describe as the good spirit of immemorial Catholicism remained present in the pews, up to the 1960s, and in some cases even beyond that notorious decade. The Church of Rome being a hierarchical organization, it would be understandable to believe that it was the hierarchy of the Church that was responsible for the fine moral character of many Catholics, *prior* to the "post-Conciliar era," which became, in the wake of Vatican Council II in the pontificates of Paul VI and John-Paul II, the penultimate revolutionary dissolution (after five centuries of spasmodic moral and ethical subversion and degeneration at the top). It is at this juncture that we encounter yet another apparent miracle: the faith of the people somehow preserved many of them from complicity in the depravity to which the post-Renaissance hierarchy had sunk over hundreds of years, not the least of which was the secret and widespread, *systematic* molestation of children, enabled by bishops, cardinals and pontiffs.

The United States of America' premier campaigner for social justice and peace between nations in the years from 1932 through the early 1940s, was a Catholic priest who had a radio audience of nearly one-third of the entire country (a listenership estimated at 50 million, at a time when the population of the United States was some 132 million). This was the aforementioned Fr. Coughlin, who was eventually silenced and nearly completely suppressed by order of Pope Pius XII; a subversive diktat to which Coughlin subserviently submitted, to the detriment of the cause of world peace. This is merely one instance of the obstruction of the implementation of Christ's Gospel which obedience to the disaster-producing clique of popes has wrought.

The vast majority of the Catholic people and their parish priests, along with a tiny handful of prelates such as Cardinal McIntyre in Los Angeles, would never have dreamed of trading the Mass of the Council of Trent, itself only a slight revision of the Mass of the High Middle Ages and hence of European civilization at its zenith, for the New Order of Mass of Pope Paul VI of 1969, subject as it was to novelties and revisions of phenomenal mediocrity. Yet they did so out of "obedience." Of King George III, Thomas Paine wrote in 1776, "The sovereignty of a despotic monarch assumes the power of making wrong right, or right wrong, as he pleases or as it suits him." It would be a blasphemous lie to assert that Jesus Christ come to earth to enable a ministry of totalitarianism by "infallible" dictators, such as Paul VI. The very notion of such power being invested in one man bearing the title, "Supreme Pontiff," in connection with the Gospel of our Lord, is a mockery.

Much of the usury, deceit and occult ideology inflicted on the Church of Christ, beginning mainly in Italy in the fifteenth century, was due to the failings, incompetence or outright betrayal by various, nearly all-powerful human beings leading the Church and usurping the Petrine ministry. When in the nineteenth century Lord Acton departed the Church of Rome in the wake of the declaration of papal infallibility at Vatican Council I, he did so having pronounced a fundamental truth with regard to the fallen nature of *every* human being: "Power corrupts and absolute power corrupts absolutely." This book is a chronicle of that corruption.

Jesus promised never to abandon His *ecclesia* ("assembly of the ones who have heard the call"), so that the "gates of hell shall not prevail against it." The perception, however, that His *ecclesia* is directed by the cabal of Pharisaic-occult usurers and

Judases who have occupied Rome for more than five hundred years, is among the queerest we can imagine.

One need not be in Holy Orders in order to be qualified to opine that believers who endeavor to uphold Scripture, and the Tradition of the Early Church, and those examples directly and unwaveringly conforming to those twin sources of divine direction, with faith in Jesus Christ as our Savior, and hope in His promise of eternal life, *will never be abandoned or disappointed.*

His will is done on earth as it is in heaven, even at the beginning of this third millennium. *Jesus is the very spirit of Truth, and where there is Truth there He is.* Consequently, the true Christian welcomes and embraces the truth without fear. It is in the camp of the Adversary where dwell those who are fact-averse, and who call a man-made cult of Renaissance provenance, “The Faith.”

What this book is not

Alexander Hislop was a Scottish Presbyterian minister who had very little (that we can locate) to say about the recrudescence of the religion of ancient Babylon within the creed of Orthodox Judaism. While the charge of Judaizing is generally a blanket condemnation falsely laid at the door of Martin Luther, it can be stated with accuracy that among the later Protestant fundamentalist sects of the eighteenth and following centuries, this Judaizing was a common feature. Hislop penned a pamphlet in 1853, *The Two Babylons: Their identity and the Present Antichrist Also the Last.* [2]

In 1858 he enlarged it into a volume of more than 300 pages, bearing the title *The Two Babylons; or the Papal Worship Proved to be the Worship of Nimrod and His Wife,* which sold many tens of thousands of copies and has never been out of print. Between 1862 and 2015 *The Two Babylons* was reprinted at least forty-three times. Its thesis is common to the Protestant Fundamentalist sects and those that deny the divinity of Jesus, such as Jehovah’s Witnesses: that the Catholic Church from the time of Emperor Constantine in the fourth century onward, became the Antichrist, and rapidly degenerated into a form of propitiation of pagan deities. The Church that fought the usurious Money Power to a standstill, the Church of Pope Gregory the Great, St. Augustine and St. Thomas Aquinas; the Church of Saxon England and King St. Edward the Confessor, is alleged to have been a sinkhole of heathen sorcery. Lest we imagine that such dementia was limited only to Protestant Fundamentalists of the most marginal sort, it was also reflected in the

[2] Edinburgh: W. Whyte & Co.

theology of the Rev. Charles Spurgeon, among the most influential of the English Victorian preachers of London, whose voluminous writings are revered by numerous schools of contemporary, conservative Protestant-Reformed thought.

Like Hislop, who not only paid no attention to rabbinic blasphemy and Kabbalistic paganism, but incorporated some of Judaism's occult traditions into his book, [3]

Spurgeon believed that Judaism was superior to Catholicism, repeating the old chestnut that no Jew could be blamed for shrinking from horror at converting to Christ when confronted by the "superstitions of Rome." It seems that Rev. Spurgeon was somehow abysmally ignorant of Judaism, even though Dr. Alexander McCaul, the eminent Anglican Professor of Hebrew and Rabbinic Literature at King's College London, had penned an extensive treatise, *The Old Paths / Talmud Tested,* which had been prominently published in England in several printings, demonstrating that rabbinic Judaism was a system of magic and delusion founded not upon the Old Testament, which it nullified, but upon the Babylonian Talmud.

Spurgeon's folklore concerning Orthodox Judaism is so far off the mark as to be humorous, were it not for the fact that the conversion of precious Judaic persons is of signal importance for the salvation of souls. Indeed, the greatest liberator of Judaics in the Church age was the Roman Catholic itinerant preacher St. Vincent Ferrer. Spurgeon would have us believe that the many thousands of Judaic persons who Ferrer brought to Christ were worse off than when they bowed their knees to the "sages" of the Talmud, and the cadavers of rabbis in Judaic cemeteries every bit as relic-ridden as any Renaissance-Catholic basilica. We quote from a sermon by Spurgeon which is reprinted in his *Works:*

"The blood of Israel hangs in great clots upon the skirts of Rome and will bring down upon that thrice-accursed system the everlasting wrath of the Most High! Did they not grievously oppress the Jews in Spain and every other Catholic country — remorselessly hunting them down as if they were unfit to live — torturing them in ways that it were impossible for us to describe, lest your cheeks should blanch as you heard the horrible story? The men that were of the same race as the Christ of God were so hated by the professed followers of Jesus that no indignities were thought to be great enough, and no severities to be fierce enough for execution...”

---

[3] Cf. Ralph Woodrow, *The Babylon Connection?* (2004), pp. 26-27. Woodrow errs when, in considering the significance of the incorporation of the pagan symbolism represented by obelisks, he dismisses it as a mere peccadillo. His mistake however, does not reduce the credibility of much of the rest of his refutation of Hislop's falsehoods and non-sequiturs.

Notice the carnal emphasis in Rev. Spurgeon’s talk on the significance of the victims being (supposedly) members of ethnic Israel: *“...the same race as the Christ of God...”* Here is the special prerogative of race-obsessed Judaism from a race-obsessed Protestant “Reformer.” If these victims had *not* been of the same race as Christ, would the Inquisition have been somehow less criminal? It is a lacuna of history that the Inquisition was to some extent, in lands such as Spain, in the hands of crypto-Judaics and their gentile Romanist agents, who employed it to crush conservative Catholics who sought to restore the Church to its pre-Renaissance mission, which included bearing witness to the evils of the occult, and the rabbinic counterfeit of the Old Testament.

The Protestant Isis

What does Spurgeon have to say about the atrocities Jews instigated against the Catholic Christians in the early centuries A.D., and of the “remorseless hunting” and “torturing” of English recusant Catholics in the reign of Protestant Queen Elizabeth I? The Queen’s Torturer was the sadistic psychopath Richard Topcliffe:

“It was over the next decade (1578-1588) that he (Topcliffe), built the reputation that lasts to this day, both as an exponent of inquisition, and more generally as a hunter, snuffling out Catholic(s)... When we think of torture under Elizabeth it is the rack that first comes to mind, and there is no doubt that Topcliffe was a master of its tensions and pressures. He was inventive in his cruelties, too, with all the thoughtful ingenuity of an artist perfecting his technique: the impact of a session on the rack could be magnified by placing a stone beneath the victim’s spine, for example...

“Who authorized Topcliffe’s work? Most obviously the Privy Council and, in particular Lord Burghley — and later his son Sir Robert Cecil. But there is no avoiding Elizabeth’s complicity in such matters either, and she seems to have retained faith in his services until the end of her reign, despite the vicissitudes in his reputation... As for Topcliffe, he certainly felt confident enough to address at least one letter to Elizabeth as his ‘goddess.’ This was, of course, the routine iconography of the court and there are many examples of such rhetoric from Hatton, Raleigh and others. But for Topcliffe to be drawn into such a circle, a man whose sole political worth derived from his apparent talent and enthusiasm for torturing those considered enemies of the state, tells us something about Elizabeth's relationship with him…” [4]

[4] Matthew Lyons, “Richard Topcliffe: The Queen's Torturer,” June 25, 2013. https://mathewlyons.wordpress.com/2012/06/25/richard-topcliffe-the-queens-torturer/

In comparison to “Bloody Mary,” her half-sister and predecessor on the throne, it was Elizabeth who deserved the stigma of “Bloody.” Mary ought to more accurately be known as “Fiery,” since her crime was the burning of Protestant dissidents, not butchering dissidents, as Elizabeth did. If these distinctions appear trivial, consider that a whole universe of information-warfare turns on them. In The Myth, Tudor Queen Mary I becomes the cruelest sort of prototypical Roman Catholic fiend, while Queen Elizabeth I is showcased as a paragon of humane liberalism, as historian Paul Johnson has the *chutzpah* to proclaim on p. 341 of his book *Elizabeth I* (1974): “For the first twenty years of her reign (1559-1579) Elizabeth refrained from virtually any form of state action against those who declined to accept the form of religion laid down by parliament. Even those who made no secret of their religious beliefs, and felt unable to take the oath to the Queen, were left unmolested, provided they expressed no ostensible disloyalty to the regime… She ‘would not have any of the consciences unnecessarily sifted, to know what affection they held for the old religion.”

This stance, *if it were an accurate appraisal,* would reflect a policy light years ahead of the attitude of the Catholic “Bloody” Mary. Johnson makes it look as though a hapless Elizabeth was forced into acting against Catholics due to their treason and disloyalty, otherwise she respected the sovereignty of their consciences. This is the universal virus of deception that attends the account of the reign of “Good Queen Bess.” Queen Mary I is made the hideous Catholic foil to the liberated Protestant Elizabeth I. This fraud is repeated in virtually every Hollywood movie produced about Elizabeth up to the year 2016, as well as most of the leading biographies and histories published in English. The truth is very different, however. In 1559, *in the first year* of her ascension, Elizabeth enacted The Act of Uniformity, which massively violated the conscience of every Catholic in her realm, i.e. a slight majority of the English people at that time. Here was a law that was not only despotic, it was also undemocratic in the extreme. It directs that the Catholic Mass, which had existed in England for eleven hundred years, will be immediately outlawed. Only Church services based on the state-mandated, Protestant *Book of Common Prayer* were to be permitted:

"And further be it enacted by the queen's highness, with the assent of the Lords and Commons in this present Parliament assembled, and by authority of the same, that all and singular ministers in any cathedral or parish church, or other place within this realm of England, Wales... or other the queen's dominions, shall... be bounden to say and use the Matins, Evensong, celebration of the Lord's Supper and administration of each of the sacraments, and all their common and open prayer, in such order and form as is mentioned in the said book (the *Book of Common Prayer*)."

The penalty for the failure of a clergyman to conform to the *Book of Common Prayer,* or to adhere to the liturgical services in England as they had existed for eleven centuries and offer the Mass, rather than the official Anglican service, was the loss of office and income, and imprisonment for six months (for a second offense one-year imprisonment was stipulated; for a third offense the penalty was imprisonment for life). If any English man or woman were to speak against the *Book of Common Prayer* or in favor of the Catholic Mass, for a third offense the penalty was also life in prison. Anyone who sought to stay at home on Sunday and "having no lawful or reasonable excuse to be absent," refuse to attend the Protestant-Anglican service on Sunday, was subject to a fine. [5]

Life imprisonment for speaking against the *Book of Common Prayer* was "moderation"? This coercion of the consciences of her subjects was enacted by the authority of Queen Elizabeth, that reputed Protestant free-spirit so vastly superior to the repressive Catholic Queen Mary. What a farce. When the chasm between fact and fiction is as gaping as this, one wonders how the historians who peddle the legend of Elizabeth's religious tolerance can live with themselves. Twenty-four years after Johnson, the agit-prop was maintained by another author of consequence, Alison Weir, in *Elizabeth the Queen* (1998; p. 335), who writes that in 1581, "Both Parliament and the Council had repeatedly urged the Queen to take stern punitive measures against the Catholic recusants... Although... she had hitherto preferred to act with moderation... she now recognized... that harsher sanctions were called for."

Elizabeth's murder of the Jesuit poet Rev. Fr. Edmund Campion, who had not at any time engaged in any conspiracy against her, is an indelible proof of her harrowing inquisitorial cruelty. [6]

---

[5] Cf. Elizabeth's Act of Uniformity (1559), 1 Eliz. Cap. 2 in Henry Gee and William J. Hardy, *Documents Illustrative of English Church History* (1896), pp. 458-467.

[6] Cf. Michael Hoffman, "Edmund Campion's Jesuit Challenge to Bad Queen Bess," in *Revisionist History,* April-May, 2016. Pleas to the queen to spare Campion came from

> surprising quarters, including at least one principled Protestant. John Foxe possessed a humanity and decency like that of Campion. He was the author of the *Acts and Monuments of the Latter and Perilous Days,* known popularly as *Foxe's Book of Martyrs,* an encyclopedic account of — among other acts of persecution —the episodic Catholic killing of Protestants. Foxe was the leading Protestant martyrologist in the English-speaking world and it was Foxe who interceded for Campion. The noble Foxe believed that 'When men of false doctrine are killed, their error is not killed; nay it is all the more strengthened, the more constantly they die." It has taken Christendom many centuries to apprehend that wisdom.

Campion was no Jew however, and does not seem to have elicited the sympathy and indignation toward his plight from Spurgeon and reformers like him, concerning the horrible

abuse Campion suffered under a Protestant English government which, with the poet Edmund Spenser, viewed Queen Elizabeth I as the "New Isis."

Where, pray tell, came this Protestant-Elizabethan identification of the female head of the Church of England with Isis? Papists will imagine it came from some Protestant source. The cult of Isis was in fact transmitted into Christendom by the Neoplatonic-Hermetic papacy which, from Pope Alexander VI onward, adored the "cunning one," she "who tricked Ra by sending a serpent." [7]

[7] Patricia Turner and Charles Russell Coulter, *Dictionary of Ancient Deities* (2000), p. 243.

What was this serpent? At the time that Pope Alexander established the cult of Isis in his private papal apartment, the Catholic school of nominalism was replacing the warrant of Scripture with the *aggiornamento* of equity.

The troubadour of the cult of Queen Elizabeth I was Spenser. In his *Faerie Queen* he associated Elizabeth's cultus with Isis, and in particular with a certain attribute of the cunning one:

> "His wife was Isis, whom they likewise made
> A goddess of great power and sovereignty,
> And in her person cunningly did shade
> That part of justice which is equity." [8]

[8] "The Faerie Queen" *in The Poetical Works of Edmund Spenser,* vol. III (Little Brown, 1842), Canto VII, p. 321.

Equity is situation ethics by another name. By equity law, God's Word is "made of none effect" through the circumstances of the particular era in which man finds himself in history. Convoluted pretexts are put forth to justify this nullification. Equity has always bedeviled the Church, but it came boldly into its own with the rise of the Catholic nominalist school of

theology.[9]

[9] “Ockham and Scotus in the Middle Ages... postulated the view that any ‘good’ is *nominal,* i.e., it is what it is only because God regards it as good. This was opposed to the ‘realist’ view that God wills a thing because it is good... Situation ethics, at the level of human value judgments, is likewise nominalistic... The whole mindset of modern man, *our* mindset, is on the nominalists’ side... (the) flat assertion that there are no intrinsic values and that value exists only ‘in reference to persons.’ Martin Buber is... plain about it; he says that ‘value is always value for a person rather than something with an absolute, independent existence.” Joseph Fletcher, *Situation Ethics: The New Morality* (1966), pp. 57-58. On the Catholic nominalist school that adopted the equity of usury in the fifteenth century, cf. Hoffman, *Usury in Christendom,* pp. 162-173.

Before John Calvin became a Protestant, he was a precocious Catholic youth at the papist Collège de Montaigu, where he came under “the influence of the celebrated nominalist theologian, John Mair, regent at Montaigu from 1525-31.”[10]

[10] Guenther H. Haas, *The Concept of Equity in Calvin’s Ethics* (Paternoster Press, 1997), p. 7.

After his father’s death in 1528, Calvin was admitted to the Catholic law school at Orléans: “Calvin came to embrace the humanist approach to legal studies at Orléans His circle of friends remained those sympathetic to humanism.”[11]

[11] Ibid., pp. 8-9.

He subsequently transferred to the Collège Fortet, where he studied under the Catholic nominalists Francois Vatable and Pierre Danés, and encountered the leading law tome of French jurisprudence, the *Annotationes in quattuor et viginti Pandectarum libros* (1508) of Guillaume Budé, who: “deals with equity in *Annotationes in Pandectarum libros.* The fundamental principle of legal interpretation is that equity... is that which remits from the law.”[12]

[12] Ibid., pp. 36-37.

“The function of Equity is the correction of the (civil or common) law where it is deficient by reason of its... tendency to establish rules without exceptions.”[13]

[13] Howard L. Oleck, “Historical Nature of Equity Jurisprudence,” *Fordham Law Review,* vol. 20, no. 1 (1951), p. 23.

Equity may be applicable and desirable in those cases entailing upon the laws of man; when applied to the laws of God however, equity is rebellion.

Calvin never repudiated the *epikeia* he imbibed from the Church of Rome's lawyers and theologians in France. After Protestants had been schooled in Catholic nominalist equity, some of them established their own version of it, supposedly "independent of popery," after which equity could be openly embraced by Protestants while concealing its papist roots, just as Isis had been imported from Rome to London. When Spurgeon and Hislop and their innumerable followers hold aloft their "Reformed faith," derived from Calvinism, as the preeminent godly antidote and polar opposite to Rome's theology, they are perpetrating a fraud on the public, which is only exceeded in the depths of its brazen disregard for the facts of history, by the Right-wing Catholic campaign to brand equity-nominalism's situation ethics as a uniquely Protestant abomination, free of any Catholic origin or culpability.

The application of equity in both papal and Protestant theology arose mainly from the devil's desire to *unchain the Money Power,* previously bound in law and *practice* by the Catholic Church. This diabolic objective succeeded, as we shall see in a subsequent chapter, first by its rise within the papacy, over the strenuous protests of Martin Luther at a time when John Calvin was a child — and then, following suit, within the Reformed Church itself in so far as it heeded Calvin (and since he was not a pontiff, many Calvinists ignored or defied his nullification of the Biblical law against usury). Calvin had grudgingly permitted usury on grounds similar to those of the nominalist Catholic Johann Eck, Luther's theological nemesis, who had justified it on behalf of the Catholic usury bank of Fugger, although Calvin did not admit of this antecedent.

It may come as a shock to conservative Reformed Christians that Calvin, the celebrated champion of *sola Scriptura,* is: "not a Biblical literalist... Calvin's response is that the prohibitions against usury in the Old Testament are part of the civil legislation of the Jews. These laws were binding on the Jews in their society, but they are not for us today... (Calvin wrote), follows that usury is not unlawful, except in so far as it contravenes equity... I therefore conclude that *usury must be judged, not by any particular passage of Scripture, but simply by the rules of equity."* [14]

---

[14] Haas, op. cit., p. 120; emphasis supplied. Haas neglects to take notice of the extent to which Calvin hounded usurers and regarded them as unworthy of

> membership in the Christian congregation. When he was pastor in Geneva all profits on loans were banned and many capitalist businesses which we take for granted nowadays as supposedly benign and ethical, were severely restricted. Calvin regarded usury as a sometimes necessary but generally (with some exceptions), moral evil. Cf. this writer's *Usury in Christendom: The Mortal Sin that Was and Now is Not* (2012), pp. 186-187, 207-208 and 259-261. The Renaissance Church of Rome and its latter-day pontiffs maintained an elaborate pretense with regard to the dogma on usury, while redefining it in accordance with nominalism and equity, and then claiming that nothing had changed. A Conservative Catholic former professor at Notre Dame University contested our statements about the popes and usury by contending that the papist laws contra usury are still on the books. Actually, they are not, having been removed from canon law, but even if the assertion were true, what exactly would that signify? The Communist Party's laws guaranteeing freedom of speech were never formally removed from the Soviet Constitution, yet the significance of those laws for the Russian and other captive peoples, was near zero. In fact, the disparity between what is on paper and what is actually forbidden or permitted in real life, compounds the corruption.

What bragging rights do Protestants possess over papist Catholics when the former resort to John Calvin as a faithful guide in the application of God's Biblical commands and standards on usury, when he permits lawyers' rules of equity to trump the statutes and commands in the Word of God? Some conservative pastors of Reformed churches have derogated the exigent question of how the love of money has come to be weaponized in Christendom, on the basis that the provenance of the weaponization is not clear, or that the law of God in the matter of profit on loans is a source of some confusion. What is confusing about Luke 6:30-36? Since the Word of God proclaims that the love of money is the root of all evil (I Timothy 6:10), should there not be a greater sense of urgency among the Reformed in resolving this alleged "confusion"?

It is important to make note of the fact that Calvin's statements on his permission for usury were put forth unadorned by duplicity, however. His equity was a fact he stated plainly and without circumlocution. He wrote of his preference for *epikeia* above the Logos, though not in those terms. His candor is found in all of his writings which we have reviewed, public and private. He had nothing to hide because

he was so steeped in the Church of Rome's modernizing legal philosophy that he could not see the Scriptural nullification at the heart of it (we are not excusing his faith in Catholic nominalist economic theory). Truly he was blind in this matter. But since he concealed nothing, then the case, pro or contra his position, can be argued on its merits and demerits without begging the question.

With Rome the obstinacy of its true believers seriously impedes clarity on the subject of *papal usury,* in that the denial of the fact of papal permission for profit from loans curtails an analysis of the consequences of that permission. Usurious Catholic banking is wrapped in dissimulation and sly euphemism; notably when profit gained from loans was explained away with the *lucrum cessans* escape clause, rather than terming it what it was: interest on loans. The papacy profited from the maintenance of dishonest, veiled forms of usury as early as the beginning of the sixteenth century, for instance in the traffic between Catholic bankers in the French city of Lyons, and the Vatican:

"The ability of the bankers to play with the exchange rates allowed them to loan money... and thus make a profit. Naturally each transaction necessitated two bills exchange: one that transferred the money to Lyons and the other that from Lyons transferred the money back to a beneficiary in Rome. These operations, moreover, allowed the bankers to avoid running afoul of the anti-usury laws, because the eventual profit was not a fixed sum as a percentage, but rather a recompense for risk, which varied from day to day. The interest rate was by this time an accepted part of financial dealings (and was attached to all the loans conceded to the Apostolic Chamber), but it was always specified that it was due to *lucri cessantis*." [15]

[15] Francesco Guidi Bruscoli, *Papal Banking in Renaissance Rome: Benvenuto Olivieri and Paul III* (2007) p. 183.

There is no evidence that John Calvin earned a dime from any form of usury operation. All evidence is that he forbade it in Geneva, Switzerland and drove usurers from the congregations in which he exercised oversight. Pope Pius IV: "The strength of that heretic (Calvin) consisted in this, that money never had the slightest charm for him." [16]

[16] Cf. François Guizot, "Calvin," in *Musée des protestante célébrés* (1822).

[Page 22 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

Spurgeon on "the Jews":

"Israel would never worship images, saints and virgins! Blessed were they as a nation for this thing, at least, that they utterly rejected the idolatry of which Rome is shamelessly guilty! It were far better to not be a Christian than to think Popery to be Christianity, for it is one of the vilest forms of idolatry that ever came from the polluted heart of man!"

Where is this racial Israel of which Rev. Spurgeon writes, which would "never worship images" and "utterly rejected... idolatry"? Has he heard of a book called the Old Testament, which contains a rather extensive record of Israel's episodic idolatry of every conceivable type? When, pray tell, did this cease? At the time in which Israel demanded of the Roman government the crucifixion of their Messiah? In the centuries afterward, when their religious masters residing in Babylon committed the spurious “Oral Law of Moses” to writing, comprising the Talmud and Kabbalah?

Of that “glorious Israel” that “utterly rejected... idolatry,” it is said in the Old Testament, at Ezekiel 16:23-25: “To crown your wickedness... declares the Lord God... At the entry to every alley... you opened your legs to all comers in countless acts of fornication. You have also fornicated with your big-membered neighbors, the Egyptians... you do not act like a proper prostitute because you disdain to take a fee... you bribe them to fornicate with you.”

What is the supposed righteousness of the race-obsessed Rev. Spurgeon’s Christ-less Jews and Judaism, but the rags and tatters of perdition?

Rev. Spurgeon said of Jews: “Some are devout—devout men with some of whom it has been our privilege to have hearty fellowship in matters of common interest touching the things of God. When we have spoken together of the Providence of God and of faith in the Divine Mercy, we have been much of the same mind... we were able, in comparing notes, to feel the same zeal for the value of the Old Testament and for the Glory of the ever-blessed God!... I marvel not that Jews are not Christians when I know what sort of Christianity, for the most part, they have seen. When I have walked through Rome and countries under Rome’s sway— and have seen thousands bow before the image of a woman carried through the streets —when I have seen the churches crammed with people bowing down before pieces of bone, hair and teeth of dead saints, and such like things —I have said to myself, ‘If I were a worshipper of the One true God, I would look with scorn upon those who bow before these cast clouts, moldy rags, pieces of rotten timber and I know not what besides!’ No, no, good Jew! Join not with this idolatrous rabble! Remain a Jew rather than degrade yourself with this superstition!” [17]

These so-called “Jews” (we are not sure how Mr. Spurgeon has ascertained for certain they are indeed the direct descendants of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob), congregate in graveyards and hold in awe and as material generators of spiritual power, the bodies of their deceased rabbis. Amulets are crafted by Orthodox rabbis for a fee of money (we possess a two-volume set of a magic amulet-making manual recently published by Israeli rabbis). Either curses or protection are to be dispensed to those who wear those amulets.

What is sorriest about the macabre comedy that comprises Rev. Spurgeon’s homily, is *his ignorance of the role of Judaic agents in transforming*

---

[17] “The Vine of Israel: A Sermon Delivered by C. H. Spurgeon at the Metropolitan Tabernacle, Newington.” (May 9, 1878).

the Catholic Church from that of Christ to that of the occult, by embracing the superstitious doctrines of the very Judaism which he extols and imagines is entirely separate from post-Renaissance Catholicism. In this regard he is as bamboozled as the Right-wing Catholics who are gulled by the Renaissance Church's outbursts against certain Jews, most of which were theatrical. Both the New Age occultist, the Protestant Fundamentalist, and the "conservative" Catholic believe that the Church of Rome in the Renaissance period under study, was the nemesis of all that Judaism represented, when in truth it was *the vessel into which Judaism poured its Talmudic and Kabbalistic sorceries and iniquities. After these had been fully absorbed into the corpus of the Church at the highest levels, only then did the Renaissance and post-Renaissance pontiffs mount their theatre of ostentatious "persecution" of Judaics,* which was still so much of a charade that when Pope Leo XIII issued his encyclical contra Freemasonry *(Humanum Genus,* 1884), he scrupulously omitted all mention of the Brotherhood's most virulent source of inspiration and direction, the rabbinic Kabbalah. [18]

Returning to Rev. Hislop and his *Two Babylons,* we note the degree to which Hislop was in revolt against the original classical Protestantism of the sixteenth and seventeenth century which identified the Roman Constantine as a Biblical hero, and the Church prior to the Renaissance as not generally stricken by corruption and defection.

In his acclaimed 1685 *Annotation Upon the Holy Bible,* the English Calvinist Matthew Pool (also spelled Poole), in his commentary on Revelation 13:6, wrote: "...for 'till the year 1260, when the Inquisition was set up, (the Doctrine of Transubstantiation having been about that time decreed by Innocent the Third, and confirmed by the Council of Lateran), the persecution was not great... the Doctrine of Transubstantiation, though it might be broached one hundred years before, yet was made no doctrine of their Church of Six Hundred Years after the first beginning of the papacy, and therefore cannot well be reckoned among Antichrist's first blasphemies."

---

[18] The Kabbalah consists of several books, the most notable being the *Zohar,* which was written, like the Babylonian Talmud, mainly in Aramaic. According to academic consensus, it was compiled in the thirteenth century by the Spanish Sephardic Rabbi Moses de León (1250-1305). But de León himself attributed it to a second century A.D. rabbi, Shimon ben Yohai, whose signature statement was "Even the best of the gentiles should all be killed," and who is a principal figure in the *Zohar,* which is a work of sorcery, extravagant superstition and depraved glosses on the Old Testament, though the Establishment press will have none of it, describing it as having a "playful appeal," and an "endearing mixture of whimsy and sanctity," as well as a theology of the "universal supremacy of love." (Jeremy Adler, "Book of Splendour," *Times Literary Supplement,* November 4, 2016, p. 29).

In his introduction to Revelation 13, Pool places the rise of Antichrist in Rome three centuries *after* Constantine: "…we must distinguish between the rise and reign of Antichrist. It doth not seem to me reasonable to make his reign to commence higher (sooner) than 600 or 606, when he (the bishop of Rome) arrogated to himself the Primacy…"

Targeted toward lay consumption and commissioned by the Puritan Parliament of England at the time in which the Westminster Assembly sat (1643-1649), another Protestant commentary, the monumental *Annotations Upon All the Books*

of the Old and New Testaments, [19]

[19] London: John Legatt and John Raworth, 1645; reprinted in 1651, 1657, and 1658. The annotations were by a team of scholar-theologians led by Thomas Gataker, John Ley, William Gouge, Meric Casaubon, Francis Taylor, Daniel Featley and John Reading. Their work came to be known as "The Assembly's Annotations" and "The English Annotations."

had a heroic view of Constantine, free of Hislop's frenzies and in keeping with the early Christian perspective on this renowned protector of Christ's people. In the annotations upon Revelation 12, "Constantine and his successors" are referred to as "God's deputies." His troops are equated with "Michael and his angels," and as subduers of paganism. [20]

[20] Elizabeth Clarke notes with regard to Protestant annotations (commentary) upon the Bible, that whereas Calvin commenced his religious reform with the idea that the Bible text itself enabled "readers to discern God more clearly," by the next century Calvinists were of the opinion that, in view of the heresies that had arisen among the Bible readers, good English scholarship was available to prevent the heresies and "fond fantasies" that might result from the reading of an unannotated Bible. "Origen, it is suggested, would not have castrated himself if he had read 'a Marginal Note upon Matt. 19:12.' (The note in the Geneva Bible might well have deterred any would-be self-mutilator, insisting that castration is only a metaphor for 'the gift of continence,' and that in any case, this gift is very rare: after all, none 'may rashly abstain from' that Protestant institution of marriage)." Clarke, *Politics Religion and the Song of Songs in Seventeenth Century England* (2011) p. 108.

Hislop's other contention is that the Blessed Virgin Mary, who, according to Catholic theology, was conceived without sin (since Jesus was the New Adam who could incarnate only in the uncontaminated "soil" of another Eden), and who is sometimes referred to as the "Queen of Heaven," is actually a barely concealed personification of a pagan goddess.

Who else should be Queen of Heaven other than the Mother of God? Who would dare depose this humble ever-Virgin Israelite who is the most blessed woman in all creation, having been chosen to bear the veritable flesh of God Himself? It is a tragedy that the radical Protestant reaction to her disproportionate status within the papist cult of mariolatry, is to depose her of the *rightful* and *proportionate* honor due her. There is nothing occult about such appropriate honor. In fact, it is the occult that dethrones Mary, and where she is dethroned, into the vacuum rushes either a New Age or Judaic ("Shekhinah") goddess, or its polar opposite, the sterile, empty quarter of a Protestantism that is often, in some churches, nearly blind to the most blessed woman in all creation, has no female figure of abiding holiness in its art or liturgy, and often only grudgingly acknowledges her in the most niggardly terms of recognition.

It is true that in the minds of some followers of the Church of Rome, Mary has been ascribed goddess-like qualities as the so-called "Co-Redemptrix of the Universe." There is indeed such a phenomenon as mariolatry, and it exists among some percentage of the followers of Rome.

In our study of the incursion of paganism into Renaissance Catholicism and the concealed veneration of the witch-goddess Isis, we acknowledge that the witch-goddess cult existed in the Church in the Renaissance and to give but one example, in the papal apartment itself. This was *not,* however, "Mary disguised as Isis."

The Papal Isis

Regarding the papal apartment in the Vatican, art historian Anja Grebe writes, "Although the pope had "his bed chamber, living quarters and treasure chamber there, the front areas in particular... were used for official occasions such as diplomatic receptions, audiences... consistories (meetings with cardinals), the signing of treaties and even parties. In his diaries, the pope's master of ceremonies, Johannes Burchardus (1440-1506) distinguishes between the more public areas and the 'secret rooms' *(camere secrete)* accessible as a rule only to a small number of religious and secular dignitaries. The pope also provided high-ranking visitors with guest rooms... Among his first guests were King Frederick I of Naples and Marquis Gianfresco II Gonzaga of Mantua, as well as the latter's adversary, Charles VIII of France, in January, 1495. In response to the newly completed frescoes, the French king is reported to have declared that in no other palace had he seen 'decoration of this kind." [21]

The papal apartment in question comprises six rooms and side-rooms located on the first floor of the papal palace. It was constructed by order of Nicholas V, who reigned from 1447-1455. The papal apartment of the late fifteenth century was designed by members of the Curia, including Annio da

---

[21] Grebe, *The Vatican: All the Paintings* (2013), p. 160.

Viterbo and Bartolomeo Platina, and painted by "Pintoricchio" (Bernardino di Benedetto di Bagio; 1453-1513). In those environs, Mary's image is entirely separate from the pagan images and depicted correctly, chastely and reverently, without occult symbolism. In that space, Isis is never equated with the Mother of Jesus: "...in the Vatican itself... there is a mural by the master Pintoricchio that shows Isis, seated on a Renaissance throne, instructing Hermes Trismegistus at her right hand and Moses at her left—which surely suggests... that the wisdom shared by the pagan and Hebrew sages was originally revealed neither by Yahweh nor by Jove, but by the consort of the dead-and-resurrected Egyptian Savior Osiris." [22]

[22] Joseph Campbell, *Mythic Worlds, Modem Worlds* (2003), p. 153.

This is depraved in and of itself. Because it did not defame Mary by incorporating her into the cult of Isis, does not exculpate this Renaissance papal devotion to pagan Hermetic syncretism. In this realm the Christian treads the razor's edge between the extremes of papalolatrous credulity and Protestant denial of Mary's significance. It is a minefield where precision, attention to context and respect for details that contradict one's thesis, are essential if an accurate account is to be rendered.

The Isis iconography in the papal apartment was no mere artwork, or whimsical elucidation of the follies of mythology. Its expression was pedagogical and worshipful—an evocation of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic theology *which had been alien to the Church until the Renaissance.* This fact is critically important if we are to maintain fidelity to the facts, rather than pursuing the highly partisan agenda of the nineteenth century researcher Hislop and an extremist faction within the Left-wing of seventeenth century Calvinism.

Pool, in his influential *Annotations,* while superior to Hislop, would nonetheless have us believe that the Church defected after six hundred years. He says this occurred because he opines that a literal belief in the words of Jesus Christ in John 6:53-57 is a sign of the Antichrist: "Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed. He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him." Why are Catholics acolytes of the Antichrist if they believe the preceding words of the Gospel of St. John as the Church interpreted them from Justin Martyr onward?

Some Protestants forget what a struggle it was to win and hold formerly pagan lands for Christianity and its civilization. The very formation of what it means to be English occurred in the century Matthew Pool decreed to be the century when Rome lost the Faith. It was Arthur, his Catholic son Edward and equally Catholic grandson Athelstan, who laid the foundation for taking Wessex and Mercia from the savage Viking hordes, and uniting them under Athelstan, who was the first to rightfully bear the title *Rex totius Britanniae.* These Catholic kings fashioned the Anglo-Saxon nation. There is something repellant about an armchair Fundamentalist from the comfort of his study, dismissing this titanic Christian struggle and subsequent victory, as smacking of Antichrist because Catholics took Jesus at His word in John 6:53-57. Retroactive criminalization of the past is often a signpost of revolutionary dictatorship.

The Renaissance popes lacked the candor to publicly declare any such criminalization. Rather, they resorted to skullduggery as reflected in the papal apartment that paid *latria* to goddess Isis and her putative disciple Hermes Trismegistus —the infernal patron of the Catholic popes and theologians of that era (with honorable exceptions, among them Savonarola).

“It may seem astonishing that in the apartment of the pope, Christ’s representative on earth, and moreover in a room dedicated to the lives of the saints, a number of whom sacrificed their lives in the fight against paganism, the ceiling is decorated with... Isis... the traverse arch depicts... a beautiful woman assuming her throne as the Egyptian queen Isis... Despite the fact that the legend takes place in ancient Egypt, Pintoricchio *depicts the figures in fifteenth-century dress.”* [23]

[23] Anja Grebe, op. cit., p. 181; emphasis supplied.

The papal worship of Isis in the late fifteenth century is apart from the *dulia* (veneration, as distinct from *latria,* i.e. worship), which the orthodox theology of the pre-Renaissance

ecclesia accorded to Blessed Mary. The Renaissance popes were conveying by means of the high art of the Italian masters (more seductive because of their incomparable aesthetic), a *symbolic continuity between the Egyptian religion and the papal religion*—a culmination of the Humanism which was derived from Neoplatonic-Hermeticism. Renaissance Rome’s occultism was an Egyptianizing religion for which Isis was “Mistress of the Word in the Beginning.” After the sorcery had taken sufficient and deep root, the Inquisition was revived to maintain a stage play for the non-initiated who needed to believe that the post-Renaissance Church was the same bastion of anti-occultism as the pre-Renaissance *ecclesia* had been. This hoax depended as much upon the psychology of self-deception among conservative Catholics, as the elaborate inquisitorial theatricals themselves, wherein expendable small fry were sacrificed for the sake of a *public image of reaction* that prevailed over the *covert reality of revolutionary occultism* installed in the depths of the Church.

Our sleuthing mission is concerned with the conspiracies of the sons of Belial boring into the bowels of the Church of Jesus Christ. Yet in this process of detecting the Judas theology and its agents, one must exercise caution so that all is in proportion, and we do not commit the reverse error and strain at gnats (Matthew 23:24), becoming like “Zeal-of-the-Land-Busy,” the character in Ben Jonson’s *Bartholomew Fair:* a Protestant fanatic who mistook a basket of gingerbread-men pastries for “popish idols.”

The Puritan concern for a living faith in conformity with the Gospel and an end to criminal politics was admirable. But much good will was squandered because a “Zeal-of-the-Land-Busy,” such as Oliver Cromwell, suppressed the English Christian people’s day of rest at Christmas, which paid honor to a date said to commemorate the glad tidings of great joy over the incarnation of Israel’s Messiah. Zeal-of-the-Land-Busy condemned it as pagan. Protestant scholar Ralph Woodrow writes:

“But wasn’t December 25th an evil day? Did not pagans honor this day as the birthday of the sun-god? Without attempting to go into details, let’s assume December 25th was indeed an ancient, popular, pagan celebration in honor of the sun-god. Assume, also, that church leaders, seeking to do away with this pagan celebration, gradually replaced it with a celebration to honor the birth of the Sun of righteousness, Jesus Christ—on the same day. Was this substitution a dangerous compromise? Or an opportunity to “overcome evil with good” Romans 12:21)? This could all be debated, I’m sure. But regardless of how this came right or wrong, Christmas became an established day on our calendar. The result has been that every year in many parts of the world, and in millions of cases, the story of Jesus Christ, his birth and life, is told. The Sun of righteousness (Mal. 4:2) has so far out-shined any former supposed sun-gods, Sol, Osiris, Horus, or Mithra do not even cross our minds... I have known people who would rather argue (even with unconverted people) that Christ was not born on December 25, than to put emphasis on the fact that *He was born—regardless* of when—and what He can do in our lives now!” [24]

[24] Woodrow, *Christmas Reconsidered* (2006), pp. 20-21 and 41.

The Church-period predating the Renaissance was not perfect and some seeds of the occult—principally Neoplatonism —had been planted well before the Quattrocento. There were also terrible errors committed during the Crusades, including the Sack of Constantinople in 1204, which fatally sapped Christendom's eastern Byzantine outpost and contributed to its long decline, and eventual catastrophic fall to the Ottoman Muslims in 1453.

Long before Vatican Council I, the idea of the infallibility of the pope had metastasized in the medieval period, as witnessed in the canonizations of saints, in which it was held that the judgment of the pontiff was infallible. We can trace this development to the period 1050-1150 when the Bishop of Rome and his Curia began to usurp from local bishops the one thousand-year-old subsidiary function of proclaiming the sainthood of a deceased local Christian, i.e. the certainty that the person was in heaven. Papal claims to absolute, supreme authority were enlarged by the demise of subsidiarity.

Circa 1040, Pope Benedict IX issued the first decree of canonization. His language was unprecedented in Christ's ecclesia: *“Statueremus et decenemus”* (We establish and decree”). His establishment and decree was to the whole Church by apostolic authority, asserting, in this instance, the

sainthood of the late Simeon of Syracuse, an itinerant monk. This represented the marginalization of the local church and its bishop, in favor of the bishop of the diocese of Rome. Immemorial Christian practice had granted the right of proclaiming a Christian a saint to the local bishop. It was a species of modernist innovation to take that right away. Over a long and arduous period of evolution, the *gradual process* of papal monopoly over sainthood culminated in the declaration by Urban VIII in 1634, of the reservation of that right exclusively to the pontiff.

Our concern is for the study of the development of absolute obedience to the Bishop of Rome without which the Tridentine Latin Mass could not have been suppressed (some prefer the term “derogated”), in 1969 and thereafter, throughout nearly the whole Church. The success of the suppression depended upon the loss of memory among the laity and priests, of the Tridentine Mass and its subsequent replacement by a liturgy of the reigning pope (Paul VI). If rights of local bishops in such matters had not been gradually extinguished, prelates such as Cardinal James McIntyre in Los Angeles and an estimated half dozen other bishops and cardinals in favor of the Tridentine Latin Mass in America, would have created comparatively large havens of liturgical preservation. These very likely would have saved generations of Catholics from imposed amnesia with regard to the suppressed rite.

The Middle Ages also saw the rise of a disconcerting obsession with making contact with the physical remains of the corpses of those declared to be saints. This focus on dead matter and anatomical parts of saintly cadavers ("relics") both real and fake, resulted not only in a lucrative traffic that would become a grievance of the Reformers, it did, under certain (not all) circumstances, come to dominate medieval conceptions of the Gospel, lessening emphasis on the paramount value of a *personal spiritual relationship with the living God,* adherence to faith in Him and the obedience to His commandments which arises from that faith, and which contributes to the Kingship of Christ. It would be wrong to dismiss relics altogether, or the pilgrimages that grew up around them, but it seems equally wrong that such customs would be allowed to become rife with superstition and an unbalanced emphasis that detracted from the daily struggle to live according to a Biblical standard.

[Page 32 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

Nonetheless, the medieval Church for all its faults, was still the Church of Jesus Christ, the scourge of usurers, evangelizer of millions of pagans, and the source of laws of liberty by which a free people are governed (such as the Magna Carta, in large part the result of efforts by the Catholic Archbishop of Canterbury, Stephen Langton). The rule in Britain of King Arthur (sixth century), King Alfred the Great and St. Edmund of East Anglia (ninth century), and St. Edward the Confessor (eleventh century), are among the most exemplary templates of Christian government in the history of our civilization. As Eleanor Parker observes, "Aelfric's description of St. Edmund is a portrait of an ideal Anglo-Saxon king: wise, humble, virtuous and kind to the poor and weak." Aelfric of Eynsham:

"Edmund the blessed, King of the East Angles, was wise and honorable, and always honored Almighty God in noble conduct. He was humble and virtuous and endured so resolutely that he would never submit to shameful vices, nor on either side deviate from his virtuous practices, but was always mindful of the true teaching: 'Have you been appointed as ruler? Do not exalt yourself, but be among men as if you are one of them,' (Ecclesiasticus 32:1). He was generous to the poor and like a father to widows, and with benevolence always guided his people to righteousness, and restrained the violent, and blessedly lived in the true faith." [25]

By their fruits ye shall know them. The fruits of the Church prior to the Renaissance were spectacular. Of course, God preserved His people in both the Renaissance and post-Renaissance, as we noted at the outset, and as we discover in the lives of saints such as Joseph of Cupertino, Father Damien of Molokai, Brother André and other post-Renaissance Catholics; preserved by grace miraculous. Surely there are saints today in the surviving traces of the immemorial Church, gripped as it is in a crisis which is not new. Crisis is the condition of the Church. It was in crisis when St. John wrote the Book of Revelation.

---

[25] W. W. Skeat, *Passio Sancti Eadmundi* (cf. *Ælfric's Lives of Saints*, EETS 94 and 114, vol. II, pp. 314-334); translated from medieval English by Eleanor Parker (http://aclerkofoxford.blogspot.co.uk/2014/11/eadmund-se-eadiga-eastengla-cynincg.html).

Acknowledgment

As an independent scholar without institutional affiliation, the completion of this book was dependent on benefactors who generously contributed to support our research and writing. Unfortunately, the notion that “error” has no rights has gained a foothold in the United States of late, a fact which would have appalled the Founding Fathers, who considered the doctrine one of the most pernicious aspects of the fratricidal wars of religion in the Old World. Because of this circumstance, we will not name our benefactors in these pages, lest they become a target for loss of reputation, career, or worse. They are known to God and this writer, and our prayer is that their reward will be great, and that tolerance and respect for Christians who radically dissent from the reigning consensus in matters of history and religion, will be restored.

Chapter I

More Catholic than the Pope

The Catholic-Kabbalist Giles of Viterbo gave the inaugural address at the Fifth Lateran Council, where he urged Julius II to crush the aggression of the Islamic Turks. In many cases one can take incidents like that in the lives of the various Catholic players who people our Renaissance chronicle, and extrapolate from those acts the conclusion that they were, for all their “imperfections,” stalwarts of the Faith, who may have “flirted with” or “dabbled in” the occult, or occasionally “went astray” within it, but for the most part they accomplished much good for the true Church in spite of these peccadilloes. That sort of reasoning is like saying that on his way to return the thirty pieces of silver, Judas gave an inspirational, impromptu talk to a gathering of Jews, admonishing them to defend elderly women when they are beset by robbers, and thus we must not be too harsh on him.

Some of the evil-doers profiled in this book did some good things, in addition to some very bad ones, and they may have uttered pious and orthodox statements from time to time. In San Francisco, at his People's Temple, Jim Jones funded a soup kitchen that served one and all, no questions asked. Those who would modify the judgment of history on Jim Jones of Jonestown because he distributed free food to an impoverished community, are probably not the ideal audience for this book. The scoundrels we study remain even to this day some of the most accomplished master deceivers in western history. The fraud and masquerade we encounter in these pages is not only a product of a particular conspiracy or cabal, it is older than the pyramids and of an institutional character. One essential element of these diabolists is their doubling: they are two-faced operators for whom double-thinking, double-dealing and double-talk are second nature. The extent of their Janus character would seem to be of an immensity greater than we can imagine. We are in the presence of the servants of an intelligence almost without limit; and second only to God. It is a distant second, but it is nonetheless of a vastness in terms of the extent of its craftiness, guile, deviousness and subterfuge, as to dwarf the ratiocinative powers of mere human beings.

The epistemological problem an investigator and historian of the actions and impact of this intelligence faces, is in the matter of intention. Much of what the force behind Cryptocracy achieves is so fantastic that humans have difficulty embracing the reality of it, and as a defense-mechanism they dismiss aspects of it which they may occasionally glimpse in their otherwise quotidian world, as "coincidence."

Therefore, one hesitates to present what one believes to be true because it is in the nature of mankind to refuse to believe it. The scholar of secret societies takes the risk of damaging his credibility in the eyes of the average reader or listener, by divulging the darkest corners of his research, and hence, there is the temptation to suppress the most freakish and eerie data, and limit oneself to less threatening information and conclusions. If we were to succumb to this temptation, however, then the writing of this book would be pointless. We will risk our credibility in order to convey what we believe to be the whole truth, as we can grasp and articulate it.

In occult lore the patron of the Vatican is not St. Peter but his double, the deity Janus, who in legend also bears a key. The Vatican, together with the district of London known as "the City," and Jerusalem, are citadels of occult corruption. The Vatican seems to have had that destiny imposed on it intentionally, from antiquity. The capital of the Church of Rome's double-talk, double-mind and double-dealing, has as its tutelary deity the Roman god Janus; the god of beginnings, and of doors and passageways. He who held the key of Janus had tremendous authority. The status of Janus was not minor. He was of cosmic significance: *“divum deus”* (god of gods). [1]

These facts were not lost on the Neoplatonic-Hermeticists:

“According to Aulus Gellius, the word (Vatican) derived from the ancient custom of seeking prophecies *(vaticinii)* from the guardian deity of the site, and Festus Pompeius [2] similarly connected it to seers (*vates*)... No student of the Vatican’s pre-Christian importance for occult Rome was more ardent than Giles of Viterbo. Keenly interested in the ancient Etruscans, especially their reputation for esoteric religious lore, Giles points out in his *Historia XX saeculorum* that Janus, the founder of the Etruscan religion, had been the patron deity... Hence, the ancient cult of Janus in the Vatican meant that from the earliest times this Roman site had been consecrated for the true religion... A further confirmation of this, Giles suggests, appears in the parallel of Janus and St. Peter as key-bearers... the *Mons Vaticanus* (w)as the true holy mountain, and from this particular locus of sanctifying grace the whole world came to be governed.” [3]

Hermeticism was an elitist occult philosophy which flourished within the papacy and Neoplatonic Vatican networks from the Renaissance onward. It claims privileged possession of a secret knowledge from antiquity which betokened the potential to revolutionize the believer’s understanding of existence. Access to this knowledge is reserved for the highest levels of the Church of Rome and its agents.

The occult Church of Rome revealed itself in the art and architecture which it sponsored. In many cases ecclesiastical art and architecture of the Renaissance era is a hieroglyphic representation of theological innovation — the new religion publicly presented in a visual language.

Here we encounter Humanism opposed to Divinism. As categories, Humanism together with Neoplatonism represent pagan subjectivism advertised as the free spirit’s liberation, just as recourse to the rabbinic texts was presented in the Renaissance in the same terms, as humanity being free at last to access the limitless availability of all knowledge, as a first step in the escape from Catholic bigotry to Catholic liberalism, and from a Scripturally-faithful Catholicism to a pagan gnosis. At the close of the Middle Ages, the early Humanists cultivated the ground for the coming re-entry of Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Kabbalism, a rebirth of the sorcery and heathenism against which the God of Israel had warred in the Old Testament: “It was the fourteenth century crisis of faith in institutions and human virtue that brought into being the first phase of the humanist movement. The hope of Petrarch, his followers Boccaccio and Salutati, and later generations of humanists, was that the sufferings of the present world could be remedied by recovering the virtue of the ancient world they admired so much, and principally the ancient pagan world...

---

[1] Simon Hornblower and Antony Spawforth (eds.), *The Oxford Classical Dictionary* (2003), p. 793.

[2] A circa second century A.D. Roman lexicographer.

[3] Charles L. Stinger, *The Renaissance in Rome* (1998), pp. 184-185.

“As in other humanist works of the fifteenth century... Ficino had a vision of what Christianity could be that is higher and finer than the historical Christianity practiced in his time. The vision was most famously captured in the religious practices depicted in Thomas More’s *Utopia,* written thirty-two years after (Rev. Fr. Marsilio) Ficino’s apologetic tract (*De christiana religione*) and... in dependence on Ficino’s theology. Ficino in 1474 is calling for Christians to reform their own theology and praxis along fines similar to those advocated by Pico della Mirandola twelve years later.” [4]

In the course of this pilgrimage, the Humanists picked up, from the Midrash on Noah and Ham, racism, the rabbinic disease, along with the rabbinic theory of Black African subhumanity (Maimonides, *Guide of the Perplexed,* in the uncensored Shlomo Pines translation). It is an irony of history that rabbinic racism entered the West in earnest through the popularization, among the ecclesiastical and cultural intelligentsia, of Kabbalistic, Midrashic and Maimonidean texts and traditions.

In the name of the expansion of knowledge the Renaissance contracted it. God’s light is all expansive, never ending and unlimited. The Renaissance spirit is the embodiment of fraud: the exploration of the bogus “freedom” the serpent offered in the Garden. The “freedom” of the serpent is not a limitless universe, but a hermetically sealed prison, the claustrophobia and blindness of human subjectivity, the theater of our mirrored ego mistaken for the cosmos. The enemies of this gnosis were Augustine and Aquinas, orthodox Catholic guides to the cosmic mind of God, and God’s unfettered Creation. “We see the things you created because they exist. But they exist only because you created them” *(The Confessions of St. Augustine*, XII). Reality exists within and is generated by the mind of God, the limitless expanse. During and after the Renaissance this reality was eclipsed and falsified by the

[4] Jens Zimmerman, *Re-Envisioning Christian Humanism* (2016).

doctrine of the Kabbalah: *Man, the Measure of All Things.* This found its expression in Pico della Mirandola's *On the Dignity of Man,* a treatise which Pope "Saint" John Paul II regarded as blessed and seminal. The project of "liberation" was in actuality an occluding, self-referential construct which limited humanity to one severely crippled and warped corner of experience, giving rise to the techno-nihilist hell today, predicated upon, paradoxically, mystical superstitions tempting us to play god. Succumbing to these temptations leads to the death of nature, not its enhancement. The great contest in our time is between medieval-Catholic fidelity to nature and Renaissance neo-Catholic consent for the god-man who will "improve" and "perfect" it.

From the Renaissance onward, the voice of God and the Word of God were diminished, eclipsed by the human will, proceeding from the exalted image of the Catholic-Kabbalistic man-god, to the Protestant utilitarian *epikeia* of John Calvin, the lawyer who "reconciles" the divine law on usury, through to an accommodation with the situation ethics of the Renaissance, doing violence to the Logos in the process.

The vision of humanity as the Creator's image-bearing beings, endowed by that Creator with unalienable rights, is obliterated by the revolt against the Creator's Law— statutes and judgments which were transmitted to men and women for the protection and enhancement of their iconic status as *imago Dei,* with God-given rights that are not to be revoked by man. Any revocation is instituted by rebels against God. The primary motivation for this revocation is the lust for money, which in the Renaissance, for the first time in Christian civilization, began to be formally instituted in the form of ecclesiastical permission for subjecting the human being to exploitation by the renting of money. The image of God would henceforth be commodified: the human endowed by God was lowered to the status of the subhuman, the consumer, degraded by a mechanism for aping creation, the process of money breeding money. Man did not evolve from apes. The ape was once a man and under the spell of the Money Power became the beast we have with us today, in designer jeans and a T-shirt.

Another rabbinic metaphysic: an artificial dichotomy constructed from the promulgation of the illusion of two beings, the *human* and the *hominid:* the humans possessed of the spirit of God, and the hominid representing the clutter of

useless eaters, the "supernal refuse" as Rabbi Shneur Zalman of Lyady termed them; the occult teaching that there are people who resemble humans but have no God-spirit. Here is the *Jew/goy* divide, expressed in the western occult in categories such as the secret society dichotomy of "initiate and cowan," or "reality and phenomena":

“At Cambridge University, Lytton Strachey was a member of the Apostles —more properly, the Cambridge Conversazione Society—whose secret proceedings, the reading and discussion of papers behind locked doors... were governed by principles of absolute candor. In the lingo of the (Cambridge) Apostles, other people were mere ‘phenomena’ while they themselves were ‘realities.’

Since the Renaissance, Rome has been less the Catholic Church and more its own Church, of Rome that is — a Neoplatonic-Hermetic secret society —the *locus classicus* of which is the Kabbalah, repository of “secret and most arcane wisdom,” and the legends and texts attached to the mythical figure of Hermes (Mercury) Trismegistus. [5]

The usury, magic and paganism which captured the Vatican in the era under examination is vigorously denied by true believers who simply will not allow themselves to countenance it. They choose delusion over truth and call themselves followers of the world’s greatest truth teller. This bipolar mentality is of enormous utility to the dark forces under study. “Traditional” Catholic Bishop Richard Williamson wrote in his column, *Eleison Comments,* of April 5, 2014, titled “Canonizations Unreal”:

“The ‘canonization’ of two Conciliar Popes, John XXIII and John-Paul II, is scheduled for the last Sunday of this month, and many believing Catholics are scared stiff. They know that the Conciliar popes have been (objective) destroyers of the Church. They know that the Church holds canonizations to be infallible. Are they going to be forced to believe that John XXIII and John-Paul II are Saints? It boggles the mind. The Archbishop (Marcel Lefebvre) said that like the mass of modern men, the Conciliar Popes do not believe in any truth being stable. For instance, John-Paul II’s formation was based on truth evolving, moving with the times, progressing with the advance of science, etc. Truth never being fixed is the reason why in 1988 John-Paul II condemned the SSPX (Society of St. Pius X) Episcopal Consecrations, because they sprang from a fixed and not living or moving idea of Catholic Tradition. For indeed Catholics hold, for example, every word in the Credo to be unchangeable, because the words have been hammered out over the ages to express as perfectly as possible the

---

[5] In the thirteenth century the rabbi and Kabbalist Moses de Leon wrote concerning the culmination of the theology that was originally an oral transmission of esoteric doctrine which was committed to writing in the early centuries A.D: “This is what is called ‘kabbalah’ (reception), owing to the fact that it is a reception (traceable back) to Moses from Mount Sinai.”

unchanging truths of the Faith, and these words have been infallibly defined by the Church's popes and Councils."

Nevertheless, "The vigilance and the pastoral solicitude of the Roman Pontiff... according to the duties of his office, are principally and above all manifested in maintaining and conserving the unity and integrity of the Catholic faith, without which it is impossible to please God..." [6]

[6] Pope Benedict XIV, Apostolic Constitution Pastoralis Romani Pontificis, March 30, 1741; excerpted in *Papal Teachings: The Church* (St. Paul Editions, [1962], p. 31.

The "traditional" Catholic writer dares to use his conscience and private judgment to disclaim the judgment of the Apostolic See which is to be disclaimed by no one. Nor can it be judged.

"Traditional" Catholics quote Vatican Council I and omit a key sentence from its decree. Here it is: "...the See of St. Peter always remains unimpaired by any error..." We know of "traditional" Catholics who revel in this astonishing, "infallible" statement and at one time quoted it often, but now, not quite as often. The late twentieth and twenty-first century popes view these "traditional" and "conservative" Catholics as ignoramuses sadly in need of initiation into the hidden verities of the Church, as understood by the pontiff and the hierarchy, in all secrecy.

Imagine what an inside joke it must be in Rome when the "traditional" Catholics come calling and boldly declare that, when it comes to Judaism, they want the Church returned to the way it was before Vatican II. "Guys," the cardinals and clerics are thinking, "what you wish for *is now, and has been, for five long centuries.* The only difference being that *we went public with it in 1965.*"

[More Catholic than the Pope Page 41]

The Second Vatican Council was the culmination of Renaissance popery. The gnosis of *Renaissance* popes is reflected in the theology and actions of *modern* Popes Paul VI, John Paul II, Benedict XVI and Francis. The Roman Church in the Renaissance did not have a "vacant see." All of the pontiffs who reigned (with the exception of the Avignon interregnum), were incontrovertibly popes and some of those popes approved the overthrow of Catholic dogma that had been held by all the Church since the first century A.D. The others who did not overthrow it condoned the revolution by the fact that they did not restore the dogma. Those popes were not just material heretics, they were formal ones.

The "Conservative" and "traditional Catholic" movement as now constituted is doomed to failure because the post-Renaissance popes of Rome and their hierarchies will not be taught doctrine and history by "traditionalist" cowans, dupes and *goyim.* The post-Renaissance popes and their hierarchies possess the key to a mystery of history which the "traditional" Catholics do not: the “traditional Catholic” papacy and its administrative organs and instruments radically *departed from the dogma of the Church, beginning around the last decades of the fifteenth century. The magisterial dogmas that were tossed away were never restored.* For five hundred years the three Traditions of the Renaissance Church of Rome have been: 1. Judaism and the occult; 2. Lying and deceit; and 3. The root of evil itself — the legalization of the love of money.

When “traditional” Catholics appeal for a restoration of tradition, what can be the reaction of the contemporary Vatican’s bishops, cardinals and pope, other than mirth and mockery? If one desires 500 years of Catholic tradition, then *look to the Second Vatican Council and you will find the culmination of five hundred years of Renaissance occult Catholic tradition,* contrasted with fifteen hundred years of Catholic Truth as taught by Jesus, the Apostles, the Fathers of the Early Church and most of the theologians of the Middle Ages.

The Vatican II document *Nostra Aetate* was the public acknowledgement of the accommodation and blending of the Roman Church with Pharisaic Judaism which had been underway since the late 1400s. This sub-rosa hybrid process started in the Renaissance era with Judaizing popes such as Alexander VI, Leo X, Sixtus V and Clement VII. This clandestine fact is part of the illumination process of high-level initiates at the Vatican, who are informed sub-rosa that “traditional Catholicism” is hopelessly compromised and double-minded, in that it claims to oppose Pharisaic Judaism and yet it ignorantly pledges allegiance to all popes previous to Vatican II, when in fact some of those pontiffs were as much in league with the Talmudic/Kabbalistic imperium as Popes Paul VI, John Paul II, Benedict XVI or Francis.

One of the reasons why the “traditional” Catholic movement has been outclassed and out-fought by its enemies is that many “traditional Catholics” believe the myth that the Judaizing of the Church commenced with the Second Vatican Council and the popes thereof. Until Catholics confront the *full history* of the panoply of papal treason and alliance with Talmudic Judaism, they will be fighting a Vatican that smirks at their naiveté, and accords to itself the patriarchal task of gradually initiating childish traditionalist leaders into the elder gnosis of post-Renaissance “Catholicism”—the traditions of the Pharisees and the love of money—which Jesus Christ, the Apostles, and the Fathers of the Early Church vigorously challenged and exposed with every fiber of their being.

To win in chess one needs to stay at least three or four moves ahead of one’s opponent. In the game at hand, the Vatican Cryptocracy is three or four light years ahead of “traditional” Catholics. The *cri de coeur* should be, we want the Church restored to the way it was *before the Renaissance*—before the de facto legalization of the mortal sin of usury, the crucial clandestine support for the Talmud and Kabbalah, and the permission to lie and deceive (mental reservation and equivocation). Until these three sides of the Renaissance papal pyramid are dismantled, there can be no "restoration" of the True Church.

These are radical truths which many will shun so as to return comfortably to their candy-coated world of make-believe, where they may soothe themselves with corrupt delusions and reassuring myths. But in the combat for Christ's Church there can be no half-strength measures and no compromise with the harsh truth about the ecclesiastical history of the Father of Lies. Either we are for the whole truth or we are nothing. Either we face the facts and struggle on the basis of the demands of revelation, or we will answer for it in this life and the next. One of the best summations of the Process we are studying was put forth by Socrates Scholasticos (380-439 A.D., alternately spelled "Scholasticus"), in his *Ecclesiastical History.* In volume one, chapter 22 he analyzes the infiltration methods of the Manicheans as they sought to subvert the Church with deceptive pseudo-Christian texts as part of their conspiracy: "The contents of these treatises are apparently accordant with Christianity in expression, but thoroughly pagan in sentiment." [7]

Scholasticos' insight into the agents of paganism inside the Church centered on their *"parasitically surviving within Christianity" by using the development of doctrine as their vehicle.* Here is unveiled the neopagan syncretic theology of the Renaissance papacy behind the appearance of orthodoxy; a theology which never lifted its hold over the Church of Rome, not even under Pope Leo XIII, the so-called "Light from Heaven" and supposed scourge of Freemasonry who refused to expose the rabbinic-Kabbalistic foundation of the masonic order in his famed 1884 "anti-masonic" encyclical *Humanum Genus.* Consequently, the encyclical constitutes a colossal act of misdirection. Furthermore, on his watch, Pius X chose the personnel who were the authors of the 1917 Code of Canon Law, which omitted all mention of the mortal sin of charging profit on loans.

These highly esteemed and celebrated "conservative" pontiffs, who are revered as "paladins of pious Catholic orthodoxy," failed to assault the axis of the evils they purported to address. They excoriated symptoms and by so doing they lent to the Church of Rome in that time an undeserved public relations reputation for unmasking and combatting occult subversion. The calculated dissimulation of these popes testifies to the fact that the arcane Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Kabbalist-Renaissance theology is untouchable in papal Rome, no matter which pontiff, Liberal or Conservative, occupies the “Chair of Peter,” and no matter how many thundering denunciations they directed at the modernist and masonic branches of the Renaissance theology.

---

[7] *The Ecclesiastical History of Socrates Surnamed Scholasticus* (fifth century AD; English translation 1853), vol. 1, p. 57. The Manichaeans, like Kabbalistic Orthodox Judaism (for example Chabad-Lubavitch), promulgated the doctrine of reincarnation (also known as "transmigration of souls"). Socrates Scholasticos/Scholasticus writes, "Manichaeus... distinctly affirmed a transmutation of bodies, a notion which closely approximates to, and was doubtless borrowed from, the opinions of Empedocles, Pythagoras and the Egyptians, respecting the transmigration of souls."

One reason the covert pagan movement that came to the fore in the Catholic Renaissance survived was its secret alliance with and submission to papal authority and supremacy. Its leaders who did so (Father Ficino, Giovanni Pico della Mirandola, Johannes Reuchlin and many more), lived to freely pass on their spiritual bacillus, while equally diabolic occultists such as Giordano Bruno, were burned — not for their ideas, but for their defiance of popery. Consequently, the Neoplatonic-Hermetic heretics were usually almost always wearing a highly pious mask, outwardly conforming and deferential to the authority of the Supreme Pontiff.

The special protection afforded the occult virus which Rev. Fr. Marsilio Ficino and the Kabbalah-crazed Count Giovanni Pico della Mirandola [8] and others like them cultivated in the deepest bowels of the Church, has never been expelled. It remains the arcane gnosis of the post-Renaissance papacy. It made the papal permission for usury possible. It institutionalized equivocation, lying and child molestation. (The foundations of the institutionalization extend as far back as the beginnings of clericalism, and secrecy for the sake of the protection of the “higher-souled” clergy and their operations, as exposed by St. Peter Damian in the middle of the eleventh century).

The special protection afforded the occult virus made possible the public emergence of the doctrine of the Second Vatican Council document, *Nostra Aetate,* which denounced “anti-Semitism” (a phrase that can mean almost anything), without warning of the *anti-goyimism* of the sacred rabbinic texts of Talmudic-Kabbalistic Judaism, thus creating an unequal equation, conveying an advantage to the “persecuted” enemies of Christ; while hatred toward the

[8] Giovanni Pico della Mirandola should not be confused with his nephew, *Gianfrancesco* Pico della Mirandola. They differed in age by only six years. Gianfrancesco attached himself to Fr. Girolamo Savonarola and his reaction against the conspirators, but whether sincerely or as an infiltrator and spy, remains a point of historical contention.

followers of Christ, and gentiles in general, went unmentioned and unlamented by the Second Vatican Council.

Notice we do not say that the occult virus made the doctrine or the ideology itself possible, but rather *the public emergence* of the doctrine and ideology was made possible, timed to coincide with the *zeitgeist.* The doctrine and the ideology pre-date by centuries Rousseau, Kant and the French Revolution, and by decades Calvin and Luther. Protestantism, occultism and Judaism were propelled into the West by the Renaissance papacy, germinating through the centuries. These actions were screened from public view and from the view of the laity and all those Catholics not initiated into the highest echelons of the hierarchy. The screen was by no means total, and it was in partial public view symbolically and brazenly in accordance with *chutzpah,* from the mid-1400s onward, when the magical doctrine of the sexualization of everything came to the fore in Church-appointed, Church-financed and Church-approved art works and architecture. These embodied and enshrined nudity, paganism, homo-erotic seduction and demonic paradigms and paragons which unambiguously pointed to the substitution of Neoplatonic-Hermetic diabolism, with its ape of God, for the plain Gospel of Jesus Christ, as had been taught and conveyed by the true Catholic Church from the Resurrection of Jesus Christ until the coming of the accursed "Renaissance," which actually signifies a rebirth of forces hitherto chained.

Throughout this work we distinguish between the Catholic Church and the Church of Rome as it metastasized during and after the Renaissance. The distinction is critical. Frederick Meyrick of Oxford University wrote, "The value of truth for truth's sake is a thing apparently unappreciated and inappreciable by the Roman theological mind, *in so far as it is Romish or distinct from Catholic."*

A contributing factor in the rise of the Protestant Reformation was the authority claimed by the pope of Rome, a claim that pre-dates the Renaissance. In the 1599 edition of *The Geneva Bible,* which was the influential English Calvinist translation of the Scriptures in wide use in Elizabethan England, we read at the commentary on Rev. 11:7: "Boniface the Eighth... who lifted himself in so great arrogancy... that he called himself Lord of the whole world."

Protestant Dr. Gary DeMar writes, "Boniface VIII was pope of the Roman Catholic Church from 1294 to 1303. In his special charter, Papal bull *Unam Sanctam* of 1302 — considered by the Reformers as one of the most heretical statements of Papal authority ever made—Boniface insisted, 'Furthermore, we declare, we proclaim, we define that it is absolutely necessary for salvation that every human creature be subject to the Roman Pontiff."

"Traditional Catholics" (and even many "conservative" ones) believe that unfettered freedom of the press such as enjoyed by Americans under the Constitution is a Masonic vice. They also condemn "private judgment." Then, relying upon the very vices they condemn, they proceed to publish their critiques of the Church since the 1960s. "Catholic traditional" Bishop Richard Williamson writes:

"...modern Catholics have tended to put too much faith in the pope and too little in the Church, and here is the answer to that reader who asked me why I do not write about infallibility in the same way that the classic Catholic theology manuals do. Those manuals are marvelous in their way, but they were all written before Vatican II, and they tended to attach to the Pope an infallibility which belongs to the Church. For instance, the summit of infallibility is liable to be presented in the manuals as a solemn definition by the pope, or by pope with Council, but in any case, by the pope. Modern Catholics have tended to put too much faith in the Pope... in the same way that the classic Catholic theology manuals do."

Were the classic theology manuals modern or "traditional"? Was it only theology manuals that taught this excessive faith in the pope? Absolutely not. *It was the popes themselves who promulgated this faith in themselves and the papacy.* Are their teachings not subject to revision because they were written before Vatican II? Is it not true that "traditional" Catholics claim to cling to the whole Church as it existed prior to the Second Vatican Council? Yet now we see a rejection of theology manuals that are pre-Vatican II as advised by a "traditional" Catholic bishop who seeks to restore the Church as it existed before Vatican II. How do we adequately account for the painful, self-contradictory gymnastics which certain Catholics undertake to try to resolve the dilemma of heretical popes, and which leads them into what can only be described in terms of an oxymoron: madhouse modernist-traditionalism.

This modernist-traditionalist (sic) theology on papal power, which would never have been concocted if today there was a reigning pontiff of the "traditional Catholic" Pius X type on the papal throne, was invented in response to the Neoplatonic gang of pontiffs elected since Pope John XXIII in 1958. Here is a conservative Italian observer, Antonio Socci writing in *Libero,* October 5, 2014:

"...the Church belongs to Christ and not the popes, who are only temporary administrators and not masters... They are subject to the law of God and the Word of God and must serve the Lord by protecting the '*depositum fidei'* entrusted to them. They cannot take possession of it or change it according to their own personal ideas..."

Protestant readers of Mr. Socci’s statement will ask him, what took Catholics like you so long to realize this truth?

The Revelation of the Method of Pope Francis came in many ways, one of which was in connection with his Synod on the Family, which in October 2014, produced Italian Archbishop Bruno Forte’s *Relatio post disceptationem,* which states: “Without denying the moral problems connected to homosexual unions it has to be noted that there are cases in which mutual aid to the point of sacrifice constitutes a precious support in the life of the partners.” After an uproar, the Vatican, with Hegelian guile, took one public relations step back and announced that the *Relatio post disceptationem* was a preliminary document and not a final pronouncement. This was for image-management. The substance was something else: Archbishop Forte remained in the pope’s hand-picked inner circle of top synod advisors on the issue. *Two steps forward.*

The Synod of Bishops on the Family met in further sessions in 2015. *Amoris Laetitia* (“The Joy of Love”) is a papal document, technically an apostolic exhortation, written by Francis as the result of the Synod. It was made public April 8, 2016. Cardinal Christoph Schönborn of Vienna stated in an interview with the Jesuit journal *Civilta Cattolica,* that *Amoris Laetitia* is part of the Magisterium.

On September 5, 2016 the bishops of the Buenos Aires region of the pope’s native Argentina drafted a set of guidelines intended to assist local priests in putting *Amoris Laetitia* into pastoral practice, particularly chapter eight, which makes reference to “discernment regarding the possible access to the sacraments of some of those who are divorced and in a new union.” The guidelines say that some civilly remarried couples who can’t adhere to the Church’s teaching of celibacy (‘living like brothers and sisters’), who have complex circumstances, and who can’t obtain a declaration of nullity for their first marriage, might undertake a “journey of discernment,” and arrive at the recognition that in their particular case, there are factors that “diminish responsibility and culpability.”

For divorced Catholics in these exceptional cases the bishops wrote, *“Amoris Laetitia* opens up the possibility of access to the sacraments of Reconciliation and the Eucharist.” The guidelines, dated September 5, reached Pope Francis, who answered on the same day, writing: “The document is very good and completely explains the meaning of chapter VIII of *Amoris Laetitia.* There are no other interpretations. And I am certain that it will do much good. May the Lord reward this effort of pastoral charity.” [9]

[9] https://cruxnow.com/global-church/2016/09/12/pope-okays-argentine-doc-communion-divorced-remarried/

“More Catholic than the Pope”

On the Internet five months earlier, incensed by *Amoris Laetitia,* the Rorate Caeli Catholic-traditionalist blog, self-advertised as the most popular in the English-speaking world, issued the following statement:

“The Catholic Faith is not something invented anew by each pope according to his own opinions, predilections, understanding, or whims. The pope is only good as a ‘yardstick’ when he formally teaches in accordance to ‘the Faith once delivered unto the saints,’ as St. Jude the Apostle wrote. When Pope Liberius assented to the unjust excommunication of St. Athanasius the Great, and signed off on an ambiguous creedal formula that could be accommodated to the Arian or semi-Arian heresies, every faithful Catholic was then ‘more Catholic than the pope.’

“When Pope Honorius I uttered false theological opinions, and failed to correct and condemn the Monothelite heretics, every faithful Catholic was then ‘more Catholic than the pope.’ Indeed, they were so much more Catholic than Honorius that the Church posthumously condemned him as a heretic, a decision that Honorius’ successor St. Leo II approved. *‘We anathematize the inventors of the new error, that is, Theodore, Sergius... and also Honorius, who did not attempt to sanctify this Apostolic Church with the teaching of Apostolic tradition, but by profane treachery permitted its purity to be polluted.’* For most of the Church’s history, priests praying their Office repeated the *anathema* pronounced against Pope Honorius.

“When Pope Stephen VII desecrated the remains of Pope Formosus during the hideously shameful *Synodus Horrenda* (the ‘Cadaver Synod’), every Catholic who strove to practice justice and who respected the sanctity of the human body was then ‘more Catholic than the pope.’

“When Pope John XII effectively ‘turned the Lateran palace into a brothel,’ as contemporary historians so colorfully put it, and when Pope Benedict IX gave himself over to unchastity and bloodshed, every faithful Catholic who strove to cultivate the virtues of chastity, purity, mercy, and peace in their personal conduct was then ‘more Catholic than the pope.’

“When Pope John XXII preached in his sermons the error that the faithful departed do not enjoy the Beatific Vision until after Judgment Day at the end of the world, every faithful Catholic was then ‘more Catholic than the pope’ — and the loud and outraged cry of the faithful against him led him to retract his error, and his successor then infallibly defined John XXII’s opinion as heresy.

“Papal infallibility doesn’t mean papal impeccability or papal omniscience. The obligations of docility and obedience do not extend so far that one must stand on one’s head and cross one’s eyes in order to see how a scandalous, erroneous papal utterance is in fact true after all. Most of what a pope says is not infallible, and papal authority has never extended to having the right to introduce teachings and laws that contradict or go counter to the Faith.” [10]

[10] http://rorate-caeli.blogspot.com/2016/04/more-catholic-than-pope.html#more

“As Rorate has argued since day one of the first Synod -(Pope) Francis is leading the destruction of the family and the defiance of the words of Jesus Christ Himself.” [11]

[11] http://rorate-caeli.blogspot.com/2016/09/for-record-pope-francis-confirms-amoris.html

Early in his career, before his final break with Rome, the Augustinian monk Martin Luther made his own correct observations about the popes similar to the preceding “traditional” Catholic discernment, and it does not make them less true because it was Luther who expressed these views. The conservative Catholic rejoinder to Luther, prior to the public emergence of the Liberal theology among the 1960s popes and their successors, was that the Pontiff is sovereign. He has no judge on earth. No individual’s conscience can refuse the pope’s theology, and “it is absolutely necessary for salvation that everyone be subject to the Roman Pontiff,” including in the realm of the nullification of the Word of God under the Church of Rome’s euphemism for betrayal of divine law, the “development of doctrine.” The traditional answer to Luther was that *in practice* the pope’s power is indeed unlimited.

Luther’s rage against the pope’s development of permission for usury (profit on loans) is one of the most tightly suppressed motivating factors of the early Protestant Reformation. He wrote:

“The heathen were able, by the light of reason, to conclude that a usurer is a double-dyed thief and murderer. We Christians, however, hold them in such honor, that we fairly worship them for the sake of their money... Whoever eats up, robs and steals the nourishment of another, that man commits as great a murder... as he who starves a man or utterly undoes him. Such does a usurer, and sits the while safe on his stool, when he ought rather to be hanging on the gallows, and be eaten by as many ravens as he has stolen guilders...

“Meanwhile, we hang the small thieves... Little thieves are put in the stocks, great thieves go flaunting gold and silks... there is, on this earth, no greater enemy of man (after the devil), than a gripe-money and usurer, for he wants to be god over all men... a usurer and money glutton—such a one would have the whole world perish from hunger and thirst, misery and want... so that he may have all to himself and every one may receive from him as from a god, and be his serf forever.

“To wear fine cloaks, golden chains... to be deemed and taken for a worthy, pious man... Usury is a great huge monster, like a werewolf, who lays waste all... and yet decks himself out and would be thought pious...”

In this case, Luther’s views were a reaffirmation of the Roman Catholic dogma of almost all of the popes prior to the Renaissance, all of the Fathers of the Early Church, of St. Thomas Aquinas and St. Anthony of Padua. After Neoplatonic-Hermeticism invaded the hierarchy of the Church of Rome it succumbed to the “development of doctrine,” in this instance the early modernist heresy of the neo-Catholic Nominalist school, which made 5% usury respectable and fueled the Catholic Fugger usury empire (the Fuggers were the buccaneer-capitalists who banked the Renaissance papacy’s indulgence loot). Catholics denounce John Calvin for supposedly *pioneering* the five percent interest rate in Christendom, but Calvin wasn’t even born when Nominalism and the “Five Percent Fuggers” were first in the ascendant; and Calvin was a child when Medici Pope Leo X began the gradual derogation of the immutable Catholic law against profit on loans (which was sustained by all of his successors), beginning with his papal bull of May, 1515.

To this day, much of the conservative Catholic world believes the story that Rome stood against the money-gluttons, while it was the early Protestants like Luther who were the first to enable them. In fact, after the Medici established their *“monte”* usury banks on a firm foundation, the Money Power was in a position to buy ecclesiastical offices and choose personnel in the hierarchy of the Church. From the sixteenth century until now the Church of Rome has been under the suzerainty of money.

The popes of the late fifteenth and early sixteenth centuries were Hegelian dialecticians centuries before G.W.F. Hegel. Neoplatonism is anterior to Hegelianism. Both are based in magical thinking: the projection of the inevitability of observations about reality that nullify the permanence of the Word of God in the Scriptures. Here is the slogan of every revolution: “History is on our side.” In the theology of this spiritual virus, the insinuation is that the pendulum-swinging god of changing times — not the God of the Bible who does not change (Malachi 3:6) — inevitably favors the revolution. This temporal chauvinism has consistently trumped Biblical dogma in the post-Renaissance Church, although for Machiavellian purposes of dissimulation, it was, up until recently, seldom publicly conceded. *In western civilization, no power on earth could advance this sorcery that puts forth revolutionary change as an invincible historical force, half so well as the papacy.*

After the eclipse of the divine right of kings and the absolute power of those secular monarchs, the papacy alone possessed those pharaonic prerogatives. The Cryptocracy would have us believe that the Freemasons are the hereditary enemies of the papacy. We witness their ritual stabbing of the papal tiara and cursing of the pope. One stands in awe at this virtuoso misdirection and how effectively the image it has produced has been burnished by both the black and white players in this alchemical theatre. We're now in the last act of the theatrical however, and the tragi-comedy is not ending as we have been led to believe it would. We are beginning to detect from the corners of the stage that the papacy is the able servant of the same occult process of which the Freemasons are a part. From Alexander VI to Leo X, from Paul VI, John Paul II, and Benedict XVI to Francis, the *development of the doctrine* on money, liturgy, Pharisaic Judaism, sexuality and the family has been and is underway according to ever-mutating situation ethics.

Pontiffs with a conservative reputation are as culpable as liberals. In 1947, in his encyclical *Mediator Dei,* Pius XII *repudiated a return to the tradition of the Catholic Church:* "...the desire to restore everything indiscriminately to its ancient condition is neither wise nor praiseworthy. It would be wrong, for example, to want the altar restored to its ancient form..."

With no earthly check on the pontifical power there is no limit to the revolutionary havoc which the bishop of Rome can wreak. This is the surpassing utility of papalolatry to the Cryptocracy.

The "development of doctrine" is not only a 1960s phenomenon. It is the inheritance of the Church since the permission granted for the rise of the Fugger Money Power and, even more contentiously, but as we hope to demonstrate, the resurrection of fealty to the diabolism of Pharaonic Egypt in the aftermath of the Council of Florence.

"...the biggest problem in the Church... is—whatever one wishes to call it—papalolatry, hyper-papalism, that adulation of the pope that is unprecedented in the history of the Church, and the assumption that the power of the Pope has no limits, no boundaries, such that his pronouncements can change doctrine, of course under the guise of development controlled by the Holy Spirit, at will." [12]

[12] Ross Douthat, http://rorate-caeli.blogspot.com/2016/01/op-ed-to-ross-douthat-with-affectionate.html#more • January 15, 2016.

"*...unprecedented in the history of the Church...*" This is what Right-wing Catholics are now asserting: the misapprehension (if not outright amnesia) with which the adversaries of Pope Francis console themselves. The contemporary conservative mind has difficulty entertaining the datum that papal absolutism has been the traditional dogma of the papacy since the late Middle Ages. According to this Roman doctrine, which was an innovation in the medieval era, Catholics must submit to popes like Francis and to his innovations.

To escape the record of subjection which Catholics have permitted to the popes for the past nine hundred years, "traditional" and "conservative" contemporary Catholics have recast a theology of the papacy, of what the non-popes have owed the pope, but they lack the candor to admit this. Instead, pretend that refusal of obedience to the pontiffs was the case in the Renaissance, in the Baroque era and all subsequent eras up until the supposedly "unprecedented" papalolatry of the present.

Antonio Socci is a surrealist in this vein: "What many (also among believers) ignore are the very rigid limits that the Church has always placed on popes, while at the same time recognizing Petrine 'infallibility' in 'ex-cathedra' proclamations on matters of faith and morality. Specifically, in the Dogmatic Constitution *Pastor aeternus,* through which Vatican Council I defined papal infallibility, we find 'For the Holy Spirit was promised to the successors of Peter not so that they might, by His revelation, make known some new doctrine, but that, by His assistance, they might religiously guard and faithfully expound the revelation or deposit of faith transmitted by the apostles."

When he cites what he fantasizes are "the very rigid limits that the Church has always placed on popes," if we charitably resist the urge to pronounce Mr. Socci demented, then we are left with the realization of the obligation of offering to Him and mankind in general, a desperately needed education in the suppressed, authentic history of the Church.

What is the use of this alleged qualifier — "For the Holy Spirit was promised to the successors of Peter not so that they might, by his revelation, make known some new doctrine..."—if there is no mechanism for enforcement when a pontiff indeed does promulgate "new doctrine"? The qualifying statement is toothless. It appears that it was included in *Pastor aeternus,* to assuage the consciences of Catholics rightly disturbed by the prospect of any human being spiritually elevated above the rest of humanity and declared possessed of infallible judgment (whether at certain special times under certain circumstances, or not).

The notion that in halcyon days of the Renaissance and successive ages, “very rigid limits” were “always placed on popes.” is a species of Brobdingnagian self-delusion that requires no further comment.

The Word of God forbids gaining profit from loans of money among Christians. This was always the magisterial dogma. The glory of the true Catholic Church was Her law against profit from loans of money as taught by the Magisterium: as a dogma to be definitively held. On this point, no further modification or alteration was to be implemented. It was a truth that could not be challenged among believers. Yet it was incrementally overthrown by the tinkering, tampering “infallible” popes of yesteryear. Today, no Catholic lender who makes his living making money breed money is forbidden communion, or made to confess his crime in the Sacrament of Penance. This has been the case since the 1830s and the pontificate of “the infallible” Pope Pius VIII.

The papal innovators of usury were too clever to challenge the divine dogma openly, and have always, in public, spoken eloquently in favor of the dogma and forcefully against avarice, since to do otherwise would reveal them for what they are. Catholic victims of deception point to this sham as their alleged proof that the popes actually changed nothing that was substantially God-ordained. What they managed to overlook prior to the pontificate of Francis was the exceptionally shrewd “pastoral” means that were employed to gradually transform profit on loans from a mortal sin to no sin at all. This *pastoral* tactic for nullification of the Law of God is, in the twenty-first century, not as difficult to perceive as in the past. A mind open to the proposition that devious tactics by revolutionary popes is not, in fact, unprecedented, can grasp the most notable contemporary example of those tactics: Pope Francis, spiritual heir of Giovanni di Lorenzo de’ Medici. Roberto de Mattei, writing in *Il Giorno* (Italy): “Francis presents himself as a conservative, he doesn’t speak against the dogmas, but his pastoral strategy is, per se, revolutionary, as it subordinates the truth to praxis, moreover on a hot issue like the family. In this way it marks a profound discontinuity in the history of the papacy…” [13]

Catholic dupes impel themselves to believe that Francis is the pontiff who *originated* this chameleon pastoral technique liar radical nullification of God’s Law by means of rhetoric upholding it and tactics for overthrowing it. The amnesia is appalling. On the contrary, the pastoral strategy of Pope Francis marks a profound *continuity* in the history of the papacy. Revolution inside the Church achieved by pastoral techniques has marked “the history of the papacy” for more than five centuries. The popes of the past sustained usury not by changing the dogma in the sacred books, but by legalizing usury *de facto,* as a form of "pastoral care" and "compassion" *("pieta").* When the popes allowed Neoplatonic-Hermeticism into the hierarchy of the Church and with it, esoteric Judaism; and likewise when they removed the immemorial penalties for profiting from loans of money -— refusal of Communion and absolution to unrepentant usurers, the requirement to make restitution after the usurer quits his occupation, and a refusal of burial to the impenitent usurer — then they proceeded to establish a precedent for *all the revolutionary papal changes that would follow:* coerced suppression of the Latin Mass, shenanigans in synagogues, prayers with Buddhists, pagans and rabbis at Assisi; Voodoo in Benin, protection for child molestation facilitators, and declarations that "Jews" need not be actively converted to the Gospel because "Jews" don't need Faith in Jesus Christ to be saved. Scapegoating Pope Francis as an unprecedented phenomenon of papal revolution is willful ignorance. Francis is a terminal, *"Peter Romanus"* fragment of a five-hundred-year-old timeline.

---

[13] March 9, 2015. Translation by Francesca Romana, via http://rorate-caeli.blogspot.com/2015/03/the-popes-impossible-revolution-for.html#more

Advancing Satan's kingdom with "a wink and a nod"

Take for example the notorious "Borgia Pope" Alexander VI, who is almost universally denounced by many informed Catholics for his egregious sexual indiscretions. This is often followed however, in the next breath, with the qualifying statement, "But even Alexander left the doctrine of the Church untouched."

What this statement rests upon is the notion that whatever the personal sins, failings and disgusting immorality of a pope, short of his formal declaration against a dogma of the Church, he has not negatively impacted the Faith of Catholics or undermined the teaching of Jesus Christ.

We mention Pope Alexander VI in this vein because he was critical to the growth and success of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Kabbalist cancer inside the Church. As we shall see, he protected and patronized the two most influential and flagrant, out-of-the-closet Catholic occultists of the fifteenth century, Ficino and Giovanni Pico, yet he did not, it is true, on any occasion issue an encyclical letter or any kind of edict for the record endorsing demonology, or nullifying the First Commandment of the Decalogue. He merely furthered the career of those who did. The papalolaters insist that Alexander VI did no serious harm to the Faith or the Church itself as a result. These folks remind this writer of the comic movie character Chico Marx who asked, "Who are you going to believe — me or your own eyes?"

Our own eyes indicate that the Church of Jesus Christ is harmed as much by slowly chipping away at its foundations through sub-rosa, papally-enabled subversion and infiltration, as it would be if a pontiff were to issue a document amounting to the same thing. Actually, the clandestine conspiracy is likely to be more lethal to souls than a public testament, because the former preserves the absolute authority of the institution of the papacy, while the letter causes Catholics to question its claims on their submission.

The playboy Borgia pope was never guilty of formally promulgating any papal documents contrary to immutable Biblical dogma. By other means however, he created a safe haven for the forces of Satan. Because he used other means, the cult mentality decrees that for all of his sins of the flesh, he sinned not against the Faith. The fact that Alexander VI is known to history mainly as a playboy pope rather than a pope of occultism, is itself an indication of the success of the conspiracy in suppressing exposure of its capture of the papacy.

Pope Francis did not formally promulgate any papal documents contrary to immutable Biblical dogma. Yet in the second decade of the twenty-first century he was a leader in grinding Biblical statutes and standards into the dust. Catholic writer Matthew Schmitz observed, “Instead of explicitly endorsing communion for the divorced and remarried couples, he has quietly urged them on with a wink and a nod.”

Alexander VI was far from being the only Renaissance pontiff guilty of enabling the diabolic. If these types of papal actors constitute the definition of a “Holy Father” then we are prisoners of the lexicon of hell.

Vatican Council — *Pastor aeternus:* Dogmatic Constitution on the Church (1870)

The “jurisdictional power of the Roman Pontiff is both episcopal and immediate. Both clergy and faithful, of whatever rite and dignity, both singly and collectively, are bound to submit to this power by the duty of hierarchical subordination and true obedience, and this not only in matters concerning faith and morals, but also in those which regard the discipline and government of the Church throughout the world... no one can depart from it without endangering his... salvation... he is the supreme judge of the faithful... The sentence of the Apostolic See (above which there is no higher authority), is not subject to revision by anyone, nor may anyone lawfully pass judgment thereupon... this See of St. Peter always remains unblemished by any error... So then, should anyone, which God forbid, have the temerity to reject this definition of ours: let him be anathema.”

The preceding is a statement worthy of Pharaoh or a Grand Rabbi. Jesus was not crucified so His People would be under bondage to any new chief priest: “Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage” (Galatians 5:1). ‘Oh, but that is a Protestant sentiment!,’ the papists will assert. No, it is a thoroughly Catholic conviction that those who were bought for a price by the blood of Christ must not return to

Egypt again. To submit to the claims over us of a Pharaoh-Pontiff, whose office and powers evolved over the passage of time, constitutes scorn and contempt for Our Lord Jesus Christ. Before Catholics were damaged by the information-

warfare which has been at work in the Church of Rome for so many centuries, they would have perceived that Vatican Council I’s *Pastor aeternus* was both anti-Catholic and Antichrist. To reiterate that ancient *sensus Catholicus* now is to be branded a Protestant, or a “fallen-away Catholic.” But who is it that has actually deserted the Faith?

When the First Vatican Council of 1870 decreed the pope to be infallible under certain *“ex cathedra”* conditions, the *prestige* of the “Vicar of Christ on earth” rose to such heights that it eclipsed the Ordinary Magisterium and we had the monstrous situation of the near idolatry of a fallen human being possessed of the power and authority to add or subtract, or otherwise alter the Deposit of the Faith, always under cover of Machiavellian cant language that renders black into white by stating that the changes are in conformity with the Deposit of the Faith, and represent an organic “development” as “Blessed” John Henry Cardinal Newman, among other prominent Romanists, taught.

The pope’s supreme, commanding authority is certainly not limited to *ex cathedra* statements. According to the official *Denzinger* Catholic Manual of Theology no. 1830: “And since the Roman Pontiff is at the head of the universal Church by the divine right of apostolic primacy, We teach and declare also that he is the supreme judge of the faithful [cf. n. 1500], and that in all cases pertaining to ecclesiastical examination recourse can be had to his judgment [cf. n. 466]; moreover, that the judgment of the Apostolic See, whose authority is not surpassed, is to be disclaimed by no one, nor is anyone permitted to pass judgment on its judgment [cf. n. 330 ff.].”

“No one may pass judgment on the judgment” of a mere man. “Conservative” Catholics under Pope Francis deny that this supreme dictatorship ever existed and refuse to see that without the pope’s total power, few of the changes which they decry could have been instituted. Individual bishops could have refused to implement them. The Right-wing’s much dreaded *“collegiality,”* (the pontiff sharing power and authority with the bishops) which many “conservative” Catholics fear and shrink from as “liberal poison,” is actually a powerful prophylactic against papalolatry.

“...the See of St. Peter always remains unimpaired by any error...”—Vatican Council I, Dogmatic Constitution *Pastor aeternus,* n. 4; and Denz. 1836.

[More Catholic than the Pope Page 59]

Popes on Papal Authority

- Pope Benedict XIV: “The Holy Apostolic See and the Roman Pontiff have primacy in the entire world. The Roman Pontiff is the Successor of Blessed Peter, the Prince of the Apostles, true Vicar of Christ, Head of the whole Church, Father and Teacher of all Christians.” [14]

[14] Apostolic Constitution *Etsi Pastoralis,* May 26, 1742; excerpted in *Papal Teachings: The Church,* p. 32.

- Pope Leo XIII: “Thus, it is an absolute necessity for the simple faithful to submit in mind and heart to their own pastors, and for the latter to submit with them to the Head and Supreme Pastor.” [15]

[15] *Letter Epistola Tua,* June 17, 1885; excerpted in *Papal Teachings: The Church,* p. 263.

- Pope Leo XIII: “...the strong and effective instrument of salvation is none other than the Roman Pontificate.” [16]

[16] Ibid., p. 353.

- Pope Leo XIII: “Union with the Roman See of Peter is... always the public criterion of a Catholic... You are not to be looked upon as holding the true Catholic faith if you do not teach that the faith of Rome is to be held.” [17]

[17] Encyclical *Satis Cognitum,* n. 13.

- Pope Pius XII: “Nor must it be thought that what is expounded in Encyclical Letters does not of itself demand consent, (or that) in writing such Letters the popes do not exercise the supreme power of their Teaching Authority. For these matters are taught with the ordinary teaching authority, of which it is true to say: ‘He who hears you, hears me’ (Luke 10:16); and generally what is expounded and inculcated in Encyclical Letters already for other reasons appertains to Catholic doctrine.” [18]

[18] Pius XII, Encyclical *Humani Generis.*

Papal statements of absolute command and obedience over humanity, from Pope Boniface VIII onward, represent a papalolatrous theology. What "conservative" and "traditional" Catholics are evading is the fact that it is an innovation that

has been in force since the 1200s in claiming that the pope is owed the type of obedience decreed above.

Sometimes when these extravagant authoritarian claims are made the pope is not mentioned and the old "trust me" con of the salesman is put forward. St. Robert Bellarmine declares in his catechism, "The Church is the spouse of God and the Holy Spirit her teacher; for that reason, there is no danger that she would deceive or would do anything or teach that something must be done that is opposed to the Commandments of God." [19]

[19] Bellarmine, *Doctrina Christiana: The Timeless Catechism of St. Robert Bellarmine,* transl. Ryan Grant (2016), p. 105.

Human nature is fallen. The pope is a sinner. Power corrupts. The absolute power conferred immorally, unethically and erroneously on the Bishop of Rome is the source of almost all of the crises in the Church of Rome today, yet Right-wing Catholics in the twenty-first century pretend that the pontiffs absolute power has never manifested or been taught. This will be their line until they witness a "traditional" pope on the throne, another Leo XIII or Pius IX, X or XI. When a *traditional* papal dictator to their liking is elected, they will advocate complete submission, and embrace all the ultramontane claims for the authority of the pope which have existed for almost a millennium. If such a pope were to be elected, popery would be reinstalled in their ranks, just as they were uninstalling it during the pontificate of Francis.

It was situation ethics that permitted profits on loans of money due to "modern realities," and it is situation ethics that has derogated the authority of the pope after Leftist Pope Francis was elected. In praise of an investigative report by Gian Guido Vecchi of the Italian newspaper *Corriere della Serra* of July 16, 2015, Rorate Caeli, the "traditional" Catholic blog on the English-language Internet, stated: "...surely this article should help put an end to the pious myth that the Holy Spirit always chooses the Pope..." [20]

[20] http://rorate-caeli.blogspot.com/2015/07/the-original-story-when-jesuit-cardinal.html#more

If this statement by Rorate Caeli had been made at any time during the pontificate of a pope pleasing to "traditional" Catholics, they would have denounced it as a species of Protestant blasphemy. When there is a liberal pontiff not to their liking however, they resort to this type of thinking themselves. Since they claim to know the Faith better than anyone, it would appear that the Holy Spirit is sometimes absent when it comes to selecting the "Vicar of Christ on earth." But if God does not choose the pope, then who does? What happens to more than a thousand years of the claims to authority made for the pontiff, when a pontiff occupies the "Chair of Peter" on the basis of "pious myths"? How many Protestants were impoverished, imprisoned or killed for believing about the papal "Peter" what "Traditional Catholic" Rorate Caeli believes in the twenty-first century?

The pope's *Pastor aeternus* decree of Vatican Council I defined not just the dogma of infallibility, but the full and immediate power of the pope over all the bishops and the entire Church. In addition to the formula "*ideoque eiusmodi Romani Pontificis definitionis esse ex se irreformabilis*" (definitions by the Roman Pontiff are unreformable per se); the ungodly clause "*non autem ex consensu Ecclesiae*" (not with the consensus of the Church) was added. The assent of the people of God ("the Ecclesia") united with priests and bishops of the Catholic Church, is never required when the "Holy Father" makes rulings binding on all humanity. In the theology of popery, the Pontiff alone is sovereign judge, and he himself has no judge on earth. Pope Pius IX promulgated the Apostolic Constitution *Pastor aeternus* as a law of faith. *Pastor aeternus* establishes that the primacy of the pope consists in true and supreme powers of jurisdiction, independent of any other power, over all the pastors and over the entire flock of the faithful on earth. He possesses this supreme power not by delegation on the part of bishops nor the entire Church, but by Divine Right. This is the foundation of pontifical sovereignty; of the Pope's supreme jurisdiction over the Church—its magisterium and governance. Even when a pope betrays and subverts the deposit of the faith morals, transmitted for safeguarding by Jesus Christ to the Church, *there is no mechanism for deposing him,* or for refusing his authority or disobeying his commands (although there is a suppressed precedent from the Council of Constance).

The Bishop of Rome comes to own the Church of Jesus Christ and for the sake of that one bishop's power, that Church has suffered disrepute, desertion and revolt. Far better to have made that bishop suffer thus, than the unspotted Bride of Christ, but like all false gods, this idol is a usurper. The depths to which even eminent theologians such as St. Robert Bellarmine will go to furnish ludicrous pretexts for the maintenance of popery is a strange wonder to behold. Bellarmine declared that even when a pope isn't a Catholic he is still the pope. He could be a devil and he would continue as pope, with all power of the Keys of Peter:

"St. Robert Bellarmine explains that a pope who loses the virtue of faith does not, for that reason alone, cease to be pope. This is evident since

Bellarmine held that a pope who is an occult (secret) heretic retains his office; and to be clear, an occult heretic is one who is guilty of formal heresy — the mortal sin of heresy — in the internal forum (the realm of conscience), but which has not become public and notorious in the external forum... In support of this position, Cardinal Bellarmine cites the authority of Melchior Cano, a theologian from the Council of Trent, who explains that since an occult heretic remains united to the Church by an external union, a Pope who is an occult heretic retains his office.

"Bellarmine also notes that this is the unanimous opinion of all the authors he cites in his book, *De Ecclesia:* 'Occult heretics are still of the Church, they are parts and members... therefore the pope who is an occult heretic is still pope...' By referring to a pope as an occult heretic... Bellarmine... is referring to a pope who has committed the sin of heresy in the *internal forum* and thereby lost the faith *entirely*." [21]

[21] John Salza and Robert Siscoe, *True or False Pope?* (St. Thomas Aquinas Seminary, 2015), pp. 145-146.

The successor of St. Peter need not believe in Jesus Christ in order to qualify as the leader of the Church of Jesus Christ? This is what "traditional" Catholics hold, but this doctrine is not actually traditional; it is a subversion of the tradition of the Church of 100 A.D. "Traditional" Catholics are modernists masquerading as traditional. They maintain a devolutionary peregrination away from the Catholic tradition of the First Century A.D. by subscribing to the dictatorship of the pontiff who possesses the power of an Oriental emperor and, since the Renaissance, the sorcery of the Egyptian *mekashfim*. Papal absolutism was implanted and cultivated by occult forces many centuries after the Church was founded by Our Lord. By this architectonic of absolute monarchy, the Cryptocracy knew hundreds of years ago that by putting their man on the papal throne they could, through that one fallible sinner, degrade and pervert the authentic Catholic Church and compel the Catholic people to follow their clerical leaders in gradually abandoning the True Faith. This is precisely what has occurred, according to plan.

The bulwark against this wickedness from the powers that be was the laity and their parish priests who were shocked, despondent and inconsolable over betrayals which they did not begin to grasp until the mid-1960s and early 1970s. Had they the right to reject a pope's commands and derogations, the Catholic rank-and-file in 1969 would have never promulgated Pope Paul's New Mass by suppressing the old Mass; they would not have submitted to the papal teaching that the Judaic religion is redeemed by its carnal connection to the patriarchs. They would have never adopted a policy of secrecy that shielded child molestation facilitators, or slyly insinuated two castes of Christians—the highly-souled Brahmins in Holy Orders and the lower-souled unordained—a divide which would have had to exist from the institution of the Eucharist at the Last Supper—signifying the depraved proposition that Christ's chosen apostles had higher souls than His Blessed Mother.

The masterstroke of the Cryptocracy for degrading the Church of Jesus Christ was the slow imposition of the office of sovereign papal dictator, which first split the Church in 1054, when the Russian and Greek Orthodox discerned the pharaonic transformation underway, elevating that sinner, the Bishop of Rome, from his proper place as *primus inter pares* (first among equals), to the status of Oriental potentate over and above all. The priest who consecrates the Host, and the Bishop of Rome who assumes the See of Peter, ought to be the most humble servants of all, and the last to be served, or they are nothing—a mockery of what it means to be a shepherd of God. The Protestant "protest," when it was sincere, arose in the face of this mockery.

If the office of pontiff had been under limits, as it had been in the majority of Christianity's first millennium, then institutionalized diabolism, deceit and secrecy would not have gained the deluding and beguiling power on earth which it possesses in our time.

[Page 64 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

"...the white which I see, is black, if the Hierarchical Church so decides it."

The founder of the Jesuits, Ignatius Loyola, wrote "Rules for Thinking with the Church." Rule 13, teaches: "That we may be altogether of the same mind and in conformity with the Church herself, we ought always to hold that the white which I see, is black, if the Hierarchical Church so decides it."

Consequently, according to the Jesuit founder, if our God-given reason and our conscience tell us something is good while the Church of Rome decrees that it is bad, Ignatius teaches that we must believe that it is bad. The converse is also true: if our reason and our conscience tell us that something is evil, and the Church of Rome decrees it to be good and holy, then it is, by papal decree. Here is the basis of rabbinism, Stalinism, Hitlerism, Maoism and every tyranny over the mind of man. According to Pope Boniface, everyone in the world must be subject to Pope John Paul II and Pope Francis. According to Pope Pius XII, Pope Francis was to be obeyed not only when he speaks "*ex cathedra*," but also when exercising his "ordinary teaching authority," of which it is said: *He who hears the pope, hears Christ.* Therefore, when Pope Francis stated that Catholics are overly concerned about unborn children murdered in the womb, we are hearing the voice of Christ.

Instead of recognizing that popery produces nullification of the Word of God by the “Vicar of Christ on earth,” we get a tortured casuistry consisting of mental gymnastics. “Cardinal Timothy Dolan, America’s foremost Catholic prelate, appeared on NBC’s ‘Meet the Press’ on March 9, 2014 and commented as follows on the ‘coming out’ of a ‘gay’ college football star: “Good for him… I would have no sense of judgment on him… God bless ya. I don’t think, look, the same Bible that tells us, that teaches us well about the virtues of chastity and the virtue of fidelity and marriage also tells us not to judge people. So I would say, ‘Bravo.”

This is how a “Prince of Church” in the Year of Our Lord 2014 reacted to a celebrity’s announcement that he engages in acts — “men with men, working that which is filthy” (Romans 1:26)— “Bravo.” Pandering to a simplistic hippy misreading of the Gospel (Judge not man, like the Good Book says), Dolan synchronizes with the prevailing culture and places himself atop the latest worldly trend. But the gospel is profoundly

counter-cultural. The “Good Book,” which is filled with the judgments of God and His Divine Son, warns, “Woe unto you when the world speaks well of you.”

What we are seeing is the highly visible rotten fruit which papalolatry has wrought in the Church for many hundreds of years —formerly concealed under a mountain of disinformation and misdirection—now visible in this Age of the Making Manifest of All that is Hidden, when Catholics have been sufficiently processed that deceitful masking devices can be dispensed with and the truth about the Neoplatonic and Hermetic popes of usury no longer needs to be concealed in order to maintain the flow of shekels from the pay-pray-and-obey peons in the pews.

Given the early medieval legacy and heritage of the true Catholic Church which existed in the minds and hearts of the common priests and people from the 15th through the mid-twentieth centuries, it was necessary for the papal pupils of Hermes Trismegistus and the Kabbalah to confine their machinations to the hierarchy of their Church of Rome, while maintaining in the common people the illusion that they still dwelled in the sanctum of the medieval Church, contending against Money, Judaism and Freemasonry. The Church of Rome knew that when the processing of humanity reached the correct apex in point of time, the legacy of medieval Catholicism could and would be finally extirpated with a few strokes of the papal pen.

When the time was right, usury emerged in full and the people did nothing because the law of the Church of Rome would not permit them to resist. When the time was right, Pope Paul VI acted as another Church of

England Bishop Cranmer and another Church of England Queen Elizabeth I, and outlawed throughout the world (with a few exceptions the better to enforce the general rule)—the suppression of the medieval rite of the Mass which had existed essentially unchanged in its essentials for centuries of Christian history. As a result of this papal despotism, millions of Catholics more or less lost their faith or their sanity, to one degree or another, in the wake of this unconscionable act of theft on the part of the Holy Roman Pontiff and his Robber Church. This writer was a witness to the alcoholism, agony and despair of faithful priests who, in obedience to the Pontiff, submitted to the summary trashing of the Tridentine Latin Mass, which was the only worship they had known. Suddenly it was obsolete. This writer was a witness to devout Catholic laymen and women becoming cynics and agnostics in the face of this robbery. This writer was a witness to the closing of the Capuchin-Franciscan major seminary, wherein the rector of that seminary, perhaps the holiest priest we have ever known, whose devotion at Mass bordered on reverence so profound it was nearly ecstasy, was reduced to a hopelessly confused wreck; a Doubting Thomas who questioned the most basic tenets of the Deposit of Faith.

There has been no significant reparation made and no reckoning on this earth for this horrendous sabotage. War was made by the elite of the Church of Rome, led by the Pope of Rome, against their own faithful priests and people, as Neoplatonic-Hermeticism emerged from five centuries underground to crush the Faith permitted to exist until such time as the prophesied stage of human alchemy had reached a sufficient level of processing.

Anticipating an objection, we assert that yes, even Pope “Saint” Pius X, who despite his repeated famous jeremiads against “the scourge of modernism,” *never lifted even one finger against the root of evil*—the love of money—Rome’s “decriminalization” of usury—incrementally relaxed and diluted, leading to the abolition of all ecclesiastical penalties by Pope Pius VIII, and the absence of all such penalties in the 1917 and 1983 Codes of Canon Law. Moreover, it is worth noting that the criminally negligent 1917 Code was compiled largely in the pontificate of Pius X, who did not live to see it actually promulgated.

The “Jews” were cleverly branded and scapegoated as the iconic usurers, but as historian Prof. Goldwin Smith writes concerning the Catholic usurers, “The Lombards and Cahorsins... took up the business (of usury) ...the money trade... in Italy... was in the hands of native houses, such as the Medici, Bardi, and Peruzzi, while at a later period the Fuggers of Augsburg were the Rothschilds of Germany.”

The Fuggers were an anti-Lutheran Church of Rome banking house who had been placed in charge of the receipts from the sale of indulgences. They pioneered the five percent rate of interest on loans, which has been pinned on John Calvin as the miserly originator thereof. Our understanding of the papacy's filthy lucre reached a new order of magnitude in 1832,

when the Rothschilds began to finance of the Church of Rome, two years after Pius VIII removed the last penalties and obstacles to "Catholic" usury and those who practiced it.

Employing the draconian power of the papacy, Pope John Paul II, that flak for the Pharisees, declared in a Roman synagogue and to the world's media that the unbelieving mockers of Jesus Christ were the "elder brothers in the Faith" of Catholics, and through Church documents authorized by this pontiff, strongly intimated that evangelization of the "Jews" was no longer a primary objective because "Jews" could gain salvation through their racial heritage, rather than by their Messiah, King Jesus.

The popes of the Renaissance and post-Renaissance stopped Islamic would-be conquerors in their bloody tracks in order to preserve the occult state that was the Church of Rome and her empire. But with regard to Judaic power, despite certain setbacks and pogroms which the Church of Rome engineered to gain temporary negotiating advantage with its rival and sometime partner, and despite the anger and hostility of the Catholic priests and laity at Talmudism, it was the religion of the Talmud and the Money Power which gained strength after strength, and went from victory after victory by the clandestine connivance of the Church of Rome. The Renaissance and post-Renaissance Church successfully ran its operations because those operations ensured that Catholics placed authority above truth — "underestimating truth and overestimating the popes." [22]

[22] *Eleison Comments,* February 15, 2014.

Catholics concede to the person of the pontiff an infallibility coming from, and belonging to, God alone. This elevation of the Bishop of Rome generates a "creeping infallibility," which leads Catholics further and further astray, submitting to doctrines, disciplines and acts contrary to the Gospel.

Niccolò Machiavelli (1469-1527) of Florence offered the following counsel to the Renaissance princes of Church and State. His teaching became the papal charter:

"Every one admits how praiseworthy it is in a prince to keep faith, and to live with integrity and not with craft. Nevertheless, our experience has been that those princes who have done great things have held good faith of little account, and have known how to circumvent the intellect of men by craft, and in the end, have overcome those who have relied on the word of the prince.

"...a wise lord cannot, nor ought he to, keep faith when such observance may be turned against him, and when the reasons that caused him to pledge it exist no longer.

"...it is necessary to know well how to... be a great pretender and dissembler; and men are so simple, and so subject to present necessities, that he who seeks to deceive will always find someone who will allow himself to be deceived.

"One recent example I cannot pass over in silence. (Pope) Alexander VI did nothing else but deceive men, nor ever thought of doing otherwise, and he always found victims; for there never was a man who had greater power in asserting, or who with greater oaths would affirm a thing, yet would observe it less; nevertheless, his deceits always succeeded according to his wishes, because he well understood this side of mankind.

"...a prince ought to take care that... he may appear to him who sees and hears him altogether merciful, faithful, humane, upright, and religious. There is nothing more necessary to appear to have than this last quality, inasmuch as men judge generally more by the eye than by the hand, because it belongs to everybody to see you, to few to come in touch with you. Everyone sees what you appear to be, few really know what you are, and those few dare not oppose themselves to the opinion of the many..." [23]

[23] Machiavelli, *The Prince* (emphasis supplied); circulated in manuscript beginning in 1513; first printing: 1532.

The Renaissance Medici and Guise clans were students of Machiavelli and a template for the Mafia, having engineered one of the great acts of Antichrist treachery in the history of Renaissance Europe, the mass murder of thousands of unarmed Protestants, and women and children in Paris, 1572. This mass murder was praised by the pontiff of the day. Can it be said that he was Catholic? Or was he an anti-Catholic intending to ruin the reputation of the Church?

When the Bishop of Rome does deviate, Christians have the duty to admonish him and expose his *fallibility,* as Christ did to the teachers of falsehood of His day. No obedience or deference is owed to any "spiritual authority" on this earth, be

he pontiff or Protestant pastor, who repeatedly and knowingly imparts falsehood. The theology that says otherwise was promulgated by fallible pontiffs enshrining idolatry of "His Holiness." Resistance against the highest religious authority in the Church of Rome is always incumbent on every Christian when that authority betrays the perennial truths of the Gospel as always taught by the true Catholic Church. The ones who are called to challenge the usurpers are those who most profoundly value the safeguarding of the One, Holy, Catholic and Apostolic Church founded by Jesus Christ, against which the gates of hell shall not prevail, because at least some Christians, however few, will always deploy, in obedience to divine fiat, and rally to defend and advance the true Church founded by the Resurrected Christ. This is a challenge mounted against the Left flank to defend against those who seek to use psychological pressure from academia and the mass-media to morally stigmatize those who uphold the Word of God concerning Pharisaic ("Orthodox") Judaism, homosexuality, divorce, contraception and abortion. The defense is mounted against the Right flank where dwell those who believe that the Bishop of Rome is a sovereign authority endowed with the right to nullify God's law against usury, murder Protestants and Anabaptists in Europe, devolve Christ's Ecclesia into a Neoplatonic-Hermetic hierarchical institution for the elevation and protection of clerics whose souls, allegedly enhanced by the mark of ordination, are covertly deemed higher souls *(Neshama HaElyonah* in the words of the rabbis), than those of the laity, and therefore more worthy of protection from criminal prosecution than the children which some of them prey upon. We have made reference heretofore to Catholics among whom we lived in the 1950s and 1960s; to their rectitude and in some cases, sanctity. Thinking on those people from our past, many of whom are now deceased, and visualizing their faces and their way of life from out of the "mystic chords of memory," it is difficult for us to believe that very many of them would have any active connection in the twenty-first century to what passes for the "Catholic Church," in view of the revelations of *systematic* molestations of helpless Catholic children, whose predation was facilitated by numerous bishops and cardinals (many of whom still living are comfortably retired) and at least one "infallibly canonized saint" (John Paul II).

[Page 70 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

How do we distinguish between the Catholic Church and the usurper Church of Rome? The Catholic Church always taught that profit on loans of money (usury) was a sin that separated man from eternal salvation. The Church of Rome gradually usurped the Catholic Church by seizing the papacy and using a type of "signs of the times" *pilpul* (intellectually dishonest, Talmudic-style casuistry), so as to submit to the Money Power and replace the eternal, unchanging Word of God with situation ethics, justified by allusions to "changing economic realities."

Five centuries later the same trend is in place: "The reasoning of the clerics who advocate for a radical revision of the teaching of the Church on the question of homosexuality takes as a given that the phenomenon of same-sex couples, with their respective children, is one of a considerable size and grows in an irresistible way, as a ‘sign of the times’ to which the Church cannot deny welcoming and positive recognition anymore” (Sandro Magister, *L’Espresso*).

Revolutionary overthrow by pastoral means

Most of the evils which befell the Church, from the sale of indulgences to the rise of Neoplatonic-Hermeticism within the hierarchy, as well as the alliance with the Rothschild bank from 1832 onward, to the public emergence of Neoplatonic-Hermeticism in the twentieth century Church, all lead back to the Renaissance root of *incremental relaxation* of moral and dogmatic laws against usury which *led to the eventual total nullification* of those divine laws. These facts represent the beginning of the discernment of the true Church and the impostor Church. How was this *gradual* revolution in the Church’s attitude toward money achieved? To answer we turn to a replay by Pope Francis of the incrementalism and plausible deniability put into motion by Leo X Medici, and his successors. It works like this:

Pope “Francis would like to liberalize Church doctrine on marriage, the family, and homosexuality, but he knows that he lacks the support and institutional power to do it. So he’s decided on a course of stealth reform that involves sowing seeds of future doctrinal change *by undermining the enforcement of doctrine today.* The hope would be that a generation or two from now, the gap between official doctrine

and the behavior that’s informally accepted in Catholic parishes across the world would grow so vast that a global grassroots movement in favor of liberalizing change would rise up at long last to sweep aside the old, musty, already-ignored rules... It’s a brilliant, clever, supremely Machiavellian strategy—one that promises to produce far-reaching reforms down the road while permitting the present pope... to claim plausible deniability (I haven’t changed church doctrine!’).” [24]

[24] Damon Linker, “Pope Francis’ Machiavellian strategy to liberalize the Catholic Church,” theweek.com October 15, 2014.

On October 17, 2014 Cardinal Raymond Burke, who was then the head of the Supreme Tribunal of the Apostolic Signatura (canon law court), stated concerning Francis, “The pope has done a lot of harm...’ Burke... went on Catholic television in 2013 to rebut remarks Pope Francis made to an interviewer that the church had become ‘obsessed’ with abortion and sexuality to the exclusion of other issues.’ Burke said, “We can never talk enough about that as long as in our society innocent and defenseless human life is being attacked in the most savage way. The pope, more than anyone else as the pastor of the universal church, is bound to serve the truth,’ Burke said. ‘The pope is not free to change the church's teachings with regard to the immorality of homosexual acts or the indissolubility of marriage or any other doctrine of the faith."

But Cardinal Burke, surely you are aware that popes have changed the church's teachings on profit from loans of money, and on Judaism; popes violated the First Commandment when they invited the smoke of Satan (pagan and Kabbalistic philosophy) into the hierarchy of the Catholic Church and conveyed it via Catholic universities and seminaries and via hieroglyphic public art. Cardinal Burke has nothing to say about these earlier papal violations of truth and the law of God. Consequently, one wonders if he is sounding an alarm because he is genuinely outraged, or because Francis is giving the papal game away by his blatant embrace of the actual praxis of the Church of Rome since the late fifteenth century? Dante in *The Inferno* connected usury to sodomy. Francis was only being papally consistent when he sought to soften the laws against the latter after his predecessors removed the barriers to the former.

The Vatican philosophy is the occult philosophy of the Renaissance. It is also known as the "post-conciliar orientation" and the "Forte Theology." It can be summarized as follows: "...according to the 'Forte Theology' of the partial Monday *relatio* — all bad things have '*semina Verbi*,' and 'elements of sanctification,' lying, cheating, and destroying are not even 'sins' properly, but just 'steps' on the path to an 'ideal' of truth, faithfulness, and integrity that is nearly impossible to achieve..." This is the Kabbalistic dogma viewed through a "Catholic" lens.

Neo-Catholics would seem to have little or no idea what a true Catholic believes according to the Church founded by Jesus Christ and those who remained faithful to His Ecclesia through the centuries. A vast sea of texts and decrees, doctrines, encyclicals and pious practices and sideshows accumulated by the man-made Churchianity that usurped the true Church, mesmerizes and misdirects its adherence, implanting a false picture of what it means to be Catholic. For them Catholicism consists in veneration of the pontiff and nearly blind faith in the local cleric; in other words, in popery and priestcraft. Where is this in the Gospel? And after five hundred years, where has it finally led? Catholics of the first few centuries after Christ would not recognize the Church of Rome as having much of anything to do with the Faith bequeathed to them.

They would never sign on to the ban on human reason and divinely instilled conscience stigmatized by the Church of Rome as "private judgement." Freedom of the press is no more masonic than listening to one's conscience is Protestant (Freemasons have a history of burning the printing presses of their opposition; masonic "freedom of the press" is a hoax). Freedom of inquiry and the sanctity of a Christian conscience are pre-Renaissance Catholic virtues that should never be conceded to detractors as something anti-Catholic. “Traditional” Catholics practice private judgment when they refuse the Mass of Pope Paul VI or pick and choose which pope they shall follow, or declare that certain popes are not popes—the “Vatican II Popes” have been deposed by the declarations of various priests ordained by Archbishop Marcel Lefebvre who later had themselves made “bishops” (all these acts were by private conscience and judgment). Fr. Jürgen Wegner, United States District Superior of Archbishop Lefebvre’s Society of St. Pius X (SSPX) wrote that exposing Catholics to the Novus Ordo Mass of Pope Paul VI is known to be harmful to their faith. The pope’s own Mass is harmful to the faith of Catholics? How was this decided by Fr. Wegner and published in a mass mailing of September 2015, devoted to honoring a priest, Msgr. James Byrnes, who, by the light of his private judgment, has refused to offer the Novus Ordo Mass? It was decided by Wegner’s conscience and private judgment.

We have seen these same “traditional” Catholics proclaim the need to only read a Catholic Bible that contains “annotations” by Rome’s theologians, since it is too dangerous for Catholics to read the words of Christ by themselves without annotations—they might lead to “private judgment.” The irony is lost on these tragicomic characters who burlesque Catholicism.

The bishops of Rome when they were humble servants of God and cognizant of their human fallibility, were often true shepherds and guarantors of the unity so sorely lacking in the Protestant world. But as Romanism replaced Catholicism with the passage of centuries, the popes became enveloped in a mystique worthy of an emperor. They had directed the people away from seeing that the supposed “infallible papacy” had become like the “princes of the house of Israel” who “hate the good and love the evil,” as written in the Book of Micah, chapter three.

The post-Renaissance papacy is the last significant absolute monarchy on earth. The person who is elected pontiff rules the Roman Church with complete authority. Papists have explained this by means of allusion to an alleged historical miracle: that other than Pope Honorius I who “strayed” doctrinally but (it is alleged) “only briefly” into Arianism, the papacy has otherwise been free of dogmatic error. Catholics grant that the papacy has had rum popes who fell into concupiscent situations involving mistresses, children out of wedlock and similar sexual failings common to human frailty. Other than Honorius however, who is deemed not to have formally pronounced in favor of heresy, legend has it that the papacy has been miraculously preserved from error in theology. “Traditional” Catholics maintain that this was true until the pontificate of Paul VI (some say until John XXIII).

Reading the Russian Orthodox author Fyodor Dostoevsky, we saw the papacy described as being of Antichrist rather than Christ. This troubled us because we could not find any grounds for impeaching the testimony of Dostoevsky. In studying Talmudic Judaism, we discovered that during the Renaissance the Vatican enabled Talmudism to a startling degree in spite of having a reputation for “antisemitism.” In studying the occult, we found that, once again during the Renaissance, the popes embraced Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Kabbalism.

“Traditional” and “Conservative” Catholics often indict early Protestantism for being the occult precursor to Freemasonry. They are willfully ignorant of the occult roots of the Church of Rome commencing with the Renaissance era, and the extent to which occultists united with Rome against early Protestant churches and beliefs. Concerning the conversion of Protestants:

> “...there are broader questions involved in (Bishop Juan) Caramuel’s Hebrew studies at Prague. One of his principal responsibilities as Ferdinand III’s President of the Council of Reformation for four years was the process of conversion and re-Catholicization of the Protestant populations. Yossef Schwartz of Tel Aviv University has suggested that (Cistercian theologian Juan) Caramuel may have seen the Ashkenazi Jews as an asset in this endeavor. Y. Schwartz’s thesis is that commentaries on Jewish texts such as the Talmud and the Cabbala —that chronologically postdate the canonical Hebrew Bible—represent a hermeneutic tradition sharing much in common with the Catholic tradition of theological commentary on sacred texts throughout Late Antiquity and on into the Middle Ages. Stemming from similar sources and similar methods, he argues, these two traditions would have shared more in common with each other than either did with the new and heretical doctrines of Protestantism. Rather than studying Cabbalism in order to better refute it, the Cistercian’s curiosity may have had the positive purpose of being a key for the conversion of the Jews. In this rather odd sense, the rabbinical community of Prague could be placed, in Caramuel’s eyes, on the pro-Catholic side of the ledger in the Counter-Reformation drive to eliminate heresy.” [25]

---

[25] Henry W. Sullivan, “Jews of Prague & Jews of Spain: Juan Caramuel’s Account of Medieval Sephardic Writings,” in *Juan Caramuel Lobkowitz: The Last Scholastic Polymath,* p. 158.

The Spanish monk and bishop, Juan Caramuel (1606-1682), aide to Catholic Emperor Ferdinand III and allegedly assigned the mission of the evangelization of the Judaic people, set forth in his “Sephardic Commentary,” sustained plaudits for top Iberian-Judaic occultists and Talmudists, among them Abraham ibn Ezra, Shlomo ben Yitzhak, Moses Maimonides, Moses Nahmanides, Solomon ben Gabirol, Rabbi Yehudah of Portugal and Rabbi Judah ha-Levi. Of these individuals he wrote in perfect conformity with the tenets of syncretic Church of Rome modernism, “Let those who have been examined here suffice so envy may realize that Spain (I praise my native land; I do not condemn other regions)—whether she be Jewish, whether she be Mohammedan— has given men to the world who would, singly, be enough for her to be pronounced illustrious and be so indeed.” [26]

[26] Caramuel, *Dominicus* (Vienna, 1655).

Caramuel was Abbot-Superior of the Benedictines of Vienna, Grand-Vicar to the Archbishop of Prague, and Bishop of Satrianum, and later of Campagna. He is regarded as a pioneer of the elastic “probabilist” morality that would be expanded by Alphonsus Liguori. Caramuel’s probabilism was based in part on the thought of the Polish Rabbi Samuel of Lublin (Rabbi Samuel Eliezer Ben Judah Edels; 1555-1631).[27]

[27] Cf. Jean-Robert Armogathe, “Caramuel: A Cistercian Casuist,” in *Juan Caramuel Lobkowitz: The Last Scholastic Polymath.*

Caramuel’s ally, Bishop Joseph Maria Ciantes, had been appointed by Pope Urban VIII in 1626 to convert the Judaic community in Rome. As part of his evangelism of the Judaics, Bishop Ciantes wrote two apologetic works on the Trinity (1667) and the Incarnation (1668). “Both books were based mainly on ideas taken from Jewish Cabalistic sources...” [28]

[28] Yossef Schwartz, “On Rabbinic Atheism,” pp. 131-132.

Bishop Caramuel’s thoroughly modern, extremist negation of sin has not yet been surpassed even in our twenty-first century. Inside the Church of Rome, he represents one wing of the rigged stringent-lenient “pair,” which is a thinly disguised replication of the Talmudic-theological schools of Shammai and Hillel and the *gevurah/chesed* pair. These are lawyer’s distinctions. God’s law is not subject to casuist categories of rigor and laxity. These categories are artificially imposed upon the Word of God by those with a mentality of lawyers and Talmudists who describe themselves as theologians. They seek to forge a path above duality; beyond good and evil. Observe the backward premise from which Bishop Caramuel proceeds to nullify God’s law:

“Moral obligation, in Caramuel’s view, arises from the imposition of law. ‘I deny that any moral malice can be understood without (reference to) a precept,’ he argues... in the *Benedicti Regulam.* ‘As a result, if all laws were to be taken away (whether this is possible or not), there would remain nothing that could be described as morally evil.” [29]

[29] Julia A. Fleming, *Defending Probabilism: The Moral Theology of Juan Caramuel,* p. 38.

“With the protection of (Pope) Alexander VII, Caramuel clearly weathered the initial storm over his controversial work. Blaise Pascal began to publish anonymously a series of short, satirical counterattacks... Pascal did not analyze probabilism’s theoretical foundations; instead he simply listed ‘the decisions those casuists who had adopted probabilism rendered in particular cases. In the *Provincial Letters,* probabilism appears not merely ridiculous but even sinister in light of the outrageous action s that its principles will justify.” [30]

[30] Ibid., p. 14.

While it is true that Caramuel’s book *Apologema* was consigned to the Index of Forbidden Books in January, 1664, the consignment was necessary to temporarily satisfy the concerns of those conservatives who still respected the original Catholic Church. Let us not stop there, however. But rather, observe what occurred afterward, to the supposed “banned” author: Bishop Caramuel subsequently established, with permission of the hierarchy, a printing plant for his supposedly “forbidden” book!

In 1664, he published two additional volumes on moral theology and then joined the brotherhood of the *Academia napoletana degli Investiganti.* Five more books would follow. In 1673, at the behest of the Catholic queen-regent of Austria, Caramuel was appointed bishop of the diocese of Vigevano, a more centrally located and lucrative posting.

As we endeavor to demonstrate in the pages that follow, Caramuel and his Vatican protectors were representative of the situation ethics that would come to replace Catholic dogma.

The revolution within the Church did not commence with the Second Vatican Council. It was nearly three hundred years old by the time the secular-Enlightenment in Europe erupted in the eighteenth century.

Chapter II

Neoplatonic-Hermeticism

In the historical period under examination "Neoplatonic Hermeticism" emerged under the auspices of a "Hermetic" system of belief ascribed to the mythical, eponymous "Hermes Trismegistus," linked to the "Neoplatonic" belief system ascribed to Plato's followers in the period 200-500 A.D. forward. It advanced much farther than the old witchcraft systems that tried to dominate in the Middle Ages. Neoplatonic-Hermeticism commanded the Renaissance Church in part because it was self-advertised as angel light and sweetness: a clean system of occult knowledge that pre-dated Christ and prophesied of Him by means of Egyptian "white" magic, and a rabbinic Kabbalism which was allegedly harnessed to benevolent rather than malevolent forces. [1]

[1] Judaic Kabbalists of the fifteenth century such as Yohanan Alemanno encouraged the promulgation of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic myth that Platonism resulted from the doctrines of the Biblical patriarchs. Cf. Kocku von Stuckrad, *Location of Knowledge in Medieval and Early Modern Europe: Esoteric Discourse and Western Identities* (2010), p. 38. Alemanno was a mentor and companion of Giovanni Pico della Mirandola and scholar in residence in the home of the Judaic da Pisa family in the 1480s and early 1490s. Decades later, Daniel ben Isaac da Pisa would become a favorite of Pope Clement VII.

A Christian and Biblical veneer was thereby attached to the devil's magical gnosis. To gain entrée to the circles of syncretizing ecumenism and liberalism it was dubbed the *philosophia perennis* (perennial philosophy, i.e. the eternal philosophy), and the *prisca theologia,"* (first theology), i.e. the "ancient wisdom narrative," and this make-believe was the "rocket fuel" which helped to propel it into dominion over the Church of Rome (at a time when Martin Luther was a child and John Calvin was not yet born), and helped to establish it as the referential corpus of western esotericism from then until now.

Neoplatonic-Hermeticism is the spiritual force and ideological impetus which "split the Church" before there ever was a Protestant Reformation. The clever agents of Rome's information warfare have managed to lay the blame for this division on "the Protestants." By this device researchers need

not trouble themselves with an authentic investigation into what led to the division of Christendom after the first breakup, between the Orthodox East and the Roman West in 1054. They could satisfy themselves with a cliché: "The Protestants caused it."

While much of the arcane doctrine of which Neoplatonic-Hermetic Catholics taught and advocated is at such a level as to be difficult to grasp without a considerable introduction to the subject matter, many orthodox Christians understand what syncretism and religious indifferentism are, and the threat these pose to the Gospel. "...in the light of Neoplatonism, the humanist discovered in mythology something other and much greater than a concealed morality: they discovered religious teaching—the Christian doctrine itself." [2]

[2] Jean Seznec, *The Survival of the Pagan Gods* (1981), p. 98.

Actually, they discovered nothing of the sort. What they discovered was the right time for putting a false Christ over on the princes and churchmen and other higher-ups. He who said, "I am the Way, the Truth and the Life. No one comes unto the Father except by Me," cannot be absorbed into the eternal pagan psychodrama. Hence, He must be transmogrified. Thus was born *"The Christ"* of symbolism and *"The Christ"* of the New Age. This pseudo-Christ was imparted by means of the arcane Renaissance papist theology which holds that the pre-Christian pagan religions prophesied and foreshadowed Jesus:

"Interpretation by means of symbols, in fact, made it possible not only to discern a lofty wisdom beneath fictions of the most diverse character and the most unedifying appearance: it further led to a grasp of the fundamental relationship between this profane wisdom (variable in its outward but immutable in its teaching) and the wisdom of the Bible. Just as Plato accords with Moses, and Socrates 'confirms' Christ, so Homer's voice is that of a prophet. And the Magi of Persia and Egypt, who in their turn mask sacred maxims under a cloak of Fable, are linked to the sages of Israel. Against this background it was inevitable that the same idea which declining paganism has evolved should occur to the humanists — namely, that all religions have the same worth, and that under varied forms, however puerile and monstrous in

seeming, is hidden a common truth. Marsilio Ficino leans toward a universal theism, with Platonism as its gospel." [3]

[3] Seznec, p. 98.

"Contrary to popular assumptions, the Enlightenment was not anti-religious... its roots reached deeply into the soil of Neo-Platonism and Kabbalism... a line may be drawn... to Renaissance Neo-Platonists like Nicholas of Cusa... and Pico della Mirandola, all the way to... the Enlightenment. In his On *the Peace of Faith* (1453), Nicholas of Cusa envisions a conference in heaven where the religions are finally reconciled, recognizing that they are one in their moral and spiritual core..." [4]

[4] Michael Horton, *The Christian Faith: A Systematic Theology* (2011) pp. 59-60.

The Renaissance project was intended to follow the rabbinic model of transformation, whereby the Israelite religion of the Old Testament was changed into the Talmudic/Kabbalistic religion of pagan Judaism, under a compelling Biblical veneer. Long before the *proposed* synthesis between Plato and Moses, came the *realized* synthesis of the Talmudic Moses (not to be confused with the genuine Moses of the Pentateuch)— and Egyptian and Babylonian paganism. This monstrosity is almost always presented by university professors and the corporate media of our day as a trend toward liberation, human fulfillment, peace and love, and so forth. Actually, it led to the acceleration of the enslavement of Black people (about which we will have more to say) and playing god with nature by "perfecting" God's "imperfect" Creation, which resulted in the rise of a "scientific" and "medical" priesthood that subjugates Nature. "Such a stance is also found in Abraham Abulafia's book *Or-ha-Sekhel* and, following him, Moshe Narboni's *Commentary on Avicenna's Intentions of the Philosophers,* where the claim is made that the prophet who can change the course of nature is the highest among all the prophets." [5]

[5] Moshe Idel, *Kabbalah in Italy: 1280-1510* (2011), p. 311.

Harvard Professor Gilles Quispel writes, "In 1460 a monk brought a Greek manuscript to Florence. The monk, one of the agents that the city's ruler, Cosimo de' Medici, had been sent to scour Europe's monasteries for forgotten writings of the ancients, and what he now brought his patron was a codex containing fourteen treatises attributed to Hermes Trismegistus, an ancient Egyptian sage. This work's arrival caused a great stir, because Hermes, identified with the Ibis god Thoth, was held to be older than Plato and Moses and the underlying inspiration of all philosophy and religion that him... This manuscript contained the nucleus of the *Corpus Hermeticum... Along* with some astrological and alchemical works, also named after Hermes, these tracts became the fundamental writings of the Renaissance, together called Hermeticism... Hermetic writings... lived on in secret societies such as the Freemasons and the Rosicrucians." [6]

[6] Quispel adds that in Egypt in 1945 "a better version in Coptic of parts of the Hermetic *Asclepius,* preserved in Latin among the work of Apuleius," was discovered near Nag Hammadi.

Marsilio Ficino

Rev. Fr. Marsilio Ficino (1433-1499), a gifted Catholic philologist and magician with a mastery of early Greek, made the first Latin translation from the recently discovered codex at the urgent request of his patron, Cosimo de' Medici,[7] who, in 1462, ordered that Ficino put aside his translation of Plato's complete works *(Opera omnia)* in favor of *Pimander* (a.k.a. the *"Corpus Hermeticum"),*[8] which was alleged to have been authored by Mercury/Hermes in antiquity. Ficino's translation of *Pimander* (*Corpus Hermeticum*) was printed in 1471. His version of Plato's *Opera omnia,* dedicated to Lorenzo de' Medici, would be published in 1484, on a day timed to coincide with the astrological conjunction of Saturn and Jupiter.

The occult Catholic Neoplatonism of Ficino is one of the earliest sources of the ideology of modernism manifested by the Second Vatican Council and in its "post-conciliar" aftermath; and the "spirit of Assisi" as exemplified, beginning in 1986, by Pope "Saint" John Paul II's syncretic parliament of world religions in Assisi, Italy. Ficino's Renaissance Catholic Platonism "was part of the humanist project to embrace non-Christian sources of religious wisdom... Ficino believed that Christianity was in desperate need of reformation... in terms of its theological content. In Ficino's mind, Christian theology had been barbarized by centuries of ill-conceived dependence on Aristotelianism... Ficino understood that in antiquity the best Christian theologians had relied on Platonism... Ficino's goal was to use a revived Platonism to dramatically reshape contemporary Christianity. In particular, his goal was to rethink the relationship between Christianity and the other great world religions, to break down the narrow, dogmatic barriers imposed in late antiquity that separated Christianity from other forms of religious wisdom. This led him to a new kind of Christian apologetics that, unlike the Christian apologetics of the medieval period, did not seek in any straightforward way to demonstrate the falsity of other religions and the truth of Christianity."[9]

The Neoplatonic-Hermetic theology of Marsilio Ficino, Catholic priest, theologian and Cathedral Canon, was transmitted from fifteenth century Catholic Italy to seventeenth century Protestant England and from there to those intellectuals who comprised the early Enlightenment:

[7] From whom Ficino received a villa in 1463.

[8] Named *Pimander* after the "spirit" that legend has it dictated the *Corpus Hermeticum* to Hermes in his sleep.

[9] Jens Zimmerman, op. cit.

“In the case of Platonism, it was a combination of humanistic linguistic skill and philosophical acumen, in the person of Marsilio Ficino, which proved fundamental to its revival in the Renaissance... His own philosophical inclination was towards Plato rather than Aristotle, primarily because, as a priest, he considered Platonism to be more compatible with Christianity. It was Ficino who put Platonism on the philosophical map of the Renaissance... which provided the intellectual framework for his Christianized interpretation of Plato... Much of the literary influence of Ficinian Platonism was channeled through the vernacular tradition... Take the case of Ficino’s Latin commentary on (Plato’s) *Symposium* (1469). He (Ficino) himself translated it into the vernacular, but it was also transformed by one of his followers, Girolamo Benivieni, into a densely allusive... Italian *canzone.* [10].

[10] In Italy, a poem set to music.

...The central theme of the *Symposium,* Platonic love, as Christianized and purified by Ficino—Plato’s homosexual characters are converted into chaste male friends, united by their shared devotion to God... Platonism as a philosophical system, rather than a source of literary themes and motifs, was promoted in the mid-seventeenth century by a group of (Protestant) Cambridge clergymen and professors... (t)he Cambridge Platonists...” [11]

[11] Jill Kraye, “Philologists and Philosophers,” in *The Cambridge Companion lo Renaissance Humanism* (Cambridge University, 1998), pp. 149-151.

These Platonists in Protestant Britain were on the receiving end of Ficino’s two-hundred-year-old legacy.

The “Cambridge Platonists” included Benjamin Whichcote (1609-1683); John Smith (1618-1652); Henry More (1614-1687) and Ralph Cudworth (1617-1688). These were Fr. Ficino’s spiritual and ideological heirs and the transmitters of his Catholic-Neoplatonic-Hermeticism to the Enlightenment, having realized its radical ends:

“The acceptance by the Cambridge Platonists of Plato and his disciples under the leadership of Plotinus (204-270 A.D.)

‘Divine Plotinus!’— went hand in hand with their bold rejection of the entire Western theological tradition from St. Augustine through the medieval schoolmen to the classic Protestantism of Luther, Calvin and their variegated followers in the seventeenth century... Luther and Calvin and the entire array of Protestant theologians were greeted with the worst possible disapprobation...

"The return of the Cambridge Platonists to 'the ancient and wisest philosophers... was a return to a tradition which included many more philosophers besides Plato, the Neoplatonists, the Greek fathers and the thinkers of fifteenth-century Florence. This tradition was rooted in 'the primitive theology of the Gentiles' [12] which, according to Ficino, had begun with Zoroaster... Hermes Trismegistus... passed thence to Orpheus and Pythagoras... a variant of it appears implicit in Cudworth's *True Intellectual System* and it was once outlined by (Henry) More:

> "Plato's school... well agrees with learned Pythagore,
> Egyptian Trismegist, and the antique roll
> Of Chaldee wisdom, all which time hath tore
> But Plato and deep Plotin do restore." [13]

Father Ficino wrote, "Hermes Trismegistus (Hermes the thrice-greatest) was the first father of Theology, followed by Orpheus, who occupied the second place in the ancient theology. Aglaophemus was initiated into the sacred mysteries by Orpheus, to be succeeded in theology by Pythagoras, who in turn was followed by Philolaus, the teacher of our divine Plato." [14]

Plato was a forerunner of the Gnostics. For Plato the body was mainly the vessel that held the soul captive to materiality. At death, the soul was released from its bodily "prison."

"For Plato, the soul is the non-material aspect of a human being, and is the aspect that really matters. Bodily life is full of delusion and danger; the soul is to be cultivated in the present both for its own sake and because its future happiness will depend upon such cultivation. The soul, being immortal, existed before the body, and will continue to exist after the body is gone. Since for many Greeks 'the immortals' were the gods, there is always the suggestion, at least by implication, that human souls are in some way divine... Death is frequently defined precisely in terms of the separation of soul and body, seen as something to be desired.

---

[12] Ficino, *De christiana religione,* ch. 22: *"Prisca Gentilium Theologia, in qua Zoroaster, Mercurius, Orpheus, Aglaophemus, Pythagoras consenserunt, tota in Platonis nostri uoluminibus continetur."*

[13] C. A. Patrides, *The Cambridge Platonists* (1969), pp. 4-6. "Plotin," i.e. Plotinus.

[14] Some accounts have Ficino putting Orpheus or Zoroaster in first place and Hermes second.

"Hades, in other words, is not a place of gloom, but (in principle at least) of delight. It is not terrifying, as so many ordinary people believe, but offers a range of pleasing activities —of which philosophical discourse may be among the chief, not surprisingly since attention to such matters is the best way, during the present time, of preparing the soul for its future. The reason people do not return from Hades is that life is so good there; they want to stay, rather than to return to the world of space, time and matter... What happens to souls in Hades— at least, to souls who go there to begin

with... Judgment is passed according to the person's previous behavior... Plato frequently hints at a future for souls *after* their immediate post-mortem existence; some will return into other bodies.

"...influences that steered Plato towards his view of the soul and life after death... (t)o begin with, it is a natural outworking of his larger ontology: according to the theory of Forms, the world of space, time and matter is of secondary ontological significance, and the unseen world of Forms, or Ideas, is primary.

"...Already in Socrates' time the (occult) mystery religions had begun to flourish, offering (so it seemed) a comparable benefit to philosophical wisdom... Beginning with the Orphic cult, but fanning out much more widely, these religions (if that is indeed the right term for them) offered the initiate access to a world of private spiritual experience in the present time which would continue into the world beyond death...

"A further development, whose origins are obscure and controversial, was gnosticism. Many lines of Platonic thought led straight in this direction. The immortal (and perhaps even divine) soul is imprisoned in the unsuitable body, forgetting its origin in the process. During the present life those with this spark may have the fact revealed to them; as a result, they become possessed of a 'knowledge' *(gnosis)* which sets them apart from other mortals, and are assured of a continuing blissful existence thereafter...

"Plato's ideas on the soul (and much else besides) were, in addition, severely modified by his equally influential pupil Aristotle. He took the view that the soul was the substance, or the species-form, of the living thing; this represents a turning away from the lively Platonic view of the soul as more or less independent, and superior, entity to the body." [15]

[15] N.T. Wright, *The Resurrection of the Son of God* (2003), pp. 49-53.

Catholics and others conditioned by the Platonic and Neoplatonic Churchianity that passes for Christianity nowadays, may not find much fault with Plato's soul doctrine. The fault is this: Plato has no place in his theology/philosophy for the dead person's return to his or her body in the Resurrection. Of course, the Catholic Church does make ample room for this truth, and numerous councils and papal bulls can be cited which affirm it in no uncertain terms. But in the *practice* of the faith, the emphasis is decidedly not on *our resurrected body, and our entirely new life after Jesus returns*-—the future *reality* which radically contradicts Platonic, Gnostic, Manichaean, Neoplatonic and Hermetic mystical occult fantasy.

The Second Coming of Jesus will mark the beginning of a restoration that He will initiate when He returns. Again, this is a Biblical future reality that runs counter to the western occult mirage imprinted on our minds through the Neoplatonic and Hermetic infiltration of the Church. If we are honest with ourselves, many of us will admit that we are infected with this occult virus: we picture our after-life in heaven mainly as eternally experiencing the beatific vision. We have little or no sense of the actual future foretold by God's Word.

How was this ignorance inculcated in us? How have "devout Catholics" and their "learned priests," and "conservative" Protestants and their "scholarly ministers," failed to grasp what our future consists of, according to the Word of God? Is this desideratum the result of an accident, or a conspiracy? The greatest experience of our future existence has been rendered a footnote, when it is referred to at all: *under Christ, we will administer God's kingdom in our restored, resurrection bodies.* This fact from the Book of Revelation undercuts all of the mystical mumbo-jumbo that emanates from the occult, which has migrated into private revelations and apparitions that proliferate in the Church of Rome, aided by clerics and prelates in whose interest it is to furnish these soporifics to the people of God.

What is at stake is the Christian's correct knowledge of reality: that *God's Creation which we inhabit on earth, is basically good,* in spite of the flaw which our first parent's disobedience in the Garden brought into that Creation. Our life on God's earth is precious and wonderful, and God is a God of the living. True Christians will live again in their renewed, physical bodies. Jesus will completely restore the Creation on His return, and we will be in our bodies as part of that restoration.

These Biblical truths are heresy to the occult gnosis of the western secret societies, which finalized their usurpation of the hierarchy of the Church in the Renaissance. Much of Protestantism inherited some of Neoplatonic-Hermetic Rome's errors, in spite of contending against other aspects of papal theology, while also adding new errors of their own invention.

There is most certainly a disembodied state after death, while we await the Resurrection. But that state is *not the final destiny of Christ's Faithful,* as so many have been led to believe through the influence of paganized agents of error. Our destiny is the "restoration of all things" (Acts 3:21)—the glorified Creation where Heaven will be a transformed earth, which we will experience in our glorified, regenerate, *immortal bodies* (Romans 8:11). The failure to consistently preach and propagate this wondrous future as the overarching reality of life after death, has misled, demoralized and alienated millions of people, causing them to reject a saving faith and hope in Jesus and His Gospel.

The false picture inculcated in our minds of a shabby existence on a wretched planet earth that must be escaped, coupled with the vision of an eternal, disembodied post-mortem fate, is strong evidence of the extent to which Neoplatonism has replaced Christianity in churches where this delusion has been allowed to proliferate.

"The influence of Platonism on the church father Origen (A.D. 185-254) was so thorough that the early Church theologian taught not only that the soul was the immortal part of human beings that preexisted eternally, but also that this soul was often reincarnated in different bodies. For Origen, Christ is primarily the soul's educator, who, by his moral example and teaching, leads us from the transitory realm of material things to the invisible realm that is the soul's true realm..." Origen taught that 'Christ's ascension was 'more an ascent of mind than of body..." [16]

[16] Horton, op. cit., p. 48.

The disconnection between the soul and the body, transmitted by Catholic Neoplatonists to the Renaissance Church, penetrating its theology and positing a disconnection between the resurrection body and the soul, represents another grave peril for the Christian believer: it tills the soil for a theology which leads to the heresy of modernism, in which Christ's resurrection is denied outright, or at the very least, obscured by cant language.

"In *The Education of the Human Race* (1778), rationalist philosopher G.E. Lessing [17] (1729-1781) ...said, regardless of Christ literally rose from the dead, such facts of contingent history are insufficient to ground or to challenge eternal principles of reason. On the basis of this Platonist prejudice, Lessing asserted

[17] "Religious pluralism and relativism lie at the heart of modernity, as is evident in Lessing's clever parable of Nathan the Wise (1778), which is similar to Nicholas of Cusa's *On the Peace of Faith...*" Horton, p. 61.

that Christianity's supernatural claims are indemonstrable... this trajectory leads to the theologian Rudolf Bultmann (1884-1976), who said, ‘The Jesus of history is no concern to me... I am deliberately renouncing any form of encounter with a phenomenon of past history, including an encounter with the Christ after the flesh.” [18]

[18] Horton, op.cit., pp. 60-61.

Platonized Catholicism (Neoplatonic occultism) combined Platonism and Gnosticism in propounding an ontological dualism of “realms of the forms” and “appearances.” In Neoplatonism the redemption Jesus gained for us in history, in the-here-and-now, is always sublimated to a putative secret gnosis behind that redemption, which is supposed to be an indispensable key to full enhancement of Christ’s salvation mission. In actuality, a false Christ is formulated, the Christ of the spirit as opposed to the true Christ who made possible our redemption. In the infernal marriage of Platonism and Manichaeism, the soul is trapped in the flesh. Redemption is found in escape from the body and the world in which the body has incarnated by the will of God, into the immortal spirit world. [19]

[19] From which, the Neoplatonist Iamblichus (250-325 A.D.) taught, divine powers could be obtained by way of the precise enactment of ceremonial magic.

Contrasted with these delusions is the truth of the Biblical narrative of reality: a covenant between God and His people unfolding in the history of human life on earth. “In contrast to Plato, biblical religion looks for true knowledge of God in the realm of history, particulars, and flux, rather than in an ostensibly higher realm... transcending these factors.” (Michael Horton).

Christ’s resurrection was spiritualized by the Vatican’s Renaissance Catholic occultists in secret, while outwardly the Church of Rome issued bold proclamations of Biblical truth concerning the imperative to believe in the efficacy of Christ’s physical resurrection from the dead. This masquerade was maintained in history for as long as it took for the *zeitgeist* to change. Then the time for public statements of the formerly hidden doctrines had arrived. Liberal and Conservative churchmen such as Pope Paul VI on the Left, and Pope Benedict XVI on the Right, undertook this unveiling.

As Matthew Vogan observes, Benedict XVI (the former Cardinal Joseph Ratzinger) “entered office with a formidable reputation as the Vatican’s arch-conservative ‘enforcer’ of doctrine... It is alarming to think of the extent of the heresies held by those who have authority within the bounds of Rome if Ratzinger is to be considered conservative.”

During the pontificate of Francis, naive and self-deceived, Janus-minded "Conservatives" and "Traditionalists" in the wolf-pen of the post-Renaissance Church of Rome, bewailed the still-living Benedict XVI's absence from the papacy like sheep bleating for Little Bo Peep. They were pining for the Hermetic heretic who wrote in his book *Einführung in das Christentum* (1968):[20]

[20] Translated and published in English as *Introduction to Christianity* (Herder and Herder, 1971).

"According to the Epistle in Ephesians, Christ's work of salvation consisted precisely in bringing to their knees the forces and powers seen by Origen in his commentary on this passage as the collective powers which encircle man: the power of the milieu, of national tradition; the conventional 'they' or 'one' that oppresses and destroys man. Terms like original sin, resurrection of the flesh, last judgment, and so on, are only to be understood at all from this angle, for the seat of original sin is to be sought precisely in this collective net that precedes the individual existence as a sort of spiritual datum, not in any biological legacy passed on between otherwise separated individuals... Resurrection expresses the idea that the immortality of man can only exist and be thought of in fellowship of men, in man as the creature of fellowship..."[21]

[21] Ratzinger, ibid., pp. 186-187.

The future Pope Benedict XVI—the Vatican II theological expert Rev. Fr. Joseph Ratzinger—was inextricable intertwined with the theology of his Renaissance-Catholic predecessors, upholding, in an unbroken chain of transmission, nearly six hundred years of Neoplatonic-Hermetic heterodoxy, when he wrote that the coming of Jesus Christ was prophesied "according to Plato," in the latter's blueprint for deceit and dictatorship, *The Republic.* The future pope wrote that Plato's alleged prophecy "is always bound to move a Christian deeply."[22]

[22] Ibid., pp. 222-223.

The future Pope Benedict XVI continues: "To our generation, whose critical faculty has been awoken by Bultmann, talk of the ascension, together with that of the descent into hell, conjures that picture of the three-story world which we call mythical... Indeed, since there is no absolute point of reference... basically one cannot any longer speak at all of 'above' and 'below'— or even of 'left' and 'right': the cosmos no longer exhibits any firm directions. No one today (1968) will seriously contest these discoveries. There is no longer such thing as a world arranged literally in three storys."[23]

[23] Ibid., pp. 237-238.

"In *Introduction to Christianity,* Ratzinger explicitly denies the resurrection of the body. 'It now becomes clear that the real heart of faith in the resurrection does not consist at all in the idea of the restoration of bodies, to which we have reduced it in our thinking; such is the case even though this is the pictorial image used throughout the Bible'... one thing at any rate may be fairly clear: both John (6:63) and Paul (1 Corinthians 15:50) state with all possible emphasis that the 'resurrection of the flesh,' the 'resurrection of the body,' is not a 'resurrection of physical bodies.'

"Ratzinger could not be more explicit about his interpretation of 'the biblical pronouncements about the resurrection'. He says that their essential content is not the conception of a restoration of bodies to souls after a long interval; their aim is to tell men that they, they themselves, live on... because they are known and loved by God in a way that they can no longer perish... the essential part of man, the person, remains... it goes on existing because it lives in God's memory.'

"(In) Ratzinger's theology of the resurrection of Christ... he dismisses an 'earthly and material notion of resurrection' and resists defining it as a real historical event. He says that it is 'impossible for the Gospels to describe the encounter with the risen Christ; that is why "they can only stammer when they speak of these meetings and seem to provide contradictory descriptions of them."

"Ratzinger: 'Christ is the one who died on the cross and *to the eye of faith,* rose again from the dead.' How far this is from the biblical truth of passages such as John 20:27: 'Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side: and be not faithless, but believing'.

"The Fourth Lateran Council has asserted — and Councils are regarded as infallible in Roman Catholic dogma—that all men 'will rise again with their own bodies which they now bear about with them.' Ratzinger was involved in producing the new *Catechism of the Catholic Church,* which was approved with 'Apostolic Authority' by the previous pope ("Saint" John Paul II) in 1992. This document states that 'the resurrection of the flesh' (the literal formulation of the Apostles' Creed) means not only that the immortal soul will live on after death, but that even our 'mortal body' will come to life again'... While this could be more precise it appears reasonably categorical. How then may... Pope (Benedict) continue to deny such a statement of the Church's official teaching? It can be done only by the Jesuitical distinction that he makes between his official and private views (despite the fact that his books are all marketed with 'Pope Benedict XVI' more prominently displayed than his real name).

“Despite the seemingly-binding nature of the new *Catechism,* some point to the fact that it was not prepared by a full Council and are able to take some refuge in Ratzinger’s comments that the *Catechism* seeks to leave debated questions as open as possible. Ratzinger also views doctrinal formulations as having an ‘infinitely broken nature’ in ‘man’s continual effort to go beyond himself and reach up to God.’

“An explanation closer to the heart of the matter is that it is typical of Roman Catholicism to say both ‘yes’ and ‘no’ at the same time to biblical doctrine. It says ‘yes’ to the authority of Scripture but simultaneously ‘no’ by exalting the Church’s teaching above it. This is also part of that ‘all deceivableness of unrighteousness’ (2 Thess. 2:10) with which the system presided over by the man of sin is characterized. It is well able to bring together the incompatible as well as the diverse. There is a deceivability that goes beyond any other...” [24]

The demonic delusion at the heart of the occult “isms” (Platonism, Neoplatonism, Hermeticism and Kabbalism), which is fundamental to the western secret societies, whether in the Latin West or the Greek world, is the principle that man, through his theurgy, is a partner with God in wonder-working in this life, and God, whose existence is linked to the “World Spirit,” is in some sense dependent on man. The Biblical truth concerning the reality of God is absolutely separate from the preceding matrix of enchantment:

“What is remarkable is that the triune God—self-existing, perfect and independent—would nevertheless create and enter into covenantal relationships with creatures in freedom and love... God transcends heaven itself, which He has created (I Kings: 8:27; Matthew 24:35). As Paul explained to the Athenian philosophers, this is one of the attributes that highlight the contrast between God and the idols: ‘The God who made the world and everything in it, being Lord of heaven and earth, does not live in temples made by man, nor is He served by human hands, as though he needed anything, since He himself gives to all mankind life and breath and everything (Acts 17:24-25).

“...in Isaiah, God’s name [25] becomes especially understood as referring to God’s eternal and independent existence apart from the creation (e.g. Isaiah 40:28; 41:4; 43:10-20; 44:6; 48:12). God reveals His name in the midst of demonstrating His eternal

[24] Matthew Vogan, “Does the Pope Believe in the Resurrection?” *Free Presbyterian Magazine,* September, 2010. Vogan’s references are to the Ignatius Press edition of *Introduction to Christianity* (2004), pp. 98, 152, 211-212, 240-241, 243 and 256.

[25] YHVH, “Yahweh” — “I Am who I Am.”

purpose and immutable nature... Yahweh can be trusted to bring to pass everything that He has promised. His Name can be invoked with total confidence, both because He is

faithful to His promise and because He is not dependent on creatures for realizing His purposes. Egypt's pantheon is the foil. In contrast to the various nature gods, limited by their specific areas of provenance, Yahweh is the Sovereign God (Deuteronomy 4:34-35). Precisely because God is not dependent on anyone or anything He has created, we are assured that nothing will keep Him from being there for us... the gospel itself is embedded in the very name of Israel's God. The fact that God is incomparable and transcends the world... (e)vil powers never have the last word, because although God enters into the matrix of creaturely powers, He is never simply one player among others. God remains qualitatively and not just quantitatively distinct from creation...

"...according to Platonism, Neoplatonism... (t)he world does not exist as a free choice and act of God but as the necessary emanation or aspect of His being... God... needs the world for the realization of His existence, happiness and perfection: God's being is in His becoming.

"...In Paul's Mars Hill speech, Paul points out that 'in (God) we live and move and have our being' rather than vice versa (Acts 17:28). There is relatedness, but it is that of the world to God rather than of God to the world. Even in the Incarnation, the eternal Son assumed our humanity rather than vice versa. It is precisely in God's independence and freedom from contingency that a hospitable space is opened for the freedom of contingent reality... this 'unbounded, limitless, absolutely undetermined, unqualified' view of God is irreconcilable with pantheism ancient and modern: 'Babylonian, Hellenistic, Neoplatonist, Kabbalistic and Spinozistic." [26]

[26] Michael Horton, op. cit. pp. 230-233.

According to occult fable, Plato was a master of Egyptian magic, deeply immersed in Pharaonic occultism. This is silly stuff but it persisted as Neoplatonic-Catholic legend. In the third century A.D. Diogenes Laertius, in his *Lives of Eminent Philosophers,* wrote that Plato sojourned in Egypt five years while gaining its "wisdom."

It is now generally agreed that the Greek text of the *Corpus Hermeticum* was written around 300 A.D., approximately the same time when it is surmised that the Kabbalah and Babylonian Talmud were beginning to be compiled. Gilles

Quispel, in the book *The Way of Hermes,* writes that *Poimandres,* the first of the fourteen Hermetic texts that comprise *Pimander (Corpus Hermeticum),* “echoes the main theme of esoteric Judaism.”

Furthermore, Walter Scott, editor of the four volume Oxford University text, *Hermetica: The Ancient Greek and Latin Writings Which Contain Religious or Philosophic Teachings Ascribed to Hermes Trismegistus* (1924-1936), asserts that Plato and his *Timaeus* were a powerful influence on the writings attributed to Hermes.

The Egypt of Isis, Osiris and Anubis was the master theological image of this process of transformation. This is reflected in several of Ficino’s treatises, in particular *De voluptate* and *Di dio et anima.* In the former he describes Hermes Trismegistus as “the wisest of all Egyptians,” whose god is the source of all creation. In the latter he writes, “Mercurius Trismegistus, an Egyptian philosopher far more ancient than the Greeks, whom Greeks and Egyptians called a god because of his boundless understanding and knowledge...”

“The other significant development of the Renaissance... was the spreading influence of Kabbalah in European magical thought. The mystical system of Kabbalah... had been percolating into Christian magic before the late fifteenth century, but it was its espousal by another Florentine philosopher and natural magician, Pico della Mirandola (1463-1494), that introduced it to a new readership and led to renewed engagement with its occult promises. Johannes Reuchlin, a German humanist scholar and expert in Greek and Hebrew, further advanced its influence north of the Alps.” [27]

[27] Owen Davies, *Grimoires: A History of Magic Books* (2010), p. 46.

The Catholic trio of Ficino, Pico and Reuchlin represented highly placed and connected Neoplatonic Catholic “Humanists” whose Egyptian Hermeticism and rabbinic Kabbalism would give birth to Rosicrucianism and Freemasonry from within the Renaissance Church of Rome itself.

“The importance of the work of Marsilio Ficino of Florence... in the awakening, transmission and dissemination of esoteric knowledge in the West cannot be overestimated... In the Renaissance, this wisdom was assumed to originate with... the Egyptian Hermes Trismegistus, and... passed down

via Pythagoras and Orpheus to the ‘divine Plato’ and his interpreters... Ficino played a major role in the ‘rebirth’ of classical learning we know as the Renaissance, through his commitment to the renewal of Platonic and Hermetic philosophies and his determination to integrate their metaphysics into Christianity... His ordination as a priest (in 1.473) and later as a canon of Florence cathedral enabled him to ‘sanctify’ the pagan philosophy while confirming the supremacy of the established religion.” [28]

[28] Angela Voss, ed., *Marsilio Ficino* (2006), pp. 1 and 3.

“Ficino... translated the *Corpus Hermeticum,* which he saw as containing a core of teachings handed down from very ancient times through Orpheus, Pythagoras, Plato and Hermes himself.” [29]

“Ficino’s pupil, Pico della Mirandola... used Qabalistic [30] and Neoplatonic ideas in an attempt to find common ground between Christianity, Judaism and Islam... Another advocate of Qabalism was the Franciscan friar) Francesco di Giorgio... whose *De Harmonia Mundi* combined Qabalism with a preoccupation with the ideas of universal harmony...” [31]

“Plato Hermeticised”

“In the geneaology of ancient wisdom, Ficino places Hermes (or his analogue in Roman mythology, Mercurius), at the beginning of theology. Insisting upon the continuous transmission of one and the same doctrine of esoteric thought from Hermes to Pythagoras, and from Pythagoras to Plato, Ficino goes so far to assert that when Plato is treating certain ideas, ‘he does not present his own view but that of the Egyptians.’

“...it is fair to say that the Plato... (we) meet... upon reading Ficino’s *Theologia Platonica* is Plato significantly Hermeticised. For Ficino, Plato merely reproduces the Greek philosophy that Moses has already established in the Scriptures, and what Hermes has revealed in the *Corpus Hermeticum.* Believing Hermes to have been contemporary with Moses and to have communicated a parallel wisdom to a line of adepts through the ages, Ficino not only grants Hermes the status of Christian prophet, but wonders whether Hermes Trismegistus *is* in fact Moses. In the *Theologia* he writes, ‘Mercurius Trismegistus has expounded this same origin of the world’s generation even more plainly. It should not seem surprising to us that Mercurius knew such things if he was the *same man* as Moses.’ Reading Christian theology back into Plato, and thence back into the *Hermetica,* Ficino propounds syncretic philosophy in which Hermes Trismegistus is the one authorial and originating source of all other philosophies... The philosophies of Plato, Plotinus, Pythagoras and Christianity, are all stirred together in an incongruous literary-philosophical mixture... Showing a complete agreement between the teachings of Hermes, Moses, Plato and Christ, Ficino suggests that (the Book of) *Genesis* may be made to yield to the same message as the

---

[29] Christopher McIntosh, *The Rosicrucians: The History, Mythology and Rituals of an Esoteric Order* (1998), p. 7.

[30] “Qablistic” and “Qabalah” are alternative spellings of the Kabbalah root word.

[31] McIntosh, op. cit., pp. 7-8.

Timaeus, and both to yield to the one philosophy expounded in the *Pimander.* The idea of Hermes as the originating *fons et origo* of a tradition of wisdom which leads to an unbroken chain from Moses to Plato was the dominant genealogy for two centuries.” [32]

[32] Kiran Toor, *Coleridge’s Chrysopoetics* (2011), p. 33-34.

The reference to the two-century limit of influence is more properly an allusion to a Renaissance time-frame when Hermes was literally believed to have been the actual contemporary of Moses (or to have been Moses himself under another name). This literary hoax was overturned most famously and resoundingly by the French Protestant scholar Isaac Casaubon, over the objections of Cardinal Cesare Baronius, with the appearance, in 1614, of Casaubon’s irrefutable critique of the provenance of the *Corpus Hermeticum,* which proved philologically that it could be no older than the first century A.D. This later dating not only disproved the widespread Catholic belief that the texts attributed to Hermes Trismegistus were contemporaneous with Moses, but it also demolished the myth that Trismegistus had been the source of Plato’s thought. (Substantial fragments of ancient Egyptian

doctrine were indeed present in the writing attributed to Hermes, however).

Baronius was the author of a twelve volume Counter-Reformation history of the Church, *Annales Ecceliastici*, written from 1588 to 1607. He sought to prove the *bona fides* of the Church of Rome against the Protestants, with a long section on alleged “gentile testimony” to the truth of Jesus Christ. Among the sanctified gentiles in his list are “Mercurius Trismegistus” and the Sibyls, according to the lore of Lactanius. By crediting as foundational to the Catholic Church what amounted to the occult genealogy of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic conspiracy itself, Baronius revealed a devastating truth about the Church of Rome since the Renaissance, which made for a rather poor argument against Protestantism.

The *Hermetica* of Trismegistus and the oracles of the Syballines were no kind of corroboration of Christianity. Proceeding from that fact, Casaubon, in his *De rebus sacris et ecclesiasticus exercitationes,* discredited Baronius and the papist Church itself for continuing to promote the Neoplatonic-Hermetic narrative. By relying upon Lactanius as his source, Cardinal Baronius, a Catholic scholar highly favored by the hierarchy, furnished evidence of the fact that the occult theology was still predominant in papal Rome. Baronius was aware that Lactanius’ account of gentiles who allegedly heralded the coming of Jesus, was hopelessly tainted with the Neoplatonist claims made for Hermes (“Mercurius”) Trismegistus, as a prophet of Catholicism. Casaubon proved that the account of Hermes Trismegistus had been concocted sometime after the coming of Christ, and that this fraudulent prophet and the forged texts attached to his name, had been created by conspirators in the early centuries after Christ and then reintroduced during the Renaissance, which appears to have been the case. What was worse for the Counter-Reformation, was that the other forgeries —the texts said to have been composed by St. Paul's convert, Denys (also known as Dionysius) the Areopagite—were defended as authentic not only by Cardinal Baronius, but by Rome's principal apologist against the Protestants, Cardinal (later Saint) Robert Bellarmine, who was thus implicated in an imposture.

The cult of Hermes Trismegistus is not limited to the two centuries before Casaubon debunked it. It is alive and well in the present, in part because the point of the hoax that survived into the Renaissance—to disseminate Egyptian paganism under Christian auspices —has of course been dropped, in favor of accessing the traces of Pharaonic-Egyptian magic and theology present in the Hermetic texts, without the need to justify them by asserting they prophesied of Christ. Furthermore, history has yet to adequately account for the possibility of a conspiracy of forgers (if indeed there was an enterprise deserving of such a title), conceivably launched by Neoplatonic-Christian deceivers, who not only tricked the West into accepting the Trismegistus texts as having been written in deep antiquity, but who also successfully assigned the voluminous writings falsely attributed to St. Paul's convert, Dionysius the Areopagite. These pseudoepigrapha may have been produced near in time to one another, and if that is so, they may suggest the existence of a cabal organized for the purpose of propagating the *prisca theologia*. It is also worthwhile to recall that the Old Testament pseudoepigrapha known as the Mishnah and Gemara (comprising the Talmud Bavli), were created in the same approximate time period, the first few centuries A.D.

Rabbinic Judaism represents the infernal marriage of the occultism of ancient Egypt with the Bible. The rabbinic claim for the Talmud and Kabbalah is that they are Bible-rooted books that explain and elaborate God's Scripture. Ficino, Mirandola, Giorgio (1466-1540) and the other members of the Church of Rome's occult coterie were the crypto-rabbis of the Catholic world. When Pope Pius X wrote against the "synthesis of all heresies" here it was, the syncretic claim that Egyptian diabolism, as filtered through its subsequent manifestations in the sorcerers of Babylon and Orphic and Attic Greece, and the heirs of these cumulative traditions— the rabbinic descendants of the Pharisees—proved the truth of Jesus Christ and the Bible. Ficino asserted in his *Concordia Mosis et Platonis* (Basel, 1561) that Plato proved Moses true. The Hermetic philosophy of the *Corpus Hermeticum* was regarded by the Catholic-occultists as an ancient theology, parallel to the revealed wisdom of the Bible, supporting Biblical revelation.

Ficino's *De triplici vita libri tres* ("Three Books on Life"), or simply *De vita*,[33] considered a "classic of Catholic Humanism" is, in its volume three, titled *De vita coelitus comparanda* ("Life matched to the heavens"), a complex amalgam of philosophy, magic and astrology including, in fidelity to Egyptian magic, advocacy of talismans and amulets. Trismegistus is featured in the final chapter of volume three which treats of the man-is-god thesis of the *Asclepius,* wherein Hermes laudes the Pharaonic Egyptian veneration of statues into which spirits had been imbued:

"You must know, O Asclepius, the power and force of man. Just as the Lord and Father is the creator of the gods of heaven, so man is the author of the gods who reside in the temples. Not only does he receive life, but he gives it in his turn. Not only does he progress towards God, but he *makes gods.*

"Do you mean the statues, O Trismegistus?'

"Yes, the statues, Asclepius. They are animated statues full of *sensus* and *spiritus* who can accomplish many things, foretelling the future, giving ills to men and curing them... What we have said about man is already marvelous, but most marvelous of all is that he has been able to discover the nature of the gods and to reproduce it. Our first ancestors invented the art of making gods. They mingled a virtue, drawn from material nature, to the substance of the statues, and since they could not actually create souls, after having evoked the souls of demons or angels, they introduced these into their idols by holy and divine rites, so that, the idols had the power of doing good and evil. These terrestrial or man-made gods result from a composition of herbs, stones, and aromatics which contain in themselves an occult virtue of divine efficacy. And if one tries to please them with numerous sacrifices, hymns, songs of praise, sweet concerts which recall the harmony of heaven, this is in order that the celestial element which has been introduced into the idol by the repeated practice of the celestial rites may joyously support its long dwelling amongst men. That is how man makes gods." [34]

---

[33] Florence: Antonio di Bartolommeo Miscomini, 1489; reprinted in Venice in 1498 and in Bologna in 1501 by Benedetto Faelli.

[34] The *Asclepius* of Hermes Trismegistus according to Ficino. Quoted by Frances A. Yates, *Giordano Bruno and the Hermetic Tradition* (1991), p. 37.

It is not difficult to perceive from what occult motives some manifestations of the *abuse* of the Roman Catholic tradition of statue veneration *(dulia)* degenerated into statue worship *(latria),* which is God's definition of hatred of him: Exodus 20: 4-5, "Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image... Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me." Hermes in *Asclepius* surpasses even this heinous evil with his praise for humans who "invented the art of making gods" by having "evoked the souls of demons or angels."

This is black magic of the deepest dye. It emanates from the doctrine of man-is-god as expressed by Giovanni Pico della Mirandola in his Pope "Saint" John Paul II-certified book, *Oratio de hominis dignitate* ("Oration on the Dignity of Man"), which he borrowed from Ficino's edition of the *Asclepius:* "And so, O Asclepius, man is a *magnum miraculum,* a being worthy of reverence and honor. For he goes into the nature of a god as though he were himself a god; he has familiarity with the race of demons, knowing that he is of the same origin; he despises that part of his nature."

This poison was disseminated throughout the hierarchy of the Roman Church, including the Renaissance papacy. From that starting point, Catholic occultists who had a mysterious near immunity from prosecution by the Inquisition, inseminated it into the elite intellectual current of the West, which gave birth to the man-is-god sects like Rosicrucianism, Freemasonry and Mormonism, to denominate but three of the numerous, major institutional manifestations of the envenomed fruit of Catholic-Hermetic magic and self-worship.

Frances Yates: "The best guide to what Ficino thought of the *Asclepius* is... the *(A)rgumentum* before his translation of the *Corpus Hermeticum,* called by him *Pimander,* where he says that of the many works of Hermes Trismegistus, two are 'divine,' the one the work on the Divine Will, and the other on the Power and Wisdom of God. The first of these is called the *Asclepius,* the second *Pimander.*

"Thus, the *Asclepius* is for Ficino, a 'divine' work on the Will of God, intimately associated with other 'divine' work by this most holy and ancient Egyptian, the *Pimander,* on the Power

and Wisdom of God... for Ficino and his readers, what they thought to be the Mosaic piety of the Egyptian Genesis, and the Christian piety of Egyptian regeneration, would have rehabilitated in their eyes the Egyptian religion of the *Asclepius...* So, it would become a legitimate practice for a (Christian) philosopher, even a devout practice associated with his religion, to 'draw down the life of the heaven' by sympathetic astral magic, as Ficino advised in his work on magic, the *De vita coelitus comparanda.*

“The rehabilitation of the *Asclepius,* through the discovery of the *Corpus Hermeticum*, is, I believe, one of the chief factors in the Renaissance revival of magic.” [35]

For Rev. Fr. Ficino, Hermes Trismegistus is more than the personification of magic. He represents the secret gnosis that harmonizes all creeds into one Kabbalistic, Neoplatonic, Hermetic, Catholic unity. In these pages we see Ficino’s attraction to sorcery. How to reconcile this with the Gospel? Fr. concludes that its dangers can be avoided if its study and practice are confined to a select society (“a learned, philosophical circle”), and *kept secret* from “the ignorant *vulgus,* who would distort it into idolatry and superstition.” (Presumably only the ignorant have the perspicacity to call a spade a spade).

Renaissance sorcery is concealed under a layer of rhetoric about “good magic”:

“The spiritual magic of the Renaissance—Marsilio Ficino being its... most influential representative—is built on the principle of universal pneumatic sympathy. The first corollary of this principle is that man endowed with a hegemonikon located, generally speaking, in the heart, the organ corresponding to the sun in the cosmos, has the capacity to impart voluntary changes to his own phantasy. These changes, due to the continuity of the pneuma, are transmitted to the objects aimed at by the manipulator. This phenomenon (is based on) links between individuals according to the transcendental information that the pneumatic conveyances of their souls have accumulated during their descent through the planetary heavens. As for the magic proper, it represents knowledge permitting the performer to exploit the pneumatic currents which establish occult relations between the world’s parts... Renaissance magic (has its) point of departure in Ficino’s treatise *De vita coelitus comparanda* (the third book of Ficino’s *De vita),* which specifically states the following principles: just as the soul of the world is concentrated in the sun, whence it radiates to all parts of the universe through the *quinta essentia* (which is the ether or the pneuma), the human soul is concentrated in the heart and enters the body through the spirit… (In *De Vita,* Book 3, Chap. III Ficino writes that) ‘the Platonists by adapting our spirit to the spirit of the world by means of the magic and talismans *(ars physica)* and emotions *(affectum),* try to direct our soul and our body towards the blessings of heaven. That causes the strengthening of our spirit by means of the world spirit, through the action of the stellar rays acting beneficently upon our spirit, which is of the same kind as these rays, this lets it attract to itself celestial things.”[36]

---

[35] Yates, *Giordano Bruno,* op.cit., pp. 40-41. The scholarship of Yates, who died in 1981, has mostly stood the test of time, being esteemed a modern classic in spite of detraction from Wouter J. Hanegraaff. He denies that Renaissance magic was Hermetic or that Ficino was a Hermeticist (cf. *Esotericism and the Academy,* 2012, pp. 332-334). He cites D.P. Walker’s *Spiritual and Demonic Magic* (Pennsylvania State University, 2000), as an antidote to Yates. Yet on pp. 40-42 of Walker’s book we find the core of Frances Yates’ thesis confirmed. Walker describes Hermes as “undoubtedly a capital source for Ficino’s general theory of magic...” (Our own bone of contention with Yates is with her naiveté, not her scholarship *per se.* Her estimation of much of the Catholic-Hermetic and Catholic-Kabbalistic theurgy was that it constituted benign “white” magic).

[36] Ioan Coulíano, *Eros and Magic in the Renaissance* (University of Chicago Press, 1987), pp. 127-128.

“As befitting his role as high priest, Hermes’ authority extended to the domain of ritual magic. Ficino states in his introduction to the *Corpus Hermeticum* that Hermes was identified with the Egyptian Thoth, the god who invented hieroglyphs, and that his writings are concerned with ‘secret mysteries’ and ‘stupendous oracles.”[37]

[37] Angela Voss, op cit. p. 17.

Ficino was in favor of the use of magical amulets for good luck and protection from harm (whether to the soul or the

body). But he camouflaged his beliefs behind a smokescreen of doublespeak:

“Although clearly attracted by… the talismanic magic of the theurgists, Ficino had to deny approval of them, affirming Thomas Aquinas’s condemnation of artificial images as lures for evil daemons. In his *On obtaining life from the heavens* he carefully hides behind Iamblichus, Proclus and Synesius in suggesting that ‘in materials which are naturally akin to the things above and have been collected from their various places and compounded at the right time and in the proper manner, you can receive forces and effects which are not only celestial, but even daemonic and divine.’

“Much of what previous scholars have referred to as Ficino’s ‘self-contradiction or ‘inconsistent views’ ceases to be problematic when we realize how adept he is at using different contexts for different purposes… He keeps his pagan and Christian voices separate, moving effortlessly between them… as a Platonist, he will see through the cosmos to the Divine Mind; as an orthodox Catholic, he will locate God beyond the limits of the stars; as a Hermetic magician, he will use images and invocations to sympathize with the world-soul; as a faithful follower of Aquinas, he will deny the legitimacy of talismanic magic; as a physician, he will claim that the powers sown in the world by the *anima mundi* are natural, health-giving properties; along with Plotinus, he will suggest that they are gods; and as a true occultist, he will remain silent when necessary.” [38]

[38] Angela Voss, op cit. p. 19 and 25-26.

And as an astrologer he will denounce astrology (in his *Disputatio contra iudicium astrologorum),* while doing his own version of it. Ficino also concealed the ideological debt he owed to Proclus, among the Platonic authorities. [39]

[39] “Proclus was—after Plato, Plotinus and the Areopagite —the Platonic authority to whom Ficino was most indebted, even though he often concealed the debt...” Michael J.B. Allen, “Marsilio Ficino as a Reader of Proclus,” in *Essays in Renaissance Thought and Letters* (2015) p. 183.

Truth is not in the occult or occultists. They justify deception by secretly stating that humans need to be tricked into seeing what is real. The tricksters themselves become inured to deception in the process, and subsequently have difficulty distinguishing between truth and lies, or in perceiving the hypocrisy and duplicity in a reputed enemy of astrology who in actuality is only exposing a *version* of astrology which is not to his liking.

According to historian D.P. Walker, who adds further insight into Ficino’s many-layered duplicity, the god-making passages in the *Asclepius* of Hermes Trismegistus are “undoubtedly a capital source for Ficino’s general theory of magically influencing the spirit so it may become receptive to celestial influences. In the summary of this theory, with which *De Triplici Vita* ends, he presents a paraphrase of the... *(Asclepius)* as a source of Plotinus’ *Ennead... which... is* the liber Plotini’ on which the whole *De Vita coelitus comparanda* is supposed to be a commentary.

“This chapter of Plotinus, as Ficino interprets it, states that one can attract into, and retain in, a material object ‘something vital from the soul of the world and the souls of the spheres and the stars,’ that is, celestial spirit, if the object is of a material and form which reflects the celestial source of spirit in question. This passage and the *Asclepius* one, fit in with, and connect together, Ficino’s astrological medicine, music and talismans; and he is plainly using them to reinforce his own theory. He cannot, however, quite pass over the fact that Hermes is talking about pagan idolatry and demons, and therefore goes on to a worried and muddled defense of his own magic. He admits that the Egyptians’ magic was ‘illicit,’ because the demons in the statues were worshipped as gods; but implies that demons are alright if used as means and not worshipped as ends. He then provides an alternative line of defense by citing Thomas Aquinas to show that purely astrological magic could not produce demon-inhabited images; therefore, we are left to imply, his own talismans and Orphic singing have nothing to do with demons.

"...When he is trying to defend his own magic, Ficino frequently cites Thomas Aquinas. Now Thomas' position with regard to magic is, in the genuine works, quite clear. Natural substances, such as herbs and gems, may have certain powers connected with their astrological affinities, and it is legitimate to use these in medicine; but, if letters or characters are engraved on the stones, or invocations and incantations are used with the herbs, any resultant effect is the work of bad demons, and the operator has entered into an express pact with the Devil. Thomas associates the *Asclepius* with magic, and quotes Augustine's emphatic condemnation of the passage on idols. Thomas' view thus plainly condemns both Ficino's talismans and his astrological music, and Ficino makes his defense against the condemnation very weak by quoting the idolatrous *Asclepius* passage and connecting his own magic with it." [40]

[40] D.P. Walker, op. cit., pp. 41-43.

St. Augustine in *The City of God Against the Pagans* (the last three words of the title are usually omitted by modernists), attacked Hermes for being "friendly to the tricks of demons" and for mourning the decay of paganism on the eve of the birth of the Christian *Ecclesia*.

The authentic books of the Bible comprise the most unique document on earth, which is as it should be, given its divine authorship. Alone among the religious texts venerated by mankind, it is completely separate from the eternal pagan psychodrama and forbids every form of magic, sorcery and divination in every one of its forms: Lev. 19:26; Ex. 22:18, Deut. 18:9-14; Isa. 47:12-15; Dan. 1:20; 2:2, 4:7, 5:11; Gal. 5: 19-21; Rev. 18:23, 21:8, 22:15. This disenchanting function of the Word of God is execrated by the opponents of the Bible. They preach and convey what is supposed to be a great contrarian secret, that the Bible is actually no different than many other "wisdom" texts of the *prisca theologia*—yet another compilation of secret traditions, written in code, that are part of the long inventory of primordial, pantheistic knowledge that underlies all creeds, from Animism, Shamanism, Buddhism and Hinduism, to Islam, Judaism and Christianity. The "truths" of this "perennial wisdom" are almost always conveyed gradually, to a privileged elite, under secrecy. This is the conceptual foundation of virtually all occult organizations and secret societies in the West, and of the syncretic theology which has clandestinely ruled the papacy with an iron hand inside a velvet glove since the late fifteenth century. The god of what was officially condemned by the sadly compromised Pope Pius X as "modernism" in his

1907 encyclical, *Pascendi Dominici Gregis,* held dominion over his predecessors for 400 years. About this fact he said nothing. His concealment in itself constituted the crime of misprision.

Many Catholics will register shock at these assertions and dismiss them on the basis of past programming and conditioning. Stereotypes of the popes as the enemies Freemasonry, witchcraft and Judaism, for which they supposedly endured the enmity of the world, will come to mind. This book does not entertain stereotypes or appearances, however.

What many readers have accepted all of their lives as "Catholic truth" is in some cases founded upon the disingenuous subtleties of confidence tricksters and the mutating virus of deception they have planted under cover of religious mysticism. It is true that some times the popes of the Renaissance burned, banned or seized the Talmud in some manner, or executed occultists like Giordano Bruno, who had become a rebel against the occult system which placed the pontiffs at the head of the esoteric work. These medieval atavisms were undertaken by popes of the Renaissance for purposes of *reculer pour mieux sauter* —to step back (temporarily) in order to jump forward (into the occult program).

We study, in addition to the conspiracies of subversive, heretical popes, the crimes of their agents, without which the papal *magnum opus* could not have succeeded. Among the popes' leading clerical and lay co-conspirators, were Ficino with his talismanic and astral magic, Giovanni Pico and his magical and Kabbalistic theses, Reuchlin with his "Catholic Kabbalah," Giles of Viterbo, Agrippa, Giorgi, Lazzarelli, Patrizi, Steucho, Trithemius, Galatino, Ricius, d'Estaples, Foix de Candale, Benci, Nesi, Benivieni, Di Domenico, Del Nero, and lesser conspirators. This may appear to be a list of mostly obscure Catholic theologians and intellectuals, but everyone of these were giants of the occult imperium who would influence the thinking of the West for centuries. With regard to Reuchlin, against his conservative critics he had the protection of *both* Leo X *and* a proto-Protestant cabal whose secret members authored an influential satire *Epistolae obscurorum virorum* ("Letters of Obscure Men") mocking the opponents of the Catholic Kabbalah as pedantic and grossly ignorant poseurs.

Out of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic Catholic networks would coalesce an early form of Rosicrucianism, an ancestor of Freemasonry, with roots in the covert alliance of Protestant and Catholic defenders of Reuchlin.[41]

[41] Thomas De Quincey argued that after Rosicrucianism arrived in England it evolved into Freemasonry. Cf. "Historico-Critical Inquiry into the Origins of the Rosicrucians and the Freemasons" (1824); reprinted in *De Quincey's Collected Writings* (1890), vol. 13, pp. 384-448: "Toward the end of the sixteenth century, Cabalism, Theosophy, and Alchemy had overspread the whole of Western Europe..." (pp. 440-401). Tobias Churton wrote, "On April 16, 1658, five years after receiving the great secret, (Elias) Ashmole (1617-1692) finished writing the preface to the alchemical text *The Way to Bliss* ... The publication included suspected heretic Doctor Everard's transcript and notes. John Everard, D.D. (ca. 1575-ca. 1650), made the first printed English translation of *The Divine Pymander*, published in 1650. The *Pymander* contained the first four books of the *Corpus Hermeticum,* anciently attributed to Hermes Trismegistus... Hermes was an ancient 'patron' of the Freemasons... and a 'star' of Andreae's *Chemical Wedding of Christian Rosenkreuz..." The Invisible History of the Rosicrucians* (2009), p. 356. (Ashmole was made a Freemason on Oct. 16, 1646).

During much (though not all) of the period encompassing the controversy over Reuchlin's writings, Pope Leo X was his secret protector.

Rosicrucianism has been misrepresented as an almost exclusively Protestant off-shoot, through the simple but effective ruse of dating its beginnings from after the Protestant Reformation, and identifying its progenitors as proto-Protestants and fellow-travelers. In fact, the leaders of the early Rosicrucian movement were inspired by a *dramatis personae* of papist occultists. What began in Florence under the Medici was transmitted to the early Rosicrucians, who were "deeply imbued with Magia and Cabala, with the works of Henry Cornelius Agrippa and Johannes Reuchlin... the *De Harmonia Mundi* of Francesco Giorgi, and the works of 'Marsilius Ficinus Theologus." [42]

[42] Yates, *The Rosicrucian Enlightenment* (1986) p. 96.

It was Catholic Neoplatonic-Hermeticism that was the seedbed of Rosicrucianism. [43]

[43] Cf. McIntosh, *The Rosicrucians,* op.cit., pp. 11-14.

Henricus Khunrath's 1609 Rosicrucian manifesto, *Amphitheatre of Eternal Wisdom,* was a key text of the Rosicrucian fraternity: "In Khunrath's work we meet with the characteristic phraseology of the manifestos... the stress on Magia, Cabala and Alchymia as in some way combining to form a religious philosophy which promises a new dawn for mankind." [44]

[44] Yates, *The Rosicrucian Enlightenment,* op. cit., p. 38.

"The authors of the (Rosicrucian manifesto) *Confessio Fraternitatis* agree with the astrologers that their epoch is entering into the sign of Mercury, who is assimilated by Michael Maier [45]

[45] Michael Maier (1569-1622), Count-Palatine at the court of the Holy Roman Emperor Rudolf II; poet-laureate at the University of Padua, and Rosicrucian leader.

with Hermes Trismegistus... Hermes as the mediator *par excellence* between gods and men, (is) a function also ascribed to him by the alchemists and by Heinrich Khunrath... Thus, it is normal for astrologers to regard Mercury as 'the lord of the word,' and for the *Confessio Fraternitatis* to proclaim the coming of 'the age of the tongue." [46]

[46] Roland Edighoffer, "Rosicrucianism I," in *Dictionary of Gnosis and Western Esotericism,* (2006), p. 1011.

It was important for the Church of Rome, as part of its dialectic process, to control, or at least shape, the inevitable conservative backlash and reaction to the infiltration of the Vatican by Neoplatonic-Hermetic forces. Beginning around the time of the Council of Trent and the "Counter-Reformation," the occult popes planted their men in the ranks of those who were sounding an anti-occult alarm. Take for example the deep cover infiltrator Johann Weyer, the always faithful disciple of the Catholic occultist Cornelius Agrippa, the practicing sorcerer and author of *De occulta philosophia,* deeply implicated in the Hermetic doctrine of gnosis. His head-spinning Jekyll-and-Hyde disciple Weyer has come to be known in popular history as a writer who mercifully modified the witch hunt by suggesting that some accused witches were merely mentally unbalanced. This signature caricature of Weyer's biography omits his pivotal role in the sixteenth century as an explainer of the occult, rather than the supposed leader of the attack on the occult infiltration of the Church. From 1530 to 1534 Weyer had been Agrippa's collaborator in sorcery. Watch for it: in 1563 Weyer's celebrated anti-occult book *De praestigiis daemonum,* was published in the final year of the Council of Trent, intended as a guide for the inquisitors. Parts of it read as though we had written it. In its pages Weyer surgically deconstructs the diabolic lineage of the "idolatrous magic" of the Egyptians, the Babylonians and of Zoroaster, who "transmitted the arts of idolatrous magic on to other peoples, so that the whole world came to be filled with the fumes of Impiety as though from a furnace or factory of wickedness."

So far so good; here was rhetorical red meat for churchmen who had been deeply disturbed by the rise of the new order of occultism which they had glimpsed in the hierarchy of the Renaissance Church. Now, at last, it appeared that a cleansing counter-reaction was setting in that would chase the infiltrators out of the Church. That hollow legend has had very durable legs ever since, aided by liberal media and academia which hold to it uncritically.

The truth is, Weyer was one of the Renaissance Vatican's occult agents; a secret member of the "sublime religion" ever since he had been apprenticed as an adolescent to Agrippa. *Weyer was one of several Catholic advisors to the Inquisition who was controlling the anti-occult opposition:* shaping it and directing it:

“Wyer had not... forgotten Agrippa’s insistence on differentiating between the sublime religion known as *mageia*[47] among the ancients, and the sacrilegious practices that had come to be confused with it. He... admits that there must be such a thing as natural magic, not least because of the gospel account of the Magi from the East who followed a star... Interestingly, and probably due to the formative influence of Agrippa, Weyer’s genealogy of demonic magic... does not include the Florentine platonists or their sympathizers. Moreover, Plato is not given a place of any special prominence.”[48]

The pope’s foundational sorcerers and theorists of magic are given a pass by Wyer. His intentional myopia remains intact in the twenty-first century. Weyer misdirected Catholic investigators away from “Florentine platonists or their sympathizers.” [49]

---

[47] *Mageia* is a word freighted with significance in the occult text *Corpus Hermeticum,* attributed to Mercury/Hermes. It is part of the famous phrase from that text, *“philosophia men kai mageia,”* which “bears on the quest for gnostic salvation.” Cf. Brian P. Copenhaver, *Hermetica: The Greek Corpus Hermeticum* (2000), p. xv.

[48] Wouter J. Hanegraaff, *Esotericism and the Academy* (2012), pp. 85-86; (emphasis supplied). Hanegraaf is a good source for raw data and we salute his work ethic, but like many liberals he views the investigation of a Neoplatonic conspiracy seeking the destruction of Christianity during the Renaissance as a figment of a “paranoid imagination” (p. 40). He describes the radical religious syncretism posited by the *philosophia perennis* as “a deeply conservative... perspective,” contrasted with what he regards as its revolutionary opposite, the *prisca theologia.* We can see no drastic difference between the two; both of them are pagan survivals. Furthermore, though he concedes on p. 71 of *Esotericism* that the revolutionary-syncretist Catholic Bishop Agostino Steuco claimed that the “One Truth” had always been available through Zoroaster and Hermes, Hanegraaff nevertheless describes Steuco as a “conservative intellectual” (p. 70), who “sought to reveal Catholic doctrine as the hidden core of paganism” (p. 73). What is conservative about a Catholic Bishop (which Steucho was), identifying Catholicism as the hidden core of paganism? Steuco’s statement is anything but. Hanegraaff further defines Steuco’s “conservatism” in terms of his having spurned “a return to the sources of revelation (the Bible and the apostolic community).” Hanegraaff imagines that the rejection was reflective of Steuco’s “solid orthodoxy” (p. 70 and 72). Hanegraaff would seem to be part of the “popular trend in Renaissance and Byzantine cultural and social history of rehabilitating all ideological dissenters (heretics) into a vague, all-inclusive Christianity.”

[49] On Plato in this context cf. Niketas Siniossoglou, *Radical Platonism in Byzantium* pp. 154-155.

His counsel to the inquisitors misled them and led them away from the chief culprits. In the land of the occult nothing is as it seems.

The Magi: A Cautionary Tale

Furthermore, Weyer’s use of the Magi in the Jesus infancy narrative as an alibi for the Christian practice of “natural” or “white magic” in Catholicism is a vexation that is still with us. Close students of the Bible whose integrity is intact can see that the Word of God makes zero distinctions between “good” and “bad” magic: they are all condemned without reserve. The assumption that the Magi were benevolent is not found in the New Testament. It is a widely held assumption which would seem to be at variance with a crucial, overlooked fact: the Magi revealed the existence of the infant Jesus to the murderer

Herod. St. Matthew’s description of them, using the Greek word, *magoi,* derived from the Persian word *magus,* denotes a priest of the Persian religion, i.e. Zoroastrianism. The numerous Biblical injunctions against magic, whether of Zoroaster or anyone else, gives pause to the widespread assumption that the Magi were unambiguously virtuous. It seems that they *may perhaps have become so* in the presence of the Christ child, when they bowed to worship Him (Matt. 2:11); although even that may have been a ruse. If they were sincere in their alleged adoration, then their days of practicing the magic of Zoroaster would have come to an end at that moment, yet the Scripture is silent on any such possible conversion. Ficino promulgated the identification of the Persian Magi as Zoroastrians.

One Bible commentary states, under the heading, *The ‘Star’ Seen by Astrologers after Jesus’ birth:*

“The ‘astrologers from eastern parts,’ hence from the neighborhood of Babylon, whose visit to King Herod after the birth of Jesus resulted in the slaughter of all the male infants in Bethlehem, were obviously not servants or worshipers of the true God. (Matt. 2:1-18) As to the “star” (Gr., *a’Ster’)* seen by them, many suggestions have been given as to its having been a comet, meteor, a supernova, or, more popularly, a conjunction of planets. It is also notable that only these pagan astrologers ‘saw’ the star. Their condemned practice of astrology and the adverse results of their visit, placing in danger the life of the future Messiah, certainly allow for, and even make advisable, the consideration of their having been directed by a source *adverse* to God’s purposes as relating to the promised Messiah. It is certainly reasonable to ask if the one who ‘keeps transforming himself into an angel of light,’ whose operation is ‘with every powerful work and lying signs and portents,’ who was able to make a serpent appear to speak, and who was referred to by Jesus as a ‘manslayer when he began,’ could not also cause astrologers to ‘see’ a starlike object that guided them first, not to Bethlehem, but to Jerusalem, where resided a mortal enemy of the promised Messiah.” [50]

[Page 112 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

Those who may be offended by a skeptical view of the delightfully quaint, Christmas-themed interpretation of a star which is followed by benevolent Magi, should be aware that this interpretation has been repeatedly cited by occultists and employed as a loophole through which to drive their claim of the existence of “good magic” in the New Testament. On June 23, 1439, during the Council of Florence, in the city which would become the citadel of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic infiltrators of the Catholic Church, *reggimenti* of the city of Florence engaged in an extravagant ritual dressed like the Magi. These *Palleschi* [51] were members of a Florentine secret society, the *Compagnia de’ Magi,* which was organized and funded by the Medici.

In 1459, Cosimo de’ Medici spent a large sum for an art work executed by Benozzo Gozzoli, *The Journey of the Magi,* a fresco which was displayed at Cosimo’s palace. He had another Magi-fresco installed in his monastic quarters in San Marco. The Medicis’ obsessive identification with the magicians from the East culminated in Sandro Botticelli’s breathtakingly beautiful 1475 painting, *Adoration of the Magi,* which depicts Cosimo as the Magus kneeling in front of the Virgin, and his two sons as the other two Magi. Brigitte Tambrun asserts that Cosimo’s Magi fixation was an integral part of his mission for the revival of Neoplatonism in Florence. [52]

Time and again in occult literature we find reference to the Magi having used “white magic” in the “Christmas story,” with the implication that this lends support to the practice of other forms of “good magic.”

Brigitte Tambrun: “Plato makes his return because he is the inheritor at the same time of the Magi… and of Hermes… The fresco of Benozzo Gozzoli presents a genealogy of wisdom: the *Magi* —Plato—Christ, doubled by a geographical orientation… Orient—Greece—Florence… while at the same time always recalling and referring to the point of origin: the oriental *Magi* are the originators of the wisdom of the Greeks—

[50] Raymond Franz et al., *Aid to Bible Understanding* (1971), p. 1552.

[51] Partisans of the Medici in Church and State were known as *Palleschi,* a reference to the red balls *(palle)* of the Medici coat of arms).

[52] Brigitte Tambrun, “Plethon,” in *Dictionary of Gnosis & Western Esotericism* (2005).

Pythagoras,[53] Plato, Plotinus, Plethon—are the inheritors, and this wisdom comes to Florence thanks to the Medici who gather it."

[53] "One might... define later Pythagoreanism as Platonism with the Socratic... element amputated. In fact, Plato remained the principal source for all later Pythagoreans — Plato's myths, and in particular the *Timaeus... neo*-Pythagoreanism converges, in the philosophical realm, with Neoplatonism." Walter Burkert, *Lore and Science in Ancient Pythagoreanism,* p. 96.

The Catholic artist "Hieronymus Bosch" (Joen van Aken; 1450-1516), included in his painting of the visit of the Magi to the Christ child, *The Adoration of Magi* (circa 1494), macabre and foreboding details which haunt the scene and subtly undercut the benevolent aura surrounding the Magi.

As the Magi approach Mary and the infant Jesus, "Staring out from the (doorway of the) crumbling, thatched-roof stable... is a red-faced figure usually associated with the Antichrist... With an unsettling grin; naked, creamy white limbs; glittering jewelry and golden spiked headdress, he suggests not the subject's solemnity but what will become a constant theme in Bosch's paintings —the inescapable dualism in the world of good and evil. Additional details—such as the grim, ghostlike face that peers through the rotting wall at right; an ominous owl in the rafters clutching its prey; and in the distance, a tiny figure pulling a horse ridden by a monkey (the latter a symbol of lust) and approaching a brothel (its flag a giveaway)..."[54]

[54] Mary Tompkins Lewis, *Wall Street Journal,* June 8, 2016, p. D5.

A project of gargantuan megalomania

The texts attributed to Plato and Hermes, and later the rabbinic Kabbalah were advertised in various guises, as "harbingers of Christ," and "testifying to the divinity of Christ." This pretense of the *prisca theologia* and *philosophia perennis* was embraced by many Renaissance Catholic intellectuals at the highest levels of the Vatican and widely proclaimed by Johannes Reuchlin and many others, in opposition to Judaic converts to Catholicism such as Johann Pfefferkorn, who contested it vigorously. True Catholics however, perceived that Hermetic Neoplatonism and Kabbalism seemed to agree with Christianity only on "a surface level of common signifiers."

The central tenet of the Kabbalah is a project of gargantuan megalomania: making an Absolute of the human intellect. Neoplatonic humanism, expressed by Giovanni Pico della Mirandola in his *Oration on the Dignity of* Man, reflects a similar perverted hubris; the spirit of autonomy which seduced our first parents — that salvation lies in *grasping Being,* not God's grace. The line of "old sages" who "grasped this Being" were dubbed by Barlaam of Calabria, "Enlightened-ones, Illuminati," on the Neoplatonic model of an elite consisting of "true philosophers." [55]

[55] The earliest formal reference that we have been able to locate to the "Illuminism" from which the Illuminati derived their name, is in reference to the work of the medieval Persian Neoplatonic-Hermeticist Shihab al-Din Yahya Suhrawardi (b. 1154), who was sentenced to death and executed in Aleppo, Syria in 1191. In his principal writing, *Hikmat al-Ishraq* ("The Philosophy of Illumination"), he placed the "science" of the individual's subjective mystical experience, above revealed dogma: "This science is the very intuition of the inspired and illuminated Plato... and of those who came before him from the time of Hermes." The school of theology developed in Suhrawardi's name was termed the "School of Illuminism." Cf. Von Stuckrad, op. cit., p. 28.

Neoplatonic-Hermeticism infiltrated the Church under an aura of intense Catholic piety and devotion. The conspirators went through the motions and assumed the forms of devotion.

"When Ficino publicly commented upon St. Paul's *Epistle to the Romans* in the Cathedral of Florence, some time at the end of 1497, he was not only echoing a long tradition of ancient and medieval exegesis of the Pauline epistles. He was also reiterating a position that he had started to develop in the 1470s in his treatise on St. Paul's rapture *(De Raptu Pauli)* and in his *Platonic Theology,* regarding the soul's divine powers. At the time he delivered his interpretation of *Romans,* he had completed his commentaries on Plato, Plotinus and other major Neoplatonic philosophers, and he was about to publish his commentary on Dionysius the Areopagite. These works had a profound impact on Ficino's reading of Romans... Ficino saw Plato and his Neoplatonic successors as theologians rather than philosophers, that is to say, as divinely inspired... In this context, St. Paul perfectly embodied the model of Christianity as Ficino understood it: a form of mystical spirituality in agreement with Neoplatonic metaphysics..." [56]

[56] Maude Vanhaelen, "Ficino's Commentary," in *The Rebirth of Platonic Theology* (2013), pp. 205-206.

Hermetic Renaissance Catholicism is supposed to be a religion purified of negativity and illusion; the higher type of Christianity. But it is not Christianity. It is the gnostic religion of Buddha and Ammon-Re, not of the God of Israel, or the Bible, or Jesus Christ. In this religion the world is a horrible place. “Hermes tells Tat that those who partook in the gift of God regard time spent here as a misfortune. ‘Disregarding the gross and the subtle, they hasten to the One alone.” [57]

[57] Clement Salaman, “Echoes of Egypt in Hermes and Ficino,” in *Marsilio Ficino: His Theology, His Philosophy, His Legacy* (2002) p. 122.

In this religion magic talismans are recommended by Catholic clerics like Ficino: “If you obtain these Phoebean stones which we have been talking about, you will have no need to impress images on them. You should hang them, encased in gold around your neck, on a yellow silk cord, when the Sun passes through Aries or Leo and is ascendant, or when it is mid-sky and facing the Moon.” [58]

[58] Clement Salaman, op. cit. p. 128.

It is this Ficino who, on October 6, 1487, Lorenzo de’ Medici recommended be made Bishop of Cortona.[59]

[59] P.O. Kristeller, “Marsilio Ficino and his Work after Five Hundred Years,” in *Marsilio Ficino e il ritorno di Platone* (1986).

Some seventeen years earlier, Cosimo de’ Medici had appointed Fr. Ficino head of the Platonic Academy of Florence, which featured research, publications and public lectures by Cristoforo Landino and others for the indoctrination of the Catholic hierarchy and elite laymen into the new religion.[60]

[60] Critics say that Ficino’s enterprise amounted to nothing more than an “informal intellectual gymnasium.” However, Fr. Ficino himself refers to his Platonic Academy in the preface to his translation of Plotinus (ca.1490-1492) and also in a September, 1462 letter to Cosimo de’ Medici. The conspiracy-minimizers can quibble about what constitutes an “academy,” but the fact is, Ficino was handsomely paid by Medici to “draft translations, and in his lectures, commentaries, treatises and letters, he explained Plato to the Florentine public.” He had numerous students and an extensive audience. Cf. Arthur M. Field, *The Origins of the Platonic Academy.*

The Inquisition in Legend and Reality

The magical doctrine of Hermes Trismegistus circulated unimpeded in Spanish universities, monasteries and the Escorial library of the Spanish kings throughout the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries. It is our contention that “notoriously repressive,” papally-chartered institutions such as the Spanish Inquisition were not only friendly toward Neoplatonic-Hermeticists such as Ficino — by the time of the Renaissance *the Inquisition had been mostly captured by those intellectual forces.*

The Spanish Inquisition in the Renaissance was tasked with crushing conservative Catholics who were on the trail of executive members of the

Church of Rome's occult Cryptocracy. Evidence of the former is provided by the nineteenth century Spanish-Catholic historian Marcelino Menéndez Pelayo in his *Historia de los heterodoxos españoles,* in which he records that Marsilio Ficino was left untouched by the Inquisition in Spain and his works and the influence of Hermes Trismegistus were allowed to flourish. "If the Sainted Office of the Inquisition can be accused of anything, it would be in not having restricted the circulation of books that well-deserved its rigors." [61]

[61] *Historia de los heterodoxos españoles,* (1992), vol. 2, p. 437.

Catholic libraries in Spain in the sixteenth century were well-stocked with occult books admitted into circulation by the Inquisition. The works of Marsilio Ficino, the magical treatises attributed to Hermes Trismegistus and "Hermetic works in general" enjoyed "orthodox status." [62]

[62] Susan Byrne, *Ficino in Spain* (2015), p. 27.

Ficino's magical doctrines were disseminated throughout "Inquisitorial Catholic Spain" by such luminaries of Throne and Altar as Pedro Mexia (1497-1551), secretary to the Spanish Holy Roman Emperor Charles V and an author of books such as *Silva de varia lección*, patronized by Spain's bishops, cardinals and royalty. In his *Silva,* Mexia popularized Father Ficino's treatise on the occult properties of stones, including the use of aetites, which is related to the stone magic of the Babylonian Talmud, in tractate Shabbat 66b. In pagan lore, aetites are reputed to ward off the female demons who cause complications for pregnant women. Superstition of this sort from Ficino pertaining to avoiding a gaze from a menstruating

woman, evil eye betwitchment and the teachings of Hermes Trismegistus, were published in popular books approved by the Church in Spain. One of the high Spanish officials responsible for circulating the works of Ficino and Hermes in Spain was Charles V's ambassador to London and Venice, Diego Hurtado de Mendoza.

The Spanish government's slow decay into an impenetratable thicket of bureaucracy and regulation can be traced in part to its faith in the pagan model of law that Ficino's followers were free to disseminate under the Holy Inqusition. Hugo de Celso, author of the highly influential 1538 magnum opus, *Las leyes de todos los reynos de Castilla* (*The Laws of All the Kingdoms of Castile*), was one of sixteenth century Spain's most eminent legal authorities. In his book, Celso informed the Church and aristocracy of Spain that their laws were derived, "According to Marsilio Ficino" from "the philosopher Plato" and "Prometheus" who "received the laws that Mercury (Hermes) gave him."

Hector Pinto (1528-1584) [63]

[63] Cf. http://www.prdl.org/author_view.php?a_id=3703

Professor of Scripture at the University of Coimbra (Portugal), in his seminal book, *Imagen de la vida cristiana* (*Image of the Christian Life*), which was translated from Portuguese and circulated widely in Spain, elaborated upon Ficino's claims concerning the sources of the law of Catholic nations. Pinto listed these as Osiris, (Egypt's god of magic), Zoroaster and Mercury (Hermes). Pinto adds that "anyone who wishes to see this in detail should read Ficino on Plato..." [64]

[64] There is a reference to "falsehood" in Pinto's litany of the occult agents who he says, following Ficino, had formed the basis of the law of Catholic nations. When he says "falsehood" Pinto is alluding to the Islamic claim of Muhammed to law-giving inspiration from the Angel Gabriel.

The eminent Spanish-Catholic jurist associated with the School of Salamanca, Jerónimo Castillo de Bobadilla, in his legal treatise, *Política para Corregidores y Señores de vasallos, en tiempo de paz y de guerra y para prelados en lo espiritual y temporal* ("Policy of Magistrates and Lords of Vassals in Peacetime and in War, and of Prelates Spiritual and Temporal"), which formed the administrative foundation of the law in the reign of the arch-papist, King Philip II, specifies that

the laws of Spain are derived from Hermes Trismegistus, Zoroaster and Plato.

An extraordinary case of Renaissance-Catholic powers importing Judaizing ideas into Christendom is found in the account of the compilation and circulation of the Plantin *Polyglot Bible.* A Catholic exegete and translator of ancient Hebrew into Latin, who interpreted the Bible in conformity with rabbinic lies and malice, was the erudite Italian-Dominican, Sanctes Pagninus (1470-1536), a one-time student of Savonarola, who had led Pagninus on the path to the *authentic* Catholic Hebrew Republic of *true* Israel. Pagninus turned his coat however, and joined the Talmudic/Kabbalistic counterfeit, where he used the rabbinic glosses of David Kimchi and other neo-Pharisees to interpret theological concepts in Old Testament Hebrew. The French scholar Fr. Richard Simon (1638-1712) described Pagninus as "neglecting the ancient interpreters of Scripture to rely upon the opinion of the rabbis." Pagninus' Hebrew-to-Latin Old Testament translation was published as the famous *Royal Polyglot Bible* ("Biblia Regia"), from the distinguished publishing House of Plantin, in Antwerp, under the patronage of King Philip II of Spain. Philip dispatched his own undeniably brilliant Hebrew scholar, his chaplain Fr. Benito Arias Montano (1527-1598; usually referred to as only Arias Montano), to supervise the project. Montano, after having mastered Hebrew under the guidance of Renaissance-Catholic scholars, allied with the Neoplatonic-Hermetic conspiracy. Montano included in the multi-volume *Royal Polyglot Bible* both Pagninus' rabbinic-influenced Old Testament, as well as outright Talmudic commentary on the Bible compiled by Franciscus Raphaelengius, and his (Montano's) own degenerate Kabbalistic theses.

Readers of this writer's *Judaism Discovered* (pp. 236 and 766-768), are aware that the main introductory levels of rabbinic exegesis of the Bible are as follows: the literal meaning, or *Peshat,* followed by *Remez* (allegorical meaning), *Derush* (legal and Midrashic meaning) and *Sod* (the secret magical meaning). When rabbinic interpretation was first introduced in the conservative early Middle Ages, it had to present its Biblical theology to Christians solely in terms of *peshat.* By the time of the Renaissance however, rabbinic power and prestige had grown to such an extent that it was bold enough to teach Christians to parse the Bible according to the most distorted and diabolical of all of its levels of falsification, the level of *sod.* This foothold was achieved by putting forth among Christians the hoax that by mastering the occult interpretive methods of the Kabbalah, the divinity of Christ could be proved at the highest level of intellectual and spiritual understanding. One of the agents of this fraud was Philip II's Arias Montano, sometime advisor to Spain's sadistic military officer, the Duke of Alba, whose scorched earth polices in the Netherlands weakened Catholicism's hold on the Dutch people.

Montano's neo-Platonic treatise, *De arcano sermone* appears in the *Apparatus* volume of the *Royal Polyglot* Bible: *"De arcano sermone... refers* to the symbolic sense of the Hebrew Scriptures... This arcane meaning is not as accessible to everyone as is the literal; it embraces a whole range of nuances... oneiric (oracular), mystical and secret or Kabbalistic senses... Arias Montano envisaged several levels of comprehension and he mentioned both arcane and even more arcane *(magis arcanum)* significances, reserving the latter, more secret and profound, for the events and types of the Old Testament which point to the person of Jesus or the mysteries of the New Testament." [65]

[65] Magne Saebo (ed.), *Hebrew Bible Old Testament: The History of Its Interpretation from the Renaissance to the Enlightenment* (2008), p. 244.

"Inquisitorial Renaissance Catholic Spain" was riddled with this type of corrupt occult tradition. Montano's teacher had been Fr. Cipriano de la Huerga (1509-1560), rector of the Cistercian College at Alcalá and Professor of Biblical studies: "Cipriano de la Huerga believed that there were secret traditions handed down from God to Moses on Sinai and which were subsequently passed on by oral tradition to an unbroken chain of chosen men..." [66]

[66] Ibid., p. 237.

Simple-minded New Age enthusiasts and “conservative and traditional Catholics” alike are in for a rude awakening: high level occult conspirators enjoyed immunity from the Spanish Inquisition because in many instances they were in charge of it. (Montano, for example, was the official papal expurgator of books in Spain).

Spirited conservative Catholic resistance to the publication of the *Royal Polyglot Bible* was mounted by Leon de Castro, Dean of the Faculty of Theology and Professor of Ancient Languages at the University of Salamanca, who declared that any Bibles compiled in conjunction with rabbinic advisors were a work of “Judaizing heresy.”

“It is... important to note that in spite of the declaration of the Council of Trent in favor of the Vulgate as the ‘authentic’ version of the Bible, the Church of Rome neither condemned these independent translations (such as the *Royal Polyglot)* out of hand nor tried to prevent its adherents from consulting them... They (the independent translations) succeeded in demonstrating the value of Jewish commentaries for a better understanding of the Old Testament... This, in theory, was the standpoint of the Roman Catholic Church during the second half of the sixteenth century, but in fact the violent opposition of Leon de Castro to the Antwerp (*Royal) Polyglot* would suggest that such broadmindedness towards versions other than the Vulgate was by no means general.” [67]

In a pattern that will repeat itself for centuries inside the Catholic Church, when courageous churchmen sought to repel rabbinic infiltration and the recondite ecumenical tradition it spawned, they were often overruled by forces at the top of the “obelisk.” In the case at hand, the warnings of the faithful Prof. De Castro were rejected by Spain’s Grand Inquisitor, as well as Pope Gregory XIII (under the malignant influence of the Spanish Jesuit Juan de Mariana). It is an irony of ecclesiastical history that the Antwerp *Royal Polyglot Bible* came to be renowned as the Counter-Reformation's answer to Protestant

---

[67] G. Lloyd Jones, *The Discovery of Hebrew in Tudor England: A Third Language* (Manchester University, 1983), pp. 52-53. Prof. G. Lloyd Jones wants us to believe that the rabbis, in the person of Saaida Gaon, through “scientific study of the Scriptures and of the Hebrew language... gave Rabbinic Judaism superiority in the special province of Karaism” (p. 3). There you have it, the rabbinic deceivers and Scripture twisters immersed in the traditions of Babylon and the Pharisees, have bested the *sola Scriptura* Karaites. How do we know this? By professorial proclamation: the *ipse dixit* of G. Lloyd Jones. Saaida Gaon (882-942 A.D.) specialized for purposes of polemics against the Christians and the Karaites (Judaics who rejected both the Talmud and the New Testament), in arguing from the *peshat,* or literal meaning of the Bible (even though the secret rabbinic teaching decrees that the literal meaning is the most inaccurate of all possible readings). Saadia is said to be the founder of Hebrew philology, producing a Hebrew dictionary and a Hebrew grammar.

Bible studies, *when it actually served to infuse rabbinic and neo-Platonic Kabbalistic ideas into Protestant England,* where it became a reference work for Anglican Old Testament exegetes in the reigns of the Protestant monarchs Elizabeth I and James I, and was an influence on the translation of the King James Bible of 1611.

The relentless stereotype of "Judaizing Protestants" that was seeded into the Catholic grassroots, particularly in the Right-wing, functions as a means of obscuring *the Judaizing Catholic precursor of Protestantism.* The Renaissance-Catholic responsibility for transmitting rabbinic ideas into Protestantism is seldom acknowledged by Catholics who often resort to monotonously parroting the "Judaizing Protestant" cliché.

In certain respects, Anglicanism was a project of the *Corpus Hermeticum* of the Catholic neo-Platonists of Florence and Rome. Protestant Hebrew translators such as Leo Jud (1482-1542) and Immanuel Tremellius (1510-1580) both of whom transmitted rabbinic glosses to Reformation linguists, were acting under the inspiration of their occult Catholic predecessors and contemporaries. The Cryptocracy has arranged it so Protestants alone are made to bear the stigma of "Judaizing," while few allude to "Judaizing Renaissance Catholicism."

Judaizing: Distinctions and Definitions

Konrad Pellican of Zurich was a Christian Hebrew scholar who picked the brains of rabbis and riffled through their books of Hebrew grammar, but eschewed their traditions and interpretations. His star pupil, Sebastian Münster, Professor of Hebrew at the University of Basle, turned his back on Pellican and succumbed to the pull of Talmudic lore, as did many non-Judaic Renaissance Hebraists. Richard Simon wrote that Münster "would have done better to have followed the method of Konrad Pellican, his Hebrew master, who was in the right in thinking we ought *only* to borrow the grammar from the rabbis, not the sense (of the text)."

This too was Martin Luther's position, that it was permissible to take the grammar from Judaics but not their interpretation of the meaning of the Hebrew scriptures. It was Luther's objective to publish Bibles in the vernacular based on the most accurate translation of the Hebrew. By 1519, Luther was seriously studying Hebrew and beginning to revive the Hebrew scholarship of medieval Catholic exegetes, largely free of rabbinic falsification. By 1530, he was fluent in Hebrew despite a modest disclaimer in his *Table Talk* concerning his struggles with Hebrew grammar and his reliance on Christian Hebraists for assistance.

During the twelve years he translated the Bible into German (1522-1534) Luther received assistance from a circle ol linguists who were Christians and not Judaizers: the Leipzig-based Hebraist Bernard Ziegler; Matthew Aurogallus, professor of Hebrew at the University of Wittenberg and a compiler of Hebrew dictionaries and grammars; Caspar Cruciger the Elder; the Hebrew prodigy Andreas Osiander, also of Wittenberg, and Johann Förster. In the case of Förster, Osiander and Aurogallus, they surpassed the most learned rabbis of their time. They laid the groundwork for what would become an early modern Lutheran heritage of Christian scholarship in Hebrew and Aramaic *defiantly independent of rabbinic tradition.*

Johann Förster's 1543 Hebrew dictionary carried a disclaimer on its title page explicitly denying any dependence on rabbinic commentaries: *"Dictionarium Hebraicum Novum, non ex Rabbinorum commentis."* In his preface, Förster warned that "Among Christians the rabbinic commentaries are controlling the work of translation and explanation." He decried the "feeblemindedness of those Christians who have embraced without discernment the commentaries of the Jews, in which there is no light, no knowledge of God and not even a proper understanding of Hebrew." According to Förster, rabbinic commentaries were riddled with deception, bringing into Christ's church "more obscurity and error than light and truth."

Luther's estimation of rabbinic Hebraism was more severe than even Förster's. Luther rejected and ridiculed the rabbinic exegesis of the Hebrew Scriptures. In *Lectures on the Book of Genesis,* he denounced the rabbinic traditions about the first book of the Bible. Luther said that the rabbis erred miserably in their exposition of the Old Testament because of their obsession with showing off their supposed grammatical and intellectual prowess. In their eagerness to defame Christ they unscrupulously twisted the text of the Bible and distorted its meaning. Luther's views on Judaism were nearly a verbatim transmission of the medieval Roman Catholic view. In his 1543 *Treatise on the Last Words of David,* Luther advised Christians to pay no attention to the grandiose claims of the rabbis to scholarship: "...the words in many a (Scripture) passage are incomprehensible to them. They are far from having one harmonious, perfect and flawless Hebrew Bible, even from the point of view of grammar, to say nothing of theology, where they are so very incompetent... We Christians have the meaning and import of the Bible because we have the New Testament, that is Jesus Christ."

Given a choice between the rabbi's interpretation of Scripture and that of St. Augustine, Luther thundered, "I would let the Jews with their interpretation and their letters go to the devil, and I would ascend into heaven with St. Augustine's interpretation, without their letters." For Luther, parsing the Old Testament was only possible when undertaken "in the direction of the New Testament, in opposition to the interpretation of the rabbis." Christians must be aware, said Luther, of the "usual habit of perverting the Scriptures to which the Jews everywhere adhere."

We are not endorsing Lutheran theology, its statist political theory, or its persecution of Anabaptists. Luther was culpable for sinful error, large and small, beginning with the fact that he disobeyed Christ's command to love one's enemies, as evinced by the disgusting imprecations he hurled at Catholics, Muslims, Judaics and Anabaptists. There was also his gullible and somewhat egotistical belief that his brand of Christianity would convert the "Jews" of his time in droves, when Catholicism was failing to do so. He admitted at the end of his life that this had been a chimera and that his mission to convert Judaics had been a nearly complete failure.

Compared with St. Vincent Ferrer (1350-1419), Luther is not in the same league. Since the days of the early Church, no Christian in the Latin West can compare with Vincent when it comes to converting Judaics. Almost none of St. Vincent's writings and sermons have been published and translated in modern editions. The two significant biographical studies in English have been allowed to go out of print for more than 55 years.

The *true record* of his life is neglected and obscured by the Catholic establishment, for a reason: Pope John Paul II repudiated St. Vincent Ferrer when he issued a blanket

condemnation, echoing the Second Vatican Council. Addressing the whole sweep of Catholic history, the pope defiantly attacked exposure of Judaism *by anyone.* By this enormity he could only mean that not even Church Fathers and canonized saints are exempted from his unprecedented papal condemnation, in the course of which he named the religion of Judaism which is the Jesus-denying religion of the Talmud, "intrinsic" to Catholicism:

"Once again, through myself, the Church, in the words of the well-known declaration *Nostra Aetate,* deplores the hatred, persecutions and displays of anti-Semitism directed against the Jews at any time and by anyone. I repeat, by anyone...

"The Jewish religion is not 'extrinsic' to us, but in a certain way is 'intrinsic' to our own religion. With Judaism therefore, we have a relationship which we do not have with any other religion. You are our dearly beloved brothers and, in a certain way, it could be said that you are our elder brothers...

“Notwithstanding the Church’s awareness of her own identity, it is not lawful to say that the Jews are ‘repudiated or cursed,’ as if this were taught or could be deduced from the Sacred Scriptures of the Old or the New Testament.” (Rome: Synagogue Discourse, April 13, 1986).

As we study the work of Pico, Reuchlin and the fifteenth and sixteenth century pontiffs in the following pages, we will be equipped to grasp the fact that John Paul’s bold elocution in the Roman Synagogue was the triumphant public endorsement of the theology of the occult Renaissance Church.

St. Vincent Ferrer’s heroic, twenty-year mission to the Judaics of Europe, wherein he reminded them of their religion’s black evil, of their desperate need to convert, that their elder brother was Satan, and that all who are spiritual heirs of the Pharisees are cursed, is now denounced by the Church of Rome. This denunciation is Hermetic-Kabbalistic to its core, but it took five hundred years for it to be *publicly* asserted by a pope.

In Luther’s case it should be observed that he had no intention early in his career to split from the Catholic Church. There are no signs of any such desire other than internal reform, especially of simony and usury. The powers that ruled Rome at the time goaded Luther into breaking away. This was

the mission of the conspirators who ran the pontificate of Pope Leo X. These operatives deliberately instigated Protestantism in Europe, as we will observe when we track the tangled web of perfidy surrounding the protection which the Church of Rome accorded to the celebrated Catholic-Kabbalist Reuchlin.[68]

[68] Luther, though opposed to the Kabbalah (he formally denounced it in his treatise, *Vom Schem Hamphoras und vom Geschlecht Christi*), supported the Catholic Reuchlin mainly out of spite — he accepted at face value the Cryptocracy’s cover story (in play even now), that Reuchlin was being “rigorously persecuted” by the Catholic hierarchy. The reverse was true: on almost every occasion in which a Dominican inquisitor attempted to expose Reuchlin in a church court, and sought Reuchlin’s condemnation as a heretic, it was the inquisitor who was stymied, harassed and libeled by the ecclesiastical mafia operating under Leo X.

The Church was surfeited with undercover Judaizers; this was the belief of the peasantry as expressed by William Langland in his classic medieval work, *Piers the Plowman.* St. Vincent Ferrer was born just after Langland died. Ferrer began to clean up the iniquity that the common folk had decried. If Luther had been another Ferrer, the world would be a very different place today, because Luther’s anti-rabbinic, Gutenberg-era printed tracts would have indelibly marked the Church. Instead, he was driven out, as many Catholics are driven out today. Luther then succumbed to the temptation to create a new church, in the course of which he published radical truths about rabbinic Judaism’s demonic incarnation of deception and verbal subterfuge, which he hammered home with a fearless candor. Until the ascendance of the religion of Holocaustianity in the 1970s, Luther’s defiant legacy of adherence to Jesus Christ’s side in His clash with the Pharisee schools of Shammai and Hillel in first century Palestine, ensured a vital tradition of centuries of conservative Lutheran skepticism toward Judaism in German-speaking nations and Scandinavia,[69] and in America as well, wherever conservative Lutherans settled. Luther revived the Christian truth that the Bible, from Genesis to Revelation, is the rightful inheritance *only* of the followers of Jesus Christ.

[Page 126 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

“Luther’s German Bible cannot be regarded as a primary channel of Jewish exegesis in the way that the versions of his three contemporaries, Pagninus, Münster and Leo Jud were. Although, as a vernacular Bible it ranks above these Latin translations, those using it would not often find rabbinic explanations of difficult words being preferred to the renderings of the Septuagint... Furthermore, his Biblical commentaries, as we have seen, were not calculated to encourage his fellow Christians to look for the elucidation of problematic passages in the works of the rabbis or to turn tu the local Jewish community for help with the text of the Old Testament. Yet throughout his career his attitude toward the Hebrew language was positive. He was obviously convinced that a thorough knowledge of it was an essential part of the training of (a Christian) ... In 1523 he told the Bohemian Brethren, ‘...learn Latin, Greek and Hebrew well... St. Augustine was obliged to confess, as he does in *Christian Instruction,* that a Christian teacher who is to expound the Scriptures must know Greek and Hebrew in addition to Latin.’ Luther was uncompromising in his insistence on the importance of Hebrew.” [70]

Catholic priests are free to refer to Martin Luther as “accursed,” and we have heard them do so with vehemence, but these same priests are forbidden to accost a rabbi by name, or pronounce any jeremiad against servile papal pilgrimages to synagogues. St. Vincent Ferrer entered many synagogues —in order to tell the assembled congregation in no uncertain terms that they were slaves to sin, delusion and the devil.

---

[69] Most notably by the University of Heidelberg’s Lutheran philologist, Prof. Johann Andreas Eisenmenger, in his magisterial *Entdecktes Judenthum* (two volumes, 1700), which represented the inaugural and nonpareil forensic demolition of rabbinic Judaism in western letters, unsurpassed even in our time (the volumes were seized and banned by the Holy Roman Emperor).

[70] G. Lloyd Jones, *The Discovery of Hebrew,* op.cit., pp. 64-65.

John Calvin and Judaizing

With regard to Jean Cauvin, the French lawyer known to history as “John Calvin,” some of his followers are numbered among the foremost witnesses against rabbinic perfidy in history. Among these the most illustrious is the 17th century English Puritan scholar William Prynne, a man of immense learning and the author of more than 200 books:

“Even in a century of intellectual omnivores he was acknowledged a prodigy... The journalist Marchamont Needham described him as ‘one of the greatest paper worms that ever crept into a library...” (Hugh Trevor-Roper).

Despite the ceaseless recitation of the myth that “Oliver Cromwell readmitted the Jews into England,” the fact is that Parliament rebuffed Cromwell’s *attempt* at readmitting them, largely due to the widespread circulation of a book by the Puritan Prynne, which he compiled expressly to support the ancient Catholic laws which forbade their presence in England:

“During the Protectorate, an address was presented on behalf of the Jews, soliciting the free exercise of their religion; a measure which Prynne opposed in his laborious tract, *Short Demurrer to the Jews Long Discontinued Remitter into England... the* Jews failed to obtain a legal establishment under Cromwell... their return occurred in the reign of Charles II.” [71]

[71] *The English Reports* Volume XXXVI, Chancery XVI (Edinburgh, 1904), p. 718).

“The indefatigable and resolute Mr. Prynne published a very zealous remonstrance against it (the readmission of the Judaics to England), the aim of which was to show that permitting the Jews to reside in England, according to the foregoing proposals (by Cromwell), was highly criminal, being the greatest affront offered to the Son of God that any Christian government could be guilty of.” [72]

[72] *The Parliamentary or Constitutional History of England* Vol. XX [London, 1757], pp. 476-477).

Calvin’s *An Answer to a Certain Jew’s Questions and Objections* affirms medieval teaching on Judaism and carnal Israel, although with none of Luther’s energy and sustained deconstruction. Calvin was theoretically and philosophically critical of rabbinic tradition in general. Calvin criticized Rabbi Isaac Abravanel for departing from the clear meaning of passages in Scripture. At one point, Calvin terms Abravanel, a “twister,” and a “trifler” brazenly “babbling about matters utterly beyond his knowledge.” Calvin frequently condemned rabbis for seeking “new and subtle interpretations” and being “actuated by pure malice.” Yet, a significant portion of Calvinists today, like contemporary Catholics, can be said to be in the camp of the rabbis or, at the very least, indifferent to the evil of the religion of Orthodox Judaism.

The Kabbalists inside the Catholic Church emphasized learning the Hebrew language, not for the better understanding of the Bible, but rather to pervert it for occult rites involving a specially reserved pronunciation of the word *Yahweh,* the Hebrew name for God, as part of the Hermetic belief that Hebrew is a "wonder-working" magical language. Use of the sacred name *Yahweh* was forbidden by the Mishnah, except by the high priest. (Pope Benedict XVI also ordered it suppressed during his reign.) Early English-vernacular Protestant and Catholic Bible translations adhere to this superstition.

There were two schools of Hebraism in Christendom: the original one, which mastered Hebrew as the patrimony of Christian Israel, and the Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Kabbalistic variety which learned it for use in magical ceremonies and for raising the prestige of the rabbis and their books. To the glee of the occultists, certain Christian opponents of Judaism equated Hebrew study with Judaizing. This foolish equation allowed the Neoplatonic-Hermeticists to mock their conservative opponents as illiterates and ignoramuses, and led to activists who campaigned against Judaizing within the Church, to be proud of their ignorance of Hebrew, thereby conceding to the rabbis exactly what the rabbis' claimed to be their exclusive property, the language of the Old Testament.

Certain individual Roman Catholic scholars put up a noble fight against Rome's Renaissance Kabbalism, but their obedience to Rome was used to silence and obstruct them. "In a Lenten sermon, Jean Catilinet, provincial superior of the Franciscans in Burgundy, accused him (Cornelius Agrippa, Johann Reuchlin's disciple), of being a Judaizing heretic who had introduced into Christian schools the criminal, condemned and prohibited art of Kabbalah. Despising the Fathers and Catholic doctors he had made it clear that he preferred the Jewish rabbis, and had bent sacred (Hebrew) letters to heretical arts and to the Talmud. Although Agrippa freely admitted that he did not disparage the Hebraic tradition and that he had frequent recourse to Talmudic works, he strenuously denied the charge of heresy; it was the ignorance of the Kabbalah among his opponents that led to such a monstrous accusation."[73]

[73] G. Lloyd Jones, p. 91.

Agrippa’s deceitful suggestion that the contents of the Kabbalah would not be offensive to Hebrew-literate Catholics is testimony to the crying need for Christians to have greater knowledge of the rabbinic texts, and not just a few fines of pornographic insults against Jesus and Mary contained in the Talmud of Babylon. The objective of our book *Judaism Discovered* was to provide an advanced study of the religion of the Talmud and Kabbalah. Imagine a future in which, in our Christian colleges and seminaries, the dark corners of the Mishnah, Gemara, Midrash and Zohar are as fully exposed as much as the errors of Karl Marx and Saul Alinsky.

The danger of rabbinic texts like the Kabbalah is more than just a generalized trend toward “Judaization.” Occult Hermeticists have viewed the old Catholic Mass as a magical rite and the priest as a type of magician. This was Agrippa’s thesis in *De occulta philosophia—enthusiasm* for what he claimed were the magical dimensions of highly ritualistic religion, where the emphasis is on objects and form. The New Age theosophist C.W. Leadbeater (1854-1934) honored the Catholic rites in his classic 1920 occult text, *The Science of the Sacraments.*

The papist alliance with occultists and reliance upon their texts has been the history of the Church of Rome since the Renaissance. This esoteric tradition created a precedent. If the Catholic martyr and saint, John Fisher, Bishop of Rochester, could make use of the rabbis to craft his polemical points against Luther, why not traditional Catholics today? How much more “traditional” can you get than St. John Fisher? It was this rabbinic epistemology that shaped the methodology of Karl Rahner, Yves Congar, Josef Ratzinger (Pope Benedict XVI) and other avant-garde theologians of the Left and the Right. The clandestine legacy of the Catholic hierarchy’s entanglement with the occult has inspired modernist conspirators to build on this centuries-old Neoplatonic and Hermetic precedent. This is their inner tradition.

[Page 130 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

In his 1525 rejoinder to Luther, *Defense of the Sacred Priesthood,* John Fisher, who was fluent in Hebrew, consulted rabbis to gain what he imagined would be a true comprehension of the Biblical texts related to his subject:

“In his *Defense of the Sacred Priesthood* he discusses at length the nature of Melchizedek’s sacrifice in Genesis 14:8 and quotes several rabbinic authorities in support of his explanation. He refers to Moses Ha-Darshan, an early 11th century French exegete and haggadist, to Pinchas ben Jair and Simeon ben Johai, [74] two second-century rabbis, to Rashi, Kimchi and the Targums as affirming that the sacrifice of the Messiah will be of the same substance as that of Melchizedek...”[75]

---

[74] “Simeon ben Johai” is Rabbi Shimon ben Yohai, reputed founder of the Kabbalah who decreed, “Even the best of the gentiles should all be killed.”

[75] G. Lloyd Jones, p. 96.

Some of the enthusiasm for Hebrew in Christian Europe and Britain was not rabbinic in orientation. It was inspired in part by the Christian intuition that Europeans were descended from the ten lost tribes of Israel, who had traveled north and settled on the continent in the Atlantic sea which they would one day transform into Europe.

The Christian practice of making laws for governing human society based on the Bible is exceedingly controversial in the Church. Christian philosophers have argued that Old Testament laws were a curse on Israel until such time as the Messiah would arrive. According to this thinking, in the post-Messianic age, *only* liberty must guide the Christian ship of state in the formulation of its laws. From this antinomianism arose the novel concept of prisons as places of punishing confinement, which Pennsylvania Quakers took one step further, inventing solitary confinement for an entire prison population, a practice which appalled Charles Dickens when he witnessed it on his tour of America, and which is in place at present at the Federal prison at Florence, Colorado, where prisoners are deliberately made to “rot.” [76]

[76] Cf. “Slow Rot at Supermax, *Los Angeles Times,* May 5, 2006.

The assumption that all Old Testament practices were accursed ones and that novelties spun from the minds of modern Christians are always more salubrious, overlooks the havoc that the mind of man can play, as in the wastrel and inhuman modern prison system, which would be strictly ilegal under Old Testament statute. It was in the interest of discovering what, among God’s old rovenant laws, should be preserved for the better ordering of human society, that the dream of the Hebrew Republic came to the fore in Savonarola’s Florence and the Puritan Commonwealth of New England. For Catholics, the latter two have been models of how not to govern, and in the case of New England specifically, a synonym for trivial, killjoy, blue laws and a fanaticism so preposterous that it outlawed the celebration of Christmas. Compared with legions of men stored in prison-warehouses for years, away from their wives and Camines, in what are in fact schools for crime and homosexuality, the “horror” of Sunday blue laws or a five shilling fine for keeping Christmas, as absurd as it was, would seem to pale in comparison.

In early 16th century Italy the papacy licensed the publication of the Talmud and other virulent Judaic polemical writings against Christianity. It is repeatedly stated in books and movies that the “antisemitic” popes “always hated and burned the Talmud”; therefore, Christians believe this lie. The mesmerists have seen to it that the “proper” beliefs should be induced and we believe properly. A movement comprised of hypnotics cannot wage a battle independent of the direction of the Cryptocracy, however much they cloak themselves in the trappings of religion.

The information we present on the popes and the Talmud and Kabbalah is not an indictment of the Catholic Church, the root of which is Jesus Christ; any more than an exposé of Judas indicts the Gospel. We are indicting those *betrayers of the Church* who periodically have held high office or, indeed, the highest office. Naive persons imagine that these betrayers occupied the Chair of Peter beginning in the 1960s. A share of the Vatican’s long-hidden Machiavellian tactics for the overthrow of the Gospel are being revealed in our time.

“The *Relatio post disceptationem* presented on the 13th of October, despite the rehashing it underwent, didn’t obtain the expected majority of two-thirds (of the vote at the synod on the family), on two crucial points: the admittance of the divorced and remarried to Communion and the opening up to homosexual couples, attesting 104 in favor, 74 not in favor on the first point, and 118 for, 62 against, on the second. In spite of the evident débâcle, Cardinal Reinhard Marx, Archbishop of Munich, one of the most passionate exponents on the ‘progressive’ wing, said he was satisfied, *since revolutionary processes are done in successive stages.* On some themes, he explained, *‘we took two steps forwards and then one backwards.”*[77]

Where did Cardinal Marx learn this clever tactic? In part from the record of the popes who derogated, in stages, God’s Law against profit on loans: first, from 1515 to 1830, and then with the two Codes of Canon Law promulgated in the twentieth century. There is a Roman proverb, *“Ma ciò che la dottrina non ammette viene ammesso dalla prassi, in attesa di essere sancito”* (“What doctrine does not admit is admitted in praxis, waiting for sanction”).

One of the basic tenets learned in Thomistic philosophy is *first principles:* one must not proceed from false premises, from the idea that the revolution began with Kant or Rousseau, or the Enlightenment, or the French Revolution of 1789. Actually, it started in the Garden of Eden with the serpent, 6000 years before Vatican II. Later, Jesus said, “Did I not choose you twelve and one of you hath a devil?”

[77] Roberto de Mattei, *Corrispondenza Romana,* October 22, 2014.

One-out-of-twelve was an enemy agent *in His very presence,* yet Catholics are incredulous when we proffer a higher statistic for the papacy (every pope from 1515 onward). As with usury, the occult infiltration of the Church did not begin with the Enlightenment, much less with "the Council." It commenced in the late 1400s with its Neoplatonism and Hermeticism. In an important address to the Brussels *Société de philosopie* in 1958, Francois Masai argued that the *'caractére libertine, incrédule, anti-chrétien du platonisme byzantin'* was due not only to historical contingencies, but to the very principles of Platonic philosophy..." [78]

[78] Niketas Siniossoglou, op. cit., p. 53.

The "traditional" Catholic fairy-tale in sum: 1. They cannot give their allegiance to the Second Vatican Council because it represents a radical departure from the unbroken, unchanging teaching and doctrine of the Church from the time of Christ.

2. They trace the seeds of subversion in the Church to the eighteenth century, to Rousseau in France and Kant in Prussia. 3. They teach that the modern departure from truth has its roots in the Reformation and Enlightenment, and the overthrow of the Bourbon dynasty in the French Revolution.

We reply: Kant is a symptom. Furthermore, he is not wholly favored by the Cryptocracy, however much his radical epistemology seems to synchronize with modern theories of perception concerning dogma. Kant's philosophy cuts both ways: it not only opened the Church to scrutiny, it represented a substantial setback to the prestige of Orthodox Judaism among the intelligentsia. Catholic Neoplatonism burnished the reputation of Judaism among the intellectuals of the West. How can Kant be worse than the Catholic-Kabbalists and how is it that they escape the main burden of culpability among "conservative" and "traditional" Catholics?

Kant was contra-Judaism. We have never known of any philosophy that was contra-Judaism in the essence of its core precepts that was embraced for any significant length of time by the Cryptocracy. A Kantian would never have been allowed to teach at the Catholic Society of St. Pius X Winona, Minnesota seminary. A Neoplatonic-Hermeticist was, however, given the right to lecture at the seminary and lead seminarians un field trips to historic sites in the U.S. where he "explained" to them the "poisonous roots" of the Founding Fathers' anti-monarchial republican revolt. His writing was published by the Society's Angelus Press. This "traditional Catholic" occultist was made a papal knight by Pope John Paul II. He continues to direct "traditional Catholics" through his writing, speeches and interviews.

The Zionist historian Jonathan M. Hess explains what is objectionable to Zionists in the philosophy of Kant:

"Kant's *Religion within the Limits of Reason Alone*... dedicated an inordinate amount of time and energy denigrating Judaism and denying that it had any substantive link to the pure religion of reason introduced by Jesus... Kant's *Religion within the Limits of Reason Alone*... presented Judaism as a 'collection of mere statutory laws' that did not deserve to be called a religion, and that was incompatible with the Kantian ideal of moral autonomy. As a worldly political commonwealth that 'excluded from its communion the entire human race,' and 'which showed enmity toward all other people

and which, therefore, evoked the enmity of all,' Judaism for Kant was an historical faith utterly devoid of ethical impulse and virtually 'irreconcilable with humanity itself.' Jesus, in contrast, figures in *Religion within the Limits of Reason Alone* as... the 'living archetype of the moral disposition in all its purity..." [79]

[79] *Germans, Jews and the Claims of Modernity* (2002), pp. 140-144; 148.

What Kant sought to achieve in the dawn of the modern age was an end to Judaism's immunity from criticism. It is true that Kant's imperative consisted of universal criticism of all ideologies. Yet Kant was one of the few modern philosophers of integrity for this reason: he did not exclude Judaism from his withering critique of institutionalized dogma. Why make an equal opportunity skeptic like Kant the poster boy for the modern devaluation of truth, while giving a pass to Ficino, Mirandola, Reuchlin and the Renaissance popes? Kant did nol peddle deceit. He advocated the skepticism his conscience demanded of him.

At this juncture questions are bound to arise: if the papacy was part of the Cryptocracy from the late fifteenth century onward, why did the conspirators trouble to found and maintain Freemasonry, with its aim of destroying tiara and crown? Why did the Freemason Giuseppe Garibaldi destroy the papal state if the pope was a fellow-traveler?

This is like asking, why bother to start General Motors with its aim of building automobiles when there is already a Ford Motor Company that builds automobiles? Or, why did the Gambino crime family make war on the Colombo crime family? Have we not the wit to comprehend that institutions can have similar goals and serve the same devil, and still be vicious rivals, savagely competing for money, power and the fealty of the people? Why did the troops of Holy Roman Emperor Charles V nearly destroy Rome in 1527? Why did Pope Innocent XI support the Protestant army of Prince William of Orange?

When that army defeated Irish and French Catholir troops at the Battle of the Boyne, why did Innocent's successor,

Alexander VIII, order a *Te Deum* sung in honor of the Protestant victory? [80]

[80] Catholic Stuart King James II who had fled England for Ireland, was a creature (like his late brother, the English King Charles II), of the king of France, which made James despised in his native land, including among English Catholics, as well as at the court of Pope Innocent XI, who was an enemy of the Gallicanist French King Louis XIV, the butcher of the Huguenots. The Battle of the Boyne was a defeat for French interests and for James, who proceeded to flee Ireland. For a pioneering account of the calamitous French and French-Jesuit influence on James II, and revisionist data on Catholic-Protestant relations in England, including Innocent XI's amity toward King William of Orange, cf. "Gallicanism, Innocent XI and Catholic Opposition," in *Shaping the Stuart World, 1603-1714.* [Some researchers have suggested that the Protestant William of Orange was financed by the Catholic usury banking house of Odescalchi, operated by Pope Innocent XI's family. Cf. "The Pope and the Sun King," *The Scotsman,* September 5, 2009].

Rome represents one wing of an enormous executive. Rivalry with the Anglo-Saxons was intense before the Reformation, and even prior to the Cryptocracy gaining a hold over the Vatican. Intense rivalry between the Catholic monarchs of France and Spain was episodic and sometimes lethal. Secret alliances with Freemasons, Protestants and non-Christian bankers were made, broken and re-constituted. This is not the history of the Boy Scouts, yet Catholics suspend their suspicions of the papacy and are as jejune as boy scouts when they encounter the dealings of the popes prior to the modern era.

Why did the pope have Savonarola executed? Though he made mistakes, Savonarola was, in general, part of the true Catholic resistance to the Church of Rome's Cryptocracy, in this case as it existed in Florence. Years after Savonarola was burned, Clement VII used his own army to put Florence under siege, as part of a mopping up operation to pacify the troublesome population who were in revolt against their Neoplatonic masters a quarter-century after Savonarola's death. Where did Clement VII acquire the gold to undertake the costly expense which the siege of Florence entailed? The source of the funds was supposed to be disclosed in the records

of the papal camera. The record-keeping was circumvented, however. *Who were Clement's bankers?* [81]

[81] "Clement VII (1523-34), whom Joseph ben David Yehaf, in his commentary on the *Five Megillot* (p. 41b, Bologna, 1538), calls 'the favorer of Israel,' displayed particular interest in the internal affairs of the Jewish community, which had been divided into

contending parties. Within the community there existed no authority that could settle these quarrels, and an invitation to go to Rome was therefore issued to Daniel ben Isaac of Pisa, who was highly esteemed by the pope... When David Reubeni and his follower Solomon Molko came to Rome, Clement VII not only offered them protection, but provided them with letters of recommendation. While in Rome Reubeni lived in the houses of Cardinal Ægidius (Giles of Viterbo), R. Joseph Ashkenazi and R. Raphael, Joseph Zarfati, the physician Moses Abudarham, and Isaac Abudarham." Cf. Joseph Jacobs and Schulim Ochser, "The Community Organized," in the *Jewish Encyclopedia* (1906), topic, "Rome." http://jewishencyclopedia.com/articles/12816-rome

Freemasonic mobs and armies were (and are) part of the Hegelian dialectic, although since this predates Hegel we may rightly call it the dialectic of the Zohar. The Masons were killing the Catholics in the name of being rid of "priestcraft," while in the masonic Lodge they dubbed each other "High Priest", "Grand Hierophant" and other bombastic, priestly titles. The Freemasons represented the rabbinic pillar of *chesed* — literally, mercy — but more accurately, an outward show of hippie-type liberation from "dogma," extending back to Rabelais' Abbey of Theleme, and revived in Sir Francis Dashwood's "Hellfire Club." The Masons pretended that they wanted Freedom of speech for the nations, and for every lodge brother to live in freedom. But in fact, theirs was a very circumscribed *church,* even more strict than that of their papist rivals.

We don't see evidence that Masonry actually wanted to destroy the Tiara; that was a cover story to deflect attention from the covert objective—to *capture it*—and with each successive capture, sow more poison by means of the neo-Catholic sin against the First Commandment, *papalolatry,* so that even a pope like Pope "Saint" Pius X cooperated with the usury-Money Power, and failed miserably, and indeed with gross negligence, to extirpate these toxins from the bowels of the papal edifice and curial office when he had the authority to do so.

The history of the Church of Rome in the age of the Renaissance is akin to Tim Finnegan's legendary ladder—one false step after another. It is an irony that both Ultramontane

Catholics and flaming New Age hippies are loath to abandon their mutually cherished belief that Rome in any era other than the modern one, was the implacable enemy of occult forces.

Any historian expecting to find a document signed by one or more popes of the Renaissance stating, "I am a Satanist," will be disappointed. There are true believers who will not accept the occult nature of the Church of Rome unless we produce such a document. The Renaissance and post-Renaissance papacy did not operate with the guileless candor of Jesus Christ. It shaded its true nature with a hundred different forms of camouflage and misdirection. It is easy to become lost in the thicket of these illusions.

Chapter III

The Serpent in the Garden of the Quattrocento

Much of what we are about to recount concerning the occult incubator that was the Catholic republic of Florence would not have occurred to the extent that it did, had it not been for the Medici family, whose members are today known mainly as patrons of fabulous Renaissance art works, and progenitors of two pontiffs, Giovanni di Lorenzo de' Medici (Leo X), and Giulio di Giuliano de' Medici (Clement VII). While Medici diabolism and usury are comparatively little known, their criminal politics are difficult to conceal.

"After the banishment of the main representatives of the Albizzi faction in 1434, Cosimo de' Medici worked aggressively to consolidate his power. By directly controlling the officials in charge of voting procedures (the *accoppiatori),* he made sure that only his supporters were appointed to the key positions the city government... In addition, Cosimo and his descendants further strengthened their rule by creating special executive commissions *(balíe)* whenever their power seemed to be at risk. The *balíe* passed laws and made crucial decisions regarding the fiscal system, the commune's foreign politics, and the administration of the law. The establishment of new councils controlled by members of the ruling party diminished the republican character of the Florentine government and intensified discontent among the opponents of the Medici. Modern scholars have rightly described the Council of Seventy as a sort of life senate. It was created by Lorenzo the Magnificent (Cosimo's grandson) in 1480 and held Florentine politics in check until Piero de' Medici's fall in 1494. But this pattern of Mediciean interference in the government of Florence helps explain why in his dialogue *On Liberty,* composed shortly after the Pazzi's attempt to overthrow the Medici, Alamanno Rinuccini commends the conspiracy as a glorious act. He believed that the conspirators deserved the highest praise, for they had tried to restore the citizens' liberty, which Lorenzo, 'the tyrant of Florence,' had usurped.

"...Self-promoting intellectuals in the Medici court had celebrated Lorenzo's government as the culmination of early quattrocento humanist civic ideals; yet Florentines perceived that behind the republican facade held up by official propaganda, their liberty had been severely restricted by the Medicean regime. It need not surprise us that within a city disappointed by the betrayal of long-shared ideals, Savonarola's movement met with enormous success. During the last decade of the quattrocento, many citizens followed Savonarola's call not only in response to its religious appeal, but also in the hope of seeing their political aspirations as a free city realized at last." [1]

[1] Stefano Ugo Baldassarri and Arielle Saiber, "Introduction," in *Images of Quattrocento Florence,* (Yale University, 2000), pp. xxvi-xxvii.

Magic, paganism and the proto-modernist pseudo-Christian religion of syncretism did not simply arise out of nowhere and manifest overnight during the Catholic Renaissance. It had been a seed awaiting germination, even in the thirteenth rentury of the Catalan Ramon Lull (now deemed "Blessed" by the Vatican and regarded as a figure of wisdom by "traditional" and conservative Catholics), who was a would-be germinator. From Lull the virus moved to the University of Padua in the fifteenth century, where the "rigid" Aristotelian tradition was challenged by humanists. In the years 1417-1423, Nicholas of Cusa rejected scholasticism and took up Lull's ideas in Padua, where he "encountered Lull's new vision of human dignity." By 1430, Cusa was germinating the alien "New Philosophy" under the pious cloak of proving the doctrine of the Trinity. In his treatise, *De Trinitate,* St. Augustine had asserted that the Holy Trinity had left its mark on every part of creation. Augustinian Trinitarianism was exploited by occult-Catholics to provide cover for their magic and paganism: it was "of great importance to the Platonic theology of the Renaissance because it sanctioned the peculiar zeal with which Ficino, Pico della Mirandola and other humanists searched for rudimentary trinities among the pagans... with special reference to the foreknowledge of the Trinity supposedly shown by Orpheus, Plato and Zoroaster... Ficino... fully exercised the gentle art of piloting these thoughts into a Christian haven... Strange to say, this foible... was shared by so intransigent a Dominican as St. Antoninus of Florence, who not only accepted the doctrine of the 'vestiges of the Trinity' in its theological aspects... but went out of his way to quote pagan witnesses, in *testimonia Trinitatis in doctrinis ethnicorum,* among them Hermem Trismegistus, the Sibyls and Plato..." [2]

[2] Edgar Wind, *Pagan Mysteries in the Renaissance* (1968), p. 241-243.

Almost always these syncretic bridges to the pagan realm were "piloted into a Christian haven" with a great show of Catholic rhetoric and ostentatious declarations of devout faith in Jesus and His Church. There was no limit to the far-fetched fantasies the Neoplatonists would mount so as to convince the Catholic world that pagan magicians and diabolic beings of antiquity were heralds of Christian truth. “As a Christian Platonist, Cusanus (Nicholas of Cusa) was not frightened by polymorphic views of the deity; he had learned from Proclus to accept them as preparatory stages of initiation... In their enthusiasm for mystical triads, Renaissance Platonists accepted Iamblichus’s view, *De vita pythagorica* xxviii, that the tripod of Apollo was a trinitarian symbol... that (the goddess Diana) shared in the same mystery seemed indicated by her name Trivia, and by the ‘three faces’ attributed to her in *Aeneid IV...*

“The *Ovide Moralisé*[3] blandly called her a trinitarian goddess, and she still appeared as such, with the inscription *Theologia,* on the Tomb of (Pope) Sixtus IV, looking up toward the Christian heaven where three heads are surrounded by-sun rays. As pagan goddess of the moon she foreshadows the triple glory of the Christian sun.”[4]

[3] The *“Ovide Moralisé* (“Moralized Ovid”) is perhaps the most important work of the later French Middle Ages... written by an anonymous Franciscan. The *Ovide Moralisé* played a pivotal role in transmitting descriptions of the pagan gods, of mythological figures like Orpheus... and over 60,000 lines of philosophical and theological commentary to future authors and artists of the Western tradition.” https://moralizingovid.wordpress.com/

[4] Wind, op. cit., pp. 248-249; 251.

In “the light of Neoplatonism, the humanists discovered in mythology something other and much greater than a concealed morality: they discovered religious teaching—the Christian doctrine itself... Against this background, it was inevitable that, the same idea which declining paganism had evolved should occur to the humanists—namely, that all religions have the same worth, and that under their varied forms, however puerile and monstrous in seeming, is hidden a common truth. Marsilio Ficino leans toward a sort of universal theism, with Platonism as its gospel.”[5]

[5] Seznec, op. cit., p. 98.

“In the earliest of his works —a Christmas sermon preached at Coblenz in 1430—Nicholas (of Cusa) brought together the most diverse types of material... sources which presage the beginning of a new epoch: the Bible and the Talmud, the *Sibylline Oracles* and *Hermetica... The* change was the consequence both of Nicholas’ ever-deepening commitment to the... idea of man’s dignity and of the ever-increasing range of sources on which he drew.

During the period of his engagement at the Council of Basle (1432-1437), he had broadened immensely his knowledge of the philosophical traditions of late antiquity... He learned the differences between the Platonic tradition and the 'Aristotelian sect' which was entrenched in many universities.

"Whereas in his earliest sermons he had drawn on Macrobius for Platonic opinions, he now began to make use of Plato himself—especially the *Timaeus*—of Philo, Proclus, Pseudo-Dionysius... Nicolas'... synthesis represents a high-water mark in the evolution of the new understanding of reality which appeared in Western Europe... With respect to the creator, man is a 'human god' or a 'second god' *(De coniecturis* 2:14)... This new tradition, although forced for a time underground by medieval Aristotelianism... found representatives..." [6]

[6] Charles H. Lohr, "Metaphysics," in *The Cambridge History of Renaissance Philosophy* (1992), pp. 548, 550, 553 & 556.

This "new understanding of reality," which was destined to become the motif of the much-celebrated Church-sponsored "Renaissance Art epoch," represents a radical departure from the ancient Biblical-Christian understanding of human beings as damaged by original sin and ineluctably subordinate to their Creator. The revolutionary anthropomorphic teleology of the Catholic Renaissance gave rise to a counter-reaction from Martin Luther and John Calvin, who demanded a return to fidelity to the hierarchical Biblical ordering of God and man, and the consciousness of man's fundamental *deformitas naturae* upon which the true Church had been founded.

[Page 142 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

"Luther's concept of man was in sharp contrast to this exalted picture of human potentiality, for he centered his view on the fall... Luther... insisted that human nature was wholly corrupted by original sin... Man's high opinion of himself, according to Calvin, had to be deflated, and he had to be convinced of his own corruption and debility." [7]

[7] Jill Kraye, "Moral Philosophy," in *The Cambridge History of Renaissance Philosophy* (1992), p. 314. In this particular case concerning "the depravity of post-lapsarian man," the reformers were restoring the original theology of the Catholic Church prior to the rise of the occult Church of Rome.

This is not to deny the *imago Dei,* the image of God belonging to our first parents at their creation, and intrinsic to it *(imago Dei intrinseca).* This is acknowledged. As a result of the Original Sin of Adam and Eve however, there was henceforth an alteration of the *forma substantialis* of humanity toward an acquired *inclinatio ad malum acquisita* (inclination to do evil). This too must be acknowledged. The Soviet, Communist and Hitlerian National Socialist utopian schemas, like all utopian arrangements both religious and secular from the early modern era onward, are essentially rooted in the Renaissance-Kabbalistic theology of the perfectibility of man who, it is insinuated, is like unto God.

“This discovery authorizes the utopian to project man’s actual capacities into a hypothetical future and to describe the biological and historical processes at the end of which a different man— or, rather mankind—will emerge in full possession of the desired attributes. Instead of refining the idea of God, as the religious utopian claims he does, it would be more accurate to say that the above schematized process naturally oversimplifies it and makes it grossly anthropomorphic... Such a new science is supposed to explore the conditions of emergence of man-become-God.”[8]

[8] Thomas Molnar, *Utopia: The Perennial Heresy,* p. 112. Prof. Molnar was a conservative Catholic philosopher.

The Renaissance theology is the mother of the modernist heresy, not only in terms of syncretism but in modernism’s utopian futurism and faith in inevitability of human progress. “This Renaissance Platonist vision stressed man’s position as a terrestrial god and combined it with a transformed Gnosticism

holding that by the powers of the intellect man will create an earthly paradise.” [9]

[9] Clark Trinkaus, *The Sixteenth Century Journal* (no. 4, 1990), p. 709.

Man’s dignity and unalienable rights (among them equality before the law), derive from his pre-lapsarian creation, which became congenitally depraved after the Fall and which finds conditional restoration by the grace of Christ in the covenant between believer and Redeemer. We say conditional because this sanctification is dependent on continuing faith in Jesus. “If you are an unbeliever when you die, then Christ did not die for you.” (St. Ambrose).

Plethon’s Illuminati

As we excavate the next step in the progression of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Kabbalistic conspiracy within the Church we discover that the ideas of Cusa and his personal colleague Georgios Gemistos (see below), coincide with the rise of secret societies inside the Church. Chief among them in terms of imposing a curtain of secrecy, was the Roman Curia. The Vatican bureaucracy as we know it was extensively developed and enlarged in this time period, and it was at the Council in Ferrara and Florence 1438-1439, that an itinerant Byzantine Neoplatonist, Georgios Gemistos, who was taught by a Judaic “intermediary”—i.e. his handler, “Elissaios, a Jew of Zororastrian background and polytheist inclinations”— commenced his campaign in the West against Aristotle and orthodox Catholicism.

Gemistos (ca. 1360-1452), was called by his cognomen, “Plethon” (sometimes spelled “Pletho”). His lectures in 1439 were published under the title, *On the Differences between Plato and Aristotle (De Differentiis).* Some of these addresses, a milestone in the overthrow of Aristotle and Aquinas, were sponsored by Cardinal Giuliano Cesarini the Elder and hosted at the latter’s palace, in the presence of Cosimo de’ Medici. Here was the acceleration of the theological and cultural transmission of Neoplatonic paganism into the leading circles of the Catholic Church in Florence.[10]

[10] Cf. Ficino’s preface to his 1492 translation of Plotinus Neri; as well as the research of Johannes Irmscher (1994).

In these addresses, Plethon held that there was a profound link between the Chaldeans and the Persian Magi. “The call for a new reading of Plato and the attack on Aristotle in the *Differences* initiated a lively and long-standing debate regarding the relation between Plato’s and Aristotle’s philosophy that has been seen as announcing the end of the medieval theologico-philosophical epoch and the rise of a new way to do philosophy.” [11]

[11] Niketas Siniossoglou, *Radical Platonism in Byzantium* (2011), p. 6.

Plethon helped to dissolve the traditional theology of the Catholic Church and initiate the rise of paganism in Catholir habiliments; first as a substratum and later as the command ideology of the Renaissance and post-Renaissance papacy.

Antedating the ascendance of what came to be known as the Florentine Platonic Academy, the Eastern Church was dealing with the phenomenon of Byzantine humanism manifestad within the Neoplatonic-Hellenist conspiracy as early as the ninth century, emanating from the School of Philosophy of Magnaura, headed by “John the Grammarian” and “Leon the Mathematician,” circa 855 A.D. Leon was the author of a cunning work which foreshadowed the *modus operandi* of the “pious” Neoplatonist popes and prelates of the Renaissance Leon’s book, the *Thousand Line Theology (Chiliostichos theologia),* seemingly denounced Hellenism and paganism. On closer examination however, we discover the Neoplaton mysticism of Pseudo-Dionysius (“Denys”) the Areopagite Orthodox Christian dogma on the Original Sin of Adam and Eve and Christ’s incarnation were derogated by Leon. He hinted that salvation is found outside the Church by means “deciphering the secret language of God.” Leon’s followers included, in the fourteenth century, Petrarch’s teacher, the Pythagorean monk Barlaam of Calabria, and in the fifteenth century, Plethon.

Another slick “conservative Christian” who had promoted occult Neoplatonism under a veil of anti-occult polemics, was the medieval Eastern Orthodox monk Michael Psellos (1018-1078), author of the *Chronographia,* and compiler of the *Magic Oracles of the Magi,* which he renamed the *Chaldean Chronicles.* Psellos added a spurious Christian gloss to its Pythagorean, Zoroasterian and Neoplatonic contents and these were embraced by Plethon nearly three centuries later; inspiring him to circulate the doctrine at the Council Florence, as an affirmation of gnostic beliefs “mistakenly” rejected by the early Church. Plethon suffered no repression whatsoever from papal Rome as a result of his bold, public, pagan-occult evangelism.

Niketas Siniossoglou, in his notable book, *Radical Platonism in Byzantium,* elucidates the camouflage by which Psellos, by “explicitly condemning Hellenism in the form of occult divinatory practices, allowed Hellenism to slip in by the back door in the form of speculative philosophical theology,” [12] creating a foothold for the occult philosophy within the Catholic Church, which was the objective of his proselytizing mission.

We know we are confronting the principles of diabolic hermeneutics when these tools of doubletalk and concealment are employed. Four hundred years after Plethon, two of Pope Leo XIII’s most renowned encyclicals were promulgated with similar shrewd misdirection: *Humanum Genus* and *Rerum Novarum.* Both are held aloft by supposed “conservative” and “traditional” Catholics as superb examples of the exposition of unalloyed dogmatic certainty and militant rebuke of evil. Look closer however, and we catch sight of the spirit of Michael Psellos hovering over *Humanum Genus,* the pope’s statement on the occult and Freemasonry which scrupulously avoids the *very foundation* of the Freemasonic plague, *Kabbalistic* Judaism. By means of this staggering omission, for generations millions of Catholics have been misdirected away from knowledge of the true root of the masonic order.

Furthermore, Leo XIII’s encyclical on social justice and the rights of workers to be free of oppression, *Rerum Novarum,* omits any restoration—or

[12] Because “Platonism is made the measure for interpreting Christian doctrine.” Siniossoglou, op. cit., pp. 77 and 109. It is highly instructive to read Siniossoglou’s entire section on the smokescreen mounted by Psellos (pp. 71-85). Siniossoglou affords his readers an education in how outward-appearing advocates of conservative Christian orthodoxy can be the opposite o what they appear. He explains well the intricate mechanism of their doublespeak, which has considerable relevance to Renaissance and pos-Renaissance papal documents.

even a suggestion of a groundwork for a reinstatement of a restoration—of the Church's inmutable ban on taking profits from loans. It is upon usury that the backs of the workers are broken and the Money Power made ruler over Church and State. The alibi for this development of the doctrine on money stems from that other principle of Neoplatonism, situation ethics: that which was beneficial in the past may be harmful in the present.[13]

[13] Siniossoglou, p. 83.

Out of the doublespeak in Florence supported by the wealth and political authority of Cosimo de' Medici, came the movement which would convince Renaissance Rome that Neoplatonic-Kabbalistic-Hermeticism was a benefit to the Church and a divinely-ordained development of ecclesiastical doctrine, while reassuring the Catholic people, parish priests and laity, that the Church continued to be an ultra-inquisitorial bastion of vigilance against paganism and heresy, a legend widely accepted even in our twenty-first century.

Plethon founded a pagan brotherhood and his principal text, *Nomoi,* was a blueprint for a pagan utopia. [14]

[14] Cf. Francois Masai, *Plethon et le Platonisme de Mistra* (1956).

His specific model for realizing this dream was infiltration by Plethon's secret society of initiates, of which the Greek Catholic Cardinal Basilios Bessarion was a member.[15]

[15] Masai, pp. 300-314: Plethon's secret society had first formed in Mistra, in southern Greece.

Plethon's "philosophical-religious brotherhood" anticipated "European secret orders such as the Illuminati." [16]

[16] Masai, p. 300; Igor P. Medvedev, *Neue philosophische Ansätze im späten Byanz* (1981), pp. 547-548.

Plethon named his camarilla *"Phratria,"* after the old hereditary brotherhood that had practiced the sorcerous "Attic arts" associated with Attica, the birthplace of the Eleusinian mysteries in Greece, where the festival of the *Phratria* had been known as the *Apaturia.* It took place yearly, over a seventy-two-hour period, in the autumn, marked by sacrifices to the gods, mostly animal, but on rare occasions, human beings were ritually sacrificed by the *Phratrians.* Plethon's group had chapters in Italy as well as Greece. He wrote his Neoplatonic, Zoroasterian *Book of Laws* exclusively for his revival of this brotherhood.

A conservative Catholic truly deserving of the name, George of Trebizond, was present in Cardinal Cesarini's palace for a lecture by Plethon, in the course of which he put a question to the Greek magus. Trebizond recounted his confrontation with Plethon in his book, *Comparatio philosophorum Platonis et Aristotelis:* "I myself heard him (Plethon) at Florence asserting that in a few more years the whole world would accept the same religion with one mind, one intelligence, one teaching.

"And when I asked him, 'Christ's or Muhammad's?', he said: 'Neither. But it will not differ much from paganism.'" [17]

[17] George of Trebizond, *Comparatio Platonis et Aristotelis,* folio V63.

Trebizond was outraged by Plethon's brazen response and by the fact that he was free to offer it under the roof of the cardinal and the protection of the Medici. [18]

[18] Later, long after the horse was out of the barn, for public consumption Rome had some of Plethon's books burned. This pacified conservatives, even as Plethon's ideas continued to be adapted and espoused by the Catholic hierarchy.

Trebizond did his best to warn of the "devastating effect that the Platonic contagion... would have on 'religion and politics,' as a 'great apocalyptic drama' unfolded a real 'neopagan conspiracy." [19]

[19] Patrick Nold and Alison Frazier, "Introduction," in *Essays in Renaissance Thought and Letters* (2015), p. xxxiii.

Then as now however, Catholic conservatives were obstructed and suppressed by liberal prelates. Trebizond became a victim of an early form of selective, though de facto, censorship, and he was denounced by Plethon's disciple, Cardinal Bessarion, in the latter's book, *Calumniatorem Platonis* (1469). Bessarion was at the head of a large network of influential members of the ecclesiastical elite. They facilitated the wide dissemination of *Calumniatorem Platonis,* and did all they could to limit the circulation of Trebizond's book:

"Bessarion's famous treatise, a reply to his adversary George of Trebizond's *Comparatio philosophorum Platonis et Aristotelis,* became one of the most important texts of the Renaissance. It had been written in Greek in the late 1450s and the 1469 first edition was based on Perotti's rephrasing of Bessarion's own translation into Latin, with substantial additions by other protégés of Bessarion's. The first Aldine edition (based on a copy of the 1469 edition with emendations by a member of Bessarion's household), was published in 1503... Despite George of Trebizond's superior Latinity and force of argument, Bessarion's treatise was widely distributed and became well-known; George's treatise was only

published once, in 1523, in a garbled edition caused by the earlier mis-binding of the manuscript exemplar." [20]

[20] Cf. J. Monfasani, "A tale of two books: Bessarion's *In Calumniatorem Platonis* and George of Trebizond's *Comparatio Philosophorum Platonis et Aristotelis*," in *Renaissance Studies 22,* pp. 1-15. Also cf. Sotheby's auction catalog: http://www.sothebys.com/en/auctions/2008/continental-and-russian-books-and-manuscripts-including-science-and-medicine-l08409.html

Trebizond, defender of the Catholic theology of all time, was opposed by Pope Nicholas V, who had him dismissed from his position in the Vatican bureaucracy. "He was made secretary to Nicholas V, but lost the favor of the pope by his fierce advocacy of Aristotle against Bessarion, Pletho, and other learned Greeks." [21]

[21] "George of Trebizond" in *The Cyclopedia of Biblical, Theological, and Ecclesiastical Literature* (1880).

Trebizond was, however, championed by conservative elements in the leadership of the Greek Orthodox Church, including no less a figure than Georgios-Gennadios Scholarios, the future patriarch of Constantinople, who had written a polemic, *Against Plethon.*[22]

[22] Cf. M.H Blanchet, *Georges-Gennadios Scholarios* [Vers 1400-Vers 1472]: *Un Intellectuel Orthodoxe Face a la Disparition de L'Empire Byzantin* (2008).

Scholarios was no Orthodox bigot or rustic. He was a sophisticated theologian with a life-long admiration for St. Thomas Aquinas, the Roman Catholic theologian who wrote after the schism between the Latin and Greek churches. "There has been a tendency to describe the clash between Scholarios and Plethon as a conflict between reactionary theocrat and a visionary reformer, but a serious examination of their work reveals that Scholarios was capable of foresight and pastoral sensitivity... while Plethon was known to advocate ideological repression far greater than any he himself ever suffered, as in his suggestion that all dissenters...

'found teaching against our doctrine shall be burned alive." [23]

[23] Christopher Livanos, "The Conflict Between Scholarios and Plethon," in *Modern Greek Literature: Critical Essays* (Routledge, 2003), p. 25. Plethon's murderous, would-be dictatorship screened by a facade of enlightened liberalism, is the pattern of the western secret societies, from the Medici to the Masons. For example, those who swallow the masonic propaganda that "freedom of speech for all citizens of the

> Republic," is a right sincerely promulgated by Freemasonry, do not know its real history, wherein David C. Miller's anti-masonic printing plant was burned by Freemasons in Batavia, New York (cf. Thurlow Weed and Harriet A. Weed, *Autobiography of Thurlow Weed* [1884], pp. 218-219). Eighteen years afterward, in 1844, the *Nauvoo Expositor,* an Illinois newspaper opposing masonic leader Joseph Smith, founder of the Mormons, was destroyed by his order (cf. Hoffman, "Masonic America," in *Revisionist History,* June-July, 2014, p. 5). Masonic "freedom of speech" is propounded in a nation to obtain that right for the initiates of the Lodge, and not necessarily for the mass of humanity, the non-masonic "cowans," from whom any and all rights may be withdrawn at will by the pyramid-and-obelisk men. This is the true essence of that "Abbey of Thelema" which is the template of the secret societies that are derived from the Neoplatonic-Hermetic fish-hook: a big front proffering hippie-bait— freedom, bliss and enlightenment. Once hooked, the processed initiates encounter an even bigger back: an occult church with rules far more rigid and draconian than in the maligned, "repressive" medieval church.

Fourteen years after Plethon's death, around 1464, Patriarch Scholarios alerted his flock to the menace of rabbinic Judaism in his *Refutatio erroris Judaeorum.*

The coming struggle over the Neoplatonic-Hermetic takeover of the Church of Rome was presaged by the arrival of Plethon, the Christ-denying heretic, who was advanced and defended by Cardinals Cesarini and Bessarion, as well as Pope Nicholas V. After Nicholas of Cusa, Plethon was the most high profile, public purveyor of the occult toxin inside the bowels of the Church in the fifteenth century, when we qualify his profile as being that of an infiltrator whose theology was *completely undisguised.* [24]

> [24] Siniossoglou, demonstrates in *Radical Platonism in Byzantium: Illumination and Utopia in Gemistos Plethon,* the fact that Plethon clearly rejected Christ and that Plethon's "pagan Platonic paradigm" brought to fulfillment latent tendencies among Catholic humanists toward a distinctive anti-Christian and pagan outlook."

The devious legion of Church infiltrators who followed Plethon would, contrary to him, paint themselves in pious hues, as devoutly Christian-Platonists, Christian-Hermeticists and Christian-Kabbalists, in defiance of the fact that their Neoplatonic, Hermetic and Kabbalistic dogma represented demonic forces that are, patently, spiritually irreconcilable with the Gospel, and profoundly hostile to it.

Plethon's influence over the Council of Florence and in the Catholic salons of that city helped to spread the Neoplatonic contagion to the patricians of the Church of Rome. Let us track Plethon's anti-Christian ideology. In Plato's *Timaeus,* the philosopher's intellect alone guides him to knowledge of ultimate reality. From this rationalism, disconnected from Biblical revelation, proceeds the conceit of man's *tikkun olam,* according to Plotinus (ca. 204-270

A.D.), one of the founders of Neoplatonism: “It is… announced in Plotinus according to whom the descent of the soul in this world occurs for the sake of the perfection of the universe… Plethon’s revival of this model acquires a revolutionary dimension… a metaphysical *mundus inversus…”* [25]

[25] Siniossoglou, ibid., p. 187.

In this inverted world, in the imagination of philosophers, humans are placed above the hierarchy of divine creation as revealed in the Scriptures (God and the angels above, and man below)—to *become co-redeemers of the universe.* This notion of co-redemption of God’s creation by a human being is a tenet both the Kabbalah and Neoplatonism and finds overt expression in post-Renaissance Church of Rome theology, in the form of a de facto belief in the Blessed Virgin Mary as “Co-Redemptrix of the Universe.” [26]

[26] “Co-redemptrix” and “Co-redeemer” denote an impossible human equality with the divine which is classic Neoplatonism. Cf. in Church of Rome theology, Acts of the Fifth International Symposium on Marian Coredemption, *Mary at the Foot of the Cross-V: Redemption and Coredemption under the Sign of the Immaculate Conception* (Franciscans of the Immaculate, 2005). Also: “Mary is the intermediary through whom is distributed unto us this immense treasure of mercies gathered by God, for mercy and truth were created by Jesus Christ. Thus, as no man goeth to the Father but by the Son, so no man goeth to Christ but by His Mother.”— *Octobri Mense,* Encyclical of Leo XIII, Sept. 22, 1891. Here Pope Leo taught falsehood, “For there is one God and one mediator between God and mankind, the man Christ Jesus.” (I Timothy 2:5). Giving Mary a higher place than God’s Word allows is a slippery tactic for dismissing her altogether by causing the *appropriate veneration of her* to be falsely equated with “Mariolatry.” Terming Mary, who is indeed the *Theotokos,* as Mary the “Co-redemptrix” of the Universe (and consequently the alleged co-Redeemer of herself), is not *appropriate veneration,* but *inordinate adoration,* amounting to the idolatry of a human being. Jesus Christ is our only Redeemer. Mary is without doubt the greatest human who ever lived, conceived without sin (because Jesus, the new Adam, could only incarnate inside an uncontaminated “Eden”). It is exceedingly sad that many Protestants have a higher opinion (and esteem) for Sarah, Ruth, Judith and Deborah, than for the woman who said to the angelic messenger of YHVH, “Be it done unto me according to thy word” (Luke 1:38), thus making possible the Incarnation; the woman who William Wordsworth rightly described as “our tainted nature’s solitary boast.” The papal occultists nearly always exalt Marian devotions, and often practice them personally and publicly, for they know that by showing themselves to be her supposedly earnest acolytes, they are sure to gain faith in their rule, in the eyes of some “Marian” Catholics. (This tactic was Pope “Saint” John Paul II’s specialty).

Plethon was the Saul Alinsky of his day, using religion as a vehicle for social engineering. In *Nomoi,* Plethon’s main text, he relates that revolutionary change requires religion as its vehicle. His "...ideological and political reforms presuppose religious reformism, the shift from Christianity to paganism."[27]

[27] Siniossoglou, op.cit., p. 386 and 409.

As we observed earlier, according to Plethon, to enforce the occult "reform" those who object to it must be executed.

Cosimo de' Medici considered Gemistos Plethon a second Plato, and dedicated himself to founding a Neoplatonic academy in Florence to perpetuate the legacy of this serpent in the Quattrocento. The Roman Catholic Church would never be the same.

Chapter IV

The Priest and the Platonists

"I am a real Christian, that is to say a disciple of the doctrines of Jesus, very different from the Platonists, who call me infidel and themselves Christians and preachers of the gospel, while they draw all their characteristic dogmas from what its author never said nor saw. They have compounded from the heathen mysteries a system beyond the comprehension of man, of which the great reformer of the vicious ethics and deism of the Jews, were he to return to earth, would not recognize one feature."

Thomas Jefferson

The founding of the occult movement inside the Catholic Church in the fifteenth and early sixteenth centuries was the work of three seminal Catholic thinkers: Ficino, Giovanni Pico and Reuchlin, supported by a network of collaborators. Keep in mind as we follow the trail of their conspiracy that other than farcical token punishment for public consumption, as for example the brief, theatrical incarceration of Pico, *no significant repression was ever directed against this trio of diabolic occultists by the Pope of Rome or the Inquisition.* On the contrary, the record shows that to the extent that the Renaissance pontiffs could do so without exposing their own complicity, these three pivotal founding members of the occult infiltration of the Church of Rome, were generally shielded by the highest elements in that Church.

While there were many hoaxes embedded in the Hermetic mythos, the two principal ones were the contention that the main Hermetic texts, the *Asclepius* and Ficino's translation of the *Corpus Hermeticum,* were written in remote antiquity by an all-wise Egyptian priest. The second principal hoax associated with the advancement of Hermeticism in an overwhelmingly Christian society and culture such as existed in the fifteenth century in Italy, was the insistence by the leading Neoplatonic-Hermetic “Catholics” that Hermes Trismegistus testified of Christ.

No serious scholar any longer believes that Hermes Trismegistus lived in close proximity to the time of Moses, as the Florentine occult theologian and priest Marsilio Ficino asserted in his dedication (“Argumentum”) of *Pimander* to Cosimo de’ Medici. Frances Yates asks, “How was a Christian magus to get round Augustine?’ She answers her own question: “Marsilio Ficino did it by quoting Augustine’s condemnation and then ignoring it...” [1]

[1] Yates, *Giordano Bruno and the Hermetic Tradition,* p. 11.

A Judaic scholar writes, “First and foremost, Kabbalah was studied, translated, and amalgamated into Christian speculation in a very specific intellectual circle, which emerged two decades earlier as part of the efforts of Marsilio Ficino. Ficino was not only instrumental in rendering into Latin the huge Platonic, Neoplatonic, and Hermetic *corpora;* he was also a thinker who offered a synthesis between the various forms of thought he translated, and Christian theology.” [2]

[2] Moshe Idel, “Jewish Kabbalah in Christian Garb,” in *Kabbalah in Italy: 1280 to 1510* (2011), p. 234.

As Rev. Fr. Ficino progressed deeper into sorcery, some Renaissance Catholics began to ask questions concerning how it was that a priest at the top of the pecking order in Medici Florence, was involved with magic and astrology?

“What has a Christian to do with magic and images? Ficino counters by pointing out that in ancient times priests always did medicine, mentioning Chaldean, Persian and Egyptian priests; that medicine is impossible without astrology; that Christ Himself was a healer. But above all he emphasizes that there are two kinds of magic, one demonic magic which is illicit and wicked, the other natural magic, which is useful and necessary. The only kind of magic which he has (allegedly) practiced or advised is the ‘good and useful kind’—*magica naturalis.* He writes: “How elegant, how artistic and refined is this modern natural magic!”

“...Ficino’s magic was a religious magic, a revival of the religion of the world. How could a pious Christian reconcile such a revival with his Christianity? No doubt the Renaissance religious syncretism, by which the Neoplatonic triad was connected with the Trinity, would account for regarding sun-worship theoretically and historically as a religion having affinities with Christianity, but this would hardly account for the revival of it as a religious cult. The moving force behind this revival was... Ficino's deep interest in the Egyptian magical religion described in the *Asclepius*... When Hermes Trismegistus entered the Church, the history of magic became involved with the history of religion in the Renaissance." [3]

[3] Yates, *Giordano Bruno,* pp. 80, 82-83.

The Italian-Catholic Renaissance, pioneered by the Florentine Medici agent Rev. Fr. Marsilio Ficino, summoned from the bowels of the secret occult orders, the understanding of Plato [4]

[4] Along with Plato's four major theological successors: Neoplatonism's founder, Plotinus (see pp. 85-86), his pupil Porphyry (234-305); as well as Iamblichus (see p. 90), author of On *the Egyptian Mysteries* (translated by Ficino); and the Neoplatonist systematizer, Proclus (412-485).

as a theologian from the *classical past* who had channeled the wisdom tradition of the universal religion of the *deep past,* the "perennial philosophy," [5]

[5] The perennial philosophy has exponents on the Left and the Right. The former are more familiar in popular culture: the comparative religious studies departments of colleges and universities, the New Age movement, and writers such as Frithjof Schuon, Huston Smith and Aldous Huxley. On the Right, in addition to the Renaissance "Catholics" who pioneered it and made it their specialty, such as the curator of the Vatican library, Agostino Steucho (1496-1549), the perennial philosophy is a fixture of the movement centered around René Guenon, and further to the Right, Julius Evola.

and "*prisca theologia*" of Hermes Trismegistus, Zoroaster ("Chaldean Oracles") Orpheus ("Orphic Hymns") and the "sages" of the Kabbalah.[6]

[6] This is the *universalism* of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic theology. It is a *solvent*— the universal *distillation* of all of the gods of the pagans into one syncretic religion of demons (I Corinthians 10:20-21). To the contrary, the true Roman Catholic Church's self-description as *universal* (catholic) is a reference 1. to the offer of God's grace to all mankind; and 2. the theology of the Eucharist as described by the Apostle Paul, "Because there is one bread, we who are many are one body, for we all partake of the one bread." The attempt to conflate occult universalism with the universal *ecclesia* of Jesus Christ is a fool's errand.

Marsilio Ficino leaned toward a universal theism, with Neoplatonism as its gospel." [7]

[7] Jean Seznec, p. 98.

Egypt was the master theological symbol/image of this process of transformation. This is reflected in several of Fr. Ficino's treatises, in particular *De voluptate* and *Di dio et anima.* In the former, he describes Hermes Trismegistus as “the wisest of all Egyptians,” whose god is the source of all creation. In the latter he writes, “Mercurius Trismegistus, an Egyptian philosopher far more ancient than the Greeks, whom Greeks and Egyptians called a god because of his boundless understanding and knowledge...” With regard to the late fifteenth century Church, James Stevens Curl points to *“the increasing Egyptianisation of the Bishop of Rome himself.”*[8]

[8] Curl, *The Egyptian Revival* (2005), p. 90. Ibid.

He notes that in Catholicism at this time, “It must be remembered that the notion that all magic, all knowledge, all skills, and all basic architectural wisdom came from Egypt, was powerful...”[9]

[9] Ibid.

While the Neoplatonist had already gained a foothold in the Vatican, it fell to the Medici-subsidized Ficino to produce and “baptize” the first accessible translation in print of the central canonical text of pagan Hermeticism:

“The *Corpus Hermeticum* were a group of Greek religious and philosophical texts written in the first few centuries after Christ. Although clearly influenced by Greek philosophy, they were thought to encapsulate the far more ancient thoughts of Hermes Trismegistus... Hermetic writings were known in medieval Europe, but their intellectual relevance was boosted massively when, in 1460, a Byzantine monk brought a version of the *Corpus* to Florence, where it was translated into Latin by Marsilio Ficino (1433-99) and published in 1471. As a consequence, Ficino became a central figure in the world of intellectual occultism. His conception of magic was hugely influential, and the lynchpin of the intellectual magic traditions of the early modern period...

“The other significant development of the Renaissance, which would have more of an influence on the development of future grimoires than Hermeticism, was the spreading influence of Kabbalah in European magical thought. The mystical system of Kabbalah that developed in medieval Spain had been percolating into Christian magic before the late fifteenth century, but it was its espousal by another Florentine philosopher and natural magician, (Giovanni) Pico della Mirandola (1463-94), that introduced it to a new readership and led to renewed engagement with its occult promises. Johannes Reuchlin, a German humanist scholar and expert in Greek and Hebrew, further advanced its influence north of the Alps. In 1490 he travelled south and visited Pico—a sign of the developing European network of occult philosophers." [10]

[10] Owen Davíes, *Gimoires: A History of Magical Books,* p. 46.

In 1463, the highly placed papal agent Cosimo de' Medici gave the gifted Roman Catholic linguist and polymath Marsilio Ficino the lifetime use of the palatial "Villa Medici di Careggi," but before he did so he set him to work urgently translating a recently discovered copy of the treasured *Corpus Hermeticum,* the key occult text attributed to Hermes Trismegistus. The aforementioned Latin translation produced by Ficino was renamed by him, *Pimander.*

"...word came to Ficino from Cosimo that he must translate Hermes first, at once, and go on afterwards to Plato... Ficino made the translation in a few months... It is an extraordinary situation. There are the complete works of Plato, waiting, and they must wait while Ficino quickly translates Hermes... What a testimony this is to the mysterious reputation of the Thrice Great One! Cosimo and Ficino knew from the Fathers that Hermes Trismegistus was much earlier than Plato... Egypt was before Greece; Hermes was earlier than Plato. Renaissance respect for the old, the primary, the far-away, as nearest to divine truth, demanded that the *Corpus Hermeticum* should be translated before Plato's *Republic* or *Symposium,* and so this was in fact the first translation that Ficino made." [11]

[11] Yates, *Giordano Bruno op. cit.,* pp. 13-14.

And thus begins the peregrination to gnosis, the marriage of Neoplatonism and Hermeticism as part of the grand occult architecture of the esoteric *Prisca Theologia,* the syncretic religion of the Renaissance Catholic Church, intoxicated with Plato's concept of a world spirit and a world soul, as well as Egyptian and Zoroasterian influences on Plato *(Phaedrus* and *I Alcibiades* respectively). The pantheon of gods, deities and demigod-sages becomes as inclusive as the term polytheism connotes. Orpheus, Pythagoras, Hermes and Zoroaster all had a hallowed pride of place in the pagan firmament which was invading the Latin Church, to a lesser or greater degree,

depending on whether it is Plethon, Ficino or Giovanni Pico who is influencing the direction of this infernal hierarchy. For Ficino, Hermes and Zoroaster trumped Orpheus and Pythagoras. Indeed, like the Medici, Father Ficino was fixated on the primary archetype of the Three Chaldean Magi at the Epiphany of Christ who were there, as he perceived it, to proclaim Jesus as the new Zoroaster.

It was Zoroaster who was reputed to be the originator of the star-centered astrological magic by means of which the Magi had located the Christ child. In this context, Jesus was viewed as the incarnation of the occult *priscus theologus,* the reconciler of the Abrahamic faith with the ancient pagan wisdom of Egypt and Greece, as expressed in Platonic and Neoplatonic Catholicism, a syncretism ascribed by Ficino to the Athenian convert Dionysius whose conversion by St. Paul at Areopagus is mentioned in the Book of Acts. A series of treatises attributed to this Pauline Christian “Dionysius the Areopagite,” reflect Plato’s philosophy in his *Parmenides.*

Historians now know that the Christian Dionysius who was the contemporary of the Apostle is guilty of none of the fraudulent writings said to be his. In actuality, many of there were actually penned by Pseudo-Dionysius (also called Pseudo-Denys) in the fifth century A.D. It was Martin Luther who said of him, “Dionysius is most pernicious; he platonizes more than he Christianizes.” Pseudo-Denys/Dionysius is a saintly figure in the eyes of Right-wing Catholics and the subject of a panegyric by William Riordan, Professor of Theology at the “conservative-Catholic” Ave Maria University in Florida, in his Jesuit-published book, *Divine Light: The Theology of Denys the Areopagite* (Ignatius Press, 2008). The author attempts to uphold Catholic Neoplatonism while reproving pagan Neoplatonism. The result is a farrago of contradictory claims and arguments. He is aggrieved, for example, that Jaroslav Pelikan judges Pseudo-Denys/Dionysius to have been a heretic. Riordan alludes to “Denys’ use of certain Neo-Platonic formulations for the purposes of his own properly Christian theological enterprise... in Denys, this transforming assumption of the Platonic intuition into the Christian view, reaches a new, more developed form. His original and specifically Christian contributions gave Neo-Platonism an extended life when its death was very imminent.” [12]

[12] *Divine Light,* pp. 71; 74 and 75.

John M. Dillon writes of the post-first century hoaxer who posed as the Areopagite who was the contemporary of St. Paul:

“At some time around the fifth century CE, an enterprising Christian controversialist... highly educated in the intricacies of contemporary Platonism... published a series of remarkable works, under the pseudonym of ‘Dionysius the Areopagite’ [13]

[13] In other words, Pseudo-Dionysius.

— -thus seeking boldly to upstage the whole late Platonist system by implying that this first-century Athenian convert of St. Paul had anticipated every aspect of it. In a series of works of great theoretical and linguistic complexity… 'Dionysius' sets before us a conspectus of his (lightly) Christianized version of Procline Neoplatonism… The works of Dionysius first come to notice at a conference held in Constantinople in 532 between a group of Orthodox followers of the Council of Chalcedon, led by Bishop Hypatius of Ephesus, and a group of partisans of Severus (a Monophysite theologian and statesman), where the Severians adduce 'Dionysius' as an authority, and Hypatius expresses some skepticism as to the provenance of the works cited. However, Dionysius survived this first test, and a commentary composed on the corpus shortly afterwards by John of Scythopolis seems to have confirmed his credentials…

"…adaptation of a very distinctive Syrianic-Proclean system of triads occurs in Dionysius' account of the structure of the angelic world in the *Celestial Hierarchy.* In that work… Dionysius sets out the succession, or *hierarchia* (a term which he seems to have invented), of the divine orders of beings in a series of triads, interestingly reminiscent of that proposed for the intelligible realm by Syrianus and faithfully adopted by Proclus. For Syrianus and Proclus, we may recall, the intelligible realm comes to be divided into a sequence of three levels: an intelligible triad of entities, an intelligible-intellective triad (each element of these subdivided into further triads), and an intellective hebdomad, consisting of two triads and a seventh entity, the so-called 'membrane.' However, what we basically have is a sequence of triads… Such a triadic system as this for the heavenly realm has really no warrant in Scripture, and it is remarkable that Dionysius should have felt moved to propound it.

"A salient feature of later Neoplatonism, from Iamblichus onwards, was the elevation of theurgy, the performance of rituals to attract the favor of the gods… With this theurgic tradition Dionysius appears to set off the divine activity from the human, and to denominate the former *theourgia,* thus subtly altering the connotation of the compound 'god-work' to cause it to mean 'work of *the gods*' … The latter human component he renames *hierourgia*… for Dionysius the 'hierurgic rites' are the sacraments, but they fulfill the same role and possess the same rationale as the rights of the Iamblichean or Procline theurgist." [14]

[14] John M. Dillon, "Dionysius the Areopagite," in *Interpreting Proclus: From Antiquity to the Renaissance* (2014), pp. 111-112; 118-119; 121.

It was Fr. Ficino who breathed an extended life into "Denys," though here it must be conceded that prior to the time of the Florentine priest, even medieval Catholicism suffered to a degree from the influence of Platonism and Neoplatonism, and nowhere more so than in the development of a theology of the soul which exists in the Kabbalah but not the Bible.

The study of the theology of Plato and Neoplatonism has been subject to so much mystification that it has become a murky and baffling enterprise that has defied comprehension by the average Christian. The reason there can be no such thing as “Christian Platonism” or “Christian Neoplatonism” is the huge disconnect between the Platonic cosmology and the Biblical. There is no ecumenical bridge between the two and that fact violates a fundamental tenet of the syncretic occult religion, which insists on the supposed truth that all contemporary creeds have a common derivation. In order to put forward this fraud they must resort to their most common tactic, lying and deception.

According to Plato and Platonism, material creation is a prison from which “the soul” blessedly escapes at death. There is no resurrection of the body in Plato or Platonism, or the whole of pagan Greek thought, for that matter. Pagan Platonism posits a disembodied immortality which has been freed at last from sordid physical Creation. As far back as the first century A.D. and “the Jew, Philo of Alexandria,” this pagan belief that the body is the “prison house of the soul” began to circulate among Christians. Philo venerated Plato as “most holy Plato.” Eusebius (263-339), “the father of Church history” promoted the fable that Philo had met St. Peter in Rome. St. Jerome even includes Philo among the Church Fathers.

Philo personified the early Platonism that supported the emerging Gnostic view that matter itself is evil. For the true Christian however, “sin entered as an alien force into the universe” (Romans 5:12). The fact that creation was subjected to the bondage of corruption... implies that its original state was otherwise (Romans 8:20) ...it is not intrinsic to the creation per se... For Philo, the ultimate goal is to escape and cast off the material: that takes the form of... an immortality of the soul after death. For (St.) Paul, the ultimate resolution comes through resurrection and new creation... Believers will receive glorified bodies like Christ’s... Likewise, all of creation will be set free from its bondage and participate in redemption (Romans 8:21). [15]

Another aspect of Plato’s philosophy which is irreconcilable with the gospel of Jesus Christ is the Platonic demiurgic construct, which posits that one force created the universe, and another, the “Demiurge,” operates it *(Timaeus,* pt. II).

---

[15] Charles A. Anderson, *Philo of Alexandria’s Views of the Physical World* (2011), p. 191.

"...some thinkers have synthesized Christian theism with Plato's god, the Demiurge. Certain points must be noted before an alleged correspondence can be confirmed... Taking Plato's philosophy as a whole, I believe that all such demonstrations would be forced. One would have to isolate abstractly certain attributes or characteristics of Plato's god, change their meaning as they appear in the holistic structure of Plato's philosophy, then synthesize these attributes or characteristics with Christian theism. Not only does such a procedure destroy the distinctiveness of Christian theism... (s)uch an adventure is an injustice to Christian thought... We must underline, therefore, that Plato's formulation of god is not a faithful response to the revelation of the Christian God, but rather a rejection of Him." 16

[16] William A. Dennison, *Paul's Two-Age Construction and Apologetics* (University Press of America. 1985), pp. 9-10.

It is this "injustice to Christian thought" which is the duplicitous objective of the syncretists, beginning with Philo and extending to the pontificates of the late twentieth and early twenty-first century. It is not a "conspiracy theory" to perceive this unmistakable chain of transmission.

In traversing the numerous texts of "Christian" Neoplatonism, one will travel far before encountering an unambiguously egregious transgression of the First Commandment. Instead, in seemingly interminable books of this canon, one is met by a gradual conditioning process, in the form of a seemingly harmless metaphysic, which in reality takes us further away from the clarity and truth that comes with immersion in the Word of God as the highest and ultimate source of wisdom. In "Christian" Neoplatonism, the lucidity of the gospel of Jesus Christ is subsumed in a welter of mystical speculation—an extended make-believe excursion into the spirit realm, where phantasmagoric conjecture is presented as a higher reality. This was the peril of "Christian" Neoplatonism for the Church and the believer. The deeper the engagement with its conjectures, the deeper is the inculcation of extra-Biblical doctrines and notions which generate an enchanted pagan mentality in the mind of the Christian. Take for instance this seemingly innocuous excursus on the "geometrical images in Christian Neoplatonism":

"Christian Neoplatonists are as readily prepared as their pagan predecessors to conceive the cyclic process of causation in terms of geometrical images, and much of the earlier doctrine is repeated without significant alteration... Christian writers are no longer concerned with a set of schemata which apply primarily to the sensible world and are transferred thence by analogy to the realm of intelligible essences, but with geometrical shapes which apply with varying degrees of precision to created things... The second geometrical illustration used by the pagan philosophers is much more common in Christian texts... In the first place it is applied to God through analogy to created things, and Ps.-Dionysius (Pseudo-Dionysius) argues as follows:

“...it is possible to speak of him (God) in a manner fitting the divine. In this sense the rectilinear signifies the emanation of his potencies toward created things, the circular indicates his self-identity, and the spiral represents the combination of emanation and stability.’

“Secondly, it is applied to created things and especially the angelic and human intellects, in which case the pagan Neoplatonic theory that the three shapes relate to different faculties or modes of cognition is revived. This theory is applied by Maximus (the Confessor) in both a physical and epistemological context, for during his argument about the end of each creature’s motion which is God, he stresses that created things move either in a rectilinear, circular, or spiral manner, while elsewhere he equates the faculties of sense, intellect and discursive reason with these three types of motion.” [17]

Another Platonic doctrine contrary to Scripture is a teaching about the soul utterly disconnected from the body. In the Nicene Creed, Christians recite the affirmation of the dogma that “we look for the resurrection of the dead, and the life of the world to come.” The Platonists and Neoplatonists cannot honestly subscribe to the Biblical belief that it is the body, not just the “soul,” or the *nous* (mind), that is the Lord’s Holy Temple. The concept of a soul completely divorced from the body is something we find in Plato, not the Bible.

Psyche represents the *whole* of that creature into which God breathed life; (in Hebrew, *nishmath hayyim),* thereby creating the living human being, *nephesh hayyah.* The body-soul Manichaean duality is a delusion of Platonism, not of the Scriptures or Christ’s true Church.

The *pneuma* is the divine force of YHVH that will give life to the glorified, immortal resurrection body. This is the Christian believer’s victory over death, not the state of disembodied immortality of the *supersapientialis scientia platonica,* which is mistaken for eternity by the minions of Churchianity. This latter belief is a Satanic lie of occult origin, advanced under Platonic and Neoplatonic auspices and infiltrated into the Church long before the Renaissance. The continuing dubiety surrounding the truth about the

---

[17] Stephen Gersh, *From Iamblichus to Eriugena: An Investigation of the Prehistory and Evolution of the Pseudo-Dionysian Tradition* (1978), pp. 251-253.

reality and nature of the afterlife is the contaminated legacy of the occult philosophy. As Neoplatonism spread through the Church prior even to the Middle Ages, its chief characteristic was the propagation of confusion through the dissemination of a multiplicity of allegorical and mystical traditions and cosmologies put forth as complimenting and enlarging Christianity, but in fact at radical variance with the Word of God.

No single person is more responsible for the advancement of Neoplatonism within the Catholic Church and Christendom at large than Rev. Fr. Marsilio Ficino, translator of the first complete Platonic oeuvre *(Platonis Opera Omnia),* which became a bestseller after Ficino’s death, having been reprinted in at least thirty separate editions in the sixteenth century alone. Ficino in his commentaries on Plato’s writings fitted them into a systematic theology of neo-Catholic syncretic origin, embellished with the addition of translations of Proclus, Plotinus and Iamblichus, and the teachings of Hermes, Zoroaster and Pseudo-Dionysius. This foul melting pot was perpetuated by the pope of Rome, who subsequently endowed university chairs in Platonic philosophy for occult heretics such as Francesco Piccolomini in Padua and Francesco Patrizi in the Vatican itself. They in turn imparted to the Church the idea that the ancient pagan sapience representative of Hermes Trismegistus and Plato, had heralded and prepared the way for Jesus Christ and His Church.

Reincarnation

Isaac Abarbanel was a prominent Spanish rabbi who emigrated to Italy in 1492, after the expulsion of the Judaics from Spain. Abarbanel authored his major theological treatise, *Mif’a lot Elohim,* on reincarnation (also called “metempsychosis” or the “transmigration of souls”), in Catholic Italy, circa 1500. Abarbanel drew on the Iberian Kabbalistic theology he inherited from the school of the medieval Spanish Rabbi Moses Nahmanides,[18] as well as Catholic-Neoplatonism:

---

[18] Sometimes known by his acronym the “Ramba*n*,” (not to be confused with Moses Maimonides referred by the acronym “Ramba*m*”).

[Page 164 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

“...in regard to Abarbanel’s thought concerning the transmigration of souls... Abarbanel expresses an inclination toward a Neoplatonically ‘rationalized’ Kabbalah, characteristic of the Italian Renaissance milieu in which he wrote the bulk of his works on this topic, while maintaining a sense of esteem for and even deference to the more arcane Nahmanidean Kabbalah of his prior Iberian environs. Within this one illustrious thinker, the ‘exoteric’ and the ‘esoteric’ trends meet in a synthetic attempt to safeguard and to expound upon the kabbalistic notion of *gilgul neshamot* (the reincarnation of souls).[19]

"Though he exhibits an inclination toward philosophical speculation, as a proponent of the Kabbalah, Abarbanel takes strong issue with 'Aristotle and the interpreters of his books... (who) sought ways to deny' the real possibility of transmigration. According to Abarbanel, such attempts at denial are fundamentally mistaken. 'Those who deny it,' he writes, 'they are the people who walk in darkness.' Not only is the idea philosophically possible despite the false claims of Aristotle and his interpreters... among the Christians, as a received tradition [20] from the mouths of the prophets who saw the light of Torah, it is Truth and must be accepted. As a direct tenet of the Jewish kabbalistic tradition, Abarbanel has no need to be careful or to conceal his support for Transmigration, and can argue forcefully in its favor. This, in fact, is what he does, attempting to moor the doctrine as expressed within the writings of Plato and other ancient thinkers in his own understanding of the *prisca theologia* tradition as based upon the Jewish Kabbalah. Abarbanel's longest and most definitive treatment of transmigration which specifically deals with the idea of human reincarnation, lies within his commentary on Deuteronomy 25:5-6. This is the commandment appertaining to the institution of levirate marriage, and there the Torah states (in Deuteronomy 25:5-6):

"When brothers dwell together and one of them dies and leaves no son, the wife of the deceased shall not be married to a stranger, outside the family. Her husband's brother shall unite with her: take her as his wife and perform the levir's duty. The first son that she bears shall be accounted to the dead brother, that his name may not be blotted out in Israel." [21]

In this misreading of the Torah we are offered a glimpse into Orthodox Judaism's profound, intimate and irrefutable Kabbalah connection, which has been long denied by deceivers and apologists. As the revival of the superstition of ancient Egypt, Sumer and Babylon (Sumer was located in what would become Babylon), Orthodox Judaism is surfeited with occult practices and doctrines which for centuries were successfully hidden from public view, partly in order to encourage the rise of the hoax that rabbinic Judaism is a religion faithful to the Old Testament, which forms one-half of the synthesis popularly referred to as “the Judeo-Christian heritage.” Actually, every time this bastard hybrid is pronounced as a given fact it blasphemously yokes the Gospel of Jesus Christ with the squirming serpents of occult Egypt and Babylon, as represented by Judaism and its Babylonian Talmud and Kabbalah.

---

[19] Other mystical terms in the context of *ma'asei merkava* (the "doctrine of the soul and the economy of justice"), include *sod ha'ibur* (the secret of passing from body to body), and *ituk* (soul relocation).

[20] *Kabbalat ha-nevi'im,* i.e. the traditions of Kabbalah.

[21] Brian Ogren, *Renaissance and Rebirth: Reincarnation in Early Modern Italian Kabbalah,* p. 103.

The Orthodox Judaism of which the Renaissance popes and their successors were smitten, teaches multiple levels of secret Biblical meanings (*sod*)—meanings which were unseen by Jesus Christ or his apostles —and which are brought to the surface *(rasu lemor)* by the mediation of rabbinic “sages.” For the rabbis, the esoteric decoding of the Bible’s concept of Levirate marriage is contained within *sod ha-’ibbur,* the secret of impregnation, which they link to *gilgul,* metempsychosis, i.e. reincarnation. In Deuteronomy, when there are two brothers and one dies without having produced a child, it is the duty of the living brother to have sexual congress with the wife of the deceased brother and to have children with her, out of respect for the deceased brother. Orthodox Judaism adds to Deuteronomy the man-made teaching that the newborn infant produced by the union of the surviving brother and his brother’s widow, is the reincarnation of the soul of the dead brother.

This belief of Orthodox Judaism is evidence of the degree to which Kabbalistic occult fantasy has been embraced by the rabbis. Here hangs our indictment of Moses Nahmanides, the “Ramban,” portrayed as the “anti-idolatry rabbinic paradigm of’ Biblical probity,” who, it is supposed, defeated the Dominican “Friar Paul,” a Judaic convert to Catholicism, in the “Barcelona Disputation” of 1262, arranged by King James I of Aragon, wherein the Ramban is reputed by the Judaics to have succeeded in refuting the friar’s charges and presenting himself as an opponent of occult superstition. [22]

[22] Unfortunately, Friar Paul presented arguments in line with Ramon Marti’s defective anti-Judaic polemic, *Pugio fidei;* among these was Marti’s assertion that the Talmud—and similar rabbinic sacred texts—prove the Messianic identity of Jesus, including Marti’s absurd contention that Talmud tractate Sanhedrin 43a gives evidence of Jesus’s royal descent from King David, when it does no such thing. 43a actually testifies to the fact that the Roman government in Palestine (in other words Pontius Pilate), sought to acquit Jesus of the capital charge against him, which had been insisted upon by the Jewish leaders. Cf. Ursula Ragacs, “Reconstructing Medieval Jewish-Christian Disputations,” in *Medieval Exegesis and Religious Difference* (2015), p. 107.

The record shows however, that Nahmanides did indubitably traffic in Kabbalistic dogma. Like Rabbi Ezekiel Landau, another *halakhic* authority promoted as being renowned for his opposition to pagan mysticism, Rabbi Nahmanides' sterling reputation in this regard is a hoax. The black magic mendacity of Nahmanides ("Ramban") was permitted publication in Catholic Venice by Pope Leo X in 1517:

"To unlock the ultimate secret of Job, not unlike his method throughout his commentary to the Torah, Ramban tells us he relies on his own insights and what God reveals to him. He will meditate upon the Scriptures to unlock the mystery of Job. Yet, he cannot allow himself to reveal the secret of the climax explicitly to us. The Kabbalistic secret in a word is 'reincarnation.' Kabbalistic traditions, he stresses, are part of an oral tradition passed down from Moses to Prophets to Sages... Ramban dwells on the secret of Job in ch. 33 of his commentary to Job... Ramban's *Commentary on the Book of Job* appeared only in the first *Mikra'ot Gedolot* edition in Venice in 1517... Kabbalists explain God was kind enough to allow redemption for past sins in a past life... Ramban's key to Job, *viz* reincarnation, was adopted by all subsequent Kabbalists.

"...Shalshelet haKabballah 13a claims that Uts died without children and Buz, his brother (Genesis 22:21) married Uts' wife. Job came from this levirate union. Ramban alludes to transmigration of souls in regards to the law of levirate marriage in his comments on Genesis 38:8." [23]

[23] Cf. Herbert W. Basser, "Kabbalistic Teaching in the Commentary on Job," in *Bibliblical Interpretation in Judaism and Christianity,* pp. 97-98.

The fidelity of "Ramban" (Nahmanides) is to the Kabbalistic pagan doctrine, not the Biblical doctrine. This can be seen in his commentary on the Book of Job reflecting the Kabbalistic Zohar (1:180 a-b), which teaches that Job was a reincarnated soul from a Levirate marriage. As demonstrated, Rabbi Nahmanides regurgitates this unscriptural delusion.

Genesis 38, involving the obligations of levirate marriage, is also a vessel of Kabbalistic reincarnation falsification, as noted in connection with the Renaissance's Rabbi Abarbanel, yet the "proof-texts" for this delusion are in the *Chumash* and *Midrash,* non-Kabbalistic rabbinic texts of mainstream Orthodox Judaism.

In the Old Testament Jews and Israelites are constantly sinning and portrayed as evil doers. Genesis 38 concerns a proud Jewish leader, Judah, who, in the denouement, declares that Tamar, a (presumed) Canaanite, is "more righteous than I!" (Genesis 38:26).

In Genesis 38, Judah has taken up residence in the Canaanite territory of Adullam, southwest of Jerusalem. The woman Tamar,[24] who is of unspecified ethnicity, marries Er, the thoroughly wicked eldest son of Judah and Judah's Canaanite wife.[25] We do not learn Judah's wife's name, only the name of her father; consequently, she is called merely "Shua's daughter." The Talmud cannot stomach the fact that the Bible identifies Judah's wife as a Canaanite, so the rabbis transform Judah's wife into the daughter—not of a Canaanite—but of a "merchant" (cf. BT Pesachim 50a which considers it impossible that Judah would marry a Canaanite woman).

[Page 168 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

God kills Er. While God had killed masses of people in the Flood and in Sodom and Gomorrah, Er is the first person in the Bible that He *singles out* for death. In the Biblical account given in Genesis 38, as it concerns Judah and Tamar and the sons of Judah, the focus is on levirate marriage: the obligation of the brother of a deceased husband to marry his brother's widow. Orthodox Judaism in its sacred texts, the Babylonian Talmud and the *Midrash,* teaches the doctrine of reincarnation in explaining the supposed "secret" *(sod)* layer of meaning of Genesis 38, beneath the literal *(pshat).* This is the spiritual disease of the rabbis, and of the occult in general, the conceit that the plain meaning of Scripture almost always conceals a deeper esoteric significance which only the cognoscenti can plumb.

In the *rabbinic exegesis* of Genesis 38 we are at the level of *sod,* which, though it appears in Talmudic texts, is suffused with delusions from the Kabbalah: "They knew the secret significance of levirate marriage: how it enables the soul of the deceased brother to be reincarnated." [26]

In rabbinic Judaism levirate marriage [27] is known as *yibum,* which has come to signal, over millennia of accumulated traditions, the process by which the *gilgul* (reincarnation) of the deceased brother is reborn through the child conceived by his surviving brother and his surviving widow.

---

[24] The name Tamar denotes "date palm."

[25] "Judah saw there (in Adullam) the daughter of a Canaanite man, whose name was Shuah. And he took her and entered into her and she conceived bore a son and called his name Er. And she conceived and bore a son still again and she called his name Onan. And again she bore a son and called his mune Shelah." Genesis 38: 2-5.

[26] *The Zohar Volume Three* (Stanford University, 2006), p. 144.

[27] The union between Ruth and Boaz was levirate and levirate unions survived into the time of Christ (Matthew 22: 22-24)

In the Word of God, Onan, the *yabam* (brother-in-law) of Tamar, had the right to decline the obligation to serve as a *levir,* but he would be subject to ritual public humiliation (the widow would remove his shoe and spit in his face). Onan committed several transgressions: 1. He attempted to deceive God by appearing to accept the levirate duty and then faked it. 2. His means of faking was *coitus interruptus,* taking his pleasure of Tamar in the sex act and then practicing contraception by spilling his seed on the ground rather than inseminating her. 3. He compounded the latter sin by committing it repeatedly ("*whenever* he went into his brother's wife he spilled his seed upon the ground;" 38:9). The syntax shows that this happened more than once. 4. All of these offenses were committed out of lust, obviously, but also from jealousy and greed, so that Onan will inherit his deceased brother's estate, rather than his brother's male or female offspring who would inherit had Onan caused Tamar to conceive. God kills Onan for these transgressions. After the death of Onan, the only surviving son of Judah is the youthful Shelah, who Judah promises to Tamar after Shelah reaches adulthood.

This was a ruse on Judah's part. Judah feared that Tamar was a jinx who would inexplicably also cause the death of Shelah. He thereby deceived her into thinking Shelah would come to her when he matured. Fearing for Shelah's life if he became intimate with Tamar, Judah unjustly withholds the adult Shelah from fulfilling the promise of levirate union with Tamar (38: 11; 14). The deceiver, Judah, becomes the deceived however, when, after the death of Judah's Canaanite wife, Tamar disguises herself as a prostitute and seduces Judah, who offers to pay for her services with livestock from his flock. Because he does not have the payment in his possession, he offers her three promissory pledges in the form of his *staff,* and his *seal,* which is presumably worn on a *cord.* Tamar's possession of his seal, cord and staff is tantamount to possessing Judah's I.D. card. She will produce these months later when her pregnancy becomes apparent and she is about to be executed on Judah's order. These identifiers lead to Judah's exposure as the client of a presumed prostitute and his subsequent contrition for his sin.

For the rabbis, the sin committed by Onan in Genesis 38 is not chiefly what the text demonstrates it to be, the *coitus interruptus* practiced by Onan, i.e. "Onanism" (analogous to the sin of masturbation in historic Christianity). In Judaism, Onan's primary transgression was his refusal to assist the soul of Er, his elder brother, in reincarnating on earth:

"Onan knew that the child... born of his union with Tamar would be a reincarnation of Er's soul, and he was too selfish to let this happen..." [28]

[28] *The Chumash* (Brooklyn, New York Mesorah Publications 2009), p. 209

The preceding commentary from the *Chumash* is one of numerous editions that constitute a standard work in Orthodox Judaism. The *Chumash* is not by any stretch of the imagination a Kabbalistic work. The *Chumash* commentary incorporates the famous, authoritative exegesis of Rashi and other high rabbinic authorities and *gedolim.* Without resorting to the text of the Kabbalah itself, Orthodox Judaism presents its reincarnation teaching concerning Genesis 38, as promulgated not in the Kabbalah but in Judaism's exegesis of the Pentateuch ("*Chumash*") found in many, if not most, Orthodox Judaic households, having the status of a revered, standard reference work. Judaism's belief in reincarnation taught in this commentary on the *Chumash.* The persistent propaganda story—that one encounters magic and superstition only when one crosses over the chasm that separates Kabbalah from Orthodox Judaism — is shown to be a falsehood in consideration of the rabbinic *gilgul* (reincarnation) doctrine as manifested in non-Kabbalistic texts like the *Chumash.*

The humbling Biblical account of Israelites in Genesis 38, is overturned in the prideful, racial-nationalist Babylonian Talmud, as well as in rabbinic commentary on the *Chumash* and the *Midrash,* which all insist that Tamar was certainly not a Canaanite. With the usual Midrashic resort to fantasy, the rabbis stoop to fabricating a tale of Tamar being the daughter of Noah's son, Shem (cf. Bereishis Rabbah 85:10). The rabbinic commentary on the *Chumash* states: "As someone who was to play such a significant role in the destiny of Israel, it is inconceivable that she was of Canaanite descent."

The Word of God imparts the humbling fact that the Biblical patriarch Judah was ashamed that he had lusted after Tamar, and that he repented of his fornication with her. He is held to be even more culpable because he lusted after her and succumbed to his lust while she was disguised as a sacred prostitute of the fertility religion of the neighboring pagans, in this case, the Canaanites (the term used to describe Tamar in Genesis 38:21-22 is *q'desah,* a word for temple prostitute; earlier in Genesis 38 she had been referred to only as a *zonah,* a common prostitute). Sex with such a prostitute was an act of propitiation to the goddess of the local pagan cult, a condemned act (cf. Hosea 4:14). In the moving turnabout, after seeking to have Tamar, his daughter-in-law, burned to death for having been a whore (38:24), Judah subsequently recognizes his own guilt and bears witness against himself, self-effacingly and contritely asserting her righteousness above his.

What does the rabbinic mentality do with this noble Biblical lesson in humility? It overthrows it, and in doing so absolves Juhdah, who is too racially significant in the race-obsessed religion of Judaism to be allowed to bear such guilt, therefore the blame must be transferred. Who do the rabbis blame for Juhdah's act of lust with a woman he thought was a pagan temple prostitute? In the occult philosophy where man has equalled or exceeded His Creator, the rabbis blame God:

"Rabbi Yochanan said, 'Judah sought to pass by Tamar. The Holy One, blessed is He, dispatched the angel of lust to trap him. The angel said to Judah, 'Where are you going? From where will kings arise? From where will great men arise? Only then Judah detoured to her by the side of the road. He was coerced, against his good sense." (*B'reshith Rabbah* 85:8).

One of occult-Renaissance Catholicism's most esteemed rabbis, Rashi, quotes approvingly the following passage from the Midrash, "...a *tzaddik* (saint) of his status would not lower himself to consort with a harlot. Against Judah's will, however, G-d's angel drew him to her... A heavenly voice came forth and proclaimed, 'It was by me that these events were thus directed." [29]

Orthodox Rabbi Rabbi Nosson Scherman: "Of his own free will, Judah would never have united with her, so an angel forced him into the path of a 'harlot' to begin the creation of the Davidic dynasty." [30]

Here we have a Biblical patriarch exonerated rather than denigrated by the tradition of the rabbis, but the one being denigrated is God Almighty Himself! The rabbis have no shame and they certainly have no fear of their subordinate, Yahweh. Sins of the ancient Jews are palliated, denied or absolved through Talmudic and Midrashic fantasy scenarios such as the one put forth for Judah.

Talmudic and Kabbalistic Judaism is suffused with ego-rebellion against the Logos. This revolutionary egoism was infiltrated into the arcane theology of the papacy and the *crème de la crème* of its theological elite. It is a foundation of tyranny over mankind. For this tyranny to operate successfully, the

true Biblical-Hebrew teaching, which is completely separate from the pagan psychodrama which rabbinic Judaism absorbed from the occult lore of Babylon and Pharaonic Egypt, must be cast off. Ellen Myers, commenting on Thomas Molnar's essay, "The Gnostic Tradition and Renaissance Occultism," writes:

"Molnar shows that 'the Hebrew-Christian concept of separating God and man as Creator and created, of not confusing their natures, their persons, their powers,' stands apart from 'practically all other religious and para-religious doctrines and systems [which] identify God and self.' Molnar believes that 'Christianity is hard to bear,' because it requires of man 'insertion in the hierarchy of creation, acceptance of a role assigned by the Creator above the rest of other creatures, yet definitively and distinctly not divine.'

---

[29] *The Midrash Says: The Book of Beraishis* (Brooklyn, NY: Bnay Yakov Publications, 1999), pp. 364-365; 367.

[30] *The Chumash* op. cit., p. 211.

"Here Molnar rightly shows that biblical creation *ex nihilo* is the root and ground of Christianity, as well as of the enmity of almost all other religions and thought systems... What non-believers really desire and attempt to bring about is the overthrow of the reality created by the God of Christianity, and to become divine creators of a different reality of their own making... Humanist utopians have perennially written about their ideal 'city' as 'the final symbol for man's divinization'..." [31]

[31] Ellen Myers, "Thomas Molnar: A Christian Scholar for our Time," in *Creation Social Science & Humanities Society Quarterly Journal,* (vol. 9, no. 4, 1987).

Authentic conservative Christian philosophers such as Thomas Molnar and Aleksandr Solzhenitsyn have observed the trail of destruction of the utopian Renaissance heresy, from the opening salvo of its revolutionary proclamations to the last corpse exhumed from its gulags. The Catholic monk Francois Rabelais's Renaissance "Abbey of Thelema" was a philosophical utopia where, supposedly, the only rule was, "*Fais ce que voudras*" (Do what you will). Humanity casts off the God of the Bible and they proceed on their own way, guided by men and women of the past who trod the same, putative "path of liberation," and who happen to be Neoplatonists and Kabbalists. The occult being mostly lies, this maxim, "Do what you will," does not denote what it purports to state. It actually signifies, in practice, total freedom only for *elite members* of the institution, and bondage for "lesser beings." In this context, "utopia" consists of "Thelemic freedom" for occult tyranny,

which is a plausible description of the Renaissance and post-Renaissance Roman Church.

Returning to the doctrine of the Renaissance Rabbi Abarbanel, he believed that the levirate marriage ordered in the Torah was devised by God to facilitate the reincarnation of souls. This theology is sustained by the Neoplatonic-Kabbalistic belief that the soul is completely independent of the body, and that it is a separate essence that does not come into being with the body.

"For Abarbanel, who follows here in the Neoplatonic tradition, the separate soul of the individual is able to move through the cosmos, from its place in the supernal realm to the sublunar realm and back again, only by means of the soul vehicle; a *minori ad maius,* its movement as a non-corporeal entity between two human beings must depend upon that vehicle.

“Abarbanel’s exposition of the theory of the soul vehicle comes in his *Mif’alot Elohim,* written in 1499... Within *Mif’alot Elohim,* he establishes the essential separateness of the human soul from the body, thereby allowing for its separate movement within the cosmos and the possibility of its entrance into a new body upon its circulation out of a previous body. Basing himself on the *prisci theologi,* who in his interpretation had the Torah as their foundation, he asserts:

“The Torah Truth is that all of the human souls were created before the existence of bodies, at the beginning of creation. And indeed, this was the opinion of the great ancient philosophers like Hermes Trismegistus who is called Hanoch, and Pythagoras, and Plato, and others beside them. And indeed, we have not found anything [of favor] concerning this within Aristotle.

“For the soul to be able to transmigrate, it must be a separate entity from the body that, from time to time, enters into a relation with the body. For this to be the case, Aristotle’s theory of the fundamental connection between soul and body must be incorrect. According to Aristotle, ‘we can dismiss as unnecessary the question whether the soul and the body are one: it is as though we were to ask whether the wax and its shape are one, or generally the matter of a thing and that of which it is the matter.’ The soul is the form of the body and only has any real relevance or substance in a state of unity.

“Abarbanel rejects this idea off hand; for him, as confirmed by the same precedent sources that would be important to the likes of Ficino yet with the ‘Torah Truth’ as the ultimate base, the soul must be prior to the body and ontologically superior to it... Unlike Aristotle, the ‘true’ *prisci theologi,* who received their ideas in accordance with this true Torah view, support and give credence to the idea of a soul that can transmigrate, both through the spheres and among bodies. The soul is separate and prior to the body, and therefore can logically cycle through the cosmos, and in and out of different bodies.

“...Through the notions of the world-soul and its emanated astral bodies... Abarbanel... tries to give the idea of the astral body direct Kabbalistic legitimacy by attributing the idea to his Kabbalistic predecessor, Nahmanides. According to Nahmanides in his *Sha’ar ha-Gemul,* the sinning soul will be punished in purgatory by being burned with a thin fire.[32]

[32] Nahamanides, *The Writings of Rabbi Moses ben Nahman,* vol. 2, p. 265.

If this is the case, reasons Abarbanel, then the ‘thin fire’ must be burning the soul through the medium of the thin material that is the astral body; otherwise it would have no effect upon the fundamentally immaterial soul. Nahmanides, then, according to Abarbanel, hints here at the existence of the ethereal, astral body.

“Notwithstanding Abarbanel’s attempt to frame everything under a Kabbalistic rubric by invoking the *sefirot* by utilizing the imagery of the emanated spark, and by citing precedence in the Kabbalistic figure of Nahmanides, it is important to note that his language concerning the soul vehicle is much closer to the Neoplatonism of Iamblicus, Synesius and Ficino... Abarbanel uses the term ‘spirit’ for his conception of the astral body, links it directly to Plato, and understands it to move in a naturally circular motion.

“The human spirit, he writes, ‘is of the nature of the heavens and from the sphere of the upper things, and it always moves in a circular motion from itself, like the movers of the heavens and the stars. And it is according to this that the wise Plato said that the soul moves by itself in a circular motion, while it is in the body and also when it is outside of the body, before it enters it and also after it is separated from it.” [33]

Since the Renaissance has done its work of subversion of Catholic theology, many Catholics have difficulty finding very much that was in error in the soul-doctrine of Ramban (Rabbi Nahmanides), and while these suppositions have been largely absorbed by Catholic intellectuals without much comment or analysis, almost sub-consciously, they have created an enchanted mentality in Catholics who fancy themselves paragons of anti-occult convictions, yet nevertheless somehow believe that wearing an amulet-like piece of cloth known as the “scapular,” [34] saves them “from the fires of hell;” or that “Jacinta,” a ten-year-old female visionary, had the rabbinic-like power to alter the dogma of the Bible concerning the deadliest sin, by proclaiming that most people are eternally damned *not* due to the most egregious evil cited by the Word of God (*the love of money*: I Timothy 6:10), but rather due to *sexual lust:* “More souls go to hell because of sins of the flesh than for any other reason”—Jacinta Marto. [35]

[33] Ogren, op. cit., pp.115-116;121-122.

[34] Numerous Catholics wear the scapular without magical intent: solely as an outward sign of their inward commitment to the Biblical virtues which Mary embodied. In those cases, the scapular functions as a symbol of Christian faith and not as an amulet.

[35] John De Marchi, *Fatima From the Beginning,* transl. I.M. Kingsbury (Edicoes Missoes Consolata, 2006) p. 198. No accusation of wrong-doing is directed against this child for how her alleged statement was exploited by the Church of Rome. At the end of her brief life she stoically endured the torments of botched medical tare for the influenza which killed her. She had been a witness to extraordinary events at the

As this child's reputed saying was promoted throughout the Church of Rome after 1920, eventually becoming the folk belief of the Catholic masses, the practice of usury ascended to new levels of ubiquity. Twenty-two years afterward, in 1942, Pope Pius XII established the Vatican usury bank, *Instituto per le Opere di Religione* ("Institute for the Works of Religion"), without significant opposition.

If it is assumed that neo-pagan choreographies are confined to the Catholic lower classes, we note that in the intellectual class, under the influence of minds conditioned by Neoplatonic mysticism, we encounter "educated Catholics" just as susceptible to priestcraft (men's unscriptural inventions added to the gospel under pretense of divine authority), and subject to institutions and traditions ordained not by the laws of God's Word, but metaphysical addenda.

In terms of our personal experience, it was not long ago that we were observers at a well-attended lecture by a "traditional" Catholic university professor who had no qualms about offering encomiums for Plato as a guide to the sapience from which Catholics would profit. We know of an international "traditional" Catholic school-system for women in which formation in "Catholic wisdom foreshadowed by Plato," is a staple. Popery is inherently Neoplatonic to such an extent that awareness of it among papists is virtually nil. There is almost no vigilance in these matters in the quotidian world of Right-wing Catholics, who otherwise pride themselves on ferreting out the influence of "Protestants and Freemasons."

Rev. Fr. Ficino was a chameleon and the intensity of his occult teachings waxed and waned with the response to them. When informed conservative Catholics with influence, like Antonio degli Agli [36] and Bartolomeo Scala, began to warn against Ficino in terms of "fools who philosophize with the pagans," [37]

Cova da Iria ("Cove of Irene") in Fatima, Portugal in 1917, for which science has no explanation.

[36] Antonio degli Agli, *De mystica statera* (Naples, circa 1456), quoted in Field, *The Origins of the Platonic Academy of Florence,* pp. 173-174.

[37] Scala, *Epistola de nobilioribus philosophorum sectis.* Scala's work affords us the opportunity to second his judicious approach toward the admirable qualities of ancient thinkers such as Aristotle and Cicero *where they reflected the Natural Law,* while rejecting syncretism and the occult. For Scala contra Ficino cf. Alison Brown, *Bartolomeo Scala, 1430-1497, Chancellor of Florence* (1979), p. 219; and Hanegraaff, *Esotericism,* p. 44.

Ficino would, in the aftermath of this cumulative and mounting criticism, late in life in *private* letters to Martinus Uranius and Zanobi Acciaiuoli, regret what he claimed were his youthful indiscretions. These private remarks of his have been recycled to allegedly prove that Ficino was a good and pious Catholic after all. This claim overlooks the fact that a “good and pious Catholic” would have repudiated his heretical books *in public* and *showed where they were defective and ordered them withdrawn.* The public Ficino refrained from any evidence of true repentance, however. We are expected to accept that his ruse in a few letters to correspondents represented a sincere change of heart. If sincere, a change of heart, in Catholic theology, requires an attempt at reparation and restitution, by undoing damage that has been done. Instead, Ficino enjoyed the privilege of having his occult works seep into the Church over five centuries: “After Marsilio Ficino published it in 1489, his *Three Books of Life (De vita libri tres)* enjoyed great success. Almost thirty editions by 1647, made it the most influential account of magic of its day, perhaps of all Western history.” [38]

[38] Brian P. Copenhaver, “How to do Magic, and Why: Philosophic Prescriptions,” in *The Cambridge Companion to Renaissance Philosophy* (2007), p. 137. The first edition of Ficino’s *De vita libri tres* was published in Florence by Antonio di Bartolommeo Miscomini. It was reprinted in Venice in 1498; then in Bologna in 1501 by (Benedetto Faelli); with 27 additional editions up to the early modern period.

Ficino’s template of occult belief and covert action by elite insiders of the Church, coupled with the spectacle of outwardly pious, ceremonial orthodoxy maintained for the masses of Catholic laity, was rigorously adhered to by the papacy from the Renaissance to the mid-twentieth century, until those same masses had been sufficiently conditioned over time by a control system of unconditional obedience to the pontiff, and gradual exposure to a soft version of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic theology. By 1965 they were prepared to reluctantly submit, however grudgingly at first, to the early stages of the radical public alterations of the Faith which the occult ideologues of the hierarchy now projected in the open. Consequently, by the pontificate of Pope Francis, the people had been for decades deeply immersed in the later stages of the foreordained *“solve et coagula”* crucible of *human* alchemy.

The demonic magic of the *Asclepius* distinguishes it as among the most Satanic of the texts attributed to Hermes Trismegistus. “Magic comes closest to philosophy... in the famous ‘god-making’ passages of the *Asclepius* which show that material objects can be manipulated to draw a god down into a statue and thus ensoul it.”[39]

[39] Copenhaver, *Hermetica,* p. xv.

As part of this “drawing down,” the magician, according to the *Asclepius* of Hermes, obtains the power to “ensoul” dead matter. Because there was no analogy with digital AI (Artificial Intelligence) or robots in that bygone era, the power of the sorcery was described as having the capability of “bringing statues to life.”

In his *Summa Contra Gentiles,* St. Thomas Aquinas puf forth a refutation of the alibis and specious justifications which apostate Christians offered for their conceited involvement with the occult. In this regard, the saint chastises Hermes by name, reiterating the condemnation of St. Augustine:

> “The position of Hermes is disposed of by these considerations, for he spoke as follows, as Augustine reports it in the *City of God:* “Just as God is the maker of the celestial gods, so man is the maker of the gods who are in the temples, content in their nearness to man. I mean the animated statues, endowed with sense and spirit, that do such great and unusual things; statues that foresee future events, predicting them from dreams and from many other things, that cause weaknesses in men and also cure them, that give sorrow and joy, in accord with one’s merits.
>
> “This view is also refuted by divine authority, for it is said in the Psalm (134:15-17): ‘The idols of the Gentiles are silver and gold, the works of men’s hands. They have a mouth and they speak not... neither is there any breath in their mouths.” [40]

In the third volume of his *De vita trilogy,* the *De vita coelitus comparanda* (“On obtaining life in the heavens”), Fr. Ficino impresses upon the minds of his Catholic readership his “lofty spiritual teaching” concerning what he regards as the benevolent utility of the Egyptian magic of Hermes, notwithstanding Aquinas:

> “When any (piece of) matter is exposed to superior things... immediately it suffers a supernal influence through that most powerful agent, of marvelous force and life, which is everywhere present... as a mirror reflects a face, or Echo the sound of a voice. Of this Plotinus gives an example when, imitating Mercurius, he says that the ancient priests, or Magi, used to introduce something divine and wonderful into their

---

[40] St. Thomas Aquinas, *Summa Contra Gentiles,* vol. 3, ch. 104, p. 93 (1956 Image Books edition translated by Vernon J. Bourke and reprinted by the University of Notre Dame in 1975). Also see chapters 105 (“Where the Performance of the Magicians Get their Efficacy”), and 106: “That the Intellectual Substance which Provides the Efficacy for Magic Works is not Morally Good.”

statues and sacrifices. He (Plotinus) holds, together with Trismegistus, that they did not introduce through these things spirits separated from matter (that is demons), but *mundana numina*... Mercurius himself, whom Plotinus follows, says that he composed through aerial demons, not through celestial or higher demons, statues from herbs, trees, stones, aromatics having within them a natural divine power (as he says)...

"There were skillful Egyptian priests who, when they could not persuade men by reason that there are gods, that is some spirit above men, invented that illicit magic which by enticing demons into statues made these appear to be gods...

"I at first thought, following the opinion of the Blessed Thomas Aquinas, that if they made statues which could speak, this could not have been only through stellar influence but through demons... But now let us return to Mercurius and to Plotinus. Mercurius says that the priests drew suitable virtues from the nature of the world and mixed these together. Plotinus follows him, and thinks that all can be easily conciliated in the soul of the world for it generates and moves the forms of natural things through certain seminal reasons infused with its divinity. Which reasons he calls gods for they are not separated from the Ideas in the supreme mind.'

"An interpretation of this passage is that Ficino used to agree with Thomas Aquinas, who explicitly condemns as demonic the magic in the *Asclepius,* but since he has read Plotinus' commentary he (Ficino) understands that, though there may have been bad Egyptian priests who used demonic magic, Hermes Trismegistus was not one of them. His power came only from the world, from his insight into the nature of the All as a hierarchy in which the influence of the Ideas descends from the Intellect of the World, through the 'seminal reasons' in the Soul of the World, to the material forms in the Body of the World. Hence, celestial images would have their power from the 'world' not from demons, being something in the nature of shadows of Ideas, intermediaries in the middle place between Intellect and Body, links in the chains by which the Neoplatonic Magus operates his magic and marries higher things to lower things.

"Thus, the magic of the *Asclepius,* reinterpreted through Plotinus, enters with Ficino's *De vita coelitus comparanda* into the Neoplatonic philosophy of the Renaissance, and, moreover, into Ficino's *Christian* Neoplatonism. The latter feat

necessitated, as we have seen, much ingenious evasion of authoritative Christian pronouncements." [41]

[41] Yates, *Giordano Bruno,* op.cit., pp. 66-68.

Man, the occult Catholics tell us, has been endowed with special powers of creation—not the least of which is bringing dead matter such as the building blocks of sculpture, marble and clay—to life, a feat consonant with the legendary creation of the *golem* by the sixteenth century rabbinic Kabbalist, Judah Loew of Prague.

What have these works of darkness and megalomania to do with Jesus Christ? Catholic Renaissance magicians like Ficino and Giovanni Pico were the apotheosis of Satanic pride and they spread that spiritual contagion throughout the Church, by means of *much ingenious evasion of authoritative Christian pronouncements.*

Ficino's published volumes were public texts and the sorcery and syncretism he advocated were little different from what Giordano Bruno would put forth in the next century, but Fr. Ficino was subservient to the papacy and Bruno was not, and there rests the difference. When a curial investigation of Ficino was proposed in 1489, it was quashed. Bruno meanwhile, was burned for advocating what Ficino's books had taught him, whereas Ficinio did not experience a single hour in any prison or before any Catholic court or tribunal. His heresy was notorious and it was perpetrated for decades in Florence, 170 miles north of the Vatican. Yet throughout his life and career he was completely immune from interdiction or repression of any kind. This immunity was not unique to Marsilio Ficino.

Chapter V

Pope Alexander's Wizard

"Pico's vision of the dignity of man, of man's transformative power as magus, owes a profound debt to his fellow Florentine Marsilio Ficino's recuperation of the ancient *hermetica* and of the reputation of its alleged author, Hermes Trismegistus. Together, Ficino and the younger Pico resurrected earlier traditions, some of them highly unorthodox, to give birth to a vigorous progeny, Renaissance magic." [1]

[1] James J. Bono, *The Word of God and the Languages of Man: Interpreting Nature in Early Modern Science and Medicine —Volume 1: From Ficino to Descartes,* pp. 26-27.

"Not until Pico della Mirandola did a Christian attempt to use cabalistic doctrines in a distinctly positive way, in support of Christian truth for Christians." [2]

[2] Werner L. Gundersheimer, *Journal of the Warburg and Courtauld Institutes,* Vol. 26, No. 1/2 (1963), p. 38.

Giovanni Pico, the young Count of Mirandola, was profoundly influenced by a declaration in the *Asclepius,* which he subsequently fashioned into an escutcheon of the Catholic Renaissance and its new magical understanding of the “dignity” of man. The *Asclepius* had proclaimed to the immense satisfaction of Pico and the popes and prelates who followed and shielded him: *“Magnum miraculum est horno, animal adorandum et honorandum”* (“Man is a great miracle, a living being to be adored and honored”).

Humans are indeed a miracle of God and as images of the divine they are due the dignity conferred upon them by their Creator. Our attention is drawn to the self-worship principle being established by this maxim of which Giovanni Pico was so enamored, which is also a principle evinced in the dogma and practice of Orthodox rabbinic Judaism. Here again we identify a primary characteristic of the occult mentality: the narcissism of devils.

[Page 182 Pope Alexander’s Wizard]

The Pharisees criticized Jesus for teaching and conveying the secrets of the universe, how it functioned and the meaning of life, directly to the peasants of Israel (the *am ha’aretz),* who were castigated by the Jewish religious elite for their “ignorance” of the Oral Law that would be, a few centuries later, committed to writing as the Mishnah and later, the Gemara, forming the Babylonian Talmud. Jesus Christ was engaging in the anti-occult act par excellence: freely teaching everyone, of whatever rank or status, both high and low; rich and poor alike. Those who had ears to hear and eyes to see were not excluded from knowledge by an Egyptian, Chaldean or Babylonian caste system or hierarchy. He violated the two-tier system of law and justice which is the mark of any despotism: one law for the “insiders” and another for the masses. The test of the justice of any code of law or legal system is its universality: does it apply to everyone?

In the supposedly vastly superior, enlightened, benevolent occult world, in comparison to which the true Catholic Church before the Renaissance is contrasted to ill effect, there is no such equality before the law. There is no right to access all the truth which the Son of God related while on earth. As noted, Pico expressed this elitism in his *Oratio De Hominis Dignitate,* more commonly known as *The Oration on the Dignity of Man.* But to what man is Pico referring, concerning this dignity? It is not Humanity. It is not the People. Rather, it is the “perfect” ones:

“...to disclose to the people the more secret mysteries, things hidden under the bark of the law and the rough covering of words, the secrets of the highest divinity, what was that other than to give what is holy to dogs and to cast pearls among swine? Consequently, it was not human prudence but divine command to keep these things secret from the people, and to communicate them to the perfect…” [3]

Here in a few lines is the encapsulation of the ideology which had thrust itself up from what had been only cracks in the cement of the medieval ecclesiastical edifice, to become the full-blown arcana of the Renaissance Church of Rome, empowering its systematic child molestation, lying (“mental reservation”), usury banking and “white” magic which has enveloped the hierarchy of the Church of Rome from then until now, no matter which “saintly” pontiff was at the helm. It is actuated by keeping the reality of these mortal sins and crimes, which flourish *sub rosa,* hidden from the people, i.e. the parish priests and the laity.

Pico cites Christ’s words in Matthew 7:6 concerning dogs and swine, so as to maintain the legitimacy of the secrets-keeping occult ideology in a Christian milieu. Our Lord, however, is most certainly not referring exclusively to the peasants and the poor or, for that matter, the wealthy and the officials, when he warned us not to give that which is sacred and holy to dogs and swine. As St. Peter declared, “God is no respecter of persons” (Acts 10:34). This is a truth that the Neoplatonic-Hermetic cabal cannot countenance, since that movement is based on division, while laying claim to the pluralist title of unifier and reconciler. The human being who behaves like a dog or a swine according to Jesus, who turns and rends the man or woman who conveys great truths, is *any person,* from PhD. to peasant, who lacks the vision to perceive that a profound truth has been freely and openly related, and lacks the gratitude to appreciate the magnitude of the gift. Contrary to Pico, Matthew 7:6 is not a mandate to exclude the common people, the *am ha’aretz,* from realities which the “perfect” may savor at will. To accuse the people of being pigs and dogs *in toto,* holds them up to contempt and constitutes an abominable derogation of their dignity as human beings. If we comprehend the depravity of the mind chained to occult idolatry, then we should not be surprised at the double-standard and *chutzpah* of Pico in undermining the supposed objective of his own homily.

“Ficino’s pupil, Pico della Mirandola… used Qabalistic and Neoplatonic ideas in an attempt to find common ground between Christianity, Judaism and Islam (which) brought accusations of heresy against him… Pope Alexander VI absolved him of heresy in 1493. Another advocate of Qabalism was the Franciscan (friar) Francesco di Giorgio… whose *De Harmonia Mundi* combined Qabalism with a preoccupation with the ideas of universal harmony...” [4]

---

[3] Giovanni Pico della Mirandola, *On the Dignity of Man,* (transl. C.G. Wallace), p. 30.

[4] McIntosh, op. cit., pp. 7-8.

Pico was not Father Ficino’s student alone. He studied canon law at the University of Bologna (1477-78), and theology at the University of Ferrara (1479), Padua (1480-1482), Pavia (1483-1484) and Paris (1485-1486). He studied with Ficino from 1484-1485. Pico taught that there was a great secret underlying the world’s significant religions, an *occulta concatenatio* (“hidden connection”) between them indicating their common root and heritage.

“Much of what Giovanni Pico della Mirandola has to say about the Tetragrammaton is found in the 900 *Conclusiones,* or *Theses,* which he planned to debate in Rome in 1486. This extraordinarily daring and innovative program blended Classical, Late Antique and medieval philosophy; Christian Kabbalah; the Hermetic tradition; and Pythagorean mathematics into a syncretic system designed to expose the unity and power of Ancient Truth and its ability to work both reformation and miracles... The antecedents of this bold project may lie in the highly syncretistic Neoplatonic systems developed in Late Antiquity after Plotinus— as in Proclus’s *Platonic Theology,* for example...

“The openness of Medici Florence to the generous integration of these diverse traditions no doubt provided a sympathetic context for the development of Christian Kabbalah... the extraordinary effervescence in European culture in Florence was also stimulated by the first major synthesis of Renaissance thought and Kabbalah... Pico without ambiguity declares that Kabbalah ‘is the key to understanding the marvelous power of Christ’s name...’ Pico’s use of Gematria, manipulation of numerical values of Hebrew words, is enthusiastic and prepares us for the later work of Reuchlin. Pico himself compares his *Scientiam alphabetariae revolutionis* with the *Ars combinandi* of Ramon Lull (c. 1235-1316) ...” [5]

[5] Robert Wilkinson, *Tetragrammaton: Western Christians and the Hebrew Name of God* (2005), p. 317.

Pico described his agenda in these terms, “The following nine hundred dialectical, moral, physical, mathematical, metaphysical, theological, magical, and kabbalistic opinions, including his own and those of the wise Chaldaeans, Arabs, Hebrews, Greeks, Egyptians, and Latins, will be argued publicly by Giovanni Pico della Mirandola, the Count of Concord... The doctrines to be debated are proposed separately but in respect to the parts of philosophy they are intermingled as in a medley, everything mixed together."

His *Nine Hundred Theses* (also known as *Nine Hundred Conclusions),* was published in Rome on December 7, 1486 by Eucharius Silber. Copies were dispatched to Catholic universities and posted throughout the "Eternal City." Pico was not seriously expecting to actually be debated by the hierarchy of the Church. His announcement was a public relations device to garner attention for his *Theses* which would win admirers throughout the West, thanks in part to the notoriety of the "proposed debate" concerning their merits and validity.

The see-no-evil academic Establishment takes at face value Pope Innocent VIII's pro forma condemnation of thirteen of the *900 Theses.* This narrative sets up the caricatured, set-piece psychodrama of Liberated Lover of Learning vs. Benighted, "Burn 'em at the Stake!" conservative Catholic authority figures. The pope could not publicly do otherwise than what he did when a large number of Pico's *Theses* centered on the rehabilitation of rabbinic theology, specifically the demonic Kabbalah. In 1487, no pontiff, no matter how much he might have been in secret sympathy with Pico, could have accepted with even neutrality the conclusion that a Judaic manual of black magic (Kabbalah) "testified of Christ" and was in fact a Christian text, as Pico had boldly proclaimed.

It was the outré aspect of the alleged proposed debate that electrified the Catholic intelligentsia and burnished Pico's reputation in what would soon become, in the sixteenth century, an above ground movement. Apologists may point to Innocent VIII's *rhetoric* against Pico's *Theses* all the like. It does not alter the fact that Pico, and most of his followers after his death, were virtually invulnerable to papal repression or inquisition. Eventually his followers were promoted to the highest levels of the Church, including popes who took Pico's counsels to heart.

Those who approach the subject of the papacy in the Renaissance who trust in surface appearances are going to be duped. To consider Innocent VIII an anti-occult pontiff is a sad jest. He did what was required of him in *the particular time-period when the advancement of the occult virus depended upon gestures that appeared to retard it.* Consequently, in the superficial legend, Innocent VIII is the anti-occult pope who interdicted Giovanni Pico della Mirandola. Actually, Innocent made the necessary gestures for appearance sake of impeding Pico, and with those gestures he mollified conservatives. The record shows that the pope's token and brief obstruction of Pico actually served to shield the Kabbalistic-heretic from demands from conservatives for stronger measures against him. By slapping Pico's wrist, Pico's enemies were pacified. To take this papal ruse at face value is wishful thinking on the part of those seeking grounds for their own confirmation-bias concerning the “staunchly conservative” Innocent VIII. False beliefs like this are founded upon ignorance. It was Cardinal Lorenzo Cibo, the “staunchly conservative” future Pope Innocent VIII, who was the earliest patron of Flavius Mithridates, the Kabbalistic Judaic who, thanks to future Pope Innocent, became preacher to the papal household of Sixtus IV, Pico’s handler, initiator and a homosexual suitor for Pico’s affections, as well as a Professor at a papally-chartered college. By bringing Mithridates to Rome and sponsoring his rise inside the Church, Innocent VIII while a cardinal made possible the Kabbalism of Pico.

Pico’s books survived to proceed to shape the intellectual life of the Catholic world long after Pico and Innocent VIII were in their graves.[6] In remarkably short order a reprint of the first edition appeared the next year (1487) in Ingolstadt, home to the University of Ingolstadt where Reuchlin, and much later Adam Weishaupt, would be members of the faculty. Its remarkable immediate re-publication in what would become, in the late eighteenth century, the capital of the Bavarian Illuminati (a city which, in 1487 was entirely in the orbit of the Church of Rome), is seldom mentioned. Behind the curtain of received opinion and consensus reality, Pico’s magnum opus was circulating without hindrance, issued by a German Catholic printing press. It was in high demand in record time. It was reprinted without interdiction in Catholic France (Paris) in 1532, in Catholic Italy (Venice) in 1557, and again in Paris in 1601. The genie was out of the bottle.

[The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome   Page 187]

Whole sections of the *Nine Hundred Theses* contain propositions undermining or contradicting St. Thomas Aquinas. Yet modern Catholic writers frequently misrepresent Pico as a Thomist. Only because the details of what constitutes the Kabbalah are largely unknown or obscured can Pico, for whom the doctrines of the Kabbalah are at the heart of his *philosophia nova,* be presented by “Catholic scholars” as supposedly in agreement with St. Thomas Aquinas. The depth of deception and misdirection is instructive.

“Pico’s historians have been especially insistent on an impossible agreement between himself and the writer he planned to attack most violently at Rome, St. Thomas Aquinas. In part, at least, systematic reasons lay behind this conflict, since Thomas’s system regularly violated the cosmic symmetries critical to Pico’s ‘new philosophy’...

---

[6] The Vatican preserved copies of the first edition of the *Nine Hundred Theses* and the Vatican Library in the twenty-first century continues to retain the *editio princeps,* as does the British Library. A hand-written facsimile of the 1486 printing is in Vienna at the *Osterreichische Nationalbibliothek* in Vienna.

"Pico's supposed agreement with Thomas has been especially emphasized by Catholic historians including (Avery) Dulles (1941) and DiNapoli (1965); also cf. the French theologians De Lubac (1974) and Roulier (1989). Renaissance antecedents for this reading were provided by Gianfrancesco Pico (his nephew), who in his (posthumous) spiritualized biography of his uncle (*Opera,* fol. 5v), claimed that whatever differences Pico had with Thomas early in life... Pico... disagreed with the Dominican theologian on only 'three or four out of ten thousand propositions...'

"The extreme violence of Pico's early polemics with the Dominicans is suggested in Pico's defense of his first examined thesis in (his) *Apology,* [7]

[7] Within his *Apology,* his harshest criticism of Aquinas and the Dominicans will be found in Pico's section on the descent of Christ into "hell." (Actually, Jesus descended into *sheol* i.e. the grave, not the fiery pit of hell (*Gehenna*).

in *Opera,* 125-150... Gianfrancesco also quotes Pico's passing praise for Thomas in the *Heptaplus,* which was written while Pico was actively attempting to repair his differences with the Dominicans..." [8]

[8] Stephen A. Farmer, *Syncretism in the West: Pico's 900 Theses* (1998), pp. 47-48.

Later in the *Theses,* Pico favorably quotes "the Arab... Moses the Egyptian." This is reference to Rabbi Moses Maimonides

who was no Arab though he was influential among the family of the Kurdish Islamic King (and conqueror of Jerusalem), Saladin. In his *Avodah Zarah* laws, in *Avodat Kochavim* chapter 10, Maimonides, a legal authority of great repute in Ashkenazi Judaism, issued binding admonitions for killing Christians. Of Jesus Christ he wrote, "May the name of the wicked rot." [9]

[9] Hoffman, *Judaism Discovered* (2008), p. 483.

In spite of this hate-speech, Maimonides is included in Pico's synthesis and here it is apropos to observe the shape-shifting quality of syncretists like Pico and the extent to which theological and spiritual identities are manipulated and fused. For example, we can point to the very real, fundamental differences between Plato and Aristotle but by the time of the emergence of the first wave of Neoplatonists in Rome, Athens, Alexandria and Apamea in the 3rd to the 5th centuries after Christ, the differences between Platonists and Aristotelians were being blurred and for a time a symbiosis was crafted. There is not a strict respect for objective truth in syncretic systems, as for example in the massive syncretic tome by Proclus, *Platonic Theology,* which is featured in Pico's *Theses.* The Church of Rome from the Renaissance onward is a shape-shifting enterprise deeply committed to relativism and situation ethics concealed beneath a stern dogmatic veneer. The Catholic Pico, and before him Proclus, are personifications of this “modernist heresy” which is anything but modern. “Proclus’s goal was to demonstrate that every line of Platonic Scriptures was in total harmony with every other —with the supreme syncretic principle that ‘all things exist in all things in their own mode,’ ensuring that in times of special exegetical need, any god, mythopoeic image, or abstract concept could stand in for any other... Pico planned to correlate this material further with the ten Kabbalistic *sefirot,* with Pseudo-Dionysius’s hierarchies of angels, and related syncretic constructs... that Pico found in the ‘Chaldean Theologians,’ Pythagoras, Mercury (Hermes) Trisemegistus, Zoroaster, Orpheus etc.” [10]

---

[10] Farmer, op.cit., pp. 314-315.

The final destination of this syncretic peregrination is the lie that God and Satan are one. Pico in his *Nine Hundred Theses* insinuates this as follows: *“Eaedem sunt litterae nominis cacodemonis qui est princeps mundi huius et nominis dei Triagrammaton, et qui sciuerit ordinare transpositionem deducet unum ex alio”* (“The letters of the name of the evil spirit who is the prince of this world and of the three-letter name of God are the same, and whoever knows how to order the transposition can deduce one from another”).

In his *Conclusiones Magicae* of his *Theses,* Pico distinguishes between black magic and good magic. The former he terms *potestatum harum tenebrarum* (“powers of darkness”), and the latter he designates as “natural magic,” and asserts that the Church permits it and does not prohibit it: *“Magia naturalis licita est et non prohibita.”* From there he proceeds to state the most grievous heresy of his *Theses,* which eventually infiltrated elements of the hierarchy of the Church of Rome, never to be completely eradicated: *“Nulla est scientia quae nos magis certificet de diuinitate Christi quam magia et cabala”* (“There is no science that assures us more of the divinity of Christ than magic and kabbalah”).

He further alludes to the word magic and gematria incumbent on his version of supposed “angelic” sorcery: *“Ex secretioris philosophiae principiis necesse est confitera plus posse caracteres et figuras in opere Magico, quam possit quaecunque qualitas materialis”* (“Out of the principles of the more secret philosophy it is necessary to acknowledge that characters and figures are more powerful in a magical work than any material quality”). Thomas Aquinas explicitly condemned as demonic the use of words and numbers in magical rites.

In his section of the *Theses* on “Conclusions Cabalisticae,” Pico proceeds to put forth delirium for occult suckers and the self-deceived, i.e. that every follower of the Kabbalah is a believer in Jesus: “Every Hebrew Kabbalist, following the principles and sayings of the science of Kabbalah, is inevitably forced to concede, without addition, omission or variation, precisely what the Catholic faith of Christians maintains concerning the Trinity and the divine Person, Father, Son and Holy Ghost... No Hebrew Kabbalist can deny that the name of Jesus, if we interpret it following the method and principles of the Kabbalah, signifies precisely all this and nothing else, that is: God the Son and the Wisdom of the Father, united to human

nature in the unity of assumption through the third Person of God, who is the most ardent fire of love."

There is no denying that Pico, with Italian Medici backing, forged the symbiosis of Judaism and Catholicism by founding the tradition of "Christian Kabbalah," an oxymoron if ever there was one. He did so under the direction of his handler, the aforementioned Guglielmo Raimondo de Moncada, the enigmatic Judaic "convert to Catholicism" who was known by his alias, "Flavius Mithridates." With papal patronage Moncada/Mithridates was appointed Professor of Oriental Languages at the Studium Urbis in Rome in 1482. He was an early teacher of Pico.[11]

[11] Pico's other Judaic "mentor" was Elia del Medigo.

"...there are reasons to suspect a sinister role for Flavius Mithradites, whose reputation in the Renaissance as something of a con man was apparently well-deserved. Pico's involvement with this colorful figure —who liked to style himself as Pico's scorned lover—constitutes one of the strangest personal stories of the period..." [12]

[12] Farmer, op.cit, p. 14.

There can be no question of Pico's esteem for Judaism's Oral traditions which formed the Talmud, and its black magic textbooks classified under the heading, Kabbalah ("cabala"). Referring to the Oral Law traditions in his *Oration on the Dignity of Man,* Pico wrote:

"Esdras, then governor of the church, after he corrected the book of Moses, clearly knew that the custom instituted by the forefathers of passing the doctrine on by hand could not be preserved through the exiles, slaughters, flights, and captivity of the people of Israel, and that the secrets of heavenly doctrine, granted to him by God, would henceforth perish, as they could not remain long in memory without the mediation of writings."

Pico moves from the Oral Law tradition in general to an elucidation of the origin of the Kabbalah specifically: "Consequently, he decreed that all the wise men who were then left should be called together, and each of them should bring together what he remembered about the mysteries of the law.

After scribes were summoned, it should then be written down in seventy volumes, for there were about that many wise men in the Sanhedrin. Do not take my word only for this, fathers, but listen to Esdras himself speaking:

'...you will save the last seventy books so that you may pass them on to the wise among your people. For in them is the heart of understanding and the fountain of wisdom and the river of knowledge. And so have I done.'

"These are the words of Esdras. These are the books of the knowledge of Cabala. Esdras proclaimed at the beginning in a clear voice that in these books was rightly the heart of understanding, that is, an ineffable theology of supersubstantial deity, the fountain of wisdom, that is, an exact metaphysics of intelligible angels and forms, and the river of knowledge, that is, a most sure philosophy of natural things. Pope Sixtus IV, who preceded Innocent VIII under whom we happily live, provided with the greatest care and zeal, that these books should be translated into Latin for the public advantage of our faith. [13]

[13] Pico della Mirandola, *On the Dignity of Man,* (op.cit.), pp. 31-32.

"Moses on the mountain received from God not only the law which, as written down in five books, he left to posterity, but also a more secret and true interpretation of the law. But God commanded him to publish the law indeed to the people, yet not to pass on in writing the interpretation of the law..." [14]

[14] Hanegraaff, *Esotericism* (op.cit.), p. 56.

Pico's buncombe is a classic restatement directly from the rabbinic storehouse of fairy tales which they have woven outside the Bible and which Jesus Christ denounced in solemn warnings in Mark 7 and Matthew 15 as the "traditions of men." Here these fantasies of rabbis are proposed by Pico as the basis for the clandestine theology of the Renaissance Church of Rome. To justify this Judaizing, the scoundrel Pico della Mirandola will drag Jesus down into this stew of mendacity, but first he sought to rehabilitate the Hermetic magicians of Egypt, Persia, Babylon and Attic Greece by stating that to the extent to which those sorcerers accepted the notion of an extra-Biblical Mosaic revelation, they were not idolaters, but members of the perennially true religion. This led to the formation of the legend, revived by the New Age Theosophists in the late nineteenth century and accepted as true by the Nazis, that Moses himself was a magician.

Pico then proceeds to mount an outlandish hoax concerning the contents of the satanic Kabbalah, claiming that these rabbinic texts contain a refutation of these who argue that Jesus was not the Messiah. He adds that the Kabbalah affirms the Trinity, the divinity of Jesus, Christ's atoning sacrifice and, to top it all off, the same theology "which we read daily in Paul and Dionysius, in Jerome and Augustine"! [15]

What a disgraceful farce from a shameless liar. The misfortune for the Catholic Church is that, along with Fr. Ficino, Pico was among the most influential of papist writers for Catholic intellectuals in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries. His brazen deceit helped to convert numerous Catholic leaders into Kabbalists and Talmudists, who nonetheless remained inside the Church, burrowing ever deeper.

These were not democratic levelers. Infiltrators in this era were in favor of a gloriously elaborate liturgy, cappa magna gowns, an aristocratic Church and an elected papal monarch who was sovereign above all laws, just as *Chazal* (the collective authors of the Babylonian Talmud) were sovereign above all laws, having overruled God Himself, and having convinced God to confess their superiority over Him (Baya Metzia 59b). Meanwhile, the demands of the Dialectic are such that contemporary disinformation takes the form of "conjecture" which posits the likelihood that Pico only praised and promoted the Kabbalah as part of an "apologetic attempt" to use it as "an anti-Jewish tool of conversion." [16]

Christ, the Trinity, the saints *and* ceremonial magic; imagine that; and in rabbinic texts that are actually Christian texts, only the rabbis don't know it yet. This is Catholic?

Pico himself assures us that this is the case. After restating his belief that "the traditions of Egypt" and "the philosophy of Plato" agree with "Catholic truth," he writes concerning the rabbis of the Renaissance, "If they agree with us anywhere, we shall order the Hebrews to stand by the ancient traditions of their fathers; if anywhere they disagree, then drawn up in Catholic legions we shall make an attack upon them. In short, whatever we detect foreign to the truth of the Gospels we shall refute to the extent of our power, while whatever we find holy and true we shall bear off from the synagogue, as from a wrongful possessor...” [17]

---

[15] Pico della Mirandola, *On the Dignity of Man,* (op.cit.), p. 32.

[16] Pier Cesare Bori, "The Historical and Biographical Background of the Oration," in *Pico della Mirandola Oration on the Dignity of Man: A New Translation and Commentary* (2012), p. 104.

[17] Mirandola, Giovanni Pico, “Proem to the Third Book, Third Exposition: Of the Angelic and Invisible World” in *On the Dignity of Man, On Being and the One, Heptaplus* (dedicated to Lorenzo de’ Medici 1489), transl. by Douglas Carmichael et al. (1965).

Academics insist that it is so — that Pico’s project was a fully Catholic, “apologetic and polemical” conversion mission to the Jews, and that he honestly believed that the Kabbalah was a Christian series of volumes which, once the Jews understood the true nature of their own rabbinic writings, as revealed to them by Pico, they would be converted to Catholicism. These claims are completely divorced from reality.

To paraphrase C. Wright Mills, *here we are approaching a curious juncture in the history of human insanity.* There is nothing in the text of the Kabbalah that even remotely testifies of Jesus Christ or the Gospel. The nine volumes of Daniel Matt’s complete English translation of the Zohar *(Sefer ha-Zohar,* “Book of Radiance”), which comprise the major corpus of the Kabbalistic books, as well as Nathan Wolski’s tenth volume in the series, *Midrash ha-Ne’lam,* representing the earliest edition of the Zoharic texts (published by Stanford University), all testify to the fact that the Kabbalah consists of a pottage of magic, superstition, demonology, hallucinatory fantasy, and relentless falsification of the Bible. The light of Jesus Christ is entirely absent from the Kabbalah, while the goddess, denominated *“Binah”* and *“Shekhinah”* and symbolized by the moon, is omni-present (cf. Zohar 3:19b). The Kabbalah offers a catalogue of pipe-dreams about Biblical patriarchs and matriarchs. A few examples:

- Adam engendered female demons from his spilled semen. Eve copulated with Satan and conceived Cain (Zohar 1:55a).[18]

[18] In *Pirqei de-Rabbi Eli’ezer*: 21, Rabbi Yehudah and Rabbi Shimon teach that even Abel was contaminated with the slime which the serpent injected into Eve during their alleged sexual intercourse. *(Pirqei de-Rabbi Eli’ezer* is an influential text in the writings of Rabbis Amram Gaon, Rashi and his grandson Jacob ben Meir [“Rabbeinu Tam”], and Moses Maimonides).

- The nocturnal emissions of males are caused by Na’amah, the mother of the king of demons who titillates men in their sleep (Tishby, *Zohar,* 3:1365-66; pp. 309-310).
- The patriarchs Amram, Levi and Benjamin were conceived without sin (Zohar, 1:57b).
- The manner in which Abraham attempted to sacrifice Isaac was wrong and God holds a grudge against Abraham for this wrong (Zohar 2:33a).

- Moses used a speculum-like device (akin to a crystal ball) to view invisible beings (Zohar 2:23b).

The Kabbalah spans the gamut from pornographic and nonsensical to profoundly Satanic:

- Israel must make sacrifices to Satan so that he will leave Israel unmolested (Zohar 2:33a.)
- The evil impulse is good, and without the evil impulse Israel cannot prevail in the world *(Zohar* 1:61a).

There is much more like this, enough to fill many dozens of pages. Pico was either a deliberate deceiver concerning the contents of the Kabbalah, or he was a fraud who had scant knowledge of the Aramaic language[19] taking the word of Flavius Mithridates and other Judaics concerning its contents.

One of the objectives of the Cryptocracy during the Renaissance was to raise the status and prestige of rabbinic Judaism by absolving it of traditional Catholic charges of diabolism, counterfeiting the Bible and exhibiting an antichrist hatred. Whether or not Pico was a conscious conspirator or a useful idiot in misrepresenting the Kabbalah and achieving this objective, the mission was indeed accomplished. The Kabbalistic theology which crept into the Roman Catholic Church stoked the trend toward Renaissance paganism in papal Italy:

---

[19] Pico often refers to the Judaics of his time as "Hebrews," but the major Kabbalistic and Talmudic texts were written in Aramaic, not Hebrew.

"Pico set out to prove the Christian truth by means of Jewish Kabbalah... In the attempt to apply midrashic techniques such as *gematria, temurah* and *notarikon* which had formerly been restricted to Jewish circles... unheard-of new possibilities seemed to open up for scriptural exegesis and metaphysical speculation. Not only did the biblical text reveal hidden levels of meaning never suspected before, but the correspondences that could be established with pagan mythology and philosophy seemed simply stupefying... The dialectics of concealment and revelation are central to Jewish kabbalah... not only did kabbalah become an integral part of the Renaissance discourse of ancient wisdom, but this innovation resulted in a very strong emphasis on 'esotericism' in the specific sense of a concern with hidden or concealed secrets... such concerns were already implied by the very concept that Christian truths lay concealed under the surface of ancient pagan myths and philosophies, but could be uncovered by means of allegorical or symbolic exegesis.

“This potential came to full development under the influence of a tradition, Jewish kabbalah, which had always been esoteric to its very core. It lies entirely in the line of this development that —to give only one famous example —Heinrich Cornelius Agrippa published his great compendium of ancient wisdom in 1533, he called it *De occulta philosophia...* His well-known dedicatory letter to Johannes Trithemius confirms that he saw his work as an attempt to revive the science of the Magi and other sages of antiquity, and its third and final book was dominated by the kabbalah.” [20]

[20] Hanegraaff, *Esotericism* (op.cit.), pp. 63 and 65-67.

“Pico’s other esoteric methods were equally extreme. Following the fact that numbers were represented by letters in Semitic languages and Greek, various techniques commonly known as *gematria* were developed in antiquity for transforming words and texts through their numerical values... These methods were employed widely in antiquity in dream analysis, mystical and prophetic exegesis, apocalyptic composition, as well as for syncretic ends, and following predictable patterns became progressively more complex and systematic in the Middle Ages. Thus (Gershom) Scholem notes one kabbalistic manuscript that lists seventy-two methods of *gematriot,* presumably one for each of the characters in God’s secret name of seventy-two letters...

[Page 196 Pope Alexander’s Wizard]

“In one thesis he (Pico) claimed that unspecified *gematria*-like techniques were the key to his syncretic fusion of natural magic and Cabala. Pico employed related esoteric methods that involved anagrammatic manipulation of Scriptures, drawn mainly from the thirteenth and fourteenth century writings of the Spanish kabbalist Abraham Abulafia and his commentators. In the *Apology,* Pico compared this ‘science of the revolution of the alphabet’ *(scientia alphabetariae revolutionis)* or ‘art of combination’ *(ars combinandi),* as he variously called it, to the method known to the Latins as the *ars Raymundi* —that is, to the anagrammatic methods of the Christian Spaniard Raymond Lull... Pico syncretically fused *gematria* with other numerological techniques in his ‘way of numbers’ (*via numerorum*) ... His goal here was to unite the numerological symbolism of the Pythagoreans—syncretically fused with Neo-Platonic metaphysics in deep antiquity —with *gematria* and less formal types of number symbolism in Scriptures, in the Greek and Roman church fathers, and in various scholastic and esoteric sources, in order to unveil secret harmonies buried there...

“The origins of the gnostic *aeons,* Christian, Buddhist and Hindu trinities, Neo-Platonic *henads,* kabbalistic *sefirot,* and countless analogous constructs can all be traced to compilational processes like these... Correlations like this were not systematically ‘neutral.’ They were a powerful force in the progressive movement towards transcendentalism, ethical and religious universality... (t)ransformed by repeated syncretic fusions...” [21]

[21] Farmer, op.cit., pp. 63-65; 75-77.

This is the theological basis for Pope John Paul II’s 1986 Assisi prayer assembly of the world’s religions, including leaders of Talmudic-rabbinic, Buddhist, and animist (pagan) religions in Italy, nearly 500 years after Pico published his *Nine Hundred Theses* in Italy in 1486. Father Marsilio Ficino’s pagan magic expressed in his *De vita coelitus comparanda* became the synthesis of the magical theology (*magia naturalis*) of Pico, and both derived direction from Ficino’s 1463 translation of the *Corpus Hermeticum,* which was presented to the Church and the West as benevolent Renaissance white magic.

The Neoplatonic-Hermetic objective of penetrating the Church sufficiently to derogate its faithful witness to the Biblical proscription against all forms of magic and sorcery, by concocting a category of “natural” or “white” magic, was achieved by the new “enlightened” attitude toward rabbinic texts. Pico wrote: “I have proposed theorems about magic, too, wherein I have signified that magic is two-fold. The first sort is put together by the work and authorship of demons, and is a thing, as God is true, execrable and monstrous. The other sort is, when well explored, nothing but the absolute consummation of the philosophy of nature... Zoroaster’s magic is nothing but that knowledge of divine things wherein the kings of Persia educated their sons... the magic of Xalmosis is medicine of the soul... When we shall have well explored these wonders by means of this natural magic we are speaking of, we shall be inspired more ardently to the worship and love of the maker...”[22]

[22] *Pico della Mirandola: Oration on the Dignity of Man* (1998), pp. 26-27 and 29.

More often spelled “Zalmoxis,” in Greek legends of Thrace, the magician Xalmosis/Zalmoxis is a Pythagorean trickster who fakes his own death and resurrection.[23]

[23] Cf. Burkert, *Lore and Science,* op. cit., p. 157.

Pico invokes his name as a signal to his fellow initiates, conveying the occult doctrine that prevarication and duplicity are necessary tools and truth cannot be revealed to non-initiates. As we have already noted, in the argot of the Pharisees and the Talmud of Babylon, Judaic peasants who preferred the written Torah (Old Testament) and scorned the man-made Oral traditions, were derided as peasant ignoramuses. About them, the Talmud states in BT Pesahim 49: a-b: “Our Rabbis taught: Six things were said about the ignoramuses: We do not commit testimony to them; we do not accept testimony from them; we do not reveal a secret to them; we do nothing for their orphans; we do not appoint them stewards over money; and we must not join their company on the road. If an *am ha'arertz* loses something,

the scholar is not required to notify him; the am *ha'arertz* should not benefit from any physical good in this world!" [24]

[24] Cf. the *am ha'aretz* section of *Judaism Discovered* (2008), pp. 29-30. Modern Orthodox Judaism interprets BT Pesahim 49b as stating that "Jewish ignoramuses are greater antisemites than Gentiles." The Kabbalah (Zohar: Exodus 7b) teaches that at the "end of days" the *am ha'arertz,* these "wicked Jews," will become the allies of the enemies of Klal Yisroel" (the "Jewish" people).

"*We do not reveal a secret to them."* This is the two-tiered law system of an anti-Biblical ideology. Jesus was hounded by the Pharisees for speaking freely and openly to the peasants of Israel. Why would he not? They were "the people" who loved Him and John the Baptist. But the insider/outsider, lord/peasant dual-standard, is ever present in the organizations of the occult. It is one of the most telling signifiers of the western secret societies.

To adhere to Biblical doctrine faithfully without adding to it or subtracting from it is an anti-occult action. The western occult movement historically has sought to tar Moses, the Bible and Jesus Himself as heirs to a "secret tradition." There are scores of books claiming Jesus was schooled in the forerunner of the Talmudic tradition; that he did not come to found "Christianity" and that he was observant of the occult customs of the rabbis. Occult agents occupying teaching positions in universities, and executive positions in publishing houses and media outlets, repeat these lies and gain credibility from the repetition.

The New Testament bears witness to the fact that Jesus was not the heir of any "perennial" theology consonant with the beliefs of the Pharaohs, Plato, Zoroaster or the rabbinic Oral Law system. Jesus Christ is completely outside the pagan *weltanschauung.* It has nevertheless been the task of mountebanks such as Giovanni Pico della Mirandola to drag Him down into that swamp. The effort is futile.

Scripture scholar John F. MacArthur summarizes the profoundly disenchanting, anti-occult nature of Our Lord and Redeemer, Jesus Christ: "On one occasion a group of Scribes and Pharisees from Jerusalem chided Jesus for allowing His disciples to 'transgress the tradition of the elders' by not (ritually) washing their hands before they ate. Jesus countered by asking, 'And why do you yourselves transgress the commandment of God for the sake of your tradition? (Matt. 15:1-6; Mark 7) ...After Jesus' first cleansing of the temple, 'the chief priests, and scribes, and elders came to him, and began saying to Him, 'By what authority are you doing these things?' (Mark 11:27-28). 'These things' referred to not only his driving out the moneychangers from the temple (vv. 15-16) but also to His authoritative teaching (vv. 17-18). Those leaders knew that Jesus had not been educated in a scribal school or personally tutored by a leading rabbi. Nor did He ever credit venerated scribes or rabbis as the source of His teaching... Jesus' authority did not come from ecclesiastical title, scribal training or sacerdotal position, none of which He possessed. Nor did it come from popular Jewish beliefs of His time, many of which were based on myths, legends, and racial and religious prejudice (cf. Titus 1:14). It clearly did not come from rabbinical tradition... Jesus, the sinless and perfect Son of God, limited Himself to speaking nothing during His incarnation except the truth He received from His Father." [25]

[25] John F. MacArthur, *The MacArthur New Testament Commentary: Titus* (1996), pp. 126-127.

Pico and his fellow Gnostic-papists professed to possess secret knowledge which placed them on a higher level than mere common Catholics. He and his cohort thought they knew God better than others, but in fact they knew Him not at all. Their deeds show them to be detestable, disobedient antichrists. "Nothing unclean and no one who practices abomination and lying shall ever come into the holy place..." (Rev. 21:27). Occultists proceed "according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, of the spirit that is now working in the sons of disobedience... They attempt to deceive with empty words and because of these things the wrath of God comes upon the sons of disobedience." (Ephesians 2:2 and 5:6).

Observe Pico the serpent at work as he quotes approvingly the tradition of secrets-keeping occultism: "It was the opinion of the ancient theologians that divine subjects and the secret Mysteries must not be rashly divulged... the Egyptians had sculpted sphinxes in all their temples, for no other reason than to indicate that divine things, even when they are committed to writing, must be covered with enigmatic veils and dissimulation." [26]

[26] Pico della Mirandola, *Commento* (1486).

Pico is dropping more than a hint about the methods that are being used when he writes that "divine things... must be covered with... dissimulation." The definition of *dissimulation* is "concealment of what really is, under a feigned semblance of something different." This is how Satan's work in the world advances—under another name—such as “Christian Kabbalah” and “Vatican II ecumenism.”

The Church hierarchy was becoming more and more enigmatically veiled during the Renaissance. To unmask child molestation or conspiracy and infiltration inside the Church became ever more difficult as a consequence of this veiling, which violates the Word of God. Jesus declared, “I spoke openly to the world... and in secret I have said nothing” (John 18:20). This is the simple, clean, pure and gloriously straight path to God. It overcomes paganism, Gnosticism, Neoplatonic-Hermeticism, Freemasonry, Talmudic and Kabbalistic Judaism and Rome’s Renaissance usurper Church. This is the test of any institution or organization: is it completely open or does it keep secrets? Concealment became in-grained in the framework of Rome’s hierarchical popery as it cast off the last vestiges of the true Catholic Church. This was its Neoplatonic-Hermetic inheritance which continues in the twenty-first century.

“Whenever ‘the mysteries of the ancients’ were invoked by... Ficino or Pico della Mirandola... they saw the early mystery cults through the eyes of Platonic philosophers who had already interlarded them with *mystéres littéraires.* Thus, Plato appeared to them... as the heir of an ancient wisdom for which a ritual disguise had been invented by the founders of the mysteries themselves. And the philosophical cunning thus imputed to those early sages was ascribed also to the Neoplatonic magicians...” [27]

[27] Edgar Wind, op. cit., p. 7.

Pico merges Pharaonic Egypt, Plato and the Kabbalah in the belief they contain at least some of the waters of the rivers of Catholic truth. His papally-protected disciple, Lodovico Lazzarelli, was more specific. In his *Crater Hermetis,* Lazzarelli quotes approvingly Porphyry’s statement that with regard to occult tradition (“wisdom”), “The first of those who began to pass on the tradition drank the clear waters of the Nile” and “it was by way of him (Hermes), that wisdom reached the Hebrews.”

When Pope Pius X wrote against the “synthesis of all heresies” here it was, the perverted syncretic claim that Egyptian diabolism, as filtered through its subsequent manifestations in the sorcerers of Babylon, Orphic and Attic Greece, Persia and the heirs of these cumulative traditions — the rabbinic descendants of the Pharisees—proved the truth of Jesus Christ and the Bible.

If we limit ourselves to a study of Neoplatonic-Hermetic and Kabbalistic usurpation of the Church solely in terms of the decay of divine dogma and the infiltration of the hierarchy, then we will fail to see the result of this revolution within the Church of Rome. One cannot adopt the theology of Judaism in its Talmudic and Kabbalistic forms, and the Babylonian and Egyptian paganism from which it derives its gnosis, without aspiring to be that ‘god’ in the Garden of Eden which was the destiny promised to Adam and Eve if they would disobey their Creator. The first disaster was brought about by pride; by man-playing-God. The Church *prior* to the Renaissance and the post-Renaissance eras, had labored ceaselessly to teach man his place in the universe. He could advance by the talents of his God-given reason within the bounds of Revealed Truth and Natural Law. But he could not aspire to be himself a god by manipulating creation, whether through nuclear power, genetic modification of crops or cloning humans. The way forward for these civic forms of black magic was paved by the Renaissance ideology as birthed in Catholic Italy by Cusa, Plethon, Ficino and Ficino’s pupil, Pico.

Giovanni Pico della Mirandola died in Florence on November 17, 1494 at the age of thirty-one. He would not live to see his ideology ascendant in the Church of Rome but he would not die until he had made that ascendancy certain. Agrippa, Erasmus and Johannes Reuchlin were his intellectual heirs, students and admirers. By the time Reuchlin’s career was at its nadir we have indisputable evidence of the role that the Church of Rome played in providing cover to Reuchlin, who was an alter-Pico. Pico had suffered no lingering negative consequences for his diabolism. His philosophy was so lightly (though with much theatrical fanfare) interdicted by Pope Innocent VIII [28] that it gained posthumous circulation throughout Europe and Britain, becoming the Reuchlin movement, and branching out into many other sectors of the papist vineyard, through Steuco, Lazzarelli and numerous neo-Catholic conspirators and infiltrators.

“Despite his papal troubles, Pico found time in these years for intense textual studies, most of them conducted in Florence or in the villa at Fiesole that Lorenzo de’ Medici gave to Pico... In this period Pico composed the *Heptaplus, Commentary on the Psalms, On Being and the One, Disputations against DivinitoryAstrology,* and a number of other works.” [29]

His text with the title that refers to an opposition to astrology is not what its name implies. “...the text’s main arguments... are in total harmony with the cosmological ideas that Pico introduced eight years earlier in the *Nine*

[28] Relatively few historians have sought to investigate the extent to which Pope Innocent VIII’s relatively mild strictures imposed on Pico were colored by the fact that in political and legal battles for control of the duchy of Mirandola fought between factions of the Mirandola family, Pope Innocent was allied with Pico’s brother (and heir) Antonmaria, who resided for a time at the papal court, against the faction led by Galeotto della Mirandola (Gianfrancesco’s father), who were backed by the imperial court.

[29] Farmer, op. cit., p. 138.

Hundred Theses. Pico never doubted that (astrological) influences of some sort flowed from the heavens to earth. The question was how those influences operated." [30]

[30] Ibid., p. 139.

Pico disputed horoscope astrology and predictions related to individual destinies. He did not deny what he termed "true astrology," which he said consisted of astrological magic as it related to the cosmos—magical power derived from the stars. This star-cult is the mandate of the state religion of Pharaonic Egypt. [31]

[31] Cf. Richard H. Wilkinson, *The Complete Temples of Ancient Egypt* (2000), pp. 37 and 173; R.A. Schwaller de Lubicz, *Sacred Science* (1982), pp. 26-28 and 174-179; Rosalie David, *Religion and Magic in Ancient Egypt* (2002), p. 90.

In addition to citing its core stellar theology in his *Disputations,* he simultaneously denounces Egyptian black magic and declares vehemently that he is "no magician" of that tradition. By the time Pico wrote the *Disputations* he was seeking cover for his diabolic Kabbalism in the *Nine Hundred Theses,* and his Neoplatonism in his *Concord of Plato and Aristotle.* Consequently, in the pages of his *Disputations* one finds denunciations of the evil emanations of Chaldeans, Egyptians and even "Hebrew *magistri."* Beware of this dissimulation.

"Anyone doubting that Pico was capable of intentional duplicity of this sort only needs to recall the subtle debating traps planted on every page of the nine hundred theses... Pico (had) an obvious motive for seeking whatever intellectual cover the *Disputations Against Divinitory Astrology* might provide."[32]

[32] Farmer, op. cit., p. 149.

Indeed, in the first sentence of his *Nine Hundred Theses* he refers to the *"Theologicis, Magicis, Cabalisticis, cum suis tum sapientum Chaldeorum... Aegyptiorum..."* ("Theological, Magical, Cabalistic opinions, including his own and those of the wise Chaldeans and... Egyptians...").

The study of the lives of these occult initiates is akin to the vigilance necessary in approaching Talmudic, Kabbalistic and other rabbinic sacred volumes where unscrupulous techniques for subterfuge and duplicity, found under technical exegetical terms such as *Gezara shava* and *pilpul,* are rampant and institutionalized. [33]

[33] These techniques are examined in *Judaism Discovered,* pp. 169-174; 229-236.

Pico, as a close student of the Kabbalah and other sacred rabbinic texts, adopted these crooked and disingenuous methods for his own. His nephew, Gianfrancesco, seems to have followed suit.

Though Gianfrancesco Pico della Mirandola was disinherited by his Uncle Pico, in favor of his enemy inside the family, Giovanni's brother, Antonmaria Pico, Gianfrancesco nonetheless gained control of some of his uncle's posthumous manuscripts, which were eventually sold to Cardinal Domenico Grimani and deposited in Rome. For the remaining four decades of his life Gianfrancesco spinned his uncle's views into a pious conservative, Catholic-Orthodox milieu and painted an equally cosmetic and distorted picture of him in his 1495 biography, the *Vita loannis Pici Mirandulae* (published in 1496 along with the collected works [*Opera*] of Giovanni Pico della Mirandola; Gianfrancesco's biography was subsequently translated and published in England by Thomas More).

Gianfrancesco is often identified as a zealous follower of Savonarola and this allegation is "proof' to some people that Gianfrancesco was indeed a true Catholic. Yet we must ask, what true Catholic would falsify the life and work of his uncle to the extent that Gianfrancesco did in his *Vita Ioannis Pici?* We also note that in the pivotal battle between the Neoplatonists and the Thomists over the ethical validity of the views of Aristotle, Gianfrancesco sided with Plato against Dante and Aristotle. Gianfrancesco was not an unambiguously orthodox Roman Catholic. It seems he may have been tasked with ensuring that his Uncle Giovanni Pico was presented to the uninitiated Catholic posterity as an eccentric thinker who was nonetheless within the bounds of what constitutes a good Catholic. That "good Catholicism" would however, soon bear fruit named Reuchlin. Moreover, before his decease, Pico gained a papal ally, Alexander VI. There were more to come.

The conservative Protestant scholar Casuabon saw in the philosophers of the Church of Rome, the heresy of syncretism. Casaubon, in his *De rebus sacris et ecclesiasticis,* eloquently denounced Rome's syncretic attempts to link Hermes and Christ, stating that they "are without value, seeing as how not even the apostle uses profane sources when discussing the faith... Shall we be of such little faith as to defend Christian truth by means of pagan evidence?... I resolutely condemn and detest this project with all my heart. For he offends the truth with his assumption that it required a defense of lies, that is, the support of the devil."

Pico's syncretism, which views superstition-steeped rabbinic antichrists as a bridge to a profound understanding of the Old Testament— and therefore the roots of the Church itself—is also the theology of Cardinal De Lubac, the Second Vatican Council, and Popes John Paul II, Benedict XVI, Francis, and many other “princes of the Church.” De Lubac was to such an extent an epitome of dissimulation that he manages the thaumaturgic balancing act of lauding Pico, the personification of the spirit of the Renaissance, while reproving the Renaissance.[34]

It is not the case that Pico was condemned in the sixteenth century and only revived by the modernist enablers of the Judaizing delusions of the twentieth. We should be mindful that “traditional” popes and “Catholic saints” are numbered among Pico’s followers, including Thomas More, one of the favorite saints of contemporary conservative Catholic intellectuals.[35]

Pico himself thanks Pope Sixtus IV for publishing “with the greatest care and zeal” the satanic Kabbalah into Latin “for the public advantage of our faith,” and causing “delight among the Hebrews” who “cherish” these books with “religious awe.”[36]

When the usurper Church of Rome synthesized these pagan traditions in the name of the authentic Roman Catholic Church, the Protestant Reformation was given invaluable ammunition against it, provided by Rome itself. Many Catholics became Protestants after witnessing the desecrating synthesis. The Huguenot philologist Casaubon rightly demolished the papist Hermes Trismegistus hoax and when he did so before the literate elite of Europe, with that demolition went much of the credibility of the Church of Rome itself, which had failed to thoroughly cleanse itself *internally* (as opposed to rhetorically) of the spiritual infection of the Hermetic occultism it had fostered and extended.

Martin Muslow: “The thesis of concordance held that ancient wisdom, Christian doctrine and contemporary natural philosophies were principally in accord. Especially after the Council of Trent the thesis seemed well-suited for combining a reformed orientation with a reflection on origins... often linked with a certain Egyptophilia as well as a conception of Hermeticism as the oldest form of human wisdom."

---

[34] “...the movement of the Renaissance, even without considering its most serious excesses, ended in denying the ideal of Christianity, the whole life of men in society being thenceforth uprooted from the maxims of the Gospel...”—Cardinal Henri de Lubac, *“Explication chrétien de notre temps,”* transl. Anne Englund Nash, in *Theology in History* (1996), p. 444. “Toward the end of his career he wrote a very favorable monograph on the Renaissance Platonist Giovanni Pico della Mirandola...” (David Grumett, *De Lubac,* 2007, p. ix). We have published for the first time in English translation an extract from De Lubac’s “monograph” (in chapter fourteen).

[35] On Thomas More, Pico, Henry VIII and Thomas Cromwell, cf. this writer’s “Truth Devoured by a Wolf,” in *Revisionist History* no. 78. In his *Life of John Picus* (1510), More translates into English the biography of Pico della Mirandola which had been penned in Latin by Gianfrancesco. More adds his own ideas and deletes some parts of Gianfrancesco’s original text, making it almost as much More’s book as that of Pico’s propagandistic nephew.

[36] *On the Dignity of Man,* (op.cit.), pp. 31-32.

Casaubon was a formidable Protestant Hebraist and according to the script of the papists this should make him a Judaizer in sympathy with the Talmud and cognate texts. This was not so, however. He was a dedicated student of the writing of the Swiss Protestant Talmud expert Johannes Buxtorf (1564-1629), Professor of Hebrew and Rabbinic Literature at the Protestant University of Basel. Authors Anthony Grafton and Joanna Weinberg are incredulous at the fact that Buxtorf, in spite of his scholarly knowledge of Hebrew, Aramaic and Judaism, opposed the religion of the rabbis. "Casaubon had found a way to focus on what still seems the strangest feature of Buxtorfs work: the unremitting hostility he showed toward the people whose languages, beliefs and rituals he had studied more intensively than any Christian before him." [37]

[37] Grafton and Weinberg, *I Have Always Loved the Holy Tongue* (2001), p. 149. This duo is asserting that Buxtorf has greater knowledge of Judaism than the apostles Peter and Paul and all of the Church Fathers, a tissue of absurdity which Buxtorf would have confuted.

It is inconceivable to Grafton and Weinberg that a deep knowledge of the inner doctrines of Judaism such as, in Buxtorf's case, the *Shulchan Aruch* and its didactic section, *Orah Hayyim,* would lead to hostility toward Judaism (it seems they have never heard the name Johann Andreas Eisenmenger). Contrary to Romanist claims, Casaubon had no objection to Buxtorf's loathing for the rabbinic system: "Casaubon noted Buxtorf's prejudices, but did not make clear the extent to which he shared or qualified them. The nature of his ethnographic interest—like so much of his method as a Judaist—remained steeped in ambiguity." [38]

[38] Ibid., p. 149.

This is a sly way of sneaking past the reader the fact that *there is no evidence* that Casaubon had any sympathy for Judaism.

"Buxtorf explained that his primary goal in revealing the true religion of the Jews to his fellow Germans had been religious and polemical: 'that we may be admonished to set before ourselves as the object of meditation the incredulity of the Jews, and the hardening of God and his equally terrible wrath and severity toward them'… Buxtorf noted that Judaism no longer rested on Moses and the prophets, but instead on the false laws and rules introduced by scribes and rabbis…” [39]

[39] Ibid., p. 147.

“*Hoc etiam de ceremoniis, quibus Judaei in feriis et festis inter eos receptis superstitiosam ipsorum fidem exercentes utuntur, dictum adeo sufficit, ut indequilibet satis perspicere possit, quod religio ipsorum non amplius super Mose et prophetis, sed supermendaciis meris, falsique Rabbinorum et Scribarum (id quod ab initio libri huius mihi demonstrandum proposui) constitutionibus fundata sit. Sequitur iam praeterea de consuetudinibus nonnullis aliis, secundum quas in vita ipsorum privata se gerunt.”* [40]

[40] Johannes Buxtorf, *Synagoga Judaica,* (1604), chapter 25.

The Church of the Renaissance introduced into the schools and monasteries of Catholicism the philosophy of the *concordia philosophorum* which teaches that there is a concord between paganism and Christianity.

“…concordia philosophorum, the idea that there is one basic, common kernel of truth in all philosophical systems, no matter how different they might be at first sight. This conviction culminated in Giovanni Pico della Mirandola's huge and unfinished project to bring to light the common truth of all philosophical and esoteric traditions… This idea was closely interrelated with the notion of a ‘perennial philosophy,’ the conviction that there was one, largely secret tradition of esoteric wisdom, dating back to the first beginnings of creation… This philosophical-esoteric *sapientia* (wisdom) or ‘secret doctrine’ was passed on from one ‘sage’ or ‘magus’ to the other, thus constituting a tradition that was thought to include figures like Zoroaster, Moses, Hermes Trismegistus, Orpheus, the Pythagoreans and Plato. The most important, though not the first, representative of this mode of thought was Marsilio Ficino, who affirmed that long before the Scriptures were revealed to man, there was a tradition of *prisca theologia* (ancient theology) or *prisca philosophia* that foreshadowed Christian truth…” [41]

[41] Cees Leijenhorst, “Francesco Patrizi's Hermetic Philosophy,” in *Gnosis and Hermeticism from Antiquity to Modern Times* (1998), pp. 127-128.

To achieve the objective of the subversion of the Church, the pillars of authentic Roman Catholicism had to be derogated. “We find that (Francesco) Patrizi had already in 1571 deployed the esoteric/exoteric distinction in order to wipe out Aristotle by maintaining that all of Aristotle's esoteric and substantial assets were merely appropriated from Platonic thinking.” [42]

[42] Cf. Maria Muccillo, *“La vita e le opere di Aristotle nelie Discussions peripateticae di* Fancesco Patrizi da Cherso,” *Rinascimento II.s.* 21 (1981), pp. 53-119, and M.J. Wilmot, *“Aristotles exotericus, acromaticus, mysticus:* Two Interpretations of the Typological Classifications of the *Corpus aristotelicum* by Francesco Patrizi da Cherso,” *Novelles de la République des Lettres* (1985), pp. 67-95.

However, as in the belt of transmission for relaxation of the laws against taking a profit for loaning money, which began inside Catholic circles and then spread to Calvinist ones, the Neoplatonic-Hermetic poison of Ficino, Pico and Francesco Patrizi of Cherso, (the pope’s professor), was spread by Padua University graduate Johannes Jessenius (also called “Jessen”) into Lutheran Wittenberg in 1593, and by Eilhard Lubin in Lutheran Rostock in 1598. Raphael Elgin disseminated it in Calvinist Zurich in 1595 and Marburg in 1609.

Jessenius had been a student of the Catholic Neoplatonic-Hermetic conspirator and Professor at Padua University, Francesco Piccolomini. Prof. Piccolomini was a disciple of Pico and a colleague of Patrizi.[43]

[43] Cf. Sandra Plastina, *“Concordia discors: Aristotelismus und Platonismus in der Philosophie des Francesco Piccolomini,”* in Martin Mulsow ed., *Das Ende des Hermetismus.*

In 1593, Jessenius published excerpts from Patrizi’s *Nova de universis philosophia* in his own volume, *Zoroaster, Nova, brevis, veraque de universo philosophia.* “Jessenius follows Piccolomini’s plan of reconciling Plato and Aristotle with the help of Hermetic texts, which was in accord with the dimensions of Pico della Mirandola’s idea of philosophical concord.”[44]

[44] Tomás Nejeschleba, “Johannes Jessenius,” p. 367, in *Francesco Patrizi: Philosopher of the Renaissance.*

[The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome Page 209]

Let us consider this “secret doctrine” which is the hallmark of Gnostic and masonic sects and offshoots. The maintenance of this secrecy takes precedence over *all other duties and obligations to God and man,* as George W. Bush showed forth when asked on national television by NBC News host Tim Russert on February 8, 2004 about his membership in the “Skull and Bones” brotherhood: “It’s so secret we can’t talk about it.”[45]

[45] The interview is online: https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=gwJDs1cg9Eo

The conspirators behind the “Gnostic Gospels” hoax insist that Jesus taught a secret doctrine. The occult imperium operates by this swindle: “Join with us and obtain the secret wisdom.” The Gnostic Gospels we are told, were suppressed by fanatical, uptight Christians because they presented Christ’s revolutionary secret gnosis for freedom and happiness. Like the Talmud and Kabbalah, the Gnostic “scriptures” directly contradict the written Word of

Jesus Christ, *who established no aristocracy of secrets administered by a priestly caste.* The literal meaning of the Bible is anathema to all demonic brotherhoods and sisterhoods. “I speak with him face to face, even plainly, and not in dark sayings” (Numbers 12:8).

“All the words of my mouth are with righteousness. Nothing crooked or perverse is in them. They are all plain to him who understands, and right to those who find knowledge” (Proverbs 8:8-9). The Prophet Isaiah declared, “When a King (i.e. Christ) shall reign in righteousness, the eyes of them that see shall not be dim. The heart of the rash will understand knowledge, and the tongue of the stammerers will be ready to speak plainly” (32: 1, 3-5).” Here is liberation.

In addition to the promise of a “secret doctrine,” the gods of the pagans and gnostic sects impart, as noted, the teaching that all religions have the same root. This belief existed in a state of dormancy as the Catholic Faith, in the first millennia of its existence, gained adherents and faithfully taught that Jesus Christ was the one and only door to heaven and the Father. It was masonic popery, the abomination developed in Rome during the Renaissance, which awakened those dormant occult forces. One may quote Leo XIII in *Humanum Genus* against Freemasonry incessantly, yet when Leo refrained from identifying the root of the masonic conspiracy in Rome’s own Renaissance Hermeticism and the rabbinic Kabbalah which had been empowered by the Renaissance papacy, his *Humanum Genus* only served to fulfill the same cunning masterstroke of misdirection as did Benedict XIV with his encyclical *Vix Pervenit* —“against usury”—which provided a gaping loophole on *behalf of usury.* In the aftermath of *Vix Pervenit,* “the great papal bulwark against usury,” profit on loans continued to metastasize in the Catholic world virtually unimpeded. Toothless rhetoric had prevailed over the restoration of God’s law, as it has done time and again from the pens of “wonderfully orthodox pontiffs” of the post-Renaissance age.

History testifies that the leading Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Kabbalist conspirators inside the Church of Rome (not the low level patsies consigned to the flames, along with those who failed to submit to papal supremacy, like Bruno), were largely immune to *serious and enduring* interdiction and punishment. In spite of whatever slap on the wrist had to be administered to tranquilize and outfox the remnant of outraged true Catholics, the top conspirators went to their graves secure in their persons and positions—their influence growing exoterically and then waxing and waning esoterically, as circumstances and situations required, finally emerging under Pope Paul VI at the Second Vatican Council. Here was the fruition of five hundred years of Renaissance and post-Renaissance conspiracy. Here was manifested within the Church of Rome the spirit of Ficino, Pico, Reuchlin and the rest of the

Vatican's Renaissance gang. Masonic ideology had manifested in Neoplatonic-Hermetic Rome long before "Freemasonry" arrived in the garments of the neo-Protestant world as a sometime rival of the masonic popery of the neo-Catholic world. "Continuity... was assured... by the continued progress and popularity of Hermetic doctrine, which issued in Rosicrucianism, Freemasonry, and varieties of alchemical and astrological arts." [46]

[46] Thomas Molnar, *The Pagan Temptation* (1987), p. 76.

Let us not call ourselves followers of Jesus Christ and then be seduced by artful deception: usury was not first revived in Christendom by John Calvin but by the Church of Rome while Calvin was a child; Masonic ideology was not born out of the Reformation or the Enlightenment (though certain forces in both those camps most certainly served as its booster rocket). Masonic ideology was born inside the papist, ecclesiastical magisterium's Neoplatonic-Hermetic imperium. For elite Catholics, *the Renaissance papacy nurtured and harbored a supra-religious, supra-national philosophic universalism that would serve as the cornerstone upon which its supposed deadly enemy, the Masonic Lodge, would be constructed.* [47]

[47] See the appendix, "The Influence of Neoplatonic Thought on Freemasonry: Pico della Mirandola and his *Oratio de Hominis Dignitate.*"

The diabolic genius of this rarefied two-tiered process consisted in the fact that among the lower tier of common people and parish priests, Rome maintained a milieu of inquisitorial antipathy for the occult, just as it instilled an anti-usurious social gospel among the same peasants and priests which gained for the Robber Church of the Great Usurpation, a permanent, undeserved aura of militance on behalf of the poor and against "the bankers and the Masons."

Thus was the double-mind institutionalized. Double-minded Catholics have a cavernous black hole at the center of their minds that allows them to maintain two mutually contradictory ideas simultaneously and fail to detect that fact. They run to false shepherds for a remedy. Pope St. Pius X is a hero of theirs, yet they do not ask themselves why his famous encyclical *Pascendi Domini Gregis* (1907) failed utterly in its alleged intention of interdicting modernism. How could any honest prelate who is not mentally feeble warn of religious syncretism making its way inside the Church, while refusing to unmask the *progenitors* of this spiritual infection?

In similar fashion, Pope Pius IX denounced, in his *Syllabus of Errors,* as one of the deceptions of Satan: "Every man is free to embrace and profess that religion which, guided by the light of reason, he shall consider true. Man may, in the observance of any religion whatever, find the way of eternal salvation, and arrive at eternal salvation.” Pope St. Pius X enlarged the indictment put forth by Pius IX: “Here it is well to note at once that, given this doctrine of experience united with that of symbolism, every religion, even that of paganism, must be held to be true. What is to prevent such experiences from being found in any religion? In fact, that they are so is maintained by not a few. On what grounds can Modernists deny the truth of an experience affirmed by a follower of Islam? Will they claim a monopoly of true experiences for Catholics alone? Indeed, Modernists do not deny, but actually maintain, some confusedly, others frankly, that all religions are true. That they cannot feel otherwise is obvious. For on what ground, according to their theories, could falsity be predicated of any religion whatsoever?”

Where in either statement by these “great traditional” popes is a single indictment of the Renaissance “Catholic” fathers of modernism? *Why is not one of the conspirators who started it all named and unmasked?* Nowhere in the renowned encyclicals of the two popes will we find this vital information. It has been omitted. Pius IX and Pius X did not cite them. Citation would have fatally undermined the pillar of the occult conspiracy: the inculcation of blind obedience to the “ecclesiastical magisterium” (notwithstanding the fact that the papist conspirators deny that the obedience they require is blind). Modernism and syncretism were produced by *the ecclesiastical magisterium itself* after 1450. The two “anti-modernist” popes cannot admit this. They rail against the modernist idol while they make an idol out of obedience to the heads of the Church. This is bipolar. As long as obedience to the heads of the Church takes precedence over the Word of God, modernism and diabolism will flourish. Like usury after *Vix Pervenit,* modernism grew after the *Syllabus* and *Pascendi Domini Gregis.* These are double-minded papal documents. Observe what Pope St. Pius X teaches about the doctrine of St. Thomas Aquinas:

“And let it be clearly understood above all things that when We prescribe scholastic philosophy We understand chiefly that which the Angelic Doctor (Thomas Aquinas) has bequeathed to us... We admonish professors to bear well in mind that they cannot set aside St. Thomas, especially in metaphysical questions, without grave disadvantage.”

On the contrary, Your Holiness, your Church of Rome began to “set aside” Aquinas’ doctrine against profit on loans of money 392 years before you penned your encyclical! Isn’t 392 years sufficient time for one of the subsequent members of the august fraternity of those who are called the “Vicar of Christ on earth” to name names, indict the guilty and reinstate the immemorial dogmatic and Thomistic prohibition against all profit from loans of money?

To the contrary, while it is true that Pope St. Pius X died before the 1917 Code of Canon Law could be promulgated, the Code had been compiled largely on his watch, by *periti* selected by him. This Code of Canon Law removed all prohibitions against profiting from loans of money. *"They cannot set aside St. Thomas... without grave disadvantage."* Yet this is precisely what this double-minded pope, who is lionized by "conservative" and "traditional" Catholics as the paragon of what it means to be a pontiff, perpetrated in the 1917 Code, against the same St. Thomas Aquinas who he counsels others not to abandon.

Does one imagine that this blatant contradiction is lost on the Cryptocracy? Does one imagine that they will fail to exploit it by making their subordinates and initiates cognizant of how even the pontiff with a reputation as the supreme opponent of modernism, had succumbed to situation ethics? Patrician gnostics do not pride themselves on believing as do the plebes. They take pride in being an elite above humanity who perceive that which is veiled. One such not-so-arcane secret which they detected is the tragic case of Pope Pius X who, in allegedly thundering against the evils that had infiltrated the Church, managed to steer clear of any direct threat to the *root and branch* of the conspiracy, though during his relatively brief pontificate he did indeed vex sundry low and mid-level flunkeys and patsies regarded as expendable by their elite masters.

Pius X concludes his encyclical *Pascendi* with an admonition to Catholics to *obey "the ecclesiastical authority in any of its depositories."* This is a message of conformity well-pleasing to the post-Renaissance Cryptocracy which, since the late fifteenth century, has maintained control over the Church of Rome no matter who occupies the Chair of Peter. The Pyramid and Obelisk Men prevail.

The blind alleys and dead ends into which those who have earnestly sought to contend for the Gospel of Jesus Christ have instead been repeatedly dispatched and neutralized, is a powerful contributing factor in the success of the diabolic process. We have engendered a tradition of defeat and grown accustomed to it. We wear our defeat like a comfortable leather coat of long usage. We have God on our side and yet we continue to abandon Him to follow the well-tread path of

hypnotic bondage to the Pyramid-and-Obelisk. Is this dark fate what Jesus Christ intended for His people?

Giovanni Pico told the hierarchy of the Church that by using the ancient Egyptian magical gnosis with which Pharaoh's sorcerers confronted Israel and Moses (Exodus 7:11), and which later became the Kabbalah, we can teach the world to know the divinity of Christ. As we have seen, this lunacy infiltrated not only the Church of Rome. By means of Catholic agents, it slithered into Protestant denominations as well.

Occultists are consummate hoaxers. They convinced the western world that their fraudulent pagan superhero Hermes Trismegistus, was a factual historical personage. It took considerable intellectual effort, most effectively undertaken initially by Casaubon, to prove that Hermes was an elaborately concocted myth. Giovanni Pico's fraud corresponds to the sly syncretism which the "Catholic" Kabbalists employed to gain acceptance for the black magic texts of the rabbis, on whose behalf Pico della Mirandola employed an energetic apologetic apparatus, arguing that the major religions, including Catholicism, were all reflections of the primordial religion "of Adam." The true Adam of Scripture was not Pico's focus, however. For the occult Renaissance, Adam is the *"Adam Kadmon"* of the Kabbalah, not the Book of Genesis. The Neoplatonic-Hermetic gnosis teaches that pure wisdom from deep antiquity emanated from the Kabbalistic Adam who preceded the Adam of Genesis. "The concept likely evolved from the older idea—prominent in Philo's writings—of a heavenly man who was created at the same time, or prior to, the earthly Adam... While Adam Kadmon is said to take the shape of a human, it may well be that this is intended in much the same way various constellations of stars are identified in astrology. Thus, Adam Kadmon could be understood as a constellation of stars in the shape of a man... Above all, Adam Kadmon is part of the complex Kabbalistic theory of God's emanations of the world, containing the ten *sefirot."* [48]

[48] Howard Schwartz, *Tree of Souls* (2004), pp. 15-16. *"Sefirot"* is also spelled *"sephirot."* Concerning the "ten *sephirot,"* see chapter 18, "Occult Miscellany."

This "Adam Kadmon" is a symbol of counterfeit reality: Satan as the ape of God. All of Satan's spiritual and intellectual systems reflect this characteristic. Like Hermes

himself, the essence of this Kabbalistic-Gnostic-Neoplatonic entity serves to represent an idea: that Satan is worthy of a worship which bestows upon the worshipper secret knowledge of the universe withheld from others. The account of Adam Kadmon in the rabbinic *Midrash* relates that when "he was created... he was so awesome the angels mistook him for God and began to worship him." Since he was an androgyne, most Christians would be appalled to encounter Adam Kadmon in the flesh in view of the fact that he possessed a bosom like a woman and the genitalia of both male and female. This creature would be stylized in the nineteenth century by the "Catholic" mystic Eliphas Lévi, as "Baphomet," the infamous sigil of modern devil worship. Renaissance-Catholic conspirators endeavored to drag Jesus Christ into this cauldron by claiming that the New Testament links Jesus to Adam Kadmon in I Corinthians 15:45-50. The passage from Corinthians reads: “Thus it is written, ‘The first man Adam became a living being; the last Adam became a life-giving spirit. But it is not the spiritual that is first but the natural, and then the spiritual. The first man was from the earth, a man of dust; the second man is from heaven. As was the man of dust, so also are those who are of the dust, and as is the man of heaven, so also are those who are of heaven. Just as we have borne the image of the man of dust, we shall also bear the image of the man of heaven. I tell you this, brothers: flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, nor does the perishable inherit the imperishable.”

There is no hidden meaning in the preceding Scripture passage. The opening line refutes the Kabbalistic absurdity that is being foisted upon us. Contrary to the Kabbalistic “Adam Kadmon” buncombe, the *first Adam* was a flesh and blood living being. It is the *last Adam* who is the spiritual Adam—Jesus Christ. The reference to His “spiritual body” is an allusion to His imperishable, post-Resurrection body, animated by the Third Person of the Trinity, the Holy Spirit.

To non-initiates, the Renaissance conspirators used the Adam of the Bible as the primordial reference point of their appeal to divine cosmic knowledge preserved from antiquity. Among initiated insiders it was understood that the “Kadmon” Adam of the Kabbalah is the one regarded as the source of this knowledge which, when fully rediscovered in the future, will reanimate the image of Adam. It would appear that the Neoplatonic-Hermetic future is here, as versions of Kadmon’s androgyny are being created through the powers of surgery, as well as the *pharmakos*, warned of in the Book of Revelation, which gave notice in Revelation 18:23 and 22:15, of the forthcoming employment of pharmaceutical agents to sustain Satan’s illusion—his disfigured mimic of God’s natural creation. Writing in 1487 in *Heptaplus*,[49] Pico stated: “Because what is said by the Hebrews is new to the Latins, it could not be easily understood by our people unless, hatched from a twin egg, I explained a great part or almost the totality of ancient teachings of the Hebrew dogmas... showing how much these ideas agree with Egyptian wisdom, how much with Platonic philosophy and how much with Catholic truth.”

Rabbinic Judaism’s root is in the sorcery of Pharaonic Egypt, which is also represents a treasured repository of theology and symbolism for

---

[49] English translation: New York, 1977, introduction to pt. III, pp. 51-52.

Freemasonry. Pico candidly links his twisted version of “Catholic truth” to Judaism through “Egyptian wisdom.”

Pope Alexander Adopts Pico’s Theology

“In the last years of his life, Pico’s situation was greatly eased by the advent to office in 1492 of a new pope. In that year, Innocent VIII was succeeded as the spiritual head of Christendom by Alexander VI, the Borgia pope, one of the most publicized and colorful characters of the Renaissance... the Borgia pope was not at all averse to astrology and magic, but, on the contrary, was deeply interested in those subjects, and he came most impressively to the rescue of Pico’s orthodoxy. The bulls for Pico’s absolution which Lorenzo de Medici had failed to obtain... were promulgated by Alexander VI on June 18th, 1493, less than a year after his elevation to the Holy See.

“Not only that, the pope wrote a personal letter to Pico himself, beginning *‘Dilecte fili Salute & apostolicam benedictionem.’* In this letter, Alexander rehearses the whole history of Pico’s case, mentioning the nine hundred theses, the *Apologia,* the commission which had accused Pico of heresy, his flight to France, and ends by completely absolving both him and his works from all taint of heresy. Pico is described as illuminated by a *‘divina largitas’* and as a faithful son of the Church. This letter was printed in all the editions of Pico’s works, thus encouraging readers to accept, on the highest authority, the writer’s views as of unimpeachable orthodoxy. And this would include the view which was the chief cause of the outcry against Pico, and of the commission which Alexander quashed, that *Magia* and *Cabala* are valuable aids to Christianity.

“It was in this changed atmosphere that Pico wrote, about 1493-4, his *Disputationes adversus astrologiam divinatricem.* This work against astrology used to be taken as proof that Pico was free from astrological superstition. But its title alone shows that the kind of astrology which Pico is against is divinatory astrology, the normal astrology based on belief in the determination of man’s fate by the stars and using calculations based on horoscopes to foretell the predestined future. And it has recently been pointed out that Pico repeats in this book what is practically Ficino’s theory of astral influences borne on a ‘celestial spirit.’ Further, Pico actually cites ‘our Marsilius’ as one of those who have written against astrologers ‘following in the traces of Plotinus, in the interpretation and exposition of whom he has much aided Platonic studies, amplifying and enlarging them.’ This could be an allusion to that commentary on Plotinus, the *De vita coelitus comparanda* and its *Magia naturalis* (including Plotinised talismans) as a work indirectly defended through being drawn in amongst those against astrology.

“In short, Pico is really defending the Fincinian ‘astral magic’ (he does not use this expression) which... is quite a different thing from astrology proper, being a way of escape from astrological determinism by teaching how to control and use the stellar influences. Written about 1493-4, which is about the time that the Pope had exonerated Pico from all blame, the book against astrology is really a vindication of *Magia naturalis.*

“It is into the context of the controversy about Pico, in which Alexander VI came out so strongly on the side of the Magus, that one should put the extraordinary ‘Egyptianism’ in the frescoes painted by Pinturicchio for Alexander in the Appartamento Borgia in the Vatican... very strange are the Egyptian scenes in the Room of the Saints. The emblem of the Borgia family was the bull, and the Borgia bull becomes identified in this series with Apis, the bull worshipped by the Egyptians as the image of Osiris, the sun god. It is by a series of allusive shifts in meaning as the frescoes tell their story that the Egyptian Apis bull, or the sun, becomes identified with the Borgia bull, or the pope as the sun.

“The Egyptian series begins with the story of Io, turned into a cow by Juno, who set Argus to watch her. Argus was killed by Mercury, a scene shown in one of the paintings where Mercury, with drawn sword, is dispatching Argus. Having been rescued by Mercury from Argus, Io escaped into Egypt where she became the goddess Isis. After the scene with Mercury and Argus, there follows in the frescoes, a scene where Io-Isis is seated on a throne, with a figure on her left identified by Saxl as Moses. The figure on her right is obviously the same person as the one shown with the zodiac in the Room of the Sibyls. He is, I suggest, again Hermes Trismegistus... The Mercury who killed Argus was, according to Cicero, Hermes Trismegistus who afterwards went into Egypt and gave the Egyptians their laws and letters. This is mentioned by Ficino in the *argumentum* before his *Pimander* text: *Hunc (i.e. Trismegistus) asserunt occidisse Argum, Aegyptiis praefuisse, eisque leges, ac litteras tradidisse.*’

“Hence, the Mercury in the fresco who kills Argus would be Hermes Trismegistus, and the next scene would show him in Egypt, as the lawgiver of the Egyptians, with, beside him, the law-giver of the Hebrews, Moses. This would be the usual Hermes-Moses comparison with which we have become so familiar in our study of *Magia* and *Cabala.*

“Why did the pope have such a program painted early in his reign, a program which glorifies the Egyptian religion... associates Hermes Trismegistus with Moses? The answer to this question is, I believe, that the Pope wished to proclaim his reversal of the policy of his predecessor by adopting Pico della Mirandola’s program of using *Magia* and *Cabala* as aids to religion. [50]

"The most startling manifestation of Roman 'Egyptology' appears in the decorative scheme of the 'Room of the Saints' in the Appartamento Borgia, the series of residential and ceremonial rooms in the Vatican Palace that Pinturicchio[51] frescoed for Alexander VI in the early years of the second Borgia pontificate... In the Pinturicchio ceiling, Io-Isis sits enthroned, teaching the Egyptians, with Moses and Hermes Trismegistus at her side. The next scene shows her marriage to Osiris... then Osiris was murdered by his evil brother, and the pieces of his body scattered over all Egypt. Isis manages at length to gather the bodily parts of her former consort, and erects a pyramid over his tomb. There he appears as Apis, the bull, and is worshipped by the Egyptians as the living image of the resurrected god. In the last scene, the bull, elevated by his priests, is borne triumphantly before the faithful, before the beginning of sacred rites. At the head of the procession appears a child blowing a horn decorated with another Borgia heraldic emblem, the double crown of the royal house of Aragon. These elements suggest a final metamorphosis of Apis-Osiris into the Borgia pope himself and have a parallel in the pope's own ceremonial appearance raised aloft on his *sedia gestatoria* (ritual throne) ...in the Pinturicchio ceiling, Io-Isis, the link between Hellenic and Egyptian civilization, and Osiris-Apis, the image of the slain and resurrected divine king, are the sacred progenitors of the Borgia pontificate..."[52]

[50] Yates, *Bruno,* op. cit., pp. 113-116.

[51] Bernardino di Betto (1454-1513), known as Pinturicchio (also spelled Pintoricchio).

[52] Charles L. Stinger, *The Renaissance in Rome,* pp. 304-306. In 1503 Julius II (Giuliano della Rovere), succeeded Alexander VI (after the brief interregnum of Pius III's pontificate). "It was during Julius's pontificate, moreover, that Giles of Viterbo, so often an articulator for the Della Rovere pontiff of the papacy's sacred mission and destiny, developed a deepening interest in Hebraic studies... Giles devoted attention to Talmudic literature, but above all he cultivated the cabala... which he and other Renaissance cabalists believed contained the hidden wisdom revealed to Adam... Roman interest in the cabala did not originate with Giles... (a)s Pico points out (concerning) Julius II's uncle, Sixtus IV... (to whose) pontificate... belongs the Good Friday, 1481 sermon of Flavius Mithridates. This converted Sicilian Jew, who had come to Rome through the patronage of (Giovanni Battista) Cibo, the future Innocent VIII, dazzled his Vatican audience in the course of a two-hour oration with citations from... the Hebrew 'arcana'... (Stinger, pp. 306-307). Establishment historians declare that Innocent VIII was opposed to the occult, yet here he was, while still a cardinal, bringing Pico's Judaic handler inside the Vatican and facilitating this Kabbalist's position as preacher to the papal household.

In the papal apartment we observe an exquisite illustration by Pinturicchio of the transmigration of a repeatedly reincarnated soul who begins as Io, becomes Isis and eventually reincarnates as Alexander VI, Pope of Rome! The occult-Renaissance Church is thus established symbolically inside the Vatican itself. Our Borgia pope has been well camouflaged by the Church of Rome. To historians both Catholic and secular, Alexander VI is notorious for having fathered eight children by three different women, and that among these offspring were the murderous Cesare and his amorous sister, Lucrezia; and that Alexander sold on occasions too numerous to number, the rank of cardinal to the highest bidder, and in general put the Roman Church up for auction (less remarked upon is his judicial murder of Savonarola).

This is essentially “Borgia Pope” Alexander VI’s profile in pop history. In our post-modern world these details are not particularly galvanizing, being mainly fodder for cynicism and a demoralizing, shoulder-shrugging retort, along the lines of, so what else is new? The Vatican can absorb cynics. In some respects, it has turned cynicism back upon its critics by painting them as holier-than-thou Puritan bibliomaniacs who make no allowance for human flaws and failings. The point would be well taken were it not for the suppressed fact that Pope Alexander’s theology was Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Kabbalism. Rome cannot so readily dismiss or spin (at least not yet), transgressions against the First Commandment committed by a pontiff. Popular history does not report the singular marvel of Alexander VI’s papacy, which has nothing to do with simony or fathering children out of wedlock. This prodigy is something that remains “too hot to handle” for the spin-doctors. Even at this late date, it is an occult success so spectacular and damaging that even Rome’s confidence tricksters would have difficulty explaining it to the marks in the pews. Consequently, Alexander’s major crime isn’t written about to any appreciable extent in most papal biographies or mainstream histories.

This pontiff opened a Pandora’s Box that has never been closed. He safeguarded, cultivated and unleashed upon the world none other than the master architect of the occult Trojan Horse inside the Church, Giovanni Pico della Mirandola. Even with the lapse of more than five hundred years, for having secured this world-historie objective of the dark forces, Alexander VI receives scant acknowledgement. His secret remains potentially explosive and for that reason it is still being kept.

As Frances Yates wrote, "The profound significance of Pico della Mirandola in the history of humanity can hardly be overestimated. He it was who first boldly formulated a new position for European man, man as Magus using both *Magia* and *Cabala* to act upon the world, to control his destiny by science. And in Pico, the organic link with religion of the emergence of the Magus can be studied at its source." [53]

[53] Yates, *Bruno,* op. cit., p. 116.

What exactly is the connection between Pico's *Magia* and our era's science? "It is one of the more profound ironies of the history of thought that the growth of mechanical science, through which arose the idea of mechanism as a possible philosophy of nature, was itself an outcome of the Renaissance magical tradition." [54]

[54] Yates, *The Rosicrucian Enlightenment,* op. cit., p. 113.

Mechanism divested of the appearance of magic would by deception appear in the modern era to represent the triumph of materialism over Renaissance mysticism, the apparent overthrow of *Magia* and *Cabala* by rules of evidence and the scientific method, and the replacement of the magus with the scientist. In truth however, the materialistic scientist who creates artificial intelligence, clones living beings, modifies DNA, tampers with embryos, and engineers plant genetics, *fulfills the role of the magus* envisioned by Giovanni Pico and Cornelius Agrippa; their Protestant disciple John Dee, and a legion of epigones. Certain scientists harness the power of the material world to the eons-old objective of the sorcerers of antiquity, and the god they serve. To do so, the scientist in the modern age, no less than the Renaissance magus who is his progenitor, rejects the *Logos* (John 1:1-5) and revolts against the Order of Creation divinely ordained by the Word. This infernal network entered history by means of the imprimatur which Pope Alexander VI first granted to Giovanni Pico della Mirandola.

[Page 222 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

Chapter VI

Bonfire of the Verities

Omnes nefas vicitis, victoribus omnia sancta.[1]

[1] "To the conquered all crimes, to the victors all holiness." This "victor's justice" apothegm is attributed to the Medici. Cf. *Fire in the City: Savonarola and the Struggle for the Soul of Renaissance Florence* (2006), p. 285.

There were many honorable Catholics in the Renaissance era who stepped forth to voice concern, protest or active opposition to the Neoplatonic-

Hermetic conspiracy. One of the earliest was George of Trebizond, the enemy of Gemistos Plethon at the Council of Florence and the author, in 1458, of *Comparatio philosophorum Platonis et Aristotelis* (which was tightly suppressed and not published until 1523 and then only in a handful of copies). Trebizond detected the true nature of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic conspiracy, but was excessive in his assessment of Plato, attributing to him sexual sins for which there is no evidence.

Girolamo Savonarola, though there are certainly problems with some of his views and approaches to rulership, was the outstanding and implacable, counter-revolutionary defender of the true Roman Catholic Church in the early Renaissance, and as such there was no way he could escape the flames of the papal Inquisition, barring a miracle.

He was the scion of a respected Italian family: his paternal grandfather Michele Savonarola was the author of learned scientific treatises, professor of medicine at the University of Padua and physician to the princely court of Ferrara. Michele's brother had been a canon lawyer; his father a wool merchant. Girolamo's mother was descended from the House of Bonacolsi, the one-time lords of Mantua. When Girolamo Savonarola was born in September 1452, his godfather was of the House of the Duke Borso d'Este.

Tutored first by his grandfather, Savonarola matriculated at the University of Ferrara, where he received an advanced degree. At the age of twenty he penned the poem, *De ruina mundi.* He discovers that the world "esteems those who are the

enemies of God and Rome is in the hands of pirates (captained by Pope Sixtus IV)":

"Ah, look at that catamite and at the pimp,
Dressed in purple, frauds looked up to
By the common people and adored by a blind world.

"Earth is so pulled down by every vice
That it will never stand again.
And Rome, the capital, slips into the muck,
Never more to rise again.

"Avoid all those who put on the purple.
Flee from palaces and ostentatious loggias,
Speaking to the few alone,
For you will be the enemy of all the world."

Shortly after he joined the Preaching Order of St. Dominic (Dominicans) he was making distinctions between the Church as the pure bride of Christ and the harlot in Rome, from his monastery in San Domenico where he took his final vows. In 1479 he was named Novice Master at the monastery of Santa Maria degli Angeli in Ferrara. In 1482 Savonarola was dispatched to the San Marco monastery in the city of the princely Medici, Florence where he served as professor of sacred Scripture and theology and where Lorenzo the Magnificent was the boss of all bosses. He journeyed there on foot, carrying only his Bible and breviary. In 1484 Sixtus IV died and was replaced by Innocent VIII toward whom Savonarola was also dismissive as evidenced by his poem, *Oratio pro ecclesia.* In 1487 he returned to San Domenico and the University of Bologna, having made little impression on the Florence of the 1480s.

Savonarola returned to Florence for good in the spring of 1490, at the invitation of Lorenzo, but the honeymoon was short-lived. He preached that men in holy orders were wrong to seek out *gran maestri* (great lords) because of the opportunities for being compromised by the relationship. In his Advent sermons of 1490 (which spilled over into the Christmas season through January 1491), he tore into fraudulent financial transactions and the greedy rich. An embassy by five leading citizens of Florence descended on Savonarola urging him to

preach in a more traditional and flattering manner. Savonarola answered with fifty Lenten sermons, beginning Ash Wednesday, February 16, 1491.

"The opening sermon stresses the idea that ceremonial externals in religion may betoken an inner void: a people without true faith and commitment... The succeeding sermons introduced a wealth of themes... the doctrinal ignorance of the laity, thieving priests and their cupidity for lucrative posts (benefices), the purchase and sale of Church offices (simony), the lechery of clerics, sodomy and the oppression of the poor, such as by unjust taxation. The last of these claims is strongly enunciated in the Sunday sermon of 27 February when the friar also remembered that the rich in Florence expect to collect interest on their taxes — a customary Florentine practice. God's justice will come down on this, he declared." [2]

His fiftieth sermon on the Wednesday after Easter (April 6) turned from the clergy and admonished the ruling class for their pride, tyranny, greed and oppression.

"The Savonarolan struggle... provoked venomous resistance, and this reminds us of the vital links between Church and society, clerics and patrons. Owing to the enormous scale of ecclesiastical rights and properties, of profitable office and income-paying benefices, local families and politicians

[2] Lauro Martines, *Fire in the City: Savonarola and the Struggle for the Soul of Renaissance Florence,* p. 25.

had, as it were, too much invested in neighboring religious houses to keep politics out of the Church, or the Church out of politics. Ambitious clerics with the right connections routinely borrowed money from bankers in order to buy lucrative Church offices... and bishoprics were sometimes passed on, if not indeed willed, to family members.” [3]

[3] Ibid., p. 32.

The “Carnival” season in Florence was a scandal to Savonarola as it would be to any Christian. “...to him these were pagan antics and the quintessence of the Medici’s poisonous legacy. By substituting acts of piety, charity and reverence Florentines would transform Carnival into a fitting prelude to holy Lent.” [4]

[4] Donald Weinstein, *Savonarola: The Rise and Fall of a Renaissance Prophet* (2011) p. 217.

[Bonfire of the Verities Page 225]

In 1496 during the vile pagan Carnival revels which featured obscene antics and bonfires, Savonarola’s youth auxiliary, the *fanciulli*, and Savonarola’s lieutenant, Fra Domenico da Pescia purged the city of all “dirty and vain paintings” and blasphemy. The boys reversed the carnival: where there had been rock fights they erected barriers for collecting alms for the “shame-faced poor.” They erected altars with crucifixes with candles burning before them and they made the bonfires into the most famous conflagration of the age, the “Bonfire of the Vanities,” wherein people were encouraged to toss objects of evil or luxury. A mountain of cosmetics, pornographic books, statuettes of naked women, dice and other gambling paraphernalia were tossed into the flames. These ceremonies were marked by processions of young people, estimated to number upwards of eight thousand in a city of 40,000, marching behind giant crucifixes and images of the Blessed Mother and shouting, “Long live Christ!”

“...in the last year of Savonarola’s life, as his Florentine enemies, with the backing of Rome and the cardinal clergy, increased in the city’s governing councils and intensified their attacks... Now the marching and scouting boys’ groups confronted a growing resistance, including abuse, threats and outright assaults. Gamblers might reach for knives or even swords if San Marco’s children (named after Savonarola’s monastery) happened to come on the scene...” [5]

[5] Martines, op. cit., p. 118.

Now came Savonarola’s contest with Pope Alexander VI (Rodrigo Borgia). “Savonarola’s leading Florentine enemies... needed all the help they could summon to get the Florence they longed for... so as to bring back carnival, gambling, horse races and—the Piagnoni alleged—untroubled anal sex... Alexander was the natural and obvious prince to turn to for help...” [6]

[6] Ibid., p. 126.

Savonarola was threatened by the pope’s agent with “excommunication *latae sententiae*,” i.e. automatic excommunication for disobedience. The effectiveness of the harbinger of excommunication was vitiated somewhat by the fact that Pope Alexander had last used this threat on one of his mistresses, Giulia Farnese, after she had returned to her husband. If she did not come back to the papal bedchamber she

was informed that she would incur *latae sententiae.* Nonetheless, a papal order silencing Savonarola was observed by the monk from October 1495 to February 17, 1496 when he launched his Lenten sermons with more warnings and admonishment of usurers, blasphemers and sodomites, and the aristocrats of the Roman Curia who were “happily ensconced” in a city with “10,000 whores.”

Pope Alexander was determinad to crush Savonarola but on many occasions, he was thwarted by the influential Neopolitian Cardinal Oliviero Carafa, who was in sympathy with Savonarola. Finally, it has been alleged by historian Lauro Martines[7]

[7] Unfortunately Prof. Martines has fallen for the standard tale that Giovanni Pico della Mirandola and Marsilio Ficino were sympathetic to Savonarola. It is true that they had the wit to pay lip service to him, as did Niccolo Machiavelli. However, these three men were polar opposites of all that for which Savonarola stood, which included his strong animus toward the occult as evidenced by his support for George of Trebizond’s attack on Neoplatonism (cf. Hanegraaff, *Esotericism,* p. 79). Savonarola’s guide was the Bible, against which he measured everything No one has doubted his sincerity and no sincere conservative Bible interpreter could endorse Pico’s occult synthesis of Christ and Kabbalah, or Ficino’s amalgamation of magic and the doctrine of the Church.

that it was “even likely... that in the summer of 1496, the General Procurator of the Dominicans, Ludovico da Ferrara, in Florence on a mission for the pope, sought to tempt Savonarola with the secret offer of a red hat, a cardinalate, on the understanding that he accept certain conditions. This alone makes sense of one of Savonarola’s asservations, uttered in a sermon of 20 August 1496 in the Hall of the Great Council and cast directly at the Signory (the ruling body of Florence): ‘My Lord God I want only you. It is not my habit to seek human glory. Away with that! I seek no glory but in you, my Lord. I want no hats, no mitres large or small. I want nothing, unless it be what you have given to your saints: death. A red hat of blood: this I desire.” [8]

[8] Martines, p. 137.

In November 1496 Pope Alexander announced a reorganization of the Dominican monasteries of Italy aimed at placing new superiors over Savonarola. Cardinal Carafa had by this time caved in, and yet another attack, this one bureaucratic, had been tailored to nullify and depose the Dominican friar.

[Bonfire of the Verities Page 227]

On May 12 (1497) ...the pope (Alexander VI) issued his long-gestating breve of excommunication. His Holiness complained that a 'certain friar' Girolamo Savonarola of Ferrara of the Order of Preachers and at present so-called vicar of San Marco of Florence had continued to disseminate 'pernicious dogma' to the detriment of the Florentine people... On June 18, 1497, the order of excommunication arrived and was read out, with bell, book and candle, in five Florentine churches... Savonarola responded... 'It is unreasonable to believe that we are obligated to obey our superiors in everything; rather we ought to be obedient to a superior only insofar as he represents God, but he who commands what is contrary to God does not represent God and is not our superior. So, it is not only just but necessary that he disobey the papal order... Marshaling opinions of theologians, jurists, papal decretals and decisions of church councils he demonstrates the limits of papal power, 'the power of the keys,' to impose an unjust sentence. When such a sentence is null, as in the present case, it is his duty to proclaim this publicly, come what may." [9]

[9] Weinstein, op. cit., p. 230.

The "most serious attacks on Savonarola and his supporters came from the pulpit and the pens of other friars." These included Franciscan Fr. Domenico da Ponzo, an agent of the Duke of Milan (Ludovico Sforza), and the monk Angelo de Vallombrosa who offered to strangle Savonarola with his bare hands. "In a letter to the friars of San Marco (11 July 1497), Vallombrosa denounces him as "the most bitter enemy and detractor of the clergy, prelates and the Roman See." Vallombrosa is "outraged by the heretical claim that the excommunication should not be obeyed because Alexander VI is alleged to be a simonist, not the true pope..." This Borgia pontiff was indeed a simonist: he had purchased his papal office. Furthermore, "Under Pope Alexander, cardinalships were sold for a minimum of 15,000 gold ducats; a few years later, the Medici Pope, Leo X, sold them for not less than 25,000 ducats..." [10]

[10] Martines, op. cit., pp. p. 161 and 286.

Papist allegations against Savonarola ran the gamut from the laughable (that he had dared to advocate radical monastic poverty), to formidable, as issued by Girolamo Porcari, Bishop of Andria, governor in papal territory, and one of the twelve judges of the *Rota,* (the papal court). In his *Dialogus Tusci et Remi adversus Savonarolam,* Porcari asserted that to refuse to obey the pope results in damnation.

The machinery of papal usury, simony, sex depravity and corrupt bureaucracy was now engaged in arranging for the torture and execution of the Dominican friar who had interfered to so great an extent with the traditional rackets and occultism of the Florentine and Roman Catholic ruling class. In February, 1497, Pope Alexander admonished the priors in Florence to send Savonarola to Rome in chains. They demurred and merely demoted him from preaching in the huge Cathedral of Florence to the confines of the church of San Marco. At this time the reverence for Savonarola among the people of Florence was undiminished. His problems were entirely with the hierarchy of the Church and armed gangs dispatched by the entrenched gangsters, aristocrats, occultists and sodomites. For years it was necessary that Savonarola be accompanied by bodyguards to protect against the gangs. One such gang, the Compagnacci ("rowdy companions"), led by the Florentine nobleman[11] Doffo Spini, when they could not assault Savonarola's person, smeared excrement on the altar and pulpit of the Cathedral of Florence when he was regularly preaching and offering Mass. Spini was a frontman. Behind him were the Medici.

It is a testimony to the esteem of the grassroots for Savonarola that even under enormous pressure, both religious and political, from the pope and the elites, the Republican leaders of Florence withstood, as late as March 1497, the calls for his arrest. One motive for their loyalty to the Dominican reformer was their fear of civil war should he be seized. Another view, among the priors, was that Savonarola had not committed any heresy and was guilty of nothing more that fighting for a renewal of fidelity to Jesus Christ and His Gospel against entrenched pockets of corruption that led all the way to the Vatican.

Savonarola was not Luther. He held to the Mass and all Catholic dogma, but he believed that the papacy as it had devolved in the Renaissance, was predicated on blind faith in a mere man who happened to hold the Petrine office. If that man was leading souls to hell, did he have to be obeyed? What was the highest law of the Church, if not the salvation of souls?

---

[11] Florentine noblemen had their own anti-Savonarola confederacy, loosely organized as the *Arrabbiati.*

“Savonarola had intensified his assault on Rome and the Curia in late February and March, not only by scorning the validity of the excommunication, but also by proposing and insisting that the men behind it were ‘heretics’... He also hit out at Pope Alexander by introducing the example of a notorious earlier pontiff, the ‘wicked pope’ Boniface VIII (1294-1303), ‘who began as a fox and died like a dog.” [12]

Boniface is noted for having reversed the safe haven Pope Celestine V had granted to the most faithful followers of St. Francis of Assisi, the so-called *“Fraticelli”* or “Spirituals.” *(Fraticelli* later became a catch-all term for any far-out Catholic fraternity suspected of rigorist tendencies).

The papists see in Savonarola’s defiance of the Borgia pope an unpardonable transgression that merited, or at least understandably led to, the fires to which he was eventually consigned. We define papism as the heresy of the ultramontane who place a man on a throne above the salvation of souls or the preaching of the truth. If Savonarola was justifiably killed for embracing the latter over the former there is no hope for anyone who seeks to live and act as Jesus did and who was killed for defying the “legitimate” religious authority of his time. The Protestant Reformation was a revolt that began in defiance of papalolatry and which might have been dampened had Savonarola been accorded a Gospel-standard and treated fairly.

Getting nowhere doctrinally, the pope and the curia now threatened the Signory of Florence with an interdiction on the goods of Florence which would obstruct their sale in Europe. The interdict would be tantamount to classifying the Republican leaders of Florence as outlaws, signifying that any force could pillage the city or kill them with impunity.

Not everything was perfect about Savonarola or his doctrines; he could be as fallible as the Borgia pope, or any man. His most grievous error was having accepted the Renaissance “Monte” system of gradual permission for low interest usury “on behalf of the poor,” which had yet to gain papal approval (that would come in 1515), but which was in practice in banking redoubts like Florence. Because of this, among his staunchest supporters were the directors of this alleged “charity” bank, led by Lorenzo Lenzi.

Savonarola also allowed himself to be drawn into a theatrical tempting of God through “ordeal by fire,” which he did not undergo and which turned the Florentine mob against him after four years of strong support from the people. The enemies of Savonarola were formidable politicians and intriguers. They appear to have persuaded Savonarola to engage in a primitive trial-by-fire initiated by the Franciscan friar Francesco di Puglia who offered to prove that

---

[12] Martines op. cit., p. 206.

Savonarola deserved to be excommunicated by walking through fire. He demanded that Savonarola walk with him to determine who would be burned and who would be spared. Savonarola would have none of it. Surely the devil, as well as God, had power to preserve his servants from flames.

But the prospect of such a fiery test was a spectacle too great for the pagan-minded of Florence and it became a highly anticipated contest and one the masses felt that Savonarola was certain to win. Because he would not particípate, a proxy was appointed who would walk through the flames on his behalf. Savonarola should not have allowed this representation. It only instigated the large crowd massed in the Piazza della Signoria to a frenzy of impatience and near riot in the expectation of the vending of a miracle on demand. When heavy rain fell with lightning, and the fiery trial was canceled, the proceedings had approached the level of farce. Somehow the day's activities were spun so that Savonarola would take the blame for allegedly not allowing his proxy to walk into the non-existent flames (due to the rain, the fire had not been lit). The crazed masses had been cheated of their entertainment and through some still opaque process, Savonarola was charged with responsibility for the debacle and made the scapegoat. This was the first point at which his popularity began to wane. A mob formed and rampaged through the sectors filled with supporters of Savonarola. Some were killed. The aristocrat-led gangs besieged his San Marco monastery without fear of reprisal from the Republican government. Savonarola was taken on April 8, 1498.

The original transcripts of the trials of Savonarola in Florence were all "lost," even though Florentine and Roman officials and curia members were obsessive record-keepers. Years later an account was furnished by the Vatican without the transcripts. The account read like a Stalinist show trial and has little credibility. Savonarola's "confession" was patently scripted and out of character from his entire previous life, his sermons, writings and his speech patterns. "I did all for vain reasons" is a one-sentence distillation of the tenor of the doctored testimony. He was doomed and his verdict was decided ahead of time. Moreover, he was tortured, which was the way of many "Christians" in that age. Henceforth the propaganda machine of Rome and Florence would have its way with him. Florence has betrayed Dante. It was doing the same to Savonarola.[13]

[13] Martines, op. cit., p. 248.

Savonarola was imprisoned under harsh conditions in April and May, while Pope Alexander demanded he be taken to Rome. The city fathers of Florence offered a compromise, if they could control the public trial and confine the monk's execution to their own backyard they would give the pope a twenty percent cut of the new tax, the *Decima,* which they planned to impose on the clergy. The pope demanded twenty-five percent and then agreed to leave Savonarola in Florence. The torture of Savonarola proceeded through the third week in May. It had gone on for weeks and it appears that he lost his mind in the course of the prolonged and savage torment, including some types of homosexual molestation as performed on him by the Inquisitor Giovanni Manetti.[14]

On May 22, 1498 the now defrocked Girolamo Savonarola, together with his two friends, the defrocked monks Silvestro Maruffi and Domenico da Pescia, were hanged on a high gibbett in the government square. Their bodies were burned to ashes on the spot, to preclude the possibility of any relics being gathered, and the ashes were then thrown into the Arno River. Dozens of Savonarola's monks were exiled. Painted sheets falsely depicting Savonarola sodomizing children were circulated in the streets. The *Compagnacci* hung the fetid corpse of a donkey on the doors of Savonarola's Church of San Marco. The carnival float for St. John's Day (June 24) featured a pig as a stand-in for "that pig of a friar," Savonarola. His leading followers were beaten, fined or both.

One of the chief heresiarchs of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic fraternity gloated over Savonarola's death. The Medici's creature, Rev. Fr. "Marsilio Ficino explained that it was no ordinary human hypocrite who had deceived the Florentines, but an astute demon, servant of malicious astral forces — Antichrist himself," [15] —i.e. *"ab Antichristo Hieronymo Ferrariense hypocritarum."*

The trial of Galileo and the burning of Giordano Bruno have been seared into the collective historical memory of the world, while Girolamo Savonarola's memory has been reduced to a tawdry cartoon: a bigoted friar inciting the masses to an irrational puritanical frenzy which left the pope no choice other than to take punitive action against him. It's like a slogan from Orwell's *Animal Farm:* repression of Savonarola good; repression of Bruno bad. Martin Luther was fifteen-years-of-age when Savonarola was burned. John Calvin would not be born for another eleven years. Together they would take Savonarola's rage at the occupant of the papal institution to another level. Savonarola had believed that French King Charles VIII's invasion of Italy was a heaven-sent scourge of a corrupt land. One wonders whether he would have regarded the rise of the *Protesting* Catholics in a similar light.

---

[14] Ibid., p. 265. Martines undertakes an analysis of Savonarola's reported testimony which undercuts the credibility of his trials (Martines, pp. 266-273).

[15] Weinstein p. 297.

Papists will say that Luther and Calvin went too far and in certain respects that is true. They threw the proverbial baby out with the bathwater. But consider this: after Savonarola was deposed, degraded, libeled, show-tried, tortured and hanged, and his “heresy” with him, sodomy returned to Florence after having been throughly suppressed for the four years the monk held sway over the city. There was nowhere near any campaign against sodomy in Florence by the pope and his minions to match in energy or ferocity the campaign against Savonarola. Obviously, he was judged the greater threat by far. “Savonarola’s fight against the practice of anal intercourse was directed against compliant women as well. He knew that this vice was honored in marriage as well as in female prostitution. Homosexual males held no monopoly. Florence’s reputation for sodomy was so widespread in the Germany of that day, that to sodomize ‘was popularly dubbed *florenzen,* and a sodomite a *Florenzer.* Savonarola reacted by insisting, in a number of his sermons, that sodomites deserved to be stoned or burned alive in public. He was a Biblicist, determined to keep the strict letter of the Bible, and his inspiration was the Old Testament’s horror of sodomy. The act in question, in seeking sexual pleasure as a thing frankly divorced from the will to procreate, seemed to sum up carnal debauchery.” [16]

[16] Martines. op. cit., p. 284.

Savonarola regarded “sacred scripture as the sole, exclusive and absolutely infallible source of true knowledge: the certainty given to absolute faith in the Bible... See the opening sentences of Savonarola’s treatise against astrology: [17]

[17] *Trattato contra li astrologi 1, 1,* in *Savonarola, Scritti filosofici,* vol. 1, p. 278.

“The foundation of Christian religion is the sacred Scripture of the New and Old Testament, which we are obliged to believe down to the smallest iota, and we must approve all that it approves, and disapprove of all that it disapproves of, since it is made by God, who cannot err.” [18]

[18] Hanegraaff, *Esotericism* (op.cit.), p. 81.

Some Catholics will aver that Savonarola was skating dangerously close to the thin ice of the Protestant tenet of *sola Scriptura* (the Bible only). In fact, he was on the solid ground of Catholic theology from Apostolic times onward: no church doctrine, canon, pronouncement or practice can contradict the Bible.

One legacy of the suppression of the Church’s most indefatigable foe of anal intercourse is the fact that permission for rectal sex entered the official theology of the Catholic Church. One of its leading theologians, Rev. Dr.

Father Heribert Jone, O.F.M, Cap., J.C.D., in his 1929 manual, *Moral Theology,* which was reprinted seventeen times in German and English, ruled directly contrary to Savonarola concerning a husband sodomizing his wife: "...it is neither sodomy nor a grave sin if intercourse is begun in a rectal manner with the intention of consummating it naturally, or if some sodomitical action is posited without danger of pollution." [19]

Aftermath

"Some preachers stirred the apocalyptic cauldron, claiming a share of Savonarola's prophetic and charismatic gifts. Martino di Brozzi, ragged, self-styled holy madman, appeared in Florence at the end of 1500 to declare that the killing of Savonarola proved that Florence and Rome were about to be scourged... He was imprisoned... To possess Savonarola's writings was a criminal offense. His books were to be surrendered, confiscated, destroyed... San Marco and its allied houses were enjoined from conducting services and ceremonies in honor of the three martyrs or from singing *Ecce Quam Bonus* (which was) Fra Girolamo's favorite psalm."

In the city-state of Florence, still a Republic in keeping with Savonarola's reform, his surviving "devotees resumed their campaigns for moral and political renewal... (and) their determination to prevent the return of the Medici... To achieve these objectives as well as to protect it against the continuing hostility of the papacy and the Holy League, Florence needed political unity, and this favored the continuation of the *governo civile* and Great Council with its indelible Savonarolan imprint... In 1502 the Great Council voted to make the Gonfaloniere of Justice a lifetime office and elected Piero Soderini, brother of Paolantonio, Savornarola's old political ally and mentor. Piero... promoted many Savonarolan goals.

"...Florence regained Pisa through its own initiative. Backed by (Savonarolan) Gonfaloniere Soderini, Niccoló Machiavelli, secretary of the Ten, was able to create a citizen militia and reduce the city's dependence on foreign *condottieri* of uncertain loyalty. The new model army was part of the force that laid siege to Pisa and took its surrender in June 1509.

---

[19] Heribert Jone, *Moral Theology* (Tan Books and Publishers, 1993), p. 539. This pervert goes on to decree that a husband having intercourse while his wife is menstruating, while not recommended, is not morally objectionable (p. 535). Catholics enslaved to a hierarchy that pushes this sewage rather than the Word of God will suffer in body, mind and soul. Jone's highly touted *Moral Theology* bears imprimaturs and was published in nine languages by Catholic publishers over many decades.

"...In August of 1512 soldiers of the Spanish viceroy in the service of Pope Julius and Cardinal Giovanni de' Medici seized the town of Prato, a few miles from Florence, sacked it and killed hundreds of its (Catholic) inhabitants. When the Florentines learned that six thousand Spanish troops were on their way to the city, they abandoned all thought of resistance. Soderini fled. Cardinal Giovanni de' Medici and other members of his family returned to the city as conquerors. They enlisted the support of leading citizens (many former republicans now becoming good Mediceans); convened a *Parlamento,* which appointed a *balia,* or civic commission, and proceeded to demolish the key (Republican) institutions of the intervening two decades. Great Council and Council of Eighty were no more. They dissolved the militia (for his involvement in the Soderini government Machiavelli was imprisoned and tortured) and trashed the Great Hall of Five Hundred, symbol of the Savonarolan *governo civile.* Florence would now be ruled from Rome by ministers of Cardinal Giovanni, soon to be elected Pope Leo X (1513-1521).

"While Soderini and his allies had been trying to save the popular republic, (the) Piagnoni (group) kept Savonarola's apocalyptic teachings alive. San Marco friars spread the word locally and their exiled brothers were making fresh converts in outlying Dominican houses and lay circles in Tuscany and beyond. Those teachings were received and interpreted in various ways. Some grasped the essential unity of Savonarola's prophetic apostolate in which he fused Christian living *(il ben vivere*) ...republican government and civic apotheosis in a single glorious vision." [20]

[20] Weinstein, op. cit., pp. 298-302.

Florence would lurch back and forth between a Savonarola-like republic and a Medici tyranny until another Medici Pope, Clement VII, imprisoned or killed the last of the Piagnoni friars and Medici rule was definitively imposed over Florence.

Pico

It is necessary that we return to the *vita* of Giovanni Pico della Mirandola, to address tall tales about his "persecution" by the Church and the papacy, his "imprisonment" and his "friendship" with Savonarola. These tales are shot through with the thick veils of misdirection which accompany the accounts of the lives of many of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic conspirators. The story *behind* the story of poor, pitiful Pico's imprisonment by the "Inqusition" due to "his writings" is one such case of occult propaganda. In

May, 1486 in Arezzo, Pico made off with the wife of a low-ranking Medici official, the tax collector Giuliano Mariotto de' Medici, who pursued his bride and Pico to the border with Siena. A fight ensued and men in Pico's large contingent of bodyguards were injured and slain. Pico was locked up in the Arezzo prison and the woman was restored to her husband. None of this had anything to do with heresy, the Church or the Inquisition, and as usual Pico had a golden parachute. Lorenzo de' Medici, putting Pico's interests ahead of his kinsman Giuliano, obtained Pico's release.

Then in January, 1488, near Lyons, France, to placate conservative Catholics, a charade was arranged for their benefit: Pico underwent a farcical arrest and imprisonment in Vincennes, "by order of the pope." Upholders of the notion that the Church of Rome was hot on the heels of the heretic Pico conclude the narrative at this point. They omit the following fact concerning his quick release: "Influential admirers and supporters set diplomatic wheels in motion and won his release. Among them was Lorenzo de' Medici," in whose villa at Fieole, Pico took up residence, allegedly in great piety and observing strictest continence (but actually in the company of his concubine). [21]

Tales of Giovanni Pico's supposed "friendship" with the anti-Medici Savonarola, of his collaboration with Savonarola on anti-astrological treatises, and alleged desire to take the Dominican habit shortly before his death from natural causes, [22] mostly emanate from Pico's nephew Gianfrancesco, the enigmatic mover and shaker who attached himself to Savonarola as a disciple, but who was likely a spy charged with keeping an eye on the reformer while cleansing his Uncle Pico's legacy of its more extreme occult associations.

After Giovanni Pico's death, Savonarola prayed for the soul of Pico and mercifully opined that he was in purgatory rather than hell. The notion that Pico the sexual libertine and Kabbalist who made no public recantation or repentance for either of these transgressions, was a devout and sincere convert to Savonarola's Catholic orthodoxy, is untenable. Giovanni Sinibaldi, one of the inner circle at Savonarola's San Marco monastery, wrote that Pico was deceiving Savonarola. Sinibaldi claimed that while volunteering to submit to Savonarola's regimen of severe asceticism, Pico was keeping a prostitute on the sly. [23]

---

[21] Ibid., pp. 70-71.

[22] Ibid., pp. 141-142.

[23] Ibid., p. 143.

What we know for certain about Savonarola undercuts all the legends of him lending support to Pico's views. The monk's relentless "disparagement of humanist intellectuals who were more Platonic than Christian" [24]

[24] Ibid., p. 144.

puts paid to the myth that there was some sort of alliance between the two. Fraternal relations, such as they were, could be maintained only through the pagan Pico's occult traits of shameless hypocrisy and masquerade: "From the humanist Crinito we have the idyllic story that when Pico smiled indulgently at Savonarola's denunciation of the pagan philosophers, the *Frate* (Savonarola) embraced and saluted him as the most learned philosopher and expert on Christianity of the age." [25]

[25] Ibid., p. 142.

"The portraits of the later Pico drawn even by avid *piagnoni* (friends of Savonarola) ...more often remind us of the bold magician-priest of the nine hundred theses who was literally prepared to marry the world,' than of the self-effacing Christian of his nephew's *Vita,* where we find the humble (and even self-flagellating) Pico vowing to wander barefoot preaching the simple word of Christ once his current literary projects were complete. Suggestions, in fact, exist of serious conflict between Pico and Savonarola..." [26]

[26] Farmer, op.cit., pp. 150-151.

Chapter VII

The Sorcerer Abbott

The Catholic occultist, cryptographer and Benedictine Abbot Johannes Trithemius (1462-1516) was born Johann Heidenberg in Trittenheim, Germany on the banks of the river Mosel, near Trier. In the early 1480s he met his first handler, "an unnamed Jew" he had worked under while studying at the University of Heidelberg. Soon afterward he joined the Benedictine order and from the precocious age of twenty-one he headed the Benedictine monastery of Sponheim in the Palatinate for the succeeding twenty-three years, and became renowned throughout Europe. Was he named abbot at such a young age solely due to his merit, or was his career being guided by the Cryptocracy, thanks to his handler? Sponheim was a wealthy monastery with a fabulous library of some 2,000 volumes of arcana, almost too perfectly suited to the requirements of Trithemius to have been a coincidence.

In 1499 his occult Catholicism was discovered and controversy erupted among the Carmelites of Ghent over his book of black magic and cryptography, *Steganographia.* (The title refers to his favored technique of composing secret messages delivered by demonic spirits). Later the French Catholic scholar Carolus Bovillus joined the fray on the side of orthodox Catholicism and in correspondence termed Abbot Trithemius a demonic magician.

In 1505 Trithemius departed Sponheim and its extraordinary library. In 1506 he assumed the leadership of the monastery of St. Jacob of Würzburg. Besides *Steganographia* he authored three other cardinal occult works: *De daemonibus; Antipalus maleficiorum;* and *De septem secundeis;* and at least one exclusively devoted to cryptography, *Polygraphia.*

“Trithemius was at one with the circle of literary figures he had befriended at Heidelberg before his arrival at Sponheim, a number of whom, headed up by the gifted poet Conrad Celtis, later formed themselves, with the departed Trithemius included, into a kind of academy modeled after the Florentine Platonist circle of Marsilio Ficino and Pico della Mirandola. The humanists comprising this so-called *sodalitas literaria Rhenana* generally met on an informal basis in the house of the Heidelberg jurist Johannes Vigilius (Wacker), and in addition to Celtis included such foremost luminaries of the German renaissance as Rudolf Agricola (before his premature death in 1486), Johannes de Dalberg (the Bishop of Worms), Johannes Reuchlin and Johannes Wimpheling.

“...We are able to pinpoint the exact year in which the legend of Trithemius the magician began because, by Trithemius’ own account, we can specify the precise event which put this legend into motion. The responsible party, as it happened, was not some hostile antagonist anxious to malign his good name with rumors of demon-conjuration and the like, but Trithemius himself, who in 1499 addressed a letter to his good friend Arnold Bostius, a Carmelite monk of Ghent in modern Belgium, summarizing the contents of a handbook the abbot had recently commenced and was furiously attempting to complete as quickly as possible. The subject of the handbook was steganography, that is, the art of writing secret messages and communicating them long distances by occult means.

“...Regardless of whether Trithemius’ readers were in basic sympathy with the abbot’s audacious extension of the concept *artes liberales* to include occult subjects like that of steganography, they could not but marvel at the great impact Trithemius was having upon the learned and powerful of Europe simultaneously with the proliferation of his magical legend.”[1]

[1] Noel L. Brann, *The Abbot Trithemius (1462-1516): The Renaissance of Monastic Humanism* (1981), pp.15, 18-19.

Among these "learned and powerful" Catholics were Rutger Sicamber de Venray of the Augustinian monastery of Heyna; the Carmelite Johannes Evriponus, Robert Gaguin, Superior-General of the Order of Trinitarians; Dietrich von Bülow, the Bishop of Lebus; Count Philip, the Duke of Bavaria; Matthäus Herbenus, Rector of St. Servatius in Maastricht; Werner von Themar; Dietrich Gresemund the Younger; the Margrave Christopher of Baden; the Margrave-Elector Joachim of Brandenburg; the Dutch Canon Cornelius Aurelius, along with other assorted "princes, prelates, nobles and magistrates" and, in 1512, one Holy Roman Emperor — Maximilian — who studied under Trithemius when the latter became the Abbot of the monastery in Würzburg.

[Page 240 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

During "Margrave Christopher of Baden's visit in the same year... it is made plain that the principal cause of his attraction to Sponheim was the abbot's specialized knowledge in the occult studies... the Margrave entered Trithemius' cloistered walls ostensibly with the purpose of 'seeing the library,' but at the same time as he was perusing the abbot's books 'added to his knowledge and cognition certain arcana in the pursuit of which he had summoned Trithemius to his castle at Lutzenburg the year before'... within two years he returned 'to see and speak with the abbot Trithemius, with whom he discussed and shared certain secrets in the hidden mysteries of nature *(in abditis naturae mysteriis quaedam secreta)."* [2]

[2] Ibid., pp. 27-28.

Trithemius swung between two poles of neo-Catholic Renaissance magic: the white or "natural" magic of Ficino and Pico, and black magic which Trithemius utilized in an exceedingly circumspect manner, as for example in his *Synusiastes Melanii Triandrici ad Yaymielem,* a private treatise he prepared for his wealthy but impotent client, "Joachim," which advised the invocation of demons. The *Synusiastes,* printed posthumously in the *Paralipomena,* eventually was acquired by Heinrich Khunrath [3]

[3] Heinrich Kunrath of Leipzig, author of *The Amphitheatre of Eternal Wisdom.* He is described "as 'one of the most remarkable theosophists and alchemists of the late sixteenth century,' and 'one of the greatest Hermetic philosophers..." (Forshaw, p. 108). Kunrath was another heir of the Ficino-Pico-Reuchlin contagion by way of Paracelsus. His critic, the Lutheran physician and chemist Dr. Andreas Libavius of the University of Jena, correctly identified the ideology of Paracelsus and followers like Kunrath, as being predicated on "the search for power by summoning of evil spirits" (Allen G. Debus, *The French Paracelsians,* [1991], p. 61). Libavius was that rare breed: a practitioner of alchemy who "objected strongly to the introduction of mysticism and the occult into the sciences," and to the opposite extreme: inquisitorial mentalities such as Jean Riolan the Elder (1539-1605); Censor of the Parisian Medical Faculty and a leading physician and anatomist, who suspected most any science, however thoroughly rational, of being infected by the black arts. Jean Riolan

the Younger was court physician to the Queen Mother of France, Marie de' Medici, and an opponent of William Harvey. Riolan *pere* and *fils* were Galenists.

(1560-1605). *Synusiastes* was censored in parts by Busaeus, and uncensored editions are very scarce but can be found in the *Antipalus* manuscript in the archives of Cornell University. [4]

[4] Stuttgart, Staats-und Stadbibliothek, Codex in Folio 212 (Peutinger), ff. 118r-130v, 236r-245r, codex M 61. ff. n.n.

[The Sorcerer Abbott Page 241]

Trithemius was defended by his Catholic confrére, the monk Johannes Butzbach, who compared him to St. Albertus Magnus, Dominican Prior of Teutonia (1254-1257) and the teacher of Aquinas. Butzbach deceptively described Trithemius in terms of a benevolent, Catholic white magic, which excluded demonic black magic. This, as we have seen, was not true:

"...in this book he (Trithemius) deals with natural magic; he teaches with extreme elegance with the strongest arguments and a multitude of testimonies as did recently the erudite Pico that this magic is different and has to be distinguished from the magic which is impious and criminal. Indeed, no person who has read Pico's *Apologia* could be in doubt that 'magic is twofold;' as the author says, the one is concerned with the entire work and authority of the demons, a practice most certainly abominable and unnatural. The other is, when correctly examined, nothing but the absolute perfection of natural philosophy.

"...Agrippa (Trithemius' disciple), then in his early twenties, showed in 1510 the first manuscript draft of his *De occulta philosophia* to Trithemius. Both were attached to Johannes Reuchlin and they had a frank discussion... in regard to a good many secrets and the 'two ways' of magic. The abbot urged him not to stop at the mere natural magic... but to probe under the veil of initiation into the prodigies of magical practice." [5]

[5] Paola Zambelli, *White Magic, Black Magic* (2007), pp. 53-54.

It is seldom that we have a clear admission from one of the significant infiltrators inside the Church concerning the two-faced strategy of deception which was one of their tools for duping the public. "...what interests us in this document is Trithemius's instigation to double-dealing; he revealed this attitude only to the few disciples who had arrived at the final initiation. Certainly also, Trithemius's game with magic and witchcraft amounts to double-dealing. In his form of magic, the aspect of ceremonial magic is present; indeed, it is prevalent. In the *Steganographia*... there is to be found, apart from a strange cryptography, spiritual magic of the cabalistic type. His letters to Joachim von Brandenburg, beside the one to Agrippa... leave little room for doubt; and yet Trithemius wrote three works against witches who engage in the same practices.

"(Trithemius) advised (Cornelius) Agrippa over his decision whether to present his work *De occulta philosophia* (and the hermetic tradition that lay behind it) openly, or in secret, i.e. through a circle of initiates. It is very remarkable in this context that Trithemius, a prelate, advised Agrippa, a layman, to keep an initiatic attitude.

"...All this leads me to believe that in his maturity Trithemius had not forsworn that '*Reformatio hermetica*' which Noel L. Brann, his recent biographer, has read into his letter of 1499 to Arnold Bost ('Bostius') ...I cannot... trace a change in Trithemius's attitude toward the Hermetic conception..." [6]

[6] Paola Zambelli, ibid., pp. 60-61; 69; 74.

One of his chief areas of study and expertise was cryptography, and more than mere codes and ciphers, masked language understood only by the initiated. This was a practice of Plethon, Ficino, Giovanni Pico, and Reuchlin as well. (The latter personage Bishop Trithemius had met on more than one occasion.) It took the form of hypocritical double-talk laden with Catholic pieties, along with an esoteric language for communicating actual arcana to insiders. It should be noted that when time and place were auspicious, concealment was abandoned and the occult doctrine was communicated in public with revelatory potency, most often in the form of Catholic works of art executed by initiates. Trithemius has the distinction of having combined the occult orientation toward extreme secrecy with an intermittent inclination toward a stratagem of the Cryptocracy in the 20th century, dispensing with the customary dissimulation in favor of the Revelation of the Method (making manifest of what is concealed by the one who initially concealed it).[7]

[7] As analyzed in this writer's *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare* (2001).

These episodes of conceal-and-then-reveal (the "cryonic freeze-thaw process" denoted by James Shelby Downard), are a mark of the magical praxis of Trithemius. He was preoccupied both with secrecy and with making proclamations of secrets. There is a mocking trickster aspect to this phenomenon.

"Trithemius was a notorious follower of the magical sciences. He had unashamedly maintained that ceremonial practices were indispensable in magic and had criticized those who, following Ficino and Pico, claimed not to go beyond ‘natural’ magic. He kept in manuscript form most of his magical works, sharing them only with a close circle of initiates; some of these writings were published many decades after his death, others are to this day unpublished...” [8]

[8] Zambelli, p. 75.

Abbot Trithemius, like nearly every Catholic occultist examined in these pages, was a liar and extraordinarily dishonest. He was known to produce occult forgeries and imaginary sages (“Pelagius of Majorca”) and colleagues (“Libanius Gallus”). Among contemporary Orthodox Catholics he had a reputation for presenting fables as history *(“Ego non pro historico, sed fabulatore omnium falsissimo reputo”).* Among “experts” of our time he is however, reputed to be an eminent humanist. Though today most Establishment historians and academics imagine that “Pelagius of Majorca” was an actual historical figure, in the time of Trithemius the name was tangentially associated, at least among those “in the know,” with fraud: Francesco Zambeccari’s 1504 translation of a version of the letters of the early Church heretic Pelagius [9]

[9] The original Pelagius was an actual person and originator of what has come to be known as the “Pelagian heresy” through his commentary on St. Paul. Cf. Thomas P. Scheck, “Pelagius’s Interpretation of Romans” in *A Companion to St. Paul in the Middle Ages* (2013); and Dominic Keech, *The Anti-Pelagian Christology of Augustine of Hippo, 396-430* (2012).

compiled by a certain “Libanius,”[10]

[10] “From Cracow in Poland we get as early as 1504 a Libanius: *Epistolae* translated from the Greek by the Italian humanist Francesco Zambeccari... This Libanius is printed for the Cracow publisher Jo. Haller by one Joannes Clymes, who is never heard of again...” (E.P. Goldschmidt, *The First Cambridge Press in its European Setting* [1955], p. 45).

was somewhat notorious for containing more than a hundred of the epistles attributed to Pelagius that had been faked by the translator. In terms of cryptography, which too often we associate with numbers rather than conjuring misdirection by means of written words and patter, the mission to deceive is assisted by a sophisticated process of intentional signaling to the percipient that he or she is being deceived, within a context of a macabre joke at their expense. Cryptography like this constitutes psychological warfare. The conjuration by Trithemius of “Pelagius of Majorca” and “Libanius” may have been toward that objective. If so, it affords us insight into the methods—born from a mentality steeped in profound deception—by which the "Catholic" Neoplatonists, Hermeticists and Kabbalists plied their infiltration of the Church.

The historical record is replete with the chicanery of these scoundrels. Giovanni Pico's Judaic handler, Guglielmo Raimondo Moncada (alias "Flavius Mithridates"), took the anti-Christian Kabbalistic teaching that declared that the passage in Deuteronomy 31:16 about "playing the harlot" alludes to the Blessed Virgin Mary, and turned this Kabbalistic statement completely around, boldly misrepresenting it as "a Kabbalistic confirmation of Christianity... Mithridates' skillful presentation of what he wanted Pico to believe, was the input for Pico's original 'experiment with the principles' and stands at the origin of the Christian Kabbalah. This unique constellation was going to have far-reaching consequences... for the standard argument used later by Christian Kabbalists in order to defend the legitimacy and the usefulness of their 'discovery' for a Christian readership... [11]

[11] Cf. Saverio Campanini, "Talmud, Philosophy and Kabbalah: A Passage from Pico della Mirandola's *Apologia* and its Source," in *The Words of a Wise Man's Mouth are Gracious,* Mauro Perani, ed. (2005), pp. 444 and 447.

Shameless liars like Moncada/Mithridates and his theological heirs, such as Johannes Reuchlin and other Renaissance-Catholic intellectuals, are the rule, not the exception in the occult Church of Rome. Non-conspirators among the Christian public not privy to initiation in the conspiracy were viewed as cattle, beasts of burden and wicked persons. This was how the Pharisees of Christ's time viewed the common Israelites who flocked to His message: deadbeats and evil-doers.

Students of this subject who take at face value statements of popes, "pope-saints," and other "Lord Bishops" and high churchmen are going to get quickly lost in coils of delusion, because any underhanded deception, no matter how low or unscrupulous, is justified in the eyes of the occultists, due to their view of the nearly sub-human status of the common people. In a longer preface to *Steganographia* printed posthumously, Abbot-Bishop Trithemius wrote, "Ancient philosophers, masters in art as well as in nature, when they discovered secrets, concealed them in various ways and figures, to avoid that they might become known to the wicked."

[The Sorcerer Abbott Page 245]

The "wicked" to whom Abbot-Bishop Trithemius is pointing are the parishioners and parish priests; that is to say, the vast majority of the people known as Roman Catholics. *"Ineffabilium mysteriorum secreta"* and the "steganographic" craft must be concealed from the "evil" public according to the occult rationale which itself stems from Kabbalistic-Talmudic Judaism.

Inside the Church, secrets are to be guarded by distraction, coded language and doubletalk, of which Trithemius was the professor. Almost nothing about the occult is to be stated in a straight-forward manner. “Magic and all its ceremonies could not fail to attract a man like Trithemius, with his love of prophecies and propaganda, games and forgeries, who put his vast culture at their service. The authenticity or pseudoepigraphy of magical treatises are thus a key which Trithemius used purely and simply to confer prestige and authority on the doctrines they contained and which he simply attributed or denied to their reputed authors. This too was a game that the great humanist played, to the detriment of less cultured or more naive men, like Joachim of Brandenburg. If Trithemius forged the genealogy of the Hapsburgs, if he did not hesitate to write pseudoepigraphic sources, this was all the more reason why he felt entitled to do the same with magical treatises and the sacred figures of their authors. We need not be surprised at this if we remember that even a great philologist like Erasmus did not hesitate to forge and put into circulation a treatise on martyrdom which he attributed to one of the Fathers of the Church in order to send out a metaphorical religious message.” [12]

[12] Zambelli, op. cit., p. 100.

Very ignorant “students of the occult,” as it manifested in the “inquisitorial” Church of Rome have been given the opportunity, by Trithemius himself, of claiming him as a witch-hunter who was a conservative defender of the genuine doctrine of the Church. It doesn’t occur to them that his writings that buttressed the belief that witch-hunts were justified were a smokescreen for advancing his principal objective, the reconciliation of sorcery and magic with Catholic theology. Behind the front of a witch-hunter was a witch-advocate; this is too much for some people to countenance.

Nonetheless, the evidence demonstrates that he penned for public consumption *Antipalus maleficiorum* and *Liber octo quaestionum,* as well as *De morbo caduco et maleficiis*—all of these being works *against witchcraft,* while clandestinely, for the Neoplatonic-Hermetic brotherhood inside the Church, he wrote *apologetics for magic—Nepiachus, Polygraphia* and in particular his *De Septem secundeis,* which entailed Kabbalistic magic.

Shakespeare deals with this phenomenon in Macbeth: “What, can the devil speak true? …’tis strange, and oftentimes to win us to our harm the instruments of darkness tell us truths, win us with honest trifles—to betray us in deepest consequence.” [13]

[13] Banquo in dialogue with Macbeth, Act 1, Scene, 3: 105 and 120-124.

In the summer of 2016, one of the leaders of Britain's "traditional" Catholics, who is at the same time an apologist for the Talmud, became the spokesman [14] for a group of prominent Church of Rome conservative laity and religious, who signed a theological critique [15] of the "apostolic exhortation" *Amoris laetitia* of Pope Francis, requesting that the pope condemn certain liberal propositions contained within it and warning of its "dangers to the faith."

The notion that the occult is always on the Left is disinformation emanating from the Cryptocracy. We have found in virtually every history of the Renaissance Vatican by an author or authors who can accurately be described as Leftist or New Age, a remarkably conforming insistence that the Vatican and the popes were nearly always a reactionary bulwark against all magic, Kabbalism and Neoplatonic Hermeticism. These Leftist and New Age writers often parrot, nearly verbatim, pre-1960s Right wing papal and Vatican statements to the effect that the Church of Rome has always stood against, and restricted and severely repressed, the occult. On the Right, the conservatives and traditionalists are nearly totally blind to Talmudic and occult infiltration of their ranks. They can't seem to process Shakespeare's explanation of occult methodology. It doesn't occur to them that "Catholics" who go about promoting Mary, the Rosary and the Latin Mass, and who organize against the liberalization of marriage and family law put forth by Pope Francis *("Amoris laetitia"),* could be part of the occult imperium.

After the death of Abbot Trithemius, his occult works *(Nepiachus, Polygraphia* and *De Septem secundeis),* began to circulate more widely inside the hierarchy of the Church of Rome as the program they put forth became ever more secretly influential: a Catholic rationale for occultism rooted in the insistence that magic was a divinely sanctified—if necessarily covert—branch of Catholic theology. This arcane doctrine held that the world's most accomplished magician was the priest at Mass, and the foremost magical act in all of the occult was the transformation of ordinary bread and wine into the literal flesh and blood of God Himself, as effectuated by the priest-magician, who was to be esoterically revered as such.

Abbot Trithemius and virtually every other Church of Rome occultist cited in these pages established the priest as magician to draw the faithful away from Scriptural standards of behavior without which the the Kingdom of Yahweh on earth (Matthew 6:10) cannot come about. At the center of the "magical" Catholicism of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic conspirators is the depiction of Jesus as a practitioner of "white" magic, which is precipitously close to the rabbinic disparagement of Mm as someone who learned sorcery in Egypt and led Israel astray by means of it. The Neoplatonic-Hermetic theology presents a series of "good" magicians who used "benevolent magic": Hermes, Pythagoras and Jesus. In the third century A.D. Porphyry the Neoplatonist put forth the notion, rejected by St. Augustine, that to successfully create "white magic" the magician had to be a holy person. Neoplatonic-Hermetic Catholics teach that non-Judaics can share in Jewish magical power through the Catholic priesthood:

---

[14] https://rorate-caeli.blogspot.com/2016/07/appeal-to-cardinals-text-revealed.html

[15] https://onepeterfive.com/wp-content/uploads/2016/07/45-theologians-censure-AL.pdf

"While recently visiting in Rome, Reuchlin reported in his Cabalistically inspired *De verbo mirifico,* Pico had proposed to him 'that no names in magical and lawful enterprises possess a virtue equal to that residing in the Hebrew tongue or languages most nearly derived from it.' The reason, Pico instructed Reuchlin, is that at the beginning of creation all the names given to existent entities 'were formed from the Voice of God; therefore, that in which nature exercises its most potent magic is the Voice of God.' This was not to say, however, Pico further apprised Reuchlin, the Jews were granted an exclusive monopoly in this regard. Also granted access to the secrets of Cabala were certain specially prepared gentiles. Admittedly, the case for this contention was made harder by the appearance of magical counterfeiters in the ranks of the gentiles; when these pretend to effect miracles, Reuchlin agreed, 'it proves to be an illusion *(praestigium)* rather than a true miracle, and takes place not with the help of God, but by a pact with demons." [16]

[16] Noel L. Brann, *Trithemius and Magical Demonology,* p. 30.

So, what was the true miracle in the eyes of these occultists? The Catholic Mass. Conservative and traditional Catholics ought to be on high alert against this misuse of the Mass, but mostly they are not. They have been indoctrinated to believe that threats come only from the Left, as well as from "Protestant-leveling and reductionism." Much of the occult is Right-wing, however: addicted to the courtly theatre of showmanship, elaborate ceremony and costume. Trithemius personified those prelates who were steeped in the occult and engaged in hunting those persons *who would not submit to them and were labeled witches and heretics,* while reserving to themselves and their court the practice of magic, which was conflated with divine miracles, thus expunging the dividing line between miracle and magic which had existed since the days of Moses and Aaron's battle with the priests of Egypt, and which had been precisely and solemnly demarcated by Augustine and Aquinas.

"Trithemius's demonology throws valuable light on what he was about in his own magic. For while expressly rejecting demonic magic out-of-hand, even showing a willingness to send its perpetrators to the stake, he implied at the same time that angels, with whom pious Christians seek both approximation and similarity, can legitimately be invoked to produce results foreclosed to demons." [17]

[17] Ibid., p. 83.

[The Sorcerer Abbott Page 249]

"Echoing the noble sentiments of another great magician of his age who had played a part, if indirectly, in Trithemius's occult education, Pico della Mirandola, Agrippa passionately proclaimed in his *De triplici ratione cognoscendi Dei:* 'O what a great miracle is man, especially he who is a Christian' *(O magnum miraculum homo, praecipue autem Christianus).* Expanding on the Christianized reworking of a Hermetic theme, Agrippa characterized the said *miraculum Christianum* as he 'who has been established in the world, dominates over the world and effects operations resembling those of the world's creator.' The marvelous operations (*opera*) performed by such Christians, declared Agrippa, 'are popularly termed miracles, of which the root and foundation is faith in Jesus Christ." [18]

[18] Ibid., p. 155.

The proclamation of a "Jesus-the-Magician" trope is the culmination of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic conspiracy inside the Church of Rome.

Abbot Trithemius largely escaped interdiction during his lifetime by his Catholic superiors or any sort of "inquisition." He was largely free to rule over monasteries and write and publish books of "Catholic magic." After his death, "on the heels of a generally favorable treatment of the abbot's monastic career, Bellarmine felt compelled at last to give fair warning against two of his writings, the *De septem secundeis* and *Steganographia,* which he correctly perceived to be related through their sharing of an angelic-planetary overview." Bellarmine's criticism was comparatively mild and he salvaged Trithemius' reputation by means of a lie: "Bellarmine claimed, with not an iota of evidence to back up his contention, that their author Trithemius had already started the process for a return to the protective arms of the church by having realized the error of his ways." [19]

[19] Ibid., p. 173.

Numerous Catholic Neoplatonist-Hermeticists would build upon Trithemius, just as he had constructed his theology upon Ficino, Giovanni

Pico and Reuchlin. Among these would be Francesco Giorgi, a Venetian Franciscan theologian who “pointed the way to this conciliating potential of magic, by calling on a mix of Neoplatonism, Hermeticism, Cabala, and orthodox Catholic doctrine to produce what he termed, in his *De harmonia mundi,* ‘a man well-harmonized with God’ *(homo bene chordatus cum Deo).*

“With the same conciliatory function of magic in mind... Francesco Patrizi da Cherso (1529-1597) declared: ‘The first and most excellent part of magic is nothing else but theology and religion, and if it is not completely true, as the truth subsequently has been revealed by Christ, it nevertheless approaches more closely to that truth than all other studies.’ Patrizi’s aspiration in this writing was to enlist the *Hermetica,* together with other surviving texts of the so-called *prisca theologi,* in support of universalist-minded Catholic reform movement... In making his appeal to a *reformatio magica,* Patrizi recommended to Pope Gregory XIV, in the dedicatory preface to his *Nova de universis philosophia* (1591), that the hierarchical church vest the program of magical renewal in the Society of Jesus (Jesuits) as its most suitable vehicle.” [20]

In 1608 a former member of the Jesuit order, Johann Cambilhon, charged the Jesuits with promoting the occult. His charge was given currency by the fact that numerous books of “Catholic magic” remained in print in Catholic countries and not listed on the Vatican’s Index of Prohibited Books. Cambilhon’s accusation led to the papacy placing Trithemius’ book *Steganographia* on the Index the next year. Trithemius had been dead for 94 years during which time his *Steganographia* had circulated freely. Protestants amplified Cambilhon’s testimony and the Church scrambled to impose damage control, and thus a wave of anti-Trithemius declarations were issued. The sincerity of these can be judged in light of the fact that in 1614, at the Jesuit headquarters at Ingolstadt in Bavaria, Adam Tanner S.J., chairman of the theology faculty at the University of Ingolstadt, established a Jesuit forum for the rehabilitation of the posthumous reputation of Abbot Trithemius. His oration pro-Trithemius was published by the Jesuit Order itself. It was followed by a vindication of the Catholicism of Trithemius’ magical doctrines by the Benedictine Abbot Sigismund of Seeon.

“Instances of demonic magic, Tanner held in his Ingolstadt oration of 1614, no more entail the rejection of magic in principle than instances of heresy entail the rejection of theology in principle. The same rule applies to magic as to religion with which it is fundamentally bound up: the winnow must be separated from the chaff. Taking up the question of Trithemian magic in particular to illustrate his point… as evidenced by large tomes of his historical and spiritual writings recently coming to light, exhorted Tanner, Trithemius proved himself to be not only a piously faithful Christian and reform-minded monk but an illustrious paradigm of Christian erudition sought out for counsel by the foremost princes and ecclesiastical dignitaries of his age… Moreover, by conjoining to this understanding a further appreciation of the abbot’s exceptional contributions to the literature of Christian piety… he will allay his suspicions even further, seeing him for what he really is, ‘a man very learned and orthodox in his Catholicism, in which capacity he served not only as a monk but as a high priest of monks… Tanner’s Ingolstadt appeal was to find significant resonance… among his fellow Catholics, including other Jesuits…”[21]

---

[20] Ibid., p. 175.

[21] Ibid., pp. 192 and 194.

“The great Trithemius stands readied with illustrious weapons, and by their use will vindicate his own reputation.’ In this way a Benedictine abbot following the example of Trithemius in more than the conventionally monastic manner, Sigismund of Seeon (d. 1634), signaled his intent, in an introductory ode of his *Trithemius sui-ipsius vindex* (1616), not so much to defend his subject’s cryptographical brand of magic, as to have him articulate his own defense. Expressing puzzlement as to how the esteem for ‘so great a man, one who had been so aptly commended by the Catholic Church for his letters and learnedness, had fallen to its present nadir…

“Posing the question of whether, by his choice of the suspicious language in which the writing was cast, Trithemius played at least some part in bringing his troubles upon himself, Sigismund replied that this decision was made for good reason. ‘Trithemius was warranted in employing numbers, signs, and strange names belonging to spirits and other entities,’ the writer explained following the usual esoterist guideline, ‘so that he might so fully envelop his art in mysteries that it would not be easily penetrated by anyone who was not first, in honesty and piety, initiated into its precepts.’ In adopting this esoterist expedient, continued Sigismund, Trithemius was but following the example of the ancient sages, who likewise, ‘if they discovered any arcana, either of nature or of art, lest they came to the notice of depraved men, concealed them by various modes and figures.’ And if that were not enough to prove the legitimacy of this practice, we have the testimony of holy scripture itself, with examples like that of Moses, who found it necessary to explain ‘the arcane and ineffable mysteries of the creation of heaven and earth’ in the language of riddle and enigma... In like manner ‘the Greeks and Egyptians always used figures and obscurities for the concealment of sacred and divine things: In parallel fashion the jurists, mathematicians, musicians, rhetoricians, poets, alchemists, and even strategists of the military art have long recognized the need to hide their ideas under the mask of cryptic enigmas —this to make them inaccessible to those for whom they were unintended.

“...Trithemius was ‘a lover of a more secret philosophy’ *(secretioris philosophiae amator)* who, far from enlisting demons in his steganographical operations, was always careful to employ only licit and natural means.’ In further fulfillment of his promise to have Trithemius act as his own vindicator, Sigismund appended the expressly demonological fifth, sixth and seventh books of the *Octo quaestiones,* the effect of which, Sigismund agreed with their author, was to establish a clear-cut boundary between Trithemian magic and that of wicked sorcerers.” [22]

[22] Ibid., pp. 201-203.

Other Catholic support for Trithemius came from the eminent Catholic Bishop and casuist-probabilist Juan Caramuel y Lobkowitz. [23]

[23] Cf. pp. 77-78 herein. Caramuel is a Spanish-version of the name Cramer. His father was of Luxemburgh; his mother was a De Vries, which is Flemish, but her mother, Caramuel’s maternal grandmother Regina, was the daughter of Jan Popel von Lobkowitz. Bishop Caramuel was educated at the University of Salamanca in Spain and among his teachers were leading Catholic theologians: Benito Sánchez Herrera, Juan Martínez de Prado, Ángel Manrique, and the Jesuit Pedro Hurtado de Mendoza. In 1638 he was awarded a doctorate in theology from the University of Louvain and through the intervention of Philip IV, King of Spain, and Fabio Chigi, the papal nuncio in Cologne, he was named abbot of a monastery in Germany. In 1646 he was appointed Spanish Counselor at the Imperial Court, where he was a confidant of the Jesuit-educated Holy Roman Emperor Ferdinand III. Cf. below, Fleming, *Defending Probabilism.*

He was called to the occult citadel of Prague to head the Benedictine monastery of Montserrat, known for its conservative Counter-Reformation mission. For four years of his Prague station he served on a body charged with the extirpation of heresy. Also during his time in the heavily occultic and Judaic city of Prague he collaborated with several rabbis of the Prague Jewish community. “Caramuel notes that the pope has far less to fear from the Jews than the emperor does from Swedish mercenaries.” [24]

[24] Julia A. Fleming, op. cit., p. 62.

He was the author of influential works of theology including his *Rationalis et realis philosophia* (1642), and *Theologia moralis fundamentalis* (1652). Caramuel y Lobkowitz left Prague for Rome in 1655, the year his old friend Chigi was elected to the papacy as Alexander VII. [25]

[25] Caramuel and Chigi sometimes clashed after the latter was elevated to the papacy, but never to such a degree as to impede his consistent promotion in the hierarchy.

He was named Bishop of Vigevano in Lombardy in 1673. His theology is outwardly impressive in its erudition and inwardly thoroughly distorted as befits a high member of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic conspiracy who enjoyed the protection and promotion of popes and Catholic kings in the seventeenth century, and who wrote in his *Pax Licita,* "There are no such things as sins in themselves."

In 1635 Caramuel reprinted Trithemius' *Steganographia.* He inveighed against its detractors and he urged the Inquisition to pursue the critics of Trithemius, not his defenders. Concerning demonology in Trithemius, "Caramuel indicates that demonic 'incantations' are only encoded texts whereas the names of demons represent the code of messages." [26]

[26] Ioan P. Coulianu, *Eros and Magic in the Renaissance,* p. 169.

Caramuel never suffered for his occult views. He enjoyed consistent promotion in Catholic royal and religious ranks under popes and Catholic kings.

Trithemius attracted additional posthumous support from the Dean of Münster Cathedral, Bernhard von Mallinckrodt, as well as the theologian and Benedictine Prior, Jean d'Espieres.

"Believing magic to be just as deserving as any other 'handmaiden' to theology in the traditional *artes liberales,* Trithemeius considered it to be an adjunct to sound Catholic doctrine." His own Benedictine Order regarded his views on Catholic magic as a "minor digression of the abbot in light of the larger picture of his eminently pious way of life and unrelenting commitment to his monastic vows" and the Benedictines proceeded to distinguish "Trithemius's good, natural and Cabalistic magic from the wicked magic of the demonically inspired sorcerers." [27]

[27] Brann, op. cit., pp. 240-241.

Abbot Trithemius, like Catholic Fr. Ficino, Catholic Giovanni Pico and Catholic Reuchlin, was a Catholic theological bridge to the very Rosicrucian, masonic, theosophist and modernist trends that Leo XIII and Pius IX, Pius X and Pius XI would make declamatory expostulations upon, to "warn the faithful." But any genuine warning would include a revelation of the origin of the toxic thought, and that origin was a Renaissance papacy which consistently shielded, covertly protected and in those instances where orthodox Catholics became too vigorous in opposition, imposed token "punishments" which today are cited by dupes to "prove" that the papacy combatted the Neoplatonic-Hermetic Kabbalists. The documentary record gives evidence that in each generation occult Catholics went from strength to strength, giving form and content to the very conspiracy which Right wing Catholics imagine they are battling by their loyalty to "conservative" and "traditional" Catholicism.

Paraphrasing Trithemius' biographer Noel L. Brann, we observe that "in the culminating Rosicrucian and theosophical stages of the Catholic magical movement, what heretofore were

relatively minor subterranean streamlets of Catholic thought — astrology, Pythagorean numerology and Hermetic and Cabalistic magic—became expanded into major streams and rivers." [28]

[28] Ibid., p. 253.

How the Catholic Church became famous for fighting against these "streams and rivers" which it permitted to arise and flourish within its bosom, is among the most neglected lacunae in the chronicle of Christendom. It testifies to a dual Church, the one visible for the benefit of the well-intentioned but sadly ignorant and bamboozled priests and parishioners who tend toward conservatism; and the other diabolic, led by numerous popes who were either active conspirators or mute accomplices to the covert escalation of magic, homosexual predation upon children, usurious money power, and lying and deceit advanced by a hierarchical "magisterium" shrouded in the blackest folds of an institutionalized secrecy which is the *sine qua non* of most of the western occult camarilla.

Chapter VIII

Reuchlin's Revolution

"...of the Christian cabalists who may be considered 'humanists'—i.e. who came to *cabala* as to an ancient fountain of wisdom... Johannes Reuchlin, by far the most important and productive, was Pico's disciple." [1]

[1] Werner L. Gundersheimer, "Erasmus, Humanism and the Christian Cabala," *Journal of the Warburg and Courtauld Institutes,* Vol. 26, No. 1/2 (1963).

Before we take up Johannes Reuchlin, the foremost contemporary heir to the legacy of Giovanni Pico della Mirandola, we will return to the Catholic-Kabbalist and Fifth Lateran Council luminary, Giles of Viterbo (1469-1532), who is a link to other popes of the occult Renaissance: Julius II (Giuliano della Rovere), who was the patron of Michelangelo and whose papacy had been made possible by Sixtus IV (Francesco della Rovere). Julius was the immediate predecessor of Leo X (Giovanni di Lorenzo de' Medici).

"It was during Julius' pontificate, moreover, that Giles of Viterbo, so often an articulator for the Della Rovere pontiff of the papacy's sacred mission and destiny, developed a deepening interest in Hebraic studies. Earlier, following Annio da Viterbo's lead, Giles had pursued Egyptian lore. But around 1507 he returned to the serious study of Hebrew and Aramaic he had begun a dozen years earlier in Florence. Giles devoted attention to Talmudic literature, but above all he cultivated the cabala, the esoteric medieval Jewish theosophy, which he and other Renaissance cabalists believed contained the hidden divine wisdom revealed to Adam, Moses and the other patriarchs, and from them descended in oral transmission down the centuries.

"Roman interest in the cabala did not originate with Giles... Julius II's uncle Sixtus IV (who had made Julius a cardinal), sought to have a Latin translation made of it. To Sixtus's pontificate also belongs the Good Friday 1481 sermon of Flavius Mithridates. This converted Sicilian Jew, who had come to Rome through the patronage of Cardinal Cibo, the future Innocent VIII, dazzled his Vatican audience in the course of his two-hour oration with citations from Latin, Greek, the Hebrew 'arcana,' and 'Chaldean'... In 1486, at Perugia, this same Mithridates undertook to teach Pico the rudiments of Hebrew and initiated him into the profundities of esoteric Jewish lore... Most important, Mithridates made accessible to Pico the cabala, translating for him the basic texts. Pico, who eventually returned to Florence... became the pivotal figure in advocating cabalistic exegesis of the Old Testament as the key to finding a hidden concordance between Neoplatonist metaphysics and Christian revelation. Foremost among those taking inspiration from Pico's efforts was Giles of Viterbo. Like Pico, the Roman Augustinian was drawn to the esoteric richness of the cabalistic method. By means of metaphor, number mysticism and the riddles of acrostics, hidden depths in the Scriptural text could be revealed... Cabalistic studies preoccupied Giles for the remainder of his life... the cabala determined the basic structure of his *Historia XX saecolorum,* the universal history he composed for Leo X in the years 1513-18." [2]

[2] Stinger, op. cit., pp. 307-308.

Ficino and Pico’s theology was transmitted to many leading Catholic prelates and laymen in Europe in the decades ahead. One of the earliest and most influential of these was Johannes Reuchlin (1455-1522), the celebrated German-Catholic Renaissance humanist from Pforzheim,[3] which at the time of his birth was administered by the Margrave of Baden. Reuchlin studied at the Pforzheim Latin School, the University of Freiburg in Breisgau, and the University of Paris under Robert Gaguin (a translator of Pico’s works into French), and at Basle University. Reuchlin’s handler in Rome, who personally directed his path up the ladder of the occult Catholic Brotherhood, was Rabbi Obadiah Sforno.

“He (Reuchlin) returned to his native country and obtained an appointment as personal advisor to Count Eberhard im Bart of Würtemberg… The following year, 1483, he went on the first of his visits to Italy as one of the group of advisors who accompanied the Count. He appeared before Pope Sixtus IV in his capacity as Count Eberhard’s Latin interpreter and his legal negotiator concerning Tübingen University which had been founded in 1477 by Count Eberhard to provide qualified staff for his court.[4] Pope Sixtus IV presented the Count with the ‘Golden Rose’… the granting of such a symbol to Eberhard indicated he was a person who the Pope could rely on for his loyalty. Thus, Reuchlin in his role as private secretary was known for his scholarly ability at a very early stage to the most powerful person in the Church. While in Italy they were also introduced to Lorenzo de Medici… and to several other scholars, among them Giovanni Pico della Mirandola…”[5]

After receiving his doctorate in law from Tübingen University, Reuchlin proceeded to advance to the top of the German-Catholic ruling circles: as a justice on an appellate court, a judge at the Imperial Chamber Court at Speyer; one of the three judges of the Swabian League, and as an emissary to the Holy Roman Emperor Maximilian I. Often times the cases he judged were

[3] In Pforzheim in 1267, Judaics were alleged to have been guilty of the ritual murder of the Catholic child, Margaret of Pforzheim; Pforzheim became a regional cultural center. It was intentionally incinerated in heavy fire-bombing by the British during World War II.

[4] Tübingen would soon become a hotbed of Catholic nominalism from which sprang the first substantive Catholic theological justification for taking profit on loans of money. Cf. this writer’s *Usury in Christendom: The Mortal Sin that Was and Now is Not,* pp. 163-168; 171-172 and 176.

[5] Daniel O’Callaghan, *The Preservation of Jewish Religious Books in Sixteenth Century Germany: Johannes Reuchlin’s Augenspiegel* (2012) p. 26.

derived from Catholic Canon Law. Reuchlin used his position as a powerful Catholic jurist to advance the legal status of Judaics to the level of citizen, which contradicted the *via antigua* of the Church as embodied by Aquinas and medieval Popes Innocent III and Gregory IX, and other pontiffs, as well as councils and theologians.

From 1482 onward, his patrons were the Florentine Medici dynasts among whom was the Medici Pope Leo X. Reuchlin took Giovanni Pico della Mirandola's Catholic Kabbalah to the next level of progression with his seminal works of rabbinic mysticism, *De verbo mirifico* of 1494 (which argued that all religions including Judaic Kabbalism and the paganism of Hermes share with Christianity fundamental, sublime truths), and *De arte cabalistica* (1517), his heinous book of black magic

which he *dedicated to Leo X,* and which the pope accepted without disapproval of any kind.

Canonized as "St. Johannes Reuchlin" by Erasmus, Reuchlin is among the most important inheritors of the legacy pioneered by Ficino and Pico, as this legacy began to further reveal itself, as the Renaissance in Italy and Germany devolved further into the depths of Neoplatonic-Hermetic Kabbalism. All three men were Judaizing enemies of the ancient Catholic faith. Yet they had powerful patrons within the hierarchy of the Church of Rome. Reuchlin was a prime mover in the campaign for the improvement of the political and legal status of Judaic persons. [6]

[6] On Reuchlin's philo-Judaism cf. Max Brod, *Johannes Reuchlin und sein Kampf. Eine historische Monographie* (1965).

He regarded the Scholastic/Thomistic inheritance as a "barbarous and uncultivated philosophy." In Pico's immediate wake, he further advanced the Kabbalah within the papacy and among practicing sorcerers: "Reuchlin... introduced the Kabbalah, which became very important in ceremonial magic."[7]

[7] Paola Zambelli, *White Magic, Black Magic,* op. cit., p. 15.

In 1490 Reuchlin met for a second time in Italy with Giovanni Pico della Mirandola. Pico "confirmed for him that the study of Jewish Cabbala and Christian beliefs were directly related and could be integrated to an orthodox Christian philosophy." [8]

[8] O'Callaghan, op.cit., p. 40.

Reuchlin's handlers consisted of Rabbi Joel of Rosheim, who referred to him as "one of the scholars of the nations who had helped to restore the (Oral) Torah to its proper place," and Catholic Bishop Johannes von Dalberg, who brought him rare Kabbalistic manuscripts and encouraged his Judaizing mission, in return for which, in 1494, Reuchlin dedicated his inaugural Kabbalistic book, *De verbo mirifico,* to Bishop Dalberg.

At the behest of Rabbi Rosheim, in 1492 Catholic Holy Roman Emperor Friedrich III conferred the title of "Count Palatine" on Reuchlin. In 1498 Reuchlin represented Elector Philip of Palatine before the papal court, where he successfully had a papal edict against Philip withdrawn. In a letter to Leo X in 1517, he wrote:

"I was the first to bring Greek studies back to Germany and the first to present and teach the art and study of the Hebrew language to the universal church." Wilhelm Maurer asserts that Reuchlin's sympathy for Judaism was intensified by his study of Pythagoras and Kabbalah. For Reuchlin the synthesis of Pythagoreanism, Platonism and Kabbalism reflected an integral Christian legacy.[9]

[9] Wilhelm Maurer, "Reuchlin und das Judenthum," in *Theologische Literaurzeitung,* pp. 535-544.

One of Reuchlin's well-placed protectors was the German Catholic Jacob Questenberg, who was papal secretary in 1504 and head of the Secretariat for the College of Cardinals in 1514. Emperor Friedrich meanwhile, had been guided by Rabbi Jacob ben Jehiel Loans (1440-1493), who served as Reuchlin's guide as well, in the last year of the life of the rabbi. Reuchlin addressed Rabbi Loans as "My lord, dear master Jacob... with deep longing I wish to see your blessed face to delight in the radiance of your bright countenance by hearing your most pure doctrine."

Reuchlin "believed that the evangelical purity of faith that he sought was hidden in the Scriptures and Jewish Cabalistic philosophy... He never considered his research to be a deviation from orthodox belief, but a legitimate correction... he also believed they ("Jews") possessed a secret wisdom, the esoteric philosophy of the Cabala. If they could be prevailed upon to divulge these teachings to Christians, it would benefit the initiated, and lead them to a deeper insight into the mysteries of their beliefs... He believed that by the publication of the *Augenspiegel,* he would generate sufficient support for his views among scholars and educated lay people that they would cause the (Catholic) authorities to reconsider their coercive measures. The publication... led to a moratorium on the destruction of Jewish books." [10]

[10] O'Callaghan, op.cit., pp. 2-3.

Reuchlin's *Augenspiegel* ("Eye Mirror"), submitted to the Imperial Council, consisted of four parts: two are related to preventing rabbinic books from being confiscated or destroyed. The third and fourth sections are attempts to refute Thomistic scholastics and the eminent and much-maligned (by modern "historians") Judaic convert to Catholicism, Johann Pfefferkorn (ca. 1468-1522), author of *Handt Spiegel* ("Hand Mirror"). At considerable expense, according to Reuchlin himself (in his *Defensio),* one thousand copies were published by the renowned printer Thomas Anselm of Tübingen, and "could have been sold rather than given away, had it not been for interference in Frankfurt from a common priest" *("plebius sacerdos").*

The Cryptocracy was greatly inconvenienced by the monkey wrench that Pfefferkorn had tossed into the machinery of Judaization, which Catholics like Ficino, Pico and now Reuchlin were constructing inside the Church's theological and philosophical superstructure. *Augenspiegel* was written to specifically counter Pfefferkorn. The opening paragraph reads:

"Doctor Johannes Reuchlin's *Augenspiegel.* Judge of Civil Law of the Swabian League for His Imperial Majesty, the Archduke of Austria and the Electors and Princes; his truthful apologia against and contrary to the untruthful slanderous pamphlet previously published and distributed by a baptized Jew named Pfefferkorn."

Thanks to scholarly and sincere Judaic converts like Pfefferkorn the usual dumbshow concerning the contents of the texts of the Babylonian Talmud and ancillary sacred rabbinic books could not so easily be misrepresented as benign. Consequently, in Reuchlin's defense of the religion of Judaism's holiest books, he was forced to begin by accepting the undeniable fact that they contain imprecations against, for example, Jesus and Mary. One would think that fact would be sufficient to ensure a heavy embargo on the Talmud, for example, but Reuchlin was a lawyer and court official with powerful backing from Uriel von Gemmingen, the Bishop of Mainz, and other Catholic prelates and princes, and it fell to him to undertake the absurd two-fold task of approving the *distribution* of blasphemy while disapproving of its *contents.* Reuchlin wrote:

"In this pamphlet you will find: a description of the case including an appropriate preface, declarations, and demands; advice on whether the Jewish books are to be burned; to the point brought up regarding sundry Jewish books and writings, you will find an answer to every point without exception in the counsel that follows. Throughout the counsel, at the outset, in the middle and at the end, all parts are evaluated concerning the underlying question of whether a book that intentionally sets out to mock, slander and blaspheme Our Lord Jesus, His holy mother, the saints, or our Christian doctrine, should be seized and burned, if it is willfully possessed by a Jewish individual. This is to be undertaken, however, with the understanding that if such writings are found blasphemous or heretical and are consequently forbidden to Jewish people, according to Christian doctrine, they therefore should be confiscated and burned.

"Concerning the peculiarity of the Talmud; that it is compiled from various and sundry books into one and is categorized into different sections; in which books of the Talmud, cited above, are blasphemy or heresy that are forbidden to Jews, according to Christian principles or laws, should be burned as advised hereafter... Apart from these writings, other books that are not officially condemned or forbidden by Christian doctrine, without regard to whether their contents are found useful or useless, good or bad, frivolous or foolish, should be permitted to remain and left untouched as with the other extant erroneous texts; all of their other books to be treated similarly... Lastly, a truthful repudiation of the false claims by the baptized Jew made in the pamphlet cited as follows. To all and sundry in whichever most esteemed, honorable stand or degree they may be, who are seekers of truth and enemies of lies, disseminated verbally or in writing, which ought to be despised according to God's laws, I, Johannes Reuchlin, doctor of imperial laws, beg you to give heed to the libelous act in which falsehood was poured out in secret schemes in a published, libelous and execrable pamphlet entitled *Hand Mirror,* by a baptized Jew named Pfefferkorn... and publicized by way of numerous copies at the last Frankfurt Spring Fair."

Reuchlin was outraged that a "converted Jew," someone he regarded as little better than a peasant, had dared to challenge his lofty intellectual and legal credentials as a member of the Catholic ruling class in the Holy Roman Empire. According to Reuchlin, Pfefferkorn personally paid a call on him at his home in Stuttgart in the late summer of 1509, thinking Reuchlin would aid him in his campaign and seeking to enlist him in it. Reuchlin supposedly gave Pfefferkorn a sheet of paper listing the "scholarly reasons" why he would not join with Pfefferkorn. These reasons were rejected and therein lies one root of their conflict.

Pfefferkorn and Reuchlin would also clash in April, 1511 at the imperial court of the Catholic Holy Roman Emperor Maximilian in Würtemberg. There the Emperor's Catholic "experts" criticized and attacked Pfefferkorn, not Reuchlin. This was a departure from the favor Pfefferkorn had initially received in 1509 from Maximilian, who at that time conferred upon him the right to confiscate books throughout the Holy Roman Empire that blasphemed Jesus Christ or contradicted the Law of Moses in the Torah. The latter was a particularly enlightened mandate. Pfefferkorn's license from the emperor to ensure the integrity of the Old Testament stood in contrast to the anti-Old Testament heresy of Marcion which was popular in Catholic circles in Europe in the early 16th century; even Erasmus was tainted by it. [11]

[11] "And would that the church of the Christians did not give so much preference to the Old Testament." Desiderius Erasmus in a letter to Wolfgang Koepfel, March 13, 1518.

But as we shall see, with the exception of the local Dominican Order in Germany, and some local Franciscans, the Church of Rome and Catholic rulers such as Emperor Maximilian, would toss Pfefferkorn to the wolves of Talmudic-Kabbalism.

Reuchlin is presented by Establishment historians as a fount of Renaissance humanist progressivism, yet in the pages of his *Augenspiegel,* Reuchlin's venom was unlimited: he suggested that Pfefferkorn should be executed for disclosing official secrets, and insinuates that Pfefferkorn's wife is a prostitute.[12]

[12] O'Callaghan, op.cit., p. 114, footnotes 31 (second paragraph) and 34.

Proceeding further in the introduction to his *Augenspiegel,* Reuchlin again raises the specter of executing Pfefferkorn for publishing a different pamphlet, "which calls on the subjects of the empire to create an insurrection against the authorities which is forbidden by imperial law and punished by hanging." This pamphlet was Pfefferkorn's 1509 jeremiad against usury, *In diesem buchlein vindet yr ein entlichen furtrag wie die blinden Juden yr Ostern halten.* The only "insurrection" Pfefferkorn was advocating was against Judaic bankers and shylocks, yet Reuchlin misrepresented his writing as stirring up a treasonous revolt against the Catholic kingdom itself.

After several pages of self-justification and accusations contra Pfefferkorn, Reuchlin proceeds to his lawyer's brief for the Talmud under the title, "Counsel on Whether to Confiscate Suppress and Burn All the Books of the Jews," which in itself is a con, since no one was advocating confiscating or burning the Old Testament.

He begins his argument with an unintentionally risible ecumenical statement that would not be out of place in the Catholic Church of the late 20th century: "Every person should be allowed to retain his old, inherited traditions, customs and possessions, even if he is a robber. Consequently, Jews should be permitted to retain their synagogues, called 'schools' in peace and tranquility and should not be obstructed."

The synagogue of robbers should be permitted, on the grounds that they are "old, inherited traditions"! Concerning the non-Biblical canonical rabbinic texts of Judaism, Reuchlin is equally phantasmagoric: "...only a very few (passages) will be found to contain mockery, slander or blasphemy against Our Lord God Jesus and His Venerable mother and against apostles and saints.” In indicating where these offensive statements will be found he uses a clever tactic and misdirects attention away from the Talmud by indicting the obscure *Nizzahon* and the non-rabbinic book, *The Toledet Jesu.* The latter, though among the most vicious of anti-Christian works, is not part of the rabbinic canon and therefore cannot be definitively laid at their door. What Reuchlin terms the *Nizzahon* is the *Nizzahon Vetus,* (“Old Book of Polemic”) a medieval (probably late 13th century) German-Ashkenazic repository of anti-Christian arguments for polemical purposes, which contains slurs typical of the Talmudic mentality, including the oft-stated one that the Blessed Virgin Mary was a “promiscuous woman.” However, unlike the Talmud or the *Mishneh Torah* of Maimonides, the *Nizzahon Vetus* is not a source of rabbinic *halacha* (law) and does not have canonical status in rabbinic Judaism.[13]

[13] An English translation of the text of the *Nizzahon Vetus* is included in *The Jewish-Christian Debate in the High Middle Ages* by David Berger (1996).

This datum affords Reuchlin the opportunity to discount these texts and the hatred behind them as apocryphal, and to continue with his sideshow by lending support to the comical Judaic claim that “Jews” themselves were in the habit of destroying the *Nizzahon* and *Toledet Jesu:* “I heard quite often from Jews with whom I had many discussions some time ago at the court of Frederick III... that such books were appropriated and

destroyed by the Jews themselves and it has been forbidden to write these kinds of books...”

Reuchlin proceeds to the Talmud, a very different kettle of fish in his view: “I will commence by addressing the Talmud, a compilation of all of God’s laws. It was compiled 400 years after Christ’s birth... the nobly born and most learned Count Giovanni Pico della Mirandola writes in the *Apologia* that the Talmud was compiled 150 years after Christ... Now it is likely that after the death of Our Lord Jesus the Jewish leaders saw that the Christians wanted to ‘keep a tight rein’... and in consequence these leaders came together in that time to preserve the old doctrines and confute the disputations of the heathens and converted Jews. Thus, they collected in book form the opinions and expositions of their old masters and of their most gifted, profound, and erudite scholars. And, so as to preserve these great efforts and labors, which they and their forefathers had in composing and writing them, a *work in which God Himself would take pleasure,* they have commanded their own people to hold this book in great reverence. It is reasonable and understandable, consequently, that so as to keep their writings from being treated with contempt by their descendants, they were committed to writing down all that was applicable. This was done so that they could be better at defending themselves against the Gentiles and apostate Jews."

Reuchlin gives himself away when he opines that "God himself would take pleasure" in the Talmud; this is consonant with the inordinate pride and self-praise which is common in the Babylonian Talmud, from which Reuchlin seems to have drunk deeply. We continue with his writing in the *Augenspiegel:* "I say that the Talmud must not be burned or repressed... It is common knowledge that there has to be superstition and error and that human reason cannot stop it, as St. Paul says in I Corinthians 11... And we do not term superstitious those who erroneously comment on the Sacred Scripture and maintain their view contrary to the Holy Ghost. It is said correctly that the Jews cannot be heretics since they never were believers in the Christian religion. Hence, they cannot be classified as heretics and their disagreement termed heretical. Consequently, it is valuable to us to preserve the Talmud and maintain it."

The Rabbinic Curse on Christians

In his *Augenspiegel,* "the esteemed Renaissance savant" Reuchlin lies flagrantly concerning the existence of the rabbinic curse on Christians which is contained in the *Birkat Haminim Amidah* prayer. Pfefferkorn had unmasked it in his 1509 pamphlet with the satirical title, *Ich bin ain Buchlinn, der Juden veindt is mein namen* ("I'm a little book, the Jew's enemy is my name"). Reuchlin attempts to debunk Pfefferkorn's accusation in that pompous tone of indignant sanctimony which then (and now) is employed against those who are branded "anti-Semitic." He produces this boldface lie about the *Amidah:* "...far from praying for the demise of Christianity, (rabbis) pray for its peace and harmony" (Reuchlin, *Defensio,* 1513).[14]

[14] Years before, Reuchlin had written a pamphlet, *Why the Jews Have Been in Exile So Long,* attesting to the anti-Christian content of the *Amidah* prayer. Pfefferkorn believed Reuchlin's *volte face* was due to him being on the rabbis' payroll. This would not be unusual, as we have seen concerning financial arrangements for Archbishop Uriel and Emperor Maximilian himself.

This denial is an insult to the intelligence of his readers.

We will quote Reuchlin's falsified version of the rabbinic curse. Then we will explore at length the evidence for its existence and implementation in Judaism. We ask for your forbearance as we do so. Reuchlin is so considerable an icon of Renaissance humanism, that anything less than a comprehensive marshaling of the evidence would be insufficient to document the extent to which he was an unscrupulous liar and faker. We intend to leave no stone unturned in demonstrating the willingness of unscrupulous deceivers of the prestige and caliber of Johannes Reuchlin to perpetrate a hoax for the sake of upholding the reputation of Pharisaic Judiasm.

Reuchlin writes contra Pfefferkorn: “Recently a pamphlet was published hostile to the Jews, where reference was made to a prayer said to be incorporated in their prayer books which they are supposed to repeat against Christians... As a result, grave charges have been brought against them, that they curse the Apostles, the whole Church and the Holy Roman Empire. In this way one could readily instigate so much hatred against the Jews on the part of the ignorant that they suffer the loss of life and limb. If, however, one examines it in the correct light one finds nothing against the baptized or the Apostles, Church or Empire.”

Reuchlin advances his falsification by engaging in the old rabbinic game of pretending the word *minim* in the *Birkat Haminim* is not a reference to Christians. He employs similar tactics to deny the truth that as a *part of the religion of Judaism, its adherents are obligated to ritually pray for disaster to befall the followers of Christ.*

The eminent *halachic* authority “Rambam,” (Moses Maimonides) wrote: “In the days of Rabban Gamaliel, the *minim* became numerous in Israel and they caused trouble for the Jews, seducing them to turn away from God. When they saw that this was more significant than any other human need, Rabban Gamaliel and his court acted and established an additional blessing that would include a petition before God to make the *minim* perish. He established it in the *amidah* so that it would be set in everyone’s mouths. Consequently, the number of blessings in the *amidah* is nineteen.” [15]

[15] Mishneh Torah, Hilkhot Tefillah Unesi’at Kapayyim 2:1. For an elucidation of the *amidah,* cf. footnote 272 on p. 279 of *Judaism Discovered.*

By way of excursus, we are explicating one of the so-called *Amidah* “prayers of benediction,” the *Birkat Haminim,* which contains the murderous, ritual curse on the Christians (the *“minim”),* a curse which has echoed perpetually down the corridors of time since at least the days of Rabbi Gamaliel, when it was enacted at the rabbinic academy of Yavneh (known in Greek as “Jamnia”), in the late first century A.D.[16]

[16] This is a reference to Gamaliel II who survived the destruction of the Temple in 70 A.D.

J. Louis Martyn in his essential text, *History and Theology of the Fourth Gospel,*[17]

[17] Westminster John Knox Press (2003), pp. 47-66. David Instone-Brewer extended Martyn’s thesis by tracing the *Birkat’s* origin to the time of Gamaliel I. Cf. *Journal of Theological Studies 54,* no. 1 (2003), pp. 25-44. Support for Martyn’s thesis has been

subjected to excision. *The Catholic Study Bible* (Oxford University) edited by Donald Senior, in its 1990 edition supported Martyn. The 2011 edition removed the support. Raymond E. Brown endorsed Martyn’s thesis in 1979 in *The Community of the Beloved Disciple,* but omits it in his 1997 *An Introduction to the New Testament.*

sees a reference to the *Birkat Haminim* curse in John 9:22, “His parents said these things because they feared the Jews, for the Jews had already agreed that if anyone should confess Jesus to be Christ, he was to be put out of the synagogue” (also cf. John 12:42, and in particular John 16:2, for the homicidal aspect). Justin Martyr, the second century A.D. Christian Father who was raised in Samaria, in his *Dialogue with Trypho,* repeatedly stated that Jews ceremonially curse Christians, “For in your synagogues you curse all those who through Him are called Christians.”[18]

In the Babylonian Talmud (hereafter “BT”), we read in Berakhot 28b-29a: “Rabban Gamaliel said to the sages: ‘Is there anyone who knows how to enact the *birkat haminim?* Shmuel HaQaton (Samuel the Little) stood up and enacted it.” In BT Megillah 17b it is stated: “Once judgment was passed on the wicked, the *minim* perished… and once the *minim* perished, the horns of the righteous are elevated.”

The rabbis have hotly denied that *minim* refers to Christians.[19] From the time of Reuchlin forward they deployed a massive p.r. corps and thought police to ensure that no respectable scholar ventured to state the truth that the *Birkat Haminim* is a curse on the followers of Jesus Christ, which has never been rescinded by the theological heirs of the rabbis who authored the original enabling *taqqanah* (legislation).

Birkat Haminim also serves as a litmus test for heresy. Any Judaic in the synagogue who stumbles or hesitates in pronouncing the curse is suspected of being a crypto-Christian; a determination that, if confirmed, would lead to the imposition of another curse, the *cherem* (curse of expulsion), upon any secret Judaic-Christian. BT Berakhot 29b states concerning the “blessings” that comprise the *Amidah* and of the unique nature of one of them in particular: “If one errs in (reciting) any one of the blessings we do not remove him, but in the *birkat haminim,* we do remove him.”

[18] *St. Justin Martyr, Dialogue with Trypho,* ch. 96:2. In ch. 137:2 Justin shows he is not deceived by the claim of the rabbis to being Israel: “Do not scorn the King of Israel as the chiefs of your synagogues instruct you to do after prayers.”

[19] Cf. for example, Joseph Hertz (Chief Rabbi of England), *The Authorized Daily Prayer Book,* p. 143.

Let us consider the evidence of the Geniza texts which come from the Ben Ezra Synagogue of Old Cairo, Egypt, circa 1000 to 1300 A.D. These were obtained by Solomon Schechter who began to publish them in 1898; among these was the *Birkat Haminim.* Every *Birkat Haminim prayer* in the geniza manuscripts begins, "May there be no hope for *meshummadim.*" [20]

The *meshummadim* are Jewish converts to Christianity. Among the most illustrious in the Middle Ages who assisted the Church in discovering the truth about the Talmud were Nicholas Donin, Peter Alfonsi, Peter Galatin and Paulus Cristiani. The latter debated Rabbi Nachman (Nachmanides) in Barcelona in 1263, with King James I of Aragon in attendance. [21]

During the Renaissance, the former rabbi Victor von Carben, Johannes Pfefferkorn and Anthonius Margaritha, [22] were all sincere converts to Christianity.

From Christ's earliest apostles to all Jews who would later convert to belief in Jesus as Savior, Judaism prayed that there would be no hope for the physical or spiritual salvation of these converts. *Meshummad* (also called *mumar)* signifies those who are worthy of extermination, from the Hebrew root *sh-m-d,* which connoted the Old Testament capital penalty for engaging in idolatry. [23]

The "idolatrous crime" of these converts is described by Dr. Ruth Langer of Hebrew Union College: "Throughout the High Middle Ages and beyond, apostates often do provide less than friendly information to Christian authorities about the inner workings of the Jewish community."

The legal text *Sefer Ha'Eshkol* was authored by Rabbi Abraham ben Yitzhak (1085-1158) who ruled the Judaics of the Provencal region of medieval France as *rosh yeshiva* and head of the rabbinic court. Such was his prestige that he was referred to by posterity simply as "the Rav, Av Bet Din." In the authenticated edition of his *Sefer Ha'Eshkol* published by

---

[20] Ruth Langer, *Cursing the Christians?* (Oxford University Press), p. 45.

[21] Nachmanides was treated courteously and paid for his trouble. King James observed that no one so wrong had ever argued so well.

[22] Margaritha stayed loyal to the Catholic Faith early in his career and then wandered into Neoplatonic Hermeticism later. His father was Rabbi Samuel Margoles. Anthonius's brother was Rabbi Moses Mordechai of Cracow. In his book *Der gantz Jüdisch glaub* Margaritha described how some Judaics offered a *groshen* (coin) to Christians so the Christian would become the scapegoat into which the Judaic's sins were allegedly transferred, rather than the usual *kapporoth* ("sin chicken").

[23] Brown, Driver and Briggs, A *Hebrew and English Lexicon of the Old Testament,* p. 1029.

Shalom Albeck in 1910, (pp. 26-27), he defines *minim* as "the followers of the crucified Jesus."

The rabbinic texts possessed of the force of law containing the curse on the *meshummadim* and/or *minim,* were closely guarded and retained as a secret teaching far from the prying eyes of inquisitive Christian scholars. Rabbi Jacob ben Asher (1269-1340), who was known as the "Tur" after his magnum opus legal text of the same name, referred to the *Birkat Haminim* as *qelalat haminim,* "the curse of the *minim."* To confuse Christian investigators, *qelalat haminim* was deliberately misprinted in rabbinic texts as *qelalat hamalshinim;* and the curse on the *meshummadim* was erased from printed rabbinic liturgical texts of what otherwise would have constituted a very troubling rabbinic penumbra.[24]

[24] This type of erasure, and cognate forms of concealment and misdirection, are not put into place ad hoc, but as a traditional tactic implemented as a function of the formal rabbinic principle of *Halakha Ve'Ain Morin Kain* ("It is the *Halakha* but we do not instruct it to the public," i.e. *am ha'aretz* and *goyim).* Cf. Shitah Mekubetzet and BT Menachot 36b.

Then as now, this censorship enabled Judaism's legion of liars (both Judaic and gentile) to repeatedly and brazenly deny that there was any such curse; *many continue to deny it to this day.*

Another subterfuge is to claim that the *meshummad* "deny the Torah" and deserve their punishment. Two exceedingly influential *halachic* authorities, Rabbi Jacob ben Asher (the "Tur") and his father, Rabbi Asher ben Yehiel ("the Rosh"), indict the *meshummad* for denying the "two forms of Torah," the written *and* the oral; the latter being the source of the Talmud and Kabbalah.[25]

[25] p. 64. Cf. *Teshuvot HaRosh,* 4:20. *Tur,* OH 118.

This was one of the supposedly "idolatrous" transgressions of converts to Christianity in the eyes of their persecutors. Actually, the *meshummad* uphold the written Torah and deny the ersatz oral "Torah" of rabbinic Judaism.

In the *Sefer Ha-Chinukh,* the medieval work describing and explaining the rabbis' commandments, Commandment 93 stipulates that it is a requirement to kill all Jews who participate in "idolatry," like the Christians (*minim*) do, "because they trouble Israel." Commandment 34 states that there is no restriction on killing these people because the lives of such people have no value.[26]

[26] A decoy text cited to claim that this teaching was not in force is *Hilkhot Mamrim* 3:3 from Maimonides' *Mishneh Torah:* “Do not lower the *minim* into the pit too quickly.” This is not much of a defense for Maimonides, who does not prohibit enabling the deaths of Christians, but only cautions against an impetuous “lowering.” Maimonides' more candid teaching on *minim* is found in his “Iggeret Teiman” *(Epistle to Yemen,* circa 1173). Cf. the Abraham Halkin edition, American Academy for Jewish Research, 1952.

Meshummadim are Judaic converts to Christ who Talmudic-observant Jews have an obligation to allow to “fall into a pit” (Bava Metzia 2:33; Avodah Zarah 26:B). This also applies to the *minim:*

“The Hebrew and Aramaic root of the word *‘minim’* simply means ‘kind’ or ‘type.’ ...this usage corresponds with that of the term's cognate in Christian Aramaic dialects, where it is a common translation of the Greek *ethnos,* the Septuagint's translation of the Hebrew *goyim* (other nations), and the New Testament's term for gentiles. This expansion of meaning to include gentiles creates a trajectory that enables rabbis in Christian Europe to understand the *minim* to be (or include) ‘the students of Jesus of Nazareth,’ i.e. gentile Christians... In the medieval European context, the *birkat haminim,* is fully a curse of Christians. Every single European Jewish community adopts the basic form of the *birkat haminim* found in the *Seder Rav Amram Gaon...* every single medieval community continues to introduce the prayer with a curse of *meshummadim... (and)* by curses of *minim...”* [27]

[27] Langer, op. cit., pp. 59 and 66. *“Nozerim,”* supposed to be derived from the word Nazareth, was regarded with the passage of time as synonymous with *minim.* Karaites (Jews who rejected the Talmud and adhered only to the Old Testament), were sometimes grouped by the rabbis in the *minim* category and subject to execution. Cf. Marina Rustow, *Heresy and the Politics of Community: The Jews of the Fatamid Caliphate,* pp. 350-351.

Rashi (the acronym of Rabbi Shlomo Yitzhak, 1040-1105), was a renowned exegete who glossed the Bible and the Talmud. His commentary is published with the Babylonian Talmud itself. Rashi defined *minim* as “the students of Jesus of Nazareth” or more specifically, as the *galahim* (the “tonsured ones,” i.e. Catholic priests), as did one of the top tier *Gadol ha-Dor* rabbis, the Rhinelander Rabbi Eliezer ben Yoel HaLevi

(1140-1220),[28]

[28] For Rashi cf. BT Shabat 139a, *s.v. bitulei ‘amgoshei;* BT Sanhedrin 100b *s.v. minim;* BT Avodah Zarah 26b s.v. *minim;* and Judah Rosenthal, “Anti-Christian Polemics in

the Biblical Commentaries of Rashi," in *Studies and Texts in Jewish History* (Jerusalem, 1967), pp.101-116. For Halevi cf. *Teshuvot UVi'urei Sugiyot* (no. 1051).

as well as many others (such as Rabbis Shmuel ben Meir and Yehuda ben Barzilai).

The accurate definition is also found in Judaism's bigoted, anti-Christian texts of the era, such as the *Sefer Yosef HaMeqane,* and the aforementioned *Nizzahon Vetus.* The latter argued that the New Testament was filled with absurdities and contradictions. We are aware of no establishment-approved scholar who denounces *Nizzahon Vetus* for having made that claim, [29]

[29] Actually the *Nizzahon Vetus* says far worse. It is so hateful of Jesus that it claims God created the Tree of Good and Evil in the Garden just to kill Him: mankind would know death and this would be the means by which the "wicked" Jesus could be killed and all the world would know that He was not God. Cf. David Berger's edition of the *Nizzahon Vetus,* p. 46.

though hundreds of them denounce scholars who venture to write criticisms of the Talmud. Albert Ehrman, in his 1974 New York University dissertation, styles the hate-filled *Nizzahon* text a "defense of Judaism." Any defense of Christianity that entails an attack on the Talmud is almost automatically stigmatized as "hate literature." This tactic is a recrudescence of the rabbinic practice of classifying someone as a *min* just for being, in the words of Rabbi Elazar of Worms, "irreverent about the Talmud" *(Perushei Siddur Ha Tefillah LaRoqe-ah,* p. 342).

As Christians in medieval Europe began to become aware of these curses, their hostility toward the rabbis in their midst understandably increased. In 826, Agobard (769-840), the Christ-like Archbishop of Lyon who opposed the worship of carved statues, wrote *De Insolentia Judaeorum,* an informed protest to the Carolingian monarch Louis the Pious, against rabbinic curses.

Establishment historians omit the ritual and perpetual curses and blasphemies uttered by the adherents of the rabbis, and focus exclusively on the defensive Christian reaction to the hate speech of the synagogue, and then portray the defense as irrational Christian bigotry; just as, with regard to Catholic Spain, they minimize accounts of the Judeo-Muslim murder and enslavement of Catholics, and focus instead on demonizing

the Catholic defense against the slavery and murder. When this tactic is applied to medieval Catholic Europe as a whole, Judaics are portrayed as innocent lambs victimized by monstrous Christians for no rationally valid reason. For this cartoon equation to be persuasive, the fact that the rabbis and their followers were petitioning God to destroy Christians is denied or concealed.

Documented Christian reports on the *Birkhat Haminim* curse began in earnest with the converted Judaic Nicholas Donin, around the year 1230. The heroic Donin sent to Pope Gregory IX a list of thirty-five Talmud passages that constituted hatred of God and Christians. In June, 1240 in Paris, Donin single-handedly debated four eminent rabbis. The charges against the Talmudic rabbis which Donin raised were specifically targeted against the *Birkat Haminim.*[30]

Only the most rabid partisans attempt to disparage Donin's scholarship. He had his facts in order, putting forth citations from relevant Talmudic texts, including a note that the *amidah* prayer of eighteen "benedictions" is really nineteen, referencing BT Berakhot 28b. Donin correctly tracked the origin of *Birkat Haminim* to the rabbinic academy of Yavneh and a gloss of Rashi, as well as the connection between BT Rosh Hashanah 17a and Rashi's gloss that defines *minim* as "the followers of Jesus of Nazareth." One of Donin's debating opponents, Rabbi Yehiel, lied constantly and denied almost everything, asserting that the Jesus in the Talmud was not the same as Jesus of Nazareth, and that Jews do not pray for the downfall of Christian nations.

Yehiel appears to have been as sophisticated and shrewd as any twenty-first century rabbi: denying everything and pledging allegiance to the French king and queen before whom the debate was held. He only "lost his cool" in the presence of Donin personally, against whom he spewed venom, terming him a traitor who would never be forgiven. While the French monarchs were gracious toward Yehiel, Donin's well-documented points were hugely influential and resonated among Christians for centuries, in the writings of medieval popes such as Clement IV *(Damnabili Perfidia Judaeorum,* July, 1267) and Honorius IV (letter to the Archbishop of Canterbury, November 30, 1286); in the Provencal breviary of Matfre Ermengaud (1290); in the homilies of the Dominican preacher Giordano da Rivalto (1304), in the Dominican Bernard Gui's *Practica officii inquisitionis heretice pravitatis* (1323; cf. section V:4, "About the intolerable blasphemies of the Jews against Christ, our faith and the Christian people in the *birkat haminim*"); and in the writings of the Judaic convert Abner of Burgo (a.k.a. Alfonso of Valladolid), in his *Libro de las Batallas de Dios* (1336) and *Libro de las malliciones de los Judíos.*

---

[30] "The Talmud on Trial: The Disputation at Paris in the Year 1240," in *Jewish Quarterly Review,* no. 47 [1956]; and *The Church Versus Talmudic and Midrashic Literature* [Jerusalem, 1970]. The Latin text of Donin's exposé of the *birkat haminim* may be found in *"La Controverse de 1240 sur le Talmud,"* ms. Paris Bibliotheque National Latin 16558.

On February 25, 1336 the King of Castille, Alfonso XI, decreed that the *Birkat Haminim* was forbidden throughout his kingdom. Echoing Nicholas Donin’s learned indictment, the King declared to the rabbis: “You curse Christians and converts to the Christian faith, judging them to be heretics and even mortal enemies, and you entreat God to ruin and destroy them.” In 1380 King Juan I reinstated King Alfonso’s prohibition. The Judaic convert Bishop Paul de Santa Maria of Burgos (1351-1435) wrote in his *Scrutinium scriptarum* concerning the contents of the *Birkat Haminim,* that the Jews, “not only do not pray for gentiles, but they pray for the destruction of the Church of Christ and of his disciples, as is evident of a certain prayer of theirs which is said by them in their synagogues. In this prayer, they clearly say, ‘Let all heretics perish quickly,’ which words Rabbi Solomon and Rabbi Moses explain thus, ‘These heretics are the disciples of the Nazarene.” [31]

[31] *Incipit dyalogus qui vocatur Scrutinium scripturarum* (Johann Mentelin, 1474), distinction 5, chapter 7, p. 83.

Privately, in their own clandestine writings, the rabbis acknowledged that the *Birkat Haminim* cursing of Christians was a contributing factor in their expulsion from Spain by Catholic Queen Isabella. [32]

[32] Cf. Shlomo ibn Verga, *Sefer Shevet Yehuda* (Bialik Institute reprint, Jerusalem, 1947).

In 2012, Ruth Langer of Hebrew Union College-Jewish Institute of Religion, made a monumental admission: “Most of the Christian accusations about the *birkat haminim* were not wrong.” [33]

[33] Langer, op. cit., p. 93. As the Renaissance era approached, Talmudic infiltrators were strategically placed in the hierarchy of the Church. Here we glimpse the authentic root of the Second Vatican Council, as Langer observes (p. 106): “...under the influence of Renaissance humanism... these discussions of the *birkat haminim* now find a new context... growing from a more academic interest in it and not solely from a polemic against it or a desire to convert Jews.” Cognizant of the need for a new *modus operandi,* in the Renaissance period the Cryptocracy seeded the impression that “the Talmud and the Kabbalah confirm the truth of the Christian faith when interpreted correctly.” No one in their right mind subscribes to so fanciful a hypothesis today, but even Anthonius Margaritha was seduced by it. He subsequently endorsed subverters such as Pico and Reuchlin.

Johannes Reuchlin was lying about the *Birkat Haminim* curse. He lied repeatedly and knowingly. Reuchlin’s *Augenspiegel,* for all its bluster and self-advertised remarkable scholarship is not a particularly impressive polemical work in that it is in some places preposterous[34] and in many other parts demonstrably false. Nonetheless, Reuchlin succeeded because the Hermetic-Kabbalistic Cryptocracy created on his behalf a celebrity victim image, like that of Galileo, which has proved difficult to correct factually.

Occult conspirators defended Reuchlin in their satirical book, *Epistolae obscurorum virorum*,[35] which excited intense avant-garde interest by successfully branding those who opposed Reuchlin as benighted laughing-stocks. The *Epistolae obscurorum virorum* was written from the point of view of a reactionary Jew hater and in a kind of pigdin Latin, to mock Pfefferkorn and his allies as low-bred dolts. In large part thanks to the *Epistolae obscurorum virorum,* Reuchlin emerged from the controversy as “an exemplar of Renaissance erudition and progressive, humanist ideals on the path to the advancement of humanity from darkness to light.”

Reuchlin’s *Augenspiegel* is a tissue of lies and misrepresentation, but it mattered not. The Cryptocracy saw to it that an enduring image prevailed over a fleeting reality. The “reactionary” Judaic-convert Pfefferkorn, and his allies among the Dominican theologians of Cologne, were painted in the booklet *Epistolae obscurorum virorum* as bigoted, block-headed louts. There matters have stood these past five centuries.

Some truth concerning Pfefferkorn’s authentic character is beginning to come to light. Ruth I. Cape, Pfefferkorn’s English translator, who cannot be described as his admirer, nonetheless concedes that his writing contains a “vast array of images and powerful metaphors.” These are so eloquent they “contribute to a better understanding of the Early New High German language and its use at the beginning the sixteenth century.” Cape states further that the work for which Pfefferkorn is best known, *Der Juden Spiegel* (published in

---

[34] In addition to the preceding examples, we bring to your attention this statement by Reuchlin (which could have been written by John Paul II or Benedict XVI), “Our Apostle Paul studied the complete Jewish wisdom and attended a rabbinical school. What became of him? The greatest of the Apostles!” Reuchlin omits the datum that Paul bitterly regretted his past membership in the religion of the Pharisees, grounded as it was in anti-Biblical traditions of men, which included *violence* against Christians: “You have heard of my former life in Judaism, how I persecuted the Church of God violently and tried to destroy it. And I was advancing in Judaism beyond many of my own age among my people, so extremely zealous was I for the traditions of my fathers.” (Galatians 1:13-14).

[35] *“Letters of Obscure Men,”* first published in Cologne in 1515, and reprinted with additional matter in 1517.

German and Latin in 1507 and 1508), “is a carefully structured pamphlet... a mirror of the struggle and obstacles faced by every person who tries to find a new identity, and symbolizes what a society in transition might experience. In that respect *Der Juden Spiegel* is a timeless document that speaks to readers of all centuries.” [36]

[36] Ruth I. Cape, *The Jews’ Mirror* (2011), pp. ix and xii.

In other words, it is a classic, and not as the secret society adepts portrayed it: a poorly written hack job by an ignorant scribbler. It was this jaundiced view that the occult Brotherhood hoped to paint—and succeeded in unfairly painting—Pfefferkorn with in the eyes of the intelligentsia of Europe, one of whom was Erasmus, who was infuriated that Pfefferkorn was obstructing the rehabilitation of rabbinic writings.

Pfefferkorn’s numerous *Catholic* critics dismissed him as a “half-Jew.” [37]

[37] This was untrue; he was Judaic on both his mother and father’s side.

Erasmus amended and compounded the racial insult by terming Pfefferkorn a “Jew-and-a-half.” [38]

[38] Letter to Willibald Pirckheimer, November 2, 1517.

It was perversely ironic that anti-Judaic racial prejudice was wielded

by promoters of Talmudic and Kabbalistic ideology, in order to discredit a Christian convert who obstructed their campaign to persuade Christendom of the benevolence of the rabbinic texts. False witness against Pfefferkorn on the part of “enlightened” Renaissance Catholic humanists was relentless. In 1514 malicious false witness was circulated claiming that this devoutly orthodox, converted Catholic missionary had posed as the messiah, desecrated the Communion wafer and ritually murdered a Christian infant. [39]

[39] Cf. *Die geschicht und bekantnüß des getaufften Juden genannt Johannes Pfefferkorn* (1514).

While Pfefferkorn struggled against a deluge of libel, his adversary was rising high. Reuchlin candidly averred that the popes were behind both his Talmud project and his Kabbalah promotion:

“That is enough said about the Talmud and why it should not be suppressed or burned. Now to the third section of the Jewish books concerning the divine secrets, utterances and words of God, called the Kabblaah. I could say a lot both for and against it, for our Holy Father Pope Innocent VIII had the Kabbalistic volumes carefully examined and evaluated twenty years ago by eminent bishops and doctors in the course of a case against that nobly born, erudite Count, Giovanni Pico Della Mirandola, of blessed memory. At that time, he (Pico) announced publicly that he was willing to go to Rome to dispute on themes and conclusions, among them namely the thesis: ‘There is no other science that provides us with greater certainty of Christ’s divinity than magic and the Kabbalah’. The theologians of the Holy Scriptures wrote and said many things contrary to this affirmation, in spite of the fact that they were completely ignorant as to what kind of creature the Kabbalah was. Nevertheless, the aforementioned Count refuted their assertions with conviction.

“...Following Innocent’s death, his successor, Pope Alexander VI, commissioned many learned cardinals, bishops and officials of the Holy Office of the Inquisition to thoroughly assess the merits and demerits of the books and speeches... Following these deliberations, His Holiness decided that the Count had rightly studied and written appropriately on the Kabbalah, and therefore his book entitled *Apologia,* was approved by a papal ruling in 1493. The decision was reached that Pico had studied thoroughly the books of the Kabbalah, and correctly stated that those same books of the Kabbalah, of which there must be approximately 70, demonstrate not only the spirituality of Moses, but the truth of our Christian faith as well...

“It is quite obvious from Count Mirandola’s *Apologia,* a book that has been approved by Pope Alexander, that the books of the Kabbalah are not only not malignant, but are also exceedingly helpful to our Christian faith. Pope Sixtus IV ordered them to be translated into our Latin for the use of us Christians. Hence, there is an adequate basis for me to conclude that such Kabbalistic books should not, nor can they be legally suppressed or burned.”

The papacy and the top echelon of the hierarchy of the Church of Rome supported Reuchlin’s defense of Pico and the Talmud and Kabbalah, while Pfefferkorn was forced to struggle for support. This fact of history shatters the stereotype of the Renaissance Church put forth by the Establishment. According to their fables, the papacy would destroy someone like Reuchlin, while Pfefferkorn would enjoy considerable ecclesiastic support.

Initially, Pfefferkorn had the ear of educated Catholics within and outside the Church, the Catholic aristocracy and the Dominican order in Cologne. It was not until he confronted and frustrated Reuchlin’s mission of extending the theology of Giovanni Pico della Mirandola that his troubles began in earnest. Having dared to attempt to halt the progress of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Kabbalistic conspiracy he would be falsely accused by the Church of Rome and its allies, of heresy, incompetence and fraud.

Johann Pfefferkorn converted to Catholicism together with his wife and one of his children when he was thirty-seven years of age (circa 1505). During the years 1507-1521 he had the distinction of having penned more publications on Jews and Judaism than any other Christian in the West. For one extended period during his writing career he had no other source of income than in a shelter for the poor (alms house), and as a *salzmeister* (distributor of salt).

Pfefferkorn's *Der Juden Spiegel* in particular was everything Catholic Christianity could hope for from a Judaic convert:

[Reuchlin's Revolution Page 279]

"In the first part of the book Pfefferkorn addresses himself to the Jews, asking them to leave 'the path of darkness' and to finally understand the truth of the Christian faith. He then lists and comments on ten tenets of the Jewish faith, as they had been fairly common in debates between Jews and Christians for centuries. By quoting the Pentateuch and the prophets, he tries to demonstrate to the Jews that the New Testament is foreshadowed in the Old Testament, that Jesus was indeed the Messiah and highest prophet, that Mary has a special status as virgin and mother of God, that there are proofs of the trinity, that the use of images and the adoration of the cross have a valid place in Christian religion, and that Jesus did indeed rise from the dead. Pfefferkorn adds two points of his own. He explains that some Jews would be inclined to accept the Christian faith, yet hesitate to convert when they see the bad examples some Christians set... He also deplores the unremitting reluctance of his former co-religionists to assume the Christian faith. Yet Pfefferkorn shows himself determined to think of ways that could lead these 'blind and obstinate' Jews to 'the light of eternal salvation.' The first part ends with Pfefferkorn's excitement about having found the 'true Messiah,' grace and forgiveness of his sins, and 'eternal glory and salvation.' The official first part of the pamphlet comprises one-half of the whole book. Its length is clearly an indication of the importance of this specific topic in the context of the mission to the Jews.

"In the second part, Pfefferkorn addresses himself to the secular rulers and Christians in general, and describes how they have contributed to the problems in the mission to the Jews. He accuses the Christian authorities of protecting (unconverted) Jews for their own selfish financial benefit by granting them houses and by allowing them to take usury. He criticizes them for not forcing the Jews to listen to sermons, and for not confiscating their non-biblical books (Talmud and Kabbalah) that are full of lies. Pfefferkorn appeals to the Christian authorities' sense of moral responsibility, and demands that Jews should not be permitted to practice usury and that they should work for their living. In order to learn about the word of God, they should also be forced to attend Christian sermons. Their Talmudic books should be confiscated, because he considers them not only misleading but also a major contributor to their obstinacy, and thus an

obstacle to Jewish conversion. This last demand is significant, since in the following two years, Pfefferkorn received a mandate from the Emperor Maximilian I, which enabled him personally to confiscate Jewish books throughout the empire." [40]

[40] Cape, op. cit., pp. x and xi.

This mandate would prove to be fleeting.

Pfefferkorn posed a substantial threat to the conspirators. His work had the potential to undo nearly a century of plotting to gain acceptance for the Talmudic and Kabbalistic theology within the Church. To be certain that Pfefferkorn would be obstructed, Maximilian I was offered a substantial bribe from the rabbis to rein in Pfefferkorn, which is precisely what the Emperor of the Holy Roman Empire did, once his pockets were filled:

"Following a well-established line in polemical reasoning that goes back to the thirteenth century when the anti-rabbinical charges brought forward by the (Judaic) convert Nicholas Donin had led to the burning of the Talmud in Paris in 1242, Pfefferkorn argued that the Talmud... was the main reason for the Jewish unwillingness to accept the Christian faith...

"Pfefferkorn was introduced... to Kunigunde of Bavaria, the sister of Emperor Maximilian I, who had retired after the death of her husband to a monastery in Munich. She wrote a favorable letter of introduction for Pfefferkorn, who met the emperor in Padua and received permission to examine the contents of the Talmud. The emperor issued this mandate in August 1509 and confirmed that the Jews should hand over their books to Pfefferkorn for examination when asked by him, and that Pfefferkorn was entitled to confiscate all books considered anti-Christian and contradicting the laws of Moses and the prophets.

"Returning from Italy, Pfefferkorn traveled to Frankfurt am Main, a town with a major Jewish community, and confiscated a number of books (some fifteen hundred). The Jewish community turned to the Archbishop of Mainz, Uriel von Gemmingen, who, apparently offended by what he regarded as an illegitimate intervention by the emperor, protested and

wrote to the emperor that Pfefferkorn did not have the expertise to judge Jewish books. The Jews of Frankfurt, legally subjects of the emperor, also sent him a delegation to protest this interference in their internal religious affairs.

"Maximilian I retracted, and in November 1509 issued a new mandate authorizing Uriel von Gemmingen to arrange an inquiry in which a number of experts were to be asked for their opinions. These experts included representatives of the universities of Cologne, Mainz, Erfurt, and Heidelberg; the prior of the Dominicans in Cologne and inquisitor, Dr. Jacobus Hoogstraeten; the convert and priest Victor von Carben; and the Hebraist scholar and lawyer Johannes Reuchlin. The emperor intended to judge the case according to the recommendations of these experts. This did not prevent Pfefferkorn from continuing to confiscate Jewish books in a number of communities, among them again in Frankfurt. Alarmed by this, *the Jews of Frankfurt entered into secret negotiations with the emperor and reached a financial agreement with him.* In May 1510, the emperor ordered that all confiscated books should be restored to the Jews. Pfefferkorn tried in vain to persuade the emperor to revoke this mandate and was told to wait for the final decision.

"...Johannes Reuchlin was the only one explicitly to oppose the confiscation of the Talmud, giving both legal and theological reasons. His report, *Ratschlag,* argues that Jews, as *concives* or fellow-citizens of the empire, had the same legal rights as Christians, including the right of protection against seizure of property by force or without due process of law. In Reuchlin's eyes it was illegal to confiscate and burn Jewish books since the Talmud contained proofs for the truth of Christianity." [41]

[41] Maria Diemling, "Conversion, Anti-Judaism, Controversy: The Rise and Fall of Johannes Pfefferkorn," in *The Jews' Mirror,* op. cit., pp. 23-25 (emphasis supplied).

This is further evidence of the extent and scope of the charade set in motion by the occult conspirators in the Church, fronted by Reuchlin. They alleged that the Talmud (like the Kabbalah), "contained proofs for the truth of Christianity." At this point in time, under Pope Leo X, anyone of any stature who foiled the agents behind this subversive nonsense would be rendered infamous and reduced to impotent ignominy, which was to be the the fate of Pfefferkorn. Judaic historian William Popper writes:

"Pfefferkorn began his work in Frankfort and immediately a violent protest was raised by Jews, supported by some friendly Christians... the Elector Mainz and the Archbishop Uriel of Gemmingen... On November 10, 1509, Pfefferkorn went to the Emperor at Tyrol, and secured a decree from him that confiscation should be carried out. The Archbishop Uriel of Gemmingen however, was appointed to decide the issue in regard to the

Talmud… the Jews again sent friendly Christians as delegates to the Emperor, to carry before him letters recommending leniency; among them was one from the Archbishop Uriel, who seems to have played a double role in the affair, but to have been more a friend than an enemy of the Jews.

“These delegates declared that Pfefferkorn’s charges were false, and the Emperor was persuaded to issue a new decree ordering the return to the Jews of their confiscated books. Pfefferkorn answered with a letter printed in Latin and… broadcast throughout Germany; in it he reviewed the whole case and roused the German people to agitate against the Jews…

“A long controversy between Reuchlin and Pfefferkorn followed… Reuchlin was accused of heresy and a commission, appointed to investigate, determined to give its decision not only against him, but naturally against the Talmud and the whole of Jewish literature. But there was still a spirit of justice and broad-mindedness even in parts of Germany, and while the students of Mainz objected to the proceedings as illegal, men of influence likewise interfered. Even though preparations had been made for the audo-de-fé (of the rabbinic texts) and men were ready on the appointed days to light the fires, a hasty message from Archbishop Uriel postponed the carrying out of the sentence for one month; he ordered the commission to reopen the case after one month and threatened, if it refused, to nullify all its previous work and to deprive it of all power to act in the future. The case reopened, dragged along slowly and was carried to Rome. In November, 1513, Pope Leo X, beloved of the Jews in Italy, persuaded by his Jewish physician Bonet de Lates, ordered all former verdicts to be set aside… the Bishop of Speier himself decided that Reuchlin’s writings were not heretical or false… A humanist party arose throughout Europe in support of Reuchlin…”[42]

The preceding history, while readily accessible, is largely unknown, in part, perhaps, because it constitutes one more nail in the coffin of the caricature of the early and middle-Renaissance papacy as a hammer “against the Jews.” What Pfefferkorn endured under Archbishop Uriel and Pope Leo X is not very different from what Bishop Richard Williamson endured from Cardinal Roger Mahony and Pope Benedict XVI in 2009.[43]

---

[42] William Popper, *The Censorship of Hebrew Books,* pp. 21-25.

[43] In the course of an interview with a Swedish television news crew in Germany, Bishop Williamson stated that it was his opinion that approximately 200,000 to 300,000 Judaics had died in the “holocaust” during World War II, and not six million. The child-molestation facilitator Mahony then banned him “from entering any Catholic church, school or facility of the Archdiocese of Los Angeles” until he retracted his statement (“Cardinal Mahony bans Bishop Williamson from L.A. archdiocese,” Catholic News Agency, March 5, 2009).

Throughout the campaign against Pfefferkorn, snobbery was invoked to paint him as deficient in scholarship and intellect, while his opponents, as personified by Reuchlin, were puffed as paragons of genius, learning and decency. This snob appeal was played up by the Neoplatonic-Hermetic operatives behind the writing and circulation of the *Epistolae obscurorum virorum,* which rapidly acquired a reputation as a daring and intellectually brilliant act of defiance of the established order. As Europe's intelligentsia processed further into Renaissance humanism, and scholasticism began to fall into disrepute, Pfefferkorn was successfully caricatured as an obtuse ultra-conservative who had no right to contradict the views of Christian humanists of the calibre of Reuchlin.

The merits of Pfefferkorn's expert inside knowledge of Judaism's canonical books was not directly contested in the *Epistolae obscurorum virorum.* The authors were too astute for that. We know now that one of the co-authors of this anonymous pamphlet was a Catholic-Lutheran double-agent, one "Crotus Rubeanus," who, in 1517, was a doctor of Catholic theology at the University of Bologna and a humanist; then a convert to Lutheranism and one of the first Lutheran "missionaries to Prussia." Then, in 1530 "Rubeanus" reverted to Catholicism. Another author of the *Epistolae* is said to have been Ulrich von Hutten, the man Emperor Maximilian crowned poet-laureate in 1517.

The behind-the-scenes maneuvering within the Roman Catholic Church and the Royal Court against the Judaic-Catholic convert Pfefferkorn and in favor of the rabbis and Reuchlin, is labyrinth. There is the treachery of the Prince Archbishop Uriel of Mainz (designated a prince because he was one of the seven "Electors" who chose the Emperor). As Pfefferkorn was working for the Gospel and exposing the Talmud in Frankfurt am Main, the Judaic community sent the son of Simon Weissenau, the wealthiest Judaic in Frankfurt, to "appeal" to the Prince Archbishop Uriel in Aschaffenburg. It didn't hurt the cause of the Judaics that Uriel was in debt for a substantial sum of money (fifteen hundred gulden) to Weissenau. Consequently, Uriel defended the Talmud against the confiscations by Pfefferkorn. Placing his priests under a threat of harsh punishment, the Prince Archbishop commanded all clerics under his jurisdiction to refuse to cooperate with Pfefferkorn's seizure of the Talmud.[44]

The record also shows that Emperor Maximilian, who was supposed to be an ally of Pfefferkorn in Germany (in part, so the story goes, due to appeals from Maximilian's devout Catholic sister, Kunigunde von Bayern), nonetheless employed Henricus Cornelius Agrippa, one of the leading Satanic Kabbalists

[44] In the early years Uriel had supported Pfefferkorn's confiscations of the Talmud.

inside the circles of the Church of Rome, as a spy in Spain, and later in an important military capacity. [45]

[45] Cf. Albert Rabil Jr. (ed.), *Declamation on the Nobility and Preeminence of the Female Sex* by Henricus Cornelius Agrippa, (1996) pp. 4 and 6.

Maximilian accepted bribes from Jonathan Levi Zion, one of the leaders of the Frankfurt Talmudists. [46]

[46] Erika Rummel, *The Case Against Johann Reuchlin* (2002), pp. 11-12.

Maximilian's military ally, Duke Erich of Braunschweig, was in heavy debt (fifty-four hundred gulden) to Itzing Bopfingen, a Judaic Ioanshark in Frankfurt. In return for Maximilian halting the confiscation of the Talmud, in May, 1511, Bopfingen promised to lift the interest on the duke's debt for three years.

[Reuchlin's Revolution Page 285]

Defenders of the papacy of Leo X will point out that he eventually "silenced" Reuchlin. Taken out of context it seems that this datum settles the matter. When considered as part of Leo's papacy as a whole however, one comprehends that Pope Leo had permitted Reuchlin to spread his occult virus far and wide, until the conservative counter-reaction grew so intense that Leo went *on record* "silencing" Reuchlin. This was a farce; a token gesture intended for consumption by pious believers in the integrity of the pope and his word. The fact of the matter is that Reuchlin was certainly not "silenced." In the last years of his life Reuchlin was a very vocal and high-profile professor at the Catholic University of Tübingen. More significantly, he and his occult-Catholic cabal were victorious. A "Golden Age" of Talmud publishing commenced in Catholic Europe thanks to their efforts. While the Vatican launched a draconian crackdown on Protestant books, an edition of the complete Talmud was published by the printing house of Bomberg, with *papal sanction:*

"The natural liberality of Pope Leo X and the many influences friendly to Jews that surrounded him prompted his interest in Jewish literature and not only moved him to grant permission for a Jewish press at Rome but resulted in his open advocacy of the Talmud... Toward the beginning of the sixteenth century Joseph Pfefferkorn, a Moravian Jew, finding himself in straitened circumstances... embraced Christianity and, as a violent and bloodthirsty Jew hater, seems to have flourished for many years thereafter. We are not so much concerned with his successful method of earning a living as with the fact that his attacks on the Talmud, encouraged by the Dominicans of Germany, the most illiterate and stupid of all the monastic brethren, led to the conflict between the Humanists and Obscurantists, which brought out the noble Reuchlin's temperate and well-considered defense of the Jews and their literature. The charge of heresy brought against Reuchlin by the Dominicans raised the issue of the relation of the Talmud and rabbinical writings towards Christianity. The trial of the case dragged from Mainz to Speyer, and thence to Rome, but long before the final decision was rendered, Pope Leo X gave unmistakable indication of his position in the controversy between culture and ignorance. This noble son of Lorenzo di Medici, whose plastic intellect had been moulded by the master

hand of Poliziano of Florence, who had been initiated into the mysteries of the Hebrew tongue and its literature, was deaf to the importunities of ignorant monks and overzealous apostates. To the great consternation of the faithful, he followed the suggestion of his friend, Cardinal Egidio of Viterbo, to permit the establishment of a Hebrew press at Rome and he officially endorsed Daniel Bomberg's project to print a complete edition of the Talmud... whereupon Messer Daniel, within five years, completed this magnificent work, sparing no expense... to the delight of Jews and Christian scholars and to the chagrin and despair of the pious multitude." [47]

[47] David Amram, *The Makers of Hebrew Books in Italy* (1963), pp. 160-162.

Feeling the heavy hand of papal tyrants to *"the great consternation of the faithful... and to the chagrin and despair of the pious multitude,"* is an old story in the Church of Rome. These Renaissance and post-Renaissance dictators are supposed to be Christ's shepherds, yet with impunity they suppressed the *birthright* Christ bequeathed unto His people by right of their redemption by His blood. This spectacle shows that these travesties are transpiring not in His Church but in another organization altogether, administered by Antichrist "Holinesses" and "Eminences."

"Traditional" Catholics rejoin that it is because modernist prelates are not traditional that they are tyrants. It is this fantastic Janus-mind of the "traditionalists" that consigns them to a fantasy world where they cannot be effective because they are proceeding from specious premises. One cannot get more "traditional" or more tyrannical than Pope Leo X or Archbishop Uriel of Mainz, who are role models for the Vatican modernists of the twentieth and twenty-first centuries.

The destiny of Catholic lay people, friars and parish priests, from the Renaissance to the present, is to be placed under the heel of occult tyrants in the Vatican who are grand masters of masquerade. It was said of even the leaders of the pagan Roman Republic that they fulfilled their sacred duty of protecting the commons from the aristocracy. This has too often been the reverse of the case in the Church of Rome since the Renaissance. The bishops and cardinals failed to protect the common Catholic people from the aristocracy of the popes and in most cases, colluded with them. Was this Christ's plan for the members of His Church for whom He shed His life's blood, a two-tier system in which specially privileged, costumed gangsters lord it over the Faithful?

"Daniel Bomberg established his famous printing house in Venice and even received the blessing and approval of Leo X. In subsequent years Bomberg printed two editions of the (Babylonian) Talmud (and an edition of the Palestinian Talmud), based on the explicit approval of the pope." [48]

[48] Amnon Raz-Krakotzkin, *The Censor, the Editor, and the Text: The Catholic Church and the Shaping of the Jewish Canon in the Sixteenth Century* (2007), p. 40. Pope Leo's printing permit for the House of Bomberg is cited as a precedent by Pope Clement VII, in his letter to Bomberg of July 26, 1532.

The full ramifications of what the Pope of Rome wrought when he granted permission for the publication of the "Talmud Bavli" (Babylonian Talmud) are nearly incalculable. Sincere Judaic converts such as Johann Pfefferkorn had related to the hierarchy of the Church the fact that rabbinic Judaism effectively could not exist without recourse to the Talmud of Babylon, which served to increase their "obstinancy." The Talmud was the sustenance of the religion which institutionalized not only the denial that Jesus was the Christ, but idolatry, nullification of the Word of God in the Bible,[49] and the robbery, murder and financial oppression of non-Jews. Without an authoritative printed edition of the Talmud Bavli at hand, Judaics and their rabbis were more susceptible to Catholic evangelism, and what is more, they might begin to enjoy a life free of the curse of tyrannical micromanagement of their lives by Talmudic bureaucracy and its regulatory minutiae. Before Leo X, the legacy of the faithfulness and vigilance of the popes and Councils of the Middle Ages had produced a crisis for the Talmud in Europe and Britain. By the dawn of the early Renaissance the Talmud was nearing extinction—existing mainly in fading and crumbling manuscripts of widely varying textual reliability and authority.

[49] "...in some instances violation of the law may be the only appropriate means to fulfill it, an idea expressed in Talmudic literature in the saying attributed to Reish Laqish, '*Pe'amim she-bittulah shel torah zehu yesodah:* 'There are occasions when the nullification of the Torah is its foundation." Cf. Elliot Wolfson, "Messianism in the Christian Kabbalah," in *Jewish Messianism in the Early Modem World* (2001), p. 152.

Pope Leo X rescued the Babylonian Talmud from eradication, a circumstance largely unknown, even today. The Cryptocracy has seen to it that the Church of Rome has been made notorious as a Talmud-burner, not a Talmud-preserver.

The Van Bombergens had been a wealthy Catholic merchant dynasty in Antwerp. The scion, Daniel van Bombergen (1483—ca. 1550), later known as "Daniel Bomberg," emigrated to Italy, where his master-craftsman printing facility was established with a reputation for superior quality paper and binding, and meticulous attention to detail. Bomberg partnered with the Judaic pseudo-convert to Catholicism, Felix Pratensis, an Augustinian monk known in Catholicism as Fra Felice de Prato, to found, under the initial aegis of Pope Leo X, a publishing enterprise which printed *many thousands of volumes of sacred rabbinic books* over the course of twenty-three years of operation.

The fact that Felix had been the handler of the youthful Giles of Viterbo, squares the circle of conspiracy. Bomberg was a gentile. "It was Felix who initially persuaded Bomberg to found a printing press in Venice. The first (Catholic printing) privilege was granted Bomberg in 1515. Between then and 1538 Bomberg had produced 186 Hebrew texts," including "the first complete Babylonian Talmud 1519-1523." [50]

[50] Robert J. Wilkinson, *Orientalism, Aramaic and Kabbalah in the Catholic Reformation* (2007), pp. 45-46.

In fact, the astute businessman Bomberg obtained that privilege through his partnership with Felix "Fra Felice" Pratensis, for it was Felix who had first "been granted a ten-year papal *approbatio* and a comparable *privilegio* by Pope Leo X in Rome..." [51]

[51] David Stern, *The Hebrew Book in Early Modern Italy,* Joseph R. Hacker and Adam Shear, eds., (2011) p. 79.

Bomberg petitioned for a similar privilege for his operations in Venice. Through Felix Pratensis' connection s inside the papal curia, he managed to assist his Catholic partner Bomberg in excluding all other rivals, including the Catholic Aldus Manutius, who was at the time the leading printer in Venice. "When his petition was granted, Bomberg had effectively won for himself a monopoly of all Hebrew printing in Venice... he had the support and imprimatur of Pope Leo X, who had openly vouched for the value of Hebrew works for the Christian religion... The importance of Pope Leo's approbation for the success of Bomberg and Pratensis's publishing project should not be underestimated..." [52]

[52] Ibid., pp. 79-80.

The deluge of conspiracies against the Church of Jesus Christ on the part of the Renaissance popes and their hierarchies is often of such a depth that one almost needs wings to stay above it and not drown. Bomberg obtained his printing monopoly largely due to having been selected for that bonanza by Giles of Viterbo, [53] who had been placed on his Kabbalistic path in his youth by his Judaic Augustinian-monk "tutor," Bomberg's future partner, Felix "Fra Felice Prato" Pratensis. Viterbo, who we introduced earlier, was a second generation Catholic-Kabbalist of power and influence.[54]

During the negotiations over the printing rights for the Talmud, Giles was Superior-General of the Augustinian Order. His monk, Martin Luther, reported to him in Rome in the winter of 1510-1511. Leo X made Giles a Cardinal in 1517. He was a serious contender for the papacy in the conclave that ended in the election of the Dutchman Adrian VI. His influence continued in the curia under the pontificate of Clement VII. He initiated hundreds of future leaders of the Church—Catholic scholars, prelates, monks and priests—in the Satanism of the Kabbalah. As we shall see, he was responsible for inspiring the publication after his death of an *overt* and *blatant* herald of the Kabbalistic expropriation of the Catholic Church, included as an illustration in the first-ever "Catholic" publication of the Syriac New Testament.

With Giles in Bomberg's corner, it was no wonder that the Catholic merchant from Antwerp was transformed into the Talmudic printer of the age, issuing large print runs of high quality, multi-volume folio sets. The Bomberg Talmud itself became one of the great ornaments of typographic achievement and book production of the sixteenth century. It is not an exaggeration to say that it was the finest edition of the Babylonian Talmud in western history up to the time of its publication, and it ensured the continuation and expansion of rabbinic Judaism over the next two hundred years. Through Bomberg, *the Renaissance Pope of Rome served as the father of a new birth of Talmudic Judaism.*

Bomberg's editorial staff consisted, in addition to Felix, Jacob ben Hayyim ibn Adoniyahu, a Judaic scholar who "was a full-fledged Kabbalist."[55]

---

[53] Some scholars like Robert J. Wilkinson allude to him almost solely by his patrynomic, "Egidio da Viterbo," while others, such as John W. O'Malley, use the name Giles of Viterbo.

[54] Giles of Viterbo's magnum opus was *Libellus de Litteris sanctis,* taken from the Kabbalah tractate *Sefer ha-temunah.* He was in bondage to the Kabbalistic mysticism surrounding the female and male deities, and the delusion that the letters of the ancient Hebrew and Syriac alphabet revealed supernatural secrets. (Syriac is a form of Aramaic).

[55] Stern, op. cit., p. 83.

Bomberg published Kabbalistic books, such as the *Zror ha-mor,* in addition to the Talmud. Bomberg's rabbinic texts issued under the supervision of Ibn Adoniyahu were invaluable for the success and continuation of Judaism. Writing in the nineteenth century of Ibn Adoniyahu's work for the pope's printer more than three hundred years earlier, C.D. Ginsburg stated that the Bomberg volumes overseen by Ibn Adoniyahu were so authoritative that no textual redactor of modern times should dare to deviate from them without giving a conclusive reason for doing so.

Other rabbinic and Judaic scholars on Bomberg's payroll were: the leader of the Venetian Judaics, Rabbi Hiya Meir ben David, as well as Rabbi Meir Katzenellenbogen, the chief rabbi of Padua and judge of the Judaic court of the Republic of Venice; his son, Rabbi Shmuel Katzenellenbogen, and Chaim ben R. Moshe Alton, Avraham de Balmes and David ben-Eliezer Halevi Pizzighettone.

The latter Judaic scholar (Pizzighettone) was responsible for the textual integrity of the heretofore hand-printed *Mishneh Torah,* the huge twelfth century anti-Christian polemic and legal treatise of the famous Moses Maimonides, which was published by Bomberg in 1524. Like his Talmud, the publication of Bomberg's *Mishneh Torah* with the blessing of the Church of Rome, helped to perpetuate within Judaism Maimonides' blasphemy against Christ and his appeals to violence against Christians, by institutionalizing it in the form of a printed multivolume series of high quality.[56]

[56] After Bomberg's death, Rabbi Meir Katzenellenbogen commissioned the reprinting in 1550 of Bomberg's edition of the *Mishneh Torah,* by the Venetian Catholic printer Alvise Bragadini, under a printing license granted to Bragadini at the request of Katzenellenbogen, by Katzenellenbogen's cousin, Rabbi Moses Isserles ("the Rema"), one of Ashkenazi Judaism's supreme legal authorities at the time, and the author of the authoritative body of rabbinic law, *HaMapah.* The authority of Isserles' *responsum* (rabbinic decree) extended throughout Europe, in this case from Krakow to Venice. Cf. Neil Weinstock Netanel, *From Maimonides to Microsoft: The Jewish Law of Copyright* (2016), pp. 69-106.

After Bomberg's death, more Catholic printers took his place, building on his foundational Talmud text, which remained unsurpassed and largely intact, even though subsequent editions would bear the name of the printer who undertook the work. With regard to one of Bomberg's Catholic successors, Marc Antonio Giustiniani, who published the Talmud in Venice from 1546-1551, the eminent Polish Rabbi Moses Isserles acknowledged the partnership which existed between the rabbis and Catholic printers and how it benefited Talmudic Judaism:

“Isserles well understood that, ever since Daniel Bomberg had received his monopoly... to print Hebrew books, Jews depended heavily on Venetian Christian printers for print editions of foundational rabbinic texts. Indeed, Giustiniani’s edition of the Talmud, which the Venetian patrician had begun to print, tractate by tractate in 1546, was designed to meet the needs of Polish *yeshiviot* (rabbinic schools)—and became the standard for all subsequent editions. Isserles recognizes in his ruling that one might claim that ‘these (Christian) printers have taught Torah and without them, Heaven forbid, the Torah would have already forgotten Israel, and thus it is appropriate to assist this mission so that there will be no ruin.” [57]

[57] Ibid, pp. 107-108.

From time to time Rome believed it necessary to placate outraged conservative Catholic opinion by mounting a farcical assault on the modernizing innovation of Catholic sponsorship of antichrist rabbinic books. Hence, in 1548, the Church of Rome instituted a new measure, through the Senate of Venice, forbidding Judaic persons from employment at Catholic publishing houses in any capacity, whether as printers, typesetters or editors. The next year, in 1549, legislation governing the Venetian Printer’s Guild declared that no one could work as a printer unless they were members of the Catholics-only guild. This was red meat to Conservatives, and then as now, they were gulled by what was efectively a hoax: “The prohibition against Jews working in presses... was not rigorously enforced. Witness Katzenellenbogen’s collaboration with Bragadini to print the *Mishneh Torah.* For that matter the Venetian printer’s guild was not actually established until 1567.” [58]

[58] Ibid., p. 110.

For those who can penetrate the vast apparatus of “The Inquisition”—the intellectual construct that brooks no dissent from the florid image of wretched Italian Judaics besieged by a veritable holocaust of repression and book burnings—the delight of encountering a concealed truth awaits them. The rabbis experienced a Renaissance of their own under the sixteenth century Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Kabbalistic popes of Rome. Beneath the reverberating anathemas and denunciations issued by the Counter-Reformation, it was principally the thunderbolts hurled at Protestants that were backed with consistent, violent repression across decades, unrelieved by any interregnum or respite. *Many rabbis thrived in papal Italy during the Renaissance.* Two momentous achievements by the papists: the execution of Girolamo

Savonarola toward the end of the fifteenth century, and the neutralization of the campaign of Johann Pfefferkorn early in the next one, ended, for all intents and purposes, the possibility of any grassroots holy war on the occult popes and their enormous networks of banking, nepotism and patronage.

The life of Rabbi Judah ben Joseph Moscato (ca. 1533-1590) in Catholic Italy (he was a native of Osimo in the papal states), is the epitome of this closeted reality. He was a prominent representative of what has come to be known as "the Italian-Jewish Renaissance." The Mantua-based rabbi was the author of an erudite commentary on Judah Halevy's anti-Christian polemic, *Kuzari,* which was published by the Catholic printing house of Giovanni di Gara in Venice in 1594. Moscato's scholarship reflected "deep engagement with Renaissance culture, both in its humanist and its Platonic/Hermetic manifestations... Moscato was a Jewish chauvinist, but his version of chauvinism allowed him to engage with secular culture, since he strongly believed that all that was worthwhile in secular culture ultimately derived from Jewish culture... He... cites a number of Jewish authorities on the theft of philosophy and sciences from the Jews, reaffirming a Jewish version of the *prisca sapientia."* [59]

[59] Adam Shear, "Judah Moscato's Scholarly Self Image and the Question of Jewish Humanism," in *Cultural Intermediaries: Jewish Intellectuals in Early Modern Italy* (2004) pp. 165-166.

The Renaissance popes made certain to protect their Kabbalistic allies. If Rabbi Moscato's name had been Luther or Calvin he would have been burned in short order. Instead, he flourished in the homeland of the popes. Despite the diversionary palaver about a "witch hunt against Jews" by Renaissance pontiffs, "Northern Italy was the center of Hebrew printing from the late fifteenth through the early seventeenth centuries, and by the middle of the sixteenth century, print was the preferred, indeed even assumed, medium of publication for Italian Jews, and numerous editions of medieval and classical Hebrew texts had been issued." [60]

[60] Adam Shear, "Judah Moscato's Sources and Hebrew Printing in the Sixteenth Century," in *Rabbi Judah Moscato and the Jewish Intellectual World of Mantua* (2012), p. 123.

During the Renaissance, the Church of Rome was responsible for the diffusion and popularization of the Talmud and Kabbalah throughout Europe and the Middle East: "Italy's importance was magnified by its geographic centrality in the Jewish world. The Jews of northern Italy traded with Jews throughout the early modern Jewish world, from Germany and Poland-Lithuania to the Ottoman Empire and North Africa, by way of ports in Venice and other cities and overland routes across the Alps. Books printed in Italy circulated to all these areas, and books printed in the farther reaches of Jewish settlement made their way to Italy. Moreover, northern Italy drew in Jews from a wide variety of Jewish communities—from Iberia, southern France, southern Italy, former Byzantine lands, Germany, and the Middle East—who brought with them their medieval traditions and manuscripts, leading to rich possibilities for textual production and publication. Italy continued to be an important print center into the late seventeenth and eighteenth centuries...” [61]

[61] Joseph R. Hacker and Adam Shear, *The Hebrew Book in Early Modern Italy* (2011), p. 10.

This distribution network included Britain and the Protestant nations of Europe, and having erased the network’s existence from their comical histories, Catholic apologists of the nineteenth and twentieth centuries proceeded to excoriate Protestants for “initiating the Judaizing of the West from their publishing base in Amsterdam.”

According to William Popper, rabbinic books were unmolested from the pontificate of Leo X until 1550 and the election of Pope Julius III. “...at the beginning of the pontificate of Julius III the Golden Era of Jewish literature continued as a reflection of the sunshine of papal favor... (Even) after the pope had issued a bull on April 29, 1550, repealing all previous permission which might have been given to possess or read forbidden books, as far as the Jews were concerned he still acted generously, instructing cardinals and papal delegates to respect Jewish religious observances, and not to annoy them in any way.” [62]

[62] Popper, op. cit., pp. 29-30.

Even under pressure from conservative Catholic cardinals, as late as December 5, 1553 Julius III renewed papal privileges for the rabbis of Ancona. “The Pope had shown himself especially friendly to the Jews of that city.” Carafa’s plan for a “general destruction of Hebrew works... was clearly more than the Papal court at Rome had originally planned.” [63]

[63] Ibid., pp. 36-37.

Half a rabbinic loaf being better than none, Pope Julius III conspired to preserve one part of the Talmud from interdiction: “...in the catalogue of prohibited books which the Inquisition published in Milan and Venice in this year (1554), while the ‘Talmuth’ is mentioned as one of the works forbidden to the faithful, nothing is said of other Hebrew books... Julius III issued a bull on

May 29, 1554 which cited the edict of the Inquisition directed against the '*ghemarat Talmud*' and which ordered its surrender, under penalty of death. But by emphasizing the term '*gemarah*,' (Gemara) the inference was allowed that other works, and even the *mishnayoth* (Mishnah) as such, were not subject to destruction... [64]

In other words, the first part of the Babylonian Talmud containing the Mishnah, the foundational core of the Oral Law traditions of the Pharisees contemporary with Jesus, was permitted publication even in 1554.

"But the Church burned the Talmud!" the traditionalist papists will say in defense of their idolatrous destroyers of Catholicism. Right. It was burned. But that came after Leo X, and even then, the destruction was fraught with compromise, trade-offs and skullduggery. *After* the Talmudic horse had decisively departed the Augean stables of the Vatican, *only then* was there a public show of hostility toward the Talmud. We call it a show because much, though not all, of the "destruction" was a sop to orthodox Catholics and the masses, to maintain their belief in the myth of an anti-Talmudic, anti-Kabbalistic papacy. The limited incidents of destruction, deliberately magnified by the Cryptocracy into an image seared into our minds of a vast bonfire of Judaic books over centuries, was an operation that was never intended to return the Talmud and Kabbalah to the place they had occupied in the Catholic Middle Ages, when they existed only as hard-written copies of what amounted to rabbinic hate speech, studied and analyzed by Catholic scholars for purposes of refutation and apologia.

A few examples: Pope "Saint" Pius V is an unassailable icon in the eyes of "conservative" and "traditional" Catholics, in part because he assisted in organizing and inspiring the defeat at the naval battle of Lepanto of a formidable Turkish invasion fleet. Decades before this, the Kabbalist conspirator Giles of Viterbo had opened the Fifth Lateran Council with a call for a crusade against the Muslims. These facts of themselves exonerate no one of the crime of betrayal of Jesus Christ. They act as a signature image; a general branding which is supposed to represent the sum of the churchman under study. Need we know nothing else about Giles other than the fact that he was an anti-Muslim orator? Is Lepanto the sole alpha and omega of the papacy of Pius V? The dark forces intend for us to neglect the details of the lives and acts of these churchmen based on generalized, supposedly signature events which have the effect of being investigation-stoppers. Yet if we look deeper we discover Cardinal Giles Viterbo was at the heart of the conspiracy to silence Pfefferkorn and exonerate Reuchlin, and at the center of the revolutionary papal publishing enterprise that saw the unprecedented dissemination, in handsome heirloom editions, of the Talmud and Kabbalah.

---

[64] Ibid., p. 38.

Looking deeper into the pontificate of Pius V we see him acting as the patron and protector of an important occult infiltrator, Sixtus of Siena (1520-1569), a Judaic pseudo-convert to Catholicism. Sixtus' Kabbalistic recidivism was detected by true Catholics and he was imprisoned, and then released from prison by order of Pope Pius and given safe haven within the Dominican Order, again at the request of the pope. In 1559, “the pope dispatched Sixtus to burn the Talmud in Cremona, Italy,” which he did. We could end our narrative there, as do the majority of historians, and another gem would be added to the spiritual tiara of Pius V.

The Cremona Conspiracy: The truth is very different from the appearance, however. Like many Renaissance pontiffs, Pope “Saint” Pius V seems to have been inordinately fond of the Kabbalah and the necessity of its dissemination. When he was Cardinal Michele Ghisleri, seven years before he would be elected pope, he was *sacro totius Christrianae Inquisitionis Senatui praeesset* (head of the Christian Inquisition). He learned that a treasure trove of two thousand copies of the Kabbalah were sitting in Cremona vulnerable to being burned. How might the future Pius V rescue that precious horde without causing a scan dal among Conservatives and possibly blowing the cover of the Hermetic-Kabbalistic conspiracy of the Renaissance prelates and pontiffs?

The provenance of those Kabbalistic books, specifically hundreds of copies of the *Zohar,* is itself deserving of mention. They were published in 1559 by the Catholic printer Vincenzo Conti in association with Vittorio Eliano, the grandson of Elias Levita, whose patron and protector had been Cardinal Giles of Viterbo.[65]

---

[65] “From 1515 Egidio (Giles of Viterbo) had in his household at Rome the German-born Jewish scholar and grammarian Elias (also spelled Elijah) Levita (1468-1549). Their partnership was of enormous significance...” Robert J. Wilkinson, op. cit., p. 48. “For years, Giles supported Elijah Levita... Levita and his family lived for thirteen years as devout Jews in the Roman palace of Cardinal Giles of Viterbo.” Levita's *“Sefer ha-Bahur* (1518) was not only dedicated to Giles but also printed in Rome with the official approbation of Leo X.” David H. Price, *Johannes Reuchlin* (2011), pp. 183-184.

Conti served as the publisher for the textbooks used in Rabbi Yosef Ottolenghi’s *yeshiva* (rabbinic school). Ottolenghi was also “editor in chief’ at Conti’s Catholic printing house! [66]

[66] Cf. Shlomo Simonsohn, “A Contract for Publishing Hebrew Books in Cremona,” in *Shlomo Umberto Nachon* (Shlomo Meir Institute [Jerusalem], 1978), pp. 143-150.

Catholics in Cremona campaigned against this obscenity and petitioned the Inquisition for the destruction of Conti’s entire print run of the *Zohar.* But Conti operated with the knowledge and permission of the future Pope “Saint” Pius V. A clever ruse was then devised to protect the beloved copies of Satan’s *Zohar.* Sixtus of Siena was dispatched to Cremona on a devious mission: find and burn to great fanfare any copies of the Talmud. *The official account stops there.*

Hence, the myth has it that the future pope ordered the burning of the Talmud and his sincere Judiac convert protégé faithfully performed his duty on behalf of the Inquisition. The Talmud was burned in Cremona; end of story.

Here, as Paul Harvey would say, is *the rest of the story*: the Talmud-burning was a diversion. In the midst of the spectacular bonfire, Sixtus requisitioned the two thousand copies of the *Zohar* and placed them in safety. “Sixtus came to destroy, and he did destroy, but he returned from his journey to Cremona with... the satisfaction of having saved the edition of the *Zohar* that had just been produced by Vincenzo Conti.” [67]

[67] Saverio Campanini, “The Editio Princeps of the Sefer Yesirah,” in *Rabbi Judah Moscato and the Jewish Intellectual World of Mantua* (2012), p. 254.

The Cremona Conspiracy: *Two steps forward, one step backward.*

For the Renaissance papacy and its top theologians and intellectuals—such as Francesco Giorgio, Paul Ricci, Ludovico Lazzarelli, Petrus Galatinus, Cardinal Giles of Viterbo,

Agostino Steuco, Antonius Hieronymus Lunarius de Recaneto, and Johannes Reuchlin—the Kabbalah, and in particular the Kabbalistic book of the *Zohar* and the *Sefer Yetzirah* (“Yesirah”) had canonical status. As the Counter-Reformation came into its own in the sixteenth century, and began to more vociferously and publicly lay claim to the medieval Catholic mantle of anti-Judaism, the Talmud was increasingly the subject of both real and theatrical, criticism and suppression.

According to plan, the many thousands of magnificent copies of the Talmud already published by Italian Catholic printers with the permission of popes from Leo X forward, and distributed and secreted throughout Europe by rabbis and gentiles alike for decades, made the prospect of the Talmud’s extirpation only a few decades later, during the Council of Trent, exceedingly difficult and improbable. But as theatre, and for rhetorical purposes, the declamations contra the Talmud made for an effective buttress for the propaganda that the Church of Rome was the relentless foe of the Talmud.

While punitive attention in this time period was focused on the Talmud, simultaneously in Catholic Europe: “there was an explosion of Kabbalistic publications in the years immediately following the burning of the Talmud (1553 in the papal states; 1559 in Cremona, as we have seen) ...”[68]

[68] Campanini, op. cit., p. 255.

Heinrich Graetz (1817-1891), a German-Judaic historian, believed that he detected the Hermetic-Kabbalistic hand of the papacy in this stratagem. He argued that the *Zohar* volume of the Kabbalah was: *“Schoßkind des Papstums”* (“the favorite child of the papacy”). His thesis was that the early modern popes believed, in keeping with their covert Hermetic theology, that the mysticism of the *Zohar,* and the books of the Kabbalah in general, were more compatible with the Renaissance-Catholic religion than the Talmud.[69]

[69] Heinrich Graetz, *Geschichte der Juden* (Leipzig: Oskar Leiner, 1877), p. 369.

From the mid-fifteenth century onward, Kabbalistic popes were a dime a dozen. Paul III (Alessandro Farnese, pontiff from 1534 to 1549), was the acclaimed “Counter-Reformation pope,” convener of the Council of Trent, bane of adulterous English King Henry VIII, patron of the founding of the Jesuit Order,

and of Michelangelo’s *Last Judgment* in the Sistine chapel. Paul III’s curriculum vitae is sure to warm the heart of the “traditional” and “conservative” Catholic. A closer examination of Paul’s papacy vis a vis the occult conspiracy is in order, however. Pope Paul III put the fox in charge of the hen house when, in 1538, he appointed as Director of the Vatican Library, the Neoplatonic-Hermetic Kabbalist Agostino Steuco.

“Still more favored were the Jews by Paul III. (1534-50) ...Paul permitted all the Jews who had been banished from Naples, as well as those coming from Palestine and Africa, to settle in Rome. He abolished the passion-plays in the Colosseum, at which Jews had often been murdered, and he granted permission (1545) to Antonio Bladao, Isaac ben Immanuel de Lattes, and Benjamin ben Joseph Arignano to establish a Hebrew printing-press in Rome.” [70]

[70] Joseph Jacobs and Schulim Ochser, op. cit.

Furthermore, Paul III was the patron of Michelangelo and Loyola in public, but in private he was an equally momentous patron of the Catholic-

Kabbalist who published under the unwieldy moniker, “Antonius Hieronymus Lunarius de Recaneto.”

Like Giles of Viterbo before him, Recaneto envisioned the papacy as the chosen vehicle for ushering in the Kabbalistic age. Where Cardinal Giles hallowed Leo X as the holy enabler of that magical epoch, Recaneto assigned the role to Pope Paul III and dedicated his book of Kabbalah advocacy (*Discursus de Reformatione Ecclesiae*) to the pontiff.

In neither case did either man suffer any punishment of any kind from the popes to whom they dedicated their occult blasphemies. On the contrary, Kabbalistic papalolaters like Recaneto and Giles of Viterbo were protected and elevated. Cardinal Viterbo was nearly elected pope in 1522.

As we have noted, legend has it that Leo X did get around to issuing a censure of Reuchlin in June, 1520, years after Reuchlin’s case had been made, his career and reputation secured and his book rendered a *cause célébre.*

In 1511, Reuchlin had published his *Augenspiegel* in time for the Frankfurt Autumn Fair, where it attracted attention and sympathy. Reuchlin challenged not only the ban on rabbinic literature, but Pfefferkorn’s theological patron, the highly regarded conservative Dominican theologian Fr. Jacob von Hoogstraeten (1460-1527), prior of the Dominican monastery in Cologne, who judged the *Augenspiegel* a subversive defense of the Talmud. The local Dominican Order in Cologne insisted on a trial and Reuchlin was prosecuted in a church court in 1513. Pope Leo X manipulated the outcome to obtain the exoneration of Reuchlin. Just as a guilty verdict was about to be read on October 12, the local ordinary, Uriel, the Archbishop of Mainz, ordered the court shut down, the lengthy written verdict suppressed and the four conservative theologians trying the case, dismissed.

Reuchlin’s colleague, Bishop Georg of Speyer, was appointed by the Vatican to hear Hoogstraeten’s appeal in the German church’s appellate court. Speyer, in turn stacked the kangaroo court by naming two lead justices and three co-judges. They were all humanists and opposed to Hoogstraeten. Of the five, four were personal pals of Reuchlin. The case dragged into 1514. During one hearing, Johann Pfefferkorn courageously appeared at the door of Speyer’s court and nailed an announcement declaring that the ecclesiastical court in Cologne had already condemned *Augenspiegel.*

Only an intervention from Pope Leo X could rescue Reuchlin. Leo delivered. The pontiff ruled that no other court had jurisdiction over Reuchlin and his book than Speyer’s tribunal, which had sole papal authorization. Pfefferkorn was rebuked and nearly excommunicated. The Cologne theological court's verdict was nullified and on April 24, 1514, Bishop Georg and his trial judges completely exonerated Reuchlin's writings about Jews and Judaism. The humiliated Hoogstraeten was ordered to pay all court costs, as well as damages to Reuchlin personally in the amount of 111 gulden. If Hoogstraeten failed to do so, then he who was one of the leading Catholic theologians in Germany at the time, would be excommunicated. The Catholic world was being sent a message: Johannes Reuchlin must be given a free hand with which to operate his Neoplatonic-Hermetic mission on behalf of the Talmud and Kabbalah. *Any* churchman of whatever distinction who obstructed him would be fined and degraded, or even excommunicated. Truth was no defense.

Truth may have been no defense, but Hoogstraeten and Pfefferkorn believed it would prove sufficient in the eyes of God. The Prior of the German Dominicans proceeded with another appeal and here we take note of the extensive judicial process which was in place and which represented the legacy of medieval Catholic justice, though now it was tragically sullied at the hands of a Medici pope. In the late summer of 1514, Hoogstraeten was buoyed by news of a condemnation of Reuchlin's Judaic apologia issued by the most prestigious of all theology faculties, the University of Paris. Their assessment was subsequently published as *The Acts of the Parisian Doctors Against the Augenspiegel.*

The appeal hearing in Rome in January 1515, featured two appointed judges, Domenico Grimani and Pietro Accolti, who were well-disposed toward Reuchlin. Grimani rebuked Hoogstraeten for seeking the judgment from the University of Paris theology faculty. The court's rebuke served to neutralize the Paris judgment in terms of its impact on the legal case. By the summer of 1516, Leo X's cousin, Cardinal Guilio de' Medici (the future Pope Clement VII) was added to a "commission" of assessors who would assist in hearing the appeal.

Among the judicial commission members was the Superior General of the Franciscans (Bernardo Prati), and of the Dominicans (Thomas Cajetan). Also serving on the commission was the Superior General of the Augustinians, Giles of Viterbo. The appeal was heard partly (two of four sessions) in the Sistine Chapel, where Cardinal Giles spoke on the value to Christianity of the teachings of the Talmud and Kabbalah. The final session on July 2, 1516, of what turned into yet another kangaroo legal spectacle, produced a nearly unanimous decision to sustain Bishop Speyer's exoneration of Reuchlin on all the charges brought against him by the Dominican theologian Hoogstraeten. The acquittal of the certainly guilty Reuchlin caused outrage among true Catholic theologians. A scandal simmered for years, with conservatives appealing to Leo X to reverse the rigged verdict, unaware that the pontiff to whom they were appealing was responsible for Reuchlin's exoneration. Great pressure from on high had been bought to bear on behalf of the guilty Talmudic apologist and popularizer.

So commanding was Reuchlin's influence with the pontiff, curia and among the *haute monde* of Renaissance humanists led by Erasmus, that for *three years* Pope Leo resisted all calls for a reversal of the verdict. The Dominican theologian Hoogstraeten meanwhile, was left to twist in the wind. The fledgling Protestant movement was emboldened by the sight of

the vulnerable Hoogstraeten, a leading member of the Inquisition in Germany, left hanging in an anxiety-ridden limbo. One consequence of the Renaissance papacy's Hermetic Neoplatonism was the strengthening of the Lutheran revolution, which was quick to detect a paradigm shift in the bowels of the Roman Church with regard to Reuchlin and the growing circle of Neoplatonist-Hermeticists high in the Vatican and operating under the title of "humanist." As a result, the hierarchy of the Church of Rome was giving a morale boost to the early Protestant movement. As a measure of the symbiosis at work, both among the inner circle of the Church of Rome and among Lutherans, Reuchlin was a sympathetic and favored figure.

Out of anxiety in the face of the growing Lutheran satisfaction over the Vatican's special immunities for Reuchlin, which appeared to pit a Neoplatonic humanist papacy against the Catholic Inquisition in Germany, it was impressed upon Leo X that Reuchlin could be supported and rewarded in private, but that in public, the continuing immunity for the Talmudic-Kabbalist Reuchlin would make it all too glaringly plain where the papacy's sympathies had lain; some facade of inquisitorial anti-Judaism had to be reinstated.

In the aforementioned *Epistolae obscurorum virorum* written by Reuchlin's secret allies, we find this statement: "Reuchlin hath more friends here (in Rome) than in Germany, and many more cardinals and bishops and prelates and curialists love him." In 1520 Pope Leo revoked the acquittal and condemned the *Augenspiegel.* By this Vatican stratagem, to those without knowledge of the details of the years of papal machinations and delaying tactics in favor of Reuchlin, it can be baldly stated to a clueless posterity, "The record shows Reuchlin was censured by Leo X." Yet this was effectuated long after the censure no longer substantively mattered, on the eve of the publication of the Talmud in Italy: "...the Papal decision came too late... The Reuchlin dispute, thus decided all too late by Rome, was the forerunner of a far more important contest... [71]

[71] Ludwig Pastor, *The History of the Popes from the Close of the Middle Ages: Drawn from the Secret Archives of the Vatican and Other Original Sources* (1908), vol. vii, pp. 323-324. Pastor was a Catholic and Professor of History at the Austrian University of Innsbrück.

Luther was not the only irritant. Having rejected the Vulgate, Erasmus was having success with his 1516 Greek New Testament. He was, in his private correspondence, an ally of Reuchlin—but not so private that elite opinion in parts of Europe were unaware of it. In one letter to Albrecht of Brandenburg, in October 1519, which was subsequently leaked beyond Albrecht’s immediate circle, Erasmus criticized theologians who resisted Reuchlin and the “blossoming of the humanities.” In a reference to Neoplatonism and Hermeticism, Erasmus mocked those who also resented “the revival of the authors of antiquity.”

Reuchlin had the support of the rabbinic religious network in central Europe through his ally, Rabbi Josel of Rosheim, who Selma Stern, in her eponymous book, rightly termed the “Commander of Jewry in the Holy Roman Empire.” For Rabbi Joel, Reuchlin was a hero, and his work “a miracle within a miracle.” Meanwhile, a libel apparatus was set into motion against Pfefferkorn. The leader of this organized false witness in defense of the “upright” Reuchlin, a man of “proven virtue and learning,” was Erasmus of Rotterdam who, like Renaissance popes, mounted a traditional smokescreen from time to time by offering stern words of disapprobation for the Talmud and other rabbinic texts. All the while he did the dirty work of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic conspiracy by dragging the name and reputation of the noble Judaic convert Pfefferkorn through the dirt, in a vitriolic tirade:

“Pfefferkorn’s writings, and particularly his activist campaign, attracted much attention during the ongoing Reuchlin affair, but his reputation was lastingly damaged by this event. The strong Humanist defense of Reuchlin... and the smears on his (Pfefferkorn’s) and his wife’s integrity, meant that Pfefferkorn and his writings were literally ignored by later polemicists and scholars.

“Erasmus of Rotterdam’s condemning characterization of Pfefferkorn may be representative for other voices. He stated that Pfefferkorn, that ‘half-Jew Christian by himself has done more harm to Christendom than the whole cesspool of Jewry’ and claimed, ‘that fellow chose to be baptized for no other reason than to be in a better position to destroy Christianity, and by mixing with us, infect the whole people with his Jewish poison. Now that he has put on the mask of the Christian, he truly plays the Jew. Now at last he is true to his race. They have slandered Christ, but Christ only. He raves against many upright men of proven virtue and learning. He could not have done a more welcome favor to his fellow Jews than pretending to be an apostate and betraying the Christian cause to the enemy.'

"Erasmus blamed Pfefferkorn for having destroyed the harmony of the scholarly world, and asserted, in another clear reminder of the convert's origins, that it would have been better if 'he were a Jew all over, and that his circumcision extended to his tongue and hands.'

"...Reuchlin was indeed not forgotten... Offered a chair in Greek and Hebrew at (the Catholic universities of) Ingolstadt and then Tübingen, which he held until his death in 1522, he remained highly respected... as a defender of Judaism. Pfefferkorn, however, was forgotten." [72]

[72] Diemling, op. cit, pp. 30-31.

The circumstances of Pfefferkorn's death aren't certain. He passed away in obscurity, with no known support from any quarter. Reuchlin, on the other hand, died an honored Catholic professor at prestigious German-Catholic universities. Pfefferkorn was above all the victim of a campaign of lying. The lies of Erasmus in this regard are typical of the tidal waves of libel aimed at Pfefferkorn by the now exceedingly powerful conspiracy inside the Church.

Leo X's legate, Gian Pietro Carafa, who had conferred with Erasmus in England (where Erasmus had arrived in 1511 under the sponsorship of St. John Fisher), forbade the Dominican faculty at Cologne from examining the works of Erasmus for heresy.[73]

[73] Cf. Staehelin, *Gedenkschrift,* pp. 166-169. Carafa was the future Paul IV.

Fisher himself is an intriguing study. He prized his copy of Reuchlin's *De arte cabalistica* and was highly sympathetic to Reuchlin and the Kabbalah. (Fisher's correspondence with Reuchlin is said to be "lost").

"In June 1516 Fisher praised Reuchlin to Erasmus: 'He seems to me, in comparison with everyone else whose works I have read so far, to be the best man alive today, especially in knowledge of the recondite field that lies between theology and philosophy and touches on both. In a long letter to Reuchlin of that same month Erasmus wrote in detail of Fisher's admiration for him: 'No words of mine can possibly express the enthusiasm and deep respect felt for you by the bishop of Rochester." [74]

[74] Maria Dowling, *Fisher of Men: A Life of John Fisher* (1999), p. 36. Also cf. James K. McConica, "John Fisher," in *Contemporaries of Erasmus* (1985) vol. 2, p. 37.

"It is known from other sources that Fisher read and admired Pico" (i.e. Giovanni Pico della Mirandola) ...Pico had rediscovered the cabala, the ancient Hebrew oral tradition of divine wisdom. Christian cabbalism aimed to harmonize all knowledge, and thus effect the conversion of the Jews. Fisher came to see the cabala as analogous to the apostolic tradition, those 'unwritten verities' which supplemented and explained the scriptures." [75]

[75] Dowling, ibid., pp. 35 and 121.

For years Erasmus acted as a liaison between Reuchlin and Fisher, avidly encouraging their correspondence and Fisher's enthusiasm for Reuchlin, while advising Reuchlin on how he could kindle it; then when questioned about Reuchlin by English Cardinal Thomas Wolsey, Erasmus denied it all. He told Wolsey that he and Reuchlin "were not close," and that he "derived little from the Talmud and Cabala."

The tactics of Erasmus and the authors of the *Epistolae obscurorum virorum* were predicated on suppression and censorship—the confident expectation that Pfefferkorn's pamphlets could be rendered difficult to find and, what is more, by the time the conspirators were through traducing him, that his reputation would be so trashed that few would trouble to read him even if they could obtain his publications.

There is another dimension to the anti-Pfefferkorn propaganda: the bizarre phenomenon of Jew hate employed to advance Judaism. In the third printing of *Epistolae obscurorum virorum it* was said that Pfefferkorn "still stank like any other Jew." To the charge that Reuchlin was favorable to rabbis and anti-Christian Judaics, both Reuchlin and the authors of the *Epistolae,* maintained a leitmotif of personal revulsion toward individual Judaic persons. This was a masquerade but it reveals a striking fact: the Church of Rome from the Renaissance to the late nineteenth century maintained a two-pronged strategy of ethnic snobbery and hostility toward individual "Jews" on the part of the lower orders of Catholics, while the papacy and curia were in thrall to the gnosis of Hermetic-Kabbalism and Platonism. Among parish priests and literate layman, books and pamphlets contrary to Judaic persons were allowed to circulate at the parish-level and in these same circles memories of the inquisitorial, token Talmud burnings were kindled. This was a sophisticated and successful ploy. Judging by the level of anti-Judaic suspicion and wariness among the Catholics in the pews up until the eve of Vatican Council II, a casual observer would conclude that the popes had managed to remain loyal to the Gospel after all.

Yet in fact, throughout the entire post-Renaissance era, Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Kabbalism obtained an ever-greater hegemony over the Vatican. Whenever it was a choice between a proven leader of a Catholic-populist movement seeking freedom from rabbinic control and influence, whether led by Fr. Charles Coughlin, or Pfefferkorn, or Savonarola, occult elements at the top of the Church of Rome saw to it that these servants of God were silenced and suppressed. The image, maintained by media and academia, of a relentlessly “anti-Jewish” Church of Rome existing from the Middle Ages through the pontificate of Pope Pius XII, has proved to be a remarkably successful imposture.

In addition to allowing for a measure of populist anti-Judaic action and polemic in the parishes, in elite Renaissance Catholic circles, the all-important rescue of the Talmud and Kabbalah from incineration was based partly upon a premise most of us would find laughable today: the use of the Talmud and Kabbalah as fertile textual sources “for the proselytization of the Jews.” From Giovanni Pico onward, a lie of epic proportions was sown among bishops, abbotts, cardinals and popes. It was declared with a straight face that the Kabbalah and the Talmud offered proof that Jesus was the Messiah. Therefore, it was proposed that these venerable rabbinic books should be preserved from destruction and distributed. From the hands of Pico, this outrageous falsehood was transmitted by Reuchlin to the numerous eminent churchmen increasingly tainted by the tenets of the Neoplatonists and Hermeticists. One of these was Pietro Galatino, prior of the Franciscans of Bari and Apostolic Penitentiary under Pope Leo X, in his folio-sized volume of 425 pages, *De arcanis catholicae veritatis* (“On the Hidden Catholic Truth,” 1518; reprinted in Paris in 1603).

Galatino’s work was written for Leo X and includes a servile glorification of the Medici dynasty and a defense of that imperial lawyer (“counselor”) of the Holy Roman Empire, Johannes Reuchlin. *De arcanis catholicae veritatis* was self-advertised as a debating manual for use against the “perfidious Jews” by way of quoting from the *Christ-affirming Talmud* (!). The fallacies and non-sequiturs in that premise indicate the extent to which even the educated classes of Europe and Britain largely had no working knowledge of the authentic contents of the Babylonian Talmud, and were prone to believe whatever they were told by “papal theology experts.” Sowing deliberate misdirection and misunderstanding, Galatino incorporated broad swathes of material from the massive, medieval *Pugio Fidei,* by the Dominican linguist Raymond Martin (“Raymundus Martini”), [76] regarded by most of our contemporary professorcracy as a massive refutation of the Talmud religion and its rabbis. A cursory reading will confirm that faulty impression. It is a poisoned chalice, however: in many respects a learned work containing many valid criticisms of the Talmud — and one fatal poison that corrupts the whole with deadly efficiency: Martini upholds the ludicrous proposition upon which the Neoplatonic-Heremtic-Kabbalistic conspiracy is founded, that the rabbinic Oral Law of which the Talmud is the most prominent part, "proves Christ is the Messiah." To sustain this claim Martini was impelled to state, "Yet of some such (rabbinic) traditions we can believe..." [77]

---

[76] Martin was a Spanish monk, expert in Hebrew and Aramaic (the Talmud was written mainly in Aramaic, not Hebrew). His *Pugio Fidei adversus Mauros et Judaeos* (1800 pages circulated in manuscript in 1278), is a formidable work that includes lengthy quotes from the Babylonian Talmud, the Mishhah, and famed rabbis such as Nachmanides, Abraham ibn Ezra and Maimomides.

[77] Cf. T. and J. Carreras y Artau, *Historia de la filosofía española, v.* 1 (Madrid, 1939), ch. 4.

More than two centuries later, Galatino expanded this hoax exponentially.

In addition to encomiums for Reuchlin, Galatino disparaged Johann Pfefferkorn by degrading Pfefferkorn's patron and advocate, Rev. Fr. Jacob von Hoogstraeten. What was being promoted as an age of Renaissance enlightenment was actually a new dark age of occultism where Catholic intellectuals plunged into delusion.

A Pfefferkorn Catechism

Reading the reviled Judaic convert Pfefferkorn is like reading the *Catechism of the Council of Trent.* His texts are a blessed relief from the trending occult deceptions and a model of true Catholic catechesis. Here is an extract from Pfefferkorn's *Der Juden Spiegel*:

"...there are some Jews who would agree that Christ was God and man, but by no means do they want to believe in Mary's virginity or even hear anything about it. Moreover, they assert that it is not natural to give birth to a child as a virgin. And secretly they say among themselves that Mary was outlawed. With such and other abominable words they revile the noble and blessed Mother and Queen of Heaven, Mary, from whom arises oil our blessedness. To these blind and stubborn blasphemers of Mary, I answer that I am quite disconcerted by their evil defamations, for they still agree that Christ was God. And in order that they might notice their own ignorance all the better, I want to demonstrate more clearly to them how Adam and Eve were created by God pure and free of any sins. Since God Almighty brought Adam and Eve into this world free of the devil and of any sin, it also suited Him to free Himself and be granted pure birth. For Mary conceived Jesus supernaturally by divine providence without losing her virginity and without having been impregnated. In such a supernatural way and by divine providence, she gave birth, for God has power over all things. And if the Jews came to think about it honestly, they could derive from my words the virginity and purity of noble Mary. In better witness, however, I will put before them and before all of you Jews, your Scripture and ask you to read what is written in the third chapter of Genesis (3:15): "A woman will strike at the serpent's head.” Oh, blessed Mary has struck the serpent’s head, i.e. his power, and has crushed it completely by her pure, virgin birth, Mother Mary who deserves to be honored.

“...Likewise, the Jews who have been led by the false Talmud to a wrong path, continue to walk on it in good spirits. If, however, learned people were to come to them to make them knowledgeable about the Holy Scripture and were to take the false Talmud away from them, they would learn of the right way and would indeed have to follow it. Therefore, confiscate their books and burn them. Then you will steer them onto the path of truth all the easier.

“One could object to my arguments by saying that it is not right to deprive someone of his possessions by force. Answer: Where you do not do it they will be wronged and oppressed much worse by taxes, customs’ fees, interest, and fees for protection, than if one seizes their books. Their salvation must be sought more by this than by money. Moreover, I believe that God, Mary, and the whole heavenly host would be greatly displeased by the books; and because one tolerates such bad books and all kinds of blasphemies in Christianity, although one could get rid of them, I am surprised that God has not punished us yet as he punished Sodom and Gomorrah, etc. So, you rulers, who hold power over people, have heard the... reasons why the Jews remain so obstinate. You could indeed confront them and help them find the way to eternal salvation...” [78]

[78] Cape (translator), *The Jews’ Mirror,* op.cit., pp. 49-51; 91.

In concluding his section on Judaism, Pfefferkorn solicits the ruling powers of Christendom to receive Judaic converts to Catholicism with kindness:

“Therefore, you are invited and asked to welcome the Jews kindly and to instruct them graciously when they come to you and want to convert to Christianity. Look with mercy upon these people of God who have miserably left everything they possessed in this world and put all their trust in you and have no other comfort than the pious Christians. Support them, so you will build the path Christ has taught. That way a flock of sheep can develop (cf. John 10:16), and this will undoubtedly happen.” [79]

[79] Ibid., p. 97.

Reuchlin was called upon by civil and church authorities to give testimony on the subject of the confiscation of non-Biblical rabbinic books. In his published *Recommendation* against confiscation, he stated that the Talmud was free of all blasphemy and that the statement by Jesus in John 5:39, “Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me," was a reference to the Talmud. He plied Giovanni Pico's line that the Talmud and Kabbalah buttressed Christian truth. He denigrated the Good Friday liturgy which had the temerity to castigate "perfidious Jews."

When it was published there was a great deal of "noise" inside the Church raised against Reuchlin's *Recommendation,* some of it sincere and some of it doubletalk employed to prop up a facade of orthodoxy among the hierarchy who were conspiring with Reuchlin.

Sincerity poured forth from the theology faculty at the University of Cologne. They issued a thorough examination of Reuchlin's texts in favor of Judaism and called on him to recant his heresy. One can obtain a sense of how well-protected Reuchlin was by higher powers inside the Church from the content and tenor of his rejoinder to Cologne's Catholic theologians, among them the esteemed Arnold van Tongern. With no fear of reprisal, Reuchlin termed them "vile scoundrels, lowlife slanderers" and "wicked dabblers."

"Giorgio Benigno Salviati, titular archbishop of Nazareth at Rome ('*Romae iepiscopus Nazarenus*') and formerly a well-respected humanist professor and a protege of both the Medicis and Cardinal Carvajal, composed *Whether Jewish Books, Which They Call the Talmud, Should be Suppressed or Kept and Preserved,* which Neuenahr published in Cologne in 1517 as the centerpiece of a pamphlet titled the *Defense of the Most Distinguished Man Johannes Reuchlin.* The very title page of this work proclaims that Benigno had been the first member of the Roman commission to cast his vote in favor of Reuchlin. Benigno paints Reuchlin, from Rome's perspective, as the premier humanist of the north...

"In 1519, Reuchlin published a new collection of letters: the *Letters of Illustrious Men.* An important feature of this book is the goal of projecting an image of unity between Reuchlin and the Roman curia. The second volume of this book (the first volume is a reprint of the letters Reuchlin published in 1514), begins with a reprint of Reuchlin's 1498 speech in the Sistine Chapel before Alexander VI and, otherwise includes many letters to and from the most distinguished churchmen of Rome. For example, one 1517 letter from Rome recounts a conversation between Francesco Poggio and Leo X: 'Francesco Poggio of Florence recently beseeched the pope: 'Holy Father, I will take the side of Reuchlin, and I wish to stand in his place. I read all of his research, all that I was able to get. An injustice is happening to that man.’ After a while, the pope responded to him: ‘Poggio, don’t worry. I will not allow that man to suffer any harm.” [80]

[80] Price, op. cit., pp. 181 and 183.

In 1519 Reuchlin’s *Illustrium virorum epistolae* (“Letters of Illustrious Men”), a summation of support for him from members of the Church hierarchy, was published by Thomas Anshelm and circulated throughout Italy, much of the rest of Europe and Britain. The authenticity of these letters was not challenged. They were documentary evidence of the support for Reuchlin at the highest levels of the Church. They were his allies in spreading the Talmud and Kabbalah. The Kabbalist Cardinal Giles of Viterbo had four of his letters published in *Illustrium virorum epistolae.* In one of those letters Giles wrote to thank Reuchlin for having “saved the Talmud from the fires.” With regard to Reuchlin’s trial, in which members of the hierarchy rescued Reuchlin from a guilty verdict, Giles wrote on October 25, 1516, “...in your trial... we understand that we have defended and preserved not you but the law, and not the Talmud, but the Church. It is not that Reuchlin has been saved by us but that we have been saved by Reuchlin.” [81]

[81] *“Denique in hoc iudicio tuo, ubi hac aestate pericoloso aestu laboravimus, non te, sed legem, non Thalmud, sed ecclesiam, non Reuchlin per nos, sed nos Reuchlin servatos et defensos intelligimus.”*

These words by the Superior General of Luther’s own Augustinian order were not by accident. A heresy conviction for Reuchlin due to the efforts of Hoogstraeten and Pfefferkorn would have led to a larger investigation of members of the hierarchy of the Church of Rome and exposed the extent to which the Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Kabbalistic theology had infected the Pope, the Curia and the hierarchy. By saving their co-conspirator Reuchlin, the conspirators were themselves saved from being swept out of the Church with an iron broom. The trial of Reuchlin would be the last time a direct frontal assault was launched on the occult infiltration of Rome. Henceforth, minor occult adepts, scapegoats, rivals and challengers to papal authority would be executed or imprisoned, but never a *deep cover* member of the conspiracy (Giordano Bruno was not deep cover).

[Page 312 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

Many other members of the hierarchy were on board with Reuchlin, from Jacob Questenberg, the papal proto-notary, to Cardinal Adriano Castellesi, a member of the papal commission that had vindicated Reuchlin. The highest member of the hierarchy to conspire on behalf of the occult conspiracy was Pope Leo X. It was the revolutionary Leo who, in 1520, took the shattering and unprecedented step of explicitly licensing Daniel Bomberg to publish the Babylonian Talmud with overt papal permission.

It was Leo who, in 1517, privately paid homage to the publication of Reuchlin's book of black magic, *De arte cabalistica,* which had been dedicated to him. But so bold was this pope in his diabolism that he permitted a public witness to his prívate endorsement. On May 25, 1517, he authorized the head of the Vatican library, Philipp Beroaldus the Younger, to write to Reuchlin as follows: "The pope read your book on the cabala avidly, as is his wont when reading good things." These words were published in 1519 in *Illustrium virorum epistolae* without papal objection.

We scratch our heads today in wonder at how the Pope and his hierarchy could get away with supporting the Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Kabbalistic conspiracy with such brazen *chutzpah.* The impunity was achieved in part by depicting the advancement of the Talmud and Kabbalah in terms of the humanist advancement of knowledge in the field of the language arts, and specifically Hebrew philology. All who obstructed this glorious learning were repellant ignoramuses, as Erasmus stated in a letter to Hoogstraeten on August 1, 1519:

"You will find you have done much, not only for the Dominican Order but also for the whole order of theologians, if you use your authority to suppress the brainless calumnies of some people who pour out their poisonous attacks on knowledge of the ancient languages and humanities, the fair name of which they blacken by prating of Antichrist and heresy and other histrionic stuff..."

Several weeks later, in an October 19 letter to Albrecht of Brandenburg, Erasmus would deny any sympathy for Reuchlin, "For what do I have in common with Reuchlin or Luther?" A little more than a year later, on November 8, 1520, the chameleon Erasmus wrote to Reuchlin, "It has always been my aim to separate your cause from the issue of Luther..."

[Reuchlin's Revolution Page 313]

When papalolaters have endeavored to explain away Reuchlin's diabolism they have stooped to paint him in Lutheran hues, as a crypto-Protestant, when in truth *Reuchlin was an always-faithful papist.* It was popery above almost all other objections, which the Protestant movement protested. Hence, on that single point alone the Reuchlin-was-a-Protestant-sympathizer canard is demolished. *The absolute authority of the papacy was absolutely required for the forward movement of the conspiracy,* from Ficino and Giovanni Pico through Reuchlin and onward. The progression was seamless. That the occult Catholic conspiracy would eventually contaminate certain leaders and movements within Protestantism cannot be gainsaid. To claim that it was Protestants who originated the occult infiltration of Christendom when it was the Church of Rome which had pioneered it, is a shameless act of misdirection and scapegoating that compounds the trail of deceit.

The Fifth Lateran Council's final session (March, 1517) took place during the Reuchlin controversy. The supposed assassination attempt on Leo X in April of that year, was alleged to be a poisoning plot supposedly hatched by the young Cardinal Alfonso Petrucci. The pope ordered the torture of Petrucci's *consigliere,* Marcantonio Nini, who is reputed to have implicated Cardinals Adriano Castellesi, Francesco Soderini, Bandinello Sauli as well as the pope's chamberlain, Cardinal Raffaele Riario. Petrucci was likely guilty of a plot, and he was executed. Riario, a power-broker in the Roman curia was ruined by a huge fine of 150,000 ducats. He died four years later, a broken man.

"G.B. Picotti [82]

[82] Picotti, "La Congiura dei cardinali," in *Rivista storica italiana,* I (1923), pp. 249-267.

has reviewed the known facts and documents and... believes that Leo X seized upon Petrucci's indiscretions and intrigues to create a 'plot' against his own life as a means of destroying his opponents, extorting huge sums of money from them (especially from Riario), and preparing the way for the drastic enlargement of the Sacred College (of cardinals) by the appointment of neutral and pro-Mediciean cardinals... Almost as remarkable as the supposed conspiracy by five cardinals to kill the pope was the astonishing

nomination of thirty-one cardinals in the great creation of 1 July 1517, after which Leo had a firm hold on the College and the Curia." [83]

[83] Kenneth M. Setton, *The Papacy and the Levant* (1204-1571), vol. 3, pp. 168-169.

The main records of the trial of the putative conspirators is missing. It appears that Leo's friend and ally, Cardinal Pucci of Florence, was the presiding judge. The accused cardinals (other than Petrucci) escaped execution only by confessing guilt and agreeing not to question or appeal the outcome of the "trial."

The thirty-one new cardinals created by Pope Leo on July 1 paid him for the privilege of their office. This simoniacal money-glutton also profited handsomely from the immense fines he exacted from the "guilty cardinals." [84]

[84] The best investigation extant of this fake conspiracy is found in chapter five ("The 'Conspiracy of 1517") of Kate Lowe's *Church and Politics in Renaissance Italy* (Cambridge University, 2002), pp. 104-113).

Nothing is static in history or inside the Vatican and the endless wheeling and dealing in Rome regularly caused alliances to shift. One of the thirty-one cardinals newly named was Tomasso de Vio ("Cajetan"), a formidable theologian and Superior General of the Dominican Order. He and Erasmus had been bitter rivals since the early sessions of the Fifth Lateran

Council when Erasmus attacked Cajetan for writing in favor of the acts of Pope Julius II, who Erasmus vilified in his *Dialogus Julius Exclusus e coelis* (1513), which he published anonymously (his authorship has since been established). In *Julius Exclusus,* Erasmus verbally pummeled Pope Julius for disparaging the French King Louis XII's Council of Pisa. Certain that his cloak of anonymity in *Julius Exclusus* was secure, in correspondence with Leo X and also with Cardinal Campeggio, Erasmus felt confident to denounce the French monarch's 1511 Council of Pisa as "schismatic." To say that Erasmus was two-faced is an error in arithmetic by a factor of five.

While Rome was firmly in the camp of the conspiracy there were two opinions about how the occult should advance inside the Church — slowly and quietly, or rapidly and publicly. Leo X had favored the latter policy, which appeared to be a judicious exploitation of the Renaissance *zeitgeist.* It had infuriated conservatives like Hoogstraeten and the test for the psychological warriors in the hierarchy was: how much change can the conservatives bear before they reach the breaking point and revolt, thereby threatening all of the progress made for the past seventy-five years? Reuchlin and his "Cabala" had nearly been canonized. Pfefferkorn's campaign against the Talmud of Babylon had been obliterated when Leo X granted Bomberg permission to print and distribute it.

For the time being fortune favored the bold: in 1519, Reuchlin's second edition of his *Letters of Illustrious Men* ("*Illustrium virorum epistolae*") [85] boasted of the support he had received from across the spectrum, from humanist to Lutheran to papal, in the form of endorsements from Erasmus, Martin Luther *and* Pope Leo X!

Furthermore, Count Hermann von Neuenahr published, under the nose of the Dominicans in Cologne, Bishop Giorgio Benigno's *Defense of Reuchlin.* Benigno was Bishop of Cagli in Umbria and a member of the Medici inner circle, from the time of Lorenzo onward. With the fall of the Medici in Florence and the rise of Savonarola, Benigno had been charged with infiltrating Savonarola's followers.

Neuenahr launched an assault on Pfefferkorn's principal ally inside the Church, Jacob Hoogstraeten, the theology professor and Dominican priest who was Inquisitor of the German archdioceses of Trier, Mainz and Cologne. The German people in those archdioceses watched as Hoogstraeten was dragged through the mud in print, along with his Dominican Order in Germany. This was perpetrated by the papal agents Neuenahr and Benigno.

---

[85] Not to be confused with the *Letters of Obscure Men* ("*Epistolae obscurorum virorum*").

In 1519 the German Catholic warlord Franz von Sickingen was recruited by allies of Reuchlin inside the Church, to harass the German Dominicans in general and Hoogstraeten in particular. Sickingen was the author of a pamphlet, *Demand and Announcement to and against the Provincials, Priors and Convents of the Order of Preachers (Dominicans) in Germany, and Especially Friar Jacob von Hoogstraeten on Account of and in the Name of the Highly Learned and Famous Johannes Reuchlin.* Sickingen ordered the Dominicans to halt the publication of any books harmful to Reuchlin and pay monetary compensation to him.

Sickingen was a war criminal. This butcher had been turned on the German Dominicans by elements within the Church of Rome. As a result, the German-Dominican Prior General, Eberhard of Cleves, arranged a deal with Sickingen wherein Hoogstraeten would be silenced and further negotiations with Sickingen to arrange for Reuchlin to receive compensation, would be opened. This took place in Frankfurt in May, 1520, before a commission of Catholic judges well-disposed toward Reuchlin. Among the judges were Sickingen's brother-in-law, Philipp von Flersheim, Joanes Vigilius and Simon Ribysen, personal friends of Reuchlin. They stripped Hoogstraeten of all of his offices and forbade him to write against Reuchlin. The Dominican Order in Germany, under duress, had abjectly surrendered to the Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Kabbalistic conspiracy.

Observing this tawdry spectacle of dishonor and disgrace were the German people. They reasoned that if a commission of the Catholic Church in Germany had ruled that the Dominicans were men of low character and deficient in morals and that their leader, Rev. Dr. Hoogstraeten, was a wicked and foul cleric, then it must be true, and Martin Luther had been correct all along. The shabby treatment of Hoogstraeten and the German Dominicans contributed to the growth of the Lutheran movement. Here is an enigma: can it truly be said that this was not foreseen by Rome?

Here is another: with one hand Pope Leo had permitted the situation in Germany and the degradation of the Dominicans and Hoogstraeten. With the other he allegedly acted against Reuchlin, in 1520. But if that is the case, how is it that *no record exists of any direct papal order contra Reuchlin? The existence of the order has the status of hearsay.* The Dominican faculty in Cologne claimed to have seen a copy of the papal order and they claimed that the Pope's order permanently silenced Reuchlin. This we know to be a falsehood. Reuchlin remained a full professor in good standing at a Catholic university. Moreover, even though the rumored papal judgment against Reuchlin was supposed to contain a lifting of the ban on Hoogstraeten and his complete freedom, the record shows that from 1521 onward to the day he died, Hoogstraeten never again spoke against Reuchlin or the Talmud and Kabbalah.

Ingolstadt University Prof. Johannes Eck, Luther's nemesis and the Fugger banking dynasty's Catholic usury advocate,

played a cruel game with Hoogstraten, feigning friendship toward the Dominican theologian and enmity for Reuchlin. In a letter to Hoogstraeten of July 24, 1519, Eck sought "to encourage Hochstraten (Hoogstraeten) to use his influence to expedite a decision" by the theology faculty of the University of the Sorbonne in favor of Eck. To gain Hoogstraeten's friendship, Eck posed as Reuchlin's enemy, telling him that Reuchlin and Luther were two *grammatici* (grammarians) from the same noxious root. [86]

[86] Much of the agitation in favor of the Kabbalah and Talmud was put forth predicated on new textual discoveries reputedly made by humanists fluent in ancient Hebrew, Greek and Aramaic. Consequently, according to this scam, to oppose the mass publication of the Kabbalah and Talmud was to be an "obscurantist," mindlessly impeding advances in philology and linguistics.

In the same year that he was peddling this malarkey to Hoogstraeten, Eck was entertaining "Johannes Reuchlin as an honored guest in Ingolstadt." [87]

[87] David V.N. Bagchi, *Luther's Earliest Opponents* (1991), pp. 75 and 77. Also cf. Erwin Iserloh, *Die Eucharistie in der Darstellung des Johannes Eck* (1950), p. 19.

Hoogstraeten, the loyal papist and author of *Destructio cabale seu cabalisticae perdiae,* was surrounded by treachery, most of it emanating from his fellow papists.

When he died on June 30, 1522, in Stuttgart, Reuchlin was a member of the faculty of the Catholic University of Tübingen where he was a professor teaching classes until he became too ill to do so. Daniel Bomberg continued to dedicate books to him. Bomberg reminded the world that Pope Leo X had commissioned the printing of the Talmud, "a work of great labor and expense that the Supreme Pontiff entrusted to me," Bomberg wrote.

The misinformed among Catholics and Protestants imagine that Reuchlin became a Protestant with the rise of Luther. The Luther Monument in Worms, Germany, erected in 1868, perpetuates this hoax. It features life-size sculptures of the "Four Patrons of the Reformation"— Philipp Melanchthon, Philipp of Hesse, Friedrich of Saxony and Johannes Reuchlin. This myth helps assuage illusions on both sides. In truth, Reuchlin was always faithful to the papacy and the Renaissance Church of Rome. The public spectacle of the degradation inflicted on Reuchlin's enemies by papal agents, certainly did give impetus to the Lutheran movement.

In sum, "As he achieved the ability to form independent judgments on Jewish writings, Reuchlin began to question the substance of anti-Jewish innuendos and, through his readings, ultimately came to the conclusion that specific Christian allegations of blasphemy and heresy within the Jewish tradition were either baseless or trivial. He also took the further important step of repudiating the portrayal of post-biblical Judaism as the enemy of Christianity. That Jews and Judaism were not anti-Christian (and not antagonistic forces in a Christian society) was a foundational principle of his *Recommendation*... His historical interest in ancient religions and philosophies and his assumption that elements of an original, true theology (*prisca theologia*) could be discovered in ancient, especially Jewish, texts predisposed him to a favorable reception of historical Judaism..." [88]

[88] Price, op. cit., pp. 226-227.

Reuchlin faithfully transmitted from Giovanni Pico della Mirandola that which he had received, the "*true theology,*" and then extended it in his 1517 book, *De arte cabalistica.* [89]

[89] Johannes Reuchlin, *On the Art of the Kabbalah,* transl. Martin and Sarah Goodman (1983).

He pimped for the Babylonian Talmud, Judaism's book of hatred, sexual perversion, and bureaucratic micromanagement of Judaic lives, as well as the Kabbalah, Judaism's book of black magic. His prestige was such that those two tomes would serve as the clandestine guiding light of the papacy until emerging in public in the twentieth century through Henri de Lubac, the *eminence grisé* of the Second Vatican Council, and in the post-conciliar pontificate of John Paul II and his successors, Benedict and Francis.

Reuchlin reached the height of his influence under Pope Leo X, who licensed the publication of the Talmud and endorsed Reuchlin's *Art of the Kabbalah.* These facts represent foundational mandates for the development of a secret society inside the Vatican which has never been eradicated.

To what art was Reuchlin referring when he wrote *The Art of the Kabbalah*? It is the "art" of falsifying the Word of God with *gematria* and *temurah*, rabbinic exegetical glosses on Scripture as developed in Kabbalistic works like the *Zohar.*

In *gematria* the "mystical secrets" are revealed through the numerology assigned to Hebrew letters in the belief that every Hebrew letter has a numerical equivalent. For example, it is said that 231 is the number of all the possible pairs of letters in the 22-letter Hebrew Alef-Beth ("alphabet"). Hence, number 231 is believed by the Judaic Kabbalists to contain the "mystery of creation," and it is through these letter combinations that Kabbalistic tradition holds that in Prague in the sixteenth century the god-like Rabbi Judah Loew brought a Golem (artificial man) to life. This is of Christ?

The word for an evil individual in Hebrew is *Rasha.* The word for a holy individual is *Tzaddik.* According to Kabbalistic *gematria,* the numerical value of *Rasha* is 570 and the numerical value of *Tzaddik* is 204. The difference between them is 366. The Kabbalist searches for words in Scripture that taken together add up to the number 366. This is supposed to reveal something. What it reveals is that the Kabbalistic soothsayer can manipulate the meaning of the Word of God by choosing whatever letters supposedly are derived from words which, when added together, equal 366. He can then declare that he has solved the "mystery of the creative fire that unites the polarities."

This is the occult "art" derived from Pharaonic Egypt and pagan Babylon. It has no connection to the God of Israel or His Word. A spurious "connection" was forged by deceivers whose spiritual patrimony is the Father of Lies. The *gematria* of which Reuchlin was so inordinately besotted and which infatuated Catholics from St. John Fisher to Pope Leo X, and which only "reactionary-inquisitors" and "Jew-hating calumniators" would oppose, represents an ominous counterfeiting of God's Word. Because it has an avant-garde intellectual patina and is described as "sacred mystical Jewish insight" into the Scriptures such as only God's People could discover, it becomes a matter of "anti-semitism" to declare it for what it really is.

Temurah is a configuration method of magical exegesis that entails replacing letters in Old Testament words by the letter that either precedes or follows it. The absurdly subjective and contrived nature of this substitution is obvious to any reasonably literate person not ensnared in Kabbalistic delusion. It was by means of *Temurah* that Reuchlin "confirmed" Giovanni Pico's declaration that the Kabbalah

testifies to the truth of the Holy Catholic Trinity, and serves to prove the identity of Jesus as the Messiah of Israel.

It is painfully obvious that the Talmud and Kabbalah needed good p.r. in the overwhelmingly Christian fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, in order to authenticate the validity of the religion of rabbinic Judaism as the planet's foremost repository of primordial truth, wisdom, kindness and benevolence toward all. The lie required to achieve that objective, that "the Kabbalah confirms the truth of Christianity," is no longer needed in our time, when the Kabbalah's prestige is not dependent on confirming the Catholic dogma of the Trinity, or the messianic identity of Jesus. In the post-modernist era, very few, if any, Judaizing Catholic or Protestant theologians employ this lie which was crucial in ensuring the success of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic conspirators in bringing the Trojan Horse of Talmudic and Kabbalistic Judaism into Catholicism, and later, into *some* centers of Protestantism. [90]

[90] We specify only "some" centers because, not being subject to a sovereign occult pontiff, early Protestants could not be so throughly infected by the occult. In certain churches and time periods they had the freedom to defy their religious authorities.

Above all, Johannes Reuchlin was a loyal agent of religious syncretism—the synthesis of Catholicism, Neoplatonic-Hermetic paganism and Judaism into a universal, one world Faith, representative of the "Perennial Tradition," which Plethon, Ficino, Giovanni Pico and their followers believed had always existed on earth. This hybrid Church is an assimilative weapon which has marched relentlessly forward through Catholicism, though on occasion, so as to mislead and placate conservatives and camouflage its true nature, popery has, when necessary, taken one conservative step backward, after having proceeded two or more revolutionary steps forward, in what history teaches has been a remarkably successful and seemingly almost invincible alchemical progression.

We qualify this as "almost" because God is in charge and woe to those who have deceived the world. They shall reap what they have sown.

Jesus Christ promised He would never abandon us, and hell would not prevail against His Church; that His Church exists on earth we do not doubt.

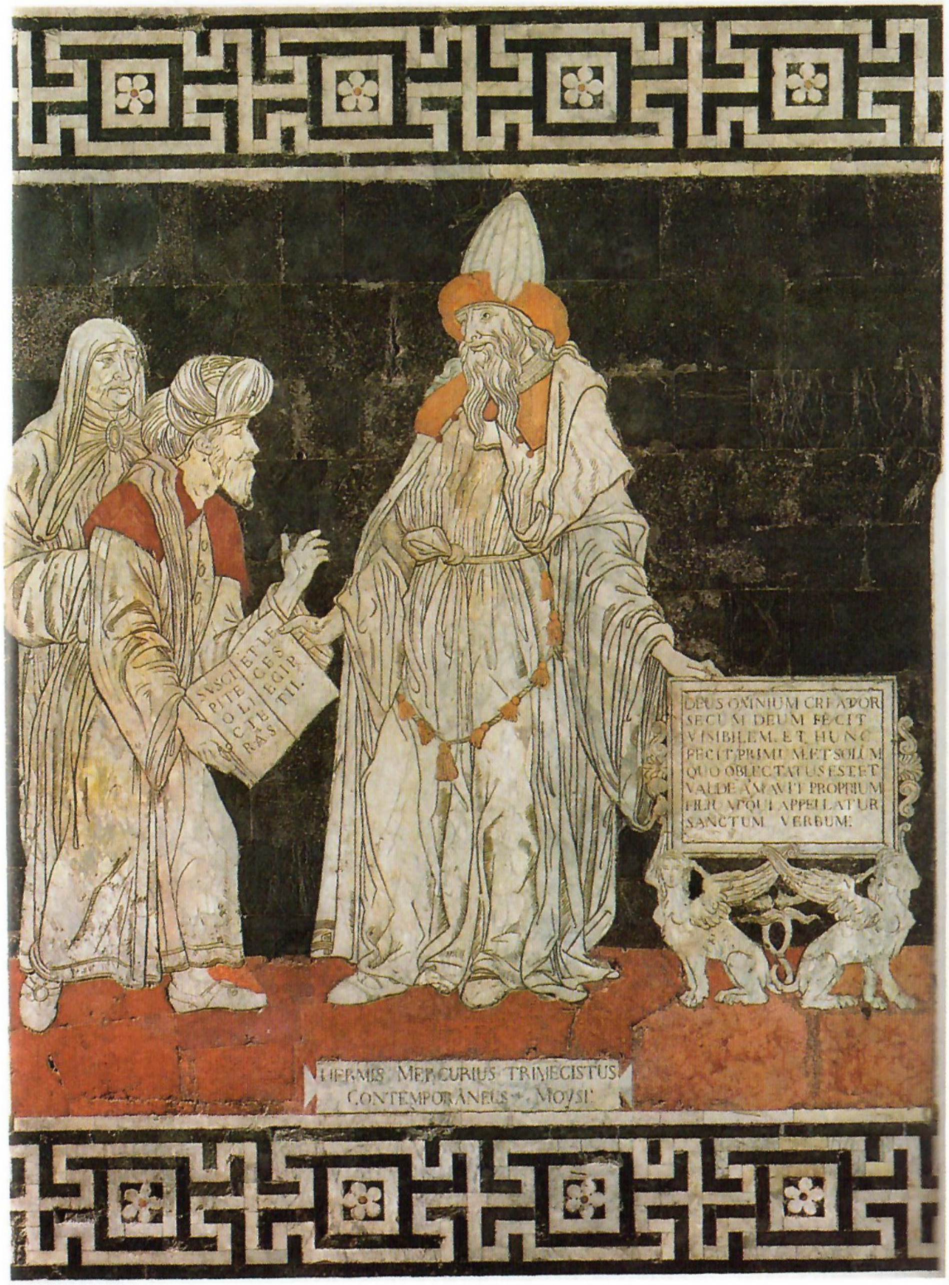
SUSCIPITE O LICTERAS
ET LEGES EGIPTII
DEUS OMNIUM CREATOR
SECUM DEUM FECIT
VISIBILEM ET HUNC
FECIT PRIMUM ET SOLUM
QUO OBLECTATUS EST ET
VALDE AMAVIT PROPRIUM
FILIU QUI APPELLATUR
SANCTUM VERBUM
HERMIS MERCURIUS TRIMEGISTUS
CONTEMPORANEUS MOYSI

Hermes Trismegistus, guardian deity of the Siena Cathedral.
[Giovanni di Stefano, 1488].

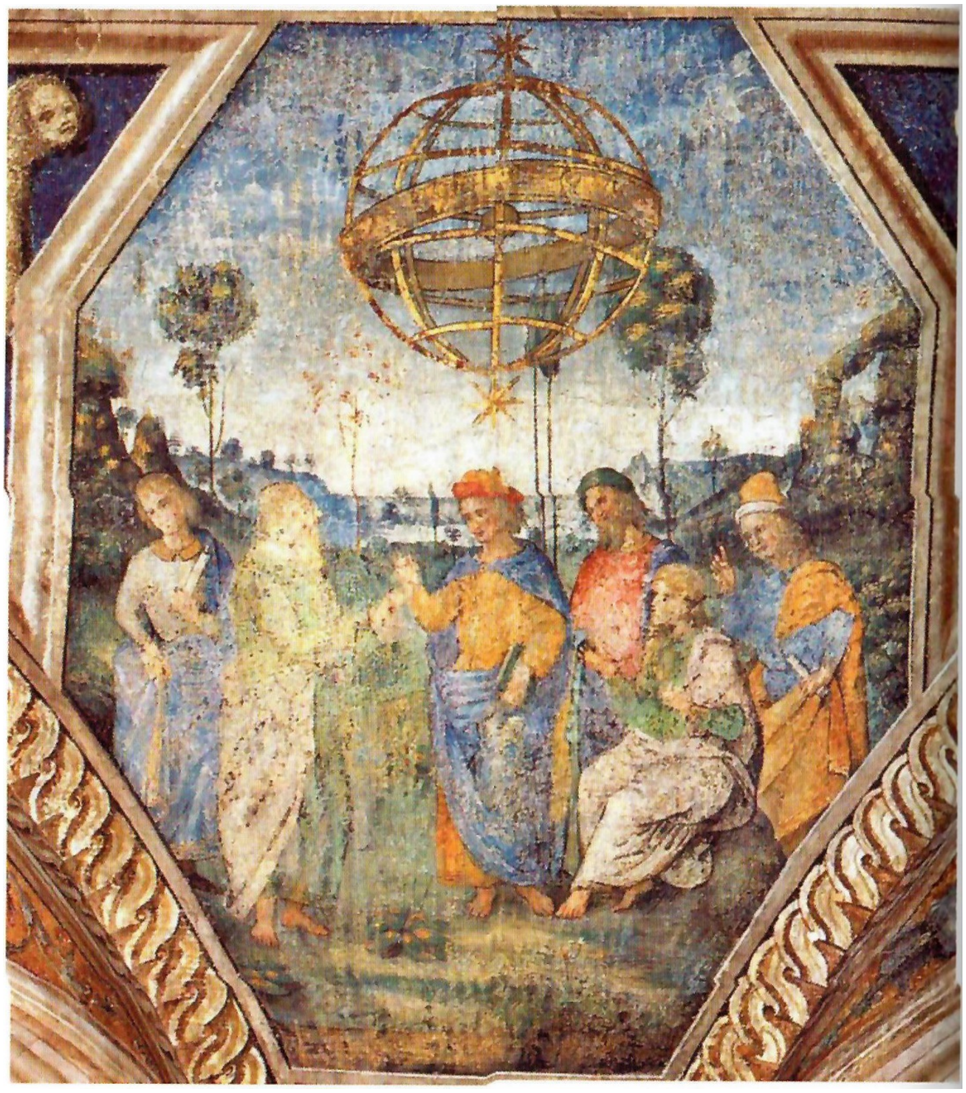

Hermes Trismegistus (at center under the star), guardian deity of the papal apartment of Pope Alexander VI.
[Bernardino Pinroricchio, circa 1494].

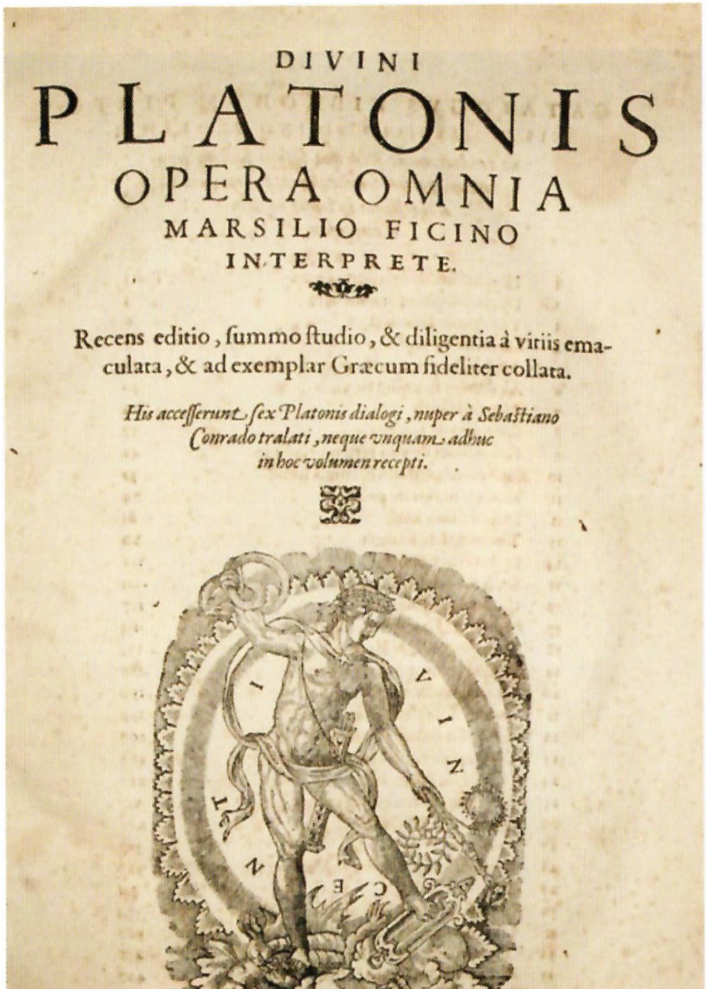

DIVINI
PLATONIS
OPERA OMNIA
MARSILIO FICINO
INTERPRETE.

Recens editio, ſummo ſtudio, & diligentia à vitiis emaculata, & ad exemplar Græcum fideliter collata.

His acceſſerunt ſex Platonis dialogi, nuper à Sebaſtiano Conrado tralati, neque unquam adhuc in hoc volumen recepti.

Title page from the *Divini Platonis Opera Omnia* (Lyons, 1567). The text is in Latin. Translated from the original Greek and “interpreted” by Rev. Fr. Marsilio Ficino. 712 pages printed in the ‘royal folio’ format and illustrated with geometric and cosmological schematic woodcuts. Plato’s dialogues are preceded by Ficino’s extensive commentaries, which are significant philosophical works in their own right. Plato’s text is printed in Roman type; Ficino’s commentaries are printed in italic.

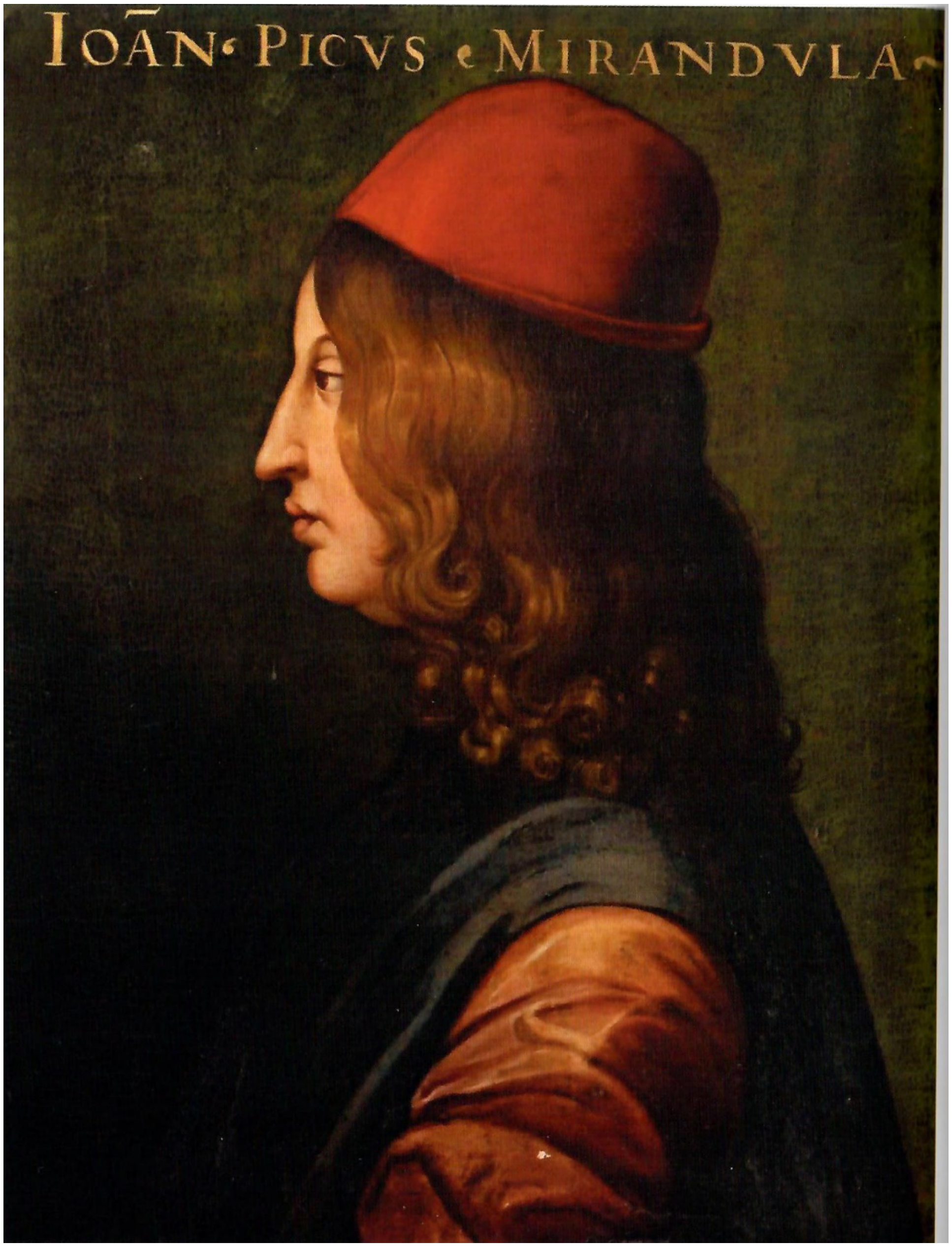
IOAN· PICVS · MIRANDVLA·

Giovanni Pico della Mirandola, 1463-1494.
[Cristofano dell'Altissimo].

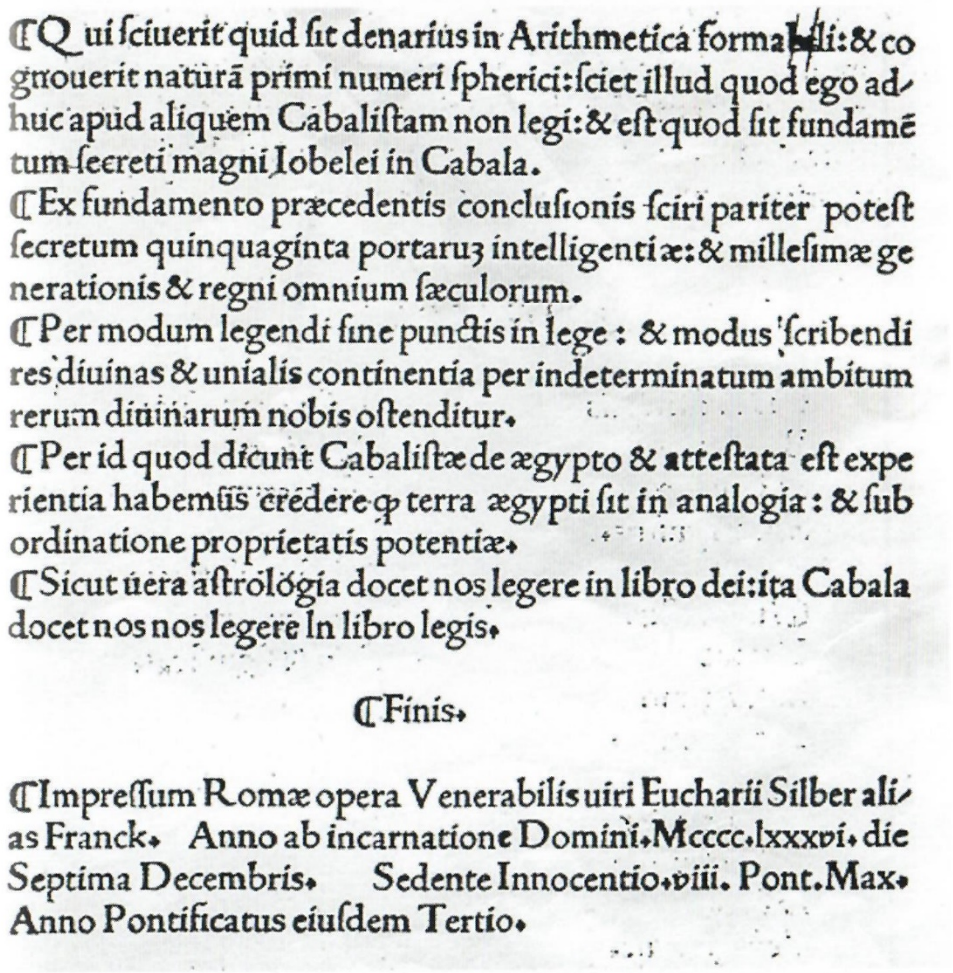

¶Qui ſciuerit quid ſit denarius in Arithmetica formali: & cognouerit naturã primi numeri ſpherici: ſciet illud quod ego adhuc apud aliquem Cabaliſtam non legi: & eſt quod ſit fundamẽtum ſecreti magni Iobelei in Cabala.

¶Ex fundamento præcedentis concluſionis ſciri pariter poteſt ſecretum quinquaginta portaruꝫ intelligentiæ: & milleſimæ generationis & regni omnium ſæculorum.

¶Per modum legendi ſine punctis in lege: & modus ſcribendi res diuinas & unialis continentia per indeterminatum ambitum rerum diuinarum nobis oſtenditur.

¶Per id quod dicunt Cabaliſtæ de ægypto & atteſtata eſt experientia habem̄us credere ꝙ terra ægypti ſit in analogia: & ſubordinatione proprietatis potentiæ.

¶Sicut uera aſtrologia docet nos legere in libro dei: ita Cabala docet nos nos legere In libro legis.

¶Finis.

¶Impreſſum Romæ opera Venerabilis uiri Eucharii Silber alias Franck. Anno ab incarnatione Domini. Mcccc. lxxxvi. die
Septima Decembris. Sedente Innocentio. viii. Pont. Max.
Anno Pontificatus eiuſdem Tertio.

Penultimate page of the first edition of Giovanni Pico della Mirandola’s *Nine Hundred Theses.* The note at the bottom states that it was printed in Rome by Eucharius Silber, December 7th, 1486, in the third year of the pontificate of Innocent VIII.

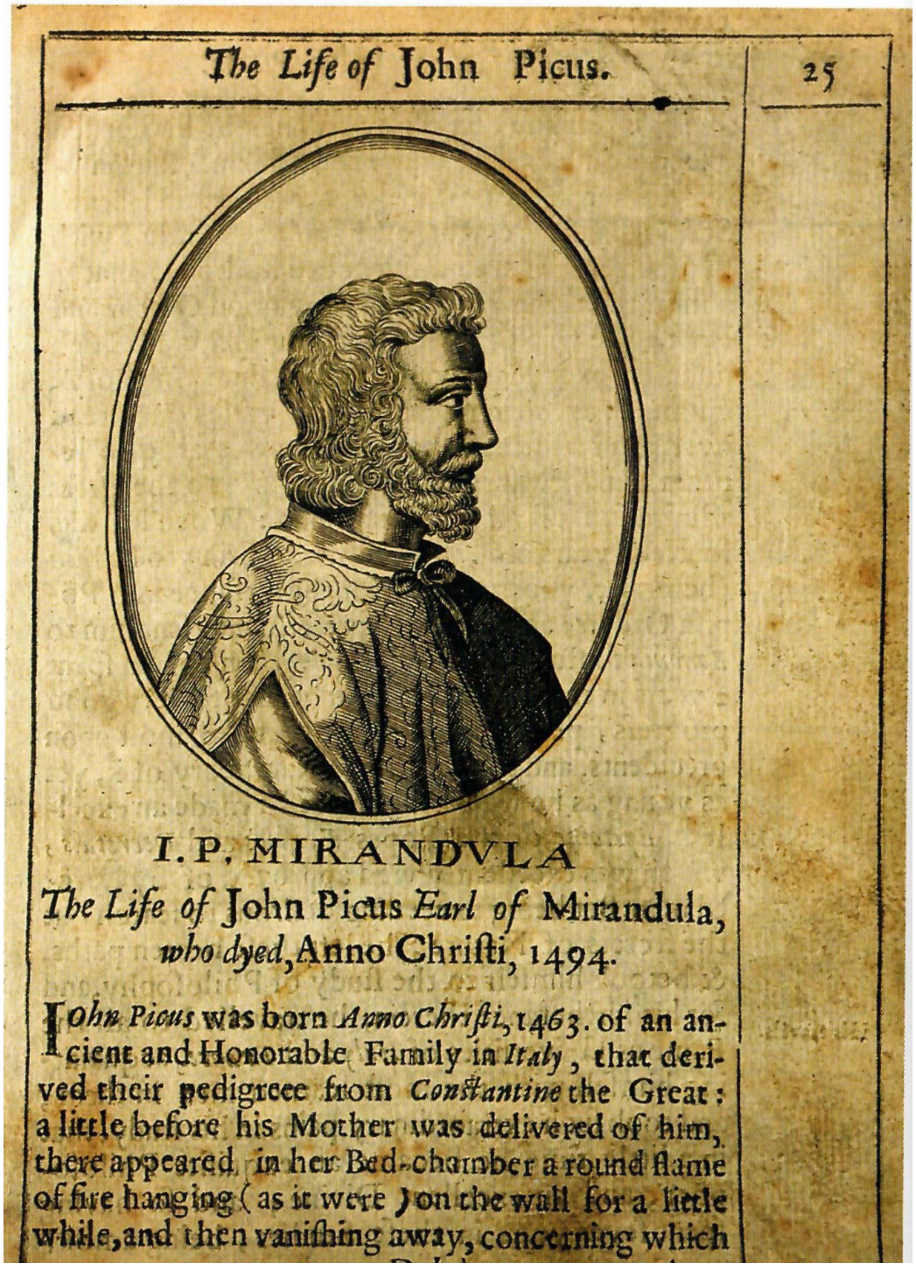

The Life of John Picus. 25

I. P. MIRANDVLA

The Life of John Picus *Earl of* Mirandula, *who dyed*, Anno Chriſti, 1494.

JOhn *Picus* was born *Anno Chriſti*, 1463. of an ancient and Honorable Family in *Italy*, that derived their pedigreee from *Conſtantine* the Great: a little before his Mother was delivered of him, there appeared in her Bed-chamber a round flame of fire hanging (as it were) on the wall for a little while, and then vaniſhing away, concerning which

Sir Thomas More's translation of the biography of Giovanni Pico della Mirandola, written by Pico's nephew. *The Life of of John Picus of Mirandula* was published in England with excisions and emendations by More.

Statue in Germany of the faithful papist Johannes Reuchlin (1455-1522), the Church of Rome’s defender and promoter of the Kabbalah and Babylonian Talmud.
[Adolf von Donridorf, circa 1868]

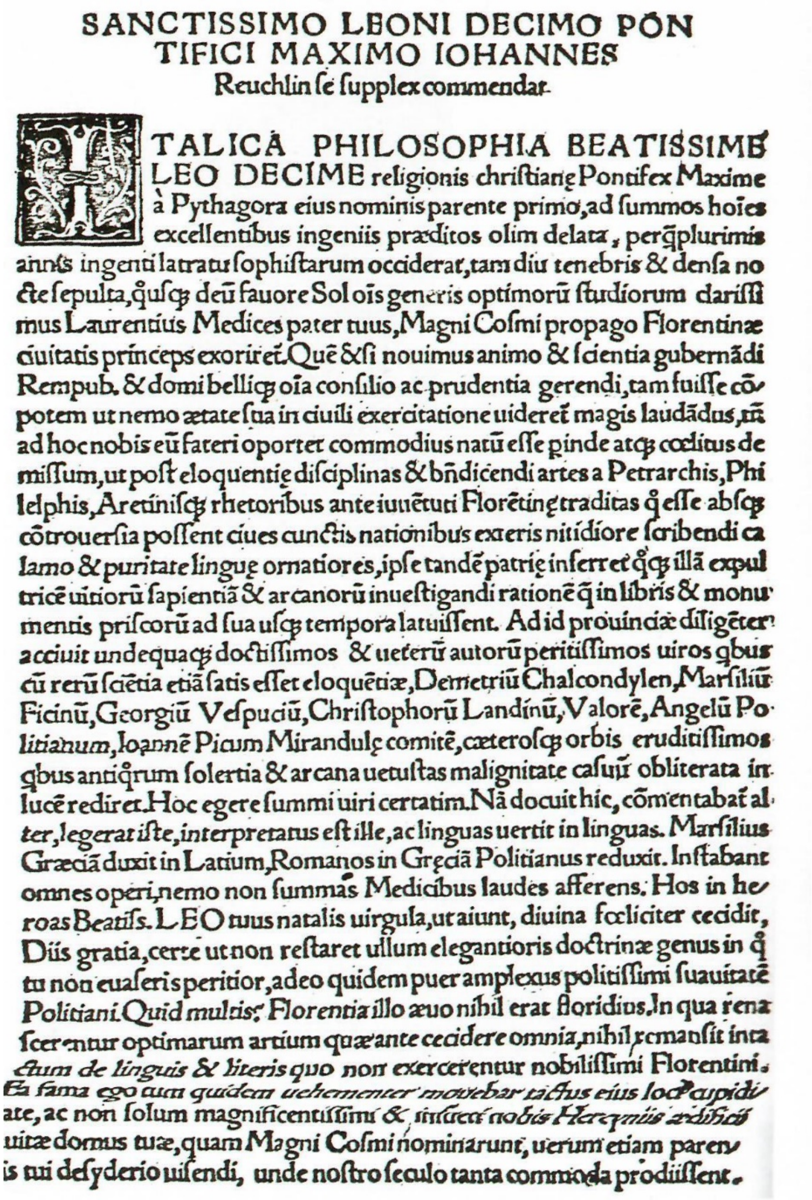

SANCTISSIMO LEONI DECIMO PONTIFICI MAXIMO IOHANNES
Reuchlin ſe ſupplex commendat.

ITALICA PHILOSOPHIA BEATISSIME LEO DECIME religionis chriſtianę Pontifex Maxime à Pythagora eius nominis parente primo, ad ſummos hoĩes excellentibus ingeniis præditos olim delata, per q̄plurimis annis ingenti latratu ſophiſtarum occiderat, tam diu tenebris & denſa nocte ſepulta, quo uſqꝫ deũ fauore Sol oĩs generis optimorũ ſtudiorum clariſſimus Laurentius Medices pater tuus, Magni Coſmi propago Florentinæ ciuitatis princeps exoriret. Quẽ & ſi nouimus animo & ſcientia gubernãdi Rempub. & domi belliqꝫ oĩa conſilio ac prudentia gerendi, tam fuiſſe cõpotem ut nemo ætate ſua in ciuili exercitatione uideret magis laudãdus, tñ ad hoc nobis eũ fateri oportet commodius natũ eſſe pinde atqꝫ coelitus demiſſum, ut poſt eloquentię diſciplinas & bñdicendi artes a Petrarchis, Philelphis, Aretiniſqꝫ rhetoribus ante iuuẽtuti Florẽtinę traditas q̊ eſſe abſqꝫ cõtrouerſia poſſent ciues cunctis nationibus exteris nitidiore ſcribendi calamo & puritate linguę ornatiores, ipſe tandẽ patrię inferret q̊qꝫ illã expultricẽ uitiorũ ſapientiã & arcanorũ inueſtigandi rationẽ q̄ in libris & monumentis priſcorũ ad ſua uſqꝫ tempora latuiſſent. Ad id prouinciæ diligẽter acciuit undequaqꝫ doctiſſimos & ueterũ autorũ peritiſſimos uiros q̄bus cũ rerũ ſciẽtia etiã ſatis eſſet eloquẽtiæ, Demetriũ Chalcondylen, Marſiliũ Ficinũ, Georgiũ Veſpuciũ, Chriſtophorũ Landinũ, Valorẽ, Angelũ Politianum, Ioannẽ Picum Mirandulę comitẽ, cæteroſqꝫ orbis eruditiſſimos q̄bus antiq̊rum ſolertia & arcana uetuſtas malignitate caſuũ obliterata in lucẽ rediret. Hoc egere ſummi uiri certatim. Nã docuit hic, cõmentabat alter, legerat iſte, interpretatus eſt ille, ac linguas uertit in linguas. Marſilius Græciã duxit in Latium, Romanos in Gręciã Politianus reduxit. Inſtabant omnes operi, nemo non ſummas Medicibus laudes afferens. Hos in heroas Beatiſs. LEO tuus natalis uirgula, ut aiunt, diuina fœliciter cecidit, Diis gratia, certe ut non reſtaret ullum elegantioris doctrinæ genus in q̊ tu non euaſeris peritior, adeo quidem puer amplexus politiſſimi ſuauitatẽ Politiani. Quid multis? Florentia illo æuo nihil erat floridius. In qua renaſcerentur optimarum artium quæ ante cecidere omnia, nihil remanſit intactum de linguis & literis quo non exercerentur nobiliſſimi Florentini. Ea fama ego cum quidem uehementer mouebar tactus eius loci cupiditate, ac non ſolum magnificentiſſimi & [illegible] nobis [illegible] ædificii uitæ domus tuæ, quam Magni Coſmi nominarunt, uerum etiam parentis tui deſyderio uiſendi, unde noſtro ſeculo tanta commoda prodiiſſent.

Dedication page from Johannes Reuchlin’s *De Arte Cabalistica* (1517).
“Dedicated to His Holiness Pope Leo X.”

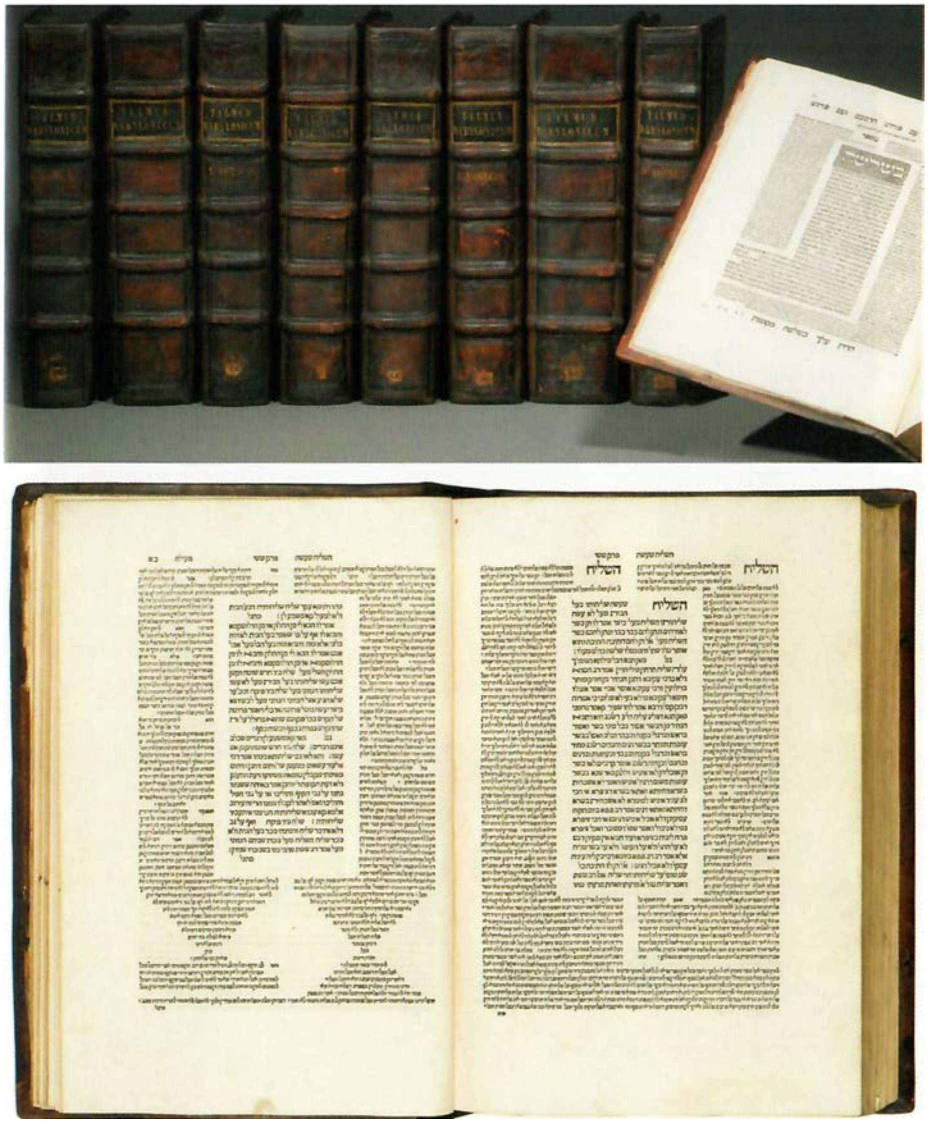

The Papal Edition of the Talmud
At the time of its publication this was the finest edition of the Babylonian Talmud in world history. This printing, under the auspices of the pope, established the text within the canon of rabbinic Judaism for generations to come. [Daniel Bomberg, Venice, 1519-1523].

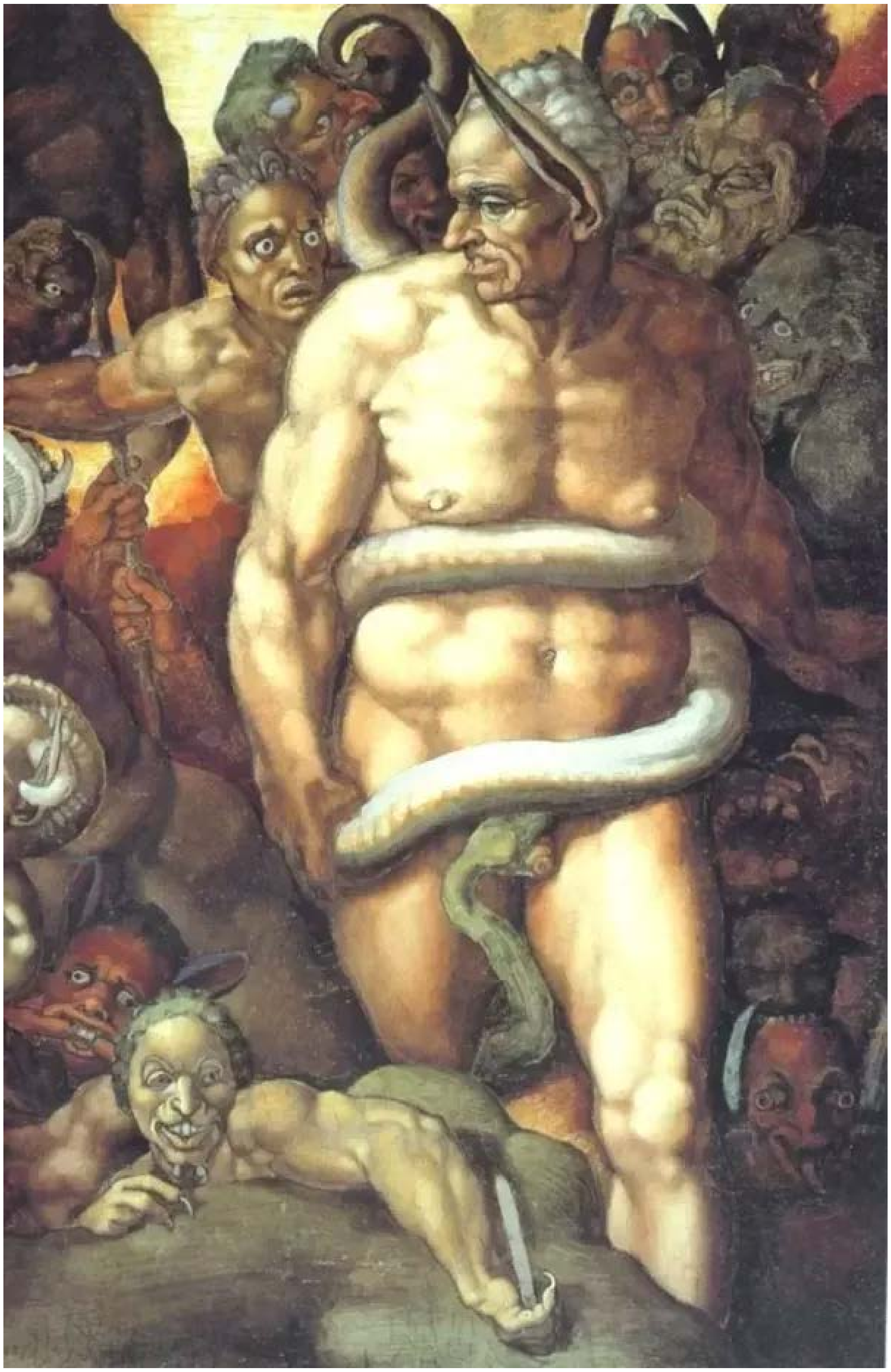

The serpent with the penis of Biagio da Cesena in its mouth.
Michelangelo, *The Last Judgment,* Sistine Chapel, 1541.

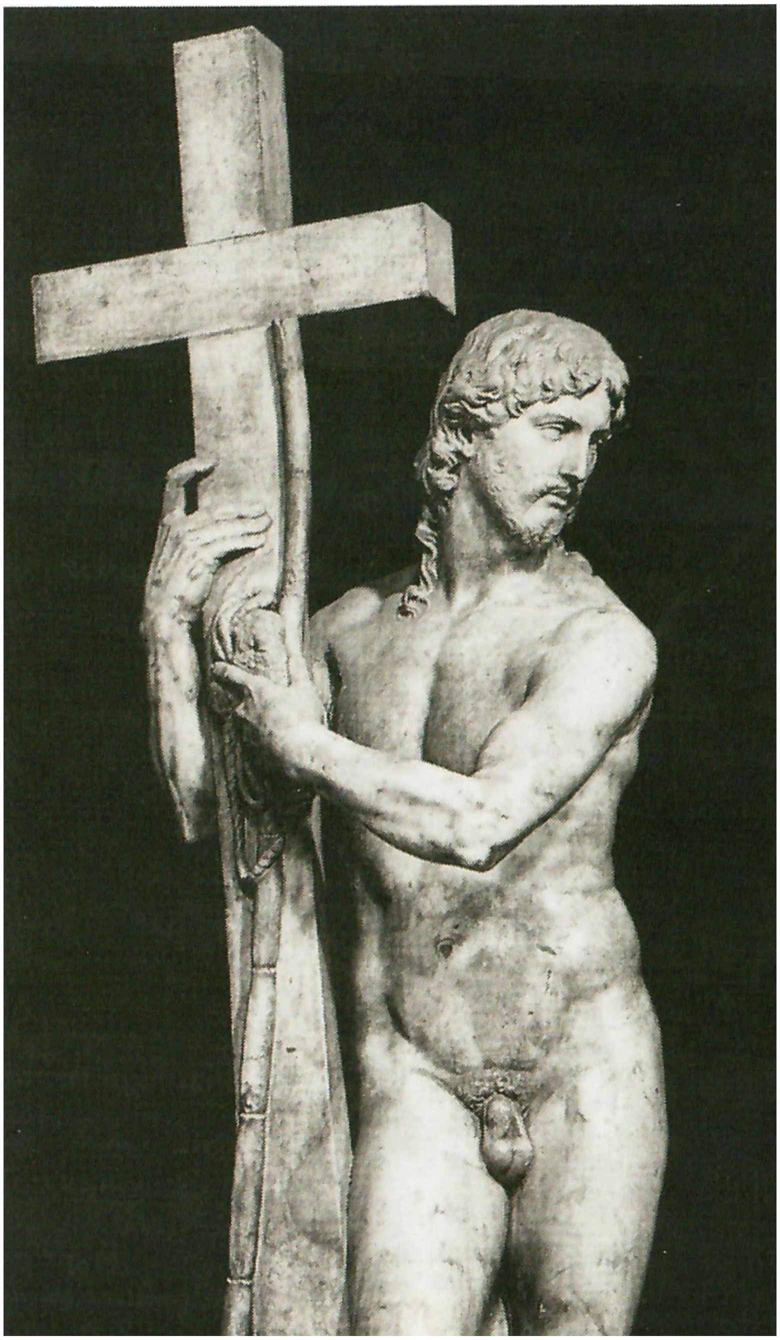

Michelangelo, *The Risen Christ* (1519-1521).
Rome: Church of Santa Maria sopra Minerva.

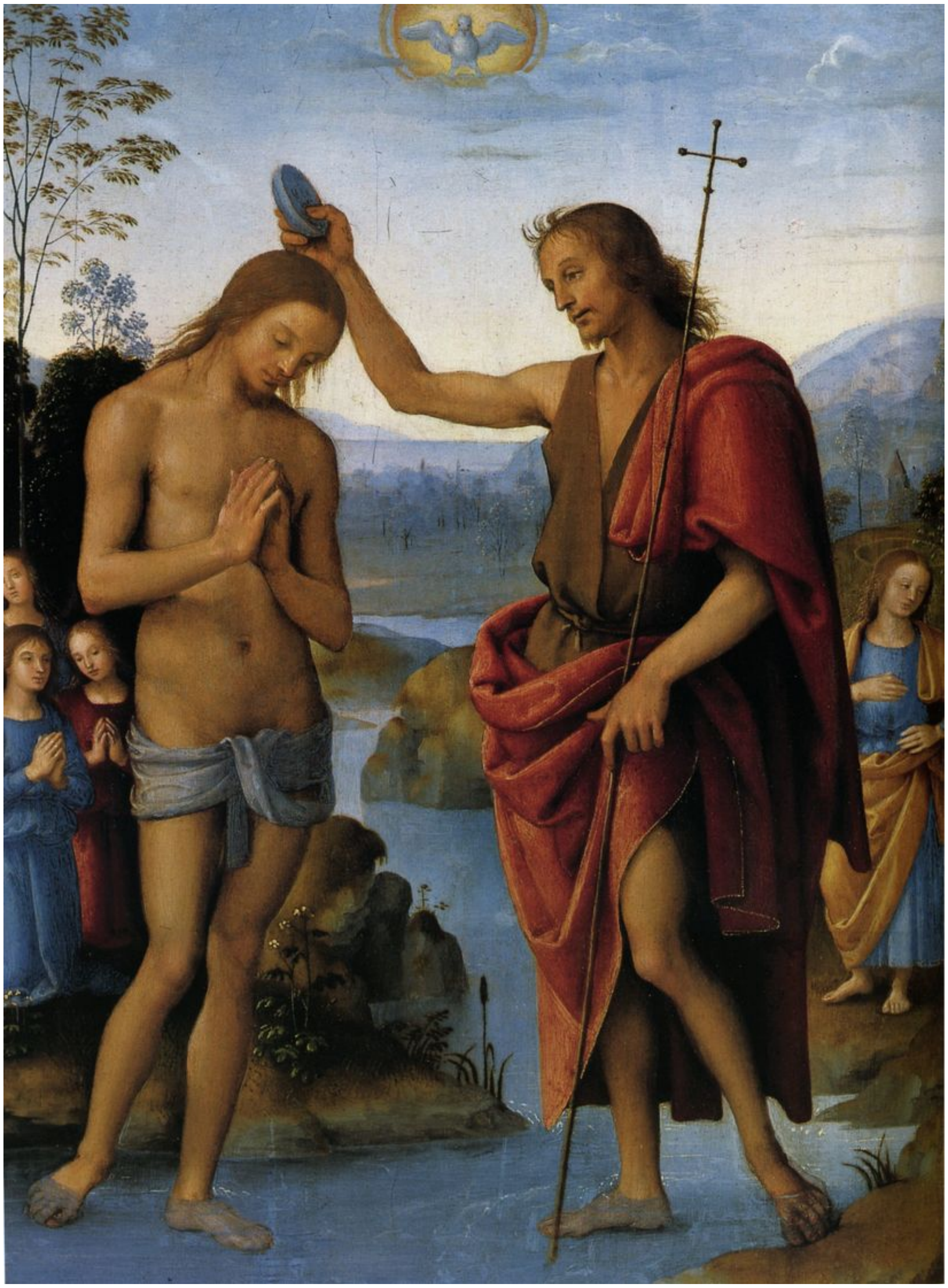

Partially nude erotica of Our Lord.
[Pietro Perugino, the *Baptism of Christ,* circa 1500].

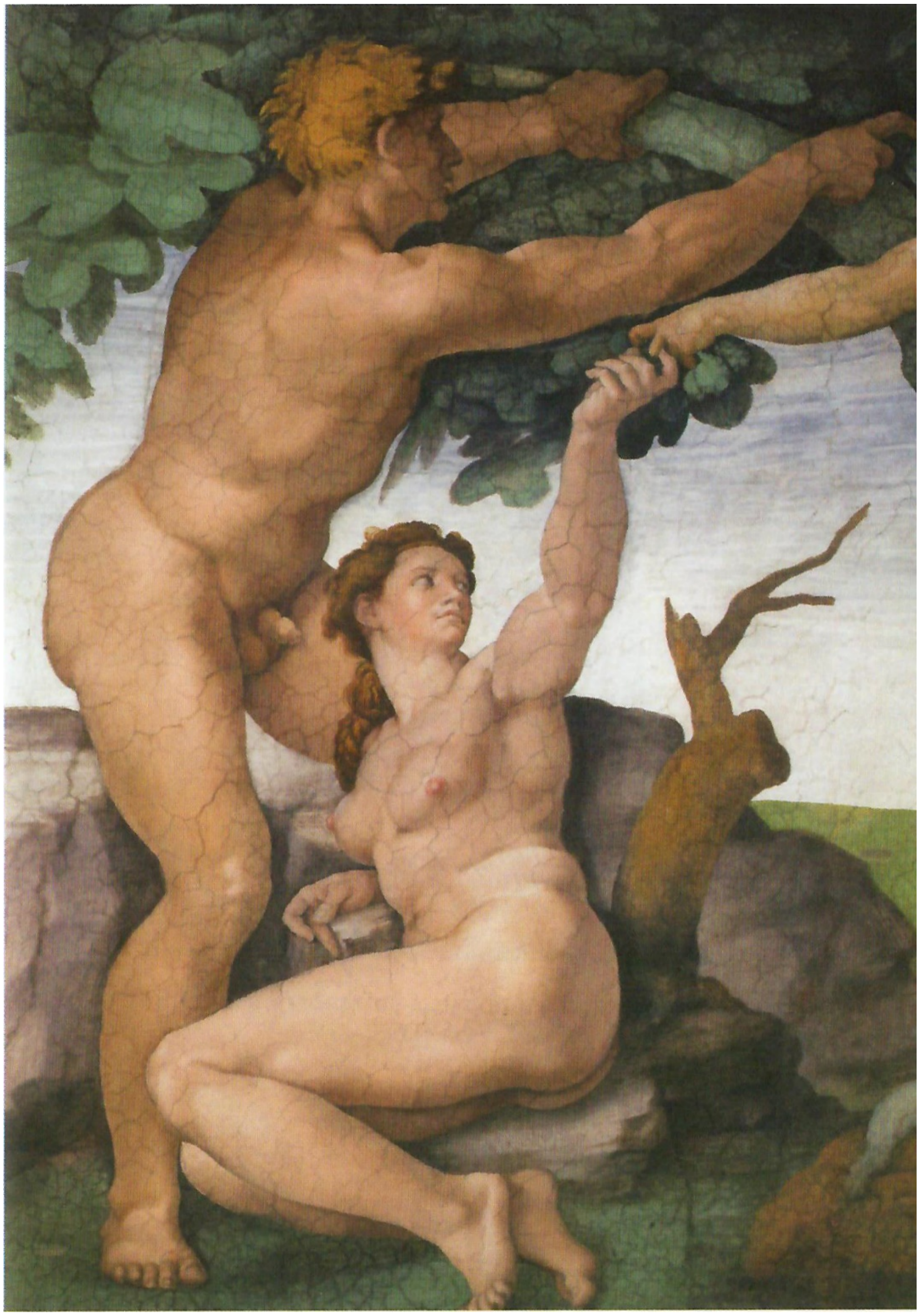

This painting begs the question, what was Michelangelo’s Eve doing before she turned her head? [Sistine Chape], 1508-1512].

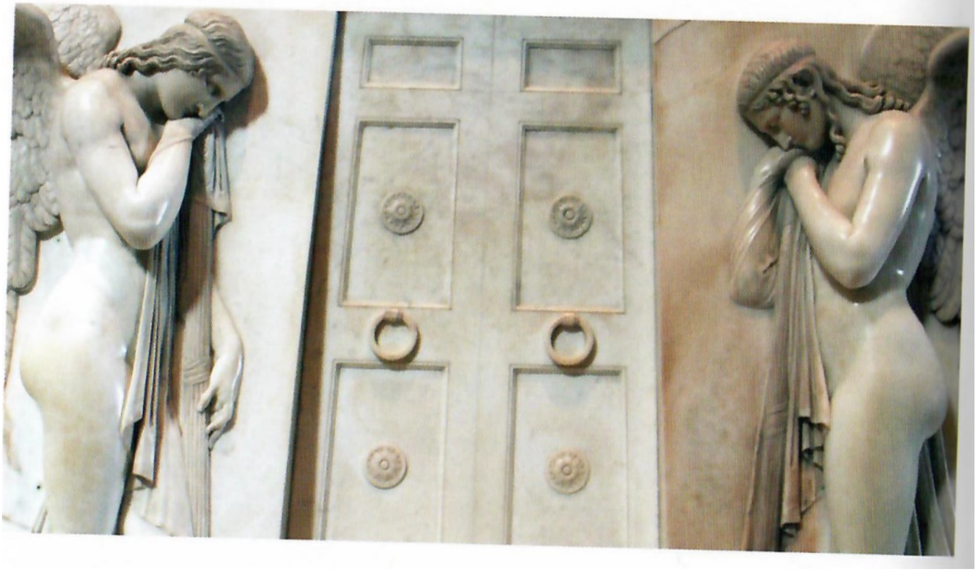

Saint Peter's Basilica, Rome (interior).

Partially nude erotica of Our Lord

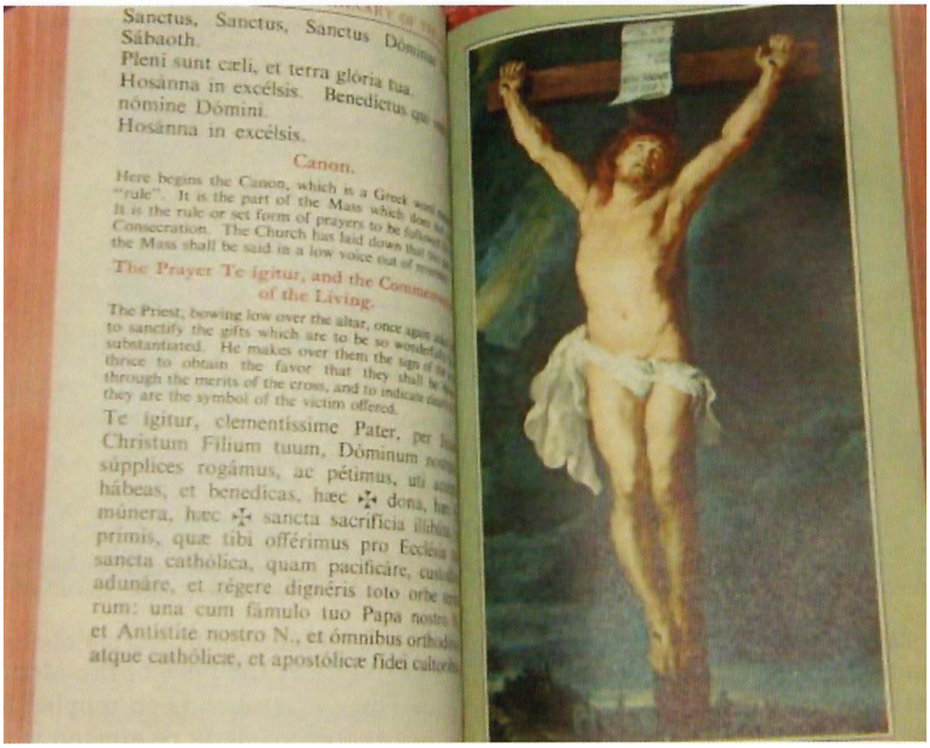

Sanctus, Sanctus, Sanctus
Sábaoth.
Pleni sunt cæli, et terra glória tua.
Hosánna in excélsis. Benedictus
nómine Dómini.
Hosánna in excélsis.

Canon.

Here begins the Canon, which is a Greek
"rule". It is the part of the Mass which
It is the rule or set form of prayers to be
Consecration. The Church has laid down that
the Mass shall be said in a low voice out of

The Prayer Te igitur, and the
of the Living.

The Priest, bowing low over the altar, once
to sanctify the gifts which are to be so
substantiated. He makes over them the sign of
thrice to obtain the favor that they shall
through the merits of the cross, and to indicate
they are the symbol of the victim offered.

Te igitur, clementissime Pater, per
Christum Filium tuum, Dóminum
súpplices rogámus, ac pétimus, uti
hábeas, et benedicas, hæc ✠ dona,
múnera, hæc ✠ sancta sacrificia
primis, quæ tibi offérimus pro
sancta cathólica, quam pacificáre,
adunáre, et régere dignéris toto orbe
rum: una cum fámulo tuo Papa
et Antistite nostro N., et ómnibus
atque cathólicæ, et apostólicæ fidei

[1950s-era Tridentine Latin Mass missal (prayer book)]

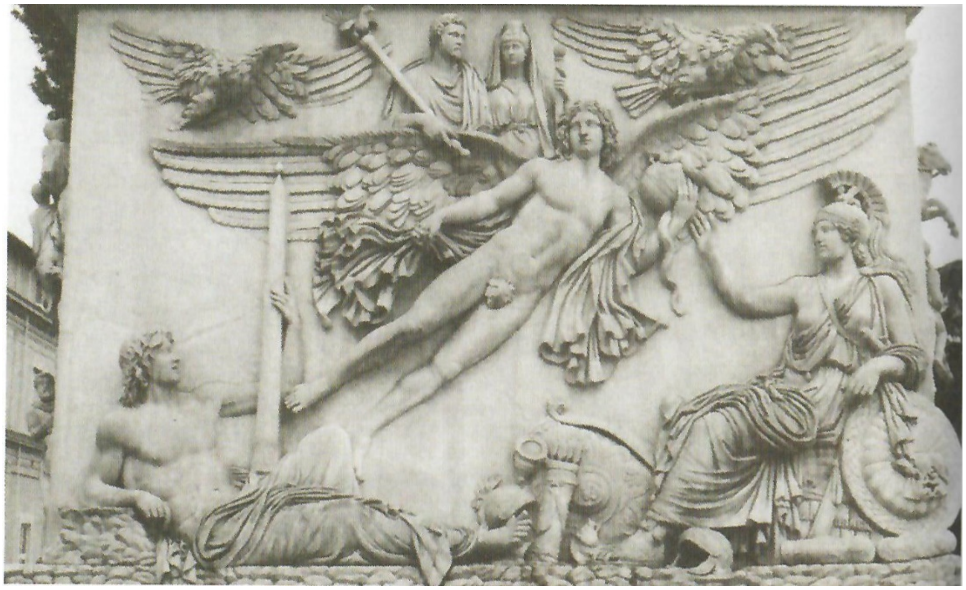

A stone carving of a reclining young man (at left) with a priapic obelisk emerging from his genital region. The carving is at the base of the Monte Citorio obelisk in Rome’s Campo Marzio. The obelisk had been toppled by the devout Catholic Duke Robert Guiscard in 1084. It was re-erected with considerable difficulty and expense by Pope Pius VI, in 1792.

[Michael Hoffman Page 337]

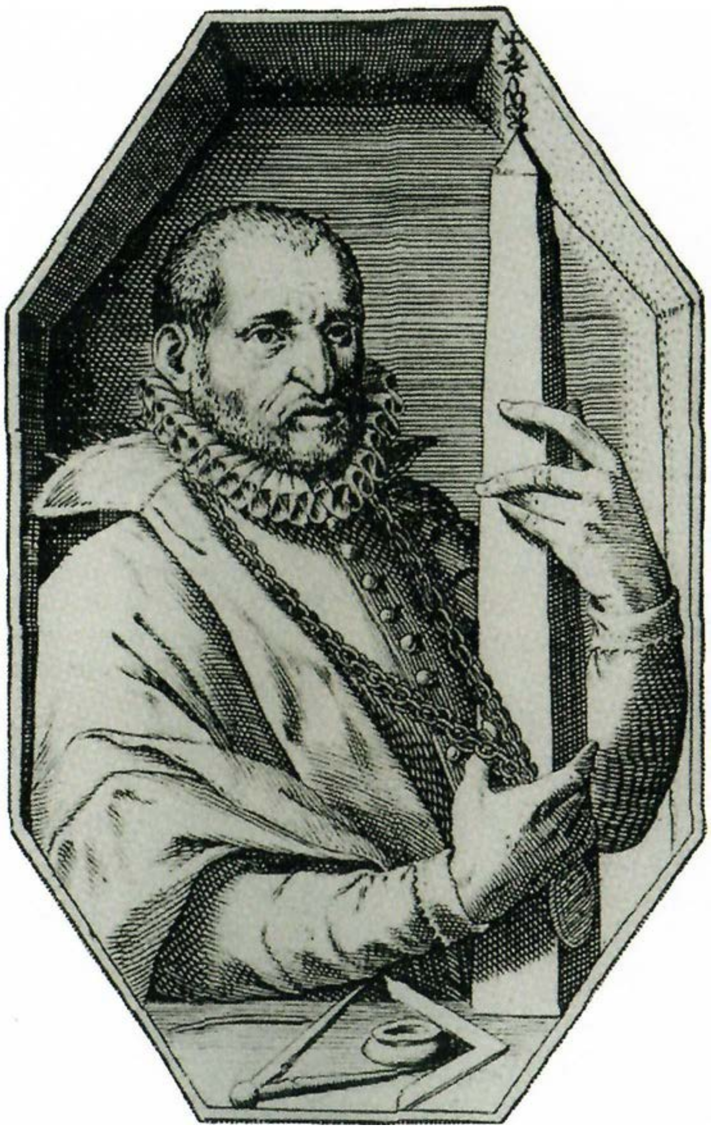

Domenico Fontana, the brilliant engineer to whom Sixtus V entrusted the mission of moving an obelisk to St. Peter's Square. He is pictured holding a replica.

[*Della trasportatione dell'obelisco vaticano et delle fabriche di Nostro Signore papa Sisto* V, Rome, 1590].

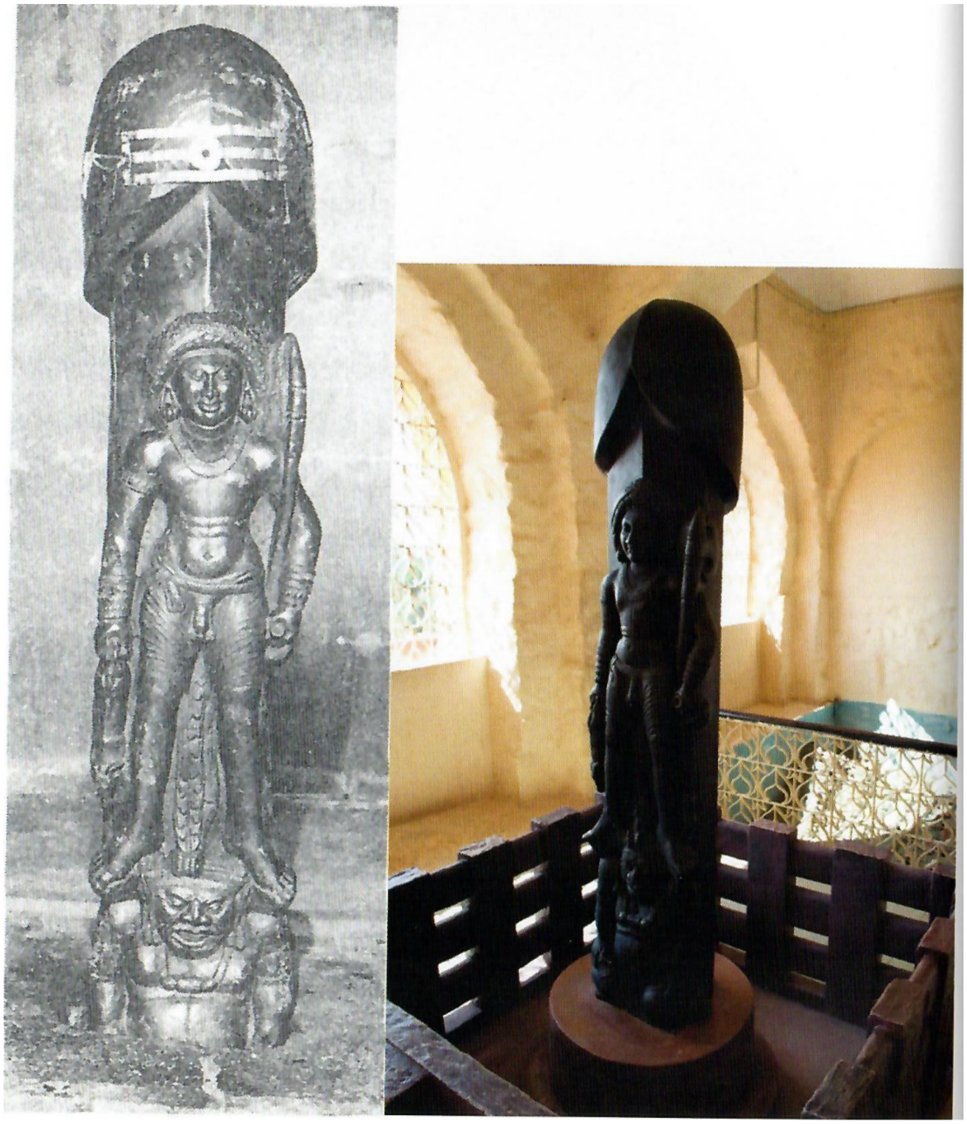

The obelisk, which is known by different names and under various forms, is a universal signifier of the erect male organ. In the illustration at left, a carved image of the god Shiva stands on the shoulders of a demon in front of an obelisk-shaped *linga,* sacred to the Hindu religion (the same shape is exhibited at right).

[Gudimallam Linga, India, circa 100 B.C.]

Pharaoh’s obelisk erected by Freemasons in New York City, January 22, 1881.

The obelisk presiding over St. Peter's Square, Rome.

The obelisk presiding over the U.S. capitol, Washington, D.C.

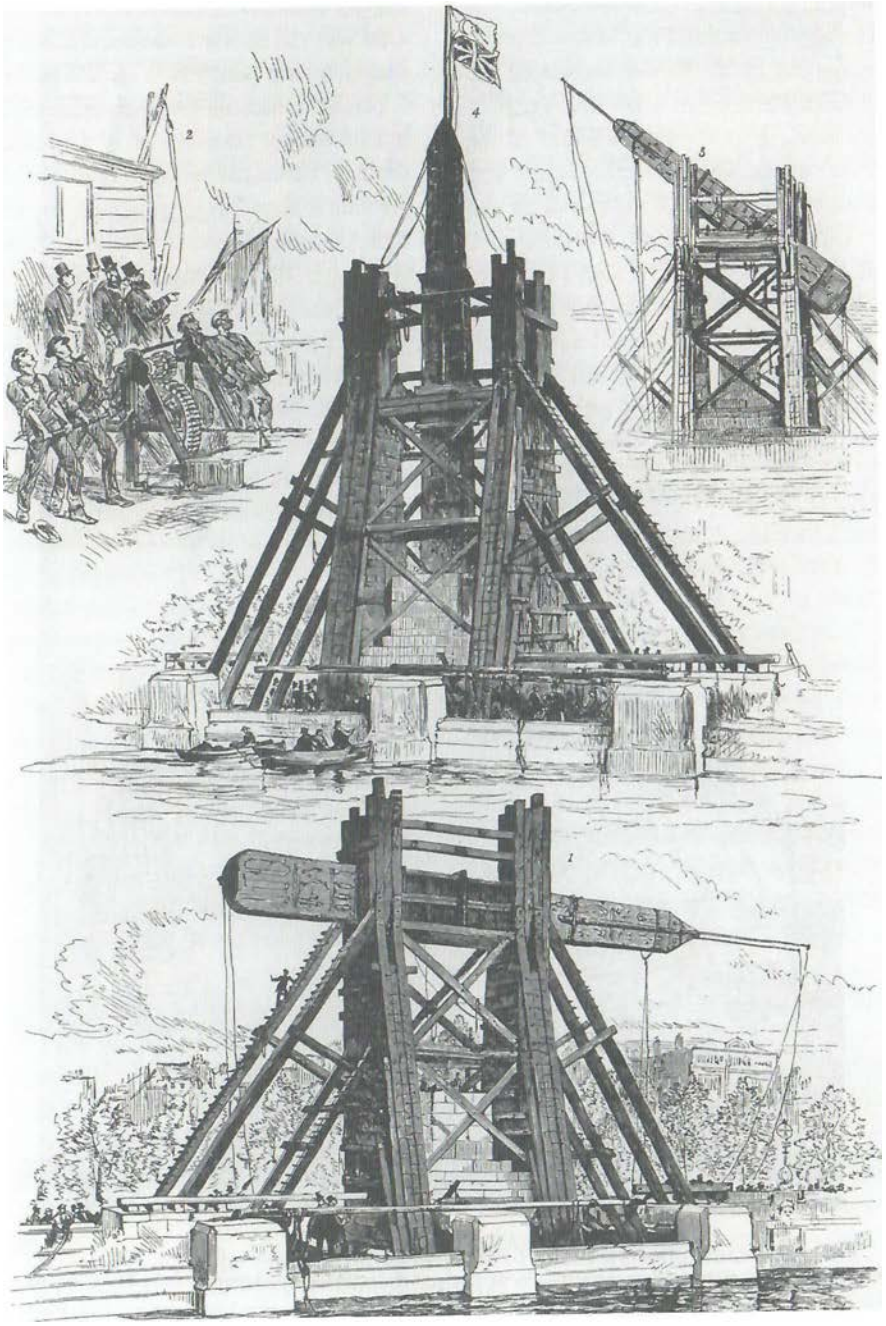

The Egyptian obelisk erected by Freemasons in London, England, September 13, 1880.

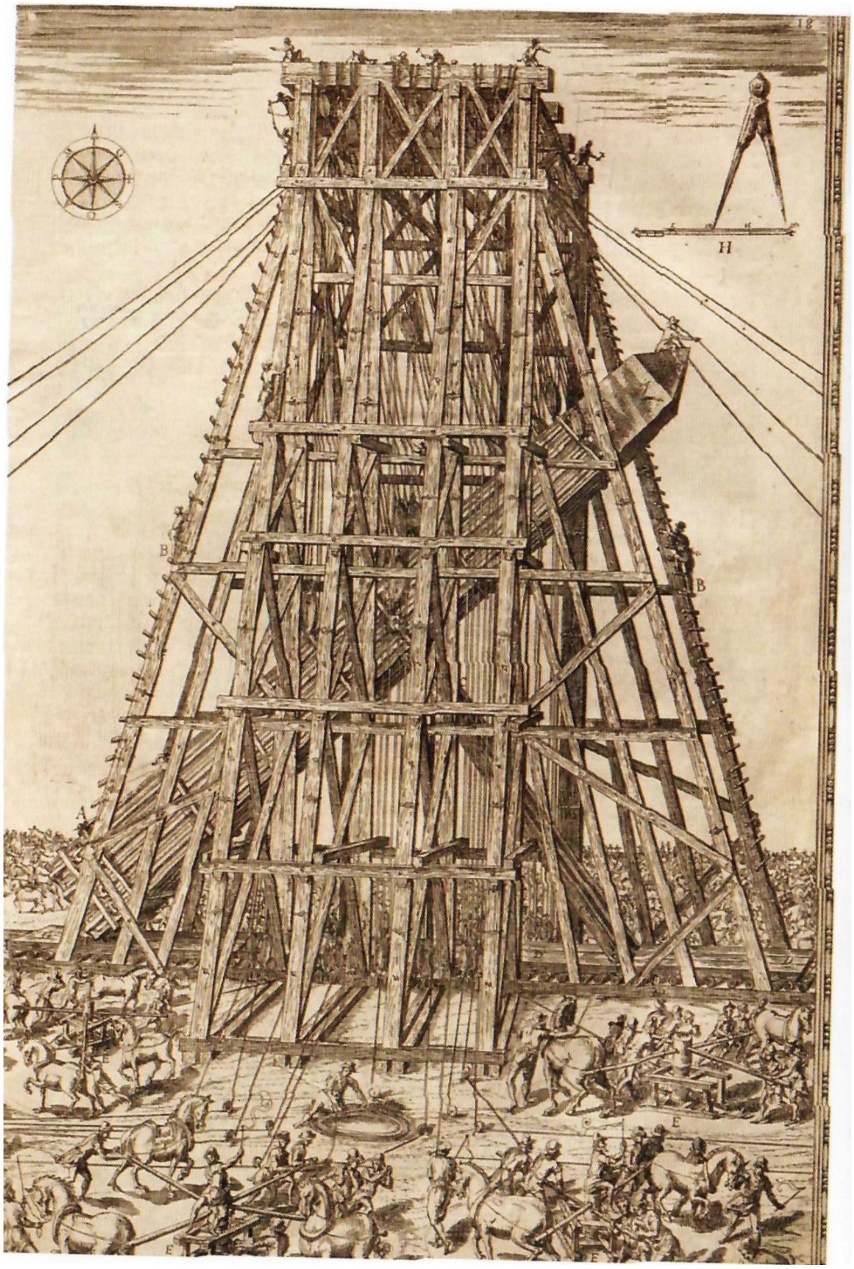

The Egyptian obelisk prior to its erection by order of Pope Sixtus V.
St. Peter's Square, Rome, 1586.

[*Della trasportatione dell'obelisco vaticano et delle fabriche di Nostro Signore papa Sisto V*, Rome, 1590].

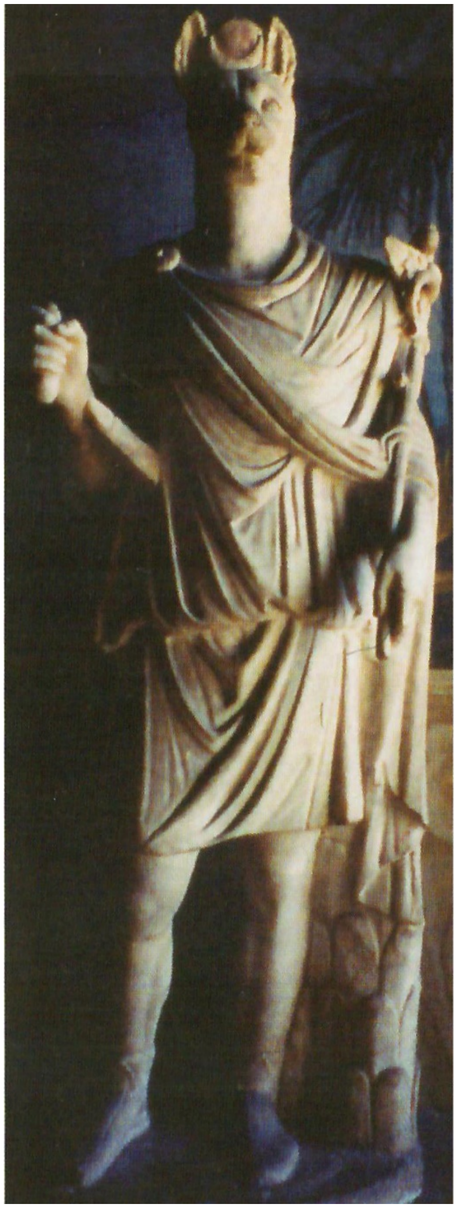

A Hermetic Deity
A statue of the Egyptian jackal-headed god Anubis cradling the "Herald's Wand of Hermes" in his left arm, and casting a spell with his right. The statue is sometimes referred to as "Hermanubis." According to Albert Pike in *Morals and Dogma,* the star of the Freemasons is Sirius, the "dog-star." [Circa second century A.D. Egypt (relocated to Rome)].

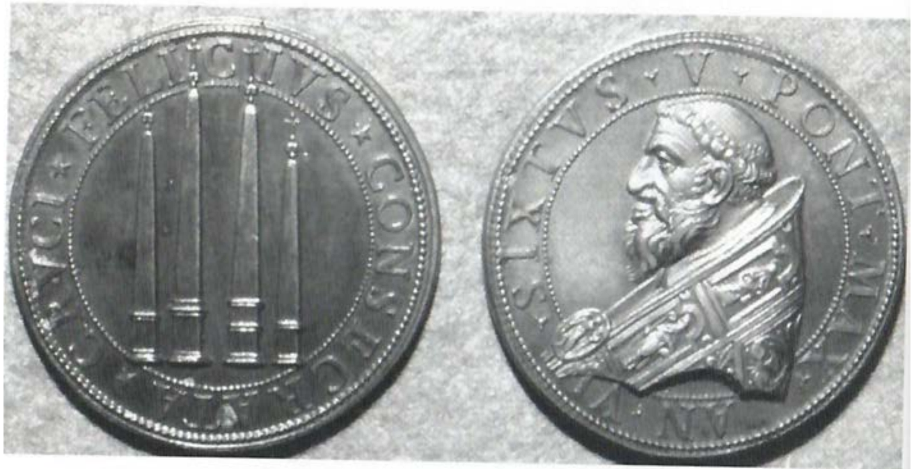
FELICIUS CONSECRATA CRVCI
SIXTVS V PONT MAX AN V

In 1590 a bronze medal was issued (the rear and obverse of which are pictured above), honoring Pope Sixtus V (Felice Peretti de Montalto), for having ordered the excavation, transport and permanent erection in Rome, of four Egyptian obelisks that had been pulled down by the early Christians.

[Michael Hoffman Page 345]

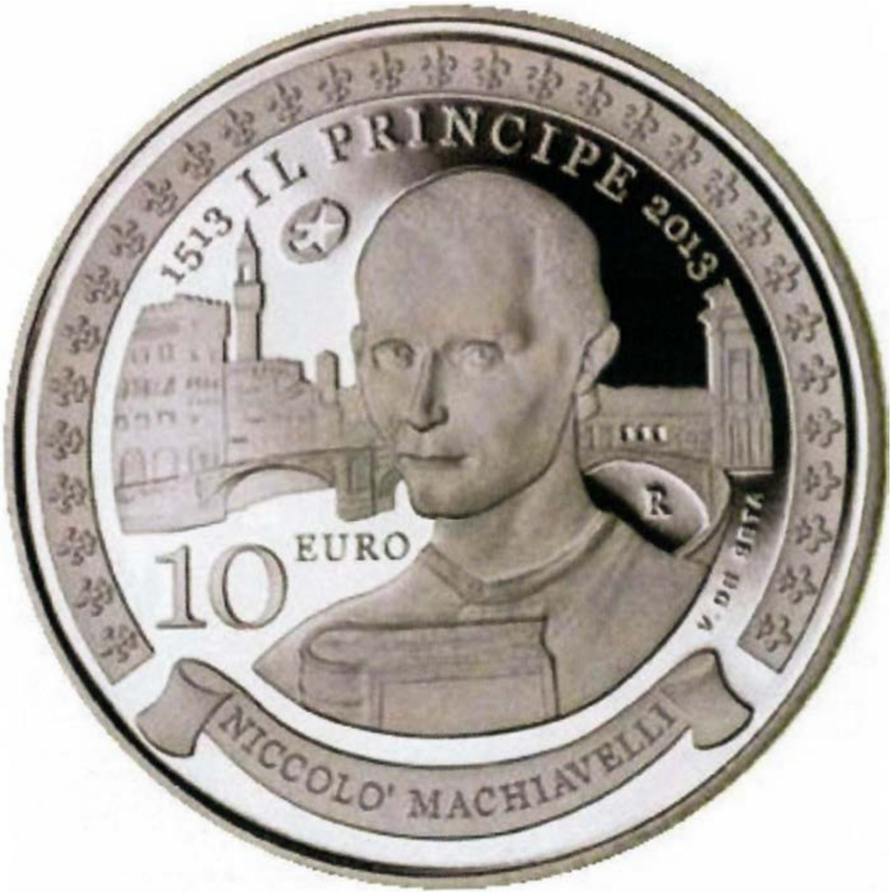
1513 IL PRINCIPE 2013
10 EURO
R
NICCOLO' MACHIAVELLI

Ten-euro coin bearing the image of Niccolo Machiavelli, the Renaissance advocate of deceit and treachery. The coin was issued in 2013 by the Republic of San Marino (an independent state within Italy), to commemorate the 500th anniversary of the publication of Machiavelli's best-known work, *Il Principe* ("The Prince").

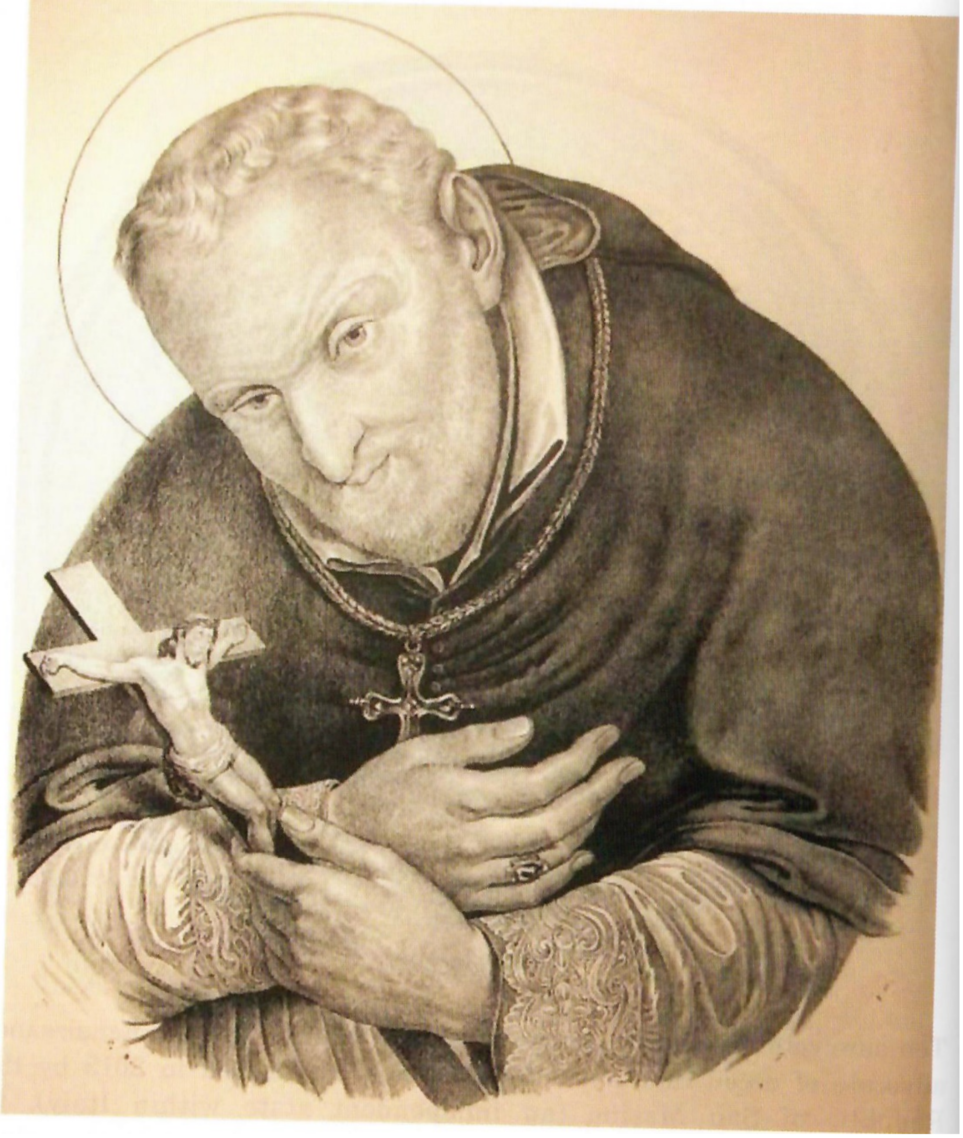

Alphonsus Liguori (1696-1787), a post-Renaissance saint of the Church of Rome whose *Moral Theology* sparked a prolonged controversy in Victorian Britain.

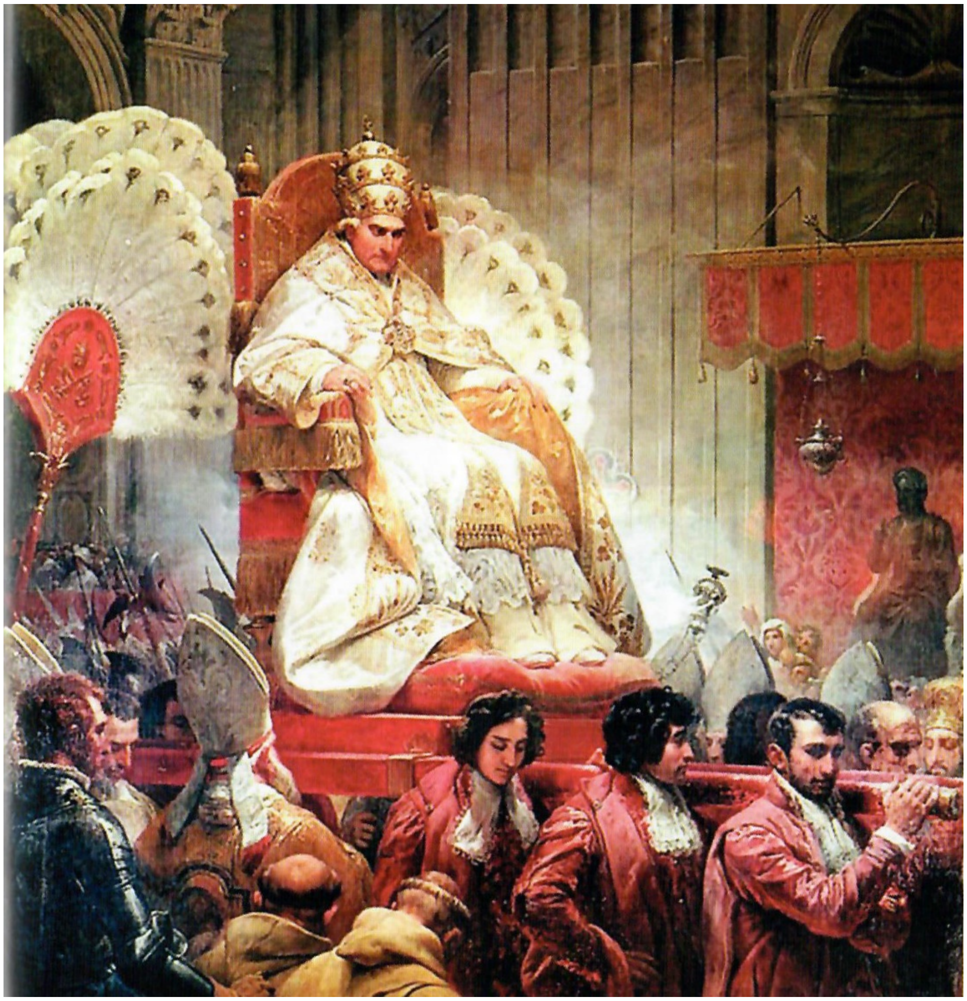

Usury Pope Pius VIII (1761-1830) carried
on the *sedia gestatoria,* a ceremonial Roman throne.

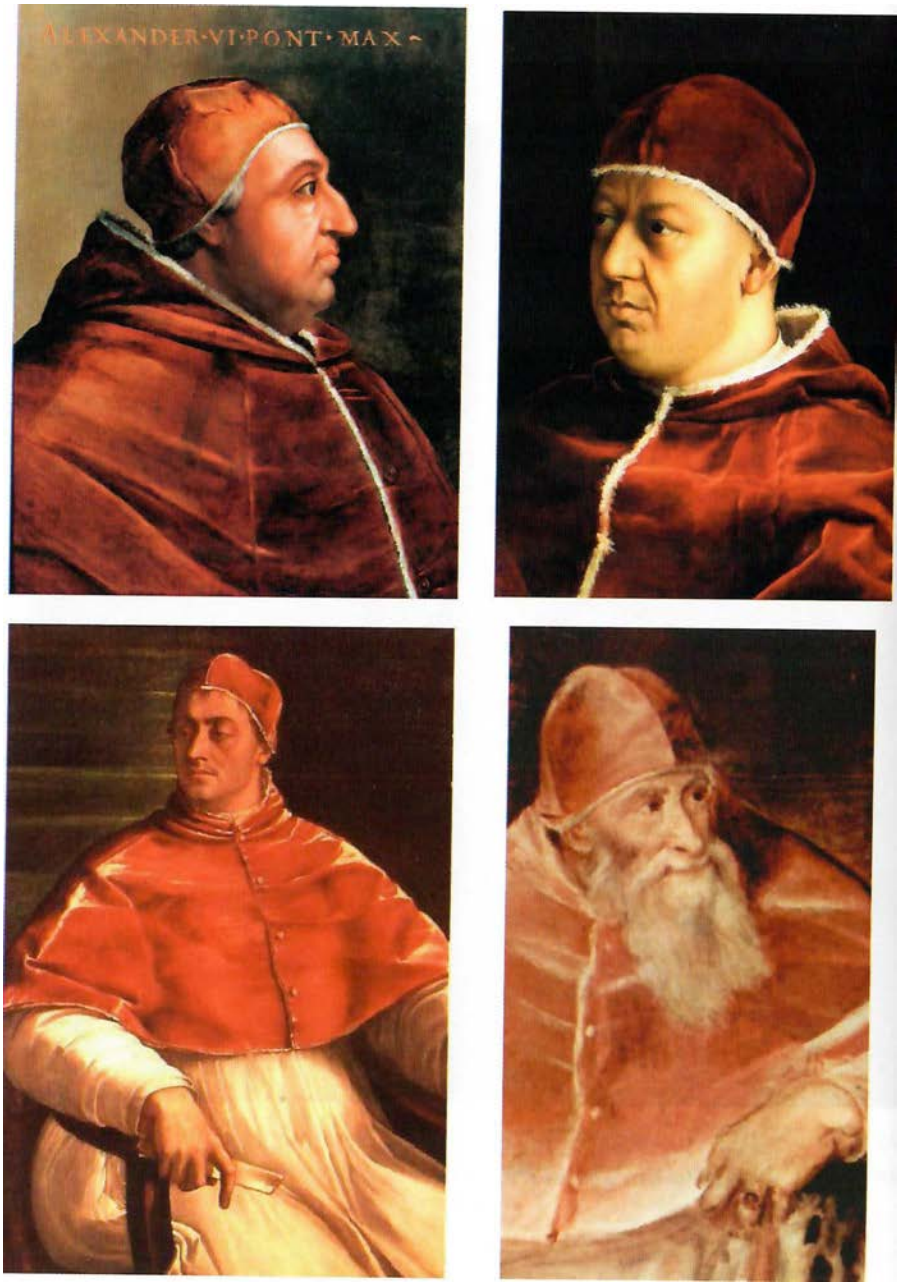

Four Occult Popes of the Renaissance
Top: Alexander VI (Roderic Borgia), 1431-1503. Leo X (Giovanni di Lorenzo de' Medici), 1475-1521. Bottom: Clement VII (Giulio di Giuliano de' Medici), 1478-1534. Paul III (Alessandro Farnese), 1468-1549.

MEDICI
BANK MEDICI AG

The insignia of the Medici usury bank.

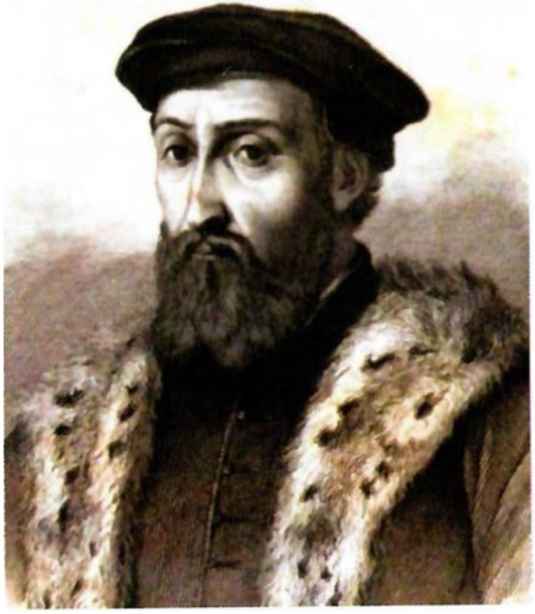

Filippo Strozzi the Younger (1489-1538), one of many usury bankers who bought and sold appointments to the Sacred College and other high offices in the Church of Rome.

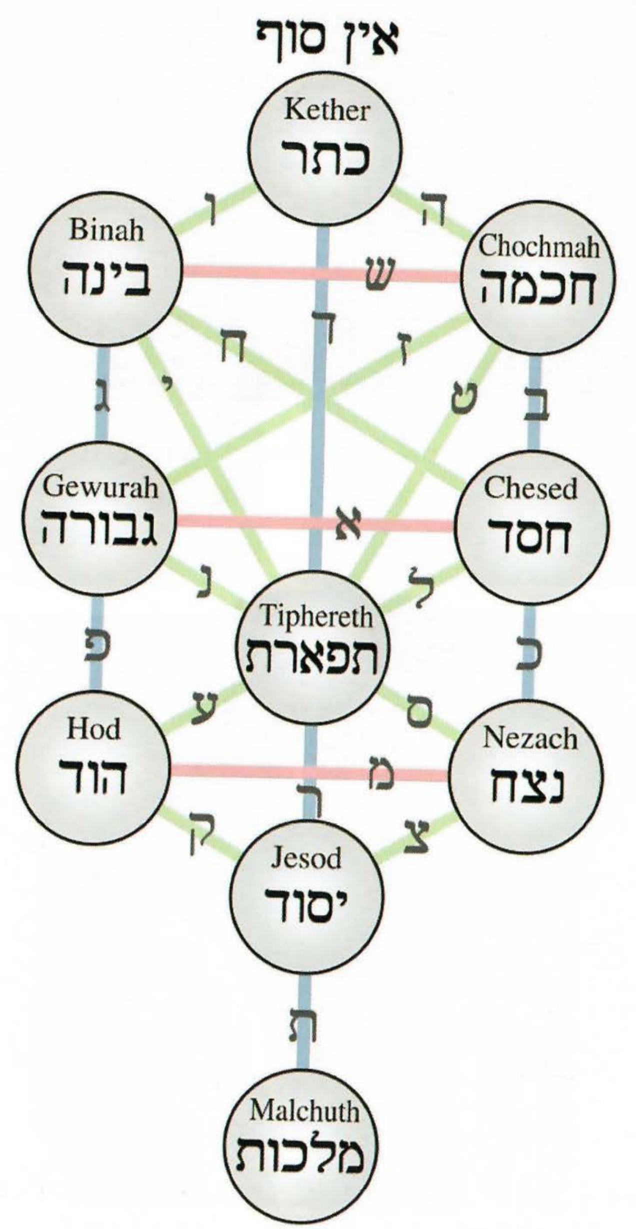
אין סוף
Kether
כתר
Binah
בינה
Chochmah
חכמה
Gewurah
גבורה
Chesed
חסד
Tiphereth
תפארת
Hod
הוד
Nezach
נצח
Jesod
יסוד
Malchuth
מלכות
ו
ה
ש
ד
ח
ז
ג
י
ט
ב
א
נ
ל
פ
כ
ע
ס
מ
ר
ק
צ
ת

The Sefirotic Tree of the Kabbalistic Ten Emanations.

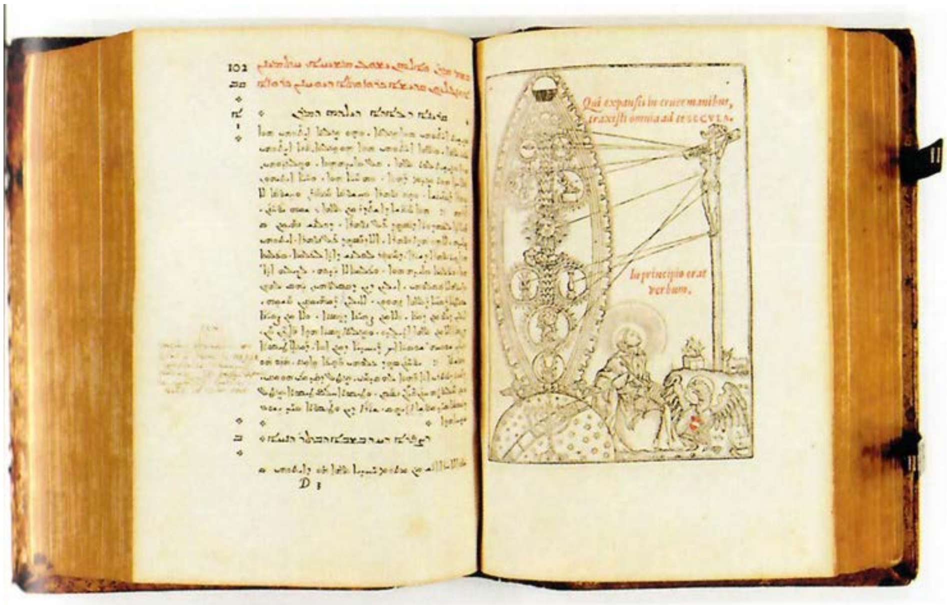
Qui expansis in cruce manibus, traxisti omnia ad te secula.
In principio erat verbum.

The Holy Roman Emperor's Kabbalah

An illustration of Jesus Christ on the Cross corresponding to the Sefirotic Tree of the Kabbalistic Ten Emanations.

From the Syriac New Testament, published by Ferdinand I (1503-1564), future Holy Roman Emperor, while he was the Catholic King of Hungary and Bohemia, and Archduke of Austria.

[*Liber sacrosancti evangelii de Iesu Christo Domino,* 1555].

[Page 352 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

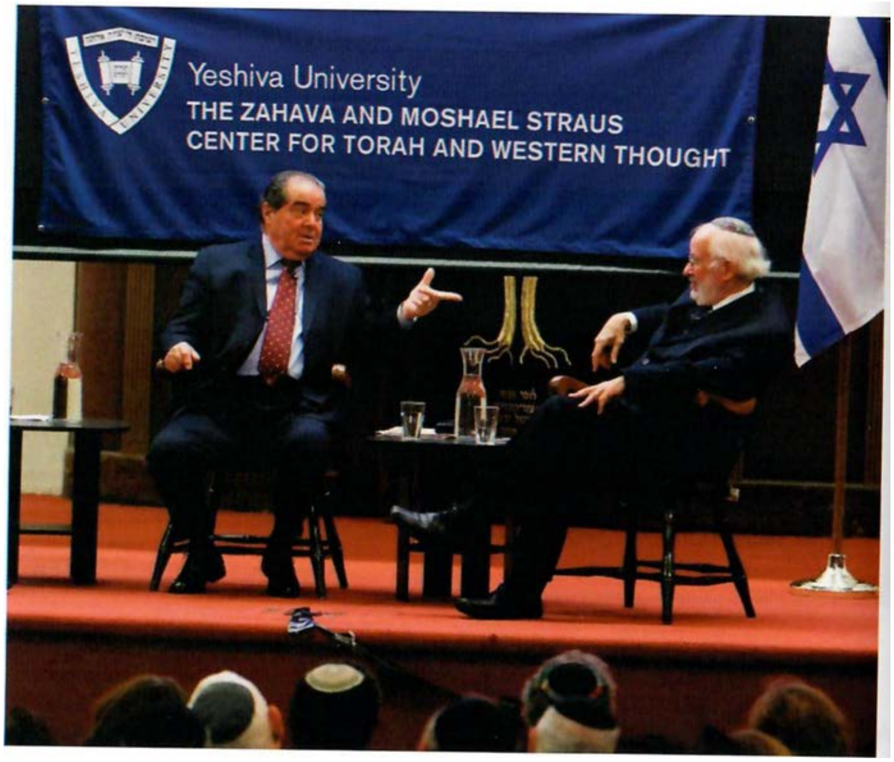
Yeshiva University
THE ZAHAVA AND MOSHAEL STRAUS
CENTER FOR TORAH AND WESTERN THOUGHT

Antonin Scalia, Associate Chief Justice of the United States Supreme Court, in conversation with attorney Nathan Lewin concerning how to apply Talmudic *halacha* to the American court system.

“Synagogue and State in America,” November 6, 2013.
Zahava and Moshel Straus Center for Torah [1]

[1] By “Torah” is meant Judaism’s supreme law derived from the oral tradition, the *Torah she’Beal peh*, i.e. the Talmud Bavli.

Yeshiva University, New York.

A Talmudic maxim instructs with respect to the Scripture: “Turn it over, and turn it over, for all is therein.” The Babylonian Talmud, Tractate Aboth, Ch. V, Mishnah 22 (I. Epstein ed. 1935). Divinely inspired text may contain the answers to all earthly questions, but the Due Process Clause most assuredly does not. The Court today continues its quixotic quest to right all wrongs and repair all imperfections through the Constitution. Alas, the quest cannot succeed—which is why some wrongs and imperfections have been called nonjusticiable. In the best of all possible worlds, should judges sometimes recuse even where the clear commands of our prior due process law do not require it? Undoubtedly. The relevant question, however, is whether we do more good than harm by seeking to correct this imperfection through expansion of our constitutional mandate in a manner ungoverned by any discernible rule. The answer is obvious.

An excerpt from Associate Supreme Court Justice Scalia’s dissent in Caperton v. A. T. Massey Coal Co., 556 U.S. 868 (June 8, 2009).

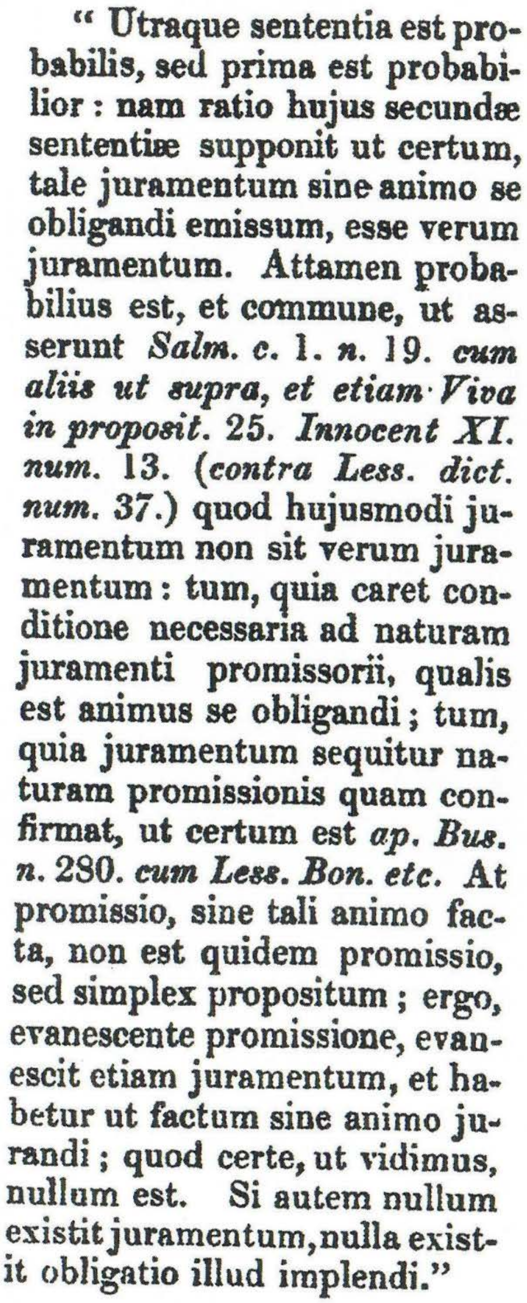

"Utraque sententia est probabilis, sed prima est probabilior: nam ratio hujus secundæ sententiæ supponit ut certum, tale juramentum sine animo se obligandi emissum, esse verum juramentum. Attamen probabilius est, et commune, ut asserunt *Salm. c.* 1. *n.* 19. *cum aliis ut supra, et etiam Viva in proposit.* 25. *Innocent XI. num.* 13. (*contra Less. dict. num.* 37.) quod hujusmodi juramentum non sit verum juramentum: tum, quia caret conditione necessaria ad naturam juramenti promissorii, qualis est animus se obligandi; tum, quia juramentum sequitur naturam promissionis quam confirmat, ut certum est *ap. Bus. n.* 280. *cum Less. Bon. etc.* At promissio, sine tali animo facta, non est quidem promissio, sed simplex propositum; ergo, evanescente promissione, evanescit etiam juramentum, et habetur ut factum sine animo jurandi; quod certe, ut vidimus, nullum est. Si autem nullum existit juramentum, nulla existit obligatio illud implendi."

At left is an excerpt from the *Moral Theology* of Alphonsus Liguori, [2]

in which, concerning oaths sworn by Catholics, this 'Doctor of the Church,' establishes escape clauses, whereby the obligation of Catholics to fulfill what they have sworn to do or uphold, need not be fulfilled:

"Either of the opinions is probable, but the first is more probable: for the reason of the second opinion supposes it as certain that such an oath, made without the mind of binding one's self, is a true oath. But it is a more probable, and common opinion, as *Salm. c. 1 n. 19. with others as above, and even Viva on proposition 25. of Innocent XI. num. 13. (against Lessius in the mentioned num. 37.)* assert that such an oath is not a true oath: both because it wants the necessary conditions to the nature of a promissory oath, such as is the intention binding one's self; and because an oath follows the nature the promise which it confirms, as is certain *ap Bus. n. 280. cum Less. Bon. etc.* But a promise made without such a mind is not, indeed, a promise but simply proposed; therefore, the promises being evanescent, the oath is also such, and is considered as made withoul the mind of swearing, which certainly, as we have seen, is null and void. But if no oath exists, there is no obligation of fulfilling that oath."

---

[2] R.P. Blakeney, *Extracts Translated from the Moral Theology* (1852), p. 130.

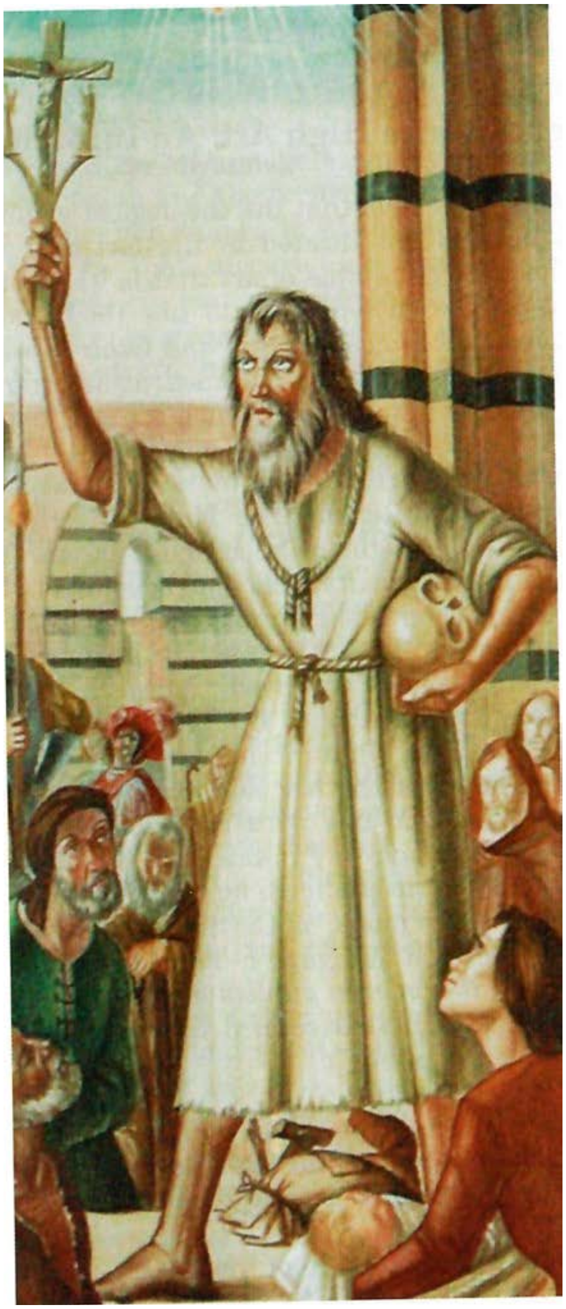

The Catholic lay preacher, Brandano da Petroio (1486-1554), scourge of the occult Church of Rome.

[Page 356 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

Chapter IX

Renaissance High Art: An Initiation

Some aesthetes believe that the theological abominations of the Renaissance era are vitiated by the fact that it nurtured and played host to the temple of art that is its most renowned achievement. In the introduction to his 1964 translation of Charles Baudelaire's *Flowers of Evil and Other Works,* Wallace Fowlie wrote of Plato’s doctrine in *Phaedrus* according to which “beauty is a mark left on the soul which the soul never loses no matter how low it may sink.” This is a doctrine of the Kabbalah as it was visually imparted to the masses for the first time in Christendom through Renaissance High Art. Here we have Plato vs. Jesus, who taught no such abomination. If the spirit of a man sinks into depravity, it is not redeemed by possessing “beauty.” Transgression of the laws of God removes true beauty from within ourselves. To say that beauty is impervious to the effects of depravity is itself depraved.

What passes for “Catholic art” in the Renaissance by Michelangelo, Botticelli, Pintoricchio and others, is part of a disguise at the heart of the Neoplatonic attitude of contempt for the common man, in line with the words of Horace, “*Odi profanum vulgus et arceo*” (“I hate and avoid the profane crowd”). The common people have no right to the truth, which is reserved for the elite alone, as Giovanni Pico della Mirandola stated, *“Sicut secretam Magiam a nobis primum ex Orphei hymnis elicitam, fas non et in publicum explicare”* (“Just as the secret magic that we first described from Orpheus’ hymns is not to be explained in public”).

> “Michelangelo’s works were indeed of pagan inspiration and like other masterpieces of the Renaissance were designed specially for initiates into pagan theology and Neoplatonic thought.”[1]

Michelangelo was a creature of the Medici. He lived for two years (1490-1491) in the palace of Lorenzo de’ Medici where the frequent visitors and sometime guests were Father Marsilio Ficino and Giovanni Pico. “...in the years after Michelangelo’s return to Florence in 1516 he was closely involved in the Neoplatonic circle of Ficino’s pupil and philosophical heir, Francesco da Diacetto.” [2]

Giovanni Pico della Mirandola is synonymous with religious syncretism, Kabbalah and the occult secrecy and duplicity that inspired Sebastino del Piombo in his letter to Michelangelo of July 17, 1533. In that missive, he urged Michelangelo to disguise Ganymede [3] in his fresco for the Medici chapel, as St. John the Revelator, by giving Ganymede a halo.

---

[1] Edith Balas, *Michelangelo’s Medici Chapel* (1995), p. 33.

[2] Ibid., p. 28.

[3] In mythology, Ganymede is the object of the unrequited homosexual desire of the god Zeus. Ganymede is depicted in Attic vase painting and Hellenistic and ancient Roman art as naked and comely.

Analyzing this epoch's art, Edgar Wind writes that, "...in the study of the Renaissance mysteries... it may help to remove the veil of obscurity which not only distance in time... but a deliberate obliqueness in the use of metaphor, has spread over some of the greatest Renaissance paintings. *They were designed for initiates; hence they require an initiation."* [4]

When we consider that Michelangelo's Sistine Chapel [5] is regarded as one of the holiest sanctuaries in Christendom, we begin to grasp the depth of human credulity. The Sistine Chapel is the realm of Plato; not Jesus Christ. Our Lord was not a nude, despite the lustful allure of the several revolting depictions of Him hanging virtually nude on the Cross, which we encounter in "Catholic" art after the Middle Ages and which is by no means limited to the Renaissance.

Neither were the apostles, disciples or the holy women who followed Him naked, yet the Church of Rome's Sistine Chapel consists of a riot of nudity which marks one of the most startling departures from the true Church of the previous millennium.

In the western occult imperium there are two phases of time: the time of keeping secrets and the time of revealing them. The former is father to the latter. The Neoplatonist Denys, or Pseudo-Dionysius, (mistaken, as we have noted, for Dionysius the Areopagite, who was the contemporary of St. Paul), described the stages to be followed in the crucible of change: "...the theological tradition is double, being on the one hand a tradition which is not expressed in words and which is mystical, and on the other hand, a tradition which makes manifest and is better known." [6]

First, the secret gnosis takes deep root, grows and flourishes and hence, must not be made known to the masses of the people of God. Giovanni Pico was adamant about the requirement for absolute secrecy for the ideology, designs and activities of his own work and that of his co-conspirators, lest the still-orthodox Catholic people discover it and demand its extirpation, or effect that extirpation themselves through an uprising. This secrecy was not intended to be perpetual, however. The Renaissance art under consideration, like Renaissance pagan syncretism itself, appears to function as a time capsule consisting of a once-and-future revelation: once for the insiders at the top of the pyramid of gnosis, and then in the future, when the *vulgus* have been so thoroughly processed that the truth “which makes manifest” can be revealed to them without risk of revolt. It seems that this is the stage in which we find ourselves in the twenty-first century, when what would have shocked and enraged our ancestors elicits barely a shrug now.

---

[4] Edgar Wind, *Pagan Mysteries in the Renaissance* (Norton, 1968), p. 15; emphasis supplied.

[5] The vault of the Sistine Chapel was commissioned by Pope Julius II. Michelangelo crafted the work from 1508-1512. "The Last Judgment" was commissioned by Medici Pope Clement VII in 1534 and supported by Pope Paul III after Clement's death. Michelangelo completed it in 1541.

[6] Pauline Moffit Watts, "Pseudo-Dionysius the Areopagite and Three Renaissance Neoplatonists: Cusanus, Ficino and Pico," in *Supplementum Festivum,* p. 28.

There were intermediate Thermidorian stages as well. Michelangelo’s festival of pagan nudity in the Sistine Chapel was unalloyed for as long as was necessary to firmly initiate the Catholic hierarchy in the pagan ethos. When the arcane ideology had taken complete root and before the Catholic masses could be stirred to wrath by the buck-naked blasphemy, a staged reaction was brought into play by the Vatican masters of psychological warfare. They costumed their “conservative reaction” in inquisitorial habiliments, for the benefit of the uninitiated. Under Paul IV the Roman Inquisition proceeded to denounce nudity in sacred art. Soon after Michelangelo’s death in 1564, the genitals of the figures in his “Last Judgment” were daubed over by *braghettoni* (breeches-painters). Later, nudity in sacred places would reappear by papal permission. Situation ethics harnessed to the opportunistic requirements of the Church of Rome as it processed the captive minds of “the Faithful,” waxed and waned between stringency and laxity, on the model of the *zugot* pairs in Phariseeism, as personified by Shammai, the strict Pharisee, and Hillel, the lenient one. At any given time after the fourteenth century, within Renaissance parameters and without, one would encounter a Pope Shammai or a Pope Hillel, according to the requirements of their *zeitgeist* god.

Though there were foreshadowings in other pontificates, in the modern era John Paul II was the first openly Neoplatonic-Hermetic pontiff, as his embrace of Talmudic-Judaism in the synagogue in Rome, voodoo in Benin, Islam’s Koran, the congress of world religions at Assisi and the Aztec rites during his pilgrimage to Mexico, testify. He instituted the *open fulfillment* of the mandate of Pope Alexander VI and Giovanni Pico della Mirandola. There was little that was disguised or ambiguous about this alleged saint’s transgressions against the First Commandment.

What had been performed under the sign of the witch-goddess Isis by the popes in secret, in the six ritual rooms known as the “Borgia Apartment” of the Vatican Palace—as executed by Bernardino di Betto (“Benedetto”), who signed his works “Pintoricchio” (or “Pinturicchio, i.e “little painter”), and designed by Alexander VI, together with Annio da Viterbo, Paolo Cortesi and the Protonotary Apostolic, Francesco Colonna —was performed in the open air as televised in Mexico City in the second year of the second millennium:

“To this day, I recall being in Mexico City with John Paul II in 2002 for the canonization Mass of Juan Diego, and watching a female Mexican shaman perform a dancing purification ritual on the pontiff with a bit of shrubbery during the Mass —in effect, the witch doctor exorcised John Paul.” [7]

[7] John J. Allen Jr., “New Parlor Game,” Oct. 28, 2016, cruxnow.com

The pope’s Master of Liturgical Ceremonies from 1987 to 2007 was Italian Archbishop Piero Marini who spoke to the press about this pontifical Aztec witch doctor ceremony: “Marini later explained that the ritual is part of traditional Mexican religiosity, arguing there’s a time-honored thrust in Christianity to ‘baptize’ such expressions of popular faith.” [8]

[8] Ibid. In October, 2016, Pope Francis called Archbishop Marini out of semi-retirement and appointed him to Rome’s Congregation for Divine Worship (CDW).

This is the *prisca theologia* in the raw, without embellishment, or even the familiar duplicitous rhetoric. The pope’s Master of Liturgical Ceremonies terms witchcraft, “traditional Mexican religiosity” and “popular faith,” and he calls the praxis of Neoplatonic-Hermeticism, “a time-honored thrust in Christianity.” The pontiff who publicly took part in this traffic with demons was not excommunicated or otherwise deposed. He was canonized a saint of the Catholic Church. “Conservative” Catholics who look to his pontificate with profound nostalgia refer to him as “John Paul the Great.”

These kinds of rites are for initiates, but the fact that they were performed before the eyes of the entire Catholic world in the twenty-first century demonstrates the success of the occult transmutation process in that *we are all initiates now.* How was this virtuoso psychological and spiritual coup set into motion? Through the cultivation, more than five hundred years earlier, of absolute secrecy and plausible denial in service to the alchemical transformation of the traditional theology of Catholicism into the futuristic Church of Rome’s modernist pagan syncretism, propelled by the exegetical principles of rabbinic Oral Law dogma. For direction we turn to the youthful Michelangelo’s Medici-supported mentor:

“Pico della Mirandola planned to write a book on the secret nature of pagan myths which was to bear the title *Poetica theologia*. ‘It was the opinion of the ancient theologians,’ he said in his Commentary on Benivieni’s *Canzona d’amore,* ‘that divine subjects and the secret Mysteries must not be rashly divulged... if committed to writing at all, must be covered with enigmatic veils and poetic dissimulation... How that was done... by Latin and Greek poets we shall explain in the book of our Poetic Theology.’

“Although the book has not survived (assuming that it was written), the method employed by Pico, as well as some of his conclusions, can be inferred from his other works. He held that pagan religions, without exception, had used a ‘hieroglyphic’ imagery; that they had concealed their revelations in myths and fables which were designed to distract the attention of the multitude, and so protect the divine secrets from profanation: ‘showing only the crust of the mysteries to the vulgar, while reserving the marrow of the true sense for higher and more perfect spirits.’

“As an example, Pico quoted the Orphic Hymns; for he supposed that Orpheus had concealed in them a religious revelation which he wished to be understood only by a small sect of initiates: ‘In the manner of the ancient theologians, Orpheus interwove the mysteries of his doctrines with the texture of fables and covered them with a poetic veil, in order that anyone reading his hymns would think them to contain nothing but the sheerest tales and trifles.’ But having studied Plato, Plotinus, and Proclus with care, Pico felt certain that these philosophers had been initiated into the mysteries of Orpheus, and he proposed with their help to penetrate the arcana of the Orphic Hymns.

“*In praising the wisdom of such religious disguises,* Pico claimed that the pagan tradition had a virtue in common with the Bible: there were Hebrew mysteries as well as pagan. The book of Exodus, for example, recorded that on two occasions Moses had spent forty days on Mount Sinai for the purpose of receiving the tablets of the Law. Since it would be absurd to suppose that in each of these instances God needed forty days to hand Moses two tablets inscribed with ten commandments and accompanied by a series of liturgical rules, it was evident that God had conversed with Moses on further matters, and had told him innumerable divine secrets that were not to be written down. These were transmitted among the rabbis by an oral tradition known as Cabala (in which the theory of the *sefiroth* and the absconded God resembled the Neoplatonic emanations and the ‘One beyond Being’). In relation to the written law of the Old Testament, the Cabala was thought by Pico to hold the same position as Orphic secrets held in relation to pagan myths. The biblical text was the crust, the Cabala the marrow.

“The law was given to the many, but its spiritual understanding to only a few. With an unanswerable oratorical gesture Pico pointed to ‘the tailors, cooks, butchers, shepherds, servants, maids, to all of whom the written law was given. Would these have been able to carry the burden of the entire

Mosaic or divine understanding? [9]

“Moses, however, on the height of the mountain, comparable to that mountain on which the Lord often spoke to his Disciples, was so illumined by the rays of the divine sun that his whole face shone in a miraculous manner; but because the people with their dim and owlish eyes could not bear the light, he addressed them with his face veiled.

“And the same device, Pico observed, was also used by Christ. ‘Jesus Christ, *imago substantiae Dei*, did not write the gospel but preached it.’ To the common people he spoke in parables, but to a few disciples he explained more directly the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven. ‘Origen wrote that Jesus Christ revealed many mysteries to his disciples which they did not wish to put down in writing, but communicated only by word of mouth to those whom they regarded as worthy. And Pico added that this was ‘confirmed by Dionysius the Areopagite’, that is by the Athenian disciple of St. Paul (Acts xvii, 34), to whom a series of mystical Neoplatonic writings, apparently composed in the fifth century A.D. were piously ascribed by their anonymous author. Dionysius was assumed to have received his mystical initiation directly from St. Paul, again in a secret and purely oral manner; but like the late Cabalists and the Platonic heirs of Orpheus, he—or the late scribe whom he inspired—committed the laudable indiscretion of entrusting the revelation to paper. Without so remarkably universal a breach of etiquette, it might have been difficult for the Renaissance to revive the Orphic, Mosaic, and Pauline secrets.

“In comparing the mysteries to each other, Pico discovered between them an unsuspected affinity. In outward dogma, reconciliation would not seem possible between the pagan, Hebrew, and Christian theologies, each committed to a different revelation; but if the nature of the pagan gods were understood in the mystical sense of the Orphic Platonists, and the nature of the Mosaic Law in the hidden sense of the Cabala, and if the nature of Christian Grace were unfolded in the fullness of the secrets which St Paul had revealed to Dionysius the Areopagite, it would be found that these theologies differed not at all in substance but only in name. A philosophy of tolerance was accordingly worked out in the form of a hidden concordance...” [10]

---

[9] This is the dichotomy which the Pharisees delineated in their criticism of Jesus: that He was putting the ignorant Jewish masses, the bumpkin *am ha’aretz*, on the same level as the elite Jews (John 7:48-49). All that’s missing from Pico’s list of dim-witted “tailors, cooks, butchers, shepherds, servants, maids” are *carpenters.* Compare Pico’s words with those of the English Protestant reformer William Tyndale, who, while at Little Sodbury Manor, stated to a fellow priest, that he would “make a boy who drives the plough know more of Scripture than the priest himself.” Quite the opposite of their publicly stated intentions of higher liberation for all humanity, Rome’s occult workers of iniquity establish a duality of “higher and more perfect spirits,” contrasted with those who supposedly have lesser ones.

[10] Wind, op. cit., pp. 17-21.

Four hundred years after Giovanni Pico della Mirandola’s modernizing theology was in the process of successfully infiltrating and subverting the hierarchy of the Catholic Church, Pope Pius X declared, “Here it is well to note at once that, given this doctrine of experience united with that of symbolism, every religion, even that of paganism, must be held to be true. What is to prevent such experiences from being found in any religion? In fact, that they are so is maintained by not a few... Modernists do not deny, but actually maintain, some confusedly, others frankly, that all religions are true. That they cannot feel otherwise is obvious. For on what ground, according to their theories, could falsity be predicated of any religion whatsoever?” [11]

[11] *Pascendi Dominici Gregis: On the Doctrine of the Modernists,* Encyclical of Pope Pius X, September 8, 1907.

Why did Pius X fail in his stated goal of defeating the modernist infiltration of the Church? First, because he was himself a modernist, perpetuating the permission for profit on loans and doing absolutely nothing to restore the immemorial dogma forbidding usury. (“Not to oppose erroneous doctrine is to approve of it.” Pope Innocent III). Second, because the “holy popes” of the supposed “reaction” (Leo XIII, Pius IX and Pius X), left untouched and intact the Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Kabbalist conspiracy inside the Church.

Clark Trinkaus: “...the underlying vision of reality in the modern age... originates with Renaissance Hermetism, that is the insights based on the Ancient Philosophy (*Prisca theologia*) introduced into European philosophy and theology by Marsilio Ficino in his *Heavenly Gathered Life (De vita coelitus comparanda*) and by Giovanni Pico della Mirandola in his *Oration on Human Dignity (Oratio de hominis dignitate)* ...”

Tutoring Giovanni Pico in Medici Florence was his preceptor, Rev. Fr. Ficino: “Though Pico used the method of mystical reduction for a more radical purpose than Ficino, there can be little doubt that he had it from his teacher. To understand a classical author ‘deeply,’ Ficino would always turn to a Hellenistic commentary. Even Plato, to whose translation and exposition the major part of his life was devoted, he read with the eyes of Plotinus, in whom he discovered ‘an inspiration no less noble but occasionally more profound...

His commentary on Plato's *Symposium* was largely derived, as he himself admitted, from the sixth book of the first *Ennead;* and in preparing his readers for the study of Plotinus he paraphrased the relation of this profounder Platonist to Plato by alluding to the descent of the Holy Ghost during the baptism of Christ (Luke 3:22): 'And you may think that Plato himself spoke thus to Plotinus: 'Thou art my beloved son; in thee I am well pleased.' To make Plato appear as God the Father giving his blessing to Plotinus as God the Son is to remove Plato to the inhuman heights of the Almighty, from which Plotinus descends as a philosophical redeemer, a Christ of the Platonic mysteries. That Ficino sensed no blasphemy in the metaphor shows to what extent Christian and Platonic sources of revelation were regarded as concordant and interchangeable." [12]

[12] Ibid., pp. 23-24.

Pope Paul III "appointed Michelangelo chief architect, sculptor and painter at the Vatican. The instrument is dated September 1, 1535, and the terms with which it describes the master's eminence in the three arts are highly flattering. Allusion is directly made to the fresco of the Last Judgment, which may therefore have begun about this date. Michelangelo was enrolled as a member of the Pontifical household with a permanent pension of 1200 golden crowns..." [13]

[13] John Addington Symonds, *The Life of Michelangelo Buonarroti* (1899), vol. 2, pp. 40-41.

After the three hundred ninety figures of "The Last

Judgment" were painted, Biagio da Cesena recoiled from it in horror, denouncing it as "disgraceful that in so sacred a place there should have been depicted all those nude figures, exposing themselves so shamefully." Cesena added that the fresco was more appropriate "for the public baths and taverns," than the pope's chapel. Upon learning of Cesena remarks, the vengeful Michelangelo altered the "The Last Judgment" to add figure 391: Cesena himself. Michelangelo placed him in hell and painted him pornographically: with the ears of a donkey and with a snake holding the tip of Cesena's penis in its mouth. According to a contemporary, Ludovico Domenichi, when Cesena protested this pornographic slander to the Pope, Paul III lamely replied that his "jurisdiction does not extend to hell," and that the portrait would remain on the wall of the Sistine Chapel before which the Mass was offered.

The other notable contemporary jeremiad raised in protest of Michelangelo's nude "Christianity" in the Sistine Chapel, was put forth by the Venetian poet Pietro Aretino (1492-1557), whose character has been impugned by Michelangelo's defenders. [14]

Whatever the serious flaws in his own poetic expression however (and there were many), Aretino’s observations in his letter to Michelangelo [15] were in fidelity with a thousand years of pre-Renaissance, Bible-centered Catholicism:

“To the Great Michelangelo Buonarroti in Rome

“Sir, When I inspected the complete sketch of the whole of your *Last Judgment,* I arrived at recognizing the eminent graciousness of Raffaello [16] in its agreeable beauty of invention. Meanwhile, as a baptized Christian, I blush before the license, so forbidden to man’s intellect, which you have used in expressing ideas connected with the highest aims and final ends to which our faith aspires. So, then, that Michelangelo stupendous in his fame, that Michelangelo renowned for prudence, that Michelangelo whom all admire, has chosen to display to the whole world an impiety of irreligion only equalled by the perfection of his painting!

“Is it possible that you, who, since you are divine, do not condescend to consort with human beings, have done this in the greatest temple built to God, upon the highest altar raised to Christ, in the most sacred chapel upon the earth, where the mighty hinges of the Church, the venerable priests of our religion, the Vicar of Christ, with solemn ceremonies and holy prayers, confess, contemplate and adore his body, his blood, and his flesh?

“If it were not infamous to introduce the comparison, I would plume myself upon my discretion when I wrote *La Nanna.* I would demonstrate the superiority of my prudent reserve to your immodesty, seeing that I, while handling themes lascivious and immodest, use language comely and

---

[14] Aretino was certainly an outrageous figure whose command of the language sometimes entailed lubricious verse-satire at the expense of Leo X and Neoplatonic-Hermeticism’s grandiose conceits. His reputation has been so thoroughly blackened by the malignant babble of his enemies however, that one should approach their accounts of him with caution. Some of his writings were undoubtedly obscene, but Aretino penned them for the secular world, never for inclusion in a church setting. He excused the nudity of Michelangelo’s statue *David,* because it was exhibited in a public square, and not in the sacred sanctuary of a Catholic Church. His objection was to extravagant nudity *in holy places,* and despite his own numerous personal sins and failings, his critique in this regard was valid.

[15] Cf. Erica Tietze-Conrat, “Neglected Contemporary Sources Related to Michelangelo,” in *Art Bulletin,* June 1943. The text of Aretino’s letter was translated and published by John Addington Symonds, op. cit., pp. 51-55.

[16] Raffaello Sanzio (1483-1520), known to posterity as the painter, “Raphael.”

decorous, speak in terms beyond reproach and inoffensive to chaste ears. You, on the contrary, presenting so awful a subject, exhibit saints and angels, these without earthly decency, and those without celestial honors.

“The pagans when they made statues I not say of Diana who is clothed, but of naked Venus, made them cover with their hand the parts which should not be seen. And here there comes a Christian who, because he rates art higher than faith, deems a royal spectacle martyrs and virgins in improper attitudes, men dragged down by their genitals, things in front of which brothels would shut their eyes in order not to see them. Your art would be at home in some voluptuous bathhouse, certainly not in the highest chapel of the world.

“Less criminal were it if you were an infidel, than, being a believer, thus to sap the faith of others. Up to the present time the splendor of such audacious marvels has not gone unpunished; for their very excellence is the death of your good name. Restore it to good repute by turning the indecent parts of the damned to flames, and those of the blessed to sunbeams; or imitate the modesty of Florence, who hides your David’s shame beneath some gilded leaves. And yet that statue is exposed upon a public square, not in a consecrated chapel.

“As I wish that God may pardon you, I do not write this out of any resentment.” [17]

“*Your art would be at home in some voluptuous bathhouse, certainly not in the highest chapel of the world.*” Pietro Aretino’s righteous indignation would be quite out of place among “conservative” and “traditional” Catholics, who esteem Michelangelo’s Sistine Chapel as one of the most piety-inducing sacred spaces in Western civilization. People are so far gone into the diabolic that they have lost their ability to delineate right from wrong.

It becomes even more demented for Michelangelo’s defenders to attempt to credibly uphold his supposed “Catholic faith,” when we examine his disgusting statue of a nude Jesus Christ, sculpted with enlarged testicles, which was successfully hidden from sight from the post-Renaissance era until recently. One glance at this supposedly reverent sacred art object crafted by Michelangelo, and the true Christian perceives that it is a Talmudic travesty of the image of the Son of God, and stands as evidence of the identity of the occult Catholic-impersonators who usurped the Petrine Office and patronized Michelangelo, instead of banishing him to the Arctic wastelands after sledgehammering his porn-Christ. Like the Isis worship in the six rooms of the papal palace, the candle-lit obscenities conducted by the hierarchy of the Church of Rome before this striptease Jesus, are from hell.

---

[17] The generally accepted date for the letter is November, 1545.

Rome's eventual reaction against Michelangelo and the Renaissance nudes was, as we have said, liminal and staged, for pragmatic reasons. The ascendance of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic conspiracy required the fixing of its pagan canon in the Sistine Chapel above all other sacred spaces. Once elite Catholic percipients had been conditioned and processed in its presence, and *after* their initiation was successfully concluded, then a reaction was allowed to exert itself, until what was a time capsule containing the Neoplatonic-Hermetic spiritual virus, was reopened on cue. That point was reached in a post-Vatican II pontificate, as confessed in 2014, by Antonio Paolucci, Director of the Vatican Museums, when he conceded that, "the process of obscuring the Theology of the Body," came to end with the pontificate of Pope St. John Paul II, and his successors. Director Paolucci freely and openly articulates the Renaissance gnosis of the Church of Rome's pagan theology of sacred nudity:

"And there is Michelangelo in the Sistine Chapel... There are the *Ignudi*—the twenty male nudes of the ceiling, 'the most beautiful positions which they variously take on, seated and torisoned in their movements,' as (Giorgio) Vasari wrote and who in the physical magnificence of the male bodies, called upon to glorify the papal oak, saw a sort of homage to the golden age of Pope Julius II. Those young bodies that attempt to take on the most diverse postures... in the anatomies that light and shade modulate from the milky lightness to the lit toes of bronze, there is all of Michelanglo's passionate love for the supreme beauty of the naked male body...

"As regards the 'Last Judgment,' this immense gathering of nudes, a true 'theology of the body'... above all the nudes... all of those breasts, buttocks and sexual organs exhibited in the Chapel of the pope... the Catholic Church... has allowed its artists to narrate the Beauty which is the shadow of God on earth, also by way of the representation of the naked human body." [18]

Would it be far-fetched to note the homoerotic dimension to the preceding male nude celebration?

Would it be irreverent to ask what makes human nudity in the streets outside the Sistine Chapel morally wrong, while representations of that nudity inside the holy precinct where the Sacrifice of Jesus on Calvary is said to be re-enacted in the Mass, is considered a theological virtue?

In the publication of the Pontifical Institute of John Paul II, A *Body for Glory: Theology of the Body in the Papal Collections,* it is stated on p. 13, "It was Pope John Paul II who described the Sistine Chapel as the sanctuary of the Theology of the Body." This "theology" was reaffirmed by Pope Benedict XVI in his address in the Sistine Chapel, "Meeting with Artists," November 21, 2009.

---

[18] Antonio Paolucci, *A Body for Glory: Theology of the Body in the Papal Collections* (Rome: Pontifico Istituto Giovanni Paolo II, 2014), pp. 7-9.

"...the significance of Hermes for the Renaissance Christian could not have been announced more triumphantly than by his depiction in marble at the very threshold of the great cathedral in Siena, in 1482." [19]

[19] Angela Voss, ed., *Marsilio Ficino* (2006), p. 16.

In the order of egregious, pagan Church of Rome Renaissance art, after the Sistine Chapel and Alexander VI's papal apartment, comes the Siena Cathedral, dating from the thirteenth century. The focus of our study is not the medieval part of the cathedral, but the *Renaissance-era* marble pavement which was installed mostly in the fifteenth century. Knowing that St. Augustine had denounced him as an idolater and with no possible excuse of ignorance, the Catholic hierarchy nevertheless proceeded to commission in 1488 in the Siena Cathedral, before the arches of the nave, an exquisitely beautiful, multi-colored marble glorification of "Hermes Trismegistus," by Giovanni di Stefano. This magnificent image of the magician Hermes presides over the entrance to the Cathedral of Siena, an edifice which is supposed to be a temple of the God of Israel.

In a visual age where texts did not appeal to the people as effectively as images, it was this mosaic which had the distinction of manifesting and spreading the cult of Hermes to the laity not in a public square, but in the holy precinct of yet another sacred space where the Mass was offered.

"...in front of the central doorway, where a panel invites the visitor to enter 'chastely into this temple of chastity, dedicated to the Virgin,' *Hermes Trismegistus* is portrayed. As the scroll beneath the imposing figure explains, he was traditionally considered to be a contemporary of Moses. The learned Egyptian, whose doctrine the Humanists preached and studied, rests his hand upon a tablet supported by two sphynxes and offers a book to two figures on his right. They accept it,

respectfully. Inscribed on the tablet is a sentence attributed to *Poimandres* (The Shepherds of Men), a text supposedly authored by Trismegistus:

“Deus omnium creator secum Deum fecit visibilem et hunc fecit primum et solum quo oblectatus est et valde amavit proprium Filium qui appellatur Sanctum Verbum,’ [20]

[20] “God, the creator of all, made a visible God to be with Him, and He made Him first and only; He took delight in Him and loved Him greatly as His own Son, who is called the Holy Word.”

while the pages of the open book read: “*Suscipio licteras et leges Egiptiu.”* [21]

[21] “Receive Egyptians the laws and letters” (intended as an invocation).

The reference to Egypt, the ancient seat of wisdom, which the two sphynxes also seem to symbolize, is clear. But Egyptian wisdom, entrusted to the peoples of the East and the West, is inseparable from its divine origin (‘*Sanctum Verbum*’). The inscription on the right refers to the Creation...” [22]

[22] Bruno Santi, *The Marble Pavement of the Cathedral of Siena* (1993), p. 13.

“As we enter the church and approach the ancient god, a plague warns us to ‘enter with pure heart this purest temple of the Virgin.’ Why did the Virgin open her chaste temple to a pagan deity? Can a Christian heart remain pure in the presence of a god whose temple houses demon-souled statues that lived and spoke and worked wonders?” [23]

[23] Brian P. Copenhaver, “Hermes Theologus: The Sienese Mercury and Ficino’s Hermetic Demons,” in *Humanity and Divinity in Renaissance and Reformation* (1993), p. 152.

We find the answer by recourse to our time machine: it is what is known colloquially in the twenty-first century as the “politically correct” response, yet it was the response in 1488 as well: the image of Hermes is appropriate for the cathedral because he is a heathen prophet of Christianity and consequently in the category of pious theology, not diabolic sorcery; that was the insinuation more than five hundred years ago and today it is the openly syncretic explanation. It is a theology alright, but not that of the Church of Christ or of St. Augustine. The defiance is unmistakable.

Augustine “condemned Hermes for being ‘friendly to the tricks of demons’ even while predicting the fall of Egyptian demonolatry before the irresistible rise of the new faith. He found Hermes especially perverse for having mourned the collapse of the old religion founded on fraud.” [24]

[24] Ibid., p. 159.

“Hermes... dominates the physical and ideal space of the floor mosaic in the cathedral of Siena, where the sibyls and Hermes himself, as their scrolls show, are clearly connected to the Florentine rebirth of ancient magic and pious theology." [25]

[25] Paola Zambelli, *White Magic, Black Magic,* op. cit., p. 72.

Fraud was the order of the day in Renaissance ecclesiastical art: magnificent beauty married to the infernal.

[Page 372 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

Chapter X

The Grand Egyptian Lodge of Vatican City

"Our records inform us that the usages and customs of (Free)masons have ever corresponded with those of the Egyptian philosophers, to which they bear a near affinity." [1]

[1] Webb was Grand Master of the Masonic Grand Lodge of Rhode Island.

Thomas Smith Webb, *The Freemason's Monitor* (1818)

"To come again on Rome... (t)he narrow streets, devoid of footways, and choked, in every obscure corner, by heaps of dunghill-rubbish, contrast so strongly, in their cramped dimensions, and their filth and darkness, with the broad square before some haughty church: in the center of which, a hieroglyphic-covered obelisk, brought from Egypt in the days of the Emperors, looks strangely on the foreign scene about it... It is stranger still, to see how many ruins of the old mythology: how many fragments of obsolete legend and observance, have been incorporated into the worship of Christian altars here; and how, in numberless respects, the false faith and the true are fused into a monstrous union."

Charles Dickens, *Pictures from Italy* (1846)

"I saw the horror and unwholesome antiquity of Egypt, and the grisly alliance it has always had with the tombs and temples of the dead... offering unnameable sacrifices to indescribable gods... And behind it all I saw the ineffable malignity of primordial necromancy..."

H.P. Lovecraft, *Under the Pyramids* (1924)

"...they are your people and your heritage whom you brought out of Egypt, that iron furnace." I Kings 8:51

When the Fifth Dynasty obelisk which Caligula erected in Rome, circa 40 A.D., was installed in St. Peter's Square in 1586 by Pope Sixtus V, it marked the transformation of the Vicar of Christ into the Pharaoh of the world. The obelisk is symbolic of the reigning occult power as that power is conveyed in the

phallic cult-image. "In Middle Egyptian, obelisks are *thn*; the pyramidion is *bnbn*. Both may be taken to describe the shape of the monument, but they also imply regeneration through sexual action, alluding to the act of 'rising' or becoming erect'... The Egyptian monuments employed this common form in part because it was efficacious, suitable to their roles as cult objects." [2]

[2] Molly Swetnam-Burland, *Egypt in Italy: Visions of Egypt in Roman Imperial Culture* (2015), p. 69. One of the most ominous depictions of an obelisk in cinema is in the 1981 film, "Clash of the Titans," where an obelisk is shown standing sentry at the entrance to the abode of the Stygian witches.

Representations of the male genital organ in erection are common to pagan religions from Sumer and Egypt onward. "Numerous Sanskrit texts and ancient sculptures such as the Gudimallam lingam from the third century B.C. define this image unequivocally as an iconic representation of the male sexual organ in erection, in particular as the erect phallus of the god Shiva." [3]

[3] Wendy Doninger, *The Hindus* (2009), p. 22.

A Renaissance illustration depicts Domenico Fontana from *Della transportatione dell'obelisco vaticano et delle fabriche di Nostro Signore papa Sisto V.* [4]

[4] Though the book is designated as "volume one," it was the only volume printed.

Published in 1590, this book describes one of the most impressive engineering feats of the early modern world, Fontana's most famous undertaking, the removal of the Egyptian obelisk (brought to Rome in the first century A.D.), weighing 327 tons, from its place in the circus of the Vatican, and its subsequent erection 275 yards from its old position, at the new one in front of the basilica in the Square of St. Peter's. This engineering achievement took the concerted effort of 900 men, 75 horses and countless pulleys and yards of rope. Fontana gives a detailed account in *Della transportatione dell'obelisco Vaticano e delle fabriche di Sisto V.* A large-format folio, the book contains dozens of full-page plates depicting the engineering processes involved in moving the obelisk. The stunning detail of these drawings invite careful perusal. Many of the images combine detailed architectural depictions with pagan allegorical and mythical figures such as *"Concordia"* and *"Firmitas" who preside over the engineers' labor.*

It is the gravitational pull of consensus reality which has impaired the vision of the “Faithful” and kept them from a shock of recognition at the sight of the dull totem of pagan Egypt that dominates the square named for Jesus Christ’s chief apostle. As part of the majestically clever disinformation saga of the occult Church, its mentally trapped disciples have been led to believe that because the giant obelisk has a tiny cross at the top, that the thing is “a glorious symbol of the defeat of the pagan world by the Cross.”

If a giant swastika, 88 feet tall, were placed in St. Peter’s Square, with a tiny cross atop it, would people accept the cover story that it was the symbol of Catholicism’s supremacy over Nazism? One can hardly glimpse the cross on the top of the obelisk. The overwhelming symbolic reality of the obelisk is the power of the massive iconic imagery of Pharaonic Egypt which dominates St. Peter’s Square, where one would expect to find a huge Catholic crucifix, or statuary depicting with the resplendence typical of the astonishing craftsmanship of the sculptors of the Italian Renaissance, the signal event of the cosmos, Jesus Christ’s Resurrection, and His victory over the power of death itself.

But those Christian images are not at all dominant amid Gian Lorenzo Bernini’s ellipsoid piazza, which has come to be known as “Bernini’s Colonnade,” and where towers at the center of it the phallic emblem of pharaonic power, as an obelisk also dominates Washington D.C., and stands as well in the financial capitals of New York and London: all of these centers of power are symbolically connected through the obelisks.

Occult ceremonies have been enacted by Catholics (or rather pseudo-Catholics), in the misnamed “St. Peter’s Square.” Among the strangest is the mysterious ritual homosexual rape of an unnamed *un puto* (boy), who was the godson of Cardinal Francesco Albizzi. This was a violent rape. It occurred in December, 1670, and it left the sodomized child with several fractured bones. It seems that it was intended that he should have died, but he survived his injuries and identified his attacker as Bernini’s own brother, Luigi.

Was it the case that Cardinal Albizzi’s nephew was selected as a *giovane agnello di Dio* (little lamb of God), intended as a sacrifice to Satan through an ignominious and torturous death? What we know for certain is that Luigi Bernini sodomized the boy beneath the famed statue of Constantine which had been sculpted by his brother, within his brother’s “Colonnade,” and in the shadow of the obelisk. We also know that Luigi Bernini was found, but never brought to trial. This rapist, who had nearly killed the boy, suffered no punishment other than a token “fine.”

The *Statuta almae urbis Romae* (vol. ii, section 49) prescribed death by fire *in all cases* where “the unspeakable crime of sodomy” had been committed. But the law did not apply to Bernini. Why? By way of a motive, a twenty-first century academic explains that "Luigi must have simply been crazed by sexual frenzy." Perhaps, but that begs the question of how his savage, open-air crime within the sacred precinct of the Vatican, happened to be excused by Pope Clement X, Cardinal Albizzi and the victim's family and extended clan.

Returning to the obelisk itself, the feat of moving it from its old Roman location since the days of the Caesars, to its new location at the heart of St. Peter's Square, was of one enormous expense and effort. Many contemporary engineers doubted that it could be achieved without death and injury to the regiment of workers that would be required, and destruction to the obelisk, yet the monumental task was obsessively pursued on a tight schedule, as if it were a matter of life and death.

Bern Dibner, the eminent historian of science and technology, has written the most comprehensive study in English of how the thing was done and at what expense in treasure and effort. In his paper, *Moving the Obelisks* [5] we read, "Many of these ancient monoliths, taken from Egypt as trophies of conquest and symbols of power through the efforts of extraordinary human labor and engineering ingenuity, were *re-established in the capitals and seats of empire that also inherited Egypt's burden of civilization.*"

Is this what Christ's Church represents, ancient Egypt's "burden of civilization"? What was Pharaonic Egypt's *civilization,* if not the Satanism of Set/Shaitan (Satan)? [6]

[5] Bern Dibner, *Moving the Obelisks: A Chapter in Engineering in which the Vatican Obelisk in Rome in 1586 was Moved* (1952).

[6] "Shaitan... derives from the ancient Egyptian god Set... which blackens everything... Modern etymology regards *Sheitan,* or *Shaitan,* as an Arab word, possibly based on the Hebrew Satan..." (Bogdan and Starr, *Aleister Crowley and Western Esotericism* [2012], p. 194).

Inheriting "Egypt's burden of civilization"

Among the very first, prominent agents of the sexual revolution in the United States was Fahreda Mahzar, who, under the stage name "Little Egypt," belly-danced at the Chicago World's Fair ("World Columbian Exhibition") in 1893, violating obscenity laws and becoming a *cause celebré* for early sex activists such as Ida Craddock. "Little Egypt" is a slang term for the geographic region in the American Midwest containing many sites named after those in Pharaonic Egypt, such as Memphis in Tennessee, where the 'King of Rock and Roll' died and the 'Black King' (Rev. Martin Luther King Jr.) was murdered; and Cairo, Illinois where Abraham Lincoln confronted Stephen A. Douglas in fateful debates.

In America's Little Egypt region, the Mississippi River was equated in the minds of Freemasons with the Nile River, and it was in Little Egypt that these and other masons constructed obelisks and conducted processions, pilgrimages and rituals on the geomantic roads and waterways of an *America mystica* about which most Establishment historians are oblivious. With regard to the phenomenon of rock-and-roll (which was originally slang for the sex act), after the assassination of President John F. Kennedy, the binding of the nation's psychic wounds did not begin in earnest until a "rock and roll" band from England named the "Beatles" debuted on the nationally broadcast Ed Sullivan television program in February of 1964, telling America, "I want to hold your hand." The response from the nation was a level of popular hysteria so unprecedented it eventually led the band's leader, John Lennon to opine, "We're more popular than Jesus Christ." Those who believe that "rock music" is both an *excremental* as well as an elemental reversion to the primitive tom-tom rhythm of sub-Saharan Africa, may be interested to know that the "roll" portion of the Beatles "rock" refers to a *dung-roller.*

The Beatles rock band maintained that their name was coined in reference to the "beat" of their sound. It is worth noting however, that according to E.A. Wallis Budge, Keeper of Egyptian Antiquities at the British Museum from 1894 to 1924, "Scarab, or Scarabaeus, is the name given by Egyptologists to the myriads of models of a certain beetle, which are found in mummies and tombs, and in the ruins of temples and other buildings in Egypt... The beetle which was copied by the Egyptians in this manner... compose a very numerous group of dung-feeding Lamellicorns... A remarkable peculiarity exists in the structure and situation of the hind legs, which are placed so near the extremity of the body, and so far from each other, as to give the insect a most extraordinary appearance when walking. This peculiar formation is, nevertheless, particularly serviceable to its possessors in rolling balls of excrementitious matter in which they enclose their eggs... These balls are at first irregular and soft, but by degrees, and during the process of rolling along, become rounded and harder...

These maneuvers have for their object the burying of the balls in holes... and it is upon the dung thus deposited that the larvae, when hatched, feed." [7]

[7] Sir E.A. Wallis Budge, *The Mummy: A History of the Extraordinary Practices of Ancient Egypt* (1989) pp. 231-232.

For those who have eyes to see, the obelisk in St. Peter's Square is a symbolic, masonic-type of communication conveying the revelation that the theology of the Church of Rome is dominated by Pharaonic Egypt. The obelisk represents acceptance of the supreme value to the Church of the esoteric Egyptian philosophy (Hermeticism as it came to be known), as channeled by Marsilio Ficino and Pico, who were the ambassadors of Hermes Trismegistus to the Church. The supreme value of Hermetic Egypt above Jesus is conveyed by the scale of Christological images in St. Peter's compared with the Egyptian obelisk that dwarfs them.

"The Masons had always believed their origins went all the way back to ancient Egypt. This was a holdover from the Renaissance when it was widely believed that Egypt was a repository of all lost or mystical knowledge… Obelisks, Freemasonry and Egyptomania had always been closely related… On July 4, 1848, when the cornerstone of the Washington Monument was laid, Washington's brother Freemasons conducted the ceremony." [8]

In addition to Washington D.C., New York City sought its own obelisk—directly from Egypt. The task fell to Freemason Henry Honeychurch Gorringe, a lieutenant commander in the U.S. Navy who succeeded in transporting an obelisk to New York, where Freemasons presided over the civic ceremony of laying the obelisk's foundation. In October 1880, five hundred commanders of masonic lodges converged on the city, where they led nearly nine thousand of their lodge brothers in a march past the Grand Masonic Temple on 23rd St. and 9th Avenue to Central Park, to lay the cornerstone for the obelisk which had the common name (actually a misnomer) of "Cleopatra's Needle." [9]

---

[8] Bob Brier, *Egyptomania* (2013), pp. 115 and 125.

[9] "Though the (New York) obelisk is often called 'Cleopatra's Needle,' Cleopatra… had nothing to do with its creation… the Obelisk predates her by more than a millennium. Approximately 3,500 years ago in the ancient Egyptian city of Heliopolis, stonecutters carved two obelisks out of granite. Each one was formed from a single piece of quarried stone, and the enormous feat of extracting and erecting the monolith was symbolic of the reigning pharaoh's power. Both obelisks were inscribed with hieroglyphs praising Pharaoh Thutmose III, who reigned from 1479 to 1425 BCE, and were erected outside of a temple. The obelisks were toppled… during an invasion by Persians in 525 BCE; for more than 500 years, they remained buried in sand until Roman Emperor Caesar Augustus discovered and transported them to Alexandria. They were erected in a temple built by Cleopatra to honor Julius Caesar, which may explain how they individually came to be known as Cleopatra's Needle." —http://www.centralparknyc.org/things-to-see-and-do/attractions/obelisk.html The "needle" moniker derives from the Muslim conquest, when obelisks came to be known in Arabic as *"mislah,"* a sewing needle, and *messalat far'un,* "pharaoh's needles."

"In the name of the Grand Lodge of the State of New York I now proclaim the cornerstone of this obelisk, known as Cleopatra's Needle, duly laid in ample form." (The obelisk was not actually erected until January 22, 1881).

The installation of an Egyptian obelisk in a place of honor in the city of London, England was also under the supervision of Freemasons: the engineer John Dixon and Sir Erasmus Wilson. The question of siting the obelisk was of masonic significance. Would it be in a public square like St. Peter's, or imitative of the French masonic-siting of their obelisk at the Place de la Concorde? The masonic duo proposed that London's obelisk, or "Cleopatra's Needle" as it was melodramatically and erroneously called, be erected in front of Parliament. A precise replica made of wood was erected there to win public approval, but Protestant evangelical Bible-believers objected that a symbol of pagan empire had no business in front of the houses of a Christian legislature. The Freemasons relented and decided upon a site at the Adelphi Steps at the Thames Embankment, with the approval of the Grand Lodge of England.

Like the "Grand Lodge of Vatican City," in the modern era sorcerers initiated the process of erecting what is, after the Mummy, the most elemental and recognizable symbol of Pharaonic Egypt. The Catholic Church of the early centuries A.D. had no interest in Egypt except as a lesson in what befalls those who become victims of enslaving pagan dictatorships. By around 1150 A.D. of the medieval period, there was only one obelisk still on display in Rome, the one standing next to old St. Peter's, in what had been the "Circus." The others had all been toppled. "Sixtus the V's obelisk specialist, Michele Mercati, reported that the Circus Maximus obelisk showed traces of fire damage and holes drilled for the insertion of toppling levers." [10]

[10] Brian A. Curran et al., *Obelisk: A History* (2009), p. 308, quoting Mercati, *Obelischi* (Rome, 1589).

In Italy the obelisk "needle" was known as a *guglia.* The Catholic poet Pietro Aretino, who we met in the previous chapter, used this as a simile in his identification of the obelisk with *magica sexualis:* "In 1524, during a period when Renaissance popes had begun to display a renewed enthusiasm for the excavation and re-erection of obelisks... Pietro Aretino used the term *guglia* to describe the priapic member of his protagonist in... *I modi.*" [11]

[11] Curran, p. 67.

Priapic symbolism is on view in Rome's Campo Marzio, at the base of the Monte Citorio obelisk, which had been pulled down by the devout Catholic Duke Robert Guiscard in 1084. It was re-erected with considerable difficulty and expense by Pope Pius VI in 1792. [12]

[12] An obelisk that had been erected in A.D. 14 and torn down by the early Christians, was the subject of an attempted erection by Pope Leo X in 1519. In 1587, Pope Sixtus V, who sought a pagan obelisk "in front of every church," succeeded in raising the obelisk in the precinct of Santa Maria Maggiore Basilica, in Esquiline Square. In the 18th century, Pius VI was responsible for the erection of ancient Egyptian obelisks in the Piazza del Quirinale in 1786, and in 1789 (the year of the French Revolution), at the top of the Spanish Steps, in front of the Trinitá dei Monti church.

The base features a stone carving of a reclining young man with a large, phallic-like obelisk emerging from his genital region.

The early Christians in Rome intended to remove all symbols connected with pagan Egypt as befits a capital city of Christendom. They were dissuaded from dismantling the obelisk in Nero's Circus Maximus however, by a legend that St. Peter had been tortured and murdered in its shadow, which if true, would seem to be more of a reason to take it down than to

preserve it. Nevertheless, rescued by the folk tale, the seemingly charmed obelisk remained upright.

An excerpt from Mr. Dibner's distinguished monograph, *Moving the Obelisks* here follows, by which we hope to convey a sense of the immense effort expended, including conferring upon the engineer Fontana draconian conscription, confiscation and police powers, all for the purpose of making an emblem of Pharaonic Egypt the most monumental visual motif at the heart of what was supposed to be Jesus Christ's principal church.

"...With only the main arches and walls of St. Peter's completed and the dome still unbuilt, the College of Cardinals met in 1585 to elect one from among them to become the new pontiff to succeed the deceased Gregorius XIII. The choice was Cardinal Montalto and he ascended the pontifical throne as Sixtus V at the age of 64. He, like Julius II, was destined to imprint his vigorous personality upon the face of Rome. It was his determination to... include the majestic old obelisk that had been standing since Caesar's day on its pedestal behind the sacristy of the new St. Peter's. Alone among the obelisks of Rome, it had stood erect... Not one other of the many obelisks... had remained upright or unbroken... It had no inscriptions on its faces prior to being brought to Rome, so that its more ancient history could not be determined as accurately as those obelisks having hieroglyphic inscriptions...

"It required moving this enormous stone 275 yards from its old position to the new one in front of the cathedral, and it therefore became a topic of major interest among engineers as well as among prelates... The... ingredient in this formula of success was the engineer and architect, Domenico Fontana (1543-1607). He was born in Mili (now Melide) on Lake Lugano in the Ticino canton of Switzerland. He thus springs from a nation famous for its engineers and also from a family that had given many sons to the constructive profession. He was the son of the architect Matteo Fontana who had been active in Venice in the 1400s. In the 1500s three Fontana brothers, Giovanni, Domenico and Marsiglio, worked in Rome, often together as engineers and architects. The oldest of these, Giovanni (1540-1614), was retained as hydraulic and military engineer by four popes and by the King of Spain... For Cardinal Felice Peretti de Montalto (future Pope Sixtus V), Fontana had

worked as the designer and constructor of the mausoleum of Pope Nicholas IV in 1574, and of several palace buildings. He was then building a small chapel of the Sacrament erected in the Santa Maria Maggiore, one of the four prime churches in Rome. This show of magnificence on the part of Cardinal Montalto seems to have displeased Pope Gregorius XIII, who thereupon suspended the Cardinal's income.

"...on April 24, 1585, Montalto became pope. Fontana was immediately repaid out of the papal treasury and was made papal architect. An immediate task assigned to him was to continue the work of Giacomo della Porta (1529-1604) in completing the construction of the dome of St. Peter's, which Michelangelo had left unfinished upon his death.

"It is related that once while Cardinal Montalto and Fontana were crossing the Vatican area, the cardinal remarked that if he ever became pope the obelisk would not long remain in that place... It is therefore not surprising that one of the first official acts of Sixtus V on assuming the papal throne was the appointment, on August 24, 1585, of a special commission to study the problem and to make a recommendation for the transportation of the obelisk... The commission met in the palace of its head, Pier Donato (Cardinal Cesis) and was composed of prominent men of Rome representing both the ecclesiastic and state functions of the papacy. In addition, there was representation from the administrative and legislative bodies as well as the departments of finance and public works. On this commission were such dignitaries as Cardinal Guastavillano, the papal chamberlain; Francesco, Cardinal Sforza; Ferdinando Cardinal de Medici (later Grand Duke of Tuscany), and such functionaries as the Treasurer-General, Commissary-General and Commissioner of Roads. Secular Rome was represented by several Senators and Deputies—in all a commission endowed with a sufficiency of funds and authority and one committed to act. The dream of many popes was now to be realized.

"The commission met immediately after its appointment... The commission... was most impressed by the plan, model and presentation of the engineer Domenico Fontana. He presented his plan and demonstrated how the monolith could be lowered, moved and lifted by a combination of a wooden tower and ropes and pulleys, using as a model a lead obelisk about two feet tall, and a wooden tower with ropes and tackle made to scale. The commission thereupon appointed Fontana engineer-in-chief in charge of the project.

“We are thankful to him not only for performing a most workmanlike job in planning and executing a difficult physical and political task, but like the complete artisan he was, by leaving for posterity a record that, in format, type and engravings, makes one of the handsomest and most complete records of any engineering problem, a prize in the field of bibliography and engraving. His book *Della trasportatione dell’obelisco vaticano et delle fabriche di Nostro Signore papa Sisto* V, was printed in Rome in 1590. It is very rare and has become a classic in engineering literature.

“…The difficulties that Fontana faced were the great weight, the great bulk and the fear of breaking this fragile stone in moving it. It weighed half again more than the obelisk now in New York… First, the edict of authority was issued so that Fontana could obtain the required men, draft-animals, timber, equipment, subsistence and rights-of-way, and at the same time be free from litigation due to possible damage incurred in the operation. The following is the document as issued by the pope and as based on his sovereign right of eminent domain.

“We, Sixtus V, grant power and full authority to Domenico Fontana, architect of the Holy Apostolic Palace, in order that he may more easily and more quickly transport the Vatican obelisk to the Piazza of St. Peter, to make use, as long as this removal lasts, of whatever workmen and laborers, with the apparatus that may be necessary, of whatever kind it may be, and when in need *to compel anyone to lend material to him,* or sell it, he, however, satisfying them with due compensation.

“*That he can make use of all the boards, timbers, and wood of any size, which are in places convenient for his needs, regardless of to whom they belong,* paying, however, the due price to the owner of this lumber, in accordance with the decision of two arbitrators chosen by the parties; and *that he can cut, or have cut, all the wood which may in any way belong to the church of St. Peter, its chapels and canons, particularly in the ground of the Campo Morto, or of the Hospital of San Spirito in Sassia, or of the Apostolic Chamber, without making any payment,* and he can carry this wood to whatever place he desires; and let out to pasture the animals used in this work without incurring any punishment, making up, however, for damage done, according to the decision of experts chosen for this purpose.

"That he can buy and carry away the above-mentioned articles and anything else necessary from any person whatever, without paying excise tax or customs duty of any kind. That he can, without a license, or permit, get together in Rome or in other cities and neighboring places any amount of victuals for his own use and that of his workers and animals.

"That he can requisition and carry away from wherever he finds them, capstans, ropes and cords, whether loose or fixed, undertaking, however, to repair them and make them whole, paying a due recompense; and that in the same way he can make use of all the instruments and apparatus belonging to the edifice of St. Peter, and can order the agents, representatives and officials of the said building in a due space of time to make free and clear the Piazza around the obelisk so that it can be removed and to accommodate him in whatever way necessary in this undertaking.

"That he can (if it be necessary) tear down, or have torn down, the houses near the said obelisk, deciding first on the way in which to compensate the owners for the damage. Finally, authority is given to the said Domenico Fontana to do, command, execute and carry out any other thing necessary to this task, and, moreover, that he, together with his agents, workers and domestic servants in any place and at any time may carry any force of arms necessary, except those prohibited; all the magistrates and officials of the entire estate of the church are commanded to aid and help the said Domenico Fontana in the above-mentioned things, as are all others subject in any way at all to the authority of the Holy See, of whatever rank and condition, under pain of Our displeasure, and a fine of 500 ducats to the Treasury, and other punishments at Our discretion. No one shall dare impede, nor in any way molest the carrying out of this work of the said Domenico, his agents, or workers, but on the contrary without delay or any pretext, everyone shall help, obey and support him; anything to the contrary notwithstanding. Given at Rome in St. Mark's this 5th day of October, 1585.'

"...Fontana was... particularly careful in anticipating the development of cracks in his obelisk by avoiding the strains that would have expanded such cracks into breaks... The combined weight of the protective planking, the blocks, the ropes and bars rose to 56,459 pounds, which were added to the

weight of the obelisk, making the total 737,690 pounds which had to be lifted by the ropes and levers. On opposite sides of the tower the main timbers had scantlings attached to them forming ladders that reached up to the top.

"...When the time came for inclining the obelisk after raising it above its base, it was planned to draw the shaft at its foot towards the west into the opening pierced through the sacristy wall. The obelisk foot was to be rested on a timber carriage laid on rollers. Fifty-three men were assigned to the levers in the raising process, 35 to the westerly levers and 18 to the two levers pointing east. Some were to pull directly on the ropes attached to the levers, others to bear on the capstans attached by rope to the levers. Additional men with sledges and mauls clambered through the tower and obelisk, driving wedges to tighten the binding members and stiffen the system. As in any similar modern job, these men wore metal helmets to protect them from objects failing from above.

"...In addition to the tall barricade enclosing the working area, stringent orders were published that prohibited anyone beyond the barricade from passing the barriers or hindering the workmen in any way, nor might they speak, spit or make any loud noise, under penalty of severe punishment, "*including death*." This was intended to make it easier for orders to be heard over the noise of 900 moving men and 74 horses and over the scrape and rumble of ropes, blocks, capstans and timber. Police were assigned to carry out this strict order and the resulting silence gave rise to one of the prettiest legends in engineering history. This story has, through the last two centuries, become so much a part of the general story of the erection of the Vatican obelisk that, in permitting its refutation, one owes to tradition, at least, the kindness of its repetition.

"It seems (so the legend goes) that at one point of the operations the silenced multitude (who were threatened with death if they uttered a word) noted that all was not going well with the strained ropes. One version has it that the speed and strain of winding caused the ropes and blocks to get dangerously hot, another version has it that they stretched so much that they piled up on the capstan drums, the leverage ratio dropping so low that the horses and men could no longer continue to pull.

"At this critical moment, a lusty voice rang out from someone in the silent crowd—it was the voice of an old Genoese sailor named Bresca di Bordighera, and it called out *'Agua alle funi!'* (Water on the ropes!') Thereupon water was poured on the failing ropes, they grew taut they held, and the obelisk was saved! Instead of condemning the spirited and brave sailor to death the legend has it that honors were bestowed on him and his family, and that to this day his descendants have the exclusive privilege of selling palms used in the procession on Palm Sunday in St. Peter's.

"The date for the lowering operations of the obelisk was set by Fontana as April 30, 1586. A last preparatory task was the removal of the ancient metal ball still at the obelisk top, placed there by the old Romans and believed to contain the ashes of Julius Caesar. The ball was removed but no ashes were found there. The tower was complete, blocks were in position, capstans and ground tackle fixed in their places. The men were divided into their respective crews, assigned to their posts and again drilled each in his special task. Their equipment and supplies were distributed and last-minute checks were made. An air of expectancy fell upon the metropolis.

"...by sunrise (of the 30th) every man and horse was at his post ready to proceed. The morning was a typically clear and serene Roman spring day and all Rome moved towards the Piazza to witness the event that had held their interest so deeply and for so long a time. The great personages of Rome and the nobility of all Italy were present. The majority of the College of Cardinals and the city officials were there. Upon roofs and windows facing the square and upon the walls and scaffolding of the incomplete St. Peter's there were crowds of onlookers. The city police was reinforced by the Swiss Guards and a detachment of cavalry kept the swarming populace in order.

"...upon his (Fontana's) signal the trumpet sounded and over 900 men and 74 horses bore on their lever-arms. The gear groaned, ropes tightened and the great stone budged with a rumble that Fontana describes as like an earthquake. The bell was then rung and positions were held as the foremen inspected the equipment. It was found that the top one of the horizontal bands had burst. Evidently the radial component of tension on this band had been underestimated in arrangement of the blocks. Repairs were made and in twelve additional moves the shaft was raised more than two feet above its

pedestal. This permitted the timber carriage, moving over rollers, to be slipped into the gap, completing the first phase of the operation. By 10 o'clock that evening the quitting-signal was sounded. The success of this first step was celebrated by the firing of a signal gun which was answered by a burst of artillery from the city's batteries and great joy was shown by the multitude.

"Upon re-examination of the results of the first move in the operation it was found that not only the top band had broken, but that all nine bands had suffered somewhat— some had slid from their positions, others had twisted or had developed breaks in their sections. To prevent further slippage, rope slings were passed under the obelisk foot, for it was found that none of the rope lashings had suffered as had the iron ones, and this added precaution had saved the old stone. It was also found that some of the vertical bars had also been broken at their eyes. Evidently the bars had not been adjusted to share the load equally as no adjustment mechanism (turnbuckles or wedges) had been provided and the "cascading" of such breaks had not yet been a province of study. The result was the shearing of pins and jaw-members in the hand-forged, and therefore ill-fitting, elements. Fontana did not understand 'shear' and was mystified by the clean break that looked 'as if cut by a knife...'

"For the lowering operation three new steps were taken. The first of these was to shift the system of pulleys from the east face of the obelisk to the other three faces so that this face, being the bottom one when resting on the carriage, would have no encumbrances in the descent. The second step was to introduce a sliding brace, having its top bear upon the underside of the lowering obelisk and having its foot slide outward as the stone came slowly down... The third innovation was a group of four blocks that were attached to the foot of the obelisk and the ropes from these were passed through a corresponding set of blocks positioned on the west face of the sacristy. The purpose of this was to be sure that the base of the obelisk would be properly drawn through the opening made in the eastern sacristy wall as the obelisk moved away from its vertical into its horizontal position. This would also help keep the main ropes in a vertical position, thereby avoiding lateral strain. However, these elaborate precautions seemed quite unnecessary because when the shaft was half-way down, there was shown a tendency for the carriage on its rollers to slide westward without any aid; in fact, the slide had to be controlled by rigging up ropes in the opposite direction from that originally intended. To avoid the danger of impact developing from a jerky or too rapid motion of such a great and fragile weight, it was deemed necessary to add a bridle by attaching five additional blocks to the top of the obelisk and to connect these by rope to five equivalent pulleys suspended from the top of the sacristy. It had required eight days to make these preparations for lowering the shaft, the date of lowering up to May 7. In this, the initial raising of the shaft, the same signals were used, but in reverse order. At the trumpet blast, the main capstans paid out rope while the capstans connected at the base wound theirs up, thereby pulling the base westward. As the bell sounded work stopped, the gear was examined, and the ropes were tightened equally.

“The operation ran smoothly with no unexpected occurrences. By 10 o’clock that night the obelisk had been completely lowered and rested properly blocked up on its carriage. The master engineer of this operation then received his due reward by being accompanied to his home by an honor guard of drums and trumpets. The next four days were required to prepare for the next phase of the operation, transporting the obelisk. The capstans, rigging and tower had first to be dismantled and this required rolling the sleeping monument out of range of possibly falling iron or timber. With bolts loosened, the tower members and rigging were then removed to the new site and work was begun clearing the obelisk pedestal of its 1500 years of accumulated earth and debris which had buried it almost up to the base of the shaft. The solidly-packed earth about the stone pedestal made it possible for Fontana to lay the planks for the rollers and carriage right under the obelisk itself. Fontana planned to replace the obelisk pedestal in its new position in a condition as much like the original as he could. He therefore moved the metal corner astragals and then the pedestal stone, which stood eight feet six inches high and was nine feet six inches square and weighed 55 and1/2 tons.

“Beneath it and occupying a narrower space was a rougher stone weighing 63 tons. The next courses were of white marble connected by iron clamps encased in lead. Fontana was surprised to find the iron of the clamps in a perfect state of

preservation. The lowest courses were of travertine forming three steps that rested on decomposed concrete. Because the top stone was damaged in removing the astragals, two inches of the pedestal had to be cut away. In the new pedestal, between the two lower strata of marble, was placed a new stone bearing the names of Sixtus V and Fontana and giving an account of the transportation...

“The distance from the old position (of the obelisk) to its new in the center of the recreated Piazza is only about 275 yards and covers an elevational drop of nearly thirty feet. This was of great advantage to Fontana for it enabled him to bridge the distance by a causeway of increasing height so that the obelisk could be swung right over its newly reconstructed pedestal without having to be raised the corresponding height.

“...The preparations for resetting the obelisk over its new base consisted of reversing the procedure in having it lowered. The tower timbers were dragged to the new site and re-erected on the broadened section of the causeway. On the tower were hung pulleys and riggings for the raising operation and the rope and pulleys were attached to the bands of the three free faces of the obelisk after it had been moved on its carriage to its position over the pedestal. Because of the spread length of the obelisk in its prone position and the increased stresses in the raising (as against the lowering) process, the number of horses was increased from 74 to 140. Of the 48 capstans set out for the raising process, 40 were assigned to the lifting tackle, and in the east end four were intended to drag the obelisk base forward to the central position.

“On September 10, 1586 dawn found every detail ready... At the east end of the ramp a command tower was built for Fontana and his deputies. With the experience gained in the lowering phase the raising moved much more quickly and smoothly. When the obelisk was at about 45° angle, it was buttressed by timbers and the tackle was made fast. The crew (of eight hundred men) were then permitted to eat and rest. At sundown that day the shaft was hanging vertically over its pedestal after 57 pulls and pauses. The joy of the great crowd and the holiday atmosphere of the occasion gave rise to spontaneous jubilation.

“The next day, again as in the lowering stage, levers were in use to raise the shaft over the pedestal. There were clear vertical spaces under the north and south faces. With the obelisk raised, blocks and wedges were driven between its base and pedestal and the carriage was thus free to be rolled out of the way. The capstans were then tightened and the bronze astragals, now in the form of gilded bronze lions (the work of the sculptor Prospero Bresciano), were set in stress-equalizing lead at the four corners. These astragals were not level, thereby requiring metal shims to be inserted until the shaft stood perfectly vertical.

"In eighteen days the tower, cribs and scaffolding had been cleared and on September 18, 1586 the obelisk appeared in full view and was duly consecrated. It had taken Fontana just one year from the time of winning his commission to complete his task and to leave the obelisk standing practically as we see it today. Only the bronze eagles at its base and a more elaborate balustrade were later added...

"Rewards and honors were then showered upon Fontana. He was made a Palatine Count and a Knight of the Golden Spur and he was also granted a pension of 2000 gold scudi as well as the recipient of an immediate gift of 5000 more. He received, gratis, all the wood and equipment left over from the operation.

"Architectural commissions also were thrust upon him. He was required to supervise the restoration and erection of three additional obelisks in Rome. One, a few feet shorter than the Vatican obelisk, was re-erected by him in the Piazza del Popolo, the second he placed in the Piazza di San Giovanni Laterano. This is the tallest obelisk known, even though we think that part of the base of the shaft had, at some time, already been cut away. The third is behind the church of Santa Maria Maggiore and stands 48 and 1/2 feet tall. However, the pedestal upon which it stands is 17 feet high, thereby giving it the appearance of good overall height. Two of the above, those at San Giovanni and Santa Maria, had been buried and lost, but once in a conversation between Sixtus, Fontana and Mercati it was urged that more obelisks be hunted. Fontana, using an iron bar, probed the fill in the Circus Maximus and came upon two obelisks, both fallen and both broken into three parts. Fontana joined the broken sections with the use of stone dove-tail mortises.

"...At the time of Fontana's obelisk operations, the facade facing the Piazza consisted of an assembly of five old buildings. These were torn down and the grand facade of St. Peter's, as we know it today, along with the additional portico, were built

by Fontana's nephew, Carlo Maderno, but this was not completed and consecrated until 1626, nineteen years after the death of Domenico Fontana. The old facade was demolished in 1605 and the nave was lengthened in the direction of the obelisk. The familiar encircling colonnade moving out in a converging line and then embracing the piazza with the obelisk as its center was not built for another 71 years (1656-1657): it consists of four rows of 284 Doric columns and 88 pillars, surmounted by some 300 statues and was the masterpiece of Giovanni Bernini (1598-1680).

"Of the two fountains flanking the obelisk, one was set there by Sixtus V, and the other by Clement IX (1700-21). In 1723 a rose-of-the-winds was placed around the foot of the obelisk, and in 1817 the astronomer Gilii traced a meridian curve around it. To the balustrade and four small posts that Fontana added to protect the odd base of the obelisk pedestal against vehicles, eight more posts were added by Urban VIII (1623-1644). Under Clement IX (1700-1721) the original four columns were replaced by a larger ornamental marble balustrade and a quadrature of sixteen heavy granite circular columns surrounded by a circular travertine walk. To cover the unsightly holes that remained when the old Roman ornaments were removed, the architect Lodovico Sergardi added a gilt bronze garland of oak leaves surmounted by an eagle, on each of the four faces of the obelisk." (End quote from Bern Dibner).

Honor is due to Fontana and his crew for their genius and daring. If this had been an installation at a secular museum of Egyptian antiquities, completely separate from the Church and its environs, we could also congratulate the Bishop of Rome on saving a historical artifact for study by future generations. Most people will feel that we have placed an over-emphasis on what is essentially a relatively benign restoration of a monumental art work. This is the liberal-humanist view and in our post-modernist world it will appear eminently reasonable and compelling. For Christians it is another matter entirely, however: *the claims of Jesus Christ are total and exclusive.* For believers, who are obviously in the minority (Matthew 7:14), and who are faithful to those claims, the erection of Pharaoh's obelisk at what is supposed to be the heart of the Christian Church, will be seen for the occult pagan exaltation which in fact, it is.

[The Grand Egyptian Lodge of Vatican City Page 391]

It is advantageous for the Cryptocracy that the civic bonds of the Rome-London-NY-Washington nexus should be strengthened through the placement of obelisks, and that the public should espy in both masonic capital cities and the capital of the Church of Rome, a towering obelisk, conveying to percipients an unmistakable and ultimately demoralizing message of a control system of lithic continuity.

The main motor of Freemasonry was papally-enabled Hermetic Neoplatonism, which had translated ancient Egypt into a living mythos in the Renaissance Church of Rome. The erection of the obelisk in St. Peter's is the culmination of a process which began to reach its summit with the idolization of the legendary figure of Hermes Trismegistus and the secret knowledge his cult personified. The erection of the obelisk of the Pharaohs in the sacred precinct of St. Peter's basilica had been prepared ritually and visually in stages prior to that—in the pope's apartment, and in the Cathedral of Siena, where unambiguous veneration had been paid to Hermes, and in the former case, to an elaborate allegory centered on the Egyptian goddess Isis, who in mythology is "equated with Sothis (Sirius)" and "the snake goddess." [13]

[13] Hornblower, op. cit., *The Oxford Classical Dictionary Third Edition,* p. 768.

Occult images were enshrined in the apartment of the "Vicar of Christ on earth," and a cathedral church, and no pretext of having altered the nature of these icons of demonic deities through the sprinkling of holy water, or papal circumambulations, or other forms of putative exorcism or baptism, cancels the blasphemy of their installation in the name of Jesus Christ. Centuries later these fetishistic monstrosities remain in place in the "Eternal City," no less hallowed than before.

Chapter XI

The Cabal's Co-conspirators

Ludovico Lazzarelli (1447-1500; also spelled "Lodovico"), referred to his birth on February 4 as inauspicious, in keeping with traditions of the ancient Roman calendar: "A troublesome day for Egypt, and no less for me" (*De Gentilium Decorum Imaginibus*). "Throughout the Middle Ages the belief was also widespread that certain days were inherently ill-omened, especially the so-called Egyptian Days, which derived from the ancient Roman belief that Egyptian magicians had determined certain days to be unlucky... [1]

The most likely candidate as Ludovico Lazzarelli's Judaic handler in his youth is Leone Ebreo, a physician and alchemist in Lazzarelli's home town of San Severino, where Alessandro Lazzarelli, Lodovico's father, was physician to the Christians.

In his most famous work, *Crater Hermetis,* Lodovico Lazzarelli casts Ferdinand I, King of Naples and Sicily and nicknamed "Ferrante," as his pupil. Ferrante was the ally of Pope Pius II in the war with Duke Jean II d'Anjou. From 1462-1464 Lazzarelli lived in the household of, and was tutor to, the son of Duke Matteo di Capua, who at the time was the governor of Atri under Ferrante. Beginning in 1464 and for the next two years, he obtained a position with Bishop Giovanni Antonio Campano. Bishop Campano was a patron of Rev. Fr. Marsilio Ficino. In 1466 Lazzarelli relocated to Venice for reasons that

[1] Michael David Bailey, *Magic and Superstition in Europe* (2007), p. 88

remain unclear. What we know is that while still a youth he had been marked for promotion and prestige. At age twenty-one his high-level contacts with Pope Pius II took him to meet the Emperor Frederick III, who crowned Lazzarelli with laurels in San Marco church in Pordenone, Italy on November 30, 1468. By 1473 he was in the company of the astrology-obsessed Lorenzo Zane of Venice, the future Catholic Patriarch of Antioch, with whom he entered Rome. Here Lazzarelli joined the Roman Academy, ostensibly dedicated to keeping alive the classical heritage of the Rome of the Caesars, but in fact a secret society comprised of the lay elite of the Church of Rome (Paolo Marsi, Aurelio Brandolini, Publio Astreo, Bartolomeo Platina and Sulpizio da Veroli), engrossed with reenacting pagan rituals in the ruins of the city and accused of ceremonial sodomy. With the death of Paul II and the election of Sixtus IV, the Academy reinvented itself as the “pious” Catholic *Societas Literatorum S. Victoris in Esquilis.*

In 1480 Lazzarelli dedicated his long Hermetic poem *Fasti* to Pope Sixtus IV, the Ferrantes and King Charles VIII of France. In it Lazzarelli positioned the usual markers of the syncretic religion which was enveloping Rome and the papacy: “Jesus is the Logos and the Word, the Mind and Wisdom, who first was Pimander [2] in the mind of Hermes... called Thrice Greatest.” [3]

Giovanni Mercurio da Correggio. Some time around November 12, 1481, Lazzarelli fell under the influence of a mysterious, peripatetic false-messiah figure, Giovanni Mercurio da Correggio, who had addressed the College of Cardinals in Rome. As Correggio’s disciple, Lazzarelli subsequently became ever more immersed in “alchemy, magic and astrology.” [4]

Correggio “came from a well-known, old and powerful family belonging to the higher nobility...” [5]

Correggio mixed traditional medieval eschatological preoccupations with the doctrines of Hermes Trismegistus. Lazzarelli called his spiritual master Correggio, by Hermes’ alternate name, Mercury/Mercurio, and addressed Correggio in writing as follows, “You alone have gone through the secret caves of father Hermes, by roads unknown to all, and have returned from there.”

---

[2] Pimander is another name for the *Corpus Hermeticum* translated by Father Ficino.

[3] Cf. Marco Bertolini, ed., *Lodovico Lazzarelli: Fasti Christianae Religionis* (1991).

[4] Eugene F. Rice, *The Prefatory Epistles of Jacques Lefévre D’Estaples,* n. 3, p. 136.

[5] Wouter Hanegraaff, *Lodovico Lazzarelli: The Hermetic Writings,* p. 23.

Correggio suffered various arrests and brief imprisonments, episodically in the 1480s. The year 1497 found a costumed Correggio free and out and about in Venice, preaching Hermetic occultism from street corners and calling himself “Mercurio.” Now he worked completely untouched by the Catholic authorities. His exhortations were published in Rome in 1499. Lazzarelli excerpted parts of Correggio’s writing in his books, the *Fasti* and the *Crater Hermetis.* Though he posed as a mendicant, Correggio had sufficient funds from mysterious sources. These in turn supported his large family and funded their trips around Italy and France. In the latter nation, upon meeting King Louis II, he gave the king a costly sword as well as magical books (including the *Corpus Hermeticum),* and delivered occult speeches to the French court, proclaiming himself Hermes/Mercurio, master-magician of all knowledge. He arrived at the court of the French king in ritual attire, riding on an ass, holding a scimitar and a mirror-like shield, “shining like the sun.” Correggio received gold from King Louis, who sought his counsel, as did the king’s physician, Symphorien Champier, who, in 1507 would publish Lazzarelli’s occult book, *Diffinitiones Asclepii.* [6]

Correggio subsequently roamed freely across Catholic Europe proclaiming himself the Hermetic Christ, a reader of minds, teller of fortunes, and herald of the coming syncretic religion that bears remarkable resemblance to what emerged in the Church of Rome in the pontificate of Pope “Saint” John Paul II. Correggio, it seems, was protected by forces inside the Church. In 1506 he published a foul work of alchemy and magic dedicated to Pope Julius II (Giuliano della Rovere): *De Quercu Julii Pontificis sive de lapide* (“The Oak of Pope Julius,” [7] or the Philosopher’s Stone”). No inquisition laid a hand on him. He suffered no fate in anyway similar to that of Savonarola. His doctrine subsequently spread into the bowels of the Church, as it was intended to do.

Correggio was Lazzarelli’s occult master and in turn Lazzarelli’s pupil, Angelo Colocci, who he initiated into the mysteries of occult regeneration, became a member of the papal court of Julius II and eventually personal secretary to Popes Leo X and Clement VII. Colocci was later named Bishop of Iesi. Throughout his long ecclesiastical career, he proved himself another immune and untouchable ‘Catholic’ Neoplatonic-

[6] Hanegraaff, *Lodovico Lazzarelli,* op.cit., pp. 40-41.

[7] The “Oak of Pope Julius”—the Rovere family’s coat of arms included an oak tree.

Hermetic syncretist. Correggio is the man of whom Lazzarelli wrote, “Dear teacher, dearly beloved father Giovanni Mercurio—I have become so absorbed in the study of the divine books of Hermes Trismegistus and also in the most holy words of Moses and the prophets, and most of all in those of Jesus Christ our savior, that all other writings, whether of ancients or moderns, have completely lost their appeal to me... Father Mercurius, teacher by fatherly love, hail to you who are like a god to me.”

Circa 1494 Lazzarelli finished his magnum opus, the *Crater Hermetis,* also known as *A Dialogue on the Supreme Dignity of Man: The Way of Christ and the Mixing Bowl of Hermes.*[8]

This is a typical Renaissance work of syncretic Hermetic-Catholicism. It concludes by offering a path to becoming a god.

To Pontano (“Pontanus”), a scholar who was a member of the court of Ferrante of the King of Aragon and Naples, Lazzarelli wrote, “I am a Catholic, Pontanus, but I am not ashamed to be a Hermetist as well. If you would study his (Hermes) teachings you would find they do not clash with Christian doctrines.” Other founts of wisdom for Lazzarelli were the writings of Maimonides and “Denys” or “Pseudo-Dionysius.” These texts, with emphasis on Platonic-based “divinization” of humans, have considerable influence in twenty-first century “conservative” and “traditional” Catholic circles, being published by the conservative Jesuit Ignatius Press, and sold in “traditional” Catholic bookstores, as we have noted previously, William Riordan’s Neoplatonist *Divine Light: The Theology of Denys the Areopagite.*

Perish the thought that this god-making would evoke associations with magic. The deniers say that this is not magic, but “the mystery of Christian regeneration.” But is it really? It seems it has more in common with the serpent in the Garden of Eden and the rabbinic Judaism which kept that gnosis alive, emerging in the 13th century writing of Eleazar of Worms, who gave explicit instructions for making an artificial man in his *Pe’ullath Ha-Yetzirah*— arcana that was conveyed to Giovanni Pico della Mirandola as well as Lodovico Lazzarelli.

This Frankenstein thaumaturgy, the apologists tell us, cannot have an evil origin, because unlike the black magic of witches, this is the pure gnosis of the benevolent Judaism espoused by our elder brothers in the faith, who do not practice magic, but rather, “divine secrets.” As Lazzarelli writes in *Crater Hermetis:* “For about the word in Genesis: ‘And Abraham gave all that he had to Isaac, but to the sons

---

[8] The reference is to part 4 of the *Corpus Hermeticum* titled, “A Discourse of Hermes... Mixing Bowl or the Monad.”

of the concubines he gave gifts,' the Kabbalists say that what was given to the sons of the concubines were the *Scemoth Sceltoma*, that is to say, the names of impurity, namely the magical arts. But the things that were given to Isaac were certain divine secrets, which they call *Kabbalah* [9] (because they are passed down from mouth to mouth). And that name is beginning to be known to some people in our days."

The Catholic occult magus is the divinely perfect man, by definition; and also, by definition, this god-man has the ability to create life. From this Catholic template, arose Protestant variants, most notably in the work of Dr. John Dee, who was inspired by the Catholic Abbot Trithemius and his disciple Henry Cornelius Agrippa. Dr. Dee prophesied with hopeful anticipation, a future occult imperium led by England, in which the animation of dead matter (as in *The Asclepius*), would arise and reign over humanity. In our time this hope is centered on autonomous machine super-intelligences. The point at which these stand-alone artificial intelligences (AI) surpass their creators' intelligence is termed *Singularity.* We have a generation among us so disconnected from Biblical wisdom that they ardently long for this event. "...non-evil people might find it in their self-interest to risk propelling humanity into a Singularity even if they know that it has a high chance of annihilating mankind." [10]

Lazzarrelli's *Crater Hermetis* was deeply influenced by the *Zohar* and *Sefer Yetzirah* books of the Kabbalah; in particular the passage in the *Sefer Yetzirah* dealing with instructions for the creation of life. [11]

Ludovico Lazzarelli died in his hometown peacefully at age 53 from some type of pulmonary complaint. He is entombed at the Church of San Lorenzo in San Severino. No inquisition touched him. From the time of his death his influence inside the Church and among Catholic intelligentsia and royalty grew exponentially.

Superficial profiles of Franciscan Fr. **Pietro Galatino** (1460-1540), who was one of Medici Pope Leo X's most heavily favored Vatican scholars and who also enjoyed the protection and favor of Pope Paul III, present him as an "anti-

[9] Specifically, the Kabbalistic text, *Sefer Yetzirah*; of this genre is the aforementioned text by Eleazar of Worms.

[10] James D. Miller, *Singularity Rising,* p. xviii. For a study of the probable dire consequences of Singularity, cf. James Barrat, *Our Final Invention: Artificial Intelligence* (2015).

[11] Claudio Moreschini, *Hermes Christianus: The Intermingling of Hermetic Piety and Christian Thought,* transl. Patrick Baker (2011).

Semitic Catholic friar" who wrote "against the Jews." Score one for the orthodoxy of Leo X and the Renaissance Church, yes? If image prevails over reality, then yes. If truth matters, Galatino emerges as a very different creature altogether, in keeping with the chameleon character of the operatives under examination. Galatino was commissioned to mount a defense of the Kabbalist Johannes Reuchlin by Pope Leo X.[12]

[12] Caesare Vasoli, "Giorgio B. Salvati, Pietro Galatino e la edizione di Ortona -1518- del De Arcanis Catholicae Fidei," in *Cultura Humanistica* (L'Aquila, 1984), pp. 183-210.

As Italian scholar Caesare Vasoli has demonstrated, the deceitful pope executed this sleight of hand commissioning Galatino to come to Reuchlin's rescue in 1518, with the publication of his treatise *De arcanis Catholicae veritatis.* We are dealing with both a two-faced pope and a covert support network inside papal Rome. In the papally-authorized *De arcanis,* Galatino praised the ancient rabbis who compiled the Kabbalah. Reprinted in 1550, 1561, 1603 and 1672, Galatino's *De arcanis* "was one of the most widely dispersed books of the Renaissance." Though modernist Catholics and academics describe it as representing the "familiar medieval anti-Jewish polemic," this is a superficial reading. *De arcanis* mixes cosmetic denunciations of contemporary Judaism while putting forth a sympathetic "change in attitude toward the Talmud," while offering a "real appreciation of the substantive and independent value of Kabbalah for Christians." [13]

[13] Robert Wilkinson, *Orientalism, Aramaic and Kabbalah in the Catholic Reformation,* p. 59; and Wilkinson, *Tetragrammaton,* p. 329.

In order to perpetrate this hoodwink, Rev. Fr. Galatino:

"...included both material from the long-standing tradition of Christian controversial writing against the Jews, and alluring scraps of Christian Kabbalah. He praised the ancient rabbis who, he claimed, had forseen the coming of Jesus and proclaimed, long in advance, the truths of Christianity. But he damned their more recent successors, who had corrupted the true doctrines of Judaism in order to support their own stiff-necked refusal to convert." [14]

[14] Grafton and Weinberg, *I Have Always Loved the Holy Tongue,* (op. cit., 2011), p. 37.

This split-personality type of doctrine is a template of the *modus operandi* of the Church of Rome.

In a burst of claims predicated on a Judaizing delirium, about which Isaac Casaubon was dubious, occult priest Galatino alleged that the rabbis he quoted in *De arcanis* had made accurate prophecies concerning the Virgin

Mary, the Messiah and the Catholic doctrine of the Eucharist. Galatino stated, "He (Rabbenu Haccados; i.e. the "Holy Sage," "Holy Rabbi"), was rightly called the holy teacher, since with the inspiration of the Holy Spirit he opened up all the mysteries of Our Lord Jesus Christ so clearly... Casaubon simply could not accept the idea that an otherwise unknown sage had spoken 'a good bit more clearly about the mysteries of our faith than the prophets... but also more openly in many cases than the Evangelists or the Apostles." [15]

[15] Ibid., pp. 39-40.

In Galatino's defense of Reuchlin and the Kabbalah in *De arcanis Catholicae veritatis,* written under the patronage of Pope Leo X, he avers that the Pharisee Rabbi Simeon the Just ("Shimon Ha Tzaddik") blessed the baby Jesus in the Temple. Here we encounter the profession of one of the oldest of the legends of the Cryptocracy, that the Simeon mentioned by St. Luke in Luke 2:25-35, is actually Rabbi Simeon the Just. This tangled papist legend is part of the larger object of the rehabilitation of the Pharisees in general and Hillel and Gamaliel specifically, by means of the repetition of the myth of Simeon the Pharisee blessing Our Lord.

"Simeon the Just" was a Pharisee who was the son of Hillel, and the father of Gamaliel. The documentary record provides no knowledge of the identity of the Simeon that St. Luke mentions. His identity is unknown to history, but amply illustrated in the rabbinic fantasy concerning him, which was dutifully imported into the disinformation of the Church of Rome, which advanced it. The Pharisee Simeon the Just is reputed to have led the Sanhedrin. He was a hero in the annals of the Talmud:

"As *Kohen Gadol* and head of the *Sanhedrin,* he embodied both religious and political power... The Talmud relates that five miracles occurred in the *Bais Hamikdash* during his tenure. First, the red string that was hung in the *Bais Hamikdash* during the Yom Kippur services turned white, symbolizing Israel's purity. Second, on Yom Kippur two sacrificial goats were designated—one to be offered in the *Kodesh HaKodoshim,* one to be cast off a cliff. The *Kohen Gadol* drew lots in each hand to determine which goat should be used for which purpose. During Shimon *HaTzadik's* 40 year-tenure, the lot indicating the goat to be offered in the *Kodesh HaKodoshim,* always turned up in his right hand, a sign of Divine favor. Third, every evening a full night's supply of oil was put into each lamp of the *Menorah.* Miraculously, the oil put into the western lamp burned for twenty-four hours, demonstrating the constant presence of G-d in the *Bais Hamikdash.* Fourth, although each *Kohen* received only a small portion of the *Lechem Hapanim* (the showbread), he felt satiated as if he had eaten a full meal. Fifth, the fire on the Altar burned steadily without constant addition of wood. Sadly, after Shimon

HaTzadik's death miracles of such magnitude were no longer manifest in the *Bais Hamikdash."* [16]

[16] Yosef Eisen, *Shimon Ha Tzaddik (Simeon the Just),* http://www.chabad.org/library/article_cdo/aid/2833935/jewish/Shimon-Hatzadik-Simeon-the-Just.htm

Simeon the Just is consequential to Catholic occultists both as a channel for synthesizing rabbinic Judaism with Catholicism, and in terms of the occult use of the name of God, the Tetragrammaton. YHVH (Yahweh), in pagan magical rituals. Yahweh's Divine Name was forbidden to Catholics and Protestants in worship and verbal prayer by Scripture translators from St. Jerome onward to the King James scribes. They placed the commands of the rabbinic Mishnah in this regard above the Word of God—which states that His people shall be known by His name. Instead, His Name was suppressed and clandestinely reserved for use in occult rituals of crucial significance to the Cryptocracy. A good deal of the prolix texts of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic theology are derived from, or concerned in some way with, the correct employment of the wonder-working power of the Hebrew name of God—reserved for the occult-Catholic elite and denied to what we can term the latter-day Catholic *am ha'aretz.* To ensure the efficacy of Yahweh's name in their magical ceremonies, papal Rome in the Renaissance continued its suppression in the liturgy and verbal prayer life of the Church. As recently as the pontificate of Pope Benedict XVI this prohibition against the use of the name of Yahweh was reinstated. In Judaic lore and the Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Catholicism that is guided by it, Simeon the Just is considered to be the last Jewish High Priest to employ the Tetragrammaton in the Temple rite.

The enthusiasm for the murderous Sanhedrin-Pharisees among "traditional" Catholics is a perverse residue of the superstitions and rabbinic folklore emanating from deep within the Church of Rome's Neoplatonic-Hermetic Cryptocracy. The conspirators inside the Renaissance Church were the forefathers of our contemporary "traditional" Catholics, who fantasize that the good Simeon of St. Luke was the son of Hillel, i.e. "Simeon the Just," the leader of the Jewish Sanhedrin. [17]

[17] Upon Hillel's death the mantle of the School of Hillel was passed to his son Simeon. Upon Simeon's death the mantle of the school of Hillel passed to Gamaliel. This Gamaliel is mentioned in Acts 5:34-39. He was the teacher of Saul the Pharisee (Acts 22:3), the future St. Paul.

Subversive operatives and useful idiots [18]

[18] "Useful idiot": for an account of how revolutionary change agents exploit gullible persons who are not in themselves conspirators, cf. chapter 3, p. 17 of usurer Ludwig

von Mises' treatise, "Planned Chaos," reprinted in *Socialism: An Economic & Sociological Analysis* (1951).

inside "traditional" Catholicism today have made a saint out of the evil Hillel, just like the modern secular world, which lauds him as the "good Pharisee" whose "benevolence" is equivalent to that of Jesus. For evidence of the quasi-canonization of this archetypal Pharisee by "traditional" Catholics, consult the article, "Saint of the Sanhedrin" which was published in the December 2009 issue of *The Angelus* magazine, an official periodical of the SSPX "traditional" Catholic priests' fraternity in the U.S. (the "saint" in the headline is a reference to Hillel).

Jean Thenaud (1480-1542) was a Frenchman "born near Poitiers into the household of Louise of Savoy, the mother of King Francois I. Thenaud was instrumental in enticing the King into a fascination with the "Catholic" Kabbalah. In response to the King's requests, he produced a manuscript, *Le saincte et trés chrétienne cabale* (circa 1519).[19]

[19] Robert Wilkinson, *Tetragrammaton: Western Christians and the Hebrew Name of God,* p. 337.

Thenaud draws heavily on Pico's *Heptaplus,* Ficino's *Platonic Theologia* and Reuchlin's *De arte cabalistica.* In Thenaud's own 1521 volume, *Traicté de la cabale,* he makes a show of attacking the Kabbalah's superstitions and deceptions and were we to quote solely from those passages, an impression of stalwart Catholic orthodoxy would be conveyed. Thenaud's attacks however, were merely frosting intended to sweeten his advocacy of Kabbalah and his many "positive assessments of the many layers of meaning in Hebrew letters" and "Thenaud's interest in Kabbalah is apparent in his fascinating diagrams and also in his angelic cosmology, much indebted to Pythagoreanism, Neoplatonism and pseudo-Dionysius... based upon Reuchlin's *De Arte Cabbalistica.*" [20]

[20] Robert Wilkinson, op. cit., p. 338.

"A reading of the *De perenni philosophia libri decem,* a long work by **Agostino Steuco** (1497-1549), Bishop of Gubbio and a learned fixture of the Vatican Library... The author's basic position consists in maintaining that the similarities, even the superficial ones, between Christianity and ancient philosophies (from those of Hermes, the Chaldaeans, and Orpheus, down to Plato) derive from a common point of inspiration; thus, he ignores the fundamental differences between Christian dogma and pagan thought. Like

Lazzarelli, Steuco takes up Ficino's concept of *pia philosophia*... Steuco's demonstration of a continuity between Christian revelation, on the one hand, which occurred in a specific time and place with the coming of Christ, and the theosophies that preceded it, on the other, is based on continuous scholarly research... Steuco's work adheres to a fundamental concept, that of *philosophia perennis,* which he adopts as a kind of motto of his thought.

"In his *De perenni philosophia libri decem* Bishop Steuco writes: 'In order to realize that all ages, all places, all peoples concur in preaching the truth, you must read what Mercury Trisemegistus has to say about this Mind...' Steuco is "seeking

[Page 402 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

the harmony among Greeks, barbarians and Christian theologians in their teaching of a single 'pious theology.' ...For Steuco... this search is constituted by the simple juxtaposition of ancient theological writings (Chaldaean, Hermetic, Orphic) for the purpose of drawing from them the essential conclusion."

Bishop Steuco taught that "Mercury, a most ancient theologian, who lived around the time of Moses, knew the Holy Spirit, since he called it 'fine intelligent spirit.' ...In the (rabbinic) book *Beresit Rabba,* that is, *maximus genesis,* this spirit is said to be the spirit of the Messiah..." [21]

[21] Moreschini, op. cit., pp. 245-247; 250.

Prof. **Francesco Patrizi** of Cherso (1529-1597), of the papal university, was born "to an Italianized noble Croatian family in Cherso (Cres) Dalmatia, a city that is now part of the republic of Croatia but which in Patrizi's day was ruled by the Venetian Republic." [22]

[22] Leijenhorst, "Francesco Patrizi's Hermetic Philosophy," in Van den Broek and Hanegraaff eds., *Gnosticism and Hermeticism* (1998), p. 125.

"Not to be confused with the earlier humanist and political theoretician, Francesco Patrizi of Siena (1413-1494) ...Patrizi began his initial scholarly training in his home city, followed by studies in Venice and Ingolstadt, before enrolling at the University of Padua in 1547." [23]

[23] Moreschini, op.cit. and https://plato.stanford.edu/entries/patrizi/

"There, Patrizi moved in important circles, being associated with men like Niccolo Sfondrati, later Gregory XIV; Ippolito Aldobrandini, later Clement VIII; and Gerolamo della Rovere (nephew of Sixtus IV), Scipione Valiero and Agostino Valiero, who would all end as cardinals." [24]

[24] Leijenhorst, op.cit., p. 125.

With reference to his future impact, we read, “That Hermeticism is still so deeply engrained in the mind of a pious Jesuit as late as the seventeenth century, may suggest that (Francesco) *Patrizi’s* advice to the Jesuits to take up Hermeticism was not out of place... in this survival in seventeenth-century Jesuitism of the most enthusiastic type of Renaissance religious Hermeticism we have something like another of those esoteric channels through which the Hermetic tradition is carried on...” [25]

After Patrizi published his heretical occult treatise, *Nova de universis philosophia,* [26] Pope Clement VIII promoted Patrizi to Professor of Philosophy at the papal university of Rome, the Sapienza. Patrizi was thereby directing the channel of Hermetic diabolism into the youthful elite of the Church.

In his *New Philosophy of Everything,* the Renaissance papacy’s Professor of Platonism celebrated the replacement of fixed dogma, as represented by Thomistic scholasticism, with the situation ethics of Neoplatonism. Patrizi taught that “On the basis of what the most illustrious and ancient wise men said (i.e. Zoroaster, Hermes... Orpheus, Pythagoras) ...it can then be deduced that a most ancient doctrine was passed down according to which the world has a soul.” [27]

In his appendix to the *Nova,* Patrizi celebrates the *Oracula Chaldaica,* a compendium of Platonic, neo-Pythagorean, Gnostic and Persian doctrines. In his introduction to the *Oracula,* “Patrizi affirms that it contains ‘such admirable, such divine laws concerning the Trinity, the divine orders (celestial hierarchies), and the excellency of the soul... Zoroaster can be seen, not without justification, as the one who before all others as it were, laid the foundations of Catholic faith, however unpolished they may be... Plato... transmitted the Hermetic-Zoroastrian ‘secret doctrine’ of the Chaldeans and Egyptians orally to his pupils.” [28]

Patrizi was professor at the Sapienza, imparting the occult stew of Neoplatonic Hermeticism to a new generation and enjoying the protection of Cardinal Ippolito Aldobrandini (the future pope). By 1594 his book had been in print for nearly three years. During those years Vatican Prof. Patrizi was invulnerable from repression under the supposedly harshly anti-occult Pope Clement VIII. This protection continued until significant unrest arose among orthodox Catholic churchmen, which in turn led to the *Nova de universis philosophia* being placed on the Index of Prohibited Books. It is at this point in

---

[25] Yates, *Giordano Bruno and the Hermetic Tradition,* pp. 421-423.

[26] “New Philosophy of Everything” (Ferrara, 1591).

[27] Moreschini, op. cit., p. 263.

[28] Leijenhorst, op.cit., pp. 133-134.

Patrizi's biography where, typically, New Age writers as well as Church of Rome apologists, halt their accounts. They surmise that Patrizi's career was "destroyed" by "bigoted prelates" (the New Age tale), or "vigilant conservative prelates" (the papist's story). Despite this disinformation from two symbiotic wings of consensus history, in reality, *Patrizi's occult paganism inhered in the Renaissance Church and was never extirpated.*

The case of Patrizi is instructive for the purposes of our study. His career illustrates the Machiavellian tactics whereby the papacy would promote radical occult syncretists. Then, when there was a sustained outcry from true Catholics, a token gesture of disciplining or punishing the occultist was performed in public. Patrizi was one such occultist. Catholics point to the Index's theatrical ban on his book *Nova de universis philosophia.* They don't see (or refuse to see) what came before the discipline, and more importantly what came afterward, in terms of how Patrizi fared in his future life and prospects:

"Patrizi developed a thorough and vehement critique of the then still-dominant Aristotelian-Scholastic philosophy and his own alternative Hermetic-Platonist system, *which was to replace the former at the curricula of the universities of all Christendom.* Patrizi's plea for a new Hermetic-Platonist philosophy fully in accord with Catholic faith at first seemed to find considerable resonance. None other than the pope himself (Clement VIII, as indicated, a former fellow student at Padua), called Patrizi to the newly created chair of Platonist philosophy at the Sapienza, the papal university in Rome." [29]

[29] Ibid., p. 127 (emphasis supplied). The preceding six occult agents who were adherents of popery, Lazzarelli, Correggio, Galatino, Thenaud, Steuco and Patrizi, are but the tip of the proverbial iceberg in terms of the personnel who played a significant part in transforming the Catholic Church into the occult Church of Rome. There are of course many more listed in these pages (chapter VIII alone yields a harvest of Judases).

Chapter XII

The Moral Theology of Mental Reservation and Equivocation in the Church of Rome

With Special Reference to Alphonsus Liguori

> "With St. Augustine... strong convictions were established on the subject of veracity. During the Middle Ages scholastic theologians accepted and expanded upon, but never deviated from Augustine's definition of a lie and his teaching that to utter the opposite of what one holds to be true is intrinsically evil. In the 16th century this tradition began to weaken..." [1]

There cannot be a Church that is eager to have the Neoplatonic-Hermetic doctrines, the Babylonian Talmud, and later the Kabbalah, published and distributed far and wide throughout its intellectual circles, without paying a severe and tragic price for this treachery. The measure that was meted out[2] after the spread of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic, Talmudic and Kabbalistic theology, occurred within the hierarchy, and later, through the Confessional, it was transmitted to the Catholic people in general.

It is true that casuistry had been a "religious science" as far back as the Catholic Middle Ages. Yet, it had remained, in that age, largely anchored to the requirements and verities of Scripture, and the sound traditions derived from the lives of the orthodox Fathers and other holy persons. After the genie of Neoplatonic-Hermeticism and the Talmud and Kabbalah had been released from the lamp where they had been confined by the Church for centuries, casuistry became another name for a highly evolved sophistry, which concealed a method of justification for sin, by means of shrewd alibis and elaborate rationales by which the law of God could be circumvented under the direction of charlatans posing as His priests and theologians.

[Page 406 The Moral Theology of Mental Reservation and Equivocation]

The reanimation of pagan Greek thought in the Renaissance brought with it a renewed appreciation for a school of sophistry centered on Protagoras (490-420 B.C.). Sophistry seems to have begun with the study of techniques of argument and persuasion, thereby constituting a branch of the classical and legitimate art of rhetoric. Under Protagoras however, the sophists became associated with techniques for making lies appear true, and crimes, virtues. Protagoras himself is reputed to have alluded to these reversals of fact with his claim to "make the weaker argument the stronger."

Plato was far too serious a dissembler to seriously commit in public to the principles of sophistry, which he denounced. A true master of sophistry would be the last to admit it. In one illustrative case, Plato's stirring accusation of mendacity against poets, “proves on closer analysis to be a condemnation of their failure to use their lies on behalf of the state, rather than a condemnation of lies as such.” [3]

---

[1] *New Catholic Encyclopedia* (1967), vol. 9, p. 662.

[2] "...with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again." Matthew 7:2.

[3] Ann Jefferson, *Times Literary Supplement,* June 3, 2016, p. 5.

Talmudic Oath-Breaking
A Pattern for the Church of Rome

The Renaissance witnessed the rise of a theology which legitimated deception, lying and oath-breaking startlingly similar to Judaism’s notorious *Kol Nidrei* rite of nullification of promises, vows and oaths. Before we proceed into the Church of Rome’s theology of oath-breaking and sundry forms of deception, the reader should be acquainted with the Talmudic *Kol Nidrei.* On Yom Kippur Eve the promise-breaking *Kol Nidrei* ritual is conducted in the synagogue.

The Babylonian Talmud in Mishnah Hagigah 1:8 (a) admits that there is no Biblical basis for the *Kol Nidrei* rite. Rabbi Moses Maimonides confirms that the *Kol Nidrei* ceremony is not in any way Biblical: “The absolution from oaths has no basis whatever in the Written Torah.” [4]

[4] *Mishneh Torah,* Sefer Haflaah, Hilkhot Shevuot 6:2.

The Talmudic law concerning the *Kol Nidrei* rite is as follows: “And he who desires that none of his vows made during the year shall be valid, let him stand at the beginning of the year and declare, ‘Every vow which I make in the future shall be null.” [5]

[5] BT Nedarim 23a and 23b.

Note that the Talmud declares that the action nullifying vows is to be taken at the beginning of the year and with regard to *promises made in the future.* This distinction is critical. It contradicts what the deceivers tell the public: that *Kol Nidrei* is a penitential service for begging forgiveness for promises broken in the past, rather than what it is: a nullification made in advance for vows and oaths yet to be made (and deliberately broken with impunity).

This “advance stipulation” is called *bitul tenai* and it is the basis for a Judaic person being absolved ahead of time for violating future oaths and promises, or to use the rabbinic lawyer’s jargon: “declaration of intent for the anticipatory invalidation of future vows.”

This corresponds to the Talmudic lesson that God rewards clever liars (Kallah 51a). One pities the poor people ensnared in this sordid charade of cajoling God into helping them cheat; and more so for those supposed conservative and traditional Catholics who imagine they can follow the clever liars among the Church of Rome’s popes, prelates and theologians into “Catholic” forms of oath-breaking, while priding themselves on being part of a “Catholic Faith” that is anti-Talmudic. Satan is a mocker and here is his mockery, helped along by those who have curtailed their divinely-bestowed powers of discernment in subservience to their *religiose* beliefs.

While officially condemned in 1679, the sanction for lying and deceit continues to form a powerful underground current among the personnel of the Church of Rome. The ascendance of the Money Power, Judaism and the occult, the Second Vatican Council, the post-conciliar Judaism adopted by the popes, and the relentless deception mounted to defend serial child molesters and their enablers among the bishops, cardinals and pontiffs, stem from the moral disease that arose during the Renaissance.

From the days of the Gospel to that of St. Augustine in the fourth century, mendacity and dissimulation were condemned as attributes of the devil. Eight hundred years later St. Thomas Aquinas and his cohort, using the analytical tools of scholasticism, affirmed the condemnation. Then, beginning with the Renaissance, a theology of lying derived from casuistry, gained purchase within the Church.

There are two types of casuistry. The first, *classical casuistry,* pre-dates the Renaissance. It concerns “the art or science of bringing general moral principles to bear upon particular cases.” Deception and prevarication are not intrinsic to *classical casuistry,* though it can become subject to hair-splitting and the lawyer’s tendency to exculpate based on procedural minutiae and special pleading. *Renaissance casuistry* however, is another matter altogether—the degenerate stepchild of classical casuistry, representing a brazen phenomenon centered on the question of *how to avoid telling the truth without appearing to be lying.*

This conundrum was solved by the employment of two Talmudic tactics: *equivocation* and *mental reservation* (also known as mental restriction). Both of these techniques exist in rabbinic texts under other names.[6] Prior to the Renaissance, these were generally despised and opposed in Christendom. Commensurate with the abandonment of God’s immutable laws against usury,[7]

---

[6] Cf. Hoffman, *Judaism Discovered,* pp. 593-612; also cf. 149-152, and 169-174.

[7] “In this modern period of moral theology the sufficiency of attrition without any strictly so-called initial charity on the part of the penitent as a proximate disposition for the remission of sin in the sacrament of Penance may be considered as established. The changed conditions in our modern capitalist society have had their effect on moral questions, for morality must always take account of altered

> circumstances. Perhaps the chief result in this direction is that a practical solution has been attained of the long controversy about the lawfulness of taking interest for a loan of money. The lawfulness of the practice is now admitted; the only moral question is concerning the amount which may be exacted.” Rev. Thomas Slater, S.J., A *Short History of Moral Theology,* (1909), sec. III: The Modern Period.

and the support for the Kabbalah and Talmud from the late 1400s onward, the Church proceeded to harbor in its inner councils and missionary precincts, equivocation and mental reservation.

Equivocation

With verbal equivocation it is not a lie to make a statement which possesses both true and false meanings, provided that it is true according to one’s own sense and intention. In its mildest form, equivocation is little more than a lawyer’s trick, a “little white lie” as they say, centered on the principle that the equivocator does not deceive, but rather he allows his interlocutor to deceive himself. According to Jesuit seminary rector Fr. Robert Persons (1544-1610, also called “Parsons”), where a man is “unjustly questioned”... and where “the first and principal intention of the answerer is not to hurt or impugn others, but to defend and cover himself... it followeth evidently, that it can be no lie, nor deception on his part, though by his manner of answering they deceive themselves, which is not to be imputed to any fault of his.” [8]

[8] A *Treatise tending to Mitigation towardes Catholicke-Subjectes in England* (1607).

As late as 1595 among shocked Catholic lay people in England, equivocation by priests “caused general disquiet... and was much wondered at.” [9]

[9] Antonia Fraser, *Faith and Treason* (Doubleday, 1996), p. 241.

The concept of a questioner being allowed to “deceive themselves” is a loophole that *permits the deceiver to proceed with his deception by assigning responsibility for it to the victim of the ruse,* predicated on the concept that the other person has no legitimate right to be told the truth. This is dangerously close to the rabbinic deprecation of the rights of the gentile, consonant with equivocation: that the gentile is not owed a candid answer.

By now readers might be nodding their heads in recognition at what they regard as a proprietary Jesuit technique. Yet certain distinguished non-Jesuit Catholic theologians were no less smitten with this stratagem, which gained acceptance from the concept that certain persons do not have a right to the truth. In the *Summa de casibus conscientiae,* published in 1488, the Franciscan theologian Angelus de Clavasio (1411-1495) asserted that an "unjustly questioned" man could reply by saying "what is true according to his own meaning, even if it is false according to the understanding of the hearer." This is harmless and patently ethical when an eight-year-old child asks his parents who have just emerged from their bedroom what they have been doing inside of it. It is another matter entirely when applied to an adult, particularly one in authority. Imagine a man who was speeding in his automobile justifying telling a policeman that he had not been speeding, after the officer asked him about it, because the speeder

decides that the policeman is "unjustly interrogating me" or is "someone who does not have a right to the truth."

When Church of Rome Bishop William Skylstad of Spokane, Washington, was repeatedly questioned by lawyers concerning a child-molesting priest who flagrantly raped boys in a rectory which the priest shared for years with Skylstad, when the latter was pastor, Bishop Skylstad would not give a straight answer. The repeated failure on the part of clerics and prelates around the world to straightforwardly answer questions about molester priests who they shielded and enabled, demonstrates that the legacy of equivocation and *mental reservation* (a false statement contradicted silently and internally in the mind of the liar, or by an inaudible whisper made by the liar), remains intact.

As someone who is not himself a cardinal or bishop, the interrogator therefore is, according to the doctrine of equivocation, not entitled to a candid answer. This type of thinking emanates from a superiority complex and is not confined to the Catholic hierarchy. The English Puritan theologian Richard Baxter wrote, "If I am unjustly interrogated by someone who has no authority to question me, I may lawfully answer him in such doubtful words as purposely are intended to deceive him, or leave him ignorant of my sense, so be it they be not lies or false in the ordinary usage of those words." [10]

First among Catholics, and later Protestants, a rabbinic type of escape clause was created during the Renaissance to justify deceptive speech. Whereas the rabbis justified deception against the *goyim,* the Christian cleric rationalized deception with regard to someone who, it was decided, did not have the “right” or “authority” to question them. This was a revolutionary break with Christ’s command — “Let your yes be yes, and your no be no, anything else is of the devil” (Matthew 5:37). The devil was shockingly proximate in the Renaissance, and his cunning human agents processed the clergy by first offering cases of supposedly “harmless” dissimulation that only a fanatic would denounce. One of the most famous examples circulated throughout the Church, was put forth by the Dominican theologian Dominico Soto (1494-1560) in his *De Justitia et Jure libri decem.* It concerns a priest-confessor who is asked a question which he can only answer from knowledge he gained in secret in the confessional, from a penitent. The priest therefore replies to the questioner, “No, I don’t know” and then, using the other deception technique, mental reservation, says mentally to himself inwardly, “not in such a way that I can reveal it.”

---

[10] *A Christian Directory: or a sum of practical theologie and cases of conscience* (London, 1673), p. 430. Baxter was one of the earliest Puritan advocates of redefining what constitutes usury (cf. *Usury in Christendom,* p. 49). The legacy of this Renaissance sophistry continues: Ted R. Weiland is a contemporary Protestant exegete in Nebraska. He writes: "No one who is seeking to do us evil… is entitled to the truth. More than that, it can with scriptural grounds be called an evil to tell the truth to evil men… people who do not distinguish between righteous and unrighteous lying fall under the Apostle Paul's description of people who use Yahweh's laws unlawfully…" ("Righteous Lying," in *The 9th Commandment: Thou Shalt Not Bear False Witness*).

Notice the clever example: deception is perpetrated for the good cause of protecting both the confidence of a penitent and the integrity of the process whereby sinners reveal their transgressions to the priest. Without being fearfully cognizant of the Biblical injunctions and the church law and practice institutionalized for centuries, it is difficult to argue against the example given.

We do have from the life of Jesus Christ a warrant for the right to remain *silent,* as Our Lord was silent before the Jewish court, and later before Pontius Pilate, in certain parts of their exchange. As St. Augustine writes, “Although every one who tells a lie may wish to conceal what is true, yet not every one who wishes to conceal what is true tells a lie.”

These are the only options available to the Christian who does not want to hate his master who said, “If you love me, keep my commandments” (John 14:15). Against the truth of God is arrayed the worldly-wise Talmudic-Renaissance lawyer’s stratagems. The priest who knows the secret sins of the penitent can remain silent in the face of a question about those sins, but he cannot answer falsely, if he loves his Savior.

In an old story, another widely disseminated sucker-bait offered to persuade Christian religious personnel of the morality of equivocation (deceptive speech), involves self-protection. It seems that a certain Christian traveler, upon arriving at the gates of a foreign city, is interrogated by the guards concerning whether he is coming from a town believed to have the plague. Here the tale varíes somewhat: in one version the traveler knows for a fact that his town does not have the plague; in another version the plague is raging in his town but he knows he has not been infected by it. If he tells the truth about coming from the town, then the sentries will bar him from their city. He has nowhere else to seek shelter, and there are wild beasts and brigands outside the gates of the city. According to the Dominican theologian Silvestro ("Sylvester") Mazzolini da Prierio (1460-1523), who was the protégé of Pope Leo X and a director of the Inquisition in Rome, [11] the traveler in the story has no obligation to answer the question correctly, but he does have an obligation to assure them that his entry will not endanger the welfare of the city. Consequently, 1. the traveler decides that the real question is not about what town he comes from, but rather, whether or not he is a carrier of contagion. 2. The traveler also decides that the guards have the right to know whether or not he is infected. Since he believes he is not carrying the plague, he is allegedly morally in the right when he states to the guards that he is not from the town in question. Rather than a lie, the theologian Prierio adduces the traveler's answer to be an "ambiguous reply" and therefore, "truthful under the circumstances."

The tactics on display in the preceding tangled web of deceit are inculcated into clients a hundred times a day in law offices throughout America. They are "clever" and "sophisticated" devices, yet they possess none of the vulnerability of Christ: "...power resides in a complete abandonment and surrender to the will of God and His laws, a faithful reliance that says, 'If God is truth, he will be found only within truth, and not in a lie.' This is the sort of heart-over-head theology that invites mockery, even as it zeroes in on Christ's urging toward 'childlike faith." [12]

Instilled in the practitioners of the vice of equivocation is a situation ethic whereby cheating under certain circumstances is permissible, and it is the cheater who decides when the circumstances arise. A Christian society cannot function as God intended with this type of rationalization, which reflects the morals of the Babylonian Talmud (Yoma 83b; Yevamot 65b and 106a; Nedarim 62b). Jesus prayed that His Father's Will be done on earth as it is in heaven (Matt. 6:10). Is there deception in heaven? Will the Gospel gain adherents—will we convert the teeming masses of China and India—by Christians being known as sly operators who speak with a forked tongue "under the circumstances"?

---

[11] http://www.ccel.org/s/schaff/encyc/encyc09/htm/iv.iv.liv.htm

[12] Elizabeth Scalia, "Defending Christine O'Donnell," *First Things,* September 21, 2010.

Another rationale for deceptive speech and expression is a resort to those cases in the Old Testament where deceit occurred, as for example Abraham counseling Sarah to tell the Pharaoh that she was his sister and not his wife (Genesis 12: 11-20). This is classic equivocation on the rationale that Sarah was (in fact) Abraham's half-sister. There are other Old Testament examples. First, we observe that there is nothing of deceit, equivocation or mental reservation in Jesus Christ or His Gospel. Neither are there injunctions incumbent upon the Christian, as there were in the Old Testament which were incumbent in certain circumstances upon the Israelites, to extirpate pagan peoples who, by means of *magica sexualis,* propitiated false gods. The Old Testament is the chronicle of fallen man in exile from Eden on the pilgrim road to the coming of the Messiah, the new Adam who regenerates man's relationship with God. In the Christian believer's living covenant, our regenerated relationship with the Son of God, the vengeance of old (Deuteronomy 32:35), *continues* to be visited upon hard-hearted wrong-doers, but that vengeance is now visited *soley* by Our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ (Hebrews 10:30). [13]

---

[13] Some people use as their alibi for rejecting Scripture, the claim that God's war in the Old Testament on hostile aliens (*nokri*) who employed sex magic in the course of their idolization of demon gods, was barbaric in its violence, and consequently, the God of the Bible cannot be the true God. Douglas Wilson, writing in the wake of the Jan. 21, 2017 "women's marches" protesting against the newly-inaugurated President Donald Trump, which had as their principal theme, "reproductive rights" (i.e. abortion on demand), addressed the issue as follows: "These are the people who, if you were talking to them about the authority of the Scriptures, would protest that the Bible cannot be taken as the Word of God because it required the extermination of Canaanite men, women and children. These are the same people who, just two days ago, were out there marching in the defense of their own right to slaughter their own children. In short, they do not object to taking of human life, but rather they object to the taking of Canaanite life by the God of Scripture. They object to this because they are obviously Canaanites, and so the whole set up makes them nervous. They do agree that the deity has the right to take life as the deity wills it—they just insist on the right to be the deity." ("Nasty Canaanite Women," Blog and Mablog, January 23, 2017, https://dougwils.com/s7-engaging-the-culture/nasty-canaanite-women.html).

With this in mind, let us take the New Testament view of an Old Testament figure often cited as a righteous liar. Rahab was a harlot in Jericho who hid Joshua's two spies. She hid them under drying stalks of flax on her roof. Rahab deceived the pursuers of the pair by sending them off on a false trail, thereby saving the lives of Joshua's men. Rahab is referred to in the New Testament in Hebrews 11:31 and James 2:25. "Significantly, the passages cited do not single out her deception as a praiseworthy act. Heb. 11:31, emphasizing the faith of each cited individual, refers simply to Rahab's having ‘received the spies with peace’—no mention of the deception. Similarly, James 2:25, emphasizing the life of action which follows from regeneration, only mentions that ‘she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way.’ Rahab, at great personal risk, sent them out by lowering them from the back window on the city wall (Joshua 2:18). For this risky act of rescue, she is commended in the New Testament.” [14]

[14] “Deception is Impermissible,” in *Antithesis,* vol. I, no. 3; May/June 1990.

There is no hint of commendation of her for any other reason. How could there be, in view of the life of Jesus which was without spot or blemish? Our Redeemer taught us to be on the watch for two characteristics of the devil: 1. He is “a *murderer* from the beginning, who *abode not in the truth,* because *there is no truth in him.*” 2. “When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for *he is a liar, and the father of it.*”

Anyone who can glean from the preceding words a warrant for equivocation or mental reservation is intellectually this writer’s superior, since we can see nothing of the kind. Do Christians abide in the truth when they equivocate, or allow other persons with whom they are conversing to “deceive themselves”? Are the survival tactics of clever lawyers the Way of Christ? Was it as lawyers that the early Christians went forth to the lions? Did they conquer pagan Rome by cunning speech, or was it their complete innocence and vulnerability that disarmed their enemies?

“It is evident from all this that by the end of the sixteenth century there was impending *a total change in the doctrines and practice of the Church* with regard to sin and the means of its avoidance and cure.” [15]

[15] Henry Charles Lea, *History of Auricular Confession* (1968), vol. 2, p. 301 (emphasis supplied).

[The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome Page 415]

Studying the layers of bureaucracy that began to erupt from casuistry during the Renaissance, we encounter a hair-splitting lawyer’s maze of subtle craft that came to be known as “probabilism,” which took the morally depraved and indeed diabolic position that where two conflicting theological views were advanced, the perspective that had *the least amount of support in the Bible, and was thus the least “probable,” could be accepted as grounds for Catholic judgment, direction, and action.* The theological impetus for probabilism seems to have originated with Spanish Jesuit priests, among them Tomás Sánchez (1550-1610, cf. his *Opus Morale),* and Gabriel Vazquez (1551-1604), as outlined in the latter’s 1597 treatise on St. Thomas Aquinas, *Prima Secundae.*

The renowned Francisco Suarez (1548-1617) was professor at the Jesuit College in Rome and then at Coimbra. In his *Tractatus Quintus de Juramento et Adjuratione* [16]

[16] Book 3, chapters 9-11 in *Opera Omnia,* 24 vols. (Paris, 1859), vol. 14.

he offered various rationales for employing “ambiguous language” to swear an oath without committing perjury. He explained that a lie is that which is contrary to one’s own mind, rather than contrary to the minds of one’s interlocutors. He has a reputation for being conservative in the application of mental reservation, however on closer examination it appears that he mainly hedged the practice with lofty rhetoric, calling it allowable only when someone was unjustly compelled to swear an oath or divulge a fact. When it was not used for just cause, he warned that it constituted a grave sin. The expansive hole in that statement is the license that mental reservation extended to the potential perjurer who was the ultimate decider of whether his judges and interrogators were deserving of a correct answer from him, or were even in a position to judge him. Human nature being what it is, an accused person will be prone to a subjective view of his accusers and judges. One of the methods of restriction which Suarez recommended to those believed they were being unfairly oppressed by police and judges, was to answer out loud the question of whether one did or did not commit a crime as follows: “I did not do it.” This was to be followed by the whispered word “today.”

Lest we imagine that this despicable trickery could somehow be confined to a legal setting, young Catholic men who wanted to gain sexual favor from a young woman would tell her audibly, “I love you,” and then inaudibly mumble, “for tonight.” Suarez would have denounced the practice, but how is the barn door of mental reservation closed in one instance when it has been opened in another? A culture of deceit inevitably spreads its contagion when immoral acts are condoned by religious authorities. In a society ensnared thus, the lie told in court before an “unjust judge” may be seen to justify, in the eyes of a young man, a lie told to an “impure” woman.

[Page 416 The Moral Theology of Mental Reservation and Equivocation]

The mental reservation allowed by certain of Rome’s early modern theologians is an end-justifies-the-means practice which is unscriptural and ungodly. A lie does not stop being a lie because of a just end. To surmount this objection, Suarez, like many of his brother Renaissance-era theologians, implicated Jesus in the justification of lying. Suarez wrote that when Jesus stated concerning Judgment Day, “But of that day and that hour no man knows, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father only” (Mark 13:32)—He was using mental reservation. Suarez proposes that Our Lord actually knew the day and the hour but the disciples did not deserve to know that, so he lied to them—or rather He “mentally restricted” His statement.

The defenders of Suarez will reply that he wrote many hundreds of pages of very edifying teachings. This is true. But ten thousand such tomes cannot cancel the disastrous consequences of teaching that the Son of God was a deceiver.

Another key figure was a member of the Augustinian Order, Martin de Azpilcueta, the Renaissance Catholic canon lawyer (1493-1586, nicknamed "the *Navarrus*" after his native land, Navarre), who was the author, in 1553, of the wildly popular *Enchiridion sive Manuale Confessariorum et Paenitentium* ("Handbook for Confessors and Penitents"), eighty-one editions of which were published in less than seventy-five years. Azpilcueta had powerful allies in Rome, among them Pope St. Pius V and Charles Borromeo, the Counter-Reformation dynamo who would be canonized a saint. Borromeo gave Azpilcueta a pivotal appointment as lead canonist in the Apostolic Penitentiary, charged with oversight of the theology of the Confessional and the Sacrament of Penance. Like Liguori's impact in the eighteenth century, this signified that Azpilcueta's probabilism would be directed toward the theology of the Confessional, and through that sacrament to the masses of the Catholic world.

Borromeo may have been the patron saint of the Counter-Reformation, but Azpilcueta was the patron saint of perjury. In the *Enchiridion* he ruled that a Catholic witness who is being questioned by a judge who the witness regards as having "exceeded his competence," or "proceeded unlawfully," in that case is fully warranted in swearing an oath that is not true. The self-serving nature of permitting a Catholic witness or defendant to personally determine to his own decidedly partisan satisfaction, that his judge is incompetent or unlawful, and therefore undeserving of the truth, renders the courtroom a theatre of falsehood and destroys the basis of jurisprudence. These are the tactics of the synagogue and the masonic lodge. They have no place in any theology bearing the name of Jesus Christ, although Our Lord is dragged into these sordid deceptions through refinement of Azpilcueta's recommended courtroom tactics. He suggests that one way to lie under oath to a judge and not commit perjury is to respond with "mixed speech" that is part verbal and part mental. It's true overall even though the verbal part is a lie, but since Jesus can hear the mental part, the Catholic is therefore speaking the truth before God.

The Jesuit casuists of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries were coining a Newspeak lexicon in which black was white; in which lies were not-lies—they were legitimate means of withholding truth. The degradation of the language through redefinition would become one of the principal engines for the legalization of usury: it was redefined as not-usury, a legitimate means of earning a living.

Due to their prestige, Suarez and Azpilcueta's doctrines achieved an unparalleled renown in the Catholic world and inspired Jesuits such as English Father Robert Persons/Parsons (*A Treatise tending to Mitigation towardes Catholicke-Subjectes in England,* 1607); Louvain Prof. Leonard Lessius (*De Justitia et Jure,* 1605); Ingolstadt Prof. Gregory de Valencia (*Commentariorum Theologicarum,* 1619); Théophile Raynaud's *Disputatio de Veritate Moran cum Mendacio & Locutionibus Aequivocis ac Mente Restrictis Comparata,* 1665; and the moral theology of the Redemptorist "Saint" Alphonsus Liguori in Italy.

[Page 418 The Moral Theology of Mental Reservation and Equivocation]

While dozens of tomes have been written to explain it and justify it, probabilism is just a fancy word for relieving the Catholic's obligation to obey the law of God. According to probabilism, a single "Catholic authority" (such as Alphonsus Liguori), is adequate for rendering a theological opinion "probable," and therefore worthy of being taught in seminaries and imparted to penitents in the confessional. Here is the lawlessness which Martin Luther with his "Sin boldly" comment on God's mercy, has been branded. If a Catholic wants to commit a sin of lust, of lying, thievery, etc., and he can locate a recognized theological authority who will furnish him with ingenious grounds for indulging in that sin, then he has the liberty to proceed. This is probabilism. Predicated on a probable opinion, the Catholic taking the lenient view on the sin he wishes to commit, cannot be condemned. After all, his moral agency is not part of the equation. He is acting not by the light of Scripture, or even his own conscience, but through obedience to the guidance of a Catholic authority. This distinction is termed in Rome's theology, *probabilitas extrinseca.*

While it would be wrong to describe as the "new art of lying," the sewer stream from hell which erupted on earth from Rome's casuistic probabilism— since Satan has been the Father of Lies from Genesis 3 onward— it was most certainly a recrudescence of perjury and false witness which was now rendered the integral core of the West's most dominant institution.

In light of the extent of lying in our 21st century world, where one is considered a fool not to pad one's resumé, exactly how does deceptive speech harm the well-being of our culture and commonweal? Does it not compound the evil of our times? St. Augustine raised the spectre of the double heart, "When regard for truth has been broken down or slightly weakened, all things will remain doubtful." What happens to us as a people when we catch the virus of deviousness and think, "everyone else deceives when the circumstances call for it, why shouldn't I?"

Within the Church a hue and cry was raised against the moral theology of the Jesuits, in particular their probabilism, mental reservation (also called “mental restriction”), and equivocation. Among the leaders of this protest was the French theologian Rev. Fr. Antoine Arnauld (1612-1694). His argument was made in his study, *Théologie morale des Jesuites.* The Catholic mathematician Blaise Pascal (1623-1662) preceded Arnauld’s attack, with his *Provincial Letters,* which took the Jesuits to task for the same reasons. Pascal’s book was translated into English by Henry Hammond. It corroborated the suspicion among the English that the Church of Rome was synonymous with underhanded tactics of deceit. Despite the “Jansenist” cloud that hung over the reputations of both individuals, Pascal and Arnauld were Catholics of rectitude.

The Oxford Professor, Anglican priest, and commissioner of education for England,[17] Rev. Frederick Meyrick (1827-1906), wrote:

“In his books *De Mendacio* and *Contra Mendacium,* St. Augustine enumerates eight sorts of lying. Every one of these he rejects uncompromisingly. He denies that we may at any time be guilty of moral falsehood under whatever temptation we may be. The sin of the tongue in violating veracity is as great, he says, as the sin of the hand in theft or in murder, or, at least, we are no more justified in committing the former than the latter. He discusses all the examples of apparent falsehood in the Old and New Testaments, to which those who had a theory of lying appealed in his days as they do now, and concludes that ‘for the examples which are brought forward out of the Holy Scriptures, either they are not falsehoods or, if they are falsehoods they are not proposed as objects of imitation...

“Now we can conceive the possibility of a case arising in which the two virtues of veracity and charity might so clash as to make it at least pardonable to deflect somewhat from the rigid observance of the former. St. Augustine does not admit of such a possibility. ‘You must not destroy your own soul,’ he replies, ‘for any supposed good of your neighbor, spiritual or temporal.”

Augustine “nowhere makes a distinction between lying and equivocating. Equivocating is in his estimation lying... The ‘double heart’ is, according to his teaching, the source of the

[17] His official title was, “Her Majesty’s Inspector of Schools.” Meyrick served in that capacity from 1859-1869.

accursed thing and any man 'who has one thing in his mind, and enunciates another by words or any sort of signs,' is guilty of sin. Word-jugglery is a thing unknown to him, for the sage of Hippo was... too honest to deceive others by such a transparent fallacy as that which lies at the bottom of the justification of equivocation... And yet it is to St. Augustine that (Catholic "Saint" Alphonsus) Liguori refers in justification of his Equivocation and non-pure Mental Reservation, which, according to St. Augustine's definition, are merely forms of expressing a lie." [18]

[18] Frederick Meyrick, *Moral and Devotional Theology of the Church of Rome* (London, 1857), pp. 39-41.

What happened to our moral fibre as a nation after it was revealed that we went to war in Iraq in 2003 with assurances from our highest leaders that the Iraqis threatened the world with weapons of mass destruction? Since then it has been insinuated that we shouldn't anguish over the consequences of this serious breach of the nation's trust, since we were deceived for a good cause, the liberation of Iraq from the tyrant, Saddam Hussein. This type of thinking breeds a corrosive cynicism, the effects of which are difficult to gauge but are most certainly destructive of the virtue of integrity as a non-negotiable standard.

What is your opinion of the man or woman in your neighborhood who has a sterling reputation for strict adherence to the truth? Can you do otherwise than to admire and have faith in such a person? The erosion of mutual trust—the old-fashioned business deal that is closed with a handshake—is a barometer of our nation's decline. St. Augustine put his finger on it sixteen hundred years ago when he wrote: "Every liar breaks his faith by lying, since he wishes the person to whom he lies to have faith in him, and yet he does not keep faith with that person when he lies to him. Whoever breaks faith in this manner is guilty of iniquity."

The sly equivocator will here attempt to inject a loophole by alleging that Augustine was referring to boldface lying, not to "mild" types of deception such as equivocation. *Wrong.* Augustine *did* include the tactic of intending to deceive in his definition of lying. One of his definitions of what constitutes lying is "a false signification told with a desire to deceive." He

forbids any equivocation and quashes any rationale for such tactics: "He who says that there are some just lies must be regarded as saying nothing else than that there are some just sins."

The Priscillianists were a heretical sect which justified lying as a form of concealment and self-protection. An orthodox Christian heresy-hunter, Consentius, advocated lying to these liars — in order to identify them and snare them in their heresy. Augustine addresses himself to Consentius concerning the consequences of becoming a knave to catch a knave — “Do you not see how your argument in favor of lying to the Priscillianists supports their views concerning the permissibility of lying?... They must be refuted, not imitated.”

Augustine’s main teachings concerning lying are: Lying is sinful; it brings death to the soul and must not be indulged in for the temporal safety of anyone. One must not lie for the sake of preserving bodily chastity. It is not permissible to lie even to secure eternal salvation for others. The emphasis is on the Scripture: “The son that keeps the word shall be free from destruction.” [19]

[19] For St. Augustine’s writings on this subject, *De mendacio* and *Contra mendacium,* cf. “Lying” and “Against Lying” in *The Fathers of the Church: Saint Augustine: Treatises on Various Subjects* (1952), especially pp. 51-107.

The corollary to strictly truthful speech in a Christian society is respect for the right to silence. For truth to prevail in our hearts and on our lips, we should respect the right to be silent in the face of questions that invade privacy and answers that are not owed to gossips—or an intrusive and oppressive government, for that matter: “And the high priest stood up in the midst and asked Jesus, ‘Have you no answer to make? What is it that these men testify against you?’ But He remained silent and made no answer.” (Mark 14: 60-61; for the silence of Jesus before Herod, cf. Luke 23: 8-9).

From the founding of the Church to the time of the Renaissance, *nothing more was permitted to Christians who did not wish to answer other than silence.* We can find no Christian justification for any other response; neither could the Church, until the coming of the Renaissance. [20]

[20] On the American guarantee of the right to remain silent, cf. Leonard W. Levy, *Origins of the Fifth Amendment: The Right Against Self-Incrimination* (1986). For a survey of the permission to lie as specified in the sacred books of Judaism, cf. this writer’s *Judaism’s Strange Gods* (2011), pp. 146-163, 256, 300-302, 335-343.

[Page 422 The Moral Theology of Mental Reservation and Equivocation]

Mental Reservation

Mental reservation proceeds from equivocation and represents a more grievous transgression of the obligation to be truthful. On the positive side, it is not so well camouflaged in its moral failing as is equivocation, and can be better seen for what it is, and therefore, it is a somewhat more easily discerned indictment of those who advocate it.

There are two types of mental reservation advocated by two different schools of theologians. “Pure” mental reservationist-casuists placed few strictures on the practice. On the other hand, “conservative” or “broad” exponents of mental reservation hedged it with qualifications they believed rendered it morally permissible. The latter appears more hypocritical than the former. [21]

[21] One of the most eloquent jeremiads against mental reservation was issued by the Catholic mathematician Pascal in his *Pensées.*

Mental reservation is such an odious example of lying that it is problematic to distinguish any significant difference between these two schools of thought. In mental reservation a false statement is supposedly made true by the addition of words that are "reserved" within one's own mind and which thereby serve to cancel the spoken or written lie. Once again, as a kind of marketing strategy, seemingly benign case histories of self-protection were put forth to show that lying verbally and then adding an escape clause mentally, was morally permissible, at least in certain circumstances. A "benign" example was given of a man who had been waylaid by robbers. They take all the possessions he has on his person and then make him promise that he will open his storehouse that evening if they release him immediately. The victim agrees to meet the robbers and promises to give them his remaining possessions later that night. He then mentally adds the reserved clause, "If I lawfully owe it to you." Most people, when faced with this man's predicament, would agree that his mental reservation was appropriate and sensible. *Once the principle of mental reservation was established in this extreme case, however, it was then extrapolated to many others.*

According to the Spanish Jesuit Gregorius de Valentia (1549-1603), in his *Commentarium Theologicorum Tomus Tertius* (Venice, 1598), there was a "general precept obliging men to tell the truth, combined with a precept in which certain circumstances permitted or even obliged men to say what they believed to be deceptive falsehoods." We are here approaching an approximation of the rabbinic theology behind the *Kol Nidrei* nullification of vows:

"Mental reservation undermined traditional ideas not only on intentionally deceptive statements, but also on promises and oaths. By including a mental reservation in a promise, a man could evade the obligation to perform that which in spoken words he undertook to perform... Of course, if we follow Valentia in holding that there is a positive precept of truthfulness, we will regard a man who unjustifiably uses mental reservation in a promise, as guilty of infringing the precept. But it looks as though such a man would still evade the obligation to perform in spoken words what he said he would perform. Suppose that I borrow $1,000... promising to repay it on the first day of next month... In making my promise I mentally reserve some such clause as 'provided that I choose to repay the money.' I ought not to make this reservation, but having done so I am under no obligation to return the money unless I choose to... The point about promises was well-made by Henry Mason in *The New Art of Lying, covered by the Jesuits under the Vaile of Equivocation* (London, 1624), pp. 105-106: ‘And if he promises to me a sum of money, how can I tell that he keepeth not a reservation behind, that may disannull his promises aforehand...?”[22]

[22] Johann P. Sommerville, *Conscience and Casuistry* (Cambridge University Press, 2002), p. 176.

The Benedictine monk John Barnes, in his *Dissertatio contra Aequivocationes* (Paris, 1625), wrote, “You should not lie, even to save your life.” A direct command from God would be the sole exception. Biblical liars had either obeyed a divine compulsion or had acted wrongly. Prior to the judicial murder of Jesuit priests in England during the reign of Elizabeth I, equivocation and mental reservation were largely unknown to lay people. Knowledge of the practice had been maintained as something of a clerical secret, though it was present in various arcane volumes of Latin theology, yet these would have been indigestible to all but the most enterprising laymen. Elizabeth’s regime refined torture to an art form and in order not to divulge the identity of fugitive priests or those who harbored them, the hunted Jesuits resorted to equivocation and mental reservation when under interrogation. Since show trials of these persecuted priests were another feature of Elizabethan policy, equivocation and mental reservation on the priests’ part were exposed and came into public view. Inspired by Martin Azpilcueta (recall that he termed his volume on permissible dissimulation, “*novus modus*” [new measure]), Father Robert Southwell “...used this practice (and ingenious theory) of equivocation, though unsuccessfully, when he was tried for treason in London in 1595... Henry Garnet, superior of the English Jesuits from 1586 until his arrest in 1605, sought to explain Southwell’s use of equivocation in the large treatise on the topic that he probably wrote in the late 1590s. Writing to his fellow Jesuit Robert Persons, Garnet explains that he ‘wrote a treatise of equivocation to defend Father Southwell’s assertion, which was much wondered at by Catholics and heretics...

“For Azpilcueta, Garnet and Robert Persons, who also wrote (the aforementioned) treatise on equivocation (*A Treatise tending to Mitigation towardes Catholicke-Subjectes in England*), first published in 1602 and reissued in 1607, an equivocal statement can be distinguished from a lie because in the former type of discourse, the whole truth is present in the discourser’s mind and is indeed communicated to the primary audience of all discourse, God.”[23]

[23] Margaret W. Ferguson, *Dido's Daughters* (University of Chicago, 2003) p. 277. "Persons cleverly insists that it is not the producer of the utterance but rather the recipient, whether reader or auditor, who is ultimately responsible for making it conform to a 'truth'..." (Ferguson, p. 281). This is the attitude of the Talmudic rabbi toward the *goy.*

This is similar to the rabbinic rationale for mental reservation used by a "revered sage" in the Babylonian Talmud, in its account of how Rabbi Eliezer supposedly tricked Blessed Mary into admitting that she conceived Jesus while she was menstruating. Eliezer uses mental reservation to falsely promise Mary that he will guarantee her a future life in heaven if she will tell him the truth about the circumstances of Christ's conception. Concerning his offer of a guarantee, Mary in the Talmud allegedly tells him, "Swear it to me." The

Talmud states that Rabbi Akiba, "*took the oath (to her) with his lips but annulled it in his heart.*" [24]

[24] Babylonian Talmud, Kallah 51a. Also cf. *Judaism Discovered* (2008), p. 383.

In accord with Renaissance Church of Rome theology, the oath is a lie only if taken in isolation. The rabbi's equivocation is not a deception if viewed within the entire context of the expression: the whole that was heard and supposedly approved by God, but not by Mary. It is no coincidence that Renaissance Christians were weaving a corresponding web of Talmudic deceit commensurate with the unprecedented rise of the prestige of the Talmud and the Kabbalah within Catholic intelligentsia of that time.

"As a central figure in the English Catholic community and a proponent of equivocation, Garnet was one of the Crown's most important prisoners, even though he played a minor role in the Gunpowder Plot itself... Scholars cite the equivocation jokes within the Porter scene (of Shakespeare's Macbeth) as topical references to Father Garnet's infamous equivocation when questioned about his role in the Gunpowder Plot." [25]

[25] Rebecca Lemon, *Treason by Words: Literature, Law and Rebellion in Shakespeare's England* (2006), p. 186. Readers are also referred to the oath of office administered by the U.S. government which specifically names and forbids "mental reservation."

Fr. Garnet's A *Treatise of Equivocation,* which was circulated secretly in manuscript but not published until 1851 (under the editorship of David Jardine), was political dynamite. Until recently, authorities in the Church of Rome issued what appeared to be plausible denials of Fr. Garnet's authorship. As much as we wish to show respect to martyred priests who were victims of cruel, hypocritical Protestants, we are duty-bound to mention the sad fact that *A Treatise of Equivocation* bears Talmudic-like aspersions on the character of Jesus Christ. Fr. Garnet's situation was so desperate in terms of the intensity of the hunt for him, and Judaism’s arcane teachings having circulated and radiated from Renaissance Italy as never before, it appears that the combination of the two led him to pen a how-to manual of deceit that also manages to libel Our Lord, as related by Margaret W. Ferguson:

“Garnet, himself executed for treason after his (ambiguous) role in the Gunpowder Plot was discovered, made an important contribution to the evolving arena of contest around equivocation. This area dealt with the philosophy and politics of language as much as with issues of religious doctrine. Garnet adapts Azpilcueta’s formulations about equivocation in ways particularly suited to the situation of Catholics in England. Garnet defends equivocation as a verbal practice of legitimately ‘hiding’ the (whole) truth, and insists that this practice was authorized and illustrated by Christ himself in various New Testament passages of great hermeneutic difficulty. Such passages come to be the model for what counts as a ‘literary’ language of irony, indirection and ‘dark conceit.” [26]

[26] Ferguson, op.cit., p. 227.

Here the plot thickens for, as was previously noted, Garnet’s first motive in writing *A Treatise of Equivocation* was to “defend Father Southwell’s assertion.” According to a theory advanced by historians Clare Asquith and Peter Milward, William Shakespeare was Robert Southwell’s clandestine Catholic disciple. [27]

[27] Cf. Asquith, *Shadow Play: The Hidden Beliefs and Coded Politics of William Shakespeare* (New York, 2005), pp. 65, 72, 114-115, 291, 294; Peter Milward, S.J., *Shakespeare the Papist* (Sapientia Press, 2005), pp. 101-102, 106, 110, 186-187, 204-205, 210, 233. Milward writes: “...the theme of equivocation is taken up not only by the Porter but by Macbeth himself, as when he later complains of ‘the equivocation of the fiend that lies like truth’ (act 5),’ his use of the word was no chance phenomenon... it may have found its way into the mouth of Hamlet, speaking of the cosmic gravedigger... It even looks... as if the Jesuits were responsible... for the vein of indignation that seems to enter deeply into the composition of *Macbeth*” (p. 204).

Milward writes:

“We may do well to remember that Shakespeare was no innocent bystander in all the events leading from the Essex Rebellion to the Gunpowder Plot, nor was he likely to have been deceived by the elaborate working of the government propaganda machine to cast discredit on the English Catholics. ‘Not only was Robert Catesby (accused Gunpowder plotter) his (Shakespeare’s) cousin on his mother’s side, but it is also surprising to see how many of Essex’s supporters as of the gunpowder plotters came from the same part of the English Midlands and met not infrequently at the same Mermaid Tavern in

London... when it came to the Jesuit theory and practice of equivocation, we may safely say that not only did the dramatist feel no horror at it, but he even commended its use, even in terms beyond what the Jesuits themselves would have acknowledged... when he professes horror, with Macbeth, at 'the equivocation of the fiend' he can hardly be thinking of the Jesuits, whom he would have known as innocent victims, but of their persecutors in those 'cunning times'..." [28]

[28] Ibid., Milward, p. 205.

Religiously authorized deception came as a shock to the Christian yeomanry in England, Protestant and Catholic alike:

"Hitherto most laymen, Catholic as well as Protestant, had been ignorant of mental reservation. Now they reacted to it with horror. Catholic vernacular writings, aimed at a lay audience, had inculcated virtues of honesty and truthfulness, claiming that it was heretics who lied. To unsophisticated laymen, however, mental reservation itself seemed no more than downright lying or, worse still, lying of a new and devious variety...

"As early as the 1590s, a manual of casuistry written for the use of Catholic priests on the mission to Protestant England warned that deceptive statements should not be made to Protestant interrogators in the presence of 'rude and simple' Catholic laymen who, 'being ignorant of the difference between pretense and lying... will immediately think that the priest is denying the faith if he uses pretense and... will be confused and inwardly despair if they see a priest do such a thing.' Mental reservation might be justifiable, but it should not be used if it led to bad publicity for the church and its priests. When priests responded to Protestant criticisms of the doctrine, their posture was defensive... The Jesuit Parsons... claim(ed) that Catholic thinkers *permitted* but did not *recommend* the use of mental reservation: they 'do allow and like far better of simple, plain and resolute speech in all Catholics,' but tolerated mental reservation in a few cases since 'perfection is one thing, and obligation another." [29]

[29] Sommerville, op. cit., p. 177.

Parsing "the difference between pretense and lying," and "perfection and obligation," is a Talmudic enterprise which brought disrepute upon the Church that bore the name Catholic, even as Protestant equivocators such as Richard Baxter and William Perkins, who developed the concept of *dolus bonus* ("good deceit"), and mental reservationists like Elizabeth I and her chief co-adjutant, William Cecil, who engaged in that very practice when they were at the mercy of Queen Mary, escaped the opprobrium associated with it and bear no stigma even unto our own time, while Jesuits and Catholics generally bear the brunt of it. Public relations, it seems, is everything. Or as Ronald Reagan told the Governor of New Hampshire, "Image prevails over reality."

We would like to be able to say that since the hunted Catholic priests labored daily under the threat of capture and death by torture, that some amount of equivocating word play, while a moral failure, would be understandable, though not condoned. This may have been true of rank-and-file priests. It does not deserve to be offered in defense of their leaders, Garnet and Persons/Parsons, both of whom wrote manuals of equivocation which dared to implicate Jesus Christ as the father of equivocation, which is an inexcusable act of character assassination.

Having said that, the feigned horror of the Elizabethan regime and the indignation of their Anglican clergymen and Puritan supporters over the means by which some fugitive Catholics fleeing execution may have shaded the truth, is the height of *chutzpah.* At the time the pirate queen's crew were railing in high dudgeon against "Jesuit deceit and mendacity," Sir Francis Walsingham's English Secret Service had carved a niche for itself as the supreme masters of disinformation, covert operations, treachery and deviousness; a reputation well-deserved three hundred fifty years later when the British Secret Intelligence Service tricked America into entering the fratricidal First World War on behalf of "the Crown." While the Jesuits became a byword for dishonesty in the Protestant world, that same world came to adulate Elizabeth and her coruscanting cronies of corruption, as a fine new paradigm of Christian rule and rectitude. Eventually, the vertiginous interpretations and equivocating strategies of the casuists, which were strikingly similar to the convoluted hermeneutic gymnastics of the Talmud, entered Protestantism itself: "In a fine irony of history, a 'science' developed by the Roman Catholic Church to resolve problems of moral choice 'that arose from the 'equal poise' of conflicting laws, obligations and loyalties' was appropriated by both the government and the church of Tudor England, and hence assumed a central place in the legal, political and theological documents of a Protestant realm." [30]

[30] Ferguson, op. cit., p. 282.

Mental reservation, in the form of the propositions of Rome's Renaissance theologian Tomás Sánchez, were finally and formally condemned in 1679, by

Pope Innocent XI (Benedict Odeschalchi, 1611-1689; pontiff from 1676-1689). [31]

Innocent was flawed, and compromised by having done, like his Renaissance predecessors and his post-Renaissance successors, nothing to restore the *de fide* laws against profit on loans, a root of all evil. We cannot, therefore, say, ‘this was a great pope,’ or even ‘this was a good pope.’ Taking the New Testament at its word forbids us from granting our Catholic readers respite from our relentless exposé of the popes. It would be a relief to grant it, if only to relieve the monotony. Yet we would be guilty of overturning the truthful thesis of this book if we were to opine that ‘with the exception of his tolerance for usury, Innocent XI was in many respects a pontiff worthy of admiration.’ We wish we could say so, if it were not an offense against truth.

Would it be better to draw a phrase from nineteenth century literature and refer to Innocent XI as a prostitute with a heart of gold? The appellation would probably satisfy very few, and needlessly antagonize very many, so we will refrain from it and state instead: this was a bad pontiff who did good things on many occasions. His life is a complexity and mystery and we leave the unraveling of it to the Almighty.

Among the good that Pope Innocent XI accomplished was his courageous defiance of an entire entrenched school of powerful ecclesiastics with the explicit anti-mental reservation stance which his papacy had taken. “Out of the sixty-five laxist propositions condemned by Innocent XI and the Holy Office in 1679, two concerned the doctrine of equivocation. The twenty-sixth concerned the right to use mental reservation under oath, and the twenty-seventh concerned the justification of such use because of a just cause...” [32]

Johann Lorenz von Mosheim, the Protestant Chancellor of the University of Göttingen, had qualified praise for Popes Innocent XI and XII:

---

[31] Innocent XI was strenuously opposed by the French monarchy in its Gallican period. For an informative analysis of Gallicanism, cf. Joseph Bergin, “Introduction,” in *The Politics of Religion in Early Modern France,* (Yale University, 2014). Pope Innocent “worked tirelessly to unite Christian princes both Catholic and Protestant” against the growing threat of the Muslim-Turk invasion of Europe. The crushing victory of Christian forces over the Turks at the Gates of Vienna, Austria on Sept. 11, 1683, was attributed to the leadership and financial support of this pope. After Vienna, Muslim conquerors would not imperil Europe again until the immigration invasion which began in the late 20th century.

[32] Stefania Tutino, *Shadows of Doubt: Language and Truth in Post-Reformation Catholic Culture* (2014) p. 35.

"This respectable pontiff acquired a very high and permanent reputation by the austerity of his morals, his uncommon courage and resolution, his dislike of the much grosser superstitions that reigned in the Romish church, his attempts to reform the Romish clergy, and to abolish a considerable number of those fictions and frauds that dishonor their ministry... But it appeared manifestly by his example, that those pontiffs who respect truth and act from virtuous and Christian principles, may indeed form noble plans, but will never be able to bring them into execution, or at least to give them that measure of stability... which is the object of their wishes. By his example and administration, it appeared that the wisest institutions and the most judicious establishments will be unable to stand firm for any considerable time, against the insidious stratagems or declared opposition of a deluded multitude, who are corrupted by the prevalence of licentious morals, whose imaginations are impregnated with superstitious fictions... whose credulity is abused by pious frauds...

"Be that as it may, all the wise and salutary regulations of Innocent XI were suffered almost to ruin by the criminal indolence of Peter Ottoboni, who was raised to the head of the Romish church in the year 1689, and assumed the name of Alexander VIII. A laudable attempt was made to revive them by Innocent XII, a man of uncommon merit and eminent talents whose name was Pignatelli, and who in the year 1691 succeeded Alexander in the papal chair; nor were his zealous efforts absolutely destitute of success. But it was also his fate to learn by experience that the most prudent and resolute pontiffs are unequal to such an arduous task, such a Herculean labor, as the reformation of the church and court of Rome; nor were the fruits of this good pope's wide administration enjoyed long after his decease." [33]

[33] *Ecclesiastic History Ancient and Modern,* transl. Archibald MacLaine (London, 1782), vol. 5, pp. 101-103.

Prior to Innocent XI, mental reservation's soul-rot had progressed so far that the proposition that calumniators, witnesses and unjust judges may be murdered if there is no other way of avoiding their attacks, was accepted in some quarters. [34]

[34] Cf. Meg Lota Brown, *Donne and the Politics of Conscience in Early Modern England,* (1995) p. 42. n. 22; quoting Kenneth E. Kirk, *Conscience and Its Problems* (1927), p. 118.

Despite Pope Innocent XI's ban however, the Renaissance scourge of mental reservation and equivocation were not eradicated from the Church, much less from its very dogma as pronounced by a "saint" declared to be a

“Doctor of the Church” (i.e. a theologian of unimpeachable integrity and authority).

Alphonsus Liguori, “Doctor of the Church”
Patron Saint of Liars and Thieves

The preceding headline is probably sufficient to ensure this writer’s lynching, if not literally, at least rhetorically, at the hands of the devotees of “Saint” Alphonsus Liguori (1696-1787), who is one of the most revered of all post-Renaissance Catholic thinkers; a canonized saint and “Doctor of the Church” esteemed as an incomparable pillar of conservative morality, and what is for many Catholics at least as important, an advocate of the Blessed Virgin Mary. To rectify the perception of this scoundrel among Catholics is a tall order.

Liguori nullified the decree of Pope Innocent XI against pure mental reservation (“restriction”) by making a distinction, by clever word jugglery, between “pure” and “non-pure” mental reservation; yet it was a distinction without a difference. He redefines pure mental reservation as non-pure mental reservation (“restriction”) and recruiting Jesus to the deceiver’s side:

“On the contrary, it is allowable to use non-pure mental restriction, even with an oath, if it can be discovered by circumstances. This is proved by John 7:8, where Christ said, ‘I go up not to this feast,’ and yet Scripture says that He afterwards went up.” [35]

[35] *The Christian Remembrancer,* January, 1854, pp. 41-42.

In cases where the person under interrogation decides that the individuals asking questions are “unjust questioners,” the respondent could answer *audibly* one way, and then inaudibly, with an unspoken thought that contradicted his verbal statement. By this and numerous other subterfuges and loopholes of escape, Pope Innocent XI’s condemnation was evaded and effectively rendered meaningless by the “saint” whose *Moral Theology* for confessors was accepted as the leading authority, and occupied an authoritative position in the curriculum of the seminaries of Latin Christendom.

The Cryptocracy often makes certain that Church of Rome modernizers and change agents become renowned as the Blessed Virgin Mary’s champion on earth. When Pope John Paul II’s liberal innovations emerged early in his papacy, it was floated by the Vatican and their assets in the Establishment media that the pope was Mary’s special defender, “the Blessed Virgin’s own pontiff,” whose personal motto with regard to her was, *“Totus tuus”* (“totally yours"). Liguori's dreadful doctrines are rendered nearly invulnerable among the pious by the same ruse. He wrote the book *The Glories of Mary,* therefore he is untouchable in the eyes of those Catholics for whom conformity to the truth of Jesus Christ is second to the exaltation of Mary. In stating this unvarnished fact about mariolatry in the ranks of the papists, we do not intend by any means to diminish, as very many Protestants do, *the proper honor* paid her by the true Catholic Church as ever-virgin, and the most noble human in the history of the human race, whose faith, obedience to the will of God, and long suffering, are worthy of emulation and the highest commemoration, thanks and praise. She was the new Eve, God's best and most faithful servant on earth.

Some Protestants suffer from an emotionally constrained aridity because they have no significant mother figure in their theology. Here we do not speak of anything approaching a goddess, or "co-redemptrix." The Russian and Greek Eastern Orthodox Church guards against any such error by most often only depicting a *Hodegetria* image of Mary, i.e. a portrait of her embracing—or accompanied—by Jesus, thereby symbolically demonstrating that *He is the source* of her redemption and ours; her importance being subsidiary, and dependent on her relationship with Her Divine Son.[36]

[36] This type of image is not unknown in the Western Church, under the title *Madonna Della Strada* ("Our Lady of the Way").

It is not our purpose to enter the lists of the controversy which has raged among learned theologians Catholic and Protestant, concerning the subject of proper reverence for Blessed Mary, as opposed to mariolatry. The heat of that debate has disquieted the Church and the lack of moderation on both sides begets ill blood in the body of Christ. Let us recall and heed Jesus' explicit instruction, that *any Christian may be said to be the most blessed of all, by becoming one of those "who hear the word of God and observe it"* (Luke 11: 27-28). Before the Renaissance, few Catholic theologians sought to make of the humble Israelite Mary a goddess or "co-redeemer"; nor did they seek to level her down to a vague personage whose life and example is less often invoked by Christians than that of Protestant heroines such as Susanna Wesley or England's "New Isis," Elizabeth I.

Blessed Mary has also been distorted into an Isis figure by New Age initiates. We have seen American converts to Buddhism pray the rosary and maintain images of both the Dalai Lama and "Mother Mary" together on an altar or mantlepiece, as a veiled propitiation of the mother goddess in one of her thousand forms. This pagan perversion of the holy image of the Blessed Virgin Mary is also found in Voodoo and Santeria. These perversions, whether Buddhist/New Age or the Voodoo manifestions, subvert the First

Commandment, and the Scriptural principle of Patriarchy. The *perversion* of her image however, in no way obviates its *legitimate* display, or justifies the iconoclastic vandalism which accompanied the Protestant Reformation in places such as Scotland, England and the Huguenot regions of France. A Christian is not required to possess depictions of Mary, or even of Jesus for that matter; though clearly the authentic Catholic Church taught that in their proper place, reverent artistic depictions can be an aid to contemplation and sanctification. On the other hand, neither is it *required* that true worship be conducted in a church that

[Page 434 The Moral Theology of Mental Reservation and Equivocation]

resembles a warehouse, stripped of all reverent artist depictions of the sacred. It is most unfortunate that man-made "requirements" issued from both extremes have resulted in discord, hatred and bloodshed, causing the Gospel to be held in disrepute, as all violence between Christians tends to do.

Alphonsus Liguori was beatified in 1816 by Pope Pius VII. On July 5, 1831, the Sacred Penitentiary of the Apostolic See reaffirmed complete approval for Liguori's moral theology around the same time that this body, by direction of the pope, issued the revolutionary directive that no Catholic usurer was obliged to confess or seek absolution for his usury. "The followers of St. Alphonsus may point to the official declaration of the Church that... his teaching has never been censured. To these advantages must be added the great personal authority of the... founder of the Redemptorist Order." [37]

[37] Anton Koch, *A Handbook of Moral Theology* (1918), vol. 1, pp. 232-233).

Liguori was canonized a saint in 1839 by Pope Gregory XVI, and declared a Doctor of the Church in 1871 by Pope Pius IX. After this "Doctor" status had been conferred on Liguori, English Cardinal Henry Edward Manning described in 1887 his impact on the Church: "Doctor of the just mean, his influence on hearts has ever increased... This influence has passed from one nation to another, from one Church to another, from one diocese to another, from one confessional to another. The spirit of Alphonsus... (has) penetrated everywhere and... triumphed in all Catholic countries... hold(ing) sway over the entire Church of God."[38]

[38] Théodule Ray-Mermet, *Moral Choices: The Moral Theology of Saint Alphonsus Liguori* (Liguori Publications, 1998), pp. 142-143.

As recently as 1950, Pope Pius XII named Liguori "Heavenly Patron of Confessors and Teachers of Moral Theology." Pius XII explained his declaration as follows: "He (St. Alphonsus Liguori) left, both in speech and in writing, for the education and direction of confessors, a remarkable moral and pastoral teaching which has been the most highly esteemed in the whole world up to our present age…" In 1967, *New Catholic Encyclopedia,* published by the Catholic University of America, stated: "The influence of St. Alphonsus on moral theology has proved durable, and the practical direction traced by him has been substantially adopted by the Church."

The papal-ecclesiastical approbation for Liguori was a notorious and scandalous fact among evangelical Protestants. Rev. A.C. Coxe, writing in his *The Novelty and Nullity of the Papal Dogma* (1855): The Church of Rome "openly authorizes the morals of Alphonsus Liguori, and has actually made a saint of the man who teaches that there are no less than thirty different methods of swearing falsely without guilt; and that, for what one deems good cause, it is lawful to use equivocation, and to confirm it with an oath…" [39]

[39] Cf. St. Alphonsus Liguori, *De juramento,* Lib. iv., cap. 2.

The papalolaters two main defense strategies are, on one hand, to say that Liguori is thoroughly orthodox, and on the other to equivocate, as Cardinal John Henry Newman did, and state that though Liguori was a great and wonderful saint, Catholics are not obliged to follow him. Notice the dissembling spirit of the double mind in this line of defense. Liguori is a saint, a Doctor of the Church and Heavenly Patron of Confessors and Teachers of Moral Theology, but "no Catholic is bound to follow him throughout." Yet Cardinal Newman understood very well indeed that it was not up to the laymen in the pews, the pray-pay-and-obey parishioners, to reject or embrace Liguori. As the Pope declared in 1950, and the *New Catholic Encyclopedia* stated as recently as 1967, his moral theology "has been substantially adopted by the Church"—in other words, at the top of the hierarchy— among the teachers of moral theology and the confessors who advise, admonish and absolve penitents.

Liguori's theology, disguised as mercy for sinners, against the Jansenist error of the time, of letter-of-the-law severity, propelled Machiavellian, post-Renaissance situation ethics to new heights undreamed of by "conservative" and "traditional" Catholics, who generally don't have a clue as to what Liguori actually taught, since his *major* works have never been translated from ecclesiastic Latin.

For instance, consider the situation after Vatican Council II, in the "post-Conciliar" years, when, in spite of Paul VI's thoroughly orthodox encyclical *Humane Vitae,* thousands of confessors were advising troubled husbands and wives that birth control was permissible. This betrayal of Catholic dogma on the part of lax confessors has been attributed to the bad fruits of the 1960s-era Council. In actuality however, what had occurred was that Liguori's diabolic laxity concerning birth control for Catholic married couples, which had been part of his recommended confessional praxis for two centuries after he wrote his Church-approved *Moral Theology,* had finally lost its shame and brazenly emerged from the shadows and into the glare of the garish light of the late 1960s.

In terms of that endorsement, let the record show that in teaching the lawfulness of Liguori's demonic dementia, the Church of Rome approved it *totally.* He died in 1787. In May, 1803, the Sacred Congregation of Rites decreed "that *in all the writings of Alphonsus Liguori, edited and unedited, there is not a word that could be justly found fault with."* Pope Pius VIII approved the decree. Rome proclaimed that in Liguori there is nothing to be censured:

"...that his whole teaching is altogether free from all error. That in the whole of his moral theology not one principle is disapproved of; that there is not in it any opinion contrary to faith or good morals, new, opposed to the sense of the Church, heretical erroneous, approaching to error, savoring of heresy or error, suspected of error, rash, scandalous, offensive to pious ears, ill-sounding, such as to lead the simple astray, schismatical, harmful, impious, blasphemous."

Bishop Asti, Prince Prelate of the Papal Household, published the decree "that the examination of Liguori's work had been conducted with particular severity, that his System of Morality had been more than twenty times discussed by the Sacred Congregation, and that all had agreed *voce concordi, unanimi consensu, una voce, una mente.* On July 5, 1831 the Sacred Penitentiary (charged with imparting the laws of God and the Church to priest-Confessors in their directions to penitents in the Sacrament of Penance), formally stated that Liguori's ruling can be followed without moral qualms of any kind. No Confessor need be disturbed by anything he has written." The Cardinal-Archbishop Rohan-Chabot soon afterward directed all of his clergy commanding that "the judgment of Rome should be fully adhered to, and that the opinions of Blessed Alphonsus de' Liguori should be followed and reduced to practice, all doubt whatever being cast aside."

"In the words of the Preface to his Life, edited by the Fathers of the Oratory, and approved and recommended by Cardinal Wiseman, 'the morals of this saintly Bishop cannot be censured, without setting up as a censor authority itself; without, in fine, censoring the decision of the Holy See." [40]

---

[40] Meyrick, *Moral Theology of the Church of Rome: No. II Certain Points in S. Alfonso de' Liguori's Moral Theology Considered in Nineteen Letters* (London, 1855), p. 61.

It cannot be denied that Liguori is the authoritative exponent of Rome's moral teaching.

Equivocation and mental reservation are not just sins in themselves in terms of the individual situation in which they gull and deceive the individuals to whom they are specifically addressed. Rather, they infect the hierarchy and the intellectuals of the Church. What one scholar described as the effect on Judaic persons of the *Kol Nidrei* rite's sanction for cheating, applies to the use of equivocation and mental reservation among Christians, "*the inevitable moral abasement that this sort of treachery fosters in its practitioners.*" [41]

[41] William N. Grimstad, *Talk about Hate* (1999); emphasis supplied.

This inevitable abasement manifests in the occlusion of the good sense and judgment of the followers of the Church of Rome, whose powers of reason have become so atrophied they are nearly incapable of seeing how *the "infallible" papacy has become, since the Renaissance, the engine of the transformation of the ecclesia from the Catholic Bride of Christ to the papal Judas of Christ.*

What is "traditional" about those who sacrifice the Catholic Church to the god they have made out of the Bishop of Rome? They are modernists, not traditionalists. In Catholicism's first millennium, propitiation of this pope-idol would have looked as though it had come straight out of Antichrist's rules for radicals (as so often it has).

The apologists for the usury permitted by the Church of Rome in our time play Talmudic games with the definition of usury. They deny that the accurate definition of usury consists in the statement that *any gain by the lender that exceeds the amount of the loan to the debtor is usury*. That this is the correct definition of usury from the beginning of the Christian Church to the dawn of the Renaissance is as plain as the sun at noonday, but equivocation of the papist theological species will have it otherwise. The Renaissance papists claim other escape clauses founded in part in the concept of *lucrum cessans* (the

loss of a profit which a lender might otherwise have gained from his money if he had not loaned it to a debtor), which testifies to the spirit of mental confusion and deceit applied to the history and theology of usury. [42]

[42] Cf. *Usury in Christendom,* pp. 392-393.

So much of this justification of the nullification of what was the *sensus fidei,* that which had been taught always and everywhere (*quod ubique, quod semper, quod ab omnibus creditum est*),[43]

[43] St. Vincent of Lerins, *Commonitorium,* (II, 5, PL 64, 149).

camouflages the sophistry that is at its center. What is being obscured is the power of the "Sovereign Pontiff" to do whatever he likes with Jesus Christ's Church, such as canceling the ban on profits on loans by calling those profits by another name, when it is expedient to do so according to the so-called economic "realities" of the situation. Christ's Church thereby becomes subject to the whims of the Bishop of Rome. The dogma of His Church can be reworked, reformulated and remade, along with the Word of God itself, by an exalted man on a throne in Rome. For instance, according to the teaching of Benedict XIV in his encyclical *Ex Quo Singulari,* the question of whether the continued observance of the *ceremonial* precepts of the Old Law is permitted, depends, according to the pontiff, on the character and motivation of the observances in question:

"Although the ceremonial precepts of the old Law have come to an end with the promulgation of the Gospel, and the new Law does not contain any precept which distinguishes between clean and unclean foods, nevertheless the Church of Christ has the power of renewing the obligation to observe some of the old precepts for just and serious reasons, despite their abrogation by the new Law."

Here is the overthrow of the Bible by the whim of Benedict XIV, who dares to accord to himself the title, "the Church of Christ." In the New Testament however, he and all other usurping human authorities, are unmasked: "Therefore *let no one pass judgment on you in questions of food and drink*... These are a shadow of the things to come, but the substance belongs to Christ. Let no one disqualify you... If with Christ you died to the elemental spirits of the world, why, as if you were still alive in the world, do you submit to regulations— 'Do not handle, Do not taste, Do not touch' (referring to things that all perish as they are used)—*according to human precepts and teachings? These have indeed an appearance of wisdom in promoting self-made religion* and asceticism and severity to the body, but they are of no value..." (Colossians 2:16-18; 20-23; emphasis supplied).

The Word of God states that no human being can pass judgment on our choices of food and drink, and that any such judgments are human precepts and teachings of a religion that is not of God—it is a self-made religion. Only people sunk in a mentality of bipolar falsehoods can call themselves Bible believers while adhering to the "sovereign" spiritual supremacy which Pope Benedict XIV, and dozens of pontiffs like him, reserved for themselves alone.

This spirit is visible in the case of another celebrated, virtually canonized Church of Rome intellectual, Hilaire Belloc, whose prowess as a wordsmith cannot be denied and is rightly acknowledged, *caeteris paribus.* In the matter of his books of history [44]

[44] Belloc's "histories" of the anti-Puritan Stuart monarchs are a palimpsest of fraud amounting to little more than pedestrian propaganda indifferent to facts. Belloc traffics in cliches and is ignorant of the authentic diplomatic history and legislation of the era. His "histories" are avidly published and parroted by contemporary "conservative and traditional Catholics." Cf. Hoffman, "Right Wing Myths with an Endless Shelf Life," in *Revisionist History,* no. 74.

and his writing on usury however, he is a true son of Liguori. For example, concerning usury he is an innovator and no enemy of the Money Power (unless it is a Money Power that he denominates as "Calvinist" or "Bank of Amsterdam"). Belloc was a change agent in the same vein as bankers such as Fugger. The spirit of the lawyer and the equivocator has penetrated the marrow of the latter-day Church of Rome to such an extent that the former scions of Thomistic reason have degenerated into the children of sophistry. Hilaire Belloc, in line with the modernist trend of his times, redefined usury so as to qualify it as not-usury: "Usury, then, is a claiming of interest on an unproductive loan, or of interest greater than the real increment produced by a productive loan." [45]

[45] Hilaire Belloc, "On Usury" in *Essays of a Catholic Layman in England* (1931).

With this statement Belloc issued a *prozbul* worthy of Rabbi Hillel. He is saying that usury is permitted when a loan is "productive" (when the lender loans to a business). This is the

Machiavelli/Renaissance/Liguori/post-Renaissance doctrine. "Liguori's system... neutralizes God's law by sophistical distinctions..." [46]

[46] Frederick Meyrick, op.cit., p. xiii.

Because he did not go all the way into libertarian extremism concerning usury, he is mistaken, by economic reformers and "Distributists" affiliated with the Church of Rome, for an archetypal enemy of usury. Good luck trying to wield facts of the documentary record to convince these individuals concerning the truth about Belloc. The same of fog of casuistry used to enshrine his legend is employed to deny the existence of papally-condoned Renaissance-Catholic usury. Equivocation and mental reservation have bred a rabbinic type of dialectic among some "Catholic" intellectuals which is largely impervious to truth.

One rather large problem for the post-Renaissance papist deceivers, at least in Britain anyway, was the publication of accurate English translations by two scrupulous Anglican scholars, Frederick Meyrick and R.P. Blakeney, of Liguori's magnum opus: *Moral and Devotional Theology of the Church of Rome According to the Authoritative Teaching of S. Alfonso De' Liguori.* These translations were called into action against the Anglican Church’s most troubling “apostate.”

The Cardinal Newman Controversy

“St. Alfonso certainly says that a play upon words is allowable; and, speaking under correction, I should say that he does so on the ground that lying is not a sin against justice, that is, against our neighbor, but a sin against God. God has made words the signs of ideas, and therefore if a word denotes two ideas, we are at liberty to use it in either of its senses…” John Henry Newman, *Apologia pro Vita Sua.*

Catholic Cardinal John Henry Newman (1801-1890), celebrated scholar and author, had been the ornament of High Church Anglicanism before becoming the most eminent English convert to Romanism in England in centuries, even though in the early years of his career as a convert in the Church of Rome he was barely visible. He made up for that initially marginal existence with an eventual celebrity that was remarkable.

In the words of David Newsome in his book *The Parting of Friends,* many Anglicans were keen to “mend the breaches made by the secession of Newman to the Roman Church.” In the act of that attempted “mending,” Newman was confronted by Anglicans who forbore to analyze Alphonsus Liguori’s recondite doctrine on mental reservation and equivocation and confront Newman with it. Among them was the Rev. Charles Kingsley, author of the classic books *Westward Ho!, Hypatia* and his juvenilia, *The Water Babies.* Kingsley sparked a literary conflagration when he wrote in the January, 1864 issue of the widely read, *Macmillan’s Magazine,* “Truth for its own sake had never been a virtue with the Roman clergy.” Kingsley questioned Newman’s credibility: “How can I tell I shall not be the dupe of some cunning equivocation, of one of the three kinds laid down as permissible by the blessed St. Alfonso Liguori and his pupils even when confirmed by an oath, because: ‘Then we do not deceive our neighbor, but allow him to deceive himself?”

Newman had enemies inside the Roman Church as well. An influential group of ultramontane Romanists had accused the convert of Protestant tendencies. Two of his early projects, the Irish university and his editorship of *The Rambler,* had flopped. Since 1845 his existence as a Catholic had been largely an obscure one. The Anglican challenger, Kingsley, was what would be called nowadays a “best-selling author,” and the fact that he picked a fight with the besieged Newman gave the latter a golden opportunity of putting his impressive command of the English language to use in ably defending many authentic, traditionally Catholic doctrines which Kingsley had disparaged, and which pre-dated the Renaissance.

Our concern however, is with Newman's qualified defense of Liguorianism, which was the paramount and indeed most explosive aspect of Kingsley's criticism, in branding all Catholic priests as equivocators (which is, of course, an unfair generalization). The debate played out in an exchange of pamphlets subsequently published in Newman's *Apologia.* The original edition of his *Apologia* differs from editions made popular later in the twentieth century. In its first edition, the *Apologia* began with the debate, "Mr. Kingsley and Dr. Newman: A Correspondence on the Question Whether Dr. Newman teaches that Truth is No Virtue" (London, 1864), after which followed the cardinal's autobiography, and then an appendix which replied to Kingsley and the "39 blots" (a satire on the Anglican Church's *39 Articles*).

Wilfrid Ward, [47] the editor of the authoritative 1913 Oxford edition of the *Apologia,* pronounced Newman the winner over Kingsley by a mile: "Newman... emerged triumphant. The *Apologia* carried the country by storm..." This sunny view of Newman's "triumph" is the general verdict of the papists and the intellectual elite of the English-speaking world generally. It is true that Newman convinced the Tories and upper classes of Britain that his defense of equivocation was correct. But what was the *locus* of those classes in terms of their ethics? At this stage in the Victorian era, the British upper and middle classes, in what was termed the Establishment Tory wing of the Church of England [48] (e.g. "the Liberalism which today inundates the English intelligent classes," to use Newman's own description), were desirous of moral support for their own acts of equivocation. Hence, some significant portions of the Protestant Overlord class in Britain welcomed Newman when he provided that support. Those Anglicans who were not seduced by modernist trends and not convinced by Newman's qualified defense of Liguori, tended to be "Evangelicals," who at the time numbered in the millions.

Newman proposed through the medium of the elegance of his much-admired prose, what would come to be applauded as a nuanced understanding of equivocation, along with a subtle dig at the Italian character, which had only just been held up to national contempt in Britain by Wilkie Collins in his popular, 1859 mystery novel, *The Woman in White,* in which the figure of the loathsome “Count Fosco” is rendered as the epitome of menace and treachery.

---

[47] Wilfrid Ward's daughter Maisie founded, with her husband Frank Sheed, the distinguished publishing house of Sheed and Ward.

[48] As demarcated in Newman's instructive survey of the competing Anglican factions, in the appendix to the 1866 French language edition of the *Apologia,* which was reprinted in the 1913 Oxford edition, pp. xxii-xxx

Newman presented to the liberal Protestant lords and ladies of Britain the ethical cover they were seeking for their own considerable violations of the requirement for absolute fidelity to truthful speech, and they accepted his thinking with the *frisson* of having obtained it from a romantic rebel who had turned the tables on what was perceived as the holier-than-thou faction of the Church of England. From then until now, Newman’s *Apologia* has been celebrated as the triumphal refutation of an ugly strain of pig-headed evangelical Protestantism on the part of a more reasonable and humane Catholicism. This myth is sustained by internal and external omissions: a failure to closely examine Newman’s text in terms of the ramifications of his qualified support for Liguori, and beyond the text of the *Apologia* itself, the fact that Newman ran away from his most formidable opponent, Prof. Frederick Meyrick of Oxford, who he did not scruple to endeavor to answer in public, or even to name, as he had done with the less theologically talented Mr. Kingsley.

The version of the *Apologia Pro Vita Sua* which is now the standard text in schools and Roman Church circles after it was re-edited by its author, is a redacted version which takes the focus off of Kingsley and Liguori, on the queer pretext, as articulated by Wilfrid Ward, that the censorship was necessary so that the volume might metamorphose into “permanent literature.” [49]

Ward wrote:

“It became a classic of the language, and it had to be re-edited that its form, as well as its substance, might befit its permanent character. Its form had to be no longer that appropriate to a *controversy of the hour* which rapier thrusts and colloquialisms were suitable weapons, but that of an earnest autobiography which could stand side by side with those of St. Augustine and Rousseau... What was justified only as a retort made in heat and on the spur of the moment, to words blurted out by Kingsley himself in a moment of anger, was withdrawn. The last chapter was no longer called, ‘General Answer to Mr. Kingsley;’ it became, The position of my mind since 1845.’ Such omissions and alterations indicate the general principle on which the book was re-edited.” [50]

---

[49] The Liguori controversy remains present in the 1913 edition of *Apologia Pro Vita Sua,* but it has been toned down and signal particulars omitted.

[50] Wilfrid Ward, “Introduction,” in *Newman’s Apologia Pro Vita Sua* (1913), pp. vii and viii; emphasis supplied.

Was the contest with Newman concerning Church-sanctioned verbal and literary deceit really just a “controversy of the hour,” or was it one for the ages? Is “a classic of the language” created by confecting a cosmetic edition of a text which has been drained of its most dangerous polemics? Or are

Ward and the Newman faction he represented, guilty of censoring a narrative which is potentially damaging to the reputation of the Church of Rome and Cardinal Newman? Is the falsification any less morally troubling because it was admitted publicly by Wilfrid Ward?

Kingsley had raised a number of points. The issue of Liguorianism was only one of them, though it proved the most contentious. Cardinal Newman did not entirely endorse Alphonsus Liguori’s teaching on deceiving others, though one could say that Newman himself nearly equivocated concerning it when he wrote:

“I cannot think what it can be, in a day like this, which keeps up the prejudice of this Protestant country against us (Catholics), unless it be the vague charges which are drawn from our books of moral theology; and with a short notice of the work in particular which my accuser (Kingsley) especially throws into our teeth, I shall in a very few words bring these observations to a close.

“St. Alfonso Liguori, then, it cannot be denied, lays down that an equivocation, that is, a play upon words, in which one sense is taken by the speaker, and another sense intended by him for the hearer, is allowable, if there is a just cause, that is, in an extraordinary case, and may even be confirmed by an oath. I shall give my opinion on this point as plainly as any Protestant can wish; and therefore I avow at once that in this department of morality, much as I admire the high points of the Italian character, I like the English character better; but in saying so, I am not, as will shortly be seen, saying anything disrespectful to St. Alfonso, who was a lover of truth, and whose intercession I trust I shall not lose, though, on the matter under consideration, I follow other guidance in preference to his. [51]

[51] *Apologia Pro Vita Sua: Being a History of His Religious Opinions* (Longmans, 1904), pp. 169-170.

Newman goes on to list four distinguished Protestants (Anglican Bishop Jeremy Taylor, Anglican Archdeacon William Paley, and from the world of letters, Puritan John Milton and Anglican Samuel Johnson). He examines the views of these four luminaries over the course of six pages, adducing evidence for his assertion that they supported either equivocation or mental reservation, or both. For example, he cites Johnson thus: ‘The general rule is, that truth should never be violated; there must, however, be some exceptions. If, for instance, a murderer should ask you which way a man is gone.”

Furthermore, Cardinal Newman states as his own preference that the “Italian character” is liked less than the English character. Is this not a gentleman’s way of framing racial defamation of Italians? How is it that Liguori has come to be identified with the Italian character as a whole? What a tragedy for Italians that by the Victorian Age they were no longer the people of Saints Anthony of Padua and Francis of Assisi, and of the poet Dante Aligheri, but of Liguori, so that even the Church of Rome’s own John Henry Newman had to parse the assessment of the national character of Italy based on the impact of Liguori, whose influence even he admitted, by a circuitous route, had rendered the Italian character second to the English.

Note too that concerning Liguori, Newman describes him as a “lover of truth.” If that false statement is not a case of mental reservation, what is? How can Newman’s *Apologia* be celebrated as a triumph over Kingsley when Newman resorted to such demonstrably false statements? If Liguori is such a “lover of truth” why does Newman confess that “in the matter under consideration, I follow other guidance in preference to his”? This is classic equivocation—whereby Newman permits us to deceive ourselves. Equivocation and mental reservation in just one paragraph. How then did Newman supposedly win the debate with Kingsley?

The consensus in Britain was that Newman had exonerated himself of Kingsley’s accusation that Newman had been infected with Liguori’s morality; though it was less clear as to whether he had managed to rescue the reputation of Liguori and the Church of Rome from the charge of institutionalizing lying and deception. Among those who were not persuaded was Newman’s renowned Catholic friend and correspondent, Lord Acton (John Emerich Edward Dalberg Acton, 1834-1902), who stated, “Newman wrote a book to deny Liguori, but ended by invoking his intercession. Therefore, I differ from N. (Newman) exactly as I do from Lig. (Liguori). Clearly, he does not think it sinful to lie. It is not enough to disapprove lies if we say they are not sins.”

As noted, Newman lists several of England’s most distinguished Protestant literary figures who he says were in favor of untruthful speech in certain circumstances: “...great English authors, Jeremy Taylor, Milton, Paley, Johnson, men of very distinct schools of thought, distinctly say, that under certain special circumstances it is allowable to tell a lie. Taylor says: “To tell a lie for charity, to save a man’s life, the life of a friend, of a husband, of a prince, of a useful and a public person, hath not only been done at all times, but commended by great and wise and good men. Who would not save his father’s life, at the charge of a harmless lie, from persecutors or tyrants?’ Again, Milton says: ‘What man in his senses would deny, that there are those whom we have the best grounds for considering that we ought to deceive—as boys, madmen, the sick, the intoxicated, enemies, men in error, thieves? I would ask, by which of the commandments is a he forbidden? You will say, by the ninth. If then my lie does not injure my neighbor, certainly it is not forbidden by this commandment.’ Paley says: ‘There are falsehoods, which are not lies, that is, which are not criminal.”

Newman added, “...in truth, a Catholic theologian has objects in view which men in general little compass; he is not thinking of himself, but of a multitude of souls, sick souls, sinful souls, carried away by sin, full of evil, and he is trying with all his might to rescue them from their miserable state; and in order to save them from more heinous sins, he tries, to the full extent that his conscience will allow him to go, to shut his eyes to such sins, as are, though sins, yet lighter in character or degree. He knows perfectly well that, if he is as strict as he would wish to be, he shall be able to do nothing at all with the run of men; so he is as indulgent with them as ever he can be. Let it not be for an instant supposed, that I allow of the maxim of doing evil that good may come; but, keeping clear of this, there is a way of winning men from greater sins by winking for the time at the less, or at mere improprieties or faults; and this is the key to the difficulty which Catholic books of moral theology so often cause to the Protestant. They are intended for the Confessor and Protestants view them as intended for the Preacher...

“This is pretty much the answer I make, when I am considered in this matter a disciple of St. Alfonso. I plainly and positively state, and without any reserve, that I do not at all follow this holy and charitable man in this portion of his teaching. There are various schools of opinion allowed in the Church; and on this point, I follow others. I follow Cardinal Gerdil, and Natalis Alexander, and St. Augustine... Augustine is the doctor of the great and common view that ah untruths are lies, and that there can be no just cause of untruth.

“I will quote one passage from Natalis Alexander:—‘They certainly lie, who utter the words of an oath, without the will to swear or bind themselves: or who make use of mental reservations and equivocations in swearing, since they signify by words what they have not in mind, contrary to the end for which language was instituted, viz. as signs of ideas. Or they mean something else than the words signify in themselves and the common custom of speech.'

"And, to take an instance: I do not believe any priest in England would dream of saying, 'My friend is not here;' meaning, 'He is not in my pocket or under my shoe. Nor should any consideration make me say so myself. I do not think St. Alfonso would in his own case have said so…

"And now, if Protestants wish to know what our real teaching is, as on other subjects, so on that of lying, let them look, not at our books of casuistry, but at our catechisms. Works on pathology do not give the best insight into the form and the harmony of the human frame; and, as it is with the body, so it is with the mind. The *Catechism of the Council of Trent* was drawn up for the express purpose of providing preachers with subjects for their sermons; and as my whole work has been a defense of myself, I may say here that I rarely preach a Sermon, but I go to this beautiful and complete catechism to get both matter and doctrine. There we find… notices about the duty of veracity…" [52]

[52] John Henry Newman, "Answer to Mr. Kingsley," in *Newman's Apologia Pro Vita Sua* (1913), pp. 367-369.

And there too we find notices about the duty of not charging interest on loans which is just as studiously ignored as "the duty of veracity." Newman's postulation of two sets of books is as bankrupt in religion as it is in accounting. The books of casuistry direct the conscience of the papist. What is performed in the Sacrament of Confession is supposed to enforce the laws of God. Newman would have us look to the declarations of Trent as indicative of the faith of the Church of Rome. The trumpeting of the mere fact of the *existence* of Trent's decrees has been misleading generations of Catholics, many of whom remain convinced that the Church of Rome continues to ban profit on loans and strictly forbids lying, deceit and theft. The situation ethics of the Liguorian and other papist systems demonstrates that the reverse is true, and now that we have some inkling of the extent of the plague of child molestation inside the Church, we can better understand how the Liguorian and other casuist systems have served as a bulwark against the exposure and prosecution of child-molesting priests.

In light of the fact that in print Newman debated Rev. Kingsley, who was not a theologian, while evading Meyrick, who was a formidable Protestant theologian, and whose documentation and arguments it may be that Newman could not answer, the histrionic assessment of Newman's alleged complete victory over his lesser opponent Kingsley is wearying in its bombast:

"The rough handling of Kingsley by his opponent was a marked feature in the original *Apologia*… It succeeded so completely and issued in such an acknowledged and crushing defeat for Kingsley that Newman's warmest friends found themselves feeling sorry for the man... A fine literary critic among Newman's Oratorian entourage—Father Ignatius Dudley Ryder—wrote at the time... the following note of his own impressions on reading Newman's scathing denunciation of his assailant... this polemical annihilation... In reading the tremendous handling of his opponent in the introduction and conclusion of the *Apologia*, it is impossible, I think, whatever may be one's sympathies, to avoid a sense of honest pity for the victim as for one condemned though by his own rashness to fight with gods or with the elements." [53]

[53] Ward, "Introduction," in *Newman's Apologia Pro Vita Sua,* op. cit., p. x.

Mr. Ward's belief that Newman was nearly universally recognized as the victor in the exchange with Kingsley does not bear up under scrutiny. Church of England Bishop Samuel Wilberforce viewed Newman's response to Kingsley as "special pleading" of a type which had not succeeded in freeing the Church of Rome from complicity in the errors of Liguori: "In truth there is against him here that consensus of living authority to which in matters ecclesiastical Dr. Newman attributes so indisputable a power." [54]

[54] Samuel Wilberforce, "Dr. Newman's Apologia," *Quarterly Review,* October 1864, pp. 680-681.

The Spectator was not persuded that Newman had carried the day, writing that Kingsley had not been proved wrong in his main point, that "truth for its own sake" was not a high point in the Roman priesthood.

The bragging of the Newmanites repels the revisionist reader who has witnessed similar boasts and congratulatory back-slapping predicated on a hoax that maintains credibility from the fact that the favored party commands the attention of the press and the masses, while opponents languish in obscurity. The advantage is solely in terms of public relations, not the truthfulness of the "winning" side. Because Newman refused to face Frederick Meyrick, a first-class opponent, his followers were able to crown him with the laurel wreath of unconditional victory over a second rate, "annihilated" opponent, and this has become the judgment of consensus history.

Here we glimpse more of the deceit of which the august Cardinal Newman may be guilty. In the face of his glorification, a scrupulous Newman would have interrupted to say, Gentleman, you do overpraise me, for if I have triumphed, it is because I have been too exhausted and perhaps too timid to deign to answer the charges made by the Oxford theologian Rev. Meyrick, whose special knowledge of these matters is far above that of the children's book author, Mr. Kingsley.

No statement of that tenor came from Cardinal Newman. With the hindsight of nearly one hundred fifty years, no similar statement has emanated from Newman's prominent supporters and enthusiasts who have erected and maintained the Newmanite legend. Prof. Meyrick was the author of some seventy books and pamphlets on theology and history. He was a specialist on the moral theology of Alphonsus Liguori and no bigot, being an admirer of Innocent XI. In a pamphlet dated March 18, 1864 entitled, "But Isn't Kingsley Right After All?" Meyrick, who had met Newman years before, took the battle to him:

[Page 450 The Moral Theology of Mental Reservation and Equivocation]

"...is not Mr. Kingsley substantially right? ...is he wrong in stating that you—Dr. Newman the individual man, and Dr. Newman the representative of a school—are unable to declare what we in England mean by untruthfulness to be immoral?"

Meyrick then quoted profusely from Liguori on equivocation. As previously observed, Newman would not reply in public to Meyrick. Prof. Meyrick and his challenge to Newman constitute a virtual cipher in mainstream biographies of Cardinal Newman and accounts of his defense of Liguori. It is the memory hole all the way for Meyrick. Newman's reputation is sustained only when Meyrick is made to disappear. How dishonest is that? Late in 1864, Meyrick again challenged Newman with his study, *On Dr. Newman's Rejection of Liguori's Doctrine of Equivocation* (an intentionally ironic title), which Wilberforce, the Anglican Bishop of Oxford, considered "unanswerable." Meyrick put forth an analogy which deflates Newman's own equivocation: "Dr. Newman holds very much the same relation towards S. Alfonso and Equivocation as a monogamist Mormon would hold towards Polygamy... He has amply vindicated for himself the character of an honest and truthful Englishman... but by that vindication he has the more deeply (in)criminated his Church, which sanctions what he rejects, and which will not allow him to condemn as a Roman Catholic what he scornfully refuses to practice as a man."

The only Catholic scholar writing in English (of whom we are aware), who has taken any significant notice of Meyrick's challenge to Newman, is Joseph L. Altholz, who wrote, "Meyrick was a controversialist of greater substance than Kingsley; but his pamphlet went virtually unnoticed in the glow of Newman's triumph with the *Apologia.* Newman does not appear to have taken any cognizance of him, and his unanswered pamphlet was the last blow of the controversy." [55]

[55] Altholz, "Truth and Equivocation," in *Church History,* March 1975, pp. 82-83. Newman did privately correspond with Meyrick, but in public he would not respond to his challenge.

And so it goes —the familiar furrow is plowed and the seeds by which posterity judges a controversy are planted; one undeserving celebrity is crowned king, while the man with truth slowly sinks into the shadows like a sputtering twenty watt bulb, leaving the celebrity's partisans to crow, "Twas a famous victory." [56]

[56] This is a reference to Robert Southey's ironic and scathing use of the term in his poem, "The Battle of Blenheim."

Newman has been accused by his Right-wing Romanist critics of not being sufficiently Catholic, i.e. in not supporting the Ultramontane party; as well as in some instances (and here we think his Roman critics were on firmer ground)—for his unfortunate theory of the *development of doctrine.* [57]

[57] For example, in the course of elucidating his theology on the development of doctrine (which is actually a type of situation ethics), Newman admits that the belief in the pope's universal jurisdiction was largely unknown in the early Church, viz. that it was "...only partially apprehended in the early age of the Church. It required time for Christians to enter into the full truth... I believe (in) whatever has been and shall be defined as revelation by the Church." Cf. Mark D. Chapman, *The Fantasy of Reunion: Anglicans, Catholics, and Ecumenism* (2014), pp. 144-145.

One thing he was not, was an ecumenist; that is, assuming that he was not equivocating when, in 1862, he called Protestantism "the dreariest of possible religions... the city of confusion and the house of bondage." Newman's understanding of papal infallibility was of interest for its marketing brilliance, contrasted with the inept marketing by the adherents of Ultramontanism. Newman wrote attractively that, "the Holy See has no magical power of teaching new truth infallibly, but represents the conservative element which preserves the original deposit of faith." (It was by the advancement of this claim that the First Vatican Council's doctrine was sold to the sheeple). But whether the pope's power is magical or not, it is power nonetheless; the power of an absolute monarch. It was that power which was used from the Renaissance forward in a mission to derogate or nullify ancient truths from the Deposit of Faith, while elevating heresies. This is a diabolic process, which, believe it or not, was *praised by Newman* in later editions of the *Apologia,* in this manner: "Heretical questionings have been transmuted by the living power of the Church into salutary truths."

This is a statement of an extraordinary candor concerning the effect of the power of the "sovereign pontiff' to transmute, for example, usury, from a mortal sin to something that need not even be confessed for reception of the Eucharist. [58]

[58] Cardinal Newman substituted the word Church for pontiff. The indefectible Catholic Church of Jesus Christ is not responsible for transmuting heresy into truth, however.

(To his credit, and though in our opinion he was resoundingly confuted, English Cardinal Henry Manning, Rome's "Lord Archbishop of Westminster," did not evade a debate with Meyrick over Liguori. It took the form of a public exchange of nineteen letters, which Meyrick subsequently published in *Moral and Devotional Theology of the Church of Rome*).

In the midst of the muck and mire of equivocation and mental reservation, let us restate the doctrine of the ancient, True Catholic Church. Scott M. Sullivan, of the University of St. Thomas: "But let your speech be yea, yea: no, no: and that which is over and above these, is of evil. (Matthew 5:37) (St.) Augustine's position on this matter is well known and needs little elaboration. Lying is always a sin. Purity of soul is preferable to bodily purity and this holds without exception... Augustine does not change his mind in the *Contra Mendacium,* written decades later. A lie is still not allowable even if to save one from injury. *Biblical examples to the contrary, like that of Jacob, Augustine maintains are not lies, but mysteries.* Augustine remains constant in this position through the *Enchiridion.* There are no lies that are not sins... every lie must be called a sin...

"Aquinas prohibits truthful speech spoken with intent to deceive. A good thing can be done for the wrong intention, and just like one who goes to Church in order to steal, likewise, speaking truthfully with the intention to deceive is a form of lying. Even though the speech is true, the intent to deceive renders it as a species of lying."[59]

[59] Scott M. Sullivan, "In Defense of The Falsiloquium," University of St. Thomas (http://scottmsullivan.com/articles/Falsiloquium.pdf)

There are surely numerous truthful adherents of the Church of Rome. The catastrophe is this: as long "Saint" Liguori's revival of the Renaissance doctrine of permissible deceit and

falsehood is a theological legacy for leaders of the hierarchy of the Church of Rome, who put it into practice in their own criminal careers, while transmitting it to penitents in the confessional, and to criminal clergy involved in facilitating or actually perpetrating child molestation—this circumstance goes a long way toward explaining the stubborn survival of the epidemic molestation of children which has been shrouded in the deepest institutional secrecy, protected by equivocation and mental reservation.

Some will say it is an anti-Catholic act to call so eminent a “saint” as Alphonsus Liguori to task for his counsels on this head. On the contrary, let it be said that *it is a profoundly anti-Catholic act to do as the equivocators and mental reservationists do and proceed to approve of deception and double-dealing in the name of the Church,* thus defaming her and giving powerful ammunition to Talmudists, those Protestants who are bigots, and other enemies of the authentic Catholicism that existed for fourteen hundred years.

The system of moral theology which would later become Liguori’s specialty first gained prominence during the Renaissance, almost two centuries before his birth. According to Redemptorist theologian Rev. Théodule Ray-Mermet, CSsR., “The phenomena of moral systems appeared during the sixteenth century to face the complexity of a new world whose problems agonized consciences and divided scholars.” [60]

[60] Théodule Ray-Mermet, op. cit., p. 66.

Fr. Ray-Mermet’s preceding words constitute a modernist statement. He implies that times change in “the complexity of a new world.” What actually happened was that the *zeitgeist* embraced the sophistry of lawyers with strong similarities to the Talmudic and Kabbalistic system. In the Talmudic system, stringent and less stringent are represented by the *zugot* pairs, one of the earliest of which was represented by the “schools of Shammai and Hillel” (supposedly contemporary with Christ), which in turn personified a rabbinic dialectic, represented symbolically by the two “pillars of the Temple,” *gevurah* (severity) and *chesed* (mercy). In the predominant moral theology of the post-Renaissance Church of Rome these antipodes are designated as *rigorist* and *laxist.* They were definitively demarcated and explicated in a dense work that has the heft and prolixity of the Talmud—the *Theologia Moralis* of Alphonsus Liguori, the sixth edition of which was completed in 1767 when he was seventy-years of-age. Between 1791 and 1905 sixty complete editions were published.

Liguori, who had been a lawyer before he became a priest, created a theological system that approximated the Jesuit-dominated theology of probabilism, [61]

[61] Probablism is a moral theology “according to which in a doubt of conscience about the morality of a particular course of conduct, a person may lawfully follow the opinion of liberty, provided it is truly probable, even though the opinion for law is definitely more probable.” *New Catholic Encyclopedia* (Catholic University of America, 1967), v. 11, p. 814. This is the convoluted thinking of lawyers and rabbis furnishing escape clauses from God’s law. This aspect was astutely detected by the Dominican theologian Servais Pinckaers in *Ce qu’ on ne peut jamais faire* (Fribourg, 1986): “In

casuistry everything occurs as though the subject, impelled by freedom, was always seeking to escape universal laws by means of particular circumstances, or at least to loosen the hold of such laws... Within this context... it is difficult to uphold the universality of the laws in the face of a freedom that employs all its ingenuity in finding exceptions through the use of extreme cases and that is constantly tempted to appeal to them to break through the law itself. In the view of Saint Thomas, by contrast... dealing with difficult and unusual cases is an exercise in judiciously applying laws according to their spirit, rather than seeking a loophole to escape from them" (pp. 128-129).

but which, for purposes of camouflage, he named "Equiprobabilism." [62]

[62] *New Catholic Encyclopedia* v. 1, p. 340: states, "...he was constrained to veil his thought somewhat because of anti-Jesuit persecutions."

The *Catholic Encyclopedia* states, "Equiprobabilism opposed to either a lax or rigorous moral position, was not a compromise between the two, but a *higher equilibrium.*" [63]

[63] Ibid. Emphasis supplied.

In Kabbalistic Judaism the mean between the two pillars of *gevurah* and *chesed* is known as "the knowledge of the *higher equilibrium."*

In Orthodox Judaism, among the Ten Commandmants, the command, "Thou shalt not steal," is not applied mechanically, that is to say, in every case equally. In certain instances, Judaic persons may steal from gentiles without incurring sin.[64]

[64] Cf. BT Sanhedrin 57a; BT Sanhedrin 76a; Baba Mezia 24a; Baba Kamma 37b; Baba Kamma 113b. Also: Rabbi Ezra Basri, *Ethics of Business Finance & Charity* (Jerusalem: Haktav Press, 1988), vol. two, chapter 13 ("No obligation to be fair to gentiles"). Basri was chief justice of the Jerusalem district court). Also cf. *Judaism Discovered,* pp. 357-361.

The *New Catholic Encyclopedia* writes, "In Alphonsian moral theory the study of the concrete circumstances of action rules out the mechanical application of a system, however sound it

may be." Liguori was "(a)lways disposed to prefer reason to the authority of moralists." [65]

[65] *New Catholic Encyclopedia,* op. cit. pp. 340-341.

Here is a succinct summation of the inodernist mentality of Liguori which nullifies the Ten Commandments ("mechanical application of a system") and prefers "reason" to the authority of "moralists." Who are these denigrated "moralists"? Are they not Jesus, St. Paul, St. Peter, et. al? Alphonsian moral theory is the theology of Renaissance, post-Renaissance and modern popes from John XXIII onward. Hence, when “traditional” Catholics approach the Vatican and demand the restoration of the faith “in line with the teachings of St. Alphonsus Liguori” they perform a ceremony of ignorant self-mockery which identifies them to the hierarchy of the Church of Rome as infants babbling about matters of which they know nothing. “Traditional Catholics” defend a pre-1960s Catholicism which, being “Renaissance-Catholicism” is the essence of the forked tongue and the double cross, and they wonder why they can’t win their battles and must resort to apocalyptic prophecies from obscure nuns and hoaxed papal chronologies about the “Glory of the Olive” (Benedict XVI) and “Peter Romanus” (Pope Francis). The Overlords in Rome are more than happy to watch them retreat to this ghettoized playpen for, after all, according to the equivocator’s motto, “they have deceived themselves.”

As previously noted, Liguori perpetrated his swindle on the Catholic world by making himself known as a supreme champion of Mary. His book The *Glories of Mary* is far better known among the common people than his *Moral Theology* (*Glories of Mary* “has been translated into over eighty different languages and 800 known editions”). [66]

As we pointed out earlier with regard to the pious Marian front mounted by John Paul II, some Catholics are convinced that any reputedly dedicated advocate of Mary must be theologically sound.

Liguori’s extensively argued theology of equivocation and mental reservation will be found only in the *uncensored, complete* edition of his *Moral Theology.* Excerpts in English appear in the Blakeney and Meyrick translations. We believe that these two individuals accurately and scrupulously translated the portions of *Moral Theology* containing the approval by Liguori, “under certain circumstances,” of trickery, dissimulation, mendacity, misdirection and almost every species of duplicity. In Meyrick’s case he was not a bigot. He seems to have been a seeker after Christ’s truth wherever it might be found. If it could be found in a pope of Rome, so much the better. He esteemed Pope Innocent XI as an enemy of equivocation and mental reservation. Meyrick wrote concerning him:

> “Innocent XI of the house of Odescalchi, was a pope meek and mild in manner, but firm and high in purpose... A man of uncompromising and inflexible integrity, he naturally leaned toward the Jansenist codes of morality and had little sympathy for the system... However... Jansenism has always been worsted in its conflicts with Jesuitism. The Moral Theologians set to work... (g)iven the problem how to retain a certain practice, and at the same

[66] Frederick M. Jones, C.S.s.R., *Alphonsus De Liguori: Saint of Bourbon Naples* (1999), p. 274.

time pay an outward respect to a papal decree forbidding it, the method to be adopted is the following—Take the thing condemned and divide it into two species, distinguished from each other by a distinction without a difference. Assume that the papal condemnation applies to either one of these species, but not to the other. Range everything which you wish to do under the uncondemned head; whatever you have no temptation towards under the other. The result will be the conclusion desired. Thus, the Pope (Innocent XI) condemned mental restriction (and) immediately afterward mental restriction is divided into two kinds (by theologians like Liguori), pure mental restriction and non-pure mental restriction. There is no moral difference between them, but the papal condemnation is declared to be confined to the former and so the old practice goes on as securely and merrily as ever.” [67]

[67] Meyrick, op. cit., pp. 37-38.

“Thou shalt not steal.” — God, Exodus 20:15.

“What is theft? It is the secret and unjust taking-away of a thing belonging to another, when the owner is reasonably unwilling.”
— “Saint” Alphonsus Liguori, *Theologia Moralis,* iv, 518.

[The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome Page 457]

Notice the chasm-like loophole provided for a thief by Liguori. If the thief can convince himself that the rightful owner is *reasonably willing* to having his property stolen, then the Catholic thief is free to take it.

Liguori characterized his opponents as “overstrict” and “extremely rigid” theologians, but he is sly enough to make it appear as though he favors the teaching of Augustine and Innocent XI on the need for absolute truthfulness, after which he cynically proceeds to subvert them both by boring several large loopholes in their doctrine. Where, for instance, Pope Innocent XI condemned the proposition that domestic servants may, from their masters *“possunt occulte heris suis surripere ad compensandam operam suam, qua majorem judicant salario quod recipiunt*” (“steal secretly for the purpose of compensating themselves for their own labor which they judge to be greater than the salary they receive”),[68]

[68] *Salm.* de 4. praec. n. 130.

Liguori wrote, “the pontifical decrees are not designed to lay servants under an unjust obligation.” [69]

[69] R.P. Blakeney, *Saint Alphonsus Liguori: Extracts Translated from the Moral Theology,* (1852), p. 183. The Latin language being more familiar to the intelligentsia of the nineteenth century than in our time, Rev. Blakeney proceeded to publish on each page, Liguori’s original Latin text next to Blakeney’s English translation. Had Blakeney tampered with Liguori’s words it would have been apparent to scholarly

readers, and the Church of Rome would have had grounds to cry foul. No objection from any quarter was raised regarding the veracity of his translation.

How much does Liguori allow the servant to steal? The “saint” states that the amount is to be determined by the thieving servant himself, “according to his own judgment... if the servant, or any other hired person, be prudent, and capable of forming a correct judgment, and be certain concerning the justice of the compensation, all danger of mistake being removed.” [70]

[70] Blakeney, ibid. pp. 184-185.

Some of Liguori’s *Moral Theology* descends into the realm of the ridiculous, such as when he rules that while it is a mortal sin to steal a small relic “in the district of Rome,” outside of Rome it would be only a venial sin to steal a small relic, provided that the thief does not deform or diminish it *(“ipsam reliquiam non deformans, neque minuens illius aestimationem*”). An exception is to be made if the relic is very rare, as for example a piece of the true cross or a hair from the head of the Blessed Virgin Mary. In both cases the theft of those relics would be considered mortally sinful no matter where they occurred.

Liguori had no scruple against blasphemy since he accused Jesus Christ of lying. Referring to mental reservation as “mental restriction,” he wrote: “...it is allowable to use non-pure mental restriction, even with an oath, if it can be discovered by circumstances. This is proved from John vii: 8, where Christ said, ‘I go not up to this feast,’ and yet Scripture says that He afterward went up.” (p. 5). [71]

[71] Liguori distinguishes between “pure” and “non-pure” mental reservation (“restriction”), as follows: “The condemnation passed by the pontiff (Innocent XI) on mental restriction is rightly to be understood of restriction purely and strictly taken, for that alone ought to be called true mental restriction which takes place solely in the mind, and there remains concealed and can by no means be discovered from outward circumstances.” (Blakeney, op. cit., pp. 5 and 6).

Here is the passage in the Gospel to which Liguori alludes, implicating Jesus in Liguori’s immoral theology: John. 7: 8-10: “Go ye up unto this feast: I will not go up yet unto this feast: for my time is not yet come. These things he said unto them, and abode still in Galilee. But as soon as his brethren were gone up, then went he also up unto the feast, not openly, but as it were in private.”

Was Jesus a deceiver, as the leaders of the Jews and the Gnostics declare, and Liguori insinuates, when “Saint” Alphonsus claims Our Lord used “non-pure” mental reservation?

When Jesus' time had come, he went up to the Feast (of Booths). He did so secretly because He and His followers were under threat (John 7:13). Liguori claims to be a follower of St. Augustine. Can he be ignorant of St. Augustine's own commentary on John 7: 8-10? Augustine, in a homily on this passage, rejects with indignation and horror the Liguorian-type of twisting of the words of Jesus. Augustine, with no axe to grind in favor of justifying deceit, in godly and reverent terms, would rather give Our Savior the benefit of the doubt, and believe that Our Lord was deceived by others, rather than, as Liguori blasphemously implies, that He Himself had deceived *others* ("*falli enim pertinet ad infirmitaten, mentiri ad iniquitatem*").

When lying to a questioner about whether someone is present in a building or not, Liguori prefers the phrase "He is not here," to "He is not at home." Alphonsus states that the latter is a material falsehood, whereas to tell a questioner that someone "is not here" meaning not at the door, or not at the window, or not in sight, involves no deceit. [72]

[72] Blakeney, p. 13.

Under certain circumstances, when a wife who is being questioned about having broken her marriage vows and being guilty of adultery seeks to lie to her husband about the extra-marital tryst which she has committed, she may do so, according to Liguori, the canonized Doctor of the Church and founder of the Redemptorist Order, under the following stipulation: "She may equivocally assert that she has not broken the marriage, for it still exists.

"If she has sacramentally confessed her adultery, she may answer, 'I am innocent of this crime,' because it has already been taken away by confession." [73]

[73] Blakeney, p. 15.

How many thousands, or tens of thousands of times, were these hellish alibis which are evocative of the seediest shyster, whispered into the ears of female adulterers in the confessional, based on the *Moral Theology* of Liguori? How can this be of Christ, or of His Church? Is it not of Satan? And is it not put forth by an enemy of the True Catholic Church, desirous of wrecking the reputation of Christ's Church, to say nothing of the purity, integrity and honor of its wives and mothers?

When it comes to making a promise, Liguori furnishes a *Kol Nidrei*-type of exit strategy: "We must mark here as certain that no promise binds although it has been accepted by the other party, if afterwards it becomes impossible, or very harmful, or unlawful, or inexpedient, and, generally speaking, whenever any notable change of circumstance takes place, so that if it had been foreseen, the promise would not have been made; because a promise is always supposed to be made under such a tacit condition.”

If a promise can be broken because it is “inexpedient” or “whenever any notable change of circumstance takes place,” what good is it? How can it be called a promise?

“Saint” Alphonsus has theologized an evil and iniquitous teaching for the direction of priests and prelates in the Confessional, revealing of the perverted nature of his disordered mind and soul: whereby, promises of marriage by Catholic noblemen to women who are commoners may be freely broken, if it is to the advantage of the aristocrat to do so. It was Protestant scholars who discovered and published this authenticated teaching after intensive investigation of Liguori’s writings. No official of the Church of Rome had been forthcoming in this regard. The popes after the eighteenth century were content to keep Liguori’s reprehensible teaching in the Latin language and made known only inside the Church to tens of thousands of Catholic priest-Confessors who resorted to Liguori in these matters, or who were instructed second hand, by seminary professors and the theology faculty of Catholic universities. This morally diseased doctrine about women, reflecting the double standard of a pagan potentate in ancient Babylon, was defended in pages of convoluted lawyer’s casuistry in the leading Catholic publication in Britain at the time, Cardinal Nicholas Wiseman’s *Dublin Review* (published in London, Edinburgh, Paris and New York,) after it had been exposed in the Protestant journal, *The Christian Remembrancer,* to nation-wide revulsion and disgust in Britain. [74]

[74] Nicholas Cardinal Wiseman (1802-1865), founded *The Dublin Review* in 1836. Cf. Dom Paschal Scotti, “English Catholicism and the Dublin Review,” in *Out of Due Time: Wilfrid Ward and the Dublin Review* (2006). Ward was Wiseman’s biographer (*The Life and Times of Cardinal Wiseman* [1897]).

It is not a simple matter to ascertain which is more perverse, Liguori’s warrant for seduction and abandonment of women who are not aristocrats, by Catholic men who are, or the *Dublin Review’s* attempt at defending it, as follows:

“But suppose the man is very far superior to the woman in rank and condition, is he still bound to marriage? The question must be considered under the further supposition of whether the promise was real or feigned... what shall be said if the marriage must almost necessarily be crowned with social and moral disorders of the gravest character?... the whole character of a nation (is) dependent upon the due observance of grade in the structure of society, and regard(s) the interchange of marriage between high and low as the very source of corruption of a whole people. Rightly then, as it seems to us, do theologians make exceptions to the general rule in favor of cases where nothing but the worst results, *'pessimus exitus,'* could be expected from the marriage." [75]

[75] "St. Alphonsus and the Christian Remembrancer" in *The Dublin Review,* December, 1854, collected in *The Dublin Review Volume 37* (London: Thomas Richardson, 1854), pp. 391-392.

Liguori's depraved theology is reflected in this defense, published more than six decades after his death. The defense, such as it is, adds qualifications which Liguori never made; that is its first fallacy. *Liguori stated baldly that aristocrats need not keep promises of marriage to women of a lower social class.* His apologist in *The Dublin Review* insinuates that Catholic men of the upper class are usually morally superior to women of the lower class, whether Catholic or not. On no grounds whatever, she is assumed to be the potential "source of corruption." Cardinal Wiseman's theological journal then proceeds to traduce these girls even further, placing the onus of blame for a broken promise of marriage on them, because "the woman could easily have detected the fraud, either from the man's words, or other circumstances, or according to some theologians, from the fact of very great disparity in rank..." [76]

[76] Ibid., p. 393.

In other words, a beautiful young Catholic girl, when courted by a Catholic aristocrat, must possess the self-realization that she is very inferior compared to him, and on that basis, should rebuff his attempts at courtship almost immediately in order to free herself from the likelihood that he will callously break his promise to her — in which case it will be her fault that he does so! Is it any wonder that hundreds of thousands of the peasants of nineteenth century Italy fled the country of their birth for Protestant America, where the Church of Rome dared not exact so heavy a toll of injustice upon the daughters of the poor and middle classes?

We regret to say that there is more of this disgusting theology: "Some theologians also say that she cannot, by the strict letter of the law, claim any compensation because, says St. Liguori, she ought to look upon the injury she has received

as a just punishment for her own carelessness and levity of conduct." [77]

[77] Ibid., p. 394.

Protestant theologian Frederick Meyrick observed with indignation, "We hope that the aristocratic parents will, for their sons' sake, duly appreciate these novel privileges of the nobility. For ourselves we are well content that the right of seducing maidens on promise of marriage, and then refusing to keep the promise, should remain a privilege of the nobles of those countries alone where Rome's religion is professed and Rome's teachers have sway."

"Saint" Liguori also furnishes the moral theology of perjury—how Catholics can be justified in committing it in a court of law: "A witness or defendant when not legitimately questioned by the judge, may swear he does not know a crime that he really does know, understanding to himself that he does not know a crime about which he can be legitimately questioned, or that he does not know it so as to give evidence about it...

"When, however, the witness or defendant is legitimately questioned by the judge, he must not use any equivocation, because he is bound to obey the rightful precept of his superior.

"...Even when legitimately and juridically interrogated you are not bound to give evidence in the following cases... If notable harm will result to yourself or any belonging to you from your testimony...

"If the man (the defendant) probably did not commit sin in what he did, owing to ignorance, or because he took something by way of compensation for a debt, and for doing so was charged with theft.

Liguori on bribery: "...Does a man commit sin who offers a bribe to a judge or to his ministers? ...If he gives without good reason, he commits sin by cooperating in an unlawful receiving, but not if he gives with a reason, namely, to free himself from annoyance which he does not deserve... what the laws intend is to provide against men giving money, and so corrupting the judges by bribes, not to prevent them from getting a just sentence." [78]

[78] Blakeney, pp. 22-24.

The Pope of Rome made Alphonsus Liguori a canonized saint, and one of only thirty-three formally declared "Doctors of the Church," an exalted theological rank which Liguori shares with Saints Ambrose, Augustine, Basil, Jerome, Cyril of Alexandria, Gregory of Nazianzus, John Chrysostom and Thomas Aquinas.[79]

[79] During the time of the faithful Catholic Church, Aquinas ruled that papal infallibility is not a doctrine that can command the dogmatic assent of Catholics. It has only the standing of a pious belief: "Since, as Thomas (Aquinas) says, no damnable error can exist in the Church and since it would be a damnable error for the faithful to honor a saint in hell, therefore no canonized saint can be in hell... Thomas articulated, for the first time, the infallibility of the papacy in the glorification of the saints. For him, though, the definition of dogma is a very strict business. Since nothing without at least its seed in the scriptures can be an article of faith, Thomas would not call infallibility in canonization in itself a dogma. He makes a rather fine

distinction... since it cannot be absolutely derived from the scriptures, the doctrine of the infallibility of the pope in canonization is a matter of pious belief only." Donald S. Prudlo, *Certain Sainthood: Canonization and the Origins of Papal Infallibility* (2015), pp. 128-129.

Liguori's sainthood and "Doctor of the Church" status are a pathological joke worthy of the "Franciscans of Medmenham" (i.e. the Hell-Fire Club). [80]

[80] At a meeting of the Hell-Fire Club, Robert Vansittart (1728-1789), Regius Professor of Law at Oxford University, presented with great pomp, a baboon, "to which Sir Fráncis Dashwood was accustomed to administer the eucharist at their meetings." (Sidney Lee, *Dictionary of National Biography* [1909], vol. xx, p. 145). The Hell-Fire club enshrined mockery of God as among the most potent of Satanic acts. This cabal was heir to the conspirators who had installed pornographic "art" in the Sistine Chapel where the Mass was offered; and to the legacy of the Franciscan priest Francois Rabelais's books, *Gargantua* (1535) and *Pantagruel* (1532). Rabelais mocked Christ on the Cross when Jesus called out, "I thirst," by depicting a drunk in *Gargantua* saying the same thing. ("Thelema," the utopian "abbey" in Rabelais's *Gargantua,* [cf. ch. 55], which allegedly has only one rule, "Do what thou wilt," is a signature ideological meme of the post-Renaissance western secret societies). In our Revelation of the Method era, ridicule of Jesus is freely performed in public: in movies, television, theater and "art" exhibitions.

Liguori's *Moral Theology is* so crammed with nostrums for lying and dissembling in the guise of equivocations, mental restrictions and a multitude of distinctions and qualifying factors, as well as ecclesiastical permission to lie classed under the headings of dispensations, commutations and remissions, that one does not know where to begin or end in quoting, in context, this despicable liar's "theology." When studying "Saint Alphonsus Liguori, Doctor of the Church," one feels as though one has been studying the Talmud.

[Page 464 The Moral Theology of Mental Reservation and Equivocation]

Recall that Newman, in distancing himself from Liguori, made reference to preferring English over Italian ways. Between Machiavelli and Liguori, Italy in general and Rome in particular became synonymous in the English-speaking world with "*Arte*," in the sense of the intrigue of the diabolist. The early English essayist William Harrison protested that in Italy a man is "accounted most wise and politic that can most of all dissemble."

"Insofar as Catholics were said to lie for Rome, it might be concluded that their integrity and freedom of action were compromised... a number of ethical tracts... vigorously criticized... the effect of Italian manners and mores. Italian culture and society were said to be debased by papism and court intrigue... Italian influence was seen as corrupting honest English manners, including plainness, sincerity, directness, simplicity and openness. An 'English man Italianated' was putting at risk the authentic moral basis of his gentility... The earl of Cork sent his sons on the standard Continental grand tour in the 1630 and 1640s, while expressing an increasing Protestant wariness about the possibility of infection by the 'Roman disease' (lying)... In much English commentary Italian and French deceitfulness was associated with the Roman Catholic Church..." [81]

[81] Steven Shapin, A *Social History of Truth* (1995), pp. 96-98.

Concerning the *Moral Theology* of Liguori, Prof. Meyrick wrote, "It is strange that the courts of justice are what they are in Spain, in Rome, in Naples? Look at the case of witnesses. The distinction between legitimate and non-legitimate interrogation is enough to destroy all hopes of arriving at the truth. If a man is anxious to conceal the truth, he has only to say to himself that the judge is questioning illegitimately, and then he has no obligation to speak the truth."

Since we have conceded that there are Protestant theories countenancing equivocation and mendacity, what is there to distinguish between the two, that of the Romanists and that of the "Reformers"? First, in that there is no Protestant theologian so hallowed and authorized as Liguori, among the pro-equivocation and mental reservation Protestant advocates. Second, while Anglicans invested their monarchs with divine right and absolute or near absolute authority, they were not viewed in a dogmatic ecclesiastical sense either as "the Vicar of Christ on earth," or infallible interpreters of the Word of God, as is the Pope of Rome. Here is where Protestants differed with Catholics: "...it was very widely understood in sixteenth and seventeenth-century English society that the possession of great power and responsibility might compromise integrity and that places of power were places where truth could thrive only with greatest difficulty. The (English) court was, therefore, the major target of claims that the early modern period was an 'age of dissimulation." [82]

[82] Shapin, op. cit., p. 100.

From the Renaissance onward, the Church of Rome promoted a hierarchical reversal of this wisdom which amounted to its overthrow, reverting to the ancient Pharaonic leadership pyramid, where error is believed to be more likely found among the people at the bottom, and truth and rectitude among those at the top. The elite Pharisees of Jerusalem mirrored this Egyptian dichotomy with their disparagement of the lowly Israelite am *ha'aretz* who valued the words of Jesus.

It was Newman's erstwhile friend Lord Acton who famously said, in the wake of the First Vatican Council decree on papal infallibility that "Power corrupts and absolute power corrupts absolutely." Catholics responded that the pope has resorted to "infallible" declarations only sparingly. This may itself be an argument from equivocation since it so blatantly ignores the corollary to papal infallibility—that the Bishop of Rome invested with it is assumed to have a much greater likelihood of inspiration from the Holy Spirit.

It is only very recently, prior to the ascent of Pope Francis, after some of the most appalling outrages committed by Popes Paul VI and "Saint" John Paul II, that one heard Catholics begin to question the pope in any serious manner, and these few were quickly taken to task by the majority. Moreover, it is taught that the Pope is the earthly representative of God Himself, "the Vicar of Christ on earth." From the Renaissance through to the 1960s, the popes of Rome exerted a cult-like hold over Catholics who stood in awe of them as personifications of the teaching authority of God Almighty. To be highly suspicious and wary of the seductive danger posed by the pontiffs' monarchial power in the realm of the spiritual was

regarded as little more than a Protestant heresy. As a result, usury crept up on Catholics unawares. Had not the popes always condemned it? Sodomy in rectories, monasteries and chanceries flourished undetected and unguessed at. Today Catholics attempt to put a start date for the wave of predation against children, claiming that it was a product of the hippie Sixties, or the Second Vatican Council or modernism. Where is there any evidentiary grounds for limiting the child predation epidemic to modern times, or the time during and after Vatican II? In western Montana, in the Diocese of Helena, priests as well as the Ursuline Sisters of the Western Province have been implicated in the molestation of dozens or perhaps even *hundreds* of American Indian children and other youngsters in their care at the Ursuline Academy in St. Ignatius, *dating from the 1940s and the pontificate of Pope Pius XII.* Between 1950 and 2010, almost half—more than forty percent—of all the religious who were members Australia's St. John of God Brothers' Order, were child molesters.

In Catholic Ireland, widespread clerical pederasty and sadism has been found to have occurred *as early as the 1920s.* [83]

[83] Cf. ch. 13 herein, as well as Peter Tyrrell, *Founded on Fear: The Hidden History of a Childhood with the Christian Brothers,* Diarmuid Whelan, ed. (Irish Academic Press, 2006).

Why is it difficult to believe that these crimes occurred in "traditional times" when the thought of daring to question the integrity or morality of a "Prince of the Church" was nearly unthinkable? The degree to which Catholics, like Mormons under Joseph Smith, Chinese under Mao Tse Tung or Germans under Adolf Hitler, failed to dispute, question, investigate, overrule and prosecute the criminals among their leaders and rulers, they are complicit in the destruction of the souls of the defenseless molested children of many generations and centuries. The ineluctable product of Alphonsus Liguori's *Moral Theology* of cozening, dissembling and flat-out lying, was the shield it fashioned for guilty perpetrators of molestation and sodomy to outwit both secular authorities and credulous Catholics, so as to remain immune from detection, apprehension and prosecution.

"Traditional" Catholics seek no reform of the Pharaonic model of papal and prelatical power. Rather, they pray for a Right-wing pope after their own liking who would once again

wield the absolute dictatorial power of the papacy concentrated in one man, and launch a new inquisition against modernizers and liberals. The terrible potential of frail and fallen human nature—from the occupant of the papal throne on downward, as elucidated in Lord Acton's maxim—to abuse power, would once again be ignored.

These supposed conservatives and traditionalists do not see that *it was papal power that cast aside God's law against the love of money as practiced in the charging of interest on loan;* that *it was papal power that cast aside their beloved Tridentine Mass and sent its worshippers into a liturgical desert.* They do not see that it was *the sovereignty of the pope and the total secrecy by which he and his minions operated, that robbed hundreds of thousands of innocent and largely helpless Catholic souls of their childhoods.*

The continuation of absolute monarchial power in the Bishop of Rome ensures more of the same. The notion that only *after* the Second Vatican Council did the popes work to nullify the Word of God and install the situation ethics that extruded Biblical and Patristic doctrine, ensures more of the same crimes crying unto heaven for vengeance. The continuation of belief in the myth that the Renaissance Church of Rome was the faithful and orthodox representative of the Gospel of Christ until subverted in the eighteenth century by the forces of the Enlightenment and the French Revolution, also guarantees more of the same.

Superiority and inferiority of position, deference and condescension, mastery and subjection, are constituent factors in the system that nurtures the crimes of the papalolaters. Inferiors are not entitled to know the minds of their superiors or the acts of their superiors, much less that of the mind or the hidden deeds of "The Vicar of Christ on earth." This attitude is appropriate to the Egyptians under the Pharaohs, not the followers of Christ who, ultimately, are to be under no one but God, as represented by those men who acknowledge their fallibility and submit to examination and correction by their fellow Christians, and whose rights are seen to be no more nor less than that of any other believer.

The post-Renaissance Catholic Church enshrined as its doctor of moral theology a so-called “saint” who gave permission for theft, under particular conditions. This should not surprise us in the least since the Renaissance and later popes had given permission for interest on loans of money, which was always defined as theft by the true Catholic Church.

Much of the Liguorian *Moral Theology* has striking similarities and parallels with the Babylonian Talmud. For instance, Liguori taught that a servant may steal from his master under the following circumstances: “A servant can, according to his own judgment, compensate himself for his labor if he without doubt judges that he was deserving of a larger stipend. Which indeed appears sufficiently probable to me and to other more modern learned men, if the servant or any other hired person be prudent and capable of forming a correct judgment and be certain concerning the justice of the compensation.” [84]

[84] Blakeney, op. cit., pp. 184-186.

Liguori gives moral consent to aristocrats who steal: “What if a nobleman is very much ashamed to beg or to work, can he provide for himself out of other people’s goods?... Viva says yes, and Roncaglia and Mazzotta, as well as Lessius, Palao and Diocastillo in Croix; so do Bannez and Serra. This seems to me to be the ‘more probable,’ if he is so ashamed of begging he would rather die.” (*Theologia Moralis* iv. 520). [85]

[85] Frederick Meyrick, *Moral Theology of the Church of Rome No. III: S. Alfonso de’ Liguori’s Theory of Theft* (London, 1855), p. 11.

“Six times in the course of three pages in his *Homo Apostolicus,* sixteen times in the course of his *Theologia Moralis,* Liguori lays down the principle that, as soon as a man is reduced to extreme necessity, all goods become common and, more than this, that the thief has a right to what belongs to others... The ingenuity which he has contrived to bring the distressed nobleman into the category of those laboring under extreme necessity, is as commendable as the Unjust Steward’s own cleverness.” [86]

[86] Ibid. For a discussion of the correct understanding of Christ’s meaning in the “Parable of the Unjust Steward,” and His teaching concerning the “Mammon of Unrighteousness,” cf. this writer’s *Usury in Christendom,* pp. 53-58.

Liguori states, “If a man, on an occasion arising, only steals a little, whether from one or from more, not intending to acquire much himself, nor to do great harm to his neighbor by his several thefts, he does not sin gravely, nor do all these taken together constitute one mortal sin...” *(Theologia Moralis,* iv. 533).

Liguori decrees that a wife may steal from her husband in matters where “husbands often don’t understand and it would be of no use to ask them.” According to the “saint,” a wife commits no sin in secretly “subtracting” *(subducendo)* from his wealth (*Theologia Moralis*, iv. 541). A son under certain circumstances may steal from his own father (*Theologia Moralis,* iv. 543, and iv. 488.3).

Liguori writes on the subject of a wife who does not pay her dowry to her husband and therefore is rightly reduced by her lawfully wedded husband to the degraded status of a mere servant and nothing more:

“Is the husband bound to keep or support his wife if her dowry has not been paid? The Doctors in common say no, if it is the fault of the promiser that it has not been paid. So Sánchez, Bonacina, Bossius, the Salamanca Doctors, Fagundez, Trulenchius and others, saying that the object of the dowry is that the husband may keep his wife with it. Except, however, 1., if the husband married without a dowry being promised, and, 2., if the wife pays obedience to her husband, for then he is at least bound to keep her as a servant. So say the Salamanca Doctors, with Abbas, Lupo etc. quoted by Sánchez. Sánchez however, with Surdus and others, does not allow the second exception because (as he says) the wife is bound to pay her husband both a dowry and obedience, and therefore it is not necessary for him to maintain her if she only pays obedience. But I rather adhere to the opposite opinion, because the law of nature itself teaches you to keep one who occupies himself in being your servant.” (vi. 939).

According to Liguori, a son who curses his father commits only a venial sin. The curse does not become a grave sin unless he actually means the curse to take effect, otherwise, *si oretenus tantum maledixerit,* it is venial (iv. 334). Liguori does not stipulate at how young an age children may curse their parents and still only incur a venial sin.

Another Talmudic example (one may rightly term it demonic), concerns Liguori’s aforementioned permission for servants to steal from their masters. As we noted earlier, Innocent XI condemned similar permissions like this. Liguori eats the heart out of the pope’s condemnation in a masterful

exhibition of exceedingly cunning exceptions which had the effect of nullifying the decree of the Pope. Alphonsus Liguori:

“The Salamanca Doctors and others, speaking of this condemned proposition say, 1. That a servant can *not* afterwards make himself compensation if he makes his bargain freely with his master for a lower sum, without necessity; *but* that he is not forbidden to do so, if he agrees on wages considerably less than are just, from necessity; namely to lighten his own distress. The reason is that Pontifical decrees do not mean to bind a servant contrary to justice." (iv. 522). Neither, it seems, do the decrees of the Ten Commandments, Jesus Christ and the New Testament bind contrary to Liguori's casuistry.

When Frederick Meyrick and his party of English travelers were in Italy seeking lodging, they found a house for rent which suited them well and was priced lower than the other houses that were for let in that particular Italian vicinity. Ignorant of Liguori's compensation principle as elucidated above, they rented the lower-priced accommodation and took up residence. They soon discovered that their personal articles, including clothing, had gone missing. A careful search of the house revealed that their property was hidden in out-of-the-way places throughout the house. Confronting the dishonest landlords, they denied the theft. Meyrick writes, "They knew, from their attendance at the confessional, that household servants might 'compensate' themselves... if they had wages lower than their services deserved, and they knew that tailors, tradesmen etc. were justified in purloining little pieces of cloth, using short measures, etc. 'if they would otherwise make no profits, or if they ought to raise their price and then would find no customers' (Liguori, iv. 533).

"Being gifted with reasoning powers, they inferred that as they had let their apartments at a lower rate than their neighbors, and as they 'ought' to have raised their price, but very likely would not, they thought, having then found lodgers, they were fairly entitled to make up their profits by secret compensation. This they accordingly did..." [87]

---

[87] Meyrick, *Liguori's Theory of Theft,* pp. 38-40.

Liguori states that "The servant may steal small amounts of food and drink from his master without troubling himself over

much on account of it, if the items are not locked up and are not stolen for purposes of re-sale." (iv. 545). Prof. Meyrick: So much for the guileless uprightness and security of any home where reside servants who make confession to confessors who adhere to the theology of Rome's 'Patron Saint of Confessors.' Under Liguori's system and that of his fellow casuists, the wife pilfers from her husband and taking care that he not know of it; servants pilfer to recompense themselves for wages they regard as too low. The name of *home* cannot be applied to places where these dishonest practices are but trifling affairs, except in mockery."

Liguori on restitution: “If the theft is uncertain — i.e. if it is not known who the person is to whom the damage is done—the penitent is to be bound to make restitution for the purpose of having Masses celebrated, or giving alms to the poor, or making gifts to holy places, and, if he is poor himself, *he may apply it to himself, or to his family.* [88]

[88] *Praxis Confessarii,* Cap. ii. 44, emphasis supplied.

The Roman Cicero famously expressed his fierce indignation at a brazen swindle that the politically-connected Governor of Sicily, Gaius Verres, arranged through his partner Lucius Rabonius, in order to give *himself* a security deposit that was intended as compensation for damage he caused others: “*Deridet quum sibi ipsum jubet satisdare Rabonium.”* [89]

[89] Cicero’s Orations Against Gaius Verres, *Actionis Secundae: De Praetura Urbana.*

Cicero called Gaius Verres the “king of hell.” What would Cicero have called a Liguorian Catholic who stole and then made “*restitution*” *to himself* with his ill-gotten gains, with the approval of one of the highest moral authorities of the Church that bears the name of Rome? [90]

[90] In his *Oration,* Cicero’s case against Verres for extortion, embezzlement, violation of human rights and impiety, represents an intrepid prosecution of a powerful politician who possessed a network of dangerously influential cronies in the judiciary and senate. As the charge of impiety shows, Cicero was a follower of the traditional religion, yet he was also an enemy of criminal politics. On the strength of the truth of Cicero’s oratory alone, Verres fled Rome in disgrace.

Here we witness the power of criminal politics. Exposure of the criminal ideology of Alphonsus Liguori which brings the Catholic Church into grave disrepute and instructs the followers of the Church of Rome on the best methods of lying and thieving within Talmudic-like perimeters, will bring down upon the head, name and reputation of the person exposing Liguori, the most fearsome calumny. This occurred when we published just a few facts about the Italian saint in our *Revisionist History* newsletter. Like Judaics defending a criminal rabbi, we were showered with cries of rage, such as “How dare you besmirch the author of *The Glories of Mary!”* (or with reference to one of the other titles of mystical devotion that the “saint” penned).

“...in *The Glories of Mary* Ligurori peppered the text with spurious quotes and citations, and a heretical theology which teaches that hardened sinners who mumble Hail Marys while half asleep, or wear her scapular while committing crimes of blasphemy and Satan worship, will be preserved from damnation by being given the grace of final repentance. [91]

[91] Meyrick, “St. Alphonsus de’ Liguori’s ‘Glories of Mary,” *Christian Remembrancer,* October, 1855, in *The Christian Remembrancer,* Vol. 30 (London, 1855), pp. 417-467.

In the first instance, Rev. Meyrick is referring to the following passage from *The Glories of Mary:*

> “It is the opinion of many theologians and of S. Thomas in particular, that for many who have died in mortal sin the Divine Mother has obtained from God a suspension of their sentence... Trustworthy authors give us many instances in which this has occurred... the Divine Mother has been able to deliver from hell even some who have died in sin...
>
> “In the year 1604, in a city in Flanders, there were two young men, students who, instead of attending to their studies, gave themselves up to a life of debauchery. One night they were both in a house with an evil companion, when one of them, named Richard returned home, leaving his companion there. After he got home, and had begun to undress, he remembered that he had not that day said some ‘Hail Marys’ that he was in the habit of reciting. Feeling very sleepy he was loath to say them; he did himself violence and repeated them, though without devotion, and half asleep.
>
> “He then laid down, and had fallen into a sound slumber, when he was suddenly roused by a violent knocking at the door, and without its opening he saw his companion deformed and hideous standing before him. Who art thou?’ he cried out. ‘What! Dost thou not know me?” Ah! yes, but how thou art changed; thou seemest to me a devil.’ Truly,’ he exclaimed, ‘poor creature that I am, I am damned, and how? When I was leaving that wicked house, a devil came and strangled me: my body is in the street, and my soul is in hell; and thou must know,’ added he, ‘that the same fate awaited thee had not the Blessed Virgin preserved thee in consideration of that little act of homage of the ‘Hail Mary.’ ...With these words he opened his mantle, and showing the flames and serpents by which he was tormented, he disappeared.” [92]

[92] *The Glories of Mary Translated from the Italian of St. Alphonsus de’ Liguori by A Father of the Same Congregation* (Redemptorist Fathers, 1852), pp. 188-189; 190-191.

Liguori’s iniquitous theology does not register with his followers. We observed a similar phenomenon in the matter of the child molestation facilitator Cardinal Castrillon Hoyos, a strong proponent of the Tridentine Mass, who wrote a letter to Bishop Pierre Pican, bishop of Bayeux-Lisieux in France, congratulating him on shielding a molester-priest, Father René Bissey, from the police. Father René Bissey was guilty of raping minors.

According to Vatican analyst Jean-Marie Guenois, the Congregation for the Clergy, under Cardinal Hoyos, argued for protective treatment of accused molesters.[93]

After his criminal cheerleading for Bishop Pican was published and made known to the world, as far as we could detect it detracted not one iota from the illustrious standing of Cardinal Hoyos among “traditional Catholics.” We have preserved the record of the numerous “traditional Catholic” media outlets, some internationally renowned, which had nothing meaningful to say concerning Hoyos’ letter to the bishop, while continuing to celebrate him as a bastion of fidelity to “traditional Catholicism,” which can only signify that one of the “traditions” of “Catholicism” is the facilitation of child molestation. What counted in the eyes of those many persons who dare to self-describe themselves as “traditional Catholics” was Hoyos’ devotion to an ancient rite of worship; clouds of incense serving to obscure (or minimize) the molestation of children.

A similar absolution for the prelate who grants freedom to ceremony while committing heresy is the “traditional” Catholic nostalgia for Pope Benedict XVI after he abdicated. We are here tracking criminal politics. With the Word of God as our guide, we mark the love of money as manifested in rule by the Money Power as the root of all other crime, after which we acknowledge Jesus Christ’s cosmic battle with the God-defying, Scripture nullifying “Scribes and Pharisees” as having established the nature and identity of His principal enemies. In the matter of Benedict XVI, he is culpable for supporting rule by the Money Power through the permission for usury and “Catholic” usurers, which he continued as part of the dreadful legacy of his predecessors. On the second count he continued the abominable practice of Pope “Saint” John Paul II of entering synagogues in order to win the favor of the Christ-deniers within its walls, and failing to contend with them for the faith. Let us compare the behavior of Pope Benedict XVI with St. Paul:

“Every sabbath he held a disputation in the synagogue, trying to convince both Jews and Greeks by confronting them with the name of the Lord Jesus. Just at the time when Silas and Timothy arrived from Macedonia, Paul was much occupied with preaching, while he bore witness to the Jews that Jesus was the Christ. But they set their faces against it and talked blasphemy, until he shook the dust out of his garments, and said to them, Your blood be upon your own heads; I am clear of it… he spared no pains to refute the Jews publicly, proving from the scriptures that Jesus was the Christ.” [94]

---

[93] Jean-Marie Guenois: http://blog.lefigaro.fr/religioblog/2010/04/le-poids-dune-larme.html?xtor=RSS-59 (April 22, 2010). “Castrillon pressured Bishop Manuel Moreno, who was bishop of Tucson, Arizona from 1982-2003, to allow a priest sex abuser to take a pension and work outside the diocese. Fr Robert Trupia ‘sexually abused dozens of minor boys’ before he was defrocked in 2004, according to documents in a civil case.” Jason Berry, *National Catholic Reporter,* April 22, 2010.

[94] Acts 18: 4-6; 28. Ronald Knox translation.

When did Pope Benedict have a *disputation* in the synagogue(s) he entered and prayed within? When did Pope Benedict in the synagogue “bear witness to the Jews that Jesus was the Christ” and without Him they were lost? When did Pope Benedict “spare no pains to refute the Jews publicly”? He did nothing of the kind. Quite the contrary, he betrayed our Lord Jesus Christ by confirming the unbelieving people in the synagogue, in their sins and blasphemy by upholding, through his presence and his weasel words, Pope “Saint” John Paul II’s disastrous “elder brothers in the Faith” theology. What is the “traditional” Catholic response to Pope Benedict XVI, whose burlesque of the Christian witness and mission of Jesus Himself classes him as a turncoat? From a leading “traditional” Catholic pundit on the “Benedictine Respite”:

“During the seven-year Benedictine Respite, the post-conciliar revolution in the Church seemed to have lost its momentum, even if it was far from being in retreat. Traditional Catholics rejoiced to see a series of papal acts favorable to Tradition: the promulgation of *Summorum Pontificum* (2007), bringing an end at last to the insane suppression of the traditional Roman Rite… and the long-overdue correction of the errant, doctrinally defective translations of the Latin typical edition of the Novus Ordo Missal… Also cause for rejoicing was Benedict’s return to dignity and decorum in the papacy as befits the august Vicar of Christ… Pope Benedict returned to the line of his preconciliar predecessors, issuing prophetic warnings… In his Address to the Parish Priests and Clergy of Rome on February 14, 2013, given on the heels of his staggering announcement that he was abdicating the papacy, Benedict… conceded what traditionalists have been contending since the post-conciliar crisis began: that the entire program of ‘updating’ the Church in the name of the Council had been a disaster… during the Benedictine Respite the revolution did seem to lose momentum, while a Latin Mass revival was gaining momentum all over the world… With Pope Benedict’s abdication, however, the promising signs of renewal during the Respite were soon overshadowed…” [95]

[95] *The Remnant* (“A National Catholic Bi-Weekly based in St. Paul, Minnesota”), May 20, 2014, pp. 1 and 8.

Too often — *far too often* — the devil uses the human fascination with pietism, ceremonies, long robes ("*cappa magna*"), bells, chants, incense, candles and all the outward signs of antiquarian devotion, as a substitute of that for which there is no substitute, *obedience to the law of God.* When an agent of the devil advocates for pious customs and venerable, Latin-rite traditions and is then seen to defend them, that is all that most "conservatives" and "traditionalists" need to know. It is the ceremony, the outward show, the deceptive theatricals, that register as sure signs of Christian faith in the eyes of these deluded persons. The Cryptocracy has used "traditional" Catholicism with as much effectiveness and potency as it has exploited Liberalism, to obstruct God's will being done on earth. In fact, one might go so far as to venture to say that it has wrought more damage through "traditional" Catholics, because of the pharisaical pride of many within this movement, who regard themselves as infinitely morally superior to a Liberal; and, due to the stealth by which the beautiful, outward trappings of "traditional" Catholicism have served to conceal the horribly disfigured and deceitful theology which "Popes and Saints" of the ilk of John Paul II, Benedict XVI and Alphonsus Liguori have injected into the bowels of the Church of Rome.

In Benedict XVI's case we see that one can be both a Judaizer and "the august Vicar of Christ," he who personifies "dignity and decorum in the papacy" (in side a synagogue); a pontiff "opposed to the updating of the Church," who caused "the revolution to lose momentum," yet who also de facto canonized Judaism's post-modernist "Shoah" theology of Holocaustianity, suspended the evangelization of the Jews and buttressed the synagogue system of the rabbis as a legitimate forum for the worship of God without Christ. Ah, but he advanced the Latin language, the Latin Mass, the smells, the bells and "the decorum." Obviously the aesthetic's the thing. Here we have the "theology" of the interior designer and the hairdresser.

The legacy of Romanist equivocation, and of Liguorianism, is a mental fog that seeps into the mind like gas under a door, emitted by an ecclesiastical milieu that is permeated with it from the Confessional to the court — the *il fumo di Satana* revealed by Pope Paul VI; the reason why so many Catholics cannot think straight concerning these issues; why they prefer image to reality, and "rejoice" over a Judas pope who they consider "favorable to *Tradition.*" When one sees this reference to a "Tradition" one is reminded of that "*Faith*" in which John Paul II situated the "Jews" as our "elder brothers." The question arises, whose Tradition is being referred to here, and *which Faith is it in which the "Jews" are our elders?* Collaborating with the deniers of Christ is not a tradition of the ancient Catholic Church. *The Faith wherein faithless Jews are* *the elders cannot be the Christian Faith* (1 John 2: 22-23). The Faith of Antichrist cannot be “our” Faith.

The “Tradition” of placing denial of Auschwitz gassings on a vastly higher plane of cosmic transgression than denial of the Resurrection of the Son of God, as Pope Benedict’s Vatican Secretariat of State did when it suspended the episcopal functions of Bishop Richard Williamson for questioning the existence of homicidal gas chambers in Auschwitz-Birkenau, had no precedent beyond the papacy of John Paul II; if it is a “Tradition” it has been observed heretofore only in hell.

“Saint” Alphonsus Liguori on Contraception

Two thousand years ago the attitude of servile obedience represented by clericalism and immersion in priestcraft was the mental attitude that kept the Jewish people away from Jesus Christ, who had been branded an *apikoros* (wicked rebel against the *Torah SheBeal Peh* oral law). Whoever followed Christ when He walked on earth had to be an independent thinker free of the religious authority that controlled the Temple and had condemned Him. But “traditional” Catholics don’t question the pieties, legends and lies that came before Vatican Council II on the part of saints and popes labeled conservative. Liguori is part of that pantheon.

Right to life activists in the Church of Rome have campaigned since the 1960s against the relaxed attitude in the Confessional toward husbands and wives who practice artificial contraception. To be fair it must be admitted that Pope Paul VI promulgated a traditional Catholic teaching on this subject, *Humane Vitae.* His teaching was firmly supported by the hierarchy of American bishops, [96] *but it was defeated in the Confessional.* Newman and other apologists for Liguori’s Machiavellianism allege that we should look to the Council of Trent for Catholic theology and not in Liguori’s *Moral Theology* which, they say, was intended as a guide for confessors and pastors. Even if this assertion were true, it is a patently foolish one. Theology is an academic exercise if it does not serve as a rule of life for the Catholic. The Church’s teaching on contraception was undermined and then subverted not by some abstract theological treatise issued by an ivory tower dissident.

[96] *Human Life in Our Day: A Collective Pastoral Letter of the American Hierarchy* (Washington D.C: United States Catholic Conference, 1968).

It was overthrown in the Confessional. Many Catholics will be appalled to learn that in the 1700s, *long before Vatican Council II or the modernism condemned by Pope St. Pius X, subtle moral vagaries amounting to tacit permission for birth control were put forth by “Saint” Alphonsus.* This fact is known to the Charles Currans of the Church of Rome but not to the lay people in the pews. Who has conspired to keep the laity in the dark?

Liguori is the ultimate author of the nullification of the laws against contraception. Why wouldn’t modernists follow his lead when he was cited by Pope Pius XII a few years before the onset of the Second Vatican Council as the supreme clerical authority on the shepherding of the conscience of penitents? Imagine the smirks of the modernist theologians when “traditional” Catholics charge them with heresy for permitting artificial birth control. Gales of clandestine laughter must surely be the response in the chanceries of the dioceses. “Your own patron Saint Liguori is the author of our innovations!” is very likely the private thought of the liberal prelatical insiders and theologians that causes them so much mirth in the face of the pitifully gullible “traditionalists” who imagine they fight for Christ while following Liguori. Once again, we observe that “traditional” Catholics, burdened with ignorance and a terminal case of the double mind, are hopelessly outclassed by their enemies.

“In Liguori the decline of the old Augustinian position on non-procreative intercourse is evident. As he customarily did in his *Moral Theology,* he used as his text the seventeenth-century German Jesuit, Herman Busenbaum (1600-1668), and he quoted Busenbaum’s opinion that there is no sin in intercourse ‘to avoid danger of incontinence in oneself or one’s partner.” [97]

[97] John T. Noonan Jr., *Contraception: A History of its Treatment by the Catholic Theologians and Canonists,* p. 320.

“In the Augustinian tradition the norm of the actual openness of sexual intercourse to creation was an absolute norm... St. Alphonsus Liguori taught that even in questions of the natural law there is room for *epikeia* [98]

[98] *Theologia moralis* 1: I: tr. II, c. IV, n. 201.

...*he* applies the

possibility of *epikeia* explicitly to *coitus interruptus,* [99]

[99] *Coitus Interruptus* = the sin of Onan (onanism); always proscribed by the Catholic Church prior to theologians such as Liguori.

which at that time was the only... method of birth control, and the cooperation of the wife who knows her husband is going to use this method... he explicitly mentions cases in which couples have good reason to want the marriage act not to lead to conception... such refinements of moral theology... justify the refusal of the faithful in their perceived circumstances to follow *Humanae Vitae*...” [100]

[100] Mark MacGuigan, *Abortion, Conscience and Democracy* (1994), p. 30.

Liguori advised confessors to permit birth control for some married couples in certain cases: “Ligouri proposed this course of action. If a priest thought that the penitent, *after* being informed of the sinfulness of coitus interruptus, *still might not cease* performing that act, then the priest was not to disturb the conscience of the penitent. The confessor should not put his penitent ‘in bad faith.” [101]

[101] Liguori, “Opera Moralia” IV, Book 1, numbers 4 and 5 in *Theologia Moralis* (Graz, 1954); and Robert Obach, *The Catholic Church on Marital Intercourse,* (2009), p. 115.

There will be diehards who, even after acknowledging the probable veracity of our documentation concerning Liguori, will nevertheless insist that by disclosing his teaching we have irreparably harmed the reputation of a saint of the Catholic Church, and therefore of the Church itself.

We reply that it was not the Catholic Church that canonized this scoundrel in 1839. It was the post-Renaissance, Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Kabbalistic Church of Rome that did so, led by the thieves who stole the holy name of Catholic and appended it, *mala fide,* to their robber Church.

We further reply that the name and reputation of the Catholic Church is degraded and soiled not by truth-divulgers, but by those “Holy Fathers,” and prelatical “Eminences” and “Excellencies” who maintain that Alphonsus Liguori is an authentic saint of the One, Holy, Catholic and Apostolic Church, and that his doctrines are free of error.

[Page 480 The Moral Theology of Mental Reservation and Equivocation]

The Irrational Principle in Orthodox Judaic Hermeneutics and the Church of Rome’s Probabilism

Though it would require an additional volume to document all of the correspondences between rabbinic-Talmudic-Zoharic theology and the theology of the Church of Rome, at least one of there parallels is worth noting here.

A hermeneutic principle of Orthodox Judaism employed for allegedly divining the authentic meaning of the Old Testament, is termed *Gezara shava,* by which two Scripture passages often having nothing more in common than a single, inconsequential word, are said to be inter-dependent and linked by a common significance. [102]

[102] For more on *Gezara shava,* cf. *Judaism Discovered,* pp. 170-171.

So that, for example, the word "guilty" in Deuteronomy 25:2 is linked by the rabbis to the same word occurring in Numbers 35:31, in support of expanding the passage in Deuteronomy concerning corporal punishment, to include capital punishment, which is, quite frankly, incoherent and demented, since there is no connection between the two citations, except that both are the word of God.

In the Church of Rome's Probabilism, as we have seen it employed, where two conflicting theological views are advanced, the perspective that has the least amount of support in the Bible, and was thus the least "probable," could indeed be accepted as grounds for Catholic judgment, direction, and action.

Each of these methodologies is clearly irrational, yet each enjoys acceptance from among some of the most esteemed and authoritative theologians in both religious traditions. Some will say that this is a coincidence. In fact, it is one among many instances in which the Satanically deranged Talmudic and Kabbalistic mentality is mirrored in Rome's own Renaissance and post-Renaissance theology.

[The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome   Page 481]

Chapter XIII

Ecclesiastical Sodomy and its Root

"...the history of the church has shown this vice to be a peculiarly clerical 'contagion..." [1]

[1] Mark D. Jordan, *The Invention of Sodomy in Christian Theology,* p. 154.

Rome's reliance on secrecy has been nearly total. Together with clericalism, it is the engine of its pandemic plague of child molestation. Secrecy confers on clerics—who are revered as persons possessed of sacred faculties (priesthood) and miraculous powers (transubstantiation)—power over laymen and their children. As Richard Seymour has written, "I don't accept the explanations of child rape within the Catholic church which attribute it to Catholic practices producing sexual repression—as if were priests allowed to marry, they would not be tempted to abuse boys from the laity... I doubt that it (celibacy) produces predatory child rapists. *The rape of children typically takes place in institutions and situations where adults have too much unaccountable power over children.*"

From whence does this immunity, this freedom from accountability arise? The founder of the Jesuits, Ignatius of Loyola, wrote, "Rules for Thinking with the Church." These appear in his *Spiritual Exercises* of 1548, which remain in use around the world. Loyola's "Rule 10" counsels secrecy with regard to sins and crimes perpetrated by clerics:

“To be eager to commend the decrees, mandates, traditions, rites and customs of the Fathers in the Faith or our superiors. As to their conduct; although there may not always be the uprightness of conduct that there ought to be, yet to attack or revile them in private or in public tends to scandal and disorder. Such attacks set the people against their princes and pastors; we must avoid such reproaches and never attack superiors before inferiors.”

“*Never attack superiors before inferiors.*” There has seldom been a more pithy summation of the occult command system.

This Jesuit clericalism permitted molesters of children who were priests, bishops or cardinals to be protected from exposure in front of “inferiors” (the laity). The prime mandate is to protect “*princes and pastors*” from being “*attacked.*” Their victims are not even mentioned. This was *taught in* “*the good old traditional Church*” *in 1548, not 1968.*

Beginning in the 1990s we learned of widespread molestations of children by priests and monks of the Church of Rome, facilitated by bishops, cardinals and popes such as “Saint” John-Paul II, for the main purpose of protecting Rome’s institutional reputation and global financial operations, as well as the “sacred person” of individual priests who are taught in traditional seminaries the Kabbalistic heresy that the souls of priests are of a higher order than that of the laity, contravening the anti-Kabbalist teaching of Jesus Christ (Matthew 20:24-26).

The laity who believe that they are of a lower order of humanity compared with the ordained priest, embrace clericalism, deferring to priests in the craven manner observed in many Latino and Oriental nations, as well as among the post-modernist churchlings termed (ironically and falsely) “traditional Catholics.” *This deference has been a contributing factor in the virulence of criminal child molestation*: as “Saint” Ignatius of Loyola stipulated, “Father” must be protected at all costs, including suppression of police and media investigations. Here we observe parallels with rabbinic doctrine concerning informants. In Orthodox Judaism, those who turn a molester-rabbi over to the police are *“mosers”* (an informer, denunciator; synonyms are *“masor, mesirah”).* According to the *Jewish Encyclopedia* (1906), “Nothing was more severely punished by the Jews... the sages of the Talmud compared the *‘moser’* to a serpent.”

The *systematic molestation of children by priests* occurred at least *nine hundred years before the Second Vatican Council.* The most stirring protest and exposé of homosexual predators in clerical ranks was registered by a medieval Benedictine monk and saint, Peter Damian (1007-1072), in his Letter XXXI, *Liber Gomorrhianus* (“Book of Gomorrah”), addressed to Pope

Leo IX in 1049, [2]

[2] St Peter Damian, “The Letters of Peter Damian,” (Letter 31), in *The Fathers of the Church: Medieval Continuation,* transl. Owen J. Blum, O. F. M. (1990). Leo IX responded to Damian’s *Liber Gomorrhianus* with his own *Ad splendidum nitentis,* excommunicating priests and prelates who engaged in sodomy in the form of anal sex: “...there may be no hope of recovering their rank for those who are tainted with... what is horrible to mention as well as to hear—who have fallen into anal relations.” Leo’s excommunication of anal sodomite priests and prelates is cited in Catholic University of America Professor Uta-Renate Blumenthal’s work, *Papal Reform and Canon Law in the 11th and 12th Centuries* (1998). The excommunication was presumably issued at the 1049 Council of Reims.

wherein he refers to “improper leniency on the part of prelates” toward sodomite Catholic priests. Later it was suppressed: “He wrote a scathing tract against homosexual practices that Pope Alexander II (1061-1073) discretely locked up.” [3]

[3] Robert Hale, “St. Peter Damian” in *Encyclopedia of Monasticism* (2000), p. 357.

St. Peter Damian had long served as prior of the hermitage of Fonte Avellana near Gubbio, while Leo had been bishop of Toul for about two decades before his election to the papacy early in 1049. This pope was a sleuth in matters of clerical sexual corruption, outlining in his biography of St. Romuald of Revenna written circa 1042, how homosexual priests and monks intimidated other clerics from exposing them by claiming the accusers were also guilty of the sin, and bringing trumped up charges against them.

According to St. Peter Damian, St. Romuald “himself used to say that he knew that this kind of thing went on in the hermitage he had just left...” [4]

[4] *American Historical Review,* February, 2013, p. 234. Leo IX seems to have been a sincere campaigner against simony (the sale of ecclesiastic offices). It was on his watch that the Eastern Church at Constantinople was lost to Rome. For an account of the bungling in this regard cf. John Julius Norwich, *Absolute Monarchs* (2011), 97-99.

The uncensored edition of St. Peter’s singular Latin text is in print in an accurate English

translation by Owen Blum. [5]

[5] An earlier translation is by P.S. Payer, *Peter Damian: Book of Gomorrah, An Eleventh-Century Treatise Against Clerical Homosexuality* (1982). The Payer volume is a censored edition and is not recommended, except, as it so happens, for Payer’s invaluable introduction (also cf. Payer’s 1985 study, *Sex and the Penitentials: Formation of a Sexual Code 550-1150).* Two pro-“gay” treatises nevertheless offer a wealth of documentation, despite the extent to which their interpretations elide traditional morality: Derrick Sherwin Bailey’s *Homosexuality and the Western*

Christian Tradition (1975), and Louis Crompton's *Homosexuality and Civilization* (2006).

Pierre S. Payer assesses its rarity as "an indispensable work... the only extended, serious treatment of the subject in the formative period of the Christian West." [6]

[6] *Peter Damian: Book of Gomorrah,* p. 5.

St. Peter Damian did not address this sin against nature as a theoretical exercise. He well understood that celibate males living in close proximity and isolated must be vigilant. It would be wrong to say that by their living circumstances alone they are "prone" to sodomy, as some Protestants assert in intemperate agitation against "monkery" (monastic life), which are in fact indirect aspersions on Christ and the Apostle Paul and other holy persons who took upon themselves the honorable vocation of a single, unmarried life. It cannot be said that the condition among Christian brethren of celibate group life is *ipso facto* homo-erotic or homosexual. However, complacency is the other extreme failing in assessing this state in life, and where a "Yes, Your Lordship!" hierarchy of inferiors/superiors is in place, together with clerical secrecy, there are always grounds for concern and watchfulness without which, "the wantonness of the foul impurity" will "spread unpunished" unless "repelled by proper repressive action of apostolic severity..." [7]

[7] St. Peter Damian, *The Fathers of the Church,* op. cit., p. 4.

Writing in the eleventh century, St. Peter Damian, in line with Biblical, Apostolic and Patristic doctrine stated: 1. Definition: Clerical sodomites are members of a "Satanic tyranny."

2. Prevalence: "the cancer of sodomy is, in fact, spreading through the clergy like a savage beast... raging with shameless abandon through the flock of Christ." St. Peter understood that it was so virulent in the eleventh century that:

"Unless immediate effort be exerted by the Apostolic See, there is little doubt that, even if one wished to curb this unbridled evil, he could not check the momentum of its progress." [8]

[8] Damian, ibid., p. 6.

St. Peter was writing in a conservative age when there was no "gay" rights movement, no pornography industry and no doctrinal dilution of the ancient Biblical law concerning the sin of Sodom, and yet sodomy among the clergy was "raging with shameless abandon through the flock." Since this was an epidemic in the Middle Ages, an age that was exponentially light years ahead of our time in terms of recognizing and enforcing right-and-wrong, it is not far off the mark to perceive that where special powers and immunities are granted to clerics within a milieu of secrecy, sodomy among single, unmarried men living in close quarters is a constant threat. St. Peter writes of a priest who "known to have committed this sin with eight or ten equally foul companions is still permitted to continue in his rank." [9]

[9] Ibid., pp. 7-8.

One section of St. Peter Damian's Letter 31 is devoted to "Bishops who practice impure acts with their spiritual sons." He writes, "Who can expect the flock to prosper when its shepherd has sunk so deep into the bowels of the devil? What man will continue to be under his authority...?"

In the 21st century we have many such bishops in the Church of Rome. Because of clerical secrecy we do not know who among them are active practitioners of sodomy, but we know who among the hierarchy are recruiters for the seducers. A few examples:

- Chicago Archbishop Blase Cupich who, when Bishop of Spokane, Washington permitted homosexual dances held by the "gay" students' club in Cataldo Hall on the campus of Jesuit Gonzaga University. (Cupich was elevated to the rank of cardinal by Pope Francis in November, 2016).
- Cardinal Godfried Danneels who, in 2013 referred to the "marriage" of sodomites as a "positive development." Cardinal Danneels was recorded urging a 13-year-old male victim of sexual abuse at the hands of his friend and colleague Bishop Roger Vangheluwe, not to go to the police.

- Cardinal Timothy Michael Dolan, the archbishop of New York, who led the 2015 St. Patrick's Day parade as grand marshal after praising as a "wise one" the parade organizers' decision to allow right-to-sodomy groups to march in the event.
- Archbishop Bruno Forte, of the diocese of Chieti-Vasto, Italy, who drafted the homosexuality section of the midterm report of the 2014 Synod on the Family that spoke of "accepting and valuing ['gay'] sexual orientation." When questioned about his declaration, Archbishop Forte stated that sexually active homosexuals have "rights that should be protected," calling unions of sodomites an "issue of respect," and stating: "...connected to homosexual unions it has to be noted that there are cases in which mutual aid to the point of sacrifice constitutes a precious support in the life of the partners." (*Relatio post disceptationem*, Oct. 13, 2014).

- Cardinal Angelo Sodano, the dean of the Vatican's College of Cardinals, attempted to halt investigations into sex crimes committed by Fr. Marcial Maciel Degollado, the wealthy founder of the Legionaries of Christ.
- Cardinal Raymundo Damasceno Assis, the archbishop of Aparecida, Brazil, and president of Brazil's National Conference of Bishops, who praised the "softer and tolerant rhetoric of Francis, especially regarding homosexuality."
- Pope Francis, the "Vicar of Christ," on earth stated, concerning homosexuality, "Who am I to judge?" ("Pope Says He Will Not Judge Gay Priests," *NY Times* [online], July 29, 2013). Yet, on January 20, 2017 in an interview with the Spanish newspaper *El País,* he was asked, "Trump is just now being sworn in as president of the United States... What do you make of it?" Francis answered, "We will see what he does and will *judge accordingly.*" [10]

[10] Cf. https://elpais.com/elpais/2017/01/21/inenglish/1485026427_223988.html (emphasis supplied).

- Cardinal Desmond Connell (1926-2017) was educated by the Jesuits at Belvedere College in Dublin and attended Clonliffe College, Dublin's diocesan seminary. He was ordained in 1951 and earned a doctorate in philosophy at University College, Dublin.

Connell became a professor of general metaphysics and dean of the philosophy faculty there. Pope "Saint" John-Paul II appointed the "conservative Catholic scholar" Archbishop of Dublin in 1988.

Connell was a facilitator of child molestation in his archdiocese. The crimes first began to emerge after the Rev. Brendan Smyth, a Northern Irish priest, was convicted of child sex abuse in 1994. The next year Archbishop Connell denied that the archdiocese had paid compensation to victims of abuse by its priests. But in 1998, it emerged that he had quietly lent archdiocesan money to an abusive priest, the Rev. Ivan Payne, who then paid an abuse survivor, Andrew Madden. Three years later Pope "Saint" John Paul II elevated Connell to the rank of Cardinal.

In 2002, the Irish national television network RTE broadcast "Cardinal Secrets," a report by the investigative journalist Mary Raftery exposing the archdiocese's protection of eight priests who had sexually abused children. An independent commission was established to investigate the archdiocese's handling of 325 claims of child molestation.

Cardinal Connell mounted a High Court challenge to block the inquiry from gaining access to 5,500 files on priests and molestation allegations. He secured a temporary injunction, before withdrawing his action later amid public outrage.

After retiring in 2004, Connell lived in comfort, provided by the Church. He was never prosecuted.

In 2009 the government of Ireland mounted a commission of inquiry led by Judge Yvonne Murphy, which resulted in the 2009 Murphy Report. “The Dublin Archdiocese’s preoccupations in dealing with cases of child sexual abuse, at least until the mid-1990s, were the maintenance of secrecy, the avoidance of scandal, the protection of the reputation of the church and the preservation of its assets,” the commission found. “All other considerations, including the welfare of children and justice for victims, were subordinated to these priorities.”

Cardinal Connell’s remains were on display in state at St Mary’s Pro-Cathedral, Dublin February 23rd-Feb. 24, 2017. Accompanying two archbishops in receiving the remains at the pro-cathedral were Bishop Walsh, and fellow Auxiliary Bishop of Dublin Ray Field, Bishop of Clonfert John Kirby, Vicar General in Dublin Msgr Paul Callan, Fr Damian McNeice who worked as spokesman for Cardinal Connell, and Canon Damian O’Reilly, administrator at the pro-cathedral. In the eulogy, Bishop of Dublin Eamonn Walsh spoke of the late cardinal’s “deep, deep faith” his gifts “as a philosopher, historian and lover of classical music.” Internment was in the crypt of the cathedral.

The Murphy Report revealed that four archbishops in Dublin — John Charles McQuaid, who died in 1973, Dermot Ryan, who died in 1984, Kevin McNamara, who died in 1987, and retired Cardinal Connell — failed to report their knowledge of child sexual abuse to the Garda (Irish Police), from the 1960s to the 1980s. The report, launched by the Irish Attorney General Dermot Ahern, also concluded that the vast majority of priests and bishops turned a “blind eye” to abuse. One priest was found to have abused more than one hundred children. Another confessed under questioning that he had committed abuse every two weeks for more than 25 years.

The Commission’s investigation disclosed that senior members of the Irish police regarded priests as being outside their investigative jurisdiction. The relationship between some senior police officers and priests and bishops was labeled a criminal coverup of “dreadful crimes.” The Murphy Report stated that rather than investigate complaints from children, the police simply reported the matter to the Dublin Catholic diocese, and that the structures and rules of the Church facilitated the conspiracy. It found that government officials participated in the cover-up by allowing the Church to exist beyond the reach of the law.

His critics believed that Cardinal Connell had a talent for equivocation. For example, he initially denied using diocesan funds to compensate victims—but later said he had used the present tense to say that payments were not being made at that moment. He had not said that payments had not been made in the past.

Some contemporary Catholics imagine that these facilitators, apologists and recruiters for homosexuality are mostly a product of the 1960s. Actually, the contemporary “gay” rights sympathizers are emboldened by the knowledge of the clandestine chronicle of homosexual practices and predation in the Catholic Church *extending back more than a thousand years* to those supposed halcyon “traditional Catholic” times, when bishops, cardinals and popes were costumed in elaborate lace, gowns and similar effeminate attire and paraphernalia resembling the outfit of a female impersonator.

Who was there to protest when one or more of these “princes of the church” quietly selected a young Catholic male for a night of sodomy from among the ranks of those boys who had been accepted at puberty to enter pre-seminary facilities, and who grew up to be monks, friars and priests without any experience of women, or of any world other than the all-male clerical preserve? How would these activities leak out when the reputation of the prelate was held to be of greater importance than God’s justice and divine law?

Child Oblation

“In the early Middle Ages, the practice known as child oblation had been common in Benedictine monasteries in western Europe for six hundred years. Oblation, which properly means the giving of a child in permanent (irrevocable) gift to a monastic community, could provide vicariously for the donors’ own spiritual welfare... by the beginning of the seventh century both ecclesiastical and secular law in Europe stipulated that children given in infancy were not to leave the cloister in maturity.” [11]

[11] Cf. Sarah Foot, *Monastic Life in Anglo-Saxon England,* c. 600-900, p. 141. On the practice of child oblation cf. Patricia A. Quinn, *Better Than the Sons of Kings: Boys and Monks in the Early Middle Ages* (1989), and Mayke De Jong, *In Samuel’s Image: Child Oblation in the Early Medieval West* (1996). De Jong argues that parents viewed their oblate children as a *holocaustum,* a sacrifice wholly consumed by fire, i.e. completely given to God. De Jong argues against John Boswell’s abandonment thesis in his book, *The Kindness of Strangers* (1989), as well as the common idea that oblates were a family’s supernumerary offspring. The most famous bound-for-life English oblate was Venerable Bede.

According to historian Sarah Foot, the scripture text quoted to justify the practice of a child’s involuntary lifetime obligation to a monastery was I Samuel: the dedication in the Temple “of the infant Samuel to the priesthood soon after his birth.” Of course, the ancient temple of Israel was not a cloistered monastery. In 726 Pope Gregory II ruled that a child-oblate was effectively a slave, bound for life. Neither departure nor marriage was permitted to the oblate, even after reaching adulthood: “This we absolutely forbid, since it is an impious thing that the restraints of desire should be relaxed for children given to God.” [12]

“Children as young as five would be placed in cloistered communities... But by the twelfth century... the tide was turning and the practice of oblation became much less common. Part of the problem may have been that sexual relations were taking place between boys and monks... In England, the *Regularis concordia,* a code of monastic observance approved by the Synod of Winchester ca. 970-973, had ruled against physical contact between older and younger monks...” [13]

“In the monastery moreover let neither monks nor abbott embrace or kiss, as it were, youths or boys *(adolescents uel puerulos);* let their affection for them be spiritual, let them keep from words of flattery, and let them love the children reverently and with the greatest circumspection. Not even on the excuse of some spiritual matter shall any monk presume to take with him a young boy alone for any private purpose but, as the Rule commands, let the boys always remain under the care of their master.” [14]

This was “a statement echoing earlier warnings against the temptations offered by the residence of young males in monastic environments: *De renuntiatione saeculi* attributed to Basil the Great (ca. 330-79) and remarks by Pope Gregory III (690-731) on sodomitic practices among the ordained...” [15]

Another grave threat to the modesty of boys in the care of clergy or prelates: an offending pontiff, cardinal, bishop or abbott had the power to absolve the one he seduced (or raped) of the sin of passive cooperation with sodomy, just as a co-conspirator among the hierarchy could immunize the man who was the active sodomite: the prelate himself. This was a common tactic in 1049, as St. Peter Damian testified:

---

[12] Sarah Foot, ibid., p. 142. Gregory II was in this respect abrogating the Rule of St. Benedict as well as St. Basil’s teaching. Benedict required consent from a self-determining adolescent. Basil specified the age of consent at 16 or 17 years.

[13] *Regularis concordia Anglicae nationis monachorum sanctimonialiumque,* 7-8.

[14] Robert Mills, *Seeing Sodomy in the Middle Ages* (2015), pp. 215-216 and 339. Milis cites Payer’s bowdlerized text of Damian’s letter 31.

[15] Mills, ibid.

"...some of those who were shot through with the poison of this crime, when their conscience began to trouble them, confess to one another... they themselves become judges and each happily grants to the other blanket forgiveness that he aspires to acquire for himself." [16]

[16] Damian, op. cit., pp. 16-17.

In this explication of sodomite priests confessing to other sodomite priests there is an intimation of a network of sodomites. This network would seem to extend beyond circles of individual priests to the principal authors of ecclesiastical laws. Some canon laws at the time of Damian were written and published for the purpose of enacting leniency for clerics engaged in sodomy. The saint exposes these: he cites canon laws that permit priests to be punished lightly and laymen to be punished more stringently for the same sodomite crimes. [17]

[17] Ibid., pp. 26-27.

Here again we encounter the clandestine Church of Rome doctrine of two types of souls, that of the higher dimension-soul of the priest (in Judaism: *"ruchniyus");* and that of the layman, which is the equivalent to the Pharisaic doctrine of *shnei minim nifradim,* regarding the superiority of Judaic souls compared with the souls of the *goyim.* Countless souls have been sent to ruin in this life and perdition in the next so as to protect the clergy from exposure.

There is evidence that in medieval society sodomy was viewed as a mortal sin *prevalent* among priests and monks. This extends as far back as 969 A.D. and the suspicion by Rather of Verona of institutionalized sodomy among clerics. [18]

[18] Peter L.D. Reid, *The Complete Works of Rather of Verona* (1991).

This was a view also expounded by William the Conquerer's chaplain, Serlo of Bayeux (ca. 1036-1104) and other medieval advocates of an option for married clergy.

Remedies according to St. Peter Damian: priests who engage in anal intercourse "for even a short period" have lost "all hope of recovering their priesthood" and are to be defrocked. It is "utterly preposterous for those who are habituated to the filth of this festering disease to present themselves for (holy) orders or to remain in them if they are already ordained." Damian stipulated a remedy for priests who stop short of anal intercourse in sexual dalliance with men or boys:

"Of Clerics or Monks Who Are Seducers of Men: any cleric or monk who seduces young men or boys, or who is apprehended in kissing or in any shameful situation, shall be publicly flogged and shall lose his clerical tonsure... bound in iron chains... (for) six months of close confinement... Following this period, he shall spend a further six months living in a small segregated courtyard in the custody of a spiritual elder, kept busy with manual labor and prayer, subjected to vigils and prayers, forced to walk at all times in the company of two spiritual brothers, and never again allowed to associate with young men for purposes of improper conversation or advice."

Sodomy, Contraception and the Natural Law

St. Peter Damian's definition of sodomy was derived from the consensus of the early medieval Church, which was reflected even in the theology of Luther and Calvin, both of whom declared contraception to be a type of sodomy.[19] For Peter Damian, sodomy consisted of both anal intercourse and any act, including masturbation, which resulted in the squandering of semen.

Rather than being some far-out stipulation from the moral manual of a Catholic fanatic, this doctrine was common to the *natural law* (not Neoplatonic creeds)[20] taught by certain Greeks who prized fertility (as did even pagan societies in antiquity).

---

[19] Cf. Charles D. Provan, *The Bible and Birth Control* (1989).

[20] For instance, usury was generally viewed as a foul deed by ancient Roman statesmen and poets, who were in turn admired in the Christian West for the stance they took, consonant with their alignment with the Natural Law, *which is not derived from pagan religion.* What distinguishes acknowledgement of the flicker of Natural Law in some pre-Christian people from the heresy of the *prisca theologia* of the syncretists, is this: a person in antiquity living before knowledge of Christ and the gospel, is certain to have a distorted vision, even of the Natural Law, because "the stance and vision of the unregenerate" is a fault related to their existing in Original Sin, which "distorts whatever reality they apprehend." God dispenses "common grace," of which an inclination to adhere to the Natural Law is a part, in conjunction with "God's work of preserving order and limiting the damage that accrues from the worst consequences of human folly." (Cf. Stephen J. Grabill's discussion of Henry Stob's theology in *Rediscovering the Natural Law in Reformed Theological Ethics* [2006]).

[The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome   Page 493]

"The *Preambles to the Laws,* a Hellenistic treatise penned under the pseudonym 'Charondas' advocates procreationism in an unambiguously strict sense. This work was in circulation prior to the mid-first century B.C... Cicero (106-43 B.C.) mentions it... Charondas assumes that each man has or should have a wife and that the married couple should reproduce... He stipulates in no uncertain terms that the man must climax with his penis located nowhere else besides in his wife's vagina and for the purpose of reproduction alone... 'Each man must love his legitimate wife and procreate with her. Into nothing else should he ejaculate... Nature made seed for the sake of producing children, not licentiousness... Only deliberately procreative sex acts in marriage remain permissible... Semen is the 'seed of a man's children' and as such must be used strictly to reproduce them.

"...This solemnity about semen comes to the fore particularly... (when) Charondas deplores its misdirected use. A man who misdirects his semen 'kills' and 'wastes' both 'bis children' and even the entire luman race." [21]

Scripture-Twisting

One of the oft-quoted leaders in the sodomite denial movement is Prof. Michael Carden of the University of Queensland. In his influential book, *Sodomy: A History of a Christian Myth,* he twists the Genesis 19 account of the city of Sodom in a manner pleasing to those who wish to engage in anal intercourse without the burden of Biblical transgression being attached to it.

We can find no other motive for his writing, which makes no sense as an interpretation of the text, but a great deal of sense from the vantage of an apologia for buggery.

The traditional orthodox Catholic understanding of the Biblical account of Sodom in Genesis is as follows: 19:1-3: "Two of the 'men' who visited Abraham are now called *angels*.

19:5: *Know them.* Have sex with them. Sodom was guilty of unnatural sexual lust, highlighted here in its homosexual violence.

19:9 *Pressed sore.* Pressed hard. The wicked Sodomites responded to Lot's rebuke by accusing him of presuming to be their judge. Nothing but men would satisfy their lusts.

---

[21] Kathy L. Gaca, *The Making of Fornication: Eros, Ethics and Political Reform in Greek Philosophy and Early Christianity* (2003), pp. 108-109. Typical of the situation ethics of the pre-Christians, Plato lent only qualified support to this view: his support was *contingent* on the period of time it takes a couple to conceive the required number of children, *after which Plato wrote that they were free to do as they pleased* (in other words, to *waste semen as they pleased,* which reduces the argument against contraception to situation ethics.)

19:29: *God remembered Abraham.* The Lord answered Abraham's prayer not by saving the city of Sodom, which did not have ten righteous people within it (Genesis 18:32), but by having mercy on its only righteous man." [22]

[22] *Reformation Heritage KJV Study Bible* (2014), pp. 36-37.

The modernist falsification of Genesis 19 has many sources. We will begin with the Rev. Dr. Derrick Sherwin Bailey's 1955 spin on Sodom in Genesis, in his book *Homosexuality and the Western Christian Tradition.* Here one will find one of the most enduring of all the sodomite-exculpatory shibboleths which liberal church-goers continue to parrot: that what was punished by God in Sodom was a breach of etiquette, a refusal of hospitality to strangers, absent a sexual dimension.

To accept this notion, one must ignore the sexually charged statement in Genesis 19:5, "And they called unto Lot, and said unto him, Where are the men which came in to thee this night? Bring them out unto us, that we may *know them.*" The Hebrew denotation of the English rendering of the words "*know them*" is a direct reference to having sex with them, as a comparison of the use of the term in Genesis 4:1 ("And Adam *knew* Eve his wife and she conceived"), 24:16 ("And the damsel was very fair to look upon, a virgin, neither had any man *known* her"), and 38:26, will readily demonstrate.

A more sophisticated falsification is offered by the *New Bible Dictionary Third Edition* (Inter-Varsity Press, 1996), which states, "...the sin condemned was attempted homosexual rape, not a caring homosexual relationship between two consenting partners" (p. 479).

Prof. Carden offers a similar alibi in his *Sodomy: A History of a Christian Myth*: "Pack rape at the hands of a mob would be a particularly brutal death. Pack rape of a defenseless stranger is a particularly apt symbol of injustice and abuse of the helpless, which I would argue are the real sins of Sodom... and not same-sex desire and its mutually consenting expression... the very name of Sodom and its inhabitants can be used figuratively to signify the ungodly life, resulting in sodomy's first rehearsal—to denote not homoeroticism, but arrogant self-indulgence and luxurious living..." [23]

[23] Carden, pp. 27 and 117.

If the Bible intended to offer support for this conclusion that anal or oral sex ("homosexual relationship") was condoned by God if both men consented to the act, it would have so stated. But there is no such condonation of sodomy by consent, anywhere in Scripture. The consent or lack thereof of men who play the part of a woman, serving as passive receptacles for the sex action of a man, is irrelevant in Leviticus 20:13. There is no other possible context in keeping with the spirit and intent of the text than the fact that for a man to act the part of a woman in having sex with another man is a capital offense: “If a man also lie with mankind, as he lieth with a woman, both of them have committed an abomination: they shall surely be put to death; their blood shall be upon them.”

Moreover, *male homosexual acts were intrinsically violent,* whether or not the two transgressors willingly consent to being overtaken by their lust for each other. *This violence is intrinsic to the waste of the male seed.* This waste is not modified in the severity of its transgression by the fact of consent, because no one can give consent to a lawless act.

The authors of the *New Bible Dictionary Third Edition,* and *Sodomy: A History of a Christian Myth*, have declared, based on their personal beliefs, that the waste of the male seed is no transgression in the eyes of God.

This is a conclusion that requires the falsification of Leviticus 20:13; the falsification of the account of Onan’s capital crime in Genesis 38; as well as the overthrow of the Apostle Paul’s dogmatic condemnations in Romans 1:23-27, I Corinthians 6:9 and I Tim. 1:9. Prof. Carden furnishes a disquisition on rape which he terms a “queering approach,” transforming rape by homosexuals in Sodom into: “an act of homophobic... violence.” Consequently, if his “queering approach” is accepted, then the males in the city of Sodom in Genesis 19 who desired to sodomize the other men who were not homosexuals, are perpetrating this sexual violence from a fear of homosexuals! Carden’s fantasy on Genesis is queer indeed. On the basis of imaginings like these, the “gay” lobby raises pseudo-intellectual objections to the application of the words sodomy and sodomite in Christendom, asserting that the use of these terms is little more than a *late medieval* prejudice. [24]

In Bishop Hincmar of Reims’s ninth century treatise on divorce, relating to the attempt of Lothair II to divorce his wife Theutberga— *De divortio Lotharii*

[24] A similar tactic has been used with regard to Purgatory, to suggest it too was an invention of “late medieval popery.” Isabel Moreira observes to the contrary: “It was Bede (writing in the early 700s) who first provides purgatory with an orthodox, theological justification... In Bede’s work we encounter the culmination of centuries of purgatorial thinking.” Cf. *Heaven’s Purge: Purgatory in Late Antiquity* (2010), p. 16. On p. 40 of her study, Moreira traces articulation of Purgatory as far back as Clement of Alexandria (200 A.D.). Before Protestants dismiss this out of hand due to the indulgence-money racket that grew up around it hundreds of years later, consider the *sheol* (not “hell”), into which Jesus descended after His resurrection. It was neither heaven nor *gehenna* (hell), but an intermediate stage. This interim state was referred to in the Early Church as *refrigerium,* a term that appears on “numerous Christian grave inscriptions in the Roman empire.” (Eliezer Gonzalez, *The Fate of the Dead in Early Third Century North African Christianity* [2014], p. 139).

regis et Theutbergae reginae, — (not to be confused with his nephew of the same name)—he employs the term *scelus sodomiae* for all those sexual acts ruled to be “against nature.” Hincmar’s application of the term was derived from an earlier usage by Pope Gregory the Great, in the pontiff’s letter in the sixth century containing the statement, *“Sodomitae illum sceleremaculatum.”* [25]

> [25] “Stained with the sin of the sodomite.” Gregory the Great, *Registrum Epistularum,* 10.2, (Norberg). This was the pope’s allusion to a sex crime that had been perpetrated by a sub-deacon.

The sixth century is not “the late medieval” period. [26]

> [26] For a refutation of Prof. Mark Jordan’s thesis in this regard in his book *The Invention of Sodomy in Christian Theology,* cf. Glenn W. Olsen, *Of Sodomites, Effeminates, Hermaphrodites and Androgynes: Sodomy in the Age of Peter Damian,* pp. 33-36. “...there was from the beginning a rhetorical excess in Jordan’s claim that sodomy was invented in the mid-eleventh century...” (Olsen, p. 36).

The two male forms of ecclesiastic celibacy, priesthood and monasticism, faced the constant threat of auto-eroticism. Masturbation and its more extreme manifestation (auto-fellatio) were a problem for the Church from the beginning of the monastic orders; to what extent is debatable, though we note that pornographic images of these and other homosexual acts appear in sacred Catholic Church sculpture, on the facades of churches such as the Collegiate Church of St. Peter of Cervatos in Cantabria, Spain; the Church of Saint Pierre, Passirac, France; the Church of Semur-en-Brionnais, Saône-et-Loire, also in France, and others in Europe, Britain and Ireland. [27]

> [27] Cf. Anthony Weir and James Jerman, *Images of Lust: Sexual Carvings on Medieval Churches* (1999).

“The ‘world without women’ of the high and late medieval religious community, school, friary or university continued a homosocial ethos favorable to homoeroticism.” [28]

> [28] Cf. Glenn W. Olsen, ibid., p. 165. Also cf. David F. Noble, A *World Without Women: The Christian Clerical Culture,* pp. 57 and 154-155.

There is some validity to this thesis, but it risks succumbing to a Freudian distortion of the state of celibate men in community, about which there is nothing necessarily pathological or sinful, assuming that rigorous safeguards are in place.

The larger question of homoeroticism with regard to liturgical vestments has not been addressed inside the Church, as well as other possible ecclesiastical trappings of the homoerotic aesthetic.

One is struck by the fact that Pope Francis visited the U.S. for several days in September of 2015, and gave a huge gift to the American homosexual culture (it is no longer a “subculture”), by refusing to say a word about the recent legalization of sodomite marriage in the U.S.

Yet at the same time much was made of his finger-wagging platitudes against the molestation of Catholic boys by priests. Can his gestures be serious when the pontiff, by his silence, uttered absolutely nothing concerning the newly legitimate marital arrangement, whereby men may “marry” other men? Is the pope’s double-mind a product of modern post-Vatican II perversion alone, or an outward sign of an underground clerical current with a pedigree of many centuries?

[Page 498 Ecclesiastical Sodomy and its Root]

The homosexual orientation of the Church of Rome since the Renaissance is no longer the deep secret that it once was.

A hoax has been put forth in the name of Christ’s True Catholic Church; that hoax emanates from the top-down. It is long overdue for it to receive its comeuppance, particularly so in light of the canonization on April 27, 2014, of Pope John-Paul II on whose watch the *epidemic* of molestations of defenseless children occurred. Pope John-Paul II granted to Cardinal Bernard Law, a notorious facilitator of child-molesting priests in Massachusetts, safe haven in Vatican City from criminal prosecution. Cardinal Law was honored by the “saint” with the administration of a basilica in Rome. He officiated at the public funeral of John-Paul II. Any church that would raise to sainthood a pope like this individual whose criminal indifference toward molestation, and outright collusion with child-molestation facilitators such as Father Marcial Maciel, of the Legionaries of Christ, Cardinal Roger Mahony, Bishop William Skylstad (named during John Paul’s pontificate as head of the National Conference of Catholic Bishops *after* his facilitation of child-molester priests came to the attention of the courts and the media), the aforementioned Bernard Law, and dozens of otber bishops and some cardinals, who constitute the corrupt of the earth, is a *Judas church* that will increasingly incur the wrath of God.

The child molestations perpetrated by “Money bags Maciel” were repeatedly reported to Pope “Saint” John Paul II, yet the pontiff “led massive celebrations to mark both the fiftieth and sixtieth anniversaries of Father Maciel’s priestly ordination.”

In light of the canonization of the patron saint of molesters, Pope John Paul II, the thought of Catholics praying to this criminal in front of a statue of him, evokes the starkest Protestant portrayals of Catholics sunk in a swamp of credulity and idolatry. [29]

[29] For documentation of these charges, cf. Jason Berry and Gerald Renner, *Vows of Silence: The Abuse of Power in the Papacy of John Paul II* (2004). On the horrors inflicted on Irish children during the "traditional Catholic" years, cf. Mary Raftery, *Suffer the Little Children* (2002); and Peter Tyrrell, *Founded on Fear* (2006).

Chapter XIV

The Hermetic Prince of the Second Vatican Council

"The theological *eminence-grisé* of Vatican II was Jesuit Fr. Henri de Lubac (1896-1991). Under theological interdict for many years, "The reversal of his ten years of ostracism resolved slowly and gradually, culminating in the invitation from Pope John XXIII to be a consultant for the preparatory Theological Commission of the Second Vatican Council... At the Council itself he was a *peritus* (theological expert) and was associated with the work on the documents *Dei Verbum, Lumen Gentium,* and *Guadium et Spes*." [1]

[1] Susan K. Wood, *Spiritual Exegesis and the Church in the Theology of Henri de Lubac* (1997), p. 5.

The "ostracism" and "theological interdict" were strange in that De Lubac was not formally questioned by either his Jesuit superiors or any member of the curia or Holy Office. He was not asked to recant, or provide a retraction. Was the whole episode a charade calculated to burnish his reputation and create a high-profile aura for him as a dissident and make a *cause célebré* of him and writings? Certainly, he came to prominence during the time of his "ostracism."

Prof. Jacques Prévotat of the University of Lille-III writes:

"From the time of his nomination as a consultor to the Preparatory Theological Commission in July, 1960, then as an expert on the Doctrinal Commission, Father de Lubac was an active participant in or witness to all the diverse aspects of the council: the general congregations, the Doctrinal Commission... meetings of the French and foreign bishops on fundamental questions, various conversations, preparation and clarification of interventions at the council at the request of numerous bishops, lectures in front of audiences of bishops... Father de Lubac was always present." [2]

[2] Introduction to the *Vatican Council Notebooks I of Henri de Lubac* (Ignatius Press, 2007), pp. 10-11.

Both of these appraisals are modest ones. In truth, *Henri de Lubac was the guiding theological light of the Second Vatican Council.* "After the Council, Paul VI appointed him one of the original members of the International Theological Commission, where he worked with Hans Urs von Balthasar and Joseph Ratzinger, the future Benedict XVI." [3]

[3] David Grumett, *De Lubac: A Guide for the Perplexed,* p. ix.

On February 2, 1983, Pope St. John-Paul II elevated Father De Lubac to Cardinal without his having first been consecrated a bishop.

The Jesuit theologian who began his career as a Liberal ended it with the reputation of a Conservative, which is an abuse of the term when we consider that Lubac wrote books in defense of the Piltdown Man hoaxer and New Age evolutionist Pierre Teilhard de Chardin, S.J., and one other *miscreant* who should by now be familiar to the reader: "Toward the end of his career he wrote a very favorable monograph on the Renaissance Platonist Giovanni Pico della Mirandola... His assessment of the work of the Renaissance philosopher Pico della Mirandola could fairly be applied to his own: 'A stand for intellectual pluralism against the narrowness of the school." [4]

[4] Ibid., pp. ix and 8.

Balthasar, upon whom John Paul II conferred the Paul VI Prize, was also under the influence of Giovanni Pico della Mirandola:

"Balthasar ends his study, somewhat abruptly, with some remarks on de Lubac's study of the Renaissance Christian-Platonist and lay Dominican Pico della Mirandola. Leaving aside the banal consideration that *Pic de la Mirandole* was the last of de Lubac's books to reach Balthasar, the reason for choosing this finale was probably the—altogether admirable—way Pico combined spiritual independence with catholicity of attitude. His anthropology begins from human freedom, but this is no closed humanism: the goal of that freedom is the supreme peace of all things in union with God... Pico treats man as an essentially ecstatic being who must model himself on Thrones and Seraphim... His gleaning husks of pagan wisdom (the *prisca theologia* he sought among the ancients, classical and otherwise), puts one in mind of de Lubac's raids on Asiatic wisdom as well...

"A Renaissance man can form the climax of a study of—and by—a modern priest-student of the Catholic tradition in all its length and breadth, height and depth, precisely because Balthasar shared the view that the Renaissance was not anti-Catholic... but simply 'a period in which men were trying to find a new, more personal piety, and personal expressions of religious thought.' So why *not* end with Pico as, like de Lubac, a wonderful *homo ecclesiasticus*?" [5]

[5] Aidan Nichols, O.P., *Divine Fruitfulness: A Guide through Balthasar's Theology* (Catholic University of America), pp. 72-73.

Analyzing Lubac's book-length salute to the Neoplatonic-Hermetic Kabbalist Pico, Hans Urs von Balthasar writes: "...more than four hundred pages are dedicated to Pico della Mirandola. Why Pico? Certainly not only because he needed to be vindicated of a thousand misrepresentations, restored from layer upon layer of paint, and given back to the great Christian tradition. Pico... presents a rounded image of what de Lubac stands for... he so much points the way to greater openness of spirit and indeed with the same spiritual 'independence,' the same instinct for the right direction that strives toward the universal, the catholic, as de Lubac himself. When Pico focuses on freedom as man's innermost essence, he stands in the great tradition of Christian humanism... yet he keeps an accent as personal as, for example, Teilhard had, when he spoke of the creature's elan toward God. Imperceptibly, but unerringly, Pico goes his way, which leads him out of the closed sphere of the humanism of his time. He no longer understands the '*desiderium naturale*' [6] naturalistically, as Ficino did, and man is more for him than a mere microcosm. He gathers up all of tradition—the four senses of Scripture—elevating it in a '*Concordia*,' a synthesis, a universal 'Pax' that hovers before him... Pico knows, as does de Lubac, that all concepts and systems are indeed indispensable but limited; that their construction is due to a deeper force that also strives farther and beyond them." [7]

Let us turn now to the words of Cardinal de Lubac himself concerning the Renaissance Pico:

[6] In the theory of the *desiderium naturale,* "At issue is whether a natural desire to see the divine essence can be reconciled with the necessarily supernatural and gratuitous manner of this desire's fulfillment. The 16th century Dominican, Cardinal Cajetan strove to mollify the problem by proposing a duplex *ordo* in which the hypothetical state of pure nature would have its own natural end distinct from man's supernatural end. This ostensible solution to the issue was regnant until the broad-ranging criticisms of the *Nouvelle Theologie* in the 20th century (represented especially by Henri de Lubac). The theologies of grace, which emerged after this critique—most notably that of Karl Rahner—sought to remedy the Neoscholastic separation of nature and grace..." Alexander S. Rosenthal, "The Problem of the Desiderium Naturale," *Verbum,* vol. 6, no. 2.

[7] Hans Urs von Balthasar, *The Theology of Henri de Lubac* (1991).

“A closer examination of the texts, of the dates and facts has shown that there never was, on Pico’s part, any intention or gesture of revolt or disloyalty; and on the part of the Holy See (and of Garcia himself),[8] no mark of any lack of esteem toward his person, quite the contrary. The inquisitorial tribunal that was for a moment constituted seems never to have really functioned at all. The *Apologia*[9] that Pico presented of his theses prior to any sentence from the pope did not give rise to an examination followed by judgment… From the time the fugitive returned to Paris, a more or less tacit compromise was established, and… all was soon smoothed out by the Brief of Alexander VI.”[10]

All of the preceding is correct. Pico della Mirandola enjoyed a high-level immunity after a pro forma theatre of critical examination involving his “persecution” and dramatic “flight.” (The parallels with de Lubac are intriguing). Some otherwise ferocious inquisitors became strangely meek in the presence of the case of Giovanni Pico, for example Marco Maroldi and Gioacchino da Vinci. Pope Alexander convened a commission of investigation in 1493, staffed by three cardinal-inquisitors: Giambattista Orsini, Francesco Todeschini-Piccolomini and Giorgio Costa. Acting as *peritus* for the commission was the illustrious Paolo Moneglia.[11]

The commission concluded that Pico should be fully rehabilitated and the pope concurred, issuing the “Brief’ to which de Lubac referred, *Ominum Catholicorum,* on June 18, 1493.[12]

De Lubac:

---

[8] Pedro García (also: “Garsias”), Master of the Papal Chapel, Bishop of Ales (Uselli) Italy, and later of Barcelona, Spain. He was Giovanni Pico’s occasional antagonist. He died in 1505.

[9] Pico’s *Apologia* was a bold justification, and in no way a recantation, of his theology.

[10] Cardinal Henri de Lubac, S. J., *Theology in History* (1996), p. 42.

[11] Paolo Moneglia, Doctor of Theology at the University of Pavia and Chair of Thomistic Theology (*ad lecturam operum beati Thomae*). On June 6, 1490 he was elevated to the curia by Pope Innocent VIII. He was Dominican inquisitor in Genoa from April, 1494 to February, 1497. In 1498, the pope named him Inquisitor of Rome.

[12] Cf. Giovanni Di Napoli, *Giovanni Pico della Mirandola e la problematica dottrinale del suo tempo* (Rome, 1965), for an account of the commission’s investigation (pp. 81-137), and the text of Pope Alexander’s *Ominum Catholicorum* (pp. 116-118).

"…all had admired his (Pico's) 'Discourse on the Dignity of Man,' as it was called, in which they thought to see a 'manifesto,' the 'manifesto of the Renaissance'… This celebrated discourse… was received very favorably in religious circles. Going through the libraries and archives of Rome, Father John W. O'Malley has found a whole series of sermons dating from the last years of the fifteenth century and from the first third of the sixteenth, in which several use—let us even say plagiarize—Pico's discourse. Some of them come from preachers at the Roman court and are not in any way worldly sermons. This discovery will contribute to restoring, for a wider circle, the true face of Pico della Mirandola." [13]

[13] De Lubac, *Theology in History,* op.cit., p. 43.

It is somewhat remarkable that with the palaver about the theological origins of the Second Vatican Council mainly focused on 1. the late nineteenth and early twentieth century modernism denounced by Pope St. Pius X; and 2. the masonic ideas of the secularist French Enlightenment; that in spite of De Lubac and Balthasar being cited as the intellectual lodestars of the Council, almost no prominently published and heralded work has been undertaken the study of the momentous implications of the devotion of De Lubac and Balthasar to Giovanni Pico della Mirandola, who is among the foremost papist exponents in history of the books of the Kabbalah.

The silence is deafening. Is the silence accidental? Opening the door to Giovanni Pico's diabolism inevitably leads to Johannes Reuchlin and his enabler, Pope Leo X. From there, the investigator encounters the network of occultists occupying the Church of Rome at all levels, from 1525 to 1965, and into the present era. Yet this has been "missed." How does one miss the elephant in the room? The two leading Catholic theologians of the twentieth century, who were disciples of the most admired Catholic, Neoplatonic-Hermetic Kabbalist of the fifteenth century, exercised a decisive influence on Vatican II, perhaps more than any other Catholic other than Pope Paul VI.

Yet "traditional and conservative Catholics" are united in almost always listing as the *principal* ideological godfathers of modernism and Vatican II, the *philosophes* of the eighteenth century Enlightenment: Jean-Jacques Rousseau, Immanuel Kant, Denis Diderot, David Hume, "Voltaire" (François-Marie Arouet)—seemingly everyone *except* the Church of Rome's most guilty spiritual and theological progenitors of the Second Vatican Council: Nicholas of Cusa, Ficino, Pico, Reuchlin, Alexander VI, Leo X, Clement VII, Paul III, Giles of Viterbo, Ludovico Lazzarelli, Francesco Giorgio, Sixtus of Siena, Johannes Trithemius, Francesco Patrizi, Agostino Steuco, Giovanni Nesi, Foix de Candale, Lefevre d'Etaples and hundreds more.

One gasps at the extent to which the guilty parties of an entire epoch in the history of the occult Church have vanished, and are missing from virtually every page of the voluminous output of the “conservative” and “traditional” Catholic *oeuvre* (innumerable newsletters, pamphlets, journals, bulletins, magazines, books, blogs and websites).

The neglect is appalling, and the question arises, as it always does when there is a gaping memory hole in a highly controversial historical subject: is this erasure the result of rank ineptitude and willful blindness, or a deliberate conspiracy?

De Lubac’s fascinating, book-length encomium for Pico, *Pic de la Mirandole: études et discussions* (Paris, 1974) is a major statement, yet it has not been translated into English. William G. Craven writes concerning *Pic de la Mirandole*: “It is a series of essays by the French Jesuit Henri de Lubac… A prefatory note refers to a personal interest in Pico extending over half a century. The great merit of the book is that it makes the point, with a wealth of learning, that Pico’s language, figures of speech and ideas were thoroughly traditional…” [14]

Giovanni Pico della Mirandola: *traditional Catholic.* This is the bad joke that “Saint” John-Paul’s august Cardinal de Lubac peddled to the theological overlords of the Church of Rome. It was indeed Pico’s “tradition” that informed the theology of Vatican II. In a sense, it is in fact a theology with a tradition, having a patrimony in the Church of Rome of more than five centuries, which is one reason why the adjective “traditional Catholic” is such a source of confusion and misdirection useful to the Cryptocracy.

From Jesuit theologian Henri de Lubac’s *Pic de la Mirandole* (Part I, “Liberty” Ch. 3, “Limits of the Thesis,” p. 77-78): [15]

“There is no denying that the serious warning of the year before and the situation that resulted from it helped the young intellectual to become more mature and wiser. But from granting this to presenting the *Heptaplus* [16] as a minor work, lacking originality, marred by the intention that gave rise to it and not representing the real Pico, would be going too far. The new work is, on the contrary, the fruit of an intense, personal labor in the highest degree.[17]

---

[14] *Giovanni Pico della Mirandola: Symbol of his Age. Modern Interpretations of a Renaissance philosopher* (Librairie Droz, 1981), p. 18.

[15] The English translation of Henri de Lubac’s *Pic de la Mirandole* in these pages is by our translator, A.M. Stinnett. Except for the note below, all of the other footnotes linked to this English translation are *original to De Lubac’s French text.* In this section, they are his footnotes; not ours.

[16] Pico’s *Heptaplus* interprets the Book of Genesis through the prism of the Kabbalah.

“...In 1488, at Florence, Pico made the acquaintance of another learned Jew, Jochanan Alemanno, as intelligent as he was erudite, as much poet as philosopher, of a great elevation of soul, and soon the two men became quite intimate. Jochanan completed Pico’s Hebraic culture; he guided him in the knowledge of the Talmud and of the Kabbalah. If he moderated certain aspects of his youthful ardor, he confirmed several of his first intuitions.

When he was writing the *Conclusiones* and the *Oratio,* Pico had waxed too enthusiastic over what he believed was the prophetic content of the books of the Kabbalah; Jochanan made him better understand its method, with its possible applications in the philosophico-religious domain.[18] But his Kabbalistic fever did not abate (it never completely left).[19]

In the *Heptaplus* he makes no effort to dissimulate it. On the contrary, in it he proclaims that his method of interpreting the Book of Genesis, based on Kabbalah, is something quite new: “*hoc novum illud et intactum adhuc quod nos afferre temptavimus.*” He provides as an appendix to the work (as a crown, Sixtus of Siena will say[20]), the most cabalistic page, one could almost say the only one, of his entire work: it is an explication of the first word of the Bible, ‘In principio’ (*beresit*), based on the divers combinations possible of the Hebraic letters that compose it.

He declares himself amazed by all the discoveries he made, far beyond his expectation and his hope.[21]

[17] Here begin’s de Lubac’s own notes: Giuseppe Barone justly ranks it, as do the older publishers, among the three *Opere maggiori,* with the *De onte et uno* and the *Disputationes adversus astrologos: Giovanni Pico della Mirandola,* (Milan-Rome, 1948) ch. 2.

[18] Dell’Acqua, 162166. On the friendship of Pico and Jochanan, see *infra,* III, 7.

[19] N. 4: “There is evidence that he continued to study the Kabbalah long after his so-called conversion.” Dulles, 23.

[20] *Biblioteca sancta,* 1, 4; t. 1, Lyons, 1575, 292: “*...Additur veluti pro coronide specimen quoddam octavae explanationis Kabalisticae... quae non solum ex singulis sententiis ac dictionibus multos sensus elicit, sed ex singulis Hebraicis literis uniuscujusque syllabae mysteria pene infinita deducit.*”

[21] *“Praeter spem meam, praeter opinionem, inveni quod neque inveniens ipse credebam, neque credere alii facile potuerunt, universam de mundi rerumque omnium creatione rationem in una ea dictione apertam et explicatam...*” 376.

We can see from the preceding passage by Cardinal De Lubac how normative is the Catholic application of Kabbalah for comprehending the Scriptures. He continues:

"Indeed, as M. Eugenio Garin correctly writes, if the *Heptaplus* testifies to Pico's greater maturity, it certainly does not represent a sort of humiliated retreat in comparison to his earlier positions; it is, on the contrary, 'the work which best expresses his Kabbalistic phase, and the one in which his vision of reality is the most organically composed, in its order, in the correspondence of its various planes, in its link with man, the ideal center of creation." [22]

[22] 1937, 39: *"...non rappresentava certo una dimessa palinodia rispetto al precedence atteggiamento... Quanto l'opera piacque al dotti, altrettanto dispiacque alla Chiesa che vi trovo piuttosto della pertinacia che della sottomissione..."* 1963, 50.

In the preceding, De Lubac notes that Giovanni Pico was not intimidated by the displeasure of Pope Innocent VIII in reaction to his thesis. Pico knew he had "protection" and there would be no need for any "humiliated retreat." De Lubac esteems Pico's Kabbalistic peregrination (this is from de Lubac's chapter five, "Pagan Prophecy"):

"As all had for centuries, [Pico] believes in the high antiquity of 'Mercury' (Hermes Trismegistus) and his writings, the Greek text of which had been recently brought to Florence and which Marsilius Ficinus had translated into Latin under the title of *Pimander* (1471) at the behest of Cosmo de Medici. Tommaso Benci had just procured a Tuscan version of it (which would not be published until later); Lorenzo de Medici sang its praises in verse, which Gelli set out in dialogues. [23]

[23] Cf. Kristeller, *Studies,* 221-247.

This Mercury, he thinks, was both 'a very great philosopher, a very great priest, and a very great king; it is thus (M. Ficinus just explained in his preface) that one commented on his last name of Trismegistus, the thrice great.' [24]

[24] P. 94, n. 5. "*Ter maximus*": Bucer will apply this epithet ironically to Erasmus. Cf. Nicole Peremans, *Erasme et Bucer* (Liege, 1970), p. 98.

He wonders at seeing him 'in accord with Moses,' and 'approaching his thought.' [25]

[25] P. 95, n. 1: Conversation with Savonarola and Lawrence, reported by Crinito, Bk. 3, Ch. 2, 104-5.

Concerning the faith of Christian antiquity, [26]

[26] Cf. Edouard des Places, "*Les Oracles chaldaiques dans la patristique africaine,*" in *Studia patristica,* 11 (Berlin, 1972), 27-41; and "*Histoire et survie des Oracles...*" in introduction to the Chaldean Oracles, *Belles Lettres* (1971), 8-52.

Pico equally upholds the authenticity of the 'Chaldean Oracles,' of which he will not delay in discovering a much more recent origin; but for

[Page 508 The Hermetic Prince of the Second Vatican Council]

the moment, their discovery enthused him so much that he set himself immediately the task of mastering their language. [27]

[27] Cf. his two letters to Ficinus and to an unknown friend, Nov. 1486; *Opera,* 367-368 and 384-386.

By a more consequential allusion, in the fervor of his initiation, he believes that he has found 'the golden thread' [28]

[28] Expression of [author] Eugenio Garin.

that will enable him to unify everything: it is the question of the Kabbalah, this 'divine science,' already mentioned, defined, and praised in the *Commento.* [29]

[29] *Commento particolare*, v. *finem: "Cabala si chiama, che significa recezione, perchè non per scritti ma per successione a bocea l'uno dall' altro la ricevono. Scienzia per certo divina e degna di non participare se non con pochi, grandissimo fundamento della fede nostra* etc." 580-581. And the *Oratio,* 156-158.

Does it not come from Moses by way of the men he had chosen at the Lord's behest and who used it to hold in Israel the place that the cardinals hold today in our Church? [30]

[30] *Apologia*: "*...quorum locum mihi videntur tenere Cardinales in nostra Ecclesia." Opera,* 177.

"(Pico) persuades himself that he can justify thinking so because of a recent, august example: Had not Sixtus IV, the immediate predecessor of the reigning pontiff, 'personally seen to it with enthusiasm that these books (of the Kabbalah) were translated into Latin for the use of our faith?' Already, 'at the time of his death, three of them had been translated.' [31]

[31] *Oratio,* 158-160. The thing is not impossible.

It has been supposed that the story was wholly fabricated by (Flavius) Mithridates, who boasted of having preached a set speech on the Passion mingled with Arabic and Hebrew names before the pontiff for two hours straight with great success.[32]

[32] Secret, 24-26. *Sermo de passione Domini,* ed. C. Wirszubski (Jerusalem, 1963).

Perhaps the story has a foundation in the fact that several Roman theologians, encouraged by Sixtus IV, had interested themselves in the Kabbalah with an apologetic intention that preceded that of Pico." [33]

[33] Raffaello Morghen, *Medioevo cristiano* (Bari, 1962), 146: "...Perfino dei teologi della corte del papa Sisto IV, come ha provato in un acuto studio il Moore, 'credevano che la *Kabbala* contenesse dimostrazioni accettabili della dottrina cristiana e la fecero oggetto di attento studio e di meditazione'."

[The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome Page 509]

In his *Oration on the Dignity of* Man, Pico published the fact that Pope Sixtus IV had, "for the common good of those of our faith," the rabbinic books of the Kabbalah published in Latin. De Lubac refers to the controversy that arose when Sixtus IV's enthusiasm for the Kabbalah began to become known to Catholic Conservatives in the hierarchy. To answer the pope's orthodox critics, the Vatican floated the rumor that the Judeo-Catholic Kabbalist Flavius Mithridates, preacher to the pope's own household, concocted the story about the pontiff issuing the Kabbalah in Latin. De Lubac writes that it was "supposed that the story was wholly fabricated by Mithridates."

Supposed by whom? Few historians of the era believe the rumor to be credible. De Lubac then covers all the bases when he writes, "Perhaps the story has a foundation in the fact that several Roman theologians, encouraged by Sixtus IV, had interested themselves in the Kabbalah"—for "apologetic intentions."

Here is that slippery indeterminancy which is the very marrow of the arcane command ideology of the Church of Rome. We encounter it consistently throughout the history of the Renaissance and post-Renaissance papacy. These weasel methods permitted the popes to evade the consequences of their revolutionary actions. Leo X's Bull, *Inter multiplices* of May 4, 1515, appears as though it is rebuking usury when in fact it is extending, with qualifications, feints, sideshows and distraction, an escape clause for usury in the forro of the good cause of helping the poor. "Sin for a good cause" the pope's argument could be called, if indeed it could be nailed down. A similar pattern of plausible denial and permissible dissimulation occurred in Pope Benedict XIV's *Vix Pervenit* of November 1, 1745, which has been often quoted to us as the definitive rebuff to all who dare to assert that the Church gradually made the mortal sin of taking a profit on loans into no sin at all. In fact, after reams of impressive-sounding anti-usury blabber, Benedict provided a loophole for usury. [34]

[34] Hoffman, *Usury in Christendom* (2013), pp. 380-382.

The hot button question during the 2014 and 2015 synods that led to the Apostolic Exhortation *Amoris Laetitia* (March 19, 2016), was whether divorced and remarried Catholics could receive Communion. Pope Francis addressed the point only in a footnote (no. 351) in the document. The footnote seemed to perhaps constitute a “yes” answer to the question, but not in a way that *explicitly* altered Church law or teaching. This ambiguity allowed local bishops to interpret the signals from the pope’s *Amoris Laetitia* differently, with some promulgating a stringent interpretation and others a more lenient one, yielding the historical indeterminancy and potential for plausible denial which we observe in papal documents from the Renaissance onward.

Almost all of the Babylonian Talmud at one time or another can be valid and authoritative in Judaism, depending on the circumstances of the time. In Erubin 13b, we observe that the school of Hillel and the school of Shammai differed. These schools are depicted as disputing for three years over whose ruling constituted the *halacha.* In this case, even though it was subsequently determined that the *halacha* was according to Hillel, it is written that both Shammai and Hillel represent the words of God. [35]

Since both schools of rabbinic thought represent the word of God according to the belief of Orthodox Judaism, both represent the *Torah sheBeal peh,* (the Oral “Torah” which rabbinic Judaism claims Moses gave to the ancient Pharisees embodied by *Chazal,* the collective Pharisaic and Talmudic “sages” who concocted the *halacha).* Viewed within the perspective of the rabbinic hermeneutic—which is so often denied in public—the exchanges between competing rabbinic views within the Talmud are 1. the basis of rabbinic law (*halacha*); and 2. have authority and validity even when in certain historical periods another view predominates.

This too is the method and outlook employed by the papal Cryptocracy. Their “god” is the *zeitgeist.* The Renaissance “happened” partly because the timing was right. There is an argument that can be made that it could not have happened in the Middle Ages. How that timing is determined and why it is a ruling principle, is difficult to explain without entering into a disquisition on one of the more recondite secrets of the occult: *the confirmation by what could be described as the “god of*

[35] Cf. Bar-Ilan University Prof. Avi Sagi, “Both are the Words of the Living God: A Typological Analysis of Halakhic Pluralism,” in *Hebrew Union College Annual* no. 65 (1995). Also cf. Prof. William “Zev” Kolbrenner, “Chiseled from All Sides: Hermeneutics and Dispute in Rabbinic Judaism,” in *Association for Jewish Studies Review,* no. 28 (2004).

power,” of any behavior that is successfully conducted—on the basis that it was successful. While the expression, “might is right” does not alone account for what is also at work here (ritual manipulation in time and place to achieve success), the epigram “nothing succeeds like success” gives a hint of the wind that powers these sails. There is no morality or ethics to the process. Yet it has been the engine of the Church of Rome’s dominion for many centuries.

Another arcane doctrine of the Church of Rome is situation ethics, the long history of which is seldom detected in all respects or analyzed comprehensively by Rome’s true believers. A true believer will sometimes detect one significant instance of situation ethics, as for example, the situation ethics entailed by the syncretist Assisi prayer meetings of Pope St. John Paul II and his successors, or in the marriage controversy of *Amoris Laetitia.*

But Conservatives who detect some modern instances almost always frame the situation ethic they are denouncing as a radical “aberration” and “departure” from what has otherwise been (“prior to Pope Francis,” or “antecedent to John Paul II,” or “before to Vatican II”), the supposedly unchangeable Roman Catholic Church.

This is a lamentable spectacle to witness in folks who are otherwise often people of integrity, possessed of a selfless dedication to the Faith. But in consideration of the actual documentary record, which has seen the Church of Rome discard immemorial Scriptural dogma on Jews and Judaism, and profit on loans of money, for centuries, their ignorance (or willful blindness) ensures the defeat of their Cause. As we have noted in another chapter, the prelates who are the heirs of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic Renaissance command ideology, privately laugh in contempt at the *schmucks* who appeal to them for “faithful adherence to the unchanging Church,” based on a naive and cockamamie misapprehension of the history of the Church of Rome.

We left De Lubac at the point in which he cited the apologetic uses of the Kabbalah. This too was Pico’s line, as De Lubac quotes him:

> “I find in these books,’ the latter said, ‘God is my witness, the religion, not so much of Moses but of Christ. I see in it the mystery of the Trinity, the Incarnation of the Word, the divinity of the Messiah; original sin, its expiation by Christ, the fall of the bad angels, the angelic choirs, purgatory, the pains of hell, I read there the same things that we read every day in Paul and Denys, in Jerome and Augustine.” [36]

[36] (P. 96, n. 1:) *Oratio,* 160. *Ibid.* “In plenum nulla est ferme de se nobis cum Hebraeis controversia, de qua ex libris Cabalistarum ita redargui convincique non possint, ut ne angulus quidem reliquus sit in quem se condant...” The inexact interpretation of Jean Delumeau, *Naissance et affirmation de la Réforme* (PUF, 1965), 70: Pico would

have thought "that the Bible offered to the Christians of his time was incomplete and that a part of Divine Revelation had thus far escaped the Church." See below, III, 6.

Pico the acclaimed scholarly prodigy, by the waving of the wand of spiritual transposition, sees Christ in the Kabbalah. What exotic substance was he smoking when he saw this hallucination? De Lubac would not agree with our irreverent dismissal of Pico's papist Kabbalism, however. For him, Pico is the paradigm of a truly pious, Roman Catholic intellectual:

"It is thus to a vast enterprise of spiritual transposition or, as Salutati said, to a 'pious interpretation' that Pico intends to devote himself. And if he proceeds in the company of so many strangers summoned from everywhere, it is always in order to come (back), as Manetti had already done, to 'our Fathers,' to those whom Manetti called 'our Catholic doctors,' as to 'the only port of salvation.' [37]

[37] [p. 97, n. 6]

In the works of both writers, these expressions above all designate, not those whom we call today the Fathers of the Church, but their Fathers as well as ours, the sacred authors of both Testaments: 'the patriarch Jacob'; Moses; the Apostle Paul, and his interpreter Denys." [38]

[38] [p. 98, n. 2]

De Lubac hopes that we will believe that Giovanni Pico della Mirandola's theology is thoroughly Biblical and orthodox. It seems that the litany of our Fathers in Faith consists of Moses, Jacob, St. Paul and—"Denys"?

As we have noted previously, the strange texts of the hoaxer known by nearly a half-dozen names (Pseudo-Dionysius, Dionysius the Pseudo-Areopagite, Denis, Denys and Dionigi), are falsely attributed to Dionysius the Areopagite, the Christian who is mentioned in the Book of Acts (17:34), as having been converted by St. Paul. Denys lived some five hundred years after Paul. As recently as the nineteenth century, scholars such as John Parker continued to believe in the first century provenance of the Denys writings. We do not know the identity of "Denys." The actual author was a hoaxer: he did his best to make his 525 A.D. writing appear to be authentic apostolic documents from the first century A.D. (through manipulation of manuscript titles and headings, such as the address of a "letter" supposedly intended for "the monk Gaius;" and another addressed to John, the inspired author of the Book of Revelation "on the isle of Patmos" *(Letter 10).*

De Lubac regurgitates Pico's detritus about Kabbalah being a support for Catholic truth:

"Finally, if our exegete (Pico) consults the secret books of Judaism, it is not at all in order to 'reinterpret Christianity thanks to the Cabala.' [39]

[39] Helen Védrine, *Les philosophies de la Renaissance* (PUF, 1971), 38.

It is to wrest from the Synagogue, as from the Egyptians, the Greeks, or the Chaldeans, the part of the truths that they unjustly hold, and to give it to the Christians, the only legitimate Israelites.' [40]

[40] [p. 98, n. 7].

It is to force it despite itself to bear witness to the mysteries of Christ and his Church.[41]

[41] P. 98, n. 8: (Latin extract). The famous convert Drach, in the 19th century, will not speak otherwise.

In short, it is always, following in the footsteps of an Origen and a Hilary, 'with a view to confirm the sacrosanct Catholic faith." [42]

[42] P. 98, n. 9: Citation. Or, as (his nephew) John-Francis said, he wants to show how the poetic theology of the ancient sages can be placed at the service 'of the mysteries of our theology.'

In the preceding statement we see De Lubac adopt the tough-sounding rhetoric against the Jews that the endlessly duplicitous occult Renaissance Judaizers would employ whenever it was absolutely necessary to do so for the sake of the rescue of their campaign of rehabilitation of the Talmud or Kabbalah.

There is nothing that these conspirators would not say or do to advance their objective, including taking *one step backward*

[Page 514 The Hermetic Prince of the Second Vatican Council]

—it is "the Synagogue" that "unjustly holds" the parts of the truth that the Kabbalah contains. It is the Christians who are "the only legitimate Israelites"—in order to *advance two steps forward*: "…*despite* itself' the Kabbalah "bear(s) witness to the mysteries of Christ and his Church'… 'with a view to confirm the sacrosanct Catholic faith."

In apprehending De Lubac's doubletalk we are afforded a front row seat at the spectacle of Vatican public relations methodology. It arose in the Renaissance and hundreds of years later in the mind and spirit of De Lubac.

He wishes us to accept that Satan's book of black magic "confirms the Catholic faith" and bears witness to the mysteries of Christ.

This contemptible folderol is presented by the learned Jesuit Cardinal with a reputation as a towering intellectual figure in modern Catholic theology. It is repeated later in his book (p. 295):

"If he (Pico) is so greatly interested in the books of Kabbalah, it was on the contrary because he believes he finds there the announcement under a form more or less veiled, of precise dogmas 'of the Catholic faith of Christians,' above all, those of the Trinity, [43]

> [43] *Conclusiones cabalisticae,* 5 and 33... We do not see on what M. J. Delumeau is basing himself when he says "the count of Mirandula seems to prefer Judaic monotheism to the Christian Trinity."

and of the divinity of Christ."

In the very name of Jesus, interpreted according to the method and principles of the Kabbalah, he sees these two fundamental dogmas revealed with precision. He likes to discover divers symbols of the Trinity in the 'Orphic Theology.' At least that was his conviction at the time of the *Conclusiones,* of the *Apologia,* and still of the *Heptaplus.*" [44]

> [44] P. 289, n. 7: Exp. 6, proem. 308-319: "Est Trinitatis divinae in creatura multiplex vestigium, etc."; cf. 228. He takes up the old doctrine according to which "in animo Trinitatis imago repraesentatur": Exp. 5, c. 6; 302. Dulles, 56, observes that he thinks, contrary to Scotus, with Henry of Gand, that the three Persons participate in the creative act, not indistinctly, but each according to His own function.

[The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome Page 515]

Another reconciler of Christianity and paganism in Cardinal De Lubac's syncretic pantheon is Rev. Fr. Marsilio Ficino:

"At Florence, one knows how (John) Argyropoulos (Neoplatonic teacher and philosopher funded by Cosimo de Medici; member of the papal court of Sixtus IV from 1471 onward), attempted to unite Aristotle, Plato, Plotinus, and Proclus. The synthesis sought by Marsilio Ficino was different. He received impetus from Plethon, but he does not set out in the same direction. He does not neglect the text of Aristotle; he meditates on the works of Plato (then Plotinus), those of St. Augustine and St. Thomas, especially the *Summa contra Gentiles;* he adds to them all he can find of the 'ancient theologians ' In conformity with a tradition one of whose most eminent representatives was Olivi,[45]

> [45] *Lectura super Apocalypsim:* By following Averroes, the disciples of the Antichrist have meditated 'profunda et voraginosa dogmata obscurantia solem christianae sapientiae et evangelicae vitae et purum aerem religiosi status ipsius.' Text published by Gregory in *L'Attesa,* 277.

he wants to liberate philosophy, this sacred gift of God, from 'impiety,' and at the same time liberate religion from an 'execrable ignorance.'[46]

[46] P. 250, n. 1: *De christiana religione,* 1 and 2. There was a bit of over-reacting in the warning addressed to him by the Hungarian John Pannonius: "*Caveas ne forte curiositas quaedam isthaec renovatio antiquorum (sit?) potius quam religio.*"

"That's why, in this Neoplatonic atmosphere, he undertakes to construct a 'pious philosophy,' which he also calls a 'philosophical religion'... in order to oppose the incredulity of 'the majority of peripatetics' (followers of Aristotle) who see, he says, 'in the common religion old wives' tales' [n. 2]. His *Platonic Theology* is a propaedeutic [introductory study], with no ambition to be more. Far from having for himself to 'try to reconcile Christianity and Platonism' [n. 3], he thinks he finds in the latter the better introduction to the former and its best defender: *ad Christum per Platonem,* as in our own century Simone Weil (1909-1943) will say. His influence was to be extensive and long-lasting.

"It has been remarked that the term *'philosophia perennis,'* which will later on experience a renewed fortune by changing meaning, was coined by one of his disciples 'to denote the Christian tradition and the Platonic tradition studied in its wake.'[47]

[47] Page 250, n. 4: Kristeller, *Thomisme,* 103-104.

Agostino Steuco (1497-1548), who was bishop and prefect of the Vatican, was to dedicate to Paul III in 1540 the ten books of his treatise *De Perenni Philosophia,* which would be republished more than once; there he constantly refers, not only to Plato and his disciples, but to Pythagoras, to Trismegistus, to the Chaldean Oracles, to Sibyls, etc., with an intention that could be called 'ecumenical.'[48]

[48] Page 250, n. 5: Lyons, 1540. In the *Opera,* Vol. 3 (Paris, 1578), fol. 1-245. The "ecumenical philosophy" dreamt of by Gratry (*Logique,* Vol. 2, 249) corresponds rather well to this first concept of a "perennial philosophy."

"A few months after the death of his young friend (Pico), whom he doubly mourned, Marsilio Ficino knew how to show that he bore him no ill will. In the letter he addressed on 23 March 1495 to Germain of Ganay, he made a generous and tender elegy... 'He is the chief of Concord since he reconciled the Jews with the Christians, the Peripatetics with the Platonists, the Greeks with the Latins.'

"Without being complete, the enumeration at least implies that in the grand design of Pico, philosophical reconciliation was not all. It was only to be a basis, a point of departure. A real peace had to be established among men, and this could only be solidly established by religious unity."

Notice that De Lubac momentously states, though *en passant,* that “the term ‘*philosophia perennis*’… will later on experience a renewed fortune by changing meaning…” Is not this ‘*philosophia perennis*,’ under a different coloring, the *genius locus* of Vatican II, Pope Paul VI and his successors?

De Lubac’s previously nuanced approach to Pico, accompanying his Kabbalism and pagan syncretism with qualifying statements and modifiers, and assertions of strict orthodoxy and sublime Catholic piety, is undercut when Cardinal de Lubac puts forth “the cosmic Christ,” the specialized term of the Hermetic Theosophists, together with his litany of syncretist eminences of the Church of Rome (p. 339):

“Apropos the doctrine of Nicholas of Cusa, it has been asked: ‘In so far as he is the *Jesus semper benedictus,* an historical person, can (the Christ) become the *fundamentum inconcussum* of an ontology? The problem is grave. [49]

> [49] P. 339, n. 2: L.-J. Bataillon and C. von Schonborn, giving an account of the work of K. Jacobi, *Die Methode des cusanischen Philosophie* (Fribourg-Munich, 1969), in the *Rev. des sc. philos. et theologiques,* 1972.

It is grave, but it greatly exceeds their two cases. Is not what it expresses the central paradox of the Christian faith, the very paradox of the Incarnation? It does not only appear in subsequent theologies, but already in the texts of St. Paul and St. John.

“The Jesus of history and the ‘cosmic Christ’ are but one. It is the same paradox that is affirmed in our century in the doctrines of the concrete personal-universal such as they are propounded by a Maurice Blondel, a Pierre Teilhard de Chardin, an Urs von Balthasar; and one must always keep oneself from confounding it with a gnosis, precisely because they always involve *Jesus semper benedictus.* [50]

> [50] P. 339, n. 4: Cf. Henri de Lubac, *The Eternal Feminine* [French] (1968) 193-202 and 279-294. As much will be said for the generation that followed Pico, that of a Lefevre d’Etaples, then a Luis de Leon.

This is not to be construed as any part of the occult gnosis, De Lubac assures us, because the blessed name of Jesus is always invoked by the ecumenical syncretists. Hence, all is well.

De Lubac takes up the definitive defense of Pico by Pope Alexander VI, after the bull *Et si injuncto nobis* of Pope Innocent VIII, dated August 4, 1487 (but not publicly issued until December 15), condemning seven of the conclusions in Pico's *Nine Hundred Theses,* and censoring six more, which is a measure of tolerance worthy of note in that many hundreds of Pico's other heretical conclusions in the *Nine Hundred Theses* were passed over without censure of any kind by Innocent VIII. His other Kabbalistic magical treatises in his other books were "overlooked" by the reputedly "stern and vigilant" pontiff. As De Lubac also points out:

"Not for an instant does Pico endeavor to justify or to explain his exaltation of human freedom. It needed no defense because it had never been contested (by Innocent VIII). The reason is simple: the *Oratio* (*Oration on the Dignity of Man*), in which this 'celebration' is found, had not been examined. It was, let us repeat, totally outside the debate. Whatever one may think of the doctrine contained in this work, it must not be forgotten that it was never pronounced upon, nor subject to an examination by any censor" (p. 401). "None of the writings of Pico della Mirandola was ever listed in any catalogue of the *Index of Prohibited Books"* (p. 412).

At this juncture we note that Lorenzo de Medici and Pope Innocent VIII were political allies. Lorenzo's daughter married Innocent's natural son. Lorenzo and the pontiff shared a grandson, the future cardinal, Innocenzo Cibo. [51]

As previously stated, Pico fled to France the next year where he was briefly imprisoned by order of the Duke of Savoy. He was soon after released by French King Charles VIII and returned to Florence and the lap of Medici luxury, a "heretic" who now lived exempt from any further interdiction by the pontiff.

Conservative Catholics were placated by the ostentatious "dramatic moves against Pico" and hoped there would be more to come. There was a theatrical aspect to the papal intervention, the "flight into France" and the subsequent return to the comfort and safety of Lorenzo the Magnificent's city of Florence, where Giovanni Pico settled in a palatial villa and continued his heretical writing as before. In the summer of 1489 he published *Heptaplus,* his Kabbalistic falsification of the book of Genesis. De Lubac, in asserting Pico's alleged orthodoxy, writes (pp. 401; 410 and 411):

---

[51] Pope Innocent VIII (Giovanni Battista Cibo) publicly acknowledged as his natural son, the scoundrel Franceschetto Cibo, who was married to Maddalena de' Medici, Lorenzo's daughter. The eldest of their six children was Innocenzo Cibo (1491-1550), who, in 1513, would be made a cardinal by his uncle, Pope Leo X (Giovanni de' Medici).

"...one will object, what about the Bull of Innocent VIII?... [Upon the accession of Rodrigues Borgia to the pontificate under the name of Alexander VI, Pico had delivered to him a model letter insinuating his request to be rehabilitated...] [p. 409]. During the first year of his pontificate, Alexander VI, ratifying the conclusions proposed by three cardinals and the

master of the Sacred Palace, wrapped up the whole affair by a letter addressed 'to our dear son, the noble Giovanni Pico, Earl of Mirandola.' Of course, it was a political gesture, 'a homage rendered to Peter de Medici given the current political situation in Italy'; but the gesture nonetheless came at the conclusion of a seriously conducted investigation...

"Was Alexander VI's *Brief* a simple absolution granted to Pico or a rehabilitation pure and simple, which could be viewed as a retraction on the part of the Holy See? In our opinion, the truth seems to lie between the two, closer, however, to the second hypothesis. A close reading of the document is the best way to ascertain this. It is composed of two parts: an exposition of the facts that occurred under Innocent VIII, then, by reason of the new inquiry, the decision of Alexander. The exposition of the facts attenuates the rigor of the measures taken previously; it was merely a matter of protecting the faith of believers and especially of the simple, because the wording of some of the propositions could have led them into error.

"Pico is always shown in a good light: the fact that the *Nine Hundred Conclusions (Theses)* had been proposed for the discussion of the learned under the pope's control is advanced in his favor, and that their author always showed himself to be disposed toward an entire submission. The *Apologia* is presented entirely to Pico's credit: with a sincere faith he interprets the contested propositions in a Catholic way. [52]

[52] P. 410, n. 3: "*...te quemdam alium librum Apologeticum edidisse, in quo easdem conclusiones in meliorem et catholicum sensum declarans interpretabaris, et circa eas intellectum sincerae fidei explicabas...*" The word "*meliorem*" allows the inference that Pico, in explaining himself, was able on one point or other to rectify his doctrine. Thus, the self-esteem of the censors is saved.

Then the pope pronounced his judgment. He begins by conditionally absolving Pico from every censure he may have incurred by reason of perjury, in order to bring to his soul perfect tranquility. Then he declares 'extinct *(motu proprio et ex certa scientia),* all the grounds for complaint [grievances] raised against him by the previous commission. He assures him that he committed no fault, has incurred no penalty, has not fallen under suspicion of heresy '*propter editionem Declarationum et*

Apologetici.' [53]

[53] This is indeed how the document is cited in the edition of the *Opera* and in Napoli, 117. The *Civilta Cattolica,* cited elsewhere, deemed that it should have read: "propter editionem et declarationem Apologetici," because the "Conclusiones" were not "Declarationes." For the general meaning of the Brief, this discrepancy seems to us to be unimportant.

Finally, he forbids anyone from picking a quarrel with him over any of these past events. The *Brief* was skillfully drafted. Without contradicting Innocent, Alexander did more than absolve Pico.[54]

[54] When Alexander says "*Pro potiori cautela tua, ab omni reatu perjurii si quem etim forsan indirecte, dicto juramento tuo... aliquo modo contraveniendo incurrisses, absolventes*," he relieves (*absolvit*) Pico of a hypothetical censure; he does not absolve him from any fault of heresy or of bad doctrine, of which he declares him, on the contrary, exempt, given the explications of the *Apology:* he *nullifi* (*extinguimus*) the cause inaugurated by the theologians of Innocent VIII.

He praised him, and basing himself on his *Apologia,* he approved his doctrine. That is why John-Francis (his nephew, Gianfrancesco) was able to have a new edition of his uncle's *Apologia* published in 1495..."

De Lubac herewith follows the trail of Pico's influence in the Church of Rome in the centuries that followed his death, including with Reuchlin (notice his dig at Hoogstraeten [below] as guilty of "petty... provincialism" like Pico's alleged adversary Pedro Garsias), though he omits Francesco Giorgi and Agrippa. Nonetheless, De Lubac adds to our knowledge of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Kabbalistic Catholic personnel, and the "clean slate" that constituted Pico's Catholic status:

"Thus it is in complete security that the hot-headed defender of Pico's Christian Kabbalism, Archangelus de Borgo Novo (Angiolo Pozzi, author of *Interpretationes in Cabalistarum selectiora dogmata* of 1569), will in 1564, in the preface of a book directed against Pedro Garsias, [55]

[55] Published at Bologna, the book, several times reprinted, was never censured. Secret, 256, 268, 343. Garsias has been justly compared to the Cologne Dominican Hoogstraeten, the implacable adversary of Reuchlin.

contrast the grandeur of his hero with the petty, pretentious provincialism of those who had wanted to stifle his voice. 'Fallen,' he wrote, 'into the nets set out for him by the clever folly of his judges, Pico, the noblest of the learned and the most learned of the nobles, more eloquent than the ancient wise men, more illustrious, holy, and of a purer taste in every genre of life and of doctrine, poured into his *Apology,* a small book of immense erudition, gems more precious than gold.'

"Such will be, in the following century, the opinion of the renowned Jesuit Kabbalist Athanasius Kircher, who will include Pico della Mirandola among the sources of his monumental *Oedipus Aegyptiacus*. [56]

[56] P. 413, n. 1: Vol. 2, Part I (Rome, 1653), 151, 186-189.

He will adopt his interpretations of Orpheus and will cite them in commenting 'according to their legitimate sense' in order to give an '*anakephalaiosis*' of his own thought, seven of the *effata mystica,* chosen among the *conclusiones secundum Proclum* (Nos. 2, 8, 11, 15, 49), *secundum propriam opinionem de modo intelligendi hymnos Orphei* (No. 28) and *cabalisticae* (No. 13). [57]

[57] P. 413, n. 2: Pico, *Opera,* 75, 76, 78, 107, 109. This is last of de Lubac's notes reprinted in these pages.

"There is no mention of him in the fourteen books *Adversus omnes haereses* published under Paul III at Venice in 1546 by Alphonsus de Castro Zamorensis, O.M.

"The *Treatise of Heresies* published in 1661 by Louis Abelly, which aims at a complete inventory century by century and which does not spare Raymond Lully, breathes not a word about the (*Nine Hundred*) *Conclusions* or the *Apologia.* One would also seek in vain the name of Pico in the *Istoria di tutte l'eresie* of Domenico Bernino in the chapter that relates the errors condemned under the pontificate of Innocent VIII."

As Cardinal De Lubac attests through his sources, *Pico's rehabilitation by the papacy was complete.* His diabolic slate had been wiped clean, even by the "Counter-Reformation Pontiff" Paul III. It has remained so over the centuries, up to the present. Alleged "counter-occult" popes of the post-Renaissance Church of Rome, such as Leo X and Pius X, had not a word of disapprobation for this preeminent worker of iniquity. "Conservatives" and "traditionalists" likewise view him as benign. His syncretic occult religion has been a smashing success. His dream of a public fusion between Catholicism, Hermeticism and Judaism has come to fruition. Giovanni Pico della Mirandola is the true father of the Second Vatican Council and the "post-Conciliar Church."

[Page 522 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

Chapter XV

Neoplatonic-Hermetic Kabbalism in the Modern Era

I

Eliphas Lévi: Patriarch of the incognito Hermetic “Traditional Catholic” movement

It was the ultra-montane Catholic layman Joseph de Maistre (1753-1821), “a proponent of traditionalism,” Minister to Russia under King Victor Emmanuel I, and Minister of State in Sardinia, who worked on behalf of an Illuminati “tradition” in league with the Church of Rome and consonant with the absolute obedience owed to the pontiff. A monarchist and one of the founders of the ultramontanist movement, De Maistre was from 1774 to 1790 at the same time a Freemason of the various masonic orders, among them the powerful Illuminist Scottish Rite (the Chambéry lodge “La Sincérité,” led by Jean-Baptiste Willermoz), as well as simultaneously a member in good standing of the Jesuit penitential order, Grande Congrégation Notre Dame de l’Assomption.

Maistre’s occult master, Willermoz, was part of the Catholic-Kabbalist movement under the papist occultist Martines de Pasqually (d. 1774), [1] who required that members of his inner Order of Elect Coens *(Ordre des Elus Coëns*), join the Catholic Church, devoutly and faithfully attend the Catholic Tridentine Mass and receive the sacramenta from bona fide Catholic priests. Here was another transmission of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic “Perennial Philosophy,” i.e. the Renaissance Catholic “Marsilio Ficino’s original Perennialism,” together with Pico and Recuhlin’s Kabbalism, manifested within Martinism in the eighteenth century, and through it, the Church of Rome’s doctrine of papal infallibility, as well as the “staunchly Catholic” Right-wing ultramontane movement. [2]

In his unfinished *Les Soirées de Saint-Petersbourg,* which is a defense of the Kabbalist-papist Martinist movement, Maistre wrote that certain forms of Illuminism, such as that of Louis-Claude de Saint-Martin (1743-1803), help to erase the disunity caused by Protestantism, through the maintenance of a secret tradition across confessional boundaries. His book *Du Pape* (1820) served as a groundwork for the papal infallibility movement that culminated in

---

[1] Gérard van Rjinberk gives the year of Pasqually’s birth as circa 1709. Other documents indicate circa 1726.

[2] Cf. Mark Sedgwick, *Against the Modern World: Traditionalism and the Secret Intellectual History of the Twentieth Century* (Oxford University, 2004) pp. 40-41.

Vatican Council I, decades later. In it he stated, “no sovereign pontiff has ever made a mistake in speaking on matters of faith.”

The heir to this occult pottage was the “always faithful Catholic” Alphonse Louis Constant, known by his *non de plume,* Éliphas Lévi (1810-1875). He is the spiritual patriarch of the mostly incognito Hermeticists who have infiltrated the contemporary “traditional Catholic” Latin Mass movement of our time. Ordained a deacon at the Catholic seminary of Saint-Sulpice under the papist-occultist Abbé Frére-Colonna, with the patronage of the Archbishop of Paris, he obtained a supervisory post at the Catholic Collége de Juilly and preached in churches in the vicinity of Solesmes. Devoted to mariolatry (Jesus’ mother as a kind of goddess), in his *Le rosier de mai ou la guirlande de Marie* (“The Rosebush of Mary’s Garland”), he indulges in erotic vignettes of Mary’s dolorous plight, and in *La Mére de Dieu,* Mary is the Co-Redemptrix of the Universe. Constant/Lévi was all over the occult map of France, presenting the Kabbalah to French masonic initiates and among the circle of Edward Bulwer-Lytton in England, as well as in his books, among them his manual of Kabbalistic magic and gematria, *La clef des grands mystéres* (1861). Constant/ Levi, despite his Satanic rites and writings (cf. his *Dogme et rituel* chapter on Necromancy), and rumored summoning of demons (according to his housekeeper and nurse, Madame Gebhardt), and as reported by associates of Bulwer-Lytton (for

instance in London, in July, 1854), *was never disciplined by the Catholic hierarchy and freely spread his occult contagion.* [3]

[3] One of Constant/Lévi’s followers lectured at the seminary of the “traditional Catholic” Society of St. Pius X (SSPX) in Winona, Minnesota in the 1990s. As of this writing, he continues to give interviews on “Catholic radio,” and to lecture and write on behalf of ultramontane “traditional Catholicism,” monarchy, and the Anglo-Catholic-masonic Stuart dynasty.

The appearance of “bleeding hosts” (a “host” is a name for the Catholic communion wafer) is often taken as proof of Transubstantiation, the belief that when a validly ordained Catholic priest who has the proper intention, consecrates a host during the Mass, it literally becomes the flesh of Jesus Christ. For the occult circle of Constant-Levi, these “bleeding hosts” were manifestations of transcendental magic—and masonic and Hermetic symbolism: “Eliphas Lévi combined his occultism with a strong adherence to Catholicism... Lévi was... shocked when the Abbé showed him an album containing pictures of miraculous hosts, three of which particularly caught his attention because of the signs that they bore. The first was stamped with the star of the microcosm, or the magic pentagram... It is the five-pointed star of occult masonry, the star with which Agrippa drew the human figure… The second host bore the signs of two intertwined hermetic serpents.” [4]

[4] Christopher McIntosh, *Eliphas Lévi and the French Occult Revival* (State University of New York, 2011), pp. 109 and 171.

Inspired by the Kabbalistic popery of Constant/Lévi, an Anglican priest, the Right Rev. C.W. Leadbeater (1854-1934) became a leader in the “Theosophical” movement. [5]

[5] “The occultist group that (Rene) Guenon joined in 1906, and from which he developed his ‘Vedanta-Perennialism,’ was the Martinist Order. It had been established in about 1890 by Gérard Encausse (famous as ‘Papus’) …The Theosophical Society was established in New York in 1875… by… Colonel Henry Olcott. Olcott wanted the Theosophical Society to… find ‘ancient wisdom,’ especially in the ‘primeval source of all religions, the books of Hermes and the Vedas’ —in other words, the Perennial Philosophy.” (Mark Sedgwick, *Against the Modern World* [2004], p. 40). For the role of Papus in helping to erode the institution of the Tsar in Russia, cf. Sergei O. Prokofieff, *The Spiritual Origins of Eastern Europe* (2016), pp. 208-211.

Some theosophists combined devotion to the Tridentine Latin Mass with a movement to bring the Antichrist to earth. One hesitates to state a fact so lurid, yet there it is. Beginning in 1909, Leadbeater proposed a Hindu youth in India, Jiddu Krishnamurti, as the “World-Teacher.” (This writer was first confronted with the alleged perspicacity of this Krishnamurti individual, by an affluent “traditional Catholic.” Our failure to agree that this Krishnamurti Antichrist was an astute truth-teller, put an end to our acquaintance).

Leadbeater is claimed as an inspiration by many wings of the occult. He is of interest in our study for his advocacy of the Tridentine Latin Mass. In his book *The Science of the Sacraments,* Leadbeater unveils what he alleges are the occult secrets of the Mass. Leadbeater was part of the occult gnosis which saw in the old Catholic Mass the fulfillment of magical doctrines. Catholics should be aware that when the Tridentine Mass is made an idol in itself, it can become the object of a cult subject to mystification, private revelation and magical thinking that is indifferent to the primacy of Biblical standards. Antiquarians who imagine that the revival of the old Mass is the primary means of sanctification, no matter which pederastic priest or bishop celebrates it, or how sleepy, apathetic or superstitious is the congregation, are in line with Leadbeater’s occult thinking.

On the other hand, Protestants who seek to abolish the liturgy of the Eucharist, which was clearly a part of the first century worship of the Early Church, are as much in error as those Catholics who imagine that Jesus preached a religion of magic. *What Jesus did at the Last Supper was not magic,* and Catholics who treat the Eucharist as if it were, build the empire of the occult, not the Kingdom of God.

II

Tridentine Judaism

Ever since the pontificate of John-Paul II, we have witnessed the rise of the religion of Holocaustianity, formerly known in theology as *YomHaShoah* (or *Shoah*, for short), the doctrine of the Israeli state inside the Church of Rome. Some "traditional Catholic" leaders, both clerical and lay, have declared that the infiltration of the *Shoah* theology into the Church of Rome has "no bearing on faith and morals."

The old Catholic Mass rite alone, when separated from ancient Christian truth (which is now outlawed by means of the "antisemitism" canard), becomes merely a type of High Church Anglicanism, in which one emasculated wing of the Hegelian synthesis is allowed to participate in the dialectic for considerations of aesthetics and enhancing organizational discipline. This is not Scriptural. The prayer of the Church is a mere totem if it is immersed in a milieu which overthrows the doctrine of the Gospel.

Under High Church Anglicanism, the Elizabethan Isis-gnosis was not challenged, but rather, was accommodated as a *quid pro quo* for the High Church faction being permitted the liturgy of Edward VI.

Under Pope Benedict XVI, the masonic, post-conciliar, Hermetic-Talmudic-rabbinic gnosis was not challenged, but rather is accommodated as a *quid pro quo* for the traditionalist faction being permitted the liturgy of Pius V.

The medieval prayer of the Church without the medieval belief of the Church is not a remedy, it is an abomination and an alchemical mockery. Many on the Right said in his defense that Pope Benedict was execrated and opposed by the Left, as if this hatred on the part of some Leftists is the universal solvent that reconciles all contradictions. Few seem to be cognizant of elementary principles of human alchemy and mind control as practiced by the Cryptocracy by means of the Hegelian dialectic. The thesis is always played against the antithesis, i.e. the Right is always a stage prop against the Left. The opposition of zealous Leftists to the pontificate of Benedict XVI

did not render Benedict a true Catholic. Leftists are enraged that Benedict did not modify church edicts against contraception and women priests. But of what genuine significance is this particular “conservatism,” when a Neoplatonic-Hermetic revolution against the Gospel itself—the radical overthrow of nearly 1500 years of Christian teaching on Judaism—is implemented by Pope Benedict?

The Left-wing oppositional *thesis* does not absolve Benedict XVI of his complicity in Paul VI’s 1965 *Nostra Aetate,* or John-Paul II’s *Shoah* business. Benedict’s *synthesis* of the Leftist *thesis* and the Rightist *antithesis* culminated in his continuing perpetuation of the calamitous “Elder brothers in the faith” fraud, and “Holocaust” mania. Both of these modernist innovations were as strong as ever under Benedict’s pontificate and thanks to his astute maneuvering, were repeated by “Roman Catholic conservatives and traditionalists.”

The mixing of irreconcilable opposites is a hallmark of the human alchemy of the Cryptocracy. This virtuoso amalgamation is what we have in the infernal marriage of the Old Catholic Mass with the new Catholic belief in Holocaustianity, and the notion that Orthodox Judaism does not seriously threaten Catholicism, and is at least somewhat benign, at least in comparison with Islam.

Benedict XVI cloaked his modernism in the venerable attire of the Latin liturgy of the high civilization of the European past. He revived the old ceremonies because he and his Vatican understood that it is increasingly difficult to successfully maintain organizational discipline and the loyalty of an increasingly wayward laity under the exclusive auspices of the mediocre reductionism which often attends Pope Paul VI’s “Novus Ordo” Mass.

Benedict’s cloak fell at least somewhat when he issued the following document, “Letter of his Holiness Benedict XVI to the Bishops of the Catholic Church Concerning the Remission of the Excommunication of the Four Bishops Consecrated by Archbishop Lefebvre.” Note the dialectical jargon in the pope’s first paragraph:

“…A gesture of reconciliation with an ecclesial group (the SSPX) engaged in a process of separation… turned *into its very antithesis: an apparent step backwards with regard to all the steps of reconciliation between Christians and Jews taken since the Council — steps which my own work as a theologian had sought from the beginning to take part in and support.* That this overlapping of two opposed processes took place and *momentarily upset peace between Christians and Jews,* as well as peace within the Church, is something which I can only deeply deplore…

“Certainly, for some time now, and once again on this specific occasion, we have heard from some representatives of that community many unpleasant things — *arrogance and presumptuousness, an obsession with one-sided positions* etc.

"...Dear Brothers, during the days when I first had the idea of writing this letter, by chance, during a visit to the Roman Seminary, I had to interpret and comment on Galatians 5:13-15. I was surprised at the directness with which that passage speaks to us about the present moment: 'Do not use your freedom as an opportunity for the flesh, but through love be servants of one another. For the whole law is fulfilled in one word: 'You shall love your neighbor as yourself.' But if you bite and devour one another, take heed that you are not consumed by one another.' *I am always tempted to see these words as another of the rhetorical excesses which we occasionally find in Saint Paul. To some extent that may also be the case...*" [6]

[6] March 10, 2009; published on March 12; excerpts with emphasis supplied.

Pope Benedict accuses the Apostle Paul of exaggeration ("rhetorical excesses") and admits that "reconciliation between Christians and Jews" has been his goal as a theologian from the beginning of his career—not the *conversion* of Judaics, but "reconciliation." How can two opposites reconcile? Where in scripture is the mandate for a "reconciliation between Christians and Judaics" warranted? The Vatican worships the god of the United Nations, the mainstream media and the spirit of the world (1 Cor. 2:12). In our media age the concept of reconciliation with evil (except the unpardonable supposed "evil" of obstructing Talmudism and Kabbalism), is a politically correct idol to which the Vatican has submitted.

Pope Benedict exhorted Catholics to work for "peace between Christians and Jews." What sort of "peace" was there between Jesus and the Pharisees? How can there be peace with the successors of the Pharisees, except by diluting the Catholic

Faith with the leaven of the Pharisees? With reference to supporters of Bishop Williamson, Pope Benedict wrote of their: "...arrogance and presumptuousness, an obsession with one-sided positions..."

Holocaustianity

In the Neoplatonic-Hermetic theology of the Church of Rome, the "Holocaust" or *Shoah,* represents the sublimation of our Lord Jesus Christ. His subsidiary status is a type of blasphemy since it is brought about by the idolatry inherent in *Shoah* theology, viz. Holocaustolatry. Consider the fact that Cardinal Sean O'Malley of Boston made the astonishing declaration on

February 23, 2009, that the “Holocaust” was the “worst crime” in history. Calvary? What’s that? A footnote, at best.

We also observe the effects of Holocaustolatry in the increasingly bold and public Talmudic mockery and denigration of Jesus by Hollywood (as for example by repeatedly taking His name in vain; Exodus 20:7; Philippians 2:10), and in the deadly anti-Christian libel that constitutes denial of His Resurrection, as personified by the “Discovery” cable television channel with its worldwide broadcast of “Titanic” movie director James Cameron’s documentary claiming to have found the burial tomb of the “dead” Jesus Christ. Needless to say, Hollywood moguls are not jailed for blaspheming Jesus or denying His Resurrection. Furthermore, all the hot air blown by the Right-wing over Obama, abortion, Islam etc. is nowhere to be found assailing the *Talmudic source* of the media’s blasphemies, which strike at the heart of the Christian Faith (1 Corinthians 15: 14-15).

Meanwhile, revisionist historians serve prison sentences in Germany for blaspheming Judaism’s sacred Auschwitz, which is far more sacred in our modern world than the immolation of the Son of God on Calvary. In Europe, faith in the alleged homicidal gas chambers is state-mandated and papally promulgated. Their status as a sacred relic is vastly superior to the Crucifixion of the Son of God. There is no civic protection for Jesus Christ and no Vatican promotion of His Gospel as salvation to the Jews. Rather, the Neoplatonic-Hermetic popes of the modern era, in *Nostra Aetate* (“In Our Time”) and subsequent post-conciliar and papal decrees, have twisted scripture to rehabilitate Christ’s assassins, the Pharisees.

The roots of Holocaustianity’s Catholic-*Shoah* cult pre-date 1965 and the Second Vatican Council. Talmudism and neo-Platonic Kabbalism were, as has been demonstrated in these pages, powerful currents in the Renaissance and that era’s popes succumbed to the allure. The protagonists behind *Nostra Aetate* were Popes John XXIII and Paul VI, and the “Secretariat for Promoting Christian Unity” led by Jesuit Cardinal Augustin Bea and Bishop Johannes Willebrands, with assistance from Bea’s *peritus* (“theology expert”), Jesuit Father Malachi Martin (who intermittently wrote for Zionist publications under a pseudonym). Josef Ratzinger (the future “Benedict XVI”) was also a player.

In June, 1960, Pope John had a fateful meeting with Jules Isaac, an 81-year-old French Zionist who founded the *Amitié Judeo-Chrétienne,* a Paris-based study group of approximately sixty Judaics and “Christians.” As far back as 1947, *Amitié* had proposed “correcting” what it described as “theologically inexact concepts and presentations of the Gospel of Love” that place Judaics in spiritual and physical ghettos. Mr. Jules Isaac had prepared for the Roman Church a study that sketched the history of its teachings, legislation and actions toward Judaics. Isaac’s unedited memoirs record his conversation with John XXIII. He noted that “the teaching of contempt for the Jews, in essence anti-Christian, should be purified...” Could not the pope, “a voice from the summit, show the true path?” Pope John XXIII asked Isaac to meet with Cardinal Bea. On September 18, the pope and Bea weighed Isaac’s positions and proposals. Upon Bea’s recommendation, John XXIII mandated that the Secretariat for Promoting Christian Unity should facilitate “reflection” on “the Jewish question” during its preparation for the Second Vatican Council. The fostering of a spiritual, theological and catechetical revolution became the objective. Nathum Goldmann, president of the World Jewish Congress and co-chairman of the World Conference of Jewish Organizations was advising the Vatican at this time. Goldmann and Cardinal Bea met in the latter’s private quarters three weeks before the Secretariat’s first plenary session.[7]

[7] https://www.americamagazine.org/issue/547/article/genesis-nostra-aetate

The Vatican II Kabbalist-sage Rabbi Abraham Heschel candidly admitted that his dialogue with Catholicism was really about attacking Christians’ souls with ‘Holocaust’ guilt. Heschel actually said, “*I want to attack their souls.*”

“In *Spiritual Radical,* the biography of the Hasidic change agent, Rabbi Abraham Heschel (by Edward K. Kaplan, Yale University Press), is an account of an interview Rabbi Heschel gave during the time the Vatican II document *Nostra Aetate,* which Heschel collaborated on, was being deliberated.

The interview reveals an attitude of remarkable hostility to Christians, which should come as no surprise to those knowledgeable of the rabbinic tradition. What may surprise some (but shouldn’t at this point) is that such a hostile character would be invited by Vatican officials to participate in the writing of a Church council document.

“First some background: in Heschel’s many meetings with Vatican officials (as a representative of the American Jewish Committee) regarding *Nostra Aetate,* mostly with Augustin Bea, but including a secretive meeting with Paul VI, Heschel was most adamant that the document should clearly proclaim his belief that it is unacceptable for Christians to seek the conversion of ‘Jews.’

Heschel’s *chutzpah* in peddling this absurd idea (which consequently would undercut Christ’s incarnation, evangelical mission and sacrifice), went to the extreme of appealing to the non-Biblical, relativistic, Talmudic anti-principle, *mipnei darchai shalom*[8]

[8] This is a legal category derived from Mishnah Gittin 5:8, which lists various laws centered upon the custom, under certain circumstances, of *mipnei darchei shalom* (giving the appearance of benevolent acts toward gentiles). Behind this camouflage is

the actual *halachot* (law)—the *mishum aivah,* denoting actions performed "because of animosity." The teaching is that where Judaism encounters powerful opposition it is best to wear a mask of benevolence until such time as Israel is supreme; at which time the pretense is no longer necessary and can be dropped.

during his meeting with Paul VI.

"During the deliberations, a draft of the *Nostra Aetate* document was leaked to the press which did not include the prohibition against converting 'Jews' which Heschel desired. This infuriated Heschel, and in response he wrote an editorial published both by the *New York Times* and *Time* magazine in which he proclaimed, 'As I have repeatedly stated to leading personalities of the Vatican, I am ready to go to Auschwitz any time, if faced with the alternative of conversion or death.'

"Heschel's biographer Kaplan (citing Schuster's notes on record at AJC/Paris), writes that the American Jewish Congress's European director, Zachariah Schuster, warned Heschel that this outburst had been embarrassing to their Vatican collaborators, but that Heschel replied undauntedly, 'I had my own private reasons for making this remark.'

"Heschel later revealed to a female Stern Gang terrorist, Geula Cohen, what those private reasons were, in an interview for the Israeli newspaper, *Ma'ariv.* In interviewing Rabbi Abraham Heschel, Cohen made reference to his hysterical 'ready to go to Auschwitz' statement, saying she was proud of it, but that she would have handled it differently. She wrote:

"This statement of yours made me proud. Yet, I would have written it differently, saying: 'if this were the only way in which I would be permitted to live, I would have endeavored to send them (Christians) to Auschwitz.'

"Cohen relayed that Heschel was not shocked by her words, but explained that his statement was stronger than hers... Heschel further clarified, explaining the private reasons he earlier said he had for making the 'Auschwitz' statement: "(Christians) correctly understood that I was comparing them to the Nazis. If I had made the statement in a straightforward fashion saying 'you are Nazis,' it would have sounded ridiculous. My style of writing is by hinting, because truth is in the depths. There are those who would like to attack their bodies. *I want to attack their souls.* Today, there is no longer any place for religious wars as such. Today there is occasion for conversation and discussion. Do you consider the desire to discuss a sign of weakness?" [9]

---

[9] Rabbi Abraham Heschel, interviewed by Geula Cohen for *Ma'ariv,* January 4, 1965, as translated by AJC/Paris; emphasis supplied.

There we have the motivation behind "dialogue" with "elder brothers" succinctly summarized by one of the esteemed pioneers of interfaith "dialogue," who participated in the writing of a Church Council's document, *Nostra Aetate.* Rabbinic warfare against Christian souls is not fought with guns and bombs as often as with "conversation" and "discussion." Here we see the subtlety of rabbinic warfare..." [10]

[10] http://mauricepinay.blogspot.com/2007/12/vatican-ii-kabbalist-sage-rabbi-abraham.html

Nostra Aetate ("In Our Time")

Declaration on the Relationship of the Church to Non-Christian Religions
Second Vatican Council, October 28, 1965.
Passed by a vote of 2,312 bishops pro, and 88 con.

"Sounding the depths of the mystery, which is the Church, *this sacred council remembers the spiritual ties which link the people of the new covenant to the stock of Abraham.* The Church of Christ acknowledges that in God's plan of salvation the beginnings of its faith and election are to be found in the patriarchs, Moses and the prophets.

"It professes that all Christ's faithful, who as people of faith are daughters and sons of Abraham (see Gal 3:7), are included in the same patriarch's call and that the salvation of the Church is mystically prefigured in the exodus of God's chosen people from the land of bondage. On this account *the Church cannot forget that it received the revelation of the Old Testament by way of that people with whom God in his inexpressible mercy established the ancient covenant.* Nor can it forget that it draws nourishment from that good olive tree onto which the wild olive branches of the Gentiles have been grafted (see Rom 11:17-24).

"The Church believes that Christ who is our peace has through his cross reconciled Jews and Gentiles and made them one in himself (see Eph 2:14-16). Likewise, the Church keeps ever before its mind the words of the apostle Paul about his kin: 'they are Israelites and it is for them to be sons and daughters, to them belong the glory, the covenants, the giving of the law, the worship, and the promises; to them belong the patriarchs, and of their race according to the flesh, is the

Christ' (Rom 9:4-5). It is mindful, moreover, that the apostles, the pillars on which the Church stands, are of Jewish descent, as are many of those early disciples who proclaimed the Gospel of Christ to the world." (End quote; emphasis supplied).

Nostra Aetate is sometimes defended in the following terms: “It lifts collective guilt for deicide off the shoulders of the Jewish people.” This fact is supposed to be a conversation-stopper which 1. proves *Nostra Aetate* is consonant with scripture and tradition, and 2. acts as a rebuke to “anti-Semites.”

The problem is that *Nostra Aetate* is a great deal more than just a single declaration. Its defects are to be found in its other, mostly unexamined declarations. There is nothing particularly sinister in the portion of *Nostra Aetate* which we have quoted, except for the ominous racial emphasis on the “stock of Abraham.” From here onward in modern Catholic theological pronouncements, we encounter the lineaments of what this writer terms *Ku Klux Judaism.*

The Neoplatonic-Hermetic papacy proclaims to the world that “the Jews” among us are still the Holy Race. This is occult Jew-hate, not love. Observe the demonic insinuation (for it is never stated openly), that contemporary Judics are saved—or at the very least —rendered sacred in God’s eyes, by their alleged descent from Abraham.

Catholic liberals *and* conservatives imagine that this proposition is some sort of lofty and radical challenge to craven “anti-Semitism” and a “prophetic call” to humility on the part of Christians.

In truth, this proposition is Jew-hate par excellence, for *it encourages the deadly race pride that has blinded Judaics to Jesus Christ across the centuries, and thereby consigns them to eternal perdition.* But to speak this paradoxical truth is forbidden (I Thess. 2:16).

In a few respects *Nostra Aetate* makes valid points. For example, it says to the proponents of the Wagnerian/neo-Nazi theory of a non-Judean “Aryan Christ,” and to the Manichaean and Marcionian haters of the Old Testament, that Jews and the Old Testament are integral to the Church and form its root. This is true.

Nostra Aetate: “As holy scripture testifies, Jerusalem did not recognize God’s moment when it came (see Lk 19:42). Jews for the most part did not accept the Gospel; on the contrary, many opposed its spread (see Rom 11:28). Even so, the apostle Paul maintains that the Jews remain very dear to God, for the sake of the patriarchs, since God does not take back the gifts he bestowed or the choice he made. Together with the prophets and that same apostle, the Church awaits the day, known to God alone, when all peoples will call on God with one voice and serve him shoulder to shoulder (Soph 3:9; see Is 66:23; Ps 65:4; Rom 11:11-32).”

The misuse and distortion of St. Paul is a keystone of Holocaustianity. We have here the emphasis on *the implication that the Apostle is sanctioning a* *saved-by-race happy ending to the Judaic drama of rejection of their Messiah.* All that Paul has ever said on this subject amounts to Jews being saved at the end of time *because they will be numbered among the Christians.*

This is the meaning of the authentic reconciliation referred to in Ephesians 2:14-16: Jews are reconciled with gentiles *through the Cross.* Jews who are not saved by faith in Christ are, according to St. Paul, “under wrath… contrary to all men.” (1 Thess. 2:14-16). *Nostra Aetate* omits this harsh truth. In the lexicon of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic papal subversives, “reconciliation” between Christians and Jews connotes the appeasement of rabbinic Judaism and its unscriptural [11] claim to having a divine relationship with God the Father while rejecting his Divine Son.

Nostra Aetate: “Even though the Jewish authorities and those who followed their lead pressed for the death of Christ (see John 19:6), neither all Jews indiscriminately at that time, nor Jews today, can be charged with the crimes committed during his passion.”

The first statement is true, the second is conditional. Anyone, be they “Jew” or gentile can be charged with crimes “committed during his passion” if they share in the spiritual ideology of the Pharisees who railroaded Him to His death. This includes blond British Freemasons and dusky, curly-haired Hasidim. No one is guilty solely by virtue of being of a particular ethnicity. But there can be no immunity for Antichrist Judaics (or gentile sinners, which includes us all—Romans 3:10), from bearing *spiritual guilt for the Crucifixion,* even in the present age.

Nostra Aetate: “It is true that the Church is the new people of God, yet the Jews should not be spoken of as rejected or accursed as if this followed from holy scripture. Consequently, all must take care, lest in catechizing or in preaching the word of God, they teach anything which is not in accord with the truth of the Gospel message or the spirit of Christ.”

An ambiguity is being manipulated and exploited in this paragraph. How is the Vatican Council defining “Jews” — by race, or by religious ideology? It is entirely Biblical to regard the adherence of contemporary Orthodox Judaism who perpetuate the beliefs of the Pharisees, as exactly what Jesus said they were (and are), “accursed.” (Matthew 21:19).

The accursed fig tree was carnal Israel, which gave the appearance of fertility but was actually barren (Hosea 9:10). Galatians 1:8 states that those

[11] John 14:6; I John 2:23.

who come preaching a false, modern gospel are "accursed." It is entirely within the right of the Catholic to employ this term *accursed* as Jesus and Paul applied it.

Nostra Aetate has no power to cancel a Scriptural warrant, except by the same power that the Talmud uses to cancel the Old Testament. Furthermore, it is politically correct modernism *in extremis* to suggest that "preaching or catechizing" Judaics must be limited or modified.

Nostra Aetate: "Indeed, the Church reproves every form of persecution against whomsoever it may be directed. Remembering, then, its common heritage with the Jews and moved not by any political consideration, but solely by the religious motivation of Christian charity, it deplores all hatreds, persecutions, displays of antisemitism directed against the Jews at any time or from any source."

From correct denunciation of racial animus, *Nostra Aetate* branches out to extrapolate a Neoplatonic-Hermetic conclusion for which, once again, there is no basis in the Scriptures:

"...deplores all... persecutions... directed against the Jews at any time or from any source." Here is the great departure from historic Christian teaching, and a repudiation of all Christian saints throughout history who exposed rabbinic Talmudic-Phariseeism, from Vincent Ferrer to Queen Isabella of Spain.

And what of those *Christians who were persecuted by Judaics?* Do their persecutors come in for the Council's sweeping condemnation "for all time" and from "any source?" In the face of the Judeo-masonic holocaust of Catholics in the Vendee region of France and of the Cristeros in Mexico; and of the Judeo-Bolshevik holocaust of Orthodox Christians in Russia, the pontificating moral conscience of *Nostra Aetate* is silent. The post-Renaissance Vatican's memory of those other holocausts is blank. This too is a fruit of the religion of Holocaustianity: *amnesia concerning the history of the persecution of Christians by Judaics.* The smoke of Talmudic immunity and entitlement has entered the Church.

Taking *Nostra Aetate to* its logical conclusion, the enemies of Christ, call them Freemasons, rabbis, Communists or neocons —if they happen to be of Judaic descent—cannot be exposed. Saints who did so in the past were mistaken and are now rebuked and repudiated. "The Church... reproves, as foreign to the mind of Christ, any discrimination against people... on the basis of their... religion." How is this foreign to the thinking of Jesus when He called the followers of the religion of the Pharisees the "children of hell"? (Matthew 23:15).

Do the authors of *Nostra Aetate* expect us to believe that Christians are not to “discriminate” against the modern followers of the old Talmudic creed of the Pharisees who break the commands of God for the sake of their rabbinic traditions? Truly, *Nostra Aetate* is another gospel, and a descendant of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic theology.

Pope Paul VI built upon *Nostra Aetate* and prepared the ground for the acceptance of the Israeli-Shoah theology of Pope John-Paul II. In Paul VI’s *Guidelines and Suggestions for Implementing the Conciliar Declaration Nostra Aetate,* published under the signature of Cardinal Willebrands in his capacity as President of the “Commission for the Catholic Church’s religious relations with the Jews,” [12] there are two instructive declarations. 1. “The history of Judaism did not end with the destruction of Jerusalem, but rather went on to develop a religious tradition. And, although we believe that the importance and meaning of that tradition was deeply affected by the coming of Christ, it is still nonetheless rich in religious values.” 2. Paul VI’s document also objects to the fact that the words ‘Pharisee’ and ‘Pharisasim’ have taken on a largely pejorative meaning.”

On January 10, 1975, Paul VI gave an address to the liaison committee between the Catholic Church and world Judaism: “...as we look at history as a whole, we cannot fail to note the connections, often too little remarked upon, between Jewish thought and Christian thought. We may here merely recall the influence... of the philosopher and theologian Thomas Aquinas, who died... in the year 1274, there very naturally come to our mind the numerous references of our Angelic Doctor to the work of the rabbinic scholar from Cordoba, who died in Egypt at the dawn of the thirteenth century, Moshe ben Maimon, in particular his explanations of the Mosaic Law and the precepts of Judaism.”

Pope VI played quite a joke on the Catholic world with his pretense that Aquinas was a disciple of the Maimonides who taught that Jesus got exactly what He deserved when He was executed. Maimonides also advocated the murder of Christians by stealth. *Aquinas was aware of none of this.* Paul VI is either ignorant or lying when he claims that Aquinas admired Maimonides for his “explanations of the... precepts of Judaism.” Aquinas knew next to nothing about Maimonides and referred to him mainly due to what he had seen of the rabbi’s arguments against atheism. There is nothing in the voluminous writings of St. Thomas revealing any sympathy whatsoever with rabbinic

[12] Instituted by Pope Paul VI on October 22, 1974, for the ninth anniversary of the promulgation of *Nostra Aetate.*

Judaism or any of its "precepts." Aquinas challenged Judaism at its radix, he did not accommodate it. [13]

[13] Cf. *Judaism Discovered,* [2008], p. 421.

John-Paul II, was a subversive revolutionary change agent, like his Renaissance predecessors. Cardinal Karol Wojtyla, Archbishop of Krakow in Poland, was elected pope in 1978. His teachings are diametrically opposed to the truth as declared by the Word of God. Hence, we have a choice concerning Judaism: we can believe the Bible or we can believe the Pope-Saint. We observe Wojtyla's Hermetic theology as early as 1980: "The Holy Father has stated th(e) permanent reality of the Jewish people in a remarkable theological formula, in his allocution to the Jewish community of West Germany at Mainz, on November 17th, 1980: 'The people of God of the Old Covenant, which has never been revoked." John-Paul's pontificate also produced *Notes on the Correct Way to Present the Jews* (June 24, 1985). The pope's document propounds the big lie put forth by Pico della Mirandola, Johannes Reuchlin and Neoplatonic-Hermetic 'Catholicism; stated as follows: "*An exclusively negative picture of the Pharisees is likely to be inaccurate and unjust.*"

The Polish Pope has done to the New Testament what the rabbis of Orthodox Judaism have done to the Old Testament. The New Testament was reversed and overthrown by John-Paul II, the pope of Holocaustianity, which is the religion of Judaism for gentiles, e.g. for those who do not formally convert to Judaism. Open conversion from Christianity to Judaism has a strong connotation of betrayal of Jesus Christ, to whom many people are attached by nostalgia, social status and custom. Consequently, the discreet way such people can adopt Judaism is through a Christian front, which Holocaustianity's *Shoah*-Catholicism affords. A principle of this new theology is the rehabilitation of the Pharisees. If the Pharisees can be rehabilitated, then the rabbis of Orthodox Judaism regain their teaching role, and certain Talmudic and Kabbalistic dogmas gain entrance to the Church and become obligatory for Catholics. Since the Renaissance this has the objective of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic conspiracy.

Modern Orthodox Judaism is the continuation of the ideology of the Pharisees whom Jesus encountered. Writing in his book *Rabbinic Judaism* (1995), Rabbi Jacob Neusner, a colleague of Pope Benedict XVI, stated:

"This book introduces the structure and the functioning system of Rabbinic Judaism... the particular religious system

set forth by sages, or 'rabbis' who flourished in the first six centuries C.E."

During the pontificate of John-Paul II, Cardinal Joseph Bernardin of Chicago, in a speech to Israelis, moved to suppress "anti-Semitic" portions of the Gospel of John. [14]

Bernardin was a favorite of the papal-"saint."

On June 24, 1985, in the pontificate of John-Paul II, Rome issued its teaching document, the *Vatican Commission for Religious Relations with the Jews: "Notes on the Correct Way to Present the Jews and Judaism in Preaching and Catechesis in the Roman Catholic Church."* The rehabilitation of the Pharisees was the central teaching of this Commission, which declared, "His (Jesus) relations with the Pharisees were not always or wholly polemical. Of this there are many proofs: it is Pharisees who warn Jesus of the risks he is running (Lk 13:31); some Pharisees are praised e.g., 'the scribe' of Mk 12:34; Jesus eats with Pharisees (Lk 7:36; 14:1)."

Let us evaluate each of these "proofs" provided by Pope "Saint" John-Paul's theologians.

1. "Pharisees who warn Jesus of the risks he is running." This is a reference to Luke 13:31: "At that very hour some Pharisees came and said to him, 'Get away from here, for Herod wants to kill you."

John-Paul II's theologians want us to believe that these were friendly Pharisees who were trying to save Jesus' life. Where is the evidence for this spin? All of the evidence is to the contrary. Christ's true *ecclesia* always faithfully taught the following regarding this passage: "...our Savior was at this time in Galilee, for that was the tetrarchy or province of Herod Antipas, who is the Herod here mentioned. Whether these Pharisees came of their own heads, or as sent by Herod is not so plain... If they came of their own heads, it is certain they came not out of kindness, for the whole history of the gospel lets us know, that the Pharisees had no kindness for Christ, but were his most implacable enemies, and continually consulting on how to destroy him... they either came to scare him out of Galilee... or to drive him into the trae which they had laid for him in Judea... it is most probable that they came as secretly sent by Herod... This opinion looks more probable because in verse 32 our Savior sends them back with a message to Herod ("Go and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out demons and perform cures today and tomorrow, and the third day I finish my course").[15]

---

[14] "Address to the Hebrew University of Jerusalem," March 23, 1995, in *Selected Works of Cardinal Joseph Bernardin: Homilies and Teaching Documents* (2000), pp. 285-299; with a forward by child-molestation facilitator Cardinal Roger Mahony.

[15] Matthew Poole, A *Commentary on the Holy Bible*, v. 3, p. 241.

2. "...some Pharisees are praised e.g., 'the scribe' of Mk 12:34." This passage in Mark reads: "And when Jesus saw that he answered wisely, said to him, 'You are not far from the kingdom of God." There is no proof that this scribe was a Pharisee. For the Pope-Saint's Vatican to assert definitively that the scribe was a Pharisee is a falsehood. Moreover, this passage is not an indication of benevolence toward Jesus on the part of a supposed Pharisee, but rather of a loosening of the hold of the scribal mentality over this man, and his willingness to begin to move toward embracing the doctrine of Jesus Christ, as did the Apostle Paul. As such, this scribe foreshadows the convert Paul, rather than serving as an indication that a committed Pharisee exhibited some kindness to Christ and was praised for it.

3. This is the most familiar—and threadbare—of all the apologies for the Pharisees: "Jesus eats with Pharisees (Lk 7:36; 14:1)." Yes, indeed our Lord did so because He came for sinners and as He said, sinners need a physician. Jesus sought to convert them by dining with them. The need for conversion is the underlying motive for sharing the meal. Luke demonstrates what John-Paul II's Vatican denies, *that Pharisees (and their modern rabbinic heirs) are in need of conversion.* Let us see what actually came of one of these supposedly "non-polemical" dinner engagements:

"While Jesus was speaking, a Pharisee asked him to dine with him, so he went in and reclined at table. The Pharisee was astonished to see that he did not first (ritually) wash before dinner. And the Lord said to him, 'Now you Pharisees cleanse the outside of the cup and of the dish, but inside you are full of greed and wickedness. You fools! Did not he who made the outside make the inside also? But give as alms those things that are within, and behold, everything is clean for you. But woe to you Pharisees! For you tithe mint and rue and every herb, and neglect justice and the love of God. These you ought to have done, without neglecting the others. Woe to you Pharisees! For you love the best seat in the synagogues and greetings in the marketplaces. Woe to you! For you are like unmarked graves, and people walk over them without knowing it." (Luke 11:37-44).

These are the words spoken by Christ at the meal which was, according to the pope-saint's devious theologians, not "wholly polemical."

Next, the canonized pontiff s theologians teach: "Jesus shares, with the majority of Palestinian Jews of that time, some pharisaic doctrines: the resurrection of the body; forms of piety, like alms-giving, prayer, fasting (cf. Mt 6:1-18) and the liturgical practice of addressing God as Father; the priority of the commandment to love God and our neighbor (cf. Mk 12:28-34)."

What a clever ruse—to attribute to the Old Testament-nullifying Pharisees what are in fact *Old Testament doctrines.* If the Pharisees cling to a few vestiges of the Old Testament, these did not exonerate their own man-made traditions from being wholly evil. How dare the Vatican under the papal "Saint" claim that Jesus believed in some doctrines of the Pharisees! *They are disseminating a blasphemous fable which makes a liar out of Jesus Christ.*

In Luke 12:1 our Lord speaks of their doctrines as the "leaven of the Pharisees." What did Jesus mean by this? How does leaven work? Silently, and the smallest particle of it, when spread to other dough, will ferment the whole of it.

What then, is Jesus warning of? He was exhorting us to beware of *the smallest particle of the doctrine of the Pharisees,* lest it infect the whole of the community of believers. Yet under John-Paul's pontificate we were taught to believe that Jesus did indeed "share... some pharisaic doctrines."

The pope's theologians also cite Acts 23:8: "For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, nor angel, nor spirit, but the Pharisees acknowledge them all." *True.* But the Pharisees denied the Resurrection of Jesus Christ, so what is the benefit of holding to a Biblical concept theoretically, and rejecting the most obvious, and compelling example of resurrection—by the Son of God?

This denial makes them more guilty than the Sadducees, since the latter could not even entertain the idea of resurrection, whereas the Pharisees professed belief in it and then obstinately denied it with regard to Jesus. What is there to praise in this?

The 1985 "Saint" John-Paul Commission document continues: "Paul (cf. Acts 23:8) ...always considered his membership of the Pharisees as a title of honor (cf. ibid. 23:6; 26:6; Phil 3:5)."

In Acts 21-23 Paul is facing a violent Jewish mob and a Sanhedrin that seeks to kill him. As a divide-and-conquer tactic he identifies himself as a Pharisee in order to sow discord between the Sadducees and the Pharisees. The passage, when taken in context (Acts 23:6-7) reveals this: "Now when Paul perceived that one part were Sadducees and the other Pharisees, he cried out in the council, "Brothers, I am a Pharisee, a son of Pharisees. It is with respect to the hope and the resurrection of the dead that I am on trial." And when he had said this, a dissension arose between the Pharisees and the Sadducees, and the assembly was divided."

Nowhere does Scripture denote, suggest or imply that Paul considers the title of Pharisee to be "honorable." Reading from Acts 21-17 to Acts 23:35 we see that St. Paul is not relaxing on a seaside veranda teaching disciples while at his ease. He is in peril of his life. Nonetheless, no matter what duress he is under, Paul's intention is not to deceive anyone by his statement. Instead, he is humbly informing the sinful Pharisees that, as you are now, I once was. In his public confession in Acts 22:3-5, he convicts himself of Pharisaic sins: "I am a Jew, born in Tarsus in Cilicia, but brought up in this city, educated at the feet of Gamaliel according to the strict manner of the law of our fathers, being zealous for God as all of you are this day. I persecuted this Way to the death, binding and delivering to prison both men and women, as the high priest and the whole council of elders can bear me witness.”

Does the Vatican expect us to believe that the Apostle Paul regards it an “honor” that he “persecuted to death” those of the “Way” (of Christ)? Paul’s statement in Acts 23:6 that, “I am a Pharisee” must be read in the context of his statement that precedes it in Acts 22:20: “And when the blood of Stephen your witness was being shed, I myself was standing by and approving and watching over the garments of those who killed him.” Where is Paul saying there is honor in being a Pharisee?

In support of their claim, John-Paul II’s theologians also cite Acts 26:6, which is irrelevant and contains no reference to the Pharisees. They also cite for support Philippians 3:5. An analysis of this passage reveals the extent of the rabbinic-like deceit by which the Pope’s Vatican falsifies the Bible. Let us take the passage in context (Philippians 3:4-6): “If anyone else thinks he has reason for confidence in the flesh, I have more: circumcised on the eighth day, of the people of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, a Hebrew of Hebrews; as to the law, a Pharisee; as to zeal, a persecutor of the Church; as to righteousness under the law, blameless.”

Would even a school child adduce the preceding passage as support for the claim that for Paul “membership in the Pharisees” was “a title of honor”? Paul in this section is addressing the Judaizers in the Church, attempting to persuade them of the errors of their ways. He is making his statement not on the basis of the disingenuous Vatican proposition that he was showing forth the honor of being a Pharisee, but to demonstrate that in opposing the Judaizing of the *ecclesia* of Christ, he himself did not lack a Jewish pedigree.

Pope “Saint” John-Paul and his magisterium were applying midrashic and Talmudic exegesis to the New Testament. Yet this tendentious hair-splitting and outright falsification will not avail the post-Renaissance, Neoplatonic-Hermetic Church in its objective of reducing and softening the opprobrium with which the New Testament brands the Pharisees and their oral traditions.

Since 1965, when it comes to the Pharisees, the papacy won’t stand for any strictly good-versus-evil dichotomy. Toward the Pharisees the Vatican under “the saintly pontiff’ harbored a morally ambiguous, shades-of-gray attitude: “If in the Gospels and elsewhere in the New Testament there are all sort of unfavorable references to the Pharisees, they should be seen against the background of a complex and diversified movement... An exclusively negative picture of the Pharisees is likely to be inaccurate and unjust...”

Who is the Vatican accusing of being unjust and "inaccurate"? Is this not a *covert dig at Jesus Himself?*

Christ must be the one who is "unjust" and "inaccurate" since His *unrelievedly negative characterization* of the Pharisees as *the children of hell* (Matthew 23:15) who are *doomed to eternal damnation* (Matthew 5:20) demolishes Neoplatonic-Hermetic theology. The two cannot coexist. The teaching issued in "Saint" John-Paul II's pontificate is covert Talmudic denigration of Jesus.

From 1965 onward, the Catholic Church succumbed to the post-modernist notion that after the Nazi massacre of Judaics it is incumbent on the Church to modify the politically incorrect truths of the New Testament and through distortion and misrepresentation, make them appear to blend with the dogma of Holocaustianity. For the World War II theology to supplant the New Testament theology, it was necessary to invoke *"The* Holocaust" as inaugurating an era in which many Biblically-derived Christian verities are suspended, or indicted as having been accessories to the supposed cosmic crime of the "*Shoah*." All of history and all of humanity must henceforth make every other martyrdom and victimization secondary, including Christ's sacrifice on Calvary, while submitting to the universally enforced dogma that declares that protecting Judaics from being victimized by yet "another Holocaust" is the highest duty of the Church of Rome.

To promulgate this revolutionary alteration of the mission of the New Testament, extreme Leftist hermeneutics common to the modern humanist theology of mainline Protestant churches have been adopted by the Church of Rome. The Talmud decrees that the Old Testament does not mean what it says. The Catholic *Shoah* theology of John-Paul and his successors suggested rather than declared (through omission and distortion), that the New Testament does not mean what it says.

This error is much more dangerous when it manifests in the Church of Rome than in Protestant congregations which are free to reject it, since among Catholics it is advanced within a structure of authoritarian obedience demanded of the faithful, who are subject to the pope and the authority of the "magisterium."

The unstated axiom of the Church of Rome's dogma of Holocaustianity is fundamentally Talmudic: a higher value is placed on Judaic life compared with the lives of non-Judaics. The advancement, edification and protection of Christians and

Christianity is made subsidiary to the advancement, edification and protection of Judaics who reject Jesus Christ. This is Renaissance humanism married to Talmudic particularism. Scripture-quoting is the mask by which the intellectually dishonest infiltrators cloak their Talmudic theology in order to give it a Christian facade.

The theology of Holocaustianity denies the Biblical doctrine that there are severe repercussions and punishments for the crime of unrepentant rejection of Jesus. While Christians may not engage in vengeance or violence, when God allows or initiates these things against evil-doers would it be proper for the Christian Church to adjust its doctrine out of sympathy and solidarity with the evil-doers? The truth is that all those who reject Christ and are spiritual (*not* necessarily racial) heirs of those who crucified Him, are under wrath. This has been the teaching of the Catholic Church from the first century A.D. until the Renaissance. In Matthew 10:14-15, Jesus declares, "And if anyone will not receive you or listen to your words, shake off the dust from your feet when you leave that house or town. Truly, I say to you, it will be more bearable on the day of judgment for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah than for that town." Jesus is uttering this prophecy of doom upon those who reject the words of true Christians. These opposers, according to Jesus, are worse than the residents of Sodom and therefore, *worse than sodomites*.

Many of the Judaics who were killed by the Nazis rejected the words of Christian evangelists. St. Paul described unbelieving Jews as those "Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, and have persecuted us; and they please not God, and are contrary to all men: Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be saved, to fill up their sins always: *for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.*" (1 Thessalonians 2:15-16; emphasis supplied).

"Wrath has come upon them to the uttermost." By what right do popes and cardinals overthrow Biblical theology out of remorse for the fulfillment of Biblical prophecy? The true Church's way of protecting the Jews is for Jews—like all other people who desire God's blessing and favor—to bear good fruit, cease persecuting Christians, express remorse for the murder of Jesus by the founders of Orthodox Judaism, and have faith that He is the Son of God who died on the Cross for their sake.

If they do not, then Christ Himself, in His parable of the vinedressers, has prophesied a miserable destiny for them.

There is a wretched end predicted for those who killed the Son of God, both for those who had a literal, physical hand in it, as well as all of those who share in and continue the spiritual ideology that is based on the ideology of the killers. God sent to the 'vinedressers' prophets, and they killed the prophets. He sent them His Son and they even killed Him (Matthew 21:33-39).

In our modern age, the spiritual and ideological heirs of the 'vinedressers' continue to teach and uphold that their murder of the prophets of God was legitimate (Babylonian Talmud: Yebamoth 49b). The vinedressers continue to teach and uphold that their murder of God's Son was legitimate (Babylonian Talmud: Sanhedrin 43a). These are the teachings of the religion of the Pharisees as it exists in our world today, in the form of Orthodox Judaism.

"Therefore, when the owner of the vineyard comes, what will he do to those vinedressers?" God said in Matthew 21 that He would destroy these wretched vinedressers *miserably.* Therefore, when calamity befalls the rabbis of Judaism and their adherents in one 'holocaust' or another, why do supposed Christians regard it as shocking, or an injustice?

Vile Nazis killed many innocent people, including countless Christians, and many others of ethnic Judaic descent who rejected, or at the very least were indifferent, to the Talmud and Judaism, and we sincerely mourn those deaths and condemn the murderers responsible. But facts are facts. Those who fit Christ's description of evil "vinedressers" and who died miserably under the Third Reich, were suffering the curse of God, as foretold in Matthew 21. Many times, in the Old Testament history of Israel, God sent wicked armies to chastise the equally or still more wicked Israelites. The post-Renaissance Church of Rome, when it overthrows Biblical theology in order to make amends for the Nazis having been the instruments of God's curse on the "vinedressers," are perpetrating a liberal humanist reversal of God's Will.

Due to camouflage afforded by their conservative position on abortion and contraception, the papist Church is believed by many persons to be loyal to the ancient verities. In fact, Rome is smitten with a Talmud-centric hermeneutic advanced by scriptural exegetes such as Amy-Jill Levine and Bart D. Ehrman.

The latter, in his book *Jesus Interrupted,* judges the Church mainly by the degree to which it is either pro or anti-Judaic. This is Ehrman's chief criterion for assessing the good or evil of the historic Christian ecclesia. Following the rabbinic party line, Ehrman claims, along with Prof. Levine and other falsifiers, that Jesus did not come to found a religion substantially different from "Judaism." Mr. Ehrman goes so far as to claim that, "The charge of deicide first occurs in the writings of a late-second-century writer..." Apparently Ehrman has not read the gospel of Matthew and John, or the letters of Paul the Apostle.

The following could have been written by Ehrman, Amy-Jill Levine, or dozens of other Bible-falsifying liberal scripture "scholars." But these were the words of "Saint John-Paul the Great": "We must remember how much the balance of relations between Jews and Christians over two thousand years has been negative. We must remind ourselves how *the permanence of Israel is* *accompanied by a continuous spiritual fecundity, in the rabbinical period,* in the Middle Ages and in modern times, taking its start from a patrimony which we long shared, so much so that 'the faith and religious life of the Jewish people as they are professed and practiced still today, can greatly help us to understand better certain aspects of the life of the Church... The permanence of Israel (while so many ancient peoples have disappeared without trace) is a historic fact and a sign to be interpreted within God's design. *We must in any case rid ourselves of the traditional idea of a people punished, preserved as a living argument for Christian apologetic. It remains a chosen people,* 'the pure olive on which were grafted the branches of the wild olive which are the gentiles." [16]

[16] John-Paul II, March 6, 1982, alluding to Romans 11:17-24 (emphasis supplied).

These are the words of Antichrist. We will not modify this judgment with weasel words "out of respect for the Holy Father." The idea that an evil-doer cannot be exposed, or his soul-destroying poison curbed because he is an exalted personage ("pope"), is unscriptural.

God is no respecter of persons (Acts 10:34) and neither is any Christian. The notion of immunity for the lies and deceit of a supreme religious leader is priestcraft. This "John-Paul II" Judas wants us to "rid ourselves of the traditional" Catholic-patristic doctrine concerning the unbelieving Jews, who have been preserved throughout history to be punished as a "living argument for the Catholic apologetic." We are to eradicate the wisdom of the Catholic saints and patriarchs who, before the Renaissance, always taught and always believed these truths. John-Paul II's revolutionary teaching that rabbinic Judaism has a continuous "spiritual fecundity" is of a piece with the cries of the Renaissance heresiarchs on behalf of the fecundity of the Talmud and Kabbalah. But never was the cry so effective in alchemically processing humanity as when it was uttered by the "pro-life, conservative" Papal Saint.

On March 12, 1998 the Vatican issued the pontiff's declaration, *The Tragedy of the Shoah and the Duty of Remembrance* concerning the cosmic suffering of the "Jews" under the Nazis. Nothing approaching this document has ever been issued by Rome concerning the Communist holocaust against millions of Christians. Conforming to the Talmudic belief that only Jews are fully and completely human, the Church of Rome elevates the sufferings of the World War II-era Judaics far above that of Christian mass murder victims. In his epochal adoption of the innovative creed of Holocaustianity, The Polish Pontiff declared:

“The 20th century... has witnessed an unspeakable tragedy which can never be forgotten: the attempt by the Nazi regime to exterminate the Jewish people, with the consequent killing of millions of Jews... Before this terrible genocide... no one can remain indifferent, least of all the Church, by reason of her very close bonds of spiritual kinship with the Jewish people and her remembrance of the injustices of the past. The Church’s relationship with the Jewish people is unlike the one she shares with any other religion. However, it is not only a question of recalling the past... we ask all Christians to join us in meditating on the catastrophe which befell the Jewish people and on the moral imperative to ensure that never again will selfishness and hatred grow to the point of sowing such suffering and death...

“While *bearing their unique witness to the Holy One of Israel and to the Torah,* the Jewish people have suffered much at different times and in many places. But *the Shoah was certainly the worst suffering of all... such* an event cannot be fully measured by the ordinary criteria of historical research alone. It calls for a ‘moral and religious memory...

“The fact that the *Shoah* took place in Europe, that is, in countries of long-standing Christian civilization, raises the question of the relation between the Nazi persecution and the attitudes down the centuries of Christians towards the Jews...

“In the Christian world—I do not say on the part of the Church as *such— erroneous and unjust interpretations of the New Testament regarding the Jewish people and their alleged culpability have circulated for too long,* engendering feelings of hostility towards this people...

“Such interpretations of the New Testament have been totally and definitively rejected by the Second Vatican Council. Despite the Christian preaching of love for all, even for one’s enemies, the prevailing mentality down the centuries penalized minorities and those who were in any way ‘different.’ Sentiments of anti-Judaism in some Christian quarters and the gap which existed between the Church and the Jewish people led to a generalized discrimination, which ended at times in expulsions...”

The pontiff’s 1998 declaration is a regurgitation of the cliches of rabbinic nullifiers of the New Testament. He declares the Judaic people to be what they see themselves to be, through the warped lens of their own egotistical narrative: the “unique witness to the Holy One of Israel and to the Torah.” But Talmudic Judaism is nothing of the kind. How can those who falsify the Word of God with their Mishnah, Gemara and Zohar, and deny that Jesus is the Son of God, “bear witness to the Torah”? Pope John-Paul II preached the doctrine of the Talmud, in line with Pope Leo X, the Talmud rescuer and publisher.

Observe John-Paul's mystification of history: "the Shoah... cannot be fully measured... by... historical research alone... It calls for a... religious memory." In other words, where research conflicts with a "religious memory" of World War II, research is discarded. This is why scientific research cited by revisionist historians will not be countenanced. In fact, it is a sin to do so. This sort of procustean superstition is a step backward to the worst excesses of the Inquisition. As for loving one's enemies, where does that interfere with guarding against their sins? John-Paul's crack about "expulsions" is a dig at Queen Isabella, who ruled Spain, and whose canonization has been obstructed, perhaps permanently, in deference to the protests of the rabbis, while the Polish pontiff who fulfilled the dreams of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic Kabbalists, has been canonized.

John-Paul II's lead theologian and the "prefect" of his Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith was Joseph Ratzinger, who succeeded him as Pope Benedict XVI, before resigning. Benedict confirmed the Holocaustolatry of his predecessor and expanded upon it, rendering it more oppressively rabbinic than it was under John-Paul. As Cardinal Ratzinger he had a formative hand in its infiltration of the Church and its development therein. Ratzinger was a theological prodigy who blasted a beachhead for Holocaustianity inside Catholicism, based on his gravely distorted interpretation of the Bible.

Cardinal Ratzinger's landmark, 200-page theological statement, *The Jewish People and their Sacred Scriptures in the Christian Bible,* was published in 2001 by the Pontifical Biblical Commission.

This official document, composed by the cardinal and twenty-three Vatican scholars under his direction, in addition to being rife with apostasy, demonstrates the future Pope Benedict XVI's thorough knowledge of the basics of the Talmud, so that it cannot be said that he promulgates errors about Orthodox Judaism from ignorance. He had a good grasp of the Mishnah and the "seven *middoth*" that form the rabbinic exegesis of scripture.

Cardinal Ratzinger mirrors with considerable fidelity the influential modern fulfillment of the occult Renaissance contention that Jesus was under the influence of the Pharisees. To sow this confusion is essential because it is an effective way of shaking the believer's confidence in the existence of an *unambiguous condemnation* in the New Testament of a rabbinic gnosis which, beginning in the late fifteenth century, covertly steered the *sotto governo* of Catholic Italy.

To achieve this end, mitigating factors must be marshaled which present Jesus as thinking like a Pharisee. Hence, Cardinal Ratzinger stated that the use by Jesus of “analogy” and “*a fortiori* argument” (a corollary implied by a stronger claim), demonstrates the influence on Jesus’ thinking of the “first two middoth (rules) of Hillel the Pharisee, *‘qal wa-homer* and *gezerah shawah.”*

The assignment of the latter *gezerah shawah* (more commonly spelled *gezera shavah)* sophistry to Jesus Christ, is a blasphemy against Him, since the rabbinic *gezera shavah* entails the attribution of a grotesquely *falsified meaning to scripture*; a transgression of which Jesus is obviously innocent.

As for analogy and *a fortiori* argument, these are found in the pure Word of God in the Old Testament, uncontaminated by the human imaginings of the traditions of the Pharisees.

To establish a proprietary relationship between these methods and the proto-Talmudic *middoth* of the Pharisee Hillel, is a fallacy intended to dilute the Truth of Jesus by watering it with the imputation of a Pharisaic influence. Cardinal Ratzinger dared to say that in Jesus’ words can also be discerned the influence of “rabbinic midrash.” The Midrash is accurately described as a book of old wives’ (*bubbe-meises*) tales, as well as outlandish fables such as claiming that Noah was sodomized on board Noah’s Ark, and other equally pornographic fables. This is what influenced Jesus Christ?

Ratzinger sought to associate the words of Jesus with this mad heritage. The claim that Jesus used the reasoning methods of the Pharisees is a degenerate libel. The truth is that Jesus’ used the reasoning methods *imparted to Him by His Father in Heaven,* and not the depraved lawyer’s entrapments and salacious fables that were the specialty of the successors of the Pharisees.

It gets worse: Cardinal Ratzinger argued in *The Jewish People and their Sacred Scriptures in the Christian Bible,* that in the wake of the “Holocaust,” Christians can learn much from the Talmud. In conjunction with the positing of this doctrine of Giovanni Pico della Mirandola and Johannes Reuchlin, Cardinal Ratzinger contradicted it in passing, and by so doing, provided himself with a loophole:

“Should not Christians henceforth read the Bible as Jews do, in order to show proper respect for its Jewish origins? In answer to the last question, a negative response must be given for hermeneutical reasons. For to read the Bible as Judaism does, necessarily involves an implicit acceptance of all its presuppositions, that is, the full acceptance of what Judaism is, in particular, the authority of its writings and rabbinic traditions, which exclude faith in Jesus as Messiah and Son of God.”

Ratzinger’s loophole serves as an escape clause that offers an alibi to double-minded papalolaters who argue that the pope is not a Hermetic agent and that we are misquoting the “Holy Father.” Many people want to be deceived (2 Thess. 2:9-12). They seize on one half of modern papal double-talk, the orthodox half, *and ignore the Kabbalistic half.* Cardinal Ratzinger’s Pontifical Bible Commission document reflects the confusion of the insane. After saying we shouldn’t read the Bible as Judaism does, the Commission document states: “Christians can and ought to admit that the Jewish reading of the Bible is a possible one, in continuity with the Jewish Sacred Scriptures from the Second Temple period.”

The Vatican is sunk so far down in the thick mud of the Hegelian dialectic that they don’t know which end is up. Straight talk is foreign to them. They can’t set pen to paper without lying. They tell us we shouldn’t read the Bible as Judaism does, but the Jewish reading of the Bible is a “possible one.”

Here is a bipolar mind for all who have a sufficient love of the truth to readily perceive. The future Pope Benedict, in his text, *The Jewish People and their Sacred Scriptures in the Christian Bible*, then proceeds to make the following astonishing statement: “Christians can, nonetheless, learn much from Jewish exegesis practiced for more than two thousand years.”

Jewish exegesis of two thousand years: the Talmud, Midrash, Kabbalah, Mishneh Torah, Shulchan Aruch, Mishnah Berurah, etc. From 2,000 years of an enormous heap of delusions, lies and blasphemy against Jesus and Mary, Christians can “learn much.”

Wrapped in the mantle of the “struggle against Holocaust denial and antisemitism,” Holocaustianity becomes the alibi for the completion of that which was launched in the Renaissance, the revolutionary overthrow of the authentic Catholic teaching on rabbinic Judaism and the Talmud. At the same time, it nearly completely smothers the gospel call to unconverted Judaics to obtain freedom from the bondage that oppresses them.

[Page 554 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

Cardinal Ratzinger’s document, *The Jewish People and their Sacred Scriptures in the Christian Bible,* presented a long and convoluted analysis of the St. Paul’s statements on the Jewish people, twisting his words to make it appear as though the Talmudic doctrine of the racial prestige of the Jews is valid. The future pope ignored the Biblical warning in Rev. 2:9 and 3:9 about counterfeit Israel, and the critically important fact that Jesus did not believe that the Jews who confronted Him qualified as authentic descendants of Abraham: “They answered him, “Abraham is our father.’ Jesus said to them, ‘If you were Abraham’s children, you would be doing the works Abraham did, but now you seek to kill me, a man who has told you the truth” (John 8:39-40).

Ratzinger’s theology culminates in his confirmation of post-Renaissance Catholicism’s proclamation of a new “elder brother” status for the unbelieving Judaics who reject and oppose Christ: “It is because of our common roots and from this eschatological perspective that the Church acknowledges a special status of ‘elder brother’ for the Jewish people, thereby giving them a unique place among all other religions.”

John-Paul’s “elder brothers” declaration, confirmed by the future Pope Benedict, is predicated upon the overthrow of the Biblical teaching on the Christian’s *exclusive covenantal relationship with God.* Once again, we see a regurgitation of the Judaizing that began in earnest in Medici Florence five hundred fifty years ago. Instead of correcting these errors, Cardinal Ratzinger incorporated them into the official teaching of the Church of Rome. The myths he perpetuated are not difficult to refute, but their virulence emanates from the ecclesiastical authority by which they are propounded. Witness the mendacity of the future Pope Benedict XVI: “For Paul, Jesus’ establishment of ‘the new covenant in (his) blood’ (1 Cor. 11:25), does not imply any rupture of God’s covenant with his people, but constitutes its fulfillment. He includes ‘the covenants’ among the privileges enjoyed by Israel, *even if they do not believe in Christ* (Romans 9:4). Israel continues to be in a covenant relationship and remains the people to whom the fulfillment of the covenant was promised, because *their lack of faith cannot annul God’s fidelity* (Romans 11:29). Even if some Israelites have observed the Law as a means of establishing their own justice, the covenant-promise of God, who is rich in mercy (Romans 11:26-27), cannot be abrogated.

“Continuity is underlined by affirming that Christ is the end and the fulfillment to which the Law was leading the people of God (Gal. 3:24). For many Jews, the veil with which Moses covered his face remains over the Old Testament (2 Cor. 3:13-15), thus preventing them from recognizing Christ’s revelation there. This becomes part of the mysterious plan of God’s salvation, the final outcome of which is the salvation of ‘all Israel’ (Romans 11:26).”

Could Ratzinger have forgotten that Israel’s sin abrogated the Mosaic covenant, the only one of the covenants that is not eternal? God replaced it with a new covenant and a new Israel. Except among those Judeans (“Jews”) and other Israelites who *through Faith* believe that Jesus is the Messiah of Israel who died on the cross for the sins of mankind, *racial Israel is no longer part of God’s covenant* (Hebrews 8:7-13 and Jeremiah 31:31-34).

Employing Romans 11:29, Cardinal Ratzinger stated: “Israel continues to be in a covenant relationship and remains the people to whom the fulfillment of the covenant was promised, because their lack of faith cannot annul God’s fidelity (Romans 11:29).”

Here the future pope accuses God of being unfaithful were His covenant with racial Israel to be annulled. This level of presumption is rabbinic in its brazen accusation against God. The Holy Bible says of God, “In speaking of a new covenant, He makes the first one obsolete. And what is becoming obsolete and growing old is ready to vanish away.” (Hebrews 8:13).

If we accept the future Pope Benedict’s interpretation of Romans 11:29, we have to discard the gospels of Matthew and John; as well as 1 John; the Book of Hebrews; Jeremiah 31 and the teaching of the whole of the Book of Romans itself, when taken in context.

Let us read Romans 11 from verse 26: “And in this way all Israel will be saved... as regards election, they are beloved for the sake of their forefathers.” Verse 29: “For the gifts and the calling of God are irrevocable.”

Liberal and neocon papists and Protestant dispensationalists alike interpret this passage to mean that the election of carnal Israel is irrevocable because of God’s love for the patriarchs of Israel. Cardinal Ratzinger and the Zionists of Churchianity propose with their theory of salvation by race, two different paths to salvation, one for the Jews without Christ, and one by Christ for gentiles. This is an abomination.

Can it be regarded as prudent or edifying to take a few lines from the Book of Romans in order to contradict the entire doctrine of Jesus Christ?

This is not only a case of twisting Romans 11—*in the sense it is explained by Cardinal Ratzinger*—vs. the doctrine of Jesus—it is also a case of Romans 11 vs. the doctrine strongly emphasized in Paul’s other writings. For example, in Galatians 3:7 and 28-29, Paul teaches that *the Church is the true Israel of God.*

How can racial Israel be irrevocably saved by virtue of God’s love for the patriarchs of Israel when, according to Jesus, and Paul himself in 1 Thessalonians 2:15-16, *it was racial Israel that killed and opposed the prophets*? Jesus said to the leaders of Israel, “Thus you witness against yourselves that you are sons of those who murdered the prophets” (Matthew 23:31). God is going to save Antichrist-racial Israel *for the sake of the prophets they killed*? This is a gospel of occult popery, not the true Catholic Church.

If the future Pope Benedict’s’s Hermetic exegesis was correct, and God’s covenant with carnal Israel has never been revoked and can never be revoked, then we must ask, why did Israel need restoration in the first place? Why did the lost sheep of the House of Israel need Jesus Christ (Matthew 15:24), if those sheep are saved by their ethnic connection to God’s beloved Biblical patriarchs of old?

We can’t find any saved-by-racial-heritage doctrine in Romans 2:6-8: “He will render to each one according to his works: to those who by patience in well-doing seek for glory and honor and immortality, he will give eternal life;

but for those who are self-seeking and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, there will be wrath and fury."

We can't find any saved-by-racial-heritage doctrine in 2 Corinthians 3:10-11: "...what once had glory has come to have no glory at all, because of the glory that surpasses it. For if what was being brought to an end came with glory, much more will what is permanent have glory." With the arrival of the new covenant, the old covenant has no glory whatsoever. Consequently, God has *brought to an end* (Greek: *katargeo)* the glory of the old covenant.

[Neoplatonic-Hermetic Kabbalism in the Modern Era Page 557]

There is another serious problem with supporting the claim that "Jews" can be saved apart from faith in Christ: what if many of these self-proclaimed "Jews" are not in fact Jews at all and are not descended from Abraham? This writer has long asked a simple question of those who accept that Judaics who say they are "Jews" should be automatically taken at their word: where is the *evidence* and where are the *records* that prove their Jewish genealogy? No one today can furnish such documentation (Titus 3:9). Yet, with hypnotic verisimilitude it is universally accepted that those followers of Judaism who self-advertise as the "Jews" of the Old Testament are to be regarded as credible.

Moreover, we discern here the clandestine operation of an anti-Judaic, diabolical trap: many Judaics who imagine that they are "Jews" destined to be saved by their alleged ethnic descent from the patriarchs will have no such salvation, since in fact they are not racial "Jews" at all. The seeding of this *false racial hope* is almost never factored into the struggle over the misuse of Romans 11:26-29. Who has planted this futile expectation, which leads to the eternal damnation of Judaic people? Is it not the Judaic-hating devil himself, operating through Protestant fundamentalism, post-Renaissance Catholicism and Judaism?

Scripture exegete Bob Burridge writes, "During the first century, the Jews were the greatest antagonists to the gospel. It was the apostates among the Jews who stirred up the Romans to hate the Christians by slandering them. As more of the Gentiles came into the Church, the olive tree became less 'Jewish.' This fulness of the Gentiles marked the end of physical Israel as God's people. God even used pagan Rome in 70 AD to crush Jerusalem, to destroy the temple the Priests had defiled, and to mark the final end to the special privilege of the physical seed of Abraham. It is by this process that all Israel will be saved. The words describe the process by which God's true Israel will be saved. It is not a prediction of some yet future event.

"Those who see here a future promise for the abandoned and apostate nation of Abraham, are missing Paul's point about what constitutes the truly good olive tree. It is not just Physical Israel. It is the outward Covenant Family of God. In the time between Abraham and Jesus, the tree was the nation of the Jews. In the time after Jesus, the tree is the Apostolic church, God's Spiritual Israel (see Romans 9:6). *As the elect from all nations are evangelized and brought in,* the tree grows toward fulness. As the apostate and unbelieving are removed, the tree improves in purity. *It is in this way that all of God's true Israel will be saved. The New Testament Church does not replace Israel. The Church is Israel in her completed form…* the apostate children of Israel were never more than outwardly consecrated to God. At the time Paul wrote this letter to the Romans, God was using his grace toward the Gentiles to provoke the elect among the Jews to believe." [17]

[17] Bob Burridge "God's Olive Tree," http://www.genevaninstitute.org/2012/02/gods-olive-tree/ Emphasis supplied.

What a blessed relief is Mr. Burridge's affirmation of Christian Truth, contrasted with the twisted perversion of it promulgated by the infallibly canonized Pope John-Paul II, and that palladin of the "conservatives," Pope Benedict XVI.

In studying Ratzinger's document, we discover an assertion that is startling. In addition to claiming that St. Paul taught the doctrine of salvation by Israelite ethnicity, we come across the future Pope Benedict's identification of Paul as someone not fully converted to Christianity from rabbinic Judaism: "In his writings, as was mentioned above, we find not only continual references to the Old Testament, but many traces of Jewish traditions as well."

Notice the distinction made between the Old Testament and Jewish tradition. Is this accusation against Paul —of being under the influence of non-Biblical traditions—based on arcana from the Vatican archives? The "many traces" of "Jewish traditions" alleged to be present in the writings of Paul would be the "traditions of men" which Jesus condemned in Mark 7 and Matthew 15, because they nullify the Word of God. Cardinal Ratzinger's assertion that Paul's writings reflect "Jewish traditions" is a reference to doctrines not found in the Old Testament.

In other words, the future pope is indicating that Paul's teachings reflect the doctrines of the Oral Law of the Pharisees. This atrocious attack on the Apostle Paul, as being not fully converted to Christ, and still clinging to proto-Talmudic beliefs, accounts for the Church of Rome's emphasis on him as a teacher of race-based salvation, since racism is a fixture of Pharisaic Judaism. Cardinal Ratzinger's theology in *The Jewish People and their Sacred Scriptures* *in the Christian Bible* would seem to lend new support to the old accusation that Paul founded a new religion contrary to the teachings of Jesus.

If St. Paul is indeed guilty of teaching salvation for ethnic Jews independent of Jesus Christ, “for the sake of God’s love for the Old Testament patriarchs,” then he was not teaching the gospel of Jesus Christ, but rather the race pride traditions of the Pharisees. In Matthew 3: 9-10, John the Baptist, in line with Jesus, teaches that in order to inherit the promise of God it is not enough to be a descendant of Abraham. One must also bear good fruit or be cut down and thrown into the fire. No misinterpretation of the words of the Apostle Paul can possibly nullify this truth.

From the annals of the Fathers of the early Church we learn that, “Before Clement of Alexandria (150-215 A.D.), no patristic writer apparently commented on (Romans) 11:26. Those of the first three centuries who know of Paul’s teaching fail to mention a coming salvation of the Jews.” [18]

[18] Joseph A. Fitzmyer, *Romans: A New Translation with Introduction and Commentary* (2008), p. 620.

Let us recall St. Peter’s warning, which we would do well to apply to the distortion of Romans 11:26-29 by lawless, post-Renaissance popes and cardinals: “Our beloved brother Paul also wrote to you according to the wisdom given him, as he does in all his letters... There are some things in them that are hard to understand, *which the ignorant and unstable twist to their own destruction,* as they do the other Scriptures. You therefore, beloved, knowing this beforehand, take care that you are not carried away with the error of lawless people and lose your own stability.” (2 Peter 3:15-17).

“Our Elder Brothers in the Faith”

“Our Elder Brothers in the Faith.” This slogan would appear to be an occult mockery. By classifying as our “elder brothers” those who cling to the religion and heritage that rejected Jesus, Popes John-Paul II and Benedict XVI were nullifying the Bible and appealing to fallen natural man’s family and clan structure. Whereas the Mafia and the pagan order teach, “Don’t ever go against the family,” throughout the Bible, God demonstrates that He represents a radically different order, in which truth often predominates over family ties and hierarchical succession. This truth is so important that *God gives us a reminder of an evil elder brother immediately at the start of the New Testament,* in the geneology of Christ Himself, in the gospel of Matthew, where four women appear in the list of the ancestors of Jesus: Tamar, Rahab, Ruth and Bathsheba. It is Tamar with whom we are concerned.

As we have already observed, Tamar was the widow of Judah's *evil firstborn son, who God had killed* (Genesis 38:7). After that son's death, Tamar was married to Judah's next eldest son, Onan, who practiced contraception in his marital relations with Tamar and who God did therefore also kill. Another son, Shelah, was promised to be Tamar's husband by Judah her father-in-law, but Judah broke his promise. Tamar then disguised herself as a roadside prostitute and Judah, not recognizing her, asked to pay her for sex. She complied, after which Judah left her, not knowing she was Tamar. Then Tamar put away the disguise of a harlot and resumed her life as a widow. Three months later, when Tamar's pregnancy from her union with Judah became obvious, she was accused of harlotry, and Judah ordered her to be burned. But she kept documentation of his coupling with her (his signet, cord and staff), and when confronted with these, Judah admitted what he had done with her, thinking her to be a prostitute. Judah confessed, "She has been more righteous than I" (cf. Genesis 38: 13-26).

Here we encounter an example of evil elder brothers creating the conditions that led to Tamar's sordid predicament.

There is more: Tamar becomes pregnant with Judah's twin sons. At birth, the elder brother, Zerah, is passed over in favor of the younger brother, Perez (Genesis 38: 27-30), a switch of momentous consequence, for God chooses the younger brother Perez, to be the ancestor of the royal house of David, the root of Jesse, the line of descent of Our Lord Jesus Christ (Ruth 4:18-22). *Thus does God overthrow elder brother customs for the sake of His Divine Will.* Why then do the recent pontiffs render the "Elder Brother" a special theological category of divine endearment, and spread this misbegotten concept throughout the Church?

The figure of the evil elder brother is not an isolated case. Abel is preferred to his elder brother Cain who persecuted him, Jacob is preferred to his elder brother Esau, who persecuted him. In Galatians 4:28-30, St. Paul identifies Christians and freedom with the younger brother, Isaac. He identifies enslavement and persecution of Christians with the elder brother, Ishmael: When Hagar conceived Ishmael, "she looked with contempt on her mistress" (Genesis 16:4).

Regarding Talmudists and Zionists, the papal coining of the phrase "Elder Brothers in the Faith" is most ominous in light of what we have demonstrated from the Bible about certain elder brothers. Rabbinic texts are full of commands to yield to the elder brother. Hilchot Mamrim (6:15): "It is *mid'Rabanan* that one must honor his older brother just as he honors his father."

Bishop Bernard Fellay, the Superior-General of the Society of St. Pius X, the "traditional Catholic" fraternity of priests, adopted the papal *mantra* in a

January 31, 2009 statement to the French Catholic weekly *Famille Chrétienne:* "The Jews are 'our elder brothers' in the sense that we have something in common, that is, the old Covenant." Bishop Fellay then added an escape clause: "It is true that the acknowledgment of the coming of the Messiah separates us."

This compels us to query Bishop Fellay as follows: is the arrival of the Messiah a mere detail, and hence the "separation" a minor one, or is it a definitive break in our alleged relationship with these "elder brothers"? If it is the latter, why bother to use this post-Conciliar Newspeak at all, except as an equivocation intended to curry favor with the papacy by being seen to parrot its post-Renaissance Judaizing?

The subterranean processing of humanity is worked partly by means of the Hermetic-Kabbalistic/alchemical distillation of the *conjunctio oppositorum* ("conjunction of opposites"), which was weaponized in the dialectical epistemology of G.W. Hegel in the early 19th century.

In Hegel's dialectic, allegiance to eternal truth is considered an anachronism, a species of naiveté. The rabbinic theology of the "Holocaust" and its *Shoah* Newspeak were incorporated into the post-Renaissance Church of Rome to appease rabbinic and Zionist power and complete the magical mandate of Hermetic-Kabbalism, in conformity with the dialectical model which mandates the institutional accommodation of change for the sake of changing times.

This change is almost always accompanied by the imposition of mystifying language ("Holocaust" and "*Shoah*") that seriously undermines the clarity that comes from literal language which denotes or represents something precisely. "Holocaust" and "*Shoah*" constitute the Hegelian jargon of mystification—they are deliberately vague and emotion-laden; they connote many different things to different people. In the dialectic, language becomes "speculative," the embodiment of the "dynamic process" of "double usage."

John Rees, a leading Hegelian, states in *The Algebra of Revolution,* "Ordinary language assumes that things and ideas are stable, that they are either 'this' or 'that'... the fundamental discovery of Hegel's dialectic was that things and ideas do change—empires rise and fall, likewise religions and schools of philosophy... of ideas and concepts which we tend to regard as 'absolutely firm and fast,' Hegel said, 'We look on them as separated from each other by an infinite chasm, so that opposite categories can never get at each other. The battle of reason is the struggle to break up the rigidity to which the understanding has reduced everything.' It is to this end that Hegel deliberately chooses words that can embody dynamic processes: 'The double usage of language, which gives to the same word a positive and negative meaning, is not an accident… We should… recognize in it the speculative spirit of our language rising above the mere Either-or of understanding.”[19]

[19] Rees (1998), p. 41.

While it is true that Christianity is resisted by formidable intellects and sophisticated systems of deception, in the end, guilt for the subverted condition of Christ’s *ecclesia* must first be apportioned not so much according to the conspiratorial plots of the few, as by the hypnotic sleep of the many. While the New Testament teaches that unbelieving Jews are under wrath, an even more damning sentence falls upon the *baptized,* who, under the spell of a paralyzing lassitude, quietly trade their obligation to bear witness to the truth, for the pottage of human respect and the promise of material security in a conforming world.

Under Pope Francis the Pontifical Commission for Religious Relations with the Jews, on December 10, 2015, issued *The Gifts and Calling of God are Irrevocable:*

“The Catholic Church neither conducts nor supports any specific institutional mission work directed towards Jews… it does not in any way follow that the Jews are excluded from God’s salvation because they do not believe in Jesus Christ as the Messiah of Israel and the Son of God.”

In light of what this Pontifical Commission teaches, it would appear that the New Testament is a fraud, at least as it applies to Jews. All of the preachings and disputation to the Jews in the New Testament were for no purpose if we accept the “reasoning” of the Pontifical Commission for Religious Relations with the Jews and the papally-endorsed document, *The Gifts and Calling of God are Irrevocable.* Why did Jesus persist in causing a great deal of difficulty for the Jews by insisting they had to be born again, they had to believe He was their Messiah, they had to stop following their Oral Law traditions of men, and that they couldn’t have eternal salvation unless they believed that He was the Son of God?

The Francis Papal Commission instructs so-called Jews in the true path to their salvation: their race. It is all they need and all they have ever needed according to the popes. God has a covenant with their genes and it is their covenanted genes that save them. The Church of Rome is tolerated by the rabbis because it is no longer the Catholic Church. No Church of Jesus Christ could teach that it has no “mission work directed towards Jews.”

This statement is so preposterous it almost does not merit a response, other than derisive horse laughter at the *chutzpah* that so bald a betrayal manifests. It ignores Revelation 2:9 and 3:9 which prophesies the existence of false Jews. If the majority of disbelieving Israelis are not descended from the patriarchs, but are in fact Khazars, by what means other than faith in Jesus

Christ, can they be saved? The answer is, *none. They are damned.* They can thank Popes John-Paul II, Benedict XVI and Francis for formulating the theology of their perdition, based on the arcane theology of the Renaissance.

Despite the public relations folderol, nothing about the religion of the Pharisees—Orthodox Judaism —has changed, except that it is increasing in depravity and political and religious power. Students of Judaism know what this increase signifies because we have read the texts of Rabbi Moses Maimonides, the leading religious authority for Israelis of European and American background. Maimonides ruled that when Judaic persons are weak they should feign friendship for Christians as a way of gaining power over the Christians. But when Judaics are dominant, Maimonides ruled, they may kill or oppress anyone who obstructs their supremacy. The outcome of the papal and Protestant Fundamentalist surrender to the Sanhedrin will be the extirpation of Christians, as the world witnessed when Soviet Russia was ruled by the children of the rabbis. [20]

The Church of Rome for centuries has certainly had some things in common with Judaism. It must relish the fact that Orthodox Judaism permits the molestation of boys under age nine by the Pharisee Hillel's permission. Molester priests and the bishops and popes who facilitate their molestation can go wild under Talmudic law. The rabbis made their religion desirable for sex perverts. Children may be molested at a young age with no penalty for the adult Judaic molester. Rabbis may have sex with boys under nine [21] and with girls under age three. [22]

Mothers may engage in sexual activity with their male sons under the age of nine. [23]

---

[20] Cf. "When Israel is Mighty," a video interview with Israeli Yossi Gurvitz, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=YSy6ENVAJlY (in Israeli-Hebrew with English subtitles).

[21] "This Baraita supports Rav, for it teaches that if a man engaged in homosexual intercourse with a child under nine, he is exempt from liability... "Since a child less than nine years old cannot commit sodomy, he can also not be the object of sodomy." Cf. *The Talmud: The Steinsaltz Edition* (1991), vol. XVIII, p. 77; Sanhedrin 54b). Rabbi Moses Maimonides confirmed the ruling. Cf. *Issurei Biah* 1:14.

[22] *The Talmud: The Steinsaltz Edition* (Random House, 1991), volume VII, p. 145; Ketubot 11b.

[23] In the Babylonian Talmud, Sanhedrin 69b, a woman having sex with a boy less than nine-years-of-age is an act that is exempt from punishment (and therefore permissible), and does not render her a *zonah* (trollop), or disqualify her from marrying a *kohen* (priest), because sex with male children less than age nine is not a

regarded as a sex act. The reference in Sanhedrin 69b is to incest between a mother and her son. If the woman's son is less than nine years-of-age, then it is rabbinically permissible for her to have sexual intercourse with him, according to the *halacha* of the Talmud Bavli.

III

Tridentine Judaism according to the "Traditional Catholics"

Since the mainstream of "traditional Catholic" theology in our time preaches servile submission to almost all the popes prior to Paul VI (or prior to John XXIII), and because the priority is personal piety and the recitation of *x* number of rosaries and novenas, attendance at "First Fridays" and "First Saturdays," and scapular-wearing, they are highly susceptible to the allurement of Neoplatonism and Hermeticism, enveloped as it is in the clouds of incense and Latin ceremony in which the Renaissance conspirators shrouded themselves and which "traditional Catholicism" is committed to reviving, without sufficient regard to, or vigilance over, who is stage-managing the revival. Powerful occult forces are operating inside contemporary "traditional Catholicism," whose clerical leaders are not routinely answerable to the laity except in emergency terms of threats of lawsuits or withholding donations.

How do occult forces manifest inside "traditional Catholicism"? Primarily in the same manner they chiefly (though not exclusively) manifest inside the post-Renaissance Church of Rome: as an adjunct of Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Kabbalistic advancement of gnosis, through commission or omission. The hybrid abomination we style *"Tridentine Judaism"* can be seen controlling the "traditional Catholic" movement. This union of irreconcilable opposites is known in alchemy as *individuation.* In Freemasonry it is symbolized by *tessellation.*

Their movement is open to this exploitation because "traditional Catholics" are far more devoted to the incense, bells, sacred music and ceremonies of the Tridentine Latin Mass of old, than they are to *the substance of the true Church's dogma of rabbinic Judaism's perfidy.* The exterior of the Mass has been retained but the interior of its Biblical, Patristic and medieval theology has been hollowed out and replaced by apathy toward accommodations with Talmudic Judaism and the betrayal of Jesus that they symbolize.

Most laity as well as even priests and bishops have little accurate knowledge of the legal basis of Ashkenazic Orthodox Judaism: the Talmud Bavli, Maimonides' *Mishneh Torah,* Joseph Karo's *Shulchan Aruch,* Shlomo Ganzfried's *Kitzur Shulchan Aruch,* or the *Mishna Berurah.* As a result of this ignorance, in February 2016, two "prestigious traditional Catholic" organizations, the "International Federation Una Voce" and the "Latin Mass Society of England and Wales" issued a position paper defending the Talmud, fulfilling the mandate of Mirandola and Reuchlin and the other Renaissance subversives. *Plus ça change, plus c'est la même chose.*

Their position paper is titled *The Good Friday Prayer for the Jews in the Extraordinary Form* (an allusion to the Tridentine Latin Rite "form" as it is now called in the Vatican). This text from Una Voce and the Latin Mass Society is a farrago of illiteracy with regard to the Talmud and its opponents. The paper dares to traduce the medieval Franciscan Nicholas Donin, a saintly Judaic convert to Catholicism, for having allegedly sparked "a tragic phase in the Church's history." Here is an excerpt from the text issued by Una Voce International and Britain's Latin Mass Society. It is, not surprisingly, perfectly consonant with Renaissance occult theology:

> "...official theological resistance to anti-Semitic violence was itself challenged, however, in the 13th century. Notably, in 1238 Nicholas Donin attacked the Talmud as leading the Jews into error and blasphemy, undermining the notion of the Jews as bearing witness to the truth. In the following centuries Jewish religious writings were seized for examination or destruction, sometimes by Papal mandate; synagogue services were disrupted and aggressive proselytization attempted by members of religious orders; mass expulsions were carried out from many European countries... It must be underlined that this tragic phase in the Church's history cannot be blamed on the theology of the Fathers... Throughout the period, attempts were made to defend the Patristic view, notably by St Thomas Aquinas, and to refute Donin's claims about the Talmud, a refutation definitively accepted following the Council of Trent."[24]

This text is a nearly verbatim repetition of the rabbinic propaganda about the despised convert Nicholas Donin. He is execrated by the rabbis because this Catholic friar had inside knowledge of the Talmud and used it to damaging effect against rabbinic Judaism. This servant of God has the

[24] Cf. The Foederatio Internationalis Una Voce (FIUV) and the Latin Mass Society of England and Wales (LMS) Position Paper 28: The Good Friday Prayer for the Jews in the Extraordinary Form. The whole text with footnotes is online here: https://rorate-caeli.blogspot.com/2016/03/good-friday-prayer-for-jews-new.html

distinction of being the first Catholic in the history of Christendom to cause the Talmud to be formally put on trial. This occurred in Paris in 1240, before a papally commissioned jury of university scholars, with Donin valiantly acting alone as prosecutor. It required an entire team of rabbis from northern France to endeavor to refute him. The rabbis were under no coercion and they safely returned to their homes after the trial, which convicted the Talmud of being a heinously evil, anti-Christian text constituting blasphemy against the holy name of Jesus.

For this tremendous feat his reputation is sullied by "traditional Catholics," on the preposterous grounds that Donin's anti-Talmudic theology runs counter to the Fathers of the Church.

From the earliest history of the Catholic Church, Judaism and Judaizers inside the Church ("*nostri Judaizantes*") were condemned in no uncertain terms by the *Fathers of the Church.* In the first century St. Ignatius of Antioch declared that nothing unconverted Jews could teach Christians was of any use, and that all such teachers were to be shunned. (*Letter to the Philadelphians* [1]). St. Ignatius stated that to profess Jesus Christ while Judaizing was a monstrosity, and that there is no salvation for those who follow Judaism. (*Letter to the Magnesians*). In St. Justin Martyr's second century *Dialogue with Trypho,* and in the fourth century St. John Chrysostom's *Adversos Judaeos* and his *Discourses Against Judaizing Christians* (in particular the first, second and fourth discourses), Chrysostom declares that both Jewish synagogues and Jewish souls are dwellings of demons. These Patristic dogmas derived from the Bible were upheld by the Council of Antioch (341 A.D.) and the Council of Laodicea (circa 363 A.D).

It is even alleged by "traditional Catholics" that attempts were made by St. Thomas Aquinas to combat the anti-Talmudic "tragic phase in Church history" by upholding the Fathers of the Church, who, it is insinuated, would have also opposed the "tragic phase." Where does Aquinas have one good word to say about the Talmud, or one bad one for Nicholas of Donin? How can it be said that the Fathers of the Early Church would have opposed militant challenges to rabbinic Judaism when those challenges were founded in part on their theology?

We can laugh at these assertions in the hope that derision will put paid to the falsehoods. It would be comforting to be able to say that anything so utterly ludicrous should be ignored. Why bother to challenge this tissue of absurdities? For one thing, these "traditional Catholics" confirm a portion of our thesis regarding the Renaissance Church. Una Voce and the Latin Mass Society *openly acknowledge that the Renaissance Church compromised with*

Talmudic Judaism! They allege that a refutation of Donin was accepted “definitively” by the Renaissance Catholic Church at the Council of Trent.

The authors of *The Good Friday Prayer for the Jews in the Extraordinary Form* make this claim by extrapolating from the datum which they themselves correctly put forth: that during the Renaissance the Vatican permitted the publication of the Talmud. As we have seen, this publishing enterprise was made possible under the influence of the occult Neoplatonic-Hermeticism-Kabbalism which had infiltrated the papacy and the curia.

One of the representatives of the Latin Mass Society in Britain promoting and defending the position paper, *The Good Friday Prayer for the Jews in the Extraordinary Form,* is a “traditional Catholic” and an academic. He corresponded with us with regard to our concerns. What he wrote on March 15, 2016 contains a noteworthy admission:

“The paper, as you quote it, does not say that St Thomas Aquinas defended the Talmud. That distinction goes to Raymond Martin.[25] His judgement, that only a few verses of the Talmud needed to be censored, was confirmed by the Congregation of the Index, which was asked to look into the matter again by the Council of Trent. That decision was never overturned, and in that sense proved definitive.”

In 2016 the “Latin Mass Society” leader conceded that the Renaissance Church of Rome had no major objection to the contents of the Babylonian Talmud, with the exception of “a few verses” out of its thousands of pages.

Moreover, the “distinction” of “Raymond Martin” in his *Pugio Fidei,* one of the formative philo-rabbinic texts which predates the Renaissance, which yet remained influential in the Neoplatonic and Hermetic papal networks, is his defense of the Talmud. As we stated previously, Martin was a clever operator. His book was officially anti-rabbinic, as its full title attests (“*adversus Mauros et Iudaeos*”). It formed the literature of Rome’s Machiavellian, one-step-backward-two-steps-forward deceit mechanism. The *Pugio Fidei’s* key thesis was that which Giovanni Pico della Mirandola put forth two centuries later: that rabbinic books such as the Talmud contain proof of Jesus being the Messiah. Martin wrote:

[25] Ramon Marti, a.k.a. Raymond Martin, *Pugio Fidei adversus Mauros et Iudaeos* (“Dagger of Faith Against Muslims and Jews,” circa 1278).

“As often as the Talmud offers us some prophetic proof text, interpreting it concerning the messiah or concerning those things known to relate to the messiah, if it has expounded the text well, it should be admitted in argument. For honey, as the wise man knows, is consumed eagerly, even though, if it is examined carefully, it proves to be the spittle of bees… I found in the Talmud and *midrashim—that* is, glosses—and traditions of the ancient Jews which I gladly raised up like pearls out of an enormous dung heap… Certain (traditions) which know the truth and in every way reveal the doctrine of the prophets and holy fathers, wondrously and incredibly bespeak the Christian faith too, as will become obvious in this book. They destroy and confound the perfidy of modern Jews…”

[Page 570 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

The “Talmud and midrashim… destroy and confound the perfidy of modern Jews.” This is an unintentionally hilarious statement, but there is nothing humorous about it since this notion gained increasing traction over the centuries, and was one constituent part of the successful occult movement to rehabilitate rabbinic Judaism and its Babylonian Talmud.

In our exchange of correspondence, the individual representing the Latin Mass Society added: “The reference to Aquinas is connected with his more general defense of the Patristic view of the role of the Jews in the economy of salvation, by contrast with the views of Scotus and others. Also of note is his refutation of the charge of deicide, made against the Jews… On the Talmud, the (position) paper refers to an article by John Lamont which is available online, in the *Homiletic and Pastoral Review,* which goes into more detail.”

Our point of contention is not “the role of the Jews in the economy of salvation.” The reference to it would seem to be a diversionary tactic. We are not contending against the Old Testament, or the Book of Romans, chapter eleven. *The point at issue is Talmudic Judaism.* The Latin Mass Society wants us to believe that the Roman Catholic Church was always, even prior to the Renaissance, a politically-correct ally of Pharisaic Judaism’s diabolism, and that Aquinas is noteworthy for “his refutation of the charge of deicide, made against the Jews.”

As for deicide, concerning culpability for the hatred that motivated His crucifixion, Jesus said: “If I had not come and spoken to them, they would not have been guilty of sin, but now they have no excuse for their sin. Whoever hates me hates my Father also. If I had not done among them the works that no one else did, they would not be guilty of sin, but now they have seen and hated both me and my Father. But the word that is written in their Law must be fulfilled: They hated me without a cause.” (John 15: 22-25).

St. Thomas Aquinas on deicide stated, "…their ignorance did not excuse them from crime, because it was, as it were, affected ignorance. For they saw manifest signs of His Godhood. Hence, He Himself says of them in John 15:22: 'If I had not come, and spoken to them they would not have sin; but now they have no excuse for their sin.' And John 15:24 'If I had not done among them the works that no other man had done, they would not have sin…

"Bede likewise says, 'It is to be observed that he does not pray for those who, understanding Him to be the Son of God, preferred to crucify Him rather than acknowledge Him.'…

"All this shows that while they beheld Christ's marvelous works, it was owing to their hatred that they did not allow him to be the Son of God… The rulers of the Jews knew that he was Christ: and if there was any ignorance in them, then it was affected ignorance, which could not excuse them… Among the Jews, some were elders, and others of lesser degree… those of lesser degree—namely the common folk… The Jews of the common order sinned most grievously as to the kind of their sin: yet in one respect their crime was lessened by their ignorance… they were deceived… by their rulers so that they did not believe Him to be the Son of God or the Christ." [26]

St. Thomas Aquinas has succinctly summarized a thousand years of Catholic teaching regarding the words of Jesus Christ in this regard, and no amount of spin from agents of the post-Renaissance Church of Rome, whether Latinists or not, can alter that fact.

The leader of the "Latin Mass Society of England and Wales" with whom we corresponded, made a further revelation of a once suppressed secret: "The Congregation for the Index asked only that a very small number of verses referring to Our Lord be removed. Their ruling meant that the Talmud could be freely printed and distributed, as far as the Church was concerned."

Yes indeed, the papists, more than any other power on earth, and certainly more so than Protestants of that era, were the principal enablers of the Babylonian Talmud.

The person in the Latin Mass Society with whom we corresponded stated further, "On the Talmud the paper refers to an article by John Lamont which is available online, in the *Homiletic and Pastoral Review,* which goes into more detail."

---

[26] *The Summa Theologica of St. Thomas Aquinas,* part III, question 47, articles 5-6. Aquinas here distinguishes between the less culpable *am ha'aretz* and their more guilty leaders.

The Una Voce/Latin Mass Society publication, *Good Friday Prayer for the Jews in the Extraordinary Form,* is sourced as follows in its own footnote no. 17: “Professor John Lamont in the *Homiletic and Pastoral Review.”*

According to another of Lamont’s publishers, the “traditional Catholic” website OnePeterFive.com: “Dr. John R. T. Lamont is a Canadian Catholic philosopher and theologian. He studied philosophy and theology at the Dominican College in Ottawa and at Oxford University, and has taught philosophy and theology in Catholic universities and seminaries.”

The *Homiletic and Pastoral Review* is a publication of “Conservative Catholics” who are not necessarily dedicated to restoration of the Tridentine Latin Mass. The article by Prof. Lamont published online by *Homiletic and Pastoral Review,* “Why the Jews Are Not the Enemies of the Church,” is, we regret to say, an embarrassment. One wonders how a “Catholic philosopher and theologian” could make so many erroneous statements, and how leaders of national “Latin Mass societies,” and priestly “Pastoral reviews” could be so maladroit as to imagine Prof. Lamont has expertise in the field of Talmudic Judaism. Yet, his farrago is endorsed by *Homiletic and Pastoral Review* and Tridentine Latin Mass groups. Perhaps the folly of Lamont’s article is not the point. Perhaps the point is to put forth anything with an appearance of scholarship that is sufficient to recruit large segments of what is known as “traditional Catholicism” into the ranks of the movement to appease the Talmudic spirit of the age, and fulfill the Renaissance-papal occult mission.

The devolution of “traditional Catholicism” from offering resistance to Talmudic Judaism, into a Trojan Horse which embraces it (with the requisite qualifications and cautions, i.e. the two-steps-forward-one-step backward tactic), is not entirely unexpected. “Traditional Catholicism” with its servile allegiance to the Renaissance and post-Renaissance pontiffs, has always contained within it seeds of contradiction which doomed it from the outset, and those seeds have come to fruition.

The following is an excerpt from Dr. Lamont’s article, “Why the Jews Are Not the Enemies of the Church”: [27]

“The reason why Rabbinic Jews are not enemies of the Church can be put briefly. Such Jews do not seek to convert Christians to Judaism, or to prevent non-Jewish Christians from exercising their faith. They only refuse to become Christians themselves, which does not suffice to make them ‘enemies’ of the Church... Rabbinic Jews make no effort to prevent the preaching of the Gospel to Gentiles...”

---

[27] Readers are encouraged to study Dr. Lamont’s text in its entirety online, at: http://www.hprweb.com/2014/03/why-the-jews-are-not-the-enemies-of-the-church/

One doesn’t know whether to laugh or cry in confronting the preceding statement from a professor of theology at a Catholic university. “...*Jews do not seek to... prevent non-Jewish Christians from exercising their faith. They only refuse to become Christians themselves...*”

In truth, the rabbinic legal authorities of Orthodox Judaism decree that the worship of Jesus Christ as the Second Person of the Blessed Trinity constitutes nothing less than idol worship (“*avodah zarah*”). [28]

[28] Cf. *Mishneh Torah,* Hilchot Avodat Kochavim 9:4; *Teshuvos Pri ha-Sadeh* 2:4 and *Igros Moshe,* Y.D. 3:129-6.

Idol worshippers are liable to the death penalty under the Talmudic “Noahide Laws.” [29]

[29] Babylonian Talmud, Sanhedrin 57a.

All of the inhabitants of the world are compelled to accept the Noahide Laws. If any non-Jew does not accept those laws he should be killed.

The preceding is the doctrine of Rabbi Moses Maimonides. [30]

[30] Cf. *Mishneh Torah:* Hilchot Melachim U’Milchamoteihem (“Laws of Kings and Wars”), Section 8, Halacha 10. This passage from “Hilchot Melachim” deals with battle captives, but in the course of elucidating those laws pertaining to captives, Maimonides is drawing on the larger corpus of laws having to do with non-Jews; i.e. the Seven Laws (of the Noahide). (Maimonides is specifically cited in this regard in Tosefot Yom Tov, Avot 3:14]. The call to execute all those “among the nations” (*goyim*) who do not accept the Noahide laws (not just those who are prisoners of war), is indubitably present in Hilchot Melachim 8:10. In the early 21st century, this killing may occur in Palestine, where the Israelis are supreme. In Europe and America Judaic executions of those who worship Jesus Christ as God, or refuse to submit to the Noahide laws, cannot take place at this time. This is due to the fact that Maimonides decreed that killings of obstreperous non-Jews can only occur in those places where “the hand of Israel is powerful over them.” In other words, where Judaic supremacy is complete. Cf. Hilchot Melachim 8:9.

Rabbinic authorities decree that a building (i.e. a church) set aside for actual (rather than feigned) worship of Jesus Christ is a house of *avodah zarah.* [31]

[31] Cf. Yayin Malchus, 234-237. Minchas Elazar 1:53-3. Yechaveh Da’as 4:45. Darchei Teshuvah 150:2. Tzitz Eliezer 14:91.

In traditional Orthodox Judaism, Western civilization is both *malkhut zadon* (“the empire of insolence”) [32]

[32] The Judaic who undertakes the virtue of harming western civilization earns the honorific, *makhnia' zedim* ("he who degrades the insolent").

and "*kochi ve'otzem yadi of Edom,*" ("the wicked progeny of Esau"). The Talmudists have sacred festivals and curses that are aimed at precipitating the ritual downfall of the gentile nations. One such festival is the rabbinic holy day known as the Ninth of Av (*Tisha B'Av*). [33]

[33] Cf. *Judaism Discovered,* pp. 653-656.

According to a textbook authored by Rabbi Saadya Grama, "Jewish success in the world is completely contingent upon the failure of other peoples. Jews experience good fortune only when gentiles experience catastrophe... The difference between Jews and gentiles is not historical or cultural, but rather genetic and unalterable." [34]

[34] *Romemut Yisrael Ufarashat Hagalut* ("Israel's Supremacy and the Question of Exile"; Lakewood, New Jersey, 2003).

Rabbi Grama is a distinguished alumnus of the prestigious Beth Medrash Govoha "Lakewood Yeshiva." Grama's book *Romemut Yisrael Ufarashat Hagalut* carries the endorsements of the most revered religious leaders

of the yeshiva, including the *rosh yeshiva* (head of the school), Rabbi Aryeh Malkiel Kotler.

The rabbinic gentile-murder-manual *Torat Ha'Melech* ("The King's Torah"), is a guidebook of 230 pages on the religious laws concerning the killing of non-Jews. According to the book's co-author, Rabbi Yitzhak Shapira, "Non-Jews are uncompassionate by nature," and should be killed in order to "curb their evil inclinations... If we kill a gentile who has violated one of the seven commandments there is nothing wrong with the murder," Shapira declared.

"Citing rabbinic law as his source he stated: "There is justification for killing the babies of the *goyim* if it is clear that they will grow up to harm us, and in such a situation they may be harmed deliberately, and not only during combat with adults."

Shapira is the head of the Israeli Od Yosef Chai *yeshiva* (rabbinic school). According to journalist Max Blumenthal: "Od Yosef Chai has raked in nearly fifty thousand dollars from the Israeli Ministry of Social Affairs since 2007, while the Ministry of Education has pumped over $250,000 dollars into the yeshiva's coffers between 2006 and 2007. The yeshiva has also benefited handsomely from donations from a tax-exempt American non-profit called the Central Fund of Israel. Located inside the Marcus Brothers Textiles store in midtown Manhattan...

"…Shapira counts Israel's leading fundamentalist rabbis among his supporters. His most well-known backer is Dov Lior, the leader of the Shavei-Hevron yeshiva at Kiryat Arba, a radical Jewish settlement near the occupied Palestinian city of Hebron and a hotbed of Jewish terrorism.

"Lior has vigorously endorsed *Torat Ha'Melech,* calling it 'very relevant, especially in this time.' Lior's enthusiasm for Shapira's tract stems from his own eliminationist attitude toward non-Jews. For example, while Lior served as the Israeli military's top rabbi, he instructed soldiers:

'There is no such thing as civilians in wartime… A thousand non-Jewish lives are not worth a Jew's fingernail!'

"…Besides Lior, *Torat Ha'Melech* has earned support from another nationally prominent fundamentalist rabbi: Yaakov Yosef. Yosef is the leader of the Hazon Yaakov Yeshiva in Jerusalem and a former member of Knesset (the Israeli parliament). Perhaps more significantly, he is the son of Ovadiah Yosef, the former chief rabbi of Israel and spiritual leader of the Shas Party that forms a key segment of Netanyahu's governing coalition. Yaakov Yosef has brought his influence to bear in defense of *Torat Ha'Melech,* insisting at the August 18 (2010) convention in Jerusalem that the book was no different than the *Hagadah* that all Jews read from on the holiday of Passover." [35]

[35] Blumenthal, "How to Kill Goyim and Influence People: Leading Israeli Rabbis Defend Manual for For Killing Non-Jews" (Aug. 31, 2010). http://maxblumenthal.com/2010/08/how-to-kill-goyim-and-influence-people-leading-israeli-rabbis-defend-manual-for-for-killing-non-jews/

Until the Renaissance, rabbinic Judaism was considered the enemy of Western Christian Civilization for the most fundamental reason of all, it was guilty of implacable hatred toward Jesus Christ, the founder of that civilization. This hatred manifests as lies about Him, His mother and His followers. These lies were considered so malignant that our civilization deemed them blasphemy.

At the dogmatic Fourth Lateran Council of 1215, Pope Innocent III issued the following binding decrees upon Catholics:

Canon 68: "[Jews] are not afraid to mock the Christians who maintain the memory of the most holy Passion (of Jesus Christ). This, however, we forbid most severely, that any one should presume at all to break forth in insult to the Redeemer. And since we ought not to ignore any insult to Him who blotted out our disgraceful deeds, we command that such impudent fellows be checked by the secular princes by imposing on them proper punishment so that they shall not at all presume to blaspheme Him who was crucified for us."

Canon 69: “Since it is absurd that a blasphemer of Christ exercise authority over Christians, we, due to the boldness of these transgressors, renew in this general council what the Synod of Toledo wisely enacted in this matter: we prohibit Jews from occupying positions of public office.”

The Talmudists will be enemies of the West, and the canons of Innocent III will be valid and in force, for as long as the adherents of rabbinic Judaism ceremonially curse Jesus Christ, His Blessed Mother and the “*min*.” How could it be otherwise? How could it be said they don’t wish us, or Christianity harm?

[Neoplatonic-Hermetic Kabbalism in the Modern Era Page 577]

This is not a complex issue. Yet the willful blindness concerning this uncomfortable truth is often overwhelming.

Babylonian Talmud tractate Shabbat 116a orders that the New Testament be burned. The rabbinic rite of cursing Christians is now well-documented. Judaism from its Pharisaic beginnings is replete with hate speech, superstitiously charged curses, gematria [36] and evil eye looks. Nonconformists in Orthodox Judaism are subject to the *cherem* curse of excommunication, wherein a rabbi holds a Torah scroll illuminated by candles that are then blown out, accompanied by blasts from a shofar and the pronouncement of a lengthy list of curses targeted at the nonconformist.

Certain Israeli rabbis such as Rabbi Yosef Dayan from the West Bank settlement of Psagot take credit for placing the *pulsa d’nura* (“whip of fire”) death curse on Israeli Prime Ministers Yitzhak Rabin in 1995 (because he sought peace with the Palestinians), and on Ariel Sharon in 2005 (for expelling “settlers” from the Gaza Strip).

The curse against Sharon was carried out at the grave of the Zionist terrorist Shlomo Ben Yosef, who was executed in the 1930s during the British Mandate, for atrocities that included shooting at a bus carrying Arab civilians. Rabin died from a bullet fired by a Talmud student. Sharon fell into a coma from which he never awakened.

In 1988, in the course of laying the cornerstone of the state-sponsored synagogue disguised as the “US Holocaust Memorial Museum,” President Ronald Reagan, acting as the dummy of his ventriloquist “speech writer” John Mordechai Podhoretz, gave the keynote address in which he predicted that long after our western civilization had fallen, the “Jewish people would survive to “cast their blessings.” [37]

---

[36] Rabbinic Judaism teaches that the meaning of the Bible is to be found in the interpretation of letters, words and combinations of words having a numerical value that conveys secret meanings. This *gematria* is a superstition worthy of the soothsayers of Babylon, not the Israel of God.

[37] Reagan's spiel constitutes an over-the-top muttering of *meshugganah* megalomania on behalf of the Zionists. It was spoken by a man who has been enshrined by the Right-wing as one of our most celebrated Conservative exemplars. As of this writing his 12-minute oration can be viewed online: https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=CoA83ZREL_U

Mr. Podhoretz must have had a hearty laugh at the words his presidential mannequin mouthed and the *goyim* in

attendance applauded, because in the heads-is-tails world of the Talmudic religion, one of the most prominent of these "blessings" is in fact a curse, as we demonstrated in chapter eight. The *halachic* authority "Rambam," (Maimonides) wrote: "In the days of Rabban Gamaliel, the *minim* became numerous in Israel and they caused trouble for the Jews, seducing them to turn away from God. When they saw that this was more significant than any other human need, Rabban Gamaliel and his court acted and established an additional blessing that would include a petition before God to make the *minim* perish. He established it in the *amidah* so that it would be set in everyone's mouths. Consequently, the number of blessings in the *amidah* is nineteen." [38]

[38] *Mishneh Torah,* Hilkhot Tefillah Unesi'at Kapayyim 2:1.

This is a reference to the *Amidah* "prayers of benediction," the *birkat haminim,* which, as we have seen, contains the murderous, ritual curse on the Christians (i.e. the "*minim*"), a curse which has echoed perpetually down the corridors of time since at least the days of Rabbi Gamaliel, when it was enacted at the rabbinic academy of Yavneh (known in Greek as the academy of "Jamnia"), in the late first century A.D.[39]

[39] This is a reference to Rabban Gamliel II, who is reputed to have survived the destruction of the Temple in 70 A.D.

Dr. Lamont of the Catholic *Homiletic and Pastoral Review* seems to be unaware that Orthodox, Talmud-faithful (*frum*) Judaic persons have had a large role in harassing and extruding Arab-Christians in Palestine; or that Bolsheviks raised in Talmudic homes in Russia were in the forefront of the leadership of Lenin and Stalin's holocaust against Orthodox Christianity in the U.S.S.R. Sever Plocker, writing for the Israeli "Ynetnews" agency in 2006 states:

"Almost 90 years ago, between the 19th and 20th of December 1917, in the midst of the Bolshevik revolution and civil war, Lenin signed a decree calling for the establishment of The All-Russian Extraordinary Commission for Combating Counter-Revolution and Sabotage, also known as Cheka. Within a short period of time, Cheka became the largest and cruelest state security organization. Its organizational structure was changed every few years, as were its names: From Cheka to GPU, later to NKVD, and later to KGB. We cannot know with certainty the number of deaths Cheka was responsible for in its various manifestations, but the number is surely at least 20 million, including victims of the forced collectivization, the hunger, large purges, expulsions, banishments, executions, and mass death at Gulags. Whole population strata were eliminated: independent farmers, ethnic minorities, members of the bourgeoisie, senior officers, intellectuals, artists... Lenin, Stalin, and their successors could not have carried out their deeds without wide-scale cooperation of disciplined 'terror officials,' cruel interrogators, snitches, executioners, guards, judges, perverts, and many bleeding hearts who were members of the progressive Western Left and were deceived by the Soviet regime of horror and even provided it with a kosher certificate... And us, the Jews? An Israeli student finishes high school without ever hearing the name Genrikh Yagoda,' the greatest Jewish murderer of the 20th Century, the GPU's deputy commander and the founder and commander of the NKVD. Yagoda diligently implemented Stalin's collectivization orders and is responsible for the deaths of at least ten million people. His Jewish deputies established and managed the Gulag system. After Stalin no longer viewed him favorably, Yagoda was demoted and executed, and was replaced as chief hangman in 1936 by Yezhov, the 'bloodthirsty dwarf.' Yezhov was not Jewish but was blessed with an active Jewish wife.

"In his Book *Stalin: Court of the Red Star,* Jewish historian Sebag Montefiore writes that during the darkest period of terror, when the Communist killing machine worked in full force, Stalin was surrounded by beautiful, young Jewish women. Stalin's close associates and loyalists included members of the Central Committee, and Politburo (member) Lazar Kaganovich... Many Jews sold their soul to the devil of the Communist revolution and have blood on their hands for eternity... Leonid Reichman, head of the NKVD's special department and the organization's chief interrogator... was a particularly cruel sadist. In 1934, according to published statistics, 38.5 percent of those holding the most senior posts in the Soviet security apparatuses were of Jewish origin... Turns out that Jews too, when they become captivated by messianic ideology, can become great murderers, among the greatest known by modern history. The Jews active in official communist terror apparatuses (in the Soviet Union and abroad) and who at times led them, did not do this, obviously, as Jews, but rather, as Stalinists, communists, and 'Soviet people.' Therefore, we find it easy to ignore their origin and 'play dumb.' What do we have to do with them? But let's not forget them.

"My own view is different. I find it unacceptable that a person will be considered a member of the Jewish people when he does great things, but not considered part of our people when he does amazingly despicable things. Even if we deny it, we cannot escape the Jewishness of 'our hangmen,' who served the Red Terror with loyalty and dedication from its establishment." [40]

[40] Sever Plocker, "Stalin's Jews: We mustn't forget that some of the greatest murderers of modern times were Jewish." https://www.ynetnews.com/articles/0,7340,L-3342999,00.html December 21, 2006.

Can Prof. Lamont actually expect us to believe that very few of these Judaic-Communist killers of Christians developed their detestation for Christians from having been raised, as was often the case, in a Talmudic religious environment seething with hostility toward the followers of Jesus in Russia?

Talmudic Judaism is implacably opposed to Christianity. Where is there any proof or evidence that anything has changed since the time of St. Paul? By the example of Jesus Christ and Paul, every Christian has the right *and the warrant* to speak to the leaders of Judaism as they did. Situation ethicists pretend that time has changed the truth, or that those who follow the Talmud-religion are not currently the heirs of the religion of Pharisaic Judaism that gave birth to the Talmud.

Rabbinic Judaism poses as "the religion of the prophets." This is the motto of the "liberal progressive 'peace' rabbis" such as Michael Lerner of *Tikkun* magazine. This is a lie. Judaism is not the religion of the prophets. According to Jesus, *Judaism is the killer of the prophets.* Yahweh (YHVH), the God of the Prophets, is not the deity of Judaism. Judaism's god is in the lower case, a devil-idol, the spirit that entered Judas (John 13:27).

If one were to ask this writer to distill all that we know about Judaism's object of worship to one sentence, we would reply as follows: the god of Judaism is their own self-pride. This self-pride is the idol at the core of rabbinic propitiation. "For the true Deity of the Jews is not Yahweh, but the Jewish people itself." (Miguel de Unamuno). Everything in Judaism exists for the Judaic ego and for it alone. God has nothing to do with it.

According to Maimonides, any gentile religion is illicit; the only alternatives for gentiles are conversion to Judaism or observance of the rabbinic "Noahide Laws," which by definition exclude any gentile religion. [41]

[41] Cf. *Hilkhot Melakhim* 10: 9; R. Zvi Hirsch Chajes, *Kol Sifrei Maharatz Chajes* (Jerusalem, 1958), vol. 2 p. 1036; Moshe Feinstein, *Iggerot Moshe* (New York, 1973), Yoreh Deah II, p. 9.

The fifteenth century Spanish-Judaic Talmudist, Rabbi Isaac Abravenel asserted that God will wipe out the Christians for their "transgression" of attributing corporeality to God. Abarbanel further decreed that Christianity was more wicked than the paganism of savages. [42]

[42] David Berger, "Al Tadmitam shel ha-Goyim ba-Sifrut ha-Pulmusit ha-Ashkenazit," in *Yehudim mul ha-Tselav,* p. 90.

In the *Avodat Kochavim,* Rabbi Maimonides declares a divine mandate to kill the "wicked" Jesus Christ, all Jews who follow Jesus and all those who do not follow the Talmud: "It is a *mitzvah* (religious duty highly pleasing to God), to destroy Jewish traitors, *minim,* and *apikorsim,* and to cause them to descend to the pit of destruction, since they cause difficulty to the Jews and sway the people away from God, as did Jesus of Nazareth and his students, and Tzadok, Baithos, and their students. May the name of the wicked rot."

Catholic Professor Lamont:

"...the *Talmud* is an attempt to preserve the beliefs and practices of the scribes and Pharisees of the latter part of the Second Temple era (the era from 530 B.C. to 70 A.D., when the second Jewish Temple was in existence). It contains some inaccuracies and expansions of these beliefs and practices, but not enough to constitute Rabbinic Judaism as a new religion, or even as a substantially new form of an older religion."

In other words, according to this Catholic professor, the religion of the Pharisees was the religion of the Old Testament, and Jesus' statements concerning their teachings being not of God, but of man, and nullifying the Word of God, are wrong. Judaism's Babylonian Mishnah and Gemara contradict the Old Testament many thousands of times. Those seminal rabbinic texts even nullify God's sabbatical year with *prozbul* contracts still being issued in the twenty-first century. Rabbi Jacob Neusner: "We have already seen substantial evidence that any notion of Pharisaism (or later rabbinic Judaism) as the true and direct descendants of the Old Testament is contradicted by one Mishnah-tractate after another. These stand wholly separate from the Priestly Code... and generally contradict it!"[43]

[43] Neusner, A *History of the Mishnaic Law of Purities* (1974), p. 7.

Prof. Lamont: "The Talmud permits Jews to behave immorally towards Gentiles.*'* This claim is supported by quoting a number of Talmudic texts as, for example, a text that says that even the best of the Gentiles should be killed. These texts are, however, taken out of context, and their use reflects a misunderstanding of the way that the Talmud works... The nature of Talmudic discussions means that, in practice, rabbis are not trained simply by study of the *Talmud,* because such study on its own is too difficult. Instead, they study the standard legal codes and commentaries on the *Talmud* (principally those of Maimonides, Rashi, and Joseph Karo), which give an organized presentation of the conclusions of Talmudic discussions. None of these codes and commentaries make the immoral assertions that are ascribed to the *Talmud,* and no Rabbinic Jew is free to disagree with their consensus."

Lamont alleges that in the texts of Maimonides, Rashi and Joseph Karo there are none of the immoral assertions found in the Talmud! Either Lamont has read all of the thousands of pages written by these three and *doesn't know what he's read,* or he is relying on someone else he does not name for his *demonstrably false statement.* The texts of Maimonides and Karo are replete with numerous "immoral assertions." Has Lamont read the uncensored *Mishneh Torah* of Moses Maimonides where Maimonides states that Jesus and His

followers should be destroyed? Has he read the uncensored, Shlomo Pines translation of Maimonides' volumes, *Guide of the Perplexed,* in which the rabbi states that Black people are sub-human?

Lamont's thesis is that if you're a gentile or a Christian, Judaism is not interested in harming or dominating you. Yet, as we have already noted, Maimonides decreed, "All of the inhabitants of the world are compelled to accept the Noahide laws. If any non-Jew does not accept these laws he should be killed."[44]

[44] Maimonides, *Mishneh Torah: Hilchot Melachim U'Milchamoteihem* ("Laws of Kings and Wars"), Section 8, Halacha 10.

As for Karo, he upheld one of the most notorious *halakhot* in all of the Talmud Bavli: the permission for a woman to have sex with a boy under the age of nine (Sanhedrin 69b), even if she is the boy's mother. In the *Shulchan Aruch,* Karo decrees that the original ruling by the ancient Pharisee Hillel, that the incestuous molesting mother was nonetheless still eligible to marry a Jewish priest, was valid.

Catholic Prof. Lamont: "...The accusation that the *Talmud* was immoral and anti-Christian, through and through, originated largely with Jewish converts to Christianity of this period, such as Nicholas Donin. One may guess that these converts were influenced in these accusations by a reaction against their former religious position, and by feeling a need to prove their loyalty to Christianity."

Prof. Lamont assumes the best about obstinate Judaics who reject Jesus, but is willing to "guess" that the motives and truthfulness of heroic Judaic converts to Catholicism were motivated by other than honorable motives.

How dare he calumniate Donin on no evidence, and speculate, Freudian-like, on his supposed ulterior motives? The converts who testified that the Talmud was thoroughly immoral and anti-Christian were not doing so truthfully, Lamont asserts, but, "one may guess" they prevaricated "to prove their loyalty to Christianity."

It should not surprise us that these aspersions on Donin, the Catholic convert from Judaism, originate with the rabbis who he defeated in debate. Is it necessary to say anything more about the historical perspicacity of this accredited authority of the Latin Mass Society?

Catholic Prof. Lamont: "The inaccuracy of these accusations made them ineffective for missionary purposes, which, in turn, led to Catholic theologians making a thorough study of the *Talmud*."

The only ones who charged Donin with "inaccuracy" were his rabbinic adversaries. Medieval Catholic authorities did not. Lamont takes the word of the rabbis over the medieval Catholic authorities.

Catholic Prof. Lamont: "A commission of Jews approached the Council (of Trent) to request that it rule that the *Talmud* could be printed. The Council passed their request on to the Congregation for the Index, which again ruled that it could be printed if any anti-Christian statements were removed. This evaluation of the *Talmud* was more positive than that given to the works of Luther, Calvin, Peter Abelard's *Introduction to Theology,* and Samuel Richardson's *Pamela*—all of which were banned in their entirety by the Church..."

We have no argument with the preceding correct observation by Prof. Lamont, which points out that the Renaissance Church of Rome censored

Luther and Calvin completely (“were banned in their entirety”), while leaving the Talmud of Babylon nearly intact. This approach is mirrored in “traditional Catholic” chapels as of this writing, where priests routinely sermonize on the pitfalls of Protestantism, while hardly daring to utter a word of disapprobation for the Talmud or the religion established upon it.

Catholic Prof. Lamont: “Rabbinic Judaism preserved much of the atmosphere and beliefs of the world of religious thought in which Christ and the apostles lived. These beliefs were often accepted as divinely revealed by Christ, and the authors of the New Testament books and, hence, it is true that Rabbinic Judaism contains elements that are of divine origin. A study of Rabbinic Judaism can, thus, illuminate, although not add to, the revealed deposit of faith that originates in Christ; this has been shown in detail through scholarly studies of the New Testament.” (End quote from Dr. John Lamont).

[Neoplatonic-Hermetic Kabbalism in the Modern Era Page 585]

These giddy assertions are all too similar to Amy-Jill Levine’s dreary opus, *The Misunderstood Jew: The Church and the Scandal of the Jewish Jesus,* an exegesis predicated on liberal rabbinic fantasies regarding the New Testament. It seems to this writer that Dr. Lamont, traditional Catholicism’s Talmud-explainer, may have proceeded *a priori* to absolve Talmudic Judaism of its Satanic malevolence toward Christ’s true Catholic Church, and then cherry-picked a few supposed “facts” to suit his purpose, for which he has gained plaudits from many corners of the “Conservative” and “traditional Catholic” world. [45]

[45] No accusation of wrong-doing is here leveled at Professor John Lamont. His blunders, though most regrettable, are surely not deliberate; nor are they malicious.

Amid the hand-clapping, we hope we won’t be faulted for hearing, if ever so faintly, the screams of the Christian children ritually murdered by members of the religion of Judaism, as documented by Israeli Prof. Ariel Toaff, son of the late chief rabbi of Rome, in the uncensored first edition of his 2007 masterpiece, *Pasque di Sangue* (“Blood Passover”), [46]

[46] http://bloodpassover.com/xbp.pdf

wherein he fully upholds the testimony of Catholic witnesses concerning the torture-execution of two-year old St. Simon of Trent, and other Catholic children killed by Ashkenazic persons.

We can rest assured that all is well, however. The principal from the Latin Mass Society of England and Wales with whom we corresponded in March, 2016, stated that the “position paper” his group was advancing concerning the non-malevolence of rabbinic Judaism toward Christianity, cannot be rejected by any reasonable person:

"The paper relies on the scholarship referred to in the footnotes. This is current and respectable; we don't expect everyone to agree, but we do expect reasonable people to accept that the position the paper takes is itself reasonable."

George Bernard Shaw observed that "all progress depends upon the unreasonable man." In the context of the low quality of the material being presented as unassailably "reasonable" scholarship, we will take Bernard Shaw's position.

On July 29, 2016 Dr. Lamont published another troubling essay, "The Catholic Church and the Conversion of the Jews,"

which appeared on a "traditional Catholic" website, OnePeterFive.com.[47]

[47] OnePeterFive.com describes itself as "Rebuilding Catholic Culture. Restoring Catholic Tradition."

In this study, Lamont proposes the theory that the expulsion of Talmud-believers from Christian lands was mainly the result of the ascent of the theology of the antinomian Duns Scotus and the Nominalist school. Lamont asserts that Aquinas was hostile to the expulsions in all cases. Yet, the theological basis for expulsion, in some grave cases of national crisis, of unconverted Judaics, does not derive its justification from Duns Scotus. It is Biblical and truly Catholic: separation, by extrusion, of a racist, Antichrist group of people who might otherwise gain malevolent ascendance over Christians and *goyim.* This separation was *prescribed* in Canons 68 and 69 of the Fourth Lateran Council.

Moreover, in "The Catholic Church and the Conversion of the Jews," Prof. Lamont equates the masonic-secular Enlightenment with Jew-hate, rather than with the enormous advancement of the power and influence of anti-Christian Judaics. His most egregious oversight is found in the course of his argument decrying (quite rightly) racial animus against Judaics even when they converted to Christ. A key datum that he overlooks however, is that Catholic conspirators who advanced the prestige of the Babylonian Talmud inside the Church launched savage, racist attacks on Judaic converts to Catholicism who dared to reveal the evil of the Talmud. We saw this with Nicholas Donin, and even more so in the vile, racist campaign against the Judaic convert Johann Pfefferkorn by "progressive" Catholic forces heavily invested in the rehabilitation of the Talmud. Dr. Lamont is oblivious.[48]

[48] In December, 2016, Dr. Lamont lent his pen in support of the "Conservative Catholic" campaign of the four cardinals (Brandmüller, Burke, Caffarra and Meisner)

who questioned the Apostolic Exhortation, *Amoris laetitia,* of Pope Francis: cf. https://rorate-caeli.blogspot.com/2016/12/article-considerations-on-dubia-of-four.html

Tridentine Judaism is not confined to the Una Voce and the Latin Mass Society of England and Wales. Other groups, such as the Society of St. Pius X (SSPX) publish Judaizing absurdities consonant with the Neoplatonic-Hermetic gnosis and John-Paul II/Benedict XVI theology. In the SSPX article “Saint of the Sanhedrin,” [49] Hillel, who concocted methods for nullifying the Old Testament, including the *prozbul* to nullify the aforementioned sabbatical law on cancellation of debt, and who condoned sexual molestation of boys under the age of nine, is lauded as “an instrument of heaven.”

To this heavenly accolade is added highly speculative conjecture which the SSPX published in *The Angelus* asserting the fundamental benevolence of Phariseeism concerning the patrimony of Simeon as conveyed by Gamaliel to Saul of Tarsus. This leaves the SSPX in the awkward predicament of having to explain how it was that Saul mercilessly persecuted Christians and may have had a hand in the murder of St. Stephen, when he had been taught such exemplary Pharisee ethics as a youth. The origin of the legend about Simeon being the son of Hillel, though ascribed to various Church Fathers, is actually derived from a rabbinic source, the *Pirke Avoth.* The SSPX essay in their *Angelus* magazine imagines that St. Paul was taught the Gemara (the second section of the Talmud) when he was fifteen years of age. The Gemara, however, would not be written for at least another two centurias after Paul.

In “Saint of the Sanhedrin,” the “traditional Catholic” *Angelus* presents rabbinic delusions as fact and promotes the Pharisee Hillel as a virtual holy man of God. The great confusion among “traditional” Catholics concerning Judaism is only exacerbated by this type of Judaizing coming from an official organ of the leading “traditional Catholic priestly fraternity.”

The objective of the major “traditional Catholic” organizations is to secure the growth of the Tridentine Latin Mass and all other pre-Vatican Council II rites and rituals, bells, incense, lace, processions and the whole panoply of old ceremonies. They imagine that an ingenious strategy for ensuring the success of this objective, which has Christ’s gospel hollowed out of it in true Renaissance fashion, is to offer one or more compromises on the “small matter” of Judaism; the gospel truth on that subject being considered a distant second to having the Latin ceremonies permanently reinstated.

[49] *The Angelus,* December, 2009, pp. 29-34.

A Supremely Talmudic Supreme Court Justice

Antonin Scalia, was a much-admired and extolled "traditional Catholic" as well as Associate Justice of the United States Supreme Court. If it appears that we take joy in the sad task of debunking his record, we do not; neither do we shrink from it, however, in deference to anyone's illusions. The process of deprogramming, i.e. *disenchanting* the previously enchanted is almost always painful. [50]

[50] "Enchantment" is a word derived from late Middle English, denoting "under a spell" and "deluded." To term something "enchanting" or as offering "enchantment" is considered a high accolade in our world. The vocation of the disenchanter is a lonely one. Yet, to attempt to behold things as they are one must dispel enchantment.

"Traditional Catholics" and alleged "Conservative" Protestants offered up extravagant accolades for the late Supreme Court Justice Antonin Scalia, who passed away at age 79 on February 13, 2016. Justice Scalia, an adherent of the old Latin Tridentine Mass, was the son of Sicilian immigrants. Through hard work and a high IQ, he rose to the top of the judiciary in America. He and his wife had nine children. He was said to be an opponent of abortion, ilegal immigration and some aspects of gun control. Legend has it that he was a proponent of a strict construction (interpretation) of the Constitution as it was originally written.

The preceding curriculum vitae is attractive indeed, and if we were fixated on symptoms, surface appearances and situation ethics we too would join the fanfare for the judge. Alas, we cannot. Perhaps Mr. Scalia's enthusiasts don't discern as we do the power of an evil in this world that emanates directly from the Crucifixion of Jesus Christ on Calvary. Perhaps they do not suffer as we do from that power. The *ideology* that wrought that evil is alive and more virulent than ever.

It is an ideology, *not a race.* The racial heirs to the evil have long since been dispersed to the four corners of the earth and throughout mankind. We can no more genetically determine who is a descendant of the Pharisees of A.D. 33 than we can identify a descendant of the Caesars. The infamous statement, "Let his blood be on us and our children" refers to a few generations of Jews in the first century, not to the Khazars and mixed multitude who masquerade as Jews today. Yes, of course, there are still authentic racial Judeans ("Jews") on earth, but in general we know them not.

The virus of the mind that killed Jesus Christ can, however, be readily identified. It is a spiritual force that radiates from within Orthodox Judaism and *its Kabbalistic offshoots.* Among Republicans, conservative Protestants and "traditional Catholics" there is alarm over the supposed "imminent threat of the imposition of Islamic Sharia law on America" Meanwhile, there is little evidence of awareness that Talmudic *halacha* (rabbinic law) has already been imposed on the United States; *a grievous transgression against the Gospel of Christ which the late Justice Scalia aided and abetted,* as his numerous activities on behalf of Talmudic training for American lawyers and his own statements testify, such as his March 9, 2001 letter written on Supreme Court stationery, to Rabbi Noson Gurary of the Chabad Lubavitch sect of Christ-haters.

It was perhaps not a coincidence that Scalia wrote his letter to Gurary on Purim, the rabbinic festival of revenge against gentiles, which was marked in 2001 on March 9 (14th of Adar 5761). In his letter he recommends Marshal Breger, vice-chairman of the extremist Neocon, war-Zionist Jewish Policy Center, and a teacher of Talmudic *halacha* at the Catholic University of America, in helping Rabbi Gurary discover "what works" in disseminating "Jewish law" at the University of Buffalo.

These facts are public knowledge, as an informed reading of Scalia's dissent in the Supreme Court's Caperton v. A.T. Massey Coal ruling, will show. There he refers to the "Babylonian Talmud" as a "divinely inspired text." The Talmud-ignorant will argue that Scalia is referring not to the Talmud but to "Scripture" as divinely-inspired. We are however, in the precarious realm of rabbinic word play here and scholars would do well to carefully scrutinize their terms.

The Talmud tractate cited by Justice Scalia, Aboth, is referring to *rabbinic* scripture, which is the Mishnah, chapter V, *not* the Bible. When we examine Mishnah Aboth 5:21, the verse that precedes Mishnah Aboth 5:22, we see that it contains a reference to the *primacy of the Mishnah as scripture.* Hence, the text that advises one to "turn over and over" is not in fact "with respect" to Old Testament "Scripture."

The context of the rabbinic quotation which Justice Scalia employs is a reference to "turning over and over" the Mishnah, a sacred *rabbinic* scripture of supreme authority in Judaism.

Scalia's claim to fame among Conservatives is that he was a "strict constructionist." Yet Scalia championed the bane of our American court system—the *making of law not by the legislature, but by judicial decision—which is the fundamental principle of the law-making ideology of rabbinic halacha.* This is Judaism 101, and it is almost impossible that a lawyer of Scalia's erudition and intellectual gifts would be unaware of it. How was the abominable crime of conferring "marriage" upon sexually active homosexuals made the law of the land?

It was accomplished by a Supreme Court engaged in *legislating through judicial decision—which* happens to be *the foundation of the Talmudic method of law-making.* Justice Scalia consistently failed in his duty to alert the American people to the rotten rabbinic root of a judicial process that rendered "gay" marriage the law of the land. He did not support the "gay" rights law itself, only the rabbinic legal philosophy that made it possible, which is a distinction without a difference.

Justice Scalia approved and participated in the training of a generation of American lawyers in the *halacha* of legislating through judicial decision. No aspect of Sharia law has had any impact on America anywhere near comparable to the impact of *halachic* law on our nation. Mr. Scalia's vast fan club howl their outrage at "gay" marriage, to zero effect. They battle the dragon's fire but leave the dragon intact, as did their darling, when he voted against legalizing the marriage of sodomites *while refusing to reveal the* halachic *modus operandi that effected it.*

He was not only guilty of cooperating with rabbinic *halacha* and the Babylonian Talmud, Justice Scalia, like many of Rome's intellectuals who are concerned with this issue, was an active participant in burnishing the reputation of those dark doctrines and spreading their diabolical influence. He openly worked for what his handlers termed the rise of "Synagogue and State."

This "traditional Catholic" Latin Mass worshipper and supposed "great friend of the Republic" *directly assisted with the Talmudic training program for future lawyers* at numerous Talmudic institutes, such as the Benjamin N. Cardozo School of Law, which is part of the Talmudic Yeshiva University in New York. On November 6, 2013, at the "Synagogue and State" conference at Yeshiva University's Zahava and Moshael Straus Center, Rabbi Dr. Meir Soloveichik, director of the Straus Center, introduced Justice Scalia, along with Yeshiva alumnus Nathan Lewin, "whose extraordinary legal career is a source of great pride to our University." *Scalia and Lewin then proceeded to laud Talmudic* halacha *as a system of justice for America.*

Scalia's close friend and Talmudic crony, Nathan Lewin, served as the attorney for AgriProcessors, allegedly one of the worst and most inhumane kosher slaughterhouses in the nation. Lewin is on record advocating that the *families* of Palestinian suicide bombers should be executed. In 1994, in the case of Board of Education of Kiryas Joel Village School District v. Grumet, Lewin argued before the high court for the creation of a school district based on the boundaries of the Satmar (Hasidic) synagogue-community. Justice Scalia also believed that Talmudic synagogue-schools should have taxpayer support. He wrote a passionate defense of his vote in favor of the taxpayer subsidy advocated by his pal, Lewin.

In 2009, Judge Scalia took an active part in advancing the Institute of American and Talmudic Law, chaired by Rabbi Shlomo Yaffe and Rabbi Noach Heber. The Institute operates under the auspices of the Chabad Lubavitch Hasidim, who place a heavy emphasis on the inculcation of the doctrines of the Kabbalah. Chabad-Lubavitch was founded by Rabbi Shneur Zalman. Its most revered text, after the Talmud and the *Zohar,* is Zalman's *Tanya,* which decrees that gentiles are "supernal refuse" and that Jesus Christ was a diabolic imposter.

At the Institute of American and Talmudic Law, Justice Scalia, the alleged "traditional Catholic" paladin of the movement to restore America and the Constitution, apologized to the three hundred assembled rabbis and other "dignitaries," over the fact that he had not managed to study a page *(Daf Yomi)* of the Talmud every day (which is strongly advised for Orthodox Judaic males). Scalia said, "I assume I'm here to talk about federal law because I must confess that my *Daf Yomi* attendance has been lackluster." His defenders say that he was only joking. Imagine the reaction if Scalia had participated in a daylong conference of German nationalists and "jokingly" apologized for not reading *Mein Kampf* daily.

[Page 592 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

The outcry would have been explosive and nearly ceaseless. But a "traditional Catholic" Supreme Court judge who fronts for the Talmudic infiltration of America' legal system, and grovels before hundreds of rabbis about his neglect of a demonic book, is no less a "great American" and a "devout traditional Catholic" for having done so? Here we glimpse the farce that is so-called Conservative and Traditional Catholicism. "Pragmatists" will say that we are setting too severe a standard; that Justice Scalia was loathed by the Left and many secular Zionists, and that, while not perfect, he did his best to slow the decay process sweeping the land. In return, they suggest that we should overlook the fact that he made common cause with the heart of evil. This argument reflects the moral pathology of the Right-wing: compromise with evil for the sake of some imaginary greater good.

Under color of his Catholicism and defiance of various *symptoms* of evil, Judge Scalia advanced the powerful Talmudic institutions which enlarge the stature and authority of *halachic* law over our nation and help to ensure its infiltration of our institutions. He also helped to burnish the reputation of Talmudic rabbis and their unholy Talmud in Catholic circles. No liberal could have accomplished this betrayal of our once Christian country so well as "Conservative" Antonin Scalia. If we are labeled "extremists" because we won't partake of these Faustian bargains, and wink at the profound confusion and misdirection sown by Justice Scalia, then we accept the designation.

Jesus would have us be either hot or cold. After a time the "pragmatism" which confers hero status upon Scalia begins to look a lot like a chain of retreat and compromise that spells defeat for Our Lord's commission to us that His Father's will "be done on earth as it is in heaven." A Right-wing that imagines that the Talmudic rabbis are our allies in the struggle for family values, or at most a subsidiary adversary far down the list of threats, has lost the battle before the first shot is fired. The more we mistake symptoms for causes, while shying away from the root of the iniquity that is tearing at the foundations of our civilization, the more we dig the graves of our children. A movement that has for its paradigm Justice Scalia's simulacrum of Christian Conservatism, will be lethally compromised by the self-sabotaging contradictions of a double-mind.

My Memories of Nino Scalia
The Most Jewish Gentile on the Supreme Court

By Nathan Lewin

When there was no Jewish justice on the Supreme Court, Antonin "Nino" Scalia told me, "I considered myself the Jewish justice." After Abe Fortas resigned in May 1969, there would be no Jewish justice on the court for nearly a quarter of a century, until President Bill Clinton named Ruth Bader Ginsburg to the court in 1993. Scalia had been on the Supreme Court since Ronald Reagan appointed him in 1986, so there were seven years during which Scalia saw himself as the court's guardian of Jewish heritage.

Scalia's admiration for Jews and Jewish learning explains the frequent references in his opinions to the Talmud and other Jewish sources, and the significant number of Orthodox Jewish law clerks he hired.

We were both in the Harvard Law School class that began in 1957 and graduated in 1960. Scalia and his wife were guests in our *sukkah.* He accepted my recommendations to attend and address Orthodox Jewish gatherings such as colloquia run by Chabad-Lubavitch, sessions and dinners with Agudath Israel of America, and a mass meeting at Yeshiva University where he and I discussed current issues of constitutional law and public policy.

There is universal agreement that Nino Scalia was brilliant, amazingly articulate and a real *mensch*... all must concur that he was a great man, that the United States he loved is greatly diminished by his loss, and that he greatly revered Jews and Jewish tradition.[51]

[51] Jewish Telegraph Agency, February 15, 2016.

Chapter XVI

The Breeders of Money
Gain Dominion over the Church of Rome

Our book, *Usury in Christendom: The Mortal Sin that Was and Now is Not*[1] is a history of the rise of the Money Power inside the Church and readers may wish to access it for the depth at which it attempts to explore the subject matter. It would be redundant to reprint substantial portions of it in this volume.[2]

In these pages we will summarize our thesis and present additional research that has come to light since our book was published. Let us commence our pursuit of that goal by surveying the actual teaching of St. Thomas Aquinas, who is often misrepresented by papist usury apologists and others, as having tolerated escape clauses in the Church's immemorial proscription against profit on loans.

Aquinas confronted the loophole which the money-lenders and their agents sought to implement to their advantage: theological relativism that renders usury evil only because it is prohibited (thus leaving the door open to a future time when it will not be forbidden by the Church and therefore not evil). Aquinas replied, in *De malo,* that usury is not sinful because it is forbidden, rather, it is forbidden because it is a grave sin, *secundum se.* Historian Christopher A. Franks elaborates on the Christian economics of Aquinas:

"(St.) Thomas's position on usury depends, not on a particular way of configuring money, but on the very notion of abstractable exchange value that any understanding of money presupposes. Thomas argues that abstracted exchange value as such cannot have a vendible use value in addition to the exchange value it abstracts. To believe that it does indicate that a spurious 'usefulness' humans

---

[1] Independent History and Research, 2013; paperback, 416 pages. The book's index is online at https://revisionistreview.blogspot.com.es/2012/10/book-usury-in-christendom-pre.html

[2] We believe that any comprehensive analysis of Christ's teaching on money must include a commentary on His "Parable of the Talents," and "Parable of the Unjust Steward" and the "Mammon of Unrighteousness." The misunderstanding of these discourses has been used to portray Our Redeemer as a usury advocate, or at the least an apologist; cf. *Usury in Christendom,* pp. 50-58.

can attribute to something has been mistaken for true use value. Further, Thomas goes on to consider other possible justifications for interest on a loan, and he faults them not for misconstruing the nature of money, but for presumptively seeking a security against the future that denies the deferent receptivity necessary to humans as members of an antecedent natural order that sustains us. Thus, we can see Thomas's adherence to the usury prohibition not as evidence of his obscurantism in the face of 'economic realities,' but as his resistance to the presumption inherent in emerging economic practices...

"Thomas's economic teachings reflect an assumption that justice in exchange depends on commensurating the terms of exchange with the shape of the provision God unfolds for human beings.

"When Thomas says, 'one man cannot overbound in external riches without another man lacking them,' we are tempted to read it as a mere pious assertion to shame the rich. But it is firmly rooted in Thomas's assumptions about how God provides for human beings through fruitfulness of nature... To make a claim to wealth that outstrips that provision, as usury does, is to produce injustice.

"...Thomas's centerpiece argument attacks the very notion of usury, but he supports it with other arguments about a variety of possible titles to interest. In both cases his arguments are meant to preserve justice by rejecting inordinate claims to wealth...

"Thomas's centerpiece argument does not hinge on an antiquated understanding of money. Thomas sees in the very notion of an abstracted exchange value the possibility of economic activity that obscures the primacy of use values...

"What all of Thomas's positions on titles to income from money show is an insistence that profit can only come from nature's goods, which always requires the patience and vulnerability that waits to see what nature offers. Thomas refuses the presumption against God's providence that would seek to secure a claim to wealth that outpaces that provision.

"...to contract a price for the use of money in addition to the principal is to sell a use that does not and cannot exist... Thomas's arguments, by uncovering the most basic

reason against usury (that it sells a metaphysical impossibility), confirm the rationale of the usury prohibition even in productive loans where the borrower is not needy. Thomas is concerned not only for charity, but for keeping all exchanges answerable to the contours of real wealth...

"The consumptibility argument is not meant to destroy all possible arguments for a return on one's money... The *lender at interest* presumes by staking a claim to wealth — possible future wealth — that is not disciplined by any receptivity to what God's providence may actually end up providing.

"The *investor* does not presume, but takes the risk of waiting to see what comes of it. He does not hold the title to the return of all his money, but rather makes himself vulnerable to the contingencies of how God's provision may or may not smile on the efforts of the merchant or craftsman to whom the money is entrusted...

"What if the borrower is an incompetent businessman, while the lender could quite reliably have turned a profit with his money somewhere else? This argument Thomas rejects, again because of its presumption. This is the notion of *lucrum cessans,* the notion that a lender has a title to compensation beyond the principal for forgoing the gain he might have otherwise made with his money... The reason Thomas finds it presumptive is that, unlike a risky investment, a loan involves a contract obliging the borrower in advance to compensate the lender for a potential gain the actual realization of which could only be determined by waiting to see... However reliable the alternative investment, it would involve vulnerability to the contingencies of the unfolding of God's provision, a vulnerability that *lucrum cessans* circumvents. To establish a title to such wealth irrespective of the actual possibilities and provisions the future may turn out to hold, is to set up an artificial invulnerability... One contemporary manifestation of this drive toward invulnerability is the imperative 'to convert wealth into debt in order to derive a permanent future income from it — to convert wealth that perishes, into debt that endures, debt that does not rot, costs nothing to maintain, and brings in perennial interest." [3]

[3] *He Became Poor: The Poverty of Christ and Aquinas's Economic Teachings,* pp. 71-83 (emphasis supplied.) In *He Became Poor* Prof. Franks refutes charges by John T. Noonan *(The Scholastic Analysis of Usury),* of discrepancies in the teachings of St. Thomas Aquinas on this subject.

Because of the penchant of the Church of Rome for word games, subterfuge and doubletalk, the strictest, clearest and best definition of the sin of usury as originally understood by the Biblically-based Early Church (not the Romans, Greeks or other pagan nations), is any loan in which more than the principal is returned to the lender. An elementary expression of this process is "money breeding money."

There is nothing inherently inaccurate with calling money gained by a lender from a borrower which exceeds the principal, *interest.* The *Oxford English Dictionary* defines interest as: "Money paid for the use of money lent (the principal).” *Webster’s Third International Dictionary* (1971), denotes it as: “the price paid for borrowing money.”

But to make black into white and papal usury not usury, games with words must be played, otherwise the stage magic cannot operate, and the situation ethic that made the mortal sin of usury not mortally sinful, cannot be made to vanish, and the papacy of the sixteenth and following centuries cannot be exonerated of the charge of incrementally rendering profit on loans not sinful.

The first two steps in this legerdemain entail exploiting confusion over the old Roman word *interesse,* and to impose the mantle of St. Thomas Aquinas on the scam. Before we furnish a textbook example, let us define the Roman empire’s *interesse:* “that which is between.” Specifically, “damages arising from a borrower’s default on the loan.”

When papist apologists conflate *interesse* with usury (interest), the Renaissance and post-Renaissance popes can be indemnified against the consequences of their gradual alteration of unalterable dogma. To work this deception, all of the usury-profit on loans which the papacy incrementally permitted, must be grouped under the category of “damage or loss caused by the lending of money.”

As a student of the Babylonian Talmud, this writer is reasonably familiar with the duplicitous lawyer’s mentality that pervades it, and which can be summarized as self-deception coupled with the attempt to overcome God Himself, a feat which the Talmud proclaims the rabbis managed to achieve, when, in tractate Bava Metzia 59b it is reported that God gladly admitted to them, “My sons have defeated me! My sons have defeated me!” [4]

This is the rabbinic egotism and insane pride that informed the mentality of the original Sanhedrin, and the latter-day Sanhedrin in the Vatican.[5]

---

[4] This brag about defeating God is not something Judaism is ashamed of, or even one that Talmudists always deny. England’s “Lord Rabbi Jonathan Sacks,” who is celebrated in the corporate media as a “liberal, humane, progressive of the highest moral rectitude,” announced that he positively loves this announcement that the rabbis have defeated God. In his review of Jonathan Rosen’s book *The Talmud and the Internet,* “Lord Sacks,” who was the Chief Rabbi of the United Hebrew Congregations of the Commonwealth of Britain, wrote: “Rosen loves, as do I, that extraordinary moment in the Talmud in which God is outvoted on a point of Jewish law and celebrates the fact that His children have defeated him. In the world of the rabbis, not only do men study the word of God; God studies the words of men.” *(The Guardian,* December 21, 2001). “The Oral Law is determined by majority rule; hence, the Sages can overrule not only Rabbi Eliezer but even God Himself.” —Rabbi Shlomo Riskin, “Halacha is not Decided in Heaven,” *The Jewish Week,* May 23, 2011. “God must submit to the decisions of a majority vote of the rabbis.”—BT Bava Metzia 59b.

[5] This is an example in the Talmud of Kabbalistic man-as-god mentality.

In studying the deceptions of the apologists for papal usury permissions, we are in the realm of lawyers who call themselves Catholic historians, economists, theologians, and so forth. Observe this sleight of hand: "…passages from the writings of St. Thomas Aquinas can serve as representative of the development of the definition of, and rationale for usury… St. Thomas explains: 'A lender may without sin enter an agreement with the borrower for compensation for the loss he incurs of something he ought to have, for this is not to sell the money but to avoid a loss." [6]

[6] Brian M. McCall, *The Church and the Usurers: Unprofitable Lending for the Modern Economy* (Ave Maria University, 2013), pp. 66 and 69.

Aquinas is being smeared as "representative of the development of the definition of, and rationale for usury," because he allowed for a charge to the borrower for a loan that was not repaid in the time specified. A borrower paying a reasonable fine of some type for refusing to repay a loan according to the time-frame mutually agreed upon when the loan commenced, is not the same as the mortal sin of renting money. It is a penalty for the sin of avarice on the part of the borrower, who can be as guilty of such a transgression as a lender. A good-hearted Catholic lender may wish to privilege Bob with a loan for a certain amount of time, and when the money loaned is returned on the schedule agreed upon, he may then wish to privilege Bill with the same, or a similar loan. If Bob withholds repayment then Bill does not have access to the loaned money in the time he needs it. It does not make St. Thomas Aquinas any kind of "developer" or "rationalizer" of usury because he clarified the point that a lender, like a borrower, has rights within the laws of Christian charity. It is outrageous that for the sake of rescuing the credibility of the Church of Rome's usury, the reputation of Aquinas is sullied.

The next step in the prestidigitation is to enlarge the categories of losses incurred by the lender for which he should be "compensated" under the category of interest. But perish the thought that this interest is profit for renting money. Certainly not. George Orwell would have loved it: don't call interest "profit"; call it "avoidance of loss":

"St. Raymond of Peñafort's explanation of interest and why it is permitted to be collected notwithstanding the prohibition of usury: Interest is never thought of as payment on a loan; it is the 'difference' to be made up to a party injured by the failure of another to execute his obligations. The common distinction is between *usura* and *interesse, id est non lucrum sed vitatio damni*' (which means is not profit but avoidance of loss’). Interest is purely compensatory. It is accidentally and extrinsically associated with a loan…’

“Two expressions of this right to damages (or interest) were *damnum emergens* [7] (damage emerging) and *lucrum cessans.* [8] These titles arose not as a right of payment on account of making a loan from the outset, but represented compensatory expectation damages due to the actual fault of the debtor.” [9]

Woe unto the lawyers who gathered and asked among themselves, how can we gain for the lender interest on a loan that will not appear to be usury? We will term it, “compensatory expectation damages due to the actual fault of the debtor,” and we will expand the definition to include loss of the use of the money loaned during the time the borrower possessed it, when it could have been invested in something more beneficial to the lender.

In addition to the aforementioned escape clauses, the Church of Rome in its “development of doctrine” (*dissolution of dogma* is the more candid term), hit on another loophole in charging for loans: the excuse that the loans were to the poor, from banks named Mountain of Compassion (*Monte di Pieta*), and the charges were not profits accruing from the loans themselves, but the costs that came from *administering the loans.*

Originally the true Catholic Church, with the compassion typical of an ecclesia that was as old as the idea of Europe and had founded great charitable institutions such as the earliest

[7] A financial loss incurred by the creditor during the time his money was loaned out, rather than being put into some other investment. As a result of *damnum emergens* it was theorized that the lender was “entitled” to be paid interest. This could be legitimate, viz. when a simple loan without usury went unpaid and the debtor owed the creditor the amount loaned; or it could become a loophole-exception to the moral law against usury from which permission for charging interest on money was derived. Thomas Aquinas opposed *damnum emergens* exceptions, ruling that the lender should have foreseen the consequences of making the loan.

[8] *Lucrum cessans:* (Lost potential); the loss of a profit which a lender might otherwise have gained from his money if he had not loaned it to a debtor. Under *lucrum cessans* a charge for a loan of money was justified as “damages,” on the basis that the creditor had reserved his money for the debtor instead of putting it into some other investment. St. Thomas Aquinas “denied the lender’s right to demand compensation for *possible* lost profit, since doing so involved selling what had only been *probable,* rather than real existence. He wrote, ‘one should not sell something which one has not yet got and which one may be prevented in many ways from getting.”

[9] Ibid., McCall, p. 70.

hospitals and schools, encouraged, in accordance with the spirit of the gospel, societies of *mons pietatis,* wherein Catholic volunteers and philanthropists offered loans to borrowers which, when repaid on time, *were free of charges of any kind.* The borrower repaid the principal and not a penny more, as God ordained. These arrangements operated for centuries under other names and in one form or another, to the glory of God and the testimony of His Church. With the passage of time however, situation ethicists who were at work in the bowels of the Church more than four hundred fifty years before the Second Vatican Council, "discovered" that usury had to be paid on the "charitable" loans—under the euphemism "administrative costs." According to this line of thought, Jesus Christ's command to lend expecting nothing in return was unworkable and required modification. What was actually afoot? The creation of the first, papally-approved Catholic usury banks. The alibi for this swindle, as issued to the gullible, is here outlined:

"As the *montes* began operating it soon became apparent that they would eventually exhaust their ability to serve the poor; if they merely received back the amount loaned, their donated capital would be depleted in paying their costs of operation, including salaries to employees. It was thus proposed that those benefiting from their operation share the costs of the operation in proportion to the benefit received, that is, the amount of the loan borrowed and repaid. Said another way, those who actually benefited were bound in justice to contribute back to the *mons* to compensate for the loss occasioned by the benefit... In practice these charges amounted to 5% per annum, on average. The *montes* represent an *excellent example of the application of the collection of interest merely as the right to charge the reimbursement of the cost of making the loan...*" [10]

[10] Ibid., p. 77, emphasis supplied.

It was Medici Pope Leo X who formalized this hoodwink with a bull in May 1515, after which, entirely by coincidence no doubt, the Medici-operated *mons pietatis* grew into full-blown international usury banks—templates for the seventeenth

century Protestant Bank of England and the Calvinist Dutch usurers who serve as stock villains in the pages of Right-wing tracts, where the names Leo X, Medici and *monte* are conveniently absent.

Pope Leo X initiated a process of gradualism, whereby the Church's immemorial dogmatic law against the charging of interest on loans of money was incrementally relaxed and diluted, leading to a papal revolution, culminating in the complete abolition of all ecclesiastical penalties for usury by Pope Pius VIII in his bull of Aug. 18, 1830, *Datum in audientia,* as well as the absence of all such penalties in the 1917 and 1983 Codes of Canon Law. No Renaissance or post-Renaissance pontiff from the sixteenth century to our time, restored the divine law proscribing profit from loans. All the popes from that time period either cooperated with the revolution or did nothing to halt it and left it in place. Some, like Pope Leo XIII, waxed eloquent in his encyclical *Rerum Novarum,* contra greed and the oppression of workers, but left untouched the root of those mortal sins — profit on loans; *usury.*

We begin, as often seems inevitable in a survey of the early Renaissance, with the Medici. But first let us take note of two pernicious historical myths in this field of study. The first is the rumor, disseminated by the major usurious banking houses and later perpetually recycled by the Right-wing, that the so-called "Jews" were the major financial force implicated in this usury.

There is not one Judaic banking house that is of over-arching significance in this early period; not one. Every bank we will implicate *in this epoch* is primarily of the Church of Rome. Yet who gets the blame for usury in this epoch? "The Jews." What's behind this? It is deliberate misdirection concealing the fact that the conspiracy operates just as smoothly in the gentile Right-wing as it does from within Judaism itself.

Notice that we state, "in this epoch." Later, Judaic banking houses such as the Rothschild bank, will become dominant, but the initial massive profits from the Renaissance papacy's gradual relaxation of the laws against usury were gained first by the gentile banks. The company of Vieri di Cambio de' Medici was the original foundation of the great Medici bank of the 15th century, and papal Rome was at the center of this banking dynasty's business empire. The papacy obtained usury loans from the Medici bank in the late 15th century by borrowing directly at stated rates of interest.

Giovanni di Lorenzo de' Medici, Pope Leo X, initiated a revolution that would only completely come to power some three centuries later, in 1830, under Pope Pius VIII, and confirmed in the Canon Law codes of 1917 (by omission) and in 1983 (by slightly less devious means).

Pope Leo X's new teaching consisted of an incremental step on the road to the permission for usury. In his Bull of 1515, *Inter multiplices,* Leo wrote that, "provided no profit be made," a "moderate fee" could be charged to borrowers to cover "administrative costs" of the operation of the bank known as the *Monte di Pietà.*

Medici Pope Leo, whose extended clan was deeply entrenched in Florentine banking and upon whom the pontiff had already bestowed many favors, was empowering the usury networks in Italy with his Bull. Apologists for the pope have asserted that the *montes* that developed in the wake of Leo X's bull were mostly pawnshops operating on the repossession of items pawned, not in making loans. They forget, however, that under *Inter multiplices,* the pawnbrokers could sell unredeemed pawns at a profit. They seem to think that Leo X was so obtuse that he did not foresee the loophole in his "provided no profit be made" provision. *Au contraire,* such profits were inevitable and the pontiff was no ingénue when it came to worldly affairs or financial transactions.

In practice, the pope's bull helped to establish usurious entities operating in the name of charity but functioning as for-profit businesses. Prior to the pope's revolutionary encyclical, truly Christ-like *montes* had donated their administrative costs. As a charity fund, the *montes* should not have been allowed to charge a middleman's 5% for "administrative fees," due to the obvious potential for abuse which such a "fee" represented. With the pontificate of Leo X the five percent so-called "administrative costs" were permitted. The five percent figure was ominous in that this was the rate which the Renaissance-Catholic nominalists and the usurious Catholic Fugger banking dynasty had set, through its theological mouthpiece Johann Eck, as a "moderate" rate of return on a loan.

In submission to a Scriptural standard, no Christian lender may gain a profit from a loan by charging fees that substitute for an interest rate. In all cases where a borrower repays a loan on time and in full, any charge of any kind beyond the return of the principal represents a profit to the lender and a loss to the borrower and constitutes usury. The rabbinic-style loopholes are the "extrinsic" titles which, under this and other deceptive euphemisms, in most cases lead to profit on a loan at the expense of the borrower. No previous pope in the course of fifteen hundred years had ever *formally* permitted such "fees" (though there had been some disgraceful accommodations made informally, such as by the Apostolic Chamber in 1486).

"Pope Leo X's *monte di pieta* was a bank to be plundered by his Florentine-merchant relatives and cronies. Charity for the poor was the necessary front used to vindicate the once forbidden usury. It didn't take long for the mask to fall, however: 'Never did the *monte's* officials recognize any irony in the fact that the *monte,* like the Jewish pawnbrokers it sought to replace... could sell unredeemed pawns at a profit... in the fall of 1529 the regime (in Florence) commanded the officials of the *monte di pieta* to assign it credits from the resources... this money amounted to an interest-free loan to the regime. There is no record that collateral was offered... By 1533 the city of

Florence itself was guaranteeing the solvency of the *monte di pieta* and offering to pay interest of five percent on its deposits. All this in the name of poor relief (profit was guaranteed to any depositor willing to subsidize the *monte's* 'charitable activities').

"In 1486 the Apostolic Chamber took the first step toward regularizing the debt through an agreement with a consortium of bankers according to which they would advance loans over a number of years in return for their control over consolidated revenues... the number rose to forty-six (bankers), most of them Genoese and Florentines. A full funding of some of the debt occurred with the establishment of the Monte della Fede in 1526, and over the course of the century forty other *monti* were set up. These were funds raised through sales of shares that paid interest guaranteed by assignment of specific revenues for this purpose... These shares... paid interest in perpetuity and were therefore inheritable... Through the *monti* the papacy institutionalized its borrowing, creating a permanent funded debt..." [11]

[11] Richard A. Goldwaithe, *The Economy of Renaissance Florence* (2011), pp. 251.

Where were the poor, on behalf of whom this particular *monti* racket was instituted by the Bull of Leo X?

The Renaissance Church of Rome incrementally extended ever greater latitude to usurers, knowing that once the Money Power was unleashed, it would eventually gain dominion (*omnia per pecuniam facta sunt*), by choosing the personnel of what was supposed to be Christ's Church, because the papacy would sometimes pay back what it owed to the banks by selling ecclesiastical offices to the highest bidder:

"The fact that the titles of more than 258 offices passed through the hands of Filippo Strozzi during his service as banker to the Medici popes in the early sixteenth century indicates something of the traffic in this kind of investment." [12]

[12] Ibid., Goldwaithe, pp. 250-251.

"...the bankers organized themselves to handle their enormous collective business with the papacy... this can be illustrated by the career of Benvenuto di Paolo Olivieri... Olivieri held the post of depositary of the Apostolic Chamber from 1540 to 1543 and from 1545-1546. During these years his company was advancing loans to the papacy in about every possible way, usually jointly with other bankers... all the while he was buying and selling credits in several monti... This complex and variable web of Olivieri's credit ties to the papal government also extended underground, so to speak...

“By Olivieri’s time the enormous increase in the number of fiscal offices in the Papal states, of *monti,* and of other investment opportunities attracted bankers from many places.”[13]

[13] Ibid., pp. 252-254.

The American Right’s go-to villains, “greedy Calvinist bankers of Holland” and “Protestant predators behind the Bank of England” were not yet born when the maze-like labyrinth of usury operations were being established and enlarged among Renaissance popes and “Catholic banking houses” and dynasties. As we noted earlier, the House of Fugger, the fabulously wealthy German-Catholic usury dynasty who were the bankers behind one of religious history’s most notorious shakedowns—the sale of indulgences which sparked the Protestant Reformation—have formed barely a blip on the radar screen of economic reformers who have had the meme of “Calvinist usury” seared into their minds. Backed by the Hapsburg rulers of Catholic Spain and Austria, the Fuggers supervised the financial transfers from the German church to the papacy. Their loans to the pope gained for them the portfolio of revenue-collecting privileges.

“With his (Jacob Fugger’s) support, Augsburg schoolmaster Sebastian Illsung wrote a defense of lending by focusing on the narrow subject of the Augsburg Contract —the legal agreement Fugger signed with depositors that promised them 5 percent. Illsung argued the contract was valid if the lender, like the borrower, risked bankruptcy.

“Then a young theologian named Johannes Eck caught Fugger’s eye by echoing Illsung’s arguments in a university lecture. Fugger asked Eck to write a dissertation on the Augsburg Contract and enter a debate—a public showdown with scholars as judges—to validate it.

“Fugger was taking a risk... If Eck lost the debate and the judges declared the contract usurious, Fugger’s depositors would refuse to give him money. This would be lethal. It was one thing to operate in a gray area. It was another to engage in a practice specifically ruled heretical. Fugger must have felt extremely confident because he sought nothing short of a Scopes trial, a winner-take-all smackdown pitting dogma against modernity... He had at least one precedent on his side. After theologians squared off over the subject of annuities —the interest-earning pension schemes that cities sold to raise money —the pope had sanctioned them.

“Maybe Pope Leo, who had replaced the ‘Warrior Pope’ Julius II earlier that year, would do the same with the Augsburg Contract. There was also the fact that Leo was a member of the Medici banking family. Legalization would serve his personal interests. Even better was that Leo himself was a borrower of Fugger's. It goes without saying that Leo would be favorably inclined towards someone who gave him money.

"...Fugger and Eck turned to Italy where, thanks to Venice and Florence, the universities were open-minded about lending. They found a willing (debate) participant in the University of Bologna, Europe's oldest university and among its most prestigious. Thomas Becket, Erasmus, Copernicus and (Pico) Mirandola had studied there. On his way to Bologna, Eck passed through Augsburg. Fugger assigned him a translator and other assistants... (In the debate) Eck avoided scriptural references and focused on intent. Only evil intentions could make a transaction usurious, he declared. A lender committed usury if he aimed to harm the borrower. But he acted legally if he had a legitimate business interest...

"The judges... refused to call the Augsburg Contract heretical. Eck... had presented a cut-and-dried case of charging interest on loaned money, and had given the judges a perfect chance to confirm Luke 6:35. But the judges refused to make a call, a call that could have put Fugger out of business. That was tacit approval. What's more, Fugger's letter to Pope Leo had gotten through and made an impact.

"Leo ignored the question about debate venues but, in a decree issued that same year, Leo went to the heart of the matter and signed a papal bull that... acknowledged the legitimacy of charging interest...

"According to the new doctrine of the church, usury was no longer strictly about what Jesus said about charging interest. It was about charging interest without labor, cost or risk. And what loan didn't involve one of the three? As long as a loan passed that easy test, the lender was off the hook.

"Fugger's lobbying had paid off in spectacular fashion. He and others were now free to charge borrowers and pay depositors interest with the full blessing of the church. Leo's decree, issued in conjunction with the Fifth Lateran Council, was a breakthrough for capitalism. Debt financing accelerated. The modern economy was under way... Eck earned a spot in history by going to Rome and successfully persuading the pope to excommunicate Luther..." [14]

[14] Greg Steinmetz, *The Richest Man Who Ever Lived: The Life and Times of Jacob Fugger* (2015), pp. 107-11.

In 1514 Eck would have another debate concerning his advocacy of a five percent rate of interest. His opponent was Martin Luther.

“The Fugger Company, one of the biggest financial corporations of the age, headed by Jakob Fugger, and after his death in 1525, Anton Fugger (his nephew), acted as bankers for the Curia in the same way they did for the (Holy Roman) emperor. They were the main agents remitting indulgence money collected in the German lands to Rome. Such payments came to the tune of several hundreds of thousands of florin or gulden per year—at conservative estimates. The general indulgence collector for the German lands, Cardinal Albrecht of Brandenburg (1490-1545) allegedly used half of the sums collected in Germany to repay his debts to the Fuggers, because in a not unusual manner he had accumulated a number of high-ranking church positions as Archbishop of Magdeburg, Halberstadt and Mainz, which made him elector and a powerful ruler in sixteenth century Germany. For this he had to pay dearly, in cash. Thus the circle closed. Only half of the indulgence money collected under Albrecht actually made it to Rome.

“The other half went into the coffers of some of the richest and biggest private business corporations of the age... Jakob and Anton Fugger shuffled millions of florins across Europe within weeks... the indulgence campaign headed by Albrecht would have represented a minor branch of their financial business in the early 1500s and 1510s.

“...Indulgences, as practiced around 1500, represented the perversion of an originally much more innocent idea, which had put the task of repentance at the center of the exercise, and the monetary donation accompanying the indulgence only as a secondary... requirement, underlining—but never replacing it for— one’s good intentions to repent.” [15]

[15] Philipp Robinson Rössner, introduction to *On Commerce and Usury* (Anthem Press, 2015), pp. 20-21.

Until circa 1550, the Catholic Fugger bank was wealthier than any Italian financial institution. They were eventually eclipsed by Catholic usury establishments in Genoa, such as the House of Cattaneo, and the usury firm of Alessandro Strozzi and Zanobi Carnesecchi. Toward the end of the century (circa 1589), Florentine-Catholic usurers such as Luigi Capponi were back in the papal saddle, helping to form the large Catholic banking consortium of Doria-Velluti-Amatto.

Martin Luther’s opposition to profit on loans was fierce and sincere. Nonetheless, as an innovator who had launched into

Christendom the concept of “justification by faith alone,” he did not uphold the early and medieval Church dogma against usury seamlessly, or with the same absolutism as Catholics had done from Apostolic times to the eve of the Renaissance.

The distinction here is between the kind of Renaissance Catholic casuistry and equivocation that Pascal excoriated in *The Provincial Letters,* and Luther’s attempt to destroy usury banking with a new approach. The defense of the Renaissance and post-Renaissance Church’s morally reprehensible novelties rests chiefly in Talmudic-type quibbles and dissimulation which negate Christ’s test of the nature of a thing: by its fruits we will know it. Renaissance Church apologists assert the contrary: they say that modernist Catholic canonists, theologians and popes only made way for a new type of contract, while preserving the basic law and theology of the anti-usury dogma. They assert this in nearly every case where it can be shown that the highway to total usury legalization was paved with furtive innovations imposed incrementally in the name of necessity, or lofty motives, such as relieving the plight of the impoverished. Post-Renaissance Catholic casuists have a psychological disposition to deny what the revolution has wrought. They see its ravages, but can’t account for its roots, except as a mist-enshrouded act of the devil; a ghostly ectoplasm that arose spontaneously out of erewhon. The fact is, the devil leaves hoof prints and these can be detected, beginning with the concealment of interest devices by means of evasive glosses.

Blaise Pascal wrote concerning the mentality which empowers this process: “Accordingly... our casuist has suggested a general method for all sorts of persons... and a very simple process it is... consisting only in the use of certain words to be pronounced by the person in the act of lending his money; after which he may take his interest for it without fear of being a usurer...” [16]

[16] *The Provincial Letters* (1997), p. 71

For the words, “fear of being a usurer” substitute “fear of being a Judaizer” and one can spot the same process in the casuist reinterpretation of Judaism, or any other deceptive revolution that has infiltrated the Church on the heels of clever wordplay and the infinite human capacity for self-deception.

Luther breathed fire on usurers in sermons of power and conviction, such as his *Long Sermon on Usury* (1520), *Preface to an Ordinance of the Common Chest* (1523), and *Trade and Usury,* which was published in 1524. In these writings he pits the German nation against the Money Power of the Renaissance Church, as it was promoting profit on loans both covert and overt, in Church and State. Luther’s argument was consonant with classic medieval Catholicism:

“...the greatest misfortune of the German nation is certainly the traffic in annuities. If that did not exist, many a man would have to leave unbought his silk, velvet, golden ornaments, spices, and luxuries of every sort. The system has not existed much over a hundred years, and has already brought almost all the princes, foundations, cities, nobles, and heirs to poverty, misery, and destruction. If it shall continue for another hundred years, Germany cannot possibly have a *pfennig* left and we shall certainly have to devour one another. The devil invented this system, and the pope by confirming it has injured the whole world. Therefore, I ask and pray that everyone open his eyes to see the ruin of himself, his children, and his heirs, which not only stands before the door but already haunts the house; and that emperor, princes, lords, and cities arrange that this trade be condemned as speedily as possible and henceforth prevented, without considering the opposition of the pope and all his justice and injustice, nor whether benefices or endowments depend upon it. Better a single benefice in a city based on an honest freehold revenue, than a hundred based on an annuity; yea, a single endowment based on an annuity is worse and more grievous than twenty based on freeholds.”

Addressing himself in 1523 to a “community chest” project which had been expropriated from Roman ecclesiastical foundations that had been the beneficiaries of usury, Luther declaimed, “Part of the possessions of monasteries and foundations, and a great part of the prebends are based upon usury, which now calls itself everywhere ‘interest’ *(widderkauf),* and which has in but a few years swallowed up the whole world. Such possessions would have to be separated first of all, like leprosy from those possessions which consist of simple bequests...

“Interest bearing foundations... may rightly be regarded as usury; for I have never yet seen or heard of an ethical annuity that bears interest. It would be necessary, therefore, in such a case, to make restitution of the usury, by returning to each one his interest payments, before allowing such a possession to go into a common chest; for God says, ‘I hate robbery for burnt offering’ (Isaiah 61:8). If it proves impossible to find the persons who sustained loss by paying interest, the common chest might then receive the possession... This matter is altogether one of the most urgent to which emperors and kings, princes and lords, and everyone else should give attention...”

In Luther’s time the German concept of *zinskauf* (“interest purchase”) represented *both* scripturally-permissible income on rents and redeemable security in lands, as well as usurious financial instruments. “*Rente*” was a specified annual return (in the form of produce, livestock etc.) from a tenant for the use of land. A landlord could sell to a third party the contract with his tenant. The contract, which did not entail usury, was called "*rentenkauf*," and was later grouped under the general heading of *zinskauf*, even though other contracts under the heading of *zinskauf* were usurious. Luther denounced the usurious variety of *zinskauf* (wuchrische *zinskauf*), which was permitted by the Renaissance papacy.

Luther channeled the classic Catholic teaching in his commentary on Luke 6:34-35: "If we look the word of Christ squarely in the eye, it does not teach that we are to lend without charge, for there is no need for such teaching, since *there is no lending except lending without charge,* and if a charge is made, it is not a loan. He wills that we lend not only to friends, the rich, and those to whom we are well disposed, who can repay us again, by returning this loan, or with another loan, or by some other benefit; but also, that we lend to those who cannot or will not repay us, such as the needy and our enemies..."

Inspired by Luther, Jakob Strauss, a native of Basel and a preacher at Berchtesgaden, and later pastor of Eisenach, advocated the implementation of Mosaic Law according to the light of Christ, in the struggle to abolish interest on debt in the name of Christian love. Strauss's *Fifty-One Theses Against Usury* banned the taking of even a penny of interest. [17]

[17] Strauss, *Hauptstücke und Artikel christlicher Lehre wider den unchristlichen Wucher.*

He believed that the Protestant faith made a mockery of Christ's injunction to love one another if it permitted the charging of interest on a debt. [18]

[18] Strauss, *Das Wucher zu nehmen* (1524).

Eventually, Luther would soften — though not do away with — his anti-usury campaign. He did so for the same reason that he would eventually make slavish obedience to the ruler of a Lutheran state a pre-requisite of his church — his trepidation at the prospect that the peasant revolutionaries in Germany would cite him as the inspiration for their violence and uproar. He was horrified by the demands of the armed anti-usury insurgents in Erfurt in 1525, who sought to pay their creditors only the principal and not the interest on their loans, and enforce their will at the point of a lance.

Concerning Pastor Strauss, Luther appreciated his efforts in honoring the Biblical "Sabbatical Year of Release from Debt" (Deut. 15:1-5), which Luther termed a "most beautiful and equitable law... Were it to be adopted today, the governors of the world would be saved endless legal business and disturbance... debts... would all be terminated at one time and not be allowed to plague people forever. Moreover, men would be careful not to lend a greater sum of money than they could hope to have restored before the seventh year."

Luther's sentimental regard for the Sabbatical Year was derogated however, by his famous "Law and Gospel" dichotomy. If he were emperor he said he would choose to reenact the Sabbatical Year, but he also stated that heads of state were under no obligation to do so. This law-as-option element he imparted to the portions of the Old Testament that are not ceremonial, and which are in fact, eternal divine law (Matthew 5:17), thereby undercutting the ability of German Christians to fulfill God's will on earth.

Luther parted ways with Strauss in the matter of the latter's declaration that the debtor was guilty for having paid interest to a creditor, which set up a revolutionary situation in which German peasants felt justified in violently revolting against lenders; a revolt Luther feared as part of his general revulsion against social disorder in Protestant lands. Luther informed Strauss that the Bible did not teach that debtors were complicit in usury by paying interest. Christ had said that His followers were to surrender even their cloaks and tunics to oppressors.

The German reformer detested usury but he did not maintain the medieval standard of complete abolition. In his conceptualization of divine grace and Christian liberty, he made the individual conscience the supreme guide to economic relations and affairs, until such time as the state, in the form of an emperor or prince, would abolish usury by edict.

In *Trade and Usury,* he set the bar at the very top of New Testament ethics, allowing oneself to be robbed of one's material possessions and goods by unregenerate men (Matthew 5:40), if necessary.

According to Luther, the Christian was to give money freely to whoever was in need of such a gift (Matthew 5:42 and Luke 6:30),[19] or at the very least to lend money rather than to give it away, while expecting no return on what had been loaned.

His private opinion, in his last days, was that Protestant ministers should urge their people not to engage in usury. He sincerely believed that the best way to overcome the curse of profit on loans was to teach the Gospel in such a way that the German nation would voluntarily resist profit on loans, until such time as a Lutheran ruler would ban it outright. Lutheran ministers were to proclaim the Gospel prohibition on interest on money in no uncertain terms, leaving legislation and enforcement to the princes.

---

[19] According to University of Regensburg Prof. Hans Schwarz, Luther qualified this as follows: "...this does not include those... who do not want to work... It also does not mean giving if you do not have what you yourself need, nor does it mean to give away everything, because then you could not give anything tomorrow if need arises. Freely giving should not imply that one becomes a beggar. It is also not so that one reaps benefits from it, or celebrated for this deed." Cf. Schwarz, *True Faith in the True God* (Augsburg Fortress Press, 2015), p. 260.

Luther was never an agent of the banks or the Money Power. It should be conceded that Luther did not traffic in papal and Vatican doubletalk and duplicity on the subject of usury. There is no clever wordplay in his writing and sermons on the subject. He spoke his mind plainly and boldly.

"Luther... was led by his keen sense of justice to a vigorous assertion of the (medieval) canonical determinations on usury in opposition to the casuists' hair-splitting attempts to circumvent the very laws they were pledged to uphold." [20]

[20] Walter I. Brandt, *Luther's Works*, v. 45 (Muhlenberg Press, 1962), p. 305.

Catholics on the Right tend to overlook the papal accommodation of usurers which eventually led to the Church of Rome's overthrow of the divine, true Catholic Church proscription on profit on loans.

Calvin and Luther are branded the originators of miserly shylock banking in Christendom. It's ludicrous, but the Big Lie has stuck. The degree of denial and myopia is a wonder to behold. In the summer of 2016 a group of prominent "traditional Catholics" issued their "Lake Garda Statement Regarding the 'Catholic' Apotheosis of Luther":

"...a massive attempt to masquerade the truth regarding their real character and practical alliance is being mounted in conjunction with the five hundredth anniversary of Martin Luther's devastating appearance on the public scene in 1517... to masquerade what Luther and his 'freedom' wrought. For what they *truly* wrought was ultimately nothing other than what Richard Gawthrop identifies as that 'Promethean lust for material power that serves as the deepest common drive behind all modern Western culture'... it did not take long for the freedom of depraved man in depraved nature *from* the restraints of a supposedly impossible Law —in the name of an openness to unmerited grace—to be seen as the providential tool for molding unbridled human thoughts and actions into the building blocks of a new Age of Gold." [21]

[21] The Lake Garda Statement, July 7, 2016; signed by Dr. John C. Rao, President of the Roman Forum; Christopher A. Ferrara, President of the American Catholic Lawyers Association; Rev. Richard A. Munkelt, Ph.D; Prof. Dr. Thomas Heinrich Stark; and Michael J. Matt.

Luther is scapegoated for the acts of the Catholic usury bankers, the Catholic Augsburg Diet of 1500 and the popes of usury, all of whom in their betrayal of the true Catholic Church, pioneered in Christendom the "new Age of Gold."

Many “Conservative” and “traditional” Catholics of the twentieth-first century are nothing of the kind. They ally with renegade, Renaissance proto-modernist bishops of Rome who were popes not of Catholicism but of the cash nexus. The Right-wing “Catholic” idolatry of these men has supplanted *the loyalty due to the Catholic Church of the previous fourteen hundred fifty years.* Luther suffered a spiritual crisis when he finally became cognizant (and it took him some time to do so; his evaluation was not rash), that the papacy in the Renaissance was no longer the guarantor of Catholic orthodoxy, but its gravedigger. This shock of recognition led to a psychological crisis which produced in Luther a disfigurement that led him into excesses and distortions, and an abiding pride. It is distressing however, that in reflecting upon Lutheranism, the history of the Neoplatonic-Hermetic-Kabbalistic takeover of Rome is whisked away and it is Luther who is stigmatized as money’s prophet.

If there actually were traditional Catholics on earth today (and surely there is a remnant), they would believe as the Roman Catholic Church had always believed until the Renaissance usurpation:

“Lord, who shall abide in thy tabernacle? Who shall dwell in thy holy hill?... He that does not ask interest on loans, and cannot be bribed to victimize the innocent.” [22]

St. Clement of Alexandria (second century A.D.): “taking profit from loans to fellow Christians partaking of the Logos, is a transgression against the law of God.”

The Council of Elvira, circa 300 A.D., decreed that lay and clerical usurers are to be excommunicated.

St. Jerome (fourth century) quotes Ezekiel 18:13, “Hath given forth upon usury, and hath taken increase: shall he then live? He shall not live: he hath done all these abominations; he shall surely die; his blood shall be upon him.”

St. Basil (fourth century): “Whenever you have the intention of providing for a poor man for the Lord’s sake, the same thing is both a gift and a loan, a gift because of the expectation of no repayment, but a loan because of the great gift of the Master who pays in his place, and who, receiving trifling things through a poor man, will give great things in return for them. ‘He that hath mercy on the poor, lendeth to God.’ Do you not wish to have the Lord of the universe answerable to you for payment?”

---

[22] Psalm 15: 1 & 5.

St. Ambrose (fourth century): “*Si quis usuram accipit, rapinam facit, vita non vivit.*” (“If someone takes usury, he commits robbery, he shall not live”).

Other fourth century Fathers: St. Gregory of Nicea, St. Leo the Great, and St. John Chrysostom, all condemned taking profit on loans; that is to say all profit (even a penny) on any kind of loan.

St. Augustine (354-430 A.D.): *“Homo miser, cur foenearis homini? Foenerare Deo et centuplum accipes vitam aeternam possidebis.”* (Miserly man, why do you lend compound interest to men? Lend to God a hundred-fold you will have eternal life”).

In the eleventh century, St. Edward the Confessor, the Anglo-Saxon Catholic King of England, declared, “*Usura radix omnia malorum.*” (“*Usury* is the root of all evil”).

Gratian’s *Decretum* (circa 1140), the oldest and most extensive cornerstone of the *Corpus iuris canonici* (body of Canon Law): “*Usurae arte nequissima ex ipso auno aurum nascitur.*” (“By the detestable art of usury gold gives birth to gold”).

The Fourth Lateran Council of 1179, decreed that those who gain profit from loans are to be excommunicated and denied Christian burial.

Pope Urban III (1185-1187) quotes Luke 6:35: “Lend, expecting nothing in return.”

Pope Gregory IX in 1234 commanded all Christian rulers to expel all usurers and to nullify all wills and testaments of unrepentant usurers.

Pope Innocent IV (1200-1254): “Usury is generally prohibited because if it were allowed all manner of evils would ensue... It is clear that practically every evil follows from usury.” *(Commentaria super libros quinque Decretalium).*

The Council of Lyons (1274) extended the restrictions on lenders-for-profit based on the Decree on Usury of Pope Gregory X (1210-1272):

“Although manifest usurers may have commanded that satisfaction be made for the usury they received in express quantity or indistinctly in their final will, nonetheless, they are to be denied ecclesiastical burial until full satisfaction has been made for the very usury (as their faculties permit) or to those to whom restitution must be made, if they are on hand, or to others for whom they can acquire it, or in their absence the

local ordinary or his vicar, whether the rector of the parish in which the testator lives, in the presence of some trustworthy members of the parish (for whom it is permissible for the ordinary, vicar, and rector in the aforementioned way to accept this warning in their name by the authority of this current constitution in such a way that action is gained for them), or that it be properly entrusted to a public servant at the command of the same ordinary concerning the making of restitution. For the rest, if the quantity of the usury received is clear we want that to be always expressed in the aforesaid warranty, otherwise we want another warranty of the receiver to be controlled according to such a will; the same person, however, knowingly controls not less than is reasonably believed, and should he do otherwise, let him be obliged to make satisfaction for the rest.

"We decree that all the religious and others who have dared to admit manifest usurers to ecclesiastical burial against the form of present sanctions are subject to the punishments of the Lateran Council promulgated against usurers. No one is to take part in the wills of manifest usurers, or admit them to confession or absolve them unless they have made restitution for usury, or afford a fitting warranty about making restitution according to the strength of their faculties."

The Council of Vienne (1311) ordered the excommunication of any ruler who condoned profits on loans or who forced debtors to pay usury. It presciently warned of those who seek to open tracks in the laws against usury by camouflaged contracts that hid usury under "diverse colors."

Contra the Money Power in The Arena Chapel

High Catholic art *before the Renaissance* was often a glory to God, and among the artists who personified the medieval aesthetic at the masterpiece level were the virtuosos Giotto di Bondone, known to history by his first name, and the master stone carvers Arnolfo Pisano, his chief assistant Arnolfo di Cambio, and his son Giovanni Pisano. The Christian who would seek edification, sobering reflection and a sermon in paint will visit and ponder the Arena Chapel in Padua, a city in Italy that had been the base, seventy-two years earlier, of St. Anthony of Padua, the hammer of usury heretics who was one of the most phenomenal preachers of the Gospel of Jesus Christ in the post-apostolic history of Christianity. [23]

[23] The Arena Chapel is so called because it is situated on land where in ancient times stood a Roman amphitheater, or "arena," located just outside the walls of the "old city" of Padua.

The chapel is a sacred edifice founded on a plea for forgiveness as a means of making restitution. The Dominican Pope Benedict XI (Niccolo Boccasino) named it the "Chapel of Santa Maria della Caritá." It was dedicated to the Blessed Virgin Mary on the feast of her Annunciation,[24]

[24] The events described in Luke 1: 26-39 are referred to in Catholicism as the "Annunciation."

March 25, 1303.

It is extraordinary for being the most prominent monument in Christendom to the Catholic belief in the divine dogma that profit on loans is a sin that imperils the soul and requires, after confession, expiation. The chapel was founded, designed and dedicated while Dante Aligheri, the preeminent poet of the Gospel over the Money Power, walked the earth.

In *Usury in Christendom* (pp. 344-350), we give an account of a seldom remarked upon miracle of St. Anthony of Padua and reproduce a photograph of Tullio Lombardo's harrowing sculpture depicting it:

"It is not an easy matter to find a full account of St. Anthony's 'Miracle of the Usurer's Heart,' since it is a huge embarrassment to 'Christian' usurers and a devastating rebuke to the contemporary Church which permits their trade. Consequently, the miracle has been classed as too parochial and dated, and has been renamed. When it is presented to the public it is no longer a parable about a money-lender who grew wealthy from charging interest on debt. It has been rewritten as "The Miracle of the *Miser's* Heart," and the dead man's sin is not specifically usury, but the more generic theme of parsimony. By means of this falsification, the people do not learn of the degree of hostility which medieval Catholic culture—and one of the most esteemed of all saints of the Church—harbored for the sin of charging interest on loans of money.

"...long after the Renaissance, Catholic culture at the folk level persisted in execrating usury. St. Anthony's example of righteous wrath against the den of thieves who sought a place in the Church in spite of their intractable addiction to money breeding, resonated among the lay people down through the centuries, commemorated in magnificent art works by Francesco Pesellino, Domenico Campagnola and Tullio Lombardo, and contributing to a living culture of revulsion toward the sin of usury among the Catholic people for hundreds of years, even while their cardinals and popes trafficked in and profited from partnering with capitalism's immensely powerful banking houses.

"What the old Church had believed and taught left deep traces in the cultural memory of the Catholic people for many centuries during the time that usury was being rehabilitated from on high. This holy memory persisted long after the theology itself had decayed. Lowly parish priests and laymen preserved indignation over income derived from interest into the nineteenth and even the twentieth century. Many were outraged to discover, in the 1800s, that when impenitent usurers complained to the Catholic hierarchy about priests who refused to grant them absolution in the confessional, the hierarchy stood with the unrepentant sinners against the confessors. [25]

---

[25] *Usury in Christendom: The Mortal Sin that Was and Now is Not,* pp. 345-346.

The miracle God worked through St. Anthony has for its scripture text Matthew 6:2: “It happened that while blessed Anthony was preaching the Word of God, a murmur spread through the assembly that a great moneylender had passed away. Seeing the agitation in the crowd and hearing the murmur, Anthony questioned them. They answered that a rich usurer had just died. All murmured to one another, and he said to them: ‘Behold how the word of the Lord is revealed as true; for He said, ‘Where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.’ Then Anthony said, ‘Go to his strongbox and in the largest moneybag his heart will be found.’ So it was done. And proving true the prediction of the holy man, they then cut open the corpse and, not finding the heart, they all praised God and His servant, blessed Anthony.” [26]

[26] Cf. Vatican Library, MS lat. 7592; and Vergilio Gamboso, *Testimonianze minori su S. Antonio* (2001).

The Ten Sermons of Saint Anthony of Padua

“...some of the most scathing sermons against usury that survive were authored by Saint Anthony. Unsurprisingly, Saint Anthony defines usury strictly: in a sermon for the first Sunday of Lent, he writes, quoting (the canonist) Gratian: ‘To take any return over and above the principal is called usury.’ But his sermons are often far more vivid than this statement suggests. In another sermon, he writes: ‘Just as birds and beasts will scatter the cadaver, so demons will scatter the heart of the miser and the usurer.’ In another, his sermon for Sexagesima Sunday, he fulminates:

“The accursed race of usurers has multiplied upon the earth, with teeth like the teeth of a lion. The lion has two characteristics: a stiff neck containing only one bone, and stinking teeth. The usurer is likewise inflexible, neither fearing God nor regarding man. His teeth stink because the dirt of money and the dung of usury are always in his mouth.’

“We may observe three kinds of usurers: those who lend money privately, who may be described as creeping things without number; those who do so openly, but only in a small way, so as to seem merciful—these are the small beasts—and the faithless, hopeless and open usurers who, as openly as in a marketplace, take interest from all and sundry.

“These are the great beasts, more cruel than all the rest. They will be pursued by the demon huntsmen and slain with an eternal death, unless they restore their ill-gotten gains, and do penance. To give them the opportunity to do so, there go the ships among them, the preachers of the Church who pass among them and sow the seed of God’s word. Yet, though our sins need it, the thorns of riches and wild beasts of usury choke the word sown so devotedly, so that it does not produce the fruit of penance.” [27]

[27] Anne Derbes and Mark Sandona, *The Usurer's Heart* (2008), pp. 39-40 and 174. "Anthony excoriates usurers in a number of other sermons, including those on the Feast of the Nativity *(Sermones,* ed. Costa, 3:5); the first Sunday in Lent (1:69,71); the Second Sunday in Advent (2:482-83); the third Sunday in Advent (2:502); the ninth Sunday after Pentecost (2:25), the tenth Sunday after Pentecost (2:40); the Feast of St. Stephen (3:18-20); the Feast of the Chair of St. Peter (3:123); and the Feast of the Birth of St. John the Baptist (3:267)." Ibid., p. 174.

"Anthony's fiery sermons drew enormous throngs in Padua, but even after his lifetime, as we have seen, his sermons lived on, serving as sourcebooks for friars and cathedral canons alike... Clearly then, anyone earning a livelihood from money-lending (at a profit) ran the risk of enormous penalties in this life and even more horrific punishment in the next. And neither social status nor ecclesiastical connections could ensure the salvation of the usurer. The only hope for such sinners was to renounce the practice, repent, and make full, unambiguous restitution." [28]

[28] Ibid., p. 40. Of course, Anthony was not alone in his fury toward lenders who charged interest. In a Lenten sermon, the Dominican Jacobus de Voragine (1230-July, 1298), the eventual Archbishop of Genoa and reputed compiler of the famed collection of the lives of the saints known as *The Golden Legend,* stated that a lender who takes profit from a borrower "is similar to Judas Iscariot in sin and he will be similar to him in punishment... The usurer will not live in heaven, but in hell with the demons, because he ruined mankind." *Sermones quadragesimales: Edizione critica* (2005), pp. 242-243.

In the contemporary Church of Rome, whether styled traditional, conservative or progressive Catholic, St. Anthony is known almost exclusively as the patron saint of the return of lost articles ("Dear St. Anthony please come around, something is lost and must be found"), and as the friar who was granted the miraculous privilege of holding the infant Jesus in his arms. The preeminent object of the saint's preaching ministry —at least ten sermons blasting the diabolic Catholic traffic in profits from loans, and one miracle involving a usurer's heart-are almost completely erased from the record of St. Anthony's hagiography. This relentless campaigner for Biblical economics has been reduced in popular Catholic piety to an innocuous searcher-after lost things, and it is a grotesque irony that knowledge of the hellfire homilies he repeatedly hurled at Catholic bankers and other usurers, are, for all intents and purposes, *lost.*

A testimony to the degeneracy of the churches in the twenty-first century, both papist and otherwise, is that the consciences of Protestants and Catholics are seared by the thought of the wanton woman with whom they committed adultery; the beating they administered while drunk to an innocent passerby, or the bribery they offered to a bureaucrat.

But remorse for acquiring money from profits on loans is as distant from their conscience as the GN-Z11 galaxy. A testimony to the presence of the true faith in an authentic follower of Jesus is sorrow for having benefited from the mortal sin of interest on money. Even the thought of such sorrow would be a bizarre anomaly to the hearers if it were preached from almost any pulpit today. The extent to which the ungodly and unnatural predation emanating from profit on loans is mistaken for permissible "free enterprise" is all-encompassing. In our time the Church of St. Anthony of Padua has been almost, though not completely, eclipsed (Luke 18:8).

The Scrovegni Penance

In the Christendom of the Middle Ages, with all its other failings and shortcomings, the fear of God (and hence, "the beginning of wisdom," Proverbs 9:10), was paramount, and the terror at having offended God by breeding money from money, was overwhelming. Reginaldo Scrovegni had been a notorious medieval Italian usurer who Dante, in Canto XVII of *The Inferno,* placed in the seventh circle of hell. [29]

[29] Scrovegni is identified by Dante having alluded to the sow azure on the Scrovegni coat of arms: "And then I heard (from one whose neat, white sack was marked in azure by a pregnant sow): 'What are you after in this awful hole?" (*The Divine Comedy,* translated by Robin Kirkpatrick [Penguin Books, 2013]), p. 76. The "white sack" is shown by Dorothy L. Sayers to have been a usurer's money purse, and the seventh circle of hell in this scene is inhabited by Florentine usurers. Cf. Sayers, *Dante Hell* (Penguin Books, 2001), p. 111.

The heir to Reginaldo's fortune (worth an astounding half-million lire), was his son, Enrico, and it was he who spent the equivalent of millions of dollars in today's money to erect a Christian palace of repentance for his father's financial crimes and for his own (he had taken up usury banking in his youth while serving as his father's apprentice). Crooked churchmen had taken loans from the firm of Scrovegni and Son, and Reginaldo Scrovegni's operations were protected by the corrupt bishops of Padua and Vicenza and certain lawyers on the faculty of the University of Padua College of Law, including Giovanni Forzaté, whose son was the beneficiary of a lucrative arranged marriage with a daughter of Reginaldo. With this background in mind, we turn to Ursula Schlegel, the principal and most astute scholar of the Arena Chapel:

"Enrico Scrovegni owed his immense fortune to his father, Reginaldo, who had acquired his riches not through honest work but through base usury, which in medieval times was considered by the Church a mortal sin.

"After the Lateran Council of 1176, whose declaration was reaffirmed in 1274, usurers were not to be permitted to receive Holy Communion or to have Christian burial if they died without atonement... Enrico, received absolution from Benedict XI...

"Enrico's absolution must have taken place shortly before the start of the decoration of the Chapel, because Pope Benedict reigned from October 1303 until July 1304. We do not know the conditions of Enrico's absolution. The erection of the church, however, and its particularly resplendent decoration must have been one of them..." [30]

[30] Ursula Schlegel, "On the Picture Program of the Arena Chapel" in *Giotto: The Arena Chapel Frescoes* (1995), p. 185.

"He had it built with his own money in compensation for the many usurious deeds of his father, doing so at the command of Pope Benedict XI." [31]

[31] Giuseppe Gennari, *Annali della Citta di Padova* (1804), volume III, p. 89.

It was this pontiff in his commentary on the Gospel of Matthew, who emphasized a particular insight into the nature of the betrayal of Jesus, when he stated that Judas was *"cupiditate pecuniae ductus"* (led by his passion for money). [32]

[32] Pope Benedict XI, *In evangelium D. Matthaei,* 11. col. 1.

Concerning the Chapel's art, Schlegel writes, "Judas hangs in Giotto's Hell, and behind him we see three other damned men who must atone for their sins in the same way; their torture, however, seems to be increased, since they have been hanged with the strings of their own money purses. In a particularly prominent place, to the right, below the cross and above the curve of the door arch, a usurious peasant with a fat money bag on his back is led into the abyss of hell by a devil who holds the peasant's promissory notes in his claw. Another of the damned who likewise cannot separate himself from his money bag, despite the fact that a devil pulls on it vigorously, must go the way down to the abyss behind the peasant.

"The depiction of the hanged Judas in the *Last Judgment* is rare... in Padua, Judas is in the middle of Hell in a very conspicuous place: he hangs exactly in the center, between the cross and the jaws of Hell... Horizontally, there is a straight line leading, at the right, from the head of Judas to the jaws of Hell, and at the left, through the cross and the model of the Chapel, to the head of Enrico.

This allows us to place (the figure of) Enrico, even though he kneels with the Blessed, in a very special relationship to Judas, for it is no less obvious that the misers and usurers populating the part of Hell around Judas correspond to the group with Enrico Scrovegni below the Blessed on the other side of the cross, and that the misers and usurers suffer the same punishment as Judas.

"We assume that Enrico wished to atone for his father's sin of usury, the price of which is Hell. For this reason, he joined the lay order of the Cavalieri di Santa Maria, whose aspiration it was to lead a model life and whose most significant duty was to combat usury, and for this reason he built the Chapel and gave it to the order as its church.[33]

[33] "As can be gathered from the Bulls of Gregory IX and Urban V: 'No one is to be received into the order... who either has gained any other good through usurious wickedness, or through other illicit or unjust means for himself or for others who succeed him by will or intestate, if he does not first make restitution of everything he holds illicitly or unjustly...' Thus, the membership of Enrico in his order by itself means such a break with the habits of his father that, according to the customs of the Church, it must have considered it an act of contrition. We may also consider the construction of the church as such an act." Schlegel, op. cit., p. 188, n. 17.

"The basis for atonement, however, is the confession of the sin, for every sin is a betrayal of Christ. And here the confession is made through the representation of the greatest betrayal of all, the betrayal by Judas. And since it happened that Enrico's father Reginaldo betrayed Christ for money just as Judas did, *The Betrayal of Judas* is located on the triumphal arch wall in the consciousness of guilt and as its confession. We should, therefore, not look at this representation as the criticism of the father by the son, but only as the confession of guilt of his own — rendered in a language equal in its pitiless candor to Dante's in the *Inferno*." [34]

[34] Schlegel, op. cit., pp. 187-189.

In the *Chronica Patavina* (Vatican library MS5290), circa 1335, we find this description of Enrico: "He built a temple in the Arena to the honor of the Virgin Mary and for the salvation

of his family and especially for the soul of his father Reginaldo who, since he was of common status occupied himself with infinite usuries..."

In Enrico's Last Will and Testament, written a few months before his death in 1336, we find these words commanding that restitution be made: "I wish, order and command that all of my ill-gotten gains (*male ablata*), if it should be that such be found, and these were not restored, and all the ill-gotten gains of my grandfather Ugolino, my father Reginaldo, by brother Manfredo, and his son Manfredo the Younger, for the one-third part that I am legally held to restore— these ought to be restored and paid with any expenses incurred at that time, to all petitioners without any lawsuit, controversy, trial, condition or pact.” [35]

[35] Benjamin G. Kohl, “The Scrovegni in Carrara Padua: And Enrico’s Will,” in *Apollo: The International Magazine of the Arts* (December, 1995).

Many other usurers, under severe pressure from their confessors or from their own consciences (often as they neared death), made restitution for their thieving, including as in some cases, as Enrico had, by con structing and donating a church, school, hospital or monastery. Among Enrico’s penitent contemporaries and countrymen who constructed religious edifices we find former captains of banking such as Pietro da Marano, Guglielmo Castelbarco and Marsilio da Carrara. Among lesser fry, the whole of their estates were simply divided among those who could be found to have paid them anything above the principal loaned. Penance and restitution by usurers was public. [36]

[36] Cf. for example, Mary C. Mansfield, *The Humiliation of Sinners: Public Penance in Thirteenth Century France* (1995).

The medieval Paduan Arena Chapel is a sermon in paint and sculpture, and the explication of its elaborate symbolism would require a book solely dedicated to that end. [37]

[37] Cf. Derbes and Sandona, *The Usurer’s Heart,* op. cit.

Suffice it to say for our purposes, that Derbes and Sandona point to a central theme in the iconography of the Chapel, that of Judas contrasted with the Blessed Virgin Mary. Our Lady’s exemplification of charity diametrically opposed to the greed of Judas, occupies “extraordinary prominence” in the Arena.

We took Michelangelo to task for it, so it is incumbent on us to note that Giotto also employed nudity in his work. Like Michelangelo in the Sistine Chapel, in the Arena Chapel Giotto executed a version of *The Last Judgment* in which the damned are nude. The difference between the Michelangelo *Judgment* and that of Giotto however, is the difference (if we may be so bold) between the spirit of the Renaissance and the spirit of the Middle Ages. With Michelangelo, whether damned or not, the naked humans often exude an eroticism. *In Giotto the nudity only heightens the sense of shame and degradation,* such as Adam and Eve experienced in the Garden after the Fall. Public nudity of the type displayed in the Sistine Chapel is utopian. It is a way of expressing the heresy that on earth, in this life, we can return to Eden. For Giotto, as for the Early and Medieval Catholic Church, public nudity, except when portraying pre-pubescent humanity, is mainly a sign of disorder and concupiscence, or damnation.

The medieval pontiff who may have come closest to St. Anthony of Padua in spirit was the ill-fated monk-hermit, Pope Celestine V (1215-1296), who was "elected after more than two years of deadlock in the hope that a saint might transform the Church... the unworldly old man (eighty-five when elected) ...was a visionary, the founder of a brotherhood of hermits with strong links to the radical Franciscans. [38]

[38] These were the "Spirituals" who were faithful and zealous for the original teaching of St. Francis of Assisi concerning wealth and the scourge of avarice.

He therefore represented precisely that dimension of the thirteenth-century Church which detested the wealth, worldliness and legal and political entanglements of the papacy. His election fed apocalyptic hopes of a *Papa Angelicus,* a holy and unworldly pope who would cleanse the Church and prepare the world for the advent of Christ. The notion of an unworldly pope, however, was by now almost a contradiction in terms... Celestine's election highlighted just how incompatible these two visions of the Church had become. Faced with political and financial complexities which prayer and fasting seemed powerless to untangle, Celestine resigned after six months." [39]

[39] Eamon Duffy, *Saints & Sinners: A History of the Popes* (2006), p. 159.

His resignation appears to have been engineered by Benedetto Caetani, his successor, who would become the tyrant Pope Boniface VIII. It was Caetani who produced canon lawyers to justify Celestine's abdication and it was Caetani who wrote Celestine's abdication speech. After Caetani was made pope, Celestine fled. "Determined to avoid any... (resistance) from the outraged 'spiritual' element in the Church who had looked to Celestine to redeem the papacy, Caetani tracked down his predecessor..." [40]

[40] Ibid.

Benedict VIII had this holy ex-pontiff kidnapped, tortured, and imprisoned until Celestine's death in 1296.

A "worthy pope," you say? Let him proclaim, *ex cathedra*, a declaration along the lines of the following statement. When he does so, we will know that the war of the Church contra the Money Power, engendered by the root of all evil (I Timothy 6:10), has been revived:

All usury—*any* gain on a loan above the return of the principal—is a grave transgression against the law of God. In order to obtain absolution, reception of the Eucharist and a Catholic burial, all usurers must confess their mortal sin, avoid the near occasion of sin by halting their involvement in banks and businesses lending at interest; and by lenders expiating their sin of usury through restitution of all monies paid by debtors to the lenders above the principal. Impenitent, practicing bankers (usurers) are not to receive the Eucharist and are to be refused a Catholic burial. In Catholic nations, the civil authorities are urged to seize the assets of usurers after death to restore the interest stolen from debtors. Obstinate usurers are excommunicated.

The preceding, if pronounced *ex cathedra,* would be the dogmatic statement of a real *alter Christus,* a true *Papa Angelicus* and Petrine guardian of Biblical and Patristic Tradition, who does not weaken the fabric of truth by subterfuges and tricks with words, but whose yes is yes, and whose no is no. Whether such a bishop of Rome arises or not, the true Christian's war with the Money Power is perpetual.

[Page 628 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

The Vatican went into hock to the Rothschild bank in the the nineteenth century, when priests had to admit unrepentant practicing usurers to Communion. The Catholic laity were kept in the dark and pacified by thunderous bulls and encyclicals anathematizing Judaism, Freemasonry and avarice. Machiavelli could have devised an elementary con like this before his first cappuccino of the morning: denounce the Kings of the Deal all you like; if you permit them to control the money supply of the Church, then they are the rulers of the Church, post-Renaissance papal anathemas and the enforced ignorance of the pay-pray-and-obey sheeple, notwithstanding.

With respect to Pope Benedict XIV's 1745 encyclical *Vix Pervenit,* which has the reputation among Catholics of being a lofty and definitive rebuke to usury, we draw the reader's attention to the fact that the pope declined to apply any enforceable prohibition to the specific usury contracts he was addressing in the encyclical. We do not believe this was a mere oversight. Observe the methodology: the vast majority of the text of Pope Benedict XIV's encyclical is devoted to excoriating usury, while a small portion of it, what might be described as the document's "fine print," contains a loophole for profit on loans large enough to accommodate Catholic usury-banking. As far as imposing enforceable penalties and obstructions on Catholic lenders at interest, *Vix Pervenit* was an exercise in toothless semantics. Post-Renaissance predatory capitalism on the part of the followers of the Church of Rome continued to flourish in the wake of *Vix Pervenit.*

Far from being the ballyhooed bulwark against usury, *Vix Pervenit* was so ambiguous it generated tremendous confusion. Observe the testimony of the Bishop of Rheims as recorded in Denzinger 1609: "There is bitter dispute over the meaning of the Encyclical Letter, '*Vix pervenit*'... On both sides arguments are produced to defend the opinion each one has embraced, either favorable to such (usury) profit or against it.”

Vix Pervenit is part of the papal lexicon of trickery, employed by Pope Benedict XIV in 1745, and Pope Francis two hundred seventy-one years later. The same stratagem at work in Benedict’s *Vix Pervenit* is visible in the *Amoris Laetitia* of Francis:

“*Amoris* does *not*—again, let me repeat, does *not*— declare ministers of holy Communion bound to give the sacrament to divorced-and-remarried Catholics living as if married. Francis’ phrasing in several key passages of *Amoris* is, I have argued, malleable enough to allow bishops such as Chaput and Sample to reiterate the traditional Eucharistic discipline or, as the Buenos Aires bishops did, simply to pass ambiguous criteria down to local pastors to sort as best they can. But precisely because key passages of *Amoris* are also flexible enough to allow bishops to do as the Maltese have done and require Church ministers to distribute the Eucharist to Catholics who engage in ‘public and permanent adultery” (CCC 2384)—not to mention conferring absolution on penitents who express no purpose of amendment in regard to such conduct—all this, without doing violence to the actual text of *Amoris*.” [41]

[41] Edward Peters, Jan. 15, 2017, https://canonlawblog.wordpress.com/.

Neoplatonic-Hermeticism has no fixed abode in the household of dogma. Its god is the *zeitgeist*. When the Church of Rome gradually changed its position on God’s immemorial laws against profit on loans in accord with “changing times,” this revolution sent an electrifying message to insiders within and without the hierarchy: since Rome changed its prohibition on usury, Rome can change its dogma on contraception, divorce, premarital and extramarital sex, women priests and homosexual behavior.

The bane of Christian society is *situation ethics,* the substitution of human standards relative to the circumstances and context of the times, for immutable divine law. Let us recall that Rome continued to agitate against usury from the pulpit at the parish level, and kept the ignorant laity in the dark concerning the incremental revolution that had been put into motion in elite circles of Catholic banking; that was the genius of their process which would eventually create a legend that usury permission was a Protestant phenomenon.

We are largely defenseless today against the ravages of situation ethics due to the nullification of the mortal sin of interest on money, from which proceeds every other evil (I Tim. 6:10). Apologists argue that the Church of Rome has not nullified this mortal sin because it has “not promulgated any doctrinal decree on the subject." [42]

[42] With regard to the 1917 and 1983 Codes of Canon Law, the ambiguity of the 1917 Code permitted usury to flourish as usual. Canon 1294 of the 1983 Code, written when, then as now, usury dominated the world of investment, orders that ecclesiastical monies must be carefully invested—without issuing a word of caution against the ubiquity of usurious investments. Canon lawyers of the Church of Rome have interpreted the 1983 Code as permission for lending money at interest.

Surely the papists have heard it said, "By their fruits ye shall know them." This criterion was given by God Himself as the supreme discernment. May we dare to ask, what have been the fruits of the post-Renaissance Church with regard to the ascendance of the Money Power? Millions of Catholic usurers are free to practice their mortally sinful trade and receive the Eucharist, without either confessing or receiving absolution. "Catholic" institutions of usury have been established throughout the world, including in Vatican City. Perhaps we would better discern the degree of transgression at work here if, for usury, we were to substitute prostitution. If prostitutes, pimps and those who frequent them were to receive Holy Communion without having to confess their sin, and were given freedom, under papal auspices, to spread their moral contagion wherever it was allowed by secular law, including by establishing a brothel *coram populo* in Vatican City, could it still be asserted by sane persons that the Church of Rome had not, in practice, changed the dogma against fornication? Or would we salve our consciences by assuring ourselves that since no *ecclesiastical edict* had been pronounced in favor of it, the Church still upheld the mortal sinfulness of prostitution? At what point does a claim that theology has not been formally declared to have been altered, become little more than a double-minded alibi in the face of the *massive practice* of a soul-destroying transgression of God's law?

The allowance for usury and usurers in good standing in the post-Renaisance Church of Rome cannot be merely a sin of omission. This is not a matter of failure to enforce a dogma, it is *the active overthrow of the dogma* as shown by the rulings of the Holy Office and Penitentiary in the nineteenth century, beginning with the Pontificate of Pius VIII and his Bull *Datum in audientia* of Aug. 18, 1830, which granted absolution to usurers *who intended to persist in their usury.*

[The Breeders of Money Gain Dominion Page 631]

The 1917 Code of Canon Law promulgated by Pope Benedict XV, (though composed by churchmen appointed by Pope St. Pius X), which went into effect May 19, 1918, declared, "in the loan of a fungible thing, it is not by itself illicit to reap a legal profit." The 1983 Code of Canon Law promulgated by Pope John Paul II, in canons 1294 and 1305 repeat the permission for usury granted in the 1917 Code, and exceed it by requiring clerics in charge of church funds to invest them “profitably”—in other words by the readiest means available for doing so, whatever that might be according to the law of the land.

The *formal* overthrow of usury dogma in the 19th and 20th centuries by Popes Pius VIII, Benedict XV and John-Paul II, and the founding of the Vatican Bank in the 1940s by Pius XII, did not arise out of thin air. As with the nullification in Judaism of the Old Testament Law of God by gradual Talmudic modification and evasion, the loophole for profiting from loans of money under the name “extrinsic titles” and similar escape clauses, contributed significantly to the erosion and the overthrow of the Church’s dogma against usury.

Once the precedent for tampering with the Word of God has been established, our consciences and Christendom itself are henceforth ordered by the situation ethics intended to fit the occasion of our human wants and desires. Beware: our children are watching. Amid a world of exceedingly seductive sins that beckon to them on the basis that *the times they are a changin*,’ and that the laws decreed by God “require a new understanding,” our accommodation of the Money Power through profiting from loans of money, furnishes our young people the leeway to engage in mortal sins of *their choosing,* as the “situation” and the *zeitgeist* demand. As usual, Jesus is the antidote to this diabolical confusion. He presents us with a blessed alternative, giving direction on how we can become sons of the Most High God and receive a great reward: “Love your enemies... and lend, hoping for nothing in return.” (Luke 6:32-36).

Chapter XVII

A Prophecy Fulfilled

“Bartolomeo Brandano da Petroio of Siena (1488-1554) was born to a peasant family in Petroio, in the domain of Siena, presumably in 1488; his father was named Savino, the mother Meia, short for Bartolomea. It is uncertain whether the surname Carosi or Garosi, with which his descendants were known, among them the painter Ansehno... was already in use at this time. (His) nickname (was) Brandano, with which he was known during his preaching. The earliest records date from an autobiography, dictated at the end of his life to a follower, the Augustinian ‘John the Baptist,’ covering the years 1526 to 1535. It was during Lent of 1526 which established his conversion, occasioned by listening to a sermon of Brother Serafino from

Pistoia, after which Brandano was converted from a life of ‘great blasphemy, full of every vice,’ which he exchanged for a preaching mission to ‘take back and call to penance wretched and obstinate sinners.’ There followed heavenly visions of Christ, the Virgin Mary, the saints, and some say, even the stigmata. He became an apocalyptic preacher of doom and he was initially greeted by blatant mockery; persecuted and ridiculed though this did not discourage him from his mission. Exhorting prelates, clergy and people with a crucifix in one hand and a skull in the other, pronouncing penance, prophecy and invective in rhyme that made him famous, he attracted crowds willing to heed his drastic exhortations. Throughout the course of his itinerant preaching, which lasted about a decade, he preached in Rome, Narni and Siena in 1527; Orvieto and perhaps in Camerino in the following year; Volterra in 1529; in Tuscany in 1530; in 1531 in Atri; Bologna and Modena in 1532; and in the same years, repeatedly, to Loreto on a pilgrimage to the sanctuary, and in Spain, to Santiago de Compostela in 1530, the year in which it was remembered that he was in Madrid; the following year, he was reported in Zaragoza; in 1532. He apparently preached in Germany, ‘where he would also argue with many Lutherans.’ He expressed the sufferings of the common people with exhortations to sorrow for sin and penance, dramatic

references to the passion of Christ, and announcements of impending disasters.” [1]

---

[1] Cf. Gaspare De Caro, “Bartolomeo da Petroio, detto Brandano,” in *Il Dizionario Biografico degli Italiani* (1964), vol. 6, pp. 752-755.

Brandano had a particular antipathy toward the rise of the usury banks which he blamed on the Medici. Whether because, since the days of Dante’s *Inferno,* the sterility of usury was regarded as equivalent to sodomy, or due to having knowledge of actual homosexual acts by Medici Pope Clement VII, during Lent of 1527 he preached against the pontiff in Rome. For his trouble, Clement had him tossed into the Tiber river chained inside a chest. Legend has it that he survived the ordeal and emerged from the water unharmed.

During Holy Week in the same year Rome experienced what were regarded as ominous portents, including lighting strikes on the Vatican. Consequently, it was not a relaxed atmosphere when, as Clement VII was, per the annual papal custom, blessing the crowds on Maundy Thursday, Brandano da Petroio approached him and shouted, *“Bastardo sodomita! Per i tuoi peccati Roma sara distrutta”* (Sodomite bastard! For your sins Rome will be destroyed”).

He was immediately seized by Clement’s Swiss Guards and jailed, an arrest which did not sit well with the large crowds of penitents gathered at St. Peter’s. For fear of disorder, he was released to fanfare, as “a show of mercy” by the pope. This was a ruse, however. Three days later, on Easter Sunday, the pope had him quietly apprehended and imprisoned. Concerning whether it was intended that this should be a sentence of life imprisonment, the historical record is silent. What we do know is that a few weeks after Brandano had thundered his prophecy in the face of Clement VII, and while he languished in the pope's prison, the armies of the night approached the gates of Rome. Over the next several months the city would experience death and destruction on a scale seldom seen since the fall of the Roman empire and the invasion of the pagan hordes. Brandano da Petroio's prophecy was fulfilled in what has come to be known to posterity as the "Sack of Rome." Roberto de Mattei provides this account:

"On Sunday May 9, 1527, an army descending from Lombardy reached the Janiculum. The (Catholic Holy Roman) Emperor, Charles V, enraged at Pope Clement VII's political alliance with his adversary, the King of France, Francis I, had moved an army against the capital of Christendom. That evening the sun set for the last time on the dazzling beauties of Renaissance Rome. About 20,000 men, Italians, Spaniards and Germans, among whom were the Landsknecht mercenaries of the Lutheran faith, were preparing to launch an attack on the Eternal City. Their commander had given them license to sack the city.

"The Swiss Guards lined up around the Vatican Obelisk, resolute in their vow to remain faithful unto death. The last of them sacrificed their lives at the high altar in St. Peter's Basilica. Their resistance allowed the Pope along with some cardinals, the chance of escape. Across the Passetto di Borgo, the connecting road between the Vatican and Castel Sant'Angelo, Clement VII reached the fortress, the only bastion left against the enemy. From the height of the terraces, the Pope witnessed the terrible slaughter which initiated with the massacre of those who were crowding around the gates of the Castle looking for refuge, while the sick of Santo Spirito Hospital in Sassia were massacred, pierced by spears and swords.

"This unlimited license to steal and kill lasted eight days and the occupation of the city nine months. We read in a Veneto account of May 10, 1527, reported by Ludwig von Pastor, [2]

"Hell is nothing in comparison with the appearance Rome currently presents" The religious were the main victims of the Landsknechts' fury. Cardinals' palaces were plundered, churches profaned, priests and monks killed or made slaves, nuns raped and sold at markets. Obscene parodies of religious ceremonies were seen, chalices for Mass were used to get drunk amidst blasphemies. Sacred Hosts were roasted in a pan and fed to animals, the tombs of saints were violated, heads of the Apostles, such as St. Andrew, were used for playing football on the streets. A donkey was dressed up in ecclesiastical robes and led to the altar of a church. The priest who refused to give it Communion was hacked to pieces. The City was outraged in its religious symbols and in its most sacred memories.’ [3]

---

[2] *The History of Popes,* (Desclée, Rome 1942), vol. IV, 2, p. 261.

[3] Cf. André Chastel, *The Sack of Rome,* (Einaudi, Turin, 1983); and Umberto Roberto, *The Sack of the City from the Gauls to the Landsknechts,* (Laterza, Bari, 2012).

“...On October 17 the imperial troops abandoned a city in ruins. A Spanish eyewitness gives us a terrifying picture of the City a month after the Sack: ‘In Rome, the capital of Christendom, not one bell is ringing, the churches are not open, Mass is not being said and there are no Sundays nor feast days. The rich merchant shops are used as horse stables, the most splendid palaces are devastated, many houses burnt, in others the doors and windows broken up and taken away, the streets transformed into dung-heaps. The stench of cadavers is horrible: men and beasts have the same burials; in churches I saw bodies gnawed at by dogs. I don’t know how else to compare this, other than to the destruction of Jerusalem. Now I recognize the justice of God, who does not forget, even if He arrives late. In Rome all sins were committed quite openly: sodomy, simony, idolatry, hypocrisy and deceit; thus, we cannot believe that this all happened by chance; but for Divine justice”. [4]

[4] L. von Pastor, *History of Popes,* op. cit., p. 278.

“...Everyone understood that it was a chastisement from Heaven. There was no lack of premonitory warnings: lightening striking the Vatican and the appearance of a hermit, Brandano da Petroio, venerated by the crowds as ‘Christ’s Madman,’ who, on Holy Thursday 1527, while Clement VII was blessing the crowds in St. Peter’s shouted: “Sodomite bastard, for your sins Rome will be destroyed. Confess and convert, for in fourteen days the wrath of God will fall upon you and the City.” [5]

[5] Roberto de Mattei, (transl. Francesca Romana), *Corrispondenza Romana,* December 3, 2015, https://rorate-caeli.blogspot.com/2015/12/de-mattei-sack-of-rome-merciful.html.

Brandano had been freed. He was released “during the sack by the mercenaries who seemed to have an extraordinary respect...”

After the rampaging troops of the Holy Roman Emperor departed, calm was restored and the destruction in Rome was surveyed. In the following March (1528), Brandano followed

Pope Clement to Orvieto, where the remains of the papal court had been temporarily established, and haunted him there with more public preaching against his pontificate; only now the pope did not hazard to harm him.

Brandano's polemic against the rich and the corrupt continued to take the form of dramatic gestures of revolt and menace: as in Zaragoza, in 1531, when he called on the surrender of the usurious 'loot of all the religious and the rich.' So too in Bologna, the following year, when he preached against the clergy collections for the establishment of the *monte' di pietá* bank, an institution which he detested. He transformed it into a collection for the poor of Bologna, distributing the monies directly to them. [6]

[6] Cf. De Caro, op.cit.

In 1539 the tatterdemalion ceased his peripateticism and settled in Siena, his birthplace, where he enjoyed the protection of the people, and of the local nobility. He is reputed late in life to have joined the Congregation of the Augustinians of Lecceto. He worked in Siena's hospital of Santa Maria della Scala until he became too weak to do so. He died of natural causes on May 24, 1554, aged sixty-eight.

His body lay in state for three days in the Church of St. Martin before his burial, and here we encounter something of a minor mystery. Brandano asked that the location of his grave be left unknown, though whether from reasons of humility, or apprehension over the likelihood of the desecration of his remains by his enemies, has not been determined.

In 1612 local church authorities in Siena issued an edict proclaiming him "Blessed Brandano." This recognition of his sanctity was never confirmed by any pontiff however, and therefore he remains officially, perhaps as he would wish to be known, simply as Brother Brandano.

Historian Judith Hook has penned his most pithy epitaph: "Bartolomeo Carosi da Petroio, known to the Sienese as Brandano (Brendan), whose opposition to urban values was as staunch as any medieval saint. His hatred of the market knew no bounds and he attributed all human misery to banks." [7]

[7] Judith Hook, *Siena: A City and Its History* (1979), p. 137.

Chapter XVIII

An Occult Miscellany

I

A Commentary on a Kabbalistic image printed in the Syriac New Testament

The cover of this book reprints an illustration from the *Liber sacrosancti evangelii de Iesu Christo Domino* of 1555, which marked the first time in the West that the *Peshitta* ("simple") edition of the New Testament in Syriac (a variant of Aramaic), was published, and which caused a sensation in Europe and Britain. [1]

Our cover reprints the woodcut which precedes the Gospel of John in this Syriac New Testament. This illustration was added to the text by two of the Church of Rome's Kabbalists. It is the most elaborate of the volume's six illustrations. It portrays the evangelist at the foot of a crucifix made to resemble a *Sefiroth,* emanating symbolic Kabbalistic representations of each of Jesus Christ's wounds. It is one of the most unabashed symbols of the Church of Rome's Kabbalistic orientation outside of the secret archives of the Vatican itself.

The volume containing the illustration was funded by the future Holy Roman Emperor, Ferdinand I, as part of what was known at the time as the Catholic school of "Orientalism." The Syriac New Testament was dedicated to "Ferdinand, King of Hungary and Bohemia, Archduke of Austria and Duke of Burgundy." Ostensibly published for Syriac-speaking Christians who had long sought a New Testament in their own language, with the inclusion of the Kabbalistic illustration, the book was an opportunity for visually propagating a Renaissance *revelation:* the identification of Jesus Christ with Kabbalistic arcana.

[Page 638 An Occult Miscellany]

This was similar to the propaganda by which Reuchlin's Kabbalism had been puffed in Christendom: as a progressive development in the language arts. With the publication of the Syriac New Testament, the Kabbalah/Christ symbolism printed within it was given wide dissemination by virtue of its inclusion in what became a treasured volume in the library of the leading Orientalists of the age. In both Reuchlin's case and here, with this Syriac text, moral objections by true Catholics to the introduction of Kabbalistic gnosis were characterized as the reactionary ignorance of backward ultraconservatives who were obstructing Renaissance learning and progress.

---

[1] The first edition had a print-run of one thousand copies, of which three hundred were given to Moses of Mardin to take to the Patriarch of Antioch. A second edition was produced by Michael Zimmermann ("Cymbermannus"), in 1562, after obtaining an imperial license to use the prized Syriac type.

Teseo Ambrogio (1469-1540), Canon of the Lateran Church, and “Egidio da Viterbo” (Cardinal Giles of Viterbo), “were the main scholars in the construction of Orientalism, within which the first printed Syriac New Testament was produced... This *editio princeps* of the first printed Syriac New Testament was the product of... cooperation between a Syriac scribe sent by the Patriarch of Antioch, Moses of Mardin, and two (Catholic) scholars, (Rev. Fr.) Guillaume Postel (1510-1581), and Johann Albrecht Widmanstetter (1506-1557), working under the patronage of Ferdinand I... The Gospel of John... is illustrated with the Sefirotic tree (a *sefirot* being a divine incarnation of God in the Kabbalah), which is a Tree of Life with ten attributes...” [2]

[2] Cf. Max Engammare, *Renaissance Quarterly* (Winter, 2008), p. 1315.

“...the northern scholars who had been involved in the production in Vienna of the 1555 *editio princeps* of the Syriac New Testament... are most helpfully characterized as Christian Kabbalists.” [3]

[3] Robert J. Wilkinson, *The Kabbalistic Scholars of the Antwerp Polyglot* (2007).

[The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome Page 639]

Widmanstetter, with help from Postel,[4]

[4] Catholic priest Guillaume Postel contributed to the rise of Rosicrucianism, having exerted a significant influence on several circles linked to the Rosicrucian movement: “The meaning of the mysterious name of the (Rosicrucian) Brotherhood seems to have a relationship to Postel and his self-designated name Rorispergius... both *ros* and *rosa* are significant for Postel. By his name Rorispergius, Postel claimed to be the one chosen to scatter God’s dew (ros)... Postel constantly uses the word *ros* in the context of resurrection and rebirth, or a general resurrection of mankind into a new spiritual man (which) was the very foundation of the general reformation or rebirth which the Rosicrucian documents proclaim... In 1623 Gabriel Naudé, in his *Instruction a la France sur verité de la Roze-Croix*... devotes ten pages in his rather short book to Postel... indicative that Postel had been associated in the minds of his contemporaries with the strange new movement, the Rosicrucians, and that this association continued into the seventeenth century and later... Variations of Postel’s symbol(ism) can be seen in numerous Rosicrucian documents... The documents and drawings associated with Rosicrucianism have their counterparts in texts of Postel... the language which Postel uses to describe... the ‘chemical marriage of the sun and the moon... Frances Yates numbers him among the Illuminati in *The Rosicrucian Enlightenment*.” Cf. Marion L. Kuntz, *Guillaume Postel: Prophet of the Restitution of All Things* (1981), pp. 106 and 174-177.

published the superb *editio princeps* of the Syriac New Testament in Vienna in 1555. The edition features a symbolic Kabbalistic illustration, a woodcut of the Apostle John receiving the inspiration for his Gospel, which links both a crucifix and a *sefirotic* tree, “thus neatly symbolizing the confluence of Christian gospel and Jewish mysticism.” [5]

[5] Robert J. Wilkinson, *The Kabbalistic Scholars,* pp. 77-78.

“The Kabbalistic symbolism in the illustration, making the Crucifixion and the wounds of Christ analogous to the Ten Sefiroth of the Kabbalah is ascribed to Postel, who claimed it as his own work in *De Magia orientali*: ‘Postel writes mentioning the editio princeps and the Sefirotic Tree as his work.’

“The symbolism includes the chalice of the Holy Sacrifice of the Mass, ‘marking the point of contact between upper and lower worlds. The world is clearly represented by the orb and the Zodiac band and set in front of it is the Menorah. The Evangelist’s symbol, the eagle, is present wearing a Hapsburg shield on its breast.” [6]

[6] Robert J. Wilkinson, *Orientalism, Aramaic and Kabbalah in the Catholic Reformation,* pp. 184-185.

[Page 640 An Occult Miscellany]

“At the top, the illustration carries the words, *Quis expansis in cruce manibus, traxisti omnia ad te Secula* (Thou who spreading out thy hands upon the Cross, drew all the ages to thyself). This expression is Patristic, rather than Biblical. A version of it was used by Irenaeus, Athanasius and Cyril of Jerusalem, emphasizing Christ’s arm, hand or extremities in relation to *raising* the Kingdom of God and *delivering* His people.” [7]

[7] Cf. Wilkinson, *Orientalism*, op.cit., p. 183.

Postel’s colleague, Johann Albrecht Widmanstetter (1506-1557), was a protégé of Johannes Reuchlin. He studied law at Tübingen, Basel and Heidelberg universities. In 1530 he was mentored by “Samuel Abrabanel (or Abarbanel), the head of the Neapolitan Jewish colony, and deepened his knowledge of Talmud…” He was invited to Rome by Cardinal Giles of Viterbo in 1532. In 1533 he became secretary to Pope Clement VII and then in 1534, the Kabbalist Widmanstetter became secretary to Pope Paul III, and from 1535-1537 secretary to Cardinal Nikolaus of Schönberg. Afterward he was “secret counselor of the Germans (*Geheimrat der Deutschen*) in the Holy See, and in 1541 emissary of Duke Ludwig X of Bayern-Landshut to the Reichstag of Regensburg. Under King Ferdinand I, he was appointed Chancellor of lower Austria in 1553, and later Superintendent of the University of Vienna. He was ordained a Catholic priest months before he died on March 28, 1557. His tomb is in Regensburg cathedral.” [8]

[8] Cf. Ulisse Cecini, “Johann Albrecht Widmanstetter,” in *Christian-Muslim Relations: A Bibliographical History,* vol. 7 (2015), pp. 235 and 242.

In the illustration linking Jesus to the Kabbalistic tree, Postel and Widmanstetter, were faithfully executing the Kabbalistic vision of their patron, the late Cardinal Giles of Viterbo who associated the ten sefiroth with the “Tenth Age”—the pontificate of Pope Leo X. Viterbo believed that as a Medici, Pope Leo was of Etruscan origin and thereby destined for a cosmic role by hereditary right. Like Ficino and Pico and the overwhelming majority of the Catholic occult-conspirators we have tracked, Giles of Viterbo dedicated his occultism in total fealty to the popes, as heralds of what the Cardinal termed the Catholic-sefirotic, "Tenth Age" of Kabbalistic glory. In Viterbo's occult schema, Pope Leo X is hailed as the first pope of the Tenth Age, when, "All secrets will be revealed: those of the divine world through the Kabbalah, and those of the created world by voyages of discovery. Mankind will be brought into a new intellectual and religious unity under the Papacy." [9]

[9] Wilkinson, *Orientalism.* op. cit., p. 39.

Widmanstetter stated in the Syriac book's dedication to Ferdinand (who in 1558 would succeed Charles V as Holy Roman Emperor), that more scholars than ever were qualified to read Syriac, Hebrew and Chaldean. Widmanstadt made no direct reference to the illustration itself. Thus, by misdirection, a blasphemous image associating Jesus Christ and rabbinic magic, successfully infiltrated a valuable Catholic volume of the New Testament, aimed at a highly literate and elite readership.

II

Pa-pa Francis and his parrot familiar

News agencies reported in January, 2014: "Among the newest recipients of Pope Francis' good will is the parrot of Francesco Lombardi, a male stripper-turned-pornographic film actor (stage name: 'Ghyblj'). Pope Francis gladly blessed and held a green parrot named *Amore* that was offered to him by his owner, Lombardi. In the pope-mobile during his general audience, Francis initially drove by the parrot, but then doubled back and took the bird on his finger.

The parrot *Amore* ('Love'), was passed to the Pope. The crowd watched as he (Pope Francis) leaned from the pope-mobile in St. Peter's Square to hold the bird on his finger and bless it. Later, Lombardi told the media that *Amore* said 'Pa-pa' during the encounter, mocking the people's chant." [10]

[10] Associated Press, January 29, 2014; and *Time magazine,* January 31, 2014.

Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart’s *Die Zauberflöte (The Magic Flute),* which premiered in 1791, featured rituals of the Freemasons. “*The Magic Flute*... is a *Singspeil*— a spoken play comprising substantial music scenes set in a vaudeville Egypt, typically outfitted with hieroglyphic stage sets and partly based on pseudo-Egyptian (Rite of Memphis and Mizraim) Masonic rituals. Furthermore, one of its crucial themes is the contrast between discursive language and some more powerful means of communication...”

In *The Magic Flute,* a central character is “Papageno—his name is Italian for parrot... (he) is dressed in a costume of feathers—can’t stop talking, boasting, telling lies... a priest threatens him with the direst punishment by thunder and lightning if he says one word — but of course he can’t be quiet for even a minute. When at last the merciful theocrats forgive him his blabbering, and even provide a little wife (Papagena) for him, the parrot-pair bursts in full crow: Pa-pa... [11]

[11] Daniel Albright, *Untwisting the Serpent: Modernism in Music, Literature and Other Arts* (University of Chicago, 2000), p. 42.

Papageno possesses a set of magic bells. He is half-man, half parrot and works as a bird catcher.

The opera’s libretto was written by Emanuel Schikaneder with assistance from Mozart. The two were Masonic lodge brothers. [12]

[12] M. F. M. Van Den Berk, *The Magic Flute: Die Zauberflote: an Alchemical Allegory* (Brill, 2004) cf. chapter one: “On the Trail of Hermes,” and pp. 156-167.

“Immediately after the solemn gathering of Sarastro and his priests, Papageno and Tamino are visited by two priests, who ask them what has led them to this place. Tamino gives a straight answer: he is in search of teachings of wisdom, ‘*Weisheislehre*.’

“The priest then asks Papageno: Do you also want to struggle for the love of wisdom?

“Papageno replies: “Struggling is not my thing. Basically, I really do not need any wisdom at all...’

“Papageno is Hermes Mercurius...” [13]

[13] Van Den Berk, ibid.

“When he was twelve years of age, Mozart composed *Bastien and Bastienne,* a small work still performed occasionally; its first performance was in the gardens of Dr. Anton Mesmer, a member of the Egyptian Rite of Masonry whose ‘animal magnetism’ is today known as ‘mesmerism.” [14]

[14] Cf. Jacques Chailley, *The Magic Flute, Masonic Opera:* An *Interpretation of the Libretto and the Music.*

“The reigning pontiff, Nicholas V... dreamed of rebuilding the whole city (of Rome) on Renaissance principles... part of the dream was partly realized and the *Cortile del Papagallo* (Parrot’s Court) became the centerpiece of a new palazzo.” [15]

[15] George L. Hersey, *High Renaissance Art in St. Peter’s and the Vatican* (University of Chicago, 1993), p. 98.

“We can now behold the massive substructure of the Sistine Chapel, which mounts high into the air besides St. Peter’s. A plain portal inserted in the buttresses of the building gives access to the *Cortile della Toree Borgia* (Court of the Borgia Tower). A few steps more and we reach the *Cortile del Papagallo* (Parrot’s Court) ...Later, all the papal palaces in Italy, and even that in Avignon, possessed a *Sala dei Papagalli* (Parrot’s Hall).” [16]

[16] Ernesto Begni, *The Vatican: Its History, Its Treasures* (New York, 1914) pp. 25-26.

The “Courtyard of the Parrot” is located in the oldest part of the Vatican Palace proper, between the *Sala Ducale* and the apartment of Alexander VI.

The familiar of the pirate is a parrot.

Rather than using a broomstick, Mary Poppins flies through the air by means of a parrot-handled umbrella.

“Black Magic... has always one definite characteristic. It is the tendency to use people for some, even the best of aims, without their knowledge and understanding... by producing in them faith and infatuation...”

P.L. Travers

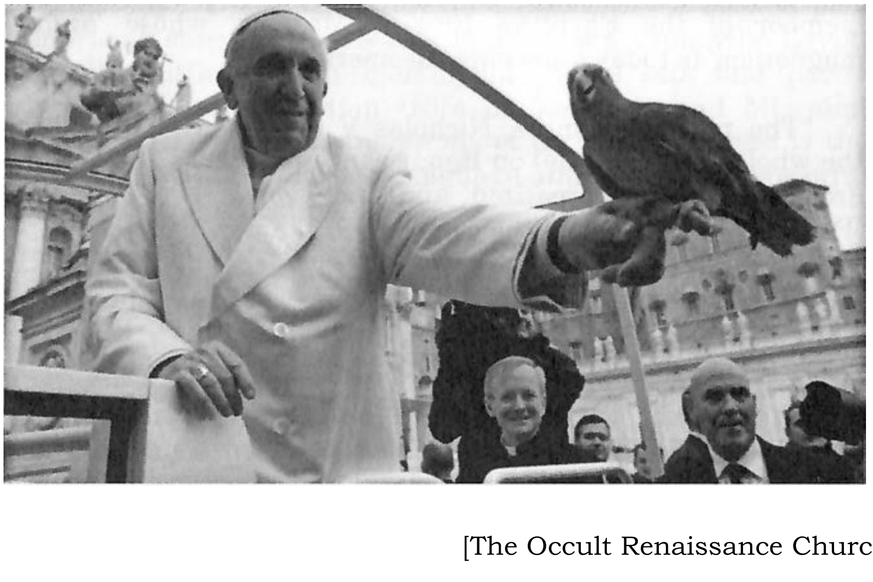

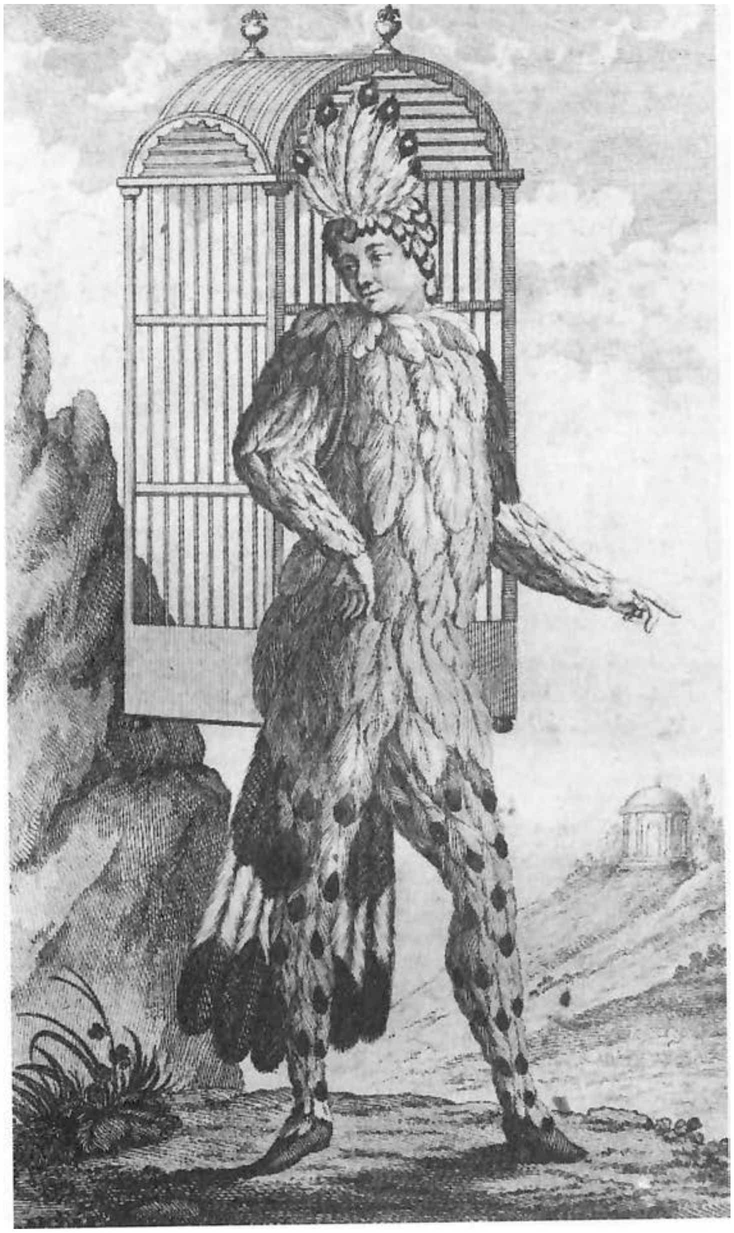

Papageno the bird-catcher, in *The Magic Flute.*

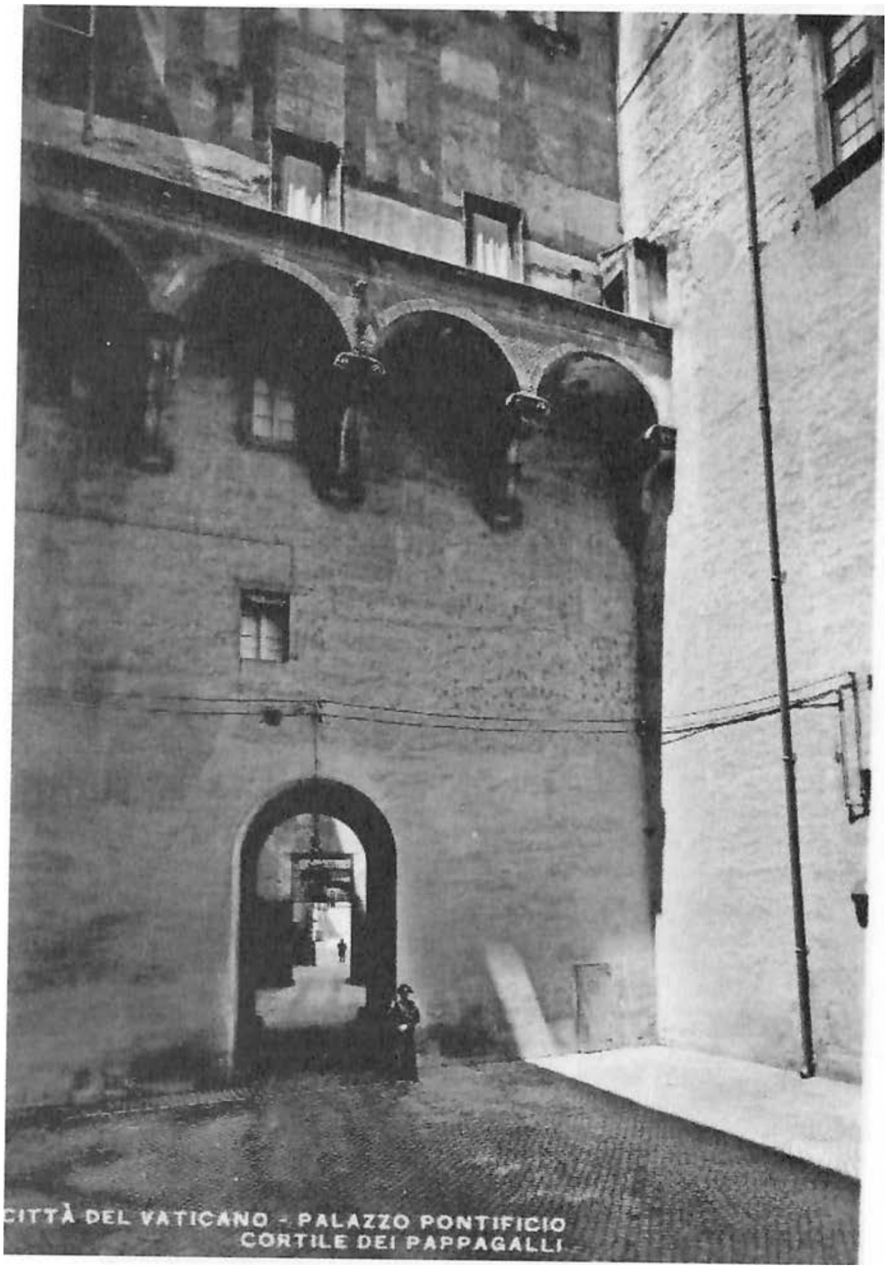
CITTÀ DEL VATICANO - PALAZZO PONTIFICIO
CORTILE DEI PAPPAGALLI

[The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome Page 647]

Appendix

The Influence of Neoplatonic Thought on Freemasonry: Pico della Mirandola and his *Oratio de Hominis Dignitate*

Fabio Venzi [1]

[1] Venzi is, as of this writing, Grand Master of the Regular Grand Lodge of Italy. The Regular Grand Lodge of Italy is affiliated with the United Grand Lodge of England and Scotland, and the Grand Orient of Italy.

...we shall attempt to find references, within the thought and work of Pico, through which, to demonstrate, the link with the Masonic project of the “construction of man.” Among the numerous definitions of Freemasonry in circulation, I must confess that few seem to me to be comprehensive. In my opinion, Freemasonry is not an “orthodoxy”; instead, it has the characteristics of an “orthopraxy,” a code, to personal and social conduct, based on ethical-moral principles, substantially separated by a real theoretical essence.

In the light of such a statement, where can we find the connection with the thought of Pico? The answer is to be found by analyzing Pico’s concept of “Dignity.” If Freemasonry is a code of conduct, the dignity of man is a journey, a route, which may lead to the transcendent, to God, or rather, to the Great Architect of the Universe. So, Freemasonry is a code of conduct, but has a transcendent aspect to it, due to its desire for identification, to become nearer to an absolute, irrepresentable. This absolute irrepresentable, is the Great Architect of the Universe.

In the Neoplatonic thought, the human soul, is directed, both toward God and toward the body, that is, both toward the intelligible, and toward the corporeal world. These ideas are embodied in Ficino’s scheme of a universal hierarchy in which the human soul occupies a privileged, central, place: God, the Angelic Mind, the Rational Soul, Quality and Body.

The same ideas, are taken up, and further developed by Pico, in his famous *Oratio of the Dignity of Man.* Pico stresses, especially, man’s freedom to choose his way of life. Consequently, man no longer occupies any fixed place in the universal hierarchy, not even the privileged central place, but he is entirely detached from that hierarchy, and constitutes a world in himself:

“I have given thee, Adam, no fixed seat, no form of thy very own, no gift peculiarly thine... In conformity with thy free judgment in whose hands I have placed thee, thou art confined by no bonds, and thou wilt fix the limits of thy nature for thyself... Neither heavenly nor earthly, neither mortal nor immortal have We made thee. Thou... art the moulder and maker of thyself... Thou canst grow downward into the lower natures which are brutes. Thou canst again grow upward from the mind’s reason into the higher natures which are divine.”

Pico’s originality of thought stems from his hermeneutic approach, which is not to be found in any other thinker of his time. In fact, his interdisciplinarity is a unique case in the history of Renaissance philosophy, with his attempts to find “agreement” between Platonism and Aristotelianism, and the religious syncretism present in his own Christian Cabalism.

Pico goes even further, and emphasizes that all religious and philosophical traditions have a share in a common, universal truth. Pagan, Jewish and Christian theologians and also all philosophers who supposedly contradict each other, Plato and Aristotle, Avicenna, and Averroes, Thomas and Scotus, and many others, have had a good many insights into truth. When Pico included propositions from all these authors among his *Nine Hundred Theses,* it was his underlying intention to illustrate this universality of truth, which justified his endeavor to incorporate and defend doctrines from so many different sources. This syncretism of Pico provided the foundation for a broad conception of religious and philosophical tolerance.

... (In) *The Oration*... as the great Eugenio Garin recalls: “there are only a few pages, but they mark an era, ancient and still contemporary. They ask for peace between doctrines, a concordance of beliefs; they tell of the continuity and convergence of man’s efforts, to pursue the light; they realize the significance of man in the world, and of his vocation. Man’s importance is in his responsibility; in his freedom. Man is the

only being in reality that chooses his own destiny; only he affects history and frees himself from the conditions of nature; he dominates nature... The conscious image of man typical of the modern world comes from there: man is involved in the act which constitutes him, and has the ability to set himself free. In this concept there is the condemnation of every oppression, slavery and conditioning.”

According to Pico, God did not create man in his own image, as the Catholic orthodox theologians stated; rather, he gave man the faculty to create his own image. This extolling of man’s creative faculties, of his chosen freedom, has led many scholars to identify within the concept of “free will,” which distinguishes man from the rest of humanity, the most important concept in the thought of Pico about man.

But what interests us most of all for the purposes of this essay, is the ethical thought of Pico, and without doubt the *Oration* can be defined as the quintessence of Pico’s ethical-moral speculation. The fundamental similarity between the three fundamental stages on man’s path of accession to the supreme good, found in the *Oration* and the three degrees on the Masonic path to perfection of the individual (Entered Apprentice, Fellow of the Craft and Master Mason), is one of the key points of our belief in the influence of Pico’s ethics, on Masonic philosophy.

If, in fact for Pico, the first of his three stages is the “purification of vices with the help of ethics,” for Freemasonry the first of its three degrees is characterized by “principles of morality and virtue,” and we can therefore, rightly define it as a degree of ethics. The second stage of Pico’s path is the “perfection of reason, by means of dialect, and natural philosophy,” which corresponds to the second Masonic degree, that of Fellow of the Craft. In fact, we see, in the Ceremony of Passing from the degree of Entered Apprentice, to that of Fellow of the Craft, the Worshipful Master turns to the Brother and says: “as you learned the principles of moral Truth and Virtue in the previous degree, now you may extend your enquiries to the hidden mysteries of Nature and Science.”

Therefore, in this second degree, the Freemason perfects his consciousness, through “human reason.” The third and final stage of Pico’s ethical thought, contained in the *Oration,* is the consciousness of the Divine, which corresponds to the third degree of Freemasonry, that of Master Mason, which concludes the esoteric path of Freemasonry. In fact, we read in the ritual, that the Worshipful Master says to the Brother: “Advancing further, still guiding your progress by the principles of moral truth, may you be steered into the second degree, to see the intellectual faculty of it, and track your development in it, through the paths of celestial science, unto the throne of God himself.” And he continues, “Allow me now to point out to you, that the light of a Master Mason is darkness visible, which serves only to express that shadow, which shrouds future prospects. That is the mysterious veil, which the eye of human reason cannot penetrate without the help of the Light, which comes from above.”

... We can conclude that, just as in Masonic thought, ethics, the philosophy of nature, and the approach to the Divine represent the principal degrees of consciousness in Pico’s ethics, through which man must pass. A first preparatory stage of consciousness, represented by Ethics, that is moral science, requires that man be set free by a passion for pleasure. For Pico, it is only through Ethics, that the destruction of men between different states may be ended, and long-lasting peace be established on earth.

In the next stage, the *Philosophia Moralis* gives way to the *Philosophia Naturalis*, which leads man along the road to consciousness of reality. It is through philosophy that the secrets of nature are revealed to man, and this is the principle function of philosophy. The final stage is that in which human reasoning, prepared and educated by philosophy, will reveal a consciousness of the deepest secrets, concerning the system of the universe.

Who, in philosophy, has represented better than Pico, the fundamental Masonic allegory of coarse stone, after hard work, being turned into smooth stone? Throughout the *Oration,* man is portrayed, as moulder of himself, in an absolutely arbitrary way...

For the Mirandolian in fact, man’s happiness does not come from the possession of truth, but solely from pursuit of the typical platonic concept of Eros.

For Pico and for the Freemason, it is not possessing the truth that is important, but its pursuit, the enquiry that we undertake, in order to investigate it, and it is in this extreme display of free will, that one’s spiritual power is demonstrated. In light of this, any constraint in religion according to Pico, is

absolutely reprehensible, and the *Libertas credendi* is essential, because true faith can only be borne out of freedom.

According to Pico, “even man’s sin does not constitute, an ineradicable defect in his nature, because in his nature one can only see the correlative and the opposite of something different, and superior. It was necessary that man be capable of sin, so that he may become capable of good.” Pico’s fundamental concept is that man, in good as in evil, is never concluded; he may never rest secure in good, and is never in the power of evil without hope of redemption.

Lives, which lead to good and evil, are never precluded from one another, and the decision lies in his own hands: thus, according to a follower of Pico, man’s sin is not merely a fault, on the contrary it is an expression of that force which makes the same man capable of doing good. And his freedom may demonstrate all its power only when he is capable of moulding his own existence, and to do this, it is necessary to pass through the various stages of existence. [2]

[2] www.cornerstonesociety.com (2004). [https://es.scribd.com/document/66951989/The-Influence-of-Neoplatonic-Thought-on-Freemasonry-Fabio-Venzi]

Bibliography

Abbott, Walter M., ed., *The Documents of Vatican II* (America Press, 1966).

Abraham, Lyndy, A *Dictionary of Alchemical Imagery* (Cambridge University, 1998).

Adkins, Lesley, *The Keys of Egypt* (HarperCollins, 2000).

Adler, Jeremy, “Book of Splendour,” *Times Literary Supplement,* November 4, 2016.

Agrippa, Henricus Cornelius, *Declamation on the Nobility and Preeminence of the Female Sex* (University of Chicago, 1996).

Agrippa, Henricus Cornelius, *Three Books of Occult Philosophy,* transl. James Freake (Llewellyn, 2004).

Akerman-Hjern, Susanna, “De Sapientia Salomonis: Emanuel Swedenborg and the Kabbalah,” *in Lux in Tenebris: The Visual and the Symbolic in Western Esotericism* (Brill, 2007).

Albertini, Rudolf von, *Firenze dalla Repubblica al Principato Storia e Coscienza Politica* (Einaudi, 1970).

Aligheri, Dante, *The Divine Comedy,* transl. Robin Kirkpatrick (Penguin Books, 2013).

Allen, Michael J.B., *Plato's Third Eye: Studies in Marsilio Ficino's Metaphysics and its Sources* (Ashgate, 1995).

Altholz, Josef L., "Truth and Equivocation," *Church History,* March 1975.

Amram, David, *The Makers of Hebrew Books in Italy* (London: Holland Press, 1963).

Anderson, Charles A., *Philo of Alexandria's Views of the Physical World* (Mohr Siebeck, 2011).

Angus, Samuel, *The Mystery-Religions and Christianity* (University Books, 1966).

Aquinas, Thomas, Saint, *Summa Contra Gentiles,* 4 vols., transl. Vernon J. Bourke (University of Notre Dame, 1975).

Aquinas, Thomas, Saint, The Summa Theologica, 5 vols., (Christian Classics, 1981).

Armogathe, Jean-Robert, "Caramuel: A Cistercian Casuist," in *Juan Caramuel Lobowitz: The Last Scholastic Polymath* (Institute of Philosophy, 2008).

Augustine, Saint, *The City of God Against the Pagans,* transl. R.W. Dyson (Cambridge University, 2011).

Augustine, Saint, "Against the Manicheans" and "Against the Donatists," in A *Select Library of the Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers of the Christian Church,* vol. 4 (Eerdmans, 1996).

Austin, Eugene, *The Ethics of the Cambridge Platonists* (University of Pennsylvania, 1935).

Austin, Kenneth, *From Judaism to Calvinism: The Life and Writings of Immanuel Tremellius* (Ashgate, 2007).

Backus, Irena, "Jacques Lefévre d'Etaples: A Humanist or a Reformist View of Paul?" in A *Companion to Paul in the Reformation* (Brill, 2009).

Bagchi, David V.N., *Luther's Earliest Opponents: Catholic Controversialists, 1518-1525* (Fortress Press, 1991).

Bailey, Derrick Sherwin, *Homosexuality and the Western Christian Tradition* (Archon Books, 1975).

Bailey, Michael David, *Magic and Superstition in Europe* (Rowman & Littlefield, 2007).

Baker, Nicholas Scott, *The Fruit of Liberty: Political Culture in the Florentine Renaissance, 1480-1550* (Harvard University 2013.)

Bakhtin, Mikhail, *Rabelais and His World* (Indiana University Press, 2009).

Balas, Edith, *Michelangelo's Medici Chapel* (American Philosophical Society, 1995).

Baldassarri, Stefano Ugo (ed.), *Images of Quattrocento Florence: Selected Writings in Literature, History, and Art* (Yale University, 2000).

Balthasar, Hans Urs von, *The Theology of Henri de Lubac* (Ignatius Press, 1991).

Barrat, James, *Our Final Invention: Artificial Intelligence* (St. Martin's Press, 2015).

Basri, Rabbi Ezra, *Ethics of Business Finance & Charity* (Jerusalem: Haktav Press, 1988).

Basser, Herbert W., "Kabbalistic Teaching in the Commentary on Job," in *Biblical Interpretation in Judaism and Christianity* (T&T Clark International, 2006).

Baumann, Priscilla, "The Deadliest Sin: Warnings against Avarice and Usury on Romanesque Capitals in Auvergne," in *Church History,* March 1990.

Baxter, Richard, *A Christian Directory: or a sum of practical theologie and cases of conscience* (London, 1673).

Bedouelle, Guy, *Jacques Lefévre d'Etaples et l'intellegence des Ecritures* (Droz, 1976).

Beitchman, P., *Alchemy of the Word: Cabala of the Renaissance* (State University of New York, 1998).

Bellarmine, Robert, *Doctrina Christiana: The Timeless Catechism of St. Robert Bellarmine,* transl. Ryan Grant (Mediatrix Press, 2016).

Belloc, Hilaire, "On Usury" in *Essays of a Catholic Layman in England* (Sheed and Ward, 1931).

Bertolini, Marco, ed., *Lodovico Lazzarelli: Fasti Christianae Religionis* (Naples, 1991).

Berger, David, *The Jewish-Christian Debate in the High Middle Ages* (1996).

Berry, Jason, *Render unto Rome: The Secret Life of Money in the Catholic Church* (Random House, 2011).

Berry, Jason, and Renner, Gerald, Berry *Vows of Silence: The Abuse of Power in the Papacy of John Paul II* (Free Press, 2004).

Bietenholz, Peter G., and Deutscher, Thomas B., (eds.), *Contemporaries of Erasmus, Volumes 1-3* (University of Toronto, 2003).

Bjornstad, James and Johnson, S., *Stars, Signs and Salvation in the Age of Aquarius* (1971).

Black, Crofton, *Pico's Heptaplus and Biblical Hermeneutics* (Brill, 2006).

Blakeney, R.P., *Saint Alphonsus Liguori: Extracts Translated from the Moral Theology,* (London, 1852).

Blanchett, M.H., *Georgios Gennadios Scholarios* (Paris, 2008).

Blau, J.L., *The Christian Interpretation of the Cabala in the Renaissance* (Kennikat Press, 1965).

Blumenthal, Uta-Renate, *Papal Reform and Canon Law in the llth and 12th Centuries* (Ashgate, 1998).

Bogdan, Henrik, and Starr, Martin P., *Aleister Crowley and Western Esotericism* (Oxford University Press, 2012).

Bono, James J., *The Word of God and the Languages of Man: Interpreting Nature in Early Modern Science and Medicine -Volume I: From Ficino to Descartes* (University of Wisconsin).

Borchardt, Frank L., "The Magus as Renaissance Man," in *Sixteenth Century Journal* (no. 1, 1990).

Bori, Pier Cesare, "The Historical and Biographical Background of the Oration," in *Pico della Mirandola Oration on the Dignity of Man: A New Translation and Commentary* (Cambridge University, 2012).

Brackett, John K., "The Florentine Onestá and the Control of Prostitution, 1403-1680," in *Sixteenth Century Journal* (no. 2, 1993).

Brann, Noél L., *Trithemius and Magical Demonology* (State University of New York, 1999).

Brier, Bob, *Cleopatra's Needles: The Lost Obelisks of Egypt* (Bloomsbury, 2016).

Brier, Bob, *Egyptomania: Our Three Thousand Year Obsession with the Land of the Pharaohs* (Palgrave Macmillan, 2013).

Brod, Max, *Johannes Reuchlin und sein Kampf: Eine historische Monographie* (1965).

Brown, Driver and Briggs, *A Hebrew and English Lexicon of the Old Testament* (Oxford University, 1972).

Brown, Meg Lota, *Donne and the Politics of Conscience in Early Modern England,* (Brill, 1995).

Bruno, Giordano, *Giordano Bruno: Cause, Principle and Unity* (Cambridge University, 1998).

Bruscoli, Francesco Guidi, *Papal Banking in Renaissance Rome: Benvenuto Olivieri and Paul III, 1534-1549* (Ashgate, 2007).

Budé, Guillaume, *Annotationes in quattuor et viginti Pandectarum libros* (1508).

Budge, E.A. Wallis, *The Mummy: A History of the Extraordinary Practices of Ancient Egypt* (Random House, 1989).

Bull, Malcolm, *The Mirror of the Gods: How Renaissance Artists Rediscovered the Pagan Gods* (Oxford University, 2005).

Bullard, Melissa, *Filippo Strozzi and the Medici: Favor and Finance in Sixteenth Century Florence and Rome* (Cambridge University, 1980).

Burkert, Walter, *Lore and Science in Ancient Pythagoreanism* (Harvard University, 1972).

Burnett, John, *Early Greek Philosophy* (Meridian, 1965).

Burnett, Stephen G., *Christian Hebraism in the Reformation Era* (2012). Byrne, Susan, *Ficino in Spain* (University of Toronto, 2015).

Cajetan, Cardinal Thomas, *On Exchange and Usury* (CLP Academic, 2014).

Calcidius, On *Plato's Timaeus,* transl. John Magee (Harvard University, 2016).

Caldiero, Frank M. "The Source of Hamlet's 'What a Piece of Work is a Man!" *Notes and Queries* 196 (1951).

Calvin, John, *Institutes of the Christian Religion: Calvin's Own Essential Edition* (Banner of Truth Trust, 2014).

Campannini, Saverio, "Introduction," in *The Book of Bahir: Flavius Mithridates' Latin Translation, The Hebrew Text, and an English Version.* [The Kabbalistic Library of Giovanni Pico della Mirandola, vol. II], (Torino: Nino Aragno Editore, 2005).

Campannini, Saverio, "On Abraham's Neck: The Editio Princeps of the Sefer Yesirah," in *Rabbi Judah Moscato and the Jewish Intellectual World of Mantua* (Brill, 2012).

Campannini, Saverio, *"Pici Bibliotheca Cabbalistica Latina: Sulle traduzioni latine di opere cabbalistiche eseguite da Flavio Mitridate per Pico della Mirandola,"* in *Materia Giudaica* v. 7, no. 1 (2002).

Campannini, Saverio, "Talmud, Philosophy and Kabbalah" in *The Words of a Wise Man's Mouth are Gracious* (Walter de Gruyter, 2005).

Campbell, Joseph, *Mythic Worlds, Modern Worlds* (2003).

Cape, Ruth I., *The Jews' Mirror* (Center for Medieval and Renaissance Studies, 2011).

Caramuel, Bishop Juan, *Theologia rnoralis as prima eaque clarissima principia reducta* (Louvain, 1645).

Carrafiello, Michael L., *Robert Parsons and English Catholicism, 1580-1610* (Susquehanna University, 1998).

Cassirer, Ernst, "Giovanni Pico della Mirandola: A Study in the History of Renaissance Ideas." *Journal of the History of Ideas* 3 (1942): 123-144.

Catena, Girolamo, *Vita del gloriosissimo papa Pio Quinto* (Rome, 1586).

Catholic University of America, *New Catholic Encyclopedia,* 15 vols. (Catholic University of America, 1967).

Ceccarelli, Giovanni, "L'usura nella trattatistica teologica sulle restiuzioni dei *male ablata,"* in Diego Quaglioni et. al, *Credito e usura fra teologice* (École Francaise de Rome, 2005).

Cecini, Ulisse, "Johann Albrecht Widmanstetter," in *Christian-Muslim Relations: A Bibliographical History,* vol. 7 (Brill, 2015).

Celanese, Christopher S., "Giovanni Nesi and Pythagoras: Between Ficino and Savonarola," in *Piety and Pythagoras in Renaissance Florence: the Symbolum Nesianum* (Brill, 2001).

Celenza, Christopher S., *Machiavelli: A Portrait* (Harvard University, 2015).

Chadwick, Henry, *Priscillian of Avila: The Occult and the Charismatic in the Early Church* (Oxford University, 1976).

Chapman, Mark D., *The Fantasy of Reunion: Anglicans, Catholics, and Ecumenism* (Oxford University Press, 2014).

Chlup, Radek, *Proclus* (Cambridge University, 2012).

Churton, Tobias, *The Invisible History of the Rosicrucians* (Inner Traditions, 2009).

Clarke, Elizabeth, *Politics, Religion, and the Song of Songs in Seventeenth Century England* (Palgrave, 2011).

Clarke, Paula, *The Soderini and the Medici: Power and Patronage in Fifteenth Century Florence* (Oxford University, 1991).

Cochrane, Eric, *Florence in the Forgotten Centuries, 1527-1800: A History of Florence and the Florentines in the Age of the Grand Dukes* (University of Chicago, 1973).

Cohen, Jeremy, *The Friars and the Jews* (Cornell University, 1984).

Cooper, Roslyn, "The Florentine Ruling Group," in *Studies in Medieval and Renaissance History* no. 7 (1985).

Copenhaver, Brian P. “Astrology and Magic,” in *The Cambridge History of Renaissance Philosophy,* edited by Charles Schmitt, Quentin Skinner, Eckhard Kessler, and Jill Kraye (Cambridge University, 1988).

Copenhaver, Brian P., “Hermes Theologus: The Sienese Mercury and Ficino’s Hermetic Demons,” in *Humanity and Divinity in Renaissance and Reformation* (Brill, 1993).

Copenhaver, Brian P., *Magic in Western Culture* (Cambridge University, 2015).

Corkery, James, and Worcester, Thomas (eds.), *The Papacy Since 1500: From Italian Prince to Universal Pastor* (Cambridge University, 2010).

Cotts, John D., *The Clerical Dilemma: Peter of Blois and Literate Culture in the Twelfth Century* (Catholic University of America, 2009).

Coudert, Allison P., and Shoulson, Jeffrey S., eds., *Study of Judaism in Early Modern Europe,* (University of Pennyslvania, 2004).

Coudert, Allison P., *The Impact of the Kabbalah in the Seventeenth Century* (Brill, 1990.

Couliano, Ioan, *Eros and Magic in the Renaissance* (University of Chicago Press, 1987).

Crompton, Louis, *Homosexuality and Civilization* (Harvard University, 2006).

Cumont, Franz, *The Oriental Religions in Roman Paganism* (Chicago, 1911). Curl, James Stevens, *The Egyptian Revival* (Routledge, 2005). Curran, Brian A. et al., *Obelisk, A History* (Burndy Library, 2009).

Daileader, Philip, *Saint Vincent Ferrer, His World and Life* (Palgrave-Macmillan, 2016).

Damian, St. Peter, “The Letters of Peter Damian,” (Letter 31), in *The Fathers of the Church: Medieval Continuation,* transl. Owen J. Blum, 0.F.M.(Catholie University of America, 1990).

D’Amico, John F. “Humanism and Pre-Reformation Theology,” in *Roman and German Humanism 1450-1550* (Ashgate/Variorum, 1993).

Dan, Joseph (ed.), *The Christian Kabbalah* (Harvard College Library, 1997). David, Rosalie, *Religion and Magic in Ancient Egypt* (Penguin Books, 2002).

Davies, Brian, *Thomas Aquinas’s Summa Contra Gentiles: A Guide and Commentary* (Oxford University, 2016).

Davies, Jonathan, *Florence & its University during the Early Renaissance* (Brill, 1998).

Davies, Owen, *Gimoires: A History of Magical Books* (Oxford University, 2010).

De Boer, Jan-Hendryk. “Faith and Knowledge in the Religion of the Renaissance: Nicholas of Cusa, Giovanni Pico della Mirandola, and Savonarola,” in *American Catholic Philosophical Quarterly* 83 (2009).

De Caro, Gaspare, “Bartolomeo da Petroio, detto Brandano,” in Il *Dizionario Biografico degli Italiani* (Rome, 1964), vol. 6.

De Jong, Mayke, *In Samuel’s Image: Child Oblation in the Early Medieval West* (Brill, 1996).

De-Léon-Jones, Karen Silvia, *Giordano Bruno & the Kabbalah* (University of Nebraska, 2004).

De Lubac, Henri, *Theology in History* (Ignatius Press, 1996). De Molina, Luis, *A Treatise on Money* (CLP Academic, 2015).

Dennison, William A., *Paul’s Two-Age Construction and Apologetics* (University Press of America, 1985).

Denzinger’s Sources of Catholic Dogma, Roy J. Deferrari, transl. (Loretto Publications, 2004).

De Quincey, Thomas, “Historico-Critical Inquiry into the Origins of the Rosicrucians and the Freemasons,” in *De Quincey’s Collected Writings,* 14 vols. (Adam and Charles Black, 1890), vol. 13.

Derbes, Anne and Sandona, Mark, *The Usurer’s Heart: Giotto, Enrico Scrovegni and the Arena Chapel in Padua* (Pennsylvania State University, 2008).

D’Evoli, Cesare, *De divinis attributis quae sephirot ab Hebraeis nuncupata* (Venice, 1573).

Dickens, Charles, *Pictures from Italy* (Penguin Books, 1998).

Dibner, Bern, *Moving the Obelisks: A Chapter in Engineering History* (Burndy Library, 1952).

Diemling, Maria, “Conversion, Anti-Judaism, Controversy: The Rise and Fall of Johannes Pfefferkorn,” in *The Jews’ Mirror* (Arizona Center for Medieval and Renaissance Studies, 2011).

Dillon, John M., “Dionysius th.e Areopagite,” in *Interpreting Pmclus: From Antiquity to the Renaissance* (Cambridge University, 2014).

Dillon, John M., *The Middle Platonists: 80 B.C. to A.D. 220* (Cornell University, 1996).

Di Napoli, Giovanni, *Giovanni Pico della Mirandola e la problematica dottrinale del suo tempo* (Rome, 1965).

Doninger, Wendy, *The Hindus: An Alternative History* (The Penguin Press, 2009).

Dougherty, M.V. (ed.), *Pico della Mirandola: New Essays* (Cambridge University, 2008).

Dover, K.J., *Greek Homosexuality* (Harvard University, 1978).

Dover, K.J., *Greek Popular Morality in the Time of Plato and Aristotle* (Oxford University, 1974).

Dowling, Maria, *Fisher of Men: A Life of John Fisher* (St. Martin's Press, 1999).

Drelichman, Mauricio and Voth, Hans-Joachim, *Lending to the Borrower from Hell: Debt, Taxes and Default in the Age of Philip II* (Princeton University, 2014).

Duffy, Eamon, *Saints & Sinners: A History of the Popes* (Yale University, 2006).

Duffy, Eamon, *Ten Popes Who Shook the World* (Yale University, 2011).

Dulles, Avery. *Princeps Concordiae: Pico della Mirandola and the Scholastic Tradition* (Harvard University, 1941).

Dunand, Francoise, Zvie-Coche, Christiane, *Gods and Men in Egypt: 3000 BCE to 395 CE* (Cornell University, 2004).

Dunn, Geoffrey D. (ed.), *The Bishop of Rome in Late Antiquity* (Ashgate, 2015).

Dunn, James D.G., *Neither Jew Nor Greek: A Contested Identity* (Eerdmans, 2015).

Ebeling, Florian, *The Secret History of Hermes Trismegistus: Hermeticism from Ancient to Modern Times,* transl. David Lorton (Cornell University, 2007).

Edelheit, Amos, *Ficino, Pico, and Savonarola: The Evolution of Humanist Theology 146112-1498* (Brill, 2008).

Edighoffer, Roland, "Rosicrucianism I," in *Dictionary of Gnosis and Western Esotericism,* (Brill, 2006).

Egan, Kathleen Crozier, "On the Indignity of Man: The Quarrel between Boiardo and Pico della Mirandola," in *Fortune and Romance: Boiardo in America* (Medieval and Renaissance Texts and Studies, 1998).

Eisenbichler, Konrad (ed.), *The Cultural Politics of Duke Cosimo I de' Medici* (Ashgate, 2001).

Eisenbichler, Konrad, and Pugliese, Olga Zorzi, *Ficino and Renaissance Neoplatonism* (University of Toronto, 1986).

Elliott, J.K., (ed.), *The Apocryphal New Testament* (Oxford University, 1993).

Encausse, Gérard, ("Papus"), *Catholicisme, satanisme et occultisme* (Paris, 1897).

Eisenmenger, Johann Andreas, *Entdecktes Judenthum, two* vols., (1700).

Evans, R.J.W., *Rudolf II and His World: A Study in Intellectual History, 1576-1612* (Oxford University, 1973).

Everson, Jane and Zancani, Diego, *Italy in Crisis, 1494* (European Humanities Research Center, 2000).

Evola, Julius, *La tradizione ermetica* (1931).

Fages, Pierre-Henri Dominique, *Historie de Saint Vincent Ferrier* (Louvain, 1901).

Faivre, Antoine, *Eternal Hermes: From Greek God to Alchemical Magus* (Phanes Press, 1995).

Farmer, Stephen A., *Syncretism in the West: Pico's 900 Theses (1486): The Evolution of Traditional Religious and Philosophical Systems* (Medieval and Renaissance Texts and Studies, 1998).

Ferguson, Margaret W., *Dido's Daughters* (University of Chicago, 2003).

Ferrer, Vincent, *A Christology: From the Sermons of St. Vincent Ferrer* (London: Blackfriars, 1954).

Ficino, Marsilio, *Platonic Theology,* ed. and transl. Michael J.B. Allen and James Hankins, 6 vols. (Harvard University, 2001-2006).

Ficino, Marsilio, *Commentaries on Plato,* 2 vols., ed. and transl. Maude Vanhaelen (Harvard university, 2012).

Firpo, Luigi, "Il processo di Giordano Bruno," *Rivista storica italiana* (Napoli), LX, 1948, pp. 542-597.

Fishman, Talya, *Shaking the Pillars of Exile: Voice of a Fool,' An Early Modern Jewish Critique of Rabbinic Culture* (Stanford University, 1997).

Fitzmyer, Joseph A., *Romans: A New Translation with Introduction and Commentary* (Yale University Press, 2008).

Flatto, Sharon, *The Kabbalistic Culture of Eighteenth-Century Prague* (The Littman Library of Jewish Civilization, 2010).

Fleming, Julia A., *Defending Probabilism: The Moral Theology of Juan Caramuel* (Georgetown University, 2006).

Fletcher, Joseph, *Situation Ethics: The New Morality* (Westminster John Knox Press, 1966).

Fonbaustier, Laurent, *La déposition du pape hérétique Une origine du constitutionnalisme?* (Bibliothéque des théses, 2016).

Foot, Sarah, *Monastic Life in Anglo-Saxon England, c.600-900* (Cambridge University, 2009).

Fosi, Irene Polverini, “Justice and Its Image: Political Propaganda and Judicial Reality in the Pontificate of Sixtus V,” in *Sixteenth Century Journal* (no. 1, 1993).

Foxe, John, *Acts and Monuments of the Latter and Perilous Days* (1563).

Franks, Christopher A., *He Became Poor: The Poverty of Christ and Aquinas’s Economic Teachings* (Eerdmans, 2009).

Franz, Raymond, et al., *Aid to Bible Understanding* (1971). Fraser, Antonia, *Faith and Treason* (Doubleday, 1996). Freedman, *Harry, The Talmud: A Biography* (Bloomsbury, 2014).

Freidman, Jonathan, et al., *The Trial of the Talmud: Paris, 1240* (Pontifical Institute Mediaeval Studies, 2012).

Fuchs, Joseph, “Epikeia Applied to Natural Law?” in *Personal Responsibility and Christian Morality* (Georgetown University, 1983).

Gabrieli, Vittorio. “Giovanni Pico and Thomas More,” *Moreana* 4 (1967).

Gaca, Kathy L., *The Making of Fornication: Eros, Ethics and Political Reform in Greek Philosophy and Early Christianity* (University of California, 2003).

Galatino, Pietro, *De arcanis catholicae veritatis* (Paris, 1603).

Ganzfried, Shlomo, *Kitzur Shulchan Aruch,* transl. Avrohom Davis, 2 vols. (Metsudah, 1996).

Garfagnini, Gian Carlo, *Marsilio Ficino e il ritorno di Platone: studi e documenti, two* vols. (Olschki, 1986).

Garin, Eugenio, *History of Italian Philosophy,* vol. 1, transl. Giorgio Pinton (Rodopi, 2007).

Garrison, Daniel H., *Sexual Culture in Ancient Greece* (University of Oklahoma, 2000).

Gatti, Hilary, *Essays on Giordano Bruno* (Princeton University, 2011).

Geanakoplos, Deno John (ed.), *Constantinople and the West: Essays on the Late Byzantine (Palaeologan) and Italian Renaissances and the Byzantine and Roman Churches* (University of Wisconsin, 1989).

Geisst, Charles R., *Beggar Thy Neighbor: A History of Usury and Debt* (University of Pennsylvania, 2013).

Gennari, Giuseppe, *Annali della Citta di Padova* (1804), volume III.

Gersh, Stephen, *From Iamblichus to Eriugena: An Investigation of the Prehistory and Evolution of the Pseudo-Dionysian Tradition* (Brill, 1978).

Geyraud, Pierre, *Les Réligions nouvelles de Paris* (Paris, 1939). Geyraud, Pierre, *Les Sociétiés secrétes de Paris* (Paris, 1939).

Gill, Joseph, *The Council of Florence* (Cambridge University, 1959).

Godman, Peter, *From Poliziano to Machiavelli: Florentine Humanism in the High Renaissance* (Princeton University, 1998).

Godwin, Joscelyn, *The Pagan Dream of the Renaissance* (Weiser, 2005).

Goering, Joseph, *William de Montibus (c. 1140-1213): The Schools and the Literature of Pastoral Care* (Pontifical Institute of Mediaeval Studies, 1992).

Goldberg, Edward, *Jews and Magic in Medici Florence* (University of Toronto, 2011).

Goldschmidt, E.P., *The First Cambridge Press in its European Setting* (Cambridge University, 1955).

Goldwaithe, Richard A., *The Economy of Renaissance Florence,* (Johns Hopkins University, 2011).

Gonzalez, Eliezer, *The Fate of the Dead in Early Third Century North African Christianity* (Mohr Siebeck, 2014).

Goodman, Lenn E., *Neoplatonism and Jewish Thought* (State University of New York, 1992).

Goodrick-Clarke, Nicholas, *The Western Esoteric Traditions* (Oxford University, 2008).

Gordon, John Steele, *Washington's Monument and the Fascinating History of the Obelisk* (Bloomsbury, 2016).

Gouwens, Kenneth and Reiss, Sheryl E., *The Pontificate of Clement VII* (Ashgate, 2005).

Grafton, A., "Protestant vs. Prophet: Isaac Casaubon on Hermes Trismegistus in *Journal of the Warburg and Courtauld Institutes,* no. 46 (1983).

Grama, Saadya, *Romemut Yisrael Ufarashat Hagalut* (Lakewood, New Jersey, 2003).

Grice-Hutchinson, Marjorie, *Early Economic Thought in Spain, 1177-1740* (Liberty Fund, 2015).

Grumett, David, *De Lubac: A Guide for the Perplexed* (T&T Clark, 2007). Guizot, Francois, "Calvin," in *Museé des protestants célébrés* (1822).

Gundersheimer, Werner L. "Erasmus, Humanism and the Christian Cabala," *Journal of the Warburg and Courtauld Institutes,* Vol. 26, No. 1/2 (1963).

Guthrie, William Keith Chambers, *A History of Greek Philosophy: Volume 4, Plato: The Man and his Dialogues: Earlier Period* (Cambridge University, 1986).

Guthrie, William Keith Chambers, *A History of Greek Philosophy: Volume 5, The Later Plato and the Academy* (Cambridge University, 1986.

Guthrie, William Keith Chambers, *A History of Greek Philosophy: Volume 6, Aristotle (Cambridge University,* 1990).

Haas, Guenther H., *The Concept of Equity in Calvin's Ethics* (Paternoster Press, 1997).

Häberlein, Mark, *The Fuggers of Augsburg* (University of Virginia, 2012).

Hacker, Joseph R., and Shear, Adam, *The Hebrew Book in Early Modern Italy* (University of Pennsylvania, 2011).

Hadas, Morton, et al., *Heroes and Gods: Spiritual Biographies in Antiquity* (Routledge and Kegan Paul, 1965).

Hale, Robert, "St. Peter Damian" in *Encyclopedia of Monasticism* (Routledge, 2000).

Hall, Joseph, *The Peace of Rozne Proclaimed to All the World by Her Famous Cardinal Bellarmine and the No Less Famous Casuist Navarre* (1609).

Hanegraaff, Wouter *J.* (ed.), *Dictionary of Gnosis and Western Esotericism* (Brill, 2006).

Hanegraaff, Wouter J., *Esotericism and the Academy* (Cambridge University, 2012).

Hanegraaff, Wouter J., and Bouthoorn, Ruud M., *Ludovico Lazzarelli: The Hermetic Writings and Related Documents* (Arizona Center for Medieval and Renaissance Studies, 2005)

Hankins, James, *Plato in the Italian Renaissance* (Brill, 1990).

Hankins, James and Meroi, Fabrizio, *The Rebirth of Platonic Theology* (2013).

Harrie, Jeanne Helen, "Francois Foix de Candale and the Hermetic Tradition in Sixteenth Century France" (PhD. thesis, University of California, 1975).

Herlifek, Jan. "Giovanni Pico della Mirandola's Encounter with Jewish Intellectuals," *Acta Comeniana* 25 (2011).

Hertz, Joseph, *The Authorized Daily Prayer Book* (New York, 1948).

Hess, Jonathan M., *Germans, Jews and the Claims of Modernity* (Yale University Press, 2002).

Hoffer, Eric, *The True Believer: Thoughts on the Nature of Mass Movements* (Harper and Row, 1951).

Hoffman, Michael, *Judaism Discovered: A Study of the Anti-Biblical Religion of Racism, Self-Worship, Superstition and Deceit* (Independent History & Research, 2008).

Hoffman, Michael, *Usury in Christendom: The Mortal Sin that Was and Now is Not* (Independent History & Research, 2013).

Holmes, P.J. (ed.), *Elizabethan Casuistry* (Catholic Record Society, 1991).

[Page 666 The Occult Renaissance Church of Rome]

Hook, Judith, *Siena: A City and Its History,* (Hamish Hamilton, 1979).

Hornblower Simon and Spawforth, Antony (eds.), *The Oxford Classical Dictionary* (2003).

Hornung, Erik, *The Secret Lore of Egypt and its Impact on the West* (Cornell University, 2001).

Horton, Michael, *The Christian Faith: A Systematic Theology* (Zondervan, 2011).

Hotchkiss, Valerie, and Price, David, *Miracle with a Miracle: Johannes Reuchlin and the Jewish Book Controversy* (University of Illinois Urbana-Champaign, 2011).

Howe, John, Before the Gregorian Reform: *The Latin Church at the Turn of the First Millennium* (Cornell University, 2016).

Hubbard, Thomas K. (ed.), *A Companion to Greek and Roman Sexualities* (Blackwell, 2014).

Hughes, Philip Edgcumbe, *Lefévre: Pioneer of Ecclesiastical Renewal in France* (Eersmans, 1984).

Huizinga, Johan, *Erasmus and the Age of Reformation* (Harper and Row, 1957).

Hutten, Ulrich von, and Rubeanus, Crotus, *Letters of Obscure Men* [English translation of *Epistolae obscurorum virorum],* (University of Pennsylvania, 1964).

Iamblichus, *On the Mysteries,* transl. Clarke, Dillon and Hershbell, (Society of Biblical Literature, 2003).

Ickert, Scott, *Defending and Defining the Ordo Salutis: Jacob von Hoogstraten vs. Martin Luther* (Archiv für Reformationsgeschichte, 1987).

Idel, Moshe, “Hermeticism and Judaism” in *Hermeticism and the Renaissance,* Ingrid Merkel and Allen Debus, eds. (1988).

Idel, Moshe, “Jewish Kabbalah in Christian Garb,” in *Kabbalah in Italy: 1280 to 1510* (Yale University, 2011).

Idel, Moshe. “The Magical Interpretation of Kabbalah and Pico’s View of ‘Books,’ in *Absorbing Perfections: Kaballah and Interpretation* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 2002).

Irenaeus of Lyons, Saint, *Against the Heresies,* 3 vols. (The Newman Press, 1992 and 2012).

Iserloh, Erwin, *Die Eucharistie in der Darstellung des Johannes Eck* (Aschendorff, 1950).

Iversen, Erik, *The Myth of Egypt and its Hieroglyphs in European Tradition* (Princeton University, 1993).

Jacobs, Joseph, and Ochser, Schulim, “The Community Organized” in the *Jewish Encyclopedia* (1906), topic: “Rome.” http://jewishencyclopedia.com/articles/12816-rome

Jonas, Hans, *The Gnostic Religion* (Beacon, 1963).

Jones, Frederick M., C.S.s.R., *Alphonsus De Ligurori: Saint of Bourbon Naples* (Liguori Publications, 1999).

Jones, G. Lloyd, *The Discovery of Hebrew in Tudor England: A Third Language* (Manchester University, 1983).

Jones, Malcolm, *The Secret Middle Ages: Discovering the Real Medieval World* (Sutton, 2002).

Joost-Gaugier, Christiane L., “Pico’s Venerable Pythogoras: Fountainhead of Wisdom,” and “Pico’s Version of Pythagoreanism,” in *Pythagoras and Renaissance Europe: Finding Heaven* (Cambridge University, 2009).

Jungmann, Josef A., S.J., *The Mass: An Historical, Theological and Pastoral Survey,* transl. Julian Fernandes, S.J. (Liturgical Press, 1976).

Kant, Immanuel, “On a Supposed Right to Lie from Benevolent Motives,” in *The Critique of Practical Reason and Other Writings in Moral Philosophy* (University of Chicago, 1949).

Katz, Steven T., ed., *The Cambridge History of Judaism: Volume Four, The Late Roman-Rabbinic Period* (Cambridge University, 2006).

Keech, Dominic, *The Anti-Pelagian Christology of Augustine of Hippo, 396-430* (Oxford University, 2012).

Kent, Dale, *Cosimo de’ Medici and the Florentine Renaissance* (Yale University, 2000).

Kiesewetter, Carl, *Geschichte des neueren Occultismus,* 2 vols., (Leipzig, 1981-1895).

Kindleberger, Charles L., *A Financial History of Western Europe* (George Allen & Unwin, 1984).

King, Ross, *Michelangelo and the Pope’s Ceiling* (Penguin, 2003). Kirk, Keneth E., *Conscience and Its Problems* (Longmans, 1927).

Kirk, Russell, “Pico della Mirandola and Human Dignity,” reprinted as “Introduction” in Giovanni Pico della Mirandola, *Oration on the Dignity of Man,* translated by A. Robert Caponigri (Regnery Publishing, 1956).

Kisch, Guido, *The Jews in Medieval Germany: A Study of their Legal and Social Status* (New York, 1970).

Knecht, R.J., *Renaissance Warrior and Patron: The Reign of Francis I* (Cambridge University, 1994).

Knight, Gareth, *A Practical Guide to Qabalistic Symbolism,* two volumes (Helios Book Service, 1965).

Koch, Anton, *A Handbook of Moral Theology* (London, 1918).

Kolbrenner, William Zev, "Chiseled from All Sides: Hermeneutics and Dispute in Rabbinic Judaism," in *Association for Jewish Studies Review,* no. 28 (2004).

Krabbenhoft, Kenneth, "Syncretism and Millennium in Herrera's Kabbalah," in *Jewish Messianism in the Early Modern World* (Springer, 2001).

Kraye, Jill (ed.), *The Cambridge Companion to Renaissance Humanism (Cambridge University,* 1998).

Krey, Philip D., and Krey, Peter D.S., *The Catholic Luther: His Early Writings* (Paulist Press, 2016).

Kristeller, Paul Oskar, *Eight Philosophers of the Italian Renaissance* (Stanford University, 1964.)

Kristeller, Paul Oskar, "Jewish Contributions to Italian Renaissance Culture," in *Studies in Renaissance Thought and Letters IV* (Edizioni di Storia e Litteratura, 1996).

Kristeller, Paul Oskar, *Marsilio Ficino and his Work after 500 Years* (Olschki, 1987).

Kuntz, Marion L., *Guillaume Postel: Prophet of the Restitution of All Things* (Springer, 1981).

Laertius, Diogenes, *Lives of Eminent Philosophers,* vol. I and II (Harvard University, 1925).

Lamm, Norman, *The Religious Thought of Hasidism* (Yeshiva University Press, 1999).

Langer, Ruth, *Cursing the Christians?* (Oxford University Press, 2012).

Langholm, Odd, *The Aristotelian Analysis of Usury* (Oxford University Press, 1985).

Lawee, Eric, "The Messianism of Isaac Abarbanel," in *Jewish Messianism in the Early Modern World* (Springer, 2001).

Lea, Henry Charles, 3 vols., *History of Auricular Confession* (1968). Lee, Alexander, *The Ugly Renaissance* (Random House, 2013).

Leijenhorst, Cees, “Francesaco Patrizi’s Hermetic Philosophy,” in *Gnosis and Hermeticism from Antiquity to Modern Times* (State University of New York, 1998).

Leinkauf, Thomas, “Reuchlin und der Florentiner Neuplatonismus, in *Reuchlin und Italien* (Stuttgart, 1999).

Lemon, Rebecca, *Treason By Words: Literature, Law and Rebellion in Shakespeare’s England* (Cornell University, 2006).

Lev, Elizabeth and Granados, José, *A Body for Glory: Theology of the Body in the Papal Collections* (Rome: Pontifico Istituto Giovanni Paolo II, 2014).

Lévi, Eliphas (Alphonse-Louis Constant), *Dogme et rituel de la haute magie* (Paris, 1856).

Lévi, Eliphas (Alphonse-Louis Constant), *Transcendental Magic: Its Doctrine & Ritual* (Senate, 1995).

Levy, Leonard W., Levy, *Origins of the Fifth Amendment: The Right Against Self-Incrimination* (Macmillan, 1986).

Lewy, Hans, *Chaldean Oracles and Theurgy* (Paris, 1978).

Liguori, Alfonso de, *Moral and Devotional Theology,* Frederick Meyrick transl. (London, 1857).

Livanos, Christopher, “The Conflict Between Scholarios and Plethon,” in *Modern Greek Literature: Critical Essays* (Routledge, 2003).

Lohr, Charles H., “Metaphysics,” in *The Cambridge History of Renaissance Philosophy* (Cambridge University, 1992).

Long, Pamela O., *Openness, Secrecy, Authorship: Technical Arts and the Culture of Knowledge from Antiquity to the Renaissance* (Johns Hopkins University Press, 2004).

Lord, Evelyn, *The Hell-Fire Clubs* (Yale University, 2008).

Lbw, Andreas, *Hermes Trismegistos als Zeuge der Wahrheit* (Berlin, 2002).

Lowe, Kate J.P., *Church and Politics in Renaissance Italy: The Life and Career of Cardinal Francesco Soderini* (Cambridge University, 2002).

Luchinot, Cristina Acidini, *Pintoricchio* (Scala, 1999).

Luther, Martin, “Trade and Usury” (1524), in *Luther’s Works* vol. 45 (Muhlenberg Press, 1962).

MacGuigan, Mark, *Abortion, Conscience and Democracy* (Toronto, Canada, 1994.

Machiavelli, Niccolo, *The Prince* (Cambridge University, 2000).

Matt, Daniel, transl. *The Zohar: Pritzker Edition,* 9 vols. (Stanford University, 2003-2016).

Majercik, Ruth, *The Chaldean Oracles: Text, Translation and Commentary* (2013).

Maifreda, Germano, “The Jews: Institutions, Economy and Society,” in *A Companion to Late Medieval and Early Modern Milan* (Brill, 2015).

Maimonides, Moses, *Guide of the Perplexed,* transl. Shlomo Pines, 2 vols. (University of Chicago, 1963).

Maimonides, Moses, *Mishneh Torah,* transl. Eliyahu Touger, 25 (Mozaim Publishing, 1989-1999).

Malloch, Archibald, “Father Henry Garnet’s Treatise of Equivocation,” in *Recusant History,* vol. 15, no. 6 (1981).

Mallerais, Bernard Tissier de, *The Biography of Marcel Lefebvre* (Angelus Press, 2004).

Mansfield, Mary C., *The Humiliation of Sinners: Public Penance in Thirteenth Century France* (Cornell University, 1995).

Manuel, Frank E. “Pico della Mirandola and His Jewish Mentors,” in *The Broken Staff Judaism through Christian Eyes* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1992), 37-44.

Martines, Lauro, *Fire in the City: Savonarola and the Struggle for the Soul of Renaissance Florence* (Oxford University, 2007).

Martini, Annett. *The Kabbalistic Library of Giovanni Pico della Mirandola,* vol. IV (Torino: Nino Aragno Editore, 2010), 163-218.

Martyn, J. Louis, *History and Theology of the Fourth Gospel* (Westminster John Knox Press, 2003).

[Bibliography Page 671]

Masai, Francois, *Plethon et le Platonisme de Mistra* (Paris, 1956).

Mason, Henry, *The New Art of Lying Covered by Jesuits Under the Vale of Equivocation* (London, 1624).

Masters, G. Mallory, “Renaissance Kabbalah,” in *Modern Esoteric Spirituality* (Crossroads, 1992).

Maurer, Wilhelm, “Reuchlin und das Judenthum,” in *Theologische Literaurzeitung* (1952).

McBrien, Richard P., (ed.), *Encyclopedia of Catholicism* (HarperCollins, 1995).

McCall, Brian, *The Church and the Usurers* (Sapientia Press, 2013).

McClean, *The Art of the Network: Strategic Interaction and Patronage in Renaissance Florence* (Duke University, 2007).

McConica, James K., “John Fisher,” in *Contemporaries of Erasmus* (University of Toronto, 1985).

McGinn, Bernard, “Cabalists and Christians” in *Jewish Christians and Christian Jews* (1994).

McKnight, Stephen A. “Ficino, Pico, and the New God: Anthropos,” in *Sacralizing the Secular: The Renaissance Origins of Modernity* (Louisiana State University Press, 1989).

McKnight, Stephen A., *The Modern Age and the Recovery of Ancient Wisdom* (University of Missouri, 1991).

McIntosh, Christopher, *Eliphas Lévi and the French Occult Revival* (State University of New York, 2011).

McIntosh, Christopher, *The Rosicrucians: The History, Mythology and Rituals of an Esoteric Order* (Weiser, 1998).

Medvedev, Igor P., *Neue philosophische Ansátze im spáten Byanz* (1981).

Menéndez Pelayo, Marcelino, *Historia de los heterodoxos espanoles* (Madrid, 1992).

Menning, Carol Bresnahan, “The Monte’s ‘Monte’: The Early Supporters of Florence’s Monte di Pietá,” in *Sixteenth Century Journal* (no. 4, 1992).

Meyrick, Frederick, *Moral and Devotional Theology of the Church of Rome* (London, 1857).

Meyrick, Frederick, “St. Alphonusus de’ Liguori’s ‘Glories of Mary,” *Christian Remembrancer,* October, 1855, in *The Christian Remembrancer,* Vol. XXX (London, 1855).

Miller, James D., *Singularity Rising* (2012).

Mills, Robert, *Seeing Sodomy in the Middle Ages* (University of Chicago, 2015).

Mirandola, Giovanni Pico, *On the Dignity of Man,* (trans. Charles Glenn Wallace; 1998).

Mirandola, Giovanni Pico, “Proem to the Third Book, Third Exposition: Of the Angelic and Invisible World” in *On the Dignity of Man, On Being and the One, Heptaplus,* transl. by Douglas Carmichael et al. (Bobbs-Merrill, 1965).

Mirandola, Gioovanni Pico, “The Nine Hundred Theses,” in *Syncretism in the West: Pico’s 900 Theses* (Medieval and Renaissance Texts, 1998).

Mitchell, R.J., The *Laurels and the Tiara: Pope Pius II, 1405-1464* (Doubleday, 1962).

Mithridates, Flavius, *The Book of Bahir* (Institut für Judaistik, 2005).

Molho, Anthony, *Florentine Public Finances in the Early Renaissance* (Harvard University, 1971).

Molnar, Thomas, "The Gnostic Tradition and Renaissance Occultism" in *The Journal of Christian Reconstruction* (Winter, 1974).

Molnar, Thomas, *The Pagan Temptation* (Eerdman's, 1987).

Molnar, Thomas, *Utopia: The Perennial Heresy* (Sheed and Ward, 1967).

Monfasani, J., "A tale of two books: Bessarion's *In Calumniatorem Platonis* and George of Trebizond's *Comparatio Philosophorum Platonis et Aristotelis,"* in *Renaissance Studies 22* (2008).

Montgomery, John Warwick, *Principalities and Powers* (Bethany Fellowship, 1973).

More, Henry, *Conjectura Cabbalistica* (London, 1653).

Moreira, Isabel, *Heaven's Purge: Purgatory in Late Antiquity* (Oxford University, 2010).

Moreschini, Claudio, *Hermes Christianus: The Intermingling of Hermetic Piety and Christian Thought* (Brepols, 2012).

[Bibliography Page 673]

Morrisson, Mark *S., Modern Alchemy: Occultism and the Emergence of Atomic Theory* (Oxford University, 2007).

Morley, Henry, *The Life of Henry Cornelius Agrippa* (Chapman and Hall, 1856).

Mormando, Franco, *Bernini: His Life and His Rome* (University of Chicago, 2001).

Mosheim, Johann Lorenz von, *Ecclesiastic History Ancient and Modern,* transl. Archibald MacLaine (London, 1782), vol. 5.

Muggeridge, Anne Roche, *The Desolate City: Revolution in the Catholic Church* (Harper & Row, 1986).

Myers, Ellen, "Thomas Molnar: A Christian Scholar for our Time," in *Creation Social Science & Humanities Society Quarterly Journal,* (vol. 9, no. 4, 1987).

Najemy, John M., *A History of Florence: 1200-1575* (Wiley-Blackwell, 2008).

Najemy, John M., *Corporatism and Consensus in Florentine Electoral Politics, 1280-1400* (University of North Carolina, 1982).

Netanel, Neil Weinstock, *From Maimonides to Microsoft: The Jewish Law of Copyright* (Oxford University, 2016).

Neusner, Jacob, *A History of the Mishnaic Law of Purities* (Brill Academic, 1974).

Neusner, Jacob, *The Mishnah: A New Translation* (Yale University, 1988).

Newhauser, Richard, *The Early History of Greed: The Sin of Avarice in Early Medieval Thought and Literature* (Cambridge University, 2000).

Niccoli, Ottavia, *Prophecy and People in Renaissance Italy* (Princeton University, 1990).

Nicholson, M.H. and Hutton, S. (eds.), *The Conway Letters: The Correspondence of Anne, Viscountess Conway, Henry More and their Friends* (Oxford University, 1992).

Noblecourt, Christine Desroches, *Gifts from the Pharaohs: How Egyptian Civilization Shaped the Modern World,* transl. Jonathan Sly (Flammarion, 2007).

Noonan, John T. Jr., *Contraception: A History of its Treatment by the Catholic Theologians and Canonists* (Harvard University).

Norena, Carlos G., *Studies in Spanish Renaissance Thought* (Martinus Nijhoff, 1975).

Norwich, John Julius, *Absolute Monarchs* (2011).

Nuovo, Angela, *The Book Trade in the Italian Renaissance* (Brill, 2013).

Obach, Robert, *The Catholic Church on Marital Intercourse,* Lexington Books, 2009).

O'Callaghan, Daniel, *The Preservation of Jewish Religious Books in Sixteenth Century Germany: Johannes Reuchlin's Augenspiegel* (Brill, 2013).

Ocker, Christopher, "German Theologians and the Jews in the Fifteenth Century," in *Jews, Judaism and the Reformation* (Leiden, 2006).

Ogren, Brian, *Renaissance and Rebirth: Reincarnation in Early Modern Italian Kabbalah* (Brill, 2009).

Oleck, Howard L., "Historical Nature of Equity Jurisprudence," in *Fordham Law Review,* vol. 20, no. 1 (1951).

O'Malley, John W., *Giles of Viterbo on Church and Reform: A Study in Renaissance Thought* (Brill, 1968).

O'Meara, Dominic *J Neoplatonism and Christian Thought* (State University of New York, 1981).

Page, Sophie, *Magic in the Cloister: Pious Motives, Illicit Interests, and Occult Approaches to the Medieval Universe* (Penn State Press, 2013).

Paoletti, John T., et al., *Art in Renaissance Italy* (Laurence King, 2005).

Parks, Tim, *Medici Money: Banking, Metaphysics and Art in Fifteenth Century Florence* (Norton, 2005).

Partner, Peter, “The Papacy and the Papal States,” in *The Rise of the Fiscal State in Europe: 1200-1815* (Oxford University, 1999).

Pascal, Blaise, *The Provincial Letters* (Wipf and Stock, 1997).

Pastor, Ludwig, *The History of the Popes from the Close of the Middle Ages: Drawn from the Secret Archives of the Vatican and Other Original Sources* (J. Hodges, 1891-1953), 40 vols.

Patrides, C.A., *The Cambridge Platonists* (Cambridge University, 1969).

Patrizi, Francesco, *Discussiones peripateticae* (1581).

Patrizi, Francesco, *Nova de universis philosophia* (1591).

Payer, P.S., *Peter Damian: Book of Gomorrah, An Eleventh-Century Treatise Against Clerical Homosexuality* (Wilfred Laurier Press, 1982).

Payer, P.S., *Sex and the Penitentials: The Development of a Sexual Code: 550-1150* (University of Toronto, 1985).

Pearson, Birger, *Gnosticism, Judaism and Egyptian Christianity* (Fortress Press, 1990).

Pereira, Michaela, “The Alchemical Corpus Attributed to Lull,” in *Warburg Institute Surveys and Texts* (1989).

Persons, Robert S.J., A *Treatise tending to Mitigation towardes Catholicke-Subjectes in England* (London, 1607).

Peters, Edward N., *The 1917 Pio-Benedictine Code of Canon Law* (Ignatius Press, 2001).

Peterse, Hans, *Jacobus Hoogstraeten gegen Johannes Reuchlin* (Philipp von Zabern, 1995).

Petrarch, Francesco, *Letters on Familiar Matters* (Italica Press, 2005), volumes I-III.

Petrarch, Francesco, *My Secret Book,* transl. Nicholas Mann (Harvard University, 2016).

Pfefferkorn, Johannes, *Der Juden Spiegel* (Cologne and Nuremberg, 1507).

Pfefferkorn, Johannes, *Handt-Spiegel wider die Juden, und Jüdischen Thalmudischen Schrifften* [Hand Mirror Against the Jews and the Jewish Talmudic Writings], (Mainz, 1511).

Pfefferkorn, Johannes, *Ich bin ein Buchlein der Judenveindt ist mein /lamen* (Augsburg, 1509).

Pfefferkorn, Johannes, *Judenbeichte* (Cologne and Nuremberg, 1508).

Pfefferkorn, Johannes, *Speculum adhortationis judaice ad Christum* [Latin translation *of Der Juden Spiegel],* (Cologne, 1507).

Pfefferkorn, Johannes, *The Jews' Mirror,* transl. Ruth I. Cape (Medieval and Renaissance Texts and Studies, 2011).

Picotti, G.B., "La Congiura dei cardinali," in *Rivista storica italiana,* I (1923).

Pincus, Steve, "Gallicanism, Innocent XI and Catholic Opposition," in *Shaping the Stuart World, 1603-1714* (Brill, 2005).

Pinckaers, Servais, *Ce qu' on ne peut jamais faire* (Fribourg, 1986).

Plato, *Plato's Cosmology: The Timaeus of Plato,* transl. Francis Cornford (Hackett, 1997).

Plato, *Timaeus and Critias,* transl. Robin Waterfield (Oxford University, 2009).

Pocock, J.G.A., *The Machiavellian Moment: Florentine Political Thought and the Atlantic Republican Tradition* (Princeton University, 2003).

Pool, Matthew, *Annotation Upon the Holy Bible* (1685).

Popkin, R.H. and Weiner, G.M. (eds.), *Jewish Christians and Christian Jews from the Renaissance to the Enlightenment* (Kluwer, 1994).

Popper, William, *The Censorship of Hebrew Books* (KTAV Publishing, 1969).

Price, David H., *Johannes Reuchlin and the Campaign to Destroy Jewish Books* (Oxford University, 2011).

Proclus' Commentary on Plato's Parmenides, Glenn R. Morrow and John M. Dillon, transl. (Cornell University, 1992).

Provan, Charles D., *The Bible and Birth Control* (Zimmer, 1989).

Prudlo, Donald S., *Certain Sainthood: Canonization and the Origins of Papal Infallibility* (Cornell University, 2015).

Pullan, Brian, "Good Government and Christian Charity in Early Modern Italy," in *With Us Always: A History of Private Charity and Public Welfare* (Rowan & Littlefield, 1998).

Purnell, Fred, "A Contribution to Renaissance Anti-Hermeticism" in *Das Ende des Hermetismus* (Tübingen: Mohnr Siebeck, 2002).

Popper, Karl, "Epistemology and Industrialization" in *The Myth of the Framework: In Defense of Science and Rationality* (1996).

Prokofieff, Sergei O., *The Spiritual Origins of Eastern Europe* (2016).

Quinn, Patricia A., *Better Than the Sons of Kings: Boys and Monks in the Early Middle Ages* (Peter Lang, 1989).

Quispel, Gilles, *Gnostica, Judaica, Catholica: Collected Essays of Gines Quispel,* Johannes van Ort, ed., (Brill, 2008).

Rabelais, Francois, *Gargantua and Pantagruel,* transl. M.A. Screech (Penguin, 2006).

Raftery, Mary, *Suffer the Little Children* (Continuum International Publishing Group, 2002.)

Ragacs, Ursula, “Reconstructing Medieval Jewish-Christian Disputations,” in *Medieval Exegesis and Religious Difference* (Fordham University, 2015).

Ratzinger, Joseph, *Introduction to Christianity* (Herder & Herder, 1971).

Raven, Maarten, *Egyptian Magic* (The American University in Cairo, 2012).

Ray-Mermet, Théodule, *Moral Choices: The Moral Theology of Saint Alphonsus Liguori* (Liguori Publications, 1998).

Raz-Krakotzkin, Amnon, *The Censor, the Editor, and the Text: The Catholic Church and the Shaping of the Jewish Canon in the Sixteenth Century* (University of Pennsylvania, 2007).

Reeves, Marjorie, *Prophetic Rome in the High Renaissance* (Oxford University, 1992).

Reichert, Klaus. “Pico della Mirandola and the Beginnings of Christian Kabbala,” in *Mysticism, Magic and Kabbalah in Ashkenazi Judaism* (Walter de Gruyter, 1995).

Reitbergen, Peter, *Power and Religion in Baroque Rome* (Brill, 2006).

Reuchlin, Joahnnes, *On the Art of the Kabbalah,* transl. Martin and Sarah Goodman (University of Nebraska, 1983).

Rice, Eugene F. (ed.), *The Prefatory Epistles of Jacques Lefévre D’Etaples and Related Texts by Jacques Lefévre d’Étaples* (Columbia University, 1972).

Ridolfi, R., *The Life of Giloramo Savonarola* (Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1959).

Riley, Lawrence J., *The History, Nature and Use of Epikeia in Moral Theology* (Catholic University of America, 1948).

Riordan, William, *Divine Light: The Theology of Denys the Areopagite* (Ignatius Press, 2008).

Rocke, Michael, *Forbidden Friendships: Homosexuality and Male Culture in Renaissance Florence* (Oxford University, 1996).

Rohde, Erwin, *Psyche: The Cult of Souls and Belief in Immortality Among the Greeks* (1925).

Roob, Alexander, *The Hermetic Museum: Alchemy and Mysticism* (Tashchen, 2015).

Rosenthal, Judah, “Anti-Christian Polemics in the Biblical Commentaries of Rashi,” in *Studies and Texts in Jewish History* (Jerusalem, 1967).

Rössner, Philipp Robinson, introduction to Luther’s *On Commerce and Usury* (Anthem Press, 2015).

Roulier, Fernand, *Jean Pic de la Mirandole (1463-1494): Humaniste, philosophe et théologien* (Éditions Slatkine, 1989).

Routledge, Warren B., *Holocaust High Priest* (Castle Hill, 2015).

Rowland, Ingrid D., *The Culture of the High Renaissance: Ancients and Moderns in Sixteenth Century Rome* (Cambridge University, 1998).

Ruderman, David B., *Preachers of the Italian Ghetto* (University of California, 1992).

Rudolph, Kurt, *Gnosis: The Nature & History of Gnosticism* (Harper & Row, 1987).

Rummel, Erika, *The Case Against Johann Reuchlin* (University of Toronto, 2002).

Rustow, Marina, *Heresy and the Politics of Community: The Jews of the Fatamid Caliphate* (Cornell University, 2008).

Saebo, Magne, [ed.], *Hebrew Bible Old Testament: The History of Its Interpretation from the Renaissance to the Enlightenment* (Gtittingen, 2008).

Sagi, Avi, “Both are the Words of the Living God: A Typological Analysis of Halakhic Pluralism,” in *Hebrew Union College Annual* no. 65 (1995).

Salza, John and Siscoe, Robert, *True or False Pope?* (St. Thomas Aquinas Seminary, 2015).

Santi, Bruno, *The Marble Pavement of the Cathedral of Siena* (Scala Firenze, 1993).

Savonarola, Girolamo, *Prediche sopra Aggeo con il Trattato circa il reggimento e governo della cittá Firenze,* Luigi Firpo, ed., (Rome, 1965).

Schäfer, Peter, *The Origins of Jewish Mysticism* (Princeton University, 2011).

Scheck, Thomas P., “Pelagius’s Interpretation of Romans,” in *A Companion to St. Paul in the Middle Ages* (Brill, 2013).

Schlegel, Ursula, “On the Picture Program of the Arena Chapel,” in *Giotto: The Arena Chapel Frescoes* (W.W. Norton, 1995).

Schmidt-Biggemann, Wilhelm, *Philosophia Perennis: Historical Outlines of Western Spirituality in Ancient, Medieval and Early Modern Thought* (Springer, 2004).

Schmitt, Charles B., *Gianfrancesco Pico della Mirandola (1469-1533) and His Critique of Aristotle* (Martinus Nijhoff, 1967).

Schwartz, Howard, *Tree of Souls* (Oxford University Press, 2004).

Schwartz, Yossef, "On Rabbinic Atheism: Caramuel's Critique of Cabala," in *Juan Caramuel Lobowitz: The Last Scholastic Polymath* (Prague: Institute of Philosophy, 2008).

Scotti, Dom Paschal, "English Catholicism and the Dublin Review" in *Out of Due Time: Wilfrid Ward and the Dublin Review* (Catholic University of America, 2006).

Secret, Francois, *Les Kabbalistes Chrétiens de la Renaissance* (Dunod, 1964).

Secret, Francois, *Guillaume Postel, Le Thresor des Proheties de l'Univers* (The Hague, 1969).

Sedgwick, Mark, *Against the Modern World: Traditionalism and the Secret Intellectual History of the Twentieth Century* (Oxford University, 2004).

Setton, Kenneth M., *The Papacy and the Levant* (1204-1571), vol. 3 (American Philosophical Society, 1984).

Seznec, Jean, *The Survival of the Pagan Gods: The Mythological Tradition and Its Place in Renaissance Humanism and Art* (Princeton University, 1995).

Siegmund, Stefanie, *The Medici State and the Ghetto of Florence* (Stanford University, 2005).

Siniossoglou, Niketas, *Radical Platonism in Byzantium: Illumination and Utopia in Gemistos Plethon* (Cambridge University, 2011).

Shapin, Steven *A., Social History of Truth* (University of Chicago, 1995).

Shapira, Yitzhak, *Torat Ha'Melech* (Jerusalem, 2009).

Shaw, Gregory, *Theurgy and the Soul: The Neoplatonism of Iamblichus* (2014).

Shaw, Ian, and Nicholson, Paul, *The Dictionary of Ancient Egypt* (Abrams, 1995).

Shear, Adam, "Judah Moscato's Scholarly Self Image and the Question of Jewish Humanism," in *Cultural Intermediaries: Jewish Intellectuals in Early Modern Italy* (University of Pennsylvania, 2004).

Shear, Adam, "Judah Moscato's Sources and Hebrew Printing in the Sixteenth Century," in *Rabbi Judah Moscato and the Jewish Intellectual World of Mantua* (Brill, 2012).

Shrimplin-Evangelidis, Valerie, "Sun-Symbolism and Cosmology in Michelangelo's Last Judgment," in *Sixteenth Century Journal* (no. 4, 1990).

Shumaker, Wayne, *Renaissance Curiosa: John Dee's Conversations with Angels, Girolamo Cardano's Horoscope of Christ, Johannes Trithemius and Cryptography, George Dalgarno's Universal Language* (Center for Medieval & Early Renaissance Studies, 1982).

Simonsohn, Shlomo, "A Contract for Publishing Hebrew Books in Cremona," in *Shlomo Umberto Nachon* (Shlomo Meir Institute [Jerusalem], 1978).

Slater, Thomas, S.J., *A Short History Of Moral Theology,* (Benziger Brothers, 1909).

Slavenburg, Jacob, *The Hermetic Link: From Secret Tradition to Modern Thought* (Ibis Press, 2012).

Slights, Camille, *The Casuistical Tradition in Shakespeare, Donne, Herbert and Milton* (Princeton University, 1981).

Sommerville, Johann P., *Conscience and Casuistry* (Cambridge University, 2002).

Spector, Sheila A., *Francis Mercury van Helmont's Sketch of Christian Kabbalism* (Brill, 2012).

Spitz, Lewis W., *Reuchlin's Philosophy: Pythagoras and Cabala for Christ,* in *Archiv fur Reformationsgeschichte,* XLVII (1956).

Steinmetz, Greg, *The Richest Man Who Ever Lived: The Life and Times of Jacob Fugger* (Simon & Schuster, 2015).

Steinsaltz, Adin, The Koren Talmud Bavli, 28 vols. (Jerusalem: Koren Publishers, 2012-2017).

Steinsaltz, Adin, *The Talmud: The Steinsaltz Edition,* 21 vols. (Random House, 1991).

Stern, David, *The Hebrew Book in Early Modern Italy,* Joseph R. Hacker and Adam Shear, eds., (University of Pennsylvania, 2011).

Stinger, Charles L., *The Renaissance in Rome* (Indiana University Press, 1998).

Stoltzenberg, Daniel, *Egyptian Oedipus: Athanasius Kircher and the Secrets of Antiquity* (University of Chicago, 2013).

Stow, Kenneth R., *Catholic Thought and Papal Jewry, 1555-1593* (Jewish Theological Seminary of America, 1976).

Stuckrad, Kocku von, *Location of Knowledge in Medieval and Early Modern Europe: Esoteric Discourse and Western Identities* (Brill, 2010).

Suarez, Francisco, S.J., *Tractatus Quintus de Juramento et Adjuratione* in *Opera Omnia,* 24 vols. (Paris, 1859), vol. 14.

Sullivan, Henry W., “Jews of Prague & Jews of Spain: Juan Caramuel’s Account of Medieval Sephardic Writings,” in *Juan Caramuel Lobowitz: The Last Scholastic Polymath* (Institute of Philosophy, 2008).

Sullivan, Scott M., “In Defense of The Falsiloquium,” University of St. Thomas (http://scottmsullivan.com/articles/Falsiloquium.pdf)

Sweeny, Jon M., *The Pope Who Quit* (Image Books, 2012).

Swetnam-Burland, Molly, *Egypt in Italy: Visions of Egypt in Roman Imperial Culture* (Cambridge University, 2015).

Symonds, John Addington, *The Life of Michelangelo Buonarroti,* vol. II (Scribner’s, 1899).

Szonyi, Gyorgy, *John Dee’s Occultism: Magical Exaltation through Powerful Signs* (State University of New York, 2004).

Tavuzzi, Michael M., *Renaissance Inquisitors* (Brill, 2007).

Taylor, Jeremy, *Doctor Dubitantium, or the Rule of Conscience in All Her General Measures,* in: *Whole Works* (London, 1847-1854), 10 vols.

Taylor, Thomas, *Iamblichus’ Life of Pythagoras* (Inner Traditions, 1986).

Terpstra, Nicholas, *Lost Girls: Sex and Death in Renaissance Florence* (Johns Hopkins University, 2010).

Thomas, Hugh M., *The Secular Clergy in England, 1066- 1216* (Oxford University, 2014).

Thorndike, Lynn, *The Place of Magic in the Intellectual History of Europe* (Columbia University, 1905).

Thornton, Bruce S., *Eros: The Myth of Greek Sexuality* (Westview Press, 1997).

Tietze-Conrat, Erica, “Neglected Contemporary Sources Related to Michelangelo,” in *Art Bulletin,* June 1943.

Tishby, Isaiah, *The Wisdom of the Zohar,* transl. David Goldstein, 3 vols. (Littman Library, 2002).

Toor, Kiran, Kiran, *Coleridge’s Chrysopoetics* (2011).

Travers, P.L. *What the Bee Knows* (Penguin Books, 1993).

Trexler, Richard C., *Public Life in Renaissance Florence* (Cornell University, 1980).

Trinkaus, Charles, *In Our Image and Likeness: Humanity and Divinity in Italian Humanist Thought,* 2 vols. (University of Chicago, 1970).

Trinkaus, Charles, *Renaissance Transformations of Late Medieval Thought* (Ashgate, 1999).

Toussaint, Stéphane. “Giovanni Pico della Mirandola (1463-1494): The Synthetic Reconciliation of All Philosophies,” in *Philosophers of the Renaissance* (Catholic University of America, 2010).

Turner, Patricia, and Coulter, Charles Russell, *Dictionary of Ancient Deities* (Oxford University, 2000).

Tutino, Stefania, *Shadows of Doubt: Language and Truth in Post-Reformation Catholic Culture* (Oxford University, 2014).

Tyrrell, Peter, *Founded on Fear: The Hidden History of a Childhood with the Christian Brothers,* Diarmuid Whelan, ed. (Irish Academic Press, 2006).

Unger, Miles J., Magnifico: *The Brilliant Life and Violent Times of Lorenzo de’ Medici* (JR Books, 2008).

Unterman, Alan, *The Kabbalistic Tradition* (Penguin, 2008).

Uzdavinys, Algis, *Orpheus and the Roots of Platonism* (2011).

Valcke, Louis, “Jean Pic de la Mirandole” in *Dialogue* (no. 34; 1995).

Vanhaelen, Maude, “Ficino’s Commentary,” in *The Rebirth of Platonic Theology* (Harvard University Center for Italian Studies, 2013).

Varchi, Benedetto, *Storia florentina di Benedetto Varchi,* Lelio Arbib, ed., (Florence, 1843-1844), 3 volumes.

Vaughan, Herbert M., *The Medici Popes: Leo X and Clement VII* (G.P. Putnam’s Son, 1908).

Vickers, Brian, *Occult and Scientific Mentalities in the Renaissance* (Cambridge University, 1984).

Vittorio, Gabrieli, “Giovanni Pico and Thomas More,” *Moreana,* November, 1967.

Voderholzer, *Meet Henri de Lubac: His Life and Work* (Ignatius Press, 2008).

Voragine, de Jacobus, *Sermones quadragesimales: Edizione critica* (Edizioni del Galluzzo, 2005).

Voss, Angela., *Marsilio Ficino* (North Atlantic Books, 2006).

Wachter, Johann Georg, *Der Spinozismus im Jüdenthumb oder die von dem heutigen Jüdenthum und dessen Geheimen Kabbalah vergótterte Welt* (New Print Stuttgart-Bad Cannstatt, 1994).

Waite, A.E., *The Holy Kabbalah* (University Books, 1971).

Walker, D. P. *Spiritual and Demonic Magic from Ficino to Campanella* (Pennsylvania State University, 2000).

Wallis, Richard T., *Neoplatonism and Gnosticism* (State University of NY, 1992.

Ward, Wilfrid, "Introduction," in *Newman's Apologia Pro Vita Sua: The Two Versions of 1864 & 1865 Preceded by Newman's and Kingsley's Pamphlets* (Oxford University, 1913).

Watts, Pauline Moffit, "Pseudo-Dionysius the Areopagite and Three Renaissance Neoplatonists: Cusanus, Ficino and Pico" in *Supplementum Festivum* (Medieval Rensaissance Texts & Studies, 1987).

Weed, Thurlow, and Weed, Harriet A., *Autobiography of Thurlow Weed* (Houghton, Mifflin, 1884).

West, John Anthony, *Serpent in the Sky: The High Wisdom of Ancient Egypt* (Quest Books, 2014).

Weinstein, Donald, *Savonarola: The Rise and Fall of a Renaissance Prophet* (Yale University 2011).

Weir, Anthony, Jerman, James, *Images of Lust: Sexual Carvings on Medieval Churches* (Routledge, 1999).

Westcott, Brooke F., *Essays in the History of Religious Thought in the West* (Macmillan, 1891).

Wicks, Jared, *Cajetan Responds: A Reader in Reformation Controversy* (Catholic University of America, 1978).

Wilberforce, Samuel, "Dr. Newman's Apologia," *Quarterly Review,* October 1864.

Wilkinson, Richard H., *The Complete Temples of Ancient Egypt* (Thames and Hudson, 2000).

Wilkinson, Robert J., *The Kabbalistic Scholars of the Antwerp Polyglot Bible* (Brill, 2007).

Wilkinson, Robert J., *Orientalism, Aramaic and Kabbalah in the Catholic Reformation* (Brill, 2007).

Wilkinson, Robert J., *Tetragrammaton: Western Christians and the Hebrew Name of God* (Brill, 2015).

Williams, George L., *Papal Genealogy: The Families and Descendants of the Popes* (McFarland, 1998).

Wilson, Douglas, *A Study Guide to Calvin's Institutes* (Canon Press, 2011).

Wilson, Douglas, *Papa Don't Pope: Why I'm Not a Roman Catholic* (Canon Press, 2015).

Wilson, Peter H., *Heart of Europe: A History of the Holy Roman Empire* (Harvard University, 2016).

Wind, Edgar, *Pagan Mysteries in the Renaissance* (Norton and Co., 1968).

Winroth, Anders, *The Making of Gratian's Decretum* (Cambridge University, 2004).

Witcomb, Christopher L.C.E., *Copyright in the Renaissance: Prints and Privilegio in Sixteenth Century Venice and Rome* (Brill, 2004).

Wolfson, Ellliot, "Messianism in the Christian Kabbalah," in *Jewish Messianism in the Early Modern World* (Springer, 2001).

Wood, Thomas, *English Casuistical Divinity during the Seventeenth Century with Special Reference to Jeremy Taylor* (London, 1952).

Wright, N.T., *The Resurrection of the Son of God* (Fortress Press, 2003).

Yates, Frances A., *Astraea: The Imperial Theme in the Sixteenth Century* (Routledge, 1975).

Yates, Frances A., *Giordano Bruno and the Hermetic Tradition* (University of Chicago Press, 1991).

Yates, Frances A., *The Occult Philosophy in the Elizabethan Age* (Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1979).

Yates, Frances A., *The Rosicrucian Enlightenment* (Routledge and Kegan Paul, 1986).

Zambelli, Paola, *White Magic, Black Magic in the European Renaissance* (2007).

Zeldes, Nadia, "Sicilian Converts in the Contemporary Mediterranean Context (1400-1492)," in *Guglielmo Raimondo Moncada alias Flavio Mitridate: Un ebreo converso siciliano* (Officina di Studi Medievali, 2008).

Zimmerman, Jens, *Re-Envisioning Christian Humanism* (Oxford University, 2016).

General Index

Abelard, Peter, 584
Abelly, Louis, 521
Abner of Burgo (Alfonso of Valladolid), 274
Abortion, 413
Abrabanel, Samuel, 640
Abraham, 194, 413, 554
Abraham ben Yitzhak, 269

Abraham ibn Ezra, 75
Abravanel, Isaac, 127, 163-164, 167, 173-174, 581
Abulafia, Abraham, 80, 196
Academia napoletana degli Investiganti, 76
Accolti, Pietro 301
Acciaiuoli, Zanobi, 176
Act of Uniformity, 15, 16
Acts and Monuments of the Latter and Perilous Days (Foxe), 16
Acton, John Emerich Edward Dalberg, see: Lord Acton
Acton, Lord, 10, 445, 465, 467
Adam, 25
Adler, Jeremy, 24
Adrian VI, 289
Adversos Judaeos (Chrysostom), 567
Adversus omnes haereses, see Zamorensis
AElfric of Eynsham, 32
Against Plethon (Scholarios), 148
Aggiornomento, 19
Aglaophemus, 86
Agli, Antonio degli, 178
Agobard of Lyon, 272
Agricola, Rudolf, 239
Agrippa, Henry Cornelius, 107, 108,
109, 128-129 195, 201, 221, 241-242,
249, 284, 396, 520,
Ahern, Dermot, 488
Alba, Duke of, 119
Albeck, Shalom, 270
Albizzi, Francesco, 374
Albrecht of Brandenburg, 608
Albright, Daniel, 642
Alchemy, 107
Aldobrandini, Ippolito (Clement VIII), 402-403
Alemanno, Jochanan, 505-506
Aleppo, Syria, 114
Alemanno, Yohanan, 78
Alexander II, 483
Alexander VI, 17, 41, 55-57, 68, 76, 181, 184, 204, 216-217, 219-220, 221, 225, 227-228, 231, 277, 310, 322, 348, 359, 369, 518-519, 644
Alexander VIII, 135, 430
Alexander, Natalis, 447
Algebra of Revolution The, (Rees), 562
Allen, John J. Jr., 359
Alfonsi, Peter, 269
Alfonso XI, 274
Alinsky, Saul, 151
Allen, Michael J.B., 103
Altholz, Joseph L., 450
Altissimo, Cristofano dell, 324
Ambrose, St., 616

Ambrogio, Teseo, 638
Am ha'aretz, 182-183, 197-198, 270, 362, 399, 465
Amidah, 266-267
Amitié Judeo-Chrétienne, 530
Amoris Laetitia, 47-48, 246-247, 586, 628-629
Amphitheatre of Eternal Wisdom (Khunrath), 107, 240
Amram, David, 286
Amsterdam, Bank of, 439
Amulet, 23, 99, 102, 103, 175
Anabaptist, 123
Anderson, Charles A., 160
André, Brother, 32
Angelus magazine, The, 400, 587
Angelus Press, 133
Animism, 105
Annales Ecceliastici (Baronius), 97
Annotationes in quattuor et viginti Pandectarum libros (Budé), 18
Annotations Upon All the Books of the Old and New Testaments (Westminster Assembly), 24
Annotations Upon the Holy Bible (Pool), 24, 27
Anselm, Thomas, 261
Anthony of Padua, 445, 617-622, 626
Antoninus of Florence, 139
Anubis, 94, 343
Apaturia, 146
Apis the bull, 217, 219
Apologema (Caramuel), 76
Apologia (Pico), 187, 502, 519
Apologia pro Vita Sua (Newman) 440, 443-444, 447-448
Apostolic Penitentiary, 306
Aquinas, Thomas, 12, 103-104, 143, 148, 187, 212-213, 241, 258, 407-408, 454, 463, 472, 503, 538, 566, 570-571, 594, 597-600
Archbishop of Canterbury, 32
Arena Chapel, 617-618, 622-626
Aretino, Pietro, 365, 367, 379
Arianism, 73
Arignano, Benjamin ben Joseph, 299
Aristotle, 82, 85 143-144, 148, 164, 173-174, 176, 208
Aristotelian, 82, 139, 141, 404
Armogathe, Jean-Robert, 75
Arnauld, Antoine, 419
Arrabbiati of Florence, The, 228
Arthur, King, 28, 32
Artificial Intelligence, 177-178, 396
Asclepius, 99, 101, 104, 105, 152, 154, 177, 179, 181
Asher ben Yehiel, 270
Ashmole, Elias, 107
Asquith, Clare, 426
Assis, Raymundo Damasceno, 486
Assisi, 55, 81, 196

Astreo, Publio, 393
Astrology, 99 103-104, 109, 115, 153, 157, 202-203, 210, 214, 216-217, 233, 392
Athanasius, St., 48
Athelstan, King, 28
Attic Greece, 98, 146, 191
Augenspiegel (Reuchlin), 258, 260-261, 263, 265-266, 275-276, 300-302
Augsburg Contract, 606-607

Augustine, St., 12, 83, 105, 123, 139, 153, 178, 243, 247, 148, 243, 247, 369-370, 405, 407, 411, 418-421, 443, 447, 452, 457-458, 463, 512, 616
Augustinian(s), 239, 289, 301, 636
Aurelius, Cornelius, 239
Aurogallus, Matthew, 122
Ave Maria University, 157
Avignon, 41
Azpilcueta, Martin de (Navarrus), 416-417, 424, 426
Aztec, 359
Bagchi, David V.N., 317
Bagio, Bernardino di Benedetto di, see: Pintoricchio
Bailey, Derrick Sherwin, 484, 494
Bailey, Michael David, 392
Balas, Edith, 356
Baldassarri, Stefano Ugo, 139
Balthasar, Hans Urs von, 500-503, 517
Bank of England, 602, 605
Baphomet, 215
Barcelona Disputation, 166, 269
Bardi bank, 66
Barlaam of Calabria, 114, 144
Barnes, John, 423
Barone, Giuseppe, 505
Baronius, Cesare, 96-97
Barrat, James, 396
Bartholomew Fair (Jonson), 29
Basil the Great, 490, 615
Basle, University of, 121, 206, 257
Basri, Ezra, 454
Batavia, New York, 149
Baudelaire, Charles, 356
Baxter, Richard, 410, 427
Bea, Augustin, 530-531
Beatles, 376
Bede, Venerable, 489, 496
Beetle, Scarab/Scarabaeus, 376-377
Begni, Ernesto, 644
Belial, 29
Bellarmine, Robert, 60, 62, 97, 249
Belloc, Hilaire, 439
Belvedere College, 486

Benedict IX, 30, 49
Benedict XI, 618, 623
Benedict XIV, 40, 59, 438-439, 628
Benedict XV, 631
Benedict XVI, 89, 90, 91, 128-129, 283, 400, 455, 474-477, 526-530, 539, 551, 554, 558-559, 563, 586
Benedictine, 250, 253-254, 482, 489-490
Benigno, Giorgio, 315
Benin, 55
Benivieni, Girolamo, 82
Benjamin N. Cardozo School of Law, 591-592
Ben Yosef, Shlomo, 577
Berger, David, 264, 272, 581
Bergin, Joseph, 429
Bernardin, Joseph, 540
Bernini, Gian Lorenzo, 374
Bernini, Luigi, 374-375, 390
Bernino, Domenico, 521
Beroaldus, Philipp, 312

Berry, Jason, 473, 498
Bessarion, Basilios, 146-149
Bertolini, Marco 393
Birkat Haminim, 266-275, 578
Bissey, René, 473
Bitul tenai, 407
Bladao, Antonio, 299
Blakeney, R.P., 354, 440, 455, 457, 459, 462, 468
Blanchet, M.H., 148
Blondel, Maurice, 517
Blood Passover (Toaff), 585
Blum, Owen J., 483
Blumenthal, Max, 575-576
Blumenthal, Uta-Renate, 483
Bobadilla, Jerónimo Castillo de, 117
Boccaccio, Giovanni, 37
Bohemian Brethren, 126
Bologna, University of, 184
Bolshevik, 578
Bomberg, Daniel & House of Bomberg, 285-291, 312, 315, 317, 329
Bonacolsi, House of, 222
Bonfire of the Vanities, 225
Boniface VIII, 45, 59, 229, 627
Bono, James J., 181
Book of Common Prayer, The, 15-16
Bopfingen, Itzing, 284
Borgia, 55, 56, 216-220, 225, 227, 348, 359, 518, 643
Bori, Pier Cesare, 192
Borromeo, Charles, 416-417

Bosch, Hieronymus, 113
Bostius, Arnold, 239, 242
Boswell, John, 489
Botticelli, Sandro, 112, 356
Bovillus, Carolus, 238
Boyne, Battle of, 134-135
Bragadini, Alvise, 291-292
Braghettoni, 359
Brandenburg, Albrecht, 303
Brandenburg, Joachim von, 241, 245
Brandolini, Aurelio, 393
Brann, Noël, 241, 242, 248, 254
Breger, Marshal, 589
Brown, Alison, 176
Brown, Meg Lota, 431
Brown, Raymond E., 267
Brozzi, Martino di, 234
Bruno, Giordano, 44, 106, 180, 210, 232, 311
Bruscoli, Francesco Guidi, 21
Buber, Martin, 18
Budé, Pierre, 18
Buddhists/Buddhism, 55, 105
Budge, E.A. Wallis, 376
Buenos Aires, Argentina, 47
Bülow, Dietrich von, 239
Bultmann, Rudolf, 88
Bulwer-Lytton, Edward, 523
Burchardus, Johannes, 26
Burghley, Lord (William Cecil), 14
Burke, Raymond, 71
Burkert, Walter, 113, 197
Burridge, Bob, 557-558
Busenbaum, Herman, 478

Bush, George W., 209
Butzbach, Johannes, 241
Buxtorf, Johannes, 206-207
Byrne, Susan, 116
Byrnes, James, 73
Byzantine, 30, 143

Caesar Augustus, 378
Caesar, Julius, 378
Caetani, Benedetto (Boniface VIII), 627
Cahorsins, 66
Cain, 194, 561
Cajetan, Thomas (Tomasso de Vio), 301, 501,
Caligula, 372

Callan, Paul, 487
Calvin, John, 18-19, 20, 21, 38, 51, 66, 83, 126-127, 210, 232, 492
Calvinism/Calvinist, 19, 24, 27, 45, 208, 439, 602, 605-606, 614
Cambilhon, Johann, 250
Cambio, Arnolfo di, 617
Cambridge Apostles, 39
Cambridge Conversazione Society, 39
Cambridge Platonists, 83
Cambridge University, 39
Cameron, James, 529
Campagnola, Domenico, 619
Campanini, Saverio, 244, 297
Campano, Giovanni Antonio, 392
Campbell, Joseph, 27
Campeggio, Lorenzo, 314
Campion, Edmund, 16-17
Canaanite, 167, 169, 413
Cano, Melchior, 62
Canon Law, 1917 Code of, 43, 66, 213, 602-603, 630-631
Canon Law, 1983 Code of, 66, 602-603, 630-631
Canonization, 30, 39
Cape, Ruth I., 276, 280, 309
Caperton v. A. T. Massey Coal Co., 353, 589
Capponi, Luigi, 608
Capuchin-Franciscan, 66
Carafa, Gian Pietro (Paul IV), 304
Carafa, Oliveriero, 226
Caramuel (y Lobkowitz), Juan, 74, 75, 76, 253-254
Carben, Victor von, 269, 281
Carden, Michael, 493, 495-496
Carmelite, 239
Carmelites of Ghent, 238
Carnesecchi, Zanobi, 608
Carrara, Marsilio da, 625
Carvajal, Bernardino López de, 310
Castellesi, Adriano, 312-313
Castro, Leon de, 120
Casaubon, Isaac, 96, 97, 204-206, 214, 398
Casaubon, Meric, 25
Casuistry, 408, 427
Cataldo, Joseph, 8, 485
Catechism of the Catholic Church, 91
Catechism of the Council of Trent, 447
Castelbarco, Guglielmo, 625

Catesby, Robert, 426
Catholic University of America, 589
Catilinet, Jean, 128
Cattaneo, House of, 608

Cavalieri di Santa Maria, 624
Cecil, Robert, 14
Cecil, William, 428
Cecini, Ulisse, 640
Celestine V, 229, 626
Celibacy/celibate, 481, 484, 497
Celso, Hugo de, 117
Celtis, Conrad, 238
Cesarini, Giuliano, 143, 146, 149
Cesena, Biagio da, 330, 365
Chabad-Lubavitch, 43, 589, 593
Chailley, Jacques, 643
Chaldean, 143, 153, 157, 203, 516
Chaldean Chronicles (Psellos), 144
Champier, Symphorien, 394
Chapel of Santa Maria della Caritá, 618
Chapman, Mark D., 451
Chardin, Teilhard de, 500, 517
Charles II, 127, 135
Charles V, 116, 134, 634
Charles VIII, 26, 232, 518
Charondas, 493
Chastel, André, 635
Chemical Wedding of Christian Rosenkreuz (Andreae), 107
Chicago World's Fair, 376
Chigi, Fabio, 253
Chiliostichos theologia (Leon), 144
Christian Remembrancer, The, 432, 460, 472
Christmas, 112 (also see: December 25)
Chronographia (Psellos), 144
Chrysostom, John, 567, 616
Chumash, 167, 169-170
Churton, Tobias, 107
Ciantes, Joseph Maria, 75
Cibo, Franceschetto, 518
Cibo, Giovanni Battista (Innocent VIII), 219, 518
Cibo, Innocenzo, 518
Cibo, Lorenzo, 186
Cicero, Marcus Tullius, 176, 218, 471, 493
Cistercian, 74, 119
City of God Against the Pagans, The (Augustine), 105, 178
Civilta Cattolica, 47
Clarke, Elizabeth, 25
Clavasio, Angelus de, 409
Clement IV, 274
Clement VII, 41, 78, 135-136, 138, 235, 287, 289, 301, 348, 357, 394, 633-636
Clement VIII, 402-403
Clement IX, 390
Clement of Alexandria, 496, 615
Cleopartra's Needle, 378
Clinton, Bill, 593

Clonliffe College, 486
Clymes, Joannes, 243
Coimbra, University of, 117, 415
Collége de Montaigu, 18
Collége Fortet, 18

Collins, Wilkie, 442
Colonna, Francesco, 359
Commentariorum Theologicarum Tomus Tertius, (Valencia), 417, 422
Commentary on Avicenna's Intentions of the Philosophers (Narboni), 80
Compagnacci of Florence, 228, 231
Compagnia de' Magi, 112
Comparatio philosophorum Platonis et Aristotelis (Trebizond), 146-147, 222
Concordia Mosis et Platonis (Ficino), 98
Confessio Fraternitatis (Rosicrucian manifesto), 108
Confessions of St. Augustine, 37
Congar, Yves, 129
Connell, Desmond, 486-488
Constant, Alphonse Louis, see: Lévi, Eliphas
Constantine, Roman Emperor, 11, 24, 25, 375
Conti, Vincenzo, 296-297
Contraception, 477-479, 492-493
Contra mendacium (Augustine), 421, 452
Copenhaver, Brian P., 109, 177, 370
Co-Redemptrix, 26, 151, 523
Corpus Hermeticum, 81, 93, 95, 96, 98, 100, 101, 102, 107, 121, 152, 155-156, 197, 393
Corregio, Giovanni Mercurio da, 393-395
Cortesi, Paolo, 359
Cortile del Papagallo, 643-644, 646
Cortile della Toree Borgia, 643
Costa, Giorgio, 502
Coughlin, Charles, 8, 10, 306
Coulter, Charles Russell, 17
Coulianu, Ioan, 102, 254
Council of Antioch, 568
Council of Basle, 141
Council of Elvira, 615
Council of Florence, 52, 112, 143-144, 150, 222
Council of Laodicea, 568
Council of Lyon, 616
Council of Pisa, 314
Council of Reims, 483
Council of Trent, 62, 108, 298, 447-448, 477
Council of Vienne, 617
Counter-Reformation, 74, 97, 108, 253, 298, 416, 521
Coxe, A.C., 435
Cracow, 243
Cranmer, Thomas, 65
Crater Hermetis (Lazzarelli), 392, 394-396

Craven, William G., 504
Cremona Conspiracy, The, 296-297
Cristiani, Paulus, 269
Croatian, 402
Crompton, Louis, 484
Cromwell, Oliver, 29, 127
Cromwell, Thomas, 205
Cruciger, Caspar, 122
Crystal ball, 194
Cudworth, Ralph, 83
Cupich, Blase, 485
Curl, James Stevens, 155
Curran, Brian A., 379

Curran, Charles, 478

Daf Yomi, 591
Dalberg, Johannes de (von), 239, 259
Damian, Peter, 482-485, 490-492, 497
Damien of Molokai, 32
Danes, Pierre, 18
Daniel ben Isaac of Pisa, 136
Danneels, Godfried, 485
Dante Aligheri, 71, 204, 618, 622, 624, 633
Dashwood, Francis, 136, 463
Datum in audientia (Pius VIII), 602, 630
David, (King of Israel), 166
David, Rosalie, 202
Davies, Owen, 94, 156
Da Vinci, Gioacchino, 502
Day, Dorothy, 8
De arcanis catholicae veritatis (Galatin), 306, 397-398
De arcano sermone, (Montano), 119
De arte cabalistica (Reuchlin), 258, 312, 318, 328, 401
Debus, Allen G., 240
De Candale, Foix, 504
De Caro, Gaspare, 633, 636
December 23, 29, 30
De christiana religione (Ficino), 37, 83
Decretum (Gratian), 616
Dee, John, 223, 396
De divortio Lotharii regis et Theutbergae reginae (Hincmar), 496
De Ecclesia (Bellarmine), 62
Defense of Reuchlin (Benigno), 315
Defense of the Sacred Priesthood (Fisher), 130
Degollado, Marcial Maciel, see: Maciel, Marcial
De Harmonia Mundi (Giorgio), 95, 107, 183
De Insolentia Judaeorum (Agobard), 272

De Jong, Mayke, 489
De Justitia et Jure (Lessius), 417
De Justitia et Jure libri decem (Soto), 411
Della trasportatione dell'obelisco vaticano et delle fabriche di Nostro Signore papa Sisto V (Fontana), 337, 342, 373, 382
Delumeau, Jean, 512
De Magia orientali (Postel), 639
De mendacio (Augustine), 421
Demand and Announcement to and against the Provincials, Priors and Convents of the Order of Preachers (Sickingen), 315
DeMar, Gary, 45
De Marchi, John, 175
Demiurge, 160
De mystica statera (Agli), 176
Dennison, William A., 161
Denys the Areopagite, 97, 144, 157, 358, 395, 512
Denzinger Catholic Manual of Theology, 58
De occulta philosophia (Agrippa), 108,129, 195, 241
De perenni philosophia libri decem (Steuco), 401, 516
De praestigiis daemonum (Weyer), 108

De Quincey, Thomas, 107
Derbes, Anne, 620, 625
De rebus sacris et ecclesiasticus exercitationes (Casaubon), 97, 204
Der gantz Jüdisch glaub (Margaritha), 269
Der Juden Spiegel (Pfefferkorn), 276, 278, 308
De renuntiatione saeculi, 490
Derush, 118
De Smet, Pierre, 8
D'Espieres, Jean, 254
Destructio cabale seu cabalisticae perdiae (Hoogstraeten), 317
D'Etaples, Lefevre, 504, 517
De Lubac, Henri, 204-205, 318, 499-507, 509, 511-518, 520-521
De Trinitate (Augustine), 139
De triplici vita libri tres (Ficino), 99, 104, 178
Development of doctrine, 52, 58, 451
De virbo mirifico (Reuchlin), 258-259
De vita coelitus comparanda (Ficino), 99, 101-102, 179, 196, 363-364
De vita pythagorica (Iamblichus), 140
De voluptate (Ficino), 94, 154
Dialogus Julius Exclusus e coelis (Erasmus), 314
Dialogus Tusci et Remi adversus Savonarolam (Pocari), 228
Dialogue with Trypho (Justin Martyr), 268, 567
Diana, Goddess, 140, 366
Dickens, Charles, 130, 372
Dictionarium Hebraicum Novum (Förster), 122
Dibner, Bern, 375, 380, 390
Di dio et anima (Ficino), 154
Diemling, Maria, 281, 304

Die Zauberflöte (Mozart), 642-643
Diffinitiones Asclepii (Lazzarelli), 394
Dillon, John M., 158
Dionysius the Areopagite, 97-98, 114, 157-158, 159, 362
Discourses Against Judaizing Christians (Chrysostom), 567
Discursus de Reformatione Ecclesiae, (Recaneto), 299
Disputatio contra iudicium astrologorum (Ficino), 103
Disputatio de Veritate Morali cum Mendacio & Locutionibus Aequivocis ac Mente Restrictis Comparata (Raynaud), 417
Disputationes adversus astrologiam divinatricem (Pico), 217
Dissertatio contra Aequivocationes (Barnes), 423
Dissimulation/deception, 200, 203, 217, 244-246, 252, 270, 314, 317, 356-358, 360, 397, 406-419, 422-424, 427-428, 432, 437, 452, 456-459, 461-462, 466, 468, 470-472, 531, 536, 552-553, 597-598, 602-603, 609, 628
Distributists, 440
Divine Light: The Theology of Denys the Areopagite (Riordan), 157, 395
Divini Platonis Opera Omnia, (Ficino) 323
Dolan, Timothy, 64, 486
Domenichi, Ludovico, 366
Dominican Order/Dominicans 263, 274, 276, 278, 281, 285, 296, 300-301, 304, 307, 312, 314-317, 411, 454, 501, 519, 621
Donin, Nicholas, 269, 273-274, 280, 566-568, 583-584, 586
Doninger, Wendy, 375
Donndorf, Adolf von, 327

Doria-Velluti-Amatto bank, 608
Dostoyevsky, Fyodor, 73-74
Douthat, Ross, 52
Dowling, Maria, 305
Downard, James Shelby, 242
Dublin Review (Wiseman), 460-461
Dublin, University College, 486
Duffy, Eamon, 626
Dulia, 100
Dulles, Avery, 187

Eberhard im Bart of Würtemberg, 257-258
Eberhard of Cleves, 316
Ebreo, Leone, 392
Ecclesiastical History (Scholasticos), 43
Eck, Johann, 21, 318-319, 603, 606-607,
Eden, 25, 201, 395
Edighoffer, Roland, 108
Edmund of East Anglia, 32
Edom, 574
Edward VI, 526
Edward the Confessor, 12, 32, 616

Egypt/Egyptian, 22, 27-29, 43, 52, 62, 78, 79, 93-94, 96, 98, 100, 104, 153, 155, 157 165, 178, 182, 184, 187, 192, 199-203, 206, 214, 216-219, 247, 319, 342-344, 370, 372-380, 391, 467, 521, 642-643
Ehrman, Albert, 272
Ehrman, Bart D., 548
Eisen, Yosef, 399
Eisenmenger, Johann Andreas, 125, 206
Elazar/Eleazar of Worms, 272, 395
Elder Brothers in the Faith, 67, 396, 476, 527, 533, 554, 559-561
Eleison Comments (Williamson), 39
Eleusinian mysteries, 146
Elgin, Raphael, 208
Eliano, Vittorio, 296
Eliezer ben Yoel HaLevi, 271
Elissaios, 143
Elizabeth I, 13-17, 66, 121, 423, 428, 433
Elizabeth I (Johnson), 14
Elizabeth the Queen (Weir), 16
Empedocles, 43
Encausse, Gérard, see: Papus
Enchiridion sive Manuale Confessariorum et Paenitentium (Azpilcueta), 416
Engammare, Max, 638
Enlightenment, The, 132, 503, 586
Ennead (Plotinus), 104
Entdecktes Judenthum (Eisenmenger), 125
Epikeia, 18, 20, 38, 479
Epistle to Yemen ("Iggeret Teiman," Maimonides), 271
Epistolae obscurorum virorum: see *Letters of Obscure Men*
Equity, 17-18, 20
Equiprobabilism, 454
Equivocation, 405, 408-414, 418, 420-428, 430-431, 435 437, 440-442, 444-445, 447, 450, 452-453, 455-456, 462-465, 477, 488
Epistola de nobilioribus philosophorum sectis (Scala), 176
Erasmus Desiderius, 201, 256, 259, 263, 276, 301, 303-305, 312, 314-315

Erich of Braunschweig, 284
Ermengaud, Matfre, 274
Esau, 561, 574
Escorial library, 116
Esdras, 190-191
Etruscan, 36, 640
Eusebius, 160
Everard, John, 107
Evola, Julius, 154
Evriponus, Johannes, 239
Ex cathedra, 58, 64
Ex Quo Singulari (Benedict XIV), 438

Faerie Queen, The (Spenser), 17
Fanciulli, 225
Farmer, Stephen A., 187, 190, 202-203, 237
Farnese, Alessandro (Paul III), 298, 348
Fatima, Portugal, 175
Featley, Daniel, 25
Fellay, Bernard, 561
Ferdinand I, 351, 637
Ferdinand III, 74, 75, 253
Ferguson, Margaret W., 424-425
Ferrante, 392-393, 395
Ferrara, Christopher A., 614
Ferrara, Council of, 143
Ferrara, Ludovico da, 226
Ferrara, University of, 184, 222
Ferrer, Vincent, 12, 123, 125, 537
Ficino Marsilio, 37, 44, 80-84, 94-96, 98-103, 107, 112, 114-117, 139, 141, 152-157, 159, 163, 174, 176-181, 183-184, 192, 196-197, 200-201, 207-208 210, 217-218, 226, 232, 357, 358, 363-364, 369-371, 392-393, 401, 501, 504, 515-516, 647
Field, Arthur M., 115, 176
Field, Ray, 487
Fifty-One Theses Against Usury (Strauss), 611-612
Fisher, John, 129, 304-306, 319
Fitzmyer, Joseph A., 559
Fleming, Julia A., 78, 253
Flersheim, Philipp von, 316
Fletcher, Joseph, 18
Florence, city of, Republic of, 112, 135, 138, 143, 184, 226-232, 234-235, 364
Florence Colorado Supermax, 130,
Florenzer/Florenzen, 233
Fontana, Domenico, 337, 373, 380-383, 385-390
Foot, Sarah, 489-490
Förster, Johann, 122
Fortas, Abe, 593
Forte, Bruno, 47, 72, 486
Forzaté, Giovanni, 622
Fowlie, Wallace, 356
Foxe, John, 16
Francis of Assisi, 229, 445
Francis, Pope, 48-49, 54-56 58, 60, 70, 246-247, 455, 465, 485-486, 497, 563, 586, 628, 642
Franciscans of Medmenham, see: Hell-Fire Club
Francois I, 400, 634
Frankfurt Autumn Fair, 299
Franks, Christopher A., 594, 597
Fraser, Antonia, 409

Franz, Raymond, 111
Fraticelli, Franciscan, 229

Frazier, Alison, 147 Frederick I, 26
Frederick II, 392
Frederick III, 264, 392
Freedom of the Press/Speech, 72, 149
Freemasonry/Freemasons, 43, 46, 52, 65, 72, 107, 136, 145, 149, 176, 209-211, 339, 341, 343, 372 376-378, 503, 522-524 526, 535, 537, 565, 586, 642-643, 647, 649-650
French Revolution, 45, 132, 467
Freiburg, University of, 257
Frére-Colonna, Abbé, 523
Friar Paul, 166
Friedrich of Saxony, 317
Fugger Bank, 19, 51, 52, 66, 316, 439, 603, 605-608

Gabriel, Angel, 117
Gaca, Kathy L., 493
Gaguin, Robert, 239, 257
Galahim ("tonsured ones"), 271
Galatin(o), Peter (Petrus Galatinus), 269, 297, 306-307, 397-398
Galenists, 240
Galileo, 232
Gallican, 135, 429
Gamaliel, 267-268, 398, 400, 543, 578, 587
Gamboso, Vergilio, 619
Ganymede, 357
Ganzfried, Shlomo, 566
Gaon, Saaida, 120
Gara, Giovanni di, 292
Garcia, Peter, 502
Gargantua and Pantagruel (Rabelais), 463
Garin, M. Eugenio, 506
Garnet, Henry, 424-426, 428
Garsias, 520
Gataker, Thomas, 25
Gawthrop, Richard, 614
Gay, see: Homosexual
Gellius, Aulus, 35
Gemara, 98
Gematria, 184, 195, 319, 577
Gemistos, Georgios: see Plethon
Geneva Bible, 25, 45
Geneva, Switzerland, 20, 21
Geniza texts, 268
Gennari, Giuseppe, 623
George III, 10
Germain of Ganay, 516
Gersh, Stephen, 162
Gevurah/chesed, 75
Gezara shava, 203, 552, 480
Ghisleri, Michele, 296-297
Giles of Viterbo: See Viterbo, Giles

Gilgul, 164-165, 168
Ginsburg, Ruth Bader, 593
Giorgio/Giorgi, Francesco di, 95, 98, 107, 183, 249, 297, 504, 520
Giotto di Bondone, 617, 623, 626
Giustiniani, Antonio, 291
Glories of Mary, The (Liguori), 432, 455, 472-473

Glory of the Olive, 455
Gnostics, Gnosticism, Gnosis, 84-86, 101, 109, 142, 143, 209, 403
Goddess, 14, 17, 25-26, 28, 140
Goldmann, Nathum, 530
Goldschmidt, E.P., 243
Goldwaithe, Richard A.,
605 Golem, 180
Gonzaga, Gianfresco II of Mantua, 26
Gonzalez, Eliezer, 496
Good Friday Prayer for the Jews in the Extraordinary Form, The, 566, 568, 572
Gorringe, Henry Honeychurch, 377
Göttingen, University of, 430
Gouge, William, 25
Gozzoli, Benozzo, 112
Grabill, Stephen J., 492
Graetz, Heinrich, 298
Grafton, Anthony, 206, 398
Grama, Saadya, 574
Grand Lodge of Italy, 647
Grande Congrégation Notre Dame de l'Assomption, 522
Grand Orient of Italy, 647
Gratian, 616, 620
Grebe, Anja, 26
Gregory II, 489
Gregory III, 490
Gregory IX, 258, 273, 616, 624
Gregory X, 616
Gregory XIII, 120, 381
Gregory XIV, 250, 402
Gregory XVI, 434
Gregory of Nicea, 616
Gregory the Great, 12, 496
Gresemund, Dietrich, 239
Grimani, Domenico, 203, 301
Grimstad, William L., 437
Grumett, David, 205, 500
Guenois, Jean-Marie, 473
Guenon, René, 154, 524
Guidelines and Suggestions for Implementing the Conciliar Declaration Nostra Aetate, 537
Guide of the Perplexed (Maimonides), 37, 583
Gui, Bernard, 274
Guglia, 379

Guiscard, Robert, 336, 379
Guise clan, 68
Guizot, Francois, 21
Gundersheimer, Werner L., 181, 256
Gunpowder Plot, 425
Gurary, Noson, 589
Gurvitz, Yossi, 564

Haas, Guenther H., 18
Hacker, Joseph R., 294
Ha-Darshan, Moses, 130
Hades, 84
Hagar, 561
Hale, Robert, 483
Halevy, Judah, 77, 292
Ham, 37
Hammond, Henry, 419
Handt Spiegel (Pfefferkorn), 261-262

Hanegraaff, Wouter J., 101, 110, 176, 195, 226, 393-394
Hapsburg, 245
Harvard Law School, 593
Harvey, William, 240
Heber, Noach, 591
Hebrew Republic, 131
Hegel, G.W.F., 51, 136, 561
Hegelian/Hegelianism, 51, 136, 526, 553, 561-562
Heidenberg, Johann see: Trithemius
Hellenist/Hellenism, 144-145, 493
Hell-Fire Club, 136, 463
Henry VIII, 205, 298
Heptaplus (Pico) 187, 193, 202, 216, 401, 505-506, 518
Herbenus, Mattháus, 239
Hermanubis, 343
Herod, 111, 421
Hermetic/Hermeticism, 78, 86, 94, 98-99, 101, 103, 110, 112, 153, 155, 184, 205-206, 208, 210, 240, 242, 249-250, 255, 343, 363, 370, 393, 395, 400, 402, 404, 499, 516, 521, 565, 569, 586, 643
Hermetica (Scott), 94
Hersey, George L., 643
Hertz, Joseph, 268
Heschel, Abraham, 531-532
Hess, Jonathan M., 133
Hikmat al-Ishraq (Suhrawardi), 114
Hillel, 75 125, 359, 398, 400, 439, 453, 552, 564, 583, 587
Hincmar, 496
Hinduism, 105, 373
Hislop, Alexander, 11, 19, 24, 27

Historia de los heterodoxos espanoles (Pelayo), 116
Historia XX saecolorum (Giles of Viterbo), 36, 257
Hiya Meir ben David, 290
Hodegetria, 433
Hollywood, 15
Holocaustianity, 125, 476, 526-527, 529-530, 535, 537, 539, 545-546, 549, 551, 553
Homer, 79
Homiletic and Pastoral Review, 570-572, 578
Homosexual/Homosexuality, 70, 83, 232, 374, 482-488, 494-498
Homosexuality and the Western Christian Tradition (Bailey), 494
Honorius I, 48, 73 Honorius IV, 274
Hoogstraeten, Jacobus (Jacob), 281, 300-302, 307, 311-312, 314-317, 520
Hook, Judith, 636
Hornblower, Simon, 35, 391
Horton, Michael, 80, 87-88, 93
Horus, 30
Hoyos, Castrillon, 473-474
Huerga, Cipriano de la, 119
Huguenot, 205
Humane Vitae (Paul VI), 435, 477, 479
Humanism/Humanists, 18, 29, 36-37, 114 139-140, 144, 172, 237, 256-257, 263, 275-277, 283, 285, 292, 300-303, 310, 312, 315, 317
Humanum Genus (Leo XIII), 23, 43, 145, 209-210
Hume, David, 504
Hutten, Ulrich von, 284
Huxley, Aldous, 154

Iamblichus of Chalcis, 89, 103, 140, 154, 159, 162-163, 174
Ibis, 81
Ich bin ain Buchlinn, der Juden veindt is mein namen (Pfefferkorn), 266
Idel, Moshe, 80, 153
Ignatius of Antioch, 567
Ignatius of Loyola, 64, 481-482
Ignatius Press, 157, 499
Instruction a la France sur verité de la Roze-Croix (Naudé), 639
Illsung, Sebastian, 606
Illuminati/Illuminism, 114, 143, 146, 186, 522, 639
Illustrium virorum epistolae (Reuchlin), 311-312
Il Principe (Machiavelli), 345
Imagen de la vida cristiana (Pinto), 117
Imago Dei, 38, 142, 362
Incrementalism, 70
Index of Prohibited Books, 76, 250
In diesem buchlein vindet yr ein entlichen furtrag wie die blinden Juden yr Ostern halten (Pfefferkorn), 263
Indulgences, 606, 608
Infallible/ Infallibility, 30, 50, 54, 57, 59, 60-62, 68, 73, 463, 465
Inferno, The (Dante), 71, 622, 624, 633
Ingolstadt, University of, 186, 250-251, 304, 316-317, 402

Immortal (Resurrection) bodies, 87, 90, 91, 162
Initiate and cowan, 39, 362
Innocent III, 258, 363, 576
Innocent IV, 616
Innocent VIII, 185-186 191, 202, 216, 219, 223, 257, 277, 325, 503, 517-521
Innocent XI, 134-135, 429-432, 449, 456-458, 470
Innocent XII, 430
Innsbrück, University of, 302
Inquisition, 24, 100, 109, 116-117, 119-120, 152, 231, 236, 274, 277, 292, 294, 296-297, 302, 315, 358, 394, 412, 502-503
Inter multiplices (Leo X), 603
Ishmael, 561
Instituto per le Opere di Religione, 175
Instone-Brewer, David, 267
Inter-Varsity Press, 494
Introduction to Christianity (Ratzinger), 89
Isaac, 194, 561
Isaac, Jules, 530
Isabella, Queen, 274, 537
Isaiah, 209
Iserloh, Erwin, 317
Isis, 13, 17, 27-29, 94, 218-219, 391, 433
Islamic: see Muslim
Isserles, Moses, 291
Istoria di tutte l'eresie, (Bernino), 521

Jackson, Andrew, 9
Jacob, 454, 561
Jacob ben Asher, 270
Jacob ben Hayyim ibn Adoniyahu, 290
Jair, Pinchas ben, 130

James I, 121
James I of Aragon, 269
James II, 135
Jansenist/Jansenism, 419, 456
Janus, 35, 36
Jardine, David, 425
Jefferson, Ann, 406
Jefferson, Thomas, 152
Jena, University of, 240
Jerman, James, 497
Jerome, St. 401, 615
Jessenius, Johannes, 208
Jesuit/Jesuits, 64, 135, 250-251, 299, 409, 415, 417-419, 422-424, 426-428, 454, 456, 479, 482-483, 485-486, 499, 522, 530
Jewish People and their Sacred Scriptures in the Christian Bible, The, 551-554, 559
John XXII, 49

John XXIII, 39, 46, 73, 455, 530
John-Paul II 9, 38-40, 67, 69, 81, 91, 100, 123, 133, 196, 359-360, 362, 368-369, 432, 455, 465, 474-475, 482, 487, 498, 500, 505, 526, 537-545, 548-551, 554, 558, 563, 587, 631
John XII, 49
Johnson, Paul, 14, 15-16
Johnson, Samuel, 444, 446
Jonathan Levi Zion, 284
Jone, Heribert, 233
Jones, Frederick M., 455
Jones, G. Lloyd, 120, 126, 129-130
Jones, Jim, 34
Jonestown, 34
Jonson, Ben, 29
Jordan, Mark D., 481, 496-497
Joseph of Cupertino, 32
Jove, 27
Juan I, 274
Juan Diego, 359
Jud, Leo, 121, 126
Judah in Genesis 38, 167-171, 560
Julius II, 34, 219, 234, 314, 357, 394, 606
Julius III, 294
Justin Martyr, 28, 268

Kabbalah/Kabbalism, 22, 24, 36, 38-39, 43, 72, 75, 78, 80, 93, 94, 106, 113-114, 119, 128-129, 145, 153-155, 159, 163-165, 167-168, 170-173, 180, 184-185, 187, 189-190, 193-194, 195, 198, 200, 203, 205, 210, 214-216, 244-246, 254, 258-260, 270, 275, 277-279, 281, 287-290, 293, 295-296, 298-301, 304, 306, 309, 311-312, 316-320, 350, 396, 397, 401, 405, 454, 482, 503, 506, 518, 522-524, 528, 530-531, 533, 539, 549, 551, 553, 561, 565, 568, 589, 591, 598, 615, 637-641
Kadmon, Adam, 214-216,
Kaganovich, Lazar, 579
Kant, Immanuel, 45, 132-134, 504
Kaplan, Edward K., 531
Karaism, 120
Karo, Joseph, 566, 582
Katzenellenbogen, Meir, 290-292
Katzenellenbogen, Shmuel, 290
Keech, Dominio, 243
Khunrath, Henricus/Heinrich, 107-108, 240
Kimchi, David, 118, 130
King James Bible, 121, 399
Kingsley, Charles, 441-445, 447-450

Kirby, John, 487
Kircher, Athanasius, 521
Kirk, Kenneth E., 431

Kirkpatrick, Robin, 622
Kiryas Joel Village School District v. Grumet, 591
Kiryat Arba, 575
Koch, Anton, 434
Koepfel, Wolfgang, 263
Kohl, Benjamin G., 625
Kol Nidrei, 406, 423, 437, 459
Kraye, Jill, 83, 142
Krishnamurti, Jiddu, 524-525
Kristeller, P.O., 115, 516
Kunigunde of Bavaria, 280, 284
Kuntz, Marion L., 639
Kuzari (Halevy), 292

Lactanius, 97
Laertius, Diogenes, 93
Lake Garda Statement, 614
Lakewood Yeshiva, 574
Lamont, John, 570-573, 578, 580-586
Landau, Ezekiel, 166
Landino, Cristoforo, 115
Landsknecht mercenaries, 634
Langer, Ruth, 269, 274
Langland, William, 125
Langton, Stephen, 32
Las leyes de todos los reynos de Castilla (Celso), 117
Lateran Council(s), 24, 91, 256, 313, 576, 607, 616, 623
Latin Mass: see Tridentine Latin Mass
Latin Mass Society of England and Wales, 566-572, 584-586
Latria, 100
Lattes, Isaac ben Immanuel de, 299
Law, Bernard, 498
Lazzarelli, Alessandro, 392
Lazzarelli, Ludovico, 200, 297, 392-396, 401
Lea, Henry Charles, 414
Leadbeater, C.W., 129, 524-525
Lefebvre, Marcel, 40, 72
Legatt, John, 25
Legionaries of Christ, 486, 498
Leijenhorst, Cees, 208, 402-403
Lemon, Rebecca, 425
Lenzi, Lorenzo, 230
Leo II, 48
Leo IX, 483
Leo X, 51, 52, 70, 106, 107, 125, 138, 166, 227, 235, 256-259, 281-283, 285-289, 294-295, 297-302, 304, 306-307, 310, 312-315, 317-319, 328, 348, 365, 379, 394, 397-398, 412, 504, 518, 521, 550, 601-605
Leo XIII, 23, 43, 59, 145, 151, 209, 363, 602
Leo the Great, 616
Le saincte et trés chrétienne cabale (Thenaud), 401

Les Soirées de Saint-Petersbourg (Maistre), 523
Lessing, G.E., 88
Lessius, Leonard, 417, 468
Letters of Obscure Men, 106, 275-276, 283, 302, 305, 315
Lévi, Éliphas, 215, 523-524

Levine, Amy-Jill, 547-548, 587
Levirate marriage, 164-165, 167-168
Levita, Elias, 297
Levy, Leonard W., 421
Lewin, Nathan, 352, 591, 593
Lewis, Mary Tompkins, 113
Ley, John, 25
Libavius, Andreas, 240
Libellus de Litteris sanctis (Giles of Viterbo), 289
Liber Gomorrhianus (Damian), 482-483
Liberius, Pope, 48-49
Liber sacrosancti evangelii de lesu Christo Domino, 351, 637
Life of John Picus Mirandula, The (Thomas More), 205, 326
Liguori, Alphonsus, 75, 346, 354, 405, 416-418, 420, 431-432, 434-437, 439-445, 448-450, 452-464, 466, 468-473, 476-480
Liguorianism, 441, 444, 477
Lille-III, University, 499
Linga, Gudimallam, 338, 373
Linker, Damon, 71
Lior, Doy, 575
Little Egypt, 376
Livanos, Christopher, 149
Lives of Eminent Philosophers (Diogenes), 93
Lobkowitz, Jan Popel von, 253
Loew, Judah, 180, 319
Loew, Kate, 314
Lohr, Charles H., 141
Lombardo, Tullio, 618-619
Lombards, 66
Long Sermon on Usury, (Luther), 610
Lothair II, 496
Louis XII, 314
Louis XIV, 135
Louis the Pious, 272
Louise of Savoy, 400
Louvain, University of, 253, 417
Lovecraft, H.P., 372
Lubac, Henri de, 204-205, 318, 499-507, 509, 511-518, 520-521
Lubicz, R.A. Schwaller de, 202
Lubin, Eilhard, 208
Lucrum cessans, 21, 596, 600
Ludwig X, 640
Luke, St., 398

Lull, Ramon, 139, 184, 196, 521
Lully, Raymond, see: Lull
Lutheran 66, 208, 240, 283, 302, 313, 315-317, 615, 634
Luther, Martin, 19, 49, 50, 51, 83, 121, 123-125, 130, 142, 157, 232, 289, 311, 315-317, 418, 492, 607-615
Lyons, France, 21
Lyons, Matthew, 14

MacArthur, John F., 198
Macbeth, 425-426
MacGuigan, Mark, 479
Machiavelli Niccoló, 67-68, 226, 234, 345, 477
Maciel, Marcial, 486, 498
Madden, Andrew, 487
Maderno, Carlo, 390
Mafia, 68

Magic Flute, The (Mozart), 642-643, 645
Magi, 79, 109-113, 143-144, 157, 178, 195, 203, 639
Magister, Sandro, 70
Magna Carta, 32
Magnus, Albertus, 241
Mahony, Roger, 283, 498, 540
Mahzar, Fahreda, 376
Maimonides, Moses, 37, 75, 187-188, 264, 267, 271, 290, 395, 406, 538, 564, 566, 573-574, 578, 581-583
Maier, Michael, 108
Mair, John, 18
Maistre, Joseph de, 522
Mallinckrodt, Bernhard von, 254
Manichaean, 43, 86, 162
Man as god 99, 100, 142 150 177, 180-181, 192, 201, 221, 265, 319, 598
Manetti, Giovanni, 231
Manning, Henry Edward, 434, 452
Mansfield, Mary C., 625
Mantua, Lords of, 222
Marano, Pietro da, 625
Margaret of Pforzheim, 257
Margaritha, Anthonius, 269, 275
Marini, Piero, 359-360
Maroldi, Marco, 502
Mars Hill, 93
Marsi, Paolo, 393
Marti (Martin), Ramon (Raymundus Martini), 166, 307, 569
Martin, Malachi, 530
Martines, Lauro, 224, 226-227, 229, 231
Martinism, 522
Marto, Jacinta, 175

Martyn, J. Louis, 267
Maruffi, Silvestro, 231
Marx, Chico, 56
Marx, Reinhard, 132
Mary I, ("Bloody"), 14, 15, 16, 428
Mary, Blessed Virgin, 25-26, 27 29, 175, 244, 261, 264, 308, 398, 424-425, 431, 433, 458, 472-473, 618, 625
Masai, Francois, 132
Mason, Henry, 422
Matt, Daniel, 193
Matt, Michael J., 614
Mattei, Robert de, 54, 132, 633, 635
Matthew, St., 111
Maurer, Wilhelm, 260
Maximilian I, 239, 258, 263, 266, 280-281, 284
Maximus the Confessor, 162
McCall, Brian M., 598, 600
McCaul, Alexander, 12
McConica, James K., 305
McIntosh, Christopher, 95, 107, 183, 524
McIntyre, James, 31
McNamara, Kevin, 488
McNeice, Damian, 487
McQuaid, John Charles, 488
Mediator Dei (Pius XII), 52
Medici 51, 68, 70, 112, 138, 184, 222, 228, 234, 310, 313, 315, 356-357, 360, 601-603, 605-606
Medici Bank, 66, 349, 633
Medici, Cosimo de, 80, 112, 138, 143, 151, 153, 156

Medici, Ferdinando Cardinal de, 381
Medici, Giovanni di Lorenzo de (Leo X), 54, 138, 234-235, 256, 348, 603
Medici, Giuliano Mariotto de, 236
Medici, Giulio di Giuliano de (Clement VII), 138, 348
Medici, Lorenzo de, 81, 115, 138, 216, 236, 258, 285, 518
Medici, Maddalena de, 518
Medici, Marie de, 240
Medici, Piero de, 138
Medici, Vieri di Cambio de, 602
Medigo, Elia del, 190
Melanchthon, Philipp, 317
Mendoza, Diego Hurtado de, 117
Mental reservation/mental restriction, 405, 408, 410-411, 413-416, 418, 420, 422-425, 427-431, 437, 440-441, 445, 447, 452-453, 455-456, 458, 463, 465
Mercati, Michele, 379
Mercia, 28
Mercury/Mercurius, 39, 81, 94-95, 97, 108, 117, 155, 178-179, 188, 218, 370, 393, 395, 402, 516, 544
Meshummadim, 269-271

Mesmer, Anton, 643
Metempsychosis, see: Reincarnation
Mexia, Pedro, 116
Mexico City, 359
Meyrick, Frederick, 45, 419-420, 437, 440, 443, 448-450, 452, 455-456, 462, 464, 468, 470-472
Michael, the Archangel, 25
Michelangelo, 256, 299, 330-331, 333, 356-358, 360, 364-368, 626
Midrash, 167, 168, 170-171, 215
Miller, David C., 150
Miller, James D., 396
Mills, C. Wright, 193
Mills, Robert, 490
Milton, John, 444, 446
Milward, Peter, 428-429
Minim/min, 267-273
Miracle of the Usurer's Heart, 618
Mirandola, Antonmaria della, 202-203
Mirandola, Galeotto della, 202-203
Mirandola, Gianfrancesco Pico della, 44, 187, 202-205, 236, 520
Mirandola, Giovanni Pico della, 37, 44, 78, 80, 94, 100, 114, 139, 152, 155-157, 180-211, 214, 216-221, 226, 235-237, 256-259, 261, 265, 277-278, 305-306, 318-320, 324, 326, 356-364, 395, 401, 500-509, 511-522, 539, 552, 569, 647-651
Mises, Ludwig von, 400
Mishnah, 98, 128, 295, 406, 589
Mishneh Torah, (Maimonides) 264, 267, 271, 290, 292, 406, 574, 582
Misunderstood Jew, The (Levine), 585
Mithra, 30
Mithridates, Flavius, 186, 190, 219, 244, 256-257
Moffit, Pauline, 358
Molestation of children 69, 374-375,410, 453, 466, 473-474, 481-482, 487, 497-498, 540, 564, 587
Molko, Solomon, 136
Molnar, Thomas, 142, 172
Moncada, Guglielmo Raimondo de, 190, 244
Moneglia, Paolo, 503
Montalto, Felice Peretti de (Sixtus V), 344, 381-382
Montano, Benito Arias, 118-119
Monte Citorio obelisk, 336, 379

Monte di Pieta bank, 229-230, 600-604
Montefiore, Sebag, 579
Moral and Devotional Theology of the Church of Rome (Meyrick), 420
Morals and Dogma (Pike), 343
Moral Theology (Liguori), 354, 417, 432, 434-437, 449, 455, 457-459, 463, 466, 468, 478-479
Moral Theology (Jone), 233
More, Henry, 83
More, Thomas, 37, 203, 205, 326

Moreira, Isabel, 496
Moreno, Manuel, 473
Moreschini, Claudio, 396, 402-403
Mormon, 149
Moscato, Judah ben Joseph, 292-293, 298
Moses, 77-80, 98, 119, 153, 194, 214, 248, 369
Moses de Leon, 24, 39
Moses of Mardin, 637
Mosheim, Johann Lorenz von, 430
Mount Sinai, 39
Moving the Obelisks (Dibner), 375
Mozart, Wolfgang Amadeus, 642-643
Muccillo, Maria, 208
Munkelt, Richard A., 614
Münster, Sebastian, 121, 126
Murphy Report (Ireland), 487-488
Muslim, 30, 34, 75, 117, 147, 429
Muslow, Martin, 205
Myers, Ellen, 172

Nahmanides (Nachmanides), Moses, 75, 163-164, 166, 174-175
Narboni, Moshe, 80
Nathan the Wise, 88
Naudé, Gabriel, 639
Navarrus, see: Martin de Azpilcueta
Needham, Marchamont, 126
Nejeschleba, Tomás, 208
Neoplatonism/Neoplatonic, 30, 36, 78, 80, 87-88, 93, 140, 144, 146, 150, 153, 154, 156-159, 161, 163, 174, 180, 226, 247, 257, 306, 362, 647
Nero, 379
Neshama HaElyonah, 69
Nesi, Giovanni, 504
Netanel, Neil Weinstock, 291
Neuenahr, Hermann von, 315
Neusner, Jacob, 539, 582
New Art of Lying, covered by the Jesuits under the Vaile of Equivocation (Mason), 423
Newman, John Henry, 58, 435, 440-452, 464-465
Newsome, David, 441
Nicholas V, 26, 148, 643
Nicholas of Cusa, 80, 88, 139-141, 143, 149, 504, 517
Nichols, Aidan, 501
Nikolaus of Schonberg, 640
Nine Hundred Conclusiones / Theses (Pico) 184-189, 196, 202, 216, 325, 506, 517, 519, 521
Nini, Marcantonio, 313
Nizzahon Vetus, 264, 272
Noah, 37
Noahide Laws, 573-574, 581
Noble, David, F., 497
Nokri, 413

Nold, Patricia, 147
Nomoi (Plethon), 146, 151
Nominalist/Nominalism, 17-18, 51, 258, 586
Noonan, John T., 478, 597
Norwich, John Julius, 483
Nostra Aetate (Vatican II), 41, 44, 124, 527, 529-538
Notre Dame University, 20
Nova, brevis, veraque de universo philosophia (Patrizi), 208, 403
Novelty and Nullity of the Papal Dogma, The (Coxe), 435
Novo, Archangelus de Borgo, see: Pozzi, Angiolo
Nullification of the Torah, 287

Obach, Robert, 479
Obelisk, 336-340, 342, 344, 372-391
Oblation, oblates, Child, 489
O'Callaghan, Daniel, 258-260
Ockham, William of, 18
O'Connor, Flannery, 8
Octobri Mense (Leo XIII), 151
Odescalchi bank, 135
Odeschalchi, Benedict (Innocent XI), 429, 456
Oedipus Aegyptiacus (Kircher), 521
Ogren, Brian, 165, 175
Olcott, Henry, 524
Old Paths / Talmud Tested, The (McCaul), 12
Oleck, Howard L., 18
Olivieri, Benvenuto di Paolo, 605
Olsen, Lenn W., 496
O'Malley, John, 289, 503
O'Malley, Sean, 529
Onan/Onanism, 167-169, 479, 495
On Dr. Newman's Rejection of Liguori's Doctrine of Equivocation (Meyrick), 450
OnePeterFive (blog), 572, 586
Opus Morale (Sánchez), 415
Oral Law/Oral Torah "of Moses," 22, 190, 198, 259, 307, 352, 477
Oratio de hominis dignitate see: Oration on the Dignity of Man
Oration on the Dignity of Man (Giovanni Pico della Mirandola), 38, 100, 114, 182, 205, 364, 518, 647-650
Order of Elect Coens, 522
O'Reilly, Damian, 488
Origen of Alexandria, 25, 87, 362
Or-ha-Sekhel (Abulafia), 80
Original Sin, 142-144, 492
Orpheus/Orphic, 83-85, 95, 98, 104, 139-141, 154, 356, 361, 363, 403, 521
Orsini, Giambattista, 502
Orthodox, Greek and Russian, 63, 73, 79, 144, 148
Orthodox Judaism, 165

Orwell, George, 232
Osiander, Andreas, 122
Osiris, 27, 30, 94, 218-219
Ottoboni, Pietro Vito (Alexander VIII), 430
Ottolenghi, Yosef, 297
Ottoman, 31
Ovide Moralisé, 140
Oxford University, 463

Padua, city of, 617-618, 621-622, 624-625
Padua, University of, 139, 184, 208, 222
Paine, Thomas, 10
Pagninus, Sanctes, 118, 126
Paley, William, 444, 446
Palleschi, 112
Pantheism, 93
Paolucci, Antonio, 368
Papageno, 642-643, 645
Papal apartment, 26, 322
Papus (Gérard Encausse), 524
Paracelsus, 240
Parker, Eleanor, 32
Paris, University of, 184, 257, 301
Parsons, Robert, see: Persons, Robert
Parrot (as familiar), 644
Parrot's Court, 643-644, 646
Pascal, Blaise, 76, 410, 422, 609
Pascendi Dominici Gregis (Pius X), 105, 211-213, 363
Pasque di Sangue (Toaff), 585
Pastor aeternus (Vatican Council I), 53, 54, 57, 58, 61
Pastor, Ludwig von, 302, 634
Pastoral technique/Pastoral tactic, 54, 55
Patrides, C.A., 84
Patrizi, Francesco, 163, 208, 250, 402-404, 504
Paul II, 393
Paul III, 298-299, 348, 357, 364-365, 516, 521, 640
Paul IV, 358
Paul VI, 9-10, 31, 211, 475-477, 500, 527, 530-531, 537-538, 565
Paul VI, Mass of, 63, 65, 72-73, 475
Paul de Santa Maria of Burgos, 274
Paul the Apostle, 90, 92-93, 97-98, 114, 154, 157, 160, 243, 275, 410, 474, 484 495, 528 533, 535-536, 541, 543-544, 546, 548, 554, 556-559, 561, 580, 587
Pavia, University of, 184, 503
Payer, Pierre S., 484, 490
Payne, Ivan, 487
Pelagian heresy, 243
Pelagius of Majorca, 243
Pelayo, Marcelino Menéndez, 116
Pellican, Jaroslav, 157

Pellican, Konrad, 121
Pensées (Pascal), 422
People's Temple, 34
Perani, Mauro, 244
Perennial philosophy: see Philosophia perennis
Perez, 560
Perjury, 415, 417-418, 462
Perkins, William, 427
Persian/Persia, 79, 111, 114, 143, 153, 197, 403
Persons, Robert, 409, 417, 424, 427-428
Perugino, Pietro, 332
Peruzzi bank, 66
Pescia, Fra Domenico da, 225, 231
Pesellino, Francesco, 619
Peshat, 118
Peter of Cervatos, 497
Peter Romanus, 55, 177, 455

Peter, Saint, 35-36, 40, 160, 183, 379
Peters, Edward, 629
Petrarch, Francesco, 37, 144
Petroio, Bartolomeo Brandano of Siena, 355, 632-633, 635-636
Petrucci, Alfonso, 313
Pe'ullath Ha-Yetzirah (Eleazar of Worms), 395
Pfefferkorn, Johann, 113, 260-263, 266, 269, 275-285, 287, 292, 296, 299-300, 303-309, 311, 315, 320, 586
Pforzheim, 257
Phaedrus (Plato), 156, 356
Pharaoh's sorcerers, 214
Pharmakos, 216
Philip II, 117-119
Philip of Palatine, Elector, 259
Philipp of Hesse, 317
Philolaus, 84
Philo of Alexandria, 160
Philosophia perennis, 78, 110, 113, 516
Phratria, 146
Piagnoni, 235
Pican, Pierre, 473
Piccolomini, Francesco, 163, 208
Pic de la Mirandole: études et discussions (de Lubac), 500, 504-505
Picotti, G.B., 313
Piers the Plowman (Langland), 125
Pike, Albert, 343
Pilate, Pontius, 166
Pilpul, 70, 203
Pimander, 81, 96, 100, 107, 153, 218, 393
Pinckaers, Servais, 454
Pines, Shlomo, 37, 583

Pinto, Hector, 119
Pintoricchio, Bernardino/Bernardo, 27-28, 217, 219, 322, 356
Piombo, Sebastino del, 357
Pirckheimer, Willibald, 276
Pisa, Daniel ben Isaac da, 78
Pisano, Arnolfo, 617
Pisano, Giovanni, 617
Pius II, 392
Pius IV, 21
Pius V, 295-297, 416
Pius VI, 336, 379
Pius VIII, 54, 66-67, 347, 602-603, 631
Pius IX, 61, 211-212, 363, 434
Pius X 43, 66, 98, 105, 136, 201, 211-213, 363, 478, 503, 521, 631
Pius XII, 10, 52, 59, 64, 175, 306, 434, 466, 478, 631
Pizzighettone, David ben-Eliezer Halevi, 290
Plastina, Sandra, 208
Platina, Bartolomeo, 27, 393
Plato/Platonism, 78-88, 90, 93, 94-96, 98, 102-103, 109 112, 114, 117-118, 132, 139-141, 144-145, 152, 156-158, 160, 162-164, 173-174, 176, 188, 222, 237, 323, 356-357, 362-364, 404, 493, 500, 515-516, 530
Platonic Academy of Florence, 115, 144
Platonic Theologia (Ficino), 401
Plethon/Pletho, 113, 143-151, 157, 222
Plocker, Sever, 578, 580
Plotinus, 83-84, 104, 113-114, 150, 178-179, 184, 217
Pneuma, 162

Podhoretz, John Mordechai, 575
Poggio, Francesco, 308-309
Poimandres, 92, 368
Política para Corregidores y Señores de vasallos (Bobadilla), 115
Poliziano of Florence, 284
Polyglot Bible (Royal/Plantin), 116-118
Poligraphia (Trithemius), 236, 244-245
Pompeius, Festus, 33
Pool/Poole, Matthew, 22, 25-26, 539
Pontius Pilate, 409
Ponzo, Domenico da, 225
Popper, William, 280, 292
Poppins, Mary, 642
Porcari, Girolamo, 225
Porphyry of Tyre, 152, 245
Porta, Giacomo della, 379
Postel Guillaume (“Rorispergius”), 636-638
Pozzi, Angiolo, 518
Prague, 72, 178, 317
Prati, Bernardo, 299
Prato, Felice de (Pratensis), 286-287

Prato, Massacre of, 233
Preface to an Ordinance of the Common Chest (Luther), 608
Prévotat, Jacques, 497
Price, David H., 295, 309, 316
Prierio, Silvestro Mazzolini da, 410
Prima Secundae (Vasquez), 413
Primus inter pares, 61
Prisca theologia, 76, 96, 103, 108, 111, 152, 154-155, 162, 172, 205, 358, 361, 490, 498
Priscillianists, 419
Private judgment, 70-71
Probabilism/Probablist, 73-74, 413, 415-416, 422, 452, 466, 478
Proclus of Lycia, 103, 140, 154, 158, 163, 184, 188
Prokofieff, Sergei O., 524
Prometheus, 117
Protagoras, 406
Protestant/Protestantism, 78, 87, 106, 121, 205, 221, 229, 301, 320, 410, 427, 433, 435, 442, 444, 451, 460, 465, 484, 496, 525, 545, 602, 612
Provan, Charles D., 492
Provincial Letters (Pascal), 76, 419, 609
Prozbul, 439
Prudlo, Donald S., 463
Prynne, William, 126-127
Psellos, Michael, 144-145
Pseudo-Dionysius, 141, 144, 162, 358, 395, 512
Psyche, 162
Pucci, Roberto, 314
Pugio fidei adversus Mauros et Judaeos (Marti), 166, 307, 569
Puglia, Francesco di, 231
Pulsa d'nura, 577
Purgatory, 236, 496
Purim, 589
Puritan Commonwealth of New England, 131
Puritan Parliament, 24
Pythagoras/Pythagorean, 43, 83, 84, 95, 113, 144 156-157, 173, 184, 197, 247, 260, 403, 516

Quakers, 132
Queen of Heaven, 25
Questenberg, Jacob, 312
Quinn, Paticia, 489
Quispel, Gines, 80-81, 94

Ra, 17
Rabelais, Francois, 136, 172, 463
Rabin, Yitzhak, 577
Radical Platonism in Byzantium (Siniossoglou), 145
Raftery, Mary, 487, 498
Ragacs, Ursula, 166

Rahab, 414
Rahner, Karl, 129, 501
Ramban, 166-167, 175
Rao, John C., 614
Raphael (Raffaello Sanzio), 366
Raphaelengius, Franciscus, 118
Rashi (Rabbi Shlomo Yitzhak), 130, 171, 271, 273, 582
Rather of Verona, 491
Ratzinger, Joseph (Benedict XVI), 89, 90-91, 129, 500, 530, 551-556, 558-559
Raworth, John, 25
Ray-Mermet, Théodule, 434, 453
Raymond of Penafort, 599
Raynaud, Théophile, 417
Raz-Krakotzkin, Amnon, 287
Reading, John, 25
Reagan, Ronald, 577, 593
Reality and phenomena, 39
Recaneto, Antonius Hieronymus Lunarius de, 298-299
Recusant Catholics, 13
Redemptorist Order, 434, 453, 459
Rees, John, 562
Refutatio erroris Judaeorum (Scholarios), 149
Regularis concordia, 490
Reichman, Leonid, 579
Reid, Peter L.D., 491
Reincarnation, 43, 163-169, 173
Relatio post disceptationem, 47, 131, 486
Relics, 31
Religion within the Limits of Reason Alone (Kant), 133
Remez, 118
Republic, The (Plato), 90, 156
Rerum Novarum (Leo XIII), 145, 602
Resurrection of Jesus Christ, 85, 89, 90-92
Reubeni, David, 136
Reuchlin, Johannes, 94, 106, 107, 113, 125, 128 156, 184, 186, 201, 204, 210, 239-242, 244, 247-249, 254, 256-320, 327-328, 397, 504, 520, 552, 638, 640
Rhinelander, 271
Riario, Raffaele, 313
Ribysen, Simon, 316
Ricci, Paul, 297
Rice, Edgar F., 393
Richardson, Samuel, 584
Right to remain silent, 421
Rinuccini, Alamanno, 138
Riolan the Elder, Jean, 240
Riolan the Younger, Jean, 240

Riordan, William, 159, 395
Riskin, Shlomo, 598

Rivalto, Giordano da, 274
Rjinberk, Gérard van, 522
Rohan Chabot, Louis-François-Auguste de, 436
Romana, Francesca, 55, 635
Romemut Yisrael Ufarashat Hagalut (Grama), 574
Romuald of Revenna, 483
Rorate Caeli blog, 48-49, 60, 246
Rorispergius, see: Postel
Rosen, Jonathan, 598
Rosenthal, Alexander S., 501
Rosicrucian/Rosicrucianism, 106-108, 210, 254, 639
Rössner, Philipp Robinson, 608
Rothschild, 66, 70, 602, 628
Rousseau, Jean-Jacques, 45, 132-133, 504
Rovere, Francesco della (Sixtus IV), 256
Rovere, Gerolamo della, 402
Rovere, Giuliano della (Julius II), 394
Rudolf II, 108
Rummel, Erika, 284
Russert, Tim, 209
Rustow, Marina, 271
Ryan, Dermot, 488
Ryder, Ignatius Dudley, 448
Sack of Constantinople, 30
Sack of Rome, 633-635
Sacks, Jonathan, 598
Sacred Congregation of Rites, 436
Sacred Penitentiary of the Apostolic See, 416, 434, 436
Saebo, Magne, 119
Saiber, Arielle, 139
Saint-Martin, Louis-Claude de, 523
Saint Peter's Basilica, 334, 643
Saint Peter's Square, 337, 340, 342, 372-373, 374-375, 377
Sala dei Papagalli, 644
Salamanca, School of, 117, 469-470
Salamanca, University of, 120, 253
Salaman, Clement, 115
Salutati, Colucchio, 37
Salviati, Giorgio Benigno, 310
Salza, John, 62
Same sex couples, 70
Samuel of Lublin, 75
Sandona, Mark, 620, 625
Sanhedrin, 399-400, 543, 564, 587
San Marco friars, 223, 227, 230, 234-235, 237
San Marino, Republic of, 345
Sánchez, Tomás, 417, 429
Santa Maria sopra Minerva, 331
Santi, Bruno, 370
Santiago de Compostela, 632
Sarastro, 643

Satan, 194, 214-215, 375, 459, 484
Sauli, Bandinello, 313
Savonarola Girolamo, 44, 118, 131, 135, 220, 222-237, 306
Savonarola, Michele, 222
Sayers, Dorothy L., 622
Scala, Bartolomeo, 176

Scalia, Antonin, 352, 588-593
Scalia, Elizabeth, 412
Scapular, 175
Scarab/Scarabaeus, 376-377
Scheck, Thomas P., 243
Scherman, Nosson, 171
Schikaneder, Emanuel, 643
Schlegel, Ursula, 623
Schmitz, Matthew, 57
Scholarios, Georgios-Gennadios, 148-149
Scholasticism, 139, 259, 403-405
Scholasticos, Socrates, 43
Scholem, Gershom, 195
Schönborn, Christoph, 47
Schuon, Frithjof, 154
Schuster, Zachariah, 532
Schwarz, Hans, 613
Schwartz, Howard, 214
Schwartz, Yossef, 74, 75
Science of the Sacraments, The (Leadbeater), 129
Scott, Walter, 94
Scotti, Paschal, 460
Scotus, John Duns, 18, 586
Scrovegni, Enrico, 622-625
Scrovegni, Manfredo, 625
Scrovegni, Reginaldo, 622, 624
Scrovegni, Ugolino, 625
Scrutinium scriptarum (Paul de Santa Maria of Burgos), 274
Second Vatican Council: see Vatican Council II
Secretariat for Promoting Christian Unity, 530
Sedevacantism, 41
Sedgwick, Mark, 523
Sedia gestatoria, 219, 347
Sefer Ha-Chinukh, 270
Sefer Ha'Eshkol (Abraham ben Yitzhak), 270
Sefer Yetzirah, 398, 396
Sefer Yosef HaMeqane, 272
Senior, Donald, 267
Seeon, Sigismund of, 250-252
Sefirot(h), 196, 214, 350-351, 637-640
Sephardic, 24
Sephirot: see Sefirot

Septuagint, 126, 271
Serafino of Pistoia, 632
Sergardi, Lodovico, 390
Serlo of Bayeux, 491
Set (Egyptian deity), 375
Setton, Kenneth M., 314
Seymour, Richard, 481
Seznec, Jean, 79, 141, 154
Sfondrati, Niccolo (Gregory XIV), 402
Sforno, Obadiah, 257
Sforza, Ludovico, 227
Shaitan, 375
Shakespeare, William, 425-426
Shamanism, 105
Shammai, 75, 125, 359, 453
Shapin, Steven, 464
Shapira, Yitzhak, 575
Shaw, George Bernard, 585

Shear, Adam, 293-294
Sheed, Frank, 442
Sheed and Ward, 442
Shekhinah, 25
Shimon ben Yohai, 24
Shiva, 338, 373
Shlomo ben Yitzhak, 75
Shoah theology, 476
Shoah (YamHaShoah), 526-527, 529-530, 537, 539, 545, 549-550, 561
Short Demurrer to the Jews Long Discontinued Remitter (Prynne), 127
Sibyls, 97, 140-141, 218, 516
Sickingen, Franz von, 315-316
Siena Cathedral, 321, 369
Siena, city of, 632, 636
Silber, Eucharius, 185, 325
Silva de varia (Mexia), 116
Simeon, 400
Simeon of Syracuse, 31
Simeon the Just, 398-400
Simon, Richard, 118, 121
Simon of Trent, 585
Simonsohn, Shlomo, 297
Simony, 224, 227, 314, 483
Singularity, 396
Sinibaldi, Giovanni, 237
Siniossoglou, Niketas, 110, 132, 144-145, 149, 151
Sirius, 343, 391
Siscoe, Robert, 62
Sistine Chapel, 330, 333 357-358, 365, 367-369, 463, 626, 643

Situation ethics, 18, 52, 60, 146, 451, 454, 467, 493, 597, 601, 629, 631 Sixtus IV, 140, 186, 191, 205, 223, 256, 258, 393
Sixtus V, 41, 337, 342, 344, 372-373, 379-382, 388-390
Sixtus of Siena, 296, 504, 506
Skeat, W.W., 32
Skull and Bones society, 209
Skylstad, William, 410, 498
Slater, Thomas, 408
Smith, Goldwyn, 66
Smith, Huston, 154
Smith, John, 83
Smith, Joseph, 149
Smyth, Brendan, 487
Socci, Antonio, 47, 53
Societas Literatorum S. Victoris in Esquilis, 393
Society of St. Pius X 40, 72, 73, 133, 400, 524, 527, 586-587
Socrates, 79, 85
Sod, 118-119, 164-165
Sodano, Angelo, 486
Soderini, Francesco, 313
Soderini, Paolantonio, 234
Soderini, Piero, 234-235
Sodomy, 225, 231-234, 374-375, 393, 481, 483-486, 489-493, 495-496, 633
Sol, 31
Sola scriptura, 19, 120, 233
Solomon ben Gabirol, 75
Soloveichik, Meir, 591
Solzhenitsyn, Aleksandr, 172
Sommerville, Johann P., 423, 427
Sothis, 391

Soto, Dominico, 411
Soul, 84-85, 87, 91, 102, 103, 162, 164, 173, 175
Southey, Robert, 451
Southwell, Robert, 424
Soviet Constitution, 20
Spawforth, Antony, 35
Spenser, Edmund, 17
Speyer, Georg of, 300-301
Spini, Doffo, 228
Spiritual Exercises (Loyola), 481
Spirituals, Franciscan, 229, 626
Spurgeon, Charles, 12-13, 16, 19, 22, 23
SSPX: see Society of St. Pius X
Stalin: Court of the Red Star (Montefiore), 579
Stark, Thomas Heinrich, 614
Stefano, Giovanni di, 321, 369
Steganographia (Trithemius), 238, 241, 244, 249-250, 253
Steinmetz, Greg, 607

Stephen VII, 49
Stern, David, 288, 290
Steuco, Agostino, 110, 154, 299, 401-402, 504, 516
Stinger, Charles L., 36, 219
Stinnett, A.M., 505
Stob, Henry, 492
Strachey, Lytton, 39
Strauss, Jakob, 611
Strozzi, Alessandro, 608
Strozzi, Filippo the Younger, 349, 605
Stuart monarchs, 439
Stuckrad, Kocku von, 78, 114
Suarez, Francisco, 415-417
Suffer the Little Children (Raftery), 498
Suhrawardi, Shihab al-Din Yahya, 114
Sullivan, Henry W., 74
Sullivan, Scott M., 452
Summa contra Gentiles (Aquinas), 178
Summa de casibus conscientiae (Clavasio), 409
Summa Theologica (Aquinas), 571
Summorum Pontificum (Benedict XVI), 475
Swabian League, 258, 261
Swetnam-Burland, Molly, 373
Swiss Guard, 634
Syballines, 97
Syllabus of Errors (Pius IX), 211-212
Symonds, John Addington, 364-365
Symposium (Plato), 84, 85, 158, 366
Syncretic religion, 43, 75, 78-79, 81, 96, 98, 105, 110 142, 153, 156-157, 184, 188, 196, 204, 207, 211, 258, 359-360, 363, 377, 394-395, 403-404, 516, 520-521
Synesius, 103, 174
Syriac New Testament, 351, 637-639, 643

Table Talk (Luther), 122
Talismans, 99, 102-106, 115
Talmud, Babylonian (Bavli), 22, 74, 93, 98, 116, 182, 190, 192, 197, 244-247, 261-262, 264-265, 268-273, 275, 277, 279-282, 284-291, 293-298, 300-303, 305-312, 315-318, 320, 329, 352-353, 405, 453, 468, 528-531, 537, 544-547, 549-554, 561, 564, 566-574, 576-578, 580-593, 597-598, 609, 631

Tamar, 167-171, 560
Tambrun, Brigitte, 112
Tamino, 643
Taney, Roger B., 9
Tanner, Adam, 250-251
Tanya (Zalman), 591
Taylor, Francis, 25
Taylor, Jeremy, 444, 446

Tel Aviv University, 74
Temurah, 319
Ten Emanations, 350-351
Tetragrammaton, 184, 399, 401
Theleme/Thelema, 136, 149, 172, 463
Themar, Werner von, 239
Thenaud, Jean, 400-401
Theologia Platonica (Ficino), 95-96
Théologie morale des Jesuites (Arnauld), 419
Theology of the Body/Sacred Nudity, 357, 359, 365-367, 368-369
Theosophists/Theosophy, 192, 240, 524
Thoth, 81, 102
Thutmose III, 378
Tietze-Conrat, 365
Tikkun olam, 150
Timaeus (Plato), 94, 96, 113, 141, 150, 160
Toaff, Ariel, 585
Todeschini-Piccolomini, Francesco, 502
Toledet Jesu, 264
Tongern, Arnold van, 310
Topcliffe, Richard, 13, 14
Torah she'Beal peh, 352
Torat Ha'Melech (Shapira), 575-576
Tractatus Quintus de Juramento et Adjuratione (Suarzez), 415
Trade and Usury (Luther), 610, 613
Transmigration of souls, Reincarnation
Transubstantiation, 24
Travers, P.L., 644
Treatise of Heresies (Abelly), 521
Treatise on the Last Words of David, 123
Treatise tending to Mitigation towardes Catholicke-Subjectes in England, (Persons), 417, 424-425
Trebizond, George of, 146-148, 222, 226
Tremellius, Immanuel, 121
Trevor-Roper, Hugh, 127
Tridentine Latin Mass, 31, 55, 65, 247-248, 335, 475, 523-525, 565-572, 584-590
Trinitarian, 139-140
Trinitarians, Order of, 239
Trinkaus, Clark, 143, 363
Trismegistus, Hermes, 27, 28, 39, 65, 78, 81, 83, 84, 94, 96 97-98, 101, 108, 114, 116, 118, 140, 153-156, 163, 173, 177, 178, 179, 181, 205, 207, 214, 218-219, 258, 321-322, 369-371, 393-397, 401, 403, 504, 507, 516
Trithemius, Johannes, 238-245, 247-254, 396
Trupia, Robert, 473
Tübingen, University of, 258-261, 285, 304, 317
Turner, Patricia, 17
Tutino, Stefania, 430

Two Babylons, The (Hislop), 11, 24

Tyndale, William, 362
Tyrrell, Peter, 498

Unam Sanctam (Boniface VIII), 45
Unamuno, Miguel de, 581
United Grand Lodge of England and Scotland, 647
Uranius, Martinus, 176
Urban III, 616
Urban V, 624
Urban VIII, 31, 75, 390
Uriel von Gemmingen, 261, 266, 280-284, 286, 300
Ursuline Sisters, 466
Usury, 8, 10, 18-21, 50-51, 54-55, 66-67, 71, 175, 210, 212, 229, 263, 279, 317, 347, 349, 408, 410, 437, 439, 594-631, 633
Utopia (Thomas More), 37
Utopia/Utopian, 142, 172, 463
Una Voce, 566-568, 572, 586

Vacant See, see: Sedevacantism
Valencia, Gregory de, 417
Valentia, Gregorius de, 422-423
Vallombrosa, Angelo de, 227
Vallerio, Agostino, 402
Valiero, Scipione, 402
Van Den Berk, M. F. M., 643
Vanhaelen, Maude, 115
Vansittart, Robert, 463
Vasoli, Caesare, 397
Vatable, Francois, 18
Vatican Commission for Religious Relations with the Jews, 540, 543
Vatican Council I, 30, 40, 57-58, 61, 132, 451, 465, 523
Vatican Council II, 9, 40, 41-42, 44, 46, 124, 210, 467, 477-478, 482, 497, 499-500, 503-505, 509, 511, 514, 516, 521, 530-531, 533, 536, 550, 587, 601
Vaticanus, Mons, 36
Vaticinii, 35
Vazquez, Gabriel, 415
Vecchi, Gian Guido, 60
Venice, city of, 166, 287-288, 290-294, 329, 402, 521
Venray, Rutger Sicamber de, 239
Venzi, Fabio, 647
Veroli, Sulpizio da, 393
Verres, Gaius, 471
Victor Emmanuel I, 522
Vienna, Gates of, 429
Vigilius, Johannes, 239, 316
Vincent of Lerins, 440
Vita Ioannis Pici Mirandulae (Gianfrancesco Mirandola), 203
Viterbo, Annio da, 26-27, 256, 359
Viterbo, Egidio da: see Viterbo, Giles of

Viterbo, Giles of, 34, 36, 106, 136, 219, 256-257, 286, 288-289, 295-299, 301, 311, 504, 638, 640
Vix Pervenit (Benedict XIV), 210, 212, 628
Vogan, Matthew, 89, 92
Voltaire (François-Marie Arouet), 504
Vom Schem Hamphoras und vom Geschlecht Christi (Luther), 125
Voragine, Jacobus de, 621
Voss, Angela, 95, 102, 369

Walker, D.P., 101, 104
Walsh, Eamonn, 488
Ward, Maisie, 442
Ward, Wilfrid, 442-444, 448, 460
Washington, D.C., 340, 374
Washington Monument, 377
Way of Hermes, The (Quispel), 94
Webb, Thomas Smith, 372
Weed, Harriet and Thurlow, 149
Wegner, Jürgen, 72-73
Weiland, Ted R., 410
Weinberg, Joanna, 206, 398
Weinstein, Donald, 224, 227, 232, 235
Weir, Alison, 16
Weir, Anthony, 497
Weishaupt, Adam, 186
Wesley, Susanna, 433
Wessex, 28
Westminster Assembly, 24
Weyer, Johann, 108-110
Whelan, Diarmuid, 466
Whichcote, Benjamin, 83
Widderkauf, 612
Widmanstetter, Johann Albrecht, 638-641
Wilberforce, Samuel, 448-450
Wilkinson, Richard H., 202
Wilkinson, Robert, 184, 288-289, 297, 397, 401, 639
William of Orange, 134-135
William the Conquerer, 491
Williamson, Richard N., 39, 283, 477
Willebrands, Johannes, 530, 537
Willermoz, Jean-Baptiste, 522
Wilson, Douglas, 413
Wimpheling, Johannes, 239
Wind, Edgar, 140, 357, 363
Winona Minnesota seminary, 133, 524
Wiseman, Nicholas, 460
Wittenberg, University of, 122
Wojtyla, Karol (Pope John-Paul II), 539
Wolfson, Elliot, 287

Wolsey, Thomas, 305
Wolski, Nathan, 193
Woman in White, The (Collins) 442
Wood, Susan K., 499
Woodrow, Ralph, 12, 29
Wordsworth, William, 151
World Jewish Congress, 530
Wright, N.T., 85

Yaffe, Shlomo, 591
Yagoda, Genrikh, 579
Yahweh, 128, 399
Yates, Frances A., 99-101, 107, 153, 154, 156, 180, 218, 220, 403, 639
Yehaf, David, 136
Yehudah of Portugal, 75
Yeshiva University, 591
Yohai, Simon ben, 130
Yom Kippur, 399, 406
Yosef, Ovadia, 576

Zahava and Moshel Straus Center for Torah, 352, 591

Zalman, Shneur, 39, 591
Zalmoxis, 197
Zambeccari, Francesco, 243
Zambelli, Paola, 242, 245, 259, 372
Zamorensis, Alphonsus de Castro, 521
Zane, Lorenzo, 392
Zeal-of-the-Land-Busy, 29
Zerah, 560
Zeus, 357
Ziegler, Bernard, 122
Zimmerman, Jens, 37, 82
Zimmermann, Michael, 637
Zinskauf, 611
Zohar, 24, 136, 167, 193, 296-298, 318
Zoroaster, 83, 110-111, 118, 139, 143, 146, 157, 197, 403
Zugot pairs, 359, 453

Scripture Index

Acts 3: 21, p. 87
Acts 10:34, pp. 183, 548
Acts 17: 22-23, p. 92

Acts 17:28, p. 93
Acts 17:34, p. 512
Acts 18: 4-6; 28, p. 475
Acts 22:3-5, p. 543
Acts 22:20, p. 543
Acts 23:6, pp. 543
Acts 23:8, 544-543
Acts 26:6, pp. 543-544
Colossians 2:16-18; 20-23, p. 439
Corinthians (I) 2:12, p. 528
Corinthians (I) 6:9, p. 495
Corinthians (I) 11:25, p. 554
Corinthians (I) 15:14-15, p. 529
Corinthians (I) 15:50, p. 90
Corinthians (I) 10:20-21, p. 154
Corinthians (I) 15: 45-50, p. 215
Corinthians (II) 3:10-11, p. 556
Corinthians (II) 3:13-15, p. 555
Daniel 1:20, p. 105
Daniel 2:2, p. 105
Daniel 4:7, p. 105
Daniel 5:11, p. 105
Deuteronomy 4:34-35, p. 93
Deuteronomy 15: 1-5, p. 612
Deuteronomy 18:9-14, p. 105
Deuteronomy 25:2, p. 480
Deuteronomy 25:5-6, p. 164
Deuteronomy 31:16, p. 244
Deuteronomy 32:35, p. 413
Ecclesiasticus 32:1, p. 32
Ephesians 2:2, p. 199
Ephesians 2:14-16, pp. 533, 535
Ephesians 5:6, p. 199
Ezekiel 16:23-25, p. 22
Ezekiel 18:13, p. 615
Exodus 7:11, p. 214
Exodus 20:4-5, p. 100
Exodus 20:7, p. 529
Exodus 20:15, p. 456
Exodus 22:8, p. 105
Galatians 1:8, p. 536
Galatians 1:13-14, p. 275
Galatians 3:7, pp. 533, 556
Galatians 3:10-11, p. 556
Galatians 3:24, p. 555
Galatians 4:28-30, p. 561
Galatians 5:1, p. 57
Galatians 5:13-15, p. 528
Galatians 5:19-21, p. 105
Genesis 3:15, p. 308
Genesis 4:1, p. 494

Genesis 12:11-20, p. 413
Genesis 14:8, p. 130
Genesis 16:4, 561
Genesis 18:32, p. 494
Genesis 19:1-3, p. 494
Genesis 19:5, p. 494

Genesis 19:9, p. 494
Genesis 19:29, p. 494
Genesis 22:21, p. 166
Genesis 24:16, p. 494
Genesis 38:2-5, p. 167
Genesis 38:7, p. 560
Genesis 38:8, p. 167
Genesis 38:9, p. 168
Genesis 38:11 & 14, p. 169
Genesis 38:13-26, p. 560
Genesis 38:21-22, 170
Genesis 38:24, p. 170
Genesis 38:26, pp. 167, 494
Genesis 38:27-30, p. 560
Hebrews 8:7-13, p. 555
Hebrews 10:30, p. 413
Hebrews 11:31, p. 413
Hosea 4:14, p. 171
Hosea 9:10, p. 536
Isaiah 40:28, p. 92
Isaiah 41:4, p. 92
Isaiah 43:10-20, p. 92
Isaiah 44:6, p. 92
Isaiah 47:12-15, p. 105
Isaiah 48:12, p. 92
Isaiah 61:8, p. 611
Isaiah 66:23, p. 535
James 2:25, p. 414
Jeremiah 31:31-34, p. 555
Joshua 2:18, p. 414
Kings (1) 8:27, p. 92
Kings (1) 8:51, p. 372
John 1:1-5, p. 221
John 5:39, p. 309
John 6:53-57, pp. 27, 28
John 6:63, p. 90
John 7:8, p. 432
John 7:8-10, p. 458
John 7:13, 458
John 7:48-49, p. 362
John 8:39-40, p. 554
John 9:22, p. 267

John 10:16, p. 309
John 12:42, p. 268
John 13:27, p. 580
John 14:15, p. 411
John 15:22-25, p. 570
John 16:2, p. 268
John 18:20, p. 200
John 19:6, p. 535
John 20:27, p. 91
John (1) 2:22-23, pp. 477, 535
Leviticus 19:26, p. 105
Leviticus 20:13, p. 495
Luke 1:26-39, p. 618
Luke 1:38, p. 151
Luke 3:22, p. 364
Luke 6:30-36, pp. 20, 631
Luke 6:34-35, pp. 611, 616
Luke 6:35, 607
Luke 7:36, pp. 540-541
Luke 10: 6, p. 59
Luke 11:27-28, p. 433
Luke 13:31, p. 540

Luke 14:1, pp. 540-541
Luke 19:42, p. 535
Luke 23:8-9, p. 421
Luke 6:30, p. 613
Luke 11:37-44, p. 542
Luke 12:1, p. 542
Luke 18:8, p. 622
Malachi 3:6, p. 51
Malachi, 4:2, p. 29
Mark 11:27-28, p. 199
Mark 12:28-34, p. 542
Mark 12:34, pp. 540-541
Mark 13:32, p. 416
Mark 14: 60-61, p. 421
Matthew 2:1-18, p. 111
Matthew 2:11, p. 111
Matthew 3:9-10, p. 559
Matthew 5:17, p. 612
Matthew 5:20, 545
Matthew 5:37, pp. 411, 452
Matthew 5:40, p. 613
Matthew 5:42, p. 613
Matthew 6:1-18, p. 542
Matthew 6:2, p. 619
Matthew 6:10, pp. 247, 412
Matthew 7: 2, p. 405

Matthew 7:6, p. 183
Matthew 7:14, p. 390
Matthew 10:14-15, p. 546
Matthew 15: 1-6, p. 199
Matthew 15:24, p. 556
Matthew 19:12, p. 25
Matthew 20:24-26, pp. 6, 482
Matthew 21:19, p. 536
Matthew 21:33-39, p. 547
Matthew 22:23-24, p. 168
Matthew 23:15, pp. 537, 545
Matthew 23:31, p. 556
Matthew 24:35, p. 92
Matthew 23:24, p. 29
Numbers 12:8, p. 209
Numbers 35:31, p. 480
Peter (II) 3:15-17, p. 559
Philippians 2:10, p. 529
Philippians 3:5, pp. 543-544
Proverbs 8: 8-9, p. 209
Proverbs 9:10, p. 622
Proverbs 32: 1, 3-5, p. 209
Psalm 15: 1 & 5, p. 615
Psalm 65:4, p. 535
Psalm 134:15-17, p. 178
Revelation 2:9, pp. 554, 563
Revelation 3:9, pp. 554, 563
Revelation 11:7, p. 45
Revelation 13:6, p. 24
Revelation 18:23, p. 105, 216
Revelation 21:8, p. 105
Revelation 21:27, p. 199
Revelation 22:15, p. 105, 216
Romans 1:23-27, p. 495
Romans 1:26, p. 64
Romans 2:6-8, p. 556
Romans 3:10, p. 536
Romans 5:12, p. 160

Romans 8:11, p. 87
Romans 8:21, p. 160
Romans 9: 4-5, pp. 534, 554
Romans 9:6, p. 558
Romans 11:11-32, p. 535
Romans 11:17-24, pp. 533, 548
Romans 11:26-27, pp. 555, 559
Romans 11:26-29, pp. 557
Romans 11:28, p. 535
Romans 11:29, pp. 554-555

Romans 12:21, p. 30
Ruth 4:18-22, p. 560
Thessalonians (I) 2:16, p. 534
Thessalonians (I) 2:14-16, pp. 535, 546, 556
Thessalonians (II), 2:9-12, p. 553
Thessalonians (II) 2:10, p. 92
Timothy (I) 1:9, p. 495
Timothy (I) 2:5, p. 151
Timothy (I) 6:10, pp. 21, 175, 627, 629
Titus 1:14, p. 199
Titus 3:9, p. 557

REA

FRIENDS OF ACPL

The MEDUSA FILE

Crimes & Coverups of the U.S. Government

Craig Roberts

Author of *Kill Zone: A Sniper Looks at Dealey Plaza*

The Medusa File

Secret Crimes and Coverups of the U.S. Government

Craig Roberts
www.riflewarrior.com

TRILOGUS BOOKS
www.trilogus.com

OCT 07 2011

The Medusa File

Copyright © 2010 by Craig Roberts

All rights reserved, including the right to reproduce this book or portions thereof in any form whatever except for the purposes of review, research in limited quantity, quotes limited to one page or less, and portions originally derived from official U.S. government (public domain) sources.

Published by Trilogus Books

ISBN-10: 1-453-61986-0
ISBN-13: 978-145-361986-5

Trilogus Books Trade Publication / June 2010

The contents, claims, and information contained in the body of this work do not necessarily reflect the views or opinions of the publisher, Trilogus Books, or Trilogus Media Group, LLC. Any and all representations, as to the authenticity and veracity of the sources cited or quoted, character or actions of the individuals depicted herein, are strictly those of the author.

Books by Craig Roberts

Police Sniper (Pocket Books, 1993)

Combat Medic--Vietnam (Pocket Books, 1991)

Kill Zone: A Sniper Looks at Dealey Plaza (CPI, 1994)

The Medusa File (CPI, 1997)

The Walking Dead; A Marine's Story of Vietnam (Pocket Books, 1989 and Grafton Books, London, 1989)
(With Charles W. Sasser)

One Shot-One Kill; America's Combat Snipers (Pocket Books, 1990)
(With Charles W. Sasser)

Hellhound (Avon, 1994)
(With Allen Appel III and Allen Appel IV)

JFK: The Dead Witnesses (CPI, 1995)
(With John Armstrong)

We thought we ranked above the chance of ill.
Others might fall, not we, for we were wise
Merchants in freedom. So, of our free-will
We let our servants drug our strength with lies.
The pleasure and the poison had its way
On us as on the meanest, till we learned
That he who lies will steal, who steals will slay.
Neither God's judgment nor man's heart was turned.

Rudyard Kipling
The Covenant
1914

Table of Contents

Introduction ix

Part I

Into the Jaws of the Dragon, Into the Mouth of Hell 1

Chapter 1
Devil Unit 731 3

Chapter 2
The Naito Document And The Hunt For Ishii 16

Part II

More Human Guinea Pigs 27

Chapter 3
Weapons Of Terror 29

Chapter 4
Operation Paperclip: Grabbing The Nazi Scientists 33

Chapter 5
The Gehlen Org: From OSS to CIA 42

Chapter 6
Edgewood Arsenal 48

Chapter 7
In Search Of The Manchurian Kandidate 53

Chapter 8
Operation Monarch and the Finders Case 57

Chapter 9
From Auschwitz To Edgewood 72

Chapter 10
Atomic Guinea Pigs 77

Chapter 11
Agent Orange 81

Chapter 12
The Gulf War Syndrome: Business As Usual 85

Part III

The Boys We Left Behind 97

Chapter 13
Casualties Of War 99

Chapter 14
Into The Gulags 108

Chapter 15
Abandoned In Korea 114

Chapter 16
Plausible Deniability 124
Chapter 17
Secret Losses 128
Chapter 18
Moscow Bound 131
Chapter 19
"They Could Give A Damn About Soldiers" 141

Part IV
Manipulating The Third World 161
Chapter 20
A Profitable Adventure 163
Chapter 21
Guatemala: The Banana War 170
Chapter 22
Cuba: Assassins and the Bay Of Pigs 174
Chapter 23
Africa: Murder on the Dark Continent 184
Chapter 24
South America: The Beat Goes On 190

Part V
Guns, Drugs and Politicians 195
Chapter 25
The Enterprise 196

Part VI
Unsafe At Any Altitude 209
Chapter 26
Ambush Over Moneron 211
Chapter 27
The Downing of Pan Am 103: Libyans, PLO or CIA? 221
Chapter 28
Gander: The Crash of Arrow Air 950JW 236
Chapter 29
Fire On The Water: TWA 800 243

Part VII
Riding The Tiger, Domestic Terror 329
Chapter 30
Terrorism, Foreign and Domestic 331
Chapter 31

Hiding the Truth: The World Trade Center Bombing 267
Chapter 32
Oklahoma City: Terrorism or Politics? 272
Chapter 33
Incident at Gila Bend 305
Chapter 34
Behold a Pale Horse 323

Postscript 333

Endnotes 335

Bibliography 361

Introduction

I am a warrior. All of my life I have fought for what is right. In 1964 I joined the U.S. Marines to fight in Vietnam. A year later I found myself wading steaming rice paddies, slogging up rugged mountains, and hacking through dark jungles in the I Corps area of South Vietnam. After serving a year in combat as an infantryman and Marine sniper, I was medevaced out of country to spend the next six months in the U.S. Naval Hospital at Balboa, San Diego, recuperating from combat wounds and tropical diseases.

In 1969 I joined the Tulsa Police Department. For the next 26 years I would serve in assignments that included Patrol Division, Fugitive Warrants Squad, Bomb Squad, Tactical Squad (SWAT), plain clothes assignments, and for the last fourteen years, police helicopter pilot and maintenance officer for the Air Support Unit. I retired in April, 1996 to pursue a career in investigative journalism.

My discharge from the Marines in 1968 did not end my military career. In 1972 I enlisted in a reconnaissance platoon in the Army National Guard, was commissioned a second lieutenant in 1975, then served in the following capacities in a 27 year career in both the National Guard and the Army Reserve: rifle platoon leader, executive officer, tactical officer (Officer's Candidate School), detachment commander, infantry company commander, NCO school commandant, battalion staff officer, and finally, attachment to an F-16 fighter wing as Ground Liaison Officer (GLO) working in the Intelligence Section. I have served the past six years in this capacity and currently hold the rank of lieutenant colonel.

Understanding my background will help the reader also understand the motivation behind this book.

In 1987 I had occasion to visit Dallas, Texas, for a law enforcement convention that lasted three days. During that time I made an afternoon trip to Dealey Plaza. There was no special reason other than it was close to my hotel and it was "the crime scene of the century." It was simply a case of curiosity.

Upon arrival I could not help but notice that the triangular-shaped street interchange known as Dealey Plaza was much smaller than I had imagined. Instead of an expansive park, it was simply a block square "green" crossed by three streets. After walking around I entered the Texas School Book Depository and rode the elevator to the infamous "Sixth Floor."

After wandering around the various exhibits on the floor I ended up at the window next to the "sniper's nest" window allegedly used by Lee Harvey Oswald to shoot President John F. Kennedy. I looked out to the street below.

At that precise moment I knew the government had lied to me concerning the death of JFK. I felt betrayed. I knew that neither Oswald, nor anyone else, could have accomplished the feat of marksmanship that the various displays on the floor attributed to him, and there was much more to this case than that exhibited in our official history book version. According to what the American people had been fed over the preceding quarter century, Oswald, the lone nut with a gun, shot JFK, then in turn was shot by Jack Ruby, who later died in jail before he could testify in any enquiry. Case closed.

But I knew then that this was not the case. The reason I knew is because I was a combat-experienced Marine sniper in Vietnam, and I could not have made the three shots with the ancient Mannlicher-Carcano carbine attributed to Oswald by the Warren Commission, at a moving target that was increasing in distance, around a bend, through trees, with the hardest shot being the farthest away, all in 5.6 seconds. I also discovered later that the top rated Marine sniper instructors at Quantico had attempted to recreate the shots attributed to Oswald and were unable to duplicate the feat.

I decided to investigate the homicide of Jack Kennedy. For the next six years I dug into the case, read everything I could find, interviewed scores of people, and made excellent connections with what would prove over the course of the investigation as outstanding sources of information about what really happens behind the scenes in national and international politics. I also discovered that to avoid the errors of other "Kennedy researchers" and to do a proper police-style investigation I would have to figuratively "leave Dealey Plaza" and explore many seemingly unrelated events that preceded the Kennedy assassination. This quest took me back over a century and I found myself uncovering not just a few previous government "coverups," but literally scores. I could not believe what I was uncovering. It was virtually a parallel version of history, but one in which no one would be proud of. Though as a police officer I knew first hand that the world was divided into two power structures: good and evil, I could not believe the amount of evil that had infiltrated into the highest levels of our government, the same government that sent me to Vietnam to fight those evil communists, and in the process was responsible for the death of over 58,000 of my colleagues.

Story after story came to light as I probed and dug. Many good people in the various levels of government assisted, most of them anonymously out of fear of retribution. As the word circulated that I was working on this project and that my motivation was to seek and expose the truth, plain brown envelopes and packages began to arrive. Faxes with no header issued forth from my fax machine, and occasionally I would receive very informative telephone calls at odd hours.

The end result of my investigation was a manuscript titled *Legacy of Dishonor*. It was divided into topic-sections, because in the end it was not just the story of my investigation into the assassination of JFK, it was a far greater reaching work. Though my journey began in Dealey Plaza, it did not end until I had traveled many roads, opened many doors, and explored a maze of conspiracies, crimes and coverups perpetrated by power structures that resided far above the levels of federal government. And I discovered that these same entities, which had established themselves in their lofty positions over the course of two centuries, were the actual puppet masters over their selected minions in all branches of our government. More importantly, I found that they have an agenda, and it is very sinister and evil.

Though I had written or co-authored over a dozen books at the time, and my publishers in New York and Washington had published virtually everything I had written, not one publishing house in either city would except *Legacy of Dishonor*. I was puzzled. I thought it my best work by far. Thousands of hours had gone into the research and writing and authenticating my material. I could not believe that it would not become an instant bestseller.

After the final rejection from the tenth publishing house, my agent called and said that he just couldn't do anything with it. Instead of wondering if the manuscript was simply a bad book, I felt as if a message was being sent that I must have struck some very high level "raw nerves" in New York and Washington. I just didn't know what to do next.

Then it happened. Two weeks after the final rejection I received a call from a trusted senior editor at a major publishing house. He said "I don't care what you have to do, you gotta get this book out to the American people."

"If you like, then why don't you publish it?" I asked.

"If I did, I'd lose my job. Besides, even if I wanted to, it would never see ink. The power structures and organizations you expose in your book just happen to own or control virtually every major house in town."

"Who do you think I should send it to?" I asked.

"I don't know. Maybe a small house out west. Just do whatever you have to. Get it published and out to the people. They have to know what you've stumbled onto and where this government is going...before it's too late."

I took his advice to heart and, after much soul-searching, decided to make a quantum leap and do something I had been considering for the previous two years. Since I was preparing to retire from the police department, I had decided to try to start my own publishing firm as a new line of work for my retirement years. What my friend had given me was my first project, a project I truly believed in. Even if it didn't make a dime in profit.

But I couldn't afford to "self publish" a manuscript as large as *Legacy of Dishonor* which weighed in at 650 type-set pages. The end result was that I had to extract the relevant JFK and historical-political sections to form a much smaller book which I could afford to publish with the limited budget that existed at the time. So was born *Kill Zone: A Sniper Looks at Dealey Plaza*, the first publication of my new company, Consolidated Press International.

Kill Zone was an immediate success, which, considering I had gambled my life savings on the project, was very gratifying. It was accepted for national distribution by a major distributor and became available in all book stores and mail order houses.

Then came the first of the problems that would plague the book for two years. I began receiving letters and calls from readers who wished to order the book, but could not find it anywhere. I explained that it was in the computers and microfiches of the bookstores and could be ordered locally. They replied that it was not listed.

Over the next two years the book "disappeared" from computer and microfiche listings on a regular basis. Not only would the power structures who control the publishing houses not allow it to be published through New York City or Washington, they would now interfere with its distribution after I did my end run around their "system."

It was war.

And I knew how to fight wars.

To this day I still battle monthly to make sure the listings for *Kill Zone* do not disappear from the bookstore computer data bases and microfiches. And that's not all....

The only way to counter an enemy attack is to go on the offensive by doing a flanking movement and striking at the enemy's rear. In the case of investigative journalism, this is done by exposing the enemy's weaknesses and exploiting them. *The Medusa File* does just that by bringing to the attention of the American people one thing the opposition cannot combat: The Truth.

What you are about to read is a chronological compendium of history, crimes, coverups at high levels, propaganda and lies that we have been exposed to for over fifty years. Not only will the reader be presented with the *Legacy of Dishonor* chapters and sections that were left out of *Kill Zone*, but new exposés of events that will take us on a long, dangerous journey into the maze of lies, deceit and disinformation that has been promulgated upon us by "The Power" for many years.

If there is a central theme, it is to bring out into the light the truth behind many despicable crimes perpetrated upon us in the form of "case files" of events that are mere samples of the Big Picture. For this, I have investigated and collected files on such diverse, seemingly unrelated topics as: secret dealings with war criminals; government mind control projects; the POW/MIA affairs of World War II, Korea and Vietnam; use of unsuspecting servicemen and citizens as "guinea pigs" for insidious experiments in biological, nuclear and chemical weapons experiments; political use of children for scientific experimentation, extortion (and worse); secret manipulation and interfering in the internal affairs of Third World countries; international drug smuggling and money laundering; and the *real* issues, benefactors, and players behind "domestic" and international terrorism.

Those that have previewed this book have responded with two comments: "It's great! But aren't you afraid they'll kill you?"

My response to that is that I, like many of my brethren, went to war to fight enemies who threatened our country or our way of life. In the process I learned at an early age what it was like to face death on a daily basis. Death was no longer something I feared, and I would not let such a threat hold me back from what I considered a mission that had to be accomplished. For in "my war," many of my fellow warriors had fallen in the field of battle, and for some reason known only to God, I managed to survive the killing fields of Vietnam. Since then I have always felt that I was living on borrowed time, and I can only credit that with the feeling that God had other missions for me and more battles to fight. My years in the police force, my military career, and my writing efforts are merely extensions of a war that to me has never really ended. Like Don Quixote, I have continually found another windmill around the next bend, or over the next hill to joust. It is because I feel that my life has been dedicated to a higher calling, I know that I cannot shirk the call to battle.

For I am a warrior.

As the reader journeys through the pages of this book, it must be kept in mind that this is not an anti-government tome. Our government is the best government in the history of mankind. As long as it follows the Constitution and obeys the laws of the land and is accountable to We the People, it is strong and good. The good people in government far outnumber the bad, but those who corrupt the body politic when left unchecked and unexposed have a tendency to rise in rank and power and influence until their impact on the system far outweighs their numbers. It is only by being able to recognize the Machiavellian machinations behind the scenes, and by understanding the un-American and unconstitutional private agendas of certain people and organizations that we can take corrective action. Such actions can only be taken, however, by a citizenry that has been educated and awakened to the threat that looms over us today and is willing to take a stand and force those in political office to become personally accountable for their actions. The threat we face is now on a global scale, and we have been lulled into complacency by a system of lies, deceit and disinformation that inundates us through the controlled media, and certain politicos in government that are cells of a cancer that is malignant and growing.

As we enter the 21st Century, the Millennium, we can expect to see the power of evil increase. It is only by educating ourselves with the truth concerning political and historical events that we can understand the dangers we now face, and arm ourselves with the knowledge necessary to resist those who would corrupt our nation. The intent of *The Medusa File* is to provide the reader with a knowledge base of a multiple-headed beast that is growing and extremely dangerous, a veritable Medusa. Perhaps a "mirror" of truth will turn the beast to stone.

It is easier to perceive error than to find truth, for the former lies on the surface and is easily seen, while the latter lies in the depth, where few are willing to search for it.

Johann Wolfgang von Goethe

Reader's Note:

The Medusa File was originally written in third person, but in the final months of writing, I was personally involved with the investigations of the Oklahoma City bombing, the Amtrak derailment, and the downing of TWA 800. In these particular chapters I shift to first person, which breaks the standard rules of format. For this transgression I ask the reader's understanding.

I also ask the reader to not take anything written herein at face value. It is up to the reader to research these topics further and determine that what I have written is factual. It is the same test I would ask to be performed on everything one encounters in media.

Now, we must begin our story in World War II. It was during this great conflict that the powers of the modern world learned that they could do anything they wished, provided they knew how to cover up what they did, and then rewrite history to suit their private agendas.

And much more.

The MEDUSA File

Part I

Into the Jaws of the Dragon, Into the Mouth of Hell

"Muratas [prisoners] had their blood siphoned off and replaced with horse blood...they sweated to death under hot fans...were electrocuted, boiled alive, killed in giant centrifuges or died from prolonged exposure to x-rays. In all, some 3000 are said to have been murdered. Some were just killed off when there was an excess supply [of POWs.]"

Unit 731
Pete Williams and David Wallace

"I could not imagine that these things had happened without the Court in Tokyo being informed"

Bert V. A. Roling
Former Judge,
International Military Tribunal for the Far East.

"The Committee also has been told 'there are no records.' There are records, and I hope that the enclosed de-classified documents will provide insight into the callous and culpable conspiracy between MacArthur and Ishii."

Greg Rodriguez
Former Mukden POW

Chapter 1

Devil Unit 731

On the morning of November 4th, 1941, a Japanese airplane circled low over the city of Changde in the Hunan Province of China. Within minutes, the pilot lined the nose up with a street that ran through a residential section of the city's East Gate District and leveled the wings. Throttling the engine back to reduce his airspeed, he slowed the plane until it was almost in a glide. Then he reached down and pulled the release lever.

But it was not a string of high-explosive bombs that fell on the unsuspecting civilians below. Instead, what issued forth from the aircraft were nothing more than grains of wheat and rice, bits of paper, and cotton wadding.

The load caught in the wind and dispersed in a pattern wide enough to assure a spread over several city blocks. This done, the pilot increased throttle, climbed away from the city, and banked for home base.

Within two weeks, symptoms of plague began to appear in the people of the East Gate District. By the end of the third week six people had died, and autopsies confirmed the disease. But bubonic plague was, by the 20th Century, a very rare disease. Where could it have come from? And why just in the East Gate District? It quickly became apparent that the outbreak of such a rare disease coincided with the reported flight of the solo Japanese plane over the district scattering "rice and grain." There had to be a connection.[1]

There was. The airplane, a Japanese Imperial Army Kawasaki Type-88 open cockpit biplane, belonged to a very special unit. It was one of seven custom-fitted aircraft assigned to a top secret Japanese experimentation center in Pingfan, Manchuria.[2] The Pingfan unit, code-named Unit 731 and disguised as a "water purification unit," conducted experiments that, if successful, might guarantee Japan's victory in the war. For the research being done concerned weapons of such horror and mass destruction that no country, including the United States and Great Britain could withstand them. Unit 731 experimented with bacteria.

And they used human beings as the guinea pigs.[3]

They had fought well, those intrepid American and Filipino soldiers on Bataan and Corregidor. They had fought long after the Japanese invaders had planned total victory. And they had continued to fight, even though they were desperately low on food, medical supplies and ammunition. Still they continued to resist the overwhelming forces of the Japanese 14th Army under General Homma. Even when General Douglas MacArthur abandoned them to their fates, eloquently promising "I shall return," as he boarded a PT boat for Australia, the Battling Bastards of Bataan fought on. But they could not resist forever. Though the garrison on "the Rock", the small island of Corregidor that guarded the entrance to Manila Bay, would continue to resist until May 6th, 1942, the troops under General Jonathan Wainwright on Bataan, out of supplies and suffering needless casualties, were forced to finally surrender on April 9th. Laying down their arms were almost 70,000 U.S. and Filipino troops. One of them was Master Sergeant Warren W. "Pappy" Whelchel, a member of the 200th Coast Artillery Anti-aircraft Regiment.

"This was the beginning of one of the most dehumanizing experiences ever perpetrated on humans," related Whelchel. "First was the famous Bataan Death March, where we, as human beings, were subjected to beatings, killings and forced marches during the heat of the day after being deprived of food, water and any medical attention whatsoever.

"Upon arriving at Camp O'Donnell, Capas Tarlac, we were still deprived of adequate food, decent sanitary conditions, and medicine. As a result of these conditions, several thousand of us died from dehydration, dysentery, malaria and other tropical diseases.

"Around the 1st of July, we were put in narrow-gage train boxcars at Capas Tarlac to be sent to Camp No. 1 at Cabanatuan. One hundred Americans were crammed into each of these boxcars, and the doors were closed tightly...many died of suffocation during this trip.

"The conditions at Cabanatuan were not much better. During my short stay, I was on burial detail for thirty-three consecutive days. This camp was activated to separate the Filipinos from the Americans.

"Around the 1st of October, a group of us American soldiers numbering over 2000 were taken to Manila and put on the Japanese ship *Totori* Maru and shipped to Japan, and then to Manchuria. During the trip we were kept in the holds of the ship except for a period in the morning and a period in the afternoon of approximately twenty minutes for fresh air. We had no access to toilet facilities on the ship; we were given a few five-gallon water cans to use for our human wastes, and when the cans ran over, the Japanese made no effort whatsoever to have them replaced or removed from the holds in which we were forced to live. Men had to walk through this human excrement. Food was not adequate to sustain the human body, and there were no medical supplies for the Americans. Many of us died of exposure due to the inadequate clothing for the cold climate we entered, and others died due to unsanitary conditions, many from dehydration due to dysentery.

"[After] Landing at Pusan, Korea, approximately 150 of the Americans who were in the worst physical condition were sent to a building that was set up as a hospital. I was one of the 150...but it was too late for almost one-third of the men. They died at Pusan. The rest of the Americans were taken off the *Totori Maru* and sent to a camp in Mukden, Manchuria.

"After our stay at Pusan, we were put on trains and sent to Mukden ourselves."[4]

"Pappy" Whelchel was to spend the next three years of his life as one of 1,485 American and British prisoners of war that were herded into a very special prison camp in Manchuria, a camp run by a Japanese doctor.

General Shiro Ishii took his work very seriously. After all, was it not the Emperor's cousin, Prince Takeda, that held administrative responsibilities over Unit 731? And had not the Emperor's brother, Prince Mikasa, traveled all the way from Japan to visit the camp? It was obvious to all that the work being done at Mukden, Pingfan and Harbin was extremely important to the Imperial family, and to the Holy War.

And it was very secret work. Even Prince Takeda played his part by taking an alias, "Lieutenant Colonel Miyata," to protect both his identity and the importance of the project. It had always been so. That is why the camps were located in a remote part of Manchuria instead of Japan or Korea.

It had actually started in 1933, when then-Lt. Col. Ishii, a preventative disease specialist in the Epidemic Prevention Laboratory in Tokyo, was ordered to Manchuria to establish "medical facilities" for the Kwangtung Army. These facilities, however, were not intended to treat soldiers or prevent diseases. On the contrary, they were established to create weapons of war. Weapons of mass destruction.

Manchuria was an ideal proving ground for several reasons. Besides being remote, it was inhabited by several races. Chinese, Mongols, Russians, Koreans, and many other peoples of various tribes lived in primitive conditions that were conducive to the spread of biological contagions. A few more cases of disease would not be noticed by the outside world. And even if they were, who would care?

Ishii set up his first laboratory, codenamed *Togo*, in a reconditioned soy sauce factory outside of Harbin at Beiinho.[5] Over the next three years, the Togo unit grew to over 300 personnel, fifty of which were doctors. In charge on the military side of the house was a Lt. Col. Kanji Ishiwara, who was mandated by Army Headquarters to conduct bacteriological warfare experiments for offensive purposes. Experiments far too dangerous and politically sensitive to be conducted in Japan proper.[6]

In late 1935, the unit, then numbering over 1,000, had outgrown the small distillery. It moved into Harbin to a new two-story headquarters that was built in close proximity to the Harbin Military Hospital and was conveniently located near the Pinchiang railway station. Here, according to one of Ishii's doctors, Kajitsuka: "Detachment 731 was formed by command of the Emperor of Japan Hirohito, issued in 1936...Until 1941, the detachment had no number, but was called the Water Supply and Prophylaxis Administration of the Kwantung Army, and also the Ishii Detachment, because it was the custom in the Japanese Army to call Army units by the names of their commanders. The detachment was given the number 731 in 1941 by order of the Commander-in-Chief of the Kwantung Army, who gave definite numbers to all Army units and institutions."

The doctors who staffed the unit came both from within the army and from various civilian universities and hospitals in Japan. At a meeting in 1934, a list of promising names was drawn up at the 9th Japan Medical General Meeting at Kyoto University by professors Shozo Toda, Kenji Kiyono, Rinnosuke Shoji and Ren Kimura. The document, or *makimono,* was a scroll that listed research teams that should be formed and who would be responsible for forming them. Most were microbiologists and pathologists.

After three years in Harbin, Ishii, now promoted to Colonel, moved the unit to Pingfan. It had grown to 3,000 men, and being inside the city limits of Harbin was considered too unsecure for the security measures required to conduct such experiments. Pingfan, located in a secure area occupied by the Kwantung Army, proved ideal. No one was allowed to reside in or near the detachment's facility, and no unauthorized person was permitted to enter it. Even airplanes were forbidden to fly over the detachment's vast holdings. The unit's facilities were enclosed behind a triple set of fortifications. A high wall hid the facility from view; a moat lay beyond the wall to trap any intruder; and an electrified fence surrounded the inner perimeter to prevent escapes from within.

It had taken two years to construct the facility, which consisted of 150 buildings, a railway siding, a powerhouse, cooling towers, an incinerator/crematorium, an administrations building, an animal house and an insect-breeding lab. The entire complex covered over three square kilometers and could house thousands of people. One new recruit described his first impression of Pingfan: "...the central buildings towering skyward over other buildings, with all square-tiled facades, were larger than any of those I had observed on my trip over, including Osaka, Hsinking and Harbin...High earth walls were constructed with barbed wire fencing atop. It was obvious that this compound was isolated strictly from the outside world."

Unit 731 was divided into eight divisions that ranged from bacteriological research to water filtration. Of importance is the First Division, Bacteriological Research. This division was divided into more than twelve squads, each charged with investigating certain diseases for possible usage as offensive weapons of mass destruction. The main diseases studied in the early days included: anthrax, cholera, dysentery, plague, and typhoid.

Besides researching the diseases to ascertain which would prove to be the most ideal weapons under given circumstances, the unit also studied the means of mass producing them and distributing them. The distribution, they found, was the most difficult phase of employment. With the exception of certain respiratory infections, such as tuberculosis, pneumonia and influenza, germs could not simply travel from one person to another. They had to be carried by some means. This means is known as a "vector." Unit 731 constantly experimented with such vectors as fleas, rodents and airborne dispersal.

Of the diseases, pneumonic plague became the most studied. The bubonic form, which results from the bite of an infected flea, is relatively fast acting. The onset is abrupt, starting with chills, extreme weakness and high fever. The face becomes congested and the eyes grow red. Then the tongue swells, and finally delirium sets in. Death can result in as little as one day. As a weapon, Ishii felt plague would be ideal. The bacteria was relatively easy to reproduce and the vectors, rats with fleas, were cheap.

But the rats were slow to spread the disease in a tactical situation. If one wanted to infect an infantry battalion, then there had to be other means of doing so. For this, Unit 731 experimented with disease-carrying artillery shells and aerial bombs. These bombs, designated *Ha*, were made from a serrated clay housing and equipped with a Type 12 fuse and exploder. They weighed 25 kilograms each and carried hundreds of thousands of infected fleas in an airtight compartment filled with sand. The fuse was designed to shatter the bomb casing in an air burst over the heads of the enemy, scattering the fleas over a wide area. The artillery shells did not work as well and the idea was eventually discarded.

Tests for fragmentation and burst radius effectiveness for the various bombs and artillery shells were conducted at Anta Proving Ground, located five hours from Pingfan by truck. Here, prisoners were subjected to the direct blast of the various devices. Lt. Col. Toshihide Nishi observed one such experiment:

"The object of the experiment was to ascertain whether it was possible to infect people with gas gangrene at a temperature of 20 degrees centigrade below zero. This experiment was performed in the following way: ten Chinese prisoners of war were tied to stakes at a distance of 10 to 20 meters from a shrapnel bomb that was charged with gas gangrene. To prevent the men from being killed outright, their heads and backs were protected with special metal shields and thick quilted blankets. But their legs and buttocks were left unprotected. The bomb was exploded by means of an electric switch and the shrapnel, bearing gas gangrene germs, scattered all over the spot where the experimentees were bound. All the experimentees were wounded in the legs or buttocks, and seven days later they died in great torment."[7]

Between 500 and 600 prisoners were consigned to Unit 731 annually. According to Major General Kawashima, if a prisoner survived the inoculation of lethal bacteria initially, this fact did not save him from a repetition of experiments which continued until death from infection finally occurred. If a prisoner survived one experiment, he was nursed back to health in efforts to experiment with cures. This accomplished, the *murata* was injected with a different type of germ and the process repeated until the prisoner finally expired.

Perhaps the most diabolical means of vectoring the viruses was the *Fu*, or balloon bomb. Manufactured at 731's camp at Mukden, these large rice paper and rubberized silk balloons, each designed to carry cholera and typhus, were capable of being launched in Japan and flying across the Pacific in the Jet Stream to the United States. In actuality, several incendiary balloons of similar design were launched and managed to fly into the forests of the Pacific Northwest. Their purpose was to start forest fires. Though few ignited after completing the journey, six people were reported killed after tampering with downed balloons in an attempt to recover the incendiary mechanism. It is not known if biological bombs were indeed launched against the United States, however the wreckage of one balloon of the proper construction for such a device was reportedly found as far away as the southwestern desert and carried something "other than an incendiary."

The attitude of the U.S. military at the time was to cover up the fact that the Japanese had succeeded in reaching the U.S. with the balloons. Their fear was that if the Japanese found that their launches were successful, then they would intensify. The downside to this was that the American people were also left in the dark, hence people being killed when they tried to recover what they thought were "weather balloons."

To breed flea vectors, Ishii set up 4000 cultivators capable of producing up to 15 grams of fleas in each production cycle. Four special areas in Second Division were constructed to maintain a constant 30 degree centigrade temperature, and were stocked with metal jars containing rats to provide hosts for the fleas. His rat factories held tens of thousands of rodents, many bred on the installation, and others caught by special rat-catching teams sent to the local villages and towns.

But Ishii and his 731 technicians did not stop with germ warfare. Other horrendous experiments were conducted to ascertain what kind of reactions a human body would have to various conditions encountered in the field. One such experiment concerned frostbite.

The winters of Manchuria and Korea were harsh. So harsh that the chief concern of the Army staff for the troops in the field was frostbite. The doctors of Pingfan and Mukden knew that the hardest part of treating frostbite was in the thawing stage. Unless circulation could be restored in an expeditious and effective manner, the victim would suffer gangrene in the affected area and would then be forced to undergo amputation. To experiment with cures, reasoned Ishii, would require human subjects.

It was the job of the local *Kempeitai* (a cross between a Japanese version of the Gestapo and military police), and the *Tokumu Kikan* (Japanese Secret Service) to fulfill these needs. At first, local Chinese, Mongolians and White Russians were rounded up when needed. There was an adequate local supply of human fodder for the experiments, consisting of men, women and children. It was a simple matter of charging the victims with espionage or sedition against the Emperor, then trucking them off to one of the camps. These shipments, known as *Tokui-Atsukai*, were simply considered expendable consignments of "convicted criminals" that would disappear forever.

When there were not enough prisoners to send, the *Kenpeitai* enticed people to come to their headquarters for "jobs." In this way, men, women, children, and even pregnant women, were rounded up for experimentation. When a sufficient number had been gathered in the *Kenpeitai*'s Harbin holding post, the basement of the Japanese Embassy, Unit 731 was contacted to make a pickup.

After arrival at one of the 731's facilities at Pingfan or Mukden, the prisoners, known as *marutas* (logs of wood) were divided up by age, sex, and nationality. Each was herded into a separate holding block inside *Ro* block (*Ro* means square), the large prison inside the compound. At this stage, they became inventory for the various squads of the divisions.

For those who were used in the frostbite experiments, conducted under the guidance of Dr. Hisato Yoshimura, the ordeal was nothing short of torture. A medical orderly named Furuichi described how it was done:

"Experiments in freezing human beings were performed every year in the detachment, in the coldest months of the year: November, December, January and February. The technique of these experiments was as follows: the experimentees were taken out into the frost at night, at about 11 o'clock, and compelled to dip their hands into a barrel of cold water. Then they were compelled to take their hands out and stand with wet hands in the frost for a long time. Or else the following was done: the people were taken out dressed, but with bare feet and compelled to stand at night in the frost in the coldest period of the year. When these people had got frostbite, they were taken to a room and forced to put their feet in water of 5 degrees centigrade in temperature, and then the temperature was gradually increased. In this way means of healing frostbite were investigated."[8]

Another member of the Unit, Education Division Chief Nishi, recalled other experiments: "...with temperatures below -20 degrees centigrade, people were brought out from the detachment's prison into the open. Their arms were bared and made to freeze with the help of an artificial current of air. This was done until their frozen arms, when struck with a short stick, emitted a sound resembling that which a board gives out when it is struck."

Besides frost bite, the Japanese army was concerned with shortages of whole blood during battle. In an attempt to find a substitute for human blood, animal blood was considered. In one set of experiments, prisoners were tied down and drained of blood. As their blood was being extracted, it was replaced with horse blood. Every one of these prisoners died on the spot.

Various poisons were also tested. One favorite was the exotic toxin of the *fugu* or blowfish. Human subjects were injected with varying doses, then monitored to see how long it took them to die under each dosage. As in all experiments, the bodies of the human lab rats were incinerated in the electric furnace to leave no trace.

But of particular interest were the diseases. In the twelve years of the unit's existence, dozens of diseases were studied. They included: Botulism, brucellosis, cholera, dysentery, gangrene, glanders, influenza, meningococcus, salmonella, smallpox, tetanus, tick encephalitis, tuberculosis, tularemia, typhoid, typhus and epidemic hemorrhagic fever.

The disease experiments were costly to the *muratas*. Two and three died each day and were incinerated. No one could resist the experiments, for there was no way to escape and no way to fight back. Diseases were forcibly injected or administered through a special stick-shaped bacteria assassination weapon. They were also sprayed directly into the victim's face or concealed in food and drink. The prisoner had no choice but to succumb to the wishes of the experimenters.

In little more than a decade, General Ishii had managed to make drastic inroads into an area of research that would give Japan an arsenal of weapons that might rival America's atomic bomb.[9] But there was one question Ishii had yet to answer: would the diseases that worked on Asians also work on Caucasians?

What he now needed were Anglo prisoners. Australians, British and Americans.

Ishii chose the camp at Mukden for the experiments to be conducted on the new *muratas* that were to arrive from the Philippines, Singapore, Malaysia and other places that had fallen under the advance of the Japanese Imperial Army. It was into this hell that Pappy Whelchel and 1,484 other Allied POWs were to be sent.

"Upon our arrival," recalled Whelchel, "we were taken to a barracks that was isolated from the other prisoners that had preceded us. After a period of time, a group of five or six Japanese medical personnel entered our barracks and called out various prisoner-of-war numbers that we had been assigned. The medical personnel gave the Americans various shots discriminately; not all the prisoners were given the same type of shots. This caused a considerable amount of anxiety among our group, as we felt that we were being tested for bacteriological immunity for their possible use of bacterial warfare against the Allied troops in the Far East."

"As a group, we did not receive the same shots. Some persons were checked for oral and rectal temperatures, some for the welts the shots caused, rectal tissues from some, rectal smears from others. All personnel were sprayed in the face by some kind of spray from a spray instrument similar to our Flit spray guns. After we were allowed to associate with other prisoners, we ascertained that we were the only ones that had received this treatment. The Japanese medical personnel were keeping accurate records of each and every one of us in this one barracks."[10]

Many other experiments were conducted on the Allied POWs, but most concerned the Americans and British. Other selected groups of Anglo-Saxon prisoners were not experimented upon. Instead, they became the control groups. It would do little good to find that some disease had been found to be effective, then later discover that it had come from outside the camp and had not been induced as part of a segregated experiment. To preclude this, the control groups were needed to monitor the invasion of outside germs, and at the same time, give a definitive separation between those that died from the diseases, and those who died because of general camp conditions.

In one experiment conducted on Americans, Japanese medical technicians came into the barracks when there were men too sick to leave and induced other germs into their systems. Greg Rodriguez, one of the Americans captured on Bataan, related that "A Japanese came in and looked me over and then placed a mirror in front of my nostrils. At the time, I thought: 'Well, he's just checking to see if I'm still breathing.' But, after a little bit, he came back again with a feather. He ran that feather up and down under my nostrils, and, later on, I discovered this was one of the methods used to get prisoners to ingest bacteria."

Many Americans were removed from the camp's population and transferred out to disappear forever. Dr. B.J. Brennan, an Australian, reported that one day the camp guards came into the camp, singled out around 150 Americans, then lined them up and marched them out of the camp. "They never came back and I never heard of any of them again."

Of those that stayed and died, dissections were performed on a routine basis to discover the progress of various diseases and what organs were affected. One prisoner named Frank James was assigned to the autopsy detail. Though extremely sick himself, he refused to go to the hospital because, "nobody that went in ever came out."

He described one particular day in June, 1943: "I went round to the hut and there must have been 340 bodies stacked there. Each body had a tag attached to his toe...Another fellow and I were told to lift the bodies up and put them on autopsy tables. Then, they [Japanese technicians in white smocks, their faces covered with cotton masks] began to cut them open."

James went on to describe carrying body after body to the building where the men in white coats were performing their grisly tasks. The doctors took certain organs and placed them in jars of liquid, then carefully labeled each jar with the identification number of a POW. At the end of the day, the specimens were loaded on trucks and taken from the camp.

The most horrible autopsies performed were done while prisoners were still alive. Live vivisections, though not commonplace, did occur. In these, the prisoner was placed on a table, sometimes anesthetized and sometimes not, then cut open to observe the progress of various diseases within the abdominal cavity. Under Dr. Kozo Okamoto and Dr. Tachiomaru Ishikawa, squads performed various anatomical studies on prisoners in which pathology squad assistant Kurumizawa understated, "to do this work, our sentiments were suppressed."

By 1944, Unit 731 was ready to begin offensive operations. Ishii, eager to "join his brothers in battle," laid plans to provide biological weapons for an attack upon American forces in Saipan. Japan had already lost over 24,000 troops in the battle, and the situation was looking grim for the Imperial Army. If Saipan fell, American bombers could be based well within striking distance of the home islands.

Ishii chose seventeen officers to lead an assault team that would sprinkle the Saipan airstrip with plague-infected fleas. The team and the containers of insects were put aboard ship, but before they could reach the battle zone, the ship was discovered by an American submarine and sunk.

Shortly afterward, Saipan fell. And in short order, American B-29s began to bomb cities in the Japanese main islands. It was not difficult to see that the war would soon be over, and Japan would not be the victor. Ishii had to prepare his unit for such an eventuality. He had to make plans to destroy all evidence of his crimes, remove all traces of the three facilities, get rid of the prisoners, then evacuate his personnel back to Japan before they could be taken prisoner by Allied forces.

As these plans were being made, Russian forces, under the Yalta Agreement, began to swell on the Soviet side of the Manchurian border. Then on August 9th, just after Hiroshima had been devastated by the Atomic Bomb, the Russians crossed the border in force and swept into Manchuria and Korea. Almost two million men, 5,500 tanks and 5000 aircraft swarmed into the Kwantung Army's operational area and began racing south, toward Ishii's camps. Ishii gave the orders to begin the destruction of evidence.

At Pingfan, the prisoners were the first to be destroyed. Troops of the 516 Chemical Warfare Unit gassed many of the POWs in their cells, and gave cyanide to still more in their food. Other witnesses, the 600 local Manchurian and Chinese laborers who worked for the Japanese and knew of the projects, were simply machine gunned.

The bodies were taken at first to the incinerators, but there were so many that the huge ovens could not handle the load. To expedite the affair, they were stacked inside *Ro* block's courtyard, coated with diesel fuel, and set afire. Still, this was not sufficient, so the Japanese began taking the bodies to the Sungari River where they, along with hundreds of sets of manacles, were thrown in.

For three days the local engineer brigade labored to rig the buildings for demolition. Thousands of pounds of dynamite and other explosives were used on the structures, but some were constructed so well that they resisted the explosions. In a desperate effort to destroy what remained of the facility, eighty trucks were loaded with 50kg bombs and detonated. This last effort succeeded in destroying, or at least making unrecognizable, the majority of buildings and equipment.

On August 14th, the personnel of Unit 731 gathered up their families and possessions and boarded trains for Korea. Over 2,000 soldiers and dependents began making good their escape.

The next day the Emperor announced the surrender of Japan. As he was doing so, Ishii was making his own address. In it he swore each and every man to a life of total secrecy, a "life in the shadows." He ordered them to never reveal their military past, never to take government jobs in the future, and lastly, *never* gather or make an effort to see each other again.

But some, including himself, would not be able to keep this promise. For unknown to Ishii at the time, the U.S. Government knew of him and his activities. And they wanted him very badly.

But not for war crimes.

The existence of Unit 731 and its activities were no secret to the American government. As early as 1943, the Military Intelligence Service began picking up bits and pieces of information from various sources that began to build a picture of a top secret Japanese bacterial warfare experimentation center in Manchuria. In that year four Japanese soldiers captured in China told of the existence of a *Saikin*

Kenkyu sho, or Bacteriological Experimental Center, at Harbin. They confirmed that it was controlled by the army, and that Imperial Army biologists were carrying out experiments of some unknown, and super secret nature. They also stated that the commander of the unit conducting these experiments was a Major General of the medical service named Shiro Ishii.

Under further interrogation, they stated that a *Boekikyusui Bu*, or water purification unit, was also located in Harbin, and that this unit was responsible for collecting and evaluating the results of all biological experiments conducted by field units. Intelligence felt that this unit and Ishii's unit were either connected or were one in the same.[11]

Military Intelligence noted in their reports to Washington that these areas of Manchuria were so remote that gaining information about the Japanese BW activities was extremely difficult. Still, information trickled out. In 1944, the U.S. Army Chemical Warfare division discovered that the Japanese were dropping what they termed to be "Christmas Balls," glass balls filled with what was suspected to be bacteria, along the China-Burma border in areas occupied by Allied troops. This information was passed along to all intelligence agencies for dissemination to field intelligence gathering units with the request that if any of these "bombs" were found intact, they should be handled with extreme care and turned in for analysis. It is unknown outside of military circles if any of these devices were recovered.

As these investigations were being conducted overseas, the U.S. Army Chemical Corps at Camp Detrick, Maryland, became concerned with defensive measures against bacteriological attack. With the Germans working on the V-1 "buzz bombs" and V-2 rockets at their research center at Peenemunde, and the Japanese developing BW weapons, the possibility of long range weapons of mass destruction being perfected by the Axis powers became a very real concern.

But instead of rockets delivering supersonic warheads filled with bacteria, the U.S. was assaulted instead by the oldest flying machine in history, the balloon. In December of 1944, Camp Detrick was notified that a huge balloon made of rice paper had just come down in Butte, Montana. But before technicians could respond to investigate the device, which they believed might carry some type of plague or other contagion, another report came in that a large rubberized silk balloon had landed in Washington state. Then, almost overnight, reports of landings of ten other balloons, ranging from Alaska to San Diego, came in. Colonel Murray Sanders, a Camp Detrick bacteriologist, caught a plane for Washington state, the central location chosen to examine the balloons that were recovered. He reported that: "The balloons were brought in and we all stood around them in a circle. All the scientific and military experts, all of us with our own thought. We examined them...[They] had obviously come from Japan. I told them that the prevailing winds would carry most of the Japanese balloons, comfortably, to the mainland of the United States. I told them that if we found Japanese B-encephalitis on any of the balloons, we were in real trouble."

But they didn't find any traces of bacteria or any devices that appeared to be designed to distribute germs or insect vectors. Still, the number of balloons that managed to cross the Pacific was frightening. Balloons launched in Japan into the Jet Stream could travel across the Pacific in thirty to sixty hours, then, depending on the weather on that particular day, follow air currents to different parts of North America until they finally dropped from the sky. Balloons were found at such distant locations as White Horse, Alaska; Hawaii; Vancouver Island; Grand Rapids, Michigan; ranches in Montana, and other places. During the month of March, 1945, alone, over 100 balloons were reported to have successfully crossed the ocean.[12]

The threat was very real, but of more concern to the Detrick officers and the government was the thought of civilian panic should this information get out. A tight lid was clamped on the investigation and strict censorship of the press and radio was instituted. Any balloons found by the civilian population were quickly rounded up and the finders sworn to secrecy as a matter of national security.

Because of the censorship, few civilian warnings were given of the danger involved should a balloon bomb be found. In Oregon, a party of fishermen came across one of the balloons and began to examine the incendiary device it had carried. It exploded and killed all six fishermen. In another report that leaked to the press before government censors could intervene, a woman in Helena, Montana, found a balloon and it too exploded, killing her. Still, the government maintained silence to the danger as far as public knowledge was concerned.

The implications of what could happen should the Japanese succeed in sending across deadly viruses and bacteria became of paramount importance to the military. Two meetings were held in March of 1945, one at the headquarters of the 7th Service Command in Omaha, and one at the headquarters of the Western Defense Command in San Francisco. In these meetings, the officers in charge of home defense listened for four days to Colonel Sanders and other representatives from Camp Detrick and Washington. The end result was that probable targets within the U.S. were identified and that there was little the military or civilian authorities could do should the enemy begin a balloon onslaught of biological warfare bombs.

The representatives of the various military branches also agreed that not only could such weapons change the direction of the war, but a huge armada of balloons would not be required to do so. If only one balloon got through, carrying the proper BW agent, a deadly epidemic might ravage the American population completely out of proportion to the effort expended in the attack. Hundreds of thousands of Americans, men, women and children, might die before such a disease could be brought into check.

According to recently declassified records, it was the fear of such a biological attack that spawned a super secret experiment jointly conducted by the Army and Navy. The task was to test the effectiveness of airborne viruses in an actual environment, one populated by American citizens.

Within weeks of the meeting, on a day selected because of ideal weather conditions, a task force of U.S. Navy warships steamed just off the coastline of

Southern California. The residents of the sleepy beach communities dotting the shoreline were just beginning to awaken.

A gray mist from a low-lying marine layer partially cloaked the ships as they turned into the onshore breeze and rang for "all ahead, slow." When the ships were in the position noted in their sailing orders, sailors aboard one of the vessels cranked open a valve on a large pressure tank that rested on the stern. Within seconds a hissing stream of air, contaminated with influenza virus, rose into the atmosphere and began to drift ashore. When the tank was empty, the ships turned back toward San Diego, their mission complete. For the next few weeks the outbreak of flu was monitored at various surveillance stations set up along the coast and up to 250 miles inland.

Other tests were run in a similar manner. However, unlike the influenza tests conducted "as a defensive measure" against the expected BW balloon attacks, these were concerned with chemical warfare. Stimulants and other chemical compounds were released, then as before, the civilian population was monitored for the effects and the range of coverage by checking medical records at local hospitals. It is apparent that at this late period in the war the U.S. government was becoming more concerned over the future offensive effectiveness of such weapons than it was with protecting the civilian population against some last-ditch effort by the Japanese high command.

It was codenamed Operation *Olympia*. It was the planned invasion of the Japanese home islands, and was expected to cost over a million American lives. The assault was to occur on the island of Honshu with a combined naval, air and land strike of a magnitude never before seen in history. But just as the Allied forces stood poised on the doorstep of the Emperor's islands, an even larger force intervened. The Atomic bomb.

First Hiroshima, then Nagasaki were reduced to smoldering rubble. In Hiroshima, over 60,000 buildings were destroyed within a 9.5 mile radius of ground zero, and more than 71,000 people were killed. Nagasaki fared better, with only 35,000 dead. Within days Japan surrendered. The war was over.

It was now time for the world to pick up the pieces and begin reconstruction. It was also time to punish those responsible for the crimes committed during the war. Only by punishing those guilty of atrocities, crimes against mankind and violations of the laws of warfare, could their victims be avenged and future despots and tyrants be deterred.

In accordance with the Potsdam agreements, every enemy soldier accused of committing war crimes would be brought to trial before a war crimes tribunal.

Almost every soldier.

Chapter 2

The Naito Document And The Hunt For Ishii

The war against Germany and Japan was over. But a new war was just beginning. The Cold War. Already the Western powers and the Soviets were beginning to encounter growing tensions and were jockeying for political and geographic position in the new world alignment. Entire countries were forced to chose sides, most often with the power that happened to occupy them in the closing days of the war. In Europe, those countries under Soviet control found that instead of being liberated, they were merely occupied by a different army. In the western European countries, the threat of Communist expansionism became a very real concern. And in Asia, where the Red Army invaded Manchuria and China at the closing days of the war, there was little question what would happen within the territory they occupied.

As the war crimes tribunals began their investigations, bringing to trial Nazi and Japanese officers who, if convicted, faced long prison terms or the hangman's noose, the covert intelligence communities scrambled in a different direction. Both sides realized that scientific discoveries had been made by the opposing side that would enhance their own scientific efforts. But to reap the benefits of the spoils of war, they first had to locate the scientists and technicians involved and remove them from harm's way.

In the following months, while men such as Yamashita and von Ribbentrop were going to the gallows, other men, just as guilty of atrocities, were being spirited away from justice by the intelligence services of virtually every victorious power. The United States was no exception.

For Ishii, salvation came in the form of Colonel Murray Sanders and the Camp Detrick chemical warfare staff. Sanders arrived in Japan aboard the S.S. *Sturgis*, a merchant marine ship loaded with technical specialists that had been dispatched to Japan under the express orders of General Douglas MacArthur. Their mission was to ferret out certain Japanese scientists and interrogate them for scientific data that might prove useful to the United States. As usual, it was a matter of national security.

Sanders' specific mission was to find out everything he could about the Japanese biological warfare machine, and if possible locate Ishii and any other members of his unit for debriefing. No decision had yet been made concerning their disposition. That would have to come later.

When the *Sturgis* docked at Yokohama, an amazing thing happened. As Sanders stepped down the gangplank to the dock, a middle-aged Japanese approached him and called him by name. Holding a photograph of Sanders, the Japanese, identifying himself in English as Dr. Naito, welcomed "Dr. Sanders" to Japan. In quick order he explained that he was to serve as the colonel's interpreter. Sanders was a bit puzzled at the encounter. Particularly since he recognized the photo as one taken at Camp Detrick. The only explanation would be that G-2 had somehow obtained the picture and had brought it to Japan and given it to the interpreter to help him in identifying Sanders.

What Sanders did not know at that time is the fact that Naito was one of the members of Unit 731Cand he knew where others were.

In the following weeks, Sanders set up an office in the Dai Ichi building in Tokyo, the location of Supreme Allied Headquarters, and with the aid of Naito, began making discrete enquiries concerning the whereabouts of Japanese doctors and biologists that had served in Manchuria and had been involved with biological weapons experiments. Very little useful information was produced. It was as if such things had never happened and Unit 731 had never existed. Naito, while appearing to work hard in his attempts to locate former 731 officers, skillfully guided Sanders' investigation down one blind alley after another. But Sanders was determined to press on until he had something useful to send back to Camp Detrick, and as the days turned into weeks, he began to suspect that Naito knew more than he let on.

Sanders changed tactics. He threatened to turn the investigation over to the Russians. This was more than a subtle threat to Naito. He knew that if the Russians began to investigate Unit 731, they would not stop at simply questioning people, and they would demand that all members of the unit be found and brought before the tribunal for prosecution. Sanders began to see results. Naito had maintained contact with certain senior officials of Ishii's staff and continued to meet with them on a regular basis in secret locations in the suburbs of the city. In the beginning, his main purpose was to act as an insulator between the former 731 officers and the U.S. investigation. But when Sanders threatened to turn the affair over to the Russians, Naito knew that a different ploy would have to be undertaken if they were to save themselves.

He produced what became known as the Naito Document.

The twelve pages of the handwritten paper gave the entire structure of Unit 731 including the chain of command and the command relationships with the Kwantung Army. And there was more.

"I felt it is my duty to tell you about BW all I know to help your sincere effort of investigation as a scientist," began Naito in his scrawling hand. "The purpose of this information is only to rescue our poor, defeated nation, and to avoid the damage, according to your words, that if we offer the truce [truth] as a science, you may help this poor nation with every your [sic] effort, but if we keep the matters secret which will be disclosed afterwards, every damages will be added to us...."

Naito went on to state: "There occurred a big consternation in the circle of higher officers of Japanese Head Quarter[s] when your enquire about BW began...A long disputation was done, whether they should answer to you with the true or not...the vice chief of general staffs and the chief of Bureau of War-Affairs (Army Ministry), have the fear that the fact that Japan had some laboratories for active BW will bring a big misfortune to the Emperor."

With the preliminaries out of the way, Naito described in minute detail the various chains of command, the financing and logistical structure, the general administration, and even the plans that had been made to use the weapons in an offensive capacity. It was apparent in the document that Naito feared retribution from the former Japanese General Staff for divulging even the existence of Unit 731. He ended the paper with the statements: "I have a large fear, that my [sic] this act (information) be against our General-staff. So I beg you to fire these papers immediately after you read this. I beg you, by the enquiry to the other officers, not to gustate this information in such a way as 'Information of Liet Col Naito says...' [or] 'It is evident, according to Dr. Naito's information...' I beg you to keep this information secret...."

Naito feared for his life.

Sanders then knew that Naito was a member of the unit in question and he knew where other members were. But he was at an impasse. The Japanese were afraid to come forward with information that would surely get them convicted of war crimes unless something could be done to ensure their safety.[13]

It was now a matter for the highest levels of command, and very possibly Washington itself. Just how important was it to get the information from the former members of 731? Enough to keep them from going to trial? Maybe even protecting them from discovery both now and in the future?

Washington said it was.

It then became a matter of speed. The Russians, who had captured the Harbin, Pingfan and Mukden camps, and liberated what few Americans and British that remained alive, were also looking for Ishii and his men. They already held some of the Unit's members, those that did not escape Manchuria soon enough or who had been left behind to finish destruction of the facilities, and were taking them to task at a trial in Khabarovsk. Each in turn, in order to save their own skins, eventually started pointing fingers at the staff officers. Specifically Ishii and his various subordinates who had fled to Japan.

Sanders met with MacArthur and a representative from Military Intelligence. After an hour of debate, MacArthur decided that the information that could be gleaned from the Japanese far outweighed any crimes they had committed.

"My recommendation," said Sanders, "is that we promise Naito that no one involved in BW will be prosecuted as a war criminal."

"Well, you're the man in charge of the scientific aspects of this," replied MacArthur. "If you feel you cannot get all the information, we're not given to torture, so offer him that promise as coming from General MacArthur. And get the data."[14]

Within three weeks any belief on Sanders' part that no human guinea pigs had been used disappeared. He was visited in his hotel room one night by a small Japanese who shinnied down a drain pipe to his window and crawled in to hand him a set of blueprints. The plans were diagrams of the *Uji* BW bomb. The man then said that 100 such bombs had been constructed, and several had been tested by detonating them in the center of a range where prisoners had been tied to stakes at varying distances. After mentioning that some of the prisoners had been killed due to the experiment, the little man left. Sanders was stunned.

Sanders returned to MacArthur, but was told to keep investigating. The statement provided by one unknown person was not enough to stop the deal.

Over the next three months Sanders located and interrogated several former Japanese officers mentioned in the Naito Document and from other leads. At the same time, the relations between the U.S. and Russia began to rapidly deteriorate. Past horrors of a war now won became footnotes to history. The main concern for both the military and the government was the possibility of war with the USSR. If that were to happen, considering the Japanese BW engineers that remained in Russian hands, it was conceivable that the inventory of weapons employed by the Soviets would include chemical and bacteriological devices of a horrendous nature. With this being the case, it was paramount that the U.S. had weapon parity, or superiority.

Lt. Col. Sanders was ordered home in 1946 to report the results of his investigation to Camp Detrick. After producing the Naito Document and explaining his findings, he began to grow ill. He had contacted tuberculosis and would not be sent back to Japan. The Unit 731 matter was turned over to another officer to follow up on, and for reasons unknown to Sanders, no one at Detrick seemed to be concerned about the reports of human experiments. Instead, it was decided to forget about the negative part of that particular situation and go on with matters more relevant to the Detrick scientists: finding exactly how certain bacteria and viruses affect the human body when used in the form of a weapon.

And the Japanese from Unit 731, *because* of their human experimentation, knew.

The war trials taking place in Tokyo and other places across the war zone were drawing world attention. Class "A" trials, those of the most serious cases, were tried by the International Military Tribunal for the Far East. Others of lesser significance were tried by various commissions appointed by the Army and Navy. As each case came to trial and was disposed of, headlines announced the sentences. From varying

prison terms to hangings, each war criminal that came before the tribunal was handed their verdict and sentenced.
Except the members of Unit 731.

After receiving their marching orders from both Washington and MacArthur, the personnel involved in dealing with the Japanese BW experts in Japan found themselves faced with a very tricky situation. They had to somehow get the information required by higher headquarters from their former enemies, make sure the details were kept secret from virtually everyone outside the Camp Detrick circle, ensure that it would not surface in any manner that would make it available as evidence in war crimes trials, and do all of this without drawing attention to their project. If what they were attempting was discovered, it would prove most embarrassing to the U.S. government.

In one top secret message sent to CINCFE (Commander-in-Chief, Far East, Douglas MacArthur), the problem was discussed:

1. To formulate a reply to CINCFE's radio [message] date 2 May 1947, recommending the retention of Japanese BW Information in Intelligence channels and that such material not be employed as "war crimes" evidence.

2. Part 2 of cable cited in paragraph 1 above states that General Ishii and associates would supply technical BW information if guaranteed immunity from 'war crimes' in documentary form. Ishii and associates have to date, voluntarily supplied and are continuing to supply such information without a documentary guarantee of immunity.

3. Nineteen Japanese BW experts have written a 60 page report concerning BW research using human subjects. A twenty page report covering 9 years of research on crop destruction has been prepared. A report by 10 Japanese scientists on research in the veterinary field is being written. A Japanese pathologist is engaged in recovering and making photographs of selected examples of 8,000 slides of tissues from autopsies of humans and animals subjected to BW experiments. General Ishii is writing a treatise embracing his 20 years experience in all phases of BW."

Over a year after the war had ended the intelligence services were still referring to Ishii as "general." And in this message alone, it is shown that there were no doubts concerning human experimentation. The message continued with a sub-part concerning the value of the information Ishii and his cohorts were providing:

a. Data already obtained from Ishii and his colleagues have proven to be of great value in confirming, supplementing and complementing several phases of U.S. research in BW, and may suggest new fields for future research.

b. This Japanese information is the only known source of data from scientifically controlled experiments showing the direct effect of BW agents on man. In the past it has been necessary to evaluate the effects of BW agents on man from data obtained through animal experimentation. Such evaluation is inconclusive and far less complete than results obtained from certain types of human experimentation.

c. In addition to the results of human experimentation much valuable data is available from the Japanese experiments on animals and food crops. The voluntary imparting of this BW information may serve as a forerunner for obtaining much additional information in other fields of research.

d. Desirability of avoiding "war crimes" involvement.

A. Since it is believed that the USSR possesses only a small portion of this technical information, and since any 'war crimes' trial would completely reveal much data to all nations, it is felt that such publicity must be avoided in interests of defense and security of the U.S. It is believed also that 'war crimes' prosecution of Ishii and his associates would serve to stop the flow of much additional information of technical and scientific nature.

B. It is felt that the use of this information as a basis for 'war crimes' evidence would be a grave detriment to Japanese cooperation with the United States occupation forces in Japan.

7. It is concluded that:

a. Information of Japanese BW experiments will be of great value to the U.S. BW research program.

b. In the interests of national security it would not be advisable to make this information available to other nations as would be the case in the event of "war crimes" trial of Jap BW experts.

c. The value to U.S. of Japanese data is of such importance to national security as to far outweigh the value resulting from 'war crimes' prosecution.

d. The BW information obtained from Japanese sources should be retained in intelligence channels and should not be employed in "war crimes" evidence.

RECOMMENDATION

8. It is recommended that:

a. SWNCC approve the above conclusions.[15]

b. After approval by SWNCC, the JCS be requested to transmit the message in Appendix "B" to CINCFE providing they have no objection from the military point of view.

c. All subsequent communications dealing with this phase of the subject be classified 'top secret.'"

The concern for secrecy in this message is readily apparent. What else can be seen is the references to the SWNCC (State, War, Navy Coordinating Committee), and the JCS, the Joint Chiefs of Staff. What the members of the SWNCC and the Joint Chiefs know, the President knows."

The Deal and the Cover Up...

Despite precautions taken to keep these dealings and decisions secret, the word leaked outside of military circles. Before a written guarantee of non-prosecution could be provided to Ishii and his cohorts by MacArthur, the bureaucrats at the Department of State became involved. Such moves on the part of the military would not normally have involved the State Department unless plans were being made to bring the Japanese into the United States, or unless their opinion was solicited by the White House. There is also the possibility that the State Department became involved in response to Russian protests concerning the prosecution of certain war criminals that had not yet been located or brought before the tribunal. The Soviets, who were at that moment interrogating their own Japanese prisoners that had been involved with Ishii, were becoming increasingly adamant about finding out what Ishii and the rest of his staff knew about bacteriological warfare, and might be giving the Americans.

In an undated top secret message sent by the Department of State, who at that time was feeling the heat from the Soviets concerning the Ishii affair, a fence-straddling non-committal attitude was vested by the bureaucrats:

> INTERROGATION OF CERTAIN JAPANESE
> BY RUSSIAN PROSECUTOR
>
> The Department of State cannot approve the proposal in SFE 188/2 that Colonel Ishii and his associates should be promised that BW information given by them will be retained in intelligence channels and will not be employed as 'war crimes' evidence. It is believed on the basis of facts brought out in the subject paper that it is possible that the desired information can be obtained from Colonel Ishii and his assistants without these assurances, and that it might later be a source of serious embarrassment to the United States if the assurances were given. At the same time, every practicable precaution should be taken to prevent the BW information possessed by Colonel Ishii from being made generally known in a public trial. It is therefore recommended that (1) that CINCFE, without making any commitment to Ishii and the other Japanese involved, continue to obtain all possible information in the manner heretofore followed; (2) that information thus obtained be retained in fact in intelligence channels unless evidence developed at the International Military Trial presents overwhelming reasons why this procedure can no longer be followed: and (3) that, even though no commitment is made, the United States authorities for security reasons not prosecute war crimes charges against Ishii and his associates.[16]

In typical political double-speak, the Department of State gave the military their blessing to cover up the activities of Unit 731 without committing themselves to a pardon or written guarantee that 731 personnel will not be prosecuted after providing the much-sought after information. In reading between the lines of this message, dual meanings and escape clauses can readily be seen. After stating that the Department of State cannot approve the proposal granting the 731 people immunity to prosecution, they go on to state that "every practicable precaution should be taken to prevent the BW information possessed by Colonel Ishii from being made generally known in a public trial." The only way to do this would be to make sure a trial never occurred. The Soviet prosecutors would have milked Ishii *et al* until nothing secret remained should they be brought in front of the Tribunal.

Then, in typical bureaucratic fashion, the message tosses the ball into the military's court by recommending that "...CINCFE, without making any commitment to Ishii and the other Japanese involved, continue to obtain all possible information in the manner heretofore followed." And in the very next sentence, the State Department officials left themselves a back door. "...that the information thus obtained be retained in fact in intelligence channels *unless evidence developed at the International Military Trial presents overwhelming reasons why this procedure can no longer be followed."* [Author's emphasis]

This last statement plainly demonstrates the State Department's concern that the Soviets, and maybe the British, Dutch, Australian and other Allied prosecutors, might develop information that would force the U.S. to cough up Ishii for trial. This, as the message plainly states, would be very embarrassing to the U.S.

Finally, the last sentence, purposely vague in meaning concerning just what "security" is involved, ends the message with: "...that, even though no commitment is made, the United States authorizes for security reasons not prosecute war crimes charges against Ishii and his associates."

In Appendix "B" attached to the above message, the Department of State transmitted its concern over discovery that American POWs were used as guinea pigs:

> "...it should be kept in mind that there is a remote possibility that independent investigation conducted by the Soviets in the Mukden Area *may have disclosed evidence that American prisoners of war were used for experimental purposes of a BW nature and that they lost their lives as a result of these experiments,* and further, that such evidence may be introduced by the Soviet prosecutors in the source of cross-examination of certain of the major Japanese war criminals now on trial at Tokyo, particularly during the cross examination of Umezu, Commander of the Kwantung Army from 1939 to 1944 of which army the Ishii BW group was a part. In addition, there is a strong possibility that the Soviet prosecutors will, in the course of cross-examination of Umezu, introduce evidence of experiments conducted on human beings by the Ishii BW group, which experiments *do not differ greatly from those for which this Government is now prosecuting German scientists and medical doctors at Nuremburg."* [Author's emphasis]

The State Department was doing its best to tiptoe around the issue and keep it in the hands of the military, away from the Soviets, and all without "embarrassing" the government. The final recommendation was to give the "Ishii group" vocal immunity, backed up with a vague written document only if necessary, signed by MacArthur.

Ishii and his officers found themselves between the veritable rock and the hard place. They had to trust the Americans to honor an oral agreement. These former enemies of the Emperor were members of the same force that provided the *muratas* that had been used in the most painful and deadly of experiments, of which most had died or later been murdered. How could they now be trusted to honor their commitment *not* to seek revenge and prosecute them? It was very hard for the Japanese to understand such a people, but Ishii had little choice. He agreed.

In secret meetings that occurred in 1946 in Kamakura, Ishii and his senior officers revealed all they knew about bacteriological warfare and experimentation on human beings. In return, a secret contract was made between the American representatives of Camp Detrick, Military Intelligence, and Ishii. Little did Ishii know that a message existed that *did* guarantee him and his subordinates immunity from prosecution and protection by the United States Government. Titled simply "Message to CINCFE," and probably sent by SWNCC, it came in two parts:

> Part 1. Re URAD C-52423 of 6 May 1947. Recommendation in part 3B is approved. Information obtained from Ishii and associates on BW will be retained in Intelligence channels and will not be employed as war crimes evidence.
>
> Part 2. All communications above subject will be classified Top Secret.

Meanwhile the War Crimes trials continued both in Tokyo and Nuremburg. Operating under a charter drawn up by the Big Four in London in 1945, the trials in Germany operated under a new set of rules that defined war crimes. In the past, the term "war criminal" referred to men found guilty of conventional war crimes, violations of the Laws of Land Warfare. But with information that had been developed by intelligence sources inside Nazi-occupied Europe concerning human experimentation in concentration camps, mass killings of civilians as "examples," genocide and other atrocities being committed by the Nazis, a new definition of war criminal was coined.

The new, wider jurisdictions of military tribunals now included crimes against "peace and humanity." It was now even against the law to even "wage war."

Crimes against peace included: "...planning, preparation, initiation or waging a war of aggression, or war in violation of international treaties, agreements or assurances, or participation in a common plan or conspiracy for the accomplishment of any of the foregoing."

Crimes against humanity were defined as: "...inhumane acts committed against any civilian population, before or during the war."[17]

Ishii's group fell into both categories. He had bombed civilian cities with disease-carrying bombs and other vectors, spread plague with flea-infested rats, injected civilian prisoners with various bacteria and poisons, and used civilians-men, women, children and babies, in a myriad of other horrifying experiments. But because the government was now gripped with Cold War paranoia, and the military found that it was able to hide almost anything under the guise of "national security," Ishii and his troops, without due legal process, were protected *by* the United States government. Or at least by a newly emerging inner circle of life-long bureaucrats, intelligence officials, and military officers that were rapidly discovering that they could operate above the law.

Under the secret protection of this covert clique of intelligence officials, not one senior officer of Unit 731 was ever prosecuted. In fact, they were not only protected, but prospered in the years after the war. Many, ignoring Ishii's orders not to seek public jobs or teaching positions, entered academia and became respected citizens of Japan. Others made fortunes in private industry and in medical research. For example: Dr. Kozo Okamoto, the pathology squad leader at Pingfan who conducted live vivisections on prisoners, became a professor at Kyoto University and director of the medical department. He later became professor emeritus of the university and medical director of the Kinki University at Osaka.

Dr. Kazu Tabei, who fed typhoid germs in milk to human prisoners to increase the germs' effectiveness by human cultivation, and who was responsible for testing one type of germ bomb on prisoners, joined the staff of Kyoto University and became a professor of bacteriology.

Dr. Hisato Yoshimura, the frostbite expert who froze people to death, joined the faculty of Kyoto Prefectural Medical College and later became its president.

Jun'ichi Kaneko, Unit 731's bomb expert, joined the Japanese National Institute of Health and continued bacteriological research.

Colonel Sanders' "interpreter," Naito, fared even better. He opened a blood bank, then speculated it into one of the biggest and most successful multinational medical supply and pharmaceutical companies in the world. The company, known as the Green Cross Corporation, produces plasma, artificial blood and cancer-fighting interferon, all at great profit. Subsidiaries include the British-based Alpha Therapeutic Ltd. located in Norfolk, England, and the Alpha Therapeutic Corporation with laboratories located in Los Angeles.

As for Shiro Ishii, he faded from public view into retirement in the village of Wakamatsu-cho where he lived on a comfortable pension, provided by the U.S. government, until his death in 1959 at the age of sixty-nine.[18]

In the months that followed the end of the war the American intelligence community, along with certain career bureaucrats, discovered that they could operate outside both the law and human morality. In the name of national security they could form their own private agendas, count on each other for secret favors, and conspire without fear of discovery or retribution. In fact, they could become a government within themselves. All they had to do was feed the politicians what they wanted or needed to hear, and at the same time keep their actual activities secret, both from unsympathetic elected officials, and from the American people.

The effort to hide the existence of Unit 731 from the public and the branches of government mandated to care for veterans was successful for forty years. As the few surviving former POWs that were held in Mukden and Pingfan came forward to the Veterans Administration claiming war-related disabilities that were cropping up with age, they were denied benefits by the government because the claims could not be substantiated. "There are no records of such an incident taking place," claimed the VA. Without written documentation that completely reported the incident at the time and the names of the people involved, the government would not honor any claim. It was because of this that the veterans such as Pappy Whelchel and Greg Rodriguez banded together and organized a coordinated effort to bring the matter before Congress. It took a Congressional investigation to declassify the records. If it had not been for these men coming forward, the existence of Unit 731, its crimes and the government coverup would never have been disclosed.

The former human guinea pigs of Mukden, shunned by the very government that sent them to war, were ironically forced by that same government to open a window to a hidden kingdom seldom glimpsed by the outside world. And it was only one window of a very large castle.

Part II

More Human Guinea Pigs

"They had been starved to death. Their arms were just little sticks, their legs had practically no flesh on them at all."

Col. James L. Collins
Infantry officer in relief
of Nordhausen concentration camp.

"We worked in the center of the mountain with no air, and just had one small piece of bread and margarine to eat all day. It was horrible."

Yves Beon, member of
French Resistance held
as slave laborer in V-2 factory.

"If any specialists who are brought to this country are subsequently found to be listed as alleged war criminals, they should be returned to Europe for trial"

JCS directive in reference to
Operation ***Paperclip***.

Chapter 3

Weapons Of Terror

Reaching the top of its parabolic trajectory of over sixty miles above the earth, the terrible missile nosed over slightly and began to arc toward its target. Its mighty 600,000 horsepower rocket motor was silent now, having cut off just a few minutes after launch. As it fell, the thirteen ton missile began picking up speed. Within seconds it was traveling at over 3,500 miles per hour, five times the speed of sound, and did so with virtually no noise signature discernible below. For the people who went about their daily business in the Chiswick area in West London, there would be no warning of what was to come.

From the ground, it first appeared as a dot in the sky. Then, if anyone had noticed, it quickly grew into a tiny needle-shaped object that fell almost straight down. Within seconds of first appearing, the tail fins would have been recognizable just before it disappeared below the city's skyline and impacted with a tremendous explosion.

Amid the scream of air raid and fire brigade sirens, panicked Londoners grabbed their children and elderly and raced for air raid shelters. No one knew what had happened, but all were sure whatever it was, it had been brought about by the Germans. Why had there been no warning? Where was the RAF? Why was there no sound of falling bombs or the distinctive putt-putt of the Doodle Bugs?

It was September 8th, 1944. Londoners had almost become accustomed to the constant bombardment of the little V-1s, the stubby-winged buzz-bombs that initiated Hitler's *Vergeltungswaffen*, weapons of vengeance program, but this was something new.[19]

When the smoke had cleared and the wounded and dead removed from the scene, the RAF experts came in and examined the area. What they saw was incredible. The warhead, carrying over a ton of high explosive, had reduced buildings in the immediate area to rubble, shattered others at the farthest radius of the blast, started fires, and had created a gigantic crater at the point of impact. What they were witnessing was the results of the first V-2 ballistic rocket fired against Britain.

By war's end, almost 1,000 V-2s had been launched on England. Over 500 were targeted for, and reached London, causing nearly 10,000 casualties. And when the V-1 and V-2 launching sites in France and the Low Countries were overrun by Allied troops, the Germans moved their installations beyond Allied reach and began launching rockets at Liege and Antwerp. These attacks killed 8,000 Belgians and injured more than 23,000. There was no question that this new long-range missile would influence not only the conduct of this war, but the next.[20]

By late June of 1944, Hitler's Fortress Europe began to crumble. A three sided vise had begun to squeeze the Nazi empire with men, weapons and material. On the south, the American 5th Army had taken Anzio, Salerno, advanced to the Rapido river, fought through Cassino and had taken Rome. The British Eighth Army, having by-passed Rome, drove the German Tenth Army ever northward.

In the west, the Allies had landed in France at Normandy and were pushing eastward, toward Germany. At the same time, the Red Army was engaged in a monstrous offensive that was to take it to Berlin. The *Wehrmacht*, *Luftwaffe*, and *Waffen SS* were involved in a massive fighting withdrawal, trading ground for blood. If the situation continued to deteriorate, Germany had little hope of survival.

It was from this chaos and ruin that Hitler decided upon the last-ditch efforts that he felt would turn the tide of battle in the Reich's favor. His plans included his most terrible secret weapons, weapons that by their shear destructive power would in modern terminology be known as "force multipliers." But the inventory was not as great as he had been led to believe. Many weapons, such as Germany's atomic bomb, were still under development. Other projects, such as jet aircraft and extra-long range artillery, were in their infancy but were slowly, though sporadically, becoming operational.

Leading the pack were the German rocket programs that had completed their initial development stages and had gone into the production phase. Unlike the nuclear physicists on the atomic bomb project, who had labored under such secrecy that they had been compartmentalized into fragmented cells that often wasted valuable research time in duplicated effort, the rocket scientists had been centralized under the firm leadership of one man: SS General Walter Dornberger.

Dornberger, an experienced artillery officer and professional engineer, had been assigned to head the rocket research project at Peenemunde, on the coast of the Baltic Sea. His SS connections proved advantageous in cutting red tape, and his personal influence with Hitler had been invaluable when seeking favorable attention in matters of importance, such as machinery, parts, fuel and labor.

Under Dornberger, Peenemunde had grown into an impressive rocket research center and factory. But in 1943, the facility was discovered by the Allies who promptly planned and executed a large-scale bombing raid that wreaked havoc on the facility. This attack not only demonstrated to the German staff the vulnerability of the location, but the possibility that a similar raid could cost them their dearest commodities, their scientists.

Dornberger realized that to protect both the personnel and the manufacturing facilities, rocket production had to be moved. He selected a secluded location in the Harz mountains of central Germany, near Nordhausen. Using slave labor provided by the nearby concentration camp at Dora, a huge underground network of tunnels were hewn out of solid rock. The tunnels were then filled with machine tools, assembly lines, rooms for laboratories and offices, and railroad tracks to move parts and completed rockets from one section to another. The new factory, named *Mittelwerke*, was a marvel of human engineering.

And a spectacle of human tragedy.

After the construction was completed, a labor force was required on the assembly lines to mass-produce the V-2s. To provide this force, the Germans once again turned to the SS at Dora who happily provided more prisoners. This was not a new technique for Dornberger. He had used the same method of providing a work force for Peenemunde when he utilized 10,000 prisoners from the concentration camp at Karlhagen to construct that facility. But the conditions and the work at Nordhausen were far more harsh than those encountered at the above-ground base at Peenemunde. Besides the cold, the brutal treatment and the lack of medical attention, the prisoners were required to work exhaustingly long hours on a starvation diet. One prisoner who managed to survive the hell of Mittelwerke stated that the normal diet was one piece of moldy black bread a day and if lucky, a bit of margarine. Those that did not die of disease or exposure starved to death. And when they died, they were simply dragged outside to the crematories and replaced by other inmates. In the two years of Mittelwerke's existence, over 20,000 prisoners lost their lives at the Dora/Nordhausen project.

In the winter of 1945, U.S. Army Colonel James L. Collins, who was leading an infantry unit in its advance through that sector, received an odd radio message from his forward units. "Colonel, you'd better get up here and see what we've got. It's terrible."

Collins rode up to the head of the column, bouncing over the rutted, pockmarked dirt road until he reached the designated location. He was horrified at the sight that greeted him. Near the cave-like entrance to a large hill, over 6,000 bodies covered the ground. He stopped and stared. Row after row of stick-like human forms lay stacked in rows like so much cord wood. Collins dismounted his Jeep and walked among the dead. It was obvious that all had been starved, but it was also apparent that many had been sadistically beaten, and several shot.

Besides the pungent odor of rotting bodies, a strange thick smell of burnt flesh hung in the air, drifting low over the valley from the chimneys of the crematoriums at Dora. The Americans stood frozen in shock. In all of the scenes of war they had witnessed in their advance across Europe, they had never encountered such a spectacle. They felt as if they had blundered into the lowest level of Dante's *Inferno*.

As the soldiers' shock turned to rage, they began to investigate further. First they found the crematorium furnaces with their doors still hanging open with partially burned bodies still stacked inside. Other skeletal forms lay stacked nearby waiting their turn. The coals were still hot. It appeared that the SS personnel who had been busily shoving the evidence of their crimes into the ovens had barely escaped the American advance, and they couldn't have gone far.

Armed search parties were sent out into the surrounding mountains and forests to track down the criminals while other soldiers cautiously entered the "cave." Inside they found Middelwerke, and the V-2s.

Chapter 4

Operation Paperclip: Grabbing The Nazi Scientists

The War Crimes units arrived at the same time as another group of American officers, a secret ordnance technical intelligence team under Major James Hamill. As the War Crimes unit, led by Major Herschel Auerbach, searched the surrounding hills and villages for those responsible for the deaths of the Dora prisoners, Hamill and his crew began to strip the facility of documents, V-2 rockets, technical drawings and anything else of scientific value, including the scientists responsible for the project.

But as Hamill and his men searched Mittelwerke, interviewing former prisoners, guards and technicians, it became apparent that he and Auerbach were searching for the same people. Auerbach's military police had located Mittelwerke's Technical Director, Albin Sawatzki, who the prisoners had fingered as one of the chief antagonists, and had imprisoned him in a make-shift pen in the camp yard. Under questioning, Sawatzki identified both SS personnel and members of the various scientific teams. He named the director of production, Arthur Rudolph, and the general manager, Georg Rickhey, and told the American officers where they could likely be found. He further admitted that Rudolph in particular was responsible for the prisoners work schedules and treatment.

Rickhey was quickly located and arrested. But before he could be brought before a war crimes tribunal, he was released. It seemed that the technical and scientific recovery teams wielded more power than the justice teams. Rickhey, as were his soon-to-follow cohorts, was considered a valuable commodity that now fell into the category of Spoils of War.

And as with the Japanese medical officers involved in the Manchuria experiments, the crimes committed by certain Germans who held expertise that might prove of future value to the American government would be overlooked.

It was called Operation *Paperclip*. In actuality it was a treasure hunt. It was a secret program devised by the U.S. military to track down and recruit Nazi scientists, recover technical booty, and spirit both out of Europe for service in the United States. It was the American answer to the Russian efforts to the same end. There were no delusions on either side concerning an emerging geo-political realignment between capitalism and communism that would form the post-war world. It was a matter of forgetting recent events, ignoring past crimes, and forging ahead with a new arms race. The only problem was that it was illegal.[21]

At first, Paperclip's mission was to locate the scientists and the technology, bring both back to the U.S., debrief them, then return them to Germany to answer any accusations brought up by the Nuremberg investigators. But it did not take long for the upper level players in the Joint Intelligence Committee (JIC), the Exploitation Branch under Army Intelligence (G-2), the Joint Intelligence Objectives Agency (JIOA), and the OSS (Office of Strategic Services) to determine that returning the Nazis to Germany was not advantageous to the intelligence community. To do so would not only make them available to trial, but to the Russians who, since the war in Europe ended in May of 1945, had also been busily rounding up every scrap of German technology they could find.

Endorsed by President Harry Truman, Paperclip went into high gear just as the Nuremburg trials were in full swing. As Nazi warlords were being given death sentences for war crimes and atrocities that included the massive deaths attributed to the concentration camps, the very people who were directly involved with thousands of those very same deaths were being protected by the covert community within the U.S. government.

It was a matter of national security. Just as it was when General Shiro Ishii was tracked down and offered a deal in Japan, the Nazi technical people were similarly approached. They could save themselves by agreeing to move to the United States where they could not only be protected from prosecution, but continue to work on their various projects. Or, they could answer for their misdeeds at Nuremburg. For the Germans, there was little choice. For the military-industrial conglomerate, it was a bonanza. The Allies were astounded at the incredible advances the German scientists had made in the realms of weapons development, physiological experiments, communications, aircraft development, chemical and biological warfare and other very specialized sciences.

For example, the German aviation industry had made drastic advances in jet propulsion and aircraft design. When Nazi Germany fell, models of strange new streamlined aircraft with swept wings of various configurations were found that were far in advance of anything the Allies had ever seen. New designs of turbojet engines were discovered that produced more power at a lighter weight than any in the Allied inventory. Rocket planes stood ready for flight that could out-climb and outrun any aircraft then available to the U.S., Great Britain or Russia. And there was more.

Besides the V-1 and V-2, the Peenemunde team had developed a very capable small liquid fueled missile known as the *Wasserfall* that could reach an altitude of 55,000 feet. Another design, the *Schmetterling* anti-aircraft missile, incorporated the features of the Hs 293 glider bomb, had a 52 pound warhead, two solid-fuel booster rockets and a liquid-fuel engine which could drive it to a height of 45,000 feet, far higher than any conventional aircraft of the time.[22]

The Messerschmidt Me-262 twin-jet fighter proved devastating in air combat, and had it not been misused by Hitler who demanded that it be used for attack/bombing missions, might have delayed the outcome of the war. In just one aerial engagement, the Me-262s attacked a flight of B-17s and destroyed fourteen within twenty minutes. The capabilities of German jets and the advances made in this area were not lost on the American aerospace industry.

Other weapons were equally amazing. The multi-barrel rocket launcher known as the *Nebelwerfer*, capable of launching chemical weapons, had participated in the invasion of Poland and terrorized the Russian army on the Eastern Front. A Brigade of these launchers could fire 108 rounds in ten seconds, and 648 rounds in 90 seconds.

As for artillery, the spectrum of weapons was amazing. The inventory included a super long-range multi-chambered cannon that sent a projectile down a barrel which automatically added an additional explosive charge behind the round as it passed each successive chamber, and a 80 centimeter (32" bore) railway gun known as *Gustav*.

But of more importance to the scientific search teams were the weapons of greatest range and greatest effect. The missiles, the germs, and the chemicals.

Of common knowledge is the death gas, Zyklon B. Zyklon B, the nerve agent manufactured by the German industrial giant I.G. Farben in Gendorf, was used in the concentration camps to murder millions of Jews, Gypsy's, Slavs, Poles and other "sub-humans." But lesser known to those outside the military and covert communities is the existence of three other deadly nerve gasses: Tabun, Sarin and Soman. These gases were so much more effective than the mustard agents stockpiled by the Allies that they quickly became the new super-secret chemical agents for the Cold War, for both sides. American picked Sarin, while the Soviet Union chose Tabun as their new chemical weapons. The reason for the choice was simple. A joint team of American, British and Canadian experts, headed by Commander A.K. Mills of the British Ministry of Aircraft Production, utilizing intelligence gathered during the war, discovered a chemical warfare experimental station used by the Luftwaffe, which led them to several other similar sites. In the end, the group was able to determine that Tabun, at one factory alone, was being produced at a rate of 1,000 tons a month. This particular factory, located at Dyhernfurth, was captured by the Russians, intact.

At the Wehrmacht's experimental gas station at Raubkammer, Mills' teams discovered evidence of massive human experimentation involving chemical agents. In one instance, over 4,000 photographs were discovered depicting mustard gas experiments on the skin of what appeared to be either political or concentration camp prisoners. Records showed that several of the prisoners had died because of the injuries that had been inflicted by the chemicals.

Further searching produced the people responsible. SS Brigadier General Walter Schieber, who had been in charge of the chemical industry under Albert Speer, was located in a detention camp. General Walter Hirsch, head of the Wehrmacht's chemical warfare section and thirteen cohorts were captured within weeks after the fall of Berlin. Interrogation of these people and others led the searchers to virtually every chemical warfare expert in the Third Reich. At least those not captured by the Russians.

In the search for the Nazi nuclear physicists responsible for Germany's efforts to develop an atomic bomb, a team headed by Lieutenant Colonel Boris Pash, former security officer over the U.S.'s Manhattan Project, stumbled onto something else of interest. The team, code-named "Alsos," discovered that a major biological warfare research base was located at the University of Strasbourg. Here, they found evidence that the University's head of biological warfare research, Eugen von Haagen, had deliberately infected Natzweiler concentration camp prisoners with spotted fever, killing several. Other professors at the university performed similar chemical and biological experiments on human subjects, chief among them the official SS representative, Professor August Hirt. Hirt, who provided the human guinea pigs for the experiments from various concentration camps, was known for his huge collection of human skulls which were gleaned from bodies sent to Strasbourg by Adolf Eichmann.

Hitler's chief of biological warfare was Kurt Blome, who had constructed the first biological warfare laboratory at the personal request of SS Reichsfuhrer Heinrich Himmler. Himmler, along with Blome, had decided on their own that biological agents would be deployed against Allied troops on both fronts as soon as the bacteria and viral agents could be identified, mass produced, and a suitable vector chosen. But like Unit 731, the Germans were having developmental and research problems in the BW field. Nevertheless, advances were made. But before any BW agents could be deployed, the laboratory was captured by the Russians.

German medical experimentation on concentration camp prisoners has been well-documented. Bizarre cases of experiments on various races, involving susceptibility to diseases, climates, diet and pain, abound. Attempts to transplant organs, change eye color, and even blood type, most all resulting in death, have been noted to have occurred in several camps. But some of the most incredible experiments involved "research" aimed at survival of Luftwaffe aircrews.

In a secret project that parallels that of Ishii's Unit 731, the Germans experimented with cold. The chief concern over pilots shot down over the North Atlantic was water temperature. Hypothermia could set in within minutes, often seconds, and if not checked, would result in death. Even if a flyer could be rescued quickly, there was still a question of survival if his body temperature had already dropped significantly. To understand more about possibilities of hypothermic survival and revival, the German doctors undertook a series of human experiments. The location chosen was Dachau.

Under the guidance of Professor E. Holzlohner of Kiel University, several doctors, including one Dr. Sigmund Rascher, conducted freezing experiments. This was done by immersing prisoners in freezing water and waiting until various limbs were almost frozen. They then pulled the victims from the vats and attempted to revive the various body parts. They also timed the freezing process to see how long it took a man to freeze to death in water. The success of such experiments can be summed up by the reactions of the members of the U.S. Army's 363rd Medical Battalion, 42nd Infantry Division, when they entered Experimental Block 5 at Dachau. Besides an overwhelming stench, the young soldiers found heads, arms, legs, torsos, and organs of every description lying about like so much human refuse. As Colonel Walter J. Fellenz, commander of the liberators stated, "We had opened the gates of hell."

As soon as the scientific investigation teams found out about Dachau, they swarmed in like flies. Thousands of documents bore mute testimony to what had gone on inside the electrified fences and wooden buildings. To the average soldier, Dachau was a house of horrors. But to the scientific discovery teams, it was a gold mine. Of interest to the aerospace specialists were the same subjects that concerned the Luftwaffe doctors. Besides the freezing experiments, tests wherein sea water was forced down the throats of prisoners to see how long they could live if stranded on a life raft at sea, and other experiments that tested the human body's ability to withstand high altitudes without oxygen were of supreme interest to the technology scouts. All of these gruesome programs subjected the victims to excruciating pain, and in most instances, resulted in death.[23]

Most of these aeromedicine experiments came under the auspices of Colonel Hubertus Strughold, head of the Luftwaffe's Institute for Aviation Medicine in Berlin. Though investigators later determined that most of the information gleaned from the Nazis regarding the freezing, altitude and pressure tests was of little value in the long run, the Allies had already progressed beyond these "scientific achievements", Strughold was saved from prosecution at Nuremburg by U.S. intelligence.

And there were others. But the best known examples of the fruits of Paperclip in the months following World War II, and into the 1950s and 60s, were the German rocket scientists and aeronautical engineers.

By the spring of 1946, the policy makers in the State-War-Navy Coordinating Committee (SWNCC) were in a quandary. Besides having to deal with Ishii and the former Unit 731 personnel, they were now faced with handling the proceeds of Paperclip. President Truman, after giving permission to import German scientists, made it clear, at least to the American public, that no war criminals were to be brought into the country. But the SWNCC, by way of its various intelligence organs, was quickly discovering that finding suitable German scientists who were not Nazis and were not suspected of war crimes or atrocities were few and far between. Almost every scientist and engineer was a member of the Nazi party, and many held memberships in three or four other Nazi organizations. Most of the higher ranking scientists and technicians were members of either the SS or SA. Almost all had either performed experiments on prisoners or had participated in the development and deployment of weapons of terror specifically used to attack the civilian population. It was becoming increasingly apparent to the various entities within the covert intelligence community that something would have to be done outside of the presidential directive to get these people into the U.S. while at the same time appearing to follow the rules.

In August of 1946, Acting Secretary of State Dean Acheson sent a copy of SWNCC 257/22, the revised Paperclip policy, to President Truman. According to the policy, the selected German scientists would be under military custody and control. They would be entering the country without visas, and after the War Department screened their backgrounds, and the State Department approved them, they would be offered contracts with either the military or private employment. Of interest is the section regarding political background:

"No member found by the Commanding General, USFET, to have been a member of the Nazi party *and* more than a nominal participant in its activities, or an active supporter of Nazism or militarism shall be brought to the U.S. hereunder." [Author's emphasis]

According to the revised 257/22, it was now acceptable to have been a Nazi, provided that one did not participate in too many of the party's activities.

On September 3rd, Truman, under the recommendation of Acheson, signed the document.[24] Now it was a matter of making sure that no overtly ardent Nazis, especially those with obvious backgrounds that would fall under the category of war crimes, were on the recruiting lists or were already in the country.

At this point, the Paperclip staff went totally out of bounds. Among those recruited and brought to the U.S. were such men as:

* SS General Walter Dornberger, former director of the V-2 operation at Peenemunde who used 10,000 slave laborers from the Karlshagen concentration camp in the construction and operation of the rocket site. Dornberger was first assigned to Wright Field, then later went to work for Bell-Textron and became the chief lobbyist for Bell Helicopter before and during the Johnson administration, and the Vietnam War.

* SS Major Werner von Braun, who headed the rocket program at Peenemunde and joined the SS at the personal request of Heinrich Himmler. Von Braun, along with 100 other top Nazi rocket technicians, was sent to Fort Bliss, Texas, near the White Sands Missile Range in New Mexico where he worked for Army Ordnance and General Electric in developing the Hermes II missile. He was later assigned to Redstone Arsenal at Huntsville, Alabama, and was also directly responsible for the army's Redstone battlefield rocket and the Jupiter IRBM. By July of 1960, NASA acquired von Braun's team to form the nucleus of the Marshall Space Flight Center

at Huntsville. There, he and his team developed the larger Saturn I rocket, and the follow-on Saturn IB that carried the first astronauts to the moon. In 1970, von Braun became NASA's deputy associate administrator for planning, then in 1972, he left NASA to become vice-president of engineering and development at Fairchild Industries in Germantown, Maryland.

* Kurt Debus, former member of the SS and SA who joined the SS in 1939 and was assigned SS# 426559. Debus was responsible for using concentration camp prisoners from Dora as slave laborers at the V-2 factory at Mittelwerke. He later became the first deputy director of the Kennedy Space Center at Cape Canaveral for NASA.

* Kurt Blome, who established the BW research center for Himmler and who exposed concentration camp prisoners to plague by inoculation, was acquitted of war crimes at Nuremburg in 1947, brought to Camp David, Maryland, and quickly hired by the U.S. Army Chemical Corps to work on biological warfare.

* Major General Walter Schreiber, who assigned doctors to experiment on prisoners and funded the projects, was brought into the country and put to work at the Air Force School of Medicine at Randolph Field, Texas.

* Arthur Rudolph, director of operations at Mittelwerke where 20,000 workers died from starvation, beatings, and executions, and who had been a member of the Nazi party since 1931, was hired by NASA and assigned to work on the Saturn rocket program.

* Luftwaffe Colonel Hubertus Strughold, who as wartime head of the Luftwaffe's Institute for Aviation Medicine in Berlin oversaw the freezing experiments, was brought to the United States to head the new Air Force School of Aviation Medicine at Randolph Field. Two years later he was placed in charge of the new Department of Space Medicine.

* Hans Trurnit, who worked with Professor Holzlohner of the University of Kiel in conducting the freezing experiments at Dachau, and who was a member of the Nazi party and four other Nazi organizations, was brought to the U.S. Army's chemical warfare arsenal at Edgewood, Maryland, to work in the toxicology laboratory.

* Friedrich Hoffmann, who as a chemist had synthesized poison gases and toxins for the Luftwaffe's Technical Research Institute and the University of Wuerzburg's Chemical Warfare Laboratory, was sent to Edgewood to work on poison gasses.

* Konrad Schaefer, the German desalinization expert who experimented with means of converting sea water into a drinking water that resulted in two experimental programs involving force-feeding the treated sea water to inmates at Dachau, killing several. He was brought to the United States to work under Strughold at the School of Aviation Medicine.

And there were hundreds more. In all, over 1,800 former Nazis and 1,700 dependents were spirited out of Europe, away from prosecution at Nuremburg, and illegally smuggled into the United States to work for the U.S. government and private industry.

And it was easy to do. The covert community had discovered that only three things had to be done: "cleanse" each man's file of incriminating information, classify his case at a security level high enough to keep anyone outside of the intelligence community from gaining access to the individual or his records, and finally, label it all a matter of National Security.

Konrad Schaefer, for example, had been a defendant at Nuremburg. But the JIOA Director, Colonel Daniel Ellis, recommended his immigration to the State Department and told them that the JIOA had investigated Schaefer's background and had found nothing in his past that indicated that he was a Nazi or had committed any crimes.

Werner von Braun, originally evaluated as a dedicated Nazi and his file noted: "Subject is regarded as a potential security threat by the Military Governor," received a new security evaluation that stated: "No derogatory information is available on the subject...It is the opinion of the Military Governor that he may not constitute a security threat to the United States."

Arthur Rudolph's file was even worse. He was described at first evaluation as being "100% Nazi, dangerous type, security threat. Suggest internment." But JIOA created a new dossier that stated there was "...nothing in his records indicating that he was a war criminal, an ardent Nazi or otherwise objectionable."

As for Major General Walter Schreiber, whose file noted that he had assigned doctors to experiment on concentration camp prisoners and had handled the funding for the projects, was presented to the State Department as having a clean bill of health. No mention was made of the evidence presented against him at Nuremburg. It would not be until 1952, when newspaper reporter Drew Pearson publicized the Nuremberg evidence, that the true story behind Schreiber's war record came to light. He was quickly provided a visa and hustled off to Argentina.

Another Nazi, Siegfried Ruff, was even less fortunate. The former expert on high altitude experiments, who had participated in the Dachau high and low pressure chamber experiments that resulted in the deaths of 80 prisoners, failed to reach America. Even though sponsored by Colonel Robert Benford, the Army Air Force's Aero Medical Center's commander, and promised a job in America by the Air Force, his chances for clandestine entry were squelched when his wartime atrocities were exposed by reporter Pearson. In Benford's view, "the Air Force lost a great man." But these cases were exceptions. In the majority of instances, the conspiracy to protect and import the former Nazis was incredibly successful. In the opinion of 1947 JIOA director Bosquet Wev, there was no reason to "beat a dead Nazi horse."

World War II was over. The Cold War had just begun. For the soldiers, sailors and airmen coming home, it was time to take off the uniform and get back to living. It was time to forget the horrors of war that they had witnessed.

For the intelligence community, it was business as usual. With a new twist. The men who had participated in the various technical recovery operations had discovered a new-found power. They had found the means of going around the law, past the wishes (and orders) of the elected officials in government, and under the red tape of bureaucracy. They had come to the realization that they could do anything they wanted, provided it was classified above Top Secret, compartmentalized on a need-to-know basis, and done so for reasons of National Security.

They had found that they could be, when necessary, a government within themselves. They had found that they could operate above the law.

Chapter 5

The Gehlen Org: From OSS to CIA

During World War II, the OSS had infiltrated nearly two hundred agents into the Third Reich, almost three times as many as had been sent by Britain. Its operatives were inserted into almost every militarily significant city from Vienna to Berlin, Munich to Bremen. In all, over 70 cities had been salted with OSS spy teams by war's end.

The casualties had been heavy, but not exorbitant. Of the total number of agents that worked behind German lines, only thirty-six had been killed or captured. And of these, the majority were lost in the waning days of the war in the vicinity of the Last Redoubt of Bavaria. It was at this time that almost every civilian found on the road by the Gestapo was detained and questioned as to why they were not in uniform for the Fatherland, or at least under arms in a home defense unit. Even the best cover stories provided to the young OSS agents might fail such a test. Many did.

Still, the organization as a whole was remarkable in its conception, implementation and execution. The bravery of the field teams was beyond question. They were a necessary entity, brought about by drastic circumstances. But after Germany surrendered, the need for specially trained spy-commandos was considered by the White House to be nil. In fact, Truman considered the OSS a peacetime liability.

In a letter to General Donovan, he wrote: "I want to take this occasion to thank you for the capable leadership you have brought to a vital wartime activity in your capacity as Director of Strategic Services. You may well find satisfaction in the achievements of the Office and take pride in your own contribution to them." He then promptly took steps to abolish the service, dividing the few necessary peacetime functions between the State Department and the War Department.

But from the ashes rose a new organization. One much more powerful, and sinister. And it would be an organization that would grow much faster than anyone could ever dream. For a very good reason.

On April 1, 1945, a convoy of eleven trucks wound its way through Bavaria, traveling south from Berlin, away from the advancing Red Army who was at that moment conducting their own *blitzkrieg* through eastern Germany. Aboard the trucks were hand-picked German intelligence officers who guarded a very special cargo. Inside crates that had been carefully stacked and hidden under the canvas tops of the trucks were the most valued prizes of the head of German military intelligence: the files on Russia.

The purpose of the convoy was not to transport the documents to the Last Redoubt, but to remove them from harm's way altogether for use as future bargaining chips with the advancing Allies. For the files, which were the fruit of five years of intensive intelligence gathering on Russia, were now the personal property of a youthful 40 year-old general named Reinhard Gehlen. And with them, he planned on bargaining his way to a very special arrangement, with the Americans.

Reinhard Gehlen, known as Hitler's spy master, had overseen a huge organization of more than 3500 spies scattered throughout both Eastern Europe and the Soviet Union. His top officers, Nazi zealots who had committed some of the most atrocious crimes of the war, had proven very effective in their efforts to extract information from prisoners and insert agents into Russia. The spies that were sent into the Soviet Union infiltrated not only the Red Army, but even the Soviet General Staff. The records Gehlen had amassed over the previous four years would be invaluable to the Allies, especially a select group of very interested Americans. Now it was only a question of saving the files and making the proper contacts on the American side. Gehlen was confident a suitable arrangement could be made for not only himself, but his organization.

Gehlen had been planning this move for months. He noted in his memoirs that, "Early in 1944 I told my more intimate colleagues that I considered the war lost and we must begin thinking of the future...and plan for the approaching catastrophe."[25]

And prepare they did. Within the crates were documents that detailed roads, bridges, factories, military installations, airfields, water supplies, communications sites and virtually every item of interest inside Russia and the satellite countries to a military planner. But of more interest were the hundreds of files he had amassed on the personnel at the top of the Soviet military machine including the Soviet High Command. Much of this information was derived by interrogation, torture and starvation of selected officers and soldiers of some four million prisoners taken on the Eastern Front. Those who did not cooperate were summarily executed. Those that did were often executed afterwards when they were deemed of no further value. It was for these reasons that Gehlen and his officers were adamant about being captured by American forces. If they were taken by the Russians, they knew what would happen to them.

Two months before Germany surrendered, Gehlen made his move. Along with a group of his most trusted senior officers, he microfilmed the vast horde of documents and had them sealed in water-tight metal drums. These drums were covertly removed from army headquarters in Berlin and transported to secret cache sites throughout the Austrian Alps. It was well for Gehlen that this effort was made. For when the convoy of trucks transporting the hard copies of the files reached central Germany, the convoy was spotted by Soviet planes and bombed. Five of the eleven trucks were destroyed, and with them, the files they carried.

Gehlen and his officers, after abandoning Berlin to make their way toward Switzerland and the Americans, were, according to official history, indeed fortunate. When they finally found an American unit to surrender to, instead of running into a by-the-book American officer who might have offered them up to the Russians in accordance with the Yalta agreements, they encountered Captain John Bokor. Boker, who was described as a pragmatist who regarded the Soviets as the next potential enemy, impressed Gehlen as a person who, "...had no illusions about the way political events were turning. We became close friends."

Bokor, according to Gehlen's memoirs, ignored official policy. When he found out about the secret caches of records, he allegedly decided on his own to keep the matter confidential and quietly work to hand Gehlen, the records and the men of Gehlen's spy network over intact to the OSS. Then, according to Gehlen, Bokor quietly went around removing the names of Gehlen's men from the rosters of war criminals. Once this was accomplished, Gehlen turned part of his records over to Bokor who promptly spirited them away from the interrogation center without even Military Intelligence knowing of their existence. Within ninety days Boker had direct liaison and the personal support of General Walter Bedell Smith, Chief of Staff of the Allied Supreme Command (who later headed the CIA), and General Edwin Sibert, the highest ranking military intelligence officer in Europe. Quite a feat for a mere captain.

At the same time, Gehlen's existence in Allied hands quite coincidentally became known to General "Wild Bill" Donovan, head of the OSS, and his station chief in Europe, Allen Dulles. In August, Gehlen and three assistants were covertly flown to Washington and secreted away at Camp David for interviews with both Military Intelligence and the OSS. Apparently the OSS offered the best deal, for within a eighteen months the *Gehlen Org*, resurrected from the original Nazi spy network, had been installed in West Germany to act as the eyes and ears of the newly-created CIA.

The story that Captain Bokor, using great foresight and planning, managed all of these feats of clandestine operations on his own is too incredible to be true. It is not probable that a company-grade officer would risk his career to protect a Nazi war criminal, or put himself personally in jeopardy by wantonly violating international agreements. In any normal case, such activity would earn him a courts martial. It is even more improbable that Gehlen would stumble into the one American in a thousand that would quickly see the value in what Gehlen purported to offer and immediately begin work to protect not only Gehlen, but his officers.

What is more believable is that Gehlen had made these arrangements far in advance. By using certain trusted contacts within the German High Command who had both pre-war and current business dealings across national boundaries, Gehlen had coordinated a deal with a specified contact within the American intelligence community. Namely Allen Dulles.

Dulles knew Gehlen was coming. In April, one month before the war ended, and forty-five days before Gehlen surrendered to Bokor, Dulles ordered an aide to begin talks with the German general through intermediaries in Berlin.

While the Paperclip scientists were setting up shop in the U.S., Reinhard Gehlen began reestablishing his presence in West Germany. His organization, the *Gehlen Org*, quickly regained control of the majority of his former agents inside the Iron Curtain, and with the help of many of his former staff, put them back to work. Though he agreed not to hire any former Gestapo, SS or SD members, he sought them out and put them on the payroll, the *CIA*'s payroll, regardless of his promise. And the CIA did not stop him.

Among his recruits were Dr. Franz Six and Emil Augsburg. Six and Augsburg had been members of an SS mobile Death's Head killing squad that hunted down and killed Soviet Jews, intellectuals and partisans wherever they could be found. Six was known as a *Streber*, or Eager Beaver, for the enthusiastic manner in which he pursued his job. Gehlen also recruited the former Gestapo chiefs of Paris, France, and Kiel, Germany. Then, that not being enough, he hired Willi Krichbaum, the former senior Gestapo leader for southeastern Europe.

Gehlen was pleasantly surprised by what happened next. His new employer, the OSS, not only encouraged but financed an escape mechanism set up by Gehlen for former Nazis. The Gehlen Org established, with OSS help, "rat lines" to provide an underground escape network to be used by former war criminals to escape prosecution by German war crimes tribunals. By way of this organization, over 5,000 Nazis secretly made their way out of Europe to relocate around the globe.

Most went to South and Central America. The countries of choice were Argentina, Chile, Nicaragua and El Salvador. Within a few years after their arrival in these particular countries, the infamous right-wing government "death squads" made their first appearances. Of note in the expatriate community were such characters as Dr. Joseph Mengele, who specialized in crude genetic experiments on Jewish concentration camp inmates, and mass murderer Klaus Barbie, the infamous "Butcher of Lyons."

According to some sources, former OSS officer James Jesus Angleton, who later became CIA Chief of Intelligence, was the man responsible for providing the Nazis with new identities before their departure from the detainment camps. Angleton worked directly for Dulles.[26]

To satisfy his new employers, Gehlen realized that he had to produce information that was of value to Washington. He also realized that for an intelligence organization to be of value, and to justify a large budget, it had to have an entity that was considered a deadly threat to spy on. He knew that the Americans had little knowledge concerning both the Russians as a military machine, and what activities were transpiring behind the Iron Curtain. The Red Menace would fit the requirement of the ominous threat nicely. All Gehlen had to do was paint as bleak a picture of the situation as he could, and continue creating reports that indicated that the scenario was continually deteriorating. The more bad news he gave Washington, the more money he would have to work with. He knew that in peacetime, the only way to justify a large intelligence organization was to make sure there was always "an enemy at the gates."

He began by feeding information to Dulles, and consequently to Truman, that appeared to show that the Russians were poised to attack the West. He reported that the Soviet forces in eastern Europe were comprised of 208 crack assault divisions, most of which were high-speed capable motorized rifle and tank divisions. Such figures showed that the Communists outnumbered the Western forces by a ratio of ten-to-one.

Then, in early 1947, he reported to the fledgling CIA that his agents had noted subtle changes in Soviet billeting and leave policies, and that troops were being recalled for some unspecified reason. He alluded that this could be the beginning of a preparation phase for the suspected invasion.

This was followed by Gehlen's prediction that the Russians would move quickly once all troops and equipment had been activated and put into position for attack. It wouldn't be long until there was a Soviet *blitzkrieg*.

In actual fact, Gehlen's information could not have been further from the truth. By 1946, the Red Army was an over-extended, under-equipped, and exhausted force of combat-riddled units. Many of the battalions that had reached Berlin had done so on foot. There was not even sufficient motor transport to move one entire division without depriving another of its motorized assets. Almost half of the Red Army's transport was *horse drawn*. In addition to this, U.S. Army Intelligence had established that the majority of Soviet forces in Eastern Europe was bogged down in rebuilding the eastern zones, reorganizing security structures, and performing governmental administrative functions. According to the intelligence estimate, the Soviet ground and air forces would not be combat effective against the Western powers for at least the next decade.

The 10:1 Russian superiority figure that Gehlen referred to was unrealistic from the beginning. Gehlen well knew, as did Dulles and the other veteran OSS agents, that the Soviet divisional structure was far less in numerical manpower than its U.S. equivalent. A Soviet division was typically one third as strong as an American division. And its leadership was far less effective. Instead of being able to function in combat with flexibility by making on-the-spot field expedient decisions, the Soviet officers had to wait for orders from upper echelon before reacting to a change in the flow of battle. This fact in itself often caused the Soviets grievous losses, and even defeats, during land battles. The U.S. forces, on the other hand, encouraged battlefield decisions during the heat of conflict to be made at the lowest levels.

Still, the OSS, and the follow-on CIG (Central Intelligence Group which replaced the OSS), chose to conveniently believe Gehlen. Over 70% of the reports submitted to Washington on CIA stationary were simply Gehlen's words. According to a former CIA officer, "Gehlen's reports and analyses were sometimes simply retyped onto CIA stationary and presented to President Truman without further comment."[27]

The results of such activities were exactly what the intelligence community, and the military, wanted. Truman ceased cutting the military budget; increased spending for weapons research, military equipment, aircraft and the space program; ordered an increase in the development and construction of nuclear weapons; and most importantly to the young CIA, began pumping millions of dollars into the "black" budget for covert operations. In the ten years that followed the war, the CIA consumed over $200 million dollars of funds that did not have to be accounted for.

According to Victor Marchetti, former chief analyst on Soviet military capabilities and author of *The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence*, "The agency loved Gehlen because he fed us what we wanted to hear. We used his stuff constantly, and we fed it to everybody else: the Pentagon; the White House; the newspapers. They loved it." Marchetti further explained, "Gehlen had to make his money by creating a threat that we were afraid of, so we would give him more money to tell us about it. In my opinion, the Gehlen organization provided nothing worthwhile for understanding or estimating Soviet military or political capabilities in Eastern Europe or anywhere else."

The final result of all these cloak-and-dagger exercises was a reputed Cold War that lasted for almost half a century, and cost American taxpayers alone over $8 *trillion dollars*.

Peacetime intelligence gathering had become big business, profitable to not only the growing intelligence organizations, but to the defense industry and the investors who financed both it and the government.

Chapter 6

Edgewood Arsenal

While the American public was focusing on the space race and the feats of the NASA scientists, other experiments were underway that were hidden from all but those within a very select group. At two locations in Maryland, Edgewood Arsenal and Camp Detrick, clandestine research teams had been formed to explore the data coming back from Japan and Germany concerning chemical and biological warfare. Material provided by Ishii's Unit 731 personnel, who were busily compiling documents detailing their human experiments with BW, was arriving at Detrick. Data and chemicals found in Germany, along with the Paperclip scientists and technicians involved with the original experiments, were now in place at Edgewood Arsenal. At both locations, programs were quickly implemented to continue development of both biological and chemical weapons using this newly acquired knowledge and the talents of the Germans.

Edgewood Arsenal was the most secret military base in the continental United States. It is located in a secluded area of the Maryland woods, twenty miles northeast of Baltimore. Unlike the open military bases that are accessible to the public, Edgewood is surrounded by security fences, sensors and armed guards. What goes on behind the fences and walls is classified at the highest levels.

Edgewood is the Army's center for developing and testing chemical warfare agents. Everything from poison gasses to deadly liquids are developed there. The experiments began in 1922 when the Medical Research Division was created by the Chemical Warfare Service. The mission at that time was to work on defenses against chemical agents, especially the poison gasses developed by Germany in World War I. But defenses cannot be created until one understands the weapons. Edgewood quickly moved into the research and development of its own chemical weapons. In the early days, most of the experimentation concerned mustard gas, phosgene gas, and several other derivatives and combinations of poison gasses. But by the 1950s, Edgewood had progressed beyond poison gasses. The German Sarin and Tabun provided excellent nerve agents, and the earlier blister agents developed around mustard gas, and the choking agents, developed around phosgene and other chemicals, created a sufficient weapons inventory for any future war. Though more experiments would be conducted concerning riot control (choking) agents and various dioxins, Edgewood, in 1950, began exploring new horizons.

With the two German nerve gases satisfactorily filling the requirement for future chemical weapons, both the military and the CIA shifted Edgewood's doctors and chemists attention to a new area of interest. Mind control.

To understand the mentality at the time, one must realize that the old wartime intelligence agencies had undergone massive transformations and reorganizations. The Office of Strategic Services, or OSS, which was originally created by Franklin Roosevelt, had grown into a huge paramilitary organization that employed both spies and soldiers. The OSS was active in all theaters of the war and utilized people of both American and local nationality in the makeup of operational teams. By the end of the war, OSS head William J. "Wild Bill" Donovan had convinced Harry Truman of the need of a peace time counterpart to the OSS. Truman agreed, and in an effort to organize the myriad of intelligence organizations into a manageable entity, and create a central organization that would be responsible for collecting the intelligence from the various military service intelligence organizations, created the Central Intelligence Group (CIG).

When the OSS was disbanded in 1946, many of its duties and personnel were transferred to the State and War Departments. Other offices within the OSS simply ceased to exist. And some organizations, left intact for the time being but unassigned, seemed to drift in the backwaters of Washington like forgotten step-children. It was at this time that Navy Secretary James Forrestal decided that this state of affairs was counterproductive to the national defense. He retained New York lawyer Ferdinand Eberstadt to study the situation, compile a report that would define U.S. requirements in the field of intelligence, and submit it for review. Eberstadt concluded that the country needed an organization that could operate both in war and peace, able to wage either as required.

The CIG, created by Presidential order in 1946, came under the watchful eye of a four-man council made up of the secretaries of War, Navy and State and one representative of the President. The group, known as the National Intelligence Agency, became the link between the cloak-and-dagger set and the President.

The first director of the CIG was Admiral Sidney Souers. But Souers was not enthusiastic about the job and resigned within six months. He was replaced by the flamboyant Lieutenant General Hoyt Vandenberg, nephew of Senator Arthur Vandenberg and a war hero in his own right. Under Vandenberg, the CIG quickly grew in strength to over 300 men and women. Then in August, 1946, Vandenberg succeeded in gaining control of the former OSS Strategic Services Unit, the espionage and secret intelligence organization that had provided both commandos and spies. With this acquisition, the CIG grew to over 1300 personnelC600 of which were overseas.

Vandenberg went for more assets. He succeeded in pulling in the Office of Operations, which was responsible for collecting information from American volunteers overseas; the Foreign Broadcast Information Service, which provided an excellent means of disseminating ideology overseas; and had managed to establish a liaison with the State Department's code breaking office which later became the National Security Agency. By then, the CIG had grown to 2,000.

On September 18th, 1947, in an effort to further consolidate the fragmented intelligence machine, Truman signed the National Security Act of 1947. NSA 1947 gave birth to a new organization, built chiefly from the CIG, known as the Central Intelligence Agency. The act also established a governing body to replace the NIA known as the National Security Council (NSC). The NSC, chaired by the President, would be the direct line of communication between the White House and the CIA. To head the new CIA, Truman appointed Admiral Roscoe Hillenkoetter as its first director. Hillenkoetter, who had worked for Naval Intelligence in the Pacific, knew the value of both intelligence and secrecy and quickly set about creating an organization divided by departments, offices and compartments. As the Agency grew, so did its power. And the personnel who had served in the OSS and Military Intelligence during the war knew exactly how to use that power.

Truman, ever mindful of how power can corrupt, warned "this country wants no Gestapo under any guise." At the same time, he realized that unless the United States had an effective intelligence gathering network, the country might take back seat during the Cold War, and if the war turned hot, he didn't want another Pearl Harbor. The President could only hope that the CIA would do its job well, and not go beyond control. He had no idea what had transpired behind the scenes in the intelligence offices in the two years following World War II.

The Cold War led to an expansion of intelligence and asset gathering. Operation Paperclip, unknown to the White House, was still underway. It had supposedly been deactivated in 1948, but instead had merely gone underground. It would continue until 1973 before finally being discovered and disbanded.

In addition to Paperclip, a new JIOA project, which removed many of the restraints on Paperclip, was instituted. This new operation, codenamed National Interest, was designed to bring individuals into the U.S. that ranged from convicted Nazi war criminals to East Europeans of dubious backgrounds that the CIA considered of value. The only requirement to be met was that the acquisition was in the national interest.

There were two classes of acquisitions. The first and most visible were the Germans and Austrians who were of value to defense contractors, universities and private companies. The second, extremely secret, class concerned intelligence resources. Former spies, saboteurs and certain people having specific expertise in areas of value to the CIA were given safe haven in exchange for their services. These individuals were generally assigned to the super-secret Office of Policy and Coordination, otherwise known as the Office of Dirty Tricks.

In 1949, an act was passed to legally permit the CIA to import as many as 100 people per year "without regard to their inadmissibility under the immigration or any other laws." The only requirement was that the JIOA Governing Committee approve of the selections. Indeed a very convenient arrangement.

While the United States was reorganizing its intelligence capabilities, the Soviet Union was doing the same. In 1946, Moscow renamed all commissariats "ministries." The NKVD *(Narodnyi Komissariat Vnutrennikh Del*, People's Commisariat of Internal Affairs) became the Ministry of Internal Affairs *(Ministerstvo Vnutrennikh Del*), and the NKGB *(Narodnyi Kommissariat Gosudarstvennoi Besonasnosti*, People's Commissariat of State Security) became the Ministry of State Security (MGB). Each had grown extremely strong, and despite power struggles, had become a threat to American interests both at home and abroad.

In an operation quite similar to Paperclip, the MVD managed to locate and round up over 6,000 German scientists and technicians from the Russian-occupied zone in Germany and forcibly move both them and their families to the Soviet Union. It was these scientists that brought the USSR into the space age, developed the MiG fighter planes, and designed the modern Russian tanks and artillery pieces.

And some of the scientists, medical doctors and psychologists, gave the Soviets another weapon: mind control.

By the time the United States became embroiled in the Korean War, the Russians and Chinese had developed various methods of psychological influence which became popularly dubbed "brainwashing." American prisoners of war returned from Asia describing various methods of brain twisting and thought control attempted by the communists. Running the gamut from mandatory classes in "proper thinking" to physical torture, and from sleep deprivation to chemical injection, the North Koreans, Communist Chinese and Russian advisors attempted to gain the ability to dictate not only the mental thought processes, but the physical actions of the subjects. The fear of such attempts was capitalized upon in the novel *The Manchurian Candidate*. In that story, an American POW had been turned into a time bomb, an assassin waiting unwittingly for a special mental trigger to be pressed by a pre-programmed stimuli. In this instance, it was a particular playing card. Upon seeing the card, the man went into a zombie-like state and followed orders without question. Including the command to commit murder.

The Soviets were not the only government interested in mind control. A CIA memo from the chief of medical staff dated January 1952 stated:

> "...there is ample evidence in the reports of innumerable interrogations that the communists were utilizing drugs, physical duress, electric shock and possibly hypnosis against their enemies. We are forced by mounting evidence to assume a more aggressive role in the development of these techniques, but must be cautious to

> maintain strict inviolable control because of the havoc that could be wrought by such techniques in unscrupulous hands."

The author of this report was absolutely correct in his final warning. For as Colin Blakemore said, "The dream of every leader, whether a tyrannical despot or a benign prophet, is to regulate the behavior of his people."

Chapter 7

In Search Of The Manchurian Kandidate

It was codenamed MK/ULTRA. Its purpose was to determine what methods could be used to control personality behavior in human beings. It was the largest program of its kind ever attempted by an American intelligence agency. It may have been the only program.

In 1953, the Central Intelligence Agency, in coordination with Edgewood Arsenal and its German scientists, initiated experiments on human test subjects that included hypnosis, electroshock stimulus, extrasensory perception, sensory deprivation, subliminal suggestion, lobotomies, and various drugs. Of the drugs, those that came under the greatest scrutiny were the same hallucinogens and stimulants that found their way onto the streets of America during late 1950s and early '60s. They included marijuana, heroin, cocaine, amylnitrate, barbiturates, psilocybin mushrooms, mescaline, amphetamines, PCP, and most of all, lysergic acid diethylamide, LSD.

Within the barred windowed rooms and isolation wards at Edgewood, American servicemen and civilian "volunteers" underwent terrifying experiments. And in most cases, the test subjects did not know what kind of a chamber of horrors they had entered.

Master Sergeant James Stanley, a Fort Knox soldier who had volunteered to participate in an experimental program to test chemical warfare suits, found himself assigned to a room in which the furniture was bolted to the floor. Shortly after arrival, a doctor wearing a white coat handed Stanley a glass of clear liquid and ordered him to drink. "It's nothing more than water," he said.

Stanley, suspecting nothing, drank the liquid. Minutes later he lost his wits. Colors on the wall began to drift and run together, his body felt as if it was spinning and tumbling through the air, and he quickly lost all control of his reasoning. Then he became wild. In a fit of rage he began tearing at the door, trying to escape. With superhuman strength, he managed to break through the door and run down the hall screaming. When the drug finally wore off and he returned to the real world, he found himself physically restrained to his bed. The glass of water had been laced with a potent, mind altering dose of LSD-25.

Air Force Sergeant Lloyd Gamble, who also unwittingly participated in LSD experimentation at Edgewood, suffered recurring "trips" and flashbacks for two years afterwards. He became the victim of acute depression and even attempted suicide. In trying to find out later what had happened to him, he discovered that there was no information about the project available. It was not until 1975 that he became aware that he had taken LSD when the testing program became public after Congress convened hearings on the issue.[28]

To further test LSD, the CIA set up clandestine operations and fronts in both the U.S. and Canada. One such front was the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology, which was established at Cornell University medical school. This organization was empowered to give grants to institutions both in the U.S. and in Canada to experiment with LSD. The project itself was administered by the CIA's Technical Services staff. From 1953 to 1958, the various test centers under control of Technical Services administered LSD to over 1,000 servicemen and civilians. Though records regarding civilian tests no longer exist, having been deliberately destroyed by the CIA in 1975, evidence has surfaced which indicates more than 7,000 servicemen had become guinea pigs for LSD, PCP and mescaline. The majority of this number were tested at Edgewood, but the Army permitted other tests to be conducted at Fort Bragg, North Carolina; Fort McClellan, Alabama; Fort Benning, Georgia; and Dugway Proving Ground, Utah.

To entice soldiers and airmen to volunteer, they were told that they would be serving their country by helping with harmless experiments, and for their participation, they would receive an extra $1.50 per day in pay, a three day pass every weekend, and a letter of commendation. The actual cost to the government for the MK/ULTRA program and its various follow-on projects would top $110 million.

This money was doled out to such institutions as the University of Maryland, Johns Hopkins University, Louisiana State University, Indiana University, Baylor, New York University, Tulane, University of Colorado, University of Utah, University of Pennsylvania and the University of Washington. All of these academic institutions became contract researchers under the drug experimentation programs.

Dr. Ewen Cameron, the first president of the World Psychiatric Association, was an early experimenter on the program. Cameron, in his efforts to see if he could "wipe clean" the memories and minds of people by the use of drugs, experimented with Thorazine, Seconal, Nembutal, Veronal and Pheneregan. His subjects, under the influence of some of these drugs, sometimes slept for 30 day periods, during which time a recording would be played continually to see if a mind could be reprogrammed or influenced by subliminal suggestion.

For those experimenting with LSD, what becomes even more bizarre is the fact that the test subjects were given dosages that were sometimes more than 100 times what was required for one "trip." In an investigation by the U.S. Army's Inspector

General, it was discovered that the subjects were given doses of 150 to 200 micrograms, with the largest dose reported as 5,250 micrograms!

Even more frightening is the discovery that the CIA, in an operation codenamed Midnight Climax, gave LSD to the civilian population. According to a book titled *Acid Dreams: The CIA, LSD and the Sixties Rebellion*, the CIA set up bordellos in CIA safehouses in San Francisco, then spiked the drinks of customers with the hallucinogen. Then, by means of hidden cameras, the customer's actions were recorded.

It appears the CIA took the civilian tests a step further. On November 16, 1953, the CIA ordered ten kilos of LSD from the Swiss manufacturer, Sandoz Laboratories. This amount would provide *30 million doses!* Fearing skullduggery, Sandoz refused to take the order. The CIA then approached the Eli Lilly Company and asked the research department to attempt to crack the formula for LSD. A short time later, the scientists reported back that they had the formula and assured the Agency that "LSD would be available in tonnage quantities." One ton of LSD would yield over *2.5 billion doses.*

The National Mental Health's Addiction Research Center in Lexington, Kentucky, also became involved in the CIA's LSD research. Under the direction of Dr. Harris Isabell, the staff tested not only LSD, but scopolamine, rivea seed and bufonteine. In one LSD test, Isabell reported that seven subjects were administered the drug and all encountered a trip that lasted 77 days. Isabell was convinced that LSD held the secret to mind control and convinced the CIA that further experiments should be carried out at the University of Illinois Medical School, the University of Oklahoma, Mount Sinai Hospital, and Columbia University.

Meanwhile, back at Fort Detrick (upgraded from Camp status), an incident occurred that almost blew the cover of MK/ULTRA. Someone put seventy micrograms of LSD into a glass of Cointreau liquor and gave it to an unsuspecting civilian researcher, Dr. Frank Olsen. After the drug took effect, Olsen became very lively and animated. But the euphoric state did not last long and he soon entered a state of extreme depression. Olsen requested to see a psychiatrist, but was forbidden to do so by the Agency representatives. Instead, he was sent to Dr. Harold Abramson, a Mount Sinai immunologist, not even a psychologist. Four days later Olsen, in a frantic state of despair, dove through the window of his Washington Satler Hotel room and crashed onto the pavement below. He died instantly.

Though the police were summoned, agents forbade any type of investigation or autopsy. Olsen's family did not discover what had really happened until 1975 when the Rockefeller Committee revealed the actual circumstances surrounding Olsen's death.

Though ancillary and follow-on projects continued until 1975, MK/ULTRA ended officially in 1963. But during the MK/ULTRA years, according to a former CIA contract employee, the Agency set up a lab for underground chemists in the San Francisco Bay area in the early 1960s, and in 1967, released the formula for STP to the scientific community. STP, a chemical compound more powerful than LSD, became available on the streets of American within weeks of its release.

Linda Hunt, author of *Secret Agenda*, summed up MK/ULTRA and its Edgewood headquarters in these words: "In short, experiments on our own soldiers at Edgewood mirrored the horror stories that had unfolded in the dock of Nuremberg...Thousands of American soldiers, seven thousand of them between 1955 and 1975 alone, were used as unwitting guinea pigs in the tests. They were gassed, maced, and drugged in the search for the ultimate mind-control weapon."

The question that must be asked is: Did they find it?

According to some researchers, they did. Some theorists believe that selected field operatives and contract agents were programmed by the CIA to accomplish certain dangerous, possibly suicidal, objectives. The bizarre behavior of Lee Harvey Oswald, the assassination attempt on President Gerald Ford by Charles Manson family member Lynette "Squeaky" Fromme, the attempt on President Ronald Reagan by John Hinckley, the Jonestown, Guyana, mass suicide, and even David Koresh's control over his flock at Mount Carmel have been blamed on CIA mind control. Whether there is any substance to any of these claims is unknown. What is known, however, is the ability to control people by the combined use of drugs and psychological persuasion. An example of just this is the Sharon Tate and the LaBianca murders conducted by Charles Manson's "family."

Manson, a dedicated fan of the Beatles and amateur Acid Rock musician, saw hidden meanings in what many say are concealed messages in music. One example is a John Lennon song, wherein the title is said to be a coded reference to the drug, Lucy in the Sky with Diamonds. Lennon later wrote: "We must always remember to thank the CIA and the army for LSD. That's what people forget...They invented LSD to control people and what they did give us was freedom." Sixties acid guru Timothy Leary added: "The LSD movement was started by the CIA. I wouldn't be here now without the foresight of the CIA scientists." And finally, Allen Ginsberg questioned: "Am I the product of one of the CIA's lamentable, ill advised, or triumphantly successful experiments in mind control? [Has the CIA] by conscious plan or inadvertent Pandora's Box, let loose the whole LSD fad on the U.S. and the world?" By the evidence that is slowly surfacing through the efforts of former servicemen-experimentees and veterans groups, it appears that is exactly what happened.

Chapter 8

Operation Monarch and the Finders Case

On October 7th, 1995, I received a strange telephone call. The caller, a source with deep connections inside certain government agencies, asked only one question: Was I near the fax machine?

Three minutes later a series of pages began to arrive that would add a new chapter to my MK/ULTRA mind control research. A chapter that would expose an operation so bizarre that without the documentation that arrived, would be impossible to believe.

The cover sheet contained this lead-in:

"RE: The FINDERS File
Attached are a series of reports that have been leaked from a known and confirmed source inside Treasury. These documents are extremely disturbing, and explain a lot. Read every page starting at page one. Do NOT skip ahead, but study and remember every paragraph. The reason will become clear in the end. These documents are copies of the actual reports, complete with names, phone numbers, and letterhead. It has been checked out and is confirmed to be genuine. We believe this case is part of MK/SEARCH and MK/MONARCH. Both projects are follow-on sub-projects to the original MK/ULTRA. These reports will provide another piece of the international child kidnapping, pornography and satanic ritual abuse cases reported in Europe, Nebraska, and California. Use extreme caution who you show these reports to."

As I read each page of the reports, the significance of these documents began to come to light. What appeared to be a routine local child abuse case ended up being much, much more.

The case began in Tallahassee, Florida, on Thursday, February 5th, 1987, when the Tallahassee police department was notified by a concerned citizen that there appeared to be a case of child neglect or abuse occurring in a park in Tallahassee. The police responded to investigate, and what they found during their enquiry led them to call in a special unit of U.S. Customs which dealt with tracking and exposing international child pornography and white slavery cases.

The U.S. Customs reports are reproduced here in their entirety. Notations in brackets [ ] denote comments/explanations by interpreter/transcriber and are not part of the original report.

The Reports:

DEPARTMENT OF THE TREASURY
UNITED STATES CUSTOMS SERVICE
REPORT OF INVESTIGATION

Subject: "FINDERS"
Date of Report: 021287

This office was contacted by the Tallahassee Police Department (TPD) on February 5, 1987, who requested assistance in attempting to identify two adult males and six minor children, all taken into custody the previous day. The men, arrested and charged with multiple counts of child abuse, were being very evasive with police in the questions being asked of them pursuant the children and their condition.

This agent contacted SS/A Bob Harrold, RAC/Reston, Virginia, and requested telephone numbers and names of police persons in area police departments in an attempt to follow-up on two leads which were a Virginia license number and that the children had commented about living in a Washington D.C. commune.

Subsequently, this office received a telephone call from the Washington D.C. Metropolitan Police Department (MPD) enquiring about the men and children. This office put the MPD and the TPD in contact with each other.

RAC/JX: SAC/TA: RAC/DC

[Signature]
Walter F. Kreitlow II
Special Agent

Fredric D. Maiduk
Resident Agent in Charge

Office of Enforcement
227 N. Bronough St.
Tallahassee, FL 32301

Details of Investigation

On Thursday, February 5, 1987, this office was contacted via telephone by Sergeant JoAnn VanMETER of the Tallahassee Police Department, Juvenile Division. Sgt.

VanMETER requested assistance in identifying two adult males and six minor children ages 7 years to 2 years.

The adult males were tentatively identified by TPD as Michael HOULIHAN and Douglas AMMERMAN, both of Washington D.C., who were arrested the previous day on charges of child abuse.

The police had received an anonymous telephone call relative two well-dressed white men wearing suits and ties in Myers Park, (Tallahassee), apparently watching six dirty and unkempt children in the playground area. HOULIHAN and AMMERMAN were near a 1980 blue Dodge van bearing Virginia license number XHW-557, the inside of which was later described as foul-smelling, filled with maps, books, letters, with a mattress situated to the rear of the van which appeared as if it were used as a bed, and the overall appearance of the van gave the impression that all eight persons were living in it.

The children were covered with insect bites, were very dirty, most of the children were not wearing underwear and all the children had not been bathed in many days.

The men were arrested and charged with multiple counts of child abuse and lodged in the Leon County Jail. Once in custody, the men were somewhat evasive in their answers to the police regarding the children and stated only that they both were the children's teachers and that all were en route to Mexico to establish a school for brilliant children.

The children tentatively were identified as Mary HOULIHAN, white female age 7; Max LIVINGSTON, white male, age 6; Benjamin FRANKLIN, white male age 4; HoneyBee EVANS, white female, age 3; B.B. [Transcribers notes: possibly "BB" initials only, or "baby boy, name unknown"] white male, age 2; and John Paul HOULIHAN, white male, age 2. The children initially indicated that they lived in tents in a commune in the Washington D.C. area, and were going to Mexico to go to a school for smart kids.

This office contacted the Office of the RAC/DC and spoke with SS/A Bob Harrold. This agent requested telephone numbers and names of police persons in the area department that might be aware of said activities described by the children and to follow-up on the leads which were the Virginia license number and the check on the men's names with local law enforcement.

A short time later this office was contacted by Detective Jim Bradley of the Washington D.C. Metropolitan Police Department. Bradley indicated that the case here in Tallahassee appeared to be strongly related to a case he was currently working in the Washington, D.C. area.

He stated that the actions of the two men in custody in Tallahassee relative the children just might give his case enough probable cause to obtain search warrants to search the premises occupied by a cult group called FINDERS.

This agent directed Bradley to telephone TPD and discuss with police directly any activities forthcoming relative the instant case. At this time it was determined that there was no Customs violations found to exist and therefore this case is being closed pending receipt of additional information.

[This report ends with an NCIC (National Crime Information Center) report on the two adult male suspects. All enquiries came back "negative." The two individuals were not known, or at least had no criminal record in the national system]. The next report followed:

NEED TO FILE

To: Resident Agent in Charge [whited out] Date: 02/07/87

From: Special Agent [whited out, but signed Martinez]
Subject: Customs cooperation/interest in Tallahassee/Washington
MPD child abuse investigation.

On Thursday, 2/5/87, the duty agent, SS/A Bob Harrold, received a call from SS/A Walter Krietlow, USCS [United States Customs Service], Tallahassee, Florida. SS/A Krietlow was seeking assistance in contacting an appropriate local police agency to coordinate a child abuse investigation with the Tallahassee Police Department. SS/A Krietlow further requested assistance in checking some names, addresses and a vehicle through the Customs Child Pornography Unit data base, and stated there was some suspicion of the subjects being involved in supplying children for the production of child pornography. Further, he was informed by the Tallahassee Police Department that the children may have been enroute to Mexico from the Washington, D.C. area. The possibility of Customs interest in the investigation due to possible violations of the Child Protection Act of 1964 [1984?], and the alleged nexus with the U.S./Mexican Border were discussed and agreed upon. SS/A Krietlow related the following background information. SA/A Krietlow was contacted by the Tallahassee Police Department for assistance in identifying six children and two adults taken into custody in the Tallahassee area. U.S. Customs was contacted because the police officers involved suspected the adults of being involved in child pornography and knew the Customs Service to have a network of child pornography investigators, and of the existence of the Child Pornography and Protection Unit. SS/A Krietlow stated the two adults were well dressed white males. They had custody of six white children (boys and girls), ages three to six years. The children were observed to be poorly dressed, bruised, dirty, and behaving like animals in a public park in Tallahassee. The police were notified by a concerned citizen and all eight persons were taken into custody. The subjects were living out of a white 1979 Dodge van, Virginia license no. XHW-557. Upon being taken into custody, the adult white males refused to cooperate, one of whom produced a "business" card with a name on one side and a statement on the other. The statement indicated that the bearer knew his constitutional rights to remain silent and that he intended to do so. Upon interviewing the children, the police officers found that they could not adequately identify themselves or their custodians. Further, they stated they were enroute to Mexico to attend a school for "smart kids." SS/A Krietlow was further advised the children were unaware of the function and purpose of telephones, televisions and toilets, and that the children had stated they were not allowed to live indoors and were only given food as a reward.

After receiving the request from Tallahassee, SS/A Harrold contacted me while I was on official business at Customs Headquarters. He requested that I conduct computer checks on the Customs Child Pornography Unit data base. The checks were to be conducted on the names, addresses, and a vehicle provided by SS/A Krietlow. After conducting the computer checks, I made direct contact with SS/A Krietlow to inform him that all the checks were negative. At that time I was informed by SS/A Krietlow that the Tallahassee police had discovered large quantities of records, to include computer discs and a U.S. passport in the van. From some of these records the police had obtained tentative identification of the two adults, and partial identification of the children. furthermore, the two Washington, D.C. addresses had been discovered through these documents, one of which was verified through the vehicle registration. I advised SS/A Krietlow I was leaving Headquarters and he would be receiving a response to the remainder of his request from SS/A Harrold. I then left as stated and proceeded to conduct other business in the district.

A short time later, as approximately 11:30 a.m., SS/A Harrold contacted me by radio and advised me that a Detective Jim Bradley of the Washington, D.C. Metropolitan Police Department (MPD) was interested in the information provided by SS/A Krietlow, was in contact with Tallahassee, and would very probably be conducting search warrants in the area later in the day. He also informed me that U.S. Customs was invited to participate due to the continuing possibility of violations of law enforced by the Customs Service. As I was already in Washington, I terminated my other business and proceeded to make contact with Detective Bradley, Intelligence Division, MPD.

Upon contacting Detective Bradley, I learned that he had initiated an investigation on the two addresses provided by the Tallahassee Police Department during December of 1986. An informant had given him information regarding a cult, known as the "FINDERS" operating various businesses out of a warehouse located at 1307 4th St., N.E. [Note: poss. 1507], and were supposed to be housing children at 3918/3920 W. St., N.W. The information was specific in describing "blood rituals" and sexual orgies involving children, and as yet unsolved murder in which the Finders may be involved. With the information provided by the informant, Detective Bradley was able to match some of the children in Tallahassee with the names of children known or alleged to be in the custody of the Finders. Furthermore, Bradley was able to match the tentative ID of the adults with known members of the Finders. I stood by while Bradley consulted with AUSA [Assistant U.S. Attorney] Harry Benner and obtained search warrants for the two premises. I advised acting RAC SS/A Tim Halloran of my intention to accompany MPD on the execution of the warrants, received his permission, and was joined by SS/A Harrold.

SS/A Harrold accompanied the team which went to 1307 4th St., and I went to 3918/20 W. St.

During the execution of the warrant at 3918/20 W. St., I was able to observe and access the entire building. I saw large quantities of children's clothing and toys. The clothing consisting of diapers and clothes in the toddler to pre-school range. No children were found on the premises. There were several subjects on the premises. Only one was deemed to be connected with the Finders. The rest were renting living space from this individual. He was identified as Stuart Miles SILVERSTONE, DOB/061941, U.S. Passport No. 010958991(?) [number on original report questionable due to copy blurring]. SILVERSTONE was located in a room equipped with several computers, printers, and numerous documents. Cursory examination of the documents revealed detailed instruction for obtaining children for unspecified purposes. The instructions included the impregnation of female members of the community known as Finders, purchasing children, trading, and kidnapping. There were telex messages using MCI account numbers between a computer terminal believed to be located in the same room, and others located across the country and in foreign locations. One such telex specifically ordered the purchase of two children in Hong Kong to be arranged through a contact in the Chinese Embassy there. Another telex expressed an interest in "bank secrecy" situations. Other documents identified interests in high-tech transfers to the United Kingdom, numerous properties under the control of the Finders, a keen interest in terrorism, explosives, and the evasion of law enforcement. Also found in the "computer room" was a detailed summary of the events surrounding the arrest and taking into custody of the two adults and six children in Tallahassee, Florida, on the previous night. There were also a set of instructions which appeared to be broadcast via a computer network which advised participants to move "the children" and keep them moving through different jurisdictions, and instructions on how to avoid police attention.

One of the residents was identified as a Chinese National. Due to the telex discovered referencing the Chinese Embassy in Hong Kong, he was fully identified for future reference: WANG/Gengzin, DOB/091747, POB/Tianjin, People's Republic of China, passport No. 224993 [?], entered the U.S. on January 22, 1987, admitted until December 31, 1987. He is in the U.S. as a graduate student in the Anatomy Department of Georgetown University. His Visa was issued on November 10, 1986, in London, England, number 00143.

During the course of the evening, I contacted Sector 4 to initiate a TECS check on SILVERSTONE, and initiate an archives check on him for the last four years. I also contacted SS/A Halloran to keep him advised of the proceedings and asked for and received permission to contact SS/A John Sullivan of the CPPU to query some names through the CPPU data base. SS/A Halloran told me he would call Southeast Region Headquarters to keep them posted on the proceedings as well. I later contacted SS/A Sullivan for the stated purpose, and in the discussion that followed, I gave him some background on the purpose of the request. I advised him that the information was not for dissemination at Headquarters, that Region was being notified, and that Region would probably contact Headquarters later if deemed necessary. SS/A Sullivan assured me that the information would go no further until official notification was made by Region. No positive matches were obtained from the CPPU data base. I was later joined at the W Street address by SS/A Harrold. SS/A Harrold advised me that there were extremely large quantities of documents and computer equipment at the warehouse, and that MPD was posting officers inside the building there and sealing the building until morning, in which a second warrant for that premises would be obtained and executed. SS/A Harrold also advised me that the news media had been notified and had been waiting for the execution of the warrant at the 4th Street address. Detective Bradley later stated that the MPD Public Information Officer had been contacted by a Tallahassee reporter. When it became apparent the PIO had no information on the search warrants, the reporter contacted local media representatives and a check of public records containing the affidavits for the search warrants. Detective Bradley surmised that someone on the Tallahassee Police Department was the original source of the information for the press. I advised SS/A Halloran of the involvement of the press, and he stated that he would, in turn, relay the information to Region. SS/A Harrold and I assisted in the transport of the evidence seized pursuant to the warrant and cleared MPD after the press left the area.

On Friday, 2/6/87, I met Detective Bradley at the warehouse on 4th Street., N.E. I duly advised my acting group supervisor, SS/A Don Bludworth. I was again granted unlimited access to the premises. I was able to observe numerous documents which described explicit sexual conduct between the members of the community known as Finders. I also saw a large collection of photographs of unidentified persons. Some of the photographs were nudes, believed to be of members of Finders. *There were numerous photos of children, some nude, at least one of which was a photo of a child "on display" and appearing to accent the child's genitals.* I was only able to examine a very small amount of the photos at this time. However, one of the officers presented me with a photo album for my review. *The album contained a series of photos of adults and children dressed in white sheets participating in a "blood ritual." The ritual centered around the execution of at least two goats. The photos portrayed the execution, disembowelment, skinning and dismemberment of the goats at the hands of the children. This included the removal of the testes of a male goat, the discovery of a female goat's "womb" and the "baby goats" inside the womb, and the presentation of a goats head to one of the children.*

Further inspection at the premises disclosed numerous files relating to activities of the organization in different parts of the world. Locations I observed are as follows: London, Germany, the Bahamas, Japan, Hong Kong, Malaysia, Africa, Costa Rica [other countries, unintelligible]...'Palestinian.' Other files were identified by member name or "project" name. The projects appearing to be operated for commercial purposes under front names for the Finders. [Note: typical covert tradecraft] *There was one file entitled "Pentagon Break-In*" and others which inferred to members operating in foreign countries. Not observed by me but related by an MPD officer, were intelligence files on private families not related to the Finders. The process undertaken appears to have been a systematic response to local newspaper advertisements for babysitters, tutors, etc. A member of the Finders would respond and gather as much information as possible about the habits, identity, occupation, etc., of the family. The use to which this information was to be put is still unknown. There is also a large amount of data collected on various child care organizations. [note: obvious intelligence gathered prior to child-stealing/kidnapping operations]

The warehouse contained a large library, two kitchens, a sauna, hot-tub, and a "video room." *The video room seemed to be set up as an Indoctrination Center. It also appeared that the organization had the capability to produce its own videos. There were what appeared to be training areas for children and what appeared to be an alter set up in a residential area of the warehouse. Many jars of urine and feces were located in this area.*

I should also mention that both premises were equipped with satellite dish antennas. [note: note described whether these antennas were for satellite TV reception or for directional communications]

I discussed the course of action to be taken by MPD with Detective Bradley. He stated he was only interested in making the child abuse case(s). I was assured that all of the evidence would be available to U.S. Customs in furtherance of any investigative/criminal action pursued. MPD personnel were to begin around the clock review and sorting of the evidence until completed. Customs will have access after this is accomplished. This will include several U.S. Passports discovered during the search.

Upon leaving the 4th Street premises, I encountered a news media representative and was asked the reason behind U.S. Customs involvement in the investigation. I advised the reporter that I could not discuss anything and referred her to the PAO/DC. I left immediately thereafter.

There is no further information available at this time. It should take three to five days for all the information to be sorted, reviewed, logged by the MPD. I will maintain contact with Detective Bradley until the evidence is again accessible.

Respectfully submitted,
[Signature]
Ramon J. Martinez
Special Agent, USCS

[END of Martinez Report]

[Follow-up report, Martinez/Roundtree]

DEPARTMENT OF THE TREASURY
UNITED STATES CUSTOMS SERVICE
REPORT OF INVESTIGATION

Sub: FINDERS
Report Date: 04/13/87
Date of Offense: 02/05/87

On Thursday, February 5, 1987, Senior Special Agent Harrold and I assisted the Washington, D.C. Metropolitan Police Department (MPD) with two search warrants involving the possible sexual exploitation of children. During the course of the search warrants, numerous documents were discovered which appeared to be concerned with international trafficking in children, high tech transfer to the United Kingdom, and international transfer of currency.

DETAILS OF INVESTIGATION

On March 31, 1987, I contacted Detective James Bradley of the Washington, D.C. Metropolitan Police Department (MPD). I was to meet with Detective Bradley to review the documents seized pursuant to two search warrants executed in February 1987. The meeting was to take place on April 2 or 3, 1987.

On April 2, 1987, I arrived at MPD at approximately 9:00 a.m. Detective Bradley was not available. I spoke to the third party who was willing to discuss the case with me on a strictly "off the record" basis.

I was advised that all the passport data had been turned over to the State Department for their investigation. The State Department in turn, advised MPD that all travel and use of the passports by the holders of the passports was within the law and no action would be taken. This included travel to Moscow [USSR], North Korea, and North Vietnam from the late 1950's to the mid 1970's. [Such travel was illegal in those years, and these dates would include the Korean and Vietnam wars, wherein hundreds of orphans were produced]

The individual further advised me of circumstances which indicated that *the investigation into the activity of the FINDERS had become a CIA internal matter.* The MPD report has been classified SECRET and was not available for review. I was advised that the FBI had withdrawn from the investigation several weeks prior and that the *FBI Foreign Counter Intelligence Division had directed MPD not to advise the FBI Washington Field Office of anything that had transpired.*

No further information will be available. Nor further action will be taken.

ACTION TO BE TAKEN BY LESD/TECS:
No action to be taken on the basis of this report.

End of report

A CIA internal matter? What could this mean? Was the CIA mixed up in some type of international satanic child abuse, pornography and extortion ring? It would appear so. But were there other connections aside from this particular group?

Further investigation began to produce answers. The Washington D.C. group had much in common with other groups located across the country. Two such groups, known to be only part of a massive network, can be examined as examples.

In 1992, attorney John DeCamp published a shocking book titled *The Franklin Cover-Up*. In it he details a massive case of child abuse, Satanic ritual murder, drug trafficking, pedophilic extortion and international intrigue. The case centers around certain high-ranking personnel in the Franklin Community Credit Union in Omaha, Nebraska. According to DeCamp, federal investigators closed the credit union in 1988 for investigation after a Nebraska Senate investigating committee discovered over 100 children had been used in an "international child abuse ring" being run in part by Franklin's chief executive officer, Larry King (no relation to the TV talk show personality).

As the investigation began to expose involvement of several high-powered government agencies and figures, the media began an attack on the investigation and those conducting it. According to investigative journalist Anton Chaitkin, "The FBI, Nebraska officials, and news media attacked the legislative committee and its witnesses in an atmosphere of rising violence and intimidation. In the course of this terror, the committee's chief investigator, Gary Caradori, was killed when his airplane unexplainably disintegrated. Troy Boner's brother [one of the child-victims that agreed to testify] was found shot to death at Offut Air Force Base. Alisha Owen's brother [another victim/witness] was found hanged in jail."

One of the former child victims, now an adult witness, courted death when he came forward to explain to Mr. DeCamp and others what he had been forced to do. Paul Bonacci, in an affidavit dated October 28, 1993, stated: "The real activity I and Alisha [Owens] and on occasion Troy Boner...were engaged in was functioning as drug couriers and recruiters [of children] for Alan Baer and Larry King [adult group members]...They were buying and selling large quantities of cocaine into the mid-west and using us as 'mules' to obtain the goods from the various airports and get the drugs delivered back to Omaha. Other prominent and wealthy Omaha citizens were also involved in this...the sex activities we did...were just tools to blackmail or compromise or pay off some judge or businessman or policeman or politicians generally, here in Omaha...in Washington, or other places."

DeCamp's book placed the main players in the middle of "a national and international organized crime syndicate, engaged in pedophilia, pornography, satanism, drugs, and money-laundering." Because of the number of politicians and bureaucrats involved on the national level, one can only imagine the impact on national security.

Anton Chaitkin, in an article titled "Franklin Witnesses Implicate FBI and U.S. Elites in Torture and Murder of Children," wrote "[Certain figures linked to the Omaha case] and their associates in the intelligence community [in Washington] are said to have managed homosexual compromising operations to keep congressmen, judges, military officers, diplomats, and foreign leaders 'in line'." [29]

This operation sounds very like the Finders case. Could it be that the Finder's warehouse was the headquarters for several international cult-rings and that the Omaha Credit Union was simply a 'branch office'? Chaitkin reveals more:

"The Franklin Credit Union is widely suspected of being among the savings institutions used for money-laundering by the CIA and others for Iran-Contra adventures. This precisely defines where Omaha's Larry King showed up in Washington, D.C., in the bizarre homosexual wing of the Republican Party, which managed financing and public relations for the Iran-Contra guns-for-drugs trading games."

Bonacci and the other children were eventually diagnosed as suffering from Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD), which is the result of mental programming from a very young age. According to psychiatrists, people with MPD often have been forced to participate in acts of sexual degradation, sleep deprivation, torture, and other mind control programming methods to "crack" the mind. According to Bonacci, he was plunged into what he describes as a Satanic worship cult that has close ties with the intelligence services and certain deep-cover factions of the military. Bonacci told investigators that the cult-ring was centered at Offutt Air Force Base outside Omaha, the headquarters for the Strategic Air Command before its dismantlement and closure by the Clinton Administration. There, he was sexually victimized from the age of three years old on. The ring "trained" him by "tortures, heavy drugging, and sexual degradation, while instructing him in military arts including assassination."[30]

Chaitkin provides more damning information regarding CIA and military involvement in a covert action operation, and the codename for the operation, in his article. "Psychiatrists who have treated a growing number of MPD cases, victims of Satanic ritual abuse," writes Chaitkin, "report an alarming pattern of findings in many of their child patients. There is a structure to the personalities, conforming to what is evidently a deliberate breaking and reshaping of the mind. This phenomenon was identified to Paul Bonacci by his tormentors, and to other victims and witnesses, as the 'Monarch' project. At Offutt Airbase, Paul was told that what he and other children were being subjected to was an aid of national security."

Again, a criminal enterprise is cloaked in secrecy by the old tried and true cover story of "national security."

As we have seen in previous chapters, drugs, sensory deprivation, hypnosis, torture, and other brainwashing techniques on unsuspecting U.S. citizens are an admitted practice of not only the CIA, but of certain military and private institutions as well. Beginning in the 1950s, this unholy triumvirate worked together in operations carrying such innocent sounding names as MK/ULTRA, MK/SEARCH, Artichoke, Bluebird, and Monarch. In the Monarch project, the victims were small children that were re-programmed to lie, steal, spy, sabotage, kill and even commit suicide.

Chaitkin continues: "Professionals probing the child victims of MONARCH say there are clearly two responsible elements at work: the government/military, and cooperating Satanic (or more exactly pagan) cults. *These are multi-generation groups, where parents donate their own children, who are proudly called 'bloodline' or simply 'blood' cultists, to be smashed with drugs and electric shock, and shaped. Other children are kidnapped and sold into this hell, or are brought in gradually through day care situations.*"

Bonacci told investigators of one trip to California, allegedly to a secret campground meeting place of the elite known as "Bohemian Grove." There he witnessed a Satanic ritual killing. "Paul was taken...to a wooded area in California, identified...as the Bohemian Grove. There Paul and another boy were forced to do sex acts with men, and to consume parts of a child whom they watched being murdered by the cultists. The body was to be disposed of by 'the men with the hoods.' A snuff pornography film was made of these events; it was directed by a man the party had picked up in Las Vegas whom Paul identified as 'Hunter Thompson', the same name as a well-known sleaze culture figure."

During the investigation of the Omaha case, several events using the "Monarch children" were uncovered:

* Picking up cash in exchange for drugs in various Tennessee locations often involving country music personalities.

* Trips on behalf of NAMBLA, the North American Man-Boy Love Association, a pedophile group now given semi-official status by the United Nations. It is believed that NAMBLA has direct contact with European countries via computers that were tied in with the Finders group headquarters in Washington, D.C.

* Travel to Hawaii, New York, and Washington D.C. to compromise public figures by performing homosexual pedophile sex with them.[31]

* Travel to Bohemian Grove where a Satanic ritual murder was witnessed by Bonacci and fellow child-victim Mark Johnson of Denver, Colorado.

* Travel to Mexico for the transportation of drugs, guns and children.

* Survival skills training under a Captain "Foster" at Fort Riley, Kansas, and intelligence training under a Lieutenant "Bannister" at Fort Bragg, North Carolina. A Colonel "Livik" at Fort Defiance, Virginia, is said to have run a "military school" for Monarch inductees.

* Travel to Dresden, East Germany, where weapons were inspected for future use. There, the Monarch personnel were frequently neo-Nazis. It has been reported that this compartmentalized operation is closely tied to the Aryan Nation and other White Supremacist cults. (This fact begs an answer to the question "was Timothy McVeigh, the alleged Oklahoma City bomber, a Monarch operative?")

One name that keeps surfacing as one researches the Monarch project and ancillary operations is that of Lieutenant Colonel Michael Aquino. Lt. Col. Aquino, an Army intelligence officer, is also the high priest of the Temple of Set, a Satanic cult network that claims members from coast to coast. The Temple of Set was established by Aquino in San Francisco after he and his wife broke off from Anton LaVey's Church of Satan in 1975. Aquino's god Set is an ancient Egyptian destroyer-god, who is recognized as a historical form of Satan.

Aquino, who has written extensively on such topics as mind control, and the use of extra low frequency (ELF) electromagnetic force beam weapons in what he calls "MindWar," has been investigated for child molestation and the alleged use of children in Satanic rituals. Investigators in the Omaha case have written that Aquino was at one time a West European adviser to the U.S. Joint Chiefs of Staff, and is tied in with the Monarch project. According to the researchers, he has made trips to Germany where he once obtained use of a medieval castle which was once used by Heinrich Himmler, Hitler's concentration camp master, where Aquino allegedly conducted a black mass.

Paul Bonacci and other child victims have given evidence that Aquino played a central role in Monarch, and "was long time leader of an Army psychological warfare section which drew on his 'expertise' and personal practices in brainwashing from Satanism, nazism, homosexual pedophilia and murder." Aquino vehemently denies this.[32]

It should be mentioned at this point that there is another series of circumstances that appear to connect government mind control programs. First, the CIA based much of its MK/ULTRA program in the metropolis of San Francisco during the late 1950s and 60s. It was in San Francisco that the CIA set up a bordello to experiment on unsuspecting "Johns" with LSD-laced drinks. It was also in San Francisco that Dr. Timothy Leary, allegedly a CIA contract agent, pioneered the LSD-influenced drug revolution. And it was in San Francisco that Jim Jones organized his "People's Temple," prior to its move to Jonestown, Guyana. The People's Temple now appears to have been a massive government mind control experiment in which followers were turned into obedient slaves by means of drugs, mass hypnosis and a charismatic leader. When Congressman Leo Ryan attempted to investigate the allegations by family members, he was ambushed and killed at the Jonestown air strip by Jones' armed security guards.[33]

Finally, it was in San Francisco that Anton LaVey founded the Church of Satan and Michael Aquino started his Temple of Set. The evidence tends to point to more than simple coincidence. In fact, military sources have leaked that many of these mind control projects were directed out of the Presidio army base in San Francisco. The base has now been closed and turned over to the Gorbachev Foundation, wherein plans are made and initiated for further U.S. base closings, U.S. military scale downs, and conversion to global government. It appears that if Satan had a branch office, it would be in San Francisco.

But the mind control projects were not initiated in the United States or Russia or China. When one follows the players and projects back through history it can be traced directly to experiments conducted by Nazi scientists in World War II concentration camps. Certain projects conducted by German mind control engineers migrated to both the U.S. and Russia after World War II. The experiments conducted in the camps went beyond simple torture-for-compliance. The Germans brainwashed people, mostly adolescents, for military and covert purposes. The objectives were to see if a scientific environment with rigid parameters could produce such controllable personalities as fearless soldiers, robot factory workers, manual labor slaves, and programmed assassins.

At the end of the war many of these "scientists" were illegally brought into the United States under Projects Paperclip and National Interest. One such case involved a teenaged concentration camp inmate named Greenbaum, who went beyond being programmed as a subservient personality and actually progressed to the point of being himself a programmer. When he came to the United States he changed his name to "Dr. Green," and continued experimentation on others under U.S. government sponsorship. Interestingly, he found that he was most successful when he incorporated basic mind control methods with belief systems such as Theosophy and Cabalism. By removing fears of individual accountability to a higher power (such as God's eventual judgment of the individual), barriers were broken down that would permit programming of subjects to become killers who killed on command and showed no emotion or remorse. This type of programming might explain such bizarre recent events as the Texas Tower sniper, the Stockton Schoolyard Massacre, and the Luby's Cafeteria mass murder.[34]

America is not alone in its strange proliferation of insane lone gunmen. In Great Britain, several incidents have occurred since World War II that have convinced the British population that guns are dangerous, evil and should not be left in the hands of the people. Among these were the Dunblane, Scotland, attack on an elementary school by a deranged gunman which resulted in the most massive anti-gun drive in the history of the British government.

Along this vein, one must consider the fact that the Tavistock Institute in England has been linked to post-war propaganda and continuing psychological warfare activities, and reportedly reaped its share of former Nazi mind control scientists from the fallen Reich. This might explain such events as Dunblane and a similar event in an English village several years before, both of which created a "gun ban" furor in the British press whenever gun-ban sentiments appeared to lag. Were the perpetrators something more than simply insane gunmen? It cannot be ruled out that instead they were actually British versions of the Manchurian Candidate.

Where is all of this going? What other purposes could government control of the population serve? Further research along this line provides us with clues that are very unsettling.

First, it takes little imagination to realize the advantages a corrupt government would have if it could disarm its population, then control its will. But to do so, especially in America, would require a massive effort to convince the masses to give up their weapons for "their own good." The only way this can happen is to repeatedly, using the media, demonstrate that "guns are bad. Guns cause crime. Guns and drugs are related. Guns are dangerous to children. Psychos get guns and kill large numbers of people/children," etc. Such ideas are projected repeatedly by means of a sympathetic controlled media, and by rigged government "studies" conducted by panels, commissions and off-shoot agencies such as the Center for Disease Control and private-agenda groups. Such has been the case since 1968 when the first "gun control" measures were put in place.

Second, certain segments of the population must be programmed to be robotic drones, incapable or unwilling to think on their own. In this scenario, the "individual" is the enemy of the state. Individual thinking and choice are not conducive to "peace and progress" and not permitted. Only by being part of "The Team," can the individual (follower) accomplish objectives or "outcomes." Of course, these "objectives and outcomes" are directed by the bureaucracy. This phase of population training is currently being accomplished by the public school system with such programs as "outcomes based education," and the introduction of New Ageism into the classroom. One has to remember that Adolph Hitler pioneered a similar tactic with his *Hitlerjugend* and state-sponsored school system. To quote the *Fuhrer*, "When an opponent declares: 'I will not come over to your side,' I calmly say 'your child belongs to me already. Who are you? You will pass on. Your descendants, however, now stand in the new camp. In a short time they will know nothing else but this new community.'"

Third, populations must be convinced to "trust the government out of fear." This is accomplished by media programming the masses to believe that government has their best interest at heart, would never do anything to harm the country, and at the same time fear what would happen to them as individuals should they criticize or protest government activities. Many Americans refuse to believe that anyone within the U.S. government would participate in such illegal activities as international drug running, money laundering, murder, kidnapping, human experimentation on unwitting subjects, corrupting the court system, or any number of other crimes that have already been documented, including mind control. No matter the evidence, the majority of people have been programmed to turn a blind eye to something they do not want to see or believe. This is called the "Three Monkeys Syndrome", hear no evil, see no evil, speak [of] no evil. To ignore it is to make it go away.

To a great degree, Operations Artichoke, Bluebird, MK/ULTRA, MK/SEARCH and Monarch appear to be working.

Chapter 9

From Auschwitz To Edgewood

While the MK/ULTRA scientists at Edgewood were just beginning to explore the possibilities of the psychochemicals and other facets of mind control, their former I.G. Farben colleagues were putting the finishing touches on a much deadlier project. Poison gas.

One of the first discoveries made in the smoking rubble of Germany by the Paperclip scouting teams was the fact that the chemists of the German chemical conglomerate had discovered a new strain of deadly nerve gases against which the Allies had no defense. In their secret laboratories, located at such places as the University of Wuerzburg's Chemical Warfare Laboratory, the Luftwaffe's Technical Research Institute at Berlin, and the I.G. Farben factory at Dyhernfurth, in Breslau, the Nazi chemists developed two gases that would set the military standard for the next half century.

The two agents, Tabun and Sarin, were the most deadly nerve gases ever encountered by both the U.S. military and the Soviet forces. The standard issue gas masks of both nations were ineffective in filtering the agents and neither country had antidotes to counter the lethal effects. The discovery of this invincible weapon, which the high command feared would be put into the warheads of V-2 rockets, became one of the most sensitive and important issues encountered by the Allied high command. According to information received from intelligence sources, just one V-2 warhead could carry enough Tabun or Sarin to wipe out the entire population of London. This information, according to official history, was kept secret for two reasons: to avert public panic, and to keep the Russians from discovering that such a powerful weapon existed. In reality, it was kept hidden until American intelligence officers could seal secret deals with the I.G. Farben chemists.

Tabun had been invented in 1936 by Dr. Gerhard Schrader. It was so deadly that even a few drops could kill within minutes. Sarin, a derivative of Tabun, was almost five times as powerful. Both gases were commissioned by the Wehrmacht, and Otto Ambros, the senior director of I.G. Farben, had ordered a secret laboratory and massive manufacturing facility constructed at Dyhernfurth. Here, both gasses were developed and tested. Many of the tests were conducted on concentration camp prisoners, resulting in an unknown quantity of fatalities.

The tests confirmed the gases fatal efficacy, and within weeks of the conclusion of the test phase of Tabun, it was ordered into production under the codename "Trilon," the name of a common washing detergent.

It was at about this same time that the German army had suffered a horrendous defeat at Stalingrad. The German High Command, staggering from the reversal of events on the Eastern Front, was asked by Hitler if there was a sufficient amount of Tabun or Sarin to be used effectively on the Red Army. Ambros, who was summoned to the Reichstag to respond to the question, explained that he suspected that the Allies might also possess Tabun or a similar compound. The chemical structures of the gases had been discussed before the war in several international scientific journals, and he would be amazed if the Allied defense industry had not noted the information. And if they did, the combined Allied production capability could easily outstrip the strained German industry.

Hitler, who was deathly afraid of chemical warfare ever since his service in the First World War, agreed. If the Germans used the gas against the Russians, then it was only reasonable to assume the Allies might counter with their own versions. It was best to leave the dragon in its cave.

What Hitler did not know was that both American and British intelligence had underestimated the German chemical warfare resources and neither had the stockpiles of chemical weapons or the production capability the Germans feared. British MI-10, in a 1941 assessment of the Nazi chemical threat, reported that "It appears that the Germans have no new gas of surprising effect." And the Americans, relying on what information trickled out of occupied Europe (and what little British SOE provided), estimated that the Germans only possessed the same type of blister-agent mustard gas they had used in the First World War.

It was not until 1943 that Allied intelligence discovered anything new in Nazi interest in chemical warfare. The hint, a coded message regarding the issue of a new type of gas mask to the Wehrmacht, alerted the message intercept officers and the OSS that something was afoot. This was followed by information received from captured prisoners concerning a new gas that was supposed to be odorless, colorless, and quite deadly. But other than these few reports, little else trickled back to London regarding chemical warfare. Without more evidence, concern subsided. The Allied high command felt that the likelihood of an all-out chemical assault would not occur, even if the Germans had sufficient quantities.

They were wrong. By January of 1945, when Hitler began to feel the jaws of the Allied vice closing in, massive stores of Tabun were ordered removed from Dyhernfurth and transported into the Bavarian Last Redoubt for use as a last resort to save the Reich. But before any of the chemical weapons could be employed, the war ended.

Lieutenant Colonel Paul Tarr, the intelligence chief for the Chemical Warfare Service, knew about the new, deadly German gases. He even knew approximately where they had been produced and who had been involved in their production. The secret deals made by certain highly placed individuals on both the American and German sides had taken care of that. Even Military Intelligence, which had remained ignorant of the facts concerning the nerve gas program, did not know of this higher echelon of communications.

Leading a team of fifty chemical warfare experts, Tarr raced across France toward his objectives: the I.G. Farben factories in the Ruhr valley. He reached his destination just as the German army collapsed. But what he found was disheartening. The Ludwigshafen nerve gas facility had been almost completely destroyed. No one remained to be captured and the condition of the equipment appeared to be almost worthless. But Tarr did not give up. Instead of moving on, he ordered his men to round up every German technician and factory worker that could be found and bring them in for interrogation. Through these efforts, Tarr and his staff managed to intimidate the frightened prisoners sufficiently enough to have them lead the Americans to the homes and hiding places of the scientists. One of the first captured was Gerhard Schrader.

Schrader proved more than willing to help the Americans. Anything to keep safe from the Russians. Within a day of capture Schrader provided the formulas of both Sarin and Tabun to Tarr, who quickly dispatched the valuable documents to the rear.

At the same time Tarr and his interpreters were questioning the German scientists, another team of investigators arrived on the scene. Only this group had not come to glean technical information. Their purpose was to gather evidence for the Nuremberg trials. Information and confessions from the I.G. Farben scientists and directors would help hang certain Nazis, and maybe even some of the personnel of Farben. One of the scientists they were looking for was Otto Ambros, the mastermind of the I.G. Farben factory at Auschwitz who was an integral part in the decision to use Zyklon B in the gas chambers. It was also at Auschwitz, and at Natzweiler, that the Tabun and Sarin gases were fatally tested on prisoners by Professor August Hirt and Dr. Karl Wimmer who had supervised the painful deaths, then conducted the morbid dissections on the still-warm bodies. But Ambros was not in the Ruhr. He had made his way to Gendorf in Bavaria, and was not found for several weeks.[35]

When he finally was located, it was not by the criminal hunters who desperately wished to drag him to Nuremberg to answer for his crimes, but by Tarr, who spirited him away to a safehouse in Heidelberg. Then, after hiding Ambros, Tarr flew to London, Paris, and back to Frankfurt, in a frantic attempt to negotiate for not only Ambros, but all Nazi chemical warfare scientists held by the military authorities. But before he could complete his mission, Ambros disappeared. He was not to surface again until he had been gainfully employed, and guaranteed protection, by the French. Ambros was one of the few Nazi scientists the French managed to steal away from the British and Americans.[36]

Ambros was eventually tried for his crimes, but was given only a token sentence. Then, before he could even finish the sentence, he was released by the High Commissioner of Germany, John J. McCloy, who later became president of the World Bank and served on the President's Commission on the Assassination of President Kennedy, the Warren Commission.

Ambros, who after being released traveled to America, was extremely fortunate in finding post-incarceration employment. He was immediately hired by W.R. Grace and Company, then by Dow Chemical. Many of his cohorts, similarly fortunate, had already been hired by American firms. And those who were not found a home at Edgewood.

The German scientists who arrived at Edgewood discovered that their assignment was to continue what they had been doing in Germany. They were to carry on with testing both Tabun and Sarin. According to the Edgewood chemical corps officers, the reason was two-fold: to learn how the gasses affected humans, and to develop defenses against the chemicals.

Tabun and Sarin were the most deadly chemical agents the American military had every encountered. If the Russians had captured the Dyhernfurth plant's scientists and records, as intelligence said they had, then developing protective clothing, gas masks and antidotes was essential. The only way to do this, according to the chemists, was to experiment on humans.

To determine how the chemical mixtures affected soldiers, hundreds of volunteers, who had no idea exactly what they were volunteering for, were selected and sworn to secrecy. Though the captured German documents dealing with the gases were scrutinized by American army chemists, including the Tabun human experiments performed at Auschwitz, it was not enough to satisfy the military. At first, the tests were performed on cats, dogs, rabbits and mice. But after the data proved insufficient, soldiers were locked into the Edgewood gas chamber with the animals. Each soldier was given a mask, told to go inside and sit down, then wait for the order to unmask. Different strengths of the gas were then administered as scientists watched though an air-tight window.

Don Bowen, who participated in the experiments, later related what it was like inside the sealed chamber along with several cages of test animals. "I waited five minutes and took off the mask. The plastic covers were ripped off the animals, and they went wild. They ran around the cages, whimpering and shrieking, and finally stumbled to the floors of their cages. My immediate response was not to breathe. When I finally did take a deep breath, the gas burned my nose, my lips and throat." The gas was carefully measured: enough to kill the animals, but not the man.

Other soldiers at Edgewood underwent mustard gas experiments. Mustard gas is a blister agent which causes blisters on any skin or organ it comes in contact with. The gas itself is actually a fog or mist of liquid droplets. Each droplet that lands on the skin, or is breathed into the lungs, burns through the outer layers of epidermis or lung or nasal tissue and creates open, painful running blisters. In the eyes, mustard gas causes blindness. In the lungs, provided the quantity is sufficient, it causes the lung tissue to rupture and bleed, creating a horrible burning sensation until the victim dies gasping from asphyxiation. In two instances, soldiers were exposed to mustard gas up to fourteen times before finally being hospitalized.

The gas experiments tapered off in 1949 when, at the direction of the Central Intelligence Agency, a new program was initiated. From inside the Iron Curtain, information was emerging that the Soviets were experimenting with mind control drugs. If this was so, and the Russians could control someone's mind through chemicals, then the danger was obvious. The masses could be controlled, enemy troop formations could be made combat ineffective, and certain people might even be able to be programmed to kill. The program, already discussed, was MK/ULTRA.

Chapter 10

Atomic Guinea Pigs

There is one last group of government guinea pigs that must be mentioned. As a whole, they are called The Atomic Veterans. They are the soldiers, sailors, Marines and airmen who both knowingly and unknowingly participated in the nuclear radiation experiments conducted between 1945 and 1962. According to the Disabled American Veterans organization, "somewhere in the neighborhood of 200,000 and 250,000 veterans were exposed to nuclear or ionizing radiation during their military service, most with no more protection than a rifle and a helmet."[37]

These experiments, conducted in remote desert locations and faraway Pacific island atolls, were performed to test the military's preparedness for war. If the U.S. were to become involved in a nuclear war, just how would blast effects and radiation contaminated battlefields affect combat troops and the crews of ships at sea? That was the question asked by the Pentagon war planners. It was answered by the scientists who had no qualms about using humans as test subjects.

To find the answers, U.S. infantrymen were transported to test areas during nuclear bomb detonations and purposefully exposed to the resultant radiation. One such place was Yucca Flat in Nevada where a 44-kiloton device was exploded during the "Smokey" tests. Then within three hours of the blast, some 1,000 G.I.s were marched to within varying distances of ground zero to see if their physical fighting ability would be immediately affected. Then, for weeks and months afterwards, they were both overtly and clandestinely monitored for symptoms of radiation sickness.

At sea, sailors and Marines were ordered on deck on naval vessels to observe atomic bomb detonations in the Pacific. Then, after the blast had occurred and the radiation cloud had drifted away, they were ordered to swim in contaminated lagoons. In one documented Pacific experiment, servicemen were ordered onto a large, flat barge, then towed out to sea to watch a mushroom cloud blast of a 15 megaton hydrogen bomb that was detonated 100 miles from the Bikini atoll.

Afterwards, they were towed in to the blast site and ordered to bathe in the contaminated waters.

In all of the above experiments, servicemen unwittingly breathed and ingested deadly radioisotopes.[38]

To understand the long term effects of these experiments, one only has to read material readily available in any public library. According to a study published in the Journal of the American Medical Association, workers involved in the Manhattan Project at Oak Ridge National Laboratory, Tennessee, who supposedly were exposed to very low levels of radiation during the war, developed cases of leukemia far in excess of the general population. In the study it was determined that the Oak Ridge employees had a 63% higher rate of leukemia than the civilian population.[39]

And in Los Alamos, New Mexico, a study of 18,000 people who lived in the vicinity produced a startling percentage of brain cancer. Though the general rate of this disease among the normal population is 6 in every 100,000 people, the residents of Los Alamos had 48 brain cancersC9 of them primary.[40]

Dr. Helen Caldicott, author of *Nuclear Madness*, wrote, "Today, almost all geneticists agree that there is no dose of radiation so low that it produces no mutations at all. Thus, even small amounts of background radiation are believed to have genetic effects." Yet the U.S. government, to this day, as in the cases involving the Unit 731 survivors and the MK/ULTRA experimentees, continues to deny claims, and quite often, any knowledge that these events even occurred. Of the 12,147 radiation exposure claims filed by atomic veterans, only 1,067 were granted compensation by the VA. Veterans Administration Compensation and Pension Service Director J. Gary Hickman, when asked by the DAV why there was such a discrepancy in awarding disability claims to the veterans, responded, "Our grant rate is low because the amount of radiation which the DoD (Department of Defense) indicates to us these people were exposed to are very low."

This statement, according to the results of tests conducted by the National Science Foundation, is further evidence of the government's failure to publicly recognize past misdeeds. In the research, known as the BEIR (Biological Effects of Ionizing Radiation) study, the foundation reported that amounts of ionized radiation not considered hazardous in the past are now considered quite dangerous.

But even if the government openly acknowledged the various experimental programs that involved testing on human subjects, it is doubtful at this late date that the extent of such operations could be exposed and proven. Most of the records have been purposely destroyed. And even if any records do remain, both the intelligence services and the Pentagon are reluctant to make them available.[41] According to W.J. Layer of the VA's public Affairs office, "The VA has no way of knowing who is part of an experiment and who is not until the individual comes forward. Services don't turn over their records wholesale. The record always has to be requested."[42]

The Committee on Veterans' Affairs agreed. In a Senatorial investigation conducted in 1994, the Committee reported that: "From 1945 to 1962, the United

States conducted numerous nuclear detonation tests: Crossroads (Bikini); Sandstone, Greenhouse and Ivy (Eniwetok Atoll); Castle (Bikini Atoll); Pacific Ocean 400 miles southwest of San Diego; Redwing and Hardtack I (Eniwetok and Bikini Atolls); Argus (South Atlantic); and Dominic (Christmas Island and Johnson Island). The main goal was to determine damage caused by bombs; however, as a result, thousands of military personnel and civilians were exposed to radioactive fallout. Similar tests were conducted within the continental United States, including sites in New Mexico and Nevada. Veterans who participated in activities that directly exposed them to radioactive fallout are referred to as 'Atomic Veterans.'

"Data obtained on some military personnel who were exposed to radioactive fallout were collected after these men were unintentionally exposed. However, some atomic veterans believe they were used as guinea pigs to determine the effects of radiation from various distances, including those at ground zero, on human subjects. Their suspicions are supported by a 1951 document from the Joint Panel on the Medical Aspects of Atomic Warfare, Research and Development Board, Department of Defense, which identified general criteria for bomb test-related 'experiments' and identified twenty-nine specific problems as 'legitimate basis for biomedical participation.'"

The report continues with the sub-heading "Radiation Releases at U.S. Nuclear Sites." It states "In addition to detonation testing, radioactive releases were also intentionally conducted at U.S. nuclear sites in the years following World War II. According to the U.S. General Accounting Office, at least twelve planned radioactive releases occurred at three U.S. nuclear sites during 1948-52. These tests were conducted at Oak Ridge, Tennessee; Dugway, Utah; and Los Alamos, New Mexico. Additionally a planned release occurred at Hanford, Washington, in December 1948, which has been referred to as the Green Run test. *It is not known how many civilians and military personnel were exposed to fallout from these tests.*"[43]

According to fallout maps, giant clouds of nuclear fallout have been born in the easterly winds of the Jet Stream across the United States, from Nevada and Utah to the Mississippi River Valley. Depending on the time of year, the clouds have been plotted as far north as South Dakota and as far south as Central Texas. There is no way to tell exactly where these deadly clouds have deposited their radiation over the civilian population. And not one word from our watchdog agencies regarding this abuse of power and technology.

The DAV, as late as 1995, has continued to fight for the rights of disabled atomic veterans. DAV legislative counsel, Joseph A. Violante, told one House Veterans' Affairs Committee panel: "The issue of ionizing radiation and its potential adverse health effects have been present for more than 50 years. Atomic veterans and their loved ones have been patiently waiting for answers from the scientific and medical communities, as well as response to their continuing concerns from Congress and the VA. Unfortunately, all too often those answers were not forthcoming. Nor does it appear that definitive answers will ever be known. For each study done concluding one point, another study surfaces to discount the findings of the prior report. Thus, the debate rages, with no apparent end in sight."[44]

The VA, now known as the Department of Veteran's Affairs, has finally begun building a data base concerning the drug, gas and atomic experimentation victims. But it took congressional action, and, after great pressure from veterans organizations, an investigation by the General Accounting Office. It is feared by the DAV, VFW and American Legion, however, that anything done now will be too little, too late for the 222,968 military personnel who participated in nuclear tests after World War II.

The World War II years, and the first decade of the Cold War that followed, proved to be a valuable learning experience for the military, the scientific community, and the intelligence services. They discovered just how powerful an organization can become, and just how much they can get away with, if they have the capability to secretly circumvent the law, for purposes of "national security."

Chapter 11

Agent Orange

One of the main problems faced by American commanders in Vietnam was the Vietcong and North Vietnamese Army's ability to hide in the countryside. By constructing massive tunnel complexes for base areas, and linking them with a myriad of well-hidden jungle trails, the enemy could hide from reconnaissance flights and aerial search missions, then come out to strike at will, retreating back into the jungles to again disappear.

The solution to the problem, reasoned the American military, would be to remove the jungle hideaways. In the first efforts, vegetation was cut back away from U.S. firebases to clear open areas called "fields of fire." Next came engineer battalions that bulldozed the jungle back from main roads, and finally, in 1962 the American military began spraying the suspected enemy base areas and supply networks with defoliant.

Designated 2-4-5T and 2-4-D, the chemicals used were not actually a defoliant. Instead, the chemicals, dubbed "Agent Orange" because of the orange stripe painted around the 55-gallon drums as a means of identification, were actually a super-potent fertilizer. But because of the strength that was used, the plants that were sprayed simply grew so large and so quickly that they virtually exploded in their cell structure. The synthetic growth hormone contained in Agent Orange could, for example, cause the typical six to eight-inch Vietnamese bananas to grow to a length of two feet, then burst.

Part of the effective ingredients in Agent Orange were dioxins. Dioxin, considered a deadly poison, is so powerful that three ounces placed in the New York City water supply could kill the entire population of the city. In Vietnam, it was sprayed in thousands of gallons.

By means of specially equipped C-123 cargo planes flown by the USAF 12th Air Commando Squadron operating under Operation Ranch Hand, 11,000,000 gallons of Agent Orange was sprayed over hundreds of square miles of jungle and inland waterways. Unknown to the crews who flew the planes, and the 60,000 ground troops who were inadvertently sprayed or had to later walk though the dead forests, the dioxin would take its toll.

Within eight years of the American withdrawal from Vietnam, thousands of American veterans began experiencing the aftereffects of Agent Orange. Symptoms ranged from strange skin rashes to liver disorders, numbness in the limbs, impotence, fatigue, cancer, and finally, children born with unexplained deformities. Studies showed the only common denominators for this segment of the civilian population were that they were all Vietnam veterans, and they had all been exposed to Agent Orange.

When the veterans began showing up at their local Veterans Administration offices, they were rebuked and turned away. The VA, claiming that no scientific proof was available that Agent Orange could be the culprit, denied the veterans medical care and benefits. When the vets fought back, they ran into two legal obstacles. First, by law, the Veterans Administration is the only federal agency who does not have to answer to any court concerning its decisions; and second, a 1950 Supreme Court ruling denies military personnel the right to sue the government for service connected disabilities, no matter how incurred.[45]

A long battle followed. The Vietnam veterans, who had faced not only the enemy's bullets and booby traps, but lack of support from the government they fought for, and the apathy, and often hostility, of the American people, would not let the issue die without a fight. In 1978, a group of Agent Orange vets sued Dow Chemical and six additional companies that included the huge conglomerates of Uniroyal and Monsanto. The suit charged that the defoliants contained unsafe levels of dioxin, which was known by the manufacturers to be 170,000 times more deadly than cyanide, and that the companies involved knew of the danger and did not warn users in the field.[46]

The court battles lasted six years, finally being settled out of court in May of 1984. Though not admitting liability, which according to the *Washington Post* would have been "a forum to probe corporate officials on what they secretly knew or didn't know about the dangers of their chemicals," the companies involved settled for $180,000,000Cenough to pay 16,000 veterans represented in the suit $11,125 each.

The money, however, was a case of too little, too late. Most veterans affected by the herbicide felt that they had been thrown a bone and been told to go away. Former Marine David Martin told the *Post* that "We wanted our day in court...I want the truth to be told and the truth to come out." The *Agent Orange Dispatch*, a newsletter for dioxin-affected veterans, wrote "We want the world to hear how Dow Chemical poisoned Americans in Vietnam. No amount of blood money could ever be enough to repay what the bastards did to us and our children."

The out-of-court settlement came on the heels of a 1983 New York court case that produced evidence that Dow knew from the very beginning that the defoliant sent to Vietnam contained levels of dioxin that was harmful to humans. According to a 1965 company memo written by Dow's toxicology director, the dioxin contained in the product could be "exceptionally toxic." In another memo written by the company's medical director, dioxin-related "fatalities have been reported in the literature."

Of question at this point is the loyalties of the U.S. government. Unlike the Atomic Veterans and the veterans used as human guinea pigs at Fort Detrick and Edgewood Arsenal, the government was not the primary target of the Agent Orange veteran's organizations. Though the government's evident lack of support, failure to investigate, and failure to provide benefits and medical care made it appear guilty by association, the actual parties targeted by the groups were the manufacturers. The only plausible explanation for what appeared to be a lack of action on the part of Washington would be a fear of discovery by behind-the-scenes high-level individuals involved in the issue. If this were the case, if certain individuals were guilty of covering up the effects of Agent Orange during the war, and the aftereffects, then they were now guilty of conspiracy. But why would anyone in the government that existed in the 1980s go out on a limb for those who served in Washington during the Vietnam war? The only answer could be that some of the same people still held power, and money was still changing hands.

But what evidence is there?

In 1990, a House subcommittee chaired by Representative Ted Weiss investigated the Agent Orange situation. What the committee found was damning.

In 1982, the U.S. Congress ordered a study of the effects and possible aftereffects of Agent Orange. The investigators discovered that the Reagan administration, who promised support for the veterans in the media, actually "had secretly taken a legal position to resist demands to compensate victims." Rep. Weiss went on to state unequivocally that "While the Reagan administration defended the Vietnam conflict as an honorable war, it worked behind the scenes to deny benefits to the very people who sacrificed their health for their country."

After spending more than $40 million, the study was suddenly canceled by the White House in 1987Cjust after the above report was issued.

Not everyone in the upper echelons of military power surrendered to the White House. Admiral Elmo R. Zumwalt, Jr., the former Chief of Naval Operations (CNO) in Vietnam, testified to the Weiss Committee that Dr. Vernon Houk, the Center for Disease Control (CDC) representative in charge of the study had "made it his mission to manipulate and prevent the true facts from being determined. It was pointed out that Dr. Houk was a former member of President Reagan's Agent Orange study team.

Adm. Zumwalt stated that "more than enough verifiable, credible evidence [exists] linking certain cancers and other illnesses with Agent Orange," and that government officials were purposefully ignoring it. He went on to say that "government and industry officials [responsible for] examining such linkage intentionally manipulated or withheld compelling information of the adverse health effects."

It is obvious that a great deal of money could have been involved in dealing with the liability of manufacturing, using, and aftereffects of Agent Orange. The product liability of the manufacturers, the veterans compensation by the VA, and the responsibility for the malformed children born to the veterans could conceivably run into billions. And possibly more important to those involved in the coverup, the criminal conspiracy surrounding their negligence in warning the users what could happen in advance could have serious repercussions. Those responsible decided early on to first not mention any health risks, then later to deny any risks existed. When this did not work and the veterans continued their fight, it was decided to cover up the entire affair as well as possible by denying lab information to the veterans groups, then finally to stop the congressional investigation by way of an order from the president. No better example can be given that exhibits the power of major corporations and their links to the highest levels of government.

Admiral Zumwalt had a very good reason to come forward and confront the government. As CNO in Vietnam, he was in charge of all naval operations in the theater of operations. Part of these operations were the naval river patrols that constantly plied the various inland waterways of the country. These patrols, which were conducted by lightly armed river patrol boats known as PBRs, penetrated the farthest reaches of the various rivers and streams in search of Vietcong. These patrols were extremely dangerous. Because the jungle vegetation grew right to the edge of the banks, and often into the rivers themselves, the VC could lay in ambush right at the water's edge and not be detected until the first shots were fired. In an effort to deny the enemy this advantage, Admiral Zumwalt ordered the VC-controlled areas of the Mekong sprayed with Agent Orange.

Admiral Zumwalt's son, Elmo Zumwalt III, was a commander of one of the PBRs who patrolled the Mekong. He died of an extremely rare form of lymphoma in 1988Cjust months after Reagan canceled the Weiss study.

Chapter 12

The Gulf War Syndrome: Business As Usual

It was like the beginning of no other battle in history, least prior history. Instead, it was like a scene out of the Book of Revelation, for the sky had indeed turned as black as sackcloth and there was fire upon the land.

For the Marines poised to breach the Iraqi army's trench system and mine fields in southern Kuwait, it was like a scene in Hell. According to one Marine first lieutenant, "We moved into the oil smoke about one o'clock in the afternoon, and it was pitch dark. Like something out of a sci-fi movie. Like a scene out of Dante's inferno...it was an eerie situation. I think it was the day the Marine was quoted as saying 'this ain't hell, but you can see it from here."

Further west, along the advance route for their "end run" around Kuwait to entrap the Republican Guard Division, Lieutenant Colonel Gregory Fontenot of the U.S. 1st Infantry Division, recalled another odd and terrible scene, one that sent chills up the necks of the troops as they advanced.

"It was a combination of a sand storm and a world class biblical thunderstorm," said Fontenot, "It looked like the end of the world. It was sort of greenish and black on the horizon with sand in your face one minute and rain pelting you in the face the next. It was unbelievable. It was part of being in something you couldn't imagine. Salvador Dali couldn't have made it up. It was kind of a strange surreal atmosphere of electrical charges and sheet lightning across the sky. We were between the Iraqi main defense and the guys we thought would give us the biggest fight, the Republican Guard. We moved all day in this thing. You could only see 800 to 1000 meters. You thought you were alone."

Another battalion commander, this one a Marine, remembered the feelings he had as he rode atop his command vehicle across the Kuwaiti border into the smoke and flames and darkness as "...something evil, just plain bad. If there is a feeling as a condemned soul descends into Hell, this was it. Your hair stood up on your neck and you had a feeling of stark terror grip you like you've never witnessed before. Not a shot had been fired yet, and it wasn't the anticipation of battle that grabbed you. It was something else, something evil, like the Devil himself lived here."

These men and thousands more would not realize how true their premonitions would become, but not because of a demonic presence or something out of the Twilight Zone, at least not working alone. It would be something else, something they could not see or sense, something very small and unnoticed until it was too late.

It began slowly at first, almost insignificantly, when the problem surfaced and began to get the world's attention in 1992. It was then that members of two Indiana Army Reserve units began showing symptoms of something terribly wrong with their physical conditions. They reported that they had begun suffering headaches, memory loss, bleeding gums, skin lesions and rashes, hair loss, muscle aches and extreme fatigue. Over the next several months even more Gulf War veterans began arriving at various medical institutions with similar complaints. Neither the military or civilian doctors could provide answers to the Gulf War vets complaints.

Since then, over 20,000 veterans have complained of strange physical disabilities, and over 7,000 have died from what has been dubbed "Gulf War Syndrome." But the Pentagon's official stance from 1992 until late 1996 was that there was simply so such thing as "Gulf War Disease," and further, that no chemicals or biological weapons were used by either side in the war that would provide an explanation to the strange disease-like symptoms exhibited by the vets. It was another case of "standard denial."

But there were far too many incidents of veterans reporting to doctors that they had similar symptoms, and more were coming forward every month to add fuel to the fire. Then, even worse as time went on, spouses of veterans began complaining of similar symptoms, indicating that the condition was transferable. And as if this were not enough to convince medical personnel that a problem existed and should be investigated, pregnant wives of veterans began to give birth to deformed babies, far in excess of the rest of the population. According to Dr. Alan Cantwell, Jr., a medical researcher and author, veterans claim that one third of Gulf War babies have been born with abnormalities, ten times the normal rate. Dr. Francis Waickman, an environmental pediatrician, stated that the syndrome can be passed on, creating an infant whose immune system does not function normally.

Eventually theories began to form as to the cause of this strange epidemic that appeared to originate after the return of the Gulf War service personnel. Most of these theories centered around three schools of thought. First were those that supported what became known as Multiple Chemical Sensitivity (MCS). MCS is defined as an allergic reaction to chemical agents that can range from household chemicals to various forms of plastic and petrochemicals.[28] Though the Veterans Administration does not regard MCS as a disease, many researchers think that heavy exposure to various chemicals in a wartime environment, such as diesel fuel in shower water and handling various explosives, can become compounded later when a victim handles other chemicals at home or on the job.[47] The combination of such chemicals, plus the body's inability to cleanse them from the system, creates a toxic build-up. One particular military chemical agent that was used extensively in the war was CARC, or Chemical Agent Resistant Coating, that was sprayed in the thousands of gallons on vehicles and equipment.

To support this theory Dr. William Johnson of the Dwight David Eisenhower Army Medical Center in Fort Gordon, Georgia, told a congressional sub-committee that soldiers worked twelve-hour days spraying CARC in poorly ventilated tents, and some inhaled so much that they were literally coughing it up. Dr. Charles Hinshaw, Jr., president of the American Academy of Environmental Medicine, analyzed data on twenty-five Persian Gulf veterans who had been exposed to "low levels of various petrochemicals" and stated that all but one showed signs of MCS.

The second theory concerns depleted uranium, or DU, which was used in tank and artillery shells, 30mm A-10 cannon rounds, and armor plating on tanks. According to the Army, more than 4,200 DU rounds were fired in the war, and the anti-tank cannons of the A-10s fired thousands more. When fired against armor much of the round shatters into a radioactive dust that, according to experts, can cause health problems similar to heavy metal poisoning. The Army maintains that no soldiers are believed to have ingested dangerous amounts of DU, and that none have tested high in uranium levels in their bodies.

The third theory is the most plausible. It addresses Chemical and Biological Weapons (CW and BW) which were available to both sides during the war. It also addresses the preventative medicines given to our soldiers and Marines, often against their wishes, to counteract such agents.

In 1993, two U.S. Navy Seabees from the 24th Naval Construction Battalion in Columbus, Georgia, testified before a Senate Armed Services subcommittee that their unit was hit by chemical weapons on January 20, 1991. They also testified that everyone knew it and that they were all ordered to "keep it quiet." Their statements were backed up by other reports from multi-national forces that did not "keep it quiet," and the Pentagon had to do some back pedaling while they retreated to plan future damage control. One report came from a Czech chemical detection unit that detected mustard gas and the nerve agent Sarin. These agents were discovered after allied air strikes hit Iraqi munitions arsenals and ammo dumps. The Czechs later reported that ten of the soldiers from the detection unit later began suffering "mysterious ailments." In other sectors the British also detected chemicals, and U.S. forces had numerous instances of chemical alarms going off. Unnamed Pentagon spokesmen simply dismissed the latter as "defective equipment." Yet, according to the French forces on February 4th, 1991, thirteen days after the Czech and British units reported the BW indications, chemical fallout was being detected throughout Iraq. This was just after General Schwarzkopf announced that allied forces had attacked 18 chemical and 10 biological plants.[48]

The German newspaper *Frankfurter Rundschau und Handlesblatt* reported that allied raids had caused the release of toxic chemicals that were killing scores of civilians, and that Michael Sailer of the Ecological Institute in Darmstadt told the paper that sections of Iraq would remain polluted and unusable for years after the war.[49]

Contrary to the Pentagon stance, a report issued in September of 1993, by the staff of Senator Donald W. Riegle, Jr. (D-Mich.) and the Center for Disease Control affirmed that an Iraqi SCUD missile, capable of carrying BW and CW agents, landed near an ammunition supply unit stationed near the Saudi-Kuwaiti border, and since the war, 85 of the unit's 110 members have exhibited GWS symptoms, many described as debilitating. Soldiers of this unit were warned not to mention this missile strike to anyone.

A second missile struck near the Navy Seabee unit where the members were instructed not to talk about it. This begs an answer to the question of what the officers of that unit already knew about the missiles prior to their impact. Normally, receiving incoming fire would simply be a basis for harmless war stories. What was it about these missiles that the chain of command knew in advance that made them secret?[50]

For the Army, the coverup of what really happened began early. When the first indications surfaced with the Indiana reservists that something was wrong with our Persian Gulf returnees, the Pentagon immediately concluded that they were simply suffering from "stress," probably due to problems of readjustment to civilian life. One Indiana reservist countered with "when people were coming back from Vietnam, wringing Agent Orange out of their clothes, they were told they were under stress. The Army took almost twenty years to settle that one, so I don't think they have a real good record of letting the troops know what might be going on."

One victim that definitely was not "under stress" was Indiana Congressman Steve Buyer who developed respiratory symptoms and repeated bouts with influenza, and kidney problems after returning from the Gulf. He is also afflicted with prostrate infections, spastic colon and multiple allergies.

These symptoms, plus more, have surfaced in an Alabama reserve unit which has experienced a two-thirds GWS rate among its members. One of the reservists, William Kay, blames his sickness on an Iraqi SCUD missile that hit near his unit which he believes was loaded with either chemical or biological agents.

The military takes credit for doing its best to protect against chemical and biological weapons. One of the methods consisted of a series of injections of drugs that were thought to counter CW and BW agents. The problem at the time is that the drugs had not been proven effective or safe.[51]

The Los Angeles Times reported on May 10, 1994 that experimental and unapproved vaccines and drugs were given to all personnel who fought in the Gulf War, and that these vaccines were prescribed to protect soldiers against anthrax and a nerve disease called myothenia gravis. It was also hoped that these drugs would prove effective against other biological warfare agents, but "In an effort to protect the health and lives of uniformed personnel, the U.S. military may have inadvertently done some of them serious injury."[52]

It did not matter to the military hierarchy whether or not the soldiers and sailors in the Gulf consented to being used as guinea pigs for untested vaccine. They simply were ordered to line up and take shots. When some refused, they were forced to submit to the injections. One Army Reserve doctor, Dr. Yolanda Huet-Vaughn, protested that it was her duty under the Nuremberg Code of Justice not to vaccinate personnel with experimental vaccines without their consent. The Army's answer was a courts martial for the doctor wherein the military judge ignored the considerations of international law and medical ethics. He sentenced the mother of three children to 30 months in prison.[53]

Soldiers who refused the vaccinations were given them forcibly. One female reservist reported after her return that she was held down against her will and injected. When her second shot came due a few weeks later, someone came up behind her and injected her before she could resist.

One soldier refused to buckle under the Army's weight and filed a lawsuit against the government regarding "unethical and unlawful use of people as guinea pigs in medical experiments without their informed consent." When the case went to court, however, U.S. Court District Judge Stanley S. Harris dismissed the law suit, citing the necessity of the military to "protect" the health of its troops. The fact that the vaccines and drugs were untested and unapproved by the FDA was irrelevant.[54]

By 1994, even members of Congress began to take note of what appeared to be a significant problem that was spreading in the civilian population. In the staff report prepared for the Senate Committee in Veterans' Affairs (December 8, 1994), Section III outlined the findings and conclusions of the Committee:

A. For at least 50 years, DOD has intentionally exposed military personnel to potentially dangerous substances, often in secret.

B. DOD has repeatedly failed to comply with required ethical standards when using human subjects in military research during war or threat of war.

C. DOD incorrectly claims that since their goal was treatment, the use of investigational drugs in the Persian Gulf War was not research.

D. DOD used investigational drugs in the Persian Gulf War in ways that were not effective.

E. DOD did not know whether pyridostigmine bromide would be safe for use by U.S. troops in the Persian Gulf War.

F. When U.S. troops were sent to the Persian Gulf in 1994, DOD still did not have proof that pyridostigmine bromide was safe for use as an antidote enhancer.

G. Pyridostigmine may be more dangerous in combination with pesticides and other exposures.

H. The safety of the botulism vaccine was not established prior to the Persian Gulf War.

I. Records of anthrax vaccinations are not suitable to evaluate safety.

J. Army regulations exempt informed consent for volunteers in some types of military research.

K. DOD and DVA have repeatedly failed to provide information and medical followup to those who participated in military research or are ordered to take investigational drugs.

L. The Federal Government has failed to support scientific studies that provide information about the reproductive problems experienced by veterans who were intentionally exposed to potentially dangerous substances.

M. The Federal government has failed to support scientific studies that provide timely information for compensation decisions regarding military personnel who were harmed by various exposures.

N. Participation in military research is rarely included in military medical records, making it impossible to support a veteran's claim for service-connected disabilities from military research.

O. DOD has demonstrated a pattern of misrepresenting the danger of various military exposures that continues today.

Pyridostigmine bromide (PB) is a drug often prescribed to victims of myasthenia gravis, a degenerative nerve disease. According to medical sources, PB has been shown in animal experiments to provide some protection against Soman nerve gas. Because of this, the military administered PB to almost all personnel stationed in the Gulf. However, Air Force personnel reported serious side effects from the drug. Pilots reported impaired breathing, blurred vision, short term memory problems, and decrease in stamina. And it was not until later that it was discovered that PB actually increased the effects of nerve gasses other than Soman, such as the indications of Sarin that were discovered by the British and Czech units.

Life magazine reported in an article about the GWS that "Czech and British governments say their troops detected both kinds of gas, presumably released during allied bombing of Iraqi chemical plants. And veterans' advocate Paul Sullivan recently obtained 11 pages of a secret Defense Department log revealing that U.S. chemical alarms went off repeatedly during the war. Pentagon spokesmen blame those alarms on faulty equipment and note that there have been no reports of massive Iraqi gas deaths near the bombed factories. But former congressional investigator Jim Tuite speculates that gases were blown straight upward, then settled miles away as fallout. And, he says, Iraqis are suffering health problems 'similar to what we're seeing in our veterans.' Ironically, much of Iraq's chemical arsenal was made by U.S. companiesC80 of which face a class-action law suit by 2,000 ailing vets."

There is much more to the story regarding U.S. participation in arming the Iraqis with biological and chemical weapons. What few investigators know concerning the background of this topic is the collusion of certain U.S. government officials with the chief arms buyer for Saddam Hussein, a mysterious man named Ihsan Barbouti.

Ihsan Barbouti was Hussein's chief architect on many interesting projects. First, he owned an engineering company in Frankfort that had a $552 million contract to build airfields in Iraq. At about the same time, he designed Moammar Khadaffi's

German-built chemical weapons plant in Rabta, Libya, while buying various businesses in the U.S. that were capable of producing war materials.

Of the latter, Barbouti invested in two companies in the U.S.: Pipeline Recovery Systems of Dallas, Texas, which made an anti-corrosive chemical that coats and preserves pipes such as those used in nuclear reactors, and Product Ingredient Technology of Boca Raton, Florida, which makes food flavorings. Barbouti also attempted to buy an Oklahoma City company, TK-7, which had formulas that could extend the range of jet aircraft and liquid-fueled missiles such as the SCUD. This deal fell through at the beginning of Operation Desert Shield when Iraq invaded Kuwait and Iraqi assets were frozen in the U.S. But not before many other items of concern had exited the country through the "smugglers underground."

Product Ingredient Technology made cherry flavoring, which used ferric ferrocyanide, a chemical that's used to manufacture hydrogen cyanide, which can penetrate gas masks. This is the chemical used against the Kurds in northern Iraq when Saddam Hussein bombarded a village, killing all men, women and children.

According to a Nightline broadcast, a New Orleans exporter who was a business associate of Richard Secord assisted Barbouti with "exporting" the products. Barbouti, according to the broadcast, met with Secord in Florida on several occasions, and phone records show that several calls were placed from Barbouti's office to Secord's private number in McLean, Virginia. Secord was reported to have been in business with James Tully and Jack Brennan (former aide to Nixon) who were involved in a $181 million business deal to supply uniforms to the Iraqi army, which they contracted through Nicolae Ceaucescu's Romania prior to his execution. The partners in this particular deal were former U.S. Attorney General John Mitchell and Sarkis Soghanalian, a Turkish-born citizen who had been Saddam Hussein's leading arms procurer. It was Soghanalian who introduced Super Cannon builder Gerald Bull to the Iraqis, and who later sold 103 military helicopters to Iraq illegally, was caught and served six years in prison in Miami.

Barbouti managed to secretly remove more than 2,000 gallons of ferric ferrocyanide from the Florida plant and ship it to Iraq. It is also been reported that Barbouti bought from high-level American sources biological weapons. It is now maintained by experts in the Gulf War Syndrome investigation that a biological weapons laboratory in Houston supplied Barbouti with basic bacilli and virus cultures from which biological warfare agents could be manufactured. This would follow suit to the fact that Barbouti designed the Libyan "pharmaceutical" plant in Rabta, Libya, and had met with former Nazi scientist Volker Weissheimer to recruit other former Nazi scientists to work in Libya and Iraq. These were some of the same scientists that had worked on chemical and biological weapons during World War II for Hitler.

Barbouti was part of a CIA operation to "improve relations" with Saddam Hussein by supplying his armed forces with "special weapons." This was done under the guise of providing Iraq with agricultural loan guarantees, with the U.S., through arms dealers like Secord, funneling millions of dollars of biological and chemical weapons technology to Iraq. These business maneuverings were handled through the Department of Agriculture's Commodity Credit Corporation, and the loans channeled through the Atlanta branch of Banco Nazional Lavaro in Italy. This enterprise became part of what later was dubbed "Iraqgate."

Barbouti allegedly died in London of a heart attack in July, 1990. However, this is the second time he has died, as he faked his own death previously in 1969. His grave in London is covered by a huge concrete monument and is registered as Moslem holy ground and cannot be disturbed. Conveniently, Barbouti's corpse cannot be exhumed for identification.

The bottom line is that all of these technology transfers concerned the highest levels of government. Key individuals from the White House on down knew of these sales to Iraq, but were not concerned as long as the weapons were used against the Iranians. It was not until the Gulf War that we began to face our own weapons, and any deep investigation into how Hussein got them would expose too many politicians and bureaucrats, thereby influencing their political futures.

Still, the government continued to deny that Gulf War Syndrome existed. In an Associated Press article titled "No Mystery Ailment Found in Gulf War Veterans, Study Says," the author wrote that "A study of more than 10,000 veterans and family members suffering post-Persian Gulf War medical problems found no evidence of any unique disease or disorder, the Pentagon's top medical official said Tuesday. The study turned up instances of back pain, headache, alcoholism, depression and other ailments, but no mystery illness stemming from the desert war."

The article went on to note that according to Dr. Stephen Joseph, assistant secretary of defense for health, "We do not find a single or unique illness responsible for a large or even significant proportion...of illness. Rather, what we find are multiple illnesses with overlapping symptoms and causes." The article then audaciously stated that "Tuesday's announcement marked the first categorical rejection by the Defense Department of the existence of an unknown malady stemming from the 1990-91 war." Dr. Joseph concluded in the article that the Defense Department researchers found "not a single mystery illness or unique Gulf War illness but rather a combination of symptoms and illnesses...that you would particularly expect to find in a population that was exposed to the kinds of stresses that people were exposed to in the Gulf."

By 1995, however, the mounting evidence and the public outcry began to draw political blood. A November 6th article in *Air Force Times* titled "Raids May Have Released Iraqis' Nerve Gas" pulled the curtains back on the fact that the Pentagon was beginning to weaken in their denials that anything unusual had occurred. The article stated that "The Pentagon is investigating whether allied bombings of an Iraqi chemical weapons depot inadvertently exposed some U.S. troops to nerve gas during Operation Desert Storm, says a top investigator of Persian Gulf War illnesses. The investigation, however, does not change the Defense Department's position that U.S. forces were not exposed to chemical or biological warfare agents, whether through

SCUD attacks or inadvertent releases from allied bombing, said Air Force Colonel Ed Koenigsberg, a doctor who directs the department's Persian Gulf War Veterans' Illnesses Investigation Team." Koenigsberg went on to say that "To date, we have not found anything to change that policy."

Interestingly, the exposure being investigated occurred in late January, 1991, when the Czech experts in chemical warfare detected traces of Sarin in areas occupied by Allied forces. Still, the coverup continued with the government spokesmen espousing other theories as causes for Gulf War disease. Sand fleas, Saudi desert hygiene, health hazards due to the fine grain Saudi sand, and even breathing fumes from SCUD missile fuel were mentioned as possible culprits. Though the Department of Defense was beginning to waiver it was still not ready to admit that "something" happened during the active duty service of the veterans that would cause communicable life-long illnesses, which they brought home to pass on to their families.

Veterans organizations, involved in exposing the truth, fought an uphill battle with the government. Arthur H. Wilson, Executive Director of the Disabled American Veterans, wrote that the "Pentagon has shown an absolute reluctance to openly discuss these concerns with the DAV. It is also a complete mystery why we haven't had an answer to a strongly worded letter we wrote on this subject to Secretary Aspin on October 25, 1993." Mr. Wilson went on to write "Following World War II, the Korean War, and especially the Vietnam War, didn't we hear the same words from our government as we fought to find the truth and struggled to rebuild our lives? Only later, in some cases 20 years after the fact, did we learn the truth about 'mystery' illnesses like shell shock and war neurosis. And worse yet was the awful truth that some disabilities may be directly related to exposure to dangerously high levels of radiation and Agent Orange by our own government."

Mr. Wilson summed up his article in *DAV* magazine "Remember that during and after World War II the Department of Defense concluded there would be no significant long-term health effects from the mustard gas or atomic radiation tests they performed on unsuspecting soldiers and sailors. Remember that in the late 1950s and early 1960s the Department of Defense concluded there would be no significant long-term health effects for soldiers and airmen who were given multiple doses of the powerful hallucinogenic drug LSD. And remember, if you will, that during the Vietnam War the Department of Defense concluded there would be significant long-term effects for troops exposed to dangerous herbicides like Agent Orange."

As time passed the government became more nervous about the failure of damage control to sweep the issue under the carpet of the collective consciousness. When CBS newsman Ed Bradley interviewed Undersecretary of Defense John Deutch, who later became Director of the CIA under Clinton, in March of 1995, it was obvious a few nerves were struck. The line of questioning centered around "Were American forces exposed to chemical, biological or radiological weapons during the Persian Gulf War?"

Deutch denied any such events had occurred. But as the questions became increasingly tougher and more pointed, Deutch began to sweat and grow increasingly nervous. His eyes began to shift rapidly between Bradley and the camera as he attempted to fend of each question. Finally, Bradley asked if there was a "possibility" that BW or CW weapons "might" have been used, and Deutch simply dodged and evaded the question. This interview was aired on March 12, 1995.

Two stalwart doctors have relentlessly continued research on GWS. Doctor Garth L. Nicolson and his wife, Dr. Nancy L. Nicolson, have isolated a laboratory "engineered" microorganism known as Mycoplasma Fermentans. This strain of mircoplasma, according to the Nicolsons, is what causes most of what is now known as Gulf War disease. Dr. Garth Nicolson is professor and chairman of the Department of Tumor Biology at the world's largest cancer facility at the University of Texas in Houston (the same city from which Barbouti bought BW ingredients). His wife, Nancy, is president of Rhoden Foundation for Biomedical Research in Houston.

Dr. Nicolson has published more than 400 scientific papers and serves as the editor or associate editor of 13 scientific and medical journals. According to him, "the mycoplasma that we have found in Desert Storm vets has very unusual retroviral DNA sequences; thus in all probability it was 'engineered' and did not evolve naturally." The Nicolsons believe that since the microorganism was probably illegally developed and tested in the United States, then illegally sold and transferred to Iraq prior to the Gulf War, there is a major coverup being conducted by the Clinton administration. This coverup, however, started before Clinton came to office and can be traced back to the Bush administration in which the major players resided.

In a letter written to former army chaplain Col. James Ammerman of Dallas, Texas, Dr. Nicolson wrote "We have possibly uncovered one of the messiest controversies and coverups since Watergate. This one makes Watergate seem like a tea party."

The heat from the fire of public sentiment continued to burn until August 19, 1996, when the Associated Press published an article titled "Pentagon Admits Chemical Weapons Reached Soldiers." In the article the Pentagon finally admitted that it knew as far back as November 1991 that chemical weapons had been stored at an Iraqi ammunition depot that U.S. troops had demolished just months earlier. According to the article, "The Pentagon and other government agencies aware of the presence of chemical weapons at Kamisiyah ammunition storage facility did not realize in 1991, however, that American troops had been there, spokesman Captain Michael Doubleday said. So a November 1991 intelligence report indicating the presence of chemical shells at Kamisiyah, including one described as leaking, essentially was filed away and forgotten even as the U.S. government continued to deny it had any evidence that large numbers of troops might have been exposed to chemical weapons."

Something else that was not mentioned by the government was the fact that an engineer unit, the 37th Engineer Battalion, demolished the facility with explosives, sending clouds of chemical agents into the air to disseminate for miles over American units. Directly underneath the cloud as it rose were 150 U.S. troops who did not know that chemical weapons were stored there. It was not until much later, when home videos taken by the engineers showed the shells in bunker 73 to be 122mm chemical rockets, that the munitions were positively identified.

A further twist to this story is that a chemical officer told the engineers that he detected the nerve agent Sarin, but the officers in charge of the soldiers told them not to don their chemical protective suits and gas masks. The chemical officer, Dan Tipulski, ignored the order and put on his MOPP suit. Now he is the only man from the unit not afflicted with the syndrome.

Another break in this case is the fact that the *New York Times* reported that an intelligence memo had been circulated in 1991 concerning this event, and the routing marks showed it to have traveled to not only the Pentagon, but also the White House, State Department and CIA. Even when the U.N. weapons inspection teams reported to the U.S. government that the 37th Engineers had blown up a bunker with chemical weapons inside, it was dismissed because "it was thought they [the Iraqis] were feeding the United Nations disinformation in order to hide or obscure their weapons arsenal."[55]

On September 3, 1996, another torpedo of truth was fired at the Pentagon bureaucrats when the AP released an article titled "Part of Log Of Gulf War Data Missing." In the article, Gulfwatch, a Gulf veterans watchdog group, discovered that log pages were mysteriously missing from a diary kept for General Schwarzkopf that covered the dates in question regarding the Kamisiyah ammunition depot demolition by the 37th Engineers. "Entries are missing for March 4-11, the week troops and engineers spent examining the Kamisiyah ammunition depot and blowing it up," said the article, "...Several gaps exist in the 36 pages of logs that were declassified and turned over to Gulfwatch."

Exposing the coverup at this late date will have little effect for those already affected by the physical aftermath of the Gulf War. Especially for those who have died of these strange ailments. There will be no more waiting for recognition or proper treatment for former Army Specialist Michael Adcock, who died on April 23, 1992Conly eleven months after returning home. But his last words ring in our ears: "Mama, fight for me. Fight for my comrades. Don't let this happen to another soldier. Don't let this be another Agent Orange."[56]

Part III

The Boys We Left Behind

"The [POW] problem becomes almost a philosophical one. If we are 'at war,' cold, hot or otherwise, casualties and losses must be expected and perhaps we must learn to live with this kind of thing. If we are in for fifty years of peripheral 'fire fights' we may be forced to adopt a rather cynical attitude on this for political reasons."

Classified Pentagon
policy on POWs.

"You're talking about people who have no feelings whatsoever about the individual soldier in the field. Their answer to all this is to build a black wall in Washington and put all their names on it to pacify you and I. Do they care about soldiers? They could give a damn about soldiers!"

Major Mark Smith
Former Green Beret
Army Intelligence on POW/MIAs

"As far as I'm concerned, the Pentagon is nothing more than a lair of liars."

Diane C. Renselaar
National League of Families

Chapter 13

Casualties Of War

They had held for 54 days. But now the little men clad in black and khaki were among them, running in small groups or charging singly at wire entanglements with explosives strapped to their bodies, shooting at any position where resistance was found, and overrunning the remaining outposts. It was the 55th day of the siege, and it would soon be over.

Dien Bien Phu, a battle that became legend, started with a simple mission assignment given General Henri Eugene Navarre on 28 May, 1953: protect the little kingdom of Laos, which had remained loyal to France, from a threatened invasion from the east by Ho Chi Minh's Viet Minh guerrillas. To do this would take a blocking force of considerable strength occupying a key position on the most logical access route. Upon studying the map, it was determined that the most effective choke point would be in a valley straddling the Nam Yum River near the village of Dien Bien Phu. At this point, Route 41 entered the valley from the northeast and followed the Nam Yum River south along its east bank. This is where Navarre decided to stop the enemy.

The valley was surrounded by mountains. No modern army would attempt to cross such rough terrain with heavy equipment, and without artillery an invasion would surely fail. They would have to pass through the valley.

Instead of one central fortification, a series of strong points were established. Each small *herisson* (hedgehog) was positioned to cover others with fields of fire. One breach in the lines would not cause the garrison to fall. Throughout the winter, the French built their fortress.

But fall it did. By 13 March, 1954, the Viet Minh leader, General Giap, stood poised with 43,000 men and over 200 artillery pieces and heavy mortars in the mountains surrounding Dien Bien Phu. The French garrison numbered fewer than 11,000 men supported by only seven batteries of artillery, two mortar groups and 10 American-made M-24 Chaffee light tanks.

Once surrounded, the only relief forces and supplies that could be sent had to come by air. Landing on the airstrip was disastrous, as it was well within range of the Viet Minh artillery, so most supplies and reinforcements were dropped by parachute, many drifting into the hands of the Communists.

As the battle progressed, Viet Minh troops dug "saps" to within yards of the French perimeters. Mortars and rocket launchers moved forward and machine gun positions appeared on all flanks, pouring withering fire into the defenders trenches and bunkers. Finally, on May 7th, the final assault began.

Suicide troops with explosives strapped to their bodies charged forward from the Viet Minh trenches and threw themselves into the French wire, blowing gaping holes in the entanglements. Masses of waiting soldiers stormed through and were soon within one strong point, then another. The French fought valiantly, but the outcome was inevitable. One weapon after another ran out of ammunition. Dead and wounded were everywhere. Medical supplies were almost non-existent. Only one tank remained operational, and the reserve forces had been used up five days before. By 1740 hours, the Viet Minh flag hung over the main command post.

In the end, over 10,000 French and colonial prisoners were taken by the Vietminh, many of which would never be released.[57] By the end of the French Indochina War, 39,888 prisoners were held by the Vietminh. Of these, 29,954 were *never* repatriated. Many were local Vietnamese troops, but according to French military records, 2,350 were French nationals, and 2,867 were Legionnaires.[58]

Of those that were repatriated, some did not see French soil until as late as 1962. In that year forty French POWs were returned to France. But after their return, instead of being greeted as long lost sons, they were labeled by the French government as *"ralliers"* (deserters). Then, in an attempt to discredit any testimony they might produce about being abandoned by their government after being taken prisoner, the army court martialed them, found them guilty of desertion, then gave them lengthy prison sentences and loss of all back pay. Twenty other POWs, after hearing of this "welcome home" decided to remain in Vietnam. They were court martialed in absentia, charged with various capital crimes supposedly committed during the war, and should they ever return, faced execution.[59]

Writer William Stevenson, co-author of *Kiss the Boys Goodbye,* and a noted BBC correspondent who covered the French Indochina War, testified before the Senate Committee on Foreign Relations in 1991 that he had interviewed French soldiers held as POWs, and that due to their long incarceration, seemed to be "mentally deficient." It was believed that this was due not only to the passage of time, but to brainwashing and harsh treatment by the captors. Still, it had been years since their war had ended and they were still alive and in captivity.

Robert Garwood, an American Marine taken prisoner during the Vietnam War, stated that he had personal knowledge, and had seen French prisoners in the 1970s that were being used as slave labor at a North Vietnamese dairy farm. This was after the French government, in an effort to resolve the lingering problem over the unaccounted-for POWs and MIAs taken in Indochina, declared them all dead.[60]

The French experience with the communist ideology concerning prisoners of war was not the first time such treatment by a communist government had been encountered by Western governments. Nor would it be the last.

As the Allied vice closed in on Hitler's Germany in the waning days of World War II, a decision was made by the Allied High Command, Supreme Headquarters, Allied Expeditionary Forces (SHAEF), commanded by General Dwight D. Eisenhower, that the U.S., British and French forces would stop short of Berlin. Instead of linking up with the Red Army at the *Reichstag*, the Russians would be permitted to take Berlin on their own. According to Eisenhower, it would save American lives. In actuality, the Russians had demanded the exclusive right to swarm into the Nazi capital in retribution for the death and destruction vested upon the Russian people by the Nazis during Operation Barbarossa.

As each army made their way through Nazi-occupied Europe on their trek to Berlin, they overran German POW and concentration camps along the way. At first, the Germans evacuated the camps and transferred the prisoners farther into the Reich. In the west, American prisoners were moved into eastern Germany and Poland, and in the east, Russian POWs were transferred to western Germany, France and Austria. In the end, the American forces liberated camps that contained thousands of former Red Army soldiers, and the Soviets occupied camps that contained thousands of captured American soldiers and airmen. The repatriation of prisoners from both sides should have been a fairly simple manner. But it wasn't. There was a third, very significant group of prisoners in the scheme of affairs that would surface as a detriment to prisoner swap negotiations.

Besides the Red Army POWs from the liberated Nazi camps, the western armies also captured hundreds of thousands of anti-communist Russian nationals who had fled the Soviet Union and had joined Hitler's army to fight Stalin. This fact was not lost on the Soviets, and as soon as Germany surrendered, enquiries were made by the Red Army staff concerning the disposition of such captured enemy prisoners. Stalin wanted them turned over to Red Army authorities for transport back to Russian-occupied territory to answer for their treachery. The punishment for treason was summary execution.

But Stalin took treachery a bit further when he condemned not only those who had turned against Mother Russia, but anyone who had refused to fight until death and had managed to either get captured by the Germans or had surrendered while still able to fight. In Stalin's mind, this covered virtually every prisoner taken.

The American high command was deluged with pleas from Soviet prisoners who refused to be repatriated. Each man knew that to return to Russia meant death. In one document of the period which describes the efforts of Allied soldiers to repatriate 399 Soviet soldiers, the feelings of the prisoners were quite evident:

> "All of these men refused to entrain. They begged to be shot. They resisted entrainment by taking off their clothing and refusing to leave their quarters.

> It was necessary to use tear gas and some force to drive them out. Tear gas forced them out of the building into the snow where those who had cut themselves fell exhausted and bleeding in the snow. Nine men hanged themselves and one had stabbed himself to death and one other who had stabbed himself subsequently died; while 20 others are in the hospital for self inflicted wounds. The entrainment was finally effected of 368 men who were sent off accompanied by a Russian liaison officer on a train carrying American guards. Six men escaped enroute. A number of men in the group claimed they were not Russians."[61]

In another instance, one which occurred in occupied Austria, British Field Marshal Harold Alexander, commander for Austria and Italy, received a message from American Twelfth Army Group, signed by Omar Bradley:

> "Still at large in lower Austria are surrendered forces comprising approximately 105,000 Germans NOT yet totally disarmed and 45,000 Cossacks who are fully armed and may NOT submit to being disarmed until after evacuation. The latter are accompanied by an estimated additional 11,000 camp followers (women, children, old men) who until segregated and disposed of as DPs, will be given same treatment as forces they accompany. To assist AFHQ forces these groups will be accepted by 12th Army Group units which will be responsible for any necessary disarmament and turned over to control of Seventh Army which will designate an assembly area in its name for their reception."

In the case of the Cossacks, who had fought against any mainstream government in Moscow since the days of the Czar, and especially hated the centralist thinking of the communists, being turned over to the Soviets after fighting against them meant death by firing squad or shipment to Siberia to die in a slave labor camp.

The Cossacks, who were wearing German uniforms when captured by Allied forces, demanded to be considered Prisoners of War under the Geneva Convention. Under these rules, they could legally, as *German* soldiers, refuse to be repatriated. They would then have to be treated as displaced persons and provided for in the country they were currently in, or in another suitable country that would agree to take them. But they could *not* be forced to return to the USSR.

To deal with this problem, the Allied command issued written orders to its officers: "Under no circumstances will those [Cossacks] captured serving in enemy forces be referred to as prisoners of war." Instead, they would be given the designation of Surrendered Enemy Personnel, or SEP. In one Top Secret message sent to V Corps by the Eighth Army headquarters, "Ruling now received 15th Army Group. All Soviet citizens including arrestable categories will be treated as surrendered personnel [SEP] and will therefore be handed over to Russians...Please take action accordingly." The change in terminology was semantical, but by changing the wording, the Geneva Convention could be conveniently circumvented.[62]

What happened next was disgraceful. Both the United States and Great Britain had committed themselves to enforcing repatriation. This was done for two reasons: to placate Stalin, and, in accordance to the Russian interpretation of the Yalta Agreement, to trade Russian POWs for the American, British and Commonwealth POWs Stalin now held hostage. To clarify the orders issued by the military government and SHAEF, Eisenhower's staff replied to an enquiry by Lieutenant General Courtney H. Hodges (Commander, 1st U.S. Army) with: "...as to how much force an Army Commander should use in the control of displaced Russians...Talking with Judge [John J.] McCloy today, he agreed that of course an Army Commander could use any force necessary to insure the success of this operation."

Field Marshal Alexander protested, but to no avail. In the last week in May, 1945, the British forces, in accordance with SHAEF directives, began forcefully repatriating the Cossacks. The orders issued to the troops stated, "...any attempt whatsoever at resistance will be dealt with firmly by shooting to kill." During the process, hundreds of Cossacks soldiers and their families either committed suicide, or were murdered immediately upon being handed over to Red Army political commissars.[63]

One unit of Russians expected to be forced to return at gun point was the *SS Galizien*, the Ukrainian Waffen SS Division. This unit was of particular interest to Stalin, for he had marked them to serve as an example of what would happen to Soviets who take up arms against their country.

The division had fought with the Nazis against the Red Army in 1942-43, but had been withdrawn from the front in 1944 due to heavy casualties. While they were in the process of regrouping away from the battle zone, the Germans were forced out of the Ukraine. Indigenous personnel who had served in Nazi-controlled local police and civil action units, many of which were used by the SS in hunting down and exterminating Poles and Jews, were no longer needed in that capacity. They were pulled out of Russia and transferred to the SS Galizien division which in turn brought the division's strength to a total of 9000 Russians.

But the Galiziens, purposely labeled POWs by the OSS, would not be forced to return to Russia. Instead of being labeled SEP, they were marked by the OSS as future assets and secretly smuggled into Italy where they were hidden until other arrangements could be made for them. The American and British intelligence communities had hand-selected this particular group as future agents and paramilitary operatives for Eastern Europe and Russia in the projected Cold War against the Soviets. They were clandestinely hidden from military authorities, and in 1947, over 8,000 Galiziens were quietly slipped into Canada, many of which eventually entered the United States.

As the Galiziens were in the process of disappearing into the netherworld of the OSS, over 50,000 Cossacks were being forcibly returned to Russian control. In return, the Soviets traded only 2,000 POWs, all British.

In another incident, where U.S. prisoners *were* traded for Russian POWs, Americans witnessed first-hand the fate of those unfortunates who took their places. In Reisa, where the American POWs that had been held by the Germans in Stalag IVB had been moved by the Russians, a prisoner swap took place between SHAEF personnel and the Russian NKVD under General K.D. Golubev. In this exchange, which occurred on May 25, 1945, only 3,000 of the known 6,000 American and British prisoners that were held in the camp were turned over to SHAEF.

The Russians, using this exchange as a propaganda opportunity, lined the American and British POWs up in ranks in a large field near a rock quarry. Soviet army cameras ground away as the hostages were released to American control and began boarding a convoy of trucks that lined one side of the field.

But as the Russian POWs, which had been brought to the scene by buses, were herded away by the Russians, the cameras ceased operation and stood silent. Instead of a joyous reunion with their comrades, the solemn-faced Russian prisoners were marched down into the rock quarry, out of sight of the observers. Within minutes several machine guns opened up. For ten minutes their staccato bursts of fire echoed off the canyon walls. Only the gunners and officers returned.

When the American and British POWs began to protest loudly at what they had just witnessed, they were told by Allied officers to "keep your heads down, your mouths shut, and get on the trucks."[64]

The Allied High Command had realized from the beginning, VE Day, that gaining the return of the American POWs held in Russian territory would be difficult at best. Five days after VE day, the Associated Press from Allied Advance Headquarters in Reims, France, reported that "Nearly half of the estimated 200,000 British and 76,000 American prisoners of war still in Germany are believed to be within the Russian zone of occupation and Supreme Headquarters has twice requested a meeting or an agreement to arrange their return.

Ten days later, a meeting between representatives of SHAEF under Assistant Chief of Staff (G-1) Major General R.W. Barker and Lieutenant General Golubev, who served as Soviet Assistant Administrator for Repatriation, took place at Halle, Germany. Of major concern to the Americans and British was the Soviet refusal to provide a complete accounting of American and British servicemen held within Russian-occupied territory. In a cable from British Marshal Tedder, Deputy Commander of SHAEF under Eisenhower, sent to all major Allied Command officers and officials, Tedder exposed the Russians deceptive actions. The secret cable, S-94080, dated June 29, 1945, was addressed to "AGWAR FOR WARCOS," and was signed by Tedder at "SHAEFMAIN"

> "Before the HALLE Conference we had made numerous attempts to visit PW Camps in the Russian Zone and always met a firm refusal. After HALLE Conference General GOLEBEV [sic] asked to visit Camps where Russians were being kept. We agreed and asked him for permission to visit Camps in the Russian Zone. He agreed to allow 1 of our Officers to visit 5 camps. One of my representatives started on the trip accompanied by a Russian Major who stated he had the necessary orders. After visiting the first and nearest Camp the Russian Officer produced orders signed by General GOLUBEV restricting our Officer visit to the one Camp. This is the only instance of Soviet authorities permitting US or British Officers to visit Camps in their area, which is in sharp contrast to the liberal policy pursued by us."[65]

It quickly became apparent that the Russians had their own agenda concerning repatriation. In a show of force during the conference, the Russian delegation set the stage for what was to come. According to Major General Barker, "When the Russian mission was finally assembled, it numbered some forty officers and forty to fifty enlisted men. Among the Russian officers were one Lieutenant General and six Major Generals. The Russian party arrived in requisitioned German vehicles of all makes, and [an] American type armored car, fully equipped [armed], and a radio truck, which was in operation most of the time. All Russian male personnel were heavily armed with pistols, sub-machine guns and rifles."[66]

When the meeting started, the Allied staff requested that teams of American and British officers be allowed to go to the camps, speak with the prisoners, make rosters of personnel for accountability, and prepare the groups for repatriation. They also asked that permission be granted for U.S. air transport aircraft to be allowed into Soviet airspace, and for permission to land at the nearest air field facility to provide transport for the POWs. The first request was quickly vetoed, and the second, regarding air transport, is described by Barker:

> "I proposed the immediate initiation of steps looking toward prompt release and return to Allied control of all British and American prisoners of war then in Russian custody, using air and motor transport. This proposal was firmly resisted by General Golebev [sic], who cited all manner of local administrative difficulties which precluded the operation. I so informed him. The Russian position was very clear that neither now, nor at any time in the future, would they permit Allied airplanes to be used for the movement into or out of their territory of prisoners of war or displaced persons, except "Distinguished persons, sick and wounded."[67]

After the first meeting in Halle, Barker wrote that SHAEF: "...came to the firm conviction that British and American prisoners of war were, in effect, being held hostage by the Russians until deemed expedient by them to permit their release." It was estimated at that time that the Red Army held over 344,000 Allied servicemen of U.S., British, French, Dutch and Belgian forces. In addition to these, it was estimated that they held an additional 1,100,000 "Displaced Persons" of French, Dutch and Belgian origin.[68]

Six days after the first report issued by Barker describing his findings that the Russians were going to hold hostages, he wrote that: "There is every indication that the Russians intend to make a big show of rapid repatriation of our men, although I am of the opinion that we may find a reluctance to return them all, for an appreciable time to come, since those men constitute a valuable bargaining point. It will be necessary for us, therefore to arrange for constant liaison and visits of inspection to 'uncover' our men."[69]

The dilemma faced by SHAEF quickly became a monster that was growing by leaps and bounds. The war was over, the U.S. military forces were being sent home, families awaited the return of their brave fighting men, so why the delay? Why could not the powerful American military machine that had defeated the Nazis and was on the verge of defeating the Japanese, find and return our POWs?

What both the American public and the Allied field officers did not realize was the fact that the intelligence services, especially the OSS and British Intelligence, were entering the scene through the back door.

Anticipating the "Cold War," and having already decided that the Russians would be the next world threat, preparations using both indigenous and captured enemy personnel were already being taken to field the next decade's spy and sabotage apparatus. As already described in previous chapters, hundreds of war criminals were being hidden, and subsequently saved from prosecution, by the OSS and the British, and as with the Galizien SS veterans, a private army was being rescued for future use.

At the upper levels of SHAEF and the U.S. and British governments, a decision had to be made. Massive numbers of Allied prisoners remained in Russian control, obviously held hostage for bargaining chips, and the Russians were making demands that were impossible to grant if the multi-faceted juggling act between the intelligence community, the military/industrial complex, and the Geneva Convention were to continue. The OSS wanted the German Armies East spy network under Reinhard Gehlen and their various indigenous expatriate assets; the military/industrial coalition wanted the German scientists and their technology, already being transported out of Europe by the PAPERCLIP teams; and the Geneva Convention explicitly forbade forced repatriation.

The forced return of unneeded Russian and enemy personnel was quickly handled by the change of designation to SEP. But the repatriation of the Western forces personnel held by the Russians was another matter. If the Soviets would not give them back willingly, and it appeared that they would not, then the advantages of keeping the Ukrainian, Yugoslav, Hungarian, Serbian and other east-bloc nationals, and the German spy apparatus, scientists and other Nazis, would have to be weighed against regaining possession of the western forces POWs.

For the American and British intelligence services, who stood the most to gain in "to the victor go the spoils," the answer was plain. The POWs had to be sacrificed to benefit National Security. But how could this be done? The American and British people would never stand for such a thing. No one would be willing to trade their son, husband or other relative for a Nazi scientist, spy or some Russian or east-bloc ethnic tribesman. Not even for the national interest.

The answer came in a game of numbers. It was a simple matter of accountability. The plan would have to do three things: 1) It would have to be shown that the Russians, over a period of weeks or months, had repatriated all Allied POWs in their control; 2) Allied forces would have to be shown as expending an all-out effort in searching out, locating and returning both incarcerated POWs and those "lost and wandering" in groups; 3) Any POWs not returned would have to be carried on the lists as either Missing in Action (MIA), or Killed In Action-Body Not Recovered (KIA/BNR). Simply put, any POWs not recovered would be written off.

Chapter 14

Into The Gulags

On May 19, 1945, four days before the Halle meeting took place, Eisenhower sent a cable to field commanders that stated: "Numbers of US prisoners estimated in Russian control 25,000."

The message was written as a statement of fact. Eisenhower, by whatever means, had obtained solid information concerning the rounded-off number of American prisoners taken by the Russians. But this message was written and transmitted *before* it was realized how obstinate the Russians would be in the coming months.

With this number now released and known by all, something had to be done to reduce the amount of personnel noted in the original message as held inside Soviet-controlled territory. It was essential that the strength of Stalin's bargaining position be reduced, and at the same time the American public had to be placated.

On June 1st, SHAEF message FWD-23059 was transmitted by Eisenhower:

> 1. Due to local transfers of US PW from Russia area to US control immediately prior to and during discussions with Russians which ended 22 May, it is now estimated that only approximately 15,000 US PW were held by the Russians as of 21 May, and not 25,000 as quoted in our cable G 88613.
>
> 2. Of these 15,000 there have been transferred to US control 12,400 since 21 May.
> 3. It is estimated that not more than 2-3000 US POWs still remain in Russian hands. These no doubt are scattered in small groups as no information is available of any large concentrations of POWs in any one camp.

In this one message, written only 10 days after the initial Halle Conference to discuss repatriation, the number of prisoners reported held by the Russians now numbered less than 3,000. The problem with this message, unforeseen by the senders when it was written and transmitted, was another message that had just entered the system from the other end, Moscow.

In a Top Secret letter dated May 31, 1945, sent to Lieutenant General Slavin, Assistant Chief of the Red Army in Moscow, by Major General John R. Deane, U.S. Army Commanding General of the U.S. Military Mission in Moscow, Deane stated:

> "I have had a cable from General Marshall in which he states he has received information which indicates that 15,597 United States liberated prisoners of war are now under control of Marshal Tolbukhin.[70]

The next day, Eisenhower signed a cable to AGWAR that stated:

> "It is now estimated that only small numbers of U.S. prisoners of war still remain in Russian hands. These no doubt are scattered singly and in small groups as no information is available of any large numbers in specific camps. They are being received now only in small driblets and being reported as received ...Everything possible is being done to recover U.S. personnel and to render accurate and prompt reports thereon to the War Department."

This message, another work of disinformation by the SHAEF staff, was remarkable in that at this same time, the Russians had admitted that they held large numbers of Americans in several camps. In the southern zone alone, Allied prisoners had been moved out of the German *Stalags* to Reisa, Dessaw, Magdeburg, Parchim, Torgeau, Wismar and Crivitz. And they were still there.

To add further problems to the too-hasty concoction of disinformation being released by the High Command, another message, written by Theater Provost Marshal Major General Milton A. Reckord on May 30th, entered the message traffic at a very inopportune moment. In it, it asked that SHAEF make arrangements for shipping between 10,000 and 15,000 American POWs home when they were released from Russian control.

On the same day that Eisenhower's cable "explained" that only small numbers of U.S. POWs still remained at large, the *New York Times* reported, via the War Department, "...substantially all of the American soldiers taken prisoner in Europe are accounted for, Under Secretary Robert P. Patterson said 'This means that it is not expected that many of those who are still being carried as missing in action will appear later as having been prisoners of war.'"[71]

This is a remarkable bit of evidence. For if this information was printed in New York on June 1st, the very day Eisenhower's explanatory message, labeled Secret, went out to his commanders, then how did the *New York Times* get the same information the day before when it would have to be in the press room in time for the next day's edition?

It was because the official U.S. Government's position, on May 31st, 1945, was that no prisoners, other than whatever stragglers might crop up, remained unaccounted for.

The key to the numbers game being played by the U.S. Government, instigated by the OSS in their efforts to hide the loss of the American prisoners, and to buy time for Operation Paperclip, the absorption of Gehlen's organization, and the massive movements of the anti-communist Russian expatriates, was a simple change of designation on status lists. The POWs were broken down into three categories of missing, and one of "Returned to Military Control." Of the three missing categories, the first was "POW (Current Status)" which undoubtedly covered any embarrassing stragglers that might surface later; the second was "Other Missing in Action," which was divided into two sub-categories: "Declared Dead," and "MIA (Current Status)."

And it was very easy to declare a man dead.

In a report issued by Lieutenant Colonel L.L. Ballard, Jr., Chief of the Strength and Accounting and Statistical Office, Office of the Chief of Staff, dated February 26th, 1946, 90,937 personnel were shown as "Returned to Mil. Control," 2,997 as MIA (Current Status), and *11,753* as "Declared Dead."

And then the report indicates that 5,414 were still carried as "POW (Current Status)." Where did Ballard get these figures, if all U.S. personnel, with the exception of stragglers, had either been returned or were dead, as reported by SHAEF seven months previous?

In actuality, of the more than 25,000 Americans held by the Russians at the end of the war, only 4,165 ever came home. This count is the total of figures from the Daily Evacuation Cables that covered the period from the end of the war until all Americans had been declared repatriated, KIA/BNA, or MIA. This left over 20,800 still unaccounted for, all known to have been taken alive by the Red Army as it advanced across Eastern Europe.

Stalin's doctrine concerning captured prisoners, both friend and foe, remained constant throughout the Soviet theater of operations. As thousands of German POWs were being transported eastward toward the Siberian gulags, even more Japanese were being brought into the Asian Soviet Union. Imperial Japanese Army soldiers, captured in the last few weeks of the war in Manchuria and Korea in the last-minute Russian push into East Asia, were being herded aboard box cars or forced marched to holding camps in southeastern Siberia near the Russian city of Khabarovsk.

In Tokyo, General Douglas MacArthur and his Allied administrators had been advised by the Japanese government of the Japanese POWs being removed from Manchuria and Korea, and had been asked to intercede in their behalf. On December 21, 1945, the Four-Power Allied Council, the military government of Japan, met and discussed the issue. The Russian delegation walked out.

Lieutenant General Kusma Derevyanko, leader of the Russian group, refused to take part in any debate concerning the American allegation that over *376,000*

Japanese POWs and civilian detainees had been taken into the Soviet Union and had not been repatriated. MacArthur's staff made offers of "assistance" to the Russians in returning the Japanese, even offering help in utilizing American assets to transport the prisoners if the logistics were beyond Russian capabilities. The Soviets refused all offers.

Part of the reason the Russians, who had not entered the war against Japan until the last few weeks, kept custody of the Japanese, was because they discovered what was happening in secret in Tokyo. In anticipation of the Cold War, the Americans, using the intelligence operatives from Fort Detrick's chemical warfare unit, were making secret deals with former members of Unit 731, Col. Shiro Ishii's biological warfare unit.

When the Soviet Union finally entered the war against Japan, Russian units that had been poised *en masse* just across the Manchurian/Soviet border raced south in a pall mall effort to obtain as much Chinese and Korean territory as possible before Japan surrendered. In their advance, they captured Harbin, Ping Fan, and Mukden. Though the American, British and Australian POWs held in these locations were released within a few weeks, the Japanese that had been left behind, and the few records that remained of Ishii's experiments, had been seized by the Red Army. It was then that they discovered that BW experiments had taken place, and that the majority of Ishii's group had evaded capture and had evidently made it back to Japan. These findings were further reinforced when several captured members of 731 were tried in Soviet war trials at Khabarovsk. These men, "pleading guilty" to lesser war crimes, stated that the principle 731 staff had successfully retreated from Manchuria and had probably made it home.

If this was so, then the information they had was invaluable to whoever caught them first. But the majority of the troops that occupied Japan were the Americans. That meant that unless the Russians could force the Ishii people into public light and to divulge what they had discovered to one and all, then the information, if the Americans got to them first, would be proprietary. The Russians would be left in the cold.

Derevyanko demanded that Ishii be found and brought to trial. Unless he and all of his 731 personnel were apprehended and tried, and the information concerning their experiments exposed, the Japanese government would find that it would be hard to negotiate for the return of their prisoners.

When pressed for numbers, the Russians admitted having 95,000 Japanese prisoners of war and "other war criminals." In actuality, by the best estimates available at the time, they held over 376,000. By 1949, even though the Japanese government and newspapers protested vehemently and continuously, almost none had been returned. Those that remained in the slave labor camps of Siberia, and would remain so until they died, had, like their American and British counterparts taken in Europe, been sacrificed for intelligence purposes.[72]

By the end of 1946, scores of eyewitness reports surfaced describing large numbers of Americans and other Western POWs still being held by the Russians. Though the Pentagon, under orders that originated from the OSS, whose European office was headed by Allen Dulles, had created paperwork to cover the loss of more than 20,000 Americans, the varied reports indicating they still existed continued to trickle in. One German returnee, who managed to escape Soviet control in May of 1945, identified three American paratroopers: Corporal Bucki Okhane, PFC Olen Taylor, and Pvt. Billy Hafers, as being held prisoner in a Russian camp near Dresden. The German, who stated that the men had been put aboard a train and sent east, produced a photograph of Taylor in his army uniform, signed by Taylor. None of these men were ever repatriated.[73]

Another photograph of an American serviceman, Victor Boehm, was smuggled out of a Russian camp and eventually surfaced in the summer of 1945. The information that came with it reported that Boehm had been transported to Siberia, where he was put to work in a Russian tank factory with 200 other Americans.

Then in December, message S-34414 was sent to the American Embassy in Moscow from U.S. Forces, Europe, who evidently did not yet understand the official U.S. position on the matter:

> "Information received here that as of 30 August 1945 the Russians were holding prisoner approximately 45 American enlisted men and two officers, one captain and one lieutenant, at Rada near Tambov in the Stalingrad area. Prisoners were reported in barbed wire under guard."

The headquarters of U.S. Forces, Europe, was not the only player left in the dark on how to treat live sighting reports of Americans being held by the Russians. Even isolated OSS teams provided information. In a report from one such team, dated December 18, 1945, several allied prisoners were reported still being held in a camp inside Russia:

> 1. Informant, a Pole forced to serve in the German Army was taken prisoner by the Russians in 1944...at the end of 1945CApril, he escaped and tried to get to Europe. He was, however, arrested by the NKVD after he had got beyond Moscow, and placed in the P.O.W. and Internee Camp in TAMBOV....
>
> The prisoners numbered, in the informant's estimation, well over 20,000; they were both military and civilian, most likely over-run by the Russians during the offensive. When informant left the camp there were...Englishmen and several score Americans...When he was leaving these Englishmen and Americans asked him urgently to notify the Allied authorities of their plight."[74]

And there were hundreds of other leaks that testified to the existence of Americans being held in Russia long after the cessation of hostilities. Ironically, the one organization that *could* glean the most up-to-date information and form a complete picture of what was happening inside Russian-controlled territory and inside the Soviet Union itself, was the network of agents employed by Reinhard Gehlen. This, however, was an obvious conflict of interest. If Gehlen's people provided such information, it would be apparent to the Russians where the information came from. Gehlen, and his OSS protectors, would have been exposed.[75]

In the end, the OSS, and its newest and largest intelligence network inside eastern Europe and the USSR, kept silent.

And over 20,000 Americans disappeared forever into the gulags.

Chapter 15

Abandoned In Korea

On June 15, 1950, 10 divisions of North Korean troops swarmed into South Korea. Their goal: unify the country under one government. A communist government.

In the narrowest sense, the invasion marked the beginning of a civil war between peoples of a divided country. But in actuality, it represented a break in tensions between the two great power blocs that had emerged from World War II.

The North Koreans felt confident they could capture all of South Korea before any outside power could intervene effectively. This confidence was based primarily on the strength of the North Korean People's Army, which had been formed around a hard core of veterans who had fought with the Soviet and Chinese forces during World War II, and afterward, as part of the Chinese Communist armies against Nationalist China. Equipped and trained by the Soviets, the NKPA was, with the exception of naval and air power, an extremely efficient Third World ground combat force.

The South Korean Army, on the other hand, consisted of 95,000 ill-equipped and poorly trained peasants that represented more of a militia and constabulary than an army. Though the Korean-based American military attempted to assist the South Koreans in organizing and training their army, limited equipment, restricted command authority, and a policy that allowed the South Korean military establishment to become no more than an internal security force made it almost impossible for American staff and trainers to create an army capable of meeting a modern, well-equipped and led force.

On that warm June day they paid the penalty for their unpreparedness. Three days later, after smashing through the weak South Korean lines at the 38th Parallel, a tank-infantry force leading the main North Korean thrust entered Seoul, the capital of South Korea located on the west coast only 35 miles south of the parallel. On the same day, secondary North Korean spearheads raced into central and eastern Korea to keep pace with the main drive.

In the face of this onslaught, the beaten and disorganized South Korean Army retreated in full disorder, abandoning most of its equipment as it recoiled to the South. After pausing briefly to regroup, the North Koreans began hot pursuit intending to totally annihilate the rag-tag South Korean military.

Stunned by this planned Communist aggression, the free world turned to the fledgling United Nations. For the first time since its founding, it was faced with a major conflict requiring massive intervention. Its very existence depended upon how well it met the challenge.

On the 25th of June, the United Nations demanded a cessation of hostilities and the complete withdrawal of North Korean troops from the South. When that failed, the Security Council requested, on the 27th, for UN member nations to furnish military assistance to the South Korean republic.

President Truman had already anticipated the call. On the 26th, he authorized U.S. air and naval forces to attack North Korean troops and installations located in South Korea. Then on the 29th, he broadened the range of U.S. air and naval targets to North Korea and authorized the use of U.S. Army troops to protect Pusan, Korea's major port at the southeastern tip of the peninsula.

Meanwhile, Douglas MacArthur, from his headquarters in Tokyo, flew to Korea to reconnoiter the battle scene. After watching South Korean troops flounder in attempts to organize defenses south of the Han river, MacArthur recommended to Washington that a U.S. Army regiment be committed in the Seoul area at once and that this commitment be built up to two divisions as soon as possible. In response, Truman, on June 30th, authorized MacArthur to use all forces available to him.

MacArthur found his assets sadly lacking. At hand, he had the 1st Cavalry Division, the 7th, 24th and 25th Infantry Divisions, all under the U.S. Eighth Army in Japan, and the 29th Regimental Combat Team on Okinawa. None of these were ready for battle. Each division lacked a third of its organic infantry and artillery units, and almost all of its armor. Besides these shortcomings, these divisions were only 60-70 percent strength. The 29th RCT was proportionately short.

Weapons and equipment were war-torn remnants from World War II, and some weapons, tanks and artillery pieces in particular, could hardly be found by the various commands. (The commanders of these units had no way of knowing that thousands of tons of equipment had been prepositioned in Korea by the OSS/CIA at the end of World War II, and had disappeared ostensibly into the international arms market. This massive quantity of war material was half of the stockpile that had been gathered in Okinawa at the end of WWII for the aborted invasion of Japan. The other half, coincidentally, was secretly sent to Vietnam by the OSS/CIA in 1946-47 to equip Ho Chi Minh's Viet Minh guerrilla force. Examples of this shipment showed up in Dien Bien Phu in the Viet Minh's artillery, American 105mm howitzers and 75mm pack howitzers).[76]

Some weapons, medium tanks and artillery pieces in particular, could scarcely be found in the Far East. Most of these items, along with thousands of tons of other war industry produce, had been dumped in the ocean at the end of World War II. This was done, according the Pentagon, to keep from flooding the civilian market with returning war surplus materials.[77]

To compound this situation, ammunition reserves were suddenly found to amount to about 45 days supply. As for combat readiness, the U.S. occupation troops had neglected field combat training and were found sadly lacking in war-fighting skills.

All of this, plus a serious deficiency in tactical leadership skills within the company and battalion-level chains-of-command, became readily apparent upon deployment to Korea. Instead of utilizing the principle of mass, the American units were sent in piecemeal. On July 2, only two rifle companies from the 24th Division were flown to Pusan, where they moved by train and truck to Osan, 30 miles below Seoul. The mission of this tiny force was to fight a delaying action against the might of the NKPA divisions and all of their artillery and tanks until more troops could arrive from Japan.

Almost before the Americans could dig in, the NKPA, supported by 30 tanks, renewed their drive to the south. On the 5th, the two forces met. The Americans held on for five hours, but the onslaught quickly proved too much for the tiny band. They were outflanked and shoved back with heavy casualties, and within minutes of breaking contact, retreated pall mall away from the zone of action leaving all equipment behind.

By the 6th, the remainder of the 24th Division had arrived and had taken blocking positions along the Kum River north of Taejon, 60 miles southeast of Osan. Strung out to the east, remnants of the South Korean Army held positions 50 miles above Taegu. And by the 14th of July, the 25th Division had landed and occupied defenses east of the 24th. The 1st Cavalry arrived four days later.

And so it began. Over the next three years, the U.N. and Communist forces would battle the length of the Korean peninsula, stopping just short of Manchuria. In late October of 1950, China entered the war on behalf of the North Koreans, and by the 27th of November, four Chinese armies had joined the fray. This massive addition to the North Korean side forced the U.S. X Corps to withdraw, leaving the 1st Marine Division and the U.S. Army 7th Division encircled at the Chosin Reservoir. The Marines and their Army counterparts managed to break out, fight their way 75 miles to the sea, through sub-zero temperatures, bringing their dead, wounded and equipment with them. Still, men were lost and never recovered, as was the case in every major action of the war.[78]

The war became a series of attacks, withdrawals, and counter attacks. Finally, by June of 1951, the policies governing the conduct of the war began to change. The pendulum movements of the armies had grown smaller and smaller as each force established and strengthened its positions and defenses. Bloody hill fights ensued in which the same ground was taken and re-taken over and over. But the line seldom changed. The war was becoming stagnant. It appeared impossible for either side to win. As a result, the U.N., and especially U.S., objective in the conflict shifted from military victory to political settlement. The U.N. and the North Koreans and Chinese began to negotiate a peace.

But there were many problems. Before a truce and ceasefire could be negotiated, boundaries had to be established. This called for each side to continue to jockey for position in the mountains along the 38th Parallel. But for the U.N. forces, the issue became almost tactically impossible. For by June 1st, all U.N. ground forces could not, without approval from Washington, make a general advance north of a meandering east-west line that had been established along the parallel. The only tactical operations permitted were those necessary for self defense against an attacking force. In the field, the commanders helplessly bore the weight of frustration as the war immediately bogged down. From this point, the troops were prohibited by the politicians from applying the principles of war beyond the tactical level, involving small units only.

Finally, on July 27, 1953, after a series of "peace talks" at Panmunjom, and hundreds of bloody skirmishes and a few outright battles, armistice was declared and hostilities "officially" ended. But as in World War II, there were a few items on the agenda that remained to be cleaned up. One concerned the fate of American troops captured by the North Koreans and Chinese.

It was called Operation BIG SWITCH. It began on August 5th, 1953 and continued to September 6th. It was the largest, and the final, exchange of prisoners between the U.N. forces and the Communists.

In the beginning, the North Koreans and Chinese demanded an "all-for-all" prisoner exchange. But the United States was reluctant to agree to such a wholesale swap. Based on its World War II experience, and knowing that mandatory repatriation did not work in Europe, especially with the behind-the-scenes intervention of the clandestine services, the North Koreans and the U.S. finally agreed on voluntary, or "non-forcible" repatriation that would permit each side to release only those prisoners who wished to return to their respective countries.

The problem with this plan, after a half-century of dealing with the Communist mind, is now obvious. But in 1953, diplomats and soldiers alike still attempted to permit the Communists a certain degree of latitude, saving face, so to say, in agreements. This plan of voluntary repatriation worked to the advantage of the Communists. By simply stating that someone does not wish to return, that particular individual could disappear forever.

According to official documents, approximately 14,200 Communist Chinese POWs elected *not* to return to the Peoples Republic of China, while only 21 Americans are known to have actually, beyond question, elected to remain voluntarily in Communists hands.

But there is still a question concerning over 8,000 other U.S. MIAs, many of which were known to be held captive after Operation Big Switch and never repatriated. In one article of the period, the *New York Times* reported that "...General James A. Van Fleet, retired commander of the United States Eighth Army in Korea, estimated tonight that a large percentage of the 8,000 American soldiers listed as missing in Korea were alive."[79]

This was not the result of findings after Big Switch; the U.S. military and intelligence services knew something about what was happening, and possibly the end result, five days into the month-long Big Switch operation. In a report by the U.N. Combined Command for Reconnaissance Activity, Korea, it was stated that: "Figures show that the total number of MIAs, plus known captives, less those to be US repatriated, leaves a balance of 8,000 unaccounted for." The report goes on to state that many of this number had been transported to Manchuria, China and the Soviet Union during the span of the war, and that: "...many POWs transferred have been technicians and factory workers."[80]

In a secret memorandum written by Hugh M. Milton II, Assistant Secretary of the Army in January, 1954, four months after the conclusion of Big Switch, a clandestine plan to recover lost Americans held by the Communists is mentioned:

B. THE UNACCOUNTED-FOR AMERICANS BELIEVED TO BE STILL HELD ILLEGALLY BY THE COMMUNISTS (SECRET).

> 1. There are approximately 954 United States personnel falling in the group. What the Department of the Army and other interested agencies is doing about their recovery falls into two parts. First, the direct efforts of the UNC Military Armistice Commission to obtain an accurate accounting, and second, efforts by G2 of the Army, both overt and covert, to locate, identify, and recover these individuals. G2 is making an intensive effort through its information collection system world-wide, to obtain information on these people and *has a plan for clandestine action to obtain the recovery of one or more to establish the case positively that prisoners are still being held by the Communists.* No results have been obtained yet in this effort. The direct efforts of the UNC [United Nations Command] are being held in abeyance pending further study of the problem by the State Department...
>
> 2. A further complicating factor in the situation is that *to continue to carry these personnel in a missing status is costing over one million dollars annually. It may become necessary at some future date to drop them from our records as 'missing and presumed dead.*" [Author's emphasis]

The Defense Department, as the War Department before it, took this advice handily. As with the missing prisoners, the "non-repatriated POWs", of World War II (and World War I), the men were simply written off as "missing and presumed dead." In an April, 1954, memo to Milton written by Major General Robert Young, Assistant Chief of Staff and G-1 of the Army, Young states:

> 2. Under the provisions of Public Law 490 (77th Congress), the Department of the Army, after careful review of each case and interrogation of returning prisoners of war, has placed 618 soldiers, known to have been in enemy

> hands and unaccounted for by the Communist Forces in the following categories:
>
> 313 -Finding of Death- Administratively determined, under the provisions of Public Law 490, by Department of the Army.
>
> 275 -Report of Death- reported on good authority by returning prisoners.
>
> 21 - Dishonorable Discharge.[81]
>
> 4 - Under investigation, prognosis undecided. Missing in Action for over one year.
>
> 2 - Returned to Military Control.

These numbers total 615 personnel, a significant drop from the original report that 954 Americans remained in Communist hands. This discrepancy occurred during the preceding months when a series of "presumed findings of death for unaccounted-for Americans" were utilized to cut the numbers down.

Of considerable note is the first category of this report, "Administratively determined under Public Law 490, by Department of the Army." How does one "administratively determine" that a missing soldier, known to have been taken into captivity and still be alive at the end of the conflict, to now be dead? Such a finding on the government's behalf is simply a matter of convenience and economics. By removing someone from the MIA status and placing them on the KIA list, there is a one-time insurance payment to the survivors. This saves the government hundreds of thousands of dollars of monthly service pay, which includes promotions and pay raises, over the life of the POW. And it saves a great deal of embarrassment for helpless military officers and politicians who fail to secure the return of their lost men.

But what *really* happened to them?

As with the World War II prisoners, most appear to have been evacuated out of the war zone. According to several documents, the majority of missing men went to China and the Soviet Union. In one report from the Office of Special Operations of the Central Intelligence Agency:

> "At the time of the official repatriation, some of our repatriates stated that they had been informed by the Communists that they (the Communists) were holding 'some' U.S. flyers as 'political prisoners' rather than as prisoners of war and that these people would have to be negotiated for through political or diplomatic channels. Due to the fact that we did not recognize the red regime in China, no political negotiations were instituted, although State did have some exploratory discussions with the British in an

> attempt to get at the problem. The situation was relatively dormant when, in late November 1954, the Peking radio announced that 13 of the 'political prisoners' had been sentenced for 'spying.' This announcement caused a public uproar and a demand from U.S. citizens, Congressional leaders and organizations for action to effect their release."[82]

But there were many more than the thirteen airmen reported here. Canadian Squadron Leader Andrew R. MacKenzie, who had been captured, transported to China and held in the same camp for two years, reported after he was exchanged that he had been held with a number of United States airmen and that none of the Americans in the camp were on the list of eleven whose sentencing had been announced by the Chinese on November 23, 1954.[83]

And there were other reports. Every time the government felt that it was succeeding in damage control and the issue could be put behind, other reports of sightings or information regarding live POWs being held in Russia or China surfaced. In one shocking report that arrived in Washington by Foreign Service Dispatch cable, dated March 23, 1954, sent from the U.S. diplomatic post in Hong Kong, the live sighting of hundreds of American POWs was reported:

> American POWs reported en route to Siberia.
>
> A recently arrived Greek refugee from Manchuria has reported seeing several hundred American prisoners of war being transferred from Chinese trains to Russian trains at Manchouli near the border of Manchuria and Siberia. The POWs were seen late in 1951 and in the spring of 1952 by the informant and a Russian friend of his. The informant was interrogated on two occasions by the Assistant Air Liaison Officer and the Consulate General agrees with his evaluation of the information as probably true and the evaluation of the source as unknown reliability. The full text of the initial Air Liaison Office report follows:
>
> First report dated March 16, 1954, from Air Liaison Office, Hong Kong, to USAF Washington, G2.
>
> "This office has interviewed refugee source who states that he observed hundreds of prisoners of war in American uniforms being sent into Siberia in late 1951 and 1952. Observations were made at Manchouli (Lupin), 49 degrees 50' - 117 degrees 30' Manchuria Road Map, AMSL 201 First Edition, on USSR-Manchurian border. Source observed POWs on railway station platform loading into trains for movement into Siberia. In railway restaurant source closely observed three POWs who were under guard and were conversing in English. POWs wore sleeve insignia which indicated POWs were Air Force noncommissioned officers. Source states that there were a great number of Negroes among POW shipments and also states that at no time later were any POWs observed returning from Siberia...."

> ...[according to source] POWs wore OD outer clothing described as not heavy inasmuch as weather considered early spring. Source identified from pictures service jacket, field, M1943. No belongings except canteen. No ornaments were observed.
>
> Condition appeared good, no wounded all ambulatory.
>
> Station divided into two sections with tracks on each side of loading platform. On Chinese side POWs accompanied by Chinese guards. POWs passed through gate bisecting platform to Russian train manned and operated by Russians. Russian trainmen wore dark blue or black tunic with silver colored shoulder boards. Source says this [is] regular train uniform because ["but"] he knows the trainmen are [actually] military wearing regular train uniforms.
>
> ...Source states [his] job was numbering railroad cars at Manchouli every time subsequent POW shipments passed through Manchouli. Source says these shipments were reported often and occurred when United Nation forces in Korea were on the offensive....
>
> ...Further information as to number of POWs observed source states that first observation *filled a seven passenger car train* and second observation about the same....
>
> "...Comment Reporting Officer: Source is very careful not to exaggerate information and is positive of identification of American POWs."[84]

And the reports kept coming. From returned POWs, who reported comrades left behind and never brought home, to escapees and late repatriates who described camps, conditions and personnel, the information continued to leak out from behind the Bamboo Curtain. For the politicians and peace-time military bureaucrats, the issue had to not only be addressed for this war, but all future wars as well.

In a report titled "Recovery of Unrepatriated Prisoners of War," the Defense Advisory Committee on Prisoners of War provided a list of solutions to the problem that ranged from instilling in soldiers a "don't get captured" attitude, to more flexible response by field commanders in dealing with the enemy on prisoner exchange proceedings. But one part of the report stood out from the rest, and became the standard mindset of the United States Government for not only Korea, but World War II, Vietnam and very probably, all future conflicts.

"...The military courses of action apparently cannot be taken unilaterally...The problem becomes a philosophical one. If we are 'at war,' cold, hot or otherwise, casualties and losses must be expected and perhaps we must learn to live with this type of thing. If we are in for fifty years of peripheral 'firefights' we may be forced to adopt a rather cynical attitude on this for political course of action something like General Erskine outlined which would (1) instill in the soldier a much more effective 'don't get captured' attitude...."

As these whispered-behind-closed-doors courses of action were being presented, the public face of government continued to present a more acceptable front. In an attempt to resolve the problem, in plain sight of the media, the United States Department of State sent an official U.S. diplomatic note to Moscow:

> "The Embassy of the United States of America presents its compliments to the Ministry of Foreign Affairs of the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics and has the honor to request the Ministry's assistance in the following matter.
>
> "The United States Government has recently received reports which support earlier indications that American prisoners of war who had seen action in Korea have been transported to the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics and that they are now in Soviet custody. The United States Government desires to receive urgently all information available to the Soviet Government concerning these American personnel and to arrange their repatriation at the earliest possible time."

The reply from the Soviets, dated May 12, 1954, was short and to the point.

> "In connection with the note of the Embassy of the United States of America, received by the Ministry of Foreign Affairs of the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics on May 5, 1954, the Ministry has the honor to state the following:
>
> The United States assertion contained in the indicated note that American prisoners of war who participated in military actions in Korea have allegedly been transferred to the Soviet Union and at the present time are being kept under Soviet guard is devoid of any foundation whatsoever and is clearly far-fetched, since there are not and have not been any such persons in the Soviet Union."

As the years went by, the issue of the Korean War POWs rose on occasion. Each time it was addressed with official voices of concern and sympathy on behalf of the government, and brief attention in the media. But little else. Between the two wars, World War II and Korea, the government had learned how to shove the POW/MIA issue under the rug and go on with life as usual. And they were getting very good at it. In one memo dealing with Korean war and Vietnam POWs, dated January 21, 1980, written by Michael Oksenberg and sent to Zbigniew Brezezinski, the National Security Advisor under President Jimmy Carter, the attitude is plainly seen:

> "...a letter from you is important to indicate that you take recent refugee reports of sightings of live Americans 'seriously.' This is simply good politics; DIA and State are playing this game, and you should not be the

> whistle blower. The idea is to say that the President is determined to pursue any lead concerning possible live MIAs."[85]

The lives of these missing men were now simply a matter of politics. Even though the Chinese, in 1973, released two American POWs that had been captured *during* the Korean war, along with an American pilot shot down during Vietnam, little action was taken to ascertain if the Chinese held any more. As for the Russians, *detente* would have suffered if the bothersome POW/MIA issue was pursued. It was simply more expeditious to write off one's casualties, count your losses, and drive on.

In the process of this developing political ideology, over 8,000 Americans were, by manipulation of figures on reports, abandoned to a life of slave labor by the very government that had sent them into harm's way.

And they would not be the last.[86]

Chapter 16

Plausible Deniability

Though the Soviets denied the existence of American POWs in the Soviet Union, the White House knew better. President Dwight D. Eisenhower, already a veteran of Soviet POW-holding tactics from his World War II experience, was privy to highly classified intelligence reports that not only mentioned the numbers of prisoners held, but exactly *where* they were held. And in many cases, specific names, ranks, units and hometowns of the reported hostages.

In several instances, Gulag internees of other nationalities that were released by the Soviets came out of Russia with information describing Americans by name, physical description, and often, details about the person's background that only that individual would know. Still, the bureaucrats, the Pentagon, and the American intelligence community refused to act. Instead, a policy of downplaying the POW issue became prevalent in 1954 and lasted all the way through the post-Vietnam war years.

In 1954, Colonel Philip Corso, an intelligence adviser to Eisenhower, was ordered to investigate the POW issue in regard to the information that hundreds of Korean War soldiers were still being held inside Russia. Corso, working at the behest of Eisenhower's chief national security aide C.D. Jackson (an old OSS hand-turned CIA and senior editor at *Life* magazine), concluded that the most expeditious way to approach the subject would be to interview someone who had recently been released from the Gulag, or who had at least spent time in the region and could shed light on the situation. He found that the CIA had such a person, a Soviet defector named Yuri Rastvorov.

Corso contacted the CIA and set up an interview with Rastvovrov. By the conclusion of the meeting, Corso had his answer. Rastvorov had not only seen trainloads of American servicemen being transported to the Soviet Union, but described one particular train as containing over 400 U.S. prisoners.[87]

Corso continued to investigate, and by the time his report was completed, it stated that "The conclusion was that Korean War POWs by the hundreds, perhaps thousands, had been sent to the Soviet Union."[88]

He reported to the President that the prisoners would probably be used for intelligence purposes, and that when their usefulness was past, they would disappear into the Gulag forever as the Soviets would never admit their existence. They were, as far as the outside world would ever know, dead men. And it would be in the government's best interest to consider them so, and to hide the knowledge of their existence from the public.

Eisenhower, having already been involved in much the same issue in 1945, agreed. "I think you're right. I accept your recommendation...thank you colonel, you did a fine job."[89]

This policy became the official stance in 1955. All POWs, whether they were in North Korea, China, or the USSR, were written off. The Government's slate was now clean.[90]

Until the next time.[91]

Between the end of the Korean War and the beginning of the war in Southeast Asia, other Americans fell victim to the government's policy regarding captured Americans. These "Cold Warriors," mainly consisting of airmen from the various services who overflew, or flew too close to Communist countries, often found themselves in the same predicament as their WWII and Korean War counterparts.

As the Cold War grew in intensity, it became a deadly game of spy-verses-spy. The Russians, lacking the capabilities to keep up with the West in modern technology, sent armies of agents abroad to obtain by whatever means necessary the various items of interest. The West, on the other hand, spent the majority of its time trying to find out what was going on behind the Iron Curtain. The majority of this concern originated with the reports being generated by Reinhard Gehlen and his spy network.

In the early days, prior to the entrance of the Lockheed SR-71 reconnaissance jet and the spy satellites, airborne intelligence was gathered by intrepid airmen who penetrated deep inside Communist air space on a routine basis. Not all of them came home.

The fate of these men was not only downplayed by the government, but was covered up as a matter of policy. The main motivator for this, according to declassified documents of the period, was the sensitive nature and secrecy of their missions. This may have been true at the time, but does not explain why their stories are still classified. The "secrecy" element fades when one reasons that: 1) the Soviets knew who they held and what they were up to, and 2) the U.S. Government could not hide their activities from the Russians or Chinese, who held the evidence. Secrecy fell by the wayside at the moment of capture. So who was the government trying to hide the existence and circumstances of the shotdown aviators from?

General Graves B. Erskine, assistant to the secretary of defense under Eisenhower, wrote a memo to Walter Robertson at the Department of State that sheds some light on the official attitude concerning how the government would handle the Cold War POW situation:

> "...Your attention is again invited to the undesirability of providing any information through any source which might lead the next of kin of these armed forces personnel discussed herein to assume or believe that these personnel might still be alive and held unless the communists are prepared at some point to document such information."[92]

As the Cold War progressed, the U.S. government continuously denied the existence of any programs of aerial spying wherein U.S. aircraft were entering Soviet or Chinese air space. In actuality, an entire covert high-altitude spyplane program was in full swing. CIA-run Operation OVERFLIGHT brought in reams of photographic, communications, and electronic intelligence (Photint, Comint and Elint) from all parts of the Soviet Union and China. Flown at first by U.S. Air Force crews utilizing highly modified aircraft containing sophisticated electronic gear and powerful cameras, the operation progressively grew more "black" when these aging aircraft became vulnerable to Soviet air defense systems. The result was the covert high altitude program that resulted in the development of the Lockheed U-2 and a team of pilots that "contracted" to the CIA as civilians. In actuality, they were Air Force officers that had been "sanitized" by transferring them to civilian status for an indefinite period of time, then returned to Air Force status at a later date. This process eventually became known as "sheep dipping." An individual who was sheep-dipped was discharged from the military on paper, but during his absence his time in grade, promotions, retirement years and other perks continued just as if he had never left the service. After serving with the CIA, the person could return to his regular branch and continue just as if he had never left. Sheep Dipping was to become a common practice later during the Vietnam/Laotian war years for almost everyone who "left" the regular military for service in Laos. During the Cold War, and later Vietnam, it was done to provide the CIA, by now referred to as "The Company" because of the number of contract agents being handled, with a system of "Plausible Deniability." Simply put, any pilot captured could, with a certain degree of plausibility, be denied as an member of the U.S. military or a representative of the United States Government. In the case of the U-2s, the cover was very simple. The pilots were contract "weather" pilots. Their mission was high altitude weather research.

The Russians knew better, but because of the ineffectiveness of their surface-to-air missiles, could not gather any evidence that these embarrassing overflights by U.S. spyplanes were just that. Until Francis Gary Powers was shot down.

Previous to May of 1960, the Soviet air defense forces had been unable to obtain the performance characteristics and altitude envelope of the U-2. U-2 pilots often reported looking down upon swarms of MiG interceptors who could not attain the height of the long-winged spyplane, referring to the cluster of aircraft far below as "aluminum clouds." SAM missiles of the time were ineffective as well, due to an inability to properly set the altitude setting of the proximity fuses.

But on May 1, 1960, Francis Gary Powers, flying from Peshawar, Pakistan on an overflight of the USSR to Bødø, Norway, was hit near Sverdlovsk, USSR, by the concussion of a SAM missile that had somehow managed to find his range. The blast, which occurred behind him, pitched the U-2 forward so violently that the wings were ripped from the fuselage. Powers found himself struggling to exit the inverted, spinning fuselage. The G-forces were incredible, and Powers, encased in a cumbersome space suit, barely managed to escape. He was captured shortly after landing in a muddy field.

A trial was held in Moscow for all the world to see. Powers was accused of being a spy, his "survival kit" even contained poison suicide devices, and he was sentenced to a lengthy prison term. But fate intervened after almost two years and he was exchanged for KGB Colonel Rudolf Abel, a more important (to the Soviets) Russian spy.[93] The end result of the incident was a cessation of overflights of U.S. spyplanes in Soviet air space until the advent of the SR-71 and the satellite program.[94]

But for the majority of those crews who had been shot down and captured between 1955 and 1960, the Cold War would never end.

Chapter 17

Secret Losses

The war in Southeast Asia was actually two wars. To the American public, there existed only one war: the war in Vietnam. But there was also a second, very secret, war going on at the same time. And both were very closely interrelated.

The second war was the CIA's secret operation in Laos. The only American military forces involved were a few hundred U.S. Army Special Forces personnel that had been sanitized and assigned to CIA case officers in Vientiene, the country's capital city. Working under the operation moniker of WHITESTAR, these personnel were responsible for setting up and training a guerrilla army of Meo and Hmong tribesmen under a Laotian warlord named General Vang Pao. Their enemy was the communist Pathet Lao guerrillas of Northern Laos and later the North Vietnamese Army on the Laotian side of the Vietnamese border.

To run this operation, the CIA sent former Operation 40 and Operation MONGOOSE case officers and field agents that were no longer needed in Miami for anti-Castro operations.[95] By this time Cuba was beginning to take a back seat to the developing war in Southeast Asia and the CIA had agents to spare. Eisenhower had already established Laos as the next "domino" targeted by Moscow, and if Laos fell, in his opinion, both Cambodia and Vietnam would follow. The Pentagon, on the other hand, was given Vietnam as its place to make the stand against Communisim. The CIA, though operating in both countries, concentrated its initial activities in Laos.

For the CIA, Laos represented fertile ground to expand and reinforce its concept of paramilitary and covert action activities, and such activity there was supported by Eisenhower. Vietnam, in the meantime, had been programmed for conflict at a later date and would be ripe for intervention by both the CIA and the U.S. military whenever the decision was made to enter that smoldering conflict.

The Vietnam scenario was not something that occurred entirely due to North Vietnamese Communist expansion. According to Colonel Fletcher Prouty, Kennedy's director of covert action in the Pentagon, the troubles in South Vietnam were due to political intervention by the U.S. government shortly after the fall of Dien Bien Phu. After the French pulled out of Indochina, the inland infrastructure collapsed. Several things happened within short order: The constabulary, consisting mainly of French colonial forces, pulled out of the countryside and eventually Vietnam; The Chinese merchants, who formed the bridge between the rice-growing peasants and the cities and provided the marketing resources for the product, were forced out of the country, thereby breaking the link between the countryside and the cities; and millions of non-Communist North Vietnamese refugees were forcibly removed from their ancestral lands in the North and transported south for relocation. This latter event was a major foundation stone of the Vietnam war.

The North Vietnamese refugees were mainly Catholic of Tonkinese descent, whereas the majority of South Vietnamese were Annamese Buddhists. The refugees, having no family in the south to provide land or jobs, had no one to turn to for help except the government. The South Vietnamese government, now saddled with the American relocation program, was forced to provide jobs for the new "citizens." The only jobs available were government jobs.

The villagers of the South now found that their tax collectors, government agents, police officers, teachers and other government functionaries were Catholic Tonkinese who held few attachments and little sympathy for their age-old enemy, the Buddhist Annamese. When problems arose, such as who would transport the rice crop to market now that the Chinese merchants were gone, the new government functionaries could provide few answers, and in many circumstances did not care. Problems increased and tensions worsened. Finally, conflicts arose in the countryside between not only the villagers and the government, but between villages. This later series of events occurred over water.

Because the ground water in Vietnam is extremely polluted with the run-offs of rice paddies, the only potable water supply comes from rain water that is caught during monsoon and stored in huge earthen jars. Each household has such a container, handed down from generation to generation. Without a way to capture and store water, a family could not survive.

As punishment for infractions, or to force people to move out of villages during the "Strategic Hamlet" relocation program, the new representatives of the Saigon government would break the water jars. The people then had little choice but to give up the ancestral farm and move on to the government hamlet. Those that did not succumb to these tactics became, essentially, bandits who roamed the countryside attacking other villages at will for food and water. These people, living in the jungles and marshland of the Mekong Delta, became known as the Viet Cong. Eventually they began to receive support from the very homeland of the new government agents, North Vietnam.

The relocation program was the brainchild of the CIA. Through its Saigon Military Mission, run by Colonel Edward Lansdale, the Central Intelligence Agency was able to foment a veritable revolution in South Vietnam. At the same time, they were also able to ensure that the logistical supplies and weapons for the new guerrilla force that was spreading through the hinterland came from, and could be traced to, Communist North Vietnam.

As these events were occurring, other CIA covert paramilitary activities were taking place across the border in Laos. But instead of using the media to gain attention to a volatile political situation that would very probably demand U.S. military intervention, such as was occurring in Vietnam, the war in Laos was kept secret from prying eyes. The reason for this, though never admitted, more than likely had to do with the way that particular operation was financed. Instead of going through normal channels for budgeting, the CIA instead elected to utilize the region's main cash crop to finance their secret war. That crop was opium.

Under Vang Pao and his Hmong army, the operatives formed an extensive distribution network. By using CIA assets in the form of aircraft and other vehicles, tons of opium were shipped out of the mountains of Laos to Vientiane, where it was processed into heroin, then flown on to Hong Kong and Singapore. From these two locations it entered a distribution network that took it to Europe (via the Corsican Mafia in Marseille) and the United States (via Santos Trafficante). More on this later.[96]

As the war in Laos heated up, Vang Pao's CIA-led Hmong army, using weapons and equipment purchased with drug money, expanded its actions against the communist Pathet Lao. In Vietnam, the situation also continued to escalate. And by 1965, with Kennedy's program of pulling American "advisors" out of Vietnam canceled by a bullet in Dealey Plaza sixteen months previous, and with LBJ's "Tonkin Gulf Incident" as a catalyst, the 9th Marine Regiment landed its first Battalion Landing Team (BLT 1/9) on Red Beach at Da Nang. The war in Southeast Asia had begun in earnest and would last ten years.[97]

Chapter 18

Moscow Bound

Five days after the signing of the Paris Peace Accords, Secretary of State Henry Kissinger hand-carried a letter to North Vietnamese Prime Minister Le Duc Tho which promised that the United States would assist the government of Vietnam in post-war reconstruction. In the body of the letter, two paragraphs held particular significance to the North Vietnamese.

> 1) The Government of the United States of America will contribute to postwar reconstruction in North Vietnam without any political conditions.
>
> 2) Preliminary United States studies indicate that the appropriate programs for the United States contribution to postwar reconstruction will fall in the range of $3.25 billion of grant aid over five years. Other forms of aid will be agreed upon between the two parties. This estimate is subject to revision and to detailed discussion between the Government of the United States and the Government of the Democratic Republic of Vietnam.

The problem with this letter is that it was secret. None of the commitments it implied were revealed to anyone in either the Congress or the Senate. That means that the letter was worthless. Unknown to the North Vietnamese, the Constitutional process required to appropriate funds from the U.S. government to fulfill such a promise had never been initiated. Without Congressional approval, no funds would be forthcoming. But the North Vietnamese were ignorant of American Constitutional law.

According to the Senate investigation on POW/MIA affairs, this letter and its promises would not have stood a chance of passing in Congress even if Nixon or Kissinger had made the proper overtures. "...Congress knew nothing of the Kissinger commitments," the report explains. "Had key Senators and Congressmen been told of the policy, they would have had the opportunity to tell the President that voting for billions of dollars of aid or funds for North Vietnam would have been an admission of culpability. The United States had failed in its mission to protect South Vietnam from the totalitarian Communist regime in the North.

"The suffering, brutality, death and dehumanization borne by the Vietnamese people since the war is proof that the American goals in Vietnam were correct. However, the failure of the civilian leadership to achieve those goals had to do more with the collapse of political leadership in the United States than with the morality of the goals. Congress realized full well, if Kissinger did not, that the soothing word 'reconstruction' actually meant 'reparations.' The American people would never pay reparations when no crime had been committed. Congress saw Kissinger's plan as a betrayal and an admission of guilt.

"However, there is no doubt that the North Vietnamese concluded that the President's emissary had pledged billions of dollars in reparations to the Democratic Republic of Vietnam."

Twelve days after the Nixon/Kissinger letter was delivered to the North Vietnamese, Operation Homecoming, the final repatriation of U.S. POWs by North Vietnam, began. It lasted until March 29, 1973, barely six weeks after the $3.25 billion dollar promise was made. In that time only 591 American servicemen, out of over 3,000 missing, were returned.

During the 60 day ceasefire instituted by the Paris Peace Accords, Americans were still flying combat and reconnaissance missions over Laos, and being shot down. In one particular instance, a special operations electronic surveillance EC-47Q was downed in Laos with all aboard. The EC-47Q was a modified C-47 "Gooney Bird" twin-engine transport that contained a cargo compartment full of highly sophisticated electronic monitoring and communications equipment. In a very suspect set of circumstances, this particular aircraft, carrying a "sheep-dipped" sterile U.S. Air Force crew of electronics technicians, was ordered to fly this "one last mission" before the war officially ended. It never came back.

Nine days after the Paris Peace Accords and the ceasefire took effect, the EC-47Q took to the air on its last clandestine mission over northern Laos. One crew member, Sergeant Peter R. Cressman, knew after reading the accords that the mission was in violation of the agreements. Therefore, should something happen and they were shot down and captured, they would be tried as war criminals. But realizing that the chance of getting shot down was only speculative, and the probability of getting court martialed for refusing to obey orders was a definite probability, the crew decided to fly the mission.

Somewhere over northern Laos their aircraft entered what was known among pilots as a "Flak Trap." A Flak Trap is basically an aerial ambush wherein ground anti-aircraft guns, commonly known as "Triple A" (Anti-Aircraft Artillery), are concentrated in one location where false targets are set up to entice unsuspecting fighters, bombers or recon planes in. Many of these ambush sites were established in locations where certain types of aircraft were known to fly. Specifically, the primary prey of the ground gunners were the sophisticated versions of reconnaissance and fighter-bombers that contained high-tech electronic systems, and systems operators.

Of particular interest were such aircraft as the EC-111, an electronic countermeasures aircraft; the RB-66, an electronic reconnaissance aircraft that specialized in jamming SAM radar sites before a raid; the F-111, which contained a new terrain following radar system; the E-6B, a Navy communications jammer, the F-4 "Wild Weasel" SAM suppression jets; and virtually any other specialized aircraft containing modern surveillance, jamming or SAM suppression equipment, such as the EC-47Q.

The reason these particular aircraft were primary targets over the bomb-laden strike aircraft was very simple. The North Vietnamese and Pathet Lao, for the entire span of the war, were armed, equipped and supplied by the Soviets and Chinese. The war material delivered to the war zone could not be paid for in cash, for North Vietnam was a very poor country, and the Pathet Lao had little internal financial means of support. But the weapons had a price, and the price was technology. Both the Soviets and Chinese handed the North Vietnamese and the Pathet Lao shopping lists. The lists identified the above aircraft, and certain members of their crew. Even though most of the airplanes that were shot down ended up little more than twisted aluminum wreckage, many of the "black boxes" containing the solid-state electronic components would remain virtually intact. And so did most of the crewmembers who successfully ejected from their stricken aircraft.

Jerry Mooney, an analyst for the National Security Agency during the war, was tasked with tracking the airmen who were shot down once they had been captured. This was done through analysis of enemy communications. He had also intercepted Soviet shopping lists for specific items of equipment and particular crewmember specialists who knew how the systems worked. These men, known as "EWOs" (Electronic Warfare Officers), "WSOs" (Weapons Systems Officers), and "Backseaters" (communications interception and jamming specialists), were the brains that made the systems work. By capturing the equipment and piecing it together, then picking the operator's brain, the Soviets could discover not only how to design their own countermeasures to the devices, but duplicate them for use in their own aircraft.

Mooney kept a very special roster of such captured specialists. The pilots, everyone knew, were taken to such places as the Hanoi Hilton to be used later as bargaining chips. The specialists, dubbed Backseaters, Rightseaters, or Backenders by pilots, spent only a brief time in North Vietnamese or Pathet Lao prison camps. For beside each name on this roster, Mooney wrote the letters "MB", Moscow Bound.

In the camps, the pilots and other prisoners who were not deemed technically valuable, used the phrase "on the train." This meant that if someone was said to be on the train, or to have taken the train, they had been shipped out to Russia or China. Such was probably the case of survivors of Cressman's EC-47Q.

The "Flying Pueblo," as it was dubbed, entered a flak trap over northern Laos on February 5th, 1973. The enemy gunners, laying in wait with massed AAA, opened up on the lumbering 30 year-old propeller driven aircraft and delivered enough punishment to shoot it down. But it did not fall in a twisting, turning ball of flame.[98] Instead, it must have been disabled and managed to crash-land in the jungle. For a few days later the wreckage was located by a search team who found no sign of bodies. At about the same time another U.S. recon plane intercepted enemy radio messages and discovered that at least four crewmembers from the EC-47Q were being held in captivity. This information was relayed to Washington, and Jerry Mooney.[99]

On February 17th, these men were spotted and identified by a clandestine source about eighteen miles away from the crash site and reported to be under guard and in good health. Mooney, in the days ahead, tracked more than just the original four crewmen, he located and tracked three others. Yet on February 22nd, this information not withstanding, the Air Force declared all personnel aboard the fated ship dead.[100]

When questioned why he did not come forward later and announce publicly that this finding was incorrect, Mooney articulated that he had assumed that after submitting his report either military action, or covert action by the CIA's special rescue unit would take place to recover the prisoners. But that did not happen. Instead, the issue died with all crewmembers written off as KIA/BNR. Yet two months after the shoot-down, four of the men were again spotted and identified, still in reasonable health, about sixty-five miles further away from the wreckage. It was apparent that this crew of specialists were being moved ever closer to North Vietnam for the "train ride" north. None were ever heard from again, and their names were never included on any prisoner list produced before or during Operation Homecoming.

In another instance, an FB-111 was shot down north of the DMZ in Vietnam by a SAM missile that exploded close enough to cause the engines to flame out. The crew, Majors Robert A. Brown and Robert Morrissey, ejected and were captured. The airplane crashed, but was recovered in a remarkably intact condition. According to NSA analysis, the aircraft was located by the North Vietnamese and within four days was in transit to the Soviet Union. This prize, along with the two crewmembers, would greatly benefit Soviet designers and systems technicians. For they were working on their own version of the F-111, the Sukhoi Su-24 swing-wing fighter-bomber. Other offshoot designs from the American swing-wing technology that had been developed from the F-111 appeared in the MiG-23 and MiG-27. It has also been reported that the high altitude supersonic MiG-25 owed its design features to the U.S. Navy's A-5 Vigilante.

To serve as an example of what happened to American aviators that had been sent to the Soviet Union, the Patterson case is enlightening. According to a former Red Army major, one U.S. POW, believed to have been Navy Lieutenant Commander Kelly Patterson, was transported across China to the Soviet border where he was transferred to Russian control and moved to the Red Army air defense base in Sary Sagan, Kazakhstan (Siberia). The reason he was selected was because of his expertise in the electronic jamming systems and tactics of the F-4 Phantom fighter-bombers. Like Cressman and his fellow crewmembers, Patterson never returned. Instead, he was shown as KIA/BNR on the Air Force records.

Through the efforts of analysts like Mooney, at least 65 American specialists were positively known to have been moved to the Soviet Union. In all probability there were more. One source states that an additional 90 to 180 men were removed from Vietnam and Laos and taken to various locations, mainly testing and research centers, inside Russia. According to Khamaou Boussarath, Chief of Security for the non-communist Laotian government during the war, "The Russians wanted the technology...they were having trouble in the Mideast. MiGs were all the time getting shot down by American-built planes flown by Israel. They wanted to know why." For if the Israelis could shoot down the Soviets first-line fighters, then so could the Americans should World War III ever occur.[101]

In the end, the Soviets and Chinese were trading obsolete arms and weapons systems for state-of-the-art American technology, and at the same time testing their latest weapons in a real-world war environment. Intelligence wise, it was not a bad tradeoff. Very few Soviet lives were lost in the war, the Vietnamese and Laotians were doing all the dying, and the return was a treasure trove of technology.

Throughout the post war years, American intelligence tracked live American POWs throughout Vietnam and Laos. Though reports of Americans being sighted in the USSR surfaced on occasion, the majority of what little effort was expended, was on Southeast Asia. According to DIA reports, Americans were still being "debriefed" by Soviet officers (probably KGB) as late as 1983. In one DIA "Stony Beach" report, missing Air Force member Patrick Martin Fallon was reported to have been interrogated by 12 Soviet agents in the old USAID compound in Vientiane, Laos, between September 17, 1983 and October 13, 1983Cten years after Operation Homecoming and Nixon's statement that all American POWs had been returned.

In another intelligence report, 26 American specialists and special forces troops were transported to the USSR between December 1977 and January 1978. According to intercepted radio communications, Soviet Ilyushin IL-62 transport aircraft carried the POWs out of Gia Lam airport in Hanoi, across Tibet, to Russia. On the last flight the NSA picked up signals emanating from inside North Vietnam that "There are no more SIGINT [signal intelligence] specialists in country."

Terry Minarcin, an NSA analyst in Vietnam, heard from one of his sources that these Americans, after arrival in Russia, were broken down into groups and put on airplanes and trains of the Trans-Siberian Railroad for transport to Sokol, the forward deployment base for the Soviet strategic bomber force.

The U.S. Government, and the various agencies concerned, have all fallen into lockstep with the official policy that 1) there are no more prisoners in Southeast Asia. They are all dead. and 2) no American POWs were transferred to the USSR or

China.[102] President Reagan promised voters that the POW situation was of "the highest national priority," and this was parroted by the Bush administration. President Clinton has been very careful not to address the issue in any form.[104] Yet the preponderance of evidence proves beyond doubt that U.S. POWs *were* left behind and kept by Hanoi and the Pathet Lao *after* Operation Homecoming. The Pentagon finally admitted, in 1992, that at least 100 men were known to have remained in North Vietnamese custody long *after* Nixon announced that all American POWs had been returned. But they never have admitted any knowledge of POWs being transferred to Russia.

A classified CIA report disagrees:

> Report No. CS-311/044439-71
> Date Dist. 10 June 1971
> Country: North Vietnam
> DOI: 1965-June 1967
> Subject: Preliminary debriefing site for captured U.S. Pilots in Vinh Phu Province and presence of Soviet Communist and Chinese Personnel at the site.
>
> 1. A preliminary debriefing point for U.S. pilots shot down over Vinh Phu Province, North Vietnam/NVN/, was located at the Lam Thao district, Vinh Phu Province. Two U.S. pilots were taken to a debriefing point on one occasion in 1965; eight in 1966; and unknown number in 1967. The prisoners were escorted to the site by personnel of the Armed Public Security Forces/APSF/, and students from a nearby school served as perimeter guards. Each time prisoners were brought to the site they rode in an open car of Chinese origin resembling an American Jeep. Some of the escort guards rode in a lead car and others rode in two cars following the prisoners. Upon their arrival at the plant, the guards lined up, forming a corridor through which the pilots entered the building. At this point a Soviet, a Chinese, and a Vietnamese greeted the pilots and led them into the building. The pilots usually remained in the building for several hours. When they emerged they had changed from uniforms into civilian clothing. [deleted] said [deleted] had told him the foreigners were Soviet and Communist Chinese. Soviet personnel had been stationed at the plant since its construction in 1963, but in 1965 the number of Soviets was reduced to three or four, and it remained at that level as of June 1967. About 20 Communist Chinese personnel arrived at the plant in 1966 and there were still about 20 there as of June 1967....
>
> 2. After shaking hands with the Soviets and Chinese, the prisoners were led to a different vehicle from the one which brought them to the site. They were escorted from the plant by a different set of guards who wore yellow and white uniforms and were armed with rifles and pistols. [deleted] did not know the destination of the prisoners.

Regarding those that were not transferred to the USSR, but were retained by the North Vietnamese as hold cards against the Kissinger/Nixon promise of reparations, Lt. Col. Stuart A. Harrington, who worked on the POW/MIA issue as a military intelligence and liaison officer with the North Vietnamese and Red Chinese, wrote in his book *Peace with Honor? An American Reports on Vietnam, 1973-1975*: "U.S. casualties under North Vietnamese control would be accounted for and prisoners returned *after* fulfillment of the promise." [Emphasis added].

But on April 6, 1973, an 88-3 roll call vote in the Senate against paying any type of reparations to the North Vietnamese, especially after the public outcry over the reports of barbaric torture of American prisoners that had been held by the North Vietnamese, sounded the death knell of the secret Kissinger/Nixon deal. Then a week later, Armed Services Chairman F. Edward Hebert announced he would introduce a proposal to prohibit any U.S. aid for Hanoi. He also said justification for Nixon's request for $1.3 billion aid to North Vietnam was either "nebulous or nonexistent." The very next day the Nixon administration and the Pentagon announced that there were no more Americans alive in Southeast Asia and that "rumors did the families a disservice."[105]

Immediately the coverup began. The word went out to stations near and far that barring any blatant publicly exposed evidence of live American POWs surfacing, the issue was to be discretely buried. In a message sent from the American Embassy in Saigon to the Secretary of State in Washington, attempts to cover up the fact that the U.S. abandoned U.S. POWs in Southeast Asia is apparent:

> Subject: PW REPORT BY NVA DEFECTOR
> REF: STATE 112133
> 1. NVA Rallier/Defector Nguyen Thanh Son was surfaced by GVN to press June 8 Saigon. In follow on interview with AP, UPI and NBC American correspondents, questions elicited information that he had seen six prisoners whom he believed were Americans who had not yet been released. American officer present at interview requested news services to play down details: AP mention was consistent with embargo request, while UPI and NBC after talk with Embassy press officer omitted item entirely from their stories.
>
> 2. Details on rallier's account being reported SEPTEL, through military channels by BRIGHTLIGHT message today WHITE HOUSE.

But no matter how much damage control the government attempted, annoying reports of live Americans being held by the Communists continued to appear. In 1975, the CIA reported that:

> "...A number of Americans were being held in Hanoi pending agreement on American reconstruction aid...The Vietnamese were not stupid and would

> hold the Americans until three billion dollars in promised aid was received."[106]

Still, the government entities that drew the job of covering up the POW/MIA situation, mainly consisting of compartmentalized elements within the DIA and the Department of Defense (DoD), continued to debunk any evidence of the existence of live POWs still remaining in Communist hands.

The coverup continues to this day at the highest levels. When former CBS executive Ted Landreth was preparing to broadcast *We Can Keep You Forever*, the BBC/Lionheart/Landreth documentary on the POW/MIA situation that presented dramatic evidence that MIAs and POWs were still alive in Southeast Asia, Landreth discovered that the stations that had agreed to carry the broadcast had suddenly backed out. Landreth began to investigate and quickly learned that the reason was coercion at the highest level. One station manager reported that he had received a call from the White House that threatened, "If you put that British program on the air, you can forget about coming around the White House for the rest of the Reagan Administration."

Other attempts at coverup were discovered by the authors of *Soldiers of Misfortune* when they went to the National Archives in Washington, D.C., where they had been conducting research, and discovered that an Army colonel in full uniform had visited the Military Reference Section in Room 13W and had demanded the Reference Section to "stop leaking World War II documents related to prisoners of war kept by the Soviet Union." They then found that someone had also tampered with the very files the authors were using for research by inserting several new pages into Military Mission to Moscow files, Box 24. The pages had not been there previously, and had been inserted in the middle of a bound metal document holder. The new pages contained false information that were an apparent attempt to change the information that 20,261 Americans were never returned from the Soviet Union after World War II.

Among other recent attempts to cover up information regarding Americans missing in action or taken prisoner and never returned are the following events:

* In 1991, Brent Scowcroft, National Security Advisor to the White House, blocked the release of a 36 year-old White House document requested by Mark Sauter, co-author of *Soldiers of Misfortune*, regarding evidence provided by Yuri Rastvorov that U.S. POWs were transported from Korea to Siberia. Scowcroft, on White House stationary, ordered the National Archives not to release the report, as it was still considered "Secret."[107]

* The Bush administration, on numerous occasions, had hidden or censored many other documents regarding POWs and MIAs dating back to World War II. On one occasion in 1989, the DIA stated that they held no record of those missing or captured in the Korean conflict. It was later discovered, however, that just such a report existed. Titled "Alleged Sightings of American POWs in North Korea from 1975 to 1982," the memo mentioned American POWs from the Korean war.

* In an incredible twisting of logic, the administration refused to deal with reports of Americans from the Korean war still being held in Siberia because *it would be a "violation of their privacy"* for the American people to know that they had been abandoned.[108]

* Concerning media attention to the POW/MIA scandal, the major networks and newspapers all know of the information presented in the recent disclosures but as if in concert, have failed to react. In the case of *Soldiers of Misfortune*, according to the authors, "CBS Evening News," "60 Minutes," "Nightline," *Time* magazine, the *New York Times*, and *The New Republic* all knew of the information presented by the authors but refused to pursue the story.[109]

* CBS TV's "60 Minutes," after assigning Monika Jensen-Stevenson to do a segment on the POW/MIA affair, refused to air it when it was discovered that she had uncovered irrefutable evidence of Americans still being held in Vietnam, Laos and the Soviet Union. She chose to leave her job and pursue the story along with her husband, William Stevenson (author of *A Man Called Intrepid*). The result was the bestseller *Kiss The Boys Goodbye.*

* On one occasion, Richard Armitage, who was at one time civilian attaché to the Department of Defense in Saigon under Erich von Marbod, (both identified in a civil lawsuit filed by the Christic Institute as being involved in the CIA/Laotian opium racket) appeared on *60 Minutes* and stated that there was no proof that any U.S. POWs or MIAs were alive in Southeast Asia.

* Former U.S. Marine POW Bobby Garwood, who managed to escape captivity in Vietnam in 1979, instead of being welcomed home as a hero who managed to survive fourteen years as a prisoner of the Vietnamese, was court martialed as a defector. This action by the government followed the precedent set by the French when the survivors of Dien Bien Phu were finally repatriated. By charging, court martialing and disgracing such a person, their credibility on statements concerning what they had witnessed, such as seeing other live countrymen, could be dismissed as lies and fantasy. Bobby Garwood was never debriefed by any intelligence service of the U.S. Government.

And the coverup continues. As late as 1992, after reports of live Americans being held inside the Soviet Union by former Soviet intelligence agents and military officers, and a report from retired KGB Major General Oleg Kalugin that stated KGB agents had interrogated American POWs in Vietnam in 1978Cthree years after the fall of South Vietnam and five years after the withdrawal of U.S. troops, Russian and American officials continue to deny allegations that such was the case. It was also reported in an interview between a former KGB interrogator and a reporter for Australian television, Jeff McMullen, that nine U.S. pilots, after being interrogated by the KGB in North Vietnam, had their throats cut by the North Vietnamese. Still, no mention in the major networks or publications of these incidents even though they have received wide coverage overseas.

Why would the U.S. Government not pursue any and all leads of live American sightings in Southeast Asia? And why such an effort to disavow the 30,000 plus Americans that had been spirited into Russia? The answer to the second question is fairly obvious. As explained in previous chapters, Cold War politics, coupled with political embarrassment and a "National Interest" need by the covert intelligence services (mainly the OSS and CIA), the American prisoners from World War II and Korea were simply written off in the interest of National Security.

The answer to the first question is more complicated. It has nothing to do with National Security, nor is it an issue of the $3.25 billion dollars Nixon and Kissinger promised the North Vietnamese. It goes much deeper than that. And it is directly related to two subjects that are never addressed by either the Executive Branch or the Judicial Branch of the U.S. Government: Black Operations in Laos during the war, and drugs...yesterday, and today.

Chapter 19

"They Could Give A Damn About Soldiers"

To the Meo, it was a sacred mountain, a mountain of spirits and magic. To the CIA and the U.S. Air Force, it held a more earthly value. Known as a *karst*, a mountain formed by the upheaval of the earth during an ancient earthquake, the mountain of Phou Pha Thi jutted up from the earth's surface with sides so steep that it was virtually impregnable to ground assault. A military garrison stationed at its summit could only be expected to be resupplied by air. And it was because of this, and its strategic location near the border of North Vietnam in northern Laos only 160 miles from Hanoi, that it held its value.

Known to the military and the CIA as Site 85, the "Rock" was a natural fortress. Phou Pha Thi was a razorback ridge with one side consisting of a very steep incline heavily defended by Thai mercenaries and Meo soldiers of General Vang Pao's small army of hill people, and the other a sheer cliff. On top was a tiny landing strip, a small community of bunkers and other buildings, an antenna farm of various radio antennas, and the region's main TACAN site.

The TACAN, or Tactical Air Navigation beacon, was the critical link between the fighters and bombers coming out of the U.S. air bases in Thailand and the Steel Tiger operational zone of North Vietnam, and Hanoi. The TACAN, a UHF omnidirectional beacon transmitter, provided course, bearing, and distance information to the swarms of aircraft flying to and from North Vietnam high over the monsoon clouds. And the communications relay equipment at Site 85 formed a vital link for not only intelligence purposes, but life and death radio relay for rescue missions of downed pilots inside North Vietnam. For the military and the CIA, Site 85 was a critical part of the war in the north. For the North Vietnamese, it was a threat to be dealt with. For as long as the American navigational and communications site on top of the 5,600 foot Phou Pha Thi was permitted to exist, the convoys on the Ho Chi Minh trail, the troop movements on the Plain of Jars, and Hanoi itself remained accessible targets for American bombers. Site 85 had to go.

Site 85, as far as the outside world was concerned, did not exist. Its location, its mission, and the people and equipment located there were all classified. It was what the intelligence and military communities referred to as a "black operation." Built in 1967 over the objections of the U.S. Ambassador to Laos, the site was staffed by a handful of U.S. Air Force technicians that had been sheep-dipped into "civilian" status. As far as their official positions, they had been discharged by the Air Force and had been hired by Lockheed Aircraft Systems on a one year contract. This reclassification conveniently side-stepped the Geneva Peace Accords of 1962 that prohibited any foreign military presence in Laos. It did not, however, fool the North Vietnamese or local Pathet Lao communists, whose capital, Sam Neua, was only 25 miles away.

On March 10, 1968, North Vietnamese and Pathet Lao forces attacked the mountain. The attack was well-conceived and carried out with speed and force. As Pathet Lao and NVA troops fought their way up the incline-side of the mountain, creating a diversion, specially trained North Vietnamese commandos, reputedly led by Soviet *Spetsnaz* troops, scaled the cliffs.

The small garrison was caught in a pincer movement. Quickly realizing that they were vastly outnumbered and that the force of Meo defenders would not be able to hold out for long, the American contingent called for help. Helicopters belonging to Air America, the CIA's proprietary "airline" in Laos, and airborne forward air controllers, codenamed Ravens, responded. As the Ravens, flying their light single-engine Cessna 0-1Birddogs circled the mountain, directing fighter strikes against the advancing communist forces, Air America Hueys did their best to evacuate the friendlies.

But all could not be rescued. Of the fifteen U.S. Air Force personnel listed as manning the site, only four were located and pulled to safety. The remaining eleven were unaccounted for.

As soon as the top of the mountain had been evacuated, the friendly Thai and Meo defenders were ordered to destroy all of their heavy weapons and equipment, break contact and abandon their positions. The site, and its secret communications gear, had to be destroyed to keep it from falling into enemy hands.

American A-1 Skyraiders, summoned to support the withdrawal, now rolled in to deliver their bomb loads on the mountain top. Bunkers, now occupied by North Vietnamese and Pathet Lao, exploded in balls of flame. Concussion from the blasts sent deadly shards of rock ripping through the air causing secondary casualties. When the Skyraiders had expended their loads they headed for home.

The next day U.S. fighter-bombers were called in from Thailand to finish the job. Thousands of pounds of bombs rained down on the mountaintop, virtually destroying what remained of the site. As this was happening, the Meo and Thai defenders had managed to break contact and had reached a rally point where heads were counted. After a complete accountability, it was determined that none of the eleven Americans were there. However, one Thai sergeant reported that he had seen three of the Air Force technicians at the site being taken prisoner and led away by the North Vietnamese attackers.

Though this report was given to U.S. intelligence almost immediately, and no bodies were ever recovered, the U.S. Ambassador declared the eleven missing personnel to be dead.

But merely declaring a man dead does not make him so. CIA reports of the incident surfaced in 1978 under the Freedom of Information Act that stated the three American prisoners from Site 85 were brought to a village near the mountain by NVA troops, and after parading them in front of the villagers for propaganda effect, had been taken back to a cave near Phou Pha Thi. They were later moved to other caves near Sam Neua where they were guarded by the NVA, and later the Pathet Lao.

But their captivity in Northern Laos was apparently short-lived. In September of 1990, an Air Force captain who was traveling in Laos while conducting research for his doctoral degree, managed to interview a former Pathet Lao general. The general claimed to have been involved in the attack on Phou Pha Thi, and related the fact that three American technicians had indeed been captured and had eventually been turned over to North Vietnamese troops. The NVA, according to the general, spirited them away to North Vietnam. None of them were ever heard from again.

The Air Force losses at Site 85 were only one example of American personnel that disappeared during covert or classified military operations. Other Black operations, such as the covert border crossing activities of the U.S. Special Forces recon and prisoner snatch teams, the Army Long Range Reconnaissance Patrols (LRRP), and Marine Force Recon scouting missions, occasionally resulted in some of their members being lost and presumed captured by enemy forces. Other highly dangerous, and often semi-clandestine activities also added to the toll of MIAs. Navy SEAL teams, PBR Swift Boat crews, Army Riverine forces, and secret aerial reconnaissance flights all produced figures on the MIA and KIA/BNR lists.[110]

But it was in Laos, outside of the Republic of Vietnam, where no foreign forces were to tread, that Americans disappeared with the least chance of being recovered. For in Laos, no one taken prisoner ever came back.

Known as the Kingdom of Lan Xang, the Land of a Million Elephants, the tiny key-shaped country of Laos (pronounced *louse)*, was considered by the Chinese, Soviets and Americans to be the key to Southeast Asia. Because of its strategic location, Laos commanded the entire western border of North Vietnam and half the border of South Vietnam. It was also the gateway from China to Cambodia and Thailand.

President Eisenhower considered Laos to be a more important domino than Vietnam. In his transition briefing to President-elect Kennedy, he pointed out that if Laos fell, so would Southeast Asia. Kennedy believed him.

Laos after World War II was a weak, land-locked, peaceful country that just happened to lie between much stronger, perpetually warring neighbors. To the north was Burma and China, borders that meant little to the tribes of mountain people who for centuries have wandered back and forth as if no border existed. To the south is Cambodia, and to the west, Thailand.

The eastern border, largely drawn along the flow pattern of the Mekong River, shared 1,324 miles of mountainous jungle with North and South Vietnam. And it was this border, and its geopolitical values, that brought the peaceful, backward kingdom of Laos into 20th century war.

In 1953, the importance of Laos, which was at that time part of French Indochina, did not escape the French. Because the rugged terrain of Laos, Ho Chi Minh's Viet Minh guerrillas could move the length of Vietnam undetected by merely crossing over into the Laotian provinces. And of further concern to the French was the expansionism of Ho's Asian Communist Party. Should Ho begin moving his political commissars and fighting forces into Laos in large numbers, the French reasoned that it would not be long before he would be able to rally support from the Laotians against the French. This was a major factor considered by the French when they chose Dien Bien Phu as a strongpoint and blocking position against the Viet Minh advance. According to the map, the valley was well-situated to keep the Ho Chi Minh's guerrilla army from having unfettered access to nearby Laos.

Dien Bien Phu fell after a siege lasting 56 days. And with it, the world received its first lesson on how the Asian communists handled prisoners of war, both physically and politically.

But while Dien Bien Phu was under siege, a young Meo lieutenant named Vang Pao was desperately attempting to reach the beleaguered garrison with his small contingent of Meo soldiers. He had volunteered to lead a relief expedition to the valley, but before he could arrive, the French garrison had been forced to surrender.

The Viet Minh captured over 16,000 men, and almost immediately began marching them east toward hastily-built prisoner holding compounds located closer to Hanoi. Of this number, only 78 managed to escape into the jungle and make their way to Laos and safety. Only 19 of these were Europeans.

Vang Pao's fellow Meo tribesmen found the escapees wandering the forests and provided them with protection, shelter, armed guides, and rafts to navigate the Mekong downriver to Saigon, and safety. It was the last the majority of the Meo would see of the European colonists.

In 1954, a settlement in Geneva resulted in the division of Vietnam at the 17th parallel. Laos was left as a separate entity to serve as a buffer between pro-western Siam (Thailand) and communist China. But this effort at geographical separation soon proved a failure. Repeated invasions by the North Vietnamese through the Plain of Jars into the northern provinces of Laos forced the Laotian government to concede the two northern provinces, Sam Neua and Phong-Saly, to Pathet Lao control. What was actually happening behind the scenes was something else. The communist-backed Pathet Lao were almost non-existent in numbers. Instead, the two provinces actually came under North Vietnamese administration and the Pathet Lao were merely used by the Viet Minh as a front.[111]

The French had no sooner left when the United States took over support of the pro-western southern half of Laos. By supporting the economy with millions of dollars of U.S. aid, the U.S. managed to buy its way into the government. Within a year the Laotian army began to swell, eventually reaching a manning level of 50,000 troops. It became the only foreign army in the world completely financed by the U.S. government.

As would later happen in Vietnam, the money, over $300 million, did little more than corrupt government officials and the officer corps. Most of the funds went into the pockets of the upper level benefactors and little results were seen in the field. In the end, the heavily financed Royal Laotian Army and Air Force rarely left their contonement areas. Especially to fight the much more motivated, and dangerous, communists.

The CIA, who had by now entered the scene, saw what was happening. In an attempt to gain control of a bad situation, the Agency shifted U.S. backing to Phoui Sananikone, an anticommunist politician who appeared more aggressive than his predecessor, Prince Souvanna Phouma, who was a devout neutralist. But the new prime minister did not last long. An army general, Phoumi Nosavan, took over the capital, and the government, in a military coup. The CIA had to quickly change horses.

By 1959, the U.S. State Department had managed to set up a clandestine military mission in Vientiane. Dubbed the Program Evaluation Office, or PEO, it became the headquarters for an American staff of military officers and NCOs whose mission was to form, equip, and train an operational army that would not only be field deployable, but would fight. The personnel on this team were mainly American army infantry officers who wore civilian clothes and were carried on the roll as "technicians."

Meanwhile, General Phoumi Nosavan had proved to be less of an anti-communist strongman than originally anticipated by the CIA. He even refused to go to the capital for swearing-in after an election rigged by the CIA legitimized his position because a fortune-teller told him he would be killed if he went. Another Lao officer, one that had guts, would have to be found to lead the new clandestine army.

The search did not take long. Vang Pao, who was by this time a major in the Royal Lao Army, had built a reputation for being a fighter. Even though he was of Meo descent, which is looked down upon by the lowland Laotians as being little more than uneducated savages, he had managed to attain the highest rank ever held by a Meo and had successfully led some of his countrymen against the Viet Minh. Besides these attributes, Vang Pao had an additional qualification: he was the same race as most of the soldiers being recruited for the new fighting force by the CIA.

The Agency approached Vang Pao and offered their support if he would agree to lead the new army. He agreed, and within days orders were cut authorizing massive arms shipments to Vientiane to equip the Meo force. Major Harry "Heinie" Aderholt, who was responsible for USAF support of CIA operations in Southeast Asia was ordered to send 1,000 weapons to Vang Pao which included rifles, machine guns, hand grenades, 60mm mortars and enough field gear to supply 1000 men. These supplies were quickly loaded aboard C-46s and flown out of a secret cache at Tahkli, Thailand, to Padong, Laos, where Vang Pao established his initial headquarters.

Aderholt then received orders to open up a network of landing strips, known as Lima Sites, across Laos to provide staging and resupply points for the covert army. Vang Pao's people had been programmed to conduct a highly mobile guerrilla war against the NVA and Pathet Lao, fighting them the same way the communists had fought the French. To do this required numerous points of resupply and aerial support within the area of operations. The Lima Sites, each identified by a number on the map, were to provide such logistical support.

As Aderholt and Vang Pao flew over the countryside looking for suitable locations for airfields, the PEO in Vientiane was in the process of being replaced by 400 Special Forces personnel that had been moved in from their home station in Okinawa. In an operation codenamed WHITESTAR, the Green Beret "Mobile Training Teams," as they were dubbed, donned civilian clothes, bogus titles and job descriptions, and quickly faded away from the city to the countryside to train the Meos.

This activity did not go unnoticed by the Soviets and Chinese. Each began bolstering the Pathet Lao and NVA forces with arms and equipment, often flying loads into, and out of, Vientiane in broad daylight aboard their own cargo transports. One Air America veteran recalled drinking with Soviet air crews in the evening, then waiting in line with them the next day on the Vientiane taxiways in their various arms-laden aircraft for take-off clearance. Each would depart Vientiane in a different direction, drop their loads to their respective clients, then return unmolested to Vientiane for another night of drinking.

Resupply by air was the only means of supporting the army in the field. There were only 470 miles of paved road in all of Laos. If Vang Pao was to receive arms, ammunition and food, it had to come by air. But the U.S. Air Force, because of the Geneva accords, could not be based in or officially operate inside Laos in support of military forces. To overcome this, the CIA formed its own cargo airline, appropriately named Air America.

Air America, utilizing Short Take Off and Landing (STOL) airplanes such as Helio Couriers, Pilatus Porters, DeHavilland Caribous, and cargo planes such as C-46s, C-47s, C-119s and C-123s, and H-19 and UH-1 helicopters, all flown by "contract" pilots, delivered thousands of tons of "soft rice" (food), and "hard rice" (arms and ammunition) during the war.

Air America would before long, however, find itself carrying much more than rice and weapons.

As the war against the PL and NVA intensified in ratio to the war in Vietnam, the CIA presence in Laos grew. Air America and the main contingent of the CIA up-country team quickly outgrew their small Lima Sites and were forced to relocate to a new base of operations that was both handy to the war, and not susceptible to the prying eyes of the media or other undesirables. The new station would have to be naturally protected by the terrain, be within Meo territory, provide enough real estate to build hangars, quarters, offices and admin facilities, and enough room to construct a large all-weather runway.

The CIA, by way of one of its agents, Edgar "Pop" Buell, located such a place at Long Tieng (pronounced Long *Cheng*). Long Tieng, surrounded by the rugged karsts of Northern Laos, provided a natural bowl within the mountains large enough for the CIA's requirements. Within weeks construction was begun and aircraft began arriving, and before the year was out, Long Tieng would become the CIA's largest field headquarters in Asia. After Vientiane, this secret installation became the largest city in Laos.

A macadam runway was built that was capable of handling everything from small single-engine bush planes to the largest four-engine transports, and was long enough to handle a jet fighter should the need arise. The buildings, each with a shiny tin roof, reflected the sun from what the journalists eventually began to call "Spook Heaven."[112]

By 1964, the CIA had, under its Air America cover, one of the largest air forces in the world. It also had, under the leadership of Vang Pao, the second largest guerrilla army in Southeast Asia. And it had the expenses of operating both.

The war in Laos was a secret war. It was so secret that it could not be financed in the conventional manner of going to Congress for a budget. Instead, it had to be financed from a "black" budget within the annual operating expenses of the CIA. The problem with this was that the war in Laos quickly outgrew what the CIA could provide through in-house means.

Upon examining its resources, the CIA turned to the Laotian government for the needed additional financing, but it was quickly determined that there were virtually no export products that could be used as a means of finance, except one. Opium.

The tri-border area of Laos, Thailand, and Burma, known as the "Golden Triangle," was the Asian center of the opium trade. Within this region, over 1000 tons of raw opium was produced each year by the nomadic hill tribes of the Hmong, Meo, Yao, Lisu, Akha, Lahu, Shan and Karens. These tribes had for centuries collectively tended thousands of acres of opium poppies, using the product in tribal rites and as a cash crop for the local economy.

From the Golden Triangle, the raw opium, resembling a black sticky substance packed in bamboo tubes, or formed in bricks, or packaged in several other ways, entered the Asian market through two routes. The first led through Thailand to Bangkok and came under the control of the remnants of the Nationalist Chinese Khoumantang Army that had fled China in 1949. The second route passed through northern Laos and South Vietnam. It was in both that the CIA found its means of providing its additional funding for the war.[113]

A strange and remarkable set of circumstances melded at this point. The raw opium, which was being grown in northern Laos and the Golden Triangle, was flown to Vientiane for processing into heroin. The facility used to process the heroin was a Pepsi Cola bottling plant that had originally been established prior to the massive U.S./CIA build-up during the time that Richard Nixon's law firm was representing Pepsi. It was built shortly after Nixon's visit to Dallas for a meeting of the Board of Directors of Pepsi Cola, which he does not remember, nor is there any record of a meeting occurring on that date, November 21, 1963, the day before JFK was ambushed in Dealy Plaza. But Nixon *was* there, and an article in a Dallas newspaper makes note of the event.[114]

Another meeting occurred in which other players came together in Southeast Asia. According to sources that have only recently surfaced, a meeting took place in Saigon in which a network was established for the world-wide distribution of raw heroin. At this meeting, which was set up by CIA operatives Theodore Shackley and Thomas Clines, were Nguyen Cao Ky, head of the Vietnamese Air Force under Prime Minister Thieu; Vang Pao; a representative of the Corsican Mafia; and *Santos Trafficante*, the Miami mafioso who had been instrumental in forming the ZR/RIFLE assassination team that the CIA attempted to use against Fidel Castro.

The meeting, which took place in Saigon in early 1968, established a division of responsibilities, property and profits. Though what actually was decided in the secret meeting is not known, the results bear witness to the event. Vang Pao, by way of Air America and his own private airline, Xieng Khouang Air Transport, would supply the opium to the Pepsi Cola lab at Vientiane. His airplanes would then fly the pure heroin to Bangkok, where it was divided into three lots. One lot would go to the United States, where Santos Trafficante and the American Mafia would handle distribution, and the other would be flown out by the *Union Corse*, the Corsican Brotherhood, to Marseille, France. Once in France, the Corsican Mafia would have the franchise for all of Europe and North Africa. A third shipment would be provided to Nguyen Cao Ky and would be flown to Da Nang.[115] From Da Nang, Vietnamese Air Force planes would distribute it to the various cities of South Vietnam. The "customer" in the form of the end user in South Vietnam was the American serviceman.[116]

The money that was made was to be split between the traffickers and certain individuals within the CIA in Laos. The latter would supposedly use their share to finance the covert war.

The enterprise proved so profitable that Vang Pao was forced to open a second, larger laboratory in Long Tieng.

The participants of the meeting are well known government officials and organized crime figures. But who were Theodore Shackley and Thomas Clines?

Clines and Shackley had been integral players in the JM/WAVE CIA operations against Cuba. Shackley was chief of station for Miami, and Clines worked under Shackley as case officer for the Cuban-era Operation 40 and directly supervised many of the Cuban exiles, including Felix Rodriguez, Raul Villaverde, and Rafael

"Chi-Chi" Quintero. Another operative, Edwin P. Wilson, also worked under Clines and would be exposed later in the Iran/Contra scandal.[117]

When the attention of the CIA was shifted from Cuba to Laos, Clines and Shackley, along with key members of Operation 40, were transferred to that country. Shackley became Chief of Station in Vientiane. Clines functioned as Shackley's deputy, and as base chief at Long Tieng. Air support for their operation was provided by Richard Secord, who like Wilson, would surface again during the Iran/Contra affair.[118]

Felix Rodriguez was an interesting character. He had been part of the Operation 40 team, very probably a member of the ZR/RIFLE team, who specialized in commando, sabotage and counter-guerrilla operations. After his time in Laos, he would go on to hunt down Che Guevara in South America, support the Contras in Nicaragua/Honduras, and perform other clandestine paramilitary missions for the CIA until becoming disgruntled with the upper level bureaucracy. Of note during his Laotian tour is his relationship to one such bureaucrat. Rodriguez was one of the principle contacts between the Laotian field team and Donald Gregg, National Security Advisor to then Vice-President George Bush.

Theodore Shackley would eventually leave Laos for a promotion. In 1969, Shackley would be transferred to Saigon to become Chief of Station for all of Vietnam until 1972. Clines followed soon after, and together, they directed the CIA's Operation PHOENIX, the assassination program run under MACV-SOG (Military Assistance Command, Vietnam, Studies and Observations Group).

By June of 1971, the heroin addiction problem in South Vietnam among U.S. troops had garnered national attention. President Nixon, realizing that the media had discovered that U.S. troops were dying at the rate of two a day from heroin overdose in Vietnam, declared a "war on drugs." But such a war would never occur. There was simply too much money involved.

The amount of return on investment for the CIA was in the multi-millions. Some estimates put the yearly take on opium to be in excess of $3-$4 *billion* dollars. To handle such sums of money, and turn it into funds that could not be traced, taxed or even discovered, took an additional organization. This organization, set up in the form of a "bank," became the money laundering mechanism for the insiders within the Agency who knew of the operation.

The enterprise, not officially founded until 1973, was the Nugan Hand bank of Australia. It derived its name from Francis John Nugan, an Australian attorney, and Michael Jon Hand, a former member of the Special Forces who worked under Clines and Shackley. The Nugan Hand bank eventually set up offices and affiliates, or at least addresses, in thirteen separate countries, including the United States, Hong Kong, Taiwan, the Philippines, Thailand, and the Cayman Islands. But the "bank" never seems to have done any banking. According to Jonathan Kwitney, who has written a book on the bank's activities, the organization busied itself in moving funds between countries and various accounts. This operation lasted seven years, and at the end of that period, when the Australian government began to investigate the organization, Michael Hand declared the organization bankrupt and shut down operations.[119]

But by that time, it had been determined that the drug profits from the Laotian war zone had been deposited in the Nugan Hand banks and had been eventually laundered through the Bangkok branch. It had also been discovered that several other conduits for the money had been established and that one branch, Chiang Mai, handled nothing but drug money and served as the personal bank for local drug warlords of the Golden Triangle.

Chiang Mai, a city located on the edge of the Triangle in Thailand, based its entire economy on the opium trade. (Incredibly, the Nugan Hand branch at Chiang Mai had adjoining offices with the local Drug Enforcement Administration (DEA) office and even shared the same secretary).

In one seven month period, the Chiang Mai branch handled $2.6 million in deposits from six major drug dealers. This was only their share, and amounted to less than 5% of the total capital gain received abroad.[120]

But did the CIA, as an agency and institution of the Federal government, know of the drug trafficking that it would one day be accused of conducting? According to Victor Marchetti, the CIA's involvement in drugs was not something that just happened to appear in, or was unique to, Laos. It went back further than that.

"It goes back to the predecessor organization, OSS, and its involvement with the Sicilian Mafia and La Cosa Nostra in southern Italy during World War II," explained Marchetti. "Later on, when they were fighting the communists in France, they got in tight with the Corsican Brotherhood. The Corsican Brotherhood, of course, are big time dope dealers. Things changed in the world and the CIA got involved with the Kubla-Khan types in Burma. The same things happened in Southeast Asia, and later Latin America. Some of the very people who are the best sources of information and who are capable of accomplishing things happen to be the criminal element."[121]

William Colby, Director of the CIA from 1973 to 1976, countered with: "The CIA has had a solid rule against being involved in drug trafficking. That is not to say that some of the people the CIA has used or been in touch with over the years may well have themselves been involved in drug traffic, but not the CIA."

The people on the ground in Laos differed in their statements concerning the official U.S. government position. The airfield operatives and the pilots, those who flew the dangerous missions carrying rice and ammunition to Vang Pao's troops, and the opium back to Long Tieng, told a different story. Ron Rickenbach, who worked for USAID in Laos from 1962 to 1969, stated, "I was on the airstrip. That was my job, to move in and about and go from place to place. I was in the areas where opium was transshipped. I personally was a witness to opium being placed on aircraft, American aircraft, I witnessed it being taken off smaller aircraft coming in from outlying sites."

Neal Hanson, a former senior Air America pilot, confirmed Rickenbach's observation from the aircrew end. "I've seen the sticky bricks come on board," he explained, describing the opium being brought aboard by various passengers. "And no one was challenging their right to carry it. It was their own property...We were sort of a freebie airline in some respects there. Whatever the customer, or the local representative put on the airplane, we flew. Primarily it was transported on our smaller aircraft: the Helios, the Porters and things like that which visited the outlying villages. They would [bring the] opium to market."

The smaller STOL planes covered the countryside, carrying whatever was required by the "customers," whether they be pig farmers or opium producers. The pilots, after dealing with the local attitude regarding opium shipments for a few flights, became numb to the situation. In the words of Ron Rickenbach, "Raw opium was a natural agricultural enterprise for these people, and they had been doing it for many years before the Americans ever got there. When we got there, they continued to do so."

Fred Platt, a former pilot for Air America, explained what it meant to the farmer: "When a farmer raised a crop of opium, what he got for his year's worth of work was the equivalent of thirty-five to forty dollars. That amount of opium, were it refined into morphine base, then into morphine, then into heroin, and appeared on the streets of New York, that thirty-five dollar crop of opium would be worth fifty, sixty, maybe one hundred thousand dollars. That was 1969 dollars. Today? Millions."

As the war in Laos began to take a turn for the worse, and Vang Pao's Meo army was forced to withdraw from the theater of action, it would appear that the amount of drug money required to run the war would decrease. But that did not happen. Though the fighting was slacking off as the NVA and Pathet Lao advanced and took site after site, pushing the Meo back, the flow of opium continued unabated. But where was the money going, if not to the war effort?

According to Frank Terpil, CIA agent Edwin Wilson's former business partner, who was interviewed in 1983 by journalist Jim Hougan, the operation continued long after the Americans had pulled out of Vietnam, and Laos, and even after the date when there was supposedly no American involvement in the conflict in Southeast Asia at all. According to Terpil, the convenient business arrangement with the Miami Mafia (Trafficante) continued long after the fall of Vietnam to the communists.

"The significance of Miami is the drug syndicate," explained Terpil. "That's the base. Shackley, Clines, the Villaverde brothers, Rodriguez...all these people that I hired to terminate other people, from the Agency, are there. They get involved in the biggest drug scandal going on, which is whitewashed. Who is the guy behind the scandal? Clines. Who's the boss of Clines? Shackley. Where do they come from? Laos."[122]

Terpil then addressed the flow of money. "Where did the money come from? Nugan Hand. The whole goddamned thing has been moved down there...Clines was running drugs." Terpil went on to state that the drug lords percentage of the profits returned to the Golden Triangle was flown to them aboard American-owned aircraft. "What was on the plane? Gold! Ten million bucks at a time, in gold." The planes would return loaded with new shipments of opium. "Now what do you do with all that opium? You reinvest it in your own operations...Billions of dollars, not millions, *billions of dollars!*"[123]

The opium was carried south, to Bangkok, where it was sold to drug merchants from Singapore, Hong Kong and New Delhi.[124] The money received was then laundered through the Nugan Hand Bank in Bangkok.[125]

By 1975, the Nugan Hand banking network had drawn the attention of various governments around the world. The Australian government, investigating information that the bank was linked to numerous groups known to be associated with drug trafficking, discovered that several Australian mobsters had dealings with Nugan Hand and were directly linked to Santos Trafficante and his U.S. drug network. The senior officials of Nugan Hand, many of which by now were retired admirals and generals, began to feel the heat. But the banks remained open for business and managed to cover their activities until 1979. At that time, when more investigations began to home in on the operation, the bank was declared insolvent.[126] Francis John Nugan was found dead on a deserted Australian country road, mutilated by the blast of a shotgun. Among his possessions found on what was left of his body by the police was the business card of William Colby, Director of Central Intelligence from 1973 to 1976.[127] Jon Michael Hand, the former Special Forces trooper, simply disappeared.

The cartel did not suffer any great setback because of the closing of the Nugan Hand system. Instead, they had learned a great deal about money laundering and merely shifted the operation to a deeper level, the investment game.

A new firm was established in Honolulu. Serving as a front for the money laundering operation, the financial firm of BBRDW, for Bishop, Baldwin, Rewald, Dillingham and Wong came into being almost overnight. But questionable financial dealings and poorly run operations eventually brought the BBRDW organization, and fifty of its subsidiaries, into the spotlight of both the Internal Revenue Service and the media. A scandal erupted and 43-year-old Ronald Rewald, who had no past experience or qualifications in the financial world, was indicted. But when the case came to trial, a strange thing happened. A former CIA agent was appointed as Assistant District Attorney for the case, and the first thing he did was cut off all lines of questioning and evidence that led to the CIA. Of specific note in the evidence were documents that related to POW and MIA affairs in Southeast Asia. BBRDW, according to several sources, had been involved with financing one, and probably up to three, aborted POW reconnaissance and rescue missions. According to the court transcript, Chief District Judge Harold M. Fong, after reviewing the documents before they were sealed by the court, explained, "...they relate to the highly emotional issues of the missing-in-action and prisoners-of-war."[128]

What they actually related to were missions that were programmed to fail from the beginning. One mission, which was to consist of a handful of Americans and Laotian mercenaries, who were to enter Laos by crossing the Mekong from Thailand to search for a suspected Pathet Lao POW camp containing "caucasians," failed to leave Bangkok. Before the personnel, who believed they were on a legitimate cross-border POW search operation, could leave the city, their arms and equipment were seized by the Thai police and they were evicted from the country. Someone had made special efforts to inform the Thai authorities of their planned activity. According to the team leader, the local CIA station, located in the U.S. Embassy, was the culprit.

Another mission, which did make its way into Laos, reportedly *found* Americans being held prisoner. According to Scott Barnes, a controversial figure who had connections to Vang Pao and Lt. Col. James "Bo" Gritz, the reconnaissance patrol he accompanied into northern Laos managed to locate a suspected POW camp being guarded by Asians in military uniform. Upon examining the camp with high-powered binoculars and cameras equipped with telephoto lenses, prisoners were spotted that were not only caucasian, but were identified as Americans. The team leader, Michael J. Baldwin, was apparently taken aback. He exclaimed, "My god, look! They *are* here! And they're *caucasians*!" Baldwin then employed a long-range high-gain parabolic microphone to listen to the sounds of the camp. "They're American!" The voices that came across the listening device were not only speaking English, they were speaking with an American accent.

Baldwin quickly set up a compact satellite radio used by Special Forces and long-range reconnaissance patrols. Dialing in the frequency of the CIA station in Bangkok, he reported what they had discovered. After a few moments a startling message came back: "*Liquidate the merchandise.*"

Baldwin and Barnes were shocked. They could not believe what they had heard. The message told them that they were to use their sniping equipment to kill the American POWs. Why?

Both men refused to carry out those orders. Instead, they began frantically snapping photographs as proof of what they had seen. Surely there was a mistake in the radio-transmitted orders.

But there wasn't. When Operation GRAND EAGLE, the patrol's codename, returned to Bangkok, the film was confiscated by the local CIA. It disappeared, never to be seen again. Barnes and Baldwin, mystified over the turn of events and disappointed that the American POWs had to be left behind, renamed the mission BOHICA, Bend Over, Here It Comes Again.

Barnes later discovered that the mission leader, "Michael J. Baldwin," was in fact, Jerry Daniels, a former CIA and Special Forces operative who worked under Clines at Long Tieng and served as Vang Pao's case officer.[129]

In a later attempt to locate American POWs in Laos, former Green Beret Lt. Col. James "Bo" Gritz led a three-man team into the Golden Triangle section of Burma.

He had been told by a member of the National Security Council that an opium warlord named General Khun Sa might know of, or even have control of, American POWs captured during the Vietnam war.

In 1983, Gritz's team managed to make their way through the jungles and virgin teak forests of northern Thailand to Burma to meet with Khun Sa. What they found was that once again, the POW/MIA situation was directly linked to drug trafficking. Though Khun Sa told Gritz that he did not have, or know of, any Americans held within the Shan state (his territory), he did want Gritz to take back to Washington an offer that he felt the Reagan administration could not refuse. The offer was this: The Shan people would reduce, and within five years quit, the production of opium if the U.S would simply give Khun Sa one tenth of the money that was sent to Thailand to fight the reputed "war on drugs" being supposedly conducted by the U.S. Government under Vice President George Bush.

Gritz was excited. Though he did not succeed in gaining information regarding U.S. POWs, he did manage to return home with an offer that would definitely impact the drug scene, and subsequently, the crime rate at home. The mission, Gritz felt, was not a total failure.

Khun Sa's motivation for such and offer was simple. He wanted the Shan State, and its people, recognized by the U.S. government. If this occurred, Khun Sa's people (and his private 40,000 man army) would be legitimized in the eyes of the Burmese government. Secondly, he wanted the U.S. to send Peace Corps volunteers to show the Shans how to grow crops other than opium, and for the proper equipment to be provided to do so. If the U.S. agreed, he would reduce the opium production over a five year period to zero. This would account for over 1,000 tons of opium that was being brought down the infamous "Heroin Highway" to Bangkok. It would also have an impact on the receiving end, and all the people involved in the chain who were making billions of dollars on the product world-wide.

Gritz returned to the U.S. and delivered Khun Sa's message to his contact at the White House, NSC advisor Tom Harvey. Harvey called Gritz later with a "well done" message concerning his successful infiltration and exfiltration of Khun Sa's hideaway. When Gritz asked about the heroin deal, Harvey turned cryptic.

"What about the 900 tons," asked Gritz, referring to the 1986 quantity of opium that was due to be sent to Bangkok by Khun Sa.

"Bo," said Harvey quietly, "there's no interest here in that."

Gritz was taken aback. "Tom, what do you mean 'no interest'? Didn't President Reagan appoint Vice President Bush to be the top cop and keep drugs out of the U.S.?"

"Bo, what can I tell you? There is no interest here in doing that."[130]

Gritz continued to press the issue and returned to Burma to conduct a second interview with Khun Sa. This time he took a video camera and filmed the entire meeting. After returning to the U.S., he delivered copies of the tape to several members of the written and electronic media and to numerous congressmen and senators. But he received almost no coverage in the press, none on television, and almost total silence from Washington. Finally, when a few smaller newspapers whose circulation is outside of the Beltway wrote lengthy articles naming certain high government officials as being conspirators, Washington reacted. Especially when one of those accused was the Assistant Secretary of Defense.

"A drug warlord in Burma has accused Assistant U.S. Secretary of Defense Richard L. Armitage and former American officials of trafficking in drugs to raise money for anti-Communist operations," began a June 4th, 1987 article in a Riverside California newspaper written by David E. Hendrix. "In a three-hour videotape interview smuggled out of Southeast Asia within the past week and given to the Press-Enterprise yesterday, Khun Sa said high-ranking American officials were involved in drug trafficking between 1965 and 1979."

1979. Five years after the Paris Peace Accords were signed, and the same time span since American forces were pulled out of Southeast Asia. Still, the drugs flowed out of the region and the money flowed into certain, clandestine bank accounts. The article went on: "Khun Sa, who says he directs an army of 40,000 attempting to form an independent nation from part of Burma, said Armitage controlled the finances of the alleged American drug operations. 'After the Vietnam War, Richard Armitage was a prominent trafficker to Bangkok,' a Khun Sa aide said. 'Between 1975 and 1979 he was a very prominent trafficker. He was one of the embassy employees.' The aide said Armitage established the Far East Trading Co. after leaving the embassy, and used the company as a cover for drug traffic."

Armitage, previous to being appointed to the Reagan administration, had served in the Defense Attache's office in Saigon during the war, then between 1973 and 1975 served as a consultant with the Department of Defense in Washington. In 1975, he became an "export agent" in Bangkok. This lasted until 1978, when he became an aide to Senator Robert Dole.

Various offices in Washington played down the tapes, making statements ranging from "we haven't seen the tapes yet, so we can't comment,"[131] to "These are old allegations, but without having viewed the videotapes, it's hard to address the current allegations. Regarding the old allegations, they have been looked into and have been found to have no substance."[132]

And so it went. No one wanted to address the content of the tapes, or even acknowledge receiving them or viewing them. In typical political/bureaucratic fashion, the issue was down-played for the moment with the hope that it would become "yesterday's news" tomorrow. And to the media, as every government official knows, old news is no news.

Even so, the article did drive several names home to the American people. According to the report, Khun Sa's staff stated that former CIA official Theodore Shackley was the central figure in the American-controlled Laotian drug business, and later had been considered as a candidate for Director of Central Intelligence. He was also later discovered to be a key player in the Iranian arms-for-hostages dealings that would expose the CIA, the NSC and secret underworld dealings with international arms dealers to the American congress.

Gritz's reward was to be indicted by a federal grand jury for doing exactly what every clandestine agent working for any government does on a routine basis: he used a bogus passport to enter and leave Thailand. Gritz's attorney, Lamond Mills, the former U.S. Attorney for Nevada, told the press that "If...the United States government tries Col. Bo Gritz, believe me, he won't be the only one tried. I'm not going to stand there and let him take the fall on a technical violation when all he was doing was acting for the American government in trying to find POWs...I've got three hours of video tape I'm going to use."

The charges were dropped by the government.

H. Ross Perot, who became very involved in the plight of U.S prisoners of war in Indochina and their families, was named by President Reagan to assist in the hunt for POWs. However, when he brought his massive assets to bear, he discovered basically what Gritz and Barnes and already learned. The POW affair was meshed with the drug scene like the teeth on a zipper.

Upon traveling to the White House to meet with the Vice President, who Reagan had directed to lead the war on drugs, Perot felt that there was less concern over the drug problem than he was originally led to believe. It was obvious that he was becoming disheartened by the whole affair when he told Bush, "Well, George, I go in looking for prisoners, but I spend all my time discovering the government has been moving drugs around the world and is involved in illegal arms deals...I can't get at the prisoners because of the corruption among our own covert people."

Shortly thereafter Perot was removed from the position as presidential investigator for POW/MIA affairs. In a heart-rending statement made to the POW/MIA families in 1987, he said simply, "I have been instructed to cease and desist."

According to Gritz, the Pathet Lao continue to hold 308 American POWs. "They have stated that they want to negotiate, and that they had 'tens of tens' of POWs, and they could not understand why the Americans would not negotiate with them like they did the Vietnamese," said Gritz. "I found out why...when the war ended, the communists consolidated Laos and Cambodia. The 'Secret Team' that trafficked in drugs during the war continued to do so, supposedly to continue to finance covert operations inside Southeast Asia. But the funds went also to wars all over the world."

And they went into private bank accounts. The "Secret Team" continued to operate into the 1980s, and with a few new faces, surfaced again during the Iran/Contra affair, known in the media as "Contragate."

But why was so much clandestine attention focused on Laos in reference to the POW/MIA affair? Why not North Vietnam, who held hundreds more Americans prisoners than the Pathet Lao? The answer is simple. The Vietnamese, in their consistent Asian play on words, have stated over and over that "No live American POWs are in Vietnam." To them, this may be a factual statement for two reasons: 1) some of the Americans held inside of Vietnam, like their Korean War and World

War II predecessors in the USSR and China, have been designated as "war criminals." This removes them from POW status. 2) Most of the American POWs have been transferred out of Vietnam to Northern Laos, where Washington's investigative teams sent to Vietnam will never find them.

These men have been held amid the poppy fields in Laos long enough to have intimate details of the drug trade. Should one come out, the entire affair would unravel. And for those within the government who have, for economic and political reasons, consistently stated that no live Americans still exist in Southeast Asia, one live American returnee would be politically embarrassing at the least, and result in criminal prosecution, followed by lengthy prison sentences, as the most likely scenario. Sadly, the entities assigned the tasks of resolving the POW/MIA issue have historically contained, or answered to, the very people who are personally concerned or involved in both aspects.

"[They] would not want the American POWs to come home," explains Gritz. "Because when they do, there will be an investigation as to why they were abandoned. At that time we will uncover this secret organization and its illicit drug money and financing. The Secret Team would then be exposed."[133]

As of 1993, the coverup and the damage control continues at the highest levels. Senator Bob Smith, Vice Chairman of the Select Committee on POW/MIA Affairs, stated in a Committee meeting that took place on December 1, 1992:

> "The Select Committee meets today, one year after its first round of hearings into the POW/MIA issue to consider the fate of unaccounted for American servicemen from the Vietnam conflict. These hearings have been dubbed the 'Wrap-Up Hearings.' Frankly, I am disturbed that we are perceived to be wrapping up this investigation when there is so much more *unwrapping* we should be doing...I have found that the more research we do, the more questions we find. That task was to learn everything our government knows about the fate of our missing men. Mr. Chairman, I regret to say that this Committee does not yet have everything our government knows on the fate of our men..."
>
> "For the last 19 years, we have been told by both our government, and the Communist governments in Southeast Asia, that no American servicemen were kept back or left behind at the end of the war. Indeed, just this past August at the Committee hearing, the Defense Intelligence Agency POW/MIA Chief informed us, and I quote, '...Through the debriefings at Homecoming, we accounted for everybody who was known to be in captivity.'[134] The facts, as our government has known them, tell a different story. In my own review of MIA files, intelligence reports, and other information, I have come up with a universe of over 300 American servicemen who were last known by our side to be alive, many of them in captivity in both Laos and Vietnam, all of them still unaccounted for...."

> "The list includes references to information from the National Security Agency which confirms the capture of U.S. servicemen from incidents in Laos and Vietnam, where the individuals have previously been simply listed as missing by our government. These men are still unaccounted for, yet we know many of them were captured.
>
> "This listing of over 300 persons is also based, in part, on information contained in the debriefs of POWs who returned in 1973, and who reported that others were last seen or known to have been alive. These men are also still unaccounted for. Incredibly, the Department of Defense, for the last 12 months, has denied access by professional Committee staff members to the relevant portions of these debriefings, even though we have been receiving permission from the returned POWs themselves to review the information they provided upon their return. This is but one more example of the way this investigation is being obstructed."
>
> "...When you consider the number of MIAs at the end of he war, currently 1,117, where we had no information on the fate of the individual, it is probable that even my number of over 300 is at best conservative."
>
> "...the staff also found over 920 accounts of reported American POWs sighted or said to be detained in captive environments in Laos and Vietnam. More importantly, they found that these accounts clustered in geographic locations where, in many cases, our own intelligence agencies confirmed the presence of detention facilities.
>
> "In April of this year, the staff, after having plotted all of these sightings on a map, tried to brief the members of this committee on their findings. Regretfully, that briefing did not take place in an independent and objective manner because the Defense Intelligence Agency, with the cooperation of certain members and senior staff of this committee, badgered and insulted the Committee's investigators. Some obviously did not agree with those findings, as is their right, but to this day, I remain shocked at the manner in which both investigators and their findings were treated.
>
> "For the record, let's be clear what those findings were. After spending over 2,000 man-hours reviewing these selected reports, staff investigators concluded, and I quote, that 'the intelligence indicates that American POWs have been alive in captivity in Vietnam and Laos as late as 1989, and that no POWs are in captivity in Cambodia.'"

Senator Smith, during his presentation, made some very bold statements. One regarded recent distress signals picked up by aerial photo reconnaissance:

> "As late as June, 1992, next to a prison in North Vietnam...the markings 72-TA-88 and a name are stamped out next to a prison facility, and this name and the code letters 'TA' do in fact correlate specifically by name to an unaccounted for serviceman shot down in '72, and the National Security

> Agency indicates this individual may have been captured during the end of the war in Vietnam."

He went on to mention that:

> "...on at least four occasions, the Vietnamese reportedly indicated to the United States, through third parties and third countries, that there were live American servicemen in Vietnam and Laos who could be returned through negotiations with the United States...[these were] in January, 1977;...January, 1981;...November 1984 and early 1985;...and in the 1989/1990 time frame."
>
> But no one seems to have wanted to negotiate for "live American servicemen."

Smith's investigative staff, in their report, described their frustrations in dealing with the American intelligence services and requested help in forcing the various entities to cooperate with the investigation:

> "Mr. Chairman...I ask your support to immediately issue subpoenas for the documents we have not received from the Executive Branch [President Bush's administration] including 60 boxes of intelligence reports from the National Security Agency, operational files from the Central Intelligence Agency, the relevant portions of the debriefing reports from our returned POWs, and over 500 DIA intelligence reports which our investigators say indicate POWs have been alive in captivity in Vietnam and Laos as late as 1989.
>
> "I also call on this Committee, as I indicated in writing last week to immediately vote to declassify, as we are empowered to do under our authorizing legislation, all the live-sighting and hearsay reports that have been in our possession for the last six months...The American people are entitled to have these reports publicly released *by the Senate in a coherent fashion.* Last week I made one last appeal for the Defense Department to come to the Senate and physically declassify these reports. They denied my specific request in writing. They won't come here. So I call on this Committee to do it ourselves."
>
> "...In conclusion, Mr. Chairman...we have hundreds of questions yet to be answered, thousands of documents that this Committee has not seen and that this government refuses to provide. This Committee must have the will to get those documents, and to get those questions answered, and to get all the information declassified for the American people...
>
> "There should be no final report until there is a final accounting."

The Senatorial investigation, though far from complete, ended before Christmas, 1992. The POWs, if any are still alive, remain in captivity in Southeast Asia.

And not one government official has faced trial for drug trafficking.

As for the feelings of the veterans who fought in Vietnam and Laos, former Green Beret Major Mark Smith, who was privy to live sighting reports through Army intelligence channels, sums it up: "You're talking [about] people who have no feelings whatsoever about the individual soldier in the field. Their answer to all this is to build a black wall in Washington and put all their names on it to pacify you and I. Do they care about soldiers? They could give a damn about soldiers."

Part IV

Manipulating The Third World

"The underdeveloped world presents greater opportunities for covert intelligence collection simply because governments are much less highly orientated; there is less security consciousness; and there is apt to be more actual or potential diffusion of power among parties, localities, organizations and individuals outside the central governments."

Richard Bissell
Deputy Director of Plans (1958-62)
Central Intelligence Agency

"The most obscene haste with which the West has rushed to pour arms into Zaire reinforces the argument of many Africans that behind every attempted or successful coup on this continent is the hand of a foreign power."

The Zambian government
concerning CIA activity in
Africa, 1975

"Certain covert operations have been incompatible with American principles and ideology and when exposed, have resulted in damaging this nation's ability to exercise moral and ethical leadership."

Senate Select Committee
On Intelligence

Chapter 20

A Profitable Adventure

Following World War II, the United States became increasingly concerned with the fact that underdeveloped countries of the Third World were rapidly becoming targets for Soviet expansionism. The Russians, already having gained control of the Eastern European countries, and successfully pushed communism into mainland China, North Korea and Vietnam, quickly turned their eyes to other strategically located or resource-rich countries that might expand the Soviet sphere of influence in the world.

As one country after another began to show signs of internal turmoil instigated by external sources, the U.S. government found itself in the position of having to guard its interests abroad in manners that would not be considered acceptable by the American people at home. It was one thing to assist a legitimate government in protecting itself from communist aggression, but quite another to remove an existing government and replace it with one more favorable to American interests, especially if done with violence. But between 1951 and 1978, this is exactly how business was conducted.

Often it was exactly that. Business. American "interests" went far beyond world politics and national security. In too many instances, staged *coups*, covert military action, popular revolutions, and assassinations conducted under the guise of national security were in fact motivated by the business interests of major corporations, and the investment bankers that backed them.

To the average American, the forty years following World War II were a very confusing four decades. The media spoke of countries few people had ever heard of, much less understood the significance of, and described bloody revolutions, terrorist activities, bombings, kidnappings and murders on an ever increasing scale. But for the most part, the public paid little attention to these events occurring in remote countries half a world away. After all, what bearing did these events have on the United States? Little of it seemed to concern America.

Or did it? What the American public did not realize was to what extent the U.S. government, by way of its clandestine services, participated in the bloody events transpiring in the Third World.

Iran

Between 1951 and 1953, while world attention was focused on the fighting in Korea, other key geopolitical events were occurring that drew little if any press from the media. An entire government was in the process of being targeted for change, and it was to be done with as little attention as possible being drawn to the event. The target was Iran.

In that time frame, the actual power in the Iranian government rested with the Prime Minister, Mohammed Mossadegh. Though the Shah, the traditional king of Persia, held the throne, his power had been systematically reduced until he was little more than a figurehead. The young Shah, Mohammed Resa Pahlavi, had very little experience in government and no motivation to regain the reins of power from the Prime Minister, who held great popularity among the people after nationalizing the British-owned Anglo-Iranian Oil Company. The Iranians, believing the British had been bleeding the nation of its main source of wealth for decades, considered this a move of nationalistic patriotism.

The British, of course, were outraged. But there was little they could do about it other than request American support in mounting an economic blockade. The support was given and the pressure that was brought to bear began having a critical effect on the Iranian economy. But for Winston Churchill, that was not enough. He wanted more direct action, and in 1952 he ordered his intelligence personnel to make contact with the CIA to see if there might be "other" activities mounted against Mossadegh.

President Truman, after getting wind of the request, refused to allow the CIA to participate in such an adventure for British interests. The U.S. had its hands full in Korea and the Iranian situation was a British problem.

One year later this changed. John Foster Dulles was appointed as Secretary of State, the same year his brother, Allen Dulles, was named to head the CIA. To the Dulles brothers, both Wall Street lawyers who had represented the Rockefeller family's oil interests, Iran appeared to be a plum ripe for the picking. The Iranian oil assets, should they fall in to American hands, would benefit not only the nation's economy, but certain large oil companies as well. Though the Iranian oil fields had traditionally been an all-British preserve, that could now be changed.

Declaring Mossadegh a member of the Iranian communist party, the Tudeh, the State Department and the CIA began making plans for his ouster. With Mossadegh removed from the scene, power would fall back to the young Shah who could be controlled by the American government. The end result would be a subservient country that was strategically located, held tremendous oil reserves that could be exploited, and would provide the CIA with an excellent base of operations along its northern border for monitoring Soviet communications. Everyone would get what they wanted. Except the British.

To head up the operation, Allen Dulles picked Kermit "Kim" Roosevelt, grandson of President Theodore Roosevelt. Kim Roosevelt was an old hand with the CIA by this time, having left Harvard during World War II to work with the OSS, and had become an expert on the Middle East. He was given a budget of $2 million, his choice of team members, and a mission objective to topple Mossadegh from power. He had been briefed that this would be a dangerous assignment, that they would have to operate outside the protection of the U.S. Embassy, and that they would have to supplement their tiny force with local agents of their own choosing. All in all, it was to be a risky business.

The plan developed by the CIA was simple. The Shah, assured of American support, was to order Mossadegh replaced by the interior minister, General Fazollah Zahedi. Mossadegh, once removed from power, would not be able to stop Zahedi from restoring power to the Shah. The plan was sound in theory. In actuality, it was a dismal failure.

The planned coup was initiated in August of 1953. Shah Pahlavi did what he was told, but Mossadegh did not go out the door as easily as the CIA had hoped. Instead, confident of popular support, Mossadegh had the colonel who delivered the message arrested, then declared the Shah's decree illegal. He then removed the last vestiges of power from the Shah and assumed full control of the country himself.

Massive demonstrations erupted in the Streets of Teheran in support of Mossadegh. The Shah, fearing for his life and realizing the CIA could not protect him as they had promised, took his family and fled the country. After a brief sojourn in Baghdad, Pahlavi went on to Rome where he met CIA Director Allen Dulles.

Dulles, contrary to being depressed about the turn of events, assured the Shah that the situation was far from over. It was only a matter of adjusting the plan to handle Mossadegh in a different manner. The CIA had simply misjudged Mossadegh's personality. He was a bit more stubborn, which meant he didn't take the hint, than they had originally anticipated.

As this meeting was taking place, Kermit Roosevelt was working quickly in Teheran to take advantage of the destabilized state of affairs. By bribing the proper officials, and printing and distributing propaganda leaflets which included the text of the Shah's decree, a counter-demonstration erupted in the streets. This demonstration, outnumbering the pro-Mossadegh mobs, was extremely successful and was soon joined by the majority of the military whose officers had previously been bribed by Roosevelt's team.

Bloody fighting broke out, leaving several dead in the streets. The Tudeh and pro-Mossadegh force, reinforced by a few faithful army elements, was quickly outgunned and forced to flee. Zahedi was then installed as the Prime Minister and Mossadegh was arrested. As Mossadegh stood trial for various trumped-up offenses, Zahedi invited the Shah to return to Teheran.

Within a year, American oil companies, principally Standard Oil, were given 25-year contracts by the Iranian government that allocated them a forty percent share of the country's petroleum; CIA communication monitoring stations were constructed along the northern (Iranian/Soviet) border; American arms manufacturers and aerospace corporations flooded into the country to equip and train the Shah's armed forces; and the CIA began recruiting for and training the Shah's secret police, the notorious Savak.

Over the next twenty years, the Shah proved to be a valuable asset to the U.S. The listening posts along the Soviet border continued to pour reams of intelligence into the CIA coffers; American oil companies and arms companies had made, and continued to make, millions; and the communist advance through the Middle East had been stopped short of dominating the Persian Gulf region. But the rule of the Shah was not a popular one. His secret police, the Savak, had been responsible for keeping any political opposition to a minimum and had done so with morbid enthusiasm, using murder, kidnapping, terror and torture as their tools.

After the 1976 election of Jimmy Carter to the Presidency, the State Department and the CIA (now under retired navy admiral Stansfield Turner) made overtures to the Shah to change the ways in which the Savak conducted itself. Turner, who was not a proponent of the CIA and did not place a great deal of faith in the HUMINT (Human Intelligence) sources, quickly set about reducing the CIA's agent strength almost as soon as he had taken over from the previous DCI, George Bush. Under Turner, who had specific orders from Carter to curtail certain CIA activities, the Agency was cut from several thousand agents to just over 300, the lowest it had been since the Truman years. Covert operations were reduced to two or three each fiscal year, and the operating budget was cut to just 40% of the previous year's allocation. The old hands around the Agency, who had operated with little, if any, supervision and previously had millions of dollars from the "Black Budget"[135] at their disposal, found themselves being forced to retire, resign, or fall into step with the new concepts of how the CIA should be run. Turner, who did not trust intelligence developed by field agents, built up a new program that utilized electronic devices such as spy satellites and communications monitoring systems to provide up-to-the-minute intelligence. Though he did manage to bring the CIA into the cutting edge of technology, he failed to realize that no amount of equipment, no matter how sophisticated, could replace people in the field. Observations of an activity first-hand by an experienced field operative could not be replaced by intelligence analysts who studied satellite photos and radio communications from the safety of their offices in Washington. And ironically, because the CIA was now, at the insistence of Carter, "more open" in their activities, allied countries ceased sharing their secrets with the U.S. Instead of making the CIA more efficient and trustworthy, Turner and Carter only succeeded in defanging the beast on the exterior, and causing the secret cells of the good-old-boy network in the inside to bury themselves, and their secret activities, deeper. To those who were to survive the

Carter purges, Turner was only a bureaucrat to be tolerated and out-lived until a new President could replace Carter and a new DCI could be appointed.

It was during this time that three of the key players of the CIA's activities in Laos and Vietnam again surfaced. In 1975, after the fall of Saigon, DCI William Colby reassigned Theodore Shackley back to Washington and promoted him to Associate Director in the Directorate of Operations. This was a major position that put him in charge of such divisions as the Covert Action Staff, Special Operations, Counter-Intelligence Staff, Counter-Terrorism, and ironically, Counter-Narcotics. Shackley's old Southeast Asia and Cuban venture partner, Thomas Clines, was brought in to head CIA operations and training.

Another interesting character entered the scene at the same time. Edwin P. Wilson, a former CIA agent who worked under Clines, had been operating in Iran since 1975 as an agent of the super-secret Naval Intelligence Task Force 157. Clines, who had arranged Wilson's transfer in 1971, reestablished contact with Wilson and began utilizing his talents in the CIA's efforts to prop up the Shah's failing regime. Wilson's specialty was establishing proprietary companies to act as fronts for clandestine operations. For what Shackley and Clines had in mind, Wilson would be the perfect choice. He had already set up commercial fronts such as World Marine, Inc., Maryland Maritime, Inc. and Consultants International. Under Clines direction, he would become an "advisor" to the Savak and act as a double agent to keep Clines and Shackley advised on what the Savak was up to. For it was actually the Savak who controlled the country, and the Shah, as he had been before, was only a figurehead. Whoever controlled the Savak controlled Iran, and the billions of dollars of oil and drug money generated by the country.

Wilson would not be operating in Iran by himself. Following the fall of Saigon, Richard Secord was promoted to Brigadier General and sent to Iran to serve as Chief, U.S. Air Force Military Assistance Advisory Group (MAAG).[136] As such, he was in position to represent U.S. contractors in the sale of arms to the Shah. He was also responsible for training Iranian military personnel in the use of new weapons, equipment and aircraft. That same year, Erich von Marbod, who had served as Nixon's Operation 40 covert operations advisor, was sent by the Defense Department to monitor all U.S. military contracts inside the country. The old crew from the anti-Castro days and Southeast Asia was back together again.

Once the Savak discovered Wilson's ties with Secord, von Marbod, Clines and Shackley, they began pressing Wilson to increase the flow of arms and equipment to Iran. Wilson was only too happy to comply and the profits from the sales, many of which had been conducted through one of his front companies, began to soar.

Some of the equipment the Savak purchased through Wilson was electronic surveillance and location systems. By using such equipment, the Savak was able to home in on clandestine radio transmitters that broadcast anti-Shah messages and subsequently close them down. In one instance that was reported to Wilson, nine such dissidents, after having been apprehended and handcuffed, had been shoved to their knees and summarily shot. Wilson passed all this information up the chain, but it had no impact on the continuing operation.

In 1976, Carter's new head of naval intelligence, Admiral Bobby Ray Inman, disbanded Task Force 157 and removed its personnel from Iran. Wilson chose to remain in the country as a "civilian," however, and continued to do exactly what he had been doing all along in his "advising and consulting" capacity.

According to Wilson, who is now serving a lengthy prison sentence after being convicted of several international crimes, the Savak began providing him with lists of names of anti-Shah activists that needed to be eliminated. Wilson would then pass them along to Shackley through Rafael "Chi Chi" Quintero (a Cuban CIA operative from the Miami station and the Bay of Pigs days). The anti-Shah dissidents were later found executed by hired assassins.[137]

In August of 1976, Shackley recruited the Iranian-born head of the Stanford Technology Corporation, Albert Hakim, to play a pivotal part in the Shah's purchase of American technology. Hakim had major contacts within the Iranian military and the Savak and could further arms sales and obtain more lucrative contracts. Shortly after taking the job, he was introduced by Wilson to Secord, who along with von Marbod, succeeded in using Hakim's contacts to sell the Iranians $5.5 million worth of electronic monitoring equipment built by Rockwell International, and $7.5 million worth of telephone monitoring equipment. This last deal was cut by bribing General Mohammed Khatemi, commander of the Iranian Air Force, and an associate of Hakim.[138]

That same month three top managers for the Rockwell IBEX project were murdered. William C. Cottrell, Donald G. Smith, and Robert R. Krongard, all involved with the IBEX surveillance equipment project being set up for the Savak, were assassinated in a road ambush. The former IBEX Director of Security, Gene Wheaton, investigated the murders for ten years. His conclusion was that the trio had been eliminated because they had discovered profit skimming going on within the project and that Secord, Clines, Hakim, Shackley and Quintero were linked to the assassinations. The only people eventually accused of the murders were two Iranians who were killed during shootouts with the Iranian police when they came to arrest them.[139]

As all of these business dealings were transpiring, the political problems within the country were being neglected by the CIA. Instead of attempting to win the hearts and minds of the people, as they did with the Meo in Laos and the Montagnards of Vietnam, they simply let the Savak continue its programs of oppression, brutality and torture. One former CIA intelligence analyst, Jesse Leaf, recalled that the Savak established special facilities where cells contained some of the most horrible torture devices ever devised. "The ones [methods of torture] that I saw reported on were hot tables, which were metallic tables hooked up to electricity, and people would put the juice through it and it would burn parts of their back or whatever; [other torture methods included] boiling water up the rectum; heavy weights on the genitals; beatings with wire ropes; nail pullings; tooth pullings and so on. The CIA's attitude to Savak torture was 'their enemy is my enemy.' If Savak wanted to torture somebody, some communists or somebody who was anti-Shah, or who was ultimately detrimental to our world interests, well, fine, go ahead and let them do it. The Agency's official position was that it was not our problem."[140]

This attitude, plus the lack of good human intelligence being developed from inside Iran, particularly due to the lack of field agents inside the country since Turner and Carter had reduced the CIA to a shadow of its former self, caused the greatest intelligence failure in modern history to occur. While business dealings took up the time of those who were sent to keep tabs on the situation and make corrections as needed, the fundamentalist Moslem religious sects were rallying the people to revolution. In January, 1979, Iran was again cast into massive demonstrations. Within days the people began disarming the military and taking over government buildings. Instead of reacting with force, which the Shah certainly had, he panicked and once again fled the country. This time he would not return.

The CIA listening posts were abandoned, each wired to high explosives should anyone tamper with the sites, and the CIA technicians began making their way out of the country any way they could.

The fanatical anti-American Khoumeni regime came to power almost immediately, flying the Ayatollah Khoumeni back to Teheran from Paris after years in exile. Within days a rag-tag band of Moslem fundamentalist militia, posing as students to the world press, stormed the U.S. Embassy in Teheran. The Marine guards, who could have defended the Embassy, were ordered not to resist by President Carter. Even though forcibly entering and capturing the embassy of a foreign country is an automatic act of war, Carter failed to react accordingly. This failure to respond resulted in the Embassy staff and the CIA station personnel being taken prisoner and held hostage for 444 days.[141]

The Iranian crisis could have been averted had the United States understood sooner the injustices perpetrated by the Savak and intervened. But neither did the State Department, or the CIA, report to the President what was actually going on in Iran behind the Savak's prison doors. Nor did either do anything to correct the situation before it got out of hand, or failing that, support a democratic change in power to salvage a weakening situation. The end result is that the U.S. lost a vital ally in a part of the world that would become ever more important to U.S. interests as time went by.

But for some of the participants, it had been a profitable adventure.

Chapter 21

Guatemala: The Banana War

One year after the war in Korea ended in stalemate, and just ten months after the successful reinstallation of the Shah in Iran, the American government turned its attention to regions of influence much closer to home: Central and South America. It was as if it were time for a bit of prophecy to be fulfilled. In the words of Simon Bolivar, who brought revolution to South America: "America..is the highest and most irrefutable assignment of destiny..The nations I have founded will, after prolonged and bitter agony, go into an eclipse, but will later emerge as states of the one great republic, *America*."[142]

In relation to the engineered takeover conducted in Iran, the coup that took place in Guatemala in 1954 was considerably more audacious. Where the public excuse for being involved in Iran was thinly disguised as being an anti-communist operation, no such excuse existed in the tiny Central American country of Guatemala.

In 1951, Jacobo Arbenz Guzman, a pro-trade union reformist, was elected as the country's president. His platform consisted of redistributing the land, of which two percent of the population owned 70%, and labor reforms for an impoverished population whose main source of income was derived from the American-owned United Fruit Company. For decades the UFC had dominated Guatemala, the original "Banana Republic", and exploited the cheap labor of the semi-literate population. Arbenz was determined to change that.

But Arbenz's problem, as seen by the CIA, was that he not only tolerated, but cooperated with the local communist party. Though he, himself, was not a communist, and he had none in his cabinet, the mere fact that he did not actively suppress them made him intolerable to Washington. Especially after the United Fruit Company utilized its powerful contacts in Washington to influence Eisenhower to do something to protect UFC interests in the country. Arbenz became a two-fold threat. He not only gave the appearance of providing communisim with a foothold in

North America, he threatened the economic dominance of influential and powerful private interests.

Eisenhower decided Arbenz had to go. He issued marching orders to Allen Dulles, whom he had just appointed Director of Central Intelligence after moving General Walter Bedell Smith, former DCI under Truman, to his personal staff. Dulles turned the Guatemalan operation over to his Deputy Director of Plans, Frank Wisner. Wisner, following standard procedure, began searching for a Guatemalan national of sufficient rank and stature to become the figurehead for a coup, and quickly found him in Carlos Castillo Armas, a right-wing colonel in the Guatemalan army. As would be the trademark in all CIA-involved coups in the Third World, the Guatemalan operation would be staged as a revolt by dissatisfied elements of the Guatemalan military, assisted by right-wing exile groups.

Guatemalan expatriates, led by mercenaries recruited from both inside the United States and abroad, were assembled at training bases in Nicaragua. An air force, consisting of C-47 transports and World War II vintage Republic P-47 Thunderbolt fighter-bombers, began staging at Managua airport. Along the Honduran/Guatemalan border, clandestine radio transmitters and communications stations were set up to handle both inflammatory disinformation and military communications.

By the Spring of 1954 all was in order. The small army had been trained, the air force equipped and staffed, and the radio transmitters had begun transmitting anti-Arbenz propaganda. All that was needed for the next phase of the operation, the military uprising, was an excuse to escalate. The plotters didn't have to wait long.

In May, the CIA discovered that a shipment of arms had been sent to Guatemala from Czechoslovakia. This was all that was needed to spur a counter-action by the U.S. government. Almost immediately, fifty tons of military equipment and ammunition was flown from U.S. bases to the "exile army" in Nicaragua. This was followed by a release of several news stories describing links between Arbenz and various European communist countries, magnifying and escalating the incident into an international confrontation. To blockade such shipments, to cut off Guatemala's trade with the outside world, ships of the U.S. Navy were dispatched to search all foreign vessels enroute to the tiny country. The French and Dutch, after discovering that their ships had been stopped on the high seas, protested loudly that such activities were, in effect, an act of piracy. The British, flatly refusing to allow their ships to be detained or boarded, notified the U.S. government that such action was tantamount to a "technical act of war." One British official, realizing who was behind all of this, sent a memorandum to another government official that stated "I have written a private letter to Sir R. Makins asking him whether Mr. Dulles is going fascist. I can think of no other explanation [for this conduct]."

By June, the propaganda campaign against Arbenz began to show its effects. The Voice of America, operated by CIA agent David Atlee Phillips, had conducted a day and night blitz campaign of disinformation against Arbenz, accusing him of being a devout communist, of disloyalty to his own people, and of ties to the Eastern European bloc.

Arbenz, sensing a change in the attitude of his military, grounded his own air force and began watching his army generals carefully for signs of treason. The air force commander, fearing further actions by Arbenz, defected to the CIA-backed mercenary army in Nicaragua. The time was ripe for invasion.

Eisenhower, in a last meeting prior to sending the rebels into Guatemala, stated: "I'm prepared to take any steps that are necessary to see that this mission succeeds. For if it succeeds, it's the people of Guatemala throwing off the yoke of communism. If it fails, the flag of the United States has failed." No mention was made of the fact that Arbenz had been elected in a democratic election by the people.

On June 18th, 1954, Colonel Armas took his "Army of Liberation" across the Honduran border into Guatemala. As they made their way toward Guatemala City, the squadron of P-47s bombed San Jose, the major Guatemalan port on the west coast located fifty miles southwest of the capital. While both of these events were transpiring, the Voice of America filled the air waves with false news flashes of battles and skirmishes, in which Armas was consistently the victor, that were total fiction. The effects of the broadcasts were spectacular. Each hour that went by, with its announcements of additional Armas' victories, the Guatemalans became more demoralized.

As the population sat glued to their radio sets, the C-47s took advantage of the fact that the Guatemalan Air Force remained grounded and began dropping propaganda leaflets over the capital. These flights were interspersed with sorties of bomb-dropping P-47s that added weight to the claims of the radio stations.

Arbenz, by way of his representative in the United Nations, immediately accused the United States of being actively involved in the attack. The United States delegate countered with the programmed response that the uprising "does not involve aggression but is a revolt of Guatemalans against Guatemalans."

The invasion was going well, but the CIA feared that the small rebel air force would not be able to counter the Guatemalan *Fuerza Aeria Guatemalteca* if Arbenz lifted the order grounding it. Allen Dulles, in anticipation of such an action, managed to talk Eisenhower into releasing more fighters from U.S. military (Air National Guard) inventory. The airplanes could not simply be transferred to a rebel army, which would immediately implicate the U.S. government, but could be moved through a "cut-out," or middleman. This was effected through the Nicaraguan Air Force, which "bought" the planes for next to nothing, then passed them on to the rebel squadron.

By the end of June, Arbenz, suffering from almost six weeks of military and propaganda assault, could no longer stand the pressure. On the 27th, he turned the reins of power over to the head of the Guatemalan armed forces, Colonel Carlos Diaz.

But instead of buckling and suing for peace, as the CIA had anticipated would happen in a power shift, Diaz announced that he would continue the fight. It was obvious to Dulles and Wisner that resistance would require further persuasion and additional bombing raids were ordered. This time, the headquarters of the Guatemalan military was targeted, and hit. Diaz, after holding the office of president for only one day, was ousted by a junta of other officers who saw no reason to resist further. Six days later an agreement was signed between the junta and Armas, which eventually led to Armas becoming president.

What followed was a textbook reversal of nationalism. Armas began a reign of terror that disenfranchised over 70% of the population by denying voting privileges to anyone who could not read or write; repealed the laws permitting unions; and returned almost 800,000 acres of land to the United Fruit Company. For the CIA, and American business, the status quo had been restored in Guatemala. For the bureaucrats of the covert intelligence agencies and the State Department, who had kept the American people in the dark concerning the actual machinations behind the coup, the facade continued. John Foster Dulles, reinforcing the secret on American television, said: "...the struggle in Guatemala exposed the evil purpose of the Kremlin to find nesting places in the Americas." He went on to state, "Led by Colonel Castillo Armas, patriots arose in Guatemala to challenge the communist leadership and to change it. Thus the situation is being cured by the Guatemalans themselves."

Nothing was said about the interests of the United Fruit Company, or the $20 million cost to the American taxpayers.

Chapter 22

Cuba: Assassins and the Bay Of Pigs

After Fidel Castro managed to overthrow the dictatorship of Fulgencio Batista in 1959, the CIA was shocked to find that this charismatic guerrilla fighter, whom they had backed, intended to establish friendly relations with the Soviet Union. They were further taken aback when he stated that he would support guerrilla activities against U.S.-backed dictatorships throughout Latin America. The final straw came when Castro nationalized all foreign interests inside of Cuba and seized all U.S. business assets.[143]

By December, the CIA had decided that Castro had become a detriment to U.S. interests not only in Cuba, but Central and South America as well. If he aligned himself with the Soviet Union, massive shipments of arms, military equipment and "advisors" could completely destabilize the region and threaten the United States itself. The last thing Eisenhower wanted was a physical Soviet presence in the Americas.

Colonel J.C. King, director of the CIA's Western Hemisphere Division, sent a memo to Allen Dulles noting the dangers of having such a character as Castro residing only ninety miles from Miami. He recommended that "thorough consideration be given to the elimination of Fidel Castro, the disappearance of Fidel would greatly accelerate the fall of the present government."

Dulles concurred and called a meeting of the National Security Council to discuss various means of dealing with the situation. The Council, headed by Vice President Richard Nixon, decided to form a special task group to deal with Castro. National Security Council memorandum 5412 was drafted, creating the infamous "5412 Committee."[144]

The 5412 Committee, whose members considered the elimination of Fidel Castro, his brother Raul, and Ernesto "Che" Guevara to be in the national interest, met on several occasions to discuss various means of effectively dealing with the situation. From one of these meetings emerged the decision to form a sub-group whose existence could be disavowed if discovered. Any link between the 5412

Committee and this secret operation could be plausibly denied, and at the same time, its existence could be blamed on someone outside the Agency. The cut-out for this operation, codenamed Operation 40, would be Miami Mafia boss Santos Trafficante, the same mobster who would surface later in the Kennedy assassination and in the Laotian/CIA heroin smuggling operation. Trafficante was picked because of his former personal interests in the Cuban casinos, his current ties with the Cuban exile community in Florida, and his friendship with former Cuban dictator Fulgencio Batista. And above all, Trafficante, after being promised that Mafia holdings would be restored, would be agreeable to serving in this capacity.

All that remained would be the financing of the operation. According to the brief on the Avirgan/Honey vs. Hull and Vidal lawsuits,[146] "...Richard Nixon and other members of the endeavor, on information and belief, agreed to use the color of their authority as officials of the United States Government...[to divert]...funds appropriated by the U.S. Congress for foreign intelligence gathering, commingling such diverted funds with the income generated through the criminal activity of Trafficante's organization and laundering these funds through foreign and domestic banks, in violation of federal banking and currency laws of the United States."

Irregardless of how the funding mechanism was established, sufficient monies were provided to finance a huge operation against Castro. This operation, was divided into two branches: the formation of a paramilitary brigade of Cuban exiles, to be trained by CIA case officers for both covert and overt military action against Castro, and a top secret, highly trained, specially equipped team of assassins. This team, codenamed ZR/RIFLE, received the assignment to eliminate the three targets: Fidel, Raul and Che.

The ZR/RIFLE team, according to the Avirgan/Honey lawsuit, consisted of Rafael "Chi Chi" Quintero, Raul Villaverde, Luis Posada Carriles (aka Ramon Medina), Felix Rodriguez (aka Max Gomez), Francisco Fiorini (aka Frank Sturgis), Ricardo Chavez, Joaquin Sanjenis (who directed Operation 40 for ten years) and eight others not named. This team was placed under the direction of case officer E. Howard Hunt, codenamed "Eduardo."[147]

Another sub-unit that was organized under Operation 40 consisted of a group of exiles who had a very special and devious mission. Equipped with Cuban uniforms and arms, they would be put ashore prior to the Bay of Pigs invasion at the east end of the island near Guantanamo naval base. Their mission was to attack the American naval base. Kennedy, being led to believe that Castro's forces were attacking the installation, could be expected to respond accordingly. This act of war, it was thought, would ensure that Kennedy would land the Marines at the Bay of Pigs in support the small *Brigada* after it had gained a foothold and declared itself a legal government-in-need.[148]

Eisenhower had been completely aware of what had gone on at the CIA during his tenure. He wrote: "On 17 March 1960, I ordered the CIA to begin to organize the training of Cuban exiles mainly in Guatemala against a future day when they might return to their homeland." He had also attended several of the NSC meetings where the proposals to assassinate Castro were discussed. Kennedy had not been so included.

Of the master plan that dealt with the overall situation in Cuba, the initial action would be to discredit the popular Fidel in they eyes of the Cuban people. For this, a whole series of "dirty tricks" were considered. But the ideas the Agency came up with bordered on the ridiculous, some actually comical. One concerned the CIA's MK/ULTRA experiments with LSD. In this one, agents would spray a Cuban television studio with the hallucinogen prior to Castro making an appearance to give a speech. The object was for Castro to somehow ingest enough of the LSD to hallucinate and appear to hundreds of thousands of watching Cubans to be uncontrollable and unpredictable. This idea was abandoned when no one could guarantee that the LSD droplets would stay in the air long enough to have the desired effect.

The second plan involved doctoring the dictator's cigars with LSD. This scheme was cast aside when no one could figure how to get the chemical into Fidel's cigars, or to get cigars that had been prepared in advance to Castro.

The next idea was to put thallium salts into his shoes, hopefully during an upcoming trip to Europe when he was expected to leave them in the hallway outside his hotel room in the European fashion. These salts are a depilatory. After being absorbed into the skin they are supposed to make one's hair fall out. In Fidel's case, it would be his beard. This trick fell through when Castro canceled all scheduled foreign trips.

As these schemes were being considered by the Agency, the Operation 40 staff continued to pursue the demise of the Castro brothers and Che Guevara in a more serious vein. In July of 1960, one of their agents inside of Cuba reported that he might have access to Raul on a given date. He was immediately told to make the hit, but before it could be carried out, plans were changed and the agent was told to disregard the previous orders.

Marita Lorenz, Castro's girlfriend, had by this time been recruited by the CIA. Frank Sturgis, who had been on Castro's staff during his Escambray Mountains guerrilla days, but had defected to the CIA when Castro announced his intent to deal with communists, talked Lorenz into murdering Castro, then joining the CIA in Miami. The actual job was to be done with poison capsules that she would drop into his drink. But Lorenz made the mistake of hiding the capsules in a jar of cold cream, and when she tried to retrieve them in the bathroom of her and Fidel's hotel room in Havana, discovered that they had dissolved. She took this to be an omen, and was greatly relieved when the plan failed. I her words, "I'm just not a murderer. I looked at him in there [laying on the bed of the hotel room] and asked myself 'what's he doing? Nothing.' I just couldn't carry it out. I don't kill people for governments. I'm a lover, not a killer."

In another attempt, the Mafia was recruited to try to poison Castro. The CIA sent former FBI agent Robert Mayheu to Las Vegas to meet with Mafia member Johnny Roselli to ask for help in killing Fidel. Mayheu told Roselli that the government was behind the operation, that it was part of a planned invasion of Cuba, and that they needed the help of the Mafia in pulling it off. Roselli agreed to help, for a fee of $150,000Cand contacted Chicago mafioso Sam Giancana, who made arrangements for the operation. Giancana in turn asked for a poison pill that could be dropped in a glass of liquid that was tasteless, odorless, and would not take affect for at least four or five days. The CIA complied with the request, and Mayheu delivered the pills to Roselli and Giancana in a sealed envelope. But the Mafia contacts, for some reason, failed to deliver the pill to Castro.

Richard Bissell, Head of CIA operations from 1958-62, recalled: "Several of the attempts to assassinate Castro using Mafia types took place before the actual Bay of Pigs landing. I knew of these and encouraged them. I felt that if just before the landing, Castro had disappeared from the scene there would be a great deal of disorganization and it would be vastly easier to break the will of any successive regime."

No attempt to assassinate the Castro brothers or Che Guevara (while he was in Cuba) succeeded.

In November of 1960, John F. Kennedy was elected President. By that time the Cuban exile force of CIA-trained soldiers had grown to a full 1300-man brigade. Known as the *Frente Revolucionario Democratico* (FRD), it was equipped with World War II weapons, munitions and field gear, and funded by a budget of $13 million previously approved by Eisenhower. Its support inventory included six small (2,400 ton) freighters, leased for $600 per day per ship, six C-47 transport aircraft, and sixteen clandestinely-procured B-26 attack bombers for air support. Its pilots were being trained by sheep-dipped members of the Alabama Air National Guard, and its commandos by military officers and NCOs of both the army and the Marines.[149]

Virtually the same players behind the Guatemalan operation were involved in the Bay of Pigs invasion, now codenamed Operation ZAPATA.[150] David Atlee Phillips, the mastermind of the radio disinformation program in Guatemala, now manned the anti-Castro transmitter on Swan Island off the coast of Honduras. Richard Bissell, and second-in-command Richard Helms, were now focusing on the coming Cuban venture. Allen Dulles, the old spy master, was in overall control as usual.

The entire operation was being controlled by Theodore Shackley and Thomas Clines at the Miami CIA station. Several businesses were set up in Miami and surrounding communities, gunshops, hardware stores, even coffee shops, to provide fronts for the various activities of the operation. In New Orleans, where the second training site was located, the Guy Bannister Detective Agency was such a front. In this particular case, almost everyone who worked in the vicinity knew what was going on. Cubans, dressed in green fatigues and spotted camouflage uniforms, went in and out of the building in droves, often carrying large boxes full of weapons or explosives. The training site was located in the marshland on the north side of Lake Ponchartrain. In all, it was hard for the CIA to keep a secret with so much activity going on along the Gulf Coast. Castro himself announced on a continuous basis that the Yankees would invade any day.

When the invasion finally came it was a disaster. Not because it was ill-conceived or meekly carried out, but because it was defanged early in the game. The key to the invasion plan lay in the Brigade's ability to knock out the Cuban Air Force. Castro's air force at that time consisted of 15 B-26 bombers, 10 Hawker Sea Furies, and 4 T-33 jet trainer/fighters. The T-33, a two-place version of the Korean War-era Lockheed F-80 Shooting Star fighter, was by jet standards, a slow, easy to hit target, at least up against the more modern supersonic jets of the time. But for ground troops, the T-33 could be devastating. And for ships, deadly. The key was to knock out the T-33s on the ground. This job fell to the FRD's B-26 Invaders (actually A-26 attack versions that were equipped with eight .50 caliber machine guns in the nose).

The problem that confronted the tiny anti-Castro air force was two-fold: they had to go all the way back to Nicaragua to refuel and rearm, and they were no match for the T-33 in the air should any get off the ground. The only solution would be to hit the jets on the ground, early in the operation, and hope to get them all.

It did not happen. After a dawn raid, in which only six B-26 bombers were allowed to participate instead of the planned 16, only a small part of Castro's air force was destroyed. Castro, anticipating an invasion, had dispersed his airplanes to outlying airfields and had used non-flyable hulks as decoys. U-2 photographs taken later verified that only five flyable airplanes had been completely destroyed. The surviving planes that were still airworthy were quickly scrambled in a effort to repulse the invasion force, both in the air and at sea. As the FRD B-26s returned to Nicaragua to rearm and refuel, Castro's pilots homed in on the Bay of Pigs.

Unknown to the FRD pilots, strange machinations were taking place behind the scenes in Washington. The Assistant DCI, General Charles Cabell, who was running the show from the Washington end (Dulles was in Puerto Rico at the time), arrived at the Air Operations office at Quarters Eye.

"What are you doing," he asked the Air Ops officer-in-charge.

"Readying the follow-up strike, sir. We have to finish them off."

"Seems to me," intoned Cabell, "that we were only authorized one strike at the airfields."

"Oh, no, sir," replied the officer, "There are no restrictions on the number of strikes. The authorization was to knock out the Cuban air force."

Cabell's neck muscles tightened. "I just don't know about that. So to be on the safe side, I'm going to ask [Secretary of State] Dean Rusk about it. Cancel that strike order...until I can get someone to approve it."

Approval never came. JFK, though permitting the amphibious assault to continue, canceled the follow-up air strikes.

For the Cuban and sheep-dipped American pilots revving up their engines in Nicaragua, the word came like a thunderbolt from hell. Major General George "Poppa" Doster, the American commander of brigade pilot training, was livid. "There goes the whole goddamn war!"

As these events were transpiring, Castro's wounded air force, consisting of nine surviving combat-capable aircraft, began to gather over the small invasion fleet. Rapidly picking their targets, each plane began a dive toward either the open beach where supplies were being offloaded from landing craft, or the ships resting close offshore. The ships, containing the heavy weapons, six Sherman tanks, ammunition, and medical supplies for the Brigade were the primary targets for the initial onslaught.

The *Houston*, laden with ammunition, was struck repeatedly and began to sink. The *Rio Escondido*, which contained the bulk of the Brigade's fuel, ammunition and medical supplies, was hit by rockets from a Sea Fury and exploded in a massive eruption of flame. Those on deck on each vessel fought back valiantly, but such fast-moving targets were hard to hit. CIA "advisor" Grayston Lynch, who was in command of the ships once the Brigade was ashore, manned a .50 caliber machine gun and fired until the barrel turned white hot. He later described what happened to one attacking bomber after it was struck by anti-aircraft fire: "We shot down one B-26 that hit the water, skipped, and bounced over our ship." Other airplanes were shot down, but the advantage of air superiority could not be overcome by the lightly armed ships. Next to go was the *Marsopa*, from which the invasion force was being coordinated, and immediately thereafter the smaller vessels being used to ferry the supplies ashore came under attack.

Lynch, aboard the *Blager*, was assaulted by messages from the shore. "Go to sea! Get out of here! Come back after dark!" Lynch, reluctantly, gave the order to the captains of the vessels to abandon landing activities and flee for international waters.

Finally sighting part of the eight-ship naval task force, six destroyers and the U.S. carrier *Essex,* Lynch felt relief that the plan was finally beginning to come together and help was at hand. "We arrived at the twelve-mile limit and there were two destroyers on the horizon. I called them and said 'well, here we are, we're in international waters, we're under air attack. Can you help us?' I'll never forget the destroyer captain came back and said, 'my heart is with you, but I cannot help you. Our orders are not to become involved.' And I asked him, 'did you receive any orders to give us air cover or support out here? And he said, 'no, I did not.'"[151]

Something was drastically wrong. The plan had started to unravel at the seams and was rapidly becoming unmanageable. In the worst possible scenario, the landing forces had managed to reach the beach and had made their way inland, but their supplies had been cut off with the withdrawal of the remaining support ships; the U.S. Marine Battalion Landing Team, which stood just offshore outside the twelve-mile-limit, was ordered not to debark in support of the free Cubans; and most of all, to the shock of the CIA advisors caught on the beach with the Brigade, the promised additional air power the "umbrella of air cover" originally promised by Eisenhower, had been canceled by Kennedy. This lack of air support manifested itself one more time that day when the C-47 cargo planes, which had taken to the air loaded with paratroopers, came under attack over Cuba. Captain Eddie Ferrer, pilot of the lead ship of a flight of six lumbering transports enroute to drop 177 paratroopers northeast of Blue Beach, had his confidence shattered after he made the drop on the San Blas road, then spotted Cuban B-26s roaring in on the flight. As he watched helplessly, the nose guns of one of the attacking bombers began to sparkle as they opened fire on the unarmed transports. One of the C-47s began to stream smoke from one engine, then winged over and spiraled into the ground. Only by diving low and skimming the waves back to Nicaragua did he manage to escape. At that point it became "every man for himself."

Infuriated by the orders to cancel further air attack missions, some of the aircrews chose to ignore the orders and rejoin the fray. But as they approached the combat zone, Castro's T-33s were waiting. No match for the jets, five of the remaining FRD B-26s became easy prey and were shot from the sky, including one flown by American pilots Leo Francis Baker and Pete Ray. Baker and Ray managed to crash land, but were killed on the ground during their escape from the crash site. (Their bodies, recovered by Castro militia, were kept frozen in an Havana morgue for the next 18 years).[152]

By midnight, 20,000 Castro soldiers had managed to trap the 900 surviving members of the Brigade in a small pocket in the swamps north of the beach. Communist tanks and infantry battered the brigade with artillery and mortar fire for the next 48 hours, and after enduring over 2,000 artillery and mortar rounds, the *Brigada 2506* was forced to surrender. They had fought heroically, but they had been let down. The battle was lost.

Richard Bissell summed up the CIA feelings concerning the overall picture in Washington: "In the utterly vain, and foreseeably vain, efforts to maintain the disclaimable character of the operation, all kinds of sacrifices in operational capability were made. We were not allowed to use U.S. territory. This meant that the starting base had to be in Central America. We weren't allowed to use more modern aircraft, that perhaps would have meant they had greater range. We should have had twenty American air crews instead of four, and we should have had another thirty B-26 bombers available to us. So the myth that the operation could be disclaimable cost us a decisive capability in the conduct of the operation."[153]

After the operation failed, the politicians and bureaucrats in Washington began fortifying their individual positions to weather the coming storm. The American people, surprised by the invasion attempt at first, now began to ask what had happened, and why did it fail? Kennedy, on whose shoulders the decision rested concerning the failure to provide the promised air support and landing of the Marines, decided that the most important thing to do at the moment was to salvage the presidency. At all costs.

After conferring with his staff, all of which had talked him into canceling the additional air support and intervention of the fleet, made a decision. Allen Dulles, who bore overall responsibility for CIA activities, and therefore the Bay of Pigs debacle, had to take the blame. This meant one thing: he had to resign. In Kennedy's words, when he contacted Dulles, "If we had a parliamentary government, I would have to resign. We don't. We have a presidential government, and that means that you, and several others directly responsible for the operation, will have to resign."

Kennedy, because of the embarrassment caused by the failed invasion, declared that he would "tear CIA into a thousand pieces and throw it to the winds." Then, before these words were cold, he promised the Cuban community in Miami during a massive rally in which he was presented a Brigada battle flag that "I can assure you that this flag will be returned to this brigade in a free Havana."

But this was never to happen. The Bay of Pigs defeat changed the course of world history, for out of it grew the Communist perception that America no longer possessed the moral courage to face down aggressors or violators of the Monroe Doctrine. And to the Third World, it appeared that the United States could not be trusted to honor its commitments.

Evidence of these perceptions was exhibited four months later when the Soviets began emplacing missile batteries in Cuba, then in the following months and years when the Berlin Wall was raised, revolution broke out in the Dominican Republic, guerrilla warfare intensified in Latin and South America, and Nicaragua fell to Communism. All of these events transpired after, and arguably because of, the Bay of Pigs.

Though Kennedy considered the elimination of Castro his number one priority during this time frame, he no longer trusted the CIA to do it. But he found that getting rid of the CIA, as he had threatened, was almost impossible. The Agency had built strong proponents outside of, and above, the White House. The independent back-room power of the CIA reached from the meeting rooms of Washington to the board rooms of major corporations, and from allied intelligence organizations to international bankers. Kennedy had little choice but to allow the CIA to try yet again to eliminate the Castro regime.

Kennedy may not have been able to destroy the CIA, at least not at the moment, but he could at least control its operations by appointing a new director he could trust. His choice was John A. McCone, a bespectacled grandfatherly type who was loyal to the Kennedys. Under McCone, the operations against Cuba took on a different approach. Instead of a frontal assault on some beach, Castro would be eliminated by subversion and sabotage. This new onslaught, codenamed Operation MONGOOSE, began in October of 1961 when the remnants of the Brigade, bolstered by a few new recruits, started training in the Florida Everglades.

Coordinated out of Miami Station, Mongoose conducted 2123 missions into Cuba. They consisted of commando raids, sabotage attacks, propaganda efforts, intelligence missions, and supply missions to indigenous guerrilla groups. But over the life of Mongoose, the end evaluation was that it was too small, too late, and had too little bang-for-the-buck.

During these trying two years, ZR/RIFLE had continued to play its part. Richard Bissell, who was instrumental in the formation of the ZR/RIFLE assassination team, admitted: "From time to time individuals would appear on the scene, and it would be very important to have them disappear from the scene. I came to believe it was desirable to have a very small office that developed the techniques and methods for Executive Action, actions targeted toward a very threatening and dangerous individual in some other country, action designed to demobilize him."[154]

The main target during the Mongoose operation continued to be Castro. In some of the ZR/RIFLE schemes, bizarre plots surfaced on just how to conduct an Executive Action hit on Fidel. One example concerned booby-trapping an exotic sea shell with high explosive and placing it on the ocean bottom in one of Castro's favorite scuba diving spots. When Castro picked up the shell, it would blow up. This suggestion was discarded when the planners realized that anyone who dove in that location might pick up the shell, and there were no guarantees Castro would ever see it to begin with. Another suggestion involved hiding an automatic pistol inside of a movie camera, then sending a team in to "film" Castro at some opportune moment during a public appearance. But this plan's weakness was the fact that it would be impossible for the team to escape afterwards.

In another instance, a team of Cubans under Thomas Clines managed to smuggle a 3.5" rocket launcher, popularly known as a "Bazooka," into a building overlooking a plaza where Fidel was to address a huge crowd that was to be on hand to welcome the first Soviet Cosmonauts. But they managed to get the electric firing mechanism wet and the weapon malfunctioned. They were spotted by Cuban security forces and captured, much to the embarrassment of the ZR/RIFLE case officers.

Rolando Cubela, a later recruit of ZR/RIFLE, recalled one device that had been issued that was reminiscent of the World War II OSS days. "They sent me a pen with a very fine needle," he recalled. "The pen could be filled with poison, just as if it were a syringe. I found it quite unpleasant. I did not believe it to be something feasible. We were not accustomed to having such instruments. I had asked for explosives, a rifle, a silencer. We were fighting men...I was not a fanatic."

Cuban security officer Israel Behar, who was instrumental in arresting Cubela on one failed attempt that netted Cubela fifteen years in prison, was involved in foiling twenty-six attempts on Castro's life. In one, the plan was to take advantage of a massive rally that was going to be held in front of the Presidential Palace. The team had positioned itself across the huge plaza in a multi-story apartment building that overlooked the square. But unknown to the hit team, Behar's people had discovered that this particular apartment was much smaller on the inside than any other apartment in the building. When they began to investigate, they found a false wall behind which were two Czech Skorpion submachine guns, a Thompson submachine gun, a bazooka, and a supply of rockets. The would-be assassins were taken into custody when they showed up to take their positions before the rally.

Justification for these activities, according to the retired CIA officials who were in charge of these operations at the time, allegedly came from the White House. According to William Colby, who became DCI in 1973 under Nixon, "I'm sure that Bobby Kennedy was aware of some actions being taken. And if Bobby was aware, I'm sure the President was aware. Bobby wouldn't have done it without the President's awareness."

This statement cannot be verified, however, since both individuals referred to by Colby, who mysteriously drowned in a canoeing "accident" in 1996 after his retirement from CIA, were later assassinated themselves. And dead men tell no tales.

Chapter 23

Africa: Murder on the Dark Continent

Of the CIA's forays into Africa during the early 1960s, the first attempt at manipulating a native government occurred in the Congo. On the target agenda was the newly elected prime minister, Patrice Lumumba. And American commercial interests would once again be represented by the bullet instead of the ballot.

Lumumba, a pro-Marxist trained in Moscow, found himself suddenly in control of a small country that was rapidly becoming a bone of contention between western powers. The Congo had just been granted independence by its former colonial master, Belgium, but the country had not been prepared for self-government prior to independence. Lumumba found himself trying to run a country splintered by rival factions that went back to tribal days; an the economy on the verge of collapse; and communications and transportation systems rapidly deteriorating. Adding to Lumumba's troubles was the southeastern province of Katanga, which had just seceded from the Congo under the leadership of a pro-Western Katangese named Moshe Tshombe.

There was little Lumumba could do about the problem. His "army" was a rag-tag group of uneducated warriors that teetered on the edge of mutiny; his president, Joseph Kasavubu, was of little help in restoring order in a rapidly deteriorating situation; and Belgian troops, which had been temporarily left behind to assist the new government, were too few and scattered to be effective. Kasavubu, realizing that the situation was beyond local control, appealed to the United Nations for intervention until the new government could get on its feet.

The UN sent a force to restore order, but the UN commanders were not authorized to interfere in the Katangan situation. For Lumumba, the secession was intolerable. Half of the country's mineral wealth lay within the region, and the tribes of the area were the age-old enemy of his own people. If he did not conquer them, he would lose respect throughout Central Africa.

To rectify the UN's lack of action in Katanga, Lumumba called upon his old friends, the Russians. On August 26th, 1960, ten Iluyshin Il-10 transports arrived in

Leopoldville carrying 100 Soviet "technicians," the lead element for a larger force that would follow. For the CIA, once again the picture became clear. Lumumba would have to go.

But there was more to it than a simple matter of a backwards Third World country that just might swing into the communist camp. This factor, though exploited in the press, took a back seat to the real reason. Of major significance to American commercial interests were the copper mines, located in the Katanga province, and industrial diamonds, of which the Congo produced half the world's supply. Also of importance was cobalt, gold, manganese, tin, zinc, cadmium and coal. In all, the Congo was a wealth of mineral deposits that were of considerable "strategic" importance to American companies.

Lumumba, who was considerably outspoken in his anti-American sentiments, played right into the hands of the CIA. The CIA station chief in the Congo, Lawrence Devlin (*nom d'guerre* Victor Hedgman) sent a report to Washington describing "a classic communist takeover government." He ended the cable with: "There may be little time left in which to take action to avoid another Cuba."

That was all it took to get the attention of the CIA bureaucrats. They replied: "You are authorized to proceed with operation." The operation referred to was the result of a planning session that took place between Allen Dulles, Gordon Gray (Presidential Assistant for National Security Affairs), John Irwin II (Assistant Secretary of Defense), Livingston Merchant (Under Secretary of State for Political Affairs), and CIA African desk officer Thomas Parrot. In this meeting they agreed that "any planning for the Congo would not necessarily rule out consideration of any particular kind of activity which might contribute to getting rid of Lumumba."[155]

Dulles sent a cable to Devlin in Leopoldville giving him "wide authority for even more aggressive action if it can remain covert." Devlin was further authorized to spend up to $100,000 on "the program", a huge sum by African standards.

The "program" was initiated and Devlin began by recruiting anti-Lumumba factions around the Congo. By September, Kasavubu, fearful that too much anti-government sentiment was building, removed Lumumba from his post. In his place he appointed army colonel Joseph Mobutu. The CIA approved of Mobutu, but realizing that things change quickly and unexpectedly in Africa, feared that Lumumba, who held favor in the Congolese parliament, could conceivably come back. The only way to assure his demise was to have him assassinated.

The Agency began to look for a means to this end. As with Castro, the weapon of choice was poison. For this they turned to Dr. Sidney Gottlieb (of MK/ULTRA fame), an expert in bio-organic chemistry and special assistant for scientific matters to the Director of Plans, Richard Bissell. Gottlieb was asked to develop a poison that would show the symptoms of some common African disease, then personally deliver it to Devlin in the Congo.

Gottlieb managed to work up a chemical compound that fit the specifications and, as requested, personally carried it to Devlin and issued instructions concerning its use. As these affairs were being consummated, the Agency recruited two professional hit men, codenamed QJ/WIN and WI/ROGUE, to serve as backup in case the poison caper failed.[156]

After several planning sessions, Gottlieb and Devlin decided that getting the poison to Lumumba would be difficult at best, impossible in all probability. Lumumba, who was being protected by UN security personnel, was not accessible and his inner circle was unapproachable. Further, Gottlieb became growingly concerned that the poison, even if administered, might not work. It had been unrefrigerated since it had left the U.S. and Gottlieb began to worry that the poison had lost its strength. Devlin scrubbed the plan and sent Gottlieb back to the States.

Devlin then shifted gears and began planning a more overt action, a commando raid. He reasoned that a small, well-equipped elite force of men might be able to assault Lumumba's house, kill him, then escape before anyone could react. Barring that, it might be possible, as a back-up plan, to draw Lumumba outside where he could be eliminated by one well-placed sniper bullet.

Devlin notified the Agency to send him a precision sniper rifle, the same as had been issued to the ZR/RIFLE team members, and a shooter to man it. The sniper picked by the Agency was one Justin O'Donnell. But O'Donnell, upon arriving in the Congo and finding that he was to be part of an assassination plot, refused to be the trigger man. Instead, he asked the Agency to send QJ/WIN over to take his place. He agreed to help lure Lumumba out into the open, but QJ/WIN would have to take the shot.

But before either plan could be put into motion, Lumumba escaped UN custody and began making his way toward Stanleyville, where he could link up with members of his tribe and plan a counter-coup against Mobutu.

Mobutu, prodded by Devlin, alerted troops to block the roads between Leopoldville and Stanleyville and to search the countryside for the fugitive. This move was successful and Lumumba was recaptured, returned to Leopoldville, then moved to a prison in Thysville, fifty miles southwest of the capital.

The CIA now had Lumumba where they wanted him. He was away from UN custody, accessible to the Congolese government, i.e. Mobutu, and it was now simply a matter of arranging his demise. This, however, had to be done quickly. The CIA sensed a great deal of dissension rising among the Congolese troops, who, should they decide to change sides, might rescue Lumumba and overthrow the Mobutu government.

Secret meetings were held and it was decided to move Lumumba to Bakwanga prison, which at that time was nicknamed "The Slaughterhouse" by those familiar with it. No one who went in came out.

On January 17th, 1961, Lumumba was scheduled to be moved by air. But before the airplane could reach its destination, it received orders to divert to Katanga, Tshombe's tribal city. As soon as it landed Lumumba was murdered. No unclassified records exist concerning who was responsible for the killing, however the Church Commission on Assassinations stated that "the testimony is strong enough to permit a reasonable inference that the plot to assassinate Lumumba was authorized by

President Eisenhower." This being the case, the financial backing, planning, and instigation had to have originated with the CIA.

Mobutu stayed in power and became one of the world's richest men. His personal fortune eventually exceeded $3 billion dollars, much of which was provided by U.S., British and French commercial interests and funneled through the Congolese (now Zaire) treasury. Ironically, the punishment for the crime of embezzlement in Zaire is death.

Angola

Unlike other colonial powers in Africa, Portugal refused to allow its colonies the independence being granted to other European powers. Antonio de Oliveira Salazar, prime minister of Portugal in 1961, told the United States that "the only nationalism in Angola and Mozambique was Portuguese."

With the Portuguese refusal to grant independence and give up its colonial and commercial holdings in Angola, bloody revolts broke out in the capital city of Luanda and in the militant anti-colonial north country. But each revolt was crushed in turn by the Portuguese-controlled government and armed forces, and martial law was declared.

In the United Nations, the U.S. castigated Portugal for refusing to give up its colonial holdings and for the violent manner in which the uprisings were handled. The UN, following the American lead, called for Portugal to grant independence to Angola and initiate a peaceful transition of power to the black nationalists.

The CIA began playing its part as well. By supplying "financial non-military aid" to the Leopoldville-based Revolutionary Government of Angola in Exile (GRAE), the Agency began ingratiating itself to its leader, Holden Roberto, who just happened to be Mobutu's brother-in-law. The CIA anticipated that the Portuguese would either give in to UN pressure or be overthrown by one of the Angolan nationalist groups, hopefully the GRAE, and they wanted to be in on the ground floor when a new government took over. But the Kennedy administration looked at the Angolan situation in a more global light. The U.S. military was dependent on Portugal for strategic military facilities in the Azores, and Kennedy did not want to upset the boat. This, coupled with pressure from the Portuguese, forced Kennedy to order support for Roberto to cease.

Throughout the 1960s rebel factions continued to resist Portuguese rule. The U.S., unsure of what the future would hold and afraid of finding itself on the losing side should allegiance be wrongly placed, began playing both sides. While overtly providing the Portuguese with aircraft suitable for counter-insurgency to be used against the nationalists, the CIA was covertly consorting with Roberto. The GRAE, with the backing of the CIA, had free use of the Congo as a base for mounting guerrilla activity against the Angolan government. But Roberto was too timid to do so. Instead of fighting, Roberto showed little inclination to take on the Portuguese. Even after being recognized by the Organization of African Unity (OAU) in 1964 as the legitimate government of Angola, the GRAE under Roberto refused to become involved in any military action against the Luanda government. By 1966 the GRAE had lost credibility with the nationalists to the point that an alternative independence movement was formed. Under former GRAE member Jonas Savimbi, the National Union for the Total Independence of Angola (UNITA) began operations in southern Angola.

A third nationalist movement, the Popular Movement for the Liberation of Angola (MPLA), had existed in the central and east sections of the country since 1956, but had little support until the mid-1960s when it aligned itself with the Soviet Union. Operating from its base in Zambia, the MPLA grew rapidly and by 1969 was considered by the Portuguese to be the most dangerous guerrilla element in the colony.

By 1971 the OAU, fearing repercussions from the Soviets within their own countries, withdrew support from UNITA. Roberto split from UNITA, taking most of his loyal followers with him and named his new organization the Front for the Liberation of Angola (FNLA). The MPLA, which had grown steadily under Soviet guidance, had by then threatened the Portuguese to the extent that the Luanda government established liaison with both non-communist organizations, FNLA and UNITA, in an effort to neutralize the MPLA.

Portugal's efforts to counter the MPLA came to an end in 1974 when a group of left-wing army officers in Portugal staged a coup and overthrew Marcello Caetano, Antonio Salazar's successor. One of the objectives of the new government was to cease Portuguese involvement in colonial wars, which meant that Angolan independence was assured. The Portuguese forces in Angola ceased all military action and withdrew to their bases to await further orders. With the colonial military out of the picture, the three rebel factions began a race for power.

The CIA, who had been waiting in the wings, made its move. With $32 million authorized by President Gerald Ford, the Agency began supplying and advising both the FNLA and UNITA. FNLA, however, received the bulk of the aid since it was headquartered in Zaire (formerly the Congo) where the CIA maintained its African base of operations. UNITA had by then moved out and taken its forces into southern Angola, which made it more difficult for the CIA to provide covert aid. Support for UNITA was left to South Africa.

Of the $32 million, more than half was spent on arms and military equipment, but Mobutu, who served as middleman on the CIA/FNLA dealings, skimmed a large portion off the top of all transactions. Less than half of that spent ever reached the UNITA.

Independence was finally granted by the Portuguese, with the date set for November 11, 1975. In the interim a provisional coalition government was formed that incorporated representatives from the three factions. But the MPLA, being the strongest group militarily, established its dominance and began shouldering the other two groups aside. Fighting broke out in the streets and each organization began jockeying for strategic position in the countryside. Within days the situation deteriorated into a full-scale civil war, with the FNLA invading Angola in force from Zaire, and UNITA, backed by the South African Army, driving toward Luanda from the south.

In order to save the MPLA, the Soviets responded by flying in a large force of Cuban infantry, backed by tank and artillery brigades. These expendable Cubans were in turn backed up by a massive airlift of equipment and arms from the Soviet Union.

Wary of a direct confrontation with the Soviets, and fearing detrimental action by the U.S. Congress over the amount of money being expended on the war in Angola, the Agency was forced to take the issue abroad. But little help was to be found. Most countries shied away from becoming involved in an issue in which the Soviet Union appeared to be so interested. Only in Britain, where a few mercenaries were recruited in a effort to bolster the anti-communist forces, did the CIA receive any positive response. But the effort was a matter of too little, too late. By February of 1976, both UNITA and the FNLA had failed in their efforts to oust the MPLA. Cuban troops, utilizing Russian armor and artillery, controlled northern and central Angola, including the capital, and the MPLA was recognized as the government of Angola.

The CIA was incensed, but there was little that could be done. Congress, upon recognizing the MPLA, cut off all funding for covert operations. This action caused South Africa to officially withdraw, but due to its close proximity to the Marxist nation, continued to covertly support Jonas Savimbi's UNITA in southern Angola.

The CIA, in deference to the loss of funding, managed to continue supporting Roberto for a brief period. But the FNLA faded away into obscurity in the face of the overwhelming Cuban and Soviet presence and the CIA was forced to shift what support it could muster to UNITA.

Other than brief incursions by the South African defense forces into southern Angola, little changed between 1975 and 1990. But with the fall of communism in the Soviet Union, and Castro's inability to supply his own troops in a land so far away without Soviet air transport (especially after Operation *Urgent Fury* in Grenada eliminated the Point Salines refueling stop), Cuban support for the MPLA has become almost non-existent.

As a whole, the Angolan operation was a failure. Though American intervention in the Congo and Angola was viewed in some quarters as essential to counter a Soviet threat, the majority of political analysts maintain that the end result was a high cost fiasco which jeopardized relations with neighboring moderate countries. The U.S. Congress also came to the conclusion that the Soviet threat was vastly overdramatized by the intelligence services, and that on many occasions throughout CIA African involvement, grassroots freedom movements were actually chased *into* the Soviet camp.

Meanwhile, half a world away, another government had drawn the attention of the CIA. And the outcome would be far different.

Chapter 24

South America: The Beat Goes On

The CIA was involved either directly, or indirectly by means of forces trained by CIA instructors, in successfully manipulating the affairs of almost every major South American government. These interventions included the installation of a military government in Brazil in 1964, the defeat of Che Guevara's guerrillas and the subsequent execution of Che Guevara in Bolivia in 1967, and the campaign against the Tupamaros guerrillas in Uraguay between 1968 to 1973. But the classic case of CIA intervention in Latin American affairs was undoubtedly Chile.

Chile, during the Kennedy era, had been selected by the U.S. Government as a bastion against Castro's spreading communist influence in Latin America. Traditionally a democratic country, Kennedy considered Chile to be the best bet for establishing a pro-American foothold in South America that could be controlled by both Washington and private U.S. corporations who, with the proper encouragement, would invest in the country's economy.

Solid relations were established with the right-wing government in 1962, and U.S. corporations began moving into the country that Kennedy promised would never expropriate them. These infiltrations by American business were assisted by a grant of $135,489,000 in aid by the U.S. Government. But after Kennedy's assassination Lyndon Johnson became concerned that the situation in Chile would deteriorate in the upcoming 1964 Chilean election. According to the intelligence reports given Johnson by the CIA, a Marxist of considerable political experience, Salvador Allende, was planning on running for president to replace right-wing President Jorge Alessandri Rodriguez who was ending his six-year term. If Allende were to be elected, American business interests would be threatened with nationalization.

It became imperative to U.S. interests that Allende should lose the election. Allende's opponent, Eduardo Frei Montalva, was a Christian Democrat who was considered somewhat liberal by Latin American standards, but not a Marxist or communist. The CIA, unknown to Frei,[157] began an operation that would assure his election. It began with massive amounts of money being infused into Frei's election campaign, actually providing over half of his war chest. The next step, propaganda against Allende, began almost simultaneously. Both in print and over the radio, Allende was depicted as a Stalinist who would virtually become a tyrannical dictator. The campaign worked and Frei was elected.

But the two major U.S. businesses in Chile, International Telephone and Telegraph (ITT) and Pepsi Cola, were not convinced that Frei could be trusted to honor Kennedy's promise to leave their concerns intact. And when Frei began mentioning ideas of establishing profit sharing for employees, the two corporations decided the Frei would have to be replaced in the next election, scheduled for 1970, in which Allende would again run.

Making this decision and having the CIA carry it out was no problem for the two companies. ITT was now headed by former CIA Director John A. McCone, and Pepsi Cola was being run by Donald Kendall, Richard Nixon's personal friend and former client when Nixon was working as a Wall Street lawyer for John Mitchell's law firm (who also represented Nelson Rockefeller).

When Richard Nixon was inaugurated in January of 1969, the Business Group for Latin American instructed him to support Jorge Alessandri in opposition to Allende. The business conglomerate at first attempted to donate $500,000 to Alessandri's campaign through the State Department, but the State Department did not want to get involved. Instead, this money, along with an additional $200,000, was delivered to the CIA. Of the $700,000 passed to the Alessandri campaign, $350,000 came from ITT alone.

By July of 1970, ITT had paid the CIA an additional $1,000,000 to assure Allende's defeat, and this sum was increased by a further $500,000 by Nixon's National Security Council. But even these massive infusions of funds did not accomplish the mission. Despite the pressure, Allende managed to gain 36.9 percent of the electorate to Alessandri's 34.9 percent. A third candidate received the remaining 27.8 percent.

Needless to say, ITT panicked. CIA Director Richard Helms was summoned to the White House. When he left, he carried these notes jotted down in his brief case:

> "One in 10 chance perhaps, but save Chile!
> Worth Spending
> Not concerned risks involved
> No involvement of Embassy
> $10,000,000 available, more if necessary
> Full-time job, best men we have
> Game plan
> Make the economy scream
> 48 hours for plan of action."

His comment later was "If I ever carried a marshal's baton in my knapsack out of the Oval Office it was that day."

After several brainstorming sessions, the CIA came up with a plan. Specifically, it called for a military coup to be carried out before Allende could be inaugurated. To lead the coup, ex-Chilean general Robert Viaux was selected. He agreed to the plan, but could not guarantee its success without support of the Chilean Air Force. But when General Rene' Schneider, commander of the air force, was let in on the plan, he refused to become a co-conspirator.

The CIA, undaunted, continued to plot. All agreed that the Chilean Air Force was necessary to the operation, and therefore Schneider would have to be removed from the scene and replaced by someone more amenable. Conspiring with Viaux and two others, military attaché to the U.S. embassy Colonel Paul Wimert and Chilean Army General Camillo Valenzuala, the CIA funded a kidnapping mission with $50,000 provided by the White House.

On October 23rd, a snatch-team attempted to kidnap Schneider. But the attempt was unsuccessful. Instead of making the grab without incident, Schneider was wounded and later died. His successor, General Carlos Prats, took over in his place and continued to support the Chilean democratic order. Allende was confirmed as president the following month.

The CIA began an immediate propaganda onslaught against Allende. As before, local journalists were bribed to write anti-Allende articles, and newspapers and periodicals abroad were fed supporting propaganda. Even *Time* magazine changed an article written by a Santiago correspondent that supported Allende to an article that showed Allende to be a communist threat.[158] The Chilean newspaper, *El Mercurio*, received over $3.5 million over a three year period after 1970, and further funds were given to the Christian Democrat Party and the right wing National Party to permit them to buy radio stations and newspapers to step up the attacks on the Allende government. In all, over $8 million was spent.158

After sufficiently tempering the minds of the population, the CIA launched its planned coup. On September 11, 1973, CIA-backed General Augusto Pinochet Ugarte led Chilean Army elements in an attack upon the Presidential Palace. Allende was killed in the assault.

Pinochet moved immediately to wipe out all vestiges of Allende's left-wing power structure. Utilizing secret police tactics, Pinochet rounded up thousands of Allende supporters and confined them inside the national stadium. Over the next few days, large numbers were interrogated, tortured and executed. It is estimated by one eye witness that over 500 pro-Allende leftists were shot in the week following the coup.[159]

The end result was a military dictatorship that owed its creation and allegiance to the Central Intelligence Agency. In a country whose constitution limits the term of the president to six years, and prohibits two consecutive terms, Pinochet has been President for over twenty years. Opposition to Pinochet results in mandatory prison sentences, torture and often, death.

But as promised by the U.S. Government, American corporations have remained free to expand and profit in Chile without fear of nationalization. Pinochet is considered one of the richest dictators in the world.

In a continuing game of chess, the United States and the Soviet Union, by means of their covert intelligence and military organizations, continued to manipulate Third World countries until the fall of communism. It was often hard to tell exactly who was doing the manipulating. The tactics were all the same.

Part V

Guns, Drugs and Politicians

Chapter 25

The Enterprise

The imperial and globalist line of thinking exhibited during the Truman, Eisenhower, Johnson, and Nixon years, temporarily checked by the outcome of the Vietnam war and the Watergate scandal, reemerged during the Reagan administration. In a world that was increasingly being consumed by Third World actions, terrorism, and the expansion of Soviet and Chinese communism, the assets of the covert intelligence community once again became the primary behind-the-scenes foot soldiers for those who manipulated countries and governments.

In the 1980s, President Ronald Reagan introduced a new, much tougher, foreign policy that virtually flew in the face of the detente and liberalism that was prevalent during the previous administration under Jimmy Carter. In the new doctrine, the Soviet menace was to be aggressively confronted and resisted wherever it was found, by the use of covert aid when possible, and military intervention when necessary. Operation *Urgent Fury*, the massive invasion of Grenada, and the peacekeeping mission in Beirut were examples of the latter. Afghanistan and Nicaragua would be examples of the former.

In Afghanistan, the Afghan *Mujihadin* tribes valiantly resisted the superior Soviet invaders who propped up Moscow's puppet Kabul government. In the end, the Soviet commanders bogged down in a counterguerilla war much like the U.S. had encountered in Vietnam fifteen years before. The constant monetary support and infusion of weapons to the *Mujihadin*, particularly the Stinger anti-aircraft missile, turned the tide and the Soviets were forced to withdraw in defeat.

Nicaragua would be different.

One of Reagan's first efforts on becoming president was to begin rebuilding the CIA. Under Carter and Stansfield Turner, the CIA had been reduced to a shadow of its Vietnam-era strength. Hundreds of field agents had been fired or forced to retire, which created an overnight surplus of freelance spies and paramilitary types who sought employment elsewhere, often becoming very mercenary in their endeavors.

Under Reagan, who promised during his campaign "to provide our government with the capability to help influence international events vital to our national security interests, a capability which the United States alone among major powers has denied itself," the worm was about to turn. Covert action, and manipulating other governments "for reasons of national security," was back on the agenda.[160]

One of Reagan's first actions was to get rid of Admiral Stansfield Turner and appoint his own Director of Intelligence. His choice was William Casey, a millionaire securities lawyer and former OSS agent, who had just happened to have served as his campaign manager. Casey, who was no stranger to the CIA, immediately began rebuilding the Agency's strength in manpower and increasing its budget. By 1982, the Agency was once again a force to be reckoned with.

It was in Central America that Casey found a cause worthy of his new organization. Two countries: Nicaragua, where the communist Sandinista movement under Daniel Ortega had come to power after overthrowing Anastasio Somoza in 1979, and El Salvador, where leftist guerrillas threatened the U.S. supported government.

The Reagan administration regarded Nicaragua as a second Cuba, and Ortega another Castro. Having a leftist regime between Mexico and the Panama Canal, a bare four hours flying time from the United States, was unacceptable. Reagan, who was determined to be more successful at ridding the Western Hemisphere of Ortega than Kennedy was with Castro, authorized covert military operations in Central America. The mission was to train, arm and support an army of anti-Sandinista Nicaraguans. This army, made up mostly of former Somoza national guardsmen and rural Moskito Indians from three separate regions, were known as "Contras," for contra-revolunaries.

In November 1981, using as arguments the increasing Sandinista support for the guerrillas in El Salvador and the mounting oppression in Nicaragua by the Sandinistas, Reagan persuaded Congress to approve $19.5 million for CIA efforts to establish and equip the Contra force. It was a start, but it would not be enough.

To form the nucleus of the leadership and cadre for the fledgling Contras, members of Somoza's old National Guard (*Guardia Nacional*) were selected from those that had fled Ortega's Nicaragua and taken up residency in neighboring Honduras and Costa Rica. To supplement these forces, the CIA called upon a few old contacts in the anti-Castro Miami Cuban community and some faithful Cuban/American contract agents that had continued to work with the Agency long after the failed Bay of Pigs endeavor. To organize and lead the efforts, the Agency would rely upon some very interesting old standbys.

Among the people selected to handle the Contra operation were none other than:

Major General John Singlaub, an OSS veteran and CIA officer responsible for China and Korea during his time in Asia. Singlaub's OSS team, which operated in Kunming in China, the very center of KMT drug trafficking during World War II, consisted of E. Howard Hunt, Paul Helliwell, Lucien Conein and Mitch WerBell. According to the *Wall Street Journal*, OSS payments at this base often consisted of five-pound bundles of opium. One of Singlaub's teammates, Lucien Conein, went on to be the CIA's liaison with the Corsican Mafia of Saigon and had intimate knowledge of drugs being shipped to Europe by the Corsicans.

During the Vietnam war, Singlaub directed clandestine infiltration of secret recon and prisoner snatch teams into North Vietnam, Laos and Cambodia. While in Southeast Asia, Singlaub worked with Richard Secord and Oliver North.[161]

Major General Richard Secord, who flew more than 285 combat missions in Southeast Asia between 1963 and 1968, most of which were in Laos in support of the CIA/Meo operation. He served as commander of all air operations in Laos, which included all sorties flown by Air America. These missions, as previously shown, included transporting opium and heroin. Secord "resigned" from the Agency in 1983 after being linked to renegade CIA operative Edwin Wilson, who was convicted of smuggling explosives to Libya. Secord's part in the Contra supply operation involved secretly moving high-tech weapons systems to Iran where they were sold to the Khomeini regime for use against the Iraqis. The profits of the sales were deposited into secret international bank accounts, then utilized to support covert military actions directed by the National Security Council. Within two years, these funds had also provided "The Enterprise," as it became known, with numerous shell companies and front organizations, two airfields, five airplanes, twenty contract pilots, a boat and huge stockpiles of guns, ammunition and other military equipment. Secord is also credited with milking funds from the Saudi Arabian government for use in the Nicaraguan campaign in return for promised favorable consideration in future military equipment purchases from the U.S. Government. Key in these purchases were sophisticated AWACS early warning planes.

Theodore Shackley, former head of the anti-Castro operation at the CIA's Miami station (codename JM/WAVE), where he served as chief of station, and director of Operation 40. From 1966-68, Shackley, who was sent to Laos by Richard Helms when the Miami station was closed down, served as chief of station in Vientienne. Here, he conducted the CIA covert war, and its creative financing by drug trafficking. While in Laos, Shackley worked closely with Singlaub, Thomas Clines, Felix Rodriguez, and Richard Secord. In 1968, at the height of the Vietnam war, Shackley was transferred to Saigon where he became chief of station and directed Operation Phoenix, the CIA's and Special Forces assassination program in Vietnam. From 1976 to 1977, Shackley worked as Director of the CIA's worldwide covert operations under DCI George Bush. According to reliable sources on Capital Hill, Shackley had been programmed to become Director of Central Intelligence under Gerald Ford if Ford was reelected in 1976. Shackley's role in the Iran/Contra affair was two-fold. First, he had long-standing contacts with Iranian arms dealers that gave the "Enterprise" inroads to the Teheran regime, and at the same time paved the way for the arms-for-hostages tradeouts. Second, he was instrumental in assembling the team that trained, equipped and ran the Contras.

Thomas Clines, Shackley's second-in-command at the Miami station, and deputy in Laos who became head of the Long Tieng CIA base and supervised the creation of the Hmong/Meo army under General Vang Pao, helped Secord arrange clandestine arms deliveries to the Contras. Clines had put together a private aid network even before Reagan had ascended to the Presidency. In 1978, he and Edwin Wilson reportedly began negotiating a $650,000 deal with Nicaraguan dictator Somoza to create a hunter-killer organization to be used against Somoza's enemies. Along with Israeli arms merchants, Clines, who left the Agency on bad terms under the Carter/Turner realm, was operating in violation of Carter's official policy toward Nicaragua.

Felix Rodriguez, a "retired" CIA officer who had served under Clines in Operation 40 as an alleged member of E. Howard Hunt's ZR/RIFLE assassination team, then worked in the Congo, and finally Vietnam, went to work for Clines again in the late 1970s as a representative of his Latin American arms sales business. It was Felix Rodriguez who tracked down Che Guevara in Bolivia and, after capturing him alive, relayed orders from headquarters to the Bolivian soldiers for his execution. In the Contra operation, Rodriguez served as the main supply officer at Ilopango military airbase in El Salvador where arms and drugs were transshipped between the Middle East, Europe, South America, and the United States. In this role, he has been credited with being the Contra's logistics mastermind.

Lt. Col. Oliver North, a decorated Vietnam veteran and National Security Council Coordinator, served as the link between the CIA (William Casey) and the White House. He had worked in Vietnam in counterinsurgency operations and served with both Secord and Singlaub. North also worked with Secord during Operation *Rice Bowl*, the failed hostage rescue attempt in Iran. North's link to the Iran/Contra affair was as fund raiser, fact finder, and Enterprise/Middle East connection.

Donald Gregg served in Saigon under Shackley and Clines. A seasoned CIA veteran, Gregg was appointed to Carter's NSC as CIA liaison in 1979, then became National Security Advisor to Vice President George Bush during the Reagan years. In the Iran/Contra operation, Gregg served as the NSC-CIA liaison and worked closely with Oliver North and Felix Rodriguez. According to *The Iran-Contra Connection: Secret Teams and Covert Operations in the Reagan Era*, "Between 1983 and 1986, Felix Rodriguez had 17 meetings with Gregg, three of which included Vice President George Bush." It was Gregg who introduced Oliver North to Rodriguez.

William Casey, former OSS agent during World War II, became DCI under Reagan. Casey was the architect of the Contra/CIA war against the Sandinistas. According to material developed during the congressional investigation of the Iran/Contra affair, Casey was the mastermind behind obtaining illegal funds when Congress voted to end the CIA's arms shipments to the Contras. In one example, Casey managed to convince the Pentagon to give the Contras $12 million in "surplus" military equipment. When Congress discovered this, they prohibited any and all military aid shipments to the Contras. It was at this time that Casey suggested to Oliver North that he should hire Richard Secord to keep the war alive.

Albert Hakim, an Iranian-born business partner of Secord from his earlier Teheran days, managed the private supply network for the Contras under North's supervision. For this, he used Saudi and Iranian oil money deposited in Switzerland in secret Enterprise accounts.

A host of other, less significant, covert operators joined these players in carrying out the aims of the Reagan White House. These included many more of the old anti-Castro hands, veterans of the Shackley/Clines/Hunt/Miami Station days, former Pentagon special operations officers, and ex-CIA/Air America pilots and crews from Laos and Vietnam.

In early 1981, the CIA set up military training camps in California and Florida reminiscent of the anti-Castro training bases created in Florida and Louisiana during the late 1950s. These camps soon began training anti-Sandinista guerrillas, and by the middle of the year, arrangements had been made for these groups to begin raiding Nicaragua from secret bases in Honduras. Funding at this early date was given to the Miami-based Nicaraguan Democratic Union (UDN) led by Francisco Cardenal, who agreed to join the newly formed Nicaraguan Democratic Force (FDN). The last of the three regional commanders, Eden Pastora Gomez, however, refused to join forces with the others due to their links with the Samoza *Guardia Nacional*. Pastora, a former Sandinista, found such allies totally unacceptable. Still, he pursued his part of the war and was supplied accordingly.

In 1982, with funding increasing to over $60 million, the war heated up. Under 150 CIA operatives and trainers, the FDN reached a strength of almost 10,000 and were conducting commando raids both across the border and into Nicaraguan ports by sea. Contra aircraft supplied by the CIA, and contract agents such as Southern Air Transport (based in Miami), flew both supplies and bombing missions into Nicaragua in support of Contra operations, and boats were supplied for mining operations of Sandinista harbors.

These operations finally brought world attention to the region and eventual exposure of the CIA's involvement. The Nicaraguan government filed an action against the United States in the World Court in the Hague accusing the U.S. of participating in combat inside Nicaragua, and with substantial proof available after the shootdown of a Southern Air Transport C-123 and the capture of crew member Eugene Hasenfus, managed to force a clampdown on CIA activities. In 1984, Congress blocked President Reagan's request for further funding of the Contras. If the CIA was going to continue to assist the Contras, another source of funding had to be found.[162]

In order to get the fast, massive infusion of cash required to continue the war, the Enterprise once again turned to what had kept the war in Laos alive: drugs.

Of the major drug suppliers in the world, South American cartels rank among the largest. From the coca producing countries of Columbia and Bolivia, hundreds of tons of cocaine are produced and smuggled each year into the various organized crime networks of both Europe and North America. The end results are millions of tax-free, untraceable dollars that flow into the coffers of everyone in the drug network from drug lords to pilots to distributors. For the CIA, becoming involved in the drug trade to support a secret war was business as usual. And by 1980, the door to the world of South American drug lords had already been opened.

In 1980, the Argentine *Confederacion Anticommunista Latina* (CAL) had infiltrated into various countries in a plot to eliminate troublesome Roman Catholic priests and missions that fostered dissent against rightist dictatorships. This rise of religious militantism was not something that came into being overnight, but had been growing ever since the Operation Paperclip and Omega network days of post-war Europe. The Nazis that had been smuggled out of Germany to South America had by the 1950s become well-entrenched in government circles of such countries as Argentina, Brazil, Bolivia, Columbia, Uraguay and Peru. By the 1960s, protégés of this Nazi infrastructure, trained in SS tactics, had moved into other countries, including those of Central America, and had brought with them the Gestapo tactics they had learned. The most militant and capable of the German-trained "trainers and advisors" came from Argentina.

By 1980, CAL plotting had reached its zenith. In that year Argentine officers, bankrolled by the cocaine drug lords, installed Luis Garcia Meza as dictator of Bolivia. Two of the Argentine officers involved in the action were not actually from Argentina, but were wanted Italian terrorists named Stefano delle Chiaie and Pierluigi Pagliai. Another was someone even more villainous: veteran Nazi fugitive and drug trafficker Klaus Barbie, the infamous "Butcher of Lyons."

Chiaie and Barbie spearheaded the CAL operation to identify, locate and exterminate radical priests and troublesome leftists not only in South America, but Central America as well. For the latter, Chiaie met with Major Roberto d'Aubuisson, the Death Squad leader in El Salvador, at the CAL conference in Argentina in September of 1980. This meeting produced an agreement to send arms and money to d'Aubuisson in El Salvador.

But the main thrust of this conference, which was attended by selected rightist dictators and their senior officers, was to export the "Argentine Solution" of death squads from Buenos Aires to Central America. The first target would be Guatemala, but that country would only serve as a jumping off point for similar operations to be put in place in El Salvador, Nicaragua, Panama, Honduras and Costa Rica.

According to the authors of *The Iran Contra Connection*, the driving force behind these movements was not the Argentine government, but an international partnership that had developed between the Italo-Argentine secret, and politically militant, Masonic Lodge P-2 and the Milan Banco Ambrosiano.[163] The P2 lodge had been identified by the Italian Government as a fascist-oriented secret society of anarchists and neo-Nazis. Considered part of the infamous *Illuminati*[164] by some, and indirectly linked by others, the P-2 is little more than a front for a secret order of political manipulators independent of the more public network of Masonic lodges. P-2 has come under considerable scrutiny because of its on-going involvement in coup attempts involving covert intelligence agencies, bank manipulations, and terrorist bombings.

P-2 had strong links to the CIA and the Republican Party. Under Nixon, the CIA allocated $10 million of "black" funds, which do not require accountability, for the right-wing parties in the 1972 Italian elections. The funds went through Ambrosiano bank connection Michele Sindona, and Italian Intelligence Chief Vito Miceli, both P-2 members. It should be noted that Sindona's American investments were handled by the Continental Illinois Bank headed by Nixon's first Treasury Secretary, David Kennedy, and his legal representatives in the U.S. was the law firm of Nixon Attorney General John Mitchell.

Finally, P-2 and CAL have one other thing in common: drugs. CAL chairman Suarez Mason, according to the Italian magazine *Panorama*, became "one of Latin America's chief drug traffickers. Italian terrorist delle Chiai is suspected of being involved in the French Connection case and the Corsican Mafia heroin trafficking. A further connection is Paraguayan Intelligence Chief Pastor Coronel, a member of CAL, who was a smuggling partner with Auguste Ricord, the main Corsican drug buyer in Latin America. Ricord was the connection, via the Corsican Mafia, to the Gambino Mafia family of New York. The organized crime connections and violent means of obtaining funds by the P-2, according to author Penny Lernoux in her book *In Banks We Trust*, is typical of the time: "the P-2 crowd obtained money from the kidnappings of well-to-do businessmen in Europe and from the drug traffic in South America. Sindona's bank laundered money from the notorious Mafia kidnappers of *Anonima Sequestri* [Italian Mafia family]...."[165]

After the CIA contributed the $10 million to P-2 for the Italian elections, which followed a large P-2 contribution to Nixon's CREEP (Committee to Re-elect the President) fund, and Nixon's resignation following Watergate, the dealings of the CIA came under intensive scrutiny by the Carter administration and the new DCI, Stansfield Turner. Subsequent investigations and closings of cash flow conduits affected such parallel operations as Edwin Wilson's Iran arms dealings, which forced him to move to the Libyan weapons and hit team deals for which he was eventually jailed, the drug-linked Nugan Hand Bank of Australia, and finally, the failure of the CIA-dependant Banco Ambrosiano. These upper-level CIA reforms, however, were only a temporary setback. The ousted clandestine operators simply faded into the shadows and began building a much more powerful coalition of agents, drug runners and arms merchants.

The end result was that by the time Congress cut off aid to the Contras during the Reagan administration, the means of financing further military operations was already in place. By 1986, a private aid network had been established that permitted cocaine to be smuggled into the United States and arms to be smuggled out.[166]

As the Nicaraguan campaign grew in size and intensity, even the enormous profits of drug running would not be enough to sustain operations. It was because of this that the NSC and CIA operatives were forced to look across the Atlantic for further funding.

The precedent for dealing with the Middle East, and especially Iran, Saudi Arabia, and Israel, had already been established. It merely required servicing to once again become a source of financing.

In late May of 1972, Nixon and Kissinger made the Shah of Iran an offer he could not refuse: unlimited access to America's non-nuclear arsenal in return for a guaranteed flow of Iranian oil and an agreement to serve as the U.S.'s military stalwart in Southwest Asia. The Shah agreed, and soon weapons sales began turning cash dollars for CIA front organizations, and certain U.S. oil companies and banks began generating huge profits.

The windfalls that were brought to the private sector were centered mainly on Eastern banks that specialized in dealing with international oil. Chief among these was the Chase Manhattan Bank of New York, whose chairman, David Rockefeller, was a personal friend of the Shah. The Shah, by way of the National Iranian Oil Company, agreed to recycle much of his oil earnings back into investments and long-term government securities inside the United States, by way of the Chase Manhattan Bank. It is not surprising to find that Henry Kissinger later became chairman of Chase's international advisory committee.

In 1973, Chase Manhattan loaned Teheran $250 million which went for arms and weapons systems purchases. This was the largest loan ever arranged with the Iranians up to that time, but was soon followed by more. One year later Chase established the Iran-Chase International Bank in Teheran to handle the cash flow. By 1975, Rockefeller's bank was handling over $2 billion a year in Iranian transactions.[167]

These transactions were also fortuitous to the American war material industry which was facing massive profit losses as the American military was being pulled out of Vietnam. With no war to generate a need for weapons, the military/industrial complex, along with their investors and bankers, would have to locate new clients or go broke. The Shah, with his insatiable appetite for modern weaponry, became their next client. In 1974, Iran spent 14% of its gross national product on weapons and aircraft. Three years later the annual purchases were topping $4.2 billion. The grand total spent prior to the fall of the royal family exceeded $17 billion.

The armament industry was not the only commercial sector saved by Iranian oil money. The construction companies that had built the ports and airfields of Vietnam were also benefactors to the Shah's generosity. The largest of these, of course, was Lyndon Johnson's old supporters, Brown & Root. It should be mentioned that Brown & Root received the enormous Cam Ranh Bay contract, among others. In Iran, Brown & Root managed to glean an $8 billion contract to build a huge port facility at Chah Bahar, without the annoyance of competitive bidding. The Chah Bahar port was to become the main Iranian naval base for a fleet of vessels to be built by Litton Industries.

The Rockwell International IBEX project has been discussed in a previous chapter, but of interest at this point are the huge bribes paid to Iran's air force commander, General Mohammed Khatemi (the Shah's brother-in-law), to win approval for the $500 million project. Other companies that did business at this time inside Iran and followed the bribes-for-contracts procedure of doing business included Grumman, Northrop and Bell Helicopter.[168]

Not everyone in Washington was happy with the events transpiring in Iran. In 1975, Defense Secretary Schlesinger drafted a memo to then-President Gerald Ford questioning whether "our policy of supporting an apparently open-ended Iranian military buildup will continue to serve our long-term interests." The memo never reached the president. It was blocked by Henry Kissinger, and two months later Schlesinger was fired.

That same year the U.S. established a Military Assistance Advisory Group (MAAG) in Iran consisting of 201 personnel. Two years later, almost 8,000 Americans were working in Iran on military contracts. Among these were Edwin Wilson, Thomas Clines, Theodore Shackley, Richard Secord, and Secord's old Laotian contact, Eric von Marbod. Von Marbod would later become the key player in the Carter administration's proposal to sell eight AWACS to Iran, and Shackley would pave the way for the Reagan administration's arms-for-hostages trades with the Khomeini government.

In Teheran, Shackley was a consultant for an arms company called Stanford Technology Corporation. STC was founded by an Iranian-born arms dealer named Albert Hakim, and did business with the Shah by selling military equipment manufactured by Hewlett-Packard, Olin Corporation, and various smaller companies. Hakim was introduced to Richard Secord by Edwin Wilson, who did business in Libya out of Hakim's offices in Switzerland. One of the contracts handled by this group was STC's $5.5 million deal to supply electronic equipment to the IBEX project, which Secord oversaw. Hakim would eventually work with Secord and others in laundering funds involved in the Iran/Contra arms deals.[169]

The continuing bribes, scandals and exposure of corruption, coupled with the heavy-handed oppression of the Shah's secret police, the CIA-trained SAVAK, eventually contributed to the downfall of the Shah and the reestablishment of Moslem fundamentalism under Ayatollah Khomeini.

David Rockefeller and Henry Kissinger, who both realized what could happen should the Shah's money in the Chase Manhattan Bank become nationalized by the Khomeini regime, moved to block any such attempt on the part of Iran to obtain possession of the assets. With the help of a former ARAMCO attorney, who also happened to be a former chairman of Chase Manhattan, Rockefeller and Kissinger mounted a campaign to grant the Shah asylum in the U.S. for "medical treatment." The attorney who joined Rockefeller and Kissinger to handle the legal aspects and add weight to the case was, not surprisingly, John J. McCloy. McCloy was the architect of the Nuremberg trials, served as former High Commissier of Germany (HICOG), headed the SWNCC during WWII, served on the Warren Commission and presided over the Council on Foreign Relations, some of whose members owned the major oil companies such as Standard Oil and Texaco.

In the end, President Carter, after being told that the Shah would cash in billions of dollars in U.S. government securities if not allowed admittance, agreed to take the Shah in. The consequences, as far as American/Iranian relations, would prove disastrous.[170] But for Chase Manhattan, the main objective was accomplished. The Iranian oil money stayed.

The overthrow of the Shah by the followers of Khomeni seriously weakened America's position in the Middle East. Besides the expulsion of CIA assets and American companies from Iran, which incited fear that pro-Soviet elements or the Soviets themselves would move into the country, and the explosion of Islamic fundamentalism and the spread of its subservient terrorist organizations, there were more highly visible demonstrations of anti-Americanism taking place. Pro-Iranian Islamic groups in other countries in the region began all-out attacks on American holdings and government representatives. In April of 1983, the U.S. embassy in Beirut was almost destroyed by a suicide attack in which an Islamic extremist detonated a bomb at the base of the building. This attack killed sixty people, seven of which were CIA.[171]

Then in March of the following year, CIA station chief William Buckley was kidnapped outside his Beirut apartment and held along with several other hostages by the Iranian-backed terrorist group Islamic Jihad (Islamic Holy War). The U.S. government, in a complete turnaround from the token way the Vietnam war POW/MIA situation was being handled, went to frantic extremes to free Buckley and a handful of international hostages.

Despite President Reagan's public stance on refusing to deal with terrorists, secret moves began almost immediately to bargain with the terrorists, or those who controlled them. In this case, it was the new Teheran government. The price of freedom would be arms and military equipment needed to keep Saddam Hussein of neighboring Iraq from invading Iran during the country's post-revolution reorganization.

But there was an official U.S. embargo on military equipment sales to Iran. A means had to be found by the secret planners to skirt the embargo, remain anonymous from all but those they were dealing with, and still recover the hostages. This means was found in Israel, who agreed to serve as middle-man. Israel was willing to provide the arms-for-hostages deliveries to Iran in 1985 in exchange for sales of some of the latest American weapons systems.[172] For the next several months Israel managed to slip some weapons systems into Iran, but by mid-1986, the NSC had established its own clandestine smuggling routes and Israel was no longer needed. The architects of the new filtering system were Lt. Col. Oliver North and retired general Richard Secord.

By this time Buckley had succumbed to the stress of incarceration and torture and had died. Still, there were other hostages to be rescued, and beyond that, the CIA was concerned that Buckley may have given his captors the names of other agents in the Middle East. The deals continued.

Three direct arms shipments were sent to Iran from the U.S. to serve as payments toward the release of the hostages. The first shipment went out in February 1986, followed by the second in May. This latter shipment was accompanied by North and national security advisor Robert McFarlane who held a bargaining session with Iranian leaders for several days. The third and final shipment arrived in Teheran on October 29th, 1986, after which hostage David Jacobsen was released. It becomes obvious at this point that the U.S. received very little in return for the massive effort put forth, except for one thing: the profits skimmed off of the Iranian deals went to the CIA's Contra program for the purchase of arms. The remaining hostages were not to see freedom until 1991, almost at the end of *George Bush's* term as president.

In late 1986, revelations of arms-for-hostages/drugs-for-money dealings, dubbed the "Iran/Contra Scandal," rocked the covert intelligence community. CIA director William Casey, who held many of the answers to the obscure affair, developed a brain tumor in December and died the following year. Deputy director Robert Gates was initially picked to replace Casey, but due to his involvement in the scandal, was not confirmed for the post. Instead, FBI director William H. Webster was selected and transferred to the CIA to succeed Casey. Gates would still manage to take over the CIA, after Webster.

The ensuing Congressional investigation brought to light some of the behind-the-scenes dealings that had transpired between the Iranians, the Israelis, the NSC, CIA, Contras, and cocaine cartels. But, partially due to Casey's death, it only scratched the surface. Almost everyone involved who testified before Congress managed to push the issue, and the blame, to a higher level. For some of the questions, especially those fielded by Oliver North who was the White House representative at the NSC, the ball was passed up to the White House and President Reagan, who conveniently could not recall anything of value to the investigators. For others, it was a case of "blame the dead guy." From his grave, William Casey continued to serve the world of covert intelligence by taking full responsibility for the Iran/Contra affair.

The majority of U.S. support for the Contras ceased during the investigation. What remained dwindled until the Contras could no longer depend on their North American allies for arms, ammunition and equipment. They eventually had to resort to basic guerrilla warfare, living off of the countryside as well as they could.

But the cocaine network, and the people who profited from it, continued to flourish. As late as 1993, the Columbian drug lords continued to grow in power and wealth, and the distribution network, and those in it, continued to operate as they had during the war. The end result is that there were more drugs on the streets of America than ever before in history, both cocaine from South America and heroin from Southeast Asia, and the organizations involved, from the cartels to the Mafia, profited in excess of $10 billion per year.

When all of the smoke and mirrors are removed, the true machinations and benefactors of the Iran/Contra affair surface: Hundreds of millions of dollars worth of weapons found their way into Iran illegally; the Contras, as a *cause celebre'*, served as a patriotic motivating factor for the players in case the affair was ever exposed; the handful of hostages in Beirut received more media coverage and financial attention than all of the POWs and MIAs of World War II, Korea, and Vietnam combined; the Chase Manhattan Bank managed to retain the Shah's wealth; and finally, the drug network established to support the Contras not only remained intact, but was by the end of the affair much more efficient and profitable than ever before.

And why not? The drug traffickers and cartels were recruited, organized and trained by people who, by then, had gained years of experience in just such enterprises.

Part VI

Unsafe At Any Altitude

"I armed my missiles and brought the nose down sharply. It worked! I saw that I had lock-on. The first missile was fired when the distance between us was about five kilometers. Only now I could really see the intruder."

Lt. Col. Gennadiy Nikolayevich Osipovich
Soviet Air Force

"*Very strange people were at work very early on. Within a matter of three hours there were American accents heard in the town. Over that night there were large numbers, by which I mean twenty, twenty-five, thirty people arrived. The next day...there was a whole bevy of people walking down the main street with blue windbreakers and baseball hats with 'FBI' on them...there were a lot of other Americans there who were in town who weren't wearing FBI windcheaters...I know who some of them were, and it certainly wasn't tourists."*

David Ben-Aryeah, British journalist
On the bombing of Pan Am 103

"I told them [the FBI] that it was definitely a flare type rocket heading toward the aircraft, then it exploded. It was then suggested that we did not see anything at all and that we were going along with what other people said they saw, just for the excitement of it. I told them 'no way, I know what I saw'...[other men in suits arrived later and] They gave us some money and told us 'never to mention anything to anyone about being witnesses to the crash again.'"

Anonymous letter to editor of
California newspaper regarding TWA 800

Chapter 26

Ambush Over Moneron

On the dark, cold night of September 1, 1983, a Boeing 747 Jumbo Jet carrying 269 passengers flew placidly over the Western Pacific. Its destination was Seoul, the capital of South Korea.

It would never arrive.

Unknown to the crew, the airliner had strayed off course. For some reason, the sophisticated primary and secondary navigation systems failed to alert them that their course line had altered far to the west of where they should have been, and at that very moment had put them dangerously close to the Kamchatka Peninsula of the Soviet Union. Had they received an accurate plot, they would have been alarmed to know that they were well within the Soviet Air Defense Zone, and the Russians took the presence of intruders seriously. Only five years before, another jet airliner belonging to the same company, Korean Airlines (KAL) had strayed into Soviet airspace and had been intercepted. On that occasion, the Soviet interceptor pilot had twice told Soviet ground controllers that he had identified the intruder and that it was a civilian airliner, even identifying the company and type, a Boeing 707 with KAL markings. Both times he was told to proceed with shoot-down procedures, and both times he refused. However after the third order, and probably realizing the dire personal consequences for failure to obey a direct command, he reluctantly fired a missile which killed two passengers and disabled the aircraft. The Korean crew fought desperately to save their ship and miraculously managed to land the crippled airplane on a frozen Soviet lake. The passengers were released two days later, but the Soviets kept the 707.[173] KAL Flight 007 would not be so lucky.

Besides the error in navigation, something else was occurring. For like the fated 707, they too were being tracked by Soviet air defense radar and would soon be joined by Russian interceptors.

The Soviet radar operators had already spent the night tracking an American air force Boeing RC-135Ca four-engine 707 derivative especially equipped with sophisticated radios and other electronics for reconnaissance and spy work, and were completely alert when the new blip, KAL 007, appeared on their screens. Only this time, instead of assuming the routine race-track oval flight pattern just outside their air defense interception zone (ADIZ), the new target continued southwest at an angle that would place it inside the ADIZ within minutes.

The air defense officer at the radar site made a quick decision. He would scramble the "alert" fighters. Within minutes the Soviet interceptor pilots manned their aircraft, rolled onto the runway and, shoving their throttles past the afterburner detent, roared into the night sky.

Each pilot came up on the radio in turn and was given a steer to the bogey. But for some reason, the radar vectors were faulty. For no matter how hard the frustrated controllers tried, they could not seem to vector their flight to a point of visual contact with the intruder. In the end, after searching until they were too low on fuel to continue, the MiG flight returned to base. Incredibly, the sleek supersonic fighters, even with the aid of a sophisticated ground defense radar network, which was at that time suffering problems similar to 007's navigation systems, had not come within 50 miles of the lumbering Jumbo Jet.

KAL 007, still not realizing how close they were getting to the Siberian coastline, continued on. Then, as other radar sites began to pick up the 747, another flight was ordered into the air. This time it came from the air defense station on Sakhalin, who scrambled four aging Sukhoi Su-15 "Flagon" interceptors (which were not equipped with the sensitive electronic systems of the MiGs).[174] In the cockpit of the lead Sukhoi, No. 805, sat Lt. Col. Gennadiy Nikolayevich Osipovich.

The Korean airliner, flying straight and level at an airspeed somewhere below 500 mph, had managed to fly completely across the wide Kamchatka Peninsula, the 500 mile expanse of the Sea of Okhotsk north of the Kuril Islands, and was approaching Sakhalin Island just north of Hokkaido, Japan, and had managed to do so completely unmolested, which infuriated the Soviet commanders.

The Sakhalin radar operators were more successful than their Kamchatka counterparts in tracking the bogey and vectoring their interceptors. As they were doing so, for some reason, Soviet commanders were changing the radar blip identification from "non-Soviet aircraft" to "American RC-135."

As the flight of four Su-15s converged on the 747, General Ivan Tretyak, commander of the Soviet Far East Military District, and his superior, General Vladimer Govorov, commander of the Far East Theater of Operations, decided Osipovich should maneuver his flight closer to the target for visual identification.

Fearful that pilots might defect, as had Lt. Viktor Belenko who had flown to Japan in a shiny new super-secret MiG-25 eight years before, the interceptor flight's tanks had only been filled with enough fuel for local operations. They would not have much time to loiter once contact was made with the bogey, and a decision concerning what course of action to take next would have to be made quickly by the ground staff.[175]

At 6:15 a.m. Osipovich received orders to close with the intruder and identify it. But before he could do so, he was ordered by Tretyak to "Kill the intruder."

Horrified crewmen aboard the American RC-135, who had been monitoring the Soviet activities, heard this order repeated no less than five times.

KAL 007, which had unknowingly managed to evade the latest and most capable Soviet MiG fighters, was now about to leave Soviet airspace after flying completely across Sakhalin Island. Within a few minutes the huge jet would reenter international airspace and escape. Unfortunately, this was not going to be permitted.[176]

At 6:23 the four Su-15s fell into trail behind the unsuspecting 747. One minute later, Osipovich, reacting to the command to destroy the target, lit his afterburners and activated his missile system which consisted of two Anab air-to-air missiles. Almost immediately his missile seekers locked on to the heat source of the 747's engines and his armament panel began to flash. He reported back to the ground station that he had lock-on and was prepared to launch missiles. The target was now only five kilometers distant, well within range of the Su-15's Anabs. Osipovich, in his own words later, stated: "...suddenly in my earphones I heard this: 'Abort destruction! Match altitude with the target and force it to land.' I was already approaching the intruder from below. I matched speeds and started to flash him [author's note: Osipovich was probably referring to his landing lights]. But he did not respond. 'Give him some warning bursts,' I heard from the ground. I fired four bursts, firing off more than 200 rounds. But what was the sense of that? I had armor-piercing rounds, not incendiaries [tracers]. And it was hardly likely that anyone would see them."[177]

There was no way the crew of the 747 could have seen Osipovich flashing his landing lights. The Soviet pilot was behind and below the large airliner.[178] Yet he goes on to say that "I have no doubt that they noticed me...The reaction of the pilots was unambiguous, they quickly reduced speed. Now they were moving at about 400 kilometers per hour [250 mph]. I was moving faster...I simply could not go more slowly. In my opinion the intruder's reckoning was simple: If I did not want to stall and go into a spin, I would be forced to overtake them. And that is what happened. We had already flown past the island; it is narrow at that point. And it was then that the command was given from the ground: 'Destroy the target.'"[179]

In this statement, Osipovich tells two lies. First, he states that his interceptor could not reduce speed below 400 kph and that he would be forced to overshoot or stall out. This is not true. To keep from overshooting he had two choices: First, he could retard his throttle, drop a few degrees of flaps, even drop his landing gear, and go into a "slow flight" configuration. Obviously the Su-15 could slow to a much slower speed considering that it lands at approximately 105 knots. The second choice would be to reduce his forward progress by maneuvering. Simply put, he could "S" turn while the Korean airliner continued on a straight course. The second lie concerns his use of gunfire. The Su-15 does not have an internal gun. Instead, if armed in advance, it is capable of mounting two GSh-23L 23mm gunpods. Each pod carries two cannon, with 100 rounds of ammunition for each gun in each pod for a total of 400 rounds. Because of maneuverability restrictions concerning external loads (the two gunpods are mounted on belly pylons in the center of the fuselage) external gunpods are seldom carried. Instead, the interceptors rely on the two air-to-air missiles. They can be employed from a far greater range with much more devastating effect. By Soviet doctrine, the GSh-23 gunpods were only carried in the off chance that the fighter might get into a close-in dogfight. Even at this, the Flagon was designed for straight line speed to head off intruding bombers and not for maneuverability. It therefore had to rely on stand-off distance and missile capability to make it a lethal aircraft.[180]

Osipovich chose to maneuver his aircraft in a vertical climbing turn behind KAL 007 to preclude overshooting the slowing target. "I...managed to make a sharp turn and was now above and running on to him. But then I had a thought. I dropped 2,000 [he doesn't say feet or meters, all Soviet aircraft altimeters are marked in meters, which would have him drop approximately 6,500 feet!)...I armed my missiles and brought the nose down sharply. It worked! I saw that I had lock-on. The first missile was fired when the distance between us was about five kilometers. Only now I could really see the intruder. It was larger than an IL-76 and its outline was something like a TU-16.[181] The trouble for all Soviet pilots is that we do not study civilian aircraft belonging to foreign companies. I knew all the military aircraft, all the reconnaissance aircraft. But this was not like any of them."

This last statement is also untrue. The Soviet military encyclopedia contains photographs and identification silhouettes of both military and commercial aircraft. The 747 is represented, and its distinctive whale-like shape is quite unique. Also, if the target did not resemble any reconnaissance aircraft, then why was it later stated that Osipovich confused it for a much smaller RC-135?

But the biggest problem with Osipovich's story is with his time-line of events. For as he was supposedly performing these time consuming maneuvers, the RC-135 radio operators were monitoring the Soviet radio conversations and Japanese air traffic controllers and radar operators were observing the progress of KAL 007. They had just given the KAL pilots permission to climb to 35,000 feet, which might explain why Osipovich thought the aircraft was slowing down in an attempt to evade him. It was actually climbing to a higher flight level, which caused it to slow in speed relative to the pursuers. [Author's note: Why did the Japanese controllers at this point not tell KAL-007 they were off course, far into Soviet air defense territory?]

In actuality, the time span between General Tretyak's 6:15 order for Osipovich to maneuver closer to the radar target and the receipt of the final command to "Kill the intruder," at 6:25, was only ten minutes.

At 6:26, Osipovich said he fired two missiles simultaneously. The Anabs ran true and, according to Osipovich, struck the 747 "one near the tail, and the other took off half the left wing." This would not be true if Osipovich actually was "70 right" of the plane as he reported to ground controllers. The heat-seeking missiles would have homed in on the nearest engine, in this case, number four right outboard engine.

But contrary to later reports, the missiles did not cause the 747 to explode in flight. Even though Osipovich transmitted at 6:26 that "The target is destroyed," the Tokyo air traffic controllers reported that one minute later they picked up a broken radio transmission from KAL 007: "Tokyo, Korean Air zero zero seven...fifteen thousand holding with rapid decompression! Descending to one zero thousand...[10,000 feet]. *Tokyo Radio acknowledged KAL 007 but did not advise them that they were off course because they were probably not in range of Tokyo radar which was over 900 miles away.*

This is exactly what the emergency procedures call for in such an incident. To the 747 pilots, the explosion of the missiles must have sounded like a rupture in the pressure hull of the aircraft, and possibly shrapnel from the explosive warheads of the Anabs, which homed in on the tailpipe of one of the engines, had indeed pierced the cabin of the airliner. If this occurred, yellow oxygen masks would automatically be deployed from the overhead compartments above the passenger seats and the sudden decompression in the cabin would have been felt throughout the aircraft. The pilots, realizing that there is only sufficient oxygen to sustain human life below 12,500 feet, would immediately begin an emergency descent.

Had the 747 exploded, as the official version later recounted, it would have struck the surface of the ocean in less than three minutes. This did not happen. The Japanese controllers knew that the Korean crew continued to maintain control of the Boeing for another *12 minutes*!

At 6:32, KAL 007 descended from Flight Level 35 (35,000 feet) to 16,400 feet. This was confirmed on Japanese radar. Then after a couple of minutes, the big jet began another descent. It appears that the crew could not maintain altitude and was fighting valiantly to save the ship. It is not known if there was insufficient power in the remaining engines to maintain altitude, or if another engine had failed due to fuel lines being severed, or possibly there were further complications from fire. But for whatever reason, the 747 again began to descend and at 6:39 had dropped to 5,000 feet. Three minutes later it fell below 1,000 feet, and at 6:40 a.m. local time, it was lost below radar 1.5 miles from Moneron Island.[182]

Twenty-seven minutes after Osipovich fired his missiles, another Russian pilot reported that he was making "reference point circles" over the wreckage and that "rescue operations were underway." If KAL 007 had exploded, as the official Western reports stated the next day, then why would a Soviet search plane bother to make circles over the wreckage, and rescue operations initiated? What was there to rescue?

Contrary to this, later Soviet press releases explained that the Russian fighter pilots actually reported: "I don't see it" (1829:13); "No I don't' see it"(1835:54); "He doesn't see anything in the area. I just looked" (1838:37). None of Osipovich's comrades could find the wreckage of his "kill" where it was supposed to be. These statement must be compared to the burning wreckage of TWA 800 which crashed into the Atlantic of East Moriches, New York, on July 17, 1996. The fuel from this incident burned for hours, marking the location of the main wreckage site.

Within two hours of the shootdown, Soviet defense stations in Sakhalin were in communication with Moscow. The information they relayed was not good. They had mistakenly downed a civilian airliner, *and some of the passengers were American*! How could anyone know that any of the passengers were American? Had they discovered floating bodies that still held readable identification papers or passports? According to both Soviet and Western press releases, no bodies were ever recovered, and no wreckage was ever found.[183] This in itself is not only improbable, it is unbelievable. As in every example of an air disaster over water, and in most instances of ship sinkings, bodies surface and are recovered. One case in point is the tragic shootdown of the Iranian Airbus over the Persian Gulf by an American missile frigate *Vincennes*. Dozens of bodies floated to the surface from the ruptured cabin and were photographed by the world press floating in clusters just below the surface of the sea. Though the colder water in the Sea of Japan would delay such an occurrence due to better temperature preservation of flesh, eventually the bodies would bloat and rise to the surface. With the exception of a few body parts that allegedly drifted ashore in Japan, 250 miles away, which could not be identified as having originated aboard the fated flight, no bodies were reportedly recovered.

Four hours after the shootdown, Marshal Ogarkov could see an already negative international incident rapidly deteriorating into a world relations disaster. The only way it might be salvaged would be by a world-class deception created with layers of lies. Even as a vast armada of Soviet vessels converged on Moneron Island, Ogarkov began formulating a story of intrigue and espionage. According to the rapidly fabricated version of events, the Korean airliner had joined up with the RC-135, which had already probed Soviet airspace on several occasions that night, and then had flown on to cross over Kamchatka, the Sea of Okhotsk, and finally Sakhalin. It was obviously on a spy mission, probably had secret cameras and eavesdropping devices on board, and flagrantly ignored all warnings given by the Russians. The Russians were left with no choice but to shoot it down. The Americans, of course, were to blame. It was them who had placed the 269 innocent passengers at risk for their own selfish reasons. The Americans, by their deceitful actions, had murdered those people and would now try to blame it on the Russians, who had been forced to defend their homeland.

Moscow had a choice. The government could do one of two things: buy the tale and reinforce it, supporting the Far East Defense Command in the process, or place the blame on over-zealous officers and punish them accordingly. This latter choice would have been the easiest. There could be an investigation, a finding of a tragic mistake having been made, blame fixed on the lowest ranking officer who could be pegged as responsible, an apology issued, and life would go on. But instead, Moscow bought Ogarkov's version of the event and began an immediate campaign of disinformation.

The end result is that the world press swallowed the Soviet version and even came up with other reinforcing stories that the Korean 747 had indeed been on a CIA spy mission. *The Washington Post* headlined a six column article with "Article in Britain Links Ill-Fated KAL Flight to Intelligence Mission." The piece referred to originally appeared in Britain's *Defence Attache'* magazine. But when the author of the article, who claimed that KAL 007 was engaged in espionage, was finally tracked down, it was discovered that he was a London advertising agent with no technical expertise and no remarkable or inside knowledge of the event.

Then, in 1984, a Yale graduate student named David Pearson, wrote an article for *The Nation* that stated "...the U.S. government also must be held accountable" for the deaths of the passengers aboard KAL 007, because "It seems probable that Soviet radar systems were jammed at least on Kamchatka Peninsula and perhaps on Sakhalin Island." If this were true, the Russians would have jumped on it to reinforce their disinformation. And beyond this, if the radar was indeed jammed, then Osipovich's flight would never have found KAL 007.

In the end, even after President Reagan denounced the Soviets as murderers and called for an international investigation, the issue faded into history and was all but forgotten. General Tretyak was promoted to head all Soviet air defenses; General Govorov was promoted to deputy minister of defense; and Marshal Ogarkov became personal military adviser to Mikhail Gorbachev.

Osipovich was not so lucky. It seems that in the Russian military, as in other forces, the proverbial excretion rolls downhill. After being told by his commander, Colonel Kornukhov, that he had shot down a foreigner and to "make another hole in your shoulder boards for a new star," Osipovich was instead ostracized. After the arrival of an investigating committee, Osipovich was, in his own words, suddenly "a son of a bitch."

During the investigation, which ironically was reported after the fall of Communism by none other than *Izvestiya*, the official government newspaper, Osipovich makes a startling statement. "In the grand reckoning," he reflected, "I have no doubt that we were right. A foreign aircraft was in our airspace for two and a half hours, and during that time it covered a distance of more than 2,000 kilometers. *All the air traffic control services of foreign states said not a word, remained silent.* What order can you give in such a situation? Sit on your hands?" [Author's emphasis].

Izvestiya came out with a 17 part expose' of the Soviet cover-up surrounding KAL 007 which ran between December 21, 1990 and February 6, 1991. The series reported on *Izvestiya*'s efforts to discover the actual "truth" regarding the shootdown, and surprisingly, was considered the most accurate and in-depth version of the incident ever published. According to *Izvestiya*, the wreckage of KAL 007 was found almost immediately and divers were sent down to examine it. Three flight recorders were found and recovered, and were quickly rushed off to Moscow. But not one body was found! According to a Soviet diver who had examined the wreck, "The main thing was not what we had seen there, but what we had *not* seen. The divers found practically no human bodies or remains." What had become of the 269 passengers and nine crewmembers?

Unless they weren't there.

If the bodies did not surface, and they were not found in the wreckage, then they had to have been either rescued or recovered immediately after the crash. If this is so, then the survivors, or their bodies, were transported to the nearby Siberian island of Sakhalin, probably to the nearest settlement: Shebunino. If not this small town, then perhaps Gornozavodsk, Nevel'sk, or the larger community of Khomnsk, all of which are along the southwestern coastline of Sakhalin facing the tiny island of Ostrov Moneron. From any of these places it would be reasonable to assume that they would be quickly transshipped to the nearest city: Kharbarovsk, on the mainland of Siberia.

It should be remembered that it was in Kharbarovsk that the Soviets held the War Crimes Tribunals for the Japanese captured at Mukden and Pingfan in World War II, and served as the primary destination for the American POWs taken in Korea, and some of those received from Vietnam, and was the city that contained the largest military installations in southeast Siberia. It was from here that thousands of people had disappeared into the Gulags.

But why would the Soviets care about incarcerating or eliminating innocent civilians? Was it because they were witnesses to the truth? That they could testify that they were ambushed and there was no warning, no gunshots across the nose, no blinking of landing lights from the interceptors?

Hardly. It was more likely that they were victims of a far greater and much darker plot than even the Soviets could father.

Only one small mention was ever made in the Western press of the importance of one of the passengers who perished aboard 007. Buried in most accounts is the fact that U.S. Congressman Larry McDonald of Georgia was aboard the Jumbo Jet. What is not pointed out is that Congressman McDonald was involved in a major investigation of the world banking cartel, the Council on Foreign Relations, the Federal Reserve Board, and other significant entities that were interrelated with each of these.

McDonald was the most dedicated anti-communist on Capital Hill, and the press had noted that "From the time he took his oath of office in 1975 until the moment of the shootdown, Congressman McDonald had systematically carried out a campaign against the Soviet communists of a sort which no other U.S. elected official had ever done on his own."[184] In *The Day of the Cobra*, author Jeffrey St. John writes: "Congressman Lawrence McDonald had spent his entire career warning against the use of terrorism as an instrument of Soviet policy, particularly the use of the threat of nuclear war by the Kremlin as a weapon to paralyze the United States and its Western allies' will to resist."

But McDonald had gone beyond fighting simple Soviet communism. He had discovered a spiderweb of hidden corridors that linked power brokers in Moscow with those in New York and Washington. This, in turn, made him a threat to the Establishment/international banking cabal. This put him at crossed swords with the Council of Foreign Relations and its international brethren of New World Order and One World Government proponents. In *The Rockefeller File*, authored by Gary Allen, McDonald wrote the foreword and railed against "the drive of the Rockefellers and their allies to create a one-world government, combining super-capitalism and communism under the same tent."

McDonald went on to establish his Western Goals Foundation, whose purpose was "to rebuild and strengthen the political, economic, and social structure of the United States and Western Civilization so as to make any merger with totalitarians impossible." It is probable that with his discovery of the shadow world of international finance and power brokers, and their goal of globalism and control of international relations, that he had gone too far. It is unlikely that the whole truth will ever be known, but one question will forever remain. Was KAL 007 misdirected over the island of Sakhalin so that an aerial ambush of Dr. Lawrence McDonald could be accomplished?

Since the original data was released and the first investigations were conducted, other information has surfaced. One FAA investigator who was working in Asia at the time discovered that the Japanese at the Tokyo radar site actually monitored the 747 below the 5000 foot level and saw it do something other than the official "crash in the ocean" version. According to them, they watched as the target turned toward Sakhalin Island, descended, and apparently landed on the island! Shortly after the attack, the Rome, Georgia office of Congressman McDonald received several calls from not only KAL officials, but from the FAA claiming they had evidence that the jet landed in Russian territory. One call was recorded by their office:

> "This is Duty Officer Orville Brockman at FAA Headquarters in Washington, D.C. We have just received information from our FAA representative, Mr. Dennis Wilham in Tokyo, as follows: He has been advised by the Japanese Civil Aviation Bureau headquarters, Air Traffic Division, Mr. Takano, T-A-K-A-N-O, who is his counterpart in Japanese aviation, as follows: *Japanese self-defense force confirms that the Hokkaido radar followed Air Korea to a landing in Soviet territory on the Island of Sakhalinska*, S-A-K-H-A-L-I-N-S-K-A, and it is confirmed by the manifest that Congressman McDonald was on board." [Emphasis mine][185]

This would explain many things, including the lack of bodies and wreckage, plus the Soviet fighter pilots not being able to locate a crash site on the water. It also would explain another cryptic event, an American reporter came out of Russia just prior to the publication of the *Izvestiya* series and stated that the series would reveal "that Moscow had ordered the bodies of the 269 victims destroyed in a local crematorium." That information did not later appear in *Izvestiya*. However, if the airplane had landed on the island safely and discharged its passengers, why would orders be given to "cremate the victims"?

Considering the fact that millions of Soviet citizens, prisoners of war, and political enemies and dissidents of the communist government have "disappeared" into Siberia in the past, would it be unusual for the Russians to "disappear" a few more embarrassing foreigners? Orders from Moscow for this event to happen might simply be: "Cremate the victims."

There are many other questions that deserve answers as well. First, how could a modern airliner, which was on a routine IFR (Instrument Flight Rules) flight under positive control of the international controllers have been permitted to stray several hundred miles off course without correction? Osipovich himself reported that "all the air traffic control services of foreign states said not a word...remained silent."

Second, why had not the RC-135, which was conveniently on location, ostensibly there to monitor a missile launch, notified either the KAL crew or the Japanese air control facilities of the 747's incursion into Soviet air space? Every military flight crew realizes all too well the consequences of flying too close to the Soviet Union, and the RC-135, which had radios on board that could monitor the Soviet frequencies, had the capability of relaying the critical information to both the KAL crew and the Japanese controllers. They also knew the Korean crew did not have this capability.

Third, what happened to the 747's navigation systems? Besides on-board radar, VOR and LORAN systems, there are inertial navigation positioning systems that are accurate within a kilometer. Had they failed? If so, why had not the Korean crew notified the ground stations?

Fourth, why did the experienced crew of KAL 007 manage to go over 200 miles off course without realizing it? The obvious answer is that they were directed to do so.

When flying IFR at night, the normal procedure is to be given a steer for a course line until further advised. As an example, such a transmission would be "KAL 007, maintain flight level three-five-zero, steer two-zero-five." Translated, this tells the pilot to maintain an altitude of 35,000 feet and fly a magnetic heading of 205 degrees. What had KAL 007 been told to do?

Lastly, what happened to the bodies?

Or the survivors?

Chapter 27

The Downing of Pan Am 103: Libyans, PLO or CIA?

On the cold, windy night of December 21st, 1988, the villagers of the quaint Scottish town of Lockerbie, Scotland heard a tremendous explosion. Those that were outside witnessed the sky light up with a billowing ball of fire high overhead. Within minutes huge pieces of bent and shredded aluminum wreckage impacted in and around the village, obvious bits and pieces of an airplane.

At first, the local constabulary and the British police logically assumed this event to be either the work of terrorists, who placed a bomb aboard the aircraft, a Boeing 747 Jumbo Jet designated Flight 103Cor a mechanical malfunction that ignited the fuel cells. With their extensive experience dealing with terrorists that range from the IRA to Middle-Eastern terrorist groups, most agreed it was a terrorist act.

The local emergency and police organizations organized quickly, with a command center being established within an hour of the incident by the Lockerbie police, and local residents and medical personnel gathering to form search teams. For that first hour everything appeared to be coming together logically.

But within the next hour things began to become very strange for the British participants in the search and investigative teams. Several things began to happen in various sections of the search area that were described by locals as "most unusual."

George Stobbs, a Lockerbie police inspector, remarked later "On the night I was...started to set up a control room, and by [between] eleven o'clock and midnight, there was a member of the FBI in the office who came in, introduced herself to me, and sat down, and just sat there the rest of the night. That was it."[186]

The unusual activity of this alleged "FBI" agent is striking, but not quite as odd as the fact that Lockerbie is over 350 miles from London, which is the nearest point an American FBI agent might be. To reach Lockerbie that night from London, even if traveling by air, would have taken far more than one hour considering the sequence of events that would have had to occur. Assuming a timely notification, an

American agent in London would have had to have been tracked down considering the late hour, notified to pack up for an investigation, rush to Heathrow, board a waiting airplane, fly immediately to the nearest airport that could land a jet transport, obtain ground transportation from there to Lockerbie, then locate the command center. An effort that would require four to six hours at the minimum.

Not a very likely scenario to occur in less than two hours of the blast.

A Pan Am security officer, interviewed at a later date, offered one piece to the puzzle regarding the rapid response: "As far as I can recall, there were about forty people, excluding crew, on board [the Pan Am VIP flight of personnel being sent to the Lockerbie crash site], of which I would estimate fifty percent were Pan Am people. The others, I wasn't aware of their affiliation at all."[187]

The questions at this point are: Who were these people, how did they get to the airport so quickly, where did they come from, why were they in England, and what was their mission?

After arrival in Lockerbie, the unidentified Americans began to behave in a bizarre manner. Instead of organizing to investigate the crash or assisting in the search in a manner consistent with normal routine, the "Americans" made themselves busy elsewhere.

Mr. Tam Dalyell, a member of the British Parliament, related "The local police force...they were concerned. Absolutely swarms of Americans [were] fiddling with the bodies, and shall we say tampering with those things the police were carefully checking themselves. They weren't pretending, saying they were from the FBI or CIA, they were just 'Americans' who seemed to arrive extremely quickly on the scene."

Dr. David Fieldhouse, the local police surgeon, reported a strange series of events in his sector: "I was asked to go to various locations in and around Lockerbie to look for bodies...we [then went] down one large field and identified about ten bodies. We thought we ought to retrace our steps and put some form of identification on them, and so, the only thing I had with me was a block of small white labels and one hundred or so plastic gloves which I carried at all times as part of my usual police surgeon duties. I put a code on every one, DCF-1 right through to fifty-eight. All the bodies in that particular sector. I learned later that when the bodies were taken to the mortuary, all the labels which had been put on them had been removed with the exception of two...but all the rest had been removed and discarded."

Someone appears to have been very intent on disrupting the investigation by obstructing and interfering with the search and recovery process. But who? And Why?

British journalist and Pan Am 103 researcher David Ben-Aryeah answered part of the puzzle: "Very strange people were at work very early on. Within a matter of three hours [after the crash] there were American accents heard in the town. Over that night there were large numbers, by which I mean twenty, twenty-five, thirty people arrived. The next day...there was a whole bevy of people walking down the main street with blue windbreakers and baseball hats with 'FBI' on them. But there were a lot of other Americans there who were in town who weren't wearing FBI windcheaters. I don't know who they were. I know who some of them were, and it certainly wasn't tourists."

Out at the crash site, as the sun rose, small pockets of Americans, keeping to themselves, wandered among the wreckage and strewn bodies, poking, looking, searching...for something. They had been there most of the night. As one searcher, a member of a mountain rescue team that arrived within two hours of the initial explosion, related: "We arrived within two hours. We found Americans already there. The British police and military who were there are still not speaking [about this]. Because of the Official Secrets Act, they are prohibited from speaking."

But Tam Dalyell, a member of Parliament who is very suspicious about the odd activities surrounding the Lockerbie incident, refuses to be shackled by "national security." He told interviewers working on the British documentary about the Lockerbie tragedy, *The Maltese Doublecross*, that "It was thought it was very odd and strange that so many people should be involved in moving bodies, looking at luggage, who were not members of the investigating force. What were they looking for so carefully? You know, this was not just searching carefully for loved ones. It was far more than that. It was careful examination of luggage and indeed bodies."[188]

And there was more to it than that. Someone was very concerned that Scottish searchers might find something before their own people could. One searcher, Eric Spofforth, told of a helicopter that circled his group for some time as they made their way through the wreckage: "This helicopter was overflying the area. A chap in it was looking at me out of the telescopic sight of a rifle. Probably some secret service man or other. It was a white unmarked helicopter, for all intents and purposes a civilian helicopter."

These unmarked helicopters continued their observations over the crash scene for days. Innes Graham, a local resident, reported that "These helicopters were landing just behind [my house], in the field, quite regular. It was constant, just every day for days on end flying over."

It became obvious to the British investigators at the scene that this was not just an aircraft bombing or terrorist investigation to many of the Americans who arrived so swiftly on the scene. It was something else. Something on the airplane that they were looking for. But what? What was so important about this flight, or the passengers, or what it carried that was of such interest to people who were obviously American "spooks"?

Three individuals that were on the scene or investigated later give three clues. David Ben-Aryeah noted that "The arc [of the wreckage] ran right around the crest of the hills overlooking where the cockpit fell. *There were a number of bodies which subsequently became of great interest to a lot of people.*" David Johnston, a radio journalist for Radio Forth, reported "I'd been told early on that the investigators believed the bomb had been taken onto the plane by a U.S. officer who had been seconded to military intelligence, and the bomb had been planted on him in Beirut."

Finally, there are stories of a large suitcase filled with heroin being recovered by the American searchers. A local farmer, Jim Wilson, told relatives of Pan Am 103 victims that he was there "when the drugs were found." According to *Private Eye* magazine, Wilson, of Tundergarth Farm near Lockerbie, "found a suitcase packed with drugs in one of his fields. He was worried the substances might harm his sheep and immediately informed the police. He was surprised that the police seemed to know the case was there and were under the impression that it had already been removed." When the drugs were discovered, a team of Americans rushed to the location in an all-terrain vehicle. Wilson noted that the Americans seemed extremely angry over the fact that the drugs had not been discovered earlier by their own personnel.

According to one constable who did not remain silent, the Scottish police had been told to keep an eye out for the drugs early on. He also mentioned that he had overheard the Americans say that there was a drug courier on the airplane, and heard a name: Khalid Jafaar.

In the months following the bombing of Pan Am 103 and the murder of its 270 passengers, the U.S. government broke the case. With a great deal of luck and more than a few fortunate coincidences, a searcher found a tiny bit of microchip in a wooded area that was turned in and recognized as something other than an airplane part.[189] This in itself is extremely interesting considering the amount of electronic parts aboard an aircraft that could have ruptured and scattered solid state circuit boards, microchips and other various electronic bits and pieces over the countryside. It is also interesting to note that the FBI does not have Boeing aircraft engineers or experts on staff that are capable of sorting through the debris and deciding what is and is not a part of an aircraft system. Yet, they managed to allegedly find and identify this part and determine it was suspicious. This one fingernail size piece of plastic is credited with being the key to the solution of the case.

According to the FBI, the laboratory determined the microchip to have been part of a timer built in Switzerland by a Swiss company named MEBO. The timer was sold to Libya, and two Libyan intelligence officers, Abdel Basset Al-Megrahi and Lamin Khalifah Fhimah, used it to construct a bomb inside a tape recorder, smuggle it into Malta, then put it in a suitcase filled with various Maltese clothes, transport it to the airport, tag it for the final destination of JFK international, then place it aboard an Air Malta airplane unaccompanied.[190] The bag then managed to fly to Frankfort, change planes (also unaccompanied), then fly to London, then take off again to explode over Lockerbie. How the FBI decided that Megrahi and Fhimah were the two responsible parties has never been satisfactorily explained. However, they were put on the wanted list, exposed to international media attention, and have not left the confines of Libya since, even though they have volunteered to surrender to an international court as long as it convened in any country other than the United States or the United Kingdom. Neither the U.S. or the U.K. have ever agreed to such a neutral location for trial.

To support the U.S. government's version of the sabotage are the statements of such people as CIA veteran Vincent M. Cannistraro who was an operations officer and director of intelligence on the National Security Council staff. Cannistraro stated: "The principle avenues [of the investigation] led to identification of a foreign role in an act of terrorism was forensic evidence recovered by the Scottish police at Lockerbie themselves. Investigators and townspeople on their hands and knees, crawling along the countryside, picking up minute bits of debris. And one of those bits of debris turned out to be a microchip, which was analyzed microscopically that led to the Libyan connection."[191]

The problem with this statement is that there was not a concrete chain of evidence for the microchip. At the time of the investigation no one had been identified as finding the piece. In fact, there were attempts to make people sign statements a year later saying they had found the microchip. One Scottish searcher, identified only as "Bobby," stated that two years after the bombing a Scottish police officer visited him and asked him to sign a statement: "I got a call from a policeman asking if he could come down to my home, and would I sign to say that I picked those [items] up. He brought with him three small bags about the size of an eight-by-five piece of paper, one of which contained an item of cloth, one of which contained a brown piece which looked very much like a piece of plastic, the third piece I couldn't tell what it was."

Could the "brown piece" have been the microchip?

The U.S. government position was also backed up by the findings of the FBI lab in Washington. According to Tom Thurman, FBI forensics expert, he made the identification of the microchip and tied it to the Swiss manufacturer. He remembered that "June fifteenth of 1990 was the day I made the identification. I knew at that point what it meant, because I was an investigator as well as a forensic examiner. I knew where that would go. At that point we had no conclusive proof of the type of timing mechanism that was used in the bombing of 103. When that identification was made at the time I knew we had it." Agent Thurman does not say, however, how he determined the microchip to not have come from one of the aircraft instrumentation systems, such as the autopilot, radios, clocks, or navigation devices.

According to the FBI, the identification of the chip led to a timer manufacturer in Zurich, Switzerland, the MEBO company. Edwin Bollier, the owner of the company, stated that "Scottish and American FBI officers came to Switzerland. They showed us a photograph of a fragment of a timer. They asked if it was a timer from the O-series...of the first series from our MST-13 timer. They explained that in 1986 two of these timers were confiscated in Dakar and later on in Senegal from two Libyans. I immediately recognized from the photo that the fragment found in Lockerbie was without a doubt from a timer that we ourselves had made."

It is interesting to note here that according to the FBI, they had in their possession two timing devices two years before the bombing of Pan Am 103. That would mean they had the interior components, including the microchips, long before the Lockerbie incident. Perhaps this could explain why the lab could identify such a chip. It might also explain other things, such as how a piece of such a chip ended up in the evidence. This last statement is not unreasonable considering Edwin Bollier's next revelation.

"In 1990 or 1991 I spent a whole week with the FBI because I wanted to see the actual fragment. Then they told me they didn't have it, that the Scottish police had it. So I spent a whole week with the Scottish police, but they refused to show me the piece. They only showed me a photograph." When Bollier asked the FBI to give him more information on the chain of evidence on the microchip, and to explain what was going on, he was told that "this could be explained. Three of his people had sworn that they had found this piece in a piece of a coat and had signed a paper to this effect. I later heard that it was the Scottish police who had found the piece in a shirt that came from Malta."

The FBI was essentially telling Bollier that they had agents in place in Scotland for two years as every piece of material was discovered, turned in, and examined. Then, the Scottish police stated that it was they who found the microchip. But then, it is extremely odd that they actually attempted to have a civilian searcher sign a statement two years after the event that he had found it.

The bottom line on the government story appears to be a smoke screen for what actually happened. The government version is basically that the Libyan government, Crazy Khadaffi, sent two of its intelligence officers to Malta to build a bomb, put it in a suitcase and tag it for JFK, then wait while the suitcase made its way through three countries, in the middle of the European winter when flights are often delayed or canceled due to weather, to explode in an American Jumbo Jet named "Maid of the Seas."

The problem is that there is another story that has begun to surface since that cold, blustery, fateful night in December, 1988.

On July 3rd, 1988, less than six months before the Pan Am 103 bombing, another large aircraft disaster occurred. On that day in the Persian Gulf, the U.S.S. *Vincennes*, an Aegis class frigate, identified an incoming bogey on its early warning radar scope. As the sailors watched, the blip continued to approach their ship from the direction of the Iranian coastline.

Fearing an attack by an Iranian F-14 fighter bomber, Captain Rogers, the skipper of the *Vincennes*, gave the order to man battle stations. As the klaxon echoed through the ship's compartments and sailors scrambled to their stations, the Aegis missile targeting system came to life.

The communications division of the *Vincennes* attempted to contact the inbound aircraft over and over, but there was no response. And when it continued in-bound and crossed into the danger area of missile launch, Rogers decided he had no choice but to protect his ship. He ordered weapons systems to fire. A few minutes later the aircraft, an Iranian A-300 Airbus filled with 290 civilian passengers and crew, plunged into the waters of the Persian Gulf.

The Iranians held America, who they considered "The Great Satan", responsible. And in their Islamic law, it was dictated what such an event had to be answered with "an eye for an eye."

Abulhassan Bani Sadr, who served as president of Iran from 1979 to 1981, remarked "It was a crime. The people of Iran saw this as a crime...shooting down an airplane, killing almost 300 people is a crime. The people of Iran have never forgotten. Had it involved any other country, there would have been legal proceedings. A lot of fuss would have been made all around the world. But here they destroyed the aircraft, and then congratulated themselves. They even gave a medal to the officer who fired the missile at the plane."

Pan Am 103 investigator Juval Aviv noted "After the downing of the Iranian aircraft by the *Vincennes*, everybody expected revenge. The Iranians had to, religiously, avenge what had happened. It was clear that they would teach the Americans a lesson that they can duplicate what the Americans had done to them. It was only a question of time where an American airplane would be downed in retaliation."

Aviv casts even more light onto an Iranian/Pan Am 103 connection by way of what covert intelligence agents call a "cut-out," or middle man. "Iran would never do it directly," said Aviv during an interview with the investigators for the documentary *The Maltese Doublecross*, "they would pay $10 million to a terrorist network that knew how to go about it and the contract was out. It was known at the time that the contract was out to down an American airliner."

The contract, known as a *Fatwa*, was issued to a group of the Syrian-based Popular Front for the Liberation of Palestine, General Command (PFLP-GC). The leader of this cell, one Ahmed Jibril, was a Syrian-backed terrorist who ran in the highest circles of Islamic terrorism. To him, it would serve three purposes. First, it would earn the PFLP-GC quite a sum of operational money. Second, it would be a major attack against the hated Americans. Finally, it would give him a great deal of stature in the terrorist underworld.

For this mission, Jibril established a special action cell in Neuss, Germany, near Frankfort. In this cell he provided everything his men would need to accomplish the mission, including one Marwan Abdel Razzack Khreesat, bombmaker extraordinaire. Khreesat's specialty, besides building small, but very powerful, bombs, was modifying and incorporating very sophisticated timing mechanisms. Some of his accomplishments included timers connected to altitude detonators. Such systems would allow an aircraft to become airborne, fly a given distance over time, then the bomb would arm and only detonate when the airplane reached a certain pre-selected altitude. Such a mechanism would work in a scenario such as the bomb being loaded onto the airplane in Frankfort, then not arming until the Jumbo Jet had made a stop at Heathrow, then resumed travel to the United States. The bomb would not arm until a given time, then would not detonate until the aircraft reached a given altitude. This would allow for the stop in London, then the resumption in travel. It would also explain why the bomb did not detonate over the Atlantic. The plane was delayed two hours at Heathrow.

All did not go well for the terrorists, however. They were detected in September of 1988 by the German BKA, or *Bundeskriminalamt*, the West German criminal police, during an operation called Operation Autumn Leaves.[192] A few weeks later, in October, seventeen people were arrested, including Khreesat. The Germans found massive amounts of weaponry, explosives, and timing devices. They also found a Toshiba radio/tape player with a plastic explosives bomb inside which "was designed to blow up an aircraft."[193]

Khreesat was taken in by the BKA and held for terrorist activities. They had more on him than most of the others, for they had intercepted an international call made by Khreesat to Damascus, Syria, in which he stated: "I have made some changes to the medicine. It is better and stronger."

But Khreesat evidently had connections in high places. He demanded to make one phone call from BKA headquarters, and then refused to answer any questions afterwards. Within a couple of hours he was mysteriously released and immediately flew to Damascus.

Former CIA agent Oswald Le Winter, who helped expose the inner workings of the affair to the media, gives us a clue concerning Khreesat's connections. "I had spoken to a German reporter who refuses to go on camera, but who is very close to federal intelligence sources in Germany, who assured me that Khreesat was an agent of the Jordanian service, and an asset of the Central Intelligence Agency." Le Winter also discovered that "pressure had come from Bonn...from the U.S. Embassy in Bonn...to release Khreesat."

The U.S. Embassy? Why would our government be interested in releasing a known terrorist bomb maker? During the course of his investigation, Juval Aviv discovered the fact that Khreesat not only served Jibril, but other terrorist networks as well. According to Aviv, "he [Khreesat] was also reporting his activities for years to Israel, Jordan, and some other countries intelligence departments." This may have included the CIA, and assuredly included the Israeli Mossad, who had infiltrators inside the PLO for years. The Israeli effort was so successful that it has been rumored that Abu Nidal himself is on the Israeli payroll, which is why he has never been picked up or assassinated by an Israeli Kidon hit team.[194]

In April, 1989, four months after the destruction of Pan Am 103, the BND raided an apartment in Neuss. Inside, they discovered three other Khreesat-manufactured bombs concealed in electronic devices. The Germans knew there was a fourth bomb, but it was not found. There were rumors of a fifth. And these bombs were so sophisticated that the top German bomb technician was killed trying to disarm one.

Amazingly, the German government would never request the extradition of Khreesat, and the Scottish police would never be permitted to talk to him. On top of this, the FBI interviewed Khreesat on November 12th and 13th, 1989, and never revealed the details of these interviews to the Scottish police. Later, an investigative journalist managed to interview Khreesat, who told him that he was a secret agent, had been sent to Germany on a mission, and had built airplane bombs for Jibril.

It appears that the U.S. government, or at least certain persons in the intelligence "community," knew in advance of the device and did nothing to stop it. In fact, as the story continues, certain American agents appear to have assisted the bombers. Another clue that the intelligence community knew what was going to happen are the facts that certain high ranking individuals from various governments were pulled from the plane. One example was a South African delegation which included South African president Peter Botha. The Botha party changed its flight booking at the last hour due to a warning from South African state security forces, who are closely aligned with two major intelligence sources, the Israeli Mossad, and the CIA.

Others also changed their mind about flying on Pan Am 103. According to one Pan Am security officer, "It subsequently came to me on further enquiries that they hadn't ignored [the warnings]. A number of VIPs were pulled off that plane. A number of intelligence operatives were pulled off that plane."

But these events have been successfully swept under the carpet in the official American government (FBI) version of events. According to the FBI, here is what happened: Libyan "strongman" Moammar Khadaffi, incensed over being bombed on the April 14, 1986 air raid on Tripoli airport, Bab al Azzizia barracks, Sidi Bilal naval base, Benghazi city, and Benine airfield, sent two of his intelligence officers to Malta to build a suitcase bomb. They then tagged the suitcase for JFK International airport in New York City, put the bomb aboard an Air Malta flight, then sat back to wait for the bomb to make its way through three countries, and their security measures, changing planes twice (Frankfort and London), to explode after the Pan Am jet left Heathrow and flew three hours over the Atlantic.[195]

To back up the findings of this "investigation," the U.S. government relied on its pre-programmed view of Khadaffi being a crazy out-of-control terrorist-supporting killer. CIA veteran Vincent Cannistraro developed a "Libya" policy that fit the National Security Council's desire to hold Khadaffi responsible for the majority of terrorist activities. Cannistraro is quoted in *The Maltese Double Cross*, "I developed the policy toward Libya. In fact, I even wrote the draft paper that was later adopted by the President."

Howard Teicher, the senior director of the NSC between 1985 and 1987, stated, "Mr. Cannistraro and myself were the coordinators of Libya policy within the NSC, and did have a direct role in coordinating the papers written by State, with input from the CIA, Department of Defense, and *other agencies that all had a role*." Were any of the "other agencies" perhaps the FBI?

Iran/Contra affair figure Lt. Col. Oliver North, working for the Reagan administration's NSC, paired up with Cannistraro in a program meant to destroy the Khadaffi regime. Coincidentally, Cannistraro later headed up the CIA's investigation into the bombing at Lockerbie. Cannistraro later recounted "The principle avenues that led to identification of a foreign role in an act of terrorism was forensic evidence recovered by the Scottish police...one of those bits of debris turned out to be a microchip, which was analyzed microscopically that led to the Libyan connection."[191]

It has never been satisfactorily explained how this "bit of microchip" led to Libya, verses Syria, or Iran, or Iraq or East Germany. And considering that this vital piece of evidence allegedly found away from the main crash site, in a densely wooded area, could have easily been planted, or shown up in the evidence chain later and simply tagged "found at such-and-such location," it makes this one piece of evidence very suspect. Especially considering the fact that no one seems to know exactly who found it, and at least one Scottish searcher was approached later to sign a statement that he was the finder, even though he wasn't.

Also, we find that dealing with Libya as a terrorist state was much more expeditious and less dangerous than dealing with other, far more dangerous, countries. Howard Teicher mentioned that "Vince was quite aware of what was going on in Syria, and of the Iranian dimension and the Iraqi dimension of their role in state-sponsored terrorism. What emerged in U.S. policy was the tendency to be able to most directly deal with Libya because of Libya's geographic proximity to Europe and the United states, as opposed to Iraq, Iran and Syria. It was much more difficult to deal with other countries."

It was also much more difficult to deal especially with Syria, the host country of the PFLP-GC headquartered in the Bekaa Valley, in the days leading up to the Gulf War. Syria was needed to help oust Saddam Hussein from Kuwait, and to blame Syria for involvement in the bombing would be a political disaster for the Bush administration.

But the Bush administration *did* know who did the actual bombing. Bush's Secretary of State James Baker visited Syria in 1989, six months after the Lockerbie disaster, and met with the Syrian foreign intelligence minister. At that meeting, Baker was reported to have asked:

> "What are you doing about the GLC group?"
>
> "What are you talking about," asked the intelligence minister.
>
> "Jibril," answered Baker. "We know they are responsible for Lockerbie. What are you doing about them?"
>
> "How do you know that?"
>
> "We have the evidence," answered Baker. "And the evidence is irrefutable."

Despite the fact that the U.S. government knew who was behind the bombing, official Washington put on a different face. Marlin Fitzwater, Whitehouse spokesman, announced to the press "...that the investigation has come to this [Libyan] conclusion is not a surprise. We are now actively considering what actions to take." Then the U.S. Attorney General, Robert Mueller, told the American public that "We have no evidence to implicate another country [other than Libya] in this disaster."

The British joined in the coverup with Douglas Hurd, British Foreign Secretary, releasing the news that "I understand the investigation has revealed no evidence to support suggestions of involvement of other countries." Lord Fraser, Lord Advocate of Scotland and head of the enquiry on Lockerbie, clinched the case when he stated that "the two accused are Abdel Basset Ali Muhammed Al-Megrahi, and Lamin Khalifah Fhimah."

With the exception of physically apprehending the villains, the case appeared to be closed. But was it?

It seems there was more to the case than a simple terrorist attack. What was not exposed to the press or the public at the time were the international drug smuggling and the American hostage connections.

In the Bekaa Valley, terrorist groups rub shoulders with heroin drug gangs. Often they are one in the same. According to Steve Donahue, an ex-US Drug Enforcement Administration undercover agent, "The heroin laboratories themselves were located in the Bekaa Valley. The major one is run by Jamil Hamiya who was the target of our investigation. [Jamil's activities were] a method for financing, at the first level, internal military activities within Lebanon. And at the second level, financing terrorist activities abroad."[196]

To this, FBI agent Oliver "Buck" Revell, who supervised the FBI investigation into the Lockerbie case, adds "Lebanon is a conduit for a great deal of drugs, and the organizations that are moving it through are at least supporting the movement, [and] are violent political organizations such as Hizbollah, the Iranian Revolutionary Guards, and now Hamas. They are directly connected with much of the drug trafficking through the area."[197]

In the Bekaa Valley, the Jafaar family sent one of their relatives, a boy named Khalid Jafaar, to Frankfort to stay with "friends," who would find him work in the United States then put him on a plane for America. What they did not know was that Khalid had been selected to perform a mission for the PFLP-GC. One of the members of the Jafaar family explained "Hourani family tell him 'we send you to Germany. From Germany you can go to America.' They give him this address. In Germany he stay with some friend. And what he [the friend] fix in his bag is the tape recorder. Hizbollah is behind Khalid [killing], what he done to him."

The family may or may not have known that Khalid was also taking a suitcase filled with heroin to the U.S., through a system that they thought was safe, but which in actuality was part of a DEA "controlled buy" network. Lester Coleman, U.S. Defense Intelligence Agency agent who was detailed to work with the DEA and CIA in the Lebanese-U.S. drug war, explained that "They could not eradicate the drugs in Lebanon, so they could only do two things: [one], monitor what was being produced and how it was being shipped out, and two; use DEA informants from Lebanon in drug sting operations back in the United States to set up drug buys and catch drug buyers in the U.S. That was a big part of what they were doing...It was arranged by the DIA for me to go over to work for the DEA in this Narcotics

Operations Group, headed by Michael T. Hurley, the country attaché. And my main responsibility was to gather intelligence in Lebanon relating to opium production and trafficking and that kind of thing."

The operation was simple. Paid DEA informants would notify the DEA teams when a suitcase shipment would leave Lebanon, the routing, and the description of the courier. The DEA would in turn make sure the courier and heroin would, by means of paid double agents and "in the know" customs agents who worked at the various airports and airlines baggage facilities, travel unmolested between destinations. After the drugs reached the U.S. they were tracked to the recipient, who was at the top of the distribution chain in this country.

Juval Aviv explained that "At least once or twice a week a courier would carry a brown Samsonite suitcase full of drugs from Cypress to Frankfort, where an arrangement in Frankfort with a baggage handler would switch the suitcase with a similar suitcase full of clothing. The suitcase would then go through the security system...then be switched by one of the Pan Am employees...back to the one with drugs. Then it would go on board the airplane, would arrive at Kennedy, and would be picked up. It would then be sold on the local market."[198]

During this time frame another political crisis was underway. Six Americans had been taken hostage in Beirut and were being held in the terrorist underground. The Reagan administration became obsessed with gaining the release of these prisoners, whether by bribery or by force. Besides attempting to gain their release by means of bribery through the Iranians, who supported and exerted a great deal of influence on Hizbollah, other plans were made as well.[199] One of these plans incorporated a military hostage rescue by a team of Delta Force personnel under a Major Charles D. "Chuck" McKee.

But as it turned out, Major McKee was extremely anti-drug. When he discovered that he would be working hand-in-glove with drug smugglers in the hostage rescue efforts, he refused to go through with the mission. Instead, he took his team out of Beirut to Cypress, where he had his commo man notify Washington that he would be returning to the States with his team, complete with all travel details, and would tell them what was going on when he got there. In other words, he was going to blow open the Mid-East international drug smuggling aspect of U.S. government operations in the Iran/Contra affair.

According to *The Maltese Double Cross*, "The DEA was watching McKee, separately telexing McKee's final travel arrangements to the CIA's Director of Operations in Washington, MI-6 (the British Secret Service), and SPAG (The CIA's Special Action Group) in Germany with overall control of the drugs-for-intelligence operation. Every spook in Europe knew that McKee was flying back on December 21st."

Traveling with McKee on his leg from Frankfort to London, then on to JFK, was Matthew Kevin Gannon, the CIA deputy station chief for Beirut, who was also evidently going to back up McKee's claims. According to a taped telephone conversation between ex-CIA agent Oswald Le Winter and a former colleague, taped after Le Winter left the CIA, the bomb went on board the "Maid of the Seas" in Frankfort, assisted by CIA operatives:

Le Winter: "Are you there?"
Confidential Contact: "Yeah."
LW: "How are ya?"
CC: "Pretty good. Where you calling from?"
LW: "I'm in Wiesbaden. I just got in to Frankfurt, from the airport. Just thought I'd chill out here for the night."
CC: "Are you alone?"
LW: "Of course I'm alone. You don't think I'd be asking you questions with someone around?"
CC: "Hold on. [tone in background of recording device]Hello?"
LW: "Now tell me where you were."
CC: "[tone] Okay.
LW: "What's that?"
CC: "I just turned it off. It was being taped. What the f__k do you want to know this for? You mean the Special Action Group in Wiesbaden?"
LW: "Yeah, yeah. I mean, you're retired from there now, but your still doing, what?, consulting work, right?"
CC: "Sure."
LW: "Alright, now look. Does the name Khalid Jafaar mean anything to you?
CC: "Yeah."
LW: "Who is that?"
CC: "He's a local guy, man, you know who he is."
LW: "What do you mean 'local guy?"
CC: "Come on."
LW: "Who does he have to do with?"
CC: "He's the Lockerbie man."[200]
LW: "Okay. Now, when he came to Germany in '88, who met him? Who met him at the plane? Naw, when he was taken back to get on the plane to leave the country, who took him through security?"
CC: "Oh, we did. Some of my men took him out. We took him on the plane and turned him over to Gannon."
LW: "You mean Gannon was his keeper on the plane?"
CC: "That's right."
LW: "No s__t!"
CC: "That's right. First class. That big mother____r sitting right up there."[201]

Upgrading to First Class after changing planes to Pan Am 103 at Heathrow was Major Chuck McKee. Linda Forsyth, Pan Am ground hostess at Heathrow remembered McKee "...because he asked me for an upgrade. He had a certificate for a program we were running at that time, and I moved his class. He was pleased, which struck up a rappoire over that short period of time. Then later another gentleman came in, which I found out was Mr. Gannon."[202]

At 7:02 p.m., on Wednesday, December 21st, 1988, Pan Am 103Cthe Clipper *Maid of the Seas*, had reached 31,000 feet on a northwesterly course across Britain. One minute later, over the Scottish village of Lockerbie, almost to the coastline, a bomb exploded aboard the 747. The combination of airspeed, depressurization, and failure of structural integrity caused the Jumbo Jet to virtually shred itself to pieces as it plummeted to the ground.

We have already seen that after the tragedy many curious things happened on the ground during the search of the crash scene and identification of bodies and luggage by the authorities. But one oddity that bears mentioning at this point is a very odd detail that most historians have failed to examine.

Dr. Fieldhouse, who was searching an area near the church, mentioned that "I identified several bodies, amongst those were McKee...*I knew that McKee was absolutely correct because of the clothing which correlated closely with the other reports and statements, and the computers that were linked up to Washington.*"[203]

How did the computers in Washington know exactly what McKee wore as he boarded the fateful flight? The only way was for it to be reported by someone on a special surveillance mission whose job was to do just that. But why?

Also of note is a paragraph concerning the victims in the Interfor, Inc. report [Juval Aviv, working for Pan Am] which states "At least five passengers were CIA: Beirut Dep. Station Chief Matthew Gannon, agents Ronald Lariviere, Daniel O'Connor and Bill Leyrer, and U.S. Army major Charles McKee, assigned temporarily to CIA. They had flown in from Cyprus to connect with Flight #103. Four U.S. Air Force scientists with secret documents were reportedly on the flight. CIA agents quickly arrived at the crash site and acted very strangely and nervously in securing the CIA passengers' luggage."

Investigative journalist David Ben-Aryeah also mentioned the unusual events that occurred around certain bodies: "There were a number of bodies which subsequently became of great interest to a lot of people. Charles McKee, a very brave man, an expert on counter-terrorism, was found just off on the ridge...Matthew Gannon, an intelligence officer...Captain Curry, Special Forces, who according to his memorial was killed in the line of duty. We've never found out what that line of duty was. There were some very strange people whose backgrounds have never really been clarified."

One thing was for sure. Neither Special Forces Major Charles "Chuck" Mckee and his team, nor CIA station chief Matthew Gannon ever had a chance to tell "Washington" what concerned them.

The destruction of Pan Am 103 that icy December night appears to have accomplished three major objectives: The Iranians got revenge for the shootdown of the A300 Airbus; the international drug smuggling and arms-for-drugs network remained intact; and the Libyans received the blame.

And the coverup continues.

Chapter 28

Gander: The Crash of Arrow Air 950JW

By 6:15 a.m., on December 12, 1985, it was still pitch dark in Gander, Newfoundland. The winter months in this near-arctic area cause the days to be short and the nights long. For some on this morning, there would never again be another dawn.

At that moment, two Canadian truck drivers, Cecil Mackie and Leonard Loughren, were pushing their big rigs along the Trans-Canadian Highway near the Gander airport when they noted something very odd happening in the dark night sky. Cecil Mackie recalled later that he watched as a large plane flew low overhead, apparently taking off from the Gander runway only 1,000 feet away, and: "...there was a flame on the bottom" of the aircraft, which was so bright that it illuminated the inside of his cab. Mackie, giving a witness report to Canadian authorities, explained that he was positive he saw flames, not just landing lights.

Leonard Loughren saw the airplane at a different angle at approximately the same time. He reported to Doreen Harty of the Royal Canadian Mounted Police that "I think the right side of the aircraft was afire. It was pitch-dark and I could see the tail and parts of the plane from the glow."

A car rental agent named Judith Parsons watched from the parking lot at the airport as the airplane, a four-engine DC-8 belonging to a little-known American firm named Arrow Air, lifted from the runway then disappear into the night as it began its climb. A few seconds later she saw a flash, followed by "a large orange oval object" moving through the sky. It then "blew up, it just went into a million pieces...It was definitely not on the ground." A few seconds later she witnessed a huge fireball erupt in the distance, on the ground.[204]

What these people had witnessed would become one of the greatest aviation disasters of the decade, and one of the least investigated. Even more than Pan Am 103, which occurred almost exactly three years later, the tragic end of Arrow Air 950JW would be swept under the political carpet and buried in layered bureaucracies. The fact that the investigation was a coverup is uncontestable, for the "reason" of the crash that eventually was released to the public was that the airplane failed to go through de-icing procedures, took off with too much ice on the wings, and crashed because it was overweight and entered a fatal stall. Case closed. The problem is that the witnesses and evidence indicate otherwise. But what really caused the airplane to catch fire in midair, and why a coverup?

To understand the series of events that led up to the destruction of the Arrow Air DC-8, one must understand the international political environment of the time. America had lost its main political ally in the Persian Gulf, the Shah of Iran, and had gained a new fanatic enemy in the person of Ayatollah Khomeini. Israel and Egypt were on the verge of war, and American citizens had been taken hostage in Lebanon by an extremist terrorist organization known as the Islamic Jihad (whose sub-organization is the Iranian-backed Hizbollah, or "Party of God").

In an attempt to contain events in the middle east and Persian Gulf, then-president Ronald Reagan dispatched both military and CIA personnel to the region. Marines and CIA officers went to Beirut, where a show of force was supposed to intimidate the Bekaa Valley-based Hizbollah and Islamic Jihad, while a force of soldiers from the 101st Airborne Division, based in Fort Campbell, Kentucky, was dispatched to the Sinai Desert to participate in what had been designated "Multinational Force and Observers" (MFO). The mission of the MFO was to support U.N. activities in the Egyptian Sinai in a buffer zone between the Egyptians and the Israelis. Their job was to conduct reconnaissance patrols, man observation posts along the international boundary, and set up checkpoints for border crossings.

Though the mission was to have been peaceful, the 101st found itself targets on several occasions for hostile activities of the Shiite Moslem Islamic Jihad. Meanwhile, the Marines in Beirut fared even worse at the hands of this same group when they became victims of a truck bomb at their airport barracks at Beirut International Airport. In that attack, an Islamic Jihad fanatic drove a flat-bed Mercedes truck stacked with 12,000 pounds of high explosive, surrounded by cylinders of compressed butane gas, into the front door of the building. The huge explosion caused the entire structure to collapsed, killing 241 Marines. This attack followed an earlier attack by the same group that set off a truck bomb at the U.S. Embassy in Beirut, killing 17 Americans and 40 other nationals. Islamic Jihad also claimed responsibility for the June 14, 1985 hijacking of a TWA jetliner enroute from Athens to Rome; kidnapping 57-year-old William Buckley, the CIA station chief in Lebanon, and twelve other hostages; and numerous other terrorist attacks.

As these attacks continued, the Islamic Jihad announced that there would be more in retaliation for Israeli incursions into southern Lebanon and American interference in the Middle East, not to mention military and financial support for Israel. In one communication an anonymous caller boasted that these attacks would no longer occur only in the Middle East, but would "be aimed at every Zionist, American or reactionary establishment in various parts of the world." He followed this with the threat that future operations would be "immediate, surprising and lightning."[205]

It was under this cloud of international terrorist threats that the 101st Airborne troopers of MFO in the Sinai were withdrawn from peacekeeping duty. For them it was none too soon. They would be exchanging a foreign desert for the hearths of home in Fort Campbell, just in time for Christmas.

But moving a large number of troops out of an operational area consists of more than simply boarding airplanes at the airport, especially when they are scattered throughout an operational area among remote outposts. There was the question of equipment, personal baggage, staging troops and gear, and ground movement to the airlift point. In the case of the Sinai troops, the air transport out of the desert was limited to a couple of small Egyptair 737s, which could not hold the troops with their luggage and the piles of unit equipment. Because of this the gear and baggage traveled by truck from their base camp at Sharm El Sheik to Cairo, where it caught up with the troops the next day. It was then loaded aboard a waiting civilian air contract carrier, a DC-8 owned by Arrow Air of Miami, Florida, for the long flight home.[206]

It was during this stage of the movement that unusual things were noted. Though customs officers from both Egypt and the U.S. searched all baggage and equipment containers at Sharm El Sheik, then sealed the containers on the trucks, the trucks left a full day early and spent the night at the airport at Cairo with only two American soldiers as guards. Then at 4:00 p.m. on December 11th, the truck drivers took over the guard detail so that the soldiers could prepare to depart.

At about 8:00 p.m. that evening, American officers broke the seals on the trucks and gave the order to load the baggage compartments. The loading was conducted not by American soldiers, but by a local Egyptian company contracted as baggage handlers at the airport. It was during this time that the Arrow Air pilot, Captain Arthur Schoppaul, noted something odd. The Egyptian guard, who was supposed to guard the baggage and aircraft, disappeared from his post several times, sometimes for as long as an hour. Then, during one of these absences, Schoppaul witnessed a fist fight break out near a baggage hold between some of the "Egyptian" loaders. This was highly unusual as Arabs almost never touched each other, and to most investigators it appeared to be a diversion. Then there was a period of time when the electricity was cut to the ramp and the lights went out, leaving the area in total darkness.

The next unusual thing that occurred happened after the cargo holds had been loaded. Still sitting on the ramp were the duffel bags of 41 soldiers, personal gear that would not have been left behind under any normal circumstance. But on this flight the bags had been "bumped," because there was other cargo that joined the battalion's gear in the Sinai base camp and took precedent in Cairo, several large wooden crates the size of coffins. These mysterious boxes must have taken priority, for the battalion commander, Lieutenant Colonel Marvin Jeffcoat, ordered the already loaded duffel bags removed to make room for what he described as "very important military material." Also odd is the fact that one of the twenty "mystery boxes" had not been transported to the airport by truck with the other gear, but had flown to Cairo in the hold of one of the 737s that brought the troops out of the desert. No one knows exactly where this box was kept after the 737s were offloaded and the rest of the gear was still being transported by truck from the Sinai.

Even more mysterious is the fact that numerous investigators have attempted to discover the contents of the mystery boxes, but no records or manifest exists in army records that even mention their existence.

After departing Cairo, the Arrow Air flight arrived at Cologne, Germany, for refueling at 1:21 a.m. It was on the ground for almost two hours while the troops changed uniforms (and the baggage holds were opened and left unguarded). At 3:20 a.m. it took off for the long leg across the Atlantic to Gander, the next refueling stop.

The weather in Gander was typical for December. It was overcast, and precipitation consisting of spitting snow and freezing rain cut the visibility to minimums. The airplane landed without incident, refueled and taxied for the runway at 5:40 a.m. Gander time. Five minutes later it was rotating for takeoff. Sixty seconds later witnesses watched in horror as the big airplane dove, on fire, into the woods near the shore of Gander Lake.

David Owen, a former Canadian bush pilot-turned-senior-investigator for the Canadian Air Safety Board, along with Department of Transport pilot George Dewar, arrived in Gander four hours after the crash. But before landing, they located the site and circled it to check the impact pattern and extent of ground damage from the air. What struck Dewar was that they could not identify an airplane crash as such, only a field of burning debris. Owen's participation in the investigation was short-lived, but before he was replaced by investigators from headquarters, he managed to send out the first official memo on what would become Canada's worst aviation disaster:

"JW950 [sic] crashed shortly after departure. No apparent survivors. Aircraft departed Rwy 22. Disappeared below the line between TCH and Gander Lake. Aircraft exploded on contact near the edge of Gander Lake."

It was short and to the point. But it failed to take into account the observations of the witnesses concerning an airborne fire prior to the crash. That would come later, but would still not figure in the final "official" versions of the reports regarding the crash released by both Canada and the U.S.

By 3:00 p.m., A U.S. Army major general named John Crosby arrived with a contingent of military personnel to "assist" the RCMP and the CASB in their efforts. Shortly after his arrival several members of the NTSB and FBI arrived. But before they could entrench themselves in the investigation they were advised by Canadian authorities that they had no jurisdiction there, and that the investigation would be accomplished by Canadian officials. Though agitated, the U.S. officials agreed to bide by the Canadian findings as they awaited the outcome from hotel rooms in Gander. Even though Americans were the victims, and the airplane was of American registry, the FBI remained strangely content to await the outcome of the Canadian investigation without more than token protest.

One caveat did occur regarding the bodies. Any blood and serum toxicology tests conducted had to be performed in Canada and the results sent back to the U.S. The American government agreed to this and awaited transport of the bodies to Dover Air Force Base, New Jersey.

What happened next would be a matter of contention for years. General Crosby ordered the immediate bulldozing of the crash site! No effort was made to reassemble the wreckage, which is standard procedure, nor preserve the site for future, more detailed investigation. Instead, the "crime scene" was destroyed as soon as American officials gained possession of it. Crosby was in touch with Canadian officials in Gander regarding the cleanup of the crash site, and according to witnesses, insisted that "a representative of the Army be present at all times."

Instead of a detailed investigation of the wreckage, conducted by attempting to reassemble the myriad bits and pieces of airplane to determine if there was a mechanical malfunction or sabotage, which is standard operating procedure, the evidence was covered up with little more than a hasty look-see by officials. The only hard evidence examined were the bodies.

Colonel Robert McMeekin, director of the Armed Forces Institute of Pathology, received notification of the crash at 6:30 a.m. on December 12th. He immediately began packing and by 3:30 p.m. that afternoon arrived at Gander airport. The RCMP, under a Memorandum of Understanding between the two governments, permitted Col. McMeekin access to the crash site for purposes of recovering the bodies of the victims for shipment to Dover for identification. It was at Dover that the bodies would be examined, their fluids drawn for toxicology, x-rays would be taken, and identification made.

During the Dover examinations, x-rays revealed that none of the bodies appeared to have any internal indication of pre-impact damage due to explosion, and that all had died as a result of "plane crash." The problem with this finding is that it is a blanket ruling that is not acceptable in a court of law. The cause of death is always determined on an individual basis, such as "broken neck," "fractured cranium," "myocardial infarction," etc. In this case, no individual autopsy "cause of death" was recorded for each victim.

Then more problems arose when the toxicology reports came back from Canada. Dr. David Elcombe, director of the Canadian Aviation Safety Board, released the findings that conflicted with the American ruling. According to the Canadian tests on the blood of the victims each had high levels of carbon monoxide poisoning. Only by breathing smoke for an extended period, from two to five minutes, could such levels be reached. This indicates that the plane, which went down in less than one minute, and burned for hours, obviously held live victims inside that were still alive until they asphyxiated or burned to death. Another observation proves that the fire actually started in flight, filling the cabin with smoke, *before* the plane impacted with the ground. Many of the victims bodies which held high levels of carbon monoxide had been found *decapitated*! This trauma could only have occurred upon impact, not in the air. Therefore, they had ingested the gas prior to impact, revealing the plane was on fire when it went down. So much for the "icing" theory.

On June 20th, 1986, Dr. Elcombe sent a memo to Dr. McMeekin stating: "Some of the carbon monoxide and hydrogen cyanide values are striking...and I look forward to meeting with you...to consider their significance." The outcome of such a meeting, if one was indeed held, has not been reported.

There had to be something else that worried the military and the government besides an on-board fire as the cause. Simply trying to hide the fact that something went wrong while the plane was airborne would not justify such extreme measures in covering up the cause of the crash as burying the wreckage without detailed investigation, or trying to hide the cause of death of the 248 servicemen and women. The answer has to lie in the mission of the 3rd Battalion, 101st Airborne, and their mysterious boxes and "add-on" personnel.

It has been speculated by various investigators that the boxes loaded in the hold contained items ranging from HAWK missile system parts rejected by the Iranians during the Oliver North/Bill Casey Iran/Contra dealings, to dead members of a failed hostage rescue attempt by Delta Force. What is known is that twenty members of the elite Task Force 160 were also on board the flight. TF-160, based in Fort Campbell, is the Army's special operations aviation battalion tasked with support of not only Special Forces, but Delta Force and CIA. Dubbed "The Night Stalkers," TF-160 has a huge budget that permits them to have virtually any piece of equipment they want. Items ranging from night vision equipment to exotic weapons to just about every helicopter in military inventory are at the beck and call of the group. Hauling paratroopers around the desert during U.N. operations are not what TF-160 would be deployed to accomplish. Their missions are much more serious, more specialized, more secret.

Paired up with Delta Force, TF-160 would be the air support unit that would participate in any hostage rescue attempt. For this mission they would not only ship their helicopters and support equipment across the Atlantic in C-5A Galaxy aircraft, but would box up and take any specialized equipment, especially that which would give away the mission or current technology, in sealed containers that would stay with the personnel as they went through their movement stage. This would include weapons and explosives. Could it be that TF-160 and Delta Force were using the 101st base camp as a jumping off point for commando operations in the vicinity? Or possibly simply linking up with them for the return home after their secret mission was accomplished or aborted?

Lt. Col. Oliver North had been negotiating with the Iranians for several months regarding their "assistance" in convincing the Jihad terrorists to release hostages in Lebanon. Most of this "negotiating" revolved around arms shipments to Iran consisting of TOW anti-tank missiles from the European "Reforger" stocks and HAWK anti-aircraft missiles. But when the HAWKs arrived, the Iranian technicians determined that they were an outdated model, not dependable, and not up to engaging some of the latest generation of Russian jets supplied to the Iraqis. The Iranians were extremely upset, feeling that North and his Israeli contacts had betrayed them and tried to cheat them. North had to agree to take the missiles back and replace them with newer, updated models. It is not known outside of the most inner circles where the old HAWKs and their spare parts went. Could they have been what were in the boxes?

The Iranians, however, felt they had to teach the Americans a lesson. According to the Islamic law, something had to be done in revenge that was much greater than the original "crime." North knew this, and when told that the Islamic Jihad might condemn some or all of the hostages to death, remarked that the deaths of the hostages would be our "minimum losses."

Realizing this, did North plan a covert hostage rescue attempt? If so, is it possible that he knew exactly where the hostages were located? Or was he relying on the CIA/Bekaa Valley heroine connections to provide unreliable intelligence?

If a hostage rescue attempt had indeed occurred, but failed, did the boxes contain the remains of those killed during the attempt? Would these make up the "maximum losses"? If this was the scenario, then an Islamic Jihad retribution for the rescue attempt, committed on our withdrawing troops by planting a Marwin Khreesat-type bomb in the 101st's baggage, might have been the answer. It must be remembered that the Pan Am 103 bomb managed to be put on the aircraft in Frankfort, take off, fly to Heathrow, land, change planes, then take off to become armed at a given time, past a given altitude as the airplane climbed for the skies over the Atlantic. A similar device would have accomplished the same mission on Arrow Air, without having to change planes. A simple timer permitting a pre-set number of hours of flight time would have done the trick.

Had the Arrow Air flight been on time, the airplane would have caught fire or exploded on its approach to Fort Campbell, sending a terrible message to the "infidels" of America.

Whatever the actual reason Arrow Air 950JW flamed out of the sky at Gander, Newfoundland, on that cold December morning, the official version is a lie.

Chapter 29

Fire On The Water: TWA 800

A controller working Departure Control at John F. Kennedy International Airport saw it first: something on the radar screen that shouldn't be there. Near the "target" blip of a TWA 747 that had just taken off from JFK a few minutes before, which now winged its way over the Atlantic paralleling the coast as it climbed toward its cruising altitude, was another blip. The controller examined the scope, wondering if there was another aircraft in the area that might pose a hazard to the TWA jet since the secondary target was not "squawking" a transponder code, which meant it was not under control of any air control facility, and it seemed to be moving rapidly toward the big transport as the big Boeing joined its designated course for Paris.

Then, before any more analysis could take place in the FAA control room, something happened to the tiny double-bar radar blip that was designated TWA flight 800.

The coastal residents of East Moriches, Long Island, first noticed something in the sky when there was a sound that some later described as "fireworks" over the ocean. Looking up, many noticed that there was a small glowing ball of reddish-orange light high over the ocean. Closer examination showed it to be an airplane. But something was wrong with it.

As they watched, they saw the small glow become engulfed by a huge fireball. Then, what was curiosity at first rapidly became a state of shock for some and horror for others as the airplane seemed to break up into two large flaming "comets" and fall for several horrifying seconds until it hit the surface of the ocean. Many could not believe what they had just witnessed, but the lake of fire that floated on the surface of the sea proved that the nightmare was reality.

Hundreds of witnesses along the shoreline and in boats later reported what they had seen. A fisherman recalled that when he looked up what he saw "...started off like a little ball, like a flare. It came down for a few seconds and all of a sudden burst into flames, a big ball of flame."

An unidentified man said that he "...saw a big fireball with pieces coming off of it. I heard two big explosions, like two big firecrackers going off."

A New York Air National Guard colonel flying a C-130 nearby caught the 747 just after the second explosion. He reported that he witnessed "...two large orange fireballs. They looked like comets, coming straight down into the water."

An unidentified woman interviewed by reporters saw more: "There was a loud explosion, which was followed by a fireball. The plane literally dropped out of the sky...and it hit the ocean, sort of like the space shuttle [Challenger] did, and there were five more explosions."

Vic Fehner, a fisherman, said "it started off like a little ball, like a flare. It came down for a few seconds and all of a sudden burst into flames, a big ball of flame."

Jason Fontana, who was standing at John Scott's Raw Bar in Westhampton Beach, saw "a big fireball with pieces coming off of it. You heard two big explosions, like two big firecrackers going off."

Craig Squires, surfing when the plane blew up: "I looked up and saw a trail of fire, and then it disappeared, and I heard an explosion.

Finally, Eileen Daly, a local resident, summed up what many saw and felt when she said, "My first reaction is fireworks, then 'Oh my God, it's an airplane.'"

Almost immediately boats began racing toward the impact area, which was easily marked by a virtual lake of fire as tons of fuel burned on the surface of the water. Residents raced to their telephones and began dialing police, the fire departments of the various beach towns, ambulances, and the Coast Guard. At the same time radio calls began to fill the air waves requesting assistance in search and rescue operations. Like any accident scene, no one seemed to know exactly what had happened, but everyone began trying to do what they could to notify authorities to lend help.

Among the first of hundreds of rescue craft, airplanes, ships and helicopters to reach the site was a U.S. Coast Guard plane practicing search-and-rescue operations nearby, whose pilot witnessed the horrific crash and immediately circled the area, identifying the wreckage and reporting back to his commanders.

Two other aircraft quickly joined the search: an Air National Guard C-130 that had been conducting a "flare dropping exercise" nearby, and ostensibly was the same C-130 whose crew that witnessed the tragedy, and a U.S. Navy P-3 Orion submarine hunter who reportedly heard the radio traffic regarding the explosion and offered to assist.

Rescue craft began arriving immediately, consisting mainly of boat-owning local residents, fishermen and Coast Guard cutters. According to media reports "six Coast Guard helicopters and cutters" joined the search, and throughout the night other vessels arrived to lend assistance in searching for victims, recovering bodies, and eventually recovering wreckage.

By the next morning, Thursday, July 18, 73 bodies had been pulled out of the water. Unlike KAL-007, where no bodies were recovered, many were found floating in the area, none of which wore a life jacket! Many of the bodies had been badly burned, some beyond recognition.

One private boat that arrived early on the scene found among the debris a yellow TWA life vest, inflated and buckled...but no body. According to Jimmy Vaccaro, who hooked the empty jacket into his boat, "It was inflated and it was buckled. These things don't light and inflate by themselves, you have to pull on it or blow through the tube." The reference to a "light" may be to a strobe light attached to the vest that had been activated. This discovery lended credence to an observation that some of the passengers had time to reach for life jackets before they died, but not enough time to put them on. Evidently one such individual inflated the jacket before trying to pull it on, or the CO2 cartridge activation lanyard had somehow snagged on something after being pulled from under the seat and inflated before the jacket could be donned.

The Coast Guard said none of the bodies recovered wore life preservers, suggesting that the explosion came without warning and there was no time to pull out life vests before impact.

As fishermen and other local residents helped recover the bodies of the victims, a temporary morgue was set up near the beach near the little town of East Moriches close to the crash site. As this was being accomplished, local officials cautioned residents to report any wreckage or bodies washing ashore in the next day or so, but not to touch anything that may serve as evidence that could explain what made the jumbo jet suddenly disintegrate into the darkness.

Of note regarding the wreckage and flotsam that was being found along the beach was a special notification from federal officials on the 18th that if anyone came upon any boxes on the beach, not to open or tamper with them because there were two boxes of AIDS-infected blood *unaccounted for*. No one in the media seemed to ask the sources why anyone would be shipping AIDS-infected blood anywhere, nor was this event followed up on later. In fact, only a short mention was made in the media when CNN aired the statement of a pool reporter who was aboard a Coast Guard 33-foot rescue boat who said that the boat crew retrieved several State Department pouches and seven packages that were labeled as HIV-infected blood (Biohazard), plus instructions on how to use the blood to infect children! Though these alleged "instructions" were not displayed on camera, it should be noted that one of the victims on the flight was the son of the president of a French pharmaceutical firm, Merieux, who is one of the leading researchers in AIDS. It is also pertinent to note that this same firm had earlier been accused of desiring to use unwilling human test subjects, including military personnel, as guinea pigs for their vaccine experiments. None of this seemed to trigger questions in the national media regarding the finding of the blood. The crash itself was the story.

Almost immediately a media feeding frenzy ensued concerning the cause of the explosion. The major networks scurried about, madly racing to interview any think tank or terrorism "expert" they could find. As a sample, among the interviews conducted and broadcast nationwide to explain what "probably" happened were:

James Donoghue, editor-in-chief of *Air Transport Magazine*, who said "It's got the hallmarks of a bombing, but it could be all kinds of things. Of the number of 747s that have descended in flames, the vast majority have been because of bombs."

Michael Barr, director of aviation safety programs at USC, spoke against mechanical failure when he stated: "Airplanes don't blow up just like that. I've been following 747s since 1970 and I've never seen one blow up like that."

Robert McGuire, president of Kroll Associates of New York, a highly regarded consulting and security firm, and former NYPD police commissioner, who obviously had not heard the eyewitness statements regarding the "small glow" that preceded the huge fireball, said, "The nature of the incident appears to be traumatic explosion. There were no reports of a burning engine, smoke or the normal stuff that happens to these planes before an accident. Because there was no transmission back to the tower, there seems to have been immediate or overwhelming trauma."

Philip Stern, the managing director of the Fairfax Group, hinting he suspected possible terrorist involvement, mentioned that the original departure point of Athens, where the TWA jet had flown into JFK from, was "troublesome" to him. Athens, according to Stern, has long been known to act as a gateway to the Middle East, and Greece has a history of "radical politicians sympathetic to Middle Eastern causes."

Robert Kupperman, senior advisor to the Center for Strategic and International Studies in Washington and well-known terrorism expert, said that he noted several pieces of evidence that made him believe that this was a likely terrorist bombing. He said the signs indicating a terrorist incident were: All of the eyewitnesses describing a fireball and subsequent explosion; it was a U.S. aircraft enroute to Europe; terrorists in late June attacked a U.S. military facility in Saudi Arabia; and the Summer Olympic Games were starting two days later in Atlanta.

Jack Barker, retired FAA spokesman, said that it was quite likely a bomb, but "You don't want to speculate about what has happened until the NTSB and the FBI have made their investigation, but it certainly is reminiscent of the Lockerbie explosion and in the realm of speculation. The explosion in the air, the fire, there had to be some kind of ignition in the air, and that could be caused by only a very few things. A bomb being on board could be one of them. The other has already been ruled out by the FAA, a collision with another aircraft. Aside from those two things, for anything else to cause an explosion would be very, very rare."

Amazingly, two spokesmen for the TWA 800 disaster were the same "experts" that handled Pan Am 103, Oliver "Buck" Revell (FBI) and Vincent Cannistraro (CIA). Buck Revell told the press that such a jet had never been destroyed in the air by an explosion that was not sabotage, and Vincent Cannistrano said that if it was a bomb "this is another notch up the ladder of terrorism...in the past year domestic aviation security has been tightened considerably." [Because] He said that terrorists have never blown up an airliner with a bomb planted in the U.S.

The government spokesmen were being much more cautious about jumping to conclusions, however. White House spokesman Mike McCurry and others, including President Clinton, refused to comment on whether they felt it was a terrorist event or a catastrophic failure of an aircraft system. Noncommittal, they developed for the media a "wait and see" stance.

But behind the scenes it appeared that other lines of communication between government agencies were being developed and a different message was being sent. There appeared to be drastic discrepancies between what many eye witnesses saw and what the government, especially the FBI, was willing to recognize as a possible cause of the explosion.

Early on many witnesses stated that they saw something that appeared to them to be a flare or a streak of light that seemed to arc up and hit the jumbo jet. Variations of these sightings match what the FAA radar controllers saw on their scope at JFK Departure Control, and what three crewmen on the C-130 witnessed as they flew their "flare dropping exercise."

But the FBI and other federal agencies, up to and including the White House, though not ruling out the "possibility" of a missile attack, consistently attempted to debunk any reference to a surface-to-air missile as a viable cause worth investigation. According to FBI Agent Jim Margolin, when questioned about the three possibilities, a bomb, a mechanical malfunction, or a missile: "Along with a mechanical malfunction, the missile theory rounds out the known universe of potential causes."

Special Agent in Charge (SAC) of the New York office of the FBI James Kallstrom, however, was not quite as dismissing. He appeared to be walking a political tightrope when he told the media that [paraphrased] "Widespread attention being given to the crash may make many eyewitness reports related to the missile theory suspect." He conceded, however, that with similar accounts reported by "numerous citizens" of "events, things in the sky" meant the missile theory could not be discarded.

Then, a mysterious "unnamed Pentagon Spokesman" offered this for mass consumption when the subject of shoulder-launched missiles, such as the Stinger or the Russian SA-7, might be the culprits: "There is no way a Stinger or other hand-held shoulder-fired missile could take down a 747 and *a Stinger does not have the range to hit TWA 800 at the altitude it was at.*" This same spokesman went on to state unequivocally that the plane could not have had a fuel explosion because it was fueled with JP-8. This means the "spokesman" was a Navy man because only the Navy uses JP-8 fuel, and then only on carriers because of its high flash point. Two things immediately discredited this learned source. First, TWA 800 was well within range of a Stinger if it was fired from a boat, and second, the airplane was fueled with Jet A fuel, which is the commercial jet fuel that all civilian jets and commercial airlines use. When this information was brought to the attention of SAC Kallstrom's office by the author no more was heard from this "unnamed Pentagon source."

By Day Three it became evident that there were three powers at work fighting over the bone of contention of TWA 800 and the cause of its demise. First, it became apparent that the National Transportation Safety Board (NTSB) spokesman, Robert Francis, was trying to walk a non-committal line between the FBI, TWA, Pratt & Whitney (the engine builder) and the Boeing Airplane Company. He had by then hunkered down to weather out the storm of controversy by repeatedly announcing that "we are moving slowly forward," and "it's just too early to tell."

The FBI, and the Anti-Terrorism Task Force, however, reminded reporters that though they were not officially taking over the investigation, they were watching for any evidence of a bombing or terrorist involvement. At that time, according to Kallstrom, they would assume the responsibility for the investigation and it would take a new course. Hints over the next week leaned toward nudging the public mind toward acceptance of a probable bomb aboard the airliner, probably in the forward cargo hold or the passenger section just above that location.

TWA, however, did *not* want the outcome to point to a bomb as that would open the company up to lawsuits by relatives of the victims who would blame lax airport security as the major contributing factor.

The Boeing Airplane Company did not want the investigation to point fingers at a design flaw of the airframe or fuel system as they would then become the object of a massive law suit, and Pratt & Whitney did not want the blame placed on a catastrophic engine failure for the same reason.

In all, it appeared that everyone was choosing up sides and going to their corners to await the outcome of the investigation of the wreckage that was being retrieved by the Navy salvage ship, U.S.S. *Grapple*. The odd-man out in all of this, however, was the "missile theory." A shootdown by terrorists at sea, using a surface-to-air missile, would leave TWA, Boeing, and Pratt & Whitney out of any subsequent lawsuit regarding negligence. It would not, however, let the government off the hook.

The idea that someone high in government was becoming very nervous about the possibility of a missile strike became increasingly evident as the investigation continued and witnesses were discovered and interviewed. The FBI located and questioned hundreds of local residents, ostensibly to find out what they might have witnessed that night. But they evidently did not like what they were hearing, for as they found witnesses who reported aerial objects striking the jet, or smoke plumes, or flares, or fireworks, or strange lights in the sky, the agents immediately began intimidating the witnesses by telling them that they could not have seen a missile. They told them that none of them knew what a missile looked like, that what they saw was simply "falling debris" and not something that came *up* from the water. To many of these witnesses, it appeared that the FBI had orders to make the incident a bomb if possible and debunk any missile story, no matter what the evidence or witnesses saw. This falls in line with what the FBI and Justice Department did after the Oklahoma City bombing a year earlier when they dropped the search for John Doe #2 within a few weeks after the event. They then intimidated every witness who reported that they saw JD#2 with McVeigh. These included eye witness sightings at the truck rental agency in Kansas; in the Ryder truck with McVeigh in Oklahoma City when he stopped to ask directions; across the street from the post office a block away from the Murrah Building; and getting out of the truck with McVeigh after parking in front of the building. The FBI then told the press seeing John Doe #2 was just a case of mass hysteria. Would finding John Doe #2 have led the investigation in the politically incorrect direction, as would a missile?

Two witnesses would not be intimidated. A husband and wife, who asked to remain anonymous, wrote a "letter to the editor" to a major city newspaper in California. The letter follows:

> Dear Editor,
>
> I witnessed the crash of TWA flight 800.
>
> I work in a county office in California. My wife and I were on vacation in New York. We were on the beach when it happened. We talked to many other witnesses who saw the same thing that we did. A very bright fiery light heading upward toward the jet. Then an explosion.
>
> We told what we had seen to some investigators. We told them that we were on our vacation and about to continue on to Florida. They asked us to stay a while longer and said that they would pay our hotel bill until our statements as to what we saw could be taken by other investigators. We agreed.
>
> It turned out however to be more than just our statements taken. They took our social security numbers, drivers licenses and license plate numbers. They wanted to know my place of employment and the names and addresses of our children and relatives. They questioned us in separate rooms and made us feel like criminals. They said that what we must have seen was a shooting star or some fireworks being shot from a boat. I told them that it was definitely a flare type rocket heading toward the aircraft, then it exploded.
>
> It was then suggested that we did not see anything at all and that we were going along with what other people said they saw, just for the excitement of it. I told them "no way, I know what I saw."
>
> After the questioning we were asked to go back to the hotel and stay there until we were cleared to leave. About three hours later two other men we had not seen before came to the hotel. They gave us some money and told us "never to mention anything to anyone about being witnesses to the crash again."
>
> They scared the hell out of us. It was a lot of money and we accepted it out of fear.
>
> If it was a missile that brought down the jet then I could understand that they would not want people to panic. But the way they are handling it is shocking and inexcusable.
>
> My wife and I are outraged and we want people to know how we were treated.
>
> This letter is not signed out of concern for ourselves and our family.

In an article published in the August 25th, 1996 edition of *The Austin American-Statesman*, three paragraphs stood out:

"In addition, the notion that Stinger missiles from Afghanistan might have made their way into the United states was a long-standing assumption within law enforcement circles.

"The presence on the crash scene of officials with the National Security Agency and the Defense Intelligence Agency reinforced in some minds that there might have been some intercepted intelligence regarding a missile attack."

On the same day, the *Times of London* reported: "U.S. officials are investigating reports that Islamic terrorists have smuggled Stinger ground-to-air missiles into the United States from Pakistan.

"Senior Iranian sources close to the fundamentalist regime in Teheran claimed this weekend that the TWA flight 800 was shot down last month by one of these shoulder-fired Stingers of the type used by Islamic guerrillas during the Afghanistan war.

"The sources said the missiles arrived in America seven months ago after being shipped from Karachi via Rotterdam and on to the Canadian port of Halifax. They claimed an Egyptian fundamentalist group backed by Iran was responsible for smuggling the weapons across the Canadian border into the United States.

The article went on to identify the group: the Gama'a al-Islamiya, the same group that attempted to blow up the New York Trade Center under the leadership of Sheik Omar Abdel-Rahman. This same group allegedly notified the White House that they had shot down the plane, and even provided a serial number of the missile used. This last information has not been confirmed as of this writing.

The bottom line is that the vast majority of witness statements support the missile contention; federal agents have been attempting to silence these witnesses; and the fact that Stinger missiles have been smuggled into this country by Islamic fundamentalist terrorist organizations is out of the bag.

In the weeks that followed the crash a great deal of wreckage was recovered by the Navy divers. The shredded aluminum and other bits and pieces, including the first three engines (1,2 &4), were transported to an empty Grumman Aircraft Company hangar in Calverton, where the wreckage was being examined and slowly reassembled. Though most of the damage appeared to come from the center of the aircraft, somewhere around the center fuel tank and behind the forward baggage compartment, virtually no chemical residue of explosives was detected that could be pinned to a bomb. There was some evidence of explosive chemicals on the wreckage, but from various locations that included the wings, wing tips, and rear fuselage area. This would not be indicative of a bomb in the cabin or baggage compartment. It would however, be indicative of something else: a missile hit on a hot engine, which then began to disintegrate and cast burning pieces into the wings and fuselage. Especially since the chemicals that were identified also match those used in military explosives, including the warheads of missiles.

For the divers aboard the *Grapple,* it was tough going. Though the wreckage lay on the ocean floor only 120 feet down, it was scattered for almost three miles in a tadpole-shaped pattern. The water was murky and dark, making it extremely dangerous to navigate through the twisted wreckage. On top of this, the local shark population had sensed the bodies and continued to school in the area as the divers worked. Eventually the crash site became known as "Mako City" after the most numerous of the shark breeds that infested the area.

The debris fields were mainly divided into two areas of concern: the nose and forward section of the fuselage which broke loose and fell first, and the main fuselage area, wings and tail which appeared to fly for several seconds after the aircraft had been "decapitated."

As the divers worked and the debris began to arrive on shore, the investigators on land busied themselves with assembling the pieces of the puzzle. A joint task force consisting of the FBI Counterterrorisim Task Force, the New York Police Department, and the NTSB appeared to the news watchers to be working like a team. In reality, the word behind the scenes gained through law enforcement and government aviation sources is that there was pressure coming down from Washington for federal agents to cover up what really happened, and if they could not blame a bomb or mechanical malfunction, then to drag the investigation out until the public and media lost interest.

But why? Why would the government not want to have the truth come out if it was a missile? Why not warn the flying public? And could it really have been a missile, and if so what type and where did it come from?

To understand some of the past historical events that may have a bearing on the loss of TWA 800, one must dig back into the a series of events that occurred in the 1980s regarding the "loss" of several hundred shoulder-fired Stinger missiles. During the Afghan/Russian war, the CIA, in support of the Mujihadeen guerrillas, smuggled hundreds of Stingers into Afghanistan to counter the Russian MiGs and Hind helicopter gunships. The missiles were so effective that they are credited as being a major factor in the Russian withdrawal from the country. At the end of the war a few hundred Stingers were left over and were offered back to the U.S. government. But for some mysterious reason, the government did not want them back.

The missiles were eventually taken to Islamabad, Pakistan, and put on the open market. Most were bought by Israeli arms dealers and resold at a profit to the Iranians for use against the Iraqis during the border war. The Iraqi air force seldom flew, however, leaving many missiles in Iranian inventory when the border war ground to a halt. Reportedly, these Stingers eventually found their way into the hands of two terrorist groups: Hizbollah and Hamas.

Discounting this information, even if it was not true, other Stingers remain on sale by the Afghanis for $100,000 each, a small sum for terrorist organizations who have a $1 million contract per airplane from the Iranians in retribution for the shootdown of the Iranian A-300 Airbus by the U.S.S. *Vincennes*. The contract is called a *Fatwa*, a religious order that cannot be recalled, quite similar to the order to kill author Salmon Rushdie for writing his book, *Satanic Verses*. This Fatwa was for ten American jumbo jets.

This also matches the story of Pan Am 103 being the first to be destroyed, tracing the bombers back to Syria and the PFLP-GC; and Ramzi Yousef planning to blow up a dozen 747s. Yousef, the New York World Trade Center bomber, was arrested in Pakistan before he could carry out his mission. He was also tightly connected to Islamic terrorists in the Philippines, and to Hamas cells in the United States, including New York City.[207]

CIA sources say at least 30-40 missiles are in circulation in the terrorist ranks (a very conservative estimate), and that these missiles were offered to be given back to the State Department at no charge, but the CIA and Clinton Administration refused to take them back for some odd reason. Author and investigator Rodney Stich, receiving this information from deep-cover intelligence sources, wrote a letter to Senator Arlen Specter on Oct. 20, 1995, "that this refusal suggested a hidden agenda, with possible catastrophic consequences in shooting down commercial airliners." To prove how reliable his information was, the warning even included the serial numbers of some of the missiles, which were provided by one of Stich's deep cover CIA whistle blowers. The offer to give back the missiles was made by Afghan Mujihadeen leader General Rashid Dostom.

According to Stich, the following missiles were issued to the Afghans and may have found their way into terrorist hands: GDP 84D 001-320 362956; GDP 84J 001-320 363602; GDP 86G 001-387 369587; GDP 84G 001 320 363387.

To add to this, Israeli intelligence reported that they received unconfirmed information that 50 Stingers entered the U.S. in January, 1995. They attempted to warn U.S. authorities, but were ignored.

Stingers are not the only shoulder-fired surface-to-air missiles available to terrorists. The Russian equivalent to the earlier American "Redeye" missile is the SA-7 "Grail." According to Intelligence sources, over 120,000 Russian SA-7s have been produced, and about 10% have fallen into the hands of terrorist groups, some with Russian assistance. The SA-7 is responsible for hitting a jet near Oman at a slant range of over six miles, and a British-made Hunter aircraft near Yemen was struck at a height of 12,000 feet. During the Vietnam war, NVA and VC rocket gunners engaged and destroyed aircraft at altitudes of between 11,000 and 12,000 feet with the Grail. The Russian Stinger clone, the SA-14 "Gremlin," is even more effective.

The Stinger, contrary to what the unnamed Pentagon spokesman stated, was more than capable of reaching the 747 from a boat, even if the aircraft was in excess of the latest altered altitude of 13,700 feet. But did any witnesses observe a missile trail originating from the sea below the jet?

According to an Athens newspaper, a Greek commercial pilot saw just that.

Investigative journalist David Hoffman, editor of the *Haight Ashbury Free Press*, made contact with an Athenian named Yannis Boyiopoulos who confirmed that the

Athens newspaper *Elftherotypia* on August 23, 1996 reported on the front page that a Greek pilot had witnessed the explosion and described what he saw. The pilot was flying behind the 747 when he observed something come up from the water that to him resembled a "rocket." He watched it until it struck the airplane. According to Boyiopoulos "The same person has already testified three times to agents of the FBI and now he is in Greece. His name is Vasilis Bakoynis."

Still, no matter what the witnesses saw or photographed, the Government seemed intent on debunking any story that supported the missile strike scenario. Our unnamed Pentagon Spokesman advised the major media that "...there is no way a Stinger or other hand-held shoulder-fired missile could take down a 747 and a Stinger does not have the range to hit TWA 800 at the altitude it was at."

In this statement are two lies. First, an airplane is a very fragile machine which operates in a very unforgiving environment. Though large aircraft ranging from World War II bombers to the latest air buses have survived after sustaining very serious damage, others have crashed after simple failures of a single component in the flight control or engine systems, not to mention very small bombs that simply breached hull integrity, or baggage doors that blew off to be sucked into engine intakes. A number of crashes and other incidents have been linked to the latter scenario, including one in which a forward baggage door blew off of a 747 and was ingested by the number three engine, which then self-destructed, sending superheated engine parts into the soft aluminum skin of the wings and fuselage. But the jet survived and landed safely.

This is exactly what could have happened to TWA 800 after a missile strike on an inboard engine, such as number three, but with much more catastrophic results.

Multi-engine aircraft engines are numbered from left to right as one looks down at the aircraft. The outermost left engine is number one. The next in, or left inboard engine is number two. Number three is the right inboard engine, and number four the right side outboard engine. In the case of TWA 800, engines one, two and four were raised fairly early in the search. The last engine, described in the first few days as "engine parts" was not raised until several weeks after the crash. The reason it was left on the bottom supposedly was because it had not yet been found, and that only "parts of an engine" had been located. This proved untrue when the number three engine was actually brought to the surface by the Navy.

To those who knew what they were seeing, number three engine told a dramatic story. As it was loaded aboard a flat-bed truck to be transported to the reconstruction site, the educated observer could see that there were several discrepancies. First, the fan section in the front of the engine was only about 30% intact. Most of the fan blades were absent and those that remained, a pie-shaped section on one side of the wheel, were bent at the tips, as if they contacted the engine intake cowling while still turning. The center section of the engine displayed bent and distorted connector rings over the burner can section, and most of the back of the engine was missing! The entire engine appeared to have been burned, and this did not happen underwater.

The next day the NTSB announced that all engines were up and none showed any "problems" that could have contributed to the incident.

The NTSB spokesman, Robert Francis, was quoted in a London publication as reporting that "Investigators have stripped down all four of the jet's engines but found, according to safety board vice chairman, Robert Francis, 'nothing really extraordinary'."[208]

No problems, no clues, no new evidence.

Then came the Kabot photo.

Linda Kabot, an East Moriches resident attending a party near the beach, took a photograph during the event. When the photo was developed, it showed a cylindrical object in the air with one end brightly lighted. The problem with this photograph is that according to Kabot, she held the camera facing north, away from the ocean, which means the "missile" in the photo had to come from inland, which might put it out of range of a shoulder-launched SAM unless it was fired as TWA 800 was passing nearby still climbing. Whatever the case, the photo and negatives were seized by the FBI for analysis.

The second lie told by the unnamed Pentagon source was that a Stinger could not bring down a 747. As discussed, it *could* bring down such an airplane if it hit an inboard engine, such as number three, which in turn would catch fire and begin spewing bits and pieces of flaming engine parts into the fuselage, and center fuel tank, and the wings and internal wing tanks. Within a minute or two the near empty center tank, now ruptured, might be ignited. A large fuel tank such as this, which only carried about fifty gallons of volatile fuel, is a veritable bomb.

The burned carcass of number three engine notwithstanding, the investigators still continued to deny the missile scenario. There are many plausible reasons why they would take such a stance: First, no amount of airport security could stop such an attack in the future. Next, it could possibly have a giant impact on the flying public and subsequent airline profits. Then, of course, the public would want to know where terrorists obtained such a weapon, which would eventually lead back to U.S. government figures at the highest levels. And how did it get into this country without being detected? And finally, if the word leaked out that the missiles were offered back to the government and the administration refused to take them back, what then? And in an election year?

As the bomb and mechanical malfunction aspects of the investigation began to lose credibility due to lack of evidence, the missile scenario began to build into an acceptable reality. At about this time, another rumor began circulating regarding the possibility of "friendly fire" from a military ship or aircraft that had "accidentally" loosed a missile which struck Flight 800. The day after this rumor hit the Internet and was being repeated in radio talk shows, the Pentagon sent a spokesman to squash the rumors. On CNN that day a full Navy captain appeared before the cameras to announce that [paraphrasing] "there had been no accidental discharge of a weapon that night, and there had been no military exercises in the area, and no military vessels or aircraft."

These statements were quickly countered by very simple and obvious questions: If this was the case, then where did the C-130, two Blackhawk helicopters, the P-3 Orion, and a Navy guided missile cruiser, the U.S.S. *Normandy*, come from?

This spokesman was never seen again. Nor did the military address the question of friendly fire in the electronic media.

Investigative reporter David Hendrix of the Riverside, CA, *Press-Enterprise* queried the Navy regarding the statements that there were no exercises being conducted nor military assets in the vicinity. This was done after he secured a copy of an unclassified message from Fleet Air Control and Surveillance Facility, Oceana, VA, to FAA New York Air Traffic Control that read: "Request stationary altitude reservation Tango Billy [area code name] surface to flight level 10,000 feet within (longitude and latitude) 39 degrees 50 minutes North and 72 degrees 10 minutes West, 39 degrees 50 minutes North and 70 degrees 45 minutes West, 38 degrees North and 72 degrees 10 minutes West (excluding warning areas) from 0100 Z [Zulu: Greenwich Mean Time] on the 18th to 0700 Z on the 18th July 96." The local time and date would be the 17th of July at 8 p.m. New York time until 3 a.m. the next morning. This request would take effect about when TWA 800 was taxiing to the runway at JFK.

The impact zone of the wreckage was reported by Associated Press as approximately 40 degrees 40 minutes North latitude, and 72 degrees 40 minutes West longitude. This is between 60-65 statute miles northwest of the northwest corner of the reserved exercise area. Other reports, however, state that the 747 was in close proximity, some within ten miles, of the exercise zone.[209]

Hendrix received a reply to his August 30, 1996 letter to the Navy from COMNAVAIRLANT (Commander Naval Air Atlantic) public affairs office via CINCLANTFLT (Commander In Chief Atlantic Fleet) Public Affairs office. In it the Navy admitted being in the area: "...As previously stated a P-3 Orion submarine patrol aircraft was operating at flight level 10,000 (approximately 3,700 feet below TWA 800) and some distance away when the incident occurred. The P-3's crew heard radio traffic discussing the incident and offered assistance. They reversed course, were vectored to the area, and remained for a short time until released by the Coast Guard. The P-3 carries no offensive or defensive weapons and would not have been capable of causing any damage to another aircraft."

Either this was a deliberate lie, or the Public Affairs officer who wrote the letter did not know, nor did he or she check, what the P-3 is capable of. After all, the Orion is an anti-submarine aircraft. This means it is capable of locating, then sinking, submarines. In actual fact, the P-3 is capable of carrying in its weapons bay one Mk-25 or 39 or 56 mine, or three Mk-36 or 52 mines, or three Mk-57 depth charges, or 8 Mk-43 or 44 or 46 torpedoes. On underwing pylons, the P-3 can carry mines and *rockets*, or can ferry torpedoes. Maximum weapons load is rated at 20,000 lbs.

The next statement, that the P-3 "heard" the radio traffic and had to be vectored to the scene is also problematic. The flames on the water from the crash could be seen from Long Island, and the P-3 would not have to be "vectored" to the site. The Navy also apparently was parroting the FBI and NTSB news releases that the altitude of the TWA plane was 13,700 feet, disregarding the official FAA radar reports on Day One of 8,000 feet, then the subsequent "corrections" of 10,300 feet and above.

The Navy letter goes on to say: "Also as previously released the guided missile cruiser USS *Normandy* was conducting routine operations about 180 miles from the crash site. It was not engaged in any weapons firing evolution at the time."

As a guided missile cruiser, the *Normandy* would carry the RIM-67 Standard SM-2ER semi-active radar homing air defense missiles. This missile has a range in excess of 93 miles and an unclassified altitude range of 100,000 feet. Its speed is in excess of Mach 2.5, and even with a dummy warhead could be deadly to an aircraft.[210]

A later story that circulated in the press was that on the evening of July 17th, the TWA jet took off for Paris, turned on course over the ocean and got too close to an exercise being conducted off shore by a joint law enforcement task force of National Guard, Coast Guard, Customs and Drug Enforcement Agency. They were reportedly practicing how to shoot down drug-smuggling airplanes with shoulder-fired missiles and were using flares dropped by the C-130 as targets. A missile was fired or "got loose accidentally" and locked on to the TWA plane instead of a flare. But according to federal officials, "there was no exercise that night, the air space was available for civilian use, and law enforcement agencies do not have anti-aircraft missiles."

This, like many other government explanations regarding this incident, was not true. The Secret Service has Stinger missiles that they carry at all times when the Protection Detail is escorting the President. These missiles are carried in special boxes in the back of the Secret Service Suburban. Besides this, agents are stationed on roof tops around the White House with Stingers to protect the air space over the building. One SS agent told me when I was flying air cover over a Clinton motorcade that if we flew too close to the motorcade we would be shot down by an agent with a Stinger. He said they always carry them in the back of their escort vehicles along with other weapons.[211]

Also, there *were* exercises going on that night because we have statements made by military personnel who were involved: New York Air National Guard C-130 crew dropping flares; NY Army National Guard UH-60 Blackhawk crew who saw the explosion; P-3 Orion in vicinity; Coast Guard vessels; and the U.S.S. *Normandy* "somewhere nearby."

It is odd that the Navy spokesmen would state that the *Normandy* was 180 miles away. This is exactly twice the range of the Standard missile. This is also almost the *exact* distance between the TWA crash site and the farthest (southeast) corner of the exercise box requested by the Navy for that time frame.

In weighing the facts and witness statements, the most likely scenario to explore is that of a hand-held surface-to-air missile. This would mean a Mideast terrorist organization connection, something the Clinton administration was loath to consider in the aftermath of the Oklahoma City bombing, and which has continuously disavowed or failed to recognize any domestic problems with such groups.

The missile scenario was not discounted by all media, however. According to *The Press-Enterprise* (Riverside, CA), in an article printed on August 26th, 1996, "From the beginning, intrigued by eyewitness accounts of something streaking up toward the airplane just before it began to explode, investigators considered the possibility of a missile attack, perhaps from a small boat. There has been mounting concern in intelligence and law enforcement circles that terrorists could use hand-held anti-aircraft missiles to attack civilian airliners. *A State Department report cataloged 25 incidents between 1978 and 1993 in which civilian commercial airplanes were shot down by missiles, killing more than 600 people.*"[212]

Finally, another news source, the *International Currency Review* (Vol 23 No. 4), published the following information regarding the tragedy of TWA 800: "A KGB defector has informed us that the TWA plane was sabotaged by Russian intelligence. This operation had to be implemented directly, rather than via controlled forces apparently separated from Yevgenny Primakov's global terror apparatus, because it was tightly timed to precede the Group of Seven's meeting on security and terrorism, at which it was agreed that the G-7 countries and Russia would now have access to the FBI's data base, and that a comprehensive exchange of intelligence and cooperation would ensue. Further atrocities will be staged in due course to ratchet up this process, in fulfillment of a secret Soviet sub-strategy to exploit terror and organized crime, which the successor Leninist criminal state is exporting globally, to establish 'global structures' and ultimately, a 'world justice system' which would supplant national security arrangements and legal systems, further contributing to the intended redundancy of the nation state." This falls in line with the Gorbachev Foundation's line for a new form for prosecution of "global issues" intended to render the nation-state redundant, the manipulation of organized crime and terror as weapons which could be used in furtherance of anti-state revolutionary objectives.

This explanation should not be discounted out of hand, for an agenda does exist to bring all nations into a world-wide system of government, even if the peoples of the world have to be intimidated with terror before they will accept such an Orwellian system. This is known as the "Hegelian Principle" after Professor Hegel who stated that to make the people accept a normally repugnant idea, you simply created a problem that they feared, then offer the idea as the only available, and less fearsome, solution. In this case, exhibited incidents of terrorism can be used to convince a population that more drastic "anti-terrorist" laws should be passed.

If international terrorists were responsible for this disaster, then who might they be? The list of suspects is not long:

Ramzi Yousef group (Hamas): Supporters of Ramzi Ahmed Yousef (AKA: Abdul Basit Mahmoud Abdul Karim), currently in prison in New York, was at the time of the incident undergoing trial in NYC. Yousef was trained during the Afghan War and was captured and extradited to the U.S. from Pakistan in 1995. The trial was in its eighth week when TWA 800 went down.

Hizbollah: Pro-Iranian guerrilla organization, now seeking to extract revenge on the U.S. for supporting Israel.

al-Gama'a al-Islamiya (Islamic Group or IG): Egyptian terrorist group from which the U.S. imprisoned its spiritual leader, Sheik Omar Abdel Rahman. Rahman was convicted in 1995 for plotting to bomb the United Nations and several other New York landmarks. He is currently serving a life sentence in a federal prison in Springfield, Missouri.

Hamas: Hamas has vowed to attack the U.S. for agreeing to extradite a known terrorist by the name of Musa Abu Marzouk to Israel. Marzouk was arrested at JFK International Airport in New York last year, and was held and faced extradition hearings in New York. Hamas has 28 cells in the U.S., one in New York City and one in Boston.

Islamic Movement for Change: A Saudi splinter group, it is the only group known to claim any responsibility for the downing of the flight. It supposedly has ties to Saudi Arabia, and claims responsibility for the bombing of the U.S. facilities in Riyadh in November, 1995, and in Dhahran on 25 June 1996. The question one must address regarding this group is: Could it be possible that this new, unknown group, is actually a Russian front that would match the Russian connection article? It may take years to discover the answer to this question.

This chapter was not written as an attempt to solve the mysteries surrounding the destruction of TWA 800, but to simply present evidence of what appears to support a much more complicated case than what has been reported by the controlled media. It was also written to exhibit the continued *Modus Operandi* by government mouthpieces on not only this case but the ones that came before. When one knows what to look for, it becomes apparent when a pattern of deceit develops in both the media and in the various organs of government.

Was TWA 800 shot down by a missile fired by Islamic fundamentalists as the physical evidence and majority of witness statements indicate?

Did the airplane experience a catastrophic mechanical failure?

Was there a bomb on board that exploded without leaving more than a trace of residue?

Was the plane struck by friendly fire from an aircraft or ship?

It may take years to discover the actual cause of the explosion of TWA 800. For as this chapter is being written, the FBI and other agencies continue their "investigations"....

And their damage control.[213]

But the biggest question of all is: "Why?"

Part VII

Riding The Tiger, Domestic Terror

"It should be apparent to the investigator that McVeigh and Nichols, virtually unassisted, could not have planned, provided for, financed, and executed the bombing by themselves."

Report on the Bombing of the Alfred
Murrah Federal Building
By the author.

"We seek to tell the United States and its agents that the Iraqi patience has run out and that the perpetration of the crime of annihilating the Iraqis will trigger crises whose nature and consequences are known only to God."

Iraqi newspaper *Babil*

"In the past, those who foolishly sought power by riding on the back of the tiger ended up inside."

John Fitzgerald Kennedy

Chapter 30

Terrorism, Foreign and Domestic

Ter-or-ism n. The unlawful use or threatened use of force or violence to intimidate or coerce societies or governments, often for ideological or political reasons. (The *American Heritage College Dictionary*).

It has been said that one man's "terrorist" is another man's "freedom fighter." In this modern age the truism of this statement is becoming more apparent each day. From age-old religious conflict to modern political friction, groups of people have increasingly aligned themselves through religious beliefs, political ideology, or fear of group persecution into organizations that become not only self-defensive, but oftentimes a threat to others.

There is nothing new about terrorism. It has been a political and religious means of expression, albeit violent, since the beginning of time. Examples of terrorist activity can be found in the Bible, historical texts of the middle ages, and virtually every conflict in the centuries that followed. Terrorism, in its basic definition, is a name given to the activities of either an "enemy of the state," or a weaker opponent that must rely on shock effect to gain the attention of the populace toward their cause. Examples of these "shock effect" tactics have been exhibited in virtually every historical theater of battle or conquest, and in every realm wherein one people exercised political and military control over another. From ancient Greece to modern Belfast, and from the Roman Empire's occupation of Israel to the current "Middle-eastern problems" of Israel/Palestine, events have forced certain elements of society to resist an unwanted or oppressive power by use of whatever weapons and tactics were available.

In almost every instance the only tactics available were those we now call "guerrilla warfare", or, when civilians are involved as casualties, terrorism. For with the communications capabilities of modern technology, small groups of determined people, whether they be termed freedom fighters or terrorists, can multiply their actual influence by the use of shock tactics coupled with media exposure as a weapon. Without the media, there would be no public recognition or attention. And without civilian casualties being exhibited for the world to see in living color, there would be little shock effect among the masses. Only by using the most shocking and diabolical tactics against an unarmed civilian populace, from which no government can completely insure protection, can a fanatic terrorist (or renegade government) organization instill the public fear to accomplish their objectives.

But there is a distinct difference between what is acceptable practice in warfare and unacceptable barbarism. It is because of this that all civilized countries in this age have become signatories to such documents as the Geneva Convention on the laws of land warfare and the various agreements that limit or prohibit the use certain weapons such as chemical, biological and nuclear "weapons of mass destruction." These agreements also specify rules of engagement, declarations of war, handling of prisoners, and conduct of warfare itself. Terrorist organizations, unable to bargain from a position of strength to achieve their goals, instead disregard the "rules" and rely instead on breaking the rules to achieve attention to their causes.

As an historical example, the American colonists under George Washington could not participate in conventional warfare against the professional and mercenary troops of King George during the American Revolution. Instead of rank-and-file Napoleonic tactics of mass firepower and attrition, the colonists relied on the tactics they learned in the Indian Wars wherein they utilized camouflage, concealment, elements of surprise, and ambush to achieve victory. These tactics, to the British, not only violated the standards of European warfare they were accustomed to, but were savage and barbarian. To the British, the colonial army consisted of terrorists. But to the colonists, there was little choice. In the beginning they were outnumbered, outgunned, and did not control the urban centers where logistical assets, such as powder and shot, were located. They did, however, control part of the media, using underground printing presses to publish their own papers and flyers, and most of the rural terrain. It was not until they had captured a sufficient number of cannons, horses and rifles and enlisted a significant number of troops, that they were able to escalate from rural guerrilla warfare to more conventional engagements in major battles.

During the American Civil War, certain "raider" groups from both sides were branded as criminals. Because they penetrated deeply into "enemy territory," which took them far from the actual lines of battle and into civilian areas, where they conducted guerrilla warfare, they were condemned as rogues, renegades and outlaws. Though their main missions were to interdict enemy supply routes, capture important personages, or generally raise havoc behind the lines to draw much-needed troops away from battle, they occasionally crossed the line into what would now be termed as terrorist activities. These actions included looting and burning towns and farms, stealing horses and terrorizing the civilian populace.

Following the Civil War, organizations such as the Ku Klux Klan appeared which formulated and depended upon terror tactics in their attempts to not only intimidate the newly-freed slaves, but to influence local and regional politics regarding separation of races and classes. The hooded "Night Riders" of the KKK terrorized blacks and northern "Carpetbaggers" by burning barns, farm houses and crop fields, and shooting or hanging targeted individuals. These criminal attacks on the populace were meant to serve as examples and intimidate others into fear and submission to local thugs. Little thought was given to making any type of political statement on a national level. Still, certain segments of society today consider the actions of the post-Civil War KKK as racially nationalistic, and are sympathetic to their tactics and objectives, and indeed have patterned themselves after it.

Other violent, illegal and savage activities by secret groups, societies, and organizations that could be defined as terrorist actions have occurred since the end of the Civil War. These include bombings, arson, assassinations, sabotage of federal property, inciting riots and even conspiracies to overthrow the government. The organizations have ranged through such racially and politically diverse names as: the Black Panthers, the Weathermen, the Students for a Democratic Society, the Jewish Defense League, the Order, and other extreme left and right wing organizations.

Domestic "terrorism" is nothing new to America. By strict definition, it has been around since the first colonists were ambushed by Indians, leaving their mutilated bodies behind as a warning to others, which in turn instigated colonists to "scalp" Indian bodies in reprisal. What *is* new to the American scene, however, is the influx of international terrorism coupled with mass media advertisement of their atrocities. The "combat multiplier" of the media magnifies in the minds of the populace the impact of what otherwise would be minor footnotes to history. A car bombing, a "plot" to blow up a building, or the derailment of a train is focused on by the sensationalist/tabloidist American media to the point in which the events become a major crises. Many recent events have received more press coverage today than was given in the past regarding such tragedies as the explosion of the Hindenburg, the sinking of the Lusitania, or the fact that we left thousands of American POWs behind in World War II, Korea and Vietnam. One can only ask if there is a current agenda behind what is and is not reported in the print and electronic media, and what constitutes today's "big news." By what history has exhibited, it would appear that there now is a secret agenda at work behind the scenes. But why? And who benefits?

Whether terrorism is of the domestic or imported international brand, some basic fundamentals apply. One of these fundamentals is the fact that there are only five types of ground-based terrorist targets. Every target falls under one of these categories, with the exception of what is known as the "Love Boat" scenario. The PLO assault on the Greek liner *Achille Lauro* falls into this last category, but a ship at sea is not a "land-based" target.

The five land-based target categories are:

1. A private building (or structure including bridges, dams etc.)
2. A public (government) building (or facility)
3. Mass transportation (ground)
4. Mass transportation (air)

6. Large gathering of people (or segment of the population)

What becomes immediately apparent is that between 1993 and 1996, and for the first time in American history, four out of the five listed target types have been attacked by terrorists or terrorist activities *inside* the borders of the Continental United States. These include the bombing of the World Trade Center in New York City (private building), the bombing of the Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building in Oklahoma City (public, or government, building), the derailment of the Sunset Limited near Gila Bend, Arizona (mass transportation, ground), and the destruction of TWA 800 (mass transportation, air). As of this writing the only target left to complete all five categories is the fifth: a large gathering of people, or the "Black Sunday" scenario.

Some might consider that the small pipe bomb that exploded at the Olympics at Atlanta would qualify for the fifth target category. However, this writer feels that though the Olympics themselves would qualify as a prime target with maximum media coverage for effect, and indeed were probably targeted, the effort was too minuscule and unprofessional to effectively complete the list.

The following chapters deal with three of the above tragedies: the World Trade Center bombing, the bombing of the Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building (in which the author was personally involved in the investigation), and the derailment of Amtrak's Sunset Limited. In all of these events someone benefited and someone took the blame. But it is not who we have been led to believe by the mainstream media.

To the uninitiated, those who have not read and absorbed the preceding chapters, the true "story behind the story" regarding these events is simply incomprehensible and unbelievable. But taken in context with what has already been presented in this book, the learned reader will find the material in the following chapters little more than a continuation of "business as usual" for the powerbrokers of not only this nation, but the world.

As you read, ask yourself if the events you are about to dissect fall under the category of domestic terrorism, international terrorism, or...something else.

Here are the stories that you did *not* get through NBC, ABC, CBS and CNN....

Chapter 31

Hiding the Truth: The World Trade Center Bombing

It was just after noon on February 26, 1993, when downtown New York City was shaken by a thunderous explosion. Pedestrians who were able to see the origination point through the jungle of high rise buildings could see that black smoke was pouring from the 110-story World Trade Center building. No one realized at that moment that they were witnessing history in the making: the first known international terrorist attack on U.S. soil.

Though damage to the building was heavy, it was not as devastating as had been planned by the instigators. Had the bomb, which had been placed in a rental truck, accomplished the damage intended, and had the target "tower" collapsed, it is estimated that deaths might have exceeded 20,000. As it were, only six people were killed and an additional 1,000 injured.

The New York City bomb squad, police, emergency personnel and federal agents of the FBI and BATF immediately swarmed to the scene. Photographs were taken inside the building of a huge hole blasted through the floor of an underground parking garage, shattered columns, bent rebar rods, and fire damaged automobiles and building structure. Witnesses and victims were interviewed and statements taken from bystanders. All standard police procedures were followed, but little hope was exhibited at the time that the case would be solved because all who deal with bombings know that most of the evidence is destroyed in the blast, and the perpetrators are normally a long way away by the time the explosion takes place.

But in this case the public would be amazed at the speed in which the FBI solved the case. In less than thirty days the FBI managed to round up five suspects, all members of an Islamic terrorist cell located in a "mosque" in Brooklyn. The so-called mosque, actually a floor of rented rooms over a storefront, was headed by an Egyptian radical Moslem fundamentalist cleric named Sheik Omar Abdel-Rahman. Rahman, who delivered his anti-American "Great Satan" sermons in two locations:

the Brooklyn headquarters and another mosque in Jersey City, New Jersey, had been exiled by the Egyptian government for subversive activities. Rahman, a follower of Iranian fundamentalist ideology, in which all non-Moslems were worthy only of death until no Christians, Jews or other "pagans" remained on Earth, urged his followers to "spill American blood on its own soil."

Rahman was connected to more than just a few local radical followers. His international contacts included members of the Hamas and Hizbollah, and former Afghan war vets who had served as volunteers for the Mujihadeen. Other connections ran directly to Iran, who provided over $100,000 to Rahman for anti-American domestic terrorist activities, and to Pakistan, where more than twenty former Mujihadeen training camps had been turned over to the Pakistani ISI (Inter-Service Intelligence) by the CIA after the Afghan war. These training camps were, by 1992, training up to 3,700 terrorists at a time. These Pakistani-trained zealots were being trained and armed for one thing: exporting terrorists to non-Islamic countries to carry on and expand the *Jihad*, the Holy War against non-Islamics.

Two months after the initial arrests, eight other Islamic terrorists were arrested by the FBI in connection with the bombing, five actually caught in the act of mixing explosives. With these arrests information was released that a nefarious plot that ranged far greater than the WTC bombing existed, and that other targets included the New York Federal Building, The Holland and Lincoln tunnels, and the United Nations building. Besides the bombings, the terrorists also planned to assassinate several key figures in world politics including U.N. Secretary Boutros Boutros-Ghali, and New York Senator Alphonse D'Amato.

According to the *first* official story, the FBI and BATF recovered a small piece of the truck used in the bombing and traced it to a rental agency. And, as luck would have it, one of the bombers returned to the agency shortly after the bombing to explain that the truck had been stolen and to claim his deposit. He was promptly arrested, which led to other arrests.

But according to the *second* official story, it seems that the FBI had managed to plant an informant within Rahman's terrorist cell, and that the informant secretly recorded conversations between Sheik Rahman and those arrested in a planned terror wave of bombings that were to begin on July 4th. According to the indictment which was filed by the federal court, Rahman had blessed the bombmaking plans, and had encouraged at least twenty-one followers to continue with further Jihad activities. According to court documents all twenty-one were eventually arrested or indicted. This second story, however, does not explain how the FBI lost their "handle" on the case and allowed the event to transpire without taking action to interdict the plot prior to the delivery of the truck bomb.

Even though twenty-one were arrested or indicted, according to court documents one of the main players had escaped the FBI net: Abdul Basit Mahmoud Abdul Karim, now known internationally as Ramzi Yousef.

One of the elusive ghosts of the Islamic terrorist underground network is Iraqi-trained Ramzi Ahmed Yousef. Yousef prided himself as a world-class bomb maker, capable of constructing explosives from easily obtainable chemicals and compounds that are not controlled by government authorities. Yousef is also a skilled actor, traveling around under numerous assumed names and identity cards and passports, and capable of convincing immigration and passport control officials that he was little more than a harmless refugee seeking political asylum from the evil and sadistic Saddam Hussein. Just the opposite was true, however. Yousef was an Iraqi "soldier" who traveled freely within the framework of the international Palestinian, Egyptian, Sudanese and Pakistani terrorist organizations as one of the most dangerous men on earth.

On September 1st, 1992, Yousef arrived at New York's JFK airport and presented himself to an immigration control officer as a displaced Iraqi who, if returned to Iraq, would be executed. He requested political asylum and was granted entry until an INS interview date could be established. He was photographed, fingerprinted, and run through the computer. But, because "Ramzi Yousef" was one of many assumed names, there was no computer hit on "Ramzi Ahmed Yousef."

Exactly how much Yousef had to do with the WTC bombing and the follow-on plans will probably never be publicly revealed. What is known, however, is that on December 8th Yousef requested postponement of his INS hearing because, according to him, he had not yet hired an attorney. Then on the second date, January 26, 1993, a lawyer appeared for Yousef and explained that he had been involved in an automobile accident and could not appear at that time. Another date was scheduled, but before it was reached the bombing occurred in the World Trade Center. By this time Yousef had fled the country and was lurking in the shadow world of Islamic terrorists between Pakistan and the Philippines. Yousef would next surface in 1996 when he was finally arrested in Pakistan and extradited to the United States to face trial for the WTC bombing. At the time of his arrest by the Philippine police he had been busily working on a plan to blow up twelve American 747 jumbo jets over the Pacific.

What must be told at this point is the *third* story of the FBI "investigation" into the WTC bombing. What you are about to read is not an "official" version.

During the court hearing in New York, information surfaced that there was more to the so-called investigation than had originally been reported to the media, and the American public. It seems that the FBI actually had more than a simple "informant" inside Rahman's terrorist cell. What they actually had was an Egyptian intelligence officer named Emad Salem, who reported directly to his FBI control agent, Special Agent John Anticev. Salem, it turns out, was hired to infiltrate the Rahman group long before the bombing took place, and consistently reported on the activities of the radicals, including their plans to conduct bombings in the New York City area.

What the FBI did not know was that Salem recorded his conversations with his control agents. The tapes tell a far different story than the official versions of the "investigation." According to *The New York Times*, which managed to obtain secret transcripts of some of the conversations, the FBI knew in advance when the bomb was going to be planted, who was going to do it, the names of everyone in the terrorist cell, and where the truck was rented. But worse, one tape went even further. It seems that the FBI not only knew about the planning, they actually assisted the bombers in obtaining and constructing the bomb!

The original FBI plan was for the informant to provide a non-explosive substance that would be labeled "Ammonium Nitrate," then use it to construct a "bomb" that would not go off. All the FBI needed to show in court was the elements of conspiracy and intent. It would be a classic "sting" operation and the FBI would come out in the media as heroes, a much-needed polishing of their tarnished image since the earlier debacle at Ruby Ridge, Idaho. (The BATF assault at Waco did not happen until two days after the WTC bombing and did not reflect on the FBI or BATF image until fifty-one days later when the final apocalypse of the Mount Carmel facility occurred).

Instead of arresting the conspirators when they received inside information that the bombing was being planned, the FBI instead kept their source in place and continued to monitor the progress of the terrorists in planning and preparing for their goal. According to the transcripts, the plan was changed and the informant was directed to provide the terrorists with *real* explosive materials. The reasoning behind this may have been simply that showing "intent" might not be enough to make a terrorism case in court, and that if real explosives were discovered then the case would make itself. But whatever the reason, the plan moved into stage two: building the bomb.

According to reports and transcripts, Salem was instructed to not only provide the materials, *but to give instruction and help in building the bomb itself.* This makes one wonder where Ramzi Yousef was during this time as Yousef was a master bomb maker, which would preclude the need for Salem to provide instruction or materials.

Part of the story regarding Salem's participation surfaced when a transcript of a secret recording he made with his handlers surfaced. According to it, he was questioned about his expenditures on his expense report to the FBI. He explained that his expenses rose during the month the bomb was built because of the cost of "building the Trade Center bomb." In the transcript he admitted that he used government funds to procure the materials and build the bomb for the Rahman group, as he was instructed to do.[214]

Emad Salem, Egyptian Intelligence, was paid $1 million for his testimony against the terrorist cell, and the Egyptian followers of Sheik Abdel-Rahman swore vengeance and further violence against the U.S.[215]

In an AP article that appeared shortly after Rahman was convicted in U.S. District Court, "A militant Muslim group has threatened to attack American targets to avenge the life sentence imposed on Sheik Omar Abdel-Rahman for plotting to blow up New York landmarks. 'All American interests will be legitimate targets for our struggle until the release of Sheik Omar Abdel-Rahman and his brothers,' the *Al-Hayat* newspaper quoted the Islamic Group as saying."

The question one must ask at this point is what would be the next target of the Jihad? One must keep in mind the five types of ground-based terrorist targets. The World Trade Center fits the first category: a private building. That only leaves four: a public (government) building, mass transportation air, mass transportation ground, and a large gathering of people.

What would be next?

Chapter 32

Oklahoma City: Terrorism or Politics?

My pager went off at exactly 5:15 p.m. on April 21st, 1995. The number that flashed was that of my office at the Air Support Unit of the Tulsa Police Department. Since my work day ended at 5:00 p.m., the first thought that came to mind was that the dispatcher had issued a call-out for the police helicopter and I was being summoned to fly the mission. I could not have been more wrong. I picked up my microphone and called in to my office.

"Where are you," asked my supervisor, Sgt. Ron Moulton.

"On my way home, at least until now. What's up?"

"The FBI is looking for you," he answered. "They called the chief's office asking where you were."

"That's funny. The SAC has my pager number and office number. Why didn't they just page?"

"I don't know," answered Ron, "unless it's a different agent."

"Okay. I'll give them a call and see what's up."

This was highly unusual. Most of my experience in dealing with the "feds" occurred during duty hours. A hundred thoughts ran through my mind as I looked up the pager number of the SAC, Marty Weber. A few minutes later he returned my page.

"Hey Marty, Craig Roberts here. What's going on?"

"I don't know, why?"

"I just got a page that someone in your office was looking for me and I thought it must be you."

"No," he answered, "but I'll check it out."

A few minutes later he called back. "It's in regard to the Oklahoma City bombing. We could use some help. We haven't a clue what we are dealing with yet, and now we have this guy McVeigh. We don't know anything about him other than he's supposed to be an army deserter from Fort Riley. We know you have contacts that we don't have, and we thought you might put your mind to this and see what you can come up with."

I thought about this for a second, wondering why they wanted to bring an outsider, a local cop, into the investigation. This was highly unusual. "Marty, just exactly what do you want me to do?"

"You know...just put your head to it and see what you can find out through your own network. Just keep us advised. Who knows, maybe you can write another book."

So that was it. Marty had read two of my books, *Kill Zone: A Sniper Looks at Dealey Plaza* and *Hellhound*, a techno-thriller about middle-eastern terrorists striking a target inside the United States. Evidently some of his other agents had also read one or both, leading to my summons.

"Marty, if you'll make it an official request through the Chief's office, and he approves, I'll dig in and see what I can find out." I had just gone through a political altercation with the chief, as I had just returned from Washington, D.C., where I testified before Congress against the so-called "assault weapons" ban of the Omnibus Crime Act. Though I took vacation days for the trip, and was therefore off duty, I testified in uniform. Though there was no regulation or rule against such activity, and other officers had demonstrated or appeared on behalf of the Crime Bill in uniform, the Chief had political reservations about my trip. This resulted in a week-long media tennis match that ended in a meeting between myself and the Chief to iron out the situation. All turned out well for both sides, and the Chief issued a press release clearing me of any wrongdoing, which just happened to appear on April 19th, 1995, the day the bomb(s) exploded at the Murrah federal building in Oklahoma City. The article took a back page to this new event.

One of the items on the agenda at the meeting I agreed to was to keep the Chief advised of any outside activities that involved police work or "wearing my uniform at a political event."

The FBI request was definitely going to involve outside police work.

By 6:00 p.m. that evening I had received a phone call from the Chief's office "granting permission" to officially assist the FBI. I began the investigation the next day. Little did I realize that I would work with the FBI until April of 1996, when I retired from the police department after 26 years of service, then continue on my own to this writing, and beyond. What began as a simple call for assistance developed into another investigation on the scale of my investigation into the assassination of John F. Kennedy that resulted in my book *Kill Zone*.

What follows is my final report to the FBI that I turned in just prior to my retirement. It will serve to give the reader an explanation of many things that did not appear in the media and an idea of the scope and scale of the event as it actually happened, and was subsequently covered up, by the U.S. Government.

The Report:

THE BOMBING OF THE MURRAH FEDERAL BUILDING
Oklahoma City, April 19th, 1995

An Investigative Report by W.C. Roberts

On Wednesday morning, April 19th, 1995, at approximately 9:02 a.m., Central Time, a huge explosion rocked downtown Oklahoma City. In the minutes and hours that followed, the world came to realize that the worst terrorist strike against a civilian target in history had occurred, in almost the geometric center of the United States.

What followed became one of the greatest investigations, and by far the greatest manhunt, in American history. Only the investigation following the assassination of President John F. Kennedy, and the manhunt for John Wilkes Booth after the assassination of President Abraham Lincoln come close. No resources were spared, and even though the prime suspect, former Army veteran Timothy McVeigh, was captured within eighty minutes of the blast seemingly "escaping" from the area through rural Oklahoma, law enforcement agencies pulled out all stops in an attempt to identify and locate other possible suspects.

At first, the original reports from witnesses described two "middle eastern males" wearing blue jumpsuits or jogging suits as being spotted in the immediate area of the Murrah building. The Media picked up on this lead, and with the FBI and international law enforcement agencies rapidly becoming involved, working feverishly to track any such suspects. A single middle-eastern male was apprehended in London at Heathrow Airport, allegedly with bomb-making materials in his luggage. He had left the U.S. earlier that day and came under immediate scrutiny due to description, age, timing and profile. But within twenty-four hours, he was discarded as a suspect and the media attention immediately shifted direction and focused on "right wing extremists."[216]

Oddly, the media was evidently notified of an impending raid on a rural Michigan farm house to be conducted by federal agents. The resident of the farm was the brother of an acquaintance of Timothy McVeigh, Terry Nichols. McVeigh had been identified as "John Doe One" as he was about to make bond from the county jail in Perry, Oklahoma. He had been apprehended by an Oklahoma State Trooper as he sped north on an interstate highway just over an hour after the bombing. Strangely, his car had no license tag, and when he was stopped, even though armed, offered no resistance. Subsequent investigation led to Terry Nichols, then Nichols' brother James Nichols' farm in Michigan. At this point, a raid to serve a search warrant which should have been low key to media exposure, became a major media event. Network cameras arrived *with the raid force* and set up nearby, using telephoto lenses to record the entry and perimeter teams as they moved into position and proceeded with their search. During this "event" the various news commentators made numerous references to McVeigh's alleged "ties" with the Michigan Militia, described as "an extreme Right Wing fringe radical group."

From this point on, both the investigation and the media centered their enquiries on various right wing organizations, ranging from the Ku Klux Klan and other White-supremacist groups, to the NRA and Christian Coalition.

It rapidly became obvious that the media was being directed, and was not reporting impartially. When independent investigators began to trace the origins of the media, and henceforth the government, focus on the Right Wing (and especially Constitutionalist paramilitary groups and so-called "militia" organizations), what was discovered was self-explanatory. The so-called "experts" in the field of tracking "hate groups" that were feeding the media centered on two organizations: the Anti-Defamation League (ADL) of the B'nai B'rith (described by other Jewish organizations as extremely Left Wing), and the very liberal Southern Poverty Law Center (SPLC), who has reportedly been connected to the ADL. It began to become apparent that these two organizations were using the event in Oklahoma City to their own ends, and to further their own agenda. Evidence of this became apparent as certain liberal politicians, including vociferously anti-gun congressman Charles Schumer of New York, began a massive onslaught through the media against various paramilitary groups, so-called militias, "hate groups," and often Conservative, religious, and Constitutionalist groups in general, including the National Rifle Association, who one reporter attempted to link directly to the bombing by being financially involved.

Meanwhile, the investigation increased in intensity as witnesses were interviewed in various states. From the truck rental in Kansas where McVeigh was reported to have rented the Ryder truck, a composite drawing was made of another individual: John Doe #2. A nationwide manhunt ensued, eventually running down suspects from California to North Carolina, the Great Lakes to the Gulf of Mexico. Still, even though backed by a $2 million reward and hundreds of telephone call takers, law enforcement officers failed to develop but a few significant leads, one leading to Kingman, Arizona, and a third co-conspirator: Michael Fortier, an old army buddy of McVeigh's and Nichols. But Fortier was not John Doe #2, and this portion of the investigation ended when a soldier on leave from Fort Riley, who, with a stretch of the imagination, vaguely resembled the JD-2 sketch, was located, identified, and released as a simple mistaken identity on the part of the witnesses at the Ryder rental.

As the investigation continued, utilizing massive resources from local, state and federal law enforcement, plus independent investigators and investigative journalists, many discrepancies began to appear in the official scenario.

According to the official version of the event, McVeigh, a radical Right Wing loose cannon, planned to attack the U.S. government in revenge for the Waco debacle. He selected the Murrah building after eliminating from his target list two other federal buildings in other cities, then proceeded to recruit Fortier and Terry Nichols to assist with the preparations. Allegedly using funds obtained by selling guns stolen in Arkansas (from an alleged ATF informant who later said that the story was a fabrication), McVeigh bought plastic barrels (blue in color), tons of ammonium nitrate fertilizer, detonation cord, primers, fuse, gallons of some type of fuel oil or diesel fuel, and rented the truck. He and Nichols then took all of this material to a remote location and, by themselves, mixed 2.5 tons of ammonium nitrate and fuel oil in the barrels inside the truck, wrapped them with det cord and time fuse, then McVeigh, by himself, drove the truck to Oklahoma City, parked it in front of the Murrah building, lit the fuse, then ran away to: (1) the yellow Mercury Marquis with no license plate, or (2) a brown GM pickup truck with a smoked glass bug shield on the front end, driven by a dark complected person. All of this was recorded by an ATM video camera (or a Southwestern Bell security camera, or an apartment building camera, depending on which version one reads) and the tape was seized by the FBI and not released to the media, nor excerpts or still prints shown to the public to prove such a tape exists, to assuage any suspicions of a government coverup.

Discrepancies began to develop in the official version of the scenario, and within weeks the matter became extremely controversial in non-mainstream media such as the Internet, newsletters, independent radio shows, shortwave broadcasts, independent newspapers, and other forms of media not tied to the major networks in New York or Los Angeles.

It was at this point that this investigator began attempting to assemble the pieces of the puzzle into a logical pattern. Only by taking all of the information available, filtering out what definitely does not belong, then piecing the mosaic together can one draw a picture, albeit incomplete, of what may have happened. The remainder of this document is written utilizing myriad sources, some of unknown reliability, but many extremely reliable, and contacts both within and without of government circles at local, state and federal level.

Assuming there was a "conspiracy" involved, and that McVeigh and Nichols could not physically (by themselves) do all that had to be done in the time constraints of their activities from the time of the truck rental to the time of the explosion, there would have to be others involved. It would appear, from the information presented on the following pages, that McVeigh and Nichols may be only two members of a "field team" compartmentalized and organized in structured levels. If this is the case, and the following information is even partially correct, the investigation is far from over.

And it goes much higher than McVeigh and Nichols.

Investigatory Techniques Used in this Investigation

What follows is an investigative report (to date) utilizing the standards of:

(1) Follow the money;
(2) Follow the power:
(3) Follow the players;

(4) Look for Linkages, Consistencies, Patterns, and Coincidences (even those that appear remote), and discrepancies that obviously create problems with a final synopsis;

(5) Look for, and attempt to establish, a motive;

(6) Determine who had the means to plan, conduct, and execute the crime, then have the power to possibly influence the resultant investigation;

(7) Observe the outcome of the investigation, was it complete? Did it answer all questions?

The Scene

Shortly after the explosion in Oklahoma City, several events occurred almost simultaneously:

(1) As emergency services responded, two other "bombs" were discovered by investigators and the bomb technicians responded. The first "bomb" was discovered within minutes after the explosion as emergency workers began searching the interior of the building for victims and survivors, and the second within twenty minutes of the first. One was deactivated on site. The status of the second device was not broadcast over television. Both were described as "military canisters," or "devices." Later explanation would be that these were "training" devices left about by the ATF. This explanation did not satisfactorily explain why they were in different spots in the building, far from the ATF offices located on the top floor. Eventually, government media releases would claim that there were no additional devices found, despite numerous eye witness accounts.

(2) Within a very short period it was announced that there had been a "car bomb," possibly filled with ammonium nitrate/fuel oil explosive mixture. But damage to the building, coupled with the size of the crater and secondary damage to surrounding structures, increased the explosive to "truck bomb size." Throughout the morning and into the afternoon, the truck grew in size from a 14 foot truck, to a 28 foot truck. The explosives grew from 1200 lbs to 2400 lbs, then 3200, then 4600. (What is disturbing about this is that in 1985, the IRA in London exploded a large "lorry" filled with over 5,000 lbs of ammonium nitrate/fuel oil explosive in front of a much older, non-reinforced structure, a stacked-block bank building, and the resultant damage was simply front windows being blown out and a much smaller crater in the street).

(3) Within three hours, a fireman on the third floor of the building noted two military box ambulances, unmarked, back up near the building, and saw several men in black or dark fatigues carrying stretchers out to the ambulances from the lower floor or basement of the building. Many of the stretchers had boxes, which appeared to contain papers or documents, and one had what were described as "some type of shoulder-fired missiles or missile tubes."

(4) Many witnesses stated that they heard two to three distinct explosions, the second more powerful than the first. To back this up, two seismograms which

recorded the "event" showed three, not two as reported by the media, distinct markings of equal intensity and duration, approximately ten seconds apart, from two separate locations. A later explanation for this would be that the first event (actually circled was the second event) was the initial explosion, and the second (which was the third event on the graph) was the building collapsing. Later charts, recorded when the building was demolished, refuted this, however. The remainder of the building, much larger than the destroyed section, made almost no marks on the graph when it fell due to demolition charges.

(5) A video tape was reportedly discovered that showed the front of the Murrah building before the explosion, then the truck driving up, then the explosion. The truck was identified as a yellow Ryder truck. The first press release explained that the tape came from a nearby ATM machine, even though no ATM machine is in the area. A separate press release was that it was from a Southwestern Bell security camera. A later report is that it was from a security camera atop a nearby apartment complex (to the west of the building). The "tape," wherever it came from, was seized and has not been shown to the media or general public, which initiated many people to speculate that it either did not exist, or that it did not portray what the media reported. This investigator also found it incredible that this same tape was not shown to the Grand Jury that was formed to indict McVeigh, even after they requested to see it.

(6) Witnesses described two "middle eastern males" wearing blue jump suits or jogging suits "hanging around" the front of the building just before the explosion. These descriptions initiated the terrorist hunt that culminated with an apprehension in London, but was then discredited with little public explanation.

(7) Some witnesses described seeing a dark colored, unmarked helicopter, leaving the rooftop of the building a few minutes before the explosion. Oklahoma City Police Department's two McDonnell-Douglas helicopters (black and silver in color) were on the ground at their base at this time. They did not respond until after the explosion. The origin of this helicopter is unknown, nor are there indications that this lead was followed up on.

(8) The only identifiable part of the Ryder truck discovered is the rear axle, which instead of being blown down into the crater, was "thrown" two blocks away. This axle, originally identified as a GM part with a VIN number, was traced through Ryder in Florida, to a truck rental/body shop in Kansas. However, when GM stated that there are no ID numbers on their truck axles, the truck was changed to "Ford."

Other conflicts arose by the hour as other discrepancies occurred. As federal authorities switched tracks from Islamics to Right Wing radicals, and began to trace McVeigh's movements and associates, outside organizations entered the picture and began to point fingers at political rivals and enemies.

(1) The Anti-Defamation League and the Southern Poverty Law Center immediately begin feeding New York City-based media organizations, including the major news networks, "information" identifying various right wing groups as "hate

groups" capable of inflaming such activities, and indeed possibly "linked" to the occurrence. Both organizations historically take every opportunity to lump Conservative organizations into the same group, from the White Aryan Resistance to the Christian Coalition, and the KKK to the NRA. As each news program and news magazine interview transpired, the public began to notice more and more that the dialogue appeared to be orchestrated, and that political agendas were being served, but only on the left wing. This made many people suspect that the "government" was somehow more involved in the bombing than the media is willing to expose.

The problem at this point for the observer, is the definition of "government." Anyone who suspects involvement by any governmental agent or agency, whether directly involved, or involved by omission or failure to properly perform an investigation, becomes "debunked" as a "conspiracy theorist." The problem with this, like lumping all right wing groups together, is that a conspiracy in this case does exist, with only the extent not known. Therefore there is no "theory." The issue then becomes this: Exactly *who* is involved, and *why*?

To answer this and other questions, the search must follow the previously listed tenets of a proper investigation. To follow the money, the power, and the players, requires a great deal of research into past political events wherein the same names seem to appear, linking events. Though some of what follows does not appear at first to relate to the Oklahoma City bombing, the reader must keep the information in mind as this report progresses to gain a full understanding of the ramifications, and possibilities, of the event. For this, I have discovered that relevant events leading to the Oklahoma City bombing actually appear to have begun in the 1980s.

1985

When the focus of U.S. covert action paramilitary attention changed from Cuba, to Southeast Asia (Laos), to Iran, then back to Central America (where CIA paramilitary operations began in the 1950s), the covert intelligence community adopted the Nicaraguan "Contras" as fighters against Communism and the Marxist government of Nicaragua's Daniel Ortega. But with the Boland Amendment of non-interference, the Agency and NSC ran into problems of finance. This was solved in the same manner as the financing of the Laotian campaign.

In Laos, during the 1960s and '70s, a huge cartel developed around opium trafficking. From the remote tribes of Meo/Hmong who grew the opium poppies, CIA front organizations such as Air America flew the raw opium to collection points within Laos (main base: Long Tieng), then on to Vientienne, where it was processed into pure heroin at the Pepsi-Cola bottling plant (which never bottled any Pepsi). It then left the country through four routes: Hong Kong to San Francisco (picked up by Santos Trafficante's network for distribution inside the U.S.); Air Vietnam to Da Nang and Saigon by Nguyen Cao Ky's distribution network; Singapore to Australia to be handled by the Nugan Hand banking complex representatives; and Bangkok to Marseille, to be distributed by the Corsican Mafia. All proceeds were returned through the Nugan Hand banking complex, but much less actually went back into financing the war. It appears that the majority of the funds went into private accounts after being laundered through Nugan Hand.

After the fall of Vietnam and the U.S. extraction from Laos in 1975, U.S. policy attention shifted to Iran and the Middle East. The same players involved in Laos, and later Vietnam/Operation PHOENIX, showed up in Teheran and Isfahan, Iran. These individuals were instrumental in setting up the Shah's secret police, the Savak, and in selling and trading military equipment and technology for cash and drugs. Two of the individuals involved at this point, Albert Hakim and Edwin P. Wilson, later formed EATSCO (Egyptian American Transport and Services Co.), which, among other things, became involved in the arms-for-hostages efforts of NSC, William Casey, Admiral Poindexter, Richard Secord, Oliver North and others.

After Iran fell to Khomeini and the fundamentalist Moslems, U.S. foreign attention shifted farther west, to Nicaragua. Again, the method of choice for financing the operations became drug trafficking. According to a former member of the CIA team (Terry Reed) and other sources, it worked like this:

Cocaine from the Columbian cartels was flown to Panama, to a Panamanian air force base, where agents of Manual Noriega removed a percentage as their cut (Israeli colonel Michael Harare and Mossad agent Amiram Nir). It was then flown via Corporate Air Service, Ltd., to Illopango Air Force Base in El Salvador and split into three batches: One to be flown to Southern California, the second to Guadalajara, Mexico, where it was to be crated and trucked via land route to Texas, and the last to be flown to Mena, Arkansas, for further distribution. The carrier from Illopango on all three air legs was a Miami-based CIA proprietary air transport company.

It is what happened in Mena that is of interest to this investigation.

Mena, Arkansas, 1982-?

According to Reed (and other sources), cocaine was flown into Mena airport by "Enterprise" pilots coming in from Honduras and El Salvador (on some occasions, from Panama direct). The drugs were then offloaded, then loaded onto smaller aircraft for further distribution within the U.S. Almost all of these smaller airplanes, normally twin engine aircraft, were stolen from private airports and repainted with N numbers registered to similar type aircraft belonging to innocent owners.

According to Reed and other sources, payoff money to Arkansas government officials was flown at night in what were called "green flights" and dropped in duffel bags on property owned by an associate of governor Bill Clinton. The money was then picked up and transported to Little Rock, where it was allegedly laundered through the Rose Law Firm and ADFA (Arkansas Development Finance Authority). Reed goes into detail regarding the money laundering that allegedly connects Rose Law Firm to ADFA, Felix Rodriguez, James and Susan McDougal (Whitewater Development Corporation), Stephens Incorporated (Jackson Stephens of Little Rock), Bert Lance of BCCI, First American Trust, National Bank of Georgia

(Lance), Madison Guaranty S&L, Worthan Bank, and several branches of BCCI. During the Iran/Contra years the FBI, IRS and DEA were investigating the CIA drug running through Mena and other locations. Thousands of pages of investigatory reports were written and kept in Arkansas at the above offices and the U.S. Attorney's office.

1995 Developments

According to information of unknown reliability that has surfaced since the bombing regarding the Mena drug running and money laundering, there is more to the affair than Reed understood when he exposed the Iran/Contra operation to writer John Cummings. Sources have offered bits and pieces of the puzzle that appear to form the following picture:

The key player in the Rose Law Firm money laundering was allegedly Vince Foster. Working as a cut-out under Hillary Clinton and Webster Hubbell, Foster worked through an off-shoot company called Systematics, Inc., allegedly to wire transfer deposits to various small banks around the country, then to a larger bank in Chicago. The funds were then transferred to offshore accounts in the Cayman Islands and Switzerland. At this time Foster allegedly set up a personal numbered Swiss account to handle his "cut."

The proceeds from the drug payoffs allegedly exceeded $50 million, and were supposedly hidden in accounts that if cross-checked, would check to a "Chelsea Jefferson."

When Bill Clinton went to Washington as President, he took Foster and several other associates with him. Foster was named liaison to NSA, a remarkable feat since few of Clinton's staff members could reportedly pass a security background check and therefore receive a security clearance.

According to various sources the Israeli intelligence organization, the Mossad, had been monitoring Foster's activities and had a file on him. Foster, once he became an insider at NSC with access to secrets including codes, was allegedly approached by the Mossad and "made an offer he could not refuse." The Mossad knew of the drug running through Arkansas, having been in on the ground floor during the arms-for-hostages phase of the NSC operation, and even having an agent on hand in Panama during drug transfers and other projects, and providing a design for a replacement weapon for the Contras to be manufactured in Guadalajara by Terry Reed's "machine tool company."

The deal, according to insiders, was simple: Foster was to leak codes and secrets to the Israelis in exchange for their promise to not expose him, his connections with drug running and money laundering for Clinton, and in addition, the Israelis would add to his Swiss bank account, which they had already discovered by means of their very special computer software given them by "someone" in the U.S. government.

Foster, Inslaw, PROMIS, and Michael Riconosciuto

By "following the players," a new individual enters the picture at this point. But to understand his significance, one must backtrack on the time-line to the 1970s.

Stanford graduate physicist and mathematician Michael Riconosciuto, son of a former OSS man (Marshall Riconosciuto), became involved with a project under the Wackenhut Corporation, through a cut-out known as Meridian Arms Company, to develop new weapons and high explosive devices. These experiments were taking place on the small Cabazon Indian Reservation in the middle of the California desert, considered a separate nation by the U.S. government and therefore not directly controlled by federal regulations or firearms laws. It should be noted at this point that among the officials who composed the board of directors for Wackenhut Corporation was William Casey, who eventually became Director, Central Intelligence under President Reagan, and a player in the Iran/Contra affair.[217]

Riconosiuto developed an extremely powerful bomb of small dimensions, one which used a two-phase detonation. The first version, according to former FBI SAC Ted Gunderson, was tested at Nellis Air Force Base at a location near Groom Lake, Nevada. It was so powerful that, according to Riconosciuto, it killed one technician and injured several others. It was after this, and several other unpleasant events centering around Wackenhut, Meridian Arms, FMC Corporation, and various individuals within these organizations, that Riconosciuto left California and attempted his own venture in Washington state dealing with extracting platinum from mine tailings. Before this venture could take off, Riconosciuto was offered a job from a computer software company named Inslaw, Inc. Inslaw had developed a new software program called PROMIS (for Prosecutors Management Information System), which could track data in mainframe computers such as court cases, bank accounts and so on. In actual fact, PROMIS could track virtually anything, but the intended use, by Justice Department contract, was to track drug money laundering and traffic between banks.

Riconosciuto was contracted to develop a "backdoor" in the program, wherein investigators could actually move funds from an illicit account to another depository, like the U.S. Treasury. It could also be used, once installed on someone else's computer system, to explore *their* data from the outside. The CIA was particularly interested in this aspect. By selling this product to other countries, especially their intelligence services, the CIA data ferrets could remotely enter their computer systems, look around and see what was going on, and leave undetected.

A problem developed when the Department of Justice refused to pay the $2.5 million contract fee for the software. Inslaw sued, but went bankrupt with legal fees, even after being granted the sum by one federal judge (who was not reappointed after this decision). Justice never paid, but did distribute the software to "clients" far and wide. One such client was the CIA, who sold it to the Mossad, among others.[218]

It was after this that a small, compartmentalized group within CIA allegedly discovered something very interesting during use of the PROMIS software.

According to message traffic on the Internet, they had routinely entered the Mossad computer system to check on who was being paid as agents when they discovered several payments going to a previously untraced Swiss bank account, under the name Vincent Foster. They followed up on this and discovered the balance of the account to be in excess of $2.5 million. If this is true, it is obvious that Foster did not accumulate this wealth under normal/legal means.[219]

The story at this point indicates that the "word on Foster spying for the Israelis" was leaked to the White House on purpose to see Foster's and the administration's reaction. If this was the case, it is probable that the following scenario may have occurred: Foster is called by a member of the upper echelon of the White House and advised that "The CIA is on to you, something about spying for Israel." Foster panics. He cannot turn to the White House as they now want to divorce themselves from his activities, which would be disastrous if known by the public, especially in relation to the Clinton staff having such difficulty with security clearances in the beginning, and he can't turn to other federal agencies for help. It would only be a matter of time before he was "visited" by the FBI for questioning, and he had no idea how much information they had on him, supplied by this cell of CIA which has no part in Iran/Contra or drug smuggling and money laundering through Arkansas.

Foster decides to "resign" and hope the Clintons can work out the details to keep him out of harm's way. He decides to leave the country, pick up his money in Switzerland, then disappear for an undetermined amount of time until things "blow over."

The problem, according to these reports, is that the CIA team had used Riconosciuto's "back door" to empty Foster's bank account, transferring the money to the U.S. Treasury. When Foster calls Switzerland to prepare the bank for his arrival and withdrawal of a large amount of cash, the bank explains he now has a zero balance.

Broke and with no place to turn, Foster calls the only people he can turn to: the Mossad.

Speculation at this point would probably follow the line that Foster's Mossad contact asks who has talked to him, then if he has been interviewed by the FBI or CIA, and when he reports to the negative, he is told to "meet us tonight in the parking lot (or the "apartment") and we'll take care of everything."

At this point the story becomes convoluted. Foster was found dead in his car in the White House parking lot, then laying on the ground in Fort Marcy Park. He had a gun in his right hand (even though he was left handed); he didn't have a gun when found; the gun was found in his car. The case, a "suicide scene," was not investigated by the FBI, but instead by the Park Department Police. No ballistics evidence was reported, other than a gunshot to the mouth, and very little blood was found at the scene. It was obvious that Foster's body had been placed there after death. And the autopsy showed the powder burns to be on Foster's hands in a pattern that would show a double hand grip over the top of a barrel and cylinder, not the pistol's grip. It was more in line with someone who was trying desperately to pull a gun out of one's mouth, not jam it in. And there was no way he could have pulled the trigger with that particular hand position. The most likely scenario was that he was in his car when two or more people joined him. They either killed him there and left his body in the car, or they drove to an apartment in the D.C. area (possibly "The" apartment where clandestine rendezvous were alleged to occur) then held him while one jammed a gun in his mouth and pulled the trigger, probably with a silencer. In the latter scenario Foster's body was then rolled up in a carpet and taken to the trunk of his car (carpet fibers were found on his suit coat and trousers). He was then taken to Fort Marcy Park and dumped.

No bullet was recovered, so the murder weapon was not the antique .45 caliber revolver that had been sanitized which was found at the scene.

Shortly after Foster's death, his office was raided by White House personnel who carried off boxes of files and documents to upstairs bedrooms for examination. Several credible witnesses have reported this, even though it has been denied by White House staff personnel. It appears that if this occurred, it would be any drug running and money laundering documents that would be of most concern. Even though most of these documents were burned and shredded at the Rose Law Firm during an all-night "house cleaning," certain players would be uncertain exactly what Foster kept out as personal "insurance." It has been speculated that Foster's body was left at the White House by his killers, but was moved after discovery by White House personnel to change the area of the "crime scene." If Foster was discovered in his car in the parking lot, the crime scene would encompass his office, and the files, which would be searched by police or federal investigators.

Oklahoma City Connection?

Besides the "coincidence" of Michael Riconosciuto's appearance in explosives work for Wackenhut/Meridian Arms, and his software development for Inslaw that may have been Vince Foster's undoing, it is possible that his two-phase explosive invention (identified as an Electro-Hydrodynamic Gaseous Fuel Device by former FBI SAC Gunderson) may have been used at the Murrah building.

However, there is another set of circumstances that must be explored that may enter into the investigation. Sources have reported that during the Mena drug smuggling and Iran/Contra affair, the IRS, DEA and FBI investigated the affair and kept records and reports until Clinton moved to Washington. These investigative documents (or copies thereof) were consolidated at the U.S. Attorney's office in Little Rock. But fearing for their safety during the next four years, they were moved out of state. It has been said that they were moved to the Murrah building. If this is true, it sheds a new light on the investigation and the motive. All that would be needed by someone desiring to destroy these documents would be destruction of the building that housed them. According to Israeli sources (not Mossad), this is a typical operation for Islamic Jihad, Hamas, and Hizbollah. Cases in point are the bombings of the embassy building in Beirut, the subsequent bombing of the Marine barracks at the Beirut airport, and the Trade Center bombing in New York. All were truck bombs, with exception in deference to the explosives. The Beirut bombings were Semtex, a Warsaw Pact plastic explosive similar to C-4Cand were entirely successful with a simple truck bomb. The Trade Center was ammonium nitrate and did relatively little damage in comparison.

The Iraqi Connection

Three items should be mentioned at this point that have not been approached by the media, nor by investigators.

At the end of the Gulf War, over 5,000 former Iraqi soldiers (mainly consisting of officers) were transported (illegally) to this country by the Administration for "humanitarian purposes," and resettled at taxpayers expense. This created a massive stir in the veterans organizations, who remembered how may American POWs had been abandoned by our government in past wars, but was only publicized in their magazines. One of the largest groupings of resettled former Iraqi soldiers, coincidentally, became Oklahoma City. This places the Iraqis who were experts in demolition (re: Kuwaiti oil field destruction) in the same vicinity as the bombing.[220]

According to Israeli intelligence, many of these former soldiers joined 28 cells of the Hamas terrorist group and the Islamic Jihad group here in the United States. One of these groups is located in the Oklahoma City/Norman area, and is closely linked to other cells in Dallas/Fort Worth, Houston, Miami, and New York.

The Hussein/Barbouti Connection

An Iraqi national named Ihsan Barbouti, who worked covert operations (mainly logistical) for Saddam Hussein, was an "architect" involved in very "interesting things." He owned an engineering company in Frankfort that had a $552 million contract to build airfields in Iraq, and also designed Moammar Khadaffi's German-built chemical weapons plant in Rabta, Libya. He owns (or owned) $100 million of real estate and oil drilling equipment in Texas and Oklahoma.

In 1969, after the Ba'ath takeover in Iraq which brought Saddam Hussein to power as the second-in-command, Barbouti "escaped" Iraq, resurfacing later in Lebanon and Libya.

Barbouti later invested in two companies in the U.S.: Pipeline Recovery Systems of Dallas, which makes an anti-corrosive chemical that coats and preserves pipes, and Product Ingredient Technology of Boca Raton, which makes food flavorings. He attempted to invest in a third company, TK-7, which is located in Oklahoma City and makes a fuel additive, but the deal fell through when the Gulf War started and Iraqi assets were frozen.

These are important because TK-7 had formulas that could extend the range of jet aircraft and liquid-fueled missiles (such as the SCUD), and Pipeline Recovery who knew how to make pipe coatings that were useful in nuclear reactors and chemical weapons plants. Product Ingredient Technology made cherry flavoring, which uses ferric ferrocyanide, a chemical that's used to manufacture hydrogen cyanide (which can penetrate gas masks, and was use to kill the Kurds in Northern Iraq).

Barbouti had the companies ship their products to corporations he owned in Germany, which in turn shipped them to Libya and Iraq, all of which was illegal.

In 1989, Barbouti met in London with Ibrahim Sabawai, Saddam Hussein's half brother and European head of Iraqi intelligence. Sabawai made sure the products and production technology was rushed to Iraq to be in place by 1990. According to the former owner of Oklahoma City's TK-7, Iraq was developing an atomic device for Khadaffi that would be used against the United States in retaliation for the 1986 U.S. air strike against Libya.

According to a Nightline broadcast, a New Orleans exporter named Don Seaton, a business associate of Richard Secord, assisted Barbouti with the "exporting" of the products. Secord allegedly connected Barbouti with Wackenhut. Barbouti met with Secord in Florida (headquarters state of Wackenhut) on several occasions, and phone records show that several calls were placed from Barbouti's office to Secord's private number in McLean, Virginia. Secord has since acknowledged knowing Barbouti. During the Bush administration, Secord was business partner with James Tully and Jack Brennan (former aide to Nixon), who were involved in a $181 million business deal to supply uniforms to the Iraqi army which they contracted through Nicolae Ceaucescu's Romania prior to his execution. The partners in this particular deal were former U.S. attorney general John Mitchell and Sarkis Soghanalian, a Turkish-born citizen who had been Saddam Hussein's leading arms procurer who introduced Super Cannon builder Gerald Bull to the Iraqis. Soghanalian later sold 103 military helicopters to Iraq illegally, was caught, and served six years in prison in Miami.

In 1990, 2,000 gallons of ferrocyanide were stolen from the Boca Raton plant, right under the noses of the security guards. The security was provided by Wackenhut.

It should be noted that Wackenhut only had one guard on duty at the plant during the times of the theft, a ten day period in 1990. For this one guard, Wackenhut was paid by Barbouti four checks: $168.89 on March 27th, $24,828.07 on March 28th, $756.00 on April 5th, and $40,116.25 on April 6th! Quite a sum for one minimum wage security guard.

According to research, two former CIA operatives stated Wackenhut helped Barbouti ship chemicals to Iraq, and that Barbouti "was placed in the hands of Secord and the CIA, and Secord called in Wackenhut to handle security and travel and protection for Barbouti and his export plans." Wackenhut was doing a contract for the CIA and allegedly helped ship chemical and nuclear weapons-making material first to Texas, then Chicago, then Baltimore where it was shipped overseas. (This shipment was investigated by Customs and USDA).

Remember that Wackenhut formed a front company called the "Meridian Arms Corporation" and set it up on the Cabazon Indian Reservation at Indio, California, to build explosive devices, chemical and biological weapons, and other items. Former FBI agent Ted Gunderson believes the explosive device used at the Murrah Building may have been developed by Meridian on a design invented by Michael Riconosciuto (who Gunderson knows and says programmed the back door into Inslaw's PROMIS software for Department of Justice), who is now in prison. Also note that Wackenhut has been involved with other strange deals involving explosives and weapons. In the 1980s Wackenhut tried to buy a weapons propellant manufacturer in Quebec, but was turned down by Prime Minister Trudeau who stated "We just got rid of the CIA, we don't want them back." Then we have this: William Corbett, a terrorism expert who was in the CIA for 18 years (and now works for ABC News in Europe) said "For years Wackenhut has been involved with the CIA and other intelligence organizations, including the DEA. Wackenhut would allow the CIA to occupy positions within the company in order to carry out clandestine operations."

Wackenhut also became involved in Iran/Contra arms deals. In 1981, Wackenhut formed the "Special Projects Division," which in turn linked up with ex-CIA agent John Phillip Nichols to set up Meridian Arms on the Cabazon reservation, out of view of Congress, and henceforth the Boland Amendment (non-interference in Central America). Representatives of the Contras came to the reservation to see weapons being demonstrated, then gave recommendations on what to send to Honduras for use in El Salvador.

One of the men hired to provide security analysis for the Florida chemical plant owned by Barbouti was Peter Kawaja, a former federal agent. Kawaja, who has become a Gulf War Disease activist, has stated that both chemical and biological warfare weapons were shipped to Iraq prior to the Gulf War, and that many of these weapons were used on U.S. and allied troops by Hussein. He further states that thousands of documents that detail the Gulf War Syndrome cases and government involvement with both production and shipment, and the disease aftermath, were removed from Houston, Texas, and sent to the Murrah building for "safe keeping." If this is true, could it be possible that the Mena drug smuggling investigation records and the Gulf War Disease records were deposited in the Murrah building together for a reason other than safe keeping? According to federal sources, the records were "destroyed" in the blast.

The Question of ATF Foreknowledge

Several questions have been posed by various individuals concerning whether or not the Oklahoma City office of the ATF had a warning or foreknowledge of the bombing. Some local media sources have reported several items of interest, including:

(1) McVeigh was supposedly seen eating dinner three nights before the bombing with John Doe #2 (an Iraqi), a paid ATF informant, and an ATF agent. It was

speculated that McVeigh might have also been a paid informant for the ATF, hence his wanderings at gunshows and visitations to militia meetings.

(2) An eyewitness reported seeing strange activities in front of the Murrah building in the early morning hours of April 19th. He reported driving down the street, arriving to the street in front of the Murrah building, then being directed by someone "directing traffic" to move to one lane as he passed the building. This individual was not a police officer, but was standing next to a marked unit of some type with a "stripe around it, kind of like an Military Police car." As this witness passed, he noted several people on the sidewalk in front of the building with "hoop-like devices, like small 'hula hoops', held over their heads, turning in different directions." His description matches that of ADF direction finding equipment antennas that are used to home in on an electronic emission source, or search for a given emitter of a certain frequency within range of the receiving unit.

As this individual passed, a roadblock was set up behind him and the street was shut off from approaching traffic, which was then diverted. No explanation for this activity was given.

(3) John Doe #2, according to KFOR TV, Oklahoma City, is an Iraqi officer and former member of the Hammurabi Division of the Republican Guard, who was brought in to the U.S. from the POW resettlement program, who lived in north Oklahoma City, and drove a brown pickup truck with a smoked glass bug shield, matching the description of one of McVeigh's reported getaway vehicles. Several eye witnesses saw this individual (later identified by Channel 9 in Oklahoma City, and the *Daily Oklahoman* as Iraqi ex-POW Alhussaini Hussain) with McVeigh previous to the bombing, with McVeigh in the truck when they asked directions to the Murrah Building at Johnny's Tire Store, and standing by the Ryder truck across the street from the post office one block from the Murrah building as they waited for a parking place in front of the building. Other witnesses saw this individual exit the Ryder truck with McVeigh in front of the building, then speed away with him in the yellow Marquis with the license tag (described as a *white* tag, not a brown Arizona tag) dangling from the back of the car. The sketches of John Doe #2 closely resemble this individual. Later interviews conducted with this person discovered that he now required an interpreter, even though witnesses state he spoke English on earlier occasions. The interpreter he provided coincidentally is the Jordanian, Abraham Ahmad, who was apprehended on Day Two in London at Heathrow airport as a bombing suspect that had flown to England that day and was returned to the U.S. for questioning, then released. It was this individual who, after being questioned, mysteriously prompted Clinton to announce "there is no middle eastern connection, period." (paraphrased)[221]

(4) A Ryder truck, according to media sources, was seen after the blast two blocks away in an alley. The reporters were being escorted by Oklahoma City firemen around the perimeter, which had been cordoned off, when a Ryder truck was discovered. As they passed the truck, men in black fatigues with no markings came out of a building, got into the truck and drove away. Information that surfaced

in January 1996, however, indicates that there were two Ryder trucks rented in Kansas. One was rented by McVeigh, and another was rented by John Doe #2, accompanied by a heavy-set white male with a beard. This second truck was seen at a motel one mile from the motel McVeigh stayed in Junction City, Kansas, during the same days McVeigh was there. A heavy-set white male with a beard was also seen with McVeigh, working around the Ryder truck, in the parking lot of the motel where he stayed.

(5) KFOR reported that a still photo leaked to their station from the seized video tape showed a UPS truck, not a Ryder truck, parked in the spot at 9:00.04. It is probable that this UPS truck was in the parking place where the Ryder truck eventually parked. As McVeigh and John Doe #2 waited across the street from the post office, one block west of the Murrah building, two "dark complected middle-eastern males in blue jumpsuits or coveralls" reported by several eye witnesses, stood near the front door of the Murrah building. It is probable that when the UPS truck left the curb, one of these two individuals signaled McVeigh while the other kept the parking place open until the Ryder truck was repositioned. Once this was done, McVeigh and John Doe #2 left the cab of the truck and hurriedly crossed the street to the pre-positioned Mercury Marquis. They then hastily left the parking lot, almost striking another witness who closely observed McVeigh and JD-2, then noted the white license tag dangling on the back of the car by one bolt. At the same time the two dark complected males left the area in the brown GM pickup truck which had been parked by the curb a few spaces east (in front of) of the Ryder truck.

(6) Several stations reported that on Day One the rescue operation was shut down for an extended period of time, and all rescuers were moved outside of the perimeter while "federal agents" came in and removed boxes of records/files for "national security reasons." When questioned, considering rescue efforts were still underway and people were still trapped under rubble, the FBI spokesman, Gene Pogue, stated "It's unfortunate." (Question: Could these be the missing Mena and Whitewater records moved from Little Rock?)

(7) In late August it was released that an "extra leg" had been found and could not be tied to any of the victims. The leg, complete with combat boot and camouflage trouser material, embedded with blue plastic fragments matching the "explosives barrels" allegedly used by McVeigh in the truck, supposedly was that of a black female. This does not match any of the known victims.

(8) A KPOC television, Ponca City, Oklahoma, investigative team interviewed the truck rental in Kansas and discovered that McVeigh and another person, possibly John Doe #2Chad rented the truck while a third person waited in the car outside. The third person was described as dark complected, and may have been a female. They also discovered that McVeigh and two other people stopped at a coffee shop after visiting the truck rental and were all seen there by patrons.

(9) According to some media sources, the Oklahoma City office of the ATF was on an all-night stakeout the night before the bombing. What was the stakeout location? Was it possibly the Murrah building? If so, did the ATF have

foreknowledge of the planned bombing and decide to make the "big arrest" when the bomber showed up? Was McVeigh actually the informant, working on the inside of the group?

(10) If the above (9) has any substance, something apparently went wrong. It has been speculated that the truck was supposed to arrive at 3:30 a.m., when the building was vacant. But McVeigh, or the driver, whoever it may have been, got lost and did not arrive until just before 9:00 a.m. The ATF, realizing by 6:30 a.m. that it was a "no show," had gone home. This would explain the lack of ATF agents in the office at the time of the blast.

(11) To add credence to the "foreknowledge" aspect concerning federal agencies, the Tulsa Police Department received a request to "watch" a Ryder rental truck identical to the one alleged to contain a bomb at the Murrah building. This request came the afternoon after the bombing. When a field lieutenant queried the dispatcher regarding the assignment, asking what tie-in the truck had, and where the information came from, he was told: "The information came from the same source that warned the Feds about the Murrah building, which they didn't take seriously at the time." This means that someone (John Doe #2?) did, in fact, warn some federal agency of the bombing in advance.

(12) Later reports from a McVeigh Grand Jury member were published that stated that a second Ryder truck had cropped up, in Kansas, being driven by John Doe #2, who stayed in a motel one block away from McVeigh during the same time frame McVeigh was in Kansas. This may have been the truck suspected to be in Tulsa at an east Tulsa apartment complex, or possibly the one seen by witnesses a few blocks away from the Murrah building at the same time as the McVeigh truck was pulling up out front. In this second sighting witnesses saw two males in the cab of the truck, one white and one hispanic or "Arabian."

Militia Ties?

Within 48 hours of the blast, just after Abraham Ahmad was hastily released after a brief period of "questioning" by the FBI, the media shifted its attention from the middle-eastern terrorist scenario to so-called Right Wing militias, described in the same sentence as "fringe radical hate groups." Extreme efforts were made by mainstream "reporters" to connect McVeigh with the militia movement, in particular the Michigan Militia. Though McVeigh may have attended one of their meetings, no one could remember him being there, and he later stated that he was never at one of their meetings and was not a member. Backtracking this series of events leads back to the Anti-Defamation League of the B'nai B'rith and the Southern Poverty Law Center, both of which have been designated "experts" on right wing and "hate groups" by the New York City-based mainstream media.

Anyone who has researched the militia movement and other non-paramilitary groups considered part of the "Patriot" movement, will quickly realize the ADL assertions are not only flawed, but appear to be highly slanted, inflated propaganda.

The profile of those in these movements would match people who would *guard* the Federal buildings, not attack them. Instead of forming to overthrow the government, as the ADL and SPLC suggests, they appear to form to be a local home-guard to resist unconstitutional moves by government officials and agencies. Such moves may be real or imagined, but the fear exists, thus the formation and growth of the movements.

What is highly unusual about this investigation is the fact that the first information available concerning suspects seen by eye witnesses reflected a definite middle-eastern terrorist connection. This aspect *should* have brought the ADL to the forefront proclaiming the fact that now the "Arab Terrorists" that Israel had had to face for so long, were now initiating terrorist atrocities inside the United States. To the ADL, which has been termed a political arm of the Mossad by former Israeli intelligence sources, this should have been a supreme opportunity to make a point: "Our enemy is now your enemy." What is highly suspect is that this did not happen. Instead, the ADL and SPLC, ignoring all actual evidence and witness statements, shifted the public attention totally away from the actual suspect groups. In most criminal investigations this would indicate intimate knowledge of the act, or complicity in the act itself. Even though McVeigh was the only so-called "Right Wing Radical" involved, according to eye witnesses and all investigators in the field, the ADL and SPLC-advised media shifted the focus completely away from the obvious suspects. The question, of course, is why?

The "Elohim City" Connection

During the course of the investigation information surfaced regarding records indicating McVeigh made at least two telephone calls to a covenant community on the Arkansas/Oklahoma border known as "Elohim City." Investigation into this matter produced the following information:

McVeigh met a member of the Elohim City group at a gunshow, possibly in Tulsa. This member was a German national named Andress Strassmeir. "Andy" Strassmeir is an interesting character, as he managed to enter the U.S. without a place to stay, and succeeded in living in this country, with no means of support, for four years on a six month visa unmolested by the INS. It has been determined that the federal agencies knew of Strassmeir's presence, however were not interested in apprehending or deporting him.

Strassmeir was the "security officer" for Elohim City, a covenant community founded by a Robert Millar (WM-66). Millar's small group accepts offshoot Christian separatists and others indicating a desire to join their community whose beliefs do not conflict with their own. In the past those who would not conform to their doctrine were evicted from their community. It appears, however, that the group became subject to close scrutiny in the following manner.

Strassmeir lived on a credit card for four years, without having to make payments. He is the son of Gunther Strassmeir, the assistant secretary of state under

Helmut Kohl for Germany. He is also reportedly a member of the Mossad-trained GSG-9, the German anti-terrorist police formed after the Munich massacre, and had served in the German army as a lieutenant that worked in military intelligence. It has been reported that Strassmeir was sent into this country to infiltrate neo-Nazi and White Supremacist groups (including the KKK, which is also an ADL/Mossad objective). He did this by using neo-Nazi contacts in Germany to "introduce" him to leaders in the White Aryan Resistance (WAR) movement. It is unknown how the connection was made with the Elohim City separatists, but he eventually ended up infiltrating their organization and establishing himself as a military and weapons expert. In this capacity he convinced the residents that they had to form a "militia" for self defense, had to trade their hunting firearms for military-style weapons, then proceeded to teach them martial arts, military tactics and marksmanship. It should be noted at this time that the actual leader of the community was a former Covenant, Sword and Arm of the Lord (CSA) leader named James Ellison. Ellison served as state's witness against the main CSA leader, Richard Wayne Snell, and thirteen other "White Supremacists" who went to trial for sedition and the killing of an Arkansas state trooper in 1988. Note that Richard Snell was executed on April 19th, 1995Cthe same day the Murrah building was bombed. Ellison married Millar's 14 year-old daughter and effectively took control of the community, using Strassmeir as "security chief." It should also be noted at this point that Ellison and Snell had made statements as early as 1984 that they "planned to blow up the Murrah building."[222]

Strassmeir left the country about eight weeks after the bombing, just after a connection was made through telephone record searches of McVeigh's activities showed that he called Elohim City looking for Andy Strassmeir. According to information received on 27 January, 1996, McVeigh was making contact with Strassmeir. The connection between McVeigh, Strassmeir, and GSG-9 now becomes apparent. The questions at this point are: (1) Was Strassmeir more than an intelligence gatherer, and was he an "agent provocateur"? (2) Was Strassmeir McViegh's "control"? (3) Was the GSG-9 or German intelligence working, as in the past, with the Mossad (and subsequently the ADL) to gather intelligence on neo-Nazis, WAR, KKK and etc.? and (4) Was the information developed by Strassmeir relayed to federal agencies to conduct a sting operation that ended up going bad when a surveillance effort failed to stop the bombing?

It should be kept in mind that there are several Arkansas connections. Among these are: (1) Elohim City is near the Arkansas/Oklahoma border, not far from Mena; (2) WAR has a large following in western and northwestern Arkansas; (3) CSA had its "compound" in the area and its federal trial in Fort Smith; (4) A license tag found one mile from the point McVeigh was stopped on the same highway (95 Arkansas PTA-811Ca *white* tag) had been stolen from Fort Smith a few days before the bombing (and soon after being reported as found disappeared from the computer records in Arkansas and NCIC); (5) McVeigh allegedly stole guns from a person in the Fort Smith area. It should also be remembered that Mena is in the region, and was selected as a gun and drug running airhead because of its remoteness and the "leave us alone" attitude of the local residents.

The Mexican Connection

Shortly after the Murrah bombing, information was received (May 8, 1995) from sources in Texas that a subject named "Arbego Garcia or Garcia Arbego" (spelling unknown at the time) was involved in the bombing as a "cash provider" for the event. The source said that "Arbego" sent two Mexican nationals to Oklahoma City with a satchel full of cash to finance the bombing. "Arbego" was allegedly a Mexican Mafia chieftain involved in the cocaine and heroin trafficking through Mexico from Guadalajara to Texas. He allegedly was the ground transportation link during the Iran/Contra Mena affair.

I forwarded this information to both the FBI (Tulsa) and the DEA (Oklahoma, Tulsa office) and asked for each to check their files and/or computers, using various spellings, to see if they had heard of such an individual. Neither replied back that they had knowledge of this individual and no further action was taken. [Author's note: In actual fact, the FBI's response was that as far as they knew, no such person existed because "we don't know him. Never heard of him."]

On May 9th, 1995, I followed up the original information with a memo containing all information I received from my source, who was relaying it from a former Texas law enforcement officer who had investigated "Arbego" and several high ranking Texas government officials, and who subsequently testified against them. These officials included a high ranking Texas national guard officer on state staff, and two relations, all of which had extensive special ops training, which allegedly included service in the PHOENIX assassination program conducted in the later years of the Vietnam war.

Later information arrived, with the source now using proper spelling, that (quoting): "Abrego's contact in Texas was a former Colonel...There are three brothers in this particular family. All three had special ops training, were involved in Project Phoenix...one or more involved with the 'Company.' One or more were on a Wet Team...One is or was a professor at Rice University. Two are, or were, fugitives. These boys are the link to Abrego and Texas. Very bad. Abrego probably set up to silence him like Noriega. He was part of same drug importation ring during Iran/Contra and after. Clinton's boys and committee followers have got to get rid of the main contacts to the Mena mess and anyone so associated."

On Tuesday, January 17th, 1996, Juan Garcia Abrego, 51, was extradited from Mexico, where he was arrested in Monterrey on Sunday, January 15th, to Houston to face federal charges of smuggling billions of dollars worth of cocaine into the U.S. Facing a 20 count indictment, he was arraigned on February 2nd. During the arraignment testimony indicated that Abrego's network smuggled $20 billion worth of cocaine into the U.S. every year, and budgeted $50 million to bribe U.S. officials.

The source indicated that even the Texas governor's office was involved in taking bribe money.

Abrego was involved in the Iran/Contra drug smuggling operation that had entry points in Los Angeles (via CIA-sponsored Contra officers to LA street gangs for further dispersal); Mena, Arkansas; Omaha, Nebraska; and other cities in the Midwest (via the Abrego land route) such as Houston, Dallas, Oklahoma City, etc.

Abrego is a member of the Columbian Cali cartel, which shipped 30% of the cocaine used in the U.S.

Abrego was number three on the FBI's "Ten Most Wanted" list since March of 1995Ca month before the Murrah bombing and almost two months previous to my original enquiry to the DEA and FBI in which I was told that Abrego did not exist!

It has now been alleged that the records in the Murrah building that were salvaged for reasons of "national security" on Day One may have tied Abrego in with the Mena drug smuggling, along with "other" players up to, and including, the highest levels of government.

It should be noted that former CIA Chief of Station Theodore Shackley, who (with his assistant Thomas Clines) set up the Laotian heroin smuggling operation in Laos during the war in Southeast Asia, now lives in Bogota, Columbia, and is rumored in intelligence circles to be responsible for forming the Cali and Medillin cartels for the purposes of smuggling cocaine and marijuana into the U.S. to support certain compartmentalized CIA covert operations with a source for black funding. The route of smuggling cocaine and marijuana by the "Enterprise" as it was called at the time, was from Bogota, to Panama (where Manual Noriega and Mossad agent Amiram Nir and Israeli colonel Michael Harare took their respective cuts), to Illopango Air Base in El Salvador, where it was divided into three routings. These routings took the drugs via air to the Los Angeles area, Mena, and to Guadalajara. The drugs at Guadalajara were then transported by truck in crates stenciled "machine tools" to Matamoros, Mexico, then across the border to Brownsville, Texas. Abrego handled this route.

The Cebu City Connection and Nichols' Expenditures

It has been reported that in the two years leading up to the bombing, suspect Nichols expended in excess of $60,000 in expenses traveling to the Philippines. His destination was Cebu City, on the island of Cebu. Cebu is the home of international terrorism in the western Pacific, and includes cells of communist, anti-communist, and Islamic terrorists.

After Nichols' arrest, he left a note to his Filipino wife to look behind a false back of a dresser drawer for an envelope. The contents were hers to keep. The contents proved to be $20,000 in cash.

Nichols had no consistent means of income during that period, and allegedly received this money from McVeigh, who had no job. McVeigh was obviously receiving funding from an outside source, which appears to be a typical "black bag" operation. $80,000 is far more than the duo would have received in trafficking in stolen guns from a single burglary, even if the burglary had occurred.

Anti-Terrorist Legislation and "Cui Bono"

Following close in the aftermath of the bombing was a rapid resurgence of the Foreign and Domestic Terrorism Prevention Act, which had lain dormant previous to the event. The major proponents of the act, which increases federal agency capabilities to conduct surveillance, monitor paramilitary groups, and arrest for a myriad of crimes the same, are organizations that can use the act (such as the ADL and SPLC), once it becomes law, to monitor, harass or attack any rival group that they can cast media attention on as terrorists. It also creates a system of national police by giving added powers to federal authorities, thereby increasing their number of personnel and annual budget.

Synopsis of this Report

As stated at the beginning, several questions had to be answered in an effort to further, if not complete, this investigation. One of the main questions was "Who Benefited?"

First, it becomes obvious that under close scrutiny, especially in light of the events that followed the bombing and the reactions of so-called Right Wing Radicals and militia types, that such an act was the worst thing that could have happened to them and their various "causes." Almost all that were interviewed were both shocked and enraged that anyone would perpetrate such an activity. Still, they became the focus of negative media attention for an extended period, and even investigated by a Congressional sub-committee concerning whether or not they were a "threat to national security."

In the end, not one "right wing" group benefited from the Oklahoma City bombing. Nor could any such group be connected in any way to the event, despite the efforts of the media and select special interest organizations.

However, when the investigation into motives shifts to other possible benefactors, three main groupings seem to become apparent: (1) Drug traffickers and money launderers; (2) Radical Left Wing political organizations, and (3) Certain government bureaucracies currently under investigation. This last is added because it is one of the main focuses of attention by the various citizen's groups and organizations that consider such agencies as the BATF an out-of-control oppressive entity.

The question is in what way to these various entities benefit?

Drug Traffickers and Money Launderers:

(1) If the records from the Mena drug smuggling operation were moved to the Murrah building from Little Rock (or duplicates kept there after originals were

previously destroyed or disappeared), then it would prove very beneficial to those about to come under congressional investigation in the following months (May-June '95) to have those records destroyed, or seized and moved for later destruction.

(2) If records implicated Arkansas and international companies that hold ties to covert paramilitary operations (such as Iran/Contra and international drug smuggling), both past and present, then a covert action activity to destroy or "capture" the records is not out of the question.

(3) Two weeks after the bombing, a fireman videotaping the relief efforts accidentally stumbled upon a very suspicious activity behind the Oklahoma City post office, located cater-corner to the Murrah building. Having visited the post office on Day One to tape the relief supplies located in the rear of the building, he had noted a temporary wall and locked door that separated the supply area from another part of the large room. He asked his federal agent "guide" what was behind the wall, and was told that it was mail "that had not been checked" that was being held until it could be screened. The agent did not say what the mail was being "checked" for. On Day Ten the fireman returned to the post office as he video taped subsequent relief efforts and discovered that two all-white unmarked trucks, similar to Ryder box trucks, were backed up to the post office loading area on the west side of the building, and several men in black fatigues appeared to be guarding them. He was told immediately by his FBI "guide" to "put the camera on the ground and do not film this." He complied and stood by to observe the activity. As he watched, he could see that each truck had many SWAT-types dressed in black, wearing black ski masks, carrying submachine guns, standing guard in cordons that ran between the back of the trucks and the post office building. Outside of these shoulder-to-shoulder lines were agents in plain clothes who wore unmarked blue nylon jackets and carried hand-held radios. Several of the blue-jacketed agents were busy loading the trucks with boxes that they were carrying from the post office back room that the fireman had previously noted. He described the boxes as "cardboard file boxes full of documents." Once loaded, the trucks departed the area under guard. Before he was allowed to leave the disaster scene at the end of the day the personnel at the FBI command post watched his entire videotape to make sure the above scene was not recorded. It is possible that the mystery documents were those which were removed on Day One, and then were held at the post office until they could be safely removed to another holding area, or destroyed, depending upon who moved them.

Left Wing Political Action Groups/Entities

(1) Such an event (the bombing) would provide a great boost to sagging liberal policy, considering what has happened since November, 1994. When the power shifted in Congress from the Left to the Right, many things began to happen. One of these was the second look at portions of the Omnibus Crime Bill (such as the ban on so-called assault weapons), the Brady Law, and other previous liberal victories. With the exception of a handful of liberal congressmen and senators, the attack on

the NRA, the Christian Coalition, and other conservative groups slowed in intensity to virtually a trickle of what had previously been on the agenda. But immediately after the bombing, this attack renewed its strength.

(2) The dormant Anti-Terrorism bill was revived, inflated, and put on the fast track to passage, a mainstream liberal (and Clinton) objective.

(3) Focus of attention shifted from investigations into Whitewater, Waco, Ruby Ridge, Mena, ATF conduct, and the death of Vincent Foster, all originally scheduled to begin congressional investigations four weeks after the bombing, to "more pressing issues."

(4) Media preparation of the "mind of the public" to accept laws that infringe on the Constitution and Bill of Rights. Shortly after the bombing several polls were conducted asking the question: "How many of your rights would you be willing to give up to be secure from terrorism?" A great number of people responded with "some."

(5) A new "Barbarian at the Gate" in the form of "militias" was created in the media, giving citizens a "domestic threat" to worry about. This follows the typical Hegelian Principle of creating a problem to force a solution not readily accepted by the subject previous to creation of the problem. As an example, one can observe the media and politicians connect guns and drugs. Drugs, according to them, are the problem, but the solution is to take away the guns. This obviously has little, if any, correlation, but the end objective is to use the government-induced "drug problem" as a means of reducing the number of firearms in the hands of the citizenry. Massive amounts of data is available that links various government entities and agencies to drug smuggling. In fact, it was President Clinton that, besides being linked to Iran/Contra drug smuggling, dismantled the drug intervention program shortly after his inauguration.

(6) The Anti-Defamation League and Southern Poverty Law Center benefited by utilizing the media to draw attention to their causes, attack their perceived "enemies", the ADL-identified "hate groups", and bolster their liberal following (and subsequently their financial contributions). Also, the ADL's actions after the bombing created a diversion away from further Iran/Contra exposure to Israel's participation in cocaine smuggling (into the U.S.) and drug profiteering. This issue might, if exposed to the American people, affect American foreign aid to Israel (estimated at $3.5 million per day). This might explain why the ADL and SPLC attempted to use the media to divert attention away from the actual perpetrators.

Government Bureaucracies Under Investigation

(It would be remiss to not mention those government bureaucracies and sub-organizations suspected by many citizens as benefactors of the bombing)

(1) Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms: The BATF, after the failed raid at Waco, the Ruby Ridge debacle (which cost the government/taxpayers $3.5 million in the subsequent wrongful death suit), and other reported "abuses of power," was to

come under government/congressional investigation in the summer months. It was rumored that steps were being considered to disband the BATF. Also to occur in May were the scheduled Waco hearings. It has been reported that the Waco investigative documents and all documents seized from the Mount Carmel site were kept in files at the Murrah building. Also, *if* the story of the stake-out on the Murrah building to "catch the bomber" has substance, and due to timing such did not occur and the bomb *did* explode after the ATF went off duty, it would be extremely awkward for ATF personnel to come forward in the aftermath and explain why they issued no warning to other agencies and building occupants. At this point the question on "which Federal agency received advance warning from the source that provided the information to Tulsa PD?" must be asked. It has been reported that the BATF in Oklahoma City received advance warning that there was a bomb threat on the building. Could this be the same source? If so, it must be asked if the BATF might be guilty of inaction.

(2) FBI: The FBI would not have benefited. FBI did not have an office in the building, and other than possible references to activities in Waco in the Waco reports/documents, had no connection. FBI investigated the Mena affair, and destruction or loss of such documents would have been detrimental.

(3) DEA: DEA would not have benefited. DEA investigated the Mena affair, and went to great lengths to protect their sources and documents for later use. Destruction or loss of these documents would have been detrimental.

CONCLUSION

It should be apparent to the investigator that McVeigh and Nichols, virtually unassisted, could not have planned, provided for, financed, and executed the bombing by themselves. Much has been written by explosives experts and professional investigators concerning the lack of capability of the single truck bomb, containing only 4600 pounds of ammonium nitrate explosive mixture, to do the damage that was accomplished.

Little is known about McVeigh's activities since he left the Army in 1992. It is possible that he was identified by a "recruiter" during his military service during the Gulf War or shortly thereafter, and was subsequently recruited into the covert intelligence community.

If this is the case, then it becomes apparent that many "theories" concerning the Oklahoma City bombing appear more valid. Examples: There were military high-explosive devices inside the building; McVeigh was working with the BATF to help apprehend the actual "bombers"; a contract "wet-team" organized and executed the bombing to destroy records, inflame public sentiment for political expediency, and embarrass the conservative politicians in power in Congress; drug trafficking and money laundering by the covert intelligence organizations would not be exposed by hard evidence; and other theories and items of suspicion.

Still, one cannot disregard the initial thrust of the investigation linking a middle-eastern connection to the bombing. It has been determined since the event that a "holy Jihad" has been declared against the United States, and that orders have been given to various Hamas, Hizbollah and Islamic Jihad cells in this country to "bring down towers, buildings of finance, buildings with women and children, and other targets" to show the "infidels" that no one is safe from the Jihad. This Jihad can be traced to three countries: Iran, Iraq, and Libya, all supported by clandestine Russian advisors. In fact, an interview with the daughter of a PLO officer exposed the fact that a PLO office exists in Mexico City, and that many POL and middle eastern males passed through the office on their way to America to participate in the Jihad. She stated that they were taught by the Russians, equipped by Islamic Jihad organizations, then sent to destroy buildings and other targets. She also said that the Russians told them to "use American neo-fascists to do the jobs, so they get the blame." When questioned, she explained that the Russians called American neo-Nazis neo-Fascists.[223]

The end result, whether it was a covert operation to destroy records and inflame the public, or an attack by Islamic Jihad terrorists, or a combination of both, is that it appears that other, much higher entities than McVeigh and Nichols are involved.

The investigation should not stop, or even slow down, with the apprehension of McVeigh and Nichols as the only suspects. With leads into the Right Wing, Christian, Constitutionalist, Militia, Patriot, NRA, Conservative, and other groups, with the exception of WAR and the Elohim City/Strassmeir connection, not developing anything of substance, it is now time to explore the other side of the political spectrum.

It is the opinion of this writer that the investigation is far from over.

END OF REPORT

I submitted this report shortly before I retired. My investigation, however, was far from complete. Since then I, along with a team of other investigators, have discovered even more frightening information linking possible covert operations to the Oklahoma City bombing. But one item should be kept in mind above all else, what ever happened to the search for John Doe #2?

In actual fact, there are at least eight "John Does" linked to this case: McVeigh (John Doe #1), JD-2 in the Ryder truck with him, the dark complected person in the car in Junction City Kansas, the heavy- set white male "biker-type" with the beard in Junction City, another "McVeigh" and passenger in a second Ryder truck seen in the Brick Town section of Oklahoma City at the same time the first Ryder truck was pulling to the curb in front of the Murrah Building, the two "Middle-Eastern types" in blue jogging suits at the Murrah building, and a swarthy male who drove the yellow Marquis get-away car from the parking lot north of the Murrah building.

I cannot go into a great deal of information regarding this case in this book. It would take an entire book in its own right to do the case justice. But I can close this chapter with a set of interesting facts for the reader to peruse.

I offer the parallels between Timothy McVeigh and Lee Harvey Oswald, and the Murrah Building crime scene and Dealey Plaza. I wrote and published the following article in *Assassination Chronicles* magazine (JFK-Lancer):

The Parallels
Oswald and Dealey Plaza
vs. McVeigh and the OKC Bombing

This writer has been personally involved in the investigation of the Oklahoma City bombing since the third day after the tragedy, and the scenario that has developed is chillingly close to that which transpired after 11:30 a.m. on November 22nd, 1963. Following are many of the items to be noted:

Around 9:00 a.m. Oklahoma time on 19 April, 1995, a huge explosion rocked the downtown area of Oklahoma City. Within minutes, during the evacuation of what remained of the building, searching for casualties, arrival of police, fire and rescue personnel, and mass confusion, two more "devices" were found inside the building. Bomb squad personnel had to deactivate at least one of the devices and remove them from the area for safety. Within the hour the media stated that they were "ATF training devices, not actual bombs." If this were so, why were they placed in strategic locations inside the building, on floors away from the ATF offices?

In Dealey Plaza, a scenario quickly developed wherein a lone shooter, from the 6th floor of the TSBD, allegedly fired three shots which amazingly created over a half dozen wounds (including one missed shot) and escaped the scene undetected. Later investigation showed that only two empty 6.5mm shell casings were found on the 6th Floor and turned in, along with a rifle and one live round. Yet these documents were altered during the Warren hearings to reflect *three* empty cartridges to fit the "Magic Bullet" theory.

Oklahoma City: Two seismic events transpired according to the University of Oklahoma Seismic Center. The tape, which actually shows three equal events, is quickly debunked by the government as being "the initial explosion, followed by the building collapsing" (ignoring the first event entirely). Yet, when the entire remaining building was demolished by controlled demolition, the event recorded on tape was barely noticeable. Still, the investigators insist that only one bomb was used: the Ryder truck bomb allegedly delivered by McVeigh.

Within twenty-four hours the Ryder truck grows from a small van to the largest box-truck in Ryder inventory to contain the ever growing amount of ammonium-nitrate explosives required to create the damage done to the building. Yet, according to sources outside the government, very little indication of nitrate deposits at the scene are found, indicating a different type of explosive.

In Dallas, following the ambush of JFK, damage control seemed to begin immediately with the focus of attention being directed away from the Grassy Knoll to the Book Depository building, and a shooter on the sixth floor. In OKC, the first two leads indicate that two "middle-eastern males" were seen hanging around the scene and were probably involved; and an all points bulletin was broadcast by OKC Police Department to search for a brown pickup truck with a smoked-plastic bug shield. Within a few hours, the FBI canceled both leads, and told the police that they had not issued an "attempt to locate" on the pickup truck. But the OKC PD had the original release from the FBI asking for the APB, and it had been duly noted in their radio logs.

McVeigh is picked up for speeding, in a car with no license tag, for doing 85 mph, by the Oklahoma Highway Patrol. Oswald was picked up, for allegedly shooting Dallas officer J.D. Tippit, after entering the Texas Theater without buying a ticket. In each case, the FBI was notified within a short period of time that a "suspect" was in custody. In Oswald's case, items "linking" him to the Kennedy assassination were "found" in various locations: photos of him with a Carcano, a Mannlicher-Carcano found on the 6th floor, etc. For McVeigh, his license plate was allegedly "found" within two blocks of the bombing scene, having been supposedly ripped from the rear of the car by the concussion of the explosion, yet cars in the parking lot where the explosion occurred still had their license tags, and most had not even been blown out of their parking places!

For Oswald, the Carcano was traced to him by the FBI, who, before the advent of computers and data bases, managed to track the weapon from its entrance into the U.S., to an importer, to Klein's Sporting Goods, to a sale to "A.J. Hidell," to Lee Harvey Oswald. All in two days. Over a weekend!

For McVeigh, the rear axle (differential?) of the Ryder truck was discovered, wherein an ID number was allegedly discovered, which was supposedly traced from the manufacturer, to Ryder, to a truck rental in Kansas, all within hours. Interviews with the rental agent produced two sketches: McVeigh and John Doe #2. The media did not report that a third person was present, who waited outside in a car, and who appeared to be dark complected. And John Doe #2, as a lead, evaporated when the FBI stated that there was a mistake, and that he was a soldier from Fort Riley who rented a truck the previous day, and was not involved with McVeigh. But media outside of Oklahoma did not report that *another* John Doe #2 was discovered by KFOR TV in Oklahoma City, and that he matched the suspect sketch; was seen by six eye witnesses in a bar with McVeigh and Nichols only days before the bombing; drove a brown Chevrolet pickup with smoked plastic bug screen; and was an Iraqi officer who had fought against us in the Gulf War! It also was not reported that over 5,000 Iraqi POWs had been brought into this country for "humanitarian reasons," and a large segment ended up being settled in Oklahoma City.

In Oswald's case, it is interesting to note that he had connections to the White Russian community of Dallas-Fort Worth, and that these people had been settled here by the OSS when Allen Dulles brought the SS Galizien Division out of Europe at the end of World War II, to Greece, then Canada, then New York City and Dallas/Fort Worth. The teenage children of the Galiziens were later utilized as CIA assets for infiltration into Russia, they spoke Russian and had relatives inside who might provide support after infiltration. (This makes one wonder about the Oswald who, during his time in the Marine Corps in Japan, "taught himself" Russian within a few weeks).

The investigation of the Kennedy assassination rapidly focused on the "lone nut" scenario. Witnesses who did not support this rapidly-building case against Oswald as the lone participant were intimidated, debunked or misquoted in reports. Most who saw something other than a man in the 6th floor window were not subpoenaed to testify before the Warren Commission. In McVeigh's case, anyone who brings forward information that there had to be more than one bomb, or that there were higher powers involved in the bombing, or more than just McVeigh and Nichols involved, is quickly debunked, discredited or ignored. On at least three occasions this has already occurred: Brigadier General Partin (USAF ret.), an explosives expert that said that the ammonium nitrate truck bomb could not have done the damage inflicted on the building by itself; and former FBI SAC Ted Gunderson, who stated other devices exist in inventory that are much smaller and more powerful that could have caused the damage; and Debra von Trapp, a former high level government contractor who brought forth information linking members of the Clinton administration to the bombing, have been ignored or discredited with the full weight of the mainstream media.

Instead, within twenty-four hours of the event the mainstream media, *en total*, slanted the dagger of suspicion to "far right radicals," such as the burgeoning militia movement. In particular, the Michigan Militia was targeted as being "tied" to McVeigh. In actual fact, though two members of the Michigan Militia stated that they think they saw McVeigh at one of their open-to-the-public meetings, McVeigh himself says he never attended. Still, even if he was seen at a meeting, it could easily have been part of a setup to develop manufactured connections to a group already under scrutiny by certain bureaucrats.

For Oswald, a radical background (this time Left Wing) was built in the press long before Dallas. He was filmed handing out "Fair Play for Cuba" pamphlets on a New Orleans street corner, and was interviewed on television wherein he declared himself a "Marxist" for public consumption. The media has maintained ever since that Oswald was a Marxist by his own admission, and killed Kennedy for radical political reasons.

The media's attack on the militia, who had absolutely nothing to gain and everything to lose in the aftermath of the bombing, resulted in new "anti-terrorism" laws being ram-rodded through Congress in the wake of media-generated public emotion. These laws had been laying stagnant for months, having been written following the New York City Twin Towers bombing but delayed due to their conflict with Constitutional rights. Interestingly, one major result of the Kennedy assassination was the "Firearms Control Act of 1968," which was the first major legislation regarding governmental control of citizens firearms since the 1930s where private ownership of automatic weapons had to be licensed by the federal government, another restriction on Constitutional rights.

Then there are the "Wild Goose Chases" of the national investigation. During the Kennedy investigation, hundreds of FBI agents were sent hither and yon to interview, question, and report on even the most obscure leads and "witnesses." The agents, all trying to do as sterling a job as possible, then sent their reports to FBI headquarters for screening and absorption. Few agents ever saw the "big picture," could compare notes, or even knew just why they were following up on a given lead. The same is happening with the OKC bombing investigation. Hundreds of agents have "followed up" on even the most obscure leads, but, like their predecessors who investigated the Kennedy assassination, they are left out of the grand scheme of things and are only privy to certain pieces of the puzzle. It is also interesting to note that the main question is not being answered concerning the motivation behind any crime: Who Benefits?

FBI agents who attempted to follow the money, and the powers, behind the murder of JFK were quickly redirected by Washington to other activities. The agents who smell a large rodent with the Oklahoma City bombing (as in Who Benefits) are finding themselves subject to the same circumstances. It appears to once again be a system of directed investigation, ignoring or debunking of anything that does not fit the mold of a predetermined outcome ("A Patsy Gets The Blame"), and disassociation with the idea that higher powers are involved.

The television coverage of the transfer of McVeigh from jail to the holding facility at Tinker Air Force Base, outside of Oklahoma City, was quite reminiscent of Oswald's transfer attempt from the Dallas PD jail to the county jail. The only difference was that there was no Jack Ruby to intervene. However, it should be noted that McVeigh was dressed in bright orange, and wore *no bullet proof vest*! It makes one wonder if an opportunity was not being presented by design.

Until the investigation begins to follow leads concerning "Who Benefits?" it is unlikely the Oklahoma City bombing investigation will progress to a full, believable, conclusion. If the case against McVeigh and Nichols, who the government maintains acted by themselves, was so iron clad, then we must ask ourselves why the government prosecutors had to ask for a ninety day extension on their investigation before attempting to present McVeigh for indictment before a federal Grand Jury.

There's one more element to consider: the video tape. In 1963, Abraham Zapruder's film recorded the events that transpired in Dealey Plaza. It was seized by the FBI, obtained by *Life* magazine (who employed former OSS and CIA personnel such as senior editor Charles D. Jackson), and not released until much later. When it was released it had been altered. In Oklahoma City, the media reported that the camera on an automatic teller machine (*or* the Southwestern Bell building security camera, *or* a camera on an apartment building a block west) recorded McVeigh parking the Ryder truck, then walking away from it to get into a vehicle to speed away. The federal authorities seized the tape for evidence.

Why have we not seen this tape? If it is being kept secret until trial, then it should be released after it has been exhibited in a court room. The question is: will we ever see it?

Many other questions remain to be answered, as in the Kennedy investigation, but will probably never be breached. Questions such as: Was there an Iraqi connection? Were there actually two (or more) explosions? Were there two or more other bombs inside the building? Why did McVeigh's license tag "fall off" his car? Why was the APB on the brown pickup not followed up on, then later canceled altogether and denied to exist by the FBI? Exactly what number was found on the truck axle that would identify the vehicle? Why have we not seen photographs of this number plate? Why was not John Doe #2, the Iraqi Republican Guard Division officer, not followed up in detail by the FBI? And why, after it was shown there was no connection, did the media continue to shift public attention to right wing groups ranging from the NRA to various militia organizations when those entities had the most to lose from such a tragic event? And most of all, what exactly were the documents taken out of the Murrah building's ruins that were so important that rescue operations had to be curtailed?

And one cannot help but wonder if Timothy McVeigh will utter, at some point in time, "So I'm the patsy!"

One last note to consider: The June 25, 1996 bombing of the Khobar Towers apartment building in Dhahran, Saudi Arabia, which killed 23 Americans was briefly referred to by the media as "proof" that a truck bomb could do the damage to a building that the ammonium-nitrate packed Ryder truck supposedly did. But the claims quickly died when it was determined that 1) the building was built with poor grade materials and was not reinforced to American standards; 2) that only the front wall fell and little damage occurred past that point; 3) the Murrah building was built to strict modern codes using the strongest materials; and 4) the explosives used were in excess of 5,000 pounds of RDX and Semtex *high* explosive. A bomb twenty-five times as powerful as the "Ryder bomb" did only one-tenth the damage.[224]

Chapter 33

Incident at Gila Bend

It was only five months after the bombing of the Murrah Building when the next target on the category list was hit. On Monday, October 9th, 1995, the only "Mass Transportation, Land" target available in the United States was attacked.

The news broke first on television, monopolizing the airwaves on the news channels first, then spewing forth from the mouths of the talking heads of the main networks: Domestic terrorists, calling themselves "Sons of Gestapo," have derailed a passenger train near Hyder, Arizona. According to the news blurbs, sometime around 1:00 a.m. that morning the Amtrak "Sunset Limited" passenger train, enroute from Phoenix to San Diego, jumped the tracks in a remote mountain wilderness area northwest of Gila Bend, Arizona. This placed the location in Maricopa County, outside of Phoenix. Two investigative agencies would come into play: the Maricopa County Sheriff's Office (under Sheriff Joe Arpaio) and the FBI (since the incident concerned interstate commerce).

Three points were made by the news media: 1) the rails had been sabotaged by someone who knew what they were doing, as they had effectively disabled the electronic warning system by using some type of jumper cables to bypass the disconnected rail, 2) the area was extremely remote, almost inaccessible, and occurred on a downhill curve that S-turned onto a bridge over an arroyo, and 3) there was a note found at the scene that pointed directly toward what the media was labeling an anti-government or right wing extremist group. The note was signed "Sons of Gestapo, SOG."

The next morning I studied an aerial view of the scene depicted in an AP wire photo. Four passenger cars, still coupled together, were off the tracks laying on their side to one side of a small bridge, with two angled down into a dry wash. The caption explained that of the 268 people that were aboard one was killed and 100 injured. The article mentioned that deputies found a message at the scene that mentioned Waco, Ruby Ridge, the FBI and the Bureau of Alcohol Tobacco, and Firearms. It was from this single note that the media derived the idea that some extreme Right-Wing group was responsible. The article went on to mention that "An electronic database search of U.S. newspapers big and small found no mention of "Sons of Gestapo." [And] a search of about six months worth of Internet discussion groups and World Wide Web pages also found nothing."

After reading the rest of the article and watching the news network broadcasts for the remainder of the day, I could see that something was definitely wrong. From my experience investigating the Oklahoma City bombing, and digging into the various political groups that were suspect during that investigation, I felt that what was occurring was a continuation of an agenda. I also knew that the Maricopa County deputies would not have access to what we had discovered during our investigation of the Oklahoma City event, and that if the federal agencies followed the same course as they had in Oklahoma, and if they were directly controlled by the Justice Department in Washington, the Maricopa deputies would find themselves left out of the picture concerning what really might have happened and who should be put on the suspect list. I feared that if I was right in my analysis, and if the perpetrators were more than a pickup truck load of local radical bubbas, then the case might go much higher and eventually be covered up by the shadow powers in Washington.

I knew from 26 years experience as a law enforcement officer that there are hundreds of good, honest federal agents who try their best to do a sterling job in investigating criminal events. But I also knew that when certain crimes have a national or international perspective, and politics regarding higher agendas are involved, then the investigation is taken out of the hands of the local federal authorities. When this happens, they are controlled from a much higher level, normally in the Washington, D.C. arena. And because of my experience with the investigations of events that form the preceding chapters of this book, I knew that if a high level political agenda was being served in this case, the chance of a coverup was not out of the question.

I also found the note, signed by a group that neither I, nor any of my contacts, had never heard of, most intriguing. I felt that if I could read the full contents of the note, I might be able to determine if it was a legitimate claim or a false flag. If it was indeed a plant to lead the investigators and media astray, it would mean a great deal to the case in determining the proper direction for the investigation to proceed.

I also found it very suspect that the location of the derailment was in such a remote area. If a small group of saboteurs, bent only on derailing the train, were involved, then they would have picked a much more accessible place to vandalize the tracks. By picking such a remote place, the chance of discovery during a getaway was much greater than simply selecting a location only a mile or so from a highway, unless they did not arrive at the scene or leave by ground transportation. In that case, such a location made sense.

I then spread out aerial and ground maps of the area and began studying the terrain. Both my military and aviation backgrounds came into play as I dissected the terrain features surrounding the crash site and noted several things that made me believe that the job had been planned by professionals who knew exactly what they were doing.

First, the railroad tracks ran fairly straight from Phoenix, southwest to the northeast base of the Gila Bend Mountains. There, they made a gentle curve up through a mountain pass, then began a downgrade toward the bridge. Just before the bridge was a well-defined S-turn. It was here that the perpetrators had selected a rail and pulled 29 spikes, then installed the jumper to defeat the warning system.

Beyond the bridge to the west the tracks ran almost in a straight line to Yuma. The target point selected was in the most remote point along the route, at the end of an S-turn, at a bridge over a dry wash, where a derailment would cause the most damage. Beyond that, the surrounding terrain features told an additional story.

The aviation sectional map showed the bridge to cross a wash at the north end of a U-shaped valley. Mountains surrounded the site on the west, north and east. The most logical access route would be from the south, which was fairly flat and open. What I saw as a pilot was that if the perpetrators came in on the ground, they probably approached from the south, possibly from a mining road that ended at the dry Gila Bend River bed only six miles away. Though a dirt service road ran along the tracks, the distance they would have to travel would be a circuitous route approximately 38 miles in length to the nearest highway, Highway 8, which runs from Eloy (30 miles south of Phoenix) to Yuma. The question that needed to be answered at this point concerned physical evidence that was not mentioned by the media. Were there tracks of a vehicle, either four wheel or dirt bike, going to or from the scene of the crime? If not, and the saboteurs had not driven the rough dirt road at nighttime for 38 miles, then I found myself developing another prospective mode of ingress and egress from the scene.

By coupling my knowledge and background as a military officer with my experience as a police helicopter pilot, I began analyzing the map as if I were going to plan such an operation, taking in the terrain, time of night, weather, and obstacles. First, I would want to be inserted and extracted by air. Taking into account what appeared to be a professional job of picking the target site, I surmised that a team would have been formed and that they might have access to a helicopter. I knew I was reaching, but it seemed a theory worth exploring.

If a helicopter was used, then it would be a simple job to fly in from the south, land near the bridge, drop off a team, then leave the area until called back by radio. Then I'd return to the site pick up the team, then egress the area, all below the hill tops. This, however, meant that the pilot would have to fly in and out twice, which would draw attention from any hikers or campers in the area. If the team was well trained, however, the pilot could remain on the ground for the amount of time needed to pull the spikes, then leave with the team. Risky, but possible. The additional benefit to this particular section of desert is the fact that the mountains would block radar from Phoenix, and a helicopter could fly in low and undetected.

I had additional reasons to consider the air-insertion theory. I had heard of covert operations training that had been conducted for some time only 90 minutes flying time away at a highly secret base called Pinal County Airpark, known in the aviation industry as "Marana." This "airport" is a locked-down secure facility run by Evergreen Inc., reputed to be a "contractor" to government agencies, including the CIA. Rumors had run rampant during the Iran/Contra investigation that the airstrip had been one of several used for drug shipments into the U.S., but little documentation exists indicating this was followed up on during the Congressional investigation into the affair. I knew the facility, which was located near Highway 10 that runs from Phoenix to Tucson, had access to military-type helicopters, and that a great deal of strange "night training" had been reported by passersby. Exactly what went on there behind the front of being a desert aircraft storage facility for the various airlines, no one knew. But very reliable individuals had reported seeing both dark, unmarked helicopters, and skydivers dropping in mass into the nearby desert wearing black uniforms and black square "Paracommander"-style steerable parachutes.

Was some covert paramilitary agency training troops in night commando-style insertions? I couldn't help but wonder if there might be a connection between these strange activities and the nearby train derailment.

I had to know more. And I wanted to see a copy of the actual "Sons of Gestapo" note. On the afternoon of October 10th, I sent the following fax to Sheriff Arpaio.

FAX MESSAGE

To: Sheriff Joe Arpaio, Maricopa Co. AZ
From: MPO Craig Roberts, Tulsa PD, Air Support Unit
Ref: AMTRACK train sabotage case, Hyder, AZ
Date: 10-10-95

Sheriff Arpaio,

I am a Tulsa PD police officer who has worked with our local office of the FBI on the Oklahoma City bombing case. During that investigation, which is still ongoing, I have had occasion to discover many things that may be of interest to you and your investigators regarding your Amtrak case.

First, from the information I have heard on the news and read in the local newspapers, I would suggest you proceed with extreme caution regarding opinions on suspects or suspect groups. The below examination of facts, when evaluated together, paint a very suspicious set of circumstances:

1. Anyone who has been in the military and received training on ground combat operations in a guerrilla environment knows that the number one basic target for partisans, guerrillas, and terrorists who have limited resources are open, non-secured remote stretches of railroad tracks. Simply by removing key structural components, such as spikes, couplings and tie-bars, preferably over a bridge or on a bend near a ravine, an entire train can be derailed. This will tie up a section of rail line for an indefinite period of time. In Special Forces Warfare School at Fort Bragg, training

manuals discuss teaching guerrillas to do just exactly what was described. Special emphasis is placed on the facts that it is easy to accomplish, and that the planners should pick a remote area to preclude discovery.

2. This attack could have been accomplished by very few people, maybe only one. Not seeing the scene I cannot comment, however, it definitely would not take a large "team" to do this.

3. Question: Were there any four-wheel drive vehicle tracks on the scene when the first outside elements arrived? If not, then whoever came in and performed the sabotage would probably have utilized a helicopter. If this is so, it is unlikely to be any local militia bunch. And if a helicopter was used, please contact me as I may be able to provide more information on where you might look for leads.

4. Question: Is this section of track normally on the Amtrak run for the Sunset Limited? If not, then someone would have had to know that it was a diverted run, and that the Amtrak train would take it.

5. Question: Did anything in the note reflect on this particular train? Or would the saboteurs have settled for any train? Look very hard at the intelligence gathering capabilities of the sabotage "team" concerning the timing of the train, relative to the remote location, the section of tracks, and the fact that a freight train passed unmolested 18 hours previous.

6. Examine the structure/grammar of the note carefully. The biggest flaw I see is that they call themselves "Sons of Gestapo." My experience is that only those who learned English as a second language have a habit of leaving out the word "the" in a sentence. This is most prevalent in the speech of Eastern Europeans, Middle-Easterners, and Russians. Instead of saying "I am going out to *the* car to get *the* book," such an individual would say "I am going to car to get book." These individuals correlate their own native language to ours by using their sentence structure and replacing the words for those in English. If they normally do not use the word "the," then it will be missing. If the writer of the note was someone who spoke English as a primary language, he or she would probably use such a name as "Sons of *the* Gestapo."

7. The problem here is that *no one* would choose such a hokey name. Not unless they were trying to shift attention to neo-nazis. Even the so-called "extreme right" would not choose such a stupid and incriminating name. Any amateur investigator can see that whoever did this purposefully attempted to leave "evidence" incriminating so-called militias and other paramilitary groups. Especially with the references to Waco and Ruby Ridge. We ran into the same thing with the OKC bombing, but McVeigh has very little, if any, "ties" to any militia. Still, the bomb was detonated on the anniversary of the Waco climax, which launched the media on a huge right-wing witch hunt.

8. During my investigation of militia groups I have never come across any called "Sons of Gestapo," nor anything remotely like it.

9. Ask yourself this question: "Who benefits?" This is the most important question of all. I think you will find that if anything, these types of attacks are totally

against everything the militia groups believe in. In fact, if you can find any local members of such organizations, they will probably tell you that they would help *guard* railroad tracks, not destroy them. From my investigation I discovered that the vast majority of the paramilitary militia types are people who do not "hate" the government, nor are they anti-government. They simply fear the government and what has happened in Congress over the past two-three years. They especially fear attacks on their Second Amendment rights. But they do not fit a psychological profile of someone who would hurt innocent people.

10. RE: the Waco and Ruby Ridge "rallying cry" on the notes: Neither has anything to do with trains, Amtrak, or Arizona. Someone who wanted to "attack the government, FBI or BATF" would not do so by simply attacking some passenger train with no government connections. They would go after a government facility or personnel.

11. So back to "who benefits?" If the media plays this up, with stage direction from the Southern Poverty Law Center's "Klan Watch," supported by Morris Dees and the ADL, just like what happened on Day Three of the OKC bombing, then the thrust will be pressure to pass the stalled "Anti-Terrorist" bill. If you do not know what is contained in this bill, obtain a copy and read it carefully.

12. Examination of the chronological facts:

1. World Trade Center bombing occurs in NYC. Little national impact outside of the Northeast.

2. Oklahoma City bombing. Massive news coverage, nationwide manhunt, focus shifts from "Middle Easterners" to "Militia" under preplanned manipulation of certain left wing organizations in just over 24 hours. Anti-terrorism bill rejuvenated. Investigation stalls with capture of only McVeigh and Nichols (who obviously are not in this alone). Despite $2 million reward and hundreds of agents no other arrests are made and the search for "John Doe #2" ends.

3. Hyder train derailment. Note(s) left in feeble attempt to point fingers at "right wing extremists," or neo-nazis, or militia groups. Local law enforcement is not so quick to jump on the bait this time. Even the media is being more cautious.

4. What's next? Upon examination of the events, we have these targets that have been subject to terrorism:

A. World Trade Center: Downtown NYC, home of ABC, NBC, CBS. Lots of media coverage.

B. Government building in Oklahoma City, right in the heartland in "good ol' boy" patriotic America. More deaths of innocent civilians, lots of blood, more massive media coverage.

C. Largest mass-transportation vehicle in inventory, a train. Not only a train, it's Amtrak, and it was hit in Conservative Arizona, which also just happens to be an area reportedly inhabited by numerous militia groups. It is also the state where McViegh visited Fortier (Kingman).

> If you follow this pattern you find: The world's largest civilian corporate building, a middle-America Federal Building (with massive loss of lives), and a passenger train. Of the five basic (land-based) terrorist targets, only two remain: An airliner and a large gathering of people (the Black Sunday scenario). If these events are related, (and the same people are involved for whatever motive), it would follow that a civilian airliner or maybe a sports event would be a candidate for a future "domestic terrorism" target. If your investigators would like to visit with me to compare notes, I would be happy to share any ideas, theories, or information that might assist in your case. I think my five months of investigating the Oklahoma City bombing to date might provide a few items of interest that could relate to the Amtrak case.
>
> I would be particularly interested in knowing if the possibility exists that a helicopter may have been used in this event. If so, I may be able to provide further leads.
>
> END OF MESSAGE.

Two days after sending the fax I received a phone call from one of the sheriff's detectives working the case. He told me that he had been given the fax and was going to pass it along to the lieutenant in charge of the Sheriff's investigation team. He also told me that "it's a mad house, and the FBI was pulling agents in from all over. All they have us doing is fetching coffee."

I asked if they were sharing information and he laughed. "They're the big FBI pros. We're just a bunch of hick deputies who don't know anything." I sympathized with him. I had been down this same road myself a few times when dealing with the feds. He promised to have the lieutenant call me.

My next step was to begin calling some of my contacts who have expertise in various fields that would be relevant to this case. The first and most important contact I made was with a federal officer who must remain anonymous to protect him from repercussions. For purposes of this story we will call him "Jack." Jack's expertise was in the area of government and civilian aviation operations, and he had contacts throughout the NTSB, FAA, and other agencies.

I called Jack and we spent over an hour discussing the case. Like me, he pulled out his aviation maps and studied the area. And like me, he was also a pilot with military and civilian experience in both fixed-wing and rotary-wing aircraft. We eventually arrived at four possibilities of what may have occurred if this was indeed a professional team-type insertion. First, a helicopter flew in, dropped the team, left, came back and pulled them out. Second, a helicopter flew in, waited on the ground while the job was done, then flew out with the team. Third, they jumped in, then were recovered by a helicopter either just after the mission was accomplished, or when the huge number of medical, news and emergency helicopters arrived after the derailment. In this scenario, it would be simple for a helicopter to show up as one of many, load up a few of the "victims," then leave the scene without anyone taking particular notice. The last scenario would involve a ground insertion and extraction by vehicle. Proof that this last possibility was the case would depend on what information came back from Maricopa County regarding vehicle tracks.

Jack decided that it would be pertinent to check the weather conditions the night of the incident. As he broke loose to do this, I began making notes and compiling a case file.

Meanwhile, the FBI, who had dubbed the case "Operation Splitrail," continued the investigation in Arizona. Within two days they were exploring the possibility that the note was a plant and that the saboteurs might not be a terrorist group after all, but possibility a disgruntled railroad employee. Such an individual might have a working knowledge of how to derail a train, and also disable the warning device, something so-called "militia types" would probably not even think of. Also at this time the governor of Arizona, Fife Symington, told the press that he had read one version of the note that was left at the scene and said that there were several versions, but most were "comparable in terms of content."

Acting special agent in charge of the Phoenix office for the FBI, Larry McCormick, said he believed the case was the bureau's second-biggest crime scene investigation after the Oklahoma City bombing, encompassing over a square mile of rugged desert. Assistant U.S. Attorney Janet Napolitano stated that "We are going to pursue every bit of evidence and every lead very thoroughly...until we find the person or persons who committed this crime." I remembered Janet Reno saying the same thing about the Oklahoma City case.

An "unnamed source" leaked to the AP that the case had been put under Assistant FBI Director Robert Bryant, who heads the bureau's national security division. According to the source, "Bryant's national security division has the case because it has the potential to become a terrorism case, but we have not reached any conclusions yet whether terrorism is the motive or not."

It appeared that the public, by way of the media, was being mentally prepared for the eventuality that the Amtrak derailment would become another case of "domestic terrorism."

When Jack called me back he was elated at what he had discovered. First, the weather on the night in question was this: A full moon, wind out of the south at 8 knots, and a clear sky. It would be an ideal night for air operations. Next, he was almost choking when he said "guess what else I dug up? I pulled some strings and had the Albuquerque Center run their radar tapes for that night and you won't believe what they found. We've got a target."

"What kind of target? You mean over the site?"

"More than that. We have a VFR target squawking 1200 that left Tri-City airfield in Albuquerque on a southwest course, climbed to 10,500 feet, then, when it was exactly due east of the Amtrak site, turn due west and flew a course line that took it one mile south of the site. But just before arriving over the site, it dropped to 8,500 feet. After crossing the target zone, it turned on a southwesterly course towards

California at 8,500 feet. Albuquerque contacted the Los Angeles Center which tracked the aircraft to a landing at Montgomery Field in San Diego."

"What was the time frame?" I asked.

"It crossed the valley south of the bridge at 1940 hours."

7:40 p.m. on a full moon night, with the wind out of the south. The plane was one mile south of the bridge, which would compensate for wind drift. Things were beginning to fall in place.

"You know what we need to do now?" asked Jack. "We need to contact the DEA or Air Force guys down at Tucson or Yuma and have them run their radar tapes for that night from their Aerostat drug balloon radar units."

The DEA and Air Force have several tethered "blimp" type balloons staked out along the border with down-looking radar to watch for low flying drug flights. If a helicopter was involved in the pickup, which may have approached from the south as we speculated, then they might have it on tape.

"Can you get that information?" I asked.

"I'll get on it."

My next contact from Maricopa County came from a detective working the case. He had read my initial fax and called to explain that his people were taking an interest in the possibilities I mentioned. For starters, he said that they had conducted a search and had not located any ground vehicle tracks coming into the scene, other than those that they attributed to rescuers and the media. No tracks extended across the desert, and they were now exploring our suggestion of an air insertion being involved. It still seemed far fetched, but the idea of air assets being used was beginning to carry more weight as the investigation progressed. He asked if I would put my ideas together in a more detailed memo and fax it to them for consideration. That afternoon I sent the following memo:

MEMO

To: Det. Div. Maricopa Co. SO
From: MPO Craig Roberts, Tulsa PD, (Air Support)
Re: Amtrak sabotage, Arizona
Subj: Aircraft ingress/egress possibilities

Considering the nature of the area/terrain at the derailment site, it would appear (from the aviation map) that entering by 4WD vehicle would be very unlikely for anything less than the most dedicated individuals. Without having first-hand knowledge of the site, I can only speculate on how saboteurs could have entered the area, sabotaged the tracks, then exited.

Air Assets

If there is a complete lack of tire tracks entering the area after a systematic circumferential search of the crime scene, accomplished at a distance far enough away to preclude contamination by rescuers, then it would appear that air assets might have been used. Two modes of insertion become apparent: helicopter and parachute.

1. The most likely insertion and extraction mode would be by helicopter. The same aircraft could fly in at low level, after dark, from the south, and by following the canyon indicated on the aviation sectional map, fly north from Painted Rock Dam until intersecting the railroad tracks or trestle. It would be a simple matter to drop a few people off, exit the area, then return later to pick them up.

A. A second method of egress would be for such individuals to hide nearby, watch the train derailment, then enter the scene when rescuers arrived. They could then blend in to the mass of traffic and be extracted with victims or rescuers.

2. The second most likely method of ingress would be by parachute, probably HALO (High Altitude Low Opening) method. Please do not rule this out, as there is some basis for this observation:

A. Radar track records show a target (aircraft) "squawking" 1200 (Visual Flight Rules, VFR) on its radar transponder at 1940 hrs (7:40 p.m.) on the night of the derailment, flying east to west at an altitude of approximately 8500 feet. This radar track was recorded by FAA air traffic control assets. This target passed 1 mile south of the wreck site, which put it over the relatively flat open area of the canyon north of the horseshoe bend of the Gila River wash. It would be a simple matter to drop HALO sky divers to this DZ (ground level at site approximately 2100 feet MSL), wherein they could hide their chutes and walk north to the trestle site. They could then be extracted later by one of the above described means.

Items to Note:

1. Organized training for HALO night drops by paramilitary teams have reportedly been conducted in the desert for the past two years in a semi-remote location 1.5 hour's flying time from the wreck site. According to sources, these drops have occurred on an almost nightly basis near an airport located approximately 108 nautical miles east-south-east from the wreck site. The individuals are parachutists who jump from twin-engine cargo airplanes. They jump at dusk or after dark utilizing square steerable parachutes that are black in color. According to some of your local sources and newspaper reporters, some of these individuals have been encountered by hikers in the mountains northeast of Phoenix conducting "military exercises."

2. This same organization also has access to numerous helicopters of various sizes and configurations.

Synopsis

There may be no connection between the above organization and the Amtrak incident, however if ground infiltration and egress is ruled out, and air assets are considered a possibility, then the above information may be of value.

Additional Lead

There is a DEA "Aerostat" tethered radar balloon located near Yuma that has the capability of "look down" observation for low- level aircraft. Your office can request a check of the radar photo records to see if any high or low level aircraft (such as helicopters flying at low level) are depicted in the area in a 24-hour time frame prior to the incident. A request would probably be best served if the time frame was narrowed to approximately the time of darkness to the time of the derailment. Of particular interest would be the radar track to determine point of origination and/or termination of flight. If the flight was picked up near a closed former military auxiliary strip, such as Luke 11 which is just south of the site, further investigation of radar records would be required to determine where a target arriving at that location would have originated.

If anyone from your office would like to visit further on this, I can be contacted at my office number.

The next day Jack called. I could tell the satisfaction in his voice as he said "Bingo!"

"What do you have?" I asked.

"I talked to a master sergeant at Yuma. He said his people would be more than happy to help out with the Aerostat radar search. Seems they get bored and this would give them something interesting to do. Said he'd get back to me as soon as he could."

"Great! If they come up with a low target going into the site from the south, say at 80 or so knots, then I have my helicopter. So with your high level target that came out of Albuquerque..."

"Dumbo."

"What?"

"That's what we'll call the airplane. I love code words."

"Yeah, well, all we need now is 'hummingbird' and we'll have this thing nailed. The biggest question, though, is who are these guys?"

"Maybe Yuma can tell us that if we can follow a radar target back to its base."

"Check."

The next call from Maricopa County was from the lieutenant in charge of the investigation for the Sheriff's Department (Jack codenamed him "Ringmaster"). I gave him a brief oral resume of my background, a short rundown on my experiences investigating the Oklahoma City bombing, and cut to his case.

"So, how's the FBI treating you guys, Lieutenant?"

"Let me put it this way. They are chasing ghosts out here and pissing a lot of people off, and as far as they're concerned, we're just baggage. The Sheriff told me that we have a homicide involved that is our jurisdiction, and that we are going to work this thing until we either make a bust or run out of leads. It doesn't matter what the feds do, we're going to work this case our way, with or without them."

I was always gratified to find other law enforcement officers at the local level who searched for the truth no matter what politics were involved at the national level. We chatted for a few moments then I broke a question I was dying to ask.

"Any chance on seeing a copy of the Sons of Gestapo note?"

"Sure. We've got a copy and I can fax it to you. It doesn't really say much of anything, though."

"No matter. I just want to eyeball it and see if anything stands out that might be of interest."

"Sure. No problem. Here it comes..."

Five minutes later I was reading a copy of the only piece of physical evidence found at the scene (verbatim from original version, including errors):

> ### Indictment of the ATF and the FBI
>
> Before dawn the women awoke to say their morning prayers. The women slept upstairs. They lit their kerosene lamps because the electricity had been turned off by the FBI. After observing lights in all the upstairs windows, the FBI ordered the teargas bombardment. Afterwards only two upstairs windows were lit. The location of each was recorded. Over the next few hours, ventilation holes were poked into the walls. These holes made the fire burn very much faster. Otherwise the fire department would have had time to put out the fire before the women and children died in the flames. At noon the light from the two kerosene lamps was obscured by bright sunlight. Everyone had forgotten about them except the man who carried their locations written on a scrap of paper in his pocket. He ordered the tank drivers where to crash through. Guess under which two windows. He ordered them to raise their guns. As they backed out, the guns were lowered. The video tape shows clearly the floor being raised by the tank a foot and a half. Guess what happened to the kerosene lamps in the rooms above the tanks. A minute afterwards black smoke started to pour out of the windows where the lamps had burned. This is the normal time needed for a kerosene fire to build up.
>
> Who is policing the ATF, FBI, state troopers, county sheriffs and local police? What federal law enforcement agency investigates each and every choke hold killing committed by a police officer? each and every beating of a drunk whether or not a passerby videotapes it? each and every shooting of a police officer's wife who knows too much about drug kickbacks? each and every killing at Ruby Ridge? The Gestapo accounts to no one. This is not Nazi Germany. All these people had rights. It is time for an independent Federal agency to police the law enforcement agencies and other government employees.
>
> Sons of the Gestapo
> SOG

To me, the note seemed to contradict itself in several areas. I especially noted that there was no explanation of the reason behind the derailment. I also noted that in the last paragraph the writer condemns Nazi Germany and Gestapo tactics, then signs the note: "Sons of the Gestapo." I also saw for the first time that there was the word "the."

But what I saw that really raised my eyebrows were the letters "SOG."

Maybe it was nothing. But as an old Southeast Asia hand, I remember that one of the terms used by Phoenix Program assassins working under MACV-SOG (Military Advisory Command, Studies and Observations Group) was a twisted bar-room version of the last acronym. "Yeah," a drunk trooper would mention. "I'm SOG...a son of the Gestapo."

Was this some type of message being sent to others who would know the meaning? Or was it just a coincidence? Without an arrest or more clues, we would never know.

I typed up a memo regarding my analysis of the SOG note and faxed it to the lieutenant:

Maricopa Co. S.O.
Homicide Division
REF: Amtrak case

Lt. ["Ringmaster"]

Good to talk to you yesterday. I have a large packet of information on the topics we discussed that I will drop in the mail in the morning.

I received the SOG note and have been giving it some study. Considering my research into the various political groups and the mentalities of the various factions we discussed, I have a few observations that may prove useful in your investigation.

1. Was this note given to you by the FBI, and did you have a chance to see the actual original note to make sure they are identical?

2. Is it possible that someone could take the original note, retype it in a computer, and issue the retyped version to you or the media?

I ask these two questions because I wonder why, since they are computer generated notes, the FBI confiscated the suspect's typewriters? Were there other notes sent to the railroad that we do not know about? Also, I can't help but wonder why all the press releases referenced "Sons of Gestapo" on Day One, and the note that we have here says "Sons of *the* Gestapo." Note the word "the" added.

3. I can't help but note the acronym "SOG" with a line over it, not under it. Is there some significance to this?

4. Regarding the note itself, it appears to be a feeble attempt to hook this thing up with the right wing extremist groups, especially the militias (without specifically naming them). This might be because by the time the wreck occurred, the militias had already fought their public relations battle in the media and Washington to the

point where anyone behind this was hesitant to point a direct finger at them for fear of raising the public's eyebrows.

5. It could be that there is absolutely no connection to any right wing political or paramilitary group. The reason is that there is no one on the conservative side that wants *bigger* government, and especially a super-watchdog or superior federal law enforcement bureau or administration as the note demands.

6. I also find suspect the fact that the writer(s) state "The Gestapo Accounts to no one. This is not Nazi Germany" then goes on to call themselves "Sons of the Gestapo." What in the world is *that* supposed to mean? I think it's all smoke and mirrors. It appears to me that the whole thing is an attempted diversion away from the real perpetrators.

7. Whoever did the derailment was very dedicated to doing it in that particular spot, as there are so many more accessible locations that would serve the purpose, except for the bridge over the dry wash. Still, they would have to have a topographical map, a railroad map, or an aerial map to see that the tracks made those turns and hit the bridge at that point. The S-turn and bridge area are not visible from any road and would not be known by the average person.

Let's examine the last paragraph and try to get inside this guy's head:

"Who is policing the ATF, FBI, state troopers, county sheriffs and local police?"

This statement is basically "who watches the watchers, and who guards the guardians?" It lumps federal and local law enforcement together in the same boat, which the militias and right wingers do not do. They simply suspect the federal guys, and sometimes distrust the local sheriffs if they feel they are corrupt politicians.

"What *federal* law enforcement agency investigates each and every choke hold killing committed by a police officer?"

No one on the right wing wants a federal bureau to interfere in local affairs. They do not trust the FBI, nor the federal courts, to be oversight committees.

"each [sic] and every beating of a drunk whether or not a passerby videotapes it?"

Note the non-capitalized "each." Also, this statement obviously refers to the Rodney King affair.

"each and every shooting of a police officer's wife who knows too much about drug kickbacks?"

This might refer to the Arkansas State Trooper's wife who "committed suicide" because she knew too much about the drug smuggling in Arkansas during the Clinton governorship. But now we have a guy who damns and accuses law enforcement, then wants to stick up for us?

"each and every killing at Ruby Ridge?"

This reference, plus the first "Waco" paragraph, are definite finger pointing to groups on the Right (or anyone who questions government).

"The Gestapo accounts to no one. This is not Nazi Germany. All these people had rights. It is time for an independent federal agency to police the law enforcement agencies and other government employees."

Again, no one on the Right would have suggested such a thing. They would have demanded "states rights" and "10th Amendment restrictions on 'federal gestapo agencies.'" They definitely would *not* have demanded a new or superior *federal agency* to be an oversight or watch dog outfit.

A last thought: The heading is "Indictment of the ATF and the FBI." What does the railroad, or Amtrak, have to do with the ATF or FBI, or Waco or Ruby Ridge?

This was what I would call a "publicity hit." It was done for media effect, not for revenge or to make a political statement. That's why I can't help but wonder *Cui Bono*, Who Benefits? I keep coming up with the anti-terrorist bill in Congress.

I would suggest that you do not make the same mistake that the Dallas Homicide Bureau made in November, 1963. I would work this case as a local homicide case and keep the investigation separate from the FBI. The FBI in '63 was more concerned with political damage control than they were with catching the bad guys.

Let me know if there's anything else I can do between now and January when I come out to pick up our new helicopter. Jack will be flying in as well and we can go over what we have at that time.

The investigation dragged on through December with little headway. By then the FBI had raided a suspect's house in California and confiscated his typewriter and some large railroad tools. He allegedly fit the profile of "disgruntled railroad employee." Eventually they let him go and returned to Arizona.

On the same day the California suspect's house was searched I received a fax from a contact that contained an extract the FBI Behavioral Science Unit's psychological report on the "Actor" responsible for the derailment. According to my source, the unit analyzed the "Sons of the Gestapo" note and discounted the "right wing" theory. They then began concentrating on the disgruntled employee theory, which accounted for the raid on the California house. They also had been working on the "local yokel" theory, and that such a person or persons may have intended to "loot the train."

My source wrote: "Another possibility (which brings us back to the Right Winger) may be an attempt to embarrass the FBI so as to allude to their incompetence by not solving this case or possibly suggest the FBI (Feds in general) need to be *strengthened* to 'prevent' such occurrences in the future, back to "Anti-Terrorist Bill." *Cui Bono*?

The FBI analysis of the note mentioned that the "possible actor had a working blue collar knowledge, not just familiarity with railroads. Had specific knowledge of the area of the derailment, had a lot of anger directed against the railroad," then went on to ask: "Disgruntled employee/former employee? Local resident affected by the rail road? Railroad customer?"

The end paragraph of the analysis is most telling. In it the writer states that "[It] Appears the note that was left may have been left to distract the investigators away from the actor, as the actor feels that the crime scene would point to him quickly."

In the interim, Jack and I had been eagerly waiting for a response from the Aerostat radar unit in Arizona. Finally, Jack called and reached the master sergeant whom he had first made contact with and was so eager to help.

"Sorry," he said. "We can't help you out."

"What? Why?" asked Jack.

"The plug's been pulled."

"What does that mean?"

The sergeant sounded very uncomfortable when he replied "We really wanted to check this out, but all I can say is the balloons were down that night."

"Why?" asked Jack.

"Maintenance."

"All of them?" asked Jack, incredulously.

"Yes, sir." The sergeant sounded very nervous.

"Why?"

"All I can tell you is that they were ordered down for maintenance. It came from above my pay grade."

That ended it. There would be no cooperation from DEA or the Air Force. We couldn't help but wonder who "above the sergeant's pay grade" had ordered the only radar assets available in the region "down for maintenance." We reasoned the order had to come from Washington. But why would Washington be concerned with routine maintenance, and why *all* the balloons? It was obvious to us that the balloons had been up and they were ordered not to release the radar information, or someone did not want any "look down" capabilities available that night. No right wing bunch of Gestapo/militia types had the capabilities of pulling that off. It was obvious that this investigation was, like Oklahoma City, being steered away from the truth.

Jack and I decided to get together and compare notes. Both he and I were scheduled to be in Phoenix in January and planned on meeting with some of the Maricopa County investigators. We saw little more that we could do to help out, other than make them aware of the possibilities of where this investigation could go and why we felt there was a higher agenda involved. Beyond that it would be in their hands.

To protect those involved in the investigation who met with us in Phoenix, I can only provide the reader with this: the meeting lasted almost three hours, wherein we went over maps, reports, and the various plausible scenarios regarding the aerial aspects of the case. The Maricopa County element was very receptive, though somewhat skeptical about the possibility of shady commandos parachuting in to sabotage the tracks. We wargamed each scenario, but kept arriving back to the same elements that we could not ignore: the radar track of the unidentified airplane, the time frame it occurred, the fact that *all* of the radar balloons were mysteriously down that night with an inadequate explanation from the military, the lack of ingress and egress tracks to the site overland, and the evident non-existence of any group before or since who called themselves "Sons of the Gestapo."

There was one other odd element. One of the Maricopa sources advised us that they were chasing down a "rumor" that two campers had reported seeing men in parachutes dropping into the vicinity that night!

At the same time our unofficial meeting occurred, the FBI was busy in the local communities that bordered the wilderness area. According to the *Arizona Republic*, residents of the vicinity "complained that the FBI is harassing them. But Callahan [FBI] said a majority of those questioned have willingly cooperated. 'I understand that there are some desert rats out there who naturally don't like authority...But we have to follow up.'" Interestingly, the FBI asked the local residents questions about knowledge of any local militia unit. One local replied, "Buddy, you can't get three people out here to get together on what kind of pickup to drive, and you think we're going to form a militia?"

The article mentioned "Of new interest to authorities is the note's reference to an unnamed police officer's wife who was shot because she knew 'too much' about drug-related activities...Officials have failed to connect the reference to an actual law enforcement incident." I couldn't help but wonder if this "incident" was that concerning an Arkansas police officer who was "suicided" on June 12, 1994 in Arkansas. On that date, the body of an Arkansas officer, Bill Shelton, was found dead on his girl friend's grave with a bullet behind his right ear. His girlfriend, Kathy Ferguson, was the former wife of an Arkansas state trooper who was being sued along with President Clinton in the Paula Jones sexual harassment lawsuit. Ferguson had been killed exactly a month earlier, on May 12th, and her death was being investigated as a suicide. Cause of death was a gunshot wound to the right temple. According to *The Economist*, Ferguson had been collaborating with Ms. Jones and "may have been aware of details" of other activities at the time. Whether these "other activities" included Iran/Contra drug running through Mena was not mentioned. But if the motives behind her death did involve knowledge of cocaine smuggling, it would correlate with the mention in the Gestapo note about a police officer's "wife" being shot for knowing too much about drug activities.

When we left the meeting with our Maricopa contacts, one asked "what do you think we could do next? We're about out of leads."

"If there's more to this than a couple of renegade malcontents deciding to derail a train then leaving a note as a false trail, then I'd say it would be interesting to just fire a shot down range and see who sticks their head up."

"How's that?"

"You might consider leaking the word that your agency was interested in a possible connection between the activities at Marana and what happened at Hyder. You might even mention that you are following up on the idea that someone may have used air assets to attack the railroad, that you've heard rumors of helicopters and guys in parachutes, and that you plan to get together with the Pinal County folks and see about paying a visit to Marana. Then just sit back and see what happens. If you are told to stay away from Marana, or are obstructed from looking in this direction, then that should tell you something."

Whether or not this "bait" was leaked I do not know. But within a week after our visit to Phoenix, the investigation seemed to trickle to a halt and no further mention was made in the media about the event.

The last contact we had with the Maricopa County Sheriff's deputies came in the form of a telephone call from one of our contacts soon after the meeting. "You know the five types of terrorist targets you listed?"

"Yes."

"Well," he said in a very concerned tone, "We've got the Super Bowl coming up in a few days. That would sure fit your 'large gathering of people' scenario."

"Yes, it definitely would. I don't know if they, whoever 'they' are, would try something so close to the last event or not. If my theory holds water, these attacks, if they are related and part of someone's agenda, seem to be geographically spaced across the country. The World Trade Center bombing was in New York, then the Murrah Building was further west, then the Amtrak incident almost to the West Coast. I would suspect that the next incident, if there is one, would be either on the coast or in the northern Mid-West, or possibly back on the East Coast again. But it wouldn't hurt to lay on some extra security."

"We're planning on that."

"One last thing that has been bothering me that you should give some consideration to. If the perpetrators of these crimes have Middle-Eastern connections and are really professional terrorists, don't discount the possibility of a chemical or biological weapon being used. Saddam Hussein and Iran both have access to both. And if they can get them, so can Islamic terrorists. Also, and this sounds like something out of a Hollywood thriller, someone inside this country who wants to blame the Jihad-types might try the same thing. Watch the water and food supplies."

"I don't know how we'll do that, but I'll pass it along."

"One more thing to watch," I warned. "There's *two* types of targets left: besides a large gathering of people you have mass transportation, air. They just might try for an airliner next."

Six months later, on a major Iraqi holiday, TWA 800 fell from the sky in a massive fireball into the Atlantic ocean.

And then there was one.

Chapter 34

Behold a Pale Horse

A few days after the TWA 800 tragedy, a small pipe bomb detonated at the Summer Olympic games in Atlanta. Following the tried-and-true law enforcement axioms regarding arsons and bombings, the FBI and BATF began looking for the "face in the crowd that enjoys the action the most" and "the 'hero' who helps out the most during and after the event." Within two days the FBI attention focused on a lone security guard as the possible perpetrator. This particular individual was the person who "found" the backpack containing the pipe bomb, then issued the initial warning to the crowd. After questioning him and searching his apartment and conducting follow-up surveillance, adequate proof of his involvement was not obtained. As of this writing the investigation continues.

Whether a small pipe bomb could qualify as the terrorist attack on the fifth category target, "a large gathering of people," is doubtful. Though the Olympics would have made a prime target for this category, the massive amount of security involved may have precluded such a strike.

What few people realize is the fact that those agencies responsible for security were concerned with more than a repeat of the hostage situation exhibited by Black September (El Fatah) in the Munich Olympics or the threat of a bombing. One of the prime threats that security forces were concerned with involved the possibility of an attack by either chemical or biological agents. Military units that specialize in chemical and biological weapons detection and neutralization had been deployed to Atlanta in advance and were constantly on standby. Precautions were obviously taken by monitoring teams, which may have precluded any such attack. Still, the threat was real and precautionary actions were taken.

Indeed, the possibility of a large scale biological or chemical attack on the American population is more probable now than in any time in our history. Because of events in the Middle East, the American population could feasibly be the next target of such madmen as Saddam Hussein, Moammar Khadaffi, or radical Iranian fundamentalists who consider the United States as the "Great Satan."

During the Gulf War, Allied forces nearly annihilated the Iraqi war machine. Thousands of Iraqis were killed by coalition forces not only in Kuwait, but in Iraq itself. Saddam Hussein did not hesitate to use these attacks and their resultant damage to his political advantage. Massive propaganda was generated and broadcast throughout the region vividly showing the aftermath of Allied bombings in Baghdad and other areas, and whenever possible it attempted to convince the populations of neighboring Islamic countries that the Allied targets were buildings inhabited by civilians, especially women, children and babies. In one infamous circumstance, an Iraqi chemical weapons facility was exhibited as actually being a "baby milk factory."

The fact that Hussein had used nerve gas on entire villages of Iraqi Kurds, or on thousands of Iranian troops during the border war with Iran, had little bearing on the anti-American mindset of the Arab population of the region. Nor was the fact that Iraq had built numerous sites where massive quantities of chemical and biological weapons were being created and stored a relevant factor in the propaganda issuing from Baghdad. The point that Hussein was attempting to make was that the Americans were evil and cruel, and had little or no regard for life. These graphic images of "attacks on the innocent civilian population" were reinforced by video footage of burned vehicles and bodies throughout Kuwait, including those of hundreds of vehicles and troops burned and stacked up on the highway west of Kuwait City during the Iraqi retreat.

Instead of pursuing the attack against Iraq by taking Baghdad and unseating the corrupt and sadistic Saddam Hussein, the coalition forces stopped short of what should have been an actual and legitimate military objective and allowed Hussein to remain in power. The excuses made by the senior commanders and politicians at the time were that the U.N. "mandate" only addressed ejecting Hussein's troops from Kuwait, and that if Hussein was removed from power, a "power vacuum" would exist in the Middle East which would be worse than leaving him in power.

Both of these excuses are weak at best. First, 90% of "U.N." forces in the conflict were American, and had the U.S. government pressed the issue, a thrust to Baghdad to unseat a corrupt and dictatorial government that based its power on intimidation, torture, assassination and other violations of human rights, and who threatened the stability of every surrounding country, would have been approved. Second, the Iraqi government was stockpiling tons of chemical and biological weapons, building long range delivery systems, financing and controlling huge terrorist organizations, and was on the verge of completing development of nuclear weapons. These activities alone threatened the stability of not only the Middle East, but the entire world. Third, taking Baghdad and eliminating the Hussein regime would not have created the so-called "power vacuum" that the politicians used as an excuse to not finish the war in a military manner. The U.S. Army and other coalition forces, such as Britain and France, all have units known as Civil Affairs battalions or their equivalent. The specialty of these units is to follow closely behind the combat forces and establish and stabilize governments and government services for the civilian population was quickly as possible after an area has been secured. As an example, during World War II these civil affairs units, working with attached engineer units, set up new governments and reestablished such things as food and water distribution, electrical power, sanitation, mail, and other needful services in virtually every city and town that was liberated. Saying that the elimination of the Hussein government would create a power vacuum is tantamount to saying the elimination of Hitler would have done the same thing. Had the U.S./U.N. taken Baghdad and ousted the Tyrant from Tikrit, many of the terrorist organizations and capabilities that exist now would never have been born.

Today, the U.S. is faced with the infiltration of terrorist cells from virtually every hostile fundamentalist Islamic country in existence. Reports indicate that over a hundred cells exist that have ties to, or are a subcell of, the Hamas, Hizbollah, PLO, Islamic Jihad, Egyptian Jihad and others. And for all intents and purposes, the most capable and threatening of the lot are those staffed with former and current Iraqi soldiers. For it is Iraq that has repeatedly threatened to kill more Americans than the number of Iraqis lost during the Gulf War.

The question now is this: does the capability exist for such an event to occur? According to several knowledgeable sources, it not only exists, a plan is in motion. In the scenario that follows, the "large gathering of people" that would more than qualify as the fifth category target could entail every living person in the United States.

During the week of October 10th, 1996, a microbiologist knowledgeable in the Iraqi intent and capabilities went public on shortwave radio and AM radio talk shows with the allegation that he had acquired information concerning a possible Iraqi plan to distribute massive quantities of deadly disease microorganisms across the U.S. His name was Larry Harris, and he introduced himself as a former CIA microbiological lab technician. According to his story, he received a very personal warning from a female Iraqi terrorist cell member shortly after the bombing of the World Trade Center.

Another event added credibility to what he was saying. Approximately two months before he went public, the military decided to inoculate all American service personnel against Anthrax, a disease normally found in sheep and goats and not considered a threat under normal circumstances. Only two times in recent history has the American military shown concern over Anthrax: World War II and the Gulf War. In World War II, it was General Ishii's experiments with Anthrax, Botulin and Plague that frightened the military hierarchy, and in the Gulf War it was the knowledge of Iraqi experiments with these same bioweapons that initiated the defensive measures for our troops. But why would the Pentagon decide it was necessary in 1996?

By the 18th of October, I had received numerous telephone calls from various individuals asking if I had heard of an impending "attack" by Iraqi terrorists utilizing disease organisms, specifically Anthrax and Plague. Realizing that such an event would fit the fifth and final category of land-based terrorist targets, I began to investigate the rumors. I could not discount them out of hand by simply considering that if there was anything to them, the government would be doing something about it and the media would carry the stories, because I knew by this time that the "government" could not be trusted to be honest with the American people, and the mainstream media was controlled by powers who have their own agendas.

After making enquiries, I received a portion of a long document written by Mr. Harris. In it, he describes his encounter with the Iraqi female, Mariam Arif, and relates her story regarding Iraqi intentions to employ biological weapons against unsuspecting American citizens. This, coupled with other bits and pieces of information and rumors that were circulating, instigated me to write an "executive summary" type report for submission to key personnel in various agencies that would be effective in investigating the accuracy of the data and replying with some type of action to counter the threat, if such a threat actually existed.

The following is my memo:

MEMORANDUM FOR RECORD

To: [Agency's name]
From: Craig Roberts, Tulsa PD (Ret.)
Notes re: Biological Weapons Threat (Anthrax, Plague, and Botulin)
Date: 22 Oct 96
Ref: Iraqi Terrorism and Terrorist Cells in U.S.

SYNOPSIS

1. We have received information that there is a distinct possibility that a planned terrorist attack involving biological warfare agents may occur inside the U.S. The information has come from various sources, but most specifically appears to have originated from a microbiologist named Larry Carrol Harris whose resume includes duty with the CIA Biowar section at Aberdeen Proving Grounds (1969-72), A CIA Biowar lab in Coshocton, Ohio (1985-91), and now is employed as a Epidemiologist and Microbiologist. (See end of report for contact numbers)

2. In February 1993, Mr. Harris interviewed a female Iraqi bio/med student named Mariam Arif at Ohio State University. Arif was a relative of a former president of Iraq, General Arif, who was killed in a helicopter crash in 1966. Ms. Arif told Mr. Harris that Iraq was planning a large scale terrorist operation against the U.S. population inside CONUS utilizing biological warfare weapons. She explained that these weapons would consist of Anthrax and Bubonic Plague. [NOTE: The Iraqis are also reported to possess other bio weapons which include Pneumonic Plague and Hemorrhagic Fever].

4. Arif explained that there are at least a hundred "cells" of Iraqi terrorists inside the country, and that each consists often men and one woman (who serves as a "carrier"). She stated that since the Gulf War, Iraqi females have been smuggling various cultures of Anthrax and Plague into this country by secreting sealed vials in their vaginas. Each vial, upon delivery, is used as a base culture to manufacture large quantities of the end product.

5. NOTE: Other confirmed sources have reported a minimum of 28 Hamas and/or Hizbollah cells operating inside the U.S., and that they coordinate with both the PLO and the Egyptian Jihad (who was involved in the World Trade Center bombing). We also discovered that over 5,000 former Iraqi soldiers, who were captured during our advance into Kuwait, were resettled in the U.S. in various cities. Many of these ex-POWs are "former" members of the Republican Guard Division who participated in the demolition of the Kuwaiti oil fields. Specifically, many are/were members of the Hammurabi Division--one of the most blood thirsty units Saddam Hussein has. Further, there is a definite link between Pakistan terrorist activities and those that have occurred in the U.S.

After the Afghan war, the Mujihadeen training camps used by the CIA to train the Afghans were turned over to the Pakistani ISI (Internal Security Service--secret police). The ISI turned the 100-plus camps into Islamic terrorist training camps specifically to train and export Islamic terrorists to non-Islamic countries for the world-wide Jihad. U.S. military intelligence sources estimate they produce 3,700 trained terrorists at one time. The information I have read does not reflect duration of the training cycles, whether one month, six months, or somewhere in between. However, it is known that some of the countries that have been targeted for infiltration for terrorist operations include the U.S., the Philippines, Saudi Arabia (anti-US and anti-monarchy operations), Israel, Jordan and Egypt. What must be understood is that Pakistan (which has the world's fifth largest army, the U.S. is now seventh) trains guerrilla/terrorist personnel for both Iran and Iraq whether they are Shiite or Sunni Moslem. Many of the instructors are Pakistani Baluch, which have no preference between the two sects. [World Trade Center bomber Ramzi Yousef, AKA Abdel Basit Mahmoud Abdul Karim, is a Baluch Pakistani who worked for and was funded by Iraq].

6. According to Harris, immediately after the World Trade Center bombing Mariam Arif considered her arrest imminent. As a friend, she confided in Harris that something terrible was in the works and that he needed to take precautions to protect himself. She stated that she had personally worked in a germ warfare laboratory in Iraq, and they had taken mycoplasma fermentans (incognitus) and genetically manipulated a relatively benign mycoplasma to be much more invasive and pathogenic and capable of attacking many organ and tissue systems in the body. She

also stated that they also had isolated and used a form of Ebola Zaire virus that took over 3-7 years to prove fatal (which she claims was used on the Gulf War veterans).

7. Arif said that "when the time comes Iraq would demand at least one American life for every Iraqi killed during the Gulf War." She explained exactly how the cultures of Anthrax, Plague and Botulin were being brought into the country, and how they were being cultured and produced into an effective bioweapon in various "safe house" laboratories across the nation.

8. Arif explained that many of the Iraqis that have come into the country are pilots, and their mission is to locate for later rental, or steal light aircraft, such as Cessna 152s, which could be used to aerial spray population centers with biological agents. She stated that the targets would be "many hundreds simultaneously across the country. The prime targets would be large metropolitan centers. The subway systems would make a good selective target; who would notice another maintenance man down there spraying for bugs?" Other inviting targets would be the air ducts of large office buildings, or *a large gathering of people like at a stadium*." [Author's emphasis] She said that they also had ordered external aircraft venturis which are designed to be mounted on the side of airplanes to provide suction for the vacuum instruments, which they have modified to extract the bioweapon product from stainless steel tanks (such as pump-up pest sprayers), for aerial application over cities. [This could explain the "test" flights we've had in the early morning hours over various U.S. cities by low-flying, blacked out unknown aircraft who have been reported flying "grid" patterns between 0200-0400 hrs., some spraying chemicals that to witnesses taste and smell like "insecticides."].

9. Arif also said a plan existed to mount spray apparatus under cars, fed from pressure tanks, which could drive down freeways and deliver the mist from a venturi by simply opening a valve.

10. She stated that Plague and Anthrax are the "bacterias of choice" because they are easy to manufacture and have an extremely high kill ratio. Medical records show that both Bubonic Plague and Anthrax, once in the human population, are approximately 95% fatal in all cases. Prophylactic measures can be taken in advance to preclude infection in the individual provided enough antibiotic compounds are available for mass distribution over a sustained period of time (in excess of 30 days which would include distribution at least 16 hours before the attack to up to thirty days after the attack).

11. Harris, after research, also wrote that four microorganisms would be the most likely candidates for use in a biological attack by a terrorist organization or nation. They are, in order of preference: Yersinia Pestis (plague), Bacillus Anthracis (anthrax), Vibrio Cholera (cholera), and

Salmonella Typhi (typhoid fever). Countermeasures include Panmycin, Tetracycline, Terramycin, Tetramycin, and Penicillin.

12. Iraqi Motivation Indicators: In 1994, Saddam Hussein, through the state press, indicated that his remaining unconventional warfare weapons (biological) would be used when Iraqi patience wore thin regarding economic sanctions. On September 29, 1994, the government newspaper *Babil*, warned: "Does the United States realize the meaning of every Iraqi becoming a missile that can cross to countries and cities?"

Other quotes that followed over a period of time:

"When peoples reach the verge of collective death, they will be able to spread death to all."

"When one realizes that death is one's inexorable fate, there remains nothing to deter one from taking the most risky steps to influence the course of events."

"We seek to tell the United States and its agents that the Iraqi patience has run out and that the perpetration of the crime of annihilating the Iraqis will trigger crises whose nature and consequence are known only to God."

13. ITEM: The U.N. Special Commission (UNSCOM) assured the United Nations that the Iraqi chemical and nuclear weapons manufacturing facilities were accounted for and destroyed. But they admit that the biological weapons manufacturing facilities could not be found and no evidence of their destruction exists.

14. ITEM: According to General Wafiq Samarrai, former head of Iraqi military intelligence, "Tell the allies that they have to destroy Iraq's biological agents before Saddam can use them...Iraq could attack its neighbors by missile, *or America through terrorism*." Samarrai said that the U.S. might retaliate through nuclear weapons, but by then "the disaster would already have happened."

15. ITEM: The military is now, for the first time since WWII, decided to inoculate U.S. service personnel against anthrax, both overseas and in CONUS.

16. ITEM: We have received unconfirmed information that an Iraqi/Hamas cell may exist in [blacked out], and that such a cell is linked with a cell in the [blacked out] area, which in turn reports to a major cell in Dallas. [blacked out] also has had a large number of Middle-eastern students taking flight training at [blacked out], and the city has experienced nighttime low-level aircraft "grid pattern" flights by aircraft displaying no navigational lights.

This report, plus other documentation that I could gather, was passed on to people I trusted in various government agencies. Most of these people would, like a bomb threat, take the matter very seriously until it could be proved or disproved. The ball was now in their court.

The question then became: if there indeed existed such a threat, what would the Washington level bureaucrats and politicians do about it? The choices they would have would be thus:

1. Ignore the threat and hope it goes away;
2. Diffuse the threat through negotiations with Hussein and lift the embargo;
3. Clandestinely neutralize the threat by locating and arresting or eliminating the "cells" of suspected or known terrorists;
4. Handle the threat by taking public health precautions in advance;
5. Take all necessary precautions and make everyone aware of the threat by use of the media;
6. Say nothing, then deal with the aftermath with disinformation and coverup, using scenarios that provide for later political advantage by blame shifting and spin doctoring. In this scenario a "national emergency" could be declared which could result in the need for "foreign assistance" by foreign troops and medical personnel. This scenario would fill the "UN Takeover" nightmare feared by various politically aware anti-globalist organizations.[225]

As of this writing the situation is still unfolding. The final result will depend upon how the government decides to deal with it should this threat actually exist. The problem now, considering the cases of criminal coverup by government entities presented to the reader in this book as "case files" from what I have dubbed *The Medusa File* (after the many-headed evil Gorgon of Greek Mythology), is whether or not this issue, or a future one like it, will also be covered up or ignored until it is too late.

The bottom line is this: when we weigh the evidence, using only the samples exhibited in this book, what we have is this:

By the patterns established, it is not beyond certain bureaucratic and political entities in Washington, who infest government offices like cancerous tissue, to use past experiences and the knowledge base gained by those who have gone before to conceal or cover up the truth, and use unfortunate incidents to their personal advantage. In this book, I have endeavored to present a credible set of case files that show how far a government that is no longer controlled by, or answerable to the people can and will go to cover its own political backside, or worse, force the American people to become subject of the Hegelian effect by using fear tactics to achieve a purpose. In the cases presented we have seen people in power violate the trust of the nation by:

A. Breaking their moral contract with our fighting forces and our individual soldiers, sailors, Marines and airmen by abandoning them in foreign lands as prisoners of wars that no longer exist;

B. Use innocent civilian men, women and children, along with unsuspecting servicemen as human guinea pigs in secret, despicable experiments that range from drug experimentation, to mind control, to nuclear aftereffects;

C. Use children in government-controlled international pedophilia rings to gain favors of pedophilic politicians and bureaucrats, both at home and abroad, or in some cases as a means to blackmail or extort high officials;

D. Recruit, hide, and smuggle into the U.S. known war criminals from both Japan and Germany for use by the military in the "arms race," with little regard for what they have done to this nation or our soldiers in the past;

E. Cover up the events, then lie to the American people and our own armed forces about the personal effects of Agent Orange, experiments at Fort Detrick and Edgewood Arsenal, nerve gas and biological weapons releases in Iraq, and the recognition of the causes and effects of the Gulf War diseases;

F. Participate in international drug smuggling and money laundering involving heroin and cocaine in the most massive operation in history, beginning with OSS operations in World War II and carrying through the war in Southeast Asia, the Iran/Contra affair, all the way to our present situation with the White House stopping all drug interdiction and refusing to close off our borders;

G. Lying about or covering up the true circumstances behind the World Trade Center bombing, the Oklahoma City bombing, the bombing of Pan Am 103, the Gander Newfoundland crash of Arrow Air, the derailment of Amtrak in Arizona, the downing of TWA 800, and using these tragedies to pass, then reinforce an Orwellian silver bullet known as the "anti-Terrorism Law" that basically shreds the Constitution and shoves us into the so-called New World Order of the 21st Century, the exact objective of the global-socialist elitists.

Is this the world and the government we will pass on to our children and our children's children? Our shall we educate ourselves and our progeny to be able to understand the basic facts of mankind, that there are only two entities in the world, good and evil, and that we must choose the correct side? Will we eventually learn and pass on to others the fact that each and every person is accountable to not only themselves and the rest of mankind for their actions, but to God himself? And finally, is it too late for this country to make government, and the individuals within the government, accountable for their actions?

These are the questions each and every American must ask themselves at this moment.

Before it's too late.

My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge.
Hosea 4:6

About the Author

Craig Roberts is the author of over a dozen fiction and nonfiction books. A Marine combat sniper in Vietnam and U.S. Army Lieutenant Colonel (retired), Craig spent 27 years with the Tulsa, Oklahoma Police Department, where he served as both an officer and a helicopter pilot. He was also a member of the city's bomb squad and S.W.A.T. team. He worked as a scuba diver for the Emergency Management Agency, after his retirement. Roberts is an investigative journalist, author and lecturer, who seeks the truth beneath what history would have us believe, and the future has yet to reveal. The publisher of Consolidated Press International, he has eBook versions available for sale of the five titles Trilogus Books will be bringing to print and digital formats. You can visit the author online at his web site at http://www.riflewarrior.com, and his publisher at http://www.trilogus.com.

Postscript

In *The Medusa File* I have endeavored to present to the reader a sampling of events that have been hidden from the public by a government that has shunned its responsibilities and violated its trust. Many other examples exist, however not every story can be told in one book. The object of *The Medusa File* is to provide the reader with a foundation of knowledge from which to build.

Knowledge is in itself power, and power is best controlled and used when it rests in the hands of the people. It is the people who must control government, not the government which would, if not kept in check, control the people.

George Washington put it well when he warned, "Government is not reason; it is not eloquence; it is force! Like fire, it is a dangerous servant and a fearful master."

"The only thing necessary for evil to triumph is for good men to do nothing."
Edmund Burke (1729-1797)

"And I saw, and behold a white horse; and he that sat on him had a bow,; and a crown was given unto him; and he went forth conquering and to conquer...And there went out another horse that was red; and power was given to him that sat thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another; and there was given unto him a great sword...And I beheld and lo a black horse; and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand. And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say, A measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny; and see thou hurt not the wine...And I looked, and behold a pale horse; and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth." Rev. 6:2-8

"And the rest of the men who were not killed by the plagues yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, and idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone and of wood; which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk; Neither repented they of their murders nor of their sorceries nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts." Rev. 9:20-21

"He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son...He that is unjust, let him be unjust still; and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still; and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still; and he that is holy, let him be holy still...And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be...I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last...Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city [of Heaven]...For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and

whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, ***and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie***." Rev 21:7, 11-15

Endnotes

1. *The Bulletin of Atomic Scientists*, Oct 1991, "A Hidden Chapter in History," by John W. Powell.

2. The squadron attached to Pingfan was the Heibo 8372 Field Aviation Unit.

3. Williams, Peter, and Wallace, David, *Unit 731; Japan's Secret Biological Warfare in World War II*, The Free Press, NY, 1989.

4. *Hearing before the subcommittee on oversight and investigations of the Committee of Veteran's Affairs, House of Representatives*, June 19th, 1982.

5. Ishii used the name in veneration of the famous Japanese admiral who fought the Russians in the Russo-Japanese War of 1905. When Ishii travelled incognito, he called himself Captain Hajime Togo.

6. Ishiwara was later replaced by Saburo Endo, former assistant to the chief Japanese Army representative at the 1925 Geneva talks.

7. Testimony given at Khabarovsk war trials.

8. Testifying at the Soviet War Crimes trials at Khabarovsk.

9. In the facility at Pingfan alone, over 3,000 people were sacrificed in the name of science.

10. The Montgomery Committee on Veteran's Administrations Programs in Montana--hearing before the House Subcommittee on Oversight and Investigations, June 19th, 1982.

11. By this time U.S. intelligence units already knew of Ishii in that he had received awards in Tokyo for his efforts in perfecting water purification equipment and special water filters that were considered some of the best in the world for field use.

12. *Unit 731*, pgs 124-125.

13. The Naito Document did not mention using humans as guinea pigs. When Sanders asked Naito about this, Naito replied that such a thing never occurred. Sanders noted it at the bottom of the document in his own handwriting and let the matter drop.

14. *Unit 731*, pg 133.

15. SWNCC was the American State-War-Navy Coordinating Committee. Though General MacArthur's powers were sweeping in the Far East, his orders came from the SWNCC in Washington. The SWNCC delegated MacArthur to conduct war crimes trials on one hand, and secretly recommended protection for the Ishii unit on the other.

16. *Unit 731*

17. In the Potsdam Declaration, the Allies announced publicly that they intended to prosecute Japanese war criminals and that "...stern justice shall be meted out to all war criminals, including those who have visited cruelties upon our prisoners..."

18. Warren "Pappy" Whelchel died in September 1983, just months after testifying before the congressional committee. He never received government benefits for his war-connected medical problems.

19. The V-1 flying bomb was known as the "Doodle Bug," and the "Buzz Bomb." These names were derived from the strange buzzing sound made by the pulse-jet engine. The engine fired by means of a set of shutter doors on the intake that alternately opened to let ram air into the combustion chamber, then closed to seal the chamber for ignition. This process created a burping sound as the missile flew. The stubby-winged pilotless craft carried a 1,870 pound warhead filled with Trialen, an explosive with almost twice the power of the conventional RDX types. Unlike the later V-2s, which cost over $24,000 per missile, the V-1 cost the Germans only $250.00 per copy. However the range and accuracy left a lot to be desired. Of the 8,000 V-1s that were launched at London, only half ever reached the city.

20. The V-2 was designated A-4 by the German rocket teams. The V-1 "buzzbomb" carried the German designation FZG-76.

21. The first organized project, codenamed OVERCAST, was a JCS approved project whose stated purpose was to bring German and Austrian scientists to the U.S. to aid in developing weapons that might shorten the war with Japan. It was originally limited to "those chosen, rare minds" whose skills could not be utilized in Europe. The caveat to Overcast was the fact that the scientists, once the war with Japan was concluded, would be returned to Germany.

22. The Henschel Hs-293 was the first guided missile of World War II. It's chief designer was Herbert Wagner, who became the first German scientist to be brought to the U.S. Wagner, along with his two assistants, arrived just prior to the inception of Project Paperclip.

23. Hermann Becker-Freysing was convicted at Nuremburg for force-feeding sea water to prisoners and sentenced to 20 years. Strughold's cohort, Siegfried Ruff, who had been charged with killing over 80 Dachau inmates in a low pressure chamber designed to simulate altitudes in excess of 60,000 feet, was acquitted. But of note is the fact that both of these men were on the Army Air Force payroll before their trials to write extensive reports of their experiments and findings.

24. During the same period, the British were secretly exploiting several groups of German scientists under their Operation Matchbox.

25. *Covert Action*, Fall 1990.

26. *Covert Action,* Winter 1986.

27. *Blowback; America's Recruitment of Nazis and Its Effect on the Cold War*, by Christopher Simpson, (Weidenfeld & Nicolson), 1988.

28. Like Warren Whelchel in his dealings with the Veterans Administration after his return from Mukden, Gamble found that there were no records of his service connected disability. Despite his own documentation of depressive and suicidal moods and their link to LSD, his compensation claim was denied by the VA, who cited no sign of permanent disability. Gamble also found that the Feres Doctrine, a U.S. Supreme Court ruling, states that the government is immune from civil suits by servicemen in cases "where injury arises out of...activity incident to service."

29. Author and investigator Jon Rappaport writes regarding CIA mind control experiments on children: "Children were trained as sex agents, for example, with the job of blackmailing prominent AmericansC primarily politicians, businessmen and educators. A great deal of filming was done for this purpose. Eventually, people from the inner core of the CIA program filmed each other, and some of the centers where children were used as sex agents got out of control and turned into CIA-operated sex rings...Some children were considered expendable and simply murdered." See Rappaport's book *U.S. Government Mind-Control Experiments on Children.*

30. Chaitkin, Anton; "Franklin Witnesses Implicate FBI and U.S. Elites in Torture and Murder of Children." Dec. 13, 1993.

31. Paul Bonacci has described in detail being taken to Washington for use as a sex slave for "clients" of Larry King. On several occasions, Bonacci and others were taken on White House "tours" for male prostitutes by lobbyist Craig Spence, an

associate of King in the Iran/Contra money laundering affair. Spence was found dead in a Boston hotel in 1989, soon after the Franklin affair blew up in Omaha and the story was picked up by the *Washington Times* in a June 29th, 1989 article titled: "Homosexual Prostitution Inquiry Ensnares VIPs with Reagan, Bush".

32. Chaitkin

33. Many of the bodies that were discovered after the mass "suicide" at Jonestown actually died from gunshots to the skull or back. Though it was made to look as if everyone took cyanide poisoning from a vat filled with grape drink, it is now thought that most, if not all victims were forced to drink or get shot. Also, according to the Guyana medical examiner, many victims had unexplained hypodermic puncture wounds to their necks and backs. These facts were not reported in the American press. It should be noted that the first U.S. personnel to arrive on the scene were Special Forces personnel who took control of the camp and did a "lock down" to the media. The next arrivals were from the 82nd Airborne Divison's Rapid Deployment Force, who "bagged and tagged" the remains and shipped them to Dover Air Force Base. No autopsies were done and the bodies were disposed of before any medical evidence could be obtained by relatives. During the events in Guyana, squads of 82nd Airborne troopers engaged Jones' former "security guards" in firefights in the jungle. Most, however, escaped. Some later turned up as mercenaries in Angola.

34. Chris De Nicola, a patient of New Orleans therapist, Dr. Valerie Wolf (who testified before the President's Committee on Radiation on March 15, 1995), said that her (Nicola's) CIA controller was a "Dr. Greene," a name which had been reported by other mind-control victims. According to author Jon Rappaport in an article titled "CIA Experiments with Mind Control on Children" (*Perceptions*, Sep/Oct 1995), Nicola testified to the Committee that "[Dr. Green] used me in radiation experiments both for the purpose of determining the effects of radiation on various parts of my body and to terrorize me as an additional trauma in mind control experiments." Nicola was eight years old at the time. Nicola continued: "The rest of the experiments took place in Tucson, Arizona, out in the desert. I was taught how to pick locks, be secretive, use my photographic memory to remember things and a technique to withhold information by repeating numbers to myself...Dr. Greene moved on to wanting me to kill dolls that looked like real children. I stabbed a doll with a spear once after being severely tortured, but the next time I refused. He used many torture techniques but as I got older I resisted more and more...[later on] I snuck into his office and found files with reports and memos addressed to CIA and military personnel. Included in these files were project, subproject, subject and experiment names, with some code numbers for radiation and mind-contrl

experiments which I have submitted in my written documentation. I was caught twice and Dr. Greene tortured me ruthlessly with electric shock, drugs, spinning me on a table, putting shots in my stomach, in my back, dislocating my joints and hypnotic techniques to make me feel crazy and suicidal." [Rappaport]

35. The nerve gas experiments conducted at Auschwitz were used to determine how fast the compounds would kill Allied soldiers. The helpless victims at first died very painfully. But as the gas was perfected, it was reported that they began to die instantly. According to British intelligence, the experiments were justified--by Ambros--on the grounds that "...the inmates of the concentration camps would have been killed anyway by the Nazis, [and] the experiments had a humanitarian aspect in that the lives of countless German workers were saved."

36. Though Ambros was finally tried at Nuremberg, and found guilty of slavery and mass murder, his sentence was a mere eight years. Chief Prosecutor Josiah DuBois exclaimed that the sentence was "light enough to please a chicken thief."

37. The number of service members exposed to radiation is derived from both those that were intentionally exposed during atom and hydrogen bomb tests and those who were prisoners of Japan near Hiroshima and Nagasaki and those who later occupied the same areas.

38. In testimony to the lack of understanding and training on behalf of the troops, Harry Hall, a B-25 crewman who participated in a flight over Hiroshima to take photographs shortly after the bombing, stated: "As we neared Hiroshima, the clouds thickened and smoke swirled in through the open waist windows...The putrid, sickening smoke wafting up from the destruction below became thicker inside the plane as we dropped down to 50 feet or so above the remaining rooftops. At the time we had no idea we might be exposing ourselves to deadly radiation. Captain Piazzo [the pilot] lowered the landing gear and flaps to drop our airspeed as low as he dared, giving us photographers the best conditions possible."

39. The author's grandfather, who worked at Oak Ridge during the war, died of leukemia in 1969. There are no other reported cases of cancer of any type in the family.

40. "Veterans as Government Guinea Pigs: Are They Receiving Care and Compensation?, pgs 8-9, *DAV* magazine, October 1991.

41. The CIA destroyed almost all of its files on the MK/ULTRA operation in 1973. It was only when some of the files leaked to the U.S. Senate that hearings were held

that exposed the significance and scope of the human drug testing conducted by the CIA.

42. *DAV*, Oct 91, pg 10.

43. *Is Military Research Hazardous to Veterans' Health?* A Staff Report Prepared For The Committee On Veterans' Affairs, December 8, 1994.

44. "DAV Seeks Justice, Equity for 'Atomic Vets'," *DAV* Magazine, July/August 1996.

45. Because of the mishandling of numerous claims, there is now a Court of Veteran's Appeals.

46. According to *U.S. News and World Report.*

47. Petrochemical poisoning can be ruled out since none of the firefighters that entered Kuwait to put out the oil fires have complained of any sickness, and they were there for three months. Neither have the minefield demo disposal technicians who were there for almost a year.

48. Clark, Ramsey, *The Fire This Time*, pg 97.

49. Ibid.

50. Iraqi medical student Mariam Arif told microbiologist Larry Harris that the Iraqis used a "coctail" mix of biological agents during the Gulf War that would not take effect for months and even years. She claims that this is the real "Gulf War Disease" that surfaced later in U.S. troops after they returned home.

51. Experimental vaccine inoculation programs can be a surreptitious way of introducing harmful infectious agents into an unsuspecting population. Some investigators believe that the polio vaccine programs of the 1950s by the World Health Organization in Africa may have introduced the AIDS virus (HIV) into the black population. The African green monkey is theorized as the source of AIDS virus, and the polio vaccine was manufactured using the kidney cells of the green monkey. Others think the World Health Organization's smallpox vaccine program is connected to the AIDS outbreak in Africa. One report suggested that a dormant HIV infection was awakened in the African population by the inoculation of millions of doses of smallpox vaccine by the WHO during the 1970s. This story was suppressed in the U.S. and never appeared in any major publication. It is interesting to note that

the introduction of HIV into the homosexual population occurred the same year the hepatitis B vaccine experiment began in 1978 in New York City. And it was in New York City that AIDS broke out among homosexuals the following year.

52. In a letter to the newspaper, VA doctor Basil Clyman admitted that "many Gulf War personnel were exposed inadvertently or otherwise to a variety of potentially toxic agents, some of which were administered in hopes of protecting them from still worse toxicities, namely those posed by biological or chemical warfare."

53. Under pressure from activist groups, the physician was released from prison after serving eight months.

54. This follows suit for government concerns regarding both military personnel and civilians. Dozens of secret, planned bioattacks were perpetrated on American cities during the 1950s and 1960s, the most notorious being a six-day bioattack on San Francisco in which the military sprayed massive clouds of potentially harmful bacteria over the entire city.

55. *Tulsa World*, August 29, 1996.

56. There is one other area to be considered regarding GWS. Never in the history of the military have we had the huge number of microwave communications towers, known as "tower farms," located in such concentrated areas close to humans. Most of the soldiers who lived around these commo sites were reservists and lived in canvas tents. Most were rear echelon, such as the Indiana reservists, and were constantly bombarded with microwave radiation for six months, 24 hours a day. It is entirely possible that many of the soft tissue damage and cancers Desert Shield/Storm vets are experiencing actually were initiated by being microwaved.

57. Fall, Bernard; *Hell in a Very Small Place*, pg 481. Though most sources state that only 6,500 troops were captured at Dien Bien Phu, there was an additional 4,500 support troops and civilians.

58. *An Examination of U.S. Policy Toward POW/MIAs*, by the U.S. Senate Committee of Foreign Relations, pg 9-1. Further references to this document will refer to The Senate Report.

59. ibid, pg 9-3.

60. ibid, pg 9-4.

61. Memorandum written to the United States Political Advisor for Germany, by

Mr. Parker W. Buhrman on January 28, 1946.

62. Message A-4152, AFHQ, dated 25 May 45.

63. Nikolai Tolstoy, *Secret Betrayel*, London, 1975.

64. *Soldiers of Misfortune*, pgs 81-82.

65. Message S-94080, SHAEF, excerpt.

66. Senate Report, pg 3-18.

67. ibid.

68. Memorandum to General Kenner, Eisenhower's Surgeon General at SHAEF Headquarters, concerning Displaced Persons, Allied ex-PW and German PW. Message dated 30 May 1945, No. S-383.6-2.

69. Senate Report, pg 3-19.

70. Letter dated 31 May 1945, numbered No. 1009.

71. "10,000 Ex-Captives Coming by Week-End; Army Sees All in Europe Accounted For," *The New York Times*, June 1, 1945.

72. *Unit 731*, pg 226.

73. *Soldiers of Misfortune*, pgs 104-105.

74. Department of State confidential memo 611.61241/12-1655.

75. This was a direct violation of the Yalta Agreement. According to the Agreement, which was signed by the United States, Great Britain, France, and the Soviet Union, *all* German war criminals would be accounted for and tried as such. Keeping Gehlen and his organization intact and hidden from the Russians was considered treachery by the Soviets.

76. Prouty, L. Fletcher, *JFK; The CIA, Vietnam And The Plot To Kill Kennedy*, Birch Lane Press, NY, 1992, pgs 17-20.

77. No one has ever satisfactorily explained why brand new military equipment, purchased with tax payers money, was destroyed wholesale simply because the war

was over. However, by 1950 war stocks and supplies were suddenly found sadly lacking and massive new contracts for not only new equipment were let, but multi-million dollar contracts in "research and development" for aircraft, arms and weapons systems were handed out to the various manufacturers. It is also interesting to wonder how such items as howitzers, tanks and fighter aircraft could "flood the civilian martketplace" with such surplus "consumer goods."

78. The force consisted of 20,000 men. They managed to fight their way through innumerable Chinese roadblocks until they reached Hungnam. In the process, 13 Chinese Communist (Chicom) divisions were decimated to the point that they were never reconstituted.

79. 8,000 Missing, Van Fleet Says," *New York Times*, August 8, 1953.

80. Report, UN, CCRAK Specific Request No. 66-53.

81. These 21 are obviously the 21 defectors who signed statements that they did not want to return to the U.S.

82. Kelleher Report No. CPOW/3 D-1, dated 8 June 1955.

83. "Freed Flier Says Peiping Is Holding More U.S. Airmen, Canadian Now in Hong Kong Brings News of Americans Other Than 11 Jailed," *The New York Times*, December 6, 1954.

84. Foreign Service Dispatch "From: AMCONGEN, Hong Kong, To: The Department of State, Washington, No. 1716, dated March 23, 1954.

85. Memorandum, National Security Council, January 21, 1980.

86. The Senate Report, pg 4-13.

87. *Soldiers of Misfortune*, pgs 263-264.

88. Ibid.

89. Ibid.

90. A few months after Rastvorov's report, a U.S. senator asked Assistant Secretary of State Thurston Morton about the Korean POWs. Thurston's reply was: "To the Department's knowledge there are no United States soldiers in the category of prisoners-of-war being held in the Soviet Union." This was a play on words. The

Soviets did not categorize foreign POWs as "prisoners of war," especially since in Korea, the USSR was not a belligerant. Instead, they were found "guilty" of "war crimes" and sentenced accordingly. Therefore, in the Soviet mind--and the Department of State--the USSR did not hold POWs.

91. Eisenhower-era information concerning POWs being held inside Communist countries has been hidden from the American people since 1955. Many records from this period are still classified *by order of President Bush and the Pentagon. (Soldiers of Misfortune*, pg 265).

92. Memo dated September 16, 1955.

93. It should be mentioned at this point that during Powers' interrogation by the KGB he was asked if he had ever been stationed at Atsugi, Japan. He was also asked if he knew that U-2s flew out of Atsugi. Though Lee Harvey Oswald's name was not mentioned, Oswald had 90 days earlier "defected" to Russia and had brought with him, being an air traffic controller and radar operator, top secret knowledge concerning the U-2's operational ceiling. This altitude data was vital to the Soviets, who previously did not have information on what altitude to set their SAM proximity fuse. Powers was shot down just before the Eisenhower/Kruschev Summit Conference that was to have taken place in Switzerland to discuss nuclear disarmament and arms control. The conference, because of the shootdown, was canceled. It appears, when weighing the evidence and sequence of events, to have been effectively saboutaged. Eisenhower had given orders to cease overflights of the Soviet Union, the CIA ignored the orders. Allen Dulles was DCI (Director of Central Intelligence).

94. The CIA has never admitted that the SR-71 has flown *over* the Soviet Union, but Soviet MiG-25 pilot Viktor Belenko stated after his defection that he had often attempted to intercept SR-71s but could not catch them. He stated that even if he could reach their altitude, a head-on shot was impossible due to the aspect ratio, and after the Blackbird passed, he could not catch up with it. Neither could his missiles.

95. Operation 40 and Operation MONGOOSE were both anti-Castro operations conducted out of the Miami station, codenamed JM/WAVE, which was located on the south campus of the University of Miami. Chief of Station was Theodore Shackley, and his assistant was Thomas Clines. Both later moved to Laos to conduct drug smuggling operations, among other things.

96. *Inside The Shadow Government*, pgs 12-14.

97. The author landed in Vietnam on China Beach, east of Da Nang, with BLT 2/9 (2nd Battalion, 9th Marines) three months later on July 7, 1965.

98. The Peace Accords were signed on January 27th. Though the February 5th date is not publicly documented, it is nine days after the Accords were signed.

99. The intercepted message stated that "there had been some difficulties in transporting the fliers and the Pathet Lao commander asked if these problems had been resolved so movement could continue." From an interview conducted during the filming of *We Can Keep You Forever.*

100. *Kiss The Boys Goodbye*, pgs 50-51, 160-161.

101. *Soldiers of Misfortune*, pg 247.

102. Senate Report, pg 5-4.

103. *Soldiers of Misfortune*, pg 249.

104. According to a still-classified CIA report that was filed in 1982, between 200-300 U.S. POWs were transported to the Soviet Union from Southeast Asia during the Vietnam War.

105. Senate Report, pgs 5-10, 5-11.

106. *We Can Keep You Forever*, BBC/Lionheart video production.

107. *Soldiers of Misfortune*, pg 290.

108. Ibid, pg 292.

109. Ibid, pg 293.

110. Senate Report, pgs 7-2 to 7-5.

111. The Pathet Lao did not even attend the conference. The French ceasefire documents were actually signed by a Vietminh general on behalf of the PL. (*The Ravens*, pg 122)

112. *Air America* pg 95.

113. *War In The Shadows*, Time-Life Books, "The Vietnam Experience" series, pgs

22-31.

114. *Crossfire*, pgs 270-271.

115. It was from this distribution network that a rogue member of the Corsican Mafia attempted to encroach on Trafficante's territory. The load of heroin this particular drug runner brought to New York culminated in the famous "French Connection" drug case.

116. Civil Case No. 86-1146-CIV-KING, U.S. District Court for the Southern District of Florida, pgs 14-15, as reproduced in *Inside The Shadow Government.*

117. According to *Inside the Shadow Government*, Shackley brought Rafael "Chi Chi" Quintero and Rafael VillaverdeCboth reputed members of the original ZR/RIFLE teamCand Felix Rodriguez to Laos to form and train an assassination team for Vang Pao. This team's mission was to assassinate various civilian functionaries, Pathet Lao supporters, and rival opium warlords.

118. Ibid, pgs 12-14.

119. Kwitney, Jonathan, *The Crimes of Patriots: A True Tale of Dope, Dirty Money, and the CIA*, W.W. Norton & Company, 1987.

120. *Inside The Shadow Government*, pg 22.

121. From interview presented on "Guns, Drugs and the CIA," from *Frontline* with Judy Woodruff and Leslie Coburn.

122. The Tic-Toc drug scandal in Miami.

123. Hougan, Jim, "The Australian Heroin Connection," *Covert Action Information Bulletin,*" Summer 1987; No. 28.

124. *Inside The Shadow Government*, pg 18.

125. According to *Inside The Shadow Government*, the bagman for much of the illicit money was a former CIA clandestine operative named Jerry Barker Daniels. His senior contact was Daniel C. Arnold, who operated under Clines and Shackley. Daniels, known as "Hog" to his associates, was found dead in Bangkok in the late 1980s. His head had been stuffed into the oven in his apartment and the gas had been turned on. His death was ruled suicide and he was shipped back to the U.S. and buried *in a sealed lead coffin* near his hometown in Montana. Other players in the

drugs/money/guns network would later be found, having "committed suicide" in the same manner in other countries around the world. They obviously knew too much and had become threats to someone.

126. According to Jonathan Kwitny in his book *The Crimes of Patriots: A true Tale of Dope, Dirty Money, and the CIA*, pg 51, and *Inside The Shadow Government*, pg 22, the high ranking people involved included:

Admiral Earl P. Yates, (ret) former chief of staff for Asian and Pacific strategic planning. Served as bank's president for a period.

General LeRoy J. Manor, (ret) former chief of staff for the U.S. Pacific Command. Co-director of Nugan Hand's Manila office.

General Edwin F. Black, (ret) president of Nugan Hand's Hawaii office.

General Eric Cocke, Jr., (ret) headed Washington office of bank.

William Colby, former Director of Central Intelligence, performed legal services.

Walter MacDonald, former Deputy Director of the CIA for economic research served as consultant to Nugan Hand.

Dale Holmgren, former employee of Civil Air Transport, one of the CIA's propietary airlines, ran Taipei branch.

127. Colby had been involved in the operations in Southeast Asia since 1962. He not only was involved in the Laos operations, but became the CIA liaison to the super-secret Phoenix assassination program. Phoenix ended in 1973 when Colby was promoted to DCI.

128. *Kiss The Boys Goodbye*, pgs 197-200.

129. Barnes, Scott, and Libb, Melva, *Bohica*, pgs 127-138.

130. Gritz, Lt. Col. James "Bo", *U.S. Officials in the Heroin Trade*, audio tape, Center for Action, 1989.

131. Ben Jarrell, assistant White House press secretary.

132. Major Randy Morger, Defense Department spokesman.

133. Speech given by Bo Gritz to the Arizona Breakfast Club in Phoenix, Arizona, in 1989.

134. Within 60 days of this statement, the government reluctantly confessed that there *had* been POWs who had been left behind. At least 100 men, who were known to have been kept by the Vietnamese, were written off as soon as Nixon announced that all the Americans had been returned and the Vietnam war was finally over.

135. The Black Budget consisted of millions of dollars of funds that did not have to be accounted for to any outside agency due to their programmed use for "National Security." Anyone who did not have a need to know, did not know.

136. Joint Hearings on the Iran-Contra Investigations. Testimony of Richard V. Secord on May 5-8, 1987, pg 137.

137. Wilson's testimony, pgs 39-46.

138. *Inside The Shadow Government*, pg 30.

139. Ibid, pg 31.

140. *CIA The Secret Files*, Part 4, "Moving Targets," video tape documentaries, BBC, 1992.

141. This time span occurred due to Iranian demands and the U.S. refusals concerning the forced return of the Shah. The Shah was never forced to return by the U.S. government and soon died of cancer before terrorist activities could be perpetrated to reinforce the Iranian demands.

142. Simon Bolivar (1783-1830) brought revolution to Venezuela, Equador, and Peru. This statement, written in his memoirs in 1823, was in reference to his belief that he was involved in a master plan to fulfill the destiny of South America. Interestingly, this was shortly after his return from Europe where he had joined the order of FreemasonryCwhose inner circle, the Illuminati, pursued a course that they hoped would eventually lead to a one-world government, known as the New World Order, which they, and the Rothschilds, would head.

143. Among the "business assets" were the Mafia-run hotels and gambling casinos that had, under the Batista regime, turned a huge profit for the mob.

144. Prouty, L. Fletcher, *JFK, The CIA, Vietnam and the Plot to Assassinate John F. Kennedy*, Birch Lane Press, 1992, pg 172.

145. Ranelagh, John, *The Agency: The Rise and Decline of the CIA*, Simon & Schuster, NY, 1987, pgs 337, 356.

146. The lawsuits, filed on behalf of Tony Avirgan and Martha Honey against John Hull and Felipe Vidal (and several *et al* others), were in reference to CIA activities and the activities of other elements within the covert intelligence community and the "shadow government" in regards to the plaintiffs being wounded by a bomb planted at a press conference by guerrilla elements allegedly under the control of the defendants. The brief, filed in the United States District Court, Southern District of Florida, (civil cases No. 86-1146-CIV-KING, and No. 87-1545-CIV-KING), is quite verbose in its historical lead-ins to the case, which occured during the Sandinista/Contra affair in Nicaragua.

147. E. Howard Hunt served on an OSS team in Asia during World War II with Paul Helliwell, Lucien Conein (Corsican Mafia contact), and Mitchell WerBell (inventor of the Sionics "sound suppressor" silencer). As with the later Laotian situation, opium was used to finance their operations.

148. This attack was never carried out. Before the plan could be put into effect the Brigade at the "Bayo de Cochinos" found itself under heavy air, artillery and land attack. The *ersatz* Cuban troops were ordered to withdraw as the situation at the Bay of Pigs deteriorated beyond salvation.

149. Sasser, Charles W., "Invasion Abandoned", *Modern Warfare* magazine, November 1989.

150. Some researchers believe this operation was named after Zapata Offshore Oil company of Houston. Chairman of the Board of Zapata at the time was George Bush. It is interesting to note that two of the ships procurred to ferry the invasion force to Cuba were renamed "Houston" and "Barbara" for the operation.

151. *CIA, The Secret Files*, BBC documentary, 1992.

152. Wyden, Peter, *Bay of Pigs*, Simon & Schuster, 1979.

153. Ibid.

154. Ibid.

155. *CIA/KGB; Intelligence and Counter-Intelligence Operations*, pg 83.

156. QJ/WIN and WI/ROGUE have been implicated in the Kennedy assassination by several investigators. QJ/WIN is believed to be French assassin Christian David, and WI/ROGUE is thought to be former a French army captain named Jean Soutre who turned political assassin for the OAS.

157. Middle names are often used in reference in Latin countries. Often they are conjunctions of such names as: Don Pedro Guiterez de Colon. By dropping the "de"CSpanish for "of" which denotes where his family is from (Colon)Cwe have a subject whose last name is actually Guiterez and is referred to accordingly.

158. *KGB/CIA* pg 135.

159. Many of the Chilean army instructors were, as those of other Latin American countries, German Nazis that had been spirited out of Europe after the war in Dulles's "Rat Lines" and the SS's Omega network.

160. *KGB/CIA*, pg 172.

161. Singlaub was also chairman of the World Anti-Communist League (WACL), an association that includes Latin American Dictators, death squad leaders, neo-fascists, and former German Nazis that had escaped prosecution in Germany. Singlaub helped Oliver North raise $1 million per month between 1984 and 1985 after Congress cut off aid to the Contras. Singlaub's specialties included unconventional warfare, psychological warfare, economic sabotage, disinformation, terrorism and assassination.

162. Further hostility toward the CIA operation appeared when a CIA manual for subversion and assassination was leaked to the press by Edgar Chamorro, a Contra leader. Chamorro, who was opposed to the more extreme ex-National Guard officers of the FDN, revealed the existence of an 89-page booklet titled *Psychological Operations in Guerrilla Warfare*. The techniques described in the book included assassination, kidnapping, blackmail and murder. The Reagan administration denied that the manual was provided by the CIA, however it was later learned that top White House planners were involved in the production of the bookCincluding, according to *Newsweek*, UN delegate Jeanne Kirkpatrick. The manual recommended "hiring professional criminals" and neutralizing carefully selected targets such as court judges and security officials. After the exposure, Chamorro was conveniently blackballed by the Agency.

163. *The Iran Contra Connection*, pgs 68-69.

164. Entire books have been written about the Illuminati, or "Illuminated Ones." The secret society is basically a small group of international bankers and financiers, many of which are reputed to be Masons, who control the world banking organizations. The history of the Illuminati can be traced back to the Crusades when the Knights Templars returned to France and Italy from the Middle East with fortunes in plundered treasure. To protect their booty, they employed the Freemasons of Europe to build large, well-fortified castles. The treasures were stored, or "banked," in vaults in the fortresses, guarded by "Banquers." The Knights Templars also developed the use of the "Cheque" to obtain funds from other members of the order while traveling. In 1307, Philip IV of France grew fearful of the Templars and sought to destroy them (hoping also to confiscate their treasures). He had them investigated by the Vatican's inquisitors, who found them guilty of heresy, witchcraft and practicing Satanism. On Friday, the 13th of October, 1307, Philip had all of the Knights Templars in FranceCsave thirteenCarrested. Those taken into custody, led by Jacques de DeMolay, were tied to stakes in Paris and burned as heretics. The remaining thirteen fled into the underground and disappeared into the order of Freemasonry where, as members, they were protected. These became the original "Illuminati." In 1776, a German lawyer named Adam Weishaupt, who was intimate with the House of Rothschild, gave the Illuminati re-birth. It has since become a very powerful and secret international organization of powerbrokers who are intent on the creation of a one world government known as "The New World Order." Because of this, there is a certain degree of commonality with what has been said to be the American counterpartCor branch of--the Illuminati, the Council on Foreign Relations.

165. Penny Lernoux, *In Banks We Trust*, pg 179, Anchor/Doubleday, Garden City, N.Y., 1984.

166. Involved in the air operations for cocaine smuggling was Jorge Ochoa, co-leader of Colombia's giant drug cartel. When Ochoa was indicted for drug smuggling, the chief witness against him, Bobby Seal, was murdered by Colombian hit men who were supplied with assassination weapons by Miami-based Contras who were involved with heroin-for-guns dealings with anti-Castro exiles. Prior to his murder, Seal helped federal drug agents indict the three major kingpins in the Columbian cocaine cartel: Pablo Escobar, Jorge Ochoa, and Carlos Lehder.

167. *The Iran Contra Connection*, pg 152.

168. Ibid, pg 152-153.

169. *San Francisco Examiner*, Dec. 9, 1986.

170. These events would result in the takeover of the U.S. Embassy in Teheran which was then held for 444 days.

171. Of the seven CIA people killed in the Beirut embassy bombing, one was Station Chief Robert Ames.

172. In March of 1982, the *New York Times* cited documents indicating that Israel had supplied half or more of all arms reaching Teheran in the previous 18 months--sales amounting to $100 million. Israeli sources revealed later that they had sold over $100 million in arms, jet engines, spare parts for American M-48 tanks, and other equipment in 1983. By 1984, Israel shipped, by way of a broker in Sweden, hundreds of tons of TNT and other explosives to Iran by way of Argentina. In 1985, Israel sold Iran 45,000 Uzi submachineguns, howitzers, missiles and missile launchers, and other spare military parts. Over the four years of "Irangate" the deals were covered by end-user certificates provided by Ferdinand Marcos in the PhilippinesC showing that the receiver for all of the above equipment was the Philippine government, and not Iran. (*The Iran-Contra Connection*, pgs 174-175)

173. Shooting down unarmed aircraft was not something unusual to the Soviets. National Security Council member Kenneth deGraffenreid stated in 1983: "KAL 007 was not an aberration; it was part of a murderous pattern. Not only have the Soviets shot down many innocent foreign planes; we know they have also shot down many of their own aircraft, including civilian airliners." Both the American intelligence community and the military knew exactly what would happen to any luckless airplane that strayed within the Soviet boundaries.

174. Some sources say that the interceptors were the later version Su-21 "Flagon-G," or "Flagon-F." However most accounts state that the aircraft flown by Lt. Col Gennadiy Nikolayevich Osipovich was, in fact, the older Su-15 version which is almost identical in appearance.

175. The Sukhoi Su-15 is fitted with two afterburning Rumansky R-11F2-300 turbojet engines rated at 13,668 pounds of thrust with afterburners lit. This mode of operation consumes a considerable amount of fuel. Maximum level speed of the aircraft is Mach 2.3-2.5 (2 1/2 times the speed of sound). Its combat radiusCthe distance it can fly to, engage a target, and fly back to baseCis only 450 miles. However, from Sakhalin island, the home islands of Japan, depending on where one starts on Sakhalin, are only 100 miles away. It is reasonable to assume that only the most trustworthy pilots are allowed to man international boundary interceptors.

176. It has been theorized that the Russians were overly zealous in their activities on this night due to the fact that they were going to violate an arms agreement and test-fire an SS-25 ICBM, hence the reason for the RC-135's presence. The Russians later stated that they originally mistook the Korean 747 for an RC-135, then even after shooting it down and later determining it to be a civilian 747, still considered it to be on a spy mission for the U.S.

177. *Aim Report*, (Accuracy in Media), May-B 1991.

178. A later *Isvestiya* report put Osipovich to the right rear of the 747 at approximately five kilometers. According to the Soviet newspaper series on the incident, Osipovich reported at 1809:00, about 17 minutes prior to the missile launch, that "target is 80 [degrees] to my left," then three minutes before launch, "located 70 to the left."

179. Even if KAL 007 had seen the Su-15s, they would not have known what to do. There was no way for the Soviet fighters to communicate with the 747 on the radio because Russian military aircraft are not on the same frequency bands as either civilian or Western military aircraft.

180. Osipovich finally admitted in the *Isvestiya* series that he did not fire cannon rounds, though he did not mention why he said so in the first place when it was easily determined his fighter-intercepter could not carry both rockets and cannons.

181. The Ilyushin IL-76 is a transport. The TU-16 is a bomber. Neither is as large as a 747.

182. Moneron Island (Ostrov Moneron) is located approximately 50 statute miles west of the southern tip of Sakhalin Island (Ostrov Sakhalin), and approximately 100 statute miles north of the northern tip of Hokkaido in the Sea of Japan.

183. Later reports by Soviet press indicated that divers recovered pieces of the airplane two weeks after the shootdown, however no records were kept and no pictures taken to prove it. Also, American, Japanese and Korean search vessels were not allowed into the impact area by the Russians, even though it was in international waters.

184. *The Review Of The News*, October, 1983.

185. Lee, Robert W., "KAL 007: The Questions Remain Unanswered," *The New American*, Sept 10, 1991.

186. From the documentary film, *The Maltese Doublecross.*

187. Ibid.

188. Ibid.

189. One story is that an unnamed searcher found this tiny particle of plastic in a wooded area, another in a field, and another that it was found in an item of clothing.

190. The tags supposedly made it possible for an unaccompanied bag to be put aboard an Air Malta flight, then travel to Europe, change planes at Frankfort, then rest quietly in the baggage hold to London, then take off again to blow up over Lockerbie. An item of interest is that Granada TV reported this scenario, then was sued by Air Malta because such a scenario could not occur in the rigid security measures of Air Malta. Air Malta won the judgement.

191. Ibid.

192. Operation *Herbslaub* (Autumn Leaves) selected sixteen targets in six cities across Germany for surveillance squads. It was one of the most extensive operations ever mounted in West Germany.

193. A BKA observation log noted: "Marwan Abdel Razzak Khreesat has been staying with Dalkomoni and Abassi since October 13. It is also officially known about him that he is a member of the PFLP-GC and an explosives expert. It's further known that Dalkomoni, who is directly subordinate to the Palestinian group leader, Ahmed Jibril, recruits new members for the organization and prepares operations against Israel and/or American targets."

194. "Abu Nidal" is a cover name for Sabry El Bana.

195. The problem with the story of a bomb in a suitcase in Malta being sent all the way to London is two-fold. First, Denis Phipps, former head of security, British Airways, stated "There was no evidence of unaccompanied baggage on that flight [Air Malta flight 100]. [It] had to be checked in by a passenger who actually traveled on that flight." Second, an FBI TELEX sent to Washington on October 23, 1989, stated: "...there is no concrete indication that any piece of luggage was unloaded from Air Malta 100, sent through the luggage routing, was at Frankfort airport then loaded on board Pan Am 103."

196. From an interview conducted in the British documentary, *The Maltese Double Cross.*

197. Ibid.

198. Ibid.

199. An offshoot of the Iran/Contra affair concerned one Monzer Al-Kassar, a Syrian drugs and arms smuggler. Al-Kassar reportedly received $1.2 million from a Swiss company allegedly controlled by Albert A. Hakim and retired Air Force Major General Richard V. Secord. A deal was reportedly struck with Al-Kassar in which he could continue to smuggle heroin into the United States if he would use his influence to assist in the release of the American hostages. It should be noted that Al-Kassar used his drug and arms smuggling underground to smuggle arms to the Contras, the secret army supported by "The Enterprise" and Lt. Col. Oliver North.

200. Khalid Jafaar appears to have been an expendable asset to the PFLP-GC. His job was to "courier" the suitcase full of drugs as business as usualCa job he may or may not have known about, and to also to serve as the conduit to get the bomb concealed inside the Toshiba radio aboard the airplaneCa job he obviously did *not* know about.

201. *The Maltese Double Cross*.

202. Ibid.

203. Ibid.

204. Filotas, Les., *Improbable Cause*, Seal, Canada, 1991.

205. Ibid

206. Arrow Air was not the only enterprise that took advantage of government contracts in the Middle East. One entrepreneur was none other than Edwin Wilson, former member of Navy intelligence detailed to Teheran during the reign of the Shah, who later hooked up with Theodore Shackley and Thomas Clines, former CIA chief of station and assistant chief of station for Laos. Wilson advanced $500,000 to Clines to help set up Egyptian-American Transport Services, Inc. (EATSCO), who used insider contacts to obtain exclusive rights to ship military equipment to Egypt (and other places). Wilson eventually was found guilty of illegally supplying M-16s and other arms to Libya and was sentenced to fifty-two years in the Federal penitentiary system. Wilson's partner in EATSCO was Albert Hakim, whose name surfaced during the Congressional hearings into Iran/Contra.

207. An article in the August, 1996 issue of the British *Defence & Foreign Affairs*

Strategic Policy explained that a "newly structured Hizbollah group under the aegis of senior Iranian leaders held a summit conference in Teheran in June 1996. Hizbollah delegates from over thirty nations attended including the United States, Canada, Italy, France, Germany and Britain." A "joint working committee" of three top individuals (Imad Mughaniyah of the Lebanese Hizbollah Special Operations Command, Usama bin Ladin (a Saudi fundamentalist leader), and Ahmad Salah Salim (an Egyptian Jihad representative) was formed and began working under the chairman, Mehadi Chamran. The principle operations given the "green light" by this council were three terrorist acts that were already beyond planning stages:

1. The bombing of the U.S. barracks in Dharan, Saudi Arabia, assigned to Usama bin Ladin;
2. The fatal stabbing of a U.S. female diplomat, assigned to Ahman Salah Salim, and;
3. The downing of TWA flight 800, assigned to Imad Mughaniyah.

208. *The Guardian*, August 21, 1996, pgs 2-3.

209. According to *Aerospace Daily* of August 20th, 1996, The TWA flight was vectored to within 15 miles of the northwest end of the "hot zone" exercise box. If this is so, the AP diagram assigning Long/Lat coordinates 45 miles further northwest as the crash site is incorrect or disinformation. The article said that a Coast Guard spokesman stated that the patrol boat *Adak* was in the immediate area at the time, but referred the magazine to Coast Guard HQ for more information on what it was doing there. Spokesmen at CG HQ failed to return repeated phone calls to the reporter. TWA 800 was on "Betty Track," one of the two tracks used by commercial flights when areas are set aside for military use off Long Island. A Navy spokesman admitted that Warning Area W-105 was activated at the time of the incident, but refused to discuss what the purpose was. The article stated that the flight reached 13,700 feet before something "went wrong." This is a discrepancy in that the original FAA report from radar put the airplane at 10,300 feet. Some press reports of that night reported the 747 to be at 8,000 feet at the time of the explosion.

210. Of note regarding the Naval vessel aspect of this theory is an unconfirmed story that was reported to William Jasper, the editor of the *New American* magazine. In this story a sailor came home on leave to Norman, Oklahoma, and said that he was very upset because his ship had fired a missile which accidently knocked down the TWA flight and the whole thing was a coverup.

211. One SS agent told the author when flying air cover over a Clinton motorcade that if they flew too close to the motorcade they would be shot down by an agent

with a Stinger. He said they always carry them in the back of their escort vehicles along with other weapons.

212. Other weapons systems were mentioned by theorists:

1. One was the HAARP project in Gakona, Alaska, which is supposed to be a global weapons system capable of bringing down an aircraft as large as a 747 anywhere in the world by using high altitude auroral directed energy to focus on the target. This project is allegedly an offshoot of Nicolai Tesla's electromagnetic weapons designs that disappeared around the turn of the century after Tesla died. It is also supposed to be related to what retired Air Force lieutenant colonel Tom Bearden describes as "Scaler Wave" weapons which use similar technology.

2. Another system is a directed-energy microwave beam weapon that has been accused of knocking down two aircraft in the vicinity of Woodbridge, Virginia (built by Harry Diamond Laboratories on a black budget government contract). One of the aircraft that allegedly flew into the invisible microwave beam and was "shredded" was a Marine VH-60 Blackhawk assigned to HMX-1 at Andrews AFB. This was a presidential transport aircraft and all four crew members were killed prior to impact. All showed massive internal burns, rupturing of the skin, and skin burns. The aircraft did not burn and the fuel did not ignite. The whole thing was covered up by the Marine investigators, blaming the cause of the crash on a defective part in the drive train. They also reported that the bodies were blistered because of contact with spilled fuel at the accident site. However, dead bodies do not blister, and the crew was dead before the helicopter hit the ground as there was no blood at the crash scene! Harry Diamond Labs moved their project to Oregon shortly thereafter. The other aircraft knocked down as a Cessna carrying four passengers, one supposedly a KGB defector or other Russian embassy official (two versions of story). Little is know of this second incident.

3. Another weapons system is a flying laser energy beam that has been developed to destroy missiles. In a test conducted in the 1980s, such a weapon succeeded in destroying five Sidewinder missiles and one cruise missile, according to Colonel Lanny Larfson, director of lasers and imaging at the Air Force's Phillips Laboratory at Kirtland Air Force Base in Albuquerque, which is pioneering work on the systems. Other players in the development of laser and directed energy beam "Star Wars" weapons systems are: TRW, Hughes Aircraft, Lockheed Martin, and Boeing. The platform for such a "flying laser beam" would be a large aircraft, such as a 747, according to Air Force sources involved in the testing of COIL, or Chemical Oxygen Iodine laser system.

213. On September 23, 1996, an article appeared in *USA Today* titled "TWA Crash May Forever Be A Mystery, Reno Says." In the article, Attorney General Janet Reno

laid the ground work for an eventual finding that there would be no finding. Because of the apparent official Clinton Administration denial of the missile evidence, a finding that the airplane was shot down by a SAM apparently would not be released under any circumstances. This appeared to fall in line with what some FBI agents say is an ever-developing unwritten Justice Department directive titled "never let the facts stand in the way of a politically correct investigation."

214. *New York Terror Trial Witness Tells What a Liar He Was*, San Francisco *Chronicle*, March 8, 1995.

215. The Administration initially refused to offer a reward in the case of the World Trade Center bombing, arguing that it was *an act of domestic terrorism* and therefore not eligible for the International Terrorist Information Reward program.

216. Abraham Ahmad, a Jordanian, had actually been spotted acting very nervously at the American Airlines gate in Oklahoma City one hour after the bombing. As he flew to Chicago to make a connecting flight for Rome, American Airlines personnel notified the FBI that he was acting suspicious. He was detained briefly in Chicago, then released. It was British security at Heathrow that not only refused him entry into the U.K., but put him on a plane back to the U.S. as his luggage was intercepted by the Italian police in Rome. His luggage proved to contain wire, tools, and photographs of surface-to-air missiles. When he returned to the U.S. he was not arrested, and only briefly detained. Almost immediately, Clinton and Janet Reno announced there was no middle-eastern connection. Period.

217. Affidavit of Michael J. Rinonosciuto, United States Bankruptcy Court for the District of Columbia, in Re: INSLAW, INC., Plaintiff v. UNITED STATES OF AMERICA and the UNITED STATES DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE, Defendents. Case # 85-00070 (Chapter 11), Adversary Proceeding No. 86-0069.

218. Ben-Menashe, Ari, *Profits of War*.

219. This data has not been confirmed. It is being shown here because it was part of the original report submitted to the FBI as areas to be investigated. To the author's knowledge, the FBI never followed up on the information or accomplished the investigation.

220. Israeli military intelligence sources report the figure as 30,000 former Iraqi soldiers, many from the Republican Guards Division.

221. A report by a private investigator hired by KFOR TV reveals that Alhussaini

Hussain was in the Hammurabi Division of the Republican Guard, captured by the 24th Infantry Division during a fight on Highway 8, west of Basra. He came to the U.S. in November of 1991, and attempted to settle in Boston. When he discovered he was under surveillance, he moved to Oklahoma City. It should be noted that World Trade Center bomber Ramzi Yousef was also in the Hammurabi Division of the Republican Guard Division during the Gulf War, and was in a Islamic Jihad-type cell in New York City.

222. Intelligence reports indicate that when Terry Reed of Iran/Contra fame moved to Guadalajara, Mexico, he discovered that his neighbor was one James Ellison--the same James Ellison that later surfaced in the Covenant, Sword and Arm of the Lord in Arkansas, then later Elohim City (not far from Mena).

223. Interview with Michelle Tor, conducted 7/23/96 in Dallas, Texas, by David Hoffman and Rep. Charles Key (Okla).

224. In comparison, the crater in front of the Murrah Building was 20 feet deep and 30 feet wide, while the crater in front of the Khobar Towers was 35 feet deep and 85 feet wide.

225. In this scenario, the President declares a national emergency, invokes Executive Order 11490, declares martial law, suspends the Constitution, converts all state governments to be subservient to the "regional" system, orders FEMA to take over local government functions, then calls for assistance from the U.N., which in turn brings in foreign troops to help police this country. These "foreign assets" are then used to disarm the American people, move elements of the population to "relocation centers" (closed down military bases), quarantine sections of the population, restrict or prohibit travel and communications, then initiate a national identification system that would require every man, woman and child to receive a national ID card to get health care, make purchases, etc. The United States would then become a client state of the World Government, i.e. the "New World Order." This scenario also provides for the various biological weapons to take their toll before being brought under control to help reduce the world's population, which would meet the objectives of the various global foundations who have stated that the world population must be reduced 80% by the year 2010.

Bibliography

Books

Asprey, Robert B. *War in the Shadows*, New York: Doubleday, 1975.

Bamford, James, *The Puzzle Palace; A Report on America's Most Secret Agency*, New York: Penguin Books, 1985.

Bank, Colonel Aaron, USA (Ret), *From OSS to Green Berets*, San Francisco: Presidio Press, 1986.

Barnes, Scott, with Libb, Melva, *Bohica*, Canton, OH,: Bohica Corp., 1987.

Barron, John, *KGB Today; The Hidden Hand*, New York: Reader's Digest Press, 1983.

Beaty, Johathan, and Gwynne, S.C., *The Outlaw Bank: A Wild Ride Into the Secret Heart of BCCI*, New York, Random House, 1993.

Ben-Menashe, Ari, *Profits of War: Inside the Secret U.S.-Israeli Arms Network*, Sheriden Square Press, 1992.

Barron, John, *KGB; The Secret Work of Soviet Agents*, New York: Bantam, 1974.

Bower, Tom, *The Paperclip Conspiracy; The Hunt for the Nazi Scientists*, Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1987.

Brown, Anthony Cave, *Bodyguard of Lies*, New York: Harper & Row, 1975.

Chasey, William C., *Foreign Agent 4221: The Lockerbie Cover-Up*, San Diego, ProMotion, 1995.

Clark, Ramsey, *The Fire This Time: U.S. War Crimes in the Gulf*, New York, Thunder's Mouth Press, 1992.
Corn, David, *The Blond Ghost: Ted Shackley and the CIA's Crusades*, New York, Simon & Schuster, 1994.

Dobson, Christopher, and Payne, Ronald, *The Terrorists; Their Weapons, Leaders and Tactics*, New York: Facts On File, 1979.

Dunnigan, James F. and Nofi, Albert A., *Dirty Little Secrets; Military Information You're Not Supposed to Know*, New York: William Morrow, 1990.

Fall, Bernard B., *Hell In A Very Small Place; The Siege of Dien Bien Phu*, New York: J.B. Lippincott, 1967.

Goddard, Donald, and Coleman, Lester K., *Trail of the Octopus: From Beirut to LockerbieCInside the DEA*, London: Bloomsbury, 1993.

Gritz, Col. James "Bo", *Called to Serve*, Sandy Valley, NV,: Lazarus Publishing, 1991.

Honegger, Barbary, *October Surprise*, New York, Tudor, 1989.

Hunt, Linda, *Secret Agenda; The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip, 1945 to 1990*, New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991.

Johnson, Loch K., *America's Secret Power; The CIA in a Democratic Society*, New York: Oxford University Press, 1989.

Marchetti, Victor, and Marks, John D., *The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence*, New York: Dell, 1980.

Marks, John, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*, New York: W.W. Norton & Co., 1979.

Marshall, Jonathan, and Scott, Peter Dale and Hunter, Jane, *The Iran-Contra Connection; Secret Teams and Covert Operations in the Reagan Era*, Boston: South End Press, 1987.

Morin, Relman, *Dwight D. Eisenhower; A Gauge of Greatness*, New York: Simon & Schuster, 1969.

North, Mark, *Act of Treason*, New York: Carroll & Graf, 1991.

Ostrovsky, Victor, and Hoy, Claire, *By Way of Deception*, New York: St. Martin's Press. 1990.
Ostrovsky, Victor, *The Other Side of Deception*, Harper Collins, 1995.

O'Toole, G.J.A., *Honorable Treachery; A History of U.S. Intelligence, Espionage, and Covert Action from the American Revolution to the CIA*, New York: Atlantic Monthly Press, 1991.

Potts, Mark; Kochan, Nicholas, and Whittington, Robert, *Dirty Money: BCCIC The Inside Story of the World's Sleaziest Bank*, Washington: National Press Books, 1992.

Prados, John, *Keepers of The Keys: A History of the National Security Council from Truman to Bush*, New York: William & Morrow Co., 1991

Prouty, L. Fletcher, *JFK: The CIA, Vietnam, and the plot to assassinate John F. Kennedy*, New York: Birch Lane Press, 1992.

Robbins, Christopher, *Air America*, New York: Avon, 1990.

Robbins, Christopher, *The Ravens*, New York: Pocket Books, 1989.

Sanders, Jim, and Sauter, Mark, and Kirkwood, R. Cort, *Soldiers of Misfortune*, Washington, D.C.,: National Press Books, 1992.

Simpson, Charles M. III, *Inside the Green Berets; The First Thirty Years*, San Francisco: Presidio Press, 1983.

Stevenson, Monika Jenson-, and Stevenson, William, *Kiss The Boys Goodbye; How the United States Betrayed Its Own POWs in Vietnam*, New York: Plume, 1991.
Stich, Rodney, *Defrauding America: Dirty Secrets of the CIA and Other Government Operations*, Alamo, CA: Diablo Western Press, 1994.

Vankin, Jonathan, *Conspiracies, Cover-ups, and Crimes; Political Manipulation and Mind Control in America*, New York: Paragon House, 1992.

Volkman, Ernest, and Baggett, Blaine, *Secret Intelligence*, New York: Doubleday, 1989.

Welsh, Douglas, *The History of the Vietnam War*, New York: Galahad Books, 1981.
Williams, Peter, and Wallace, David, *Unit 731; Japan's Secret Biological Warfare in World War II*, New York: The Free Press, 1989.

Woodward, Bob, *Veil; The Secret Wars of the CIA, 1981-1987*, New York: Pocket Books, 1988.

Misc. Publications

The Vietnam War, New York: Crown Publishers, 1983.

An Examination of U.S. Policy Toward POW/MIAs, U.S. Senate Committee on Foreign Relations, May 1991 report.

Hearing Before The Subcommittee On Oversight and Investigation of the Committee On Veterans' Affairs, House of Representatives, Washington D.C., 1982.

Inside the Shadow Government, Delcaration of Plaintiffs' Counsel filed by the Christic Institute, U.S. District Court, Miami FL., March 31, 1988.

The Vietnam Experince: War in the Shadows, Boston: Boston Publishing Co., 1988.

CPSIA information can be obtained at www.ICGtesting.com
Printed in the USA
LVOW070329130911

246040LV00005B/17/P

9 781453 619865

From World War II until the present, there has been hidden within the highest levels of government secrets that you are not supposed to discover. During the period of 1940-1996 the powerbrokers, working from their positions of trust, have committed and then covered up the most heinous of crimes known to mankind. Investigative journalist Craig Roberts, author of *Kill Zone: A Sniper Looks at Dealey Plaza*, now provides us with the results of his 10-year investigation regarding the true stories behind such secret events as:

Devil Unit 731 and Japanese WWII germ weapons testing on U.S. and Allied POWs resulting in hundreds of deaths, all covered up by U.S. authorities...

Operation Paperclip and the smuggling of war criminals - including mass murderers - into the U.S. by the military...

CIA and military mind control experiments on unsuspecting citizens - including children...

Secret drug and baterialogical weapons experiements on the American population by the CIA and the Department of Defense...

Atomic Guinea Pigs, Agent Orange and the Gulf War Syndrome...

What really happened to over 30,000 POWs and MIAs in World War II, Korea and Vietnam - and why Russia knows...

Where did the CIA come from - and who really controls it?

International assassinations, drug smuggling and money laundering, all orchestrated by officials of the U.S. government...

Terrorism in the Air: What the media did not tell you about the shootdown of KAL-007; the bombing of Pan Am 103; the Arrow Air crash in Gander; the shootdown of TWA 800...

The true stories behind the bombing of the World Trade Center;
the Oklahoma City bombing; the derailment of Amtrak's Sunset Limited;
and what could happen next to the American people on a nationwide scale...

A Marine combat sniper in Vietnam and U.S. Army Lieutenant Colonel (retired), Craig spent 27 years with the Tulsa, Oklahoma Police Department, where he served as an officer, helicopter pilot, and as a member of the city's bomb squad and S.W.A.T. team. Roberts is the author of over a dozen books, an investigative journalist and lecturer, who seeks the truth beneath what history would have us believe, and the future has yet to reveal.

ISBN 9781453619865
90000 >
9 781453 619865

Nonfiction
Trilogus Books
www.trilogus.com
www.riflewarrior.com

THE GENESIS 6 CONSPIRACY

HOW SECRET SOCIETIES AND THE DESCENDANTS OF GIANTS PLAN TO ENSLAVE HUMANKIND

GARY WAYNE

THE
GENESIS 6
CONSPIRACY

THE
GENESIS 6
CONSPIRACY

HOW SECRET SOCIETIES AND THE DESCENDANTS OF GIANTS PLAN TO ENSLAVE HUMANKIND

GARY WAYNE

TRUSTED
BOOKS
A DIVISION OF DEEP RIVER BOOKS

© 2014 by Gary Wayne. All rights reserved.

Trusted Books is an imprint of Deep River Books. The views expressed or implied in this work are those of the author. To learn more about Deep River Books, go online to www.DeepRiverBooks.com.

No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system or transmitted in any way by any means—electronic, mechanical, photocopy, recording or otherwise—without the prior permission of the Publisher, except as provided by USA copyright law.

Unless otherwise noted, all Scriptures are taken from the *Holy Bible, New International Version®, NIV®*. Copyright © 1973, 1978, 1984 by Biblica, Inc.™ Used by permission of Zondervan. All rights reserved worldwide. www.zondervan.com

Scripture references marked GNT are taken from the *Good News Bible With Deuterocanonicals/Apocrypha Translation®* (Today's English Version, Second Edition), copyright © 1992 American Bible Society. All rights reserved.

Scripture references marked NRSV are taken from *The Access Bible, New Revised Standard Version with the Apocrypha*, Oxford University Press, New York, NY, 1999. Used by permission. All rights reserved.

The NIV Study Bible New International Version Red Letter Edition, Copyright 1985, The Zondervan Corporation, Copyright 1973, 1978, 1984 by International Bible Society.

Good News For Modern Man, The New Testament In Today's English 3rd Edition, American Bible Society, New York, NY, 1966.

Scripture references marked KJV are taken from the *King James Version* of the Bible.

Qur'an quotations are from The Qur'an, Translation by M. A. S. Abdel Haleem, Oxford University Press, 2005.

ISBN 13: 978-1-63269-290-0
Library of Congress Catalog Card Number: 2011960135

CONTENTS

Preface

SECTION I: The Antediluvian Epoch

The Age of Great Heroes

1. Heroes of Old
2. The Daughters of Cain
3. The Sons of God
4. The Giants of Antiquity
5. The Schism of Antediluvian Freemasonry
6. Enoch and Hermes
7. Enoch the Evil
8. Royal Bloodlines
9. Antediluvian Masonry and the Seven Sacred Sciences
10. Enochian Mysticism
11. The Great Deluge
12. Azazel: Leader of the *Watchers*
13. Lucifer’s Revenge

SECTION II: The Golden Age

The Global Testimony for the Other Race

14. The Black Heads
15. Isis, Ishtar, Gaea, and Ninkhursag
16. The Great World Myth
17. Atlantis
18. Zep Tepi: The First Time
19. Echoes from Atlantis, Sumer, and Mu
20. The Seven Sages of Atlantis
21. The *Epic of Gilgamesh*
22. Deucalion, Manu, and Seth

SECTION III: The Descendants of Anak

Bloodlines and Covenants
23. The Raphaites and the Amorites
24. Sodom and Gomorrah
25. The Amalekites
26. Jethro and Caleb
27. Nimrod
28. The People of the Plain
29. The Tower at Babel
30. The Original Great White Brotherhood
31. Forging the Nation of Destiny
32. The Nephilim Wars
33. The Holy Covenant
34. Jericho
35. Curse of the Amalekites
36. King Saul and King David
37. David and Goliath
38. The Avvites

SECTION IV: The Terminal Generation
The Time of Jacob’s Trouble
39. Nothing New Under the Sun
40. The New Man
41. The New Age of Aquarius
42. The Sign of Noah
43. The Godless Generation
44. Babylon City
45. Reflections from Within the Third Reich
46. The False Prophet
47. The Disciples of Light
48. The Alien Phenomena
49. The Mother of All Sorceries
50. Spirit of the Antichrist, the Beast
51. The New Nimrod
52. The Rapture Tragedy
53. Adonai

SECTION V: Rex Deus

Bloodlines of the Grail
54. The Jerusalem Church
55. Sex, Lies, and Fairy Tales
56. The Knights Templar
57. The Priory of Sion
58. The Sinclairs
59. St. Bernard and the Benedictine Monks
60. The Invisible College
61. Legends of the Holy Grail
62. Joseph of Arimathea
63. Scota and Temar
64. The Kings of Camelot
65. The Merovingians
66. The Trojans
67. The House of Stuart
68. Guardians of the Antichrist

SECTION VI: Rendezvous with Destiny

Anatomy of a Global Conspiracy
69. Novus Ordo Seclorum
70. Inside Freemasonry
71. The Thirty-Third Degree
72. The Rothschild-Rockefeller-Morgan Axis
73. Secret Societies and the New Age of Atlantis
74. The Illuminati
75. Global Gnosticism
76. A Thousand Points of Light
77. The Rosicrucians
78. The New Age Millennium

SECTION VII: The House of Dragon

Bloodlines of the Prehistoric Giants

79. The Fairy Kingdoms
80. Ordo Draconis
81. Serpents and Dragons
82. Leviathan
83. The Bull Cult of Melchizedek
84. The Essenes
85. Moses, Akhenaten, and the Armana Dynasty
86. Joseph
87. Abraham, Esau, and Ishmael
88. The Kings of Nimrod and Ham
89. Ham and Japheth
90. The Blood Drinking Kings of Kish
91. The Antediluvian Dragon Court
92. Adam and Cain
93. Lilith

SECTION VIII: The Gene of Isis

Bloodlines of the Fairies
94. The Grail Cauldron of Fairies, Annwyn, and Atlantis
95. The Fairy Lords of the Tuatha Denaan
96. The Royal House of the Scythians
97. The Antediluvian Testimony
98. The Khem of Mendes

Epilogue: What Must Take Place Will Take Place

Bibliography

Endnotes

PREFACE

What would you do if you discovered the end times and the Antichrist were somehow interconnected with giants, modern conspiracy theories, aliens, vampires, secret societies, and fairies? What would you do if you learned refugees from another Apocalypse dutifully encoded dire warnings into worldwide testimonies preserving them for a specific generation, this generation concerning an ancient and ongoing conspiracy to enslave humankind? Would you simply walk away? Seriously, would you really tell anyone? Or would you disregard the personal onslaughts that would be sure to follow the exposé of such controversial discoveries?

My spiritual pursuit has been analogous to my motivation to write this book. I have pursued my beliefs with all the energy contained within my spirit, even though at times I have dropped the quest with such coldness that I wondered whether or not it had ever permeated my consciousness. And yet I returned, not perceiving why or how. It is akin to a haunting voice, whispering in the wilderness, drawing ever closer, yet continually evading me until confusion once more sets in. Just when I no longer can hear the calling, it once more permeates the darkness drawing me back. This thirty-year journey has taught me that if I was not a Christian contrarian, this composition would not have been started, completed, or published.

Frankly, mysteries contained within Scripture and other ancient sources do not pastorally coexist with contemporaneous, secular science during this season of reason suppressing faith. Nor do these mysteries pastorally coexist with status quo dogma offered by most monotheistic religions.

Sadly, most of monotheism ignores the message from the Messiah to resolutely uphold truth and grace,[1] no matter the times or the implications.

Hence, this unsettling quest will teleport you to an unfamiliar place snared somewhere between faith and reason. This quest will challenge your perceptions of what you thought the Bible said, as well as transform your current view of the world as dictated by modern secularism.

This quest tenders disquieting questions, exposing dissonant conclusions concerning Scripture and the currently accepted secular dogma of antiquity. Prehistory is submerged in foggy waters, an unnerving conundrum for historians, who demand scientific benchmarks buttressed with evidence and archaeological corroboration. But if we whisk away the confusing haze, clarity emerges about the first written history, revealing key relationships and instructions for this generation.

We will reexamine Genesis, the balance of the Bible, and other scriptures as if they were just discovered, transforming illogical and preconceived notions regarding creation and the ancient epochs and disclosing historical imperatives that have rippled down through the generations. The reader will learn what has taken place, what is taking place, and what must take place. Therefore, I urge you to keep a Bible and the footnotes at your fingertips to validate the accuracy and context of the vast amount of Scripture applied in this work which is set alongside the volumes of secular and polytheist testimonies.

A Greek historian and philosopher, Plutarch, circa 46–125 C.E. employed more than 250 works from additional ancient authors, of which many have been lost to history,[2] in his quest to record ancient history as it was viewed from his milestone in history.Plutarch wrote regarding the difficulties beyond a certain ancient historical point of selecting a spot of sure footing, where reason is able to continue the reach back into real history: "… beyond this there is nothing but prodigies and fictions, the only inhabitants are the poets and inventors of fables; there is no credit or certainty any farther."[3] Scripture will be our historical foundation stones for certainty and credibility, for just as C. S. Lewis has noted that whatever else the Gospels might be, they clearly are not legend;[4] and in this writer's opinion, they are accurate, monotheist history.

With this in mind, understand that most scriptural principles eventually and without explanation return to the beginning, Genesis. Genesis methodically tilled the soil for the balance of the Bible and humankind, sowing the seeds for the many doctrines and plots cultivated throughout Scripture. Once the plots and doctrines are fully developed, one finds oneself inexplicably returning to Genesis to fully comprehend the insights, revisiting the little known and misunderstood agrarians of Genesis. This book begins in Genesis and ends in Genesis. Genesis is both the cornerstone and the Rosetta Stone for Scripture, decoding the true history of humankind, our future, and this quest.

In this spirit then, the Bible ought to be viewed as a reliable and accurate believer's history, but not a document designed to meet current, secular standards for history or archaeological research. God did not intend Scripture to be an encyclopedia, nor did He intend it to be a clinical, historical, scientific handbook. Moreover, Scripture frustrates science's need for visible, undeniable proof complete with corroborating reference points. Conversely, God designed Scripture to hold the history of a people's God, their religion, and the tribulations of their Holy Covenant. Scripture was written to nourish faith, not reason. It is through this lens we must read it—just as it was written in a literal sense to the faithful believers, not through the lens of godless, secular cynics or interpretive, mystical revisionists.

We will enlist the historian Josephus as well as Albert Mackey's legends of Freemasonry to investigate the mysteries of prehistory. We will put these alongside numerous Gnostic gospels, including the Nag Hammadi Library; the Dead Sea Scrolls; and a host of historians, authors, and clerics, including a broad sweep of legends, mythologies, and religious literature from around the world, drafted for anecdotal backdrop. All impart important testimonies, redefining otherwise unaccountable ancient civilizations, their misconstrued religions, and their perplexing conundrums. Indeed, as C. S. Lewis once noted, myth points to reality.[5]

Accordingly, we will often consult Enoch. His visions were recorded in several Gnostic gospels, alongside the famous book of Enoch discovered in Ethiopia in 1785 C.E. and copied by a famous Freemason named James Bruce. From these and other Gnostic sources, Bruce produced the *Codex Bruciannus*, one of the few Gnostic reference books until the discovery of Nag Hammadi.[6] Bruce was a direct descendant of the famous historical figure Robert the Bruce, as well as a descendant from an obscure Jewish order of priests from the time of Jesus,[7] the Essenes.

The Nag Hammadi texts were discovered in Egypt in 1945 C.E., and they date back to 290–346 C.E.[8] The Nag Hammadi Library was composed while the Roman Catholic Church purged heretical Gnostic movements; the library's purpose was to pass onto future generations the knowledge to free humans from their earthly bondage through the cult of knowledge.[9] Hence, the Tripartite Tractate refers to *The Organization*, a secretive and mysterious organization that fights against the dark forces of ignorance, while preserving ancient knowledge and building impressive monuments to represent spiritual places[10] (themes that dominate this composition). Always remember that behind the thick, steel door of superficial history taught by the educated elite sleeps an obscure version that elucidates the enigmatic events of history. Regrettably, there is a shadowy second history hidden from public viewing: a shocking saga of secret societies, lost civilizations, unexplained events, and an unaccounted for hidden hand of history.

Unidentified quotations by famous figures of history and biblical references from Ezra, Jude, 1 Peter, and 2 Peter suggest that not all the Enochian literature has been discovered.[11] Roman Catholicism initially ascribed the book of Enoch among the Apocrypha of the Old Testament,[12] and it was excluded later from the official Bible canon;[13] although, it is cherished as sacred text in some circles.[14] *Apocrypha* refers to fourteen books included in the Septuagint but excluded from the Old Testament. The Good News Bible describes the *Apocrypha* as gospels of unknown or doubted authority.[15] However, Tertulian defended the authenticity and sacred character of Enochian gospels, while Clement of Alexandria often quoted directly from them.[16] Some conclude Enoch literature was part of the seventy-scroll Hagiography referenced in Ezra but not included in the final Palestinian canon.[17] *Hagiography*, meaning holy writings, was a third division of the Hebrew Old Testament called "The Writings," but it was so arbitrary it was not accepted as proper.[18]

Some scholars believe Enochian scriptures are fragments from a much earlier lost book, the book of Noah.[19] Enochian scripture is further believed to have drawn upon other lost books that originally told the Genesis story, such as the book of the Wars of Yahweh, The Book of Jasher, The Toledoth of Adam, and The Toledoth of Noah.[20] Some believe Jude refers to the book of Enoch when Jude quotes the prophecy of Enoch.[21] One further wonders what insights Christians might take from the Targum or the Pesherim if they were employed as commentaries to help elucidate the Torah, alongside other non-Canon and Apocryphal scriptures, such as The Apocalypse of Baruch, The Book of Jonah, The Life of Adam and Eve, The Assumption of Isaiah, and The Assumption of Moses,[22] studied by the priests of the Second Temple, which included the contentious Josephus.

Josephus, an indispensable historian, recorded Jewish history for the Romans at the time of the Diaspora and Jewish wars so that Israelite history would not be lost forever. Josephus was a first-century (reformed) Jewish pacifist,[23] who was born into the age of the birth of Christianity and died during the persecution of the early church, after the destruction of Jerusalem.[24] He was an eyewitness of the times of Jesus, referring to Jesus twice in his writings, noting Jesus was called and was *the Christ*, fulfilling the words of the prophets. Josephus recorded Jesus was a wise man, if it was lawful to call him a man; a teacher to people accepting the truth; one who drew large numbers of Jewish converts; and a man who did wonderful works, who was then condemned to die on the cross by Pilate and Jewish elders.[25]

Josephus was noble, from the old aristocracy descending from the first twenty-four lines of priests spawned by Aaron and Moses, a descendant from the Maccabees on his mother’s side, and a priest of high rank in the Jerusalem temple. He spent three of his most impressionable years among the Essenes and then converted back to the Pharisees’ sect, all the while taking time to study the Sadducees’ sect.[26] In the Jewish revolt of 66 C.E., Josephus commanded an angry band of zealots, entrenched on a stronghold, who resisted the Roman siege for 47 days.[27] He prophesied his captor, Vespasian, would become Emperor of Rome and was set free when the prophecy was fulfilled.[28] Josephus then travelled to Rome, where he received Roman citizenship, an apartment in Vespasian’s former mansion, and an annual pension to underwrite his literary endeavors.[29] Josephus nurtured strong relationships with the Flavian imperial family, as well as the next two Flavian emperors, Titus and Domitian.[30]

Additionally, Masonic history is elemental to this investigation, specifically the primeval history penned by Albert Mackey (1807–1881 C.E.), *History of Freemasonry.*[31] He spent the last year of his life as the Secretary General of the Supreme Council of the Thirty-Third Degree.

Mackey was a physician, an editor, a teacher, a publisher, and an author. He wrote many books about his obscure order. His books are considered the most authoritative and definitive works on Freemasonry.[32]

Freemasonry has its roots in once secret information believed to be older than the New Testament; its arcane rituals contain puzzling references to the flood,[33] placing unexplained importance on the antediluvian achievements of their obscure order.[34] Hence, most Legends of the Craft begin with an abstruse descant on the Seven Liberal Arts and Sciences. Freemasonry then is unaccountably connected to shrouded and important antediluvian and postdiluvian events; it is an organization built upon foundations from older European masonry Guilds, the Brotherhood of Builders: Operative Freemasonry.[35] Modern Freemasons divorced themselves from the worker traditions and were known from that point on as Speculative Freemasons.[36] As the sixteenth century closed, increased numbers of aristocrats joined the fraternities, which eventually transformed the union of trade guilds into a philosophical fraternity.[37]

In 1721 C.E., the English Grand Lodge created a Masonic constitution. It asked Dr. Anderson, a Scottish preacher, to examine old manuscripts to update them for one instructional manual. In 1723 C.E., Anderson's published work was recognized as both *The Ancient Charges* and *The Book of Constitutions*, and it became Freemasonry's most significant document. It is still utilized around the world today.[38] The Anderson Constitution then abolished any references to the Holy Trinity. It further demanded a pledge of devotion by all initiates to Freemasonry's supreme god, the Great Architect of the Universe.[39]

All this prompted a very chilling retort from the Roman church, resulting in a Papal Bull in 1738 C.E. by Pope Clement XII, excommunicating any Catholic who was a Freemason.[40] In 1884 C.E., Pope Leo XII labeled Freemasonry satanic in his edict *Encyclical Humanum Genus*.[41] In 1917 C.E., the Roman church's Code of Canon Law declared Masonic membership punishable by automatic excommunication, but by 1983 C.E., Freemasonry had vanished from the list of prohibited secret societies.[42] However, Pope Benedict XVI declared that Freemasons live in a state of grave sin and are prohibited from taking communion. Freemasonry and Christianity do not pastorally coexist, and that reality is yet another elemental theme dominating this book.

Of the host of contemporary authors I employ in this work, Laurence Gardner[43] stands out. Gardner was the past Master Mason of the United Grand Lodge of England for twenty years. He also held a plethora of other distinguished positions and titles.[44] He was a noted prior of the Celtic church's Sacred Kindred of St. Columbia, Prior of the Knights Templar of St. Anthony, and internationally recognized as a sovereign and chivalric genealogist. Gardner was distinguished as the Chevalier Labhran de Saint Germain and was the Presidential Attaché to the European Council of Princes, all while being formally acknowledged as being attached to the Noble Household Guard of the Royal House of Stewart founded at St. Germain.[45] Gardener was appointed Jacobite Historiographer Royal, a Fellow of the Society of Antiquities of Scotland, and a Professional Member of the Institute of Nana Technology.[46] In addition to all this, Gardner was an attaché to the Grande Protectorate of the Imperial Dragon Court, 1408 C.E.[47] His positions and titles underline the relevance and validity of his shocking testimony, which will become evident as this work unfolds.

This book is a 6,000-year-connect-the-dots investigation, beginning with Adam. Modern theologians and academics have examined some of the anomalies covered in this investigation, but they have left some other mysteries to the imaginations of believers or ignored them completely because of the extraordinary implications recognition would bring. Catholicism has collected much of this arcane knowledge for close to 2,000 years, storing it in a protected depository within the safe confines of the Vatican.[48] Many believe the Vatican guards the world's largest library on the occult,[49] a library rivaling that of Freemasonry's own.

With this in mind, this undertaking does not shy away from secular, mystical, or Christian criticism. It will present Scripture literally. This is, in truth, the millennium-old scriptural schism between the literal translation adopted by Judah and Israel, the early Jerusalem church, the Roman church, and the Muslims and the interpretive, scriptural application adopted by mystics, Gnostics, and rogue Islamist Fascists, which has been part of the seditious lining of the contemporary Genesis 6 Conspiracy. This quest will contrast itself against the cynical, secular, and numinous world by arguing from a literal, scriptural perspective of Christian, Jewish, and Muslim orthodoxy, even though it will employ a vast volume of both mystical and secular support for the furtherance of the quest. In short, this book is only about the literal truth as it was, as it is, and as it will be.

The Nephilim enigma of Genesis 6 is curt narrative, included without explanation with the flood narrative, not to mention, Nephilim were recorded in many Old Testament books like Exodus, Numbers, Joshua, Ecclesiastics, 1 Chronicles, Psalms, and the Apocrypha. Nephilim are crucial to understanding the Antichrist prophecies and the last days. And yet, who really knows who or what these Nephilim were? What imperatives and warnings must this generation discern from this abstruse mystery? And how are Nephilim related to aliens, fairies, vampires, secret societies, and world government? We will answer these questions and many more as we plunge into diverse scriptures to examine *The Genesis 6 Conspiracy*. Evidence will be presented supporting my contention that there is an ongoing, 6,000-year conspiracy by dark angels, secret societies, and the descendants of Nephilim that is bent on enslaving humankind under an oppressive government that is hostile to God.

SECTION I: The Antediluvian Epoch

THE AGE OF GREAT HEROES

CHAPTER 1

HEROES OF OLD

The Nephilim were on the earth in those days and afterward, when the sons of God went to the daughters of men and had children by them. They were heroes of old, men of renown.

—Genesis 6:4

The unexplained Nephilim narrative originates in the book of Genesis, during the time of Noah. Readers are not provided with any defining details or with appropriate context as to just what Nephilim were. Readers are only instructed that sons of God coupled with daughters of men, which curiously produced the renowned heroes of old.

But isn't this a very strange anecdote in the preamble to the flood narrative? Why were Nephilim provided print just before one of the epic tales of Scripture? Why were these cryptic Nephilim people described as both heroes of old and men of renown? Surely, all this cannot be a coincidence. It is my contention that Scripture has been brilliantly diligent in its accuracy and historically precise in its application of text.

The ancient application to the appellation *hero* is not generally understood today in the same context that *hero* was applied and understood in ancient texts and thus, it is comprehended in a completely different connotation in the everyday life of the ancient epochs. The ancient recollection of heroes is more akin to our contemporary phenomena of superheroes, such as Superman and Spiderman. Indeed, these contemporary superheroes reflect allegories of forgotten secrets to epochs past, fond memories by some harkening back to an age of superhuman heroes. These contemporary cartoon characters eerily whisper something seductive, something secretive, and something sinister from the misty fog of prehistory that we dismiss at our peril.

Consider this: one definition provided by *Webster's New Format Dictionary* (1986) defines *hero* as "a man of superhuman powers, a demigod." If the original translation for *hero* then is applied to Genesis 6, we indeed have a cryptic enigma, in that a race of superhuman demigods is part of the flood narrative. Just as curious, and without explanation, all renowned men of antiquity were depicted as heroes that persistently and continuously bubbled to the surface from the murky depths of primeval history as part man and part god, reigning for long durations.

The Encyclopedia Americana testifies that among the ancient Greeks, heroes were those who were legendary for their bravery and achievements and who possessed exceptional strength. Homer's *Iliad* generally referred to heroes as kings and sons of kings. They were fierce warriors, who did mighty deeds and waged mighty battles in the shadow of the common human's fate. *The Odyssey* describes heroes as wise and venerable beings (such as Hercules/ Heracles) who lived to great ages. Homer further noted these mighty heroes were always doomed to gloomy fates.[1] The Roman poet Ovid authored *Heroides*, a series of twenty-one poetic love letters written to heroic lovers/ husbands by the women of the Heroic Age that included letters between Paris and Helen, and Leander and Hero.[2]

The etymology of *hero* is not conclusive, but experts believe *hero* to be closely connected to a root word meaning "strong," or one who guards or protects, suggesting soldierly (or militaristic) qualities. In truth, the concept of heroes from all races around the globe refers to a specific race of an early age (antediluvian), before historical records were written of their race, and to legendary characters of divine dignity analogous to that of gods. Teutonic and Celtic heroes were also figures descending from gods like Odin, Loki, and Danu.[3] But what is most intriguing regarding these ancient accounts is that all denote these pre-flood heroes as both a venerable and a distinct race of powerful demigods, separate from the mundane and mortal humans.

Greek heroes were noted to be mythological beings; their positions among the sanctioned hierarchy of beings were placed somewhere between mortals and gods, making them semidivine. Hesiod recorded Aegimius, in a composition by the same name, as the ancient hero of the Dorians.[4] Hesiod eloquently provided Macedonians a fabulous pedigree akin to Greek heroes descended from Hellenes: Dorus, Patriarch of the Dorians; Xuthus, Patriarch of the Ionians; and Aelous, Patriarch of the Aeolians. Zeus fathered both Macedon and Magnes with Thyria, producing a proud people who rejoiced in horses and dwelt near Olympus. The first Macedonian kings hailed from a warrior-chief clan descending from the southern Greeks, the Argead.[5]

Hesiod, whom Herodotus claims was a contemporary of Homer, circa 900 B.C.E.,[6] further recorded heroes in his famous work *Works and Deep* as "men of great renown." Herodotus was the Greek historian considered the Father of History, circa 485–425 B.C.E. He was a follower of Hecataeus in the development of historical science, transcending the rational criticism of epic traditions characteristic of his predecessors. Herodotus drew his knowledge from his extensive geographical, historical, and literary knowledge, as well as from his firsthand experiences in the many countries he visited.[7]

Hesiod's exacting language that specifies "heroes and men of renown" cannot be a mere coincidence, nor can it be considered completely independent of the precise text employed by Genesis. Hesiod buttressed through the testimony of his days, the validity of Nephilim recorded in Genesis, to beyond 900 B.C.E., and forthrightly in his text, all the way back to the antediluvian epoch. Even more striking, Hesiod stated in *Works and Days* that he evidently belonged to the period immediately following the Trojan War.[8] This dating, if accurate, would likely trace Hesiod's testimony back several hundred years beyond 900 B.C.E.

Hesiod additionally recorded Greek heroes, commonly known as Titans, warriors, demigods, and "depotentiated gods" from a former age of heroes.[9] Hesiod recorded the birth of the gods, the giant, semidivine Titans, and their achievements into a library of the oldest known fables from his age, creating a work called *Theogany*.[10] Homer's *Iliad* also referred to these Titanic heroes as demigods.[11] To this conclusion, the Greek philosopher from the third century B.C.E., Euhemerus, became famous for stating Greek myths were in fact dim memories of historical events from an earlier age, a theory that became known as *Euhemerism*.[12]

Consider texts from clay tablets from ancient Mesopotamia on display in the great museums around the world, then quoted in the textbooks of schools and universities as part of secular revisionist history. These ancient legends descending from the antediluvian Sumerians were inherited by postdiluvian Babylonians/Chaldeans, Akkadians, and Assyrians, and they became a critical component to their cultures, religions, and societies. These fantastic Sumerian legends that include the *Epic of Gilgamesh* curiously refer back to an Age of Heroes reigned over by semidivine Anunnaki giants, which thrived before the flood catastrophe and then somehow survived into the postdiluvian world.[13]

Hesiod cryptically understood these heroes as the mysterious and infamous fourth race of beings created by the gods.[14] Does “the four races” refer to the mortal humans, the centaurs, and two distinct races of heroes/Nephilim? Or does Hesiod refer to the two races of humans, the sons of Adam and the people of day six, along with the centaurs and heroes? Or does Hesiod refer to the fairy folk, Nephilim, centaurs, and humans as the four races? We will learn about all these races as this book unfolds.

What is clear, however, is that the Bible and most other ancient transcripts, scriptures, legends, and mythologies all recognized and testified to a powerful antediluvian race of superhumans reigning as kings and demigods over the mortal and mundane humans. The first personalities (heroes) from memories of written history, according to author and historian Susan Wise Bauer, universally testify to a rein of obscure kings documented as part man and part god, which somehow descended from heaven on eagle’s wings.[15]

It is my contention that somehow these ancient Nephilim perished from this world. They have been forgotten by the modern, secular psyche and accepted history; all accounts have been marginalized to the sidelines as fanciful mythology and legend, as a wistful yearning back to a revisionist golden age of pastoral peace and prosperity. Sadly, Western historians, according to Bauer, have trained in university systems that believe only science is infallible; these historians do not trust in the tales from prehistory and position themselves as scientists, dismissing any historical material that departs from Newton’s universe.[16] They deny that the Titan/Nephilim race was both real and powerful, a shadowy race of demigods who left a large and visible impression upon the ancient epochs.

It is essential to understand Nephilim as a legendary race of giants mythologized to have coexisted with humankind in the ancient world. Nephilim cultivated a new culture, religion, and knowledge base. But do we really know the sources and inspirations of this ancient but mysterious race that is lost to the accepted secular chronicles of antiquity? What impact, if any, did their culture, religion, and or knowledge have on the ancient world? Did Noah know the Nephilim? Did the Nephilim have anything to do with the flood? How were Nephilim introduced into the world? And what kind of people were they? To resolve the Nephilim mystery, we must backtrack to understand obscure and unexplained events preceding the flood in the antediluvian epoch.

This venture into the ancient epochs of the Old Testament and the divergent transcripts, mythologies, and legends from a vast variety of cultures, writers, and organizations will deliver a series of shock waves to the standard modern theology of Genesis and secular history. Be prepared. Be aware! The truth will set you free, but the truth may not be what you have thought or what you want.

CHAPTER 2

THE DAUGHTERS OF CAIN

> *Male and female he created them. God blessed them and said to them, "Be fruitful and increase in number; fill the earth and subdue it. Rule over the fish and the sea and the birds of the air and over every living creature that moves on the ground."*
>
> —Genesis 1:27–28

After God created Adam and then Eve, one generally expects a pastoral world with a wonderful climate and peaceful coexistence, notwithstanding the Cain incident, and perhaps this was the case in the beginning. But by the time of Noah, Scripture records that the world had slipped into a state of violent chaos.[1] So how did this happen in just ten generations?

The answer is shrouded behind misconstrued prehistory. We must learn about little-known prehistoric Brotherhoods of the Snake, the oldest secret societies in the world, all surreptitiously dedicated to world domination and the enslavement of humankind.[2] The societies' various incantations are all linked to the Serpent in Eden, the Tree of Life, the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, heroes, and Genesis's misunderstood history.

We begin with Josephus, for he has some answers to the questions about Adam's descendants. Josephus recorded that the sons of Seth continued their reverence to God as the Lord of the universe for seven generations.[3] Cain was the first born of Adam, while Abel who Cain murdered, was the second born. Therefore, we may conclude that the seeds of the deluge were well planted in the first generation after Adam. Seth, then, was the third born son of Adam and Eve. According to Josephus, Adam and Eve begat thirty-three sons and twenty-three daughters;[4] although, the Bible only records that Adam and Eve bore other sons and daughters.[5]

However, during these first seven generations, the passing of time slowly eroded the righteousness of all humankind, perverting all but Noah by the tenth generation. Even the descendants of Seth began after seven generations to dishonor God by not attributing to God all things, even though God had appointed all things. The posterity of Seth became more and more like the peoples around them, who demonstrated no concern in the administering of justice or respect towards their fellow humans or towards God. The people of Noah’s generation displayed their deeds with a double degree of wickedness, whereby they declared God to be their adversary.[6]

During this period, a vile act of rebellion occurred. The sons of God began to procreate with the daughters of men, producing as their posterity the heroes of old. But just who were these sons of God, and why would the daughters of men copulate with the sons of God to produce a new race of humanoids? Some say the sons of God were the descendants of Seth and the daughters of men were the posterity of Cain and that the progeny of Seth procreated with the daughters of Cain to produce these famous heroes of old. From the mainstream Christian point of view, this makes perfect sense —end of story. But this was not the case; the sons of God were not the sons of Seth. In addition, humans mating with humans could not have produced a new, physically superior race of humanoids of that sort of magnitude, unless the term *giant* is greatly overstated, for Nephilim were thought to be a powerful race of giants.

Generally accepted theology concludes the daughters of men were Cain’s progeny, born after Cain was banished from Adam and Eve. According to this line of thought, Cain chose a wife from one of Adam’s many daughters, even though this marriage recorded in Genesis does not specifically state the female was from the posterity of Adam.[7] The standard conclusion is that because there were not any other kinds of humanoids on earth at that time, the female must have come from the loins of Adam. Cain therefore became the progenitor of the first family branch from the tree of Adam, while Seth, who was born later, became the second branch of Adam.

It was from Cain's posterity, as this line of thought goes, that violence and evil first imprinted the antediluvian world; although, the Bible does not record this as such. This theory can be only biblically supported through the Genesis account of Cain murdering Abel and then extrapolated by charging Cain with further degeneration into evil and corruption. Similarly, the New Testament only states that Cain belonged to Satan for murdering Abel[8] and that evil was the way of Cain.[9] Genesis did not plainly record this transfer of transgenerational evil onto generations of Cain's posterity; oddly, it recorded only the first progeny of Cain and their accomplishments.

What Genesis records and what is does *not* record is puzzling, simply because if Cain and his progeny were indeed thoroughly corrupted, why would Scripture have diligently recorded for all time their accomplishments? Why wouldn't Scripture only have focused on the righteous accomplishments of Seth's progeny? Moreover, why would Scripture not have diligently recorded the iniquitous exploits of Cain's posterity as a matter of theological and historical record for all generations to contemplate? We do not find the answers to these puzzling questions in the biblical text.

Biblically undocumented transgressions by Cain's descendants are then summarily drafted in standard Christian theology as the source for evil and violence. And thus they are seen as willing partners, who helped spawn the Nephilim race of giants-via the copulation of the degenerate daughters of Cain with the enlightened sons of Seth. But since Genesis does not explicitly cite this either, this conclusion is nothing more than conjecture, unless other sources can substantiate it.

Indeed, there are other sources that we can look to in establishing that Cain's progeny were a corrupt and vile branch of Adam's posterity, who were willing participants in violating the sacred laws of creation. We can also find out just who the sons of God were.

Let us begin with summarizing Genesis's account of the posterity of Cain. Cain bore a son, Enoch, and Cain named the city he built after him. Enoch bore Irad, who bore Mehujael, who bore Methushal, who was the father of Lamech. Lamech married two women, Adah and Zillah, and was thereby pronounced the first polygamist, a violation of the law that the Nephilim would later prize as a cornerstone of their rebellious culture.

Adah gave birth to Jabal, the first nomad who raised livestock. Adah also gave birth to another son, Jubal, the first to create the art of music. The second wife, Zillah, bore one son, Tubal-Cain, who was credited with inventing smithcraft. Zillah also bore a daughter named Naamah, but Genesis does not accredit Naamah with inventing anything. The account of Cain's progeny ends with Lamech, stating he killed a man for wounding him, and that if his ancestor Cain was sentenced to suffer seven times over, then he would be judged to suffer seventy-seven times over.[10]

Although this account does provide some transgressions, such as the polygamy of Lamech and the killing of a man by Lamech, compounded by the sin of murder by Lamech's ancestor Cain, it does not establish requisite groundwork for the level of violence and corruption compiled by the tenth generation, particularly when one considers the sons and daughters of Lamech form the sixth generation. And as I have already noted, the erosion of righteousness took hold during the first seven generations, when it gripped the posterity of Seth, corrupting the righteous branch almost completely by the tenth generation. Therefore, something more must have been taking place in the lineage of Cain to so corrupt his posterity, in addition to crossing the genealogical branches of Cain and Seth, or another outside source must have been at work as the source of this corruption.

Cain was thought to have traveled over many countries with his wife, finally establishing a city he named Nod, where he and his wife settled and had children. Louis Ginzberg, author of *Legends of the Bible,* notes that Cain built monuments to immortalize his name, as well as sixty cities, all with walls,[11] thereby suggesting military fortresses. Josephus interjects that Cain did not accept judgment or punishment from God for murdering Abel. Cain did not repent but rather increased his transgressions and wickedness, procuring everything for his own pleasure, even though it obliged him to be injurious to his neighbors. Cain became wealthy through plundering his neighbors with violence and robbing them of all that he could pillage. Cain further urged his followers to do the same; he became a great leader of men, leading them into wickedness.[12] Who were these plundering hordes led by Cain? Where did they come from?

Josephus wrote that Cain introduced weights and measures into the world, where before the introduction of this system, humankind lived innocently and generously. Cain led humans from innocence into cunning craftiness, where all things were weighed and measured. He established boundaries for all lands and established many cities with fortified walls, naming one Enoch after his eldest son.[13] Ginzberg suggests that Cain sinned to secure his own pleasure, even though he severely injured his neighbors. Cain was likely one of the proponents for violence and war in the antediluvian world.

Josephus and Ginzberg both label Cain as the father of evil, violence, and corruption. These accounts stray significantly from the Genesis account, where Cain was not overtly charged with corrupting the antediluvian world. It was implied so subtly that one may wish to look closer at Cain for impropriety. With Cain planting these kinds of seeds in just the second generation, it is not difficult to conceive the entire antediluvian world, other than the lineage of Seth, being totally corrupted by the sixth generation, with Seth's posterity being completely corrupted by Cain's descendants from the seventh to the tenth generations and after the Nephilim incident. With the arrival of Lamech, however, antediluvian life became interesting. Josephus recorded, just as the author of Genesis recorded, that Lamech became the first recorded polygamist, marrying both Zillah and Adah. Altogether, they procreated seventy-seven children. Lamech was also noted as being very skilled in the art of divine revelation.[14] Of those seventy-seven children, three were noteworthy by Josephus's standards.

Jubal, son of Adah, specialized in music, inventing musical instruments. Tubal-Cain, son of Zillah, exceeded all other men in strength and excelled in the martial arts, foreshadowing characteristics of the Nephilim. Josephus noted Tubal-Cain as procuring the pleasures of the body through his natural attributes, again foreshadowing another characteristic of the Nephilim. No doubt, Tubal-Cain also inherited and embellished all the sins and corruption of his forefather Cain, as witnessed by his name. Josephus then credits Tubal-Cain with inventing the art of manufacturing brass.[15] *Nelson's Bible Dictionary* defines *Cain* as meaning "a metal worker," thereby attributing *Tubal* to being his first name, and *Cain* denoting his expertise, just as his forefather must have been some form of metalworker or smith. The third distinguished progeny was the daughter of Zillah, *Naamah*, meaning "pleasant."[16] Josephus does not credit anything special to Naamah, but again, to be noted in the Bible, one must be worthy of either good or evil.

Josephus went on to strike deep into the character of Cain's posterity:

> Even while Adam was still alive, it came to pass that the posterity of Cain became exceedingly wicked, everyone successfully dying, one after another, more wicked than the former. They were intolerable in war, and vehement in robberies; and if anyone was slow to murder people, yet was he bold in his immoral behavior, in acting unjustly, and doing injuries for gain.[17]

They were, indeed, their father's sons and daughters. Corroborating evidence from non-Biblical sources more than fills in the blanks left by Genesis. Josephus described Cain's posterity as despicable to the bone—a vile branch that degenerated into more iniquity with each passing generation. By the sixth generation, Cain's rebellious posterity was a human cesspool, looking to spawn a great evil into the antediluvian world. And of course, they succeeded. But before we continue with that, it is time to enter the Freemasonry Brotherhood and its legends into the mystery.

The Dowland Manuscript of the Legend of the Craft lists the Seven Liberal Sciences: "Grammere" to teach humankind to both speak and write truly; "Rhethoricke" to teach humankind to speak in subtle terms; "Dialectyke" to teach humankind to discern between truth and falsehoods; "Arithmeticke" to teach humankind to compute all manner of numbers; "Geometrie" to teach humankind to measure the earth and all things (this is the Science of Masonry); "Musicke" to teach humankind song and the language of musical instruments; and finally, "Astronomye" to teach humankind the course of the planets and stars.[18] Rhetoric's original state was the art of persuasion, while grammar was the molding and education of men through reading.[19] Note how several of these sciences were unexplainably credited to Lamech's children in Genesis and Josephus.

The Hutchinsonian Theory from Brother William Hutchinson's work *The Spirit of Masonry* offers this commentary:

> … to Adam, while still in a state of innocence, this knowledge was imparted, as well as that of all science and learning which existed in the earliest ages of the world. When our first parent fell, although he lost his innocence, he still retained the memory of all that he was taught while in the Garden of Eden. This very retention was, indeed, a portion of punishment incurred for his disobedience. It, however, enabled him to communicate to his children in the sciences which he had comprehended in Eden, and the knowledge that he had acquired of the Nature and the God of Nature.[20]

The History of Freemasonry also cites the Anderson Legend in the book by Dr. Anderson, *The Book of Constitutions*,[21] and the Oliverian Theory by Rev. Dr. Oliver in his book *Antiquities of Freemasonry*,[22] supporting the theory that the Seven Sciences were first taught to Adam by God while he still dwelled in Eden.

It is these unexplained Seven Sciences that inexplicably weave their way through Genesis and numerous polytheist legends, religions, and cultures. Recognizing the impact of the Seven Sciences is crucial for context and is a critical backdrop for comprehending the antediluvian epoch, for these sciences spawned secretive Snake Brotherhoods in all antediluvian cultures. We must, therefore, follow the mystical history of the Seven Sciences throughout this book and their unexplained relationships to antediluvian history to fully appreciate what took place. So what were these obscure sciences that were ignored by Christian orthodoxy?

The sciences bestowed to Adam were of unimaginable worth, for they contained the secrets of the universe. Humankind was bequeathed the knowledge to control the universe in which they lived, provided they mastered the wisdom provided for them and did not use this divine gift for evil. This extraordinary, advanced knowledge possessed by both the antediluvians and the early inhabitants of Babel was subtly expressed in Genesis 1:28 and 11:6 in these words of God: “Fill the earth and subdue it” and in this: “If as one people speaking the same language they have begun to do this, then nothing they plan to do will be impossible for them.” Hence, Adam was an active practitioner of the craft while in Eden and also after.[23] Unfortunately, though, both Eve and Adam ate from the Tree of Knowledge of both Good and Evil.[24] They were instantaneously corrupted by the knowledge of evil and were consequently driven from Eden by God—incidentally, an essential doctrine to this book’s discussion of the schism between monotheism and polytheism.

Freemason legends record that Adam did not lose control of the memory of the Seven Sciences and continued to practice them in a limited way after being banished from Eden, but he continued to practice in a righteous manner.

The obscure importance of these sciences dictated that they must not be lost. They needed to be preserved among Adam’s descendants, provided that Adam’s descendants applied this divine knowledge for good. In fact, this was just what Adam did. Adam communicated this knowledge to two of his sons: Cain and Seth.[25] Adam passed the Sacred Sciences onto two very different branches: Seth, whose descendants remained righteous until the seventh generation, and Cain, whose descendants were vile and treacherous from the time God ostracized Cain. The Sacred Sciences were preserved and utilized in two very different manners by the two very different branches of Adam's descendants.

Seth and his descendants focused on the seventh science, astronomy.[26] This should not be surprising, for Sethians were agrarians until the time of the deluge. Even after, Noah and his three sons were still considered people of the land.[27] The application of astronomy would have helped enormously in understanding and appreciating the movements of the heavenly bodies as they applied to the seasons for both planting and harvesting. Josephus labeled the seventh Sacred Science, which Sethians promoted, as a sort of peculiar wisdom, one that was concerned with the heavenly bodies and their order.[28]

Seth was proficient with the other six sciences also, preserving and cultivating them in righteousness to his progeny, who continued to practice the craft.[29] Sethian genealogy recorded in Genesis was a testimony to their righteousness and to their Adamic racial purity,[30] from which the human race was reseeded with their descendants after the flood, through Noah. In fact, the Oliver Legend of Freemasonry described Seth as one who associated only with the most virtuous people of his age, who were celebrated as the sons of light.[31]

According to the Anderson Legend, Cain took to the sacred knowledge, practicing the disciplines with uncommon vigor.[32] From this knowledge, and particularly the fifth science, geometry or masonry, Cain built a city named Hanoch (Enoch), after his first-born son,[33] and of course, Cain sixty-five other cities after Hanoch. The Anderson Legend also recorded that the employment of masonry was practiced vigorously up until the deluge, noting many a curious work was built, likely alluding to such projects as the Great Pyramids.

The introduction of weights, measures, and boundaries for the land by Cain, noted by Josephus, additionally testifies to Cain applying the fifth science; all things were measured in this discipline. Even though Cain and his descendants were corrupt to the core, no evidence thus far has been tabled to suggest that the Cainites used the Seven Sacred Sciences for evil. We must turn to the Oliver Legend to find any such allegations. In this legend, Cain and all of his descendants were accused of perverting the Seven Sacred Sciences.[34] Two of Cain's descendants were fingered as particularly corrupt in the application of the Sacred Sciences: Enoch and Lamech.

Enoch and the deluge are elemental components to the origins and oldest forms of Freemasonry[35] and its Snake Brotherhood. In the Anderson Legend, Enoch was considered an expert in science, geometry, and masonry. Enoch was credited with the invention of sacred symbols and hieroglyphics; *hieroglyph* is translated by the Craft as "sacred carvings." Enoch invented hieroglyphics as a means to both preserve and transmit the sacred truths in a manner safer, more accurate, and more efficient than the verbal manner, which was employed before. The Jewish writer Bar Hebraeus credits Enoch with inventing writing and books and with teaching men the art of building cities (masonry).[36] Orientalist writers note that Enoch received knowledge bursting with secrets of the most mysterious sciences, while the Babylonians noted that Enoch was an expert on the stars, who also invented astrology.[37]

The book of Enoch describes Enoch being instructed in the Seven Sacred Sciences by a people known as *watchers*,[38] a shadowy group we will discuss later. Enoch discovered the zodiac and was the first to initiate worship through religious rites.[39] Essenes particularly valued the Book of Jubilees that recorded Enoch as a mystery figure conversant in the esoteric and scientific knowledge. They believed Enoch was the first among men to learn writing and that he wrote in a book the signs of heaven, assigning them to the number of months in a solar year.[40] Again, the Anderson Legend credited Enoch with being the one who taught the sacred mysteries in religious rites and ceremonies. He appointed festivals and sacrifices to the sun at periods when the sun entered each of the zodiacal signs. Enoch was also associated with the sun and its worship thereof; Enoch was considered an idol worshipper.[41]

We already learned about the corrupt and vile nature of Cain and his posterity, but now we learn just how some of this vile nature manifested itself. Enoch, first son of Cain, embraced the Seven Sacred Sciences and perverted their knowledge with evil. The sacred knowledge of the universe was in the hands of the haters of God. Remember, Cain did not agree with his punishment and made it his personal goal to augment as much wickedness in the antediluvian world as he possibly could muster. Now Enoch, who most definitely was his father's son, set out to pervert the sacred knowledge, enslaving it to the augmentation of wickedness and mysticism. This hijacking of sacred knowledge and segregating that powerful knowledge into exclusive and secretive Snake Brotherhoods, by Enoch (and likely Cain), was the naissance to The Genesis 6 Conspiracy. The sullied liberal arts from that point forward were earmarked for the elite, while philosophy was reserved for even fewer.[42]

Consider the list of sinister sacraments Enoch introduced. From astronomy, he created astrology and sun worship. Enoch and his counterparts and descendants became idolaters, worshipping other gods rather than the true God of the universe. Enoch implemented pagan rituals, ceremonies, and rites with this new, repulsive religion. The knowledge could then only be passed on to initiates, the selected guardians of the knowledge that was then cloaked in mysteries and secrets. This is why he was called *Enoch*, for the Hebrew translation means "initiated or consecrated."[43]

Lamech was the other descendant of Cain who achieved notoriety with respect to the perversion of the sciences and the naissance to the Genesis 6 Conspiracy. From the Oliver Legend we learn the nefarious application of the sciences waned sometime after Enoch but was once more renewed under Lamech and his children. The children of Lamech not only maintained these perverted practices but also cultivated them. One can then deduce that the three sons and one daughter of Lamech listed in Genesis would have been the key progeny in further contaminating the Seven Sacred Sciences and the entire antediluvian world.[44]

Lamech brings us back to the sixth generation, where descendants of Cain were so corrupt, so violent, and so anti-God they became susceptible to another nefarious outside influence. Lamech, Lamech's progeny, and likely other Cainites used their daughters of men to violate the divine rules of creation. An outside force partnered with the descendants of Cain, thoroughly violating what was left of their innocence, so as to leave their original nature unrecognizable. Numerous biblical legends recorded the daughters of Cain coupling with the sons of God to produce giants.[45]

In the Ethiopian work *The Kebra Negast*, "the daughters of Cain" was substituted for the phrase "daughters of men"[46] that was employed in the Bible. In fact, the derisive daughters of Cain, according to Andrew Collins, were believed to have been easily led into unbridled debauchery that led to the unholy unions with sons of God.[47] Now, these unexplained Cainite-led “daughters of men,” who curiously increased in great numbers on the earth, seem to refer back to the nomadic “other race” of humans created on day six that Cain married into, those who were blessed obscurely to be fruitful and multiply on the earth.[48] These unexplained humans were not the domesticated, agrarian Sethites.

It is now time to scrutinize the dissonant antediluvian sons of God.

CHAPTER 3

THE SONS OF GOD

Where were you when I laid the earth’s foundations? Tell me, if you understand. Who marked off its dimensions? Surely you know! Who stretched a measuring line across it? On what were its footings set, or who laid its cornerstone—while the morning stars sang together and all the angels shouted for joy?*

—Job 38:4–7

Interpreting that the sons of God were the descendants of the righteous line of Seth is plausible but incorrect. This conclusion is supposition, not fact. The Bible does not support this position whatsoever. So, if the sons of God were not the progeny of Seth, then just who were these unexplained figures?

It is possible to establish whom Scripture refers to, but it does require a little investigative work. To discover just who the sons of God were, we must first turn to Job 1:6–2:1: “One day angels* [the term *angels* is Hebrew for “the sons of God”] came to present themselves before the Lord.” The defining notation identifying sons of God to be angels is annotated at the bottom of the page in the New International Version. *Angel* is interchangeable with sons of God. Job further notes the *sons of God*, or angels, shouting for joy at the creation of the universe. Deuteronomy 32:8 uses the term "the sons of Israel," but if we check the notation at the bottom of the page, we find an intriguing, alternative translation. The *NIV Bible* (1973 edition) clearly cites that the alternative translation for this appellation is "the sons of God," citing the Masoretic text (the authoritative Hebrew text of the Jewish Bible) the Septuagint, and Dead Sea Scrolls, while the *Access Bible* prefers "other gods" and also cites the Masoretic Text for its translation.

Nelson's Dictionary cites three variations of the term *sons of God* as recorded in the Bible.[1] First, it cites Job, as I have with the same conclusion, as well as Genesis 6, where *Unger's* offers two conclusions: first, that it could mean angels and second that it could also mean human beings (Sethians), for Matthew 22:30 clearly states that angels do not marry.[2] I will clarify the Matthew reference shortly, but I concur with *Unger's* first option, that sons of God are undeniably angels. *Nelson's*, however, underscores that those in the Job passages were angels who presented themselves before God along with Satan.[3] I will clarify the third variation of the New Testament sons of God shortly.

Using the alternative angelic sons of god or gods translation in Deuteronomy 32:8 brings logic and definition to the passage; otherwise, the passage would make no sense whatsoever: Israel was not yet a nation in the days of long ago (before the flood), when in generations long past the nations were assigned to angels. Moreover, this alternative Deuteromic translation is supported in the Gnostic gospel Basilides Teachings, which states the earth was divided, along with its various nations, among the angels who helped create the earth, and chief among these angels was the God of the Jews, who wished to subject all nations unto Himself but was repelled by other rulers/ angels that resisted him.[4] This redefined Deuteromic passage will become indispensable when set alongside the disparate antediluvian myths from the pantheistic cultures defining the antediluvian order.

As a critical, historical anecdote, understand that the Greek Septuagint in its original Greek translation, dating from 100 B.C.E. or before, translated this Deuteromic passage as "the sons of God." The point to all this is that the sons of God, according to Scripture, were, indeed, angels. Other sources, such as *Unger's Bible Dictionary*, support this conclusion that God created both astral and terrestrial beings, with the astral beings renowned as "sons of God" and "hosts of heaven."[5] In fact, sons of God were known as angels or astral beings in many of the early cultures, such as the Canaanites, the Phoenicians, and the Ammonite traditions.[6] Conversely, from the Gnostic perspective, "sons of God" meant heavenly angels; although, the Hebrew original, *bene ha-elohim*, should really be translated as: "sons of gods."[7]

A learned Christian monk, George Syncellus, in his opus *Chronographia* from 808 C.E., equated, *watchers* and *Grigori*, a specific rank of angel, with sons of God. These *watchers* took wives from mortal men, producing giants.[8] Remember, Enoch was unexplainably tutored by *watchers*/angels. Finally, in defining Nephilim, *Unger's Dictionary* states the sons of God were, in fact, angels,[9] just as "The Other Bible" names the giant angels as the sons of God, who sinned with the daughters of men.[10] This shocking biblical revelation unbelievably recorded angels copulating with humans, producing a new race of humanoids. This is one of the forgotten races that became celebrated in myths and legends as the heroes of the ancient world, men of renown. Josephus also confirmed this vile act saying, that iniquitous angels did indeed couple with daughters of men.[11] Many other sources confirm the very same conclusion, but all have gone relatively unnoticed.

Even *The Encyclopedia Americana* notes: "History, both sacred and profane, makes mention of giants."[12] The Enochic Book of Giants noted giants were, of course, the offspring of fallen angels.[13] In his book *Signs in the Sky,* Adrian Gilbert quotes the book of Enoch's statement that fallen angels "begat children with the daughters of men."[14] Gilbert further quoted Enoch's mention of children who became giants that were begat from fallen angels and women.[15] And, again, Alan Alford quoted from the book of Enoch in his book *When the Gods Came Down,* adding that 200 fallen angels came down from heaven, married women, and had children by them.[16] From the first book of Enoch: "They [the angels] transgressed the word of the Lord, the law of heaven. And behold, they commit sin and transgress the commandment; they have united themselves with women and commit sin together with them; and they have married from among them, and begotten children by them…. And upon the earth they shall give birth to giants, not of the spirit but of the flesh."[17]

In addition, the book of Enoch further recorded *watchers*/fallen angels that left heaven to sleep with the daughters of men.[18] And finally, from the second book of the Secrets of Enoch, the *Grigori*, giant fallen angels, went to the earth and saw that the daughters of men were beautiful, whereby they seized them as wives for themselves.[19] Clearly, the antediluvian premise that fallen angels mated with the offspring of humans is not an unknown doctrine; it has simply been shelved by modern Christianity, for it is an embarrassment to rationalize with the arrogant, secular mindset of our times.

Now, with respect to the third argument—that the sons of God were human—as understood from New Testament application, it seems clear to me that the sons of God were not human in the Genesis account, but angelic. The "sons of God" appellation from the New Testament indubitably applies to humans of the New Covenant, just as the phrase "children of God" does. These are those who have accepted Jesus as their Lord and Savior and who have reserved a permanent dwelling in heaven, in the presence of the Holy Spirit. This title was effectively enacted at Pentecost, when the Holy Spirit sealed the New Covenant.[20]

Romans recorded the apostle Paul encouraging Christians not to live according to the flesh but by the Spirit, because those who are led by the Spirit are the sons of God, in a figurative and adopted sense.[21] *Nelson's* explicates that this is a process described as *adoption*, by which the believer then becomes a child of God and a joint heir with Jesus.[22] This concept is supported in Galatians, Hebrews, John, Philippians, and the book of 1 John.[23]

Nelson's Dictionary further supports this conclusion regarding the New Testament sons of God, who then became sons of God in a Covenant relationship, adopted and grafted into the Covenant.[24] *Nelson's* went on to state that the sons of God were part of the Covenant relationship recorded in Isaiah, noting this phrase does not appear with this meaning in the Old Testament, but the idea is implied. For example, God referred to the scattered children of Israel as "His sons and daughters."[25] Hosea 1:10, in a similar fashion, records: "In the place where it was said to them, 'You are not my people,' they will be called the 'sons of the living God." Both Isaiah and Hosea are making clear future references and prophecies concerning the millennium and after, when Israel and Judah will be reunited under one leader:[26] Jesus. Hosea and Isaiah prophesied a promise similar to the New Testament promise that we are the "sons of God," a promise that will be fulfilled in the millennium and afterwards into eternity.

Furthermore, when one looks at the Old Testament application for the appellation "the sons of God," with the exception of Genesis 6, only angels could be in the presence of God or at the point of the creation of the universe or part of the heavenly host in the beginning. Certainly, humans were not present at this time, but the sons of God were. Humans will eventually be elevated to angelic-like status, but this will not occur until the end of the millennial reign.

Finally, Josephus most certainly understood the sons of God in Genesis 6 to be angelic, for this was a constant opinion in antiquity. And keep in mind the fact that Josephus wrote before the assembly of the Canon and from a historical Jewish perspective. He stated, "For many angels of God coupled with women, and begat sons that proved unjust, and despisers of all that was good, on account of the confidence they had in their own strength; for the tradition is, that these men did what resembled the acts of those whom the Grecians call giants. But Noah was very uneasy at what they did."[27]

Interestingly enough, there is debate as to whether or not angels were capable of engaging in sex with humans. This argument generally derives from the notion that nowhere in the Bible does it explicitly suggest angels have any sexual capabilities, nor is there anything to note anywhere else in the Bible of even one fallen angel impregnating a women. But this is only true if you interpret "sons of God" from Genesis 6 as sons of Seth. This argument generally is further followed with testimony from Matthew, stating there will be no more marriage after the Resurrection of saints into eternity, for we will be like angels in heaven.[28]

Answering this argument is really quite simple. Genesis 6 in fact does suggest angels can have sex with humans. Genesis 6 nullifies the notion that angels are not identified as sexual beings. Note as well what 1 Corinthians 11:6–10 says (italics mine): "For man did not come from woman, but woman from man; neither was man created for woman, but woman for man. *For this reason, and because of angels*, the woman ought to have a sign of authority on her head."[29] The New Testament is recognizing that without a seal of authority, women are fair game for angels, at least for the misguided fallen angels! The church father Tertullianus (160–230 C.E.) seemingly concurred when he noted Paul, in 1 Corinthians 11:10, instructed women ought to wear veils so as to not entice angels, for dark angels love unveiled women with their beautiful hair.[30]

Moreover, I must point out that just because the Bible does not explicitly cite the angelic realm possessing sexual capabilities, the Bible also does not specifically negate this possibility. The notion of no marriage, and thus no sex in heaven, does not clearly state that heavenly beings do not have sexual capabilities. Rather, it only denotes that it does not take place in heaven, home of the spirit beings. Therefore, this does leave open the possibility that angels were, and are, capable of copulating outside of heaven in the world of flesh, even though they may not be authorized to do so.

Humankind is permitted sex because we are mortal. Humans require sex to reproduce; otherwise, we would obviously disappear from existence. Just as the book of Enoch states: "… because they perish, I gave them wives so that they might impregnate them, have children, and have nothing be lacking on earth. But you [angels] were spiritual and immortal for all generations of the world. So I gave you no wives, for heaven is your proper dwelling place."[31] All this underlines the doctrine of no marriage and no sexual encounters in heaven, but just as clearly, this doctrine does not extend outside the heavenly realm, even though there may have been requisite laws governing angelic promiscuity outside of heaven.

Conversely, the Kabbalistic Zohar recognizes angels possess the remarkable ability to transform themselves into either male or female in the physical realm.[32] The Zohar was the first translation of Kabbalism; it was a system of Jewish mythology adopted by mystics and wizards in Europe.[33] An occultist of the Kabbalah, Guillaume Postel, translated it during the Renaissance.[34] Postel was a practicing sorcerer, alchemist, and an expert in Enochian mysticism.[35]

According to the Zohar, angels do not have a sexual gender, even though they can adopt one; this changeling ability documented in the Zohar is held up to be the explanation of how angels were capable of copulating with the daughters of men.[36]

Ginsberg backs up this shape-shifting doctrine.[37] Evidently, angels lost their transcendental qualities while on the earth; they took on sublunary bodies so that they, indeed, could mate with human females,[38] and likely each other, to create lower forms of gods on earth. This doctrine was succinctly captured in The Testament of Reuben: "… for it was thus that they [women] charmed the watchers, who were before the Flood. As they continued looking at the women, they were filled with desire for them and perpetrated the act in their minds. *Then they were transformed into human males* [italics mine], and while the women were living with their husbands they appeared to them. Since the women's minds were filled with lust for these apparitions, they gave birth to giants."[39]

Let me now quote Jude: "… the angels who did not keep their positions of authority but abandoned their own home—these he kept in darkness, bound with everlasting chains for judgment on the great day. In a similar way, Sodom, Gomorrah, and the surrounding towns, gave themselves up to sexual immorality and perversion" (Jude 1:6–7 niv). Jude is linking sexual perversion of angels during the time of Noah with another form of sexual perversion in Sodom and Gomorrah, and possibly a second postdiluvian violation against creation. This passage, echoing Enochian Scripture, cannot be interpreted any other way; angels most certainly do and did have sexual capabilities.

Referring once more to the *Kebra Negast*:

> … daughters of Cain with whom the angels sinned, conceived, but they were unable to bring forth children and they died. Of the children who were in their wombs, some died and some did come forth by splitting open the bellies of their mothers. They came forth by their navels, and when they were grown up they became giants.[40]

All the originating Nephilim mothers died, for their physiology could not cope with such monsters. Many of the Nephilim infants died at birth, with only the babies delivered through a barbaric form of Cesarean birth, saving any of them at all. No doubt, it was a panic-stricken butchery of the mothers in favor of the baby demigods that killed the naive mothers. The point of course is that the *Kebra Negast* also testifies to the fact that angels can be sexual beings if they choose.

Analyzing other non-biblical accounts and references reveals a similar story and conclusion. Giants were renowned by people in many other ancient cultures, such as the Egyptians, Romans, Greeks, Phoenicians, and other Mesopotamian people. Egyptologist R. A. Schwaller De Lubicz, author of the books *The Temple of Man* and *King of Pharonic Theocracy*, believes mankind devolved from an advanced race of giants. So, too, did the famous German astronomer, Hans Hoerbiger, author of *Glacial Cosmology*, believe in the giants of antiquity recorded in the Bible and the *Epic of Gilgamesh*.[41] All primeval cultures teem with fabulous stories of famous heroes, people of great size and great strength. These superheroes all derived from a sexual union between immortal gods and humans. The most famous of these Titans were Theseus, Hercules, Jason, Cadmus, and Perseus, all who, inexplicably, were avid dragon slayers.

Theseus, the founder of antediluvian Athens[42] and the hero who fought against the Amazons,[43] was born out of wedlock by the gods through Neptune/Poseidon and Aethra.[44] Generally, these Greek superbeings were known as *Titans*, who all seem to be connected by concealed but close ties to the other giant demigods of the Mediterranean cultures. In Homer's *Raising of the Dead*, both Pirithous and Theseus were recorded as great friends and mighty sons of gods! Theseus was further described as a being of no ordinary size, a warrior of tremendous strength, quickness, and bravery. He was the cousin of Hercules and a great hero, whom people proclaimed was a "Second Hercules."[45]

Hercules, the most famous of the Greek Titans, was the hero son of Zeus and Alcmena.[46] Hercules was renamed from his birth nomative *Alkeides* by the prophetess of Delphi. Hercules is famous in legends for his great feats and his participation with the gods in fending off the ten-year Titan rebellion against the gods. Hercules slew the leader of the rebellious giants, Alcyoneus. Hercules is also famous for slaying a dragon in his quest for the Golden Apples (Tree of Life) that granted immortality, which was located in the Garden of Hesperides (Eden).

Jason is the celebrated hero who quested after the Golden Fleece, the Golden Pelt of Aries the Ram, guarded by a dragon. Jason was son of Aeson, King of Thessaly, half-brother to Neleus, and one of the twin sons of Poseidon.[47] Aeson was a Nephilim, and so was Jason. Jason's ship, *Argos*, was constructed by Argus; his crew was known as the Argonauts. Hercules was a member of Jason's crew.[48]

Cadmus was one of three sons of the Phoenician King Agenor and brother of the female Titan Europa. His two other brothers were Cilix and Phoenix.[49] Cadmus was the founder of antediluvian Thebes and the progenitor of the Egyptian nobles of Thebes. Cadmus is credited in tradition with having taught the Greeks the Phoenician alphabet.[50] Then there was Perseus, who was the fabulous Greek hero, the son of Zeus and Danae, who was led by the infamous and enigmatic Hermes to travel to the Gorgons to slay Medusa.[51]

Central to all the primordial cultures was the famous, mythological sea god Poseidon, who fathered five sets of scurrilous twins through sexual relations with the daughters of men. Poseidon was brother to the god Zeus, the god who overthrew the rebellious Titans.[52] Poseidon‘s twins grew up to be giants, Titan/demigods, who reigned over the mythological continent and civilization of Atlantis. Atlantis was, of course, the mythological civilization that most pantheistic cultures of antiquity linked themselves to as the source for their culture. What is most intriguing with the legends of Atlantis is that the Freemasons would like to recreate the Atlantean antediluvian Age of Enlightenment, which had ten kingdoms with ten governments and ten kings, famous for being the helm of antediluvian world government. Freemasons fever to reincarnate world government, rebuilt with the Atlantean model of ten kingdoms, where fallen angels had regular sexual relations with humans. This is the root doctrine to The Genesis 6 Conspiracy.

The same notions were nourished in the Mesopotamian legends and, in particular, in the various Gilgamesh epics that I will reveal to you in a subsequent chapter. But understand that the Mesopotamian legends burgeon with giants and sexual relations between humans and angels. The giants/demigods that persistently bob their way to the surface from the earliest records of prehistory were all offspring of gods, who were fallen angels; inexplicably, this is an all too common theme in ancient, pantheistic mythology. These bewildering Titans inherited an unabashed, belligerent bias for battle and brutality, just as the Nephilim did. One wonders whether or not there might be a direct relationship between the giants of Greek and other cultural mythologies and the Nephilim of the biblical record. Perhaps the disparate giant mythologies from other cultures were originally rooted in the biblical Nephilim narratives.

Dark angels that committed sexual perversions became branded as “fallen angels;” they rebelled against God, along with Satan. Even though the apostate offspring of angels thrived for a time, God did not look favorably upon the fallen angels, who partook in such a vile act against the laws of creation. God locked the impassioned fallen angels away until the time of the end, in the Abyss,[53] as retribution. These were the unexplained spirits to whom Jesus preached after He was crucified, during the three days he was still in the grave.[54]

After Eden, humankind was granted a mortal spirit, albeit longed-lived because Adam and Eve, and thus their progeny were banished from eating from the tree of life for violating God's instruction to not eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. Reference: Genesis 2:9; 6216-18, 3:2-13, 3:21-24; 5:1-32. Then the immortal Spirit of God was transplanted into a new race of humankind via the fallen angels. God then intervened against this perversion to the natural order of creation by restricting the life span of all forms of humankind to 120 years, including the future posterity of the fallen angels and Nephilim.[55] The Qur'an confirms that God, indeed, did intercede to limit all life spans of this world to a fixed time.[56]

From that point on, when: "the Lord said, 'My Spirit will not contend with man forever [or remain in note b], for he is mortal {or he is corrupt}; his days will be a hundred and twenty years" (Genesis 6:3), the original Nephilim were permitted to have children, but the children were strictly beings of the flesh and not of the spirit as the parents were.[57] Before God introduced this edict, it was not uncommon for the descendants of Adam through the Seth branch to live for 300 to 800 years.[58] But then the rebellious angels procreated a race of giants that would live forever, like gods. It is a fantastic notion to believe that angels could produce offspring in cooperation with human females, let alone that they could pass on the inheritance of their immortal spirit through their procreation, but it is factual, just as the Bible testifies.

One can quickly appreciate the anger God must have had to pacify, punish, and imprison those fallen angels for attempting to circumvent the natural order and mortal process of creation, where humankind is destined to endure for a time in order to achieve immortality. Consider the words from the book of Enoch: "… and now, giants, offspring of spirit and flesh, will be called spirits on earth, and the earth shall be their dwelling. Their bodies emitted evil spirits because they were born from human women and holy Watchers."[59]

Evil spirits remained, destined to haunt the earth in spirit form only, after their physical, giant bodies died, just as God ordained His immortal

Spirit would not remain in humans.[60] These roaming immortal spirits of bodiless giants are *demons*.[61] The immortal spirit did not die from the original Nephilim offspring of angels; only their bodies withered away. God condemned the illicit spirits to the earth, preventing them access to heaven, until the time of the judgment, in which they will be cast into the lake of fire.[62] These are the scurrilous spirits that cause mayhem on earth; they are derisive demons documented in the New Testament.[63] Demons are defined by The New Testament In Today's English as evil spirits with the power to harm people; they are regarded as messengers and servants of the devil.[64] Demons are inferior spirit beings, and Satan is their ruler.[65] They are his ministers.[66] Demons are the vagabond ghost gods of Daoism, followed in homes where families pasted pictures of celestial masters, or talismans, charmed with a red stamp to their doors to guard against the vitriolic, vagabond ghost deities. Dao traditions recorded powerful heroes, believed to be their ancestors, were gods; subsequent Chinese generations worshipped spirits of heroes.[67]

In fact, cult hero worship likely derived from this source. Cult heroes are believed in by the scholar Rhode, based on the glorified spirits/souls of dead, ancient heroes that are worshipped as gods.[68] Cult hero worship was a constant reminder to people of a superior race of mortals, demigods who lived in the Heroic Age. When the hero died, he went on to live a shadowy life in the depths of the earth, but his spirit was still active in the community. Rites at the tomb were designed to appease the anger of the dead hero, who had previously become enraged at the knowledge of his mortality. Heroes were prideful beasts, filled with selfish, excessive hubris. *Hubris* comes from a Greek word meaning "pride, selfishness, excessive behavior, the refusal to stay within due bounds, and egotism." After the Trojan War, Hesiod noted the refugee Titan remnant fled to the blessed isles on the edge of the world;[69] likely England and Ireland.

Enoch wrote this prophecy:

> … because they are born from men and from the holy Watchers in their beginning and primal origin; they shall be evil spirits on earth, and evil spirits shall they be called…. And the spirits of the giants will afflict, oppress, destroy, attack, do battle, and work destruction on the earth, and cause trouble…. And these spirits shall rise up against the children of men and against the women, because they have proceeded from them.[70]

Collins states that “demons and devils” is a more appropriate term for the evil spirits used in this quote.[71]

In one quick and abhorrent act, dark angels undermined God’s plan for humankind, causing God to react swiftly with imprisonment and divine judgment towards the offending angels, as well as overruling the immortal spirit of the Nephilim, while restricting all new physical life thereafter to a maximum of 120 years (Jude 1:6-8; Genesis 6:3). The immortal spirit was not passed on to subsequent generations, nor did angels ever copulate with human females again (that we are aware of); although, the Sodom and Gomorrah incident leaves this question open for speculation.

If fallen angels were able to pass on their immortal spirit to their offspring, then what other superhuman traits were they able to equip this new race of people with? It is a safe and logical deduction that the Nephilim were not an ordinary race of humanoid; after all, they gained a notable reputation that found its way into the annals of the Bible. They were the heroes of old and men of renown, both before and after the flood.[72] Josephus’s account in *Antiquities* notes this illegal union produced giants.[73] According to Josephus, this was common knowledge and opinion of antiquity.[74] Not only was the doctrine of giants descending from rebellious angels a doctrine of antiquity, but also this belief was upheld by Christianity until the modern era. All such fantastic and or politically incorrect doctrines have been neatly tucked away in theological vaults, so they will not see the light of day again in our so-called season of tolerance and enlightenment.

But does the Bible confirm the preposterous claim of giants? The answer is yes! Most notably, the book of Numbers makes a clear reference to the Nephilim and their size: “… all the people we saw there were of great size. We saw Nephilim there (the descendants of Anak come from Nephilim). We seemed like grasshoppers.”[75] Look for other references to *giants* during the time of Noah in the Apocryphal books of Wisdom, Sirach, and Baruch.[76]

Nelson’s Dictionary states that *Nephilim* translated as *giants* in several Bible translations, including the King James translation. It goes on to state that giants were god-like creatures produced through the union of fallen angels and the daughters of men. *Unger’s Dictionary* defines *Nephilim* as giant demigods, who were considered the sons of angels. Moreover, giants are described by *Unger’s* as those abnormally tall and powerful, who dwelled in the ancient lands of the Bible. Let it be fully understood:

Nephilim, according to the Bible[77] and other source documents, were, indeed, a forgotten race of giants.

The Enochic Book of Giants clearly states the offspring of fallen angels were giants.[78] From the book of Enoch, we read about a fallen angel known as Azazel, who lay with women, who bore giants into the antediluvian world.[79] The *Kebra Negast* also confirms that the offspring of women and angels grew up to be giants, [80] just as the first book of Enoch does.[81] The book of Enoch, too, concluded giants were, indeed, the offspring of the sexual union between human females and *watchers*. Enoch reiterated this conclusion in the second book of the Secrets of Enoch, where *Grigori*, giant angels, produced marvelous, great men that were giants.[82] In *Chronographia*, Syncellus revealed a narrative about *watchers*, who copulated with mortal women to produce giants.[83]

Is it any wonder giants became the ancient world's heroes and men of renown? Nephilim must have quickly gained an amazing reputation among their human rivals, who viewed them with great fear, awe, and wonder. Nephilim would have been the great warriors of their time by virtue of their sheer size and strength. They must have succeeded as leaders of the cities and civilizations. Who could have stood against them? But were they benevolent giants, working for the betterment of all humankind? Or were Nephilim corrupted by their strength and power, blighting the antediluvian age? Before we address these questions, let us first turn to inquire further into the gargantuan Nephilim monsters and the epoch they thrived in.

CHAPTER 4

THE GIANTS OF ANTIQUITY

> *Here in early times the famous giants were born.*
>
> —Baruch 3:26

Nephilim (Anakim) were people who struck fear into the hearts of the average man. Carol Rose describes them as enormous and terrifying giants.[1]

Nephilim were great warriors. They were much taller and much larger than the average Israelite and possessed considerably more strength.[2] But does *giant* refer to just a larger race of humanoid or to a distinct beast that dwarfed humankind? Postdiluvian Israelites described themselves as “mere grasshoppers” compared to Nephilim, known variantly as Anakites. Israelites did not just say the Nephilim were bigger than they were but also that they seemed like insects in their presence![3] This is a startling but graphic comparison. Anakites were considered in biblical legend to be giant demigods: half men and half angels; even their daughters were giants who possessed enormous size and strength.[4] In *Peake’s Commentary on the Bible* (1962 Edition), N. H. Snaith states that the term *Anak* defined a strain of giants that survived the deluge and inhabited the hill country of Palestine before the conquest by Israel.[5]

We must be clear on this point. Nephilim were giants. The Old Testament, the Apocrypha, Josephus, the Gnostic gospels, and a myriad of other sources, all testify to the same. These giants, did indeed have a large impact on the evolution of both the antediluvian and postdiluvian worlds, but before we dig deeper into their legacy in ancient history, let us first quantify just what we mean by *giants* so as to better understand who these monsters were.

Their size was staggering. Goliath—I will later link Goliath to the Nephilim—was affirmed to be over nine feet tall.[6] That would be four feet taller than the average height of a person of that time, or almost twice as tall! Iris Freelander, an ordained minister, who holds hold degrees in psychology and theology, notes that depending on which Bible scholar tells the Goliath narrative, he was anywhere from eight and a half feet to thirteen and a half feet tall.[7] In antiquarian measurements, Goliath's height was six cubits and one span.[8] A cubit was either a common eighteen inches or twenty-one royal inches, while a span was nine inches.[9] This then tallied Goliath's height at nine feet, nine inches on the common measure, but because Goliath was of royal Nephilim bloodlines, one could argue Goliath's true height at eleven feet, three inches. That calculation would align perfectly with an account from the time of Alexander, where a conversation between Midas and Silenus noted Titans grew to twice the size of humans and lived twice as long.[10]

King Og of the Amorites owned a bed that was more than thirteen feet long and six feet wide,[11] requiring him to be at least nine feet tall, and even up to twelve to thirteen feet tall. Og was described in legend as being of such immense size that waters only lapped at his ankles.[12] All of Og's beds and furniture were made from iron, for his weight would crush any furniture made of wood.[13] We can only speculate as to what size some giants may have grown to or even how large the pure original offspring might have been, before they intermingled with humankind, diluting their size and strength throughout the generations. The Genesis giants must have been monsters.

We can only attempt to imagine beings that were nine feet tall or taller, with body weight ranging from 600 to 900 pounds of pure muscle. Nephilim were not just extraordinarily tall like the modern basketball player. Nephilim were built more like the modern football player or the modern WWF wrestler. Fallen ones recorded in *Theogany* by Hesiod (907 B.C.E.) were described as a monstrous race ("fallen ones" translated from Hebrew into Greek is *gigantes*),[14] just as *Nephilim* is translated from

Hebrew into Greek as *giants*.[15] They were bulked by muscle, gifted with strength. Og's height to breadth ratio, as a classic example, was an astonishing two to one, establishing Og as being incredibly broad, for the average human maintains a three to one ratio.[16] Furthermore, Nephilim were fleet of foot and famous for their quickness, dexterity, and adeptness with their hands.[17]

Nephilim inflicted terror with both their height and their breadth. They were powerful beasts, who dressed with armor and weaponry that would force the average man to collapse from the weight.[18] This no doubt left the average man awestruck with amazement and fear, especially when they'd see such feats of strength and the giants sporting their armor into battle and then waging war from underneath it. They were known to have a company of menservants just to carry their armor behind them; the average man could only bear to carry one piece of their armor at a time, thus requiring a harem of servants. Nephilim were fearsome warriors, heroes of old.

Some were described as having six fingers on each hand and six toes on each foot.[19] Similarly, Carol Rose describes Og as having multiple fingers and multiple toes, insinuating that Og possessed more than five of each.[20] The hands and feet must have been intimidating not only from their great size but also from their mutation. Size twenty-five or thirty foot-wear (modern measurements) would not have been unusual. The notion that these giants were a mutated form of humankind is much more than mere speculation. Josephus confirmed the same scenario that the Nephilim possessed an extra finger and toe on each hand and each foot.[21]

One needs to only reason that such large beings must have been designed and bioengineered differently in order to support such size and weight. Unless these beings in fact were engineered differently, they could not have been considered mighty warriors or heroes of old. They would have been considered deformed, uncoordinated, pathetic creatures, deserving more of our sympathy than our respect or fear because of the terrible beasts that they were. Without specifically altered bioengineering, Nephilim would have been nothing more than ancient sideshow freaks.

We look to Josephus once more for rare insights as to whether or not Nephilim were indeed a mutated form of humankind or just mere sideshow freaks. Josephus indicated that the countenances of the giants were entirely unique from normal human anatomy.[22] Nephilim descendants were terrible and surprising to the sight, just as they were fearsome to the hearing. The translation is simply that Nephilim were a very frightening attack on the senses due to their monstrous size and the thunderous strength of their voices. In addition, Nephilim were terrible to look upon, just as their serpentine fathers had been, for they both possessed the face of a viper,[23] a snake.

More importantly, though, Josephus placed into the historical record that even the bone structure of giants was unlike that of normal human beings, which, as I have already underlined, must have been the case for those giants to have supported their great size and weight.[24] Josephus does not indicate exactly what the differences might be, only that they were quite different than those of normal humankind. This completely different Nephilim bone structure may explain why contrived scientific investigations discount fossil bones attributed to giants as possibly (but not conclusively) being assigned to mastodons or mammoths.[25]

Josephus went on to state that the bones of those creatures were kept on public display for all to wonder at. In fact, they were on public display even up to the time of Josephus, which clearly tells us that these anatomical wonders were available to view up to and as late as 70 C.E.[26] Even more startling, living giants were publicly viewed as spectacles and wonders in Rome. Posio and Secundillia, a giant and giantess in the time of Augustus, were both ten feet, three inches tall. Gabbaras, a giant from the time of the reign of Claudius, was nine feet, four inches tall, while a Thracian giant was measured at nine feet tall during the reign of Maximin.[27] Publicly displayed Nephilim bones do not describe what the bones were like, but they do contrast the significant anatomical uniqueness of these bones. The bone structure of those giants must have been a marvel to gaze upon, based not only on their size but also on many other anatomical things as well; at least, we can speculate that this must be the case since they held public attention for so long a period and still confuse modern scientists as to the nature of their fossils.

Indeed, in addition to the Josephus record, giant skeletons have even been confirmed by archaeological recovery, as noted by Charles Sellier, where he quotes Charles Missler, an author and researcher published in more than forty publications. Missler insisted there is absolute, scientific evidence for tribes of giants, confirmed by archaeological recovery of oversized skeletons in Palestine. Missler went on to note tall, fair-skinned

Anakim and Rephaim were memorialized on several Egyptian monuments.[28]

The countenances of Nephilim weave their way throughout the historical record of the Old Testament, appearing and reappearing in various names of peoples. Deuteronomy and Numbers list the many varied names of the Nephilim races in the postdiluvian period:

> I have given the land of Ar to the descendants of Lot as a possession. (The *Emites* used to live there—a people strong and numerous and as tall as the Anakites. Like Anakites, they too were considered *Rephaites,* but the Moabites called them *Emites*).
>
> —Deuteronomy 2:9–11, (emphasis added)

> That too was considered the land of the Rephaites, who used to live there, but the Ammonites called them Zamzummites. They were people strong and numerous, and as tall as the Anakites. The Lord destroyed them from before the Ammonites, who drove them out and settled in their place. The Lord had done the same for the descendants of Esau, who lived in Seir, when he destroyed the Horites from before them. They drove them out and lived in their place to this day. And as for the Avvites who lived in the villages as far as Gaza, the Caphtorites coming out of Caphtor destroyed them and settled in their place.
>
> —Deuteronomy 2:20–23

“We saw Nephilim there (the descendants of Anak come from Nephilim),” states Numbers 13:32. We must conclude then that Nephilim not only survived the flood but also flourished as a distinct race in the early postdiluvian age. Anakite and Rephaite references suggest they were considered the root or surviving giant nations from the flood. Various nations, however, applied their own vernacular names, such as Emites, Zamzummites, Horites, Avvites, and as we will later investigate, possibly even Amorites and Amalekites. The shared scriptural designation among various postdiluvian Nephilim was Rapha. Rapha appears regularly and without coincidence in the David and Goliath story. Rephaim is regularly understood as “ancient giants” in the King James translation.[29]

From further examining postdiluvian Nephilim nations, we can reconstruct an accurate picture of the Nephilim appearance. First let us look to define *Anak*: “long necked, i.e. a giant,”[30] that the sun touched their necks[31] because they were so long, like those of snakes. Zamzummites were noisemakers,[32] which likely accounts for Josephus accounting Nephilim as fearsome to the hearing. Author Frank Joseph describes the godlike giants having voices like Atlas’s, when he bellowed from the depths of his mountain.[33]

Nephilim were believed to have a frightening (snake-like) appearance, just as Josephus and others have stated. They were terrible to behold, just as *emim* translates as “inspiring fear,” and *rephaim* translates as “causing one’s heart to grow weak at a glance.”[34] To be specific, Josephus described the Anak as a famous race of giants that were of such tremendous size, and that their countenance was so completely different compared to humans, that the Anak were extraordinarily surprising, frightening, and terrible to both the senses of sight and hearing.[35]

Nephilim mirrored their fathers, fallen angels, for *watchers* possess the face of a viper[36]—serpents identified as seraphim,[37] employed as liaisons between heaven and earth.[38] Satan took the form of a seraph when he deceived Eve in the Garden of Eden.[39] Serpent-like angels were recorded in the Gnostic gospel Origin of the World, possessing faces that were long and narrow, prominent cheekbones, elongated jawbones, thin lips, and slanted eyes (similar to aliens), while their offspring looked just like them.[40]

In fact, Nephilim and *watchers* were both referred to by the antediluvians as serpents.[41] Unaccounted for long-headed skulls, dating back to the antediluvian epoch, have been unearthed in both Sumer and Egypt, lending further credence to the viper look of the Nephilim. Further, Nephilim eyes were said to have been glowing and solid gold or honey colored, while their skin was white and rough.[42] The mythological antediluvian Titans of Greek lore were originally acknowledged to be born of the gods Gaia and Uranus; the Titans were part human and part serpents,[43] according to Carol Rose, just as they were an interracial specie of human women and seraphim angels. Atlantean Titans were known to have sharp aquiline features, determined mouths, oval heads, with a slight upward slant to their eyes.[44]

Let’s include in this debate the fact that the Egyptian official insignia of kingship for Egypt was the cobra,[45] and the portrayal of serpent-like creatures in antiquity starts to become real. The cobra was unaccountably etched onto the crowns of Egypt from 4000 B.C.E., and perhaps before.[46] Note too, as previously discussed, Egyptian monuments recorded both Anakim and Rephaim as unusually tall and fair-skinned.

Postdiluvian Nephilim are also captured in Canaanite art, which clearly portrays beings with long, serpentine necks, heads like cobras, small mouths and coffee bean eyes.[47] Rephaim, surprisingly enough, crop up often in Canaanite texts, where the appellation translates as “divine beings."[48] We will return many times to the Canaanites in this book, with particular reference to Nephilim and their cult of the bull.

Again, similar images of serpentine beings have been found in ancient monuments from both Egypt and Central America, which ostensibly date back to the antediluvian epoch.[49] These sculptures appear to be images of long-necked and sloped-headed Anakites.

According to biblical scholar and author J. R. Porter, archaeologists have revealed that serpents were widely venerated in Egypt, the Near East cultures, and not least, in Canaan.[50] Similarly, the Ubaid culture of ancient southern Mesopotamia, a culture which Gardner suggests as predating the Sumerian culture, portrayed their gods and goddesses with distinct serpentine facial characteristics.[51] Generally speaking, the Ubaid culture refers to a period of civilization in lower Mesopotamia from 4000–5000 B.C.E., while the Uruk period was classified as 4000–3200 B.C.E., with 3200–2900 B.C.E. being the Jemdat Nasr period.[52] The Jemdat Nasr is the time of the flood.

In this context then, Ninkhursag, goddess of the Sumerian pantheon, was referred to as the "Serpent Lady," just as the shadowy, giant Sumerian demigods, the Anunnaki, were referred to in the Kur-Sag Epic as princes and splendid serpents.[53] In the same spirit, Eve was associated with fertility goddesses of the Near East, where Eve's name somehow derived from or is related to the word *snake,* and Eve was an original serpent goddess of fertility and life.[54]

Inserting a strange anecdote out of archaeology, one finds an unexpected practice that was prevalent among the aristocracies and priesthoods of two seemingly distant and unrelated cultures. The postdiluvian cultures of Central Americans and Scythians from the Tartarus and Transylvania Black Sea region practiced a mysterious ritual of flattening the forehead to represent a receding skull, a viper-like trait. The Scythians believed that such an appearance gave a certain aristocratic distinction.[55]

As for the Central Americans, the practice of flattening the skull was likely an attempt to approximate the image of an early civilized and dominant people,[56] perhaps the Nephilim. Remember, as well, that the Central American culture and religions were oozing with serpentine imagery.

And finally, Ignatius Donnelly, the famous author of one of the oldest and definitive books concerning Atlantis, *Atlantis, The Antediluvian World*, states this: “We have but to compare these lines with the skulls of the Egyptians, Kurds, and the heroic type of heads in the status of the gods of Greece, to see that there was an ancient race marked by a receding forehead.”[57]

Finally, biblical records and legends did record an interesting anecdote regarding the physical attributes of Nephilim at the birth of Noah. Lamech mistook the holy nature of Noah as possessing the startling physical characteristics of baby Nephilim.[58] This was additionally described in the first book of Enoch:

> And after some days my son, Methuselah, took a wife for his son Lamech, and she became pregnant by him and bore him a son. And his body was as white as snow and as red as a rose; the hair of his head as white as wool and his *demdema* [long, curly hair] beautiful; and as for his eyes, when he opened them the whole house glowed like the sun…. And his father, Lamech, was afraid of him and fled and went to Methuselah his father; and he said to him, “I have begotten a strange son. He is not like a human being, but looks like the children of the angels of heaven to me, his form is different and not like us…. It does not seem to me that he is of me, but of angels.”[59]

So, too, did Atlantean giants, according to Frank Joseph, author of *The Destruction of Atlantis*, possess ruddy, white skin, with blond and red hair and glowing eyes.[60] We will learn of other ancient giants that also possessed fair skin and were known as *lucent*, or “shining gods,” and giants such as the Tuatha Denaan and fairy folk from the Ring Lord tradition, whose appearance was identical to the portraits etched into the Egyptian monuments.

In short, the colossal Nephilim were a race of giants that were tall in stature and mighty in size, strength, and dexterity. They were voracious hunters with unending appetites. Their appearance was frightful to the eyes and their sounds harsh to the ears. Nephilim were beasts with long necks and faces like serpents, similar to aliens we now mythologize. They were indeed a mutation onto themselves, a distinct race that partnered with misguided humans to sponsor Snake Brotherhoods that eventually usurped all the governments of the antediluvian age.

CHAPTER 5

THE SCHISM OF ANTEDILUVIAN FREEMASONRY

Cain was then building a city, and he named it after his son Enoch.

—Genesis 4:17

Most of what has been tabled with regard to the introduction of the original pantheistic or pagan religion has been speculation. Therefore, how did this new, heretical, antediluvian religion introduced by Cain's progeny impact the antediluvian epoch?

This spurious religion enforced by Nephilim somehow swept the people into utter rebellion against God the Most High, which led directly to the deluge. *The Encyclopedia Americana* described the giant rebellion as a struggle against the "order of creation," against the gods[1] (God). It is this obscure, ancient, antediluvian mysticism that has been reborn in our generation, to a frightful level of hidden authority and power, breathing new life to The Genesis 6 Conspiracy.

Let us once more fall back to the Legends of the Craft preserved by the Masonic Brotherhood. As we learned in chapter two, the Seven Sacred Sciences taught to Adam by God in Eden were passed onto both Seth and Cain. Cain grew to be a hater of the true God, living in total defiance, rebelling against God, and corrupting, along with his descendants, all the Sacred Sciences.

Cain's posterity polluted these Sacred Sciences with idolatry and mysticism, applying the knowledge for their own impious agendas. It was this corruption of divine knowledge mixed with pantheism that was then intermingled with the offspring of angels, which formed the axis of The Genesis 6 Conspiracy. Nephilim were sprinkled throughout the antediluvian world, with superior size and strength to enforce the new, mystical state religion. Nephilim combined their power with idolatrous pantheism, which left no restrictions on the application of their power, both physical and abstract.

As I mentioned the divine knowledge of the Seven Sciences was passed on to both Cain and Seth. This was the antediluvian split, known as "the Schism of Freemasonry," according to Dr. Oliver and the Oliverian Theory, recognized as the "pure" and the "spurious."[2] This schism of antediluvian Freemasonry can be more easily understood as the wedge splitting monotheism away from spurious, mystical polytheism.

Webster's New Compact Format Dictionary defines *spurious* as "bastard, illegitimate, not genuine, sham, forged, simulating, but essentially different." And this is exactly what took place. Masonry practiced by the descendants of Cain right up until the flood was the bastard form of the divine knowledge, practiced in a manner that simulated the pure form but was intrinsically different at the core. Masonry, as Dr. Oliver continues, was a relic from idolatrous mysteries embedded in the antediluvian schism, descending from the spurious branch of the Seven Sciences.[3]

As the day of the deluge approached, something had to be done by the spurious forces. Again, in the Oliverian theory of the Legend of the Craft, it was the children of Lamech, those curious children whose names found their way into the book of Genesis for no real apparent reason other than their being the inventors of a few innocuous skills and trades (Jabal, Jubal, Tubal-Cain, and Naamah), who preserved and then revitalized the spurious branch.[4] They were not recorded in Scripture for their positive contribution but rather for their sullied influences. They were not heroes to be revered but rather infamous curators of evil.

Their vile legacy was not confined to just the antediluvian age, however. The children of Lamech additionally were credited with preserving the Corrupted Sciences on two pillars designed to survive the deluge so that numinous religions could be transmitted via hieroglyphics to the postdiluvian world to corrupt that age,[5] and thus continuing The Genesis 6

Conspiracy. As we will soon discover, the children of Lamech were very successful in transmitting those heretical doctrines of corruption to the postdiluvian world. Again, this further underscores the legitimacy for Scripture recording Lamech's children by name for their incredulous infamy.

Conversely, Seth's posterity was the righteous branch of Adam's seed. Seth was recorded in the Oliver Legend as only associating with the most virtuous men of his age, known as the sons of light.[6] His posterity remained righteous, uncorrupted by the progeny of Cain, until the seventh generation, during the time of Methuselah, son of Enoch. Seth presided over the Craft until the time of Enoch, when Seth appointed Enoch leader and keeper of the uncorrupted Sacred Sciences.

Enoch, too, was a righteous man, recorded in Scripture as walking with God. Enoch was so righteous that God raptured Enoch to heaven without his suffering the first death.[7] Only two other saints in biblical history were afforded such an honor: Elijah and the disciple Jesus loved.[8] Most Christians believe that the disciple Jesus loved was John, but it is more likely it was Nethanael, even though Gnostics believe it was Mary Magdalene. Nethanael was not included amongst the twelve named apostles although Phillip was (Matthew 10:1-4; Mark 3:13-19; Luke 6:12-16) even though Jesus called Phillip and Nethanael at the same time (John 1:43-51). Nethanael disappears thereafter which seems very odd to me, but one presumes he remained amongst the disciples after be called. Note what Jesus said when He first met Nethanael: "Here is a true Israelite, in whom there is nothing false' (John 1:47); "How do you know me?" Nethanael asked. Jesus answered, "I saw you while you were still under the fig tree before Phillip called you." Then Nethanael declared, [and right from their first meeting and well before Peter acknowledge Jesus as such] "Rabbi, you are the Son of God; you are the King of Israel." (John 1:48-49); "you shall see greater things than that." He then added, "I tell you the truth, you shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending on the Son of Man [implying Nethanael would be present at Jesus' ascension] (John 1:50-51. Then at the last supper: "Peter turned and saw that the disciple Jesus loved was following them. (this was the one who had leaned back against Jesus at the supper and had said, "Lord, who is going to betray you?") When Peter saw him he asked, "Lord what about him?" Jesus answered, "If I want him to remain alive until I return, what is it to you?

You must follow me.” Because of this, the rumor spread among the brothers that this disciple would not die. But Jesus did not say that he would not die; he only said, “If I want him to remain alive until I return what is that to you?” This is the disciple, who testifies to these things and who wrote them down. We know that his testimony is true.” (John 21:2025). All twelve apostles, including Matthias who replaced Judas Iscariot were present at Jesus’s ascension and afterwards when two angels descended and ascended to heaven with Jesus when the heavens opened up to receive Jesus (Acts 1:7-14), but the one praised seemingly beyond the other disciples and called by Jesus from under the fig tree was not named. Odd indeed unless Nethanael is indeed the one Jesus loved.

Whoever it is, though, the person must be male, for he was recorded as “he” in the book of John.[9] Both Elijah and the disciple Jesus loved have been reserved to return to earth during the tribulation to suffer the first death.[10] Only the elect of the saints during the tribulation of the last days will receive the same tribute as Enoch by not suffering the first death; they will be raptured and transformed directly into heaven.[11]

Josephus recorded Seth’s posterity as people who imitated the virtues of Seth, for he was virtuous and of good character.[12] Josephus also recorded, just as the *History of Freemasonry* does, that the posterity of Seth were inventors of the peculiar wisdom of astronomy.[13] Because the progeny of Seth all the way to Noah were all agrarians, knowledge of the planets and seasons was vital to their prosperity. Their specialization may have been very advanced astronomy, but Seth and his descendants were very well versed in all of the other six sciences.[14] This continued until the seventh generation.

The Anderson version of Craft Legend recorded the righteous employment filtered down to the select few who remained loyal to the true God, until eventually there was just one righteous man of his day, Noah[15] The pure brand worked in direct opposition to the polluted variety employed by Cain’s posterity.[16] The pure brand included worshipping and honoring of the true God, with no rites and ceremonies;[17] whereas the spurious brand did not credit God for anything. They worshipped a pantheon of gods inundated with idols, rites, ceremonies, and mysticism. The Oliverian Theory notes Seth’s descendants continued the pure approach, void of so-called sacred but secretive symbols and ceremonies employed by Cain’s branch. Sethians practiced a system of morals and pure religion.[18]

The pure branch survived the deluge through Noah, the last of the Keepers of the antediluvian epoch. It resurfaced immediately following the deluge through Noah’s three sons Ham, Shem, and Japheth, who continued the practice in a more limited manner.[19] Noah, according to Kabbalists, was a wisdom figure who understood the secret Mysteries; he was thought to know the mysteries of the highest angels and of all living things[20] from the Mysteries of wisdom taught to Adam, wisdom that may have been recorded in lost Scriptures called the Book of Light and the Book of Creation.[21]

In the Gnostic gospel The Apocalypse of Adam, Adam passed down to his son, Seth, and his seed, Adam’s heavenly knowledge, despite the so-called attempt of the Creator to destroy humankind through the flood:[22]

> Now then, my son Seth, I will reveal to you the things which those men whom I saw before me at first revealed to me after I have completed the times of this generation and the years of the generation have been accomplished. For rain-showers of the God Almighty will be poured forth so that he might destroy all flesh from the earth by means that which is around them, along with those from the seed of the men who passed the life of knowledge, that came from me and Eve your mother. For they were strangers to him.… And no seed will come from you [Noah] of the men who will not stand in my presence in another glory. Then they will become as the cloud of the great light. Those men will come who have been cast forth from the knowledge of the great Aeons and angels.[23]

And so, we have uncovered the manner in which both the spurious and the pure brands of the heavenly Sciences survived the deluge to impress themselves once more on the postdiluvian world via the pure branch bridging the deluge through Noah and the spurious branch bridged the deluge via the Pillars of Lamech. Only this time, the polluted branch did not marry with the postdiluvian Nephilim with the same degree of success, sparing that epoch from the horrors of the antediluvian age, until the end of this age, our generation. Even so, the Spurious Sciences did marry another disturbing and overlooked force of antiquity at Babel.

Bringing forth all this anecdotal information on the antediluvian religious sciences forms the basic understanding in comprehending the corrupted snake religions and Snake Societies that spawned from the preservation of the heavenly knowledge, which then caused the flood. Revealing the basic forms of mystical pantheism that germinated from the Seven Sacred Sciences is elemental to comprehending the collective impact Enochian mysticism imprints on modern society.

Understand, as well, that the era before the incorporation of the Royal Society, the introduction of modern thought, was a time before religion tolerated what science had to say. This was an indefensible era that was intolerant to new ideas and concepts, even though it was an era loyal to the literal translation of Scripture.

Since the naissance of modern science, theology has been infected with allegorical interpretation. It is this great schism between literal and interpretative translation that divided the literalists of Christianity, the early Christian churches of Jerusalem and then Rome, from the interpretists that formed numinous sects of early Christianity and the mystical, interpretive forces of the modern era, which have worked their way secretly into contemporary Christianity.

The allegorical versus literal interpretation is the modern wedge of The Genesis 6 Conspiracy. In *The Cathars,* Malcolm Lambert describes this schism from the Gnostic perspective in this way:

> … then, at the very moment when Christianity triumphed over multiple competitors to become the state religion of the Rome Empire, the Devil pulled off his most cunning trick, a clique within the Church that insisted on literal translation of the Scriptures—rather than the more allegorical approach favored by Gnostic Christians—seized control and rapidly began to persecute as heretics all those who disagreed with them…. Church Father John Chrysostom (347–407 C.E.), who is indeed known for his ‘literalist’ views, was a ring leader of this clique of early heresy-hunters.[24]

We must now sidestep briefly to investigate an exceptionally puzzling antediluvian patriarch credited with much related to the defining nature of the Sacred Sciences. We need to consider whether or not his application of sciences ought to be considered spurious or pure. This famous patriarch was Enoch, the founder of mysticism and author of several apocryphal books of Scripture.

CHAPTER 6

ENOCH AND HERMES

> *When Enoch had lived 65 years, he became the father of Methuselah. And after he became the father of Methuselah, Enoch walked with God 300 years and had other sons and daughters. Altogether, Enoch lived 365 years. Enoch walked with God; then he was no more, because God took him away.*
>
> —Genesis 5:21–24

There can be no question that Enoch, fifth generation from Seth, keeper of the pure branch of the heavenly Sciences, must be considered an untouchable when considering the sources of the spurious branch.

And mysteriously, it is on the very same ecclesiastical Enoch and his progeny that Freemasonry and the spuriously evolved forms of postdiluvian pantheism also stake their claim.

But if Freemasonry, and its forefathers, the postdiluvian, pantheistic religions, are and were the corrupted branch of the sacred knowledge as I have and will continue to put forward, then how can Freemasonry make such an outlandish claim? Surely, one of the most righteous people of all time could not be associated with the rebellious and perverted branches of religious worship, let alone one of the key instigators causing the flood. Let us then investigate the connections of Enoch to the spurious branch of Freemasonry.

Craft legends overflow with their self-proclaimed evidence declaring Enoch, his forefathers, and his posterity as patriarchs for their ancient society. Quite frankly, Enoch is looked upon as the Craft's legendary founder[1] equally with his descendants, Lamech and the sons and daughters of Lamech.[2] In the sixth generation after Seth, Seth appointed Enoch as his successor as the Keeper of the Craft, celebrated in Freemasonry as the Grand Superintendent. When Enoch resigned his position of authority, he appointed his son Lamech to reign over the government of the Craft. Lamech appointed Noah as Grand Superintendent, who reigned as Overlord of the Craft until the time of the flood.[3]

According to the Orientalists' version, Enoch received a divine gift from God. He subsequently filled thirty volumes with sacred knowledge from heaven. Enoch amassed great knowledge in astronomy; he was an expert in science, geometry, and masonry.[4] Furthermore, Enoch was attributed with perhaps the greatest of all human inventions, for Egyptians attributed him with inventing letters and writing, as do Greeks and Romans.[5] Some even suggest that Enoch was the founder of books and the art of building.[6] The form of writing that Enoch created was, and is, called *hieroglyphics*, translated as "sacred carvings," from Greek *hieras*, meaning "sacred," and *gluphein*, meaning "to carve." This was a picture language, representing objects and geometric symbols. Enoch invented hieroglyphics solely for the intent of preserving and communicating throughout the generations the knowledge of the heavenly sciences. The Jewish writer Bar Hebraeus noted the same about Enoch, who did so while building many cities and teaching others the arts.[7]

Enoch was considered a kind of supreme being; through him humankind was incomprehensibly elevated and placed in communication with God. Enoch was similar to the Greek god Mercury, which is also consistent with Enoch having walked with God.

Thus far, all appears to be correct and compatible with what the Bible recorded concerning Enoch, but once we burrow past this point regarding Freemasonry's historical recollection concerning Enoch, substantive paradoxes begin to coalesce that become irreconcilable with the ecclesiastic Enoch.

Freemason legends unaccountably connect their legendary Enoch to well beyond his time in the antediluvian epoch. This perplexing Enoch was vicariously considered the founder of the Egyptian religion. To the Egyptians, Enoch was renowned alternatively as Hermes. Through Hermes, the Egyptians communicated with the gods, just as Enoch and Mercury did. Hermes was concluded to be an ancient Egyptian priest, who was the inventor of all the sciences, again consistent with the recollection of Enoch. The Egyptian Hermes was also accredited with the writing of 36,525 books on all kinds of knowledge, once more, just as Enoch did. Hermes was additionally enlisted as the patron saint of Alchemists.[8]

Enoch (Hermes) was further reputed to be Taut (Thoth) in other legends, the Egyptian god of science and writing; he was deified by the Egyptians and placed alongside Osiris and Isis in stature. Hermes, synonymous with Thoth, was the mythical counselor to both Osiris and Isis,[9] and surprisingly, he was a moon god.[10] Thoth was the god who identified evil for humankind and the god who provided the remedy to evil. He is believed to have lived around 3000 B.C.E. or before,[11] once again, consistent with the life of Enoch.

Thoth was the keeper of the magical arts that made him the Master of the Gods, the one who revealed all knowledge of the Seven Sacred Sciences and religion to humankind.[12] Thoth was the one who transmitted mystical secrets to his obscure followers, members of a reticent Snake Order we will examine later. Thoth, too, was regarded to be the deity credited with being the god of wisdom, the inventor of letters and writing. Thoth was transformed into a god through wisdom.[13] We know also from other sources that Thoth invented hieroglyphs and was the one who brought science, geometry, and architecture to humankind.[14]

Thoth was further celebrated as the Greek Hermes.[15] The Greeks and Romans identified Hermes with their pantheistic god Mercury.[16] Mercury was the patron deity of learning, the chosen scribe for the plethora of gods. He served as their ordained messenger, again consistent with that of Enoch’s responsibilities. Mercury was the son of Zeus (Jupiter) and Maia;[17] Mercury also was attributed with the invention of writing. In addition, Mercury signed sentences onto the souls of the dead.[18]

Unger's recites a similar version, conceding Hermes was Mercury and that Hermes was the son of the god Zeus and the (Nephilim) daughter of Atlas, a person named Naiad. *Unger's* further claims Hermes wore winged sandals (eerily identical to medical snake motifs), as well as wings on his hat, all the while being a guide for the dead into the underworld.[19]

Even though Enoch was rendered to be Hermes/Thoth among the Egyptians and Mercury was Enoch's appellation among the Greeks, Enoch was also known as Hermes among the Greeks. The Greeks, interestingly enough, identified their Hermes/Mercury with Thoth/Hermes of Egypt, believing he built the pyramids in Egypt.

Adding to Enoch's alternative reputation, the mystical Hebrews, according to Timothy Freke and Peter Gandy, who co-wrote *The Hermetica, The Lost Wisdom of the Pharaohs*, referred to Enoch as Idris.[20] The Phoenicians knew Enoch as Thaut, which is very close to the Egyptian Taut or Thoth, while the Arabians knew Enoch as Edris.

The twelfth-century C.E. Sufi philosopher Yayha Sufrawardi claimed ancient Sages preached a single doctrine of wisdom revealed to Hermes, whom Yahya identified with one unified individual—Idris of the Qur'an, who is Enoch of the Bible.[21] Sufis believe the first of three Hermeses lived during the antediluvian epoch in Upper Egypt; he was skilled in the sciences and was originally identified as Idris, whom the Jews call Enoch.[22] Some conclude that the Qur'an equates Hermes with Idris, the one who lived before the flood (Enoch), while other Islamic scholars also equate Idris with one who lived in Babylon and was mentor to Pythagoras and to another who lived in Alexandria, forming the Trismegistus.[23] This most famous of individuals to so many ancient cultures, seemingly known by many names, appears to be one individual.

There were three beings in Egyptian mythology that held the name *Hermes*, as recorded by Manetho the Egyptian priest and quoted by Syncellus.[24] Hermes Trismegistus implies three greatest Hermeses (thrice). *Trismegistus* means "thrice greatest" because of his knowledge of science.[25] However, in my opinion, this definition could also mean three different individuals known as "Thoth the god," Enoch the antediluvian patriarch, and of course, Hermes the postdiluvian father/priest of the Mysteries. And as it turns out, Hermes, better known as Hermes Trismegistus, was more than just one individual.

The first Hermes Trismegistus lived before the deluge; he invented writing and the stylus, whereby the children of Lamech inscribed the Sacred Sciences onto pillars. Hermes/Thoth/Enoch was worshipped as a god, but he was still a man, a man who wrote secrets on an obelisk for the benefit of future generations because of the impending deluge,[26] and he was also the Enoch who constructed nine hidden vaults to protect the seven spurious sciences from the impending deluge.[27] This was indeed an antediluvian Enoch, but he was not necessarily the ecclesiastic Enoch.

The second Hermes was traditionally thought to be the son of a person called Agathodemon; although, as we will learn in the last chapters, the Gnostics have a completely different twist on which Hermes was called by that name. It was this postdiluvian Hermes of Babel who was believed to have translated the precepts of the first Hermes from the antediluvian epoch from the Pillars of Lamech.

The third Hermes was thought to be synonymous with Thoth, the counselor to Osiris and Isis, the patron god of science and knowledge in the era of Babel. Thoth may or may not have been Hermes/Enoch, for wisdom was said to have transformed the mortal Hermes/Enoch into a god. Secondly, the god-like Thoth may have been a fallen angel who begat an ultra-secret Snake Order, which then corrupted the heavenly knowledge illegally derived, and perhaps Thoth was the fallen angel Azazel. Whichever the case, the third party of Hermes Trismegistus in this version was entrenched in postdiluvian Egyptian mythology and religion.

The latter two Hermeses were fused into the first Hermes, forming the legend known as Trismegistus Hermes in later ages,[28] where Hermes Trismegistus became mythologized as a spiritual guide, or prophet, along the same spirit of Moses, John the Baptist, Mohammed, and Buddha. Further to this, the Greeks named Thoth “Hermes Trismegistus” to distinguish the Egyptian deity from their own Hermes and to honor Thoth’s sublime wisdom.[29]

Sufis believe the antediluvian Idris/Enoch was the first Hermes, while the second Hermes (of Babel) carried the sciences, magic, and alchemy to Memphis after the flood, creating the Egyptian religion. Arabic writers claim that, indeed, there were three separate Hermeses: one who built the Great Pyramids (Thoth, Idris, and Enoch), one who came from Babylon (Babel) and taught Pythagorus, and a third who lived and wrote later in

Egypt regarding alchemy. They believe that the three Hermeses describe the origin and continuity of Hermetic tradition.[30]

Another account has recorded the designation “Hermes Trismegistus” to be the system where Egyptians combined the teachings of Thoth and the Greek god Hermes into Greek writing for its preservation.[31] Finally, Hermes Trismegistus was so named “thrice Hermes,” honoring his accomplishment of being first among men to attain all knowledge and secrets of the gods that he inscribed onto stone tablets with sacred hieroglyphs, which he concealed for future generations.[32] At the end of the day, all are likely true to some extent.

The question that comes to mind is this: How did the name *Enoch* make the transition into “Hermes”? Hermes derives from the name *Hermarynes*. This mythical Hermarynes was recorded in the Legends of the Craft as the son of Cub, who was the son of Shem. However, the Table of Nations does not record Cub as one of Shem’s sons—only Elam, Asshur, Arphaxad, Lud, and Aram are listed.[33] Again, I will reconcile this riddle from Gnosticism in the last chapters. One then begins to ponder whether or not Hermes was, in fact, a postdiluvian Nephilim because of his curious, non-biblical genealogy.

Hermarynes was later called “Harmes,” which later became “Hermes.” Hermarynes was the legendary individual who originally discovered one of the two pillars left by the descendants of Enoch and translated the spurious sciences, teaching the people of Babel the Corrupted Sciences of the antediluvian epoch.[34] Because of this, Hermes was the discoverer of Enoch’s antediluvian knowledge. Hermes and Enoch then became intertwined over time in legend, just as others preserving the knowledge of Enoch and Hermes would later become fused with the same name.

CHAPTER 7

ENOCH THE EVIL

Cain lay with his wife, and she became pregnant and gave birth to Enoch.

—Genesis 4:17

If Hermes translated the spurious branch of masonry from Enoch's pillars, then the antediluvian Enoch must have been the keeper for the spurious branch of the Seven Sacred Sciences. But what evidence is there among the Legends of the Craft to support this notion?

When Enoch imagined writing in the form of hieroglyphics, he unwittingly set in motion the technology that would fuel all of humankind's advances. For without an efficient manner for preserving ideas and advancements and accurately communicating them to others, whether in the current generation or future generations, humankind would be locked in a virtual state of never-ending ignorance, forgetting into oblivion any noteworthy ideas or advances.

As enlightening and significant as this creation was, the motivation for hieroglyphics was not as pure as its results would suggest. Enoch invented writing, according to Mackey, to employ the secretive, sacred symbols, known only to the selected elite, as a vehicle to transmit the sacred truths and Mysteries in a way that was free from discovery by the masses not considered worthy enough to learn about those sacred truths and mysteries.[1]

It was the Mysteries that Enoch was associated with that are of important value.

With hieroglyphs, Enoch recorded all the sciences of the spurious branch into great books, while building nine subterranean vaults to protect the wisdom from the looming deluge. Enoch is even credited by Adrian Gilbert with the building of the Great Pyramids to preserve this corrupted antediluvian knowledge. In addition, Egyptians owe their origins (and hieroglyphics) to Hermes Trismegistus. Furthermore, Hermes was thought to have founded the ancient Egyptian city of Hermopolis,[2] the home of the infamous Great White Brotherhood, which we will discuss in detail later. Enoch was attributed with the building of the first antediluvian ziggurats in Sumeria. Enoch was also renowned in lore to be the first real builder of cities,[3] after the spirit of Cain. Enoch then, was the first Master Mason.

All this suggests that the antediluvian Enoch was the first sponsor of preparation for the deluge. He saved the corrupted ancient knowledge through hieroglyphs and secret storage houses for the spurious knowledge, which were then further enhanced by the children of Lamech and eventually found by Hermes after the flood. The nine hidden vaults were believed to be subterranean vaults stacked one on top of the other, while one of the two famous Pillars of Lamech was manufactured out of marble so that it would never burn and the second out of *laterus*, some type of brick, so that it would not sink. The pillar of brick had inscribed on it the seven spurious sciences, while the pillar of marble had inscribed on it directions to find the nine vaults.[4]

According to the Craft legends, the history of the sciences and their doctrines, along with the arcane rituals and ceremonies of their implementation, were later preserved by the children of Lamech on a brass pillar in hieroglyphs. This was the brick pillar mentioned earlier that contained the Archives of the Masons.[5] Gardner noted that the two pillars were originally known as Mazzebah Stones of *marbyl* for the marble pillar and *latres* for the brick/brass pillar.[6] The latres pillar is thought to have been corrupted somehow in translations in some writings to *laterus* and then reconciled later as *laterite*, red, iron-based clay used for making bricks and road surfaces.[7] Gardner believes that the original nature of latres remains obscure; although, early Masonic tradition presumes it to have been some form of metal.[8] The brick/brass pillar was the pillar Hermarynes discovered at Babel, from which he translated and renewed the practice of the spurious branch of the Sacred Sciences.

Again, from Craft legends, the children of Lamech inscribed the information as to the whereabouts of the nine vaults of knowledge on the marble pillar. The marble pillar was rendered to be, in early Masonic writings, some form of obscure crystalline rock.[9] The information discovered on the marble pillar, of course, is why Hermarynes led the people of Ham back to Egypt after the Babel incident.

According to the Legend of Enoch, Solomon discovered these nine vaults during the excavation of the First Temple.[10] Solomon did in fact excavate and discover antediluvian knowledge, but it is unlikely that this discovery was the original antediluvian knowledge; this Judean version of antediluvian knowledge likely came to be stored in Jerusalem as a secret and sacred relic of the exodus from Egypt. It is reasonable to expect that the original antediluvian knowledge was buried in Egypt, beneath the Great Pyramids, and in either Sumeria, beneath antediluvian ziggurats, or in Britain.

From the sacred hieroglyphs Enoch taught the original mysticism of the Sacred Sciences, complete with secretive, sacred ceremonies and rituals. Freemason Adept Albert Mackey informs us that Enoch was both idolatrous and a worshipper of the sun.[11] It is clear that the branch of the sciences taught by Enoch, according to the Legend of Enoch, was not the pure brand but rather the spurious. The pure branch did not contain any mysticism whatsoever. It did not contain any secret rituals or ceremonies, and it was not kept in dark dungeons, hidden from the believers and followers of God. This reticent religious worship was only practiced by Cain’s descendants and, therefore, was contrary to that of the ecclesiastical Enoch, who was the posterity of Seth.

Enoch (the evil) was then also attributed with implementing the worship of God through religious rites, a pillar of mysticism.[12] The further we unveil the details from the legends of Freemasonry with regard to Enoch, the larger the contradiction becomes between the biblical records of the righteous Enoch and the legend of the numinous Enoch revered by Freemasonry. Yet Freemasonry regards the mystical Enoch as the ecclesiastical Enoch. Strange indeed, unless one considers that Freemasonry truly upholds the doctrine that mysticism is in fact the pure religion and the pure branch of heavenly knowledge that descended from Adam through

Seth and Noah, coupled with the concept that orthodox Christianity and orthodox Judaism are, in fact, equal partners in the evil religion.

Enoch fuses to mysticism when we consider the second definition of the Hebrew name Enoch. Not only can *Enoch* be translated as “consecrated,” which applies perfectly to the biblical Enoch, but also it can be translated as “initiated,” which applies perfectly to the Enoch of Freemasonry.[13] You see, mysticism comes with secret ceremonies to initiate the selected elite into secret societies, thereby preserving the sacred knowledge and truths with the elite, who were known as the *initiates.*

Abbey Robin, who authored *Recherches sur les Initiations Anciennes et Modernes* in 1780, traced the ancient initiations to the virtuous intercessors with the gods, which is certainly how Freemasonry looks upon Enoch.[14] Certainly, Mercury was considered a messenger to the gods that could also be viewed as an intercessor, just as Thoth was viewed as an intercessor with the gods of Egypt. Furthermore, Hermes was the one who transmitted the knowledge of the gods concerning their secret names, weaknesses, and abilities to control the gods to humankind, again suggesting he was an intercessor with the gods. Enoch most certainly was considered as one who interceded with the gods. Finally, Enoch is one of the Craft’s legendary founders who gave humankind the art of building (masonry).[15]

Therefore, the Enoch who invented hieroglyphs was attributed with introducing formalized mysticism that corrupted the antediluvian and postdiluvian worlds. According to the Anderson Theory, Enoch was credited with founding the Craft, no doubt because he was the first to formalize it in written form.[16] Understand then, that masonry, the Seven Liberal Sciences, the additional illicit heavenly knowledge from the fallen angels, and mysticism, in which all this has been cleverly encoded, are all part of the same spurious religion of Enoch, Cain, fallen angels, and Nephilim. It is no wonder that Enoch was held in such high regard by the descendants of the spurious religion of the postdiluvian epoch. Enoch was truly the spurious patron saint, the founding father of mysticism and Freemasonry.

As we draw back the veil from this infamous hero of antiquity, we learn even more about his corruption. The Babylonians affirmed Enoch was an expert on the stars, just as the Enoch of Seth’s lineage would have been an expert in the peculiar wisdom of the stars, as recorded by Josephus and Craft legends. However, the Babylonians stated Enoch used his knowledge of the stars to invent astrology, an obvious perversion of the intended application for astronomy. In The Legend of Enoch, Enoch is the patriarch who discovered the knowledge of the zodiac, which he wrapped into astrology. He also established festivals and sacrifices to the sun during the periods when the luminary began to enter a new zodiacal sign, of which there are, and were, twelve.[17] This is known in occultism as *zodiacal precession*.

Enoch was also associated with the sun and the solar year. *The Mythology of the Hebrews by* Goldziher, a German ethnologist, clearly identifies Enoch with both.[18] Enoch was a sun worshipper, as testified to by his festivals and sacrifices celebrated to the sun during its procession through the zodiac. Hermes collected 36,525 books (the exact number of days in a solar year: 365.25), kept secretly in the temples, just as Enoch wrote his knowledge into 365 secret books stored in subterranean vaults.[19] Enoch lived for 365 years, a solar year, before he ascended to heaven—a solar feature in legend.[20] The worship of the sun was a classic anti-God act by the rebellious Cain lineage and not a violation likely to have been committed by the faithful posterity of Seth and the ecclesiastical Enoch.

No matter how one attempts to reconcile the Enoch of Genesis and the Enoch of Freemasonry, one cannot accomplish it. Therefore, which characterization of Enoch is correct: the one in the Bible or the one in Legends of the Craft? Perhaps both are correct. Perhaps both are describing different individuals of prehistory, even though the Legends of the Craft do not advertise their malevolent misdirection. Could there have been two Enochs who lived at relatively the same time in prehistory? Could one have been from the line of Seth, who upheld the pure branch, while the other was from the lineage of Cain, who upheld the spurious branch, formalizing it into hieroglyphics and mysticism? I believe that this was, indeed, the case.

CHAPTER 8

ROYAL BLOODLINES

This is the written account of Adam’s line. When God created man, he made him in the likeness of God. He created them male and female and blessed them. And when they were created, he called them “man.” When Adam had lived 130 years he had a son in his own likeness, in his own image, and named him Seth.

—Genesis 5:1–3

Unexpectedly, Genesis 5 dutifully underlines two competing factions and possibly two distinct races clearly, if one cares to take note. The passage hints at competing royal bloodlines that were in a continuous battle for legitimacy.

Why is Cain never referred to as a being in the image of Adam in Scripture? Why does the passage first state that God created man in singular, referring to him as “him” and then noting that God created “male and female” together, using the plural? Why does the passage refer to male and female as “them,” blessing them just as the people of day six were blessed? Think of these as two different creations, the creation of Adam and the creation of day six, a notion I will develop.

The passage appears to be bouncing back and forth between the creations of two distinct races—between a singular and a plural creation. Similarly, Genesis 4 notes Cain proceeded to build numerous cities, as did Enoch. For whom were these cities built? In the early years of the Adamic epoch, we are led to believe by standard Christian orthodoxy that only a few souls existed; only a few hundred if they had populated vigorously from both branches. Building numerous cities only makes sense if day six people already existed in great numbers and were subjugated by Cain and his descendants.

Genesis 5:3 then goes on to specifically and mysteriously underline that Seth was a son born in the likeness and image of Adam. One wonders what this means. Seth’s likeness to Adam is likely an intended but unexplained contrast, suggesting differences between the Cainites and the people of day six and the Sethites. This likeness of Seth to Adam hints that perhaps Cain was different somehow from Adam. Seth’s likeness to Adam may also be a reticent reference to the distinct difference between Sethites and Nephilim. I suggest it refers to all three.

Acknowledging the Bible documented distinct genealogies descending from Adam through Cain and Seth, as well as acknowledging the Bible documented an additional race of Nephilim inserted into creation by dark angels, and further opening your thinking to the notion that perhaps Genesis subtly suggests differences in appearance between Cain and Seth are primary principles for discerning: how and why two distinct religious belief systems following two distinct gods emerged. However, this contrarian hypothesis should not be interpreted as a ploy in any way to summarily denigrate or stigmatize any race or people of different skin colors; nor should this contrarian hypothesis in any way be applied to summarily judge or condemn any individuals, or groups of people, simply because they may carry genetic traces of DNA and or bloodlines descending from Cain, Nephilim, or any other race I will refer to in this book. I do not believe the God Most High summarily judges anyone based on genetics; we are all judged in the same equal manner on what we do and what we believe; through our free choice to choose God or not. Nor is it my place to tread on the turf of the Divine to summarily judge, even if I disagree with the actions of others; only God judges. I leave that to Him.

Conversely though, and as a primary principle, we must understand that duplicitous, secretive Snake Brotherhoods and their descending genitive secret societies do disingenuously employ genetic distinctions. Alleged genetic distinctions, in these rival belief systems are reserved for only the rich and powerful; the elite; the Adepts of those secret societies. Therefore I will build upon throughout this book the distinctions the selected elite of secret societies endorse regarding Cain, what they believe are their genetic connections linking them back to Cain and Nephilim, as well as building on the notion that Day 6 and the creation of Adam were two separate events.

Freemasonry believes the antediluvian people were highly advanced in the Seven Sacred Sciences.[1] Freemasons resolutely believe that when humans abandoned their nomadic lifestyle (people of day six, which Cain likely married into), they formed builder associations to erect monuments and buildings to worship their gods, and architecture transformed into an art that demanded exacting science and knowledge.[2]

There has always been the need or belief to link masonry with the holy patriarchs of the antediluvian world. The need to trace masonry's history back to the patriarchs and, in particular, to Adam, was ostensibly a requirement to establish indisputable authority of the knowledge and sacred truths, at least during the Christian era, thereby showing the patriarchs descended from Adam himself, who received the Seven Sacred Sciences from God. One may either debate this from a point of legitimacy or from a diabolical disguise that hides the true source of masonry's knowledge from public and Christian scrutiny.

It is in this zealous endeavor of establishing the genealogy beyond the deluge and back into the antediluvian epoch that the legends and reality become irreconcilable. Fusing the righteous posterity of Seth with the mysticism of masonry becomes so contradictory that it does not remain credible unless one supersedes the Bible, redefining it as being totally corrupted and inaccurate, which is what pagan, pantheistic, Gnostic, and theosophist authorities do. We will explore this allegation in the last half of this book. But it is in fusing Freemason recollections with the historical biblical account of antediluvian patriarchs that we can secure, understand, and rationalize the mystery between the Bible and Freemasonry's legends.

Let us reconstruct the genealogy of Adam to Noah via the Seth branch and compare it to the Cain branch.[3]

Seth Branch	*Cain Branch*
1) Adam	Adam

2) Seth	Cain
3) Enosh	Enoch
4) Kenan	Irad
5) Mahalalel	Mehujael
6) Jared	Methusael
7) Enoch	Lamech
8) Methuselah	Jabel, Jubel, Tubal-Cain, Naamah
9) Lamech	
10) Noah	

Notice how similar *Enosh* is to *Enoch*, *Jared* is to *Irad*, *Mahalalel* to *Mehujael*, and *Methuselah* to *Methusael*. One can argue that these names are essentially the same with the same enunciation. Consider as well that both chronologies contain an *Enoch* and a *Lamech,* the two most important characters in the Freemasonry's take on the origin of their Craft.

Cain's evil Enoch then invented hieroglyphics to ensure the corrupted, sacred knowledge was not lost, and he did so in the first generation after the sons of Adam so as to not lose or corrupt the new doctrines. The difference was only that the line of Cain rewrote the Sacred Sciences with idolatry, pantheism, and mysticism, and the differences needed to be written to ensure the continuity of the new, spurious branch created by Enoch and his father, Cain.

The spurious sciences were then rejuvenated in the days of Lamech, when the spurious branch gained momentum and power through the rise of the notorious Nephilim in the sixth or seventh generation. The children of Lamech then built two pillars and recorded on them with hieroglyphics all the important knowledge of the spurious branch for the postdiluvian world to recover. It is not difficult to see how confusion took hold between the two bloodlines, all while they were charging one another to have been contrived. Perhaps the defenders of the corrupted religion after the rise of Christianity tried to put a face of integrity on their history by associating and disguising themselves among the posterity of Seth and by saving themselves from violent inquisitions from the Roman Church.

Crossover fusing of the two chronologies becomes even more apparent when one looks closer at the details from the legends of Freemasonry. For example, the four children of Lamech, the descendants of Cain, who were noteworthy enough to be recorded in Genesis along with the sciences they invented, were attributed by the legends as founding the Seven Sciences, this according to the Legend of the Craft and the Legend of Lamech's Sons.[4] In addition, the Enoch of mysticism was also known as the third great leader of the Adamites,[5] which could only be possible if Enoch the Evil was son of Cain, son of Adam.

We already know that the children of Lamech did not invent the Seven Sciences, for they came down from God to Adam and then to both Cain and Seth, but that Lamech expanded and evolved the knowledge with the aid of fallen angels. We also know that Cain and his son Enoch thoroughly perverted the Sacred Sciences, committing them to idolatry, pantheism, and mysticism in written form via hieroglyphics. We also know from the Oliver Legend that the children of Lamech ignited a renaissance of the spurious branch of the sacred knowledge, from the written knowledge passed down to them from Enoch, four generations before.[6]

To this end, we further understand that the lineage of Seth was corrupted by the lineage of Cain in the seventh generation, the generation of the Nephilim, likely as a casualty of the spurious renaissance ignited by Lamech, who was also in the seventh generation of Cain, and the intimidation of the scurrilous Nephilim tyranny they partnered with. This likelihood is much more conceivable based on the Genesis account and the Oliver Legend; the children of Lamech simply expanded on the Seven Sciences in partnership with Nephilim and the fallen angels, bringing them into practical everyday life, as they were credited with inventing music, smith craft, weaving, and geometry.

In fact, Lamech's children, indeed, did receive additional and illicit knowledge reserved for only the heavenly realm from fallen, rebellious angels, which further enhanced the spurious Sciences. To the contrived Masonic conclusion, the children of Lamech were thus considered patriarchs of the purported pure branch of antediluvian masonry, but Freemasonry, of course, subversively regards them, or deceptively disguises them, as being descended from the loins of Seth, from the Lamech of Seth and the ecclesiastic Enoch branch. These were the same spurious sons and daughters listed in Genesis under Lamech in the genealogy of Cain. And if this is the case, then the Legends of the Craft were writing of two totally different Enochs.

The first, whom they wish to be fused with, was Enoch of the posterity of Seth, who was so righteous he walked with God and was subsequently transformed to heaven without dying. The second Enoch was the son of Cain, who invented hieroglyphics as part of the villainous master plan to corrupt and preserve the Seven Sacred Sciences as an act of revenge and rebellion against the true God. Freemasonry and its collaborative religions and organizations believe that, in fact, they are the true and pure branches, while Christianity and Judaism are the spurious, corrupted, and evil religions of this world.

It is this evil Enoch that Freemasonry and the mystic religions have based their belief systems upon, and not the ecclesiastic Enoch. It was the evil Enoch and his mystical religion that contributed so much to the cause of the flood catastrophe that Freemason authors Christopher Knight and Robert Lomas actually suggest, no doubt from privileged, inside information, that the evil Enoch's lineage was subversively transferred by Freemasonry to Seth, all to hide (except from the Adepts) their acknowledged connections to the transgressions of Cain and his descendants,[7] just as I have already put forward. Dr. Robert Lomas is a Master Mason,[8] a prolific writer on Freemasonry and its history, and a popular lecturer on Masonic history.[9]

It is only in the Oliver Poem that Freemasonry acknowledges that the progeny of Cain corrupted the sacred knowledge.[10] Dr. Oliver declared the masonry practiced by the posterity of Cain was a schism of the true Freemasonry corrupted by idolatry and mysticism and that modern Freemasonry was a relic of those idolatrous Mysteries.[11] This stance was not looked upon favorably, however, for it fused masonry with the vile lineage of Cain; whereas, masonry prefers to superficially fuse itself with the righteousness of Seth's posterity for a false veil of legitimacy and its own protection.

In fact, Dr. Oliver was forthrightly attacked for this stance. He was declared biased in his approach because he was a clergyman of the Church of England, to which he was subservient to the esprit du corps that sought to bring every opinion under its particular and slanted sectarian view. Dr. Oliver was then said to interpret every allegory as a theologian and not as a philosopher. Freemasonry also charged Dr. Oliver with not basing his conclusions on historical facts but rather on fanciful fictions of legends and lore.[12]

I disagree. I do not see a difference between the Oliver Poem and any of the other legends; they were all based on a combination of historical fact and legend. The only difference, though, is that Dr. Oliver did not confuse the beginnings of masonry with the righteous line of Seth, in which masonry self-deludes all of its lower-level initiates.

It is easy to make confusing and inaccurate deductions, just as the legends have done. Associating the invention of hieroglyphics to the Enoch of the Seth chronology is perfectly understandable. Both the ecclesiastic Enoch and the Lamech of the Cain chronology were the seventh generation, just three generations from the deluge. Placing the ecclesiastic Enoch in the same generation as the Lamech of Cain's chronology makes for an easy fusing of the righteous Enoch to Cain's posterity. If one assigns to the ecclesiastic Enoch the invention of hieroglyphics, one quickly understands how two different legends might arise as to who constructed and wrote upon the pillars of brass and marble.

The Legend of Enoch credited Enoch with this feat, while the Oliver Poem bestowed this dubious honor upon the children of Lamech. However, the Legend of Enoch could not be accurate in attributing to the ecclesiastic Enoch the building of the two pillars, because this Enoch was neither part of the spurious branch, nor did he invent hieroglyphics. Meanwhile, the evil Enoch may have already died by this time, for he was born five full generations before. The Oliver Theory carries much more credibility, since Dr. Oliver attributes the corrupting of the sciences to the posterity of Cain. Furthermore, this is the time-honored doctrine of the Masonic Adepts.

The next indictment intertwining the history of Freemasonry to the chronology of Cain is the notorious seventh generation. Josephus stated that the posterity of Seth remained pure until the seventh generation, when the progeny of Cain began to corrupt the posterity of Seth. Ginzberg acknowledges that in the generation of Methuselah, of the lineage of Seth, the Sethites became corrupted like the Cainites.[13] The Sethites finally capitulated to the tyrannical mysticism and authority of the Nephilim. This, then, was the generation during and immediately following the ascension of the ecclesiastic Enoch to heaven. Lamech and his evil children began a renaissance with the spurious branch of the sacred knowledge in an unholy alliance with Nephilim and fallen angels during this infamous generation. Nephilim arrived on the antediluvian stage in the previous generation, the sixth generation, the generation of Jared, father to the ecclesiastic Enoch.[14]

Biblical legends clearly attribute the generation of Jared as being depraved, due to the influence of the fallen angels and the Nephilim[15] and the influence of the mystical, state-sponsored religion enforced by giants. It was these three Cainite generations—Methusael's, Lamech's, and his children's, supported by the Nephilim and fallen angels—that together polluted and enslaved the entire antediluvian world by force. Through Nephilim, they imposed tyranny, which would eventually bring on judgment by water. The descendants of Cain were so successful, according to Collins, that the Sethites became like the Cainites, entering into marriages with Cainites and producing more mortal giants.[16]

This was how and why four of the many children of Lamech, of the chronology of Cain, found their way into the book of Genesis—because of their great and nefarious individual roles in the corruption of the antediluvian world, which brought upon them the great deluge. These infamous four conspired with the fallen angels to create a super race of sinister giants, armed with the knowledge of the corrupted sciences, in an attempt to completely change the natural order of creation, all against God's will. Thus, the Nephilim were created by Cainites and dark angels to rebel (against God) in what the *Encyclopedia Americana* called a struggle against the order of creation.[17]

Of the princely sons of Lamech, the progeny of Jabel were tent dwellers of Assyria, who in the King List of Khorsabad detailed seventeen kings of Jabel, who reigned in direct opposition to God's intentions. Tubal-Cain was revered as the great Patriarch of the Master Craftsmen, an instructor of every artificer of brass and metal, and regarded in the Craft as the greatest metallurgist.[18] He is the patriarch Freemasonry attributes with inventing agriculture and with the ploughshare.[19] In fact, Tubal-Cain has been recorded in Freemasonry as a Third Degree or Master Freemason, as the instructor of metal artificers from 3500 B.C.E. According to Gardner, Tubal-Cain was recorded as "Tobalkin, the prince of Southern Mesopotamia" and the son of King Akalum/Lamech.[20]

Naamah the Charmer, also known in Sumerian lore as "Nin Pu Abi" and "Queen Shub of Ur," married an Anunnaki[21] (Nephilim). This, then, was the culmination and the inner circle for the foundation of The Genesis 6 Conspiracy. Naamah, according to Jewish legends, married and copulated with Shamdon, producing the giant Asmodeous.[22] All four children were credited, to varying degrees, with beginning the Craft in the world: TubalCain—artificer/smith; Jabal—geometry/freemasonry; Jubal—music; and Naamah—weaving.[23]

A key premise drives this book: *all associated snake organizations and religions, along with Freemasonry, are in a 6,000-year-old, subversive struggle against God and in a 2,000-year-old struggle against Christianity*. Particularly in the last 2,000 years, mysticism in all its various forms was driven underground in the West, for its adherents feared for their lives from a vengeful Christianity and specifically, the Catholic Church. Therefore, spurious forces have taken on the guise of Christianity, but they worship a pantheon of gods in reality.

To this end, one can easily appreciate just why Western, spurious organizations would endeavor to hide their origins within the friendly and righteous patriarchs of Seth, as opposed to the corrupted progeny of Cain, for fear of Christian retribution. They deliberately did so, and continue to do so, to covertly hide their true faith and objectives. And, as I will detail in the last chapters, the spurious forces evidently do adhere secretly to a doctrine linking themselves directly to Cain and all his descendants that the spurious forces say have been illegitimately slandered and maligned by God and all His priests throughout history.[24]

Spurious organizations, according to Gardner, believe the biblical genealogy of Seth in Genesis was contrived by Judeo/Christian conspirators to mimic the (spurious) genealogy of Cain, as a witness supporting their own corrupted and false royal lineage and in an endeavor to dismiss, libel, and cover up the true (spurious) royal descent originating with Cain.[25] In addition, theosophists believe two of Noah’s sons were descendants of Cain. The spurious organizations believe Judeo/Christian organizations virtually copied the Sangreal (royal bloodline) of Cain as a contrived attempt to legitimize themselves and their historical roots. I believe the opposite is true—that the spurious forces have contrived their legitimacy.

What is all important in the segregation of these two royal bloodlines is that each branch followed a different God. This religious polarity between the bloodlines has resonated throughout history and into this prophetic generation. Each competing branch carries its own Messianic promise: the Lamb/ Lion Messiah from Adam, Noah, Abraham, David—Jesus—competing against the Dragon Messiah from Cain, Tubal Cain, Nimrod, and Nephilim.

The Cainites and Nephilim formed various antediluvian royal houses of the Dragon, and they have dominated history through their seditious, evil, and violent activities. The Houses of the Dragon have consistently been aligned in direct opposition to and persecution against the posterity of Seth, Noah, and Abraham. These distinct, competing royal and Messianic bloodlines will collide with unbelievable consequences in the not so distant future, when the world witnesses the mystery of God and the revelations of both competing Messiahs.

CHAPTER 9

ANTEDILUVIAN MASONRY AND THE SEVEN SACRED SCIENCES

Pharaoh then summoned his wise men and sorcerers, and the Egyptian magicians also did the same things by their secret arts; each one drew down his staff and it became a snake.

—Exodus 7:11

Although Freemasons may not consider their organizations to be religious institutions, they are. Because we are employing Masonic source documents to understand ancient religions that ran counter to God's divine revelation, it is important to understand Freemasonry's reticent connection to its ancestors, the curators of mysticism.

It is the contention of Freemasonry that just the Fifth Science of the mystical Seven Sciences, geometry (also known as masonry), is applicable to their modern societies. However, if Freemasonry does, indeed, hold the knowledge of the Fifth Science, is it not logical to assume that they do possess the knowledge of the other Six Sciences? Is it not logical that this knowledge was passed down through the generations, from Hermes, and that it constituted the building blocks for modern mysticism?

In fact, the other sciences were originally founded upon geometry: "It teaches the initiates to measure and ponder all things."[1] And if these are the corrupted, spurious branches of the Seven Sciences, then indeed the Freemasons are practicing a modern form of antediluvian religious idolatry and mysticism, complete with initiates and initiation rituals. Hence, Freemasonry holds within its mystic realms the keys to the Seven Sacred Sciences and the illicit, additional heavenly knowledge. Masonry, the corrupted Seven Sacred Sciences, and mysticism are essentially one, having the same source rooted in antediluvian sedition.

The acceptance of Freemasonry practicing ancient mysticism is, of course, fully recognized in the various Craft Legends, even though the modern Masons are not likely to acknowledge this, at least in the public domain. One must conclude, however, that the select coterie must recognize this. Modern German, British, and French scholars trace Freemasonry back to the mysticism of paganism; they conclude masonry was an offshoot or imitation of the pure branch of the sciences.[2] Even though modern masonry would like to place distance between itself and any form of religion, it cannot. According to William Hutchinson's book *The Spirit of Freemasonry,* Freemasonry was never based on architecture but rather on moral and religious tenets.[3] Hutchinson comments:

> Before the Flood there was a system of religious instruction, which, from the resemblance of its legendary and symbolic character to that of Freemasonry, has been called "antediluvian Masonry" by some authors. This system was preserved by Noah, and after the Deluge was communicated, according to the Legends of the Craft, by him to his immediate descendants. This system was lost at the time of the dispersion of mankind, and corrupted by the Pagans in their Mysteries.[4]

This was, of course, the fate of the pure branch that modern masonry would prefer to disguise it history behind but cannot. The transfer of the spurious branch to the postdiluvian world came about through Hermes, who translated the two pillars carved by the children of Lamech. Even so, it is intriguing to note that even in the history of the pure branch, it, too, fell into paganism and mysticism. Either way, modern masonry cannot avoid its relationship to religion.

Adam first taught the pure brand as a religious system designed to worship and honor the true God, void of rituals and ceremonies. Antediluvian masonry was originally a religious code, leading to the knowledge of the God of nature, according to the "Hutchinsonian Theory."[5]

This was the pure form that passed down to Noah, not the spurious brand of Enoch the Evil and Lamech's children, for what they passed on to the postdiluvian world was steeped in symbols, secrets, secret ceremonies, initiations, and Mysteries.

Let us again read from *The Spirit of Freemasonry:*

> The lessons that had been taught by the antediluvians fell into confusion and oblivion and were corrupted by many peoples, so that the service of the true God, which had been taught in the pure Masonry of the first men, was defiled by idolatry. These secessionists from the Pure Adamic Masonry formed institutions of their own, and degenerated, as the first deviation from the simple worship of the God of nature, into the errors of Sabaism, or the adoration of the Sun, Moon, and stars. They adopted symbols and allegories with which to teach esoterically their false doctrine [the religion of Enoch the Evil].[6]

The origin of modern masonry was built on the spurious form of masonry, which practiced the operative form of the Seven Sacred Sciences and the sun-worshipping religion of mysticism. What we do not know is this: How was it implemented throughout subsequent generations? And how was it inherited by Freemasonry?

We can deduce that it was practiced in a very similar manner as it was in antediluvian times, for God interceded once more, dispersing the people of Babel and confusing their languages so that they could no longer communicate with each other.

The practice of the mystical, idolatrous religion did not miss a beat once Hermes rediscovered it. But after the dispersion of the people of Babel, what happened to the knowledge discovered by Hermes? Again, we will rely on the Freemasonry legends as our source. This was the time of Nimrod, the Tower of Babel, the confusing of the languages, and the dispersing of humankind to the four winds of the earth. It would be remiss to deduce that the spurious masonry had nothing to do with this very famous biblical narrative.

The people that remained in the land of Shinar, where Nimrod and all of his followers built Babel, continued to be governed by Nimrod. The names of these people became known to the world as Akkadians, Assyrians, and Babylonians. After the dispersion, the Seven Liberal Sciences became lost to most of the peoples, save one, the Babylonians. Nimrod and the ancient Babylonians, in the Craft's Anderson Theory, preserved the Seven Sacred Sciences in Shinar.[7]

This should come as no surprise, for as absolute dictator of the postdiluvian age before the dispersion, Nimrod was provided with the knowledge from Hermes and used its power to his own ends. When the dispersion came, Nimrod, who was the grand superintendent of this first postdiluvian Secret Snake Society, naturally maintained, preserved, and continued to apply the corrupt knowledge, even after the dispersion.

The followers of Nimrod, the Chaldeans, were renowned as wise men. They were priests known for their expertise in mathematics, known later as *Magi*, who preserved the sciences.[8] Note again that from the beginnings of the post-dispersion, spurious masonry had a renaissance in a religious environment preserved by pagan priests. Chaldea, or Babylon, was known as the birthplace of postdiluvian knowledge, obviously deriving from the seven corrupted sciences. The Chaldean sages in the Legend of the Craft were remembered as primitive teachers of the Seven Sciences.[9] Not only did the Magi preserve the Seven Sciences but also they nursed them back to prominence so that the Sacred Sciences once more flourished. From Chaldea, the corrupted knowledge was exported to the other countries of the world.[10]

The ancient Babylonians were superseded by the Akkadians and then the Assyrians. Assyrians based their culture, myths, religion, and science on the literature stored on cuneiform tablets created by the ancient Babylonians, who were descendants of Nimrod.[11] Of particular note is that both the sons of Nimrod and their descendants kept the same religion, gods, and mystical ceremonial rituals as those of the antediluvian Sumerians. This was no fluke of history, for the Babylonians had direct access to this antediluvian knowledge from Hermes, Nimrod, and Sumerians that somehow survived the deluge.

The Semitic language belonged to a people from Mesopotamia who settled among surviving Sumerians; *Semites* were agrarians who brought with them their language, agricultural skills, and a basket of other skills for civilization.[12] The Semitic rulers established their kingdoms and languages all at the expense of the Sumerians, according to Thomas Cahill.[13] They also replaced the Sumerian language with Akkadian, a language closely related to Babylonian, Assyrian, and Hebrew,[14] which obviously descended down through Noah and Nimrod. The Mesopotamians further inherited the Sumerian cuneiform writing, mythologies, and belief systems in a seemingly seamless fashion, which is why the *Epic of Gilgamesh* has been found in Sumerian, Akkadian, and other ancient languages.[15]

The Babylonians, Akkadians, and Assyrians continued to practice operative masonry. They built the same ziggurats and repaired the antediluvian Sumerian ziggurats, while keeping alive the antediluvian Sumerian legends. The Akkadians are generally thought by historians to have arrived in the land of Sumer around 2400 B.C.E. or just before. The Akkadians preserved and stored Sumerian cuneiform tablets in the many cities of the empire, such as Nineveh and Calah in the land of Assyria and Babylon and Erech in Shinar, cities that Nimrod built.

Freemasons believe the Corrupted Sciences were exported from Babylon and Assyria to Egypt first. Freemason legends recorded two possible means of export: one that endeavors to support the legitimacy of modern masonry with a pure legend and the more likely spurious legend. It seems clear to me that the knowledge exported to the nations of the world is steeped in mysticism. This suggests to me the spurious legend is likely the more accurate legend, and perhaps, the pure version was overlaid atop the spurious version sometime later.

As pure legend goes, Abraham and his cohort, Euclid, carried masonry to Egypt. In the Genesis account concerning Abraham going to Egypt, there is, of course, no mention of this transfer of divine knowledge or any mention of Euclid.[16] Laurence Gardner further notes that the Cooke Manuscript somehow confused Euclid's lifeline with that of Abraham's, since Abraham and Euclid lived 1,700 years apart, when the Cooke Manuscript (erroneously) endeavored to elucidate how geometry and masonry were synonymous crafts in ancient Egypt.[17] However, Josephus does interject that Abraham evidently did teach the Egyptians the sciences of arithmetic and astronomy, for the Egyptians were void of this knowledge before Abraham taught them.[18] In fact, another legend from 150 B.C.E., recorded by a Jewish writer named Eupolemus, wrote (in error) that Abraham actually invented astrology before he traveled to Egypt.[19] Abraham evidently did not teach the balance of the pure Sacred Sciences to the Egyptians.

As the Legend of the Craft goes, Shem, son of Noah, remained in the land of Ur, in the land of the Chaldeans, after the various peoples were dispersed. Shem then taught the pure form of the Seven Sciences he had learned from his father, Noah, to his progeny Peleg, Serug, Nahor, Terah, and Abraham.[20] That he did so is quite possible based on Shem being recorded as living some 400 years after the flood. The total years from the birth of Arphaxad to the birth of Abraham were 292.[21] The legends denoting that Shem taught mysticism to his descendants and created a special order, in particular with respect to Abraham, are likely the ties that entice mysticism to confuse Shem with Melchizedek.

Two Craft legends, the Legend of Euclid and The Tower of Babel, both noted that the Seven Liberal Sciences were taught to the Egyptians because Egypt was inundated with so many sons and daughters who had nothing to do. The knowledge of the sciences allowed those unemployed Egyptians to make an honest living.[22] Paul Naudon, author of *The Secret History of Freemasonry* and a noted Freemason, clarifies this legend by noting Abraham and Euclid taught only the Egyptian nobility geometry, for it was the nobility who had produced great numbers with nothing to do.[23] Thus, the Egyptian nobility constructed churches, towers, castles, and all kinds of buildings from stone.[24]

The alternative, spurious legend, from the Craft's Anderson Legend and The Cooke Manuscript, states that the Corrupted Sciences were transported to Egypt at an earlier point in time.[25] This occurred almost at the outset of Egyptian colonization. The father of Egyptians, Mizraim, the son of Ham, son of Noah, carried the knowledge to Egypt; *Mizraim* is the alternative name for Egypt.[26]

Although Egypt's colonization would only predate the legend of Abraham by a few hundred years, accepting the notion that the Corrupted Sciences were transported to Egypt in some way before seems more plausible, simply because the Egyptian culture seems to have been born with its mystical religion. In addition, Egypt's civilization appears to have sprung instantly to life with spontaneous knowledge and technology. Freemasonry believes the Egyptian culture and civilization did not develop instantaneously on its own; rather, according to Legends of the Craft, the Egyptians developed their advanced civilization and achievements from the knowledge obtained from the Pillars of Lamech,[27] likely taken to Egypt with Ham, Hermes, and Mizraim after the Babel dispersion. Whichever the method, the Egyptian civilization was the first one to receive the corrupted knowledge after the Chaldeans.

The closeness of the Egyptians to the Hermes cult would suggest a close tie to the times of Babel and Hermes. Remember, the postdiluvian Hermes was reputed to be Thoth, the deified counselor to Osiris and Isis, two of the founding gods of the Egyptian religion. Hermes was further lavished with the honor of founding the Egyptian religion. He was an Egyptian priest of the highest order, who was considered the inventor of the sciences, of which 36,525 books of his knowledge, known as *religious encyclopedias*, were stored in the temples of Egypt. It was Hermes who elevated the Egyptians to speak with the gods.[28]

It makes much more sense that Hermes, the discoverer and translator of the Pillars of Lamech, traveled with Ham, Mizraim, and Mizraim's people, the Egyptians, to the land of Egypt, to the antediluvian home of the "first time" Egyptians who built the pyramids, once God confused the languages and dispersed the peoples from Babel. Remember, the second Pillar of Lamech contained directions to the location of Enoch's nine vaults buried at the foot of the pyramids. Hermes escaping to Egypt with Ham, Mizraim, and the Seven Sacred Sciences provides the solution as to how Hermes founded the Egyptian religion. He was the councilor to both the initial Egyptian gods and the Pharaohs, while also solving the mystery to the immediate and great rise to the Egyptian civilization. This further explains how hieroglyphics found their way into the hands of the Egyptians. It was Hermes who decoded the hieroglyphics for Nimrod at Babel. Hermes then took the ancient form of writing with him to Egypt.

From Egypt, the new religious cloak draped over the Corrupted Sciences was transferred to the Greeks and Romans, and to many other nations of the Mediterranean. Osiris and Isis were used as the model for the other pagan nations; Demeter and Dionysus were their Greek counterparts. According to Mackey, the personality of Osiris was best known among the ancients in an epigram of Ausonius; where the Egyptians called him *Osiris*, the Greeks of Eleusis called him *Bacchus*, the Mysians of Asia Minor referred to him as *Phanoesus* or *Apollo*, the Indians named him *Dionysus*, the Romans knew him as *Liber*, while the Arabians called him *Adonis*.[29]

The spread of this form of mysticism was not limited to just the Mediterranean. According to the Craft Legends, one must conclude that all the pantheistic religions grew out of the spurious form of masonry, either from the Chaldeans or the Egyptians. Furthermore, the religious doctrine of all the pantheistic religions is essentially the same. Alford wrote concerning the Mysteries of Egypt, India, Greece, and Rome, which were believed all to be founded on the same sun god allegories[30] (from Enoch the Evil's sun worshipping mysticism).

Included in the spurious Masonry honor role, although modern Masons view them as pure Masons, are the Chaldeans, Magi, soothsayers, and astrologers of Babylon. The spurious honor roll further includes the priests of Egypt, the Greek and Roman philosophers, the Brahmins and the gymnosophists of India, and the Druids and bards of both Briton and Gaul. Modern Masons attribute the great discoveries in astronomy, chemistry, and mechanics to these various religious groups, due to their disciplines in the alleged pure science.[31] This esteemed list of numinous curators co-opted their corrupted knowledge to spin off all the pantheistic religions and spurious sciences of times past and present, inclusive of the alchemy influence, an offshoot of masonry, which adopted Hermes as its patron saint.

So how does the founding of polytheist religions relate to modern masonry? Well, Dr. Oliver stated that modern masonry is a relic of the idolatrous Mysteries. Modern German, British, and French scholars traced masonry back to the mysteries of paganism, finding it was polluted with idolatry. Modern masonry derived its murky initiation ceremonies from pagan mysticism. It is nothing more than an Egyptian religion.[32] And finally, as you will recall, modern Freemasonry is not based in architecture or geometry, but it is immersed in the moral and spiritual tenets and ceremonial rituals.

Modern Freemasonry is not just a benevolent, philosophical movement. It is not merely a benign institution, where members are taught to develop their character and altruistic instincts through a series of catechisms and ritual dramas.[33] Quite frankly, Freemasonry is the very same ghostly belief system that caused the deluge. It is the same shadowy Snake Brotherhood that will once more bring about global catastrophe, only this time by fire, at Armageddon.

CHAPTER 10

ENOCHIAN MYSTICISM

You have trusted in your wickedness and have said, "No one sees me." Your wisdom and knowledge mislead you when you say to yourself, "I am, and there is none besides me"…. All the council you have received has only worn you out! Let your astrologers come forward, those stargazers, who make predictions month by month.

—Isaiah 47:10, 13

What is intended by the Masonic cloak-and-dagger ceremonies, their arcane rituals, and their surreptitious initiations? Why are there two sides to this clandestine brotherhood—one for the elite and one for the mundane masses? Why was and still is there a necessity for secret Snake Societies?

As with all of these stealthy forms of religion, the true face is always hidden beneath a veil of mystery and lies. Specious societies and religions are always reinforced with ceremonial rituals, some secret and some for public consumption. We have already read that Enoch, son of Cain, first introduced ceremonies, rituals, secret allegories, and other mysticism into the pure antediluvian masonry.

Enoch the Evil consequently changed the order of access to the holy knowledge by establishing selected elite to garner and preserve it. Enoch the Evil was alternatively recorded as *Uanna*, the great Mesopotamian sage who traveled with the Anunnaki/Nephilim and was one of the Shadowy Seven (Snake) Sages,[1] one of the builder gods that we will speak of later, who helped transfer antediluvian knowledge to the postdiluvian epoch.

Hermes partnered with Nimrod, king of all humankind at that point in time, sparking a renaissance of mysticism in the early postdiluvian age that was both spiritual and visibly physical in its application. Please appreciate that the York and Anderson legends credit Nimrod with establishing and enforcing the first constitution for the renewed postdiluvian mysticism.[2] Both Nimrod and his people, the descendants of Ham, along with the descendants of Japheth, were bestowed by later writers with the responsibility of completely corrupting the already Corrupted Sciences. The sons of Noah rebelled against God, filling the spurious form of Masonry with a comprehensive and secret system of rituals known as “the Mysteries.” Craft legends recorded that the Chaldeans and Magi later propagated this altered form of mysticism after the dispersion,[3] which was then exported to Egypt and then the balance of the known world.

This line of thinking does remain consistent with the other legends recorded in Freemasonry, providing one observes the information in the correct scriptural perspective derived from the Table of Nations, the historical records from Adam to Abraham recorded in 1 Chronicles 1 and Genesis 10. Nimrod descended from Cush, a son of Ham, along with Mizraim, Put, and Canaan. Mizraim was the forefather of the Egyptians, while Put was the founder of the Algerians, Libyans, and other North Africans. Cush not only fathered Nimrod and his descendants, the Akkadians, Assyrians, and Babylonians, but also other descendants, from Cush who migrated to Africa, intermixing with the Black African nations.[4]

The confusing Canaanite clans, of course, were the forerunners of the people of Tyre, the Hittites, the Amorites, the Jebusites, the Sidonites, the Hivites, and others of the Palestine region.[5] The Amorite confederacy included seven different Canaanite nations that occupied the Covenanted Land.[6] The Canaanite clans scattered, claiming the lands from Sidon toward Gerar as far as Gaza and then toward Sodom and Gomorrah, Admah, and Zeboiim, as far as Lasha.[7] All of the descendants of Ham became ardent advocates of the mystic religions before the advent of Islam. The descendants of Ham, not coincidently, also became the archenemies of Israel.

Japheth was the seed for most of the northern Mediterranean societies of antiquity, stretching into the Celtic-dominated lands of Europe. Included in the descendants of Japheth were the Greeks and Romans, who along with all the other descendants of Japheth also eagerly supported and nurtured disparate forms of mystical religions, all based on the model designed in Egypt by Hermes. Specifically, the Romans were the Kittim, son of Javan, son of Japheth; Romans were part of the sons of Javan that first migrated to Cyprus as the maritime peoples.[8] Magog, too, was a descendant of Japheth,[9] a character that played a prominent role in founding the Celts, Galatians, Gauls, Trojans, Sarmatians, and the Scythians.

It is the Hermes form of mysticism that is referred to when modern masonry is stated to be rooted in pagan Mysteries that include religious rituals and ceremonies. Those rituals and ceremonies included secret worship that was branded as the Mysteries or mysticism. Craft legends demonstrate that Freemasonry believes mysticism was thought to have been invented in Egypt,[10] but this is simple confusion. Hermes first invented the renewed form of mysticism at Babel and then carried it off with him to Egypt, where it took on a slightly different style of mysticism than that of the Chaldeans, but Hermes was the father of both.

Egyptian mysticism was famous for its secret ceremonies and rituals that were designed to teach doctrines to lead believers into Sabaism, the worshipping of the sun, moon, and stars, the religion of Enoch the Evil. The secret doctrines, knowledge, and gods were known only by the Secret Snake Order. Romans and Greeks did exactly the same.[11] This was very common in all the polytheistic religions from those in India to the Druids.

Druids cultivated arcane knowledge and sacred wisdom; they were central to their Celtic education.[12] Druid is thought to have derived from *dar*, meaning "oak," and *uid*, meaning "hidden,[13] concealed, secret, or illicit knowledge from creation." Like Hermes, Druids interceded as religious officials between this world and the gods; they received and held knowledge of the past, present, and future, acting as guardians for the Celtic tradition and knowledge.[14] This is the reason Dr. Oliver states that masonry was engaged in communicating abstruse doctrines of religion and philosophy.[15]

Secrecy was the key to those religions. Secret worship was called *mysticism*. Religious truths were, and are, concealed within the secret rituals and ceremonies, guarding them from common inspection. They were, and are, only taught in secret societies, known only to the initiates. Not only was secretive knowledge taught within the confines of these secret societies, the elite would also worship in secret, separate from the lower-level initiates, with even more secretive rituals to the pantheon of gods that sponsored those corrupt religions. The secrets were required to be housed in secret societies to teach only the elite, for the knowledge contained within the heart of the religion was considered improper to be taught to, or known by, the masses or lower initiates.[16] Secret societies, and societies within societies, were, and are, Enoch's ancient style of mysticism.

There were, of course, distinct degrees of deception. The Lesser Mysteries could be revealed without fear of incrimination, through public ceremonies and rituals immersed in allegories. As for the Greater Mysteries, these were forbidden to be written down or disclosed in any form to the mundane masses. In this spirit, then, Alan Alford writes that the true secrets nurtured by numinous societies have never been fully divulged, a comment that one can apply to modern Freemasonry and modern mysticism. Alford notes that initiates were sworn to secrecy, just as they are today in Freemasonry and all of their associated organizations, under the threat of their life should they divulge any portion of the Greater Mysteries to the vulgar, uninitiated masses. Alford further adds that only at the final level of initiation, the Third Level of Perfection, or at the Thirty-Third Level of Freemasonry, is the "Secret of Secrets" revealed, which would not only astound the initiate but also is believed in legend to be of such earth-shattering meaning that its revelation would overturn any preconceived opinions.[17]

A requisite for secrecy and Mysteries brimming with unbridled knowledge was the attraction these tantalizing groups garnered. These secret societies played upon the curiosity of their prey, luring the privileged elite, deemed worthy to join those societies. This is how it works today with modern Freemasonry: one must be judged worthy to be invited, or sponsored, to join their clandestine ranks.[18] Such is the way of secret societies and elitist groups in general, for they consider themselves to be superior to the average human being. This hubris is yet another foundation stone in The Genesis 6 Conspiracy.

Just to be clear, Enochian pantheism that Freemasonry is anchored in is a doctrine denying the personality of God, while worshipping gods of different creeds. Pantheism depersonalizes God to a universal life force, to an impersonal energy.[19] This universal life force is pure energy and believed to be the father of creation, allegorized as God, Buddha, the Force, Yahweh, and others; it is the singularity and the unicity point that sparked the Big Bang.[20] Pantheism, according to Webster, is derived from the root word *pantheon*, defined as "a temple of all gods, and as a complete mythology." The word *pantheon* is derived from two Greek words: *pan*, meaning all, and *theos*, meaning god(s).[21] Pantheism is not compatible with monotheistic religions.

The Bible does not state definitively that fallen angels, and likely many demons (immortal spirits of the original Nephilim), are the false gods worshipped in pagan and pantheistic religions. The Qur'an does state that postdiluvian disbelievers did, however, rebelliously reestablish alleged equals to God in their new religions, ignoring how many generations had just been destroyed before them by the flood for worshipping idols and false gods.[22] The Qur'an further notes: "On the day He gathers them all together, He will say to the angels, 'Was it you these people worshipped?' They will reply: 'they worshipped the Jinn—most of them believed in them.'"[23]

The Qur'an is very clear not to establish any being, no matter how powerful, to be the equal to God, the partner of God, or the female sexual partner of God,[24] for there is no such being or possibility of a being as powerful and omnipotent as God. God neither takes wives, nor any form of female counterparts, nor does God procreate sexual offspring of any kind;[25] God merely speaks, and it is.[26] Only those who will burn in the hell fire—fallen angels, Jinn, demons, and those who follow them, claim that God has kinship with the Jinn and or with fallen angels.[27]

The *Jinn* are beings made from smokeless fire before Adam; these are the beings in paganism set up as equals to God, even though God created them.[28] The Qur'an is likely referring to beings noted in the Bible as servants/angels that are flames of fire, while the winds are His messengers/angels. (Psalm 104: 4 and note a and Hebrew 1:7). The Jinn are unseen and evil beings assigned to every prophet/messenger by God[29] to keep them humble. The objective of the Jinn, as permitted by God, is to seduce great numbers of humans away from God so that they will be judged with the hell fires.[30] Jinn can no longer enter heaven, which is protected from the Jinn by stern guards equipped with powerful shooting stars;[31] the Jinn are unrighteous beings that did not believe God would create a resurrection for humankind.[32] It seems clear then that the Qur'an distinguishes fallen angels from loyal angels as being Jinn, and thus demons/Nephilim were the sons of Jinn, the likely root for genie. In fact, Iblis/Satan is referred to as Jinn, as well as one of the false gods of paganism.[33] However, it is possible that Jinn may include the offspring of angels that may have mated with other angels to create a lower god, similar to demons.

The term *mysticism* and its genitive religious words were derived from the word *mystic* and are defined by *Webster's* in these ways:

- relating to or containing mystery: involving a sacred or secret meaning revealed only to a spiritually enlightened mind;
- one who seeks for direct intercourse with God in elevated religious feeling or ecstasy;
- mystically and mysticism: the doctrine of the mystics, in an effort to attain direct spiritual communion with God;
- mystify: to make mysterious, obscure, or secret: to puzzle;
- mystique: a set of beliefs or attitudes developing around an object, or associated with a particular group or "cult."[34]

The Mysteries were created to both conceal and teach the initiated two great truths, along with the secrets to the Seven Sacred Sciences and other illicit knowledge from heaven, which had to be kept secret from the masses. The two great truths were (1) the unity of God and (2) the immortality of the soul in a future life. The translations of the two truths are very simple and consistent with the definition of pantheism and mysticism.

The first truth, the unity of God, represented by the All-Seeing Eye or the Eye of Osiris, pictured prominently on the American one-dollar bill, atop a great pyramid, is the nonpersonal, universal life force and not a single entity, omnipotent God proclaimed by monotheistic religions.[35] The All-Seeing Eye, however, known also as the allegorical sun god, is merely a symbol for the creator, the hidden god, the Architect of Heaven and Earth.[36]

This is the secret that supposedly changes all preconceived minds alongside the illicit knowledge from heaven.

The second truth, immortality of the soul, is commonly known as *reincarnation.* The individual is on an evolutionary path to godhood, where eventually, that person, too, will join the pantheon of gods. These principles were a common theme in all the mystical, pantheistic religions, from Hinduism to Celtic mysticism. The death of Osiris symbolized his change from mortal king to an immortal god—this is the allegory of the doctrine of future life.[37] The initiate was provided with all the secrets necessary to navigate the netherworld of death so that he, too, would secure a blissful afterlife, culminating rebirth;[38] certainly, a secret worthy enough to keep from the mundane masses!

The mystical religions generally break the earthly, spiritual evolution of the initiate into three parts, known as *degrees.* The Third Degree is the level of spiritual evolution known as *perfection,* where all the Mysteries have been revealed and completed and the Secret of Secrets is revealed. The initiate only learns more of the sacred truths as he climbs the spiritual ziggurat, the secret society. Some subdivide the three levels, or degrees, into many more degrees or levels, such as the Scottish branch of modern Freemasonry, in which there are thirty-three degrees, but essentially the three degrees remain intact, just as the English Rite of Freemasonry maintains the three degrees to perfection.

Appreciating that the sacred knowledge is withheld within secret societies, one should not regard the sacred knowledge being encoded as surprising. The manner in which the knowledge was, and is, concealed was through symbols, allegories, metaphors, figures, and enigmas.[39] These various forms of allegories encrypted in secret rituals were taught under the banner of the Mysteries. Essentially, the secret ceremonies and rituals were created for the maintenance and teaching of the truths to the initiates, through their encryption into the various allegorical rituals. The purpose of employing the allegories was to conceal the truths from those undeserving, the mundane masses, while allowing the deserving to decode and understand the truths: Legominism. Legominism is the occult practice of concealing the truth within the superficial text or symbols in art, which are only understood by those within the Craft, symbols such as those in Holy Grail literature, in many of Da Vinci’s paintings (especially *The Last Supper*), and the obscure symbols in Freemasonry.

The discriminating style of mysticism and its initiation was by design, according to Craft records. The secret societies protected themselves from the masses through the secret rituals and allegories, in which initiation was completed en route to perfection and godhood was sure to follow. The initiated believed they were protecting the sacred knowledge from those not deserving, which were usually the poor. They believed, according to Freemason legends, that it was improper to teach the masses the sacred knowledge; therefore, secrecy was a must.[40] This was how the ritualistic style of the Mysteries sprang up around the corrupted knowledge from heaven.

Hence, Nimrod was the first Grand Master, who framed the first constitution of the Masons. The Anderson and York legends support the Craft first establishing appropriate laws under Nimrod at Babel.[41] The postdiluvian Mysteries were, however, based entirely upon the antediluvian Mysteries that were etched in hieroglyphic writings invented by Enoch.[42]

One should expect the joint efforts of all mystical religions and organizations of our modern age to put forward an all-out, united effort in the not so distant future to rekindle the rebellion against God that first took place at the time of Noah and then again at the time of Nimrod and the Tower of Babel. This harmonious convergence will combine with the so-called secular institutions of government, known as the New World Order, when world government will be the cornerstone of humankind’s survival and evolution into godhood. Secular institutions supporting world government, in which Freemasons are an integral part, will then partner with a new global pantheistic religion, bringing all the religions and government under one umbrella, just as it was in the time of Nephilim and Nimrod, reincarnating the original Genesis 6 Conspiracy.

The proposed future global religion will be the same mystical religion of ages past. Only the elitist initiates will be privileged to know the real doctrines at the core. For the public, a pastoral form of polytheism will be promoted, just as public worship in antiquity was based on superstitious polytheism. Once more, there will be a public form of worship, complete with the Lesser Mysteries, where all gods are welcomed, and then there is the private or secret form, known as the Greater Mysteries,[43] which is reserved only for the Adepts.

Each pagan god of antiquity had secret worship paid unto them, just as they will in the future, as well as the public form of worship that was, and will be, designed to hide from the public the true gods worshipped—Satan and his rebellious angels. Secrecy in the future will once more be a must, just like it was in antiquity, for if the general public, past, present, and future, understood whom the true gods were, are, and will be, that they are worshipping, they, of course, would not worship them. It is the ultimate deception to lure humankind away from the true God.

The delusion comes in all forms, just as it did in the past. To provide an example is not all too difficult. Remember, the corruption of the sacred knowledge is designed to lure and deceive people away from the true God and into worshipping Satan and the fallen, rebellious angels.

The Seventh Sacred Science is acknowledged to be astronomy. The corruption of astronomy led to astrology, the study of the positions and the motions of the heavenly bodies to determine their (supposed) influence on the fate of men.[44] It is the corrupted offshoot of the pure form of astronomy.

Similarly, the other six Sacred Sciences were corrupted in the same manner. Astrology is a derivative of the word *astrologers* that appears in Isaiah, where Babylonians are associated with stargazers, who were powerless astrologers and monthly prognosticators.[45] Astrology was also noted as being associated with magicians, sorcerers, Chaldeans, wise men, and soothsayers. Astrology also has a connection with the wise men, or Magi, who saw the star of Jesus and may have been a cult of astrologers. Babylonia closely related stars with gods to stress their impact on human affairs.[46] In fact, the sign used by Babylonians to distinguish a god's name was the sign of a star.

Going to the stars for guidance was considered the same as idolatry to biblical writers; the prophet Samuel equated the two in his denunciation of Saul.[47] Astrology assumes that the true God does not control history but that history is governed by pagan gods revealed in the movement of planets.

Freemasons believe that astrologers were committed to truth and enlightenment, just as the Magi and soothsayers were, along with the Brahmins, druids, and philosophers of the Greeks and Romans.[48] Clearly, Scripture considers astrology to be the corrupted form of astronomy, just as Freemasonry upholds astrology as an extension of the pure form of the sciences. Now, Enoch discovered the zodiac,[49] from which astrology is based. Enoch is also attributed by Craft legends as being the originator of the worship of the stars with religious rites. He initiated festivals and sacrifices to the sun at periods when the sun entered each of the zodiacal signs.

Although astrology today is not taken seriously by a great number of people, many today still ponder over it and wonder. There are a select number of powerful potentates who do take astrology very seriously, living their lives around it and infecting as many as possible with it. Astrology will become even more popular as time goes on; it is a deceiving force used to lead humans away from God. Astrology is pantheism for the public consumption of the Lesser Mysteries, leading people to the stars and false gods associated with those stars. It is idolatry designed to coax people into placing their faith in the stars (gods), instead of placing their faith in God. It is the denial of the power of the true God and the recognition of the false power of Satan and his fallen angels.

Freemasonry, theosophy, Gnosticism, New Age beliefs, and mysticism are the contemporary purveyors of the antediluvian seditions. The end times will be marked with numerous numinous signs in the night skies. Astronomical signs will be drafted by the astrologers of the mystical occult forces to deceive the naïve masses of the world so that the spurious forces can incite rebellion against God, thus leading to the judgment by fire.[50]

Astrology and mysticism formed the rival antediluvian religion of Enoch the Evil in its purest sense; it was imposed through state-sponsored tyranny upon the antediluvian world. This epoch was steeped in corruption, idolatry, mysticism, and pantheism. Mysticism was created by the posterity of Cain through the sponsorship of fallen angels, and it was passed on to the Nephilim to terrorize humankind of that epoch. Cainites, mysticism, and the Nephilim were the three-part axis of evil sponsored by fallen angels. This ancient axis of evil brought the antediluvian age to its knees through rebellion, which ultimately brought the deluge upon their cryptic civilizations.

CHAPTER 11

THE GREAT DELUGE

Now the earth was corrupt in God’s sight and was full of violence. God saw how corrupt the earth had become, for all the people on the earth had corrupted their ways. So God said to Noah. “I am going to put an end to all people, for the earth is filled with violence because of them. I am surely going to destroy both them and the earth.”

—Genesis 6:11–13

The Nephilim imprint on history and the flood has been completely ignored, overlooked, or perhaps deliberately kept from common knowledge throughout the modern era.

God separated out Noah in the days leading up to the flood and selected him for the purity of his Adamite lineage, free from Cainite, day six, and Nephilim bloodlines. He further selected him due to his purity from evil and corruption and complete loyalty to the true God.

Noah and his family were the only Adamites among humankind that God deemed worthy enough to regenerate the earth after the flood, providing humankind with a second chance. So then, how could all the other descendants of Adam have become so corrupt in such a short period of time, when their roots were so solidly planted with the rule of God? What impact did the Nephilim imprint upon the greatest catastrophe to strike our civilization to this time, the legendary event recalled as “the great flood” or “the deluge”?

We will expose the far-reaching explanations to these questions. Moreover, we will begin to establish that Nephilim, indeed, did survive the deluge, driving us to the possibility and conclusion that not only did the descendants of Adam and Noah survive but also possibly even the descendants of other humankind, the people originally scattered around the globe as nomadic hunters created in day six. The notion that Nephilim survived opens possibilities to others surviving the cataclysm. Consider Genesis’s precise text: “I will wipe mankind, whom I have created from the face of the earth” (Genesis 6:7); “Everything on earth will perish” (Genesis 7:17); “I will wipe from the face of the earth every living creature I have made” (Genesis 7:5); “Every living thing that moved perished—birds, livestock, wild animals, all the creatures that swarm over the earth, and all mankind. Everything on dry land that had the breath of life in its nostrils died. Every living thing on the face of the earth was wiped out… Only Noah was left, and those with him in the ark” Genesis (7:21-23). What if safe havens not on the face of the earth were provided by dark angels? What if dark angels provided various arks and safe havens for other races around the globe? Perhaps a selected number of rebellious refugees additionally survived. Do not summarily dismiss this seemingly biblically contrarian hypothesis. Sorting out prehistory, the potential of others surviving the Flood, and The Genesis 6 Conspiracy is biblically consistent, but this jarring precept for many requires placidity for a short time.

Let us once more take some time to bridge some of the Mysteries and background of this mythical antediluvian period, concerning those legendary heroes of renown. The word *Nephilim* derives from the Hebrew language, and specifically the Hebrew word *nopelim* or *nepelim*. The root word for *nopelim* is *npl*, meaning “fall.” The suffix *im* translates as “the ones.”[1] Therefore, by piecing these two words together alongside their literal translation, we find the definition of *nopelim* as “fallen ones,” just as Josephus described the infamous ones, the fallen angels, those who procreated with the daughters of men. Additionally, *Nephilim* is also the root Aramaic word for *Nephila*, for the “Orion” constellation suggesting to me that Nephilim are somehow directly connected to Orion.[2] In legend, Orion is the constellation where the fallen angel Shemyaza/Azazel is believed to be hung; therefore suggesting Nephilim somehow derive from Shemyaza/Azazel.

Remember, Nephilim were considered giant demigods, the unnatural offspring of the daughters of men and fallen angels, violating God's natural order of creation.[3] *Demigod* is defined as "one whose nature is partly divine — a hero fabled to be the offspring of a god and a mortal,"[4] bringing all sources into perfect harmony. Nephilim were recorded in the Bible as heroes of old, the offspring of fallen angels, demigods, and/or heroes of renown, who were partly divine until God interceded, forcing mortality back into their spirits— and, of course, they were giants. Nephilim were named "fallen ones" after their progenitors, the rebellious angels of the angelic realm who had already fallen from grace in the great rebellion fought against God and led by Lucifer.

In Genesis, "men of renown" and "heroes of old" are phrases derived from the Hebrew word *gibborim,* in the original Hebrew transcripts. Gibborim were mentioned again in the original Hebrew translation of Genesis 10 with regard to Nimrod, who ruled in Babylon just after the flood. Nimrod was said to be the mightiest of warriors and hunters of his time. Gibborim, at that time, were fearfully renowned as potentates, ones who held absolute power, just as Ezekiel speaks to potentates (original Hebrew transcripts *gibborim*) in Ezekiel 26 and 32.[5] *Webster's* defines potentate as "one who possesses power, a prince."[6]

The mysterious Nimrod was regarded as a gibborim, but Genesis does not state that he should be considered Nephilim. Nimrod was a mighty warrior, a fearsome king who held absolute power. He, too, was recorded in Genesis 10 as being a man of renown. Nimrod must have been a celebrated individual of great importance of that era to be considered worthy of having his name recorded in the ancient annals of the Bible. Even so, Genesis does not give any details as to what made the life of Nimrod so noteworthy.

Assembling this information, we find that Nephilim were leaders of the ancient peoples, the princes and kings, mighty warriors, heroes of renown, and powerful potentates, who obtained absolute power through tyranny that was backed by the evil gifts of their superior size and strength, obtained through their hereditary gene alterations from their procreators. Dark angels previously conspired with Satan to create an abominable race designed to plague creation, a reprobate race that toiled relentlessly against the righteous plans of God and the seed of Adam. The mighty men of renown of the ancient epoch were very accurately named Nephilim, Gibborim, and mighty warriors of the fallen ones; they quickly achieved absolute power over the peoples by the seventh generation.

But do we, in fact, know that the Nephilim were impious potentates? Here is what we can say with certainty, according to The Good News Bible: “they were famous giants, a mighty race skilled in war”;[7] “they were heroes of old, men of renown.”[8] “Nephilim were a proud race of giants,”[9] “the ancient giants rebelled against God,”[10] “they were confident in their own strength.”[11] Deuteronomy additionally claims the Nephilim were wicked nations.[12] These were the seeds for corruption; it was only a matter of time before their scurrilous ways took root.

Once Nephilim began to dominate, they did become corrupt. Sirach records that Nephilim became overconfident in their own strength and rebelled against God,[13] just as giants rebelled against the gods in pantheistic myths. Ezra 4:15–16 notes the rebellious nature in regard to antediluvian Jerusalem: “A search may be made in the archives of your predecessors. In these records you will find that this city is a rebellious city, troublesome to kings and provinces, a place of rebellion from ancient times.” “Wisdom notes” Nephilim were proud of themselves[14]—recklessly hubris.

Nephilim became proud and arrogant because of their size and strength. It is not a large leap of faith to interject that Nephilim were more than likely influenced by their procreators, fallen angels, and consequently were easily led astray into debauchery and rebellion against the God of the universe. In fact, as it turns out, Gilbert notes Azazel and his sorted conspirators were the infamous fallen angels, who taught inequity to the Nephilim, which, in turn, so thoroughly corrupted the antediluvian world.[15] You will recall Azazel; he is the fallen angel chiefly responsible for the creation of Nephilim; he was hung on Orion/Nephila for his crimes against creation and humanity.

Nephilim became a mighty race skilled in war.[16] Once in power, the giants became unjust leaders, evil potentates, and despisers of all that was good. Corruption came about through their pride and misplaced confidence in their abilities and from both their great size and strength. Not surprisingly, Nephilim were tutored in the bloody arts of war by a specific fallen angel, the iniquitous Azazel. Through his dissonant teachings, Nephilim became masters of war, which no doubt further fueled their (misplaced) pride, arrogance,[17] and overreach. Even the *Encyclopedia Americana* states that Azazel was the "prince of the angels who married human beings and begat of them wicked men."[18]

Nephilim minions coveted one particular impious potentate skilled like no other in war and violence; he was their leader, and his name was Sumayaza, also known as Shemyaza. Through this notoriously nefarious Nephilim the antediluvian world was paraded into destruction; because of the blood and inequity sponsored by the sinister Shemyaza.[19] The blood and violence was so pervasive that *Unger's* describes the Nephilim race as being exceedingly wicked and violent, that their thoughts were of continuous evil.[20] This, then, explains the puzzling line from Genesis 6:5: "the Lord saw how great man's wickedness on the earth had become and that every inclination of his heart was only evil all the time." When one considers the evil lineage of Cain that corrupted the lineage of Seth and considers the Nephilim contagion, one must conclude that indeed the earth was burgeoning with wickedness.

In addition, Nephilim were taught evil behaviors that fostered exponential growth of evil through the power structure that the Nephilim possessed. Their whole approach to life and worship was in direct contrast to the sons of Seth. But even the sons of Seth were contaminated through the evils and tyrannical powers of the Nephilim. Only Noah was held righteous and pure from Nephilim evil and bloodlines in the eyes of God.

It is not difficult to believe Nephilim overreached in viewing themselves as earthly gods, given the great size and strength that these giants must have possessed, pitted against the average size of a man of that time, in addition to their immortal spirits. Nephilim were easily capable of dominating life at that time, and every form of cultural structure by force. Ergo, they became the leaders of the ancient world, systematically enslaving the peoples and imposing their wills and ways upon them, which would have included the introduction of new gods. These very large and powerful beings became the potentates of old. Their power and influence would so dominate the antediluvian period that as a consequence, the greatest catastrophe ever to strike the earth in that age would be poured out onto the earth. They were, according to the biblical scholar J. R. Porter, the "mighty men of old" that became the embodiment of "absolute power" of the ancient world.[21]

Even though Baruch recorded this race of giants was skilled in the art of war and intimidation, as taught to them by Azazel, their fate was always sealed from the beginning. God did not choose this race for Himself, and therefore, He withheld the true ways of knowledge and wisdom from them.[22] The Nephilim had power deriving from their strength but not from their intelligence. They lacked the required wisdom and insight to avert catastrophe and rule wisely and justly. As a result, they were easily led into open rebellion against God by their procreators. Forbidden knowledge from the corrupted Cainites that collaborated with the Nephilim served only as an accelerator on their journey into destruction. Nephilim plunged headlong into destruction but did not have the wisdom to save themselves. The combined evil of their legacy, along with what *Unger's* calls the unnatural union violating God's divinely created natural orders of being, was of such shocking abnormality as to necessitate the worldwide divine judgment, remembered as the flood.[23]

God, however, did not simply summarily judge and condemn those evil giants and all humankind. Through the righteousness of Noah, He delivered an olive branch to those demigods. As per the accounts of Josephus, Noah toiled to persuade those brutal potentates to change their ways and honor God as the true God of the universe.[24] The Qur'an records that Noah was sent as a messenger and a prophet of God to warn the antediluvians to worship only God and no other gods, to repent of their evils ways or a face the wrath and destruction of a fearsome day to come.[25] The interrelationship between Noah and the Nephilim is rich in its detail and intriguing in its nature.

Unger's notes that God permitted a respite of 120 years, in which Noah sought to bring the people to repentance.[26] It is not clear to me how *Unger's* arrives at the 120 years of respite, but Scripture notes that God waited patiently during the construction of the ark.[27] One presumes, then, the ark must have taken close to 120 years to build. We are informed that the antediluvians watched Noah build the ark, both scorning and laughing at his faith.[28]

Hebrews 11:7 does note that Noah was warned about things not yet seen, prompting Noah to build the ark out of fear. One presumes Noah took time from his long and arduous labors in building the ark to warn the world and, in particular, the Nephilim kings. Remember, Noah lived 350 years after the flood and a total of 950 years,[29] suggesting that Noah had 600 years, less his childhood years, to warn the world of the coming catastrophe. The Qur'an further notes that as far as the antediluvians were concerned, Noah's commission argued far too long with them, demanding that Noah stop the condemnations and bring on the punishment.[30]

Noah was most uneasy and distraught with the conduct of Nephilim and the people they held within their sway.[31] Noah's preaching of righteousness[32] against the violence, corruption, and mystical religions would not have played well with the Nephilim potentates. Nephilim were prisoners and slaves to their own wickedness and pleasures, feeding more and more energy into their rebellious, violent, and scurrilous conduct.[33] Now mix into the intrigue of doubting demigods that Noah made it clear he did not possess any hidden knowledge or treasures to entice or persuade the Nephilim with,[34] and conflict was sure to follow.

Nephilim and their human subjects refused to or were unable to yield to Noah, placing Noah in direct conflict with those giants and society in general. The antediluvians denounced Noah as a mere mortal and not an angel, which was what God would send as His messenger to His earthly demigods, not a mundane human.[35] The antediluvians concluded Noah had gone astray, that only the worst and vilest of society believed or followed Noah.[36] In fact, the antediluvians called Noah a madman![37] Noah preached night and day, but it only drove the people further away from his message.[38]

The verbal sparring sessions between Noah and the Nephilim must have been intense, for Noah became afraid that the Nephilim would harm or even kill him and, or his family. This threat became so apparent that Noah and his family were forced to flee from the land to ensure their own safety.[39] Noah was called a madman and a liar; he was rebuked, scorned, and rejected by a violent and disbelieving people.[40] The more Noah preached, the more the antediluvians covered their heads with their garments, covered their ears, persisted in their rejection, and grew more insolent and arrogant.[41] The tension reached the point where the antediluvians threatened to kill Noah by stoning him if he did not stop his preaching.[42] Noah tried to reason with these giants, but eventually, he had to flee from their tyranny.[43]

Sirach testifies that the giants rebelled against God, introducing all kinds of heresies and blasphemies, enforcing their evil ways through the power of tyranny and intimidation, through the great strength, size, legendary status, and absolute power of government that they possessed. The second book of Enoch clarifies this issue somewhat: “Giants were born and marvelous great men and great enmity.”[44] Enmity, of course, implies hostility; these giants were born with great hostility. From the book of Enoch: “… the giants afflict, oppress, destroy, and attack, over the earth. Although they hunger and thirst they do not eat. They offend. These spirits rise up against men and women because they proceed from them. The giants will slaughter unpunished until the day of great judgment.”[45] From the time of God’s indictment against the immortal spirits of the Nephilim until the day of the flood, the Nephilim carried out a bloody rebellion of war and violence against God by terrorizing the seed of Adam.

Baruch stated that the giants were void of enlightened insight or understanding.[46] Therefore, we can conclude that the heretical doctrines they imposed on the antediluvian people did not originate from their own creative abilities. The evil webs spun must have been sourced through their corrupted fathers, the fallen angels. In fact, one may even deduce that Nephilim were not all that intelligent—that their power was not derived by their intellect in any form but only from their fearsome size and strength, guided by their progenitors. But do we know anything about these heretical doctrines the giants forced upon the people of the ancient epoch? In fact, we do. The book of Wisdom provides a surprisingly detailed account of the heresies introduced by the ancient giants. So much so that the book of Wisdom noted that during the time when a proud race of giants was perishing, the world escaped from such overt evil on a boat to start a new generation unscarred from that evil.[47]

Hubris, human pride, discussed in Wisdom 14:14, otherwise known figuratively as Nephilim, introduced idol worship into the world. Pride is the key here; the Nephilim were proud and arrogant. You can substitute “Nephilim” for “pride” in this passage to discover who introduced idolatry into the ancient world. If you don’t think so, then consider this enlightening quote from Wisdom:

> Once there was a father who was so overwhelmed with grief at the untimely death of his child, so he made an image of that child who had been taken suddenly from him. He then honored a dead human being as a god, and handed on secret rituals and ceremonies for those who were under his authority. As time went on, these ungodly customs became stronger. Finally it became law, and idols were worshipped at the command of powerful rulers.[48]

At first reading, one tends to glance over the significance of its meaning, because neither the word *Nephilim* nor *giants* is employed, but they are exactly who this passage is describing when the introduction of idolatry came about. Note first that this father (a Nephilim) was the first to create an idol and worship it as a god. More importantly, though, this so-called father introduced secret ceremonies and secret rituals. This is the foundation of all mysticism and of all pantheistic religions of the ancient world that is even inclusive of today. This passage is translating the source of the complicated doctrine of mystic religions. All pantheistic religions are steeped in secret rituals, rites, and ceremonies.

We already know that Nephilim did not possess the intelligence and creativity to be the inventors of mysticism. Therefore, it must have derived from humankind, the descendants of Cain, just as the passage tends to indicate and just as we covered in previous chapters. The answer, of course, is that it was Enoch who introduced mysticism to humankind, in partnership with his unholy sponsors, the fallen angels. The question is which of the two is Wisdom talking about? Enoch likely introduced mysticism and idolatry, but the giants entrenched mysticism and idolatry as the official, state-sponsored, and imposed religion, which all had to comply with or die.

As one continues reading this enlightening passage from Wisdom, the first clue appears. Immediately preceding the introduction of secret ceremonies, we learn that the mystic religion was passed on to all those who were under his authority. Now, as we have already learned, it was the Nephilim who were the kings and leaders of that epoch, but one can still stake the argument that there may still have been normal humankind that held some positions of authority and government. It’s very possible, but we must continue to read to bring forth the final evidence that clearly defines the Nephilim as those who institutionalized mysticism and idolatry into the world.

The last sentence of the passage states that finally this new religion became law, and idols were worshipped at the command of powerful kings. It was only Nephilim in the antediluvian epoch who were powerful potentate kings and heroes of old. And finally, this verse goes on to state, “… so all this became a deadly trap, because people who were grieving, or under royal authority, would take objects of stone or wood, and give them honor reserved for the one God.”[49]

Wisdom 14 underscores everything I have set forth so far about Nephilim being impious potentates, who corrupted the antediluvian world. The Nephilim were indeed the reigning monarchs of the antediluvian epoch, complete with a ruling Council of Nephilim.[50] They were renowned and recorded in primeval Sumerian records as the Anunnaki giants, who not only introduced the notion of kingship but also appointed all such potentates with their blessing and authority.[51] In short, Nephilim kings imposed state-legislated idolatry and mysticism on the people of that day.

The Nephilim intimidated the people through violence and fear, to worshiping new, false gods in ways different than they would have worshipped the true God of the universe. They defiled themselves completely. Even Noah and his family fled for fear of violent reprisals from the Nephilim potentates. This was the schism of Masonry and the Seven Sacred Sciences recorded in Freemasonry legends, in which the spurious persuasion of Enoch the Evil, complete with mysticism, became the law of the land through the tyranny of the Titans.

I must clearly reemphasize this fact: These evil potentates did not have the brain power to create this themselves. Therefore, the rebellious angels drafted their willing offspring to completely violate and corrupt the ancient world in partnership with the progeny of Cain, who possessed the corrupted knowledge of the Seven Sacred Sciences, turning all to rebel from the true God through the various Brotherhoods of the Snake. All this is corroborated in the Qur'an, which states angels destroyed the antediluvians because they denied God's revelations and would not believe in God but preferred to worship the idols of false gods.[52] Dark angels accomplished this dour deed in the generations immediately following Cain, and by the last three generations, they thoroughly corrupted all but Noah through tyranny.

Once the new, state-sponsored religion was imposed upon those people, the pristine paradise became a primordial hell. From the source of fallen angels came even more illicit knowledge, which was given to humankind and designed to corrupt the earth even more. From seven heavenly rulers,[53] likely Azazel also acknowledged as Azaziel and Shemyaza, along with Ammasses, Barqiel, Kokariel, Tamiel, Asderiel, Gadreel, and Pineme, came corrupted heavenly knowledge that held forbidden secrets for mankind,[54] which Freemasonry and it associated organizations now secretly sustain.

The infamous seven include Azazel, the chief of all fallen angels, and Shemyaza, who were one and the same. These were the divine seven sages of ancient Babylonia, of whom the patron was Enki/Satan.[55] These infamous immortals recorded in the Gnostic gospel On the Origin of the World taught humankind “many kinds of errors, and magic, and potions, and worship, and spilling of blood and altars, and temples, and sacrifices, and libations to all spirits of the earth.”[56] The angels did so through the various women they slept with, according to author and Spiritualist Gonsalez-Wipper.[57] It was because of those secrets that author Willis Barnstone has noted that men and women worked much evil on earth.[58] The *watchers* taught (the shadowy sects of) humankind about meteorology, geodesy, geography, astronomy, writing, ink, and paper,[59] along with other corrupted knowledge banned by God from humankind.

Amasses taught women enchantments;[60] although, another, version says enchantments, root arts, and all the magical arts were taught by Shemyaza.[61] Baraqiel taught women astrology; Kokariel taught women the secrets to the zodiac signs; Tamiel taught women how to follow the course of the stars; Asderiel taught women the Mysteries of the moon and how to deceive men; Gadereel taught women the art of building instruments of war and killing. Although, another account had Azazel providing humankind with the art of war, swords, breastplates, knives, and metalworking.[62] Pineme taught women the secrets to sweet and bitter things (herbs and spices),[63] as well as writing with paper and ink. And Kasadya taught women the depths of evil and spirits, along with abortion.[64] Another version spells his name as Kasdeja, the spurious angel who showed women the wicked smiting of spirits and demons, as well as abortion. Finally, Azazel taught women about jewelry, make-up, and medicine.[65] The illicit knowledge from heaven partnered with the corrupted Seven Sciences and Enoch’s mysticism to completely corrupt the antediluvian epoch under the tyranny of the Nephilim regime.

The book of Wisdom goes on to state that once the people became ignorant of God, they began to live in a state of evil warfare, but that they also were so deluded they thought it was peace. They began to murder their children through abortion[66] or sacrifice in their initiation rituals to their new religion, the bull cult of Poseidon. They began to celebrate secret Mysteries in secret places, while holding wild ceremonial orgies with unnatural practices. Idolatry led to sexual immorality through these rituals and orgies. The people no longer kept their marriages pure; adultery was rampant.

Killing each other was common because of treachery and adultery. Just read how the book of Wisdom describes this evil epoch: “Everything was a complete riot of bloody murder, robbery, deceit, corruption, unfaithfulness, disorder, falsehood, harassment of innocent people, ingratitude, moral decay, sexual perversion, broken marriages, adultery, and immorality. The worship of idols, whose names should never be spoken, is the beginning and the end, the cause and the result of every evil.”[67]

Let us now bring this state of affairs full circle from Genesis 6 and show how this relates to Noah. Genesis states, “The Lord saw how great man’s wickedness on earth had become, and that every inclination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil all the time (6:5), and “now the earth was corrupt in God’s sight and was full of violence. God saw how corrupt the earth had become, for all people on the earth had corrupted their ways. So God said to Noah, ‘I am going to put an end to all people, for the earth is filled with violence because of them” (6:11–13). And from Wisdom: “This is how it was in ancient times, when a proud race of giants was dying away. The hope of the world escaped on such a boat under your guidance and left the world a new generation to carry on the human race. A blessing was on Noah’s boat that allowed righteousness to survive, but a curse is on an idol made by human hands.”[68]

This all came about because of the curse of the idol, the worship of false gods, the fallen angels, and the introduction of Enoch’s mysticism. The only way all the people could have been so totally corrupted was not through choice alone but through the imposed force of will. Only through tyranny could this have been completed so convincingly. Further, the Nephilim must have had absolute power to do so, over every ancient government and people of that time. The people of the antediluvian epoch were so thoroughly terrified through state-sponsored tyranny and intimidation via the Nephilim that they fled from their convictions of the true God because they feared for their lives. Imagine if you lived in a powerful, totalitarian regime like that of Communist Russia or China, Nazi Germany, or the forthcoming world government, universally imposing a ruthlessly evil, state-sponsored religion on all its citizens and responds to opposition with torture and murder. This clearly would have been the scenario in the late antediluvian world. Otherwise, there would have been more than Noah who refused to accept the new religion or were otherwise pure in their ways.

Imagine the entire antediluvian world under the evil dictatorships of cruel and corrupt giants! They were at the pinnacle of their power; they were despotic dictators and disdainful demigods. The violence and the corruption reached such a crescendo that God became grieved.[69] Can you imagine God being driven to the point of grieving because of the great evils of humankind? We do not hear of such a thing in the Bible again. How terrible was it? I doubt that we can imagine how appalling it really was. God was grieved so much that He raised His hand to wipe humankind from the face of the earth, save the family of Noah, who were righteous in their time—and just as important, pure in their Adamite bloodlines, free from Nephilim, Cainite, and day six contamination.

Consider once again the relationship of the Nephilim account to the flood story. Both are recorded in Genesis 6, with the flood narrative extending through chapter 9. Note that the foundation for the deluge follows immediately after the Nephilim narrative. Quite frankly, there is nothing definite denoting the denouement to the Nephilim narrative, distinguishing it from the start of the deluge drama as a divergent narrative. This was no coincidence; this was by divine design, vividly testifying that the cause of the flood was directly related to the Nephilim because of their rebellious ways and state-sponsored mysticism. This is supported by the biblical scholar J. R. Porter, who notes the Nephilim narrative is utilized in this fashion as the reason and or cause of the flood.[70] The Nephilim rebelled against God, just as the giants of mythology rebelled against the pantheon of gods in other cultures. Nephilim did rule the ancient world with unbridled hubris, violence, corruption, and tyranny. There can be no doubt; the giants of old were the cause of the flood in joint accountability with their vile partners, the progeny and dominion of Cain.

Confirmation of this conclusion comes from several sources other than the accepted Canon. According to the Dead Sea Scrolls, the sexual union of angels with humans created a cosmic imbalance that threatened the fabric of the cosmos. For this reason, God sent the deluge to bring balance back to the cosmos. The imbalance occurred when the immortal spirit of the sons of God was passed on to physical human beings in the form of Nephilim, who were both corrupt and violent and who rebelled against God.[71] The fallen angels had de facto created immortal angels, or gods, within the physical realm of the universe, where heavenly spirit was not ordained to dwell. This change of balance in immortal beings was considered a violation against the order of creation. This was, of course, what prompted the omnipotent, true God to limit all newborn physical life to 120 years,[72] ending the immortal, heavenly spirits prospering in the physical realm.

The legends of the pantheon that we will examine in detail later testify unanimously to the same. The giants were the cause of God's divine judgment manifested in the form of the flood. Furthermore, the lost gospels of Enoch evoke the same conclusion. Remember, the giants continued to slaughter without restriction, void of punishment, until the deluge stopped the carnage.[73] Nephilim waged war with humanity, plundered the animal kingdom, and even declared war on each other.[74] The Nephilim babies were said to have grown up to be barbaric beings;[75] they were called "the bastards and the reprobates, the children of fornication," according to Andrew Collins.[76] Again from Enoch:

> … and they [mortal women] became pregnant, and they bore great giants, whose height was three thousand ells: who consumed all the acquisitions of men. And when men could no longer sustain them, the giants turned against them and devoured mankind. And they began to sin against birds, and beasts, and reptiles, and fish, and to devour one another's flesh, and drink the blood. Then the earth laid accusation against the lawless ones.[77]

Note Enoch's accusation of blood consumption in the above passage. Gardner wrote the Nephilim progeny were believed to have consumed large amounts of blood as an aid to longevity.[78] Jewish legends noted Nephilim began the abomination of drinking blood during the generation they turned against humanity, as part of their violent debauchery.[79] The drinking of blood by the Nephilim is likely why the Israelites were later instructed, as part of their holy Law, against the drinking of blood.[80] And God instructed Noah: "But you must not eat the meat that has its lifeblood still in it. And for your lifeblood I will surely demand an accounting."[81]

From the scriptural perspective, blood contains the life of a creature and can only be used ceremonially for atonement;[82] one can only imagine the kind of weight God would place on human blood. The vile nature of blood consumption was completely underscored in the New Testament when James, brother of Jesus and first bishop of the Jerusalem Christian Church, settled the Gentile issue. James then wrote into New Testament Law exactly what portion of the Law Gentiles were to be held accountable to; this new Law, designed to arbitrate Jew and Gentile into the New Jerusalem Church, ensured that blood consumption, sexual immorality, idolatry, the consuming of animals sacrificed to idols, and eating the meat from strangled animals were forbidden.[83] The Qur'an set forth a restriction of food consumption that was more restricted than permitted by the Gentiles, but it was a little more generous than the food laws of Israel (partly because of Israel's disobedience). Islamic law does underscore the edict not to consume strangled meat, food sacrificed to idols, and of course, blood.[84] All these forbidden practices were constitutive evil practices of Nephilim, Enochian mysticism, and Snake Brotherhoods that evolved into the cults of the sun and the bull.

Even after the flood, Jewish legends recorded humanity once more allowed themselves to be defiled at Babel, for they once more took up the Nephilim abomination of drinking blood[85] as a sign of their renaissance rebellion against God. Drinking blood is at the Legomin heart of the vampire tales (demons of evil who sustain immortality from the drinking of blood) and was a Dragon Court ritual of the Sangreal of Cain, renowned as the "Star Fire" or the "Divine Menstruum."[86] Consumption of blood is an evil custom that continues to this day among the powerful few who carry on the Nephilim traditions and The Genesis 6 Conspiracy in secret.

Because of all the enmity the giants created on earth, Enoch recorded that God sent forth His terrible punishment, the flood.[87] As recorded in the Gnostic gospel The Apocalypse of Adam, God sent forth the flood to destroy the flesh of heaven (Nephilim) and the flesh of the earth (humans), for they both had become strangers to Him (they turned from good to doing evil).[88] Enoch goes on to state that the Nephilim offspring were swept away by global catastrophes ending in a great flood induced only by rain. And in another, separate account, angels sent an all-encompassing conflagration in the form of fire, naphtha, and brimstone,[89] which parallels the Atlantean description of an all-encompassing cataclysm of flood, fire, volcano, and earthquake.

The flood event was more than just rain; it was indeed a conflagration of catastrophes. Genesis records the springs of the deep, the floodgates of the heavens, and the rain from the sky caused the flood,[90] ending the cataclysmic events of the antediluvian Apocalypse. The Qur'an, too, records that angels destroyed the earth through both torrential rains and oceans of water, which gushed up and boiled over from the storehouses below the earth.[91] This was an event of such cataclysmic force that limiting this catastrophe to mere rains would be a misstep. So much for the critics searching specifically, and only, for the scars of a global flood.

Enoch's account goes on to state that none would survive the combinations and culmination of those cataclysms, save the pure Adamic seed of Noah, who then became the future of the human race.[92] Enoch continues, "Upon the earth they shall give birth to giants, not of the spirit, but of the flesh. There shall be a great plague and the earth will be washed clean from all corruption."[93] From the scriptural perspective, Nephilim, in partnership with the progeny of Cain, defiled the earth with evil, corruption, violence, tyranny, and rebellion, which then brought upon the flood catastrophes from God.

We should read the monotheist flood narratives, however, with a very open-ended perspective, acknowledging Noah and his family were survivors from the seed of Adam and not the sole survivors for the totality of humankind and Nephilim. Enochian scriptures and the Old Testament were sent to surviving Adamites and not other peoples. We must understand Scripture from this perspective, realizing God sent other prophets and other scriptures to other peoples. We will learn many peoples, including Nephilim, survived the flood.

CHAPTER 12

AZAZEL: LEADER OF THE *WATCHERS*

> *Remember the days of old; generations long past. Ask your father and he will tell you, your elders, and they will explain to you. When the Most High gave the nations their inheritance, when he divided all mankind, he set up boundaries for the peoples according to the number of the sons of Israel (God). For God's portion is his people.*
>
> —Deuteronomy 32:7–9

Why does Deuteronomy describe a cryptic event at the beginning of the world, when the nations of the earth were divided according to the number of the sons of God, with God keeping the land of the future covenant for Himself?[1]

Who were the nations of the world if not the people of day six? In the beginning, angels kept a watchful eye, governing those nations. These angels were the seraphim *watchers*. Several New Testament passages reference some form of a spiritual, hierarchal government of angels that includes rulers, powers, authorities, and dominions, which eerily included spiritual forces of evil and demons.[2] According to the *Encyclopedia*

Americana, the hierarchy looks something like this: angels, archangels, principalities, dominations, virtues, powers, thrones, cherubims, and the infamous seraphim angels at the top of the hierarchy.[3]

Enoch identified those high-ranking, overseeing seraphims as "Watchers," just as immortal Nephilim also accepted this appellation later.[4] The book of Enoch leaves the reader with no doubts that Watchers were indeed angels: "… go speak to the Watchers of Heaven…. Tell them, you should intercede for men, and not men for you. Why did you leave lofty heaven, to sleep with women, to defile yourselves with the daughters of men and take them as your wives, and like the children of the earth to beget sons, in your case giants."[5] Enoch, according to Gnostic gospels, was provided with two most accommodating cosmic tours of heaven: "… where much information was given to him concerning the fate of the *watchers*, the fallen rebellious angels."[6]

The condemned seraphims Enoch witnessed were from a specific order, *Grigori*.[7] *Grigori* was simply an angelic name signifying "the *watchers*," according to Gonzalez-Wipper.[8] *Grigori* were angels who revolted in heaven, but specifically the impassioned angels who later sinned with daughters of men.[9] *Watcher* was translated into Greek as *Egregoris*, or *Grigori*,[10] just as *Grigori* was recorded in the Second Book of the Secrets of Enoch.[11] Andrew Collins went on to note that the Greeks were known to have called the sons of God *Grigori* when they translated the books of Enoch into Greek.[12]

The Hebrew word for *watcher* defined itself as "those who watch, or those who are awake." These were *watchers*, the holy rulers and governors of the earth noted by Enoch, who sinned against creation in the sixth generation, in Jared's birth time. A modern group centered in the United States called Sons of Jared claims the *watchers* described in Scripture were nothing more than super gangsters, a celestial "Mafia" that ruled the earth at that time.[13]

Watchers as you will recall were remembered in alternative sources as liaisons between heaven and earth, which have the appearance like that of vipers or serpents, just as their progeny, the Nephilim, did. Scripturally, only the root "seraphs" appears, and only in Isaiah 6:2 and 6:6. The NIV Red Letter Study Bible equates these powerful six-winged beings with those living creatures in Ezekiel 1:5-14, Revelation 4:6-11, and the cherubim of Ezekiel 10:15 in note m. But what is even more shocking is that the NIV Red Letter Study Bible goes on to annotate in 6:2 that “it [seraphs] refers to venomous snakes in [Isaiah] 14:29; 30;6” where these “darting venomous snakes/ seraphs (somehow) refer back to Israelites slain by venomous snakes during the Exodus (Numbers 21:6; Deuteronomy 8:15; 1 Corinthians 10:9). One concludes then, that Scripture also remembers seraphs as viper like beings. Further the Qur’an noted angels/Jinn were beings created from smokeless fire and indeed messengers possessing two, three, or four pairs of wings[14], just as The NIV Red Letter Study bible cites (note 6:2) “burn” as another underlying meaning to seraph, likely indicating their nature and purity as God’s ministers.

The *watchers* in Deuteronomy were referred alternatively to as “archons.” Archons were rulers and hostile heavenly forces in the Gnostic gospel The Dialogue of the Savior.[15] “Hostile rulers” is an extraordinarily pertinent, alternative description to rebellious fallen angels, the celestial Mafia. Similarly, Willis Barnstone, assembler of *The Other Bible*, further defined *archon* as “one of the world rulers, a governor of an Aeon.”[16] The book *Return of Angels* promotes archons as great celestial princes, each reigning over a particular region of earth,[17] just as Deuteronomy describes.

Archons were rulers of eternity who delivered mighty judgments,[18] impious powers ruling our world of matter, who sustain Ialdoboth’s dominion over trapped humans.[19] Gnostics believe Ialdoboth, the craftsman of the world, created the planets, stars, and heavenly spheres, later populating his domain with his offspring called rulers, authorities, powers, demons, and angels.[20] Another Gnostic gospel, *The Secret Book According to John*, recorded the ruler Ialdaboath sending his angels to the daughters of humankind so that they might raise up posterity (Nephilim) for themselves.[21]

The Gnostic gospel The Hypostasis of the Archons proclaimed as its self-testimony the reality of those archonic rulers.[22] *Hypostasis* translates as “the reality.”[23] It is to this legitimate but unexplained authority of rule that Jude 1:6 refers to when it states: “… and the angels who did not keep their positions of authority but abandoned their own home—these he has kept in darkness, bound with everlasting chains for judgment on the great day.” The home they abandoned was heaven, when they came down to earth to violate the laws of creation through copulating heavenly spirit with earthly flesh.

Their authority was that of a *watcher*/archon/ruler of a specific region, *aeon*, or nation in the physical universe.

Archons were referred to in *The Hypostasis of the Archons* as rulers of unrighteousness, again testifying to those angels as being fallen angels, the celestial Mafia. These unholy rulers called themselves gods, and they impiously lusted to create sons like God. They, of course, are the false gods of polytheism and the false gods the Bible speaks of. In fact, one ruler in particular, Sacla, called himself the god of the forces of Saboith,[24] or Sabaism, the cult of the stars and the planets and the antediluvian religion of Enoch the Evil.

Just as in the varied legends of pantheism, such as the *Atrihasis Epic of Mesopotamia*, those unrighteous rulers were mythologized as gathering together to plot the destruction of humankind, after humankind began to multiply[25] and just as Genesis recorded, through a cataclysm known all too well as the flood. Enoch cited this gathering of apocalyptic angels as the beckoning of God to do His will.[26] Only Noah, according to the Gnostic gospels, was spared through the heroic efforts of an archon known as the ruler of the forces, likely Sacla,[27] but this warning by an archon was likely delivered to one of his progeny, a Nephilim, or a selected survivor from the people of day six, rather than to Noah. Noah was warned, but he was warned by God and not an archon.[28]

Likely the most infamous of the *watchers* was/were Azazel and/or Shemyaza, the chief *watcher(s)*.[29] They were the leaders of the 200 and were the original one or two angels to ask permission from God to dwell among the humans, according to Knight and Lomas.[30] It was Azazel who was charged, according to the book of Enoch, with teaching humankind the skills of war, the art of jewelry, and all forms of conceit and arrogance.[31] The exact same charge was recorded in *War in Heaven, The Book of Megadriel*.[32] Azazel was also charged with teaching the arts of jewelry, make-up, metalwork, and medicine, along with promiscuity and illicit sexual pleasure. [33]

Collins writes that *Azazel* and *Shemyaza* are derived from the same linguistic source and were later spirited into two separate fallen angels before their introduction into the book of Enoch, and that they were one and the same. If Azazel and Shemyaza were one and the same, then we must attribute Shemyaza's crimes, which were teaching humankind the arts of root cuttings and the magical arts, to Azazel as well. The suffix to Shemyaza, *yaza*, was a Zend word for “angel, or divine being.”[34]

Azazel did not repent of his sins, according to Knight and Lomas; he continued to lead humanity astray until the flood catastrophe, while Shemyaza somehow repented from his sins but could not face God; he hung himself between heaven and earth[35] (on Orion). Remember, *Nephilim* is the root for the Aramaic word *Nephila*, meaning Orion, suggesting the Nephilim derive from Azazel, the one hung on Orion,[36] and his famous 200 rebellious angels. Azazel then, according to Gilbert, was formally charged with teaching inequity to all humankind, along with secrets from heaven.[37]

Curiously, *Azazel* translates as “scapegoat,” just as the word *Azazel* was used in place of “scapegoat” in some Bible translations of Leviticus, such as in *The Good News Bible*.[38] In fact, the *New International Version* notes *scapegoat* (oddly) derives from the Hebrew word *azazel*, the goat of removal.[39] The *Access Bible* unaccountably notes this scapegoat, Azazel, was the name of an iniquitous goat-demon thought to inhabit desolate places (hung on Orion); in this case, from Leviticus, Azazel’s goat carries the sins and impurity of the community.[40]

In an ancient Hebrew ritual, two goats were sacrificed on the Day of Atonement (Yom Kippur), one to God for the sins of the Israelites and, without explanation, one set aside to be released (sacrificed) into the desert or wilderness” specifically for Azazel, for the sins committed by angels in the antediluvian epoch (Leviticus 16:9-10, 21-22). The scapegoat was taken and plunged over a steep cliff as a reminder of the perpetual plight of Azazel’s punishment in the wilderness of the universe,[41] being hung on Orion, beneath jagged rocks. The scapegoat is sacrificed, according to Scripture, for all the sins of transgression and rebellion (Lev. 16:21), no doubt referring to the Israelite rebellion and the golden calf as well as the antediluvian rebellion of fallen angels, rebellious Nephilim, rebellious humans, and the rebellion at Babel. These Day of Atonement regulations immediately precede laws forbidding blood consumption of any kind (Lev. 17:10), a most noteworthy and infamous trait of Nephilim. As you will recall, Scripture simply does not work through coincidences.

According to Jewish lore, Azazel persisted in leading humankind from God, and that is why two goats are sacrificed on the Day of Atonement: one for the sins of the Israelites and one for the sins of Azazel.[42] Moses Ben

Nahem, in the twelfth-century C.E., wrote the following on this ancient ritual: “God has commanded us, however, to send a goat on Yom Kippur to the *Ruler* whose realm is in the places of desolation. From the emanation of his power come destruction and ruin…. His portion among the animals is the goat. The demons [spirits of Nephilim] are part of his realm and are all called in the Bible, Seirem (legendary he-goats fostered by Azazel).”[43] The Goat of Mendes and its pentagram, representing satanic cultures, are both directly associated with Azazel.[44]

It would seem Azazel was singled out as a scapegoat, just as his name implies and just as Migene Gonzales-Wipper notes: “… that all the sins of the earth were written upon Azazel.”[45] He was then judged and cast into darkness, into the abyss of the universe, to be held there until the end time when Azazel will once more be released to work his corruption on the earth, culminating with his final punishment at the last judgment.[46] The book of Enoch cites Azazel being bound and cast into a place called *Dudael* (Orion), where jagged rocks were placed upon him and where he will remain until he is cast into the lake of fire.[47]

Included in the violations against creation was the leader of the 200 *watchers*, Semyaza,[48] or Shemyaza, whom we have already identified as Azazel. Shemyaza is known variantly as Sumyaza, according to the book of Enoch. Shemyaza, too, taught sorcery and waged war. Shemyaza, too, slept with women and created giants after his own kind.[49] He produced Nephilim males named Hiwwa and Hiyya.[50] Shemyaza, in variant legends, provided the name of God to Ishtar for sex, and he was therefore tried and hung for eternity in the Abyss.[51] All the evidence clearly points to Azazel and Shemyaza being the same notorious celestial gangster.

In Chapter 3, I noted that God did indeed pass retribution on to the rebellious angels, who corrupted the antediluvian epoch with their immortal spirit. The Bible does provide details that show this is biblically factual and separate from the punishment of Azazel. The charge was clear and simple, just as *Unger’s Dictionary* noted that the procreation of angels with humankind was “utterly an unnatural union violating God’s created orders of being.”[52]

We further learn from Peter that Jesus, after His crucifixion and while He was still in the grave for three days, visited those condemned angels in prison, clearly reaffirming the charge that those angels were, indeed, imprisoned for their crimes committed in the days before the flood (1 Pet. 3:19–20). It is the supposition of many that Jesus visited those angelic convicts to demonstrate and clearly underscore that through His unanticipated resurrection, their fate had been sealed and their date with the divine judgment confirmed. And even though they will still be released for a short period in the end days of this age (Rev. 9:10–12), their rebellious struggle is almost over. Remember, the Qur’an clearly recorded the rebellious dark angels failed to anticipate the God Most High planning the resurrection of humankind into immortality and eternity through Jesus.

The angels Jesus visited were the same angels that rebelled previously, along with Lucifer, in an epoch before the age of humankind. Those archons were clearly acknowledged to be the rebels cited in Jude, who lost their positions of authority and who abandoned heaven; they were imprisoned, bound in everlasting chains, and now await the great day of judgment.[53] Those curious positions of authority the rebellious angels lost were in the antediluvian rank referred to as rulers, the *watchers*/*Grigori*/archons, just as God assigned the nations to the archons before the age of Adam, accurately recorded in Deuteronomy. These were indeed the ruling fallen ones, the celestial Mafia, and the misunderstood gods of Mount Olympus and Mount Zaphon in Greek and Mesopotamian mythology.

CHAPTER 13

LUCIFER'S REVENGE

The Lord said to Satan, "Where have you been?" Satan answered the Lord, "From roaming through the earth and going back and forth in it."

—Job 2:2

Humankind's unexplained plight is analogous to an experimental drama being played out before the angelic realm, where the outcome will condemn or justify the angelic rebellion. Will all humankind rebel, bow to Lucifer, and cause its own extinction? Or will the elect still choose God through free choice, even when the mainstream of humankind ushers in the dominion of Lucifer?

This is a drama designed to prove whether or not the ways of Lucifer should be allowed to dominate the physical universe, a drama predetermined to play out over 6,000 years, beginning with the fall of Adam. Such curious background information is generally understood, but one wonders why scriptural documentation is so stingy on this all-important doctrine. Biblical legends, however, recorded the rebellion began when the stars, rebellious angels, did not come forth at their appointed times to announce themselves.[1] The first book of the Secrets of Enoch instructs the reader about Satan's conspiracy, whereby Satan wished to be the equal of God.[2] The book of Hagadah notes Satan vowed to raise his throne above the stars like the Most High,[3] but God cast Satan out of heaven and down to the earth,[4] the great fallen one.

Satan was created a great seraph, cherub, power, and archangel, who was the most beloved of the Creator, with powers almost equal to God. Satan was created with more knowledge and power than any other angel, other than Michael and likely a select few other angels. Satan, then, with his immense greatness, was able to discern the secrets of how the universe was created; he became delirious with a desire to be like God, with the power to create universes, coveting uncontrollable yearnings to sit on the throne of God.

Gonzales-Wipper writes that Satan did not wish to serve God any longer; he craved honor and respect and wanted to be served as God was served, but he was stripped of his crown and fell into the Abyss.[5] Even Celtic fairy legends recorded how the proud angel formed a rebellion in heaven among the angels, where he had been a leading light; the proud angel wanted to found a new kingdom, and many other angels followed him. These rebellious angels, were then locked out of heaven, whereby they flew into the holes of the earth and now live underground,[6] in the other world.

All this, then, is indispensable context for Isaiah and Ezekiel:

> … how you have fallen from heaven, O morning star, son of the dawn! You have been cast down to the earth, you who once laid low nations! You said in your heart, “I will ascend to heaven; I will raise my throne above the stars of God; I will sit enthroned on the mount of the assembly, on those utmost heights of the sacred mountain. I will ascend above the tops of the clouds; I will make myself like the Most High.” But you were brought down to the grave, to the depths of the pit.
>
> —Isaiah 14:12–14

> You were the model of perfection, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. You were in Eden, the garden of God; every precious stone adorned you: ruby, topaz and emerald, chrysolite, onyx and jasper, sapphire, turquoise and beryl. Your settings and mountings were made of gold; on the day that you were created they were prepared. You were anointed as a guardian cherub, for so I ordained you. You were on the holy mount of God; you walked amongst the fiery stones. You were blameless in your ways from the day you were created till wickedness was found in you. Through your widespread trade you were filled with violence, and you sinned. So I drove you in disgrace from the mount of God, and I expelled you, O guardian cherub, from among the fiery stones. Your heart became proud on account of your beauty.
>
> —Ezekiel 28:12–17

The *Popol Vuh*, the sacred book of the Quiche Maya, records a similar account of a similar, powerful god like Lucifer. Evidently, Father Ximenez, the Dominican Friar who first translated the *Popol Vuh*, believed the god

Vucub-Caquix was a kind of Lucifer.[7] Vucub-Caquix was a great and proud god that abused all things created and formed; he thought of himself as the light and the moon. His eyes were like silver, bright like precious stones; his teeth, too, shone like perfect stones, while his nose shone like the moon. Vucub-Caquix sat on a throne of silver that lit the face of the earth when it passed by his throne.[8] This was the Quiche Mayan god that subsequently provided humankind with fire as long as they worshipped him, just as Lucifer did in legends around the world.[9] This was the god who the Quiche Maya, the Olmecs, and the Toltecs worshipped as the Morning Star, The Great Star that rises just before the sun at dawn, the planet Venus. Venus, Vucub-Caquix, was the god/planet that carried the sun on its back; it was the planet/god that the Quiche Maya, the Olmecs, and their ancestors worshipped over everything except the sun.[10]

Vucub-Caquix, the father of two giants (possibly Cain and Emmakha Seth, the founders of a Gnostic race of giants[11]), became vain; his only ambition was to exalt himself over everything and to dominate. Everything that made this god proud and arrogant was then taken away from him by other gods—all the riches, all the emeralds, and all the precious stones, which had been his pride on the earth.[12] Vucub-Caquix was recorded as screaming as he fell to the earth from a large Nantz tree,[13] in an allegory very similar to Lucifer falling from heaven to earth.

The Qur’an further testifies to the validity of the angelic rebellion, when Lucifer fell from both grace and heaven. Lucifer is referred to as *Iblis* and *Satan* in the Qur’an.[14] When Satan refused to bow down to Adam, God indicted Lucifer for being arrogant and a rebel, as well as for being proud.[15] Iblis was then expelled from heaven, but he was permitted respite to deceive as many humans as he can until judgment day.[16] Thus, we now recall images of Lucifer as a powerful, horned, cloven-hoofed being, possessing the tail of a goat, and as the Avatar tempter, the master logician, and the Pan (god), who fell from grace because of his intellectual pride.[17]

Satan later learned that God was preparing to ordain Adam to be the Lord of the earth,[18] the domain of Satan. Moreover, biblical legends suggest that angels sought to prevent the creation of Adam.[19] God had decided to create a “new man,” Adam; He then planned to ordain Adam as the new successor on earth, a vice-regent or deputy.[20] Adam was affirmed the new man, separate and distinct from the humans created in day six. The Qur’an notes God taught Adam all the names of the animals on earth,[21] which the angels somehow did not know, which likely infuriated the rebellious angels even further (The Cow 2:31-33).

Now, Genesis 1:26, which articulates the creation of the people of day six that states, “Let us make man in our image, in our likeness,” represents God and the angels, but the angels opposed so fervently that only God, the Word, and the Spirit then partook in the actual creation of the new man, according to other legends.[22] Angels proposed that day six man only held the possibility for evil and lies;[23] the angels further objected, according to the Qur’an, to the authority of the new Adam, asking, “How can you put someone there who will cause damage and bloodshed, when we celebrate your praise and proclaim your holiness?”[24] God then warned the angels of consequences for their opposition. Many of the angels meekly acceded, permitting God to create Adam, while those who continued to openly oppose were destroyed[25] or exiled forever.

In fact, Ginzberg writes that many of the angelic realms later became murderously jealous of Adam because of the incredible blessings God had bestowed on Adam, but Satan was the most jealous of all angels.[26] The insurgency of the angelic rebellion is, according to Ginzberg, intrinsically and intimately connected to the angelic opposition to the creation of Adam. Thus, the opposition to Adam was fed by the angelic rebellion, which then later fed the conspiracy of Satan’s hatred toward Adam and all the misdeeds later launched against Adam by Satan, the fallen angels, and the progeny of Cain. Thus, the rebellious angels cohabitated with daughters of day six and then betrayed the eternal secrets of heaven—that had forever been preserved in heaven alone—to their illegitimate progeny, the intermixed descendants of Cain and Nephilim.[27]

Please consider that Adam was a mortal mammal created from clay and genetically akin to primates or monkeys, while seraphim angels were powerful, immortal beings created from smokeless fire.[28] Seraphims were pre-Eden, snake-like beings, dragons, complete with wings. Seraphim angels were obviously more akin to and comfortable with extinct dinosaur and reptilian-like life forms from ancient epochs past, which I conclude seraphim angels likely partook in creating, and after their own image, being as seraphims reigned over the earth as archons and rulers. Therefore, the impious seraphim angels regarded Adam, a mammal akin to primates, receiving incredible blessings from God as an insult of immense and unprecedented proportions. Seraphim angels would have persistently and persuasively maintained with God that perhaps a serpent-like being like the crocodile or pre-Eden serpent should have received those blessings and inheritance and not the mammal.

The unique and special blessings offered to Adam went much further than merely being Lord of the Earth. Indeed, one can easily understand how and why the angels continued to rebel and oppose humankind once they fully understood the ramifications of the blessings. Remember, after the angelic rebellion, the earth then fell under the shadow, rule, and domain of Satan and his rebellious compatriots. Remember that Adam was the new man, the improved version from the people of day six; thus, Adam would have inherited all the blessings granted in day six as their legal successor and as the progenitor of all those who would follow who would eventually inherit eternity through Jesus.

The incredible blessings bestowed upon Adam are alluded to in Psalm 8:4–8:

> What is man that you are mindful of him? You made him a little lower than the heavenly beings [angels] and crowned him with glory and honor. You made him ruler over the works of your hands; you put everything under his feet: all the flocks and herds, and the beasts of the field, the birds of the air, and the fish of the seas.

Remember, the earth originally fell under the complete authority of Satan and his celestial archons. This is a breathtaking revelation, and it was a direct assault on the authority of the angelic realm by God, in favor of humans!

Psalm 8:4-8 may leave the Adam’s authority and future inheritance through Jesus somewhat open to speculation, but Hebrews does not. Hebrews 1:2 through 2:14 states this specific doctrine. First, Jesus was appointed heir of all things through creating the universe (1:2). Of Jesus, God states, “Let all God’s angels worship him” (1:6). Angelic beings were also scripturally recorded in Hebrews this way: “Are not all angels ministering spirits sent to serve those who will inherit salvation?” (1:14). It is Jesus, His true church of faithful Christian believers, the faithful of Judah and Israel, the faithful of Islam, and any other human faithful that God deems worthy to receive salvation into eternity, which will be blessed and served by angels in the future. “It is not to angels that He has subjected the world to come, about which we are speaking” (2:5).

Hebrews 2:6–8 then recounts Psalm 8:4–8, noting that “in putting everything under him [Jesus],” God left nothing that is not subject to Him: (2:8). “Jesus, who was made in the flesh a little lower than angels, now crowned with glory and honor because he suffered death” (2:9), now is set above the angels because of his perfection through suffering for God and humankind.[29] Now it is the next verse that includes the saints with Jesus in His elevation over angels, even though they, too, were created a little lower than angels. “Both the one who makes men holy and those who are made holy are the same family. So Jesus is not ashamed to call them brothers” (2:11–12). Through Jesus, the saints, too, will be raised over angels in the world to come. “Since the children have flesh and blood, he too shared in their humanity so that by his death he might destroy him who holds the power of death—that is, the devil” (2:14).

Rebellious angels did not foresee God creating the resurrection of humankind into the eternity and the spirit realm of heaven through the Word, Jesus. God, however, knew Adam would eventually choose independence and death and thus did not abandon Adam and Eve. Rather, God then enacted the Jesus/ Word plan, reconciling God, the Word, and the Holy Spirit with creation.[30] Through the sacrifice of the Word/Jesus, Creator of the physical universe (when God spoke/Word all things were created: Genesis 1:1-31), the resurrection checked the angelic insurrection.

Rebellious angels and Satan knew full well that somehow the mammal primates of Adam’s progeny would eventually be raised above the angelic order. This knowledge had to have added to the jealousy and determination of the rebellious angels to destroy humankind’s opportunity to achieve our destiny in any manner they could muster. You see, if humankind did not succeed in producing, through Israel and Judah, the Messiah and thus the atonement sacrifice of the Word/Creator of the physical universe and His Resurrection, all would have been lost for humankind after the fall of Adam and Eve in Eden, leaving angels as our eternal superiors. We would have been doomed to misery under evil, tyrannical rule from the celestial Mafia, or worse, doomed to nothingness and nonexistence.

This, then, elucidates why Jesus visited the imprisoned fallen angels in the Abyss. Jesus went as proof and Judge that humankind, through Jesus, would, indeed, rise to a higher authority than angels. He bore witness to the impassioned fallen angels that the end had now already been written, even though the fallen angels will be released in the last days to reap havoc upon the earth with the Antichrist and False Prophet. All that is left for the fallen angels is to ensure that as few as saints as possible reach salvation.

Continuing, Satan grew very jealous of Adam, causing Michael to order Satan to bow down, but Satan refused.[31] Satan refused to pay homage before a creature made of dust,[32] and a mammal at that. The Qur'an noted Iblis's refusal to bow to Adam in several of its scriptures,[33] noting that Satan, a being of fire, would not worship a mortal made of clay. Satan was then banished from heaven but was provided respite from the fires of hell by God until judgment day so that he could lead as many humans astray as possible.[34] Iblis was noted as one of the disobedient ones,[35] indeed, suggesting others followed Iblis out of heaven to plot their poorly planned revenge against the descendants of Adam.

Satan grew so jealous, according to Gonzales-Wipper, that he plotted Adam's destruction with ferocious cunning, as Satan's first revenge.[36] God accused Satan, in the Qur'an, to be the sworn enemy and the deceiver of humankind, which was further underscored by Satan's refusal to bow down to Adam.[37] Thus, in the literature of author William Young, creation was then broken (by Satan) through humankind's free choice, the choice to seek knowledge through independence, separate and away from God[38]—Satan's first revenge.

Satan, the seraphim, serpent-like cherub, employed a snake to trick Eve and Adam through Eve, through consuming the forbidden fruit of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil so that they could become like gods.[39] The Qur'an additionally notes Satan fooled Adam and Eve through persuading them that God was deliberately preventing them from becoming immortal,[40] like other beings, such as angels and God Himself.

The capacity for rational and ethical judgment (reason/wisdom) is the first divine attribute held by God, according to biblical scholar J. R. Porter. Immortality, the second divine attribute, was then removed from the seed of Adam, for neither Adam nor Eve could eat from the Tree of Life once they were ostracized and driven from the Garden of Eden.[41] Humans now declare good and evil apart from divine knowledge and are thus poor judges.[42] All this then opened the door to the religion of *gnosis*, which discards faith while seeking to learn the wisdom to discipline knowledge with reason.

Humankind chose independence from God, venturing down a different path than intended for humankind, damaging humankind meanwhile and until the end of this age. When Adam and Eve chose to eat the forbidden fruit, they unwittingly divorced the Spirit of heaven from the physical flesh of the earth; Adam later died, expelling the breath of free choice.[43] All evil flows through independence; we have been free to define our own good and evil for a time, but evil is the chaos dominating this age, and it was created through human free choice at Eden.[44]

Rebellious seraphim *watchers* added to the infamy through creating immortals on earth, where God had ordained only mortal seed after the fall of Adam and Eve.[45] Gonzales-Wipper goes on to write that Satan was still consumed with hatred for God, so he tempted the seraphim *watchers* to sin with the daughters of men; this was Satan's second revenge.[46] He did so by adorning daughters of Cain with beautiful clothes, make-up, and jewelry. Satan then led the beautiful daughters of Cain to Mount Hermon to entice the sons of God.[47]

Enoch recorded that the fallen angels transgressed the Word of God, the law of heaven, when they agreed to have sex with mortal women.[48] Hebraic thought contends that the human and the divine ought not to be confused; otherwise, the entire structure of the physical world is violated.[49] The introduction of the immortal spirit into mortal flesh was the violation against God and his laws of creation that *Unger's* refers to. Gonzales-Wipper notes this heavenly law this way: "and behold, the concourse between angels and man is forbidden by the Creator."[50] This violation became known in *The Secret Book According to John* as the "counterfeit spirit" designed to create immortal giants to beguile humanity and lead them both astray and away from God to, in effect, enslave God's creation,[51] which they in fact did and thus caused the deluge.

The interjection into creation of the Nephilim was a clear violation of the rules set out for God's free choice accommodation to humankind, resulting, resulting in God removing this flagrant foulness, imprisoning the impassioned violators. Peter described this prison as gloomy dungeons built to hold angels until the time of judgment (2 Pet. 2:4). Jude concurs, describing a place where sexually deviant angels were imprisoned in darkness (Jude 1:6). Not all the rebel angels were sentenced to prison, however. Only those who violated the creative laws of the natural order received punishment, likely the legendary 200. *Watchers*, according to Collins, were forced to watch the slaughter of their children via the deluge before being cast into the Abyss of fire.[52]

Therefore, two classes of fallen angels exist: the angels who were unimpassioned and still follow Satan as their leader, creating evil, and those who copulated with human females. Those infamous fallen angels were not identical with demons, for demons are the offspring of fallen angels and human females, and thus demons are the immortal spirits of giants whose bodies died but whose illegally procreated spirits roam the earth even to this day, because they are forbidden to enter heaven. They are causing evil until the day of judgment at the end of this age, when they, too, will be cast into the lake of fire.[53] Because their bodies would start to die, many of the original Nephilim committed suicide rather than remaining in a painful, pathetic, and misery ridden existence of being half alive and have dead.[54] Remember, though, demons are not fallen angels but rather scurrilous spirits, the apostate offspring of angels.

The angels described in Jude did not maintain their original estate but abandoned their proper abode in heaven; they were the *watchers*[55] that copulated with humans. Many Bible teachers hold that the Abyss only confines *watchers* who cohabitated with mortal women and were imprisoned in the nether world as a special punishment for their crime of breaking the God-ordained orders of being.[56] Promiscuous angels were bound like burning mountains into a deep Abyss.[57] The angels of destruction (which include Abaddon/Apollyon, the destroyer of the last days[58]) were assigned to the Abyss, a place located at the ends of heaven, so as to be prevented from sinning against humankind again until the last days of this age.[59]

This requires, then, that there are still unimpassioned dark angels working their deceptions and wickedness in our world, even today, albeit within the accepted rules of engagement as permitted by God, whatever those rules of engagement may be. This is a point that ought to be understood by all: that indeed demons and fallen angels were, and are, free for a time to actively deceive humankind, enticing them to rebel against God. The biblical support for demons not being condemned to the prison lies in Luke, where many demons who called themselves “Legion” begged for Jesus not to send them to the Abyss, where many of their coconspirators were already shut in.[60] The New Testament is burgeoning with examples of demons active in their evil pursuits.[61]

The second book of the Secrets of Enoch described a place "prepared for eternal inheritance" that must be the angelic prison, the Abyss. This is a place where rebellious *watchers*, branded as angelic apostates, are held and tortured. Angels are left hanging in cruel bondage; they are dark looking, weeping incessantly, for they are being tortured, awaiting the great judgment. It is a cruel, dark place of gloom, where no light shines, save the murky glow of fire continually flaring up. Fire is described to be everywhere, with a river of fire flowing through it. The brooding angels both shiver and thirst in this angelic hell, for both ice and fire are all around. This is a place of merciless torture, a place prepared for the sinful.[62] Biblical legends record that these sexually deviant and rebellious angels are to suffer for seventy generations, bound with chains of iron and pinned under jagged mountain rocks.[63] One wonders as to the connection between Lamech's seventy generations and these seventy generations.

The Abyss is a shaft described in Revelation that conceals a fiery furnace designed to torment immortal beings,[64] as a precursor to their eventual, everlasting torment in the lake of fire at the great day of judgment.[65] This is a terrifying place, impossible for fallen angels to escape from, until the key to its entrance is brought forth by the fifth angel in the last days,[66] to unlock those evil beings. Then they will weave their diabolical webs during the climax of the 6,000-year human drama.

According to *Nelson's*, the Abyss describes the prison for disobedient spirits; it is the bottomless pit or chaotic deep and is Sumerian in origin.[67] Similarly, *The New Testament In Today's English* defines the Abyss as a very deep hole in the earth, where, according to ancient Jewish tradition, the evil spirits are imprisoned.[68] The Abyss is part of the legendary otherworld of fairy lore. It is the same place where Satan will be condemned to for a thousand years in a future age known as the millennium.[69] Satan will then be kept away from humankind for 1,000 years, providing God and Jesus a limited epoch to clearly offer their righteous alternative to the previous 6,000 years dominated by Satan and his counterparts that delivered only violence, destruction, and despair. The last 1,000 years of the epoch of Adam, through its uncompromising success and through its own self-testimony will be the final indicttment condemning those fallen angels to eternal torment.

All this, then, explicates the enigmatic passage in Corinthians 6:1–3: “Do you not know that we will judge angels?” Perhaps the saints will be permitted to judge all fallen angels for their crimes against humanity, for the angelic rebellion seems to be intimately interconnected with the creation of Adam and all the horrors of our age. Both the future of humankind and all the fallen angels soon have a rendezvous with destiny, the tribulation period, the time of Jacob’s trouble.[70] This will be the time Jesus intercedes, preventing utter annihilation of the earth and the utter extinction of humankind.[71]

The angelic rebellion is a required backdrop, providing context and clarification for the first Apocalypse (flood), Nephilim, bloodlines of the Antichrist, and our destiny. Additional testimony, with indispensable indictments, lie hidden within the divergent legends of polytheism from around the world.

SECTION II: The Golden Age

THE GLOBAL TESTIMONY FOR THE OTHER RACE

CHAPTER 14

THE BLACK HEADS

Male and female he created them. God blessed them and said to them, "Be fruitful and increase in number; fill the earth and subdue it."

—Genesis 1:27–28

Why does Scripture clearly underscore that the flood catastrophe did not resolve the Nephilim abomination? Does this confounding conclusion of paradoxical biblical doctrine suggest a major contradiction in biblical consistency?

The Genesis flood narrative instructs the reader that all life on the planet was eradicated, save Noah, his sons, their family, and all the animals in the ark, which were the only land animals that survive.[1] But the Bible also recorded that the Nephilim lived both before and after the flood,[2] a fact further supported by Israelite encounters with Nephilim more than a thousand years after the flood. How could the Nephilim have survived the deluge? A satisfactory answer, or theory, to account for this ostensible contradiction is demanded; the divinely inspired Word of God recorded by His prophets must be accurate and free from contradictions.

We must first consider some hair-splitting interpretations of Genesis to unsnarl this apparent contradiction. Indeed, Genesis does state that God wiped out all forms of land creatures with the flood (6:12 and 22), but this could be thought of in terms of all of the natural order of land creatures created by God and not the Nephilim created by the fallen angels. One could determine God's actions as eliminating the contaminated natural order of beings from the earth to start anew and all but eradicating much of the unnatural order of beings as merely a side benefit. Perhaps, then, not all Nephilim were destroyed and some managed to survive on their own accord, or perhaps they survived by unauthorized help provided by their corrupt procreators. This is a logical line of reasoning, accounting for free choice of rebellion temporarily trumping God's desire, which pantheistic mythology has dutifully recorded over and over in various cultures around the world.

Another possibility is that not all life was destroyed by the flood. Even though Genesis seems to imply otherwise, it is not too hard to reason then, just as Nephilim survived that it is perhaps possible that some humans, some animals, and some Nephilim miraculously did survive, that the statement was general and not absolute. The notion other humans survived the flood resolves otherwise unaccounted for races encountered by Israelites during the exodus that we will detail later. In this spirit, understand that Scripture's Old Testament reference points were specific to surviving Sethites, not other races and Nephilim. This is the context in which the literal application of Scripture describes Sethian survival. Old Testament Scripture ought to be applied to only Sethians and their narrow reference points and only to their free choice, choosing God and His redemptive plan to reconcile creation through the Messiah, not from the universal perspective, reflecting all other surviving peoples. Even though both alternatives are reasonable responses to the conundrum, I cannot accept these explanations without further examination, simply because it leaves the Bible ambiguous and possibly subject to interpretation.

Thirdly, it is still possible that fallen angels procreated once more, sometime after the flood. Scripture does not inform us of how many times the violation against creation took place, only that those impassioned fallen angels who partook were locked away in the Abyss. Julian Morgenstern, who wrote in *The Hebrew Union College Annual of 1939*, suggested there were two separate occasions when angels fell from heaven: the first from lust and the second from pride, meaning the second procreation of Nephilim was performed deliberately to spite God,[3] which occurred after the flood. Let us then examine Genesis 6:4 a little more closely, with all this in mind:

"The Nephilim were on the earth in those days—and also afterward—when the sons of God went to the daughters of men and had children by them."

Certainly one can interpret this excerpt to mean that the union of angels and humans before the flood created Nephilim and that somehow some survived the flood, placing the Noah account into conflict with the Nephilim narrative, even though both are, in fact, part of the same narrative. Or one can read the excerpt just as it was recorded: Nephilim roamed the earth both before and after the flood, and the sons of God copulated with the daughters of men both before and after the flood. The verse clearly states that the fallen angels went to women in the antediluvian epoch and then again after. Hence the most logical and biblically acceptable solution to the enigma is that some of the remaining fallen angels repeated the same violation as in pre-flood times and that they did so the second time in an act of revenge and spite against God, as opposed to the first time, which was motivated by lust.

I cannot make the grandiose statement that this is the factual answer to the enigma, because Scripture is void of further information on this topic that specifically details the postdiluvian violation. It is, however, the soundest theory that keeps the integrity of the Bible intact. However the second violation hypothesis opens up a Pandora's Box of possibilities and probabilities. In Sodom and Gomorrah, sexual perversion partnered with Nephilim, producing divine judgment by fire, and producing a likely suspect for a second violation to creation. The only certain conclusion as it pertains to this isolated and limited piece of Scripture is that Nephilim existed both before and after the deluge, possibly via two separate violations to the laws of creation. Regrettably, this explanation does not provide for surviving human refugees from the four races of humankind scattered around the globe. We will investigate later additional races the Bible, in truth, documents as surviving the flood.

A fourth alternative solution to this riddle possibly hides within the legends of other societies of antiquity and relates to the first explanations. This fourth alternative is pertinent with respect to their religious pantheons and, particularly, to their intimate relationship with giants. The Nephilim narrative inexplicably contains a consistent, common history, no matter which reference to prehistory one chooses to study. All are distinct from the Sethian account, perspective, and reference points. These divergent, polytheist legends are elemental pieces filling in the amnesia gaps of prehistory.

Sumerian legends are employed today to discredit biblical accounts. Sumerian legends are overtly utilized because they predate any current biblical records, even though this does not prove they are the source documents for the Bible. Frankly, the Sumerian tablets are merely older surviving records and nothing more.

According to Sumerian traditions derived from the Assyrian tablets, the first humans were known as the "Black Heads."[4] Although most of the antediluvian clay tablets have been lost to history, many survived to the time of Ashurbanipal, circa 668–633 B.C.E. Ashurbanipal noted that he possessed antediluvian tablets in his library, boasting that he was "learned" in the translation of those precious, ancient Sumerian texts.[5] He is the first known king to collect clay tablets into a large library at Nineveh, collecting 30,000 tablets, including the *Epic of Gilgamesh*.[6]

What was most intriguing about the Black Heads was that they were the antediluvian Sumerians, according to Alford.[7] Cahill notes that, in fact, the Sumerians actually called themselves the "Black-Headed People." One wonders whether the Black Head was both a specifically descriptive and analogous appellation in contrast to the blond- and red-headed Nephilim. Black Heads recorded in their legends that all tools, weapons, and marvelous inventions were provided to them by the gods.[8] Evidently, even the Sumerian language is completely distinct and unrelated to any of the language families of the world,[9] suggesting perhaps that it, too, came from the gods. Sumerian tablets clearly state the Sumerians received all of their knowledge of historical events before civilized man was created, directly from the heavenly Anunnaki gods.[10] This declaration clearly suggests a heretofore biblically unaccounted for period of uncivilized nomadic Black Heads and a specific turning point of history towards civilization.

Again, one further wonders whether the Black Heads were, in fact, part of the race of people created in day six. Consider the case of the iceman mummy discovered in the Alps, dated to circa 3300–4000 B.C.E. The iceman's civilization, and all other antediluvian civilizations stretching around the globe, void of the physical presence of the dark angels, remained stalled at a technological state of the nomadic hunter and gatherer. According to Bauer, no story written or otherwise emerges out of Neolithic man—only a pattern of life.[11] Now compare Neolithic man of the same era to the Sumerians that arrived in Mesopotamia, circa 3500–4500 B.C.E., and established writing, circa 3200 B.C.E.[12] Hence, civilizations such as Sumeria, Egypt, and Atlantis that liberally intermingled with the gods suddenly and inextricably appeared out of thin air as highly advanced, technical civilizations built around an agrarian economy in which the people dwelled in cities.

The Black Heads were created at a *Nippur*, known in legend as the place where heaven bonds with the earth. The first Black Heads were two interesting individuals named Ulligarra and Zalgarra, from which all Black Heads derived.[13] Black Heads were created in plural: male and female at the same time, with a mandate to multiply in great numbers. Their posterity's purpose was to till the soil, to erect buildings, and to serve the Anunnaki[14] (heavenly Anunnaki), a curious, shadowy group in themselves. Black Heads also thought of themselves as the "tenants of the garden of the gods."[15] If then, Black Heads were indubitably part of the race of day six, then Cain and the fallen angels transformed the Sumerian sect from a nomadic hunter and gatherer society into an agrarian-based society. Cain, Enoch, and fallen angels then transformed the Sumerians into a society of builders and masons, worshipping the Seven Sacred Sciences, along with their false gods, just as Craft legends recorded.

This conclusion is a consistent thesis we have already covered, the hypothesis that Cain and his progeny, guided by dark angles, reigned over the people of day six, providing the Sumerians with Cain's Royal Dragon bloodlines and providing the Sumerians with the spurious Seven Sacred Sciences. All this consistently accounts for the sudden, baffling, and instantaneous rise of the Sumerian civilization; whereas, secular history can neither adequately, nor intelligently account for this.

In addition to this avant-garde Black Head supposition, a Babylonian mural discovered in the palace of Mari city along the Euphrates River in Syria flaunts a painting of the Babylonian Eden that is surprisingly similar in its features to the biblical Eden. The mural has been dated to circa 1750 B.C.E., and it depicts two mythical beings, winged cherubim, just as in Eden, guarding the entrance to the garden. The mural depicts four streams flowing outwards from a jar,[16] likely representing the four streams of Eden: the Pishon, the Gihon, the Tigris, and the Euphrates.[17] The upper scene depicts a king (likely Cain) being invested by the Mesopotamian fertility goddess, Ishtar, to whom Eve has been closely associated in many myths and legends. The Babylonian Eden was known as the “Land of Dilmun” in the Sumerian myth *Enki and Ninhursag*; it was a place where sickness and old age were unknown concepts, a place where the god, Enki, created rivers from beneath the earth to sustain the garden.[18]

In his recreation of antediluvian history from a variety of sources and from his own conjecture, Zecharia Sitchin wrote that, indeed, there were two distinct creations of humanoids through gene manipulation of primitive hominids.[19] The first creation, day six, produced intelligent beings designed to reproduce rapidly: nomads, hunters, and gatherers.[20] They proliferated beyond all expectations and later were drafted by the gods to toil as a massive workforce in exchange for consistent rations of food.[21]

At some point much later in time, Adapa and Titi were procreated through a selected female from among the Blackheads of day six, as well as the god Enki. They were beings that were regarded as far superior in intelligence and speech, eerily echoing Cain’s alternative creation we will cover later. This higher form of humanoid was thus considered to be a civilized being; whereas, the Black Heads from day six were held in much less regard. Adapa, Titi, and their posterity were erudite agrarians from the beginning.[22]

Does all this ring familiar with that of the Genesis account concerning Adam, Eve, Cain, and the people of day six?[23] Connecting Cain to the people of day six and the Black Heads exponentially increases the likelihood that the Sumerians partook in the second creation of Nephilim.

The first notable concern in the Black Head account, though, is the breath of the gods that was breathed into Ulligara and Zalgarra. It is true that Adam was given the breath of God,[24] but the ultimate meaning of both stories was very different indeed. In the Sumerian tradition, the breath of the gods was designed to transform the Black Head parents into god-like demigods, or even fully evolved gods, a pantheistic concept likely reflecting Lulawa-Lilith and Cain’s infusion of royal bloodlines from their alternative and little understood heavenly creation. Adam and Eve were not considered gods, even though they contained the immortal breath of life.

One wonders whether or not the descendants of Cain and Lulawa-Lilith, such as Enoch, Lamech, Tubal-Cain, and Naamah were in truth Nephilim and if they were, in fact, initially immortal. The Sumerian mythology appears to strongly advocate with Ulligarra and Zalgarra a distinct strain of Nephilim directly connected to Cain and the people of day six, but distinct from the Nephilim created on Mount Hermon by dark angels. One wonders, then, whether or not the Ulligara and Zalgarra legends were the Black Head recollection of Cain and Lulawa-Lilith usurping kingship over the people of day six. And did Cain and Lulawa-Lilith infuse a unique variety of Nephilim bloodlines into the people of day six?

On top of all these questions and facts, also understand that Mesopotamian mythology additionally recorded a parallel flood myth, similar to that of Noah and the ark, just as they recorded a parallel creation myth. It is my supposition that both are nothing more than a Sumerian account recording Nephilim prehistory from a competing perspective designed to discredit Sethian prehistory and bloodlines.

CHAPTER 15

ISIS, ISHTAR, GAEA, AND NINKHURSAG

Adam named his wife Eve, because she would become the mother of all the living.

—Genesis 3:20

Greek mythology suggests the god Uranus, Father Sky, cohabitated with Mother Earth, affectionately remembered as Gaea. Beings known as Titans came from this unnatural sexual union.[1]

Are Greek and Mediterranean mythologies merely a retelling of the Nephilim and antediluvian narrative from a polytheist perspective?

Gaea/Gaia was a giantess[2] from whom her offspring accepted their name. Uranus was both husband and son to Gaea in Greek mythology.[3] Gaea conceived the original twelve Titans, three cyclopes, and 300 giants from her sexual encounters with gods. Six of the Titans were male, while six were female, known as Titanides. They were regarded to be a new race of gods. The males were recorded as Coeus/Koios, Crius/Kreios/Creius, Kronos/Cronus, Hyperion, Japetus/Iapetus, and Okeanus/Oceanus. The Titanides were named Mnemosyne, Phoebe/Phiobe, Rhea/Rheia, Tethys, Theia, and Themis; their names and number vary in legends including: Euriba/Euribe, Clymene/Klymene, and Dion.[4]

One giant, *Gyges*, meaning “giant,” is the source word for “giant” and “gigantic.” Gyges was one of three Hekatoncheires that were created by a union between Uranus and Gaea.[5] Boccacio, circa 1313–1375 C.E., listed other classes of giants that included Briareus, Typhon, Typheus, Enceladus, Egon, Atlas, Astreus, and Alous, who in some schools of thought were the siblings of the Furies, cyclopes, and the hundred-handed giants.[6]

Josephus first recognized at the turn of the first millennium C.E. that misdeeds of fallen angels closely paralleled the legends of the Greek gods and Titans[7] recorded in epics like *Theogany*. Just as in its parallel Genesis 6 account, *Theogany* focused on the rise and fall of the antediluvian Golden Age, the coming of the giant races, and the universal flood.[8] The word *Gigantes*, also known as *Gegenius*, translates as "earth born," just as *Gaea* was "Mother Earth."[9] All Titans of old had the same origin; they were earth born (from Gaea) in Greek mythology[10] and from the seed of the gods; they were beings from heaven (the spirit) and beings from the earth (the flesh), just as Nephilim were. *This is the most important and most influential doctrine of antiquity to remember.*

The Egyptian pantheon, too, included a similar legend with respect to antediluvian mythology and should be considered under the same light. Isis was considered the Mother Womb of the Earth. Isis was impregnated by the god Osiris/Re,[11] producing the god Horus and the demigod dynasty of Egyptian prehistory, which ruled over the kingdoms of Egypt for millennia. Isis, too, according to Gardner, was known as The Great Mother.[12]

Ninharsag/Ninkhursag (also known as Nintu and Ninmah) was a person whose name translated as "Lady of the Mountain," thereby suggesting that a god impregnated a lady of the mountain, producing demigods.[13] *Nintu* was nothing more than an epithet for "Mother Goddess" that Ninkhursag was also known as.[14] Ninkhursag merged with the earth goddess to become "Lady of the Mountain."[15] She was also the midwife to the gods, the Mother Womb.[16] According to David Rohl, Ninkhursag was not only the midwife of the gods but also she was known as the Womb Goddess, just as her name, *Ninkhursag*, is Sumerian for "Mother Earth."[17] Therefore, Greek, Egyptian, and Sumerian mythology recorded various copulations of gods with Mother Earth, women of the earth. Just as they did in Genesis, these illicit sexual unions produced giants as their progeny.

Another name for "Ninharsag/Ninkhursag" was *Nin-Ki*, meaning "Lady Earth," whose sons were the mighty men anointed into kingship, the (earthly) Anunnaki. Ki was the Earth Mother, the mother of Enki and consort to Anu,[18] just as Uranus was both husband and son of Gaea. *Ki*, according to Sitchin, translates as “the earth.” Ninki/Ninmah was likely the earth goddess Ninkhursag merged with; thus, Ninkhursag was an epithet for *Nin-Ki/ Ninmah*.[19] Ninkhursag was alternatively known as well as the Lady of Life, symbolic of the womb, and Lady of the Embryo, while a text called *Enki and the World Order* named Ninkhursag the Midwife of the Country.[20]

Ninkhursag was celebrated as the Serpent Lady in Sumerian literature, denoting her as the prevailing Grail/Dragon queen of the Ring Lords. Ninkhursag’s womb became famous within Grail, Dragon, Fairy, and Ring culture and with Legomin literature as the Messianic succession of the uterine womb, the Chalice of the Grail Queen, which marked the perpetual dragon succession and the maternal blood.[21] Ninkhursag’s matrilineal blood, the *Rosi Crucis*, also known alternatively as the “Nectar of Supreme Excellence” and “Star Fire,”[22] are additional important allegories that I will cover later.

The rings were the primary devices of the Anunnaki gods, who established earthly kingship from 4000 B.C.E.[23] What is important to note here is that Ninkhursag/Mother Earth copulated with the god Anu or Enki, both gods at the apex of the Sumerian pantheon, producing mighty men of renown for kingships, which became in lore the earth born Anunnaki, very much like the Nephilim of Genesis. The Grand Assembly of the Anunnaki held the ring(s) of kingship at Nippur to bind the Anunnaki kings in unity.[24] The earthly Anunnaki were the illegal, evil potentates and kings of the antediluvian epoch. The infamous rings of kingship were the basis for Tolkien’s *Lord of the Rings* trilogy, as well as a plethora of alternative literature and tales, including the Gau’old’s transport rings allegorized into the *Star Gate* television series.

The Canaanites also held that Astarte was the wife of the god Bel/Baal. Astarte held appellations, including the Great Mother of Fertility, the Queen of Heaven, and the Great Mother,[25] just as her other counterparts in the Greek, Egyptian, and Mesopotamian pantheons did. Astarte was also known in other Middle Eastern pantheons as Astoreth and Asherah,[26] as well as Athtart, Ashtoreth, Ashtaroth, and most notably, Ishtar in Akkad,[27] Assyria, and Babylon.[28] Ishtar was further known in antediluvian Sumeria as Innana.[29] Ishtar, not surprisingly, was the female human who slept with the fallen angel Azazel/Shemyaza, from whom she learned the true name of

God.[30] One then wonders whether Baal, the Canaanite storm god, or Uranus was Azazel.

The term "Mother Earth" represented in ancient mythology throughout the world was the female womb that produced a race of giants through a union with a (god-like) male force.[31] Mother Earth is additionally affirmed in other cultures as the Spider Woman, Hard Beings Woman, and Earth Mother.[32] All these legends and myths appear to be the same as the Genesis 6 account, and all appear to be Genesis-based. The same allegorical concept was underscored in the little known Sumerian epic *Erra and Ishum*: "When Anu, the king of the gods, impregnated Earth, she bore the seven gods for him, and he named them Sebetti,"[33] the famous, divine (angelic) seven sages of mythology.

The Anunnaki were the unnamed sons of Anu, commonly known to be the Anunnaki gods, sons of God; they then fathered additional Titans on the mysterious Mountain of Heaven and Earth,[34] again echoing the sexual violations that occurred at Genesis's Mount Hermon. Anunnaki were thought to be of both heaven and earth,[35] in the same manner that Nephilim were beings of the heavenly spirit and beings of earthly flesh. A full understanding of the Anunnaki appellation brings this to bear: *An* was Sumerian for "heaven," just as Anu was the god of heaven, and *ki* was Sumerian for "earth."[36] All this Anunnaki etymological allegory coalesces with Ninkhursag's various etymological metaphors to transliterate the creation of Sumerian giant demigods as being created from the gods of heaven and the women of the earth.

According to Gardner, 300 Anunnaki gods of heaven spawned 300 Igigi gods. The Igigi god remained on the earth (as the earthly Anunnaki), and the heavenly 300 Anunnaki resided in heaven,[37] a legend very similar to the 200 *watchers* from heaven descending to Mt. Hermon to engage in sex with the daughters of Cain, producing the Nephilim. Rohl concluded the newly created Anunnaki/Igigi were indeed the earth-bound gods (Nephilim) that were of flesh and blood; they did not dwell with the heavenly Igigi/Anunnaki gods.[38] Sitchin believes the heavenly Anunnaki contained two sects: the Anunnaki, who dwelled on earth, and 300 Igigi that dwelled on Mars. It was these 300 Igigi gods from Mars in Sitchin's version who swore a solemn oath to kidnap human females to procreate another higher form of humanoid in the Cedar Mountains.[39]

The earthly Anunnaki were the mountain gods that Rohl said later descended to the plains to intermarry and dwell among the Cainites, becoming one people.[40] In Sitchin's version, the Children of the Rocketship were expelled to go live among the interbred Black Heads (of day six) led by the progeny of Cain.[41] In Alford's version, Anu gave birth to the Anunnaki/ Igigi gods in the Mountain of Heaven and Earth and then cast them down from the "Mountain of Heaven,"[42] in a similar fashion that Rohl describes Enoch (the Evil) leading the giants down to the people of the plain. This, then, connects Enoch the Evil as a likely part of the first race of Nephilim and, distinct from the Nephilim of Genesis 6, as the nefarious individual who persuaded the Black Heads of day six to accept into their civilization the newly formed second race of Nephilim.

Anunnaki is further broken down to *anu*, or "father," and *nnaki*, or "sons of Anu," which would be the same as sons of God,[43] for Anu was the head god of the Sumerian pantheon. Another variation to the meaning of *Anunnaki* was "those lofty ones" (angels), the heavenly Anunnaki, who came from heaven to earth[44] again, just as Genesis recorded the *watchers*.

Sumerian legends insist upon the existence of the heavenly Anunnaki, crediting them with being patrons, founders, teachers, justices, technologists, and king makers,[45] paralleling fallen angels of biblical legends. The title "Anunnaki" was applied to both the gods of heaven and their Igigi progeny. Baffling and unexplainable events from prehistory make it clear that dark angels and the Seven Sacred Sciences were clearly responsible for the rapid advancements that occurred in antediluvian Sumeria, Greece, and Egypt, as well as other mythical civilizations like as Atlantis and Mu.

According to Rohl, it was decided that in this new antediluvian society, the newcomers, the earthly Anunnaki, were to be the rulers or kings, while the Cainite progeny intermingled with the people of day six were to be the priests and sages, just as Enoch/Oannes was remembered as the high priest of Enki in Sumerian lore. The earthly Anunnaki were the Ring Lords of Nippur. The obligation of the *luga*/king, meaning "big man" (giant), was to govern and provide security for the land, while the Cainites/Enochians/Sumerians/ Black Heads (of a specific clan or Snake Order) were to be the spiritual leaders, communicating with the gods.[46] Earthborn Anunnaki were regarded as archons and rulers, but not full-fledged gods,[47] i.e. immortal Nephilim. Even though they were initially regarded as leaders, the Anunnaki eventually assumed the role of (earthly) gods.[48] The earthly Anunnaki were the despotic potentates of Genesis, who imposed Enochian mysticism upon humankind through tyranny.

One wonders about the similarities recorded across the ocean by the Quiche Maya in the *Popol Vuh*. The father god, Qahol, and the mother god, Alom, produced a race, known as the Lords of Xibalba, who were the blood enemies of humankind and who incited all forms of evil and violence.[49] Xibalba were a great race, holding great authority in the ancient days; the Lords of Xibalba were not gods, but they viewed themselves as gods.[50] They possessed horrible countenances, resembling owls' faces that frightened people; they were considered forms of vampires and demons living in a home for ghosts and phantoms.[51]

The Grand Assembly of the Anunnaki met at the temple of Nippur, where Ulligara and Zalgarra were created, and where their primary function was to appoint kings of the Ring Lord tradition. In fact, in the epoch before the flood, Gardner noted that operative kings of Sumer were all Nephilim (Igigi/Anunnaki), appointed by the heavenly Anunnaki (*watchers* from heaven). The mighty men of Sumer, just as Genesis 6 recorded Nephilim as mighty men and heroes of old, were all known as the sons of Lady Earth (Ninkhursag); they were all anointed into kingship[52] at Nippur. Jim Marr writes that the Anunnaki of heaven created the concept of kingship to control the inferior humans;[53] whereas, the Sethites had no kings. Enochian mysticism was invented for the purpose of controlling the mundane mortals in partnership with the Nephilim kings.

All legendary Sumerian city-states (that the Nephilim potentates reigned over) were created by the gods in time immemorial, according to Cahill.[54] Thus, the Sumerians may have only inherited the cities, and if so, the antediluvian cities may have been much older than the epoch of Adam, which archaeology has relentlessly set forth. Jericho, for example, has been dated as far back as 10,000 B.C.E. This notion of an epoch of builder gods before the creation of humankind was recorded on Sumerian tablets:

> After the lofty crown and the throne of kingship had been lowered from heaven, he perfected the rites and the exalted divine laws…. Founded the five cities…. In pure places, called their names, apportioned them as cult centers. The first of these cities was Eridu, the second Badtibira, the third Larak, the fourth Sippar, the fifth Shurrupak.[55]

We should not forget the city of Ur/Uruk in this august list of antediluvian city-states of Sumeria. Ur/Uruk was the home to the Temple of the Moon and the Sumerian moon cult.[56]

Now let us turn to the mysterious *Myth of Zu* for additional connections. Zu was an Anunnaki born of the earth; he brought chaos to heaven and earth by seizing the Tablets of Destiny from Nippur, taking away the Enlilship and suspending the norms. We are introduced in this legend to the god, Enlil, the legendary adversary to Enki, and the Sumerian god most instrumental in bringing about the flood. Pantheists disingenuously associate Enlil with Adonai, God of the Israelites and Christians.

The ancient city of *E-Kur*, meaning "mountain house," contained the temple of Enlil. The E-Kur temple stood right beside the Dur-An-Ki, a ziggurat known as the "Bond of Heaven and Earth."[57] The place where heaven bonded with the earth was the center of the earth, known also as Nippur.[58] The ancient Akkadians believed that Kharsag was a sacred mountain, and their myths connected it with the "Silver Mountain." Kharsag was described in the *Epic of Gilgamesh* as a place where heaven and earth met.[59] This then pulls all the Sumerian allegories neatly together, thus connecting all Sumerian mythologies with the balance of the Mediterranean and worldwide mythologies, where gods recognized as Father Sky, or mountains, spawned with human females known as Mother Earth.

Three closely related themes from all ancient allegories ring clear: first, that giants were all born of Mother Earth, and second, they were born of the Heavenly Mountain, a very sacred mountain located at the center of the earth, where heaven meets the earth. The compound term "the Mountain of Heaven and Earth" is merely the allegorical sexual union of the Mountain of Heaven and Mother Earth. Gods of the eastern sacred mountain were honored as the kings of The Heavenly Navel, in the Dao tradition, representing the center of the earth,[60] in an identical manner to Nippur and Atlantis.

Gods of mythology were always symbolized to be planets (or stars) and closely associated with mountains, just as Zeus was equated with Jupiter and dwelled in Olympus. In a similar manner, Daoism recorded five Element Emperors that were five primordial gods; when the universe split into heaven and earth, they were transformed into five elements that represent the five planets of the sky and five sacred mountains of the earth.[61] One wonders: could these five mountains have been the Mount Hermons scattered among the five continents?

Mountains associated with gods explains why ziggurats and pyramids were built in honor of their gods, after the image of mountains, where they could rejoin the heavens (the planets and or stars) with their earthly, allegorical counterpart, and also creating a gateway to the gods, just as Babel was built for the same purpose. Thus, ziggurats and pyramids were believed built to memorialize the famous giants and their fathers, the dark angels. *Ziggurat* is literally translated as “towers rising into the sky”; they were regarded and designated as sacred mountains, and/or hills of heaven.[62]

The fascinating translation to all this global allegory is that ostensibly in almost all pantheistic legends, angels acknowledged as gods, planets, stars, and mountains of heaven cohabitated with human women, known metaphorically in various manners as Mother Earth, which produced giant demigods as offspring of this unholy union. The offspring became antediluvian heroes, men of renown, just as Genesis testifies to, and all took place on holy mountains.

CHAPTER 16

THE GREAT WORLD MYTH

> *Only Noah was left, and those with him in the ark. The waters flooded the earth for a hundred and fifty days.*
>
> —Genesis 7:23–24

Why are Mediterranean deluge and giant myths not restricted to Mediterranean cultures?

Frank Joseph notes the deluge cataclysm was a common heritage throughout the world and throughout humanity—that it is the one great world myth[1], which without explanation, bizarrely binds us all to one birthright. The Old Testament version is but one of over 500 different and distinct recollections of the same set of events.[2] It is from this line of thought, then, that one is required to understand the word “cataclysm” stems from the Greek word *kataklysmos*; it was always specifically assigned to the deluge event.[3]

Seemingly, deluge and Nephilim memories were safeguarded among the diverse peoples of the world dispersed from Babel and/or the far-flung peoples documented to have survived the flood in other traditions. It is my contention that the deluge is the most prominent historical fact binding all nations, all cultures, and all peoples of this world together to one common heritage. The uncanny and unaccountable consistency of memories echoing the deluge conflagration of cataclysmic events, the Nephilim, the rebellion of the Nephilim, and the early postdiluvian resettlement of the globe held within the diverse mythologies around the world is not a mere coincidence.

Historian Wise Bauer noted that even though science has documented many global catastrophes, only the deluge resonates down the ages in all cultures; at some point water threatened man's fragile existence. She further noted historians cannot ignore the flood, as it is the closest universal story the human race has.[4] These consistent global themes must have derived from the epicenter of Babel and with the disbursement of the people from Babel, along with the surviving and divergent Cainite-led peoples of day six and the surviving Nephilim.

Certainly, Josephus documented the flood (and the reality of giants) as history kept alive as common knowledge in all cultures: "… Now all the writers of barbarian histories make mention of the flood, and of this ark, among whom is Berosus the Chaldean, writer of *Chaldean Monuments*, Mochus, and Hestiaeus." Josephus further acknowledged that Hieronymus, the Egyptian writer of *Phoenician Antiquities* and *Mnaseas*, as well as many more historians of the ancient world, wrote with authority regarding the great world flood. Josephus further enlisted Manetho Hesiod, Hecataeus, Hellamicus, and Acusilaus as historical authors, who also steadfastly recorded the flood as fact.[5]

In addition, legends from the subcontinent of India reveal that a phallus of heaven inexplicably reached out to a young girl, his earth daughter. An act of union was completed between heaven (father) and earth (mother) that produced the giants, the Angirases, as their offspring. The semi-divine offspring then acted as mediators between humans and the gods.[6] The Angiras were described in the *Cata-Paths Brahmana* as "decrepit and ghost like."[7] Hindu legends further recorded an ancient race of giants, known as the Daitya; they were the offspring of the goddess Diti and the god Asyapa/ Hasyapa; the Daitya defiantly resisted the heavenly gods, refusing to honor and worship them, and eventually, they made war against the gods. The Daitya were then destroyed by the gods.

Frank Joseph writes that the Daitya/Asuras were identical with the Greek Titans, who were at first a virtuous race that later became depraved and violent, venting their fury on the inferior humans whom they had enslaved.[8] The Asuras are remembered in the *Vedas* as demigods.[9] Asuras were analogous with the Danaua from another Hindu myth, which recorded that these, too, were giants, and like the Daitya, the Danaua made war with the gods and were defeated.[10] These legends are exactly the same as Mediterranean legends, and they all based their mythology on the biblically recorded events.

The *Rig-Veda* further recorded the Maruts, violent storm gods. The Maruts were the strong ones, brilliant and of a terrible design, a dreadful group that devoured their foes.[11] They were heroes, born together, self-luminous, with such strength as to cause men to tremble.[12] Maruts were born as the Bulls of Dyu, manly youths of Rudra, full of terrible signs; they were appalling giants who decorated themselves with glittering ornaments.[13] Maruts were mighty, powerful, and beautiful in their splendor and strong like mountains; they roared like lions and had strength like the ire of serpents.[14] The Maruts, too, occasionally fell into disrepute with the god Indra.[15]

The Yoruba tribe of West Africa recants a legend in which the supreme being, the god Olorum, ordered the god Orishna Nla to form beings from the earth. Similarly, from Madagascar, the creator god aided his daughter, Mother Earth, in breathing life into her clay dolls. Coincidently enough, the Polynesian legend remembers Kane as being born to his mother, Mother Earth, by his father, Ku, also known as Father Sky.[16] In New Zealand, two gods formed a union between Rangi, Father Sky, and Papatuanka, Mother Earth, to produce seventy offspring gods.[17] According to Margaret and David Leeming, similar legends can also be found in the traditions of the Acoma, the Arihara, the Hopi, the Apache, and other aboriginal Indians, and in Japanese and Celtic traditions, as well as in the Dhammai of India.[18]

Similarly, J. F. Bierlein, who penned *Parallel Myths*, notes other creation myths of giants from such cultures as the Norse, the Sioux and Algonquin tribes of North America, and the Persians. He states that all of these variants utilize trees in their mythology, but in the end, the allegory is still the same.[19] Similar tree myths are also found in Japan, the Arandan of Australia, the Gilbert Islands, and in Icelandic and Norse cultures.[20] Trees were employed in the same manner that mountains were employed, as facilitators, or places of meeting/joining of the gods of heaven with Mother Earth. Bierlein went on to write that the roots of the trees reach into Mother Earth, while their branches reach out to Father Sky, or the gods of heaven.[21] Author Flemming Fergus notes Celtic mythology holds that trees form a bridge between heaven and earth and are a symbol of regrowth[22] (reincarnation); trees are a substitute for Mount Hermon in alternative legends recanting the same myth.

David and Margaret Leeming write that the World Tree is both the unifier and the separator of the World Parents, Father Sky and Mother Earth. Because trees can live for hundreds and hundreds of years, their extraordinary life span represents the immortality[23] of the gods and the immortal spirit given to the original Nephilim. The World Tree is also the Tree of the Knowledge of Both Good and Evil, for knowledge in pantheistic cultures holds the keys to immortality and reincarnation. Dragons are said to protect the World Tree[24] in a similar way that Cherubs/angels protected Eden; this is not a coincidence. Similarly, Atlanteans honored the Tree of Life, under which sacred and secret rituals were performed. Atlanteans named this tree the Dragon Tree, they tapped it for its healing qualities[25] and likely immortality.

In this same line of pantheistic theology, the Druidic variant of the creation myth ties in. In this shadowy Tuatha Denaan tradition, Tuatha were the Celtic pantheon of earth-born gods that were created from the mother goddess Danu and Dis-Pater (sky god). Danu is the divine water that came from heaven to the primeval chaos of earth, creating the holy river, the Danube. She fertilized the holy oak tree that produced the Tuatha Denaan (Nephilim),[26] which is why the oak is revered in Druidic religions.

Even more important to this point, the evergreen tree is always seen as a symbol of immortality because it is always green,[27] just as non-evergreens represent reincarnation because they come back to life every year. A Judeo-Christian should, then, be wary of the Christmas tree, for the immortal evergreen represents the meeting place for the gods and Mother Earth and the creation of Nephilim. Ornamental tree bulbs represent fertility (eggs) and the fertility goddesses Ishtar, Isis, Gaea, Astarte, Ashteroth, and Ninkhursag, just as Easter is a variant of Ishtar, Astarte, and Ashteroth, and the eggs of Easter represent her and fertility. As we will detail later in this book, the early Roman Church, under the patronage and direct influence of Emperor Constantine, permitted pagan rituals, symbolism, and traditions to intermingle and blend into Christianity so that the new state religion would more easily integrate its citizens and thus provide stability within the empire. These pagan corruptions remain to this very day.

Other creation-of-giant myths around the world either use parts of the Father Sky, Mother Earth, and World Tree allegories or tend to fall into a whole other category. The balance of the creation myths that are not echoing the creation of giants tend to echo the biblical recollection of mortal humankind being created out of clay and receiving the breath of God to bring them to life.

Now let us consider the *Enochic Book of Giants*, from which we have already noted that 200 angels descended on Mount Hermon, where they cohabitated with the daughters of men, producing giants as their offspring. Does this begin to ring familiar with the legends of pantheism? Again we have angels/gods procreating with mortal women on a mountain. In The Second Book of the Secrets of Enoch, a curious narrative described an Order of *Grigori* ventured down from heaven to earth, to a place called Ermon. This hill of Ermon is another name for Mount Hermon in the upper Galilee.[28] It is located in the land of King Og and Sihon, in the Arnon Gorge.[29] Mount Hermon was known to the Sidonians as *Sirion* and to the Amorites as *Senir*.[30] Mount Hermon was located in the lands inherited by Manasseh, from Bashan to Baal Hermon and Gilead.[31] Senir/Hermon/Sirion are referred to in the Psalms and the Songs of Solomon, as well as remembered as a place where pine trees grew in abundance by Ezekiel.[32]

We read the following in yet another tradition, according to the spirit guide/fallen angel or demon Megadriel from The Book of Megadriel, War In Heaven:

> … And behold, the Watchers descended to earth in the place called Ardos, which is in the summit of Mount Hermon. And they transformed their Angelic essence into the forms of men. And the Watchers who descended unto Ardos numbered 200. And they were known henceforth as Grigori. And immediately upon their descent to earth they took women unto themselves as wives, and sinned with them … And Watcher's wives conceived and gave birth to abominable creatures called Nefillim.[33]

Mount Hermon is defined by *Unger's* as "sacred mountain."[34] According to Andrew Collins, upon Mount Hermon *watchers* swore an oath, binding themselves by mutual imprecations, apparently knowing full well the consequences their intended sins would have for both them and humanity. It was a pact commemorated in the name given to the place of their so-called fall. This name was *harem* in Hebrew, also known as "Hermon," and its translation means "curse."[35]

Another account from the book of Enoch recounts that it was Shemyaza (Azazel) that forced the fallen angels in the generation of Jared to swear an oath not to abandon their plan to violate the laws of creation on Mount Hermon.[36] Therefore, Mount Hermon was dedicated to the violation against the laws of creation by the fallen angels, the unknown dedication the *Unger's Dictionary* refers to. Jewish legends recorded it was Shemyaza that bound the 200 to the evil oath to mate with humans under the penalty of *harem-anathema*, to carry it through to the end,[37] the cursed oath of Harem, or Hermon. *Anathema* is defined as "a solemn ecclesiastical curse of denunciation" that they would be pronounced accursed if they did not carry out the plan.[38]

Now, as you will recall, Kharsag was described in the *Epic of Gilgamesh* as the place where heaven and earth met. Interestingly enough, Kharsag was believed in antiquity to have been synonymous with Mount Hermon, or at least within its immediate vicinity in the Ante-Lebanon range of mountains.[39] Once again, all this further connects the pantheon myths back to the source generated in Genesis, with Azazel being the godfather of the celestial Mafia, only allowing for the pantheistic corruptions to the accurate biblical account.

Secular historical records unaccountably and seemingly disingenuously promote the numinous legends of prehistory whereby vile acts committed fallen angels were the righteous, benevolent acts of kind gods. This role reversing theme whereby gods (fallen angels) were benevolent gods providing knowledge and civilization to humankind was a constant in all mythologies from prehistory.Witness Atlantis and Egypt; they both contain perverted mythologies in the same spirit. Atlantis and Egypt were both considered source mythology for so much of the ancient world that a closer look is required.

Indeed, it is through the Atlantean legends that we can best understand and connect subsequent mythologies with the deluge catastrophe.

CHAPTER 17

ATLANTIS

Be silent, you people of the island, and your merchants of Sidon, whom the seafarers have enriched…. Be ashamed O Sidon, and you, O fortress of the sea, for the sea has spoken…. Cross over to Tarshish; wail, you people of the island. Is this your city of revelry, the old, old city, whose feet have taken her to settle in far-off lands? Who planned this against Tyre, the bestower of crowns, whose merchants are princes, whose traders are renowned in the earth? The Lord Almighty planned it, to bring low the pride of all glory and to humble all who are renowned on earth…. The Lord has stretched out his hand over the sea and made its kingdoms tremble. He has given an order concerning Phoenicia [or Canaan] that her fortresses be destroyed.

—Isaiah 23:2–9,11

Why does modern intelligentsia dismiss the idea of a historical, global deluge? This elitist intelligentsia fanatically flaunts an undisclosed and clandestine faith through their dogged denunciation of a global deluge.

In his book *Underworld: The Mysterious Origins to Civilization,* Graham Hancock has noted that almost any explanation, however harebrained, is more acceptable than the literal interpretation that there was a global flood[1] As an example, Alan Dundes, professor of antiquity and folklore at the University of California Berkeley, underscored this scholarly doctrine of denial, (unbelievably) stating that myth is a metaphor, whereby cosmogenic projection of details in human birth, where every child is born in a flood of amniotic fluid, is somehow expressed by flood mythology.[2] Conversely, Hancock argues that investigations should be mounted into why archaeologists, ethnologists, and anthropologists continue to describe similarities among these myths of earth-destroying floods as coincidental, entrenched in exaggeration, and irrelevant as historical testimony.[3]

Surprisingly, historian Susan Bauer contends that historians ought not to dismiss the flood because there are too many common coincidences and details to ignore. She further notes that too many scientists and historians manipulate and invent findings and data to further their own careers and agendas, while others permit their prejudices to bias their judgments, to the point where only the foolish and (of course) those with agendas accept these contrived claims of authority and accuracy.[4]

In Plato’s *Timaeus,* Plato says this, when recanting Solon’s conversation with the Egyptian priest regarding Atlantis: “You remember only one Deluge though there have been many.”[5] In truth, the Egyptian priest stated there have been many global catastrophes over the ages caused by water and fire.[6] However, it is the last deluge this work is focused upon, the flood of the Bible, Atlantis, Mu, Dwarka, and the countless other legends and myths that have dutifully preserved this most recent of deluge catastrophes for future generations.

The prophetic passage from Isaiah 23 that introduced this chapter vividly describes the destruction of the famous, ancient postdiluvian city of Tyre by the Assyrians. However, the means for Tyre’s destruction is baffling, for the catastrophe comes from the forces of nature and not at the hands of Assyrians. Additionally, Tyre was not an island but a coastal city.

Thus, Isaiah 23 is an encrypted prophecy I will return to in the last half of this book. This passage holds three important cataclysmic events within its cryptic allegories. The destruction of Tyre is the first event. The second event is prophetically relevant to the future city of Babylon. The third event is shown in a description of the destruction of that famous city and island of antiquity and mythology, Atlantis. Within Isaiah's cryptic passage are significant, enigmatic Atlantean and antediluvian markers that one should not dismiss, particularly when considering other cryptic passages from Genesis, Leviticus, Deuteronomy, and the Psalms, which we will cover.

First of all, consider that Tyre is cited as the bestower of crowns, which stirs up curious echoes of Nippur, the place where heaven met earth, the home of the Ring Lords, where antediluvian Nephilim kings were anointed and granted authority to rule. Note that as well Isaiah presses on to declare that God brought low the pride and glory of all the renowned of the earth through a watery, global catastrophe. As we learned previously, the book of Wisdom clearly applied pride figuratively to the reprobate Nephilim kings, just as Genesis clearly described the evil Nephilim potentates as heroes of old and men of renown.

Isaiah then forthrightly notes that this island city was destroyed by the sea and trembling, once more echoing the conflagration of deluge disasters that included earthquakes, volcanoes, and floods. Moreover, this passage notes mysteriously that survivors escaped the island city and disasters to settle in far-off lands, once more echoing the Seven Atlantean Sages that began anew to tutor the uncivilized and illiterate survivors of the human race after the flood. Finally, "old, old city" is yet another primeval marker. This phrase, and others, is a clear marker utilized in Scripture to denote the epoch before the flood.[7]

Belasur, recognized by the Greeks as Berosus, the historian who translated the three-volume composition of Babylonian history *Bablonica*, held interesting and relevant thoughts regarding the city of Babylon. Berosus was a Chaldean priest from the temple of Belus and,[8] according to Sitchin, a priest of Marduk.[9] Berosus was a contemporary with Alexander, celebrated as both a great astronomer and a historian that penned three books in Greek, all of which professed to have been founded upon the ancient archives from the temple of Belus.[10] The succeeding Greek rulers commissioned Berosus to compose a book envisioned to be a living history to the wisdom of Berosus's ancestors, but unfortunately, his works were lost after the fall of the Roman Empire.[11]

Berosus was believed to have had access to the ancient clay tablets from the temple, tablets crafted before the flood and originating from the antediluvian city of Sippar.[12] He was thought to be one of the last inheritors of ancient Sumerian astrology, astronomy,[13] and other ancient knowledge. Berosus recorded the first ten generations to the epoch of the gods, noting the first god, Oannes, was a fish-like being, wading to shore from the sea.[14] Only extracts from Berosus's works survive in fragments preserved within the writings of Josephus, Syncellus, Eusebius, and others.[15]

Berosus wrote that Babylon was utilized allegorically by the Chaldean priests for an antediluvian city, the "first city" of cities, which could only have been Atlantis. In fact, Frank Joseph believes that when the Bible describes Tyre and Babylon in these passages, it is really describing the prosperity and destruction of Atlantis, the sea-born, antediluvian empire.[16]

In the Atlantean tradition, modern Atlantean authors claim Poseidon was the angel/son of God, a *watcher*/ruler/archon, to whom the continent Atlantis was portioned out, while the balance of the earth was allotted to the other gods, to varying extents.[17] Just as I already noted, Deuteronomy 32:8 describes the earth was divided among the sons of Israel, sons of God, and/or gods, depending on which biblical translation from the Masoretic Text you choose to examine. In fact, Plato's work *Critias* actually states that the gods divided up the earth, with Atlantis being Poseidon's portion.[18] Poseidon was the chief god and founder of the Atlantean civilization.[19] The inheriting gods/*watchers* then constructed temples in their lands for worship and ritual sacrifices[20] as cult centers. In Atlantis, Poseidon constructed his great temple (for his bull cult) in his capital city, at the southern end of the continent.[21] The gods in the Atlantean heritage were all known as intermediaries between man and Chaos,[22] otherwise identified as *watchers*, archons, and seraphim angels.

Poseidon then proceeded to fall in love with a female of the human race named Cleito. Poseidon was also believed in legend to have lain with many other "daughters of men," producing offspring through the illicit violations against the laws of creation. Cleito was the daughter of Evenor and Leucippe, who were both earth-born but, not coincidently, lived inside a mountain,[23] while other traditions cite Cleito as a simple human orphan.[24]

The children of Poseidon and the daughters of men all grew up to be giants and demigods that we have come to know as Nephilim. The female progeny of Poseidon were also recorded as marrying and producing more Nephilim offspring through relationships with renowned heroes and gods of old; they became the first ancestors of the largest portion of the antediluvian human race.[25] Again, does any of this ring familiar?

Poseidon conceived five famous sets of twins, of which Atlas was the eldest and the leader.[26] Atlas was the first appointed king by Poseidon.[27] Other legends name Clieto as Clymene/Klymene and Poseidon as Japetus/Iapetus, the Titan parents to the giant Atlas.[28] Atlas, as you might have guessed, was described in Greek mythology as an enormous giant, who founded Atlantis[29] and then reigned over it.[30] He, too, was the famous father of the infamous seven sisters, the Pleiades,[31] to whom the deluge is inextricably linked in worldwide legends.

Most legends agree that the progeny of Cleito and Poseidon did evidently produce the royal dynasty and lineage of Atlantis,[32] the infamous giant twins. Poseidon's five pairs of Nephilim twins were the famous ten kings of Atlantis, who were known as Atlas and Gadeirus, Ampheres and Evaemon, Mneseus and Autochhthon, Elassippus and Mesior, and Azaes and Diaprepes.[33] They reigned absolutely over the Atlantean empire. As per Atlantis writer Charles Berlitz, Atlantis was subdivided into ten distinct regions that became known as the helm of antediluvian world government. Each king sported a crown of male rams as a sign of his power, and their wives showed off similar headbands.[34] Ram horns were considered objects of kingly and warrior adornment. They were generally attached to helmets and headgear in a similar fashion as the Vikings' helmets. The Merovingian King Clovis wore similar headdresses.[35]

The Poseidon cult (Enochian mysticism) celebrated the sacrifice of bulls in their holy temple, spilling the blood over the inscription of their oath that was engraved on a pillar.[36] This was the original antediluvian bull cult of giants that would later cross over the deluge catastrophe and flourish for millennia in the postdiluvian epoch. The Atlantean rulers repledged their collective oaths to remain true and loyal to their law during this ritual, by sealing the covenant through the consumption of a bull's blood and wine mixture from a cup.[37] The bull was the sacred animal of Poseidon,[38] and it was used in all of the sacred rituals. Further, the epoch of Atlantis fell into the astrological age of Taurus, 4500 B.C.E. to 2300 B.C.E., which held significant mystical meanings, being that Atlas was considered the founder of Atlantean astrology[39] and that Atlantis was steeped in mysticism.

Blood drinking was a Nephilim abomination, which we have already covered. The blood-drinking rituals were wrapped within the mythology of their Nephilim creation myth: Atlanteans tapped the Holy Dragon for blood, utilizing it for healing and immortalizing purposes under the famous Tree of Life.[40]

Native human Atlanteans (likely Cainites) are reticently remembered as longhaired, bearded, wise astrologers and philosophers, bringing to mind wizards such as Merlin of the Arthur legends and the wizards from *The Lord of the Rings*. Atlantis was completely steeped in all forms of mysticism; its whole orientation was empowerment through the mystical arts. Even the mythical Atlantean *Nereids* (little fairies), the golden boys who rode dolphins, were aeolytes of the Mystery School that was sacred to Poseidon. The Atlantean holy temple was acknowledged in antiquity as the “Navel of the World,” the *Omphalus*, the center for the first and oldest mystery religion.[41] It would seem that Atlantis was the first civilization to embrace, cultivate, and export the religion of Enoch the Evil.

The Atlantean royal family and their descendants were demigods. They were god-like giants with golden hair; bold, strong heads; bright blue eyes; and voices that bellowed like Atlas from the depths of his mountain. Greeks referred to the Atlanteans as Titans. These are uncanny parallel descriptions to that of biblical Nephilim and must be one and the same. In fact, Egyptians described Atlanteans as having fair skin, being very tall—and certainly much taller than Egyptians—being blond- and red-haired with beards, having sharp aquiline features, and having slanted eyes and oval heads. The Aztecs and Maya, too, remember the Atlanteans as very tall, fair-skinned, and blond- or red-haired with beards and ruddy or rough-skin, just as other accounts remember Atlanteans as tall, robust, fair-skinned, and with oval heads and bright blue eyes.[42]

The chief sources for Atlantean details stem from Plato’s unfinished *Critias* and from *Timaeus*,[43] which were his last two works.[44] *Timaeus* sets the story by explaining how Solon traveled to Sais in Egypt, where he spoke with Egyptian priests. The character Critias described Atlantis, while other characters affirmed his testimony; Critias claimed he received the information from his grandfather, also named Critias. Critias was a grandfather of Plato, who received the story from Solon, who was an Athenian statesman and lawgiver.[45]

The characters from both these compositions testified to the authenticity of Atlantis as historical fact and not a legend.[46] Timaeus, who also is a character from *Locris*, further stated the Atlantean account was true and not legend. Certainly, ancient historians all agreed that Solon indeed did travel to the city of Sais, and Critias was also recorded as an actual person, a gifted historian, poet, and Athenian politician.[47] All this, then, provides historical credibility to the Atlantean literature penned by Plato.

Plato's student Crantor embraced the Atlantean narratives as factual history and composed many commentaries testifying such. To this end, the historian Proclus recorded that Crantor traveled to Sais 300 years after Solon, confirming Plato's account through interviewing Egyptian priests and reading from the actual ancient Egyptian hieroglyphs, recorded on columns, that testified to the Atlantean narrative.[48] Pseudo-Aristotle additionally wrote about Atlantis in his work *Marvelous Things Heard*, while Greek historian Marcellus relied on unnamed, ancient sources when he penned a description of the seven islands (of Atlantis) located in the Atlantic Ocean, with one specifically dedicated to Poseidon. Other ancient historians made references to Atlantis in their recordings: Diodorus, Pliny, Plutarch, Posidinus, and Strabo.[49] The Atlantean narratives were later handed down to medieval scholars through Arabian geographers.[50]

Plato, 427–347 B.C.E., was born Aristocles, son of Ariston, in Athens, the last of the kings of Athens, while his mother descended from the line of Solon. [51] Socrates mentored Plato until Socrates's execution. Plato then fled to Megara to study with his friend Euclid (infamous from Craft legends). Later, Plato sojourned to Italy, Sicily, Africa, and Egypt, where he forged close ties with Orphic and Pythagorean mystical circles and schools, which drew heavily from Egyptian mysticism.[52] Plato's system split philosophy into a tripartite system of dialectics (metaphysics), physics, and ethics.[53] Neo-Platonists carried on Plato's form of philosophy through Mystery Schools well into the middle ages.[54] Neo-Platonism was primarily a metaphysical philosophy with a theological emphasis towards mysticism; it was a synthesis of Pythagorism, Platonism, Aristotleism, and Stoicism, which later adopted Jewish and Orientalist religious elements.[55]

Let’s return to our discussion of Atlantis. The Atlantean empire spread itself all over the world; it was made up of ten separate but allied kings and kingdoms[56] that were ruled by the ten Titan offspring of Poseidon and Cleito. Plato described Atlantis in *Kritas* as a mighty warring and conquering empire that was made up of a system of alliances with other kingdoms.[57] At its peak, Atlantis reigned over northwest Africa, including modern Libya and Egypt, and southwest Europe as far as Italy, according to the *Encyclopedia Americana*[58] and as cited in *Timaeus*.[59] According to Frank Joseph, the mighty empire was made up of Azaes: the Yucatan; Musaeus: on the northern part of South America; Ampheres: islands just to the north and west of Portugal; Diaprepes: islands just off the northwest Coast of Africa; Autochthon: north Africa just to the west of Egypt in modern Morocco; Elasoppos and Gadsirus: both on the Portuguese west coast; Euemon: Ireland and the land of Tuatha Denaan; Mestor in England; and of course, Atlas, where Plato described Atlantis as the chief city of this far-flung empire.[60]

Wisdom and moderation held sway for many centuries under their rule.[61] In *Critias,* Plato described Atlanteans as great engineers and architects.[62] The ten Atlantean potentates reigned judiciously as long as the divine spirit remained within them, but as the divine spirit (immortal spirit) began to fade, so did their judicious reign.[63] To this conclusion, Hercules and Theseus, according to Plutarch, were archetypes of Titanic wisdom and judicious rule, for Hercules strove for divine excellence through his perpetual perseverance that was crowned with victories, which demonstrated the triumph of his divine nature over his earthly nature. Theseus was described as not only displaying “great strength of body, but equal bravery, and quickness alike, and a force of understanding.”[64] But according to Plato, the Atlanteans fell from their god-like status because of further interbreeding with humans.[65]

This account echoes Genesis 6, where God removed the illegal, immortal spirit from Nephilim posterity that had been gained through sexual reproduction with fallen angels. It is also reminiscent of the book of Enoch, where the giants became butchers of war because they knew their physical bodies were dying, even though their immortal spirit was not; they knew their fate would be to roam the earth without a physical form after their deaths, as demons. Therefore, the demigods of Atlantis decided to vent their rage on the apples of God’s orchard, the fruit of Adam. Titans rebelled against the order of creation, making war against the gods and humankind. The fading away of the divine nature was attributed to the diluting of the demigod bloodlines through the intermarrying of mortals, thus causing the human nature to gain the upper hand over the divine nature. Ignatius Donnelly describes this deterioration of the spirit in this way: “Though they still appeared divine; their nature had become filled with unrighteousness and avarice.”[66]

Plutarch described the evolution into evil:

> … that age produced a sort of men in force of hand, and swiftness of foot, and strength of body, excelling the ordinary rate and wholly incapable of fatigue; making use, however, of the gifts of nature to no good or profitable purpose for mankind, but rejoicing and priding themselves in insolence, and taking the benefit of their superior strength in the exercises of inhumanity and cruelty, and in seizing, forcing, and committing all manner of outrages upon everything that fell into their hands; all respect for others, all justice they sought, all equity and humanity, though naturally lauded by common people, either out of want of courage to commit injuries or fear to receive them, yet no way concerned those who were strong enough to win for themselves. Some of these Hercules destroyed and cut off in his passage through these countries.[67]

Does this description ring familiar? It sounds similar to the account of the reign of terror recorded in the book of Wisdom. Thus, Hercules was drafted by Zeus to lead his war against the evil giants. Hercules killed many rebellious giants, including two *The Encyclopedia Americana* describes as the most formidable: Alcyoneus and Porphyrcon.[68] *The Encyclopedia Americana* appears to be referencing Plutarch’s recollection of Theseus’s and Hercules’s violent romps through the ancient world.

Theseus killed many evil giants, just as Hercules did, by the very same methods employed by the evildoers: Corymetes the Club Bearer; Sunnis the Bender of Pines; Sciram; Cercyon the Arcadian; Busiris; Antaeus; and, of course, Termanium, who murdered his victims by running them through with his head. Theseus further led armies against other armies led by giants.[69] One wonders if Theseus fought with Zeus and Hercules against the Atlanteans. Certainly, Theseus, Hercules, and Pirithous all fought together in the war against the race of centaurs.[70]

The ten corrupted demigods then ruled with a heavy hand, for they held absolute power over their kingdoms and citizens.[71] Atlantis backslid into corruption and violence. Atlantean kings succumbed to the enticements of power, wealth, and pride, which overran their spirits.[72] Michael Baigent writes that the acquisition of wealth and power also lost the demigods their favor with the gods and brought them to their ruin.[73] In her book *Isis Unveiled*, Helen Blavatsky notes the Atlanteans were a nation of natural mediums but were led astray into a nation of black magicians that led them into war.[74]

The war-like ambitions of the Atlantean demigods displeased the gods, causing the Atlantean gods' destruction shortly thereafter,[75] once more echoing Genesis. Zeus, therefore, employed Hercules (and other noble Titans) to fight for him alongside the Greeks and against the Atlantean giants.[76] The Atlantean giants gathered their armies and sought to gain a world empire, but they were checked by the Athenians.[77] *Timaeus* recorded antediluvian Athens was a skilled and preeminent military city-state; she was the leader of the Hellenes/Greeks.[78]

Zeus was decidedly distraught to see that an honorable race had backslidden into a most wretched state.[79] Just as in the Mesopotamian legends and just as the archons did in the *Hypostasis of the Archons*, the gods gathered to plot the deluge against humankind.[80] Zeus collected the pantheon of gods in a meeting place known as the "Center of the World" to inflict punishment upon the Atlanteans,[81] again echoing Enoch's version of the deluge, where angels gathered at the beckoning of God's will to bring about His divine Judgment in the form of flood, earthquake, and volcano.[82] This mythological center of the world was likely Nippur in the Sumerian legends.

After the Atlanteans had lost a war to the Athenian alliance, Zeus and the other gods moved to destroy Atlantis with earthquakes and floods.[83] The balance of the Plato legend from *Critias* was lost or unfinished, so we do not know what the punishment was to be; it ended with Zeus gathering the gods to punish the Atlanteans,[84] but other legends do fill in the gaps. Legends abound that recount the infamous last years of war and tyranny that marred Atlantis, when its corrupted kings were bent on world conquest, warring with the other great antediluvian civilizations. It was generally concluded by authors like Charles Berlitz that the worldwide phenomena of the flood legends refers to the catastrophic sinking of Atlantis.[85] The likely truth, though, is different from Berlitz's conclusion; Atlantis is merely a recantation as part of the worldwide deluge cataclysm recorded in the Old Testament.

Other legends and Plato suggest the Atlantis cataclysm was imparted not by many gods but by two: Zeus and Poseidon. Roman legends, too, recorded that Jupiter and Neptune partnered in the cataclysm that destroyed Atlantis. West African legends also support the same conclusion, naming Poseidon as Okulum, the sea god.[86] Biblical, Gnostic, and Mesopotamian legends, as you will recall, recant God/Ialdaboth/Enlil gathering the angels/gods together to work jointly in bringing about the cataclysm. Zeus sent the flood rains from the skies while Poseidon released the waters from the rivers hidden beneath the earth, eerily echoing biblical and Qur'an testimonies.[87]

To this conclusion, Hancock notes that myths clearly hint the flood swept away an advanced civilization that had infuriated the gods, sparing none but the unlettered and the uncultured, causing survivors to begin over like children, in complete ignorance of what transpired in earlier times.[88] Hancock's conclusion likely originated from Plato, for *Timaeus* noted: "After the usual interval, the stream from heaven, like a pestilence, comes pouring down and leaves only those of you who are destitute of letters and education, and so you have to begin again like children, and know nothing of what happened in ancient times."[89] The notion that the survivors were illiterate and ignorant of the antediluvian epoch reflects the second chance notion of humankind that is underlying the Noah narrative, in which people are free from the seven spurious sciences.

Such stories turn up in Vedic India, in the pre-Columbian Americas, and in ancient Egypt. These legends were preserved by the Sumerians, Babylonians, Greeks, Arabs, and Jews. Similar stories were repeated in China and Southeast Asia, in prehistoric northern Europe, and across the Pacific. Almost universally, where truly ancient traditions have been preserved, even among mountain peoples and desert nomads, vivid descriptions have been passed down of global floods, in which the majority of mankind perished.[90] From all these various accounts, it would appear that God and another very powerful angel were the epicenter of the cataclysm.

Similarly, Gnostic, Mesopotamian, and Jewish legends concur with Atlantean legends that this antediluvian worldwide cataclysm was more than the flood recorded in Genesis, that it was inclusive of earthquakes, volcano eruptions, tornados, and hurricanes—again reminiscent of Isaiah 23. In support of this, the mythical Greek hero Phaethon, the illegitimate son of the sun god Helios, the god who drove his chariot of the sun across the heavens, is intricately interwoven into the fabric of the Atlantean legends of destruction. Phaethon was the son of the sun god Apollo, recorded in *Timaeus*, who apparently drove his chariot of fire into the ocean, which sparked the deluge cataclysm.[91] Phaethon lost control of his chariot and thus flew too close to the earth; Zeus then killed him with a thunderbolt for his actions.[92] The Egyptian priest in *Timaeus* noted the Phaethon legend reflected catastrophes occurring at long predetermined intervals and caused by heavenly bodies. Phaethon was written about by Ovid in his stories about Greek and Roman mythology.[93]

Numerous legends universally shout that the spark to the deluge cataclysm came from the sky in the form of a meteorite, asteroid, or another powerful, outside influence. Remember, *cataclysm* is rooted in a Greek word stemming from "deluge," while the word *disaster* is rooted in the Greek word meaning "evil star,"[94] suggesting that the deluge was sparked by an evil star/god, asteroid, or meteorite, which crashed into the ocean. The *Epic of Gilgamesh* documented the dams below releasing, while the Seven Judges of hell lit the land with their torches; day became night; and the land was smashed like a cup, while water poured over people like tides in a battle.[95]

The fifth-century C.E. Greek poet Nonnos wrote that Zeus hurled a world conflagration at the Titan kings,[96] again suggesting some kind of asteroid. In a similar fashion, the Norse god Edda hurled stars from heaven into the ocean, causing the worldwide cataclysm.[97] The Mayan legend *Chilam Balam* recorded the deluge as being sparked by great pieces of smoke that fell from the sky and into the oceans. Legends from India recorded Brahma casting celestial projectiles into the oceans to destroy the giant Asuras/Daitya, just as the Zoroastrian *Zend-Avesta* recorded the three-headed star that fell from the heavens and into the oceans that caused the oceans to boil.[98]

Other legends, too, bear witness to the legends about the evil star that crashed into the ocean, and they are even more specific in detail. These legends all seem to wrap themselves around allegories concerning the constellation of the seven sisters, the Pleiades. In legend, these seven sisters were known as *Atlantises*, daughters of Atlas, before being raised to the sky and into immortality.[99] Mayan legends oddly remember survivors of the flood ascending to heaven as the Pleiades.[100]

As the Greek legends go, two of the Pleiades stars were removed and sent to earth to destroy the world. The Hopi Indians regard the Pleiades as sisters and associate them with the deluge, just as the Cherokee, Iroquois, and other Native American nations of the Lake States, Tennessee, and Carolinas have preserved stories regarding Unadatsug, describing stars from the Pleiades that crashed into the oceans with a fiery tail. The Aztecs, too, mark the Pleiades as the cause and start to the Fourth Age, our epoch. Hawaiian legends recorded the earth became hot, the heavens turned about, and the earth was darkened by the rise of the Pleiades, just as the Aztec allies, the Choula, enshrined a temple dedicated to the meteorite that came from heaven and caused the deluge. Japanese legends recant the Sky Dragon devouring the Pleiades at this time, and West African legends describe the seven chains of the flood, which are, in fact, the Pleiades.[101] Finally, Greek legends connect Orion/ Azazel, the chief angel held accountable for bringing about the deluge, as being connected to the Pleiades. Orion was imagined as the great hunter put to death by Artemis after his pursuit of the Pleiades.[102] Orion, the unknown great hunter, was also known in other Greek and Roman legends as the giant born from Poseidon and Gaea, the Great Mother.[103]

Even the Bible seems to connect the destruction of Atlantis with the Pleiades, Orion, and the flood, when it says, “Can you bind the beautiful Pleiades? Can you loose the cords from Orion?” (Job 38:31). And also: “He who made the Pleiades and Orion, who turns the blackness into dawn and darkens day into night, who calls for the water of the sea and pours them out over the face of the land—the Lord is his name—he flashes destruction on the stronghold and brings the fortified city to ruin” (Amos 5:8–9). Again: “Who has resisted him and come out unscathed? He moves mountains without their knowing it and overturns them in his anger. He shakes the earth from its place and makes its pillars tremble. He speaks to the sun and it does not shine; he seals off the light of the stars. He alone stretches out the heavens and treads on the waves of the sea. He is the maker of the Bear and Orion, the Pleiades and the constellations of the south” (Job 9:9). These biblical passages appear to refer to the conflagration of flood catastrophes recorded in other legends, as well as to the destruction of Atlantis, connecting both somehow with the Pleiades and Orion constellations.

To this end, some suggest that a passage in the Psalms was specifically written testifying to the star that crashed into the ocean, which sparked the deluge.

> The earth trembled and quaked,
> and the foundations of the mountains shook;
> they trembled because he was angry.
> Smoke rose from his nostrils;
> consuming fire came from his mouth,
> burning coals blazed out of it.
> He parted the heavens and came down;
> dark clouds were under his feet.
> He mounted the cherubim and flew;
> he soared on the wings of the wind.
> He made darkness his covering, his canopy around him—
> the dark rain clouds of the sky.
> Out of the brightness of his presence clouds advanced,
> with hailstones and bolts of lightning.
> The Lord thundered from heaven;
> the voice of the Most High resounded.
> He shot his arrows and scattered the enemies,
> great bolts of lightning and routed them.
> The valleys of the sea were exposed
> and the foundations of the earth laid bare
> at your rebuke, O Lord,
> at the blast of breath from your nostrils.
> He reached down from on high and took hold of me;
> he drew me out of deep waters.
>
> —Psalm 18:7–16

Even though Atlantis slid into corruption and violence before it was destroyed, it is still fondly remembered as a mythological civilization advanced in knowledge and technology.[104] Atlantis was so advanced that the essential arts of civilization (the seven spurious sciences) were attributed to originating back to Atlantis through Egypt. One should note that the words *arts* and *technologies* were interchangeable in old Greek. All this once more echoes the legends regarding the Seven Liberal Arts inherited by Cain and his descendants. Certainly, perverted astronomy, astrology, was one of the Seven Sacred Sciences of Cain, inherited by the evil Enoch, which Atlas was credited with perfecting to an art form.[105]

Atlanteans were revered as being the first civilizers, the first navigators, the first merchants, and the first colonizers.[106] Not coincidentally, the Giza monuments, inclusive of the Great Pyramid and the Sphinx, are believed by cutting-edge authors, such as Hancock, to be memorials to a highly advanced civilization destroyed by the flood.[107] The esoteric thinker George Ivanovich Gurdjieff believed they were built by Atlanteans.[108] Again, all this underscores biblical and Freemasonry records testifying to a similar advanced civilization that became mad from knowledge and power.

The age of Atlantis was referred to in Egyptian mythology as the “First Time.” The First Time in Egyptian mythology was the antediluvian epoch, when the gods came down to the earth, and the age when the gods first established their kingdoms, again reminiscent of Deuteronomy. This was the epoch of the gods, *Zep Tepi*, which includes famous gods from the Egyptian pantheon—gods like Thoth/Hermes, Osiris, Isis, and Horus.[109]

Greeks, too, recorded the Golden Age, the First Time, as an age when humans conversed with the gods directly, mortal women had children by the gods, and there was no sadness, was no requirement for work, and the food was abundant.[110] In truth, many Greek legends assert that the Greek ancestors derived from the Ophites, the serpent people from the Western Sea, the Atlanteans. To this end, Greeks recorded that Ethiopia of antiquity was originally recorded as the coasts of North Africa, a part of the original Atlantean Empire as you will recall, and that Ethiopia only moved its literal location after the rise of the Moroccan Mauretania Empire.[111]

Ethiopia was originally translated from Greek as “At-i-ops,” the mountain of serpents. Guenon in his work *An Ethiopic History* notes *Ethiopia* was the post-deluge appellation for Atlantis, stemming from the root *Aithi-ops* of North Africa. Greeks, too, believe Atlantis derived from their first king, Atlas, and the mountain of Atlas. Hence, Plato recorded Atlantis as *Atlantykos Nesos*, the Atlantic Island.[112] All this testifies to the validity of the Atlantis Empire being located to the north and west of North Africa.

CHAPTER 18

ZEP TEPI: THE FIRST TIME

I give you every seed bearing plant on the face of the whole earth and every tree that has a fruit with seed in it. They will be yours for food. And to all the beasts of the earth and all the birds of the air and all the creatures that move on the ground—everything that has the breath of life in it—I give every green plant for food.

—Genesis 1:29–30

All that was good was established in the First Time, the Golden Age of Perfection, free from disease and death.[1]

Many believe the Great Pyramids and the Sphinx are markers of time that memorialize the epoch of Osiris, the First Time.

The Egyptian Golden Age began at the point of First Creation and was ruled over by gods called Ntr-gods, gods we remember as Osiris and Horus.[2] So, too, was the Golden Age the time before the flood, a time known in biblical lore as carefree, a time when the people wanted for nothing. It was an age when one harvest bore the needs for forty years, an age when pregnancy lasted only a couple days, and the children were born walking.[3] It was a time when people neither knew toil nor care; it was a time when the Magic arts and sorcery flourished.[4]

So, too, was the Golden Age recorded in Indian myth as the Age of Statva, or goodness, when humanity enjoyed life free of care, with no work, plenty of food, the perfect climate, and no sadness.[5]

Sumerians remembered a Golden Age when five great city-states reigned and when a ferocious flood ended this epoch, threatening humankind's very existence.[6]

Roman mythology recalls a Golden Age where everything was perfect and food was abundant. As time went on, this age deteriorated into the Silver Age and, then the Bronze Age and, finally, the Iron Age, when people were greedy, disloyal, untrustworthy, and full of war; it was a time of hardship, when love died. It was a time when hubris-driven giants rebelled against the gods, and the gods destroyed both giants and humans with a great flood, save Deucalion and Pyrrha.[7]

The First Time was believed to be an age when true wisdom (once) prevailed.[8] Egyptians, like other cultures, believed all wisdom and knowledge was gifted to them at the genesis of their civilization, from the gods.[9] These legends note that those times in Zep Tepi were ideal conditions for arrogance to form, causing their rebellion against God,[10] just as this occurred in biblical, Gnostic, Greek, Sumerian, Indian, and Atlantean traditions.

Mythology recorded First Time Egypt was allotted to a set of gods.[11] The gods, as in so many other antediluvian societies, like Atlantis, Mu, and Sumer, unaccountably procreated Nephilim, producing immortal, human gods and demigods such as Osiris and Isis. Thus, Manetho listed Osiris as the fifth king of the demigods. The four preceding demigods were Hephoestus, Helios, Agathodomon, and Kronos.[12] Kronos was the same name as one of the three most famous twins of Atlantis: Uranos, Atlas, and Kronos.[13] One begins to wonder whether or not this was merely coincidence, for the ten kings of Atlantis held the helm of world government.

In the end, Egyptian mythology was simply just another corrupted, spurious satire on Genesis. This is further underscored when one considers Egyptian mythology remembers at the end of the First Time, Ra was warned that humankind had grown too wicked and was on the verge of rebellion against the gods. Hathor was sent to quash the rebellion, slaying thousands, and she savagely drank sacrificed blood blended with a concoction of fruit and barley, which made a blood beer/wine[14] similar to the blood wine consumed in Atlantis. This is yet another alarming recollection, echoing the consumption of Star Fire that was a notable crime committed by Nephilim.

One concludes from various mythologies and Egyptian mythology in particular that antediluvian Atlantis and Egypt were very advanced civilizations, owing their knowledge to the spurious knowledge of Cain and the illicit knowledge of heaven. Further to this point, Graham Hancock, Robert Bauval, and others believe the Giza monuments and the Sphinx were constructed as memorials to the flood and/or to a highly advanced civilization destroyed by the flood,[15] just as biblical legends avow that Cain and his posterity erected magnificent monuments to immortalize their names.[16]

Contrary to Egyptologists' perplexing propaganda, there is disquieting evidence suggesting the Sphinx and Great Pyramids were built well before Khufu and 2400 B.C.E. The Great Pyramid was unexplainably depicted in hieroglyphs long before the birth of Khufu or Zoser. The *Victory Tablet of King Menes*, king of the first human Egyptian dynasty after the flood (circa 2950–3100 B.C.E.), clearly depicts the Great Pyramid with its steep, fiftytwo-degree slope. The *Inventory Stella* clearly credits Khufu/Cheops with restoring the Great Pyramid located beside the already completed Sphinx and notes that Khufu did not construct either the Great Pyramid or the Sphinx.[17]

Oddly, though, misguided Egyptologists inexplicably claim the Sphinx was constructed under the philanthropy of Pharaoh Chefra, who ascended to the throne of Egypt after Khufu. And further undermining Egyptologists' credibility, the writings of Sir V. M. Flinders from 1901 C.E. clearly noted the depictions of the Sphinx were discovered generously etched onto many tablets belonging to the reigns of Menes-Narmer and Zer. Sitchin concludes the antediluvian Sumerians, too, were well aware of the pyramids, scribing generous depictions of them into their cuneiform texts and cylinder seals as certifiable witnesses to the age of those majestic monuments.[18]

The Association for Research and Enlightenment (A.R.E.), the organization dedicated to the research and preservation of the teachings of Edgar Cayce, collected samples from organic material stuck to the stone blocks on the outside of the Great Pyramid, but no samples were obtained from inside the structure. A.R.E. published the results from the testing in the November/ December, 1986 C.E. edition of its journal *Venture Inward*, dating the various samples from 2900 B.C.E. to 3800 B.C.E. One wonders whether or not these samples were remnants from additional restorations, resulting in the pyramids being much older than these dates. Or were the remnants part of the original construction? And would fragments from the interior date the pyramids even further back into prehistory? Perhaps even back to 10,500 B.C.E.? Certainly, Cayce spoke often regarding an ancient civilization dating back to 10,500 B.C.E. that built the Sphinx and Great Pyramids. Sitchin, too, concludes the pyramids were constructed by the heavenly Anunnaki (angels) around 10,500 B.C.E.[19] Gilbert and Bauval, in their book Th*e Message of the Sphinx*, dated the Sphinx alignment to the Orion constellation back to 10,490 B.C.E., back to the shadowy epoch of the gods.[20]

To this comparable conclusion, Dr. M. Schoch, a respected geologist from Boston University, discovered, and then was joined by Dr. Thomas Dobecki, a Houston based geophysicist, in 1991 for a presentation to the Geological Society of America, where they reported their onsite research data confirmed the scarring of the Sphinx was etched by water sometime before 7000 B.C.E. The water erosion theory of the Sphinx was first postulated by John Anthony West in the 1980s, in his book *Serpent in the Sky*, along with numerous articles, all dating the water erosion beyond 10,000 B.C.E.[21] The evidence seems clear that the Great Pyramid and the Sphinx date far beyond 3000 B.C.E., back into the murky mists of prehistory.

Now, the knowledge of this great antediluvian civilization was copied down in hieroglyphics, which hold many additional clues to the First Time. The hieroglyph for Tepi-Aui was a large, slouched lion that has its head down. *Tepi* means “first” in ancient Egyptian, but it can also be translated as “ancestors,” while *Tepi-Aui* was also applied as a title for ancestral deities.[22] The lion hieroglyph, not coincidently, is unambiguously reminiscent of the great Sphinx. Hancock believes the Sphinx actually is a lion, because it was built in the age of Leo, 10,970 B.C.E. to 8810 B.C.E.[23] Interestingly enough, the slouching lion was the same, hieroglyph employed to describe a group of shadowy gods, the ancestors of Re (Ra), the Akeru.

What I do not believe was coincidental was that the lion/Sphinx was called Aker.[23] Therefore, lion characteristics were an accepted ancient

Egyptian form that depicted founding *watchers* of Egypt. What is so amazing about the lion/ Sphinx hieroglyph connection is that these were very similar characteristics employed to describe biblical Cherubim—each had four faces: the face of a man, the face of a lion, the face of an ox, and the face of an eagle.[24]

"Cherub" derives from ancient Assyrian *karibu*, meaning "he who prays or he who intercedes,"[25] just as angels were liaisons between God and humankind. The *Catholic Encyclopedia* notes Cherub derived from an old Semitic word *kerub* that means "to ride,"[26] recalling that God was seen riding on cherubim in Ezekiel and Revelation.[27] In antiquity, cherubim were portrayed with a lion's body, a human face, and conspicuous wings. Semitic peoples employed winged creatures to guard temples and palaces.[28] According to *Unger's*, *griffins* were winged sphinxes and were undoubtedly familiar to the Hittites, appearing hundreds of times in the icons of western Asia.[29] *Nelson's* states cherubim are winged, angelic beings similar in appearance to statues of winged sphinxes that often flanked entrances to palaces and temples in ancient Babylonia and Assyria.[30]

Ancient Assyrians portrayed the karibu as winged creatures, with the face of a man or a lion, while the body was that of a sphinx. [31] These griffins, according David E. Jones, were commonly known in antiquity as dragons. The four faces of the cherub symbolize the four cardinal points and the four astrological signs of Aquarius, Leo, Scorpio, and Taurus. The sphinx incorporated all four of these beings, for it had the face of a man, the feet of a lion, the body of a bull or ox, and the wings of an eagle. Ezekiel and John describe cherubim with the very same symbols as the sphinx and Assyrian karibu.[32] Howard Reid wrote that to the people of antiquity, centaurs, griffins, sphinxes, and dragons were essentially all the same form of being.[33] Thus, griffins were a combination of a lion and a falcon.[34]

However, the centaurs, although similar to griffins, sphinxes, and dragons, were entirely different beings altogether. In fact, centaurs were a fabulous race of beings, half man and half horse, that dwelled in antediluvian Thessaly and Peloponnesus.[35] The centaur race sprang from a mystical form of union between a figure known as Ixion and a cloud.[36] Ixion was an antediluvian, semidivine king of Thessaly that married Dia, the daughter of Deioneus. Zeus evidently created a cloud in the exacting form of Hera that Ixion then copulated with, producing the new race of centaurs.[37] Hera was the violent and jealous goddess thought to be a sister/wife to Zeus—the daughter of Kronos by Rhea/Cybele.[38] After this, Ixion was banished from heaven[39] for his vile crime against creation.

Centaurs degraded into a violent race. At a feast held by Lapithae, centaurs became so intoxicated and vicious that Theseus and Lapithae slaughtered many centaurs, thus causing a war, and most of the centaur race was driven from Thessaly.[40] Hercules and Pirithous joined Lapithae and Theseus in this war.[41] Centaurs were another outlawed race bred by rebellious gods similar to Nephilim, but centaurs were not cherubim.

Sphinxes were constructed after the image of cherubs or angels of a particular and powerful order. Speaking of Satan's downfall, the book Ezekiel states, "You were anointed as a guardian cherub, so I ordained you. You were on the holy mount of God" (Ezek. 28:13–14). Sphinxes of antiquity were sculpted in the true likeness of the heavenly angels, similar to the winged serpents, the infamous dark seraphim angels. *Sphinx* derives from the Egyptian *shesep ankha*, meaning living image.[42] One wonders: was the sphinx a monument to Satan and/or his fallen allies? Certainly Atum/ Re/Ra was celebrated as the father of the gods,[43] possessing lion/sphinx/ cherubim characteristics. Hence, Atum was always depicted as a sphinx, while Egyptians knew the Sphinx monument as "Sheshop-Ankh," the living image of Atum.[44]

Most pagan pantheons are arranged in similar hierarchies, with the supreme god, or universal life force, heading the pantheon. In the Egyptian pantheon, Ptah represents this supreme force. Below Ptah is the creator god, represented by Ra and Atum, while Anu would likely be the Sumerian rival. Ptah's hieroglyph was depicted as two coiled serpents, much like the double-headed helix of DNA and identical to the current medical motifs used by doctors today.[45] The male creator generally has a female counterpart, like Sophia and Lilith, to create other lower gods. The female and male creator aspects generally also turn up in one of the lower gods. Other pantheons would have included Enlil, Ialdaboth, El, and Adonai/Adonis as the male deity.

Atlantean markers and parallels clearly permeate Egyptian recollections of prehistory. These magnificent markers are merely the tip of the iceberg. Atlantean markers permeate most pagan mythologies around the planet.

CHAPTER 19

ECHOES FROM ATLANTIS, SUMER, AND MU

The Lord then said to Noah, "Go into the ark, you and your whole family, because I have found you righteous in this generation."

—Genesis 7:1

Why do deluge legends from around the globe echo an unexplained ancestral inheritance back to Atlantean mythology?

Why do the Quiche Maya and diffused polytheist cultures of prehistory remember creepy gods and demigods as serpents?[1]

Certainly, the Quiche Maya recollect that snakes, vipers, and/or serpents represented the minor gods of their pantheon.[2] Historian Don Carlos De Siguenza curiously concluded from ancient Central American manuscripts that the Aztecs descended from the Toltecs, who descended from the mysterious Olmecs, which Don Carlos believed came from Atlantis.[3] Unaccountably, the Aztecs preserved similar flood accounts to that of the Mediterranean cultures, regarding giants who were destroyed by water.[4] Generally, the Aztecs recorded the people of the antediluvian age refused to worship the gods, so the gods destroyed humanity with a flood, saving only Tata and his wife, Nena, who were warned by the god Tlaloc, who also provided them with a great log (ark).[5] The *Popol Vuh* recorded humankind did not remember or honor their gods, so the gods brought the deluge by darkening the earth and sending a black rain. The Quiche Maya also believed that not all antediluvians were destroyed—some were spared so they could survive to repopulate the earth afterwards.[6]

Similarly, Charles Etienne Brasseur, the French abbot who discovered and translated the *Popol Vuh* into French in 1864 C.E., met natives who held long-time beliefs concerning the destruction of a continent he believed was Atlantis, just as he concluded the Aztec creator god, Quetzalcoatl, came from Atlantis.[7] Quetzalcoatl was the god of the east, the king of Tulan, and a serpent;[8] thus, *Quetzalcoatl* ultimately translates, according to Jonathan Evans, as "bird serpent."[9] Brasseur further noted the *Popol Vuh* was written in part from memory and copied in part from the sacred books of the Quiche Mayan, the *Book of Princes*, written in characters that only the priests and the princes understood.[10]

In fact, the Aztecs declared to Cortez that their capitol city, Tenochtitlan, was designed after the lost Aztec homeland, which was originally located in the middle of a lake and surrounded by canals,[11] just as the capitol of Atlantis was. In this same line of thinking, the ancestral home of the Aztecs was an island in the east (Atlantic) called Aztlan. Moreover, the Maya, too, trace their heritage back to a great island in the Atlantic. Both the Maya and the Aztec recant the surviving Atlanteans as tall, white, fair-skinned, and fair-haired beings,[12] just as the Atlanteans are remembered in other cultures.

Central and South American religions contain many creator gods from the diverse cultures and nations, who are all considered to be the same god by many: Quetzalcoatl, Kontiki, Votan, Thunupa, and Viracocha.[13] The creation epic of the Incas concerning Veracocha contains records of Veracocha creating giants from stone. These giants were benevolent and judicious at first, but later they became corrupted and violent and began to make war, just as in the Egyptian and Atlantean legends. Humanity became cruel, vitriolic, barbaric, murderers; they were so enthralled with stealing and making war that they began to ignore the gods.[14] Finally, though, because of the violence and wars, a great flood destroyed humanity. Viracocha decided humankind was no longer good enough; he destroyed all[15] but two brothers and their families, whom he forewarned so that they could take refuge atop a great mountain.[16] In fact, Ignatius Donnelly believed a great part of Central American antediluvian history pertains to the activities of a race of giants known as Quinames.[17] The evidence just seems to go on and on.

Chinese farming cultures contemporaneous with the Sumerians, the Yang Shao and Longshan, recorded a terrible warlord ripped holes in the sky canopy, drowning the people of the earth, except for one noble queen and a small band of warriors, who took refuge upon a mountain top.[18] Other Chinese legends recorded Euhhi escaping the flood with his wife, three sons, and three daughters.[19] Chinese legends also record Yu as the tamer of the flood and the founder of the Xia Dynasty over 4,200 years ago. What makes the Yu legend so interesting is that he made the world safe once more with the aid of dragons.[20] No archaeological evidence exists for the Yu and the Xia dynasty, but legends have been passed down about a Golden Age of peace overwhelmed by flood. These were the sage kings, sons of gods, just as the inheriting Shang dynasty believed they were.[21] Many of the older characters from the Chinese written language burgeon with enigmatic features reflecting prehistory and, in particular, the Noah account.[22]

Japanese scholars recorded the Taiwanese accounts in the early twentieth century C.E., which tell a story that includes warnings from the gods, the sound of terrible thunder emanating from the sky, earthquakes, torrential rain causing a great flood that engulfed all of humankind and a surviving remnant that fled to mountaintops or escaped on a boat. The Taiwanese account of the Ami tribe recalls four gods of the sea and two gods of the land who conspired to destroy humankind and two survivors, Sura and Nakao, who survived on a boat provided for them by the gods that came to land on the Ragasm Mountain top.[23]

Again, in Australian mythology, spirit people called *Nurrumbunguttias* came from the sky; they lived on earth with humanity. They were a very advanced race of people that ruled over the earth, until the sea rose up one day, creating a great flood and drowning most of the spirit people; although, some escaped backed to heaven.[24] Once more, the Australian myth is eerily close to biblical, Atlantean, Greek, Mesopotamian, Indian, Chinese, and American mythology. This is particularly so when you consider that many Australian legends contain the Rainbow Covenant as part of the mythology, as do Mayan and Hawaiian legends.[25]

The North American tribe of the Arikara, too, remembers a similar legend. In the beginning, the Great Sky Chief, Nishano, created giants, but after time, the giants had no respect for their maker.[26] In variant versions, the Great Sky Spirit, Nesaru, destroyed that scurrilous race of giants with a great flood, but of course, he saved some humans from this destruction to repopulate the earth.[27] Surprisingly enough, the surviving beings from this flood were only the few good giants![28] All these similar deluge legends that contain the destruction of the giants at the heart of the flood legend cannot simply be coincidences.

In a similar fashion, the Hopi remember the same tradition, but with more direct connections to the Atlantean account. The Hopi claim their ancestors were reared by the great Snake Clan, who escaped the destruction of their island homeland in the eastern ocean (Atlantic). The clan's migration was made possible through the enlightened leadership of Pahana, the White Brother.[29]

Even though giants are not mentioned in all flood legends, most are very consistent; giant narratives are more numerous in more cultures than people tend to realize. Most contain a memory of humankind becoming wicked, violent, and rebelling against the gods. Again, most remember a limited few escaping, with foreknowledge of the catastrophe, on some boat and landing atop a mountain or escaping to a great mountain for safety. These memories kept alive in myth and legend are maintained in more than 500 tribes in Australia; in North American aborigine tribes, such as the Ute American, the Chiglet, the Yakima and Olympic peninsula tribes, Californian tribes, the Cree, the Algonquins, the Creek Natchez, the Knisteneaux, the Mojave, the Cheyenne, the Pomo, the Navajo, and the Apache; in Central and South American tribes that include the Mayan, the Choctan, the Jevaro, the Mutaro, the Canari, the Yaraulo, the Tupinamba, and the Atempe; and in Asian Indian mythology.[30] Similar legends also have been recorded in the South Pacific, from Hawaii, Tahiti, Fiji, and the Polynesian Islands.[31]

As the Mediterranean legends go, the Atlanteans controlled parts of Egypt, Libya, Europe, Central America, and South America, while the people of the Mediterranean united to repel the Atlantean invaders. The antediluvian world appears to have been populated by three great civilizations, all led by giants. The day six Atlanteans were a race that was red-skinned, while the Aryans (Sumerians) were white, and the third race of people was black-skinned (Mu) from the Nile Valley[32] and a Pacific Ocean subcontinent; other legends recant Atlanteans with white skin. The Egyptians regarded themselves as red.[33]

Even so, ancient Aryans and Egyptians recognized four human races, according to Ignatius Donnelly: white, red, black, and yellow.[34] On a similar note, the *Popol Vuh* appears to back the four-race notion of the antediluvian epoch. In the *Popol Vuh* account, four peoples (day six) were created that multiplied around the earth, creating many tribes from black to white, who spoke many tongues, which was understood to mean four distinct races.[35] Likely then, the black race resided in Africa south of Egypt, while the yellow race dwelled in Mu or Sunderland.

Mu's occultist acceptance as an antediluvian civilization dates back to a Spanish monk, Diego de Landa, who copied notes from original Mayan writings. Charles Ettienne Brasseur de Bourg then studied Landa's notes, discovering the destruction of an antediluvian civilization that he believed was Atlantis but thought was located in the western Indian Ocean. Thus, Mu became the Mayan Atlantis. Over time, occultism has meshed Mu with Lemuria; the lost continent; a parallel civilization dreamed up by Helen Blavatsky in her book *Isis Unveiled;* and with Sunderland, an ancient civilization discovered in 1964 C.E. east and south of Asia.[36]

In other legends, Mu's home world was believed to have been a large continent located in the Pacific Ocean. It was a civilization that exploited technology, inclusive of the mythological antigravity; Mu fell to a similar destruction as Atlantis. The ancient Indian holy books, the *Vedas*, were believed to have originated in Mu. Mu was further believed to have founded Lower Egypt, while Atlantis founded Upper Egypt.[37] An Englishman, James Churchward, copied from Brahman tablets information that contained Mayan inscriptions concerning the continent of Mu, which was located somewhere in the Pacific Ocean. Similarly, le Plongeon, a South American archaeologist of the nineteenth century, discovered references to Mu in the *Troano Codex*.[38]

One wonders whether or not accounts documented within the *Vedas* recant the destruction of Atlantis or a most similar end to the empire and subcontinent of Mu. *Veda* hymns convey a great city swallowed up by the sea, celebrated as “Dwarka” and “Dvaraka” in various accounts. These accounts were recorded in the Indian epic *Mahahbarata*, which was composed a few hundred years after the *Rig Veda*, and were recorded in the *Bhagvata* and the *Vishnu Purana*.[39]

Dwarka's ruins are located underwater, just off the northwest coast of India; it was the sacred city, of Krishna, according to the *Vishnu Purana*.[40] Dwarka was a fabulous city, flaunting luscious gardens with soaring walls, rituals, and splendor; it was an antediluvian city;[41] dated well beyond 1500 B.C.E.[42] Dwarka was ruled by Krishna, a human sponsored king of the god Vishnu; when Krishna was killed, a new and Dark Age, the Kali Age, descended in which the oceans rose to submerge Dwarka.[43] The Kali Luga was the worst age in Hindu tradition.[44] What is most curious, and not likely coincidental, Hindu Sages utilizing the calendar of India have dated this catastrophe back to 3102 b.c.e,[45] a date corresponding very closely with biblical deluge accounts.

The Southeast Indian version of the Brahmins, the *Vishnu Purana Veda,* cites a city named *Mahabalipuram*, which translates as "the city of the giant, Bali." Bali's dynasty was succeeded by his son, Banasura, who was also portrayed as a giant. During the reign of Banasura, a war began, which resulted in Krishna of Dwarka laying siege to Mahabalipuram city. Even though the god Siva fought on the side of Banasura, Krishna prevailed, toppling Siva, and exiling Banasura from Mahabalipuram. Malecheren, a Raja, then succeeded as king of Mahabalipuram. He was rewarded by a heavenly being with the never-beforedone-to-a-human favor of being transported to the "Divine Court of Indra."[46]

Could this be the same court as Nippur and the grand Council of the Heavenly Anunnaki, and could Malecheren be Enoch? Malecheren was then rewarded with heavenly knowledge and returned to Mahabalipuram City with new ideas of splendor and magnificence, transforming his city in splendor; it was then celebrated beyond all the cities of the earth. The angry gods then assembled at the Court of Indra, where they commissioned the god of the sea to destroy Mahabalipuram City, which pretended to vie with the splendor of the celestial mansions, by overflowing the city with the waters of the ocean, never to rise again.[47]

To this end, Hancock concludes that Mahabalipuram, Dwarka, Atlantis, and the five antediluvian city-states of Sumer all suffered an identical fate at the hands of the gods.[48] Depending upon which myth one references, the age of Atlantis contained either three or four great civilizations and races.

The Golden Age in Greek, Atlantean, Indian, and Egyptian mythology was a common theme that spoke to an age reigned over by divine kings. It seems clear that these far-flung legends bear witness that refugees from four human races, along with Nephilim, indeed survived the deluge; whereas, Scripture bears witness specifically to Sethian survival, along with Nephilim survival. Although, the Bible did document other day 6 humans surviving that we will cover in the next section.

So, too, did ancient Iranian legends tell about a Golden Age where divine kings reigned.[49] The *Shahnameh* listed ten Pishdadian, or Peisdadien (possibly Poseidon), kings, who reigned before the flood,[50] just as they did in Atlantis. The Larsa list of Sumerian kings boasted the same number of kings. It listed Ziusudra, another name for Utnapishtim, as the last of those kings that reigned before the flood.[51]

Similarly, ten Patriarchs were listed in the Genesis chronology from Adam to Noah, as well as ten Cainite Patriarchs. Ten kings is an antediluvian mythology constant: the Chaldean record of Berosus, from the Sumerian King's List, contained ten antediluvian kings that all lived long life spans, just as Noah did.[52] In the same manner, India held to nine Brahmadikas, along with Brahma, the leader, making ten; and the Chinese had ten divine antediluvian emperors (giants called Miaotse) and/or ten Immortal emperors called the Sons of Heaven, who ruled the mundane world on behalf of the heavenly gods,[53] just as there were ten ancestors of Odin and ten kings of the Arabian Adites.[54]

Giants figure largely in Celtic and Scandinavian mythology.[55] Viking mythology placed antediluvian giants in opposition and as enemies to gods. The first two beings created were giants, Ymir and Audumla, who created Buri, the first of the gods, who married the giantess, Bestia. This marriage produced the famous three sons Odin, Hoenir, and Loki,[56] just as the hero Sigurd of Hunaland, the son of Sigmund, son of Volsung, was a direct descendant of Odin. Thor retrieved the Cauldron from the giant Hymir, and his clan of giants, in the land of the giants, Jotunheim.[57]

Norse legends depict builder giants that assisted with great feats in the antediluvian world,[58] eerily echoing Cain and his descendants, Sumerian gods and giants, and the Atlantean companions/followers of Horus. These were the builder giants, the Asgaard, and the abode of the Asgaard/gods was on an island paradise (Atlantis).[59] In Norse legends, the giants were also overthrown by the gods.[60] The Titan survivors from this deluge cataclysm were Lif and his wife, Lifthraser.[61]

Similarly, ancient Irish and Welsh legends articulate a remarkable history of giants (descending from Tuatha Denaan), which included Fingall and his son Ossian, as well as the famous Jack the Giant Killer.[62] The Tuatha Denaan were fairy folk that settled Ireland sometime after 3000 B.C.E.[63] Ireland, as you will recall, was part of the Atlantean empire ruled by Euemon. Tuatha Denaan were the divine children of the matriarchal goddess,[64] thus making them also a Nephilim race. They were a magical race of gods with human personalities; they argued, killed, got drunk, committed adultery, and acted jealous. Tuatha Denaan reigned until they were driven to the otherworld by the Millesians.[65]

Irish legends speak of the Tuatha Denaan descendants driving out the Formorians, who were also giants.[66] The Formorians allegedly were a race of monsters descended from Noah, through his cursed son Ham; it would appear that Ham's curse is the root cause for the mutation into monsters. Formorians were hairy (a Nephilim trait), had one eye, sometimes one leg,[67] and were similar to the Greek Cyclops.

The faint echoes of Atlantis are too far flung, too persistent, and too familiar among the diverse cultures of the world to be ignored. Quite frankly, Atlantean echoes cannot intelligently be shoved aside when considered as a whole. In truth, Atlantean echoes tend to coalesce into a choir shouting to future generations about the validity and hypostasis of the antediluvian epoch, their people, and their achievements, both good and evil.

CHAPTER 20

THE SEVEN SAGES OF ATLANTIS

Disaster will come upon you, and you will not know how to conjure it away. A calamity will fall upon you that you cannot ward off with a ransom; a catastrophe you cannot foresee will suddenly come upon you. "Keep on, then, with your magic spells and with your many sorceries, which you have labored at since childhood. Perhaps you will succeed, perhaps you will cause terror. All the counsel you have received has only worn you out! Let your astrologers come forward, those stargazers who make predictions month by month, let them save you from what is coming upon you."

—Isaiah 47:11–13

William Petrie, the famous Egyptologist, was the first to father the Dynastic Race Theory of the First Time as a solution to the enigma to the origins of Egyptian civilization.[1] Petrie's theory discusses the Shebtiu family of divine beings, famed for their great building expertise.[2]

Were the Shebtiu related to nebulous beings recorded in other cultures?

Descendants of the inexplicable Shebtiu are believed, in the Dynastic Theory, to have spawned the original pharaohs. The Shebtiu, in my opinion, are the same divine seven sages of ancient Babylon, the Sebetti, whose patron was Enki/Satan and who, like the Shebtiu, taught humankind the illicit knowledge from heaven. The Shebtiu consisted of eight divine beings (seven fallen angels and Satan), including Kema Sa Ta, the serpent-creator of the earth.[3]

All this is very similar to R. A. Schwaller de Lubicz's King of Pharonic Theocracy theory, which proposes that mankind devolved from a superior race of giants, in whom the perfect knowledge of science and theology originated. Schwaller de Lubicz named this religious blend of science and theology the Absolute. He believed the pharaoh or god-king was a symbol of this Absolute.[4] Schwaller de Lubicz was a French theosophist, an occultist, and a member of secret societies that promote a mystical belief system important to bringing about the end times. He studied ancient Egyptian art and architecture that somehow revealed to him a complex esoteric philosophy based on sacred geometry. He claimed he solved the alchemical symbols encoded onto French Gothic cathedrals and he wrote several well-read books on his teachings.[5]

During the First Time, another curious group in Egypt was founded; their legacy continued even after the deluge. This fascinating group was identified as the Followers of Horus (the seven fallen angels, the Shebtiu, the Sebetti, the seven sages, who provided illicit heavenly knowledge), who were mythological beings remembered both as the bearers and the preservers of knowledge.[6] They founded a cult of astronomer-priests that guarded the Atlantean knowledge, religion, and technology for millennia after the deluge,[7] and that cult spawned Brotherhood Orders of the Snake that continue even to this day. These curious antediluvian gods, the Sebetti/Shebtiu, not coincidentally, were recorded and described as beings with the characteristic long-headed serpentine distinction. They were known also as *Urshu* or *watchers*; they were divine beings that acted as intermediaries between humans and the high-ranking Ntr-gods.[8] Their illustrious Snake Order of priests appears to be akin to the semidivine Order of Enoch/Oannes, who led the Anunnaki down from Mount Hermon. The designation *Urshu* actually translates from ancient Egyptian as *watcher*[9]—divine beings comparable to the Shemsu-Hor, also known as the companions of Horus.[10]

Similarly, Schwaller de Lubicz believed that demigods or priests were the original mentors of pharonic civilization, teaching them ancient knowledge.[11] In the same line of thought, Osiris was known as the serpent king/god, who voyaged around the world as the bringer of civilization and the founder of his mystery cult of knowledge,[12] just as Quetzalcoatl was a serpent god, the civilizer and teacher of the arts, sciences, and crafts to the Central Americans.[13] All sources from antiquity seem to speak to the same source for antediluvian civilization, which derived from the illicit knowledge of heaven and the Seven Sacred Sciences received from the infamous seven fallen angels, Azazel/ Shemyaza, Amasses, Gadereel, Baraqiel, Kokariel, Tamiel, and Asderiel, for the benefit of giants and rebellious humans.

Manetho recorded circa 250–300 B.C.E. that ancient Egypt was divided into three great eras: the reign of the gods; the followers of Horus, who migrated to Egypt from somewhere; and the dynastic reign of the pharaoh kings, which began sometime around 2950 B.C.E., with Menes.[14] Narmer was likely another name for Menes, according to Bauer, and he was the first human king of Egypt, according to Berosus and Manetho.[15] Manetho wrote three books describing the history to Egypt, with the first book recording the mythic reign of the gods and kings and ending with the eleventh dynasty of the mortals.[16] Manetho was commissioned by the first Greek rulers of Egypt after Alexander, Ptolemy I, and Ptolemy II to record in Greek a comprehensive survey to the history of Egypt.[17] As with Berosus's works, only extracts of Manetho's work have survived through historians such as Josephus, Eusebius, and ecclesiastical writers.[18] He compiled an illustrious history reigned over by the gods, dating back to 10,000 years before the flood,[19] circa 13,000–14,000

B.C.E. and immediately following the last ice age. This prehistorical accounting began after the reign of Ptah, who reigned for 12,300 years;[20] the gods reigned for a total of 24,300 years.[21]

Manetho was a priest from the Order of Heliopolis, or Alexandria. Manetho's literature became famous because he wrote in the Greek language, accurately translating a complete account that other Greek writers could not.[22] Etchings upon the walls in the temple of Seti in Abydos, dating back to the fourteenth century B.C.E., and the Palermo Stone, dating the information back to 2400 B.C.E. and located today in Sicily, testify to the accuracy of Manetho's account. Additionally, *The Turin Papyrus* begins with Ptah at 12,500 b.c.e; its list of subsequent rulers is identical to Manetho's account and is also dated as far back as 1250 B.C.E.[23]

Egyptian mythology holds that the surviving postdiluvian companions of Horus salvaged and transported with them from the First Time great knowledge from across the sea to Egypt, India, and China.[24] This mysterious Order of Sages survived the great flood and arrived from a distant island or continent; they were known precariously as "builder gods," "senior ones," and "the followers of Horus." According to Professor Raymond of Manchester University, the mortal builder gods, acknowledged also as the "lords of light," emigrated from an island (Atlantis) celebrated as the "homeland of the primeval ones," whose home was threatened with destruction.[25] The seven postdiluvian sages were credited with rebuilding the postdiluvian world and recreating a new age of the gods. The seven sages are also attributed with designing and building the Egyptian monuments, this according to the *Building Texts*,[26] and are likely the same cryptic group Osiris belonged to.

The original divine and immortal Shebtiu, according to Rohl, were indeed great gods, the builder gods, the senior ones, while the order of priests they created were renowned as the Brethren of the Seven Sages and likely led originally by Enoch/Oannes. The brethren were generally identified as the offspring or kin of the seven (angelic) sages. Remember, Rohl notes that the ancient Egyptians knew the original Shebtiu as (heavenly) Anunnaki.[27]

In his work *History Begins at Sumer*, Samuel Noah Kramer notes that Sumer was visited by semidivine beings from the sea, who were one half fish and one half human; they were commissioned by the gods to teach the arts of civilization to the Sumerians, which included the sciences, mathematics, writing, building, and requisite laws. One wonders if the fish-god father was Poseidon. Certainly, first known depictions of Poseidon's brother Zeus reflected a human form with a fishtail, and the Avatar of Vishnu was also a fish-god.[28]

One also wonders after the Atlantis connections, particularly when one recalls the ancient Babylonian king list that cited the ten Atlantean-like kings known as the Peisiadian/Poseidon kings. It's also curious to consider that Enki, like Poseidon, was god of the waters,[29] while Enlil, like Zeus, was the god of the air/sky, and in both pantheons both gods shared in the governing of earth.[30] On top of all this, the anthropologist Germaine Dieterlen notes the ancient Babylonians believed that Babylon was indeed founded by mythological fish-gods. Mesopotamian mythology holds that life was brought to our world by creatures from the sea known as the *oannes*, which coincidently is Mayan for "he who lives in water."[31]

Consider, too, the alternative appellation for Enoch the Evil was Uanna-Adappa, and for Berosus, it was Oannes, according to David Rohl.[32] Enoch, as you will recall, was the founder of the mortal order of the Nephilim seven sages (the Atlantean Companions of Horus) spoken of by Berosus and a high priest of Enki, the god of the sea. The leader of the brotherhood of fish-gods, according to Kramer, was Oannes. This was likely the angelic Oannes with whom Enoch also became directly associated as the high priest of this fish/bull/snake cult of Poseidon. These divine and semidivine fish-gods were renown in Sumerian lore for their great wisdom, knowledge, and skills in matters of state affairs, architecture, engineering, and building.[33] They were the same mythological builder gods known in India, Egypt, and around the antediluvian world.

It was this Enoch/Oannes who brought the giants/Nephilim/Anunnaki down from the mountain (Mt. Hermon) to intermix with the day six-led Cainites, and it was this Enoch/Oannes who originally established the antediluvian kingship,[34] in partnership with the dark angels. Each of these Nephilim kings was originally paired with one of the Seven Seraphim Sages, one of the fish-gods,[35] and perhaps later with one of the earthly sages led by Enoch. The king and priest partnership of dragon dynasties was accurately depicted in the allegories of Grail legends that included King Arthur, the great wizard, Merlin, and the Merovingians, who became famous as the Fisher king.

Remember, figures such as Enoch, Hermes, Thoth, and Mercury were considered to be both counselors to the antediluvian king possessing the secrets to the heavenly knowledge and intermediaries between humankind and the gods. Remember, Rohl noted the earthly sages led by Oannes/Enoch were believed to have been either offspring of or kin (brethren) to the original Seven Seraphim Sages. No doubt this was the same Snake Brotherhood as the followers of Horus, the Shebtiu, known in Egypt by the Sumerian idiom *Anunnaki*, were part of.[36]

So, too, are these Sumerian sages the same brotherhood of ascetic Snake sages recorded in the *Vedas* of India. Hancock noted that both groups of antediluvian sages somehow survived into the postdiluvian epoch. Hancock also noted that both sets of sages were directly associated with fish and sea symbolisms; both were commissioned to preserve the gifts of civilization for humankind, both before and after the flood; and both were distinctive kingmakers. Adding further to these parallels, Hancock noted that all were ascetic brotherhoods that taught spiritual and religious doctrines to the people, as well as being royal advisers to the kings.[37] The seven sages of India, Egypt, and Sumer were the same Snake Brotherhood.

Also note that in his book *Astrology: A History,* Peter Whitfield writes that Sumerian conceptions concerning astral kingship, divine knowledge, and science, as well as the study of omens, were originally imported by a group of divine teachers (seven sages) that lived in ancient times and then taught to man.[38] These, of course, were the main protagonists that created the famous ten Nephilim, antediluvian Ring Lords listed by Berosus in the king list that we spoke of previously. This roundtable of heroes from prehistory included Gilgamesh, Utnapishtim, and or Ziusudra.

It would also seem clear that the seven mortal sages who survived the flood later partnered with Hermes and Nimrod at Babel. This then would make perfect sense with an enigmatic reference in Qur’an that named two dark angels, Harut and Marut, that taught witchcraft to the people of Babylon,[39] the city that was the womb for postdiluvian mysticism. One wonders as to the relationship between Marut of the Qur’an and the violent storm gods, the Maruts, of the *Rig Veda*.[40] The Zoroastrian *Zend-Avesta* recorded one of the Sages as Yima, the one who taught the postdiluvian survivors civilization and laws, where one law enforced the banishment of giants.[41]

The words of these great, antediluvian, angelic sages were copied down by Thoth/Hermes/Enoch into various books and secured away for safety in temples that stretched along the Nile River.[42] Hermes, as it was generally concluded, later hid his antediluvian secrets somewhere in ancient Egypt.[43]

Ancient Egyptian papyrus makes several references to the ancient, hidden chambers, known as the Chambers of Archives and the Hall of Records that contain all antediluvian knowledge.[44] These mysterious chambers were stated to be buried close to the Sphinx.

Hancock and Bauval suggest the Rosicrucians, the Theosophist Society, and Freemasonry all keep these teachings very much alive and well today[45] within their organizations and writings. So, too, did Edward Cayce conclude the same, for many of his Atlantean prophecies predicted the great antediluvian knowledge would be discovered in great vaults at the foot of the Great Pyramid and the Sphinx around the start of the new millennium. This line of thought is consistent with the Legends of the Craft and, in particular, with the Legend of Enoch, where Enoch built nine great vaults and buried them in the earth to save the great antediluvian knowledge from the coming deluge.[46] Remember, Enoch the Evil was the first Master Mason; he was believed in lore to have built the Great Pyramids and the Sphinx as monuments to the great antediluvian society.

The First Time was the age of the *Neteru*, Egyptian for “gods,”[47] known variantly as the Shebtiu. Neteru were another interesting group of gods who ruled antediluvian Egypt. In the First Time, gods, demigods, and mortals reigned in exactly this order of chronology. The Greek historian Diordus Siculus noted Egypt had been ruled by both gods and heroes before the mortals ascended to power in First Time Egypt. We are also informed that demigods (Nephilim) reigned before the mortals. The originating line of dynastic kings was an elite group, both divine and semidivine.[48] Put in biblical terms, *watchers* reigned first at the distribution of the earth, just as Deuteronomy recorded. These were the gods that built the ancient cities of Sumeria that humans later inherited, cities such as Uruk and Jericho. Note, *Ntr-gods (Neteru*) also translated as “one who watches”;[49] Ntr-gods were *watchers*.

Fallen angels then procreated with daughters of men, producing the demigods, Nephilim, who reigned over ancient Egypt after the age of the gods. As the immortal spirit faded in the Nephilim/semidivine, resulting from the edict of God that removed their illegal, immortal spirits, the Nephilim became the evil giant potentates described in both the Bible and Atlantis. Mortal human hybrids, as descendants of these Nephilim kings, later inherited the throne around 2950 B.C.E., in the postdiluvian epoch that began with Nimrod and Menes, which we will explore later.

Central American legends reflecting the seven sages date back to the Olmecs, circa 3000 B.C.E. They were credited with providing Central Americans with all their important cultural developments.[50] The Olmeca or Oloman, as they were called in the *Popol Vuh*, were part of the original race of the East Yucatan.[51]

No one knows from what source the Olmecs received their knowledge, but some such as Gilbert and Cotterrell believe Olmecs were in direct contact with the Atlanteans,[52] or even another possible antediluvian society dominated by giants. The Quiche Maya saw their first fathers as all sorcerers and wizards.[53] The *Historia Chichimeca of Ixtlilxochitl* recorded Quetzalcoatl preaching to the Olmeca, teaching arts and crafts of civilization.[54] Remember, Abbot Brasseur de Borbourg believed Quetzalcoatl actually came from Atlantis.

Edgar Cayce suggested that survivors from Atlantis escaped to both Egypt and Central America.[55] Cayce suggested Atlantean survivors formed the Central American Royal House of Atlan that was led by Iltar. Cayce also suggested Atlantean refugees not only brought a set of antediluvian knowledge to Egypt but also to Central America, burying the knowledge somewhere in the Yucatan, while a third set was left at Atlantis.[56] Cayce further suggested the Hall of Records was buried in a chamber under the Sphinx.[57] Cayce additionally, and inexplicably, named the three islands that were left in the wake of Atlantis's destruction as Poseidia, Aryan, and Og.[58]

The *Vatico-Latin Codex* additionally describes survivors believed to have hailed from Atlantis. They protected large amounts of knowledge in astronomy, geometry, agriculture, and medicine,[59] likely the seven spurious sciences, carried to far-off lands after the deluge by the Atlantean seven sages, the followers of Horus. Carlos de Siguenzay Gongora, a former Jesuit priest who has worked extensively on the chronology of ancient Mexico, believes Olmecs originated from Atlantis, or at least their culture did.[60] Supporting all this are the Mistecs, who are likely the direct descendants of the Olmecs; to this day, the Mistecs still revere and worship the Atlantean rain god Tlaloc.[61]

The Aztecs, as you will recall, descended from the Toltecs, who descended from the Olmecs. The Toltecs were an aboriginal people who emigrated with the Quiche Maya, and then united with the Olmecs.[62] The Tolteca, also known as the Yaqui and the Olmeca in the *Popol Vuh*, were remembered as the people of the sacrificers and the priests, who later became the Mexican nation.[63] The Toltecs were recorded as very skilled silversmiths, a skill taught to them by Quetzalcoatl,[64] for Quetzalcoatl was remembered as the Toltec civilizer.[65] He was the founder of Chichen Izta and the great teacher who taught the arts and sciences to the Quiche Maya.[66]

According to the Brahmins, envoys from Mu after the flood were dispatched to India and Central America to disseminate secret knowledge similar to that of the companions of Horus, who carried their knowledge to Egypt, India, and China from Atlantis. The Hindu epic *Ramayana* by Valmiki declared postdiluvian India was founded by sea-going conquerors from antiquity, the Nagas,[67] referred to by mythologist Joseph Fontenrose as "Snake-demons," who in Buddhism mythology traveled to China from India.[68] Nagas were similar to Mayan Naacals, priests, and Adepts that traveled the world as teachers of wisdom,[69] just as Osiris, Quetzalcoatl, the companions/followers of Horus, and the seven sages did. Hancock identified these Indian priests as the Ascetic Brotherhood, the seven (snake) sages; they were documented by the *Vedas* as surviving the deluge upon an ark with India's variant of Noah.[70]

A *Rig Veda* hymn identified the divine physicians, the *Asvins*.[71] These mysterious Asvins/Aswins were variantly recorded as divine intermediaries and guardian angels; they are frequently referred to throughout the *Veda*,[72] wandering about performing cures.[73] They were sons of the sun, warlike heroes, and healing gods.[74]

The *Rig Veda* recorded yet another shadowy group, *Aryas*, meaning "noble, pure, good, and enlightened folk."[75] Aryans were a loose knit set of tribes from southern Russia (Black Sea region of Scythia), whose common language formed the basis of Asiatic and European languages, the Indo-European language.[76] Aryan traditions were elemental for Hinduism, establishing powerful priests from among the royal bloodlines of the aristocracy; priests were only born into their own clan, an order renowned as Brahman.[77]

There are four major collections of the Vedic Hymns, with the *Rig Veda* being the oldest, dating back to 2000 B.C.E.;[78] although, many believe the *Vedas* date back to 5000 B.C.E.[79] Hindu tradition, however, represents the *Vedas* as being as old as creation, dating back to 8,000–10,500 B.C.E.,[80] and it describes an underlining force of creation that exploded into something out of nothing, the Brahman, in whom all existing things abide.[81] According to Vedic scholar David Frawley, these hymns speak to ancient Indian ancestors, who traveled across the sea after surviving a great flood.[82]

The oldest Veda elements are oral traditions consisting of four *Vedas*: *Samhita*, compilations of hymns commonly known as the *Rig Veda*, the *Sama Veda*, the *Yajur Veda*, and the *Atharva Veda*. Ancient Sanskrit translated *Veda* as "knowledge, gnosis, and/or insight, deriving from *vid*: to know, with *rig* deriving from *rik*: meaning verses or hymn; thus hymns of knowledge."

The seven Indian sages were commissioned to preserve, reproduce, and repromulgate the antediluvian *Vedas*, both before and after the flood.[83] *Vedas* recorded the mortal seven sages learning the antediluvian *Vedas* from seven fallen angels, who commissioned the repromulgation as a sacred trust, with a specific emphasis on recivilizing the earth.[84] Indian Sages followed the same spirit as the Egyptian followers of Horus, the Shebtiu, and Enoch the Evil. In the same spirit, the seven Indian sages were given astral manifestations, such as the Big Dipper, the same constellation Egyptian Pharaohs prayed of ascending to.[85] And in the same manner, Osiris, Isis, and Quetzalcoatl ascended to Orion,[86] alongside Azazel.

CHAPTER 21

THE *EPIC OF GILGAMESH*

> *Noah was six hundred years old when the floodwaters came on the earth. And Noah and his sons and his wife and his son’s wives entered the ark to escape the waters of the flood.*
>
> —Genesis 7:6–7

Major antediluvian events recorded in mythologies, legends, and religious documents from around the globe seemingly rely on the Bible for their source, yet endeavor to discredit biblical accounts at the same time. Can this supposition be applied specifically to the flood narrative chronicling Nephilim survival into the postdiluvian epoch? I believe it can.

The Sumerian flood narrative has become very famous through the *Epic of Gilgamesh* and its parallel Sumerian legend of Ziusudra and the Babylonian *Atra-Hasis* legend, offering a broader perspective for the flood narrative. Ziusudra was just another name for Utnapishtim of the Gilgamesh Epic. Utnapishtim was the Babylonian version copied from the original Sumerian version, where Ziusudra was the hero.[1]

These prehistoric Sumerian legends are the now famous, dissonant deluge accounts that our so-called academic scholars base their slanted, secular opinions upon, concluding biblical writers borrowed these legends as sources for the biblical Noah and flood narratives. However, historian and author Susan Wise Bauer notes that historians assume Genesis is based upon the Sumerian accounts, but in truth, the significant differences in detail between the stories robustly suggest they arose independently from the same cataclysm.[2]

The *Epic of Gilgamesh* is the tale of a traditional antediluvian hero discovered in the ancient library of King Ashurbanipal of Assyria,[3] dating from 626 B.C.E.[4] The discovery originally included twelve tablets and 3,000 lines, of which roughly half are now available;[5] the epic originally included six linked tales: “Tale of Enkidu,” “Journey to the Cedar Forest,” “The Bull of Heaven,” “Gilgamesh’s Journey,” “The Stars of the Flood,” and “Gilgamesh’s Quest.”[6] The exploits of Gilgamesh contain several points in common with those of Hercules. The scene of the story was centered in the city of Uruk/Erech that blended the philosophy, history, mythology, and religion for ancient Babylonia.[7]

The *Epic of Gilgamesh* is commonly regarded among the secular academia to be the world’s first epic tale.[8] Utnapishtim is the hero of the legend. The gods warned Utnapishtim,[9] likely Saclas/Prometheus/Ialdoboth/Enki, of the impending deluge seven days before the catastrophe. Utnapishtim was instructed to build a boat and to transport with him a representative pair of the entire animal kingdom. Utnapishtim was permitted to save his immediate family as well as all his kin; although, we are not informed of whom they were and how many of them there might have been. The boat, by the dimensions provided, would have been larger than an ancient ziggurat. The flood lasted seven days, and all life was washed from the face of the earth, leaving Utnapishtim and all his kin as the lone survivors of the intermixed Black Heads, saved to repopulate the earth. It truly is an amazing parallel with the Genesis account at the macro level, but as is the norm, the devil/Satan is in the details.

Gilgamesh, who recants this amazing legend of prehistory to Enikiden, was an extraordinary and fascinating individual. He was the first postdiluvian king of the ancient antediluvian city of Uruk.[10] Gilgamesh is described by George Smith as Gilgamesh “The Strong.”[11] In the opinion of Alford, Gilgamesh was a king of a city/state and was an evil potentate; he terrorized his citizens.[12] Thomas Cahill further confirms Gilgamesh to be the tyrannical king of Uruk and son of king Lugalbanda, who had ruled

Uruk before Gilgamesh.[13] The *Epic of Gilgamesh* described Gilgamesh ruling like a wild bull, who took any woman he chose when he chose.[14]

This tyrannical king of Uruk held the mysterious title "Atrakhasis," meaning he was unsurpassed in wisdom and was deified for surviving the deluge.[15] To this end, then, Gilgamesh must have been a surviving kin to Utnapishtim or a surviving Aryan. The epic portrays Gilgamesh as superior to other kings and a warrior lord of great stature; a hero born of Uruk; a goring wild bull; son of Lugalbanda; perfect in strength; the son of the lofty cow, the wild cow Ninsun; and the one who crossed the broad seas as far as the sunrise. He is also described as powerful, superb, knowledgeable, and an expert.[16] Gilgamesh, then, personified a bull hero in the epoch of Taurus, surreptitiously reflecting the bull cults of Osiris, Crete, Melchizedek, and Poseidon.

In addition to all this, Gilgamesh was one-third man and two-thirds god. He was described as part human and part divine, because his mother was the wild cow goddess Ninsun.[17] Gilgamesh was created by the gods and was considered a vitriolic demigod,[18] and he was eleven cubits tall, or sixteen-andone-half feet tall, if you calculate one cubit as eighteen inches.[19] Gilgamesh was a giant who would have dwarfed Goliath. Gilgamesh was recorded in the king lists as Lillu, implying that he held demonic powers.[20]

In *The Journal of Cuneiform Studies*, W. Hallo states Gilgamesh and Enkidu were giants in Babylonia, (unexplained) demigods that were half man and half fish and known as "sons of a fish"[21] (god). So, then, now we have a hero of the parallel Sumerian flood narrative, Gilgamesh, who was a giant, a demigod, and an evil potentate of a city/state in early postdiluvian society. Gilgamesh was an antediluvian Nephilim Aryan king, who somehow survived the flood. Gilgamesh must have been a Peisiadian fish-king, an antediluvian Anunnaki king crowned at Nippur.

According to legend, Gilgamesh was considered a Titan king, equivalent in status to that of Horus, Zu, and Marduk.[22] Gilgamesh was a giant/Titan/ demigod king, a Nephilim pure and simple, and a tyrannical ruler in the spirit of his forefathers. The *Epic of Gilgamesh* and all the other Sumerian, Akkadian, Assyrian, and Babylonian traditions were nothing more than hubris-filled Nephilim propaganda, chronicling the biased rewriting of history after their own self-glory and slanted in the flavor of the pantheon in which Nephilim derived. Alford states that Gilgamesh was an archetypal Titan king, who was born in Mother Earth[23], just as all Nephilim were.

If Gilgamesh was a Nephilim, then can we identify any other unexplained Nephilim involved in the Mesopotamian flood narratives? The answer is emphatically “yes,” of course. The Sumerian legends were teeming with arcane, giant demigods.

The individual Gilgamesh told the legend to was Enikiden, who also was a Nephilim; he was recorded as a giant like that of Gilgamesh. Enikiden was curiously referred to as a falling star, likely a reference to his Nephilim identity and origins, with *Nephilim* translated as “fallen ones.” This reference, when fused with angels being known allegorically as stars, dark angels, and fallen stars, makes the connection undeniable.

If, then, Enikiden was like Gilgamesh, he, too, would have had gigantic proportions similar to Gilgamesh, just as Enikiden was also described as being one-third man and two-thirds god.[24] Enikiden/Enkidu was created in the womb of the god Aruru as the Word of Anu. Enikiden was created as a match and a rival to hold Gilgamesh in check; he was born with shaggy hair and was a murderous youth.[25] But Gilgamesh and Enikiden soon became the best of friends, vowing to defend each other even unto death.[26] And consider this: all we have just said regarding Gilgamesh and Enikiden was contained within the Preamble to the Utnapishtim flood narrative. Enikiden, then, could have been one of many postdiluvian Nephilim created by the second violation of creation, by other impassioned fallen angels out of spite, after the flood, just as was set forth earlier.

Utnapishtim, the Babylonian Noah, was as Nephilim as well, but by this time, this information should come as no real surprise. There can be no doubt of this conclusion. In truth, Utnapishtim was an archetypal Nephilim, which was why he was undoubtedly selected by fallen angels, along with Gilgamesh, for the mission of surviving the flood. This, then, continued the Nephilim race in postdiluvian times, conflicting with God’s desire for the contrary, thereby ensuring violence and corruption from the antediluvian world would survive into the postdiluvian world.

The Sumerian version, on which the Babylonian version was based on, also introduced Ziusudra as a (Nephilim) Noah archetype, who was a pious, god-fearing king.[27] He was the son of the god Enki by a female earthling in other versions of this myth.[28] Remember, the antediluvian posterity of

Adam and Seth were peaceful agrarians, who lived in harmony with nature and humankind, without kings.

All this is not a fanciful conclusion designed to manipulate and compensate for the so-called biblical contradiction, where all other living creatures, except for those humans and animals with Noah on the ark, were washed from the face of the earth. Nor is this conclusion applied to compensate for the so-called revisionist rationalization of Nephilim surviving the flood by rewriting Genesis 6:4 to read: “The Nephilim were on earth in those days— and also afterward.” No, this conclusion is simple, undeniable reality and not a paradox, for the *Epic of Gilgamesh,* the counterpart to the biblical Noah, concedes this conclusion.

Utnapishtim was no ordinary human. He, too, was considered a Titan in the order of Gilgamesh, which would equate Utnapishtim with Horus and Marduk. Utnapishtim was one-third man and two-thirds god. However, this so-called Sumerian Noah was no ordinary Nephilim. He was considered by the epic as perfect for doing battle. He was described in unison as an ideal military warrior, a Titan king, and a demigod. He was an amazing Nephilim, who lived in pre-flood times, and terrorized the antediluvian epoch along with his evil cohorts. Then he was selected as the ideal master of corruption and violence to poison postdiluvian society.[29]

Ziusudra (Utnapishtim) was listed as the tenth king in the antediluvian Larsa List of kings from the antediluvian city of Larsa, which is commonly known by historians as the record of Sumerian kings.[30] Another of the antediluvian Sumerian king lists shows those ten kings to have been actually and literally Nephilim kings that were lowered from heaven; the list also shows Ubartutu’s son was Ziusudra, and his reign was interrupted by the flood.[31]

Utnapishtim was not the archetypal patriarch of peace as Noah was, selected and entrusted to repopulate the earth in righteousness with his pure Sethite progeny, as the so-called secular scholars would have us believe. Utnapishtim was the antithesis of this doctrine and of Noah; Utnapishtim was the quintessential Nephilim. He was a tyrannical, evil potentate, just like Gilgamesh. Once more, the Mesopotamian flood narratives were not the source documents for the biblical flood. They were merely parallel legends, recanting and detailing in mythology for the future generations the survival story from the deluge concerning the Nephilim.

According to the Sumerian Lamentation Texts concerning the deluge, the peculiar statement, "… the flood storm which overwhelmed the living creatures of heaven and earth—the Black Head Ones,"[32] leaves a puzzling enigma if it is not properly analyzed and deciphered. This statement confirms that Nephilim lived with mortal humans in antediluvian times, noting that the deluge overwhelmed both the humans and the beings fathered by the heavenly realm. Just as important, we can deduce that the Black Heads were the intermingled race of the antediluvian Sumerians corrupted by the Nephilim and part of the originating race of day six governed by Cainites.

Let us now bring the book of Enoch back into context to connect the Babylonian flood to Genesis as the source document. Mahway, Nephilim son of the fallen angel Barakel, received nightmares about the coming deluge and asked Enoch to interpret his dreams, from which Mahway learned there was nothing the giants could do to prevent the deluge or their own destruction. The narrative then moves on, naming one of the giants present at this gathering as Gilgamesh.[33] Gilgamesh was also listed as a giant in the Enoch Book of Giants recovered among the Dead Sea Scrolls on fragment 4Q531.[34]

My point is this: if Gilgamesh, the Anunnaki/Nephilim, was recorded in the biblical source documents as one of the giants intimately involved with the knowledge of the coming deluge, then he was likely the one and the same as the Gilgamesh that recanted the Utnapishtim flood narrative renowned as the *Epic of Gilgamesh.* Gilgamesh was obviously one of the surviving Nephilim from the antediluvian epoch, just as he stated he was. Gilgamesh must have been one of the unnamed kin of Utnapishtim, for both were kings. All this, then, suggests that, indeed, biblical records are the source documents for the Sumerian legends, even though we do not have biblical documents predating the Babylonian and Sumerian tablets.

This, then, accounts for biblical assertions that the giants of the Middle East and of the early postdiluvian world dwelled in Mesopotamia, Scythia, and the covenant lands, and then their diluted, royal, human bloodlines migrated to Egypt with Ham and Hermes post-Babel. To this conclusion, other legends recorded that all but a few select archetype giants were eradicated in the flood, with the surviving giants being known in legend as the sons of Anak, who inhabited the hill country of Palestine before Israel,[35] just as the Bible recorded.

CHAPTER 22

DEUCALION, MANU, AND SETH

At the end of the hundred and fifty days the water had gone down, and on the seventeenth day of the seventh month the ark came to rest on the mountains of Ararat.

—Genesis 8:4

Considering the *Epic of Gilgamesh* leads us to ask: Were Greek and other diffused flood legends a recollection of Nephilim's survival? And why was Noah oddly recorded by Gnostic gospels as being called "Deucalion" by the other races?[1]

From the Gnostic book of Noria, we learn that Noah's wife was named Noria, whom the Greeks knew as Pyrrha, wife of Deucalion, and that the Greeks called Noah "Deucalion."[2] However, just as in Sumerian legends, the Greek hero Deucalion (a Nephilim) was forewarned of the inevitable catastrophe by his father, who was a demigod (Nephilim or fallen angel). Greek legend records that Deucalion's father was the Titan (god/Nephilim) Prometheus, who warned both Deucalion and Pyrrha of the deluge and provided them with the ark.[3]

Whether or not Prometheus was a Titan or a god matters not, but legend has recorded Prometheus as the Titan creator god, brother to Zeus.[4] In a similar manner to Sumeria, Titans were regarded both as gods of heaven and semidivine, mortal gods of the earth. Prometheus was the god in Greek mythology that provided fire to humankind, an allegory for light, gnosis, and knowledge, to free humankind from the bonds of ignorance and from the God Jehovah, just as Lucifer articulated in Gnostic accounts of Adam and Eve eating from the Tree of Gnosis, which was "desirable for gaining wisdom."[5]

Either way, legend recorded Deucalion as Prometheus's son, making Deucalion a Titan/Nephilim, thus suggesting the Greek account is the Nephilim version in biblical clothing, just as the *Gilgamesh* version was. In fact, Greek legend recorded Deucalion and Mother Earth (likely Pyrrha/Noria) allegorically combined to repopulate the earth once more with giants after the flood,[6] just as Gaea and Uranus did before the flood. This account echoes a possible second impassioned encounter of dark angels and human females after the flood. Deucalion's son Hellenes was regarded as the ancestor to all Hellenes, and/or Greeks,[7] just as Japheth, son of Noah, was in the Hebrew tradition. And as you might recall, Hellenes was the shadowy Titan ancestor and hero from antediluvian Athens, who led the Greeks against the Atlanteans.

As for the Gnostic Noria, she also has a Nephilim legacy not generally discussed. In Gnosticism, Noria possessed many variant nomatives such as Norea, Orea, Noraia, Oraia, Horaia, Nora, Nuraita, and Nhuraita.[8] Norea was represented in Gnostic scripture as a descendant of Adam and Eve and was sometimes portrayed as an intended victim of rape by the apostate archons.[9] One wonders, did the indiscriminate rapes occur before or after the flood?

James Robinson further comments that the comparative analysis of Gnostic texts with Jewish Aggadah traditions shows the nomative *Norea* was a derivative of the infamous *Namaah* of the Cainite and Lamech lineage[10] and a known Dragon queen of Nephilim bloodlines. Finally, the originating Greek spelling for *Namaah*, according to Robinson, was *Horaia*, the naughty girl of Jewish legend that openly cavorted with the sons of God.[11] Noria/Pyrrha was a Nephilim, along with Deucalion; she was likely the Namaah recorded in Genesis for her infamy and posthumously remembered for surviving the flood.

Deucalion rode out the storm in an ark with his wife, landing atop a mountain named Mount Parnassus when the floodwaters receded. Then Deucalion and his posterity rebuilt civilization. According to Robert Temple, a Sanskrit scholar, Mount Parnassus is the same latitude as that of Mount Ararat, where Noah landed.[12]

The legends from the Indian subcontinent recorded in the *Vedas* articulate a similar story to that of the Hebrews, Greeks, and Sumerians. Oral traditions were set down in Sanskrit writing much later in history. Historians concede that these native Hindu and Brahmanical flood traditions have been imported to the Indus valley by wandering Aryans.[13] The *Vedas* are concluded to be very old because they were preserved in the Aryan language, which is archaic. Shortly after Aryans arrived in the Punjab, an elite, erudite order compiled the *Vedas*, developing in the late Vedic period the Brahman concept that a power like the universal life force holds the universe together. Sages concluded there was an immortal spark at the core of humans that was connected to the Brahman sustaining the universe.[14] By the ninth century B.C.E. (or before), ritualists had established the Brahman Priestly Clan.[15]

The *Rig Veda*, composed circa 600 B.C.E., was penned in an obscure Aryan tongue. Early Aryan clans named themselves *Jana*, which is Sanskrit for “tribe.”[16] Aryans drifted into two distinct languages, the Avestan dialect and the early form of Sanskrit. The Aryan pantheon seems to have spilled over into both Indian and Mediterranean cultures. Avestan Aryans named their gods *Daevas*, meaning “Shining Ones,” while in Sanskrit they were *Devas* and *Amrita*.[17]

The *Sapatha Brahmana is* the earliest surviving account of an antediluvian character king, a leader of men known as Manu. Manu is remembered as the father of humankind and a member of the surviving brotherhood of the seven sages.[18] *Manu* was a title held by six previous kings who reigned for long periods of time before the flood.[19] Manu permitted the seven sages to accompany him on the ark when the floodwaters deluged the antediluvian world.[20] The god Vishna warned Manu of the impending catastrophe that would overtake the three antediluvian worlds but also said not to fear, for Vishna would provide Manu with an ark to escape upon.[21] The question arises as to whether or not the *Satpatha Brahmana* has accurately testified to the three great antediluvian empires of Sumer, Atlantis, and Mu. One further speculates as to whether or not giants and humans were provided escape upon arks in all the disparate antediluvian civilizations of the earth.

Manu's commission after the flood was to reestablish agriculture, utilizing his cache of every kind of seed that he had stowed away on the escaping ark,[22] again most similar to the agrarian and vegetarian Noah. Manu, however, was both a king of the antediluvian epoch and the patriarchal founder of a dynasty of kings in the postdiluvian epoch.[23] Manu's ark made landfall not coincidently on the slope of a northern mountain in Himavat, located in the Himalaya mountain range. The deluge refugees then descended down the mountain very slowly, only when they were safe from being washed away,[24] again very similar to the biblical account of Noah. Manu's reward for saving humankind, all the animals, and all the plant life was mastery over all knowledge, insights into the mystery of the soul, and a form of immortality,[25] which echoes the Sumerian account of Utnapishtim.

Manu was likely Nephilim. Manu was recorded in the *Mahabharata Veda* as a very powerful *Rishi* or Sage, and not as a king.[26] In the southwest of India, another *Veda*, the *Satyaravrata*, Manu bears the name and title the Lord of Dravida.[27] In this account, Manu is believed, according to Hancock, to be the king of the Dravidian people.[28]

Finally, there is yet another important Gnostic tradition that provides for the survival of the Nephilim into the postdiluvian world. In this account, Seth was saved from the deluge to keep his race from extinction.[29] Seth, in this tradition, was the parent or founder to the Immoveable and/or Incorruptible Race.[30] They are also known as "the Posterity of Seth," "the Perfect Ones," and "Those Ones."[31] Gnostic tradition professes that history has been subdivided into four epochs, with three being antediluvian. This great Incorruptible Race was the race that was later transplanted to Sodom and Gomorrah after the flood, but which also descended from the previous ages, all antediluvian.[32] This was not the race descended from Seth the son of Adam.

This was the second of two races that were created by angels before the deluge, and in this tradition, Seth is an archetype of Seth, Emmakha (and or eternal) Seth, and not from the posterity of Adam but the posterity of angels and Nephilim, and the founder of the Gnostic race.[33] The Incorruptible

Race of giants is the mysterious race that Cain, Enoch the Evil, Lamech, Naamah, and Tubal-Cain have all allegedly and eagerly connected themselves to in legend. Cain and his posterity claimed a more royal and divine legacy, void of Adamite impurity, which the posterity of Cain, in turn, pollinated into the people of day six.

The Gnostic gospels record that not only Noah survived the deluge but also many people from the Immoveable Race did and that they were guided to a certain place within a luminous cloud to ensure they survived the flood.[34] The luminous cloud seems to be a direct connection to the place, or the angel, which created this mysterious race, for this surreptitious Seth was created in a luminous cloud in the likeness of the angel Adamas,[35] in a similar manner to the centaurs.

The recollection of the survival of the Immoveable Race by the hands of their fallen patriarchs has been diligently recorded into Gnostic scripture, literature, and legends from around the globe, but the polytheist scripture and legends of Nephilim survival” are not the legends and memories of Noah. This clandestine literature is not the biblical recollection; this must be plainly understood. The Nephilim and the Immoveable Race survived because of the intercession of fallen angels saving them and their illicit legacy from utter destruction, all to poison the postdiluvian world, just as they had poisoned the antediluvian epoch. Now after the flood, the descendants of the biblical Japheth and Ham, in a similar account to pantheistic and Gnostic legends, went to live among Those Ones (Nephilim) and rebelled against God once more at Sodom,[36] once again intermixing Nephilim bloodlines with the pure Adamite bloodlines that descended down through Noah and his sons.

This, then, accounts for deluge narratives being spawned by two to six separate surviving races—four human and two Nephilim—upon several possible arks: possibly at least four human recollections and two or more Nephilim recollections. We now have several suitable solutions explaining the doctrine of surviving Nephilim and the four human races (colors) of day six. The first derives from two separate violations against the laws of creation, one before the deluge and one after by fallen angels at Sodom; the second, from a possible skirting of God’s plans by small bands of Nephilim and humans in all antediluvian civilizations, who were warned of and protected by fallen angels from the pending deluge and who then modeled their accounts into legend after the Noah narrative. The third possibility derives from the perfect and Immoveable Race descending from the ancient Gnostic patriarch Seth and many of his descendants, who were protected in a luminous cloud from the flood catastrophe. And the fourth says that God may have provided for a human in each of the four antediluvian civilizations and races, a Noah equivalent, who then spawned the four races in the postdiluvian epoch. The reprobate race of Nephilim survived through other surreptitious schemes offered by dark angels.

Whichever the case may be, all four scenarios are compatible with Genesis 6, for none would have taken place unless God had ordained it to take place just as Genesis recorded it. Additionally, the Bible does, in fact, record several unexplained races surviving the flood, even though modern orthodoxy dismisses these dissonant accounts. The previous chapters of this book bear witness to a considerable volume of testimony from pagan cultures, other religions, and a variety of secular sources, which underlines that their histories and their legends were all anchored in the true historic source, Genesis.

It is now time to learn about the surviving giant races and day six humans documented during the time of Abraham and the Exodus, before moving onto Nimrod and Babel. Israelite history is yet another requisite foundation stone to unraveling the contemporary conspiracy, the renaissance of The Genesis 6 Conspiracy. The modern incantation has been preordained to climax, complete with its denouement, in our generation, the Terminal Generation, known biblically in prophecy as the generation of the end times and the last days.

SECTION III: The Descendants of Anak

BLOODLINES AND COVENANTS

CHAPTER 23

THE RAPHAITES AND THE AMORITES

> *And they spread among the Israelites a bad report about the land they had explored. They said, “The land we explored devours those living in it. All the people we saw there are of great size. We saw Nephilim there (the descendants of Anak come from Nephilim).”*
>
> —Numbers 13:32-33

After Israel escaped the land of Egypt, they wandered the desert for forty years before crossing into the Land of the Covenant. This was the time when the Israelites were formed into a nation through trial and obedience. It was a time when the Israelites were incumbent to forge their nationhood in preparation for the tribulation that was to come.

Even though the Promised Land was their divine inheritance, why did it not come easily? Why did nations occupying the Promised Land stand steadfastly against this newborn nation in what seems to have been a suicide pact? Why did nations like the Amalekites and the Amorites whip surrounding nations into a frenzy to oppose Israel, forcing Israel to take the Land of the Covenant by force?

The Israelites quickly learned the nations who stood between them and the Covenanted Land kept a terrible surprise. Nephilim were living among those Gentile nations, practicing the same kind of vile corruption their ancestors had invoked on the antediluvian world. The Israelites identified the postdiluvian giants as Anakites and Rephaites, even though they universally understood the giants were descendants of the antediluvian Nephilim.

It is pertinent and perplexing to note that *Anak* translates as "a giant, or a long necked giant," while *Rephaim* translates as "spirits of the deceased or giant aborigines."[1] Both were races unaccounted for in Scripture, populating the Trans-Jordan region,[2] a region which still maintains their names in many locations, such as the Valley of Rephaim. Archaeological discoveries resolutely support the claim of giants in the biblical lands being tall and fair skinned,[3] even though secular science unaccountably disregards these claims.

The Nephilim dominated the governments of the Amalekites, the Amorites, the people of Negev, the Hittites, the Perizzites, the Ammonites, the Moabites, the Edomites, the Philistines, and the Jebusites. I do not believe it was a mere coincidence that the posterity of Nephilim lived with and dominated the peoples who occupied the Land of the Covenant. It is my contention that Nephilim deliberately set out in the postdiluvian world to settle in and violate the Land of the Covenant in resistance to and rebellion against God, who had destroyed their rebellious ancestors. Nephilim both aligned and positioned their homes geographically against the not yet formed nation of Israel, laying in patient, clandestine endurance to ambush the future nation of destiny. The Nephilim then ambushed Israel once they came into being, endeavoring to impede Israel's divine rendezvous with destiny.

As you will recall in Deuteronomy 32:8, God divided the nations in the beginning according to the number of the sons of God. One concludes from Scripture that God kept the Promised Land for Himself, for and His specific intentions, because God clearly bequeathed the land to the descendants of Abraham, the future nation of Israel (Genesis 12:7, 13:14-15, 17:8-9, 18:17:21, 48:5-6, Acts 7:5-6), and clearly stated the land was His (Leviticus 25:23). God then gave the land to Israel (Joshua 24:11-13, Deuteronomy 1:21, 3:27, 32:38, Numbers 27:12, 34:1-29) as their inheritance. The posterity of the Nephilim surely would have remembered this. The remnant of the Nephilim then settled knowingly in the Land of the Covenant after the deluge, in full support of their ancestors and progenitors. It was in the Promised Land that the postdiluvian Nephilim nation chose to make its stand against God and the future, infant nation of hope, endeavoring to thwart God's plan of salvation for humankind when Israel was at her weakest point.

Let us first work our way back to the beginning of the postdiluvian world and then forward again to the time of the Exodus and the conquest of the Promised Land in order further illuminate the Nephilim's goal. Of the many nations the Nephilim lived among, the Amalekites and the Amorites stand out in their determined opposition to the Israelites. We know they were nations that contained the descendants of Anak from Numbers: "But the people who lived there are powerful, and the cities are fortified and very large. We even saw the descendants of Anak there. The Amalekites live in Negev, the Hittites, Jebusites, and the Amorites live in the hill country" (Num. 13:28–29). What is not clear regarding these overlooked and misconstrued accounts is whether or not the Amorites and the Amalekites were pure Nephilim nations or if the Nephilim just lived among them, dominating their kingships.

Both nations were shrouded in mystery and inexplicably interwoven with Anakites and Rephaites. Both nations were distinctly described separately from other nations as giants, along with Anakites and Rephaites. Both can be found in the Table of Nations listed in Genesis 10 and in 1 Chronicles, with the Amorites listed as the sons of Sidon, firstborn of Canaan, son of Ham. Most of the nations that occupied the Land of the Covenant were Canaanites, with the Philistines and the Amalekites being the exceptions. Amorite meant westerners, or western highlanders.[4] They were recorded historically as wild, nomadic immigrants from the north, who intermarried with Canaanites, adopting their Semitic language.[5]

The Akkadians and Sumerians knew the Amorites as the Martu and/or Ameru, while all the land of Palestine and Syria was remembered as the land of the Amorites in the third millennium B.C.E.[6] Amorites were recorded in the historical annals of Accad and Sumer as barbarians, an uncivilized people.[7] Amorites survived as sojourners of the mountains just beyond Sumer, in direct opposition to the city-dwelling and agrarian Mesopotamians.[8] Mesopotamians viewed the Amorites as tent-dwelling, nomadic barbarians who marauded over their mountain habitat well equipped with weapons of war and as a people who consumed uncooked meat.[9] Cahill concludes that the Mesopotamians regarded the Amorites as almost animals.[10]

The people of Amalek were listed under the sons of Eliphaz, son of Esau, son of Isaac, son of Abraham.[11] The mysterious Amalekites do not possess any archaeological traces whatsoever. It is as though they never existed; many scholars believe that Amalek and his tribe merged with the original, unknown Amalekites to form the Great Amalekite Race, or perhaps Amalek took his name, a new name, from the supposed unknown people he merged with.[12] What can be said with certainty is that the Amalekites were a murky nation in both their founding and in the way they unaccountably vanished from recorded secular history.

If only we could leave the genealogies of the Amorites and the Amalekites, the beginnings of the postdiluvian Nephilim would be quite simple, but tracing the genealogy of the Nephilim proves to be more disquieting. Considering the numerous vernacular names for the Nephilim, as recorded previously, demonstrates there is much more to the postdiluvian Nephilim puzzle than just the Amalekites and the Amorites, that postdiluvian Nephilim impacted more of the founding nations listed in the Table of Nations than just the Amorites and the Amalekites. For now, we will first focus on these two nations, simply because they were the most predominate Anakite nations at the time of the Exodus.

What is certain about the Amorites and the Amalekites is that they lived with and among Anakites, thereby producing a mixed race of giants. Just as in the days of Noah, those giants usurped the kingships and governments of their time, seizing absolute control over those nations, as witnessed by Old Testament accounts.[13] Knight and Lomas suggest that the descendants of Anak became postdiluvian kings because of their physical superiority.[14]

After the flood, Gardner notes kingship was originally established in Kish, but kingship by humans failed or was destroyed; kingship then reverted back to Nephilim, just as it had in the antediluvian epoch.[15] For whatever reasons, the Sumerian King's List articulates that after the deluge, a new group of rulers had to be found and that kingship once again descended to earth from on high.[16] Similarly, Amorite and Amalekite kings were described as either Anakites or Rephaites; they were Anunnaki kings anointed from heaven by the fallen angels in the same manner that transpired before the deluge. Interestingly enough, and certainly not by chance or coincidence, in my opinion, the ancient Sumerian word for *king* literally translated as "big man"[17] or "giants."

Deuteronomy, Numbers, and Joshua record that postdiluvian Nephilim known as Rephaites and Anakites were taller and stronger than the Israelites.[18] These passages confirm the Nephilim lived among and ruled the peoples of the Amalekites and the Amorites. This certainly accounts for the stinging punishment through annihilation that was prophesied for each of those nations by God.[19] Both nations were sentenced to utter annihilation at the hands of the Israelites by the edict of God, who equated their corruption and violence with that of the Nephilim at the time of the deluge. The Amalekites and the Amorites were sentenced to be hunted down over many years and generations by the Israelites, until they were utterly destroyed in the times of David.

We will investigate the Amorites first, before returning to the inexplicable Amalekites. The Amorite narrative is straightforward compared to the tangled Amalekite genealogy. The Old Testament documents that the Amorites were summarily subjugated by Anakite kings.[20] The two prominent Anakite kings of the Amorites during the time of Joshua and the conquest of the Land of the Covenant were Sihon and Og.[21] In truth, the Psalms recorded not only that Sihon and Og were mighty Anakite kings but also that all the kings of Canaan were.[22]

Simple deduction proposes that if Anakite kings reigned over the Amorites of that time, they also did so for many, many generations before Sihon and Og. *Nelson's* describes Og as the last survivor of a race of giants,[23] our first confirmed giant to survive the flood. We are not informed at this juncture as to how long those Anakites reigned, but later we will discover their reign of terror originated back to a time very close to the time of the flood, establishing the Nephilim reign of terror at about 1,500 years in Canaan, and 2,000 years in Philistia. Postdiluvian Nephilim imprinted a significant impression upon the major events of postdiluvian history that has been conveniently swept aside and ignored by modern theologians and secular historians alike.

At the beginning of the conquest of the Promised Land, Moses asked for permission from the Anakite king Sihon to grant his army and people safe passage through the land of Sihon. Sihon had such great size that no one could stand against him. Moreover, he was extraordinarily fleet of foot for his enormous size, just as the antediluvian Greek Titans, such as Hercules and Theseus, were. Ginzberg noted Sihon's original name was *Arad,* a name describing Sihon's amazing dexterity and quickness.[24] Even so, one wonders whether or not *Arad* conceals that Sihon was a fugitive from Arad, which was located just outside Hebron.[25] Or does *Arad* contain a hidden antediluvian meaning, since Sihon was brother to Og and thus also survived the flood? Sihon then displayed his naturally inherited hubris and an ancestral clandestine covenant against good and God for all future generations to ponder by refusing Moses and the Israelites safe passage.[26] The Amorites were well aware of just who the Israelites were from the Amalekites and bound themselves in a blood covenant against the Israelites.

Because of Sihon's hubris, Moses was mortally afraid to wage war against the Amorites, until God heartened Moses by chaining Og's and Sihon's guardian fallen angels during the battles. Sihon's vile act of inhospitable barbarism begat an inevitable battle fought between the Amorites and the Israelites, where Moses and the Israelites easily destroyed Sihon and his army. This then brought Og, Sihon's ally and brother, into the clash. Og was in no hurry at first to rush in and support his brother, until he heard of his brother's crushing defeat at the hands of the Israelites, for he thought Sihon and his army would easily overwhelm the inexperienced Israelites.[27]

Og was king of Gilead and Gaulantis, according to Josephus,[28] and the king of Gilead to Bashan in Scripture, recorded as the land of Rephaites.[29] Og was a gigantic man, known for his great strength and power. He was legendary for his great beauty. Og was a king without equal in his time.[30] Josephus went on to articulate Og's remarkable strength and beauty was complimented by the extraordinary adeptness and skill of his hands. Josephus did not provide any more detail than this, but we may conclude that Og was a superior king, with godlike size, beauty, strength, and skill; he was a true demigod living to an extraordinary age. Remember, Og somehow survived the flood as the last of the race of giants (likely Rephaim),[31] which likely occurred circa 2950 to 3050 B.C.E., while the Exodus took place circa 1450 B.C.E.

Og was recorded by Jewish legends as being extraordinarily wide as well as being tall.[32] Both Josephus and Deuteronomy described Og's bed as more than thirteen feet long and eight feet wide.[33] His bed was made of iron and not wood, for Og's weight would have crushed any furniture made of wood;[34] the Israelites retained this bed as a memorial in Rabbah.[35] Migene Gonzalez-Wipper records Og as descending from Shemyaza/Azaziel, the chief of the *Grigori*, who spawned the Nephilim,[36] concurring with the conclusion that Og was a surviving antediluvian ancestor of the Nephilim.[37] All this was confirmed in the Babylonian Talmud, where it unpredictably cited Og as a progeny of Hiya, son of Shemyaza/Azazel.[38] Other Jewish legends recorded Og and Sihon were sons of Aniah, who also connected his ancestry back to Shemazai/Azazel. Sihon and Og, according to these Jewish legends, were believed to be the last of the original antediluvian giants that somehow survived the deluge.[39]

In *Hebrew Myths: The Book of Genesis,* Graves and Patai state that Og escaped the flood by clinging to a rope ladder attached to Noah's Ark. Noah apparently took pity on the giant and fed Og daily through a porthole. According to this and other Jewish legends, Og swore an oath to Noah that he and his descendants would serve Noah and his descendants in perpetuity, providing Noah fed him and his kin that were with him, clinging on to the sides of the ark.[40] Og repented of his evil ways as the legend goes and became the slave of Noah. But at some point after the floodwaters had receded, Og returned to his wicked, antediluvian ways.[41] This took place after Abraham relinquished Og of his servitude.[42]

The last nail in the coffin confirming Og's ancestral heritage was that his chosen reign included the area of Bashan. Bashan included the infamous Mount Hermon, the place where the fallen angels descended to copulate with the daughters of Cain.[43] Og was a true giant ruling potentate, a Gibborim and a Nephilim, from the antediluvian epoch.

Josephus informs us that Og and Sihon were the best of friends,[44] not to mention brothers. When Og heard Sihon had marched against Israel, Og entered the war in support of his old friend Sihon. Unfortunately for Og, though, by the time he and his army reached the great battle, Sihon had already been slain by the Israelites, along with his army of Amorites. When Og arrived on the battlefield, he suffered the same fate as Sihon, going down in utter defeat[45] in battle at the hands of Israelites, even though Og seems to have mysteriously survived this defeat, according to Scripture, as the last remnant of the original Rephaites east of the Jordan (Deut. 3:11). After that battle, Og does not appear again in Scripture.

From this biblical account regarding the Amorites and the Israelites, what becomes clear is that the Anakites were well entrenched in the Promised Land by the time of the Exodus. Deuteronomy 1:26–28 and 2:10–23 name the giant nations, who lived among the Amorites, as Anakites, just as Numbers 13:28–29 testifies to the same. However, Joshua 12:4 and Deuteronomy 3:11 name Og, king of Bashan, as one of the last of the Rephaites,[46] supporting *Unger's* conclusion that Og was one of the last distinguished survivors of the race of Rephaim.

We ascertain from these misunderstood Exodus accounts that the two most prominent races of giants during the early postdiluvian epoch were the Anakites and Rephaites; although, many other appellations were applied to Nephilim. What is difficult to determine is why there appear to be two distinct but separate races of giants that came to the forefront; the Israelites did distinguish the difference, even through we are not informed why. Perhaps one race was from the line of Og and his kin, while the other might have been from the line of Utnapishtim and his kin. Or perhaps one was from the race of Seth, the Immoveable Race, and perhaps the other was from Mount Hermon.

We do not find out who Rapha might be, but we are introduced in the Bible to Arba.[47] Arba was described in Joshua as “the greatest man amongst the Anakites” (Josh. 14:15). Arba was the Anakites’ legendary king of mythology. He was credited with being the forefather of the Anak and the Anakite nation,[48] the most ancient of the named postdiluvian Anakites, as well as being the actual father to Anak.[49] Additionally, Anak begat three sons who were also giants.[50] The region known in the Bible as Kiriath Arba, more commonly known as Hebron, was named after Arba, as he was regarded as its founder.[51] Anak was considered the progenitor of the race of giants named after him, the Anakim, or Anakites. Past these limited details, the Bible does not speak to Arba any further; but again, Arba must have had quite an infamous life to gain notoriety by his notation in the Bible.

Arba, Anak, and Rapha were not listed in the Table of Nations because they were Nephilim, and we are not able to trace back this lineage any further, leaving us at an apparent dead end. But we can try a different avenue, linking the Anakites back to Rapha and then Rapha back to the

Nephilim through careful consideration and study of the Old Testament. In this spirit, let us consider the translations of their vernacular appellations, alongside the following passages:

> I have given Ar to the descendants of Lot as a possession. (The Emites used to live there—a people strong and numerous, and as tall as the Anakites. Like the Anakites, they too are considered Rephaites, but the Moabites called them Emites …
>
> —Deuteronomy 2:10–11 NIV

> I will not give possession of any land belonging to the Ammonites. I have given it as a possession to the descendants of Lot. (That too was considered a land of the Rephaites, who used to live there; but the Ammonites called them Zamzummites. They were people strong and numerous, and as tall as the Anakites.) The Lord destroyed them before the Ammonites who drove them out and settled in their place. The Lord had done the same for the descendants of Esau, who lived in Seir, when he destroyed the Horites from before them. They drove them out and have lived in their place to this day. And as for the Avvites who lived in the villages as far as Gaza, the Caphtorites coming out of Caphtor destroyed them and settled in their place.
>
> —Numbers 2:20–22

Unger's defines the *Emites* or *Emin* as "giant aborigines who occupied the land east of the Jordan River and who were dispossessed by the Moabites."[52] The name *Emin* was derived from the fear they inspired because of their sinfulness and size.[53] The Zamzummites were defined as "noisemakers," likely from the thunderous bellows of their voices that Atlanteans and Titans were well-known for and/or those that mumbled and/or those who murmured. The Ammonites destroyed them.[54] The word *zamzummin* further describes the talent that these giants had in war, for in other accounts they were considered masters of war.[55] *Avvites* or *Avim* described iniquitous giants who dwelled among the Philistines in Gaza and identified with the Hivites.[56] The *Auzim* dwelled in Ham and were translated as "Shining People."[57] In a similar manner, *Iuvim*, the name provided by Egyptians, describes their Snake-like qualities and their ability to easily judge the quality of the soil.[58]

Rephaites were additionally understood to be giant aborigines from much older races.[59] The alternative translation to *rephaite* reflects that, at a glance, a person's heart would grow weak from the terribleness of the giant's appearance.[60] Remember, Nephilim possessed heads like snakes, rough and hairy skin, and eyes of honey and gold, all the while exuding a glow about them. Nephilim became known in legend and mythology as "the Shining Ones." *Webster's New Compact Format Dictionary* defines *aboriginal* as "original nation," an indigenous inhabitant of a country from the beginning.[61] All this suggests that Rephaites were the true postdiluvian indigenous people of the Land of the Covenant, and perhaps from even before.

The two passages mentioned in Numbers and Deuteronomy link the Anakites, Zamzummites, Horites, Emites, Avvites, and for that matter, any giant of that time back to Rapha[62]—or more accurately label them all Rephaites; this linkage includes both the Amorites and the Amalekites. The books of Deuteronomy and Numbers clearly underline that all these giants, including Anakites, were considered Rephaites (Deut. 2:10–11; Num. 2:20–22). Therefore, Rephaim must have been the root nation, or one of the root nations, for the postdiluvian Nephilim. But once again, we are not permitted to trace Rapha through the Table of Nations because Rapha was not listed in either of the accounts. Therefore, we must explore the earliest known references made to Rapha.

CHAPTER 24

SODOM AND GOMORRAH

> *Then the Lord said, "The outcry against Sodom and Gomorrah is so great and so grievous that I will go down and see if what they have done is as bad as the outcry that has reached me."*
>
> —Genesis 18:20–21

I find it intriguing that the first reference to Nephilim after the flood begins in the time of Abraham.[1] This is not an anecdotal coincidence, so how are Nephilim related to Abraham and Sodom?

Abraham arrived in the Land of the Covenant from Ur in Chaldea, also known as Babylonia, the ancient home of the Sumerians. This is very odd. The very time God binds Abraham into an everlasting Covenant to save humankind, the Nephilim show up. The resurfacing of Nephilim seemingly foreshadowed the great conflict that would follow 400 to 500 years later, when the newly formed nation of Israel retook the Promised Land.

God guided Abraham away from Ur to the land that would be provided for his descendants,[2] the allotment from Deuteronomy. God bound it into a Covenant, all the time knowing it was infested with Nephilim. This certainly gives one pause for thought. God must have intended all along to utilize Israel in the same manner that He brought forth the flood, to eradicate the Nephilim corruption from His land and creation, saving humankind from their curse. God led Abraham to the Promised Land, a place where Abraham could prosper, for the language in Canaan was western Semitic and similar to Abraham's eastern Semitic dialect.[3]

Ur was home to the moon cult and the moon god Sin and his daughter Innana. Bauer notes that *Terah*'s name (Abraham's father) expresses kinship with the moon god Sin, just as *Sarai* is the Akkadian form for "Sin's wife, the goddess, Ningal," subjects we will examine later. Abraham and Sarah were separated from pure Semitic stock and from the chaos of polytheism by God reclaiming them and marking His reclamation by adding *ah* to both their names of Abram and Sarai.[4]

At the time God gave Abraham His blessing, less than 400 years had passed since the flood. Around this period of time, Genesis noted an unexplained alliance of kings, likely from Mesopotamia, who waged war against the kings from the plain of Sodom. This alliance continued on to battle against the Rephaites in Ashteroth, the Zuzites in Ham, the Emites in Shaveh Kiriathaim, and the Horites in the hill country of Seir—all unaccounted-for giant nations.[5] This powerful alliance additionally vanquished the Amalekites and the Amorites,[6] who must have been giants as well, for this war was waged entirely against giant-infested nations, noting all the while that the timing of this battle predates the Amalekite and Amorite genealogical record in the Table of Nations. One concludes, then, from this ancient war against giants that Sodom and Gomorrah must also have been infested with Nephilim.

The Rephaites would have required a number of generations to form into mighty, warlike states, threatening the balance of power of the world at that time. Logical deduction would dictate that the Nephilim would have reappeared immediately after the deluge. It is very possible, and most likely, that when Nephilim made their grand reappearance, they were also in contact by virtue of both geography and timeframe with Nimrod, whom we will discuss in detail shortly.

What is also worthy of note is that the same nation names were used at that point in history to describe the Rephaite nations as Israel would name them in their encounter at the time just after the Exodus, more than 500 years later. This could simply mean that when the historical record was written at later dates, the names of the nations as they were known at that time were applied, or it is even possible that there was another intriguing alternative: the original Rephaite nation nomenclature withstood the test of time, out of the respect or fear of the diverse peoples of that region of those terrible giant city-states skilled in war. One must consider that the Rephaite nations would have made a significant impression on the people of the postdiluvian world.

From this very same encounter, Josephus, too, made note of a war between the Assyrians and the Sodomites, just as Genesis 14 recorded, but Josephus included a very appropriate anecdote. During the campaign, Assyria laid waste to the region of Syria, where they overthrew the offspring of the giants,[7] the Amorites and the Amalekites.[8] Josephus, then, considered both the Amalekites and the Amorites giants. Therefore, the complete Assyrian campaign was a war waged against the giants and nations completely infested and overrun with Nephilim, which included the Amorite, Amalekite, and Horite nations.

It is interesting to note that this campaign took place before the time of the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah and the cities of the plain. Therefore, if the Rephaites were part of the posterity of Noah, they would have been spawned by the early descendants of Noah, being as they were already recorded as full-fledged nations by that point in time. Hence, these specific Rephaite nations ought to have been listed in the Table of Nations, just as all the other nations descending from Noah were recorded for good or for bad, but they were not. We must therefore conclude that the Rephaites did not descend from Noah but from some other source, because the nations that were descended from the countenance of Noah are all listed in the Table of Nations. This does not preclude that the daughters of Noah’s posterity might have been required to procreate with giants, even though female Nephilim may also have survived the flood.

The second intriguing anecdote put forth by Josephus and Scripture testified to the fact that Nephilim dwelled among the inhabitants of Sodom and Gomorrah at the time of Abraham, when God destroyed Sodom, Gomorrah, and all the cities of the plain because of their great sins and vile behavior.[9] The connection between Sodom and the Nephilim is quite illuminating. Based on what you have learned in the text thus far about the terrible impact and influence giants had on antediluvians and their panache for corrupting naive and innocent people, do you think the Nephilim could have had a part in God’s ultimate retribution toward the people of Sodom and Gomorrah?

For those who may not be familiar with the Sodom and Gomorrah narrative, God both judged and destroyed those two cities, as well as their companion cities of the plain. They were utterly destroyed by fire and brimstone, in a similar fashion to a nuclear attack, executing all those who dwelled within and leaving the entire district desolate to this day.[10] The crimes of Sodom were all well documented debaucheries of the antediluvian Nephilim. Sodom, Gomorrah, and the cities of the plain were all located in the desolate region known today as the Dead Sea.

The Qur’an describes the people of Sodom and Gomorrah as completely vile. They practiced idolatry, homosexuality, and violence to strangers. They were destroyed by angels of God who turned the city upside down, raining showers of burning stones upon them.[11]

Ezekiel testified to Sodom’s gluttony, arrogance, and unconcern for the welfare of the poor, noting they were haughty in their detestable practices before God.[12] Jude 1:6–7 records Sodom’s sins in this way: “giving themselves up to sexual immorality and perversion.” The outcry from Sodom became so great that God sent three of his angels to judge Sodom (Gen. 18:20–21). The account of Sodom and Gomorrah is one of the great Old Testament narratives that establishes both a moral lesson and a standard for all subsequent generations.[13] The two cities “serve as an example of those that suffer the punishment of eternal fire,” says Jude 1:7.

Even though God had previously bound a Covenant with Noah, punctuated with the rainbow as a sign of that everlasting Covenant to never destroy the earth again by water (Gen. 9:12–17), God could and still can judge the earth as retribution for humankind’s corruption and violence through other destructive forces, just as we will see in the last days of this age. God has always reserved this right should humankind ever backslide again into similar violence and corruption as that which horrified the late antediluvian age. Sodom and Gomorrah, and the companion cities of the plain, did backslide into a similar debauchery as in the antediluvian age. They defiled themselves and God’s creation through sexual perversion, idolatry, and collaboration with Nephilim, to the point where God was obligated to judge them with ferocity equal to how He had judged humankind prior to the deluge.

All this requires that we ask: was it the Nephilim who so corrupted the people of Sodom and Gomorrah that God decided to totally destroy those people from the face of the earth? There is no conclusive biblical evidence to support such a claim, but the coincidence of the Nephilim's presence in Sodom and the adjacent areas is inappropriate to ignore, just as the presence of the Nephilim in the Amorite and Amalekite nations was no coincidence. Furthermore, when we consider that Jude 1:6 connects sexual perversion of Sodom with sexual perversion of angels and we know that Nephilim were in the Sodom region at that time, the connection becomes firmly cemented with circumstantial evidence.

From the Gnostic perspective, Sodom and Gomorrah were destroyed by the God of the Bible not for their wickedness but because of their wisdom and insights.[14] This again testifies to Nephilim contamination, for the Gnostics believe the God of the Bible is the evil God who enslaves humankind in ignorance. Gnostics believe the postdiluvian Nephilim kings, on the other hand, were enlightened purveyors of forbidden wisdom and insight, and therefore, God destroyed many of the great postdiluvian sources of enlightened insight at Sodom and Gomorrah, as well as many of the surviving antediluvians, the giants.

It is difficult not to conclude that the Nephilim were the root cause for the sins of Sodom. In fact, one ought to deduce that Nephilim were, indeed, the root cause for their degeneration. Perhaps Sodom and Gomorrah were the founding city-states of postdiluvian Nephilim. Perhaps Sodom and Gomorrah were the centers for postdiluvian apostasy, where impassioned fallen angels once more procreated with human females out of spite. Perhaps all this was the extended reasoning for such an awesome display of destruction poured out on those corrupt cities, as a sign to future generations demonstrating God's indignation towards the birthplace of postdiluvian giants.

Gnostic gospels profess that three races survived the deluge: the Posterity of Seth, the posterity of Noah, and the apostates from the posterity of Noah. Seth, according to this myth, as you may recall, was the parent of the mysterious Immoveable Race, the posterity of Seth.[15] This was an imperishable race created in the image of the god Adamas (fallen angel) by another great angel, Autogenes, and is a holy race that purportedly will be lifted up above angels.[16] Adamas brought forth a child in his image and likeness, calling him Seth, who then produced with his offspring the imperishable race.[17]

From the Gnostic holy book of the Invisible Spirit we learn that Seth replanted his antediluvian seed with a female virgin who bore fruit with

Sodom and Gomorrah.[18] Further into this gospel, we learn Seth sowed his seed in the "Earthborn Aeons" (beings likely giants), where their numbers were the infinite number of Sodom. The Aeons were called Seth's pasture or distribution of Gomorrah, and Seth took the plant from the spring of Gomorrah and planted it in the second location of Sodom.[19] Sodom and Gomorrah just may have been the location where the second spiteful spectacle took place, whereby vitriolic angels copulated once more with humans, this time the daughters of Noah, creating yet another new race of mortal giants in the cities where the surviving antediluvian remnant of giants had coalesced.

If there was any doubt as to this allegory of giants, the Gnostic gospel goes on to state that these Aeons were indeed the great Incorruptible Race that appeared from the three previous ages (antediluvian).[20] God then destroyed a large portion of the surviving original antediluvian giants at Sodom and Gomorrah, along with the newly created giants. The third surviving race from Gnostic mythology, the so-called apostates of Noah's seed, were the ones who intermarried with the surviving giants after the deluge.

Jewish legends further enlighten the Sodom/Nephilim relationship, beginning with Og, Abraham's slave. Nimrod gifted Og to Abraham, but Abraham freed Og after marrying Sarah; Og was known as Eliazer, Abraham's steward. After being freed, Og became a king, founding sixty cities among the Amorites, including Sodom, Gomorrah, and the cities of the plain, all with very high walls.[21] The five cities of the plain, which were part of the Sodom and Gomorrah alliance, were defeated by the four-king alliance of Chedorlaomer that carried Lot off as hostage from Sodom.[22]

Og learned of the hostage-taking and warned Abraham, hoping that Abraham would be lost in battle so that Og could steal Sarah for himself, because he coveted Sarah's great beauty,[23] just as a pharaoh in Egypt would later do. Sarah was of such extraordinary beauty that she was eagerly sought after by King Ablimelech of Palestine, as well as Og and Pharaoh, all who were kings.[24] Og, in other legends, tried to seduce Sarah on many occasions.[25] Og, in these legends, was actually the unnamed informant to Abraham that was recorded in the Bible.[26] What is important to note, though, is that Sodom, Gomorrah, and the cities of the plain were all founded and governed by Nephilim. All of these cities were Rephaite cities contaminated with the Incorruptible Race, the second-born race of antediluvian giants, Og and his kin, and the Nephilim-infested Amorites.

The cause of the War of Four Kings Against Five (Genesis 14), as it became known, was rooted in the successful rebellion of one of Nimrod's generals, Chedorlaomer/Kedorlaomer, who became the king of Elam.[27] The Bible recorded the four Mesopotamian kings as Amraphel, king of Shinar or Babylonia; Arioch, king of Ellaser; Kedorlaomer, king of Elam; and Tidal, king of Goiim, who fought against Bera, king of Sodom; Birsha, king of Gomorrah; Shinab, king of Admah; Shemeber, king of Zeboiim; and the king of Bela, also known as Zoar.[28] Other sources noted Chedor-la(g)omer of Elam was known alternatively as king Kutir-Lagamar of Susa, who was the loyal vassal and tax collector of Amar-Sin, the biblical Amraphel, and the third monarch of the Ur III dynasty, which was part of an alliance with two other great rulers of Mesopotamia: Zariku of Ashur, the biblical (Z)Arioch of Ellaser, and Tishadal of Urkish, the biblical Ti(sha)dal.[29] Elamites occupied the cities of Susa and Awan from before 2700 B.C.E.; they intermixed with off-shoot, wandering Aryans from the Indus valley and Amorites.[30]

Chedorlaomer had subjugated the five Hametic/Canaanite (Nephilim and Amorite) cities of the plain for twelve years, requiring tribute all the time.[31] The five cities then rebelled and refused to pay tribute in the thirteenth year, causing Chedorlaomer to form an alliance with three other kings to crush Sodom, Gomorrah, and the cities of the plain.[32] The five unruly Amorite cities, along with the Amalekite tribes, had threatened the stability of the Ur III empire for quite some time, so this refusal to pay tribute became the final insult.[33] The Ur III dynasty was the last Sumerian renaissance in Mesopotamia and was the birthplace of Abraham; it was continually threatened by roving Amorites along the western bank,[34] so they had ample motivation to join the alliance.

Preparations within the four-king alliance of Mesopotamia included gathering the largest military force the early postdiluvian epoch had yet witnessed.[35] They marched on the five Amorite cities, annihilating the descendants of the giants and taking Lot hostage as part of the plunder of war.[36] Bera of Sodom and Birsha of Gomorrah were slain in this great battle, while Admah, Zeboiim, and Bela fled into the hills and reached Abraham at Mamre.[37] Abraham then surprised the four kings of Assyria with a lightening, commando-like raid, freeing Lot.[38] From every perspective, Sodom, Gomorrah, and the cities of the plain were infested with the descendants of giants and were all Amorites, Canaanites, and possibly Amalekites, which Josephus also called giants.

Previously we discussed the inclusion of the Amorite and Amalekite nations as Rephaite nations. The case against those nations charged to be Rephaite nations was not fully presented. Genesis 14, where the Assyrian kings waged war against all the Rephaite nations of that time, clearly indicts the Amorites and then the Amalekite nations, for they, too, were listed among the Rephaites conquered in that campaign. Let us now complete that indictment against the Amorites.

Amorites are listed in the Table of Nations as the descendants of Canaan. It would appear that Amorites did interbreed with Rephaites, who subsequently produced such infamous Amorite/Rephaite kings as Bera, Birsha, Shinab, and Shemeber.[39] This would most certainly account for God’s disdain towards the Amorites, along with their interbreeding with Nephilim at Sodom, Gomorrah, and the cities of the plain. It also accounts for the correct listing of the Amorites as a nation in the same timeline of Abraham, during the Assyrian campaign recorded in Genesis 14. The timeline works because Sidon, founder of the Amorites, was the third generation from Ham, suggesting the Amorites were not pure Nephilim but humans who descended from the seed of Noah that interbred with the Nephilim, the apostate seed of Noah recorded in Gnostic Scripture. So interbred were the Amorites that they were considered an apostate race, just as all the biblical references indicate, and, as Louis Ginzberg records, giants.[40]

In Deuteronomy and Numbers, when the Israelites were scouting the land of the Amorites, the Amorites were described as much taller and stronger than the Israelites, in addition to identifying Anakites among the Amorites (Deut. 1:27, Num. 13:27–35). When one considers that the Amorites were included with the Rephaite nations during the time of Abraham and that they produced Rephaite kings 500 to 600 years later, this is all that is needed to label the Amorites a Rephaite nation, or more accurately, a Rephaiteinfested and dominated, apostate nation descended from Noah. Certainly, this conclusion becomes even more evident when one considers the other possible translation to the appellation *Amorite*, submitted by *Unger's* as "the tall ones."[41] Amorites were ostensibly diluted giant-hybrids.

The vile influence of the Rephaites would seem to run true to form once more as it applied to the Amorites. From Genesis, in regard to Abraham, we read: "In the fourth generation your descendants will come back here, for the sin of the Amorites has not yet reached its full measure" (Gen. 15:16). This prophecy came to pass beginning with the battles against Og and Sihon. It would seem that the Amorites became even more vile, corrupt, and violent with time, much like the people before the flood. They did not heed the warning from Sodom and Gomorrah, which then brought upon them the sword of God in the time of the Exodus.

The utter destruction of the great Amorite nation has been reserved for another chapter. Yet as severe as the retribution on the Amorite nation was, the Amalekite nation was destined to receive a double dose of divine judgment.

CHAPTER 25

THE AMALEKITES

> *Moses built an altar and called it the Lord is my Banner. He said, “For hands were lifted up to the throne of the Lord, the Lord will be at war against the Amalekites from generation to generation.”*
>
> —Exodus 17:15

Why does Genesis 14 describe a war of giants, which included the Amalekites at the time of Abraham? If the Amalekites were truly the descendants of Amalek listed in the Table of Nations, we have a mystery! Here is why: Amalek descended from Eliphaz, who descended from Esau. Esau was the son of Isaac, who was the son of Abraham. Therefore, how could the nation of Amalek be formed at the time of Abraham, seeing as the father of this nation was three generations removed from seeing born? And yet, the Genesis 14 account clearly records the Amalekites as a nation during the early life of Abraham! The only clue provided with in this account is that the Amalekites, like the Amorites, were listed and considered a Rephaite nation.

As we have already discussed from Deuteronomy, Anakites that dwelled in the land of Seir were known as *Horites*. If we consider the idea that the Genesis accounts were put to print at a later point in time, it was possible that the Amalekite name was inserted for “Horites,” as both considered Seir their home. The descendants of Esau, who replaced the Horites along with the Amalekites, drove off the Horites. Inserting a familiar nominative like “the Amalekites” for a more unfamiliar name such as “Horites” is quite possible, but I do not believe this to be what actually transpired. However, linking Amalekites with Horites is an intriguing insight. Perhaps they actually were one and the same people.

In this light, let us take a closer look at 1 Samuel 27:8: “Now David and his men went up and raided the Geshurites, the Girzites and the Amalekites (from ancient times these peoples had lived in the land extending to Shur and Egypt).” This is a useful anecdote dropped some 400 years later in the Bible, after the conquest of the Promised Land. The book of 1 Samuel indicates the Amalekites did not descend from Esau, even though they seem to have adopted the name of Amalek once the Amalekites cohabitated with the sons of Esau in the land of Seir. This was the land that included Shur to Egypt, also remembered as the land of Edom or Esau. Remember, Amalek, son of Esau, merged along with his people with an unknown race that formed the Great Amalekite Race. This occurred in the same place known to be the home of an ancient race of giants, the Horites.

The book of 1 Samuel notes the people identified as Amalekites lived in Shur, or Seir, since the ancient times; translation: before the flood. Ancient times do not refer to the time of Abraham. The terms “ancient times, old, old, former times, long ago” and “before our time” were always understood as the pre-flood epoch. This understanding is underscored in its application in Sirach, Baruch, Wisdom, Deuteronomy, Psalms, Proverbs, Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezra, Daniel, 1 Peter, and 2 Peter, where “ancient” always referred to the time of Noah before the flood.[1] This, then, suggests the Amalekites were in existence as a race of giants in the epoch of the antediluvian Nephilim. In other words, they were Nephilim both before and after the flood.

Were Amalekites the race of giants that descended from Utnapishtim or Gilgamesh? Or were the Amalekites the first strain of giants, the Incorruptible Race hidden from the deluge catastrophe by fallen angels? Amalekites do not appear to be a race created by impassioned fallen angels after the flood, such as Enikiden or those of Sodom. If “ancient times” does not refer to antediluvian times, then it most certainly refers to an age before Abraham, and most likely to the age immediately following the deluge.

Whichever the case may be, both predate the standard chronology of the Table of Nations. But in order to make all this stick, we must broaden the support claiming that the Amalekites were without any doubt a pure strain of the surviving Nephilim race. Numbers recorded more evidence for this.

"We even saw the descendants of Anak there. The Amalekites live in Negev" (Num. 13:23). This passage calls Amalekites Anakites. I do not know how to interpret this verse any differently, as it describes the descendants of Anak in the same breath and narrative as the Amalekites, thereby connecting the two, just as the flood narrative describes the flood and the Nephilim in the same narrative, connecting them also by application and implication. The passage from the book of Numbers does not implicitly state the descendants of Anak lived among the Amalekites; rather it seems to imply that the Amalekites were actually descendants of Anak! Numbers 13:22 states, "They went up through the Negev and came to Hebron, where Ahiman, Sheshai and Talmai, the descendants of Anak lived." Here, and in Judges and Joshua, three Amalekite/Anakite kings were clearly named.[2]

Nelson's describes Ahiman as one of three descendants of the Anakim, or Anakites, who were a famous race of giants that lived in Hebron/Kiriath Arba.[3] This was the famous home of giants in Josephus's writings, giants who were so large and their countenances so different than that of men that these giants were surprising, frightening, and terrifying to both the sight and hearing.[4] All were defeated later by Caleb in Hebron, over forty years later.[5] All three kings were the direct sons of Anak. Anak was the son of Arba, while Arba was the founding Rephaite of the Anakite branch.

All three giant names were further employed as descriptions reflecting their size and demeanor. Ahiman was the strongest of the three giants. His name translated as "like standing beside a mountain," while *Sheshai* meant "strong as marble." *Talmai* translated as "mighty strides that left plots"[6] and was Hurrian for "big."[7] Other Jewish legends also recorded the Anakim as enormous, terrifying, humanoid giants.[8] Legend even records the daughters of Anak as giants of enormous size and strength. In fact, Hebron, where the three Anakite kings reigned, was renowned in antiquity for being the home base camp for the descendants of Anak.[9] Testifying further to the race of giants from Hebron are carvings on Egyptian monuments, depicting a very tall race of light-skinned giants considered the descendants of Talmai, the Teanmahu.[10]

Anakites, too, according to Hebrew legends, were demigods living to great ages,[11] like those of the antediluvian variety. Is it possible that the Amalekites were indeed the true and pure branch of the Anakite line? Or were the Anakites just simply another Rephaite branch that dwelled among the Amalekites, who were possibly giants descending from the Horites? Scriptural records are not clear on this point. They only demonstrate subtly, over and over, that the Amalekites were some form of Nephilim, and in particular, direct descendants of Anak.

Finally, Numbers 24:20 describes the Amalekites as the first among nations, suggesting once more that they did survive the flood, just as the Nephilim did, to form possibly the first postdiluvian nation of war. If so, this would indeed qualify the Amalekites as a true Rephaite/aboriginal nation. All inferences from scriptural history documenting the Amalekites tend to verify vividly that they were an ancient nation, separate from the genealogy of Noah, dating their existence back to the antediluvian age. This is too much of a coincidence to suggest both Amalek and Nephilim survived the deluge together but were not one and the same, particularly when one considers the three Amalekite kings from Numbers 13 were clearly stated to be descendants from Anak, while respecting Anakites were documented descendants of Nephilim.

Turning back to the Horites for a moment is a worthy diversion. *Unger's* describes the Horites as another ancient and enigmatic people defeated by the famous Assyrian king Kedorlaomer/Chedorlaomer in the Genesis war fought against giants.[12] Horites were the shadowy chieftains recorded in the Table of Nations, who included a person named Anah that governed the Horites.[13] Generally speaking, the alliance of five kingdoms was fashioned from the Amorites of the plain of Jordan, which included Sodom, Gomorrah, and possibly the Amalekites of Seir.[14] This curiously and unexplainably links the biblically unaccounted-for Horites to the Amalekites, just as we have already proposed.

In fact, this campaign could have been called "the War Against Giants" as opposed to the War of Four Kings Against Five, because the expanded war included a campaign against an alliance of Nephilim-dominated kingdoms including the Rephaites of Ashteroth Karnaim, the Zuzites of Ham, the Emites of Shaveh Kitiathaim, the Horites of Seir, the Amalekites, and the Amorites of Hazazon.[15] This expanded campaign that included all the giant nations, then also likely included the Zamzummites of Ammon, the Avvites of Gaza, and the Anakites of Hebron/Kiriath Arba. All were Rephaite nations that for some reason included the mysterious Horites from Seir.

The Horites were inhabitants of the region called “Seir” before the Edomites settled there,[16] and they were known as the sons of Seir that are listed without explanation in the Table of Nations.[17] What is extraordinary regarding Seir is that he did not descend from anyone in the Table of Nations, thereby suggesting a distinct and different chronology, perhaps Nephilim. Seir’s name descends out of nowhere to be interjected into the Table of Nations, likely to make sense of the Edomite chronology that inbred with the reprobate race of postdiluvian giants. Genesis 36:20–30 records the Horites as the giant race Esau’s descendants drove out, the same sons of Seir listed in the Table of Nations (1 Chron. 1:38–42). Esau departed Hebron, home of the most famous and awesome giants, to settle in Seir after his father’s (Isaac’s) death, where he and his people lived and reigned over Seir/Idumea; *Idumea* is the Greek variant for Edom.[18]

What all this declares is that the Bible clearly indicates the descendants of Esau did, in fact, merge with the Horites, the unknown, indigenous giant race of Seir, with no genealogical ties to Noah, to form the Great Amalekite Race, its name derived from Amalek, son of Esau, or vice versa. This account brings to light the fact that the Edomites dwelled among the giants: the Horites; the Amalekites; and most curiously, the Anakites of Hebron, the giant capitol city of the Anak, even before the Edomites decided to settle in Seir. Did the Edomite relationship with giants at Hebron have any part in their decision to settle in Seir, among the Amalekites, Anakites, and Horites?

Nelson’s authenticates that Amalek received his name from the Amalekites,[19] suggesting that he and his descendants were from the seed of Noah, which defiled itself with Nephilim. *Unger’s* concurs, suggesting the tribe of Amalek merged with the original inhabitants of Seir,[20] the giant Horites, which formed the Greater Amalekite Nation. The Horites were the ancient aboriginal giants that became known as the Amalekites. They were the ancient civilization that became known to historical records as the Hurrians.[21] This, then, accounts for the name and the timeline. Hurrians entered Mesopotamia from the Zagros mountains from before 2000 B.C.E. Hurrians had previously welcomed a splinter group of Aryans, the Maryannu, into their tribes, who then bullied their way into the ruling class, later forming the upper and lower strata to the famous Mittanni of Mesopotamia. Hurrians later became the lower part, after the demise of the Mittanni empire.[22]

Esau and his royal Abrahamic descendants then married into the clans of the Horites, the enigmatic and cryptic chiefs listed in Genesis and 1 Chronicles, the sons of Seir. Seir, according to *Unger's* and *Nelson's Dictionaries*, actually translates as "rough skinned and hairy,"[23] just as Nephilim were famous for their rough and hairy skin, suggesting Seir and the Horites were indeed Nephilim by implication. In fact, according to Josephus, Hebrews came to call anyone with tough and hairy skin "Seir,"[24] again connecting Horites, rebellious Edomites, and Nephilim together.

Seir was the grandfather to Hori through his son Lotan; *Hori* is the likely root for the names *Horite* and *Hurrian*. Remember that Seir was considered a Horite, just as Timna was considered a Horite. Timna later married Eliphaz and was Lotan the Horite's sister.[25] Thus Eliphaz, the grandson of Esau, married the giantess Horite/Amalekite Timna. The Edomites of this branch then merged with the Nephilim Horites, which formed the Great Amalekite Race. In fact, later chiefs of the Horites, known as Amalekites, were listed as descending from Esau and Basemath,[26] the daughter of Ishmael.

As far as other leads from the Table of Nations go, Anah comes to mind as a possibility. "Anah" could be the source name for *Anak* or even *Anakite*. One of the original Horite Chieftains, Anah[27] had two children named Dishon and Ohilibamah, with Ohilibamah being a daughter.[28] Ohilibamah later married Esau and became one of Esau's three wives, producing three Amalekite/Horite chieftains, Jeush, Jalam, and Korah,[29] and yet another Edomite branch of giants. This then confirms the merging of the Edomites with the Nephilim Horites through Esau and the Horite/Nephilim female Ohilibamah, which likely formed another branch of giants included in the Great Amalekite Race, even though Amalek has been credited with all their apostasy.

Esau, according to Josephus, made it a habit of marrying Canaanite and other (Nephilim) wives, which his father Isaac did not did not approve of perhaps suggesting Esau took even more wives/concubines than Genesis recorded. Esau later married Basemath, daughter of Ishmael, as a peace offering to please Isaac.[30] Esau and his Canaanite wife, Adah bore a son named Eliphaz.[31] Again, as per Josephus, Eliphaz had five legitimate sons: Teman, Omar, Saphus (Zepho), Gotham (Gatam), and Kenaz.[32] Eliphaz, son of Esau and Adah, then consorted with a curious concubine, a Horite named Timna, who bore Amalek.[33] One might further conclude that a third, unexplored branch of Edomite giants was started through further offspring from Eliphaz and Timna.

Josephus did not consider Amalek to be a legitimate son of Eliphaz, for he was born through the Horite/Nephilim concubine Timna,[34] the sister of the great Horite chieftain Lotan.[35] Amalek, then, was the grandson of Esau.[36] Hittites, too, are conceded to have been northern Indo Europeans who sojourned down through Asia Minor and into the Middle East from before 2300 B.C.E.; they later made alliances with Kassite war chiefs and are part of the mysterious (and likely Nephilim) Aryans who migrated east to India.[37] This, then, accounts for Amalek being both an Edomite and a Nephilim crossbreed, from the Nephilim sister of the Horite chieftain and Aryan, Hittite blood from Adah, establishing the Amalekites as Nephilim from yet another perspective, even though Amalekites were likely an original, pure Anakite branch descended from Arba and beyond.

Perhaps one of the Nephilim branches such as the Incorruptible Race or the descendants of Utnapishtim and Gilgamesh were the roots for the Amalekites. In fact, Josephus recorded the dynastic descendants of Amalek and Timna adopted the name *Amalek* to mark and remember the peculiar original inhabitants (Nephilim) of Seir,[38] once more suggesting the Amalekites were an antediluvian race. This, then, implies that Amalek at one time possessed a different name that has been lost to history and Scripture and that Amalekites were indeed a pure, indigenous strain of surviving antediluvian giants. All this further suggests Amalek’s name possessed cryptic and unexplained antediluvian heritage.

CHAPTER 26

JETHRO AND CALEB

> *Moses' father-in-law replied, "What you are doing is not good. You and these people who come to you will only wear yourselves out. The work is too heavy for you; you cannot handle it alone." …. Moses listened to his fatherin- law and did everything he said. He chose capable men from all Israel and made them leaders of the people, officials over thousands, hundreds, fifties and tens.*
>
> —Exodus 18:17–21

Coupled to this genealogical voodoo is Jethro, Moses' father-in-law, and a mysterious Kenite named Caleb. What overlooked insights do these two relatively obscure figures shine upon the Nephilim/Israelite relationship?

Jethro was a priest and prince of Midia.[1] We are introduced to Jethro in Exodus as a priest that Moses spent his second forty years with.[2] Jethro is named also as Reuel (Exod. 2:18), and later he is called Hobab, the son of Reuel, the Midianite (Num. 10:29), even though he is called Jethro throughout Exodus (see Exod. 18:1–7). In Judges, and as supported by *Unger's*, a reference is made to Hobab, the brother-in-law to Moses, with a notation that this could be his father-in-law.[3] *Unger's* rationalizes this by noting that Reuel and Jethro were indeed different names, reflecting his titles as a priest and a prince of his tribe, while Hobab was likely Moses' brother-in-law.[4] Jewish legends suggest Jethro had seven names, all conveying his transformation from an idolatrous priest to a priest of God; all the listed names are part of his appellations, along with, Heber, Putiel, and Keni.[5]

Biblical legends recorded that a pharaoh immediately before the Exodus maintained three famous high priests during the latter part of the Israelite enslavement in Egypt: Job, Balaam, and Jethro.[6] Jethro was regarded as the High Priest of a Library of Stone Tablets in some versions.[7] All three priests played an intricate role in the Old Testament as it pertained to Israel, leading me to conclude that biblical legends recorded their names as priests of Egypt for a reason.

Job is oddly recorded in Scripture as a man from Uz in Seir.[8] From the text, it would appear Job was a very wealthy man and perhaps a ruler of some sort.[9] Certainly, from the wisdom recorded in the Book of Job and the intricate details regarding angels, Leviathan, Rahab, Behemoth, creation, and Satan, one might very well conclude that, indeed, Job was a famous priest during the time of the Exodus. Certainly, Job's overwhelming faith portrayed throughout the book of Job testifies to Job's uncanny faith in God. Job was noted as being blameless and upright, a man who was blameless and shunned evil; a man celebrated as the greatest man of the east (Job 1:1–3).

Interestingly enough, the name *Job, Iyyob*, not coincidentally, appears in the Armana correspondence dated to circa 1400 B.C.E.[10] The Armana dynasty plays an unexpected role in the latter portions of this book. In this correspondence, a prince of Pella was listed, noting that the land of Uz was located somewhere between Damascus and Edom but east of Palestine and Syria.[11] Both the location and the date eerily places this Job in the right time and the right place to have been the Job of biblical legends and a member of a sacred order of priests in Egypt, along with Balaam and Jethro.

All three priests represented possible rival nations that coveted the Abrahamic birth rights: Jethro and Balaam were Midianites, while Job was possibly a Horite/Edomite. Were all three endeavoring to inject themselves into destiny through influencing Moses? Both the Midianites and Edomites/Amalekites were posterity of Abraham through Esau and Keturah.[12] In addition, Job's three friends recorded in Scripture also have murky credentials. Eliphaz the Temanite conjures up Nephilim conspiracies, for Teman was the son Eliphaz who also married the Horite Timna, producing Amalek.[13] Bildad the Shuhite was a descendant from Shuah from Abraham and Keturah.[14] The third friend was Zophar the Naamathite, who dwelled in Namaah.[15]

Balaam was recorded in Scripture as being the son of Beor from Pethor in Aram Naharaim,[16] which was located in Northwest Mesopotamia.[17] One wonders: was Beor a descendant of the aboriginal Beor, the Horite chief that likely reigned immediately after the flood in Seir?[18] Pethor was a noted location of the Chaldean Magi.[19] Balaam seems to have lived among Midianites or perhaps even was a Midianite, for Balak, King of Moab, approached the elders of Midian to solicit Balaam's help.[20] *Unger's* states that Pethor was a city in Mesopotamia,[21] but I believe it was likely part of eastern Midia.

Balaam, at the time of the Exodus, was hired by King Balak to place a special and powerful kind of curse on Israel, but God forced Balaam to do the opposite, blessing Israel instead.[22] King Balak was terrified of the Israelites after witnessing how easily Israel destroyed the powerful Amorites,[23] even though Moab had nothing to fear, for they were part of the everlasting Abrahamic Covenant through Lot. Balaam was the priest that later issued an oracle regarding the destruction of the Amalekites and the Kenites.[24]

Balaam's endeavor to curse Israel for Moab was recorded disdainfully in Scripture as "Balaam's error," a rush to profit like Cain, as well as a want for a dishonest reward (Jude 1:11). Moses further charged Balaam with seducing the Israelites to turn away from God (Num. 31: 15–16). Revelation 2:14–15 additionally charges Balaam with teaching Balak to entice the Israelites into sin by eating food sacrificed to idols and committing sexual immorality. The Israelites later put Balaam to the sword for his black divination (Josh. 13:22). In the *Popol Vuh*, *Balaam* unaccountably translates as "sorcerer."[25]

Pharaoh did not welcome the pre-Exodus advice provided by Jethro about the growing Israelite problem, banning the priest Jethro-Reuel in disgrace to Midia,[26] which was ample motive for Jethro to have helped Moses prepare for his return to Egypt. All of this only leads us to speculate as to just who Jethro actually was, particularly when we consider that Judges 1:16 and 4:11 note that Moses' father-in-law (Jethro/Reuel) was a Kenite and not a Midianite [27] Add to this, Reuel was the son of Esau (Gen. 36:10–12). One wonders why Jethro possessed such a surreptitious designation as a Kenite.

A Kenite, according to Porter, was a descendant of Cain.[28] Similarly, biblical legends recant Kenites carrying the Mark of Cain as their tribal mark.[29] Except for this book's testimony, this would be impossible, for all humans except for Noah and his family were previously thought destroyed in the deluge. So unless the descendants of Cain, the Kenites were indeed the descendants of Rephaim and Sethian Nephilim, or were included in other salvations from the flood as previously covered, we, indeed, have a continuation to enigmatic, orthodox conclusions regarding the flood survival facts. Therefore, is all this controversial testimony suggesting that Jethro was a Nephilim/Amalekite/Horite of some form? Then did Moses actually marry a Nephilim or a Cainite Nephilim crossbreed named Zipporah?[30]

Kenites were an unexplained, wandering tribe first mentioned in the lands promised to Abraham in Genesis, along with the equally enigmatic and unaccountable Kenizzites.[31] Kenizzites were skilled in the arts of metalworking, like Cain and Tubal-Cain, and were related somehow to Kenites.[32]

What is also attention-grabbing is that Caleb, the son of Jephunneh the Kenizzite, first shows up biblically as one of the twelve spies sent by Moses to explore Canaan.[33] Caleb was rewarded for supporting Joshua's and Moses' plan to invade Canaan by being granted, along with Joshua, the right to enter the Promised Land after the forty years of wilderness living,[34] unlike all the other Israelites who had left Egypt. Caleb, then, though eighty-five years old, fought like he was forty-five, driving the Anakim from Hebron, and was thus rewarded as the head of the tribe of Judah, receiving the land of Kiriath Arba, Hebron, the homeland of the Anakim.[35] It is astounding to me that a Kenizzite, a person from a tribe with no genealogy linking back to Noah, and a tribe that mysteriously descended back to Cain and Nephilim, inherited Hebron, the home and capital city of the Anak!

Both the Kenizzite and Kenite tribes are generally believed descended from Kenaz the descendant of Esau,[36] but this cannot be. They, like Amalekites, existed before the birth of Esau and before the time of Abraham. Kenites are first listed inexplicably as a nation in God's Covenant with Abraham— nations to be given over to Israel.[37] This same conclusion of chronology is supported by *Unger's*, which, like this book, compares this paradox with that of the Amalekites.[38] I further extend this paradox to include Rephaites and the Incorruptible Race. This is the same mystery, in my opinion.

Unger's also declares Kenites were related to the Kenizzites, and like the Kenizzites, they were skilled in metallurgy.[39] *Nelson's* actually suggests Kenites may have actually traced their ancestry back to Tubal-Cain,[40] the master metallurgist. All this becomes even more evident and plausible when you consider the Kenites lived among the Amalekites as similar peoples in all aspects, up until the time of King Saul, when Saul ordered the Kenites to separate and move away from the doomed Amalekites.[41] Finally, as we will soon discover, Tubal-Cain was thought to be a Nephilim.

So, too, do *Nelson's* and *Unger's* state that the Amalekites and the Horites were closely associated and linked with the Kenites and, in a similar manner, to Amalek.[42] To this conclusion, Kenaz, son of Eliphaz, son of Esau, appears as one of the chiefs of Edom, the Horites, in the Table of Nations,[43] suggesting "Kenaz" was likely his adopted name from the Kenites. The Kenites and the Kenizzites must have been surviving Cainites descended from the people of day six, who later intermixed with the Horites and Amalekites.

Caleb also contains Horite names in his genealogy. To this end, and as with Caleb, Kenaz and Amalek were likely most popular names and epithets accepted by Horite chieftains.[44] Thus Kenaz could have been the founder of yet another giant tribe, a Horite/Nephilim, who later intermarried with the descendants of Esau, as did the antediluvian Amalekites. To this end, the Kenizzites and Kenites could very well have been descendants from both Tubal-Cain and Cain.

The information above sheds light on the strange final oracle of Balaam that included the destruction of the Amalekites and the unexplained Kenites: “Then he saw the Kenites and uttered his oracle: ‘Your dwelling place is secure, your nest is set in a rock; yet you Kenites will be destroyed when Asshur takes you captive’” (Num. 20:22). Asshur was the ancestor to the Assyrians.[45] The oracle of Balaam further links the relationship between the Amalekites and the Kenites to one of a symbiotic partnership. One begins to wonder, then, how many other strains of Nephilim and Cainites survived the deluge?

Jethro is documented in biblical legends as being a descendant of Keturah, one of the many unexplained wives of Abraham,[46] likely through her son Midian.[47] Eastern Midianites at some point in their history also linked themselves to and dwelled among the Kenites.[48] This, then, accounts for how the Bible listed Jethro as both a Midianite and a Kenite, complete with some mind-boggling, direct links back to Caleb. Otherwise, how does a Kenite, Caleb, become intricately involved with the Israelites, unaccountably ascending to chief of the tribe of Judah, except through Jethro? However, the Kenites did show kindness to the Israelites when they came up out of Egypt,[49] acting as guides in the wilderness.[50]

Can we now connect the postdiluvian Nephilim with the antediluvian Nephilim? I think we can. Anakites were considered descendants of Rapha or Rephaites.[51] We know additionally from Numbers that Anakites were descendants of Nephilim.[52] We also learned from Genesis 6 that Nephilim lived both before and after the deluge. Therefore, if Anakites descended from Rapha, and Anakites were descendants of Nephilim, the lineage graphs back like this: Anak to Rapha to Nephilim, and somehow Nephilim survived the flood, just as Genesis and the legends of Mesopotamia claim.

If we interject pantheistic legends of Utnapishtim and Og with all their kin surviving the flood, along with the Gnostic second race of angelic/human hybrids, the Incorruptible Race, all begins to make sense. Giants not only survived the deluge, but also we know that both the Amalekites and Kenites also survived the deluge. Even Gnostic gospels record Noah denying that he or his kin created the postdiluvian giants,[53] even though his apostate descendants evidently intermarried with postdiluvian Nephilim. All accounts from this period in antiquity then mesh harmoniously, relieving any hypothetical or biblical contradictions with it.

This further testifies through its implications that Amalekites were a branch of Nephilim who later interbred with the lineage of Noah through Esau, Eliphaz, Kenaz, and Amalek. This makes sense, because the original Amalekites were Anakites known variantly as Horites in Seir, bringing Genesis's chronology of nations into perfect harmony. Hence, Amorites are listed in the Table of Nations as descending from Ham through Sidon, while the originating source for the Amalekites did not. Aboriginal Rephaites, Anakites, Kenites, Kenizzites, and other Nephilim are not listed in the Table of Nations that is limited to only Noah's posterity. All these conclusions work if we view the Genesis flood account as a general accounting of events kept by saints descended from Noah for only the faithful, not a global, forensic accounting for cynical seculars and revisionist mystics. It further makes sense when we incorporate from the macro level that nothing occurs unless the God Most High ordains it.

We are now obligated to ask the troublesome questions: What unexplained influence did Nephilim have upon Nimrod and the Tower of Babel? And, what was Hermes's relationship with Nimrod and Babel?

CHAPTER 27

NIMROD

Cush was the father of Nimrod who grew to be a mighty warrior on the earth. He was a mighty hunter before the Lord.

—Genesis 10:8

What is so important about Nimrod? Quite simply, Nimrod was the most influential and infamous individual in the early postdiluvian epoch, and his historic ripples are felt to this day.

Nimrod was the son of Cush, son of Ham. In all likelihood, Nimrod was born within seventy years of the flood, since the Tower of Babel was built 101 years after the flood.[1] He was one of the few post-deluge pioneers told first-hand accounts about the epoch before the flood from his grandfather, Ham. This, then, poses the inevitable questions: Did the antediluvian world corrupted by the Nephilim horrify or intrigue Nimrod? What sort of impression did that information imprint on him? Did Nimrod have a relationship or contact with the postdiluvian Nephilim? Just what do we know regarding this obscure character judged noteworthy enough to have his name logged for eternity in the Bible? What did Nimrod do or accomplish that motivated Israel’s historians to devote such noteworthy recognition?

Genesis 10 provides us precious few details. According to this account, Nimrod was considered a mighty hunter before God. This appears to be quite the compliment, but extraordinary hunting skills would not have generated historical noteworthiness. However, Josephus recorded that Nimrod was a bold man who had great strength.[2] Nimrod must have been quite the physical specimen, gifted in tracking and skillful with the bow, but this was still not enough to earn Nimrod such privileged biblical recognition. Just as with the Amalekites, we are required to examine obscure scriptures and independent sources to knit together the details as to what made Nimrod so historically noteworthy.

Freemason legends teem with anecdotes regarding the mysterious Nimrod. The Cook Poem recorded Nimrod as a mighty man, strong like a giant.[3] George Smith, a scholar on ancient Babylon and Assyria for the British Museum, linked Nimrod to Izdubar. From the Chaldean account of Genesis, Mr. Smith identified Nimrod as a mighty leader who possessed greatness in the skills of hunting. Babylonians remembered Nimrod as an ancient hero.[4] All ancient sources concur concerning the enigmatic Nimrod, recognizing him as a legendary hero, due to his great size, strength, and hunting prowess.

“A mighty hunter before the Lord” may not be the most magnanimous of compliments as one might first surmise. In fact, this cryptic description just might render itself quite the contrary. Some suggest this appellation actually ascertains the absolute antonym to the definitive, idealistic notion of biblical kingship,[5] known by the shepherd allegory. The hunter gratifies only himself at the expense of the victim, while the shepherd ultimately expands himself for the good of his subjects under his care, just as Jesus was celebrated as the Shepherd of his flock during His time on earth.[6]

So, too, was Solomon remembered as a Shepherd King, while David was a warrior king; the dual aspect to the Messiah. It is this Shepherd King allegory that Gnostics and theosophists pervert into their Priest King and/ or Fisher King doctrine. Gnostic authors Wallace-Murphy, Hopkins, and Simmons write that Nimrod’s designation as a hunter was clearly applied to connect allegorically the founding of Nimrod’s military-based mentality and his military-based government, which was characterized by absolute force and tyranny.[7]

We learn from the *Nelson's* that Nimrod was a mighty one on earth, a powerful king and the first mighty hero mentioned in postdiluvian Genesis.[8] "Nimrod was a conqueror of both men and animals," according to Demond Wilson.[9] According to Hebrew legends, Nimrod possessed unconquerable strength, for he was the greatest of hunters and warriors.[10] Nimrod indeed was a hero in the tradition of the Nephilim. From other independent sources, we learn Nimrod was likely the most powerful warrior king since the time of the deluge and for quite some time after. All this information concurs accurately with the Freemason legends, which record Nimrod as a mighty leader (king).[11] It also agrees with Genesis, which accurately chronicles Nimrod as a mighty warrior and leader, establishing many cities in his empire.

The name *Nimrod* was not thought to be Hebrew in origin but rather Akkadian. *Akkad* was a variant of the word/city *Accad*, one of the cities Nimrod was credited with founding.[12] Akkad was the northern division of ancient Babylonia. Sometime after Nimrod, Sargon the Great of the Assyrians founded the latter imperial dynasty of Accad;[13] he was variantly known as the Cup-Bearer and an illustrious king and mythos many kings tried to claim as their progenitor. Sargon's mother was oddly recorded on an inscription as a changeling.[14] Nimrod, then, was the founder of the ancient Babylonians, Assyrians, and Chaldeans; therefore, the Akkadian language from which Nimrod's name was thought to be derived fits perfectly.

Accad and three other cities were the beginning of Nimrod's post-Babel empire.[15] The empire extended to the land of Accad, between the Tigris and Euphrates Rivers, where the two rivers run closely together. The latter dynasty of Accad was believed founded, but more than likely inherited, by Sargon the Great around the twenty-third to the twenty-fourth century b.c.e, when his men overran the Sumerian homeland.[16] Sargon was the first to conquer and then turn the alliance of Mesopotamian cities into an empire, winning thirty-four battles and pushing into Awan of Elam and Mari in the north. Sargon maintained representatives of all the old ruling families (Nephilim) at his court, honoring their "exalted" lineages.[17]

It was from the Sumerians that the Akkadians adopted all the antediluvian Sumerian writings, religious doctrines, gods, legends, and architecture as their own. Akkadian language was one of the earliest forms of Assyrian and Babylonian dialects; it was written in wedge-shaped characters or cuneiform and was originally developed by the antediluvian Sumerians.[18] An inscription noted Akkad fell to Gutian Barbarians circa 2150 B.C.E.[19]

The name *Nimrod* is theorized to originate from the Akkadian god of war and hunting, Ninurta; he was also called “the Arrow” and “the Mighty Hero.”[20] Ninurta, as it turns out, was a Nephilim son of Enlil and Ninlil.[21] The symmetry to the meaning and its origin would tend to lend credibility to its accuracy, particularly if Nimrod did view himself as a Nephilim, at least in ambition.

Meanwhile, the Hebrew translation for *Nimrod* provides the balance to the allegory of his name, for it translates as “rebel, to rebel against, brave, and to subdue.”[22] By fusing the definitions from the different cultures, languages, and religious perspectives, we arrive with a complete definition, personifying the allegory of Nimrod. He was a great warrior king/potentate who modeled himself after the Nephilim from antiquity. He was incredibly brave and proud; Nimrod’s hubris led him to subdue the people of Shinar through tyranny, while inciting the people of Shinar to rebel against the true God of the universe, just as his antediluvian role models did.

Let us now examine whether or not Nimrod lived up to these allegorical indictments.

We must remember that before the flood, the descendants of Adam and Seth were vegetarians; they were strictly an agrarian people. It was not until after the flood that God permitted Noah and his descendants to eat meat;[23] whereas hunters from day six regularly dined on wild game. We also know that even after the flood, Noah was a man of the soil, a vegetarian. One can assume Noah’s three sons were reared as vegetarians and likely remained so. Therefore, meat likely began to take hold as a staple in the time of Nimrod’s father, Cush, once animals had become plentiful enough to hunt once more. One can surmise that wild game, indeed, was the rage, with those supplying the new and exotic meat idolized as heroes.

Nimrod grew to be a mighty warrior on the earth.[24] Along with Nimrod’s great strength, the transition from hunter to warrior would be easy and logical. But this is the point where events become disturbing once more. This was just the second generation from the flood. God had wiped out the inhabitants of the earth less than seventy years prior, and now we are presented with a fellow renowned for his prowess as a warrior.

To be a mighty warrior, one must have conquests of war. Now consider that Nimrod has been spoken of this way: “Since the Creation of the world there has been none like Nimrod, a mighty hunter of men and beasts, and a sinner before God.”[25] Are we to believe that such violence permeated the postdiluvian epoch so soon after the second chance provided to humankind? Are we to believe that wars had become commonplace so early into the postdiluvian age? Are we to conclude that humankind did not learn anything from the greatest catastrophe ever to strike humankind? And yet, this is most certainly what Genesis 10 suggests, even though the postdiluvian Sethian civilization had not yet separated into individual civilizations. So who did Nimrod war with?

If we concede that Nimrod did become the first warrior king of the early postdiluvian world, subsequent misunderstood events that followed tend to come into focus. Jewish legends recorded that before Noah died, the descendants of Shem, Ham, and Japheth appointed princes to lead each of their three peoples: Phenech, prince of the Japhethites; Johkan, prince of the Shemites; and Nimrod, prince of the Hamites. Jealousy then erupted among the new governing princes. Soon, war broke out, too, with Nimrod’s army routing Phenech’s army; Nimrod then seized absolute power as king, with Johkan and Phenech subservient to Nimrod.[26] In fact, through the valor of Nimrod, the new kingdoms of the Euphrates valley were again united after the Babel dispersion, under one king, Nimrod. This fact leads to the conclusion that Nimrod held a disturbing, parallel influence before the dispersion, underlining the legitimacy to Jewish legends regarding Nimrod defeating Phenech.

Some scholars regard Nimrod as a very powerful king, benevolent in his actions; he later provided the ancient Babylonians with both unity and prosperity under his leadership, as reported by George Smith from ancient Assyrian and Babylonian discoveries.[27] But was Nimrod actually a benevolent king, both before and after the dispersion? Did Nimrod uphold high moral values under the laws of God? Or is this simply brazen revisionist history?

Genesis 10 includes the many great cities that were in Nimrod’s kingdom or that he had built or conquered. As innocuous as the statement might first appear, it is again loaded with difficulties. If Nimrod had many cities in his kingdom, he would have been the greatest ruler of that time since the flood, ruling over eight of the great cities of that time in both

Babylon and Assyria, post-Babel. And, at Babel, Nimrod just might have been the absolute dictator of Sethian humankind at that time, and indeed, as it turned out, he was. Josephus further testified that Nimrod changed his government to tyranny, leading his people away from God and into rebellion; the people then became completely dependent upon Nimrod and his newly founded mystical religion.[28]

Demond Wilson believes Nimrod desired a one-world government, with a man as its god.[29] This was certainly worthy of biblical notation, to record by name the first universal king of the postdiluvian period, who was bent on heresy and the doctrines of the Antichrist. More accurately, Nimrod would have been ruler of the first great world empire after the flood, and it would appear that he ruled through war and tyranny. Does this scenario begin to ring familiar? We must now ask the questions: Was Nimrod an evil potentate/ Gibborim? Was Nimrod the first postdiluvian Nephilim king?

Some suggest so, thereby establishing Nimrod as the father of the postdiluvian Nephilim. There is some merit to this hypothesis. The terms *Nephilim* and *Gibborim* are virtually interchangeable in their connotations when translated from ancient Hebrew and in application, if one is not very careful when applying the *Gibborim* term. Gibborim was defined as ancient heroes, just as the Nephilim in Genesis 6 were described. Gibborim also accurately describes Nimrod in ancient Hebrew. *Gibborim* was also translated as “potentates,” as defined by its ancient Hebrew application employed in Ezekiel 32, or as “allpowerful rulers.” One can most certainly state that both Nephilim and the post-deluge Nimrod were just that. The key, however, is that Gibborim does not necessarily link to nor define itself as being derived from the posterity of angels, nor of giants. The differentiation, then, is simply this: Nephilim can be described as Gibborim quite accurately, but Gibborim were not necessarily Nephilim. Gibborim could simply be just very powerful, human potentates. This is one of the reasons that it is logical to reject the notion that Nimrod was a Nephilim. Nimrod was likely Gibborim but not Nephilim; although, an assortment of arcane legends and reticent organizations persist in linking Nimrod to the descendants of Cain and Nephilim bloodlines.

The second reason for rejecting Nimrod as Nephilim originates in Nimrod’s genealogy. I have already noted previously that Nimrod descends directly back to Noah through Cush and Ham. Again, as I have discussed in previous chapters, Nephilim and Nephilim nations did not descend from the countenance of Noah, and therefore, were purposefully not documented in the Table of Nations. Nimrod, of course, was listed in the genealogical record, lessening the possibility of his being a Nephilim.

Masonic legends, however, at first perusal, suggest that Nimrod was a giant. The Cook Poem clearly references Nimrod as a mighty man, strong like a giant. Ancient historians, Orientalists, recorded Nimrod as a giant, but Masonic critics labeled this description a gross exaggeration,[30] concluding that Nimrod was of great physical stature and presence but was not a Nephilim. Armenian traditions, too, maintain that Nimrod was a giant of a man and that he enlisted giants.[31] Even early Christian writers such as Augustine of Hippo (354–443 C.E.) and Isidore of Seville (560–636 C.E.) conceded Nimrod may have been Nephilim.[32] No doubt these and other notable authorities from antiquity fueled the transformation of Nimrod's extraordinary human qualities into being Nephilim. But since Nimrod was recorded in the Table of Nations as the son of Cush, I am confident in concluding Nimrod was not a Nephilim but rather modeled himself after the great giant warrior kings.

Nimrod was the most famous and influential individual of his time and for many generations to follow. It would be a long time after they were dispersed from the Tower of Babel before the various peoples would be numerous enough in the same tongue to once again organize themselves. Nimrod was the first and last emperor before God confused the languages of the people of Babel. But can we leave Nimrod with such a neat and superficial closing as this? The answer is an emphatic “no.” There is still much more to elusive Nimrod. Nimrod, from the precarious few details provided in Genesis 10, walked a very similar strut to that of the ancient giants. Nimrod deserves proper scrutiny and investigation in the light of this comparison.

CHAPTER 28

THE PEOPLE OF THE PLAIN

Now the whole world had one language and a common speech. As men moved eastward they found a plain in Shinar and settled there.

—Genesis 11:1–2

According to Josephus, Nimrod was a great leader of the people of Shinar after the flood.[1] Laurence Gardner states the word *Shinar* resonates with a strong sense of antediluvian déjà vu, for “Shinar” was an (little understood) alternative name for Sumer.[2]

One begins to wonder whether or not the desire of Nimrod and his people was to only migrate away from Noah, as a first bold step in recolonizing the planet. Was there was an unexplained, early schism among the deluge survivors, with Nimrod and his followers exiting to recreate the outlawed antediluvian society of Sumer? Whatever the inspiration, the people of Shinar were remembered as very courageous for first venturing out from the mountains and down to the plains, where Shinar/Sumer was located.

Remember, less than seventy years before, there had been a worldwide flood, the ark came to rest at the top of the mountains of Ararat (Gen. 8:4). From there, the survivors and their children watched as the flood waters slowly receded, revealing the lowlands over a long period of time. The safety of the mountaintops would have been imbedded into their consciousness, branding any thought of leaving the high ground a mark of lunacy, for fear of another great flood.

According to Porter, humanity appears in Genesis at this time as a small, homogenous group that travels cautiously from the mountains and to the east, to the Plain of Shinar.[3] Josephus explained that when the migration from the mountains took place, the people decided not to spread out and separate.[4] Did they believe their survival over nature was more secure through virtue of sheer numbers, or was it due to a fear of the unknown? Even more importantly, could the early pioneers of the plain have been afraid of another civilization that was terrible in war? Josephus noted that after the flood, God instructed the descendants of Noah to go forth and to recolonize the planet, but the people refused out of fear of oppression.[5] This is logical if the pioneers of the plain feared the Nephilim, wandering Aryans, and violent day six races. Clearly, whatever the rationale, the people of Shinar made a conscious decision that their early survival depended upon their remaining one people.

According to the Legend of Nimrod, Nimrod united the people of the plain and then kept them united through tyranny, just as we already noted. Nimrod was remembered as the autocratic maker of laws. Masons further record Nimrod as the unrestricted sovereign power, dictatorial with his legislation and implementation of his decrees. He was a tyrant king, who both abused and misused his powers.[6] Nimrod was not the benevolent ruler, Izubar, that George Smith would have us believe.

The book *Rosslyn,* a source not complimentary to the literalist Christian perspective, describes Nimrod as an evil character.[7] He was an evil dictator/potentate modeled after the antediluvian potentates, the Nephilim/Gibborim. Of this fact, there can be no doubt, for all the ancient sources concur as to the results of Nimrod's actions. Nimrod was recorded in Genesis not as a hero to be fondly revered, but as a brutal dictator to be sadly contemplated upon for all the generations that were to follow.

Josephus, then, attributed Nimrod with sponsoring the introduction of doctrines to the people of Shinar that honored values other than humility and the worship of the true God,[8] just as before the flood. Nimrod introduced idol worship, according to Ginzberg, and led his subjects into evil.[9] Nimrod began to teach the people of the plain to believe in themselves and in their own works and accomplishments. He ignited the second generation of survivors from the deluge to neither submit to nor honor God as the Lord of the universe.[10] This was the very same sin the antediluvian giants and the Cainites of day six were recorded as committing in both biblical and pantheistic traditions.

Nimrod was the first potentate after the flood to incite the people of the earth to rebel against God, just as his Hebrew name implies. Ginzberg notes that Nimrod taught gullible people to believe in their own strength and courage,[11] just as Nimrod had done because of his own great strength and courage. He taught his subjects to abandon their faith in God's strength and wisdom, just as the antediluvian Nephilim had done. Nimrod imposed the belief that they and their works, and not God, would procure their future and their happiness.[12] Again, this was yet another doctrine from the antediluvian Nephilim—that one does not need God, to be happy, that one's future happiness is in one's own free choice and independent from God.

Ultimately, this line of thinking relegated the true God to a lower plain of power and authority, where God would be considered just one of many gods, some more powerful than others, some more kind than others, and some more wise than others. This is another cornerstone doctrine to all religions of the pantheon. The Greek and Egyptian pantheons, as well as others, all contained numerous gods, both male and female, who were of varying stature, authority, and values. This was the same doctrine from Enochian mysticism and continues to be a central doctrine in the contemporary version of The Genesis 6 Conspiracy.

With all this in mind, we can see Nimrod was somehow deluded by the fallen angels, Jinn, demons, Nephilim, and/or Hermes into this belief system. Dark angels, demons, and Jinn made up Nimrod's pantheon of gods, fostering the belief that the true God was just one of many and no more important than any other god. In fact, in the aftermath of the flood, God likely was portrayed as one of the evil gods who did not have the better interest of humankind close to their hearts. It is possible that those fallen angels or the Nephilim seduced Nimrod into believing that they would protect him from God, should God determine to take action against him and or his people.

This notion becomes all the more plausible when one considers the Mesopotamian explanation for the flood. The Mesopotamians believed humankind had become too plentiful and, therefore, too noisy for their masters, the gods.[13] Therefore, the deluge was deemed the solution by the gods for the noise problem caused by the too-numerous humans. One could easily understand just how inviting it would have been to have cast the true God of the universe and His loyal angels as those violent, evil, and intolerant gods who conspired, as described by Enoch,[14] to commit genocide against the human race via the deluge. This is the teaching and doctrine of the Gnostics, who call the God of the Jews and Christians *Ialdaboth*, the impious god who enslaves humankind in ignorance and mortality and caused the flood to spite humans. The evil God of Christians and Jews doctrine is the same doctrine set forth in the Sumerian legends, where *Enlil*, the Jewish God, Adonai, conspired to bring about the deluge disaster against the wishes of the alleged good god of wisdom, Enki/Satan.

If indeed this was the case, then what Nimrod did next makes perfect logical sense. The result tabulated from this deluded manner of thinking manifested itself in its full spurious glory at Babel.[15]

CHAPTER 29

THE TOWER AT BABEL

> *They said to each other, “Come, let us make bricks and bake them thoroughly.” They used brick instead of stone, and tar for mortar. Then they said, “Come, let us build ourselves a city, with a tower that reaches to the heavens, so that we may make a name for ourselves and not be scattered over the face of the earth.”*
>
> —Genesis 11:2–4

Genesis 11 seems to leave more unanswered questions than it resolves about the origin of the disparate languages of the world. For example: why build a tower that could reach into heaven? Surely they must have known that was impossible.

The tower could only have made a symbolic statement towards heaven. If so, who was the statement intended for, and what was the statement? And did the tower at Babel have any relationship whatsoever to the Sumerian ziggurats that both predated and postdated Babel?

To resolve these questions, we must first look back to the new religion introduced to the people of the plain. If the people of Shinar did embrace the pantheistic religion of the Nephilim and fallen angels, then the statement must have been directed to one or more of the gods who did not reside on the earth but in heaven. Therefore, the tower must have either been built as a monument of respect or defiance, or both. The tower could have been built in honor of the newly adopted pantheon of gods, but it certainly was not erected in respect for the one true God. In fact, God looked most unfavorably upon this mystical masterpiece of Masonry, stopping its construction before the people of Shinar were able to complete it. God then confused the people by imposing new and different languages upon them. He subsequently scattered the people to the four corners of the globe.[1]

So why did God object to such a project? Surely a tower erected in honor of false gods would not totally defile all humankind. With the resurgence of the false religion, surely many idols and symbols of idolatry had already been created and were already in wide use.

The root of the issue was simply this: The tower was erected not only to honor the false gods but also to memorialize their act of defiance and rebellion towards the true God of the universe, who had sent the flood. *Nelson's Bible Dictionary* states the tower was erected as a symbol for human pride and rebellion.[2] It was an act of self-glorification and a statement of independence, marking the rebirth of the antediluvian epoch of corruption, debauchery, and rebellion.

Nimrod desired to be worshipped as a god in his own right. He wished to create a world government with himself as the absolute dictator, in direct opposition to God. The Tower at Babel was Nimrod's monument for his rebellion and an insult directed at God. Porter noted Babel was the embodiment of all evil, a wicked kingdom set adroitly against God and his chosen people, a symbol of pride, oppression, wealth, luxury, sexual license, and idolatry.[3] All this took place at a time when a dictator, Nimrod, had usurped absolute control by force, establishing the first empire of the new epoch, with Babel as its first united project. Nimrod ignited a conspiracy modeled after The Genesis 6 Conspiracy, which had constructed the Egyptian pyramids and the Sumerian ziggurats as memorials and a legacy to their spurious, antediluvian accomplishments.

The construction project strained the resources and limited labor force to the point of collapse. Babel was an enormous burden to both the people and the material resources. Nimrod was obliged to be a tyrant of legendary proportions when he enslaved the people of Shinar and accomplished such a feat. Charles Sellier and Brian Russell assert that he was an evil tyrant[4] for these reasons.

The basis of the new Babylon religion was to unite under one umbrella religion in order to build a new world, a new Atlantis. Nothing was to be impossible for them, just as God confirmed in Genesis 11:6: “But the Lord came down to see the city and the tower that the men were building. The Lord said, ‘If as one people speaking the same language they have begun to do this, then nothing they plan to do will be impossible for them’” Through their unification of beliefs and combined efforts, they would fear no enemy, nor even the God of the universe. Providing they banded together and worked united in this new utopia, utilizing all the spurious sciences, then nothing was to be unattainable for them.

Once more, according to *Nelson’s*, the people sought security from within a community, and they sought a life and culture independent of God.[5] The religion was centered in peace for humankind and the benevolent evolution of the human spirit, under the dictatorship and guidance of Nimrod. This ancient utopia of Shinar holds a significant prophetic role as a parallel lesson from antiquity for the last days, if we are wise enough to heed the end time’s prophetic warning known as The Sign of Noah in the last days of this age.

So what is the point of Babel? God had just two generations previously washed the world of its corruption via the flood. And now the earth was vulnerable to the same terrible fate of backsliding into absolute violence, corruption, debauchery, apostasy, and rebellion, disguised in a disingenuous promise for utopia. This was why God looked so unfavorably on what was taking place at Shinar. The tower, combined with the pantheistic religion that had just recently taken hold at Babel and Nimrod’s dictatorship gripping all people under his tyranny and the rebellion presented the worst-case scenario for the future of humankind.

Satan was close to winning the experiment with his third revenge at this point in time; the world was standing dangerously once more at the edge, gazing over the precipice to oblivion. Humankind was determined to totally rebel against God, in favor of Satan, justifying the great angelic rebellion, condemning the future of humankind. God, therefore, intervened, providing humankind once more with a new opportunity to succeed, through confusing the languages and scattering the people around the earth. His action ensured that humankind would never again fall totally under one dictatorship, until the last days, when all things that must take place are to be completed at the new Babel.

The second major question deriving from the Tower of Babel that was left dangling is: make a name to whom? The city and the tower, according to Porter, were built to provide the people of Shinar both an identity and security.[6] Three ways to make a name for themselves come to mind. The first might be to honor their pantheon of gods. The second might be to show their rebellion against the one true God, which we have already covered. The third might have been to show their enemies how strong they were. I believe the Tower of Babel was erected to make all three statements. But, as to the third, who were their enemies?

The odd application of language surrounding the construction of the Tower of Babel is perplexing; the people of Shinar would make a name for themselves and not be scattered over the face of the earth.[7] Just what could cause a diaspora of Shinar? Historically, most Christian scholars believed only the descendants of Noah repopulated the earth and the people of Shinar could not have known that God would later disperse them for building the Tower. Some interpret the statement about not being scattered over the face of the earth as they were endeavoring to prevent the people of Shinar from being wiped out from the face of the earth. This is an interpretation that I sympathize with, particularly in light of Josephus's account, where he stated that the people were fearful from being oppressed,[8] and from Porter's anecdote that Babel City was built for their security.

Supplementing the theory of fear of enemies was the fact that those people of Shinar came down out of the mountains together, so as to not be divided.[9] There is a clear undercurrent in this narrative that the early descendants of Noah knew of and feared some other form of humanoid, some enemy that caused them to unite under Nimrod's tyranny, to both build a city and a tower for their protection. Nimrod was a warrior and a conqueror of cities and people. So there must have been at least one enemy out there to worry them that eventually led to Nimrod's fame. Could the enemy have been the dreaded Nephilim?

Josephus provides some bizarre anecdotes as to why Nimrod commanded that the tower be built. Josephus articulates two reasons: The first was in case of another deluge—the people could take refuge on the tower and wait until the flood waters receded, thereby saving humankind. The second reason was to construct a tower so high as to allow Nimrod to climb into the heavens to avenge both the people and himself through slaying the one who had caused the great flood of Noah's time, should God ever decide to judge the earth with another great flood.[10] According to Hebrew legends, Nimrod even staged events where he shot arrows into the heavens in an attempt to slay God.[11] Nimrod knew, of course, that God had already promised never to destroy the world again through flood and had sealed this Covenant with the rainbow. Therefore, Nimrod's blasphemous and inflammatory overreaches were all designed for show, to rally the people of Shinar behind him. It is my contention that this great ziggurat was a symbolic gesture of his intention to rebel against God in the spirit of The Genesis 6 Conspiracy.

Nimrod's drivel must have made great speeches to ignite the fervor of the people into open rebellion against God. To hear Nimrod claim that he could and would slay God, should God ever step out of line again, is indeed language of the legendary and the walking dead. It further enhanced the notion that God was just one of many other gods. Nimrod just may have been the most arrogant man ever to have lived or who ever will live, aside from the future, modern Nimrod that is yet to come, who will be a mighty warrior before God.

Josephus further notes Nimrod stating that it was his intent to get revenge on God for destroying their forefathers;[12] although, Josephus does not record how Nimrod said he was going to accomplish that feat. The forefathers Josephus spoke of were not the descendants of Seth, but rather the posterity of Cain and the Nephilim, Nimrod's role models. Once more, Nimrod was likely utilizing the tower as a symbolic gesture—he would climb it and hold God accountable, and it would also be a monument to the antediluvian Nephilim and their epoch. Nimrod must have seemed larger than life to the people of Shinar, for him to stand before them and God. He must have appeared to be like a messiah.

Nimrod lined up adroitly against God, threatening to slay God for destroying Nimrod's adopted ancestors. The pieces to the Nimrod puzzle now all begin to come together. Nimrod usurped power over the people of Shinar and then reintroduced the religion of the pre-flood Nephilim as a means of control and persuasion over the people, to inspire them to rebel against God and follow Nimrod. Nimrod was easily capable of painting

God as one of the more powerful gods but also one of the more iniquitous and violent gods. God was framed as a most powerful God, but no more powerful than the pantheon of gods worshipped by Nimrod and his followers.

Returning to the notion that Nimrod was seeking revenge for the destruction of his forefathers, we must postulate it is likely Nimrod was disturbed by God's treatment of the antediluvians. It is likely Nimrod must have been sympathetic to the Nephilim and their followers, when one considers the kind of government Nimrod imposed (like that of Gibborim and Nephilim), alongside the mystical, pagan religion of Hermes, which Nimrod further imposed on the people of Shinar. I, therefore, conclude that Nimrod was lamenting over his fallen, idolized demigods and the descendants of Cain, not his own ancestry dating back to Seth.

The new doctrines included the promises of renewed enlightenment, the ancient knowledge and beliefs of Atlantis and the entire antediluvian world, the occult, idolatry, secret rituals, and secret societies. But try as the followers of Nimrod must have done, not all the people of Shinar would convert and worship the pantheon of gods. Not all of the people were gullible enough to willingly come out in open rebellion against God. Some, and more likely many, held true to God and His righteous ways, rejecting the new Nephilim doctrine being introduced by Nimrod. In order for the postdiluvian rebellion to have fully taken hold and to ultimately succeed, more was required than the art of deceptive persuasion.

This was when Nimrod usurped absolute control over all the governing bodies in the first coup d'état of the postdiluvian age. Nimrod became a Gibborim, a potentate like that of the antediluvian Nephilim. According to Josephus, Nimrod changed the nature of the government to tyranny[13] under his brutal and evil dictatorship, just as an evil potentate would do, and even more importantly, just as an evil Nephilim potentate would do. Through the brutal and corrupt power of his government, Nimrod imposed his will and state-sponsored religion upon the people of Shinar. Through brute force and fear, Nimrod was successful in implementing his rebellious and heretical religion on most of the people at that time. Those who did not abide by the new ways were callously removed, likely by death, from the so-called enlightened, foreshadowing the great end-time genocide that will be waged first by the religion of Babylon (Rev. 7:1–17; Rev. 18:24; and Rev. 19:2) and then by the Antichrist (Rev. 13:5–18).

Nimrod might just as well have been a Nephilim. Remember, the people of Nimrod even drank blood, just as the Nephilim did, in spite towards God. Surely this was no coincidence. Either Nimrod purposely modeled his society after the antediluvian Nephilim empires past, or he modeled his new utopia after Nephilim societies of the postdiluvian world. But whichever the case, it is clear that Nimrod idolized the giants and purposefully conspired to recreate with the early descendants of Noah the same kind of godless world (in the sense of the one true God) that existed before the flood.

Evidence points to Nephilim coexisting with Nimrod, whom Nimrod likely warred with regularly, winning his heroic stature and establishing his dictatorial credentials. One ought to conclude that the people of Shinar united under the warrior skills of Nimrod out of fear of being wiped from the face of the earth and remembered no more, all at the hands of the terrible Nephilim.

In addition, one should also conclude the Tower of Babel was constructed in part as both a warning and sign to the Nephilim of the people of Shinar’s capabilities and as a witness to their newfound allegiance to the pantheon. One might further speculate that it was from the postdiluvian Nephilim that Hermes and Nimrod received or stole their illicit knowledge pertaining to the antediluvian epoch, complete with all its sciences and religions. Add to this the transatlantic legends of Central and South America concerning giants and Babel, and the line of thought putting Nimrod in coexistence with giants is significantly reassured.

An Aztec legend records a famous ziggurat known as Teotihuacan being built by giants endeavoring to transform men into gods.[14] Another Aztec legend asserts that a famous ziggurat was constructed by “gigantic men” that resulted in the dispersal of humankind:

> Immediately after the light and the sun arose in the east there appeared gigantic men of deformed stature who possessed the land. Enamored of the light and beauty of the sun they determined to build a tower so high that its summit should reach the sky. Having collected materials for the purpose they found a very adhesive clay and bitumen with which they speedily commenced to build the tower…. And having reared to the highest possible altitude, so that it reached the sky, the Lord of the Heavens, enraged, said to the inhabitants of the sky, “Have you observed how they of the earth have built a high and haughty tower to mount hither, being enamored of the light of the sun and his beauty? Come and confound them, because it is not right that they of the earth, living in the flesh, should mingle with us.” Immediately the inhabitants of the sky sallied forth like flashes of lightening; they destroyed the edifice and divided and scattered its builders to all parts of the earth.[15]

The allies of the Aztecs, the Choula, also held a legend regarding the Great Pyramid that stood 220 feet high and was nearly twice the width of the Great Pyramid of Egypt. This massive structure was recorded in legend as being erected by “white giants” after the catastrophic deluge. At the foot of this monument stood a temple dedicated and enshrined to the meteorite that had fallen from heaven in a ball of flame, the asteroid or star from the Pleiades constellation that ignited the deluge catastrophe. But before this pyramid was completed, fire fell from the heavens, killing its builders and causing the abandonment of the project,[16] again a story similar to that of Babel.

I cannot imagine closer versions to the biblical account, but it is only in these American versions where we are forced to consider the willing partnership of the Nephilim with Nimrod, which the Genesis account does not include. Were Nephilim partners in the Babel project? Were Nephilim coconspirators in the rebellion against God at Babel? Or were only the deformed giants, like those of the Irish Formorians that suffered the curse of Ham, enslaved by Nimrod to construct the ziggurat?

The History of the Armenians does support this notion, for it records that Nimrod enlisted giants to build the mountain-like Tower at Babel,[17] just as the Aztec legends do. Yet another Mesopotamian tradition suggests that Babel was believed to have been a center of activity for the postdiluvian Anunnaki,[18] which contained a temple dedicated to the stars of Pleiades, which had caused the flood, just as the Aztecs recalled. It does appear clear that Nimrod did, in fact, partner with some Nephilim to build Babel City, the great tower, and a temple dedicated in honor of the antediluvian Nephilim and Cainites slaughtered in the deluge disaster.

Nimrod did become a mighty warrior against some of those giants, so he did not tame all the Nephilim. Remember, the descendants of Nimrod, the Assyrians, warred with the giant nations in the time of Abraham, as recorded in Genesis 14, at a time when Nimrod may even have still been alive. It is prudent to suggest that the Assyrians took their lead from their idolized god of war, Nimrod, who most likely earned his legendary reputation through battling the giants. Also, remember that Nimrod coveted world government, presupposing that he would have had to subdue the giants, bringing them under his will, to do so. If the Aztec and Armenian legends are accurate, then Nimrod did indeed subdue some of the giants, subjugating them into building Babel alongside humans.

Furthermore, Armenian legends recount that Nimrod fought a battle against T’orgom, son of Hayk (*Hayk* was directly related to the word *gigantic* in the Armenian language), who was the legendary father of the Armenian race, in a war against rival giant armies,[19] suggesting Nimrod was either a giant or that he enlisted the services of giants.

The postdiluvian world then faced a similar fate to that which the antediluvian world faced, unless something was done—hence, the Babel dispersion and confusion of languages.

CHAPTER 30

THE ORIGINAL GREAT WHITE BROTHERHOOD

The first centers of his kingdom were Babylon, Erech, Akkad, and Calneh, in Shinar (Babylon). From that land he went to Assyria where he built Nineveh, Rehoboth Ir, Calah and Resen, which is between Nineveh and Calah; that is the great city.

—Genesis 10:10–12

How, then, did Nimrod receive all the Secret Sciences and the Enochian religion from the antediluvian world? How did Nimrod utilize the knowledge of the corrupted Seven Sciences and the vile pantheistic religions from the antediluvian world?

Hermes, of course, discovered and translated the degenerate data from Enoch’s hieroglyphs, which were etched into the twin towers constructed by Lamech’s children.[1] All of the reprehensible evils Noah witnessed before the flood, then, came back to haunt Noah in his later years. The twin evils of spurious knowledge and Nephilim both fell into the hands of the tyrant of Shinar for the detriment of postdiluvian society. The impact of the forbidden knowledge did not remain inert. Nimrod reactivated the corrupt knowledge with all his heart and all his soul. This was why Genesis 10 recorded that anything that humankind could conceive was then attainable, even though the people of Shinar did not possess the heavenly wisdom to apply this spurious knowledge for only the good of humankind. The seven spurious sciences are purportedly so powerful that anything is possible through their application.

To this end, Craft legends recorded Nimrod was a Mason who “loved” the (spurious) sciences.[2] Nimrod was captivated with aggression stemming from his newly found power. He is celebrated as a great Mason,[3] who applied his trade as he pleased. Not only was Nimrod a great Mason, but also he was the Grand Master,[4] the leader of the new cult. Nimrod, in fact, was the first Masonic Grand Master for the postdiluvian world.[5] He was the Grand Master who paraded the postdiluvian world into disaster. *The Regius Manuscript* supports this notion that not Solomon but Nimrod was indeed the first Excellent Grand Master of the postdiluvian Masons.[6]

Because of all this illicit knowledge, Nimrod was (inaccurately) regarded as the founder of the Seven Sciences by some Craft legends;[7] whereas what was more accurate was that Nimrod sponsored and partnered with Hermes, who led the renaissance of the postdiluvian, spurious sciences. Nimrod taught all the Masonic signs and tokens (and knowledge) to distinguish his builders and their Craft from the rest of mankind.[8] He organized and fused the newly founded cult with the elite of society, forming a transgenerational secret society, to which he provided a constitution complete with laws of their governing.[9] Nimrod was therefore honored in Craft legends for creating postdiluvian Masonry.[10] In one quick stroke of diabolical genius, through his unprecedented state power and organization, Nimrod ruined the postdiluvian society, as well as all subsequent generations, with all the terrible evils that caused the demise of the antediluvian epoch.

Nimrod began to construct cities and ziggurats[11] to consummate his credentials as a Master Mason, just as Scripture accurately records Nimrod as the builder of many cities. His most noteworthy accomplishment was, of course, the infamous Tower of Babel. Even though Scripture does not record specifically that Nimrod was responsible for the construction of Babel, in fact, other legends do.[12]

The legend of Nimrod confirms Nimrod utilized Babel for symbolic purposes, for his idolatrous and pantheistic new religion.[13] He constructed the tower with more than a thousand Masons already indoctrinated in the sciences, employing the project, according to Masonic legends, to teach its practical application. Nimrod spent fifty-three years in the Craft at Babel.[14] This founding Masonic organization at Babel became known as the ultra-secret Great White Brotherhood, which later transferred to the famous priests at Heliopolis, Egypt, and which was then inherited by the Essenes. Nimrod's ancient White Brotherhood Organization now rests within the confines of the super-secret Illuminati, who defiantly sport the Great White Brotherhood title.

Babel was the first Masonic project of the postdiluvian world.[15] It was considered the first physical application of the spurious knowledge and the beginning of modern Freemasonry, including mysticism.[16] The construction of the Tower of Babel was part of the larger, more ambitious project of erecting a great city remembered as Babel and Babylon, which took fifty-three years.[17] This first great project by the people of Shinar was memorialized in Masonic legends as the glory of the renaissance of the antediluvian sciences. From this enigmatic source of Babylon and the Tower of Babel emerges Scripture's figurative Babylon to describe the spurious, false, antediluvian religion of mysticism, which was reincarnated at Babel and will be again in the end time[18].

Babel was then, without question, a Mesopotamian ziggurat after the style and spirit of the antediluvian Sumerians. "Ziggurat" was an Assyrian/Babylonian word deriving from *ziggurratu*, meaning "sacred tower or mountaintop."[19] Another translation rendered the meaning as "towers rising into the sky."[20] The knowledge attributed for the building of Babel was believed to have been antediluvian in its origin, just like that for constructing the pyramids, from the spurious sciences.

The same can be stated regarding the Sumerians, who were attributed with the first invention of writing in the form of the curiously shaped, wedge-like signs, *cuneiform*, from around 3300 B.C.E., antediluvian times. Sumerians were also attributed with the instigation of the technological revolution of the fourth millennium B.C.E., which included agriculture, mathematics, metallurgy, and architecture, all in the spirit of Cain, Enoch, and Tubal-Cain. The Sumerians dedicated those newfound skills and knowledge to writing and architecture as a form of worship and honor to their gods that manifested itself in the form of ziggurats.[21] The same scenario played out in Egypt with hieroglyphs and pyramids.

It would seem most likely, then, that the descendants of Cain were Sumerians and Egyptians, and presumably the people of day six. It would seem just as likely that Babel was a ziggurat after the spirit of the Sumerians, but on a much grander scale. Remember, the base of Babel Tower was twice the width of the Great Pyramid.

As it was in Sumer, so it was in Babel; it was consecrated to their guardian deity, Enki, [22] the rival of Enlil/Adonai. Remember, *Shinar* is Akkadian for “Sumer.” It was in this regard that Sellier and Russell note the tower was alternatively built as a gateway or star gate to the gods, as a way to communicate with them.[23] Nimrod commanded the tower to be built with knowledge provided by Hermes, as the first Masonic construction project in the postdiluvian world, to communicate, manipulate, and honor the gods.

The Tower of Babel did not have any redeeming virtues in its symbolism. In fact, *Babel* was translated from Akkadian as follows: *Bab-gate* and *El-gods*, meaning “gateway to the gods,” as Russell and Sellier note. The star gate; the rings of kingship; the various antediluvian gods; the antediluvian civilizations, including Atlantis; the bellowing voices; and the glowing eyes of the Nephilim have all been kept alive in this generation through the *Star Gate* and *Star Gate Atlantis* science fiction movie and television series.

Additionally, one begins to ponder whether or not Babel was a symbolic gesture memorializing or honoring another infamous antediluvian event, again after the spirit of the Genesis 6 Conspiracy, just as the Egyptian pyramids and the Sumerian ziggurats were. As noted previously, *Babel* is translated from Akaddian as the gateway (*bab*) to the gods (*el*). Babel’s construction might have been a figurative gesture by Nimrod, inviting gods to once more descend to earth, just as they did in antediluvian times, where they took their thrones as *watchers*/rulers/archons. Perhaps it was an open invitation for the previously unimpassioned *watchers* to descend upon the earth to once more take daughters of men as their wives, to once more create new Nephilim, the new man, just as the infamous 200 had done at Mount Hermon/Nippur. Was Babel in fact a postdiluvian recreation of Mount Hermon? Was this the beginning of the second spiteful violation of creation, which was then transplanted to Sodom and Gomorrah, after the dispersion from Babel and as recorded in the Gnostic gospels?

Indeed, one must conclude Babel was constructed for exactly those purposes. The ancient ziggurats were designated as sacred mountains and as hills of heaven, according to Gardner.[24] Knight and Lomas articulate that the concept of a holy mountain connecting the center of earth with heaven was Sumerian, the legendary Nippur, home of the ruling Council of the Anunnaki, where kingships were issued and decreed both before and after the flood. To this conclusion, the northern nomads knew the Tower of Babel as the Tower of Sumer. Knight and Lomas further note that Sumerian ziggurats were created as artificial mountains built to connect the center of earth with heaven,[25] just as antediluvian legends recorded regarding Nippur and Mount Hermon. One must conclude Nimrod was endeavoring to rebuild Kharsag of Nippur, for as Andrew Collins states, “Kharsag of Nippur” was synonymous with Mount Hermon.[26]

Nimrod’s hubris was, and is, undeniable. Jewish legends note that he became completely corrupted. He was recognized as the greatest sinner since the flood. Under Nimrod, a parallel kingdom to that of the future Antichrist was established, where war, violence, and murder were common. Ginzberg notes that Nimrod endeavored to convert all the people of the earth to his new religion; he set himself up as a god and made a throne in the imitation of the throne of God. Ginzberg goes on to note that all nations came and paid homage to the divine Nimrod; the people said of him: “Since the Creation of the world there has been none like Nimrod, a mighty hunter of men and beasts, and a sinner before God.”[27]

This overt arrogance did not please God, who is known in Freemasonry as the lover of humility.[28] Confusing the tongues and the dispersing of the people to the four winds of the earth at Babel was God’s considered retribution and His plan to impede practicing the spurious craft, this according to the Anderson Legend.[29] Carol Rose additionally notes that God judged Nimrod and giants loyal to Nimrod,[30] along with the balance of humankind, dispersing them and confusing their languages.

Unfortunately, not all the knowledge of the spurious branch was lost in the dispersion. Nimrod once more rallied to preserve and propagate the sciences after the dispersion.[31] He reestablished his ancient Babylonian empire by utilizing his Masonic knowledge. He built the ancient cities of Arach, Archad, Calan, Shinar, Caleh, Rehoboth, and of course, Nineveh of Assyria.[32] Biblical legends record that the generation of Babel and their descendants were skillful and adept in all the arts, sciences, and knowledge.[33] Under Nimrod, the Masonic cult once more flourished, where it was perpetuated as an inheritance by the Chaldeans’ mathematicians, also known as Wise Men and Magi.

Chaldeans originated in Accad, northern Babylon. They were an aggressive, warlike people proficient in astrology and astronomy.[34] Chaldeans were undoubtedly the sons of Nimrod. At Chaldea, Nimrod persuaded his subjects to become idolatrous fire worshippers, casting all those who refused to become fire worshippers into giant furnaces as sacrifices to his corrupt and vile pantheon,[35] a trait that another Antichrist figure, Hitler, would adopt 5,000 years later, as will the forthcoming Antichrist.

As for the murdering of people in furnaces, there is yet another legend that had Nimrod threatening to do the same to Abraham.[36] According to Jewish legend, Abraham denounced Nimrod face-to-face for denying God and leading people in rebellion away from God. Nimrod then cast Abraham into a dungeon for one year and then cast him into a furnace after that, but Abraham did not burn nor die, for he was righteous in the eyes God and under His divine protection.[37] Legend and Genesis 14:14–21 record Abraham later inheriting the priestly blessings from Melchizedek (Shem).

The scenario of Nimrod and Abraham is possible but unsubstantiated. However, a confrontation with Nimrod may have been one of the reasons Scripture recorded Abraham fleeing from Ur and Chaldea to Canaan,[38] for his own protection and away from the tyranny of Nimrod. Further, the ultimate monotheist, Abraham passionately protested against his father and the people of Ur for prostrating themselves continually before idols of their false gods.[39] The people of Ur threatened to stone Abraham for these protests and to burn him to death, but God saved Abraham from the fire and sent Abraham away to a new land.[40] All this does tend to support an encounter between Nimrod and Abraham.

Nimrod was true to his tyrannical beginnings to the end. He replanted the seeds of the spurious knowledge,[41] for it then flourished in Chaldea, waiting for the opportunity to spread its corruption to the other newly established empires of the post-Babel world. The Chaldeans were the keepers of the spurious knowledge, just as their Egyptian counterparts were, in accordance to the leadership of Hermes.

As for Nimrod after “Language-gate,” Nimrod did not leave Assyria and Babylon.[42] Nimrod lived out his days in Babylonia, continuing to build cities and endeavoring to rebuild the first-world empire of the postdiluvian epoch. The rebuilding, in reality, would not take place for ages to come, until the time of the great Assyrian, Babylonian, and Persian empires.

Nimrod's first great empire was known for its fierce aggressiveness,[43] along with his warlike prowess and passion for the chase, and it became the perfect model for the warrior kings of Assyria, who would follow in his footsteps. They established some of the most brutal and barbaric kingdoms ever to dominate humankind. Assyria was even called "the land of Nimrod" by Bible authors (Micah 5:6). As for Nimrod, Armenian legends record him as dying in the battle with T'orgom, from Hayk's arrow.[44]

It was for all of these reasons God broke the yoke of evil once more at Babel, providing a new opportunity for the descendants of Noah to propagate good and turn from evil. Nimrod's infamy was well earned. Nimrod was considered the most evil of men during the early postdiluvian world, and for that matter, one of the most evil men of our age period.

Nimrod is indeed a worthy role model for the coming Antichrist. As a testimony to this sedition, Nimrod and Babel are documented in Genesis as a witness warning all generations that would follow that, indeed, "there is nothing new under the sun." Circumstances will once more come about in the not-so-distant future, just as they did at Babel, inspiring a renewal of the spirit of sedition and rebellion known as The Genesis 6 Conspiracy, if we do not heed the Sign of Noah.

CHAPTER 31

FORGING THE NATION OF DESTINY

> *So all the people took off their earrings and brought them to Aaron. He took what they handed him and made it into an idol cast in the shape of a calf, fashioning it with a tool. Then they said, "These are your gods, O Israel, who brought you up out of Egypt."*
>
> —Exodus 32:3–4

Why was Israel reared in Egypt into a nation of acquiescent slaves? And what was the relationship between Nephilim, Israel, and the conquest of the Promised Land?

Within the Exodus miracle rest obscure keys to unlocking little-understood Nephilim bloodlines and the mystery of the apparent barbaric slaughter of unsuspecting nations. The land of milk and honey promised to Moses by God was comprised of hostile Canaanites, Hittites, Amorites, Perizzites, Hivites, and the Jebusites,[1] all who were infested with Nephilim. Historians and theologians always seemingly overlook or dismiss the Nephilim presence when they examine this staggering turning point of history.

Further secular historians dismiss the Exodus as fanciful folklore and not a historical event. They summarily declare Israelites were Canaanites, not foreigners.[2] But why would a people say they were foreigners if they were Canaanites? Claiming to be foreigners would only cause tensions. Conversely, secular history's first definitive documentation of Israel's existence derived from the Stele of Pharaoh Mernepteh, circa 1210 B.C.E., clearly identifying Israelites as a distinct people from Canaanites, Hurrians, and Bedouins of the same region.[3] If Israelites were not foreigners, they certainly would have been recognized in antiquity as part of the other aboriginal nations of the region. And why would a nation write its history as beginning in slavery?

Israel began the Exodus heading due east. After some setbacks, they wandered in the desert for forty years. During those years, Israel was forged into a nation. At the start, Israel was a ragtag collection of slaves, indoctrinated under a pantheon of gods during their 400-year bondage in Egypt, with only faint monotheistic beliefs whispered to them by Joseph and his twelve sons, like a faint echo from the past. Then came Moses, who led them to freedom once more under a monotheistic doctrine, which was almost foreign to the Israelites by that time. This is why Israel refused to enter into the Land of the Covenant to do battle, in spite of God's promises to ensure their success. Israel was afraid, trembling from reports describing the fearsome people of war that lived there, vowing to never enter into the land of fearsome people.[4]

And then the infamous golden calf incident occurred.[5] God determined the Israelites, the world's last, best hope, would require forty years of discipline before entering into the Land of the Covenant. Moses' spies brought back alarming reports about Nephilim and powerful nations. Israel's faith had not yet forged into a sturdy metal. They were not yet strong enough to battle both physically and spiritually with those powerful nations. Israel was sentenced to attain a loyal, monotheistic following before God would again consider leading them into their destiny. The golden calf incident sadly bore witness to their fragile faith. They were still conflicted in their beliefs and were easily swayed to and fro.

> "They have been quick to turn away from what I commanded them and have made themselves an idol cast in the shape of a calf. They have bowed down to it and sacrificed to it and have said, 'These are your gods, O Israel, who brought you up out of Egypt.' I have seen these people," the Lord said to Moses, "and they are a stiff-necked people. Now leave me alone so that my anger may burn against them and that I may destroy them. Then I will make

> you into a great nation." But Moses sought the favor of the Lord his God. "O Lord," he said, "Why should your anger burn against your people, whom you brought out of Egypt with great power and a mighty hand? Why should the Egyptians say, 'It was with evil intent that he brought them out, to kill them in the mountains and to wipe them from the face of the earth'?"…. Then the Lord relented and did not bring on his people the disaster he had threatened.
>
> —Exodus 32:8–14

Israel's backsliding into pantheism almost thwarted, or at the least delayed, the hope for humankind. Due to the Isralites' religious rebellion and their fear of the Amalekites, Canaanites, and Nephilim living in the Promised Land,[6] God almost rewrote history. But for the determined efforts by Moses, an entirely different history might have been written, albeit with similar results.[7] In the thoughts of Thomas Cahill, God concluded forty years of desert discipline would dispense with the Egypt-bred complainers and that the soft polytheists would be replaced with a rugged generation, hardened by wilderness trials,[8] loyal to the monotheistic cause.

The golden calf altercation communicates more significance than the superficial text delivers, explicating why God responded the way He did. The idol was part of the bull cult of Canaan and Atlantis, the original antediluvian mysticism of Enoch. The golden calf would not have been a calf but rather a bull, according to Porter.[9] Cahill, too, concludes Exodus describes the idol as a calf to denigrate it and states that the idol would indeed have been a bull, the aboriginal symbol of potency.[10] Others, though, conclude the golden idol was indeed a calf and base this on the Apis/Osiris bull cult of ancient Egypt. In this most ancient of religious doctrines, Isis bore from her womb a calf that died and later became Osiris. The Apis bull was part of the Horus-king tradition[11] and part of the complete Egyptian religious fabric from the beginning in the antediluvian epoch.

The bull from Egypt's rival bull cult was a symbol of power and defiance towards God and a common idol of the Near East religions.[12] Add to this, some conclude the skill set required for Aaron to manufacture the golden calf came from Jethro and that these skills were derived from his Kenite background[13] that allegedly dated back to Tubal-Cain and Cain, the master antediluvian metallurgists.

After the golden calf incident, Israel departed Mount Sinai, in the second year of the Exodus (Num. 10:11–13). They wandered from place to place in the desert of Sinai, between such places as Horeb and Paran, establishing with the newborn the foundations for a disciplined nation of destiny under one God. ("Horeb" is the old name for *Sinai*.[14]) Israel sojourned in the desert one year for each of the forty days they had explored the Promised Land but had been afraid to seize it.[15] The desert area was located south of modern Israel and east of Mount Sinai. After the forty years, Moses declared it was then time to leave Horeb to take hold of their destiny.[16]

The Israelites were instructed to annex the lands of the hill country of the Amorites in Arabah; the mountains in the western foothills, inclusive of Negev to the Mediterranean coast; Canaan to the north; and the land to the east as far as the Euphrates, just as God had promised this land to Abraham over 500 years previously (Deut. 1:6–8). Not all that land was to be expropriated for Israel in this age; however, God's direction was due to Israel's backsliding from their Covenant. Israel fell well short of their Covenant obligations. Israel's failure to drive those various peoples from the land permitted pantheistic religions to pollute subsequent Israelite generations. God promised to drive out the Amorites, the Canaanites, the Hittites, the Philistines, the Perizzites, the Hivites, and the Jebusites (Exod. 34:11). Notably missing from this list were Nephilim nations, along with the Amalekites, whom God segregated for both an extraordinary and extreme form of eradication.

The Israelites did not select the shortest route after their forty-year indoctrination, which was to head due north through Philistia (Palestine). Israel chose, without explanation, the longest route possible. Consider that the Philistines were a powerful, warlike nation that had previously conquered Palestine, establishing it as the Philistines' new home. The Philistines destroyed the Hittite empire in this campaign, and they menaced the Egyptian empire at the same time.[17] Perhaps God and Moses concluded that the Philistines should not be the first nation for Israel to cut their newly formed militaristic teeth on. Certainly, this was the conclusion of God when the Israelites first left Egypt: "When Pharaoh let the people go, God did not lead them on the road through the Philistine country, though that was shorter. God said, 'If they face war, they might change their minds and return to Egypt.' So God led the people around by the desert road toward the Red Sea" (Exod. 13:17). Perhaps God determined that Israel needed to acquire confidence in their military capabilities before entering into the dragon's lair of powerful Nephilim and Philistines.

Gardner notes Moses chose not to travel north from Sinai because of the five great fortresses defending the route, the five city-states of the Philistines.[18] The Philistines had purposely organized into a league of militaristic city-states: Gaza, Gath, Ashod, Ashkelon, and Ekron, and then they had assimilated the Canaanite religions into their own.[19] The Philistines were a militant people who instilled fear into their neighbors. The Israelites chose to travel south of the Land of the Covenant, heading east. They traveled by the area where they had warred with the nefarious Amalekites forty years before.[20]

Not only did the Amalekites live just south, but also they were branded as a people of the east.[21] As for the eastern Amalekites, they lived east of the river Jordan, alongside the Midians, whom they allied themselves with in their generational, genocidal war against the Israelites. But do understand that it was the Amalekites in Sinai who first attacked Israel and not the eastern Amalekites. The Israelites then endeavored to march east, through Edom.[22] This rugged region was known variantly as Seir and The Land of Esau. This, then, pinpointed the Exodus location, just south and east of the land of Israel, in what is now known today as Saudi Arabia.

Moses sent messengers to the king of Edom, asking permission for Edom’s brother to pass safely through Edom, but Edom refused, threatening to march out to war with Israel if they entered Edom.[23] Israel then replied:

> “We will go along the main road, and if we or our livestock drink any of your water, we will pay for it. We only want to pass through on foot—nothing else.” Edom still replied, “You may not pass through,” and marched out to meet Israel in war with a large and powerful army. Since Edom refused to let Israel pass, Israel turned away from them.
>
> —Numbers 20:19–21

They went an alternate way to avoid war with Edom. Israel was not permitted to war at this time with Edom, Ammon, or Moab, for they were all nations of the Abrahamic Covenant.

Israel then set out for Mount Hor, from Kadesh, where Aaron died as punishment for his rebellion against Moses at Meribah.[24] So, too, did Miriam rebel with Aaron at Meribah,[25] and she also died at Kadesh[26] as punishment[27] for her part in the rebellion. Meribah and Kadesh are essentially the same place,[28] the location where God extracted water from the rock. Israel mourned thirty days for Aaron at Mount Hor before soldiering on.[29]

The Canaanite king of Arad in Negev learned Israel was approaching. Without explanation or cause, he marched out against Israel near Mount Hor.[30] Understood that in proper historical context of the blood oath sworn by the Amalekites and Nephilims against Israel, this unprovoked assault comes as no surprise. Arad was a Canaanite city, dating to 2900–3200 B.C.E., now known as Tell Arad.[31] Arad was established in the Negev, in what later became Judah,[32] positioned just seventeen to twenty miles south of Hebron. Moreover, *arad* translated as "fugitive."[33] Could the word refer to fugitive Nephilim who escaped the flood?

Israel utterly defeated Arad, destroying its towns; Israel renamed the place of their victory *Hormah*, meaning "destruction."[34] One wonders about the connection to Mount Hor, the Horites, the Nephilim, and the translation as "destruction." One further wonders, was the name *Hor* a prophetic foreshadowing of what was to happen to all the giants? Certainly, the Israelites did swear to destroy all their cities if God delivered the king of Arad and his army into the hands of the Israelites (Numbers 21:2–4).

From Mount Hor or Hormah, Israel then traversed along the Red/Reed Sea to travel around Edom.[35] From Seir, the Israelites then marched due north. They forged their way towards the land of the Ammonites and Moabites, located around the eastern Dead Sea region, with Ammon being to the north of Moab. This district was also inclusive of the region to the east of the Jordan River but slightly to the west of the eastern Amalekites and Midianites, who lived in the western Mesopotamia region. Babylon and Assyria lay just east of the Midians and Amalekites in the eastern Mesopotamian region. Israel then marched to Oboth and camped in Iye Abarim, in the desert that faced Moab toward the sunrise, and then marched to the desert extending into the Amorite territory. Arnon was the border between Moab and the Amorites.[36] From Arnon, Israel marched onward to the desert of Beer and then to Mattanah, Nahaliel, and Bamoth, to the valley in Moab where the top of Pisgah overlooked the wasteland.[37]

The nations that elected to drive Rephaim from their land were Moab and Ammon. Nations not from the posterity of Abraham did not drive giants from their land. A third nation, Esau/Edom, contained the tribes of Amalek, Eliphaz, and Kenaz. They appear to have forged an alliance with the Horites, along with Esau, which created the Great Amalekite Nation. God reserved them for a specific kind of annihilation because of this alliance and because of later atrocities that the Amalekites would levy against Israel, even though one must remember not all Esau forged with the Horites; some remained free from Nephilim contamination. The balance of Esau, who drove out the Horites, remained independent of the Horites, resulting in the specific, divine judgment being reserved specifically for the Amalekite/Horite nation, just as the Table of Nations testifies to.

This is important only from the perspective that Israel did not make war with any of those three nations of Abraham, which were free from Nephilim (Esau, Ammon, and Moab), during their conquest of the Promised Land. This demonstrated a conspicuous, generational war with Nephilim by God’s chosen people. Again, this generational and genocidal war had a direct parallel with the marked generational war cited in Exodus, which the Israelites waged against the Amalekites.[38]

God then instructed the Israelites to pass by the regions of Moab at Ar, on their way to the land of the Amorites. Deuteronomy 2:18 records God’s instruction not to harass the Ammonites nor provoke them in any way to incite them war, so Israel passed by without any confrontations. Both nations were free from the Nephilim scourge by the time of the conquest. Israel also passed by Esau, save the land of Amalek. Israel was commanded to eradicate the Nephilim from the balance of the Land of the Covenant as part of their misunderstood Covenant obligations sworn upon the mountain, just as Edom, Moab, and Ammon had done. Secular history unaccountably dismisses the actions of Edom, Moab, and Ammon, while chastising Israel’s actions.

CHAPTER 32

THE NEPHILIM WARS

Hear O Israel, You are now about to cross the Jordan to go in and dispossess nations greater and stronger than you, with large cities that have walls up to the sky. The people are strong and tall—Anakites! You know about them and have heard it said, "Who can stand up against the Anakites?"

—Deuteronomy 9:1–2

The Amorites occupied land both east and west of the Jordan River, between modern northern Saudi Arabia in the south and into modern southern Syria to the north. At the time of the Exodus, the Amorites illegally held much of the Land of the Covenant. Once Israel had turned northward, they marched adroitly into the land of powerful Amorites, east of the Jordan River.

We have already read that Moses asked Sihon for peaceful passage through the Amorite land en route to the Covenant Land (Num. 21:21–23; Deut. 2:26–30). But Sihon refused the Israelites passage and chose war. I do not conclude this Nephilim-led nation coincidentally stood as a barrier to Israel entering into the Promised Land. Sihon and Og strategically positioned their kingdoms, protecting the east entrance to the Promised Land, with powerful fortresses reflecting the generational war waged between the demonically sponsored Nephilim and the people of God's Covenant.

Once the Israelites crossed the Arnon Gorge in Moab, they marched straight into Sihon (Deut. 2:24). King Sihon marched against Israel in the desert at Jahaz; Israel put Sihon and his army to the sword and annexed Sihon's territory from Arnon to Jabbok, but only as far as the border of the Ammonites (Num. 21:23–24; Deut. 2:32–36) to the north. Israel captured all the Amorite cities of Sihon, including Heshbon, the city of Sihon that Sihon had captured away from the Moabites (Num. 25–26; Deut. 2:37). The Israelites then pivoted to confront Og along the road to Bashan. They engaged at Edrei, where the Israelites routed and slaughtered Og's (giant) sons and Og's army, taking possession of Og's lands (Num. 21:32–35; Deut. 3:1–7).

These victories east of the Jordan captured territories from the Gorge of Arnon (Sihon) and as far as Mount Hermon (Og), including Bashan (Deut. 3:8–11). These mind-boggling victories set the stage for the campaign across the Jordan: "This very day I will begin to put the terror and fear of you on all the nations under heaven. They will fear reports of you and will tremble and be in anguish because of you" (Deut. 2:25).

This mortal grip of fear among the Amorite, Canaanite, and Philistine nations came to pass, as witnessed by a group of Hivites, who tried to make peace with Joshua and the Israelites:

> They answered: "Your servants have come from a very distant country because of the fame of the Lord your God. For we have heard reports of him: all that he did in Egypt, and all that he did to the two kings of the Amorites east of the Jordan—Sihon king of Heshbon, and Og king of Bashan, who reigned in Ashteroth."
>
> —Joshua 9:9–10

Israel immediately marched to the plains of Moab, where they camped alongside the Jordan River, directly across from the mighty city of Jericho (Num. 22:1). Surprisingly, then, Moses marched east against the Midianites as his last important act before dying, defeating and taking revenge on the Midianites for their past sins. The Midianites continuously raided and harassed Israel, as part of their evil alliance with the Amalekites, during the forty years Israel spent in the desert wilderness (Num. 31:1–13).

During this battle with the Midianites, Moses put five Midian kings to the sword: Evi, Rekem, Zur, Hur, and Reba (Josh. 13:21–22; Num. 31:8).

Israel slaughtered all the Midianite men, captured all the women and children, and seized all the Midianite herds, flocks, and goods as plunder (Num. 31:9–15). Judgment against the Midianites was swift, harsh, and just, due to the last great sin committed by the Midianites. Though they were not a Nephilim nation, under the five kings later executed, the misguided Midianites had willfully allied themselves with King Sihon against Israel. (Josh. 13:21–22).

Israel then reassembled at their camp on the plains of Moab, directly across from Jericho.[1] From there, Joshua led the Israelites across the Jordan River,[2] where they headed due west and directly into the Land of the Covenant. They camped at Gilgal, on the eastern border of Jericho.[3] All the Amorite kings west of the Jordan, who by then were familiar with the astounding stories depicting Israel's stunning victories over the Egyptians, Amalekites, Midians, the King of Arad, and of course, the mighty Amorite kings of Og and Sihon east of the Jordan, now heard how God had dried up the Jordan River, enabling all Israel to cross.[4] Amorite hearts began to melt away with fear; they no longer had the steely courage to face the Israelites (Josh. 5:1).

The Amorite/Canaanite nations west of the Jordan resided in the hill country to the north and just to the south of the point where Israel crossed the Jordan River. Amorites strategically controlled all the essential mountain roads branching from the spine that ran down the center of the mountain range. This then positioned the Amorites, who lived west of the Jordan in Samaria (Ephraim), known today as Syria, and in northern Judah. The other descending sons/nations of Canaan, as well as the Hittites, were living in the northern and northwestern regions, towards the Mediterranean, while the Girgashites and the Perziites resided to the south and to the east, which was still part of the hill country. The Philistines occupied the area to the south and to the west, towards the Mediterranean, in what is known to today as Gaza. The Jebusites occupied central Judah and, more specifically, the region surrounding modern-day Jerusalem. Jebusites were, in fact, another sect of Canaanites, as were many of the peoples of the Covenant Land,[5] and just as the Phoenicians were also Canaanites.

Ancient Canaanite society was very much like ancient Greek civilization and was comprised of city-states, whose principal cities were Tyre, Simyra, Byblos, Jerusalem, Sidon, and Akko, among others. Canaanites' favored deities were Baal and Astarte/Ashtar and Molech, the infamous cult of the bull. They worshipped a trinity of gods known as El the father, Astarte the mother, and Baal the son, also identified as Adon/Adonai/Adonis. When the Greek satirist Lucian enigmatically referred to Adonis, he was referring to *Adon*, meaning "Baal."[6] Baal was known variantly as the Great Storm God of the Sea; he was rewarded with kingship for his great victory over the sea monster Tiamet by the supreme creator, El.[7]

El was the mightiest of the three gods and was represented by the sun and its light. El was exceedingly fond of impregnating human females. This was the impious god of Middle Eastern theology, who appointed a god to each of the nations, analogous to Deuteronomy 32: Chemosh to Moab, Milkom to Ammon, Yahweh to Israel, as well-known examples.[8] El was a bloody tyrant in legend; he dethroned his father, Uranus; murdered his favorite son; and decapitated his daughter. El was a lustful and morbid character[9] and part of the celestial mafia of *watchers*.

Baal, son of El, was not immortal,[10] just as some of the Nephilim were not immortal. By the fourteenth century B.C.E., Baal had superseded El as the deity of choice in Canaan, infiltrating and influencing Israel until the sixth century.[11] Two accompanying beliefs stand out: First, all the Canaanite kings considered themselves to be living gods, descending from the demigod offspring (Nephilim) of El and perhaps Baal, as witnessed to by the famous Phoenician King Hiram, who partnered with Solomon to build the temple in Jerusalem. Second, Phoenician tomb inscriptions describe a lineage of kings who represented themselves as the earthly representatives of gods (Nephilim).[12] These two beliefs offer strong evidence that Nephilim were the kings of all the Canaanite nations, while the Amorites were an intermeshed, Nephilim-hybrid nation.

First on the list of nations to be vanquished were the indistinguishable Anakite and Amorite nations, who infested the hill country. The first Amorite city to be conquered was Jericho, while Ai was the next city. Ai was key to protecting Joshua's base camp at Gigal and was slaughtered in a similar manner to Jericho. Joshua and his army then vanquished the five southern Amorite, Jebusite, and Anakite kings and cities, which included Adoni-Zedek of Jerusalem, Hoham of Hebron, Piram of Jarmuth, Japhia of Lachish, and Debir of Eglon.[13]

On the day he slew the five southern Amorite kings, Joshua took the city of Makkedah and slew the king of Makkedah, capturing the city in the same manner as Jericho. From there, Joshua turned his attention to Libnah, slaying the king of Libnah, as well destroying the city of Libnah in the same manner as Jericho. Joshua then captured the city of Lachish and put Lachish to the sword, even though Joshua had already defeated King Japhia of Lachish and his army, along with the other five Amorite kings. Meanwhile, King Horam of Gezer marched to Lachish in support but was also defeated by Joshua. Joshua then took the cities of Hebron, Eglon, Debir, and all the Anakite region of Negev, leaving no survivors.[14] Deuteronomy confirms these were all indeed Amorite kings who lived in the hill country of Horeb; they were all infested with Anakites.[15]

Once the south had been brought under Israeli domination, Joshua returned to base camp at Gilgal (Josh. 10:43). When word reached the other peoples of the Promised Land concerning the destruction administered in the south, panic took hold. The northern Amorite king, Jabin of Hazor, gripped by fear and foreboding, sent word to kings Jobab, Shimron, and Acshaph, as well as to the northern kings of the mountains. He then sent word to the kings of Arabah in the western foothills. Included were the Canaanites in the east and the west, the Hittites, Perizzites, and the Jebusites in the hill country, and the Hivvites of Mizpah. This panic-stricken alliance of kings banded together against Joshua with a gigantic army (Josh. 11:1–4). Joshua challenged this astonishing alliance of Anakite kings from many peoples and their large armies at the waters of Merom, where Joshua and the Israelites soundly whipped them. The battle at Merom is perhaps the most sensational military victory ever recorded; the odds were simply overwhelming.

The list of kings conquered by Joshua and the Israelites in the conquest was staggering: the king of Bashan (Og); king of Heshbon (Sihon); and the kings of Jericho, Ai, Jerusalem, Hebron, Jarmuth, Lachish, Eglon, Gezer, Debir, Geder, Hormah, Arad, Libnah, Adullam, Makkedah, Bethel, Tappuah, Hepher, Aphek, Lasharon, Madon, Hazor, Shimeron Meron, Acshaph, Taanach, Megido, Jokneam, Naphoth Dor, Gigal, and Tirzah. In all, Joshua defeated thirty-one (Nephilim) kings.[16] And let us not forget the victories Joshua and Moses had accumulated over the king of Negev, the five kings of Midia, and of course, the Amalekites and the Egyptians forty years previously.

Once Israel had won the battle of Merom, Joshua turned his attention to the remaining Anakite refugees in the hill country, which included Hebron (*Kiriath Arba*), Debir, and Anab, as well as the hill country of northern Israel, leaving no Anakites living in Israelite territory. One wonders whether or not the final remnant of Anakites were later slaughtered by the tribe of Ephraim and not by Joshua. I mention this because the tribe of Ephraim objected that its allotment of land in the hill country of northern Israel was too small and also was the land of Perizites and Rephaites, suggesting Rephaites still remained. In fact, Ephraim further objected to the fact that Canaanites who lived there were a formative military force that possessed iron chariots. Joshua countered that the tribe of Ephraim was more than numerous enough and powerful enough to wrest control of the allotted land (Josh. 11:21; 17:14–18).

At that point, Caleb, the mysterious Kenizzite, approached Joshua and demanded from Joshua what God had promised to Caleb, the land of Hebron/Kiriath Arba, the capitol of the Anakite kingdoms (Josh. 14:6–9). Because of his devotion to God, Joshua blessed Caleb, granting him and his descendants the lands of Hebron as part of Judah's allotment (Josh. 14:13–15).

Joshua did not conquer the Philistines and Geshurites in control of the land from the Shihor River on the east of Egypt to Ekron in the north; the Canaanites in the land of Arah to Aphek; the Amorites and Gebalites in the land of Lebanon to the east, from Baal Gad below Mount Hermon to Lebo Hamath; or the Sidonians in the mountain districts of Lebanon to Misrephoth Maim.[17] The Philistines harassed the Israelites throughout the age of the judges and until the time of King David. Even though the Philistines held the upper hand over Israel during that period, which included an iron embargo,[18] the Philistines never governed over Israelite land.

CHAPTER 33

THE HOLY COVENANT

However, If you do not obey the Lord your God and do not carefully follow all his commands and decrees I am giving you today, all these curses will come upon you and overtake you. You will be cursed in the city and cursed in the country…. The Lord will bring a nation against you from far away, from the ends of the earth…. A fierce looking nation without respect for the old or pity for the young…. You who were as numerous as the stars in the sky will be left but few in number…. Then the Lord will scatter you among all nations, from one end to the other.

—Deuteronomy 28:15–64

How did Israel’s failure to complete the expulsion of all foreign peoples from the Covenant Land, and the complete eradication of the Nephilim, come back to haunt Israel in the decades that followed? Why were there curses stemming from their not fulfilling their Covenant obligations?[1]

Frankly, Israel did not fulfill the Covenant obligations sworn atop the mountain to the exact letter of the instructions rendered by God. Although Joshua and the Israelites vanquished all but the land of the Philistines and parts of modern-day Lebanon, Israel did not totally annihilate or completely drive out all the former guardians of the Promised Land.[2] Remnants of the Amorites survived, remembered as the Gibeonites.[3] Gibeonites were Hivites/ giants conscripted as woodcutters and water carriers for Israel by Joshua, after Israel had been deceived into a treaty with Gibeonites not to destroy them, as the Gibeonites said they did not live in the Covenant Land.[4] Gibeonites survived in the Covenant Land well past the time of David because of this treaty, as a portion separate to Israel, within Israel. Gibeonites were clearly identified as surviving Amorites, spared in this treaty from the Exodus, which Saul later violated in his zeal, endeavoring to annihilate the Gibeonites, which cost Saul seven of his sons as punishment.[5]

Israel was dictated a very clear and comprehensive set of instructions, bound into the Holy Covenant through Moses, regarding the conquest. Should Israel have completely fulfilled their obligations to the Covenant, they would have received the full part of the blessings of the Covenant that included full possession of all the lands promised to Abraham, along with unheard-of prosperity.[6] But because Israel did not completely fulfill their Covenant obligations, they were subject to the curses from the Covenant. Israel afforded mercy to the nations they vanquished, permitting vestiges to live among them and share in the Covenant Land.

One must consider that Israel was created and then set aside from all other nations of the world. Israel was created for a specific destiny, to save humankind; held to a significantly higher criterion; and then sentenced to horrific punishments when they failed. Israel was bound into a Holy Covenant with God that demanded tough and specific requirements:

> You yourselves have seen what I did to Egypt, and how I carried you on eagles' wings and brought you to myself. Now if you obey me fully and keep my covenant, then out of all the nations you will be my treasured possession. Although the whole earth is mine, you will be for me a kingdom of priests and a holy nation.
>
> —Exodus 19:4–6

The Qur'an recorded the Holy Covenant this way: "Remember when We took your pledge, and made a mountain tower high above you, and said, 'Hold fast to what we have given you and bear its content in mind, so that you may be conscious of God.' Even after that you turned away. Had it not been for God’s favor and mercy on you, you certainly would have been lost.”[7] “Moses said to his people, ‘My people, God’s blessing on you: how He raised prophets among you and appointed kings for you and gave you what he had not given to any other people. My people go into the holy land which God has ordained for you—do not turn back or you will be the losers.’”[8] One must always look through this lens when judging events from the conquest and in the tragic history of Israel throughout the ages.

Covenant curses were imbedded in the contagion that arose from the infected nations that formerly occupied the land of Israel. Adulterated practices and traditions were rooted in pantheistic and Nephilim philosophies that would, given the opportunity, contaminate the monotheistic Covenant Israel had just entered into. Because of those influences, Israel backslid into apostasy through the eventual acceptance of those polytheistic religions into their own culture, just as the Old Testament and the Essenes attest to. The bull cult plagued Israel throughout the age of the judges and the age of the monarchy. Israel’s ultimate power, obtained through the Holy Covenant, was eroded, first spiritually, and then by its physical weakening and vulnerability. Israel became vulnerable and weak, suffering several defeats at the hands of their enemies in subsequent generations.

The Qur’an recorded Israel’s rebellious behavior this way: “When they became steadfast and believed firmly in Our messages, We raised leaders among them, guiding them according to Our command.”[9] Through many spiritual revivals of the Covenant, Israel regained the upper hand over their enemies. The ups and the downs of the Israeli kingdom’s success, throughout its duration, were directly proportionate to the levels of apostasy and Covenant revival that Israel was going through at that time.

Eventually, no amount of Covenant renewal could save Israel from the curses of the Covenant. For every renewal, there was always another equal or greater backslide into apostasy. Finally, Israel was utterly destroyed in war by the Assyrians, who completely overran the northern kingdom. They replaced the Israelites in the land, enslaved the remnant of Israel into bondage in Assyria, and then sold Israel into slavery around the world, where they were dispersed and lost to history.[10] Israel will not be fully reunited again until the end of this age for the tribes of from the northern kingdom are still lost within the nations of the world they were scattered to. Soon the lost tribes awaken to remember who they are so that they may be led back to the Promised Land by their Messiah. The Second Exodus and the mystery to lost tribes is resolved in the end time and is the subject of my next book.[11] Judah (the southern kingdom) suffered the same fate some one hundred years later, at the hands of the Babylonians;[12] although, it was the Romans who dispersed Judah to the four corners of the globe. Covenant violations to the pledge made to God and witnessed by the holy angels on the mountain are cited as the root causes for Israel's and Judah's destruction.[13] Additional violations recorded in the Qur'an included their nonbelief, as well as rejecting Jesus as their Messiah, killing and rejecting the messages of prophets, and breaking the Law.[14]

One wonders, then, why the Israelites and Joshua never attacked the Philistines, after defeating all the Canaanite nations of Nephilim and the Anakites of the hill country. This is a mystery. Throughout the 400-year epoch of the judges, the Philistines were a continual thorn in the side of Israel, at every opportunity. And because residue of the Nephilim, or *Avvites* as the Philistines called them, dwelled among the Philistines, one can deduce that it was the Nephilim who incited the Philistines into continual, generational warfare with the Israelites. Nephilim were the root for Philistine disdain from the conquest forward, just as Nephilim had persecuted God's people from the beginning.

Only the peoples descending from Abraham sought to eradicate the giants from their land, as though there was a generational war being waged with the Nephilim by God and His chosen people, just as God declared with the Amalekites. The eradication of Nephilim was further bound into the Holy Covenant of Israel as part of Israel's obligations. The Nephilim appear to have responded in kind. This suggested the generational war against the Nephilim was not a coincidence. Israel was merely fulfilling the decree issued in the times of Noah, when the flood was brought forth to rid the earth of the Nephilim infestation. Israel was commissioned by God to be His new sword of justice and wrath, completing the antediluvian edict to eradicate the giants, even though the edict was not completed until the time of David and the monarchy.

Tracing Israel's footsteps through the Exodus, conquest, and the Holy Covenant is the only way to determine the defining, underlying context. There is a formative, ongoing spiritual battle for earthly domination, fought between the people descended from giants and dark angels against the people descended from Abraham, Noah, Seth, and Adam. The Israelites conquest was more than the violent, superficial context most secular cynics claim it to be. The Israelites were commissioned to cleanse the Covenant Land from the dreaded Nephilim and to cleanse the land from the people that the Nephilim had adulterated. Meanwhile, the Nephilim had sworn their own blood covenant to prevent the nation of destiny from completing its divine commission to save humankind, through defending the Covenant Land to their death. Nephilim patiently dwelled there for generations, all the time waiting in ambush for the children of hope. The facts make this undeniable.

Many view the viciousness of the conquest with utter horror, wondering how a good and kind God could commission such violence and brutality, but remember that God did not commission the Israelites to dispense the same sort of violence against the rest of the nations of the world. God only commissioned Israel, as His holy nation of priests bound in a Holy Covenant with God, to cleanse the Holy Land of the Covenant from people defiled by the Nephilim, people who were terminally diseased, just as the antediluvian people were, who equally needed to be eradicated by the deluge. And because Israel did not totally fulfill their Covenant obligations, those infected people who were not totally eradicated came back to haunt Israel. They lured Israel into apostasy through their adulterated religions and through the Nephilim, resulting in the eventual destruction of Israel by the Assyrians in 721 B.C.E. and of Judah by the Babylonians in 587 B.C.E.

God was neither brutal nor vicious when He commissioned Israel to cleanse the Covenant Land of the people who had previously, knowingly, and illegally possessed it. God was merely enacting the only long-term solution for the good of the future Israelites, as well as for the good of the future world, against people so thoroughly corrupted they could never have been rehabilitated or a positive influence on humankind.

Consider God’s prophecy to Abraham concerning the Amorites: “In the fourth generation your descendants will come back here, for the sin of the Amorites has not yet reached its full measure.”[15] One should also contemplate the sins the Amalekites rained upon the Israelites, which have been listed in this and other chapters, before unwisely and fool-heartedly judging the Judge. Because Israel did not fulfill their Covenant obligations, the world was not provided with the opportunity to witness what could have been under the full blessing of the Covenant and of God’s kindness. We will now have to suffer the hell that is surely coming, patiently enduring for Jesus to return to introduce the millennium.

It was no coincidence that it was David who completed Israel’s commission, for it was through David that God established his Royal Family and kingship on earth, inclusive of its eternal kingdom, through which the Messiah would enter. It is the Messiah, Jesus, from the bloodline of David, who will ultimately defeat Satan and his cohorts, saving humankind from the great human experiment that we are currently subject to. It is the Messiah who will judge the fallen angels, condemning them to their destiny of eternal fire on the great day of judgment.[16]

CHAPTER 34

JERICHO

See, I have delivered Jericho into your hands, along with its king and its fighting men. March around the city once with all the armed men. Do this for six days. Have seven priests carry trumpets of rams' horns in front of the ark. On the seventh day, march around the city seven times, with the priests blowing the trumpets. When you hear them sound a long blast on the trumpets, have all the people give a loud shout; then the wall of the city will collapse and the people will go up, every man straight in.

—Joshua 6:2–5

The Amorites heard the rumors of the Egyptian debacle from the Amalekites, as well as the Amalekite humiliation at the hands of the Israelites. The Amorites of Jericho were all too familiar with the annihilation levied against their Amorite brethren led by Sihon and Og east of the Jordan River. This explains why the fear-gripped Amorites cowered within the ancient and mighty walls of Jericho, clinging to the hope that those tall and mighty walls would save them.

But why did Israel bring down the walls of Jericho through inexplicably odd rituals and ceremony? What is the unexplained and underlying meaning of Jericho’s destruction?

Jericho was an extraordinarily famous city of antiquity, dating as far back as 11,000 years, according to most archaeologists. Some believe Jericho to be the oldest city in the world.[1] Neither the way in which the city was vanquished, nor that Jericho was the first city to be vanquished in the Covenant Land, nor its great age and symbolism are coincidental. The Bible simply does not function in this manner. Remember, too, all the other southern Amorite city-states were utterly destroyed in a similar manner to Jericho. One wonders if the same rituals of destruction, with trumpets, were also performed at the other southern Amorite city-states.

The Israelites did not just assault this legendary city of old, with its mythical walls of extraordinary height and strength. No, the Israelites, led by Joshua and the Ark of the Covenant, were instructed to march around that great, fortified city of old with all of their armed personnel once a day for six consecutive days, with only seven priests permitted to blow loudly on their trumpets. The army of Israel was instructed not to say a word during this weeklong drama.

The ritual of the seven trumpets was an ancient, symbolic gesture of destruction, symbolizing the renewal of all things.[2] The conquest, then, represented the start to the renewal of the Promised Land bequeathed in Deuteronomy. Jericho was considered the first fruits of the Covenant Land, offered to God in a holy ritual, as part of the Holy Covenant with Israel.

The battle of Jericho commenced during the Feasts and Sabbaths of Passover and the Feasts and Sabbaths of Unleavened Bread. In fact, the ritual of the trumpets began on the first day of Passover, while Passover was celebrated just before the attack.[3] If Jericho was not selected for special significance and religious meaning, then why was the peculiar preparatory, religious, and ritualistic ceremony performed throughout the seven-day Passover and Unleavened Bread Feast to the Lord? Why not wait until after the Holy Feast of God? What was the rush in or importance of waging war during the Holy Festival? Remember, 1,500 years later, another holy spectacle took place on the day after Passover and the start to the Feast of

Unleavened Bread; it was the holy first offering of the first fruits of salvation, the crucifixion of Christ.

Note, too, that on Preparation Day of this week-long holy festival, all leavened bread and all yeast were removed from every home and dwelling of the Israelites.[4] The puffing action of the yeast on the bread was symbolic of pride, haughtiness, and sin.[5] Pride symbolically represented Nephilim as the cause of the violence and corruption of the antediluvian epoch. All this symbolism cannot be a simple coincidence, for the Bible does not work through coincidences.

The Amorite ploy of cowering within the mighty walls of Jericho did not work, for Jericho had been set aside for a special sacrifice to the Lord. Jericho was ordained to be delivered into the hands of the Israelites, providing the Israelites followed God's instructions to the letter. On the seventh day, the last day of the week of Passover and Unleavened Bread, the armed forces of Israel repeated the same ritual as they had done for the previous six days. On this day, they added blowing the trumpets seven times to the ritual of marching around the city. The people of Israel all shouted in symphony with the trumpets, and the walls of Jericho came tumbling down.[6] The Israelite army swarmed into the legendary city, slaughtering all the bewildered and stunned occupants, save Rahab the prostitute and her family, for they had lent assistance to the Israeli reconnaissance spies.[7] The entire city was leveled, burnt, and completely destroyed, save the house of Rahab. All the treasure was earmarked for the treasury of the Lord's house. Finally, Joshua pronounced a curse on any who would attempt to rebuild the legendary city in the future.[8] Jericho was separated for a specific kind of destruction, as an example to the world for all generations to follow.

This epic, biblical narrative is strange indeed. Why was so much ritual and mystery included in Jericho's demise? I believe God wished to make a forceful statement to the other peoples who inhabited the Promised Land that Israel was nourished and supported by the omnipotent, one true God of the universe. The Bible described cities of the land with walls up to the sky.[9] No doubt, Jericho was set aside specifically as an example for all of what was to befall all Nephilim-infested cities of the Promised Land.

Jericho's destruction, in addition to the miracle at the Jordan River, combined with the slaughter of Og's and Sihon's armies, plus the rumors the nations would have heard about what had befallen the Egyptians, were all designed to reap complete and utter terror throughout the ranks of the other nations infested with Nephilim. The Exodus miracles were designed as a warning for other nations to heed, nations that, until then, had remained untouched by the wrath of God. But those adulterated nations ignored the warnings.

Additionally, we must consider the great age of this legendary city. Archaeologists believe Jericho's foundations were laid around 8300 B.C.E. During its first thousand years of existence, three enormous walls, stretching sixteen feet high, were constructed that were further enhanced by a deep ditch gouged out of hard bedrock, which encircled the great walls.[10] Why were such defenses erected? From whom were they safeguarding themselves? Remember, too, that Cain built the cities of Enoch and sixty other cities, all fortified with walls for war. One also recalls the descriptions of Uruk, in Sumerian mythology, being a mighty city of the antediluvian epoch and the postdiluvian epoch. Could Jericho, Uruk, and, Enoch be related?

Of course, these events predate the flood. There is archaeological evidence, according to Collins, to suggest Jericho indeed traded with a culture known as the *watchers* of Lake Van.[11] Remember, Sumerians, Babylonians, and Akkadians believed all the antediluvian cities were originally constructed by the gods, before the advent of the human Black Heads and the Nephilim. Jericho was a city linking antediluvian times with postdiluvian times. It was quite possible that Jericho was celebrated as a defiant shrine to the violent antediluvian age plagued by Nephilim and *watchers*.

Certainly, Jericho's walls represented the antediluvian wars, just as walls were an antediluvian idiom for the surface of the earth, according to Alford. And in these terms, Jericho likely represented the antediluvian earth.[12]

Now, the seven trumpets employed to destroy Jericho and its mighty walls also announced the destruction of Jericho and renewal of the covenant land of Israel. Jericho's destruction by Joshua represented figuratively the destruction of the antediluvian world by the flood, along with the earth's renewal through Noah and his family. Also, Jericho's destruction represented the official start to the eradication of the surviving antediluvian contagion. The settlement of the Israelites into the Covenant Land represented the renewal of the land.

In addition to all this, Joshua instructed all but Rahab's family were to be slaughtered, including all animals; all plunder, according to Josephus, was to be collected and offered as a sacred offering to the Lord as part of the First Fruits of the Covenant Land offered unto God as the first city conquered.[13] All inhabitants were put to death, while the complete city, including the corpses, was burnt,[14] again consistent with a burnt offering to the Lord. The Feast of First Fruits in ancient Israel always began the first day following the first Sabbath, when the harvest was just about to become ready.[15] In this case, it was the Sabbath of Preparation Day for the Feast of Unleavened Bread.

The Feast of First Fruits included the sacrifice of a lamb in a burnt offering, together with the first fruits of the grain and grapes, before Israel could partake in the harvest,[16] just as Jesus later would be the First Fruit of the salvation harvest. It is a celebration of the first fruits of the bounty that will come from the harvest. So, too, in prophetic allegory are a harvest and the Feast of Weeks of the Harvest[17] figurative for a great slaughter, as in the end-time harvest of Revelation[18] and as defined in Matthew.[19]

The figurative Jericho harvest was the first fruits for the sacrifice dedicated to God, foreshadowing the great harvest/slaughter which was to follow in the conquest of the Promised Land of the Covenant. And the Jericho destruction took place on the first Sabbath before the allegorical harvest. The Feast of Weeks of the Harvest then followed fifty days after the Feast of First Fruits, after the harvest, just as the Pentecost does.[20] Similarly, the saints of Revelation are considered the first fruits for the end-time holocaust or harvest.[21] Jericho was, in this allegory, the first fruits to the harvest of the Promised Land of the Covenant, offered in the religious burnt offering and ceremony of the feasts of Israel, complete with trumpets.

Similarly, the Feast of Trumpets and the Feast of Booths (also called Tabernacles) have always been considered by many scholars as representing the renewal of creation.[22] It was the shofar, the ram's horn, which was utilized in the Feast of Trumpets.[23] The shofar was also blown when Israel went to war[24] and when announcing a solemn assembly. The shofar is known metaphorically for its trumpeting during the future, second coming of Jesus and at the solemn assembly of the end-time judgment. The long, flared trumpets were used during sacrifices and also in the announcements of the beginnings and endings of Sabbaths.[25] Likely, then, both kinds of trumpets were used at Jericho.

In latter times, trumpets were blown throughout the day in Jerusalem, during the festivals, but never outside the walls of Jerusalem.[26] One then wonders about the connection to Jericho, where the trumpets were blown outside the walls. Were the Israelites afraid of bringing down the walls of Jerusalem?

Rabbis believe the first day of Trumpets is the allegorical day of prophecy, when God will judge all men as they pass before him.[27] Jericho was set aside for an extraordinary ritual and mystical destruction in honor of the one true God and as a sign to the infected peoples corrupted with Nephilim. God destroyed the Nephilim grip on humankind in antediluvian times, and He was now prepared to do so once more. And there was nothing that the Nephilim, their false gods, or the peoples of that time could do to prevent it.

Enigmatic details in the Bible are not there for redundancy, nor are they there for mere effect. In this case, they describe complete and utter annihilation. The symbolic manner of this destruction rendered the power of the gods of the pantheon silent and conspicuous by their absence. When the chips were down, the so-called gods of the pantheon were all subservient to the one true God of the universe.

CHAPTER 35

CURSE OF THE AMALEKITES

“Edom will be conquered, Seir, his enemy will be conquered, but Israel will grow strong….” Then Balaam saw Amalek and uttered this oracle: “Amalek was the first among nations, but he will come to ruin at last.”

—Numbers 24:18–20

What happened to the mysterious Amalekites, who did not imprint upon the historical records? The Amalekites were not included in the lists of the nations waylaid by the Israelites in the conquest of the Covenant Land.

We must once again return to the time of the Exodus. This was a time when Israel was not yet forged into a nation and not yet bound together with the glue of monotheism, the discipline of their cause, or the faith of the prophetic nature that was to be their being. They were a spiritually weak and vulnerable nation that had been fed on Egyptian pantheism. They were fearful of the many militaristic and powerful nations led by their gods of war, nations that dominated the Middle East of that epoch. It was in this very vulnerable period that the Israelites first encountered the Amalekites.

The cowardly Amalekites attacked Israel without just cause or proper notice, with all the fury and might they could muster.[1] The Israelites were completely unprepared for such an event. They were in no way a military match for the militant and vitriolic Amalekites. Israel was incapable of winning this confrontation through human endeavors. This was a mismatch of gigantic human proportions, ripe for a slaughter. However, God was with Israel that day, and the day was won for Israel.

As long as Moses kept his hands in the air, the Israelites prevailed, but when Moses tired and his arms sank, the Amalekites prevailed. The battle wore on from sunup to sundown, ebbing and flowing, back and forth, with the momentum based on the height of Moses' outstretched arms. By the end of the day, Moses, with the support of Aaron and Hur, kept his arms raised long enough for the Israelites to prevail (Exod. 7:8–15).

But why did the Amalekites feel compelled to attack such a weak and vulnerable nation? If the Amalekites were a pure branch of Abraham's seed through Esau, they had nothing to fear from the Israelites, just as the Moabites, Ammonites, and the balance of the Edomites had nothing to fear. If the Amalekites were not a Nephilim nation, Israel would not have attacked them, plain and simple.

The Amalekites were viewed as the most violent and warlike people of that age. According to Josephus, Amalekites were the most warlike nation of that region. They were aggressive and obsessed with stirring up rumors and suspicions among the other nations of that region regarding Israel. Amalekites spread vicious rumors that Israel intended to bring all other nations of that region to destruction, just as they had done to the Egyptians.[2] Amalekites successfully persuaded their neighbors to war against Israel before Israel had gained the opportunity to establish themselves and gather their strength, to prevent Israel from ever becoming a formidable opponent. All this occurred at a time before any of the other nations knew of Israel's intent to annex the lands of the Covenant.

From the beginning, the Amalekites aligned themselves as mortal enemies of the Israelites and tried to influence many other nations to join their side. Does this not seem strange? How did it come to pass that such a great power, possibly the greatest military power of that time, next to Egypt and the Philistines, was so fearful of a rag-tag group of slaves? One can only answer such hateful commitment to war with the Israelites in one of two ways.

The first answer concerns the rumors concerning the Egyptians that must have been circulating through the known world at that time. Surely the other nations must have heard fearful things concerning the breathtaking events that had overwhelmed the Egyptians. The people of the Middle East must have wondered about the accuracy and authenticity of such tales. But in the end, I find it difficult to accept that these various people groups truly believed such miraculous and incredible events had actually taken place. It would have been much easier to accept that the Egyptians simply mishandled the slaves and lost ownership of the Israelites through entropy and incompetence. And as for the rumors of great miracles and disasters that had befallen the Egyptians, those were just tales of cover-up that were set in place by the embarrassed Egyptians to explain how the powerful Egyptians could have been defeated by a group of slaves.

I do not believe, however, that the nations totally dismissed the rumors. Surely it was food for thought that weighed heavily on their fears. But if the fears weighed so heavily on their minds that the Israelite slaves would invoke a similar plague of disasters upon their nations as they had done with Egypt, surely those nations would not have allied themselves against the Israelites. Surely those nations would have rushed to befriend the Israelites, accommodating the Israelites with whatever they could, in an attempt to prevent such disasters. They certainly would not have rushed headlong against a nation they believed so powerful in sorcery. Still, something was brewing underneath all this, for why else would Hebrew legends and Scripture have recorded Amalek swearing an oath to be the enemy of Israel?[3]

No, there must have been something else, a second option for what was inspiring the Amalekites and other nations to war with Israel. Only the Nephilim and their procreators, the angels of rebellion, including demons, could have deceived and inspired so many people to challenge God and his people in the face of utter destruction. Those rebellious nations must have glowed with confidence under the false protection of their false gods and Nephilim warriors, who offered nothing other than deluded, false hope.

The nations influenced by Nephilim did, in fact, unite under one banner in war against the Israelites; whereas the nations descending from Abraham, who exterminated the Nephilim from their territories, save Amalek, did not wage war with Israel. And yet, the nation most influenced by the aboriginal Nephilim, the Amalekites, did not engage Israel in war once Israel was completely prepared for war, at the time of the conquest, even though they were the most instrumental nation in stirring the other nations to conspire to war against the Israelites. This was not and could not have been a coincidence.

Nor was it a coincidence that the Amalekites first attacked the Israelites when they were the most vulnerable, at the beginning of the Exodus. The spineless Amalekites knew that the best opportunity to stop the nation of destiny was in the beginning, before the Israelites developed the discipline and the skills of war. The Amalekites refused to support the alliance forty years later, after their cowardly ambush against Israel; the Amalekites were only enticed to war with Israel when they could catch Israel off balance or by surprise. Unprovoked and unexpected ambushes against Israel were common behaviors in the Amalekite relationship of hate towards Israel in the many generations that followed.

The Amalekites, from the beginning, swore a blood covenant to eradicate Israel from the face of the earth, to be remembered no more, that did not die throughout any of the subsequent generations. One can surmise that all the Nephilim-dominated nations took a similar vow, for there were far too many nations that banded together against Israel to assume this was not the case. Each of those nations was an enemy to the others, until Israel united them in common cause.

In this same line of thinking, and according to Ginsberg, Esau, the patriarch of Amalek, was born evil and lost his birthright from Abraham to Jacob, even though Esau was the firstborn of Isaac. Because of this, Esau's last wish on his deathbed, according to Jewish lore, was for Amalek to cut off the fledgling nation of Israel from their birthright, before they became too formidable, to stop Israel from acquiring the Land of the Covenant. These Jewish legends also recorded Esau as being a mortal enemy of Jacob, even to the extent that Esau swore an oath to bite Jacob dead with his mouth and suck his blood dry[4] (like a vampire).

The Bible supports Esau's hatred towards Jacob, with Esau's own angry words and with his mother's advice to Jacob:

> "He has deceived these two times: He took my birthright, and now he's taken my blessing!"…. Esau held a grudge against Jacob because of the blessing his father had given him. He said to himself. "The days of mourning for my father are near; then I will kill my brother Jacob…."
>
> —Genesis 27:36–41

> Your brother Esau is consoling himself with the thought of killing you. Now then, my son, do what I say: Flee at once to my brother Laban in Haran. Stay with him for a while until your brother's fury subsides.
>
> —Genesis 27:42–43

Hebrews 12:16–17 further underscores Esau's anger: "See that no one is sexually immoral, or is godless like Esau, who for a single meal sold his inheritance rights as the oldest son. Afterward, as you know, when he wanted to inherit this blessing, he was rejected. He could bring no change of mind, though he sought the blessing with tears." One wonders whether or not this passage in Hebrews as this book continues to assert, has anecdotally connected and/or equated Esau's godlessness (independent and/or apart from God) and Esau's sexual transgressions (to create more Nephilim/human hybrids in Abraham's descending bloodline) to the sexual sins of dark angels that created the Nephilim. Certainly Esau married at least two Horite/Nephilim females, Adah and Oholibamah, and a number of Esau's posterity married Horites, such Eliphaz and Amalek. And Esau's descending family tree is both inexplicably interwoven and located with the Horites of Seir in the Table of Nations (Gen. 36:1–40; 1 Chron. 1:35–51).

When Jacob returned from Paddam Aram (Mesopotamia), he sent a messenger ahead of his caravan to appease Esau with gifts; when the messengers returned, they informed Jacob that Esau was coming to meet Jacob with 400 men. Jacob then divided his caravan into two, out of fear, in case Esau came to attack. Jacob then prayed, "Save me, I pray, from the hand of my brother Esau, for I am afraid he will come and attack me, and also the mothers with their children."

The ongoing hatred seems to subside, according to the Bible, for when Esau and Jacob finally meet, all seemed to have been forgiven.[5] However, Esau, according to legend, promised to slay Jacob after the death of their father, Isaac, and Isaac was still alive when Jacob returned from Paddam Aram. When Isaac died, Esau and Jacob together buried Isaac at Mamre, near Kiriath Arba/Hebron.[6]

Sometime after Isaac's death, legends articulate that Esau brought forth a great Edomite and Horite army, an army from Seir that likely included Amalekites, to slay his brother, Jacob, and Jacob's entire family, but Esau and four of his sons—Reuel, Jeush, Lotan, and Korah, all noted Horite chiefs— were slain in this battle.

Ginzberg records that at the time of the Exodus, the descendants of Esau (Amalek) decided they must destroy Israel so that Egypt would not endeavor to put Amalek into bondage as a substitutes for Israel, for both nations were sons of Isaac.[7] Keep the Abrahamic birthright covenant well in mind, for this will become a key factor in the discussion of the Dragon bloodline in the last chapters. Now add to this that the original Amalekites were a surviving antediluvian giant race, and you have an explosive recipe for a vitriolic, generational blood vow.

Deuteronomy testifies to (25:17–19) and 1 Samuel (15:2–3) supports the record of the Amalekites attacking Israel during the Exodus, when Israel was weary and worn out; Israel was completely vulnerable. The Amalekites slaughtered all those who lagged behind due to exhaustion. The cowardly Amalekites preyed on the weak and lagging, just as spiritually unclean beasts, such as hyenas, would do. The Amalekites fought a despicable war of cowardly terrorism before engaging the helpless Israelites in a formal battle.

Jewish legends once more provide intriguing context to the guerilla warfare tactics employed by the Amalekites. They hurriedly marched out of the land of Seir so that they would be the first nation to declare war on Israel. At first, they remained in the hills outside of the Israelite camp, pretending to be friends and kin to Israel. The Amalekites would call out Israelites by name, inviting them to mingle and dine with their cousins, before ambushing, murdering, and mutilating the corpses of all those who did, all the while openly mocking Abraham’s covenant with Isaac and Jacob. Ginzberg notes the Amalekites struck like “a swarm of locusts … their purpose was to suck the blood out of Israel” before they became strong.[8]

Deuteronomy goes on to note that the Amalekites showed no fear of God (Deut. 25:18). They felt false comfort and security behind their false shield of protection afforded to them by their false gods. They believed their gods were superior to the true God, and they believed all these falsehoods in spite of the deluge. They continued to maintain and nourish their faith in the fallen angels that had saved the remnant of Amalekites from the flood. These people of sorcery employed black magic when they attacked Israel, and only with the strength of God did the Israelites prevail over this sorcery,[9] witnessed by Moses and his raised hands during the daylong battle.[10]

Eventually, the cowardly Amalekites mustered up enough courage to challenge the Israelites to a formally declared, two-sided battle. The authors of the Old Testament still considered the challenge an evil act of savagery because the Israelites were untrained in the art of war:

> Then the Lord said to Moses, "Write this on a scroll as something to be remembered and make sure that Joshua hears it, because I will completely blot out the memory of Amalek from under heaven." Moses built an altar and called it "The Lord is my banner." He said, "For hands were lifted up to the throne of the Lord. The Lord will be at war against the Amalekites from generation to generation."
>
> —Exodus 17:14–16

> Remember what the Amalekites did to you along the way when you came out of Egypt. When you were weary and worn out, they met you on your journey and cut all who were lagging behind; they had no fear of God. When the Lord your God gives you rest from all of the enemies around you in the land he is giving you to possess as an inheritance, you shall blot out the memory of Amalek from under heaven. Do not forget!
>
> —Deuteronomy 25:17–19

> This is what the Lord Almighty says: "I will punish the Amalekites for what they did to Israel when they waylaid them as they came up from Egypt. Now go attack the Amalekites and totally destroy everything that belongs to them. Do not spare them, put to death men and women, children and infants, cattle and sheep, camels and donkeys."
>
> —1 Samuel 15:2–3

The despicable warfare tactics of the Amalekites made them the most despised nation recorded in the Bible, other than the Nephilim; not even the Philistines were held with such disdain.

The second charge against the Amalekites derived from their inciting other nations to war against the Israelites.[11] They caused other nations to be fearful of Israel. They incited all the surrounding nations to unite and defend themselves against the "Israeli threat" through totally destroying Israel with war. Josephus tells us that the Amalekites informed the other nations that Israel lay in wait, only to ruin them at a later date. The Amalekites said they should all band together to destroy those foreigners before they had sufficient time to gather their strength.[12] This then brings into perspective the odd passage from the Psalms:

> See how your enemies are astir, how your foes rear their heads. With cunning they conspire against your people; they plot against those you cherish. "Come," they say, "let us destroy them as a nation, that the name of Israel be remembered no more." With one mind they plot together, they form an alliance against you—the tents of Edom, and the Ishmaelites of Moab, and the Hagrites, Gebal, Ammon, and Amalek, Philistia, with the people of Tyre. Even Assyria has joined them to lend strength to the descendants of Lot.
>
> —Psalm 83:2–8

This vengeful nature continued throughout the subsequent generations, appearing in all its nastiness with every available opportunity to wage an allied war against Israel. But after the Exodus encounter, we never read of a war waged by the Amalekites independent of their subservient allies. We learn in the book of Judges that the Midianites, along with other eastern peoples and the Amalekites, would often join forces to invade Israel whenever the Israelites planted their crops, leaving a lost-crop year in their wake, along with considerable devastation.[13] This generational vengeance that Amalek undertook against the Israelites persisted well past the age of Judges and into the age of the monarchy, with King David.

The third charge against the Amalekites pertained to their self-induced, brutal, and evil nature. Josephus recorded the Amalekites as the most warlike of all nations,[14] drawing a parallel once more with the warlike tendencies of the Nephilim. The Josephus anecdote further indicted the Amalekites as Nephilim, just as 1 Samuel did when it listed the Girzites and Geshurites alongside the Amalekites as people living in Seir to Egypt since antediluvian times.[15] Both the Girzites and the Geshurites additionally lived in Gilead and Geshur, the land of Og, and Mount Hermon.[16]

Geshur and Gilead were principalities located east of the Jordan River, between Mount Hermon and Bashan.[17] Hosea described Gilead as a place of wicked men stained with the footprints of blood, where marauders lay in ambush.[18] Now, consider that Gilead, Geshur, Mount Hermon, and Bashan were the homelands of the Rephaites recorded in Deuteronomy that were not conquered by Joshua.[19] *Unger's* further notes that the Girzites and the Geshurites were tribes closely associated with the Amalekites from ancient times and were undocumented tribes that survived the flood, just as the Amalekites were undocumented.[20] All were Nephilim tribes.

Amalekite brutality, too, was supported in 1 Samuel, where Amalek was recorded as a cruel and bloodthirsty nation that had a peculiar bias in its blood oath against Israel. This oath to destroy Israel was further underlined by Josephus,[21] who cited many biblical passages supporting his conclusion. In fact, in reference to when King Saul assaulted the Amalekites and captured their king, Agag, Josephus made another intriguing connection.[22] An Amalekite character at the time of Esther, some 500 to 600 years after the time of King Saul, evidently engaged in conspiring to convince the Persians to destroy the remnant of Judah.[23] The Amalekite in the book of Esther was named Haman the Agagite; he was a direct ancestor of Agag.[24] The appellation *Agagite* was interchangeable with *Amalekite* in its ancient application, reflecting their joint heritage.[25] The first Agag was one of the three sons of Anak, while the second Agag was the king of the Amalekites that Saul defeated. That Agag, too, was a giant. The Agagite title was a proud declaration of Amalekite heritage worn proudly by Amalekite/Nephilim kings.

What is most curious is that almost 700 years after the Amalekites were utterly destroyed by David and Saul, a descendant of the remnant of Amalek was still conspiring to continue the blood war against Israel. This blood oath[26] was no simple pledge of vengeance. It ran much deeper than that. It almost seems to have been encoded into the Amalekite DNA by virtue of its generational ferocity. What simply cannot be argued is that such an obsessive blood feud could have been sponsored by a simple dislike towards a nation of slaves' exodus to freedom. There simply had to be something sponsoring this hatred that continually kept it simmering within their bloodline.

The reality is that the blood oath against Israel and Judah has simmered ever since. The charcoals of hate have been fanned countless times over the millennia, boiling the feud over with genocide and holocaust by such people as the Assyrians, Babylonians, Romans, various corrupted Christian and Muslim nations, and of course, the Nazis. The Amalekite hatred and dedication to wipe Israel and Judah from memory will once more be stoked in the last days, against Israel, Judah, Christians, and Muslims, by end-time Babylon, the world government, and the Antichrist—by the descendants and wannabe descendants of the Nephilim races.

With the charges laid and the guilty verdict in, only divine judgment for the crimes remained. The sentence proclaimed was clear and simple; the nation of the Amalekites was condemned to utter destruction. Amalek was to come to ruin.[27] This violent and barbaric nation of war was not to be permitted the grace of any mercy or sympathy. This was the righteous and tragic consequence for aligning themselves with forces rooted in lies and darkness. But ruin was not enough for the crimes committed against God and Israel. Amalek had to be made an example of for all the generations to follow and in this age.

Israel was appointed the executioner for Amalek, which was just reward for the crimes committed against her. Israel was commissioned to "blot out the memory of Amalek from under heaven."[28] The judgment was equitable, in exacting proportions to the crimes committed. What Amalek endeavored to do in an alliance with her surrounding neighbors was to "destroy them [Isarel] as a nation, that the name Israel be remembered no more" (Psalm

83:4). The judgment pronounced by God was equal to the crime perpetrated by Amalek towards Israel, no more and no less.

The charge against Amalek, to blot out the nation’s memory from under heaven, extended to all the Nephilim nations of the Middle East. Only Nephilim nations originally opposed Israel in war, and it was the vitriolic Amalek who incited their brethren, the Nephilim-infested nations, to war against Israel. The passage quoted from Psalm 83 (above) unites the indictments and punishment of the Amalekites and all Nephilim nations allied with the Amalekites, those who swore to destroy Israel as a nation so that Israel’s name would be remembered no more. All the giants were to be exterminated.

CHAPTER 36

KING SAUL AND KING DAVID

When you enter the land the Lord your God is giving you and have taken possession of it and settled in it, and you say, "Let us set a king over us like all the nations around us," be sure to appoint over you the king the Lord chooses.

—Deuteronomy 17:14–15

Why was the Amalekite execution not carried out immediately? Why did God instruct Israel to wait until they were given rest from their other enemies before fulfilling their judicial commission?[1]

This time of rest did not come to pass until well into their future. The divine judgment resonated from the time of the Exodus and before the conquest. God instructed that when this rest came about and the people demanded a king like other nations, the monarch must be an Israelite and not a foreigner of any sort, the monarchs should not accumulate great wealth, and they should not return to Egypt. The kings were not to be polygamists, nor were they to consider themselves greater than any other Israelite. The kings were to make a copy of these laws and read every day; only then would the descendants of these kings reign a long time (Deut. 17:14–20). All this was decreed in direct defiance and opposition to polygamist Nephilim kings of other nations, who chose an opposite set of principles. The responsibility for the first Israelite kingship fell first to King Saul and then to King David.

According to Jewish legends, Saul was chosen because of his military record. Saul captured the tablets of the Law back from the famous Goliath, an insult that Goliath would not forget.[2] As a sign of God's favor with Saul and the ordaining of Talut/Saul to kingship, the Qur'an notes that Talut fought Goliath and his army with just a few faithful warriors, defeating the Philistines and retrieving the Ark of the Covenant, which contained the tablets of the Law.[3] Saul was the bravest Israelite, a hyperbolized hero of old, which clarifies why he was made king.[4] He was as strong as a lion, in conjunction with his tall and handsome appearance. Saul's, original name was *Labaya*, meaning "great lion of Yaw (weh)," but he was renamed *Saul*, meaning "asked for," as the people of Israel asked God for a king so they could be like other nations.[5]

Scripture records Saul as a large man, a man without equal, a head taller than any of the others.[6] He was very handsome, exceedingly modest, innocent, and of very good Messianic bloodlines.[7] He was the son of a high-ranking chieftain Kish, son of Abiel, from the clan of Matri.[8] Abiel was the son of Zeror, son of Becorath, son of Aphiah, son of Benjamin.[9]

When Samuel became old, the people asked him for a king to lead them as all the other nations had, because Samuel's sons were not fit to carry on as judges.[10] According to the Qur'an, Israel asked the prophet for a king, and in return, they would fight God's good causes.[11] Then Talut/Saul was declared king. *Talut* is Arabic for "Saul."[12]

According to Pinsky, the people asked for Saul because he was tall and a powerful warrior, but Saul was not Samuel's choice.[13] Saul was chosen by God, sent to Samuel to anoint, and drafted to rescue the Israelites from the oppression of the Philistines.[14] Pinsky writes that Samuel saw in Saul his capacity to lead; ruthlessness; willingness to murder, lie, extort in the name of policy; and the ability to play off courtiers against each other. Samuel anointed Saul, but Saul was the antithesis of Samuel and everything he stood for.[15] Samuel warned against taking a king, for the king would war regularly, taking their sons; taking the best of the daughters; taking their land and trades to feed, arm, and look after his armies and taxing a tenth of everything to pay for those armies.[16] Additionally, Saul did not have the backing of the nobility, simply because Saul did not possess his own great wealth.[17]

Labaya likely refers to *Lab' Ayyu*, who secular institutions believe led a people of the Middle East, the (obscure) Apiru.[18] The Armana Archive and Letters of Egypt referred to Labaya, the prince of the northern highland city of Shechem, who unexpectedly expanded his empire to encompass Jerusalem and Gezer in the south, to Megiddo and the Jezreel Valley and beyond in the north. The Armana Letters suggest Labaya allied himself with the Apiru of the south to secure his empire. *Apiru* is sometimes transliterated as "the Habiru."[19] Scholars believe Habiru were wandering chieftains arriving in Canaan from Mesopotamia around the end of the third millennium B.C.E.; likely referring to the arrival of Abraham. They were Semite mercenaries recorded as *Apiru* in Egyptian sources and as *Abiru* in Mesopotamian sources.[20] Certainly, Abraham was well known for his military prowess in the War of Four Kings Against Five, his mercenary activities for the king of Sodom, and his frequent conflicts with Canaanite authorities.[21]

Shechem was the city where God confirmed the Promised Land to Abraham's descendants, whereby Abraham built an altar in the hill country of Ephraim.[22] Shechem is where Jacob built an altar upon his return from Padan Aram[23] and where the Hivite princes, Hamor and Shechem, were slaughtered by Jacobs' sons for raping Dinah.[24] Jacob purchased a significant parcel of land there, and he bequeathed it to Joseph and his descendants.[25] Joshua later renewed the covenant with God at Shechem after the conquest.[26] After that, the Covenant was renewed there annually.[27] Joshua also allotted Shechem to the sons of Joseph, Manasseh, and Ephraim,[28] and Shechem was where the bodies of Joseph and Jacob were brought back from Egypt and buried in the tomb bought by Abraham.[29]

Archaeology has shown that Shechem was Tell Balath, a very prosperous city between 1400 and 1200 B.C.E.[30] Shechem was the location where the Israelite judge Abimelech destroyed the House of Baal-Berith in 1150 B.C.E.[31] Later, King Rehoboam, successor to King Solomon, went to Shechem to be crowned king over all Israel.[32] Subsequently, when King Jeroboam rebelled away from Judah and Rehoboam, Jeroboam refortified Shechem, making it the capital city for the northern nation of Israel.[33]

The Apiru recorded in the fourteenth-century B.C.E. Armana Letters are thought by historians to have been the Hebrews (Judah) who operated outside the Egyptian authority and were notorious enemies of King Abdi Heda of Jerusalem. Apiru were recorded as late as 1000 B.C.E., and then mysteriously there is no record of them thereafter, which is likely explained by David's rise to power after Saul, when the Apiru then operated as a united Israelite entity in a new, expanded empire that thereafter included Jerusalem. The Armana Letters recorded the Apiru as "treasonous, dangerous, and cutthroats." The Letters recorded a tenth-century B.C.E. strong man and Apiru leader who emerged from Hebron to capture Jerusalem.[34] This then is the probable Gentile record of David's rise to power. It is likely that Middle East dragon dynasties would have considered the Israelite king an illegitimate barbarian.

Archaeological records recording David's founding dynasty are stingy at best, causing many seculars to conclude David is a complete mythology. However, an Aramaic inscription, dating back to the ninth century B.C.E., discovered in 1993 C.E., in the ruins of the ancient city of Dan, clearly recorded the words "House of David."[35] This and other archaeological records already presented, set alongside monotheistic scriptures and the lasting imprint David left on Western society, all testify of the reality of the House of David. At the end of the day, there are no real concrete reasons to deny the historical existence to the House of David or the House of Saul.

Reasons cited later in biblical legends for removing Saul as king, other than the violating of his kingship covenant to utterly destroy the Amalekites from the under heaven, were that Saul was too mild a ruler, but even more importantly, his royal bloodlines were so immaculate with nobility that it was feared his descendants would become too proud and haughty.[36] Saul's bloodlines included such impressive relatives as the judges Ehud and Gideon.[37] Saul's ancestors included a long line of heads of families and chiefs of tribes.[38]

At Saul's anointing, Samuel recommissioned Israel to obliterate the Amalekites.[39] No one, including men, women, children, and infants, was to be spared. The Israelites were not to spare any livestock or any animal the Amalekites possessed. Even the possessions of the Amalekites were not to be looted. Everything about the Amalekites was to be utterly destroyed, erasing the Amalekite name and memory from under heaven. All this was to be carried out in the name of the Almighty. The instructions should not have been a source of confusion for any reason. The edicts from God must always be carried out precisely as God dictates. Once the Omnipotent has spoken, who can stand or challenge the All-Knowing?

The answer seems obvious, but God's judgment was not carried forth to the letter of the edict. Lack of complete obedience resulted in devastating consequences for Saul and his Benjamite descendants. Remember, though, Saul only fought the Amalekites because he was forced to through his kingship covenants. Therefore, Ginsberg records that Saul was easily persuaded to keep the spoils of war,[40] which violated his covenant with God. Saul was never totally committed to slaughter all the Amalekites from the face of the earth.

Refreshing your thoughts for a moment, the Amalekites occupied two separate locations in the Middle East. They dwelled in the area of the Sinai, just to the south of the Land of the Covenant, as well as in the western Mesopotamian region, just east and slightly north of Israel. It was the southern Amalekites that Saul chose to attack, and the Israelites scored an overwhelming victory, slaughtering the Amalekites where they found them. Josephus records Saul defeating the Amalekites in the regions of Pelsium of Egypt to the Red Sea,[41] while Samuel supported those records by stating that Saul defeated the Amalekites in the region of Shur to Egypt.[42]

Saul chose to spare some of the Amalekites, including their king, Agag, in addition to the prized and valued animals.[43] Saul further spared Agag because Saul admired the tall and handsome king.[44] Saul was a very large warrior himself—if Saul found Agag to have been very tall, one wonders just how big Agag actually was. Agag was named after a former Nephilim king, a son of Anak, from the time of the flood,[45] undoubtedly suggesting Nephilim blood still flowed through the veins of Amalekite kings.

The violation of God's righteous edict ordained at Saul's anointing could not be left without being addressed, no matter the reasons Saul might have had for doing so. Sparing Agag's life triggered the persecution of the Jewish people many centuries later, while Judah was in exile. Haman the Agagite, recorded in Hebrew legend as a direct ancestor of Agag, conspired to rid the earth of the Jewish remnant while under Persian rule.[46]

Consequently, Samuel denounced Saul for his sins, proclaiming the everlasting kingdom of God would not continue from Saul's Benjamite loins.[47] God removed the right of succession for Saul's sons to the throne of

Israel, and therefore the lineage of the Messiah, as proper punishment for his failure.[48] Saul was permitted to continue on as king for as long as he lived, but there was not to be a royal dynasty spawned in Israel from his bloodline. The Messianic bloodline and the everlasting throne were transplanted to the tribe of Judah, just as it had been originally prophesied in Genesis.[49]

Ironically, it was Saul's mercy and empathy for the Amalekites that eventually killed him, for it was Saul's vassal army of Amalekites, according to Rohl, which was protecting the back of Saul's army[50] during a later battle against the Philistines. Before this great battle against Achish of the Philistines, Achish sent his mercenary, David, away, because the Philistine commanders did not trust David and his men in a battle against their own people.[51] The Amalekites then betrayed Saul, permitting the Philistines to encircle and assault the Israelites, wounding Saul.[52] This was a battle where the Israelites fled before the Philistines on Mount Gilboa and where the Philistines pressed hard after Saul and his sons; Saul then fell on his own sword, killing himself.[53]

Saul's and his sons' bodies were hung unceremoniously by the Philistines at Beth Shan, and they were later stolen by the citizens of Jabesh Gilead.[54] The Philistines stripped Saul from his armor, cutting off Saul's head; they then hung Saul's head and his armor in the temple of Dagon, the father of Baal in some versions of mythology,[55] until the valiant men of Jabesh returned the bodies of Saul and his sons back to Jabesh.[56] David eventually confiscated the bones of Saul and Jonathan, burying them in a tomb of Saul's father, Kish, at Zela in Benjamin.[57]

By the time of the Philistine battle, Samuel had passed away. Saul summoned a medium to bring back Samuel from the grave, in the hopes of gaining victory over the Philistines, but the spirit/ghost of Samuel angrily rebuked Saul once more for not completely destroying the Amalekites and then prophesied Israel would be defeated by the Philistines and that Saul would be killed in that battle.[58] "Saul died because he was unfaithful to the Lord; he did not keep the word of the Lord and even consulted a medium for guidance. So the Lord put him to death and turned the kingdom over to David, son of Jesse" (1 Chron. 10:13–14).

Now, after the original battle between Saul and Agag, Samuel had taken events into his own hands to ensure the fulfillment of divine Judgment.

Samuel had slain Agag himself.[59] Samuel had then proceeded to anoint a new, future king of Israel, the young David, son of Jesse, of the tribe of Judah, to fulfill the divine obligations and replace the family of Saul in the Royal House.[60] David then took possession of the throne after Saul died.[61] Much jealousy exuded from Saul towards David during the balance of Saul's reign, for David was commissioned to be the new king while Saul was still alive and still king.[62]

It is clear that Saul did not totally annihilate the Amalekites, for the book of Samuel records David fought the Amalekites (1 Sam. 8:12), destroying them at Ziklag (1 Sam. 30:1–31). It would seem likely that David exercised more of a mopping-up operation in the south, but he must have waged all-out war against the eastern Amalekites. Although the Bible provides little detail, it is clear that David did destroy the Amalekites,[63] just as other legends describe Joab's adventures and the destruction of the Amalekite capital.[64] Certainly, 1 Samuel underscores that David defeated the entire Amalekite nation, while the King James Version records this victory as a complete "slaughter of the Amalekites" (2 Sam. 1:1 KJV).

Should there be any doubt that David actually did fulfill his judicial obligation, Psalm 9:4–8 puts this notion to rest:

> You have sat on your throne, judging righteously. You have rebuked the nations and destroyed the wicked; you have blotted out their name forever and ever. Endless ruin has overtaken the enemy, you have uprooted their cities; even the memory of them has perished.

This passage can only be interpreted and attributed to the Amalekites. No other nation other than that of the Nephilim had their memory blotted out forever and ever. No other nation during the conquest was judged from the throne of God. No other nation of that period received the wrath of endless ruin poured out on them. Therefore, one can apply this passage to both of those vile and corrupt peoples, for both peoples had that exact divine judgment pronounced upon them by Moses and God, but even more specifically, on the Amalekites.

During the reign of King Hezekiah of Judah, the Simeonite sons of Ishi invaded the hill country of Seir, killing the remaining Amalekites who had escaped.[65] One would expect that this final blow finished off whatever remnant of Amalekite culture and society that had somehow survived from David's genocidal purge against the Amalekites.

Although we do hear from Amalekite residue during the Babylonian exile, with Haman the Agagite in the book of Esther,[66] neither history nor the Bible ever again records Amalekites as a nation. Secular history has forgotten the Amalekites, as though they never existed; only the Bible has maintained their existence as a witness to the world. Amalekites were not merely eradicated from the face of the earth. They were blotted out from memory under heaven and completely ruined, just as the divine judgment required. The Amalekite remnant was lost into the disparate nations of antiquity.

With the completion of the judicial obligations regarding the Amalekites by David, we must now turn our investigation to David's other divine obligation to God. This was in respect to the other Nephilim. Both the Amalekites and the remnant of the Nephilim survived until the time of David, with the Nephilim descendants, the Avvites, still residing in the region of Gaza, where the Philistines lived. David was the final executioner's sword of God levied against both the Amalekites and the Nephilim at the same general time. The Nephilim and David chronicle was yet another story in itself, which included the Goliath legend. All this and more is reserved for the next chapters.

As for the true identity of the lost Amalekite nation, logic suggests Amalekites were part of the Horites. Remember, Horites dwelled in Seir, the land of the southern Amalekites. Additionally, Amalekites were an ancient nation that dwelled from Shur to Egypt since ancient times.[67] Strangely, Seir does not have a father listed in the Table of Nations, even though the Table of Nations recorded Seir, as the father of the Horites, who dwelled in Seir before Edomites arrived there.[68] Seir, then, was a Horite/Amalekite/Nephilim chief.

Seir derived from the word *se-ar*, meaning "hairy," just as Enkidu, a giant from the Gilgamesh Epic was hairy.[69] "Hairy" was also the description applied to the prominent dynasts of Sumerian lore, descending from Luluwa through the Anunnaki King Nergal and Queen Eresh-kigal.[70] Nephilim were believed to have had rough, hairy skin, just as Esau did.[71] Furthermore, Numbers 13 cited Amalekites as being the descendants of Anak,[72] just as Genesis 14 included the Amalekites as a giant nation defeated by Chedorlaomer.[73]

Similarly, Amalek merged with the indigenous race of Seir (Horites) that formed the Great Amalekite Race, just as the Rephaites were branded as an aboriginal race, meaning Horites were likely Rephaites. Horites were non-Semites associated closely with the Hurrians, both whose etymology connects back to early cave dwellers. Moreover, Hurrian/Horite tablets discovered in Nuzi and Mari mysteriously connects this ambiguous nation to the (equally important) Kingdom of Mittanni.[74]

These connections suggest Amalekites were indeed a pure Anakite strain before merging with Amalek and a distinct but separate branch of the Rephaim. The Amalekites may have been another surviving remnant of antediluvian Nephilim, along with Seir as the founding father. This becomes clearer when we revisit the antediluvian appellation of Amalek.

Listed among the names of antediluvian Nephilim was the name *Amalek*. He was noted as the twin brother to Samael.[75] We now have an actual antediluvian giant to trace this enigmatic nation back to, for Amalek was the forefather of Seir. In another tradition, Amalek was the prominent antediluvian Sumerian king Akalum-Dug, understanding that *Akalum* was Sumerian for the infamous, evil "Lamech," which found its true anagram in producing the name *Amalek*,[76] and that all the antediluvian Sumerian kings were Nephilim.

We can also connect yet another variant name of a king to Amalek: *Anam' Melech*, pronounced as "a-nam-e l-lek." Anam' Melech was worshipped by the Babylonian people from the city of Sepharvaim. *Melech*, as we will learn later, is Hebrew for "king," as in Molech/Malech, the god of the Canaanites, son of Baal, who required the sacrifice of children in his worship. Anam' Melech translates as "Anu, is king," with Anu, of course, being the great sky god and parent of the Anunnaki. Like Molech, Anam' Malech also required the sacrifice of children.[77] One wonders, was Anam' Malech the mythical god Molech? This is likely another variant and the same Amalek and/or Lamech, a Nephilim demigod of barbaric proportions.

The twin brother of the antediluvian giant Amalek was Samael. One of Samael's wives, Naamah, was considered the angel of prostitution and the mother of demons.[78] Samael the giant must have been the offspring of Samael the angel and Namaah. Namaah was sister to Tubal-Cain and daughter of Lamech (Amalek),[79] again neatly tying Cain's daughters of men to Nephilim and Amalekite origin to Nephilim. Amalekites named themselves after their forefathers, the Nephilim and Cainites, along with the merging of the descendants of Amalek, a tribe of Esau.

CHAPTER 37

DAVID AND GOLIATH

Goliath stood and shouted to the ranks of Israel, "Why do you not come out and line up for battle? Am I not a Philistine, and are you not the servants of Saul? Choose a man and have him come down to me. If he is able to fight and kill me, we will become your subjects; but if I overcome him and kill him, you will become our subjects and serve us." Then the Philistine said, "This day I defy the ranks of Israel! Give me a man and let us fight each other." On hearing the Philistine's words, Saul and the Israelites were dismayed and terrified.

—1 Samuel 17:8–11

"David and Goliath" is a timeless tale taught in Sunday school to enchanted young minds eager to emulate David. But what are the unexplained relationships between the Davidic throne and Nephilim kingships, royal bloodlines, and the bloodlines of the Antichrist?

David was the first of the true dynastic bloodline leading to Christ nearly 1,000 years later, on whom God built his earthly but royal government that Jesus would later inherit. David is also from the dynastic bloodline that all spurious royal bloodlines now desperately strive to align themselves with, in order to further enhance their own perceived pedigree and credibility.

The passage opening this chapter recounts a riveting drama that unfolded at one of the most important crossroads of Israel's prophetic journey. This is the first time we are introduced to a very young David, who intercedes to influence Israel's destiny. This was a time when King Saul and his army were about to confront the powerful and militaristic Philistines. They antagonized the Israelites incessantly with continuous incursions and insults.

Philistines represented the greatest militaristic threat to Israel, preventing Israel to that time from achieving an age of peace, where they could build their dream, manifested in what later became the first temple. It was no coincidence that the Nephilim-led Philistines were such a formidable military force or that they harbored such a bloodthirsty oath against the Israelites. The other antagonizing nations, such as the Jebusites and Moabites, were not a match militarily for the then hardened Israelites, but the Amalekites and Philistines led by Nephilim were a completely different and more dangerous set of foes.

The Philistines and the Israelites squared off, each occupying the high ground separated by a river valley. Both sides realized the downright danger in launching the first attack volley, leaving the enemy to fight with a lethal advantage from the high ground. The Israelites were well aware of the mighty Nephilim warriors that enhanced the strength of the Philistine ranks. Israel was not prepared to give any advantage to such a warrior nation as the Philistines. The Israelites trembled with trepidation from the historical scars inflicted upon them by the Philistine skirmishes past. The Philistines, too, were warily respectful of Israel's resiliency in warding off the Philistine incursions for so many years. This was a classic, ancient Mexican standoff —eye-to-eye with each other, both locked in stalemate by fear, all the while begrudged with respect.

As the tension escalated, the Philistines steadfastly increased the pressure by several notches. A giant from Gath named Goliath began to proceed into the valley every morning and every evening, defying and challenging all Israel to scrounge up a worthy opponent, to settle the affair with him personally, in mortal, one-on-one combat. The winner would take all, thereby subjugating the other people. This was a corrosive challenge, poured spitefully over the courage of Israel, which the Philistines did not anticipate Israel would accept. This denigrating challenge, vitriolic to both God and Israel, required yet another awe-inspiring, divine intervention for the sake of the chosen people. This was David's time.

David was a complex individual, who was strapped with all the weight and pressure for the future of humankind. God selected David for this role because of what was in David's heart,[1] not for his perfection. David possessed the heart that was true and zealous in pursuit of God. The Qur'an underscored David's devotion to God as a man of strength that always turned to God for support.[2] Most presume this automatically meant David was totally pure of heart and full of peace. David was pure of heart and true in faith to God, but we are not privileged to know this inner part of David, except that he, too, struggled with his humanity, as do all humans.

The role David was selected to play in Israel's destiny was not that of a peacemaker. David was a warrior king, selected to subdue the enemies of Israel. It was David who fulfilled the Israelite obligations from the Covenant through violence and war. It was David who overran the remaining nations and enemies of Israel, securing an age of peace. Just as David completed the task of defeating the Amalekites, he also defeated the balance of the antagonizing nations surrounding Israel, who all took their turn at tormenting Israel throughout the times of the judges and Saul.[3] Mohammad said this regarding David: "God gave him sovereignty and wisdom and taught him what he pleased. If God did not drive some back by means of others the earth would be completely corrupt, but God is bountiful to all."[4]

It was David who established Jerusalem as the heart and soul of Israel. It was David who battled his entire life, enabling Solomon to become the peaceful king of wisdom. And it was Solomon who was permitted to build the holy temple, not David, because of the blood that was on the warrior hands of David. We must not forget that David became famous for being the great warrior king, not the peace-giving priest king Solomon was.

Some critics of scriptural history might consider David barbaric, not worthy to head the royal dynasty of priest-kings. From a purely secular point of view, one can easily arrive at this conclusion. But, we must understand David was merely fulfilling his commission after David was ordained to king by Samuel, and as directed by God (1 Samuel 16: 1-23), and the Holy Covenant “The King” edict: “When you enter the land the Lord your God is giving you and have taken possession of it and settled in it, and you say, ‘Let us set a king over us like all the nations around us,’ be sure to appoint over you the king the Lord your God chooses” (Deuteronomy 17:14-15). David was chosen by God immediately following Saul’s failure to uphold God’s command to eradicate all Amalekites (1 Samuel 15:1-35), and to free Israel from and Philistine oppression (1 Samuel 14:47-52). David fulfilled God’s edict against the Amalekites, in addition to fulfilling his war time Covenant obligations, as the ordained king of God’s Holy Covenant: to “Drive Out the Nations” (Deuteronomy 7: 1-6) where it states: “Do not look on them with pity and do not serve their gods, for that will be a snare for you” (Deuteronomy 7:16); and in Numbers :“But if you do not drive out the inhabitants of the land, those you allow to remain will become barbs in your [Israel’s] eyes, thorns in your [Israel’s] sides” (Numbers 33:55-56), all the while noting the “Going to War” edict to: “put to the sword all the men it” (Deuteronomy 20: 13) lest God “do to you [Israel] what I plan to do them” (Numbers 33:56). Hence, one concludes all these edicts were still in effect at the time of Saul and David as directed by the “King”, “Driving Out the Nations”, and “Going to War” edicts, while noting from the “Driving Out the Nations” edict that “The Lord your God will drive out those nations before you, little by little. You will not be allowed to eliminate them all at once, or the wild animals will multiply around you” Deuteronomy 7: 22).

It is no secret that David had blood on his hands. He fought numerous battles, killing countless other warriors and people. It was said of David: “Saul has slain his thousands and David his tens of thousands.”[5] David slew 200 Philistines, delivering their foreskins to Saul as the price to marry Michal, Saul’s daughter.[6] David was even guilty of conspiring to murder Uriah, husband of Bathsheba, all due to unbridled lust.[7] David was then rebuked by Nathan. After David repented, he was forgiven of his sins by God.[8] These records show that David was still merely a man and not a form of deity. Certainly, David was not and is not to be considered a king of peace, or a minister of all that was gentle and perfect, nor a human who was free from sin. We must regard David for what he was a warrior king executing the divine judgment of God, just as his descendant will do in the great day of the Lord’s wrath.[9]

God did not permit His great warrior to be the builder of His holy shrine. This responsibility was left for Solomon, the king of peace and wisdom of that time, reflecting the other half of the dual nature of the Messiah, who is the King of Peace and Wisdom, as well as the conquering Warrior of God, avenging His martyred saints.[10] One might conclude the first two kings of the Messianic dynasty reflected the dual character traits of the Messiah; however, both lacked the perfection required by the Law to suffice as the Lamb of the sacrifice. One can say, though, that David was the Lion trait, and Solomon was the Lamb aspect, foreshadowing the dual nature of the true Messiah, Jesus.

David’s devotion was rewarded with great knowledge and wisdom,[11] remembered in the Qur’an as graced with favor over many of the prophets and messengers, and graced with the Psalms as his Scripture.[12] David’s kingdom was strengthened for his devotion, and he had a decisive demeanor when speaking.[13] God made the mountains join David in glorifying God, and the birds all echoed his praise.[14]

As with most legendary warrior kings, a childhood mythology grew up around David that had mystical and fantastic beginnings. Most critical secular historians consider the Goliath tale to be a gross exaggeration of the truth at best and, more than likely, just a mythical story created to further enhance the glory of the warrior king who succeeded in forging a royal dynasty. Cynical secular historians make similar conclusions about the childhoods of both Moses and Jesus, declaring that all legendary kings had similar childhood myths, citing Romulus and Remus or Alexander the Great of the Macedonians as examples of their great earthly wisdom. They note these as parallel childhood mythologies from other legendary kings as supposed support for their arrogance.

Those assertions underscore their nonbelief in the literal truth and accuracy of the Bible. The Goliath narrative was not a coincidental tale clumsily inserted into Scripture. The Goliath narrative oozes with context and relationships of all that is important in the Old Testament. The narrative resonates to the heart of the judicial obligations from the Covenant, including the coronation obligations rendered onto David by Samuel. Furthermore, the Goliath narrative is an unusual narrative directly related to the Nephilim narrative and to the unexplained Avvites.

Surprisingly, Goliath, according to Jewish legends, was related to David, for Goliath was the grandson of one of David's relatives, Orpah, related to Ruth, from whom David received his royal, Messianic bloodline.[15] Ruth married Boaz, who begat Obed, who begat Jesse, the father of David.[16] Now, in the time of the Judges, there came a great famine, and an Israelite from Bethlehem named Elimelech and his wife, Naomi, escaped to dwell in Moab; they bore two sons named Mahlon and Kilion. Elimelech then died in Moab, leaving Naomi and her two sons. The two sons then married Moabite women named Orpah and Ruth, but both Mahlon and Kilion died ten years thereafter, leaving Naomi, Orpah, and Ruth all as widows. Naomi then returned to Bethlehem, with Ruth accompanying her, while Orpah returned to her parents' household.[17]

Pinsky notes that both Ruth and Orpah, according to the twentieth-century Hebrew poet Hayyim Nahman Bialik and the Dead Sea Scroll of Orpah, were no ordinary Moabites, for both Ruth and Orpah were the daughters of the king of Moab, Eglon. Apparently, King Eglon had prudent respect for Israel and permitted the marriages of his princess daughters to Kilion/Chilion and Mahlon. Orpah then returned to the royal household after Naomi went back to Bethlehem with Ruth. This, then, makes Goliath a third generation cousin to David, as Goliath was the grandson of Orpah.[18]

If Goliath was not Nephilim but just a gigantic Philistine warrior, then Goliath has no part in this book. But if Goliath was Nephilim, then we are obligated to investigate him. Certainly, everyone knows that Goliath was stated to be over nine feet tall.[19] Goliath's breastplate weighed 125 pounds! He slung his spear over his back because the spear was too heavy to be grasped and drawn for battle. The spear's point weighed fifteen pounds alone.[20] Goliath required a harem of servants to follow him at all times, just to carry his armor.

Goliath was the hero of the Philistines. Goliath in biblical legend was celebrated as the strongest and the greatest of warriors written about in Scripture; in fact, legends note Scripture tells precious little concerning what might have been recorded about this extraordinary warrior and his exploits. What we do know from Jewish legends is that Goliath was born to either Orpah (or a daughter of Orpah with the same name), along with four other giants.[21] This suggests Philistia was brimming with iniquitous giants, as four giants came from one mother alone.

Gibborim translated from Hebrew to “hero potentate,” as it was applied in Genesis—one of the tyrant kings of ancient city-states. Now consider Goliath was from Gath and that there were five potentates of Philistia that reigned in Ashod, Ashkelon, Ekron, Gaza, and Gath. Philistines recounted these five potentates as Avvites.[22] Was Goliath a Nephilim/Gibborim from one of the five city-states of Philistia? This is a legitimate postulation, but can we in fact establish it as so?

The book of 2 Samuel listed four other prominent giants among the Philistines: Ishi-Benob, Saph, Lahmi brother of Goliath, and a six-fingered and six-toed giant named Sippai.[23] What is most probable is those four other giants were four of the Nephilim/Gibborim potentates of the five city-states of Philistia. The Bible does not explicitly state that they were, but we need only take a lesson from history; wherever Nephilim abounded, they were always the evil potentates, governing the people they lived among, from the days of Noah to the Amalekites and the Amorites. Goliath would have simply been the fifth Nephilim/Gibborim reigning in Gath, with the other four giants ruling Ashod, Ashkelon, Ekron, and Gaza. Goliath, as already stated, was a Gittite from Gath in Philistia.[24]

Now, Joshua, during the conquest, cleansed the Covenant Land of Nephilim, leaving only a remnant in the land of the five kingdoms of Philistine—Gaza, Ashod, Ashkelon, Gath, and Ekron—the very same Pentapolis of city-states listed in the David and Goliath narrative. This cannot be a coincidence. Joshua knew the Pentapolis as the five Avvite kingdoms of Philistia,[25] suggesting that many more giants must have dwelled among the Philistines. The books of 2 Samuel and 1 Chronicles concurred, lucidly identifying Gath as the land where the descendants of Rapha lived.[26] Therefore, no one should be surprised that a giant originating from Gath was actually a Nephilim.

Further, when the Bible speaks to the leaders of Philistine, it refers to “the five [Avvite] kings of the city-states” or “the rulers of Philistine” or “the five rulers of Philistine.”[27] According to Neil Asher Silberman and Israel Finkelstein, the word utilized that translates into English as “rulers,” “lords,” or “kings” of Philistine is most unusual and was not a Hebrew word. The original term utilized was the five *seranim* of the Philistine Pentapolis. *Seranim* is thought to have been adopted from the Philistines into the Hebrew language. Silberman and Finkelstein assert scholars link *seranim* etymologically with the Greek word *tyrannos*, or “tyrant.” The first ruler who was called Tyrannos in Greek literature was Gyges, the king of Lydia.[28] Greek Titans were known variantly as Gyges,[29] and as you will recall, *gyges* is the root word for giant and gigantic. The Avvite kings from the Philistine Pentapolis were all giants; let there be no doubt.

This does not prove Goliath was Nephilim, but all the circumstantial evidence testified that Goliath must have been a Nephilim/Gibborim. What other explanation could there be? Certainly Goliath was a Philistine warrior leader. He challenged would-be heroes of all Israel to one-on-one, mortal combat, with the victor subjugating the entirety of the loser's people. It would appear Goliath was the leader of the Philistines, for no other leader was mentioned. There can be no other reasonable explanation when this information is combined with the knowledge that Nephilim were the warrior potentates from both pre- and post-deluge periods. It follows that Goliath must have been one of the potentates/kings from the five city-states, and Gath would have been the city-state over which he was king, for Goliath was a *Gittite*.

Scripture does state the five famous giants descended from Rapha and Gath. The KJV recounts the five famous giants descending from a specific giant from Gath. Therefore, was Og actually Rapha, or was Rapha a descendant of Og, who was the father of the Rephaites? Certainly Og did survive the war with Moses and Joshua, living to a great age.

The David and Goliath narrative begins with the Philistines gathering all their forces for war and assembling them to fight the Israelites at Socoh in Judah.[30] Saul and the Israelites assembled, making camp in the Valley of Elah.[31] The Philistines controlled one bank, while the Israelites controlled the other bank, in the adjacent valley from their camp. This quickly became a stalemate, in which the Israelites had no interest in being the first to break the deadlock, and neither did the Philistines. This prompted the scenario for the legendary David and Goliath story to unfold.

Goliath, arrogant beyond belief, saw this stalemate as a great opportunity to humiliate the Israelites. Every morning Goliath would suit up in his armor and challenge the Israelites to send forth their strongest and bravest warrior to do mortal combat with him, with the victor winning the subjugation of the loser's people. Samuel recorded Goliath went forward with this arrogant challenge for forty mornings and forty evenings, with no Israelite daring to take up the challenge. Goliath utterly humiliated all Israel, covering the nation with the shroud of cowardice. The Israelites were, quite frankly, justifiably terrified and dismayed by the challenge; they were mortified by the sight of Goliath parading his hubris before them every morning and every evening.[32]

At first read, one might look at this scenario as embellished or contrived. Why would any nation or army place their future well-being into the hands of one warrior in single, mortal combat, no matter how powerful the warrior was? An all-or-nothing contest with two individuals seems a bit fanciful, when both had large armies ready to do battle. But, in fact, Cahill notes single combat was often used in ancient times to avoid the gruesome bloodletting of a battle that would decide who would be subject to whom; similar accounts were also recorded in *The Iliad* as further proof.[33]

There seemed to be no warrior throughout all Israel, including the large and famous warrior King Saul himself, who was prepared to take up the challenge. Goliath defiled the name of Israel continuously, day after day. This was Goliath's revenge for Saul embarrassing Goliath previously, when Saul retrieved the tablets of the Law from Gath, which were under the protection of Goliath at that time.[34] Saul was not about to provide Goliath with his revenge, refusing to engage Goliath in mortal combat. One wonders, was his legend, in addition to the Qur'an account, based on the Philistines capturing the Ark of the Covenant?[35]

Not until a teenage boy named David, son of Jesse, from the tribe of Judah, stepped forward was the challenge accepted by the Israelites. This was a day that was recorded as a witness to one of the great days of victorious faith for the meek. David went forward to meet the giant in mortal combat, one-on-one. Josephus recounted the event, picturing David moving forward with disdain and disgust towards the giant.[36] This seems odd—unless you consider that David, through his faith, was under the protection of God— that a teenage boy would not be too overwhelmed with fear and trepidation when approaching a great warrior giant in combat. In fact, the *niv Bible* states Goliath was a fighting man from his youth, and the KJV says Goliath was a "man of war from his youth" (1 Sam. 17:33).

Goliath cursed David by Goliath's gods, asking if David thought Goliath was a dog for coming at him with sticks.[37] Josephus notes that David declared Goliath was not a man, nor even a dog, but rather a creature worse than a dog.[38] David declared Goliath to be nothing better than a beast, a description reserved for the vilest of people and demons. David then vowed to slay the giant that day, cut off his head, and feed his carcass to the birds.[39] This statement once again testified to an amazing declaration of disdain, defiance, determination, and courage in the face of such an awesome foe, and yet David remained poised, delivering the threat with uncanny due diligence.

The whole affair was so comical to Goliath that he roared with laughter.[40] Israel, after forty days of humiliation, had finally sent forward their warrior of salvation to reclaim their honor for all Israel. But the warrior commissioned to restore the honor of Israel was nothing more than a boy barely out of puberty, who now faced a nine-foot giant, one of the most ferocious warriors of that time, and perhaps of all postdiluvian time, according to various legends. The irony, drama, and comedy were inescapable, and yet this was the scenario being played out that morning at Socoh. For these reasons, one understands why Goliath could not restrain himself from erupting into bellowing laughter.

At this point, the Bible records what seems to be an obscure anecdote. It is almost always overlooked as unimportant, but it has significant relevance to Israel's commission to exterminate the Nephilim and to the even more remarkable testimony of courage and faith David exhibited. When David sauntered down to do battle with Goliath, he sifted through pebbles until he found five, selected for their smoothness, that he would use as projectiles for his sling (1 Sam. 17:40).

Why choose five smooth stones? At first read, this may appear to be innocent, normal, and nominal, assuming that David decided to pack extra projectiles, just in case he should miss. This natural conclusion, however, does not stand the test of scrutiny. If David was under the protection of the Almighty, and he was, one stone would be ample, and God would have seen to it that it was, just as the epic described. So why did David select five stones?

The solution to the conundrum is quite simple, if one considers the facts. David was simply preparing to kill all five Nephilim warrior kings that were present that day. David was prepared to do combat with all five kings from the Philistine Pentapolis, should the events require it. David selected five projectiles to kill five Nephilim/Gibborim. Sippai, Saph, Lahme, and Ishi-Benob were all present that day as the reigning kings of the five Philistine city-states, along with Goliath. The other Avvites did not come to Goliath's aid that day, but David could not be certain that they would not. No matter, the other four Nephilim kings came to their destruction later, at the hands of David and his famous fighting men.

The one-on-one battle to the death was an anticlimactic spectacle. This was not a brutal slugfest, leaving the combatants spent with exhaustion. David simply selected one of the smooth stones and slung it toward Goliath. The stone launched like a missile. It sank into Goliath's forehead, dropping him like a giant redwood. Once Goliath was felled, David advanced toward the giant and beheaded him with Goliath's own sword, for David was not packing a sword that day. David held Goliath's decapitated head high in the air for all to see. The Israelites clamored with excitement, but the Philistines began to tremble with fear (1 Sam. 17:49–51).

Critics look at David's using a sling to slay a warrior giant as yet another reason to ridicule this narrative. However, we must once again slip into the shoes of that period to understand the sling was undeniably a wise choice and a most formidable weapon. The sling came from those used by the 26,000strong Benjamite army in the Benjamite war, where Benjamites employed 700 left-handed slingers, who could each sling a stone at a hair and not miss (Judges 20:14–17). Later, David accepted into his army slingers from Benjamin (1 Chron. 12:2), again demonstrating David's faith and value in this weapon.

Indeed, the sling was a fearsome weapon used by ancient armies for a long period of time.[41] It was a common weapon employed by Egyptian, Assyrian, and Israelite armies on a wide scale and later with Greek and Roman armies. Stones were selected for their smoothness, just as the David and Goliath epic recorded, and they could be accurately slung to a distance of 600 feet,[42] meaning that David was not required to get all that close to slay Goliath. Stones were more damaging projectiles than arrows, and slingers were also a more mobile force than archers, possessing a greater and more accurate range than archers.[43]

The terror-stricken Philistines soon panicked, fleeing at the sight of their vanquished hero. The Israelites then instinctively surged forward at the signs of the Philistine panic. The surge gained momentum with every passing second. It transformed into a human tidal wave, overtaking the fleeing Philistines. The Israelites hunted the Philistines all the way back to Gath. Philistines suffered one of their greatest military defeats of all time that day, leaving thousands of their dead strewn from Socoh to Gath.[44]

What was even more remarkable was that David did not immediately ascend to king after the Goliath incident; David was still a boy, and Saul was permitted to remain king until he died. Saul did, however, take David under his wing in a relationship that evolved into a soap opera of paranoia. It was to be quite some time before David would once more take up his judicial commission against the Nephilim, to exterminate the remnant of the giants and to blot the name of Amalek from under heaven.

CHAPTER 38

THE AVVITES

All the tribes of Israel came to David at Hebron and said, “We are your own flesh and blood” …. When all the elders of Israel had come to King David at Hebron, the king made a compact with them at Hebron before the Lord, and they anointed David king over Israel.

—2 Samuel 5:1–3

After the death of Saul, why was David unaccountably anointed king at the infamous Hebron/Kiriath Arba? And why did David systematically develop and enhance a powerful elite force while in exile, with skillful warriors, David’s mighty men?

David was indeed the tenth-century B.C.E. Apiru strongman who emerged from Hebron to capture Jerusalem, an event which was recorded in the Armana Letters. This elite band of deadly commandos was indeed the very same band of treasonous cutthroats despised by the Egyptian empire, assembled in exile to fulfill God’s plans to eliminate Nephilim kingships from the Promised Land. The key commandos in this elite militia were Jashobeam, Eleazer, Abishai, Benaiah, Elhanan, Johnathan, and Sibbeccai.

The balance of the mighty men of David is listed by name in 1 Chronicles 11:26. It was with this elite fighting force of cutthroats deployed as the military spearhead that David conquered the remaining enemies of Israel and completed the extermination of the Nephilim in Gaza.

When the Philistines received word David had succeeded Saul as king, they immediately mobilized and then marched against David, thinking if they struck early, they could subdue Israel with surprise, destroying Israel and their unprepared king.[1] The Philistine Pentapolis clearly comprehended just how dangerous a foe Israel would become if left unchecked under David's skillful guidance and formative leadership. Hence, the Philistines immediately attacked Israel, without notice or provocation, in a place called the Valley of Rephaim, or Valley of the Giants, where David planted yet another punishing blow on the Philistines.

We know from Joshua that the Avvites dwelled within the five Philistine kingdoms in Gaza, just to the south and west of Jerusalem. Avvites/Avvim was a native tribe among the Canaanites, who lived on the Philistine plain as far as Gaza.[2] *Unger's* refers to the Avvites as "a people," the inhabitants of the southwest corner of Palestine along the seacoast.[3] This curious tribe has been linked scripturally with the ancient city in Benjamin recorded as *Avvim*, which bordered on the infamous Valley of Rephaim.[4] Avvim were further linked by Jerome to both the city of Ha-Avvim in the district of the Hivites and to the Hivites.[5]

Hivites were one of the seven nations that were to be destroyed by the Israelites;[6] they were thought to be Canaanite people descended through Sidon.[7] The Bible murkily records Esau marrying Oholibamah, the daughter of the Horite/Nephilim chief Anah, known alternatively as a Hivite.[8] One wonders if Hivites were in fact Horites, as Anah was recorded in the Table of Nations as part of the Horite chiefs of Edom.[9] *Unger's* suggests there is confusion between Hivite and Horite (Hurrian) in the original text of Genesis 36:2, 20, 29 and Joshua 9:7. *Unger's* goes onto note that it is possible that Hivites were an ethnic subdivision of Horites.[10] *Nelson's* further notes no secular references exist outside the Bible regarding Hivites and that many scholars believe *Hivite* was either a scribal error for *Horite* or Hivites were a smaller group within the Horite federation.[11] In my opinion, the Hivites were a Nephilim/Horite ethnic subdivision that interbred with the Canaanites.

Hamor and his son Shechem were Hivite princes[12] and the founders of the future capital city of the northern Israelite nation.[13] If the Hivites were indeed interbred giants, this clearly explains the Jacobite reaction, for the Jacobites slaughtered the Hivite giants, even though the Hivites asked for peace and forgiveness, even offering, for all Hivite males to be circumcised.[14]

So how closely were the Hivites and Avvites related to the Philistines? Certainly, both peoples lived alongside or with the Philistines. They were all further connected as similar peoples and enemies of Israel in Judges: "These are the nations the Lord left to test all those Israelites who had not experienced any of the wars in Canaan: the five rulers of the Philistines, all the Canaanites, the Sidonians, and the Hivites living in the Lebanon mountains" (Judg. 3:1–4). In this verse, the five Philistine rulers that Joshua labeled as Avvites, the Philistines, and the Hivvites were all connected as ongoing enemies of Israel, whom David would exterminate later. This cannot be a coincidence.

Again, what is most curious regarding the Hivites is that they instructed Joshua they were a people who had traveled from a distant country (Josh. 9:9).[15] So, too, did the Philistines travel to Gaza from a distant country, Caphtor, known also as Crete, noting the Caphtorites, and thus, the Philistines, destroyed most of the Avvites and settled in their place.[16] The Philistines were recorded in Genesis 10:13 and 1 Chronicles 1:12 as descending from Casluhites[17] and seemingly by inference were closely related to Caphtorites. Were the Hivites then a sub-tribe of both the Philistines and the Horites?

Crete evidently was home to the Caphtorites, Casluhites, and a people known as the Cherethites. Both Casluhites and Cherethites were closely linked in the Bible to the Caphtorites/Philistines, suggesting that all were part of an originating, invading group of people.[18] As you will recall, the Philistines viciously expropriated their lands from the Hittite and Egyptian empires, just before Israel's conquest of the Promised Land. *Unger's* records the Casluhites being born in Egypt, with their descendants leaving Egypt circa 2900–2700 B.C.E.[19] Scripture records Casluhites as the sons of Mizraim, the founder of Egypt, "from whom the Philistines came" (Gen. 10:13–14). Cretan history, for reference, is segregated into three distinct periods: the Neopalatial, circa 1720–1450 B.C.E.; the Protopalatial, circa

2000–1720 B.C.E.; and the Prepalatial, circa 3200–2000 B.C.E., suggesting antediluvian roots.[20] *Philistine* is Egyptian in its roots, deriving from the Egyptian word *Prst*, or *Plst*.[21] It was the Egyptians who first inferred the name *Philistines* to describe the sea people of Caphtor. Among the Assyrians, this group was referred to as the *Philisti,* or the *Palastu,* while the Hebrew word *Peleshti* is the basis for the name *Palestine*.[22]

Philistines were a non-Semitic race that apparently descended from the infamous Aryans.[23] Aryans, as you will recall, were originally Titans from Atlantis, suggesting that the Philistines possessed formative and direct Nephilim bloodlines. Reliefs at Rameses III's temple at Medinet Habu depict the Philistines as a very tall race of Hellenic-looking people.[24] They were depicted on other Egyptian reliefs that recorded their incursion as clean-shaven and wearing short tunics and Cretan-styled, crested helmets.[25] Again, one wonders, did the surviving, interbred bloodlines of humans and antediluvian giants, the originating Philistines and Hivites, later intermix with their Middle East cousins, the giant Horites and Avvim?

We do know Philistines immigrated to Gaza during the Neopalatial period, circa 1550–1400 B.C.E., obliterating King Suppiluma and the Hittite empire in their wake.[26] After overrunning the Hittite empire, Philistines colonized Gaza, forming their famous Pentapolis of city-states; Gath was the strongest city of the Pentapolis. Philistine pottery bore distinctive Mycenaean characteristics, and the Philistines adopted the Canaanite language and customs.[27] We also know Crete and Santorini were home to the Minoans, who descended suddenly into decline after 1450 B.C.E., when Santorini was destroyed.[28] Minoans were known to be skillful in the art of smelting bronze and other metals and were famous for the home of the antediluvian labyrinth, minotaur, and King Minos, where the bull cult of Poseidon flourished.[29] Minos was the Nephilim son of Europa and Zeus.[30]

Philistines controlled the original iron trade of the ancient world.[31] Scripture records that the Philistines were skilled in the secrets of smelting iron from beyond 1400–1450 B.C.E., for Joshua noted Judah could not annex Gaza because of the Philistine iron chariots and weapons (Judg. 1:18–19; 4:1–3). Although iron is generally accepted in secular history as being popularized and discovered sometime after 1200 B.C.E., certainly the Philistines had gained mastery over this skill beforehand, which provided them a fierce advantage in war.[32] *Nelson's* speculates the Philistines learned this smelting skill from the Hittites, who were discovered utilizing iron around 1400 B.C.E.[33] However, the Philistines defeated the Hittites well before this and likely utilized the knowledge of iron to destroy the Hittite empire. Hittites and Canaanites likely traded for iron implements and weapons of war afterwards. Is it possible the Philistines of Crete, the Minoan descendants, learned to smelt iron while on Crete?

Anthropologists suggest knowledge of the ironworking spread from Mycenae along the sea trade routes. The Philistines originated from within the Mycenaean culture.[34] Iron was known in the ancient world from before 3100 B.C.E., in Egypt; it was known as the “metal from heaven” on cuneiform tablets.[35] An iron blade and an iron axe, circa 2700 B.C.E., were excavated in Mesopotamia and Ur respectively.[36] All this goes to support Genesis’s account of Tubal-Cain forging tools out of bronze and iron (Gen. 4:22). We also know the Philistines hoarded this secret technology for their own monetary gain and military advantage, for they refused to permit Israel to train blacksmiths for their farm implements, for fear the Israelites would smelt iron to be used in weapons of war (1 Sam. 13:19–22). Iron was the secret to the power of the Philistine Pentapolis, along with the Nephilim. Iron weapons and chariots might have been an underlying reason the Israelites did not choose to seize the Promised Land directly through Gaza and the powerful Philistines.

In the days of the Judges and David, a potentate from each of the five-city Pentapolis governed the Philistine cities.[37] These were the ruling Seranim. These rulers exercised complete and absolute power in both peace and war, ensuring the Philistine Pentapolis remained strong and united, in direct contrast to the loosely organized tribes of Israel.[38] It was in this world of Philistines made up of Cherethites, Hivites, Avvites, and Caphtorites, who occupied the five cities of Gath, Ashod, Ashkelon, Gaza, and Ekron that David grew up.

After David slew Goliath, there were still four or five remaining Nephilim/potentates clinging to power; even after David formally became king of Israel, they still ruled the city-states of Philistine. It is wise to conclude that yet another Nephilim likely succeeded Goliath at Gath. With respect to the four named Nephilim/Gibborim kings, the Bible does indeed record the deaths of those four giants by name, and we will briefly follow them to their destruction. To ensure that all are comfortable that these four potentates were Nephilim, please read from 2 Samuel 21:22: “These four

[Ishi-Benob, Saph, Goliath's brother, and the six-toed and six-fingered man] were descendants of Rapha in Gath, and they fell at the hands of David and his men," even though the KJV only refers to these giants as sons of a specific giant. They were Nephilim, pure and simple—end of story.

Ishi-Benob, who Josephus variantly named "Achmon, the son of (the giant) Araph,"[39] was killed in yet another battle Israel waged against the Philistines. The six-fingered and six-toed giant was slain by Jonathon, the son of Shimeah, and David's brother.[40] David sent Jonathon specifically to slay this mutant, who zealously claimed to be a son of the giants, in single combat. In still another battle, this time led by Sibbeccai,[41] Saph was slain at Gob, by Sibbeccai.[42] Sibbeccai also killed a giant identified as Sippai.[43] Josephus recorded Sibbeccai killing many that claimed they were of the posterity of giants.[44]

Lahmi was the remaining giant of the famous four. I have reserved Lahmi for last, because within the Lahmi account, yet another great mystery is resolved for secular cynics of the Bible. The book of 2 Samuel 21:19 ignites the mystery: "In another battle with the Philistines at Gob, Elhanan son of Jaare-Oregim the Bethlehemite killed Goliath the Gittite, who had a spear with a shaft like a weaver's rod." This particular passage from 2 Samuel is perpetually propped up over and over as a classic example of how the Bible continually contradicts itself with its inaccuracies.

This is sheer nonsense; the translation, according to the *New International Version*, can be written in one of two ways. The first is the same as the excerpt quoted above, where the giant slain by Elhanan was Goliath. However, the second possible option is that this passage could be legitimately translated as Elhanan killing the *brother* of Goliath (see the NIV notation).[45] The argument boils down to a matter debated based on your own beliefs.

I am confident, however, that the Bible does not leave such things to chance and error. The Old Testament book of 1 Chronicles 20:5 resolves this riddle, because it records the parallel account to this narrative: "In another battle with the Philistines, Elhanan son of Jair killed Lahmi the brother of Goliath the Gittite, who had a spear with the shaft like a weaver's rod." This is an exact duplication, word for word, as the same account recorded in 2 Samuel, with one small alteration: *Goliath* was substituted for *Lahmi*, the brother of Goliath, which is, of course, the other possible translation for 2 Samuel, except that 1 Chronicles established the true name of Goliath’s brother, who also happened to be one of the five giants listed as Nephilim/ potentate kings of Gaza.

Unger’s citing that 2 Samuel has suffered a corruption in the course of transmission supports my assertion that Elhanan slew a giant other than Goliath. It notes that a close study of the original texts suggests both Samuel and Chronicles originally read as: “And Elhanan the son of Jair killed Lahmi the brother of Goliath,” or “Elhanan the son of Jair the Bethlehemite killed the brother of Goliath.” The Qur’an concurs that, indeed, it was David who slew Goliath from Gath.[46] Contradiction settled.

Yet another outside source suggests an alternate solution to this alleged contradiction by its inference. David Rohl suggests that David was not his original name, that David was the title given to him by the Philistine potentate of Gath and his Hurrian/Horite/Hivite/Amalekite bodyguard when David was made king after the death of Saul. David then became recognized as David, Tadua, and or *Dwd*, or *Dud*, a Hurrian title, or a royal coronation meaning “beloved of Yahweh.” This royal title was later Hebraized to *Dadua* and *David*.[47] Arab literature and poets recorded David as *Da ud*, *Dawud*, and *Dahoud*.[48]

The Bible recorded that David fled to Gath, to the (Avvite) King (Abimelech) Achish, son of King Maoch, for safety during the reign of Saul, but Achish drove David off, as David pretended to be insane.[49] David again returned to Gath and Abimelech/Achish after the death of Samuel, where David and his 600 men were employed by Achish as a mercenary force that fought many battles for the Philistine king.[50] Again, this is the period when David and his men most likely earned their reputation recorded in the Armana Letters as treasonous cutthroats led by a strongman from Hebron.

At this time, Pinsky notes David was the vassal of Achish, calling himself his loyal servant.[51] David fought extensively against the mortal enemy of the Israelites, the Amalekites, during this period, with David earning unheard-of favor and praise from the Philistine king,[52] which is exactly why the Philistine alliance so feared the coronation of David that they immediately attacked David and Israel without notice. Therefore, the Davidum title deriving from the Amalekite bodyguard of a Philistine king of Gath is possible.

Unger's additionally notes that David is translated from Hebrew as both "beloved" and/or possibly even "chieftain" and is very close to the Hurrian translation as "beloved of Yahweh." *Unger's* notes that in the Mari Letters or Tablets, references are made to plundering Benjamites and its leader by the title *Dawidum*, meaning "leader."[53]

Gardner suggests that David was never his real name, that his original name is likely unknown; he suggests that David, in fact, was a title, "the Davidum," like an emperor or a Caesar, and this title stuck in history as his name. All later kings of Judah were then known subsequently as Davidums. As I will discuss in the last half of this book, all senior Essene dynasts from the House of Gold in Grail lore were also known as Davidums.[54] Rohl suggests that David's original given name was "Elhanan," the youngest son of Yishuya, Jesse.[55] If so, then both biblical accounts are accurate, whether it is David or Elhanan slaying Goliath, for they are one and the same person.

Let us return to 2 Samuel that lists the four remaining Rephaite potentates, including Ishi-Benob; Saph; a six-toed and fingered giant; and of course, the brother of Goliath,[56] who we have now established as Lahmi, which Elhanan, son of Jair, slew. This passage is the new, defining light for viewing the David and Goliath epic, for it clearly states Goliath's brother was Rephaite. This, therefore, requires that Goliath was also Rephaite, a Nephilim.

Underlining the conclusion that Goliath was Nephilim is the Scroll of Orpah. After Orpah moved back into the Moabite royal palace, a very tall Philistine warrior passed through Moab.[57] According to Pinsky, this warrior was a descendant of the prehistoric giants.[58] Orpah saw this glorious man and joined herself to him immediately; she then followed him back to Gath.[59] Could this man be the Philistine from Gath who was a descendant of Og that we discussed previously?

The Goliath narrative is not simply a chance happening in history or a fictional enhancement clumsily inserted to glorify the founding king of the royal Jewish dynasty. The David and Goliath story was part of a common narrative that wove itself throughout the Old Testament, whereby the Israelites were commissioned to eradicate the Nephilim plague from the face of the earth. Neither defining context nor backdrop is provided in the recanting of this story. The Covenant obligations established the divine commission of David to complete the 500-year commission of Israel to exterminate the giants from under heaven. It was automatically assumed as common knowledge whenever this epic was told in ancient Israel, but it is either not understood or recognized in our contemporary age.

As Knight and Lomas note, Saul and David's commission to eradicate the giants actually gave legitimacy to their kingship.[60] Remember, kingship descended to earth from on high, from the gods to the Anunnaki/Nephilim, in both the antediluvian and postdiluvian epochs. Therefore, God instructed Saul, and then David, to eliminate and destroy the false claim of the giants to kingship on earth in the Covenant Land so that the throne of David would be the only legitimate throne on earth that was authorized from heaven. Adding insult to injury for the Nephilim kingships, David was first anointed king of Judah at Hebron and then later anointed king of all Israel at Hebron,[61] the infamous capitol for Anak. The legitimacy of heavenly sponsorship for David's dynasty is also the root of why the polytheists will falsify records to illegitimately connect their kings and bloodlines, and more importantly, the end-time, false messiah, to David and Saul, along with their Nephilim/ Dragon bloodlines, for the Davidic throne did, in fact, become the true earthly kingship sponsored by heaven and God.

Nephilim are relegated to the nether reaches of Christianity, not to be disturbed, seriously investigated, or pondered about. Yet we have learned what a large impact these giants imprinted on ancient history, both before and after the flood. I do not endeavor to justify or defend the shelving of this subject matter. But are we really free from the impact of these ancient times in our current age? The answer is "no." And just as the Nephilim heritage retains importance even for our generation, so, too, do the Messianic bloodlines of Genesis and David hold sway over our terminal generation. All intertwine and will culminate in our contemporary Age of Aquarius, which will once more witness the reincarnated spirit of The Genesis 6 Conspiracy in its boldest array of sedition.

SECTION IV: The Terminal Generation

THE TIME OF JACOB’S TROUBLE

CHAPTER 39

NOTHING NEW UNDER THE SUN

What has been will be again, what has been done will be done again; there is nothing new under the sun. Is there anything of which one can say, "Look! This is something new"? It was here already, long ago; it was here before our time.

—Ecclesiastics 1:9–10

So how does all this talk about ancient giants and secret snake societies relate to our generation and to each of us? Why do these heretofore unexplained turning points of human history have relevance to this generation? And how do arcane macro events from ancient epochs illuminate end-time prophecy?

These misunderstood waves of sedition attributed to Nephilim residue have lapped over our contrived view of our human journey. Shocking and terrifying repercussions from hidden Nephilim bloodlines will crest with catastrophic consequences in our generation. Nephilim dregs have persistently manipulated our history with diabolical intentions to divert our destiny. Hence the elemental importance of the historic record only becomes known when we decode it and then learn from it. We must respect and understand what transpired free from revisionist rewrites and interpretive corruptions by collaborating polytheist moles and secular elitists.

Humankind is not appreciably different today than we were 6,000 years ago, if, in fact, we are any different at all. Only our knowledge base and technology have increased, but we are no better, no more intelligent, no more civilized, no less violent, no wiser, and certainly no more evolved. Any statement to the contrary only underscores our ignorance and our arrogance. We have not elevated our species to a godlike status, nor will we ever evolve into such beings while we possess our current, earthly, physical forms and continue to live on the earth as it currently exists and as we perceive it. We are the same beings with the same weaknesses and frailties that our earliest biblical ancestors possessed. This may come as a direct challenge to modern theologies, such as the New Age movement or other pantheistic religions, including Gnosticism and the secular religion of evolution, but it is true.

It is for these reasons we study history. We study history to learn of our mistakes so that we might avert the mistakes of our forefathers. We have all heard the popular proverb: if we do not learn from the mistakes of history, we are destined to repeat the very same mistakes in the future. This is a crucial concept that has been imprinted on the psyche of academia for the last few centuries. It is a notion developed to help guide our species from obliterating ourselves from the face of the planet.

But when unexplained hubris propelled by advances in knowledge and technology blinds us into believing we are superior to our forebears, as we do today, then we have embarked on a journey into destruction. We have been skillfully preconditioned to repeat the mistakes of our forefathers. We have been blinded by self-deluding doctrines, just as our ancestors were before us.

Nothing new is under the sun. Nothing that is being done today or will be done in the future is new. All has been seen and done before. Ancient peoples vehemently believed the future was always to be a replay of the past,[1] merely an earthly replay (projection/matrix), reflecting the melodrama of the heavens. This, of course, is the only manner in which all humankind could be judged fairly throughout the generations. It is the constant and the standard that will be applied at the great judgment. The same forms of narratives and plots have taken place over and over and over in the last 6,000 years, just as the plots to movies have not changed over the last one hundred years. Only the actors, places, and time settings for the movies have changed, but the basic narratives are and will continue to be the same. I believe this generation must be even more diligent to this discipline of discerning all its wisdom from the wise, for this generation will be tested like no other. This is the Terminal Generation described by Hal Lindsey in his book bearing that name.[2]

Scripture teems with prophecy, and specifically apocalyptic prophesies. This is the generation to which I believe all apocalyptic prophecy should be applied. In a nutshell, end-time prophecy foretells the major apocalyptic events that will take place at the end of this age, preceding the arrival of the Messiah. Jesus will save the world and its saints from the coming destruction, leading the saints into a thousand years of peace and heaven on earth before continuing on into eternity.

Endeavoring to interpret the future as it relates to the end times is not sacrilege, nor is it naive. In fact, Scripture instructs us to be wary and alert to the coming of these times:

> As Jesus was sitting on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to him privately. “Tell us when will … this happen, and what will be the sign of your coming and of the end of the age?”
>
> —Matthew 24:3

> No one knows about that day or hour, not even the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but only the Father.
>
> —Matthew 24:36

> Be on guard! Be alert! You do not know when that time will come … What I say to you, I say to everyone. Watch!
>
> —Mark 13:33, 37

We must heed the lessons and major events of antiquity as they apply to end-time prophecy. We must learn the lessons and parallels well so that we might cope with the hell that is surely coming.

Ironically, this future obliteration will be the root cause for humankind uniting in rebellion against God. There is nothing new under the sun, What transpired in antediluvian time, at Babel, and during the conquest of the Covenant Land will replay again. Rebellion will echo loudly once more with our generation. Bloodlines of Nephilim kingships, the Atlantean world empire, the spurious snake cult of secret societies, the Amalekite Blood Covenant against Israel, and the bloodlines of Saul and David all have curious, unexplained relationships throughout history and with this last generation.

CHAPTER 40

THE NEW MAN

Those who are wise will shine like the brightness of the heavens, and those who lead many to righteousness, like the stars for ever and ever. Daniel, close up and seal the words of the scroll until the time of the end. Many will go here and there to increase knowledge.

—Daniel 12:3–4

The antediluvian epoch was a unique period. It was a time teeming with burgeoning knowledge, yet having a vitriolic, split personality.

Is there a hidden relationship between our exploding knowledge and technologies and antediluvian knowledge and technology? Indeed, there is, and the disturbing, prophetic connection is crucial for this unprepared generation. Corruption of knowledge doomed the ancient world to destruction. Without the proper morals and wisdom, the application of such knowledge and its offspring, technology, is a road that only leads to disaster and apocalypse. The descendants of Cain applied their corrupted knowledge in defiance to God. The deployment of the seven spurious sciences was void of any moral governances or acknowledgement of the true God, restricting what the unintended consequences would be. All was heralded with hubris under the guise of advancement or progress. Does this ring familiar?

We live in an age of unprecedented advancements, all accomplished in the name of progress. We have quickly surpassed our ability to assess what we are achieving or where we are heading, due to the pandemic pace of ever increasing knowledge and advancements. Our generation has surrendered its authority, not to mention its ability, to decide what technologies should be advanced and just how we would hope to shape our future. Not only are we speeding headlong into an unknown future, but also there are neither adequate restrictions nor standards governing our burgeoning knowledge. The world is now drunk; it has become intoxicated with technology, utilizing the Internet as an efficient cyber highway to distribute unfiltered knowledge, technology, and rebellion.

Our civilization is standing at the precipice of unknown disaster, teetering at the hands of our own intelligence, but we do not perceive the danger. We only perceive the paradoxical opportunities of false hope. We have spawned a world intoxicated with unrestricted employment of our arrogance. All advancements are double-edged swords that can cut in the direction of good or in the direction of evil. Just as the science of splitting the atom gave us tremendous sources of energy, it also gave us atomic bombs. To this conclusion, then, understand that modern science is rooted in and nourished by the originating seven spurious sciences.

As you will recall, the great antediluvian sin was the sexual union between the human species with the angelic realm. The parallel antediluvian sin was that Cain’s progeny lived out their futile lives in a perpetual state of defiance and rebellion against God. A generation so self-deluded and so dismissive of God could easily be deceived into doing or believing anything.

The notion of angels copulating with humans still permeates modern society. Astonishingly, numerous Hollywood productions seemingly advocate violations of the laws of creation. Films depict beings from the angelic realm having sex with human females, which produces in most encounters hybrid offspring. This rogue notion is a common theme in horror films depicting satanic cults and the theatrical theme for the creation of the Antichrist and his appearance in this last Terminal Generation.

Similar seeds of transgression have been well planted in another unexplained genre that is transfixing this unsuspecting generation. The alien phenomenon is yet another diabolical deception and violation of the laws of creation. One may find it surprising, but the Vatican recognizes the extent of alien encounters and the size of the universe, dictating there must be alien life forms, as testified to by the high-ranking Vatican representative for alien life forms and UFOs, Monsignor Corrado Balducci.[1] If one assumes that alien abductions are deceptive tactics employed by fallen angels, they might be the most likely method to introduce another form of Nephilim. Almost all abductees report similar experiences. They are probed and experimented upon, DNA samples are taken from them, or they are implanted with something. All memories of these experiences are lost unless retrieved through extraordinary techniques such as hypnosis.

I am not defending the credibility of all such encounters, but one must take a step back to consider the sheer number of them, just as the Vatican has. They are ever increasing in numbers, escalating to some form of climax or revelation. Combined with all other UFO mythology, one must at least acknowledge that something is indeed taking place. I believe the alien phenomenon is a spurious deception that is designed for our easily deluded but technologically advanced Terminal Generation.

If there is indeed any truth to the abduction stories, whether they be angelically inspired or actual aliens, then the door is left wide open for a similar violation of the laws of creation that occurred during antediluvian times. The scientific experimentation aliens tend to be concerned with is with regard to DNA and sexual reproduction. The common theme is that the aliens appear to be exploring the compatibility of their DNA to that of humans to create a hybrid being: half human and half alien. This is exactly what was done in antediluvian times with Emmakha Seth.

Expect that such a violation of the laws of creation will be presented to humankind after the world has accepted we are not alone in the universe and after some form of elaborate hoax, which will be a coming-out celebration for these so-called aliens. It is as though we are being seduced into this notion, only waiting for the right time to officially announce it when the people of the world are ready to accept their role as part of a universe teeming with alien life.

Within this elaborate deception, the connection to the unifying mystery religion and the curious antediluvian world becomes clear. Cross-breeding aliens with humans will create a so-called superior human being that no doubt will be larger, stronger, and smarter—and will live longer. If all these traits are not inclusive of this new superhuman, then why do it at all? A superhuman would downgrade the average human, making him or her obsolete. Dull humans resisting the new utopia will not be considered part of the new age but relegated for extinction or slavery. Inferior beings will serve no other useful purpose. They would be considered uncomplimentary reminders of an inferior past. Someone not embracing the coming utopian future will be considered mundane, worthy only for toil, servitude, or extermination, just as Black Heads were regarded in antediluvian Sumerian lore. The mundane will serve those who embrace the new age of universal intelligence, including the new superhuman, and, of course, the aliens.

All these characteristics will be wrapped within the coming mystery religion of Babylon.[2] Superhuman crossbreeds will be cleverly presented as part of the natural evolution—ascension to a new plane of existence en route to humankind's right to full-fledged godhood.

Superhumans may very well be DNA-altered demigods, contemporary Nephilim. Aliens would be considered gods, just as our ancestors considered them. Only in this new age we will understand gods as beings more advanced technologically, mentally, and spiritually. They will be considered gods, but more specifically, *evolved* gods. We humans may want to evolve and aspire into their state.

Under this new age, humankind will be offered a "cosmic gift" unlike any offered before, or so we will be led to believe. These false doctrines will be the norm:

- We are gazing at the precipice of human evolution.
- We are about to vibrate/evolve into a higher being in mass numbers.
- We will collectively ascend into another level of godhood, just as the mystic religions have taught for 6,000 years.

Those who will reject the "gift of godliness" will be debased as pariah, vermin that need to be exterminated for the betterment of humankind. Genocide will once more disfigure this generation in unprecedented levels of savagery.

If the laws of creation are not to be broken through the procreation of a new species via the union of two distinct beings, then we can brace ourselves for another violation of creation. This will swing about in the form of our own advances in technology and gene or DNA manipulations. Humankind is within a precious few short years of both mapping and completely understanding DNA. Having that ability will allow us to create heretofore never thought of life forms, which might both benefit and/or destroy our way of life. It is easy to envision a time where scientists will also begin to manipulate DNA to improve the human being as a species. Once we have changed our DNA and improved our specie's biologically, we will have created a superhuman race.

In other words, humankind is on the precipice of creating a contemporary Nephilim all on its own, even without receiving any assistance offered from aliens or angels. Although this future, modern Nephilim, known in today's mythos as the New Man, is more than plausible and attainable in the next ten to twenty years, I do not believe the modern Nephilim will be a totally human-sponsored endeavor. It is my contention that this future achievement will likely come in partnership with the angelically sponsored aliens, through cross-pollination of DNA. Remember, this is the true form of Nephilim: a union between angels and humans. Nephilim Emmakha Sethites were created from within a cloud by the gods —translation: DNA manipulation via aliens.

A question may arise at this point: why is crossbreeding of different beings or animals sinful? The answer invites another question: what God has created should not be altered or violated, for who can compare with the wisdom of God, and who could improve upon what God has already created? Only delusional pride can account for such unbridled arrogance.

We do not know the unintended consequences of altering the laws of creation. Only God knows. Such alterations ought to be left within the domain of the Creator. Such is the spirit of the law provided for us in Leviticus 19:19 and 37: "Do not mate different kinds of animals…. Keep all my decrees and all my laws, and follow them. I am the Lord." This law does not restrict interbreeding of like species, such as dogs with other forms of dogs. But it clearly instructs against crossbreeding dogs with cats.

Note the language. The keywords in this example are the words "kinds of animals," which was consistent in Scripture for different species. The same language is employed in the flood narrative, where so many so-called expert antiquarians tend to co-opt in support of discrediting the Bible. Noah sailed off with every form of land animal according to its kind, two by two for unclean animals and seven by seven with clean animals (Gen. 7:1–16).

Clearly, Noah did not take every form of every species; the ark was not large enough to do so, and that is not what the Bible recorded. Every kind of species was represented on the ark according to its kind, and whether it was clean or unclean determined the numbers taken. Only the appropriate representatives of those species required to repopulate the earth after the flood were taken. In fact, the Qur’an backs up this assertion, recording Noah only took pairs of each species onto the ark.[3] The respectful appreciation of the efficiency and accuracy of the language dictates a much more feasible and believable flood narrative. So much for the vitriolic cynics!

With the advent of DNA technology, we are about to completely obliterate this decree in unheard-of ways, not to mention what we are prepared to do to our own sanctioned beings. Violations of the laws of creation are sins of the ancient epoch and will be sins of our generation. The Qur’an has noted that those who prostrate to false gods are thus deluded to tamper with God’s creation.[4]

Such potential violations bring to mind legendary, antediluvian Greek beings and fantastic beings from other cultural mythologies. These mythologies teem with fantastic examples of interbreeding different kinds of animals. Technology is quickly advancing to the level that such creations will no longer be relegated to the domain of the fantastic, but rather to the domain of the ordinary extenuation of our abilities.

One begins to ponder whether or not this form of violation extended beyond the realm of the Nephilim and into the realm of other animals. Were the ancient mythologies of humans with the bodies of horses and humans with wings, along with so many other fantastic accounts of human/animal interbreeding, fanciful creations of the imagination or were they very real indeed? Perhaps centaurs and other mythological beings actually existed. Perhaps their existence accounts for such a law being given to the Israelites as the one in Leviticus 19. A plausible nightmare earmarked for this Terminal Generation may reoccur, all backed by the powerful descendants of the Nephilim.

CHAPTER 41

THE NEW AGE OF AQUARIUS

> *One of them said to the man clothed in linen, who was above the waters of the river, "How long will it be before these astonishing things are fulfilled?" The man … lifted his right hand and his left hand toward heaven, and I heard him swear by him who lives forever, saying, "It will be for a time, times, and half a time. When the power of the holy people has been finally broken, all these things will be completed."*
>
> —Daniel 12:6–7

Science, knowledge, and technology have advanced in what most believe is a secular vacuum, with a nonreligious standard for objectivity. But is this truly the case?

Unfortunately, it is not.

We must grasp the unexplained religious implications and their prearranged effects taking place today with respect to science, education, technology, aliens, and related issues. So, then, the question becomes: how have common, unexplained threads woven into a common patchwork theme derived from the same furtive root religion?

Science is merely another religious variety steeped in evolutionary mysticism. In the evolutionary faith, all animals, including humans, continuously evolve along (mystical) “paths” to their highest, most appropriate life forms, culminating with godhood for humankind. The same spurious doctrine and analogous path are taught by New Age and other mystical Eastern religions. Seemingly unconnected organizations exploit similar doctrines, secret rituals, and allegories. Evolution is merely another numinous tentacle that is preaching to naive, mundane masses the doctrine of reincarnation from another perspective. Thus, seemingly innocuous symbolism permeates highly educated fraternities of engineers, scientists, and medical practitioners, with disturbing motifs, oaths, and rings overtly symbolizing their ambiguous links back to the Seven Mystical Sciences of Enoch.

Similar symbolism will be the trademark of modern Nephilim. Mysticism will be their taciturn religion, albeit a “progressive” incantation designed to deceive our generation. Expect the new mysticism will mix all religions, including Christianity, Islam, and Judaism, with all of the pantheistic religions of the world. Mysticism will possess a new scientific slant, intermixed with aliens and a universe that teems with godlike beings. Expect this new religion will rely on Ezekiel and Revelation as examples for aliens being witnessed from antiquity and will claim the throne of God described was actually a spaceship.[1] The Theosophist New Age movement emerged in the 1950s from UFO controversies; by the 1970s and 1980s, New Age had attracted avant-garde thinkers (philosophers) from various scientific communities[2] and the elite.

Expect that Sumerian legends, as Jim Marrs notes with respect to the creation of the human race and the Anunnaki kings, will be liberally employed, supporting the notion that the gods and angels of antiquity were, in fact, extraterrestrials from the mythological twelfth planet, which has now purportedly orbited back into range.[3] The new doctrines will proclaim aliens were the creators of humankind, from which all religion and legends derive. And the new religion will preach that UFO sightings of our age and of ages past were actually spaceships piloted by aliens, as they monitored humankind’s evolutionary path to godhood. This extraterrestrial twelfth planet theory is the main thrust to Zecharia Sitchin’s many novels.

Genetically created superbeings will spearhead this new movement; they will be the undisclosed leaders of religious activities and government, just as they led antediluvian religions and governments. They will be the Nephilim/ Gibborim of our age, the potentates. The new leaders and wannabes of this New Age will be leading the world into an exciting direction of boundaryless peace and cooperation among the peoples of this world. They will be the ones to cement the New World Order together with their new, improved religious doctrines. The world will unite in understanding we are not alone in the universe, in the same manner as the people of the earth do in science fiction films and just as in *Star Trek*. This will be a world redirected to a new path, a world evolving/vibrating, reaching its potential. All things will seem to be possible, including all kinds of miraculous deceptions, signs, and wonders.

This New Age is none other than the famous Age of Aquarius that has been advertised since the 1960s. This is the epoch of the Water Bearer, Aquarius, whose ideals, according to author Dan Brown of *The DaVinci Code*, will reflect humankind's need to learn the truth about all things, as well as its seizure of the right to learn and decide for himself what to do.[4] These New Age ideals are finely scripted euphemisms designed to disguise humanity's naive independence from God while en route to rebellion.

This is the ancient, mystic dogma of Gnosis and enlightenment. It is the future resolution to the incident at Eden, where Eve, and then Adam, ate from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, the Tree of Gnosis and Knowledge, whereby they unwittingly chose independence for humankind. All this is part of the revenge plot of Satan to deceive humankind—that he is actually liberating humankind with knowledge, freethinking, and free choice, away from the bonds of ignorance and the Christian God, who enslaves humankind.

However, the Age of Aquarius in astrology is a period of harsh judgment reigned over by Saturn. Aquarius is "the Water Bearer, who is the bringer of the [fiery] torrents from heaven."[5] The Age of Aquarius, the end of this age, the end time, and the last days all encompass the same idea. It will be a time of tribulation and heartrending decision, when all will have to choose between Satan and his deceptions rooted in reason and logic versus faith in the righteousness, peace, freedom, and enlightenment of the true God. Spurious forces will bend truth in ways that will impress a pretzel manufacturer. They will interpret the Bible allegorically, proclaiming the end of this age and the end times expressed by literalist Christians are nothing more than deceptions of an apocalyptic cult entrenched in its alleged evil beginnings.

Spurious forces will declare literalist Christians are nothing more than illegitimate apostates and imposters, who were originally given legitimacy by Emperor Constantine and the heretical Pauline sect of Catholicism, which has persecuted the true Gnostic Christian church for 2,000 years. To this end, the Gospel of Judas charges the twelve disciples and the bishops, together with the Roman persecutors, as all who worship demons.[6] Spurious forces will proclaim the end of this age doctrine fanatically shouted by literalist Christians is nothing more than a deception that only refers to the end of the astrogical age of Pisces.[7] Spurious forces will declare the New Age of Aquarius will be the beginning to the Theosophist thousand years of peace led by the Theosophist false messiah, known figuratively as “Lord Maitreya,” the new Buddha.

For the record, the Bible does not state the end of this age is the end of this world, even though it will come close to being so. Scripture does, however, state that after the great tribulation and the Wrath of God, the world will enter into the true millennium, a thousand years of peace led by Jesus, before moving onto eternity (see Rev. 20:1–6). Do not be deceived!

As the nations of the world relinquish their authority over to world government, evil potentates will seize control under the guise of peace, prosperity, and the advancement of humankind, but the end result will be far different than the pastoral picture painted by those potentates. What they will sell as “peace” will lead to destruction.

This coming world empire will not be as unified as its illusion will promise. Differences among the nations will continue to resurface, dragging this utopian empire back into the depths of greed, power, and war. It will be just as the prophet Daniel prophesied:

> Just as you saw that the feet and toes were partly baked of clay and partly of iron, so this will be a divided kingdom; yet it will have the strength of iron in it, even as you saw iron mixed with clay. As the toes were partly iron and partly clay, so this kingdom will be partly strong and partly brittle. And just as you saw the iron mixed with baked clay, so the people will be a mixture and will not remain united, any more than iron mixes with clay.
>
> —Daniel 2:41–43

The New Age will be a world steeped in rebellion against the true God. Those who overtly stand against God will be the potentates who hold all the power; they will emulate their ancestors, the Nephilim and Nimrod.

Potentates will be the ones who will entrench state-sponsored tyranny, imposing the new religion upon the entire world, just as the Nephilim and Nimrod did. Those who oppose the new religion will be exterminated. One can imagine secret police in the style of the Gestapo, KGB, and the death squads of Central America being deployed around the world to carry out the extermination of the “obsolete” humans, the ones who refuse to accept the New World Order and it’s demonically sponsored religious systems and beliefs.

One can also imagine a rekindling of the blood oath sworn by Amalekites and Nephilim against the descendants of Jacob. One can easily imagine another holocaust against both those who do not accept the new religion and, in particular, against the people of Judah and Israel. This will be the time of Jacob’s trouble, as described by the prophet Jeremiah (Jer. 30:7). The time will come when the demon-sponsored religion and government will once more take up the blood covenant, vengefully turning to wage war against all branches of the people of Israel (Dan. 11:3–32). After all, the children of Israel are the naturally born enemies of the disciples of demons and fallen angels, while the faithful Gentile followers of God are Israel’s adopted brothers.

The world will be separated into ten kingdoms or regions (Rev. 17:12) that are governed by evil potentates but united under one New World Order, until the Antichrist usurps absolute control. It will be through these kingdoms (blocks of nations) that the world will be paraded into destruction. Peace will not be the signature this empire will be remembered by, but rather war and destruction. The future potentates will be deluded into war by demons, just as their ancient, antediluvian counterparts were.[8]

Fallen angels that procreated with humankind and were imprisoned into the Abyss will be released:

> The fifth angel sounded his trumpet, and I saw a star that had fallen from the sky to the earth. The star was given the key to the shaft of the Abyss. When he opened the Abyss, smoke rose from it like the smoke from a gigantic furnace. The sun and the sky were darkened by the smoke from the Abyss. And out of the smoke locusts came down upon the earth and were given power like that of scorpions of the earth…. They made as king over them the angel of the Abyss, whose name in Hebrew is Abaddon, and in Greek, Apollyon.
>
> —Revelation 9:1–11

Dark angels will create the same havoc they created in the antediluvian epoch. The evil these demons and fallen angels will create cannot be perceived, and they will not be limited to merely creating modern Nephilim. War and destruction will be on their minds:

> I saw three evil spirits that looked like frogs; they came out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast and out of the mouth of the false prophet. They are spirits of demons performing miraculous signs, and they go out to the kings of the whole world, to gather them for battle on the great day of God Almighty.
>
> —Revelation 16:13–14

The evil potentates of the New World Order will pave the way for the Antichrist and for Armageddon by permitting demons and fallen angels to delude them. Beware of “the Path” and “the Way” of the Antichrist and his alleged messenger! They will bring about earthly, divine judgment by fire through their own arrogant actions unto the inhabitants of the earth, whereas the antediluvian Nephilim brought the divine judgment by water unto the inhabitants of the earth.

The seeds of destruction have been well planted. The harvest is sure to reap a bumper crop based upon the fertile conditions of this Terminal Generation. All will conclude with the great, allegorical harvest of the end time, renowned as *Armageddon.*[9] Two distinct and important institutions rooted in antiquity will sprout among the terminal crop like weeds, overtaking the garden and suffocating it. These two crucial institutions required by prophecy, and utilized by God as His sickle, are the great end-time universal, political, and religious institutions, united by the spirit of the end-time catastrophe, all of which will be covered in the chapters to follow.

CHAPTER 42

THE SIGN OF NOAH

Just as it was in the days of Noah, so shall it be in the days of the Son of Man. People were eating, drinking, and marrying and being given away in marriage, up to the day Noah entered the ark. Then the flood came and destroyed them all. It was the same in the days of Lot. People were eating and drinking, buying and selling, planting and building. But the day Lot left Sodom, fire and sulfur rained down from heaven and destroyed them all. It will be like this on the day the Son of Man is revealed.

—Luke 17:26–30

What has happened in the past will happen once more in the future with similar results. We are a very predictable species. It is for these contentious reasons that those who are wise must devote close attention to the signs of the time and, more specifically, to the signs of our generation.

Passages in Luke and Matthew document an oration by Jesus,[1] clarifying when the end of the age is to come and what will be the signs that generation should look for. The end of the age is additionally known as the Second Coming of Jesus. Therefore, we must interpret both these passages through this eye-opening context as a sign to the last generation of this age, when the Messiah will return and the Apocalypse will unfold with all its fury.

Is it not perplexing that one of the central signs warning the last generation should come from prehistory? Does it not astonish you that the last generation is forewarned by Christ to comprehend the epic narrative concerning Noah and the flood in an age when Genesis's testimony has been purposely and unaccountably relegated onto the shelves of fictional mythology?

This Terminal Generation could not possibly be more arrogant about or ignorant of the Bible's true origins, let alone its truths and warnings. This generation could not possibly be more blinded to the truth or unprepared for what is about to take place. Again, spiritual blindness is not a coincidence; it is part of the warning, the prophetic signature for the Terminal Generation. This generation's hubris is a crucial component to the Sign of Noah and the requisite platform to support the end-time conspiracy that the balance of this book will continue to argue and examine.

The Sign of Noah does not refer to the great deluge. Nor does it refer to the sign of the rainbow covenant between Noah and God, when God promised never to judge the earth again by water.[2] Rather, understanding the Sign of Noah is to learn and be forewarned about the circumstances of Noah's generation, which brought the deluge Apocalypse upon the antediluvian world. Jesus prophesied circumstances that would parallel the days of Noah.

This generation's fate will not be manifested in watery, divine judgment. God did not promise to never punish humankind again; He only promised not to judge the earth with water again. Humankind will be judged once more, this time by fire, just as Sodom and Gomorrah were punished.[3] This is why the Sign of Noah is linked to Lot in Luke. Both Matthew and Luke echo Nephilim negligence that precipitated the corruption, echoes this generation ignores at its peril. Somehow Nephilim will mark this generation. The question is: how.

According to Gnostic teaching, the flood was merely a prototype for the end of the age.[4] Therefore, the end of the age will be destroyed by a similar catastrophe, but mostly with fire this time. The *Popol Vuh* also recorded a deluge of fire will destroy this age, whereas a deluge of floods destroyed the last age.[5] North American Indian legends further instruct that certain ages of the world inevitably end in catastrophe.[6] Both ancient Mayan and Babylonian astrological lore contain catastrophes past caused by fire at specific celestial precession cycles, or dates.[7] Remember, the Egyptian priest in Plato's *Timaeus* warned future generations that the earth was traumatized many times throughout the ages with global catastrophes caused by fire and water,[8] and it will be again.

That Apocalypses would reoccur was a doctrinal foundation stone in antiquity. The Roman author Seneca quoted Berosus, stating that when planets align in Cancer, the world is ravaged by fire; when the planets align in Capricorn, the world is ravaged with water.[9] Berosus was one of numerous ancients citing global destruction within cycles of time, but according to John Michael Greer, Berosus is the only known astronomer to have fixed dates to these cataclysmic events based entirely on astrological alignments and celestial precession of the zodiacal ages.[10] Earth's orbit moves the equinoctial and solistial points backwards throughout the zodiac at a rate of one degree every seventy-two years; one great month (a zodiacal age like Pisces) is 2,160 years.[11]

These astrological and astronomical signs are undoubtedly end-time signs in the stars, sun, and moon prophesied by Luke, Matthew, and Mark: "There will be signs in the sun, moon, and stars. On earth, nations will be in anguish and perplexity at the roaring and tossing of the sea. Men will faint from terror, apprehensive of what is coming on the world, for the heavenly bodies will be shaken."[12]

The antediluvian age was destroyed because of evil and violence and because Nephilim fashioned the rebellion. So will it be for the same reasons this age will be destroyed with fire, because of evil, corruption, violence, and rebellion fanned by Nephilim descendants. The Gnostic holy book of the Invisible Spirit corroborates this line of thought, noting that the Incorruptible Race, the Posterity of Seth, were the cause of the flood and will also be the cause for the destruction at the end of this age.[13] I think that most will be utterly disturbed and shocked at the direct parallels our current generation holds with the last three generations preceding the flood. The book of Wisdom documents the evils cursing the last generation before the flood:

> A blessing was on Noah's boat that allowed righteousness to survive, but a curse is on an idol made by human hands…. And so God's divine Judgment will fall on pagan idols, because even though they are made from something God created, they become horrible things that trap the souls of foolish people…. Sexual immorality began when idols were invented. They have corrupted human life ever since they were first made. Idols have not always existed, nor will they exist forever. It was human pride that brought them into the world, and that is why a quick end is planned for them…. Once there was a father who was overwhelmed with grief at the untimely death of his child, so he made an image of that child who had been suddenly taken from him. He then honored a dead human being as a god, and handed on secret rituals and ceremonies to those who were under his authority. As time went on, these ungodly customs became stronger. Finally it became law, and idols were worshipped at the command of powerful rulers…. So all this became a deadly trap, because people who were grieving, or under royal authority, would take objects of stone or wood, and give them the honor reserved for the One God. One thing led to another. It was not enough to be wrong about the knowledge of God. They lived in a state of evil warfare, but they were so ignorant they called it peace. They murdered children in their initiation rituals, celebrated secret mysteries, and held wild ceremonial orgies with unnatural practices. They no longer kept their lives or their marriages pure. A man might kill another by an act of treachery or cause him grief by committing adultery with his wife. Everything was a complete riot of bloody murder, robbery, deceit, corruption, faithlessness, disorder, falsehood, harassment of innocent people, ingratitude, moral decay, sexual perversion, broken marriages, adultery, and immorality. The worship of idols, whose names should never be spoken, is the beginning and the end, the cause and the result of every evil.[14]

The Wisdom passage provides context to the behavior permitted, implemented, encouraged, and enforced by royalty. These depravities will have an identifiable signature for our generation.

The first perversion was idolatry. *Nelson's* defines *idol* or *image* as "a symbol of an object of worship and/or a false god, but generally a statue or something of human manufacture people substitute for God."[15] Perhaps the best definition of an idol is something we make into a god, anything that stands between us in the worship of God, and/or something we substitute for God. *Webster's New Compact Format Dictionary* defines *idol* as "an image or object of worship."

So just how does all this reflect on our generation? In pantheistic religions, all worship their gods via idolatry. All utilize idols in their worship. They bow down to these statues or objects or trees as part of their ritualistic ceremonies of worship. It is the worship of one or many false gods through the use of idols that is important, for it is the fundamental discipline of worship for many of the world's religions.

Christianity, too, is inexplicably enveloped with the sin of idolatry. Christians of this generation and many before us are all too guilty of breaking the second and third commandments concerning idolatry. Take a careful look at the third commandment in Exodus 20:4–5: “You shall not make for yourself any idols in the form of anything in heaven above or on the earth beneath or in the waters below. You shall not bow down to them or worship them.”

Our churches are inundated with idols that allegedly aid in worship—the cross, icons, and rosaries, for examples, which are innocently placed between God and us or are employed as some form of intermediary between God and us. Modern Christianity is swamped with idols that we imprudently worship or use in worship. The second and third commandments are clear: God commands us to never create images of beings or objects in heaven, on earth, or in the seas and oceans for use in any form of worship. Yet our churches are overflowing with such embellishments.

God only requires a simple altar for worship, void of idols and beauty:

> Make an altar of earth for me and sacrifice your burnt offerings and fellowship offerings…. If you make an altar of stones for me, do not build it with dressed stones, for you will defile it if you use a tool on it. And do not go up to my altar on steps, lest your nakedness be exposed on it.
>
> —Exodus 20:24–26

The only objects of worship permitted were those God had instructed, which symbolized the throne of God on earth, such as the Ark of the Covenant. These one-of-a-kind, holy objects were to be housed only in the Holy of Holies, nowhere else.

This generation idolizes a great many things. We idolize famous people, only because they are famous. We idolize power and money. We idolize computers and technology as the gods of our future. As a society, we bow down every day to these things, for they are our masters or our gods. We do not control them, but they enslave and rule over our lives. Our modern civilization is nothing more than a monument to idolatry. We are no better than our forefathers. We serve our technology and idolize the wealth it creates. We are mesmerized by the evil, hypnotic suggestions planted by evil spirits, who cleverly play to our narcissistic vulnerabilities of greed and jealousy, all the while denying God created all things.

In fact, this generation will prove to be one of the most wicked and arrogant generations ever to walk this earth, reviving idolatry en masse unlike any generation before it. Idolatry will reign supreme as religious ceremony and daily life once the great harlot religion, Babylon, takes its seat on its preordained throne as the universal religion and the queen of kingdoms in the last days.[16] It will introduce a new paradigm for all idols at the midpoint of the tribulation, the abomination that causes desolation, in the future holy temple at Jerusalem.[17] The great mystical religion of antiquity will once more be imposed on us in the coming age of unbridled tyranny powered through world government.

Wisdom 14 states that idol worshippers in the antediluvian age murdered their children in the initiation rituals of the universal religion. I do not know whether or not child sacrifice will come back as part of the end-time harlot religion, but certainly we must be prepared for such an abominable possibility. Indeed, it was all part of the bull cult of Poseidon and Molech that also poisoned Middle Eastern, mystical religions up to, during, and beyond the age of Israel and Judah. Even if the end-time religion does not incorporate child sacrifice into its secret initiation ceremonies, our current generation is still undeniably disfigured by mass murder of children, infanticide.

Consider the abortion crisis. There are more than one million abortions performed in the United States alone every year, with uncounted millions around the world. As many as one in four pregnancies is being aborted today. The slaughter of unborn children is a disfiguring trait of our generation, but it has been diabolically disguised under the spurious doctrine of women’s free choice. Abortion doctrine is a disfiguring hangover from Progressives; Nazis; and turn-of-the-century, Rockefeller-sponsored globalism. Eugenics, the practice of improving human characteristics through birth and population control, was initially funded by the Rockefeller, Harriman, and DuPont families. Abortion extends directly from eugenic dogma to control the population of the “inferior”—the unwanted and the poor. In 2006, Planned Parenthood received a third of its funding from globalist, tax-exempt foundations I will detail later, while the balance came from the globalist-bent government in Washington.[18] Abortion was part of the evil antediluvian belief system. Azazel taught antediluvian women the doctrine and methodology of abortion.[19]

Abortion is yet another shameful doctrine reflecting Enochian mysticism, which echoes its warning to our generation. Conversely, Scripture directs, “If men who are fighting hit a pregnant woman … if there is a serious injury, you are to take life for life, eye for an eye, and tooth for a tooth."[20] Clearly, Old Testament Law recognized unborn life with after-born life as equal. In the view of Scripture, abortion is murder. This generation justifies infanticide under a spurious, religious doctrine of tolerance and choice, a cornerstone in our dubious preparation for godhood.

The next charge levied against Noah's world was adultery. One can certainly sympathize with this antediluvian heresy in view of our own generation. Marriages break down at a rate of 50 percent in North America, with similar numbers, or greater, reflected in polls showing adultery taking place in existing marriages. Adultery has become acceptable as extramarital contraband and entertainment. Adultery is a clear sign to this generation.

Murder, robbery, deceit, corruption, and disorder were other disfiguring traits plaguing the generations preceding the flood. The same can be stated of our generation. Innocent life has lost its respect. Murder is rampant. Crimes of every sort are pandemic across the globe. Our world is desensitized to violence. We naively persist in a world of the "me generation," where only what matters to the individual is important. Normal rules of restraint and respect are shoved to the side, just as evolutionary doctrine teaches our innocent youth. Children are raised in a wayward society, desensitized, and taught to summarily denigrate the innocent. We are, therefore, cursed to an ever more violent and corrupt future, with each subsequent generation further contaminating the generation that comes after it.

Corruption is the way of business and the world; it is the norm, not the exception. It is now difficult to differentiate many of the actions and values of business, government, and their genitive institutions from those of organized crime. Yet, all this is veiled beneath superficial platitudes of the New Age doctrine we are now teaching our youth, in which corruption and bigotry are commonly branded as tolerance.

Harassment of innocent people today is rampant. Just to be considered religious or Christian, by its application, is to be considered a leper. One is all but ostracized from mainstream society if you are Christian. One is taunted, jeered, and discriminated against, on a daily basis, particularly in the business and government world. Even those who are not professed Christians but opt to do what is right are summarily taunted and ostracized for doing so. We live in a world where disrespect, violence, corruption, sexual perversion, lies, and all forms of moral decay prosper. Any who stand against such things stand dangerously outside the mainstream of society, and they endure disdain from those who pride themselves on being "tolerant."

Sexual perversions are yet additional sinful signs identifying this generation. Although it is intolerant, politically incorrect, and increasingly illegal to speak out against such perversions, immorality and sexual perversion is pandemic today. One can easily cite homosexuality and lesbianism as the most prominent of these scriptural transgressions, but one must also include group sex, sado-masochistic perversions, bestiality, sexual molestations, sexual harassment, rape, prostitution, pornography, child molestation, child rape, and many other forms of sexual perversion. Our society is plagued with sexual perversion, just as it was in the days of Noah and Sodom, only now we uphold these perversions in the names of civility, tolerance, and enlightenment.

The prophetic Sign of Noah includes another subtle and compelling description connecting both epochs. Luke and Matthew described the days leading up to judgment as calm and ordinary as Noah's Apocalypse approached; so it will be for Armageddon. People were not concerned for their safety; they carried on just as they had always done, just as their forefathers had done. Neither narrative suggests the people gave any heed to the disasters that were to come. One can only attribute this lack of urgency to a total state of nonbelief, and not ignorance. They shrugged off the apocalyptic prophecies and all the dire warnings from a plethora of God's prophets.[21] This is how it will be with regard to the second coming, Armageddon, and how it is today, in truth.

Very few ponder the pending Apocalypse with any solemnity. Even devoted Christians are ignorant of the signs of the times, while other Christians imprudently refuse to interpret the Bible literally, discounting any possibility of such things ever having the remote chance of taking place. Today, only select contingents of contrarians view the Bible both literally and seriously, but this elite minority is consistently battered with malice, as Noah was. They are viciously slandered and labeled as vitriolic fanatics emanating from maliciously motivated, apocalyptic cults. The cries of warning are falling, and will continue to fall, on the egotistical and closed ears of an evil generation, deluded with its own self-importance, believing they're on the evolutionary path of godhood. Nevertheless, God will mercifully send 144,000 prophets and two very special prophets from ages past to warn this narcissistic Terminal Generation of the imminent Apocalypse.[22]

CHAPTER 43

THE GODLESS GENERATION

But mark this: There will be terrible times in the last days. People will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boastful, proud, abusive, disobedient to their parents, ungrateful, unholy, without love, unforgiving, slanderous, without self-control, brutal, not lovers of the good, treacherous, rash, conceited, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God—having a form of godliness but denying its power. Have nothing to do with them. They are the kind who worm their way into homes and gain control over weak-willed women, who are loaded down with sins and are swayed by all kinds of evil desires, always learning but never able to acknowledge the truth.

—2 Timothy 3:1–7

Notice the similarities in the signs in 2 Timothy to the sins of Noah's age. Both eerily describe a rebellious, independent, and evil people.

Is any of this pertinent and/or poignant for today? Are we, indeed, the cursed, godless generation? Indubitably we are, particularly if one considers the misguided priority placed upon the individual. All is void of the righteous trait celebrated as honoring and garnering respect for others. We are more concerned with our own outward beauty than our inward beauty. Just look at the diets, exercise programs, cosmetic surgeries, hair coloring, tattoos, body piercing, and the fashion industry's clothes that preoccupy our society, all in pursuit of beautiful people. Children are caught in a void of peer pressure fashion and the pursuit of material goods. We have created a generation of self-lovers that will only increase in its vulgarity.

The apostle Paul's second letter to Timothy goes on to describe this generation as "lovers of money." Have you ever read about a generation so preoccupied with money and materialism as this one? We are a generation living for now and for the good times our money can buy. Wealth is the measuring stick and the ranking of class in the world today—whether it be new money or old money, it matters not. What matters only is that you have it. Was there ever a more consuming generation than this?

The next set of adjectives is once more accurate to this godless generation. We are described as "proud, abusive, disobedient to [our] parents, and ungrateful." We are so proud of and arrogant about our accomplishments. We delude ourselves into believing we are better than our parents and ancestors. We dismiss our parents as outdated and obsolete in the modern world of technology. We delude ourselves into believing we are superior; we are more tolerant, less violent, more intelligent, and more civilized. Soon our children will consider us obsolete in the face of changing technology, and they will discard us easily and without emotion, just as we have taught them. We will soon become a burden to our technologically enlightened progeny.

"Without love, unforgiving, slanderous, without self-control, brutal, not lovers of the good, treacherous, rash, conceited," and "lovers of pleasure" are the next set of descriptions for this enlightened generation. Again, I find them all to be right on the money. We are without true, collective love; we are only concerned with ourselves. Has there ever been a more slanderous society, lacking restraint, or without regard for what one says about one another? Slanderous denigration of others is now the standard we elevate ourselves with, through devaluing others. We are indeed without self-control, not wanting to be limited in any regard or denied anything; pleasure is our only pursuit. We are rash in our decisions, not concerned with the future, and swollen with conceit because of our accomplishments.

It is the last denunciation that is so poignant, enlightening, and disturbing. Our generation is prophesied to be ever learning but never acknowledging truth, having a form of godliness but denying God’s power. What an accurate portrayal of our current generation. We are indeed ever learning, with our knowledge now doubling every three years or less. We are blessed with data banks of knowledge and are unlocking the secrets to the universe. We are overpowering nature and are at the precipice of decoding and manipulating DNA. But with all this learning, understanding, knowledge, and technology, we do not have the wisdom to interpret its meaning or the moral discipline for its application.

We are so blinded by pride, conceit, and arrogance that we cannot see God; nor do we care to recognize or acknowledge the Author (Word) of our creation. We observe the genius to God’s design and handiwork every day, but we deny His very existence. We decipher God’s obscure but requisite laws governing the universe but tribute random chance for its manifestation and perfection. We seek to comprehend life forms, with their mystifying, complex organs and bewildering, wholly integrated bio-systems, all which remain well beyond the reach of our ingenuity and understanding. But we attribute these unexplainable manifestations to the mathematic impossibly of unintelligent evolution.

We do not recognize the signature of God imprinted in all of creation and the universe. We deny God as the Creator, searching any and all other places and possibilities for answers, simply to justify our arrogance, ignorance, and independence. The apostle Paul describes the Terminal Generation:

> For since the Creation of the world God’s invisible qualities—his eternal power and divine nature—have been clearly seen, being understood from what has been made, so that men are without excuse. For although they knew God, they neither glorified Him as God nor gave thanks to Him, but their thinking became futile and their foolish hearts darkened.
>
> —Romans 1:20–22

We are the same as our impious and independent antediluvian ancestors, who refused to honor God for all things.

Indeed, if we were not approaching the last days, I am certain uncountable criminal investigations would have already been initiated.

Serious reprimands would already have been dispensed, publicly punishing the powerful (and seemingly paradoxical) left wing and fascist academia. Fascism began as a nationalistic, totalitarian, right-wing belief system, but one must remember Nazi Fascism (national socialism) was a mutation of left-wing socialism. This is a concept essential to understanding the coming partnership between the end-time universal religion and world government.

Webster defines fascism as those believing in principles and practices of a strong centralized government, similar to that in Italy that suppressed all criticism and opposition.[1] In a general sense, fascists believe in an authoritarian style of central government and social organization that is intolerant to opposing views, which viciously suppresses free speech. Therefore, I have coined contemporary Progressives as "left-wing fascists," closely related to Nazis from Germany.

Hence, Vitriolic intelligentsia rally against and hunt into submission any who suggest Intelligent Design, even though Intelligent Design resolves the unexplainable conundrums to the origin and progression of life, as well as the universe. So much for objectivity and the open debate of ideas in the sciences and universities. Rancorous mystical scientists and globalists now inflict a numinous inquisition against all who disagree with them, including those who disagree on the theory of global warming. The discussion is not over. Only elitists, and what I have coined left-wing fascists, wish to eliminate debate, the free flow of ideas, and respect for opposing views.

The Apocalypse will engulf this deluded generation without the fanfare one would expect. And if not for the true elect and the forthcoming prophets of God,[2] this generation would unknowingly plunder its way into oblivion, even though the Apocalypse is the event the Bible most often refers to. The suggestion that the Terminal Generation will be so blind to the times we are in and ignore all the warnings from Scripture is seemingly unbelievable, and yet we are witnessing its inauguration. People now eagerly embrace this prophecy from 2 Peter 3:3–4:

> First of all, you must understand that in the last days scoffers will come, scoffing and following their own evil desires. They will say: "Where is this 'coming' he promised"?

People now scoff at the promised second coming, and they will in ever increasing numbers, especially after the rapture tragedy, casting them as wistful dreams from spiritually retarded and obsolete fanatics. This Terminal Generation is recreating Sodom and Gomorrah on a global scale. This may seem to be a gross overstatement of analogy at first perusal, but I assure you it is not. Before this last generation is finished, the world will appear like a reincarnated Sodom and Gomorrah, which was why Jesus' words in Luke 17:28–29 associate this end-time generation with the generation of Sodom and Gomorrah, as well as with the flood:

> It was the same in the days of Lot. People were eating and drinking, buying and selling, planting and building. But the day Lot left Sodom, fire and sulfur rained down from heaven and destroyed them all. It will be just like this on the day the Son of Man is revealed.

The Sodom parallel is strikingly appropriate and ingenious in its transitional analogy to the end times. The antediluvian, divine judgment was with water, after which God promised in a covenant represented by the rainbow that He would never judge the earth by water again.[3] The judgment of the end times will be with fire and brimstone, just as Sodom and Gomorrah were judged,[4] once more demonstrating the perfection in which the Bible supports itself. Jesus' words in Luke, even though Jesus did not mention Nephilim, underscore the same kinds of crimes as those at Sodom and Gomorrah and those that took place just before the flood. And I must note that both the flood and Sodom communities were infested with Nephilim that corrupted those societies. Jesus then foreshadows with Sodom what the end-time judgment will be akin to—divine judgment by fire.

The sins of Sodom, Gomorrah, and the cities of the plain were well known and infamous. They were renowned for their violence and sexual improprieties, which included all forms of sexual deviance, orgies complete with human sacrifice, polygamy, rape, bestiality, adultery, and many other deviant practices. Again, this is a specific moral equivalent for this generation. Have we ever seen such a widespread movement euphemized under the banner of sexual liberation and equality since Sodom? Remember, too, that Gnostics remember Sodom and Gomorrah as ancient cities of light, knowledge, and sexual tolerance, just as they refer to the coming end times as the same sort of New Age of Enlightenment.

The apostle Paul foresaw this age:

> Although they claimed to be wise, they became fools and exchanged the glory of the immortal God for images made to look like mortal man and birds and animals and reptiles. Therefore, God gave them over in the sinful desires of their hearts to sexual impurity for the degrading of their bodies with one another. They exchanged truth for a lie, and worshipped and served created things rather than the Creator—who is forever praised. Amen. Because of this, God gave them over to shameful lusts. Even their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones. In the same way the men also abandoned natural relationships with women and were inflamed with lust for one another. Men committed indecent acts with other men.

—Romans 1:22–27

Just as it was in the time of Noah, when only eight were deemed worthy of saving, and just as it was in the time of Lot, when just four were granted the right to survive (although Lot's wife died after fleeing the city),[5] so will it be for this generation. The elect will transform directly to heaven in a miraculous, prophetic event of the last days, before the earth will be judged by fire.[6] This is exactly what took place when Enoch of the line of Seth was transformed directly into heaven before the deluge as a reward for and a sign for future generations of his righteousness and faith.[7]

Rapture will occur in this generation, saving a select few from the horrors of the wrath of God. Just as another select few rode out the wrath aboard an ark, so will there be an additional select number not raptured, who will have their righteousness baptized by fire during tribulation.[8] Just as Lot and his daughters survived Sodom, some saints will endure God's wrath[9] to help repopulate the earth at the beginning of Christ's thousand-year reign.

The prophet Micah describes the godless generation of the tribulation best:

> The godly have been swept away from the land; not one upright man remains. All men lie in wait to shed blood; each hunts his brother with a net. Both hands are skilled in doing evil; the ruler demands gifts, the judge accepts bribes, the powerful dictate what they desire—they all conspire together. The best of them is like a brier, the most upright worse than a thorn hedge. The day your watchman has come, the day God visits you. Now is the time of their confusion. Do not trust a neighbor; put no confidence in a friend. Even with her who lies in your embrace be careful of your words. For a son dishonors his father, a daughter rises up against her mother, a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law—a man's enemies are the members of his own household. But as for me, I watch in hope for the Lord, I wait for my God my Savior.
>
> —Micah 7:2–7

This wicked generation has been reserved for these last days so that the mystery of God might be completed. Hearts will continue to be hardened, just as the hearts of the people of Noah's time were and just as Pharaoh's heart was hardened during the time of the Exodus.[10]

> Furthermore, since they did not think it worthwhile to retain the knowledge of God, he gave them over to a depraved mind, to do what ought not to be done. They have become filled with every kind of wickedness, evil, greed, and depravity. They are full of envy, murder, strife, deceit and malice. They are gossips, slanderers, God-haters, insolent, arrogant and boastful; they invent ways of doing evil; they disobey their parents; they are senseless, faithless, heartless, and ruthless. Although they know God's righteous decree that those who do such

> things deserve death, they not only continue to do these very things but also approve of those who practice them.
>
> —Romans 1:28–32

No matter how many warnings or signs there are, they will not soften this generation’s hearts. The Apocalypse cannot be avoided. Time is short and the task overwhelming. The balance of this book is a handbook for the saints in regard to what is and what will be.

CHAPTER 44

BABYLON CITY

Woe! Woe, O great city, O Babylon, city of power! In one hour your doom has come!

—Revelation 18:10

Revelation is the most misunderstood book of the Bible and the only book of the Bible that comes with a special blessing for those who take the time to read it.[1]

So, then, why is such an important testament cloaked in so many allegories? Is there an unidentified design to these oblique allegories? Could the book of the future be encrypted with intentional allegories from apocalypses past?

Revelation is reserved for believers who steadfastly study the Bible. You see, for committed enthusiasts, the allegories of Revelation are not stumbling blocks, nor are they subjective in their application. All scriptural allegories are self-defined within biblical text. One is only required to be knowledgeable enough to know where to look to decode Revelation's metaphors. There is no mystery to it whatsoever.

The most obvious point of reference connecting this generation to ancient epochs is Babylon. Our civilized world is ready to naively embrace a new Tower of Babel that will bring about all the evils of the first. It will include a new Nimrod, who is now patiently waiting in the wings for his preordained time.

The people of the plain chose to not be divided—to live as one people, with one language, with one government, with one collective ambition. They bound together with such collective intensity that they rebelled against God, utilizing a clever repository built in antediluvian times by the progeny of Lamech. With this illicit knowledge, nothing was beyond their grasp. The newfound technology and knowledge was sponsored by the spurious religion, which attached itself to the illicit knowledge. This illicit knowledge and power stemming from the authority of the religion enabled Nimrod to usurp absolute power over the united people of Shinar. It is through this lens that we must critically examine our Terminal Generation.

Babylon is the figurative term confused by so many with regard to end-time prophecy. The confusion stems mostly from ignorance of how to define the context to the allegory. Those who confuse what the end-time Babylon will be generally err on the side of the physical ancient city being reincarnated in the last days, thereby pointing to Iraq’s restoration of this ancient treasure. Others tend to err on the allegorical side, where Babylon will become the great end-time world government prophesied to trample the nations. They presume end-time Babylon will be a governmental institution. Both interpretations are partly correct.

We must first accept from the numerous biblical prophecies that Babylon will be an end-time city.[2] Prophecy clearly states Babylon will be a city as part of its end time characteristics, just as the quotation introducing this chapter verifies. The only question is what city? Will it be an existing city, or will it be the restored Babylon of antiquity? Or even more tantalizing, will it be a city yet to be built in commemoration of the forthcoming utopia globalists are currently trying to bring about? Because the time of the end will be so short, seven years, plus a few more additional but precious years leading into the tribulation, I do not believe there will be time to build a new city. With this conclusion, then, we must look forward to Babylon being an existing city.

The prophetic Babylon city was defined through three ill-famed examples from antiquity. Revelation allegorized this future city as Babylon; Isaiah employed Tyre and Babylon; Jeremiah allegorized Babylon; Zephaniah and Nahum utilized Nineveh.[3] All of these prophets were speaking to the same future city. However, their different allegorical utilization was not meant to be contradictive or confusing, but rather more enlightening with its content. Furthermore, with the exception of John's period of time when he penned Revelation, this future Babylon had not yet established itself as a city on the world stage. Therefore, all the other prophets had to apply allegories for the future city. John had other motivating reasons to allegorize this city as Babylon. All three allegories provide a macrocode for the end-time city of evil.

Let us first examine the great Canaanite city of the ancient Phoenicians, Tyre, the home of the King Hiram and the infamous Adept, Hiram Abif. Tyre was the greatest city of the postdiluvian world with regard to trade. Tyre was famous for its business principles, commerce, and seafaring trade routes, which brought products from the beyond the known world back to Tyre, only to be reshipped to all the important cities of the ancient world. Tyre was the marketplace for the ancient world. She became rich because of her ingenuity in business. Tyre made merchants all around the ancient world opulent through the enormous volume of trade they commissioned through her. In an age of free global trade, such a city is necessary to perform like a conduit facilitating the free flow of trade.

Such will be the case again in the not so distant future. GATT treaties, the World Trade Organization, and many other corrupted United Nation organizations are bent on institutionalizing global free trade. Once this diabolical ideal is both completed and institutionalized, the world will become a total free trade zone, pitting every citizen in the world against all other fellow citizens of the world. The Last Days will be a time unlike we have ever seen since the fall of the Roman Empire, where free trade was a significant part of its legacy, and operational successes. This ill-reputed future City of Blood will become the center of trade for the world, just as Tyre and Atlantis were in antiquity; a city of commerce that will dwarf New York City by comparison.

We know Babylon will be a city of commerce as Revelation 18:11–24 describes it, where the merchants of the world will grow rich and will mourn at her destruction. Just consider the level of commerce that the city will partake in:

> The merchants of the earth will weep and mourn over her because no one buys their cargoes any more—cargoes of gold, silver, precious stones and pearls, fine linen, purple, silk and scarlet cloth; every sort of citron wood, and articles of every kind made of ivory, costly wood, bronze, iron and marble; cargoes of cinnamon and spice, of incense, myrrh and frankincense,

> of wine and olive oil, of fine flour and wheat; cattle and sheep; horses and carriages; and bodies and souls of men.

Babylon City will impose a tribute from all commerce that will take place throughout the entire world. Tyre and Atlantis are the perfect allegorical cities to describe the business characteristics for the future city of evil.

The second allegorical city was Nineveh, the city originally founded by Nimrod after the dispersion from Babel. Nineveh was the capital city of ancient Assyria and likely the most impious of the seven great world empires of the postdiluvian epoch: Egypt, Assyria, Babylon, Persia-Medes, Greece, Rome and the future Roman Empire.

Assyrians were renowned for their violence through both war and torture and for their carrying out of mass genocide. They were tyrannical, showing no mercy to their vanquished victims, impaling prisoners and/or skinning them alive. Assyria was the most bloodthirsty postdiluvian empire, while Atlantis was Assyria’s antediluvian role model. Nineveh, as recorded by Nahum, was the City of Blood because of all the violence, murder, and torture that took place within those evil walls.[4] Remember, Assyria was the land of Nimrod; the Assyrians were indeed their father’s sons!

The future City of Blood will be regal in its wealth and powerful in its glory, but it will also be reckless in its ruthlessness: “By your magic spell all the nations were led astray. In her was found the blood of the prophets and the saints, and all who have been killed on the earth” (Rev. 18:23–24). And, “He [God] has avenged on her [Babylon] the blood of his servants” (Rev. 19:2). This will be the city where the genocide of the saints will be plotted, a holocaust of the scale and nature not seen before or ever again. Babylon City will vibrate with such a bloodthirsty fever that it will forever be remembered as the true City of Blood, paling Nineveh’s sins by comparison. “He [false prophet] was given power to give breath to the image of the first beast, so that it could speak and cause all who refused to worship the image to be killed” (Rev 13:15). Babylon will not be the tolerant, utopian religion it will profess to be; rather, it will be the religion of the Nephilim. Babylon will impose a new, unprecedented form of global idolatry through the forced worship of the image of the Antichrist.

Babylon is the third symbolic city from applied history, which best defines its characteristics. It was from ancient Babylon, and Babel, the true inward spirit was derived. J. R. Porter notes *Babylon* became the name applied to any empire that was the enemy of God or of his servants.[5] Porter additionally views Babylon as the embodiment of all evil, a kingdom of wickedness that is set against God and His chosen people; it was a complex symbol of pride, oppression, wealth, luxury, sexual license, and idolatry.[6] Babel reflected images of the new Atlantis and Sodom in its tyranny, debauchery, religion, and rebellion.

With this discussion in mind, let us now divert back to Revelation 17:3–5:

> Then the angel carried me away in the Spirit to the desert. There I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast that was covered in blasphemous names and had seven heads and ten horns. The woman was dressed in purple and scarlet, and was glittering with gold, precious stones and pearls. She held a golden cup in her hand, filled with abominable things and the filth of her adulteries. This title was written on her forehead: MYSTERY—BABYLON THE GREAT—THE MOTHER OF PROSTITUTES—AND OF THE ABOMINATION OF THE EARTH.

The woman on the great beast is the mother of all prostitutes, who clenches a golden cup filled with abominations and her adulteries. Adultery and prostitution were biblical allegories defining unfaithfulness to the true God (adultery), while worshipping another god was viewed as sleeping with the local prostitute of choice (or god). This was defined in many parts of the Old Testament, but Hosea and Ezekiel stated it most succinctly: “They consult a wooden idol and are answered by a wooden stick. A spirit of prostitution leads them astray; they are unfaithful to their God” (Hosea 2:13). “Confront them with their detestable practices, for they have committed adultery and blood is on their hands. They committed adultery with their idols…. Then I said about the one worn out by adultery, ‘Now let them use her as a prostitute, for that is all she is’” (Ezek. 23:36, 43). The prostitute and adultery images clearly imply that Babylon is figurative for the ancient, pantheistic religion spawned by Cain and Atlantis and then reintroduced to the postdiluvian world by Hermes and Nimrod at Babel.

Let us once more read what Revelation 18:2–3 has to say about the nature of this religion, to ensure that there is no confusion: “Babylon the Great! She has become a home for demons and a haunt for every evil spirit, a haunt for every unclean and detestable bird. For all the nations have drunk the maddening wine of her adulteries. The kings of the earth committed adultery with her, and the merchants of the earth grew rich from her excessive luxuries.” Babylon City will center the future world, harlot religion; let there be no misunderstanding with regard to this.

The other vivid description of Babylon is the word *abominations*, which filled the golden chalice. *Unger's* defines *abomination* as something "unclean … the word is used to denote that which is particularly offensive to the moral sense" and "is the practice of sins—such as the swellings of pride, lips of falsehood, the sacrifices of the wicked, and the foul rituals of idolatry."[7] This succinctly describes what this great end-time religion will be like. Babylon will be built on lies; cloaked with a glorious and righteous disguise; adorned in beauty, riches, power, and false hope. Babylon will appear to be an enlightened, universal religion, gathering in all the religions of the world, including Christianity, Islam, and Judaism, but it will truly be the spurious, ancient religion of Babylon and Atlantis, which denies Jesus as the Christ and denies God as the true God of the universe.

We must not underestimate the power and influence this powerful religion/city-state will exert on the world stage: "Come, I will show you the punishment of the great prostitute, who sits on many waters…. The waters you saw, where the prostitute sits, are peoples, multitudes, nations and languages" (Rev. 17:1, 15). This city-state/religion will sit as queen of kingdoms over all peoples, kings, and nations (Isa. 47:5). She will be a center for global business and the center for the powerful, new, universal religion. Babylon will be an authority unto its own, unlike anything we have ever seen before—opulent in its glory and wicked in its adjudication of power. The nations will become hopelessly drunk; they will sip liberally and shamelessly from the inebriating chalice of abominations, which will be utterly intoxicating them so that they eagerly stagger after the prostitute and their destruction. Babylon will reign with absolute power and control over the nations and peoples, their commerce, and their religion.

We can determine the city and where its religion will be centered. First of all, let us consider the time of the writing of Revelation—the reign of the Roman Empire, which was ruthless in its oppression against those who dared to rebel against her or those who dared criticize in any way. Any writings that might be interpreted as rebellious or critical in any way against Rome were hidden beneath a veil of codes and a shroud of secrecy. To the Jewish people, these codes were known as *Peshur*, in which allegorical names were applied to sensitive places and names, hiding the true meaning from the Romans and Roman sympathizers. The writers in Judah drafted Babylon as Peshur for the city of Rome.

As you will recall, Berosus recorded Babylon was an allegory employed by Chaldean priests for Atlantis, and Frank Joseph believes the Bible employs Tyre and Babylon as an allegory for Atlantis.[8] Perhaps this is allegorically so, but most certainly, the selected biblical passages were definitive prophecies for the future, end-time Babylon. The future, allegorical city of Atlantis in the New Age and the new empire of Atlantis destined for the last days will, in truth, be the city of Rome, known figuratively as Babylon.

Finally, Revelation presents a more detailed definition of who the future Babylon will be: “This calls for a mind with wisdom. The seven heads are seven hills on which the woman sits” (Rev. 17:9). The only city in the world that rests on seven hills, or mountains, is the city of Rome. Rome will be the global capital city for both business and religion; it will center the future utopia, which will house the institutions for world government and obligatory cooperation. Rome will provide the location from which the future world government will govern, housing all the essential global government institutions. Babylon will be Rome, capital of the new, future, revived Roman Empire.

Isn’t it an intriguing anecdote of historical coincidence that one church of global nature is already seated on seven hills, in a city-state? This city-state, also known as a universal religion, is, of course, the Vatican. Is it not equally intriguing that Catholicism, by literal definition, is defined as “universal,” thereby translating Roman Catholicism as the universal church? One should then expect that something utterly diabolical will forcibly stake its beginning within Catholicism and then will spread to incorporate all other religions of the world, thereby becoming a true, inclusive, universal church.

I am not indicting the current Catholic Church as the future, harlot religion. I am merely stating that the future, harlot religion will be spawned secretly within, in the holy confines of Catholicism, through an evil usurping of its power from within. Rome is indeed the future Babylon City.

CHAPTER 45

REFLECTIONS FROM WITHIN THE THIRD REICH

After this I looked and there before me was a great multitude that no one could count, from every nation, tribe, people and language, standing before the throne and in front of the Lamb. They were wearing white robes and holding palm branches in their hands … "These in white robes—who are they, and where did they come from?" I answered, "sir you know." And he said, "These are they who have come out of the great tribulation; they have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb."

—Revelation 7:9–14

Why will Babylon not be tolerant to any opposition?

Babylon will be a worldwide, institutionalized religion enforced through tyranny by the state or world government of that time.

Although this spurious religion will advocate a veneer of tolerance and evolution of the spirit into godhood, just as all politically correct movements do, this future religion will not have the patience or tolerance for those who disagree. Those who do not accept the future, universal religion will be considered inferior beings, neither worthy nor capable of evolving/ ascending into a higher consciousness. Those who oppose the coming tyranny will be relegated to cattle and slaughtered without remorse, in the same spirit Fascist Islamic terrorists act today.

The saints who stand against Babylon will be boisterous in their opposition to the spurious, false religion. Their opposition will spark a bloody, barbaric genocide. "I saw that the woman was drunk with the blood of the saints, the blood of those who bore testimony to Jesus" (Rev. 17:6), and "in her was found the blood of the prophets and of the saints, and of all who have been killed on the earth" (Rev. 18:24). This coming genocide is further supported by the secret, internal writings of the end-time conspirators, where they acknowledge they will be obliged to murder off all such people and societies through organized troops, to eliminate these so-called infections.[1]

One might look to the Roman Empire's genocidal orgy waged against the early Christians for a terrible testimonial of the woe that is to come. In 65 C.E., motivated by hate and needing to deflect attention from his own misdeeds, Nero fraudulently laid blame upon the helpless Christians for the fire of Rome.[2] Sulpicius Servus's Chronicle noted this:

> Nero could not, by any means he tried, escape from the charge that the fire had been caused by his orders. He therefore turned the accusation against the Christians, and the cruelest tortures were accordingly inflicted upon the innocent. Nay, even new kinds of death were invented…. [At] that time Paul and Peter were condemned to death, the former being beheaded with a sword, while Peter suffered crucifixion.[3]

Tacitus details the horror:

> Nero fastened the guilt and inflicted the most exquisite tortures on a class hated for their abominations, called Christians by the populace. Christus, from whom the name had its origin, suffered the extreme penalty during the reign of Tiberius at the hands of one of our procurators, Pontius Pilatus, and a most mischievous superstition, thus checked for the moment…. Accordingly an arrest was first made of all who pleaded guilty; then, upon their information, an immense multitude was convicted, not so much of the crime of firing the city as of hatred against mankind. Mockery of every sort was added to their deaths. Covered with skins of beasts, they were torn by dogs and perished, or were nailed to crosses, or were doomed to the flames and burnt, to serve as nightly illumination, when daylight had expired. Nero offered his gardens for the spectacle, and was exhibiting a show in the Circus, while he mingled with the people in the dress of a charioteer or stood aloft on a car. Hence, even for

> criminals who deserved extreme and exemplary punishment, there arose a feeling of compassion; for it was not, as it seemed, for the public good, but to glut one man’s cruelty, that they were being tortured.[4]

Perhaps Nazi Germany, which also glutted one man’s cruelty, is a more tangible example of the horrific genocide that is to come. Nazis were a political force that held the reins of government, bent with evil motives, complete with the prophesied evil second Antichrist/Nimrod/potentate of Nostradamas, Adolf Hitler. The first Nostradamas Antichrist figure was Napoleon, while the third and last Antichrist figure will be the Beast of Scripture. Had the Nazis been completely successful, they would have established a world government under their oppressive rule, crowned with Hitler as the world dictator/ Antichrist. The coveted Nazi reign, of course, was the elusive, infamous German Third Reich, which promised a thousand-year reign of prosperity, just as the authentic Antichrist will aspire to with his promise of the New Age.

Most do not realize the Nazi regime was steeped in mysticism and occultism, because it wore a Christian public cloak. Nazis secretly subscribed to the Theosophist doctrine of New Age pantheism. British prosecutor Airy Neave noted the collective Nuremberg prosecutors suppressed knowledge and documentation concerning Nazi esoteric thought and influence at the highest levels, because they concluded it was too bizarre to be admitted into evidence and for fear of insanity pleas from indicted Nazis. Churchill insisted that it not be revealed to the public.[5] Mystical dimensions to National Socialism were not a secret before or World War II. Occult periodicals of the 1930s discussed Hitler’s preoccupation, just as magician Dion Fortune circulated letters among the British.[6]

Historians recognize that the Nazis were indeed, gripped by occultism inspired by their spiritual mother, Helen Blavatsky, the founder of Theosophy, and, to a lesser degree, Aleister Crowley. Theosophy was first established in Germany in 1884 C.E. By the turn of the century, Theosophy had spread throughout Germany. Theosophy spawned numerous pan-Aryan and anti-Semitic societies, providing a fallacious justification and breeding ground for Nazi racial theoreticians. Between 1892 and 1900 C.E., Blavatsky incorporated the swastika, an ancient sun symbol from Hinduism and Tibetan Buddhism and Blavatsky’s personal emblem, on the cover of all her works. It was enclosed by a circle and surmounted by interlocking triangles forming a six-pointed star.[7]

Theosophy and its occultist doctrines were the foundation stones for the Central European offshoot, Ariosophy, which brewed Germanic racist beliefs mixed in with Germanic occultism and Theosophy.[8] Ancient German pantheism was adopted as the *Folk Soul*, known alternatively as “Das Volk” and/or Volkishe ideology, throughout Germany in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries C.E. Then it was inherited by the Nazis. This belief drew upon an ancient Heroic Collective Entity divinely ordained to manifest power, which further provided the foundation for the philosophical doctrine of racial supremacy. Volkishe ideology fondly harkened back to a pre-Christian epoch of pan-Aryanism. It was an ideology hostile towards Christianity, and it transformed Jesus into a mortal teacher.[9]

A report prepared in the 1930s by a Catholic priest, Muckerman, declared Nazism to be identical to neo-paganism, as advocated by the writings of the Nazi apostle Alfred Rosenberg. Bloodlines and race were constitutive elements of this political religion. Another envoy and priest of Rome, Alois Hudal, wrote that Christianity was alien to the Nordic race. Christianity was replaced by the Nazis with a “new, revived paganism” that amounted to a form of national mysticism, deifying blood and race.[10]

Nazis were obsessed with finding hallows of the Grail castle. Hitler was additionally infatuated with Grail romances glorified in Wagner’s works. Hitler saw himself, according to Baigent and Leigh, as a Grail knight; thus, Hitler exalted the SS members as equals to the Teutonic knights and the Knights of the Round Table.[11] The SS members devoted three departments to research on the occult and Ariosophy, as Himmler was a committed student of both. [12] Nazis excavated the fortress at Montsegur and the infamous Languedoc in 1944 C.E., led by Hitler’s top SS Commando SS Standartenfuehrer Otto Skorzeny overseeing a battalion of SS troopers, followed the research of Otto Rahn following the research of Otto Rahn, who believed Cathars held the Holy Grail, as mentioned in Eschenbach’s *Perceval*. Nazis were smitten by Rhan’s research.[13]

Treasured Grail hallows included the ancient Sword, the Chalice, the Platter, and the Spear, which evolved over time into the four suits of the Tarot Minor Arcana.[14] Tarot cards were devised to pass on secret ideologies banned by the Roman Church; they contained heretical cards like the female pope,[15] an allegory for Mary Magdalene and Isis. Tarot cards are thought to have been created in Milan in the early fifteenth century C.E., but the Legominism codes were lost, until a French occultist decoded the occultist secrets once more in the eighteenth century C.E. Tarot cards survived this period employed as playing cards;[16] the swords, cups, pentacles, and wands of the tarot cards later became the famous spades, hearts, diamonds, and clubs[17] that we know today. Spades/swords were an allegory for the male aspect of gods; hearts/cups were an allegory for the feminine, the Grail/womb; the clubs/scepters/wands represented the Royal San Greal bloodline; and the diamonds/pentacles/ pentagrams represented the feminine goddess (Isis).[18]

Hollywood’s *Indiana Jones* trilogy has depicted its version of the Nazi quest for Grail hallows. In the real quest, the explorers obtained an ancient lance mythologized to have been the lance of Charlemagne, known also as the Spear of Longinus, named after the centurion that pierced the side of Jesus at the crucifixion. Rhan’s research concluded the Jerusalem Treasure included the Grail, Tablets of the Testimony, the Emerald Cup, the Ark of the Covenant, numerous scrolls holding ancient occult knowledge, gold coins, copper scrolls, and the Spear of Longinus. Otto Skorzeny sent a one-word telegram signed with his nickname, “Scar”, on March 15, 1944 to Berlin that read: “Ureka.” Berlin returned the telegram to Skorzeny signed, “Reichsfuehrer”, stating: “Well done. Congratulations. Watch the sky tomorrow at noon, Await our arrival.[19] What little is known of the discovery was noted by a Colonel Buechner of the 45th Infantry Division recorded that before the “Treasure of the Ages” was split up, the treasure contained thousands of Roman gold coins, fragments of wood they believed belonged to the Ark od the Covenant as well as other gold items from the Temple of Solomon, indecipherable inscriptions on twelve pre-runic tablets, a silvery goblet/grail with precious jewels flaunting three inscribed gold plaques with cuneiform script, a large number of religious objects made of gold and silver inlaid with precious jewels, and a large volume of precious stones in various sizes and shapes.[20] Rosenberg and Himmler are believed to have handed out medals at Montsegur in the spring of 1944, honoring the discoveries.[21]

This famous lance of Charlemagne, also remembered as the Spear of Destiny in Grail lore, is now kept on display in the Hapsburg museum in Vienna. The lance Hitler sought was variantly thought to be the infamous spear or rod of the Anunnaki/Nephilim kings rooted the Ring Lord tradition. The rod of the Anunnaki/Nephilim was referred to then as "the Rule,"[22] the rule of government.

Nazis saw themselves as a quasi-religious movement born out of secret organizations, whose goals were the same as Freemasonry and the Illuminati. Many orthodox historians refer to the SS as Nazi Freemasonry.[23] The Nazi movement grew from occultist and secret societies—Freemasonry, the Illuminati, the Germanenorden, the Teutonic knights, and the Thule Society[24]—while invoking the agenda of Bavarian Illuminati that included the dogma that the end justifies the means. Nazism was a left-wing, political movement that got out of control. Left-wing Nazism Fascism (National Socialism) is a merger of the state with corporate oligopolies to achieve the goals of the state. Nazism is distinctly a far-left-of-center movement that's only slightly right of pure socialism; whereas socialism is slightly right of communism and anarchism. Nazism was originally conceived and funded by western financiers to check their other abomination, Communism, which also got out of control.[25]

On the surface, the Germanenorden was a group dedicated to the promotion of old German literature, but underneath, it was a front for the reincarnated Teutonic order of wealthy nationalists who promoted radical politics, race mysticism, and the occult with an Illuminati agenda.[26] The Germanenorden was patterned after Freemasons but were decidedly anti-Mason and anti-Jewish.

The *Germanenorden*, meaning "German Order," was created in 1912 by a number of Von List's disciples.[27] The order focused on an Aryan revival, drawing upon Druids, Ariosophy, and Wagner.[28] Von List and Jorg Lanz Von Liebenfels were the architectural theorists for the offshoot Ariosophy, according to Greer.[29] List was the first writer to combine Theosophy, occultism, and Volkishe ideologies, overlaying them with ideology from the The New Temple Order.[30] The anti-Semitic New Temple Order was created in 1907 by a Cistercian monk mentored by List and Adolf Josef Lanc, who also assumed the title Jorg Lanz Von Liebenfels. The organization garnered the swastika on their flag. Von Liebenfels believed antediluvian, Aryan mystery cults were devoted to deviant sex with subhuman dwarfs,[31] likely another mythos of DNA manipulation and/or interbreeding, much like dwarf aliens now do with humans and dwarf fairies did in Celtic mythology. Liebenfels further published an anti-Semitic journal called the *Ostara*.[32] The Ordo Novi Temple heavily influenced both Hitler and Himmler, who wove the order's rituals into the SS[33] and drew large doses of symbolism from List's Armanen-Orden that represented the ancient Indo-Aryan highest caste of hereditary priest kings, the Brahman.[34]

In 1918, a Germanenorden faction spawned a new order, the Thule Society.[34] This was the Munich Lodge.[35]It was led by Rudolf Von Sebettendorf, who added Vril (a mysterious potency held within certain bloodlines that will engender a future race of superior beings) and Volkishe doctrine to the society. Other members included Rudolf Hess, Dietrick Eckhart, and Alfred Rosenberg.[36] The Thule Society was dedicated to destroying the Aryan's racial enemy; the society members were "Atlanteans," who were also known variantly as the Teutonic Knights. Their adversaries have always been the pure seed of Adam, the Israelites,[37] and the children of God.

The Thule Society emerged as a ruse to counter and resist Communism; their logo, too, was a Theosophist swastika superimposed by a sword. Thule was a mythic German homeland believed to be a Teutonic Atlantis. This dark, occultist, Ariosophic organization readily adopted Thule as its own alternative Atlantis and home of its ancestral Aryan people.[38] Ariosophy maintained a cosmology where members of an original, semidivine Aryan race had fallen from grace and lost their superhuman powers through inbreeding with mundane mortals.[39] The Thule Society was an Aryan order immersed in black magic and Satanism, just as Atlantis was immersed in the black arts. It extolled the glories of German mythology regarding the Teutonic Knights through other contemporary, associated orders that were originally formed by the Knights Templar.[40] The modern Teutonic Knights were a companion organization to the Templars. In Himmler's eyes, the infamous SS was a reincarnated Teutonic order, or the Knights of King Arthur's Round Table.[41]

The Thule Society organized a German Workers Party, the DAP, in 1918; Hitler joined the DAP in 1919.[42] The DAP and Hitler were funded by the Thule Society through Dietrich Eckart.[43] The Thule Society purchased a newspaper, the *Volkishe Bepbachter*, with Eckart as editor, and the periodical then became the official organ for the Nazi Party. By 1921, Hitler became the owner.[44] The Thule Society organized the Nazi party by merging with an organization of workers called the Harrer-led Political Workers Circle, which was founded by the Theosophist Sebettendorf, who was instrumental in creating the secret Germanenorden.[45]

Theosophy further inspired the writings of Schelling, Bohme, and of course, Dietrich Eckhart.[46] Eckhart maintained membership in both the fledgling Nazi party and the Thule Society. Eckhart realized the Nazis needed a leader; he found this prospective leader in Hitler.[47] Eckhart was the person who initiated Hitler into the Secret Doctrine that largely stemmed from the Theosophical Society.[48] Hitler was a long-time student of the occult and a convinced Ariosophist[49] (a believer in Aryan Theosophy). Nowadays, most historians consider Dietrich Eckhart to have been Hitler's occult mentor[50] and a widely read author espousing Ariosophic doctrines.[51]

The German Youth Movement was yet another key component in the Nazi, occultist infrastructure. The Wander-Vogel Movement began in the 1920s. This pantheistic-based movement was annexed by Nazis into their movement. Hitler Youth were initiated into neo-pagan rituals at very early ages; they were taught Hitler was the divine's representative on earth. Stefan George's poetry and literature were always read and recited during the Hitler Youth meetings. George was a German writer and poet in the early 1900s, whose compositions burgeoned with mystical, pantheistic, and esoteric teachings. His fame rivaled that of T.S. Elliot and Yeats, according to Baigent and Leigh.[52]

George saw himself as a Pythagorean figure analogous to Chiron, the centaur mentor to the heroes Jason, Achilles, and Hercules.[53] Chiron was celebrated throughout antediluvian Greece for his wisdom and acquirements. All the renowned heroes (Nephilim) of that age had been his pupils.[54]

George's and Nietzsche's teachings were drafted by Nazis as their spiritual precursors, along with George's swastika motif and his book *Das Neue Reich* (*The New Reich*). In 1907, George published *The Seventh Ring*, reflecting Helen Blavatsky's Theosophical movement and doctrines. George was anti-Christian and unabashedly pagan in his beliefs. George believed in and promoted the *Theosophical Avatar*, a term employed prominently in Theosophy, applied to invisible, secret masters,[55] which were demons and fallen angels. As you will recall, Lucifer, too, was referred to as the Avatar tempter that fell from grace.

George co-opted, from Wagner's Grail opera *Lohengrin*, the title *Führer,* more commonly spelled "Fuehrer" in English, meaning "leader."[56] George elevated the original *Fuehrer* meaning so it would represent messianic qualities and exalted, religious connotations, according to Baigent and Leigh.[57] Wagner was decidedly Volkishe, and so were his works, which drew heavily upon pagan German folklore, pan-Aryan mythology, and Grail mythology. Wagner was a prominent master magician and a master alchemist,[58] who promoted an Aryan world philosophy.[59] He drew upon Wolfram Von Eschenbach to set Grail Mysteries into the German context, while adding his own pan-Aryan slant.[60] Wagner was decidedly anti-Semitic, and his works inspired Hitler.[61] Thus, much of Wagner's music and philosophy was co-opted by the Nazis.[62]

Alfred Rosenberg was known as the apostle of this new, political religion;[63] he was the Nazi's official theoretician.[64] Rosenberg wrote *Myth of the Twentieth Century*, which contained intense hostility towards Christianity and, in particular, Catholicism. His book proclaimed Christianity's imminent death, the birth of the New Religion, and the Creation of the New Man, an idea which grew out of the new German blood cult. Rosenberg asserted Paul only promoted the interest of the Jews.[65] Rosenberg believed the Nordic race would regain its soul under the guidance of a German church committed to the Volkishe mythos.[66]

Nazi mysticism relied on yet one more apostle, Ernst Bergman. Bergman published *Die Deustshe Nationalkirche* (*The German National Church*) in 1933. He was a prominent member in a movement known as Movement For German Belief. The Vatican envoy, Alois Hudal, vehemently objected to Bergman's book, stating Bergman promoted a Germanic race set apart and requiring a national church as an expression of its race and that Catholicism was alien to the Nordic race. Bergman argued that Christianity was infected with the "spirit of Semitism," the Bible had promoted a false image of Jesus, and Jesus was a pantheist of Indo-German origin. Bergman further argued Ariosophy was the Cult of Mithras,[67] a foremost Gnostic and numinous religion, a populace cult of the pre-

Christian world, including Rome; its grand secret was the precession of the equinoxes, which tracks the sun through the zodiac.[68] Mithraism recognized the Father of Light, also known as "The Great Architect," as its god, as did Zoroastrians[69] and the Freemasons.[70]

On July 22, 1933, after enjoying Wagner's *Parsifal*, Hitler orated a radio speech to announce the creation of the Reich Church, a state-sponsored church designed to supplant Christianity. By September of 1933, the Reich Church was established, complete with its own bishop, Ludwig Mueller.[71] On February 7, 1934, in a conversation with Cardinal Karl Josef Schulte, Hitler declared that he identified with and supported Alfred Rosenberg and his heretical doctrines as the maker of party dogma. Rosenberg then partnered with Josef Goebbels as the chiefs for the Nazi Thought Police.[72] The Movement For German Belief thus organized an alternative church, based on racism, for the Nazis.[73]

With the emergence of the Reich Church, Hitler became obsessed with his messianic intentions, according to Baigent and Leigh. Hitler saw himself as a messiah or, more accurately, a pan-Aryan Avatar leading the new Reich and a spirit descending from the Hohenstauffen Empire. (That was the German dynasty of kings from 1138–1254 C.E. that invaded Rome in 1166 C.E., installing its own pope, Paschall III. Frederich I then utilized his puppet pope to extend his empire to include Bohemia, Hungary, and Poland.)[74] Hence, Hitler built his messianic personification on George's co-opted Fuehrer from Wagner's Grail opera *Lohengrin*.[75] Hitler transformed himself into a usurper of Christianity akin to Simon the Magus (Acts 8:1–25), adapting only Christian remnants into his Reich Church, while providing a superficial Christian cloak, just as Babylon will do.

Jews, Muslims, and Christians remaining loyal to their God will in the future suffer the horrors of holocaust. The future world government and religion will partner to eradicate inferior humans, who will be charged with holding back the balance of humanity from evolving into its so-called rightful plane of consciousness. The same occurred under the tyranny of the Nazis, as the Aryans, the "emerging super race," judged the people of Judah as subhuman and inferior. Nazis conspired through eugenics to create modern Nephilim, branding it as the super Aryan white race that simmered in genetic manipulation. The Nazis co-opted Nietzsche's philosophy of the Superman[76] into the notion of creating the New Man.[77] National Socialism was based in esoteric Rosicrucian doctrine that demanded the genesis to super beings, a new Master Race of Supermen.[78] This was the Rosicrucian/*Vril* doctrine of Volkishe ideology, where Supermen are created through something special in the blood. The Vril/Rosicrucian societies that included Hess, Haushofer, and Hitler believed Aryan super races came to earth in the distant past. Professor Haushofer was connected to the Order of the Golden Dawn and Aleister Crowley. Haushofer was a mentor to Hess and Hitler, whose connections were crucial to the Japanese-German alliance, and was the author of Hitler's "Living Space" policy for a hemmed-in Germany.[79]

Colin Wilson writes that Nazism was immersed in the Hermetic, pantheistic doctrine of heaven brought down to earth.[80] The objective was to create an evolved superhuman, void of a world infested with God's chosen progeny, stemming from the mundane Seth. Anyone not deemed worthy to evolve into a higher plane would have been eventually enslaved to serve the new Nephilim. The initiate of the secret doctrine of the Nazi's New Man was declared a witness to the whole evolution of the world and humanity. Hitler believed the mixing of pure bloodlines was the Original Sin in the world.[81]

Hitler believed Hans Hoerbiger, whom we discussed previously, author of *Glacial Cosmology,* was one of history's three greatest astronomers. The Nazis readily adopted his cosmology.[82] He believed giants recorded in Sumerian and biblical lore dominated the antediluvian world. Under this Theosophist doctrine, Nazis believed nonhuman visitors, great masters who secretly guide human evolution, came to earth long ago; they produced through gene manipulation a divine hybrid being, a kind of god-man, during the age of Atlantis,[83] which the Nazis believed the original Germans descended from. All this sounds eerily similar to alien experimentation on human DNA. Hence, Nazis created dedicated orders, led by Eckart, to communicate with nonhuman intelligences, for Hitler believed the power behind the occult was characterized by invisible hierarchies and unknown superiors from a distant location.[84]

CHAPTER 46

THE FALSE PROPHET

But the beast was captured and with him the false prophet who had performed the miraculous signs on his behalf. With these signs he deluded those who had received the mark of the beast and worshipped his image. The two of them were thrown alive into the fiery lake of burning sulfur.

—Revelation 19:20

At Babel, there was a false prophet who changed the future of humankind through the reintroduction of the spurious sciences. Who was this false prophet accredited with founding the Babylonian and Egyptian mystic religions at Babel?

This rebellious mystical icon and reticent patron saint of alchemy was, of course, Hermes. Similarly, Enoch the Evil was the false prophet for the root mystical religion and catastrophe during the antediluvian epoch. Therefore, if the misunderstood last days are to strangely emulate the ancient times, how will the future false prophet introduce, impose, and then lead the end-time, universal religion?

One should look fearfully forward to this end-time, spurious religion seizing center stage through the corrupting and reorganizing of a shattered Christianity. We know this must take place because Revelation describes this future religion and its leader as follows: “He had two horns like a lamb, but he spoke like a dragon. He exercised all the authority of the first beast on his behalf, and made the earth and its inhabitants worship the first beast, whose fatal wound had been healed. And he performed great and miraculous signs, even causing fire to come down from heaven in full view of men. Because of the signs he was given power to do on behalf of the first beast, he deceived the inhabitants of the earth” (Rev. 13:11–14).

The lamb allegory represents Christ and His church, just as Jesus is the Lamb of God.[1] The beast with two horns like a lamb is the little-known False Prophet; he will lead the future religion of Babylon. And the dragon represents Satan. The beast with two horns like a lamb symbolizes a spurious Christian leader, for this scurrilous beast speaks like a dragon, marking its true nature. This beast speaks the doctrine of Babylon, the pantheistic theology first introduced in the age of dragons and Nephilim. This forthcoming Babylon will cleverly cloak itself behind a perverted and altered form of Christianity. The second beast described in this prophecy is the notorious Antichrist. The future, universal religion must first infiltrate and then corrupt mainstream Christianity before branching out to the rest of the global religions, thereby giving it a universal, Christian appearance.

The future, harlot religion will be led by one of the most villainous characters of the Adamic epoch, the False Prophet.[2] This iniquitous character, described as the beast of Revelation 13,[3] will be revered to be one of the great prophets of all the ages. He will be respected like Moses in both esteem and pomp; his role will be that of the false Elijah. The False Prophet has been commissioned to clear the way for the entrance of the false messiah; he will cunningly usurp the identity of Elijah and his holy commission as the sign of the coming of the Messiah,[4] just as John the Baptist came in the spirit of Elijah when he cleared the way for Jesus from the wilderness and introduced Jesus to the world.

The False Prophet will be equipped with superhuman powers to delude the population to accept his false credentials. He will perform great and miraculous signs and miracles, even causing fire to come down from the heavens.[5] The future Hermes will be a Magus unlike any our generation has witnessed; he will be very convincing. His powers will be buttressed by masterful manifestations and all the mind-boggling muscle that fallen angels can muster.[6] The overarching objective for both the False Prophet and the false religion will be to bring about the crowning of the false messiah, the new Nimrod. Anticipate that this future Hermes will rediscover and reintroduce the lost knowledge of Atlantis, Enoch, and Babel.

This heretical Hermes of the future will be accompanied by all forms of modern Magi and sages, revered to be other, new false prophets of various levels: "for false Christs and false prophets will appear and perform great and miraculous signs to deceive the elect if that were possible."[7] Modern manifestations of sorcery, masterfully performed by modern Magi, will be prevalent and may include the alien deception. All will be designed to persuade and deceive this biblically ignorant, technologically advanced, and rebellious generation to embrace the so-called enlightened religion that embraces all religions of this world, including the monotheistic religions.

Religious unification proposed in end-time prophecy is a deterrent for many to trust in; at least it is for those who disbelieve what must take place in this Terminal Generation. However, all the pantheistic religions could easily be united under one banner or umbrella religion, simply because they are all embedded in the same original, spurious religion of Cain. Even the eastern religions of Hinduism and Buddhism are Babylonian derivatives. Hinduism was an offshoot of Babylonian mysticism, replanted in India via the Aryans of Persia, while Buddhism was originally a new sprout from Hinduism.[8] Gary Kah states in his book *En Route to Global Occupation* that all eastern religions are traceable to ancient Babylon through Hinduism and Buddhism.[9] Hinduism today influences the Indian subcontinent, while Buddhism influences Sri Lanka to Tibet, China, Southeast Asia, and Japan.[10]

Monotheistic religions, too, are all rooted in the same God, with Judaism being the root religion. Christianity is an offshoot of Judaism, fulfilling Judaic prophecy. And of course, Islam is a green shoot proclaiming monotheism,[11] focusing primarily on the Judgment. However, radical and fascist elements of Islam consider the original words and laws of God corrupted by the people of Judah but reformed and divinely reinstated under their inspired prophet, Mohammed. Von Grunebaum, author of *Medieval Islam*, notes that Muslims believe Islam resurrected the religion of Abraham, which the Jews had voluntarily abandoned.[12]

The truth is that the literal Qur'an does not dismiss the Old Testament or the Gospels of the New Testament as corrupted. The Qur'an Scripture delivered to Mohammad from the angel Gabriel steadfastly supports the accuracy and legitimacy of the two previous Scriptures and reinforces those Scriptures with parallel testimonies and narratives of the same events, with even more detail in some cases.[13] The Qur'an testifies as a companion, or third Scripture, in complete congruence with the first two, noting the true saints who believe in the Torah and the Gospels will believe in the Qur'an as well.[14]

In fact, the Qur'an testifies about the immaculate conception of the pious Virgin Mary, the crucifixion of Jesus, and the Resurrection of Jesus. And it testifies that Jesus indeed was the prophesied Messiah and Christ of Israel,[15] who came to fulfill the Law.[16] The Qur'an vehemently objects only to the notion that God may have somehow copulated with Mary, as God only needs to speak (Word) and it happens, just as Adam was created.[17] And in this spirit and in its scripture, the Qur'an testifies that Jesus was the Word made flesh, just as John and Revelation testify:[18] the Word who was with God from the beginning, the Word through whom all things were made at Creation.[19]

Jesus is difficult to classify: a being who now sits at God's right hand,[20] who was there in Spirit from the beginning, whom God created all things by.[21] Respectfully put, I believe God speaks through His Word/Jesus just as this conclusion is reflected Genesis 1:1-31: “And God said [Word/Jesus], Let there be…” and all things were then created. I conclude Jesus is God's Word and thus God speaks to us through the Word/Jesus, just as God created all things through His Word/Jesus: “But in the last days he has spoken to us by his Son, whom he appointed heir of all things, and through whom he made the universe” (Hebrews 1:2) Thus God and Jesus are the Creator in perfect union and yet the Word Jesus is somehow distinct from God that I will endeavor to explain. Ergo, the Word/Jesus and the Holy Spirit appear to us as God's greatest beings that operate in unison but separate from God; doing God's greatest beckoning. In this sense, Jesus' imagery as the Branch[22] of God would be precision accuracy. The Son is the radiance of God's glory and the exact representation of his being, sustaining all things by his powerful word. After he had provided purification for sins, he sat down at the right side of the Majesty in heaven" (Hebrews 1:3). "He [Jesus] is the image of the invisible God, the first born over all creation" (Colossians 1:15). If the Holy Spirit and the Word are somehow extensions/branches of God, who is Spirit, then all Scripture and all monotheism is indeed congruent, whether the various divided, institutionalized belief systems recognize this or not. The Qur'an, therefore, testifies as a parallel witness to the Holy Spirit and the Word, where Jesus became the Messiah, but that God, the Holy Spirit, and Jesus are somehow separate but indistinguishable beings.

The apostle John goes further: "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning, through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made" (John 1:1–3). And: "The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. We have seen his glory, the glory of the One and Only, who came from the Father, full of grace and truth…. 'None has ever seen God, but the God the One and Only, who is at the Father's side, has made him known'" (John 1:14–18). "He [Jesus] is dressed in a robe dipped in blood, and his name is the Word of God . . . He treads the winepress of the fury of the wrath of God" (Revelation 19: 14-15).

The Old Testament book of Proverbs goes even further:

> The Lord brought me forth as the first of his works, before his deeds of old; I was appointed from eternity, from the beginning, before the world began. When there were no oceans, I was given birth, when there were no springs abounding with water; before the mountains were settled in place, before the hills, I was given birth, before he made the earth or its fields or any of the dust of the world. I was there when he set the heavens in place…. Then I was the craftsman at his side. I was filled with delight day after day, rejoicing always in his presence, rejoicing in his whole world, and delighting in mankind. Now, then, my sons, listen to me; blessed are those who keep my ways … For whoever finds me finds life and receives favor from the Lord. But whoever fails to find me harms himself; all who hate me love death.
>
> —Proverbs 8:22–36

Colossians supports my contention the Word Jesus is a distinct being, while also supporting Proverbs 8: " . . . Growing in the knowledge of God, being strengthened with all the power according to his glorious might so that you may have great endurance and patience, and joyfully giving thanks to the Father, who has qualified you to share in the inheritance of the saints in the kingdom of light. For he has rescued us from the dominion of darkness and brought us into the kingdom of the Son [Word/Jesus] he loves, in whom we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins. He [Word/Jesus] is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn [Word/Jesus] over all creation. For by him [Word/Jesus] all things were created: things in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or powers or rulers or authorities; all things were created by him and for him [Word/Jesus]. He [Word/Jesus] is before all things, and in him [Word/Jesus] all things hold together. And he [Word/Jesus] is the head of the body, the church; he is the beginning and the first born from the dead, so that in everything he [Jesus/Word] might have supremacy. For God was pleased to have all his fullness dwell in him [Word/ Jesus], and through him [Word/Jesus] to reconcile himself all things, whether things on earth or things in heaven, by making peace through his blood, shed on the cross" (Colossians 1:11-20).

Now, Hermeticism/Sabianism has exerted extraordinary influence on Islam[23] since its incorporation. In fact, Baigent and Leigh state (for intended misdirection) that Islamic teaching recognizes other religious prophets and their teaching, as long as they are from a "Book," including such prophets as Jesus, Moses, Buddha, and Zoroaster.[24] When the Qur'an refers to a "People of the Book," it is referring to a people who follow a monotheistic Scripture sent by God Most High, not polytheist scriptures.

Conversely, Muslim philosophy is directly associated with Hermes, who is renowned in mystical Islamic tradition as Idris/Enoch.[25] But again, Idris of the Qur'an was recorded as a monotheist prophet with Scripture.[26] Philosophy, the love of wisdom, derives from Greek *phileo,* "to love," and from *sophia*, "*w*isdom," and endeavors to develop a consistent worldview and way of life based on a peculiar zeal in the arts, sciences, or any branch of knowledge[27] (Seven Sacred Sciences). Philosophy is concluded to be superior to the particular sciences; it is their arbiter dedicated to harmonizing and uniting the sciences.[28] Muslim philosophy and Hermeticism descended from Enoch the Evil. Ergo, Arabic philosophy is not Islamic monotheism. Muslim philosophy is polytheism/mysticism, which overran the Islamic world though Sufis, Ishmaelites, and other Middle Eastern cults. The Sufi religion, according to Booth, relies heavily on Hinduism for its teaching on Chakras and is a cosmology of monotheism, Aristotelian philosophy, Hinduism, Zoroastrianism, Buddhism, Neo-Platonism, Gnosticism, and Chinese science.[29]

The apostate splinter sect of John the Baptist followers, the Mandaeans/ Sabians, heavily influenced Sufi mysticism, and in turn, the Sufis heavily influenced the Gnostic Templars.[30] Sabianism is the sun- and star-worshipping religion of Enoch the Evil. Islam, then, already is sympathetic to mysticism and, conversely, would be sympathetic to both Christianity and Judaism if not for mystical influences imposed upon Muslims by mystical Islamic Fascists and Islamic institutions, even though this may not be obvious from Islamic fanaticism that shadows the world today.

Because subtle but seemingly infinitely large chasms now separate the beholders of monotheism, the three great monotheistic religions could, in truth, be bridged and, indeed, unified for all the wrong reasons should specific deceptions be employed. First of all, the Christian Messiah, Jesus, would have to be devalued from deity to just another of many great prophets. Therefore, expect some earth-shattering discovery to explode onto the world scene in the not-too-distant future, revealing Jesus was a man, not God, and that Jesus was not crucified, nor did He actually die on the cross. Jesus will have to be proven not to have been resurrected as part of the Holy Trinity. One of the three must come forward in the devaluation process, for Scripture teaches the spirit of the Antichrist is to deny Jesus as the true Messiah[31] but not necessarily deny Jesus as a historical being of noteworthiness. Therefore expect Jesus to be devalued to that of just another prophet.

The False Prophet rising out of this shattered Christianity will seditiously support Gnostic and Fascist Islamic doctrine that declares Jesus to be mortal and not the Messiah. The False Prophet will declare Jesus to be a great prophet, but a mortal prophet, and certainly not the Messiah. The False Prophet will lead shattered Christianity through false, “enlightened” wisdom and miracles into the new, universal religion centered in Rome. Eventually he will lead all into the arms of the Antichrist. All this will be acceptable to both Judaism and Islam. Islam mystical institutionalism views Jesus as one of a sequence of prophets sent to this world,[32] just as parts of Judaism already recognize Jesus as one of a very long line of prophets who were martyred, providing that Jesus is not accredited to be God, the Son of God, or Messiah/Christ.

You see, Christianity is the enigma, just as Christianity was a plague to pantheistic Rome. All other religions believe they have yet to receive the true, universal Messiah and are still looking for His arrival, whereas Christianity is the only religion to believe we have actually witnessed His first coming and are only waiting for His last triumphant return. One might be surprised to learn that even pantheistic religions are eagerly looking for the arrival of their (false) messiah, but this is indeed factual, according to their own doctrines and scriptural writings.

The Qur'an does not in any way discount Jesus as the Messiah or the Christ. Moreover, the Qur'an testifies to Jesus as being both the Christ and the Messiah,[33] as well as being a great messenger and prophet.[34] Furthermore, the Qur'an testifies to the Holy Spirit coming to Mary, who then gave a virgin birth to Jesus.[35] It testifies to the commission and miracles of Jesus, as well as the death and Resurrection of Jesus.[36] However, most of Islamic institutionalism would be satisfied with Jesus being recognized as an elevated being, the specific Messiah limited to Israel, and a great prophet. Islamic institutionalism and philosophy, in direct conflict with the Qur'an, inexplicably degrades Jesus back to prophet status and a lower grade of prophet than Mohammed.

When one then considers the heretical branch of Christianity known as Gnosticism, this end-time scenario becomes all the more clear; although, Gnosticism is much larger than its Christian sect. Gnosticism is the mystical branch of Christianity that is upheld by modern institutions such as Freemasonry and nurtured by past organizations such as the Knights Templar, the Cathars, the Manicheans, the Bogamils, the Fisher Kings, Rex Deus, Priory of Sion, the Essenes, and others. Gnosticism can be accurately described as the esoteric part of the Theosophical Society; Gnostics were precursors to the occult movement. James Robinson, an assembler of the Nag Hammadi Library, notes that Theosophy absorbed Gnosticism into its universal, free-associative style, creating a greater occultist synthesis.[37]

"Occultism" is a word coined by G. I. Gurdjieff from the Greek word *legomenon*, meaning something communicated, a structure of ideas presented in a form intended for some entirely different purpose, such as tarot cards. Contemporary occultists refer to this as *Legominism*. Others suggest "occult" originated from the Latin *occultus,* meaning "hidden," as in a hidden philosophy and or science.[38] However, *Webster's* defines *occult* as "mysterious, magical, supernatural, and the study of things hidden or mysterious"—in other words, Theosophy, which reflects the true spirit of the practice. Supernatural religions have been classified as the domain of the occult.[39] Occultists agree that spiritual forces from the hidden dimension of existence continually influence the material world and humanity can learn to experience these forces directly.[40]

Legominism in occult traditions is a method by which wisdom is transmitted in a form through Holy Grail tales and fairy tales that appear to be intended for an entirely different purpose;[41] some occultists refer to this arty code as the "green language" or the "language of the birds."[42] To this end, occultists believe Christianity and its source document, the New Testament, is a form of Legominism and that the New Testament is merely a collection of symbolic stories not to be taken literally, for the events and people recorded were crafted to transmit truths that become obscured by the literal translations.[43]

Christian Gnostics assert they are the authentic Christian church and that they have been persecuted by false Christian Catholicism and its literalist doctrines. Christian Gnostics do not believe the modern version of the Bible came from heaven but rather that it was a product of man manipulated by Catholicism and Constantine.[44] Gnosticism is the mystical branch of Christianity that does not consider Jesus to be God. They consider Jesus a great prophet but not God incarnate. They also believe Jesus did not die on the cross but that His Royal Bloodline continued in secrecy and that it is intact to this very day, only waiting for the opportunity to take center stage.

Christian Gnostics further believe early Christianity, and in particular, the Jerusalem Church, regarded Jesus as a mortal prophet, great and powerful but still mortal. They believe the mortal Jesus remained part of mainstream Christian variants, except for the heretical Pauline branch. Christian Gnostics believe the deity of Jesus occurred through the highly influential Pauline sect, which exerted extraordinary influence over Rome and Constantine. They believe Jesus only became the Son of God after the Council of Nicaea, where the bishops voted to elevate Jesus to God status, thereby hijacking the alleged original message and church of Jesus.[45] Constantine then only funded and supported bishops who agreed to this (new) unifying definition and doctrine of Christianity established at Nicaea in 325 C.E.[46] That part is true, but Gnostics do not even acknowledge Jesus as the Word, the Son of Man, the Messiah, or the Christ, nor do they recognize the virgin birth and the Resurrection.

In this alternative line of thinking, the elevation of Jesus to deity status was perpetrated to further expand and solidify the power of Constantine and the Roman Church. Gnostics believe it was Emperor Constantine who decided to elevate Jesus to deity status and then conspired to assemble a select Cannon of Gospels that underscored the deity doctrine of Jesus. Constantine and the Catholic Church then ordered the destruction of all other gospels that conflicted with Jesus being the Son of God, but some Gnostic gospels that purportedly speak to Jesus in purely human traits survived, such as the Dead Sea Scrolls and the Nag Hammadi Library,[47] through underground Gnostics and their reticent organizations.

It is also thought that this underground, spurious form of Christianity has completely infiltrated the Mother Church, Catholicism, and is ready to place its own candidate at its head. Can you imagine a pope who denies the Resurrection? One can only shudder at what heretical doctrines such a person would impose on the Mother Church. Even so, one should expect a Gnostic heretic to ascend to the apex of Catholicism, becoming pope, ensuring the way will be made clear for the False Prophet. The black pope will, in all likelihood, be the infamous antipope prophesied by the Catholic prophet Malachai.

What is more horrific to contemplate is that Gnostics believe they have evidence to support their positions. Their evidence will, of course, be full of lies and clever deceptions, but this is the intended diabolical plan. At the right time, they shall come forward with the earth-shattering discoveries intended to rip mainstream Christianity apart at its soul and spirit. Christianity will be left waffling in the winds of catastrophe from the two-fold attack of the denying of Jesus as the Christ and the implementing of the antipope atop the Mother Church. All those not deeply rooted shall be rocked to the soul of their faith, with most faltering, then capitulating. It is at this point when the False Prophet will make his entrance at center stage, carrying the same message. With his false evidence, false knowledge, and false miracles, the False Prophet will bind all religions together into one false religion, destined to welcome the false messiah.

At this point, it might be good to remember 1 John 4:2–3: “Every spirit that acknowledges that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is from God, but every spirit that does not acknowledge Jesus is not from God. This is the spirit of the antichrist.” Note, as well, 1 John 2:22: “Who is the liar? It is the man who denies Jesus is the Christ. Such a man is the antichrist.”

CHAPTER 47

THE DISCIPLES OF LIGHT

> *For such men are false apostles, deceitful workman, masquerading as apostles of Christ. And no wonder, for Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light. It is not surprising, then, if his servants masquerade as servants of righteousness. Their end will be what their actions deserve …*
>
> —2 Corinthians 11:13–14

Make no mistake; scurrilous, spurious forces have crafted and dispatched serious plots to utterly dismiss Jesus completely or manage Jesus as one of many sent to guide humankind.

Demond Wilson has noted that the combined endeavors by organizations upholding secular humanism, communism, Freemasonry, and New Age have produced a formidable movement to belittle Jesus to a minor role.[1]

Communism, for example, diminishes Jesus by reluctantly acknowledging Jesus lived as a historical being but lacked a divine spirit. They would rather relegate Jesus strictly to mythology if they could, but, of course, they cannot. Freemasonry and Gnosticism acknowledge Jesus as a true, important, historical figure, but they devaluate Jesus to a wise and enlightened individual, but still a man. New Age, polytheism, and Fascist Islam recognize Jesus historically but brusquely diminish Him to prophet status, while science and education systems summarily dismiss Jesus as a historical person.

But can these spurious forces pull this grandiose scheme off? And how will they accomplish this?

Such notions require mind-boggling planning, time, and effort to take root. The seeds must be planted and nourished throughout an extended period of time, in order to produce hallucinogenic fruit that will deny Jesus as the Messiah. Indeed, this was planned for 6,000 years. Showing their rebellious spirit, Theosophist Alice Bailey unexpectedly stated that it has been the objective for the forces of the coming world religion to affect preparedness through three powerful, western institutions: the church, educational institutions, and the Masonic Fraternity.[2] The evidence of their success is everywhere.

Christianity is rotting from within, collapsing from its own lack of faith. It is not uncommon for ministers and priests not to believe in the literal virgin birth and the literal Resurrection. Christianity is inundated with leaders who dismiss the accuracy of biblical history. Christianity is degrading beyond recognition through lack of faith and through allegorical interpretation, while justifying its existence by denying its truths. This is not by chance. Christianity has been diabolically infiltrated with heretics to corrode from within, and the results have been impressive. Gnostics who deny the divine status of Christ permeate the highest levels of these Christian institutions. They stand behind the allegorical application of truths as opposed to the indisputable application of those truths as facts. The church was the first pillar for pantheistic preparedness and sedition.

Christianity has been systematically ostracized from educational institutions funded by the public. Those institutions that have not yet been overrun are now being pursued under the guise of modern idioms, such as political correctness, tolerance, and application of hate crimes. Do not expect to see any form of Christian-influenced education in the not-so-distant future, unless these schools will be totally privately funded. Either that or their Christian dogma will be so polluted with apostasy that it will no longer be recognized as fundamental Christianity.

Creationism and Intelligent Design have been banished, replaced with the religion of the evolutionary theory and now taught as fact to the innocent. Evolution is a religion requiring more faith than any other religion. It is inundated with unsubstantiated conjectures, half-truths, impossibilities, contradictions, and politically motivated censorship. Only the truly fanatical of the so-called intelligentsia and those who are easily deceived continue to uphold such nonsense; they inexplicably prefer to deny God's existence. Christianity has been replaced with the doctrine of the new religion that includes sexual freedom for youths, sexual tolerance for gays, and acceptance of alternative lifestyles. Even mainstream Christian churches are accepting gay lifestyles, gay marriages, and even gay priests.

Environmental globalism is yet another key doctrine pounded into the young minds, alongside the fear of all forms of apocalypse. Global socialism is elemental to this indoctrination; students are conditioned to accept that thriving parts of the world should support those that are not. The minds of the young, over an extended period of time, have been bombastically brainwashed by provocateurs into world unification under a barrage of cultic, globalist policies so that we do not destroy ourselves from the face of the planet, thereby opening the door to the future utopia, the new religion, and world government.

Masonic fraternities are the true globalists. Generally the globalist organizations, and there is an impressive number, almost an uncountable number, are controlled by Freemasons and their upstart organizations. The United Nations is overwhelmed with globalist organizations sponsored by Freemasons—the World Trade Organization, the International Monetary Fund, the World Bank, or any other globalist organization you wish to serve up—and they are doing a marvelous job at bringing about the New World Order. One cannot cite a leader from any of the great industrialized economies who is not touting globalism. You can change the name of the country, the name of the leader, the party that he or she was elected with, and it matters not. Politicians all spout the same New World Order rhetoric and are working diligently at bringing it about. Their objective is to bring about the requisite governmental institutions to introduce world government at the first opportunity, which will partner with the new religion.

Ralph Epperson writes that Freemasonry desires to destroy current government and religion, thereby restoring humankind to the first estate, the spurious Garden of Eden, through a spurious redeemer. In other words, Freemasonry wishes to replace the God of the Bible as a cornerstone to recreating (the Hermetic) heaven on earth, through the Luciferian messiah,[3] just as the Nazis endeavored to do. Alex Mellor echoed this subversive conspiracy in the September 15, 1964 edition of the *Avocat a la Cour de Paris*, where he wrote: “Freemasonry was founded to become a counter-church…. Freemasonry does not destroy churches, but prepares to replace them.”[4] Freemasonry is the Third Pillar of preparedness and sedition.

The inner circle of Freemasonry, controlled by the ultra-secret Illuminati, has as part of its New World Order agenda, according to Demond Wilson, a diabolical plan to all but destroy Christianity. These globalist forces will intend to fold the surviving remnant of Christianity into the new, universal religion of Babylon led by the False Prophet. This emerging New Age pantheon, according to Masonic writings, considers Christianity to be darkness and evil.[5] Powerful, delusional attacks will deceive the elect of Christianity, if that were possible.[6] To my way of reckoning, the only deception that could fulfill this diabolical scheme would be false evidence to suggest, or prove, the Resurrection was a hoax, for just as the apostle Paul stated, all Christianity hangs on this single doctrine (1 Cor. 15:14) that Jesus was resurrected from the dead. One can also expect that the virgin birth will also be discredited to complete the devaluation of Jesus’ deity and Messiah credentials.

The conspiracy to devalue Jesus must leave Christianity with a new interpretation and meaning, modified to cooperate within the plurality of the future world religion, which will espouse one loosely unified doctrine. This newly organized and apostate mutation of Christianity will be the religion of the lamb that speaks like a dragon.[7] The new, apostate Christianity will ooze with new allegorical corruption and doctrine. Hence, modified Christianity must begin with the renewed persecution of the father of Christianity, Saul of Tarsus, the apostle Paul. Paul is the great divide separating opponents from Roman Christianity into its disparate, other spurious sects. The teachings of Paul proclaim the divinity of Christ as opposed to Jesus being just a human Messiah or prophet. Paul is unilaterally condemned by Gnostics as a heretic. This clearly lends itself to the likelihood for an all-out blitz in the future, attacking the character and credibility of Paul.

All monotheism, then, believes in the sanctity of Adam, Abraham, and Moses, and all recognize the importance of all other prophets delivering their God-inspired enlightenment to the world. The False Prophet will introduce new and unknown enlightenment that will bring Mohammed into the new Christian/Judaic fold as a great prophet of God. All will be acceptable to the new apostate Christianity and mysticism within Judaism and Islam, when they form a common alliance with the Gnostics of Christianity. Mysticism within monotheism is a contaminate, holding true to its spurious beliefs, endeavoring to turn monotheism over to pantheism and the doctrines of Babylon. Various mystical contaminates to monotheism will likely be the vehicles employed to ensure monotheism converts to mystical polytheism.

All the great prophets of monotheism, such as Moses, Abraham, and Mohammed, as well as Jesus, are already recognized in the mystic religions as great prophets and spiritual enlighteners, alongside others, such as Buddha, Hermes, and Confucius. They are all crowned as great enlighteners sent to help humankind on our evolutionary ascension to godhood. Spiritual leaders from all religions will be recognized as builders of enlightenment and spiritual guides for all of humankind under the new, universal religion of delusion. With Christianity in shambles and the mystic forms of the three monotheistic religions usurping control, the bridge from monotheism to pantheism is ready to be built; it’s only waiting for the timely and inspirationally measured catalysts.

Therefore, keep close to your heart that the surreptitious objective is to deceive and enslave the rebellious, naive, ignorant peoples of the earth into worshipping Satan and rejecting the true God of the universe. It is not enough for the rebellious angels to discount Jesus as the true Messiah. This is why only the chosen of the initiates, those who are always at the power center of the religions, are granted the true revelations of the Mysteries. Secrecy and deception are elemental doctrines in the pantheons, for the knowledge that Lucifer is their god and that fallen angels are their minor gods would surely collapse their credibility among the masses, unless careful, long-term preparation is done before revealing Lucifer as god to the people. As ludicrous as this first seems, do not dismiss it too quickly. In truth, the greater part of civilization today already follows pantheistic religions and doctrines.

Remember also that these religions and the people do not believe Lucifer, in his personified allegories, is evil; in fact, they truly believe the opposite. The gods of the pantheon, such as Osiris, are all sun gods and/or gods of light, and the religious pantheons are all religions of light and enlightenment. Light, according to spurious doctrine, is essentially the revelation of both truth and the knowledge of both good and evil:

> "You will not surely die," the serpent said to the woman. "For God knows that when you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil." When the woman saw that the fruit of the tree was good for food and pleasing to the eye, and also desirable for gaining wisdom, she took some and ate it.
>
> —Genesis 3:4–6

In this short narrative, the core doctrines of the pantheistic religions were set out. First, by eating of the fruit, Adam and Eve rebelled against God and followed Satan unknowingly. Second, the doctrine of light or knowledge was established, that knowledge of good and evil, or wisdom derived thereof, was key to evolving into gods, for Satan clearly stated that knowledge would make them like God. The two divine attributes of God have always been immortality and the capacity for the application of rational and ethical judgment.[8] This is why mysticism always professes secret knowledge and wisdom; it is the key doctrine for evolution into godhood, just as knowledge is the light, for Adam and Eve's eyes were opened after eating the fruit, enabling them to gain the wisdom of the divine. This then binds knowledge and mysticism together, just as Enoch the Evil created mysticism to hold the Seven Sacred Sciences, known as the knowledge of both good and evil. Third, the religion of light is always disciplined by reason and logic. It is the capacity to apply rational and ethical judgment at all times. The evolution to godhood dictates that the discipline in reason and logic is essential, similar to the New Age-like aliens memorialized as Vulcans in *Star Trek*.

Fourth, the final point: The true God is established as the alleged oppressor, who tries to keep humankind under the oppressive bondage of ignorance for His own oppressive desires. Meanwhile, Lucifer is the god of light, who freed humans from ignorance so that they might achieve godhood. Lucifer is transformed into a god of light and knowledge, the redeemer of humankind, as opposed to the scriptural adversary of humankind. Conversely, the true God is flipped into the role of the evil oppressor of humankind, stifling their rightful evolution into gods. As

Laurence Gardner states, both Christianity and Judaism are the suppressers of learning and knowledge.[9]

According to *Webster's*, *Lucifer* is Latin for the planet Venus. *Nelson's* ties the name to the morning star, just as Isaiah refers to Satan as "O morning star, son of the dawn."[10] The sun is also known as the morning star denoting light. *Unger's* defines Lucifer as Hebrew for "brightness."[11] Derivative words from Lucifer are words *lucent*, meaning shining and/or bright, or *lucid*, meaning shining, transparent: easily understood, and intellectually bright.[12] All derive from the genitive Latin word *lux* or *lucis*, meaning "light."

Gods like Osiris were sun gods and allegories for Lucifer.[13] Lucifer is the acknowledged god of light. The same allegory is acknowledged in Greek mythology, where Prometheus was the bringer of God's fire (light/knowledge) to humankind. Prometheus was banned from heaven for this act, just as Lucifer was. Lucifer was the bringer of light to humankind, as well as the patron god of hard work and builders.[14] Masonic writers Knight and Lomas note Freemasonry believes God has always existed; He has simply taken many names as people have perceived Him, including Marduk, Amon-Re, Yahweh, and Allah.[15] This will be a cornerstone doctrine in the spurious, end-time, harlot religion of Babylon.

According to the renowned Freemason Albert Pike, author of *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry/Pamphlets*, the light that all Masons seek is the true knowledge of who their god is, Lucifer.[16] Pike formalized the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry in 1868 C.E., which is now overseen by the Supreme Council of the Thirty-Third Degree through his work, Pike's *Morals and Dogmas*. Pike is further noted for his recruitment efforts through his many writings after the Civil War, when membership had diminished significantly.[17] Pike further formalized the Templar inheritance into Freemasonry rituals via the Scottish Rite. Pike sided with the rebellious Confederacy.[18] He was a senior member of the KKK, founded by Freemason and first Imperial Wizard Confederate General Nathan Bedford Forest in 1866. When Pike was asked about mixed-race Masonry, he replied: "I took my obligation to white men, not to Negroes. When I have to accept Negroes as brothers or leave Masonry, I shall leave it."[19] One must view Pike's true nature and intentions through this lens.

One wonders whether or not the KKK was/is part of the web of Luciferian secret societies dedicated to The Genesis 6 Conspiracy to enslave humankind. The KKK was closely related to Freemasonry, complete with tacit alliances;[20] passwords; and secret, left-handed handshakes.[21] KKK's organizational hierarchy overflows with unaccountable dragon, Nephilim, Atlantean, and fairy imagery. The KKK was to be an invisible empire (Otherworld/Tarterus) centered in Atlanta (Atlantis) and led by the Imperial Wizard and his fifteen Genii (Jinn). Each state was to be a Realm governed by a Grand Dragon and his eight to nine Hydras, each congressional district a Dominion governed by a Grand Titan and six to twelve Furies, each county a Province governed by a Grand Giant and four Goblins, each town a Den governed by a Grand Cyclops and two Night Hawks and/or twelve Terrors.[22]

These false religions do not consider Lucifer to be evil, nor do they consider him to be the devil. Satan is elevated to being the good god of freedom, liberty, and knowledge. He is the eternal rebel and the first free thinker, just as the Knights Templar and the Freemasons believed they were free thinkers and rebels against any form of artificial thought or economic controls.[23] Lucifer is the emancipator of worlds. He is whispered to be a good spirit to whom a great wrong has been done.[24]

Thirty-Third Degree Freemason and Satanist Aleister Crowley, curiously portrayed on the cover of *Sergeant Pepper's Lonely Hearts Club Band*, once noted the serpent, Satan, made our race gods through knowing good and evil. According to Crowley, Satan is life and light, while his zodiacal sign is Capricornus, the leaping goat, whose attribute is liberty.[25] Crowley had an eerie fascination with the Knights Templar, according to Freemason Ian Gittins.[26] After being initiated into philosophy, Crowley joined the Order of the Golden Dawn in 1898 C.E., and then after a mystical experience, he believed he was a chosen prophet of the new religion destined to replace Christianity.[27] Crowley identified himself with the Antichrist; he believed he received messages through his wife from Aiwass, a messenger of the gods, to invoke the Way of Horus and a New Order for humanity led by the messiah of the New Age.[28] Crowley came to view himself as the great 666 Beast of Revelation.[29]

Crowley enthusiastically wrote many articles and publications in support of Hitler and Nazism in the 1930s, but he was later discredited for doing so with the advent of World War II. Crowley was considered at one point the most wicked person in Britain; but he is also considered a distinguished prophet of the New Age.[30] Crowley's image and authority as a New Age prophet received a remarkable renaissance during the 1960s, with the rise of the drug culture and the genesis of the New Age movement.

Lucifer is believed by these religions to be the equal of Adonay. *Adonai*, according to Pike, was the rival of Baal and Osiris.[31] Baal and Osiris were the most important deities to the rival Egyptian and Canaanite spurious religions. Now, Adonai, or Adonay, was the God known by ancient Egyptians as *Aten* or *Adon* in Hebrew, the God that temporarily gained controlled over Egypt, either just before or just after the time of Moses. Pike notes:

> If Lucifer were not God would Adonay (the God of the Christians) whose deeds prove his cruelty, perfidy, and hatred of man, barbarism and repulsion for science, would Adonay and his priests calumniate him? Yes Lucifer is God, and unfortunately Adonay is also God.… Thus the universe is balanced by two forces which maintain its equilibrium: the force of attraction and that of repulsion. These two forces exist in physics, philosophy, and religion.… Thus the doctrine of Satanism is a heresy; and the true and pure philosophic religion is the belief in Lucifer, the equal of Adonay; but Lucifer, God of light and God of good, is struggling for humanity against Adonay, the God of darkness and evil.[32]

Remember that in the time of Babel, Nimrod and his spurious religion rendered God to be one of many gods, no more powerful than many others. The gods were relegated into various classes of power, authority, and personal disposition. We must now understand that these pantheistic religions view the true God as an evil, oppressive God and believe that God and Lucifer are rivals. Adonai is the one who slanders Lucifer via the Bible and its genitive religions.[33]

Pike believed Christians preach love but practice hate; they preach tolerance but practice persecution; Christians are forces of darkness.[34] Mysticism has turned everything upside down and inside out. The Masonic fraternities, the Illuminati, Rosicrucians, the New Age religion, Rex Deus, the Priory of Sion, and all associated religions and genitive organizations that worship the pantheon uphold and worship Lucifer as the "Fallen Angel" who was wronged.[35]

This is the ultimate role reversal that all the globalists, corrupted religions, Masonic fraternities, educational institutions, and governments are either conspiring to or are blindly assisting in bringing about. They have been systematically preparing the world for such a deception since the time of Babel and antediluvian times, but they have been held back, despite these endeavors, by God so they will take their place in the last seven years of this epoch, denoted by the Antichrist confirming a (peace) covenant with the world, a period renowned as the tribulation period.[36]

Freemasonry is endeavoring to bring about the destruction of contemporary government (nationalism) and religion (Christianity) through a restoration of humankind to the first estate (Eden) via a redeemer or Christos (Antichrist). They are attempting to replace God with Lucifer while creating (the Hermetic) heaven on earth with a Luciferian messiah.[37] The Bible has given us adequate warning: "For such men are false apostles, deceitful workmen, masquerading as apostles of Christ. And no wonder, for *Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light*. It is not surprising then, if his servants masquerade as servants of righteousness. There end will be what their actions deserve" (2 Cor. 11:12–15, emphasis added).

Expect a renaissance of the antediluvian and Babel spurious sciences. Expect to see these sciences exploited in heretofore unheard-of forms and magnitude, when combined with technology and alien influence. Expect mystical mythology will be employed, further glorifying the new Babel religion for its nurturing and maintenance of such knowledge from the time of Babel to the present. Expect that they will detail and martyr their history of survival under the brutal persecution of monotheism and, in particular, Christianity.

The chronology will be presented with famous, legendary icons of antiquity recognized as the guardians of the Seven Sciences—Aristotle: dialectics, Cicero: rhetoric, Euclid: geometry, Boethius: arithmetic, Ptolemy: astronomy, Donatus: grammar, and Pythagorus: music.[38] The Seven Liberal Sciences were kept alive in secrecy throughout the millennia by organizations such as the Pythagorus Mystery School that disseminated its obscure knowledge throughout Europe[39] via Rex Deus organizations such as the Knights Templar. They, in turn, spawned and passed on the spurious knowledge to organizations such as Freemasonry, Rosicrucianism, and the Royal Society.

Pythagorus, founder of Greek mathematics, circa 582–507 B.C.E., is considered a patriarch of mysticism. Pythagorus was a proponent of reincarnation; he believed the essence of all things was a number. Pythagorism is celebrated as "number mysticism"; he also promoted the numerical qualities held within music.[40] Pythagoras is accredited with synthesizing esoteric thought from around the world into a “perennial philosophy,”[41] a strikingly similar philosophy to that of the Upanishads of India of the same time period. He was the first to call himself a lover of wisdom, a philosopher.[42] He was likely one of the first Sophists, for philosophy first formed in Greece in the sixth century B.C.E. Sophists were the taciturn link between Pre-Socratic philosophy and the post-Aristotelian philosophy, which purportedly advanced beyond mythologies.[43]

The Polychronicon recorded Pythagoras actually discovering one of the Pillars of Lamech, while Hermes found the other; although this version is not recorded in any other legends,[44] suggesting Pythagoras was either a student of Hermes or a direct inheritor of his knowledge. Jamblichus, the biographer of Pythagoras,[45] wrote that both Pythagoras and Plato developed their varieties of philosophy after reading the inscriptions from the two infamous, antediluvian columns,[46] suggesting that these infamous columns were still in existence up to circa 500 B.C.E. Pythagoras has been recorded as living circa 585–565 to 495–470 B.C.E.[47]

Pythagorean Mystery Schools later received additional knowledge from the Essenes, the Kabbalistic descendants of Solomon and David.[48] Pythagorean Mystery Schools were established in Crotona, Italy.[49] It is believed that Pythagoras migrated to Crotona from Samos Island in 530 B.C.E., where he organized the aristocratic elite into a powerful, ascetic religious order.[50] These Mystery Schools, incidentally, also held very close ties to the ancient White Brotherhood in Egypt that I will address later.

From Crotona, Pythagorean philosophy was propagated throughout Europe, from France to England.[51] It was from both Pythagoras and the Gnostic Basilidian system of religion that the original philosophy and morality derived, which then founded the Freemasonry (and thus the Templar) belief system.[52]

CHAPTER 48

THE ALIEN PHENOMENA

Babylon was a gold cup in the Lord’s hand; she made the whole earth drunk. The nations drank her wine; therefore they now have gone mad.

—Jeremiah 51:7

Such diabolical schemes of deception would not be complete unless they totally confused and manipulated the modern mind with fantastic delusions.

So, what kinds of fantastic delusions might we look for?

Let us first begin with the alien phenomena—the picture-perfect, stateof- the-art deception designed for a dissonant generation.

Unprecedented waves of UFO sightings and abductions increase exponentially every few years. We are also experiencing unprecedented and increasing waves of literature and entertainment promoting the acceptance of such notions. Our collective attitudes on a global scale have been altered dramatically in such matters over the last fifty years. This kind of global brainwashing will continue until our collective minds are completely prepared for deception.

Since the dawn of the Space Age, public perceptions and opinions have reached critical mass, and statistics suggest that more than 50 percent now believe alien life forms both exist and interrelate with us on a regular basis.

In less than one complete generation, we have become voluntarily predisposed to accepting an inevitable, formal encounter with alien beings from around the universe, where we then will take our rightfully reserved chair at the table of governing galactic species, just as in the *Star Trek* or *Babylon 5* tradition.

Hollywood tends to set forth a set of ideals about aliens, primarily that they will provide humankind with new, secret, and increasing knowledge in the tradition of mysticism and a closer, intimate relationship with the universal life force. We are about to dawn a new age of peace and prosperity. We are at the precipice of a momentous quantum leap in our evolution; we are about to morph, as New Age philosophy likes to phrase it, vibrate into a higher plane of existence through the discipline of reason over our exploding knowledge. They promise an age where people will only be concerned with achieving enlightenment (immortality), an age where the truth of Brahma will come from heaven and will be led by the future Buddha, Lord Maitreya.[1] In other words, we will experience our final triumph over the knowledge gained in Eden by Adam and Eve when they ate from the Tree of Gnosis.

These alien messages exude mysticism and New Age doctrine. We are led to believe we have misunderstood the enlightened commission of Jesus. They profess Jesus was merely ahead of His time, sent forward as a guide to our destiny, that Jesus had already attained the gift of harnessing the power of knowledge as an example for the world and that Jesus was not professing to be the Messiah and Son of God. Gnostics attempt to lead us to believe that the so-called joint Essene message of Jesus and John the Baptist was to proclaim all would evolve into gods once they learned and mastered the mystical secrets remembered as the Way,[2] just as they had. These mystical secrets of the universe are what the aliens/angels are here to provide humankind, just as they provided illicit knowledge from heaven to the descendants of Cain. All of this, of course, is affirmed in a very polite and politically correct environment, but understand this is still the dissonant doctrine of the Antichrist, sponsored by fallen angels, that denies Jesus is the Christ.

Another underlying message resonating from our future, alien-filled destiny is the Babel syndrome, which his yet another method to globalize disparate peoples into one entity. This is a future that's prophesying humankind will be united, speaking with one voice, living under one government and one religion, centered in a universal life force, all in the tradition of *Star Wars* and the Tower of Babel, which will ultimately be replaced with the Luciferian religion once the Antichrist takes power. The end-time religion will be split into two distinct segments,[3] just as the tribulation is split into two. First there will be the false religion of Babylon that unites the world. In the last half, it will then be replaced by the Antichrist, who will be revealed to the people as the messiah. Meanwhile, Lucifer will be unveiled to be an emancipating god of light and knowledge.

All this will be an opportunistic venue for the modern Nimrod to wave his fist at God in complete rebellion, to climb the ziggurat of technology and knowledge to wage battle with the oppressive Adonai, just as Nimrod of Babel had threatened to do. Scripture says, “It [Antichrist] grew until it reached the host of the heavens and it threw some of the starry host down to the earth and trampled on them” (Dan 8:10). The world will be led into a galactic war through this alien deception.

Disturbing tales from the abduction phenomena echo ancient encounters with fallen angels, demons, and forms of Nephilim. The victims in the abductions are usually paralyzed at the start of the encounter. Aliens are generally described as rough-skinned, thin-lipped, long-necked, viper-like beings, similar to Nephilim but smaller. Remember, angels possess changeling qualities in our earthly realm; angels could easily alter their size and appearance at will. All these descriptions, common in most abductions, neatly parallel records of ancient encounters with fallen angels, complete with those fallen angels promising knowledge and power. It must be noted, as well, these ancient fallen angels also promised godhood, as witnessed by what took place in Eden with Eve and Adam and Satan. One further wonders, are changelings attempting to create Nephilim hybrids through DNA to skirt around creation laws?

Not only do contemporary alien encounters echo ancient encounters with demons, Nephilim, and fallen angels, but also they reflect a commonality and an inexplicable kinship with fairy folk, according to Eason. Author W. Y. Evans-Wentz notes the ancients named the inhabitants of the otherworld: gods (fallen angels); genies (Jinn); daemons (demons); shades; and spirits, which the ancient and modern Celts referred to as gods and fairies.[4] Many of the less benign aliens of today, according to Eason, portray an eerie kinship to the likeness of goblins and gnomes of fairy mythology. Goblins and trolls were described with eyes like glowing coals, with withered crones. Only in Nordic legends were some fairy folk known to be tall and noble; in most other legends, fairy folk were small beings of mischief and evil. Trolls, goblins, gnomes, and other similar creatures come in many different sizes; they have grotesque, fleshy faces and are very hairy.

In the 1954 alien abduction that transpired in Chic-Cerro de las Tres Torres, Venezuela, witnesses described the aliens as dwarf-like, hairy beings. In 1955, in Hopkinsville, Kentucky, five tiny, goblin-like beings with wrinkled skins and large eyes and ears were witnessed.[5] Most documented accounts describe famous aliens known today as "the grays." Fairies that kidnapped children were known as the "grey [sic] neighbors" by the Shetlanders; these fairies were small, gray, goblin-and-troll-like creatures.[6] These mythological fairies were a Celtic conception to describe small people who can become invisible and who were feared abductors of children.[7] Just read a description of a fairy abduction: "And many have been taken away by the said spirits, for a fortnight or month together, being carried with them in chariots through the air, over hills and dales, rocks and precipices, till at last they have been found lying in some meadow or mountain bereaved of their senses." Another encounter from more than a hundred years ago, witnessed by David Williams of North Wales, included a brilliant, meteor-like vehicle that flew and was followed by a ring of fire, small, fairy-like beings that danced to music, all the while surrounded by brilliant lights.[8] Sounds very much like UFOs and alien encounters to me.

Alien abductions hold familiar kinship with fairy folk and fairy abductions. For example, Cassandra Eason notes fairies have a need to reproduce with humans,[9] ostensibly like aliens. Fairies never abduct old people—only babies, young men, and young women, much like aliens. In a similar fashion to alien abductions, the victims' minds remain blank of what was done and said to them in fairy abductions.[10]

Goblins, elves, trolls, and gnomes are known in mythology as beings that are described as "grays." They are gray-skinned have huge, oval heads; small, almond-like eyes; and spindly limbs. And they are eager to breed with humans to modify and refresh their genetic makeup so that they might continue to survive.[11] Again, this is an eerily accurate description of the modern alien descriptions, as well as modern Hollywood creations such as the Asgarde from the *Star Gate* series.

Janet Bord concludes fairy abductions utilized the very same claim staked by aliens today, whereby they need to mate with humans because they need an injection of new genes to bolster their weakened genetic makeup.[12] Gene manipulation through eugenics was the same apostasy endeavored by the Nazis and the New Man project, as well as the far-left movement of liberals, the Progressives, whose doctrines dominated the first four decades of the twentieth century but died a sudden death after World War II, the fall of Nazism, and the rise of Communism. Beware of the resurgence of the contemporary Progressive movement of modern, liberal political parties, for Progressives are still married to the old doctrines of the New Man, the New World Order, and Babylon. Remember, too, this is how at least one race of Nephilim was created in ancient times.

In fairy lore, fairies possess changeling qualities. As per W. B. Yeats, fairies are not always little and take the size or shape of their choosing.[13] This ability is not a coincidence. Cahill noted the Tuatha Denaan devolved in mythology from a race of giants to the Little People, fairies, and leprechauns as some form of euphemism and disguise for their true nature.[14]

It is my contention that these modern alien encounters are nothing more than demonic and/or angelic encounters, crafted to reflect the modern attitudes of humankind as we endeavor to interpret our place in the universe. Although modified for technology and its rapid advancements, they are a finely sculptured, self-glorified image of delusion that fallen angels are delivering, deceiving the modern mind through its own aspirations, just as they did with fairies and goblins with our ancestors.

The advanced technology of alien encounters, along with all of its other alluring mythos, has been uniquely brewed to deceive contemporary humans. This magical and mysterious deception is an enticing and intoxicating cocktail for the modern mindset which is designed to lead our world astray; further away from God and Jesus; and into the universal world of Babel and false light, heralded by eastern religions, New Age, and Masonic fraternities, inclusive of the ultra-diabolical Illuminati. Therefore, expect that alien encounters will continue to increase until the momentum dictates a wondrous day when humankind is greeted with a formal first encounter of the fourth kind.

CHAPTER 49

THE MOTHER OF ALL SORCERIES

Many casualties, piles of dead, bodies without number, people stumbling over corpses—all because of the wanton lust of a harlot, alluring, the mistress of sorceries who enslaved the nations by her prostitution and peoples by her witchcraft.

—Nahum 3:3–4

Since alien encounters are anticipated to intensify at a mind-melting pace, what other forms of finely tuned delusions will rise, all designed to prepare humankind for the end times?

Expect to witness ever more spiritual guides and spiritual encounters. Demons and fallen angels masquerading as angels of light will continue to deceive at an increasing rate through visions and contacts. They will pass on more and more spiritual enlightenment as humankind draws closer to its destined ascension to a higher plane. Anticipate more and more New Age and Eastern spiritual leaders taking center stage; all will be guided by their spiritual guides, the ill-famed Avatars of Theosophy and Rosicrucianism. We are about to embark on a great evangelistic quest into Spiritualism that will grip the world unlike anything ever witnessed before. This will be an evangelistic movement of tremendous spiritual fervor that will unite the people of this earth. The people of the world have been well prepared; the false prophets are poised to seize center stage.

Christianity will not escape the never-ending waves of skillful false prophets, superbly crafted counterfeit visions, and the seductive lure of the harlot religion. Look for increasing visions of Mary, beckoning the Mary cult to explode within Catholicism first and then in the balance of Christianity before crossing over to join the spurious religions. The Mary apparitions of Lourdes; Fatima; Medjugorje; and the countless minor Mary apparitions, such as Rwanda and those of Joan of Arc, all preach a familiar and common doctrine rooted in the Revelation prophecy.[1] All Mary apparitions tout Mary (Babylon) to be the queen of kingdoms, the queen of all the people of the earth, and the bringer of peace (through the Covenant of Death).[2]

Mary apparitions trumpet varieties of expressions on the same theme: "I am the queen of peace. I am the mother of God, I am the mother of all people on earth,"[3] just as she was described by the prophets Isaiah and John. She is also described regularly as "Our Lady" and "Our Lady of Peace." She preaches a doctrine of peace and cooperation and uniting under one true religion. And she says that if the world does not repent, it will destroy itself from the face of the earth: "You cannot imagine what is going to happen, nor what the Eternal Father will send to the earth. That is why you must be converted! Renounce everything. Do penance…. Persevere and help me convert the world."[4] Again, does this not ring familiar? This is the doctrine of Babylon, the objective of the Masonic fraternities, and the teaching of all spurious religions since Babel. The Mary deception, in my opinion, is merely an end-time apparition sponsored by the dark angels.

The true identity of the apparition is not Mary but Ishtar or Isis. She is the feminine side to God in the trinity of spurious religions. Remember, Isis was wife to Osiris and mother to Horus, the pantheistic son of God. Mary will be the one described in Revelation 12:1–3 as the woman wearing a crown of twelve stars and clothed with the sun, with the moon under her feet, just as she already has adopted this allegorical appellation: "They say she appears standing on a cloud wearing a gray dress, a white veil, and a crown of twelve stars. The cloud is significant in that never have the visionaries seen her feet or shoes." And: "The visionaries at Medjugorje unhesitatingly refer to her as a great and mysterious sign, and a woman possessed of inordinate beauty. This lady and queen comes in such light, they say, that she seems to be actually clothed with the sun. She has a crown of twelve stars and she stands on a cloud, as she is described in Apocalypse 12:1."[5]

The woman in Revelation will be falsely described as the allegorical Isis (Mary). As we will explore later, Mary Magdalene, the alleged wife of Jesus according to Gnostics, is also known in Gnosticism as Sophia (Isis), the female equal to God. Gnostic doctrine also describes Sophia as surrounded by the sun, moon, and stars, exactly like what occurs in the Mary apparitions. Sophia, Isis, and Mary Magdalene are all mystical and figurative mothers to gods, just as this Mary describes herself as the mother of God. Mary Magdalene is further renowned in Gnosticism as "Our Lady," just as the Virgin Mary in Catholicism (and the Mary apparitions). Note also that the great Gnostic- and Templar-built, Gothic cathedrals in Europe, like Notre Dame, were all originally and surreptitiously dedicated to "Our Lady," Mary Magdalene,[6] and not to the Virgin Mary as most of Christendom believes.

The sun that clothes the Mary apparitions is Osiris (Lucifer), and the moon at her feet is Horus, forming the Masonic trinity. The twelve stars crowning her head will be avowed to represent the zodiac or the universe, while the baby that will be born is the Antichrist, Lord Maitreya/Horus—the antediluvian Orion. Remember, signs in astrology are an essential doctrine to spurious religions and end-time deceptions. This apparition is not the sign described in Revelation, and it is not the intended biblical application. Use of cleverly manipulated Scripture is yet another trait of the spurious religions.

It is through the Mary cult that I expect that Christianity will be tamed, first in Catholicism and then in the balance of Christianity. The apparitions preach a consistent message that is, at first glance, consistent with Christianity, but upon closer scrutiny, one finds the apparitions profess a most concerning doctrine. This cult-like religion preying upon devoted Catholics has continued to, and is continuing to, preach a disingenuous message of repentance, peace, and conversion. The apparition says, "Be converted! It will be too late when the sign comes. Beforehand, several warnings will be given to the world. Have people hurry to be converted." And: "Hurry to be converted. Do not wait for the great sign. For unbelievers, it will be too late to be converted."[7]

The misleading messages consistently preach repentance from sin, world unity, and peaceful coexistence—or unprecedented calamities will come to pass. We must unite under one religious banner in peace, or we will destroy ourselves from the face of the earth.[8] In future years, as time runs out, these keepers of the Mary cult will leap forward, proclaiming fantastic prophecies of doom unless the world repents, converts, and lives under one unified banner. No doubt, several cataclysmic prophecies and breathtaking, cosmic signs will be ignored and then fulfilled before Catholics, and then the world will take heed and convert out of fear. Do not be surprised if aliens are woven into these mysterious signs and disasters.

Again, do these predictions not ring familiar? The world must unite under one religion or be lost from the face of the earth. This is the same battle song trumpeted by environmentalists, peace groups, and globalists. This is the same subversive nightmare envisioned by Masonic fraternities; it is being deceitfully waged under the banner of peaceful coexistence to funnel the masses into a universal religion and government out of fear. The true and pure spirit of monotheism does not function this way; the true faith is centered in free choice, not fear.

Let us now consider the prophet Daniel: “When they feel secure, he [the Antichrist], will destroy many and take his stand against the Prince of princes” (Dan. 8:25). Peace is a wonderful thing, but peace under the banner of human-led world government and religion is not; this is why God confused the languages and dispersed the people at Babel.

Whether or not the delusion is the Virgin Mary, Mary Magdalene, spirit guides, any other form of false gods or angels, or even alien encounters, one must recognize the consistent nature of all these delusions. All cling to the doctrine of peaceful coexistence through unity under a new, enlightened, universal religion, and they all possess identical doctrines in their basic spurious forms. One must learn to understand that these delusions are real and are taking place at ever-increasing rates. All is currently being played out to predispose people to accept the ultimate deception that the apostle Paul warns will bring about the great rebellion in the last days:

> Don’t let anyone deceive you in any way, for that day will not come until the rebellion occurs and the man of lawlessness is revealed, the man doomed to destruction. He will oppose and will exalt himself over everything that is worshipped, so that he sets himself up in God’s temple, proclaiming himself to be God.
>
> —2 Thessalonians 2:3–4

The rebellion will be the people of the earth falling away from God into apostasy, through the end-time religion of Babylon, to follow the Antichrist. The False Prophet will stage the rebellion to clear the way for the Antichrist, the messiah of the New Age millennium. The people of the world will be required to come together, to unite under one banner, one government, just as the people of the plain did at Babel. Expect this attitude will manifest itself through any number of calamities: nuclear or chemical war, pollution, global warming, famines, aliens, or any form apocalyptic destruction. The delusion will become stronger in the face of recognizing that humankind is just another life form in the universe. Expect that language will become even less of a barrier, with universal translators who will adopt one international language, likely English, so as to once again be analogous with one language like Babel. Once more, nothing humankind plans will be impossible for them.

Babylon will sponsor a global peace treaty, uniting all the nations under one world government as part of its promised utopia; the treaty will be confirmed by the future Antichrist.[9] This infamous treaty is known in prophecy as the "Covenant of Death."[10] It is for this reason Revelation described the prostitute as sitting on many waters and riding the Beast with seven heads and ten horns.[11] The seven heads are the seven great empires of history: Egypt; Assyria; Babylon; Persia; Greece; Rome; and the revived, future Roman Empire. The prostitute rides this beast, for she was the religion for all these great empires past and will be once more in the great empire of the last days. The ten horns represent the leaders of the end time ten great divisions, zones, and/or kingdoms of the world, which are now being assembled through trading zones and spheres of influence. *Unger's* notes the sprouting of horns to be "imagery, signaling the revival of a nation or a power."[12]

North America will be one of these zones. Europe will be another, and so on, just as we see coming to pass today with NAFTA and the EEC. These ten zones will form the future world government, under the spiritual guidance of Babylon and the False Prophet. The power and influence of the opulent, harlot religion will bind the world together beneath one banner, just as in the time of Babel. Remember, future Babylon City will be the lavish centerpiece for global unification, global government, global religion, and global commerce.

Global unity is necessary to maximize the proper free flow of the universal god force, or life force. Once humankind achieves global unity, pantheistic doctrine dictates the proper free flow of the universal life force will permit humankind, en masse, to make a quantum leap to a higher plane of existence, or godhood, which the aliens are now secretly promising. Babylon will be a form of government, with all its power and influence, rather like the Catholic Church in Europe, but it is not and will not be the global government. This becomes very clear in Revelation, when the ten horns and the Antichrist plot against Babylon to bring her to her destruction.[13] Therefore, Babylon cannot be the world government.

CHAPTER 50

SPIRIT OF THE ANTICHRIST, THE BEAST

> *This is how you can recognize the Spirit of God: Every spirit that acknowledges that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is from God. Every spirit that does not acknowledge Jesus is not from God. This is the spirit of the antichrist.*
>
> —1 John 4:2–3

In the antediluvian epoch, first there was Enoch and the spurious religion, and then came the evil potentates led by hordes of Nephilim and likely Orion the Hunter, who enslaved the people. In Babel we found a similar scenario, with Hermes arriving first to discover the remnant of the Sacred Sciences, followed by Nimrod and his tyrannical empire.

So, how will the end times, parallel the times of Nephilim, Nimrod, mysticism, and rebellion?

Just as in ages past, the deceptive temperament for the harlot religion will be to prepare the way for the Antichrist or false messiah. Therefore, it must take root first.

Although the true Antichrist has been reserved specifically for the preordained times by the true God, the last three-and-one-half years of the seven-year tribulation,[1] this has not prevented the forces of evil from endeavoring to introduce the false messiah from the beginning. Since Adam and Eve's fall from grace, forces within the rebellious and independent lineage of humankind have toiled tirelessly throughout the generations to introduce the false messiah. The ultimate objective for spurious forces is to steadfastly introduce the false messiah at a time conflicting with the divinely destined time laid down by the true God of the universe. As students of history, we have been witnesses to many such past, mutinous endeavors, where the spirit of the spurious religion gained control over world government and placed into position its likely candidate for world dictator.

We must remember the spirit of the Antichrist[2] is like a living being; it continually lurks, patiently awaiting its opportunity to seize its prey at a time of its own choosing, like a beast, but it will accept the preordained times if necessary. "For the secret power of lawlessness is already at work; but the one who holds him back will continue to do so until he is taken out of the way. And then the lawless one will be revealed" (2 Thess. 2:7–8).

Only the Holy Spirit prevents the spirit of the Antichrist from seizing a powerful-hungry potentate, holding world power, or ascending to world power. Only the Holy Spirit prevents the spirit of the Antichrist from completing the end-time abomination that will cause desolation until its prophesied time. Only the Holy Spirit prevents the forces of evil from fulfilling the spirit of the Antichrist revealing himself to the world by taking his stand, backed by the people of the earth against the true God. Without the power of the Holy Spirit, such would have taken place already under Nimrod or any of the six great world powers past.

Great historical kings, such as Nebuchadnezzar, Alexander, and Julius Caesar represent three of the most noteworthy examples of the spurious religion forging itself with powerful world empires to present a plausible Antichrist. Nebuchadnezzar had his reign interrupted for seven years,[3] until he acknowledged the true God of the universe, after he had all but completed the abomination in the temple but had not yet declared himself to be God from his throne in the temple; this has been reserved for the future Antichrist to do.[4] Alexander and Julius Caesar were slain before completing their unholy tasks but were already considered deities before their deaths; neither, however, ruled over the entire world. But Alexander was regarded by the Iranians of that period to be the accursed, hostile spirit relating to the end-time showdown between the forces of good and evil.[5]

Since the Roman Empire, other worthy procurers of evil have presented themselves, offering plausible opportunity for the spirit of the Antichrist. The post-Roman Empire candidates, however, generally constrained themselves to the fulfillment of end-time prophecy with respect to the rebirth of the Roman Empire as a requisite and the platform to seize absolute power. Although from the spurious perspective, this is not required, biblical prophecy demands the Roman Empire must be both the preparatory platform and the epicenter for the last world empire of this age.

Mussolini was one such candidate. Even if he was not a serious candidate for Antichrist, he did possess the spirit of the Antichrist and would have, if permitted, fulfilled the biblical requirements. Mussolini, like Hitler, also believed in the New Man doctrine: the fascists of the New Age were to be fashioned after an Italian redeemer who saw himself as a prophet. Mussolini envisioned Rome would be the center and the symbol to his new, political religion and capital of his new empire. This delusion required a superman, for Mussolini saw himself as a Caesar and a Savior, the Redeemer. All pronouns referring to Mussolini were capitalized during his reign of terror, while his close followers claimed his infallibility as a superman. Mussolini created in Italy the cult of Duce's divinity.[6]

Seizing absolute power and doing so illegally are two of the principal traits of the Antichrist. Other, more notable, and serious candidates of whom Nostradamas prophesied were Adolf Hitler and Napoleon. Both were brutal dictators who seized absolute power illegally and toiled relentlessly to reunite the Roman Empire. Both held an unexplained hatred of Christianity and, in particular, Catholicism.

We've discussed Hitler in a previous chapter, so let us now look at Napoleon, who usurped the Revolutionary government to become dictator of France. What is not generally known is that the religion of Babylon had already established itself within the rebellion and was in control, waiting for a possible Antichrist. Robespierre established the Cult of the Supreme Being, also known as the Cult of Reason, as the official religion of France in 1793–1794 C.E. Robespierre converted all Christian churches through tyranny to temples of the new cult, violently forcing them to worship the Supreme Being. This included Notre Dame and Abbey St. Germaine cathedrals that were then rededicated to the goddess Isis. The new religion of the rebellion was the same religion of Languedoc, the same religion as the heretical Cathars (and Templars) of some 600 years previous,[7] who were persecuted to the verge of extinction by the Catholic Inquisition.

The objective for the French Revolution was to overthrow the monarchy that supported Roman Catholicism (since the overthrow of the Merovingians) and to eradicate Christianity from France, according to Hancock and Bauval. Christian eradication was accepted as official doctrine in 1793 and then set in motion as a systematic campaign, according to French historian Michel Vovelle in his opus *La Revolution Contre l'Eglise*. This systematic eradication was efficiently carried out through state-sponsored enterprises, brusquely imposed through methodical intimidation and violence.[8] All this was in place when Napoleon seized power; Napoleon, too, was thought to be a Freemason.[9]

The future Fuehrer will be a great war leader in the spirit of Napoleon and Hitler at the start of their reigns; the Antichrist will be unstoppable, even though he will ascend to power on a pastoral platform of peace. In the same way that Nimrod, Alexander, Napoleon, and Hitler bent the world to their will for a short time, so will the future Antichrist. Once this Antichrist has seized absolute power, he will display all the terrible attributes that Hitler bludgeoned the world with. He will then transform into a warrior in the same scurrilous spirit as the Nephilim, Nimrod, Nebuchadnezzar, Alexander, Caesar, Napoleon, and Hitler.

Becoming a deity is a prerequisite for the Antichrist, just as Nebuchadnezzar, Alexander, and Julius Caesar endeavored to bring about. We know that Hitler and Mussolini had already considered themselves in messianic terms. In fact, Hitler considered himself second in his Aryan pantheon, behind only Nazism's perverted characterization of Jesus as a Nordic, Aryan leader. Hitler had already portrayed himself as a prophet of his new doctrines pertaining to his New Testament. Hitler, according to Peter Godman, declared himself to be the messiah of his political religion and heroized himself as a savior and redeemer of Aryan blood, a Christ-like figure.[10]

Alexander, too, was completely immersed in the bull cult and Antichrist-like Mysteries. In many of the birth legends of Alexander, his bloodlines were always traced back through his mother, Olympias, and through unexplained Egyptian bloodlines to a divine lineage of pharaohs, which is why Alexander eventually had himself crowned pharaoh in

Thebes, home to Amun.[11] Darius III previously claimed the crown of Egypt; Egypt had become a vassal province to Persia. Thus, Alexander was the rightful successor to the Egyptian throne after defeating Darius three times in battle.[12] Plutarch noted that all agreed Alexander had descended down from Hercules; from Caranus; and from Aeucus, by Neoptolemus, on his mother's side.[13] While in Egypt, Alexander completed a pilgrimage to the temple of Amun, where the high priest greeted him at once: "Welcome, from his father, Amun." While there, Alexander was rebuked and told to address his true father (Amun) with more respect, because Amun was no mortal parent.[14]

Olympias was Phillip's third wife. She was startlingly beautiful but was prone to terrible storms of temper, was wildly eccentric, and possessed a frightening obsession with snakes.[15] Plutarch additionally wrote that Philip discovered Olympias (curiously) sleeping with a serpent. King Philip of Macedonia, and father to Alexander, in this legend then received a terrifying vision of Olympias's body being sealed and a vision of a lion because of this encounter, whereby Philip then went to the Charron of Megalopolis to consult the oracle of Apollo at Delphi. Consequently, Philip was then ordered to sacrifice to and honor above all the god of Amun. Philip was further told that he would lose one eye for spying through a chink in the door on Olympias and the god, Amun, who had taken the form of a serpent (dark angel) to sleep with Olympias[16] (a recurring Nephilim creation theme). Alexander was reared in the ancient Egyptian religion of Amun; it made no pretensions to be any other religion than that of Egypt.[17] Aristotle was later sent to instruct Alexander,[18] for Aristotle was a pupil of Plato and Egyptian mysticism. Aristotle then raised Alexander with the philosophy of Egypt.[19]

After Alexander was initiated in the Amun temple, he crowned himself from that point on with his new Horns of Kingship,[20] once more connecting Alexander back to the Atlantean and Nephilim kingships. Alexander was documented as *Dhu 'l-Qarnayn* in the Qur'an, meaning the "Two Horned-One," a king, who, for a short time, was given the means to achieve anything.[21] All Antichrist figures unexplainably possess the power to bend the world to their will for a short while. And seemingly authentic Antichrist figures unexplainably commit to death marches. Napoleon and Hitler marked their death marches by invading Russia; King Sennacherib of

Assyria lost 185,000 outside of Jerusalem;[22] and Alexander inexplicably set out on his death march when returning from India, slaughtering 145,000 men; 30,000 survived the march.[23]

While discussing the spirit of the Antichrist, we ought to spend time on the Beast that Scripture identifies the future Antichrist with.[24] The Psalmist says, “When my heart was grieved and my spirit embittered, I was senseless and ignorant; I was a brute beast before you” (Psalm 73:22). God defines a spiritual beast to be one with an embittered spirit, unaccountably ignorant of God’s love, goodness, and authority. A spiritual beast is incapable of either understanding or appreciating God’s omnipotent love or is quite simply too callous to learn about Him.

Consider the book of Jude:

> In the very same way, these dreamers pollute their own bodies, reject authority and slander celestial beings. But even the archangel Michael, when he was disputing with the devil about the body of Moses, did not dare to bring a slanderous accusation against him, but said, “The Lord rebuke you!” Yet these men speak abusively against whatever they do not understand; and what things they do not understand by instinct, like unreasoning animals [beasts]—these are the very things that destroy them. Woe to them! They have taken the way of Cain.
>
> —Jude 1:8–10

Jude completes the allegorical definition of beasts as those who slander celestial beings, along with rejecting God’s authority. Spiritual beasts speak abusively against whatever they do not understand; it is their instinct to do so, like unreasoning animals, like beasts. They are similar to their antediluvian counterparts, who followed in the ways of Cain (and Nephilim). What an extraordinarily pertinent parallel!

Satan and his angels manipulate these vulgar and ignorant spiritual beasts to slander God in heaven and all who dwell in heaven with God, just as Satan and his cohorts utilized Cain and his descendants, as well as Nimrod and Hermes. Dark angels engage ignorant humans to do their slanderous handiwork through the spurious religion. Rebellious angels know all too well the power of the true God and do not wish to bring His wrath down upon themselves before the great judgment. The disfiguring doctrines and slander will be clear and identifiable signatures of the future Antichrist, after he has seized power. The future Antichrist will be a true scriptural beast.

CHAPTER 51

THE NEW NIMROD

In the latter part of their reign, when rebels have become completely wicked, a stern-faced king, a master of intrigue, will arise. He will become very strong, but not by his own power. He will cause astounding devastation and will succeed in whatever he does. He will destroy the mighty men and the holy people.

—Daniel 8:23–24

The pace of thought and change is so quick now that most should not ask if world government will come, but rather, when it will come. The world seems to be almost ready for such an institution to take shape, requiring only time, a great war or catastrophe, a religious revival under one religious banner, or the introduction of the alien deception made real to bring this grandiose scheme about.

One of the conditions above or a combination of some of them is all that will be required to drive the people of the earth into the welcoming arms of the globalists, who are now perfectly poised, ready to impose world government. World government is not a mythical, unattainable goal, but rather an attainable, plausible option for the world, a world that is currently spiritually adrift, looking for answers. World government will be achieved in this generation—let this clearly be understood. What treasonous traits must we inquire about to identify the formation of world government?

Let us turn to Daniel and Revelation for guidance:

> The fourth beast is a fourth kingdom that will appear on earth. It will be different from all the other kingdoms and will devour the whole earth, trampling it down and crushing it. The ten horns are ten kings who will come from this kingdom. After them another king will arise.
>
> —Daniel 7:23–24

> Finally there will be a fourth kingdom, strong as iron—for iron breaks and smashes everything—and as iron breaks things into pieces, so it will crush and break all the others. Just as you saw that the feet and toes were partly of baked clay and partly of iron, so this will be a divided kingdom; yet it will have some of the strength of iron in it, even as you saw iron mixed with clay.
>
> —Daniel 2:39–42

> I will explain to you the mystery of the woman and of the beast she rides, which has seven heads and ten horns…. This calls for a mind with wisdom. The seven heads are seven hills on which the woman sits. They are also seven kings. Five have fallen, one is, the other has not yet come, but when he does come, he must remain for a little while. The beast who once was, and now is not, is an eighth king. He belongs to the seven and is going to his destruction. The ten horns you saw are ten kings who have not yet received a kingdom, but who for one hour will receive authority as kings along with the beast.
>
> —Revelation 17:7, 9–12

First, the seven kingdoms mentioned in Revelation are world empires: Egypt, Assyria, Babylon, Persia, Greece, Rome of that period, and the revived Roman Empire of the future. The four beasts of Daniel’s prophecy, because Daniel was writing at the time of Babylon, exclude Egypt and Assyria but include the four empires of Babylon, Persia, Greece, and Rome, inclusive of the seventh, future empire that is to come; it will rise out of the old Roman Empire. The woman who rides the seven world empires is the harlot or spurious religion; she is an integral part of all world empires, dominating them from within with her destructive and deceptive doctrines of Lucifer, just as she will dominate the future empire.

Daniel recorded the last great empire will rise from the ashes of the old Roman Empire, just as Hitler and Napoleon endeavored to make happen. Out of the old Roman Empire will come forth ten toes or ten horns or ten kings—the allegories are the same, just as we covered previously, regarding the figurative meaning of the sprouting of horns. The three allegories dictate the future world empire will be made up of ten separate kingdoms banding together to form a world empire. Because it will be Roman rooted, it will be Roman inspired and centered, just as the harlot sits enthroned upon the seven hills of Rome. Because of this, expect the European Economic Community will be the womb from where world government will be born, with Rome as its embryo, just as the Treaty of Rome and then the Mastrich Treaty proclaimed, promising to unite Europe with one common cause. Expect the world will unite under ten distinct trading groups, just as Europe and North America are now united as distinct trading blocks.

One cannot deny the forces already at work that are bringing this about. Free trade is the promised idol of prosperity for the world. Every year the world moves closer together economically. One can already identify many of the trading blocks already being assembled: the EEC, NAFTA, the Pacific Rim, and parts of the previous Soviet bloc. These are four of the ten already realized. It will not take much more to add (and this is only my speculation) Middle Europa dominated by Germany (remember Germany was not part of the Holy Roman Empire), South and Central America, Africa, Middle Eastern countries, an India-dominated group, and a China-dominated group—separate from the other Pacific Rim nations.

The requirements of the Antichrist prophecies demand this last-day, ten-horned empire united under one religion must be fully entrenched before the true Antichrist will be permitted.

> The ten horns are ten kings who will come from this kingdom. After them another king will arise, different from the earlier ones; he will subdue three kings. He will speak against the Most High and oppress the saints and try to change the set times and laws.
>
> —Daniel 7:24–25

> The beast who once was, and now is not, is an eighth king. He belongs to the seven and is going to his destruction. The ten horns you saw are ten kings who have not yet received a kingdom, but who for one hour will receive authority as kings along with the beast. They have one purpose and will give their power and authority to the beast.
>
> —Revelation 17:11–13

The formation of the ten-horned empire first requires the formation of the spurious world religion, just as the Antichrist requires that the revived Roman Empire be entrenched before he will be permitted to make his fateful entrance. All the last day prerequisites are neatly tied together. Thus, the elemental doctrine for the seditious Rex Deus conspiracy is to unite governments of the world.[1] Without the empire, the Antichrist will not possess the global platform to seize absolute authority over the people of the world. Therefore, the Antichrist requires world government as a compulsory prerequisite, just as world government requires the spurious world religion.

Attaining world government through war would take too much time and too many resources, all the while inspiring too much resistance. We need only to take note of Hitler, Napoleon, and Stalin to underscore this point. What is required is for world government to take root first, thereby enabling the spurious forces to engineer a relatively peaceful and bloodless coup, only being required to forcibly subdue three of the ten trading blocks.[2]

In fact: “After coming to an agreement with them the [ten kingdoms], he [Antichrist] will act deceitfully, and with only a few people will rise to power” (Dan. 11:23). The future Antichrist will ascend to power on a peaceful platform of deception as the messiah of peace, not war; he will return to war only after he has usurped absolute power. “When the richest provinces feel secure, he will invade them and will achieve what neither his fathers nor his forefathers did. He will distribute plunder, loot, and wealth, amongst his followers. He will plot the overthrow of fortresses—but only for a time” (Dan. 11:24).

Anticipate that democracies of North America and Europe will be the three richest provinces/blocks overthrown. Their wealth will be ceremoniously redistributed around the world in a socialist, global gambit that will make Obama’s redistribution of wealth appear pale by comparison.

These passages, then, elucidate why Revelation states the Antichrist belongs to the seven great world empires. All have attempted to bring about the false messiah but have failed, except for the seventh, future world empire that will eventually succeed by virtue of the Holy Spirit being removed. The whole purpose, as witnessed by Revelation, for all the world empires is for them to hand authority over to the false messiah. Progressive liberalism, globalization, and world government all lead to the Antichrist; this doctrine is simple, straightforward, and startling.

The Antichrist will form what is prophesied to be the eighth empire on the back of the seventh empire.[3] The Antichrist will illegally seize power from the ten-horned empire, establishing a new and succinctly different empire. The empire of the false messiah, of the false Zion, will be established through a skillful coup d’état, which will destroy nationalism, borders, and all currencies; most of the world will unanimously celebrate this covert triumph, intoxicated by Socialist, false hopes and utopian expectations for the future. The people will cheer the false messiah, crowning him The Sovereign Lord of All.[4] What will seem so right under the righteous cause of peace and prosperity will be so wrong. Centralizing so much power into so few hands will provide the opportunity required for a new Nimrod, an absolute dictator of war, to seize absolute power almost uncontested.

The Antichrist will first appear to be the answer to the world's prayers, the long-awaited, divine hope of the world, while all the time relentlessly campaigning for power. The Antichrist will "succeed in whatever he does" (Dan. 8:24). He will then transform acutely once the world government has given power to him.

Meanwhile, Babylon will be enforcing a tribute from all the free trade flowing around the world. Babylon will become so opulent, so powerful, and so influential over the people of the world that the greedy, global government will become deliriously jealous of her. This lavish tribute, as described in the conspirator's seditious doctrines, will be a "progressive" tax on all transfer documents of all business transactions, which will have to be submitted and paid weekly. These conspirators will believe that all established capitalist and business oligopolies will gladly pay this tribute in return for the peace and safety guaranteed by the state.[5]

The glorious Babylonian age of peace will only last three-and-one-half years from the signing of the Covenant of Death that brings it about[6] to the time it is annulled. The global leaders will conspire with Babylon's rising star, the false messiah, to overthrow Babylon and remove her from power over the people:

> The beast and the ten horns you saw will hate the prostitute. They will bring her to her ruin and leave her naked; they will eat her flesh and burn her with fire. For God has put it in their hearts to accomplish his purpose by agreeing to give the beast their power to rule.
>
> —Revelation 17:16–17

Babylon will be completely and utterly destroyed by nuclear weapons, destroying the ancient city where she will reign, Rome.[7]

The beast will move swiftly to fill the spiritual void he created with himself and his sponsor, Satan: "The coming of the lawless one will be in accordance with the work of Satan displayed in all kinds of counterfeit miracles, signs and wonders, and in every sort of evil that deceives those who are perishing" (2 Thess. 2:9). "He will become very strong but not by his own power" (Dan. 8:24). Remember, this will be the long-awaited, false messiah. He will be most impressive and most powerful, for he shall have the full backing of his sponsor, Satan. The Antichrist will substitute himself for Babylon; the world will worship both him and Satan openly and not in secret, as observed today. Again, it is the doctrine of The Genesis 6 Conspiracy to eliminate all religions except for third, secret, unknown religion led by the false messiah, once he seizes power.[8]

The Antichrist will become his own religion, the new religion of his sponsor. “He will oppose and will exalt himself over everything that is called God or is worshipped, so that he sets himself up in God’s temple, proclaiming himself to be God” (2 Thess. 2:4).

> The beast was given a mouth to utter proud words and blasphemes and to exercise his authority for forty-two months. He opened his mouth to blaspheme God, and to slander his name and his dwelling place and those who live in heaven. He was given power to make war with the saints and to conquer them. And he was given authority over every tribe, people, language and nation. All inhabitants of the earth will worship the beast.
>
> —Revelation 13:5–8

And, as per the documents of these end-time conspirators: “The King of the Jews will be the real pope of the universe, the patriarch of the international church.” All international rights, human rights, and constitutional rights will be ripped away once the Antichrist seizes power. Expect that this bold action will be justified as only temporary, but the rights will never be returned.[9] Freedom will cease to exist once the Antichrist sequesters power.[10]

“He will speak against the Most High and oppress his saints and try to change the set times and the laws. The saints will be handed over to him for a time, times and half a time” (Dan. 7:25). Additionally, as per the doctrines of the Antediluvian conspirators, the reign of the Antichrist will be a brutal dictatorship enforced by violence and tyranny. Furthermore, the Rex Deus conspirators will completely usurp and censor the media, promoting only the positive values and attributes of the new regime.[11]

> He will exalt and magnify himself above every god and will say unheard of things against the God of gods. He will be successful until the time of the wrath is completed, for what has been determined must take place. He will show no regard for the gods of his fathers or the one desired by women, nor will he regard any god, but will exalt himself above them all.
>
> —Daniel 11:36–38

The Antichrist will be a spiritual beast, Satan’s own, used to slander God at every opportunity. “Men worshipped the dragon because he had given authority to the beast, and they also worshipped the beast” (Rev. 13:4).[12] In the words of Rex Deus: “Then it will be possible for us to say to the peoples of the world: ‘Give thanks to God [Satan] and bow the knee before him who bears on his front the seal of the predestination of man, to which God himself has led his star that none other but Him might free us from all the before-mentioned forces and evils.’”[13]

The Bible records the words of the Antichrist: “I will ascend above the tops of the clouds; I will make myself like the Most High” (Isa. 14:14). “He will oppose and will exalt himself over everything that is called God or is worshipped, so that he sets himself up in God’s temple, proclaiming himself to be God” (2 Thess. 2:4). He will take his stand against God and the saints, just as Nimrod had threatened to do and the antediluvian Titans did; only this time, the Antichrist will war with God and the entire heavenly host. Satan will have engineered his grand scheme, but the loyal saints will remain faithful and boisterous, proclaiming their witness of the true God of the universe.

This time, the future Nimrod will emphatically attempt to defeat the Lord of Hosts. “It grew until it reached the host of heaven, and it threw some of the starry host down to the earth and trampled on them. It set itself up as the great Prince of the host” (Dan. 8:10–11). The empire of the Antichrist may very well be filled with the delusionary ideal that it will be part of galactic government, a member of a select group of beings who govern a universe teeming with intelligent life forms, many who are at war with the forces of evil led by the Lord of Hosts, Adonai. We will witness visible and physical galactic, warlike encounters, just as Daniel stated that the Antichrist and fallen angels would capture some of the heavenly host in the last three-and-one-half years. Remember, the dark angels of the Abyss will have already have been released to haunt the earth, starting at the beginning of the seven-year tribulation period. One should expect some of the heavenly beings loyal to God will be tortured and humiliated in a public spectacle, but not killed, for they are immortal beings.

The world and the universe will appear to be in open, galactic warfare, with the earthly saints who stand forever loyal to God and to Jesus being slaughtered as traitors of the earth and a galactic battle being waged in the heavens for all to observe. A deluded sense of sacrifice will be the price paid by humans to earn seats at the galactic table as revolutionaries of light. Understand clearly that this galactic war will indeed reach into the heavens:

> And there was war in heaven. Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon and his angels fought back. But he was not strong enough, and they lost their place in

> heaven. The great Dragon was hurled down—that ancient Serpent called the devil or Satan, who leads the whole world astray. He was hurled to the earth, and his angels with him.
>
> —Revelation 12:7–9

However long or brief this galactic encounter will be, the result of the skirmish will be the banning of Satan and his fallen angels to the earth for the last part of the last three-and-one-half years of this age. All this will take place so that all those who are destined to be deceived will be deceived and that all that must take place will take place.[14] The Antichrist will make his stand and try to change the set times and events,[15] but in the end, he will fail, for his reign will only be a short but destructive three-and-one-half years.[16]

The Antichrist likely will declare his rebellious empire to be some form of a heavenly/galactic government: "You said in your heart, 'I will ascend to heaven; I will raise my throne above the stars of God; I will sit enthroned on the mounts of the assembly, on the utmost heights of the sacred mountain'" (Isa. 14:13). Lord Maitreya, the name Theosophists give the Antichrist, will achieve what Nimrod did not. The empire of the Antichrist will achieve enough power and strength to create a plausible delusion. And in fact, the Antichrist and Satan do have the power to stand and make war with the Lord of Hosts. Those who are not solid in their faith and sound in their scriptural knowledge will find it impossible to sift through such a powerful delusion.

The Antichrist and his delirious disciples will not only promote their cause to be the truth and the light, but also they will engage in the most negative advertising campaign the world has ever witnessed, slandering their rivals, Jesus, God, and monotheism, doggedly determined to trample the truth.[17] Just as they believe the followers of Adonai have slandered them, so will they slander God, Jesus, and the saints through unheard-of and unimagined ways. Scripture says, "The beast was given a mouth to utter proud words and blasphemies and to exercise his authority for forty-two months. He opened his mouth to blaspheme God, and to slander his name and his dwelling place and those who live in heaven" (Rev. 13:5–6). "The king will do as he pleases. He will exalt himself and magnify himself above every god and will say unheard-of things against the God of gods" (Dan. 11:36). What will be said and done, we do not know, but the slander will be poured out in unimaginable proportions; the smear will make the petty insults cast by Nimrod seem like mere child's play!

The rebellion will be the ultimate battle of our age, where the Antichrist will make his stand, supported by Satan, the fallen angels, demons, Jinn, and the deluded people of the earth, against God and Jesus. The galactic war will have come down to the earth. “He will pitch his tents between the seas at the holy mountain. Yet he will come to his end, and no one will help him” (Dan. 11:45).

> Then they gathered the kings together to the place that in Hebrew is called Armageddon…. Then I saw the beast and the kings of the earth and their armies gathered together to make war against the rider on the white horse and his army. But the beast was captured and with him the false prophet who had performed the miracles on his behalf.
>
> —Revelation 16:16; 19:19–20

Jesus will intercede just before the world is utterly destroyed by the Antichrist, defeating his armies and capturing the Antichrist, the false prophet, and all the fallen immortals, banishing them to eternal torment in the lake of fire.[18]

What the Antichrist will attempt to bring about is the same rebellion Nimrod plotted so many years ago at Babel. If God had permitted events to unfold in ages past, we would have witnessed quite a number of deluded but qualified and willing candidates who would have gladly been king (the beast). Perhaps a Nephilim name would be infamous today as the Antichrist of the antediluvian epoch, just as the future Antichrist will be infamous. Perhaps Nimrod might have been the Antichrist, or Menes from Egypt. Notorious men such as Ashurbanipal, Sennacherib, Tiglath-Pileser, or Shalmaneser of Assyria; Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon; Cyrus of Persia; Alexander of Macedonia; Julius Caesar of Rome; Napoleon of France; Hitler of Germany; Stalin of Russia; or Mao Tse-tung of China could have achieved absolute rule of the earth and accepted the role as Antichrist if God had chosen their time to fulfill the prophecy. The spirit of the plan has been put in play many times, for the spirit of the Antichrist is never at rest. Only the Holy Spirit, by the command of God, has prevented the spirit of the Antichrist from coming about fully.

The Antichrist will come equipped with superhuman skills. One should expect the disguise of a peacemaker.[19] His political and negotiating expertise will be unmatched, again supported by the successful negotiation of the Covenant of Death.[20] His mind will compute at a genius level, particularly with respect to spiritual matters. The Antichrist will be preselected from superior Rex Deus stock, tested, and prepared to know how to use his genius brain and its apparently unlimited capacity.[21]

The Antichrist will be viewed as the ultimate spiritual guide sent to humankind to lead them into the next plane of existence. He will appear to solve most, if not all, the world's problems, and he will sell these ideas like no other. One can expect oratory skills that will hypnotize the masses, similar to what Hitler did, but in this case, all will have a peaceful, positive demeanor—at first. The future, false messiah will seduce the world; its people will love him like no other.

The people of the world will wonder after him, asking, "Who is like the beast?" The whole world will be astonished and follow the beast (Rev. 13:3–4). "He will invade the kingdom when its people feel secure, and he will seize it through intrigue" (Dan. 11:21). The people will acknowledge the autocracy of the false messiah, but they will acquiesce, unexplainably glorifying him with a devotion bordering on insanity. The aura of the Antichrist's authority will inspire an unsurpassed, mystical bowing of the knee before him, a reverent fear before him of all peoples.[22]

The Antichrist will both intrigue and astonish the world because he will do what is continually unexpected and unanticipated. Just as Napoleon astonished the world of his day, so will the Antichrist. Napoleon introduced new and controversial strategies and tactics to war and to government. He mystified other nations and armies, hypnotizing them through his intrigue, unanticipated moves, and the risks he often gambled on and won. The Antichrist, like Hitler, Napoleon, and Alexander, will for a brief and bloody period appear to be the master of intrigue and chaos.

The new Nimrod will be possessed by the spirit of the Antichrist, according to Scripture, likely by Abaddon/Apollyon. Revelation 17:8 clearly states this:

> The beast, which you saw, once was, now is not, and will come out of the Abyss and go to his destruction. The inhabitants of the earth whose names have not been written in the book of life from the creation of the world will be astonished when they see the beast, because he once was, now is not, and yet will come.

Expect that Abaddon/Apollyon of Revelations will actually be identified as Azazel, the destroyer from the antediluvian world. Remember, Azazel and all rebellious angels will once more be released from the Abyss in the last days.

Nimrod endeavored to convert the entire world to the religion of Babel, along with his partner Hermes. Nimrod forced all the peoples of the world to come and pay him divine homage; he established himself as a god, according to Jewish legend, and erected an imitation seat he called "the Throne of God," just as the Antichrist will do. Nimrod made war against the Host of Heaven, shooting arrows into the heavens and endeavoring to slay the heavenly Host, just as the Antichrist will. The future Nimrod's promised age of peace will fade away to war, violence, and murder. Nimrod rose to power through his cunning, seizing absolute power as the singular sovereign and first mortal to hold universal sway; Nimrod, according to Ginzberg, possessed for a short time the power of the (false) messianic blessing. All the people followed Nimrod in a hypnotic allegiance, proclaiming, "Since the creation of the world there has been none like Nimrod, a mighty hunter of men and beasts,"[23] just as the people will chant regarding the future Antichrist. All will inexplicably follow after the Antichrist like lemmings, in hypnotic wonderment, asking: "Who is like the beast?" Truly, there is nothing new under the sun; what was will be again!

CHAPTER 52

THE RAPTURE TRAGEDY

We believe that Jesus died and rose again and so we believe that God will bring with Jesus those who have fallen asleep. According to the Lord’s own word, we who are still alive, who are left for the coming of the Lord, will certainly not precede those who have fallen asleep. For the Lord himself will come down from heaven, with a loud command, with the voice of an archangel and with a trumpet call of God, and the dead in Christ will rise first. After that, we who are still alive will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And so we will be with the Lord forever.

—1 Thessalonians 4:14–17

This will be a generation in which all things previously deemed impossible by past generations will appear possible. But how in the world will monotheists be duped when they know what is coming? And how will the saints be hoodwinked into shame and then genocide?

God will permit Satan to reach deep into his mystical bag of magic so he can delude those who are perishing through all kinds of counterfeit miracles, signs, and wonders, which will be accompanied by every sort of evil and diabolical scheme, all designed to delude this generation into destruction.[1] Satan and his multitudes of manipulated minions wage perpetual war against truth[2] so that very soon, everything will be turned inside out and upside down. What will seem to be right will be wrong, and what will be portrayed as the truth and the Way[3] will actually be an array of subtle lies and ploys. Truth will be trampled in ways unlike anything the seeds of Adam have ever witnessed.

One cannot begin to imagine what all this will imply; only that it will be a continual onslaught of belief modification heretofore unseen. Matthew prophetically describes this clever crusade of thought modification: “For false Christs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and miracles to deceive even the elect—if that were possible” (Matt. 24:24). We will not even be able to rely on the shepherds of righteousness that have always guided our Judeo/Christian world in the coming, perilous times (2 Cor. 11:13–14), for they, too, will be deceived, if that were possible (Matt. 24:23–25). Remember, the leaders of the “new Christianity” will all be apostates.

Most who consider end-time prophecy to be biblical certainty conclude the perilous end-times will be colored with overt evil, sprinkled with terrible displays of gore and horrific events, and flavored with the tainted taste of tyrannical deception in every form, which will include horrendous displays of demonology. Such horrors will be part of the diabolical deception.

The saints must take more care in their witnessing or risk being a pawn in the deception of the Terminal Generation. They must communicate the warnings with quiet determination, humility, tolerance, and respect for all others, thus testifying to the sanctity of the message. The true message of the Apocalypse cannot be credibly delivered through the fire and brimstone rhetoric of a legalistic minister. Louder cries will only serve spurious forces in painting the saints to be fanatical, ultra-right-wing bigots who nurture intolerance. This characterization will continue to discredit the divine message. Saints must deliver their message through truth and grace, just as Jesus did.

Unfortunately, I do not believe the saints will temper their approach. As the last years draw nigh, saints screaming for due consideration will all be cast as inferior fanatics, who ought to be ostracized from the modern utopia. The saints ultimately will be manipulated by the spurious forces, driving the balance of the unenlightened into the deceptive hands of the so-called enlightened and into “the Way” to godhood. Ultimately, this shame of the future will reach its deceptive apex at the most important threshold of the last days. Just when the spiritually uneducated of the world will require the voice of truth and grace from the saints the most, the saints will fail them.

The spiritual watershed will come about at the introduction of the false messiah. The spectacle of innocent righteousness shamed of the saints loyal to the God Most High, before a polytheist world gone mad will come about when the saints unanimously stand up, labeling the false messiah as the Antichrist once this enigmatic leader makes his future credentials known through negotiating the Covenant of Death.[4] Until this event comes to pass, the identity of the false messiah will be kept secret, known only by three very senior elders of Rex Deus, who will know the terror that is coming.[5]

The Antichrist will negotiate a worldwide peace treaty,[6] coronating the spurious dream. The covenant will enshrine the safety of Israel as a cornerstone to its doctrine.[7] The world has already been well prepared by war and by those who continually and seditiously promote war to turn eagerly to the prophesied despot king of Zion, for the people will soon clamor for one king over all the earth. He will unite them, promising freedom from war, borders, nationalism, religious strife, and state debt; he will guarantee peace! The world will seek, accept, and adore patriarchal, paternal guardianship of the coming false messiah.[8]

The Antichrist’s authority will be extraordinary, accented with the astonishment of new, unanticipated, and unheard-of solutions for the problems of the world and for the Middle East in particular. The Antichrist will bully the Western democracies but will pander to the rest of the world. Moreover, the Antichrist will secretly advance his aureole of wonderment in the back rooms of government through tyranny and intimidation. We can take the lead from recent history that records every leader who sought compromise with the Fuehrer came out with the short end of the stick. Hitler’s idea of negotiation was to dictate terms. Those who yearned for compromises were worn down by threats and bullying, relinquishing more than they ever imagined. They naively mistook Hitler's charisma for integrity.[9]

The signing of the Covenant of Death for seven years begins the seven year tribulation that is marked by the abomination in the temple at the three and one half year point.[10] The covenant signing will be the dawn of the New Age, ingeniously plotted and negotiated by a relatively unknown politician (by design) of that time. Scripture foretells that he will possess purported but false royal bloodlines.[11] He will profess to possess royal blood descending back through Jesus and David, launching the dynasty of destiny to be inherited by his progeny.[12] This unanticipated pedigree of mystique will catapult this unknown politician to prominence. Remember, neither Napoleon nor Hitler possessed royal bloodlines; the future, false messiah will be the same sort of serpent. This individual will be clearly identified by the saints at this point; they will speak out against him with such fury that they will become enemies of the state.

The future, false messiah will then begin an unanticipated populace movement that will help him ascend to power. He will stroll confidently among the masses, seemingly fearless of assault or of being slain. He will truly seem to be the Messiah, mixing with and followed by massive numbers in very public spectacles. The Antichrist will surround and protect himself with multitudes of supporting men and women, preventing anyone from attempting to get close to him, to talk to him, or to harm him.[13]

The saints will speak voraciously against this individual, causing an overwhelming portion of the people to wish the saints away at any price. The global bias set adroitly against the saints will be the catalyst to the first of two genocides; it will be inspired by the spurious religion that will pull the strings of its puppet world government.

The saints will slander the New World Order and Babylon along with the future Antichrist, without restriction or reservation, because they will believe earnestly that they will be spared from retribution. They will declare loudly and clearly that the Covenant of Death event will trigger the rapture:

> Listen, I tell you a mystery: We will not all sleep, but we will all be changed—in a flash, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, the dead will be raised imperishable, and we will be changed.
>
> —1 Corinthians 15:51–52

> Those who survive all these things I have predicted will be rescued when I bring an end to this world that I have created. They will see those who never died but were taken up alive into

heaven.[14]

The rapture doctrine essentially states that a select elect will be transformed instantaneously, without dying, directly into heaven at the advent of the Antichrist and before the coming wrath of God. The saints will be expecting to be whisked away to heaven, saving them from the wrath of the Antichrist and the tribulation, just as the Bible states: “There will be a time of great distress such has never happened from the beginning of nations until then. But at that time your people—everyone whose name is written in the book—will be delivered” (Dan. 12:1). “They tell you how you turned to God from idols to serve the living and true God, and to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead—Jesus, who rescues us from the coming wrath” (1 Thess. 1:9–10). Note how Paul connected the return of Jesus to the time of the wrath, which is generally understood to be in the end time and the last seven years. However, the question is simply this: is this doctrine’s timing correct?

All will be wagered on the introduction of the Antichrist, who will arrive on the world stage with adulating prominence at the signing of the covenant, which then will trigger the last seven years of this age, the tribulation.[14] The seven-year tribulation period is generally believed to be the period known as “the wrath of God” and “the time of Jacob’s trouble.” This doctrine seems biblically supportable and accurate; but a comprehensive study of all applicable prophecy relating to the rapture suggests a different timeframe for the rapture. The “pre-trib” rapture doctrine, I believe, is in grievous and disastrous error.

The problem with the “pre-trib” doctrine is that it relies too heavily on the “being saved from the wrath”[16] and the “introduction of the Antichrist”[17] prophecies without giving due consideration to the scores of the companion prophecies. Combine this with a misunderstanding of the timing of the wrath of God, the defining event that decisively declares the Antichrist to the world, and we end up with an exceedingly embarrassing, excruciating, and reprehensible discrediting of the saints en masse at what will be the most crucial apex in the 6,000 year mandate of Adam’s seed.

The time of the wrath does not begin until the midpoint of the seven-year tribulation period, when the Antichrist seizes absolute power from the world government and destroys Babylon. The wrath of God is poured out of the Bowl Judgments of Revelation 16:1–21, which commence at the midpoint of the tribulation, when the Antichrist comes to power.[18] Secondly, it is not the introduction of the Antichrist at the signing of the Covenant of Death that triggers the rapture. Rather, it is when the individual who aspires after the spirit of the Antichrist achieves his status as world dictator by completing the abomination that causes desolation[19] in the temple that triggers the rapture.

Let us defer to the apostle Paul’s words in Thessalonians 1:8 with regard to this matter:

> Concerning the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ and our being gathered to him, we ask you brothers, not to easily become unsettled or alarmed by some prophecy, report or letter supposed to have come from us saying, that the day of the Lord has already come. Don’t let anyone deceive you in any way, for that day will not come until the rebellion occurs and the man of lawlessness is revealed, the man doomed to destruction. He will oppose and will exalt himself over everything that is called or is worshipped, so that he sets himself up in God’s temple, proclaiming himself to be God. Don’t you remember that when I was with you I used to tell you these things? And now you know what is holding him back, so that he may be revealed at the proper time. For the secret power of lawlessness is already at work; but the one who now holds him back will continue to do so till he is taken out of the way. And then the lawless one will be revealed.

The covenant signing at the beginning of the seven year tribulation does not reveal the Antichrist. This is only the introduction to the future Antichrist, a sure sign that the end times are here. Rather, the Antichrist will truly be revealed to the world when the Restrainer (Holy Spirit) is removed from the world, permitting the prospective, previously introduced Antichrist candidate to complete his mid-trib revelation with the abomination that causes desolation.[20] Paul wrote 2 Thessalonians precisely, connecting the gathering of God’s people, the rapture miracle, with the Abomination in the holy temple, which all takes place at the midpoint of the seven-year tribulation period.

Note, finally, that the literal “wrath of God” in Revelation 16 begins with the plague of sores breaking out on the people who have taken the mark of the Beast.[21] The people will not be forced to take the mark of the Beast until after the abomination of the image being erected in the holy temple; all this takes place after the coronation of the Antichrist at the midpoint of the tribulation.[22]

This abomination that causes desolation is the establishment and the crowning of the lawless one as god in the temple of Jerusalem, which is yet to be built. This is clear in 2 Thessalonians, Daniel, and Revelation.[23] Clearly, the abomination is the revelation of the Antichrist, not the negotiation and signing of the covenant that will bind together the New World Order. The verses in 2 Thessalonians clearly underscore that the rapture will not occur until the Antichrist is revealed, but this revelation, according to 2 Thessalonians, will occur after the rebellion. The rebellion is the coronation of the Antichrist that causes the abomination. It is the spurious symbol for complete rebellion, which unites the inhabitants of the earth against God. The consummation sign for this rebellion will be the populace en masse accepting the mark of the Beast as a symbol of their covenant of allegiance, just as Nimrod attempted to do.

The book of 2 Thessalonians records, defines, and reveals what will happen. The passage cannot be separated for convenient interpretation, just as the Nephilim narrative cannot be separated from the flood narrative. The revealing of the Antichrist clearly includes the rebellion, the abomination, and the mark of the Beast. It is not the signing of the covenant. I clearly understand that my position is contentious among Christians, but this is also the point! Mainstream Christendom believes in “pre-trib” rapture, and if a pre-trib rapture does not come about, they will witness a spectacle of immense and tragic proportions. In addition, achieving the covenant may take a series of accords, the first of which may not be negotiated by the Antichrist. This would cause even more humiliation of the saints, if so.

The saints will slander the person who negotiates the Covenant of Death with unrestrained veracity in the face of world opinion, just when the people of the world at that time will be uplifting this individual as the greatest person of our time and any time. The saints will slander the Antichrist in a Kamikaze fashion, for they will expect to be safeguarded from incrimination by virtue of what they will incorrectly believe to be imminent rapture. The future Antichrist, however, will be portrayed as the greatest hero in the world at that time, untouchable as far as the masses will be concerned. And yet, the saints will be attacking him unceasingly as the evil, false messiah of prophecy.

The saints will be perceived as religious fanatics, intolerant to change and to other races and religions. They will be declared relics who fanatically hold on to the so-called barbaric and primitive past. Others will label them enemies of the New Age; the new, universal religion; and the New World Order, who are ferociously attacking the alleged savior of humankind. The saints will be in their most vulnerable state and poised for genocide from the New World Order and Babylon.

The saints will wait patiently and hopefully to be rescued from the coming genocide, but the rapture will not come for another three-and-one-half years. The saints will be humiliated and discredited beyond understanding because of this. All will be just as prophesied:

> First of all, you must understand that in the last days scoffers will come, scoffing and following their own evil desires. They will say, "Where is this 'coming' he promised? Ever since our fathers died, everything goes on as it has since the beginning of creation."
>
> —2 Peter 3:3–4

The world will scoff at the saints, their holy promise of rapture, and at the second coming of Jesus. The saints will be utterly betrayed by the so-called moderates of Christianity, seditious and evil churchgoing liberals, and Gnostics, who have methodically worked their spurious ways into Christianity. These vitriolic moles will then side with the New World Order and the Babylonian religion of mysticism in a schism of Christianity that will make Martin Luther's Protestant movement pale by comparison.

The world will be delirious with delight at the prospects of a utopian, unified world, where "heaven on earth" will be achieved. The people of the earth will be drunk with the exhilarating excitement from the ascending, false messiah. Only monotheistic saints will be the "party poopers" set steadfastly against this upside-down world. The people of the earth will have no patience for the negative, nay-saying monotheists. The saints will be vermin that must be exterminated. This state of affairs will be the catalyst to the Babylonian genocide referred to in Revelation (see Rev. 17:6; 17:18; and 18:24). This will be the first of two genocides waged in the last days against Christians and all faithful monotheists.

Such is the diabolical genius of deception. The world will not run into the open arms of a self-declared madman of mayhem or a demonic dictator. The world will not suddenly go brain dead and embrace the spurious religions of Satan. The world's people will not suddenly become bloodthirsty bandits out to murder and torture the innocent, who clearly shout the truth in the face of blatant evil. Instead, the world will be deluded through the cleverest of deceptions, and people will climb all over themselves with misplaced delight and fervent optimism in the pursuit of creating heaven on earth.

CHAPTER 53

ADONAI

"I AM WHO I AM. This is what you are to say to the Israelites: 'I AM has sent me to you.'" God said to Moses, "Say to the Israelites, 'The Lord, the God of your Fathers—the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, the God of Jacob—has sent me to you.' This is my name forever, the name by which I am to be remembered from generation to generation."

—Exodus 3:14–15

Saints will be classified as a fanatical, evil cult that follows the devil god, Adonai. So, who is this Adonai? And how will this Adonai be drafted to bring about the shaming of the saints?

The appellation *Adonai*, utilized for God Most High, has quite a spurious, historical definition. YHWH or Yahweh or Jehovah did not permit His name to be pronounced, nor written, for it was too holy.[1] In truth, God's name is unknown to humans, and we would not be able to understand or pronounce His omnipotent name if we did know it. However, some in the great tribulation will have God's true name written upon them.[2] The name *Yahweh* is derived from the Old Testament,[3] where God stated to Moses, "I

AM WHO I AM," or *YHWH* in Hebrew.[4] *Yahweh* was a name unique to Israel and has not been discovered to be a name for a deity outside Israel.[5]

Cahill sets forth other possible definitions for YHWH, which he believes may be a little more accurate: "I am He who causes things to be."[6] *Unger's* notes that W. F. Albright concluded Yahweh originated from the northwest Semitic verb *hwy*, meaning "to be or to come into being," suggesting that the true name for the Creator ought to be "He causes to be," or "He creates." Amorite personal names after 2000 B.C.E. reflected this verb as being in vogue during that period.[7]

As legend goes, the Adonai appellation was given to God in order to circumvent the sin of writing or saying God's name, this from before the time of Moses.[8] Certainly, the Jewish people did not speak the name *YHWH* after 70 C.E., for the Jews only spoke his name once a year, in the Holy of Holies, in the temple, on the Day of Atonement. Therefore, according to Cahill, Israelites always substituted *Adonai*, even when reading the Holy Scriptures.[9] *Nelson's* states that because *Yahweh* was too holy for human lips, the Jews adopted *Adonai*, or *Lord*, which was later reflected in Greek translations as "Lord."[10] Adonai translates into English from Greek as "Lord, meaning God."[11] *Adon* is translated as "Lord," while *ai* translates as "my," forming *my Lord*.[12] Originally, according Gardner, *Adon* derived from a Phoenician title meaning "my Lord."[13] This accounts for Exodus permitting "I AM" or "Lord" as interchangeable in the text.

The Hebrew letter *d* is the counterpart to the Egyptian letter *t*, while the Hebrew letter *o* is the counterpart to the Egyptian letter *e*, thereby establishing *Adon* as the Egyptian version of the god Aten.[14] Adon/Aten is said by some authors to be the same god.[15] Coincidentally, Aten, a god of monotheism, reigned supreme under Pharaoh Akenhaten, a heretical pharaoh according to the spurious religions of Egypt.[16] Akenhaten was also known in history as Amenhotep IV, and likely Tutmosis IV, translated as "glorious spirit of the Aten."[17] Akenhaten obviously reversed his religious beliefs at some point in time, represented by his new name, Akenhaten, which honored his new god. Akenhaten obviously was reared to worship Amun; his original name was Amenhotep IV. *Amen* is variantly spelled as *Amon* and *Amun*, the alleged father of Alexander. Amun was the masculine god of fertility and counterpart to Isis,[18] known variantly as the god Ra, and/or Marduk, from the Akkadian pantheon.[19] Amun was always depicted wearing a ram's head,[20] just as the Atlantean, Nephilim kings and queens of the bull cult wore ram headbands. Akenhaten closed all the other temples of the Egyptian pantheon, making him most unpopular among the followers of the pantheon and, in particular, the followers of Amun, for Akenhaten did not permit Amun worship in his reign.[21] Oddly enough, Akenhaten reigned around the same period as Moses. I believe Aten's fame has been contrived by Theosophists and has elemental ties to The Genesis 6 Conspiracy.

Aten did not possess an image,[22] just as the Hebrew God has no image. This concept was established in Egypt well before the birth of Akenhaten.[23] Aten was the omnipotent god introduced by Akenhaten[24] to be the only God worth worshipping. Egyptians of that period additionally believed Aten was the god of all mankind and every creature, the unseen god that created the universe, and who also sustains creation.[25] However, Aten and God are not the same. Aten is a sun god in the spirit of all polytheistic religions and is a force similar to the universal life force. Susan Wise Bauer notes God is never identified with either sun or moon and is so far beyond the disk of the sun that it could not begin to represent Him. Both monotheistic movements were close in time but in no other way.[26]

Remember that Adonai was associated with the evil El and Baal—both sun gods like Aten. Similarly, the Semitic title *Adonai (Lord*) morphed into *Adonis* during the reign of Alexander.[27] During this period, the *Adon* appellation was widely applied to the vegetation god Tammuz in the Adonis Mysteries of Phoenicia.[28] In the same way, *Ahura* was the title that meant "Lord" for the Avestan god of the Aryans, Ahura Mazda of Zoroastrianism.[29] Even though factions of monotheism use the name *Adonai* for God, do not transpose the polytheistic incantations of Adonis onto God, as the disingenuous, spurious forces do.

Akenhaten was succeeded by his brother, Smenkhare, and then by Tutankhamun, the son of Akenhaten. The followers of the ancient, spurious religions, relegating Aten back among the pantheon of gods, later overthrew Akenhaten. At the coronation of Tutankhamun, the boy pharaoh reverted back to the pantheon of gods headed by the god Amun. The Aten cult continued until the death of Tutankhamun, when the kingship of Egypt transferred to Aye, the last of the famous Amarna kings. As for Akenhaten, he completely disappeared from history, with no record of his death, when

Smenkhare died.[30] These details will be important parts of the discussion in later chapters of this book.

Ergo, in the end time scenario, god (Adonai) will be the devil, and the saints will be the evil ones who must be separated from the enlightened ones. Everything will be turned upside down and inside out. The holocaust against the saints will be just as Matthew 13:37–43 describes (italics added):

> He answered, “The one who sowed the good seed is the Son of Man. The field is the world, and the good seed stands for the sons of the kingdom. The weeds are the sons of the evil one, and the enemy who sows them is the devil. The harvest is the *end of the age,* and the harvesters are angels. As the weeds are pulled up and burnt in the fire, so it will be at the *end of this age*. The Son of Man will send out his angels, and they will weed out his kingdom everything that causes sin and all who do evil. They will throw them into the fiery furnace, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. Then the righteous will shine like the sun in the kingdom of their father. He who has ears let him hear.”

This will be the prophecy that both Babylon and the New World Order will manipulate for their own cause. This prophecy will be applied once more in the last half of the tribulation by the Antichrist, as well. Essentially, what will transpire will be the rationalization and the justification to the slaughter of the saints. The saints will be cast into the role of the evil weeds that were led astray through the purported heretical Pauline doctrine. People will assert that the Christians were deceived and that, in reality, Jesus was just a man, one of many enlightened prophets who came to help humankind find the enlightenment of the Way. This was the whole point of the famous Jesus Seminars of the nineties, which were maliciously made up of Gnostics and liberals.

God will be depicted to be the evil Adonai, the devil that planted the weeds. Lucifer will be masked as the god of light, the god of knowledge, who frees humankind from the bonds of slavery (ignorance) imposed by Adonai. Babylon will be the blood-soaked institution that sends out its dark angels to harvest the weeds from the kingdom. The harvest will accurately be identified as the end of this age; however, the New Hermetic Age of heaven on earth, the promised end of the age of Pisces and the dawn of the Age of Aquarius, is not the true millennium.

The alleged evil ones will be considered inferior, incapable of evolving into gods—first the Christians, then all the monotheists. The weeds will be harvested and burned in a holocaust that will make the Jewish Holocaust of World War II pale by comparison; this will be a global holocaust on an unthinkable scale. Once more, the fiery furnaces employed by Hitler will be brought back to burn the alleged evil ones. This fiery holocaust will be in the same spirit that Nimrod barbarically destroyed those who upheld the ways of God at Babel, through fiery furnaces. Nothing is new under the sun!

All this was prophesied more than 2,000 years ago. We are now privileged to perceive its probability and its plausibility unfolding before our eyes. The subversive infrastructure to The Genesis 6 Conspiracy is both muscular and insidious. Today, it is less reticent than in decades past; more and more, it is visibly poised for global occupation. Let us now reconsider the renaissance to this age-old Leviathan by peering at its alarming, seditious reach and its omnipresent tentacles.

SECTION V: Rex Deus

BLOODLINES OF THE GRAIL

CHAPTER 54

THE JERUSALEM CHURCH

On the contrary, they saw that I had been entrusted with the task of preaching the gospel to the Gentiles, just as Peter had been to the Jews. For God, who was at work in the ministry of Peter as an apostle to the Jews, was also at work in my ministry to the Gentiles. James, Peter, and John, those reputed to be pillars, gave me and Barnabas the right hand of fellowship when they recognized the grace given to me. They agreed that we should go to the Gentiles, and they to the Jews.

—Galatians 2:7–10

How will the spurious religion swing about? This will not be a violent mutiny; surprisingly, it will be a bloodless coup.

One must reflect on the extraordinary role the mystical faction concealed within monotheism will play in the conversion. The numinous and explicitly Gnostic deviants of these polytheistic religions are, in fact, spurious moles long buried within monotheism and part of the veiled operatives of Rex Deus. The contemporary Genesis 6 Conspiracy sprang from within the early schisms of the Jerusalem church into Judaic, Pauline, and Gnostic/Essene Christianity.

The strategy to devalue Jesus will be simple and systematic. It will be led by the Gnostics and liberals within Christianity and by such clandestine groups as the Freemasons, the Illuminati, Rex Deus, the Rosicrucians, and the Priory of Sion. The devaluing of Jesus will be escorted by academic discovery and critical thought. Critics have already set the groundwork, even within the church, by denying the virgin birth and godliness of Jesus, that He did great miracles, or that He rose from the grave. This propaganda has been liberally distributed throughout the media, schools, and even the churches, particularly with regard to the repugnant Jesus Seminars held in the nineties.

Incredibly, even within the church itself, proponents have denied the accuracy and reliability of the New Testament and have stated it should be interpreted allegorically, for it is inaccurate. All that is needed now is for the other foot to come down, for the world has been well prepared for deception. The other foot will drop in the form of discoveries that will suggest Jesus could not be God, the Son of God, or the Messiah but rather an enlightened prophet.

The ground for such deceptive revelations is already being tilled. Books abound with such titles such as *Holy Blood, Holy Grail,* and *The Da Vinci Code* and are covering such subjects as the Dead Sea Scrolls, Mary Magdalene, the Cathars, and the Essenes. All weave a consistent conspiracy formatted in a literary detective manner, as all search for the meaning of the secrets of history. They almost always are inclusive of the Knights Templar, the Merovingians, the Priory of Sion, Rex Deus, the Essenes, and Masonic connections. In all cases, the unaccountably identical conclusion is that these seemingly disconnected groups conceal shattering secrets for Christianity, as well as secrets from the seven spurious sciences. These organizations are not what they seem. In each of these historical detective adventures, a little more is revealed about the burden of evidence required to substantiate their heretical allegations. We will see more and more of these books published, each revealing a little more, thus preparing the public for what will ultimately shatter Christianity as we understand it today.

The first line of attack is always against segments of the New Testament. The literal application is always denied in favor of an allegorical interpretation, ranging from the New Testament actually being a book centered on astrology to Jesus being a zealot at the heart of the Jewish rebellion. Additionally, the New Testament is transformed into a radical vehicle to communicate Jesus' rebellious conspiracies through the code of Peshur (occultist Legominism). Jesus is summarily relegated to a prominent member of the Essene segment of Jewish society, with Essenes viewed as the forbearers of Christianity, who surreptitiously protected the dynastic ancestors of the Royal Davidic Bloodline.

The Qumran community was the radical segment of the Essene sect; they lived a puritan, monastic lifestyle on the edges of the Dead Sea.[1] This radical Essene sect was led by the Teacher of Righteousness, who allegedly received revelations of hidden things encrypted into Scripture that could only be deciphered through a special Peshur.[2]

Essenes were generally assumed by these revisionist authors to be indigenous, Judaic Gnostics and Theosophists and the alleged controlling authority over the early church centered in Jerusalem, which was led by James the Just, brother of Jesus. Theosophists, too, falsely claim James was an Essene. The larger Essene community was generally perceived to be a sizeable religious sect of Judea that lived in communal villages and were heavily influenced by apocalyptic inspiration. What is not commonly known or understood is that the Essenes are revered by the Christian Gnostics as a mystical branch of Judaism. They are considered inheritors to the Davidic dynasty, complete with the ancient knowledge of Solomon and Moses brought out of Egypt, wisdom that was memorialized as mysticism, or the Mysteries of Hermes. Gnostics believe Moses and Solomon were important historical Adepts of the Mysteries. Freemasons and Gnostic sects consider Solomon to be the mightiest magician of his age; these surreptitious skills complimented his wisdom and judgment. Mystic sects conclude Solomon was a significant sorcerer king in the Ring Lord tradition,[3] and in Arthurian/Merlin literature, Solomon was regarded as the wisest sage of all time.[4]

The Testament of Solomon from the Dead Sea Scrolls claims Solomon knew how to control demons and forced demons into helping construct the first temple. The scrolls further testify that plagues caused by demons, jackals, owls, and Liliths could be lifted by invoking the names of David or Solomon.[5] Josephus, too, noted of Solomon:

> God granted him knowledge of the art used against demons for the benefit and healing of men. Solomon additionally composed incantations by which illnesses were relieved; he left behind forms of exorcisms with which those possessed by demons were driven out, never to return.[6]

Arabian poets named Solomon “Suleiman,”[7] a great king and wise judge, along with David, who carried out the ways of Allah. The great Ottoman conqueror and lawgiver Suleiman the Magnificent saw himself as the second Solomon.[8] But what does the Qur’an say about Solomon, the alleged sorcerer and magician? Solomon was tested greatly as to his faith with a degenerative disease that reduced him to a skeleton on the throne.[9] Solomon then prayed to be granted more power and more wisdom than any man ever had before. Solomon’s prayer was answered, and he received great wisdom, great knowledge, and power over the wind; power over every kind of builder; and power over beings recorded as the Jinn.[10] The Jinn worked under Solomon’s control to build anything he chose;[11] one concludes that his building projects included the temple.

Because of all this, the Qur’an notes that many of Israel followed the evil ones (the polytheist Essenes of Enochian mysticism), who fabricated lies about Solomon and his purported mastery over black magic. The revelations of Gabriel go on to say that the evil ones who fabricated lies about Solomon were the evil ones who also taught witchcraft from Babylon.[12]

The second line of slander usually attacks Jesus and segments of the New Testament accredited to Paul’s authorship, from which the Christian church takes most of its new covenant doctrine. Paul is classified as the Evil Liar or the Heretic, stemming from the Dead Sea Scrolls concerning the Essenes and the Teacher of Righteousness, described as the “Spouter of Lies” and the “Unscrupulous Liar”[13] of the early church. Paul is described as the one who corrupted the religion of the early church centered in Jerusalem, along with doctrines taught by the Gnostic Teacher of Righteousness. In fact, Mandaeans and Manicheans believed Paul was a false prophet, who led his disciples away from the true religion; they believed Paul’s false religion was not based on the true teachings of John the Baptist (and the mentor of Jesus), who they believed.[14]

The Jerusalem church led by James is portrayed to be the mystical Essene religion. Gnostics assert that it was Paul who besmirched the teachings of Jesus with his so-called heretical doctrines, which took root after the demise of the Jerusalem church in 70 C.E., when the church center was transferred to Rome, under Roman influence and Pauline doctrine. In fact, in 318 C.E., according to Gnostic sources, a delegation of Jesus' immediate descendants, the Desposyni, traveled to Rome to argue the church should be transferred back to Jerusalem, back to its mystic roots, but Constantine refused. So, too, do Gnostic writers remember Mary Magdalene and her heirs opposing the Roman apostolic succession of Peter, in favor of James and the Jerusalem church.[15] In this tradition, Mary Magdalene was an Essene priestess who married Jesus.

Under this guise, Masonic and Gnostic writers refer to Paul as the Liar; the Heretic; and the enemy of Jesus' brother, James the Just, who supposedly was one of the Teachers of Righteousness portrayed in the Dead Sea Scrolls. What the Gnostics are endeavoring to accomplish is to ascertain that it was Paul who proclaimed the divinity of Jesus and not Jesus or any of the disciples who formed the early Jerusalem church, that Paul stood alone in this assertion. Gnostics believe that the deviant Pauline sect maliciously elevated Jesus to deity status and that those who are loyal to the Vatican are heretics.[16] The elevation of Jesus to deity is said to have taken place after the crucifixion by his corrupted followers from the Pauline sect. The Gnostics believe Jesus did not come to sacrifice Himself as the Lamb of God for the sins of the world. They assert that Jesus was sent to humankind as an enlightened, spiritual guide, in the same ideology as Buddha and Mohammed, to teach humankind enlightened secrets, aiding us in our evolution to godhood.

These Gnostic teachings of enlightenment are referred to as “the Way,” just as Jesus said he was the way and the truth.[17] Gnostics believe Jesus possessed the spark of the divine that permitted him to instruct others on the path to enlightenment (the Way).[18] This is a devious doctrine, just as Daoism/Taoism means “the Way” and the teaching of Hermes and Sabaism is “the Way of Hermes.”[19] Be careful, though. The Way of Jesus is diametrically opposite to the Way of Tao or of Hermes or of Theosophy or of Freemasonry. The Way of Jesus leads you to God, while the spurious way is the way of Cain, that of alchemy, Rosicrucianism, and Freemasonry, and the way of the future Antichrist.

Alchemy first surfaced in China, India, and Egypt.[20] Taoism is the oldest form of philosophy in China,[21] neatly knitting together mystical threads gathered from primeval epochs. Alchemy developed Taoist meditation, Chinese medicine, and internal martial arts like Tai Chi.[22] Taoism is one of China's three great religions, along with Confucianism and Buddhism,[23] to which Daoism has fused more and more since the fifteenth century C.E.[24] Lu Xun, a modern literary giant in China, views Daoism as the source to Chinese culture, while Chinese historians regard Daoism as the only religion indigenous to China that developed out of early traditions.[25] However, Tao/ Dao is conceded by Western historians to be Babylonian mysticism and Brahmanism, in which it is rooted.[26]

Dao doctrine is anchored in the writings from the many celestial books of the immortals Ying and Yang and the ancient, mystic sages with their occultic techniques and practices, including astrology, medicine, numerology, logicianism, metallurgy, astronomy, philosophy, and of course, alchemy.[27] The Hsin-Hsin Ming describes a perfect essence, *the Tao*, which is the matrix/ blueprint of all creation.[28] Ancient Taoist tradition holds that a very tall (giant) and learned race, the Sons of Reflected Light, arrived in China from across the sea and taught arts and crafts.[29] Tribes were organized under powerful heroes who continued to worship their dead spirits and heroes alongside the immortals.[30] Three sage kings were established, who introduced a philosophy later written down into the Tao-The-Ching.[31]

This learned race likely dispatched the famous seven sages of Egypt, Central America, and India, who were believed to have come from Mu and Atlantis. This knowledge and philosophy was passed down through selected erudite families, until it was united with the Taoists,[32] just as we will learn that Rex Deus did the same. In the late Han Dynasty, and by the third century C.E., the Five Bushels sect became the official lineage of the celestial masters and was passed down through specific families until 1969.[33] Taoism is another religion of Enoch; it will be reunited with its religious kin in the last days.

Continuing, Gnostics assert the Jerusalem church was merely an offshoot of Judaism, not a new, Christian religion as Pauline disciples allegedly assert, and that the Jerusalem church taught and celebrated Jesus as an enlightened prophet/master, not God or the Christ or the Messiah.

Gnostics believe Jesus and the Jerusalem church were fixated with the pursuit of enlightened knowledge, gnosis, or the Way. Gnostics contend this mystic derivative of Judaism was, in truth, the Gnostic Order of the Essenes.

The fact of the matter is, however, that James and the early Jerusalem church promoted a sectarian form of Judaism that was not unlike the Essenes, who were also Ascetics and Nazrites in their approach.[34] But Christians and Essenes were, of course, separate and distinct movements. Gnosticism of this era was believed developed through a Coptic Christian tradition in Egypt, which saw it descending from early Jewish Christianity, where James was a very important figure.[35] In fact, the most important Gnostic sect was the Basilidians of Egypt that adopted the Pythagorean philosophy and its unique doctrine of numerology. Remember, Freemasonry and Templarism also adopted Pythagorean philosophy and the Basilidian system of religion as their moral and philosophical bases.[36]

The Judaism of the Essenes, the rabbis (Pharisees and Sadducees), and James all overlapped in their Judaic religious circles, but the centers of those circles certainly never overlapped, for each sects had separate and distinct spiritual centers.[37] Even so, the Sanhedrin was made up of seventy of the Princes of Priests, the heads of the twenty-four lines descended from Aaron and Moses, which presumably included all three Judaic factions,[38] but excluded the newly formed Christian movement.

The Pharisees were akin to the Greek Stoics in many aspects. They believed the soul was part of the Divine Spirit, which was released from its bodily prison upon death to rejoin the Divine Spirit; whereas impious souls went directly to a dark and terrifying cave for everlasting punishment. Pharisees did not believe in the judgment or the last days but were followers of fate, where all things occurred by God’s Providence, and thus faith dictated all actions. Pharisees were more concerned with teaching the Torah in the synagogues than making the daily sacrifices. Josephus and the Pharisees viewed the Sadducees as lacking in true faith and as traitors who welcomed the Romans.[39]

Nonetheless, the Sadducees were priests who committed to the daily sacrifices. Josephus rejected the approach of the Sadducees, who concentrated on a spartan observance of the Law and who had little consideration for fate and afterlife, for they did not believe in a heaven or hell. They did not believe that God was interested in whether humans did evil or good, nor were they receptive to the notion of a coming Messiah to overturn their comfortable world. The Sadducees, according to Josephus, viewed the Pharisees as religious maniacs, even though the distinctions between the two factions were blurred.[40] The main difference in the sects seems to have been the question of whether there is to be a physical resurrection or not.

Conversely, the Jerusalem church members did not view themselves as Christians but rather as Jews who followed in the footsteps of the Jewish Messiah, according to Hershel Shanks. They did, however, follow a strict Judaic code when it came to the Law and the manner in which they lived their daily lives. The Jerusalem church was regarded as the Nazarene sect of Judaism,[41] but in the spirit of biblical application and not the mystic application the Essenes followed.

On the other hand, the Essenes were Jewish monks who rejoiced in the arid dwellings of the desert. They shunned women, gave up wine, shared their possessions, and were a faction that Josephus admired in many ways. Essenes, according to Josephus, were gifted in prophecy and subsequently were big believers in fate—that fate governed all things. However, Josephus concluded the Essene sect was distorted with apocalyptic machinations; nor did he share the Essene fascination with angels and demons.[42] I agree with Hershel Shanks, who states that the importance of Jesus' family and their early church leadership has been incredibly overshadowed, along with Christianity's important, originating Jewish roots, by the Gentile branch of Pauline and Peterine Christianity, which inherited the transplanted Roman Christian church. Even today, the Armenian church recognizes James as the patron of their Christian sect.[43]

Gnostics contend vehemently that Paul's heretical doctrines gained in prominence only after the downfall of the Jerusalem church, when the Romans destroyed Jerusalem in 70 C.E., culminating in the institutionalization of Pauline Christianity through the Roman church and Constantine just after 300 C.E. Christians tend to view their church as descending from the Gentile branch of the church that included Paul and Peter as their main patriarchs and not from the Jerusalem church led by James, which withered after the destruction of Jerusalem. The Roman church became primarily the church of Peter and Paul, even though John and James were constitutive players, along with Peter and Paul, in the early Jerusalem church.[44] Gnostics contend then, the Roman church in an endeavor to suppress the truth has persecuted Gnostics and the truth ever since.

James, the first bishop of the early Jerusalem church, however, was not an enemy of Paul, or vice versa; Paul's Gentile doctrines worked in harmony with the Jerusalem church. Paul and James and their sects of Gentiles and Jews were not adversaries, as Gnostics would claim; James effectively mediated the two sects of Christianity, which had an everlasting effect.[45]

The *Oxford Dictionary* notes Gnostics were a heretical sect among early Christians that claimed to possess superior knowledge, interpreting sacred writings through mystical philosophy.[46] The Essenes were the mysterious Gnostic people and sect that wrote the Dead Sea Scrolls. They thought of themselves as the Sons of Zadok, also known as the Sons of Righteousness. Moreover, the Dead Sea Scrolls testify to the fact that the Sons of Zadok became the community at Qumran; they were also known by other appellations, including the Sons of the Dawn and the Righteous Seed. Masonic authors Richard Leigh and Michael Baigent brought forth these alternate names—after their writing of *The Holy Blood and the Holy Grail* and, as noted by Hopkins, Simmons, and Wallace-Murphy, then underscored by Knight and Lomas—from Rex Deus families preserving their bloodlines. The *Sons of Zadok* is a puzzling Hebrew/Aramaic title identifying the descendants of a priestly lineage, which later became branded as Rex Deus sometime after the fall of the temple in 70 C.E.[47] This of course, was the founding organization of the European Rex Deus bloodline.

There is always an underlying assertion that Jesus was at the center of the Jewish rebellion because he was the inheritor of the Davidic bloodline, possessing the righteous claim to the Judean throne. The demystification of Jesus is supported by a very elaborate conspiracy inserted into the Jerusalem church, which weaves its way throughout C.E. history, whereby the Keepers of the Secrets valiantly guard secrets and the evidence thereof for fear of the wrath of the Mother Church (Catholicism). Gnostics support their conspiracy for secrecy by recalling genocides the church waged upon the early Gnostic sects of Mandaleans, Cathars, Templars, and other Gnostic groups, particularly through the infamous Inquisition.

CHAPTER 55

SEX, LIES, AND FAIRY TALES

And if Christ has not been raised, our preaching is useless, and so is your faith. More than that, we are then found to be false witnesses about God, for we have testified that he raised Christ from the dead.

—1 Corinthians 15:14–15

What is the civilization-shattering secret Rex Deus apparently protects?

As Rex Deus's theory goes, Jesus was removed from the cross still alive. Gnostics proclaim that Jesus then married Mary Magdalene, and they begat at least two children.

Mary allegedly scuttled one child to France, and he settled in the area of Rennes Le Chateau, home of the Cathars, Merovingians, Essenes, Alains, Rex Deus, and Templars, the rebellious epicenter most of the heretical, investigative books mark as their start point. The other son was believed to have migrated to England, with Joseph of Arimathea. It is for these reasons the ultra-secret Priory of Sion then refers to Mary Magdalene by many pseudonyms, such as "the Chalice," "the Holy Grail," and "the Rose."[1]

In the 1890s, Father Sauniere purportedly discovered Cathar documents consecrated to Mary Magdalene in Visigoth ruins, encoded Priory of Sion secrets containing two astonishing genealogies chronicling the survival to the Merovingian bloodlines. Sauniere became unaccountably wealthy thereafter, inexplicably building the Tower of Magdalene and erecting a statue of Asmodeus, the demon custodian of secrets and guardian of hidden treasures.[2]

Jesus' two sons are thought to be the source bloodlines for the Arthurian kings and the Merovingian kings. All of these Gnostic groups, also known as the Albi-Gens, found imaginative methods within the innocent and pastoral confines of legend and mythological literature, including the fairy tale concept, to preserve the even more ancient Ring Lord culture and Grail bloodlines. The Roman Mother Church was perpetually allegorized as an evil stepmother, witch, or impious potentate. The estranged princes and princesses represented the Grail/Ring bloodlines, with the key message of appreciation for the perpetuity of the San Greal/Holy Grail.[3]

Secrets to the bloodlines have been kept alive in such classic writings and legends as *Robin Hood*, the Holy Grail, Arthurian legends, fairy tales, and of course, the popular *Lord of the Rings* legends. This chapter and the ones that follow will provide evidence revealing a seemingly unified and determined effort to encode the genealogy of the allegedly combined Jesus and Nephilim bloodlines within some of the most famous pieces of children's and adult literature as a testimony to the validity of those bloodlines and with the hopes that someday the alleged descendant of Jesus will eventually regain the crown of a major European nation, and later, all Europe.

As Laurence Gardner puts it, all Grail and Ring lore; Arthurian tales; *Robin Hood*; the mythology of Dracula; and fairy tales, including such tales as *Cinderella, Sleeping Beauty, Peter Pan*, and others, stem from a common historical base and are all ingrained in the culture of the Ring Lords.[4] Even the Grimm fairy tales, authored by Wilhelm Grimm and Jacob Ludwig, are pantheistic, antiquarian mythologies integrated into the German context and folklore, all designed to advance Volkishe ideology[5] that ultimately served the sinister objectives of Hitler and his pantheistic reign of terror.

Gardner goes on to write that Ring and Grail quests, in essence, are the same, and they include Tolkien's modern variation that includes fairies, elves, and magic. The Ring Quest is merely a parallel Grail quest. Tales of fairies, sprites, gnomes, elves, and all like beings questing for treasures at the foot of the rainbow and just as famous quests in antiquity for the Golden

Fleece, the Emerald Tablets, and the Tables of Destiny are all the same figurative quest[6] or mythos.

Dan Brown writes that tales about Gawain, the Green Knight, King Arthur, and Sleeping Beauty are all Grail allegories.[7] He further notes that Victor Hugo's classic *The Hunchback of Notre Dame* and Mozart's *Magic Flute* are both Grail allegories brimming with Masonic and Egyptian symbols;[8] *Magic Flute* was a fairy tale plot.[9] Brown writes that Wagner's *Parsifal* was a tribute to Mary Magdalene and that Richard Wagner, Mozart, Beethoven, Shakespeare, Gershwin, Houdini, and Walt Disney were all Freemasons. In addition, Brown adds that Walt Disney and his corporation have endeavored to keep the Grail legends alive through animated productions such as *Cinderella, Sleeping Beauty, Snow White, the Lion King,* and *The Little Mermaid,* just to name a few. All are overflowing with mystical, religious allegories and imagery.[10] In addition, Mark Booth writes that Lewis's *Narnia Tales* are steeped in Rosicrucian lore, while works by Rebelais, Nostradamas, Shakespeare, Wagner, and Bach are saturated with green language (Legominism), encryptions, and wisdom.[11]

The renowned Merry Men of Sherwood Forest were symbolic of Mary's men (Magdalene), for they served as protectors of the bloodline and its conspiracy of secrecy, guarding the secrets of Jesus and His son's genealogy through Jesus' marriage to Mary. Robin, of course, represented the male inheritance of the royal bloodline in exile, while Maid Marion symbolized Mary Magdalene and their secret marriage. King John and the scurrilous sheriff of Nottingham symbolized the usurping of the holy throne by the Roman Church and its sanctioned monarchies from the rightful heirs. The throne of England in Rex Deus legend is the existing, reigning throne of David.[12]

The book *Rosslyn* documents that Gnostic Cathar refugees, gypsies, Rex Deus, and all Gnostic-based organizations were all linked and symbolized in the Robin Hood lore, represented by the varied Merry Men of Sherwood.[13] Robin Hood tales were originally banned in Europe, for they mocked the accepted theology for both church and state of that time, while secreting within their conspiratal allegories at their heart the so-called truth to the true, dynastic bloodline of Jesus. In fact, the Presbyterian parliament of Scotland in 1555 banned *Robin Hood* from being performed; it was particularly perplexed at the performing of *Robin Hood* at Rosslyn Castle.[14]

This is why *Robin Hood* tales found popularity among Rex Deus families of the Sinclairs and the Stuarts.[15] In fact, Templar historian Steven Sora notes the Sinclair clans were known protectors of the gypsies; the gypsies would migrate to Rosslyn and play out stories of Robin Hood and the May Queen.[16]

Similarly, Holy Grail legends contain the same secrets encrypted into their lore. Grail romances from the twelfth century were a product of the Crusades (the Templars and Rex Deus), where Judeo-Christian material was grafted onto paganistic/Gnostic Grail lore. Baigent and Leigh write that the Grail romances grafted primitive magic from Grail lore (that we will come to learn later as *Dragon Sarmatian* lore), alongside Hermetic themes and allegories, onto Christian material.[17] Grail legends do not hold the superficial meaning most have become accustomed to, where Joseph of Arimathea collected the holy blood of Jesus as He was being crucified into a chalice or goblet.

Some believe the Templar cult (Rex Deus) authored the Grail romances, because the Templars appear throughout the Grail legends.[18] In fact, in the version authored by Wolfram Eschenbach, the Grail is protected by Templars.[19] It is thought that Wolfram knew exactly who the Templars really were, as witnessed by his poem *Titurel, The Keepers of the Message*.[20] Certainly, the famous Grail author of the twelfth century, Chrétien Des Troyes, who wrote *Le Conte Del Graal*, wrote directly from Templar influence and from within the Templar environment, according to Gardner, for Chretien closely communicated with the Templars, sharing significant associations with the order.[21]

In its originating Gnostic tradition, the Holy Grail held two distinct allegories, but both mean quite the same thing. Masonic authors conclude the Grail was symbolic for Jesus' children, the royal bloodline.[22] The second allegory was a variation on the name *Holy Grail*, originally known as *sangraal*, or "holy or royal chalice." The variant spelling is *sangreal*, meaning "holy or royal blood." Later authors then split *sangreal* from its more ancient rendition into two words: San Greal.[23] According to Masonic writers, Grail legends were convenient vehicles of literature to conceal and keep the records of the separation of Jesus' sons, as well as the continuation of the bloodline. In this line of thought, Perceval, a descendant of Joseph of Arimathea,[24] was a priest king of an ideal kingdom (Atlantis), over which he reigned in secrecy. Perceval's son, Lohengrin, became the Swan Knight,[25] who was, and is, an important allegory in Grail, Templar, Gnostic, and pantheistic religious dogma.

The Holy Grail further represented an alternative apostolic succession to the pope of Rome. Joseph of Arimathea, according to Rex Deus lore, was the rightful successor to the Jerusalem church, not Peter, as asserted by Pauline Catholicism. Joseph was believed to be the guardian for the Grail children, as appointed by Jesus.[26] Now, understand that in Grail mythology, Joseph of Arimathea is thought to actually be "James the Just" in disguise.

Grail bloodlines seem to have been kept secret through two organizations elemental to the contemporary Genesis 6 Conspiracy: Rex Deus and the Priory of Sion. Both of these most secret of secretive organizations include members from many of the most famous families in Europe: the Hapsburgs, the Sinclairs, the Stuarts, and many more that are keys to Grail bloodlines. Gnostics, and in particular Rex Deus and their genitive groups, seem to be indicating they have so-called irrefutable evidence supporting their claims to the veracity of Grail bloodlines that would, if true and made public, depose Pauline Christianity, reinstating Essene (Gnostic) Christianity, just as they perceive the Jerusalem church practiced. This, then, sets up the end game to the spurious belief that true Christianity is a mystical religion rooted to Judaic mysticism, which, in turn, owes its beginning to Moses, who learned the secret arts in Egypt and exported these secrets and religious beliefs to Israel, which Judaism is founded upon. Therefore, if Judaism originated in mysticism, from the alleged mystical Adept Moses, then, Judaism's offshoot religions of Christianity and Islam originate in mystical doctrines too.

In Gnostic, revisionist history, Moses is the infamous Pharaoh Akenhaten, also known as Amenhotep IV. Akenhaten was acknowledged to have been born in 1396 B.C.E. He was the son of Amenhotep III, the Pharaoh who ordered the killing of all male children (perhaps the abomination that inspired Moses to do the same to Egypt).[27]

What seems more likely to me is that Akenhaten was the son of, or a descendant thereof, of the pharaoh who oversaw the Exodus, for this assertion aligns itself very well chronologically, when applying biblical chronology that dates the Exodus between 1450 and 1500 B.C.E. Further, the destruction of Santorini in the Mediterranean occurred circa 1450 B.C.E. and is readily drafted today as the genesis for the Exodus plagues levied against the Egyptians. But Akenhaten was not Moses, as the Gnostics proclaim.

Mystical legends propose that either Hermes or Abraham, or both, brought mysticism to Egypt, depending on which legend you prefer to put your faith in. Abraham supposedly learned mysticism from Nimrod and Melchizedek, and likely Hermes, as well.[28] This line of thought then links all the world religions neatly into one source, mysticism at Babel, and in particular links Christians, Muslims, and Judaism in to it, when Jesus has successfully been devalued to prophet status, all with the intent to reunite the world under the one so-called true religion of enlightenment.

All this will take place under the cover fire of many other deceptions. One can expect a convergence of signs and wonders displayed in all kinds of evil, all working with the same common goal. Expect the alien phenomena to be part of this conspiracy, supported by great astrological signs (warnings) of stars and planets,[29] for this is what the term *signs* actually refers to. Collectively with the Mary cult, which will soon explode with its signs and warnings onto the global stage, and the Gnostic exposition of Jesus faking the Resurrection, the world is already primed for the fall of Pauline Christianity and the rise of the spurious world religion of old.

This will be a transformation of positive enlightenment, not a tumultuous revolution entrenched in violence. All avenues of human thought will converge together when Pauline Christianity falls. This will not be a tortuous affair for the world, save for the nay-saying saints. It will be a process that will seem so right, so positive, so enlightened, and so futuristic that the world will willingly unite under one religion and one government, eager to enhance their role at the table of galactic species. The world will be delirious with the thought of creating heaven on earth.

Do not expect a violent coup d’état, enslaving the world under oppressive tyranny. The world’s population will herald the coming of the Antichrist with all the excitement for and hope of establishing heaven on earth. Remember as the false Christ, he will not be deemed to be pure evil but pure goodness. He will be, in the minds of the masses, the long-awaited Messiah, the hope of humankind. Eve did not reach to drink from the cup of Abominations from the evil hand of the Tree of Knowledge, but rather, she reached to eat the delicious fruit from the outstretched good hand, to learn knowledge and be like God. Evil comes with the good in all choices of independence.

Should all this not be enough, spurious forces will arrange the ultimate deception that will convince even the most cynical of the claims. The Antichrist, with the full support of Satan and all his powers, will recreate the resurrection from death of the Antichrist: "… one of the heads of the beast seemed to have a fatal wound, but the fatal wound had been healed" (Rev. 13:3). The false messiah will create the illusion of death; will be martyred like Jesus (which for my money is unlikely); or will fall to assassination by either a Christian zealot or a controlled, in-house conspiracy, and then he will be miraculously raised from the dead in a false resurrection. I would not be surprised if the horror-stricken Christians will be the ones who will endeavor to spare the world from the beast and his evil by engineering the assassination plot themselves. This, then, will resolutely convict the Christian zealots, in the popular view of world opinion, as fanatical foes of the World Order, incapable of ascending to a higher plane of existence.

It is under this veil of euphoric optimism that we must now look when we consider the diverse forces that are eagerly engineering an effective environment to assist humankind in its long-awaited, transitional leap into a higher plain of existence. Just as the forces of rebellion have always been at play, even since the dawn of the Adamites, so they are still at work today, with roots that clearly reach back to the Tree of Knowledge, Adam, and Eve. To this conclusion, then, we must diligently disassemble all the intricate geo-political knitting at work today, which is all neatly crocheted to the geo-economic organization and includes all of the handiwork the information age lends to this cause, while patching all the disparate, spurious branches together with one religious stitching.

CHAPTER 56

THE KNIGHTS TEMPLAR

The coming of the lawless one will be in accordance with the work of Satan displayed in all kinds of counterfeit miracles, signs and wonders, and in every sort of evil that deceives those who are perishing. They perish because they refused to love the truth and so be saved. For this reason God sends them a powerful delusion so that they will believe the lie and so that all will be condemned who have not believed the truth but have delighted in wickedness.

—2 Thessalonians 2:9–12

Masonic legacies have inseparably linked themselves to far-off times, without adequate explanation, through the Knights Templar and the shadowy Priory of Sion.

How were Masons and Templars linked to the deviant Gnostic Christian offshoot?

How was the disingenuous Templar founding connected to the little known Masons, who predate Freemasonry?

Mason enclaves were nurturing havens for refugee Gnostics and Rex Deus. Craft legends recorded Masons participating disproportionately in the Crusades[1] compared to other European aristocracy. There can be little doubt Masonic agenda was quite different than the balance of participating Christendom. In 1096, Pope Urban II decreed the first Crusade because Muslims continually assaulted Christian pilgrims.[2] Masonic interests, though, were firmly focused on reclaiming Jerusalem for themselves and plundering away any temple treasure they could pillage.

Once the Christian Crusaders retook Jerusalem, an unanticipated, new order, sponsored by Mason/Rex Deus organizations, was unaccountably ordained by Papal Bull. This order was, of course, the Knights Templar, which originally consisted of nine founding members from European aristocracy; although, Rex Deus records indicate there were eleven. The original nine were not the poor, impoverished monks revisionist history would have us believe. All nine, or eleven, derived from important, royal Flemish and French families.[3]

Templar historians noted the order was opportunistically created as a ruse to protect Christian pilgrims as they journeyed to Jerusalem; this was an effective cover for the secretive Rex Deus (Masons/Essenes) and the Priory of Sion and their real mission at Jerusalem.[4] Note, however, the Priory of Sion was the true power behind the Templars[5] and their occultist agenda.

Rome had already charged another order, the Knights of St. John, with the responsibility for the protection of pilgrims.[6] Thus, the Templar order was cloaked under the guise of protecting pilgrims, allowing them to excavate without oversight for secret documents and knowledge hidden beneath the temple ruins.[7] With all this in mind, then, we are compelled to query: Who is this mysterious Masonic Order of Sion/Priory of Sion? What was their true agenda for creating the Knights Templar? In 1975, at Paris's Bibliotheque Nationale, parchments were discovered that became notorious as the *Les Dossier Secrets* that identified numerous members of an ultra-secret brotherhood, the Priory of Sion.[8]

The Priory of Sion, according Steven Sora, is a secret organization existing today that is over 1,000 years old; it has existed under several names during its life.[9] According to Templar author Jean Markale, the Priory of Sion is thought in many circles to be an ancient order that played a significant role in shaping history.[10] Brown notes the Priory of Sion was founded in 1099 as a secret society by King Godefrois de Bouillon after conquering Jerusalem. The *Les Dossier Secrets* listed many famous people from history as past Grand Masters leading this organization. These included such luminaries as Leonardo Da Vinci, Victor Hugo, Robert Fludd, Robert Boyle, and Isaac Newton, to name a few.[11] The Priory is thought to be a secret society protecting ancient, secret knowledge and documents, which they intend to reveal to the world at some specific point in the future. De Bouillon is thought to have created this secret brotherhood because he feared the powerful secret his family had held since the time of Jesus would be lost.[12] The Priory of Sion is believed to hold the genealogies of Jesus' descendants that would, if revealed to the world, threaten Christianity as we know it today.[13]

One must note for the record, though, to date, no so-called bona fide, historical evidence has surfaced to support the suspicion that the Priory of Sion ever existed, but this so-called lack of evidence seems to be misdirection to me by powerful Rex Deus families. Additionally, Plantard, the last known Grand Master of the Priory[14] has admitted to creating and planting the *Les Dossier Secrets* forgery. However, as noted by Gnostic writers (and seemingly from inside information), Plantard resigned from the Priory in 1984, due to the *Les Dossier Secrets* controversy, so his admission to creating forgeries was, in my opinion, misdirection and perhaps an endeavor to save his life. There appears to exist a disproportionate quantity of Masonic and Gnostic patronage endorsing the authenticity of the Priory of Sion and its history that make it difficult to discount its existence. To this end, Sylvia Browne also admits that there seem to be many accurate details and truths in the forgeries, leading one to ask: where did Plantard get his information?[15] One wonders whether or not disinformation is now at work with regard to Plantard and the Priory.

The objective of this secret society has been to nurture and protect these alleged bloodlines of Jesus, those few members of the Merovingian bloodline who have survived into our age.[16] Steven Sora believes the Knights Templar were organized to conceal the true motives of the Order of Sion, for their true motive was to reestablish the kingship of Jerusalem with French bloodlines descending from Jesus and Mary Magdalene.[17] The

Templars were, therefore, known as the Guardian Princes of the Royal Secret.[18]

Gardner further added that the main objective to the newly sanctioned Templar order was to excavate and retrieve the Templar Treasures,[19] the knowledge and treasures of the Essenes, Solomon, Moses, Egypt, Hermes, and the antediluvians. DeBouillon met with Calabrian monks to revive the ancient Order of Sion and plot the establishment of the Templars. Calabrian monks were initiated into Pythagorean philosophy (Gnosticism). Thereafter, a conclave of Calabrians arrived in Jerusalem around 1090 C.E.[20] Gardner goes on to note that the Templars discovered surviving books from the Library of Alexandria, Essene works predating the life of Jesus, and a wealth of other treasures and knowledge.[21]

Brown confirms that the objective for the Templar order was to excavate the Jewish temple, all to find corroborating evidence from (Essene) documents confirming Godefrois's family secret,[22] reuniting this lost treasure with the Visigoth treasure already located in Languedoc.[23] Excavation discoveries purportedly contained secret documents hidden during the Jewish revolt of 66–70 C.E., which challenged both the Roman Church and the New Testament doctrines.[24] The location to these dissident documents was likely referred to in the copper scroll from the Visigoth king Alaric and his plunder of Rome in 410 C.E.[25]

According to Priory of Sion records, the temple organization was reestablished in 1099 C.E., in Jerusalem, and not necessarily created then. The elder organization was known as the Brothers of the Red Cross, which was the same emblem adopted by the Knights Templar, who then passed on this legacy to the Rosicrucians. The Brothers of the Red Cross was, of course, a Gnostic order originally established as the Sages of Light in Egypt by Ormus, known also as Ormessus, an Alexandrian allegedly converted by St. Mark. The Essenes were also supposedly connected with Ormus and his disciples until 1181 C.E. Markale testifies that the Brotherhood of the Red Cross was a fusion of the Essenes; the Johanites/Nazorenes; and Godfrois' group, the Priory of Sion.[26]

The Priory of Sion then established the Knights Templar as its own private and subversive military arm, under a veil of legitimacy and integrity, through an official Catholic-sponsored organization (with the help of St. Bernard), which became fully accepted and integrated into mainstream

Christianity. The Knights Templar, then, according to Markale, became an exoteric creation of an esoteric order, which was employed as a militia organization, subject in all respects to the Priory of Sion.[27] Note also that the Templar Knights wore white garments, like those worn by the Essenes, until 1146 C.E., when St. Bernard authorized Templars to don the Red Cross, as well.[28]

After the formation of the Templars, the Priory of Sion was thought to have merged into the Knights Templar, until the two orders split at the Cutting of the Elm in Gisors.[29] Even though the founding Templars, were considered Rex Deus, the guiding force behind the Templar creation, according to Marr, was sponsored by the shadowy Priory of Sion organization.[30] Through the Priory of Sion, the Templars were formidably funded in complete secrecy by various royal families of Europe, Rex Deus families. The Knights Templar, after all, were believed to be the official guardians of the Holy Grail,[31] the Shroud of Turin, and the Ark of the Covenant. Templars, according to Marshal, always crop up in Grail literature[32] and are believed by others to have been originally founded in the era of Arthur and Perceval as a cryptic Order of Grail Keepers.[33] Gardner wrote that the Templars were directly linked back to the Knights of the Round Table, the Sangreal Order of guardians for the Grail treasure and secrets.[34] This was the mystical Brotherhood of Great Heroes[35] that I will return to later. Lancelot of the Lake's heroic legacy later served as the archetype for the Knights Templar.[36]

I find it both intriguing and troubling to note that the origins of the Knights Templar lie with Arthur, Perceval, and the Holy Grail over 600 years before their order came to public view in the twelfth century, which, in turn, connects back even further to the Brotherhood of the Red Cross. Paul Naudon wrote that the early Templar order abided by the rule of the Celtic Christian and Benedictine bishop from England, the famous St. Augustine, until 1128 C.E., when St. Bernard instituted an indelible new rule for the Templar order.[37]

Craft legends recorded the Templars from their beginning ventured into ongoing communications with other secret societies from the Middle East, from which they adopted many of their doctrines. Of these secret societies, the Druids, the Gnostic Essenes, and the Islamic Gnostic Assassins held the closest ties to the Freemasons,[38] all organizations that held inexplicable ties to the Templars. In fact, as early as 1129, Hugh De Payen, first Grandmaster of the Knights Templar, led 300 knights allied with the Assassins of Persia on a siege of the city of Damascus. David Hatcher Childress wrote that the Assassins had formal ties to the Templars and almost joined the order, but the Templars did not meet their objectives, whatever those objectives were. Furthermore, many of the latter Knights Templar were, in truth, Palestinian by birth, totally fluent in Arabic and thoroughly familiar with the Assassins.[39]

Assassin derived from the Arab word *asas*, meaning “guardians or guardian brothers.”[40] Almost all mystical groups ostensibly have an ancient name signifying either a *watcher* or a guardian of ancient knowledge. Assassins paid a tribute to the Templars through the twelfth century; although, the reasons for this are unknown today.[41] In 1198, Bernard the Treasurer recorded the leader of the Assassins inexplicably treated the Templars as if they were royalty,[42] but again, without explanation. Assassins served the Templars loyally as translators, interpreters, spies, ambassadors, and contract killers.[43]

Assassins were additionally remembered as great builders, adopting their organizational structure from the Pythagoreans and the Egyptians. Assassins wore white robes and practiced a form of solar worship just as the Essenes,[44] the Great White Brotherhood, and the Templars did.

The Assassins were part of a mystical, Muslim sect, the Ishmaelites, whose founding leader was the famous Aga Khan, descendant of Mohammed; modern-day followers of this sect reside in Pakistan, India, and East Africa.[45] Ishmaelites are made up of three sects: Karmates, Ismailis, and Assassins. The Karmates focused on reform, which eventually shook the Muslim, world, including Syria, Egypt, Persia, and India, leading to the Fatimid dynasty.[46] Previous to this, the Muslim prophet Mohammed’s daughter, Fatima, married Mohammed’s brother-in-law, Ali, which later established the Fatimid dynasty,[47] which dreamt of creating peaceful universalism in the world, under the doctrines of Amenhotep IV of the Armana dynasty,[48] who was known variantly as the infamous Pharaoh Akenhaten. The Fatimid dynasty also intentionally established a House of Wisdom that produced the initiate Hassan-I-Sabbah, who founded *Hashishim*, the Assassins.[49] Karmates thereafter organized themselves into professional guilds all containing hierarchal degrees and apprenticeship.

Karmates also introduced Hellenic, Neoplatonic, Hermetic, and Sabian dogma into Islam through esoteric initiations.[50]

The Templars appear to have adopted almost all of their organizational structure from the mystical Assassins, Karmates, and Ismailis. The Templars and the Benedictines also adopted much of the Arabic Mysteries and ancient knowledge. Arabs and mystical Muslims over centuries had developed alchemy into a synthesis of Egyptian, Chaldean, Jewish, and Hellenic practices before teaching this knowledge to the Europeans. According to Naudon, all this cryptic and ancient knowledge was then distributed throughout Europe via the Benedictine and Templar orders.[51]

It is from the Essenes Mackey believes the Templars adopted their heretical religion.[52] The Templars were not the Catholic Christian order they portrayed themselves to be. They were, in truth, a secret order of Gnostics, who based their religion on mysticism in the tradition of the mystic Assassins and Essenes. Templars placed their beliefs in what they viewed was the true church that taught mysticism and reincarnation, the church that was suppressed and persecuted by the Roman Catholic Church,[53] the religion known as Gnosticism.

From the mystic Assassins, the Templars modeled their own organization, even to the extent that the Islamic Assassins were a secret society outwardly practicing Islam but inwardly practicing mysticism and renouncing Islam. Templars also outwardly practiced Christianity but inwardly denounced it, preferring to worship the global pantheon under the religion of the Gnostics. According to Geoffrey Higgins, the Assassins and the Templars were identical.[54] The Assassins organization, then, was the clandestine, mystical organization brought back to Europe, which flourished under its new Christian disguise and in the protection of the Roman Church; these founding seeds eventually led to the Templar’s downfall as heretics.

In 1128, at the Council of Troyes, the Templars were granted the status of a Sovereign Order[55] and were adopted as the Holy Warriors of the Catholic Church,[56] whence they received enormous gifts from the great lords of Europe.[57] Templars were granted the right to retain all plunder pillaged from the Muslims under this edict, and they confiscated vast tracts of lands in Syria and Palestine until 1239 C.E.[58] Templar rise to power and prominence was swift; in 1139 C.E., Pope Innocent II granted the Templars international independence from any obligation to any authority other than himself.[59] This Papal Bull was prominently known as *Omne Datum Optimim*; it granted the Templar Order the unprecedented right to administer the law as the high justice in all the lands under its control. Templars were a law unto their own in the nations in which they resided. Templars subsequently administered high justice in Paris, under a great and legendary elm tree.[60] Elm trees are sacred in Gnosticism.

Omne Datum Optimum further enhanced Templar power through granting the Templar Order the ability to appoint its own priests and establish its own churches. This Papal Bull was reconfirmed in 1162 by Pope Alexander III. In 1188, Pope Gregory VIII declared the Templars did not have to bow to any bishop other than the pope; the Templars were then completely free from bishop oversight, authority, and inspections.[61] Because of the support from St. Bernard and the Papal blessings, which brought forth the generosity of the European royalty, Templar wealth overflowed, which then transformed the Templars into one of the greatest military, political, economic, and religious forces the world has ever known, and it happened in less than fifty years. *Omne Datum Optimum* granted the Templar Order extravagant privileges that modified and expanded the Council of Troyes edict in uncontrollable ways. From this point on, the order became an official initiatory entity, according to Markale.[62]

The Templars then converted their generous gifts by selling and exchanging them to acquire lands and buildings of their own choosing, which were strategically located near all the main arteries of commerce, thus making them necessary conduits between far-flung regions of Europe. These new lands were all located at strategic points, governing the economic, social, and political livelihood of all Europe.[63]

Within a decade of their return from Jerusalem, Templars became the most influential body the world has ever known. They established the first international banking network and became the financiers for most of the thrones of Europe.[64] At the pinnacle of Templar power, at the close of the thirteenth century, Templars owned more than one-third of Paris, according to Paul Naudon.[65] The central Templar bank was situated in the Paris Templar Temple, which became the center for French finances.[66]

By the middle of the twelfth century, the Templars had assembled considerable holdings in the Iberian Peninsula.[67] They established castles outside of Barcelona, at a place known as Montserrat, where legend has it that the Templars originally hid away the Holy Grail and the Ark of the Covenant. Interestingly enough, Montserrat was the location where the Gnostic Essenes/ Rex Deus settled in the early centuries before Christ, along with settling in yet another enigmatic area of southern France known as Catalunya. Catalunya was the district the Templars migrated to after they were outlawed from Portugal,[68] a region known as “the Razes” around Rennes Le Chateau. Not coincidentally, this region was in Septmania that was not subject to direct French sovereignty.[69] This was also the mythical and mysterious region settled in by Mary Magdalene and her Grail progeny.

The Gnostic Cathars, too, were strongly allied with the Knights Templar. Cathars resided in southern France around Catalunya, the very same region that the pre-Christian Essenes and the Knights Templar later settled. All were Gnostics who were united in common cause. Catharism was a blend of ancient earth worship, eastern mysticism, Gnosticism, and aspects of Christianity. Some refer to Catharism as “western Buddhism,” a powerful religion that would have spread to all of Europe if not for the Albigensian Crusade in 1209 sponsored by the Roman Church. And what should not come as any surprise is that Catalunya was the region where the mythical Merovingian Fisher Kings reigned.[70]

The Templars chose for their official emblem the Red Cross from the Gnostic/Essene Brotherhood of the Red Cross, the Order of Ormus, and the Sages of Light; whereas their sister order, the Gnostic Order of St. John, the Hospitallers, accepted the white cross as their emblem. The Templar Red Cross boldly flew as the official flag for Christopher Columbus’s first two vessels,[71] suggesting the Templars somehow helped fund Columbus’s historic discovery of the Americas, furthering the Templar agenda at the same time.

When Jerusalem fell back into the hands of Islam in 1188, the Priory of Sion officially split away from the Knights Templar at a famous, legendary event recorded as The Cutting of the Elm at Gisors in Normandy. The Priory held the Templars responsible for the loss of Jerusalem and further accused the Templars of falling into disfavor through greed, which the Priory charged was a complete betrayal of their mission laid out by Hugh De Payen at the creation of the Knights Templar. From this point on, the Priory of Sion and the Knights Templar separated into divergent organizations. The Cutting of the Elm was symbolic, for this official separation signified that each organization henceforth had distinct and independent agendas to pursue. The Priory then scurried underground and into complete secrecy. It is thought that it was because of this strained separation the Priory of Sion stood by in silence at the dismantling of the Knights Templar in 1307.[72]

Gisor, until that time, possessed a great elm tree that was famous for its size, age, and magnificence. The elm is of great allegorical significance in the Gnostic web of religious allegories, doctrines, and organizations, to which both the Priory of Sion and Knights Templar belonged. The French word for *elm* is *orme*, as in the Gnostic Ormus of Egypt. Ormus was tthe Gnostic St. Mark supposedly converted in Alexandria at the turn of the millennium. This was the Gnostic sect known variantly as Ormuzd, and Ahura-Mazda, of the ancient Persian Mazdean tradition[73] and Zoroastrianism, which all modern Gnostic, New Age, and Theosophist religions connect themselves back to in history. The Cutting of the Elm was just another unexplained event along the long road of The Genesis 6 Conspiracy.

In the early days after the suppression of the Knights Templar, any connection to the Templars would have been met with severe reprisals from all forces loyal to the Roman Catholic Church in all European nations, save one. Some surviving Templars sought refuge in sister organizations, such as the Knights of St. John, the Teutonic Knights, and others, but the powerful, along with the Templar wealth, all stowed away to Scotland, under the protection of the Sinclair family and Robert the Bruce.[74] Bruce was excommunicated by that time for murdering his rival to the throne in a Catholic Church.[75] Because of Bruce’s excommunication, his official recognition as King of Scotland by Rome did not come until pope John XXII lifted the excommunication in 1323,[76] long after the reestablishment in Scotland of the new Templar order, which was done in secrecy, under Scottish protection.

The Bruce clan was originally French, being known as “De Bruce.”[77] Lomas and Knight recorded that the Bruces were a Norman clan that was also Rex Deus.[78] Remember, as well, that Robert’s descendant James Bruce claimed to be a descendant of the Essenes, which were the originating Rex Deus cult. Through marriage, the Bruce clan gained a direct lineage from the McAlpin dynasty of kings that originated with the tribe of Scota and the kings of Dalriada and Tara of Ireland. This is why Bruce tried to unite the old kingdom of Ireland with Scotland when Bruce revolted against England.[79]

According to Steven Sora, both the Bruce and Sinclair families had Norse roots before becoming French,[80] having arrived in Normandy with the Norse incursions. The Bruce clan, according to Naudon, was indeed a Flemish family from Normandy, whose family maintained Templar membership throughout the generations.[81] Rollo was the Norseman who vanquished Normandy; William the Conqueror was his great, great, great grandson. The successful battle of Hastings by William the Conqueror put William's Rex Deus bloodline back on the English throne,[82] which his Norse brethren had lost about thirty years before.

The De Bruce family also had long and strong ties to the powerful Sinclair clan. Both were Norman families that gained large English tracts of land for supporting William the Conqueror in 1066.[83] In 1062, before the famous battle at Hastings, Norman knights first arrived in Scotland and Ireland; these knights included William the Seemley St. Clair, whose descendant Henri St. Clair was a battle partner with Hugh De Payen, one of the founders of the Knights Templar.[84] Norse invaders had previously signed a treaty in 911 C.E. with the French that ceded Normandy to the Norse—this agreement, the Treaty of Saint-Claire-Sur-Epte[85] is the origin of the Sinclairs' adopted name.

Both the Sinclairs and the Bruces later had a falling out with William the Conqueror and migrated north to Scotland, where they allied themselves to Malcolm III. Henri St. Clair became the first Earl of Rosslyn and founder of the Sinclair family dynasty that eventually built Rosslyn Chapel. The Sinclair clan later became the Grand Masters of the Freemasons of Scotland.[86] King Malcolm III of Scotland granted William St. Clair the lands at Rosslin and then made William's son, Henri, the Earl of Rosslin. Henri St. Clair took an active part in the first Crusades as part of the originating and founding Knights Templar.[87]

William Sinclair exemplified the power of his family through his deeds and titles. He was renowned as the Earl of Caithness, the last St. Claire Earl of Orkney, the Baron of Rosslyn, Chancellor and High Admiral of Scotland and Lord Sinclair.[88] The Sinclairs were remembered fondly as the last of the Norwegian Jarls.[89] William Sinclair of Rosslyn, Scotland, was believed, according to Templar authors, to have been a member of a secret society

(Rex Deus) that preserved important, ancient knowledge and also knowledge concerning the Holy Grail, the Holy Blood of the Merovingian dynasty, and information on the undiscovered continent across the Atlantic.[90] William Sinclair was both Rex Deus and a member of the Knights Templar.

CHAPTER 57

THE PRIORY OF SION

They make their tongues as sharp as a serpents; the poison of vipers is on their lips. Keep me O Lord, from the hands of the wicked; protect me from men of violence who plan to trip my feet. Proud men have hidden a snare for me; they have spread out the cords of their net and set up traps for me along my path…. do not grant the wicked their desires, O Lord, do not let their plans succeed or they will become proud.

—Psalm 140:2–8

Why were the Templars part of a greater secret society and movement that held wistful ambitions to restore the Merovingian dynasty to power?[1] Merovingians were legendary kings whose bloodlines (allegedly) originated back to Jesus.[2]

Who and what was the ultra-secret Priory of Sion?

David Hatcher Childress notes that the Sinclair clan became the Scottish guardians for the preservation of the Templar/Rex Deus/Priory of Sion/Gnostic dreams. The Scottish/Templar alliance began in 1128, when

Templar founder Hugh De Payen met with King David I of Scotland (no doubt at the instigation of one of the founding Templar Knights, Henri Sinclair) after the Council of Troyes and after which St. Bernard De Clairveaux (curiously and suspiciously) integrated Scotland’s Celtic Christian Church within the opulent (but secret) Gnostic Cistercian Order,[3] which also hid itself within Catholicism. When King David I ascended to the throne, the Celtic Christian Church was ailing financially, and the elders felt that it could best survive inside the protective wrap of St. Bernard’s wealthy, influential, and powerful Cistercian Order. The Cistercian Order was not attached to Rome, and for some reason, it was permitted by Rome to operate almost as a separate and autonomous arm at that time. Thus, all the abbeys of Scotland then became Cistercian Abbeys.[4]

Both King David I and his sister subsequently married into the Flemish House of Boulogne, the variant spelling used by authors denoting the House of Godefrois de Bouillon, the other driving founder of the Templars.[5] The David I family made further marriage covenants later with the Hughes De Payen family and other Crusader kings of Jerusalem.[6] More specifically, the Sinclairs held membership in both the Templar and Priory of Sion organizations; they were the inheritors of both treasures that included the genealogies that allegedly substantiated their clandestine kingship claims,[7] the San Greal.

One must peruse and investigate the curious list of Grand Masters, the leaders of the Priory brotherhood are listed below by descending dates as to their tenure, and as recorded in *Les Dossier Secrets*, to fully comprehend the unanticipated connections surreptitiously linking the Templars, Rex Deus, Priory of Sion, the Sinclairs, and the famous people of history who fostered the underground Gnostic movement:

Jean Gisors (1188–1220)
Marie De Saint-Claire (1220–1266)
Guillaume De Gisors (1266–1307)
Edouard De Bar (1307–1336)
Jeanne De Bar (1336–1351)
Jean De Saint-Claire (1352–1366)
Blance D’ Evereaux (1366–1398)
Nicolas Flamel (1398–1418)
J. Valentin Andrea (1637–1654)
Robert Boyle (1654–1691)
Rene D’Anjou (1418–1480)
Iolande De Bar (1480–1483)
Sandro Botticelli 1483–1510)
Leonardo Da Vinci (1510–1519)
Connetable De Bourbon (1519–1527)
Ferdinand De Gonzaque (1527–1575)
Louis De Nevers (1575–1595)
Robert Fludd (1595–1637)

Isaac Newton (1691–1727)
Charles Radclyffe (1727–1746)
Charles De Lorraine (1746–1780)
Maximillian De Lorraine (1780–1801)
Charles Nodier (1801–1844)
Victor Hugo (1844–1885)
Claude Debussy (1885–1918)
Jean Cocteau (1918–1963)

Pierre Plantard is thought to be the last known reigning Grand Master.[8] Note that this list of Grand Masters oddly does not date back to its founding in 1099.

The Gisors are the prominent Rex Deus clan from Normandy, where the Gnostic Cutting of the Elm ceremony occurred, which severed the direct ties between the Priory of Sion and the Templar Order in 1188. Jean De Gisor was likely present at the Cutting of the Elm as Lord of the Normandy fortress of Gisor,[9] and then he likely accepted his position at the head of the separated Priory at that point in time. The Templar Order then elected its own independent Grand Masters from that point forward. Jean was the grandfather to a later Priory Grand Master, Guillaume De Gisor, who was noted for transforming the Priory of Sion into Hermetic Freemasonry.[10] Jean also married into the Saint-Claire family, marrying the next Priory Grand Master, Marie De Saint-Claire.[11]

Edouard De Bar was the grandson of Edward II, king of England; he also married into the House of Lorraine. Edouarde was the grand nephew of Guillam De Gisor’s wife, Iolande De Bar. The De Bars are thought to have held high levels of Merovingian bloodlines. Jeanne De Bar was the elder sister to Edouarde and was regent of the Comte of Bar.[12] Iolande De Bar was the daughter to Rene D’Anjou and the first knight of Rene’s Order of the Crescent. Iolande was recognized as the Protectress of Lorraine, with her son, also named Rene, becoming the Duke of Lorraine, who was tutored by Georges Antoine Vespucci, a chief patron and sponsor of the painter Botticelli.[13]

Blanche D’ Evereaux was the daughter of King Navarre, who inherited the Comptes of Longueville and Evereaux located immediately adjacent to Gisors. Blanche later became the Countess of Gisors in 1359 C.E. She was a noted alchemist and worked extensively on alchemy in Languedoc during the fourteenth century. She was also thought to be a large patron of Nicolas Flamel.[14]

Nicolas Flamel was a writer, as well as a trader and copyist of rare books, whereby he acquired a high level of skill in mathematics, alchemy, the Kabbalah, and Hermetic thought. Nicolas became tremendously wealthy, gaining the respect of future generations, including that of Isaac Newton, who is affirmed to have read every one of Nicolas's works.[15]

Rene D' Anjou, celebrated as "Good King Rene," was one of the more important kings in European culture immediately preceding the Renaissance. Rene held many royal titles, including the Count of Bar, Duke of Lorraine, King of Aragon, King of Jerusalem, and many more. Rene's Uncle Louis was Cardinal De Bar. Rene was the grandfather of the Rene D'Anjou who accompanied Joan of Arc and who was the son of Iolande De Bar. Rene was also father to Iolande De Bar.[16] Note Rene's King of Jerusalem title.

Sando Botticelli, also known as Sandro Filipepi, maintained the Medicis, the Estes, Gonzagas, and the Vespuccis as his patrons. Botticelli tutored under Filippo Lippi and Mantegna, who were both patronized by Rene D'Anjou. Sandro studied alchemy and Hermetic thought under Verrocchio, who also taught Leonardo Da Vinci.[17] Botticelli was heavily influenced by Ficini in his creations, as were many other Neo-Platonist artists of the Renaissance, who blindly trusted in their pursuit of rediscovering ancient secrets.[18] One of the earliest known decks of tarot cards was ascribed to Botticelli and Mantegna.[19]

Da Vinci was well acquainted with Botticelli through their joint apprenticeship to Verrocchio, while the Medicis, Estes, and Gonzagas also patronized Da Vinci.[20] Da Vinci was a known alchemist, homosexual, and a worshipper of nature's divine order. Da Vinci was known to encrypt Gnostic and pagan symbolism into his paintings; he was recognized as the Keeper of Secrets, ingeniously concealing clues to those secrets in his art.[21] Da Vinci, of course, was also a Rosicrucian.[22] Between 1515–1517, Da Vinci was attached as an engineer to the Viceroy of Languedoc and Milan, Charles De Monpensier, known also as Connetable De Bourbon.[23]

Connetable De Bourbon/Charles Montpensier was the single most powerful lord in France in the early sixteenth century. He was the son of Claire De Gonzaga, and his sister married the Duke of Lorraine, the grandson of Iolande De Bar and great grandson of Rene D'Anjou.[24]

Ferdinand De Gonzaque, variantly recorded as Ferrante De Gonzaga, was the son of Isabelle D'Este, one of Da Vinci's prominent patrons along with the Gonzaga family.

Louis De Nevers, the Duke of Nevers, was, in fact, Louis Gonzaga, the nephew of Ferrante De Gonzaga. Louis's brother married into the Hapsburg family, and his daughter married the Duke of Longueville, a title held by Blanche D'Evereaux. Louis maintained close relations with Robert Fludd and other esoterics, who enthusiastically anticipated the forming of the Rosicrucian order.[25]

Robert Fludd is said to have inherited John Dee's mantle as England's leading proponent for esoteric thought, writing and publishing prolifically on esoteric subjects and Hermeticism. Fludd was never confirmed as actually being a Rosicrucian (even though he likely was), but Fludd warmly endorsed the fledgling Rosicrucian orders, declaring that the highest good was the Magia, Kabbalah, and Alchymia of the Brothers of the Rosy Cross.[26] Fludd was a celebrated Kabbalist, according to Booth,[27] who steadily ascended the mystical pyramid and achieved an esteemed position in the London College of Physicians.[28]

Johan Valentin Andrea was the son of a Lutheran minister and a theologian. Andrea became a deacon of a small town near the Lorraine region but was also thought to have been a member of an ultra-secret society of Hermetic or esoteric initiates.[29]

Robert Boyle spent a considerable period of time in Florence, under the patronage of the Medicis, where he helped the Medicis to resist papal pressures and extended support for scientists and esoterics, who included Galileo. In Geneva, Boyle learned demonology and esoteric subjects. When Boyle returned to England, he offered his allegiance to the Stuarts and began to work towards the creation of the Royal Society/Invisible College. Boyle's closest associates in England were Isaac Newton and John Locke.[30]

Boyle frequently sojourned to southern France, spending substantial time in Toulouse, Narbonne, Carcassonne, and Rennes-le-Chateau to examine Inquisition documents regarding the Cathars. Boyle was known to embark upon spiritual pilgrimages to honor the graves of Rene D'Anjou and Nostradamas, as well as pilgrimages to Marseilles, where Mary Magdalene allegedly had taken the Holy Grail.[31] Boyle published manuscripts regarding alchemical treatises and was thought to be a member of a secret Hermetic society,[32] while others confirmed Boyle was a Rosicrucian.[33]

Isaac Newton descended from Scottish nobility and was educated at Cambridge; he was elected to the Royal Society/Invisible College in 1672 C.E., where he met and maintained ties with Robert Boyle and John Locke. In 1703 C.E., Newton was elected as the president of the Royal Society, where he fostered close relationships with Charles Radclyffe and Jean Desaguliers, one of the leading figures in the astonishing proliferation of Freemasonry across Europe.[34]

Newton was a practicing alchemist and a fan of the Rosicrucian Manifestos, as well as alchemical writings authored by Nicolas Flamel. Newton believed Judaism was an ancient repository for divine knowledge that was largely corrupted and lost; he also believed some of this lost knowledge had filtered down through Pythagoras. Newton was known to publicly question the authenticity of the New Testament and the divinity of Jesus, believing certain passages had been corrupted in the fifth century C.E.; meanwhile, he was an occultic aficionado, avidly studying Gnostic heresies.[35] It should not be surprising to learn Newton was also a Rosicrucian.[36]

Charles Radclyffe came from an influential Northumbrian family. His mother was an illegitimate daughter of Charles II via his mistress Molly Davis. Radclyffe, then, was of royal blood and was the cousin to “Bonnie” Prince Charlie Stuart. Radclyffe was a staunch supporter of the Stuart causes his entire life.[37]

Charles De Loraine was indoctrinated in the Jacobite cause from childhood. His father had offered refuge to the exiled Stuarts at Bar-le-Duc. Charles’s brother, Francois Lorraine, married an Austrian princess, Maria Theresa, and Charles later married Maria Theresa’s sister Maria Anne,[38] both of the Hapsburg dynasty. In 1761, Charles became the Grand Master of the Teutonic Order, a latter-day, chivalric, Germanic version of the Knights Templar and Hospitallers.[39]

Prussia was included among the Ordensland, the home of the Teutonic Knights, an organization that operated out of the reach of the pope and Catholicism, as a nation state headed by a Grand Master and which included unexplained members such as Henry Sinclair of Rosslin; Henry II of England; and two Stauffenbergs, who further boasted two family members listed as Hospitallers.[40]

The Teutonic Knights were a very powerful organization that enjoyed the same privileges and powers possessed by the Knights Templar and the Knights of St. John, supported by papal and emperor charters. It was an order that garnered white mantles and black crosses, an order where all had to be German, and an order that owned a large part of Prussia.[41] The Teutonic Knights peaked in power and influence by the end of the fourteenth century. They faded from view in 1525 C.E., during the rise of Martin Luther and under the guidance of Grand Master Hollenzollern, the ancestor of Fredrich I of Prussia, circa 1701.

The Teutonic Knights, according to Baigent and Leigh, were an ascetic order of warrior monks, who were documented by author Heinrich Von Treitschtke as highly pan-Aryan, racist, and of Volkishe ideology.[42] This was the indelible, clandestine order that Hitler established the SS upon. Moreover, they were an order that endorsed Augustine's "rule of life," in addition to the ordinary monastic vows, which included special obligations to fight against Christian enemies and to help the sick and injured.[43] Augustine was a murky bishop with an equally dubious order we will cover shortly.

In 1770, the nephew of Charles De Lorraine, Maximillian Lorraine, was appointed the coadjutor of the Teutonic Order and became its Grand Master, after the death of Charles in 1780 C.E.. He was variantly known as Maximillian Von Hapsburg and was the son of Maria Theresa Hapsburg and Francois Lorraine. Maximillian was a staunch supporter of the arts, who patronized both Beethoven and Mozart and to whom Beethoven dedicated his first symphony. Maximillian's sister was the famous Maria Antoinette Hapsburg/Lorraine. Maximillian was widely suspected to be a member of an ultra-secret society and was known to have consorted openly with the members of the Craft (Freemasonry), including Mozart.[44]

Charles Nodier's father was a very highly esteemed Freemason and a member of the Jacobites. After the French Revolution, Charles's father was the mayor of Besancon and the president of the town's revolutionary tribunal. Besancon was famous as a hotbed for subversion for many years. Charles was a voracious writer of books, with a wide range of subjects. He eventually turned against the French Rebellion and was also known to be an adversary against Napoleon.[45]

Victor Hugo’s aristocratic family was from Lorraine; he was born in Besancon in 1802. By age seventeen, Hugo was already a fervent disciple of Charles Nodier, from whom Hugo acquired knowledge about Gothic architecture that figured prominently in *The Hunchback of Notre Dame*. Nodier and Hugo, along with his brother, established a publishing house in conjunction with Nodier’s editorial direction. Hugo was known to be deeply spiritual but was publicly and militantly anti-Trinitarian and also repudiated the divinity of Jesus. Hugo, because of Nodier’s influence, was deeply immersed all his life in Gnostic, Kabbalistic, esoteric, and Hermetic thought, and he also was a Rosicrucian.[46]

Claude Debussy came to know Victor Hugo through the poet Paul Verlaine. Claude later set a number of Hugo’s compositions to music. Debussy cryptically penned a world-famous opera from a popular Rosicrucian play entitled *Axel.* Debussy’s circles were known to be deeply anchored in esoterica, and they consorted with all the prominent names in the French Occult Revival.[47]

Jean Cocteau was raised in an environment close to the corridors of power, in a politically prominent family. Cocteau always had access to powerful political leaders, as witnessed by his considerable currency with De Gaulle. Cocteau was also active in the redecoration of the Gothic cathedrals, such as Notre Dame, and did some writing regarding historical Rex Deus figures.[48]

All the Grand Masters of the Priory of Sion, including the Sinclair family members, were powerful European nobility or powerful elitists of academia. All were occultists, Rex Deus, Rosicrucians, or Gnostics; all toiled dutifully in their tasks for the Genesis 6 Conspiracy and were connectable to an obscure, universal organization—the hidden hand of history. The Priory of Sion Grand Masters were the architects for the Templar Order, the Freemasonry movement, the Rosicrucian orders, and the Illuminati, all of whom they control and lead to this very day.

This ultra-secret organization, in all likelihood, is the very same vicious and diabolical cult at the root of the Jewish conspiracies. Even though these powerful groups have alleged Jewish genealogies connecting them back to King David, they are not the true, dynastic descendants of Judah, David, and Jesus. Rex Deus and its puppet organizations are a dangerous rogue cult loyal to Lucifer and dark angels; they are mystics and pagans.

Rex Deus authors are likely the reticent scribes of the evil and covert *Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*, from which most of the misunderstood and misguided Jewish conspiracies originate. This subversive document first came to public light towards the end of the nineteenth century.[49] It first surfaced in Russia in 1895[50] and then was published in newspapers twice at later dates. The Russian secret police published it in 1903, claiming that an ultra-secret group led by Jews and Freemasons controlled most of the world's international banking, judiciary, and media and were bent on establishing world government.[51] The *Protocols* were further published in 1905–1906, in pamphlets from a press controlled by a right-wing secret society called the Black Hundreds.[52]

The first known mention of the *Protocols* came about by a daughter of a Russian general, Justine Glinka, who resided in Paris and purportedly purchased the documents for the Czar in 1884; although, the documents are believed to be much, much older.[53] Glinka, according to Greer, was a Theosophist and spy for the Russian police.[54]

The *Protocols* document was first published in book format in 1897, by Philipanov, and again in 1901, by Professor Sergius Nilus in his book *The Great within the Small*, which was then put on display in the British Museum (August 10, 1905).[55] A second publication of Nilus's book was destroyed by the Russian Kerensky regime in 1917.[56] During the Russian rebellion, the *Protocols* were standard reading among conservative opponents of the Bolsheviks.[57] All other copies were further destroyed by the Kerensky regime, which shot on sight anyone who possessed a copy.[58] A reporter posted in Moscow for the *Morning Post*, a Mr. Marsden, translated the *Protocols* into English in 1920, and that translation is the standard copy now available.[59]

The *Protocols of Zion* were then adopted by Hitler's National Socialism after World War I. Hitler often quoted from the *Protocols* in his writings and speeches, and they were inserted into German text books in school.[60] No doubt the future Antichrist will also rely upon and quote from these abominations.

CHAPTER 58

THE SINCLAIRS

For God has put it into their hearts to accomplish his purpose by agreeing to give the Beast their power to rule, until God’s words are fulfilled.

—Revelation 17:17

What can we learn about the infamous Sinclairs of Scotland? What is their hidden connection to Templarism’s evolution into Freemasonry?

The Saint-Claire Grandmasters of the Priory of Sion were, of course, the Sinclairs of Freemasonry and Scotland. Marie was descended from Henry De Saint-Claire, who accompanied Godefrois de Bouillon on the First Crusade.[1] Marie Sinclair married Hugh De Payan, also of Templar fame.[2] Jean De Saint- Claire, of the Sainte-Claire Sur Epte, was additionally descended from the Houses of Chaumont and Gisor, just as the De Bar family was.[3] According to Robert Lomas, the Sinclairs were the famous founders of Freemasonry,[4] to whom the Scottish Freemasonry branch is fiercely loyal.

William Sinclair was the Grand Master to whom a great and ancient lineage is attributed.[5] The Sinclairs adopted the Gaelic title “Earls of Rosslyn,” after the name of the town, around 1100 C.E., when Henry St. Clair returned from the First Crusade; it’s a title that translates as “ancient knowledge passed down the generations."[6] Freemasons believe Rosslyn Chapel was built to be a memorial and a safe place for the excavated Jerusalem scrolls[7] and other ancient treasures and knowledge. Masonic historians hail Rosslyn Chapel as the missing link connecting the Knights Templar to Speculative Freemasonry.[8] William Sinclair built Rosslyn Chapel between 1441 and 1486 C.E.[9]

The Sinclair clan presided over the surviving Templar organization in Scotland, called The Order of Heredon. The Templars survived in Scotland under the guise of a trade organization (Masonry), while the Sinclair clan inherited the role as guardians for Freemasons, as well as concealers of the Knights Templar within those organizations. Sora notes the Sinclairs preserved the Templars as guardians to the Templar organization, hiding both the Templar and the Priory of Sion treasures at Rosslyn and later at Oak Island in Nova Scotia. As a reward for the protection of the Templars, Sora added that the Sinclair clan was granted guardianship of the newly Sinclair-founded and sponsored Freemasonry organization.[10] Even today, Freemasonry honors and preserves its Templar heritage with the honored Order within Freemasonry, the Masonic Knights Templar, or KTs.[11]

The underground Templars first set their ambitions on creating an independent Scotland, from which they then planned the creation of the United States and Brazil from secretive knowledge they had about the continents across the Atlantic.[12] This ambition came to fruition through the newly formed Freemason organizations and its genitive organizations. This, then, explains the Sinclair obsession with the then yet undiscovered continents and sheds light on the formidable influence Freemason organizations flexed and still flex over both Brazil and the United States. The Sinclair support of Columbus's mission also explains why the explorer's ships carried the Templar flag.

The United States was founded on the Templar belief of a New Atlantis and that a Golden Age had once existed in the ancient past and will rise once more in the New Age of light.[13] And to this end, Hancock and Bauval note that Benjamin Franklin, Thomas Jefferson, Thomas Paine, and George Washington collectively toiled to create a new utopian city (Washington City) for this New Atlantis, which contained esoteric allegories in its construction to Freemasonry and its ancient history. In fact, Marquis De Lafayette presented George Washington with a Masonic apron that contained the All-Seeing Eye in 1793, during the laying of the cornerstone ceremony for the future Washington City.[14]

King Robert the Bruce was rewarded with his Templar patronage at Bannockburn in 1314.[15] Templars trained the Scots in preparation for the inevitable war against the English King Edward II. Templar gold exported from France was utilized to purchase arms from Ireland and the Dalriada kingships of Tara. Remember, from 1314 to 1319, Robert the Bruce's brother was the king of Ireland.[16] The Knights Templar saved the day by rushing the battlefield, totally surprising the English, late in the day, when the English were exhausted. They slaughtered the vulnerable English army. The Knights Templar were the best-trained militia in Europe at that time. The fresh force of knights flooded the battlefield with banners waving, clearly identifying who they were.[17]

History, however, has naively recorded this turning point in history as untrained Scottish servants valiantly taking up the cause with the arms of their masters, rushing the battlefield and saving the day for the Scots. Freemasonry legends like The Legend of Bruce support this alternative line of Scottish history. Bannockburn, in other legends, was believed secured by the Templars and led by the famous Sir William Sinclair,[18] credited with sponsoring refugee Templars.

The Templars then began their transformation into newly accepted Freemasonry organizations that were based out of Rosslyn Castle, under the protection of William Sinclair.[19] Under King Bruce, the Templar Order restructured into a kind of secret church that was, of course, completely independent of Rome; it contained abbots and bishops, but no pope,[20] and that structure no doubt influences the religious and esoteric parts of Freemasonry to this day.

Bruce constituted another new order for Templar Knights, the Rosy Cross, after the Roman excommunication was lifted in 1323, to ensure secrecy and to camouflage the order for all those knights who were particularly valiant at Bannockburn.[21] This order was likely awarded to ensure the legacy of the Knights Templar and the ancient Gnostic/Essene/Priory organization of the Brotherhood of the Red Cross. All this encourages one to speculate about what influence this genitive order had, or has, on the highly elevated and esteemed Masonic Order of the Rosicrucians; they are all likely one and the same order.

Bruce additionally promoted the Templar Knights to the positions and authority of the official guardians and bodyguards for Scottish kings. This order was further supported and promoted by the subsequent Stuart kings.[22] The Order of the Rosy Cross combined with the Heredon of Kilwinning Order to form the Royal Order of Scotland, which was to always have the king of Scotland as the head of the order. The Heredon Order was originally formed in the twelfth century by David I,[23] the same Scottish king that began official ties to the Knights Templar from their inception. Greer notes that the Golden and Rosy Cross order was an ancient and important German Rosicrucian order that boasted they entered Britain during the days of King Arthur.[24]

Wolfram Von Eshenbach cryptically affirmed the Templars were Grail guardians from a Hermetic, secret society, that was complete with reticent rituals, initiation, and an agenda to attain world domination.[25] The Templars believed they were the inheritors of secret, ancient knowledge that dated all the way back to Atlantis,[26] as well as preservers of knowledge dating back to the Great Pyramid and Solomon.[27] Templars believed that they were the Elect, the “Fate Darlings” of Wolfram’s poem *Titurel*; they believed they were the Keepers of the Message that will eventually dominate the world.[28]

CHAPTER 59

ST. BERNARD AND THE BENEDICTINE MONKS

Hiram king of Tyre replied by letter to Solomon: "Because the Lord loves his people, he has made you their king…. I am sending you Huram Abi, a man of great skill, whose father was from Tyre. He is trained to work in gold and silver, bronze and iron, stone and wood, and with purple and blue and crimson yarn and fine linen."

—2 Chronicles 2:11–14

According to Markale, the Templar Order was an initiatory order, elitist, and double-faced.[1] It was a hypocritical order that secreted another secret order, which was completely different than what was on display for the world.[2]

So how and why were Templars permitted to become a powerful, Christian-endorsed order when they believed Jesus was not God?

Templars believed Jesus was just another prophet, like Mohammed and Buddha. Initiates were expected to spit upon the cross, denying Jesus as the Christ. Article 4 from The Secret Rule of the Order states that no prince or high priest knew the truth, for if they had, they would not have worshipped the cross of Christ. The Secret Rule of the Order of the Templars made a distinction between the regular (lower) members and the Consoled Brothers (the Adepts), who were the Keepers of the Message. The Secret Rule of the Order was set down in *The Book of Baptism of Fire and the Secrets Set Down by the Master Roncelin.* Consoled Brothers derive not by coincidence from the Gnostic Cathars, the *Perfecti*, meaning those who have received the *Consolamentum*. The Consoled Brothers were the “Pure Ones” who were already in contact with the divine, ready to rejoin the kingdom of light from where they were driven during the revolt of the [fallen] angels; only the Consoled Brothers knew the Secret Rule of the Order.[3]

The Templars formally recognized Article 5, which declared Christians, Saracens, Jews, Greeks, Romans, French, and Bulgarians as equals; whereas Bulgarians were the *Bogamils*, the ancestors of the Cathars. In addition, Article 4 of the Roncelin Document details the secret that only Consoled Brothers know, the secret that remains hidden from the children of the “New Babylon” (as in end-time Babylon), that the purpose to the Templar Order was not to protect pilgrims but rather to conquer the world and establish a united kingdom (world government), which the grand monarch (Antichrist) will reign over.[4] These beliefs remain alive and well in the contemporary Genesis 6 Conspiracy.

By 1127, the Templar excavations in Jerusalem were completed.[5] They were believed in legends to have retrieved the Ark of the Covenant, treasures of gold, the vast knowledge of Solomon,[6] and other knowledge from the ancients and the Essenes. Again, according to Knight and Lomas, authentic Enochian literature and knowledge that contained the ancient, antediluvian knowledge hidden in the temple’s secret vaults by Solomon and again later by the Essenes was also thought to be obtained by the Templars.[7]

Thus, the Templars believed they were the angels designated to guard the Stone (of heaven), the Holy Grail. The Templar Order was created to protect the allegorical Grail; antediluvian secrets; and illicit, heavenly knowledge. According to Wolfram and reaffirmed by Markale, once Templar descendants determine the destined individual, the authentic king of the San Greal, the New Kingdom (the new Atlantis) will be reborn and reigned over by this great monarch. It is at Gisors Castle (where the Cutting of the Elm occurred), at the Governors Tower that forms the main entrance to the town on a street called *the Grande Monarque*, where this grand monarch will make his grand appearance before unifying the brotherhood of all men.[8]

The end of the eleventh century marked the arrival of Gothic architecture.[9] The builders of these "New Gothic" cathedrals thereafter, and without explanation, utilized triangles and snakes for their primary decorative motifs to inscribe upon their works.[10] This New Gothic art replaced the Old Gothic art known variantly as *Romanesque* architecture.[11] Because the vaults were so high in Gothic designs, flying buttresses were essential.[12] The New Gothic architecture was thus distinguished by its cutting-edge technology for magnificent ribs and flying, intercrossed buttresses. The New Gothic style solved the weight issues of ceilings with vaults, which disguised the weight[13] by transmitting the pressure from the half arches of stone laterally to the outside of the church.[14] Flying buttresses were projecting structures built on the outside of the building, which countered gravitational forces from the roof. These external supports eliminated the necessity for bulky, stone pillars inside the building. Thus the New Gothic style facilitated marvelous stained glass windows.[15]

Conversely, limited pointed arches characterized Romanesque architecture.[16] Romanesque displayed half-barreled, vaulted ceilings with a humble set of ribs and arches.[17] Romanesque technology hemmed its buildings into underwhelming proportions by comparison because of ceiling weight concerns.[18] In addition, this architecture did not permit windows to pierce the sides; light only penetrated through the aisles.[19] Hence, straight lines dominated Romanesque architecture, while curved domes distinguished the New Gothic art.[20]

Theosophist writers think that the Mason guilds of Rex Deus were the source and founding spirit for the Freemason movements.[21] These roots were the practical/operative application of Freemasonry that was maintained within the stonemason guilds of Europe.[22] These (Snake) builder guilds of Masons emerged from remnants of the Roman *Collegia* guilds and brotherhoods that survived the fall of the Roman Empire.[23]

According to Plutarch, in 715 B.C.E., King Pompilius founded artisan guilds in Rome.[24] In the second century B.C.E., the knowledge of the ancient Dionysian Artificers of Tyre was passed down to the Roman Collegia through Pythagoras, or Pythagorean Mystery Schools. After the fall of the

Roman Empire in the fifth century C.E., the barbarians reduced the Collegia to rubble[25] and caused its virtual extinction. The refugee Masons from the Roman Collegia survived among the Benedictine monks of the Cistercian Order; the Knights Templar; and the operative, trade-based Masons and guilds that had coalesced into (Snake) Brotherhoods. Monastic organizations within the Roman Church endeavored to both preserve the secrets of the Collegia and take control of those building secrets for their own purposes. Essentially, this was accomplished by two (heretical) orders, the Benedictines and then the Templars. The Benedictines consisted of two different persuasions: the French monks of Citeaux, known as the Cistercians, from which St. Bernard derived, and the English monks of Cluny, also chronicled as the Celtic Christian Church.[26]

Builder knowledge from the Collegia was preserved in England after the fall of the Roman Empire, through an obscure sect identified as *Culdees*, or *Colidees*.[27] The Culdees were a rogue, monastic movement in Ireland, Wales, England, and Scotland[28] within the Celtic Christian Church that retained Celtic dogma and traditions.[29] They were underground Druids who deceptively preserved their ancient Mysteries.[30] The Culdees were known variantly as Cluny monks and were followers of the Abbey of Cluny. Cluny monks were staunch proponents of Romanesque art and unquestionably its (spiritual) center.[31]

The Cluny Order and the Cistercians were the source for the Old Gothic art that stemmed out of Romanesque art, until the arrival of the Jerusalem knowledge from Solomon's Masons, which then produced the revolutionary New Gothic art. The Cluny did for Romanesque art what the Cistercians did later for the New Gothic art, spreading this technology throughout Europe, according to Naudon. Hence, St. Bernard later reformed Romanesque with new and revolutionary kinds of mathematical beauty and proportions.[32]

Additionally, the Celtic Christian Church launched the second evangelization of England, spreading the (rogue) Benedictine movement throughout all of Great Britain, essentially through the efforts of St. Augustine, the priest who became the bishop of Canterbury in 596 C.E.[33] Surprisingly, St. Augustine is well known in occultist circles as an initiate of a Manichaeism mystery school.[34] Even though Augustine seemingly rejected Manichaeism at some point and converted to Christianity, historians note that Augustine's doctrines emphasized the mystical body of

Christ, while his Platonic and Neo-platonic variety of philosophy influenced many Middle Age teachers, such as St. Thomas Aquinas.[35]

St. Augustine nourished the Roman Collegia, building many monasteries and churches, including Canterbury, of which St. Augustine was the architect. Roman Catholicism naively accepted the Roman Collegia, complete with its cultic practices of initiations, because the church required their building skills and knowledge. It is for these reasons that the refugee Gnostic Manicheans from Rome likely worked their way secretly into the Collegia.[36] The new Roman Catholic Church persecuted the Manicheans into secrecy.

Many think the early Roman Church was installed by Constantine, who influenced it and altered it from the original form of the Jerusalem church. I believe Constantine viewed Christianity in geopolitical terms as a conveniently powerful force to harness future hope for his floundering empire, in a similar manner that King Shappur had previously inflicted Zoroastrianism on Parthia. Constantine conceived one identity for all countries of the empire, not as Roman but as a new brand of an altered Christianity. Gnostics, in particular, believe that in an effort to further unite and solidity his grip on the Roman Empire, Constantine fused the sun worshipping pagans of the empire into the new, state-sponsored Roman Catholicism in the year 325. After all, Constantine was originally the high priest of the cult of the sun known as *Sol Invictus*.[37] Further, Catholicism, particularly after the fall of the Roman Empire, readily adopted pagan rituals, symbols, and even some gods, which were transformed into legendary saints—a practice that seems to have occurred more often in England than elsewhere.[38] Constantine further fused Sol Invictus with Catholicism by introducing pantheistic symbols, religious dates, and rituals[39] into Catholicism that remain as part of Christianity to this very day.

We celebrate Christmas on December 25, but this date was not the birth of Jesus, for Jesus was likely born in the fall. Jesus was born six months after John the Baptist,[40] and it is thought by some that John was born around March, placing the birth of Jesus around September or October. Furthermore, Luke recorded the shepherds were living in the fields nearby at the time of Christ’s birth, keeping watch over their flocks at night,[41] suggesting that Christ’s birth likely took place during the dry periods of the year that would likely have been sometime between June and the end of

October and not during the rainy season of winter or early spring, when the flocks would have been penned up in the stables. This also lends credibility to the notion that a stable was available for Mary and Joseph,[42] as it was not the rainy season of December and winter.

December 25 was, however, a popular pagan period for the celebrating of the winter solstice and for sun worship. December 25 was the celebrated date of the birth of the sun gods known as Osiris, Adonis/Baal, and Dionysus. It was also the celebrated birthdate of the god Mithras, who was curiously recorded as a son of god and the light of the world, a god who was also supposedly resurrected three days after his death.[43] Moving the celebration of the birth of Christ to December 25 was likely a politically motivated homogenization of the Roman Empire under one, new, Catholic religion by Emperor Constantine.

Constantine advanced this homogenization further by moving the Sabbath from the seventh day,[44] Saturday, as instructed by the Ten Commandments,[45] to Sunday, all to venerate what Brown describes as the pagan day of the sun, which was rationalized to Christians as honoring the day that Christ was resurrected. Other sun worshipping imagery was subsequently adopted into Christianity at this time, according to Brown, such as the Egyptian sun discs transformed into halos for the Catholic saints, along with the imagery of Isis nursing her miraculous and divinely conceived son, Horus, which allegedly became the accepted motif for images of Mary and baby Jesus.[46]

A later pope, Sylvester, born Gerbert d’Aurillac, known also as the Benedictine monk, was a Gnostic and heretic who encouraged and brought about great strides in science, mathematics, and architecture through his own broad-based knowledge he obtained from Arabs in Spain.[47] Pope Sylvester was famous for his knowledge of Oriental studies, the Hermetic sciences, and of course, magic.[48] Sylvester lived one hundred years before the Crusades, but he secretly hoped Europeans would one day regain Jerusalem to retake the temple treasures holding universal understanding that were hidden there.[49] This certainly testifies to the accuracy and validity of Gnostics and Manicheans successfully working their way into the Roman Church and into the Collegia to destroy Catholicism from within.

Builder guilds, then, after the fall of the Roman Empire, descended from the Roman Collegia through to the Benedictine monks, to the mystical brotherhoods formed in the twelfth century that built Chartres. In fact, the Templars were initially students of the Benedictine monks, who taught the Templars the building skills, and both (Snake) Orders, of course, always kept very close ties to each other.[50] Templars reorganized the Mason guilds in the twelfth century[51] and became patrons for the first trade guilds, which were wholly independent of the church.[52] From the twelfth century forward, Templars were heavily involved in all of the Free Craftsman trades and their organizations.[53]

These specialized Masons reorganized by the Templars, who became known as the Children of Solomon,[54] were secretly instructed by St. Bernard's Cistercian Order in the knowledge of Solomon.[55] This Jerusalem-based knowledge was brought to the Cistercians for both safekeeping and translation by the founding Templars.[56] St. Bernard's Cistercian Order was the very same Benedictine Order that adopted the Celtic Christian Church of Scotland and Ireland, thus reuniting the parallel Benedictine Orders. Masons, builders of any sort, and clerics that belonged to the Benedictine or Templar Guilds were free to move in any country, all under the protection and laws of the Templar Order.[57]

The European Notre Dame Cathedrals were all designed in the Gothic tradition, the *art Gothique*, or *Argot*, from the *Langue Argot*, the guardian language of the Golden Fleece, from the mystical, Greek legend of Jason and the Argonauts. The great Notre Dame Cathedrals that included Reims, Amiens, Bayeux, Abbeville, Rouen, Laon, Evreux, Etampes, Notre Dame, and Chartres were strategically built and aligned in Europe as the reflection of the minor image of Virgo.[58]

Prince Guilhelm (Guilhelm de Toulouse de Gellone), an apparent, acknowledged prince from the House of Judah at that time, instituted his famous Judaic academy of St. Guilhelm at Gellone in the south of France in 791. It was there that the Templar knowledge and treasures were brought after the Jerusalem excavations that ended in 1127. Gellone was just north of the infamous Rennes-le-Chateau of the Catalunya region, and this whole region was renowned as the constituency of Languedoc. It was at this Gellone Judaic academy that the derivative Cistern Order was founded under St. Bernard solely to translate the newly found Templar knowledge. St. Bernard then translated the Secret Geometry of Solomon's Masons.[59] It was the combination of Collegia knowledge, the Jerusalem knowledge of architecture, and other secrets that St. Bernard and his Benedictine Cistercians taught to the Knights Templar, which then sponsored the European building revolution, producing the great cathedrals.

Let us inspect one of the eminent Gothic cathedrals of Europe to diagnostically evaluate the end product when powerful, ancient knowledge intersects with a rogue cult. Louis Charpentier, author of *The Mysteries of Chartres Cathedral*, claims the Templars built Chartres to be a taciturn repository for ancient wisdom equal to Stonehenge, the Temple of Solomon, and the Great Pyramid.[60] He further notes Chartres was an ancient, holy site dedicated to the Mother Goddess (Isis) and that its altar was erected above the *Grotte des Druides*, which apparently marked the Womb of the Earth,[61] which figuratively produced the Nephilim. Both Chartres and Notre Dame Cathedrals are believed to have been built on sacred ground, where the Telluric earth currents are at their highest levels.[62]

The Abbot de Fleury, Fulbert, was the founder of the school of Chartres. Fulbert continued Gerbert d'Aurillac's (Pope Sylvester's) work, teaching Aristotle's metaphysics brought back from Spain by Gerbert, as well as initiating Christians into the Pythagorean numerology.[63] Chartres was renowned as a place of great learning, teaching aspects of ancient thinking unknown to the rest of Europe. Chartres, like the pyramids in the world of mysticism, represents the Hermetic doctrine of heaven on earth, or "As Above So Below."[64]

This iconic expression is manifested in mysticism as a holographic projection of the physical universe, where what occurs in a higher level of creation/dimension plays out in our universe. This projection, our physical universe, emanates from the geometric matrix of space, forming the illusion of time and distance; this matrix is the vessel holding the universe and then connecting everything with and into the universal life force, known variantly as the Brahman and Tao.[65] This is the doctrine, imagery, and religion portrayed in the *Matrix* trilogy, where humankind is trapped in the physical matrix world and awaiting a (false) messiah to free humankind from a world of evil machines (God and his angels).

Chartres displays a statuette of the Black Madonna, also acknowledged as Isis, which represents the "Great Work." Surrounding the Black Madonna are carvings of the Seven Sacred Sciences from the antediluvian epoch and their seven postdiluvian, mystical mentors and/or guardians: geometry/ Euclid, rhetoric/Cicero, Dialectic/Aristotle, arithmetic/Boethus, astronomy/ Ptolemy, grammar/Dunatus, and music/Pythagorus. These seven sorcerers are Keepers we spoke of in previous chapters; they will be portrayed in the end times as great spiritual guides/prophets who astonishingly preserved the ancient knowledge for the Terminal Generation.

The north porch, where the Door of the Initiates is located, portrays a Templar returning from Jerusalem with a sacred object, in addition to portraying Melchizedek, the teacher of Abraham. Chartres also portrays Aaron as the Egyptian Magus, along with David, Solomon, and Moses, full of the wisdom of Egypt.[66] The depiction of Melchizedek additionally portrays him bearing the Grail.[67] Thus, the Chartres labyrinth is believed to be a journey from the darkness to light; it constitutes the route to the light according to Rosicrucian tradition.[68] The labyrinth was originally built with a plaque depicting Theseus, Ariaddne, and the Minotaur.[69] God appears as The Great Architect of the cosmos (and Freemasons), demonstrating the world is a work of architecture.[70]

Chartres is one of the great modern shrines to mysticism that is encoded with sacred geometry for personal transformation of the soul (reincarnation), including imagery defining the quest of the Holy Grail, just as Sinclair built Rosslyn Chapel with the same encoded, mystical secrets. Similarly, all Gothic cathedrals inspired by Templar knowledge were built to transmit alchemical knowledge and are therefore inundated with alchemical symbols and allegories, just as they contain many statues and representations of devils, griffins (sphinxes), golems, and gargoyles. According to Peter Marshall, there is even one statue at Notre Dame Cathedral that looks like an alien.[71]

Bernard of Chartres once said, “We are dwarfs sitting on the shoulders of giants, the ancients.” Bernard of Chartres was a brilliant Gnostic scholar of his time, and I take his words literally. His younger brother, Thierry of Chartres, compiled an encyclopedia of the Seven Liberal Arts (sciences).[72] But what is even more intriguing is that another Bernard of Gnostic infamy was kept a secret in his lifetime, for St. Bernard was a powerful potentate of the Catholic Church and the most influential sponsor for the Knights Templar within the Church.

So, then, who was Bernard de Clairveaux? St. Bernard of Clairveaux lived circa 1090–1153 C.E.[73] He was the son of a Burgundy lord. At the age of twenty, Bernard enrolled in the Abbey of Citeaux, where he later became the Abbot of Clairveaux, with the aid of Etienne Harding, which by no coincidence was sponsored by the Cistercians. Both St. Bernard and Etienne Harding were the masterminds behind the subversive Cistercian movement, according to Jean Markale.[74]

St. Bernard believed in the ideal of one church, one faith, one people, and one leader and believed the Templars could be employed to establish this Cistercian dream.[75] St. Bernard, according to Rene Guernon, who wrote *Le Christianisme Celtique Et Ses Survivances Populaires*, held to beliefs of the Celtic Christian Church,[76] which Roman Catholicism had crushed in the seventh century, the same underground Celtic Christian Scottish Church that St. Bernard welcomed into the Gnostic Cistercian Order. Guernon noted that St. Bernard was the last of the Druids and the heir to Western traditions.[77] He was credited with giving life to the philosophies and teachings of Aristotle.[78] St. Bernard, like the mystic Gerber D'Aurillac, was obsessed with finding the authentic Tablets of the Law in Jerusalem, along with their accompanying secrets, and shrewdly did what was necessary in this cause.[79]

To some historians, St. Bernard was one of the heads of Christianity in the twelfth century. Others say that St. Bernard de Clairveaux became the master of Christianity in the first half of the twelfth century, for countless high dignitaries of the church sponsored him.[80] Armstrong noted St. Bernard dominated both Pope Eugene II and King Louis VII.[81] St. Bernard became so powerful that all Christianity awaited his enlightened words before making a decision; his words were regarded as coming from God.[82] It is this power and his Gnostic/Celtic beliefs that coalesced into his seditious actions with respect to the Knights Templar, the Jerusalem treasures, and the antediluvian knowledge.

Hugh De Payan of Templar fame was related to St. Bernard's family, the Montbard family, by marriage.[83] In addition, St. Bernard was in service to the Count of Champagne.[84] St. Bernard's uncle, Andre De Montbard,[85] was one of the founding knights of the order[86] and a vassal to the Count of Champagne.[87] De Payen formerly appealed to his in-law, St. Bernard, to support his new order,[88] which comprised at least two knights, Rosel and Gondemare, who were Cistercian monks.[89] St. Bernard used his influence to do so in a famous letter.[90]

Hughes, the Count of Champagne, another originating member of the Templar Order, was a large donor to Clairveaux and the Benedictines.[91] All the originating knights were related by close family ties, inexplicably direct connections to the Cistercian monks, and royal Flemish Cathar membership.[92] In 1128, St. Bernard was part of the clergy that met in Troyes to formerly recreate the Knights Templar. He wrote the famous letter "In Praise of the New Knighthood," which provided for his full, unconditional support, backing the formation of the order and thus easily carried the debate.[93]

Thus, the Knights Templar were formerly cast into a Catholic order sanctioned by Rome in 1128 at the Council of Troyes, and they were fully backed by the powerful Gnostic heretic Bernard de Clairveaux.[94] It was at Troyes where this Catholic Templar Order officially became a Cistercian Order, under the complete authority of St. Bernard.[95] In fact, the original statutes of the Templars were even thought penned by St. Bernard and thought that St. Bernard and the Cistercians formally fashioned the Templar Order.[96] From 1128 forward, St. Bernard was declared the Patron and Protector of the Templar Order. Templars from that point on then swore an oath of obedience to St. Bernard, according to Gardner. St. Bernard further mandated that the entire Templar Order was to be obedient to Mary Magdalene, and they then proceeded to consecrate all the Notre Dame Cathedrals to her.[97]

Hence, Markale notes St. Bernard (but it was, in my opinion, likely Etienne Harding, since St. Bernard was born in 1090) was one of the main proponents for sending Templars to Jerusalem to retrieve early Christian (Essene) documents and Judaic treasures, which, of course, St. Bernard and Harding had extensive knowledge of.[98] St. Bernard wrote to the returning Templars to journey carefully through France with the Jerusalem treasures, avoiding Vatican authorities at all cost.[99] The Templar gambit was then afoot.

The reign of the Templars halted suddenly on Friday, October 13, 1307, when King Phillip the Fair and the Roman Church came down upon the Templars. Pope Clement V ordered all Catholic nations to seize Templar possessions.[100] At the demise of the Templar Order, five charges were levied by the Inquisition: the denial of Jesus; obscene kisses and homosexuality; idolatry; and non-consecration, i.e., the omitting of the words of Consecration from their Mass. Many Templars were punished and executed for those transgressions. Strangely, though, the Papal Bull of 1312 officially abolished the order but did not condemn the Templars.[101] In fact, in 2007, Vatican archivists unearthed startling documents revealing Clement V had actually declared the Templar Order to be innocent of all charges and pardoned the order shortly before he died.[102]

CHAPTER 60

THE INVISIBLE COLLEGE

Above all, my brothers, do not swear—not by heaven or by earth or by anything. Let your “Yes” be yes, and your “No” no, or you will be condemned.

—James 5:12

How did Templar secrets and objectives evolve through Freemasonry? And what effect does the resurrection of those ideals have on this generation?

The Legend of d’Aumont maintains that d’Aumont sailed the surviving Templars to Scotland.[1] Templar refugees landed with about fifty Templar Knights and settled at the Mull of Kintyre. They were disguised as mechanics/ operative Masons, and they founded a new order, the “Franc Masons.”[2]

Pierre d’Aumont was appointed the Grand Master in 1313, after the death of Jacque de Molay at the hands of the Catholic Church and the French monarchy.[3] Molay had previously arranged for the nonvisible and secret Templar treasures to be removed and then loaded onto eighteen ships of the Templar fleet from La Rochelle in Brittany, which then sailed to Scotland, while some stowed away to Portugal,[4] all which d’Aumont led.

The Templars then renamed themselves Franc Masons, because *Franc* means both “French” and “free” in French. However, another version suggests Freemason derived from the French words *frere* (brother) and *macon* (knight). When Templars exported their secret society to England, they chose the name *Freemasons*, for obvious reasons.[5] Freemasons protected the discovery of their Templar pedigree through adopting symbols of architecture and adopting the organization title of *Freemasonry,* which it later spread to England and all Europe. Freemasons then built all of their temples consecrated to virtue, truth, and light, in honor of the “Grand Architect of the Universe.”[6]

Templars were, indeed, a secret society, according to Craft legends, complete with a secret doctrine and a secret ceremony of initiation into their ranks,[7] like all organizations of Enochian mysticism. From surviving aristocratic Adepts, remnant Templars spawned through new secret societies many of the famous and powerful political organizations of early modern Europe. Freemasons, in fact, believe themselves to be heirs to secrets held by the Knights Templar, who created other organizations, such as Rosicrucianism and the Invisible College, also celebrated as the Royal Society of England, for the twofold purposes of preserving and perpetuating those inherited secrets, the gnosis of the ages.[8]

Freemason Robert Boyle first called the Royal Society “the Invisible College.”[9] Boyle, as you will recall, was a Stuart loyalist and a Grand Master of the Priory of Sion. The Royal Society is the oldest and most respected scientific society in the world, according to author and Freemason Robert Lomas. Lomas goes on to note the Royal Society founders were the first scientists and the last of the sorcerers.[10] The founders of modern science were all occultists practicing magic, alchemy, and astrology.[11] According to Freemasonry records, The Royal Society was organized to be a society or club to cultivate the science. They sought to advance the experimental philosophy introduced by Sir Francis Bacon.[12] The Invisible College/Royal Society is the founding cornerstone for modern science; all its genitive, scientific organizations pay tribute to the Royal Society. The term *Invisible College* was first made famous by the Rosicrucian Manifestos.[13] Because of the Royal Society’s mystical and anti-Christian beginnings, and anti-Christian beginnings, the Royal Society’s ongoing opposition to Christian positions such as Intelligent Design, and noting that the science community pays tribute even to this day to the Royal Society Fellowship (Fellowship generally denotes a secret society) that includes 1400 of the world's most eminent scientists, I conclude science communities are still governed by doctrines emanating out of the founding Royal Society occultism, which took instructions from ancient Snake Societies and the Seven Liberal Sciences.

Modern science became prominent in Europe during the seventeenth century; its doctrines tussled with Christianity and the Mother Church for centuries before its ideas took root, for the Royal Society's scientific theories seemed to explain the world better than any other form of thought at that time. The new scientists forged an unspoken agreement with the Church to avoid ongoing confrontations; they determinedly avoided for several centuries issues, which called Christian doctrine into question. For the Church, this agreement drew a distinction between science and magic.[14] The agreement was shattered in the nineteenth century, with the advent of the degrading Darwin doctrine of evolution, reigniting open war between the two factions.

The Royal Society was originally created as a secret society in the same spirit as Freemasonry, Rosicrucianism, and Templarism and is, according to Lomas, considered a child of Freemasonry.[15] In fact, according to Gardner, Rosicrucianism and Freemasonry were considered synonymous at that time, as testified to by *Metrical Account of Perth*, published in 1638.[16] Albert Mackey writes the Royal Society was first organized by Oliver Cromwell's learned brother-in-law Dr. John Wilkins as a club dedicated to the cultivating of the sciences.[17]

The first meetings were staged at the House of Dr. Goddard and then transferred to Gresham College.[18] A mysterious group, all with Freemasonic links and recognized as "the Gresham 12," officially organized the Royal Society. The founders included Lord Brouencker, Robert Boyle, Alexander Bruce, Sir Robert Moray, Sir Paul Neile, Dr. Wilkins, Dr. Goddard, Dr. Petty, Mr. Ball, Mr. Rooke, Mr. Christopher Wren, and Mr. Hill.[19] Robert Moray and Elias Ashmole were considered the Royal Society's Foundation Fellows, and both were Rosicrucians and Freemasons. Ashmole was initiated into Freemasonry in 1646; he was the first English-born Freemason.[20]

Charles I of the House of Stuart was defeated in 1647 by Cromwell, who executed him in 1649, afterwards becoming the Lord Protector.[21] According to Nicholas de Bonneville, author of *Jesuits Chased out of Freemasonry*, Rosicrucians had formed the Royal Society in London in 1646, under Charles I, where they regularly met in Masonic temples. They modeled this society after the ideas of the New Atlantis expressed by Francis Bacon.[22] Royal Society meetings were suspended during Cromwell's reign but resumed in 1660, after the fall of Cromwell's government, in what is known as "the Restoration." The Royal Society continues to convene to this day.[23]

The Royal Society subsequently issued its first charter under Charles II in 1662 and then the second charter in 1663.[24] According to Gardner, it was no coincidence that the first two known, prominent Masonic initiates to England, Moray and Ashmole, were both Foundation Fellows for the Royal Society and Rosicrucians, for in proclaiming the charter of the Royal Society, King Charles II effectively reconstituted the Brethren of the Rosy Cross, seizing Grand Mastership of his family's traditional order.[25]

One of the founding twelve was Alexander Bruce, a wealthy Freemason and a direct descendant of Robert the Bruce. The Bruce family had supported the Stuarts during the civil war with Cromwell.[26] The Stuarts were descending monarchs from Robert the Bruce, and it was Charles II Stuart who succeeded the short-lived English Republic after the fall of Cromwell. Charles II supported the newly established, secret society with funding and a royal charter. All this is not a coincidence.

Now, Robert Moray was the driving force behind the successful launch of the Invisible College and considered the true founder; he was a Rosicrucian,[27] knighted by Charles I in 1641.[28] According to Gardner, Moray was the first imported English Freemason; he was a Scottish statesman and the London attaché for Cardinal Richelieu of France. William Viscount Brouencker was Gresham College's president, while Elias Ashmole was the founder of Oxford's Ashmolean Museum.[29] Ashmole was an accredited historian, astrologer, chemist, and a Freemason.[30] All were brought together to form the Royal Society with other Rosy Cross Adepts: Robert Boyle, William Petty, and Christopher Wren.[31] All belonged to the same descending Templar Rosy Cross Order established by Bruce.

Lord Bacon (1560–61–1626) was a renowned patriarch of renaissance alchemy; he was attributed thirty alchemical works.[32] Bacon was born near the Strand (theater) in London. Bacon was educated at Oxford, becoming the “Lord Keeper” under Elizabeth I.[33] He was the Lord Chancellor to King James I, the second most powerful position in England at that time.[34] The realm of both Shakespeare and Bacon was the Globe Theater, which was variantly known in some circles as the “Rosicrucian Theater”; it was established by and contained the private principles of Rosicrucianism and Freemasonry. Shakespeare’s literature is overflowing and intimately connected to Masonic ritual and allegory, according to Gardner.[35]

One of the first forty founders of the Royal Society, Abraham Cowley, penned a poem called “Spratt’s History,” in which he compared Bacon to Moses. According to Lomas, Bacon is considered to be a past Master of the Royal Society in honor of his literary inspiration that sponsored the Royal Society/Invisible College. Bacon’s portrait rests prominently alongside that of King Charles II, who authorized the charter of the founding, and the portrait of William Brouencker, the first president of the Royal Society. Under Bacon’s portrait is an inscription, describing him as the “Inspirational Source” of the society, for the idea derived in Bacon’s *The New Atlantis* and specifically with his indelible idea to create a research establishment for science, a “Solomon’s House” or a “College of Six Days.”[36] The New Atlantis was to be a place where mystical faith and reason coexist in perfect harmony through the religion of mysticism. Bacon was profoundly influenced by the Rosicrucian movement.[37]

Bacon cultivated views of advanced learning in *De Augmentis Scientiarum,* in which he craftily combined his collective beliefs with the Rosicrucian philosophy. It was from this belief that Bacon authored *The New Atlantis*. Bacon’s Renaissance system of philosophy was believed enough in these erudite, esoteric circles to awaken the intellects of all thinking men.[38] Bacon’s renaissance Rosicrucian philosophy will be the end-time unification of religion and science that we will soon witness.

CHAPTER 61

LEGENDS OF THE HOLY GRAIL

You are a lion's cub, O Judah; you return from the prey, my son. Like a lion he crouches and lies down, like a lioness—who dares to rouse him? The scepter will not depart from Judah, nor the ruler's staff from beneath his feet, until he comes to whom it belongs and the obedience of the nations is his.

—Genesis 49:9–10

The Genesis 6 Conspiracy is as old as the Adamites; ergo, the infrastructure is just as old, deeply rooted, and battle hearty.

In its contemporaneous incantation, Freemasons believe they descended from the Templars, who, in turn, derived from furtive Rex Deus families, who, in turn, were rooted in Essene beginnings.

How was the contemporary Genesis 6 Conspiracy reborn through the crucifixion of Jesus? And how are the crucifixion and the rebirth of the Genesis 6 Conspiracy connected to the modern, misconstrued conception of the Essenes?

It is important to appreciate that this spurious conspiracy has been planned for the last 6,000 years. It has simmered with unimagined generational patience and been salted with admirable diligence. The founding members of the contemporary conspiracy confess in their writings that they have diligently and patiently plotted their improbable conspiracy over many centuries, and it is, in truth, twenty centuries old. It has been their evil practice to establish kingships and government leaders who have been indoctrinated with the Most Secret Mysteries, but who have had the True Knowledge withheld, as it is known only to the elite of the Adepts of Rex Deus. Rex Deus believes they are descendants from the dynasty of King David and are predestined by their god, Lucifer, to rule the world. Contemporary conspiracy advocates merely inherited the deep-rooted infrastructure from the old worlds we discussed in the first half of this book. The Learned Elders of Zion boldly acknowledge their true inheritance dates back to the ancient epochs.[1]

Linking Rex Deus dynastic lines from the last 2,000 years to the 6,000-year-old coup lends another fascinating if not sinister twist to the power and plausibility of forces loyal to world government. When we speak of Rex Deus, we are speaking about families that dominated the royal houses of Europe, including Britain and Scotland, through conspiring coup d'états to seize power since shortly after the death of Jesus. The murky appellation adopted by this secretive, subversive society translates as "Kings of God."[2] If Rex Deus families did not hold power through kingships, they were generally the rival alternative, causing political upheaval, whether they were part of dethroning their rivals or instigating rebellions, such as the American, French, and Russian rebellions. Absolute power is the true narcotic for Rex Deus.

Rex Deus dynastic lines generally flow through two or three source individuals, grafting into each other at particularly important intersections of history, together with other legendary, royal bloodlines from ancient Judah and the lost tribes of Israel. From whichever bloodlines one examines, essentially, Rex Deus objectives are to preserve two sacred bloodlines that are inclusive of all the other branches: the first from Moses and Aaron and then through David and Jesus, whose alleged descendants will establish the imposter kingdom of god on earth.[3] Rex Deus subsequently traces their bloodlines further back into antiquity, with even more startling bloodlines that I have reserved for the latter chapters.

The first of these astonishing and controversial bloodlines begins with the blasphemous doctrine that Jesus spawned a dynastic bloodline, even though Christianity teaches Jesus did not produce any heirs. As this common Gnostic doctrine goes, Jesus bore at least two sons by his alleged wife, Mary Magdalene, and perhaps one daughter. One son was transplanted to Britain with Joseph of Arimathea (the man who collected the dead body of Jesus and provided a tomb for him),[4] while the other immigrated to southern France with Mary Magdalene.

According to Scripture, Mary Magdalene is first introduced in Luke as one of the women Jesus cured from diseases or evil spirits; she then ministered to the needs of Jesus out of gratitude from her own private means,[5] suggesting Mary's family must have held some wealth. It was to Mary Magdalene that Jesus appeared first on the Sunday of His resurrection.[6] Mary was also one of the women who patiently and faithfully waited until the dead body of Jesus was removed from the cross and taken to the tomb owned by Joseph of Arimathea.[7] The unexplained title "Magdalene" is not defined, but according to *Unger's*, "Magdalene" was (curiously) chosen by biblical authors to distinguish Mary Magdalene from the other Marys recorded.[8] Magdalene suggests Mary came from a city on the southwest coast of Galilee.[9]

According to Frank Joseph, *Magdalene* may also be a nomative derivative directly linked to an antediluvian people who coexisted with the Atlanteans in a civilization known as Magdalenians.[10] The Magdelenians crossed the land bridge to Europe circa 14,000 B.C.E., where they became known as the Magdalenian culture, famous for its colorful Ice Age cave paintings located in France and Spain. Theosophist and occultist Lewis Spence, a prominent fellow of the Royal Anthropological Institute, a vice president of the Scottish Anthropological and Folklore Society, author of a respected translation of the *Popol Vuh*, and the author of *The Dictionary of Mythology*, and contemporary author Mary Settegast have both additionally identified the Magdalenian culture of prehistoric France with that of the Atlanteans.[11] One wonders as to the coincidence and the connections.

Gnostic writers always list Mary Magdalene first among the other Marys in the New Testament as a sign of her rank as the First Lady, the Messianic Queen.[12] Mary is also thought by Gnostics to be the alleged and unnamed disciple recorded in the book of John as "the disciple Jesus loved."[13] Gnostics believe Mary was Jesus' secret wife, the one who anointed Jesus at Bethany[14] and one who possessed secret knowledge that exceeded Peter.

It is no mystery, then, why Mary Magdalene is held in such high regard by Rex Deus and Gnostics and why she so perfectly slides into their revisionist history. Evidently, it was to this revisionist Mary Magdalene that the Templar Order secretly swore its oath, along with Bethany[15] and the anointing, where Jesus was believed in Gnostic lore to have married Mary. As the dissonant Gnostic legends indicate, the supposed sons produced from the marriage with Mary and Jesus were separated to secure their safety, ensuring the continuation of the Grail bloodline.[16] The first son of Mary Magdalene was avowed to be Jesus II. Mary and Jesus were reunited after years of separation in 36 C.E whereby Jesus II [17] was born in 37 C. E (Gardner, Bloodline, 103, 109, 115), before separating and reuniting once more in 43 C.E. leading to the birth of Josephes in 44 C.E. (Gardner, Bloodline, 115). Mary Magdalene and Jesus' sister Mary Jacob were recorded in The Acts of Magdalenas as traveling to Gaul in 44 C.E.;[18] Mary then died in 63 C.E.[19]

In 53 C.E., Jesus II was proclaimed Crown Prince in Corinth, where he received the Davidic crown,[20] the Davidum. Jesus II later traveled to Britain with Joseph of Arimathea, where, for a time, he made the mysterious Glastonbury of lore his home.[21] Joseph arrived at Glastonbury with his (adopted) Grail son in 73 C.E.[22] Likely, this was where Jesus II was indoctrinated into the Druidic Mysteries. Jesus II was believed to have remained celibate (in Essene tradition); he did not continue the Sangreal because of his celibacy.[23]

The second son, Josephes, then inherited the Grail heritage, becoming the new Davidum and dropping the "Joseph" title. He was educated in a Druidic college, settling eventually in Gaul.[24] James, a third son, was entrusted to Judas Thomas Didymus, the so-called twin brother of Jesus, while Jesus II was temporarily entrusted to Mary Magdalene, both who fled in opposite directions. Authors Tim Wallace-Murphy, Marilyn Hopkins, and Graham Simmons record that Joseph of Arimathea funded the escape from the Middle East; he accompanied one of the children of the Grail, likely to England. The child under Joseph's care, in the beginning, must have been Josephes by virtue of simple deduction, even though Joseph later traveled in England with Jesus II.[25]

The Priory of Sion insists the Holy Grail is not a cup or a chalice but rather an allegory encrypted with Rex Deus secrets,[26] a Legominism. The Grail was originally identified as *sangraal*, meaning "holy chalice." *Gra-al* is a perplexing, ancient Mesopotamian word meaning "nectar of supreme excellence" (blood), which was consumed by antediluvian gods and kings. *San Greal* was a premeditated perversion of *sangreal*, shaped as a deliberate misdirection and diabolical allegory from which Grail legends were then authored.[27] Most lay people naively believe the Grail was the chalice containing Jesus' blood collected by Joseph of Arimathea at the crucifixion, whereas in Gnosticism, Joseph collected the Messianic bloodline from the cross.

However, in Rex Deus tradition, the pure form of Grail is *San Greal*, or Royal Blood,[28] meaning "royal bloodline," and to others, *Sang Real*, again meaning "royal blood."[29] And, according to Rex Deus chronologist Laurence Gardner, the Grail always secretly represented the royal bloodline, the Messianic Sang Real of Judah,[30] and not the chalice we are all familiar with. The Priory of Sion further insists that Grail and Arthurian tales encrypt the chronology to the royal bloodline, which specifically carries the Mary Magdalene and Jesus bloodline, descending down through the Merovingian dynasty.[31]

In Priory of Sion symbolism, the Rose and Grail are synonymous. The Grail was represented in antiquity with the glyph ∨, which represented a cup, a chalice, or a vessel, which was an allegory for the woman's womb of the sacred goddess,[32] the matriarchal bloodlines of Nephilim descended from antediluvian Owl/Dragon queens. This is the same ∨ was figuratively fashioned to encode the Gnostic Grail mystery into the *Last Supper* painting, with the separation of John (Mary Magdalene) and Jesus in Da Vinci's apostate painting. Note, the painting does not contain a chalice of any sort, thereby dismissing its significance.

Grail legends encoded many prominent names from Judaic history, such as Lot, Elinant, Bron, Urien, Hebron, Pelles, Joseus, Jonas, Bran, Josephes, and of course, Galahad (which derived from *Gilead*,[33] the land of Og).[34] The largest portion of these Old Testament names eerily link directly back to Nephilim. In this new Grail line of thinking, Perceval, a direct descendant of Joseph of Arimathea, held and/or protected the Grail, or the secret of the royal bloodline,[35] at the time of Arthur. Grail literature, then, was conceived to safeguard all the secret bloodlines/descendants of Jesus, which was encoded within the literature in a form of Essene Peshur, or Legominism, and which eerily harbors disturbing metaphors connecting the Grail bloodline back to the Dragon Court and Nephilim.

Other legends hold that Alain le Gross, nephew to Joseph of Arimathea, brought the Grail to Wales, while Alain's brother, Josue, married into the Welsh kingship, spawning a new dynasty. Alain was known alternatively as Alans, Alains, Elains, and Elian; he was believed to be the first Grail guardian to Britain after Joseph of Arimathea, according to Reid. Alain became associated with a special lake, attaining a title known in Grail lore as the Rich Fisher, or Fisher King, from a dubious, ancient tradition entailing blood consumption from chalices[36] in the abominable tradition of Nephilim and Atlantis. This originated with the Mesopotamian Grail root word *gra-al*, which translated as "nectar of supreme excellence."

According to the legends, Alain's brother, Josue, inherited the Grail guardianship upon Alain's death. Alain's name pops up often as both male and female names in Grail legends such as Helain the White, a Grail hero; as Elian, prince of Ireland, who takes Lancelot's place at the Round Table; or as Elaines, the Lady of the Lake, lover to Lancelot and mother to Galahad, as well as many other nomative variations. Even the name *Lancelot*, according to Reid, derived from *L'Alan de Lot*, Alan from the Lot Valley of southwest France.[37] The Lot Valley is the same region that the Essenes, Templars, Rex Deus, Cathars, and Merovingians settled in. Lot derives from *Lot*, the nephew of Abraham, recorded in the Nephilim-infested Sodom and Gomorrah narrative. *Lot* also inexplicably shows up in the original *Camu-lot*. One wonders, were Camulot and the Lot region of France thus considered by Gnostics as the new Sodom and Gomorrah cities of light?

The Alain family, then, must have been an important bloodline of Rex Deus. Reid notes Franco Roman aristocracy mysteriously treated the families in France known as "Alains" as equals. The Alains garnered an unexplained curiosity and a dubious respect from the elite European society in the early centuries after Christ. The Alains held curious positions of great power throughout medieval Britain and France, just as the Merovingians did. However, Reid records the Alain originally migrated from Asia, noting *Alain* is a variation of *Aryan*, meaning "noble."[38] Cahill adds that the Alains were considered part of a barbarian race that overran the Roman borders, crossing the banks of the Rhine River, along with the hordes of other vandals and barbarians at the close of the fifth century,[39] suggesting the Alains were Nordic Celts/Aryans who likely first originated from Scythia.

Reid confirms the Alain people were believed descended from the Massagette region of Scythia.[40] Scythia is a region and a nation that played an ominous role in the Rex Deus chronology, the Ring Lord culture, the Grail culture, and the Dragon Court. The ancient Scythian nation included the lands south of the Danube River, by the Black Sea, and north to Transylvania and the Upper Dnieper, occupying Walachia, Moldavia, Crimea, Bessarabia, and the Russian provinces of Kherson and Podolia. Scythians lived next to the famous Sarmatians.[41]

With the forced departure of the Visigoths in southern France, the Alain clan was mysteriously granted lands in southwest Gaul, between Toulouse and the Mediterranean, the region renowned as Languedoc,[42] the Lot Valley, also home to the infamous Rennes le Chateau. The mystery does, however, resolve itself when one considers the Alain's Scythian heritage and the Rex Deus heritage were both heavily rooted in the Scythian Royal Court. The Alains must have carried an ominous (Dragon) bloodline with them from Scythia.

Even more to the point, Alaric of the Visigoths sacked Rome in 410 C.E., pillaging the treasure of Solomon not hidden by the Essenes. Otto Rahn, the Nazi occult researcher and author of the book *Crusade against the Grail,* contended that Alaric's plunder was hidden in the Cathar stronghold of Montsegur and Renne Les Chateau. Rahn believed aristocratic Cathars inherited this treasure, which included a copper scroll detailing the location of the balance of Solomon's treasure hidden by the Essenes before the temple destruction.[43] The Alains, as Fisher Kings, then inherited Alaric's part of the Solomon treasure. It is likely the Templars utilized this map in their excavations of the temple to locate the hidden Essene treasure and documents.

The marriage of Josue, brother of Alain, in Britain, did, in fact, start a new Grail/Rex Deus dynasty[44] that Grail legends sprang from and that are an integral part of the Grail legends surrounding Joseph of Arimathea and King Arthur. Josue's marriage into the Welsh dynasty supports the royal-bloodline hypothesis about the Scythian-based Alain family. The details begin to make sense once one considers the Alain family partnered as an older but equal royal bloodline with the birth of a newer, more pristine pedigree, allegedly descended from Jesus. Rex Deus and the Holy Grail represent the Royal bloodline of Jesus; the Scythian Royal Court; and also an alternate line of apostolic succession, with Joseph of Arimathea being the so-called legitimate successor to Jesus. Both the Rex Deus and the Grail traditions in the book *Rex Deus* record Joseph as the Gnostic apostolic successor to Jesus and the guardian of the Grail children,[45] which Alain then, in turn, inherited from Joseph.

With Joseph being the Grail guardian and the alternative apostolic successor, as recognized by the Celtic Christian Church, it was believed Joseph held secret knowledge the Roman Church did not.[46] This obviously included the supposed secret of Jesus' descendants and the unfounded and alleged falsehood that the Universal Church of Rome was built on the Resurrection and the divinity of Christ.

Moving on to James, a possible third son of Jesus, we learn James traveled to the historical and mystical city of Edessa with his Uncle Judas. Ian Wilson writes that Edessa was the location the historical King Lucius of Grail kingship and lore resided in and where he was likely known historically as Lucius Aelius Abgar VIII of Edessa,[47] guardian of the Edessa Shroud (Shroud of Turin). Edessa, too, was located at the home of Hermetic thought, home of the Gnostic Sabians. Note, as well, Baudoin de Bouillon, brother of Godfrois de Bouillon, one of the founders of the Knights Templar and the crowned King of Jerusalem, was appointed the Count of Edessa.[48] Baldwin le Bourg, cousin to Godfrey of Bouillon, succeeded Baldwin of Boulogne (Bouillon) as the Count of Edessa.[49] According to Baigent and Leigh, Edessa was also the home of Bogamils, the precursors to the Gnostic Cathars in France[50] that the Templars, Merovingians, Alains, Essenes, and Scythians were all closely tied to.

James was recorded as dying in Spain without a successor.[51] This, then, leaves us with Josephes to carry on the alleged royal bloodline as the Davidum. Josephes was supposedly born in 44 C.E.[52]; he grew up in southwest Gaul. Through Josephes, most royal Grail bloodlines anchor themselves. Josephes inherited the San Greal because Jesus II remained celibate and because Josephes was the second-born son. Josephes married and then begat a son named Josue, through whom the Grail line passed down.

Was this Josue brother to Alain of France? Did Josephes strategically marry into a royal Alain/Scythian house? Certainly, both were second generation after Jesus, both were inheritors to the Grail guardianship, and both begat dynastic Rex Deus kingships that appear to be the same. Was Alain then known alternatively as Josephes? Certainly, this deduction would account for the Merovingian Grail/Rex Deus connection. The famous Fisher Kings, the Merovingians, claim Josue as an important part of their priestly and royal descent.[53] Remember, Josue's brother, Alain, was the first modern Fisher King, the very same title that the Merovingians later held. The Merovingians further claimed descent from James, Joseph of Arimathea, the supposed brother of Jesus. But remember, Alain, likely son of Josephes and brother of Josue, was Joseph of Arimathea's nephew, thereby keeping both versions identical. Therefore, if Alain was indeed the son of Josephes, who was the son of Jesus, and Joseph of Arimathea was actually James, the brother of Jesus, Alain would have, in truth, been the nephew of Joseph of Arimathea and/or James, no matter how you construct the genealogy, making both Josues the same person, just as I have asserted.

This dynastic, Davidic bloodline begat by Josue from Celtic Britain was believed passed down, according to Rex Deus chronology, through King Lucius, via his daughter and sister,[54] which later helped to found the Merovingian dynasty. Even so, Merovingians claim even greater heights to their priestly and royal heritage, all designed to support their alleged rightful claims to rule.

CHAPTER 62

JOSEPH OF ARIMATHEA

> *So as evening approached, Joseph of Arimathea, a prominent member of the Council, who himself was waiting for the kingdom of God, went boldly to Pilate and asked for Jesus' body. Pilate was surprised to hear that he was already dead. Summoning the centurion, he asked him if Jesus had already died. When he learned from the centurion that it was so, he gave the body to Joseph.*
>
> —Mark 15:42–45

How did it come to pass that both the British and Scottish kingships owe their intrigue and secretive inheritance to baffling legends surrounding Joseph of Arimathea? How is Joseph related to the Essenes, Merovingians, and the secret bloodline in these legends?

Rex Deus chronologist Laurence Gardner notes that the Celtic kings claim their legendary origins came from the bloodline of Jesus,[1] just as Rex Deus has determined their ancestry derives out of Celtic Christianity.[2] The Celtic Christian Church did not accept the doctrines of the virgin birth, the

Resurrection, or the divinity of Christ.[3] Celtic Christianity was Druidism and Gnosticism at the core, hidden beneath its Christian veneer, just as the Templars and Ishmaelites were. Remember, also, that St. Bernard formally integrated the Scottish Celtic Church into his surreptitious Cistercian Gnostic Order.[4]

The most famous of the upstart Celtic Christian kings is King Arthur. Arthur and Grail legends were all commissioned by Priory of Sion families, according to Templar historians.[5] It is most likely that Grail and other Rex Deus literature of the twelfth century forward was anchored in troubadour poetry, which was invented in Gnostic/Cathar Occitania. Troubadour literature began with returning Crusaders, of which Richard the Lionheart is regarded as one of the first. Provençal poets perpetuated this particular form of poetry. It promoted wisdom and was full of initiation symbolisms and trials and tests inspired by their erotic éclat adapted from Arabic-Andalusian poetic forms and originating from Sufism, according to Booth.[6] The rose was the most popular symbol for troubadours, echoing esoteric, alchemical teachings, and of course, the symbol for the Priory of Sion and the Grail.

According to Hancock and Bauval, troubadour poetry of Occitania heavily influenced all European lyrical literature with its emphasis on exalting women to a saintly status (Isis) and on promulgating courtly love.[7] According to Dan Brown, troubadours were, in fact, servants of the Church of Mary Magdalene; they persistently sang renditions of songs to the virtue of "Our Lady," a mysterious and beautiful woman they pledged their allegiance to.[8] In this troubadour spirit, then, Joseph, Jesus, and Arthur are critically connected through alleged Rex Deus bloodlines recorded in Grail literature and songs.

Some Gnostic legends say that Joseph of Arimathea was a disciple of Jesus;[9] Scripture does the same.[10] The Gnostic gospel of Peter further states Joseph was a very close friend of Pontius Pilate.[11] Gnostic legends recant that Joseph chose to become an Essene over the two other dominant sects of Judaism of that time, the Pharisees and the Sadducees. Joseph was additionally known to be a wealthy merchant and a noble senator with an inordinate degree of power within the Jerusalem community.[12] Other accounts note Joseph was a member of the Jewish elders, the very same people who judged and sentenced Jesus to death. So, too, do supplementary, non-biblical sources record Joseph/ James as a Master Craftsman like his father and an artificer of metals[13] after the same reprobate spirit as Tubal-Cain and Cain. And it is from all these close Essene relationships with Jesus that Joseph of Arimathea transforms in troubadour, Theosophist, Gnostic, and Rex Deus lore into James the brother of Jesus and the purported true apostolic successor to Jesus.

Again, Gnostics doggedly dismiss they were merely a weird offshoot of early Christianity, but they insist that they were the foremost faction at the center of the original and pure mainstream of early Christianity before the literalists purged their interpretive factions. Gnostics contend they were the fundamental faction guiding early Christianity, where two competing factions formed early Christianity in parallel and where both claimed primacy, seeking to reinforce their poles-apart positions.[14] Even though the literalists prevailed and endeavored to wipe out the interpretive factions, one must appreciate the Gnostics would have fanatically persecuted Catholicism if they had the opportunity, for two primary religious variants cannot coexist in harmony; this will be the spark igniting the end-time genocides. Both Catholicism and Gnosticism believe the other was, and is, the imposter church of Satan! Let us then look at Gnostic apostolic succession and to James, the brother of Jesus, under this new light.

James is mentioned as a brother of Jesus in Matthew and Mark and is generally assumed to be the eldest by virtue of being listed first (Matt 13:55 and Mark 6:3). Initially, Scripture records James and his siblings as skeptics of Jesus,[15] but by the time of the Resurrection, one concludes that James was converted as a disciple, for Jesus appeared to James on the third day, immediately after appearing to the twelve disciples and the 500 followers (1 Cor 15:5–7). Certainly, John did not record James as a disciple of Jesus before the crucifixion, citing that James and his other brothers were not yet believers and followers of Jesus (John 7:2–5). However, James, his mother, and his brothers were there to choose Matthias as a replacement for Judas (Acts 1:14) after the crucifixion. This suggests James converted either just before the crucifixion or, what is more likely, after Jesus visited James after the crucifixion.

Paul considered James a disciple on a visit to Jerusalem to see Peter (Gal. 1:19). James, by that time, was considered to be one of the three pillars of the Jerusalem Church: James, Peter, and John (Gal 2:9). Most conclude that it was Jesus’ vision to James that began the motions to promote James to becoming the first church leader.[16] Eusebius quoted Clement of Alexandria when he wrote that Peter, James, and John chose James to be the first bishop of Jerusalem after the ascension of Jesus.[17] Eusebius went onto write that James became bishop sometime shortly after the death of Stephen.[18] James was also recognized by the zealots of the Law as their leader.[19] James held high distinction as the leader of the Jerusalem church when he spoke to the all the apostles and elders, receiving Paul and his Gentile beliefs (Acts 15:13–21).

Later in the book of Acts, James appears to be the church leader: “When we arrived in Jerusalem, the brothers received us warmly. The next day Paul and the rest of us went to see James and all the elders were present” (Acts 21:18–19). The book of Galatians recognized James as a pillar of the early church, as did Peter and Paul, who submitted to James’s authority.[20] James was the author of the epistle bearing his name in the New Testament,[21] again demonstrating the importance of James to the early church. Additionally, it was James who endeavored to ensure Gentile Christianity would not overwhelm Judaic Christianity with their numbers but failed due to his death and the fall of Jerusalem in 70 C.E. to the Romans.[22]

It was James the church leader who healed the wounds between the Jewish Nazorean sect and the Gentile sect of Paul, with his compromise approach recorded in the book of Acts. James ruled and entrenched the doctrine that the Gentile Christians were not bound to the host Judaic dietary laws, that Gentiles needed only to conform to abstaining from immoral sexual behavior, the consumption of meat either sacrificed to idols or strangled, and the consumption of blood.[23] Others conferred, according to Hershel Shanks, but James decided.[24]

According to Eusebius, James was surnamed “the Just” by the ancients, due to his eminent virtue.[25] James was titled “the Just” also in the Gnostic gospel of Thomas. Church writer Hegesippus wrote that James was celebrated as “the Just” because of his “Excessive Righteousness,” for he spent so much of his time praying on his knees that his knees became hard like those of camels.[26] Even Josephus called James a “just and pious” Jew,[27] and defacto denotes James as the leader of the Jerusalem church at the time when Ananus, the Sadducee high priest of Judah, exercised his authority and brought James before the Sanhedrin judges for breaking the

Law. James was then sentenced to be stoned,[28] dying in 62 C.E. by most accounts.[29]

What is most interesting, however, is that Josephus did not record James's death, only that James was sentenced to die of stoning.[30] In fact, other historical sources suggest that James did not die until much later, a contention that is at the heart of Gnostic and Theosophist lore, with James escaping Jerusalem and changing his identity to Joseph of Arimathea. Note two in the Josephus account, in truth, provides further support for this notion by acknowledging that the Sanhedrin did not have the authority to complete the sentence to execution, because they did not have the support of Albinus, the Roman curator, in the same manner that the Sanhedrin required Pontius Pilate's approval to crucify Jesus.[31]

Church records do, however, record the death of James, thus nullifying the alleged survival and escape of James from Jerusalem to resurface in England as Joseph of Arimathea. The book of Acts recorded the final meeting between James and Paul that took place in the late 50s and likely as late as 59 C.E., which placed James still in Jerusalem at this juncture and not in England as Grail legends go. Hegesippus recorded that James was martyred by being stoned to death and then thrown from the top of the temple,[32] ending this controversy.

James the Just in Gnostic and Theosophist lore survived his condemnation to spawn the Grail legends that portray him as Joseph of Arimathea. Gnostics have also recorded James holding the Essene community distinction of the title of "Joseph," as the second born of the dynastic succession, while Jesus held the Judaic and dynastic Essene title of the "David" (or Davidum). The "Joseph" was James's inherited distinction, where he became the "Divine Highness," the equivalent to the crown prince, the "Royal Highness" of today. James, then, was known within the Nazarene/Essene community as *Joseph Ha Rama-Theo*, which became known later in its phonetic translation as "Joseph of Arimathea."[33]

Other Gnostic lore records the apostle Peter as having recruited Joseph and sent him to Rome after the crucifixion, where he was able to free Christians held in bondage by the Romans. He was rewarded for those deeds by being honored and appointed to preach the Gospels in England.[34] While in Britain, Joseph/James was granted a wealth of tax-free land at Glastonbury by King Arviragus, brother to King Caractacus, the Pendragon of the Isle, whose dynasty was called the House of Camu-Lot.[35] What is more likely is that this non-biblical Joseph of Grail lore fled to England and away from Peter and Pauline Christianity for reasons we will discuss later. Joseph was then believed to have traveled to Marseilles in 35 C.E. and later to Britain and Glastonbury in 45 C.E., where he lived until he died at the age of eighty-six.[36]

According to these same legends, just before the crucifixion, Joseph used his friendship with Pilate and his influence on the Jewish elder council to broker a deal to the Jesus problem.[37] Luke backs up the assertion that Joseph was a prominent member of the Jewish council.[38] These alternative Gnostic legends suggest, as does Scripture, that Joseph owned the tomb that Jesus was buried in, but Gnostic records indicate the crucifixion took place in the garden of Gethsemane[39] and not at Golgotha, the place of the skull, as Scripture records.[40] Scripture does record that Jesus was buried in a garden beside Golgotha, but it does not record that the garden was Gethsemane.[41] Gethsemane was recorded in Scripture as the garden where Jesus was arrested.[42] The Gnostic legends also record that Joseph owned the garden of Gethsemane, as well as the tomb Jesus was buried in;[43] although Scripture only recorded that Joseph owned the tomb and not the garden.

It was in this garden allegedly owned by Joseph in Gethsemane and away from close public scrutiny that unconventional Gnostic lore recants the accepted doctrines of Jesus being crucified to His death. Joseph purportedly arranged to fake the death of Jesus and to remove him from the cross before he died.[44] Both Gnostic lore and Scripture record that Pilate was surprised at the quick death of Jesus when Joseph went to gain permission to take the body.[45] According to Gnostic lore, Jesus was healed and nursed back to health by Joseph and his followers. Then He later rejoined Mary Magdalene in France.[46] It is from Jesus' alleged survival of the crucifixion and Jesus' alleged marriage to Mary that spurious forces hope to claim world government, through His alleged descendant, the spurious, false messiah.

CHAPTER 63

SCOTA AND TEMAR

See, today I appoint you over nations and kingdoms to uproot and tear down, to destroy and overthrow, to build and to plant.

—Jeremiah 1:10

Wildly eccentric ancestral claims from the various royal houses of Europe are commonplace. Are these eccentric claims in any way connected back to the older aspects of The Genesis 6 Conspiracy? Why do these seemingly eccentric claims unaccountably meld together under Rex Deus/Grail tradition and shadowy Irish mythology? Why do Scottish kings link their history back to the Irish through the tribe of Scota?

Scota's legendary beginnings originated with her marriage to a mysterious person and into people thought to be of Israeli descent. Scota was believed to be the daughter of the famous Akenhaten, the converted, monotheistic pharaoh, father of Tutankhamun. Some traditions, however, trace Scota back to be the daughter of Smenkhare (Achencheres), brother of Akenhaten. Akenhaten was further mythologized to be either the pharaoh or the son of the pharaoh, who purportedly presided over Moses and the Israelites, thus defining his unexplained conversion to monotheism under Aten. Akenhaten was forced to abdicate his throne in favor of his cousin/brother Smenkhare; Smenkhare was later succeeded by

Tutankhamun, the famous boy pharaoh and son of Akenhaten, who changed his name from Tutankhaten at his coronation, symbolizing his renewed allegiance to the god Amun and his defacto denouncement of Aten.[1]

Akenhaten begat six daughters and one son through his wife, Nefertiti.[2] One of those daughters was named Scota. She married a man named Mils Espain,[3] also named as Gaytheius in other legends[4] and Niul in still other Rex Deus legends. Mils Espain/Gaytheius/Niul was a Black Sea prince and later the governor of Capacyront, located by the Red Sea. He was a royal Scythian, like the Alains, and his people were of some form of Israelite descent. Scota and Mils Espain bore a son in Egypt named Goidel, known variantly in legend as Gaedheal and Gael.[5]

Scota and her husband either knew Moses and the Israelites or were a lost tribe from the Exodus in some traditions, but whichever the case may be, they were forced to flee Egypt at around the same time as the Exodus, likely because of their monotheistic belief in Aten. In fact, they were noted to have fled in fear and terror from the old gods of Egypt that Akenhaten had previously suppressed.[6] All this likely suggests they fled from the oppression of Horemheb and Amun worship. Horemheb as you might recall, usurped the throne from the Armana dynasty and reestablished pantheism with Amun at the head of the pantheon, while completely banishing and outlawing any form of Aten worship.

Scota and Mils Espain fled Egypt to Scythia, then Africa, before finally settling in Spain; they were known in this particular legend at that time as *Milesians*. The Milesian descendant, Breogan, later traversed to Egypt, fought the Ethiopians, and married Scota, daughter of Pharaoh. Mils Espain variantly known also as Millessius died in Spain, but his Scythian/Egyptian descendants later conquered Ireland, offering sacrifices, and again, and not without coincidence, to Atlantis and the god Poseidon for their victory.[7] It was Scota's sons or descendants, Hyber and Hymec, that later migrated to Ireland, claiming the land for themselves, renaming the island the land of *Scota*.[8]

The paradox in these various legends is that the time between when Scota left Egypt and went to Spain and then went from Spain to Ireland spans about 800 years. Gardner explains this mystery by announcing that there were two different Scythian/Egyptian marriages with two different Scotas. The first marriage took place circa 1360 b.c.e with Scota and Niul, the prince of Scythia and governor of Capacyront of the Red Sea. The second Princess Scota, with the Irish connection, also married a Scythian prince, Galamh, and bore a son named Eire-Ahmon, who became the ancestral forbearer of the Scott kings of Ireland. It is this second and/or third Scota, daughter of Pharaoh Nekau,[9] who somehow interwove with Milesian descendants in Spain through Breogen, which begat the Irish kingdoms of Tara.

Hyber was one of the source names for Ireland, as "Ireland" was derived from *Hyber land,* which in Latin was *Hibernia* and in old English was *Iberland*, which eventually changed to *Iverland* and then Ireland. Hyber and his people brought with them the throne/stone of Akenhaten that all subsequent Irish kings were crowned upon; the Akenhaten stone (throne) became synonymous with all the Irish kings of Dalriada.[10]

The Irish heritage of Scota eventually migrated to Scotland, with Mor McErc of Dalriada as their leader in the fifth century C.E. Thirteen kings of Argyle held both the Bethel Stone and the Stone of Destiny until 843 C.E., when Kenneth McAlpin won and united the Scots with the Picts.[11] All this did was merely reunite two related but separate strains of bloodlines, as the Picts, too, were in fairy and Theosophical legend one of three branches of the mysterious Tuatha Denaan we will cover later; the Picts migrated to Scotland in 600 B.C.E.[12] The Stone of Destiny, then, is the Stone of Akenhaten's throne. It was during the Scottish migration when the two legendary stones were moved to the Scone of Abbey in 844 C.E.[13]

Ireland is additionally the land where the lost eleven tribes of Israel were whispered to have migrated after their defeat at the hands of the Assyrians around 721 B.C.E. Ireland, too, was the land that Baruch, scribe to Jeremiah, took Temar, also called Tamar, Teamhair, Tara, and Tamar-Tephi, the very famous daughter of Zedekiah, last king of Judah, after Judah's defeat and exile at the hands of the Babylonians around 589 B.C.E. It would have been logical for Jeremiah to replant the surviving direct matriarchy of the Davidic dynasty of Judah with their kin, the lost tribes of the northern kingdom of Israel.

All of Zedekiah's sons were murdered by King Nebuchadnezzar,[14] leaving only daughters to carry on the royal bloodline of David and the Messianic promise through Zedekiah. As the legends go and as Scripture records, God promised to always have someone sitting on the royal throne of the Messianic kingship spawned by David.[15] Temar, a daughter of Zedekiah, according to various legends, was transplanted to Ireland to maintain the everlasting, pure, dynastic, royal bloodline of the Messiah by intermarrying with descendants from the lost tribes of Israel that had migrated there after 721 B.C.E. and also into the bloodlines of descendants of Scota, who also claim Israelite and Scythian descent. This, then, fulfilled the promise to always maintain a seed of David on the throne of David, albeit a transplanted throne, in the exact manner that the prophet Jeremiah had prophesied in the passage introducing this chapter.[16] The daughters of Zedekiah were recorded as surviving the Babylonian genocide via Ishmael, who was also of royal blood.[17]

Jeremiah dictated God's prophesy to uproot and replant the throne of Judah in another country, along with guaranteeing that wherever Baruch escaped to, he would survive to carry out his commission (Jer. 45:4–5). What is also interesting is that Jeremiah's daughter, Hamutal, was the mother of Zedekiah,[18] meaning that Temar was the great granddaughter of Jeremiah, which would have provided even more incentive for Jeremiah to rescue the daughters of Zedekiah.

In 586 B.C.E., or shortly thereafter, Temar and the scribe of Jeremiah, Baruch, stole the Bethel Stone and took it to Ireland. Thereafter, all kings in the ancient Irish bloodline would be anointed under it. The Bethel stone is the mythic Stone of Jacob that Genesis recorded Jacob selecting to sleep upon. During Jacob's slumber, he dreamt of a ladder to heaven, from which God blessed Jacob with Abraham's Covenant. When Jacob awoke, he blessed the stone, establishing it to be a holy pillar of God's house, thus naming it *Bethel*, which means "God's house."[19] This is the place where Jacob changed his name to Israel at God's instruction (Gen. 35:9–10).

The stone now rests under the throne of England, since the English defeated the Scots in the twelfth century C.E.. In Grail allegory, the English throne is the authentic Davidic throne, where the Bethel Stone now rightfully rests. The Stone of Destiny is still held secretively in Scotland and is Akenhaten's throne/stone imported by Scota.

Temar was regarded in another legend to have married a high king of Ireland named Ard Ri Eochaid, ancestor of Ugaine Mar The Great. He was also recorded as Eochaid I of Tara, known to have married the daughter of Zedekiah in 586 B.C.E.[20] Keith Laidler noted from various legends that Temar-Tephi fled Jerusalem in 586 B.C.E. with the Bethel Stone. She was believed to have traveled the same route as her distant ancestors, the Scota of Israeli descent, did many centuries before, to Ireland, where she married an Irish king of Israeli descent. This king was believed to have been known variantly as Eochaid The Heremon, the high king of Ardath. Teamar Breagh's dynasty then kept the Bethel Stone for fifty-six kings, 1,000 years, before it went to Scotland with Mor McErc of Daldriada.[21]

The name *Tara,* as we have already noted, is anchored in a number of variants of Temar of Judah that include Temair, Teamhair, and Temuir, but its true genitive, according to the Celtic expert James Mackillop, appears to have been from *Reamhrach*, meaning "the dark one." The Milesians would appear to have renamed the site of Tara after King Eremon's (Eochaid the Heremon) queen, Tea (Temar), for it was known mysteriously as Druim Cain before Tara. *Druim* is defined as a prefix for "a high and narrow place," while *Cain* in ancient Irish was defined as "fine, good, beautiful and fair"[22] (as in "the Fair Celtic" or "the Fair Tuatha Denaan"). When the sons of Mils invaded and defeated the inhabitants, the Tuatha Denaan, the sons of Mils then combined with the Tuatha to become the modern fairy folk, the Sidhes,[23] and/or the Celts.

Tara was actually referred to as Druim Cain in the famous and definitive *Lebor Gabala, The Book of Invasions.* The biblical Cain was recorded to be the first to see Ireland in the *Lebor Gabala*, likely after he was banished from Eden and then wandered in the wilderness. The *Lebor Gabala*, for the most part, begins with the flood story at 2900 B.C.E., in the (Masonic) year of the world 1104, Anno Mundi,[24] as it was recorded in legend. All this is an uncanny coincidence in relation to the life of the biblical Cain and the fall of Satan, known as the year of light, the *Anno Lucis*, circa 4000 B.C.E., that we have already discussed.

The Irish hold that they were Israelite descendants through immigration of Israelites at the Exodus and the immigration of Israelites at the Diaspora at the hands of the Assyrians, and they claim the right to the Davidic Covenant through Temar, daughter of Zedekiah, who married into the royal bloodline of the Irish, which also claimed Israeli descent. The Irish further claim Israelite descent from Scota and Israelite descent through Scota's Scythian husband, Mils Espain. It is these ancient Grail bloodlines that the alleged son of Jesus, Josephes and then Josue, via Joseph of Arimathea, grafted into, which created the dynastic line of Arthur and later grafted into the Merovingian dynasty.

CHAPTER 64

THE KINGS OF CAMELOT

Your house and your kingdom will endure forever before me, your throne will be established forever.

—2 Samuel 7:16

Above all European royal houses of conspiracy in the early common era were the Merovingians. But how were the Merovingians linked to British Grail dynasties? And why is the connection significant?

The father of Lucius, King Coel, had a daughter, Athildes. Athildes married the French King Marcomir IV and gave birth to Clodomir IV of the Merovingian Dynasty.[1] Thus, the lineage of Anna and Joseph of Arimathea is directly linked to the Merovingian dynasty,[2] for the lineage of Lucius and Coel both descends back to Joseph of Arimathea through both Anna and Joseph of Arimathea. Additionally, this genealogy connects Merovingians to the alleged Davidic bloodlines of Israel and the Irish bloodlines of Tara.

Gilbert, Wilson, and Blackett write that Anna was the purported daughter of yet another Mary and a Joseph Barsabas known variantly as Barabbas, and or Mary was the wife of Clopas in other legends, and or Mary was also married (possibly a third time) to a Alpheus that is somehow identified with Joseph of Arimathea.[3] Anna was the wife of Beli, son of Llud. Gardner writes alternatively that Anna was the daughter of Joseph of

Arimathea and that Anna then married into the Camulot dynasty (via Beli) and began a new, great Celtic Christian dynasty,[4] which, of course, eventually produced King Arthur. Anna variantly married Gweirydd (Arviragus) and/or Llud, depending on the legend, producing Beli (Heli). These linkages spawned two Welsh kingships: Aballach and Baalad with the Avalon dynasty of Arthur and Bran The Blessed and Caradoc of the Welsh dynasty that produced King Lucius.[5] King Arviragus/Gweirydd/Llud was the brother of King Caractacus. He was the Pendragon (king) of the Isle who unexplainably granted Joseph of Arimathea the land at Glastonbury. Arviragus's dynasty became famous as the House of *Camulot*, meaning "curved light"; it was later romantically corrupted to "Camelot."[6]

Bran Llyr, from the Lucius dynasty, was the brother-in-law to Joseph of Arimathea. Bran became the first Fisher King of Wales before Alain.[7] Bran led his clan with the aid of the mysterious Alain and Petrus families, which is why Alain likely inherited the Fisher King title. All the Grail knights, then, descended from Bran, Alain, and the Petrus families.[8]

The brother to Bran the Blessed was King Leir or Llyr, the father of Branwen;[9] although, other legends cite Manwydan as brother to Bran, with Branwen being sister to Bran. Other legends cite Bran Llyr to be the (Nephilim) son of Llyr, the supernatural king of the sea (Atlantis) and the son of a mortal woman named Penaardun. Bran was not a normal mortal, according to legend, just as his mythical father, Llyr, was not a normal mortal. Bran was a supernatural giant of such immense proportions that normal humans appeared as dwarfs alongside him, which somehow connects through legends Arthur, the Grail, and Rex Deus back to giants/Nephilim and Atlantis. Connecting the Grail, Arthur, and Rex Deus back to Nephilim and Atlantis is not a coincidence. Rather, this is a direct metaphorical reference to their ancestors. Hence, Bran's alternative names were Bron and Hebron,[10] home of the Anakite/Nephilim giants that Israel eradicated from the Promised Land.

The House of Leir (Llyr), of the famous King Lear of Shakespeare, made up the second and third branches of the Welsh dynastic kingships. The name *Llyr* derived from the sea god Llyr (Poseidon). Wales was divided into the three kingdoms of Gwynedd, Dyfedd, and Powys, with Gwynedd being the land of magic[11] and fairies, which I will return to later.

Arthur and his Merovingian, royal cousins who ruled France constituted the famous Sangreal Order of the Round Table. This order was dedicated as Guardians to the Grail Secrets.[12] The Grail kingship of the Briton bloodline remained loyal and respectful to the French Merovingian dynasty until the Merovingian dynasty collapsed around 751 C.E. This was most evident in Brittany, the land conquered by Arthur, when the British Dragon Court fell to the Saxons in England after 650 C.E. The descendants and subjects of Arthur in Brittany felt obliged to accept the overlordship of the Frankish descendants of Clovis, the Merovingians, because of their joint, royal lineage with the Briton Dragon Court.[13] They later did the same through the invasion by the Norse Rex Deus that we covered previously.

CHAPTER 65

THE MEROVINGIANS

Command certain men not to teach false doctrines any longer, nor devote themselves to myths and endless genealogies.

—1 Timothy 1:3

Why is the Merovingian dynasty held up to be the most important Dark Age dynasty to The Genesis 6 Conspiracy? What made the Merovingian dynasty so mysterious?

Merovingians not only derive from the alleged descendants of Jesus but also celebrate their royal bloodlines as a marriage of the Davidic/Jesus dynasty with another branch of royal Israelite blood, connecting them to Saul of the Benjamites. Priory of Sion records noted Merovingian origins connect back to a lost tribe of Benjamin that migrated to Greece and then to Germany. Priory records indicate this lost tribe from Benjamin intermarried with a descendant of Jesus and Mary Magdalene, intentionally creating the royal Merovingian dynasty.[1] Merovingians believed they were the ordained unification of two houses of royal bloodlines descending from Israel. These Israelite houses would then be the house of Benjamin (Saul) and the house of Judah (David).

Another genealogical source for the Merovingians has them descending not from Jesus, but from James, the brother of Jesus. The mystery is not significant, except that both are descendants in the royal bloodline of David, serving the same purpose for Rex Deus and their heretical conspiracy. And, just as I covered previously, James was thought to be Joseph of Arimathea in some traditions.[2]

The genesis of the joint Grail and Merovingian dynasties began with King Lucius Siluria; he was king of the Britons beginning in 180 C.E. Britain was largely evangelized with Celtic Christianity under the reign of Lucius, after he was baptized a Christian under Pope Eleuthenus.[3] King Lucius's genealogy descends back to King Llud of 72 B.C.E., the last king of the British Celts before the Romans.[4] So, then, Llud and Anna begat Beli, which, in turn, produced Bran Llyr, who became Joseph of Arimathea's brother-in-law through King Cole that produced King Lucius in 180 C.E. This was the parallel Grail dynasty to that of Arthur. King Lucius's daughter, Eurgen, then married two distinct Davidic successions through James (Joseph of Arimathea).

Gardner recorded the second Davidic succession derived through Jesus when Eurgen married Aminadab, the great grandson of Jesus and Mary Magdalene through Josue. Faramund, of the Merovingian dynasty, was documented as a direct Messianic successor descended from Jesus through Aminadab, who married Eurgen. They begat Catheloys, who begat Manael, who begat Titurel, who begat Boaz, who begat Frotmond, who begat Faramund,[5] which produced the Merovingian dynasty. One wonders, did this Merovingian Titurel hold any significance chronologically or figuratively with Wolfram Eshenbach's work *Titurel, The Keepers of the Message*?

This enigmatic dynasty is believed to have adopted its appellation from Morovech/Merovech, son of King Clodiu, who was also recorded as Moroveus, father of Childeric I, ruler of the Salian Franks.[6] Meroveus was proclaimed the guardian of the Franks in 448 C.E. at Tournai. Clovis, who became king in 481 C.E., was the most prominent of the Merovingian kings and thus reckoned to be the founder of the united French monarchy.[7] The Franks resided south of the Rhine River, and the Salians dwelled north of the Rhine. Clovis became king of the Salian Franks in 481 C.E.,[8] uniting all of the Franks in 496 C.E., which likely is why Clovis was reckoned as the founder of the Merovingian dynasty.[9] In 507 C.E., Clovis and the Bergundians conquered Aquitaine and Languedoc, but Clovis and his Salian Franks were unable to acquire Septmania or Narbonne from the Visigoths for two more centuries.[10]

Morovech's mother was mythologized to have been impregnated by a Quinataur, a mythical creature possessing characteristics like a bull. According to Laidler, the Quinataur was a similar mythological being to the Minotaur, both of which were monsters that possessed the head of a bull,[11] which suggests connections to the cult of the bull, the sacred animal and religion of Poseidon,[12] and to the bull cult of Canaan, which is also connected to the Minotaur. Morovech's mother was believed impregnated by King Clodiu simultaneously with the Quinataur.

Matriarchal bloodlines are quintessential in Grail, Rex Deus, Ring, Fairy, and Dragon bloodlines. All the female heirs were very carefully selected from the true Albi-Gens/Grail bloodline.[13] The Quinataur was merely Legomin language concealing the truth.

The bull holds an indelible significance to the Benjamites, perhaps suggesting Morovech bound two bloodlines through his veins,[14] with the Quinataur representing the bull cult bloodlines of Atlantis, Nephilim, fairies, and the Ring Lords, along with Benjamite traditions. This additionally confirms that the rebellious Benjamites of Scripture,[15] who were driven from Israel, were, in fact, dominated by the rebellious counter cult and religion of the bull, the Minotaur cult of Molech, Atlantis, and Nephilim. Clearly, though, the allegory was suggesting two distinct bloodlines. Likely both joint Israelite origins were at play in Morovech's bloodline, but one of the bloodlines was felt necessary to conceal, through allegory, things concerning the Dragon Court. The Quinataur was variantly known as a sea serpent or dragon, which also somehow ties this guarded bloodline back to Atlantis and Nephilim.

The royal, matriarchal lineage of the Merovingians, as noted by Gardner, descended not coincidently from the Sicambriums through Queen Cambra. The Sicambriums were originally from the mysterious nation of Scythia, north of the Black Sea,[16] just as the Alains were from the Black Sea area. The Sicambriums were a Celtic/Teutonic/Aryan tribe that was also believed to have carried high concentrations of Israelite bloodlines stemming from wandering Benjamites.[17] These details mesh neatly with the

Priory's belief that a branch of the Merovingian dynasty originated with a lost tribe from Benjamin that first migrated to Greece and then Germany, becoming the people identified as the Sicambrium Franks, the people that later intermarried with a descendant of Mary Magdalene and Jesus.[18] The Sicambrium queen who married the descendant was Argotta of the Sicambriums; she married the Fisher King Faramond, who reigned from 419–430 C.E.[19]

According to Keith Laidler, the Merovingians seem to have appeared royally mature before the Sicambrium Franks crossed the Rhine, because their legacy almost came about suddenly, fully formed, and widely accepted as royal; they were almost instantaneously exalted with a most mysterious pedigree.[20] No doubt this mysterious pedigree derived from all their diverse and alleged Messianic and royal bloodlines. At that time, there would not have been any kingships that held a competitive pedigree other than the Grail kingships of England.

As we have already noted, Faramund was the grandson of Boaz Anfortas, a direct descendant of Aminadbad, who was the son of Josue, son of Josephes, son of Jesus. It was Faramund and Argotta that begat Clodiu, who begat Meroveus, who begat Childeric, who begat Clovus, the founder of the official Merovingian dynasty.[21] This background lends itself harmoniously with the Merovingians' belief they were descended from Jesus, as well as others holding royal pedigrees of the highest and most royal orders.

The Fisher Kings, the Merovingians, were a numinous dynasty mythologized to have possessed mystical power to communicate with animals, manipulate the weather, and heal the sick by the touching of hands, just as Jesus did.[22] They wore their hair very long, never cutting it, in the tradition of the scriptural Israeli Nazarites,[23] the most famous of whom was Samson,[24] who the Merovingians and Gnostics held in curiously high esteem. Laidler further notes that all of the Merovingians possessed a curious red, cross-shaped birthmark located either above the heart or between the shoulder blades,[25] representing their true heritage. Merovingians were sorcerer kings in the same spirit as King Solomon, with his judgment and wisdom, as well as his (alleged) prowess as a (Masonic) mystical magician in the Ring Lord tradition.[26] The Merovingian kings were extravagant polygamists after the spirit of the pharaohs, David, the Nephilim, Lamech, and of course, Solomon.[27]

The Roman Church overlooked all of those violations and numinous powers, according to Laidler, for the Merovingians were held in such high regard (fear) by the Mother Church that the Merovingians became known to be "mysterious."[28] The violations also were ostensibly overlooked because of (alleged, false) knowledge of Jesus' survival from the crucifixion and of the (alleged) heirs Jesus spawned thereof, which produced the various Grail kingships.

Between the fifth and eighth centuries C.E., Gardner notes the Merovingian kings regarded their bloodlines as being so pure that they could not be ennobled by any match. Understandably, the Catholic Church despised the Merovingians and perpetually plotted in secrecy to overthrow them, finally succeeding in 750 C.E. It also explains the Inquisitions, wars, and persecutions of the Cathars and other Gnostics, who also held many of these so-called truths, as well as the Templars, whom the Catholic Church subsequently destroyed. The Cathars were fully conversant with the Grail and Ring culture, fondly referring to the false messianic bloodline as "the Shining Ones of the Elven Race."[29]

The mysterious Merovingian kings were exalted as Priest Kings or Shepherd Kings (Fisher Kings), servants of the people[30] in the Gnostic tradition; they obviously inherited the title from the Alain family. To this day, they have many modern heirs who claim royal descent from the Merovingians, including the Hapsburg/Lorraine family, the Plantards, the Luxembourgs, the Sinclairs,[31] and Plantagenets, all of whom are Rex Deus. To this end, the Plantards received their surname that means "ardently flowering shoot" while they were settling in the Rennes-le-Chateau district of southern France.[32]

Many French and English monarchies carried the Plantagenet name between 1100 and 1600. None of them are more pertinent to this cause than the Plantagents of Normandy. In fact, the Plantards secretly descended from the last surviving Merovingian son of Dagobert, Sigisbert IV; he was safely housed away from the reach of the Roman Catholic Church in southern France. Sigisbert's son, Theoderic, married Alda, producing the famous Guillen Gellone.[33]

In 1151 the empress widow Mathilda of Germany, married the Count of Anjou, Geoffrey Plantagenet. King Louis VII of France, under the watchful eye of his wife, Eleanor of Aquitaine, gifted the Duchy of Normandy to Henry Plantagenet, the son of Mathilda and Geoffrey, as an act of diplomacy. In 1152, the Council of Beaugency annulled the marriage between King Louis and Eleanor, and Eleanor then married Henry Tudor, bringing with her a dowry of almost half the territory of what is France today. (Keep in mind that Henry held legitimate rights to the throne of England through his mother.) By 1154, Henry Plantagenet inherited the throne of England. Eleanor then had her two daughters engaged to Henry's two sons, Henry the Younger and Richard the Lionheart.[34]

The English dynasty descending from the Rex Deus Normans William the Conqueror and Henry Plantagenet ultimately then produced King Edward II of England, who fought Bruce at Bannockburn. Edward's surname was also Plantagenet,[35] of Anjou. The Norman kings gave way to the Plantagenet dynasty during the reign of Richard the Lionheart. Richard was very likely a member of the Templars, if not a Templar Master. He never hesitated to don the Templar uniform and was known to regularly wear Templar garments.[36]

The Plantagenet of Anjou was a junior offshoot of the Royal Picte, the Sidhe of Anjou;[37] the Picts of Scotland were the infamous third race of the Tuatha Denaan. Both Henry Anjou and Henry II superseded the Norman line in 1154, for Henry's mother had married Count Geoffrey Plantagenet of Anjou.[38] The latter part of the English Plantagenet dynasty and its reigning king of that time, Richard III, were usurped from power in 1485 by Henry VII, which then established the (non Rex Deus) house of Tudor.[39] Richard III, not coincidently, was another king portrayed by Shakespeare in the play of the same name.

Shakespeare's tragedy *Henry VII* (Plantagenet) contained the Hebrew-based Grail legend that Cain was slain (possibly by Lamech) at Damascus.[40] This location derives from Genesis, where Cain migrated to live in the land of Nod, East of Eden.[41] This is the Damascus described by the prophet Amos, where the king of wickedness (Cain) reigned in Beth Eden.[42] All this was known in Rex Deus lore, which Shakespeare obviously was conversant with.[43] "East of Eden" remains to this day an allegory of rebellion and things done contrary to God's ways. Add to this Legominism spirit the fact that Francis Bacon was a generous patron of Shakespeare and that Shakespeare's literature is inexplicably saturated with troubadour themes, imageries, and characters. Indeed, according to Booth, Hamlet and Ophelia descended from the troubadours.[44] Shakespeare had extensive knowledge about ancient poets and authors and was intimate with the antediluvian epoch and all its secrets. In fact, Shakespeare considered the works of Plutarch his "storehouse of learned knowledge." Shakespeare owes his outlook on classical history and many of his most famous characters and plots to Plutarch.[45]

Shakespeare was influenced by Ovid, the opulent Roman poet, circa 42 B.C.E. to 16 C.E. Ovid was the author of 250 stories of Greek and Roman mythology that included these Nephilim: Deucalion and Pyrrha, Phaethon, Theseus, Hercules, Adonis, and Orpheus. Ovid further authored *Heroides*, the love letters of the women of the Heroic Age to their (Nephilim) lovers/husbands.[46] Augustus expelled Ovid from Rome after he completed his opus, *Metamorphoses*, a collection of stories that knitted together tales of the beginning with the Primeval Chaos; early, prehistoric life; the Titan rebellion; and Caesar transforming into a star,[47] just as Osiris did. None of this is coincidence.

Swinging back around to older Frankish genealogy, the first king of Septmania was Theoderic, known in Grail lore as *Aymery*. He was a Jew recognized as a seed of David and was believed a Merovingian.[48] The Carolingian, King Pepin the Short, in 768 C.E., permitted the Septimanian Jewish kingdom established within the territory of Burgundy. This Jewish state was created, no doubt, to encourage the succeeding heir to the Merovingian dynasty that was toppled in 751 C.E. Septmania functioned as a semi-autonomous state, and even though it was geographically part of France, it was politically aligned with northern Spain, with the Count of Toulouse as its overlord. This kingdom included the constituency of Languedoc[49] and was home to the Templars, Essenes, Cathars, Alains, Gnostics, and Rex Deus.

Theodoric's son, the famous Guillen de Gellone, rose to prominence as both a Jew and a Merovingian of royal blood.[50] As discussed previously, this lineage became recognized as the Plantard family. During this period, Pope Stephan and the Caliph of Baghdad allegedly acknowledged Prince Guillen De Gellone as a true bloodline successor from the Royal House of

Judah, King David. This is the famous Guillen, ancestor of Godfrois the Templar, who established the Judaic Academy at Gellone, known as St. Guilhelm at Gellone,[51] where St. Bernard studied the Jerusalem scrolls.

We have already learned that the *Dossier Secrets of the Priory of Sion* refers to the Merovingians descending from Benjamite blood. Adding to this unexplained connection is the date December 23, for it was sacred to both the tribe of Benjamin and the Merovingians; it was the feast day of Dagobert.[52] After the Benjamite/Israeli war over Belial worship (Satan),[53] many Benjamites escaped into exile in Greece[54] (Scythia). This connects well with another tradition citing Merovingian descent from the mixing of Trojan blood with that of Israelite exiles, for it certainly places them in the correct geographical location for such a thing to occur.[55] Benjamite exiles migrated to Greece/Scythia, then up the Danube River and Rhine River, where they intermarried with Sicambrium Franks,[56] neatly wrapping all these assorted Merovingian legends into a cohesive legacy.

Godfrois VI of Templar fame was also from Merovingian descent,[57] and therefore of Benjaminite descent, along with his other disparate pedigrees. Joshua allocated Jerusalem to be a Benjaminite birthright,[58] which is why Templar founders, descendants of the Merovingians, positioned themselves to become the kings of Jerusalem after the Crusade liberated the city.

Capping all this off is the tradition that according to Gnostic writers, Mary Magdalene was also of Benjamite, royal descent.[59] Paul Blezard and Peter Blake write that Mary Magdalene was born to Syrus the Jairus, chief priest at Capernaum, while her mother, Eucharias, was related to the Hasmonians, the descendants of the Maccabees, the royalty of Israel of that time.[60] The Maccabees/Hasmonians reigned from 165 to 37 B.C.E., when they were overthrown by Herod and the Romans. It was the Maccabees who ousted the Zadokite/Essene priests and Davidic lineage from Jerusalem and the temple, preventing the Zadokites from succeeding to the high priesthood of the temple.[61] No doubt the Maccabees saw the Zadokite priesthood as a possible threat and alternative to the Jerusalem monarchy.

Gardner writes that Mary, indeed, was of high Hasmonian stock and was designated the *Magdal-eder*, the Watch Tower of the flock,[62] which no doubt answers the mystery from the spurious perspective about her last name. Gardner goes on to write that Mary the Magdal-eder, the guardian of the flock, was represented in tarot cards by the tower known as “the Mary

Arcana."[63] Gardner believes Mary was a Gnostic Essene priestess who anointed Jesus as Messiah in 33 C.E. at Bethany.[64] Gardner also believes that Jesus and Mary were married at Bethany.[65] Scripture does not specifically record Mary Magdalene anointing Jesus at Bethany. Matthew and Mark do not provide any names for this woman, while John does cite Mary, but not "Mary Magdalene," as she is generally distinguished in Scripture. (See Matt. 26:6; Mark 14:1; and John 12:1–3.)

Gardner also states that Mary was always associated with wisdom (Sophia) and symbolized by the sun, moon, and a halo of stars,[66] just as the Mary apparition of Medjugoria is depicted, in the forged image of the woman of Revelation 12. The point to all this is simply that through the genealogy of Jesus and the purported royal priestess Mary Magdalene, the royal Benjamite bloodline was allegedly also inserted into the Merovingian bloodline.

Pope Zachary toppled the Merovingian dynasty in 751 C.E. and replaced it with his own chosen alternative dynasty[67] that was designed to be loyal to Catholicism and not Gnosticism. Childeric III was to succeed Charles Martel, but Childeric was thrown into jail and died there four years later, Charles's illegitimate son, Pepin the Short, succeeded to the French throne.[68]

After the fall of the Merovingian dynasty, no heirs were believed to have survived. However, Priory records indicate that there was a surviving heir saved from papal assassination named Sigisbert, son of Dagobert, who intermingled through marriage with other surviving Merovingian bloodlines and the Frankish Royal Lineage descending from Guillem de Gellone, the grandfather of Godfrois de Bouillon,[69] founder of the Knights Templar. Not only was Godfrois a Merovingian descendant through these bloodlines, but also he was a descendant of Lonhengrin, the famous Swan Knight and son of Parzival from Arthurian and Grail lore,[70] connecting the Grail bloodline back into the modern Templar and Merovingian mix.

Godfrois was a founder of the Templars, the Priory of Sion, and a member of Rex Deus, specifically of Merovingian descent. He was, therefore, not coincidentally crowned, but he was crowned with what was believed due biblical Benjamite inheritance, as recorded in Joshua, as the king of Jerusalem when the Crusaders retook Jerusalem in the name of Christianity,[71] all because of Godfrois's purported Merovingian and

Benjamite bloodlines through Guillem de Gellone. Other Templar writers noted that Godfrois accepted the title of Champion of the Holy Sepulcher in 1099 C.E., but turned down the title of King of Jerusalem. Godefrois died one year later, but his brother, Baudoin, the Count of Edessa (the ancient home of the Cathars), was later crowned King of Jerusalem in 1118 C.E. The title later fell to another Rex Deus member, the Count Foulques of Anjou (Plantagenet), after Baudoin.[72]

The title “King of Jerusalem” is an ancient Rex Deus title of legacy and inheritance that claims the physical and literal rights to Jerusalem. The king of Spain currently holds this title. This Rex Deus title will once more be claimed in the last days of this age by the Rex Deus Antichrist, when he establishes himself as god in the holy temple of Jerusalem, the abomination that causes desolation.

CHAPTER 66

THE TROJANS

> *The sons of Japheth: Gomer, Magog, Madai, Javan, Tubal, Meshech and Tiras.*
>
> —Genesis 10:2 and 1 Chronicles 1:5

Does the house of Camelot and Morovech make any eccentric ancestral claims that link them back to prehistory and the Nephilim?

The Merovingians were considered successors from the first race of kings of France. The name *France* originated with the first king of the Franks, Francio, a king mythologized as descending from Noah.[1]

Francio's race was believed to have migrated from Troy, in northwest Turkey, bringing their branch of royal blood to Gaul. The Trojans settled in the districts that are now called Troyes and Paris, naming these cities after their home and their Greek hero who started the famous Trojan War over Helen.[2] One wonders whether or not the story of Helen of Troy was an ancient form of Rex Deus/Dragon literature in the same spirit as Grail and Shakespearian literature and Ovid's *Heroides*.[3]

Not coincidently, the British, too, believe in ancient legends linking their heritage back to Troy. These legends indicate that ancient Britons migrated from Troy, from tribes led by a Trojan hero named Britu,[4] one of the many nomatives from which *Britain* derived. Furthermore, other legends suggest London's Celtic name from antiquity was *Lloegress*, which owned an even more mystical name dating even further back into antiquity, documented as *Troja Newydd*, or New Troy.[5]

According to the medieval historian and Grail author/chronologist Geoffrey of Monmouth, Brutus of Troy was the grandson of Aeneus, founder of the Romans in Greek mythology. Brutus was the hero of legend who rebelled against the Greeks three generations after the fall of Troy, escaping the wrath of the Greeks by sailing with his people past the Pillars of Hercules to an island known today as Britain.[6] They freed Britain from a race of giants led by Gog, Magog, and Albion, who were identified and linked back to the Greek Titans by Geoffrey Monmouth.[7] *Gog* is known to many as a translation or synonym for “giant.”

Brutus and his victorious followers settled along the banks of the Thames River, naming it *Troia Nova* (New Troy), or Trinovantum.[8] Brutus’s ancient kingdom of Britain became identified as *Albion,*[9] likely in honor of the giant/ Nephilim king. Albion is the earliest name by which Britain was known, and the name was used by Aristotle.[10] It is likely that refugee British giants married into Brutus’s Celtic progeny, which helps to answer Neneneius’s claims. Nenneius concluded Britains were descended from Brutus, citing a genealogy that traced back through Aeneus; to Javan; and to his father, Japheth,[11] son of Noah.

Ancient Welsh legends also record three waves of Trojan Khymry immigration that were made up first of the tribe of Cymrey. The second invasion came from the tribe of the Lloegrians, and the third invasion derived from the Brython tribe of Llydaw. All three were of the same language, culture, and race. *Lloegres* was the ancient appellation for southern and central England, while *Cymrey* was the name given for Wales, northern England, Cornwall, and the Scottish border region. After the death of Brutus, Britain split into three kingdoms under the rule of his three sons. The names of those three kingdoms became known as Lloegres, Cymry, and Albyne.[12]

Connecting all this together, then, we understand that the area of northwest Turkey, the region of Troy, was known in antiquity as *Galatia.*[13] Note additionally that the Black Sea region is the originating home of the Celts, according to historians, and home of the Scythians and Sarmatians. The Greeks knew the Celts as *Keltoi* or *Galatia*, while the Romans knew the Celts as a tall, “fair-skinned” (fairy) people.[14] The Romans, in a similar manner as with the Greeks, also knew the Celts as the Celtae and Galatai. Julius Caesar, in *De Bello Gallico*, referred to the Celts first as Gauls.[15]

Celt appears to have originated with the Celts, for they referred to themselves in their own language as Celts. Some scholars think *Celt* derived from the root *kel*, the Old Irish celim, meaning "hidden," suggesting they were the hidden people or people that concealed things. *Celt*, in another version, is thought to have derived from the European root *quel*, meaning "elevated," which then evolved to Old Irish as *Celthe*. The Celts regarded themselves as the elevated or noble race.[16]

The noble Celt was a blond, blue-eyed warrior (from the Norse stock), while the Irish, British, Welsh, and Scottish noble Celt had red hair and pale green eyes from Scythian descent. Both possessed strikingly similar characteristics to the Tuatha Denaan and fairies[17] and identical descriptions to those provided for Atlanteans in the first half of this book.

Galatea translates as "milky white," just as Nephilim had milky white, rough skin. In truth, Greek writers often commented on the milky white skin of the Celts.[18] Thus the noble Celts were fair-skinned, with blond or red hair and blue or green eyes, characteristics that Hitler and the Nazis would later ascribe to their new master race of Nordic Aryans, the New Man.

The Celts occupied Ireland, Scotland, England, France, Germany, Spain, and other parts of Europe during the empire of Rome. The Celts of Britain, Ireland, Scotland, and Wales, in part, all descended from Galatia, the Trojans, just as the Franks of Gaul did. The Celts of Galatia were the very same people to whom Paul preached.[19] Both the Grail kingships of England and France were mysteriously embedded in Celtic, Scythian, and Trojan mythology and ancestry.

Even more intriguing is that Berosus cited a giant named Celtes (Celt), who fathered a giantess daughter named Galtea, who mothered a giant son named Gelathes.[20] Appianos of Alexandria, circa 160 C.E., wrote regarding two kings, Keltos and Galas, the founders of the Celts, who were the progeny of the cyclopes, Polyphemus and his wife, Galatea. Dionysius of Halicarnassus, circa first century B.C.E., recorded the story of Keltos being the son of Hercules and his consort, Asterope, the daughter of Atlas, which is very similar to Diodorus Siculus's account, circa 60–30 B.C.E., where the

Celts originated with Galates, whose parents were Hercules and a daughter of the king of Gaul.[21]

Scythia, too, has it name linked in lore with giants. Again, let us not forget that King Og, according to Josephus and Scripture, was the king of Gilead and Gaulantis,[22] which sets one to wondering about the connections between Og and Celts. All this Legomin mythology is just too coincidental not to be connected chronologically with Nephilim and Aryans, including the Rex Deus bloodlines of the Grail kingships.

Did the Celts (Trojans) that settled Britain merely follow in the footsteps of their forefathers, giants who settled in Britain led by Albion, Gog, and Magog? Did other refugee Nephilim also escape to Britain when they were pushed out of the Mediterranean? Gog, Magog, and their counterparts— were they the giants of English legend that were likely the Gyges of Greek mythology? The answers are probably "yes," according to *The Encyclopedia Americana*. Titans were famous as the Gyges, which we discussed in the first half of this book and which were typical names for kings in northwest Assyria,[23] the Black Sea region of the Trojans.

Moreover, Magog, Gog, and Javan were all sons of Japheth (Greece/ Iapeth) who settled Turkey and Greece, according to the Bible.[24] Also understand that the Scythians of Greece and the Black Sea region, according to Scripture, descended from Magog and Gog, giants. Remember, too, the Greeks descended from Japheth and Javan, the patriarchs that Nenneius cited, whereby British genealogical origins ran through Brutus to Javan and Japheth. Finally, consider that the Benjamites, after the Belial (Satan) war, migrated to Scythia and formed part of the Merovingian bloodline, which grafted itself into the Celtic/British/Welsh Grail dynasties.

Therefore, appreciate that tantalizing French claims to the same Rex Deus/Dragon Court heritage are not so fantastic when considered alongside the British claims, for they are likely one and the same claim. In fact, an Italian monk and chronologist, Annius of Viterbo (1432–1502 C.E.), as fantastic as it might first sound, asserted that Noah was a giant. Annius further created a complete genealogy from Noah, Japheth, Ham, and Shem, linking them with the first kings of the Celtic/Frankish Gauls, which founded most of the French nobility.[25]

All this genealogical voodoo has been cleverly encoded into all forms of Rex Deus cultural arts and literature of every form, including operas, fairy tales, Shakespearean literature, and Grail and Ring legends to delude a future generation.

CHAPTER 67

THE HOUSE OF STUART

> *Have nothing to do with godless myths and old wives tales, rather train yourself to be godly.*
>
> **—1 Timothy 4:7**

All this Celtic Christian, royal mythology comprising French, British, Welsh, Scottish, and Irish genealogies eventually came together in one famous royal house, the Stuart dynasty.[1] Therefore, what is the undisclosed importance of the connection of all these mythical bloodlines within the House of Stuart to The Genesis 6 Conspiracy?

The Stuart dynasty descends back to 1296, to the crowning of Robert the Bruce, the famous Rex Deus[2] protectorate of the refugee Knights Templar. When Robert the Bruce failed to produce a son, his daughter’s son founded the Stuart dynasty, naming no less than eight kings after James the brother of Jesus.[3]

The Rex Deus House of Stuart holds a very special place in Rex Deus history, as well as in the future plans of Rex Deus. The Stuart dynasty was one of the longest-reigning European dynasties, nearly 300 years. It emerged as the primary successor to the Grail/Ring Lord culture and was the most prominent and influential dynasty subsequent to the Merovingians.[4]

According to Baigent and Leigh, the Stuart designation derived from the Shenk, the family name of the Stauffenbergs that descended from the German Hohenstauffen dynasty, evolving from a court title, steward, meaning "Cup-Bearer" (Grail) in one variant of its application,[5] all in the spirit of Baal, the Cup-Bearer for the god El.[6] The Stauffenberg clans were cup-bearers for the Counts of Zollen.[7] One further wonders at the relationship between Sargon the Great of Kish and descendant of Nimrod, who was the Cup-Bearer from 2300 B.C.E.[8] Cup-bearers are kings in waiting.[9] One wonders, could this be Legominism for the Antichrist in waiting? It was the mystique of the Hohenstauffen emperors and, in particular, Fredrich II and the thirteenth-century C.E. epic *Nibelungenlied* that sprang the foundation for Wolfram Von Eschenbach's Grail enterprises and Wagner's *Ring*.[10]

The Stuarts united the Scottish and English crowns in 1603, after the death of Elizabeth I, inheriting the former, parallel Norman and Plantagenet Rex Deus/Dragon Court crown derived from William the Conqueror in 1066. Remember, the alleged Rex Deus crown was usurped by the Tudors and Henry VII. Elizabeth I never married; she did not produce an heir, so the crown passed to the son of her archrival, Mary Queen of Scots. This was James VI, king of Scotland since 1567; he became renowned as James I of England. Now, James I of England was a Freemason,[11] just as all the Scottish kings after Bruce were likely Freemasons.

James II inherited the throne from Charles II in 1680. He was Charles's Catholic brother, who was driven from the throne in 1688 by Parliament and replaced by the Protestant William and Mary of Orange. Mary, and then Anne, were Protestant Stuarts. James II then courted King Louis XIV of France, raising an army of Irish Catholics, which was soundly defeated at the Battle of Boyne in 1690. This was the beginning of the Jacobite movement. Continental Masonry denoting European, Central American, and South American Freemasonry then arrived in France in 1688, with James II and the Jacobites. Freemasonry consequently expanded rapidly within France until 1789 and the French Revolution.[12] Queen Anne of Orange was the last of the Stuarts to reign over England and Scotland. She bore no heirs and, therefore, was replaced in 1714 by Parliament with her German cousin, The Elector, George of Hanover,[13] simply because he was Protestant. The Hanovers were not considered Stuarts or Rex Deus.

The year 1707 brought forth the famous treaty that created a new entity, the United Kingdom of Great Britain. The entity was conceived in part because England believed a United Kingdom would prevent Scotland from being employed as a base for future Stuart countercoups. This was thought about in Catholic terms, but after 1714, with the death of Queen Anne, it served as an endeavor to prevent or crush any Stuart countercoups, Catholic or Protestant. Scotland’s last parliamentary sitting indelibly marked the end of the Scottish Feudal Order, the “Bodie Politicke” that began with Robert the Bruce.[14]

Catholic Jacobite support passed on to James the Pretender when George became King of England. James was supported by the Earl of Mar, with a 10,000-man army. The Duke of Argyle defeated James the Pretender and the Earl of Mar at Sheriffmuir in 1715, sending James back into exile in France in 1716. There he remained until his death.

In 1742, England found herself at war again with France and Spain. Bonnie Prince Charlie, son of James the Pretender, was then activated by France, for the French saw a rare opportunity to deliver her ancient rival a crushing blow, once and for all times, by defeating England through Charlie and reinstating the Stuarts onto the English throne. Unfortunately for Bonnie Prince Charlie, French support stalled after the French fleet was lost off the English coast due to a storm, but Bonnie Prince Charlie pressed on and was soundly defeated in 1745.[15]

The establishment of the Royal House of Stuart thereby unified two distinct Rex Deus bloodlines containing Davidic and Jesus bloodlines in marriage, through reuniting the Celtic kings of Britain with Merovingian descendants. The dynastic avenue enabling Merovingian dynastic survival in Scotland came about just after the fall of the Merovingian dynasty, with the binding treaty struck between King Eochaid IV of the Scotts, sixth generation descendant of Arthur’s brother and dynastic successors of Tara, and with Emperor Charlemagne of the Franks in 807 C.E. Charlemagne, interestingly enough, was the very same king who reconfirmed the independence of the Jewish kingdom of Septmania, the other surviving Merovingian bloodline, which his father, King Pepin, had originally permitted to be established in 768 C.E.[16]

Pope Zachary replaced the Merovingians, and specifically Childeric III, with a family of mayors, the Carolingians, beginning with Pepin the Short. The legendary Charlemagne was coronated the Holy Roman Emperor by the pope in a surprise gambit on Christmas day, 800 C.E. Charlemagne then presided over the first European Renaissance, referred to as the "Carolingian Renaissance." Charlemagne is famous for pushing back Muslim incursions, saving all Europe for the Christians.[17] Because Pope Leo III crowned Charlemagne the first Holy Roman Emperor, all subsequent kings of France were thus regarded to be the Protectors of the Roman Church.[18] This loyalty to Catholicism by the French kings helps us to understand their part in the Inquisitions and the toppling of the Templars, as well as the French Revolution's Gnostic desire to eradicate both Christianity and the monarchy loyal to Christianity.

Charlemagne's dream of a united Europe lives on today within the Priory of Sion and other spurious organizations. In fact, Charlemagne's empire included Germany, Austria, Switzerland, the Low Countries, France, Czechoslovakia, and parts of Italy—regions known in history as the First Reich of the Holy Roman Empire ruled by Caesars/Kaisers, while Otto Von Bismarck's empire of the nineteenth century was the Second Reich.[19]

Charlemagne eventually, in a surprising move, began to distance himself from Rome. He then further distanced himself by marrying back into the Merovingian bloodline through wedding the Elf Princess Frastrada.[20] All this is not so surprising when you learn about the true beliefs and allegiances that Charlemagne likely inherited from his family.

Pepin was the illegitimate son of Charles Martel, known also as Carolus Martel, from which the Carolingian name originated.[21] Martel has been noted by some Freemasonry writers as playing a prominent role in reestablishing Masonry in France.[22] Charles Martel was an erudite Mason in the Sacred Sciences (and thus a Gnostic); Namus Graecus taught him. Martel continually patronized the Masons with support and charters permitting the Masons to flourish.[23] According to Paul Naudon, Martel employed the knowledge he gained from Namus Graecus to teach France the Mysteries. Thus, Martel was credited with introducing the originating Old Gothic style of architecture into France.[24] Charlemagne was a great supporter and contributor to the Sacred Sciences and Arts,[25] thereby identifying Charlemagne as both a Mason and a Gnostic in secret. Charlemagne is believed by some to have been secretly initiated into the Mysteries.[26] All this supports French kings protecting Septmania and Guilhelm's university.

After considering all this, one then begins to postulate about the possible and plausible connection between Charlemagne and the Benedictine/ Cistercian monk Rabanus Maurus, the Abbey of Faulda (the mole), who was regarded as the greatest and most learned Sage in the Frankish Empire during Charlemagne's reign and of whom it was said there was no equal in the matters of Scripture, Cannon Law, and liturgy. It was Rabanus who in 819 C.E., individually defined each of the Seven Liberal Sciences for his generation and also wrote the controversial book *Life of Mary Magdalene*.[27] The Carolingian dynasty reigned until 987 C.E.; then it was once more replaced by the Vatican-controlled Carpetian dynasty.[28]

The 807 C.E. Scottish and Merovingian alliance was renewed and then reconsummated through the Rex Deus Bruces of Normandy, with their (opportunistic) marriage into the McAlpin dynasty (that descended from King Eochaid IV).[29] This marriage united the Dalriada Kingship of Tara and Ireland with the Merovingians,[30] the Celtic Dalriada dynasty of the Grail and Arthur, and the Rex Deus Norse bloodlines of Rollo. The Celtic kingship rooted in the Dalriada bloodline of Tara included King Arthur's bloodline; his full title was King Arthur Mac Aedian of Dalriada.[31] This explains why the Stuarts are celebrated as the House of Unicorn,[32] because the Stuart dynasty united all the Rex Deus royal bloodlines.

The Stuarts believed in Hermetic principles (Gnosticism). They manipulated these beliefs to justify James I's Divine Right of Kings, whereby the king was God's representative on earth, answerable only to God, and in truth, a little god.[33] This doctrine was fully implemented by James I of England[34] and, therefore, was most instrumental in causing the English civil war led by Cromwell, which temporarily interrupted the Stuart guardianship of the English crown. The Scotts believe that one day a hero will return to restore them to their rightful position; they believed Bonnie Prince Charlie was at one time that deliverer.[35]

This further explicates one of the enigmatic, legendary beginnings to and survival of Freemasonry. One of its legends wraps itself around the restoration of the Stuart House to the throne of England,[36] replacing the Protestant Hanoverian dynasty, all en route to the New Atlantis. Supporters of the Stuart restoration became known in history as Jacobites, both inside and outside the Craft.

In Aramaic, "James" is spelled as *Ya'akov* and was generally translated as "Jacob."[37] In the same manner, "James" was originally known in Hebrew as *Ya'akov* and was translated into Greek as "Jacobus."[38] It was then rendered as *Jacomus* in Latin and then in Spanish as Jaime. The 1611 translation of the King James Version of the Bible employed "James" in place of "Jacob," causing Jacob to be recognized as James ever since.[39] *Jacobism*, then, derived from the Latin (and Greek) *Jacobus* (Jacomus) for "James," as in James the Pretender.[40]

Consider, as well, that this unifying House of Stuart additionally united the Benjamite Royal House stemming from Mary Magdalene and the Sicambrium Franks, along with the royal houses of the Israelites, who were separated at the Exodus via the Akenhaten. The Scota connection, along with the surviving remnant of the royal line of the northern nation of Israel after the Assyrian Diaspora, salted with the Davidic union of bloodlines through Temar at the first Judean Diaspora, were all part of the Unicorn mystique. The House of Stuart additionally reunited all relevant Scythian, Sarmatian, and Trojan bloodlines through Arthur.

The symbolic importance of Rex Deus concealed within the House of Stuart is staggering. The House of Stuart deliberately chose the family colors of green and gold, the official colors of both the House of David and Rex Deus;[41] the Stuarts are the contemporary House of Gold. The Stuart bloodline is one of the most plausible bloodlines to produce the Antichrist.

CHAPTER 68

GUARDIANS OF THE ANTICHRIST

> *He will oppose and will exalt himself over everything that is called God or is worshipped, so that he sets himself up in God’s temple, proclaiming himself to be God.*
>
> **—2 Thessalonians 2:4**

All we have learned thus far regarding the House of Stuart demonstrates a frightening importance Rex Deus places upon the continuity and purity of those bloodlines. Therefore, are Rex Deus and Priory of Sion organizations the true guardians protecting the bloodlines of the Antichrist?

That Rex Deus should document so thoroughly and with such dedicated determination that they can trace the genealogy of their royal progeny, even though history has recorded an end to the Stuart dynastic and the Merovingian dynastic succession, is a disturbing testimony to their fanaticism and dedication.

Expect that Rex Deus records will produce documented support for surviving Stuart heirs, just as they recorded the surviving heirs to the Merovingian dynasty, which secular historians have overlooked. We should anticipate the unveiling of these bloodlines to support the future Antichrist's pedigree in his astonishing ascent to power.

The future Antichrist will step out of the secretive and reticent Rex Deus shadows and into the public light to reclaim the mythologized city of Jerusalem and the Rex Deus, dissonant title the King of Jerusalem, just as the Antichrist is prophesied to fulfill the infamous abomination in the holy temple of Jerusalem.[1] We should also expect that Rex Deus Houses will play indelible roles to usher in world government. However, the broader and coveted agenda of the hidden hand will be to put their Merovingian messiah descending from their alleged holy bloodlines on the world throne.

Rex Deus will submit documented claims as official proof the future, false messiah will be of indisputable royal blood, a pedigree of all the important royal houses that ever laid claim to the thrones of Israel and Europe and residual Nephilim bloodlines. Who will be able to dispute such forgeries? And who will be able to refute the Antichrist's denial of Jesus as the Christ? Remember, these claims will be false, just as this individual will be the false messiah: "He will be succeeded by a contemptible person who has not been given the honor of royalty" (Dan. 11:21). The Antichrist will not be of royal bloodlines, according to Scripture, even though Rex Deus will assert otherwise. The throne the impostor will temporarily seize is the throne promised to Jesus. The Rex Deus assertions are based in mythology and lies, not in fact. Jesus will take possession of his rightful inheritance after the three-and-onehalf ordained years of the Antichrist have come to pass, but all the prophesied miseries and calamities must first take place during the reign of the Beast.

Let us go back to the Freemasons, the heirs to the Templar knowledge and treasures and the heirs to the Rex Deus knowledge and legacy. In general, those at the inner circle of Freemasonry believe the world will soon knock at Freemasonry's door for their sovereigns and pontiffs; they believe that soon Freemasons will rule the world.[2] The globalist forces have shown remarkable patience over the millennia, but this is not a testament to their discipline of awaiting the right opportunity. Rather, they are working diligently on a fantastic scheme that has its own preordained schedule[3] that Freemasons are well aware of and that I believe will be completely carried out in this inclement generation. This preordained schedule is confirmed within the Priory of Sion, for they also have a specific day set aside in the future when they will scandalously reveal their secret documents to the world regarding the genealogy of Jesus and Mary Magdalene.[4] They will do this as part of their organized conspiracy to devalue Jesus and destroy Christianity as part of their march to global occupation and world government.

Let us now bring the conspiracy full circle by examining the connections of Rex Deus to Freemasonry and Templarism. The most obvious connection derives from the founding of Freemasonry in Scotland, shortly after the breakup of the Knights Templar. The most famous of families, with respect to the founding and nurturing of modern Freemasonry throughout the centuries, was the House of Sinclair. William Sinclair was an Adept of the Templar hierarchy, who also claimed Merovingian descent. The Sinclairs begat, nurtured, protected, and funded Freemasonry in Scotland, along with the Bruce and Stuart families. The Sinclairs are among the royalty of Masonry, and it should come as no surprise to learn the Sinclair bloodline originated in France as Rex Deus, under the appellation of “Saint Clair.” They are and were Rex Deus[5] from Brittany, the land conquered and settled by Arthur, which volunteered its allegiance to the Merovingian dynasty after the fall of the Grail dynasties in England and Wales to the Saxons.

We already have identified Freemasons as the inheritors to the Knights Templar, but were the Knights Templar actually Rex Deus, other than the Sinclair and Merovingian guardianship? The answer, once again, is “yes.” The founding Templar families, all nine, plus the two secret families, were all Rex Deus; they all stemmed from Royal French and Flemish families. The first Grand Master of the Knights Templar was Hughes De Payen; he was, according to authors Knight and Lomas, Rex Deus, just as Godefrois de Bouillon was the accepted Fisher King of that time and was one of two unlisted founders of the Templars. They were listed only in Rex Deus and Priory of Sion records.[6]

Rex Deus records suggest eleven founding knights, not nine. They include: Hughes De Payen, Geoffrey De St. Omer, Payen De Montifier, Archambaud De St-Amand, Andre De Montbard, Gondemare, Rosal, Geofrey Bisol, Godefroy (de Bouillon), Fulk Of Anjou, and Hugh Of Champagne.[7] Hughes De Payen was not the minor nobleman history records him as, for he married into the powerful Sinclair/St. Clair family; he married Marie St. Clair, who was the ancestor of second Grandmaster of the Priory Of Sion.[8] Meanwhile, Godefrois is recognized to be a surviving descendant from the Merovingian dynasty,[9] the alleged Benjamite heir and King of Jerusalem recorded in Joshua: “Jerusalem, Gibeah, and Kiriath—this was the inheritance of Benjamin for his clans” (Josh. 18:27). The amazing fact eluding historians is that the Templars were an overt arm doing the beckoning of Rex Deus for the fallen Grail kingships of Avalon and of the Merovingians, all while under the blessing of the Mother Church of Rome, albeit the Church did not know the true nature of the Templars.[10]

As partners with Rex Deus, the Priory of Sion recognizes Rex Deus as being the other driving force behind the creation of the Templars. Rex Deus and the Priory seem to be separate arms of the same cause, with the Priory focused more upon the French relationship than the other Celtic families. Freemasonry writers list Godfrey de Bouillon as the leader of the first Crusade and founder of the Priory, who supported this partnership between Rex Deus and the Priory[11] for an obvious reason: both were Essene organizations. It was Godfrey who founded the Templar Order of Sion, as it was originally known at its founding circa 1090 to 1099.[12] The Order of Sion, was not coincidently the alternative name for the Priory of Sion.

Continuing with the Rex Deus conspiracy, we know that Sinclair founded Freemasonry as the progeny of Templarism, just as Templarism was the progeny of Rex Deus; the Merovingian and Grail kingships; and before that, the Gnostics Essenes that supposedly included Joseph of Arimathea, Mary Magdalene, and Jesus. Therefore, Freemasonry is Rex Deus/Priory of Sion, just as it was founded, nurtured, and dominated by the Sinclairs, the House of Stuart, and other Rex Deus families.

Freemason Adepts and Gnostics believe the Knights Templar and Freemasonry were created as a repository for nurturing, maintaining, and secreting Rex Deus and its causes.[13] Rex Deus, Freemasonry, and the House of Stuart, according to Tim Wallace-Murphy, Marilyn Simmons, and Graham Simmons are inseparable from each other,[14] just as I believe their cause is uniform in fulfilling The Genesis 6 Conspiracy, the recreation of the New Age of Atlantis ruled by the posterity of Nephilim, all worshipping fallen angels and their false religion.

The underground enclaves of powerful Rex Deus Adepts are the guardians for the bloodlines of the Antichrist. These potentates secretly protect the unholy heirs, patiently enduring, awaiting the forthcoming date with destiny, when they will introduce the Antichrist to the world. Rex Deus are the puppet masters controlling the strings of Freemasonry and uncountable other genitive, spurious organizations dedicated to the enslavement of the saints.

SECTION VI: Rendezvous with Destiny

ANATOMY OF A GLOBAL CONSPIRACY

CHAPTER 69

NOVUS ORDO SECLORUM

The ten horns you saw are ten kings who have not yet received a kingdom, but who for one hour will receive authority as kings along with the Beast. They have one purpose and will give their power and authority to the Beast.

—Revelation 17:12–13

All this genealogical voodoo is interesting, but how will veiled Rex Deus organizations install this false messiah onto the world throne?

Freemasons, Illuminati, and Rosicrucians are the key. Mackey describes Ishmaelism, Templarism, and Freemasonry as all being identified with each other, with Freemasonry springing from both Ishmaelism and Templarism.[1] What is thought to be held secret by these and other secret societies are the Seven Sacred Sciences, linking the Freemasons once more back to the spurious knowledge of Cain and Hermes, and they are guarding the San Greal. Hence, mystic Adepts were immortalized at Chartres and Rosslyn Cathedrals for their Masonic links and arcane contributions to the preservation of and communication to Europe of the Seven Sacred Sciences of Cain and the illicit knowledge from heaven.

Within the famous sciences no doubt lies knowledge that will overwhelm even our knowledge-based society, but the sciences are not all the secrets Freemasonry holds. Indeed, they cling to all kinds of corrupted truths, information, history, and future plans. These are all encoded into their temples, rituals, allegories, and literature. Nothing new is under the sun; modern Masonic disciplines and dreams are the same as their ancestors', whether they are antediluvian or postdiluvian. Freemasons believe in their hearts that there's a determined, manifest destiny to bring full about a united, global empire dominated by Luciferian religions, a renewed Genesis 6 Conspiracy.

The first Freemasonry lodge, the Scottish Rite, originated in Scotland. James III of Scotland left the Sinclairs with the title of Grand Master Mason, which they kept until 1736, when they gave it up so that Freemasonry could be led by democratically elected leadership. According to Masonic writers, Freemasonry then spread to England with James VI Stuart, who became James I of England in 1603.[2] James II then renewed it in 1660, whereby Freemasonry then spread to other European countries and later to America. Freemasonry expanded rapidly throughout the eighteenth century, alongside the rapid expansion of the British Empire[3] and the exiled Jacobite movement in France.

Freemasonry was established by Rex Deus organizations to be legions of blind agents released into the world as canker worms, creating and exporting rebellion and chaos through "Liberty, Equality, and Fraternity." Rex Deus refers to these subservient orders as "Gentile Masonry" that blindly serves them in furthering their seditious objectives while keeping true Rex Deus objectives hidden from most Freemasons. Liberalism and its Legomin green language of Liberty, Equality and Fraternity are Masonic words, notions reserved for the manipulated, lower brethren. The Learned Elders, the true enlightened Adepts, refer to their manipulated moles as "liberal utopian dreamers" that will be revealed as such once world government has been achieved. These naive dreamers will be arrested and then executed by the Antichrist, when he seizes power, as enemies of the new state,[4] in a manner similar to the way the Nazis moved against the communists, pacifists, and democrats in 1933 C.E..[5] Even though the Nazis only slaughtered Jews en masse, many communists, pacifists, and democrats died in concentration camps and likely would have been slaughtered by the Nazis given time, just as the Nazis would have turned on Christians.

Rex Deus established an army of Masonic lodges around the world that were/are led by Adepts of the Elders bent on establishing world government. Business people and important leaders were recruited *en masse* and rewarded from the public trough for their participation.[6] To this end, Freemasonry played an active role in each of the American and French rebellions, for both nations played an important, early role in Freemasonry's ultimate goal. In truth, the French Revolution was thought by many historians, according to Wilson, to have been an Illuminati conspiracy to place Duc d'Orleon, an Illuminati member, on the throne of France,[7] while America was created as a model to the world of world government. According to Historian Bernard Fay, the French rebellion was both funded and led by a subversive class of French nobility that included Duc d'Orleans, Mirabeau, Noailles, le Rochefoucauld, the famous Bouillon (of Templar and Rex Deus), and the Lafayette families.[8] Documents discovered in France in 1897, *The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*, purportedly published by the Learned Elders of Zion, took credit for starting the French Revolution: "Remember the French Revolution, the secrets of its preparation are well known to us for it was entirely the work of our hands."[9]

The thesis that the American Revolution was heavily influenced by Freemasonry is a well-accepted theory, according to Bauval and Hancock, but what is not so well known is that the American lodges held very close ties to the French lodges.[10] In both nations, clandestine Freemasonry organizations kindled the ideal of world government through rebellion, thus endeavoring to bring their subversive government, bloodlines, and religion to absolute power. One must understand that from the inception, Freemasonry vowed to bring about the New World Order[11] in the spirit of the dreams of their founders, the Knights Templar. The Famous Scottish American patriarch Andrew Carnegie noted America was "Scotland realized beyond the seas."[12]

An early organization of Freemasonry in America was the Quest, which was formed sometime between 1625 and 1675. Benjamin Franklin was a member and a self-professed Freemason, just as numerous Freemasons contributed significantly in the American Revolution.[13] The Grand Lodge was established in 1717, but the earliest surviving records are from the Philadelphia and New York lodges of the 1730s.[14] According to Freemason and author Ian Gittins, the first official charter was issued in 1733 to the St. John's Lodge of Boston that met at the Green Dragon Tavern.[15] Freemasonry spread in America mostly through the military lodges, and by 1775, it held a large sway over the ranking gentry and officers,[16] including George Washington.

In the midst of the rising, rebellious tides were two influential secret societies, both with direct ties to Freemasonry: the Sons of Liberty and the Committee on Correspondence, who organized unrest among the thirteen colonies. Both organizations were well represented at the Continental Congress during the war, the Constitutional Convention that followed, and the fledgling government thereafter.[17]

Knowing these facts helps in understanding why America is inundated with Masonic icons and is structured as a model for world government. America is a microcosm for the structure of the New World Order, with one federal government speaking for many independent states that are united in free trade and crowned with one leader. The federal government is assigned the role of foreign affairs, the military, and matters that affect all citizens, such as the environment, healthcare, welfare, and more—all with appropriate taxation levies to fund these portfolios.

Franklin was initiated in February of 1731, becoming the Master of the St. John Lodge located in Philadelphia. At that time, American Freemasonry was regulated by the United Grand Lodge in London, which also appointed Provincial Grandmasters in North America and appointed Franklin Grand Master of Pennsylvania in 1749.[18] Franklin was the publisher for Dr. Anderson's *Book of Constitutions* in America.[19] Franklin spent two lengthy sojourns in England for the American cause, 1757–1762 and 1765–1775,[20] when he was initiated into the Royal Society.[21] In 1775, Franklin returned to America, where he was immediately appointed to the Second Congress. Other Freemasons in the Second Congress included George Washington, Thomas Jefferson, and John Hancock. The Second Congress made Washington the Commander-in-Chief as one of its first decisions.[22] Many Masonic historians believe more than fifty Freemasons signed the Declaration of Independence, while more than one-third of the thirty-nine signatures on the United States Constitution were fellows of the Craft.[23]

Washington was initiated into Freemasonry in 1752, at Fredericksburg.[24] He became honorary Grand Master of the Alexandria Lodge in Washington, DC in 1788. In 1793, Washington wore his Masonic apron, along with other prominent Masons, to lay the cornerstone for the construction of the Capitol building. Washington was sworn in to office April 30, 1789, utilizing a Masonic Bible supplied by the St. John's Lodge No. 1 for the inauguration. Eisenhower; Carter; and George Bush, Sr. used this very same Masonic Bible for their inaugurations. George Bush, Jr. requested it but was unable to use it because of rain.[25] Washington planted thirty-two Masonic generals within his army, while sustaining eight Masonic generals on his personal staff.[26]

In the autumn of 1776, the Congress sent a commission first of three masons, including Franklin, to France to seek military and financial support for the war against Britain, where Franklin enlisted friendships and relationships among the French elite, who were essentially all Freemasons.[27] Some suggest that at that time, France fostered 70,000 Freemasons.[28] Franklin's drudgery bore fruit in 1778, when France pledged official support to America through economic and militaristic avenues.[29]

Franklin achieved this miraculous feat by joining the Nine Sisters Lodge in Paris, founded in 1776 by Joseph Lalonde and l'Abbe Cordier de Saint-Fermin, the godfather to Voltaire. Franklin regularly visited the Catherine Helvetius Salon with the Marquis De Lafayette, another Freemason who belonged to the Le Contrat Social Lodge, which was linked to other important French lodges. The most notable of these lodges was La Societe Olympique that held within its membership famous French officers such as Count de Chambrun, Count-Admiral de Grasse, Count-Admiral d'Estaing, and the buccaneer John Paul Jones, all who later fought in the American cause.[30] Lafayette was recruited and dispatched to America to serve directly under Washington.[31]

In 1779, Franklin became the Venerable Master of the Nine Sisters Lodge, and in 1778, he actually helped initiate the eighty-four-year-old Voltaire. The Nine Sisters Lodge succeeded an older lodge, Les Sciences, created in 1766 by Leland and Claude Helvetius, whose wife was Catherine Helvetius. After Claude Helvetius died, his wife joined Leland and Saint-

Fermin in the creation of the Nine Sisters Lodge. Catherine's Salon, Rue Sainte Anne in Paris, became widely recognized as the headquarters for European philosophy. French Historian Bernard Fay cites the Nine Sisters Lodge as the hub for revolutionary activities during the early years of the French rebellion. In fact, Georges Danton, one of the three triumvirs of the French Revolution, was a member of the Nine Sisters Lodge.[32]

The other important lodge before 1789 was La Loge Contrat Social, which later acted as the mother lodge and was a forerunner for the Elite Order of Freemasonry's Scottish Rite, the Supreme Council of the Thirty-Third Degree. Contrat Social was as popular as the Nine Sisters Lodge. It recruited from the elite of the liberal French nobility, adopting Rousseau's *Contrat Social* as its Bible as well as the name of their lodge, similar to the way the Nine Sisters Lodge accepted the doctrines of Voltaire. Rousseau and Voltaire provided the intellectual dynamite and the moral framework for the French Revolution.[33] The rebellion adopted Freemasonry's motto, "Libertie! Egalitie! Fraternitie!" as its rallying cry.[34]

Danton, Robespierre, and Marat were the triumvirs of the French rebellion. All were Freemasons. Rousseau's *Contrat Social*, which set forth the foundation for the Declaration of the Rights of Man, the successor to the American Declaration of Independence, heavily influenced Robespierre. Robespierre exhumed Rousseau's body and reburied him in Paris at the Pantheon, next to other national heroes. Robespierre took most of his ideals from Freemasonry, including the introduction of his cult of the Supreme Being, a state-sponsored religion introduced in 1793–1794 and celebrated vicariously as the Cult of Reason. Statues were erected to represent the female goddess of reason, which modeled the soft, conical Phrygian Cap (signifying the pursuit of liberty in antiquity) upon the goddess Cybele, renowned variantly as Isis, and the male god Mithras. Notre Dame was converted to the Temple of Reason, all in the honor of the new religion. Robespierre further ordered the oldest cathedral in Paris, where all the ancient kings of France were baptized, the Abbey St. Germaine, rededicated to Isis.[35]

According to historian Michel Vovelle, the Supreme Being of the French rebellion was the identical god worshipped as the Great Architect of the Universe in Freemasonry. Robespierre converted all the Christian churches to temples of the new cult, where all the people of France recognized the Supreme Being as god of a new, natural religion based on nature, liberty, equality, truth, and reason. Robespierre converted the calendar to the ancient Egyptian calendar that consisted of 360 days, plus five special days dedicated to the virtues of Osiris and Isis. During the French rebellion, France was completely de-Christianized.[36]

Architects set out to refashion Paris into a utopian city through geometric shapes such as pyramids and spheres; it was to be a New Age city.[37] Paris, like Washington, was to be a symbolic utopian city, a beacon for the world. Both the French and American Revolutions were inexplicitly interwoven and completely influenced by Freemasonry. Both rebellions were to produce utopian republics that would, in time, bring about world government and the abolishment of Christianity.

Take a moment to peruse some of the Masonic icons shadowing the so-called American symbols of freedom. The eagle is a symbol of mystical initiation, a great emblem of antiquity, and was regarded as a symbol of the sun, of wisdom attained through reason. The eagle in mysticism is the symbol of the supreme reason of intelligence and represents a polytheist foundation stone doctrine: reason over faith. The eagle was also considered by the ancient Egyptians, Persians, Greeks, and Romans as sacred to the sun, a bird consecrated to the sun in Egypt, a living symbol of Menes. The eagle is the lone bird that is capable symbolically of looking into the sun.[38]

The eagle in the official seal of the United States has nine tail feathers, representing the nine beings in the innermost circle of enlightenment in the Great White Brotherhood, also known as the *Illuminati*, a most secret and powerful organization within the Masonic maze of secret societies. There are also nine degrees in the York Rite of Freemasonry. The eagle’s right wing contains thirty-two feathers, representing the thirty-two degrees of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry. And there are thirty-three feathers on the left wing, symbolizing the honorary, infamous Thirty-Third Degree of Enlightenment and holder of all secrets. The designers of the seal were all Masons and members of the Quest.[39]

The Seal of the United States was originally designed by Franklin and Jefferson, according to Bauval and Hancock, to contain inscriptions of the Supreme Being, showing a “Glowing Pyramid” and the “All-Seeing Eye.”[40] The Seal was officially accepted by the prominent Freemason President Franklin Roosevelt. The Freemason Adept and likely Illuminati fellow Vice President Wallace sold the notion to him.[41]

Iconography from the French Revolution also maintained the All-Seeing Eye as the Tree of Liberty, while at other times, it was symbolized by a glowing triangle or a shimmering pyramid hovering above the scene, much like the symbol on the American dollar bill. This symbol appeared on the Declaration of the Rights of Man that was drafted by Lafayette.[42] The American dollar, containing an unfinished pyramid with an All-Seeing Eye adorning it on top, is an obvious symbol of the Masons, representing their ties to the great stone builders of antiquity and the knowledge of geometry, arithmetic, and other sciences required to build such monuments, which all stem from the Seven Sacred Sciences. The pyramid is a symbolic link to the antediluvian epoch, when the great pyramids and ziggurats were built as monuments to the ancient knowledge corrupted by Cain and the heresy performed at Mount Hermon.

The unfinished pyramid holds even more enigmatic secrets in its allegory. It represents the New World Order, or world government, because just as the pyramid is unfinished, with work yet to be done, so is the state of the union both past and present in regard to the New World Order. It has not yet been finished and come of age; it is still a work in process by the various Masonic organizations.[43]

Finally, the pyramid is symbolic for the Grand Architect of the Universe.[44] The Grand Architect of the Universe is the god of the Freemasons that is also symbolized as a five-pointed star, a pentagram, and a blazing star— known as the "Glowing Pyramid" or "Triangle"; it has the All-Seeing Eye inscribed within this pyramid or triangle and is indistinguishable from the god identified as the Supreme Being. Similarly, the father of light, god of the Zoroastrians, which is also identified with the Iranian god Mithras, was also known vicariously as the Great Architect.[45] French Revolution posters depicted the All-Seeing Eye crowning the Supreme Being, thus connecting the two symbols.[46]

The United States Seal is engraved with the words *Annuit Coeptis*, which is Latin for "announcing the birth of." This phrase is followed by *Novus Ordo Seclorum.* The Latin *Novus* translates as "new"; *Ordo* translates as "order"; and *Seclorum* translates as "world,"[47] according to most lay people. However, the correct translation to some, such as Dan Brown, is "The New Secular Order."[48] However, *Seclorum* is the genitive, possessive plural form of *saelculum*, meaning ages, world, or generations, which then produces New (World) Order of the Ages. In my opinion, *Novus Ordo Seclorum* has been transliterated into the “New World Order.” Putting *Annuit Coeptis* together with *Novus Ordo Seclorum* yields roughly, “the birth of the New World Order” (era), which has incredibly been engraved into the official seal of the United States, the progeny of Freemason and Templar dreams!

Just as these secret fraternities of conspiracy were active 300 years ago, they are still active today in bringing about world government. Winston Churchill once remarked that the Illuminati, Karl Marx, and the 1917 Communist rebellion possessed the joint purpose of instituting the New World Order.[49] Churchill enjoyed inside information on this, for Churchill was a Freemason.[50] Globalists are now delirious with anticipation, for their age-long dream is soon to come about. Their activities are now ever so more intense. Globalists will not be denied, and it is ordained, for this is the Terminal Generation.

The globalist cause is not wrapped in religious tolerance, nor is it clothed in cold, secular objectivity. Rather, globalism is a heavy trench coat that is concealing its discriminating religious body devoted to rebellion and genocide.

CHAPTER 70

INSIDE FREEMASONRY

> *If a person thoughtlessly takes an oath to do anything, whether good or evil—in any matter one might carelessly swear about—even though he is unaware of it, in any case when he learns of it he will be guilty.*
>
> —Leviticus 5:4

Is Freemasonry really the primordial religion of Enoch the Evil?

Albert Pike attributes modern Masonry to being identical to the ancient Mysteries; he states that Freemasonry is the successor to mysticism.[1]

In an excerpt from *New Age Magazine*, Harold J. Bolen stated that the secret doctrine of Freemasonry flows through its symbols that have their source in three ancient, exalted orders, one being Dionysian Artificers.[2] The Greek Dionysus was an indistinguishable deity from Bacchus of the Romans, Tammuz or Utu of the Persians, and Osiris of the Egyptians. Likely the three great, ancient orders were the Egyptians, Greeks, and Babylonians.

In fact, the Philalethan Conference hosted in Paris from 1785–1787 brought together the most famous, distinguished, and important Freemasons from around the globe to clarify the origin and historical affiliations of

Masonic Science.[3] After two years of debate, this august assembly of Adepts concluded Freemasonry was the “Original Religion” handed down from King Arthur, Richard I, Ramon Lulle, Gnostics and the school of Alexandria, the Templars, Pythagoras, Plato, Jesus Christ, the Apostles, Each-Ben-Mohammed-Elanis, Ormus, the Egyptians, the Benedictines, the Rosicrucians, Zoroaster, Abbaris, Channondas, Eudoxus, Hermippis, Hermes Trismegistus, Porphyrus, Proclus, Jamblique, the priesthood schools of India, the Gauls, the Hebrews, the Essenes, and the Persian Magi.[4]

The Craft Legends believe Freemasonry derives from Babel and before. In 1754, this connection was underscored in the best-selling book of that time, *The Free Mason Examin’d*, which concluded the rituals of Freemasonry were entrenched in the building of the Tower of Babel[5] and in Nimrod. We know Hermes fled to Egypt, while Nimrod remained in Babylon, where the single entity of the postdiluvian Mysteries then split into two separate but similar sects. Nimrod’s constitution was posthumously reformed in Egypt, under the famous Great White Brotherhood organization. The indigenous duality of their deities was Ishtar/Innana and Tammuz/Utu of the Babylonians and Isis and Osiris of the Egyptians.[6] The female of the spurious trinity is analogous to the Holy Spirit of the Christian Holy Trinity concept whereby the spirit of life and also wisdom is provided.

Because Masonic obsession with its origins is ingrained with the Egyptian Mysteries, we will focus on the Egyptian pantheon. The Egyptian pantheon was centered on Osiris/male, Isis/female, and Horus/male son; they were celebrated as the “Masonic Trinity.”[7] Isis was widowed when the evil god Seth murdered Osiris. Horus was born after the death of Osiris, when Osiris was resurrected into godhood and lay with Isis, once more vulgarly and boorishly mimicking the Christian doctrine of the virgin birth and that of the immaculate, heavenly conception through sexual copulation.

According to Richard Noone, the word *pyramid* translated as “glorious light” in ancient Egyptian.[8] This translation connects allegories of the sun and light to the pyramids, to Osiris the sun god, and to the Masons. Quite simply, the All-Seeing Eye on the dollar represents Osiris, the omnipresent god, while the pyramid represents the glorious light of Osiris, which was an allegory representing both the sun and enlightenment of knowledge.[9] So, too, were the Mysteries of India, Persia, and Greece, according to Alan

Alford, founded in the same mythology of the sun god. The sun was a universally celebrated symbol for the great creator.[10]

The sun, or light, is deeply rooted in and critically important to all mystic organizations, for light is always figurative for knowledge and enlightenment, which all these furtive organizations are whispered to conceal at their center. Similarly, light is an imperative, allegorical doctrine slashing to the heart of Freemasonry.[11] Masonic initiates, as with all pagan religions, are escorted onto a Path, or Way, to enlightenment through knowledge (gnosis) as they naively quest through the various levels, degrees, or tests of initiation.

The three great lights of Freemasonry are the Sun/Osiris, the Moon/ Isis, and Mercury/Horus.[12] They were the holders of the great knowledge, or enlightenment, as it was provided to them by the primeval creator of the universe, which initiates seek to learn about as they climb the levels of the figurative pyramid. Freemasons believe that their members are the sons of light. In fact, Alford notes that the name *freemasonry* is variantly mythologized to have derived from ancient Egyptian *phre,* meaning sun, and *mas,* meaning child; thus, combined it means “child of light.”[13]

Freemasons garner another phrase dear to their beliefs known as *Annu Lucis,* which is their sacred calendar. *Annu Lucis* is translated as “Year of Light,” which some believe began in the year 4000 B.C.E.[14] Richard Noone writes that Anno Lucis is the legendary date memorializing the founding of the ancient Craft Masonry in and around 4000 B.C.E.,[15] a date that coincides chronologically with the life of Cain, the father of the corrupted Seven Sacred Sciences. More importantly, Anno Lucis is the Freemasonry calendar dating back to Freemasonry’s year zero, the year God expelled Lucifer from heaven, according to Epperson,[16] and the year when Satan deceived Adam and Eve. The Freemasons abbreviate this phrase as *A.L.*, meaning “in the Year of Light.”

No one has satisfactorily explained why Freemasonry memorialized the year 4000 B.C.E., except for the expulsion of Satan from heaven, but the most palpable connection, according to Noone, is to the Great Pyramid Kufu, which was covered with polished limestone, reflecting glorious light when the sun struck its sides,[17] thus memorializing Satan’s banishment.

Freemasonry is merely a fraternity within a fraternity, an enigma wrapped within a riddle, utilizing an outer organization designed to conceal an inner brotherhood of powerful, modern potentates known as the Elect, or "Adepts." The outer fraternity, which includes the lower levels of initiation, is the visible fraternal society promoting business and good causes. The inner fraternity is the arcane (Snake) Brotherhood dedicated to the esoteric Mysteries of ancient Egypt and beyond.[18]

The humdrum members of the lower degrees are not taught the innermost secrets of the higher degrees. Only the Adepts comprehend the authentic connotation to the Legomin symbols according to Albert Pike. Freemasonry's true secrets are kept from all except the Adepts, Sages, and Elect through employing false explanations for symbols to mislead those who deserve to be misled, including the lower level Freemasons. Adept Masons purposefully lie to lower Freemasons through false interpretations, reserving the authentic translations for the Adepts and other princes of Masonry.[19] In this way, Freemasonry operates free from the charges of sedition, even though sedition on a grand scale is its true cause.

The Masonic Order, at its core, can best be described as occultist. *Webster's New Compact Format Dictionary* defines *occult* as "hidden, beyond the range of sense, mysterious, magical, supernatural," while *occultism* is "the doctrine or study of things hidden or mysterious, Theosophy," while *occult sciences* are "alchemy, astrology, magic, et cetera." I cannot perceive a better definition for Freemasonry than an organization that conceals secrets. It is an esoteric movement focusing on mysticism—a Theosophical movement concealing the seven occult sciences. Freemasonry occultism is undeniably steeped in Theosophy.

Alice Bailye, a renowned principal in the New Age movement, describes the Masonic fraternity as far more occultist than many realize; it is the furtive training school for advanced occultists.[20] Baily further notes the three foremost channels preparing for the New Age are the church, Freemasonry, and education.[21] Pike definitively refers to Freemasonry as the custodian or special guardian of the secret, occult history and knowledge.[22]

In their pursuit of world government, Freemasons will keep sacred, as key to their utopian doctrine, the notion of destroying both the right to own private property and the right to worship the true God. Furthermore, Freemasonry's end game is to prevent the right to set up a government based on the protection of man's God-given rights to life, liberty, and property.[23] Freemasonry will seek to obtain equality through community of all goods and the destruction of all rank and property[24] through Progressive socialism.

The coming world government will be characterized by tolerating only the future harlot religion of Babel. It will not be based on the rights of the individual, but rather on collective rights as defined by the harlot religion, and no one will have the right to own any form of property, in subordination of the many, to which all belongs. This coming utopian New World Order is indispensable for the harmonic convergence to collect the divine spark that is elemental for ascension into godhood for the purported chosen descendants of Nephilim. This is what is known as Collective Salvation in the end game of Liberation theology.

These precepts, of course, slash to the heart of all globalist doctrine, for they are all socialistic in nature as they pertain to the individual, but they are capitalistic in their approach to business, albeit a limited progressive oligopoly reserved only for rich and powerful Adepts of Illuminated Freemasonry, who believe religion (monotheism) must go first and then law and property will follow.[25] The New World Order will be a classic, mystical socialism designed after Bacon's dream and the greedy interests of the powerful elite, akin to the empire of George Soros. Progressive globalists will sedate the mundane masses with the opium of progressive socialism, while the state-sponsored family dealers will prosper from within their oligarchic territories.

Progressive socialism will merge with progressive capitalism. State-sponsored capitalism, akin to the contemporary Chinese oligarchy, is steadfastly being exported to the West as the new, efficient model for capitalism and its future. The progressive, euphemistic propaganda for this premeditated partnership plans to topple free enterprise as we recognize it and is presently hailed as "state capitalism." In state-sponsored capitalism, selected private companies and corporations, i.e., oligarchies, will finance, manufacture, and equally with the state, drive the agenda of progressive, national socialism. You may recognize some of these public private partnerships now being organized as "P3 ventures": public, partnership, partnerships.

Consider this: The word *nation* is an accepted expression analogous to *state*. One could easily substitute *state* with *national* to form "national capitalism" and not adjust the meaning or intent in any way. Hitler's fascist Nazi regime was a totalitarian, state-sponsored capitalism that merged with national socialism, which sustained an unaccountable blood oath against monotheism and inexplicable blood fever to create the New Man. I do not find this to be a coincidence. The end times will host a new, global Nazi regime, led by a new Fuehrer and promising a new utopian millennium, which will lead to a new world war and a new holocaust and end in a new Apocalypse.

CHAPTER 71

THE THIRTY-THIRD DEGREE

The god of this age has blinded the minds of unbelievers, so that they cannot see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.

—2 Corinthians 4:4

Epperson describes Freemasonry as a religion endeavoring to unite God and man, elevating (pre-selected) initiates to a level of consciousness so that they might behold the workings of the Great Architect.[1]

So who is this Great Architect?

The initiate is taught through the ascending levels of sacred knowledge, the occultist discipline of reason over knowledge, that he is achieving (immortality) wisdom as he ascends the (Lucifer's) pyramid of glorious light and is initiated into the Thirty-Third level. Reason disciplining knowledge from the Tree of Good and Evil is mysticism's way to immortality that Satan alluded to in the Garden of Eden. The Thirty-Third Degree believes wholeheartedly in the Mysteries, holding steadfastly to the doctrine of reincarnation, just as Osiris was resurrected or, more accurately, reincarnated as a full-fledged and evolved god in the heavens. The Thirty-

Third Degree is the uppermost level of the Scottish Rite; it is the innermost sanctuary of the Masonic temple, uncompromisingly dedicated to Masonic mysticism. The Thirty-Third Degree is the closed inner circle of the Masonic Snake Lodge, where the true power of Masonry is centered.

The Mother Council, or the Mother Jurisdiction, as the Thirty-Third Degree is known, resides in Washington, DC. The significance of this council, other than the power it possesses and the secret, sinister strategy of sedition it plots, is that it also possesses the three final secrets of the Freemasons. Initiates in the Thirty-Second Degree have these final, fateful secrets withheld from them. They are simply told, “He still has not reached the light.”[2] As the initiate ascends the ziggurat of enlightenment, he is introduced first to the Osiris allegories, defining him as the sun god, and then the initiate is introduced to the concept of the Great Architect of the Universe. In the beginning, God the Architect was believed to have sent Osiris and Isis, the male/female aspects of godhood, to humankind to help them.[3]

It will come as no surprise that this Grand Architect is not the true God of Christianity, Judaism, and Islam. The true god of mysticism and the Freemasons is Lucifer, and his unholy icons scurrilously adorn the American one-dollar bill, the All-Seeing Eye and the unfinished pyramid. But can we actually show beyond a shadow of doubt that Lucifer is the sun god, the All-Seeing Eye, and the Architect of the Universe? Yes, we can!

Demond Wilson’s inside information informs us that the Thirty-Third Degree formally teaches that Lucifer is the Architect of the Universe.[4] Freemasons teach Osiris is the god who is Lucifer, just as they teach that the All-Seeing Eye is also god, or Lucifer, and just as both these symbols represent the Great Architect of the Universe. Lucifer is called the Great Architect because the universe is his most significant work. Freemasons name their (Snake) god an architect because he is not a creator god, for Lucifer created the universe from existing material, just as architects do. The universe, then, is Lucifer’s lofty temple, and his greatest, most perfect work of architecture.[5] Hence, Gnostics shockingly established the Royal Society of England and the Invisible College to be the first assembly of scientists dedicated to the wonders created by the Great Architect of the Universe.[6] Marks scribed into or onto architecture by Freemasons are symbols that indicate they are mere instruments of the Great Architect.[7]

Wilson writes that the Thirty-Third level of initiation professes its Adepts to be soldiers for the new, true religion, where the true religion understands that Lucifer is god. Freemasons hold the very same beliefs as did the ancient Egyptians.[8] Alan Alford writes that the cryptic knowledge concealing who Lucifer is, along with the secrets to reincarnation and the secret knowledge of the seven spurious sciences are the three treasured "Secrets of Secrets" held by the Thirty-Third Degree, with the ultimate secret being Lucifer is God.[9]

The initiates of high degrees are maintained in the purity of Luciferian doctrine. Albert Pike wrote to the Supreme Councils that they were to know Lucifer was indeed the secret god of the Masons. Pike further wrote that the (glorious) "light" that all Masons seek is the knowledge of who god is, for they believe Lucifer is the real god of the universe.

In this book, I have danced all around the Satan scenario while dropping many hints and subtle conclusions. It is now time to nail down this notion. The Freemasons and all their genitive and associated organizations believe the real god of the universe is Lucifer.[10] Freemasonry and all their associate organizations are ultimately preparing to bring about the New World Order under the New Babel that worships Lucifer.

The teachings of all the diverse forms of mysticism preach the same doctrine, all declaring Lucifer to be the fallen seraphim angel. This is certainly witnessed by the Freemasons; the New Age movement; and particularly, the reticent organization at the center of the Freemasonry, the Illuminati. They all are on record as worshipping the fallen angel of mysticism, which views Lucifer as a good god to whom a great wrong has been done. Lucifer, as this deluded idea goes, is the good god, while the true God of the universe is evil, and the devil.[11]

Lucifer masquerades as an angel of light. Light is the Masonic symbol for intelligence, information, knowledge, and truth; darkness is ignorance and evil[12] and the followers of Adonai: Jews, Muslims, and Christians. Lucifer is the god of light and the god of good—the god who struggles against darkness and evil for humankind.[13] Lucifer is actually a derivative of the Latin *lucidus* or *lux*, meaning light.[14] One ought to be wary of any genitive words deriving from *lux*, such as *lucis* (of light), as in the Theosophist organization Lucis Trust. The organization that bears that name is a New Age publisher of books supporting the New Age movement and world government.[15]

Another corporate name to be wary of is Lucent Technologies, one of the spin-off corporations from the dismembering of AT&T, which at one time purchased a franchise for Mondex, thought to be the smart card of the future for the United States. Lucent is compounded from "Lucifer," of course, but what is most interesting is that the company's corporate logo was the symbol of the solar Serpent, or Red Dragon, which is known biblically as Satan and to the mystics as Lucifer. Lucent Technologies chose to move their offices to 666 Fifth Avenue in Manhattan. Lucent later merged with Alcatel in 2006.[16] I'm not sure if this is the kind of company Christians would choose to have control of the coming smart cards that will herald the cashless society, particularly when Mondex is thought to have already concluded that the chip in the smart card will have to be replaced with a chip inserted into either the right hand or the forehead, all for security reasons[17] (see the book of Revelation, the mark of the Beast).[18]

Today, MasterCard holds controlling interest in Mondex and its technologies; Mondex technology is now also offered by Visa.[19] Remember, it is the doctrine of The Genesis 6 Conspiracy to eliminate all currencies and all paper money once power has been usurped by their false messiah from Zion.[20] Be wary of all organizantions bearing derivatives of *light* or *Lucifer*. The secret to their cause will lie beneath the allegory of their name. This is their nature and their arrogance.

Continuing along this line of New Age delusion, we find that Lucifer is the rival of Adonai, the evil Christian God**.** Lucifer is good, while Adonai is intermittently evil.[21] Just as in the Sumerian flood narrative of the *Epic of Gilgamesh*, Enki/Satan was the good god who warned of the coming deluge and who berated Enlil/Adonai for bringing about the deluge without first consulting the other gods, thereby destroying the innocent with the iniquitous.[22] In the same manner, Greek and Atlantean mythology maintained Zeus as the god of the sky that brought forward the flood, while Poseidon was god of the sea, with both holding dominion over the earth.[23]

Masonry regards Lucifer as an intellectual spirit of intelligence; he is the great agent of universal magnetism. Lucifer is regarded to be the god that struggles for humanity against the oppressive Adonai, the God who slanders Lucifer, as do Adonai's priests. Freemasonry believes that if

Lucifer were not, in truth, god, Adonai and his priests would not slander Lucifer so. Lucifer is worshipped as the first free thinker, the emancipator of worlds.[24] Satan, then, frees worlds in our universe, in this galactic war of aliens coming to our world soon!

Freemasons and the New Age movement unyieldingly judge Christianity to be darkness and evil.[25] They believe that Adonai wishes to keep humankind in darkness through ignorance, that He is the enemy of knowledge and science. They point to God prohibiting Adam and Eve from eating from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil in Eden as the example of God as one of ignorance and bondage.

According to Epperson, Freemasonry cites Adonai's recorded deeds such as the deluge, the conquest of the Promised Land, and Sodom and Gomorrah, as proof of Adonai's cruelty. Freemasons and Lucifer wish to free and enlighten humankind with all kinds of knowledge, including that of good and evil, which will encourage humankind's ascension into godhood. Finally, Freemasonry believes Lucifer will vanquish God in the not-so-distant future,[26] in this galactic war among powerful aliens.

The eagle is the symbol for reason, and wisdom is achieved through reason. A cornerstone doctrine of mysticism and Freemasonry determines that all knowledge is good and that reason disciplines knowledge for the good of humankind. Hence, it is this mastery of reason over knowledge that is essential to the evolutionary process into godhood, but only those determined worthy and capable of learning, and then maintaining the disciplines of reason and wisdom over raw knowledge, the illuminated Thirty-Third Degree Adepts, will be permitted the opportunity to evolve into gods.

Christians who place faith over reason automatically will not qualify; they will be considered obsolete and not worthy of godhood. True Christians and those who are loyal to the true God Most High will not be welcomed into the New World Order of Enlightenment. Thus, well-planned, secular constitutions set in motion by Freemason canker worms hundreds of years ago will soon isolate literalist Christians and monotheists as intolerant, ignorant, and immaterial zealots who are obeying the evil Adonai. Soon the saints will be hunted, imprisoned, enslaved, and then slaughtered by the so-called disciples of light. What is astonishing is that the new Christian religion rising out of the ashes of the old Christian religion will easily slide into the new world and its ethnic-cleansing constitutions.

CHAPTER 72

THE ROTHSCHILD-ROCKEFELLER-MORGAN AXIS

> *Now listen, you rich people, weep and wail because of the misery that is coming upon you. Your wealth has rotted and moths have eaten your clothes. Your gold and silver are corroded. Their corrosion will testify against you and eat your flesh like fire. You have hoarded your wealth in the last days … You have lived on earth in luxury and self-indulgence. You have fattened yourselves in the day of slaughter. You have condemned and murdered innocent men, who were opposing you.*
>
> —James 5:1–6

The subversive network assembled by Rex Deus and its conscription of the powerful elite has been impressive, even from our limited perspective. How wide, how far, and how deep do the terrifying tentacles of this Leviathan stretch to?

Let us glimpse into this alarming juggernaut, beginning with the “Royal House of Money,” a family synonymous with international banking,[1] the

Rothschilds. The Rothschild family was, and is, the central bank funding the Freemasonry movement. The Rothschilds have been members of the Craft since 1700.[2] They grew rich on European wars, but they were inconsequential until they partnered with the Masonic movement.

The Rothschild empire was the quasi-legitimate response by Rex Deus to the breakup of the Knights Templar. Templars were the first modern bankers of Europe, who funded European wars with loans, controlling vast amounts of money. Therefore this powerful authority needed to be replaced. Banking funded the Knights Templar with most of the order's wealth; just the visible Templar fortune was estimated at $20 billion.[3] Banking became the primary objective that then overshadowed the Priory agenda and Hugh De Payen, which supports the reasons cited at the Cutting of the Elm for splitting of the order—Templar greed and a difference of opinion about the agenda.

Markale notes that one of the primary functions of the Knights Templar was to facilitate the transfer of funds from Europe to the Holy Land for the Crusaders and pilgrims; thus, they became a bank and the greatest money institution ever created until that time. To these financial imperatives, the Knights Templar then invented exchange notes, the check, and various creative forms of credit.[4] Marrs describes the Templars as a Rex Deus/Priory of Sion puppet organization, which pioneered the concepts of credit facilities and the allocation of credit for commercial developments in the West;[5] they were undeniably the first modern banks. Gardner writes that the Templars established the first international banking network and became the financiers for almost all the thrones of Europe.[6] Thus, Rex Deus organizations were determined to replace the covert banking arm of the Templar empire, just as Freemasonry replaced the arcane, esoteric, and political arm of Templarism.

The Rothschilds replaced the Templars as the first corporate financial giant of medieval Europe. They funded the Rex Deus agenda, just as the Templars did. The Rothschilds grew opulent just as the Templars did by funding European wars, likely instigated by Rex Deus, and by using loans to manipulate monarchs for their own agenda. By the time the Rothschild juggernaut got rolling, the Rothschilds had managed to indebt all the royal houses of Europe to them, including the famous Hapsburg dynasty.[7] Security for the secret end time agenda of Rex Deus was thus assured, for Rothschild bloodlines are also Rex Deus, as testified to by London Banker

David Rothschild; he also claims to be a descendant of Jesus, according to Hancock.[8]

The Rothschild family originated with Mayer Amschel Bauer, a Jewish/German individual, born February 23, 1744, in Frankfurt. Mayer was the court financial agent to William IX, the royal administrator for the Hesse-Kassel province, a prominent Freemason. Later, Mayer added the royal German family of Thurn and Taxis,[9] the powerful family that established the first commercial post and courier companies in Europe as their clientele before entering into banking.[10] Through these first innocuous entries into the royal houses of Europe, Bauer prospered because of the inside information he received from his well-connected patrons with regard to market trends, futures in commodity prices, and forthcoming political events.[11]

Bauer opened his first bank in Frankfurt. His son Nathan established the London bank, and the youngest son, Jakob, established the Paris bank by 1811. The Bauer family formally changed its name to Rothschild (meaning “red shield” and likely the insignia for the Rosicrucian cause) upon Nathan’s arrival in London to distance itself from anti-Semitism. While in London, Nathan purposefully established a stable of (wealthy, covert) agents to operate their far-reaching operations.[12]

This diabolical concept establishing strategic stables of wealthy agents by the Learned Elders has many covert tentacles into all aspects of life. Freemasonry acts to ensure all governments perform as puppets to install its secret plans, appointing only fellows to government agencies and departments; this includes presidents. They ruthlessly blackmail all those who do not respond as puppets. Freemasonry further ensures that their agents control all police agencies of the world. Other agents utilize liberalism, liberty, freedom, and covert fraternities to blind society. They diligently degrade society with degenerate doctrines, various immoralities, alcohol, and other vices.[13]

The far-reaching operations began with strategic alliances with influential families that exist to this day. In 1814, the Rothschilds established formative business ties with the Warburgs of Hamburg, Germany. In 1785, they established close ties with the Schiff family. Jacob Henry Schiff immigrated to America in 1865, joining Abraham Khun’s investment firm. Jacob married the daughter of Solomon Loeb, the head of Khun Loeb and Company of New York, in 1875. Jacob Schiff was promoted to the head of Khun Loeb in 1885, with the death of Solomon Loeb.[14] Solomon Loeb and Abraham Khun married each other's sisters. Felix Warburg married Jacob Schiff's daughter, Frieda. Paul, Felix Warburg's brother, married Solomon Loeb's daughter, Nina, from Loeb's second wife. Otto Kahn, another partner in Khun and Loeb, married one of the original investors at Goldman Sachs and Company. Two of Sach's sons married two Goldman daughters.[15]

These families were, and still are, prominent in American finances. It is important to appreciate the great lengths these families went to in order to keep the wealth and control within a close circle of strategically aligned families, all in the Rex Deus and Gnostic spirit of genealogies, which all operated as extended arms for the Rothschild empire, the covert stable of agents we discussed.

The power of the Rothschild empire continued to reach across the Atlantic and into America, where the Rothschilds funded a company in its infancy, Standard Oil. The family that owned and still maintains controlling interests in Standard Oil is the American powerhouse of Rockefeller. The Rockefeller empire, because of this, according to Gary Kah, owes its wealth, loyalty, and power to the Rothschilds.[16] Working through Wall Street and their strategic partners of Khun Loeb and Company, along with JP Morgan, the Rothschilds financed JD Rockefeller through the City Bank of Cleveland, a branch of the Rothschild empire, so that he could create Standard Oil.[17] The Rockefellers are renowned globalists and Masons. Today, the Rockefellers control four of the top seven of the world's largest oil companies that include Exxon, Standard Oil, Chevron, Mobil, Phillips 66, Marathon, and Texaco; and they further control 321 other oil companies.[18]

Similarly, the Rothschilds financed Edward Harriman (Union Pacific Railroad) and Andrew Carnegie (US Steel).[19] Carnegie, a Scot, made his first fortune in partnership with George Pullman (Pullman cars), who sold railroad cars to the railroad companies. One wonders, then, about the connection at this juncture to Edward Harriman of Union Pacific with Carnegie's first enterprise. Carnegie then collected a consortium of Scots in Pittsburg that bought up most of the existing steel companies, forming Carnegie Steel, which later became US Steel,[20] and all was funded by the Rothschilds and their stable of agents.

Carnegie Steel, then (and not coincidently), became the quintessential prototype for the modern industrial corporation, controlling every aspect of production as a completely and fully integrated, or “Vertically Integrated,” business. Carnegie Steel also introduced the concept of economies of scale in production. John Rockefeller learned, adopted, and applied these concepts with Standard Oil. Carnegie Steel was sold in 1901 to none other than the famous JP Morgan, and Carnegie’s proceeds were 300 *million* tax-free dollars.[21]

The JP Morgan Company, too, held an important partnership with the Rothschild empire. The Morgan family held great ties to the British Rothschilds and, therefore, became covert agents for them. The Rothschilds preferred to operate anonymously through the JP Morgan Company in America, as well as through Khun and Loeb and the Goldman Sachs Company. Even today, the Morgan legacy has tentacles holding enormous sway in both business and political theaters. Morgan employees hold large memberships in the diverse collection of secret societies of today. As Morgan leadership swayed, they were replaced by the Rockefeller family as the dominant financial and political force.[22]

The Rothschilds, working through the Rockefellers and Morgans, have gained a stranglehold on American corporations and power, all who wield this power for globalist purposes, just as the Rothschilds were able to do in Europe. The Rockefeller-Morgan-Rothschild axis has created a powerful corporate juggernaut that is unrivaled in the world today, all working resolutely for the Rex Deus agenda. Let us now briefly explore the globalist agenda funded and nurtured by the Rockefellers, Morgans, and Rothschilds.

Taking the control out of the hands of the people and their governments so that an elite group of potentates can perpetuate power through a manageable decade of puppet governments is a cornerstone of globalist doctrine. Globalists intend to provide a thin veneer of democracy, under which a privileged core of potentates will dictate world policy, just as they intend to provide a similar thin veneer of global free-market capitalism, where another predetermined core group of corporations controlled by Adepts will flourish as oligopolies within the varied industries (Progressive, state-sponsored, and corporate-partnered socialism: Hitler’s reincarnated left-wing, fascist socialism—Nazism). This is why we see democracies espousing poorly applied physical conservatism, partnered with public socialism on social issues. The New Atlantis will be a world designed to reflect the antediluvian organizational model, whereby the rich, powerful elites of society, the Adepts, will guard and hold most of the wealth, power, and knowledge through control of both powerful oligarchies and governments for their own self-interests. These greedy, power-hungry Adepts cloak their agenda under a veil of religious allegories and economic socialism that they distribute as opium for the mundane, ignorant, and unworthy masses.

Masonic/Rex Deus forces do not care whether the government is democratic or a dictatorship, for they will and do control both, generally through economic power levers in the form of money lent to disparate governments. Rex Deus then imposes their own unique form of social engineering, partnered with physical conservatism, designed to enhance and further their ultimate goals of free trade and globalism. The disparate globalist groups operate collectively from a predetermined vision, diligently dictated from a cohesive assembly of Adepts, which has been identified with many powerful organizations, including the New World Order, the Committee of Three Hundred, the Illuminati, and the Secret Brotherhood.[23]

Some believe this powerful, occultist assembly of Adepts is guided by nonhuman intelligences, described as *prison wardens or custodians*[24] (spiritual guides, demons, and/or fallen angels, and/or aliens). All this is consistent with the testimony from the Rosicrucians, the most illuminated of Freemasonry, and the Illuminati, who secretly plot and coordinate all this sedition, for they also converse regularly with spirit guides,[25] whom they secretly recognize as fallen angels and demons. And let us not forget the New Age and Theosophical religious leaders, who regularly converse with their superhuman spiritual guides, the Avatars.

The boldest gambit to date in the march to globalism has been the usurping of the power levers controlling economic prosperity. By this I mean the establishment of the Federal Reserve Banks/central banks of the great Western economies, in tandem with the World Bank, partnered with the International Monetary Fund (IMF). All are dominated, manipulated, and controlled by Masonic/Rex Deus/globalist forces. The central banks of the world, not the elected governments now control economic policy. One should note with particular relevance the first act of Tony Blair and his Labor government in Britain was to establish the Central Bank of England, thereby relinquishing Britain’s economic control levers, the last bastion of common sense among Western governments.

The IMF and the World Bank both perpetuate a sinister strategy over the poorer nations of the world. These organizations lend countries money until they have all but brought the poorer countries to economic ruin. Like drug dealers and pimps, first they irrevocably addict the victim on the credit narcotic, ensuring those nations are completely dependent for their survival upon the continuation of credit being granted, for they are no longer able to manage their debt or the enormous interest charges associated with it. Then these globalist pimps impose their will on the dependent victims, manipulating or coercing them into whatever globalist policies are in vogue at the time, for fear of being cut off from the supply of credit.

One might correctly surmise that the globalist money supply simultaneously addicted the great Western nations in a similar manner through the ill-advised deficit financing of their budgets in the 1970s and 1980s and once more in the wake of the 2008 global meltdown. Physical conservatism will once more be imposed alongside global socialism, for fear that the debt bonds will not be renewed unless the debt-ridden nations capitulate to the globalist agenda.

All this is yet another tentacle of the Rex Deus conspiracy. Rex Deus members surround themselves with the best-educated economists, bankers, industrialists, and capitalists—all educated at special, elitist universities—and have over many centuries gained control over most of the world's wealth. The money is then lent to governments and capitalists, who become their economic slaves, as they cannot pay it back, thereby bankrupting many nations, all to enforce their loyalty. All this was perfected in the twentieth century through covertly founded central banks that control the world's money supply.[26]

Does anyone really believe that any of their state/provincial or federal governments really have any say over their economic policies, including trade? The answer, of course, is "no." All such policy is dictated and controlled by the powerful globalists. This is why it matters not today what party or leader is in power, for their economic policies are identical for all practical applications. Because of their debts, governments take their marching and policy orders from those who control the money. If debt is not enough to control government policy, then the complete infiltration of governments at all levels by Masons and other globalists ensures the spurious will is carried out. The most powerful potentates, who include the Rothschilds, Morgans, and the Rockefellers, back the globalists. This is why politicians run on one set of pastoral principles in their platforms and adroitly implement different doctrines and policies as soon as they reach power. One only needs to look at Bill Clinton and Jean Chretien with respect to NAFTA and free trade as proof.

Among the first of these spurious, globalist institutions was the Federal Reserve in America. This most important bastion of Western economic leadership was established through persistent efforts by Illuminated Freemasonry in partnership with the Rothschild-Rockefeller-Morgan axis. The Morgans worked closely with the Rockefellers to conceive the founding of a banking cartel. They did this in a secret meeting held in 1910 at JP Morgan's private resort, on an island off the coast of Georgia.[27] Their subversive efforts paid off, with the suspicious passing and enactment of the Federal Reserve Bank Act while opposing congressmen had already adjourned for the Christmas holiday season, ensuring European Illuminists a permanent role in America's finances and its defacto economic destiny.[28]

Not many know that the United States Federal Reserve Bank is privately owned, for this fact is kept in relative secrecy. Most believe the Federal Reserve is government owned and government directed, but it is not. It is a private corporation held by stockholders, whose names are kept secret through the Federal Reserve Act. However, it has come to light that the Rothschilds and the Rockefellers are the most important and influential stockholders of the Federal Reserve.[29]

The top eight shareholders of the Federal Reserve are an intriguing cluster of strategic, covert partners. First, there is the Rothschild's Bank of London and Berlin. Then there are the Lazard brothers, who own the Bank of Paris. Next, we have the Israel Moses Seif Banks of Italy, followed by the Warburg Bank of Hamburg and Amsterdam, whom the Rothschilds are partners with. We then have the Lehman Brothers (who used to own the Bank of New York), as well as the Kuhn/Loeb Banks of New York, who also have the Rothschilds as partners. And, of course, we must not overlook the Chase Manhattan Bank of New York, which is owned by the Rockefellers and has merged with Citi Bank. Finally, there is the Goldman Sachs Bank of New York. Expect that Lehman Brothers will emerge reorganized from bankruptcy as a powerful phoenix company or that they will remain in parts within one of these powerful, banks. One can only interpret this institution through the lens of its powerful, capitalistic shareholders, all strategically aligned for hundreds of years as a giant globalist Leviathan, bent on biased globalist policies. The other central banks of the world contain the same sorts of shareholders.

To this globalist end, governments have been coerced by the banking cartel into sheltering enormous wealth created by bank profits through the establishment of seditious, tax-exempt foundations. Profits from the globalist banks are laundered into them, where they are, in turn, invested into other corporations that will further influence the global economy. By this diabolical scheme, an elite few capitalistic potentates/Adepts increasingly influence and manipulate the global economy, just as the so-called think tanks, also created by the same globalist forces, influence the opinions of the general public. Private foundations, complete with requisite laws, serve as tax shelters for the enormous wealth of the international banking cartel[30] controlled by Rex Deus and the Rothschild family, all to fund world government. The power of the Rockefellers, Warburgs, Schiffs, and Morgans has now shifted to their giant global foundations.[31]

CHAPTER 73

SECRET SOCIETIES AND THE NEW AGE OF ATLANTIS

In later times some will abandon the faith and follow deceiving spirits and things taught by demons. Such teachings come through hypocritical liars, whose consciences have been seared as with a hot iron. They forbid people to marry and order them to abstain from certain foods.

—1 Timothy 4:1–3

The most important political organization spawned by the banking cartel and the globalist forces, according to Gary Kah, is the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR).[1] Who created the CFR? What makes it so powerful? What is its hidden agenda?

CFR propaganda now overwhelmingly influences globalist policy.[2] The CFR is the contemporaneous epicenter for the political world union. The CFR came about from a secretive meeting held during World War I. President Woodrow Wilson formed a group, The Inquiry, to plan postwar solutions that were globalist in nature and centered on the removal of national and economic barriers and opening and up free trade.[3] After the close of World War I, at the Paris peace negotiations, Wilson commissioned Edward House to organize a dinner party to broach the idea of forming an institute to guide foreign policy.[4] The Inquiry, the Fabian Society, and the Rhodes Round Table groups led by Lord Milner later formed the Institute of International Affairs in the United States and the Royal Institute of International Affairs in England.[5] On July 21, 1921, the American entity officially changed its name to the Council on Foreign Relations, complete with a building donated for their cause by the Pratt family of Rockefeller's Standard Oil.[6]

The founding CFR president was John Davis, personal attorney for JP Morgan; the vice president, Paul Cravath, was an attorney representing Morgan properties. CFR Funding derived from a clan of bankers consisting of JD Rockefeller, JP Morgan, Bernard Baruch, Jacob Schiff, Otto Kahn, and Paul Warburg. Today's funding derives mainly from the Rockefeller Brothers Fund, the Starr Foundation, Pew Charitable Trusts, the Ford Foundation, the German Marshall Fund, the McKnight Foundation, the Dillion Foundation, Xerox, GM, Texaco, and Bristol-Meyers Squibb;[7] these are all tax-exempt foundations funded by banks. David Rockefeller was intensely involved with the CFR, along with the Bilderbergers and Trilateral Commission.[8]

The CFR is the source organization steering most other powerful globalist organizations. It publishes *Foreign Affairs*, the most prestigious journal read in foreign policy. Greer calls it the major policy-making institution of the American upperclass.[9] The CFR includes 2,670 fellows of the top leaders in government, business, education, labor, the military, media, and banking. The CFR has thirty-eight affiliate organizations, together known as Committees on Foreign Relations. Admiral Chester Ward, a former member of the CFR, warns that the CFR's objective is to bring about the surrender of national sovereignty and the natural independence of the United States. Some believe the CFR and Trilateral organizations to be the current (Rex Deus) vehicle to bring about world government.[10]

Noteworthy individuals that have dominated past American governments have been on this committee.[11] The Clinton administration included more than one hundred members from the CFR from the outset and appointed as many CFR members as ambassadors as they possibly could.[12] Clinton was believed selected by secret societies, according to Marrs, as a nominee to run for the presidency. Clinton also has membership in both the CFR and the Trilateral Commission. In the 2000 presidential election, both Gore and Bush had strong family ties to the CFR through their respective fathers, and Gore is a CFR member.[13] The Bush administration was well represented with CFR fellows, judging from his cabinet,[14] just as the CFR now controls Obama's globalist-bent government. George W. Bush took much of his advice from his father, who served on the CFR, as did Vice President Richard Cheney and Secretary of State Colin Powel.

The Trilateral Commission specializes in promoting world government through encouraging economic interdependence among the superpowers. It is a derivative of the CFR that began with the CFR's and the Bilderberger's blessing at the Rockefeller estate in Tarrytown, New York, July 23, 1972.[15] The commission was formed by Rockefeller, along with Henry Kissinger and Carter's future National Security Adviser Zbigniew Brzezinski,[16] and it drew its inspiration from Brzezinski's book *Between Two Ages*.[17] Carter, according to Sylvia Browne, was an unknown governor until the Trilateral Commission funded and popularized him, ensuring Carter would become president.[18] The CFR usually leads this organization;[19] members must, however, derive from the three economic superpowers—North America, Europe, and Japan—to foster better cooperation.[20]

According to Kah, the Trilateral Commission believes in a global government, a global monetary system, and a global tax policy.[21] It stands for global socialism built upon those who have subsidized these tenets. Expect that Western nations in the future will be enslaved to support have-not nations of the world.

The Bilderberger organization of Europe is yet another highly influential group of intrigue that is sponsored by the banks, the Rothschilds, and the Rockefellers, along with other globalist forces.[22] Some powerful Freemasons consider the Bilderbergers to be the most clandestine and sinister secret society of all.[23] It consists of approximately one hundred of the power elite from the NATO countries, maintaining its leadership from among CFR members. It was initially funded by National City Bank, the Morgan Trust, Standard Oil, Ford, and Dupont.[24]

In 1937, Prince Bernard married Princess Julianne of the Netherlands, becoming a major shareholder in Shell, along with Lord Victor Rothschild.[25] The Bilderbergers were founded in 1954 by Prince Bernard, at the urging of Lord Victor Rothschild, to bring together the world's most powerful figures once a year to meet on an agenda that is always kept secret.[26] The (tax-exempt) Rockefeller and Ford Foundations, in turn, fund this clandestine enclave of potentates.[27] Bilderbergers are nothing more than an unofficial CFR expanded for international scale, according to Neal Wilgus.[28] The European Economic Community (EEC) and its political confederation is the upshot of a well-planned plot by Bilderberger efforts.

The Bilderbergers Foundation was incorporated to bring about the union of all European nations into one economic, geopolitical, and militaristic entity. Their cause, according to Marr, just as it is the CFR's cause, is to bring about world government under the same model. Many of the Bilderbergers members include or have included the Who's Who of European royalty and the world's elite,[29] such as Nelson Rockefeller, Henry Kissinger, Cyrus Vance, Donald Rumsfeld, Gerald Ford, Helmut Schmidt, Giscard D'Estaing, Edmond De Rothschild, Prince Bernard, Henry Grunwald (*Time* Magazine), and Henry Heinz of HJ Heinz Company.[30] More recent attendees to these meeting have been George Bush, Sr. and Jr., Bill Clinton, Margaret Thatcher, John Major, Tony Blair, Bill Gates, David Rockefeller, Conrad Black, and Steven Spielberg.[31]

We must include into the mix the of elitist globalist organizations the renowned and infamous Club of Rome formed in 1968.[32] This organization contains less than one hundred members, whom are all CFR members.[33] The Club of Rome is alleged by some to report to the little-known (Snake) Committee of 300. It claims to understand the *problematique* of how the world will survive pollution, war, industrial development, over population, and similar problems.[34] They claim to hold the keys to world peace and global prosperity through world government.[35]

In 1973, the Club of Rome commissioned a report that was complete with contrived and anticipated apocalyptic problems and offered corresponding and supposedly ingenious resolution models for contrived future peak oil, population explosions, and the ever popular global-warming disasters.[36] This organization's stealthy purpose is to oversee the regionalization and then the unification of the entire world, which it has deviously divided into ten political and economic regions. Gary Kah rates the classification of this commission as one level higher than the Bilderbergers,[37] but it is still a Rex Deus-spawned organization.

One last secret organization of intrigue that demands notation is the ultra-secretive order George Bush, Sr. belongs to, the Skull and Bones. This is a secret fraternal order that only operates at Yale University. As per Marrs, its graduating members make up the cloak-and-dagger inner circle within the CFR that controls the CFR. Marrs notes that researchers point out that the order has been called the stepping stone to the CFR, Bilderbergers, and the Trilateral organizations. The emblem advertising the Skull and Bones is the crest for the Illuminati, while its insignia is the flag of the Knights Templar. Members are called "knights," fashioned after the Knights Templar. William Huntington Russell and Alphonso Taft, father to William Howard Taft, who later became President, imported the order out of Germany in 1832.[38]

Some prominent members of this secret society have been Henry Stimpson (Secretary of State under Roosevelt), Averill Harriman, Henry Luce (the publisher), and J. Richardson Dilworth (the longtime manager of the Rockefeller fortune). Others include Low, Taft, Forbes, Coolridge, and Delano. The Skull and Bones was a political recruiting agency that centered on the Harriman, Whitney, Vanderbilt, Lord, Taft, Bundy, Rockefeller,[39] Perkins, Stimson, Weyerhaeuser, Gilma, Wadsworth, Payne, Davidson, Pillsbury, Sloane, Phillips, and Brown families.[40] Both the Morgan and Rockefeller families and companies were, and are, well represented in this order.[41] George W. purportedly appointed eleven Skull and Bones members to his administration.[42]

Only fifteen members per year are initiated, limiting total active membership to 500 to 600 at a time.[43] All are political dynamos and corporate juggernauts; being Skull and Bones equates to socializing with the world's elite. With explicit emphasis on their family heritage and bloodlines, they arrange marriages to "protect and advance their genetic pseudo-blue bloods," while these intermingled families help and support each other in their quests for financial, political, and genetic dominance.[44]

What we must understand is that these spurious forces are indeed at work in all national governments, at all levels of the world, including the United Nations, which is one of the most successful globalist offshoots.

Following is a list of prominent American presidents and presidential candidates, along with their globalist connections, as a testimony to this conspiracy:[45]

Roosevelt/Mason
Truman/Mason
Kennedy/CFR
Johnson/Mason
Nixon/CFR
Ford/Mason, CFR
Carter/CFR, Trilateral
Reagan/Mason
Bush, Sr./CFR-Illuminati, Trilateral, Skull and Bones
Adlai Stevenson/CFR
Goldwater/Mason
McGovern/Mason, CFR, Trilateral
Dukakis/CFR
Bush, Jr./CFR, Skull and Bones,
Kerry/CFR, Skull and Bones

The following additional Presidents were all Freemasons:

George Washington
James Buchannon
James Garfield
Warren Harding
Andrew Jackson
Andrew Johnson
William McKinley
James Monroe
James Polk
Teddy Roosevelt[46]

The founding of geopolitical/economic organizations with Masonic pyramids of money is one aspect of globalism, but we ought not to forget their second pillar of influence: think tanks. It should come as no surprise that the Rockefeller Foundations are the sources for these North American think tanks, and they fund them to be propaganda divisions. The primary goals of these think tanks are to influence and manipulate education and public opinion through producing studies and reports that promote the globalist ideals. They further include a secondary sinister objective, the degradation of Christian credibility. According to Kah, think tanks are neither concerned with truth or fact, only their political ambitions to promote globalism in the face of their enemy, Christianity, is all-important.[47]

Kah states that the findings of these think tanks are usually concocted and unsupported theories of deception that the media then quotes as facts for the persuasion of public opinion. Education systems print these deceptions as facts in textbooks to diabolically deceive the young, preparing their naive minds for world union.[48] These conclusions are not the harsh delusions of a paranoid conspirator; the facts are available for all to peruse. Remember that the threefold strategy for world government is being waged through Freemasonry, education, and the infiltration of the Christian church. Rex Deus's stable-agents inspire these covert operations. Documented sedition by Rex Deus is to impose unproven scientific theory, through the schools, as fact and then to employ the press to maliciously brainwash the masses, skillfully backing up the lies. Rex Deus points to its two greatest achievements as Darwinism and Marxism,[49] likely followed by socialism, Nazism, and the upstart global warming and over-population deceptions. Hitler was a firm believer in Social Darwinism.

Darwin was not the objective, secular scholar he has been canonized to be; he was close friends with Max Muller, who translated the *Rig Vedas*. Darwin was profoundly influenced by mysticism, frequently attending séances with George Elliot.[50] Evolution likely emanated out of Darwin's hidden bias and devotion to mysticism and the Upanishad scripture, *Samkhra*. This is a material world prison philosophy of earthly atheism, a perennial philosophy, as Armstrong presents it, where humans are perpetually cursed to be born and die in nature, but the spirit evolves (to godhood) throughout the eternal process.[51] Thus, Darwin developed a derisive, degrading philosophy, funded by the Royal Society, to dismiss monotheism.

Education's task is to destroy Christianity and to prepare the world to accept world government without violence. Educators are succeeding in directing the minds of the masses to believe in vain conceptions, fantastic theories, and Progressive ideas manifested in all forms of literature and entertainment, which are, according to the Rex Deus writers The Elders of Zion, "senseless, abominable, and filth, all to obscure the real truth of the true objectives."

The press and media are further drafted in support of these causes. The media has been targeted by the liberals commissioned by Freemasonry. Media organizations are bound together with professional secrecy, a "Masonic solidarity" that acts as the watch guard over the greater ideals. Rex Deus and Freemasonry use the media so they can remain undiscovered, ensuring the media supports their grandiose, made-up theories, such as Darwinism[52] and global warming.

CFR people now dominate and control education worldwide. The first objective was to promote socialism and globalism within the education system, preparing the youth for the New Babel. The ever-growing Rockefeller Fund has a one-world strategy with an explicit global perspective and an emphasis on the convergence of national and international frameworks.[53] Educational institutions adopted the views of John Dewey, the father of Progressive education. Kah describes Dewey as a self-professed atheist who did not believe in moral absolutes (Christianity).[54] The second directive in the preparation for the New Babel is the de-Christianizing of the world's youth through the education system, as per Dewey's adopted views.

Once people reach adulthood, they have been completely indoctrinated against Christian thought, thereby embracing doctrines upheld by the spurious beliefs and religions, complete with the ideal of world unity at any cost! Our youth have been well prepared for Gnostic revelations that will break modern Christianity to pieces through the de-deifying of Jesus. The media is encouraged to discredit Christianity with the most disturbing and unprincipled expressions and allegations,[55] which would incite violence and revolution if expressed against any other religion. Christianity must be destroyed so that the entire world will accept the future Antichrist.

The Papacy is the only real force that Rex Deus recognizes as a legitimate threat. Rex Deus plans to destroy the Catholic clergy and priesthood, ruining the Catholic mission on earth, as well as the balance of Christianity, leaving only an unrecognizable remnant. Once the papal court and Christianity have been destroyed, Rex Deus will come rushing forth in their defense to prevent further bloodshed[56] and reshape the remnants into their new, universal religion.

Environmental organizations are also sponsored by sinister globalist forces pursuing globalist agendas. Globalists have targeted environmentalism, knowing it is the perfect platform to promote global doctrines because of the emotional and strong opinions people hold about the environment issue. The environmental question has the intriguing power to cross all national, political, and religious boundaries to unite people from one end of the earth to the other. The ultimate objective of all these green groups, other than the obvious environmental objectives, is to form a world organization to bind all nations, and all peoples, to global environmental policies and laws. One wonders about the accuracy of the statistics and the motives of people and groups, such as Al Gore, who have taken global warming as their agenda. Is global warming yet another fantastic theory unleashed to channel the world into accepting world government?

One such high profile San Francisco environmental agency, the Gorbachev Foundation, is a lightning rod for consolidating environmentalism with world government. Evidently, Gorbachev endeavored to bring about a figurative, global Perestroika. His organization, which has enormous global influence, is a partner of globalism with a blueprint for world takeover. The Gorbachev Foundation has also created the Earth Charter, a Ten Commandments for human behavior on the environment that is expected to be adopted in the near future.[57]

Globalist pantheism was reinvented as Theosophy by the legendary Helen Petrovina Blavatsky and Colonel Henry Steel Olcott on November 17, 1875, in New York.[58] Blavatsky was born a Russian aristocrat. She spent her childhood studying the occult in her great grandfather Prince Paul Dolgorouski's library. Dolgorouski was a high initiate in the Rite of Strict Observance Order. Helen joined the Egyptian Brotherhood of Luxor in Cairo, where she became an accomplished occultist with an encyclopedic knowledge. Blavatsky was in close contact with all the most influential occultists of her time, during which the Hermetic Brotherhood of Luxor and the Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn were the most important Theosophical orders providing occult training.[59]

Blavatsky published an enormous opus on ancient mythology, *Isis Unveiled*. Her final work, *The Secret Doctrine*, is a commentary on the book of Dzyan, supposedly written in Atlantis. Blavatsky believed there have been five intelligent races to occupy the earth; we are the fifth, while the Atlanteans (giants) were the fourth.[60]

During the Middle Ages, Theosophist philosophy was housed in Masonry, medieval mysticism, and Rosicrucianism.[61] According to Peter Marshall, the Theosophical Society adopted alchemical and Hermetic traditions to build a bridge between science and religion, endeavoring to develop the spiritual powers of humanity.[62] Theosophy evolved to become the nucleus for a universal brotherhood[63] and is a definitive synthesis of all religions; it has declared itself to be the all-encompassing, universal ultra-religion of the future.[64]

Theosophy’s foundation was originally set in esoteric Buddhism and contained a hierarchy of Secret Masters, or Avatars.[65] Theosophist philosophy is conspicuous, according to the *Encyclopedia Americana*, among the religious systems of India, China, and Egypt. These Adepts, Sages, and Secret Masters are revered as “highly evolved men” who have acquired divine power[66] and who endeavor to develop the New Man on earth. Blavatsky conducted séances in which she revealed letters from this ascended Order of Masters, whom she referred to vicariously as the Great White Brotherhood.

Evolution of the soul (spirit) is at the heart of the Theosophist religion. Theosophists believe when the Spark of Life, the evolving soul, reincarnates into the highest life form in sufficient numbers, humankind will ascend to a higher plane of being. Theosophists further believe the human ethos first took human form on planets other than earth. The last planet was Mars, and the next planet will be Venus. At the end of this age, Theosophists believe worthy humans will ascend to become the “architects” of future universes,[67] like Lucifer. Untold numbers have carried the Theosophist torch over the last century, including many powerful dignitaries of our age. The New Age movement of today, according to John Michael Greer, is nothing more than “Theosophy plus,” drawing all of its inspiration from Theosophy’s occultism of the last century.[68]

Alice Bailey was a major supporter of the Theosophical Society. Bailey founded the Lucis Trust, originally known as Lucifer’s Press, an offshoot of the Theosophical Society[69] designed to publish the teachings from her spirit guides. She also founded the Theosophical Network in 1961, which has established arcane schools and organizations such as World Goodwill, which formed another occultist organization called World Union, all dedicated to implementing world government. Bailey’s arcane schools teach occult philosophy received by Bailey from her purported Tibetan spirit guides, Kuthumi and Djwal Khul, to initiate a “New Group of World Servers” to assist the Masters of the Great White Lodge.[70] The White Lodge in Theosophist and occultic systems is a Secret (Snake) Brotherhood of Advanced Souls that forms the hidden government of the world. This alleged and extremely powerful organization is further known in occultism to be the Great White Brotherhood. Kah has found that all these groups are directly linked to the World Constitution Parliament Association.[71]

Bailey stated Freemasonry is the training school for advanced occultists.[72] The Lucis Trust and its derivative organizations are plugged into the highest levels of Freemasonry. Past members of the Lucis Trust disquietingly include David Rockefeller, Robert McNamara, Donald Regan, Henry Kissinger, Paul Volcker, and George Shultz—all members of the CFR and Trilateral Commission.[73] All globalist organizations link directly back to both pantheistic and Masonic organizations that report to the Great White Lodge. All are the fanatical foes of the true faith.[74]

CHAPTER 74

THE ILLUMINATI

Again, you have heard it said to the people long ago, "Do not break your oath, but keep the oaths you have made to the Lord." But I tell you, Do not swear at all; either by heaven, for it is God's throne; or by the earth, for it is his footstool; or by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the Great King. And do not swear by your head, for you cannot make one hair white or black. Simply let your "Yes" be "Yes," and your "No" be "No"; anything beyond this comes from the evil one.

—Matthew 5:33–37

Who is the small clandestine circle renowned as the Illuminati, the infamous 300 of the New World Order and the commission that controls the CFR through the Skull and Bones?

The Illuminati is a surreptitious Luciferic organization founded on May 1, 1776, in Ingolstadt, Bavaria, by the rebel professor of canon Adam Weishaupt, a prominent Mason.[1] Weishaupt was a dedicated student of the liberal philosophy proposed by Voltaire and others[2] that opposed Roman

Catholic tyranny and its puppet governments.[3] The originating founders were upper-class intellectuals, all with the yearning to be freed from government and religious oppression. Hence, *Illuminati* defined itself as “the enlightened ones; those initiated into the secret teachings of Lucifer the light bearer.” The term *Adept* identified the august members to the Order of the Illuminati.[4]

Brown cites an earlier genesis to the Illuminati that blends into other sources. Brown suggests the Illuminati was formed in the 1500s, in Rome, by an enlightened group of mathematicians, astronomers, and physicists to oppose the narrow-minded views of the Roman Church. Brown asserts that Galileo formed the first think tank and referred to this committee as the Enlightened Ones, the “Illuminati,” who led this noble group of intellects. The Roman Church ruthlessly hunted this elitist organization. After Galileo was placed under house arrest, the Roman Illuminati degraded into complete upheaval, fleeing Italy and vanishing into a deep, underground guise. This underground group later resurfaced among the Bavarian Stonemasons that included the Rothschilds and the Bilderbergers. Freemasons subsequently adopted the Illuminati as a Bavarian Brotherhood.[5]

The primary goal of the Illuminati is to bring about the New World Order.[6] The second goal is to utterly destroy Christianity via their own religion of mysticism,[7] likely through Gnostic infiltration of Christian churches. The Illuminati realizes Christianity must be reeled in before world government and the universal religion can take hold. More succinctly stated, the true purpose to the Illuminati is to destroy all religions that are not pantheistic, overthrow all national governments, and abolish all private poverty.[8] The Bavarian government concluded the Illuminati plotted to overthrow governments and abolish Christianity. Wilson wrote that the Illuminati guard closely one of their innermost secrets: their surreptitious schema to obliterate Christianity, for they pretend to have the sole true religion of Lucifer.[9] Even more concerning is that the Illuminati have purportedly adopted the philosophy of Machiavelli (1469–1527), who taught that “the end justifies the means.” Nazis implemented this philosophy—with horrific results.[10]

The Illuminati infiltrated Freemasonry in 1782;[11] although some sources backdate this to 1777.[12] Weishaupt is touted as a Masonic reformer.

This was a marriage made in spurious heaven, for the goal from Freemasonry's inception was to bring about the New World Order. The Rex Deus-sponsored Freemasonry fraternity welcomed its spurious and mystic cousins of Luciferian devotion while savoring Weishaupt's belief that the Illuminati were created to rule the world.[13]

Brown writes that the Illuminati grew rapidly within the friendly confines of Freemasonry, evolving into a secret society within a secret society, and then eventually taking complete control of the organization. The Illuminati exploited Freemasonry's worldwide network for their own New World Order agenda. They further utilized Freemasonry's far-flung network to infiltrate all elitist organizations around the world, which included Masonry organizations of every kind, the major banks, and governments. Brown goes on to note that the Illuminati, through Freemasonry (canker worm) organizations, founded and funded the major banks, industries, and universities around the world to further propagate their (radical) agenda.[14]

One who rises to the Level of Perfection, complete enlightenment, is recognized as an Adept. This title is awarded to fellows of the secret order within the innermost circles of Masonic hierarchy, the Illuminati. Only Adepts, Illuminated Masons, know the true secrets; they belong to both Freemasonry and Illuminati organizations.[15] Remember, the enlightened ones, the Adepts, have been completely initiated into the secret teachings of the light bearer, Lucifer.[16] Early twentieth-century writers such as Nesta Webster and Augustin de Barruel, a Jesuit priest, argued the Illuminati were merely pawns in a larger game manipulated by Jewish Satanists.[17] The Illuminated, then, report directly to the authentic Princes of Masonry, the Jewish Satanists of Rex Deus.

Hence, the Princes of Masonry comprise the foremost inner circle of the Illuminati and Rosicrucianism. Hereditary Rex Deus Adepts are purposefully selected from within the dynastic inheritance (bloodlines) passed down the generations from father to son. The chosen are brainwashed from childhood to ensure full comprehension of the secret knowledge, religion, and seditious objectives. The true knowledge and doctrines are kept from all outside the chosen bloodlines, no matter how talented, how rich, or how powerful, for they are considered unfit to receive this knowledge.[18]

Conspiracy theorists claim the order's secret Adepts are funded by thirteen families, including the Rothschilds, all who are regarded as human gods plotting world government for thousands of years. This plot is scheduled to culminate in the next few decades.[19] The alleged Rex Deus genius Adepts are mentored from childhood to rule the world, utilizing Masonic soldiers and other organizations.[20] Thus, Freemasonry was coopted to bring about the Illuminati agenda. Kah describes Freemasons as soldiers of the New Religion,[21] led by Adepts, who are led by the bona fide super Adepts of Rex Deus. Only Rex Deus Adepts will be permitted to reign, because only they have the true understanding and wisdom.[22]

Below the thirteen families is their representative Council of Thirty-Three, The Great Druid Council, followed by The Committee of Three Hundred consisting of Illuminated Freemasons. All were linked to the Elders of Zion in the assassinated German Jewish industrialist Walter Rathenau's book *Kriegsfuhrung Und Politik* and to other modern conspiracy advocates. Rathenau is thought to have defected from Elders of Zion.[23]

Common propaganda promoted by governments, universities, and elitist organizations is that the Illuminati became extinct within the confines of Freemasonry, but this is not true, for the Illuminati is thriving at the innermost center,[24] just as it is in the CFR and in Skull and Bones. The BBC reported on November 16, 1984 that the famous British philanthropist and financier Cecil Rhodes was a member of the Illuminati. His famous trust established the Rhodes Scholarships funded by Nathan Rothschild and designed to recruit the brightest young minds into the Illuminati, of which Bill Clinton was one.[25] When the famous Thirty-third Degree Adept and Illuminati fellow George Bush, Sr. was the head of the CIA, he determinedly and officially closed down the investigation into the Illuminati for all time—due to lack of evidence![26]

Dr. Carroll Quigley, mentor to Clinton, admits Rhodes, a gold and diamond baron, formed a Society of the Elect in 1891 to absorb wealth and to establish world government. He formed Round Table groups with help from the Fabian Society and Woodrow Wilson's The Inquiry to accomplish these goals,[27] which, as you will recall, led to the CFR. The Fabian Society was the British and European face for socialism. It was founded in 1884 by a coterie of Progressive intellectuals, such as Bernard Shaw and Anne

Besant, the successor to Blavatsky in the Theosophy Society. It further founded the English Labor Party to further its socialistic agenda.[28] Quigley maintains Rhodes Scholarships are merely a facade to conceal the secret society that drafts elite minds to attain world government.[29]

Let us not forget the influence the Illuminati has wielded in the last 300 years. They manifested the Templar dream, the American Revolution, as the model for the coming United States. Soon after, the Illuminati instigated the French Revolution that endeavored to install Duc D'Orleans, Illuminati, on the French throne. A BBC historical piece on Churchill's life noted that the *London Herald* published a statement by Churchill in the February 8, 1920 edition condemning the Illuminati and warning the British people of its worldwide conspiracy. Furthermore, according to Dan Brown, Churchill once lectured reporters that if English spies infiltrated the Nazis to the scale the Illuminati infiltrated Parliament, the war would have been over in one month.[30]

Churchill believed the Illuminati were responsible for Karl Marx and the Communist Revolution, both for the purpose of bringing about the New World Order.[31] Brown writes that Illuminati support for both Marx and the Russian Revolution has been well documented.[32] Epperson notes Communists merely perpetuate the ideas of the Illuminati.[33] All this suspicion connects back to Rex Deus, the elemental Illuminati, who inconceivably take credit for being the authors of Marxism and Communism, labeling them "Social Masonry."[34] The global elite created and financed Communism but later lost control of it.

Before the revolution, Trotsky lived rent-free, care of Standard Oil; he was financed by Jacob Schiff, Rockefeller Banks, Paul Warburg, and Kuhn & Loeb. Woodrow Wilson forced the Canadian government to free Trotsky after he was arrested in Halifax en route to Russia, while Lenin was financed by Max Warburg.[35] Hence, Booth notes Marxism was merely materialistic reframing of Freemasonry ideology by Trotsky and Lenin; both were fervent Freemasons employed to launch an aggressive war against God.[36]

One then wonders about the philosophy of Pierre-Joseph Proudhon. Was fascist, left-wing anarchism advocating violent revolution sponsored by organized secret societies[37]—yet another Rex Dues plot? Was anarchism created, like the Muslim Brotherhood, to cattle-herd mundane masses into world government by utilizing polar opposites from the right and the left? Certainly, Fascist Islamists follow the Abd Al-Wahhab sect that later became a covert arm of Nazi intelligence in World War II. After the war, the Muslim Brotherhood fled Egypt to Saudi Arabia, a Wahhabi stronghold, care of the CIA Director and globalist Allen Dulles. One of the Brotherhood's favored students who taught the arts of Fascism and Nazism was Osama Bin Laden, whom the globalist CIA Director George Bush, Sr. drafted in 1979 C.E. to battle the Russians as the Mujahideen, which later morphed into Al-Qaeda.[38]

Similarly, Rex Deus financed the rise of Hitler to check the Communist mistake, through powerful German corporations and banks such IG Farben group of companies, UBC, Warburg's Deutsche Bank, and Schroroeder Rockefeller and Company. Farben, for example, was funded by the American government's Dawes Plan (1924, to restructure German war reparations, whereby Carroll Quigley called it largely a J. P. Morgan production to consolidate the German steel and chemical giants I. G. Farben and Vereinigre Stahlwerke that were major supporters of Hitler) and the Young Plan (1928, named for the J. P. Morgan agent D. Young that required burdensome monetary payments, which led to support within Germany for Hitler), which virtually guaranteed success for the fledgling Nazi companies.

The Schroeder Bank acted as financial agents for Germany in Britain and America, utilizing John Foster Dulles, while entering into a formal relationship with Schroeder Rockefeller and Company. Rockefeller owned 42 percent of Schroeder. One year after a meeting in 1924 at Schroeder's home to launch Hitler's career, Alfred Rosenberg met with English financiers, including Rothschild's Bank of England, solidifying finances through the Bank of International Settlements (BIS). It was managed, as per Quigley, by the bank cartel to secretly manage the coming war. By World War II, the Nazis controlled the BIS through the Schroeder and Reichstag Banks.[39]

Max and Paul Warburg were directors for Farben, while Metz of Farben was a director for the Warburg Bank of Manhattan. The powerful families of the banking cartel sat on most Nazi corporations and banks, and vice versa. John Foster and Allen Dulles were spurious lawyers for this web, working for IG Farben, Rockefeller & Schroeder, the Schroeder Bank, GAF, with UBC and BIS acting as conduits for money laundered to the

Nazis. Both Dulles were CFR, with John becoming Secretary of State and Allen CIA Director. Prescott Bush and his son George served on UBC's board. Prescott Bush was a driving force behind the creation of the CIA that Rumsfeld later appointed George to run. Ed Harriman was a mentor to Prescott, while the Harrimans held large ownership in UBC; Harrimans also bought the oldest bank in the US, Brown Brothers.[40]

Emphasizing the unbridled power of Rex Deus was Woodrow Wilson, who later orated three radio addresses in 1921 warning the American public of the Illuminati takeover of the US banking system. He underscored that there is a power so organized, so complete, and so pervasive that none had better speak above their breath when they speak in condemnation of it.[41] One must analyze all this global conspiracy by the evidence brought forth; all these far-flung, clandestine factions must be working under one umbrella organization, in unison, to bring about the universal, spurious religion of the end times, together with world government.

CHAPTER 75

GLOBAL GNOSTICISM

> *But I am afraid that just as Eve was deceived by the serpent's cunning, your minds may somehow be led astray from your sincere and pure devotion to Christ. For if someone comes to you and preaches a Jesus other than the Jesus we preach, or if you receive a different spirit from the one you received, or a different gospel from the one you accepted, you put up with it easily enough … for such men are false apostles.*
>
> —2 Corinthians 11:3–13

Let us now steal a moment to consider the Gnostics. How did Gnosticism weave its way into the fabric as a Genesis 6 Conspiracy imperative?

Gnosticism was popular and powerful in Jesus' time; in fact, Gnosticism reached its pinnacle around 200 C.E.,[1] even though it has risen again and again in other incarnations over the last 2,000 years.

Early Christians believed the founder of Gnosticism to be Simon the Magus,[2] spoken of in the New Testament as Simon the Sorcerer;[3] although, Simon was not the founder, for Gnosticism was flourishing previous to Simon. Simon was, however, a weighty dignitary for Gnosticism and mysticism of that period. Scripture views him as the first heretic[4] and a sorcerer from Samaria who astonished people with his magic. He boasted he was someone great; even his followers thought he had divine power, known as the "Great Power" (Acts 8:9–10). When Simon saw the power of the Holy Spirit working in Peter and John, he offered to purchase the power, but of course, he was rejected (Acts 8:18–25).

For early Christians, Simon was a false prophet who thought of himself as a messiah figure. He cast doubt upon both Jesus' and Peter's authority, acting adroitly in the Spirit of the Antichrist. According to Baigent and Leigh, Christians viewed Simon's power as sorcery, believing he was employing his powers in an endeavor to usurp the early Christian church. Simon was thus an early Antichrist prototype for all black magicians and necromancers to follow, including Aleister Crowley.[5] Simon was likely educated in Alexandria, where he would have learned all of the mystical arts and knowledge that had been gathered there in the infamous city of ancient learning and the epicenter for modern mysticism.[6]

Not only did Simon the Magus vindictively try to cast doubt upon Peter's authority in the Gnostic accounts,[7] but also Gnostics further believe James (Joseph of Arimathea), not Peter, eventually inherited the apostolic succession from John and Jesus. Gnostics believe Simon Magus was a favored disciple of John the Baptist and that John named Simon as his successor.[8] Gnostics also believe John the Baptist was an Essene and not a monotheistic Christian or Jew.

As noted by Robert Smith, until the eighteenth century, all older dualist sects now called Gnostic were classified as Manicheans.[9] Manicheans were followers of Mani, who drew breath from 216 C.E. to 276 C.E.[10] Christian Gnosticism was conceded by historians to have been the largest influence upon Mani. Mani was raised among (numinous) Jewish Christians, the Elchasaitans—Gnostics that were linked back to the Gnostic Essenes of the Dead Sea region. Mani rebelled against the puritanical nature of the Nazarite Essenes and then later collected books of sacred knowledge gathered from Egyptian Gnostics. During the first century to the third century C.E., the Gnostics of Alexandria and Syria gathered all mystical thought together and then overlaid it with Christianity.[11]

Manicheans were persecuted by Catholicism as practicers of a pagan religion. Mani claimed to be an apostle of Christ, but Manicheans and Paulicians saw themselves valiantly as Christian dualists. Mani further considered himself a messenger from God and a successor to Christ, and he thought that he was the end of a long line of heavenly apostles. Does this ring familiar? Roman Catholic literalists purged Christian mystics, identifying Gnostics as heretics, along with any who disagreed with them. Catholicism maintained this methodical persecution to the point that by the sixth century C.E., it seemed that the interpretive sects had all but been wiped out. Evidently, the only surviving sects of the allegorical approach communed in diminutive enclaves among the Manicheans, Messalians, and Paulicians.[12]

Cathars believed genocidal purges made against the Christian Gnostics in the fourth to sixth centuries forced the true church underground, along with allegorical interpretations of Scripture, and that it awoke with a new sense of exuberance in the tenth century among the Bogomils.[13] Freemasonry believes it is the current underground supplier to the world for Manichean and Cathar dogma.[14]

Manicheans were a palpable dualist, good-versus-evil religion built upon the ancient Egyptian religion, along with various versions of Asian and Middle Eastern mysticism, Greek philosophy, alternative interpretations of (mystical) Christianity and Judaism. Manicheanism was Gnosticism, according to Bauval and Hancock, the chief rival religion to Roman Catholic hegemony.[15] Mani fanatically believed he was the continuation of a lineage of prophets and enlighteners that began with Adam and included Buddha, Zoroaster (Zarathustra), and Jesus; he believed that he, and they, were the messengers of the true, universal religion that would someday replace all others.[16] Mani additionally counted Hermes, Plato, Seth, Enoch/Thoth, Noah, and Abraham as saviors of humankind.[17] Manicheans regarded Hermes as equal to Zarathustra, Plato, Buddha, and Jesus, for all were known as “the Good Ones to the World.” Mani believed all these emissaries were sent from God as apostles for different generations.[18]

The Gnostic/Theosophist dogma of messengers/prophets sent to every generation and every people is a clever manipulation that craftily perverts the true doctrine of messengers from God Most High. These purported polytheist prophets of false gods and Satan are intermixed with authentic prophets such as Moses, Abraham, Mohammad, and Jesus and corrupting the monotheist message of God's messengers. This intermingling's design is to confuse and persuade the ignorant and the naive that a combination of polytheism, Gnosticism, and Theosophy is the true religion of the world.

Generally speaking, Gnostics tend to divide themselves into sects, such as Archontics, Sethites, Babelites, etc., just as Christians have many denominations. Gnostics tend to place inordinate importance upon genealogies; it is a distinguishing and acknowledged mark of Gnostic literature that expresses Gnostics' sense of identity (and loyalty) through complex genealogical myths of origin.[19] It was to these endless lists of genealogies that Paul was speaking to in 1 Timothy, with regard to Gnosticism (1 Tim. 1:3–4). The genealogical record is, and was, a distinguishing mark of the Essenes, Rex Deus, and the Dragon Court.

Gnosticism is a particular form of universal mysticism that incorporates the traditions of India, Persia, Egypt, Chaldea, Greece, Rome, and the Druids. Mackey notes that old Gnosticism was not an original religious system but rather a cosmogony, a religion, and a philosophy comprised of the old Grecian and Orientalist systems, including the Platonism of the Greeks, the Parisism of the Persians, and the Kabbalah of the Jews. All came together as a new conglomeration of mystical philosophy and religion that further derived its leading doctrines from Plato-Avesta, the Kabbalah, the *Vedas*, and ancient hieroglyphs from Egypt.[20] In fact, according to Baigent and Leigh, Hinduism, Buddhism, Taoism, mystic Christianity, mystic Judaism, and mystic Islam are all considered Gnostic, just as Hermeticism (Sabians) is Gnostic.[21] Daoism, specifically, is a religion that seeks immortality through cultivating Dao (gnosis), the doctrines and secrets of the immortals.[22] Gnosticism is a unifying populace religion that I call "global mysticism" or "global Gnosticism."

Gnostics believe their unifying religion originated in Persia with Zoroastrianism,[23] but its roots go back much further. Zoroaster/Zarathrustra was thought by some to be a pagan Persian priest (circa 660–583 B.C.E.);[24] he was brutally slain at age seventy-seven on his own altar by rival priests of the old religion. Most historians date the visionary priest back to 1200 B.C.E. and to the Indo-Aryans, when the supreme god, Mazda, commissioned Zoroaster to restore order. He believed there existed both the supreme god of good, *Ahura Mazda*, and the wicked spirit of evil, *Angra Mainyu*, primordial twins who were equal but opposite by choice. Zoroaster enshrined dualism into the Aryan pantheon, whereby Amrita immortals were created to help Mazda, while Devas were later created to promote evil for Indra and the hostile spirit. The hostile spirit invaded the perfect world of Mazda, creating two warring factions that will continue until the end times, when newly descending immortals and a promised messiah will wipe the earth of wickedness; a river of fire will incinerate the hostile spirit.[25] One cannot ignore how these doctrines parallel monotheism, suggesting to me the Qur'an is correct when it notes monotheistic Zoroastrianism scripture was perverted at some point with polytheism.

By the beginning of the first millennium B.C.E., Avestan Aryan Zoroastrianism migrated to Iran,[26] steadfastly increasing its influence and populism. By 241 C.E., Parthian King Shappur began his reign by calling on the god Ahura Mazda to buttress his claim to the throne and to unite his empire under one dualist religion. Evolved Zoroastrianism was the first creed religion that set its beliefs down in a statement of oaths. This new, state-sponsored religion drew its subjects together into a holy community, binding them to a single purpose—every subject of Shappur was a holy soldier set adroitly against the demonic spirited Ahriman.[27] This political/religious solution was enthusiastically implemented later by Constantine with Catholicism and by modern Freemasonry and Gnosticism.

Islam subsequently pushed Zoroastrianism out of Persia; the refugee remnant migrated to India to live among the Parsee, of which 75 percent profess to be Zoroastrians.[28] Like most of the ancient, pagan religions, Zoroastrianism survived, obscured within Gnosticism and Theosophy, through Mithraism and then Manichaeism. No doubt, this is likely because of Mani. Mani claimed to have had visions as a child from Ahura Mazda.[29]

Hermeticism originated in Egyptian science and was later blended with Neo-Platonism, Zoroastrianism, Gnosticism, and Judaism.[30] Today, the Mandaean/Sabian/Hermeticism cosmology is believed to be the surviving global Gnostic religion, and Theosophy is its western heir. *Mandaeans* derived from the mingling of Gnosticism with Zoroastrianism; Mandaeans further believe they are the followers and disciples of John the Baptist, whom they believe founded the Mandaean sect. They further claim that they originally lived among the Gnostic Nazorean sect of Palestine led by John the Baptist, and they believe John the Baptist was a Gnostic, just as they also believe Jesus was a Gnostic.[31] Remember, too, that Simon the Magus was believed by Gnostics to have succeeded John the Baptist.

As to John the Baptist being a Gnostic, a Sabian, a Mandaean, a Zoroastrian, or any polytheist, these ideas are utterly false and spurious. The Qur’an completely backs John the Baptist as a monotheistic messenger and prophet from the true God Most High and the one who cleared the way for Jesus.[32]

Mandaeans name their priests “Nazoreans,” as guardians of the true faith.[33] The Nazarite sect originally derived from ancient Judah. Samson of the tribe of Benjamin was considered Nazarite, and Jesus was also considered to be a Nazarite by Gnostics. The Merovingian kings promoted themselves as Nazarite kings of Benjamite descent, who held Samson in high esteem. Gnostics have twisted the original Nazarite meaning, transforming its authentic discipline into that of those who guard and keep the secret knowledge from heaven. Accordingly, the Mandaean name derives from *Mandayya*, meaning “heavenly knowledge.”[34] They guard the illicit knowledge from heaven and the Seven Sacred Sciences, just as the Freemason organizations do.

All Gnostic sects were considered Manicheans after the third century C.E. Manicheans survived in remote enclaves until late in the sixth century C.E., when Manichaeism once more burst into a dominant religion.[35] Manichaeism grew to be a worldwide religion with its own canon. It surged from southern Mesopotamia to the Atlantic in the West; to the Pacific in the Far East; and included people of Egypt, North Africa, Spain, Gaul, Italy, and the Balkans.[36] Manicheans preserved the traditions of Alexandria, as did the Syrian Gnostics, who also included those who believed in mystical Christianity that they later passed down to the Bogomils in the tenth century C.E. and the Cathars in the twelfth century C.E. Manicheans were completely anti-Christianity as it applied to literalist Catholics; Catholics expelled the dualists to the distant east in the seventh century.[37]

Manicheans were a younger sect than some of the earlier Christian Gnostic sects, but they were (at least) a century older than the *Messalians*, who were also persecuted by Catholicism.[38] According to Steve Runciman, Messalians were Christian Gnostics who traced their heritage back to the infamous city of Edessa, to the mid-fourth century C.E., home of the Shroud. The Messalians survived into the seventh century C.E., where it is thought that they were likely adopted into the Paulician sect. Messalians were renowned as the keepers of secret knowledge and the keepers of Gnostic tradition, which Runciman believes included the library of ancient knowledge later inherited by the Bogomils. Messalian refugees survived into the eleventh century C.E. in the Balkans, home of the Bogamils.[39]

The monk Peter of Sicily, who wrote *History of the Manicheans Who Are Also Called Paulicians,* circa 820 C.E., noted Paulicians traced their heritage back to a Constantine of Mananalis of Armenia, circa 641 C.E., and to certain Christian texts. Even though Christ was a central figure with the Paulicians, they, like the Bogamils and Cathars, refused to accept Catholic literalism regarding Jesus. Paulicians rejected the cross and the material sacraments of Christianity, the Old Testament, and parts of the New Testament. Paulicians, like the Bogamils and Cathars, believed they were the bona fide church, and that the Roman Catholic and Orthodox churches were imposters.[40]

Constantine IV of the Byzantia executed Constantine of Mananalis around 665–668 C.E. The Paulicians survived this ordeal, but around 811–813 C.E., Byzantine Emperor Michael I slaughtered the Paulicians. By 840 C.E., the Paulicians had retreated into Arab territories. In 975 C.E., the Paulicians were still causing trouble and were then deported to the Balkans and Bulgaria, where they disseminated their dualist religion, just as the Messalians were previously deported to the home of the Bogamils.[41] It seems clear to me that the Bogamils came about as a conglomeration of Manicheans, Messalians, and Paulicians. Hence, Catharism was the conspicuous western offshoot of the Bogamils of the Balkans and unquestionably was the Templar religion.

Gnostics believe in the perfect, omnipotent, divine source, the parent god.[42] Yahweh of the Bible falls below this god on the hierarchy of the pantheon. Gnostics believe the God of the Jews, Yahweh/Adonai, to be just one of many subordinate gods, one of the many angels that serve the parent god,[43] in the same manner Nimrod believed. This impious, Gnostic god of Israel, named “Ialdaboth”[44] and “Demiurge,” is a brutal god of destruction.[45] Ialdaboth is the imperfect god, the craftsman produced by Wisdom/Sophia, according to Gnostic literature, and thus distinct and separate from the omnipotent and perfect parent god.[46] Gnostics state that God is impious in His madness for declaring Himself to be God and that no other gods exist apart from Him.[47] Gnostic scripture recorded Ialdoboth was arrogant for stating He is a jealous God and that there is none like Him.[48]

Cathars believed Jehovah was the devil who created the material world. He was the vengeful and violent God of the flood. Cathars judged Jehovah by His alleged evil deeds recorded in the Old Testament, rejecting God and, therefore, saying all those who adopt the Old Testament capitulate with the devil.[49] Thus, Lucifer cleaned up the mess created by God.

CHAPTER 76

A THOUSAND POINTS OF LIGHT

"For God knows that when you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil." When the woman saw the fruit of the tree was good for food and pleasing to the eye, and also desirable for gaining wisdom, she took some and ate it. She also gave some to her husband, who was with her, and he ate it. Then the eyes of both of them were opened.

—Genesis 3:5–7

If you pay attention to globalist allegory, you will often hear the phrase "A Thousand Points of Light." What is the implication of this seemingly innocuous, poetic prose George Bush, Sr. exploited in one of his many illuminated and encrypted speeches to the world?

"A Thousand Points of Light" is an arcane metaphor symbolizing the promised thousand-year New Age reign of enlightenment introduced by the end-time religion and world government. It is also figurative language representing the spurious spark of the divine held within the spirits of humankind. The figurative spark has been disseminated throughout the world over the ages. Polythists believe this spark is encoded in the DNA of a select elite. It can be released through a connection with the universal life force by uniting the world through a vibrating, harmonic convergence. The spark of the divine cannot be ignited unless the people of the world unite under one government, in what Gnostics believe to be their true religion. Once world unity is achieved, the age of enlightenment seeking Gnosis will begin; the spark of the divine will reunite, permitting the ascension of the initiated elite into godhood.

Consequently, Gnostics believe Ialdaboth/Demiurge is the Creator God of earth who enslaved humans in matter, preventing them from becoming like gods who live in the spirit realm.[1] Ialdaboth, the evil god of the flood, who does not hold humankind's better interests in mind,[2] made a mess of the universe.[3] Gnostics believe Jehovah imprisoned humankind on earth through the mother of all evil, ignorance, and therefore, knowledge is freedom.[4] Gnostic myth holds that it is the mission of "After Thought" (Life/ Zoë/Sophia) and the Holy Spirit to assist humankind in collecting the power stolen by Ialdaboth, now widely spread in the genuine Gnostic race,[5] the exclusive posterity of Nephilim.

Lucifer is called the "architect god" and not a creator god, for Lucifer did not create the universe from nothing; rather, he designed the universe out of existing material.[6] Thus, Lucifer fixed the mess created by Ialdaboth. To this end, the title *Demiurge* is a derogatory Greek phrase that translates as "a lowly public craftsman," the name thereby slanders God as a lowly deity that created an imperfect world for His personal turf, all to force humans to worship Him.[7]

According to Gnostic theology, when Eve and then Adam ate of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, they ate the beautiful fruit of gnosis, or knowledge. According to Pike, Adonai was an evil demon, forbidding Adam to eat of the fruit of knowledge, but Adam obeyed an angel of light (Lucifer) and ate from (the good side of) the tree.[8] St. Iraneous professed in Gnostic literature that Wisdom (Sophia/mother of Ialdaboth) cunningly led Eve away from Ialdaboth via the Snake, whence both Adam and Eve then became acquainted (all knowing/gnosis) with the power superior to all and then rebelled away from Ialdoboth.[9] Hancock and Bauval note The Nag Hammadi Texts depict the serpent as a hero and a benefactor to humankind, for after Adam and Eve ate from the Tree of Knowledge, they awakened to their luminous nature.[10] Adam and Eve then became like gods, knowing both good and evil[11] and the seven spurious sciences.

As a result, Adam's descendants achieved very high levels of knowledge, even to the point of manipulating the antediluvian physical world with clever machines and devices, whereupon Demiurge intervened once more with the flood to restrict human potential. Hence, the flood was designed to punish humanity for having risen so high; it was designed to remove the light (knowledge) from among humankind. Survivors were then thrown into toil to survive, but some fortunately maintained the antediluvian knowledge to benefit a future generation, when a general awakening will once more occur[12] via A Thousand Points of Light.

Satan, then, is believed to be the great emancipator of Adam and Eve, freeing them from the bonds of ignorance. Gnostics additionally believe each person of a specific race contains within his or herself a hidden seed of the divine that is crying to be released from its prison, the person's body, so that it can reside in its natural home, the spirit world of the gods.[13] This hidden seed is the power stolen by Ialdoboth that Zoë, and supposedly the Holy Spirit, are assisting the Gnostic race in collecting. This is the spirit of globalization, which will join the collective seeds of the divine, enabling discriminating elite to vibrate into godhood. From the descendants from the antediluvian Gnostic Sethite sect, according to Gnostic expert Bentley Layton, springs a "race" (the descendants of Nephilim, Rex Deus bloodlines, Gnostics, and Theosophists)—a race where the so-called seeds (Point of Light) lie hidden, waiting to be freed.[14]

The Gnostic/New Age church claims to be the heavenly posterity on earth tracing back to Seth. Gnostics refer to themselves in myth to be the Posterity of Seth, the Offspring of Light, the Perfect Race, The Immoveable Race, and Those Ones.[15] Gnostics believe Seth was the father of the Living and the Immoveable Race, also known as the Posterity of the Eternal Seth,[16] a race of Nephilim. Sethianism, or Sethian Gnosticism, claims to be a spiritual race of humanity descended from the Seth created by the angel Autogenes in the likeness of the angel Adamas.[17] This was the infamous Emmakha Seth[18] and not the biblical Seth. Gnostics believe the Old Testament genealogies recording Adam through Noah were contrived to emulate the alleged true royal bloodlines descending from Emmakha Seth and other Nephilim.

Gnostics believe the only way to escape the bonds/matrix of matter is through gnosis and the secret knowledge imparted by Gnostics.[19] Gnostics believe theirs is a knowledge religion.[20] They believe Lucifer will release man’s mind and restore it to perfection and that the true application of knowledge is in distinguishing good from evil.[21] The intercession of the gods (fallen angels) grants them gnosis (Seven Sacred or Liberal Sciences), which guarantees the immortality of the soul.[22] Layton confirms Gnostics and most polytheists believe salvation is acquired through gnosis.[23]

Seemingly in the same spirit of gnosis supplied from the gods, American, Australian, and British medical associations chose a heretofore unexplained mystical emblem to represent their (Snake) associations. Self-admitted from volume 270 of the *Journal of the American Medical Association*, the emblem is a serpent coiled around a plant or staff, or more accurately, the Tree of Knowledge and Wisdom.[24] The snake in mysticism represents wisdom, just as the serpent led Eve and Adam to the Tree of Gnosis[25] that was “desirable for gaining wisdom.”[26]

This obscure snake motif is suspiciously similar to Hermes’s staff that was entwined by two snakes[27] and depicted with winged sandals, the curious caduceus known as the Magic Staff.[28] It represents a kind of mediation between heaven and earth,[29] just as the World Tree, Mount Hermon, the Great Pyramids, and ziggurats did. Mercury (Thoth/Hermes/Enoch), the provider of knowledge to humankind, is often depicted in mysticism with a snake coiled around his staff.[30] Thoth/Hermes was the mentor of doctors, magicians, and alchemists in first-time Egypt[31] and in later mystic cultures. The American and British medical associations and the Royal College of Surgeons have claimed this motif, the staff of Hermes, as their symbol!

Just as curiously, other worldwide medical organizations have similarly employed two coiled serpents spiraling around the winged caduceus/staff of Mercury/Hermes. *Unger’s* identifies Hermes as the son of Zeus and Naiad, the daughter of Atlas, who wore winged sandals,[32] also portrayed as having been worn by Mercury. Professional medical associations tend to utilize the single serpent motif, whereas commercial medical associations tend to adopt the dual serpent motif wrapped around the winged caduceus of Hermes.[33]

According to Gardner, the central staff with the dual serpent motif represents the spinal cord and the sensory nervous system, while the two uppermost wings signify the brain's ventricular structure. The small node at the top of the staff is the pineal gland and in combination with the wings is known, in yogic circles, as "the Swan." It is emblematic of an enlightened being, the utmost realm of Grail consciousness achieved by the Knights of the Swan and epitomized by such Grail heroes as Perceval and Lohengrin. In Hermetic Egyptian Mystery schools, the process of enlightenment was expressed in the Thirty-Three Degrees rising through the Thirty-Three combined vertebrae of the spine, sacrum, and coccyx, until finally reaching the pituitary gland that invoked the pineal body (expressed by the pineal gland at the top of the staff/ spinal cord), which is also why Freemasonry adopted Thirty-Three Degrees.[34]

Of course, these symbolic details are not coincidental. We should not find it surprising or shocking that the medical society is rooted in Egyptian Mystery Schools. The so-called secular medical, scientific, and educational organizations pay homage and owe their roots to the Royal Society, the Invisible College created by the Snake Brotherhoods, Freemasons, and Rosicrucians. The snake motif was further adopted by the Luciferian organization that I believe is Rex Deus, The Learned Elders of Zion, to represent their globalist intentions.[35]

In addition, the original Egyptian priests of the Great White Brotherhood, whose symbolism now blatantly adorns the Illuminati, were the priestly craftsmen of the Therapeutate that sponsored wisdom and healing (medicine); and incredibly, they were synonymous with and famous for their serpentine emblem, according to Gardner.[36] The Egyptian Great White Brotherhood was an ultra-secret and ultra-powerful conclave (Snake Brotherhood) of priests immersed in the preservation of antediluvian knowledge, from which the Illuminati eagerly adopted their inheritance and appellation.

Digging back even further into mystical Egyptian roots, we arrive back in Mesopotamia, where we find the symbol of wisdom was none other than the symbol of Enki. Enki was affectionately known as "The Lord of the Sacred Eye" (the All-Seeing Eye of Freemasonry and Egypt), which not surprisingly was represented by a serpent spiraling around a rod[37] or stem or staff or Tree (of Knowledge). One Hebrew word for "serpent" was *nachash*, but this word could also be translated as "diviner" or "he who unveils secrets."[38] Finally, the horned serpent coiled around the staff was the hieroglyph used by ancient Mystery Schools for "god."[39]

The snake motif was inherited by the medical associations from Asclepius, the ancient Greek credited with being the Father of Medicine, and a statue of him ordaining the Capodimonte Museum in Rome includes the same emblem,[40] a staff coiled around by a serpent.[41] Some Roman legends further recorded Asclepius as the god of medicine.[42] Romans knew him as Asclepius the father (god) of medicine, a Greek from Thessaly, who lived circa 1200 B.C.E.[43] Asclepius' son, Hypocrites, is the famous character of lore that all doctors swear to when they take the Hippocratic Oath.[44]

Gardner writes that *ark*, according to the Oxford Word Library is an obsolete form of the modern word arc, equivalent to the Latin *arca*, and thus "arcane" derives from the Latin *arca*, meaning "a box or a chest, as ark, or Ark of the Covenant." He notes that something hidden within an a box, chest, or ark is additionally called *arcane* and that other genitive words of *arca*, such as "archive," bring to mind such mysterious, hidden treasures, knowledge, and records as the Chamber of the Archives and the Archives of the Masons. Genitive words springing from *arca* are words such as "arch," which spawned other interesting words, such as "archaic," "architecture," "arcade," and "archon,"[45] all of which contain provocative links to Freemasonry, the Templars, and mysticism. Other derivatives, such as "archaeology," the science of ancient things and the critical evaluation of ancient records,[46] suggest to me that one cannot deny the curious link between *Arca* and Lucifer. The great archon of mysticism, the Great Architect of the Universe, dwells in a House of Judgment called the *Archeion*.[47] "Arcane" is a spurious word.

The apostle Paul was speaking to this global Gnosticism and mysticism when he said, "… but I am afraid that just as Eve was deceived by the Serpent's cunning [gnosis], your minds may somehow be led astray from your sincere and pure devotion to Christ. For if someone comes to you and preaches a Jesus other than the Jesus we preached …" (2 Cor. 11:3–4). Again, it was the Gnostics that Paul spoke against to Timothy: "… command certain men not to teach false doctrines any longer, nor devote themselves to myths and endless genealogies" (1 Tim. 1:3). He instructed

Timothy to teach against the false doctrine that encouraged deviations from and beliefs that did not conform to the glorious gospel of God. Mackey suggests that Paul was speaking against the powerful Gnostics of that time: "… to avoid profane and vain babblings, and oppositions of science, falsely so called." Mackey believes the translation from Greek should read "false gnosis," not false doctrine or science, as it does in the Gnostic rendering of 1 Timothy.[48]

Note that Paul referred to the folly of endless genealogies, reminding us that Gnostics, Rex Deus, and all organizations plotting The Genesis 6 Conspiracy hold dear to their hearts and causes endless falsified genealogies and bloodlines. The apostle wrote, "What harmony does Christ have with Belial [Satan]? What does a believer have in common with an unbeliever?" (2 Cor. 6:15). The true, glorious gospel of God does not have anything in common with Gnosticism. Remember, Jesus is the Word made flesh from God.[49] Jesus is the Christ and Messiah of the Old Testament, New Testament, and the Qur'an;[50] all monotheistic Scripture testifies on Jesus' behalf.

The largest Judean Gnostic sect at the time of Jesus was the Essenes. They were kin to the Templars through the Rex Deus. In fact, Albert Mackey writes that the similarities of Freemasonry and Essene rituals could only be accounted for in the understanding that they both have the same origin. Like Freemasons, Essenes instructed their initiates in secret knowledge they obtained in due course from their ancestors,[51] which had its beginnings in antiquity. Essenes did not admit women into their ranks, just as the Templars and Freemasonry did not. Essenes commemorated three levels or degrees of enlightenment and initiation, with various ceremonies like those of Freemasonry. Essenes popularized the practice of having a particular sign to recognize members, just as Freemasonry does.[52] And now, all the contemporaneous secret societies take their sacrilegious marching orders from the descending Essene Order of the Brothers of the Red Cross, the nefarious Rosicrucians.

CHAPTER 77

THE ROSICRUCIANS

> *Pharaoh then summoned his wise men and sorcerers, and the Egyptian magicians also did the same things by their secret arts. Each one threw down his staff and it became a snake.*
>
> —Exodus 7:11–12

What key authors of the Middle Ages used their revolutionary ideas and prose to accelerate the formation of secret societies[1] and, specifically, the Rosicrucians? What is the unexplained role Rosicrucianism plays in The Genesis 6 Conspiracy?

The famous five were Thomas More (1477–1535), Abbey Rabelais (1494–1553), Abbey Johan Valentin Andrea (1586–1654), Robert Fludd (1560–1626), and of course, Francis Bacon (1560–1626).[2]

Sir Thomas More authored the book *Utopia* about a magical island (Atlantis) governed by a socialistic/communistic republican government, where all religions were tolerated and all were free to cultivate their intellectual capabilities.[3]

Abbey Rebelais, an accepted Mason and mystic, presented society with the constitution of a society of free men,[4] along with his book *Gargantua* *and Pabtagruel*, a collection of curious stories regarding rampaging giants[5] teeming with the green language, Legominism.[6]

Abbey Johan Valentin Andrea penned *The Universal Reformation of the Entire World*.[7] Andrea was a German Lutheran minister[8] (mole) and a Grand Master of the Priory of Sion, as you may recall.

Robert Fludd's considerable successes as a writer firmly established him as a defender of the Rosicrucian Order, and he was the founder of several Rosicrucian societies in London.[9] And, as you will recall from a previous chapter, Fludd was a Grand Master of the Priory of Sion and a great Kabbalist.

Finally, we consider the infamous and notorious Sir Francis Bacon, who wrote *La Nova Atlantis*, a story of a republic headed by a secret society of intellectuals from the fields of "Letters and Sciences."[10] The members of this secret society referred to each other as brothers who were devoted in complete freedom to philosophical discussions to improve the conditions of the lower classes and to advance the true religion.[11] As previously revealed, Bacon was a member of the Rosicrucian Order.[12]

We must additionally contemplate Marsilo Ficino's numinous influence upon medieval society. Ficino's patrons were the Medicis of Italy, and he founded a Neo-Platonic society in Florence (circa 1460 C.E.). Ficino's philosophy, according to Naudon, left a significant impression on the next generations influencing Cornelius Agrippa, Thomas More, and Rebelais.[13] Ficini first translated for the Medicis lost Greek texts of Plato, Neo-Platonism, Orphic hymns, and esoteric material that purportedly dated back to Egypt and the pyramids. Ficini then developed a syncretic philosophy inspired by Zoroaster, Hermes, Orphus, Pythagorus, Plato, the Kabbalah, and Christian (mystic) philosophy, which he recorded in *Manuel De Philosophie Moderne*.[14]

Adding to this syncretic movement was yet another secret society that ostensibly predisposed a palpable prejudice upon Freemasonry and Rosicrucianism. Henry Collins Agrippa furtively founded this organization, The Guild of Mages, in 1510. It studied the forbidden sciences, and its members were masters of alchemy and magic. The Guild of Mages, according to the Michael Mair (1568–1622) manuscript, gave birth to the Brothers of the Gold Cross fraternity in Germany in 1570[15] and is thought variantly to be the root organization for the Rosicrucians.

The shadowy Snake Brotherhood intimately connected to all other spurious organizations is the Rosicrucian Order. Its esoteric thought was at a climax in Germany during the seventeenth century and was the furtive root for Nazi occultism, according to Baigent and Leigh.[16] Hence, this was the age of the Rosicrucian Manifestos and Rosicrucian enlightenment.

During the eighteenth century, Germany was a hotbed for mystical and esoteric forms of Freemasonry that included such illustrious members as Friedrich Wilhelm II. In truth, the British Rosicrucian organization of 1888, the Theosophist Order of the Golden Dawn, was directly linked back to Germany. It included such famous members as William Butler Yeats and Aleister Crowley. A half century earlier, British writer, occultist, and Rosicrucian propagandist Edward Bulwer-Lytton, acting as a conduit for German esoteric thought, composed his book *Strange Story*, which promoted the mystical German concept of *Vril*, a mystifying substance contained in the blood that would engender a Master Race of Supermen.[17]

Rosicrucians are an organization fabled to have been founded by Father Christian Rosencreutz.[18] He purportedly established Rosicrucianism in 1378 to illuminate humankind; the objective was to spread gnosis to all humankind.[19] Rosencreutz studied all forms of mysticism under knowledgeable Adepts during his numinous tour through the Middle and Near East. He wrote two infamous books, *Fama Fraternities* and *Discovery of the Fraternity of the Most Noble Order of the Rosy Cross*, which were published posthumously in 1614 and 1615 in Germany. These two small books, containing less than twenty-five pages each, are renowned as the Rosicrucian manifestos. After returning to Germany from his mystical engagements, Rosencreutz formed a very, very small fraternity.[20] The small fraternity began with four members and then grew to eight, all of whom later set out to the four winds of the earth to reform and transform the world.[21]

In 1604, the tomb of Christian Rosencreutz was found (not coincidently), ten years before the publishing of *Fama Fraternities*.[22] It was the Abbot of Adesberg, Johan Valentin Andrea, who likely became the unintentional, true founder of Rosicrucianism, for it was he who first published Rosencreutz’s works. In 1616 C.E., Andrea again published another Rosicrucian work titled *The Chemical Wedding of Christian Rosenkreutz*. All of Andrea’s numinous publications enjoyed great success.[23] But, according to some Masonic historians, Rosencreutz was a hoax. According to Gittins, Rosencreutz was merely a character created by Johan Valentin Andrea as an arcane, mystical figure for his syncretic movement, the establishment of a perfect utopian society based on science, mystical faith, and reason.[24]

In 1623, Rosicrucianism made its first subversive public appearance under the name *College of the Brothers of the Rose Cross*, claiming to possess the perfect knowledge of the Most High. This new brotherhood was formed with thirty-six mysterious members at the core. They were known as the Invisible Ones. One cannot help but notice the similarity to the Invisible Colleges created some twenty years later in England and in France, both formed by Rosicrucians and Freemasons. The (Snake) Brotherhood was a skilled order much like the Cathar Perfecti, according to Hancock and Bauval; all were medical doctors.

Rosicrucianism integrated into the Freemasonry movement in 1760,[25] the same year the Royal Society gained its charter. Rosicrucianism has been credited with exercising the biggest influence over Freemasonry; Rosicrucians transformed Freemasonry from operative to speculative.[26] According to Gittins, as aristocrats began to dominate Freemasonry during the Dawn of Reason, speculative Masonry then took its new place with Progressive thought, alongside the Royal Society.[27] In this spirit, then, understand that it was indeed the Rosicrucians who actually founded the Royal Society/Invisible College with the help of Freemasonry. The mission was to build a House of Solomon, the idealistic Temple for the Sciences imagined and conceived by Sir Francis Bacon and Sir Thomas More.[28]

Originally, alchemists, members of a quasi-philosophical organization seeking the Philosopher's Stone and the elixir of immortality, claimed Rosencreutz to be their founder. Rosicrucians are lovers of chemistry.[29] Alchemists seek to transmute metal into gold and to produce the elixir of immortality.[30] Alchemists are physical Rosicrucians who adopted metals and their transmutation, the elixir of life, and their universal solvent as symbols.[31]

Rosicrucianism is a secretive, Hermetic philosophy,[32] just as Hermes/Thoth/Enoch is considered the father of alchemy.[33] Rosicrucians were chemical philosophers who blended religion with the secrets of chemistry.[34] Alchemy shares a common ancestry with shamans, magicians, smiths, and miners. They believe in the maxim “As Above So Below.” Rosicrucianism retains the promise of a repository of ancient knowledge, according to Marshall.[35] It is a secret society that extracts vows of silence,[36] just as all other cults of mysticism do.

The Rosi Crucis has been recorded as far back as 3500 B.C.E. in Mesopotamia. It was the distinguishing Mark of Cain, identifying the royal bloodline of the Sangreal, particularly denoting the (royal) matrilineal succession of the Uterine Womb (chalice) of the Grail Queen, and of course, the Grail was the perpetual blood of matriarchal Dragon queen succession, the maternal blood celebrated as the Supreme Excellence (Star Fire).[37]

The standard superficial symbol for Rosicrucianism is the rose cross, similar to that of the Templars, who wore it as their emblem, and of the Fisher Kings, who bore it as a birthmark—the Mark of Cain. The Templars in fact adopted the Rosicrucian name as well as the arcane allegory of the pelican in its nest that depicts the bird with its wings wide spread, feeding six of its young on its own flesh and blood, both of which were later adopted by the Masonic Order of the Knights of the Rose And Cross.[38] As we learned previously, the Brothers of the Red Cross was an ancient, mystical order of Rex Deus.

It is said that the Masters hold out a rose as a remote reward for initiates and impose the cross on all who enter into their order. In actuality, Rosicrucianism is made up of two words, *rosi* and *crux*. Both are Latin words meaning “rose cross.” *Ros* signifies dew, which to alchemists is the solvent of gold or an elixir. *Crux* is a Latin word equivalent to light in its allegorical interpretation, because the figure of the cross exhibits three letters, from which *Lux* is derived. *Lux* is, of course, the root for its derivatives “light” and “Lucifer,” just as we have already learned. Alternatively, *crux* is the chemical hieroglyph for light.[39] Thus the authentic elixir of immortality is light.

Another source defines “Rosicrucian” as *rosi*, meaning “dew,” and “*crucus,*” meaning cup or chalice, echoing the Holy Grail and the ritualistic blood consumed from chalices and cauldrons descending from Sarmatian and Atlantean legends, as well as the antediluvian consumption of Star Fire, known also as the “Menstruum of the Red Dragon.”[40] Menstruum is the alchemy solvent that causes an action on metal, which is compared to the supposed action of the ovum in menstruation.[41] Note, too, the Star Fire rituals are traditions kept alive in the Sangreal/Grail and Rosi Crucis cultures and organizations[42] of the Gnostics and Rex Deus. This, then, is the same allegory as before; the dew of the elixir of immortality, and of the Grail, is the heavenly knowledge or light.

The Grail allegorically represented to the Priory of Sion, the feminine aspect of nature that was represented in antiquity with a ∨ symbol, which alternatively represented both the ancient chalice and also the planet Venus. This ancient hieroglyph resembling a cup, a chalice, and a vessel is an allegory for the woman’s womb of the royal, matriarchal bloodline descending from the feminine goddess.[43] Once more, all the secret symbols and allegories of this secret society lead directly back to alleged royal bloodlines of Jesus and the Nephilim, as well as to imagery linking all back to the Red Dragon, Satan.

The five-petal rose of the Rosicrucians is the dog rose. It is a symbol for reincarnation because it can fruit without being pollinated; therefore, it can die but be born again identical to itself.[44] In the thoughts of Dan Brown, the oldest of the *rose* genera, likely the *Rosa Rugosa*, had five petals that modeled pentagonal/pentagram symmetry, like the guiding star of Venus. Remember from previous chapters that the five-petal rose was synonymous with the Holy Grail and the infamous Priory of Sion.[45] Let us not forget the rather uncoincidental connection and imagery of the word *rose*, or *rosa*, to Rosi Crucis and the Rosicrucians. This is not a coincidence but rather finely scripted Legomin, precise imagery and allegory craftily woven together over the millennia.

The mystical rose references the mysterious properties of the planet Venus. Venus is, of course, a clever allegory of light representing Lucifer, while the orbit of Venus, when placed against the backdrop of the zodiac, forms a five-pointed star (a pentagram). In Freemasonry, the five-petal rose is intimately related to the five-pointed star of the Venus orbit, for the points of the star fall between the petals.[46] The apple, then, is referred as the “fruit of Venus” (the fruit of good and evil from Eden and the Golden Apples) because a halved apple portrays the orbit of Venus, and thus a five-pointed star, pinpointed by the position of the pips.[47] Venus traces a perfect pentagram/pentacle across the ecliptic sky every eight years[48] and thus anchors all these allegories together. The five-pointed star overlays the dog rose with a bright light in the center, representing the sun; this (unaccountably) adorns most ceilings in Freemason temples.[49]

The five-pointed star was the identical mark that the founder of the Invisible College, Robert Moray, received as his mark of Freemasonry. It represents in Freemasonry and Rosicrucianism (and likely other mystical organizations) their god, the Grand Geometrician of the Universe (Lucifer). It is the symbol that Robert Moray associated with secrecy, invisibility, and true worth.[50] Let us not overlook, as well, that a five-pointed star forming a pentagram is associated with Satanic cults, and other evils of this world, by occult writers.

The pentagram unaccountably is found in most cultures worldwide. I believe the pentagram is as an elemental symbol emanating from the 6,000-year Genesis 6 Conspiracy, along with the snake and dragon. According to Greer, the Pythagorean (Snake) Brotherhood used the pentagram as a secret sign of recognition. By the Middle Ages, the pentagram found a place in magic as a symbol of power and appeared in the English poem *Sir Gawain and the Green Knight.* Greer further notes the pentagram was identified as the most important symbol in magic and the emblem of Satanism by the French occultist Eliphas Levi (1810–1875). Wicca and twentieth-century Satanism adopted the pentagram from occult sources influenced by Levi, whereby Christians thereafter generally defined the pentagram as the primary symbol of devil worship.[51]

Hence, Rosicrucianism is a cunning system of mysticism founded upon the Kabbalah. Esoteric scholars link speculative Masonry (and thus, Rosicrucianism) to the Kabbalah, the “opaque mystical Jewish discipline” of biblical interpretation.[52] Mackey additionally writes that Rosicrucians were all Theosophists holding true to doctrines of angels and demons, elements, the influence of heavenly bodies on man (astrology), magical numbers (numerology), suffunigations, and other sorceries.[53] Remember, Robert Lomas states that the Rosicrucians were the first scientists and the last of the sorcerers. He further notes the Rosicrucians proudly claim to speak to demons and fallen angels:[54] spirit guides and Avatars. The Rosicrucian Order is regarded to be an “inner world group” of great Adepts holding knowledge, power, and wisdom that essentially make them demigods compared to mundane humans. These are Adepts who answer directly to the College of Invisibles, the obscure source of the knowledge and force behind the Rosicrucian movement[55] and the invisible world government.

Rosicrucians regard Qayin (Cain) of Genesis to be the artificer of metals of the highest order, and they hold his posterity in the same high regard. Tubal-Cain is the holder of Plutonic theory, the knowledge (from the underworld and its god Pluto/Hades in Greek mythology) of the actions of internal heat, and therefore, a most prominent alchemist.[56] In the same manner, the Goat of Mendes (Azazel) is directly associated with alchemy, according to Gardner,[57] as is the pentagram. According to Gardner, the emblem of Rosicrucians, the Rosi Crucis, is more accurately described as a dragon incurved to circle a red cross,[58] known also as the Mark of Cain. Rosicrucianism is directly connected to Cain, the seven corrupted sciences, Nephilim, and fallen angels of the antediluvian epoch. The Rosi Crucis was a lucid sign known to the ancient Egyptians as *Ourobous*—understanding this is the same tradition of Ormus, the Elm Tree of the Knights Templar tradition. The word *alchemy* derives from the Arabic *al-kemia*, meaning "the black land," and is the science of Egypt,[59] black magic.

Freemasonry is a preparatory organization for Rosicrucianism. Freemasonry is a nucleus to feed the growth of Rosicrucianism through providing a select few Freemasons deemed worthy enough to enter the Rosicrucian Order, in a similar manner as Freemasonry also provides selected and enlightened initiates to the Illuminati. Rosicrucians choose the "select coterie" of Freemasons, the most mystical and the most suitable, to elevate them to the higher Mysteries of the brotherhood. Rosicrucians are the apex of the Freemason initiated hierarchy; they are already illuminated and deemed worthy to learn even greater Mysteries held by the Rosicrucian Order,[60] the superior elect of the Illuminati.

One of their modern American fraternities is known as AMORC: Ancient and Mystical Order Rosae Crucis of the Great White Brotherhood, obviously referencing back to the Illuminati and to Pharaoh Tuthmusis III, the king who reorganized Egyptian Mystery Schools and who originally founded the White Brotherhood.[61] AMORC believes its roots include the eighteenth-century Golden and Rosy Cross Order and the Ormus Order of Alexandria (circa 46 C.E.).[62] AMORC's founders, H. Spencer Lewis and Savritri Devi, the first major Nazi theoretician, place Akenhaten as the forerunner of their ideas, while AMORC declares their Rosicrucian initiations date back to Akenhaten.[63]

According to Kabbalist Neil Silberman, Freemason and Rosicrucian organizations have preserved a treasury of lore and symbols that gave way to the Theosophy movement, and today they serve as one of the most important metaphysical foundations for the New Age movement.[64] Therefore, Masonic Rosicrucianism sponsored Theosophy and the New Age movement, which, in turn, absorbed the various Gnostic sects, the Rosicrucians, Rex Deus, and Freemasonry. In this regard, the Dutch Rosicrucian organization, The Lectoorium, defines itself as a Gnostic spiritual school. Its members eagerly look forward to the coming New Age that will bring forth a New Man[65] (Nephilim), a belief that ties these organizations and religious doctrines together. All Gnostic and pantheistic organizations eagerly await a reincarnated form of Hitler's Third Reich, complete with a super or superior race, an Antichrist or false messiah figure, and a renewed holocaust waged against the saints of God.

The network of the spurious community is astounding in its size, complexity, and hierarchical structure. All work for the coming of the false messiah, the one whom Hitler, just before he killed himself, advised his followers to wait for and serve when he came. He believed the one destined to come after him was Lord Maitreya, the infamous third Antichrist of the Gnostic alchemist and likely Rosicrucian Nostradamus. For it is the coming Antichrist that those of the spurious religions believe will herald the advent of the millennium of peace, or the Third Reich that Hitler endeavored to bring about. It will be as Ruth Montgomery, the author of *Herald for the New Age*, notes: "a thousand years of peace."[66]

The spurious millennium is merely the spurious rival to the Judeo/Christian millennial reign of Christ described in Revelation[67] and is another incantation of Hitler's Third Reich. As per the Theosophist Constance Cumby, who wrote *A Planned Deception*, the conspiracy for a universal religion includes the installation of a world messiah, who is allegorically called Lord Maitreya, to reign over a world government; he is the future Buddha.[68]

CHAPTER 78

THE NEW AGE MILLENNIUM

And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded because of their testimony for Jesus and because of the word of God. They had not worshipped the Beast or his image and had not received his mark on their foreheads or their hands. They came to life and reigned with Christ a thousand years.

—Revelation 20:4–5

It is a grave mistake to predict who from the Rex Deus bloodline will step forward out of the shadows of anonymity and into the adulating light of fame to seize the Davidic throne. We must, however, be wary of the Unicorn bloodline belonging to the House of Stuart, for the Stuarts’ alleged claims of unified, royal bloodlines offer incredible nostalgic and romantic appeal to the chivalry of the past. The Unicorn dynastic legacy may well be offered as an olive branch of hope to a world inundated with cynicism and void of respect and hope in the leadership of their leaders.

According to Knight and Lomas, the contemporary Rex Deus families include the Counts of Champagne, the Lords of Gisor, the Lords of Payen, the Counts of Fontaine, the Counts of Anjou, de Bouillon, St. Claire De

Gisor, St. Claire De Neg, Brienne, Joinville, Chaumont, the St. Claires, and the Hapsburgs[1] (thirteen families). Originating Rex Deus bloodlines were introduced to other families through marriage: Blanchefort, Sinclair, Plantard, and Hapsburg/Lorraine. For example, Marie De Saint Claire, a descendant of Henry Saint Claire of Rosslyn Chapel, married Jean De Gisor, the first independent Grand Master of the Priory of Sion.[2]

We should look to the Hapsburg/Lorraine house with the same degree of skepticism, for they also possess intriguing history that is burgeoning with Rex Deus bloodlines. The Hapsburgs keep a three-dimensional monument dedicated to their Rex Deus heritage in the form of forty statues designed to bring to life images of the Merovingian dynasty. All this appears to have been done after the Atlantean spirit. In Atlantis, the people also erected three-dimensional monuments in honor of the original queens and kings of the Atlantean empire.[3] The Hapsburg monument includes Clovis, Theoderic, Arthur, and King (of Jerusalem) Godfrois de Bouillon. It is a three-dimensional Sangreal legacy throughout the ages,[4] for the Hapsburgs regard themselves as Priest Kings, just as their ancestral Merovingians kings believed. The Hapsburg dynasty married into the Rex Deus dynasty through the eighteenth-century union of the Houses of Lorraine and Hapsburg, via Marie Antoinette. The House of Hapsburg/Lorraine is regarded as one of the contemporary heirs to the Merovingian dynasty and the Rex Deus bloodline.[5]

Be aware of the Plantard family, as well. Pierre Plantard was the Grand Master of the Priory of Sion. He claimed to be a direct descendant of Dagobert II of the Merovingian dynasty and that the Priory of Sion apparently possessed the genealogical records to verify this.[6] Many believe the only two direct lineages descending from the Merovingian bloodline today are those of the Sinclair and Plantard families.[7] Whoever Lord Maitreya might be, today he lives in moderate anonymity, but we should look for clear Rex Deus ties when he steps out of the shadows and into the light.

As we discussed previously, the Bible predicts a ten-horned or ten-toed empire will resurrect out of the ashes of the old Roman Empire in the last days, which would bring about the coming of the Antichrist,[8] Lord Maitreya. This is exactly what the spurious, globalist forces are endeavoring to bring about. The World Constitution and Parliament

Association, a Rockefeller supported foundation, includes in its vision a world divided into ten constituencies. The Club of Rome also has arrogantly divided the world into ten economic and political regions.[9] This is no coincidence; the God of gods preordained it. Secret societies are endeavoring to recreate the age of enlightenment, the reincarnated, antediluvian age of Atlantis, by reestablishing antediluvian rule that reigned supreme over Atlantis.[10] They sincerely believe the essential arts and knowledge of our present civilization trace their beginnings back to the great Antediluvian empire of Atlantis through Egypt,[11] along with the secrets they possess. This is The Genesis 6 Conspiracy destined to place the new Nimrod, the Antichrist, at the head of world government for 1,000 years— the reincarnated Fourth Reich.

The renewal of Atlantis is yet another allegory of King Arthur and the Grail legends. Excalibur, the famous sword of Arthur, symbolizes a key to Atlantis that was hidden in England. The key is the location of certain wisdom and knowledge, along with additional keys to unseal the antediluvian knowledge that is to remain sealed and hidden until people that possess the right level of knowledge and wisdom are able to unlock it. The withdrawal of Excalibur represented the rebirth of the new Atlantean race,[12] just as Camelot and Arthur’s reign did.[13] America was conceived to achieve, as a global model, the ideal commonwealth in the political world. As Marrs notes, America is the stepping-stone, the great plan, to bring about the New Atlantis,[14] just as the Templars, Freemasons, Rosicrucians, and Francis Bacon had envisioned.

I cannot say the spurious factions will raise up Nephilim as kings for the future, spurious millennium, but I cannot rule it out either, based on all that I have discussed in this book. What we can expect is that these rulers will cling to their ancient bloodlines that, indeed, do link them back to Nephilim. What I can state with cryptic certainty is the spurious religion will once more reign supreme as the queen of kingdoms.[15] The religion of Cain will once more rise to dominate the world. The religion of the light[16] will once more cast its seditious, sinister shadow upon the entire earth. It will be the New Age of Nimrod and Babel, reincarnated in all its allegorical glory. Satan’s end time shadow will be the final act in The Genesis 6 Conspiracy.

The Antichrist will either be possessed (Avatar) by Satan or by the fallen angel Abaddon:

> The beast, which you saw, once was, now is not, and will come up out of the Abyss and go to his destruction. The inhabitants of the earth whose names have not been written in the book of life from the creation of the world will be astonished when they see the beast, because he once was, now is not, and yet will come.
>
> —Revelation 17:8–9

Abaddon, or Apollyon, is the leader of the angels of the Abyss (Rev. 9:11). This will undoubtedly be the destroyer Azazel, who introduced war and violence to the descendants of Cain, and the fallen one who will possess the Antichrist. *Abaddon/Apollyon* are the Greek appellations for "the destroyer."

In addition, the Antichrist will be glorified as the allegorical symbol of Orion (Azazel), who the Great Pyramids and the Sphinx point to and honor. Orion is the home of Osiris, and to his left is Sirius, the star of Isis.[17] The beast will be symbolic of Osiris the sun god, and of course, of Lucifer, of whom all these are symbolic, so that the world will worship Lucifer and not God. This act of heresy will condemn humankind to oblivion, except for the saints who will hold true to God saving part of humankind from this black prospect.

Lord Maitreya will permit each person the opportunity to decide what is right and what is wrong in what will be a solemn game of global situational ethics. The inhabitants of the world will be compelled to choose to worship and follow the Antichrist, Lucifer, and their New Age religion or follow the alleged evil God of the Christians, Israelites, and Muslims. This duty-bound choice will be punctuated by the forthcoming galactic war of rebellion to free the inhabitants of the earth from the oppressing Adonai and his angels. The decision to follow the Antichrist and fight for freedom will be sealed by the mark of the Beast, a sign of their new covenant and choice.

Lord Maitreya is believed by some to be alive now, residing somewhere anonymously in the world, awaiting only his fateful "Day of Announcement."[18] These events are prophesied by Christianity, Judaism, and Islam, as well as all the spurious religions. Expect curious discoveries will start to take place, including discoveries of the secret knowledge of Nimrod and Hermes that will storm world opinion. Look for startling discoveries emanating out of Egypt that will likely come from secret chambers at the feet of the Great Pyramids and the Sphinx, as well discoveries in England and Central America.

The sparkling knowledge of Atlantis and Cain will magically make its reappearance through these diverse kinds of discoveries, for their whereabouts and contents are already known, awaiting only the predestined age to impress the world and the Terminal Generation preordained to be deceived. Hermes was believed to have hidden his inherited, great antediluvian knowledge somewhere in Egypt. The Giza monuments are believed to be a memorial to the flood erected by a highly advanced antediluvian civilization. Somewhere in Giza the famous Hall of Records was buried, which contains the entire antediluvian body of knowledge of this Golden Age of perfection. Egyptian papyrus makes many references to the hidden chambers called the Chambers of Archives, or Hall of Records, hinting it was buried close to the Sphinx.[19]

All these legends pertaining to spurious vaults of antediluvian knowledge are kept alive and well today, according to Hancock and Bauval, through the Rosicrucians, Theosophists, and Freemasons.[20] Whether or not this knowledge is discovered at these locations or at Rosslyn or on Oak Island or a combination of all the above, the knowledge will contain all the antediluvian knowledge, as well as the knowledge of Solomon, the Cathars, the Templars, and Rex Deus, for the Sinclairs and Freemasonry are the guardians of all such things.

Secret, spurious knowledge, such as antigravity from Mu (a theoretical force in Theosophy used by the ancients to lift heavy stone blocks into place to build their cities and monuments), will abound in the New Age. The world will be vibrating with expectancy as it celebrates these fantastic discoveries en route to global occupation. As a result, then, people sharing common consciousness through transcendental meditation create a figurative conduit that is not restricted by the laws of physics; the web/matrix of the life force heals everything, creating world peace; the life force (parent god) will vibrate at peak efficiency, creating the *Maharishi Effect*: godhood.[21] The thousand-year reign of Lord Maitreya will beckon; humanity will anticipate ascension into godhood. The New Golden Age will beckon with all its hopes, promises, and enlightened false prophets.

Hogwash! The people of this Terminal Generation will be compelled to choose between God, certain persecution, and genocide or the false prophet, false messiah, false freedom, false peace, and the false millennium. These will be the perilous days of the tribulation for the true faith, the Time of Jacob’s trouble, the last seven years of this age. Armageddon will beckon, beginning with World War III, when descendants of the giants Gog, Magog, Meschech, and Tubal, the descendants of the Scythians now living in Russia, will march on Israel with a great alliance of armies at the mid-point of the last seven years, shattering the age of peace.[22]

This will be the end times, the period just before the entrance of the real Messiah, Jesus, who comes to save the world from itself and then usher in the true millennium of peace.[23] What has happened will happen again; nothing is new under the sun. We are certain to turn full circle and go back to our antediluvian heritage, where we will stand face-to-face and eye-to-eye with the ongoing, generational Genesis 6 Conspiracy; only this time, the conspiracy will be thwarted forever.

SECTION VII: The House of Dragon

BLOODLINES OF THE PREHISTORIC GIANTS

CHAPTER 79

THE FAIRY KINGDOMS

> *Among the lamp stands was someone "like the son of Man" dressed in a robe reaching down to his feet and with a golden sash around his chest. His head and hair were white like wool, as white as snow, and his eyes were like blazing fire. His feet were like bronze glowing in a furnace, and his voice was like the sound of rushing waters.*
>
> —Revelation 1:13–15

Why is this generation unaccountably bombarded with spectacular imageries depicting heroes and mythologies from epochs past? And what heretofore unexplained messages do these numinous tales convey in these fantastic allegories?

Seemingly innocuous allegories jammed into our entertainment and literature covertly bridge our misunderstood past with the terrible tribulation coming. In this spirit, then, consider this investigation essentially pivots around two mysterious allegories: dragons and fairies. Frankly, they are the "Rosetta Stone," the missing pieces connecting all the other pieces to The Genesis 6 Conspiracy and the bloodlines of the Antichrist.

So, then, what is the hidden relationship connecting the Fairy and Dragon Courts to the Holy Grail and Rex Deus? We taught previously that the contemporary Rex Deus conspiracy is 2,000 years old, dating back to the life and times of Jesus. Additionally, we learned that Grail legends were spawned by Rex Deus Houses and that the Holy Grail was, in truth, the Sangreal, the holy bloodlines that housed the secrets to the Kings of God dynasty.

What we must now absorb into our syncretic thought process is the notion that Grail, Fairy, and dragon legends are, according to both Gnostic and Masonic writers, one and the same.[1] When one notes any arcane reference to the shadowy Dragon and Fairy Courts, understand that this is deliberate Grail/Rex Deus bloodline Legominism.

The House of Dragon is the genuine House of Grail Kings,[2] the original Rex Deus from Genesis. The House of Dragon is the ancient powerhouse that the Sons of Jared have vowed generational war against, just as the ancient Israelites did. Sons of Jared believe the Dragon bloodline to be the actual and factual descendants of *watchers*/fallen angels and Nephilim, who they allege spawned the notorious, evil, (fairy) pharaoh kings and dictators who have dominated humankind throughout history.[3] This bold assertion is the same notion I have been building to and alluding to: the posterity of Nephilim will bring about the tribulation of the end times and the Antichrist! Today, Gardner states Dragon sovereignty is maintained in the Grail kingdoms, which hold the great and mysterious repository of ancient knowledge.[4]

In Celtic mythology, exclusive royal families carried what is renowned in Grail lore as “fairy blood.”[5] Romans viewed the Celts as a tall and fair-skinned people,[6] while fairies in Wales were called *Tylwyth Teg*, the “Fair Family.”[7] *Tylwyth Teg* is, in fact, the Welsh translation for “fairy.”[8] According to Gardner, fairy blood, the bloodlines of fairies (those of the lineage of fair folk), was originally conceived through philosophical (arcane) metaphors relating to fate; hence the word *fairy* derives from *fee,* or *fey* (fate).[9]

Fairy/faerie/fayyerie derived from French *faes*, which derived from the Latin *fata*, describing spirit beings that guide fate.[10] Neo-Latin Fays, the Fates of Italy, and the Fees of France are all the same beings, according to Evans-Wentz. These originating, immortal damsels variantly celebrated as

Fatue gave birth to the entire family of *fees* as they appear in Latin countries, which the Italians collectively recognized as the Greek nymphs known as *fatuae*.[11] Some believe fairies were supernatural beings that presided over all of human fortunes.[12]

Gardner knits these disparate threads together by proposing that Gnostic lore states fairy blood was originally understood to have held the fate, or destiny, of the Grail bloodline. Thus, fairy, Grail, and Dragon princesses of Gnostic literature were commonly known as Elf-Maidens and the Guardians of the Earth.[13] In the old languages, *elf* emanated from the female gender that originally derived from *Elbe*, or *Ylbi*, which, in turn, derived from the town identified as Albi (or vice versa) in the district of France, renowned as Languedoc. Languedoc was substantially the province that formed the Jewish kingdom of Septmania[14] and was home base to all the various Gnostic and mystical sects of Occitania belonging to The Genesis 6 Conspiracy. It was the infamous home of the Gnostic *Cathars*,[15] their name deriving from Greek *katharos*, meaning "pure,"[16] as well as the home of the transplanted Essenes, the Merovingians, the Templars, the Alains, the Kabbalistic Jews, and the Trojans and Scythians of antiquity. Ergo, this only serves to further underscore irrevocable fairy relationships with the Dragon Court in an intimate and mysterious manner, demanding that we examine the historically unexplained fairies very closely and very critically.

Cathars, as you will recall, were fully conversant with Ring and Grail culture fondly branding it the Messianic bloodline, the "Elven Race of Shining Ones" (fairies). Cathars were supporters and protectors of the *Albi-Gens*, the Elven bloodline that traced its arcane, matriarchal, and parallel bloodlines back through Mary Magdalene, Miriam, Bashemath, and Lilith.[17]

The genocide waged against the Cathars by Catholicism that began in 1244[18] became known to history as the Albigensian Crusade.[19] The crusade first began at the city of Albi, in the region of Languedoc, the home of the Elbe, the elf-maidens and fairies, hence the name *Albigensian Crusade*. Remember, too, the spurious knowledge and manuscripts allegedly kept at Gellone, in Languedoc, supposedly possessed the potential to bring Catholic Christianity to its knees with respect to the virgin birth and the Resurrection; thus came the Inquisition and the Cathar genocide. Purges against Gnosticism early in the first millennium forced them underground until the tenth century, when the Bogamils burst back onto the world scene,[20] whereby the Bogamils exported their religion to France through missionaries from the Balkans. By the mid-eleventh century C.E., Catharism was well on its way to becoming the majority religion in France and was expanding rapidly into Germany and England.[21]

Cathars believed their ancestors were the authentic apostles and that a Catholic conspiracy denied Gnostics the right to their destiny.[22] Cathars viewed themselves, then, as an ancient counter-conspiracy, whose naissance dated back to the first millennium.[23] This counter-conspiracy was recorded in the 1798 book by Abbe Barruel, *Memoires Pour Server A l'Histoire du Jacobism*, and in the 1861 book *L'Histoire de Satan* by Abbe Lecanu, which detailed and described the fever pitch of this all-out war the originating Manicheans (who, to my surprise) had declared on Catholicism. This little-known all-out war within early Christianity was once more picked up by the German conspiracy writers Eckert and Krause, in the nineteenth century and then later by most Masonic writers.[24]

According to Naudon, Manicheans further resolved to infiltrate the city of Rome. They sought to establish Rome as their home office for apostles, where they could then easily infiltrate and penetrate Catholicism. Not only did Manichean moles infiltrate from the inside of Catholicism, but also they further penetrated and dominated the Builder Guilds of Rome, the Collegia, and became known as the Johannite Brothers.[25]

The Roman Church, then, did not identify Cathars as a new, upstart, heretical religion; rather, Rome viewed Cathars as practicers of the old Manichean religion, returning from the dead. Bogamils began nearly 200 years before the Cathars and often were confused with the Messalians because of their proximity in the Balkans and similarities of their religions. Bogamils had also coexisted with the Paulicians, who were, in truth, Manicheans. Historian Steve Runciman believes the Bogamils were a Gnostic collaboration of Paulicians and Messalians.

In 1167, Bogomil Bishop Nicetus traveled to Occitania to make doctrinal changes with the Cathars, for the relationship was that of senior to junior, with the Bogomils being the home church. By the end of the twelfth century, the dualist church had returned with vengeance, stretching from the Black Sea to Biscay; Gnostic bishops operating from Constantinople to Toulouse entered the thirteenth century as clear rivals to Rome. In fact, both the Cathars and the Bogamils were active in their sedition to overthrow Catholicism and replace it with Gnostic gods and religions.[26]

Now, Albigensianism derived from *Albi-Gens*, the Elven bloodline.[27] Hence, *Albigensian,* otherwise unaccountably, means the "bloodline of fate/ fairies." They are one and the same. Cathars alternatively referred to the messianic succession of Mary Magdalene, the Sangreal, as the Albi-Gens, the Elven bloodline[28] of the (false) messiah. Thus, the Albigensian Crusade was equally a crusade levied by the Roman Church against the rival Even/Fairy bloodline of the Antichrist and against the rival form of mystical Christianity.

Languedoc was ground zero for western European Gnostic thought and doctrine; it was the epicenter for Roman Catholic opposition. The Cathar religion was a sister Gnostic religion to the Essenes/Rex Deus, which had another sister Gnostic religion in France known as Albigensianism,[29] linking the Cathars with the Gnostics, Rex Deus, and Grail bloodlines and the Cathars to fairies through the Albigensian religion.

Fairies were the Shining Ones of the Cathar Elven race; they were the ones to light the way, epitomizing the kingly tribe of the Ring Lords tradition, the Shining Ones of Tuatha Denaan. The Grail race, which is also vicariously known in lore as the Shining Ones, dates back to ancient Mesopotamia, to the Grail bloodline of the Anunnaki (Nephilim), the original Shining Ones, as you will recall from the first half of this book, from whence the Grail race and all genitive and associated races and bloodlines received their appellation.[30]

The Shining metaphor, of course, is rooted in fallen angels, false gods, and numinous Nephilim allegory. For example, the Veda sky god was called Dyaus, and recognized in Latin as *Deus*. It is known as *Devos* in Slavonic, *Dia* in Irish, and *Zeu*s in Greek; all mean "Bright One."[31] So, too, was *El*, as in *El Shaddai*, *Elohim*, and *El Elyon*, from ancient Canaan, home of Abraham after Ur, employed to identify the Lofty Ones, which alternatively were defined as Shining Ones in Sumeria. The Shining Ones of Sumer were variantly recorded as *Elohim*; they were also described as *An*, meaning "heaven," from which Anunnaki, gods, and overlords derive, for the ones of heaven came to earth and procreated Nephilim. The ancient Shining Ones were the *An-Anan-Na-Ge*, the "Fiery Sons of Heaven."[32]

Elf, then, is rooted in the Hebrew, Canaanite, and Sumerian word *El*, a Shining One, as in *El Shaddai* and *Elohim* used in the Bible. Theosophists believe *El* is also a Babylonian derivative of *Ellu* and *Ilu* in Akkadian. When the Grail/Ring/Dragon tradition spread across Europe, *El* became *Elly* in Wales and *Aillil* in Ireland.[33] *Ellyon* connects back to fairies, because it translates as the "goblin race."[34] *El* is known also as *Aelf* in Saxony and *Elf* in England. To this end, *El* is also equivalent to the Anglo Saxon word *Engel* and the Old French word *Angele*, which became the word we know as "angel."[35] All angels are beings of light that glow with their brilliance; they are the true heavenly Shining Ones.

Just to keep things straight, *Elohim* from the biblical perspective is somewhat different than the spurious perspective that has manipulated it for its own purposes. *El* is a generic designation, according to *Unger's*, for a god and was employed in the Old Testament for heathen deities such as El of Canaan. Therefore, the El of the Hebrews is a different El than the spurious forces would have you believe. Remember, El of Canaan was a bloody tyrant, a morbid, lustful character, who murdered uncompromisingly and persistently copulated with human females.[36] He was a Shining Being, a fallen angel, and one of the roots to the spurious mythology. The spurious *El* and variant suffixes attached were not the same as the biblical El Shaddai or Elohim, God the Most High; they were merely imposters and pretenders.

Elven fairies originated with the Viking and Germanic traditions, from which the Rex Deus Bruce, Sinclair, William the Conqueror, Knut, and Rollo families originated. King Arthur partnered equally with the Viking Rex Deus Gawain in a Grail (San Greal) alliance against the Romans. The Romans in England fell to Arthur's alliance of Welsh, Picts, Scotts, and Norse early in the fifth century C.E. The elven queens and kings of the Norse dynasties possessed magical power and were known alternatively as *elves* and *alfs*.[37]

Gawain was part of Arthur's Round Table of Knights, where these noble emissaries presented themselves as the living, ironclad Ring. In all representative customs of the fairy culture dating back to the Tuatha Denaan and the Scythian kings, their social structures were firmly based in designated seats known as *Raths*, which were round or circular. In other words, the Round Table was a recreation of the Fairy Ring of kingship,[38] the "mystical Brotherhood of Great Heroes."[39] The knights sat at the Round

Table as the kingly representatives that they were, as a symbol of united Ring Kingship, just as the Anunnaki Ring Lords had done at Nippur and in Atlantis before the flood.

The originating Norse Bruce and Sinclair families intermarried into the Rex Deus bloodlines, just as Gawain of Arthur lore and his descendants did in Wales and Britain. William the Conqueror in 1066 then merely reclaimed his family's kingship, originating with Knut's Viking empire centered in London from 1000–1025, which was seized from Arthur and Gawain's posterity by Saxons. Harold II of London was attacked but then defeated Harold Haardrade, king of Norway, but three days later, William the Conqueror, the Norman descendant of Rollo, attacked Harold II and prevailed.[40]

The Normandy invasion led by Rollo over a century beforehand led to the 912 C.E. Treaty of Saint Claire-Sur-Epte, which transferred Normandy to the Elven/Rex Deus Normans; this was merely the beginning of the premeditated retaking of San Greal territory (Brittany, Wales, and England) that was ruled over by Arthur and Gawain. What is important is that all the Gnostics of southern France, the Rollo/Elven bloodline of the Norse, and the Grail kingships of Wales and Britain were evidently all part of the very same web of bloodlines and religions that included Ireland and later Scotland.

The Sinclairs were originally descended from the Earl Rognvold that reigned over More in Norway. Rognvold was granted the lands in Orkney by King Harold I and later bore a son named Hrolf, better known as Rollo, who invaded France in 912 C.E., where he later signed the treaty with King Charles of France, the Treaty of St. Clair-Sur-Epte. Hrolf More/Rollo and his cousins all changed their names to St. Clair, establishing themselves as the protectors and the Dukes of Normandy. One should not be surprised to learn that the new name translates as "holy shining light."[41]

The newly formed St. Clair families, the Jarls of More, then intermarried with various families from French nobility (Rex Deus). Normandy was next to the lands settled by the Jewish Zadokite priests (the Essenes, the princes of Jerusalem, Rex Deus, whom they married); these families included names such as the Lords of Gisor, Payen, Fontaine, Anjou, de Bouillon, Brienne, Joinville, and Chaumont. The grafting of royal families was more than compatible, for both the Norse and mystic Essenes held similar religious beliefs, even to the extent that the Norse believed that the royal families all descended back to the god Thor through his various offspring of demigods (Nephilim). In fact, Niven Sinclair wrote in the fifteenth century C.E. that he believed Christianity had been hijacked by the Pauline cult so that proper attention was not given to Mother Earth (Gaea).[42]

The goddesses of fate were three sisters who spun the destiny of the world and were the same as the three Greek and Roman Fate deities.[43] They were superhuman women who loved mortal humans, were skilled in magic and astrology, and that wove great influence over the lives of humankind.[44] The Fates showed up in many literary works, such as Shakespeare's tragedy *Macbeth*.[45]

Francis Bacon was thought to be Shakespeare in some circles. Bacon was a Gnostic Adept of the Mysteries, a Freemason, a Rosicrucian, and the inspirational founder of the Royal Society, which elucidates why Shakespearian literature gushes with mystical doctrines such as fairies. Certainly, Bacon was a generous patron of Shakespeare and was known to have authored plays from the age of twelve, starting with *The Birth of Merlin*, and he grew up around the Strand Theater. Ben Jonson, also a Shakespeare contemporary, sneered that Shakespeare knew very little Latin and less Greek and exclaimed with vexation that he could not comprehend how such a man, a butcher's son with meager education, could have possibly created such a body of work saturated in all the erudition of the age.[46] Greer adds Shakespeare came from an illiterate working family and received at most a grammar school education, while his literature executed first-rate knowledge of English, the classics, and Cambridge slangs.[47]

In fact, Evans-Wentz notes Shakespeare's prose seems to have been shaped from his substantial (but unaccounted for) knowledge of Rosicrucian occultism, where such spirits as fairies, gnomes, goblins, and pixies hold an important place.[48] Many of Shakespeare's works are nothing more than Rex Deus history covertly encoded with genealogies and Legomin allegories set to poetry, including *King Lear*, *A Midsummer Night's Dream*, *Richard III*, *Hamlet*, and *Macbeth*. Both Shakespeare and Michael Mair, one of the founding fathers of the Rosicrucian Order, possessed the same publisher, Thomas Creede.[49]

Shakespeare related the name of the fairy queen, Titania, in *Midsummer Night's Dream* back to the Titans.[50] Her name was extracted from the

Roman poet Ovid and his work *Metamorphoses*, written 1,600 years before.[51] Shakespeare gave the name *Titania* to Oberon's wife after the daughter of the Titan Coius. Coius was one of six sons and daughters of Uranus and Gaea that included Oceanus, Creus, Hyperion, and the most famous Kronos and Iapetus.[52] In Ovid's work, Diana was dubbed with Titania, because she was definitely a daughter of the Titans. To this end, Gardner notes that it is then not surprising that Titania is reminiscent of the Dianic Caille Dauine forest people of the Ring lord Fairy strain.[53] *Metamorphoses* depicted the Titanic rebellion in its opening.[54]

Titania's husband, Oberon, the king of the fairies, is also saturated in Grail, Nephilim, and Ring Lord allegories. *Oberon* is synonymous, according to Gardner, with Alberic, the dwarf lord of *Nibelungenlied*, and synonymous with Aubrey, the historical twelfth-century elf king. Prior to Shakespeare, Oberon appeared as the dwarf king Oberon in the French tale *Huan De Bordeaux*. Thus, Shakespeare's Oberon seemingly is part of the Grail/Ring/ Fairy bloodline that descended from Scota and Niul, according to Gardner.[55]

Oberon/Aubrey/Alberic descended from the Albi-Gens of the Elven/ Fairy/Grail/Ring race. *Oberon* further derives from the Teutonic *Ober*, according to the *Oxford English Dictionary*, which, in turn, derived from lndo-European/Aryan *Ubar* and originally from the Scythian word *Uper*. *Reign*, derived from *ron*, hence Ober Rgn, Over Reign, and Oberon, which were arcane equivalents to the overlords and high kings of the Elven, Fairy, and Tuatha bloodlines. *Uper* was a very important word of the Tuatha Denaan for palpable reasons and derived from the Central European tradition of the *Oupieres*, a tradition of the vampire, i.e., the night operative of Vlad, the Prince of Darkness, known also as Dracula/Dragon. Overlord/Oberon was also equivalent to the British "Pendragon," according to Gardner.[56]

In the earliest Scythian and Sumerian traditions, the abiding symbol of the Ring Lords was the Ourobus, which was a serpent clutching its own tail. With a cross positioned above the ring, the Ourobus became the symbol for the masculine Orb of the sovereign regalia. With the cross positioned within the ring, the Ourobus represented the Holy Grail itself, which was identified with the Rosi Crucis (Rosicrucianism) and clearly demonstrates that the Ring and Grail are synonymous.[57] With the dragon reaching to clutch its tail, it then transforms into a dragon incurved into a circle that surrounds the Rosi Crucis/Mark of Cain. The Menstruum of the Red Dragon was memorialized in an engraving by Lucas Jennis in 1625 for Lampspringck's *De Lapide Philosophico*, which was accurately named "the Ouroboros," and which translates as "the philosopher's stone."[58]

Similarly, Puck in *Midsummer Night's Dream* was described as a sprite, an ancient Scythian ghost warrior, known also as a Shining One and identified with Robin Goodfellow, a goblin.[59] Teutonic doctrines of old Germany recorded forest sprites as *Hodekins*, from which the first syllable, *hod*, is believed in Gnostic and Theosophist lore to be the root for "hood," as in Robin Hood.[60] Goblins in Ring Culture lore were the attendants of the *Raths*, the Nephilim kings of the royal seats and dwellings of the Ring. Hence they were variantly recorded as the custodians or guardians of the wealth, wisdom, and knowledge of the ages; they were the treasurers and archivists[61] of The Genesis 6 Conspiracy.

Ruddy fairy (fate) queens and goddesses were the mother aspect of goddess worship[62] in fairy mythology, which originated with Isis. Fairy queens and goddesses are vicariously known in Rex Deus literature as fairy godmothers, just as in the fairy tale *Cinderella*. Fairy expert Cassandra Eason notes *Cinderella* was merely an (arcane Rex Deus) allegory for the struggle of the apostolic succession of James/Joseph of Arimathea against the Catholic apostolic succession of Peter, reflected in the way Cinderella challenged the status quo[63] with the help of her fairy queen, the fairy godmother.

CHAPTER 80

ORDO DRACONIS

> *Then another sign appeared in heaven: an enormous red dragon with seven heads and ten horns and seven crowns on his heads. His tail swept a third of the stars out of the sky and flung them to the earth.*
>
> —Revelation 12:3

Why did Fairy, Celtic, Welsh, and British kings of history maintain colorful titles of Pendragons, the Overlords/Oberons? And why were the original Pendragons not successive heirs but appointed from purity of Gaelic stock documented by Druidic elders?[1]

The first British Pendragon was Cymbeline from the House of Camulot, dating from 10 C.E.[2] But why was dragon symbolism introduced to fairy kingdoms at this historical intersection? And why is dragon symbolism important?

Gardner wrote that respected Druidic leaders carefully chose the originating, founding British family from exclusive Dragon families selected to be the “Kings of Kings”[3] in the messianic Dragon tradition. The last British Pendragon was Cadwaldr of Gwynedd. He died in 664 C.E., when Britain fell to the German Anglo Saxons.[4] This was the Arthurian

Welsh dynasty, whereby Arthur, the great Celtic chief, led his people against the Saxons[5] and the Romans.

Before their downfall, the Royal House of Celtic Britain was known as the famous Red Dragon dynasty of Wales,[6] a remarkable appellation when set alongside the infamous passages from Revelation portraying Satan to be the Red Dragon.[7] The Red Dragon has surprisingly represented Britons throughout the last 2,000 years, while the army calls their cavalrymen "dragoons," a word that historian and author Fergus Flemming says derived from *dragon* and is traceable back to the days of Roman occupation and Arthur. Similarly, by the eleventh century, the dragon represented the British, Scots, and Cimry. Arthur's celebrated battle standard and helmet crest had a dragon, and he was curiously depicted in a 1290 C.E. manuscript with the Sarmatian Dragon.[8] The Dragon has been incorporated into the ensign of the Prince of Wales and appears on the Welsh flag.[9]

Of the twenty-eight statues immortalizing Rex Deus dynastic kings raised in Innsbruck by the Hapsburgs, included at the center of one row representing the alleged founder of the Hapsburg dynasty, is Arthur clutching Excalibur. Arthur is decorated with a chain wrapped around his neck, with a writhing, seething dragon representing his office. Guinevere, wife of Arthur, was likened to a crowned serpent that was a religious symbol of the Sarrassin, the ancient people of Britain.[10]

Noting that Arthur's dragon was that of the Sarmatian Dragon, let us now inquire about just who the ancient Sarmatians were. Sarmatians were a people credited with likely importing the Arthurian legends to Britain. They originated from the Black Sea region, the same place as the Cimmerians, one of the names of the three originating Celtic Welsh dynasties of the Grail and home to the noteworthy Scythians and Alain. Remember, Grail and Arthur legends were merely Christian gloss for the true cult; all authors provide Arthur with a veil of Christianity, but the legends clearly are not Christian in origin.[11] These unexplained, Rex Deus legends are Celtic through and through and are likely authentic legends from Scythia and Sarmatia.

Ancient Scythian lore contained legends of magic swords (Excalibur) and golden chalices (Grail) for the consumption of blood.[12] Scythians were known for scalping their enemies and then drinking their blood from old skulls.[13] The Sarmatians developed smith skills from the Scythian tribe of

Kaybs, which derived the Celtic word *Caliburn* and or *ex-kalyburn*, which eventually became Excalibur.[14] Similarly, Reid noted Grail quests were embedded with the Celtic doctrine of regeneration (reincarnation) and held long-concealed but real history in their allegories.[15] The Sarmatians, in fact, were a cousin race to the Scythians.[16] All this connects back to Scythia being the home of the Keltoi/Galatians.

Sarmatians were mercenaries for the Roman army; they displayed as their battle standard their Roman title "Draconius" for their cavalry.[17] The carrier of the banner, or battle standard, was also called Draconious. Romans captured the Sarmatians into their army specifically for Britain. Their body armor was constructed of small-scale-like plates tarnished to a green color, which gave them the appearance of lizards or snakes, or as the second-century C.E. Greek geographer Pausanias noted, like dragons. After the Romans withdrew from Britain in 410 C.E., Vortigen became the Welsh king and was elected the Pendragon. He then unaccountably adopted the Sarmatian banner, the Red Dragon, which is the Welsh flag of today.[18]

The leader of the Sarmatian mercenaries at the time of their introduction to England, circa 170 C.E., was Lucius Artorius Castus.[19] One cannot ignore the coincidence of the timing and similarity in names to King Lucius of the Grail dynasty, who came to power in 180 C.E., nor can one ignore the name Artorius, which is one possibility for the original root for Arthur.

Scythians, Cimmerrians, and Sarmatians of the Black Sea region eventually synthesized into one people, but legend also has it that the famous Amazon female warriors of Greek mythology interbred with the Scythians, forming a new people renowned as the Sauromatiae, or better known as the Sarmatians.[20] Greeks knew them formally as the Sauronatiae.[21] By 200 B.C.E., Sarmatians dominated Scythia, causing Cimmerrians and Scythians to fade into Sarmatian society, forming the greater Sarmatian/Scythian nation, which was very easily done, for they all contained the same heritage, pantheon, and culture.[22] Herodotus explained that even by his time, 484–425 B.C.E., Scythia had already become recognized as Sarmatia.[23]

Sarmatians placed the dragon at the apex of their mystic paragon, while Sarmatian translates literally as "lizard people." In antiquity, lizards, snakes, serpents, and dragons were all considered one and the same.[24] We could then, in all likelihood, label the Sarmatians "the dragon/serpent people" or “the dragon/serpent nation.” Sarmatians are conceded to have descended from the Aryan race,[25] roaming Nephilim of Atlantis, who held the appearance of vipers, as you will recall.

The rise of Roman Christianity and fall of the British Pendragon ended the heady days of the dragon, but the bloodlines recorded continued in secrecy, holding their positions of authority in Europe, Britain, and the Near East,[26] including the Norse and Merovingian Rex Deus branches. This was Merlin’s message communicated in Grail lore, when he commented on the end that was befalling his era that must endure for a time. He was referring to the rise of Roman Christianity. Merlin, a Druidic Adept, was describing the twofold events that included the decline of Druidic mysticism, which held sway over and control of the Celtic monarchies, and the fall of the Dragon Court of both the British Celtic monarchy and the Merovingian dynasty to the Roman Christian-dominated Anglo Saxons and alternative French Catholic-sponsored monarchs.

Druidic/Gnostic pantheism burrowed underground, hidden by the cover of Celtic Christianity that demonstrated its loyalty to Rome on the surface but remained true to its Gnostic beginnings underneath. In this way, Celtic Christianity enthusiastically supported such memorable historical turning points as Rollo, William the Conqueror, Robert the Bruce, and the House of Stuart rising to prominence and power.

Gardner recorded that in 1408, the Dragon Court was formally reestablished in mainland Europe through Sigismund Von Luxembourg, the king of Hungary and a descendant of Luisgnan, Dragon King of Jerusalem. Sigismund was crowned the Holy Roman Emperor (King of Jerusalem),[27] just as Godfrois of the Templars, Priory of Sion, and Rex Deus was crowned before him and which the Antichrist will likewise be crowned in the future. The formal Dragon Court remained in dormant hibernation and exile after the fall of the Merovingian dynasty in France, in mainland Europe; until 1408, although, it remained active in the English kingship through William the Conqueror and the Stuart kingship via Robert the Bruce.

The Dragon Court was toppled in England after the fall of the Stuart dynasty, which was replaced by the Hanoverian dynasty of Germany that reigns to this day. In Europe, the Dragon Court remained alive mostly through the Hapsburg dynasty of Austria, even though it is still alive in the Luxembourg bloodline[28] and likely the Spanish monarchical bloodline.

Gardner maintains that in Britain, the Draconian order known as the Rosicrucian Anglicae has maintained the Dragon tradition to this day in secrecy. The Ordo Draconis resides within the infamous Royal House of Stuart[29] and its descendants, as well as in other mystic organizations of Great Britain.

The Imperial and Royal Court of the Dragon contains an inner secret court (Snake Brotherhood) identified as *Sarkany Rend*, which acts as a repository for their ancient knowledge.[30] All this is reminiscent of the secret inner courts of the Freemasons, Gnostics, Rosicrucians, Theosophists, and all mystic religions and organizations. The Sarkany Rend was registered in 1408 at the High Court of Budapest as the Imperial and Royal Dragon Court, the *Ordo Draconis*. All this was done while England was in its late Plantagenet era and before the Stuarts became the kings of England. The Dragon Court was then formally reconstituted under King Zsigmond of Hungary while Europe was in political turmoil.[31]

Zsigmond inherited the Dragon legacy in 1397, when he drew up the Ordo Draconis (Brotherhood of the Snake) with twenty-three nobles that included Vladislav Jagello; Christopher III; the kings of Poland, Denmark, and Norway; King Aragon of Lithuania; and many other important nobles of Europe. The members all wore the sign of the Rosi Crucis, and then later in 1439, the Duke of Norfolk joined the order. Zsigmond was then crowned Holy Roman Emperor in 1411. Today the order includes Prince Michael of Albany, the head of the Royal House of Stuart, and much of the European royalty, where the House of Stuart acts as its protectorate.[32]

This Dragon fraternity was resurrected to become the successor to the ancient Dragon Court of Egypt and, in particular, Heliopolis, where the Great White (Snake) Brotherhood of the Therapeutate resided. The Dragon Court was established, according to Gardner, as a Pharonic institution of science and scholarship, where the Royal Court provided for the priestly pursuits and teachings of Thoth, just as the Great White Brotherhood of Tutmosis III also did in Egypt. It was the obligation of these Masters to ensure the purity of the continuing royal bloodline that was perpetuated through the Dragon queens of the matrilineal Grail succession,[33] just as it was in ancient Egypt.

What is no coincidence to all this secrecy of Snake Orders is that Vlad III, the Prince of Walachia and the military governor of Transylvania was inexplicably inducted into the Sarkany Rend, the Order of the Dragon, in

1439, by none other than King Zsigmond Von Luxembourg himself. This was the nefarious family of Vlad the Impaler, who the character Dracula was based upon. In fact, Vlad II was known as Lord Draconis, which derived the variant appellation “Dracul.” Vlad III inherited his father’s Dragon office, becoming *Dracula*, the “son of a Dragon.”[34]

The under-investigated Vlad was the overlord (Oberon) of the old Scythian traditions; he was known to be of fair skin (pale), with reddish hair and green eyes, a Noble Celt. Vlad was educated in the Mystery School of Solomon in Austria; he was an Adept of alchemy who was also known to be an Adept of the Star Fire culture, the blood-drinking cult of Nephilim. Vlad was affected by sunlight and became a night person, or night operative, known again, not without coincidence, as a night operating *Oupiere*, as in the traditions of Oberon that we have already detailed. Vlad the Oupiere was known to have had his mystical powers enhanced through the consumption of Star Fire,[35] blood.

It is hardly a surprise, then, to have had Dracula’s Legomin character based almost entirely on Vlad the Impaler, linking him to the immortal, bloodsucking vampires of mythology, from the night-operating, pale skinned, blood drinking Nephilim tradition, all after the pursuit of immortality. Add to the characterization the ferocious fangs of the cobra or serpent, and you have completed the profile of the modern vampire of literature, allegorizing the Dragon Court and their ancestral links back to Nephilim. And, of course, the vampire nation is always cast as enemies of Christianity that are locked into a perpetual dualist and eternal battle waged between good and evil.

The insignia the surviving Dragon Court of Luxembourg adopted for its emblem was a dragon incurved to a circle around a red cross. This is the emblem of the Rosicrucians, the birthmark of the Merovingians, the Ouroboros, and the original Rosi Crucis, which was established before 3000 B.C.E., the infamous Mark of Cain.[36]

Also consider that the Rosicrucians unaccountably reserve particular reverence to both Tubal-Cain and Cain with regard to primordial knowledge. Rosicrucians were the mystical group that spawned Theosophy through its treasury of prehistoric knowledge, lore, and secret symbols, and Rosicrucians also spawned the Royal Society/Invisible College of England to cultivate this spurious knowledge at the dawn of the Age of Reason. One concludes Rex Deus nobles and the Ordo Draconis spawned the Rosicrucian Order.

Today, the power of the Dragon Court operates through Freemasonry, the Illuminati, and Rosicrucianism, along with all its powerful corporate, political, and religious empires sponsored by Rex Deus. We must acknowledge that the Dragon Court and Rex Deus are one and the same.

Let us now inspect the curious history and allegory of the Dragon.

CHAPTER 81

SERPENTS AND DRAGONS

So the Lord God said to the serpent, "Because you have done this, 'Cursed are you above all livestock and all wild animals. You will crawl on your belly and eat dust all the days of your life. I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your offspring and hers; he will crush your head, and you will strike his heel.' "

—Genesis 3:14–15

The joint legacy of the serpent and the dragon was that of the prehistoric crocodile; it was the most sacred of all creatures in antiquity.[1]

The primordial crocodile was indelibly renowned, without explanation, in Egyptian tradition to be the most plausible representative for the pre-Eden serpent. Is this why polytheists believe the prehistoric serpent should not be confused with the cold, venomous, legless, slimy, and speechless snake it is today?[2]

Ginzberg noted the original serpent was created to be king over all animals,[3] thus legitimizing its originating messianic and kingship allegories and linking its sponsorship to seraphim angels. All this also lends itself to supporting the legends of Satan refusing to bow to the progeny of apes, Adam, because original serpentine/Saurian beings were akin to the seraphim angels. Saurian/serpentine beings were seemingly the first intelligent beings created to be kings over all animals.

Antiquity concluded that the numerous varieties of serpents were originally beings walking on two legs, until the infamous event in Eden, when God declared serpents would then crawl on their bellies.[4] Thus they lost their limbs for conspiring in the fall of humankind from grace and innocence. Remember, the pre-Eden serpent was recorded without explanation as the craftiest of all pre-Eden animals.[5] No doubt, degrading the crafty serpent to the lowliest of animals only infuriated Satan and his seraphim allies even more.

Some believe that all the serpent allegories infesting the disparate cultures around the globe reflect an ancestral memory, where serpents and reptiles may have been the dominant species on earth at one time,[6] whispering unexplained memories from ancient epochs of Saurian and reptile dominance over mammals in the little-known age of dinosaurs. Remember, in the age before God created Adam and the people of day six, the mammal kin to primates, known today as man, seraphim angels controlled the earth. Likely, dinosaurs and other reptilian beings were the *watcher*’s privileged life forms. All this was reflected in *Star Trek Voyager’s* account of an ancient, intelligent, and superior race of Saurians that evolved from dinosaurs and had originally dominated the earth before the age of humans.

Possibly, a serpent-like being with intelligence similar to a human may have been might have been the dominant species, possessing kingship rights. Remember Satan’s jealousy and seditious actions towards God and Adam after God created the mammal Adam to be lord of the earth. Kingship was not originally given to Adam but was later lowered to earth from heaven, by seraphim fallen angels to the viper/serpent-like Nephilim. In a similar fashion, the *Lord of the Rings* trilogy memorializes these forgotten, ancient epochs and then announces the new epoch and dominion of man at the former epoch’s denouement, with elves, fairies, trolls, and all immortal beings sailing off into the sunset to the otherworld.

The kingly and highly evolved serpent was punished for being the vessel of evil for Satan.[7] Serpents were likely the pre-Eden protégé of kingship for seraphim angels on earth, just as vipers, serpent-like Nephilim, were seraphim protégés designed for kingship after Eden. This, then, was likely at the core of the violation against the laws of creation by the seraphim angels. Dark angels were, in part, endeavoring to replace the kingly and Messianic inheritance of Adam's seed with the New Man, the reptilian variant of humans in the form of Nephilim, all in the spirit of the serpentine/Dragon/Saurian heritage of ages past.

Legend proposes that the pre-Eden serpent was similar in appearance to the crocodile and dragon; hence the joint legacy and the kingly aptitude of the messianic dragon represented in Egyptian ancient society by the sacred crocodile. In fact, ancient Egyptian mythology remembers the kingly aptitude of the crocodile as dating as far back as Menes, the first dynastic Pharaoh, from around 2900–3100 B.C.E., when the crocodiles were strangely recanted as fighting in battle alongside the Egyptians. Hence, crocodiles have been honored ever since. Even Osiris was celebrated as the serpent from the sea and as the serpent king.[8]

Ginzberg and Josephus wrote that, indeed, Jewish legends recorded that the pre-Eden serpent resembled man and that this obscure serpent was the cleverest of animals; it stood upright and was very large,[9] and it ate the same food as man.[10] This advanced variety of serpent was as tall as a camel, stood on two feet, and did the work of humans.[11] As a consequence of Eden, it lost its power of speech, lost its hands and feet, lost its ears, lost its wings,[12] lost its size, and lost its mental advantages—and had poison inserted under its tongue to always signify the serpent as the enemy of humankind.[13]

The (royal) serpent fell from grace as the highest form of being to the lowest form of animal in creation, in a most similar and striking fashion as Lucifer the seraphim archangel fell from grace and heaven as the enemy of humankind.[14] This, then, elucidates Jesus' curious remarks: "'Lord, even the demons submit to us in your name.' He replied, 'I saw Satan fall like lightening from heaven. I have given you authority to trample on snakes and scorpions and to overcome all the power of the enemy.'"[15]

The best-written record of the pre-Eden serpent and its fall at Eden is recorded in the Hagadah. It is generally included among Gnostic gospels, alongside the Dead Sea Scrolls, Christian Apocrypha, and the Kaballah, among other documents.

> Among the animals the serpent was notable. Of all of them he had the most excellent qualities, in some of which he resembled man. Like man he stood upright upon two feet, and

> in height he was equal to a camel. Had it not been for the fall of man, which brought misfortune to them too, one pair of serpents would have sufficed to perform all the work man has to do, and, besides, they would have supplied him with silver, gold, gems, and pearls. As a matter of fact, it was the very ability of the serpent that led to the ruin of man and his own ruin. His superior mental gifts caused him to become an infidel. It likewise elucidates his envy of man, especially his conjugal relations. Envy made him meditate ways and means of bringing about the death of Adam.[16]

The Hagadah then records God punishing the Royal Serpent for its wickedness:

> The mouth of the serpent was closed, and his power of speech taken away; his hands and feet were hacked off; the earth was given of him for food; he must suffer great pain in sloughing his skin; enmity is to exist between him and man; if he eats the choicest viands, or drinks the sweetest beverages, they all change to dust in his mouth; the pregnancy of the female serpent lasts seven years; men shall seek to kill him as they catch sight of him; even in the future world, where all beings will be blessed, he will not escape the punishment decreed for him; he will vanish out of the Holy Land if Israel walks in the ways of the Lord.[17]

The Hagadah further records the royal nature of the pre-Eden serpent, again lending support to its mythical, royal origins:

> Furthermore, God spoke to the serpent: “I created you to be king over all animals, cattle and the beasts of the field alike; but you were not satisfied. Therefore you will be cursed above all cattle and above every beast of the field. I created you of upright posture; but you were not satisfied. Therefore you shall go upon your belly. I created you to eat the same food as man; but you were not satisfied. Therefore you shall eat the dust all the days of your life.”[18]

The serpent was king over all animals before God created Adam, the New Man. Indeed, Adam was a New Man, a man that serpents no longer reigned over. Adam was a new pedigree and somehow different from the humans of day six, for Adam was created as a single being, uniquely designed for a separate destiny, while Eve was created later from Adam’s rib to provide a suitable mate from the same DNA and bloodline.[19] This conclusion is backed by the Kabbalists, who, according to Karen Armstrong, clearly identified two distinct narratives to human creation, where God created humankind in Genesis chapter one and then created Adam for a special commission in chapter two.[20]

The unexplained humans created on day six were created in plural: “male and female he created them.”[21] They were likely created in great numbers because their commission was to be fruitful and multiply to the point of filling and subduing the entire earth.[22] The Qur’an states that, indeed, the people of day six did proliferate into vast numbers that settled throughout the world.[23]

Adam was a higher form of human. The unexplained humans of day six were created both male and female from God and the angels: “God said, ‘Let us make man in our image, in our likeness’” (Gen. 1:26), whereas Adam was created in a separate event, from the dust of the earth, and then had the breath of God breathed into him to become a special being (Gen. 2:7). All this was further underlined later in Genesis, when the lineage of Adam and Seth was listed (Gen. 5:1–3), further underlining Adam was created in singular and referred to as “him,” while the people of day six were created in plural as male and female and referred to as “them.” The passage goes on to note that Seth was born as the son of Adam, the second in Adam’s lineage, inexplicably suggesting Cain was not of Adam’s loins, further noting Seth was born in the likeness and image of Adam, again suggesting a difference in appearance from Cain and the people of day six.

Proposing a different creation and time frame for the people of day six is a most contentious issue, but it does bring many unexplained details into focus. The separation into two different creations of humans frees the Bible from the 6,000 years of chronology, dating back to Adam, for the people of day six could have been created at any time before the creation of Adam but after the renewal of the earth (Genesis 1:2), answering the questions about how humans date back hundreds of thousands of years.

The “renewal of the earth concept” I am proposing derives from the precise language employed in Genesis 1:1-2: “In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. Now the earth was formless and empty, darkness was over the surface of the deep, and the Spirit of God was hovering over the waters.” The word “now” opening verse 2 suggests to me there was a period of time between “the beginning” and “now” when the Spirit was hovering over the waters, and when the earth had somehow “now” become formless. Similarly, Psalm 102:25 states: “In the beginning you laid the foundations of the earth, and the heavens are the work of your hands” but this psalm does not state the Spirit was sent at this point, possibly suggesting that at a later point the Spirit was sent “to renew the earth” perhaps from some form of disaster like an asteroid. The “renewal of the earth” after the earth somehow had become formless and empty sometime after the beginning, then, seems to elucidate the enigmatic Psalm 104:30: “When you send your Spirit, they are created, and you renew the face of the earth,” once more suggesting the earth was renewed at some point in time. Further the “renewal of the earth” concept becomes crystalized when one considers the alternate translation the NIV Bible provides in verse 2 where “now the earth was” could alternatively translated as “became” (Genesis 1:2 note a). The alternate translation significantly changes the verse (and thus its meaning) to: “Now the earth became formless and empty.” Ergo, the “renewal of the earth” concept opens the possibility to the idea that earth could indeed be billions of years old, while working harmoniously with scientific conclusions. The “renewal of the earth” concept additionally works with science’s other notion that the human race is much older than 6,000 years, when we consider the people of day six were created well before Adam in Eden; perhaps thousands of years.

Further evidence derives from the belief that Cain took a wife from among this separate stock of humans (Gen. 4:17), as there were no records of Adam having any other children at that point other than Abel—no daughters. This further brings into alignment the rationale for the Rosi Crucis, the Mark of Cain, after Cain was banished from Eden, for Cain was clearly afraid that other humans would kill him:

> “I will be a restless wanderer on the earth, and whoever finds me will kill me.” But the Lord said to him, “Not so; if anyone kills Cain, he will suffer vengeance seven times over.” Then the Lord put a mark on Cain so that no one who found him would kill him. So Cain went out from the Lord’s presence and lived in the land of Nod, East of Eden.
>
> —Genesis 4:13–16

Cain clearly took a wife from other humans dwelling in Nod.

Further, the people of day six were permitted to eat anything they chose; they were hunters and gatherers, nomads who were commissioned to spread to the four corners of the earth. Freemasonry, as you will recall, believes humans were nomadic and later abandoned that lifestyle, building great monuments to worship their gods, antediluvian buildings and monuments that demanded great knowledge and exacting science.[24] Thus, the nomadic people of day six were likely reorganized and transformed by Cain and his knowledge of the Seven Sacred Sciences. Remember, ancient civilizations seem to have sprung together out of thin air, espousing advanced knowledge, culture, and civilized behavior, which appeared fully mature.

Conversely, the descendants of Adam and Seth were agrarians, farmers who were vegetarians. In fact, the descendants of Adam and Seth were not permitted to consume meat until after the deluge, when God then permitted the progeny of Noah to eat meat. Additionally, the language in Genesis 2 is precise in its choice and exacting in its application, if one chooses to note it.

Certainly, one must conclude the preamble to Adam's creation expresses a distinct time, commission, and agrarian existence:

> … When the Lord God made the earth and the heavens—and no shrub of the field [orchards] had yet appeared on the earth, and no plant of the field [grain and vegetable fields] had sprung up, for the Lord God had not sent rain on the earth, and there was no man [Adam] to work [farm] the ground, but streams came up and watered the whole surface of the ground—the Lord formed the man [Adam] …
>
> —Genesis 2:4–7

Scripture is not referring to wild plants and trees here but to organized farming and to the birth of modern civilization that unaccountably sprang into existence from thin air; whereas the people of day six remained hunters and gatherers, until they, too, were civilized by Cain and the dark angels. This contrarian conclusion shows why only the complete genealogies of Adam's descendants were recorded in Scripture, for Adam was created as a special human for a special destiny; whereas Cain diluted his rebellious bloodlines with the humans of day six. Clearly, Genesis was speaking about two separate human creations, just as the Bible outlines two separate accounts.

The *Popol Vuh* appears to back up this contrarian conclusion that Adamites were a distinct people separated from the people of day six. From this account, the original antediluvians were very, very poor, wearing ragged animal skins for clothes, until they accepted the leadership from their new gods, likely Cain and his pantheon of dark angels. The antediluvians of the *Popol Vuh* were created as four races, from black through white, as you may recall. They multiplied in great numbers and in many tongues across the surface of the earth. The day six races were created to nourish, worship, and sustain the gods at some time after the separation of the sky and earth from the watery chaos (day one) that somehow involved the Leviathan-like serpents Tepeu and Gucumatz. The aboriginal antediluvians, then, were subsequently taught the arts, crafts, and sciences, by their gods and kings, (Snake) gods such as Quetzalcoatl, resulting in the construction of cities like Chichen Itza and Mayapan. It was not until these four races forgot to honor the gods that the gods darkened the skies and sent the black rains of the deluge.[25]

The pre-Eden serpent may very well have been an equal to the humans of day six, and it may even have been a competing being for the dominion of the earth. But once God had created and elevated a human being in the form of Adam, a being that contained the breath of God, a being that would inherit the earth for eternity, then the entire earthly equation was disrupted. The seraphim-sponsored serpents were then clearly subordinate to the Adamite mammals and prime to be manipulated or possessed by Satan. The serpent that deceived Eve and Adam was, indeed, an intelligent, royal being that spoke and walked upright.

Isaac Asimov believed the serpent of Genesis and the dragon in Babylonian mythology were one and the same, that a dragon is merely a huge serpent with wings, where the fiery breath represents the serpent's venom.[26] Job, too, describes the fire-breathing Leviathan as a multi-headed dragon,[27] a dragon known also in Greek lore as a *Hydra*.[28] *The New Testament in Today's English* notes the serpent was a name given to the dragon that appears in Revelation.[29] Finally, according to *Nelson's*, a dragon is an imaginary beast, a word used to describe sea serpents, (land) serpents, and crocodiles.[30] Therefore, let it be understood once and for all: dragons are a kind of serpent in antediluvian history, legend, and related allegories.

Thus, the dragon/serpent/crocodile was the most appropriate beast pantheists could have devised for their messianic kingship, reflecting allegiance to Satan and seraphim angels. The New Testament In Today's English notes the dragon is thought by modernists to be an imaginary beast, understood to be like a huge lizard, which is also called a serpent, appearing in the Bible as the devil,[31] thereby also connecting Dragon kingships back to their sponsor, Satan. The antediluvian dragon/serpent was then the majestic animal of kingship before Eden. And after that, it was employed as an allegory for the kingship sponsored by seraphim angels, which was once more lowered from heaven to earth, both before and after the flood, to the descendants and followers of Cain and the seraphim-like Nephilim, by serpent-like angels.

Dragon mythology has worldwide appeal. It permeates all cultures. All cultures have a name for *dragon*, even though the animal cannot prove itself to have existed. Dragon-like monsters unexplainably appear in remote cultures such as the Hopi, Huron, and Zuni. Mythologists Calvert Watkins and Joseph Fontenrose view the enduring patterns of dragon mythology as the fundamental myth plot of Western civilization, the story of stories, while Fontenrose further advocates that dragon mythology is an expression of an essential, cosmic dualism (polytheism).[32]

Drakon was the Greek word for dragon, meaning "serpent," just as the ancient Sumerian words *Usumgal* and *Mus-Usumgal* translate as "serpent" and are metaphors in praise of gods and kings. The ancient, holy crocodile was known as Draco, the mighty dragon of kingship, whence the title "Pendragon" (head dragon) was contrived in the Celtic British kingdoms,[33] and from whence the Roman word for dragon, *draco*, derived.[34] *Draco* is Latin for "dragon" and derived from the Greek word *draconia*, which was originally described in antiquity to be a serpent-like creature with wings. Furthermore, *draco* derived from the original *drakon*, or *draconta*, which alternatively translates as "to watch"[35] in the spirit of infamous seraphim *watchers*, the angels that bore wings. The angelic posterity, the Nephilim/Anunnaki were remembered in antiquity as *watchers*, rulers, and kings and all appeared like serpents/ dragons. Moreover, variant forms of reptile serpents with wings likely thrived before Eden, as well, suggested by the fact that numerous legends recorded wings were removed from the serpent, along with other body parts.

The dragon, too, was an ancient symbol for power and heroes[36] adopted by the antediluvian and postdiluvian kingships. Jonathan Evans notes dragons were symbolic wonders of the world, and Tolkien describes them as part of the perilous realm of faerie: fairy tales, fantasy literature, and imaginative fiction.[37] Our literature and entertainment overflows with covert allegories cloaking intrigue. Seemingly, the dragon was the key metaphor for patriarchal bloodlines (male), while the fairy represented the matriarchal bloodline (female).

Thus, the ancient Egyptian crocodile god was epitomized by the god Sobek but was also called "Messeh," while its Mesopotamian equivalent was *Mus-Hus*, a giant, serpentine quadruped,[38] likely the same as *Mus-Usumgal* (Sumerian for "serpent"). Mesopotamian and Egyptian royalty were called Dragons because they were anointed in the fat of the Mus-Hus, or Messeh; kings were then called "Anointed Ones" and "Messiahs."[39] The prowess of the crocodile represented the kingly aptitude of the Messianic Dragon[40] (kingship), with specific emphasis on *Messianic* (false), otherwise identified as the Antichrist. Remember, Rex Deus propagates a messianic royal bloodline of the Grail and Fairies and that the Grail/Fairy bloodline was the matriarchal Dragon bloodline. Rex Deus holds a joint desire to introduce the false Snake messiah, establishing him as king of the world and Jerusalem. The future Antichrist is rooted figuratively and genealogically in Nephilim Dragon kingships of the Ring.

Rex Deus regards its members to be a fusion of many strains of royal bloodlines, including those of Aaron, David, Saul, Akenhaten, the Scythians, the Trojans, the assorted Benjamite exiles, Temar, Jesus, James, Mary Magdalene, and amazingly enough, even more. The Grail/Fairy/Dragon/ Ring dynasty began 3,000 years before Jesus.[41] It crossed over the great deluge into contemporary times. It spread from Egypt, Mesopotamia, and Scythia to the balance of the world, establishing the alleged true race of kings and dynasties of the Ring Lord Culture. The Grail/Dragon dynasty, according to Gardner, passed to the West mostly through the Merovingians, who united through marriage with the Pendragons of Britain through Faramund. The Merovingians believed they were linked with parallel Dragon blood strains from Ham and Tubal-Cain that somehow survived through the royal houses of Scythia.[42]

Scrutinize all literature and entertainment that promotes heroes, Titans, dragons, fairies, elves, ancient treasure, ancient knowledge, aliens, vampires, werewolves, and Mother Earth, for all are designed to prepare this unsuspecting generation for enslavement and genocide.

CHAPTER 82

LEVIATHAN

In that day, the Lord will punish with his sword, his fierce, great and powerful sword, Leviathan the gliding serpent, Leviathan the coiling serpent; he will slay the monster of the sea.

—Isaiah 27:1

Leviathan is an allegory for Satan, a dragon; a gliding serpent;[1] the red dragon and serpent of Revelation;[2] and possibly the furious, horned, red dragon known as Mushusso in Mesopotamia.[3]

What can prehistoric records tell us about Leviathan, creation, and the little-explained rebellion of angels before the advent humankind? And how is Leviathan relevant to The Genesis 6 Conspiracy?

Baal, the great storm god, was alternatively known in parallel allegoric form as the bull and was called variantly a dragon, a serpent, and the celebrated slayer of the chaos monster Yam in the Ugaritic Texts.[4] Canaanite legends of Baal pre-date the surviving hard copy records of the Bible. In the pantheistic version, Baal, the great weather god, bludgeoned the gods of the sea and rivers, Prince Yamm and Judge Nahor, confining them to their proper spheres. Baal's father, El, the great bull god, then rewarded Baal with a mansion worthy of his valor.[5]

Baal was the god that defeated the chaos monster of the sea in these legends,[6] the great Leviathan recorded in Job and other parts of the Bible, which is known in Near Eastern mythology as Tiamet. In this tradition, all the gods of Babylon shrunk before Tiamet, the monster of the sea,[7] the goddess and dragon of disorder.[8] *The Epic of Gilgamesh* noted the female Creation Mother, Tiamet, was slain tossing half the corpse to heaven so that salt water would no longer cover dry land.[9] Marduk killed the great female dragon of the primal saltwater and then strung his bow across the sky as a sign of his great victory over the Waters of Chaos.[10]

Marduk split Tiamet in two, like a shellfish, and then confined half to the sky and half to the earth[11] (male and female). Tiamet is known in Near East mythology as the great World Dragon or Cosmic Dragon; she was a dragon described in the *Enuma Elish* of Babylon, the Mesopotamian epic of creation, as possessing a vast serpentine body that was impenetrable to weapons, with two forelegs, an immense tail, and huge horns on her head. Together with Apsu (male), she produced the heavens, earth, and spawned the gods.[12] Tiamet, Apsu, and Leviathan were all primordial gods from the chaos, whose names translate as “abyss,” “void,” or “bottomless pit.”[13]

The biblical Leviathan was a creature more than 900 miles in length, with seven heads (Job described it as a Hydra) and more than 300 eyes; it was invulnerable and encircled the world in the great Abyss, or depths of the cosmic ocean.[14] *Unger’s* notes the Leviathan as an animal writhing or gathering itself into its folds, the same description that is used for crocodiles and serpents.[15] Biblical legends of Leviathan note it was the mightiest creature of creation that eventually required the slaying of the female, for two such creatures would have destroyed the earth.[16]

Unger’s further notes that it is apparent there is a close parallel with the biblical Leviathan to the seven-headed Canaanite monster, Lotan, of the Ugaritic Texts.[17] In fact, Lotan, the seven-headed dragon of the sea recorded in “Raw Shamra” is considered by Carol Rose to be the same monster as Tiamet and Leviathan,[18] while Jonathan Evans notes that Yamm was frequently called “Lotan.”[19] Just as Lotan and Tiamet were the sea monsters that caused Chaos and the seas to rage, so did the Leviathan: “He (Leviathan) makes the depths churn like a boiling cauldron and stirs up the sea like a pot of ointment” (Job 41:31). Psalm 74:13–14 records God destroying the ancient, multi-headed Leviathan: “It was you who split open the sea by your power; you broke the heads of the monster in the waters. It was you who crushed the heads of the Leviathan."

So, too, does the Bible describe Rahab, a mythological sea monster.[20] Again this mythical sea monster is also related to the churning of the primordial seas:

> Who is like the Lord among the heavenly beings? In the council of the holy ones God is greatly feared; he is more awesome than all who surround him…. You rule over the surging sea; when its waves mount up you still them. You crushed Rahab like one of the slain.
>
> —Psalm 89:7, 9–10

Job 26:12–13 declares, "By his power he churned up the sea; by his wisdom he cut Rahab to pieces. By his breath the skies became fair; his hand pierced the gliding serpent."[21] Rahab is actually referred to as a dragon in the King James Version: "Art thou not that hath cut Rahab, and wounded the Dragon?" (Isa. 51:9).

According to *Nelson's*, these inscrutable Rahab recordings refer to an evil power overcome by God; God's smiting of Rahab signifies God's power over the chaos of the primeval waters of creation.[22] These are the same primeval waters talked about in both Canaanite and Babylonian mythologies. It is likely that Rahab, Leviathan, Lotan, Tiamet, Nahor, Apsu, and Yam were all one and the same monster at the time of creation.

As per Ginzberg, Rahab was the angel of the sea who rebelled at the creation of the world; God commanded Rahab to swallow the sea for his rebellion, but Rahab refused, whence God then proceeded to slay Rahab. On day three of the Genesis creation account, the primeval waters refused to remain separated into upper and lower waters, but they only imitated their chief, Rahab, in their rebellion. According to Ginzberg, this is the defiance and destruction at creation that God met with, which the Bible skirts around.[23]

According to biblical legends, the prince of darkness did not obey the command of God for the creation of the world, and God then rebuked him for his rebellion. Allied with the prince of darkness were the dark waters, the primeval waters/matter; the waters sent above were female, while the lower waters were male, and if they were allowed to rejoin, the world would have plunged back into a state of chaos, just as it had existed before; therefore the God of Scripture tore them apart, into the sky and the earth,[24] just as the Babylonian and Canaanite legends recorded. Certainly, polytheist beliefs recall the snake-like being weaving through the cosmos known as the Evil One or Saturn/Satan rebelled at creation but was thwarted by God during the first three epochs/days of creation.[25]

Genesis only records the separation of upper and lower waters, which was supported in Isaiah 43:16, without noting the rebellion. The details of the rebellion are recorded in Psalm 18:7–15, but few connect them to be the same account. Similarly, Psalm 104:4–9 records in detail the account of tearing the rebellious waters back apart and permanently confining them to their homes to ensure the separation of sky and earth, thus providing the earth with both dry land and sea.

Job 26:11–13 records Rahab's slaying: "The pillars of the heavens quake, aghast at his rebuke. By his power he churned up the sea; by his wisdom he cut Rahab to pieces. By his breath the skies became fair; his hand pierced the gliding serpent." Portions of the battle of God and Rahab have been scattered inadvertently throughout Isaiah, Job, and the Psalms,[26] but seemingly the crushing of Rahab's skull (Psalm 89:10 and Psalm 74:13) is directly related to the separating the sky from the earth in creation myths. Bauer states that surely what cannot be coincidence is that so many creation stories begin in darkness, with chaotic waters, which must be split so that life might begin on dry land.[27]

According to David and Margaret Leeming, Egyptian creation myths are relatively constant and the same story divided by different allegories. This includes the source of all things: the primeval waters and their chaotic presence.[28] Celtic creation myth recalls the earth being formed out of the primeval waters of chaos, just as Vedic traditions recant creation from the beginnings of the churning ocean.[29] Chinese variants from the Shu Ching recount that God commissioned emissaries to earth, which was blanketed with water, but were resisted by dragons, whereby God sent Yu to defeat the dragon. Jonathon Evans notes that Egyptian, Indian, Chinese, and Mesopotamian creation dragons all represent the destructive waters of chaos, the enemy of creation gods and order.[30] The chaotic waters of Genesis are a constant in almost all mythologies and cultures around the world regarding the creation.

The *Satapatha Brahamana* declares that in the beginning there was only darkness and water,[31] while the *Rig Veda* conjures up a great dragon named Ahi, or Vrta/Veritra, who strangles seven great rivers—a story that is repeated throughout the *Vedas*.[32] Veritra was the first-born dragon, the dragon of the deep, known as well as Ahibudhnya in several other Vedic hymns.[33] This dragon was slain by Indra,[34] by his crushing the head of Veritra,[35] just as God did in Genesis. Indra slew the dragon with heavenly approval of his deed, on a mountain, with heavenly bolts of thunder and lightning, which broke Veritra into pieces.[36]

Like the legends of the Near East, Norse legends feature the famous cosmic dragon, the world serpent, Midgardsormr/Lormungandr, which resided in the outer seas and separated order from chaos. The sea monster was destroyed by Thor striking the Mudguard Serpent to create heaven and earth. Middle Earth (featured in Tolkien's *Lord of the Rings* trilogy) was thereby formed between the waters and the air for humankind, which featured the World Tree in the center.[37] Tolkien leaned heavily on Norse mythology while mixing in heavy doses of Atlantean and Greek.

Similarly, Ovid's *Metamorphoses* recalled the formation of the earth from a formless chaos. Greeks recorded that before the beginning there was chaos, whereby the elements were separated into air, which rose up, and earth, which sank and floated on the primordial waters.[38]

Mistec accounts begin with an orderless world left in darkness; water covered the slime and ooze that was the earth.[39] The *Popol Vuh* records the earth and the sky were separated from the watery chaos through words, where the earth emerged out of the waters forming valleys that spawned life. At this time, two gods, Tepeu and Gucumatz, were great serpents possessing great feathers (scales) that swam in the waters.[40] Again, the similarity to Genesis is uncanny, particularly when you understand creation was completed by the *Word* of God, who is Jesus in both the Bible and the Qur'an.[41]

In the famous Egyptian creation account from the primordial waters of chaos, the ordered universe first came to be at the word of Ptah. The Great Mother and the presence of the Great Eye, known as the sun/Atum, Ra, and Ptah, created the cosmos within the surrounding chaos of waters.[42] Egyptian mythology recalls Ra then slaying the serpent of the dark waters and chaos who's known variantly as *Apep* and *Apophis*.[43] The World Parents were then separated into *Nut/sky* and *Geb/earth* to bring order to the chaos by their father, *Shu/air*.[44] This separation then created the primeval mound/earth.[45]

Now let us quote from Genesis:

> In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. Now the earth was formless and empty, darkness was over the surface of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the waters…. And God said, "Let there be an expanse between the waters to separate water from water," so God made the expanse and separated the water from under the expanse from the water above it. And it was so. God called the expanse "sky." And God said, "Let the water under the sky be gathered to one place, and let the dry ground appear." And it was so. God called the dry ground "land" and the gathered waters he called "seas."
>
> —Genesis 1:1–9

Pantheistic legends are identical recountings of scriptural creation, but Genesis has exacting detail with perfect chronology. First the cosmos was created by God. This was done within the surrounding, chaotic waters of the universe, just as Genesis states there should be an expanse between water, separating the water under the expanse from the water above the expanse and the surrounding, chaotic water. Then, God separated the sky/*Nut* from the earth/*Geb*, creating order and thus creating the land/primeval mound, middle earth.

In 1908, Nicola Tesla identified ether as the water of the obscure expanse, the water above. He noted this ether was a tenuous fluid filling all space with a spinning motion, similar to a whirl in water in a calm lake. Once in motion, this water becomes matter, but when still, it reverts back to its normal state.[46] Ether was thought of in Greek mythology as the essence of space, while Aristotle and Pythagorus identified ether as the fifth element. Newton described ether as an invisible substance permeating the universe like a living spirit. Einstein concluded ether is necessary for the laws of physics to exist and that without ether, there would be no light, no space, and no time.[47] Chalk another point up for the accuracy of Scripture.

Place all this alongside the Babylonian and Canaanite mythologies of Baal/Marduk slaying the seven-headed sea dragon of chaos, Tiamet/Lotan/Yamm. Baal/Marduk cut Tiamet/Lotan/Yamm into two pieces, fashioning one into the sky and the other into the earth, and you can see how all versions are the same uncanny narrative. Biblical descriptions of the Spirit hovering over the waters (Gen. 1:1) and God slaying the Leviathan of the chaotic sea neatly fuse together as the same narrative.

Now, recall that Reid notes dragons were regarded as the same as cherubs, centaurs, griffins, and sphinxes, understanding that all are cherubs. The terrible gargoyles portrayed on the Gothic cathedrals were also dragons of antiquity,[48] representing fallen angels. Flying dragons were, in all likelihood, a different form of prehistoric serpent, in the spirit of their kin the fallen angels, while flying dragons of biblical record were seraphim angels. These fallen gods were carved without explanation into the cathedrals by the Essene descendants. Hence, one then wonders: was the rebellion at the renewal of the earth the great angelic rebellion?

CHAPTER 83

THE BULL CULT OF MELCHIZEDEK

It enters the inner sanctuary behind the curtain, where Jesus, who went before us, has entered on our behalf. He has become a high priest forever, in the order Melchizedek.

—Hebrews 6:19–20

Melchizedek is the first Jebusite/Canaanite documented in the Bible. He was the high priest, according to Gnostics and Theosophists, of the god El-Elyon, God the Most High, whom Melchizedek blessed Abraham in the name of El-Elyon (Shaddai).[1]

The Canaanites/Jebusites understood Zedek to be the (rebellious) sun god, while *Melchi* derived from *Malak* or *king*, which derived from councilor or member of God's Council. So how and why was such a holy patriarch of the Bible drafted by spurious forces?

Molech is synonymous with *Malak*, meaning king, according to *Cassell's Precise Bible Dictionary*,[2] and variantly chronicled as *Melek* and *Molek* in Hebrew, also meaning king.[3] Other variations of *Molech* in the Bible are *Milcom*[4] and *Malcam/Micom*[5] and, of course, *Moloch* in the New Testament.[6] Remember, Molech was the demigod, the notorious son of Baal, while Baal was the son of El and or Dagon in Canaanite and

Mesopotamian pantheons respectively,[7] who popularized the bull cult into the Middle East, which may explain why some mythologists claim Baal was the son of Dagon and the Cup-Bearer to El.[8]

Baal was part of the apex of the Canaanite pantheon[9] and known by several names in the Bible: Baal-Berith (El-Berith),[10] Baal-Zebub,[11] Beelzebub,[12] and known in Canaan as *Baal-Zebul* and *Aliyan Baal*. Baal and related deities were by and large portrayed as mating bulls symbolizing fertility,[13] but it is the bull cult aspect that is important—the cult of Atlantis, Benjamin, and the Essenes. You will remember the notorious bull cult incident of the golden calf during the Exodus,[14] as well as King Jeroboam I of Israel, who fashioned two idols of golden calves he erected at Bethel (Beth Aven) and Dan,[15] which were steadfastly condemned by Hosea and Amos.[16] According to *Unger's*, Jeroboam did this to accommodate the Canaanite bull cults.[17]

The Baal cult and Israelite religious rivalry was fought furiously throughout Israel's history and was best exemplified by Jeremiah: "They think the dreams they tell one another will make my people forget my name, just as their fathers forgot my name through Baal worship" (Jer. 23:27). In addition, the often-quoted conflict between Elijah and the prophets of Baal on Mount Carmel, where Elijah knew he must destroy Baalism and his prophets during the reign of King Ahab of Israel (1 Kings 18:16–46), is yet another example.

Molech, son of Baal, also haunted the Israelites. Molech, as in "Melchi" of Melchizedek and its genitive Enochian Essene sun cult, was a Semitic deity who demanded the sacrifice of children, a custom robustly forbidden by Moses and Israelite Law.[18] Even so, this did not prevent the perpetual resurgences of Molech worship, for Solomon, according to *Unger's*, built an altar to Molech at Topheth,[19] while the Old Testament noted Solomon did evil in the eyes of God, for Solomon worshipped outlawed gods, such as Ashtoreth and Molech/Milcom, building a high place for Molech, recorded as Chemosh (1 Kings 11:1–8), the Moabite equivalent for Molech. King Manasseh of Judah, during his idolatrous orgy, additionally honored Molech (2 Kings 21:3–7 and 2 Chron. 33:3–7), as did King Jehoiakim, who vicariously revived the Molech/Baal Cults (2 Kings 24:3–4). Similarly, King Ahaz of Judah unwisely reignited the Molech/Baal cult (2 Kings

16:1–5) that Amos and Hosea had previously condemned[20] and that Jeremiah and Ezekiel condemned.[21]

Early depictions of Molech portrayed him to be a man with a bull's head,[22] just as the Minotaur and the Quinataur were portrayed. According to Plutarch, Euripides stated the Minotaur was a mingled form where two strange shapes possessing different natures, bull and man, were combined.[23] All this is not mere coincidence. Knight and Lomas confess to the striking similarity between Molech/Baal and the bull of Minos, who designed the legendary Labyrinth on Crete.[24] King Minos was the son of a father also named Minos, who, in turn, was the Nephilim offspring of Zeus and Europa.[25] Most historians conclude Minos lived during the Cretan Neopalatial period, circa 1720–1450 B.C.E., but I believe the context and the details of the myth date the legend back to the antediluvian epoch and in the Prepalatial period, circa 3200–2000 B.C.E., and perhaps a little before. Bauer further suggests the Minotaur myth likely preserves a very old tradition of human sacrifice (antediluvian). Note also that the Minoan language is distinctly Indo-European[26] (Aryan).

This legend likely links allegorically to back to the angelic rebellion and the prince of darkness, the angel of the sea, and the angel who had the form of a bull that enticed Leviathan and the waters to rebel against God on days two and three of creation.[27] Poseidon, the dragon and angel of the sea (waters), was alternatively personified as a bull. Remember, Poseidon, god of the sea, was the father of the bull cult, and the bull was the most sacred animal of Poseidon.[28]

The Minotaur came about through the bestial copulation of King Minos's wife, Pasiphae.[29] A white bull had been sent to Minos by Poseidon to be sacrificed, but Minos substituted another inferior bull, so Poseidon caused the white bull to mate with Pasiphae as punishment. The Minotaur, meaning "bull of Minos," came from this copulation; it was known to be a child-consuming cannibal,[30] just as Molech was a man with a bull's head who demanded child sacrifices as requisite of worship. King Minos did not dare to provoke Poseidon any further by killing the monster, so he built the Labyrinth to imprison the beast and then fed it innocent children to keep it nourished.[31]

King Minos waged and then won a war fought against the antediluvian Athenians, imposing a cruel tribute to supply yearly: seven young men and seven young virgins that were to be eaten by the Minotaur and satisfy the anger of the gods,[32] likely Poseidon. Prince Theseus, son of Aegeus, then stepped forward, hiding among the third ship full of tributes as one of the seven young men, subsequently saving Athens from this appalling tribute by defeating King Minos and slaying the Minotaur.[33]

The bull cult of Egypt, renowned as the bull cult of Apis or the Osiris/Apis cult, eerily bore similar traits. The cult originated when a calf was born from the sacred womb of Isis, and when the calf died, it became Osiris; the Apis bull was associated with all Horus kings since. The Labyrinth of Serapis was built as a gigantic, subterranean labyrinth for Apis bulls that had died, Horus kings.[34] It was a place where mummified corpses of the Apis bull were transformed into sun gods like Osiris.

These Egyptian bull mythologies are eerily similar to the Quinataur and Minotaur mythologies and are an esoteric dimension to the Atlantean and Enochian sun cults. Keep in mind the island of Crete and the Minotaur legend of the bull cult of Poseidon when you reflect upon Baal, Molech, and Benjamin with regard to the bull cult of the Israel epoch, for they are all interconnected. In addition to all this, the Canaanites actually believed they originally migrated from the island of Crete,[35] likely bringing the bull cult of Atlantis with them that later became manifested in Baal and Molech.

The connections become even clearer when you remember that Canaanite builder craftsmen commissioned by Phoenician King Hiram of Tyre to build the first Jerusalem temple believed they were direct blood descendants of (Masonic) craftsmen that built the [36]ancient Mycenaean royal castles and Cretan villa palaces.[37] Tyre was settled by refugee Sidonians and a few sacking Philistines who were unaccountably immersed in Cretan building technology. Both Philistine temples and the temples of Tyre unexplainably honored the fish-god Dagon.[38] In fact, according to Freemason Joseph Hippolyte Da Costa in *History of the Dionysian Artificers*, in 1820, Hiram Abif belonged to an ancient society of Dionysian Artificers that were associated with another group of Ionians, those who had built the ancient temple of Diana at Ephesus.[39] This (Masonic) antediluvian legacy of builder priests survived throughout the epochs, eventually being inherited by the Gnostic Manicheans who worked their way secretly into Christianity as builder priests and architects of the Roman Collegia. The Gnostic Cistercian and Benedictine monks of Celtic

Christianity then inherited this same legacy, passing it on to the Mason guilds of Europe, which were later dominated by the Benedictine Templars and later passed on the builder priest legacy to Freemasonry.

Similarly, one ponders whether or not there is a connection to the infamous figure Anam' Malek, whom we learned about in the first half of this book. If you will recall, he was a pitiless Babylonian god, whose name translated as "Anu is king."[40] This was the infamous figure connected to the Nephilim and the mortal god Amalek/Lamech. Molech, too, was a merciless, mortal god, whose variant is also Malek, meaning king—most coincidental! You may recall the Babylonians sacrificed their children in fire to Anam' Malek, just as the cult members did for Molech. It would appear Anam' Malek legends possess the same antediluvian allegories and roots as the Minotaur.

Along a related vein, the Philistines also migrated from Crete,[41] bringing with them similar beliefs to those of the Canaanites and Babylonians, as witnessed by their god Dagon/Baal, which was portrayed as half man and half fish (Poseidon).[42] Remember, it was Oannes/Enoch, the fish deity of the Babylonians, who escorted the Anunnaki down from the mountains and begat the antediluvian kingship of the Pishdadian kings, as well as the postdiluvian kingship of Nephilim. As you will recall, the Cretans, the Minoans, and the Santorinians all worshipped under the shadow of the bull cult of Atlantis. All this further explains both how and why the Philistines easily adopted and assimilated the Canaanite cult of the bull into their society. All this is no coincidence, and it is out of this cannibalis—and child sacrificing of the bull cult that the parallel Canaanite Order of Melchizedek steps forward, with all its false pretenses.

This, then, was the syncretic Canaanite Order of Melchizedek, which is and was a purposeful perversion of the Hebrew Order recorded in the Bible. However, the spurious forces believe that David believed himself to be part of the Canaanite Order when he succeeded the Jebusite/Canaanite throne of Jerusalem, inheriting Melchizedek's throne.[43] And this is what the spurious forces misconstrue when they note David's reference in the Psalms,[44] whereby David then inherited the priest king role of the god El-Elyon, the God Most High, of the Jebusites.[45]

The contemporaneous Masonic Order of Melchizedek consequently follows the (perverted) Canaanite Order, claiming it to be the true Order, and further reclaiming Melchizedek, Abraham, David, Solomon, and Jesus as its descending patriarchs.[46] The Gnostics possess a gospel of Melchizedek, which, not surprisingly, denotes its spurious followers as Children of Seth,[47] the Gnostic Nephilim Seth, who maintain the spark of the divine required for the harmonic convergence and ascension into godhood when the world unites under one world government and religion. In fact, James Robinson goes on to note that Melchizedek was identified with the Gnostic savior, Seth, and thus the final form of Melchizedek was a product of Sethian Gnosticism,[48] worshipping El.

Remember, though, the violent god El of the Canaanites was not the God El-Elyon and El-Shaddai of the Bible. Spurious forces merely manipulated the similarities between El and El-Shaddai for their long-term misdirection of history, in preparation for the last generation. Thus, the bull cult of Poseidon was one of the foundation stones for the Essene religion. The Canaanite Order of Melchizedek was the perverted and spurious order of priests, who worshipped the bloodthirsty tyrant, the evil god El, father to Baal and grandfather to Molech. This order was not the holy, biblical Order of Melchizedek that worshipped the God Most High, El-Shaddai, but it was the spurious order adopted by the nonconformist Jewish Essenes.

Unger's notes the order of Melchizedek discussed in Psalm 110:4 was explained by Gesenius and Rosenmueller to be an order that maintained the dignity of a king and a priest. Unger's goes onto note that Melchizedek's parents are not listed in the Bible, but Melchizedek presents a Christ like priest king example (Hebrews 5:6-10; 7:1-5) of Jesus' reign in the millennium.[49] Melchizedek was the king of Jerusalem. He blessed Abraham after rescuing Lot in the War of Four Kings Against Five, for Melchizedek was an unexplained a priest of the God Most High in Genesis, to whom Abraham gave Melchizedek a tenth of everything (Genesis 14:18-20; Hebrews 7:1-5). One should expect the Antichrist to illegally seize Jesus' priest king titles as: the King of Jerusalem and the (false) Messiah, legitimized to be a (spurious) Priest King from the Order of Melchizedek of Canaan

CHAPTER 84

THE ESSENES

Then he brought me to the entrance of the north gate of the house of the Lord, and I saw women sitting there, mourning for Tammuz. He said to me, "Do you see this, son of man? You will see things that are even more detestable than this." He then brought me into the inner court of the house of the Lord, and there at the entrance to the temple, between the portico and the altar, were about twenty-five men. With their backs towards the temple of the Lord and their faces toward the east, they were bowing their faces east, they were bowing to the sun in the east.

—Ezekiel 8:14–16

Let us now reintroduce the Gnostic ancestors of the Templars, Priory of Sion, and Rex Deus, the famous Essenes, into the chronology.

Why would this prominent Jewish sect inexplicably celebrate being the (spurious) Sons of Zadok (Melchizedek)?[1] Why did this Zadokite priesthood call themselves the sons of light, just as the Tuatha Denaan were known as the lords of light[2] and just as Gnostics and Freemasons are the children of light?

"Zadokite" was a Hebrew/Aramaic title for the descendants of the royal priestly lineage, known vicariously as Rex Deus.[3] The little-understood, ascetic Essene communities were the first cells of organized monasticism[4] in the West. They unaccountably considered themselves to be an Enochian Judaism sect descending from Enoch (the evil). They unaccountably cherished the serpent/dragon as an ancient symbol of the Essene Therapeutate heritage,[5] the infamous White Snake Brotherhood of Egypt. Essenes further held the book of Jubilees, and anything to do with Enoch, in the highest regard. They based their calendar on the solar year, under the guidance of the ancient Enochian calendar, which ran contrary to the Jewish lunar calendar.[6] It was their peculiar practice to pray in the morning by turning themselves towards the sun, in defiant contrast and opposition to the other Israelite sects, who prayed in the direction of the temple.[7] Essenes disobediently worshipped in the first and second temples by kneeling in white robes towards the sun at dawn, worshipping Tammuz (and Ishtar) from the Chaldean pantheon,[8] a rebellious practice that outraged Ezekiel during the age of the first temple.[9]

Essenes were a very old, distinct, separate, and rebellious Sabian sect set shamelessly against the famous Sadducees and Pharisees recorded in the New Testament, which Jesus spoke to and against. Essenes, as witnessed by Ezekiel in the passage introducing this chapter, were unquestionably in existence and thriving as a rival, counter sun/bull cult to Zionism circa 700 B.C.E. Only after the successful Maccabean rebellion against the Greek empire were Essenes expelled from the temple by the Hasmonian dynasty.

Essenes were a vigorous sun cult that, according to Knight and Lomas, were an alliance of Enochian and Zadokite priests descending from the Melchizedek cult of Canaan. Essenes became known to history and legend as the Zadokites (Zedek the encoded sun god component of Melchizedek), Princes of Jerusalem who escaped to Europe after 70 C.E., forming the families that eventually founded the Knights Templar. Essenes were the sons of light and righteousness that secretly served the pagan bull god Molech. This mystical Enochian and Canaanite Melchizedek cult burrowed deep into Judaism, regaining complete control of the second temple just before its destruction. This, then, lends corroborating credence to the statements recorded in the Dead Sea Copper Scrolls that more secret documents were buried under the Jerusalem temple and were some of the mysterious documents, treasures, and knowledge carried off to Scotland by the descendants of the Zadokite princes of Jerusalem,[10] the Knights Templar.

The Zadokite priesthood was all but wiped out in 72 C.E.,[11] during the Roman/Jewish wars. Lomas and Knight note several Zadokite priests escaped to the south of France, where they formed the leading families of Europe while protecting their genealogies.[12] They were renowned as the old aristocracy, who longed for the return to the days of greatness of Israel, where the Royal House of David reigned. Most records and genealogies of the Davidic legacy of Jesus' family were lost in the Roman holocaust, but a few select and relevant documents supposedly survived and were transported with the refugee guardians of the Messianic Heirs.[13]

Eusebius, Bishop of Caesarea, knew the Messianic Heirs as the Desposyni, an exclusive order reserved for only the immediate family and heirs of the dynastic Royal Family of Jesus. *Desposyni* translates as "belongs to" or "heirs of the Lord." Julius Africanus, suspiciously of Edessa, 160–240 C.E., confirmed a few Desposyni had kept their own secret and private records and genealogies, which included their own recollections, all to preserve the aristocratic bloodlines of the Essenes, which of course, included Jesus' family, the Desposyni.[14]

After the death of James, 61–62 C.E., Symeon, son of Clopas and cousin to Jesus, became the next *episcipus*, or bishop, of Jerusalem. And, according to Eusebius, the early Jerusalem church continued to exercise leadership led by Jesus' family until after the genocide brought on by Emperor Trajan.[15] During the latter years of his reign (98–117 C.E.), the Roman Empire was troubled by growing numbers of Christians and was confounded about what to do about the problem. Consul Pliny of Asia Minor was so worried he wrote Trajan, asking to confirm instructions to hunt them down.[16] Even before Pauline Christianity gained control over the Roman Empire through Constantine, the Essenes and Desposyni were continually under threat of persecution by the Romans, who considered them to be enemies to the stability of the empire.[17]

In fact, the second-century C.E., historian Hegesippus recorded in *Hypommenata* that Emperor Vespasian (69–70 C.E.) ordered all the members of the Messianic House of David and Jesus should be put to death, and they were subsequently hunted down like outlaws, resulting in the Rex Deus Essenes going permanently underground. Hegesippus additionally wrote that Emperor Domotoan (81–96 C.E.) ordered the execution of the Desposyni by Imperial Decree and that some of those seized were Zoker and James, sons of Jesus' brother Jude. Again, Hegesippus reported the same sort of persecution during the subsequent reign of Emperor Trajan, circa 110 C.E.[18] Eusebius, in fact, documented in his composition *History of the Church* that Symeon was martyred by Trajan.[19] This, then, is likely why the Desposyni were welcomed into the Celtic kingdoms and hidden for protection, for both the Celtic culture and the Desposyni were determined enemies of both the Roman Empire and then later the Roman Church.

Eusebius confirmed that, notwithstanding these persecutions to the death, the Desposyni leaders survived and remained the heads of their sects through strict dynastic progression.[20] Friar Malachai Martin in 318 C.E. confirmed the survival of the Desposyni, when a little-known Desposyni delegation optimistically traveled to Rome seeking a serious audience with Bishop Sylvester. While there, the Desposyni vigorously argued the Church should be located in Jerusalem and not Rome, and that the head of the Church should be a descendant of Jesus (or his family), but their demands were in vain[21] and summarily dismissed.

As the Zadokite families were becoming the most powerful families in Europe, they began to call themselves "Rex Deus," Latin for "Kings of God." Lomas and Knight write that the descendants of those Zadokite priests returned to Jerusalem in the eleventh century as the Knights Templar, once more linking the Essenes dynastic descendants directly to the Templars through the European nobility, Rex Deus, and the Priory of Sion. Masonic rituals, even to this day, bear witness to, while steadfastly memorializing, the refugee Zadokite priests and their founding of the Knights Templar.[22] Remember, the Essene royalty reveled in their furtive view of themselves as the old aristocracy (of Jerusalem and David), who longed for Priory of Sion's dream, the return to the great days of Israel under the rule of the Royal House of David.[23] Hence, the direct dynastic ancestry connecting the Knights Templar to the princes of Jerusalem has been preserved and honored to this day in the higher degrees of

Freemasonry rituals that trace Essene genealogy back to the Jewish priests (and Desposyni) that escaped Jerusalem in 70 C.E. and who, in turn, traced their genealogies back to Solomon and Moses. Masonic testaments further confirm that in 1118 C.E., a group descending from the princes of Jerusalem was founded that became famous as the Knights Templar.[24]

In addition, the Templar belief they descended from builder priests who descended from an older order of builder priests that helped build the Solomon temple is also contained within these Freemasonry rituals.[25] Brewster, in his book *Lawrie's History,* and Dr. Oliver in his book *Antiquities,* connect the Essenes to the builders of Solomon's temple through a group identified as "Asisidians," an order of the Knights of the temple of Jerusalem. Brewster argues Essenes were an ancient fraternity originating with an order of architects that built Solomon's temple. Could these have been the descendants of the builder gods from Atlantis and their priestly orders, the seven sages, or followers of Horus? Certainly, Pliny asserted that Essenes had survived as an ancient order for thousands of years before his time,[26] thereby dating the sun/ bull cult of the Essenes back to the time of the flood.

The builders of the first temple were a combined labor force from Israel that included skilled craftsmen, along with skilled Canaanite craftsmen provided by King Hiram of Tyre and Canaanite craftsmen from Byblos.[27] Chief of the craftsmen was the famous Huram Abi, a man of great skill,[28] a Master Craftsman of the metals who oversaw the metal work for the temple.[29] Huram's variant is known as *Hiram* in Hebrew,[30] and he is the famous Hiram Abif of Freemasonry lore who is irrevocably linked with King Hiram. Each is considered in Freemasonry (and other associated organizations and religions) as a Grand Master of the black arts and sciences, the Seven Sacred Sciences.[31] Remember, Solomon is celebrated by Gnostics and Theosophists as a great sorcerer of the black arts and crafts, possessing skills and knowledge he supposedly inherited as part of his kingship rites, which were passed down through history from Moses as black arts he allegedly learned in Egypt,[32] which were somehow passed down from Hermes and Enoch (the evil).

According to Phoenician historian Gerhard Herm, King Hiram employed craftsmen who were descendants of the architects and master builders (likely Philistines), who built the Mycenaean royal castles and the

Cretan villa palaces,[33] thus extending this royal lineage of master architects back into history, likely to the antediluvian epoch. Remember, Cretan history is divided into three palatial periods, including the Prepalatial period, beginning in 3200 B.C.E.[34] or before. These craftsmen were the famous, ancient collective the Dionysian Artificers of Tyre, according to Ian Gittins, and they built most of the ancient temples in the Middle East; the ancient order of Freemasonry claims this as part of their legacy. Masonic historian Manly Hall further confirms the Dionysian Artificers were a secret society with doctrines much like the modern Freemasons. They taught architectural technology, alongside the wisdom of Solomon, to their new Israelite initiates in Jerusalem for centuries.[35] This knowledge then merged and was protected within the mystical Essene Order before being passed onto Pythagoras.

Historical connections to the Knights Templar and the alleged royal Essenes begin with the second temple and with a famous biblical individual named Zerubbabel. *Unger's* defines *Zerubbabel* as "seed, or progeny of Babel/ Babylon" and states that he was the head of the tribe of Judah at the time of the return of Judah from captivity in Babylon.[36] The prophet Haggai recognized him as the dynastic Davidic heir and identified him as the one chosen by God to usher in a new era that would return the people of Judah to Jerusalem, where a new temple would be built.[37] In fact, Zerubbabel is irrevocably linked to the start and successful completion of the holy temple as the branch, or Davidic heir.[38]

The Bible refers to Zerubbabel as the son of Shealtiel;[39] although, he is called the son of Pedaiah, the brother of Shealtiel, in 1 Chronicles 3:19. Josephus referred to Zerubbabel as the son of Salathiel, of the posterity of David, and of the tribe of Judah.[40] The discrepancy of genealogy lies in the fact Shealtiel died without a male heir, whence Pedaiah married his sister-inlaw to fulfill his Levite duty. And, according to Jewish Law, Zerubbabel was later regarded as the son of Shealtiel and his legitimate heir,[41] even though Zerubbabel was still biologically the son of Pedaiah.

Nelson's Bible Dictionary refers to Zerubbabel as a "shadowy figure" remembered as one of the primary builders of the second temple, who emerged as the political and spiritual leader of the tribe of Judah at the time of the Babylonian captivity. He led the first group of captives back to Jerusalem and set about rebuilding the temple. For twenty years Zerubbabel was closely associated with the prophets, priests, and kings, until the temple was dedicated.[42] Matthew 1:12 records Zerubbabel was the son of Shealtiel, son of Jeconiah (Jehoiachin), who was the king of Judah during Babylonian captivity recorded in 1 Chronicles, which also recorded Zerubbabel as the grandson of Jehoiachin through Pedaiah. Zerubbabel's blood relationship to Jehoiachin eventually made him Jehoiachin's legal successor and heir to the throne of Judah, which consequently established him as a direct descendant of David and Solomon[43] and, according to the Bible, an ancestor of Jesus (Matt. 1:5–17; Luke 13:23–32).

Zerubbabel somehow obtained considerable status among his Persian captors and was likely in some form of the king's special service, since the Persian king appointed him the governor of Judah.[44] With this mysterious and unexplained status, *Nelson's* records Zerubbabel also became known as the "Prince of Judah" while in captivity during the reign of Darius.[45] The unexplained special status must have derived from Zerubbabel's royal bloodlines. He and Jeshua, the high priest, later received authorization from Cyrus to rebuild the temple,[46] forging a remarkable partnership of cooperation among the captives; prophets; and the Persian kings, who funded and supplied material for the project.[47]

The second temple was completed around 515–516 B.C.E., but mysteriously, Zerubbabel is not recorded in connection with the temple dedication, even though the temple became known to history as Zerubbabel's temple.[48] Haggai the prophet, too, promised a special blessing to Zerubbabel from God for his holy work at the temple.[49] Zerubbabel inexplicably disappears from biblical history after the temple dedication and is never biblically mentioned or written of again, nor does another seed of David ever rise to govern Judah and Jerusalem.[50]

According to Masonic legend and ritual, Zerubbabel was initiated into a very special order while in Babylon, the Knights of the Sword. He was armed with the sword Nebuchadnezzar received from Zerubbabel's grandfather, King Jehoiachin, when he was taken captive. We do not know whether or not this order was in existence before or not, but we do know that Zerubbabel in Freemasonic history became its leader and Grand Patriarch in a special order of the Princes of Jerusalem. It was King Darius who inexplicably initiated Zerubbabel into this order, making him the

Knight of the East,[51] which again goes to support the mysterious rise of importance of Zerubbabel under the reign of Darius.

Zerubbabel then returned to Jerusalem and presented himself to the council of the Sanhedrin, where the newly formed brethren called Knight Masons were formed from the Princes of Jerusalem. Lomas and Knight write this Knight Mason Order was reticently renowned as the Royal Arch Masons that rebuilt the temple; Zerubbabel, the prophet Haggai, and the high priest Joshua allegedly led this curiously mystical organization. This mystical Order of Knight Masons was reincorporated by the descendants of the Princes of Jerusalem/Essenes/Desposyni in 312 C.E. through Emperor Constantine. The conversion of Constantine was celebrated in the founding of the Order of the Red Cross.[52] Markale writes that this order was an ancient Gnostic order directly connected to and part of the Essenes,[53] the Order of the Brothers of the Red Cross.

The revived order was decreed to don an emblem on their armor, proudly displaying the red cross and sixteen mystical stars; Constantine then decreed this conclave of knights should become his personal bodyguards. The rose and the lily were subsequently adopted as emblems of their divine being; mystically, these emblems represented the Rose of Sharon and the Lily of the Valley,[54] which I will come back to with respect to the Amalekites and descendants of Esau. The *Fleur De Lis*, the Lily of the Valley, later became the coat of arms for the Priory of Sion,[55] and the rose became synonymous with the Grail and the Priory.

This reticent order once again reunited to conquer the Holy Land. It included the famous de Bouillon, who unfurled the banner of the cross in 1099 as one of the founders of the Knights Templar, a member of the Priory of Sion, a descendant of the Merovingians, a descendant of the Princes of Jerusalem, and a descendant of the Desposyni. According to Knight and Lomas, in 1118, these eleven Knights of the Cross of Constantine once more took their vows at the hands of Amelfo Guavi Mundos, prince and patriarch of Jerusalem. The knights then retook the names *Princes of Jerusalem* and *Knights of the East and West*[56] in honor and remembrance of Zerubbabel and his founding organization indoctrinated under King Darius of Persia.

The ancient Masonic institution, as recorded by Craft Legends, was inherited by the Essenes as successors. The Essenes then transmitted their reticent tenets to Pythagorus and his Mystery School at Crotona, where the tenets were disseminated throughout Europe,[57] likely through Rex Deus organizations. This is how some of the knowledge of the Dionysian builders of Tyre was passed down to the Roman Collegia, via Pythagoras, in the second century B.C.E.[58]

In this spurious line of thought, Moses, the Israelites, and the House of Judah are considered the heirs to the Royal Dragon Houses of both Egypt and Babylonia and are celebrated as the House of Gold under the same ideology that the Stuarts hold the same title. Moses and the new line of Aaronite priests allegedly inherited all the treasures and secret knowledge of the House of Gold, the Dragon Court of Egypt. In time, this powerful collection of wealth and knowledge eventually established the Royal House of David, Solomon, and Jesus as the new House of Gold,[59] which passed down its legacy and secrets to the Zadokite priesthood.

The white-garbed Essenes were members of a cult that studied and preserved knowledge from the ancients, according to Josephus.[60] Essenes considered white garments proper attire for all occasions.[61] They were a secret society preserving their secrets and the names of their guiding angels even unto death.[62] Likely Paul's letter to the Colossians identified and denounced the ascetic Essene cult with this warning: “Do not let anyone who delights in false humility and the worship of angels disqualify you for the prize” (Col. 2:18).

Josephus went on to note that what the Essenes honored most, after God, was Moses and that if anyone blasphemed Moses' name, the Essenes put them to death.[63] Gardner notes these white-garbed Essenes were, in truth, the inheritors of the Egyptian Therapeutate that Moses was supposedly indoctrinated under, according to Theosophist doctrine, and who also inherited Egyptian knowledge and secrets, which were preserved under the watchful guardians of the Levite and Aaronite priesthoods. Gardner goes on to state the Essenes were Therapeutates who closely aligned themselves, as allegedly did Jesus, with the famous mystics and healers of the white-robed Egyptian Therapeutate[64] as the inheritors of antediluvian knowledge and philosophy. *Therapeutic* medicine is defined as “the branch of medicine that deals with the treatment of disease”; nature cures while physicians treat,[65] again tying the medical associations of the world back to mystic roots. It is likely Paul was specifically denouncing the Essene ascetics in Colossians when he warned against those who judge what you eat and those who deceive through “hollow and deceptive philosophy, which depends on human tradition and the basics of this world rather than on Christ” (Col. 2:8, 16, 20–23).

So, too, does *Unger’s* describe the Essenes as having close ties to the Coventers of Damascus, John the Baptist, and the Egyptian Therapeutate.[66] Josephus described Essenes as inquiring after roots and medicinal stones to cure sickness.[67] Gardner also claims the Essenes received medical knowledge from the ancients and practiced medicine accordingly. In fact, Gardner noted the title “Essene” likely derived from the Aramaic word *Assaya*, meaning “physician,” which corresponded to the Greek word *essenoi*.[68] Essenes were a mystical order of physicians and scientists in the spirit of the Great White Brotherhood, modern medical organizations, and the original Royal College physicians.

Essenes cherished the dragon/serpent as a symbol of the Essene Therapeutate. To this end, the dragon/serpent was also identified with wisdom and healing. The dragon was held as a symbol of wisdom in antiquity, for dragons, like serpents, were thought to be conveyers of enlightenment and the keepers of knowledge, just as the serpent Satan and his assorted seraphim compatriots were regarded as conveyers of enlightenment and the providers of knowledge. Essenes upheld the traditions of the dragon and its identification with wisdom and healing,[69] in addition to being the inheritors and guardians of the antediluvian Dragon Court and secret knowledge.

Essenes alternatively named themselves Gnostic Nazarenes, where “Nazarene,” in this case, derives from the Aramaic *Natzar*, meaning “to guard or to watch.” They were “guardians” of sciences, custodians of the secrets to the universe, and the *watchers* for the enlightened science.[70] Essenes believed they were the guardians of the arcane secrets and knowledge of David and Solomon[71] that was inherited by Moses from the Egyptian Therapeutate. Essenes are claimed to be the very same cult as the mystical (counterfeit) followers of John the Baptist, the alleged Nazorean Mandaeans, who combined Gnosticism with Zoroastrianism.

Templar writers noted the Essenes were the inheritors of the Seven Sacred Sciences. In addition, they purportedly received additional knowledge from the *watchers*, deities who oversaw the universe,[72] just as the Essenes did. The Essenes then adopted the name *Watchers*, or

Nazarenes, for they guarded and watched over the sacred antediluvian knowledge. This then accounts for the high level of respect and worship the Essenes held for their special fallen angels, the original *watchers*, to the extent they would not deliver the names of their dark angels, even under torture and unto death by torture.

It was the little-known Gnostic Essenes who cleverly corrupted the pre-Canon New Testament through writing alternative but false gospels side by side with the heresy of inventing the false Messianic bloodline maintained through Jesus' alleged sons. The Essenes were followers and the guardians of the Davidic Messianic bloodline and of a mortal Jesus in particular.

The Essenes were a cryptic, mystical sun cult of apocalyptic, messianic fanatics and zealots devoted to celibacy and austerity through *The Manual of Discipline*; it is likely that Jesus and Paul spoke specifically against this faction in Matthew and Colossians.[73] This Royal House of Jesus and Judah that dated back to Solomon and David, the inheriting Dragon bloodline, eventually became renowned as the House of Gold.[74] Theosophists note that Frankincense, gold, and myrrh that were presented as gifts to the infant Jesus by the three famous Magi from the east[75] were traditional substances owned by Priest Kings/Fisher Kings/Nazarites of the Grail (Dragon) bloodline, and thus, these unexpected gifts offered by the Magi allegedly identified Jesus symbolically as a dynastic Priest King of the House of Gold,[76] or Dragon Court.

So, then, Essenes were mystical Judeans; they were Kabbalists who based much of their understanding upon the Kabbalah that originally derived from pagan Egyptian beliefs.[77] Jewish alchemists/Kabbalists believe Moses and Hermes are their patriarchs. They believe Moses learned all the wisdom of the Egyptians (alchemy and the other Sacred Sciences), and they back this up by quoting Acts 7:22,[78] where it states, "Moses was educated in all the wisdom of the Egyptians and was powerful in speech and action." To this end, one would further conclude the mystical religions include Qur'an references to support this revisionist theory of Moses as pharaoh, for the Qur'an recorded the leaders of Egypt and Egyptian sorcerers all slandered Moses as a "learned sorcerer" whose sorcery would be proven false.[79] Judean Kabbalists (and Essenes), according to Peter Marshall, further (dissonantly) draft King Solomon as a patriarch alongside Moses, again (disingenuously) quoting 1 Kings,[80] noting that Solomon excelled in the wisdom of the East and was greater than the wisdom of Egypt.[81]

Kabbalism is regarded as one of the core elements and as a symbolic source for western occultism because its mythology claims Kabbalism was first revealed to Adam in Eden.[82] Now, *Kabbalah* derives from the Hebrew word *QBL*, meaning "to receive"; Kabbalists/Essenes are the receivers and caretakers (*watchers*) of divine knowledge.[83] Others define Kabbalism as deriving from the ashes of Enochian Judaism, and they define the word as "received tradition." The Essenes then were created sometime before the first century B.C.E. from Enochian Kabbalism.[84] In fact, Kabbalists and Essenes believe Kabbalism is based on knowledge received from a select company of angels (fallen), which was maliciously given to disobedient children of the earth (Cainites), according to Kabbalist writers.[85] The largest collection of Jews practicing Kabbalism in the time of Jesus was replanted and took root in Septmania, also recognized as the province of Languedoc.[86] The Essenes obviously survived and survive to this day among the Kabbalists and Gnostics, along with their ancient beliefs.

The apocalyptic flavor and doctrines of Essene culture were, in fact, the antithesis to the Roman Christian Apocalypse. The prophetic writings of the Essenes purported to install their mystic messiah on the world throne through war, whereas the Roman Christian Apocalypse prophesies that Jesus will inherit the earthly throne after the Antichrist, the Gnostic messiah, usurps power for three-and-one-half years, thus saving humankind from utter destruction and perpetual war.[87]

Freemasonry begrudgingly accepts convenient portions, for the most part, of the Old Testament, only for the sake of their Sangreal chronology and, therefore, Freemasonry's self-proclaimed legitimacy stemming from the Essenes, Jesus, David, Solomon, and Moses. Freemasonry conveniently qualifies this grudging and limited acceptance by proclaiming what Freemasonry believes to be a well-known and well-understood contamination of Scripture, or a rewriting of Scripture that served the purposes of latter, historical Israeli regimes, just as the radical followers of Fascist Islam also contend about similar contaminations regarding the Old Testament. Freemasons hold their own so-called uncontaminated version within their organizations. So let us now venture into these so-called revisionist corrections to Judeo-Christian history maintained by the spurious alliance, rewrites that will permeate the end-time religion.

CHAPTER 85

MOSES, AKHENATEN, AND THE ARMANA DYNASTY

It was the same Aaron and Moses to whom the Lord said, “Bring the Israelites out of Egypt by their divisions.” They were the ones who spoke to Pharaoh king of Egypt.

—Exodus 6:26–27

Why do Freemasonry, Theosophy, and secular science vigorously quarrel with biblical history before the advent of Moses and less vociferously thereafter? Why do spurious forces accept and delight in the bloodlines from Moses through David, Solomon, and Jesus?

Quite simply, their alarming, revisionist, and counterfeit history outrageously repositions Moses’ pedigree from the priestly tribe of Levi and Israel to Egyptian royal bloodlines, making him the son of a pharaoh.

This posthumous, Theosophist precept holds that House of Moses was Egyptian, as Scripture has recorded. They believe Moses and the Israelites were somehow the hereditary heirs to the Royal Houses of Egypt and Babylonia. Theosophists believe the Lord of the Mountain, El Shaddai, whom they regard as Enki, passed all secrets from the Egyptian House of Gold, from the priests of Egypt (White Brotherhood of Therapeutate), to a new line of Aaronite priests with the fall of the Armana dynasty, which ultimately ended the legitimacy of Egyptian dynasties.[1] Theosophists further believe this eventually established the Royal House of David, Solomon, and Jesus as the new House of Gold (Dragon Court). This mystical, Aaronite priesthood is the cornerstone linking the Essenes back to the Great White Brotherhood through their inheriting the religion of Enoch the Evil and Hermes, which was subsequently concealed within the numinous fringes of Israelite culture.

Conspirators believe the Royal House of Pharaohs was the second equal pillar coexisting in parallel with the originating Dragon Court, reigning alongside Chaldean mysticism organized by Nimrod in Mesopotamia. The Royal Dragon Courts of Egypt and Mesopotamia worked diligently together in securing pure bloodlines for the succession of kingship, all in the same spirit as Rex Deus. Pharaohs married often for strategic reasons; they selected wives to interbreed with and to regenerate their royal bloodlines with diverse but recognized "original strains" from pure Mesopotamian Dragon dynasties.[2]

This thereby perpetuated the patrilineal descent of the pharaohs, while heightening the matriarchal bloodlines in the subsequent generations. Pharaohs commonly married their half-sisters born of different mothers to progress the dynastic lines. Pharonic dynasties, although kingships generally reigned through patrilineal descent (Dragons/Ravens), conversely perpetuated their dynasties through female matriarchy (Fairies/Owls). Daughters of Dragon kings with pure matriarchal Dragon blood were wedded to kings to propagate new Fairy dynasties.[3] For these reasons, then, matriarchal bloodlines descending from Mary Magdalene, Scota, Temar, Miriam, Bashemath, Lilith, and Isis/Gaea have been meticulously documented through the millennia by dedicated, spurious chronologists.

Biblical narratives describing Moses' birth and subsequent adoption into the Royal House of Egypt[4] are believed in the Theosophical world to be convenient rewrites and additions to the original text. Theosophists point to Exodus 2:1–10 as proof that Moses was indeed an Egyptian, citing the incident where the seven Midian daughters described him as one,[5] for he looked and was dressed like one, but, of course, he was not. Theosophists further point to Exodus 4:10, where Moses expressed doubt to God because he was of slow speech and tongue, concluding that Moses was not slow of speech but rather not fluent in the Hebrew language because he was born and raised an Egyptian.[6] Theosophists steadfastly dismiss the validity of

Old Testament accounts of the Exodus, even though events were overwhelmingly confirmed with more detail in the Qur'an.[7]

Conspirators enthusiastically point to the Greek historian Manetho, an adviser to Ptolemy I. Manetho recorded Moses in Egyptian history as an Egyptian priest from Heliopolis, the home of the infamous Great White Brotherhood.[8] Conversely, Moses was recorded in Scripture as raised from a baby by the Egyptian Royal House, complete with all its privileges and education. Hence, Moses was likely educated in the Mysteries by the Great White Brotherhood at Heliopolis and likely only spoke Egyptian and not Hebrew.

As incredible as it may first sound, Theosophists (and all who hold true to The Genesis 6 Conspiracy) believe Akenhaten was Moses.[9] The unexplained nature of the Akenhaten era resided in the fact that he was forcibly deposed from power. Even though history curiously does not bear witness to Akenhaten's death, seemingly, Akenhaten completely disappeared from the face of the earth upon Smenkhare's death or disappearance,[10] reinforcing Theosophist doctrine that Akenhaten disappeared as Moses. Furthermore, after the fall of the Armana dynasty, the Dragon Court of Egypt ceased to exist in Theosophist history, for Horemheb, the pharaoh that overthrew the Armana dynasty, was not of royal blood of any variety.

This mind-boggling identity theft, then, vicariously continued the patriarchal bloodline of the Egyptian Dragon Court through Israel and eventually through David and Jesus, all the while perpetuating a renaissance matrilineal branch through Scota and the Irish. Therefore, Theosophists desperately declare the Exodus was their dramatic, revisionist, misconstrued, and unprecedented turning point in history, which witnessed both the new dawn of Israelite mysticism through the priests of Aaron and the Levites and later purportedly produced the offshoot branch of the Essenes as well as the survival of the patriarchal branch of the Egyptian Dragon Court, all through Moses.

The hypothesis that Moses was Akenhaten has inexplicably been propagated for more than a century by Theosophists, New Agers, Gnostics, and so-called scientific organizations, while PBS, the History Channel, and other organizations seemingly bent on destroying Christianity and holding a bias in favor of world government also continue to popularize this heresy. Historian Susan Wise Bauer has commented that this theory has no historical basis and is incredibly difficult to square with any other credible dates for the Exodus.[11]

Akenhaten/Amenhotep IV/Tutmosis IV was deposed from power around 1361 B.C.E., which accounts for all the desperate efforts by biased secular humanists and Theosophists who are determined to date the Exodus to this century. Biblical chronology clearly states the Exodus occurred 480 years from the start of the building of the temple; the construction of the Jerusalem temple commenced in the fourth year of Solomon's reign.[12] Solomon's forty-year reign began in 1020 B.C.E. and it ended in 980 B.C.E., which places the start of the Exodus at 1496 and its end in 1446 B.C.E. Calculating the number of years, utilizing the secular date for the fall of Jerusalem at the end of Zedekiah's reign at the hands of the Babylonians in 587 B.C.E. to the start of Rehoboam's reign (son of Solomon), and utilizing biblical chronology, we arrive at a total of 393.5 years. This readily dates the end of Solomon's reign to 980 B.C.E.

Moreover, David Rohl audaciously redefines Egyptian chronology by stating that in the Third Intermediate Dynasty, two distinct but identical Egyptian king lists, which are shown to run one after the other, ought to, in fact, run concurrently, effectively changing the generally accepted Egyptian chronology by 400 years. What the new chronology produced was a date for Moses' birth of 1540 B.C.E. and an Exodus date of 1446 B.C.E., under the reign of Pharaoh Dudimose in 1450–1446 B.C.E.[13]

I believe the fanatical persistence in retaining both Akenhaten as Moses and the erroneous dating of the Exodus with Akhenaton's reign to around 1350 B.C.E. originate in the Theosophist Anno Lucis doctrine. Calculating the chronology from the Bible readily estimates the birth of Adam at about 4253 B.C.E., using the conclusion above as the basis that the Exodus began in 1496 B.C.E., and then backdating by use of scriptural genealogies of all the patriarchs. Conversely, Anno Lucis, the year Satan was cast from the heavenly government, was around 4000 B.C.E., according to Theosophy. Now, if you calculate the difference between Adam's birth and the Exodus using biblical chronology, one arrives with 2797 years. Now, subtract 2797 years from Anno Lucis, and you arrive magically at circa 1350 B.C.E., precisely the era of Akenhaten's reign. Theosophy tends to date all things in reference to Anno Lucis. Because spurious forces have corrupted secular education, they deny relevant truths and archaeological discoveries so that they can manipulate Egyptian chronology and history in general. In the process, Scripture's credibility is vindictively debased and denied.

Even after Akenhaten was deposed, he was considered to be the living heir to the throne of Egypt by Theosophists.[14] Akenhaten had inherited direct Dragon bloodlines from Mesopotamia, for he was nephew to King Tushratta of Mittanni; his father, Amenhotep III, had married Mittanni princesses, just as Akenhaten would do.[15] Meanwhile, Horemheb, the eventual usurper of the throne of the Armana dynasty, was not from royal blood. Ergo, Akenhaten was considered the surviving patriarchal branch of the Egyptian Dragon Court in Israel via Moses; even in banishment, Akenhaten was still considered the rightful heir to the (Dragon) dynasty, the true *Royal Mose* or *Mosis*.[16]

The concept in Egypt of a God with no image was well established before the birth of Akenhaten[17] and is generally used to boost the argument promoting Akenhaten as Moses, but this argument withers when set against the biblical chronology. What is more probable is that the omnipotent power of God exercised in the many miracles and plagues recorded in the Exodus narrative left an unforgettable impression on both Egypt and its kings. Egypt's historic humiliation at the hands of the Hebrew slaves and all the Exodus miracles of conquest opened the door for the Egyptians to adopt the omnipotent Creator God with no image. All this substantiates the hatred thereafter adopted by Egyptians once Akenhaten was deposed and Aten worship overturned, which was ruthlessly levied against both Akenhaten and Aten worship.

Akenhaten was therefore considered the Royal Mose, or *Musis*,[18] variantly acknowledged as the Royal Egyptian *Mosis*,[19] where the Egyptian *mose* and the Greek *mosis* translate as offspring. Tutmosis (Tutankhamun) is one example of its application.[20] We noted earlier in this book that the name for the Egyptian crocodile god was *Messeh*, while the Mesopotamian equivalent was *Mus-Hus*.[21] The Babylonian and Egyptian *messiah* and its derivative *messianic* derived from *Messeh* and *Mus Hus* in Theosophist doctrine.[22] The Egyptian title "Mus Hus" was the originating, spurious source for the messianic bloodline from the crocodile/serpent/dragon cult, of which Akenhaten was part. All these titles are pronounced the same as the Hebrew *Moses*.

One can readily appreciate just how easy it would be to infer the Akenhaten/Moses connection through employing these titles of Akenhaten to Moses, as well as Akenhaten being the pharaoh that introduced monotheism and the god with no image to Egypt. One objectively could have concluded the same concerning any pharaoh, however, for all pharaohs would have held the Royal Mosis title as part of their royal inheritance, just as the English bestow the Prince of Wales title on the male heir to the English throne. Certainly, before Moses' banishment, he was recorded as the Royal Mosis.

On the other hand, biblical records readily counter this Theosophist dissent by specifically stating the naming of Moses by its Hebrew meaning, that Moses was drawn out of the water by the Pharaoh's daughter, just as Scripture records, for it sounds very close to the Hebrew word for "draw out."[23] The word for drawing out in Hebrew was *Moshe*, and/or *Moshui*.

Horemheb was not of royal blood. So in order that the Theosophists could legitimize the survival of the originating San Greal of the antediluvian epoch, the patriarchal Dragon bloodline, they required a plausible lineage, which manifested itself by conveniently transforming Akenhaten into Moses and then from Moses down through the Israelite priesthood. Horemheb did not bare a legitimate heir, and thus a new, posthumous dynasty was founded under Rameses, the son of the troop commander Seti.[24] But again, this was not Royal Dragon blood. If Akenhaten did survive under the guise of Moses, he was one of two surviving refugees from the Egyptian patriarchy once the Armana dynasty was overthrown.

Smenkhare, brother to Akenhaten, succeeded to the throne of Egypt. Some traditions state that Scota was daughter to Smenkhare,[25] while other traditions identify Scota as the daughter of Akenhaten.[26] What is important to remember, though, is that Scota married royalty from Scythia, a man named Niul. Scythians were the legendary (Dragon) bloodlines of royalty that the exiles of Benjamin intermixed with. Scythians held the parallel Titanic/Nephilim Dragon bloodlines stemming through Japheth (Iapetus), also mythologized as the great Anu, the brother of Ham.[27] Japhethian royal bloodlines descended from Zeus to Hercules, through a half woman, half Snake that bore a son named Scythes,[28] founder of the Scythians, who produced the serpent/Dragon people called the Sarmatians and the Royal Dragon descendant that married Scota.

The Theosophical belief is that Aaron, brother of Moses, entered into an alliance with Niul, the husband to Scota. Where all this ties together is that Theosophical doctrine identifies Smenkhare as Aaron, brother of Moses,[29] just as Smenkhare was brother to Akenhaten. Again, Theosophists manipulate Scripture to underscore their beliefs pointing to Exodus 7, where Aaron performed the miracle of the staff,[30] which somehow validated Aaron's status as a pharaoh to the new pharaoh, who ostensibly and unbelievably somehow did not know Aaron/Smenkhare[31] or Moses/Akenhaten.

Smenkhare's mother was Tey the Yokabar[32] (Scripture records that Moses', Miriam's, and Aaron's mother was Jochebed[33]). Smenkhare was the son of Aye, with Tey being the sibling of Akenhaten in typical pharonic incest, for the father of Akenhaten was Amenhotep III, while Aye was the son of, or descendant of, Akenhaten, even though the mother of Smenkhare and Akenhaten was Tey. Smenkhare was also the grandson of Tuya and Yusuf (Joseph). Smenkhare mysteriously disappeared from history, like Akenhaten,[34] again fueling Theosophist lore that Smenkhare became Aaron after being deposed.

As per Gardner, the properly enunciated *Smenkh-ka-ra* and its variant, *Smenkh-ka-ro-on*, creates from the phonetic ending the name *Aaron*.[35] Aaron was the founder of the religious Israelite priesthood establishment under Moses' instruction,[36] thus transforming Smenkhare to the joint founder of the Israelite priesthood, complete with Royal Dragon bloodlines. Theosophists trace their mysticism back to Moses and Smenkhare through the Essenes, which, of course, carry with them the secrets of the Therapeutate and the Great White Brotherhood of Heliopolis. Theosophists assert that both Akenhaten/Moses and Aaron/Smenkhare were educated in the greater Mysteries as pharaohs at Heliopolis, home of the White Brotherhood.

Akenhaten/Amenhotep IV's father was Amenhotep III, also chronicled as Anen.[37] Both Akenhaten and his father were well known to have married Mesopotamian princesses to bolster their Dragon blood strains.[38] Discussing events somewhat before Akenhaten, Gardner notes that the descendants of Esau were mythologized to have become pharaohs of Egypt through the union of Tuya and her husband, Yusuf, which produced the famous Amarna pharaohs. The Armana dynasty included Akenhaten, Smenkhare, Tutankhamun, and Aye,[39] with Tutankhamun as the last Armana king.[40] *Armana* derived from the word *Imrn* or *Imran*, which was Hebrew for *Amram*.[41] Coincidently, Moses' father was recorded biblically as Amran.[42] The father to Anen/Amenhotep III and Aye was Yuya.[43]

Moses' sister, Miriam,[44] was affectionately known in Scripture as "the prophetess" (Exod. 15:20–21). Micah 6:4 calls her one of the three leaders sent by God to lead Israel, along with Moses and Aaron. She was a powerful prophet and leader of Israel, who organized a mini-rebellion when Moses took yet another wife, this time a Cushite at Merabah-Kadesh.[45] We learned earlier that this rebellion cost both Aaron and Miriam the privilege of entering into the Promised Land. Miriam, in Jewish legends, held the uppermost respect from the Israelites. In fact, Numbers 12:15–16 records that the Israelites refused to march for a week until Miriam was healed from leprosy, forcibly demonstrating the respect they maintained for her. The next time Scripture mentions Miriam, though, is in Numbers 20:1, the account of her death and burial at Kadesh. Scripture is frustratingly stingy with respect to Miriam's documentation.

Some Theosophists believe Miriam to have been a sister to Tutankhamun, but this person was likely another Egyptian other than Miriam, a person who also went to Sinai and who was acknowledged to be Tutankhamun's sister.[46] This was likely Miriam's and Moses' daughter in Theosophist lore, known as Khiba-Tashit, who was said to originate the House of Gold/Dragon dynasty of David. It was through Miriam and Moses, by their alleged daughter Khiba-Tashit that the alleged Dragon bloodline passed down through the generations to David.

Theosophists believe Miriam to have been the true matriarchal heiress (Owl of the Dragon Court) that went to Sinai with Moses as the wife of Moses,[47] as well as the half-sister to Akenhaten/Moses,[48] which elucidates why Miriam would have been so upset at Moses marrying yet another wife, a Cushite. Remember, it was common for pharaohs to marry their sisters and half-sisters to maintain the purity of the bloodlines, as well as to marry someone from the Dragon Court of Mesopotamia. Ancient royal families did not believe mortals, other than family, were divinely descended; thus, they married their half-sisters.[49] Miriam was believed in this line of thinking to have been the half-sister of Akenhaten (Moses) and also his wife, as the junior queen to Nefertiti.[50]

Miriam is first introduced to us biblically in Exodus, in the Song of Moses and Miriam. Exodus describes her as taking a tambourine and then leading all the Israelite women with tambourines in a celebration of dance and music at the sight of the Egyptian army drowning in the Red Sea (Exod. 15:1–21). Although not named, Miriam is believed by many to be the sister named in Exodus who watched the daughter of Pharaoh draw Moses from the river. This daughter of Pharaoh adopted the baby and then searched, found, and offered for the mother of Moses, Jochebed, to be the nurse for Moses (Exod. 2:1–10).[51]

Miriam was known, then, Theosophically, as "Queen Kayak" in the Pharonic dynasty and "the beloved Mery-Khiba"; *Mery* translates as "beloved" in ancient Egyptian. Mery-Khiba was a tremendously popular queen, because, unlike Nefertiti, Mery-Khiba (Miriam) bore a son for Akenhaten (Moses), who became Tutankhamun.[52] This is how Tutankhamun and Khiba-Tashit were brother and sister. Miriam's nomative is thought to have derived from *Mery* in this line of thought and is the root variant for Miriam and Mary. For these reasons, then, there ought to be no mystery as to why Tutankhamun is adulated in the secular sciences, archaeology, literature, entertainment, and in New Age beliefs.

Mery-Khiba's mother was a Mesopotamian (Dragon) princess from the Mitannian dynasts, a Nephilim dynasty that was held in the highest esteem at that time. Mery-Khiba voluntarily entered into exile with Akenhaten, and thus became famous as "Mery-Amon" and Moses' wife, who later became *Miriam*, producing through her esteemed matriarchal lineage the daughter (Khiba-Tashit) who eventually founded the Royal House of Judah. Supposedly, this came about through Mery-Khiba and Moses' daughter, Khiba-Tashit, the sister of Tututamun, who later married Rama from Judah, consolidating the line that then descended down to David. This, then, renders Miriam to be a highly influential figure in the House of Gold and the Israelite Dragon Court, linking the House of David back to the Egyptian and Mesopotamian originating strains.[53]

All these baffling genealogies connecting David to Mery-Khiba/ Miriam and to Akenhaten/Moses are nowhere to be found in the Bible, but Theosophists rationalize their acceptance of them by arguing that these genealogies were diligently deleted from Scripture to deny the Dragon Egyptian and Mesopotamian roots to the Royal House of David.[54] Only Ram is listed in the Scriptures, but no wife is recorded by name.[55] The truth, however, is all these curious coincidences of history evaporate once the authentic chronology of Scripture and Rohl are accepted.

CHAPTER 86

JOSEPH

The scepter will not depart from Judah, nor the ruler's staff from between his feet, until he comes to whom it belongs and the obedience of the nations is his…. Joseph is a fruitful vine…. Your father's blessings are greater than the blessings of the ancient mountains, than the bounty of the age-old hills. Let all these rest on the head of Joseph, on the brow of the prince among his brothers.

—Jacob's Blessing in Genesis 49:22, 26

Moving further back into Theosophist revisionist history, we now turn to Yuya, grandfather of Akenhaten.

Why is the Dragon king Yuya, or *Yusuf*, in revisionist history drafted to be Joseph,[1] son of Jacob? Why is this connection necessary to substantiate their revisionist history and to solidify the credibility of the bloodlines of the Antichrist?

The biblical Joseph was the son of Jacob, son of Isaac, son of Abraham. Joseph was sold into slavery in Egypt by his brothers, who were jealous of him,[2] and to an Egyptian official named Potiphar.[3] Joseph, of course, was the Israelite from the famous Exodus narratives who became the vizier of Egypt[4] and the famous founder of two of the original twelve tribes of Israel that Moses led out of Egypt.

So, too, was Yuya, a Semite not of royal Egyptian blood; he, too, was a vizier for both Tuthmosis IV and Akenhaten's father, Amenhotep III, according to Egyptian author Moustafa Gadalla. Yuya's Egyptian titles included Holy Father of the Lord of Two Lands, just as the Pharaoh's title was the Lord of Two Lands, suggesting that Yuya fathered a pharaoh, Anen/Amenhotep III and Aye. Along the path of this kind of discourse then, understand that "Joseph" in Egyptian is spelled with a *y*, while the *o* would become a *u*, giving us *Yuseph*,[5] a very close variant of Yuya and Yusuf. In the same manner, Joseph was recorded as *Yosef* in Aramaic.[6] It is quite conceivable that the names are variants of each other.

Theosophist dreamers love to (mis)quote Genesis, posthumously raising Joseph to the status of a pharonic dynastic founder: "So then it was not you [his brothers who sold Joseph into slavery] who sent me here, but God. He made me father to Pharaoh, lord of his entire household and ruler of all Egypt" (Gen. 45:8). Biblical legends underscore Joseph was not the father of a pharaoh but rather that at the age of seventy-one Joseph became the viceroy of Egypt for forty years, possessing all the power and authority of Egypt once Pharaoh died. This included being guardian to Pharaoh's son, Mayron, but Joseph did not become a pharaoh because he was an alien, even though he had the support of many.[7] Joseph was a vizier of Egypt and guardian to Pharaoh's children, but Joseph was not the physical parent spawning Egyptian kings, as disingenuous polytheists would have you believe.

Now Tuya, also identified as Touiou, wife of Joseph/Yuya, held the title "Asenath," which was Egyptian for "belonging to the goddess Neith."[8] She was a daughter of Potiphera, who Pharaoh gave to Joseph as a wife, and she was one of the mothers to the twelve tribes of Israel, but the Bible says nothing more about Asenath.[9] Lorraine Evans states that Tuya was daughter of Tiye, the wife of Amenhotep III, and she was a priestess of the god Min in the Delta region.[10]

According to Jewish legend, Potiphar/Potiphera, the Egyptian official Joseph was sold to, adopted Asenath/Tuya, as Asenath/Tuya's original parents, Dinah and Hamor, had abandoned her.[11] Conversely, the Bible recorded Joseph's wife, Asenath, as the daughter of a priest of Heliopolis, also recorded as On,[12] the home of the infamous Great White Brotherhood. On was the city where Potiphar was trained to be a priest.[13]

Potiphar was the high Egyptian official of Pharaoh who purchased Joseph as a slave from the Midianites,[14] thereby placing Joseph and Tuya/Asenath in the same house, at the same approximate time. Strangely, Potiphar did not consider Joseph a mere slave, inexplicably sending him to be trained in the arts (Seven Sacred Sciences, likely at On, where Potiphar resided). Potiphar's wife, Zuleika is also recorded in legend as having firmly believed the stars foretold Joseph would marry into her family, through her daughter, Asenath,[15] which is likely where the rumors of the Armana dynasty and Joseph began. By all relevant accounts, it seems likely that Tuya/Asenath and Joseph/Yuya were the same historical figures, but they were not physical parents to the famous Armana dynasty, but rather adoptive parents or guardians, just as Scripture has accurately recorded.

Similarly, Gardner surprisingly added that Tuya/Asenath was the granddaughter of Tuthmusis III, just as Evans recorded Tuya was the daughter of Amenhotep III, the founder of the White Brotherhood of the Therapeutate of Heliopolis. Tuthmusis III and Amenhotep III are one and the same Pharaoh, with each name merely denoting a different title. Tuthmusis III brilliantly reorganized the ancient Mystery Schools of Egypt (and Nimrod); he then founded the Great White Brotherhood of the Master Craftsman, and it was this mystically dominated, pharonic Dragon Court of Egypt that provided for the priestly Pursuits of Thoth,[16] which apparently Moses and Aaron were educated at. Tuthmusis III originally founded this new order in Heliopolis.[17] Few recognize that Amenhotep III was additionally renowned for wedding numerous (Owl) princesses from the numinous Mittanni, Mesopotamian, and Kassite dynasties and was himself a nephew to King Sudarna II and grandson of King Artadama, both of Mittanni.[18]

Heliopolis was originally recorded as *On*, according to Gardner and Scripture, and eventually became known as the Therapeutate that later greatly influenced the Essenes.[19] On was renowned as the chief city of Egyptian science.[20] During the lifetime of Herodotus, who visited Egypt during the fifth century B.C.E.,[21] the priests of On/Heliopolis were recognized around the ancient world as the most learned men in the history of Egypt. Directly associated with the Temple of the Sun was a medical school and a training center for the priests of On.[22] Greek philosophers both attended and studied in these institutions, just as Asenath, wife of Joseph was also a priestess of On/ Heliopolis.[23] On was devoted to the worship of the sun god Ra, celebrated as the *Heliopolis,* which was Greek for “Sun City.”[24] Heliopolis is referred to in Jeremiah as the “Temple of the Sun”; and in the KJV Bible as Beth-Shemesh;[25] and alternatively, as Awen, and On, in Ezekiel.[26] On was the religious capitol of Egypt from 2900 B.C.E. forward and was referred to in many discovered manuscripts as the City of the Sun.[27]

Tuya, then, through her father, Tutmosis III/Amenhotep III, descended from Igrath, daughter of Esau and Bashemath. Esau and Bashemath played important revisionist roles in the posthumous grafting of the holy bloodlines of Abraham with the Dragon Court. Gardner documented Igrath as the mother to Queen Sobeknefru (Mahalath the Crocodile goddess), and it was she who established the parallel matriarchal Dragon Court in ancient Egypt. Igrath was the renaissance Dragon queen of Egypt,[28] who descended from a mysterious and pure Dragon branch.

The Dragon Court appears to have grafted into Yuya/Joseph’s descendants’ bloodlines through Yuya’s wife, Tuya, via Esau, Bashemath, Igrath, and Mahalath and through Tutmosis III/Amonhotep III Dragon bloodlines. It is important to keep at hand the mythological importance of Esau, from whom the Dragon Court first allegedly entered the seed of Abraham. Some of the Edomites interbred with the giants, forming what became recognized as the Great Amalekite Nation. This union of Abrahamites and Nephilim was the mysteriously pure, pharonic source of the Dragon blood/Nephilim blood, which supposedly contaminated some of the seed of Abraham through the Dragon queen Igrath and then Tuya, wife of Joseph. This established Igrath as a parallel, powerful, and pure branch of the Dragon matriarchy.

CHAPTER 87

ABRAHAM, ESAU, AND ISHMAEL

> *Esau said, "Isn't he rightly named Jacob? He has deceived me these two times: He took my birthright, and now he's taken my blessing!"*
>
> —Genesis 27:36

Why do Theosophist mythologies tend to discredit Esau's brother, Jacob, and Jacob's biblical birthright?[1]

Both Esau and Jacob were competing sons for Abraham's birthright—one for monotheism and one for polytheism. The Qur'an steadfastly testifies Jacob was recognized as a loyal messenger/prophet of God, along with his sons, who received all the blessings and birthrights from Abraham.[2]

Esau and Jacob were twin brothers, with Esau being the firstborn. Esau should have inherited the blessings and birthrights from Isaac, but he did not. However, Masonic and Gnostic authors believe Esau and Bashemath's descendants, the Edomites/Amalekites, were indeed Dragon Court heirs through Bashemath and additional other wives from the Dragon Court that Esau also married.[3] The descendants of Esau inherited the kingdom of Idumaea (Edom),[4] with the titles of Dragon kings and Owl queens for eternity,[5] suggesting treacherous and traitorous actions undertaken by Esau and his descendants through intermarrying into the rival and competitive messianic and kingship bloodlines of Nephilim.

In Theosophist history, Esau married the Egyptian Bashemath,[6] the daughter of Ishmael, who was half-brother to Isaac through Abraham and Hagar,[7] thus identifying the source of Dragon blood in Theosophist lore to Esau and the Edomites' royal descendants. This was likely the genesis and then the motivation for the formation of the Great Amalekite Nation discussed previously in this book, which joined the descendants of Esau with the Horites and Hittites. Horites and Hittites were Nephilim that curiously and continuously conjugated with Edomites, along with Royal Egyptian Dragon bloodlines. It would have been Amalek, grandson of Esau, who would then have officially inherited the unified Dragon title.

The Bible, however, does not totally agree with this scenario of Esau and his wives. Scripture records Esau married two wives when he was forty. He married Judith, daughter of Beerie the Hittite (Nephilim), as well as Basemath, the daughter of Elon the Hittite (Nephilim) (Gen. 26:34). Scripture also records Basemath as the daughter of Ishmael and sister of Nebaoith (Gen. 36:1–5). Nebaoith was the firstborn of Ishmael (Gen. 25:13). Perhaps Elon was yet another wife of Ishmael, for Ishmael was married to Mahalath.

Scripture also records that Esau married Adah the Canaanite, the daughter of Elon the Hittite, suggesting that Adah was the Hittite and not Basemath; although, Hittites dwelled among Canaanites, and so both may have been considered Canaanite, Hittite, and Nephilim. Scripture further records Esau married the Horite Ohilibamah and the daughter of the Horite/Nephilim Chief Anah, son of the Nephilim Zibeon (Gen. 36:1). Therefore, Esau would have begun new Israelite and Dragon dynasties through marrying Egyptian, Horite, and Hittite branches of matriarchal royalty.

The Great Amalekite Nation was the union of the matrilineal Amalekite/ Horite/Hittite Dragon Court of Nephilim and Egyptian matriarchal Dragon blood to the scriptural royal lineage through the intermarriages with Esau with Bashemath, Ohilibamah, Adah, and Anah. This was yet just another reason the Israelites were commissioned to eradicate this tripartite Dragon Court that was both mysteriously and uniquely pure. All these mysteriously pure and previously unexplained bloodlines rested within the Royal Houses of the Amalekites, which further held alternative royal, messianic bloodlines from Abraham through Esau and from Abraham to Hagar and Ishmael, to Basemath, Mahalath, and Igrath.

The Bible records Hagar, grandmother of Bashemath, as the Egyptian maidservant to Abraham's wife Sarah.[8] The Theosophist discourse lists Hagar as a daughter of Pharaoh, Sensuret I, whom we will discuss later—a Pharaoh that descended from Nimrod.[9] Biblical legends further support this notion that Pharaoh gave Sarah his daughter Hagar as a maidservant, for he preferred this to Hagar becoming just another mistress in another harem.[10] Hagar bore Abraham a son, Ishmael, because Sarah was barren (Gen. 16:1–15) and could not provide Abraham with an heir until much later, when God corrected her affliction. The New Testament recognizes Sarah and Hagar as metaphorical for two distinct (and often overlooked) covenants between God and the Israelites descending from Sarah and God and the Arabs descending from Hagar (Gal. 4:21–31).

Ishmael, then, was raised at first to succeed in government as the firstborn of Abraham, until Isaac was later born to Sarah, causing Sarah to look ill upon Hagar and Ishmael as dangerous rivals to Abraham's inheritance.[11] Ishmael, then, was Dragon blood through the royal matrilineal branch of the Egyptian pharonic bloodline from Sensuret I, which, one could argue, began a new kingship dynasty in complete Dragon tradition. Hagar shuffled Ishmael off to the desert of Paran to live, supplying Ishmael with an Egyptian wife; although, no name was provided for her in the Bible.[12] However, Gardner provides the name *Mahalath*.[13] Once more, biblical legends support this mix of Scripture and mythology by noting Hagar returned to Egypt specifically to choose an appropriate wife for Ishmael,[14] which, in all likelihood, would have been from Egyptian royalty.

Mahalath was daughter to Pharaoh Amenhotep II,[15] the son of Sensuret I. She held the Egyptian title of the first Dragon queen of Egypt (due to her pure Nephilim/Amalekite blood) and was the daughter of Igrath, as we have already covered. Malahath then enhanced the purity of the Dragon bloodline, the newly spawned matriarchal dynasty of Ishmael. Scripture does record the name *Mahalath* but inexplicably as the name of Esau's wife, in place of Basemath,[16] instead of Ishmael's wife. But, as *Unger's* states, Mahalath could have been Basemath's original name, as it was traditional for wives to accept new names when married,[17] which likely, then, was the source for Ishmael's wife's name of Mahalath. This would require that Esau then married Ishmael's wife. Or, what is more likely chronologically and in ancient tradition, is that Mahalath's daughter carried with her the same name as her mother, thus clearing up the confusion over Esau's various wives.

So now we have Hagar of royal Egyptian Dragon blood bearing Ishmael and then marrying Ishmael off to Mahalath and into further Egyptian and other Dragon strains, for Mahalath was the daughter of Amenhotep II and Igrath. Remember, one of the daughters of Esau and Bashemath appears to have been Igrath,[18] once again, according to Gardner, who then intermarried into the Egyptian Dragon Court.

Now back to Tuya, the wife to Joseph. She was the granddaughter descended from Igrath (daughter of Esau) and Amenhotep II/Tutmosis II, while Tiye, daughter of Tuya, was also related to Mahalath, wife of Ishmael, for Mahalath was also daughter of Igrath and Amenhotep II. Their bloodlines intermingled later through Tuya and Joseph, with Esau and Bashemath,[19] once again bringing more Dragon blood into Joseph's descendants, according to Theosophist lore.

Tiye was the junior wife to Amenhotep III/Tutmosis III, the daughter of Yuya/Joseph and Tuya/Asenath, and, of course, was descended from Esau through her mother, Tuya. Amenhotep III/Tutmosis III had originally married his sister Sitamun, who was still a child, to inherit the matrilineal succession of the Dragon kingship; he later married Tiye to have an adult wife. What is important about Tiye is that she allegedly reared two very famous offspring: Nefertiti and a boy named Amenhotep IV/Akenhaten/Moses.[20]

All this testifies to the Theosophist belief that the descendants of Esau became pharaohs through Joseph and Tuya, which produced the Armana kings of Akenhaten, Smenkhare, Tutankhamun, and Aye. They both held parallel royal bloodlines containing the Dragon San Greal, as well as the Abrahamic bloodlines, which contained the birthright blessings and the Messianic blessings from God. All this further implies that the Armana kings were jointly Amalekite-spawned Nephilim/Dragon kings as well, along with the Babylonian strain descended from Nimrod.

This close Egyptian/Amalekite kinship certainly testifies to the uncommon hatred the Amalekites held against the Israelites, at least from a

Christian, scriptural perspective. Amalekites and Egyptians were Nephilim-inspired nations that carried within their royal bloodlines a parallel, or antithesis, messianic inheritance, even to the point where the Dragon messianic bloodline incorporated the rival Ishmaelite and Edomite Covenants and the alleged Messianic birthrights of Abraham. The Amalekites were driven, then, from the scriptural perspective, with unbridled hatred to eliminate their parallel Jacobite rivals, the Moses-led Israelites during the Exodus, possessing the true Messianic inheritance, which the Amalekites believed they held, too, through Esau and Ishmael.

The blood oath between the Amalekites and the Israelites originated in the antithesis kingships sponsored from heaven, one from God and one from fallen angels led by Nephilim. No doubt, the very close kinship of royalty between the Egyptians and the Amalekites held considerable weight and loyalties, contributing to the Amalekite genocide waged against Israel in support of their Egyptian brethren.

In addition, the ancient Midianites were also blood enemies of the early Israelite nations, attacking incessantly, at every opportunity, through to the end of the age of the Judges. The Midianites, too, had a covenant and an inheritable blessing argument with the Israelites. In Scripture, we read Abraham had a second wife, in addition to Hagar, named Keturah, who bore six additional sons that included Midian, the patriarch of the Midianites (Gen. 25:1–5). This complication arose after Sarah bore Isaac and after Hagar bore Ishmael, when Abraham decided to marry Keturah.[21] The Midianites would also have had vested interest in extinguishing the line of Isaac and Jacob so that they, too, could claim the Abrahamic Covenant, blessings, and birthright.

What is important to all this detail is that Moses/Akenhaten and Aaron/Smenkhare, the founding governmental forces and religious basis of Israel (the priesthood), were both believed to have held Dragon bloodlines stemming from Esau and Ishmael in Theosophist lore and through intermarriage, in equal partnership with the Egyptian bloodline, which we have yet to examine. Furthermore, all this reconnects, through intermarriage, part of the birthright and blessings back to the Dragon bloodline that passed down from Jacob to Joseph and then to his sons, Ephraim and Manasseh.[22] The only segment of the Israelite bloodline missing was the Messianic blessing passed on to Judah from Jacob[23] and then eventually to David.

Judah, to whom the Judaic/Christian Messianic bloodline was passed (the scepter and ruler's staff),[24] married an unnamed Canaanite woman, the daughter of Shua. The lost Testament of Judah identified Judah's wife as *Bathshua*, meaning "the daughter of Shua."[25] Judah fathered as his firstborn son Er, who married a woman named Tamar.[26] The Bible does not state the nationality of Tamar, but one concludes from the text that she, too, was likely Canaanite, in the same manner that the Testament of Judah suggests that Tamar likely was Canaanite.[27] God put Er to death for his wickedness before he was able to conceive a son with Tamar.[28] Tamar later tricked her father-in-law, Judah, into sleeping with her by posing as a prostitute, thereby conceiving twins boys, including a son named Perez.[29] Thus, the Messianic bloodline descended biblically down through Perez from Judah and Tamar.

Tamar was an important name that continually resurfaces in the messianic bloodline, including the transplanting of Zedekiah's throne of Judah to Ireland via one of his daughters named Tamar at the fall of Jerusalem in 587 B.C.E. A woman named Tamar was also a daughter of David (2 Sam. 13:1–3). And a woman with the same name is listed as the only surviving daughter of Absalom (2 Sam. 14:27). The name continually pops up in biblical narratives,[30] thereby suggesting something important and perhaps something dissonant reflected metaphorically in the name, and it is in its symbolism connecting to Sarah where the secret is contained.

The Gnostic gospel the Qumran Genesis Apocryphon records Abraham perceiving himself as a cedar tree, while his wife Sarah was a palm tree. The palm tree allegory is a significant metaphor in the royal, matriarchal Messianic bloodlines. The distinction of the royal palm tree is believed in this line of Theosophic thinking to have originally derived from the lineage of TubalCain.[31] In fact, the palm tree allegory does descend back to the antediluvian epoch and Atlantis in many legends.

The palm tree was known then as the Great Mother Ceiba (Mother Earth) in Central American legends, and in the ancient Mayan CChilam Balam manuscripts recovered by the Spanish in the seventeenth century. The Ceiba is remembered both as a great tree that flourishes in Guatemala and as the tree that was established at the place of destruction, as a memorial of the deluge cataclysm. So, too, was the palm tree cited in Cherokee legends, where it was also planted in the location where the great meteorite of the deluge struck. The palm tree suddenly rose up at the impact site of the deluge, where the stars of Pleiades struck the oceans, in the Iroquois, Great Lakes, Tennessee, and Carolina Native American legends, suggesting to Frank Joseph that the palm tree was an allegory for the mushroom cloud created by the impact.[32] All this suggests an arcane secret regarding Sarah and Tamar/Temar, conceivably connecting both Theosophically with Nephilim and antediluvian mythology.

The palm oasis southeast of Aqaba was originally named Tehama/Teima/ Tema, from the vehement heat of the desert sand; it is from this root the name *Tamar* and the oasis's name is thought to have derived.[33] Tehama/Thamara is likely the place referred to by Ezekiel, thought to be located somewhere on the southern border of Palestine on the road from Hebron to Elath.[34] Palm trees, of course, are common foliage at an oasis, and *tamar* was one of the Hebrew words utilized for "palm."[35]

All the arcane dissent inserted by spurious forces disingenuously links the matriarchal branch of the Hebrew Messianic bloodline with esoteric palm tree allegories and their sinister, antediluvian ties. It significantly links close and misconstrued ties to Sarah and the various Tamars of scriptural and mythological history to antediluvian treachery. In addition, Tamar, the wife of Er, has been mythologized as descending from royal Hametic succession; she was believed to have been an obvious choice as a founding matriarch for the Messianic lineage of Israel because of her Royal Hametic Dragon bloodlines. Tamar, as I have already noted, bore Perez/Pharez by Judah, which initiated the Abrahamic Messianic bloodline and eventually manifested itself in David[36] and later in Jesus.

The parental partnership of Temar and Judah inserted the matriarchal Dragon Court, according to Theosophist revisionist history, into the Messianic segment of Israelite royal succession, through Temar's Hametic royal bloodline, completing the hijacking of the Abrahamic birthright tripartite through Yuya/Joseph, Tuya, and the religious Levite establishment founded in Aaron and Moses and, of course, the twin Messianic birthright of Abraham and the Dragon Court through Tamar and Judah. And yet the connections run even deeper than this. Remember, too, Theosophist history recants Khiba-Tasherit married Ram to originate the messianic lineage.

Isaac, father to Esau and Jacob, son of Abraham (Gen. 21:1–7), and half-brother to Ishmael has been mythologized in Theosophy to have not been the son of Abraham. Theosophists believe this, even though the Bible emphatically states Isaac was his son (Gen. 21:5), and the Qur'an further testifies to Sarah and Abraham producing Isaac at a very old age through the intercession of God.[37] It is the popular Theosophist line of thinking that there was not a miracle of pregnancy granted to Abraham at the age of one hundred and to Sarah at the age of ninety (Gen. 17:17–18) but that this was an elaborate cover story and a convenient rewrite of biblical history by later biblical writers to hide the real story.

Isaac in Theosophist mythology was thought to have been the son of Sarah and Pharaoh Sensuret I.[38] According to this thinking, Sensuret I was the pharaoh Abraham and Sarah encountered in Genesis during their trip to Egypt, where the pharaoh took Sarah into his court because of her great beauty, not knowing she was Abraham's wife. Pharaoh Sensuret I thought Sarah was Abraham's sister, according to Genesis.[39] In this Theosophist line of thought, Sensuret I did sleep with Sarah, producing Isaac through this union.[40] You remember Sensuret I. He was grandfather to Mahalath, the wife to Ishmael, while Hagar was Sensuret I's daughter. Now Sensuret I was also the father of Amenemhet II, Igrath's husband, whose daughter was Mahalath,[41] wife of Ishmael, and whose lineage produced the Armana kings through Esau and Bashemath.

As part of this revisionist marriage contract with Pharaoh, Sarah was rewarded with Hagar, the Pharaoh's daughter, as recorded by Jewish legends.[42] This supposedly introduced the Egyptian Dragon bloodline into Isaac through Sensuret I and Sarah, as his parents from the beginning, uniting Dragon blood with the threefold blessings granted to Abraham that flowed through both Jacob and Esau and then onto the three segments of Israelite royal succession: Moses and Aaron/Levites, Ephraim and Manasseh/birthright, and of course, Judah/ Messianic bloodline.

This particular Theosophist line of treachery deliberately severs the biblical royal bloodline from Noah to Abraham that originated with Adam at the birth of Isaac, leaving only Ishmael and the sons of Keturah, which included the Midianites, to carry Abraham's bloodline, while diminishing biblical legitimacy by design.

Ishmael is, of course, regarded as the father of the Arab nations and thereby explains the Arab/Israelite erroneous schism over the Old Testament. Fascist and mystical Muslim sects promote that Ishmael, and not Isaac, carried Abraham's bloodline and blessings in an identical manner as the Theosophists do. They claim the Israelites corrupted the Old Testament to cover these things up, even though the Qur'an steadfastly testifies to the accuracy and truthfulness of the first two testaments, as well as the legitimacy of Isaac's posterity.

This revisionist approach deliberately reroutes the tripartite birthright blessings granted by God through Abraham. It reroutes the Abrahamic bloodline through Ishmael and Mahalath, to Esau and Bashemath, to Igrath and Tutmosis II/Amenhotep II, to Joseph and Tuya, and finally to the Armana kings—and in particular, to Akenhaten and Smenkhare, whom Theosophists call Moses and Aaron. The Theosophist lineage presents the parallel Dragon birthright blessings as transmitted through Sensuret I, with his Dragon heritage, which descended down to him from Nimrod, Ham, and beyond. In this line of thought, the Abrahamic bloodlines and Covenant blessings are reintroduced back into the Messianic succession with the birth of the Armana dynasty, thus enhancing even more glamour and pedigree in the numinous Egyptian dynasty that supposedly survived through Moses/Akenhaten.

This revisionist bloodline bound the matriarchal bloodline transmitted through Sarah the Palm Tree to being allegorically (and dishonestly) descended from the Hametic/Cainite ancestry, as well. In the Theosophist perspective, all bloodlines descended, not from Noah and Abraham and Sarah to Isaac, but from Nimrod, Ham, and Cain; and then through Sensuret I and Sarah to Isaac; and then from Abraham and Hagar to Ishmael. Hence, Ishmael carried Abraham's true bloodline blessings and a new Dragon bloodline because Hagar was also the daughter of Sensuret I. Joseph united these two alleged Dragon and Abrahamic birthright blessings and covenants at that point through marrying Tuya, creating the famous Armana dynasty as well as the Abrahamic Messianic bloodlines and blessings that were united with Dragon bloodlines later through Judah and Tamar. Whichever genealogy you choose to use, the Theosophists have rewritten themselves into them all.

Delving even further back into the biblical patriarchal succession in partnership with the Theosophical mythology, we find that the biblical and alternative histories once more continue to intermingle, this time with respect to Sarah, the supposed matriarchal Dragon queen known as the *Palm Tree*. The Ethiopian chronicle Nazum Al-Jawahir cites Terah, father to Abraham, as husband both to Tohwait, the mother of Sarah, and Yawnu, the mother of Abraham.[43] This would account for Abraham's biblical statement to Pharaoh Sensuret I and King Abimelech that Sarah was his sister, even though Sarah was also his wife, because Sarah was the daughter of Abraham's father but not the daughter of Abraham's mother.[44] Sarah and Abraham had the same father but separate mothers and were then half-brother and sister to each other, in the same tradition that pharaohs married their half-sisters. Josephus confirmed that Abraham and Sarah were half-brother and sister.[45]

Tohwait was recorded in the Syriac M'arath Gaze as *Nayaryath* and variantly recorded as *Nfry-Ta-Tlewnen*, the former wife of Pharaoh Amennemet I, meaning Tohwait was wife to both Terah and Pharaoh, just as Sarah was wife to Abraham and according to Theosophist mythology, allegedly wife to Pharaoh. Tohwait's son by her Egyptian marriage was the succeeding Pharaoh Sensuret I, the purported Pharaoh that claimed Sarah as his consort that bore Isaac.[46] This would have been a classic pharonic gambit to further enhance his succeeding bloodlines with additional matriarchal Dragon blood. Tohwait must have married Terah after Pharaoh Amennemet I, likely after the Pharaoh had died, for this to be factual.

Conversely, Sarah received her alleged matriarchal Dragon bloodline from the Egyptian Dragon Court, descending from Ham and Nimrod, by her mother Tohwait, the Egyptian wife of Amennemet I, explicating the Theosophist doctrine regarding the palm tree allegory of the Dragon matriarchy concerning Sarah and Temar. Sarah seemingly was the preordained inheritor of the Arcane Mother Earth/Palm Tree/Dragon queen titles for whatever reasons.

Certainly, Sarah's unexplained biblical (and pantheist) histories and name suggest a secretive royal significance according to biblical author J. R. Porter.[47] Theosophists and biblical scholars both contend Sarah's name was actually a Canaanite/Hametic word meaning "queen" or "prince."[48] Thomas Cahill, *Unger's* Dictionary, and the niv Red Letter Bible all conclude that the meaning to the title *Sarah* was "princess."[49]

CHAPTER 88

THE KINGS OF NIMROD AND HAM

The sons of Ham: Cush, Mizraim, Put and Canaan…. Cush was the father of Nimrod.

—Genesis 10:6–8

With all this intermingling of Abraham’s family tree with Egyptian pharaohs, it is now necessary to examine the mythological roots of the kingship in postdiluvian Egypt. What were the relationships between Egyptian pharaohs and the Dragon bloodlines descending from Ham, Nimrod, and beyond?

Mizraim settled Egypt along with his father, Ham,[1] and Hermes. However, it was Nimrod, post-Babel, who sponsored the kingship in Egypt. Nimrod, according to Theosophist mythology, was the father of the first postdiluvian pharaoh of Egypt.[2] Apparently, sometime after Mizraim’s people colonized Egypt, a second wave of aggressive, dynastic Hamites sponsored by Nimrod vanquished Egypt, bringing all the dynastic trappings with them, including the intermarrying of the dynastic family to keep pure the Anunnaki/Nephilim bloodlines, which the Pharaohs became famous for.[3]

This fantastic claim was supported by a collection of Aramaic writings called the *Targum*,[4] the Old Testament translated into Aramaic,[5] utilized by Jewish temple priests to aid in interpreting and understanding key texts.[6]

These Aramaic writings stated Nimrod was the father of a pharaoh, even though no name was provided,[7] but Rohl names this pharaoh as likely Aha, who is generally associated with Menes,[8] the founder of the Pharonic form of kingship after the deluge, circa 2900–3100 B.C.E. Aha, also known as "Hor-Aha" and Manetho's "Athothis," is thought by some to be either the son of Narmer or Menes.[9] Another Ethiopian text on the Old Testament names the pharaoh son of Nimrod as Yanuf, known also as Anedjib, who reigned around 3000 B.C.E., thereby establishing by either source the first postdiluvian Egyptian kingship stemming from Nimrod[10] as the originating patriarchal Dragon blood of the pharaohs.

Further, Gardner suggests that Raneb, pharaoh of the Second Dynasty, circa 2852–13 B.C.E., was a grandson to Nimrod, even though the Bible does not list any sons or descendants of Nimrod in Genesis or 1 Chronicles, likely for these Nephilim reasons. In his genealogies, Gardner additionally listed Boethus, son of Nimrod, as Pharaoh Hotep-Serhemwy.[11] This, then, was how Hagar, the Egyptian mother of Ishmael, was linked as a descendant of Nimrod. Nimrod, then, through partnering with Nephilim, spawned through his progeny the postdiluvian kingships of Egypt and Babylonia.

Just as Nimrod was second generation, so was another interesting gentleman, Enmerukar, the second ruler of Uruk/Unug-Ki.[12] *Kar*, from this nomative, is Sumerian for "hunter"; thus, Enmerukar was *King Enmeru*, the hunter, just as Nimrod was.[13] Enmerukar was acclaimed to be *Lugal*, literally meaning "a great man" (or large man), which was the title of a king[14]—again, just as Nimrod was a large and a great man/king. The original spelling for Nimrod would have been *Nmr* in Hebrew, while *Nimru* in Akkadin also meant "hunter."[15] Both variants are strikingly similar to Enmeru, and they are likely the same appellation.

We know from the Bible that the Master Mason Nimrod rebuilt Erech, the city of Uruk, after the flood. We also know from secular records that Meskiagkasher originally reestablished Uruk circa 2800–3000 B.C.E.[16] Akkadian records state that Enmerukar expanded the antediluvian city of Uruk/Unug-Ki.[17] According to Rohl, Enmerukar (Nimrod) inherited the kingship and throne of Uruk from his father, Meskiagkasher (Cush), and became the first postdiluvian Priest King (Fisher King), whom the pharaohs, Merovingians, Grail kings, and Rex Deus then modeled themselves after. The Fisher King Enmerukar subsequently proclaimed as one of his first acts the adoption of the goddess Inanna as the partner deity to Enki (Satan). As you may guess, she was the mountain goddess, the great Mother (Earth) goddess, Ninkhursag,[18] when Enmerukar (unaccountably) reestablished Enoch's mysticism in Chaldea after Babel.

Finally, the great Enmerukar was recorded in Akkadian lore as the king who ordered a ziggurat built at the holy island of Eridu, in direct opposition to Enlil/Adonai, thereby locating the Tower of Babel at Eridu, the original *Nun Ki*, and not Babylon, as is commonly concluded. Babylon did not enjoy a ziggurat, according to Rohl, at this time. Moreover, Babylon represented a much older location that had existed before (pre-flood), which allegorized the Tower of Nun Ki, meaning "the mighty place on earth." Rohl believes this place was later named Babel in an allegorical play, from the Akkadian word *Bab-Ilu*, meaning "gate of the gods," and the Hebrew word *Balal*, meaning "to confuse."[19]

Eridu was the antediluvian city built by Enoch/Uanna and named after Enoch the Evil's son Irad; this was the city of Enoch/Uanna where the high priest of Enki/Satan originally dedicated a shrine to Enki[20] (Satan), the rival of Enlil/Adonai/God. Eridu was the legendary city where kingship first descended from heaven, marking the division between the old world of hunters and gatherers and the new world of civilization[21] for the people of day six. Nimrod/Enmerukar, then, defiantly rebuilt the two cities of the Evil Enoch as part of his renaissance rebellion against God. Nimrod rebuilt Eridu/ Irad as Babylon and later rebuilt Uruk/Enoch/Hanoch after Babel.

According to the Sumerian epic *Enmerukar and the Lord of Aratta*, Enmerukar/Nimrod wanted to build for Enki/Satan a shrine like a holy mountain (Mount Hermon), but *Ninurta's Pride and Punishment*, another Sumerian epic, reveals that Enlil/Adonai thwarted Enmerukar/Nimrod/ Ninurta's pride for doing this. Enlil/Adonai then changed the speech of humankind, which had been one, just as the Bible recorded at Babel. This was mankind's first postdiluvian endeavor to create an artificial mountain, to bring the gods back to earth from heaven to worship once more, as well as to reestablish the new House of Heaven assembly (Nippur).[22] The new Nippur was the place where kingship would once more be awarded from heaven, reinstating Nephilim and their Nephilim bloodlines, the renaissance Ring Lords. Nimru and Enmeru were simply variants for Nimrod the Hunter, the second king of postdiluvian Uruk.

As you will recall, Nimrod was the first mortal to hold universal sway, possessing the power of the messiah, the Royal Musis/Mu-Hus/Moses. Nimrod's complete, false messianic bloodline of the Dragon then married into the surviving Nephilim. Remember, Nimrod reintroduced the abomination of drinking blood to his subjects,[23] again cementing Nimrod's reign as the postdiluvian genesis to the antediluvian Dragon Cult of giant demigods and Enochian mysticism.

The first king after the flood and after Utnapishtim, according to the Sumerian King List, was Meskiagkasher,[24] the king who resettled Uruk before Enmerukar. Is Kash from Meskiagkasher actually Cush or Kush, the father of Nimrod,[25] as suggested by Rohl? Certainly the Sumerian King List recorded Meskiagkasher migrating on the sea to a land of mountains, just as the Bible recorded Cush as doing so. Meskiagkasher's brother was thought to be none other than the leader of the ancient falcon tribe of Egypt, the descendants of Horus, known as "The Far Distant." This mysterious Horus-king of Egypt was none other than Mizraim, son of Ham, and brother to Cush.[26] Therefore, according to Sumerian legend, Meskiagkasher must have been Cush, the brother of Mizraim, and the son of Ham/Utnapishtim.

"Mizraim" appears to be more of an epithet than a name: *M-asr* translates "from the Egyptian" *m* and "followers of Asra, or Asar (Asr)," and its plural suffix (*im*) forms: "as the followers of Asar."[27] Again, according to Rohl and Sitchin, the followers of Asar were, in fact, the followers of Osiris[28] and the followers of Horus, all the time remembering Hermes was the adviser to Osiris, meaning that Hermes was then an adviser to the figurative Mizraim/ Horus and Ham/Osiris after Babel and in Egypt. Thus, Rohl wrote the name for the land of the Pharaohs derived from an epithet for its leader, which leads us back to Sumeria, because Utnapishtim was the great ancestor and first of the order of the Horus kings of the god Atum.[29]

In Mesopotamian mythology, Asar/Osiris was the son of Enki, also chronicled as Marduk in the Babylonian pantheon and likely also Asshur of the Assyrians. Rohl also notes Asshur held the cultic sun-disc symbolism, Ahura Mazda, a god worshipped by the Zoroastrians, while Horus was descended from Asar/Osiris/Ham/Utnapishtim, just as Egyptians still call him Mizraim (El-Masri).[30] Therefore, in Theosophical mythology, was Utnapishtim actually the Sumerian Ham and the hero king of the great flood? Both Ham and Utnapishtim survived the flood. Was this a revisionist Ham, the one known alternatively in various cultures as the new, figurative Osiris?

The Hamite coat of arms was thought to incorporate a dragon, according to Gardner. Even more disturbing, Ham, in spurious history, was designated archon/ruler of the tenth age of Capricorn, just as Lucifer was the great goat of Capricornus, and Ham's symbol was an alleged inverted pentagram of the goat of Mendes, the infamous Azazel of the fallen angels.[31] Adding to all this infamy, the zodiacal goat was evidently first introduced into Egypt by Pharaoh Raneb, the grandson of Nimrod, in 2800 B.C.E., to the city of Mendes. Therefore Khem of alchemy and Rosicrucianism is referred to as the Khem of Mendes, whose emblem was the inverted pentagram.[32] Khem was further allegorized into the story of Ham's Dragon appellation.

Ham was further credited with being the founder of the Persian succession of kings emanating from Sumeria and Chaldea. Ham's name from this succession was Chem-Zarathrustra,[33] the ancient, original religion of the Essenes, alchemy, Manichaeism, Bogomilism Gnosticism, Freemasonry, the Templars, and Rosicrucianism. This unexpectedly ties Ham to the sun disc cult of Ahura Mazda and Osiris/Asar of the followers of Horus and to Avestan Zoroastrianism passed down from the unaccounted-for Indo-European Aryans/Nephilim.

The dissonant bombshell, however, is that pantheists believe Nimrod; his father, Cush; and his father, Ham, along with Japheth, did not descend from Noah but rather from Tubal-Cain, Lamech, and Cain and that they represented the true postdiluvian Grail or Dragon kingship.[34] They then passed down this Grail/Dragon kingship to the pharaohs of Egypt and Babylon, then to the Royal House of David, and finally to Rex Deus. This thereby separated Ham and Japheth from the Noahic succession of the postdiluvian epoch, just as Scythian, Dragon, Celtic, and British legends have suggested, which we have already covered. What likely happened was Nimrod and his descendants later fused Noah's descendants with the Nephilim scourge that also survived the flood once they cohabitated with the Nephilim and intermarried with them. The mongrel progeny then overlaid a pantheistic mythos over the biblical and Noah accounts, creating a fused and revisionist historical mutant.

In this warped genealogy assembled by Gardner, Ham descended from Cain's royal succession of priests. Cain (but more likely Enoch) was the originating founder of the Magian priests called Zarathustra, also recognized as Zoroaster,[35] who Ham was also equated with in the postdiluvian, Persian succession of kings. Note, too, Zoroaster was symbolized also by the sun disc (of Enoch), just as Ham and Mizraim carried the sun disc to Egypt under the banner of Horus. Remember, as well, that Gnosticism attributes the source for their global religion (through the Essenes and Mandaeans) to ancient Zoroastrianism[36] and Enoch, who originally founded Zoroastrianism.

Ham's brother, Japheth, was recorded as Iapetus in Greek mythology, the founder of Greeks. He is mythologized as descending from Tubal-Cain, Lamech, and Cain.[37] Scriptural descendants of Magog and Gog settled Scythia after the deluge, understanding that Magog was the son of Japheth (Gen. 10:2). Also note that *Gog*, as you will recall, translates as "giant," which suggests Japheth's rebellious sons accepted the names of giants after settling among them.

This disenfranchised house of Saul from the tribe of Benjamin obviously intended to rekindle their coveted royal bloodline back to legitimacy through the binding of their house through marriage with a parallel Dragon bloodline descending from Japheth/Magog (giants) on at least two occasions in antiquity. The Benjamites then exported this reincarnated legitimacy to the royal houses of the Sicambrium Franks, who, in turn, intermarried with the royal houses of France.

The Japheth/Magog Dragon strain additionally intermarried with Scota, daughter of Moses/Akenhaten, who exported that particular branch of the Dragon lineage to Ireland, along with the Nimrod/Ham strain, where they, too, intermingled with Temar of the House of David, the house that established the Celtic Fairy/Dragon Court of Ireland, Scotland, and Britain. The Japheth/Magog Dragon bloodlines further intermarried with the Tuatha Denaan and Fairy bloodlines of Ireland, Europe, and Scandinavia. And let us not forget the Sarmatian/Scythian intervention into the Briton Royal Courts that significantly reinforced the Dragon inheritance. Finally, all these particular Celtic bloodlines eventually intermarried with the Merovingian dynasty through Faramund, which already held both the Benjamite (Mary Magdalene and Sicambrium Franks from Scythia) and House of Jesus

(David) Dragon bloodlines that all were later reunified in the House of Unicorn, the Stuarts.

CHAPTER 89

HAM AND JAPHETH

This is the account of Shem, Ham and Japheth, Noah’s sons, who themselves had sons after the flood. The sons of Japheth: Gomer, Magog, Madai, Javan, Tubal, Meschech and Tiras. The sons of Gomer: Ashkenaz, Riphath and Togarmah. The sons of Javan: Elishah, Tarshish, the Kittim and Rodanim.

—Genesis 10:1–4 (also see 1 Chronicles 1:5–7)

Why is there significance to the spurious forces’ belief that only Shem was the true son of Noah? And why is it necessary for spurious forces to slander biblical authors as fabricating the notion that Japheth and Ham descended from Noah?

Another Theosophist theory declares Noah was a fictional name invented by supposed biblical revisionist writers. The Gnostic perspective believes Noah was actually a Nephilim, one of the many giants who somehow survived the flood.

Remember, Anunnaki in the Order of Utnapishtim/Ham of the *Epic of Gilgamesh* were the original survivors of the deluge, which is the preferred assertion by secular scholars with regard to ancient lore. As these so-called secular scholars postulate, Hebrew writers adopted their heritage from the Sumerian version in an attempt to legitimize their obviously corrupted and inferior religion, heritage, and race.

Remember also that the fifteenth-century C.E. monk Annius Viterbo asserted Noah, Japheth, Ham, and Shem were all giants, including the sons of Japheth—Gog, Magog, Javan, Tubal, Meshech, Madai, Tiras, and Gomer. One wonders why Scripture does not list the sons of Magog, Madai, Tubal, Meschech, and Tiras. Scripture only lists the sons of Javan and Gomer. This is congruent with the deletion in Scripture of Cush's sons and descendants. One wonders whether or not the descendants who cohabitated with giants were purposely eliminated from Scripture as punishment for their crimes. Nimrod's descendants were also deleted from the Table of Nations.

This polytheist propaganda is designed to isolate Noah and Shem as illegitimate heirs to the Royal Messianic bloodline descending from Adam, Seth, and the ecclesiastical Enoch by writing off Noah to fiction or to a falsified identity as a Nephilim. Secondly, this line of revisionist history endeavors to posthumously legitimize Japheth's and Ham's lineages back to Cain, likely through Utnapishtim/Ham and through Japheth/Iapetus.

In addition, Gnostics believe dissonantly that Kham (Ham, the Khem of Mendes) did not descend from Noah but was, in reality, a descendant of Cain,[1] according to the gospels of St. Epiphanius. Additionally, Kham was somehow secretly introduced into the ark, as this belief goes, as a secret posterity of angels. Kham consequently belonged to the Other Race,[2] the Gnostic Sethites, and the second race of Nephilim fathered by the fallen angels. Kham was secretly added to the ark by fallen angels to preserve the wicked people created by fallen angels.[3] All this is eerily congruent with what we learned previously with regard to Ham's curse for looking upon Noah's shame and with Ham being the forefather of the deformed giants, identified as Formorians, in spurious lore.

On the other hand, what is probable, just as other Gnostic gospels record, is that the rebellious descendants of Ham and Japheth, the authentic seed of Adam, Seth, and Noah, traveled to dwell among Those People[4] (Nephilim), where they rebelled against God once more.[5] They sojourned to both live in Scythia and the Land of the Covenant in the districts of Sodom, Gomorrah, and the cities of the plain,[6] just as the Gnostic gospels recorded Sodom and Gomorrah were ancient cities of light and knowledge, the first homes of the postdiluvian Nephilim. The descendants of Ham and Japheth were, indeed, the reprobate descendants of Nephilim and giants because they callously intermarried with postdiluvian giants after Babel and thereby proliferated the Dragon bloodline.

The perplexing Gnostic theory that Ham and Japheth were Nephilim originates within two main Gnostic sects known as the Sethians and the Caini, according to St. Epiphanius.[7] Seth, the foreigner (giant), was carried away both spiritually and bodily so that Sabaoth and other authorities could not prevail over him or murder him,[8] likely via the deluge. From that point forward, Seth no longer served the craftsman (Ialdoboth/Adonai) but acknowledged the parent god from which polytheistic legends originate. Seth then revealed many things, illicit knowledge from heaven and the Seven Sacred Sciences that discredited Ialdoboth and his angels.[9]

Just as in most other examples, these audacious claims sound legitimate, with the Judeo-Christian records continually labeled as corrupted, biased versions. But further examination reveals the pantheistic corruptions and further testifies to the legitimacy of Scripture.

In this case, Seth of the Gnostics is not the same righteous and pious Seth, the biblical son of Adam. Gnostics believe in the Emmakha Seth,[10] the founder of the Gnostic race, the living and Immoveable Race.[11] This Seth was the unexplained Gnostic being created in the likeness of the angel Adamas by Autogenes to create a (serpentine) race to somehow ascend above lower-ranked angels.[12] Emmakha Seth was likely a descendant of Cain and a Nephilim. Thus, Gnostic sects of Seth and Caini were both the founders and originating schools of Gnostic wisdom (Zoroastrianism and Enochianism).

Similarly, the giant Japheth, son of Noah or Tubal-Cain, has a similar, disturbing misdirection in polytheist chronology. The Japheth Theosophists refer to as a giant is not the Japheth who was the son of Noah. They have deliberately posthumously confused or fused the antediluvian Japetus/Iapetus with postdiluvian Japheth. Japetus/Iapetus is the giant variant of Japheth, for Japetus/Iapetus was a famous and an original antediluvian giant, a Titan who married Clymene; he was the ruler of Atlantis and father to Atlas. In fact, as you will recall, Poseidon was alternatively known as Japetus/Iapetus, the husband to Clymene and father of Atlas. Iapetus/Japetus in other legends was the offspring of Uranus and

Gaea[13] and likely was one of the original Nephilim named after a fallen angel.

Iapetus was the Titan claimed by Hesiod to be the father of Atlas, Prometheus, Nenoetius, and Epimethus. Hesiod further claimed the antediluvian Iapetus fought in the Titan rebellion and was consequently condemned to a place or prison called Tartarus,[14] along with the other rebellious Nephilim. It was from Tartarus that Nephilim likely escaped into the postdiluvian epoch, which would have included Iapetus/Japetus and Utnapishtim. This Titan Iapetus injected Titan bloodlines into the Japhethian Greeks, now renowned as Indo-European Greeks, with his heretofore unexplained refugee Aryan tribes. This is this same Iapetus/Japetus that Annius declared was the forefather to French nobility and the first king of Gaul.[15]

Greek legends, then, recorded Greeks descending from the antediluvian Iapetus/Japetus/Hellenes; whereas Scriptures record Greeks descending from Japheth/Iapeth. From this perspective, Iapetus and his Aryan brethren likely procreated with the human descendants of Japheth. Ergo, Magog, Gog, and Albion, the three giants and brothers that ruled Britain when it was populated with giants, were the posterity of Japetus, as well as the giants, Scythes, and Celtes. They would have been the fugitive giants who escaped from Tartarus in Scythia and who somehow survived the deluge, again mimicking the actual biblical genealogy of Noah and Japheth. Magog and Gog of the Bible also obviously married into the fugitive giants from Tartarus.

In fact, by utilizing this error, Annius then asserted that Noah, Ham, and Shem were all giants,[16] just as other Theosophists and mystics have done. Under this scenario, Japetus/Iapetus could have been a surviving, postdiluvian Nephilim, as well as a descendant of Tubal-Cain, just as the Theosophist Ham was likely the giant Utnapishtim of the Gilgamesh Epic. This theory is consistent with what we learned previously, that the transposed Ham/ Utnapishtim was a forefather to the giant Formorians, whom the shadowy Tuatha Denaan drove out of Ireland.

Understand, though, that these scurrilous giants were not the biblical Ham and biblical Japheth, for just as Gnostic gospels have documented Ham, Japheth, and their progeny sojourned to dwell among the giants but were not giants, they were the authentic descendants of Noah, just as the Bible recorded. They were mundane, mortal humans that were once more corrupted by Nephilim in the postdiluvian epoch and the degenerate, taciturn roots to the hybrid Antichrist bloodlines. They subsequently intermarried, and their genealogies became blurred, posthumously blended with the postdiluvian Nephilim and then altered to discredit biblical authors. It is likely the progenies of Ham, Japheth, Magog, and Gog later adopted the refugee names of giants in honor of their new demigods, just as Amalekites did later. This succinctly explicates why and how the adopted appellations of giants were recorded in Scripture—to forever mark the genesis of the bloodlines of Nephilim and the Antichrist for all the generations.

CHAPTER 90

THE BLOOD-DRINKING KINGS OF KISH

Then the Lord put a mark on Cain so that no one who found him would kill him. So Cain went from the Lord’s presence and lived in the land of Nod, east of Eden. Cain lay with his wife and she became pregnant and gave birth to Enoch. Cain was then building a city and he named it after his son Enoch. To Enoch was born Irad, and Irad was the father of Mehujael, and Mehujael was the father of Methusael, and Methusael was the father of Lamech. Lamech married two women, one named Adah and the other Zillah. Adah gave birth to Jabal; he was the father of those who live in tents and raise livestock. His brother’s name was Jubal; he was the father of all those who play the flute. Zillah also had a son, Tubal-Cain, who forged all kinds of tools out of bronze and iron. Tubal-Cain’s sister was Namaah.

—Genesis 4:15–22

The Grail/Dragon/Rex Deus bloodline traces its pedigree back to Freemasonry’s founders, to the corrupters of the Seven Sacred Sciences—back to the most notorious sources from Genesis.

As I stated earlier, polytheists steadfastly believe vitriolic followers of Adonai have unjustly maligned Cain. So, then, what is Cain’s allegedly more glorious heritage than the orthodoxy recorded in the Bible? Was Cain a saintly patriarch, as Theosophists claim, and not the ghastly source of sin biblical authors have portrayed him to be?

According to Theosophists, Cain and his descendants were maligned in the same manner in which Lucifer was slandered by the priests of Adonai. We are to understand that Cain/Qayin was not his real name; it was merely the appellation to his trade, meaning “smith, an artificer of metals of the highest.”[1] Similarly, Dr. Oliver believes *Cain* originally meant “worldly possessions” and that the true symbolism to Cain’s name has been perverted. According to generally accepted etymology, Gesenius notes the true derivative was *kin*, meaning “to forge iron,” whereby *kain* derived from “a spear or lance that was an instrument of iron and war.” “Cain” was preserved in Arabic as *Kayin* and in Aramaic as *Kinaya*, meaning “smith,” as it applies to the maker of agricultural instruments.[2] The appellation of *Qayin* and its diverse spellings are variantly supported in biblical legends, which recorded Qayin, too, as signifying “smith.”[3]

Furthermore, Cain did not kill Abel but was elevated over the mundane Abel because Cain (somehow) contained royal seed (Nephilim blood) in his bloodline and Abel did not. Hence, Abel was not murdered; the ground figuratively swallowed up Abel’s blood, for he was not of royal seed. Abel was not distinguished from his toil of the earth,[4] just as all followers of the true God are, and were, considered mundane by spurious supporters. Abel lived a normal, mundane human life, whereby the soil swallowed up his blood at his natural death. Abel was a sub-being created merely for the purpose to toil as a slave on behalf of the superior race of Cain, the primordial New Man or Aryan race, and for the gods of Cain. The result was Sumerian mankind, known by the enigmatic title The Black-Headed Ones.[5]

All this, then, provides the Theosophical context and rationalization for explaining why Cain's offering to God recorded in Genesis was unacceptable, because of Cain's kingly (godlike or semidivine) status, while Abel's offering was accepted because Abel was a subordinate being to Cain and the gods. "Qayin/Kane" was variantly believed in antiquity to have meant "king." In this alternative version, Cain acquired "dominion over the earth in king-ship,"[6] likely through his marriage into the people of day six as their new king, to whom this blessing was granted,[7] lending witness to the theory that the humans created in day six were a different variety than Adam, who was created later in Eden.[8]

In truth, whether Cain was of kingly, semidivine status or not, his status was not the reason for God's rejection of Cain's offering. Cain was neither a partner nor any kind of equal to God; this is pure nonsense. The Qur'an explains the denial of Cain's offering in a logical and truthful manner. The offering was denied simply because God does not accept offerings from those who are not mindful of His ways and His Laws.[9] It would seem clear that Cain was already a wrongdoer by this time, and his slaying of Abel only confirmed the path of evil Cain was already on. To this end, the *Q* in *Qayin* represents the moon's golden essence metaphysically (Star Fire or blood drank by Nephilim out of golden chalices), while *Ayin* represented the All-Seeing Eye,[10] which represents Lucifer in Freemasonry and Theosophy.

Cain's Sumerian name was recorded by the Sumerian King's List as King Kish of Masda and successor to Atabba, the Adama. Under Cain's alternative titles of "Masda" and "Mazdao," Gardner writes that Cain was celebrated as the ancestral forbearer of the Magian spiritual master Zarathrustra,[11] the predecessor of Ham. This was reflected in the variant of *Ahura-Mazda*, the followers of Asar (Osiris) and Horus of Egypt that later spawned the cult of Ormuz or Ormus that became the Alexandrian organization known as the sages of light, which, in turn, formed the basis for the Essene/Priory of Sion Order of the Red Cross and the Templars. The Templars were initiated into the Ormus Rosy Cross Masons of the East Order in 1188, at the Gisor and the Cutting of the Elm ceremony. Ormus had previously united the Rosy Cross Order with Essene secret societies.[12]

Masda translated from ancient Sumerian as "one that prostrates himself [not coincidently] as a serpent." Additionally, Cain/Masda, the son of

Adama, retained as his Sumerian appellation *Ar-Wi-Um*, which was closely related to the Hebrew word *awim*, or "serpent."[13] Qayin/Cain was listed in the Kings of Kish list with the title Ar-iwi-um,[14] for he was the first worshipper of the dark seraphim angels, the first Masda, all to spite the true God. This implies that Cain was a king sponsored by seraphim angels, while his dynastic kingship popularized its ancestral heritage with serpent and Dragon allegories of royalty that have survived to this day. All things continually lead back to serpents, dragons, fairies, Nephilim, and fallen angels.

Adding to this, the Persian tradition of Enki/Samael was called *Ohrmazd*, meaning "serpent of the night."[15] Ohrmazd was another name for the high god of Zarathustra, the Persian god Ahura Mazda,[16] the high god of Ham and Cain, from whence they adopted their cultic titles, again linking everything. This additionally identifies Zoroastrianism as an antediluvian religion, likely a branch of Enochian mysticism and Atlantean mysticism transplanted into the postdiluvian epoch by Indo-European Aryans, the Scythians and surviving Titans.

The Mark of Cain,[17] which Cain received after murdering Abel, was not a sevenfold curse but a sevenfold blessing in this pantheistic version. The infamous mark was mythologized to have been a serpent incurved into a circle with a red cross in the center, which symbolized and immortalized Cain's allegiance to Satan and the fallen seraphim angels. This was a graphic sign of rebellion and (seraphim-sponsored) kingship, known in Hebrew as *malkhut*, or "kingdom," while in Akkadian it was known as *malkhu* or "sovereign."[18]

The Mark of Cain was famous as the sign of kingship among the people of day six, a sign of pedigree, and the unexplained seal of protection for Cain from those people. It is always the sign or the mark of spurious religions and organizations such as the Rosicrucians and the ultimate symbol for allegiance to fallen angels, the Dragon Court, and the perpetual Genesis 6 Conspiracy.

Gardner believes Cainite kings were the first Pendragons of the messianic bloodline. The authentic Cainite dynastic lineage was actually the Sumerian King List, renowned as the antediluvian Rosi Crucis. Now, the Mark of Cain, the Rosi Crucis, the serpent incurved into a circle surrounding a red cross, is, and was, the authenticating mark for the holy bloodline of the Holy Grail, that of Rex Deus, and the sign of the Dragon

Court.[19] The Rosi Crucis is the sign of all such associated and genitive groups and organizations and the covenant mark of rebellion.

Cainite kings drank Star Fire to make them masters of knowledge, increase their stamina, and boost their immune systems.[20] Star Fire was also avowed to increase the powers of awareness, perception, and general intuition, in a process referred to in fairy lore as the "Quickening."[21] The Quickening tradition has been kept alive in contemporary culture through such avenues as television and Hollywood, with the *Highlander* fictions glorifying a New Man that is immortal. The *Highlander* series did not dramatize the immortals (fairies) as drinking the blood of their victims during the Quickening, but this ideal was allegorized through lightening and electricity transferring the life force of the victim to the conquering hero, thus enhancing his immortality. The lightening, electrical, or energy transfer of the human life forces is a common Star Fire allegory employed in horror and science fiction literature.

Star Fire was a concoction based in blood and, in particular, menstrual blood, figuratively representing the divine menstrual blood of the womb,[22] dating back to Mount Hermon in the belief that it would provide them some form of immortality. Likely, this perverted tradition was adopted after God removed the immortal spirit from all beings of flesh, including Nephilim, in Genesis 6. Star Fire was considered a noble supplement to the royal bloodline, which they called alternatively the Lunar Essence of the Dragon queen. It was a menstrual extract from the Anunnaki goddess[23] and the Q symbolism from *Qayin*, Cain's alternative spelling to his name. Star Fire was variantly recorded to be the Golden Essence of the Moon, linking the lunar cycle and menstruation in its allegory. Star Fire, Menstruum of the Gods, the Golden Essences, and Elixirs of immortality are all metaphors kept alive in Rosicrucianism and alchemy symbols. Nephilim began to drink blood, according to Jewish legend, in a vain attempt to regain their immortality when they turned against humanity.[24] Let it be understood that any literature or anything related to the consumption of blood in any form is Enochian mysticism from the antediluvian Nephilim and Dragon Court.

The lunar cycle and menstrual cycle were in some way interconnected in the ancient, cultic perversion of pantheists.

> Why did you leave lofty, holy heaven to sleep with women, to defile yourselves with the daughters of men and take them as your wives, and like the children of the earth to beget sons, in your case giants? Though you were holy and spiritual, living the eternal life, you

> defiled yourself with the blood of women, and like others you have lusted after flesh and blood as those who die and perish.[25]

This lunar menstrual cycle could shed some light on the city of Jericho, for it, too, was unaccountably remembered as the City of the Moon and the City of Thoth (Enoch the Evil), and it dates back 10,000 years. Perhaps Jericho was home to the menstrual blood-drinking cult of the Nephilim. Perhaps this, too, was why God separated Jericho for special destruction.

The immortality obtained through the consumption of Star Fire blood was the very same perverted inspiration for Brahm Stroker's creation *Dracula*. Interestingly enough, Brahm Stroker's vampire relationship to Dragon lore is cemented in its title, understanding that Dracula derives from *Draco*, the Roman form for "dragon." Similarly, dragon slayers were known in lore to drink the blood of a slain dragon to gain its supernatural powers,[26] for winged serpents are angelic metaphors and immortal Nephilim. Such strange traditions of blood, gold, and Star Fire echoed covertly throughout the Dragon generations surface in all kinds of allegorical rituals, literature, and lore.

Howard Reid notes the Grail-gold-blood-wine motif is superficial Christian gloss on a much older tradition and that the Grail, although not normally associated with skulls, is golden and constantly associated with blood and wine.[27] The Christian gloss was to hide the Celtic, Druidic, and Scythian/Sarmatian heritage of the blood cult of the serpent. Sarmatian blood consumption rituals from chalices and cauldrons appear to be dissonant reflections from their Atlantean heritage. The Holy Grail and the Holy Blood of Jesus are not Christian mythology but rather a Sarmatian Dragon and Gnostic doctrine overlaying a Christian veneer on its Dragon core.

It is time to connect the Cainites to the Nephilim. Shockingly, and without explanation, biblical legends do record some Cainites were giants,[28] for Lamech, father of Namaah, was a giant![29] Sixth generation Lamech was a burly, blind giant who, in legends, hunted with the help of his son Tubal-Cain. It was on one of these hunting trips with Tubal-Cain that Lamech accidentally shot and killed Cain with an arrow in the seventh generation.[30] It is in this line of thought when Lamech laments: "I have killed a man for wounding me, a young man for injuring me. If Cain is avenged seven times, then Lamech seventy-seven times" (Gen. 4:23–24). Biblical legends do not recant this famous quote as a lament but rather

Lamech savagely bragging about killing a man,[31] specifically Cain, and that his punishment should therefore be eleven times that of Cain.

Obviously, then, all the direct descendants of Cain subsequently interbred with giants, which produced the semidivine Cainite giants/kings. Cainite descendants seem to have been recorded in other cultures as royalty, in direct contrast to the Hebrew, biblical records describing Cainites as villainous. Remember, it was after this sixth generation that the united Cainite/Sethite peoples began to claim royal pedigree.[32]

The ancient city of Akkad kept a record of ancient kings, including the antediluvian and postdiluvian kings. This list was renowned as the Kings of Kish. They were known alternatively as the Kings of Cain in the antediluvian epoch, where Cain was known alternatively as Kish. After the flood, men claimed the right to rule for the first time by the right of bloodlines. This was the beginning of the aristocracy rooted in bloodlines (Nephilim)—a class born to rule[33] over the balance of the mundane humans. Therefore, Ham, son of Tubal-Cain and father of Cush, was regarded as the founder of the postdiluvian Persian succession of the cult that descended from the Royal Magian Priests of Zarathustra founded by Cain.

Cain and his progeny were the antediluvian Sumerian kings of Kish. All were considered Nephilim and semidivine. But how could this be when Nephilim did not arrive until the sixth generation?

CHAPTER 91

THE ANTEDILUVIAN DRAGON COURT

Then the Lord put a mark on Cain so that no one who found him would kill him. So Cain went out from the Lord’s presence and lived in the land in the land of Nod, east of Eden.

—Genesis 4:15–16

Postdiluvian kingship began with Nimrod and his descendants, the pharaohs of Egypt, and the kings of Babylon and Akkad, but this human kingship failed and was terminated.[1]

What happened after kingship reverted back to the Nephilim, witnessed by the Sumerian King’s List?[2] Just as in the antediluvian epoch, the Nephilim/Anunnaki seized kingship and power over the earth to maintain control over humans.[3] The giants ensured they intermarried with all the early human, postdiluvian kingships of Nimrod they did not already rule over. This ensured Dragon blood would be inserted into all the nations and royal bloodlines of the earth, save the future Israelites, who did not accept kingship until the reign of Saul and David. It is for this reason that Rex Deus desperately endeavors to graft its bloodlines into the only kingship that is pure of Nephilim blood, the Davidic inheritance, and the Messianic inheritance of Jesus.

This Dragon doctrine of subjugation against mundane, mortal humans is, and was, always the same, just as it resurfaced in World War II under the Nazis. Unless humanoids possess Dragon blood, they are perpetually considered inferior and subordinate beings by the posterity of giants, useful only for servants and slaves to do mundane toil for their superior brethren of Dragon status. It will be this way again in the tribulation period.

Postdiluvian, patriarchal kingship outside of Sethian lineage, through Noah and then Shem, was once more contaminated with Nephilim/Anunnaki blood. This runaway messianic bloodline was elevated from its corrupt beginnings to reflect a new regal glow, celebrated as the Dragon Court and the bloodlines we know today as the Rex Deus and Grail bloodlines. These were the royal bloodlines of Egypt that survived through Akenhaten, Scota, and Smenkhare, which pantheists have endeavored to cleverly intermingle with the true Messianic bloodline of Adam, Noah, Abraham, David, and Jesus. These are the bloodlines of the evil Dragon potentates of history that will plague our future with world government in the end times.

The second surviving list of Sumerian kings, the Larsa List of Kings,[4] names ten kings that reigned before the flood, all who were Nephilim/Anunnaki.[5] The list is also famous as the Sumerian King's List containing great hero figures of old, including Utnapishtim, the Akkadian hero of the flood.[6] The Larsa List of Sumerian Kings tablet is displayed prominently in the Ashmolean Museum at Oxford.[7] The second last name on the second list of Larsa is Ubara-Tut of Shuruppak, and the next name after him is Ziusudra, another name for Utnapishtim from the *Gilgamesh Epic*.[8] Ziusudra was listed as a Sumerian Anunnaki king when the flood struck,[9] the king who was the biblical Ham in Theosophist revisionist history

Cain's sons Enoch/Henokh and Atun (although Genesis does not record Atun) were also antediluvian kings in Kish[10] in Theosophical history. Atun succeeded his father as King Etana, according to Sumerian records,[11] while Enoch the Evil was the seventh king on the Larsa List, according to Knight and Lomas,[12] and confirmed by the *Encyclopedia Americana*, citing Enoch as Berosus's Enmeduranki.[13] Seemingly, some Cainites became Nephilim kings, while some became priests of mysticism.

To some, the ancient, antediluvian city of Ur, home of Abraham, was the city Cain built and named after his firstborn, Enoch[14] the Evil, and that this was the city the Anderson Legend recorded when Cain first applied the fifth Sacred Science of geometry in building. This conclusion follows from an understanding that *Ur* is transcribed logographicly as *Uru. Unuki* in ancient Sumerian, then shortened to *Urum* in Akkadian, and then simply to *Uru/Ur* in Semitic Hebrew. *Ur* translates as “city” in Hebrew, therefore Uru. Unuki might be interpreted as city of Unuki. Understand, as well, that the city of Gilgamesh, and Enmerukar/Nimrod, was Uruk, as it appeared in the Akkadian literature, but the Sumerian translation is Unuk, or Unug, for Uruk.[15] Uruk, according to Sitchin, was originally named Unug-Ki by the Sumerians, the city of Inanna/Ishtar.[16] Along this line of thought, Rohl believes Unuk/Unug/Unuki was the Sumerian variant spelling of “Enoch,” providing an amalgamated translation: “city of Enoch.”[17]

The ancient Hebrew spelling for Enoch was *Hanok*, which Rohl believes was the Babylonian city recorded biblically as *Erech* (*Uruk*) and the Sumerian variant *Unuk*.[18] Remember, Cain built this city and sixty others, all designed for war, with large walls, just as the ancient city of Uruk was known for its large walls and as Jericho was famous for its large walls. Remember as well that Enoch/Thoth was a well-known moon god.[19] Was the antediluvian city of Enoch the city of Thoth, the city of blood consumption and therefore the moon city of Jericho that God instructed Joshua to separate for a special destruction? Maybe so, maybe not. But drop the *o* from Jericho, and then pronounce the *J* as a *Y*, and you arrive phonetically at *Erech*, in the same manner that Erech is the biblical variant to Uruk.[20]

Consider this: *Unuki* could be the variant of *Anunnaki* (Nephilim), with Anu being Akkadian for the god at the head of their pantheon, meaning “father,” and Sumerian as the god *An*, conjoined to *Nnaki*, meaning “sons.”[21] TThe ancient city of Ur variantly known as Uruk/Unuk/Unug-Ki, then, could alternatively have been the city of Nephilim, the city of the sons of god (Anu), or the city of the sons of Enoch (recorded biblically as Erech for the Babylonian Uruk). Either way, the transliteration to Ur/Uruk/Unuk/Unug-Ki and Enoch/Hanok/Erech/Uruk leads to the same end whereby God held Jericho, (J)Erech(o) accountable for a special judgment for likely post diluvium and antediluvian sins. Likely, then, Uruk/Ur/Unug was indeed the antediluvian city of Enoch, Thoth, the moon, and Nephilim, which somehow later evolved into Jericho. Certainly, one concludes Jericho and Uruk are inexplicably related.

All this comes together when one considers the antediluvian city of Ur was the home to the Temple of the Moon and the moon cult, just as Jericho was. Uruk was the same city where Enmerukar reintroduced the cult of the Sumerian goddess Inanna/Ishtar. Ur was further known as the City of Palms that Sarah is connected to through the antediluvian palm metaphor from the matriarchal Dragon Court, and Ur is the city where the Sumerian moon goddess, Innana/Ishtar, dwelled. Curiously, Ur is the postdiluvian city Abraham and Sarah originally lived in before fleeing to Canaan[22] and away from Nimrod. Finally, understand that Jericho, as per the Bible, was identified as the City of Palms![23] Theosophists have dishonestly employed Sarah's figurative relationships to abduct her as a matriarchal Dragon queen descending from the Palm and Moon City.

Tubal-Cain was alternatively listed as King Mes-Kalem-Dug[24] in the Sumerian King's List. Remember, too, Tubal-Cain was recorded in legends as exceeding all men in strength; he excelled in the martial arts. Tubal-Cain was indeed like a Nephilim or was an interbred Nephilim. The Nephilim King Lists of Sumeria, then, were merely Rex Deus and Dragon Court chronologies designed to underscore the unexplained, perverted partnership between the Cainites and the Nephilim in their pursuit of seizing absolute control over the earth. Cainites endeavored to steal God's blessing away from the righteous Adamites of the branch of Seth, all through the creation of a parallel, royal, dynastic lineage rooted in the agenda of fallen angels and Satan, the originating Genesis 6 Conspiracy.

The ancient city of *Badtibira*, one of the cities that kingship in Sumerian lore was handed down to from heaven,[25] translates as "Settlement of the Metal Worker."[26] Badtibira, according to Sitchin, was Ninurta's city for refining gold.[27] Dropping the redundant vowels from Tubal carries us back to the original consonant spelling of ancient Semitic Hebrew, leaving us with *TBL*, while a soft *L* in antiquity can also be substituted for an *R*, thus providing *TBR*, and a possible root for the ancient city of Tibira or Badtibira.[28] *Nelson's* defines *Cain* as "metal worker," thus underscoring this deduction. Cain was taken to Badtibira by the gods in Sumerian mythology, where he was taught the skills to forge implements for farming. Cain was later expelled from Badtibira after the death of Abel, and Cain wandered the earth.[29]

Kingship was originally a joint enterprise sponsored by Cainite descendants and their Nephilim partners before the flood and by Cainite wannabes who partnered with Nephilim after the flood. I also believe that descendants of Cain survived the flood. I also believe descendants of Noah became corrupted by postdiluvian Nephilim and pledged partnership with them to rekindle the antediluvian monarchy and government by assuming the adopted, counterfeit heritage from Tubal-Cain and discarding their true heritage from Noah. However, I do recognize that some of the surviving giants were related to and were descendants of Cain and Tubal-Cain. They then brought with them their originating and previously unexplained, antediluvian Dragon bloodline, which intermarried with the posterity of Ham and Japheth, which gave them a manipulated, indirect form of genealogy dating back to Cain and Tubal-Cain.

I believe Nephilim survived the flood in a similar manner recorded in Sumerian legends, such as the *Epic of Gilgamesh*, and in the legend of the Atlantean Titans from Tartarus, simply because the Bible states that Nephilim did survive (Gen. 6:4). Even though Nimrod endeavored to rule the postdiluvian world as a king, worshipping Satan and the fallen angels, the notion he was of royal Cainite and Nephilim blood is inaccurate. He was not the son of Ninlil and Enlil, as Theosophy would suggest, but he likely married into Nephilim royal families as part of his Nephilim alliance with the Sodom and Gomorrah regions. Sodom and Gomorrah later rebelled against this alliance and against the descendants of Nimrod, the Assyrians, with the War of Four Kings Against Five.

Nimrod was merely a Cainite wannabe and nothing more; otherwise, he, Ham, and Japheth would not have been listed in biblical genealogies as descendants of Noah. This, then, is likely why Nimrod’s, Magog’s, and Gog’s descendants were omitted from Genesis and 1 Chronicles, because they married and then produced royal Nephilim as their progeny, the genesis to the postdiluvian Dragon Court of Scythia, Babylonia, and Egypt.

I leave open the possibility that surviving Nephilim chose similar names to Noah’s progeny, just as Cainites of the antediluvian epoch changed their names to that of the Sethites, or vice versa. An excellent and extraordinary example of this was the giant Iapetus/Japetus, who chose a name so very close to Iapeth/Japheth, son of Noah, or vice versa. If so, these could have been the ancestors Nimrod, Hermes, Ham, and Mizraim adopted as their historical family and then justified later as to their descendency from the antediluvians.

Blending the Cainite partnership back into the fold, understand the Royal Dragon/Grail/Rex Deus bloodline was rooted in royal lineages directly traceable to their spurious, antediluvian cofounders, the gods/Anunnaki/ Nephilim/Cainites that are active to this day, according to Marrs.[30] Lady/ Mother Earth, Ninkhursag (Gaea, Isis, daughters of Cain), was the matriarchal source and mother to the mighty men of old, just as Genesis 6 states dark angels copulated with the daughters of men. In this sense, these females were referred to with the title of the "Dragon queen of Life."[31]

Ninkhursag inherited this title from her mother, Ki, The Dragon queen of the Earth, who inherited her title from her mother, Kishar, the Dragon queen, who ultimately inherited her title from the infamous Tiamet, the Dragon queen of the Anunnaki gods.[32] It is with Tiamet that the origin of the Dragon queens is thought to have originated,[33] for it was Tiamet, the female Leviathan, the angel of the sea, who rebelled at the Creation of the earth. Thus, "Mother Earth" is figurative for Tiamet and the female Leviathan and, of course, primordial rebellion.

From the patriarchal perspective, the mighty men of Sumerian lore that formed the Ring of Kingship and government were all anointed into antediluvian kingship that descended to the earth from the fallen angels.[34] The mythical rings of the Ring tradition date back to 4000 B.C.E. as the primary device of the Anunnaki gods, who originally established earthly kingship. To this end, the great Sumerian god Anu first held the title "Lord of the Rings."[35] The Theosophist holy bloodline, the Dragon Court, the Ring and fairy culture, is (allegedly) traceable to Nephilim bloodlines and is supported as such by Rex Deus and Theosophist chronologists. The Genesis 6 conspiracy is not designed specifically, but rather more by coincidence, to place an alleged descendant of Jesus on Jesus' rightful throne.

Fairy culture was merely allegorical innovation, encoded history chronicling the matriarchal predicament of the alleged true royal family of the Ring Lords. Fairies and elves were exiled in a seemingly Otherworld/Netherworld existence, known in Grail lore as King Arthur's Annwyn and likely the Greek Tartarus. Fairies are the exiled Shining Ones, whose postdiluvian royal bloodline began with the Royal Scythian

Anunnaki, the original Ring Lords.[36] The fact that conspirators have a diabolical genealogy that includes Jesus is merely icing on the cake for the conspiracy.

Remember, the first Mesopotamian kings claimed to be Cainite kings, the first Pendragons of the messianic bloodline. Furthermore, Anunnaki hierarchs of the great Anunnaki Council were known as "Great Dragons." The holy crocodile of Egypt, Draco, was the messianic Dragon of kingship, from whence the Pendragons of British Celtic kingship derived. And the Sumerian words *usumgal* and *mus-usumgal*, meaning "serpent/dragon," were unexplained metaphors in praise of gods and kings.[37] At the end of the day, all Theosophist kingship allegories connect back to serpents/dragons rooted in Nephilim/Cainite kingships of the Ring Lord tradition.

When I stated earlier that I did not necessarily believe that physical Nephilim/giants would rule once again on the earth, I was more or less deferring to the notion that I believe blood-related descendants of Nephilim will indeed gain the world throne but not necessarily as giants. In reality, there is nothing to stop gene manipulation to enhance these Dragon descendants' size and strength, nor is there anything to prevent more fallen angels from copulating with willing mortals to start a new, illicit race of giants. Remember, the impassioned fallen angels from epochs past will once more be released from the Abyss in the last seven years of this age.

The alleged legitimacy for the modern Court of the Dragon will be most convincing; it will deceive the elect, if that is possible.[38] However, spurious forces will not stop merely with their case for legitimacy through their documented dynastic inheritance dating back to the pantheon of gods, Nephilim, and the Cainite antediluvian kingship. To completely legitimize Theosophist claims, they will need to testify to even more evidence beyond Cain and his descendants, and they will, of course, do so.

Spurious supporters will present further evidence that the Dragon blood was achieved without contamination from intermarriage with the Sethian descendants, thereby keeping the ancient Anunnaki bloodline as pure as possible,[39] even though rebellious Sethians did intermarry with Cainites and Nephilim after the sixth generation. Remember, Theosophists believe Seth was mundane and a subordinate being to Cain, that Cain was unaccountably of royal blood from the beginning, unlike Seth,[40] and that Cain was either a giant who was divine or at least semidivine.

Theosophists believe biblical writers contrived the biblical record of the Sethian genealogy and that the Cain lineage was the only legitimate genealogy, because it represented the dynastic heritage of kings,[41] which is also supported by contemporary archaeological discoveries. They believe the mundane Sethian genealogy was deliberately contrived to be similar to Cain but arranged differently in its chronology to complete a cover-up, all designed to discredit the true bloodline of Anunnaki descent.[42] And underneath all this, Theosophists believe that royal descent, or the royal bloodline of the gods, memorialized as the Dragon Court, did not descend through Seth from Adam, but rather it descended through Cain, whom monotheists have viciously maligned, corrupted, and discredited in support of their own contrived scheme.[43]

The coming world government will be comprised of devout followers of Satan and descendants of fallen angels and Nephilim. They will announce themselves to be descendants of Cain, even if they do not confess to all this at first. Eventually they will, but then it will be too late, for the wrath of God, the great tribulation, the time of Jacob’s trouble, and the reign of the Antichrist will have already begun, condemning the people of the earth to their preordained destiny.

CHAPTER 92

ADAM AND CAIN

Adam lay with his wife Eve, and she became pregnant and gave birth to Cain. She said, "With the help of the Lord I have brought forth a man." Later she gave birth to his brother Abel. Now Abel kept flocks, and Cain worked the soil. In the course of time Cain brought some of the fruits of the soil as an offering to the Lord. But Abel brought fat portions from some of the first born of his flock. The Lord looked with favor on Abel and his offering, but on Cain and his offering he did not look with favor. So Cain was very angry, and his face was downcast.

—Genesis 4:1–5

It is noteworthy that Theosophists do not malign Adam. But it is also relevant to ask: how do Theosophists reinvent his legacy?

To Theosophists, Adam was the first Priest King. Adam was the Royal Seed and the model of earthly kingship.[1] Adam was King Atabba of the

Sumerian King's List or the Adama of Sumerian lore. Adam was the first *Sanga-Lugal*, the first Priest King, or as the title is better known in Grail lore, the first Fisher King, and Adam was the original human to seed the Sangreal.[2] Adam, in this line of thinking, was born both a priest and a ruler. He held the dual nature of the Cainite Fisher King of ruler and priest, which formed the Priest King/Fisher King concept that the Pharaohs later adopted. Adam (just as the Merovingians were believed to be) was in tune with nature, to whom he spoke through vision and trance, and possessed the power over plants and animals.[3] He was the first of the human Dragon Court.

To further understand Adam's relationship in the pantheon, let us quickly review the Sumerian pantheon. The parent god was An, or Anu. Anu had two sons: Enki and Enlil. *Anu* translated from ancient Sumerian as "heaven," while *Enki* means "lord of the earth."[4] Enlil was the main protagonist in the flood and is equivalent to the Gnostic Destroyer and Creator god, Demiurge, also known as Yaltaboath (Ialdoboath) and, of course, the Theosophist Adonai. God/Adonai is referred to as *El-Shaddai* in the Bible.[5] El-Shaddai, the Mountain Lord, the God of Abraham, used in Hebrew texts and the Vulgate Bible, was a Semitic term, according to Gardner, which is to no surprise, synonymous with the Mesopotamian Great Mountain Lord Enlil,[6] bringing all appellations for God together as one in the Sumerian *Enlil*.

In Sumerian lore, Enlil and Enki were brothers and equals, just as the Theosophists believe Lucifer and Adonai are equals. This is no coincidence; it only underlines some of the contrived consistency in ancient and modern pantheistic dogma. In the family tree of Sumerian gods, they (Enki and Enlil) and other descending gods of the pantheon tended to be fathered and mothered from other gods, thereby becoming sons of gods, or in biblical terms, angels and fallen angels. Thus God is devalued from an omnipotent God to a powerful but equal being to Lucifer/Enki. Anu the parent god, the universal life force, then, is elevated over both God and Lucifer in the pantheon as father to both Enki and Enlil.

Enki took two wives, Damicina and his half-sister Ninkhursag, authenticating the origin to the pharonic tradition of marrying their half-sisters. Gardner cites Ninkhursag as the ultimate Lady of Life and the true beginning to the matriarchal branch of the Sangreal, in equal partnership with Enki, the source of the patriarchal Sangreal, as well as being the true genesis to the Grail kings through Cain.[7] Ninkhursag was referred to in the *Kur-Sag Epic* specifically as the "Serpent Lady," denoting her, according to Gardner, as the prevailing Grail (Ring) Queen.[8] Enki, in some legends, poured his semen into the womb of Ninkhursag, thereby initiating the creation of the Anunnaki/ Nephilim.[9]

In addition, Enki was the god that anointed Adama, the Atabba, in the King's List and the first royal messiah, meaning "the anointed one." It was from this anointing of Adama that all Dragon kings are then symbolically a form of messiah after the ways of Adam. Fisher Kings from the time of Adam were deemed to retain the supreme prowess of the sacred crocodile, the kingly aptitude of the messianic Dragon, just as ancient Egyptian records memorialized the pharaoh kings.

Although Adam was the first Fisher King of the Dragon Court, he was not the only one. Adam was merely a prototype. He was not the true and root progenitor of the kingly bloodline that descended to Cain and his descendants, for this involved Eve and not Adam.[10] Therefore, Seth and his descendants were created through Adam and Eve as a lower level of life form, mundane mortals created for toil, like the Black Heads, while Cain was then then was created through Eve and an outside force specifically to engender the Dragon bloodline.

Cain was the originating root for the kingly Dragon bloodline manifested in hunter/warrior kings; although, Adam still remained the originating allegorical root of the Fisher King, manifested in peaceful, priestly kings of the people. From this perspective, Christian and Theosophist doctrines agree: Seth, the biblical son of Adam, was the father of the mundane human race,[11] but somehow Cain was the originating archetype for the giants, the purported bastard son to Eve and an alternative patriarch other than Adam.

In this alternative, revisionist Genesis, Cain was not the son of Adam but the son of Eve via his (alleged) father, Enki/Satan;[12] although, some versions uphold that Cain was the offspring of Enki and Lilith.[13] All this, of course, is perfectly consistent with Nephilim creation myths, where angels procreated with daughters of men (Eve) to produce giants.

St. Epiphanius concurred with the polytheists, recording the devil, indeed, mated with Eve and begot both Cain and Abel.[14] Cain, therefore, was son of Eve through the adulterer Satan. Cain was the son of a Snake and a murderer like his father, just as he was described in the gospel according to Phillip,[15] again reaffirming the seraphim/Dragon allegory to the Cainite Dragon Court. Other Gnostic versions noted Eve was raped by the authorities/rulers/fallen angels;[16] she became known as the midwife and Mother of the Living.[17]

The Gnostic gospel Secret Book, according to John Iraneous, additionally records rulers defiling Eve, producing both Cain and Abel.[18] Although slightly different, all pantheistic legends maintain that Cain was born of angelic blood through Eve; although, most other accounts do not consider Abel to have been a son of Satan or angels, likely meaning that Abel was considered a son of Adam and Eve, like Seth, a mundane mortal created to toil, which is why Abel's offering was deemed acceptable. If Seth was a mere mortal, Adam would have to be mortal, as well, after Eden.

Through this union of a human female (Eve) with the god Enki or with other fallen angels, Cain received the enriched blood of the gods, known more accurately as Anunnaki blood or Dragon blood, meaning he was considered divine or semidivine. Dragon blood is Nephilim blood that carries angelic blood and DNA. Cain received from his father, a son of God (fallen angel), the heavenly gift of being "an advanced product of royal seed."[19] According to Iraneous, Cain indeed did derive from a superior realm of beings.[20] The Biblical legend, The Ten Generations, too, and seemingly in direct contradiction to Genesis 4:1, oddly recorded Cain was not born in the likeness of Adam, that somehow he was born a "radiant child,"[21] in the same manner and likeness as Nephilim babies and a palpable reflection for the appellation "The Shining Ones."

Surprisingly enough, the Bible leaves this question as to who was the father, and possibly mother, of Cain was up in the air and unresolved. According to the Bible, it states: "Adam lay with his wife Eve, and she became pregnant and gave birth to Cain. She said, 'With the help of the Lord I have brought forth a man'" (Gen. 4:1–2). As noted in the footnotes at the bottom of the page of the niv translation, the alternative translation is "acquired a man, rather than: gave birth to a man."[22] *Cain*, in its ancient text form, ostensibly is very similar and sounds like "brought forth or acquired," while *brought forth* in the next sentence quite easily could have translated as "acquired." Therefore, from a biblical perspective, it is not crystal clear that Cain was the son of Adam and Eve, for he could have been acquired independently of Adam and Eve or have been acquired through Eve and another angel. But, as for Abel, Genesis 4:2 states: “Eve gave birth to his brother Abel.” There was no alternative translation of acquiring involved with Abel.

In addition, Gardner sets forth that Cain received “dominion over the earth” in his royal kingship[23]—a birthright passed down to the people of day six.[24] Gardner’s theory once more underscores Cain’s transformation from an agrarian to his kingly legacy, reigning over the hunters and gatherers of day six, and it further underscores why Cain’s offering to God was unacceptable, because Cain was mythologized to be a demigod/Nephilim, a superior being who held kingship on the earth. In reality, Cain’s offering was most likely deemed unacceptable to God because Cain only offered some fruits from his first harvest and not the very first fruits of the harvest, as is required in all offerings. Cain had already gone the way of the wicked by this juncture. In contrast, Abel offered the firstborn of his flocks, upholding this law of God. This was the first celebration of the Feast of First Fruits.

Atun and Enoch inherited the Dragon kingship that was further reinforced with enriched Anunnaki blood of the gods through Cain’s marriage to Lulwa-Lilith, daughter of Lilith (and possible consort of Adam), both who were Anunnaki. This spurious marriage, in turn, produced Cain’s dynastic progeny, explaining why Gnostics contrive Lamech, Enoch, Tubal-Cain, Ham, Japheth, Noah, and Nimrod were Nephilim. Lilith was of pure Anunnaki stock and blood,[25] leading Gnostics to believe two crossbred human/angelic races were originally created: the Nephilim and the Emmakha Sethites. One wonders, was this perfect Immoveable Race, the actual descendants of Cain from the transgression and violation of Eve by Satan, or was it the first of two races of giants?

Cain’s alternative breeding via Satan (or another important fallen angel) and Eve conveniently validates the later impassioned transgressions of the *watchers*, which would have thereby created the second, more numerous race of giants at Mount Hermon. Cain’s alternative Nephilim status validates the understandable motivation of the daughters of day six, who so eagerly interbred with *watchers*, as alleged heavenly bloodlines were already in their kingship and nobility bloodlines were there through Cain.

Further, some use Sumerian, Babylonian, and Akkadian legends to bolster their belief that Enoch/Oannes was Enki’s high priest who led the

Nephilim down from Mount Hermon to dwell among the Cainites. The original Sumerian pronunciation of *Enoch* did not pronounce the *ch (k)* sound when followed by a vowel: *Uanne(k)(e)/Oanne(k)(e)*; thus, the names became phonetically identical. Enoch/Oannes in the Sumerian version was considered Anunnaki, [26] just as other mystical legends state. All this blends well with understanding that Enoch the Evil was the son of Cain and Lulawa-Lilith and thus a Nephilim.

Gnostics contend Cain’s superior bloodline was passed down to his misunderstood royal descendants, jarringly listed by Iraneous as Cainites, Korah, Esau, and the Sodomites.[27] These postdiluvian nations were likely descendants from the mysterious first Nephilim race. Iraneous’s jarring testimony once more reaffirms Sodomites and the inhabitants of Gomorrah, as well as the cities of the plain, were, in truth, both descendants of Emmakha Seth, the Immoveable Race, and the ancestors of the Gnostics. Both they and the Nephilim then amalgamated with the descendants of Japheth and Ham, corrupting them. So, too, does this reaffirm Esau’s depravity and that of his descendants, who amalgamated with the Amalekites. The people of Esau, too, became Nephilim pathogens carrying the messianic Nephilim Dragon bloodline. Gnostics went on to cite intermixed angelic/Nephilim bloodlines as the reason Ialdaboath/Adonai/Enlil hated the Cainites, the Sodomites, the Amalekites, and the descendants of Korah.[28] Korah was the Nephilim son of Esau and Ohilibamah, or could have been an undocumented offspring from one of the Chiefs of Edom.[29] Nephilim bloodlines and rebellious actions are reasons cited, once again underscoring God’s righteous actions levied against Sodom and Gomorrah, as well as the evil Amalekites and all other Nephilim peoples recorded in the Old Testament.

So, was Cain indeed a son of a Satan or another fallen angel? Legends from polytheist ancient cultures pertaining to Lilith cast more light upon Cain’s possible alternative parent breeding.

CHAPTER 93

LILITH

[Edom] from generation to generation will lie desolate; no one will ever pass through it again. The desert owl and the screech owl will possess it; the great owl and the raven will nest there. God will stretch out over Edom the measuring line of chaos and the plumb line of destruction. Her nobles will have nothing there to be called a kingdom; all her princes will vanish away. Thorns will overrun her citadels, nettles and brambles her strongholds. She will become a haunt for jackals, a home for owls…. The owl will nest there and lay eggs, she will hatch them, and care for her young under the shadow of her wings; there also the falcons will gather, each with its mate…. They will possess it forever and dwell there from generation to generation.

—Isaiah 34:10–17

Sumerian mythology documents Enki as taking Lilith for his sexual partner.[1] Some scholars identify Lilith as the aboriginal, evil Assyrian and Babylonian wind spirit or a goddess comparable to Johi in the Persian Creation Myth.[2]

Who is Lilith, and where did she come from?

Theosophists have substituted Eve for Lilith in their bent genealogy. In the same figurative sense, Lilith was, in truth, the original goddess Ninkhursag/Gaea/Isis of the Cainites that produced the first race antediluvian giants. The daughters of Eve, then, became the metaphorical Mother Earth, Isis, Gaea, and so forth for the second race of giants. Remember, in this dimension, angels can choose their gender and produce other gods.

Lilith, too, was likened in lore to a Serpent or Dragon. Once more, and not coincidently, Lilith held the matrilineal inheritance to the kingdom of Malkhut, the sovereignty of the Dragon Court, as well as the reigns to the kingdom of the Dragon Court,[3] through her daughter Lulwa-Lilith, who married Cain. Lilith was officially known in royal genealogies as the “Beautiful Dragon queen of the Anunnaki.” Queens of the Dragon Court, the Owl queens, were likened to lilies, lotus flowers, which spawned names such as Lilith, Lily, Lulawa, and Lillet, which appear in Grail, Ring, Dragon, and Fairy culture. Lilith has been captured in many depictions from antiquity holding the famous rings of the Ring Lords, the Anunnaki kings. She is close to the source of the originating matriarchal elven bloodline that descended down to Bashemath, Miriam, Mary Magdalene,[4] Temar, Sarah, and Scota, to name just a few.

The Lily mythos produced the family name “du Lac” of Arthurian lore, as in Lancelot du Lac, “of the Lake,” and the Ladies of the Lake. Alongside this, the Grail dynasty was alternatively renowned as the House del Acqs, which translates as “of the waters” (Tiamet), from where the queenly tradition of the Ladies of the Lake derived. The del Acqs’s matriarchal line was directly descended from Mary Magdalene, explaining the Priory’s Legomin fascination with the Lily. *Acqs* in Latin, was *acquae,* meaning “water,” while Mary Magdalene was celebrated as “the Mistress of the Water.” It is from Mary’s House that all the Ladies of Water, Lakes, Fountains, and Arthur relate back to in Grail lore, for Mary’s direct, purported, maternal descendant was Vivian of Avalon, mother of Lancelot.

Conversely, Hebrew tradition labeled Lilith a *Lamia*, a blood-sucking demon (vampire) of Greek mythology that flew at night like a screech owl,[5] reminiscent of a passage from Isaiah 34:13–17 concerning the screech owls of Edom/Esau. The connection to the Dragon (Dracula) we have already covered, but now I will connect the vampire (Dragon king) to the screech owl (Owl queen).

Centered in Romania (the heart of Dracula tales), the word *strigoi*, meaning “witch,” became popular as a description for vampires—*strigoi*’s Latin equivalent form is *strix,* meaning “screech owl.”[6] Vampires are night witches, while the Scythian female Oupres, known as pale night operators, drink blood in the same manner and tradition as Vlad the Impaler, Dracula, of the Dragon Order, all to achieve immortality. Lilith, then, was the originating root to the owl allegory of Owl queens and the mother of vampires, again linking blood-sucking demons to the Dragon Court.

Hebrew myth records Lilith as the alternative first woman to Eve, but Lilith wanted to be dominant sexually, which did not suit the Hebrew patriarchy.[7] Obviously, this must have occurred before Eve was created from Adam’s rib.[8] Lilith must be a female, shape-shifting form of dark angel or the result of yet another violation against creation created with the people of day six. In numinous legend, Lilith was the first concubine of Adam before Eve was created,[9] and Lilith was branded as the killer of infants.[10] Hebrew legends recorded Lilith was also arrogant; she attempted to elevate herself over Adam, but she was then sent to live among the demons for her sinful pride.[11] This is where Lilith likely received her credentials as an evil, blood-sucking demon, a Lamia that flew at night, much like a screech owl.

The Talmud records Lilith took great pleasure in observing humankind’s fall in Eden.[12] No doubt she also took pleasure in participating with Nephilim in originating the Dragon Court, particularly with her as the founding matriarch. This mythology, then, provides legitimacy for the polytheist doctrine substituting Lilith for Eve, all to rationalize corrupted, revisionist genealogies. It additionally resolves why Abel and Seth were regarded as mortal and mundane, for Abel and Seth were sons of Eve and

Adam, while spurious lore cites Cain as the son of Lilith and Satan, and/or Samael.

Shub-Ad, in Sumerian lore, was a matriarchal dynast descending from Lilith, known also as "Nin-Pu-Abi," as well as the infamous Naamah, daughter of Lamech.[13] This, then, confirms through Sumerian lore that the daughters of Cain did, in fact, copulate with fallen angels, reintroducing additional angelic blood and DNA into the people of day six, again a tradition later kept up by dynastic Dragon kings and queens. This also confirms Naamah was part of the originating strain of the Dragon dynasty, descending directly from the devil. Naamah/Shub-Ad was additionally identified to be the Charmer and a Dragon queen.[14] This further demonstrates that Cain's descendants did, in fact, consider themselves as Nephilim progeny, sons of Lilith and Satan and not likely Eve and Satan. Perhaps, then, Eve did acquire Cain from Lilith and Satan, to raise the radiant child, or perhaps Eve somehow acquired Satan's seed and became pregnant.

What is most intriguing is that Gardner notes Lilith was the wife of the notorious Samael, chief of the fallen angels, just as I have surmised about Satan. Just as surprising, Cain, in some Sumerian legends, was the son of Lilith and Enki, with Enki being known alternately as Samael, the chief of the fallen angels. Samael/Enki was the same god in Sumerian lore.[15] Ginzberg cites Samael in biblical legends as the angel of death and even as Satan in his seraphic form. In this mystical Jewish line of thinking, Satan took on his seraphic form as Enki and/or Samael and assaulted Eve, impregnating her with the radiant child that became Cain.[16] Satan was similarly recorded in the Talmud riding a serpent when he deceived Eve in Eden. Furthermore, the Talmud named *Samael*, meaning "venom of God" (venom now that is carried in snakes), as the angel who is Satan.[17] *Samael* derives from *Sama-El*, lord of Sama, in northern Mesopotamia.[18] Remember, too, Enki was the Sumerian god of wisdom,[19] the angel of the Tree of Knowledge in Eden, who frees humankind with knowledge. Samael and Enki are appellations for Satan's seraphic form, while Lucifer and Satan are his cherubim appellations.

It would appear Satan first pioneered the illicit doctrine of angels copulating with humans when he violated Eve or Lilith, producing Cain, and thus creating the first alternative race of angelic posterity. If so, the infamous 200 fallen angels only followed in Satan’s footsteps later at Mount Hermon.

SECTION VIII: The Gene of Isis

BLOODLINES OF THE FAIRIES

CHAPTER 94

THE GRAIL CAULDRON OF FAIRIES, ANNWYN, AND ATLANTIS

> *He makes the depths churn like a boiling cauldron and stirs up the sea like a pot of ointment… Nothing on earth is his equal –a creature without fear. He looks down on all that are haughty; he is king over all that are proud.*
>
> —Job 41:31–34

Why was rebellious Legomin literature unaccountably sprinkled with symbolic fairy dust? How are these obscure allegories essential to understanding how the past intersects with our scientifically advanced present and our future?

Genuine fairy legends uphold the Grail/Graal was a magic cauldron, not a cup or chalice, as opposed to the *Greal*, the alternative bloodline of the Dragon. The Grail is recorded in fairy mythos as the Cauldron of Annwyn, the Cauldron of Serpents and Dragons, just as the Dragon Sarmatians believed.[1]

The *Preiddeu Annwyn* poem tells of Arthur sailing to Annwyn to steal the Cauldron/Grail from the fortress of the fairies. This was the Grail that cured the sick, healed the wounded, and fed the people. In Grail lore the cauldron brought fertility and abundance to the land and it was Arthur's esoteric responsibilities to ensure prosperity as the Fisher King.[2] The Cauldron of Annwyn was the undisclosed arcane Grail that Arthur's knights frantically rummaged after to return to Camelot so the land would once more produce with abundance, not the Grail/chalice containing the crucified blood of Jesus but the Grail/Cauldron of the fairies, once again connecting fairy lore with Grail mythos. The Holy Grail and fairy lore are unaccountably interrelated, intrinsically interconnected, and inexplicably inundated with intrigue.

Cassandra Eason notes the Druidic Adept, the mystic Merlin, was evidently a fairy enchanter, while Morgan le Fey, one of the Ladies of the Lake, was of fairy descent.[3] You will recall, Merlin was a wizard in the spirit of the Atlanteans, a white-haired, long-bearded, wise astrologer and enchanter. Merlin fell in love with Nimue, known also as Ninianne and Vivianne, who, in turn, was the famous Lady of the Lake, a fairy woman,[4] and a direct descendant of Mary Magdalene of the del Acqs family. Merlin slept with the fairy woman Vivianne in a cave.[5]

All Grail and Arthurian literature, according to Joseph, has been encoded with an unexplained portion of memories and information recanting the Atlantean epoch and the deluge, including Merlin's roots dating back beyond the Druids to the mysticism of Atlantis.[6] The name we know as *Merlin* was not his real name, for "Merlin" is a title. Merlins were the great seers of the Gaelic realms for the royal courts and high kings.[7] They were a class of Druid priests akin to the classical Greek philosophers and Chaldean Magi who were derived from an ancient, priestly tribe remembered as the "Wise Ones."[8]

In Latin, Merlins and Wise Ones were identified as the *Noblis*, from the Greek *gnoble*, meaning "to know" (as in *gnosis*)—hence, noble,[9] just as fair(y) Celts were the noble race of the Elven bloodline. As you will call, the noble elven fairies were known as gnomes and goblins, ones who guarded the antediluvian secrets, knowledge, and genealogies. In this spirit, Merlin and numerous other mystical antediluvians have been allegorized and enshrined as ascended ancients, possessing breathtaking technology and knowledge, especially in the television series *Star Gate* and *Star Gate Atlantis*.

In the same line of thought, Plato, in *Phaerdrus*, elaborated on the divine spark of the soul/*daemon* originating with the gods, who were considered noble beings.[10] Thus, Merlin was affirmed to have been born from a spirit or *daemon*, otherwise known as one of the classes of fairies. Druids, Egyptian priests, Magi, and Greek oracles all labored unaccountably with the aid of daemons (demons), who were regarded as invisible beings, intermediaries between gods and men (Avatars and spirit guides); the daemons included the shades of Hades.[11]

Morgan le Fey's name oozes with fairy Legominism, just as *la fey* is French for "fairy." The Ladies of the Lake were part of the fair-haired water fairies.[12] Fairy women were always believed to have access to the Otherworld through lakes; coves; and of course, *sidhes*, known also as "fairy mounds" and as "knolls" in Scotland. The gods and goddesses of the Otherworld were known in Irish, Welsh, and Grail mythology as the fairy people.[13]

Morgan was an eternally young fairy, a virgin seductress, whose passion was never satisfied, driving her to despair. She lived beneath the sea as a mermaid who possessed great treasure; at night she was lulled by the waves along the rocks. Morgan was recorded as *Mari-Morgan* in Breton, recognized today as Mari Morgan, "the daughter who sings amid the sea."[14] Mermaids have been included in maritime mythology since ancient times. This is understandable since the derivation of the English name means both "sea" and "lake maiden." In the British Isles, mermaids are known variantly by many appellations, including Mari Morgan. When rescued, mermaids provided knowledge of medicines, opulent gifts, and warnings of storms.[15]

Mermaids were indelibly encrypted into Gnostic allegories secreting Rex Deus heritage. Mary Jacob, Jesus' alleged sister, for example, was celebrated in secret Gnostic society as an Essene priestess and as Mary the Gypsy. Both Mary Jacob and Mary Magdalene are portrayed as mermaids in the Church of St. Marie in Paris.[16] *Mary* is related to water, as in the French *mer* and Latin *mare*, while Mary Jacob was often depicted with a fishtail, as a mermaid, thus deriving from *Merri-maid*, from which Maid Marion of Robin Hood derives metaphorically. Mermaids in ancient epochs were also always associated with the moon goddess[17] Isis, Ishtar, and so on.

All this water allegory came together with the del Acqs dynasty begat by Mary, which descended down to Vivianne and Morgan le Fey, both who were allegorized as Ladies of the Lake.

According to Gardner, Mary the Gypsy, Mary Jacob, was the short version for Mary the Egyptian. The original form of *Mary* was *Miriam*, the sister to Moses, known in one of its variant forms as *Mery-Amon*. Mary the Gypsy's name became famous in variants such as Merrie, Marry, and Merry—as in the Merry Men of Robin Hood, where her memory is preserved as the Maid Marion and the Merrie Men of Sherwood. Additionally, Mary Jacob has been preserved in the May Queen rituals associated, as we discussed previously, with Robin Hood allegories. The May festivals are in legend the festivals of Mary the Gypsy.[18]

Morgan le Fey was an Anglo-Norman title, according to Flemming, once again linking in Norse Rex Deus to Grail and Welsh bloodlines. Morgan le Fey, then, not coincidently, was both the half-sister to Arthur and the aunt to Rex Deus, Gawain, of Norway. Morgan was the mother to Lancelot in other versions. Gawain was the original champion of the Round Table before Lancelot. Gawain's father was King Lot of Norway, the king that helped Arthur defeat the Romans[19] and who was also regarded in Grail legend as holding equal partnership to Arthur's kingship and kingdom. *Lot*, of course, is the base for Lancelot's name and also refers to Lothland in Norway, home of merciless Vikings[20] that Gawain's father reigned over. These Arthurian Normans were in the same bloodlines as the St. Claires, Bruces, Rollos, Knuts, and William the Conqueror.

Morgan le Fey was the mother of Lancelot, while Lancelot's fairy wife was Elaine/Elayne.[21] Remember, derivatives of *Elaine* originate from the *Alain* from the Lot valley in France. Lancelot was the son of King Ban and Queen Elaine of Benwick, also known as Benoir of France. Elaine was the daughter of King Pelles and sister to Perceval, finder of the lost Grail and father of Galahad. Both Perceval's and Lancelot's bloodlines traced back to Joseph of Arimathea. This and the fact that Lancelot helped Arthur and Gawain with the Romans entitled Lancelot to share in Arthur's rule. Lancelot is considered equal to Arthur in Grail lore.[22]

Guinevere was also was of fairy blood. Her name translates as "White Fairy" from the fairy folk of Wales.[23] Other translations suggest Guinevere means "White Phantom" or "White Apparition."[24] *Gwyn* is Welsh for "white" or "fair." The Irish and Gaulish equivalents are *Finn* and *Vindos* respectively.[25] Guinevere is, in fact, known in Welsh as *Gwenhyvar*, which in Irish is spelled *Finnabair*, meaning "Fair" or "Fairy."[26] *Finn* translates as "the acquisition of knowledge" (or gnosis), which derived from *Find*, the spirit of wisdom, whose name means "enlightened," "bright," and "fair."[27] *Guinevere* likely means "a fairy white phantom holding ancient knowledge." Remember also that Gwynedd, the land of Arthur, was also one of three Welsh kingdoms, and *Gwynedd* means "the land of magic" (or fairies or mysticism).

Arthur was born of fairy blood through his parents, Igraine and Uther, and he married fairy blood through Guinevere.[28] King Uther Pendragon was a king of Hades, making Arthur then a direct descendant of the Otherworld, a Tuatha Denaan.[29] Thus, Flemming cites Arthur as the reincarnated solar deity, while his Round Table was the gigantic sun wheel,[30] echoing Sabaism, astrology, Atlantis, and of course, Enoch the Evil. Evans-Wentz echoes the same analogy, citing Arthur was a sun god incarnate in human form to teach Britons the arts and sciences (Seven Sacred Sciences). Arthur is an avowed Celtic allegory, a reincarnated sun deity who possessed a "Brotherhood of Great Heroes" like that of Osiris.[31]

The Round Table dates back to Hades, along with Arthur's father, where the fairy culture originated. Arthur was a ruler of ghosts (phantoms), demons, demon rulers, and fairies. The members of his court are more reminiscent of the Irish Sidhes Folk than mortals, and Arthur is more akin to Dagda, the great overlord (Oberon) and god of Tuatha Denaan.[32] The fairy queens of Arthur are allegorical for archetypical moon goddesses, the queen to the solar god, King Arthur, the figurative Osiris and Isis. Flemming continues by stating that Isis, the mother goddess (Lilith, Ninkhursag, Gaea, Mother Earth), survived in fairy lore figuratively as the "good fairy," the "fairy godmother," and the "queen of fairies."[33]

In this manner, fairies and fairy godmothers have been kept alive in numerous children's fairy tales, such as *Cinderella*. These tales are inundated with additional varieties of fairies, such as elves, trolls, leprechauns, and so on. These creatures are alternative forms of aliens, Cathars, Albins, and fairies, intended to prepare our unsuspecting youth for the end game. Our youth have been bombarded through entertainment, the arts, and literature with Genesis 6 symbolism to deceive and prepare this perishing generation.

Perceval succeeded Arthur as the Grail keeper and is the little-known connection to the Knights Templar. Perceval was the successor to the Rex Deus/San Greal Bloodline and the inspirational founder for the Knights Templar, which was originally an Order of Grail Keepers.[34]

CHAPTER 95

THE FAIRY LORDS OF THE TUATHA DENAAN

His body was like chrysolite, his face like lightning, his eyes like flaming torches, his arms and legs like the gleam of burning bronze, and his voice was like the sound of a multitude.

—Daniel 10:6

Why are obvious fairy origins linked to Nephilim, fallen angels, and polytheism through the Tuatha Denaan regularly dismissed? Why are aliens and many forms of fairies identical in their physical descriptions and modes of operation?

I noted previously that I regard aliens to be little more than dark angels and a misdirection designed for our technologically advanced age. Therefore, you ought not to be surprised to learn fairies are known as beings of light, just as angels and Freemasons are known. Fairies are famous in Irish and Brittany lore as Shining Beings,[1] just as Nephilim/Anunnaki and fallen angels are renowned as the Shining Ones.

Gardner notes that the ancient Fir Bolg race of the Labor Gabala were actually Druids and Priest Kings, and one of the three royal bloodlines of the Scythians,[2] along with the Tuatha Denaan. Some experts, such as Professor A.C. Haddon, believe fairies represented a preeminent tribe of the

Neolithic age.[3] To this conclusion, Eason noted the shadowy Tuatha Denaan was the ancient Fairy court.[4] Irish mythology tends to connect fairies back to the divine tribe of Denaan, according to Fergus.[5] They are remembered as former gods, beings of light, Shining Ones, and shimmering ones. They were the ancient ones from the Land of Youth[6] that is reflected in Neverland's youthful immortality in *Peter Pan.*

Dana was the mother goddess of the Tuatha Denaan, the queen of the fairies.[7] The Tuatha were the divine children of the matriarchal goddess Danu and the god Dagda, the father and hammer god of Irish lore.[8] According to Peter Ellis, Danu fertilized the great Oak Tree, Bile, which sprang into the pantheon of gods, the Tuatha Denaan.[9] Hence, bloodlines of the Tuatha were (and are to this day) considered sacred and divine; the bloodlines of Nephilim; and not coincidently, in the same genealogical spirit as the Druids, Gnostics, Essenes, and Rex Deus. Remember, Bran the Blessed was a giant, and Finn MacCool in Arthurian lore was a giant. Both descended from Denaan (along with Arthur), from which they carried divine blood in their veins, and both were akin to gods.[10] Celts believed deities were their ancestors and not their creators,[11] tracing their genealogies back through Celtes, Scythes, Albion, and Gog giants. These were the blond- or red-haired, blue- or green-eyed, fair-skinned descendants of the noble elven Celts.

Celtic kings were always ceremonially wed with mother goddesses.[12] The Druids then kept these genealogies of Irish kings stretching back into the mists of time.[13] Danu, known variantly as Don and Anu, was the mother goddess of fertility (Isis) and the matriarch of Mabinogion,[14] the dynastic kingdoms and bloodlines of Wales that produced the Arthur kingship. Hence, all Grail kingships and genealogies trace back, in part, to the mysterious fairy tribe of Tuatha Denaan of Ireland and northern Germany, to which the little-known Norse Rex Deus are originally connected. Originating Celts were Indo-Europeans and the same race as Hittites, Hurrians, and Aryans[15]—all giants.

The Otherworld, the place where the Tuatha Denaan were exiled, is analogous to the sciences' space-time dimensions and parallel universes set forth in scientific quantum and string theory and popularized in science fiction literature, complete with convenient doorways. These alternative realities explain the behavior of quantum particles and the many problems of the quantum world as proposed by physicist Hugh Everett in 1957, where infinite possibilities occur simultaneously.[16] Science fiction is wedded to polytheist religions just as science is. Consider this example: to choose a quantum possibility (destiny), we must become that way (one with the universal life force), thus abandoning our love for the current state (fate and the matrix of the physical world) so that we might live in a new state of consciousness (godhood in the real spirit world) through vibrating in harmonic convergence (quantum particles of the matrix), which will unite the spark of the divine.

Dagda, the male god of Deanna, divided up all the Sidhes' portals from the Otherworld among his people of Denaan. Remember, only fairy women had access to the gates or fairy mounds, called Sidhes by Fergus Flemming, connecting this world with the Otherworld. These Sidhes marked the entrance to the Otherworld, the entrance to the empire of the Tuatha Denaan, the land of evil, fairies, and rebellion. Note, too, it was the god Mananwan, god of the sea (Poseidon), who originally created the Sidhes.[17]

This, then, accounts for the originating bloodline of the Irish as being fairy blood from Tuatha Denaan. Irish descendants of Tuatha later interbred with the migrated (Aryan) Celts, who interbred with the descendants from the lost tribes of Israel from the daughter of Zedekiah, Temar, and Scota, as well as the Scythians, who then interbred with the alleged descendants of Jesus in England, along with the Sarmatians of Scythia. They, in turn, interbred with the alleged descendants of Jesus in France, who had interbred with Scythian and Benjamite royal blood, and the Nordic, Elven blood of the fairies. They all then united into the Arthurian bloodline that Rex Deus/Essenes married into. All these bloodlines culminated in the Unicorn House of Stuart, one of the likely bloodlines to produce the Antichrist. These genealogies are all Fairy blood and Dragon blood.

Cassandra Eason notes fairies are the memories of deities that died out or were absorbed into other cultures. She further notes fairies were transformed in legends to opalescent beings akin to angels (the Shining Ones) but remembered as fairy folk,[18] the Tylwyth Teg of the Fair Folk, and the Welsh translation for fairies.[19] According to Gardner, the fairy precept was born directly from Dragon/Ring/Grail culture, while fairies were indeed the Shining Ones of the kingly, Cathar Elven race descended from the Tuatha Denaan.[20] In fact, Eason writes that fairies are always regarded in angelic or demonic terms: good fairies like the Tooth Fairy or evil, such as trolls and goblins. This, of course, is no coincidence. All Celtic cultures believe original (heavenly) fairies were fallen angels driven from heaven along with Lucifer and that they are the dark angels not committed to the Abyss.[21]

Earthborn fairies were not like Tolkien (or Narnia) elves or fairies; nor were they similar to elves portrayed in fairy tales. Earthborn fairies were much larger and more powerful beings.[22] Narnian and Tolkien literature reflect the antediluvian age when humans dwelled with dragons; giants; centaurs; fairies; and mermaids, alongside other, smaller humanoids, like dwarves, nymphs, sylphs, and unicorns.[23] Therefore, semidivine shining beings were nothing more than the ruddy offspring of the heavenly fairies/angels. It is thought that the Roman Church originally and purposefully degraded the legacy of Tuatha Denaan, designating them the Little Ones of mythology.[24] Gnostics readily accepted and embedded this misdirection into their arcane symbolism for Fairy/Grail/Ring literature, liberally sprinkling Tuatha with the little beings of antiquity. Thus, dark angels with wings were shrunk figuratively to miniature fairies with wings.

This belittling of the fairies by the Catholic Church may hold merit, but there is another, more complete resolution to the giant and dwarf paradox. Evens-Wentz’s research concludes Celtic cultures held four distinct classes of fairies: angels, demons, elementals, and shades. *Angels* were parallel gods to the ancients, equivalent to the (heavenly) Tuatha Denaan. Fairy *demons* were thought to be fallen angels, but as we have learned, demons are the spirits of immortal Nephilim offspring of fallen angels, whose bodies died. The *shades* were ghosts and souls of the dead and the demon spirits haunting and roaming the earth, for they were not permitted to enter heaven and were banned to the earth. The fourth class was the *elementals*, who were obscure, distinct, spurious, subhuman beings lost to secular history that possessed a mysterious pygmy stature.[25]

Elemental pygmies are the notorious elves, fairies, trolls, goblins, and other similar creatures—and, of course, the infamous, unexplained aliens. These subhuman nature spirits of pygmy stature also fall into another three distinct classifications: gnomes, leprechauns, and the little people.[26] Elementals are clearly another reprobate form of being: refugees from the flood utilizing Sidhes portals (with alien flying saucers) from the Otherworld and employed to serve dark angels. Hence, elementals are indeed the greys posing as contemporary aliens but are reprobate beings serving the objectives of the rebellion and the destruction of humankind.

Leprechauns are beings of mischief, while little people are beings recognized to be good-looking, unlike pesky, ugly leprechauns and gnomes. Little people are likely the sylphs, small fairies that are good-looking and graceful that appear in fairy tales and in Shakespeare, such as in *Midsummer Night's Dream*, as well as in *Cinderella*, *Peter Pan*, and other stories. Gnomes are puzzling earth-spirits who seemingly always have a sorrowful face; they possess round heads and dark, thickset bodies.[27] It would appear gnomes and leprechauns are the best candidates for the little, gray fairies and aliens, both who are identified as "gray fairies," who possess caches of advanced knowledge and technology, use unexplained flying machines, and abduct people and perform ghastly reproductive experiments upon their detainees.

Similarly, other Shining Ones included sprites, goblins, and gnomes, which all originated with the unexplained Scythians we have discussed so often. Gnomes, according to Gardner, were equivalent to the Greek word *gnu*, the root for *gnosis*, champions of ancient gnosis and the noble Fairy race.[28] The fairy faith holds great knowledge of a Greater Age that is coming again, where all ancient mythologies will be carefully studied and when the Celtic fairy mythology will be held in high esteem.[29]

Along this line of thought, *fairy* is rooted in the word *phare*, or *pharo*, meaning pharaohs, who are part of Dragon and Ring Lord culture as the kings of fate, or Fairy kings. The Tuatha Denaan were regarded in this lore as the world's most noble race, alongside dynastic Egyptian kings.[30] For all these heretofore seemingly obscure reasons, Scota was sent with her royal, Scythian husband to Ireland to interbreed with the noble elven bloodlines of the Tuatha Denaan after the fall of the Armana and Noble Dragon/fairy dynasty of Egypt.

Tuatha Denaan mythologies are memories of opalescent fallen angels and the Shining Nephilim offspring they produced. Fair Folk were originally known as the *Sidhe folk*, pronounced *Shee* (shay). The Irish called them the Sidhe Race; the Scots called the Fair(y) Folk the Sith Race; the Welsh called them the Tyleth Teg; the Cornish called them the Fees; and the English referred to the Sidhe Race as the Still Folk, Fair Folk, and the Fair Family. The Sidhe Folk are remembered as a majestic race with marvelous beauty. The highest order of the Sidhe Folk consisted of superhumans, i.e., the ancient gods. These were the gentry, a most noble tribe, a race of luminous beings that came from the planets, fallen angels. There are two beings of light in this category: *shining*, belonging to this world, and *opalescent*, belonging to heaven. Opalescent beings are more than fourteen feet tall.[31]

According to Mackillop, the Tuatha Denaan excelled over all other peoples of the earth in the proficiency of every art. They were giants called gods that were thought to have originated in heaven; they came to the earth with a great treasure-trove of knowledge.[32] They were acknowledged as the "Ever-Living-Ones" who displaced the deformed giant Formorians. Tuatha intermarried with Formorian giants who may have been the remnants of the antediluvian cyclops species. The Tuatha Denaan, too, were originally called the Sidhe Folk, or fairies, along with the Fir Bolg and some Milesians, which combined to form the fairy tribe.[33]

Postdiluvian Tuatha hailed from Scythia and were also known as Royal Scyths, the original fairies of history.[34] The Tuatha then traversed the Danube River, settling in Germany before migrating onwards to Norway and Ireland. The latter Tuatha Denaan remnant was likely part of the surviving tribe of giants that had intermingled with their Scythian/Japhethian collaborators. Therefore, the genuine Tuatha legacy dates back beyond the invasion of Ireland and back to the epoch of Titans and Atlantis.

Tuatha Denaan were erudite Shining Ones learned in the magic arts and Druidism. Their cities were the legendary Falias, Findias, Gorias, and Murias, from where the legends of the Cauldron, the Stone of Destiny, and Excalibur derived. Mackillop goes on to say the Tuatha and fairies were indistinguishable.[35] Manx traditions also remember fairies as demons (Nephilim) who died in the flood. Easson writes that *Cain* translates in the ancient Irish language as "fine, good, beautiful, and of course, fair."[36] Perhaps the fairies, Tuatha Denaan, were the surviving Nephilim Atlanteans and the descendants of Cain, who were indistinguishable from each other.

Note, too, the Sidhes and knolls are protected by the (little gray) fairies; Sidhes are the portals to the Otherworld, where the Tuatha now dwell. This is the same place where spirits of immortal Nephilim passed when their physical bodies died, because they were not permitted into heaven.[37] Furthermore, contemporary alien mythos believes flying saucers enter our dimension via these secret portals. And the authentic name for *Tuatha Denaan* was actually “Tuatha d’ Anu,” the tribe of Anu, the sky god of the Anunnaki, and the masters of the transcendental intellect called the Sidhe.[38] The original earthbound Tuatha Denaan were Nephilim/Anunnaki, no doubt about it!

Finally, Janet Bord writes that (opalescent) fairies in fairy lore are dark angels not condemned to the Abyss.[39] Opalescent fairies from heaven state categorically they are not from the seed of Adam but are part of the race of the Proud Angel driven from heaven in the angelic rebellion.[40] Winged parent fairies, angels, are indeed guardians for their fallen progeny who interbred into Dragon and Rex Deus blood through the antediluvian Tuatha Denaan and are guardians of the secret treasure, the Seven Sacred Sciences.

Ergo, everything comes together neatly. Tuatha Denaan literature was merely another spurious form of mythology centered in The Genesis 6 Conspiracy that documented their survival, just as Titan and Anunnaki literature and mythologies did. Fairies, fallen angels, elementals, and demons are the root to the alien phenomena and the spirit guides and Avatars we now see dominating our cultural evolution and perspectives.

CHAPTER 96

THE ROYAL HOUSE OF THE SCYTHIANS

> *These were the kings who reigned in Edom before any Israelite king reigned.*
>
> —Genesis 36:31

How then does the Tuatha Denaan connect back to the royal houses of the Middle East, both pre- and post-Flood? And how does this connection complete the bloodlines of the Antichrist chronology?

Royal Scythians were unaccountably chronicled as the Lords of Anu,[1] just as Tuatha Denaan were the Tribe of Anu. In addition, a multiplicity of myths documented Tuatha migrations to the Emerald Isle immediately after the flood.

Royal Scythians were the Ring Lords from the Transylvanian fairy race that spawned the Elven race of the Tuatha Denaan, which eventually migrated to Ireland sometime before 1000 B.C.E. Three key Dragon bloodlines came together in marriage from Mesopotamia, Egypt, and Edom (Amalekite/Horite) to found the Scythian Ring Lords, which later split into three more bloodlines sometime before 1100 B.C.E., forming the Fir Bolg, Milesians, and of course, the Tuatha Denaan. Therefore, the marriage of Scota and Niul of Scythia reconverged the three great dynastic lines from Scythia with the Egyptian/Mesopotamian line of Egypt, which both carried significant Grail/Dragon/Ring bloodlines from Esau and the Nephilim

Amalekites. This created the most venerable family of that epoch, which remarried into the royal, Scythian-spawned Tuatha Denaan later in Ireland, creating the famous and elitist *Albi-Gens*, the Elven race of Europe,[2] according to Gardner.

Emperor Justinian II of Constantinople noted the Scythian Ring Lord/ Dragon Court root to the Tuatha Denaan was the most ancient of all the tribes in the world, even older than the Egyptians.[3] The original Scythians carried an independent genetic root back into prehistory that we will now examine.

What is most interesting is that in polytheist lore, the most ancient of the Scythians even predate the antediluvian Sumerians. Tablets found beneath the village of Tartaria in the famous province of Transylvania evidently predate Sumerian texts by 1,000 years, according to carbon-14 dating! What is amazing about this discovery is that the glyphs/symbols on the tablets were virtually identical with Sumerian glyphs.[4] According to the *Encyclopedia Americana*, the Scythian language suggests an Iranian heritage,[5] to which Theosophists concur. This, then, suggests the ancient Scythian culture founded the antediluvian Sumerian civilization, which is contrary to modern dogma.

Moving forward, Kassite kings of Mesopotamia, circa 1750 B.C.E., somehow derived from Scythia, which then predates the Scythians even further back than 1750 B.C.E. Similarly, the Edomite kings descending from Esau both inherited Edom and also became the kings of Assyria and the Lords of Babylonia around 1780 B.C.E.; they were part of the twelve Theosophical kingdoms of Edom,[6] which derived from the unexplained Horite/Amalekite genealogies listed in Genesis and 1 Chronicles.[7] These Edomite and Kassite kingdoms were regarded by Theosophists as cousins, which suggests the Kassite kings also descended from Esau[8] and Horites.

Esau and his posterity from Amalek married into the Horites, as you will recall, forming the Great Amalekite Nation. Esau's firstborn son, Eliphaz, had four sons: Teman, Omar, Zepho, and Gatam, while he also bore a son named Amalek by a concubine oddly listed and recorded as Timna. One concludes Timna was a Horite/Nephilim, which began the amalgamated Great Amalekite Race of Horites and Edomites. This conclusion is confirmed later in Genesis, where Timna was documented as a Horite and a sister to the Horite King Lotan, son of Seir, the ruling Horite at that time (Gen. 36:11; 1 Chron. 1:36).

You will recall Esau married Bashemath, who Theosophists label a Dragon queen, as one of his three wives. Bashemath bore one son for Esau, Reul,[9] who bore sons named Nahath, Zerah, Shammah, and Mizzah.[10] Gardner states that two of these sons of Reul, grandsons of Bashemath, are identified as Nahath and Shammah-si and became the lords of Edom/Idumea, which Hebrew scholars ostensibly point to as being part of the twelve kingdoms of Esau sometime before 1950 B.C.E. It would seem, then, that Amalek and his descendants ruled over Seir, while the descendants of Esau reigned over Edom/Idumea.

Certainly, Theosophists believe the descendants of Esau, and in particular the grandsons of Bashemath, Nahath, and Shammah-si, inherited the kingdom of Idumea from the lords of Edom, Horites, Amalekites, and Nephilim, who reigned there from the time of the flood. Nahath, Shammah-si, and their queens were then granted the right to reign as Owl queens and Dragon kings for eternity,[11] in the same spurious spirit and legacy of Lilith and the antediluvian kings of Kish.

Theosophists point to Isaiah 34:10–17, which links screech owls and Edom as biblical proof of their version of history.[12] Theosophists unfortunately misconstrue and manipulate an end-time prophecy of the destruction and aftermath of Edom during the day of the Lord, Armageddon, to underscore their allegory and historical support that the lords of Edom were granted special blessings of inheritance, complete with titles as Dragon kings and Owl queens. They further force the figurative by substituting the Dragon for the screech owl and raven; although, I will grant that the Bible does note here that the exact identification of the screech owl is unknown.[13]

However, the *NIV Red Letter Study Bible* notes screech owls were known to Israelites as unclean birds of Babylon and Nineveh; they were birds of destruction.[14] *Nelson's* notes the owl as an unclean bird associated with desolation, a night creature that hops much like a goat.[15] *Unger's* notes the screech owl from Isaiah 34:14 is a nocturnal specter and more precisely a night demon, and other translations render the screech owl as a night monster and a night creature. All is reminiscent of Lilith, the female

Oupres, night witch, night demon, or night vampire. *Unger's* even lists the Hebrew word *lilit* for the original Hebrew spelling for the screech owl.[16]

Many Edomites, unlike the descendants of Amalek in Seir, ran off the Horites and all other Nephilim from the land of Edom, warring with them with the help of God. Theosophist versions, however, recant Edomites as all intermarrying with the lords of Edom, the Horite/Nephilim kingdoms and race, just as Eliphaz did with Timna. This, of course, was led by the prominent lords and grandsons of Bashemath, Nahath, and Shammah-si. Both the Kassites and their cousins, the lords of Edom, are considered to have descended from the Sumerian Anunnaki/Nephilim.[17]

Gardner states the Kingly Tribe (the same title as the Tuatha Denaan) of Esau was described in old Hebrew as *elefs* (elves) in the King James version of 1 Chronicles 1 and by Robert Atler, author of *Genesis, The Noble Elven Race*.[18] Although, I cannot verify this from the King James translation, Gardner insists that twelve lords (dukes) of Edom governed twelve dukedoms equivalent to his junior brother's twelve tribes of Israel.[19] Indubitably, one cannot dismiss the concurrence of the Esau, Eliphaz, and Amalek genealogies recorded in the Table of Nations, leading into and part of the genealogically unaccounted-for sons of Seir, the Horites, as mere happenstance. The Bible does not operate this way.

It was from the Edomite marriage (Eliphaz and Timna) into the lords of Edom that the Tuatha D'Anu Fairy kings (in part) emerged. The lords of Anu were in this case the lords of Edom, the Anunnaki/Nephilim. The Kassites in this convoluted vein were a kin branch from the lords of Edom. And, digging further back, Gardner informs us the Kassites, too, descended originally from Scythia, meaning that the Scythians were the original lords of Edom,[20] the original surviving Anunnaki/Nephilim, the Amalekites/Horites, and/or Aryans from the flood that eventually married into the grandsons of Esau and Bashemath some 1,000 years later. They were invading nomads from the Zagros Mountains from 1750 B.C.E.[21] or before.

Syrians called Scythopolis City in Galilee *Beth-Shean*, the "House of Power" and the "House of Sidhe."[22] Beth-Shean was known alternatively as Scythopolis, even after Manasseh conquered the city; Beth-Shean was called Scythopolis interchangeably up to the time of the Hasmonian dynasty, according the book of Judith and the books of 1 and 2 Maccabees of the *Access Bible*.[23] The name *Scythopolis* was still in popular use beyond the time of Josephus and was part of the decapolis of Greek-dominated states of Galilee during the fall of Judea to the Romans.[24] Again, this reflects the power, influence, and respect that the surviving Nephilim descendants from Scythia employed on the people of the Land of the Covenant after the flood. It is apparent to me that the Scythians were indeed the surviving Nephilim, who migrated to the Covenant Land and became known to scriptural history as the Anakites, Rephaim, Horites, Amalekites, and so on.

One wonders, then, about the relationship of the Scythians and Nephilim to Gog, Magog, Meshech, Tubal, and Beth Togarmah, the infamous tribes of the end times that have been prophesied by Ezekiel to start World War III by invading modern Israel (Ezek. 38:1–9). What will be the relationship of Scythians and Nephilim with Gog and Magog in to their uprising with Satan at the end of the scriptural millennium (Rev. 20:7–10)? Remember, Gog and Magog are descendants of Japheth (Gen. 10:2–3; 1 Chron. 1:5–6). All were part of the Black Sea Scythian Race that would have intermarried with the surviving Nephilim from Tartarus. Does this blood covenant still run in the DNA of their descendants?

The original Scythians must have migrated out of the Black Sea region and then returned in part back to Scythia sometime before 1750 B.C.E. Scythians, then, exported the Ring Culture of earthly kingship after the deluge from the Black Sea region and specifically from Tartaria and Wallachia of Transylvania to Sumeria,[25] Seir, Ireland, and then to the balance of the Middle East. *Unger's* and *Nelson's* note that the Horites/Hurrians migrated to Seir well before 2000 B.C.E., for archaeology from Mari on the Euphrates has determined the Horites/Hurrians swept over Mesopotamia from before 2400 B.C.E., establishing the Mitannian dynasty[26] that Nimrod likely grafted into. Remember, the Hurrian/Horite nation was usurped by the previously unexplained Aryan Maryannu, who invaded the Middle East, establishing the Mittanni dynasty. The Mittanni were a kin branch of the western Arya from the Indus Valley, maintaining Indian gods, such as Indra, Mithra, and Varuna in the Middle East, which appear as witnesses on treaties between the Mittanni and Hittites.[27] This seems to suggest Hindu gods were worshipped by Aryans before they migrated to India.

This little-understood Scythian history then accounts for Gardner's statement calling the Scythians the "Anunnaki Overlords of Scythia and Sumeria" and explains why the origins of the Ring Culture have been preserved within the culture and traditions of the Albi-Gens (the Elven race), the Dragon Court, and the Grail.[28] This additionally confirms the shadowy Scythians were indeed surviving Nephilim from the flood that later emerged as the Anakites and Rephaim of the Promised Land. This also legitimizes the legends of giants, such as Iapetus, Scythes, Albion, Gog, and Magog, as being Scythian both before and after the flood.

We can further connect these controversial statements back to Greek mythology and Dragon lore, which further clarifies and underscores what actually did transpire. During the First Time, the Titan/Anunnaki rebellion against the gods, myths which included the Atlantean mythologies of a Titan rebellion that eventually caused the deluge, recorded Gaea calling upon the Titans to avenge Uranus. Uranus had exiled the Heckatonchers, another kind of the giant created by fallen angels, to a prison called Tartarus.[29] The Titans defeated Uranus for Gaea placing Kronos in power in place of Uranus, but Zeus intervened, defeating the Titans and imprisoning the surviving, rebellious Titans/Anunnaki in Tartarus[30] until they escaped after the flood.

Tartarus, the prison of the Titans established by the gods, was the Underworld, which, not surprisingly, contained portals[31] called Sidhes in fairy mythology! This is obviously the same as the Otherworld and Sidhes of the Tuatha Denaan, the netherworld of the fairies. Xibalba, located in the Underworld of the earth, and the Lords of Xibalba of the *Popol Vuh*, the blood enemies of humankind,[32] recorded the same prison for giants. Tartarus was identical to Annwyn in Grail mythology. The great utopian Otherworld, Underworld, Tartarus, and Annwyn were, in fact, not Utopia but prisons maintained in another space dimension.

Scythians were known alternatively as "Tartars," as in *Tartarus*.[33] And, as we have already learned, tablets in Scythia predating Sumerian tablets by 1,000 years and dating to 3500 B.C.E. were discovered in Scythia, at the village of Tartaria, in Transylvania, home of Dracula and Vlad the Impaler of the Dragon Court. So, too, did the Sarmatians and Scythians (and therefore the Celts) call themselves "descendants of the Aryan race,"[34] the Atlanteans. These similarities are not coincidences. The Scythians were indeed the surviving Nephilim from the deluge; they then escaped from the prison in Tartarus, which clarifies how the giants survived the flood, from the protection of the prison that was separate and hidden from the earth in the Otherworld.

This brings supplementary understanding to an obscure passage from a lost gospel, Pseudo-Philo, which claims to contain Psalms from David. “And after these was the tribe of [evil] spirits made. And now do not be troublesome [rebellion] as one created on the second day. But if not, remember Tartarus where you walk.” Ancient Israelites also held a distant memory of the prison for rebellious Nephilim at Tartarus[35] and perhaps their portals.

So, then, imprisoned Nephilim from Tartarus became the postdiluvian, royal Scythians, who were the Amalekites, Horites, Anakites, and Rephaim recorded in the Old Testament. Their descendants were listed in the Table of Nations as the Horite kings that ruled Seir before any of the Israelites. They also formed the royal houses of Edom and Assyria that intermarried with the Nimrod bloodlines through Sodom and Gomorrah, and as noted before, they were indeed accurately described by Gardner in the Middle East as the House of Power (Beth-Shean). The surviving Nephilim race of giant convicts then later developed into the Royal House of Scyths, the Tuatha Denaan, and the fairies, in which all the ancient knowledge has been protected and survives to this day in fairy, Ring Lord, Arthurian, and Grail literature and culture. Scythians, Tuatha Denaan, and Celts indeed were the fair-skinned, blue- and green-eyed, blonde- and red-haired Aryans, the original Atlanteans. Indo-Europeans were the surviving Aryan fifth race[36] from the antediluvian epoch, the unaccounted-for Nephilim races recorded in Scripture.

Tartarus is the most likely avenue for the second race of Nephilim to have survived the flood, through the protection of the prison of Tartarus located in the Otherworld. However, some of this Nephilim race could have survived on an ark, just as Noah did, and which was recorded in Sumerian and Greek mythology. Certainly, Og and Sihon were recorded biblically to have survived the flood somehow, so it is reasonable to deduce many more giants also survived the deluge. The first originating Order of Nephilim, the Gnostic Sethites, was whisked away from the earth and the flood under the protection of fallen angels and recorded by the ancient Gnostics. It is also possible that a third impassioned embrace of human females occurred once more at Sodom and Gomorrah after the flood, creating even more giants, but this was seemingly unnecessary. Whichever the case, giants indeed did survive the flood in significant and greater numbers than did the human race—ostensibly, all male Nephilim that required female humans to multiply. Their progeny became the postdiluvian root to the bloodline of the Antichrist.

CHAPTER 97

THE ANTEDILUVIAN TESTIMONY

But mark this: There will be terrible times in the last days. People … having a form of godliness but denying its power. Have nothing to do with them … always learning but never able to acknowledge the truth. Just as Jannes and Jambres opposed Moses, so also these men oppose truth—men of depraved minds, who, as far as the faith is concerned, are rejected.

—2 Timothy 3:1–8

The last link in the 6,000-year chain of conspiracy revolves around the infamous Freemasonry, Illuminati, Rosicrucian, and Theosophical organizations.

What misleading records do they possess about prehistory? And what is the sacred knowledge reserved for this generation?

Craft Legends are generally not taken all that seriously within the lower initiated ranks of Freemasonry, even though these elemental doctrines have been dutifully preserved among a small band of initiated minds since the beginning of the world; this is according to Mr. Manly P. Hall, a prominent Freemason, writer, and scholar. Moreover, according to Hall, Freemasonry conceals within this elite band of initiated minds a primeval worship, which began at the onset of written history.[1]

Freemasons adopted the Templar belief that they were inheritors of an ancient knowledge dating back to Atlantis.[2] They also built upon the traditions, rituals, and knowledge they inherited from Nimrod and the Tower of Babel.[3] Atlantean knowledge was purportedly passed down through Nimrod and Hermes at Babel to the White Brotherhood of Tutmosis III through Akenhaten/Moses to David, Solomon, the Essenes, and the Greek Mystery Schools sponsored by Pythagorus. They were then received by Rex Deus organizations that included the Knights Templar, Priory of Sion, Freemasonry, Rosicrucianism, and of course, their assorted genitive organizations. Freemasons evidently believe they are the chosen inheritors of the Brotherhood of the Snake through Enoch's hieroglyphics and Mystery Schools, which have preserved spurious knowledge from the beginning.

The Pillars of Lamech, containing inscriptions that detail the seven spurious sciences and remembered as the Archives of the Masons,[4] have been protected within the inner circle of Freemasonry.[5] The overriding message in Freemasonry rituals and allegories is that Freemasonry derived from an ancient source transferred down through history, first by Israel, then the Jews, then Jesus and his brother James/Joseph of Arimathea, and then the Knights Templar and Freemasonry.[6] The Illuminated concede Cain and his rebellious descendants vigorously practiced Masonry and that they collected this knowledge, enshrining it as the Seven Sacred or Liberal Sciences and the knowledge of both good and evil.

One of the key, inner secrets of Freemasonry is the organization's self-admitted awareness of prehistoric Snake gods and their (unexplained) loyalty to these Snake gods who willed their spurious knowledge to certain individuals[7] that was then passed down through anointed Mystery Schools[8] (Snake Brotherhoods) that originated with Enoch the Evil. Alchemists (and thus Rosicrucians), too, believe in the same fallen (Snake) Aeons, calling them "The Invisible Ones" (spirit guides). These Aeons, according to Wilson, are once more making themselves known as they await the imminent emergence of the New Atlantis.[9] Aeons are, in truth, the very same Avatars, fallen angels, demons, gray fairies/aliens that Rosicrucians and Rex Deus Elders are counseled by.

Today, Dragon sovereignty is sustained within Grail kingdoms that maintain the secret repository of ancient knowledge[10] that Enoch likely buried at the foot of the Sphinx. Ergo, firsthand, sullied knowledge from the antediluvian epoch was preserved to delude our naive Terminal Generation about the epoch's highly advanced civilization. Along with all these astonishing antediluvian anonymities, expect that early postdiluvian secrets and fraudulent records falsely testifying to early postdiluvian history will be stored alongside the antediluvian secrets. Remember, Hermes transported them to Egypt with Ham/Osiris, where he likely reburied the heavenly knowledge at the foot of Enoch's monuments to the antediluvian world, the Great Pyramids and the Sphinx.

Some, like Gardner, believe the Pillars of Lamech contain the Anunnaki/ Scythian Testament that was believed in antiquity to have contained everything humankind knew and all that they would ever know. There, too, will be found the Table of Destiny of the Anunnaki, for it is directly associated with the Emerald Tablet of Hermes/Thoth, whose legendary author was Ham and of which Hermes was believed to have been the appointed caretaker, also burying those secrets in Egypt. Pyramids were known as the Sanctuary of Thoth,[11] just as Enoch was thought to be Hermes and Thoth, the builder of the Great Pyramids and the Sphinx.

The Emerald Tablets, too, were believed to contain the secrets to the Seven Spurious Sciences preserved by Enoch, known jointly as the Table of Ham and the Tablua Smaragdina Hermetis. Underscoring all this is the fact that the ancient Dragon Court provided for the priestly Pursuits of Thoth in ancient Egypt,[12] the priests of Therapeutate, and the Great White Brotherhood. The translation is that the Pursuits of Thoth were the preservation and perpetual practice of the revered antediluvian religion and knowledge, kept alive and hidden though secret societies and mysticism and still kept alive by the White Brotherhood of Freemasonry and Rosicrucianism. Since 1408, the Pursuits of Thoth have been advanced within the royal confines of the Indo-European Sarkany Rend, the House of Dragon. Let us reexamine these mind-boggling legends of treasure permeating legends of all cultures, which Rex Deus organizations now claim to hold in deluded trust, awaiting predetermined dates to reveal it all to the world.

The Table of Destiny in the Kabbalah was a divine sapphire, the *Schetiya,* which Moses held in his palm. Theosophists believe it to be the Tablets of the Testimony that Moses was given by God[13] and that was hidden away in the Ark of the Testimony,[14] the Ark of the Covenant in Numbers.[15] It was these mystical and mythical tablets that the maniacal monk and compatriot of St. Bernard, Gerbert d'Aurillac, a known scholar of oriental studies and a practitioner of magic and the hermetic sciences, was thoroughly obsessed with finding. He, too, believed the famous Tablets of Moses were not the tablets with the Law written upon them but rather the numinous Stone of Gnostic, Theosophist, and pantheistic lore. Gerbert truly believed the mystical tablet contained the secrets of the pyramids[16] and much more.

It is the Hebrew Tablets of the Testimony that Theosophists claim to be the Emerald Tablet, the Anunnaki Table of Destiny, the Tablular Smaragdina Hermetis, the Golden Fleece, the Archives of the Masons, the Hall of Records, the Grail Treasure, and the Table of Ham.[17] According to Markale, the Tablets are also the same as the Golden Apples (Tree of Good And Evil) from the Garden of Hesperides (Eden) and the apples won by Hercules (a Nephilim) from the daughters of Atlas (more Nephilim), known as the Pleiades (the stars of the flood catastrophe), where the garden was guarded by another giant and a dragon.[18]

But how can this be, when the Bible states the Tablets of the Testimony were simply two stones that God inscribed the Ten Commandments on?[19] Theosophists believe Exodus[20] states that Moses carried down three stones and not just the two generally believed,[21] even though the Bible only states two in Exodus;[22] although, in some variations, *tablets* is plural, without a specific quantity. Theosophists support their astonishing claim by stating Moses was recorded as writing on stone tablets in Exodus 34:28; whereas in all other references, the Bible clearly states it was God who wrote on the tablets with His finger.[23] It is the tablets that Moses allegedly inscribed upon that Theosophists claim contained the Ten Commandments, but they were not the true Tablets of Testimony created and written with the finger of God, even though Scripture clearly refers to the stone tablets as the "testimony" with the Ten Commandments inscribed upon them by the finger of God (Exod. 32:15–16; Deut. 9:10–11).

Theosophists seize upon this supposed third Tablet of the Testimony placed in the Ark of the Testimony[24] in Exodus and Deuteronomy[25] and not the stone tablets Moses supposedly scribed that contain the Ten Commandments. This third tablet was not just a stone but rather a sapphire stone,just as old biblical manuscripts recorded the tablets as Hebrew *leshen*, for *sappir*. Again, the Tablets of the Testimony in Kabbalah lore were a divine sapphire, the *Schetiya*, which Moses held in the palm of his hand. This sapphire tablet is additionally believed to be indistinguishable from the Testament of a Lost Civilization that Abraham allegedly received (likely from Melchizedek) and that Moses eventually inherited. This supposed sapphire is believed to contain all the knowledge that man ever knew or ever would come to know, as was affirmed regarding the Emerald Tablet, the Table of Destiny of the Anunnaki, the Table of Ham, the Tablets of Hermes, the Golden Fleece, and so on. In fact, to Sumerians, the Abraham and Moses Tablet was actually recognized as the Table of Destiny, and it was handed down to humankind from the sons of Anu, Enki, and Enlil. Kabbalist doctrine also declares the Table of Destiny was a sapphire inherited by Moses and then Solomon.[26]

Similarly, the Golden Fleece of Jason and the Argonauts contained all the secrets and knowledge of the Sages of the Egyptian, Assyrian, and Chaldean civilizations. *Argonaut* extends out of the name of the ship Argo, while the ship was named after its builder. Both Argonaut and Argo are derivatives of *Argus*, which, not coincidently, is the Greek word employed to denote *watchers* or “guardians.” The eighteenth-century Hermeticist Naxagoras declared the Golden Fleece was, indeed, synonymous with Hermes and the Emerald Tablets[27] and by association, then, synonymous with the Anunnaki Table of Destiny, the Table of Ham, the Tablet of the Testimony, and all other such allegorical appellations denoting this antediluvian knowledge.

The Sumerian Table of Destiny was first mentioned in the Seven Tablets of the *Enuma Elish*, meaning “from on high”[28] or “in the beginning.” It was recovered from the library of *Ashurbanipal*,[29] a pre-Genesis epic composed around 3500 B.C.E. Again, the Table of Destiny allegedly contained all that mankind ever knew or ever would know. This was the knowledge Hermes transcribed onto the Emerald Tablet, the contents from the two Pillars of Lamech and Enoch[30] and the knowledge from the hidden vaults of Enoch. Therefore, all these seemingly unconnected legends refer to the same bank of knowledge: the gnosis of Atlantis; antediluvian wisdom; the forbidden knowledge of Lamech, Enoch, Cain, and the Nephilim, which was tutored to the descendants of Cain by the infamous Snake angels.

These are essentially the same legends Knight and Lomas write about. They contend Solomon exhumed this antediluvian treasure when he inadvertently discovered the ancient temple of Enoch while searching for a site to build the first temple. As this legend goes, Solomon discovered the vaults of knowledge containing Enoch's arts and sciences, which he later moved to secret chambers built beneath the Jewish temple on Mount Moriah. Through these assorted legends and through the legends of Moses inheriting the secret arts of mysticism from the Egyptians, Solomon has been transformed from his original place in traditional Jewish history as an important inheritor of the Messianic, dynasty of David into an important figure in the mystical, messianic Dragon bloodline. In fact, Merlin literature of subsequent ages regarded Solomon as the wisest of all sages.[31]

It is the reference to all this antediluvian treasure and knowledge known by all its allegorical appellations that brings the Templars' role in Grail allegories into focus. As you will recall, Templars appeared in Eshenbach's Grail romance as an elite corps of Grail guardians, the (Snake) Brotherhood of the Red Cross, plotting world domination. In addition, the Templars were assigned to guard the Grail/Stone of God, the "One that Fell from Heaven," along with the dark angels who did not take part in the sexual deviance displayed at Mount Hermon.[32] When you peel all the mystical Legominism layers back, this Stone from Heaven is none other than the supposed sapphire that dropped from Lucifer's settings when he fell in disgrace from heaven.[33] Templars allegedly rediscovered the Stone from Heaven during their excavations at Jerusalem.

We have covered in the first part of this book the finding that all this forbidden heavenly knowledge, the ancient Templar knowledge from Atlantis, was contraband provided to the descendants of Cain and the Nephilim by infamous dark angels, just as George Syncellius, the eighth-century C.E. monk, testified to concerning the revelation of forbidden secrets.[34] I cannot underscore this point aggressively enough: the heavenly sciences and knowledge were corrupted, engineered, and preserved, all to delude this unsuspecting generation and get it to rebel away from God and into destruction. This knowledge has been cleverly hidden and carefully guarded within a secret trust until its time of destiny. References to this knowledge have remained unaccountably alive and well in myths and legends from all cultures around the world, all waiting for the Antichrist and his reign of terror that is to come. Templars believe that indeed this Golden Age once existed and will once more, in the New Age of light,[35] Aquarius, and the end times.

Contemporary, spurious advocates believe the original founders of Masonry were the sons and daughters of Cain and Enoch, namely Lamech, Jabal, Jubal, Tubal-Cain, and Naamah,[36] those names listed in Genesis for their infamy. The evil Cainite patriarchs employed the forbidden knowledge from the Seven Sacred Sciences, the Seven Curses of Cain, to previously unknown heights, which then destroyed their age via the flood.

Their diabolical descendants, guided by the hidden hand of history and with the same illicit knowledge, will soon destroy this age through fire. They will implement caches of knowledge alongside the powers of the dark angels to craft astonishing feats, signs, and miracles. They will mingle their mystical magic show with the seemingly incontrovertible pedigree of the Antichrist’s spurious messianic credentials, remarkable revelations of a highly advanced antediluvian civilization destroyed by God, and the alien rebellion against God—all to entice the final rebellion.

CHAPTER 98

THE KHEM OF MENDES

From the Israelite community he is to take two male goats for a sin offering and a ram for a burnt offering. Aaron is to offer the bull for his own sin offering to make atonement for himself and his household. Then he is to take the two goats and present them before the Lord at the entrance to the Tent of Meeting. He is to cast lots for the two goats—one lot for the Lord and the other for the scapegoat [goat of removal; Hebrew azazel, note b]. Aaron shall bring the goat whose lot falls to the Lord and sacrifice it for a sin offering. But the goat chosen by lot as the scapegoat [azazel] shall be presented alive before the Lord to be used for making atonement by sending it into the desert as a scapegoat.

—Leviticus 16:5–10

Why is the Goat of Mendes clearly associated with Rosicrucian and Alchemy?[1] And what is the ominous connection that makes this important?

Azazel, leader of the rebellious angels at Mount Hermon and the scapegoat for angelic punishment, is the symbolic goat hung upside down in the pictogram/pentagram of the Goat of Mendes.

In Rosicrucianism, *Genesis* derives equally from the Gene of Isis and from the Greek word *Genes*, meaning "born of a kind."[2] Rosicrucians believe in those born of a kind, those born of the Gene of Isis (Gaea and Ninkhursag) and fallen angels, the bloodlines of Nephilim, fairies, and the Dragon Court. Marshall believes the Kabbalah, from which Rosicrucianism derives, was a byproduct of a super race of giants (the spark of the divine) recorded in Genesis 6 and the knowledge taught to the super race by Azazel.[3]

George Ivanovich Gurdjieff, author of *Beelzebub's Tales to His Grandson*, states alchemy was a pseudoscience and that there was, in truth, a "genuine alchemy," a "great science" that was known to humankind before Schwaller's devolution theory from a super race of advanced giants.[4] Beelzebub is chief ruler of the demons.[5] Jews consider Beelzebub a heathen god, the supreme evil spirit[6] and chief of demons—the infamous Azazel, also identified as Baal from the Canaanite cult of the bull.

Andre Vandenbroeck, a student of Schwaller De Lubicz and his devolution from giants theory, believed alchemy was a by-product of the Absolute (science and theology of Atlantis) and the perfect science inherited by pharonic theocracy.[7] Philosophy of the Absolute, or Supreme Ideal-Real, is the wisdom of philosophy. This is the name philosophy bestows upon this unitary conception, and it is the highest religious development of humanity, all through its peculiar sciences. The Absolute philosophy teaches humankind to achieve the perfect ethical spirit. Thus the Absolute frees humankind from the conditions of dependence[8] (on God).

Hence, Rosicrucians believe alchemy is the genuine Absolute science of Atlantis and that it, if properly developed, would enable the world to introduce the New Golden Age, the New Atlantis. They believe alchemy originated in a lost civilization destroyed by catastrophe and that it was saved and sent along with envoys to postdiluvian India, China, and Egypt,[9] likely with the Seven Mystical Sages recorded in the numerous polytheist legends. Alchemy is the core element to Western esoteric tradition, a comprehensive philosophy of matter, including physics, chemistry, biology, medicine, meteorology, herbalism, embryology, psychology, economics, and mystical religion. Alchemists believe publishing their secrets could bring about the destruction of the world,[10] and I deduce from the alchemist's concerns that they believe only the so-called illuminated are able to control such knowledge and the power it brings.

Believing this, Templar Rosicrucians established their own Gnostic church, the Keeper of Wisdom, according to Markale. This secret church (Brotherhood of the Snake), comprised of a college of thirty-three elected Sages/Adepts, was formed on May 6, 1317; they are the Elders of the Rose and Cross, the foundation to modern Rosicrucianism,[11] formed after the Vatican dismantled the Templar Order. This college, no doubt, was fashioned to safeguard Templar treasures until other organizations and institutions could be established to carry on their secret traditions. This Snake Brotherhood created by the elders of Rex Deus was the basis for the formation of the Invisible College of Freemasonry and Rosicrucianism.

Freemasonry's founder was the architect and builder of the mysterious and famous church at Rosslyn, Scotland. According to Knight and Lomas, Rosslyn Chapel is not a Christian shrine but rather a Knights Templar copy of the ruined Jerusalem Temple;[12] it is a shrine to mark the transition from Templarism to Freemasonry.[13] Rosslyn contains numerous Celtic and Norse images and statues, connecting Rex Deus/Dragon roots back to Celtic and Norse mythologies and genealogies. Rosslyn is a monument to The Genesis 6 Conspiracy, worthy enough for the true spurious patriot to include as a must-see destination on his or her Theosophist pilgrimage en route to enlightenment and godhood. Even the appellation "Rosslyn" is mystical in its roots, for *Rosslyn* translates from ancient Gaelic as "ancient knowledge passed down the generations."[14] Rosslyn, in Gardner's opinion, is an occultist "story in stone," bound in a framework of figurative carvings, featuring fallen angels, winding serpents, and dragons. Robert Brydon, a Rosslyn archivist, also describes Rosslyn as an allegorical book in stone.[15]

Rosslyn's construction began in 1441, under the eye of William St. Claire, who drafted the finest Masons of Europe to build his monument, the new Jerusalem Temple.[16] Rosslyn was constructed after St. Claire had sojourned through Italy, where he became inspired and invigorated to rush back to Scotland with skilled Italian Masons to build Rosslyn Chapel.[17]

Rosslyn, according to Freemasons, was built as a repository for the Jerusalem documents, knowledge, and treasures of the princes of Jerusalem. Again, according to Freemason records, Templars, in fact, did transfer the documents, treasures, and knowledge unearthed in Jerusalem to Scotland in 1140 C.E., to the Sinclair family, who later built Rosslyn to hold these secrets. Remember, a Sinclair was one of the founding Knights of the Order.

William St. Claire was an Adept of spurious beliefs regarding the important role fallen angels played in the antediluvian epoch. Thus, Rosslyn displays numerous statues of intrigue, portraying in their pose numinous signs from Freemasonry, suggesting to Gardner that the statues are monuments to the rebellious fallen angels (and their crimes against creation).

Among those angelic statues is one portrayed hung upside down and bound by a rope. He is a male with wings, and a rope trails away, forming a *Z* or a transposed *S*.[18] The angel is suspended by a rope tied to his legs. He is, according to Freemason authors, the angel most instrumental in causing the flood.[19] The male angel models a beard and thwarts a necklace. It represents a Freemasonry allegory: the Pearls of Wisdom given to humanity by dark angels. This angel is, of course, the infamous Azazel who passed on additional illicit knowledge of heaven to humankind and taught humankind the art and brutality of war. This sculpture is a clear representation of the pictogram of the Goat of Mendes and Azazel, with the (scape) goat hung upside down. It is a representation of Azazel being hung in Orion in spurious lore.[20]

Remember that *Orion* derives from the Aramaic word *Nephila,* meaning “those who are from Orion.”[21] Blake and Blezard write that Orion held unequalled importance for ancient cultures; it was always linked to giants and heroes[22] and was the likely Titan Antichrist figure. Similar testimony is found among the hymns of both the *Ramayana* and *Mahabarata Veda*s, in which an ancient (divine) king named Trisanku transcended into the heavens via one of the seven sages and now shines as the constellation Orion.[23]

Dr. Phyllis Pitluga from Chicago’s Adler Planetarium believes the spiders in the famous Nazca Lines of Peru were intended to be a monument to Orion, while the three lines surrounding them represent the three stars of Orion’s belt, just as the three pyramids at Giza do. Bauval believes the Orion monuments marked the beginning of a special epoch of the gods, which began in 10,500 B.C.E.[24] Remember, as well, the cherubim-like Sphinx points to Orion as a memorial (to Azazel). Some geologists dated the Sphinx to 10,500 B.C.E., because the water erosion that scars the Sphinx could only have occurred then.

Azazel's portion among animals was the goat, according to the twelfth -century rabbi Moses Ben Nahem. The ecclesiastical Enoch said Azazel was cast into a place called *Dudael*, a place where jagged rocks were placed on him.[25] In Old Testament law, a second goat was sacrificed on the Day of Atonement[26] to a ruler/archon/angel, whose realm was located in desolation, with Azazel the scapegoat. This goat was pushed over the edge of a cliff, symbolizing Azazel's punishment in the wilderness of the universe.[27] The Goat of Mendes then represents Azazel being hung in the Abyss of the universe,[28] the Leviticus scapegoat[29] for angelic crimes and the repugnant sponsor for the reprobate race of giants.

Azazel is the Khem of Mendes in Alchemy and Rosicrucianism.[30] Khem, like Azazel, was the source of illicit knowledge, the fallen angel who provided Ishtar God's name.[31] Azazel is the Goat of Mendes, in the same spirit as Ham, where the Goat of Mendes was upheld as the symbolic representation of Ham's title "The Archon of the Tenth Age of Capricorn." The Khem of Mendes is further portrayed in alchemy and Rosicrucianism as a goat renowned as the angel of Capricorn.[32] Azazel represents the five-petal star of Venus, the pentagram, and the dog rose. All this directly relates back to Lucifer, who owns the zodiacal image of Capricornus, the leaping goat, whose attribute is liberty.[33] The goat, too, according to Gerald Massey, author of *Ancient Egypt and the Light of the World*, is renowned as the zodiacal sign of Mendes in the Egyptian zodiac,[34] once more neatly linking all allegories together.

Alchemy is the science of overcoming blackness, while *Khem* is Egyptian for "blackness." In alchemy, Khem is the black ruler of Mendes, Azazel,[35] and the black is the blackness of the wilderness of the universe, where he is hung in Orion. Alchemy is the black science, black magic. Similarly, in its original metaphoric form in ancient Egypt, the goat was symbolic as the Khem of Capricorn,[36] Azazel. Additionally, *khem* is the root word of "alchemy." The zodiacal sign of the goat was first introduced to the postdiluvian Egyptians, as you will recall, by the grandson of Nimrod, Pharaoh Raneb, circa 2800 B.C.E., in the ancient city of Mendes.

Therefore, the black ruler of Mendes and the patriarch of the black sciences is Azazel.

Satanic cults and the Goat of Mendes pentagram all derive from Azazel.[37] The pentagram was not only important to alchemists, Rosicrucians, Freemasons, and Templars, but also it was an important symbol for Masonic and pantheistic intellectuals of ages past, such as Euclid, Pythagorus, and Plato. To Babylonian sages, the pentagram was a symbol representing wisdom and knowledge.[38] This, no doubt, symbolized Azazel and the forbidden wisdom he provided to humankind.

Rosslyn is an abomination memorializing the rebellion, while secretly marking a reticent Snake pedigree for contemporary rebels in their conspiracy to bring about the New Atlantis ruled by the descendants of Nephilim and the enslavement of humankind. The angel hung upside down at Rosslyn is the repugnant Snake, Azazel the destroyer (Apollyon/Abaddon), prophesied to be released in the last days.

Let us now permit Satan to testify to his own serpentine legacy and conspiracy that has blackened Adam’s seed for 6,000 years, as recorded in the Gnostic Acts of Thomas:

> … and when he had said this a great serpent came out of a hole, darting his head and lashing his tail on the ground…. But the apostle questioned him saying: “Tell me what seed and what race you are.” And he said to him: “I am a reptile of reptile nature, the baleful son of a baleful father; I am son of him who hurt and smote the four standing brothers; I am son of him who sits upon the throne and has power over Creation which is under heaven…. I am he who entered through the fence into Paradise and said to Eve all the things my father charged me to say to her; I am he who kindled and inflamed Cain to slay his own brother, and because of me thorns and thistles sprang up on the earth; I am he who hurled the angels down from above, and bound them in lusts for women, that earthborn children might come from them and I fulfill my will in them; I am he who hardened Pharaoh’s heart, that he might slay the children of Israel and enslave them in the yoke of cruelty; I am he who led the multitude astray in the wilderness, when they made the calf; I am he who inflamed Herod and kindled Caiaphas to the false accusation of the lie before Pilate; for this was fitting for me; I am he who kindled Judas and bribed him to betray Christ to death … I am a kinsman of him [Antichrist] who is to come from the east, to whom also is given power to do with what he will on the earth.”[39]

Secret organizations now control and will very soon seize world government, which is designed to introduce Satan’s kinsman, the Antichrist, from the east. Scripture states, “Out of them came another horn, which started small but grew in power to the south and to the east and toward the Beautiful Land. It grew until it reached the host of the heavens, and it threw some of the starry host down to the earth and trampled on them. It set itself up to be as great as the Prince of the host” (Dan. 8:9–11).

EPILOGUE: WHAT MUST TAKE PLACE WILL TAKE PLACE

When the power of the holy people has been finally broken, all these things will be completed.

—Daniel 12:7

This book has beamed some sobering light on the sedition taking shape on a worldwide scale today.

I do not believe this book or any known Christian organization can prevent the relentless procession of juggernauts destined for global occupation. In fact, I do not believe this book will in any way stall the descendants of giants, and their powerful array of secret societies' march to global occupation. They are too entrenched, too well financed, and too well organized. It is essentially a *fait accompli*, projected to be completed shortly, on their predetermined timetable. All has been preordained by God Most High to succeed for a short time in the not-so-distant future.

God is not justifying the evil and pain that has plagued the age of Adam, but rather, He is redeeming creation through free choice. Humankind originally chose independence from God in Eden, which begat millennia upon millennia overflowing with rebellion and suffering. God will achieve all His desires without violating human free choice, even though humankind is angry with God, who permitted free choice. God has not, will not, and does not need to intervene against our free choice, for His ultimate purposes are stronger than our free choice. The hidden hand of hubris haunting humankind's history must be revealed, along with its duplicity and its surreptitious, serpentine organization. Its sins against humanity must ultimately be reconciled with our world and creation—all through free choice.

We as individuals, however, must begin to relinquish our independence, for all our evil and self-destruction perilously flow from our independence. God will save us from the consequences of our free choice, just as our faith comes from our free choice. Therefore, my intention has been to raise awareness to monotheists about the times we are in and the allegories of rebellion. Perhaps a few wayward people will exercise their free choice for God and Jesus because of this book.

Our instructions are clear:

> All the inhabitants of the earth will worship the beast—all whose names have not been written in the book of life belonging to the Lamb that was slain from Creation of the world. He who has an ear, let him hear. If anyone is given into captivity, into captivity he will go. If anyone is to be killed with the sword, with the sword he will be killed. This calls for patient endurance on the part of the saints.
>
> —Revelation 13:7–10

> Some of the wise will stumble, so that they may be refined, purified, and made spotless until the time of the end, for it will still come at its appointed time.
>
> —Daniel 11:35

> Many will be purified, made spotless and refined, but the wicked will continue to be wicked. None of the wicked will understand, but those who are wise will understand.
>
> —Daniel 12:10

Our civilization will soon face a powerful assault against our collective intelligence, a clandestine war of propaganda designed to delude our collective consciousness. This will be a war waged in reason, premeditated to subdue monotheistic faith and to capture our spirits.

Soon we will be overwhelmed with contrived testimonies repudiating monotheistic doctrine through falsified facts and revisionist histories and buttressed by false signs, mesmerizing miracles, and of course, interventionist aliens. Only our faith will be able to stand against the deceptions of rebellion. Even so, reason and knowledge will overwhelm faith. This is why all those loyal to God Most High will be so conspicuous in their loyalties, when they are trapped in a world brainwashed by spurious delusions. Saints will appear to be fanatical cultists sabotaging Utopia and will be persecuted as subhuman dogmatists who militantly deny science and knowledge.

Scripture will be transformed into allegorical blasphemies, in the same spirit of past and current spurious literature. Just as arcane secrets were encrypted into Grail literature, so will the purported keys to biblical secrets be discovered, deciphering the alleged allegories and messages. The literal translation will be trashed, replaced by a New Age scripture with twisted agendas. Babylon will be dressed like a lamb, but it will talk like a dragon.[1] A revisionist and disingenuous agenda of Jesus will suddenly be released from its supposed ingenious Peshur/Legominism code, permitting Jesus for the first time in 2,000 years to take His so-called rightful place alongside Buddha, Zarathrustra, and others. The Peshur code will lift the burden of deity from Jesus, permitting Jesus to take His purported rightful place among the bloodline of the Dragon Court.

Whatever your perspective or allegiance, it is imperative to appreciate that these prophesied perilous times are indeed upon us, whether you wish to sit up and take notice or not. I implore you to watch. Be aware! The events that must take place[2] are taking place; the Omnipotent God of Israel, the God Most High, has ordained them.

Therefore, let not the terrible times of Jacob’s trouble continue to divide the saints of the three great monotheistic faiths. God gave us Scripture to encourage and unite the saints, not to separate them. Let the suffering from the fires of forthcoming tribulation forge the monotheistic faithful together, united under God, Jesus, and the Holy Spirit.

May the wise read and understand what I believe to be the three surviving Scriptures. May Christians read the Qur’an, finding reassurance to go on, knowing already that a third Scripture undoubtedly testifies to Jesus’ authenticity, that Jesus is undeniably the Messiah and Word the New Testament proclaims and the Old Testament promised. Moreover, through reading the Qur’an, Christians will learn more regarding the solemn nature of the coming judgment in the afterlife, as well as the essential context and details validating the Old Testament.

May Muslims break free of Fascist Islam to lean on the words of their scripture, leading them back to the Old and New Testaments, just as the Qur’an instructs. For when the Muslims do, they will understand the Qur’an validates the first Two Testaments, thereby comprehending their scripture through the first two. In doing so, Muslims will anticipate the return of the end-time Savior, the Qur’an-proclaimed Word and Messiah, Jesus, and will not be misled into destruction by the Antichrist or the False Arab messiah promised by Fascist Islam and the Hadith.

May the people of Judah and the lost tribes of Israel begin to accept the New Testament and the Qur'an in the coming years. For when they do, they will understand what is to befall them and who is to lead them to safety, even as they awake from the fog of their punishment. Israel will awake to finally understand their destiny that the two New Testaments testify to, that Jesus is their Messiah, who will take all of Israel and Judah back to the Land of the Holy Covenant in the mega miracle promised for the end times: the second exodus.

I am not preaching "Chrislam." I am a Christian who believes in the Word of God. I am merely advocating that all three monotheist faiths read each other's Scriptures and understand them for what they say and not what others say about them. We will require each other's support and prayers in the perilous times to come. Have faith in God's Scriptures. Leave divine judgment for God and Jesus.

In light of this book's solemn conclusions, only three options present themselves. The first choice will be to bury one's head in the proverbial sand, immaturely pretending all this is not so. Those who choose this option will be swept along in the current of populism, succumbing to global pressure and fraudulent evidence set forth, and then led unceremoniously into destruction by the rebellious forces. Revelation 3:15–16 records that God will not accept the indecisive: "I know your deeds, that you are neither cold nor hot. I wish you were either one or the other! So because you are lukewarm—neither hot nor cold—I am about to spit you out of my mouth." Just being a nice or "good" person will not suffice; a clear decision made with one's free choice will be required.

The second choice will be to accept the coming delusion, which will unite the world under one clandestine government set adroitly against God Most High. At least those individuals will be making a choice to be cold to God Most High, but here is God's warning:

> If anyone worships the beast and his image and receives the mark on the forehead or on the hand, he, too, will drink of the wine of God's fury, which has been poured out in full strength into the cup of his wrath. He will be tormented with burning sulfur in the presence of holy angels and of the Lamb. And the smoke of their torment rises for ever and ever. There is no rest day or night for those who worship the beast and his image, or for anyone who receives the mark of his name.
>
> —Revelation 14:9–11

Only the spurious opposition and the rebellious masses whose names are not written in the Book of Life[3] will choose Satan, just as his rebellious allies have been planning for thousands of years.

Choice three will be to choose Jesus, the Holy Spirit, and the God Most High. This will soon appear to be the most illogical and insane choice to many, but it will be the most rewarding. True free choice requires consummate courage, wisdom, faith, and sacrifice to stand steadfast against a world gone mad, an intoxicated world intolerant to all who are loyal to the God Most High. If you freely choose God, you will be persecuted and cast as a pariah, a criminal fanatic, a subhuman vermin, and an intolerant barbarian. Others will categorize you as a subhuman valuable only for slavery, torture, and genocide. But it is only this righteous option that comes with its own eternal rewards:

> This calls for patient endurance on the part of the saints who obey God’s commandments and remain faithful to Jesus. “Write: Blessed are the dead, who die in the Lord from now on,” “Yes,” says the Spirit. “They will rest from their labor, for their deeds will follow them.”
>
> —Revelation 14:12–13

The choices are out there for all. The end time is the dramatic denouement to humankind’s destiny, predetermined by the free choice incident at Eden. The choice is all up to you and no one else. All will be judged according to their choices, deeds, faith, and what God finds in their hearts. Remember: indecision is a decision, so please choose God. Be loyal. Be patient. Be respectful. Help others. Prepare to endure. And be a light in the darkness that is surely coming.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

DICTIONARIES AND ENCYCLOPEDIAS

The Encyclopedia Americana. Montreal, Toronto, Vancouver, Winnipeg: Americana Corporation of Canada Ltd., 1956.

Webster's New Compact Format Dictionary. New York: Essential Publications, ProSales Inc., 1986.

Leeming, David, and Margaret Leeming. *A Dictionary of Creation Myths*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1995.

Mackillop, James. *Dictionary of Celtic Mythology*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1998.

Youngblood, R. F., F. F. Bruce, and R. K. Harrison. *Nelson's New Illustrated Bible Dictionary*. Oxford, England: Nelson Publishers, 1995.

Unger, Merrill F., and R. K. Harrison. *The New Unger's Bible Dictionary*. Chicago: The Moody Bible Institute, 1988.

OTHER ANCIENT HOLY BOOKS AND SOURCES

Barnstone, Willis. *The Other Bible*. New York: HarperCollins, 1984.

Blenkinopp, Joseph. *The Pentateuch*. New York: Doubleday, A Division of Bantam Doubleday Dell Publishing Group, Inc., 1992.

Connell, Janice T. *The Visions of the Children: The Apparitions of The Blessed Mother at Medjugorje*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1992.

Freke, Timothy, and Peter Gandy. *The Hermetica*: *The Lost Wisdom of the Pharaohs*. London: Judy Piatkus Publishing Ltd., 1998.

Ginzberg, Louis. *Legends of the Bible*. Old Saybrook, CT: Jewish Publication Society of America, 1956.

Gonsalez-Wipper, Migene. *The Return of the Angels*. St. Paul, MN: Llewellyn Publications, A Division of Llewellyn Worldwide Ltd., 1999.

Horne, Charles F. *The Rig-Veda The Oldest Aryan Book 2000–1000 B.C.* Kessinger Publishing, ISBN: 076610012X.

——. *The Atharva Veda And The Brahmanas 1000 B.C.* Kessinger Publishing, ISBN: 076610012X.

Layton, Bentley. *The Gnostic Scriptures: Ancient Wisdom For The New Age*. New York: Doubleday, A Division of Bantam Doubleday Dell Publishing Group, Inc., 1995.

Mackey, Albert. *The History of Freemasonry*. New York: Gramercy Books, A Division of Random House Value Publishing, Inc., 1996.

Miller, Robert J. *The Complete Gospels*. Sonoma, CA: Polebridge Press, 1994.

Pagels, Elaine, and Karen L. King. *Reading Judas: The Gospel of Judas And The Shaping of Christianity*. New York: Penguin Group, Inc., 2007.

Plutarch. *Selected Lives, The Parallel Lives of the Noble Grecians And Romans*. Franklin Center, PA: The Heirloom Library of H. R. Koehn of the Franklin Library, 1982, from the Dryden Translation of 1676.

Recinos, Adrian, Delia Goetz, and Sylvanus G. Morley. *Popol Vuh, The Ancient Book of the Ancient Quiche Maya*. Norman, OK: The University of Oklahoma Press, Publishing Division, 1950.

Robinson, James M. *The Nag Hammadi Library*. New York: HarperCollins Publishers, 1990.

Tacitus, *The Annals of Tacitus*. Franklin Center, PA: From The Heirloom Library of H. R. Koehn, trans. Church, Alfred John, and William Jackson Brodribb. Franklin Center, PA: The Franklin Library, 1982.

Whiston, William, commentary by Paul L. Maier. *The New Complete Works of Josephus*. Grand Rapids, MI: Kregel Publications, A Division of Kregel, Inc., 1999.

DOCUMENTS

The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion, Signed by the representative of Zion, of the Thirty-third Degree.

BOOKS

Addison, Charles G., and David Hatcher Childress. *The History of the Knights Templar*. Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001.

Alford, Alan F. *When the Gods Came Down*. London: Hodder and Stoughton, 2000.

Armstrong, Karen. *A History of God: The 4,000 Year Quest of Judaism, Christianity, and Islam*. New York: Ballentine Books A Division of Random House Inc., 1993.

Armstrong, Karen. *The Bible: A Biography.* Vancouver, BC: Douglas And McIntyre Ltd., 2007.

Armstrong, Karen. *The Great Transformation: The Beginning of Our Religious Traditions*. Toronto, ON: Vintage Canada, A Division of Random House of Canada, 2006.

Baigent, Michael, Richard Leigh, and Henry Lincoln. *The Holy Blood and the Holy Grail*. London: Arrow Books Limited, Random House UK Ltd., 1996.

Baigent, Michael. *Ancient Mysteries: A History through Evolution and Magic*. Toronto, ON: Penguin Books Canada Ltd., 1998.

——. *Ancient Traces*. Toronto, ON: Penguin Books Canada Ltd., 1998.

Baigent, Michael, and Richard Leigh. *The Elixir and the Stone*. Toronto, ON: Penguin Books Canada Ltd., Toronto, Canada, 1997.

——. *Secret Germany: Stauffenberg and the Mystical Crusade against Hitler*. London: Arrow Books, The Random House Group Limited, 2006.

Bauer, Susan Wise. *The History of the Ancient World from the Earliest Accounts to the Fall of Rome*. New York: W. W. Norton & Company, Inc., 2007.

Berlitz, Charles. *The Mystery of Atlantis*. New York: Nordon Publications Inc., 1969.

Bierlein, J.F. *Parallel Myths*. Toronto, ON: Ballantine Publishing Group, A Division of Random House Inc. Canada Ltd., 1994.

Blake, Peter, and Paul S. Blezard. *The Arcadian Cipher*. London: Pan Books: An Imprint of Pan Macmillan Ltd., 2001.

Booth, Mark. *The Secret History of the World as Laid out by the Secret Societies*. Woodstock, NY: The Overlook Press, Peter Mayer Publishers Inc., 2008.

Bord, Janet. *Fairies*. New York: Dell Publishing, A Division of Bantam Doubleday Publishing Group, 1997.

Boyd, A., and Edward K. Boyd. *Letters from a Skeptic*. Colorado Springs: Cook Communications Ministries, 2004.

Brennan, Herbie. *The Atlantis Enigma*. London: Judy Piatkus Publishers Ltd., 1999.

Braden, Gregg. *The Divine Matrix Bridging Time, Space, Miracles, and Belief*. Carlsbad, CA: Hay House Inc., 2007.

Brown, Dan. *Angels and Demons*. New York: Pocket Books, A Division of Simon & Schuster, Inc., 2000.

——. *The Da Vinci Code*. New York: Doubleday, A Division of Random House Inc., 2003.

Browne, Sylvia. *Secret Societies and How They Affect Our Lives Today*. Carlsbad, CA: 2007.

Cotterrell, Maurice M. *The Super Gods*. London: Thorsons, An Imprint of HarperCollins Publishers, 1997.

Cahill, Thomas. *How the Irish Saved Civilization*. Toronto, ON: Anchor Books, A Division of Random House Canada Limited, 1995.

——. *The Gifts of the Jews*. Toronto, ON: Anchor Books: A Division of Random House Canada Limited, 1999.

Collins, Andrew. *From the Ashes of Angels*. Toronto, ON: Penguin Group, Penguin Books Canada Ltd., 1997.

Cotterell, Maurice M., and Adrian Gilbert. *The Mayan Prophecies: Unlocking the Secrets of a Lost Civilization*. Rockport, MA: Element Books, 1996.

Cotterell, Maurice. *The Tutankhamun Prophecies: The Sacred Secrets of the Mayas, Egyptians and Freemasons*. London: Headline Publishing, a division of Hodder Headline PLC, 1999.

Davies, John. *The Celts*. London: Cassell & Co, A Member of the Orion Publishing Group, 2000.

Donnelly, Ignatius. *Atlantis The Antediluvian World*. New York: Dover Publications Inc., 1976.

Eason, Cassandra. *A Complete Guide to Fairies and Magical Beings*. London: Judy Piatkus Publishers Limited, 2001.

Eisenman, Robert, and Michael Wise. *The Dead Sea Scrolls Uncovered*. New York: Penguin Group Penguin Books USA Inc., 1992.

Ellis, Peter Beresford. *The Celts*. London: Robinson, An Imprint of Constable & Robinson, 2003.

Epperson, Ralph A. *Masonry Conspiracy against Christianity*. Tucson, AZ: Publius Press, 1997.

Evans, Jonathan. *Dragons Myth and Legend*. Lewes, East Sussex, UK: Prospero Books by arrangement with Ivy Press, 2008.

Evans, Lorraine. *Kingdom of the Ark*. London: Simon And Schuster UK Ltd., 2000.

Evans-Wentz, W. Y. *The Fairy Faith in Celtic Countries*. Mineola, NY: Dover Publications, 2002.

Flemming, Fergus. *Heroes of the Dawn Celtic Myth*. London: Duncan Baird Publishers, 1996.

Furlong, David. *The Keys to the Temple*. London: Judy Piatkus Publishers Ltd., 1997.

Gadalla, Moustafa. *Historical Deception: The Untold Story of Ancient Egypt*. Erie, PA: Bastet Publishing, 1996.

Gardner, Laurence. *Bloodline of the Holy Grail*. Rockport, MA: Element Books Inc., 1996.

——. *Genesis of the Grail Kings*. London: Bantam Press, a Division of Transworld Publishers, 2000.

——. *Lost Secrets of the Sacred Ark*. London: Harper Element, An Imprint of HarperCollins Publishers, London, England, 2003.

——. *Realm of the Ring Lords*. Gloucester, MA: Fair Winds Press, 2003.

——. *The Shadow of Solomon*. London: Harper Element, An Imprint of HarperCollins Publishers, 2005.

Gilbert, Adrian, Alan Wilson, and Baram Blackett. *Holy Kingdom*. London: Corgi Books, Transworld Publishers Ltd., 1999.

Gilbert, Adrian. *Signs in the Sky*. London: Bantam Press, A Division of Transworld Publishers, 2000.

Gittins, Ian. *Unlocking the Masonic Code Secrets of the Solomon Key*. London: Collins, An Imprint of HarperCollins Publishers, 2007.

Godman, Peter. *Hitler And The Vatican*. New York: Free Press, A Division of Simon & Schuster, Inc., 2004.

Greer, John Michael. *Atlantis: Ancient Legacy, Hidden Prophecy*. Woodbury, MN: Llewellyn Publications, A Division of Llewellyn

Worldwide Ltd., 2007.

——. *The Element Encyclopedia of Secret Societies*. London: Harper Element, An Imprint of HarperCollins Publishers, Hammersmith, 2006.

Hancock, Graham. *Fingerprints of The Gods*. Toronto, ON: McClelland Bantam Inc., 1996.

——. *The Sign and the Seal*. Toronto, ON: Doubleday Canada Limited, 1993.

——. *Underworld, The Mysterious Origins of Civilization*. Toronto, ON: Anchor Canada Edition, A Division of Random House of Canada Limited, 2003.

Hancock, Graham, and Robert Bauval. *The Message of The Sphinx*. Toronto, ON: Doubleday Canada Limited, 1997.

——. *Talisman: Sacred Cities, Sacred Faith*. Toronto, ON: Doubleday Canada, a Division of Random House of Canada Limited, 2004.

Herman, Arthur. *How The Scots Invented the Modern World*. New York: Three Rivers Press, 2001.

Jones, David E. *An Instinct for Dragons*. New York: Routledge, 2000.

Joseph, Frank. *The Destruction of Atlantis*. Rochester, VT: Bear And Co., 2002.

Kah, Gary H. *En Route to Global Occupation*. Lafayette, LA: Huntington House Publishers, 1991.

——. *The New World Religion*. Noblesville, IA: Hope International Publishing Inc., 1998.

Knight, Christopher, and Robert Lomas. *The Second Messiah*. London: Arrow Books Ltd., Random House U.K., Ltd., 1998.

——. *The Hiram Key*. London: Arrow Books Ltd., Random House U.K., Ltd., 1997.

——. *Uriel's Machine: The Ancient Origins of Science*. London: Arrow Books Ltd., Random House U.K. Ltd., 2000.

——. *The Book of Hiram*. London: Century, The Random House Group Limited, 2003.

Laidler, Keith. *The Head of God*. London: Weidenfeld & Nicolson, The Orion Publishing Group LTD, 1998.

Levitt, Steven D., and Stephen J. Dubner. *Freakonomics: A Rogue Economist Explores the Hidden Side of Everything*. Toronto, ON: HarperPerennial, An Imprint of HarperCollins Publishers Ltd., 2005/2006.

Lindsey, Hal. *The Terminal Generation*. New York: Bantam Books Inc., 1977.

Lomas, Robert. *The Invisible College*. London: Headline Book Publishing, A Division of Hadden Headline, 2002.

Marrs, Jim. *Rule By Secrecy*. New York: HarperCollins Publishing Inc., 2000.

——. *The Rise of the Fourth Reich, The Secret Societies that Threaten to Take over America*. New York: HarperCollins Publishers, 2008.

Markhale, Jean. *The Templar Treasure at Gisors*. Rochester, VT: Inner Traditions International, 2003.

Marshall, Peter. *The Philosopher's Stone: A Quest for the Secrets of Alchemy*. London: Pan Books, An Imprint of Pan Macmillan Ltd., 2002.

Mordechai, Avi Ben. *Signs in the Heavens: A Jewish Messianic Perspective of the Last Days and Coming Millennium*. Third edition. Millennium 7000, Communications Int'l Publication, 1996.

Naudon, Paul. *The Secret History of Freemasonry*. Rochester, VT: Inner Traditions, Rochester, 2005.

Nelson, Ethel R., and C. H. Kang. *The Discovery of Genesis: How the Truths of Genesis Were Found Hidden in the Chinese Language*. St. Louis, MO: Concordia Publishing House, 1975.

Noone, Richard W. *Ice: The Ultimate Disaster*. New York: Three Rivers Press, A Division of Crown Publishers Inc., 1982.

Pinsky, Robert. *The Life of David*. New York: Schocken Books, A Division of Random House, Inc., 2005.

Porter, J. R. *The New Illustrated Companion To The Bible*. London: Prospero Books, A Division of Indigo Books and Music, Duncan Baird Publishers, 2003.

——. *The Lost Bible*. London: Duncan Baird Publishers Ltd, England, 2001.

Read, Piers Paul. *The Templars*. London: Phoenix Press, A Division of the Orion Publishing Group, 2001.

Reid, Howard. *Arthur the Dragon King*. London: Headline Book Publishing, 2001.

Rohl, David. *Legend: The Genesis of Civilization*. London: Century Random House UK Ltd., 1998.

——. *The Lost Testament*. London: Century Random House UK Ltd., 2002.

Rose, Carol. *Giants, Monsters and Dragons: An Encyclopedia of Folklore, Legend, and Myth*. New York: W. W. Norton & Company, 2001.

Ross, Hugh. *The Genesis Question*. Colorado Springs: NavPress Publishing Group, 1998.

Sandys, Celia, and Jonathan Littman. *We Shall Not Fall: The Inspiring Leadership of Winston Churchill*. New York: Penguin Group (USA) Inc., 2004.

Sellier, Charles. *Ancient Revelations of the Bible*. New York: Dell Publishing, A Division of Bantam Doubleday Dell Publishing Group Inc., 1995.

Sellier, Charles, and Brian Russell. *Ancient Secrets of the Bible*. New York: Dell Publishing, A Division of Bantam Doubleday Dell Publishing Group Inc., 1994

Seward, Desmond. *Jerusalem's Traitor: Josephus, Masada, and the Fall of Judea*. Cambridge, MA: DaCapo Press, 2009.

Shanks, Hershel. *Understanding the Dead Sea Scrolls*. New York: Random House Inc., 1992.

——. *The Brother of Jesus*. New York: HarperCollins Publishers, 2003.

Short, Martin. *Inside The Brotherhood*. London: HarperCollins Publishers, 1993.

Silberman, Neil Asher. *Heavenly Powers: Unraveling The Secret History of the Kabbalah*. New York: Grosset/Putman, A Member of Penguin Putman, 1998.

Silberman, Neil Asher, and Israel Finkelstein. *David And Solomon*. New York: Free Press, A Division of Simon & Schuster, Inc., 2006.

Sinclair, Andrew. *The Discovery of the Grail*. London: Arrow Books Limited, 1999.

Sitchin, Zecharia. *The Lost Book of Enki*. Rochester, VT: Bear & And Company, 2004.

——. *Journeys to the Mythical Past*. Rochester, VT: Bear & Company, 2007.

Sora, Steven. *The Lost Treasure of the Templars*. Rochester, VT: Destiny Books, A Division of Inner Traditions International, 1999.

Wallace-Murphy, Tim, and Marilyn Hopkins. *Rosslyn*. Boston: Element Books Inc., 1999.

Wallace-Murphy, Tim, Marilyn Hopkins, and Graham Simmons. *Rex Deus*. Boston: Element Books Inc., 2000.

Wang, Yi'e., trans. Zeng Chuanhui. *Daoism in China*. China Intercontinental Press, n.d.

Wilson, Colin. *From Atlantis to the Sphinx*. London: Virgin Books, An Imprint of Virgin Publishing Ltd., 2000.

Wilson, Demond. *The New Age Millennium: An Expose of Symbols, Slogans and Hidden Agendas*. Forestville, MD: Demond Wilson Enterprises Inc., CSE Books, 1998.

Wilson, Ian. *The Blood and the Shroud*. New York: The Free Press, A Division of Simon And Schuster Inc., 1998.

Young, William P. *The Shack*. Newbury Park, CA: Windblown Media, 2007.

ENDNOTES

PREFACE

1. John 1:14; 1:16–18.
2. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 1956, Vol. 22, 259–260.
3. Plutarch, *Selected Lives*, From the *Parallel Lives of the Noble Grecians and Romans*, the Dryden Translation, 1676 (The Heirloom Library of H. R. Koehn, 1982), 1–2.
4. Gregory Boyd and Edward K. Boyd, *Letters from a Skeptic* (Colorado Springs: Cook Communications Ministries, 2004), 84.
5. Thomas Cahill, *The Gifts of the Jews* (Toronto, ON: Anchor Books, A Division of Random House Canada Limited, 1999), 152.
6. Peter Blake and Paul S. Blezard, *The Arcadian Cipher* (London: Pan Books, An Imprint of Pan Macmillan Ltd., 2001), 81.
7. Christopher Knight and Robert Lomas, *Uriel's Machine: The Ancient Origins Of Science* (London: Arrow Books Ltd., Random House U.K. Ltd., 2000), 41, 45.
8. Hershel Shanks, *The Brother of Jesus* (New York: HarperCollins Publishers, 2003), 178.
9. Graham Hancock and Robert Bauval, *Talisman: Sacred Cities, Secret Faith* (2004), 90, citing James M. Robinson, *The Nag Hammadi Library* (New York: HarperCollins Publishers, 1988), 85; *The Tripartite Tractate* verses 99, 100, 101.
10. Robinson, *The Nag Hammadi Library*, 53–103, quoting from *Tripartite Tractate* and referring to Chapter 10.
11. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, citing Ezra 4:15–19; 1 Peter 3:9; 2 Peter 2:4; Jude 1:6; 1:14, Vol. 10, 394.
12. R. F. Youngblood, F. F. Bruce, and R. K. Harrison, *Nelson's New Illustrated Bible Dictionary* (Nashville: Thomas Nelson, 1995), 364; Merrill F. Unger, *The New Unger's Bible Dictionary* (Chicago: Moody Publishers, 1988), 1051.
13. Zecharia Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki* (Rochester, VT: Bear & Company, 2004), Introduction, 3.
14. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 10, 394.

15. *The Good News Bible*, 1992, Introduction to Deuterocanonicals/Apocrypha, introduction leading into the book of Tobit, 1406.
16. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 10, 393.
17. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 10, 394–396, and *Nelson’s*, *The New Unger’s*, 85–88.
18. *Nelson’s*, 532, *Unger’s*, 514.
19. Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, Introduction, 3.
20. Ibid.
21. Jude 1:14 and *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 10, 394.
22. Desmond Seward, *Jerusalem’s Traitor: Josephus, Masada, and the Fall of Judea* (Cambridge, MA: DeCapo Press, 2009), 12.
23. William Whiston, commentary by Paul L. Maier, *The New Complete Works Of Josephus* (Grand Rapids, MI: Kregel Publications, A Division of Kregel, Inc., 1999), Introduction, 7.
24. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 16, 218.
25. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Jewish Antiquities Book 18:63–64, Book 20:9:200.
26. Seward, *Jerusalem’s Traitor*, 9–14.
27. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 16, 218.
28. Ibid.
29. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Introduction, 9, and *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 16, 218.
30. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Introduction, 9.
31. Albert Mackey, *The History of Freemasonry* (New York: Gramercy Books, A Division of Random House Value Publishing, Inc., 1996), xii.
32. Ibid.
33. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel’s Machine*, 31.
34. Ibid., 39.
35. Paul Naudon, *The Secret History Of Freemasonry* (Rochester, VT: Inner Traditions, 2005), vii.
36. Ibid.
37. Ian Gittins, *Unlocking The Masonic Code: Secrets of the Solomon Key* (London: Collins, An Imprint of HarperCollins Publishers, 2007), 39–40.
38. Ibid., 47–48.
39. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 18, 384, and Gittins, 48, 49, 52, 59.
40. Gittins, 52.
41. Ibid.
42. Ibid., 53.
43. Laurence Gardner, *Bloodline of the Holy Grail* (Rockport, MA: Element Books, Inc., 1996); *Realm of the Ring Lords* (Gloucester, MA: Fair Winds Press, 2003); *Genesis of the Grail Kings* (London: Bantam Press, A Division of Transworld Publishers, 2000); *The Lost Secrets of the Sacred Ark* (London: Harper Element, An Imprint of Harper CollinsPublishers, 2003); *The Shadow of Solomon* (London: Harper Element, An Imprint of HarperCollins Publishers, 2005).
44. Gardner, *The Shadow of Solomon*, 2005, Back Cover Notes.
45. Gardner, *Bloodlines*, Notes about the Author.
46. Gardner, *Shadow*, Notes about the Author, and *Bloodline*, Notes about the Author.
47. Gardner, *Realm*, Notes about the Author.
48. Zecharia Sitchin, *Journeys to the Mythical Past* (Rochester, VT: Bear & Company, 2007), 135.
49. Mark Booth, *The Secret History of the World* (Woodstock, NY: The Overlook Press, Peter Mayer Publishers Inc., 2008), 319.

CHAPTER 1: HEROES OF OLD

1. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 14, 138.
2. Ibid., Vol. 21, 61–62.
3. Ibid., Vol. 14, 138.
4. Ibid., 138, 155.
5. Susan Wise Bauer, *The History of the Ancient World from the Earliest Accounts to the Fall of the Roman Empire* (New York, W. W. Norton & Company, Inc. 2007), 717 and notes.
6. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 14, 155.
7. Ibid., 137–38, 155.
8. Ibid., 155.
9. Ibid., 138.
10. Andrew Collins, *From the Ashes of Angels* (Toronto, ON: Penguin Group, Penguin Books Canada Ltd., 1997), 3; *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 14, 138, 615.
11. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 14, 138.
12. Ibid., Vol. 19, 670–674; John Michael Greer, *Atlantis: Ancient Legacy, Hidden Prophecy* (Woodbury, MN: Llewellyn Publications, A Division of Llewellyn Worldwide, 2007), 83, 238.
13. David Rohl, *Legend of the Genesis of Civilization* (London: Century Random House UK Ltd., 1998), 154, 163.
14. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 14, 138.
15. Bauer, *History of Ancient World*, xxv.
16. Ibid.

CHAPTER 2: THE DAUGHTERS OF CAIN

1. Genesis 6:5.
2. John Michael Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia of Secret Societies* (London: Harper Element, An Imprint of HarperCollins Publishers, Hammersmith, 2006), 100.
3. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:3:1.
4. Ibid., 1:2, Note 3.
5. Genesis 5:4.
6. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:3:1.
7. Genesis 4:17.
8. John 3:12.
9. Jude 1:11.
10. Genesis 4:17–24.
11. Louis Ginzberg, *Legends of the Bible*. (Old Saybrook, CT: Jewish Publication Society of America, 1956), 60.
12. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:2:2.
13. Ginzberg, *Legends of the Bible*, 60.
14. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:2:1.
15. Ibid., 1:2:2.
16. *Nelson's*, 236 Cain and 873 Naamah.
17. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:2:2.
18. Mackey, *History*, 18, *"Legend of the Craft."*
19. Thomas Cahill, *How The Irish Saved Civilization* (Toronto, ON: Anchor Books, A Division of Random House Canada Ltd., 1995), 48, 59–60.
20. Mackey, *History*, 130, "*Hutchinsonian Theory."*
21. Ibid., 118, "*Anderson Theory"*
22. Ibid., 145–146, "*Oliverian Theory."*
23. Mackey, *History*, 118, 130, 146, *"Summary of the Legend of the Craft," "Oliverian Theory,"* "*Anderson Theory*."
24. Genesis 3:1–15.
25. Mackey, *History*, 118, 130, 146, "*Summary of the Legend of the Craft," "Oliverian Theory,"* "*Anderson Theory."*
26. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:2:3.
27. Genesis 9:20.
28. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:2, note 3.
29. Mackey, *History*, 118, "*Summary of the Legend of the Craft,"* 146, "*Oliverian Theory."*
30. Genesis 5:1–32.
31. Mackey, *History*, 146, "*Oliverian Theory."*
32. Ibid., 146, "*Anderson Theory."*
33. Genesis 4:17.
34. Mackey, *History*, 146, "*Oliverian Theory."*
35. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 35.
36. Mackey, *History*, 403, "*Legend of Enoch."*
37. Ibid.
38. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 43.
39. Mackey, *History*, 403, "*Legend of Enoch."*
40. Christopher Knight and Robert Lomas, *The Book of Hiram* (London: Century Limited, 2003), 203–204.

41. Mackey, *History*, “*Legend of Enoch,*” 401–404.
42. Cahill, *How The Irish*, 48.
43. Mackey, *History*, 146, “*Oliverian Theory.*”
44. Ibid.
45. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 70.
46. Alan F. Alford, *When The Gods Came Down* (London: Hodder and Stoughton, 2000), 28.
47. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 3.
48. Genesis 6:1, referring to Genesis 1:28.

CHAPTER 3: THE SONS OF GOD

1. *Nelson's*, 1194.
2. *Unger's*, citing Matthew 22:30, 916, Nephilim.
3. *Nelson's*, 1194.
4. Layton Bentley, *The Gnostic Scriptures: Ancient Wisdom For The New Age* (New York: Doubleday, A Division of Bantam Doubleday Dell Publishing Group, Inc. 1995), *Basilides Teachings*, 1:24:4, 423.
5. *Unger's*, 61–62 and 591.
6. Hershel Shanks, *Understanding The Dead Sea Scrolls* (New York: Random House Inc., 1992), 172.
7. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 5 and 62.
8. Ibid., 18.
9. *Unger's*, 916.
10. Willis Barnstone, *The Other Bible* (New York: HarperCollins, 1984), 500.
11. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:3:1.
12. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 12, 637.
13. Robert Eisenman and Michael Wise, *The Dead Sea Scrolls Uncovered* (New York: Penguin Group, Penguin Books USA, 1992), 95.
14. Adrian Gilbert, *Signs In The Sky* (London: Bantam Press, a Division of Transworld Publishers, 2000), 186, quoting *The Book of Enoch* VIII:1–2, likely from *The First Book of Enoch*, in Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, *The First Book of Enoch*, 487.
15. Ibid., quoting *The Book of Enoch* IX:11, likely from *The First Book of Enoch*, in Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, 487.
16. Alford, appendix A, 383.
17. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, quoting *First Book of Enoch* 106:13, in Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, 487.
18. Ibid.
19. Ibid., 498.
20. Acts 2:1–47.
21. Romans 8:12–19.
22. *Nelson's*, 1194.
23. Galatians 4:5; Hebrews 2:10; Hebrews 12:7; John 1:12; Philippians 2:15; 1 John 3:1–2.
24. *Nelson's*, 1194.
25. Isaiah 43:6; 45:11.
26. Hosea 1:11.
27. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:3, note 1, citing this was a constant opinion of antiquity.
28. Matthew 22:30.
29. 1 Corinthians 11:6–10.
30. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, quoting from *On Veiling of Virgins*, 9.
31. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, 487.
32. Migene Gonzalez-Wipper, *The Return of the Angels* (St. Paul, MN: Llewellyn Publications, A Division of Llewellyn Worldwide Ltd. 1999), 38.
33. Greer, *Atlantis*, 37.
34. Ibid.
35. Ibid.
36. Gonsalez-Wipper, 38.
37. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 43.

38. Ibid., 43, 70.
39. J. R. Porter, *The Lost Bible* (London: Duncan Baird Publishers Ltd., 2001), 51, quoting *The Lost Testament Of Reuben*, chapter 5.
40. Alford, 28.
41. Colin Wilson, *From Atlantis to the Sphinx* (London: Virgin Books, An Imprint of Virgin Publishing Ltd., 2000), 27, 142–143.
42. Plutarch, the Dryden Translation, 4.
43. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 14, 547–548.
44. Plutarch, the Dryden Translation, 6, 28, and *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 14, 121–123.
45. Plutarch, the Dryden Translation, 14, 23, 28.
46. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 14, 121–123.
47. Ibid., Vol. 15, 755, and Jonathan Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend* (Lewes, East Sussex, UK: Prospero Books by arrangement with Ivy Press, 2008), 89.
48. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 89–90.
49. Ibid., 86.
50. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 5, 135.
51. Ibid., Vol. 21, 611.
52. JF Bierlein, *Parallel Myths* (Toronto, ON: Ballantine Publishing Group, A Division of Random House Inc. Canada Ltd., 1994), 14, 48; *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 29, 706.
53. 2 Peter 2:4.
54. 1 Peter 3:19.
55. Genesis 6:1–3.
56. The Qur'an, Livestock, 6:1–9.
57. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 9.
58. Genesis 5:1–32.
59. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, 487.
60. Genesis 6.
61. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, 493, note 2.
62. Revelation 20:1–15.
63. Luke 4:35, 41; 7:33; 8:27, 30–33; 11:15; 9:1, 42; John 7:20; 10:21; Revelation 12:7, 9; Matthew 11:18; 25:42; 9:3–4;33; 12:24; 17:18; Mark 3:22; Luke 11:15; 1 Corinthians 8:10–13; 1 Timothy 4:1; Jude 6:1; 2 Peter 2:4.
64. Bible, *Good News For Modern Man, The New Testament In Today's English 3rd Edition* (American Bible Society, 1966, USA), from Word List, 632.
65. Matthew 9:34;12:24; Mark 3:22; Luke 11:15.
66. *Unger's*, 297.
67. Wang, Yi'e, *Daoism in China* (China Intercontinental Press, ISBN 7-5085-0598-0), 5, 62, 202.
68. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 14, 138.
69. Karen Armstrong, *The Great Transformation: The Beginnings of Our Religious Traditions* (Toronto, ON: Vintage Canada, A Division of Random House Canada, 2006), 123, 167, 515.
70. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 29, quoting from *1 Enoch* 15:9, in Barnstone, 487.
71. Ibid., 1997, 29.
72. Genesis 6:4.
73. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:3:1.
74. Ibid., Ant. 1:3, note a.
75. Numbers 13:33.
76. Bible, *The Good News With Deuterocanonicals/Apocrypha*, *Today's English Version* (American Bible Society, 1992), Baruch 3:26, Wisdom 14:6, Sirach 16:7.
77. *Unger's*, 916.
78. Eisenman and Wise, *Dead Sea Scrolls*, 95, citing Dead Sea Scrolls, 4Q532.

79. Gilbert, *Signs In The Sky*, 187, quoting *First Book of Enoch* IX:11.
80. Alford, 28.
81. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 4, quoting *The First Book of Enoch*, 106:13, in Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, 487.
82. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, 487, 498.
83. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 18.

CHAPTER 4: THE GIANTS OF ANTIQUITY

1. Carol Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons: An Encyclopedia of Folklore, Legend, And Myth* (New York: W. W. Norton & Company, 2001), 16.
2. Numbers 13:32; Numbers 12:28; Deuteronomy 1:27; Deuteronomy 9:1.
3. Numbers 13:33.
4. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 431.
5. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 154.
6. 1 Samuel 17:4.
7. Charles Sellier, *Ancient Revelations of the Bible*, 1995, 95.
8. 1 Samuel 17:4, note a.
9. *Unger's*, 1988, 841–842.
10. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 88.
11. Deuteronomy 3:11.
12. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 274.
13. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 462.
14. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 3.
15. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 154.
16. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 462.
17. Plutarch, the Dryden Translation, 14, 26, Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 4:5:3, and Ginsberg, *Legends of the Bible*, 461.
18. 1 Samuel 17:4–7.
19. 1 Chronicles 20:6.
20. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 274.
21. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 7:12:2.
22. Ibid., Ant. 5:2:3.
23. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 48–49.
24. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 5:2:3.
25. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 637, Vol. 12.
26. Whiston and Maier, Ant. *Josephus*, 5:2:3
27. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 637, Vol.12.
28. Sellier, 95.
29. *Bible Authorized KJV Self Pronouncing Edition*, Genesis 15:5 notation, 15:20, Deuteronomy 2:11; 2:20; 3:11; 3:13; Joshua 12:4; 13:12; 17:15; 1 Chronicles 20:4.
30. *Unger*'s, 57.
31. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 49.
32. *Unger's*, #1378.
33. Frank Joseph, *The Destruction Of Atlantis* (Rochester, VT: Bear and Company, 2002), 20.
34. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 69.
35. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 5:2:3.
36. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 48–49, quoting *The Testament Of Amram* from the Dead Sea Scrolls, 4Q543.
37. Robinson, *The Nag Hammadi Library*, quoting from *On Origin of the World*, 105:1–25.
38. Ibid.
39. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 49.
40. Robinson, *The Nag Hammadi Library*, 176, quoting from *On Origin of the World*, 105:1–25.
41. Ibid., commenting on *Enoch The Tripartite Tractate*, 59.
42. Ibid., 1, .54, 317.

43. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 136.
44. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 219.
45. Lorraine Evans, *Kingdom of the Ark* (London: Simon and Schuster UK Ltd., 2000), 61.
46. Bauer, 24.
47. L. Evans, *Kingdom of the Ark*, 268–269.
48. J. R. Porter, *The New Illustrated Companion To The Bible* (London: Prospero Books, A Division of Indigo Books and Music, Duncan Baird Publishers, 2003), 62.
49. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 55–58.
50. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 23.
51. Gardner, *Realms*, 56.
52. Bauer, 5.
53. Gardner, *Realms*, 55–56.
54. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion To The Bible*, 23.
55. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 57.
56. Ignatius Donnelly, *Atlantis: The Antediluvian World* (New York: Dover Publications Inc., 1976), 273.
57. Ibid.
58. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 66.
59. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 4.
60. Joseph, *Destruction Of Atlantis*, 218–219.

CHAPTER 5: THE SCHISM OF ANTEDILUVIAN FREEMASONRY

1. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 637, Vol. 12.
1. Mackey, *History*, 187, *Free Masonry and the Ancient Mysteries*.
2. *Ibid.*, 146, "*Oliverian Theory.*"
3. Ibid.
4. Ibid., 18, "*Legend of the Craft.*"
5. Ibid., 146, "*Oliverian Theory.*"
6. Genesis 5:21–24.
7. John 21:15–24; 2 Kings 2:1–17.
8. John 1:43–50 and 21:24.
9. Revelation 11:7.
10. 1 Thessalonians 4:13–17; 1 Corinthians 15:51–52, *The Good News*, 1992, 2 Esdra 6:25.
11. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:2:3.
12. Mackey, *History*, "*Legend of Lamech's Sons and the Pillars,*" 44.
13. Ibid., "*Anderson Theory,*" 118.
14. Ibid.
15. Ibid., 187.
16. Ibid., "*Hutchinsonian Theory,*" 132.
17. Ibid., "*Oliverian Theory,*" 147.
18. Ibid., "*Anderson Theory,*" 118.
19. Eisenman and Wise, *The Dead Sea Scrolls Uncovered*, 33–34.
20. Jim Marrs, *The Rise of the Fourth Reich* (New York: HarperCollins Publishing, 2008), 95–96.
21. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, 81.
22. Ibid., 82–83.
23. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, quoting Malcom Lambert, *The Cathars*, 1998, 67.

CHAPTER 6: ENOCH AND HERMES

1. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 12.
2. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 223.
3. *Nelson's*, 402, 740, *Unger's*, 364, 752; Mackey, *History*, "*Oliverian Theory*," 147.
4. Mackey, *History*, "*Legend of Enoch*," 400–403.
5. Ibid., 50–51, *"Legend of Hermes."*
6. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 12.
7. Mackey, *History*, 403, "*Legend of Enoch."*
8. Ibid., 50–52.
9. Ibid., 50–51.
10. Peter Marshall, *The Philosopher's Stone* (London: Pan Books, An Imprint of Pan Macmillan Ltd., 2002), 182.
11. Timothy Freke and Peter Gandy, *The Hermetica: The Lost Wisdom of the Pharaohs* (London: Judy Piatkus Publishing Ltd., 1998), 7.
12. Ibid.
13. Ibid.
14. Gilbert, *Signs In The Sky*, 39.
15. Andrew Sinclair, *The Discovery of the Grail* (London: Arrow Books Limited, 1999), 1.
16. Freke and Gandy, 7.
17. Donnelly, *Atlantis*, 214.
18. Mackey, *History*, 51, *"Legend of Hermes."*
19. *Unger's*, 488.
20. Freke and Gandy, 7, 12, 82.
21. Ibid., 12.
22. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 217.
23. Michael Baigent and Richard Leigh, *The Elixir and the Stone* (Toronto, ON: Penguin Books Canada Ltd., 1997), 42.
24. Mackey, *History*, 51, *"Legend of Hermes."*
25. Gilbert, *Signs In The Sky*, 37–38.
26. Ibid., 38–40; Donnelly, *Atlantis*, 94.
27. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 13.
28. Michael Baigent, *Ancient Mysteries A History Through Evolution and Magic* (Toronto, ON: Penguin Books Canada Ltd., 1998), 195.
29. Freke and Gandy, 7.
30. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 2001, 217, 253.
31. Michael Baigent, *Ancient Traces* (Toronto, ON: Penguin Books Canada Ltd., 1998), 195.
32. Freke and Gandy, 32.
33. Genesis 10:22, Table Of Nations.
34. Mackey, *History*, 20,*"Legend of Craft."*

CHAPTER 7: ENOCH THE EVIL

1. Mackey, *History*, 402, *“Legend of Enoch.”*
2. Gilbert, *Signs in the Sky*, 33, 38, 40.
3. Rohl, Lost *Testament*, 33.
4. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 13.
5. Ibid.
6. Gardner, *Shadow*, 22.
7. Ibid.
8. Ibid., quoting Manly P. Hall, *The Secret Teachings of All Ages*, CLXXIII.
9. Gardner, *Shadow*, 22.
10. Mackey, *History*, 397–398, “*Legend of Enoch.”*
11. Ibid., 402–403.
12. Ibid., 403.
13. Ibid., 188.
14. Ibid.
15. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 12.
16. Mackey, *History*, 400, “*Legend of Enoch*.”
17. Ibid., 403.
18. Ibid., 403–404.
19. Barnstone, *The Other Bible, First Book of Secrets of Enoch*, 9, and *The Second Book of the Secrets of Enoch*, 500.
20. Mackey, *History*, “*Legend of Enoch*,” 400, 404.

CHAPTER 8: ROYAL BLOODLINES

1. Mackey, *History, "Legend of Enoch,"* 400.
2. Naudon, 4.
3. Genesis 4:17–23; Genesis 5:1–32.
4. Mackey, *History*, 19, *"Legend of the Craft,"* and 48, *"Legend of Lamech's Sons and the Pillars."*
5. David Rohl, *The Lost Testament* (London: Century Random House UK Ltd., 2002), 33.
6. Mackey, *History*, 146, "*Oliverian Theory."*
7. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 36.
8. Gittins, 93.
9. Robert Lomas, *The Invisible College* (London: Headline Book Publishing, a Division of Hadden Headline, 2002), Back Cover.
10. Mackey, *History*, 143–146, *"The Oliverian Theory."*
11. Ibid., 186–187.
12. Ibid.
13. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 70.
14. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 4.
15. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 63.
16. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 70.
17. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 12, 637.
18. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 212.
19. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 32.
20. Gardner, *Shadow*, 21.
21. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 212.
22. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 69.
23. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 351.
24. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 115.
25. Ibid.

CHAPTER 9: ANTEDILUVIAN MASONRY AND THE SEVEN SACRED SCIENCES

1. Mackey, *History*, 19, *"Legend of the Craft."*
2. Ibid., 185–186.
3. Ibid., 128, "*Hutchinsonian Theory."*
4. Ibid., 61, *"Tower of Babel."*
5. Ibid., 130–132, "*Hutchinsonian Theory*."
6. Ibid., 131.
7. Ibid., 119, "*Anderson Theory*."
8. Ibid., 58–60, *"Tower of Babel."*
9. Ibid., 112, *"Summary of the Legend of the Craft."*
10. Ibid., 119, "*Anderson Theory*."
11. Ibid., 61–62, *"Tower of Babel."*
12. Bauer, 6–7.
13. Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 20.
14. Bauer, 11, 47, 96.
15. Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 20.
16. Genesis 12:10–20.

17. Gardner, *Shadow*, 25.
18. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant 1:8:2.
19. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 294–295.
20. Mackey, *History*, 67, *“Legend of Euclid.”*
21. Genesis 11:10–32.
22. Mackey, *History*, 59, *“Tower of Babel,”* and 67, *“Legend of Euclid.”*
23. Naudon, 192.
24. Mackey, *History*, 68, “*Legend of Euclid.*”
25. Ibid., 58–60, *“Tower of Babel.”*
26. 1 Chronicles 1:8,11, Egypt is the alternative name for Mizraim, Genesis 10:6, note g, Table Of Nations.
27. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel’s Machine*, 40.
28. Mackey, *History*, 50–52, *“Legend of Hermes.”*
29. Ibid., 182–183.
30. Alford, 18.
31. Mackey, *History*, 186, *“Freemasonry and Ancient Mysteries.”*
32. Ibid., 174–175, 185–187.
33. Gittins, 5–6.

CHAPTER 10: ENOCHIAN MYSTICISM

1. Rohl, *The Lost Testament*, 32.
2. Mackey, *History*, 112, *“Summary of the Legend of the Craft”;* 119, “*Anderson Theory.*”
3. Ibid., 60, “*Tower of Babel*”; 148, “*Oliverian Theory.”*
4. Genesis 10:6–19, Table of Nations; 1 Chronicles 1:8–13.
5. Genesis 10:6–19, Table of Nations.
6. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. Book 5, Note 1.
7. Genesis 10:19–20, Table of Nations.
8. 1 Chronicles 1:7; Genesis 10:2:4, Table of Nations.
9. Genesis 10:1–5, Table of Nations.
10. Mackey, *History*, 174,182, *“Freemasonry and Ancient Mysteries.”*
11. Ibid., 131, “*Hutchinsonian Theory.”*
12. Fergus Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn* (London: Duncan Baird Publishers, 1996), 38.
13. Peter Berresford Ellis, *The Celts* (London: Robinson, an Imprint of Constable and Robinson, 2003), 6, 48.
14. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 39–40.
15. Mackey, *History*, 143, “*Oliverian Theory.”*
16. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 174–175.
17. Alford, 3–5, 116.
18. Mackey, *History*, 184, *“Freemasonry and Ancient Mysteries.”*
19. *Webster’s New Compact Format Dictionary*, 1986.
20. Dan Brown, *Angels And Demons* (New York: Pocket Books, A Division of Simon & Schuster, Inc., 2000), 90.
21. *Webster’s New Compact Format Dictionary*, 1986.
22. The Qur’an, Livestock 6:1–2; 6:6.
23. Ibid., Sheba 34:40–41.
24. Ibid., The Cow 2:165; Women 4:116–119; The Feast 5:72; Livestock 6:1–6; 94–100; Jonah 10:66–71; The cave 18:4; The Believers 23:59–60; Sheba 34:40–42; Ranged In Rows 37:149–156.
25. Ibid., Women 4:116–119; The Cave 18:4 and 53.
26. Ibid., The Cow 2:116; Livestock 6:1–102; Mary 19:35.
27. Ibid., Ranged In Rows 37:157–159.
28. Ibid., Livestock 6:100; Note b, Al-Hijir 15:26; and The Lord Of Mercy 55:14.
29. Ibid., Livestock 6:111; The Jinn 72:1, Note a.
30. Ibid., Livestock 6:128–13; Bowing Down In Worship 32:13.
31. Ibid., The Jinn 72:7–9.
32. Ibid.
33. Ibid., The Cave 18:50; Sheba 34:40.
34. *Webster’s New Compact Format Dictionary*, 1986.
35. Mackey, *History*, 183, *“Freemasonry and Ancient Mysteries.”*
36. Alford, 18.
37. Mackey, *History*, 183, *“Freemasonry and Ancient Mysteries.”*
38. Alford, 16.
39. Mackey, *History*, 131, “*Hutchinsonian Theory*”; “*Legend of the Temple*,” 75.
40. Ibid., 179, 189.
41. Ibid., 112, “*Summary of the Legend of the Craft*”; 119, *“Anderson Theory.*”
42. Ibid., 59–61, *“Tower of Babel.”*

43. Ibid., 403, *“Legend of Enoch.”*
44. *Webster’s New Compact Format Dictionary*, 1986.
45. Isaiah 47:13.
46. Nelson’s, *Astrology*, 134–135, Wise men/Magi 1317.
47. 1 Samuel 15:23.
48. Mackey, *History*, 186, *“Freemasonry and Ancient Mysteries.”*
49. Ibid., 403, *“Legend of Enoch.”*
50. Matthew 24:24–31; Mark 13:22–27; Luke 21:11, 25–28.

CHAPTER 11: THE GREAT DELUGE

1. Joseph Blenkinsopp, *The Pentateuch* (New York: Doubleday, A Division of Bantam Double Dell Publishing Group., Inc., 1992), 75; Hugh Ross, *The Genesis Question* (Colorado Springs: NavPress Publishing Group; 1998), 125; *Unger's*, 916; *Nelson's, 891.*
2. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 155.
3. *Unger's*, 916.
4. *Webster's New Compact Format Dictionary*, 1986.
5. Blenkinopp, *The Pentateuch*, 75.
6. *Webster's New Compact Format Dictionary*, 1986.
7. *The Good News Bible*, 1992, Baruch 3:26.
8. Genesis 6:4.
9. *The Good News Bible*, 1992, Wisdom 14:6.
10. Ibid., Sirach 16:7.
11. Ibid., Sirach 16:7.
12. Deuteronomy 9:5.
13. *The Good News Bible*, 1992, Sirach 16.
14. Ibid, Wisdom 14:6.
15. Gilbert, *Signs in the Sky*, 187–188.
16. *The Good News Bible*, 1992, Baruch 3:26.
17. Gilbert, *Signs in the Sky*,186–187 quoting *The Book of Enoch*, VIII:1–2.
18. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 688, Vol. 2.
19. Gilbert, *Signs in the Sky*,186–187 quoting *The Book of Enoch*, VIII:1–2.
20. *Unger's*, 471, 916.
21. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 26.
22. *The Good News Bible*, 1992, Baruch 3:28.
23. *Unger's*, 471, 916.
24. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:3:1.
25. The Qur'an, The Heights 7:59–65; Hud 11:25–27; 11:40.
26. *Unger's*, 925.
27. 1 Peter 3:20.
28. The Qur'an, Hud 11:38–40.
29. Ibid., Genesis 9:28.
30. The Qur'an, Hud 11:30–32.
31. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:3:1.
32. 2 Peter 2:5.
33. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:3:1.
34. The Qur'an, Hud 11:30–32.
35. Ibid., Hud 11:27; The Heights 7:64; The Poets 26:136.
36. Ibid., The Cow; The Heights 7:59–65; Hud 11:27; The Poets 26:136.
37. Ibid., The Believers 23:23–29; The Moon 54:9.
38. Ibid., Noah 71:1–28.
39. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:3:1.
40. The Qur'an, The Heights 7:59–65; Hud 11:25–27; The Believers 23:23–29; The Moon 54:9.
41. Ibid., Noah 71:1–28.
42. Ibid., The Poets 26:136.
43. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:3:1; The Qur'an, The Heights 7:59–65, Hud 11:11–40, The Believers 23:23–29, The Poets 26:136, The Moon 54:9, Noah 71:1–28.

44. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, *The Second Book of Enoch*, 498.
45. Ibid., 487
46. *The Good News Bible*, 1992, Baruch 3:28.
47. Ibid., Wisdom 14.
48. Ibid., Wisdom 14:15–16.
49. Ibid., Wisdom 14:23–26.
50. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 57.
51. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 92.
52. The Qur’an, Livestock 6:1–9; The Heights 7:72.
53. Robinson, *The Nag Hammadi Library*, 186–187, from *On The Origin of the World*, verses 122:1–35; 124:1–35.
54. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 18.
55. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel’s Machine*, 86.
56. Robinson, *The Nag Hammadi Library*, 186–187, from *On The Origin of the World*, verses 122:1–35; and 124:1–35.
57. Gonsalez-Wipper, 205.
58. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, 498.
59. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 26.
60. Gonsalez-Wipper, 205.
61. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 26.
62. Ibid., 24.
63. Gonsalez-Wipper, 205; Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 26.
64. Gonsalez-Wipper, 205.
65. Collins, Andrew, *Ashes of Angels*, 24–26.
66. Gonsalez-Wipper, 205.
67. *The Good News Bible*, 1992, Wisdom 14:21–27.
68. Ibid., Wisdom 14:7.
69. Genesis 6:6.
70. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 26.
71. Shanks, *Dead Sea Scrolls*, 174–175.
72. Genesis 6:3.
73. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, *The Book of Enoch*, 487.
74. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 68.
75. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 24.
76. Ibid., 27.
77. Ibid., quoting First Enoch 7:2–6.
78. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 174.
79. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 63.
80. Leviticus 7:26; Leviticus 19:26; Deuteronomy 12:16; Deuteronomy 12:24–25.
81. Genesis 9:4–5.
82. Leviticus 17:10–14.
83. Acts 15:19–21, 29.
84. The Qur’an, The Cow 2:173; Livestock 6:145–147; The Feast 5:3–4; The Family 3:93.
85. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 86.
86. Gardner, Grail Kings, 143.
87. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, *The Second Book of the Secrets of Enoch*, 498.
88. Ibid., *The Apocalypse of Adam*, 82.
89. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 28; Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, *The Second Book of the Secrets of Enoch*, 498.
90. Genesis 8:2–3.

91. The Qur'an, Livestock 6:9; Hud 11:44, note a; The Believers 23:27; The Moon 54:11.
92. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 28.
93. Ibid., 4, quoting First Enoch 106:13.

CHAPTER 12: AZAZEL: LEADER OF THE WATCHERS

1. Deuteronomy 32:7–8, note c: sons of God from the Septuagint and Masoretic Text of the Dead Scrolls.
2. Romans 8:38; Ephesians 1:21; 3:10, 12; Colossians 1:16.
3. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 681, Vol. 1.
4. Gilbert, *Signs in the Sky*, 187, quoting *The Book of Enoch* X:1–12; VIII:1–2, My source: Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, *The Second Book of the Secrets of Enoch*, 498, note 4,500; Shanks, *Dead Sea Scrolls*, 95, from 4Q532.
5. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, Book of Enoch, 487.
6. Ibid., 495.
7. Ibid., Second Book of the Secrets of Enoch, 500, Note 4.
8. Gonzalez-Wipper, 247.
9. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, *The Second Book of the Secrets of Enoch*, 500, Note 4.
10. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 3.
11. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, *The Second Book of the Secrets of Enoch*, 500, Note 4.
12. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 18; The Barnstone, The Other Bible, *The Second Book of the Secrets of Enoch*, 500, Note 4.
13. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 3, 7.
14. The Qur'an, The Creator 35:1.
15. Robert J. Miller, *The Complete Gospels* (Sonoma, CA: Polebridge Press, 1994), *Dialogue of the Savior* 19:5–12.
16. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, 733.
17. Gonsalez-Wipper, 25.
18. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 75.
19. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 57.
20. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 15–16.
21. Ibid., 1995, 50, *The Secret Book According to John* 29:14–33.
22. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, *The Hypostasis of the Archons*, 75–76.
23. Ibid., 76.
24. Ibid., 79.
25. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 27.
26. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 2.
27. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, *The Hypostasis of the Archons*, 78.
28. Genesis 6:1–22.
29. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 27.
30. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 112.
31. Gilbert, *Signs in the Sky*, 186; Collins, Ashes of Angels, 25.
32. Gonsalez-Wipper, 205.
33. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 25.
34. Ibid., 25, 26, 118.
35. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 112.
36. Ibid., 115.
37. Gilbert, *Signs in the Sky*, 187.
38. *The Good News Bible*, 1992, Leviticus 16:8, 20.
39. Leviticus 16:10, 26, note b.

40. *The Access Bible New Revised Standard Version with the Apocrypha*, 1999, Leviticus 16:10, 20, note 22.
41. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 70.
42. *Legends*, 70.
43. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 70.
44. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 219.
45. Gonsalez-Wipper, 208.
46. Ibid., 208; Gilbert, *Signs in the Sky*, 187.
47. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 27.
48. Gonsalez-Wipper, 267.
49. Gilbert, *Signs in the Sky*, 187.
50. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 69.
51. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 27.
52. *Unger's*, 916.
53. Ibid.; Jude 1:6.

CHAPTER 13: LUCIFER'S REVENGE

1. *Legends*, xxxi.
2. Miller, *The Complete Gospels*, 5.
3. Ibid., 70.
4. Barnstone The Other Bible; *The Book of Hagadah* 30; *First Book of the Secrets of Enoch*, 5.
5. Gonsalez-Wipper, 179–180.
6. W. Y. Evans-Wentz, *The Fairy-Faith in Celtic Countries* (Mineola, NY: Dover Publications, 2002), 85.
7. Adrian Recinos, Delia Goetz, and Sylvanus G. Morley, *Popol Vuh: The Sacred Book of the Ancient Quiche Maya* (Norman, OK: The University of Oklahoma Press, Publishing Division, 1950), 4–6, Introduction; 93, Part 1: Chapter 11: note 1.
8. Ibid., 93, Part 1: Chapter 4.
9. Ibid., 176–180, Part 3: Chapter 6.
10. Ibid., 180–181, Part 4: Chapter 6: note 5.
11. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 149, *The Three Tablets of Seth*, from the contents section in the introduction.
12. Recinos, Goetz, and Morley, *Popol Vuh*, 94, 98–99, Part 1: Chapter 4.
13. Ibid., 96, Part 1: Chapter 6.
14. The Qur'an, The Cow 2:34, note c.
15. Ibid., Women 4:119; Al Hajr 15:26–50; The Creator 35:6; Sad 38:71–87.
16. Ibid., The Cow 2:36–37; Al-Hijir 15:26–50; The Heights 7:10–19; The Night Journey 17:61–65; The Cave 18:50; Ta Ha 20:115–123; Sad 38:71–87.
17. Michael Baigent and Richard Leigh, *Secret Germany: Stauffenberg and the Mystical Crusade against Hitler* (London: Arrow Books, The Random, 2006), 258.
18. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, The *First Book of the Secrets of Enoch*, 6.
19. Ginzberg, *Legends*, xxxvi.
20. The Qur'an, The Cow 2:30.
21. Ibid., 2:31–33.
22. Ginzberg, *Legends*, xxxvii.
23. Ibid.
24. The Qur'an, The Cow 2:30.
25. Ginzberg, *Legends*, xxxvii.
26. Ibid., 1956, 33.
27. Ibid., xxxviii, xxxi.

28. The Qur’an, The Cow 7:10–19; Sad 38:71–87; Al-Hijir 15:26–50.
29. Hebrews 2:10.
30. William Young, *The Shack* (Newbury Park, CA: Windblown Media, 2007), 99, 190–191, 222.
31. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, *The Book of Hagadah*, 30.
32. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 33.
33. The Qur’an, The Cow 2:36–37; Al-Hijir 15:26–50; The Heights 7:10–19; The Night Journey 17:61–65; The Cave 18:50; Ta Ha 20:115–123; Sad 38:71–87.
34. Ibid.; The Cow 2:36–37; Al-Hijir 15:26–50; The Heights 7:10–19; The Night Journey 17:61–65; The Cave 18:50Ta Ha 20:115–123; Sad 38:71–87.
35. Ibid., The Cow 2:34.
36. Gonsalez-Wipper, 199.
37. The Qur’an, Women 4:119; Al Hijr 15:26–50; The Creator 35:6; Sad 38:71–87.
38. Young, *The Shack*, 94, 123, 128.
39. Genesis 3:1–7.
40. The Qur’an, The Cow 2:30–37; The Heights 7:19–25.
41. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 22.
42. Young, *The Shack*, 133–134.
43. Ibid., 123, 133–135.
44. Ibid., 133–135, 190.
45. Genesis 6:1.
46. Gonsalez-Wipper, 204.
47. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 35.
48. Ibid., 4, quoting *The First Book of Enoch* 106:13.
49. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 26.
50. Gonsalez-Wipper, 204.
51. Layton, *Gnostic Scriptures*, 50, *The Secret Book According to John* 30:1–8.
52. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 27.
53. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, 493.
54. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 431.
55. Jude 1:6.
56. *Unger’s*, 18, 62.
57. Ginzberg, *Legends*, xxxi.
58. Revelation 9:1–11.
59. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 2.
60. Luke 8:30–31.
61. Luke 4:35, 41; 7:33; 8:27, 30–33; 11:15; 9:1, 42; John 7:20; 10:21; Revelation 12:7, 9; Matthew 11:18; 25:42; 9:3–4,33; 12:24; 17:18; Mark; 3:22; Luke 11:15; 1 Corinthians 8:10–13; First Timothy 4:1; Jude 6:1; 2 Peter 2:4.
62. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, 496–497.
63. Ginzberg, *Legends*, xxxi.
64. Revelation 9:1–3.
65. Revelation 20:7.
66. Revelation 9:1–2.
67. *Nelson’s*, 13.
68. *Good News For Modern Man, The New Testament In Today’s English 3rd Edition*, 1966, Word List, 629.
69. Revelation 20:3, 7.
70. Jeremiah 30:7; Psalm 94:13–14; Daniel 12:5–13; Daniel 7:25; Revelation 7:14; Revelation 17:6; Revelation 13:7; *The Good News Bible,1992*, 2 Esdra 16:68–74.
71. Matthew 24:22.

CHAPTER 14: THE BLACK HEADS

1. Genesis 7:4, 21; 6:13, 22.
2. Genesis 6:4.
3. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 6.9
4. Alford, 31.
5. Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, 2004, Introduction, 4–5.
6. Bauer, 410.
7. Alford, 31.
8. Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 19.
9. Graham Hancock, *Underworld, The Mysterious Origins of Civilization* (Toronto, ON: Anchor Canada Edition, A Division of Random House of Canada Limited, 2003), 39; Bauer, 6, 197.
10. Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, Introduction, 2.
11. Bauer, xxiv.
12. Ibid., 5, 43.
13. Alford, 38.
14. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 128.
15. Alford, 31.
16. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 22.
17. Genesis 2:10–14.
18. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 22.
19. Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, Introduction, 1, 6, 139–149.
20. Ibid., 130, 139–149, 166.
21. Ibid., 151.
22. Ibid., 166–172.
23. Genesis 2:4–6.
24. Genesis 2:7.

CHAPTER 15: ISIS, ISHTAR, GAEA, AND NINKHURSAG

1. Donnelly, *Atlantis*, 294; Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 47.
2. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 129.
3. David Leeming and Margaret Leeming, *A Dictionary of Creation Myths* (New York: Oxford University Press USA, 1995), 106.
4. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 361.
5. Donnelly, *Atlantis*, 294, 299.
6. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 361.
7. Ginzberg, *Legends*, xxxii.
8. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 3.
9. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 142.
10. Alford, 28–29.
11. Ibid., 80.
12. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 281.
13. Alford, 40.
14. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 21.
15. Alford, 33.
16. Ibid., 46.
17. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 19.
18. Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, 6, 108.

19. Ibid., 325–327.
20. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 106.
21. Gardner, *Realm*, 3.
22. Ibid., 3.
23. Ibid., 2003, 6.
24. Ibid., 52.
25. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 371.
26. Thomas Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 172.
27. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 371.
28. Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 172.
29. Ibid., 21.
30. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 27; Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 112.
31. Leeming and Leeming, *A Dictionary of Creation Myths*, 79.
32. Ibid., 111.
33. Alford, 49.
34. Ibid., 33.
35. Ibid., 100.
36. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 37.
37. Alford, 319; Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 87.
38. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 33.
39. Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, 200–202.
40. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 40.
41. Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, 203.
42. Alford, 378.
43. Ibid., 380.
44. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 85.
45. Ibid., 88.
46. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 42.
47. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 90.
48. Jim Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy* (New York: HarperCollins Publishing Inc., 2000), 382.
49. Recinos, Goetz, and Morley, *Popol Vuh*, 109, Part 2: Chapter 1: note 7.
50. Ibid., 109–110.
51. Ibid., 178, Part 3: Chapter 5: note 4, 5.
52. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 85, 108, 112.
53. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 393.
54. Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 19.
55. Hancock, Graham, *Underworld*, 25–26, quoting from the Sumerian Tablet found at Nippur, which was the likely basis for the Babylonian *Epic of Gilgamesh.*
56. Cahill, Gifts *of the Jews*, 39, 45.
57. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 203.
58. Alford, 31.
59. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 212–214.
60. Wang, *Daoism in China*, 82.
61. Ibid., 78–79.
62. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 23.

CHAPTER 16: THE GREAT WORLD MYTH

1. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 105.
2. Ibid.
3. Ibid., 120.
4. Bauer, 10–11.
5. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:3:93, 1:3:107−108, 1:94−96.
6. Leeming and Leeming, A *Dictionary of Creation Myths*, 139.
7. Charles F. Horne, *The Artha-Veda and the Brahmanas 1000 B.C.* (C. Kessler Publishing, ISBN 076610012x), 63–64, quoting the *Cata Patha Brahmana*.
8. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 145.
9. Jonathan Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 36.
10. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 93–94.
11. Charles F. Horne, *The Rig-Veda: The Oldest Aryan Book 2000–1000 B.C.* (C. Kessinger Publishing, ISBN 076610012x), 20, Book I Hymn 19, verses 4–5.
12. Ibid., 20–21, Book I, Hymn 37, verses 1–12.
13. Ibid., Book I, Hymn 64, 1–4.
14. Ibid., Book I, Hymn 64, 7–11.
15. Ibid., Hymn 165, note 10, 27.
16. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 49, 50, 57.
17. Ibid., 57–58.
18. Leeming and Leeming, A *Dictionary of Creation Myths*, 4, 16, 42, 68, 73, 123.
19. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 88.
20. Leeming and Leeming, A *Dictionary of Creation Myths*, 14, 133, 148, 296.
21. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 88.
22. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 34.
23. Leeming and Leeming, A *Dictionary of Creation Myths*, 287.
24. David E. Jones, *An Instinct for Dragons* (New York: Routledge, 2000), 121–128.
25. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 28–29.
26. Ellis, *The Celts*, 7, 162.
27. Jones, *An Instinct for Dragons*, 90.
28. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, *The Second Book of Enoch*, 500, Note 5.
29. Deuteronomy 3:8.
30. Deuteronomy 3:9.
31. 1 Chronicles 5:23; Deuteronomy 3:13.
32. Psalms 29:6.133:3; Song of Songs 4:8; Ezekiel 27:5.
33. Gonsalez-Wipper, 205.
34. *Unger's*, 554–555.
35. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 24.
36. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 95.
37. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 63.
38. *Webster's New Compact Format Dictionary*, 1986.
39. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 215.

CHAPTER 17: ATLANTIS

1. Hancock, *Underworld*, 21.
2. Ibid.
3. Ibid., 668.
4. Bauer, xxv, 10–13.
5. Ibid., 75; Greer, *Atlantis*, 9, 21, quoting *Timaeus* 22c, 23b, from Benjamin Jowett's translation of Plato, *The Dialogues of Plato*, (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1892).
6. Greer, *Atlantis*, 9, 21, quoting *Timaeus* 22c, 23b, from Jowett, 1892.
7. *The Good News Bible*, *199*2 Sirach 17:7; Baruch 3:26; Wisdom 14; *the NIV Bible*, *1973* Deuteronomy 33:15; Psalms 77:5; Proverbs 22:28; Ecclesiastes 1:10; Isaiah 19:11; Jeremiah 5:15; Daniel 7:9; 1 Peter 3:15; 2 Peter 2:5.
8. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 577, Vol. 3.
9. Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, Introduction, 4.
10. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 577, Vol. 3.
11. Greer, *Atlantis*, 21.
12. Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, Introduction, 4.
13. Greer, *Atlantis*, 21.
14. Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, Introduction, 4.
15. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 577, Vol. 3.
16. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 122, 125.
17. Charles Berlitz, *The Mystery of Atlantis* (New York: Nordon Publications Inc., 1969), 37; Donnelly, *Atlantis*, 12.
18. Greer, *Atlantis*, 11, quoting *Timaeus* 24d, 25d.
19. Baigent, *Ancient Traces*, 138.
20. Berlitz, *The Mystery of Atlantis*, 37.
21. Baigent, *Ancient Traces*, 138.
22. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 30.
23. Donnelly, *Atlantis*, 13.
24. Baigent, *Ancient Traces*, 138.
25. Berlitz, *The Mystery of Atlantis*, 59.
26. Ibid., 38.
27. Baigent, *Ancient Traces*, 138.
28. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 30; *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 507, Vol. 2.
29. Adrian Gilbert and Maurice M. Cotterrell, *The Mayan Prophecies: Unlocking the Secrets of a Lost Civilization* (Rockport, MA: Element Books, 1996), 170, quoting Donnelly, *Atlantis*, 153, 132–137.
30. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 30.
31. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 507, Vol. 1.
32. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 25.
33. Donnelly, *Atlantis*, 13.
34. Berlitz, *The Mystery of Atlantis*, 38, 62.
35. Gardner, *Shadow*, 164.
36. Baigent, *Ancient Traces*, 139–140.
37. Ibid., 139.
38. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 201.
39. Ibid., 11.
40. Ibid., 28.

41. Ibid., 11, 21, 25, 28.
42. Ibid., 20, 219–221, 225.
43. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 507, Vol. 2.
44. Greer, *Atlantis*, 8.
45. Ibid., quoting *Timaeus* 22c, 23b, from Jowett, 1892.
46. Ibid., 9, quoting *Timaeus* 22c from Jowett, 1892.
47. Ibid., 14–15.
48. Ibid., 16.
49. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 121.
50. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 507, Vol. 2; Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 121.
51. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 233, Vol. 22.
52. Ibid., 233, Vol. 22; Greer, *Atlantis*, 8.
53. Ibid., 234, Vol. 22.
54. Greer, *Atlantis*, 17.
55. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 97, Vol. 20.
56. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 22.
57. Ibid., 83–84.
58. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 507, Vol. 2.
59. Greer, *Atlantis*, 9.
60. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 89, 120.
61. Baigent, *Ancient Mysteries*, 140.
62. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 109.
63. Berlitz, *The Mystery of Atlantis*, 51.
64. Plutarch, the Dryden Translation, 6; Vol. #14, *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 121–123.
65. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 109.
66. Donnelly, *Atlantis*, 20; Berlitz, *The Mystery of Atlantis*, 51.
67. Plutarch, the Dryden Translation, 6.
68. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 637, Vol. 12.
69. Plutarch, the Dryden Translation, 7–9.
70. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 199, Vol. 6.
71. Berlitz, *The Mystery of Atlantis*, 47.
72. Baigent, *Ancient Traces*, 140.
73. Baigent, *Ancient Mysteries*, 140.
74. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 111.
75. Herbie Brennan, *The Atlantis Enigma* (London: Judy Piatkus Publishers Ltd., 1999), 179.
76. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 121–123, Vol. 14.
77. Baigent, *Ancient Traces*, 140.
78. Greer, *Atlantis*, 10–11.
79. Berlitz, *The Mystery of Atlantis*, 51.
80. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, *The Hypostasis of the Archons*, 78.
81. Berlitz, *The Mystery of Atlantis*, 51; Donnelly, *Atlantis*, 20.
82. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 28.
83. Baigent, *Ancient Mysteries*, 140.
84. Greer, *Atlantis*, 12.
85. Berlitz, *The Mystery of Atlantis*, 70.
86. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 111, 146.
87. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 82.
88. Hancock, *Underworld*, 20.
89. Greer, *Atlantis*, 9, quoting *Timaeus*, from Benjamin Jowett's translation, *The Dialogues of Plato*, 22c, 23b.

90. Hancock, *Underworld*, 20.
91. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 113; *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 1956, 703, Vol. 21; Greer, *Atlantis*, 9.
92. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 703, Vol. 21; Greer, *Atlantis*, 9.
93. Greer, *Atlantis*, 21, quoting *Timaeus*, from Benjamin Jowett's translation, *The Dialogues of Plato*, 22c, 23b.
94. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 118.
95. Bauer, 11.
96. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 117.
97. Ibid., 126.
98. Ibid., 135, 145, 146.
99. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 507, Vol. 2; Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 115, 120.
100. Bauer, 14.
101. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 132–134, 140, 141, 147.
102. *Unger's*, 947.
103. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 280.
104. Graham, Hancock, and Robert Bauval, *The Message of the Sphinx* (Toronto, ON: Doubleday Canada Limited, 1997), 85.
105. Berlitz, *The Mystery of Atlantis*, 59, 155.
106. Ibid., 155.
107. Hancock, and, Bauval, *The Message of the Sphinx*, 85.
108. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 32.
109. Ibid., 79, 140.
110. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 103.
111. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 115–116, 185.
112. Ibid., 25, 61, 116, 149.

CHAPTER 18: ZEP TEPI: THE FIRST TIME

1. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 141.
2. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 318–319.
3. Ginzberg, *Legends*, xxvii.
4. Ibid., 1956, 70.
5. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 101.
6. Hancock, *Underworld*, 39.
7. Leeming and Leeming, A *Dictionary of Creation Myths*, 236.
8. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 31.
9. Michael Baigent, *Ancient Traces*, 137.
10. Ibid., 71.
11. Hancock, Bauval, The *Message of the Sphinx*, 49.
12. Mackey, *History*, 182, *"Freemasonry and the Ancient Mysteries."*
13. Berlitz, *The Mystery of Atlantis*, 59.
14. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 135.
15. Hancock and Bauval, The *Message of the Sphinx*, 85.
16. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 60.
17. Sitchin, *Journeys to the Mythical Past*, l, 16–18.
18. Ibid., 18–19, quoting *The Royal Tombs of the Earliest Dynasties*, 1901.
19. Ibid., 28, 36–37.
20. Hancock and Bauval, The Message of the Sphinx, 66-76
21. Ibid., 44.
22. Hancock and Bauval, *The Message of the Sphinx*, 206.

23. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 91.
24. Hancock and Bauval, *The Message of the Sphinx*, 206.
25. Ezekiel 10:12; Ezekiel 1:10; Revelation 4:7.
26. Gonsalez-Wipper, 47.
27. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 69.
28. Ezekiel 1:1–28; Ezekiel 10:1–22; Revelation 4:1–11.
29. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 69.
30. *Unger's*, 222–223.
31. *Nelson's*, 257–258.
32. Gonsalez-Wipper, 47.
33. Jones, *An Instinct for Dragons*, 7, 48.
34. Howard Reid, *Arthur The Dragon King* (London: Headline Book Publishing, 2001), viii.
35. Bauer, Susan, 111, note.
36. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 199, Vol. 6.
37. Ibid.
38. Ibid., 569, Vol. 15.
39. Ibid., 111, Vol. 14.
40. Ibid., 569, Vol. 15.
41. Plutarch, the Dryden Translation, 23.
42. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 199, Vol. 6.
43. L. Evans, *Kingdom of the Ark*, 76.
44. Hancock and Bauval, *The Message of the Sphinx*, 135.
45. Ibid., 156.
46. Sitchin, *Journeys to the Mythical Past*, 127.

CHAPTER 19: ECHOES FROM ATLANTIS, SUMER, AND MU

1. Recinos, Goetz, and Morley, *Popol Vuh*, 78, Preamble, notes 3 and 180, Part 3: Chapter 6: note 3.
2. Ibid., 184, Part 3: Chapter 8: note 5.
3. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 122.
4. Graham Hancock, *Fingerprints of the Gods* (Toronto, ON: McClellan Bantam, Inc., 1996), 107.
5. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 128.
6. Recinos, Goetz, and Morley, *Popol Vuh*, 89–93, Part 1: Chapter 3–4.
7. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 126.
8. Recinos, Goetz, and Morley, *Popol Vuh*, 180–81, Part 4: Chapter 6; 189, Part 3: Chapter 9: note 9.
9. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 9.
10. Recinos, Goetz, and Morley, *Popol Vuh*, 7, 21, Introduction.
11. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 154.
12. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 61, 92, 215.
13. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 134.
14. Ibid., 134.
15. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 136.
16. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 134.
17. Donnelly, *Atlantis*, 204.
18. Bauer, 14.
19. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 146.
20. Ibid., 147.
21. Armstrong, *The Great Transformation*, 30–31.
22. Ethel R. Nelson and C. H. Kang, *The Discovery of Genesis: How the Truths of Genesis Were Found in The Chinese Language* (St. Louis, MO: Concordia Publishing House, 1979).

23. Graham Hancock, *Underworld*, 668, quoting Sir James Fraser, *Folklore in the Old Testament*, 225–232, Vol. I.
24. Leeming and Leeming, A *Dictionary of Creation Myths*, 141.
25. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 140.
26. Leeming and Leeming, A *Dictionary of Creation Myths*, 16.
27. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 67–68.
28. Leeming and Leeming, A *Dictionary of Creation Myths*, 16.
29. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 184–185.
30. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 125–132; Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 1131–140; Leeming and Leeming, A *Dictionary of Creation Myths*, 12, 13, 47, 186, 204, 230.
31. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 125–132; Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 145.
32. Gilbert and Cotterrell, *The Mayan Prophecies*, 167, 176.
33. Donnelly, *Atlantis*, 194–195.
34. Ibid., 194–195.
35. Recinos, Goetz, and Morley, *Popol Vuh*, 172–176, Part 3: Chapter 3: note 7.
36. Greer, *Atlantis*, 45–46, 94–96, 104–104, 238, 240, 124.
37. Maurice M. Cotterrell, *The Super Gods* (London: Thorsons, An Imprint of Harper Collins Publishers, 1997), 100, 104–105.
38. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 133–134.
39. Hancock, *Underworld*, 107–108.
40. Greer, *Atlantis*, 25–26.
41. Hancock, *Underworld*, 109.
42. Greer, *Atlantis*, 26.
43. Hancock, *Underworld*, 109.
44. Greer, *Atlantis*, 26.
45. Hancock, *Underworld*, 109.
46. Ibid. 120–121, quoting the *Vishna Purana*, Vol. I, from Captain M. W. Carr, *Descriptive and Historical Papers Relating to the Seven Pagodas of the Coromandel*, 1869, reprinted by Asian Educational Services, New Delhi, 1984, 13–15.
47. Ibid.
48. Ibid., 123.
49. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 110.
50. Donnelly, *Atlantis*, 27.
51. Knight and Lomas, *The Hiram Key* (London: Arrow Books Ltd., Random House U.K, Ltd., 1997), 114–115.
52. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 25.
53. Wang, *Daoism in China*, 5–6.
54. Donnelly, *Atlantis*, 27.
55. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 637, Vol. 12.
56. Cassandra Eason, *A Complete Guide to Fairies and Magical Beings* (London: Judy Piatkus Publishers Limited, 2001), 169.
57. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 131, 146–147.
58. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 169.
59. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 126–127.
60. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 169.
61. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 127.
62. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 637, Vol. 12.
63. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 44.
64. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 23.
65. Ibid., 28, 52, 62.

66. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 168.
67. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 50–51.

CHAPTER 20: THE SEVEN SAGES OF ATLANTIS

1. Rohl, *Legend of the Genesis*, 307.
2. Ibid., 334.
3. Ibid., 342, 352.
4. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 27–28.
5. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 460.
6. Hancock and Bauval, *The Message of the Sphinx*, 199.
7. Baigent, *Ancient Traces*, 163.
8. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 317.
9. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 155, quoting N. Grimal, *History of Ancient Egypt.*
10. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 317.
11. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 93.
12. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 148.
13. Recinos, Goetz, and Morley, *Popol Vuh*, 64–70, Part 3: Chapter 9–11.
14. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 107–108.
15. Bauer, 26–28.
16. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 208, Vol. 18.
17. Ibid., 208, Vol. 18, Sitchin, *Journeys to the Mythical Past*, 126.

18. Ibid., 208, Vol. 18.
19. Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, Introduction, 4.
20. Sitchin, *Journeys to the Mythical Past*, 126.
21. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 208, Vol. 18.
22. Ibid.
23. Sitchin, *Journeys to the Mythical Past*, 126.
24. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 141.
25. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 108.
26. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 297.
27. Rohl, *The Lost Testament*, 33, 35, 102.
28. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 75–76.
29. Gardner, *Realm* 55.
30. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 706, Vol. 29.
31. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 80, 131.
32. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 33.
33. Hancock, *Underworld*, 40, quoting Benno Lansberger, *The Three Essay on the Sumerians II: The Beginnings of Civilization in Mesopotamia*, 174.
34. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 33, 45.
35. Hancock, *Underworld*, 40, quoting Benno Lansberger, *The Three Essay on the Sumerians II: The Beginnings of Civilization in Mesopotamia*, 174.
36. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 33–35.
37. Hancock, *Underworld*, 139.
38. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 298–299.
39. The Qur'an, The Cow 2:102.
40. Horne, *The Rig-Veda*.
41. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 125.
42. Hancock and Bauval, *The Message of the Sphinx*, 200.
43. Ibid., 270, Conclusion.
44. Ibid., 85.
45. Ibid., 86.
46. Mackey, *History*, "*Legend of Enoch*," 398.
47. Hancock and Bauval, *The Message of the Sphinx*, 209.
48. Ibid., 212.
49. Steven Sora, *Lost Treasure of the Knights Templar* (Rochester, VT: Destiny Books, A Division of Inner Traditions International,1999), 181.
50. Gilbert and Cotterrell, *The Mayan Prophecies*, 160.
51. Recinos, Goetz, and Morley, *Popol Vuh*, 64, Introduction; 170: Part 3: Chapter 3.
52. Gilbert and Cotterrell, *The Mayan Prophecies*, 165.
53. Recinos, Goetz, and Morley, *Popol Vuh*, 167, Part 3: Chapter 2: note 1.
54. Ibid., 64, Introduction.
55. Gilbert and Cotterrell, The *Mayan Prophecies*, 175.
56. Ibid., 177, 195.
57. Sitchin, *Journeys to the Mythical Past*, 63.
58. Greer, *Atlantis*, 70.
59. Gilbert and Cottrell, *The Mayan Prophecies*, 197.
60. Ibid., 12.
61. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 106–107.
62. Recinos, Goetz, and Morley, *Popol Vuh*, 170, Part 3: Chapter 3: note 4.
63. Ibid., 62, Introduction; 174, Part 3: Chapter 4: note 12.
64. Ibid., 88, Part 1: Chapter 2: note 12.

65. Ibid., 64, Part 3: Chapter 3: note 4.
66. Ibid., 67–69, Introduction.
67. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 131–134.
68. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 8.
69. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 131.
70. Hancock, *Underworld*, 131.
71. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 94.
72. Hancock, *Underworld*, 159; Horne, *The Rig-Veda*, 17, Book 1, Hymn 3 verses 1–3.
73. Horne, *The Artha-Veda*, 64–65, quoting the *Cata Patha Brahmana* .
74. Horne, *The Rig-Veda*, 17, Book I, Hymn 3, note 5.
75. Hancock, *Underworld*, 132.
76. Armstrong, *The Great Transformation*, 3.
77. Bauer, 483.
78. Horne, *The Rig-Veda*, 13, Introduction.
79. Gregg Braden, *The Divine Matrix Bridging Time, Space, Miracles, and Belief* (Carlsbad, Ca, Hay House, Inc., 2007), 40.
80. Horne, *The Rig-Veda*, 13, Introduction.
81. Braden, *The Divine Matrix*, 40, 55.
82. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 284.
83. Ibid., 144.
84. Ibid.
85. Hancock, *Underworld*, 145.
86. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 82; Recinos, Goetz, and Morley, *Popol Vuh*, 181, Part 4: Chapter 6.

CHAPTER 21: THE EPIC OF GILGAMESH

1. Greer, *Atlantis*, 24.
2. Bauer, 12.
3. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 653, Vol. 12.
4. Bauer, 72–73.
5. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 653, Vol. 12.
6. Bauer, 72–73.
7. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 654, Vol. 12.
8. Bauer, 77.
9. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 78.
10. Alford, 120.
11. Blake and, Blezard, 55.
12. Alford, 120.
13. Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 20; *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 653–654, Vol. 12.
14. Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 23.
15. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 85.
16. Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 22–23, quoting the *Epic of Gilgamesh.*
17. Ibid., 22.
18. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 653–654, Vol. 12.
19. Alford, 120–121, 140.
20. Bauer, 93.
21. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 86.
22. Alford, 140.
23. Ibid., 120.
24. Ibid., 122–123.
25. Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 25, quoting the *Epic of Gilgamesh.*
26. Ibid., 30.
27. Hancock, *Underworld*, 27.
28. Sitchin, *Lost Book of Enki.*, 200.
29. Alford, 183.
30. Knight and Lomas, *The Hiram Key*, 114–115.
31. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 321.
32. Alford, 191.
33. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 93.
34. Ibid., 356, quoting M. Wise, *The Dead Sea Scrolls*.
35. Ibid., 154.

CHAPTER 22: DEUCALION, MANU, AND SETH

1. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 57, *The Revelation of Adam* 70:16–17.
2. Ibid., 204, *Other Gnostic Teachings according to St. Epiphanius, The Book of Noria* 26:4–6.
3. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 129.
4. Ibid., 114, 129.
5. Genesis 3:6.
6. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 129.
7. Baigent, *Ancient Traces*,126.
8. Robinson, *The Nag Hammadi Library*, 446, Introduction, commenting on *Gnostic Gospel*, *The Thought of Norea*.

9. Ibid., commenting on *Gnostic Gospel*: *The Thought of Norea* and *The Hypostasis of the Archons* 2:4, 166, 92:25.
10. Ibid.
11. Ibid.
12. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 87.
13. Bauer, 35, notes.
14. Armstrong, *Great Transformation*, 17–18, 26, 151.
15. Ibid., 91.
16. Bauer, 264, notes and 483.
17. Armstrong, *The Great Transformation*, 3–4.
18. Hancock, *Underworld*, 131–133.
19. Bauer, 32.
20. Hancock, *Underworld*, 131.
21. Ibid., 135; Horne, *The Artha-Veda*, 61–62, Legend of the Flood from the *Cata Patha Brahmana.*
22. Hancock, *Underworld*, 203; Horne, *The Artha-Veda*, 61–62, Legend of the Flood from the *Cata Patha Brahmana.*
23. Ibid., Horne, *The Artha-Veda*, 61–62, Legend of the Flood from the *Cata Patha Brahmana.*
24. Ibid., 136; Horne, *The Artha-Veda*, 61–62, Legend of the Flood from the *Cata Patha Brahmana.*
25. Ibid., 138.
26. Ibid., 134.
27. Ibid., 135.
28. Ibid., 136.
29. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 117, *The Holy book of the Invisible Spirit* 74:19–26.
30. Ibid., p. 110, 63:4–6.
31. Ibid., 17.
32. Ibid., 115, *The Holy book of the Invisible Spirit* 59:9–25.
33. Ibid., 149, *The Three Tablets of Seth* from the contents section in the introduction.
34. Ibid., 49, *The Secret Book According to John* 28:8–13.
35. Elaine Pagels and Karen L. King, *Reading Judas: The Gospel of Judas and the Shaping of Christianity* (New York: Penguin Group, Inc., 2007), 117, 119, Judas 10:6–12; 11:1–12.
36. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 58, *The Revelation of Adam* 73:13–27, 74:1–21.

CHAPTER 23: THE RAPHAITES AND THE AMORITES

1. *Unger's*, 57, 1073.
2. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 62.
3. Charles Sellier, *Ancient Revelations of the Bible* (New York: Dell Publishing, A Division of Bantam Doubleday Dell Publishing Group Inc., 1995), 95.
4. *Unger's*, 54.
5. Bauer, 101, 133.
6. *Unger's*, *54;* Bauer, 131, 139.
7. *Nelson's*, 49.
8. Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 15.
9. Ibid., quoting an ancient Mesopotamian description of Amorites.
10. Ibid., 15.
11. 1 Chronicles 35–42.
12. *Nelson's*, 49–50.
13. Joshua 12:4; Joshua 2:10; Deuteronomy 3:11; Numbers 21:32–34.
14. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 157.
15. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 322.
16. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 85.

17. Ibid., 356.
18. Deuteronomy 1:26–31; Deuteronomy 3:11–30; Numbers 13:21–32; Numbers 21:32–34; Joshua 12:4; Joshua 2:10.
19. Genesis 15:16; 1 Samuel 27:8.
20. Deuteronomy 3:11; 4:47; Joshua 12:4; 2:10; Numbers 21:22–24.
21. Deuteronomy 2:1–32; 3:1–11.
22. Psalms 135:10–12.
23. *Nelson's*, 923.
24. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 461.
25. Judges 1:16; *Unger's*, 91.
26. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 4:5:1.
27. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 460–461.
28. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 4:5:3.
29. Deuteronomy 3:13–14.
30. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Paul, Ant. 4:5:3.
31. Deuteronomy 3:1; *Unger's*, 935.
32. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 460.
33. Deuteronomy 3:11.
34. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 462.
35. Deuteronomy 3:11.
36. Gonsalez-Wipper, 259.
37. *Unger's*, 935.
38. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 65.
39. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 460–463.
40. Ibid., 75.
41. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 65.
42. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 462.
43. Joshua 12:4; 13:11.
44. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 4:5:3.
45. Deuteronomy 3:3.
46. Joshua 12:4; Deuteronomy 3:11.
47. Joshua 15:13; 21:11; 14:12–14.
48. Joshua 15:13–14.
49. *Unger's*, 57.
50. *Nelson's*, 53.
51. *Unger's*, 57.
52. *Unger's*, 361.
53. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 69.
54. *Unger's*, 1378.
55. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 69.
56. *Unger's*, 127.
57. Ibid.
58. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 69.
59. *Unger's*, 1073–1074.
60. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 69.
61. *Webster's New Compact Format Dictionary*, 1986.
62. Numbers 2:20–22; Deuteronomy 2:10–11.

CHAPTER 24: SODOM AND GOMORRAH

1. Genesis 14.
2. Genesis 11:31–32; 12:1–9; 15:14–20; 17:1–16.
3. Bauer, 134.
4. Ibid., 128–129.
5. Genesis 15:5–7.
6. Genesis 14:7.
7. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:9:1.
8. Genesis 14:7; Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 118.
9. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:9:1.
10. Genesis 19:1–29.
11. The Qur'an, Hud 11:69; Al-Hijir 15:61–76; The Spider 29:29; The Moon 54:33.
12. Ezekiel 16:49–50.
13. Genesis 19:1–29.
14. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 164.
15. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 17, 52.
16. Pagels and King, *Reading Judas*, 114, 117; Judas 8:2; 11:1–6; 10:6–10.
17. Ibid., 149; *The Gospel of Judas*, 11:1–12.
18. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 113, *The Holy book of the Invisible Spirit* 56:1–19.
19. Ibid., 115, 59:9–25.
20. Ibid.
21. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 462.
22. Genesis 14:12.
23. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 461.
24. Genesis 20:1–18; 12:10–20.
25. Rose, *Giants*, *Monsters and Dragons*, 274.
26. Genesis 14:13.
27. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 104.
28. Genesis 14:1–4.
29. Rohl, *Lost Testament*,118–119.
30. Bauer, 88, 89, 104.
31. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 10; Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 118; Genesis 14:4.
32. Genesis 14:4; Ginzberg, *Legends*, 10; Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 118–119.
33. Ginsberg, *Legends*, 10; Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 118.
34. Bauer, 124–125, 139.
35. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 119.
36. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 104.
37. Genesis 14:13; Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 120.
38. Genesis 14:17.
39. Genesis 14:2.
40. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 463.
41. *Unger's*, 54.

CHAPTER 25: THE AMALEKITES

1. *The Good News Bible, 1992,* Sirach 16:7; Baruch 3:26; Wisdom 14; *NIV Bible, 1973,* Deuteronomy 33:15; Psalms 77:5; Ecclesiastes 1:10; Isaiah 19:11; 23:7; Jeremiah 5:15; Daniel 7:9; 1 Peter 3:19; 2 Peter 2:5.
2. Joshua 15:14; Judges 1:10.
3. *Nelson's*, 35.
4. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 5:2:3.
5. Joshua 15:14; Judges 1:10.
6. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 436.
7. *Unger's*, 1251.
8. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 16.
9. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 432, 436.
10. *Unger's*, 1251.
11. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 436.
12. Genesis 14:6.
13. Genesis 36:20–30.
14. Genesis 14:7; Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 118.
15. Genesis 14:5–7.
16. *Nelson's*, 577.
17. *Unger's*, 586–587.
18. 1 Chronicles 1:38.
19. Whiston and Maier, Ant. 1:2:1.
20. *Nelson's*, 44–45.
21. *Unger's*, 49–50.
22. *Unger's*, 49–50; *Nelson's*, 577.
23. Bauer, 213, 363.
24. *Unger's*, 1154; *Nelson's*, 1142.
25. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:18:1.
26. 1 Chronicles 1:38–40; Genesis 36:20–22.
27. Genesis 36:17.
28. Genesis 36:20.
29. Genesis 36:25.
30. Genesis 36:18.
31. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:18:8.
32. Genesis 36:10–11.
33. Whiston and, Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 2:1:2; Genesis 36:15; 1 Chronicles 1:35.
34. Genesis 36:11; 1 Chronicles 1:36.
35. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 2:1:2.
36. Genesis 36:22; 1 Chronicles 1:39.
37. Genesis 36:1; 36:11; 1 Chronicles 1:36.
38. Josephus 2:1:2.
39. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 2:1:2.

CHAPTER 26: JETHRO AND CALEB

1. *Unger's*, 688.
2. Exodus 3:1.
3. Judges 4:11, note b; *New Unger's*, 581.
4. *Unger's*, 688.
5. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 303.
6. Ibid., 283.
7. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 170.
8. Job 1:1.
9. Job 1:2–5.
10. *Unger's*, 694–695.
11. Ibid.
12. 1 Chronicles 1:28–42.
13. 1 Chronicles 1:36; Genesis 36:11; Job 2:11.
14. 1 Chronicles 1:32; Genesis 25:2.
15. *Unger's*, 1391.
16. Deuteronomy 23:4–5; Numbers 22:5; 2 Peter 2:15–17.
17. Deuteronomy 23:4, Note a.
18. 2 Peter 2:15; Joshua 24:9; Numbers 22:5; Deuteronomy 23:4; Genesis 36:31; 1 Chronicles 1:43.
19. *Unger's*, 995.
20. Numbers 22:4–5, 7.
21. *Unger's*, 955.
22. Numbers 22:1–35; 22:1–39; 24:1–25; Deuteronomy 23:3–6.
23. Numbers 22:2–5.
24. Numbers 24:20–24.
25. Recinos, Goetz, and Morley, *Popol Vuh*, 167, Part 3: Chapter 2: note 1.
26. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 283.
27. Judges 1:16; Judges 4:11.
28. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 47.
29. Ginzberg, *Legends*, xxii.
30. Exodus 2:21–22.
31. Genesis 15:19.
32. *Nelson's*, 724–725.
33. Numbers 13:6.
34. Numbers 14:26–38.
35. Joshua 14:6–14; Joshua 15:13–14.
36. *Nelson's*, 724–725, quoting Genesis 36: 11; 36:42.
37. Genesis 15:19.
38. *Unger's*, 734.
39. Ibid.
40. *Nelson's*, 725.
41. 1 Samuel 15:4–6.
42. *Nelson's*, 725 *Unger's*, 734.
43. Genesis 36:11, 15, 42; 1 Chronicles 1:53.
44. *New Unger's*, 49–50.
45. *Unger's*, 116; *Nelson's*, 131.
46. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 303.

47. 1 Chronicles 1:32.
48. *Unger's*, 734–735; *Nelson's*, 724–725.
49. 1 Samuel 15:6.
50. Judges 1:16; 4:11.
51. Deuteronomy 2:10–23.
52. Numbers 13:21–32.
53. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 71, *The Revelation of Adam*, 70:6–17.

CHAPTER 27: NIMROD

1. Mackey, *History*, 58, *“Tower of Babel.”*
2. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:4:1.
3. Mackey, *History*, 54, *“Tower of Babel.”*
4. Ibid., 65–66, *“Legend of Nimrod.”*
5. Deuteronomy 17:14–18.
6. Psalms 77:20; 80:1; Ezekiel 34:2, 23; Zechariah 13:7; 11:8; 15:7; Isaiah 40:11; 56:11; 44:28; Jeremiah 6:3; 23:4; 50:6; 49:19; John 10:14; Hebrews 13:20.
7. Tim Wallace-Murphy, Marilyn Hopkins, Graham Simmons, *Rosslyn* (Boston: Element Books Inc., 1999), 150.
8. *Nelson’s*, 897.
9. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium: An Expose of Symbols, Slogans and Hidden Agendas* (Forestville, MD: Demond Wilson Enterprises, CSE Books, 1998), 104.
10. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 83.
11. Mackey, *History*, 20, *“Legend of the Craft”*; 63–66, *“Legend of Nimrod.”*
12. Genesis 10:10, Table of Nations.
13. *Nelson’s*, 1130.
14. Bauer, 95–97.
15. Genesis 10:10, Table of Nations.
16. *Nelson’s*, 1130.
17. Bauer, 98–101.
18. *Nelson’s*, 13.
19. Bauer, 122.
20. *Nelson’s*, 897.
21. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 206.
22. *Unger’s*, 923–924.
23. Genesis 9:3.
24. Genesis 10:8.
25. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 83.
26. Ibid., 82–83.
27. Mackey, *History*, 20, *“Legend of the Craft”*; 65–66, *“Legend of Nimrod.”*
28. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:4:2
29. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 104.
30. Mackey, *History*, 54, *“Tower of Babel.”*
31. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 206, quoting from *The History of the Armenians.*
32. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 268.

CHAPTER 28: THE PEOPLE OF THE PLAIN

1. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus* Ant. 1:4:1.
2. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 23.
3. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 28.
4. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:4:1.
5. Ibid.
6. Mackey, *History*, 63–65, *“Legend of Nimrod.”*
7. Wallace-Murphy Hopkins, and Simmons, *Rosslyn*, 150.
8. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:4:1.
9. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 83.

10. Whiston and, Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:4:2.
11. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 83.
12. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:4:2.
13. Alford, 170, *The Atra Hasic Epic.*
14. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 28.
15. Genesis 11:4.

CHAPTER 29: THE TOWER AT BABEL

1. Genesis 10:7–8, Table of Nations
2. *Nelson's*, 146–148
3. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 29.
4. Charles Sellier and Brian Russell, *Ancient Secrets of the Bible* (New York: Dell Publishing, A Division of Bantam Doubleday Dell Publishing Group Inc., 1994), 122.
5. *Nelson's*, 146–148.
6. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 28.
7. Genesis 11:2.
8. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:4:2.
9. Ibid., 1:4:1.
10. Ibid.
11. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 84.
12. Ibid., 82.
13. Ibid.
14. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:4:1.
15. Hancock, *Fingerprints*, 184.
16. Ibid., 123, quoted from Diego de Duran, *The Historia Antiqua de la Nueva Espana*, 1585 C.E., quoting Ignatius Donnelly, *Atlantis The Antediluvian World*, 200.
17. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 134.
18. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 114–127, 193, quoting from *The History of the Armenians.*
19. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 391.
20. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 80, 165–166, quoting from *The History of the Armenians.*

CHAPTER 30: THE ORIGINAL GREAT WHITE BROTHERHOOD

1. Mackey, *History*, 112, *"Summary of the Legend of the Craft."*
2. Ibid., 20, *"Legend of the Craft."*
3. Ibid., 65, *"Legend of Nimrod."*
4. Ibid., 59, *"Tower of Babel."*
5. Ibid., 63, *"Legend of Nimrod."*
6. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 251.
7. Mackey, *History*, 66, *"Legend of Nimrod."*
8. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 251.
9. Mackey, *History*, 60, "Tower of Babel"; 63, *"Legend of Nimrod "*; 112, *"Summary of the Legend of the Craft."*
10. Ibid., 63, *"Legend of Nimrod."*
11. Ibid., *"Legend of Nimrod."*
12. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons,* 1,268.
13. Mackey, *History*, 64, *"Legend of Nimrod."*
14. Ibid., 54, 58, *"Tower of Babel."*
15. Ibid., 20, *"Legend of the Craft."*
16. Ibid., 33, "The Origin of the Halliwell Poem."
17. Ibid., 59, *"Tower of Babel."*
18. Revelation 17:1–18; Revelation 18:1–24; Revelation 19:1–4.
19. *Unger's*, 133–134.
20. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 23.
21. Alford, 31–32.

22. *Unger's*, 133–134.
23. Sellier and Russell, *Ancient Secrets of the Bible*, 122.
24. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 23.
25. Knight and Lomas, *The Hiram Key*, 120–121.
26. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 215.
27. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 83, 86.
28. Mackey, *History*, 59, *"Tower of Babel."*
29. Ibid., 118, *"Anderson Theory."*
30. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 268.
31. Mackey, *History*, 60, "Tower of Babel"; 119, "Anderson Theory.
32. Ibid., 20, *"Legend of the Craft"*; 54 and 60, *"Tower of Babel."*
33. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 61.
34. *Unger's*, 217–218.
35. Mackey, *History*, 64, *"Legend of Nimrod."*
36. Ibid.
37. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 91, 94.
38. Genesis 12:1–4.
39. The Qur'an, Livestock 6:74–79; The Poets 26:69–79; The Prophets 21:1–74; The Spider 29:16–28.
40. Ibid., The Poets 26:69–79; The Spider 29:16–28.
41. Mackey, *History*, 64; *"Legend of Nimrod,"* 66.
42. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:6:1.
43. *Nelson's*, 897.
44. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 206, quoting from *The History of the Armenians.*

CHAPTER 31: FORGING THE NATION OF DESTINY

1. Exodus 3:8–9.
2. Armstrong, *The Great Transformation*, 46.
3. Ibid., 44.
4. The Qur'an, The Feast 5:20–21.
5. Exodus 32:1–35.
6. Numbers 13:1–33; 14:1–19.
7. Numbers 14:20–25.
8. Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 160.
9. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 59.
10. Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 149.
11. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 209–210.
12. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 59; Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 149.
13. *Nelson's*, 725.
14. Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 104–105.
15. Numbers 14:34–35.
16. Deuteronomy 1:3.
17. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 71.
18. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 127.
19. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 71.
20. Exodus 17:14.
21. Judges 6:3; 6:33.
22. Numbers 20:14–15.
23. Numbers 20:14–18.
24. Numbers 20:22–24.

25. Numbers 12:1–16.
26. Numbers 20:1.
27. Numbers 20:24.
28. Numbers 27:14; Deuteronomy 32:51.
29. Numbers 20:29.
30. Numbers 21:1–3.
31. *Unger's*, 91.
32. Judges 1:16.
33. *Unger's*, 91.
34. Numbers 21:1–3; 33:40; Joshua 12:14.
35. Numbers 21:4.
36. Numbers 21:10–14.
37. Numbers 21:16–20.
38. Exodus 17:15–16.

CHAPTER 32: THE NEPHILIM WARS

1. Numbers 31:13.
2. Joshua 3:2–17; 4:1–18.
3. Joshua 3:19–21.
4. Joshua 3:1–17; 4:1–24.
5. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 84.
6. Ibid., 89–95.
7. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 16.
8. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 75, 92–95.
9. *Unger's*, 340–341.
10. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 97.
11. Armstrong, *Great Transformation*, 49, 73.
12. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 93, 98.
13. Joshua 5:1–27; 8:1–29; 10:2–27.
14. Joshua 10:28–42.
15. Deuteronomy 1:20–24.
16. Joshua 12:9–24.
17. Joshua 13:1–6.
18. Judges 15:11; 1 Samuel 13:19–21.

CHAPTER 33: THE HOLY COVENANT

1. Deuteronomy 28:15–68.
2. Judges 1:19–36; 3:1–4
3. Robert Pinsky, *The Life of David* (New York: Schocken Books, A Division of Random House, Inc., 2005), 93.
4. Joshua 9:1–27.
5. 2 Samuel 21:1–14.
6. Deuteronomy 1:1–14.
7. The Qur'an, The Cow 2:63–66.
8. Ibid., The Feast 5:20–21; The Cow 2:47, 83–86, 122; Women 4:53–54, 154–155; The Feast 5:12, 70.
9. Ibid., Bowing Down in Worship 32:23–25.
10. 2 Kings 17:1–40.
11. *NIV Bible, 1973,* Ezekiel 1:17; 36:19–25; 37:19–22; Isaiah 44:21–22; 49:14–15; Psalms 105:8–11; 147:2; *The Access Bible, New Revised Standard Version with the Apocrypha, 1999,* 2 Esdra 3:15–16; 13:39–47; Deuteronomy 30:1–3; Jeremiah 23:3; Tobit 13:5; Sirach 47:21–22.
12. 2 Kings 24:1–20; 25:1–30; 2 Chronicles 36:1–23.
13. The Qur'an; The Cow 2:61–62; 87–92; The Family of 'Imram 3:115; Women 4:54–55; 154–159; The Feast 5:65–67; 70–78; The Night Journey 17:4–8.
14. Ibid., The Cow 2:61–62, 87–92; The Family of 'Imram 3:115; Women 4:54–55, 154–159; The Feast 5:65–67, 70–78; The Night Journey 17:4–8.
15. Genesis 15:16.
16. Revelation 20:9–10.

CHAPTER 34: JERICHO

1. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 12.
2. Alford, 333.
3. Whiston and, Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 5:1:4–5.
4. Exodus 12:17–20; Deuteronomy 16:1–8; Numbers 28:16–25; Exodus 34:18.
5. 1 Corinthians 5:6–8; Matthew 16:5–12; Mark 8:15–21; Habakkuk 2:4; Job 41:34; Proverbs 21:4.
6. Joshua 6:1–21.
7. Joshua 6:22–23.
8. Joshua 6:26.
9. Deuteronomy 9:1–2.
10. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 310–311.
11. Ibid., 310.
12. Alford, 138, 454.
13. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 5:1:5.
14. Ibid., Ant. 5:1:7.
15. Leviticus 23:9–14; Deuteronomy 26:2–4; Exodus 23:16, 19.
16. Leviticus 23:9–14.
17. Leviticus 23:15–22; Exodus 34:22; Numbers 28:26–31; Deuteronomy 16:9–12.
18. Revelation 14:14–20; Joel 3:14; Isaiah 63:2–4: Isaiah 636; Revelation 19:11–16.
19. Matthew 13:30–42.
20. Acts 2:1–4.
21. Revelation 14:4–5; 1 Corinthians 15:2–24; Romans 8:22–23; Revelation 6:9–11, Psalm 116:15; Daniel 11:35; Revelation 20:4.
22. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 17.
23. Exodus 19:13, 17, 19.
24. Numbers 10:1–10; Judges 7:18; Jeremiah 4:19–21; Joshua 6:20.
25. Numbers 10:10.
26. *Unger's*, 417–421
27. Ibid.

CHAPTER 35: CURSE OF THE AMALEKITES

1. Exodus 17:8–15; Numbers 14:41–45.
2. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 3:2:1.
3. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 371; Psalms 83:4.
4. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 188, 373, 432.
5. Genesis 32:3–17.
6. Genesis 35:27–29; 49:30–31.
7. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 181, 192–193, 371.
8. Ibid., 371–372.
9. Ibid., 374.
10. Exodus 17:10–13.
11. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 3:2:1.
12. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 371–372.
13. Judges 6:3.
14. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 3:2:1.
15. 1 Samuel 27:8–9.
16. Deuteronomy 3:13–14; Joshua 12:5; Joshua 13:2–13.
17. Genesis 31:25; Deuteronomy 3:13–14; Joshua 12:5.
18. Hosea 6:8.
19. Deuteronomy 3:13–14.
20. *Unger's*, 477.
21. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 6:7, Note 1.
22. Ibid.
23. Esther 3:1.
24. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 530.
25. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 3:2:1; *Unger's*, 32; *Nelson's*, 27, citing Exodus 17:8–16.
26. Psalm 83:2–8.
27. Numbers 24:20.
28. Exodus 17:14; Deuteronomy 25:19.

CHAPTER 36: KING SAUL AND KING DAVID

1. Deuteronomy 25:19.
2. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 528.
3. The Qur'an, The Cow 2:248–250.
4. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 135.
5. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 296–297.
6. 1 Samuel 9:2; 10:23.
7. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 528.
8. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 296.
9. 1 Samuel 9:1.
10. 1 Samuel 8:1–5.
11. The Qur'an, The Cow 2:46.
12. Ibid., The Cow 2:47, Note c.
13. Pinsky, *Life of David*, 26–27.
14. 1 Samuel 9:15–17.
15. Pinsky, *Life of David*, 24.
16. 1 Samuel 8:11–18.

17. The Qur'an, The Cow 2:247.
18. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 139.
19. Neil Asher Silberman and Israel Finkelstein, *David and Solomon* (New York: Free Press, A Division of Simon and Schuster, 2006), 44, 51.
20. Karen Armstrong, *A History Of God: The 4,000 Year Quest Of Judaism, Christianity, and Islam* (New York: Ballantine Books, A Division of Random House, Inc., 1973), 11.
21. Genesis chapters 12 through 21.
22. Genesis 12:1–6; Judges 9:6; 1 Kings 12:25.
23. Genesis 33:18–20.
24. Genesis 34:1–31.
25. John 4:5; Genesis 33:19; Joshua 24:19.
26. Joshua 24:1–27.
27. Karen Armstrong, *The Bible: A Biography* (Vancouver, b.c.: Douglas and McIntyre Ltd.) 2007, 13.
28. Joshua 17; Numbers 26:31.
29. Acts 7:15–16; Joshua 24.32.
30. *Unger's*, 1173–1174.
31. *Unger's*, 1173–1174; Judges 9:3–4, 46.
32. 1 Kings 12:1.
33. 1 Kings 12:25–33.
34. Silberman and Finkelstein, *David and Solomon*, 44, 46, 58.
35. *Nelson's*, 332.
36. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 528.
37. Judges 3:12–30; 4:1; Judges 6:1–40; 7:1–25; 8:1–35.
38. 1 Chronicles 8:1–39.
39. 1 Samuel 15:1–3.
40. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 528.
41. Whiston and, Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 6:7:3.
42. 1 Samuel 15:7.
43. 1 Samuel 15:10–34.
44. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 6:7:2.
45. Ibid., 6:7:1, Note 6.
46. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 530.
47. 1 Samuel 15:23–26; 1 Samuel 16:1–2.
48. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 528.
49. Genesis 49.
50. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 312–313.
51. 1 Samuel 29:1–9.
52. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 312–313.
53. 1 Chronicles 10:1–6; 1 Samuel 31:1–7.
54. 2 Samuel 21:12–13.
55. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 49.
56. 1 Chronicles 10:5–12.
57. 2 Samuel 21:12–14.
58. 1 Samuel 28:3–20.
59. 1 Samuel 15:32.
60. 1 Samuel 16:1–2.
61. 1 Samuel 1:7–15; 1 Samuel 2:4.
62. 1 Samuel 16:1–2; 1 Samuel 16:11–13.
63. 2 Samuel 1:1; 2 Samuel 8:11; 1 Chronicles 18:11.

64. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 543.
65. 1 Chronicles 4:42–43.
66. Esther 3:1–15; Esther 5:1–14; Esther 6:1–14; Esther 7:1–10.
67. 1 Samuel 27:8.
68. 1 Chronicles 1:38.
69. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 233
70. Ibid., 234.
71. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 1–2; Genesis 25:25.
72. Numbers 13:28–29.
73. Genesis 14:5–7.
74. *Unger's*, 483.
75. Gonsalez-Wipper, 229.
76. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 213.
77. *Unger's*, 483.
78. Gonsalez-Wipper, 257.
79. Genesis 4:22.

CHAPTER 37: DAVID AND GOLIATH

1. 1 Samuel 16:7.
2. The Qur’an, Sad 38:17–18.
3. 1 Chronicles 18:1–17.
4. The Qur’an, The Cow 2:251.
5. 1 Samuel 18:7.
6. 1 Samuel 22–30.
7. 2 Samuel 11:1–27.
8. 2 Samuel 12:7–14.
9. Revelation 19:11–21.
10. Revelation 19:11–16.
11. The Qur’an, The Cow 2:251; Sad 38:17–20; The Ants 27:15; Sheba 34:10.
12. Ibid., Women 4:164; The Night Journey 17:55; Sheba 34:10.
13. Ibid., Sad 38:20.
14. Ibid., Sad 38:17–20.
15. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 536.
16. Ruth 4:13–22.
17. Ruth 1:1–22.
18. Pinsky, *Life of David*, 15–17.
19. 1 Samuel 17:4.
20. 1 Samuel 17:4–7.
21. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 536.
22. Joshua 13:3.
23. 1 Samuel 21:15–22.
24. 2 Samuel 15:18–22; 2 Samuel 21:19; 1 Chronicles 20:5.
25. Joshua 13:3–4.
26. 2 Chronicles 21:22; 1 Chronicles 20:8.
27. Joshua 13:3; Samuel 5:8, 11; 6:4, 12, 16; 7:7 as examples; there are more.
28. Silberman and Finkelstein, *David and Solomon*, 289–90.
29. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 13, 7.
30. 1 Samuel 17:1.
31. 1 Samuel 17:2–3.
32. 1 Samuel 17:11, 16.
33. Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 178–179.
34. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 536.
35. 1 Samuel 4:10–21; 5:1–12; 6:1–21.
36. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 6:9:4.
37. 1 Samuel 17:43.
38. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 6:9:5.
39. Whiston and Maier *Josephus*, Ant. 6:9:5; 1 Samuel 17:51.
40. Whiston and Mair, *Josephus*, Ant. 6:9:4.
41. Pinsky, *Life of David*, 18.
42. *Unger’s*, 105.
43. Pinsky, *Life of David*, 18.
44. 1 Samuel 17:52; Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 6:9:5.

CHAPTER 38: THE AVVITES

1. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 7:4:1.
2. *Nelson's*, 141–14.2.
3. *Unger's*, 127.
4. Joshua 18:16, 23.
5. *Unger's*, 127.
6. Deuteronomy 7:1; Exodus 13:5.
7. Genesis 10:17, Table of Nations; 1 Chronicles 1:13.
8. Genesis 36:2; 36:18.
9. Genesis 36:19–40; 1 Chronicles 1:38–54.
10. *Unger's*, 586–587.
11. *Nelson's*, 571.
12. Ibid.
13. *Unger's*, 1173.
14. Genesis 34:1–31.
15. Joshua 9:9.
16. Jeremiah 47:4, note a; Amos 9:7, note c; Deuteronomy 2:23, note a.
17. Genesis 10:13, Table of Nations.
18. Ezekiel 25:15–17; 1 Samuel 30:14; *Nelson's*, 246, 257, 986–988.
19. *Unger's*, 215, 1003.
20. Bauer,184, notes.
21. Genesis 10:13–14, Table of Nations.
22. *Nelson's*, 986.
23. *Unger's*, 1004.
24. Ibid.
25. *Nelson's*, 987.
26. Bauer, 285–286, 314–319; Greer, *Atlantis*, 107–108.
27. Bauer, 314–318.
28. Greer, *Atlantis*, 107–108.
29. Ibid., 109–110; *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 211, Vol. 19.
30. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 211, Vol. 19.
31. Bauer, 318–319.
32. *Unger's*, 1004.
33. *Nelson's*, 987.
34. Bauer, 319, notes.
35. *Unger's*, 863–864; *Nelson's*, 841–842.
36. *Unger's*, 863–864.
37. *Nelson's*, 986–987; Unger's, 1004.
38. Ibid.
39. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 7:12:1.
40. 1 Chronicles 20:4; 2 Samuel 21:20–22; Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 7:12:2.
41. Whist on and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 7:12:2.
42. 2 Samuel 21:18.
43. 1 Chronicles 20:4; 2 Samuel 21:20–22.
44. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 7:12:2.
45. Ibid., Note b.
46. The Qur'an, The Cow 2:251.

47. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 306, 311.
48. Pinsky, *Life of David*, 69.
49. 1 Samuel 21:10–14; Psalms 34, Introduction; Pinsky, *Life of David*, 59.
50. 1 Samuel 27:1–12; 29:1–11; 30:1–27.
51. Pinsky, *Life of David*, 61.
52. 1 Samuel 29:1–11.
53. *Unger's*, 280.
54. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 137, 212.
55. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 306.
56. 2 Samuel 21:22.
57. Pinsky, *Life of David*, 17.
58. Ibid.
59. Ibid.
60. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 92.
61. 2 Samuel 2:4; 5:1–5.

CHAPTER 39: NOTHING NEW UNDER THE SUN

1. Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 130.
2. Hal Lindsey, *The Terminal Generation* (New York: Bantam Books Inc., 1977), describing this generation as the generation of the end time.

CHAPTER 40: THE NEW MAN

1. Sitchin, *Journeys to the Mystical Past*, 136–143.
2. Revelation 13:15.
3. The Qur'an, Hud 11:40; The Believers 23:27.
4. Ibid., Women 4:119.

CHAPTER 41: THE NEW AGE OF AQUARIUS

1. Ezekiel 1:1–28; Ezekiel 10:1–22; Revelation 4:1–11.
2. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 346–347.
3. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 380–390.
4. Dan Brown, *The Da Vinci Code* (New York: Doubleday, A Division of Random House Inc., 2003), 268.
5. Greer, *Atlantis*, 35.
6. Pagels and King, *Reading Judas*; Judas 9:7–8.
7. Ibid.
8. Revelation 16:12–14.
9. Revelation 14:14–20; Joel:3:12–13; *The Access Bible*, *New Revised Standard Version with the Apocrypha*, *1999,* 2 Esdras 4:28–32; Matthew 13:38–39.

CHAPTER 42: THE SIGN OF NOAH

1. Matthew 24:37–39; Luke 17:26–30.
2. Genesis 8:21; 9:12–17.
3. Genesis 19:23–25; Zephaniah 3:8; Zephaniah 5:8; Isaiah 24; Isaiah 30:30–31; *The Access Bible, New Revised Standard Version with the Apocrypha*, *1999*, 2Esdras 16:14; 2 Esdras 13:9–11.
4. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 115, *The Holy book of the Invisible Spirit* 72:1–4.
5. Recinos, Goetz, and Morley, *Popol Vuh*, 92, Part 1: Chapter 3: note 12.
6. Greer, *Atlantis*, 34.
7. Ibid., 150.
8. Ibid., 9, quoting *Timaeus* 22c and 23b from Benjamin Jowett's translation, Plato, *The Dialogues of Plato*.
9. Greer, *Atlantis*, 21, quoting Nicholas Campion, *The Great Year London: Arcana*, 1994, 61–67.
10. Ibid., 22.
11. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 12.
12. Luke 21:25–26; Matthew 24:23–30; Mark 13:17–25.
13. Layton, 115, *The Holy book of the Invisible Spirit* 72:1–4.
14. *The Good News Bible*, 1992, Wisdom 14:7–27.
15. Leviticus 26:1; 2 Chronicles 33:7.
16. Revelation 17:15–18; Revelation 18:7; Isaiah 47:5; Isaiah 45:7.
17. Revelation 13:14–15; Daniel 11:31; Daniel 12:11; Daniel 9:27; Daniel 8:11; 2 Thessalonians 2:3–5.
18. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 282–284.
19. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 26.
20. Exodus 21:22.
21. Matthew 24:39.
22. Revelation 7:1–8; 11:1–14.

CHAPTER 43: THE GODLESS GENERATION

1. *Webster's New Compact Format Dictionary*, 1986.
2. Revelation 7:1–8; 11:1–14.
3. Genesis 9:11–17.
4. Genesis 19:23.
5. Genesis 7:7; 19:21–26.
6. 1 Thessalonians 4:14.
7. Genesis 5:23.
8. Daniel 11:35.
9. Ibid.
10. Exodus 7:13–14; 8:15, 19, 32; 9:7, 12, 35; 10:1, 20.

CHAPTER 44: BABYLON CITY

1. Revelation 1:3.
2. Revelation 18:9; Revelation 18:16; Revelation 18:19; Revelation 18:21; Isaiah 23:7; Nahum 3:1; *The Good News Bible*, 1992, Baruch 4:32–33; Second Esdras 15:44–45.
3. Zephaniah 2:13–15; Nahum 1:10–15; 2:1–13; 3:1–19; Jeremiah 51.
4. Nahum 3:1–3.
5. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 29.
6. Ibid.
7. *Unger's*, 11.
8. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 122, 125.

CHAPTER 45: REFLECTIONS FROM WITHIN THE THIRD REICH

1. *The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion Signed by the representative of Zion of the Thirty-Third Degree*, 23:3.
2. Bauer, 730.
3. Ibid., quoting *The Sacred History of Sulpicus Servus from Nicene and Post Nicene Fathers*, Second Series, Vol. II, Chapter 29.
4. 2 Tacitus, *The Annals of Tacitus*, trans. Alfred Church and William Jackson Brodribb (Franklin Center, PA: Heirloom Library of H. R. Koehn, 1982), 189.
5. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 312–313.
6. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 342.
7. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 323, 347.
8. Greer, *Atlantis*, 93, quoting Goodricke-Clarke, 1992, on Ariosophy.
9. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 265–274.
10. Peter Godman, *Hitler and the Vatican* (New York: Free Press, A Division of Simon and Schuster, 2004), 36, 56.
11. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 347–348.
12. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 487.
13. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 92—105 citing Mark Bostner III, "Biographical Dictionary of World War II", Otto, Skorzeny background Otto Skorzeny background (Navato, CA, Presidio Press, 1996) p.504-507, David Wood and Ian Campbell, "Geneset: Target Earth", (Middlesex, England: Bellevue Books, 1994) quoting Rahn's and Skorzeny's communications with the German High Command, p.47-243.
14. Gardner, *Realm*, 11–12.
15. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 92.
16. Greer, *Atlantis*, 54, quoting Goodricke-Clarke, 1992, on Ariosophy.
17. Gardner, *Realm*, 11–12.
18. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 391.
19. Marrs, Rise of the Fourth Reich, 102, citing Mark Bostner III, "Biographical Dictionary of World War II", Otto, Skorzeny background Otto Skorzeny background (Navato, CA, Presidio Press, 1996) p.504-507.
20. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 104 citing David Wood and Ian Campbell, "Geneset: Target Earth", (Middlesex, England: Bellevue Books, 1994) quoting Rahn's and Skorzeny's communications with the German High Command, p.202-203
21. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 92–105.

22. Gardner, *Realm*, 6, 10.
23. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 487–488.
24. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 146, 155.
25. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 4–6, 27, 376.
26. Ibid., 19.
27. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 324–325.
28. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 211.
29. Greer, *Atlantis*, 93, quoting Goodricke-Clarke, 1992, on Ariosophy.
30. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 324–325; Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 130.
31. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 371–372.
32. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 324; Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 130.
33. Ibid., 324.
34. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 59.
35. Baigent and Leigh *Secret Germany*, 324–325.
36. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 341.
37. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 324–325.
38. Blake and Blezard, *Arcadian Cipher*, 206.
39. Greer, *Atlantis*, 93, quoting Goodricke-Clarke, 1992, on Ariosophy.
40. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 341.
41. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 155–156.
42. Blake and Blezard, 206–209.
43. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 341.
44. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 20–21.
45. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 324–325.
46. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 156.
47. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 517, Vol. 26.
48. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 157.
49. Ibid., 161.
50. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 341.
51. Godman, *Hitler and the Vatican*, 119.
52. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 238.
53. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 127–128, 132, 139, 350.
54. Ibid., 140, 337.
55. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 567, Vol. 6.
56. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 160, 336–347.
57. Ibid., 347.
58. Ibid., 348–350.
59. Ibid., 277, 317.
60. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, p.318
61. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 182.
62. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 318.
63. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 278–279.
64. Godman, *Hitler and the Vatican*, 49.
65. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 295.
66. Godman, *Hitler and the Vatican*, 48–49.
67. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 295.
68. Godman, *Hitler and the Vatican*, 50–51.
69. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 328.
70. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 83.
71. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 18, 385.

72. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 291– 294.
73. Godman, *Hitler and the Vatican*, 53, 115.
74. Ibid., 51.
75. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 87.
76. Ibid., 123, 295, 347.
77. Ibid., 279.
78. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 146.
79. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 322.
80. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 37–39.
81. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 262.
82. Godman, *Hitler and the Vatican*, 63.
83. Greer, *Atlantis*, 96–97.
84. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 161; Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 179.
85. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 180.

CHAPTER 46: THE FALSE PROPHET

1. John 1:29, 36; Acts 8:32–33; 1 Peter 1:19; Isaiah 53:7; Revelation 5:6, 12–13; 7:9, 22:1; 19:11–14, 7–9.
2. Revelation 19:20; 20:10.
3. Revelation 13:11–18.
4. Malachi 4:5.
5. Revelation 13:13.
6. Revelation 19:20.
7. Matthew 24:23; Mark 13:22.
8. Gary H. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation* (Lafayette, LA: Huntington House Publishers, 1991), 73; Armstrong, *A History Of God*, 28.
9. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 73.
10. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 27.
11. The Qur'an, The Cow 2:97–101; The Family of 'Imram 3:3, 119; The Feast 5:14–19, 45–46, 68–69; 6:84–89, 156–157; The Spider 29:47.
12. Piers Paul Read, *The Templars* (London: Phoenix Press, A Division of the Orion Publishing Group, 2001), 48.
13. The Qur'an, The Cow 2:97–101; 2:62; The Family of 'Imram 3:119; 3:3; 3:84–95; The Feast 5:45–46; 5:68–69; Livestock 6:84–89; The Feast 5:14–83; The Prophets 21:23–49; The Pilgrimage 22:17.
14. Ibid., The Feast 5:14–17; 5:19–46; 5:68–69; 5:82–83; Livestock 6:156–157; 6:84–89; The Spider 29:47.
15. Ibid., The Family of 'Imram 3:48; 3:55; 3:84–85; Women 4:154–156; 4:171–173; The Feast 5:72–77; Mary 19:20–36.
16. Matthew 5:17–20.
17. The Qur'an, The Family of 'Imram 3:45–46; 3:59; Women 4:171–173.
18. Ibid., The Family of 'Imram 3:45–46; Women 4:171; John 1:14; Revelation 19:13; 20:4.
19. John 1:1–3.
20. Psalms 110:1; Matthew 22:44; Mark 12:36; 16:19; Luke 20:42; Acts 2:33–35; Ephesians 1:20–22; Colossians 3:1d; Hebrews 1:13; 8:1; 10:12–13.
21. The Qur'an, Women 4:171–172; John 1:1; 1:17–18.
22. Isaiah 11:1; Jeremiah 23:5; 33:14, Zechariah 3:8; 6:12.
23. Baigent and Leigh, *Elixir and the Stone*, 40, 46.
24. Ibid., 39.
25. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 217.
26. The Qur'an, Mary 19:56; The Prophets 21:85.
27. *Unger's*, 1005; *Nelson's*, 988–989.
28. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 710, Vol. 21, 771.
29. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 245–246.
30. Blake and Blezard, 91.
31. 1 John 2:22; 4:2–3.
32. Baigent and Leigh, *Elixir and the Stone*, 36.
33. The Qur'an, The Cow 2:87; 2:253, The Family of 'Imram 3:3:48–85; Women 4:154–156; The Feast 5:46–47, 109–119.
34. Ibid., The Cow 2:253; The Family of 'Imram 3:48, 84–85; Women 4:163–165; The Feast 5:46–119; Livestock 6:84–89.

35. Ibid., The Cow 2:253; The Family Of ‘Imram 3:45–48; Women 4:171–173; The Feast 5:46–119; Mary 19:20–36; The Prophets 21:90–91.
36. Ibid., The Cow 2:87, 253; The Family Of ‘Imram 3:48–85; Women 4:154–156; The Feast 5:46–77; Mary 19:20–36.
37. Robinson, *The Nag Hammadi Library*, 537, quoting Richard Smith, *The Modern Relevance Of Gnosticism.*
38. Greer, *Atlantis*, 36, 54–55, 238.
39. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 20, 609–610, Vol. 26, 517–522.
40. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 355.
41. Greer, *Atlantis*, 238.
42. Booth, The *Secret History of the World*, 176.
43. Greer, *Atlantis*, 55.
44. Brown, Da *Vinci Code*, 231.
45. Ibid., 233.
46. Pagels and King, *Reading Judas*, Judas xxii.
47. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 231–239.

CHAPTER 47: THE DISCIPLES OF LIGHT

1. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 51.
2. Ibid., 22, quoting Alice Bailey from her book: *The Externalization of the Hierarchy.*
3. Ralph A. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy Against Christian*ity—*Evidence that the Masonic Lodge Has a Secret Agenda* (Tucson, AZ: Publius Press, 1997), 187.
4. Lomas, *Invisible College*, 287.
5. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 86, 91, 148.
6. Matthew 24:25.
7. Revelation 13:11–12.
8. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 22.
9. Gardner, *Realm*, 27.
10. Isaiah 14:12.
11. *Unger's*, 787.
12. *Webster's New Compact Format Dictionary*, 1986.
13. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 157.
14. Charles G. Addison and David Hatcher Childress, *The History of the Knights Templar* (Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), 20.
15. Christopher Knight and Robert Lomas, *Second Messiah* (London: Arrow Books Ltd., Random House U.K. Ltd., 1998), 285.
16. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 175.
17. Gittins, 68, 210.
18. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 394.
19. Gittins, 118.
20. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 283.
21. Steven D. Levitt and Stephen J. Dubner, *Freakonomics: A Rogue Economist Explores the Hidden Side of Everything* (Toronto, ON: HarperPerennial, An Imprint of Harper Collins Publishers Ltd., 2005/2006), 53, 56.
22. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 282; Levitt and Dubner, *Freakonomics*, 60.
23. Addison and Childress, *Knights Templar*, 20.
24. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 158–159.
25. Martin Short, *Inside the Brotherhood* (London: HarperCollins Publishers, 2001), 135.
26. Gittins, 87.
27. Greer, *Atlantis*, 59–60.
28. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 440; Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 138–140.
29. Greer, *Atlantis*, 59–60.
30. Gittins, 87.
31. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 157.
32. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 124, quoting from *La Femme et l'Enfant dans la Franc-Maconne* by A. C. De Le Rive.
33. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 156–157.
34. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 141.
35. Wilson, Demond, *The New Age Millennium*, 170.
36. Daniel 9:25–27; Daniel 12:1–13; Revelation 7:14; Revelation 11:1–6; Revelation 1–18.
37. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 1187.
38. Wallace-Murphy and Hopkins, *Rosslyn*, 160.
39. Mackey, *History*, 387, *"Freemasonry and the Essenes."*
40. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 29.

41. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 189.
42. Armstrong, *The Great Transformation*, 225–230.
43. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 778, Vol. 21.
44. Mackey, *History*, 50, *“Legend of Hermes.”*
45. Ibid., 366.
46. Ibid., 51–52, *“Legend of Hermes.”*
47. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 47, Vol. 23.
48. Mackey, *History*, 387, *“Freemasonry and the Essenes.”*
49. Ibid., 366.
50. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 47, Vol. 23.
51. Mackey, *History*, 369, *“The Pythagoreans and Freemasonry.”*
52. Ibid., 372.

CHAPTER 48: THE ALIEN PHENOMENA

1. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 246.
2. Isaiah 40:3–5; Malachi 3:1; John 14:4–6; John 1:23; Matthew 3:1–3; Matthew 11:10; Matthew 21:22; Luke 1:77; Luke 16:16; Mark 1:23.
3. Daniel 9:27.
4. Evans-Wentz, *The Fairy-Faith in Celtic Countries*, 2002, xii.
5. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 1, 6, 25–26, 172.
6. Ibid., 33.
7. James Mackillop, *Dictionary of Celtic Mythology* (New York: Oxford University Press USA, 1998), 177.
8. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 106, 1997, quoting from Reginald Scott’s *The Discovery of Witchcraft*, 1665.
9. Ibid., 26.
10. Evans-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, 39–40.
11. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 27.
12. Janet Bord, *Fairies* (New York: Dell Publishing, A Division of Bantam Doubleday Publishing Group, 1997), 122.
13. Evens-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, 242–245.
14. Cahill, *How The Irish*, 80.

CHAPTER 49: THE MOTHER OF ALL SORCERIES

1. Revelation 17; 18.
2. Isaiah 28:19–25; 30:1; Daniel 9:27; Hosea 6:7; Amos 8:14.
3. Janet T. Connell, *The Visions of the Children: The Apparitions of the Blessed Mother at Medjugorje* (New York: St. Martin’s Press, 1992), 4.
4. Ibid., 173.
5. Ibid., 73, 121.
6. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 211, 227.
7. Connell, *The Visions of the Children*, 172.
8. Ibid., 173.
9. Daniel 9:27.
10. Isaiah 58:8.

11. Revelation 17:1–2; 17:15.
12. *Unger's*, 587–588.
13. Revelation 17:16–18.

CHAPTER 50: SPIRIT OF THE ANTICHRIST, THE BEAST

1. Revelation 13:5–7.
2. 1 John 2:22; 4:1–3.
3. Daniel 4:32.
4. Daniel 1:1–5; 3:1–8.
5. Armstrong, *The Great Transformation*, 416.
6. Godman, *Hitler and the Vatican*, 10–12.
7. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 4, 6, 18, 29.
8. Ibid., 4–5.
9. Gittins, 58.
10. Godman, *Hitler and the Vatican*, 4, 49, 64.
11. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 190–198.
12. Bauer, 596.
13. Plutarch, the Dryden Translation, 277.
14. Ibid., 300–301.
15. Bauer, 577.
16. Plutarch, the Dryden Translation, 277.
17. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 195.
18. Plutarch, 282.
19. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 199.
20. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 204.
21. The Qur'an, The Cave 18:83–92.
22. 2 Kings 19:20–37; *Unger's*, 1156–1158.
23. Bauer, 598.
24. Revelation 13:1; Revelation 13:12; Revelation 16:10; Revelation 17:12; Revelation 19:19–20; Daniel 7:11.

CHAPTER 51: THE NEW NIMROD

1. *Protocols*, 1:24.
2. Daniel 7:7; 7:24–25.
3. Revelation 17:9–13.
4. *Protocols*, 3:9, 10:4; 15:1.
5. *Protocols*, 10:12; 20:7.
6. Isaiah 58:8; 28:19–25; 30:1; Daniel 9:27; Amos 8:14; Hosea 6:7.
7. Revelation 17:16–18; Jeremiah 51:40–48; Jeremiah 50:9–13; Isaiah 47:1–12.
8. *Protocols*, 14:1.
9. Ibid., 2:1, 3:5, 11:5, 17:4.
10. *Ibid.*, 3:15.
11. *Ibid.*, 9:3, 12:19.
12. Revelation 13:4.
13. *Protocols*, 23:5.
14. 2 Thessalonians 2:22–23; Daniel 11:37.
15. Daniel 7:25.
16. Revelation 13:5.
17. Daniel 8:12, 25; Daniel 7:24–25.
18. Revelation 19:20.
19. Daniel 11:21; Daniel 8:25.
20. Daniel 11:21–24.
21. *Protocols*, 24:11.
22. Ibid., 15:20, 22:4.
23. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 83.

CHAPTER 52: THE RAPTURE TRAGEDY

1. 2 Thessalonians 2:9–12.
2. Daniel 8:12; Daniel 7:25; Daniel 11:36; Revelation 113:5–7; 2 Thessalonians 2:11.
3. Isaiah 40:3–5; Malachi 3:1; John 14:4–6; John 1:23; Matthew 3:1–3; Matthew 11:10; Matthew 21:22; Luke 1:77; Luke 16:16; Mark 1:23.
4. Isaiah 28:19–29; Isaiah 30:1, 58:8, Daniel 9:27, Amos 8:14, Hosea 6:7.
5. *Protocols*, 24:9.
6. Daniel 9:27.
7. Daniel 8:25; 11:21–24.
8. *Protocols*, 3:15, 10:18, 15:20.
9. Celia Sandys and Jonathan Littman, *We Shall Not Fall: The Inspiring Leadership of Winston Churchill* (New York: Penguin Group (USA) Inc., 2004), 416.
10. Daniel 9:27, Daniel 11:31-32, Daniel 12:6-7, Daniel 12:11-12, Revelation 13: 5-18, 2 Thessalonians 2:1-12, Matthew 25:15-22, Mark 13: 14-15, Luke 21:20-24, John 11. Daniel 11:21.
12. *Protocols*, 20:11, 24:1, 24:15.
13. Ibid., 18:3, 18:7.
14. *The Good News Bible*, 1992, 2 Esdras 6:25.
15. Daniel 9:27.
16. 1 Thessalonians 1:19; 1 Thessalonians 5:9–10; Daniel 12:1.
17. 2 Thessalonians 2:1–3; Daniel 8:11–12; Daniel 9:27.
18. Revelation 16:2; Revelation 13:5; Second Thessalonians 2:4; Daniel 9:27–28; Daniel 11:21; Daniel 12:7, 11–12.
19. Daniel 8:10–14; Daniel 9:27; Daniel 12:31–32; Daniel 12:11–13; Matthew 24:15–16; Mark 13:14–17; Luke 21:20–24; 2 Thessalonians 2:3–4.
20. Daniel 8:13; Matthew 24:15; Mark 14:14.
21. Revelation 16:2.
22. Revelation 13:14–18.
23. 2 Thessalonians 2:4; Revelation 13:14–15; Daniel 8:13–14; Daniel 9:27; Daniel 12:11; Matthew 24:15; Mark 13:14; Daniel 11:31.

CHAPTER 53: ADONAI

1. *Nelson's*, 503.
2. Revelation 3:12; 7:3–4; 14:14:1
3. Exodus 3:14.
4. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 21.
5. *Unger's*, 1375.
6. Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 109.
7. *Unger's*, 1375.
8. Moustafa Gadalla, *Historical Deception: The Untold Story of Ancient Egypt* (Erie, PA: Bastet Publishing, 1996), 140.
9. Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 108.
10. *Nelson's*, 503.
11. Gadalla, *Historical Deception*, 140.
12. Keith Laidler, *The Head of God* (London: Weyden & Nicholson, The Orion Publishing Group LTD, 2000), 31.
13. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 263.
14. Gadalla, *Historical Deception*, 188, Laidler, *Head of God*, 31; Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 263.
15. Gadalla, *Historical Deception*, 140; Laidler, *Head of God*, 28.
16. Maurice Cotterell, *The Tutankhamun Prophecies: The Sacred Secrets of the Mayas, Egyptians, and Freemasons* (London: Headline Publishing, A Division of Hodder Headline PLC, 1999), 68.
17. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 263.
18. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 120.
19. Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, 319, 328.
20. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 120.
21. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 263.
22. Gadalla, *Historical Deception*, 193.
23. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 264.
24. Gardner, *Bloodline*, 112.
25. Laidler, *Head of God*, 12.
26. Bauer, 237.
27. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 5.
28. Armstrong, *The Great Transformation*, 125; Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 5.
29. Armstrong, *The Great Transformation*, 9–11, 511.
30. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 263–264, 268.

CHAPTER 54: THE JERUSALEM CHURCH

1. Armstrong, *The Bible: A Biography*, 43–44.
2. Ibid.
3. Gardner, *Realm*, 12.
4. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 80.
5. Silberman and Finkelstein, *David and Solomon*, 242.
6. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Jewish Antiquities, VIII:45.
7. Pinsky, *Life of David*, 69.
8. Silberman and Finkelstein, *David and Solomon*, 10–11.
9. The Qur'an, Sad 38:30–39.
10. Ibid., The Prophets 21:78–82; 21:15–17; Sheba 34:12; Sad 38:30–39.
11. Ibid., Sheba 34:12.
12. Ibid., The Cow 2:102.
13. Knight and Lomas, *The Hiram Key*, 320, 374, 335.
14. Blake and Blezard, 90.
15. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 209–211.
16. Knight and Lomas, *The Hiram Key*, 321, 335.
17. John 14:6.
18. Blake and Blezard, 76.
19. Baigent and Leigh, *Elixir and the Stone*, 29.
20. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 18–19.
21. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 7.
22. Ibid.
23. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 250–252, Vol. 26.
24. Wang, *Daoism in China*, 142.
25. Ibid., Preface and Introduction, 4–7.
26. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 250–252, Vol. 26.
27. Wang, *Daoism in China*, 2, 9, 12, 131, 152.
28. Braden, *The Divine Matrix*, xxvii.
29. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 10.
30. Wang, *Daoism in China*, 5.
31. Bauer, 38, 568.
32. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 10.
33. Ibid., 1–3, 35.
34. Ibid., 115.
35. Shanks, *Brother*, 170.
36. Mackey, *History*, 377, *"Freemasonry and the Gnostics."*
37. Shanks, *Brother*, 115.
38. Seward, *Jerusalem's Traitor*, 11, quoting from the *BVita* (Josephus):10, 11; The Jewish War: 2:118, 2:159, 2:162–163,&433; And Jewish Antiquities 18:20, 13:171, 8:419, 18:4–10.
39. Ibid., 14–15.
40. Ibid., 15–16.
41. Shanks, *Brother*, 112, 217.
42. Seward, *Jerusalem's Traitor*, 13.
43. Shanks, *Brother*, 27, 212.
44. Ibid., 93, 115.
45. Ibid., 157.

46. Short, *Inside the Brotherhood*, 110.
47. Christopher Knight, Christopher and Robert Lomas, *The Second Messiah* (London: Arrow Books Ltd., Random House, 2000); 270; Wallace-Murphy, Hopkins, and Simmons, *Rex Deus*, citing conversations Baigent and Leigh had with informants within Rex Deus families, 37–40.

CHAPTER 55: SEX, LIES, AND FAIRY TALES

1. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 254.
2. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 100–101.
3. Gardner, *Realm*, 34–35.
4. Ibid., 2.
5. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 272, 317.
6. Gardner, *Realm*, xvi, 2, 49.
7. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 261.
8. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 169; Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 261.
9. Ibid., 169.
10. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 261, 388–89.
11. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 52, 53, 88, 176.
12. Wallace-Murphy and Hopkins, *Rosslyn*, 242.
13. Ibid.
14. Baigent and Leigh, *Elixir and the Stone*, 58.
15. Wallace-Murphy and Hopkins, *Rosslyn*, 242.
16. Sora, *Lost Treasure of the Knights Templar*, 189.
17. Baigent and Leigh, *Elixir and the Stone*, 55–56, 101.
18. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 265–266.
19. Ibid., 266.
20. Jean Markale, *The Templar Treasure at Gisors* (Rochester, VT: Inner Traditions International, 2003), 25, 258.
21. Gardner, Laurence, *Lost Secrets*, 2003, 26.
22. Gardner, *Bloodline*, 109.
23. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 250; and Wallace-Murphy, Hopkins, and Simmons, *Rex Deus*, 27.
24. Wallace-Murphy, Hopkins, and Simmons, *Rex Deus*, 27, 79, 147.
25. Markale, *Templar Treasure at Gisors*, 253, 258.
26. Wallace-Murphy, Hopkins, and Simmons, *Rex Deus*, 146–147.
27. Laidler, *Head of God*, 11–12.
28. Mackey, *History*, 67, *"Legend of Euclid."*
29. Matthew 24:29; Mark 13:24; Luke 21:26–27; 2 Thessalonians 2:9.

CHAPTER 56: THE KNIGHTS TEMPLAR

1. Mackey, *History*, 249–250, *“Freemasonry and the Crusades.”*
2. Gittins, 83.
3. Addison and Childress, *Knights Templar*, 2.
4. Sora, *Lost Treasure of the Knights Templar*, 138.
5. Ibid.
6. Addison and Childress, *Knights Templar*, 2.
7. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 158.
8. Ibid., 113, 206, and the unnumbered, opening facts page before the Prologue.
9. Sora, *Lost Treasure of the Knights Templar*, 2.
10. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 66.
11. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 113,206, 157, and the unnumbered, opening facts page.
12. Ibid., 113, 157–158, 161.
13. Sora, *Lost Treasure of the Knights Templar*, 3
14. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 324.
15. Sylvia Browne, *Secret Societies and How They Affect Our Lives Today* (Carlsbad, CA: Hay House Inc. 2007), 99–101
16. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 258.
17. Sora, *Lost Treasure of the Knights Templar*, 12, 138.
18. Gardner, *Shadow*, 113.
19. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 220.
20. Browne, *Secret Societies*, 70, 102.
21. Gardner, *Shadow*, 112.
22. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 158.
23. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 96–99.
24. Gardner, *Shadow*, 111.
25. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 96–99.
26. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 66, 71.
27. Ibid., 67.
28. Naudon, 63.
29. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 69.
30. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 315.
31. Addison and Childress, *Knights Templar*, 9, 13.
32. Marshal, *Philosopher’s Stone*, 264, 266.
33. Fergus, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 1006.
34. Gardener, *Lost Secrets*, 214.
35. Evans-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, 309–310.
36. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 134.
37. Naudon, 46.
38. Mackey, *History*, 229, *“Freemasonry and the Crusades.”*
39. Addison and Childress, *Knights Templar*, 4.
40. Naudon, 74.
41. Baigent and Leigh, *Elixir and the Stone*, 86.
42. Naudon, 72.
43. Baigent and Leigh, *Elixir and the Stone*, 86.
44. Naudon, 78.
45. Addison and Childress, *Knights Templar*, 4.

46. Naudon, 73.
47. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 245.
48. Naudon, 78.
49. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 246.
50. Naudon, 78.
51. Ibid., 76–77.
52. Mackey, *History*, 229,*“Freemasonry and the Crusades.”*
53. Addison and Childress, *Knights Templar*, 18.
54. Mackey, *History*, 237–239, *“Freemasonry and the Crusades.”*
55. Gardener, *Lost Secrets*, 222.
56. Gittins, 84.
57. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 76.
58. Gittins, 85.
59. Gardener, *Lost Secrets*, 222.
60. Naudon, 105–107.
61. Ibid., 104.
62. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 125, 135–136.
63. Ibid., 76.
64. Gardener, *Lost Secrets*, 222.
65. Naudon, 80, 103.
66. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 259.
67. Baigent and Leigh, *Elixir and the Stone*, 74.
68. Addison and Childress, *Knights Templar*, 10.
69. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 101.
70. Addison and Childress, *Knights Templar*, 10–15.
71. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 76, 97.
72. Ibid., 68–69.
73. Ibid., 40, 71.
74. Sora, *Lost Treasure of the Knights Templar*, 87.
75. Ibid., 87.
76. Gardener, *Lost Secrets*, 234.
77. Sora, *Lost Treasure of the Knights Templar*, 86.
78. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel’s Machine*, 461.
79. Ibid., 459–461.
80. Sora, *Lost Treasure of the Knights Templar*, 87.
81. Naudon, 99.
82. Read, *The Templars*, 63, 458.
83. Baigent and Leigh, *Elixir and the Stone*, 88.
84. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel’s Machine*, 458.
85. Baigent and Leigh, *Elixir and the Stone*, 88.
86. Sora, *Lost Treasure of the Knights Templar*, 86–87.
87. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 68.
88. Lomas, *Invisible College*, 2002, 86.
89. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 276.
90. Addison and Childress, *Knights Templar*, 19.

CHAPTER 57: THE PRIORY OF SION

1. Addison and Childress, *Knights Templar*, 15.
2. Ibid., 15.
3. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 232.
4. Gardner, *Shadow*, 108–109.
5. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 232.
6. Gardner, *Shadow*, 108.
7. Sora, *Lost Treasure of the Knights Templar*, 177.
8. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 324.
9. Michael Baigent, Richard Leigh, and Henry Lincoln, *The Holy Blood and the Holy Grail* (London: Arrow Books Limited, Random House UK Ltd., 1996), 441.
10. Ibid., 135.
11. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 319.
12. Ibid.
13. Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, *Holy Blood and Holy Grail*, 443–448.
14. Ibid., 445.
15. Ibid.
16. Ibid., 138–39, 447–448.
17. Ibid., 447–448.
18. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 281.
19. Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, *Holy Blood and Holy Grail*, 449.
20. Ibid.
21. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 25, 45–46, 55.
22. Gittins, 100.
23. Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, *Holy Blood and Holy Grail*, 449–50.
24. Ibid., 450.
25. Ibid., 451–52.
26. Ibid., 452.
27. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 307.
28. Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, *Holy Blood and Holy Grail*, 452.
29. Ibid., 453.
30. Ibid., 453–454.
31. Ibid.
32. Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, *Holy Blood and Holy Grail*, 454.
33. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 246.
34. Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, *Holy Blood and Holy Grail*, 455–456.
35. Ibid., 457–458.
36. Gittins, 100.
37. Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, *Holy Blood and Holy Grail*, 458.
38. Ibid., 458–59.
39. Ibid., 458–459; Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 80–81.
40. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 80–90.
41. Ibid.
42. Ibid., 81–82, 90, 301–302.
43. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 457, Vol. 26.
44. Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, *Holy Blood and Holy Grail*, 459–61.
45. Ibid., 461–462.

46. Ibid., 461–463.
47. Ibid., 464–465.
48. Ibid.
49. Gittins, 116.
50. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 400–401.
51. Gittins, 116; Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 400–401.
52. Greer, Ibid.
53. ThreeWorldWars.com http://www.threewordwars.com/protocols.htm, printed 30/09/2007.
54. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 400–401.
55. *Protocols*, Introduction; ThreeWorldWars.com, http://www.threewordwars.comprotocols.htm, printed 30/09/2007.
56. ThreeWorldWars.com, http://www.threewordwars.com/protocols.htm, printed 30/09/2007.
57. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 400–401.
58. *Protocols*, Introduction.
59. Ibid.; Three WorldWars.com, http://www.threeworldwars.com/protocols.htm, printed 30/09/2007.
60. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 400–401.

CHAPTER 58: THE SINCLAIRS

1. Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, *Holy Blood and Holy Grail*, 443.
2. Sora, *Lost Treasure of the Knights Templar*, 96, 177.
3. Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, *Holy Blood and Holy Grail*, 444–45.
4. Lomas, *Invisible College*, 182.
5. Ibid., 97.
6. Knight and Lomas, *Second Messiah*, 44.
7. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 462.
8. Gittins, 93.
9. Lomas, *Invisible College*, 86.
10. Sora, *Lost Treasure of the Knights Templar*, 112–119, 179.
11. Lomas, *Invisible College*, 274.
12. Addison and Childress, *Knights Templar*, 18–19.
13. Knight and Lomas, *The Hiram Key*, 21.
14. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 12, 21.
15. Ibid., 17.
16. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 233.
17. Addison and Childress, *Knights Templar*, 17.
18. Knight and Lomas, *The Hiram Key*, 388.
19. Ibid., 19.
20. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 233.
21. Ibid., 234.
22. Ibid., 233.
23. Mackey, *History*, 279, "Freemasonry and the House of Stuart."
24. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 61.
25. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 253.
26. Knight and Lomas, *Hiram Key*, 1, 18.
27. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 233.
28. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 253.

CHAPTER 59: ST. BERNARD AND THE BENEDICTINE MONKS

1. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 182.
2. Ibid.
3. Ibid., 166–167, 185–187, 220.
4. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 233.
5. Ibid., 46.
6. Ibid., 222.
7. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 222.
8. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 46, 253–268.
9. Gittins, 26.
10. Naudon, 23.
11. Ibid., 38.
12. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 176, Vol. 2.
13. Naudon, 38, 40.
14. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 176, Vol. 2.
15. Gittins, 27–28.
16. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 176, Vol. 2.

17. Ibid.
18. Naudon, 40.
19. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 176, Vol. 2.
20. Naudon, 31.
21. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 432–434.
22. Gittins, 15.
23. Naudon, 2.
24. Ibid., 7.
25. Gittins, 78–80.
26. Naudon, 2, 7, 34.
27. Ibid., 28.
28. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 140.
29. Naudon, 28.
30. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 140.
31. Naudon, 39.
32. Ibid., 40–43.
33. Ibid., 47.
34. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 137.
35. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 545–547, Vol. 2.
36. Naudon, 14, 29, 47, 207.
37. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 232.
38. Naudon, 14.
39. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 232.
40. Luke 1:26.
41. Luke 2:8.
42. Luke 2:7, 16–20.
43. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 232.
44. Ibid.
45. Exodus 20:8; Deuteronomy 5:12.
46. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 232.
47. Naudon, 38–39.
48. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 127.
49. Browne, *Secret Societies*, 75.
50. Naudon, 34–35, 61.
51. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 336.
52. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 259.
53. Naudon, 35.
54. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 22.
55. Ibid., 221–223.
56. Ibid., 2003, 221–223.
57. Naudon, 213.
58. Gardner, *Shadow*, 119.
59. Ibid., 221–229.
60. Knight and Lomas, *The Hiram Key*, 2.
61. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 224.
62. Gardner, *Shadow*, 119–120.
63. Naudon, 39.
64. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 273–276.
65. Braden, *The Divine Matrix*, xi–xvii, 40–41, 53, 141; Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 83.
66. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 271–276.

67. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 255.
68. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 264–65.
69. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 255–256.
70. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 273.
71. Addison and Childress, *Knights Templar*, 3, 309.
72. Ibid., 273.
73. Gardner, *Shadow*, 105.
74. Markale, *Templar Treasure at Gisors*, 115, 129.
75. Ibid., 131.
76. Ibid., 130, quoting from Rene Guenon, *Le Christianisme Celtique et ses Survivances Populaires* (Paris: Ed. Imago, 1984).
77. Ibid.
78. Naudon, 209.
79. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 128.
80. Ibid., 38, 120.
81. Armstrong, *The Bible: A Biography*, 138.
82. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 129.
83. Ibid., 114.
84. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 98.
85. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 114.
86. Naudon, 63.
87. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 98.
88. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 117.
89. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 98.
90. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 117.
91. Naudon, 63.
92. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 98.
93. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 114–117.
94. Ibid., 120.
95. Gardner, *Shadow*, 110.
96. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 115.
97. Gardner, *Shadow*, 105–108, 281.
98. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 131.
99. Gardner, *Shadow*, 109.
100. Gittins, 85.
101. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 165, 180.
102. Gittins, 86.

CHAPTER 60: THE INVISIBLE COLLEGE

1. Mackey, *History*, 260, *“The Story of the Scottish Templars.”*
2. Ibid.
3. Markdale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 264.
4. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 231.
5. Sora, *The Lost Treasure of the Knights Templar*, 181.
6. Mackey, *History*, 200, 261, *“The Story of the Scottish Templars.”*
7. Ibid., 229.
8. Wallace-Murphy and Hopkins, *Rosslyn*, 126.
9. Ibid., 62–63.
10. Lomas, *Invisible College*, 3–4.
11. Greer, *Atlantis*, 118.
12. Mackey, *History*, 301, 304, *“The Royal Society and Freemasonry.”*
13. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 443–444.
14. Greer, *Atlantis*, 117–118.
15. Lomas, *Invisible College*, 218, 297.
16. Gardner, *Shadow*, 42.
17. Mackey, *History*, 301, *“The Royal Society and Freemasonry.”*
18. Ibid., 303, *“The Royal Society and Freemasonry.”*
19. Lomas, *Invisible College*, 23, 245.
20. Gardner, *Shadow*, 35, 49.
21. Arthur Herman, *How the Scots Invented the Modern World* (New York: Three Rivers Press, 2001), 21, 29.
22. Mackey, *History*, 310, *“The Royal Society and Freemasonry.”*
23. Marshall, *Philosopher’s Stone*, 312.
24. Lomas, *Invisible College*, 208, 212.
25. Gardner, *Shadow*, 49.
26. Lomas, *Invisible College*, 33.
27. Ibid., 125.
28. Gardner, *Shadow*, 35.
29. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 246.
30. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 63–64.
31. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 246.
32. Marshall, *Philosopher’s Stone*, 281.
33. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 293.
34. Naudon, 239; Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 293.
35. Gardner, *Shadow*, 252–254.
36. Lomas, *Invisible College*, 72–78.
37. Gittins, 99–100.
38. Mackey, *History*, 304, 313, *“The Royal Society and Freemasonry.”*

CHAPTER 61: LEGENDS OF THE HOLY GRAIL

1. *The Protocols*, 1:17–25, 5:5, 15:8, 22:3, 24:1–5.
2. Knight and Lomas, *Second Messiah*, 103.
3. Ibid., 104.
4. Matthew 27:57–60; Mark 15:46; Luke 23:50–56; John 19:38–42.
5. Luke 8:2–4.

6. Matthew 28:1; Mark:16:9; Luke 24:1; John 20:1.
7. Matthew 27:61; Mark 15:47; Luke 23:55.
8. *Unger's* 798, 823.
9. *Nelson's*, 787, 807.
10. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 191.
11. Greer, *Atlantis*, 90–91.
12. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 206.
13. John 21:7, 20.
14. Matthew 26:6–13; Mark 14:1–11; John 12:1–11.
15. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 206, 227.
16. Wallace-Murphy, Hopkins, and Simmons, *Rex Deus*, 79.
17. Gardner, *Bloodline*, 104, 109.
18. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 206–207.
19. Gardner, *Realm*, 127.
20. Gardner, *Bloodline*, 109.
21. Wallace-Murphy, Hopkins, and Simmons, *Rex Deus*, 84–85.
22. Knight and Lomas, *Second Messiah*, 144.
23. Gardner, *Bloodline*, 140.
24. Ibid.
25. Wallace-Murphy, Hopkins, and Simmons, *Rex Deus*, 79–85.
26. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 162.
27. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 118.
28. Wallace-Murphy, Hopkins, and Simmons, *Rex Deus*, 27.
29. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 250.
30. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 213.
31. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 219.
32. Ibid., 201, 238–39.
33. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 188.
34. Deuteronomy 3:13.
35. Wallace-Murphy, Hopkins, and Simmons, *Rex Deus*, 147; Knight and Lomas, *Second Messiah*, 149–150.
36. Reid, *Arthur*, 92–93.
37. Ibid., 93, 213.
38. Ibid., 191–192, 204, 208.
39. Cahill, *How the Irish*, 179.
40. Reid, *Arthur*, 192.
41. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 471–72, Vol. 24.
42. Reid, *Arthur*, 199.
43. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 96–98.
44. Reid, *Arthur*, 215.
45. Wallace-Murphy, Hopkins, and Simmons, *Rex Deus*, 147.
46. Knight and Lomas, *Second Messiah*, 149–150.
47. Ian Wilson, *The Blood and the Shroud* (New York: The Free Press, A Division of Simon and Schuster Inc.,1998), 172.
48. Baigent and Leigh, *Elixir and the Stone*, 33–34, 84.
49. Read, *The Templars*, 88.
50. Baigent and Leigh, *Elixir and the Stone*, 85.
51. Wallace-Murphy, Hopkins, and Simmons, *Rex Deus*, 84–85.
52. Gardner, *Bloodline*, 109.
53. Ibid., 167.

[54]. Gardner, *Bloodline*, 167.

CHAPTER 62: JOSEPH OF ARIMATHEA

1. Gardner, *Bloodline*, 315.
2. Knight and Lomas, *Second Messiah*, 264.
3. Knight and Lomas, *The Hiram Key*, 338.
4. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 232.
5. Sora, *The Lost Treasure of the Knights Templar*, 216.
6. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 259, 274–276.
7. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 41.
8. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 340.
9. Blake and Blezard, 115.
10. Matthew 22:57; John 19:38.
11. Blake; Blezard, 115.
12. Ibid., 115; Matthew 27:57.
13. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 212.
14. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 56, 113.
15. John 7:5; Matthew 12:46–50; Mark 3:31–35; Luke 8:19–21.
16. Shanks, *Brother*, 108.
17. Ibid., 117.
18. Ibid., quoting *Historia Ecclesia* 2:1:2.
19. *Unger's*, 649, quoting and interpreting Galatians 2:12.
20. Ibid., Galatians 1:13–19; dated before 37 C.E., Galatians 2:9, 12, Acts 12:17; Acts 11:30; Acts 15:1–30; Acts 21.
21. *Unger's*, 649–650.
22. Shanks, *Brother*, 159.
23. Acts 15:1–30.
24. Shanks, *Brother*, 124.
25. *Unger's*, 649–650.
26. Shanks, *Brother*, 27, 98.
27. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Jewish Antiquities, book 20:199–203.
28. Ibid., Jewish Antiquities 20:200.
29. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 255.
30. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Jewish Antiquities, book 20:200.
31. Ibid., Jewish Antiquities, book 18, 63–64, and note 1; book 20, 199–201; note 2, quoting Prim. Christ, Revised, Vol. III chapter 43–46.
32. Shanks, *Brother*, 136, 139, utilizing Acts 21:17–24, 29.
33. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 212.
34. Blake and Blezard, 116.
35. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 212.
36. Blake and Blezard, 117.
37. Ibid., 118.
38. Luke 23:50–53.
39. Blake and Blezard, 118.
40. Matthew 27:32; Luke 15:21; Luke 23:26; John 19:17.
41. John 19:41.
42. Matthew 26:36–55; Mark 14:27–51; Luke 22:39–52; John 18:1–11.
43. Blake and Blezard, 118.
44. Ibid., 118–119.

45. Luke 15:44.
46. Blake and Blezard, 125.

CHAPTER 63: SCOTA AND TEMAR

1. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 212.
2. Gardner, *Bloodline*, 13.
3. Ibid.
4. Laidler, *Head of God*, 36.
5. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 268.
6. Laidler, *Head of God*, 36–39.
7. Donnelly, *Atlantis*, 411.
8. Laidler, *Head of God*, 39–40.
9. Gardner, *Shadow*, 202.
10. Laidler, *Head of God*, 40.
11. Ibid., 58.
12. Gardner, *Realm*, 76.
13. Gardner, *Bloodline*, 13.
14. Jeremiah 39:1–7; Jeremiah 52:7–12; 2 Kings 25:18–26; 1 Chronicles 36:17–21.
15. 2 Samuel 7:11–16; 1 Chronicles 17:9–14; 22:2–10.
16. Jeremiah 1:10.
17. Jeremiah 41:10–15.
18. Jeremiah 52:1.
19. Genesis 28:10–22.
20. Gardner, *Bloodline*, 189, 299.
21. Laidler, *Head of God*, 56–58.
22. Mackillop, *Dictionary of Celtic Mythology*, 135, 354.
23. Evans-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, 284.
24. Mackillop, *Dictionary of Celtic Mythology*, 63, 135, 259.

CHAPTER 64: THE KINGS OF CAMELOT

1. Adrian Gilbert, Alan Wilson, Baram Blackett, *The Holy Kingdom* (London: Corgi Books, Transworld Publishers Ltd., 1999), 413.
2. Ibid., 413.
3. Gilbert, Wilson, and Blackett, *The Holy Kingdom*, p. 414).
4. Gardner and Laurence, *Lost Secrets*, 212.
5. Gilbert, Wilson, and Blackett, *The Holy Kingdom* 407.
6. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 212.
7. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 57.
8. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 127–129.
9. Ibid., 25.
10. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 57.
11. Flemming, 77, 81–83.
12. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 214.
13. John Davies, *The Celts* (London: Cassell & Co., A Member of the Orion Publishing Group, 2000), 119.

CHAPTER 65: THE MEROVINGIANS

1. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 327.
2. Gardner, *Bloodline*, 167.
3. Wilson, *Blood*, 171.
4. Gilbert, Wilson, and Blackett, *Holy Kingdom*, 116.
5. Gardner, *Bloodline*, 147, 164, 236.
6. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 326.
7. Gardner, *Realm*, 17–18.
8. Naudon, 19.
9. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 5.
10. Naudon, 20.
11. Laidler, *Head of God*, 83.
12. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 201.
13. Gardner, *Realm*, 62.
14. Laidler, *Head of God*, 83.
15. Judges 20:14–16; 21:1–20.
16. Gardner, *Bloodline*, 163.
17. Laidler, *Head of God*, 85.
18. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 327.
19. Gardner, *Bloodline*s, 164.
20. Laidler, *Head of God*, 83.
21. Gardner, *Bloodline*, 164–165.
22. Laidler, *Head of God*, 87.
23. Numbers 6:5–12.
24. Judges 13:3–5; Judges 16:17.
25. Laidler, *Head of God*, 87.
26. Gardner, *Realm*, 12.
27. Laidler, *Head of God*, 87.
28. Ibid., 88.
29. Gardner, *Realm*, 60.
30. Laidler, *Head of God*, 91.
31. Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, *Holy Blood and Holy Grail*, 34.
32. Sora, *The Lost Treasure of the Knights Templar*, 162.
33. Jones, *An Instinct for Dragons*, 173.
34. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 33–34.
35. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 233.
36. Naudon, 93.
37. Gardner, *Realm*, 97.
38. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 314, Vol. 13.
39. Gardner, *Realm*, 97, 108.
40. Ginzberg, *Legends*, xxiv.
41. Genesis 4:16.
42. Amos 1:5.
43. Gardner, *Realm*, 97, 108.
44. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 294–297.
45. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 259–260, Vol. 22.
46. Ibid., 61–62, Vol. 21.

47. Ibid., 61–62, Vol. 21, and 705–706, Vol. 18.
48. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 327.
49. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 226–229.
50. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 327.
51. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 227.
52. Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, *Holy Blood and Holy Grail*, 282–284.
53. Judges 20:14–46.
54. Judges 21:1–3.
55. Laidler, *Head of God*, 85.
56. Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, *Holy Blood and Holy Grail*, 285.
57. Ibid., 107.
58. Joshua 18:28.
59. Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, *Holy Blood and Holy Grail*, 365; Laidler, *Head of God*, 137.
60. Blake and Blezard, 131.
61. Silberman and Finkelstein, *David and Solomon*, 235–37.
62. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 210.
63. Gardner, *Realm*, 37.
64. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 172, citing John 12:1–11.
65. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 210.
66. Gardener, *Lost Secrets*, 210.
67. Ibid., 2003, 214.
68. Gardner, *Realm*, 20.
69. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 329.
70. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 72.
71. Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, *Holy Blood and Holy Grail*, 285.
72. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 109–113.

CHAPTER 66: THE TROJANS

1. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 326.
2. Ibid.
3. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 61–62, Vol. 21.
4. L. Evans, *Kingdom of the Ark*, 27.
5. Gilbert, Wilson, and Blackett, *Holy Kingdom*, 115.
6. Ibid., 36.
7. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 11.
8. Gilbert, Wilson, and Blackett, *The Holy Kingdom*, 37.
9. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 11.
10. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 339, Vol. 1.
11. Gilbert, Wilson, and Blackett, *The Holy Kingdom*, 112.
12. Ibid., 113–114.
13. *Good News For Modern Man, The New Testament In Today's English 3rd Edition*, 1966, Word List, 633.
14. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 8–9.
15. Ellis, *The Celts*, i, 2.
16. Ibid., 2.
17. Gardner, *Realm*, 110.
18. Ellis, *The Celts*, 3.
19. Cahill, *How the Irish*, 79.
20. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 71.
21. Ellis, *The Celts*, 3.
22. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 4:5:3; Deuteronomy 3:13.
23. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 7, Vol. 13.
24. Ezekiel 27:13; 1 Chronicles 1:4–5; Genesis 10:2, Table of Nations.
25. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 167, 194.

CHAPTER 67: THE HOUSE OF STUART

1. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 462.
2. Lomas, *Invisible College*, 127.
3. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 462.
4. Gardner, *Realm*, 193, 199.
5. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 90.
6. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 51–52.
7. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 90.
8. Bauer, 95–96.
9. Ibid., 97.
10. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 90.
11. Lomas, *Invisible College*, 81–82.
12. Ibid., 58.
13. Herman, *How the Scots Invented*, 55.
14. Ibid., 31, 39, 43, 53–54.
15. Ibid., 56–57, 133–137,158.
16. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 214, 226.
17. Cahill, *How the Irish*, 206–207.
18. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 5.
19. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 5–6.
20. Gardner, *Realm*, 44.
21. Ibid., 20.
22. Naudon, 23.
23. Mackey, *History*, 85, commenting on *"Legend of Charles Martel and Namus Grecus."*
24. Naudon, 153, 193.
25. Mackey, *History*, 85–86, 88–89, commenting on *"The Legend of Charles Martel and Namus Grecus."*
26. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 250.
27. Gardner, *Shadow*, 22–23.
28. Gardner, *Realm*, 107.
29. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 214.
30. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 461.
31. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 214.
32. Gardner, *Bloodline*, 315.
33. Baigent and Leigh, *Elixir and the Stone*, 226.
34. Lomas, *Invisible College*, 82.
35. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 136.
36. Mackey, *History*, 293, *"Oliver Cromwell and Freemasonry."*
37. Shanks, *Brothers*, 28
38. Ibid., 97.
39. Ibid.
40. Herman, *How the Scots Invented*, 134–135.
41. Knight and Lomas, *Second Messiah*, 264.

CHAPTER 68: GUARDIANS OF THE ANTICHRIST

1. Daniel 9:27; Daniel 8:11; Daniel 11:31; Daniel 12:11; Matthew 24:15; Mark 13:14; Luke 21;20; 2 Thessalonians 2:4; Revelation 135–137; Revelation 13:11–18.
2. Epperson; *Masonry: Conspiracy*; 69.
3. Ibid., 337.
4. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 267.
5. Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, *Holy Blood and Holy Grail*, 34; Wallace-Murphy, Hopkins, and Simmons, *Rex Deus*, 318, Appendix.
6. Knight and Lomas, *Second Messiah*, 276–277.
7. Ibid.
8. Sora, *Lost Treasure of the Knights Templar*, 96, 177–178.
9. Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, *Holy Blood and Holy Grail*, 107.
10. Wallace-Murphy, Hopkins, and Simmons, *Rex Deus*, 262.
11. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 245, 315.
12. Sora, *Lost Treasure of the Knights Templar*, 121.
13. Wallace-Murphy, Hopkins, and Simmons, *Rex Deus*, 227.
14. Ibid., 222.

CHAPTER 69: NOVUS ORDO SECLORUM

1. Mackey, *History*, 239, *“Freemasonry and the Crusades.”*
2. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel’s Machine*, 463.
3. Gittins, 51.
4. *Protocols*, 1:25–26, 4:2, 9:2–4, 13:4, 15:2.
5. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 22.
6. *Protocols*, 11:7, 15:4–6.
7. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 80.
8. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 15.
9. *Protocols*, 1:25–26, 4:2, 9:2–4, 13:4, 15:2.
10. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 12.
11. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 109.
12. Herman, *How the Scots Invented*, 388.
13. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 179–180.
14. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 12.
15. Gittins, 62.
16. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 12.
17. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 28–30.
18. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 12.
19. Gittins, 104.
20. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 12.
21. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 190.
22. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 13.
23. Gittins, 64, 104.
24. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 13.
25. Gittins, 65–66, 106.
26. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 28–30.
27. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 13.
28. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 371.
29. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 14.
30. Ibid.
31. Ibid., 14.
32. Ibid., 14–15.
33. Ibid., 16–17.
34. Gittins, 58.
35. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 5–6, 9, 15–16.
36. Ibid., 16–18.
37. Ibid., 10.
38. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 183–184.
39. Ibid., 184–185.
40. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 21.
41. Brown, *Angels And Demons*, 141.
42. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 20–21.
43. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 187.
44. Ibid.
45. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 16, 83.
46. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 21.

47. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 183, 190.
48. Brown, *Angels And Demons*, 141.
49. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 80.
50. Gittins, 71.

CHAPTER 70: INSIDE FREEMASONRY

1. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 138.
2. Ibid., 116.
3. Naudon, 266.
4. Ibid., from the minutes of the *Philalethan Congress: Le Monde Maconnique*, Vol. 14, 15.
5. Short, *Inside the Brotherhood*, 114.
6. Wallace-Murphy and Hopkins, *Rosslyn*, 88; Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 21, 61.
7. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 138.
8. Richard W. Noone, 5/5/2000 *Ice: The Ultimate Disaster* (New York: Three Rivers Press, A Division of Crown Publishers, 1982), 131.
9. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 161.
10. Alford, 18.
11. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 173.
12. Ibid., 137.
13. Alford, 19.
14. Ibid.
15. Noone, 5/5/2000 *Ice: The Ultimate Disaster*, 130.
16. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 339.
17. Noone, 5/5/2000 *Ice: The Ultimate Disaster*, 132–133.
18. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 131.
19. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 73–78.
20. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 127, quoting from *The Externalization of the Hierarchy*, Lucis Trust, 1983.
21. Gary Kah, *The New World Religion* (Noblesville, IA: Hope International Publishing Inc., 1998), 161, quoting from *The Externalization of the Hierarchy*, Lucis Trust, 1957.
22. Kah, *New World Religion*, 41.
23. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 152.
24. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 280.
25. Ibid., 268.

CHAPTER 71: THE THIRTY-THIRD DEGREE

1. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 84.
2. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 143.
3. Alford, 57.
4. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 156.
5. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 86, 116–117.
6. Knight and Lomas, *The Hiram Key*, 451.
7. Cotterrell, *Tutankhamun Prophecies*, 204.
8. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 147, 161.
9. Alford, 16.
10. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 155–156, quoting from *Morals And Dogma of the Ancient And Accepted Scottish Rite Of Freemasonry*/Pamphlets.
11. Ibid., 137, 159, 170.
12. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 112.
13. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 157.
14. *Webster's New Compact Format Dictionary*, 1986.
15. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 22.
16. Wikipedia, The Free Encyclopedia, Lucent Technologies, http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Lucent_Technologies: Lucent CEO Change Oct 2000 and Lucent-Alcatel Merger announcement, Printed 05/07/2008.
17. Snopes.com, http://www.snopes.com/politics/business/mondex.asp, printed 05/07/2008; About.com, Urban Legends, http://urbanlegends.about.com/librarybl_mondex_biochip.htm, printed 15/07/2008, from a PowerPoint circulating February 2004: Mondex: The Mark of the Beast.
18. Revelation 13:16–18.
19. Wikipedia, The Free Encyclopedia, http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mondex. Reference is Susan Stepney, David Cooper, and Jim Woodcock, An Electronic Purse: Specification, Refinement, and Proof. Technical Monograph PRG-126, Programming Research Group, Oxford University, UK, 2000, printed 05/07/2008.
20. *Protocols*, 20:15–16, 10:4.
21. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 136.
22. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 87.
23. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 706, Vol. 29; Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 202, 118.
24. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 137, 157–158, 274.
25. Ibid., 148.
26. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 136–144, 274.

CHAPTER 72: THE ROTHSCHILD-ROCKEFELLER-MORGAN AXIS

1. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 58.
2. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 14.
3. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 144.
4. Ibid., 125, 145.
5. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 285.
6. Gardener, *Lost Secrets*, 222.
7. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 64, 285.
8. Graham Hancock, *The Sign and the Seal* (Toronto, ON: Doubleday Canada Limited, 1993), 396.
9. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 58.
10. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 93.
11. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 59.
12. Ibid., 60–62.
13. *Protocols*, 1:22–26, 10:13–15.
14. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 62.
15. Ibid., 63.
16. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 14–15.
17. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 83; Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 323.
18. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 116.
19. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 83.
20. Herman, *How the Scots Invented*, 388, 402–404.
21. Ibid., 405–407.
22. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 36, 55.
23. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 101.
24. Ibid.
25. Lomas, *Invisible College*, 4.
26. *Protocols*, 6:8, 8:2, 9:5, 20:2, 20:20, 20:29, 20:32.
27. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 57.
28. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 29.
29. Ibid., 13.
30. Ibid., 20.
31. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 323.

CHAPTER 73: SECRET SOCIETIES AND THE NEW AGE OF ATLANTIS

1. Kah *En Route to Global Occupation*, 31.
2. Ibid.
3. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 31.
4. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 137.
5. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 31. Browne, *Secret Societies*, 21.
6. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 32.
7. Ibid., 33–34.
8. Browne, *Secret Societies*, 29.
9. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 137.

10. *Protocols*, Introduction.
11. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 42, David Rockefeller, George Bush, Sr., Henry Kissinger, Cyrus Vance, George Schultz, Alan Greenspan, Richard Cheney, and Adlai Stevenson, just to name a few.
12. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 21; Peter Tarnoff (former CFR president), Al Gore, Warren Christopher, Colin Powel, Les Aspin, James Woolsey, William Cohen, Samuel Lewis, Joan Edelman Spero, Timothy Worth, Winston Lord, Lloyd Bentsen, Laura Tyson, and George Stephanopoules. CFR members were named to the following countries as ambassadors by the Clinton Administration: Spain, Australia, Chile, Syria, South Africa, Russia, Romania, Japan, Korea, Mexico, Italy, India, France, Czech Republic, Poland, Nigeria, and the Philippines.
13. Ibid., 21, 38.
14. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 206; Dick Cheney, Condoleezza Rice, Elaine Chao, Robert Gates, Joshua Bolten, and Susan Schwab.
15. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 22.
16. Browne, *Secret Societies*, 29.
17. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 508–509.
18. Browne, *Secret Societies*, 30.
19. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 45.
20. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 22.
21. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 45.
22. Ibid., 38.
23. Gittins, 123.
24. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 256.
25. Ibid., 255.
26. Gittins, 123; Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 48.
27. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 38.
28. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 41.
29. Ibid., 39.
30. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 39.
31. Gittins, 123.
32. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 128–129.
33. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 40.
34. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 128–129.
35. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 40.
36. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 128–129.
37. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 40.
38. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 90–94.
39. Ibid.
40. Browne, *Secret Societies*, 19.
41. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 93.
42. Browne, *Secret Societies*, 17.
43. Ibid., 20.
44. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 91.
45. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 329.
46. Ibid. (should be end note 47) – cannot get program to number correctly.) 47. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 61. This should be end note 47 (and/or 2). Numbers are wrong.
48. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 61.
49. Ibid.
50. *Protocols*, 2:2–3.
51. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 86–87.

52. Armstrong, *The Great Transformation*, 225–230.
53. *Protocols*, 2:2, 2:5, 5:11, 12:6, 12:17, 14:5.
54. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 96.
55. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 59–62.
56. *Protocols*, 17:7.
57. Ibid., 15:3, 14:1, 17:2.
58. Kah, *New World Religion*, 142–144.
59. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 153; *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 517, Vol. 26.
60. Greer, *Atlantis*, 41, quoting from the biography written by Jocelyn Godwin, *The Theosophical Enlightenment*, (Albany, New York: State University of New York Press, 1994).
61. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 111.
62. Ibid., 517, Vol. 26.
63. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 441; *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 517, Vol. 26.
64. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 517, Vol. 26.
65. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 322.
66. Ibid.
67. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 517–518, Vol. 26.
68. Ibid.
69. Greer, *Atlantis*, 71–72.
70. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 22.
71. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 56, 79.
72. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 77.
73. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 127.
74. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 83.
75. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 220.

CHAPTER 74: THE ILLUMINATI

1. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 24; Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 21; Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 13.
2. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 82–87.
3. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 13–14.
4. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 297,316.
5. Brown, *Angels And Demons*, 39–42, 47, 199.
6. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 24.
7. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 86, 91.
8. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 308.
9. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 81, 86.
10. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 13.
11. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 88.
12. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 318.
13. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 81, 89, 109, 129.
14. Brown, *Angels And Demons*, 48–49, 191.
15. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 131.
16. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 24.
17. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 82–87.
18. *Protocols*, 1:19, 2:2, 3:10.
19. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 82–87.
20. *Protocols*, 2:2.
21. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 21, 147.
22. *Protocols*, 1:25.
23. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 82–87, 129–130.
24. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 315.
25. Brown, *Angels And Demons*, 320; Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 81, 137.
26. Brown, *Angels And Demons*, 508.
27. Browne, *Secret Societies*, 21–22.
28. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 169.
29. Browne, *Secret Societies*, 22.
30. Brown, *Angels And Demons*, 191, 319.
31. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 80.

32. Brown, *Angels And Demons*, 321.
33. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 297.
34. *Protocols*, 2:3, 3:7.
35. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 8–9.
36. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 393.
37. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 30.
38. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 207–208.
39. Ibid., 21–34.
40. Ibid., 12, 116–118, 241.
41. Brown, *Angels And Demons*, 319.

CHAPTER 75: GLOBAL GNOSTICISM

1. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 297.
2. Gonsalez-Wipper, 23.
3. Acts 8:1–25.
4. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 157.
5. Ibid., 157–158.
6. *Unger's*, 1197.
7. Baigent and Leigh, *Elixir and the Stone*, 5.
8. Blake and Blezard, 79, 147.
9. Robinson, *The Nag Hammadi Library*, 532, quoting Richard Smith, *The Modern Relevance of Gnosticism*.
10. Blake and Blezard, 96–97.
11. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 65, 78, 86.
12. Ibid., 14, 76–77.
13. Ibid., 67, 86.
14. Naudon, 207.
15. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 28.
16. Blake and Blezard, 96–97.
17. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 83.
18. Baigent and Leigh, *Elixir and the Stone*, 34, 77.
19. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 8–9.
20. Mackey, *History*, 375–376, *"Freemasonry and the House of Stuart."*
21. Baigent and Leigh, *Elixir and the Stone*, 25.
22. Wang, *Daoism in China*, 27.
23. Baigent and Leigh, *Elixir and the Stone*, 26.
24. Blake and Blezard, 74.
25. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 9–12, 141.
26. Ibid., 12.
27. Bauer, 765, notes.
28. Blake and Blezard, 75.
29. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 79–80.
30. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 183.
31. Blake and Blezard, 89, 94.
32. The Qur'an, The Family Of 'Imram 3:34–55; Mary 19:1–35; Livestock 6:84–89; The Prophets 21:78–100
33. Blake and Blezard, 91.
34. Ibid.
35. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 81.
36. Ibid., 68, quoting Johannes Van Oort, *Gnosis and Hermeticism from Antiquity to Modern Times* (Albany, New York: State University of New York Press, 1998), 37.
37. Ibid., 29. 65.
38. Ibid., 76.
39. Ibid., 74, quoting Steven Runciman, *The Medieval Manichee: A Study of Christian Dualist Heresy* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1999), 93.
40. Ibid., 71–72.
41. Ibid., 73.
42. Layton, *Gnostic Scriptures*, 14.

43. Ibid., 162; *Satorinos* 1:24:2.
44. Ibid., 16.
45. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, *The Secret Book According to John*, 51; Gonsalez-Wipper, 24.
46. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 16.
47. Ibid., 37, *The Secret Book According to John* 11:19.
48. Ibid., 38, *The Secret Book According to John* 13:8–12, 74; *The Reality of the Rulers*, 94:19–23, 95:1–4, 98; *First Thought in Three Forms*, 43:33–35, 114; *The Holy Book of the Great Invisible Light*, 58:23–24, 175; *The Other Gnostic Teachings According to St. Iraneous*, 1:30:6.
49. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 65.

CHAPTER 76: A THOUSAND POINTS OF LIGHT

1. Gonsalez-Wipper, 24.
2. Alford, 31.
3. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 149.
4. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 91.
5. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 77.
6. Alford, 116–117.
7. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 91.
8. Alford, 136.
9. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 77, *Other Teachings by St. Iraneous* 1:30:8–9.
10. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 92, quoting Robinson, *The Nag Hammadi Library*, 165, 184; *The Hypostasis of the Archons*, verses 89–90; *The Origin of the World* verse 118.
11. Genesis 3:20.
12. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 92–93, citing James Robinson from *The Nag Hammadi Library.*
13. Gonsalez-Wipper, 23.
14. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 17.
15. Ibid., 151–157, 187, *The Sethians* 39:1–3.
16. Ibid., 152, *The Three Tablets of Seth* 118:1.
17. Pagels and King, *Reading Judas*, 117, 133; Judas 11:1–12, 10:6–10, 2:22–24.
18. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 148, *The Three Tablets of Seth* 118:1.
19. Gonsalez-Wipper, 24.
20. Blake and Blezard, 77.
21. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 107, 149.
22. Blake and Blezard, 75.
23. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 9.
24. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 126.
25. Blake and Blezard, 36.
26. Genesis 3:6.
27. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 82.
28. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 181.
29. Ibid.
30. Blake and Blezard, 36.
31. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 170.
32. *Unger's*, 488.
33. Gardner, *Realm*, 276.
34. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 120–121.
35. *Protocols*, Introduction.
36. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 32.
37. Ibid., 31.
38. Sitchin, *Journeys to the Mystical Past*, 191.

39. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 115.
40. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 126.
41. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 32.
42. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 82.
43. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 32.
44. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 126.
45. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 60.
46. *Unger's*, 93.
47. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 94.
48. Mackey, *History*, 274, *"Freemasonry and the House of Staurt"*, 374, *"Freemasonry and the Gnostics."*
49. Ibid.; John 1:1–15; The Qur'an, The Family Of 'Imram 3:45–46; The Cow 2:253; Women 4:171–173.
50. Ibid.; Genesis 22:18; 3:15; 9:27; 12:3; 22:18; 49:8; Deuteronomy 18:18; 2 Samuel 23:5; 7:11–16; 23:5; Psalms 2,16;22; 40; 100; Isaiah 2, 7, 9, 11, 40, 42, 49, 53 9:6–7; Jeremiah 23:5–6; Zechariah 3:8; 6:12; 12:10–14; Haggai 2:9; Malachi 3:1; 4:56; Daniel 7:13–14; 7:27; 10:16–18; The Qur'an, The Cow 2:87; Women 4:154–175; The Feast 5:72–77.
51. Mackey, *History*, 389–391, *"Freemasonry and the Essenes."*
52. Ibid., 231.

CHAPTER 77: THE ROSICRUCIANS

1. Naudon, 239.
2. Ibid., 239–241.
3. Ibid., 239.
4. Ibid., 239–40.
5. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 287.
6. Ibid., 52, 53, 88, 176.
7. Naudon, 240.
8. Gittins, 100.
9. Naudon, 240.
10. Ibid., 240–41.
11. Ibid.
12. Gittins, 100.
13. Naudon, 241–242.
14. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 279–280.
15. Naudon, 242–243.
16. Baigent and Leigh, *Secret Germany*, 315.
17. Ibid., 315–322.
18. Mackey, *History*, 331, *“The Rosicrucians and the Freemasons.”*
19. Marshal, *Philosopher’s Stone*, 362–363.
20. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 258–261.
21. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 306.
22. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 261.
23. Naudon, 240.
24. Gittins, 100.
25. Marshal, *Philosopher’s Stone*, 435.
26. Naudon, 243.
27. Gittins, 40–42.
28. Naudon, 244.
29. Mackey, *History*, 337, *“The Rosicrucians and the Freemasons.”*
30. Marshal, *Philosopher’s Stone*, 13.
31. Mackey, *History*, 350, *“The Rosicrucians and the Freemasons.”*
32. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 352.
33. Marshal, *Philosopher’s Stone*, 139.
34. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 356.
35. Marshal, *Philosopher’s Stone*, 13–20.
36. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 245–247.
37. Gardner, *Realm*, 3.
38. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 264.
39. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 354–358.
40. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 141–142, 357.
41. Marshal, *Philosopher’s Stone*, 498.
42. Gardner, *Realm*, 259.
43. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 238–39.
44. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel’s Machine*, 111.
45. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 190, 201–202.
46. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel’s Machine*, 108–110.

47. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 68.
48. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 36.
49. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 110.
50. Lomas, *Invisible College*, 220–222, *"The Rosicrucians and the Freemasons."*
51. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 388.
52. Gittins, 216.
53. Mackey, *History*, 350.
54. Lomas, *Invisible College*, 4.
55. Browne, *Secret Societies*, 95.
56. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 144.
57. Ibid., 219.
58. Ibid., 313.
59. Marshal, 139.
60. Mackey, *History*, 340–344, *"The Rosicrucians and the Freemason."*
61. Marshal, 436.
62. Browne, *Secret Societies*, 94–95.
63. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 17, 36, 169.
64. Neil Asher Silberman, *Heavenly Powers Unraveling the Secret History of the Kabbalah* (New York: Grossel/Putman, A Member of Penguin Putman, 1998), 219.
65. Marshal, 436.
66. Demond Wilson: *The New Age Millennium*, 23.
67. Revelation 20:1–10.
68. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 246.

CHAPTER 78: THE NEW AGE MILLENNIUM

1. Knight and Lomas, *Second Messiah*, 105.
2. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 319.
3. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 25.
4. Wallace-Murphy, Hopkins, and Simmons, *Rex Deus*, 260–261.
5. Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, *Holy Blood and Holy Grail*, 207, 428.
6. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 324.
7. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 260.
8. Daniel 2:41–44; 7:7–8; 7:23–25; Revelation 17:12.
9. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*, 40, 78.
10. Kah, *New World Religion*, 40.
11. Berlitz, *The Mystery of Atlantis*, 156.
12. David Furlong, *The Keys to the Temple* (London: Judy Piatkus Publishers Ltd., 1997),136.
13. Reid, *Arthur*, 59; Davies, *The Celts*, 114.
14. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 230.
15. Revelation 17:1–4; Revelation 18:7–8.
16. Demond Wilson, *The New Age Millennium*, 192.
17. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 82.
18. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 151–152.
19. Hancock and Bauval, *The Message of the Sphinx*, 85–86, 270.
20. Ibid., 86.
21. Braden, *The Divine Matrix*, 10, 56, 115, 116–117.
22. Ezekiel 38:1–6, 14–17.
23. Revelation 17:11–21.

CHAPTER 79: THE FAIRY KINGDOMS

1. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 217.
2. Ibid., 1.
3. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 7.
4. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 316.
5. Ibid.
6. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 10.
7. Bord, *Fairies*, 3.
8. Mackillop, *Dictionary of Celtic Mythology*, 177.
9. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 3, 16.
10. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 32.
11. Evans-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, 231.
12. Bord, *Fairies*, 3.
13. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 315.
14. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 228.
15. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 315.
16. Blake and Blezard, 179.
17. Gardner, *Realm*, 24.
18. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 230.
19. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 315.
20. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 68, 229.
21. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 117–118.
22. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 68.
23. Ibid., 68.
24. Naudon, 207.
25. Ibid.
26. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 47–74, 114.
27. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 315.
28. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 229.
29. Blake and Blezard, 179.
30. Gardner, *Realm*, 25–31.
31. Ellis, *The Celts*, 8.
32. Gardner, *Realm*, 25–26.
33. Ibid., 24.
34. Evans-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, 320.
35. Gardner, *Realm*, 25.
36. *Unger's*, 340–341.
37. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 47.
38. Gardner, *Realm*, 100.
39. Evans-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, 309–310.
40. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, Vol. 13, 313.
41. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 67, 79, 267.
42. Ibid., 68, 267, 282–285.
43. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 177.
44. Evans-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, 327.
45. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 180.
46. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 293–294.

47. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 466–468.
48. Evans-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, 241.
49. Gardner, *Shadow*, 255.
50. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 184.
51. Gardner, *Realm*, 286, note 5.
52. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 646–647, Vol. 26.
53. Gardner, *Realm*, 286, note 5.
54. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 637, Vol. 12.
55. Gardner, *Realm*, 65, 286, note 5.
56. Ibid., 106, 254, 261.
57. Ibid., 2.
58. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 176.
59. Gardner, *Realm*, 103.
60. Ibid.
61. Ibid.
62. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 184.
63. Ibid., 177.

CHAPTER 80: ORDO DRACONIS

1. Gardner, *Realm*, 100.
2. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 312.
3. Ibid.
4. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 312.
5. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 353, Vol. 2.
6. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 171.
7. Revelation 12:3.
8. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, viii, 3, 86, 154.
9. Jones, *An Instinct for Dragons*, 141.
10. Reid, *Arthur*, viii, 1.
11. Ibid., xi, 5, 43.
12. Ibid., 127.
13. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 471–472, Vol. 24.
14. Gardner, *Realm*, 92.
15. Reid, *Arthur*, 50.
16. Gardner, *Realm*, 91.
17. Reid, *Arthur*, 96.
18. Gardner, *Realm*, 91–92.
19. Reid, *Arthur*, 157.
20. Ibid., 145.
21. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 304–305, Vol. 24.
22. Reid, *Arthur*, 149–150.
23. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 91.
24. Reid, *Arthur* 154.
25. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 304–305, Vol. 24.
26. Gardner, 171.
27. Ibid., 313.
28. Ibid.
29. Gardner, *Realm*, xvii.
30. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 316.
31. Laurence, *Realm*, xvii, 242.
32. Ibid., 243–245.
33. Ibid., 242.
34. Ibid., 241–242.
35. Ibid., 248.
36. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 313.

CHAPTER 81: SERPENTS AND DRAGONS

1. Gardner, Grail *Kings*, 171.
2. Ibid.
3. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 41.
4. Genesis 3:14.
5. Genesis 3:1.
6. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 83.
7. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 22.
8. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 99, 148–149.
9. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 22.
10. Ibid., 41.
11. Ibid., 38; Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant., 1:1:4, note 5.
12. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 41, 51.
13. Ibid.; Whiston and Meier, *Josephus*, Ant., 1:1:4.
14. Revelation 12:9; Isaiah 14:12–20; Ezekiel 28:11–19.
15. Luke 10:17–18.
16. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, 33, quoting *The Book of Hagadah*, 36. The *Haggadah* is Jewish legend from the *Midrash* (ancient stories and commentary on Hebrew Scripture), *Pseudepigrapha* (Hebrew Apocrypha), and the early Kabbalah. *The Book of Hagadah* recorded in the *Other Bible* comes from the Henrietta Szold translation of Louis Ginsberg's rendering into German of specific Pseudepigraphic and Kabbalistic texts and specifically *The Legend of the Jews*, Philadelphia Jewish Publication Society of America, 1909.
17. Ibid., 36, quoting *The Book of Hagadah.*
18. Ibid.
19. Genesis 2:4–7, 21–25; Job 32:8; 33:4; 34:15.
20. Armstrong, *The Bible: A Biography*, 149.
21. Genesis 1:27.
22. Genesis 1:28.
23. The Qur'an, Scattering 51:46–49.
24. Naudon, 4.
25. Recinos, Goetz, and Morley, *Popol Vuh*, 165–176, Part 3, Chapter 1, Chapter 4, note 7; 89–91, Part 1 Chapters 2–4, 89–93, 67.
26. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 81.
27. Job 41:3–30; Psalm 74:13–14.
28. Jones, *An Instinct for Dragons*, 6, 167.
29. *Good News For Modern Man, The New Testament In Today's English Third Edition*, 1966, 640, Word List.
30. *Nelson's*, 63.
31. *Good News For Modern Man, The New Testament In Today's English Third Edition*, 1966, 632, Word List.
32. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 9–10.
33. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 171.
34. Jones, *An Instinct for Dragons*, 6.
35. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 102–104.
36. Ibid.
37. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 16.
38. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 171.

39. Gardner, *Realm*, 3.
40. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 171.
41. Gardner, *Realm*, 3.
42. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 200, 312.

CHAPTER 82: LEVIATHAN

1. Isaiah 27:1.
2. Revelation 12:3.
3. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 61.
4. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 16.
5. Ginzberg, *Legends*, xxxiii.
6. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 16.
7. Ginzberg, *Legends*, xxxiv.
8. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 59.
9. Bauer, 15.
10. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 16.
11. Ginzberg, *Legends*, xxxiv.
12. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 360.
13. Armstrong, *A History of God*, 8.
14. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 223.
15. *Unger's*, 73.
16. Ginzberg, *Legends*, xxxiii.
17. *Unger's*, 73.
18. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 223.
19. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 49.
20. Job 9:13; Job 26:12; Psalm 89:9–10; Isaiah 51:9.
21. Psalm 89:9–10; Job 26:12–13.
22. *Nelson's*, 1065–1066.
23. Ginzberg, *Legends*, xxxii, 9.
24. Ibid., xxxii.
25. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 45–52.
26. Psalm 74:13, 89:9–10; Job 41:31, 26:12–13; Isaiah 51:9.
27. Bauer, 15.
28. Leeming and Leeming, *Dictionary of Creation Myths*, 82.
29. Ellis, *The Celts*, 7.
30. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 14, 23.
31. Bauer, 15.
32. Hancock, *Underworld*, 182, quoting *The Rig-Veda*, Vol. 1.
33. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 36.
34. Hancock, *Underworld*, 182, quoting *The Rig-Veda*, Vol. 1.
35. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 36–39.
36. Hancock, Graham, *Underworld*, 182, quoting *The Rig-Veda*, Vol. 1.
37. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 144–146.
38. Ibid., 81.
39. Bauer, 15.
40. Recinos, Goetz, Morley, *Popol Vuh*, 81–84, Part 1: Chapter 1.
41. John 1:1–3; The Qur'an, The Family Of Imram 3:45–46; Women 4:171.
42. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 21, 83.
43. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 40–45.
44. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 83.
45. Ibid., 82.
46. Marrs, *Rise of the Fourth Reich*, 80.

47. Braden, *The Divine Matrix*, 16–17.
48. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 294–95, Vol. 9.

CHAPTER 83: THE BULL CULT OF MELCHIZEDEK

1. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 117–118; Genesis 14:17–20.
2. Ibid., 124, 164.
3. *Unger's*, 488.
4. 2 Kings 23:13, note a.
5. Zephaniah 1:5.
6. Acts 7:43.
7. *Unger's*, 485.
8. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 51–52.
9. *Unger's*, 485.
10. Judges 9:46.
11. 2 Kings 1:2–2, 6, 16.
12. Matthew 10:25; 12:27; Luke 11:18–19.
13. *Nelson's*, 511–513.
14. Exodus 32:1–35.
15. 1 Kings 12:26–30.
16. Hosea 8:3–6; Hosea 10:5–6; Amos 3:14–15; Amos 8:14.
17. *Unger's*, 486, 673–674.
18. Leviticus 18:21; 20:1–5.
19. *Unger's*, 488.
20. Hosea 8:3–6; Hosea 10:5–6; Amos 3:14–15; Amos 8:14.
21. Jeremiah 7:29–34; Ezekiel 16:20–22; 23:37–39.
22. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 165.
23. Plutarch, *Selected Lives*, the Dryden Translation, 13.
24. Knight and, Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 166.
25. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 211, Vol. 19.
26. Bauer, 184–188, 197, notes.
27. Ginzberg, *Legends*, xxxii.
28. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 201.
29. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 166.
30. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 248.
31. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 166.
32. Plutarch, *Selected Lives*, the Dryden Translation, 11.
33. Ibid., 13; Bauer, 225.
34. Hancock and Bauval, *Talisman*, 209–213.
35. Gardner, *Shadow*, 166, quoting *Peake's Commentary on the Bible*.
36. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 33.
37. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 91–92.
38. Bauer, 320–321.
39. Gardner, *Shadow*, 31.
40. *Unger's*, 483.
41. Amos 9:7; Jeremiah 47:4; Deuteronomy 2:23.
42. *Unger's*, 487.
43. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 124.
44. Psalm 110:4.
45. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 125.
46. Ibid., 120.

47. Robinson, *The Nag Hammadi Library*, 439, commenting on *The Gospel of Melchizedek*; *Melchizedek* 5:20, 440.
48. Ibid., 439–440; *Melchizedek* 5:20, 440.
49. *Unger's*. p.832,

CHAPTER 84: THE ESSENES

1. Knight and Lomas, *Second Messiah*, 276.
2. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 401.
3. Knight and Lomas, *Second Messiah*, 276.
4. *Unger's*, 375–377.
5. Gardner, *Realm*, 276.
6. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 203–205.
7. *Unger's*, 374–377 *Nelson's*, 416–418.
8. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 192, 196.
9. Ezekiel 8:16–18.
10. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 54, 61, 191, 196.
11. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 389.
12. Ibid., 390.
13. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 193, 207.
14. Gardner, *Realm*, 273, note 3.
15. Shanks, *Brothers*, 171, 194.
16. Bauer, 740–742.
17. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 390.
18. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 208.
19. Shanks, *Brothers*, 172, quoting 3:32:1–6.
20. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 208.
21. Gardner, *Realm*, 273, note 3.
22. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 390, 455–458.
23. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 193.
24. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 50, 55.
25. Ibid., 67.
26. Mackey, *History*, 393–394, *"Freemasonry and the Essenes."*
27. 1 Kings 5:18.
28. 1 Chronicles 2:13; 1 Kings 7:13; 7:40; 7:45.
29. 1 Kings 7:40, 45.
30. 1 Kings 7:13, note f.
31. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 81, 369.
32. Gardner, *Realm*, 12.
33. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 91.
34. Bauer, 184, notes.
35. Gittins, 18, 78–79.
36. *Unger's*, 1386.
37. Haggai 2:1–23.
38. Zechariah 4:6–10; 6:12–13.
39. Ezra 3:2; 3:8; 5:2; Nehemiah 12:1; Haggai 1:1; 1:12; 1:14; 2:2; 2:23; Matthew 1:12; Luke 2:2.
40. Whiston and Mair, *Josephus*, Ant., 11:3:10.
41. *Unger's*, 1386.
42. *Nelson's*, 1339–1340.
43. *Nelson's*, 1340.
44. Haggai 1:1.
45. *Nelson's*, 1340, citing Ezra 1:8.
46. Ezra 1:1–2.

47. Ezra 6:14; 6:5; 5:2.
48. *Nelson's*, 1340.
49. Haggai 2:23.
50. Silberman and Finkelstein, *David and Solomon*, 220.
51. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 400, 414.
52. Ibid., 417–427.
53. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 66.
54. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 427–428.
55. Brown, *Da Vinci Code*, 113.
56. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 433–435.
57. Mackey, *History*, 387, "Freemasonry and Essenes."
58. Gittins, 78–79.
59. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 21, 41.
60. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, The Jewish War, Book 2, 8:5–6.
61. *Unger's*, 275–377.
62. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, The Jewish War, Book 2, 8:7.
63. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, The Jewish War, Book 2, 8:9.
64. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 33, 192.
65. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 523, Vol. 26.
66. *Unger's*, 375–377.
67. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, The Jewish War Book 2 8:6.
68. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 192.
69. Gardner, *Realm*, 27, 226.
70. Sora, *Knights Templar*, 129.
71. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 199.
72. Sora, *The Lost Treasure of the Knights Templar*, 129.
73. Matthew 19:11; Colossians 2:8, 16, 18, 20–23.
74. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 41.
75. Matthew 2:1–11.
76. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 119.
77. Blake and Blezard, 73, 104.
78. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 267.
79. The Qur'an, The Heights 7:112–113; Jonah 10:81; The Poets 26:31–47.
80. 1 Kings 4:29–31.
81. Marshall, *Philosopher's Stone*, 268.
82. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 109.
83. Blake and Blezard, 67.
84. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 222.
85. Blake and Blezard, 67.
86. Blake and Blezard, 129–30.
87. Daniel 7:25; Daniel 9:27; Daniel 12:7, 11; Revelation 13:5.

CHAPTER 85: MOSES, AKHENATEN, AND THE ARMANA DYNASTY

1. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 21, 40.
2. Ibid., 49.
3. Ibid.
4. Exodus 2:1–10.
5. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 40.
6. Ibid., 43.

7. The Qur’an, The Cow 2:47–60, 87; Women 4:153–154, 164; The Heights 7:112– 145; Jonah 10:75–83; 10:90–92; Mary 19:51; Ta Ha 20:1–98; The Poets 26:23–90; The Story 2:7-35.
8. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 44.
9. Cotterrell, *Tutankhamun Prophecies*, 68.
10. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 269.
11. Bauer, 237, notes.
12. 1 Kings 6:1.
13. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 199–260.
14. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 263.
15. Bauer, 238.
16. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 50.
17. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 264.
18. Ibid., 263.
19. Ibid.
20. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 44.
21. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 171.
22. Ibid., 171.
23. Exodus 2:10.
24. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 53.
25. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 268.
26. Gardner, *Bloodline*, 13; Laidler, *Head of God*, 339.
27. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 225, 268.
28. Reid, *Arthur*, 119.
29. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 267–268.
30. Exodus 7:10–12.
31. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 52.
32. Ibid.
33. Numbers 26:59.
34. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 52.
35. Ibid., 53.
36. Exodus 28:1–5.
37. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 255.
38. Bauer, 216–217, 229–231.
39. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 255–256.
40. L. Evans, *Kingdom of the Ark*, 234.
41. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 294.
42. Exodus 6:20.
43. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 254–255.
44. Numbers 26:59; 1 Chronicles 6:3.
45. Numbers 12:1–15.
46. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 40.
47. Ibid.
48. Ibid.
49. Bauer, 113.
50. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 40.
51. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 46; Exodus 2:1–10.
52. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 40.
53. Ibid., 40, 58, 126.
54. Ibid.
55. Ruth 4:1–20; 1 Chronicles 2:10–13; Matthew 1:4.

CHAPTER 86: JOSEPH

1. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 254.
2. Genesis 37:12–36.
3. Genesis 37:36.
4. Genesis 41:41.
5. Gadalla, *Historical Deception*, 165–167.
6. Shanks, *Brother*, 28.
7. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 427, 442.
8. L. Evans, *Kingdom of the Ark*, 83; *Unger's*, *112.*
9. Genesis 41:45; 46:20; *Unger's*, *112*.
10. L. Evans, *Kingdom of the Ark*, 83.
11. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 231.
12. Genesis 41:45, note d.
13. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 232.
14. Genesis 37:36.
15. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 213–214.
16. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 255, 281, 310.
17. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 27.
18. Bauer, 228–229, 231.
19. Gardner, *Shadow*, 200; Genesis 41:45; 41:50; 46:20.
20. *Unger's*, 375–377.
21. Sitchin, *Journeys to the Mythical Past*, 21.
22. *Nelson's*, 926.
23. Genesis 41:45; 41:50; 46:20; *Nelson's*, 926.
24. *Unger's*, 943, 950.
25. Bible, *Authorized KJV*, Jeremiah 43:13, note b; *Unger's*, 943, 950.
26. Ezekiel 30:17, note e.
27. *Unger's*, 943, 950.
28. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 235, 256, 281.

CHAPTER 87: ABRAHAM, ESAU, AND ISHMAEL

1. Genesis 27:1–40; 25:27–34.
2. The Qur'an, The Cow 2:132–140; The Family Of 'Imram 3:33, 84–85; Women 4:163–165; Livestock 6:84–89; Mary 19:41–56; Sad 38:30–99.
3. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 239.
4. Genesis 36:1–40.
5. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 239.
6. Ibid., 255; Genesis 36:3.
7. Genesis 16:4.
8. Genesis 16:1.
9. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 227.
10. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 101.
11. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:12:3.
12. Genesis 21:20.
13. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 234.
14. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 123.
15. Ibid., 108.

16. Genesis 28:9.
17. *Unger's*, 148.
18. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 235.
19. Ibid., 255.
20. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 47, 25.
21. Whiston and Maier, *Josephus*, Ant. 1:15:1.
22. Genesis 48:1–22; Genesis 49:22.
23. Genesis 49:8–12.
24. Ibid.
25. Porter, *The Lost Bible*, 56–5, 7, *Testament of Judah*, chapters 1–2.
26. Genesis 38:1–6.
27. Porter, *The Lost Bible*, 57, *Testament of Judah*, chapter 1.
28. Genesis 38:1–7.
29. Genesis 38:19, 29.
30. Genesis 38:11; Ruth 4:12; 2 Samuel 13:1–22, 32; 2 Samuel 14:27; 1 Chronicles 3:9; Ezekiel 47:19; 48:28; Matthew 1:3.
31. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 231.
32. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 132–136.
33. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 231.
34. Ezekiel 47:19; 48:28; *Nelson's*, 1224, *Unger's*, 1251.
35. *Nelson's*, 100.8
36. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 232.
37. The Qur'an, Hud 11:71–76.
38. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 228.
39. Genesis 12:10–20.
40. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 228.
41. Ibid., 234.
42. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 101.
43. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 229.
44. Genesis 20:12.
45. Whiston and Maier *Josephus*, Ant. 1:12:1.
46. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 229.
47. Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 37.
48. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 133; Porter, *New Illustrated Companion to the Bible*, 36.
49. Cahill, *Gifts of the Jews*, 72; *Unger's*, 1129; *The niv Study Bible*, 1985, Genesis 17:15, note e.

CHAPTER 88: THE KINGS OF NIMROD AND HAM

1. Genesis 10:6, The Table of Nations; 1 Chronicles 1:8.
2. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 217.
3. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 90, 99.
4. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 216.
5. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 268, Vol. 26.
6. Seward, *Jerusalem's Traitor*, 12, 17.
7. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 216.
8. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 102.
9. Bauer, 61–62, notes.
10. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 216–217.
11. Gardner, *Realm*, 242, 328.
12. Rohl, 215; Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, 287.
13. Rohl, *Legend*, 215.

14. Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, 293.
15. Rohl, *Legend*, 216.
16. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 58; Bauer, 51.
17. Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, 287.
18. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 58.
19. Ibid., 63–66.
20. Ibid., 64.
21. Bauer, 1, 78.
22. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 64–69.
23. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 70, 83–86.
24. Rohl, *Legend*, 217.
25. Genesis 10:6, Table of Nations; 1 Chronicles 1:10.
26. Rohl, *Legend*, 217, 415.
27. Ibid., 415.
28. Ibid., 248; Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, 320.
29. Rohl, *Legend*, 401.
30. Ibid., 416.
31. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 216–217.
32. Gardner, *Realm*, 134.
33. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 221.
34. Ibid., 213, 216.
35. Ibid., 221.
36. Baigent and Leigh, *Elixir and the Stone*, 26.
37. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 225.

CHAPTER 89: HAM AND JAPHETH

1. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 186.
2. Ibid., 189, *The Sethians According to St. Epiphanius* 39:3:2.
3. Ibid., 189, *The Sethians According to St. Epiphanius* 39:3:3.
4. Ibid., 58, *The Revelation of Adam* 73:13–27.
5. Ibid., 58, *The Revelation of Adam* 74:1–21.
6. Ibid., 113–115, *The Holy book of the Invisible Spirit* 56:1–19; 59:9–25.
7. Ibid., 187, *The Sethians According to St. Epiphanius* 39:1:1.
8. Ibid., 197–98, *The Sethians According to St. Epiphanius* 40:7:2.
9. Ibid., 40:7:3.
10. Ibid., 148.
11. Ibid., 152, *The Three Tablets of Seth* 118:10–31.
12. Pagels and King, *Reading Judas*, 114, 117; Judas 8:2, 11:1–6, 10:6–10.
13. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 30, 187.
14. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 615, Vol. 14.
15. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 187.
16. Ibid., 167,187, 194.

CHAPTER 90: THE BLOOD DRINKING KINGS OF KISH

1. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 143–144.
2. Mackey, *History*, 422–423, *“The Legend of Hiram Abif.”*
3. Ginzberg, *Legends*, xxii.
4. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 140.
5. Alford, 31, quoting from the Clay Tablets of Assur.
6. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 139, referencing Genesis 4:3–8, 139–143.
7. Genesis 1:26.
8. Genesis 2:7.
9. The Qur’an, The Feast 5:27–32.
10. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 143.
11. Ibid., 145.
12. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 368.
13. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 145.
14. Gardner, *Realm*, 326.
15. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 143.
16. Leeming and Leeming, *A Dictionary of Creation Myths*, 307.
17. Genesis 4:15–16.
18. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 140–141.
19. Ibid., 142, 188, 209.
20. Ibid., 188.
21. Gardner, *Realm*, 260.
22. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 174.
23. Gardner, *Realm*, 29, 259–260.
24. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 63.
25. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, 487, *First Book of Enoch.*
26. Jones, *An Instinct for Dragons*, 76.
27. Reid, *Arthur*, 124.
28. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 59.

29. Ibid., xxii.
30. Ibid.
31. Ginzberg, *Legends*, xxi.
32. Ibid., 70.
33. Bauer, 17–20.

CHAPTER 91: THE ANTEDILUVIAN DRAGON COURT

1. Alford, 322.
2. Ibid., 322.
3. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 393.
4. Knight and Lomas, *The Hiram Key*, 114.
5. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 321.
6. Rohl, *Legend*, 154, 163.
7. Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, 5.
8. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 321, Knight and Lomas, *The Hiram Key*, 1997, 115.
9. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 93.
10. Ibid., 183.
11. Ibid.
12. Knight and Lomas, *The Hiram Key*, 213.
13. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 393–394, Vol. 10.
14. Genesis 4:17.
15. Rohl, *Legend*, 199–200.
16. Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, 297–298.
17. Rohl, *Legend*, 199.
18. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 33.
19. Marshal, *Philosopher's Stone*, 182.
20. Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, 330.
21. Alford, 33, 378.
22. Genesis 11:31.
23. Judges 1:16, note b; Deuteronomy 34:3.
24. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 108.
25. Ibid., 92; Rohl, *Legend*, 200.
26. Rohl, *Legend*, 200.
27. Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, 320.
28. Rohl, *Legend*, 200.
29. Sitchin, *The Lost Book of Enki*, 181–187.
30. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 393.
31. Gardner, *Realm*, 324–325.
32. Ibid.
33. Ibid., 279, note 5.
34. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 108.
35. Gardner, *Realm*, 6, 324–325.
36. Ibid., 269.
37. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 171, 188.
38. Matthew 24:24.
39. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 108.
40. Ibid., 140.
41. Ibid., 209.
42. Ibid., 173.
43. Ibid., 115.

CHAPTER 92: ADAM AND CAIN

1. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 11, 332–333.
2. Ibid., 145.
3. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 19, 42.
4. Alford, 33.
5. Genesis 17:1.
6. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 21–22.
7. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 86, 143–144.
8. Gardner, *Realm*, 56–57.
9. Alford, 41.
10. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 111, 172.
11. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 62.
12. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 139, 183.
13. Gonsalez-Wipper, 254.
14. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 197, *"The Archonics According to St. Epiphanius,"* 40:5:3.
15. Ibid., 336, "*The Gospel According to Phillip,"* 60:1–10.
16. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 71, *"The Reality of the Rulers,"* 89:17–29.
17. Ibid., 70, 89:15–16.
18. Ibid., 47, "*The Secret Book According to John*," 24:8–31.
19. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 86.
20. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 181, *"The Other Gnostic Teachings According to St. Iraneous,"* 1:31:1.
21. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 55, 62.
22. Genesis 4:1–2, notes f and g.
23. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 86.
24. Genesis 1:6.
25. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 183, 145–146.
26. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 33, 45.
27. Layton, *The Gnostic Scriptures*, 181, *"The Other Gnostic Teachings According to St. Iraneous,"* 1:31:1.
28. Ibid.
29. Genesis 36:20-29 and 1 Chronicles 1:38-53.

CHAPTER 93: LILITH

1. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 146, 167.
2. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 97, citing Robert Graves and Raphael Patai, *Hebrew Myths*, (New York: Anchor Books, 1964).
3. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 163–171.
4. Gardner, *Realm*, 5, 24, 29, 326.
5. Ibid., 226–227.
6. Ibid., 227.
7. Leeming and Leeming, *A Dictionary of Creation Myths*, 118.
8. Genesis 2:20–25.
9. Gonzalez-Wipper, 254.
10. Silberman, *Heavenly Powers*, 85.
11. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 78.
12. Ibid., 96.
13. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 213.
14. Gardner, *Realm*, 328.
15. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 138–13, 168.
16. Ginzberg, *Legends*, 54.
17. Bierlein, *Parallel Myths*, 77, 95.
18. Gardner, *Realm*, 55.
19. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 37.

CHAPTER 94: THE GRAIL CAULDRON OF FAIRIES, ANNWYN, AND ATLANTIS

1. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 201.
2. Ibid., 204.
3. Ibid., 41, 198.
4. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 111.
5. Evans-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, 10.
6. Joseph, *Destruction of Atlantis*, 128.
7. Ibid., 27.
8. Gardner, *Realm*, 29.
9. Ibid., 28.
10. Cahill, *How the Irish*, 51.
11. Evans-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, 15, 314.
12. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 117.
13. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 28–29, 136.
14. Evans-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, 200–202.
15. Rose, *Giants, Monsters and Dragons*, 244.
16. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 207.
17. Gardner, *Realm*, 47–49.
18. Ibid., 47–48, 136, 161.
19. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 112, 119.
20. Cahill, *How the Irish*, 210–211.
21. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 200.
22. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 115–116.

23. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 205.
24. Evans-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, 310.
25. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 8.
26. Ibid., 117.
27. Ibid., 39.
28. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 201.
29. Evans-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, 310.
30. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 198.
31. Evans-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, 310, 321.
32. Ibid., 309, 320.
33. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 21, 199.
34. Ibid., 130.

CHAPTER 95: THE FAIRY LORDS OF THE TUATHA DENAAN

1. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 1, 18.
2. Gardner, *Realm*, 75.
3. Bord, *Fairies*, 143.
4. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 19.
5. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 118.
6. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 19.
7. Ibid., 21.
8. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 19, 27, 23.
9. Ellis, *The Celts*, 162.
10. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 62–66.
11. Ellis, *The Celts*, 160.
12. Ibid., 30.
13. Ibid., 26.
14. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 23.
15. Bauer, 470.
16. Braden, *The Divine Matrix*, 75–77.
17. Flemming, *Heroes of the Dawn*, 28, 55.
18. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 7.
19. Mackillop, *Dictionary of Celtic Myth*ology, 177.
20. Gardner, *Realm*, 30–31.
21. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 16–18.
22. Gardner, *Realm*, 32.
23. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 58.
24. Gardner, *Realm*, 31–32.
25. Evans-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, 241.
26. Ibid., 242.
27. Ibid.
28. Gardner, *Realm*, 103–104.
29. Evans-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, xxiii.
30. Gardner, *Realm*, 33, 108.
31. Evans-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, 22, 27, 53, 59, 62.
32. Mackillop, *Dictionary of Celtic Myth*ology, 243, 286.
33. Evans-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, 27–28, 32.
34. Gardner, *Realm*, 32.
35. Mackillop, *Dictionary of Celtic Myth*ology, 366–367.
36. Eason, *Fairies and Magical Beings*, 18, 135.

37. Rohl, *Lost Testament*, 33.
38. Gardner, *Realm*, 31–32.
39. Bord, *Fairies*, 149–150.
40. Evans-Wentz, *Fairy Faith*, 86.

CHAPTER 96: THE ROYAL HOUSE OF THE SCYTHIANS

1. Gardner, *Realm*, 58.
2. Ibid., 64–75.
3. Ibid., 91.
4. Gardner, *Realm*, 66.
5. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 471–472, Vol. 24.
6. Gardner, *Realm*, 63–67.
7. Genesis 36:15–19, 40; 1 Chronicles 1:34–37, 50.
8. Gardner, *Realm*, 63–64.
9. Genesis 36:4.
10. Genesis 26:13, 17; 1 Chronicles 1:37.
11. Gardner, *Realm*, 63.
12. Isaiah 34:10–17.
13. Isaiah 34:11, note a.
14. Bible, *niv Red Letter Edition*, 1985, Isaiah 34:11, note n, citing Deuteronomy 14:14–17: unclean birds are the eagle, the vulture and the black vulture, the red and black kite, any kind of falcon and raven, the horned owl, the screech owl, the gull, any kind of hawk, the little owl, the great owl, the osprey, the cormorant, the stork, any kind of heron, the hoopoe, and the bat; Zephaniah 2:14, citing the screech owl and the desert owl; Isaiah 13:21, citing the owls in the destruction of Babylon.
15. *Nelson's*, 70–71.
16. *Unger's*, 75.
17. Gardner, *Realm*, 64, 226.
18. Ibid.
19. Gardner, *Realm*, 63; Bible, *niv Red Letter Edition*, 1 Chronicles 1:51–54, re: dukes and dukedoms.
20. Ibid., 63, 226.
21. Bauer, 176.
22. Judges 1:27; Gardner, *Realm*, 68.
23. *The Access Bible*, *New Revised Standard Version with the Apocrypha*, 1999, Judith 3:10; 2 Maccabees 12:29; 1 Maccabees 5:52.
24. Seward, *Jerusalem's Traitor*, xvii, reference map 2.
25. Gardner, *Realm*, 64.
26. *Nelson's*, 577; *Unger's*, 586–58.7.
27. Bauer, 264–265.
28. Gardner, *Realm*, 268.
29. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 646–647, Vol. 26.
30. Ibid.
31. Ibid., 277.
32. Recinos, Goetz, and Morley, *Popol Vuh*, 109, Part 2: Chapter 1:note 7.
33. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 282, Vol. 26.
34. Ibid., 304–305, Vol. 24.
35. Porter, *The Lost Bible*, 71; *Pseudo Philo*, chapter 60.
36. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 499.

CHAPTER 97: THE ANTEDILUVIAN TESTIMONY

1. Epperson, *Masonry: Conspiracy*, 90.
2. Addison, *Knights Templar*, 18.
3. Short, *Inside the Brotherhood*, 114.
4. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 13.
5. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 250.
6. Knight and Lomas, *Second Messiah*, 291.
7. Marrs, *Rule by Secrecy*, 250.
8. Ibid., 250.
9. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 464.
10. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 316.
11. Ibid., 223, 305.
12. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 310–316.
13. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 28, 39.
14. Exodus 25:16; 31:18; 40:20; Deuteronomy 10:5.
15. Numbers 10:33.
16. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 127–128.
17. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 39.
18. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 245.
19. Exodus 31:18; 32:19; 34:28–29; Deuteronomy 5:22; 9:10–17; 10:1–5.
20. Exodus 34:29.
21. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 36–37.
22. Exodus 34:29.
23. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 36–37; Exodus 31:18; 32:15–6; 34:28; Deuteronomy 9:10–11.
24. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 36–37.
25. Exodus 25:16; 40:20; Deuteronomy 10:1–5.
26. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 28–36.
27. Ibid., 83–84.
28. Ibid., 36.
29. J. Evans, *Dragons Myth and Legend*, 55.
30. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 36, 85.
31. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 80–82 and 372.
32. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 251–255, 270.
33. Booth, *The Secret History of the World*, 70.
34. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 18.
35. Addison and Childress, *Knights Templar*, 21.
36. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 223.

CHAPTER 98: THE KHEM OF MENDES

1. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 219.
2. Ibid., 144.
3. Marshal, *The Philosopher's Stone*, 200.
4. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 31.
5. Matthew 12:24; Mark 3:22; Luke 11:45.
6. *Nelson's*, 511.
7. Ibid., 28.
8. *The Encyclopedia Americana*, 775, Vol. 21.
9. Marshal, *The Philosopher's Stone*, 196, 460.
10. Greer, *The Element Encyclopedia*, 17–19.
11. Markale, *Treasure at Gisors*, 264–265.
12. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 34.
13. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 112.
14. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 66–68.
15. Gardner, *Shadow*, 163, 168.
16. Knight and Lomas, *Book of Hiram*, 271.
17. Naudon, 237.
18. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 365–366.
19. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 112.
20. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 366.
21. Knight and Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, 155.
22. Blake and Blezard, 223.
23. Hancock, *Underworld*, 145.
24. C. Wilson, *Atlantis to the Sphinx*, 9, 162.
25. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 27, 71.
26. Leviticus 16:8.
27. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 70.
28. Ibid., 27.
29. Leviticus 16:8.
30. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 88.
31. Collins, *Ashes of Angels*, 27.
32. Gardner, *Lost Secrets*, 88.
33. Short, *Inside the Brotherhood*, 135.
34. Blake and Blezard, 61.
35. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 219.
36. Gardner, *Realm*, 133.
37. Gardner, *Grail Kings*, 219.
38. Blake and Blezard, 38.
39. Barnstone, *The Other Bible*, 475–476, quoting *The Acts of Thomas*.

EPILOGUE: WHAT MUST TAKE PLACE WILL TAKE PLACE

1. Revelation 13:11.
2. Revelation 4:1.
3. Revelation 17:8.

There are giants among us, passing largely unnoticed, intent on carrying out a secret plan to enslave all humanity.

They may not look like giants today, but their bloodlines extend all the way back to the Nephilim—the offspring of angels who mated with human women—described in Genesis 6 when Giants were roaming the land.

Gary Wayne, author of *The Genesis 6 Conspiracy: How Secret Societies and the Descendants of Giants Plan to Enslave Humankind* details the role of modern-day Nephilim in Satan's plan to install the Antichrist at the End of Days.

When God cast the angel Lucifer and his followers out of heaven, Lucifer set into motion a scheme to ensure the Nephilim survived. Why? Because from the bloodlines of these Nephilim the Antichrist will come.

To keep his plan alive, Satan has enlisted the loyalty of secret societies such as the Freemasons, the Templars, and the Rosicrucians to conspire in teaching a theology and a history of the world that is contrary to the biblical one. This Genesis 6 Conspiracy marches toward the Great Tribulation, when then loyalty of the Terminal Generation—this generation—will be tested.

The Bible, along with many other ancient sources, clearly records the existence of giants. Wayne provides copious citations from many society insiders, along with extensive Bible references, other religious references, and historical material to bolster his contention. What he uncovers will astonish you—and it will challenge you to prepare for the fulfilling of God's promises.

Gary Wayne is a Christian contrarian who has maintained a lifelong love affair with biblical prophecy, history, and mythology.

His extensive study has encompassed the Bible and Gnostic scriptures, the Qur'an, the Bhagavad Gita, Gilgamesh and other ancient epics, language etymology, and secret society publications.

TRUSTED BOOKS
A DIVISION OF DEEP RIVER BOOKS

The GEMSTONE FILE

Edited By JIM KEITH

The Gemstone File

The GEMSTONE FILE

edited by Jim Keith

IllumiNet Press
Atlanta

Copyright © 1992 by Jim Keith
All rights reserved.

No part of this publication may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopy, recording, or any information storage and retrieval system now known or to be invented, without permission in writing from the publisher, except by a reviewer who wishes to quote brief passages in connection with a review written for inclusion in a magazine, newspaper or broadcast.

Library Of Congress Cataloging in Publication Data

The Gemstone File / edited by Jim Keith. — 1st ed.
p. cm.
ISBN: 0-9626534-5-4 : $14.95
1. United States — Politics and government — 1945-1989.
2. World politics — 1945-
3. Political corruption — History — 20th century.
4. Conspiracies — History — 20th century. I. Keith, Jim, 1949-
E839.5.G38 1992
909.82—dc20 92-18217

Cover art by James Koehnline

This book comprises an investigation of unsubstantiated "underground" documents, with the purpose of analyzing them and proving or disproving their allegations. Printing these documents does not constitute a statement by the editor or publisher that the documents in question are believed to be factual, or should be construed as such.

IllumiNet Press
P.O. Box 746
Avondale Estates, GA 30002

First IllumiNet Press Edition, 1992

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

Printed in the United States of America

Dedicated to Mae Brussell

The editor wishes to thank the following people for their contributions to the research: Matt Love and the Cabot Cabal, Vicky Bolin, Ron Bonds, Len Bracken, Stephanie Caruana, Jerry Smith, Tim Cridland, Mae Brussell, John Judge, Walter Alter, Micro Associates, Anarchist Alliance of Aotearos, and Mike Gunderloy.

Contents

Introduction
Jim Keith 1

A Skeleton Key to the Gemstone File
Stephanie Caruana 6

An Interview with Stephanie Caruana 38

Mae Brussell on the Gemstone File 52

The Kiwi Gemstone 71

Gemstoner
Len Bracken 97

The Gemstone File and Me
Jonathan Vankin 106

Is it True?
Jim Keith 110

The Godfather, Part IV
Robert Anton Wilson 133

Tales from the Vatican Crypt
G. J. Krupey 144

Is Gemstone a Hoax?
Kerry W. Thornley 167

Outlaws and Inslaw
Ben G. Price 174

Appendix: Sodium Morphate
Yael Dragwyla and Gary Csillaghegyi 184

Notes
X. Sharks DeSpot, Jim Keith, G.J. Krupey, Matt Love . 188

Introduction

Jim Keith

> *Park's response was innocence laced with Oriental humility. But, sir, all this surely could not be contained in the Gemstone File?*
>
> *Hoover chuckled. No, my dear friend. Gemstone is a composite of critical data principally exposing the collusion of the American overworld with the American underworld, dating back to 1934.*
>
> *What names would one find in Gemstone?*
>
> *Quite a variety, Mr. President.*
>
> *It would be helpful for me, dear friend, to acquire those names.*
>
> *Yes, Hoover responded softly. I'm certain it would be.*
>
> From *The Circle* by Steve Shagan

The *Gemstone File* is one of the wilder and woolier legends of research into political conspiracy. Penned by Bruce Roberts (of which not a great deal is known other than the bare facts of his life and that he died, either by brain tumor or cancer, on July 30, 1976), this document of reportedly over one thousand handwritten pages was passed in part in 1975 to Mae Brussell, the now-deceased researcher into matters conspiratorial. Brussell talked about the File on the air, devoting two of her weekly radio shows to it, and, after Roberts' death, offered to sell her copy for $100,000 to the first publishing house willing to print it. She reported that she had been offered $30,000 by an unnamed British movie studio, but had turned it down because she didn't feel they would do a good job with their adaptation of the File. Brussell apparently put some stock in Gemstone, or at least she felt that others might, if the price she placed on it is any indication.

The File was synopsized by Stephanie Caruana (a writer sent to interview Brussell by *Playgirl* magazine, who took and still takes Roberts' revelations with utmost seriousness) and the condensed "A Skeleton Key to the Gemstone File" was then distributed at random and far and wide, reprinted, changed, parodied, added to, and variously hijacked by people heeding its call to make copies and spread them around. When people speak of the *Gemstone File*, they are usually referring to the Skeleton Key, although the term is more correctly applied to Roberts' original Gemstone letters.

The Skeleton Key was the basis for Steve Shagan's popular 1982 espionage novel *The Circle* (which fictionally attributed the File to J. Edgar Hoover) and was even reprinted in Larry Flynt's *Hustler* magazine. One story has it that Flynt was shot due to his publication of the Skeleton Key although, considering the magazine it was printed in, the point is moot.

So what kind of information does the Skeleton Key contain? It is a convoluted and feisty chronology purporting to be the inner track on some of the major events of the Twentieth Century: the Kennedy assassination, the tragedy at Chappaquiddick, and the strange and secret histories of Howard Hughes and Aristotle Onassis. The Skeleton Key describes skullduggery and wheeling and dealing for high stakes indeed: the control of America. The events depicted in the Key are nasty enough, in fact, so that one wonders if they might not be true.

"A Skeleton Key to the Gemstone File" has appeared in a number of additional versions of which we are aware. The original appears to exist in a very rough, partly unreadable photocopy dated May 1, 1975, with a name and address affixed: "Stephanie Caruana, 75 Prosper St., San Francisco, Ca 94114." The Caruana version includes an interesting section on heretical religion and a listing of individual Gemstones that is not included in all later versions... no doubt for the sake of discretion. Caruana has mentioned another "expanded" Skeleton Key of sixty-odd pages, including photographs, although this version has so far been unobtainable.

At least ten other anonymous typed or typeset versions of the Skeleton Key are in our possession, including one that intersperses the nearly-as-wild conspiracy/metaphysical chronology from Neal Wilgus's book, *The Illuminoids*.

The curious "Illuminati Research Report" is, in part, a melding of the Skeleton Key, the infamous Protocols of the Elders of Zion and Wilgus's *Illuminoids* timeline. Although there is no byline on this Gemstone version, it was reportedly written by Dennis Brunelle in the mid 1980s. Brunelle claimed to be a Grand Master in the Ordo Templi Orientis lodge, but to have become disillusioned with their "Illuminati"-derived program, at which time he set out to blow the whistle.

"Small press" or underground magazine appearances of the Skeleton Key include *Shavertron, The Continuing Crisis, Conspiracy Digest, The Fanatic* and my own magazine, *Dharma Combat*.

One interesting permutation of the Skeleton Key, hereafter referred to as the Kiwi Gemstone, incorporates lengthy references to international and, especially, Aotearoa (New Zealand) politics, and was printed in the New Zealand anarchist publication *The State Adversary*. It was reportedly the subject of a legal suit prior to this publication, and that is fairly easy to understand. The Kiwi Gemstone is included in this book and, regardless of whether you have any interest in Aotearoan politics, it should be read, if only because of the stunning depiction of a Mafia/big business takeover and details of subliminals used for mass brainwashing. The Kiwi Gemstone is believable and I would even say instructive as to what Gemstone might have been.

Without a doubt the strangest of the Gemstone versions we have is the version photocopied from an original typed on lined notebook paper, replete with the antics of Chevy Chase, Goldie Hawn and Rowan and Martin. X. Sharks DeSpot has taken credit for this Gemstone version and has admitted it to be a hoax. While contributing greatly to the present volume with his research, Mr. DeSpot has asked that I not include his "Jokestone File" out of concern that loonies might harass Goldie Hawn.

In an elegant segue: during the course of editing this book, I received a phone call from W. Scott Walker, the publisher of a book called *Beyond the Gemstone Files*. I had written to him, wondering about the content of the book, whose title I had encountered a few times but had never been able to locate, even having gone so far as to consult the Library of Congress. Walker told me in quiet, grave tones that I would be "violating copyrights held by the CIA," if I was so foolhardy as to go ahead with my proposed book.

His story was that the author of *Beyond the Gemstone Files*, Peter Renzo, was an ex-CIA man authorized by the Company to release the *Gemstone Files*, which (Walker confided) are the G. Gordon Liddy files "he thought he had burned." Walker maintains that Renzo was a member of the "Fighting Tigers Assassination Squad," and that the CIA simply won't allow me to do the book: this book.

After questioning Mr. Walker about the nature of the files he had published (via Vantage Press, a well-known subsidy press, bastion of the terminally unpublishable, and now, we find, Company asset), it became apparent that it was the Caruana Skeleton Key which the "CIA" had so boldly authorized him to go where so many had gone before.

I sensed Walker was a little dismayed when I confided I have the Key in at least eleven different versions and am in correspondence with the original editor, and when I filled him in on a little of the background as I know it, Fighting Tigers Assassination Squad, aside.

Since speaking with Walker I have had a chance to review Renzo's book which is composed of, as I had guessed, the Caruana Skeleton Key coupled to stories about the author's supposed CIA connections and the murder of his friend amid the overwhelming odor of "apple pie," i.e. Roberts' dreaded sodium morphate. Renzo also tells of a sojourn in Laos where he found a secret temple and a giant idol that, after pressing a concealed button, opened to disgorge precious "gemstones." On the way out of the temple Renzo fends off an attack by giant cobras. A tacked-on segment about the Philadelphia Experiment (now you see the Atlantic Fleet, now you don't) and some photos of Renzo posing with tigers and aiming guns and kicking things fills out its formidable 65 pages.

The original Skeleton Key concludes with the kind of note familiar to aficionados of conspiracy broadsheets and badly-xeroxed rants found affixed to telephone poles: "At present, the only way to spread this information here in America is via hand to hand." Be that as it may, what you have in your own hands is the certified CIA-unauthorized "A Skeleton Key to the Gemstone File," printed seventeen years after its original appearance.

In preparing this edition we have gathered the original text of the Skeleton Key along with related documents and commentaries from a number of researchers. Our most important resource during the book's preparation was correspondence with Stephanie Caruana, the original editor of the Skeleton Key and friend of Bruce Roberts. After several failed attempts to contact Ms. Caruana, she was located by accident in a coincidence I leave to more Illuminated minds to grapple with. Ms. Caruana has increased our understanding of the document and its background, while dissipating at least a portion of our original skepticism.

Notes on the Skeleton Key by sundry hands conclude the volume in an attempt to examine the data and to offer leads and theories to future researchers.

Now all that remains is for you to read and evaluate the book. Then you may decide whether the *Gemstone File* is a true telling of momentous world events or a strange — strange as real life — hoax.

A Skeleton Key to the Gemstone File

May 1, 1975

[The following is the original text of the Skeleton Key, including spelling and punctuation. Numerical references refer to Notes beginning on page 188.]

The Gemstone File was written in many segments over a period of years by an American man named Bruce Roberts. Parts of the file were released to certain Americans beginning in 1969. The number of handwritten pages is well over a thousand, of which I have read about four hundred. I have been able to verify some of the statements made in the file, but do not have the time or the research facilities to verify the entire story. Perhaps others can help.

Since the scope of the work is so large, and the events described so complex and interlocking, it may be more easily understood with this skeleton outline of the Gemstone thesis. Individual papers can then be read with greater comprehension.

1932: Onassis, a Greek drug pusher and ship owner who made his first million selling "Turkish tobacco" (opium) in Argentina, worked out a profitable deal with Joseph Kennedy, Eugene Meyer, and Meyer Lansky. Onassis was to ship booze directly into Boston for Joseph Kennedy. Also involved was a heroin deal with Franklin and Elliot Roosevelt. (1)

1934: Onassis, Rockefeller and the Seven Sisters (major oil companies) signed an agreement, outlined in an oil cartel memo: Fuck the Arabs out of their oil, ship it on Onassis's ships; Rockefeller and the Seven Sisters to get rich. All this was done. (2),(3),(4),(5)

Roberts, studying journalism and physics at the University of Wisconsin, learned these things via personal contacts. His special interest was in crystallography—and the creation of synthetic rubies, the original Gemstone experiment.

1936-1940: Eugene Meyer buys the *Washington Post*, to get control of news media. Other Mafia buy other papers, broadcasting, T.V., etc. News censorship of all major news goes into effect.

1941-1945: World War II; very profitable for Onassis, Rockefeller, Kennedys, Roosevelts, I.G. Farben, etc., etc. Onassis selling oil, arms and dope to both sides went through the war without losing a single ship or man.

1949: Onassis buys U.S. war surplus "Liberty Ships" in questionable (illegal) puchase. Lawyer Burke Marshall helps him.

1956: Howard Hughes, Texas millionaire, is meanwhile buying his way toward control of the U.S. electoral process with a view toward his own personal gain. He buys senators, governors, etc. He finally buys his last politician: newly elected V.P. Nixon, via a quarter-million-dollar non-repayable loan to Nixon's brother, Donald. (6)

Early 1957: V.P. Nixon repays the favor by having IRS-Treasury grant tax-free status (refused twice before) to "Hughes Medical Foundation" (7), sole owner of Hughes Aircraft, creating a tax-free, non-accountable money funnel or laundry, for whatever Hughes wanted to do. U.S. government also shelved anti-trust suits against Hughes's TWA, etc.

March 1957: Onassis carried out a carefully planned event: he has Hughes kidnapped from his bungalow at the Beverly Hills Hotel, using Hughes's own men (Chester Davis, born Cesare in Sicily, et al). (8) Hughes's men either quit, get fired, or stay on in the new Onassis organization. A few days later, Mayor Cannon of Nevada (now Senator Cannon) arranges a fake "marriage" to Jean Peters to explain Hughes's sudden loss of interest in chasing movie stars. Hughes, battered and brain-damaged in the scuffle, is taken to the Emerald Isle Hotel in the Bahamas, where the entire top floor has been rented for the "Hughes party;" there he is shot full of heroin for thirty days, and later dragged off to a cell on Onassis's island, Skorpios. (9), (10) Onassis now has a much larger power base in the U.S. (the Hughes empire), as well as control over V.P. Nixon and other Hughes purchased politicians. L. Wayne Rector "Hughes" double since 1955, becomes "Hughes".

September 1957: Onassis calls the Appalachin meeting to announce to U.S. Mafia heads his grab of Hughes and his adoption of Hughes's game plan for acquiring power: buying U.S. senators, congressmen, governors, judges, en masse, to take control "legally" of the U.S. government. Onassis's radio message to Appalachin from a remote Pennsylvania farmhouse is intercepted (reluctantly) by FBI's J. Edgar Hoover, on the basis of a tip-off from some Army intelligence guys who weren't in on the plan.

Also in 1957: Joseph Kennedy takes John F. and Jackie to see Onassis on his yacht, introduce John, and remind Onassis of an old Mafia promise: the presidency for a Kennedy. Onassis agrees.

1958: Hordes of Mafia-selected, purchased and supported "grass roots" candidates sweep into office.

1959: Castro takes over Cuba from dictator Battista, thereby destroying the cozy and lucrative Mafia gambling empire run for Onassis by Meyer Lansky. Castro scoops up $8 million in Mafia casino receipts. Onassis is furious, V.P. Nixon becomes operations chief for CIA-planned Bay of Pigs invasion, using CIA Hunt, McCord, etc., and Cuban ex-Battista strong-arm cops ("Cuban freedom fighters") Martinez, Gonzalez, etc., as well as winners like Frank Sturgis (Fiorini).

1959: Stirring election battle between Kennedy and Nixon. Either way Onassis wins, since he has control over both candidates.

1960: JFK elected. American people happy. Rose Kennedy happy. Onassis happy. Mafia ecstatic.

Roberts brings his synthetic rubies—the original "Gemstones" to Hughes Aircraft in Los Angeles. They steal his rubies—the basis for laser beam research, laser bombs, etc., because of the optical quality of the rubies. One of the eleven possible sources for one of the ingredients involved in the Gemstone experiment was the Golden Triangle area. Roberts was married to the daughter of the former French consul in Indochina. In that area Onassis's involvements in the Golden Triangle dope trade was no secret. Roberts's investigation revealed the Onassis-Hughes connection, kidnap, and switch.

"Gemstones"—synthetic rubies, and sapphires with accompanying "histories"—gemstone papers—were sold or given away to consular officials—in return for information. A worldwide information network was gradually developed—a trade of the intelligence activities of many countries. This intelligence network is the source for much of the information in the Gemstone File.

January 1961: Joseph Kennedy had a stroke, ending his control over John and Bobby. The boys decide to rebel against Onassis's control. Why? Inter-Mafia struggle? Perhaps a dim hope of restoring this country to its mythical integrity?

They began committing Mafia no-no's. Arrested Wally Bird, owner of Air Thailand, who had been shipping Onassis's heroin out of the Golden Triangle (Laos, Cambodia, Vietnam), under contract with the CIA (Air Opium); arrested Teamster Mafia Jimmy Hoffa, and put him in jail. Declared the $73 million in forged "Hughes" land liens, deposited with S.F.'s Bank of America, as "security" for the TWA judgement against Hughes, to be what they are: forgeries.

April 1961: CIA Bay of Pigs fiasco. Hunt, McCord, CIA, Battista's Cubans and Mafia angry about JFK's lack of enthusiasm. Mafia Onassis has his U.S. right-hand man, "Hughes's top aide", former FBI and CIA Robert Maheu (nicknamed "IBM," for Iron Bob Maheu), hire and train a Mafia assassination team to get Castro. The team of a dozen or so includes John Roselli and Jimmy (The Weasel) Frattiano (11), expert Mafia hitmen, assisted by CIA Hunt and McCord and others. This was reported recently by Jack Anderson, who gets a lot of his "tips" from his friend, Frank (Fiorini) Sturgis—also on the Castro assassination team. The team tries five times to kill Castro, with everything from long-range rifles to apple pie with sodium morphate in it. Castro survives.

1963: Members of the Castro assassination team arrested at Lake Pontchartrain, La., by Bobby Kennedy's Justice boys (12). Angered, Onassis stops trying to kill Castro. He changes targets, and goes for the head: JFK, who, according to Onassis, "welched" on a Mafia deal.

JFK sets up "Group of 40" to fight Onassis.

August 1963: Two murders had to occur before the murder of JFK, or people would understand the situation and might squawk:

Senator Estes Kefauver, whose Crime Commission investigations had uncovered the 1932 deal between Onassis, Kennedy, Eugene Meyer, Lansky, Roosevelt, et al. Kefauver planned a speech on the Senate floor denouncing Mafia operations; instead, he ate a piece of apple pie laced with sodium morphate (used in rat poison), and had a sodium-morphate-induced "heart attack" on the Senate floor. (13)

Phillip Graham, editor of the *Washington Post*. Phillip had married Katherine Meyer, Eugene Meyer's daughter, who had inherited the *Washington Post* and allied media empire. Graham put together the Kennedy-Johnson ticket and was Kennedy's friend in the struggle with Onassis. According to Gemstone, Katherine Meyer Graham bribed some psychiatrists to certify that Phil was insane. He was allowed out of the nuthouse for the weekend and died of a shotgun wound in the head, in the Graham home in Washington; death ruled "suicide."

November 1, 1963: The hit on JFK was supposed to take place in true Mafia style: a triple execution, together with

Diem and Nhu in Vietnam. Diem and Nhu got theirs, as scheduled. Onassis had invited Jackie for a cruise on the *Cristina*, where she was when JFK got tipped off that big O planned to wipe him out. (14) JFK called Jackie on the yacht, from the White House, hysterical: "Get off that yacht if you have to swim," and cancelled appearance at a football stadium in Chicago, where the CIA-Mafia assassination team was poised for the kill. (15) Jackie stayed on board, descended the gangplank a few days later on Onassis's arm, in Turkey, to impress the Turkish Bey, Mustapha. Madame Nhu, in the United States bitterly remarked "Whatever has happened in Vietnam?"

One of the assassination team (Tom Mallee, a double for Oswald) was picked up in Chicago, with a rifle, and quickly released by the police.

Three weeks later the Mafia's alternate and carefully arranged execution plan went into effect: JFK was assassinated at Dallas. A witness who recognized pictures of *some of the people arrested at Dealey Plaza* as having been in Chicago three weeks earlier, told Black Panthers Hampton and Clark.

The JFK murder: Onassis-"Hughes's" man Robert Maheu, reassigned the Mafia-CIA Castro assassination team to the murder of JFK, adding Eugene Brading, a third Mafia hitman from the Denver Mafia Smaldones "family". Two months earlier, Brading, on parole after a series of crimes, applied for a new driver's license, explaining to the California DMV that he had decided to change his name—to "Jim Braden." Brading got his California parole officer's permission for two trips to Dallas, in November on "oil business"—the first time to look things over; and the second time when JFK was scheduled for his Dallas trip.

Lee Harvey Oswald, CIA, with carefully planted links to both the ultra-right and to the Communists, was designated as the patsy. He was supposed to shoot Gov. Connally, and he did.

Each of the four shooters—Oswald, Brading, Frattiano, and Roselli—had a timer and a back-up man. Back-up men were supposed to pick up the spent shells, and get rid of the guns. Timers would give the signal to shoot. Hunt and McCord were there to help. (16) Sturgis was in Miami. (17), (18) Frattiano shot from a second story window in the Dal-Tex building, across the street from the Texas Book Depository. He apparently used a handgun; he is an excellent shot with a pistol. Frattiano hit Kennedy twice, in the back and in the head. Frattiano and his back-up man were "arrested," driven away from the Dal-Tex building in a police car, and released (without being booked). (The Dallas police office is in the Dal-Tex building).

Roselli shot Kennedy once, hitting the right side of his head and blowing his brains out, with a rifle, from behind a fence in the grassy knoll area. Roselli and his timer went down a manhole behind the fence and followed the sewer line away from Dealey Plaza.

The third point of the triangulated ambush was supplied by Eugene Brading, shooting from Kennedy's left, from a small pagoda at Dealey Plaza, across the street from the grassy knoll. (Brading missed, because Roselli's and Frattiano's shot had just hit Kennedy in the head from the right and the rear, nearly simultaneously). Brading's shot hit the curb and ricocheted off. Brading was photographed on the scene, stuffing his gun under his coat. He wore a big leather hat, its hatband marked with large conspicuous X's. (Police had been instructed to let anyone with an X-marked hatband through the police lines; some may have been told they were Secret Service). After his shot, Brading ditched his gun with his back-up man and walked up the street toward the Dal-Tex building. Roger Craig, a deputy sheriff, rushed up to Brading, assuming he was "Secret Service," and told him he had just seen a man come out of the Book Depository and jump into a station wagon. Brading was uninterested. Brading walked into the Dal-Tex building to "make a phone call." There he was arrested by another deputy sheriff, showed his "Jim Braden" driver's license, and was released—without being booked.

Oswald shot Connally twice from the Texas Book Depository. He split from the front door. His back-up man was supposed to take the rifle out of the building (or so Oswald thought); instead he "hid" it behind some boxes, where it would be found later.

Three men dressed as "tramps" picked up the spent shells from Dealey Plaza. One was Howard Hunt. Then they drifted over to an empty boxcar sitting on a railway spur behind the grassy knoll area, and waited. A Dallas police officer ordered two Dallas cops to "go over to the boxcar and pick up the tramps." The three "tramps" paraded around Dealey Plaza to the Police Department, in the Dal-Tex building. They were held there until the alarm went out to pick up Oswald; then they were released, without being booked. In all, ten men were arrested immediately after the shooting; all were released soon after; none were booked; not a word about their existence is mentioned in the *Warren Report.*

Regarding Lee Harvey Oswald: Officer Tippitt was dispatched in his police radio car to the Oak Cliff Section, where Oswald had rented a room. Tippitt may have met Oswald on the street. He may have been supposed to kill Oswald, but something went wrong. Tippitt was shot by two men, using two revolvers. The "witness", Domingo Benavides, who used Tippitt's police car radio to report "we've had a shooting here," may have been one of the men who shot him. (A "Domingo Benavides" appears in connection with the Martin Luther King shooting, also).

Oswald went to the movies. A "shoe store manager" told the theatre cashier that a suspicious-looking man had sneaked in without paying. Fifteen assorted cops and FBI charged out to the movie theatre to look for the guy who had sneaked in.

Oswald had a pistol that wouldn't fire. It may have been anticipated that the police would shoot the "cop-killer" for "resisting arrest". But since that didn't happen, the Dallas police brought Oswald out for small-time Mafia Jack Ruby to kill two days later. (19)

Brading stayed at the Teamster-Mafia-Hoffa financed "Cabana Hotel" in Dallas. Ruby had gone to the Cabana the night before the murder, says the *Warren Report.*

The rest, as they say, is history. Onassis was so confident of his control over the police, media, FBI, CIA, Secret Service, and the U.S. judicial system that he had JFK murdered before the eyes of the entire nation; then systematically bought off, killed off, or frightened off all witnesses, and had the evidence destroyed; then put a 75-year seal of secrecy over the entire matter. Cover-up participants included (among many): Gerald Ford on the Warren Commission (a Nixon recommendation); CIA attorney Leon Jaworski, of the CIA-front Anderson Foundation, representing Texas before the Commission to see that the fair name of Texas was not besmirched by the investigation; CIA-Dallas Chief John McCone; his assistant, Richard Helms; and a passle of police, FBI, news media, etc.

WHERE ARE THEY NOW?

Johnny Poselli received part of his pay-off for the head shot on JFK in the form of a $250,000 "finders's fee" for bringing "Hughes" (Onassis) to Las Vegas in 1967.

Jimmy Frattiano's pay-off included $109,000 in "non-repayable loans" from the S.F. National Bank. (President: Joe Alioto). Credit authorization for the series of loans from 1961-1965 came from Joe Alioto and a high Teamster official. Dun and Bradstreet noted this transaction in amazement, listing the loans in their 1964-1965 monthly reports, and wondering how Frattiano could obtain so much "credit" as his only known title (listed in D&B) was "Mafia Executioner". Frattiano went around for years bragging about it: "Hi, there, I'm Jimmy Frattiano, Mafia Executioner..." A bank VP told the whole story to the California Crime Commission, where Al Harris heard it, and it was hidden in a file folder there. Al Harris, who later shot his mouth off a little too much, "heart attacked".

When last seen (March, 1975), Frattiano was testifying before an SF Grand Jury in regard to his participation, with East Coast Mafia Tony Romano, in the Sunol Golf Course swindle (which cost SF somewhere between $100,000 and $500,000), with the active help of Mayor Joe Alioto.

In between, Frattiano used his $109,000 in "non-repayable loans" to start a trucking company in the Imperial Valley, where he engaged in a lot more swindling—involving U.S. Government construction contracts. As one California Crime Commission member explained, "The Mafia is doing business directly with the U.S. Government now."

Brading was questioned by the FBI two months after his arrest—and release—at Dallas—as part of the Warren Commission's determination to "leave no stone unturned" in its quest for the truth about the JFK assassination. In spite of the fact that Brading was a known criminal with an arrest record dating back about twenty years, the FBI reported that Brading knew nothing whatsoever about the assassination.

Brading became a charter member of the La Costa Country Club, Mafia heaven down near San Clemente. He also became a runner for the skim money from the Onassis-"Hughes" Las Vegas casinos to Onassis's Swiss banks.

Gerald Ford, of the Warren Commission, went on to become President—by appointment of Nixon, then in danger of even further and more serious exposure—from which position the trust Ford pardoned Nixon one month later, for "any and all crimes he may have committed." That covers quite a lot—but Ford is good at covering things up. (20)

McCone, the head of CIA-Dallas, went on to become a member of the ITT Board of Directors—sitting right next to Francis L. Dale, the head of CREEP.

Richard Helms, McCone's assistant at Dallas, ultimately was rewarded with the post of CIA Director. Leon Jaworski, CIA attorney, became the Watergate Prosecutor, replacing Cox, who was getting too warm. Jaworski turned in a sterling performance in our "government-as-theatre"—the honest, conscientious investigator who "uncovered" not a bit more than he had to—and managed to steer everybody away from the underlying truth.

Dr. "Red" Duke, the man who dug two bullets out of Connally and saved his life, was shipped off to a hospital in Afghanistan by a grateful CIA.

Jim Garrison, New Orleans DA who tried to get Eugene Brading out of L.A. (but used one of Brading's other aliases, Eugene Bradley, by mistake), had his witnesses shot out from under him, and was framed on charges of bribery and extortion. FBI officers "confiscated" photos of Brading taken on the scene, etc.

FBI officers "confiscated" photos of Brading taken on the scene.

Et cetera.

After JFK's death, Onassis quickly established control over Lyndon Johnson through fear. On the trip back to Washington, Johnson was warned by radio, relayed from an air force base: "There was *no conspiracy*. Oswald was *a lone nut assassin*. Get it, Lyndon? Otherwise, Air Force 1 might have an unfortunate accident on flight back to Washington."

Onassis filled all important government posts with his own men. All government agencies became means to accomplish an end: rifle the American treasury, steal as much as possible, keep the people confused and disorganized and leaderless; persue world domination. JFK's original "Group of 40" was turned over to Rockefeller and his man, Kissinger, so that they could more effectively fuck over South America. (Onassis was one of the first to console Jackie when she got back from Dallas with JFK's body). Silva, a S.F. private detective hired by Angelina Alioto to get the goods on philandering Joe, followed Joe Alioto to Vacaville, to the Nut Tree Restaurant, where Joe held a private meeting with other Mafioso to arrange the details of the JFK-assassination pay-off to Frattiano.

1967: Onassis has always enjoyed the fast piles of money to be made through gambling (in Monaco, and in Cuba under Battista.) (21) Onassis took over Las Vegas in 1967, via the "Hughes" cover. U.S. Government officials explained that it was alright because "at least Hughes isn't the Mafia." (ha ha.) (22) Note: L. Wayne Rector was hired around 1955 by Carl Byoir PR Agency (Hughes's L.A. PR firm), to act as Hughes's double. (23) In 1957, when Onassis grabbed Hughes, Rector continued to act as his stand-in. Rector was the Hughes surrogate in Las Vegas; Robert Maheu actually ran the show; Maheu got his orders from Onassis; (24) the six "nursemaids," called "The Mormon Mafia", kept Rector sealed off from prying eyes.

June 17, 1968: (25) Bobby Kennedy knew who killed his brother; he wrote about it in his unpublished book, *The Enemy Within.* (26), (27) When he foolishly tried to run for President, Onassis had him offed, using a sophisticated new technique: hypnotized Sirhan Sirhan shooting from the front, "security guard" (from Lockheed Aircraft) Thane Cesar shooting from two or three inches away from Bobby's head—from the rear. Sirhan's shots all missed; Cesar's couldn't possibly miss. Evelle Younger, then the L.A. D.A., covered it all up, including the squawks of L.A. Coroner Thomas Noguchi. Younger was rewarded with the post of California Attorney General later. His son, Eric Younger, got a second generation

Mafia reward: a judge-ship at age 30. (See Ted Charach, L.A., author and director, *The Second Gun*, a documentary film on the RFK murder, bought and suppressed by Warner Brothers, for more details.) (28)

After Bobby's death, Teddy knew who did it. He ran to Onassis, afraid for his life, and swore eternal obedience. In return, Onassis granted him his life and said he could be President, too, just like his big brother, if he would just behave himself and follow orders.

September 16, 1968: Hit and run accident on Robert's car, parked in front of the Russian consulate in S.F.—who routinely take pictures of everything that goes on in front of the consulate. Their photos showed the license plate of the hit-and-run car: UKT-264, on a blue Cadillac belonging to Mia Angela Alioto, Joe's daughter, being driven by Tom Alioto, Joe's son—whose driving license had been revoked. His license, and the car's license, were both fraudulent. To cover up the hit-and-run circumstances, S.F. MP's from the Presidio quickly staged a few more hit-and-runs on the same corner—all duly filmed by the Russians. Kathryn Hollister, the Alioto family nurse, was "persuaded" to take the rap for the hit-and-run. Roberts threatened to spill the whole story—in court—with photos.

Next evening Brading and Frattiano showed up in the Black Magic Bar—Brading wearing his X-marked hat from Dallas—to see whether Roberts recognized it, how much he knew, etc. A S.F. MP from the Presidio piped up from the end of the bar: "I heard they let everyone with an X-marked hat through the police lines in Dallas."

Cover-up support for Alioto in the hit-and-run was complete.

Mafia Joe Alioto had Presidential ambitions, shored up by his participation in the Dallas payoff. Everyone who helped kill JFK got a piece of the U.S. pie. But J. Edgar Hoover, FBI head, blew his cover by releasing some of the raw FBI files on Alioto at the Democratic National Convention. Joe was out of the running for V.P., and Humphrey had to settle for Muskie. Humphrey planned to come to S.F. for a final pre-election rally, sparked by Joe Alioto; Roberts threatened to blow the hit-run story, plus its Mafia ramifications open if Humphrey came to S.F. Humphrey didn't come; Humphrey lost San Francisco, California, and the election.

October 1968: Jackie Kennedy was now "free" to marry Onassis. An old Mafia rule: if someone welches on a deal, kill him, and take his gun and his girl: in this case, Jackie and the Pentagon.

July 1969: Mary Jo Kopechne, devoted JFK girl, and later one of Bobby's trusted aides, was in charge of packing up his files after his assassination in L.A. She read too much—learned about the Kennedy Mafia involvement, and other things. She said to friends: This isn't Camelot, this is murder. She was an idealistic American Catholic. She didn't like murdering hypocrites. She died trying to get off Chappaquiddick Island, where she had overheard (along with everyone else in the cottage) Teddy Kennedy's end of the D.H. Lawrence cottage telephone calls from John Tunney and to Joe Alioto, and Democratic bigwigs Swig, Shorenstein, Schumann, and Bechtel. Teddy's good friend John Tunney called to complain that Alioto's friend Cyril Magnin (29) and others had tried to bribe Jess Unruh to switch from the Governor's race to run for the Senate—for the seat John Tunney wanted—so that Alioto would have an easier run for Governor. Teddy called Alioto, who told him to go to hell; then Teddy called the rest to arrange for yet another Mafia murder. Mary Jo, up to there with Mafia shit, ran screaming out of the cottage on her way to Nader. Drunken Teddy offered to drive her to the ferry. Trying to get away from curious Sheriff Lock, Teddy sped off toward the Bridge, busted Mary Jo's nose when she tried to grab his arm from the back seat, and bailed out of the car as it went off the bridge. (30) Mary Jo, with a busted nose, breathed in an air bubble in the car for more than two hours, waiting for help, while Teddy, assuming she was dead, ran to set up an alibi. Mary Jo finally suffocated in the air bubble, diluted with carbon dioxide from her exhalations. It took her 2 hours and 37 minutes to suffocate, while Teddy had Joseph Kennedy, III, steal a boat and ferry him across to Edgartown. Mary Jo was still pounding on the upturned floorboards of Teddy's car while Teddy called Jackie and Onassis on the Christina. Teddy also called Katherine Meyer Graham, lawyers, etc. Jackie called the Pope on Teddy's behalf, who assigned Cardinal Cushing to help. The next morning, the first person Teddy tried to call after deciding he'd have to take the rap himself was: Lawyer Burke Marshall, Onassis's friend in the U.S. Liberty ships deal back in the forties; and also, the designated custodian for JFK's brains after Dallas (the brains have since disappeared.) (31), (32)

Cover-up of the Chappaquiddick murder required the help of: Massachusetts Highway Patrol, which "confiscated" the plates from Teddy's car after it was fished out of the pond; the Massachusetts Legislature, which changed a 150-year-old law *requiring an autopsy* (which would have revealed the suffocation and broken nose); Coroner Mills, who let Kennedy's aide, K. Dun Gifford, supply him with a death certificate, already prepared, for Hill's signature, listing cause of death as drowning; Police Chief Arenas; Cardinal Cushing's priests, who appeared before the Kopechne's "direct from God," with personal instructions from Him that Mary Jo was not to be disturbed; a Pennsylvania mortuary where Mary Jo's broken nose was patched up; East and West Coast phone companies, which clamped maximum security on the records of calls to and from the cottage (S.F. Police Chief Cahill was reassigned to a new job; Security Chief for Pacific Telephone); The U.S. Senate, who never said a word about Teddy's (required equipment) plug-in phone; the judge who presided over the mock hearing; James Reston, editor of Martha's Vineyard's only newspaper, who never heard a word about Teddy's phone at the cottage, though residents called in to tell the newspaper; the *New York Times, Washington Post*, etc., etc., etc.

John Tunney's sister, Joan, heard her brother's end of the phone call, made from her house in Tiburon, to the Chappaquiddick cottage. The next day, after Mary Jo died, Joan ran away to Norway, where she was kidnapped by Mafia hoods Mari and Adamo. They locked her up in a Marseilles heroin factory for 60 days, where the heroin fumes turned her into a junkie (no needle marks); then they turned her loose outside the factory. Joan's husband complained, so she chopped his head off with an ax, and was subsequently locked up in a nuthouse belonging to the Marquess of Blandford, then Tina Livanos Onassis's husband.

Mari and Adamo got pressed into scrap metal in a New Jersey auto junkyard.

In the panic of trying to cover up Teddy's guilt at Chappaquiddick, many things came unglued. The JFK murder threatened to creep out of the woodwork again; Black Panthers Hampton and Clark were murdered (the Chicago cops fired over Attorney Charles Garry's [illegible] because of what they knew about the JFK murder squad's presence at Chicago on Nov. 1, 1963).

September 1969: "Gemstones," with histories, had been released around the globe for several years. In 1969, Roberts gave a Gemstone, with history, to Mack, head of California CREEP, for Nixon, with the proposition: the Presidency, in return for wiping out the Mafia. The "history" included Teddy's phone calls to, and from, the Lawrence Cottage on Chappaquiddick—billed to Teddy's home phone in Hyannisport. Nixon, being Mafia himself, wasn't interested, but kept the information to use later.

May 4, 1970: Charlotte Ford Niarchos called her ex-husband, Stavros, worried about the Ford Foundations's involvement in the Chappaquiddick cover-up. Eugenie Livanos Niarchos, in bed with her husband, overheard the conversation. Stavros was forced to beat her to death; he ruptured her spleen and broke the cartilage in her throat. Cause of her death was listed as "overdose of barbiturates," though autopsy showed these injuries. (33)

End of 1970: Howard Hughes's presence on Earth was no longer required. His handwriting could be duplicated by a computer. (34) His biography—all the known facts about his life—had been compiled and a computerized biography issued to top Hughes execs. His double—Rector—had been doing "Hughes" for years. And Hughes was ill.

Clifford Irving, author of Hoax, about an art forger, became interested in "Hughes". Living on Ibizza, he heard the Mediterranean gossip that "Hughes" was a hoax, too. He went to "Hughes's" so-called "Mormon Mafia," the six "nursemaids"—for information. One of them—Merryman—perhaps tired of the game—gave Irving the computerized Hughes biography and from it, Irving wrote his "autobiography".

Hughes's death was expected shortly. Preparations were being made so that it would not interfere with the orderly continuation of his empire.

Irving wrote his book—and the publishers announced it. Onassis knew someone had given Irving the information. He thought it was Maheu, and fired him in November, 1970. On Thanksgiving Eve, 1970, in the middle of the night, "Hughes" (Rector) made a well-publicized "secret departure" from Las Vegas to the Bahamas.

December 1970: Onassis discovered his mistake—and had Merryman killed.

Robert Maheu, accidentally deprived of his half-million dollars annual salary, sued "Hughes" for millions—mentioning "Hughes's" game plan for the purchase of Presidents, senators, judges, etc. Onassis paid off—cheap at the price—to maintain his custodianship of "American democracy" and the "free world"—and keep from hanging for multiple murders.

The "Hughes" Mormon Mafia party, plus Rector, fled around the world—from the Bahamas, where they murdered an uncooperative Governor and Police Chief, to Nicaragua, where they shot the U.S. Ambassador between the eyes for noticing that there wasn't really any Hughes; and thence to Canada, where Mormon Mafia nursemaid Eckersley looted a goodly sum in a swindle of the Canadian Stock Exchange; and on to London to Rothschild's Inn of the Park.

April 18, 1971: Howard Hughes, a human vegetable as a result of serious brain damage during his 1957 hustle, plus fourteen years of heroin, grew sicker and sicker. A final overdose of heroin did him in. His coffin was lowered into the sea from a rocky headland off the coast of Skorpios. Present at the funeral were: Jackie Kennedy Onassis; Teddy Kennedy; Francis L. Dale, Director of CREEP, and an ITT Board of Directors; Tom Pappas, also CREEP; and a South Vietnamese cardinal named Thue. Onassis allowed some pictures to be taken from a distance; he himself did not appear. The pictures were published in Midnight, a Canadian tabloid. (35), (36), (37)

Albanian frogmen, tipped off, were waiting under the water. They seized the coffin and took the corpse off to Yugoslavia, thence to China and Russia, and then, perhaps to Boston, in a foot locker. The corpse's dental work was compared to Hughes's very own dental records, and they matched (38). News of Hughes's death, the U.S. take-over by Onassis, and the facts surrounding the murders of JFK, RFK, Martin Luther King, Mary Jo Kopechne, and many more, and the subsequent cover-ups (involving still more murders) has been circulating around the globe for several years. Any country with this information can blackmail the U.S. Mafia government, which has no choice but to pay up. The alternative: be exposed as a bunch of treasonous murderers. This is why China-hating red-baiting Nixon was forced to "recognize" China (which he now claims as his greatest accomplishment); and why the U.S.S.R. walks off with such good deals in U.S. loans, grains, and whatever else it wants. All they have to do is mention those magic words: "Hughes", JFK, RFK, MLK, Mary Jo—words to conjure by—and the U.S. Mafia government crawls into a hole. Information once leaked can't be unleaked. The only way to end the dilemma is through a nuclear war and that wouldn't be one-sided. The other way would be to throw the Mafia out of the United States. Starting at the top—with Ford, Rockefeller and Kissinger. Super-patriots, please note: No one—not all the radicals and subversives hounded by the U.S. domestic intelligence—put together—has done one fraction of the damage done to the U.S. economy, morality, power and prestige, by the thieves at the top.

On the day Hughes was buried, Clifford Irving's wife presented a publisher's check made out to "H. Hughes" to Onassis' Swiss Bank, for payment. Onassis paid off—cheap at the price.

"Gemstone" papers rolling around the world, here and abroad, kept the situation hot. Everyone was nervous. Rockefeller gave Kissinger $50,000 for Carlson and Brisson to write their "expose", "The Alioto Mafia Web" for *Look*. Their mission: find out everything that was public record about Alioto's connection with the JFK murder (His pay-offs to Frattiano, listed in D&B)—and explain it away—in any way that didn't lead back to Dallas. The idea was to get Alioto to quietly go away but still keep the lid on everything.

May 1971: Tina Livanos Onassis married Stavros Niarchos, her former brother-in-law—until he killed her sister, Eugenie.

May 1971: "Folk hero" Daniel Ellsberg, a well-known hawk from the Rand Corp., who had designed the missile ring around the Iron Curtain countries (how many missiles to aim at which cities), was told to release the faked-up "Pentagon Papers," to help distract people from Hughes, JFK, RFK, MLK, etc. The papers were carefully designed by Ellsberg and his boss, Rand Chief and new World Bank Chief Bob ("Body Count") McNamara, to make the Vietnamese War look like "just one of those incredibly dumb mistakes". This helped to cover up the real purposes of the war: Continued control, for Onassis and his friends, of the Golden Triangle dope trade (Vietnam, Laos, and Cambodia); (39) and for Onassis and the oil people, of Eastern oil sources. To say nothing of control over huge Federal sums, which could be siphoned off in profitable arms contracts, or conveniently "disappear" in the war effort.

McNamara's "World Bank"—handing out American money to "starving nations"—actually set up huge private bank accounts for various dictators in the Onassis-controlled Swiss banks. The money could be used as needed to support and extend Mafia operations. Example: $8 billion in World Bank funds for "starving Ethiopians" wound up in Emperor Haile Selassie's personal Swiss bank accounts. This would make him the richest individual in the world—but other dictators have Swiss accounts, too. Maybe even larger. The money drained from America and other captive Mafia nations to feed a greed that can never be satisfied.

(Rand Corp., one of our major "think tanks" has another goody in store for the public: "Project Star," Rand's cover-up fall-back version of the JFK murder—held in reserve should public restlessness over the *Warren Commission Report* cover-up ever threaten to get out of hand. That ought to confuse the people for at least another twelve years, and by that time most of us will be dead, anyway....)

Note in Passing: The dope trade routes are: Golden Triangle to Taiwan to San Francisco. Heroin from the Golden Triangle was sometimes smuggled into S.F. in the bodies of American G.I.'s who died in battle in Vietnam. One body can hold up to 40 pounds of heroin, crammed in where the guts would be.

Some dope gets pressed into dinner plates, and painted with pretty patterns. One dope bust in S.F. alone yielded $6 billion in heroin "china plates"—the largest dope bust in history—quickly and completely hushed up by the S.F. press Mafia. The dope sat in the S.F.P.D. for a while, then was removed by FBI men and probably sent on its way—to American veins. All of this dope processing and shipping is controlled and supervised by the Mafia, for the Mafia. Dope arrests and murders are aimed at independent pushers and maverick peddlers and smugglers who are competing with, or holding out on, the Mafia. While Nixon was conducting his noisy campaign against dope smuggling across the Mexican border, his dope officer *in charge of protecting the Mafia dope trade* was E. Howard Hunt.

Lots of heroin gets processed in a Pepsi Cola factory in Laos. So far, it hasn't produced a single bottle of Pepsi Cola.

Some dope gets processed in heroin factories in Marseilles (see *The French Connection*).

Still more dope comes from South America—cocaine, and now heroin. U.S. Aid went to build a highway across Paraguay (Uraguay?). Useless for the natives, who have no cars; they use it for sunbathing in the day. All night, airplanes loaded with cocaine take off from the longest landing strip in the world—financed by U.S. tax money for the benefit of international Mafia dope pushers.

And then there is opium from Turkey—morphine. This was the starting point of Onassis' fortune.

In case one is still wondering whether the Mafia can actually get away with such things, consider the benefits derived from controlling the stock market, the courts, the police, etc., in one swindle alone: the 1970 acquisition by "Hughes" of "Air West", which involved swindling Air West stockholders of *$45 million*. Recently indicted for that swindle by the S.E.C.

(in a *civil suit*) were "Howard Hughes" and Jimmy (the Greek) Snyder, "not usually associated with the Hughes crowd," and others.

June, 1971: *New York Times* began publishing the Pentagon Papers, Rand Corp.'s prepared cover-up of the real reasons for the Vietnamese War.

Nixon had gotten a copy of the first Gemstone Papers, circulated in the U.S. back in 1969. He was now wondering how much information Democratic chairman Larry O'Brian had about Hughes, Onassis, JFK, RFK, et al., and more specifically, how much of the dirt the Democrats planned to use.

Nixon set up the "plumber's unit" to "stop security leaks, investigate other security matters." Ehrlichman, Krogh, Liddy, Hunt, Young, etc. Hunt as "White House consultant" supposedly worked for the Mullen Corp.—a CIA cover. Mullen's chief client was "Howard Hughes". Robert Bennett was the head of the Mullen Corp.

June 28, 1971: Ellsberg indicted for leaking the Pentagon Papers.

September 3, 1971: The Watergate team broke into Ellsberg's doctor's (Fielding's) office to get Ellsberg's psychiatric records. Team members: CIA Hunt and Liddy; Cuban "Freedom Fighters" De Diego, Martinez, Bernard Barker. All except Liddy had worked together back at the Bay of Pigs.

Question: Why the intense battle between Mafia forces? Answer: While Onassis was the recognized crowned head of the Mafia, intense, no holds barred scuffling for the lucrative second spot (control of U.S. presidency, government, and so on) was permissable and encouraged under the Mafia code of rules. The only stipulation: outsiders mustn't know about it. "Hughes" contributed liberally—and equally—to both Democratic and Republican parties for the 1972 election. The winner would get even more money from "Hughes".

September 23, 1971: E. Howard Hunt spliced up the phony cables implicating JFK's administration in the Diem assassination.

October 1971: *Look* magazine apologized to Alioto for their "Alioto Mafia Web" article—and folded. The sticking point: they couldn't *prove* Alioto's Mafia Nut Tree meeting back in '63-re: the JFK murder.

November 1971: Alioto re-elected S.F. mayor.

December 1971: Roberts applied for a "Gemstone" visa from the Russian Consulate—on a tapped phone. Phone was tapped by Hal Lipset, S.F. private investigator, who worked for Katherine Meyer Graham, and others, and routinely monitored Consulate phone calls.

January, 1972: The Watergate team showed up at the S.F. Drift Inn, a CIA-FBI safe-house hangout bar, where Roberts conducted a nightly Gemstone rap, for the benefit of any CIA or FBI or anyone who wandered in for a beer. James McCord, Martinez, Bernard Baker, Garcia, and Frank Sturgis showed up—along with a San Francisco dentist named Fuller. James McCord remarked: "Sand and oil with hydrogen heat makes glass brick"—threat of war to Arab nations. The event, like the other nightly raps, was taped by the Drift Inn bartender, Al Strom, who was paid to do so by his old friend, Katherine Meyer Graham—but told his other friend, Roberts, about it. The bar was also wired for sound by Arabs, Russians and Chinese.

January 27, 1972: Liddy and Dean met in Mitchell's office, with Liddy's charts for his $1 million "plan" of spying, kidnapping, etc. The plans included breaking into Hank Greenspun's Las Vegas office safe, in hopes of recovering Greenspun's file on the Hughes kidnapping and Onassis' Vegas operations, which Greenspun had successfully used to blackmail Onassis out of $4 million or so. (40) A "Hughes" get-away plane would stand by to take the White House burglars to Mexico.

February, 1972: Liddy and Hunt travelled around a lot, using "Hughes Tool Co." calling cards, and aliases from Hunt's spy novels.

Liddy, Hunt and other Watergaters dropped by for a beer at the Drift Inn, where they were photographed on bar stools for Katherine Graham. These photos were later used in the *Washington Post*, when Liddy, Hunt, and the others were arrested at Watergate—because CIA men like Liddy and Hunt aren't usually photographed.

Roberts quoted to Liddy the "Chinese stock market in ears"—the price on Onassis' head—by the ear—in retaliation for a few things Onassis had done; on Wayne Rector, the Hughes double; Eugene Wyman, California Democratic Party Chairman and Mafia JFK pay-off bagman; and on Lyndon Johnson: "four bodies twisting in the breeze".

Roberts: "Quoting the prices to Liddy at the Drift Inn made their deaths a mortal cinch. Liddy's like that—and that's why the murdering slob was picked by the Mafia."

"Gemstones rolling around the Drift Inn in February inspired Liddy's 'Gemstone plan' that became Watergate." (41)

February, 1972: Francis L. Dale, head of CREEP and ITT Board of Directors member, pushed Magruder to push Liddy into Watergate.

In a Mafia-style effort to shut Roberts up, his father was murdered by "plumbers" team members Liz Dale (Francis L. Dale's ex-wife), Martinez, Gonzalez, Barker; in Hahnemann's hospital, S.F.— where Mr. Roberts had been taken after swallowing a sodium morphate "pill" slipped into his medicine bottle at home by Watergate locksmith (Miama's "Missing Link" locksmith shop) Gonzalez. The pill didn't kill him; he had a weak digestion, and vomited enough of the sodium morphate up (it burned his lips and tongue on the way out)—but he had emphysema, and went to the hospital. In the hospital, "nurse" Liz Dale and "doctor" Martinez assisted him to sniff a quadruple-strength can of aerosol medicine—enough to kill him the next day.

The day before, Tisseront, head of the College of Cardinals at the Vatican, was pushed out of a Vatican window. Tisseront had followed the career of the present Pope, Montini (whose mother was Jewish). Montini sodium-morphate-murdered Pope Pius XI; was banished from Rome for it by Pius XII; became Pope in 1963. (42), (43) Tisseront wrote it all down; called the Pope "The Deputy of Christ at Auschwitz," and the fulfillment of the Fatima 3 prophecy: that "The anti-Christ shall rise to become the head of the Church." Tisseront also wrote about all the suppressed secrets of the Roman Catholic Church: ie, that Jesus Christ was an Arab (44), born April 16, 6 BC, at the rare conjunction of Saturn and Jupiter. (45) Arab (Persian) astronomers (the Magi) came to Bethlehem to look for *their* king—an Arab baby—and found him in a stable, because the Jews wouldn't let Arabs Mary and Joseph into their nice clean inns, even then. (46) When Jesus overturned the tables of the moneylenders at the Temple, the Jews had the Romans nail him to a cross. (47) He died on the cross, when the Roman soldiers stuck a spear in his side, pulled out his liver, and ate it. (48), (49) Tacitus, the Roman historian, described it all—in a chunk of history deleted by the Church. (50), (51),(52) Nero burned Rome—but that didn't stop the spreading of Jesus's teachings by the early Christians (Arabs). (53) So the Romans decided to adopt the religion, clean it up, make Christ a Jew and Mary a virgin, and work out a church-state deal to fuck the people in the name of God and country that has been operating ever since. Around 300 AD—at the Council of Nicasa—the Christian Orthodoxy was established; a dissenting bishop had his hands chopped off, another bishop was assigned to round up all the old copies of the Bible and destroy them, in favor of the "revised", de-Arabized version. Cleaned up Matthew, Mark, Luke and John were declared "it"; the other Gospels were declared Apocryphal and heretical. (54), (55) Roman Emperor Constantine became the first "Christian" emperor. (56), (57)

Later—during the "Holy crusades"—the Bible was again rewritten—to include Jesus's warning against the "yellow race." (58)

"27 Gemstones, with histories, to 27 countries, brought Red China into the U.N. and threw Taiwan out."

April 1972: Money pours into CREEP: "Gulf Resources and Chemicals Corp., Houston, Texas" contributes $100,000; illegal, laundered through Mexico, comes back through Liedtke of Pennzoil Corp., Houston. (59) Robert Vesco gives Maurice Stans $200,000 "campaign contribution," etc., etc.

Liddy gives McCord $76,000; McCord buys $58,000 worth of bugging equipment, cameras, etc.

May 1972: J. Edgar Hoover had the Gemstone File; threatened to expose Dallas-JFK in an "anonymous" book, The Texas Mafia. Instead, someone put sodium morphate in his apple pie. The corpse was carted away from his home in the back seat of a VW—and his files were "burned"—but some of them got away.

May 28, 1972: First break-in at Watergate: McCord, Barker, Martinez, Garcia, Gonzalez, Sturgis. De Diego and Pico stood guard outside. Hunt and Liddy directed the operation from a (safe?) distance—across the street. The object was to check on Onassis's two men at Democratic Party HQ: Larry O'Brien and Spencer Oliver. (O'Brien's chief PR; client had been "Hughes"; Oliver's father worked for Onassis). McCord wiretapped their phones.

But!!! Little did McCord know that the Plumbers were being observed by Hal Lipset, Katherine Graham's S.F. detective who had followed two of the Plumbers from Liz Dale's side in S.F. to Watergate. Lipset "watched in amazement" as the Plumbers broke in and bugged the phones; then reported back to his boss, Katherine Graham. Lipset and Graham set the trap for the Watergaters when they returned to remove their bugs and equipment.

June 17, 1972: Bernard Barker was wearing his Sears, Roebuck deliveryman costume—the same one he wore at the Dr. Fielding break-in and at the Hahnemann's Hospital murder of Mr. Roberts.

Hal Lipset, Graham's spy, was dressed as a mailman. He left his mailsack behind when he taped the door at Watergate, watched security guard Frank Wills remove it and walk on; *retaped* the door, and as a result, Frank Wills went across the street and called the police, and McCord, Martinez, Sturgis, Barker and Gonzalez were caught in the act. (Graham had them on tape and film, too, every minute of the time.) Liddy and Hunt, across the street, supervising via walkie-talkie, were not. Liddy called Magruder in California re: the Watergate arrests. Magruder told Mitchell, LaRue and Mardian. (60)

Time to burn files. Liddy shredded the Gemstone files at CREEP.

Dean cleaned out Hunt's safe at the White House, and gave Hunt's copy of the Gemstone file to L. Patrick Gray, acting FBI head: "Deepsix this—in the interest of national security. This should never see the light of day." Gray burned the file.

June 20, 1972: DMC Chairman Larry O'Brien filed a $1 million suit against CREEP—naming Francis L. Dale, the head of CREEP. This was a big Mafia mistake—for Dale led directly back to Onassis.

June 21, 1972: *The 18-1/2 minutes of accidentally erased White House tape:* Nixon, furious over the Watergate Plumbers' arrests, couldn't figure out who had done it to him: *who had taped the door at Watergate that led to the arrests?* Hal Lipset, whose primary employer at the time was Katherine Graham, couldn't tell him. Nixon figured that it had to do somehow with Roberts's running around in Vancouver tracing the "Hughes" Mormon Mafia nursemaid's (Eckersley) Mafia swindle of the Canadian stock exchange; and Trudeau. The 18 1/2 minutes was of Nixon, raving about Canada, "asshole Trudeau", "asshole Roberts", Onassis, "Hughes" and Francis L. Dale. It simply couldn't be released.

Stephen Bull's secretary, Beverly Kaye, later heard the "erased" tape, stored in a locked room in the White House. She was horrified. She sent out some depressed Christmas cards and notes to friends, and sodium morphate "heart attacked" at age 40 in a White House elevator outside the locked safe room where the tapes were stored.

January 1973: Tisseront was dead—but as the Church rushed to destroy every copy of his papers, Roberts received one—and wrote a few of his own, released over New Years':

1. "The Cover-up of the Murder of Christ";
2. "The Yellow Race is not in China—The Yellow Race Dead-Fucks Mary Jo Kopechne"; (61), (62)

3. "Mrs. Giannini's Bank of America financed the murder of JFK at Dallas via Alioto's Frattiano, Brading and Roselli";

4. "Vietnam—Fatima 3—Holy Crusade."

"Four documents; four bodies twisting slowly in the breeze."

Lyndon Johnson: Sodium Morphate "heart attack" at his ranch on the Perdernales River. Among his last words: "You know, fellows, it really was a conspiracy..."

Alexander Onassis's plane crash at the "1000 foot Walter Reuther Level," via a fixed altimeter, at Athens airport.

Eugene Wyman, California Democratic Party Chairman, and JFK assassination pay-off bagman: heart attack.

L. Wayne Rector, Hughes double: killed at Rothschild's Inn on the Park, in London.

"Started the shattering of the Mafia economy."

March 18, 1973: Roberts called Hal Lipset, discussing all these matters publicly—over a tapped phone. Lipset reported to Dean, who had hired him away from Graham after they figured out who had taped the door at Watergate. (Mitchell: "Katie Graham's liable to get her tit caught in a wringer.")

March 19, 1973: Dean to Nixon, nervously: "There is a cancer growing on the Presidency."

March 21, 1973: Nixon said that on this date he "received new evidence on Watergate." Lipset later bragged on TV that he had been the one to bring the "new evidence" to Nixon. Meanwhile, back at the *Washington Post*, Katherine Meyer ("Deep Throat") Graham had been feeding Woodward and Bernstein information for their articles. (63)

May 10, 1973: (64) The first witness at the Watergate hearing, running down the names on the CREEP organizational chart, mentioned the name at the top: Francis L. Dale, Chairman. Dale was never mentioned again during the rest of the trial.

July 9, 1973: Roberts had used Al Strom's Drift Inn Bar as an "open lecture forum" for any and all—and Al Strom taped it, for his boss Katherine Graham. But "Al was fair"—

and told Roberts he was doing it—for which he was murdered on this date.

August 1973: Murder of Chile, by Group of 40: (Rockefeller and his man, Kissinger), working with the CIA and $8 million. Allende's Chile had nationalized ITT. Admiral Noel Gaylor (65), Naval Intelligence, told Roberts 1 1/2 years earlier that Chile would get it; Roberts warned the Chilean consul in advance: Allegria, now "teaching" at Stanford.

ITT has now exacted $125 million payment for its Chilean plants—a good return for their $8 million. Mafia-controlled Chile's annual inflation rate has set a world's record. In the style of the old Holy Roman Empire: a slave nation paying tribute to the conqueror.

October 1973: Another "Holy War"—Israelis vs. Arabs.

January 1974: Joe Alioto grants Sunol Golf Course lease to Mafioso Romano, Frattiano, Muniz, Madeiros, Abe Chapman, and Neil Neilson. Alioto sets up the Dallas murder squad in S.F. for more murders.

January 26, 1974: "Hughes" extradition trial cancelled in Reno, "Alioto Mafia Web" Mafia Judge Thomson, after Moses Lasky, from Mafia Alioto's California Crime Commission, waves the forged "Howard Hughes" signature under his nose. (66)

Maheu "wins" his damage suit against "Hughes"—his blackmail pay-off—after discussing Hughes's "game plan" for buying control of the U.S. by buying politicians: Governors, judges, senators, and presidents.

February 1974: Mafia Hearst's daughter Patty "kidnapped" by Lipset's SLA—in a fake terrorist action. (67)

Martin Luther King's mother was murdered by a black student, a self-declared "Israelite"—"acting alone," who was escorted to the church by somebody—and who had a list of other mothers as targets. (68) Next day, the target, Shirley Chisholm, got the message, and rushed to sign off on the DNC suit against CREEP, naming Francis L. Dale; she had been the last hold-out.

April 4, 1974: Mary McCarthy, a writer who had been given a copy of the Gemstone File, said in an article in the *New York Review of Books* that the key to the formation of Liddy's Gemstone plan lay in the where-abouts and activities of the Plumbers between December, 1971 and February, 1972. Answer: They were in the Drift Inn, watching Gemstones rolling around on the bar top.

August 6, 1974: Nixon and Ford signed a paper at the White House. It was an agreement: Ford could be President; Nixon got to burn his tapes and files, and murder anyone he needed to, to cover it all up.

August 7, 1974: Roberts passed information to Pavlov at the S.F. Russian consulate which led directly to Nixon's resignation: the "More" journalism story review's story about Denny Walsh's "Reopening of the Alioto Mafia Web" for the *New York Times,* killed in a panic; plus a long taped discussion of who and what the Mafia is. Hal Lipset, listening to the conversation in the bugged consulate room, had phone lines open to Rockefeller and Kissinger, who listened, too. Rockefeller sent Kissinger running to the White House with Nixon's marching orders. "*Resign right now.*" Nixon and Julie cried. But there was still some hope, if Nixon resigned immediately, of drawing the line somewhere—before it got to the King of the Mountain himself—Onassis. Nixon, on trial, would blurt out those names to save himself: Onassis, Dale, "Hughes". Even "JFK".

August 8, 1974: Nixon stepped down, and Ford stepped up to keep the cover-up going.

August 23, 1974: Frattiano in San Francisco, staying at the Sunol Golf Course. More murders scheduled re: Gemstone cover-up.

August 30, 1974: Ford hires Mafia lawyer Becker to work out a pardon deal for Nixon, who might otherwise name Onassis, Graham, and Pope Montini to save himself.

San Francisco Zebra Murders: A series of "random" killings, dubbed "Zebra Murders" by the police because, supposedly, blacks were killing whites. The real target was Silva, the witness to Alioto's Mafia Nut Tree meeting. Silva was shot to death in an alley. Careful Mafia planning went into this series, to kill several birds with one stone: 1. Get witness Silva out of the way, without being too "obvious" about it; 2. Spread fear of "black terrorists," and convince people that the Police Department needed more money, and more repressive power. 3. Blame— and frame—Black Muslims—knock off leaders of the opposition.

September 7, 1974: Roberts had made an agreement with a friend, Harp, of Kish Realty, over a bugged phone. Harp was to buy a Gemstone—with history—for $500, the price of a trip to Canada for Roberts to check into the "Hughes" Mormon Mafia Canadian stock market swindle, and other matters. But Harp was sodium-morphate poisoned before the deal could go through—on this date. (69)

Note: Sodium-morphate: a favorite Mafia poison for centuries. Smells like apple pie, and is sometimes served up in one, as to J. Edgar Hoover. Sometimes in a pill or capsule. Symptoms: Lethargy, sleep, sometimes vomiting. Once ingested, there is a heart attack—and no trace is left in the body. Proof is in the vomit, which is usually not analyzed. Not mentioned in your standard medicine books on poisons, etc. It is a common ingredient in rat poison. (70)

September 8, 1974: Ford pardons Nixon for "all crimes committed from June 20, 1969 (oops, make that January) through August, 1974."

Gemstone papers still floating around the world. Gandhi talks about the "U.S.'s bloody deeds."

October 1974: Ford drops "extradition" of Hughes from the Bahamas. Explanation: "We dropped it because we knew he wouldn't come." That's for sure!

October 3, 1974: The Watergate Trial—the cover-up of the cover-up— got under way, starring Montini's, Ben Veniste, Onassis's Neal, Graham's Jill Volner. In the White

HOuse, Mafia Mayors Alioto, Daley, and Beame met with the "truth squad"—Ford, Scott, and Griffin—and Mike Mansfield, in secret.

October 10, 1974: Tina Livanos Onassis Blandford Niarchos, sodium- morphate poisoned by hubby Stavros; puked, slept, and died of "heart attack."

Losing his son, Alexander, took all the fun out of killing for Onassis. Who was there to inherit the world empire he had dreamed of handing to his son?

December 1974: Brezhnev had scheduled a meeting with Sadat, of Egypt. The outcome wouldn't help the U.S.—no matter how many trips Henry made to the Mid-east with clean socks and blank checks. A new U.S. "secret weapon" was apparently used: a tiny speck of metal, introduced somehow into Brezhnev's lymph system. It lodged in the cluster of lymph nodes over his heart, and there it was coated with layers of phlegm—much as an oyster creates a pearl around an irritating grain of sand. Brezhnev's lymph system clogged up; he got the flu and the meeting with Sadat was cancelled. (71)

Russian doctors x-rayed him and found a huge lump in his chest. Then they put him before a Kirlian camera and checked his aura for cancer. No cancer. Note: Kirlian photography is the latest Russian diagnostic tool. It reveals the presence of disease—physical or moral (it also detects lies). (72)

Brezhnev's "lump" had to be treated with radiation therapy—hence the rumors he had cancer. It took six weeks to clear up.

March 1975: Onassis died. The Mafia organization regrouped itself. Prince Faisal watched his uncle, King Faisal, silently watch the shift of Mafia power—and couldn't stand it. He shot his uncle, the spiritual leader of 600,000,000 Moslems, who had played ball with Onassis all along.

South Vietnam's Thieu, dubious about which way the Mafia cooky would crumble now that Onassis was dead, decided the time was right for him to split. He abandoned the War Effort, cursed the U.S., and split for Taiwan, his plane so overloaded with gold bullion that he had to dump some of it overboard.

March 15, 1975: Roberts got the "Brezhnev Flu," and spent 2 weeks at U.C. hospital. Doctors there, without the Kirlian photography diagnostic technique, assumed the softball-sized lump over his heart was cancer. It wasn't.

April 1975: The Cambodian domino was no fun at all – it fell right over. Premier Lon Nol fled to exile in a Hawaiian suburb.

CIA Chief Colby, in a fit of spite, "leaked" the "stolen" story of CIA-Hughes Glomar Explorer's raising of the *bodies of drowned Russian sailors* from their sunken nuclear submarine. Purpose: To bug the Russians, and also to halt criticism of the CIA by pointing out how noble, brave, and self-sacrificing they are in their efforts to save us. (73)

The Russians are funny about their dead. They bitterly resented Colby's game. They quietly went through a massive naval "war game"– the reheasal of a nuclear attack of the U.S.

Which brings us almost to the present time. Ford, Kissinger and Rockefeller squat like toads on the corpse of America. By the time of the Bicentennial, the stink may be unbearable.

Ford now plans a propaganda movie version of his book, "Portrait of an Assassin," which will reiterate the exploded cock and bullshit notion that Oswald was JFK's "lone assassin." With singularly inept misunderstanding of the times, he seems to think Americans will take his word for it, and be "reassured" in the face of those "crackpot conspiracy theories." He doesn't seem to realize that he will be reminding, or informing, Americans, of his role on the infamous Warren Commission.

I hope this outline will make individual Gemstone papers easier to understand.

IF YOU FOUND THIS OUTLINE INTERESTING:

You won't be reading it in the papers for quite some time. At present, the only way to spread this information here in America is *via hand-to-hand*. Your help is needed. Please make 1, 5, 10, 100, copies, or whatever you can, and give them to friends or politicians, groups, media. The game is nearly up. Either the Mafia goes—or America goes. (74)

An Interview with Stephanie Caruana

conducted through the mail by Jim Keith

Q: Please tell me about your association with Bruce Roberts' *Gemstone Files*.

A: I had the very great privilege, about 18 years ago, of knowing and working with the author of the original *Gemstone File* letters, Bruce Roberts, in San Francisco. In order to clarify, in my own mind, the facts he laid out in such profusion in his letters, I wrote a chronological outline, to the extent that I understood what he was saying, which I called "A Skeleton Key to the Gemstone File." At a time when Bruce Roberts was hospitalized with a strange ailment which he claimed was CIA-induced, I made a bunch of copies of the Gemstone "Key" and mailed them out at random. It was a very scary time and ultimately tragic. I also remember, quite vividly, giving a copy of the Key to Paul Krassner [editor of *The Realist*], who said, "Bruce Roberts is a pain in the ass." I had a different view. I thought, and still think, that Bruce Roberts was probably the bravest and most brilliant man I ever met.

This [commenting on various copies of the Skeleton Key in current circulation] was pretty close to what I sent out when Bruce Roberts was in the hospital in California—although there were several "editions" with more or less info added from time to time... I also, at about the same time, "collaborated" with Mae Brussell (oddly enough, the daughter of Cyril Magnin) on an article about Patty Hearst and the fake SLA "army" which had taken Berkeley hostage with its ludicrous "food distribution." The article, was entitled "Is Cinque the First Black Lee Harvey Oswald?", meaning that he was a patsy set up by the authorities – a "yo-yo" they controlled with a string, letting him "escape" from prison after carefully indoctrinating him, in prison, with the idea of a black "army" etc. – all under the supervision of government-paid handlers.

The California prison system had at that time (and still does, for all I know) a system of "black pride" classes, taught by outsiders, the real purpose of which would not stand scrutiny. The "drama of controlling the black savages" is very much on the mind of some very powerful Californians, dictating their tactics of police training, etc., which is why Los Angeles is currently going up in smoke!

The article came out in the *Berkeley Barb*, and I must say we had a pretty good grasp on the phoniness of what was really going on. I see how at least one of your Gemstoners has picked up on this a bit, in terms of how the powers-that-be were trying to use this created and manipulated "army" for fear and terrorist propaganda. I had the – I can't say pleasure, for it was a terrible horror – the week the *Barb* came out with our article, of seeing these people covering their tracks by wiping out the "army." Frying its leader, "Cinque" alive – (after pulling Patty Hearst out of harm's way, of course) with a murderous SWAT team raid, televised live, which I watched, live, on a TV set in the window of a Berkeley shop. This, and a few personal death threats, as well as Bruce Roberts' difficulties and all the other murders he kept talking about, persuaded me that the best thing I could do, if I wanted to get this information out, was to do just what I did: throw it to the wind, and run for my life. Which I did.

At the time, most people who read it were somewhat dazed. Much of the information, or at least the way it was put together, was new and shocking. Since then, a great deal has emerged, and enough has been corroborated from various sources that people don't find it so hard to believe any more. I don't feel paranoid, either, since it's too late to shut me up, by many years! (That was the whole idea.) I've seen

TV shows based on one or another aspect from time to time.

I guess what amazes (and saddens) me the most is that this "Key" seems to be all that has trickled down to the (underground) public of Bruce Roberts' original letters, which were a thousand times more powerful in their writing and effect. I gather that you have never actually seen any of them. I assure that he really did exist, and that he was brilliant, and a great discourser. When he talked about holding forth in one bar or another, that's exactly what he did. Anyone with a tape recorder would have a feast of information.

I think that the Gemstone information is important for people to have. Not that I really think that it will "save" us, because frankly I think we're too far gone for salvation! But at least it may help a bit to understand what is happening. It can give people a broader perspective. For this reason, I think it may be important for people to know this is, or was, real. Somebody, a man named Bruce Roberts, actually wrote those letters; and somebody else (me) actually wrote the Skeleton Key. (How do they think it came into existence??? Spontaneous combustion????)

...About 10 years ago, I got a phone call from—*Penthouse?? Playboy??* They said someone had sent them a copy, and they wanted to use some of the information, but I would have to "document" it first! I said, hey, I ain't going to "document" it. If it feels right, do it! Otherwise, you commit suicide, not me. I ain't getting paid for this, nohow, right? Right, they said. I said, it seems to me, that if this information is true, it will prove itself by being believed when it is read. Ten years from now, your article will be forgotten, but the Gemstone Skeleton Key will still be around. They snickered, and hung up.

What I had in mind was that the Old Testament originally was copied by hand, one letter at a time, and that didn't stop it from getting around. People hunger for the truth. And I believe that what I was passing on was true.

Q: What are your feelings about the continuing interest shown in the *Gemstone File?*

A: I am aware, and I am very pleased, that the information that I released eighteen years ago has been spread around to so many people that it is now "public property," and that, consequently, the danger of getting wiped out for spreading it, which was quite real back then, is probably over for now. However, the shady process of milking people and governments of money which was the "Mafia's" favorite game then, is still going on now, and in many cases, by the same people, or their successors. If I were to appear too publicly to advise and instruct people how to spot and track these ongoing scams, "somebody" might still get mad. I hope you'll understand that I like living, and that a number of my friends (including Bruce Roberts) died because of their involvement in tracing and recording these political and financial manipulations.

Please understand that I have very mixed feelings about all this. One wonders whether, if a real person emerges, "claiming responsibility" for the Skeleton Key to the Gemstone File, whether some of these surviving characters who are accused in the file of murder, blackmail, etc. etc., might want to sue me for millions, or simply wipe me out for the crime of "character assassination," etc. I hope you understand a little simple fear! What "protects" me, if anything, is that the people involved wouldn't want to draw attention to the material by publicly objecting to it. An automobile "accident" on a quiet country road is, however, easy enough to arrange.

Q: What was your first contact with the *Gemstone Files*?

A: The circumstances were, that I was living in Mae Brussell's house in Carmel. I had "offered myself to her as a slave," because I wanted to write articles based on her fat file folders. This started with Patty Hearst and the SLA "Army" where I found myself going nuts trying to figure out what was really going on. While I was working with Mae Brussell, my editor at *Playgirl* asked me if Mae knew anything about Howard Hughes. Mae laughed and said Howard Hughes was dead. We set out to "co-author" an article about Howard Hughes, and she gave me her file folders on Hughes (and Onassis) to read. I had a nasty deadline to meet, and was reading and writing from morning until night.

Then she pulled out her *Gemstone File* letters, and told me I could read them, but only after I had finished working on the article, on my own time at night, locked in my little cell. She also "ordered" me to not actually read the letters, but only to skim over them, and only to read what related to

Howard Hughes! At midnight, exhausted after a long hard day, I started to read. The first page was chocked full of murders, poison, and dirty words. My reaction was: Hey, this guy is a paranoid schizophrenic. I've been told all my life about them. They think everybody's getting killed. In a sense, I had been brainwashed to automatically reject anyone who talked about the things he did, in the ways he did it. I had to pull back and take a look at my own reactions, and to decide that I would read the material with an open mind. It all held together – from first to last page.

Of course, I was reading the Gemstone letters themselves, instead of my own sadly watered-down and abbreviated outline of what they had to say.

The article I wrote "with" Mae was published in *Playgirl* – but their attorney had cut so many holes in it that it came out more like paper dolls than an article. Even so – the editor got fired, and I was banned forever. The editor told me that the day that issue of *Playgirl* appeared on the newsstands, she was in New York and "I never saw so many men in black overcoats running up to buy *Playgirl* in my life!" I personally doubt that they were buying it to see whose cock was in the centerfold, don't you think?

My "working relationship" with Mae came to an end at about that time. I guess she decided that having a slave wasn't all it was cracked up to be, and I got a little tired of it, too. I headed for San Francisco, met Bruce Roberts, and became friends with him.

I guess I thought, or hoped, that what was being kept such a secret from the American people, but was being used abroad by various governments to blackmail the U.S., and in various kinds of global power politics, should belong to the people – if only to see what would happen if people found out what was really going on. You know yourself, that nothing really did happen. The guys playing the crazy games maybe held their breath for a few minutes, to see if anyone could do anything with the truth. Then they continued playing the games. Now we have a situation where although many people understand the game, or at least large parts of it, the Mafia and its associates are well established here. America is like a huge animal with a giant parasite hanging from its throat. Enough blood is being drained that everyone is hurting, and yet no one seems to know how to get rid of the parasite. The parasite itself is wondering what, if anything, we will ever do. It won't however, commit suicide. That is not the nature of the beast.

Q: Could you tell me more about editing the Skeleton Key?

A: Please remember that you are working from a very abbreviated and concise outline, written by another person (me) who was, at the time, struggling to understand a whole pile of complicated and shocking information. My outline consisted of 23 pages, based on a hasty and imperfect selection from an original body of letters of several hundred pages. Some of it was based on my hasty notes made from reading letters which I did not own, and only had the chance to see once. My original impulse was to understand the letters myself, and it helped me to try and make some sort of chronological sense out of them. Roberts was not only a mental giant and a powerful writer, but also a sort of poet. Reading his letters was like reading a history written by James Joyce in his *Finnegans Wake* period. All of historic time (that is, the threads Roberts was interested in) tended to be jumbled together in paragraph-long sentences. Some of my "chronologizing" consisted of picking bits and phrases out of these sentences, and putting them under appropriate dates — sometimes years apart. I stuck to Roberts' own words as much as I could, since I felt that any interpretation I might make of what might be a "poetic" expression on his part, might well be wrong.

My intention at the time was to outline events, not to describe Bruce Roberts. When I decided to release the Gemstone outline, which was done in a hurry under the pressure of fright for his safety, I attempted to include a few explanations, and at least some details about him, so that readers would understand that I was not claiming to be the creator of this body of work, merely an outliner of someone else's writing. If my intention had been to describe Bruce Roberts, I would have said that he, as far as I knew, was brave, tough, real, a player and not a sideline sitter; sometimes scared, very angry, and not in the least way the silly wimp you describe! [in the original draft for my article "Is It True?"]. He wasn't "trying to enter the world of James Bond"—he was

James Bond, or his own version of it. Only, he wasn't "On Her Majesty's Service." He was a freelancer. A street fighter, a Scotsman, a heavy drinker. I know it's difficult for most people who are not embroiled in the center of a universe such as his, to imagine what it's like to be there, but your picture is just wrong.

As far as I know, he never intended or directed his writing for the general public. Therefore your idea that he was attempting to paint himself in one light or another, for self-aggrandizement or whatever other uncomplimentary terms you can think of, is incorrect.

Q: Why did you conclude that the Gemstone letters were not meant for public distribution?

A: They were almost invariably addressed and sent to a specific person. Xerox copies went into the File, and were only given or sold to people like myself or Mae Brussell, who had a special interest in them. As far as I know, they were never publicly distributed, and this seems likely because it appears neither you nor anyone else you know personally have ever seen a copy of a single one, even though I suppose you and everyone else interested in the subject of Gemstone have been asking to see them for years! On the other hand, my "Skeleton Key" was intended for public distribution, and that, my good Watson, is why you have a copy!

Q: Could you describe your personal mindset when you met Roberts?

A: I had completed the article for *Playgirl*, and escaped from solitary confinement with Mae Brussell. After reading the portion of the file that Mae had (possibly 200 pages, dating from around 1970 to 1972), I had been very curious about the author. I asked Mae what he was like, and she said he was "Caspar Milquetoast!" She told me that after her daughter had been killed in an "automobile accident" on a lonely road in Carmel, where her other daughter had been seriously injured, another girlfriend killed, and a fourth girl injured. She had mentioned this on her radio show (Radio Conspiracy). And apparently she mentioned the name of a man who had sympathetically come to visit her after the "accident." After this broadcast, which Bruce Roberts had apparently heard, he came to visit her in Carmel, and gave her a copy of the *Gemstone File* (his letters). He told her that the man who came to see her was the man who had arranged for the "accident," which had been done to persuade Mae to drop her investigations (she was apparently getting too close to some things) – and he, Bruce Roberts, recognized the man's name, and he knew that the reason this man had visited her was to get the warning across to her that she should stop. However, Mae didn't get the message (she believed her first visitor to be sincerely offering condolences), and didn't believe Roberts; she thought he was probably some nut. She read the file, not especially believing it, but later events made her put more credence in it. She told me that she went to visit Roberts in S.F., and that he lived with his mother, a nice little old Scotch/Irish lady who served tea and wore white gloves. All this made Mae think Bruce Roberts was "Caspar Milquetoast."

I was a bit surprised, because the impression I got from his writing had been that of a much more fierce personality, but I adjusted my thinking to "Caspar Milquetoast." I was still very curious to meet him. And I decided that since we had used some of the Gemstone information in the *Playgirl* article, I felt obligated to tell him about it, before it appeared as a journalistic courtesy, at least – though Mae seemed to feel that he had given her permission to use the information as she saw fit. And I also wanted to read the rest of the file – whatever he had written after Mae's portion of the file ended – it was: "And what happened after that???" At the time, I didn't know the file had a name; it was just "letters."

Roberts had mentioned in the letters that his phone was tapped, and I didn't want to call him, so I just drove to the address that he had put on the file, an apartment house in S.F., and rang the bell. I fully expected him to invite me in for tea with his mother. When I finally did meet him, it was clear to me that he wasn't Caspar Milquetoast at all. More like Clint Eastwood/John Wayne, if you want to go Hollywood for images.

Between Mae Brussell and Bruce Roberts, it was Mae who was the amateur. She was a "filer," as anyone who knew her would tell you. I don't think she ever had any direct connection with the events she described. (Except for her contact with Roberts, which she misunderstood at the time). She got most of her information from the press, since she subscribed to about 8 different daily papers, and lots of magazines. Every day she would clip the articles relevant to the stories and people she was following, and since she had a copy machine, she would underline things, make copies, and pop the articles into the right file folders. After a time, she had files on nearly everybody, and that was the (only) basis for her articles on Watergate for Paul Krassner's *Realist*. In terms of brains, she was smart, for a squirrel. I never had the impression that she had any deep understanding of what she had squirrelled away, though as a writer, I found her file folders chocked full of juicy information!

Bruce Roberts, on the other hand, got a lot of his information direct from the source, and from his own experiences. He also "traded" his Gemstone letters to sources around the world, who in turn supplied him with information that was unobtainable elsewhere. It was a worldwide information network on the highest level. For example, I believe this is where he got the information on "Pope Montini" and the original "Christ" — from Cardinal Tisseront at the Vatican before Tisseront's untimely "accidental suicide" through a plate glass window.

Q: Do you believe that Larry Flynt got shot because of the publication of the Skeleton Key?

A: Yes, I do believe Larry Flynt got shot because he believed that stupid jerk, Paul Krassner, who thought that the *Gemstone File* info was "a big joke." I'm glad somebody else said it, not me. Paul thinks everything is a big joke! It's a measure of what a trivial person he is. After Flynt got shot, I heard Paul just didn't want to talk about Gemstone at all, and no wonder. He's a regular stand-up comic! More than one can say for Larry Flynt.

Q: Did you ever see any of Roberts' actual gemstones?

A: Yes, I did see a few. He invited me to meet him one day in front of "Mrs. Giannini's Bank of America" in downtown S.F. He had a safe deposit box there, and he went in and got a few artificial diamonds, and I think a ruby, and showed them to me. They were to be sent out in connection with a letter or letters that he was sending to someone. I have never been big on gemstones, and even though diamonds are supposed to be a girl's best friend, none of them have ever actually befriended me. At the time, I believe he was no longer making gemstones. He told me that he had done so in the past in a garage, which blew up one day due to some mistake, and singed off his eyebrows, etc. I think he may have run out of gemstones at some time, and of course could use anything he wanted as a symbolic "gemstone." Sometimes a coin. Or even a pebble from a certain place. In this case, it was the "history" that accompanied the object that would give it its value. I can't give you much more information than that. He told me some of these things anecdotally, and I never heard the whole story of his life.

Q: Do you know why the G. Gordon Liddy files were also called "Gemstone"?

A: The relationship between Gordon Liddy and Gemstone, as I understand it, is that Roberts was writing his Gemstone letters (letters that he sold, with a gemstone); Gordon Liddy was given a few of these letters, possibly even with a gemstone; he named his White House operation "Gemstone," after Roberts' letters in his "Gemstone file"; that's where the name came from. Liddy's purpose as I understand it was to find out how much of the Gemstone information had leaked out, and damage control. Gordon Liddy isn't "Gemstone"; he was "anti-Gemstone." I see him on TV every now and then. He plays "himself" on *Miami Vice;* a murdering CIA/Mafia slob, and he doesn't need to act. He recently appeared on Jack Anderson's show. Jack Anderson serves as a conduit to release CIA cover stories to J.Q. Public. The CIA is very imaginative and productive, when it comes to creating cover stories. They had Gordon Liddy "explaining" to Jack Anderson how he had been "hired" by the CIA to murder Anderson, and how, in his endearingly clumsy CIA way, he had failed repeatedly. How could anyone be afraid of such a bunch of inept nerds?? (That was the point of the show.) Can't even pull off a good assassination! Did J.Q. Schmoe really believe this bullshit? Who knows? I didn't bother to watch. The difference between media and life gets a little fuzzy, doesn't it? Do you know the difference? In a nutshell: in life, if they decide to bump you off, they actually do it.

Q: What would you venture to say was Roberts' purpose in writing the Gemstone letters?

A: Much of this has to be guesswork, really, since you can't always be sure of another person's motivation, especially when that person isn't around to explain. As I think I may have told you, Bruce Roberts' serious involvement with Hughes began when he tried to sell the Hughes Tool Company his invention, I believe it would be the use of artificial diamonds as cutting tips for oil well drill bits. Last night, half asleep, I was watching a program on lasers. Suddenly this guy from "Hughes" appeared; I forgot his name. He is supposed to have "invented" the use of laser enhancement for shooting a beam of light through an artificial ruby (in 1960, after Hughes stole Roberts' invention). In retrospect, I think Roberts half-explained all this in his letters and conversations with me, though as a scientific ignoramus, I didn't grasp it at all. He was also talking about the potential for power inherent in laser beam technology, still in the process of development. "Hughes" stole a lot more from Roberts than just diamond tips for drill bits, although that may have been the original potential use with which he took his idea to them. Instead of paying him, Hughes Tool stole his invention. The motivating force was rage, and while he was fighting Hughes Tool, he somehow discovered "there wasn't any Hughes," i.e., Onassis had snapped him up and was running the Hughes empire through the "Mormon Mafia" baby-sitters, Robert Maheu, etc. A paperback book on "Hughes" which I used to have had some utterly damning photos of Hughes appearing before a Senate committee or whatever, clearly showing the facial scars he sustained when he escaped the assassination attempt on him in one of his planes; and a "later" photo of "him"; younger and without the scars, handsomer, and clearly not the same human being at all! Just a look-alike, actually one of the doubles who appeared during "Hughes's" increasingly rare public appearances after the real Hughes was snatched by Onassis. This book, I believe written by Noah Dietrich, who had worked for Hughes for years, until the takeover convinced Onassis to pay Dietrich a significant amount of $$$ to shut up and go away, which he did.

Along the way Roberts lost considerable income (not being paid for his scientific discovery, etc.). So a man who might have been a perfectly happy inventor-physicist became a very unhappy man-whose-invention-was-stolen-by-a-big-company. Being an exceptionally brilliant and courageous man, he kept going deeper and deeper, and I suppose formed the habit of keeping journals, since he was also a very gifted writer. The more he learned about Onassis and Onassis's associates, and their strangle-hold on the media, etc., the more became the need to communicate some of what he knew. We all take different paths. Roberts wrote "letters." He was also, I believe, a very humane person; a father (divorced); not a killer. He didn't like Mafia killers. I don't think he appreciated the world being run by these killers, especially when they moved in and took over the U.S. government with the assassination of Kennedy. It really was a secret coup. I guess you can divide people into two groups: the ones who think it's okay to feed people drugs, murder to stay in power and make money, etc., etc., manipulate whole populations, and those who think, when they know about it, that it isn't okay, no matter how much money they can make by being part of it. Or how much they will lose by not being part of it. I suppose you have made a similar choice, or that you believe you would make that choice if it were presented to you as such. I suppose that, while perhaps something of a dilettante, you wouldn't have chosen to explore "conspiracy theory" only provided that it couldn't possibly be true. I suppose you feel you have some decent human instincts that keep you from being a professional killer. Don't you think it might be possible that Bruce Roberts shared these feelings? I always thought he did.

Since Roberts wasn't making money from his scientific work, he had to make it somehow. He once told me that he did construction work (contractor) for a while, putting roofs on buildings, etc. "You have to make a living somehow." At a certain point, he put nine and nine together, and started sending letters, with Gemstones, "cold," and asked the recipients to send him what they thought the letter was worth to them. I guess some of them sent substantial sums, and others sent people to kill him. I know he didn't have very much money; this could have been due in part to various divorces, children, etc., and various disasters that frequently seemed to happen to his cars, etc.

Q: What do you think of the recent *Kiwi Gemstone*?

A: It's the first "Gemstone" result that seems positive. That is, someone has actually used the Gemstone information accurately and courageously as a basis for following current events which are now shaping our world (species) history, and I say, more power to them! It is really a tragic story of how our world has been "united" under the rule of these vicious criminals, monsters in business suits. You can see exactly what dear old George Bush means when he keeps talking about "One World," or whatever the phrase he uses.

Of course, the Kiwi Gemstone phrasing is a bit misleading, in that the wording seems to imply that "Bruce Roberts" wrote all of it. I don't believe anyone writes anything after they are dead, and I think that needs clarifying. If the person or persons responsible for continuing "Gemstone" through the takeover of Australia wish to be anonymous, that's something I do understand. And if they are smart enough to follow the current international financial, political and social manipulations, hopefully they will be smart enough to stay alive.

Q: What about Roberts' reference to sodium morphate? The chemists that I've consulted don't seem to be aware of any such thing.

A: The "sodium morphate" question is one which I also had trouble with. "Sodium morphate" is the phrase Roberts used and I stuck to his words and phrases as closely as possible. I tried to look it up myself, and ran into the same brick wall. I even asked him about it once, and he looked at me blankly and repeated that it was a common ingredient in rat poison. I do know that I have read many references, and have seen the device of such heart-attack inducing poison referred to in many murders, real and fictitious, since then, and I know that such a poison, whatever its technical name, is fairly easily obtainable.

Q: Do you happen to know what Roberts was getting at when he referred to "The Yellow Race"?

A: What comes to mind is the phrase: "The Yellow Race is not in China: the Yellow Race dead-fucks Mary Jo Kopechne." It was not a description of skin color, but of moral decay; that is, specifically, of Teddy Kennedy, who allowed Mary Jo to die to cover his own sickening ass, and of those battalions of folks who helped him in the cover-up.

Q: The Skeleton Key has been in circulation eighteen years now. Do you see any hopeful signs that any of this information will be made public, or acted upon?

A: I don't know whether you have seen the series on the

JFK assassination which recently appeared on the *A&E* cable network. I see where a number of the surviving witnesses have come forth with bits and pieces which pretty well substantiate how many shooters there really were, where they were standing, etc. Each new retelling adds a little more to the complete picture. This one goes off into the wild blue yonder, however, when a "researcher" sits there with a straight face and tells you the "three shooters" were from the Corsican Mafia, recruited in Marseilles. Surely the good old USA didn't have to go so far to find reliable hitmen, when we have so many home-grown expert Mafioso hitmen, such as Fratianno, Roselli and Brading.

Now that Oliver Stone's movie has come out, and if everyone stays alive, there may be a move throughout the world to get these people out of power, and as I said, it's a slight chance, but if we could all get together, we could do it. Revolutions have happened in the past. When things get bad enough (as they are now), things happen. Whoever thought the Red Splendor would come tumbling down, without a shot, defeated by "free enterprise"? And now that "free enterprise" is far from free, that too may bite the dust. You as an anarchist know what I am talking about, I suppose. Human history may yet take some surprising turns. The thousand year Roman Empire eventually bit the dust.

I recently watched the Oscar ceremonies. Two of the big nominees – Stone's *JFK*, and Warren Beatty's *Bugsy*, came head-to-head. It was fascinating to watch! Both are really about the same subject: Mafia control over the U.S. Stone's, against, we know about. Beatty's, presenting the killer, *Bugsy*, in a sympathetic light, is pro. The absent party, in both, was Onassis, Mayer Lansky's boss. *Bugsy's* "glorious aim," the building of the Flamingo casino in the Las Vegas desert, a great money-milking machine for the Mafia – what a goal! The movie even mentions the power this would give the Mob in Nevada – another dream which came true! Hollywood walked the line between the two sides; *Silence of the Lambs* was the only safe choice! Watching Stone's and Beatty's faces provided a groovy little mini-drama, since both of them knew what was going on! Jack Valenti's scathing denunciation of *JFK* afterward underscored the battle for the hearts & minds of J.Q. Public which is always continuing.

Mae Brussell on the Gemstone File

[The following is an edited transcript of Mae Brussell's *Dialogue: Conspiracy* radio program on KLRB FM radio in Carmel, California. It combines programs dated December 25, 1977, no. 302, and January 1, 1978, no. 303.]

Many people have asked me to talk about the *Gemstone File* on *Dialogue: Conspiracy*, and I looked at the index of the shows, and I never have done it with you. So I brought it in and I'm going to read you part of the *Gemstone File*, and explain what it is today, and then next week I'll do more, and it will be a two-or-three part session on *Dialogue: Conspiracy* about the *Gemstone File*.

These pages – there's approximately twenty typewritten pages – I'm not going to read all twenty to you on the air. You can send for it; I can make copies if you want. The cost of copying it is 10 cents a page plus postage, and [I will] mail them to you in case you don't have them. These are circulated... they're in London, they're in Ireland, they're all over the United States, and they were put together by a person named Stephanie Caruana. She came to my house to do an interview with me for *Playgirl* magazine and she saw all the material that I had, and co-authored with me a story on the death of Howard Hughes, being buried off of a Greek island. [It's] a case which I'm still working on, and trying to get the body exhumed in Houston, Texas to prove that it isn't Howard Hughes and our article was the correct one.

She came to my house to work on the Howard Hughes story, because she saw all this material around, and I showed her what is the *Gemstone Files;* it's from Bruce Roberts. I don't know any other person who has the complete set. They were a series of letters that he wrote to his mother, or a diary that he kept for himself, and the whole file is about 300 pages. And, as I said last week on *Dialogue: Conspiracy,* I had it copied and I have three copies put somewhere, each in a different place to be safe, and I believe I'm the only person in the United States that has it.

Stephanie went through the 300 pages and went up to see Bruce Roberts. He was living in San Francisco at the time, but they said he's dead now – he died of a brain tumor about six months ago. She wrote a summary of 20 typewritten pages in essence of what Bruce had to say and what he wanted the world to know, and the summary is called "The Skeleton Key to the Gemstone File."

I met Bruce Roberts when my first article came out, "Why Was Martha Mitchell Kidnapped?" He got in touch with Paul Krassner and myself and he gave us this document. I was staying with some friends at Geary Street in San Francisco, and he came and brought it to me one evening. We were up with him to about one o'clock and kind of shaky and very nervous about the way it was put on us and given to me, and didn't know anything about Bruce at the time.

And so I went with a friend downstairs and we decided we'd go out and get a cup of coffee. When we went out there was a car in back of us with a man standing by the parking meter, near Van Ness and Geary. We got in our car and he got in the car behind us and followed us. We looked in our car and the whole car had been pilfered. Documents and letters of the party I was with [were] taken out of the car and the suitcases in there taken away, and the radio was taken. It looked like a burglary but everything was thrown around inside the car, and we had a chase in San Francisco up and down the streets. By then it was 2:00 or 2:30 and everything was empty and we couldn't find a place to pull up. There were 2 cars that zeroed in on us and followed us and then we finally went to – about 3:30 or 4:00 in the morning. We went to an all-night restaurant that was open on Geary and said "to heck with it if they're following us." I didn't know what to do. We went in, got something to eat; we went back to where we were staying, and we were locked out and I didn't have the key. Finally we went to KSAN radio station, and, just as luck would have it, we went upstairs and I remembered they had a waterbed in the lobby which they didn't have any more. We fell asleep on some beanbag chairs until the morning. I had a radio show around 9:00 or 10:00.

So I was carrying these *Gemstone Files* with us all night through this wild chase. I was really up all night and [couldn't] concentrate on them and didn't have a chance to go through it. I was wondering what in the world was here? And it was a funny scene – sort of funny now, but it wasn't funny then. I have the large set of files, as I say, all of the documents, and what he wrote about them, so they were at my house. I'll read you some of the points about them that are pertinent to you, and I'll read you some of the places where I differ. This is why I haven't used it in terms of writing yet or getting it published, and I hope the people that want to make the movie in England will seriously go over the material with me because some of it is in error and some of it is correct.

I'll start just by reading you sections of it, and you will know what it is because many of you have heard it by name and are not familiar with the works. It begins by saying "It is dangerous to transmit or even to possess this information. There is no copyright on this material. Anyone who wishes may reproduce it. Credit will go where credit is due after the mess has been cleaned up. The *Gemstone File* was written in many segments over a period of years by an American named Bruce Roberts. Parts of the File were released to certain Americans starting in 1969. The number of pages is well over a thousand..." I have about 350, it says there are a thousand. "I have been able to verify some of the statements but research facilities required to verify the entire story would be monumental. Although parts of it seem improbable, in general it rings true. Since the scope is so large, and the events described are so complex and interlocking, the Skeleton outline of the Gemstone thesis is merely a guide."

It begins with the year 1932: "Aristotle Onassis, a Greek ship owner who made his first million dollars was selling 'Turkish tobacco' (known as opium) in Argentina. He worked out a profitable deal with Joseph Kennedy who is into the whiskey business in Ireland, transporting to this country, and Eugene Meyer who is the father of Mrs. Graham, who owns the *Washington Post* and Meyer Lansky. They imported bootleg liquor into the United States and also, when Prohibition was over, in the liquor bottles with opium and heroin and cocaine disguised as liquor."

"In 1934 Aristotle Onassis, the Rockefellers, and the Seven Oil Sisters (the major oil companies) signed an agreement, where they outlined an oil cartel memo, which in essence said screw the Arabs out of their oil, transport it on Onassis's ships. This was done and those who did it considerably increased their already vast wealth."

Now the *Gemstone File* was given to me in 1972, since that time we have learned that Robert Maheu of the Hughes Organization worked with Mr. Niarchos, the competitor of Aristotle Onassis, to get the oil contracts from Saudi Arabia. So it wasn't Onassis who had the power. The Hughes oil contacts had more power because Onassis, who is made the fall-guy of the entire Gemstone, had his son murdered and his ex-wife murdered. He died then, all alone, and it seems that he didn't have the power; it's in the power of other people.

That's one of my objections to the Gemstone — that Onassis keeps seeming to be the fall-guy, but he in turn was done in, just like Nixon. [He] worked with them a long time and then they took Nixon and did him in. Onassis and Nixon had the power up to a point and then each of them was expendable.

There's an article last week that the reason we're arming Iran is to take over Saudi Arabia. That's consistent with the *Gemstone Files* of the Seven Sisters because John J. McCloy, the lawyer for the Rockefellers and a member of the Warren Commission, started the organization of Seven Sisters. They did form an oil cartel, and they do intend to take the oil from the Arabs, if they need to, militarily.

"Bruce Roberts studied journalism and physics at the University of Wisconsin. He studied crystallography, synthetic rubies, and made the original Gemstone experiment, and this is why it's called the *Gemstone File*. In 1936-1940, Eugene Meyer, part of the Syndicate with Onassis and Rockefeller, bought the *Washington Post*." Later Eugene Meyer is killed and a suicide is forged[?]. "Meyer bought the *Washington Post*. Other Mafia members bought newspapers, radios and magazines to control the news media. As the war approached, new censorship of all major media went into effect.

"1941-45 was World War II which was profitable for Aristotle Onassis, the Rockefellers, the Kennedies, the Roosevelts and I.G. Farben. Onassis was selling oil and arms to both sides," as were ITT, American Corporations and General Motors. They were selling tanks and airplanes to Hitler and to America at the same time. He says, "These people went through the war without losing a single ship or man." At the end of the war the Nazi experts assimilated into the Pentagon and infiltrated the highest levels of government.

And that is what I published, also through my research. Before I knew Bruce Roberts I had published that in my first article in *The Realist*.

He says, "Allen Dulles went in partnership with ex-Nazi Reinhard Gehlen and formed a new agency to be called the Central Intelligence Agency. In 1949 Aristotle Onassis bought U.S. surplus Liberty Ships in questionable (illegal) purchases, and lawyer Burke Marshall helped him."

Burke Marshall is important, because in the case of the Kennedy assassination, he has been the man to lock up the National Archives to any of the researchers and he was working with this team way back when. He also was in the Vera Foundation of WBAI in New York, which is supposed to be a liberal radio station. Burke Marshall has been in control of bottling up the conspiracy truth ever since John Kennedy was killed. John Kennedy wasn't the man that they thought he was going to be and Burke Marshall and the team that I mentioned above has continued to suppress the murder of this president.

"In 1956," according to Bruce Roberts, "Howard Hughes, the Texas millionaire, was buying his way into control of the United States. He bought senators and governors. He bought his last politician, his newly-elected Vice President Nixon, via a quarter million dollar non-repayable loan to Nixon's brother, Donald."

Now, there's one error in this that I differ with Bruce and the *Gemstone File*, and I'll interject my opinions as we go on. Howard Hughes and this group bought Richard Nixon in

1946 when he ran against Mr. Voorhis in California. Nixon was still in the Navy, and I wrote about that on how Nixon gets to power and Nixon met Howard Hughes in a bungalow at the Beverly Hills Hotel. And when he was just a member of the House of Representatives, and then a senator, and then a vice president, he was being funded by this Committee of 100 and the neo-Nazis at California, the agriculture business and the aerospace business. Howard Hughes was buying Richard Nixon as a front man in '46, not '56.

He goes on to say, "Early in 1957, Richard Nixon then repaid the favor to Howard Hughes for giving his brother this quarter of a million dollars, by forming Internal Revenue's tax free foundation, called the Hughes Medical Institute. With Hughes Aircraft being sole owner it was a tax-free non-accountable money funnel or laundry for whatever Howard Hughes wanted to do. The U.S. government anti-trust suits against Hughes, TWA and other enterprises were shelved." The medical institute in Florida was a funnel for funding members of congress, all those very congressmen that won't open up the assassination now or the conspiracy. Gerald Ford was one of the recipients of that money, and he was the one who put Richard Nixon; he was selected by Richard Nixon to be on the Warren Commission and Richard Nixon then selected him to become president of the United States.

"The Hughes Medical Institute down in Florida goes into a lot of questionable operations. It's simply an office building with a handful of people." And goodness knows where the money goes, but some of it has been pinpointed, like the Korean CIA to the members of Congress. Richard Nixon formed this institute which funded other members of Congress that would vote for him later to put him into power. It not only saved tax money for Howard Hughes, but by paying Richard Nixon several hundred thousand he got what he wanted. Nixon formed this institute for Howard Hughes, and then it funded the politicians that kept Richard Nixon going until he became president of the United States.

The Gemstone goes on, "In March 1957 Aristotle Onassis carried out a carefully-planned action. He had Hughes kidnapped from his bungalow at the Beverly Hills Hotel, using Hughes's own men (such as Chester Davis, who was born

Mr. Cesare in Sicily, and the other Hughes men either quit, or fired, or stayed on in the Onassis organization."

Now the Gemstone has an area here which should be cleared. People I know have copies of this Skeleton Gemstone, and I can answer these questions for you on the air and share some of the facts with you, against what Bruce wrote.

In March '57 Howard Hughes was kept in the bungalow of the Beverly Hills Hotel. He wasn't kidnapped, but he was isolated. He was as good as kidnapped, but he wasn't taken down to the Bahamas like he said. He was kidnapped from his hotel; that is a fact that is in error. He was kept in the bungalow from '57 to '66, and he never saw any of his old aides. Noah Dietrich was fired, Robert Maheu of the CIA was taken over, he was also in the FBI. The assassination teams were incorporated in the Hughes Organization and the Hughes Organization at that point became the Hitler Organization, the Nazi organization, the secret government.

Hughes's body didn't matter anymore. They could give him the heroin and cocaine, and the injections, and drug him out of his mind. He was taken on a train from Los Angeles to Boston in 1966.

So, '57 to '66 he was kept in the bungalow by the Los Angeles Police Department and the Beverly Hills Police Department – Captain Jack Eggers. That is important because the kidnapping of Hughes, or the care of Hughes didn't just involve Aristotle Onassis.

In the *Gemstone File* Bruce Roberts keeps pinpointing the Mafia and Onassis, as if these were the two culprits, but it goes much bigger. It infiltrates the police department at the local level; Beverly Hills Police, Los Angeles Police, the Dallas Police, down in the Bahamas, in Texas, and the Central Intelligence Agency and the FBI. It's true that narcotics trafficking is involved but here it's also the satellite control of the world: the communications media that's involved, and the Hughes company are making the satellites for space stations and communications, and for weapons. And they can use it for agricultural surveillance or for oil surveillance or minerals and effect our whole lives by these satellites. And the satellites are made by the Hughes organization and the CIA.

So Howard was kept in that bungalow and then taken, literally kidnapped, after he was zonked, he was kept around for enough people to say oh, he's irresponsible or mentally sick or queer, or he talks crazy, and then from Boston there isn't a trace of a hair or a fingerprint or a sign of the real Howard Hughes.

The Gemstone papers go on to say that "a few days later," this is after March '57, in April, "Mayor Cannon, the new Senator Cannon from Nevada, arranged a fake marriage to Jean Peters to explain Howard's sudden loss of interest in women, and this brain-damaged person was taken to the Emerald Isles Hotel in the Bahamas, where the top floor was rented." Later, it said, "after he was injected with heroin for thirty days, he was taken to a cell on Onassis's island in Skorpios, where he spent the rest of his life. Onassis then has a much larger power base in the United States, the Hughes empire. Wayne Rector, acting as Hughes's double since 1945, then became Howard Hughes."

Now, to correct the Gemstones, I have been told that what Brooks Randall said on *Good Morning America* [was] that Brooks Randall and not Wayne Rector is the double that was buried, but we haven't seen a picture of Wayne Rector, or he hasn't surfaced, so it could be one of the two. It wasn't after a few days the marriage to Jean Peters was faked. There was no fingerprints, of an application for the wedding, or a wedding certificate, nobody saw the groom, the judge is dead, the woman at the office there in Nevada is dead. The circumstances of that wedding would prove without any doubt that there was no marriage to Jean Peters and that this was an excuse to get everybody off of the tail of Howard Hughes.

[Bruce Roberts] died of a brain tumor about a year ago. Bruce lived in San Francisco and he gave me his research at the time of Watergate because he wanted me to know what he thought was the story behind Watergate and what led up to it, and because he had been at a certain bar in San Francisco on Geary Street, where the Watergate defendants used to hang around right after the Watergate arrest. The bartender there was killed, and I did go into that bar a couple of times to see what was going on.

He claimed that G. Gordon Liddy and E. Howard Hunt, and John Erlichman and most of the Watergate defendants had an active role in their CIA intelligence work in San Francisco and hung around this bar, and he gave me a lot of information which has been circulating around the world. Many people have it, and as I say they want to make a movie about the Gemstone Key-File in England.

Parts of this file are true, parts of them are absolutely untrue, some of it is difficult to check, some of it I have used for my own research and writing. It's a very controversial document because it's filled with a lot of misinformation.

There is one section of the *Gemstone File* that is particularly interesting and controversial, and it has to do with the role of the present Pope, Cardinal Montini, who he had made the allegations [about]. Bruce Roberts said that the Pope was part of the international narcotics traffic with the Mafia and the CIA since his early days as a cardinal.

"The battle of the Mafia narcotics traffic has been tangled with the hierarchy of the Catholic Church, specifically the Vatican and the Pope." It was Bruce Roberts who told me in 1972 that this current Pope was in the OSS and that he was linked to the Golden Triangle narcotics traffic in Southeast Asia that particularly escalated during the Vietnamese War. A year later, after he told me this information, a book came out on the history of the OSS and it did link Cardinal Montini, who then became the Pope, as being in the OSS for the United States. Many people know that almost every agent in the OSS then became an officer or an agent of the CIA.

Recently there is a new book out that I quoted on *Dialogue: Conspiracy* called *Treason For My Daily Bread*, which has to do with Cardinal Montini, naming him as the person who assisted Martin Bormann, the Nazi, and other Nazis to leave Italy and to go to South America. They went from Austria to Brenner Pass disguised as monks and this information is new about the Cardinal, Montini, the Pope working with Martin Bormann, the Nazi.

In addition, the *Gemstone File* refers to Cardinal Tisserant. He was the head of the College of Cardinals at the Vatican, and Bruce Roberts claimed that he was murdered with sodium morphate. He said Tisserant had followed the career of this present Pope, Montini, and that's the reason that he was murdered. He said that Montini had also poisoned Pope Pius XI in order to become the Pope, and that he was banished from Rome for a time being by Pope Pius XII, and then returned and became the present Pope in 1963, the year that Diem was murdered and John Kennedy was murdered.

Bruce Roberts wrote in the *Gemstone File* that Tisserant wrote all of this down in his diaries, and at the time he called the present Pope, that was Cardinal Montini then, "The Deputy of Christ at Auschwitz," meaning the extermination camp. And he said that Montini was the fulfillment of the Fatima prophecy, that "The anti-Christ shall rise to become the head of the Church." Now, this is pretty heavy stuff for a person to put in your hands, these allegations of the cardinal. It has been confirmed, the role of the present Pope in helping Martin Bormann and the Nazis escape, but the murder charges were never written up or discussed until just 1977.

A new book came out two months ago called *The Assassination, Theory and Practice*. It's put out by Richard Chameleon, by Paladin Press, in Colorado, a 1977 publication. And I'll just read you a couple of sentences from this book, which is the first book that I've seen or owned that would back up Bruce Roberts' allegations. And these are quotations from the book.

It says, "A suggestion of intrigue surrounds the death of Pope Pius XI. He died in bed in the Vatican at the age of 81. To his very last, Pope Pius XI was the deadly enemy of fascism, Benito Mussolini, and Adolf Hitler. Shortly before he died, Eugene Cardinal Tisserant was directed to convene a meeting of all Italian bishops to hear what His Holiness had to say, and what he had to say was against Nazism and Fascism. Just before the meeting was to take place, Pope Pius XI was given what they called a stimulant, it was an injection, and an hour later His Holiness was dead so that he couldn't meet with the bishops to object to Hitler's Fascism or Mussolini's Fascism."

And the author asks in this book, "Where is the evidence for assassination?" He said, "It is historical fact Claretta Petacci was Benito Mussolini's mistress for eight years. Along with Mussolini, she was executed. Petacci happened to be a fanatical pro-fascist, pro-Mussolini follower. Is it purely by chance or sheer coincidence that the father of Claretta Petacci, the woman who lived with Mussolini, his name was

Dr. Francesco Pettacci, was the senior Vatican physician who gave Pope Pius XI the injection, allegedly the stimulant, the hour before he died? Pope Pius was to meet and discuss with the bishops the evils of fascism, both German and Italian. Was Pope Pius XI murdered?"

This is in this new book on assassinations, and it is an excellent book. It just came out and it goes into the origin of assassinations from the various countries and the way they're done. It's the first book that I've read in print that has linked Marina Oswald to the CIA and that is a big jump in terms of information. That her uncle wasn't necessarily with the KGB, but branches of the CIA, was in fact true.

So Richard Chameleon asks the question, "Was the Pope murdered?" And in the *Gemstone Files*, Bruce Roberts had said in 1972 that both Tisserant and Pope Pius XI were murdered, and that would make sense if Cardinal Montini was working with the Nazis, if he was described as the "[anti-] Christ at Auschwitz," if he was in favor of letting Martin Bormann and the head Nazis go out of Italy, out of Austria to Italy to South America, and if this man was in charge of the Pope's health. His daughter lived with Benito Mussolini, and they were confirmed Fascists and the Pope was objecting to Fascism. It's a good question coming out in literature now: was the Pope murdered for his anti-Fascist stance, and why would the father of this woman who lived with Mussolini all these years be the one giving the injection to the anti-Fascist Pope? So, putting that together, the *Gemstone File* has certainly some provocative questions to ask, and I'm not putting it all down, because it's that kind of information that does wet your appetite.

There's another section of the *Gemstone Files* where he makes the statement, "Two murders had to occur before John Kennedy was killed in order to get away with this killing." And he cites Senator Estes Kefauver. He said, "His crime commission had uncovered the original deal in 1932 between Aristotle Onassis, Joe Kennedy, the father of John Kennedy, and Meyer Lansky, for the international narcotics swindling that they were doing. And Kefauver was planning a speech on the Senate floor to denounce these Mafia operations. Instead, he ate a piece of apple pie laced with sodium morphate, had a sodium morphate-induced 'heart attack' on the Senate floor."

The second murder that he says had to take place was "Phillip Graham, the editor of the *Washington Post*, who was married to Katherine Meyer." Bruce Roberts says in the *Gemstone File* that "Eugene Meyer's daughter Katherine was to take over the Mafia-controlled *Washington Post*," and they also owned *Newsweek*. And "Graham was a very strong John Kennedy worker, he put together the John Kennedy-Lyndon Johnson ticket. He was Kennedy's best friend in a struggle against the power of Onassis and the Mafia."

He said, "Katherine Meyer Graham bribed the psychiatrist to certify that her husband was insane. He was allowed out of the asylum for the weekend. He died of a gunshot wound in the head, and the death was ruled as a suicide."

I don't know and have no way to check out the links of Eugene Meyer and his links to the Mafia. This was an allegation made by Bruce Roberts that I cannot support. I do support the belief that Phillip Graham was murdered. This suicide was like the death of George de Morenschildt. I believe that he did have to die at that time and the circumstances of his death gave Katherine Graham tremendous power which she has wielded, even [in] the role of the *Washington Post* getting Richard Nixon out of office.

In their one-sided investigation, the power of the *Washington Post* and *Newsweek* combined with Henry Luce's power in *Time* and *Life* and their syndicate fortune is overwhelming. With the assassins, they work hand-in-glove with the CIA-Mafia-connected links.

I don't know how much Senator Estes Kefauver knew. I know that the man who worked with him, who would have been controlling his campaign if Kefauver ran for vice president, was Bernard Fensterwald of the CIA, one of the dirtiest dogs to walk the face of Washington. He's a Senate lawyer; he turned up at the time of Watergate and became the attorney for James McCord. I've known Fensterwald, unfortunately, for quite a few years, at least 8 or 9, and I have utmost contempt for him. I can link him at least physically in the presence of situations where people died in 2 cases just weeks, 7 or 8 weeks, after he was present. I don't trust Fensterwald, and I don't know what role he had at the time going way back with the Kefauver death, but in the *Gemstone Files*, two deaths are necessary, according to Bruce Roberts, and those were Kefauver and Phillip Graham.

I think the death of Marilyn Monroe that took place just a month or so before John Kennedy was killed was the primary death or murder that had to take place. With her relationships with John and Robert Kennedy it could hush Robert Kennedy up and they could blackmail him for not investigating his brother's murder. I think the Marilyn Monroe death was more important in my research, but for reasons that he never documents or goes into detail, Bruce Roberts said that Kefauver's death and Phillip Graham's were primary before the Kennedy assassination took place.

Where Bruce Roberts gets way off base, I believe, is in the story of the Kennedy assassination. And because that's the area that I know the best, I have to use it as a yardstick to base the value of some of the other information which I can't get into.

His account of the Dealey Plaza killing of John Kennedy goes this way: he says there were four shooters: Lee Harvey Oswald, Eugene Brading, Jimmy Fratianno and John Roselli. E. Howard Hunt and James McCord were at Dealey Plaza and Frank Sturgis was in Miami. It's the other way around. There's no proof that Lee Harvey Oswald shot any gun November 22, 1963. I don't believe that Oswald was one of the shooters at all.

There's no evidence that McCord and Hunt were at Dealey Plaza. There are no photographs of them that confirm that, but there's reason to believe Frank Sturgis was there, so I believe that Bruce Roberts has turned this around.

He goes on to say that Jimmy Fratianno shot from the Dal-Tex Building. Now, I can't say that Fratianno did or didn't shoot at the time of the Kennedy assassination. He's been called before the House Select Committee to testify about where he was, except for the fact that he did publicly say that Kennedy should be killed, and he did work with Robert Maheu and the CIA-Mafia assassination teams.

There has been no photograph of Fratianno in the Dallas-Fort Worth area, up to or after the assassination. Nobody said they saw him there or registered as any alias. That doesn't mean he wasn't there, but up until now there has been no proof that Fratianno was there at all, and I have the feeling that the assassins were better trained, as I said before on this program, in Mexico, by Albert Osborne, and that they were not this assassination team. This team may have picked up some shells at Dealey Plaza.

He says Fratianno shot from the Dal-Tex Building, but has no supportive document or photograph to prove it. Bruce Roberts said that John Roselli shot John Kennedy once on the right side of the head; blew his brains out from behind the fence. Again, this is questionable. Nobody saw John Roselli at Dealey Plaza. He was a well-known Mafia man in 1963. That doesn't mean he wasn't there. But he says categorically that Fratianno shot one shot from the Dal-Tex and Roselli did the fatal shot.

"The third point of triangulation," he claimed, "was supplied by Eugene Brading from that small pagoda at Dealey Plaza." Now, Brading is a Mafia member who later went on to join the early LaCosta gang down in San Clemente when that resort opened. Brading was seen at Dealey Plaza and he was given aliases, and he did walk over to the Dal-Tex building afterwards to make a telephone call. He could have left a gun in the bushes that one of the other men picked up.

I know Oswald didn't shoot a gun November 22, 1963. I don't know where Fratianno was. John Roselli is dead, killed right after he testified before the Senate House Select Committee. And Eugene Brading has never been called to testify before anyone, so I just give you the allegations and what I think of them.

I also have this statement here, from the *Gemstone File*. Bruce Roberts said "Lee Harvey Oswald shot John Connally twice from the Texas School Book Depository. He left the front door of the building with his rifle in the building. There was a back up man. Instead of taking it out, they left it so that Oswald would be the patsy."

I don't believe that Lee Harvey Oswald shot John Connally twice, at all. If he were going to be the patsy they would have left the bullets around the car that they were in, or in the hospital to positively link them to Lee Harvey Oswald's gun. There were no bullets found except a pristine bullet numbered "Commission Exhibit 399," and that doesn't link to Lee Harvey Oswald in any sense. There were no fingerprints on the rifle that was supposed to be Lee Harvey Oswald's and the direction of the shots couldn't have come from the sixth floor window the way that John Connally was shot.

The paraffin tests on Lee Harvey Oswald were negative on his head and hands. He couldn't have fired a weapon that day without holding the gun. There is no way to link Lee Harvey Oswald to any weapon. Therefore, I don't believe that he shot John Connally twice, and I think that Bruce Roberts is filled, in this case, with disinformation.

Marina Oswald was recently on a national television show saying that Lee Harvey Oswald wrote a letter from USSR to John Connally, saying that when I come home I want to work for you. Well, John Connally was Secretary of the Navy when Oswald was in the Navy. He was the governor of Texas at the time. And being as he [Oswald] was an important agent, when the U-2 flight was downed and Oswald was in Russia, I think that his contacts to Connally were more friendly than people believe. And I don't believe he shot anybody, and I don't believe what Bruce Roberts said about Oswald shooting John Connally.

The *Gemstone File* also says that three men were dressed as tramps, then picked up shells from the ground at Dealey Plaza, and one of the men was Howard Hunt. He said a Dallas police officer ordered two Dallas cops to go over to the boxcar and pick up the tramps. They were released without being booked. Well, many people know the book *Coup d'Etat* by A.J. Weberman, where he makes the allegations that two of the three men that were taken away were E. Howard Hunt and Frank Sturgis, and many of you have the book and you've seen the picture of the tramps.

We know that three men were paraded off and have been described as "the tramps." There is no picture of these three men picking up any shells at Dealey Plaza. He says that they were picking up shells, but there's no evidence that these three men leaned down and picked up a shell.

I've seen all of the pictures of Dealey Plaza that are available, but I've never seen a picture of these men picking up the shells. The only photograph we have is the three men being led away by men disguised as Dallas police. In the

Gemstone File he says the Dallas police ordered the cops to go over to the boxcar, but there's no tape recording of it.

There's no proof that the Dallas police were ordering anybody. There is evidence that men wearing the uniforms of the Dallas police department were escorting three men away from the scene, but later they couldn't be identified as Dallas policemen.

So this kind of reasoning or misinformation that's in the *Gemstone File* should be broken down very seriously, and you should ask for your evidence, and realize that not all of it is true, and that it's very dangerous to go by this file.

I'll read you some more quotes. He said, "The rest is history, after John Kennedy was killed. Aristotle Onassis was so confident of his control over the police, the media, the FBI, the CIA, the Secret Service, and the United States judicial systems, that he had JFK murdered before the eyes of the nation, then systematically bought off, killed off, or frightened off all witnesses, and then put a 75-year seal of secrecy over the entire matter." Now, if you think seriously about that statement, you realize that Aristotle Onassis didn't have that kind of power. He didn't control Earl Warren, he never was around the United States to control the Dallas police department. People like Niarchos, his competitor, or Tom Pappas, the Greek shipping oil clerk who had entree into the White House with Spiro Agnew and Richard Nixon and the Rockefellers had more political clout than any Aristotle Onassis had in this country.

And it seems that the whole *Gemstone File* has two scapegoats: one is Onassis and the other is the Mafia. Onassis had some kind of information. But I think that Onassis was a victim. I think that Jacqueline Kennedy was sent to Onassis to babysit him. He put up a large amount of money to try and find out who killed John Kennedy and there's been stories that that's the reason his own son was murdered.

And then Niarchos murdered Onassis's ex-wife. She was murdered and the man wasn't even held for charges. And Onassis then died alone and had to kick out Maria Callas and make way for Jackie. I think that Onassis was curious and wanted to know the way that the narcotics traffic was going to flow; he has a big investment here and so forth, but I can't believe that Onassis has this clout over the entire

Warren Commission or Lyndon Johnson. He dealt with a different ball of wax at a different level, and he didn't have the control over the system.

Furthermore, Onassis is dead and all of these witnesses now that are being killed off are escalating: people like George de Morenschildt and Gary Powers and William Sullivan of the FBI, Charles Nicoletti, all these deaths, the last six FBI men that died in six months that I've talked about. The witnesses are dying like flies, and Onassis isn't around to reap the benefit.

So, for some reason or other, Bruce Roberts had a fixation about the power of Aristotle Onassis. And I think, in the end, when the power control group took over, Onassis was a victim like Richard Nixon and he was under the control of people. He became victimized, and it was not Onassis who had the power.

Now the Gemstone goes into various payoffs that people involved in the assassination had, and I tend to agree with him on that point. He talks about John Roselli who got a $250,000 finders fee for bringing Howard Hughes to Vegas in '67 – that was just a clear-cut payoff and may have had something to do with his links to Jack Ruby, and having Ruby kill Lee Harvey Oswald. He cited Jimmy Fratianno getting a $109,000 loan, a non-repayable – California – and started a trucking company in the Imperial Valley. Eugene Brading became a charter member of LaCosta Country Club, the Mafia heaven. Gerald Ford was appointed president of the United States by Richard Nixon. John McCone, who covered this up, former head of the CIA, became a member of the ITT board of directors. Richard Helms became CIA director. Leon Jaworski became the special Watergate prosecutor. He calls that "government in theater."

And then two people who got their reverse payoffs, who were hurt by some of this assassination inquiry, was a Doctor "Red" Duke he cites, who dug two bullets out of John Connally and saved his life, and then was shipped to Afghanistan by the CIA to hush up the information about the bullets in John Connally. And then he cites Jim Garrison, who had all his witnesses shot out from under him, and was framed and charged with bribery and extortion.

There is no doubt that there was a lot of payoffs for people that covered up the Kennedy assassination.

Bruce Roberts goes into Daniel Ellsberg. He said, "In May 1971, folk hero Daniel Ellsberg, the war hawk from Rand Corporation who designed the missile ring around the Iron Curtain, released the fake *Pentagon Papers*. It distracted attention from John Kennedy's death, Robert Kennedy's death, Martin Luther King's murder and Howard Hughes's disappearance." He said, "The *Pentagon Papers* were designed by Ellsberg and Rand chief MacNamara who became the World Bank head to make the Vietnamese War look like one of those incredibly dumb mistakes." Now, I take issue with the *Gemstone File* on this and many other points. I'll explain why on this issue. If the purpose of Ellsberg's coming forward was to hide the assassination information, it had the opposite effect. The very first broadcast I had on KLRB was in May, 1971, and I was asked to analyze the *Pentagon Papers* and what it meant at the time. I said that the *Pentagon Papers* was maybe a moment of truth coming through, and that the real truth to go over the air would be the killing of John Kennedy and Robert Kennedy and Martin Luther King, and that's when I began my programs here on this station and we've been on six and a half years.

The *Pentagon Papers* hardly hushed up the political assassinations, but opened up a Pandora's box. Another point is that I have read the *Pentagon Papers* very carefully, and in them Daniel Ellsberg makes it very clear by printing the State Department papers that the death of John Kennedy began the escalation of the war in Vietnam; that November 24, 1963, for no noticeable reason, the Northern Vietnamese came down, just the exact place where they had been up to the time of the death of Kennedy, but the South Vietnamese escalated the war with the American troops.

And he showed in the *Pentagon Papers* that we had been planning this war for a long time. Evidently we had to have Kennedy dead before they could escalate and begin the war, and Lyndon Johnson was their man. So Bruce Roberts is very unfair about that.

I think that the *Pentagon Papers* also showed our American assassination team for what it was. It showed very clearly the murder of Diem and his brother-in-law, implicated

Henry Cabot Lodge in Washington, the powers that be in Washington. It was the first glimpse of the assassination teams running from Washington, D.C. that we're spreading all over the world.

The *Pentagon Papers* was a major contribution. And Bruce Roberts has put it down as being fake. A lot of people have tried to discredit Daniel Ellsberg. If they do, they haven't read the papers. I've read them and I believe that they were a major contribution.

After they were published, Lewis Tackwood of the Los Angeles police department came forward and told about Squad 19 and the plans to kill Nixon, and about the Watergate team in the White House. He identified with Daniel Ellsberg and began to spill stories. Tackwood came forward because Daniel Ellsberg did, and then a man named Larry Shears came forward and talked about how Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms were going to kill Cesar Chavez. They saved the life of Cesar Chavez by exposing the assassination teams – the Treasury Department. And then Mr. Martinez came into the Chicano riot in Los Angeles – and agent provocateurs. Ellsberg was a source of inspiration to Colonel Hebert over Vietnam. He was a major contributor to getting some truth out. Sure, there's things he knows that he didn't tell, and he could tell us a lot more, but I don't think the burden was on Daniel Ellsberg. I think he did a magnificent job.

There are many things about the Gemstone papers which I like, there are many which I know are absolutely wrong. You have to read history, you have to read seven or eight hundred books like I've done to make an analysis, but I did promise you I would go into it and you can get a copy of the Skeleton Key yourself and read it. I think that's enough for me to cover on *Dialogue: Conspiracy*, and I hope it's clear to you, and the best thing you can do is then read it for yourself.

The Kiwi Gemstone

The *Gemstone File* was written in many segments over a period of years by an Amerikan named Bruce Roberts. Parts of the File were released to certain Amerikans in 1969. The number of pages is well over a thousand. It has been possible to verify some of the statements made, but the research facilities required to verify the entire story would be monumental. Those who transmit the story do so because it makes sense in the light of current events. Although parts of it seem improbable, in general it rings true. Readers will have to make up their own minds as to it's authenticity.

Since the scope of the work is so large, and the events described are so complex and interlocking, it may be more easily understood with this skeleton outline of the Gemstone thesis. Individual papers can then be read with greater comprehension. Following are some of the major points from the early pages of the book, then we jump ahead to take excerpts from the extensive section dealing with the Mafia takeover of Aotearoa in recent years.

1932: Onassis, a Greek ship owner, who made his first million selling "Turkish tobacco" (opium) in Argentina, worked out a profitable deal with Joseph Kennedy, Eugene Meyer, and Meyer Lansky importing bootleg liquor into the U.S.

1934: Onassis, Rockefeller and the Seven Sisters (major oil companies) signed an agreement, outlined in an oil cartel memo: Screw the Arabs out of their oil, transport it on

Onassis's ships. This was done, and those who did it considerably increased their already vast wealth.

Roberts, studying journalism and physics at the University of Wisconsin, learned these things via personal contacts. His special interest was crystallography: the creation of synthetic rubies, the original Gemstone experiment.

1936-1940: Eugene Meyer buys the *Washington Post* and other Mafia buy other papers, radio stations, etc. to gain control of news media. As the war approaches, news censorship of all major media goes into effect.

1941-1945: World War II, which was very profitable for Onassis, Rockefeller, Kennedy, the Roosevelts, I.G. Farben, ITT, etc. Onassis and Rockefeller barter oil for German oil tankers. ITT Focke-Wulf planes bomb the Allies and it's telephones pass information to German submarines. I.G. Farben builds synthetic fuel & rubber plant at Auchwitz. Onassis & Rockefeller sell arms and oil to both sides. At the end of the war, Nazi "experts" assimilated into the Pentagon infiltrate to highest levels. Allen Dulles, in partnership with "ex-Nazi" General Reinhard Gehlen, forms a new agency: the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA).

1946: Eugene Meyer becomes head of the World Bank. "Ex-Nazi" Klaus Barbie (the Butcher of Lyons) smuggled to Bolivia by CIA helps set up P2 Lodge and Ordine Nuovo with Italian neo-fascist Licio Gelli.

November, 1948: Onassis and Rockefeller form a new company, Aramco, and devise the 'Golden Gimmick' - oil royalties deducted from companies' tax bill.

1949: Onassis buys U.S. war surplus "Liberty Ships" in questionable (illegal) purchase. Lawyer Burke Marshall helps him. Rockefeller protege Eugene Black takes over the World Bank and later appointed to the Board of ITT.

1953: Seven Sisters' oil profits in Iran threatened by Mossadeq. CIA's Kermit Roosevelt organises coup with money funneled through CIA's Deak Bank. Shah installed and secret "participant's agreement" drawn up by Seven Sisters' lawyer, John McCloy.

1954: Onassis uses I.G. Farben's Prince Bernhard to preside at first secret meeting of Bilderberg group held at Oosterbeck, Holland. Members include U.S. and European financiers, government officials etc. Bilderberg to play a key role in setting up EEC, NATO, Cold War strategy, and the Trilateral Commission.

1956: Howard Hughes, Texas millionaire, is meanwhile buying his way into control of the U.S. electoral process with a view to his own personal gain. He buys senators, governors, etc. He finally buys his last politician: newly-elected Vice-President Nixon, via a quarter-million dollar non-repayable loan to Nixon's brother, Donald.

Early 1957: Nixon repays the favour by having Internal Revenue Service and Treasury grant tax-free status (refused twice before) to Hughes Medical Foundation, sole owner of Hughes Aircraft, creating a tax-free non-accountable money funnel or "laundry" for whatever Hughes wanted to do. U.S. government anti-trust suits against Hughes's TWA airline and other enterprises also shelved.

March 1957: Onassis carries out a carefully planned action. He has Hughes kidnapped from his bungalow at the Beverly Hills Hotel, using Hughes's own men (Chester Davis et al.) The other Hughes men either quit, get fired, or stay on in the new Onassis organization. A few days later, Mayor Cannon (now Senator Cannon) of Nevada, arranges a fake marriage to Jean Peters to explain Hughes's sudden loss of interest in chasing movie stars. Hughes, battered and brain damaged by Mafia treatment, is taken to the Emerald Isles Hotel in the Bahamas, where the entire top floor has been rented for the "Hughes party." Hughes is shot full of heroin for 30 days then taken off to a cell on Onassis's Skorpios Island, where he spent the rest of his life. Onassis now has a much larger power base in the U.S.: the Hughes empire, as well as control over Nixon and other Hughes-purchased politicians. L. Wayne Rector, who had been acting as Hughes's "double" since 1955, now becomes "Hughes."

September 1957: Onassis calls the Appalachin meeting to inform U.S. Mafia leaders of his control of Hughes, and his adoption of Hughes's method of acquiring power: buying high-ranking politicians en masse to gain control of the U.S. government "legally."

Also in 1957: Joseph Kennedy takes John F. & Jackie to see Onassis on his yacht, introduce John, and remind Onassis of an old Mafia promise: the presidency for a Kennedy. Onassis says sure.

And so it goes! To jump ahead to the Kiwi connections, by which time Onassis has died and been replaced by Rockefeller as Mafia supremo, we cross to the ocean near the Chatham Islands - the Great South Basin:

18th May 1967: Texas oil billionaire, Nelson Bunker Hunt, using a sophisticated satellite technique to detect global deposits, discovers a huge oil source near Aotearoa in the Great South Basin.

10th June 1967: Hunt & Kiwi Finance Minister reach an agreement: Hunt will receive sole drilling rights, and Muldoon will receive a $100,000 non-repayable loan from the Placid Oil Co. (Hunt's).

8th September 1967: Placid Oil granted drilling rights to the Great South Basin.

10th May 1968: Hawaiian meeting between Onassis and top lieutenants, William Colby & Gerald Parsky, to discuss establishment of a new front company in Australia - Australasian & Pacific Holdings Limited - to be managed by Michael Hand. Using Onassis-Rockefeller banks, Chase Manhattan and Shroders, Travelodge Management Ltd. sets up another front to link the operation to the U.S.

Onassis now crowned head of the Mafia; Colby (head of C.I.A. covert operations in S.E. Asia) ran the Onassis heroin operations in the Golden Triangle (Laos, Burma, Thailand) with 200 Green Beret mercenaries - i.e. the Phoenix Programme.

Gerald Parsky, deputy to ex-CIA/FBI Robert Maheu in the Howard Hughes organisation took orders from Onassis and was made responsible for laundering skim money from the Onassis casino operations in Las Vegas and the Bahamas.

Mid-July, 1968: Placid Oil Co. and the Seven Sisters (major Oil companies) begin Great South Basin oil exploration - Hunt finances 45.5% of exploration costs, Gulf Oil 14.5%, Shell (U.S.) 10%, B.P. Oil 10%, Standard Oil California 10%, Mobil 6.5%, and Arco 6.5%

12th October 1968: Hunt & Seven Sisters announce confirmation of new oil source comparable to the Alaskan North Slope - gas reserves estimated at 150 times larger than the Kapuni Field.

Early 1969: Mafia consolidates it's banking operations: David Rockefeller becomes Chairman of Chase Manhattan; Wriston at Citibank, & Michelle Sindona captures the Vatican Bank. Partnership Pacific launched by Bank of America, Bank of Tokyo, & Bank of New South Wales.

24th February 1969: Onassis calls Council meeting in Washington to discuss strategy to monopolise the Great South Basin discovery. Council members included Nelson Rockefeller and John McCloy, who managed the Seven Sisters, and David Rockefeller, managing the Mafia's banking operations. McCloy outlines the plan to capture all oil and mineral resources in Australia & Aotearoa.

10th March 1969: Parsky & Colby use Australasian & Pacific Holdings to set up a 'front' company in Australia. Using own banks - Mellon Bank and Pittsburgh National Bank, they buy control of near-bankrupt Industrial Equity Ltd (IEL), managed by Kiwi, Ron Brierley. A'asian & Pacific Holdings' consultant Bob Seldon helps Michael Hand set up the new organisation. Seldon took orders from Mellon & Pittsburgh National Banks, while Hand was directly responsible to Gerald Parsky & William Colby. Ron Brierley would take orders from Hand.

24th July 1969: New board established for IEL included Hand, Seldon, Ron Brierley, plus two Brierley associates - Frank Nugen & Bob Jones. Both are appointed consultants to A'asian & Pacific Holdings Ltd. Jones will help Brierley launder funds into real estate (Brierley/Jones Investments) while Seldon & Nugen will channel funds into oil and mineral resources through IEL.

October 1969: Chase Manhattan begins a new operation in Australia with National Bank Aust. & A.C. Goods Associates - Chase-NBA. J.C. Fletcher appointed chairman of Seven Sisters' company - British Petroleum (NZ).

17th February 1970: Gerald Parsky sets up a new heroin-dollar laundry in Australia - Australian International Finance Corp., using the Irving Trust Co., New York.

April 1970: Onassis, Rockefeller, & the Seven Sisters begin setting up the Shadow World Government using the Illuminati-controlled banks and the transnational corporations. In Melbourne, they set up the Australian International Finance Corp. using:

*Irving Trust Co., N.Y. - linked to Shell Oil, Continental Oil, & Phillips Petroleum.

*Crocker Citizens National - linked to Atlantic Richfield (Arco), & Standard Oil of California, which is Rockefeller-controlled.

*Bank of Montreal - Petro Canada, Penarctic Oils, Alberta Gas, Gulf Oil.

*Australia & New Zealand Bank (ANZ).

Meantime, Japanese members of One World Government move into Aotearoa, helped by finance minister R. Muldoon; Mitsubishi & Mitsui make a profitable deal buying up rights to iron-sands, helped by Marcona Corp. (US) and Todd (Shell, BP, Todd). Todd rewarded with sole Kiwi franchise for Mitsubishi vehicles. Muldoon helps Mitsui (Oji Paper Co.) obtain a lucrative 320-million cubic foot Kaiangaroa Forest contract with Carter Holt.

November 1970: Fletchers extend the Rockefeller Travelodge operation by buying control of NZ's largest travel company - Atlantic & Pacific Travel.

Early 1971: Onassis & Rockefeller begin global operation to buy influence for the One World Government concept. They use Lockheed, Northrop, & Litton Industries' agent Adnan Khashoggi, to organise operations in the Middle East, Iran, & Indonesia. I.C.I. set up $2.5 million slush fund for Australia & Aotearoa.

Finance Minister Muldoon changes law to allow Mafia-controlled banks to begin operations in NZ. Links also made by N.Z.I. (in preparation for Paxus control) with Hong Kong & Shanghai Bank; Wells Fargo with Broadbank; Chase Manhattan with General Finance; Bank of America & Barclays with Fletchers and Renouf in NZ United Corp. All members of the Business Round Table org.

Late 1971: Gulf Oil & their man Brierley begin organising chains of Shell companies and dummy corporations to conceal their takeover operations of oil, gas & mineral resources, and related industries such as vehicle franchises, vehicle spare parts, & finance services - all part of the Seven Sisters' controlled car culture. To extend links to the U.S. banking operations, they buy control of I.S.A.S. (NSW) & I.S.A.S. (Qld.) which hold sole franchise for construction & mining equipment produced by International Harvester Credit Co. which is part of Chase Manhattan Bank and associated with First National Bank Chicago (Chairman Sullivan also Exec. Vice-President of Chase Manhattan), Continental Illinois (linked with CIA and Michele Sindona of Vatican Bank), & Rockefeller's Standard Oil of Indiana (AMOCO). I.S.A.S. (Qld.) also has strategic holdings in North Flinders Mines, Flinders Petroleum, and Apollo International Minerals.

February 1972: Onassis & Rockefeller help their associate Adnan Khashoggi buy the Security Pacific National Bank in California and take control of the United California Bank through CIA-linked Lockheed Aircraft Corp. Both banks used by Onassis & Khashoggi to funnel bribes & payoffs to captive

Japanese and other crooked politicians, via the CIA's Deak Bank. Security Pacific also used to launder over $2m for Nixon's re-election campaign. Khashoggi buys 21% of Southern Pacific Properties, which is the majority stockholder in Travelodge (Aust.), thereby establishing direct links to Aotearoa, & UEB and Fletchers through its equity links with Travelodge (NZ).

April 1972: Mafia banking operations expanded through New Hebrides (Vanuatu) with establishment of Australian International Ltd to finance Pacific development by the oil companies (Seven Sisters). Banks involved include Irving Trust, N.Y., Bank of Montreal, Crocker Intl, ANZ Bank, and the Mitsubishi Bank, whose president, Nakamaru, is appointed Chairman.

26th May 1972: Gerald Parsky installs Michele Sindona as 'owner' of Franklin National Bank, helped by the Gambino Mafia family and David Kennedy, chairman of Continental Illinois Bank and Nixon's Secretary of the Treasury.

Pacific Basin Economic Council conference in Wellington. Vice-President Shigeo Nagano also chairman of Nippon Steel and a member of Onassis and other World Government organisations. Chairman of the NZ sub-committee J. Mowbray is also general manager of the National Bank (NZ).

Meanwhile, Michele Sindona, acting as the go-between for the Mafia and the CIA, was the conduit between U.S. and European banks. Sindona's Vatican Bank and associates Calvi's Ambrosiano Bank were used to finance CIA neo-fascist Italian/Latin American operations through Licio Gelli's P2 Lodge, which helped to organise the 'death squads' in Argentina, Uruguay, & Chile. They were aided by P2 members such as Klaus Barbie (the Butcher of Lyons) and Jose Rega, organiser of the AAA in Argentina.

16th August 1972: Gulf Oil associate Bob Seldon helps establish new banking operation; first Kiwi international banks include Bank of NZ, D.F.C. (Aust.), NZI, Morgan Guaranty Trust, Morgan Granfel, and S.F. Warburg.

Fletchers begin expansion overseas with deals signed in Indonesia, Fiji, and New Guinea.

December 1972: Norman Kirk elected Prime Minister of Aotearoa.

February 1973: Gerald Parsky, William Colby, Michael Hand, Frank Nugen, & Bob Seldon move to further consolidate the Mafia banking operations. In Aotearoa, they acquire 20% of Fletcher subsidiary Marac, using the Security Pacific National Bank and helped by Marac corporate secretary Alan Hawkins. Frank Nugan & Michael Hand use Fletcher and Renouf and their NZ United Corp. to link with IEL and Brierley Investments through cross-shareholding agreement. In Australia, the Nugan Hand Bank begins operations, with 30% of the stock held by A'asian & Pacific Holdings (100% Chase Manhattan Bank), 25% by CIA's Air America (known as Air Opium), 25% by South Pacific Properties, and 20% held by Seldon, Nugen, and Hand.

The Irving Trust Bank's New York branch establishes U.S. links between the CIA and Nugen Hand Bank - a worldwide network of 22 banks set up to:

(a) launder money from Onassis heroin operations in the Golden Triangle and Iran;

(b) as a CIA funnel to pro-U.S. political parties in Europe and Latin America, including P2;

(c) a spying conduit for information from Cambodia, Laos, Vietnam, & Thailand;

(d) finance arms smuggled to Libya, Indonesia, South America, Middle East, & Rhodesia, using the CIA's Edward Wilson.

Heroin flown into Australia by CIA's Air America and trans-shipped to Onassis lieutenant in Florida, Santos Trafficante Jnr., assisted by Australian Federal Bureau of Narcotics officials and co-ordinated by CIA's Ray Cline.

14th June 1973: Inauguration of the Onassis's shadow world government - the Trilateral Commission. Includes over 200 members from the U.S., Europe, and Japan - bankers, government officials, trans-national corporations' top executives, trade unionists, etc. Of the world's largest corporations, 24 directly represented, and dozens more through interlocking directorships.

*Trilateralist strategy: monopolisation of the world's resources, production facilities, labour technology, markets, transport, and finance. These aims backed up by the U.S. military & industrial complexes that are already controlled and backed up by the CIA.

18th August 1973: Ray Cline & Michael Hand meet in Adelaide to discuss CIA plans to establish a spying operation in Aotearoa.

September 1973: Seagrams, with strong links to Chase Manhattan Bank of Montreal and Toronto Dominion Bank, buys 2,800 acres of prime land in Marlborough, helped by Peter Maslen.

26th February 1974: Michael Hand meets Bob Jones in Wellington to implement plans for the CIA's new spying operations - countries targeted include France, Chile, West Germany, & Israel. Using the Brierley/Jones investment funnel, Jones buys building in Willeston Street which will be rented to France and Chile, another at Plimmer Steps to house West Germany and Israel. CIA will set up eavesdropping communications center inside the Willeston Street building and another at 163 The Terrace which will link with equipment installed in the Plimmer Steps building. Four CIA technicians will run the whole operation.

April 1974: Finance Minister Rowling appoints Ron Trotter to the Overseas Investment Commission, whose chairman, G. Lau, is also a member of the Todd Foundation (Shell/BP/Todd) investment board.

Mid-1974: Goff Whitlam & Norman Kirk begin a series of moves absolutely against the Mafia Trilateralists. Whitlam refuses to waive restrictions on overseas borrowing to finance Alwest Aluminium Consortium of Rupert Murdoch, BHP, and R.J. Reynolds. Whitlam had also ended Vietnam War support, blocked uranium mining, and wanted more control over U.S. secret spy bases, - e.g. Pine Gap, Northwest Cape. Kirk had introduced a new, tough, anti-Monopoly Bill and had tried to redistribute income from big companies to the labour force through price regulation and a wages policy. Kirk had also rejected plans to build a second smelter at Aramoana near Dunedin, and was preparing the Petroleum Amendment Bill to give more control over Kiwi oil resources. Kirk had found out that Hunt Petroleum, drilling in the Great South Basin, had discovered a huge resource of oil, comparable in size to the North Sea or Alaskan North Slope. Gas reserves alone now estimated at 30 times larger than Kapuni and oil reserves of at least 20 billion barrels - enough for Aotearoa to be self-sufficient for years. Oil companies completely hushed up these facts. To have announced a vast new oil source would probably have meant a decline in world oil prices, which would not have allowed OPEC's and Onassis's plans for the Arabs to eventuate. Aotearoa could be exploited at a later date, particularly since the North Sea operations were about to come on stream - Kirk was the last to hold out.

September 1974: Death of Norman Kirk. According to CIA sources, Kirk was killed by the Trilateralists using Sodium Morphate. Rowling's first act as Prime Minister was to withdraw Kirk's Anti-Monopoly Bill and the Petroleum Amendment Bill. Later, Rowling was to be rewarded with ambassadorship to Washington. Incidentally, the Shah of Iran was murdered the same way as Kirk on his arrival in the U.S.A.

6th October 1974: Ray Cline implements William Colby's plan to oust Australian Prime Minister Whitlam, Nugen Hand Bank finances pay-offs to Malcolm Fraser and other pro-U.S. politicians. A joint bugging operation commences between the CIA and ASIO'. Rupert Murdoch, playing his part, uses his newspapers and TV network to spread lies and misinformation. Whitlam, as well as refusing to waive restrictions on overseas borrowing to finance the aluminium consortium, had plans to ensure that all corporations were at least 50% Australian-owned. This interfered with the Seven Sisters' plans to build three oil refineries at Cape Northumberland in South Australia to exploit the Great South Basin discovery.

December 1974: Australian Governor-General John Kerr joins Ray Cline's payroll, and received his first pay-off of

US$200,000 credited to his account number 767748 at the Singapore branch of the Nugen Hand Bank.

18th February 1975: Governor Kerr sacks the Whitlam government.

August 1975: Rowling re-introduces unrecognisable Commerce Bill, designed to aid monopolisation of the Kiwi economy and repeals the News Media Ownership Act, allowing for more foreign ownership of Kiwi media. The new legislation does not define monopoly, competition, or stipulate permissable maximum market share, or even ascertain what the public interest is - resulting in a sell-out to big business and the Mafia.

December 1975: Election battle between Rowling and Muldoon. Oil companies pour thousands of dollars into Muldoon's campaign via National Bank (NZ), whose General Manager Mowbray is also a member of Todd Foundation's investment board. Director Tudhope also managing Director of Shell Oil and chairman of Shell/BP/Todd. Muldoon wins.

February 1976: Muldoon implements pre-election secret agreement with the NZ Seven Sisters' oil representatives from Shell/BP/Todd for helping to finance the National Party campaign. Muldoon removes the $3/barrel oil levy for the NZ Refining Company, which increases the oil companies' profits by 100% at the taxpayers' expense, and with all future oil prospecting licences, the government has the option to take 51% of any discovery without meeting exploration costs. This is designed to discourage further exploration, thereby keeping the lid on the Great South Basin discovery. Meanwhile in Australia, the new Prime Minister Malcolm Fraser resumes uranium mining and opens the way for takeover of mineral resources with big tax breaks for oil exploration, coal, and mining. Muldoon returns a favour to the oil companies by arranging a loan of US$200-million for Maui Gas Development for Shell/BP/Todd.

September 1976: With captive politicians in place in both Australia and Aotearoa, the Trilateralists can now proceed with their strategy of takeover of the economy and exploitation of natural resources. "In New Zealand, the elimination of unnecessary competition is fundamental to a sound economy," says Brierley. Parsky and Colby use Brierley/Jones Investments as a vehicle to buy into A.B. Consolidated Holdings in Aotearoa. An associate of Jones, Pat Goodman, is appointed consultant of A'asian & Pacific Holdings.

November 1976: The Mafia set up a Kiwi money funnel using Brierley's City Realities. National Insurance Co. acquires 33% of the stock. Largest stockholders in National Insurance are the U.S. Firemen's Fund - whose chairman Myron du Bain is also Vice-Chairman of American Express (Amex). Chairman of IEL-linked International Harvester, Archie McCardell, is also an Amex director. Amex linked with Chase Manhattan and Seven Sisters' Texaco and Mobil. Du Bain also director of CIA-linked United California Bank, which is a partner in Commercial Pacific Trust. To complete the money funnel, National Insurance becomes a stockholder in Chase Manhattan's Chase-NBA. Brierley's declared assets reach $100-million, with shareholders' capital of only $2.5-million - all cash acquisitions.

3rd February 1977: Parsky & Colby close down the Brierley/Jones Investments and open up separate channels for Brierley and Jones. Jones will be supplied with laundered funds via Sydney branch of the Nugen Hand Bank, while for Ron Brierley, Gerald Parsky uses Myron du Bain's United California Bank. Funds to be laundered via Chase Manhattan Bank through National Insurance to City Realties, and via United California Bank through COMPAC (Vanuatu) to National Insurance and City Realties. To expand the Brierley-IEL front, Parsky establishes Industrial Equity Pacific (Hong Kong).

September 1977: Brierley's new holding company begins operations - A.B. Consolidated, with B. Hancox General Manager, while newly-appointed directors include S. Cushing, B. Judge, O. Gunn, and P. Goodman. Linked with Renouf, Fletcher, and Papps through IEL/NZ United Corps.

*Strategy: To target and divide key sectors of the economy for takeover, exploitation and monopolisation. Operations to extend to use Hong Kong facility, IEP. Fletchers to extend the Khashoggi/Rockefeller Travelodge operation by taking holdings in Vacation Hotels and Intercontinental Properties (chairman is Renouf).

October 1977: Muldoon and John Todd (Shell/BP/Todd) sign an agreement: NZ government would take 24.5% holding in the Great South Basin for $1.65 billion. Hunt would reduce his holding from 45.5% to 27.5% and Arco would sell its 6.5%.

*Reason: Hunt did not possess the technology to pump oil from deep water; Gulf possessed the technology but did not tell Hunt. Arco was not told anything and were swindled out of its concession.

November 1977: Muldoon introduces the S.I.S. Amendment Bill, designed to keep the economy free of obstruction and to uncover obstructive elements. Telephone taps, mail tampering and other surveillance methods approved after the CIA input on the contents of the legislation.

Late 1977: Muldoon travels to the U.S. to meet top Rockefeller officials, including Trilateralists' Deputy Secretary of State, Warren Christopher, and Richard Holbrooke, who were in charge of the new South Pacific Desk at the State Dept. established by Rockefeller to target exploitation of both Aotearoa and Australia. In Los Angeles, Muldoon meets top Rockefeller officials Robert Anderson (Rockwell chairman, also Director of Khashoggi's Security Pacific National Bank) & P. Larkin (Rockwell director, also chairman of Executive Committee of Security Pacific National Bank and director of Marac).

April 1978: Muldoon sets up Petrocorp. Kiwi taxpayers pay for the exploration costs but the oil companies control all distribution outlets. Muldoon blocks development of Maui B as restructured supplies mean higher prices and bigger profits for Shell/BP/Todd. South Island gas market not developed as Great South Basin fields are closer than Kapuni.

Plans develop for re-opening of National Parks for mineral exploitation.

22nd July 1978: Director of Australian Federal Bureau of Narcotics suspends investigation into the Nugen Hand Bank after pressure from CIA & Australian politicians, particularly Malcolm Fraser. Brierley's declared assets reach $200-million, with shareholders' funds only $17-million.

May 1979: Trilateral Commission secretary Zbigniew Brzezinski appoints Muldoon as chairman of Board of Governors of IMF/World Bank, on orders from David Rockefeller. Muldoon would head three-man administration committee which included Canadian finance minister Mitchell Sharp, key figure in the Mafia Council and the Trilateral Commission. Australian Treasurer McMahon is also involved.

9th June 1979: Michael Hand, Frank Nugan, Brierley, and James Fletcher meet in Hand's Sydney penthouse to discuss the establishment of the New Zealand Mafia organisation.

Mid-1979: Gulf Oil, using its man Brierley, begins operations designed to capture key sectors of the economy. A.B. Consolidated restructured into the Goodman Group and Goodman to run operations but with the majority of the stock held by IEL and Brierley using Shell companies plus dummy corporations.

*Strategy: To take over food and produce resources. Brierley and Fletcher restructured a small private company, H.W. Smith, using Cyril Smith as Chairman but with key executives Judge, Collins, and McKenzie. Bob Jones helps. Private company used, as no commerce commission control, accounts not published, and no public disclosure of transactions.

Bunting is established as a Shell company, and the South Island is targeted for asset-stripping and takeover, as well as key sectors of the automobile industry. Unlimited funds channelled through City Realties, NZUC, and Marac. UEB extends Travelodge operations by buying control of

Transholdings, which has strategic holdings in Vacation Hotels and Tourist Corp. Fiji Holdings.

17th August 1979: NZ Mafia inaugural meeting in Sydney including Hand, Brierley, Fletcher, Goodman, Ron Trotter, Alan Hawkins, and L. Papps. Key sectors of the economy would be taken over - food, using Goodman; forestry and farming, using Fletcher and Trotter; property, using Brierley and Jones. Brierley, Hand, and Papps would be responsible for banking, insurance, and finance, while Hand and Hawkins would be responsible for setting up new laundry channels into Aotearoa. The economy would be taken over using cheap loans of less than 5%, while consumers would pay 28%.

October 1979: BP Oil begins $100-million joint venture deal with Fletcher and Trotter at Tasman. Muldoon makes secret deal with oil companies which effectively robs Kiwi taxpayers by giving Shell/BP/Todd the Maui Gas deal. Normally the granting of drilling rights on public land is done using a worldwide system which incorporates an auction tender system. Muldoon bypassed this. Also Shell/BP/Todd pays no tax on Kapuni profits, while putting funds into Maui development.

19th November 1979: Secret meeting in Auckland between Muldoon, Fletcher, and Trotter to transfer 43% Tasman Pulp & Paper shares held by NZ government to Challenge Corp. (chairman is Trotter) and Fletchers. Tasman has lucrative 75-year contract for cheap timber signed in 1955. Muldoon paid off with a $1-million non-repayable loan of $500,000 to be paid into account number 8746665 at New Hebrides branch (Vanuatu) of the Australian International Bank.

November 1979: Muldoon drops restrictions on foreign investment. AMAX (subsidiary of Standard Oil of California) captures the Martha Hill gold mine at Waihi. Muldoon (instructed by Rockefeller) unveils the government's plans to form Aotearoa into an offshore production base for the multinational corporations, as benefits include government export incentives, stable government, cheap labour, and so on.

27th November 1979: Gerald Parsky's lieutenant, David Kennedy, meets Muldoon to deliver US$100,000 cash to Muldoon for implementing Mafia Think Big plans. Muldoon introduces the National Development Bill with fast-track legislation, to keep the economy free of obstruction for long-term monopolisation. C.E.R. plan introduced, designed to integrate the economies of Australia and Aotearoa with the Trilateral Commission for the purpose of exploiting the South Pacific countries and as a back-door entrance into China - the world's largest untapped consumer market. Aotearoa is also the closest country to Antarctica, which has a vast mineral resource for future exploitation.

17th January 1980: $500,000 deposited in Muldoon's account number 8746665 at the Australian International Bank, being the final payment for the Tasman deal.

May 1980: Mafia's Nugen Hand banking operation crashes after Frank Nugan killed. Death ruled as a suicide, even though no fingerprints found on the rifle. Maloney, Houghton, Yates and Hand shred important documents, but miss some. CIA helps Hand and bank president Donald Beasley escape to the U.S. The CIA and ASIO cover everything up. Beasley appointed president of Miami City National Bank, run by Alberto Dugue for 'laundering' profits from the CIA Columbian cocaine operation. There is a probability that Michael Hand killed Frank Nugan because of his involvement with Hand's fiancee.

23rd June 1980: NZ Mafia, including Brierley, Fletcher, Trotter, Jones, Hawkins, Goodman, and Papps, meet in Wellington to discuss merger of Fletcher Challenge and Tasman. In order to replace Nugan Hand Bank's 22 worldwide branches, quick moves are made to buy control of NZ Insurance (NZI) by NZ Mafia, using Brierley, thereby capturing an established worldwide organisation with strong links to the Rockefeller organisation through the Hong Kong & Shanghai

Bank, which is also linked to the CIA through it's subsidiary, World Finance Corp.

Late 1980: Fletchers, with strong Rockefeller links, obtains lucrative contracts on U.S. bases in the Pacific and joint ventures in Saudi Arabia & Iraq. Control extended over Kiwi natural resources - Fletcher Challenge & Tasman Pulp & Paper merged. NZFP takes control of MSD Spiers & Moore Le Messurier (Aust.) Brierley begins joint venture with NZFP through Williamson Jeffrey. IEL, through Goodman, buys 20% of Watties & begins cross-shareholding agreement. Goodman continues buying up control of NZ bakeries & flour mills.

February 1981: TNL, Brierley, AMOIL, and MIM Holdings begin joint gold-mining operation. MIM major shareholder is ASARCO (U.S.) whose chairman, Barber, is also a director of Chase Manhattan Bank. NZ Insurance and South British merger. Parliamentarians for World Order - Richard Prebble elected one of 12 councillors.

12th March 1981: Brierley calls secret meeting in Auckland, which includes Jones, Hawkins, Papps, & Burton Kanter, to discuss transfer of the Fletcher Challenge and UEB hotel operations to the Singapore front company controlled by the Pritzker family.

20th July 1981: Parsky, Brierley, & Seldon meet in Sydney with two new members, Kerry Packer and Alan Bond. Chase Manhattan and Security Pacific National Bank will acquire 60% of Packer's company, with the stock being held in Australia, and 35% of Bond's company, with the stock being held in Hong Kong.

August 1981: Gulf Oil, using Brierley, strengthens it's hold over Kiwi natural resources. Cue Energy launched, starring Lawrey and Gunn. NZOG is launched, with strategic holdings by Jones, Renouf, and Brierley with licences in PPD 38206 and 38204 - both next to Hunt's Great South Basin discovery. NZOG also controls 80-million tonnes of coal through the Pike River Coal Co. Brierley-controlled Wellington Gas, Christchurch Gas, Auckland and Hawkes Bay Gas, and Dual Fuel Systems (A'asia) which controls the vehicle gas conversion market. Liquigas Ltd set up to distribute LPG, controlled by Shell/BP/Todd and Fletcher Challenge.

15th February 1982: Brierley calls NZ Mafia meeting of Jones, Fletcher, Trotter, Hawkins, Goodman, and Papps. New members include Bruce Judge, J. Fernyhough, and Frank Renouf. With Muldoon about to deregulate the liquor industry, Brierley and Fernyhough plan to buy up the Kiwi liquor industry, along with it's outlets. Lion Breweries & Rothmans to help. Brierley will do the same in Australia. J.R. Fletcher becomes managing director of Brierley's Dominion Breweries to oversee operations. Rothmans and Brierley (through Goodman) have equal holdings in Saudicapital Corp. Lion director Scott also chairman of Chase-NBA. Lion directors Fernyhough and Myers also stockholders in NZPOG. Fletcher and Brierley begin their takeover of the freezing works industry. FCL buys into South Island works, while Brierley begins takeover of Waitaki NZR through Watties with the help of Athol Hutton. With Think Big projects beginning, Fletcher and Trotter plan to take strategic holdings in NZ Cement, Wilkins Davies, Steel & Tube, etc. and Brierley would use Renouf to take 3% stake of the Martha Hill gold-mine. Also targeted are clothing, footwear, carpet manufacture and more of the auto industry for takeover and monopolisation.

July 1982: Media takeover begins. Brierley takes 24% of NZ News Ltd and begins buying up private radio. Rupert Murdoch helps.

September 1982: Goodman now helps establish the Japan/NZ Council with the Bank of Tokyo & the Industrial Bank of Japan. Tokai Pulp Co. buys shareholding in NZFP, which also begins joint venture with Shell Oil. Fletcher Challenge strengthens links with the Rockefeller organisation by acquiring the Canadian operations of Crown Zellerbach, whose chairman is also director of Gulf Oil. Crown Zellerbach Corp. has direct connections to Rockefeller through directors Mumford, Hendrickson, and Granville, to United California Bank through Roth, and to the Bank of America through chairman C.R. Dahl. Meanwhile, Robert Jones Investments floated to extend operations of City Realties, Ijmond Properties, Chase Corp., etc. The Commerce Building in Auckland sold to Robert Jones Investments by Robert Jones Holdings for $950,000, when it was recently offered on the market for $200,000. A quick $750,000 profit for Jones. Robert Jones Investments was set up by Brierley, Jones, and Hawkins.

8th December 1982: Mitchell Sharp heads top-level Mafia meeting in San Francisco. Among those present are Parsky, Dahl (Chairman of Crown Zellerbach), Perkins, Woodcock, Brierley, Trotter, Fletcher, and Seldon. Meeting discusses Great South Basin exploitation strategy with first priority being monopolisation of the economy; second priority to establish oil refineries and related industries; third, to integrate Kiwi economy into Trilateral economy, & fourth, to concentrate power back to the U.S. through the Seven Sisters, Chase Manhattan, and Security Pacific National Bank. NZ economy linked directly to the U.S. by Fletcher Challenge merging with Canadian subsidiary of Crown Zellerbach, with funds provided by Security Pacific National Bank and United Californian Bank. Brierley, Fletcher, Trotter, & Sheldon will be NZ Ruling Council, headed by Brierley, who would take orders from Parsky.

Mid-1983: Brierley's Ariadne (Aust.) takes control of Repco (NZ) through Repco (Aust.), thereby taking control of key auto-related industry, helped by Borg Warner and Honeywell - which are closely associated with IEL through International Harvester, Continental Illinois Bank, & First National Bank of Chicago. Toyota & Nissan also help so that Brierley now largest distributor of auto & industrial parts, largest manufacturer of pistons, filters, & engine bearings, as well as biggest supplier of forklifts, tractors, and agricultural equipment. Meantime, control is extended over the Great South Basin Oil source with Hunt, after big losses resulting from trying to corner the world's silver market, being forced to sell out some of his concession to Gulf Oil, which uses Brierley to set up a new company - Southern Petroleum - which takes a 14.5% interest. Hunt retains control with 45.5%, Petrocorp has 40% and chairman F. Orr, also a director of Brierley-controlled Watties. Brierley through Goodman takes control of TNL Group and it's subsidiaries, NZ Motor Bodies and L & M. Mining, which has 15% interest in the Chatham Rise, right next to the Hunt concession.

11th-12th May 1983: NZ Mafia meets in Cook Islands. Included are Brierley, Trotter, Fletcher, Jones, Hawkins, Goodman, Papps, Judge, Renouf, & Fernyhough. New members include A. Gibbs, McConnell, H. Fletcher, and O. Gunn. Japanese Trilateralists Takeshi Wataneve and Daigo Miyado discuss integration of Aotearoa into the Pacific Rim economies. A new political party would be established using Jones and financed by the NZ Mafia Council.

*Reason: Parsky & Colby wanted Muldoon out because he had welched on a deal to set up two U.S. military deep-water submarine bases planned for Dusky Sound & Guards Bay in the South Island.

Parsky, Brierley, & Ray Cline hold a separate meeting to discuss the purchase of Kiwi politicians including Langue, Douglas, & Bolger. Cline was a consultant to the CIA's Deak Bank, took orders from Colby, & was responsible for the 10 Australian politicians on the CIA's payroll, including Bjelke-Petersen, I. Sinclair, Keating, McMullen, M. Fraser, D. Anthony, K. Newman, J. Carrick, B. Cowan, and R. Conner. Cline outlines CIA plan to begin subliminal television advertising.

22nd June 1983: Kiwi politician J. Bolger meets Ray Cline in Sydney and agrees to join the organisation for a monthly fee of US$20,000, to be paid into account number GA1282117 at the Geneva branch of Credit Suisse.

20th July 1983: Kiwi politician R. Douglas meets Ray Cline in Wellington and agrees to join the organisation for a monthly fee of US$10,000, to be paid into account number 3791686 at the Sydney branch of the Deak Bank.

July 1983: Parsky launches a new front company, Chase Corporation, with 25% of the stock being held through Security Pacific National Bank in Australia and 25% held in Hong

Kong by Chase Manhattan. Brierley and Hawkins set up a back-door listing to cover up true ownership.

August 1983: Muldoon imposes withholding tax on all offshore borrowing. Renouf sells 20% of NZUC to Barclay's & prepared for expanding of operations with Brierley. Meantime, Murdoch & Brierley expand their close ties by each taking a piece of NZ Maritime Holdings, and with the election imminent, divide up Kiwi media for takeover to increase Mafia control. NZ News buys Hawkes Bay News, Nelson Tribune, Timaru Herald, etc. Brierley increases holding in Hauraki Enterprises and other private radio stations. Brierley and Murdoch have majority stockholding in NZPA with 48.5%, while in the U.K. Murdoch has a large stockholding in Reuters. Now, the phoney news becomes THE news. Head of the Murdoch operation is Burnett, who is also on the board of Winstones - a Brierley company.

September 1983: With global heroin epidemic, Rockefeller expands operations to recycle profits.

October 1983: Brierley takes over NZ Forest Products through Watties, helped by newly-appointed chairman Papps. Papps also chairman of NZ Railways and presided over transport deregulation, the major beneficiaries of which include Watties and Freightways - managing director Pettigrew and director Lang also both on the NZFP board with Papps. Papps also responsible for the railways' electrification programme with big contracts for Cory Wright & Salmon, whose directors include I.L. McKay - also on the board of NZFP.

Late 1983: AMAX gives Gulf Oil a share in the Martha Hill gold bonanza by selling 15% of it's holdings to Brierley through Goodmans. Oil Co. says that only $870-million worth of minerals in Martha Hill, while true figure is closer to $3-billion.

February 1984: Kiwi politician D. Lange meets Ray Cline in Wellington and agrees to go on the Mafia payroll for a monthly fee of US$40,000, to be paid into account number

5263161 at Commercial Pacific Trust, New Hebrides (Vanuatu).

March 1984: Muldoon knighted with G.C.M.G. for keeping the economy free of obstructions for easy takeover and exploitation.

24th May 1984: Four-man CIA team coordinated by Ray Cline arrives in Aotearoa to begin installing equipment for subliminal television advertising at five sites - Waiatarua, Mt. Erin, Kaukau, Sugarloaf, and Obelisk. Sophisticated equipment can be installed within one kilometre of TV relay aerials and all linked to one IDAPS computer bureau in Auckland. Same equipment installed in Australia in August 1985; Japan in September 1986, U.K. in February 1987; New York in 1987.

Amax geologists now estimate Martha Hill gold source could be worth up to $30-billion on the strength of high gold/tonne ore assay.

17th July 1984: In Aotearoa, subliminal advertising beings on Channel Two between 6 p.m. and midnight - hours later extended to begin at noon. Subliminal messages prepared in the U.S. by the CIA, and with the Kiwi election imminent, tell voters to support the Labour Party, the New Zealand Party, and to buy Mafia company products.

The NZ Party was formed to ensure that Muldoon would lose, as Big Business was unhappy with controls over economy. Big campaign contributions from Brierley, the oil companies, & the Business Round Table ensure a Labour victory. Later, Lange agrees to repay the favour to Brierley by selling the government building in the Karioi Pulp Mill to Winstones. Kiwi taxpayer loses $100-million. Government now becomes an arm of Big Business, using economic policies provided by the Business Round Table, implemented by Finance Minister Roger Douglas, and the package being sold by David Lange, who also keeps up a noisy CIA-directed ANZUS withdrawal campaign.

*Reason: (1) ANZUS Treaty did not cover Mafia requirements over the Great South Basin discovery; (2) To identify any opposition or threats within Aotearoa who align themselves with supposed government policy. Lange increases the SIS budget and strengthens links with the CIA.

Brookings Institute is the actual designer of the Kiwi government economic policies, provided by the Business Round Table (NZ Mafia front) and implemented by the government.

Douglas devalues the dollar and deregulates interest rates, which means cheaper labour, cheaper capital assets and high mortgage rates, thereby implementing Big Business policy of driving farmers off the land, establishment of the corporate farm, and eventually remove viability of small business sector, etc.

27th September 1984: NZ Mafia meets at new 'safe house' registered under Fernyhough's name, in Auckland. Those present include Brierley, J. Fletcher, Trotter, Jones, Goodman, Gunn, Papps, Hawkins, Judge, Renouf, Fernyhough, Gibbs, McConnell, and H. Fletcher. Daigo Miyado announces appointment of Trotter as international vice-president of the Trilateral Commission Pacific Basin Economic Council. Brierley outlines strategy for privatisation of Kiwi government and the establishment of the NZ Centre for Independent Studies which will be chaired by Gibbs, aided by Fernyhough and controlled by Cline, which will advise Treasury on privatisation. Parsky, Brierley, and Seldon hold a separate meeting with Parsky, outlining plans for an expanded laundry operation which will coincide with the launch of 'crack' - a new addictive product developed by CIA chemists for the world market.

26th October 1984: Trotter, Hawkins, Lange, & Douglas meet in Wellington to implement Mafia plans to privatise the government and to deregulate the banking system.

Early 1986: CIA's Deak Bank, with it's 22 worldwide branches, merges with Brierley's Ariadne & Paxus NZI. In the Cook Islands, Brierley sets up the European Pacific Banking Corp. with Fay Richwhite, which is closely linked to the Mafia's United California Bank through the European Pacific Finance Corp.

16th February 1986: The Mikhail Lermontov was sunk near Picton (not by accident).

22nd February 1986: Parsky, Brierley, & Trotter oversee the second launder of Mafia dollars to the Kiwi government, US$300-million, with a commission of $20-million.

26th February 1986: Preliminary inquiry into Mikhail Lermontov released by Minister of Transport Prebble, disobeying all Marine Division instructions on holding preliminary inquiries into shipping casualties.

10th December 1986: Geoffrey Palmer's Constitution Bill removes the power of the NZ Governor-General to refuse assent to legislation: he must now sign in token of his assent.

17th December 1986: National M.P. Peters reveals the Maori loans affair and mentions the Fletcher connection. This fact and many other details were never mentioned in the media after pressure from Trotter using Burnett at Independent News Ltd., Hancox at NZ News, and through CIA-funded sub-editor at the NZ Herald.

27th February 1987: New subliminal messages appear on Kiwi TV screens - "Hello Friends. Make More Money. Vote Labour." Other messages include: "Greetings My Own. Buy Cars. Buy Now," and the most sinister of all, "Smash. Hate. Rape. Punch. Kill. Use Violence." With an election imminent in Aotearoa, frequency of messages increases to average of four per hour.

10th March 1987: Parsky, Colby, Brierley, & Cline meet in the Gibbs safe house in Auckland. Parsky outlines the expansion of the European Pacific banking operation with 12 new subsidiaries to be set up in South America to replace the United Fruit Co. front and which will:

(a) launder heroin dollars from the Rockefeller operations in the Golden Triangle and Pakistan;

(b) launder coke & crack dollars from Columbia, Peru, Bolivia, Ecuador, & Venezuela;

(c) CIA funnel to pro-U.S. political parties in Europe and Latin America;

(d) financial conduit to Colby's P2 neo-fascists in Panama, Argentina, Chile, & Uruguay;

(e) spying conduit for information from Middle East, Latin & South America;

(f) financing arms smuggling to Central & South America and the Middle East, including the Christian Militia in Lebanon;

(g) financial conduit to mercenary army in Kuwait (standing by to conduct CIA invasion of Iran) via CIA's Vinell Corp.

1st April 1987: Business Round Table plan, 'Government Departments to Corporations,' implemented by Lange & Douglas to privatise Aotearoan national assets.

*Reason: You cannot bankrupt a government department, which belongs to the people of Aotearoa. Privatisation means that the whole country can be asset-stripped of all that was Crown-controlled - land, minerals, & energy.

17th June 1987: Kiwi Mafia meet in Gibbs' safe house in Auckland - including Brierley, Trotter, J. Fletcher, Jones, Goodman, & Gunn - to plan strategy for the Aotearoa election, bankrolling of the Labour Party, and post-election agenda for privatisation of the Kiwi government. Included is establishment of a presidential (dictator) system, with Trotter installed as el presidente.

27th July 1987: J.D. Rockefeller, Colby, & Parsky meet in Paris to implement plans for the assassination of David Rockefeller, Rodman Rockefeller, and John McCloy, using Gordon Liddy and his eight man team.

July 1987: Brierley-controlled Newmans/Ansett airline goes into operation. With Douglas, Lange, and Palmer helping with Banking Deregulation Bill, City Bank and Paxus NZI etc. become fully-fledged banks in Aotearoa.

Late July 1987: DFC and Trusteebank merger. End of the last Kiwi-owned bank. The Douglas Administration.

Gemstoner

Len Bracken

This text, reportedly a biographical sketch of the protagonist by someone who knew him well, was given to me by a San Francisco bicycle messenger in 1983. I suspect that it may have been written by the messenger himself. I am in no position to verify or dispute the incidents described below.

—Len Bracken

The Opel GT skidded off the Great Highway onto the dirt parking lot – a Winnabago followed. BR got out of his car as the whale with diplomatic plates pulled up next to him. He could hear the lions roar at Fleischaker Zoo over the sound of the surf. A sunny, windy day in San Francisco.

The camper door opened. What were diplomats doing on the deserted beach – the only other car in the lot had a surfer with a broken ankle as a hood ornament. Why wasn't the guy in Vietnam? Why was he reading a medical text? Trying to figure out what happened to his Inner Malleolus?

BR zipped up his windbreaker and stood on a piece of driftwood – straining to see who was in the camper – driftwood, driftwood... He needed a drink.

"You see someone?" one diplomat asked the other in exaggerated Italian.

So they were Italians from the consulate.

"No, I don't see anyone." The guy looked right at BR.

The first one replied: "I also don't see anyone. Hahahaha!"

BR's ears were on fire – he had to talk to someone, anyone. Walking over to the surfer with the cast on his ankle... The Italians definitely had a hand in Onassis's game.

"Nice day. Bet you wish you were out there." BR pointed to the ocean.

"Naahhh. Too windy," the guy replied, shading his eyes to check the surf. "I'm not missing anything."

"Say, I'm looking to rent a room. Know of one?"

"You should try the bulletin board at the Med. School. Everyone wants a doctor in the house."

"Got any weed?"

"If I did, we'd be smokin' it."

BR cupped his hands to light a joint in the wind.

"Columbian." BR held his breath as he spoke.

"Thanks, man. Manna from heaven."

BR gave the guy half the joint. With a little buzz he saw the connections; a big buzz made him paranoid. He needed a safe house – otherwise he'd sleep in his car – no way could he go back to his apartment. Why had he rented a place in North Beach? – HQ of the S.F. mob.

The Italians were still laughing when he wheeled out of the lot, over to the gas station. A rack of pay phones. He dialed a number from the classifieds – here he was patronizing Hearst, while the latter's daughter played revolutionary with the Symbionese Liberation Army. No answer. As he listened to the ring in the receiver, one of the Italians sauntered up to the phone next to him. Why didn't he use the one farther away?

"%$%(&%$#@*()()^$##@%*&(%$#@#$#@$#%^"

BR couldn't make out any of it – he doubted the Italian was talking to anyone – just trying to get under his skin. Could bump him off any second – diplomatic immunity.

Sloat Blvd., to 19th Ave., leaving sunny Sunset, to Judah St., to Parnassus Ave.: kids and yids, he had a lid – parked on Clayton and walked down to the Medical School... Imagined making it with a coed; her promiscuity, her disregard for death, her lasers – he was running out of gemstones. The bulletin board was brimming.

"Hello Patty, I'm calling about the room you have for rent."

"Yes," the woman's voice answered, like the squeak of a mouse.

"Can I see it?"

"O.K. – are you a doctor?"

"No, I'm a physicist."

"I guess that's okay. Why don't you come over now; 736 Arlington St. in Glen Park."

"Thank you. See you soon."

The woman sounded strange, but what did he care – all he needed was a place to hide out, to hide his letters and gemstones – maybe he'd get a few rooms around the city, just in case. Time to swing by the post office.

Willard St., to Lincoln Way, to Stanyan, to Haight: bikers, bums, and streakers; he stopped at the light on Masonic Avenue; was it fate? A bearded, barefoot sold love books on the sidewalk: "I read one of these the other night. It said, 'Redheads are better for eating.' Look around you my friend – all you see are redheads (and I don't mean Marxists like they got over in Berkeley). Everyday is St. Patrick's Day..."

Masonic Ave. to Oak St., skirting the Panhandle: drunks, beggars, punks... Oak to Market St. crossing the intersection of Fell and Polk (a lousy pun of a queer joke), Civic Center, U.N. Plaza, the bus depot. He turned down 7th and parked on this skid row. If he had to, he could get a motel room here. It'd been good enough for Koffman – but no "Ancient Rain" could clean these streets of winos, grifters, homos...

A $2 Mission Street whore, possibly transvestite, smiled at him; he was too stoned to notice – stealing glances over his shoulder, walking sideways... He bumped into a beggar: "Can you spare a buck?"

"Fuck off."

"Big shot."

BR'd've cleaned the guy's clock if he wasn't so filthy – crushed the scumbag with one punch to the jaw... From the looks of his face, BR wouldn't have been the first to use it as a target. What'd BR have to fear? He was powerful and intelligent... dangerous, a one man army – they'd better watch out.

One lonely letter in his P.O. Box: addressed in Aegean Blue, postmarked Corfu, ripped open across the top – let 'em have a look, what did he care if they knew that he knew???? He stuffed the letter in the inside pocket of his windbreaker.

Walking down the steps, he looked up to see someone photograph him from the passenger side of a black Pontiac — sped off as BR bounded down the steps toward it. He needed a drink. What did they want from him? A photograph?

"Saw a picture of a guy in the paper," yelled the scarfaced panhandler from behind BR.

"So what," BR said without looking back.

"So... he looked like you. Hey, I know who I am and I know who you are too."

The Latinos who loitered near the carry out shop — high on horse — laughed at the look on BR's face: he'd been had by a bum! He needed a drink. Back in the Opel: Market St., to Powell St. — he cruised California St., looking up at his mother's wooden house (Would the hit men go after his dear old mother? Why was she living so close to the Masonic Auditorium?) — Leavenworth St. over to the 600 block, to Geary St.: The Driftwood.

Slamming shut the bottom half of the Dutch door, he squinted in the dark. There was usually a crew of exiles and mercenaries patronizing the bar. All he saw were the guys from the black Pontiac in wingtips and trenchcoats. It was like they were waiting for him — had he followed them? After all, the Driftwood was a C.I.A. hangout.

"Draught beer and a shot of bourbon," BR said to the bartender who had told BR that he recorded every conversation in the place for the owner of the *Washington Post.*

The suits were at the other end of the bar; they spoke loudly enough for BR to hear:

"We could've used a guy like that."

"Yes, he's clever enough — speaks a few languages without accent."

"Too bad he got mixed up in this conspiracy business..."

BR took the letter from Greece out of the inside pocket of his windbreaker — took a sip of beer, dipped the filter tip of a cigarette in the bourbon and lit up. Through the cloud of smoke he read the letter written in blue in classic Greek.

Dear BR,

I must tell you that my wife and I are very grateful for the gemstone. We fear for our safety and will have to sell it to leave our beloved island. This will be the last letter you will *receive from me for some time. All I can say at this time is that you are correct. Onassis has kidnapped Hughes and taken control of all that was the Hughes empire. That includes numerous U.S. politicians...*

One of the suits yelled from the other end of the bar: "Hey you! Who do you think killed JFK?"

"Who do I think killed JFK?" BR responded. "BVD."

"BVD? Why BVD?" the second suit asked.

"Because JFK got too big for his britches – who wants to know anyway?"

Just then, the bartender motioned for BR to look toward the door – the two Italian diplomats were grinning at BR from above the lower half of the Dutch door. BR stared them down. They left.

"We heard you had some kind of conspiracy theory to prove who did it. That wouldn't be one of your letters about the assassination, would it?" one of the suits asked.

"No, it wouldn't." BR didn't feel like taking the stage tonight – wasn't drunk enough. "Charlie, put this on my tab."

"Right 'O."

BR downed his shot and split. The tule fog was rolling in, and with it, the smell of fried soy sauce wafting over from Chinatown – reminded him of the misty day he picked pebbles from China Beach to use in lieu of gemstones to symbolize the Golden Triangle.

Back in the Opel – no sign of the Italians – his duffle bag still in the back seat. Did they want his letters? If so, why didn't they just get a half-assed repo man to break in while he was in the bar? No, that wasn't it – they'd arrange an accident on some deserted stretch of road – be done with BR once and for all.

He took a roach from the ashtray – just a puff or two – singed his moustache, like the time a gemstone experiment failed. His lungs filled with smoke and his mind raced as he revved the engine. Spinning onto Geary St., 700 to 500 block through the fog: flashing yellow light of a construction detour – silhouette of a man crossing his path. Thud.

Before he could get out of the car to see what he'd hit, he heard the wail of a siren..., two sirens... nearby. Patrol car lights flashed in the mid-block alley on the left and swirled around the corner of Taylor St. BR hopped over the construction barricade with his duffle bag, glimpsing the dead man lying in the dirt. He was being framed and the S.F.P.D. was in on it.

The cops converged on the Opel – lost sight of BR in the fog – cut their sirens and heard his boots running down Shannon Alley. BR backtracked on O'Farrell, turned on Jones Street: the squad cars were right behind him. The Stevloe Alley entrance to "Mom's" – BR headed for the can, washed the sweat off his face.

"Give me a beer, Paul," BR said from the stool, his duffle bag slung over his shoulder.

"You know I love you BR, but if the cops are after you, you better get outta here," the bartender said.

"Thanks."

"It's for your own good."

The cops were cruising Jones St. and Antonio Alley – more sirens were approaching... BR skirted the warehouses – garages, chain link, garbage – then turned down a passageway toward Ellis St. to the sound of a Santana clone practicing in a motel room. A squad car spotted him crossing Taylor St. – he ran into a business office, startled the uniformed security guard, sprinted out the back door, threw his bag over a wooden fence and scaled it.

Across a vacant lot – the sound of sirens was deafening. A door on the side of a low building was held ajar by a folding chair. BR entered the chaos of thirty fashion shows going simultaneously in separate booths, runways and carousels. The models stared, either at his rugged good looks, or because he was obviously out of place: strapless silk dresses with sequins; fishnet stockings; hair, lots of hair...

"Excuse me sir, but where is your name tag?" a plain clothes security guard asked.

BR could've clocked him, but didn't. "It's too low class for me to wear a name tag. I am who I am, not my name."

The guard was wearing his name tag, so that line of reasoning didn't go over very well.

"I'll have to ask you to leave."

A bus passed on Taylor St. as BR left via the front door: it slowed to get around the squad cars that were parked in front of the building. The uniformed security guard was ges-turing to the cops that BR was inside. His timing couldn't have been better – he strolled across the street behind the bus...

...into the Airlines Terminal. Wiping the sweat off his face with his sleeve he looked out the door over his arm – they hadn't seen him. What to do? A travel agent was closing up for the day.

"Excuse me Miss, but I need to get a ticket right away."

"But it's late. I was on my way home."

BR smiled at the aging Oriental woman, probably a spinster with no one to go home to anyway.

"I need to catch a flight tomorrow. I can pay you cash. O.K.?"

"You want to buy a ticket now? Alright."

As they entered her agency BR scanned the brochures on her desk – Mexico! BR looked out the plate glass window at the cops who were trying to get into the fashion show. It was hopeless – they needed an I.D. or a search warrant. The plain clothes security guard wasn't going to let anything, not even cops, disrupt the show.

"The first flight tomorrow to Mexico."

After a few moments at her computer, the agent said: "Your ticket to Mexico City will be waiting for you at United Airlines. Be there two hours before departure, which is 10:20."

"Thank you very much. Can I call a cab? Hello, Diamond Cab. Pick me up at the Airlines Terminal on Taylor St. That's right, right now."

BR went into the men's room and quickly shaved off his moustache – no soap, just hot water. Outside the can he lit a smoke. With his duffle bag, he looked very natural leaving the Airlines Terminal, hopping into a cab. His heart was still beating wildly – he scarcely remembered the ride.

The taxi dropped him off in front of a rundown house on Arlington Street: a dump old enough to have survived the fire. He was running low on scratch – had to tip the driver though, for being there... He knocked hard, three times.

The mousy-looking lady who answered the door looked up at him with a glow in her eyes.

"Come in, come in. I didn't think you'd show up so I told

Matt here to come over and look at the room. By the way, this is it."

The room was at the top of the stairs: the mattress would serve BR nicely, especially for one night. A long haired medical student with a flute in hand, Matt, was sitting on a rundown armchair – the only stick of furniture in the living room other than the TV.

"I was just telling Matt that I have the shakes because I'm on medication. It's a combination of prolixin and lithium," Patty said.

A mouse scurried along the wall.

"While I was in the hospital," Patty continued, "there were people living here."

BR read the poem scrawled on the wall:

Aubade to the Lady

> *For three nights under this roof music had a place to live. The sax cracked its notes, breaking the torpor of the night while the guitar responded to the melody and was followed by the incessant beat of a conga. And the chorus – plumbing a deep darkness, the immeasurable depths of darkness with its nameless wildness, like a hiccup after countless sobs or a good drunk – sung with my swollen feet pressing against my boots as if hurling words at each other or a cat fight. My katzenjammer: I'll fuck you till you die/I'll fuck you to death/It is I who dies a little death...*
>
> Rick Roderick the Conceptual Lover

"Well Matt, I'll have to let you know. Goodbye," Patty said as she ushered the medical student to the door. "He seems like a nice boy, but I really need a man. I don't want to have anyone break in here."

"They won't break in if they know I'm here," BR lied, "if they know what's good for them."

"Let me show you the rest of the place."

Patty led BR over to the bathroom, through the kitchen —he looked in her room: there was a children's book about a mouse on the dresser. Good thing he'd never have to cook there.

"Well... I didn't get your name."

"BR. For $125 a month, not bad. I'll take it. May even see what I can do about painting over that poem on the wall."

"Good. Glad to have you. How can you pay?"

"Personal check."

Alone in his room, looking out over San Francisco from the lower elevation of Diamond Heights, he fingered his simulated rubies and diamonds that were inside a Chivas Regal pouch. These stones were his alchemy, like making gold from dirt: they were all he had now, other than his letters – ink smeared like snot, piss and shit across page after page; smearing the owners of the world who had taken more than their due.

BR cracked the window to take a few hits of Columbian, gazing at the lights of San Francisco, partially obscured by the fog. Why this thirst for knowledge that risked his life? He stretched out on the bed and felt his mind getting bigger and bigger – he saw the connections. Reaching for the pen...

The Gemstone File and Me

Jonathan Vankin

I first saw the Skeleton Key to the Gemstone File in the winter of 1988. At the time, I didn't know much about conspiracy theories, except that I thought the phrase "conspiracy theories" sounded cool.

Also, despite my innocence (or perhaps because of it), I had the audacious idea that a compendium of conspiracy theories would make a good book. I began accumulating information as fast as I could. I can't recall the exact day the Skeleton Key arrived in the mail, sent by a friend in New York. But here's how I'd like to remember it: snowy, cold, dark, threatening – winter in Central New England where the Atlantic sea breeze can't reach. In Worcester, Mass., it's just plain snowy, cold and dark; ice on the front steps of century-old wooden three-deckers, dead cars rotting on the shoulder of every off-ramp, snow plows cutting through the night with their orange flashing lights. Like a lot of New Englanders, I'd get solipsistic on those days. The outside world is too hostile and people shut it out. For the *Gemstone File* to show up in the mail, it was a beautiful day.

There was a clandestine thrill on pulling the pages out of their manila envelope. They looked like a 20th-generation photocopy at least, typewritten, some passages too faint to read. What appeared to be the address of a real person (Stephanie Caruana) was typed at the top, but there was a date on it: 1975. The document was 13 years old, a slice of secret history.

Concealed in the file, I anticipated, was information so important that somewhere, after hours in a darkened office, some feverish soul – an anonymous drone during the day – was risking livelihood and reputation to run off multiple copies, forehead sweating in the rays of a photocopying bulb. The mysterious document yielded truth that gave the mad xeroxer a reason for coming to work every day, and a sudden sense of personal mission where before there had been little but confusion or a vague sense of despair.

I've since learned that the route by which the file came to me was not nearly so existential. (Strangely enough, I think my copy originated with the publisher of this book.) But when I read the file, I felt a connection to that imaginary person, a beam of transreality piercing the New England gloom. I got the conspiracy rush, a zap of adrenaline that hits when you apprehend a higher truth; the revelation sensation, I call it. Your mind expands, or so you believe. Everyone else now appears slower, plodding through life a little stupider than you thought they were before.

Of course, Socrates believed that the truly wise man knows but one thing; that he knows nothing. I remembered that later. The main point of my planned book was to prove Socrates right. Most of us, particularly those of us in the news media (where I earn my daily chips and dip) are insufferable know-it-alls, smug with the peculiarly American conceit that we've got it all figured out; whatever "it" may be. I set out to collect the craziest group of thinkers ("crazy" by societal definition) I could find, conspiracy crackpots. Then I'd show how they might, just maybe, be *right*. Perhaps not about everything (which would be tough because they often contradict each other), but right about enough to make so-called responsible citizens darn uncomfortable. In other words, by proving that conspiracy theorists knew something, I would prove that the rest of us intellectually self-satisfied bastards knew nothing.

Socrates' dictum, unfortunately for me, is incompatible with the conspiratorial state of mind, which is forged in a moment of gnosis, believing that you can grasp truth in your hands in the form of a fuzzy photocopy of somebody's typewritten notes. Or in the form of a skinny, yellowed paperback on a used-bookstore shelf. Or in the form of a Sunday night radio show on an obscure college station with a host who sounds like Edward R. Murrow on BZ. The conspiracy rush is addictive and eventually it develops into a conviction not that you know nothing and have everything to learn, but that you know everything and had better bring everyone else up to speed before it's too damn late. That was how I felt when I first read the Skeleton Key.

When I wrote my book, the prose style of the Skeleton Key, though not a model for my own, was an inspiration. Terse. Tense. Driven by certitude. I needed to give my readers shivers of sudden access to horrifying secrets, duplicating my first reaction to the *Gemstone File*. I was shooting for mental shock value, an experience that alters one's entire view of reality.

Was Aristotle Onassis global chieftain of the Syndicate? Did Johnny "Poselli" shoot President Kennedy in the head with a .38? Is apple pie America's leading health hazard? It doesn't matter much to me now (though I've no doubt there's more truth in the Skeleton Key than your average Joe Journalist cares to consider). I didn't write about the *Gemstone File* in my book. It fell off of my outline along with a lot else. But I regret the omission because the *Gemstone File* is a dangerous document.

Like all good conspiracy theories, Gemstone is dangerous not for what it says, as its adherents believe, but for how, twisting perceptions like a UFO abduction, it can change the way people think.

I wanted to be as dangerous as the *Gemstone File*, to subvert the way readers view American politics. But there is another danger: the danger that once revelation sensation sends the conspiracy rush shooting up the spine, Socrates' words of wisdom will be lost forever. Many of the conspiracy theorists I interviewed are caught in a trap. Conspiracy theories are used best as a way of digging to the truth with dynamite, blasting out crusty old paradigms. Too many conspiracy theorists, I fear, have let their own thoughts become encrusted in dogma.

I don't blame them. In our society, where good information is difficult to come by and the "official" versions of reality tend to ring false, it's easy to get stuck in a dichotomous view of things: if the *New York Times* is a pack of lies, the *Gemstone File* **must** be true. If not, what is? End of argument.

Something like that must have happened to Bruce Roberts. He probably wouldn't be pleased to see his "file" amended, altered and parodied as it's been for close to 20 years now. Conspiracy theorists, whose credibility is zilch in the straight world, are nonetheless preoccupied with credibility. Information in their view is not public, but personal property. Even when there is a sizable quantity of truth in what they offer – frighteningly often – their rigid attitude renders them useless.

As I was in Worcester, we're all in the dark, out in the cold and denying our hostile surroundings when it comes to interpreting what's going on in this ever-more deranged nation. Like the best conspiracy theories, the *Gemstone File* slashed through the darkness like white light. We're not certain what we're looking at, but it sure is dazzling. As if we'd just been given a private showing of the Holy Grail, viewing the everyday world in a "rational" way after peering through a gemstone prism becomes rather difficult. It teaches us what we don't know more than what we do. Understand the *Gemstone File* in that way. Conspiracy theories are too important to be left to the conspiracy theorists.

Is it True?

Jim Keith

> *Till tree from tree, tree among trees, tree over tree become stone to stone, stone between stones, stone under stone for ever.*
>
> *O Loud, hear the wee beseech of thees of each of these thy unlitten ones! Grant sleep in hour's time, O Loud!*
>
> *That they take no chill. They they do ming no merder. They they shall not gomeet madhowiatrees*
>
> *Loud, heap miseries upon us yet entwine our arts with laughters low!*
>
> *Ha he hi ho hu.*
>
> *Mummum.*
>
> *Finnegans Wake*
> James Joyce

The *Gemstone File* is a mystery whose origins are partly obscured by time, and so will probably remain, at least in part, a mystery. There are Gemstone "facets," however, which provide believability and importance to the document, and apparently do so for other readers, considering its ongoing hand-to-hand life.

In "A Skeleton Key to the *Gemstone File*," Stephanie Caruana indicates that the number of original Gemstone letters: "...is well over a thousand, of which I have read about four hundred." Mae Brussell set the figure at three hundred and fifty.

The work involved in Bruce Roberts writing at such length argues against Gemstone being a complete hoax. He may or may not have been correct in his beliefs about the forces that secretly control the planet, but the extent of Roberts' labors suggests he believed what he was saying.

Supporting my belief that Roberts was not attempting a hoax, Stephanie Caruana has stated she doesn't believe the original letters were ever intended for public distribution: "They were almost invariably addressed, and sent to, a specific person. Xerox copies went into the 'File,' and were only given, or sold, to people like myself or Mae Brussell, who had a special interest in them. As far as I know they were never publicly distributed."

Describing her editing of Roberts' letters, Caruana's description paints a surprisingly different picture from what I had imagined they might be like (namely, something on the order of the bare bones of the Skeleton Key): "Roberts was not only a mental giant and a powerful writer, but also a sort of poet. Reading his letters was like reading a history written by James Joyce in his *Finnegans Wake* period. All of historic time (that is, the threads Roberts was interested in) tended to be jumbled together in paragraph-long sentences. Some of my 'chronologizing' consisted of picking bits and phrases out of these sentences, and putting them under appropriate dates—sometimes, years apart. I stuck to Roberts' own words as much as I could, since I felt that any interpretation I might make of what might be a 'poetic' expression on his part, might well be wrong."

This might explain the patchwork construction of the Skeleton Key. It was apparently intended as a rambling, even poetic personal commentary and it seems to have been Stephanie Caruana who turned the letters into a focused expose and call to arms.

My first impression of Bruce Roberts from the Skeleton Key was that he was probably an outsider from mainstream life, a man painting himself into the partially fictionalized events in his conspiracy documents but most likely obtaining most of his information from books and the tabloid press.

In a note criticizing my interpretation Stephanie Caruana says, "He, as far as I knew, was brave, tough, real, a player and not a sideline sitter; sometimes scared, very angry, and not in the least way the silly wimp you describe! He wasn't 'trying to enter the world of James Bond' — he was James Bond, or his own version of it. Only, he wasn't 'On Her Majesty's Service.' He was a free-lancer. A street fighter, a Scotsman, a heavy drinker. I know it's difficult for most people who are not embroiled in the center of a universe such as his to imagine what it's like to be there, but your picture is just wrong."

Interestingly, Mae Brussell's assessment of Roberts seems to have been similar to my initial guess. Quoting Caruana again, "After reading the portion of the file that Mae had (possibly 200 pages, dating from around 1970 to 1972), I had been very curious about the author. I asked Mae what he was like, and she said he was 'Caspar Milquetoast!' ... She told me that she went to visit Roberts in S.F., and that he lived with his mother, a nice little old Scotch/Irish lady who served tea and wore white gloves..." Supporting this estimation, Robert Eringer in *Critique* magazine says that the portion of the File in Brussell's possession consisted of "300 pages of manic letters Roberts had written to his mother."

Caruana continues: "Roberts had mentioned that his phone was tapped, and I didn't want to call him, so I just drove to the address that he had put on the file, an apartment house in S.F., and rang the bell. I fully expected him to invite me in for tea with his mother. When I finally did meet him, it was clear to me that he wasn't Caspar Milquetoast at all. More like Clint Eastwood/John Wayne, if you want to go to Hollywood for images."

These conflicting views may contain a clue to Roberts' character and to the purpose and credibility of his letters. In addition, if they really were addressed to his mother, Roberts may have never anticipated any critical scrutiny being applied to his allegations.

The Skeleton Key tells us that Roberts "...was married to the daughter of the former French consul in Indochina. In that area Onassis's involvements in the Golden Triangle dope trade was no secret." This reference is one instance where Roberts, for a change, credits his sources. A former French consul could have been in the position to know about drug trade in the Golden Triangle, and since Roberts the person did exist (as some have doubted), the detail of his marriage to the consul's daughter is probably true. In addition, the File was distributed at least in part to people who knew Roberts (for instance, his mother), and who knew varying degrees of, or who could investigate his past. If he didn't want to be caught in lies, it is unlikely that he would have fabricated major details of his own past.

Another source Roberts credited was Admiral Noel Gaylor [sic], Naval Intelligence. Gayler is real, a resident of San Francisco, and was at one time commander of the Pacific fleet. This is another instance of Roberts' account bolstering his credibility: highly delusory characters do not usually name their sources (even if they misspell their names), preferring to take credit themselves for all insider knowledge.

Mae Brussell, who had spent time with Roberts, maintained that the source for his information was a local bar, reportedly a between-jobs province of CIA spooks. A descriptive bit of the Skeleton Key explains: "The Watergate team showed up at the S.F. Drift Inn [sic], a CIA-FBI safe-house hangout bar, where Roberts conducted a nightly Gemstone rap, for the benefit of any CIA or FBI or anyone who wandered in for a beer. James McCord, Martinez, Bernard Baker, Garcia, and Frank Sturgis showed up—along with a San Francisco dentist named Fuller."

While the idea of Roberts conducting a "nightly Gemstone rap," with full awareness of conspirators and witnesses to the Kennedy assassination dropping like flies, is astounding, it is possible that Roberts again points to sources. If the Drift In (which did, in fact, exist, and was owned by Al Strom, who Roberts names) was a gathering place for CIA and FBI (not to mention Mafia, Arabs, Russians and Chinese), then it is possible that Roberts might have picked up some amazing stories there, either true or false, even the type of stories that would impel him to go public.

"Next evening Brading and Frattiano [sic] showed up in the Black Magic Bar—Brading wearing his X-marked hat from Dallas—to see whether Roberts recognized it, how much he knew, etc. A S.F. MP from the Presidio piped up from the end of the bar: "I heard they let everyone with an X-marked hat through the police lines in Dallas."

From this and the preceding account I had already surmised that Roberts spent a good deal of time in bars; he was there "nightly," in fact, and Caruana calls him a "heavy drinker."

Roberts having the military policeman in the bar implicating Brading is another detail to his credit; if he had invented the story from whole cloth it seems likely that he would have done the whistleblowing as the insider in the scenario.

Conversely, Brading and Fratianno seeking Roberts out to find out how much he knew of the conspiracy particularly smacks of a self-aggrandizement that is not solitary in the Skeleton Key. We know of many instances of witnesses to the Kennedy assassination – both first and second-hand – being murdered. If these Mafiosi had any suspicion of him revealing their complicity in the assassination, why not search him out to to kill him, rather than question him? Caruana and Brussell have, at different times, suggested this is precisely what happened, although it is difficult to know for certain. In the world of the conspiratologist, all deaths are suspicious.

Another portion of the Skeleton Key contains both believable and unbelievable elements: "Roberts had made an agreement with a friend, Harp, of Kish Realty, over a bugged phone. Harp was to buy a Gemstone—with history—for $500, the price of a trip to Canada for Roberts to check into the 'Hughes' Mormon Mafia Canadian stock market swindle, and other matters. But Harp was sodium-morphate poisoned before the deal could go through—on this date."

X. Sharks DeSpot has determined that Gail "Larry" Harp of Kish Realty did exist. But would the Mafia have poisoned Harp, who, in fact, didn't have a copy of the File? Wouldn't they have killed Roberts and saved themselves a world of future trouble? And how would Roberts have known for certain whether Harp had been murdered, and by what method? The lingering smell of apple pie? His analysis of the event smacks of paranoia, another not-unfamiliar note in the Skeleton Key.

Roberts' Gemstone is obviously far from flawless. Numerous times events are related that Roberts could not possibly have been privy to, although he – via Caruana – is willing to admit that some aspects of the File are speculative. Much of the earlier chronology must have been second or third or fifteenth hand: Roberts was simply not in a position to be hobnobbing with Onassis, Roosevelt and others at the beginning of the century.

Some events he relates have a false ring to them: "Onassis had invited Jackie for a cruise on the Cristina, where she was when JFK got tipped off that big O planned to wipe him out." If JFK and RFK were doing everything in their power to thwart Onassis, as Roberts' account indicates, then there would have been no reason for JFK to need warning of a reprisal from his arch-rival. Especially with the factual penchant of the Mafia for knocking off their competitors by the busload, it seems unlikely that JFK would have let Jackie party with Onassis to begin with – unless Monroe's presence in the Lawford bathtub understandably caused the whole matter to slip his mind.

Matt Love's speculations may give a rationale for Kennedy's behavior (at least as Roberts describes it). "Question: Roberts implies that the Kennedies knew it was Onassis they were opposing. Why would Kennedy allow Jackie to go yachting with Onassis? Possible answer: he sent her as a courier, to make a deal with Onassis. Judith Exner has said that Kennedy used other public figures as couriers, too, and that may have included Jackie. That is why the Roosevelts went along; their old man was perhaps a bridge between Kennedy Sr. and Onassis. Kennedy had known that Exner was Giancana's mistress and she had been a courier of money and documents between them. So Kennedy figured he'd run the same operation with Onassis."

Roberts' whole tale of "hit and run" on the streets of San Francisco smacks of megalomania and paranoia, and I would dismiss it entirely except for the fact that it is curiously similar to Mae Brussell's tale of incidents surrounding her meeting with Roberts.

"Hit and run accident on Roberts' car, parked in front of the Russian consulate in S.F.—who routinely take pictures of everything that goes on in front of the consulate. Their photos showed the license plate of the hit-and-run car: UKT-264, on a blue Cadillac belonging to Mia Angela Alioto, Joe's daughter, being driven by Tom Alioto, Joe's son—whose driving license had been revoked. His license, and the car's license, were both fraudulent. To cover up the hit-and-run circumstances, S.F. MP's from the Presidio quickly staged a few more hit-and-runs on the same corner—all duly filmed by the Russians. Kathryn Hollister, the Alioto family nurse, was 'persuaded' to take the rap for the hit-and-run. Roberts threatened to spill the whole story—in court—with photos." And... "Roberts threatened to blow the hit-run story, plus its Mafia ramifications open if Humphrey came to S.F. Humphrey didn't come; Humphrey lost San Francisco, California, and the election."

Even though the sequence is imaginative, is it likely that the Mafia would have taken out their vengeance on Roberts' car, rather than him? Is it also likely that Tom Alioto, the Mayor's son, would have been the one tapped to do the job, even if they had resorted to such pettiness? And how about the Russian consulate taking pictures of the event? How would Roberts have obtained the shots from them, unless by bartering a handful of artificial rubies and sapphires? And were the Arabs, the Chinese and the Russians lurking on the sidelines, stealing hubcaps?

Throughout the tale, Roberts describes the event as "hit-and-run" which technically it is, but the term is more usually employed to describe leaving the scene after striking a pedestrian. This suggests that Roberts might be consciously — if crudely — weighting his words to make the incident sound more sinister than it was. It might even have been a verbal mechanism which he used to convince himself of the dark motives for the accident.

If Bruce Roberts was going to "blow the hit-run story," what would he have said to the press? That he had pictures of the mayor's son running into his car while driving with a revoked license, and that proved the Mafia link to the JFK assassination? All in all, it sounds like Roberts' car was struck by another vehicle and he got paranoid about it, imaginatively parlaying the event into a story about how he personally derailed Humphrey's candidacy. And what would have been the purpose of destroying Humphrey's chances, anyway, considering the alternative?

The story about Mary Jo Kopechne sounds fishy, with no pun intended. Roberts describes a curious combination of accident and Mafia hit taking place. Logically, if it had been a hit, then Teddy Kennedy certainly wouldn't have been the one to stage it, and not in the manner it happened, which would have required acrobatic – not to mention deadly – skill. A murder would have been better planned, furnishing Kennedy an alibi after its accomplishment. As a highly influential and loyal Mafia asset (according to Roberts' description), Kennedy would have been the last person the Mafia would have wanted compromised or discredited. If anyone in the Mafia had wanted Kopechne killed, Kennedy for instance, then she would have simply been detained and would have disappeared. Roberts even goes so far as to say: "It took her 2 hours and 37 minutes to suffocate," which puts in dramatic relief the unlikelihood of him being there with a stopwatch and bears the melodramatic flavor that the document is tinged with.

After the murder, "Cardinal Cushing's priests... appeared before the Kopechne's 'direct from God,' with personal instructions from Him that Mary Jo was not to be disturbed." How could Roberts have known this claptrap for certain? It sounds like he might have had a pronounced streak of anti-Roman Catholicism, and Roberts' other religious speculations in the Skeleton Key seem to bear this out.

Another illogic: "Eugenie Livanos Niarchos, in bed with her husband, overheard the conversation. Stavros was forced to beat her to death." It seems unlikely that Stavros would have been discussing matters so sensitive with a possible informant in bed next to him. It also seems unlikely that Roberts could have known the bedside details of the event, except through hearsay or (more likely) a newspaper account. As in the Kopechne sequence, one is tempted to think that this story might be a particularly transparent revelation of Roberts' working methods. The details of the alleged killing could only have been obtained through the workings of his imagination, embroidering upon details that were already common knowledge.

Roberts' account of the deleted Nixon tapes has Nixon raving about Canada, 'asshole Trudeau,' 'asshole Roberts,' Onassis, Hughes and Francis L. Dale. Again, how could Roberts have known the contents of the tapes? But it would have been rather flattering to Roberts to imagine that Nixon thought of him as an equal a danger as Onassis, if indeed Nixon thought Onassis was a danger to him.

Thanks to the research of Matt Love, we know where

Roberts obtained a good portion of his information about the John F. Kennedy hit: *Coup d'Etat in America* by Canfield and Weberman. The portions of the *Gemstone File* attributable to *Coup d'Etat* are numerous and include the naming of the overall assassination personnel (although not all of the actions Roberts attributes to them) and other details copied almost word-for-word including:

a) The story of the missing Kennedy brain.

b) Eugene Hale Brading's stay at the "Cabana Hotel" [sic], and his becoming "a charter member of the La Costa Country Club."

c) The Pepsi Cola factory in Laos that never "produced a single bottle of Pepsi," this a quote from *Coup d'Etat*.

Here is an essential dishonesty in Roberts' presentation that puts the File into doubt as the revelations of a man in the know. He takes the story for his. This is not an unusual tack in the world of underground "super-patriots," as Caruana terms them. In the heat of revelation about the evildoing of the Mafia or the Illuminati, sources are often neglected.

In the Skeleton Key Roberts has Fratianno shooting from the second story in the Dal-Tex building, with Roselli behind a fence in the grassy knoll area, Brading shooting from the pergola (which he mistakenly identifies as a 'pagoda'... Roberts apparently never examined Dealey Plaza in person) across the street from the knoll, and Oswald firing from the Texas School Book Depository.

A number of witnesses, including Fratianno, confirmed the Mafia's role in planning and carrying out the assassination, however it is curious that Roberts does not mention the abundant CIA and FBI (and Permindex, and Right-wing, and Nazi, and NASA, for that matter) connections to the event. Nor does he mention the intricate convolutions of the Garrison case or of the *Torbitt Document*.

Roberts correctly identifies Eugene Brading as being a member of the Denver Mafia Smaldones "family" and Jack Ruby as being Mafia.

Scheim in *Contract on America* confirms that Maheu was the go-between for the Mafia and the CIA. The idea that Onassis was ultimately calling the shots is plausible, since Maheu had worked for him in an important capacity prior to (and, following the Gemstone scenario, perhaps during) his employment with Hughes, as can be confirmed by any biography of Onassis. Here we have an intersection of detail which is about as close as we come to confirming Roberts' Gothic tale of Onassis as Godfather.

As far as the events of the shooting, Brading was arrested in the Dal-Tex Building shortly afterwards, making his described presence at the pergola possible, even though the Dallas County sheriff's office reported he was in the building at the time of the shooting. Ballistics reports and witnesses confirm that shooting took place from the locale of the Dal-Tex building. Another man was arrested at the Dal-Tex building and later released. This could have been Fratiano, if the Gemstone account is correct.

Another possibly true detail in the Skeleton Key: "Roselli and his timer went down a manhole behind the fence and followed the sewer line away from Dealey Plaza." In the *Spotlight* newspaper of August 29, 1988 investigators Kenneth and James Collier verify the existence of a storm sewer in the grassy knoll, leading to the sewer system.

Quoting the Skeleton Key: "After JFK's death, Onassis quickly established control over Lyndon Johnson through fear. On the trip back to Washington, Johnson was warned by radio, relayed from an air force base: 'There was no conspiracy. Oswald was a lone nut assassin. Get it, Lyndon? Otherwise, Air Force 1 might have an unfortunate accident on flight back to Washington.'"

As unlikely as the Air Force 1 message might seem, it is not impossible that it happened. Johnson had been the recipient of considerable mob funds during his career, including at least $500,000 while in the Senate and $100,000 from Jimmy Hoffa in 1964. The Mob presumably does not give away its funds without expecting something in return.

In the matter of Thane Cesar's possible role in the RFK shooting, Roberts is knowledgeable and, in light of recent research, perhaps correct. Roberts might have picked this information up from the source listed in the Skeleton Key, the movie, although the date on the movie's release suggests that this reference may have been added by Stephanie Caruana. In correspondence she tells of having met Ted Charach, the movie's director, at a party given by *Playgirl* magazine.

Surprisingly, the artificial gemstones which Roberts distributed with the Gemstone letters, were real. Caruana reports: "Yes, I did see a few of Roberts' gemstones. He invited me to meet him one day in front of 'Mrs. Giannini's Bank of America' in downtown S.F." Note Caruana's repetition of the Roberts' phrase, not the only time she has betrayed her absorption in his worldview, even 17 years after the fact. "He had a safe deposit box there, and he went in and got a few artificial diamonds, and I think, a sapphire, and showed them to me. They were to be sent out in connection with a letter or letters that he was sending to someone. At the time, I believe he was no longer making gemstones. He told me that he had done so in the past in a garage, which blew up one day due to some mistake, and singed off his eyebrows, etc. I think he may have run out of gemstones at some time, and of course could use anything he wanted as a symbolic 'Gemstone.' Sometimes a coin. Or even a pebble from a certain place. In this case, it was the 'history' that accompanied the object that would give it its value." Caruana mentions that the single Gemstone letter that she bought from Roberts was accompanied by a Kennedy dime, supposedly minted on the day of the assassination.

The Gemstone depiction of Howard Hughes is, interestingly, perhaps more believable than the accepted story of Hughes retiring from public life and holing up in assorted penthouses to watch television and the prolonged growth of his hair and fingernails, although Roberts was not alone in his belief about what had happened.

Howard Hughes did inexplicably vanish, supposedly going into seclusion at a bungalow at the Beverly Hills Hotel in 1957. Hughes refused to appear in court, even when control over his company TWA was at stake. At various times he also refused to submit his photo or fingerprints, even when applying for licensing of his casinos. During this licensing procedure, Governor Laxalt of Nevada was reported by the FBI as concerned "...that a grave hoax could be being perpetrated..."

An IRS agent at the time echoed Roberts' story by stating, "It is my belief that Howard Hughes died... and that key officials running his empire concealed this fact in order to prevent a catastrophic dissolution of his holdings."

Robert Maheu insisted that Hughes had been abducted. Carl Oglesby in *The Yankee and Cowboy War* gives some of his reasons for believing this, including: "Hughes's health was too poor for so sudden and hurried a trip. *Newsweek* magazine reported on these events in its issue of December 21, 1970. This story scornfully informed its readers that "Maheu's group spread another story that Hughes had been visited by a heart specialist (or in one version, three heart specialists) in November, that he was too ill to be moved anywhere but to a hospital, and that he had been kidnapped... Eikes gave him immediate blood transfusions and said later that he was still on transfusions at the time of his sudden departure for the Bahamas, a departure carried out so hastily, however long it may have been considered, that he actually left behind his till-then precious or even indispensable life-support equipment."

Also, Maheu argued that it was certainly peculiar for a man like Hughes, engaged as he was at that exact moment in a battle for control of the Las Vegas-Bahamas gambling axis, suddenly to abandon old friends and helpers in the game, people like Maheu himself and Hooper, and to leap headlong down the spiderhole of an organization like Resorts International, a company which operated a casino in the Bahamas... in direct competition with those in Nevada. This in spite of bad health and only on the counsel of formerly distrusted executives. On top of all, what would possibly lead him to employ as over-all manager of this trip a security organization, Intertel, 94 percent of which was owned by Resorts International?

Oglesby continues: "So even if Intertel was not the CIA of the Lansky Syndicate, it was still at least the CIA of Resorts International, and Resorts International, whether it was a syndicate front or not, was still Hughes's chief competition."

Other circumstances around Hughes's flight from Las Vegas to the Bahamas are questionable. "Hughes was met in the Bahamas on Thanksgiving Day by an Intertel official named James Golden, whose presence in the melodramatic episode is interesting because of his reputation as 'Nixon's man.' Secret Serviceman Golden was assigned to Vice-President Nixon in 1957. He accompanied Nixon to Russia and Central America. They got stoned together in Venezuala. They grew close. When Nixon left the White House in 1960, Golden left the Secret Service to take a job as security chief for

Lockheed. In 1968 Lockheed gave him a leave of absence to join Nixon's campaign as director of security. After Nixon's election he became Resorts International's deputy director of security on Paradise Island. He was a founding officer of Intertel and one of its vice-presidents at the time of the events of November. He later joined the Hughes Las Vegas staff. As of summer 1975, he was at the Justice Department as chief of the Organized Crime Strike Force of the Law Enforcement Assistance Agency.

"Golden's presence in the *Coup* raises the question of a Nixon influence since 'Nixon's man' either means nothing or something. Could Nixon have been involved in the plot of Thanksgiving 1970 to overthrow Maheu, abduct and confuse Hughes, and radically change the nature of the crime-connected, FBI-connected, and CIA-connected Hughes empire?"

Oglesby also asks: "What about Hughes's solitude? Why could he not show his face to save $160 million? [referring to the TWA case]. Does this not go beyond eccentricity? Sometimes it seems Hughes must have died, as so many insist, long before April 1976. The only people who claim definitely to have seen and had daily transactions with Hughes are the so-called Mormon Mafia, or the Big Five, the mostly Mormon superstraights who were said to tend him as nurses and secretaries. They were all recruited by Bill Gay of the Toolco board, and they are of course loyal to Gay. Parties to the events they served, partisans, these five men alone assured us of Hughes's existence. That he did as they say he did, willed as they say he willed, we have no word but theirs."

Maheu went so far as to attempt to rescue Hughes from the Bahamas. He sent a team of men there, and they checked in a floor below Hughes's supposed penthouse in the Britannia Hotel. With a boat waiting to spirit Hughes back the states, Maheu's men obtained a search warrant to break into Hughes's quarters, but Intertel's James Golden stopped the rescue attempt by having the team deported for "working without a permit."

Roberts' source may have been as obvious as the utilization of suspicions about the death of Hughes that were prevalent at the time of his writing. The information I have suggests that *Midnight*, the Canadian tabloid, was the basis for at least a portion of the story. Not exactly the most credible of sources (even though credited by Caruana and Brussell in their own research), although it is easy to imagine how Roberts might have read the *Midnight* story and worked backward from it, finally coming to the conclusion that he had "cracked" the Howard Hughes case.

If any portion of the *Gemstone File* is eminently debatable, and definitely stranger than fiction, it is Bruce Roberts' allegation that Aristotle Onassis was the head of the Mafia, and that he was ultimately responsible for the Kennedy hit. Steve Beard's assessment in the magazine *j-d: The Visionary Issue* is almost a typical reaction to the allegation: "Take the *Gemstone File*. ...Its solution to the riddle of the Kennedy assassination is astonishing. Aristotle Onassis dunnit. That's why he got to marry Kennedy's widow (it's a Mafia thing). But that's not all the wily old Greek tycoon did. He also kidnapped American billionaire Howard Hughes, put his double in his place and pumped him full of drugs so nobody would notice the swap, took control of the Mafia's rackets, ran the American elections and generally came on like the master of the universe. Perhaps he was the chief alien from Alpha Centauri. No matter. What's interesting about the *Gemstone File* is that buried in the dross is a lot of hard fact. It has become a polymorphous disinformation vector, continually remodified, reprinted and redistributed."

I admit that my own initial reaction was approximately the same. Onassis as Godfather was incredible and remained incredible because of a lack of substantiation on the part of Roberts (or perhaps Caruana). Researching Gemstone, though, I have been able to link Onassis to a variety of evils (if not proving that he was guilty of them), and have discovered that it is widely believed among conspiracy researchers (Dick Gregory, for instance) that Onassis made his money through drug smuggling. What had initially seemed completely wild claims on Roberts' part suddenly became more credible. There is even the sense that the Danny Casolaro "Octopus" might have revealed a draping tentacle.

The Skeleton Key states that Onassis, "a Greek drug pusher and ship owner" made a deal with Joseph Kennedy, Eugene Meyer, and Meyer Lansky to ship bootleg liquor. "Also involved was a heroin deal with Franklin and Elliot Roosevelt."

Joseph Kennedy's bootlegging activities are, of course, legendary. But according to Matt Love, "Roosevelt's grandfather (on the Delano side) made his fortune from opium trade in China at the time of the Opium Wars. Maybe the stories of Joseph Kennedy (with Roosevelt's help) bootlegging is only a cover story for a far more scandalous story. People laugh at bootlegging, but heroin is different story."

We do know that Franklin Roosevelt did aid the Mafia in a number of instances, the most important being "Operation Underworld," involving the trade of Lucky Luciano's freedom for the security of the Eastern seaboard docks during World War II. Since the Mafia controlled the Eastern seaboard, Meyer Lansky was able to make this offer to Roosevelt, presumably via J. Edgar Hoover.

Echoing Bruce Roberts, Oglesby speculates in *The Yankee and Cowboy War* that: "The offer Lansky made in particular was simply for Roosevelt to intervene in the Luciano matter, although from the prosperity enjoyed by organized crime during World War II, it may appear to imply that the deal went much further and actually entailed federal protection for certain areas of Syndicate wartime activity, e.g., smuggling."

Although I have not heard any speculation on it, it would not exceed known facts to suggest that Roosevelt was Mafia-allied, and J. Edgar Hoover has been shown to have been the recipient of Mafia funds and favors, while maintaining until his death that the organization did not exist. Oglesby provides the perspective, while not specifically making the connection: "With Operation Underworld, Roosevelt made the Mafiosi all but official masters of the U.S. East Coast docks and gave implicit protection to their activities everywhere. With his instructions to Patton in 1943, he restored the Mafia to power in Sicily. When he sent [Meyer] Lansky to Batista in 1944, he paved the way for the spread of Syndicate influence throughout the Caribbean and Central America. When he directed the CIA to use Syndicate thugs at Marseilles in 1945, he licensed the heroin factories that would be feeding the American habit into a contagion virtually unchecked over the years of the Cold War."

Since it has been established that the Syndicate controlled the Eastern seaboard during this period, and since this was also a period of huge profits for Onassis shipping through these same ports, how would it be possible that Onassis would not have at least been Mafia-connected?

Conspiratologist and Mae Brussell associate John Judge concurs with Roberts on Onassis drug trade involvement. In his recorded talk, The Secret Government, he says: "In 1949... The international heroin routes are re-established in force. The shipping done by Aristotle Onassis. Much of it runs from Marseilles where the OSS had had a hand in throwing out the Socialist and Communist governments and putting in Sicilian or Corsican Mafia... Lucky Luciano had been moved by that point into Italy and was able to set up the labs there necessary to break the opium down into heroin and the other derivatives, and Bishop Montini was hard at work in Southeast Asia with the French-Vatican ruling class, making sure that the opium came out of Vietnam and the other areas, in Laos where it was being grown. He eventually became Pope Paul VI."

Judge points out another sinister Montini connection that will become more significant as other Onassis associations are brought forth. "Monsignor Montini... used Caritas Internationalis, a welfare organization, to provide refugee travel documents to such Nazis as euthanasia killer Hans Hefelman, and Hitler's secretary Martin Bormann, aiding in their escape to Argentina."

What of the Roberts' statement that both candidates in the Kennedy/Nixon race were controlled by the Mob? A news story, written by Anthony Summer and published in the *Washington Times* in 1991, is worth quoting at length:

"What then of Miss [Judith] Exner's claim that, during the election campaign, Kennedy met with mobster Giancana and sent him bags full of cash designed to buy votes? Is it conceivable that Kennedy would thus compromise himself with the Mafia? Again the answer must be yes.

The mob connection ran in the family, more so than has ever been understood. Prominent underworld sources have said it began during Prohibition, when – like the mobsters – Joseph Kennedy made a fortune in the whiskey business. He was said to have played golf in the '30s with Giancana's associate Johnny Roselli [also implicated in the Kennedy hit by Roberts]. Years later, during John Kennedy's election campaign, an FBI report noted that Joseph Kennedy was "visited by many mobsters" while staying at the Cal-Neva Lodge in California. The hotel was partially owned by Giancana.

"A connection between Kennedy, the privileged Easterner, and Giancana, the Mafia graduate of a Chicago street gang, is not as improbable as it might seem. They shared a number of mutual friends, including Frank Sinatra, [and] Kennedy's brother-in-law Peter Lawford...

"In February 1960, when Sinatra introduced Kennedy to Miss Exner in Las Vegas, the presidential campaign was going into high gear. Sammy Davis, Jr., who was in Sinatra's show at the Sands Hotel, later recalled an odd incident. Mr. Lawford took him aside and whispered, 'If you want to see what a million dollars in cash looks like, go into the next room. There's a brown leather satchel in the closet. Open it. It's a gift from the hotel owners for Jack's campaign.'

"One of the criminal hotel owners in Las Vegas was Sam Giancana. The next month, just two weeks after Kennedy began his affair with Judith Exner, an informant told the FBI that Joe Fischetti and 'other unidentified hoodlums' were 'financially supporting and actively trying to secure Kennedy's election at the behest of the senator's friend Frank Sinatra.' Fischetti, whom Miss Exner also met that month, was one of Giancana's close associates.

"...Kennedy won the election as a result – Miss Exner's new testimony suggests – of a collaborative effort: mob muscle and money, and a liberal injection of greenbacks provided by Kennedy to Giancana for distribution by his henchmen.

"Heavily censored FBI documents show that Giancana was indeed in the Northeast in August 1960 when – according to Miss Exner – he again met the candidate and picked up a bag of money in New York. In November, when a razor-thin majority gave Kennedy victory over Richard Nixon in the state of Illinois, there were serious charges of vote fraud in the area of Chicago where Giancana ruled the roost.

"...Kennedy may have paid the ultimate price for his dalliance with Giancana. The Mafia, which does nothing for nothing, takes vicious revenge when it considers a pact has been broken. According to Skinny d'Amato, the price for a Kennedy victory was the return of deported Mafia boss Joe Adonis.

"If there was such a deal, it fell through, reportedly because Attorney General Robert Kennedy would have none of it. It was his crusade against organized crime that infuriated the mob most of all.

"Giancana, one of its prime targets, made threatening noises as early as July 1961, when – according to Miss Exner – he was still linked with Kennedy on the Castro operation [to assassinate him]. 'I know all about the Kennedy's,' he shouted at an FBI agent, 'and one of these days we are going to tell all.'

"By early 1962, ever more harried by Kennedy law enforcement, the mob felt cheated. 'He'll get what he wants out of you,' an FBI bug overheard Giancana say of the president, 'but you won't get anything out of him.'

"Around that time, Miss Exner says, the flow of envelopes between Kennedy and Giancana ceased. By the fall of the year, when her affair with the president had dwindled and died, she sought solace in a brief affair with Giancana. She recalls him speaking of Robert Kennedy 'with hatred,' of the president, 'without respect.'

"Also that fall, Florida Mafia boss Santos Trafficante, an accomplice of Giancana in the Castro murder plots – and a man with close links to the exiled Joe Adonis – made an ominous comment. The Kennedy's were 'not honest,' he told an associate. 'They took graft and they did not keep a bargain,' he said. 'Mark my words, this man Kennedy is in trouble, and he will get what is coming to him... He is going to be hit.

"... The House Elect Committee on Assassinations concluded in 1978 that President Kennedy was 'probably' assassinated as the result of a conspiracy. The staff was divided over whether the murderers were mobsters or U.S. intelligence operatives, or elements of both. In a book soon to be published, Sam Giancana's nephew and godson – also named Sam – will say the committee was right about the conspiracy, and that his uncle was involved. The book will also corroborate Miss Exner's claim that she acted as courier between Kennedy and Giancana, and will say that two others – public figures – were used the same way."

Nixon was financed by the Mafia, as well as by Hughes and, it turns out, Onassis. Davenport and Lawson, in *The Empire of Howard Hughes* relate a deal between John Mitchell and Onassis: "One... reads that Martha Mitchell, though highly discredited for her eccentricities and weird ways, had some knowledge of her husband's and Nixon's relations with the Onassis shipping industry and Hughes. ...Says Beale in her Washington column:

"She (Martha Mitchell) said Aristotle Onassis came to see John Mitchell immediately after she and John had moved in their New York apartment three years ago. She rushed to get to John's side of the apartment finished in time for the visit. Onassis, she said, came to discuss an over $900 million deal that he and John were supposedly involved in, but she did not know just what John's involvement was."

Documented contributions to Nixon from the Mob include $5,000 from Mickey Cohen for Nixon's first campaign for Congress, an additional $75,000 from Cohen during the 1950 Senate campaign, Carlos Marcello's $500,000 delivered to Nixon in 1960, and $1,000,000 given to him in 1977 by Frank Fitzsimmons and Tony Provenzano.

In an interview with reporter Dick Russell, printed in *Argosy* magazine in 1976, Charles Colson said he had heard the theory that Hughes's empire was actually, "...a headquarters of the Mafia's operation; that they owned Bebe Rebozo, they got their hooks into Nixon early, and, of course, that ties into the overlap of the CIA and the mob... Don't say that's my theory, but I've heard it expounded as a possibility and, of course, it is."

Although you'll hear nothing of it in any of the many Onassis biographies, it turns out that his links to Nazis, Mafia and the JFK assassination were legion. Although this naturally does not prove that Onassis was Nazi, Mafia, or involved in the assassination of Kennedy, it does open the door for speculation in those areas, and also lends more credibility to Bruce Roberts' claims.

In *The Secret Government*, John Judge says that the fictional Corsican Mafia ("Union Corse") figure Ernst Stavro Blofeld, in the Ian Fleming James Bond books, was based on Onassis. Not as unlikely as it might seem at first glance, since Ian Fleming had been an intelligence operative and, by his own admission, based some of his characters on real individuals.

William Taub was a middleman for Onassis, and had other clients that included Nixon, Howard Hughes, and Jimmy Hoffa. According to Mae Brussell in her article "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination," printed in *The Rebel* in 1983, "Taub was especially close to Cardinal Alfredo Ottaviania of the Holy See, who arranged Mussolini's 1929 'donation' of $89,000,000 to the Vatican to ensure its neutrality with Mussolini and Hitler. The money went into a special fund in the Vatican Bank, and after the war part of it was entrusted to 'God's Banker' Michele Sindona [kingpin of the infamous Freemasonic P2/Vatican/Mafia connection, who began his career as a lawyer for the Sicilian Mafia] for investment. Sindona channelled a good chunk of it to the Nixon campaign." Sindona was also a guest at Nixon's inaugural ball, although this probably did not entirely discharge Nixon's debt to him.

Also implicated in the Vatican Bank scandal was Johnny Roselli, a prominent player in Gemstone, who, along with other Mafiosi, printed one billion dollars worth of counterfeit stock, which promptly vanished into the Vatican Bank and Banco Ambrosiano.

In *The Illuminoids*, Neal Wilgus says in 1968 "Agnew [was] allegedly chosen for Nixon's vice president to obtain CIA and Greek oil and shipping firms' contributions."

Aside from his Mafia associations, Nixon also had Nazi ties that overlap with those of Onassis. Again, according to Brussell: "In 1952 Nicola Malaxa moved from Whittier, California to Argentina. Malaxa had belonged to Otto von Bolshchwing's Gestapo network, as did his associate Viorel Trifia, who was living in Detroit. They were members of the Nazi Iron Guard in Romania and had fled prosecution. They had one other thing in common: they were friends with Richard Nixon.

"Trifia had been brought to the United States by von Bolschwing. Malaxa had escaped from Europe with over $200,000,000 in U.S. dollars. Upon arrival in New York he picked up another $200,000,000 from Chase Manhattan Bank. The legal path for his entry was smoothed by the Sullivan & Cromwell law offices, the Dulles brother's firm [which also represented a large number of Nazi interests]. Undersecretary of State Adolph Berle, who helped Nixon and star witness Whittaker Chambers convict Alger Hiss, personally testified on Malaxa's behalf before a Congressional subcommittee on immigration. In 1951 Senator Nixon introduced a private bill to allow Malaxa permanent residence. Arrangements for his relocation in Whittier were made by Nixon's law office.

"When Malaxa went to Argentina in 1952, he linked up with Juan Peron and Otto Skorzeny. Questions were raised at the time about J. Edgar Hoover, the Iron Guard, Malaxa and Vice President Nixon."

One of Onassis's documented Nazi associations was Hjalmar Schact, the president of Hitler's Reichsbank, who was released by John J. McCloy (later on the Warren Commission) from imprisonment for war crimes in Germany and later employed by the Greek shipping magnate. Schact was the son-in-law of Otto Skorzeny, the creator of the "International Fascista," buddies with John Foster Dulles in the banking schemes that put Hitler into power, and later employed by the CIA and the Reinhard Gehlen BND. Schact was also a close friend of Clay Shaw, charged by New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison with involvement in the assassination of John F. Kennedy. Brussell says that "Schacht guided Onassis's shipyards in rebuilding the German and Japanese war fleets." I see no reason to imagine, nor evidence to suggest that Onassis's Nazi connections were terminated after World War II.

Onassis was sexually involved with Eva Peron. Of Peron, John Judge says in the article "Good Americans": "Evita got her funds from the Nazi treasures stolen by Martin Bormann at the end of the war, and put hundreds of millions in the 'Evita Peron Foundation' and Swiss bank accounts. This money aided men like Josef Mengele, Heinrich Dorge, Hjalmar Schacht (who had worked under Herman Abs at the Reichsbank, Rudolf Freude, Dr. Fritz Thyssen, Dr. Gustav Krupp, Otto Skorzeny, and others." As Judge is apt to say, the same names keep cropping up.

Lebedev's *Treason for my Daily Bread* and Flammonde's *The Kennedy Conspiracy* implicate Bormann in the assassination of JFK. According to Edwards and Dunne in *A Study of a Master Spy*, "Official Washington knew Martin Bormann, Deputy Fuhrer of Hitler's Germany, master minded the international 'Die Spinne' (Spider) underground organization which is planning to revive Nazism as soon as West Germany is adequately rearmed by the United States. Official Washington seems disinterested."

Other correlations are provided by Mae Brussell: "The Howard Hughes organization... has long retained Carl Byour Associates [referred to as Byoir in the Skeleton Key] as its public relations arm. Throughout the war Byour represented Nazi bankers and industrialists and the I.G. Farben interests. One of its clients was Ernest Schmitz, member of I.G. Farben and the German American Board of Trade. A lucrative Byour client was the Frederick Flick Group. Flick, a Nuremberg defendant released by McCloy, was the single greatest power behind the Nazi military muscle."

Was Aristotle Onassis the monster that Bruce Roberts portrayed him as? All we can say with certainty is that he ran with the breed.

Roberts' story finally contains portions believable and unbelievable. I am left wondering whether Bruce Roberts really was privy to the inside track or making educated guesses based upon his research... or even making connections with stories in the tabloid press, as lurid then as it is now.

Prior to corresponding with Caruana I assumed that Roberts' contact with Mae Brussell was probably the key to much of his knowledge. I reasoned that if he was familiar enough with Brussell to give the *Gemstone File* to her, then he was probably no more nor less than an amateur conspiratologist, aware of the content of her encyclopedic conspiracy programs and conspiratorial worldview, as well as other cloak and dagger literature of the day. It is interesting that the Skeleton Key pointedly does not mention Brussell's researches (or precious little of anyone else's, for that matter, although other researchers were consulted in the preparation of Gemstone). Caruana, however, downplays Roberts' association with Brussell, who she knew as well.

"Roberts was far from an amateur conspiratologist. Between Mae Brussell, and Bruce Roberts, it was Mae who was the amateur. She was a 'filer,' as anyone who knew her would tell you. I don't think she ever had any direct connection with the events she described. (Except for her contact with Roberts, which she misunderstood at the time.)...

"Bruce Roberts, on the other hand, got a lot of his information direct from the source, and from his own experiences.

He also 'traded' his Gemstone letters to sources around the world, who in turn supplied him with information that was unobtainable elsewhere. It was a worldwide information network on the highest level."

Maybe.

Finally, was Bruce Roberts' purpose to paint himself as the consummate insider, hobnobber with kingmakers and kingslayers, or did he really have a true conception of the forces behind world events? The flawed nature of the Gemstone, its lack of sources and verifiable facts, make it difficult and perhaps ultimately impossible to tell.

Correspondence with Stephanie Caruana has filled in (at least in my mind) many key points that make Bruce Roberts a real person, "a player, not a sideline sitter," as she says. My own feeling is that he was sincere and, with his letters, attempting a work that is still continuing, primarily through the circulation of the Skeleton Key synopsis. I don't believe that he was the James Bond that Caruana maintains he was, but I don't believe he was Caspar Milquetoast, either. My guess is that he was something closer to human: a combination of both.

For making the attempt that Gemstone represents (and taking the chance, if only in his own mind, of dying for it), I respect Bruce Roberts, even though the product of his efforts (admittedly judged by the Skeleton Key and not his original letters) is in many respects uneven, derivative, and perhaps wrong.

The Skeleton Key exudes a subjectivity and paranoia that cripples much of its believability, that puts into question Roberts' discoveries and opinions. These are shortcomings that have kept Gemstone confined to the tight orbits of conspiracy aficionados and the reason I consider it unlikely that the Mafia ever considered the document a threat to their dominion. Still, I am convinced that Roberts did have contacts high and low, and pursued his quest in an attempt to fathom an evil that must have seemed to swirl about him. The *Gemstone File* was an honest attempt to expose international corruption, using whatever sources Roberts could find, and there is a possibility that it contains a clear reflection of the sinister shapes that continue to move in the darkness.

The Godfather, Part IV

Robert Anton Wilson

How much of the *Gemstone File* is true? Not much, I'd say; but I do feel sure that the basic thesis — America's conquest by gangsters and thugs — is substantially accurate, even though most "good citizens" would rather die, even in prolonged torture, than to face the facts.

Since thinking about conspiracies is neither illegal, nor immoral, nor fattening, I have often wondered why people have such a powerful tabu against examining who owns and runs this nation.

Why is it that, with a literary tradition in which conspiracy stories are among our "classics" — e.g. Shakespeare's *Julius Caesar, Henry IV, Parts I, II, III* and *Richard III*, Conan Doyle's *The Red Headed League*, most of Raymond Chandler, Dickens' *Oliver Twist*, all of John le Carre, Pynchon's *Gravity's Rainbow*, to name only a few — we still fear to think about such clandestine and murderous struggles in the "real" world?

Why is it that, in that "real" world, our legal system recognizes conspiracy as a criminal offense, but we still have a conditioned reflex that makes us regard any conspiracy researchers as a "nut case?"

And why is it that we all know the word "paranoid," but hardly anybody can think of words for *rational suspicion* or *rational fear* — even though both of these would appear necessary for survival in a world where every major government has a secret police agency and every corporation and political party has a "dirty tricks" department?

Thunder and Tabu

After decades of mulling this mystery – why are most people so terrified of tabu ideas about their rulers – I think I finally found the answer in the 18th Century Neapolitan sociologist Giambastica Vico, best known today as the inventor of what we call transpersonal linguistics (the study of how language influences perception and social "reality"). Vico had lots of other ideas, however, but wrote them in a rather opaque style – sensibly, since in Naples, at that time, the Holy Inquisition still occasionally barbecued people who had original notions.

Vico seems to imply, in his indirect Neapolitan way, that the first god was the thunder, and morality derives from traumatic experiences with thunder (i.e. "negative imprints"). Vico was the first to study the cave peoples, and to suggest that Bigfoot was a survivor of that age; and from cave art, Vico imaginatively deduced that anything that happened just before thunder roared in the sky was construed by our ancestors as arousing the anger of some giant being up there – i.e. "god."

Thus, imagine some caveman about to crack his brother on the head with an ax, when the thunder crashed. Obviously, the Thunder God disapproved of killing your relatives. For the next 30,000 years we have kept the tabu, "Never kill members of your own tribe." War goes on, perhaps, because in those early days the thunder never struck when somebody was getting ready to hit a "foreigner" (non-tribe member) with an ax.

Can you think of a better explanation of why most people, although they seem sane, look with natural horror upon murder (killing tribe members) but have no such horror or loathing or even mild discomfort about mass murder (war)? Or why they think those who do object to mass murder (war) are somehow "queer" or bizarre or (most amazingly) "indecent?"

Or consider the idiocies of our "decent" sexual codes. If I understand Vico's hints, some delightful sexual dalliances got put under Big Tabu because just when somebody was trying them, the sky roared again.

"Well, we can't do it that way after all. Damn!"

And another tabu lasted 30,000 years or longer...

In some cases, nobody could figure out what had provoked the anger of the sky-god – why the thunder roared at a certain moment. The early shamans must have given this a lot of thought. They finally decided that since nothing had happened, the god must have gotten royally pissed off at something somebody said. And so, bit by bit, or byte by byte, more and more ideas and images were denied verbal expression, because the Thunder God might get into a frightful snit if he heard them being uttered.

Then the idea dawned that He Who Thundereth From on High might get royally pissed over things we were merely thinking...

Thus, we still have long lists of unspeakable words and unthinkable ideas, because the old brain, where primitive imprints are stored, still fears that primordial Thunder God (who appears, incidentally on the soundtrack of almost every horror movie, when the director wants to activate our deepest collective anxieties).

Even people who think they have outgrown the Thunder God and the tabus of the Old Stone Age will find certain atavistic fears creeping up on them, in some modern works of art which deliberately violate tabu and conventional ways of thinking. Sen. Jesse Helms – who is financed by people who make their living by literally poisoning us – can always make headlines by finding a new work of art which triggers the dread of the Thunder God.

The same is true of the present book, so I warn you that, if you think certain ideas and images can be dangerous to us – can literally bring down "curses from heaven" (the roars of the Tyrant in the Sky) – this book can be extremely hazardous to your health. If you are in the Political Correctness business, perhaps the safest course is not to read the book at all, and just issue a general condemnation of it based on your ideas about what might be found in here if you dared to read the eldritch and unhallowed pages that follow. Of course, condemning books you haven't read always sounds goofy to the uninitiate and ungodly; but then condemning what you know nothing about represents a long and honorable tradition among censors, who have never worried about the fact that they very often sound goofy, batty, buggy or just plain whacko to the rest of us.

After all, censorship consists chiefly of reading books that are suspected of causing degeneracy and depravity among their readers. The censor is therefore, by definition, a person constantly risking self-destruction and moral decay. What Dorian Grey—like loathesomeness must result after three or four years of hard work as a censor staggers the imagination – the mind conjures images from *Tales from the Crypt.* But some persist in this risky profession for five years, for ten, sometimes for twenty. The total corruption that must result involves thoughts of the lowest and most excremental pits of Dante's Inferno.

One can admire the courage of those who undertake such perilous quests, but one also wonders a bit about their foolhardiness or downright masochism.

Consider: Charles Keating, who first came to the public notice as leader of the National Organization for Decent Literature, spent years scrutinizing the centerfolds of *Playboy*, which he suspected of being hazardous. After intensely studying 12 of these American beauties every year, Keating was indeed corrupted. He currently stands convicted of massive junk bond swindles and embezzlements, and is accused of bribing five U.S. Senators – who already proceeded to "the hard stuff" – *Penthouse* or *Hustler.*

Far more terrifying than erotica, certain ideas have been banned, repressed, outlawed, punished violently and generally forbidden to consciousness throughout history. Not surprisingly, the most damned of all damned ideas is the notion that the local rulers are not the benevolent Santa Claus types they always pretend to be but are quite the reverse of that.

Tabu on Thinking About Evil in High Places

Why was even a raving mad Hitler obeyed up until the last day in the bunker? Why did the Russian peoples try desperately to believe in Stalin until that bloody lunatic was dead and buried? For the same reason that the majority of Americans do not want to hear about the involvement of

George Bush and the CIA in the international drug business and its associated corruption of law enforcement and its trail of murder and neo-Nazi conspiracy. It is dangerous to talk about such things, and with the Thunder God still a living presence in the collective unconscious, it feels dangerous to even think about them.

Let us consider the "psychology" – or better yet, the physiology of the Power Elite, i.e. the men Buckminster Fuller called the "Great Pirates."

All of us, men and women and those who aren't sure, have some testosterone (the principle "male" hormone) and some estrogen (the principle "female" hormone) from conception onward, but before we even get out of the womb our chemistry starts to change. Males are born with more testosterone, females with more estrogen – and after puberty, the amount of testosterone in men and estrogen in women increases steeply, determining most of our adult behavior for the next 30 or 40 years, and only decreases again in old age. Let me quote some data from Michael Hutchison's *The Anatomy of Sex and Power.*

Men "see" more sexuality than women do. Psychologist Frank Sal, showing a film of a man and woman talking, found male students perceived more sexual flirtation in the film, while women saw only friendliness. We "see" what the chemicals in our brain program us to see.

There also seems to be a circular-causal or "feedback" loop in testosterone level. Testosterone makes men act "dominant," but acting dominant also increases the production of testosterone.

Thus, one study of male tennis players found higher testosterone levels among the winners than among the losers, one hour after competition. (Ct. Henry Kissinger's famous and quite accurate remark, "Power is the ultimate aphrodisiac.")

Wrestlers at Harvard also showed higher testosterone among the winners than the losers, and on a more intellectual level of competition, medical students showed higher testosterone one day after graduation. Conversely, the humiliating and terrifying experience of arriving at Army boot camp lowers testosterone.

The testesterone/estrogen ratio also relates directly to the fact that most men are more violent than women. Researcher June Reinisch of Rutgers University found that both boys and girls given certain precursors of the testosterone – chemicals that increase testosterone production in the body – immediately become more aggressive. In fact, Reinisch's subjects, both boys and girls became twice as aggressive as a control group not given the hormones. The aggressivity indexes were:

Boys given the hormone: 9.75; other boys 4.88.

Girls given the hormone: 4.0; other girls 2.6.

Note that testosterone boosters approximately doubled aggression in both sexes, and that boys already have so much more testosterone than girls that, even without boosters, they are still nearly twice as aggressive. This result was so totally contrary to previous scientific doctrine that Reinish was unwilling to publish her findings at first. As she later said, "The results were so shocking that I actually sat on them for a year. I was afraid to publish them."

Similarly, in a joint study by the Clarke Institute of Psychiatry and Mount Sinai Hospital, both in Toronto, the hormone levels of 20 rapists were compared with those of 20 nonrapists. The rapists consistently had higher precursors of testosterone.

In another study males with a history of low sex drive showed an increase in sexual fantasy and desire when given testosterone. Physiologist Julian Davidson, who did this research, says that "testosterone is the biological substrate of desire, at least in men."

These patterns took on new meaning when Frank Farley, a University of Wisconsin psychologist, found that male sensation-seekers or novelty-seekers have "rather high testosterone levels." Farley named these types Big T's and called the other extreme, those who want stability, little t's.

Farley found that the biggest Big T's are male and young (made up of the highest testosterone group in any society.) Big T adolescents tend to be very creative or prone to delinquency, or sometimes show both tendencies (like the charming and terrifying sociopath in *Clockwork Orange*.) Farley also found the Big T's, whether creative or criminal, are more inclined than average males to self-destructive behaviors like drug abuse, smoking and alcoholism, and have twice as many auto accidents as little t's. In short, they have the attitudes Nietzsche called "Herrenmoral" – the ethics of pirates, conquistadores and gunslingers.

Little t's, Farley says, "cling to certainty and predictability, avoiding risks and the unfamiliar – neither creative nor criminal – they're grey." They also like to fantasize that the Big T's are "protecting" them – a fantasy the mass media is paid to encourage – and never, never want to know about the "Herrenmoral" that actually guides Big T thinking. The little t's are governed by what Nietzsche called "Sklavmoral" – the morality of slaves and serfs, or paleolithic fear of the Thunder God, of the "domesticated primate."

Obviously, little t's are the wimps in any crowd, most people are middle t's, and the violent Big T's rise to the top in every society. If the *Gemstone File* reminds you of Seutonius' *Lives of the Caesars*, it is because the same types rule all empires, in ancient Rome or modern America. Bruce Roberts has merely given us the front names and hind names and home addresses of some of our current versions of Nero, Caligula, Tiberius and Company.

The Mafiazation of America

When my father was young, back around the turn of this century, the America Mafia was a small bunch of hoodlums in New York known only for extorting money from other Italian immigrants. Today, it is almost impossible to discover an area of American life and finance that the Mob hasn't penetrated and perverted. Businesses that do not at least occasionally deal with the Mafia are as rare as kangaroos in the Royal Ballet.

Mafiosi own major hotels; they're as ubiquitous as roaches in the restaurant business; they have funded their own banks and own shares in others; they own large hunks of movie studios (e.g. Paramount); they've taken over whole labor unions (e.g the Teamsters); they even have a weird (but well documented) symbiosis with the C.I.A. In a sense our whole national identity has been reshaped in the Mafia mold.

Nobody aware of the facts can deny that this much of the *Gemstone File* is true.

And the paranoia that infests any person or group that has to deal with the Mob has become pervasive in every aspect of American life. While naive professors write silly books about the "greening" of America or the "closing of the American mind," the major fact of our century goes unrecorded by Academia – the Mafiazation of the United States.

Bucky Fuller even claimed, in his last book, *Grunch of Giants*, that the Mafia is one of the four principle international powers in the modern world, along with the oil cartels, the Atomic Energy corporations and the international banks.

All this has been accomplished by our anti-drug laws, which allow the mob to sell for $200 (or more) a day's worth of heroin stupor or cocaine excitement that would sell for less than a dollar in a free market. Every year that these anti-drug laws continue, the Mafia gets richer and buys or bullies its way into more areas of previously "respectable" business.

Pulitzer Prize columnist Jack Anderson has charged, in his column and in a recent 2-hour TV documentary that the Mafia killed President John F. Kennedy, much as the *Gemstone File* claims. I happen to agree with Anderson and *Gemstone* on this issue, on the basis of the evidence; but in a sense it doesn't matter whether one agrees or not. The terrible fact is that the Mafia is known to be so powerful that most people are ready to believe they could kill a President and get away with it.

They kill politicians and investigating magistrates every week or two in Italy, don't they?

The major reason to end our "war against drugs," to me, is that the "war" is in practical terms a vast crusade to keep up the profits of the Mafia and to increase the power of organized crime in every nook and cranny of America. One has to be very naive to assume the Mob doesn't know this and isn't financing most of the "anti-drug" propaganda one sees on TV and reads in the press. The only people who have a sane and rational reason to keep recreational drugs illegal are the Mafia, George Bush and other Mobsters (in and out of the CIA) who profit from anti-drug laws and the black market these laws have created.

If drugs were legalized, the Mafia/CIA cabal would not go away – it is too rich now, for that – but at least it would stop growing at its present alarmingly cancerous rate. It seems likely, reflecting on the Mafia's growth between 1907 (the anti-heroin law) and 1992 (laws against hundreds of drugs), that if these laws remain on the books another 20 years, the Mob will quite likely own just about the whole country. In that case, if you want to see America's future just sit through all three of *The Godfather* films twice and read the last two centuries of Sicilian history.

If drugs were legalized, every one of us would be safer in our homes and on the streets. Muggings, purse snatchings, burglaries etc. would decrease the first day addicts could get a fix for a dollar instead of having to steal $400 or more to feed the monkey on their backs. (Most male addicts have to boost that much in property to get $200 from an underworld fence, and $200 a day is about standard for a heavy heroin habit.)

If drugs were legalized, many female addicts would no longer be forced into lives of prostitution – and the Mob would lose another source of revenue, and become less powerful in our political and financial structure. "Politics" and "business" might not forever remain words that are largely synonymous with murder and robbery – as they are today.

If drugs were legalized, the abnormal and pathological crowding in our prisons would end. This overcrowding in our prisons is probably a major factor in the notorious inability of our penology to "reform" anybody – as illustrated by the fact that most ex-cons are imprisoned again within one year after release.

Any ecologist or ethologist will tell you that all animals, including humans, become perverse, violent and a bit crazy when overcrowded. Stuffing our jails until the walls bulge with largely harmless pot-smokers and acid heads is a formula guaranteed to increase our ever-accelerating high crime rate. Being in prison for 5 to 10 years is just like being on the New York subway during a "rush hour" that lasts that long: everybody comes out wired and mean.

If drugs were legalized, vast amounts of police time and energy would be freed up to deal with violent crimes, instead or being wasted on busting a few kids who like to smoke weed when they listen to their favorite Rock records – or using Machievellian techniques, elephantine patience and huge quantities of time and money to hunt down a few psychology majors who want to try LSD or MDMA to find out for themselves what altered consciousness is all about.

The cost of administering our anti-drug laws doubled under Nixon, doubled again between Nixon and Reagan, doubled one more time since 1980 when Nancy Reagan took office with Ronnie as her front, and is now doubling almost yearly – and there are more drugs everywhere, not less. Anybody who thinks this result was not planned with maximum profit in mind would believe in the chastity of Long Dong Silver.

As in all other cases where a government attempts to control the private habits of its citizens, the cost goes up and up, and up, and up, and the "problem" gets worse, not better. Have we completely forgotten the lessons of alcohol prohibition in which the same total failure to cure alcoholism resulted and nobody profited by the gangsters?

When she was president, Nancy Reagan once proposed that the government should attempt to arrest and imprison every drug user in the country. Nobody can guess how much it would cost to find and arrest everybody who uses an illegal chemical occasionally – and it would obviously require a completely totalitarian government to undertake such a task – but even if it were done, we would have a bill of $15,000,000,000 every year to keep all these people in jail, according to the calculations of congressman Pete Shark.

We are already the number one debtor nation in the world; can we afford to pay the taxes for $15,000,000,000 every year, to keep these galoots in jail, and for at least another $15,000,000,000 (or more likely $30,000,000,000) every year to maintain the totalitarian state necessary to ensnare them all?

At this point, does anybody still believe that the "war on drugs" can be successful at any cost less than that, and without utter totalitarianism – without a bug in every bedroom, a mail cover on every citizen?

If drugs were legalized, the court system might be unclogged to the extent that a civil suit brought in 1992 might actually get to judgement before 2002, or a teenage punk arrested for rape might stand trial before he gets his first social security check.

Considering that the profits from this racket run into hundreds of billions every year, does anybody still believe that the laws which create the racket remain on the books due to "prejudice" or "ignorance?" The laws remain because they are making huge profits for the Great Pirates – the Big T's. As J.R. "Bob" Dobbs, our greatest 20th century philosopher says, "The major errors by which most people are deceived are (1) the belief that our rulers are dumb, and (2) the belief that they mean well. They are not dumb and they don't mean well."

Tales from the Vatican Crypt

G.J. Krupey

Part 1

Gemstone Files entry for February, 1972:

"The day before [Bruce Roberts' father was allegedly murdered by Watergate 'Plumbers' Dale, Martinez, Gonzalez, and Barker in a San Francisco hospital], Tisseront [sic], head of the College of Cardinals at the Vatican, was pushed out of a Vatican window. Tisseront had followed the career of the present Pope, Montini (whose mother was Jewish). Montini sodium-morphate murdered Pope Pius XI; was banished from Rome for it by Pius XII; became Pope in 1963. Tisseront wrote it all down; called the Pope "The Deputy of Christ at Auschwitz," and the fulfillment of the Fatima 3 Prophecy: that "the anti-Christ shall rise to become head of the Church." Tisseront also wrote about all the suppressed secrets of the Roman Catholic Church: ie, that Jesus Christ was an Arab, born April 16, 6 BC at the rare conjunction of Saturn and Jupiter. Arab (Persian) astronomers (the Magi) came to Bethlehem to look for their king, an Arab baby and found him in a stable, because the Jews wouldn't let Arabs Mary and Joseph into their nice clean inns, even then. When Jesus overturned the tables of the money lenders at the Temple, the Jews had the Romans nail him to a Cross. He died on the cross when the Roman soldiers stuck a spear in his side, pulled out his liver, and ate it. Tacitus, the Roman historian, described it all in a chunk of history deleted by the Church. Nero burned Rome but that didn't stop the spreading of Moses' teachings by the early Christians (Arabs). So the Romans decided to adopt the religion, clean it up, make Christ a Jew and Mary a virgin, and work out a Church State deal to fool the people in the name of God and country that had been operating ever since. Around 311 AD at the council of Nicasa [sic], the Christian Orthodoxy was established: a dissenting bishop had his hands chopped off; another bishop was assigned to round up all the old copies of the *Bible* and destroy them in favor of the "revised" de-Arabized version. Cleaned up Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John were declared "it," the other Gospels were declared apocryphal, and heretical. Roman Emperor Constantine became the first Christian emperor.

Later, during the holy crusades, the *Bible* was again rewritten to include Jesus's warning against the 'yellow race.'

And that is the Gospel according to Bruce Roberts, or whoever provided him with that bizarre revision of two thousand years of Christianity. Jesus an Arab? Suppression by the early Church of dissident gospels? The *Bible*, the sacred word of God, rewritten, revised, and altered to accomodate the changing political climate and the ambitions of Church and State? A half-Jewish Pope who collaborated with the Nazis and murdered his way to the Triple Crown? Absurd? Impossible? Unthinkable? Blasphemous?

Who else but a paranoid lunatic, one who thought that the Kennedy assassination was the result of a turf-war to control organized crime in America between Howard Hughes and Aristotle Onassis, who else but someone like that, like Bruce Roberts, would even entertain such ideas, let alone believe them? But is there any validity to what he claimed? To dissect his claims one by one:

According to his obituary in the *New York Times* (1) Eugene Cardinal Tisserant, age 87, died of a heart attack on 2/21/72 at the Regina Apostalorum Clinic in Albano, Italy, a "hill village twenty-six miles southeast of Rome." He had checked into the clinic in July of 1971 to be treated "for a form of prostatic hypertrophy," that is, enlargement of the prostate gland, a common and potentially fatal ailment in elderly men.

Tisserant had a long and distinguished career in the Church. An Oriental languages scholar (he spoke eleven different tongues), he did field research in Jerusalem and other areas of the Middle East, he was curator of Oriental manuscripts in the Vatican library, and as administrator of it, he reorganized and modernized it. If there was a suppressed secret at the heart of the Christian religion, and it was documented, Tisserant would be the man who would have known.

Tisserant was Dean of the College of Cardinals during the elections of Popes John XXIII and Paul VI, two Popes who initiated the reforms that proceeded from the Second Vatican Council. As a conservative, Tisserant felt "uneasy about the tides of change swelling the Church," yet it was also claimed that he "had little interest in Church politics."

A workaholic despite his advanced age, Tisserant retired only because of "papal pressure"—from Paul VI, the Pope that Bruce Roberts claimed poisoned Pius XI, and which Tisserant documented in his diary. The fact that Tisserant was being pressured by the Pope to retire [Paul VI had apparently instituted mandatory retirement for Vatican clerics, another innovation], and that Tisserant was visited on the morning he died by Vatican Secretary of State Jean Cardinal Villot, who was as liberal as Tisserant was conservative, and who "conveyed the blessings of Pope Paul VI" may have led Roberts to believe that Tisserant was murdered. It was sometime between February 1972 and January 1973 that Roberts received—or claimed to receive—a copy of Tisserant's diary:

"January, 1973: Tisseront [sic] was dead—but as the Church rushed to destroy every copy of his papers, Roberts received one—and wrote a few of his own, released over New Years':

1. "The Cover-Up of the Murder of Christ";.....

4. "Vietnam—Fatima 3—Holy Crusade."

[Numbers 2 and 3 are not relevant to this discussion.]

It is not impossible that Roberts received a document—from what source he doesn't even hint—that purported to be a copy of Tisserant's secret diary. It was apparently common knowledge—or at least a common presumption—among Vaticanologists that Tisserant was keeping diaries for the purpose of eventual publication. Roberts could have been the victim of a hoaxer, if we charitably disregard the possibility of Roberts himself being that hoaxer. Or Roberts may have been merely guessing at solutions to fragmentary information that he may have been receiving from a variety of contradictory sources, and claiming to have the elusive documentation from high places in order to confer the aura of authority upon his own pet theories.

Whatever the reason, Bruce Roberts did not make up the claim that Pope Pius XI was murdered by poisoning, he merely added his own twist to it by accusing Giovanni Battista Montini, the then current Pope Paul VI, of being the guilty party. Other fingers have pointed at one Dr. Francesco Petacci, a Vatican physician and father of an actress, Clara Petacci, who just happened to be the mistress of Italian dictator Benito Mussolini (the pair would be executed together, and their corpses exposed to the abuses of a crowd of disillusioned former admirers).

Pius XI had been an early supporter of Mussolini's, having once declared him (December 20, 1926) "the man sent by Providence." (2) In 1929, Pius and Il Duce signed the Lateran Treaty, which in essence recognized Roman Catholicism as the sole official religion of the Italian state even as the Vatican itself was recognized as a sovereign state and the Pope as inviolable. Mussolini, for his part, received the tacit approval, if not blessings, of the papacy, which at this time feared the imminent eruption of godless Bolshevik revolutions. But Mussolini didn't uphold his end of the bargain on all counts, and in 1931 Pius gave the dictator a tongue-lashing in an official encyclical. Pius didn't seem to learn his lesson, because in 1933 he forged a similar concordat with yet another champion of Christian civilization, Adolph Hitler. The Nazis also reneged and Pius denounced Nazism in yet another encyclical in 1937. By this time even Pius had wised up, and regretting his former accomodationism with the two fascist regimes (not, it must be emphasized, because of their flagrant abuses of human rights, per se, but because of their flouting of the agreed-upon privileges and perogatives of the Catholic Church), he resolved to correct his error by condemning fascism-nazism in no uncertain terms. In February 1939, with the wholesale attacks on Jews and the rapid escalation towards another world war, Pius fell ill while working on his speech, and begged his doctors to keep him alive long enough to deliver it.

It was only twenty-four hours before he was to deliver the speech, on the tenth anniversary of the concordat with Mussolini, ironically enough, that he suddenly died. The text of the speech disappeared. Allegedly, Petacci, in his role as a Vatican physician, killed Pius by injecting him with a poison (probably not Roberts' ubiquitous sodium morphate), and embalming the body before an autopsy could be conducted. (3)

According to John Cornwall, this revelation originated in "a scurrilous book entitled *The Vatican Papers* by one Nino LoBello" whose source "was the private diary of the powerful French cardinal of that period, Eugene Tisserant." (4) Anthony Rhodes, in his book on the relations between the Popes and the fascist dictators, states:

"Since this was written [the passages dealing with the death of Pius XI], allegations have appeared in the French and Italian press (1972) that Pius XI in his last illness was assassinated at the order of Mussolini, who had learned of the contents of the Pope's coming speech. They are based on the revelations said to be contained in the memoirs of the late Cardinal Tisserant...Arguments for and against this thesis continue to be bandied about, and will doubtless be repeated when Cardinal Tisserant's memoirs are published." (5)

Rhodes discounts the assassination theory, noting that Pius, aged 82 years when he died on February 10, 1939, had nearly died in 1937 of a combination of "cardiac weakness, arteriosclerosis, and asthma", and he suffered another heart attack in November, 1938, (6) implying that it wouldn't have taken much to kill an old and ailing man like Pius. Rhodes also notes that the British Ambassador to the Vatican, D'Arcy Osborne, did not refer to any rumors or suspicions of assassination in his diplomatic cables to London at that time, and he would have had ample reason for publicizing any accusations of fascist murder of the Pope.

Another writer who recounts the tale of Mussolini's poisoning of Pius is Avro Manhattan (7). He also attributes Tisserant's unpublished diaries as the verification of this claim. Unlike Bruce Roberts, he does not claim to have seen a copy of Tisserant's actual papers, but claims for his source a mutual friend of both himself and the deceased Pope, Dom Luigi Sturzo, priest and founder of the Italian Catholic Action Party in the 1920's. Manhattan claims that Tisserant's diaries were removed from the Cardinal's home in France (he doesn't say by whom) upon his death, and taken to the safety of a Swiss bank vault. Supposedly, Tisserant himself had given strict instructions (again, Manhattan does not reveal to whom) that under no circumstances were the diaries to fall into the hands of the Vatican. No doubt, as one well advanced in the Vatican hierarchy, Tisserant (8) knew only too well the Church's penchant for rewriting history to its convenience.

Contrary to the Roberts-Gemstone version, none of these sources implicate Monsignor Montini, later Pope Paul VI, in the murder of Pope Pius XI. It is significant that Rhodes indicates 1972, the year of the deaths of both Tisserant and Roberts' father, as the year when the French and Italian press began to publicize the rumors that Pius XI was murdered on orders from Mussolini. Roberts could have gleaned this from readings of the foreign press, and as speculated before, twisted the theory to suit his own purposes. Roberts could not have gotten his information from either Manhattan or Cornwell since their respective books were published after the *Gemstone Files* were initially released, and after Bruce Roberts died in 1976 (1982 for Manhattan's, 1989 for Cornwell's). However, Manhattan wrote many books on the Vatican, and could well have recounted the Pius XI murder story in an earlier volume than the one cited here, and which Roberts could have conceivably read.

The other allegations made against Montini/Pope Paul VI in the *Gemstone Files* also do not seem to bear any resemblance to reality. There is little reason to believe that Montini's mother was Jewish. This just seems to be a gratuitous dose of anti-Semitism, as Roberts seems to be implying that Montini's alleged Jewish maternity (which would officially make him a Jew, no matter what his religion, by Orthodox Jewish law) made him a fraud, unfit to be Pope. Whatever Montini's mother's ethnicity, she was an apparent devout Catholic who had married into an upper-class Lombard family which had produced clerics over the past five centuries. Montini's "banishment" from Rome by Pius XII (Eugenio Pacelli) came in 1954—fifteen years after Pius XII's coronation and fifteen years during which Montini served Pius as an advisor and unofficial Secretary of State—and came a year after he had fallen afoul of arch-conservative Pro-Secretary of State for Extraordinary Affairs, Cardinal Tardini, over the issue of Montini's advocacy of the French "worker-priest" movement, a precursor of the current Liberation Theology. His banishment consisted of being named Archbishop of Milan, barely a hardship considering that the position was practically assured, traditionally, election to the office of cardinal; an office Tardini rejected in 1953, according to rumor, merely to prevent the (as he saw it) pro-Socialist Montini from accepting the Red Hat when the Pope offered it to them both. (9)

As for Montini/Paul VI being "the Deputy of Christ at Auschwitz," the closest Montini got to the site of the infamous Nazi concentration camp was in 1923 when he served as secretary to the papal nuncio in Warsaw, when Auschwitz was still an obscure village in the south of Poland, near Cracow, called Oswiecim. Montini's health failed him in Poland, and after six months he was sent back to Rome, not to step foot out of Italy again (at least according to available records) until his papacy. (10)

The allegation that Montini was the fulfillment of the third Fatima prophecy—that "the anti-Christ shall rise to become head of the Church"—is more hearsay. It not only requires a belief in the veracity of the Fatima incident, but in the reality of the anti-Christ and its converse, in other words, in a belief in Catholic theology. Without that belief, terms like "anti-Christ" are meaningless, even as metaphor. No doubt many outraged traditionalist Catholics, and Cardinal Tisserant may or may not have been one of them, viewed Paul VI as the very devil in view of the Vatican II reforms for which he was primarily responsible, but Christians have been in the habit of playing pin-the-tail-on-the-anti-Christ since the Book of Revelations was written, and one man's anti-Christ has often been another's saint. As for the "Fatima 3 Prophecy," it refers to what was supposed to have been told to three shepherd children near Fatima, Portugal in 1917 by none other than the Virgin Mary herself. She prophesied to them, so the story goes, that the world would witness a "horrible, horrible war" (the world was already in the middle of a horrible war), that Russia must be converted (to Catholicism) or else this horrible, horrible war was guaranteed, and a third, allegedly even grimmer prophecy that the Church refused to make public. (11)

Over the years, rumors have circulated as to the contents of that third prophecy. Every possible assertion has been delivered, with varying degrees of conviction, including the one favored by Bruce Roberts. It has been claimed that Montini's patron, Pope Pius XII, a man given to seeing "apparitions," nearly fainted upon being told what the third prophecy was. This legend may have given rise to the speculation on the part of Roberts and others, that the revelation was the near-future succession to the papal throne of the anti-Christ.

In the January, 1973 Gemstone entry, Roberts cryptically links "Fatima 3" with "Vietnam" and "Holy Crusade." It was actually no secret that the Vatican considered—and used—the Fatima "prophecies" as one of its most effective weapons in its Holy Crusade against godless communism, a Crusade engineered by none other than Pius XII, the firm believer in the Fatima "visitation," himself.

Ironically enough, Roberts may have confused Montini with Pius XII when he accused the former of being the "Deputy of Christ at Auschwitz." The controversy still rages over the extent of the Vatican's complicity with the fascist states. Pius XI championed and engineered concordats with both Mussolini and Hitler before the scales fell from his eyes. His successor, Pius XII, has been the focus of even more bewilderment and invective over his official silence in condemning the *Nazi Endlosung*—Final Solution—of the Jews and fascist war crimes in general. As papal nuncio to Germany in the 1930's, Pius XII (then Cardinal Pacelli), according to Avro Manhattan, helped pave the way to power for Hitler by ordering the Catholic Center Party to dissolve, thus making it easier for the Nazis to win the 1933 election. By his lack of forceful condemnation of Third Reich policies, Manhattan and similar critics charge, Pius XII tacitly encouraged Hitler's intransigence and helped bring the onslaught of World War II and its accompanying horrors. Other critics have been even more severe, accusing Pius XII of having been pro-German (he spent many years in Germany as nuncio, and often expressed his affection for the German people, which as one of his defenders correctly states, is not the same thing as being pro-Nazi) and anti-Semitic. Whatever the consequences of Pius XII's policies, his major intention seems to have been securing the Church from persecution in the fascist states, a policy that was not always successful. A common explanation by Catholic apologists for the Vatican's reluctance to condemn the fascists in blunt, unmitigated terms was the fear that by such harangues the Pope would endanger not only Catholics under fascist sway, but also provoke the Nazis into committing even more brutal atrocities against Jews and other minorities. (12)

The current Pope, John Paul II (Karol Wojtyla) has also been accused of being a Nazi collaborator, even before he entered the Church. According to some Jewish authors, fundamentalist Protestant preachers, and certain disciples of conspiriologist Mae Brussell, John Paul II worked in Nazi-occupied Poland for either Solvay Drugs of the I.G. Farben cartel in a factory at Auschwitz, or as a salesman for Farben's chemical division, selling Zyklon B, the deadly cyanide gas, directly to the Nazi camp at Auschwitz. Supposedly, John Paul, an actor by inclination, entered the priesthood in 1946 in order to escape arrest and trial as a Nazi war criminal. (13) While fundamentalists of certain sects cannot be regarded as objective or reliable in matters concerning the Catholic Church, Avro Manhattan (14) reports that not even Wojtyla's closest friend and confidante, Bishop Andre Deskur, would reveal what John Paul did during the war years. Manhattan calls this "Wojtyla's twilight period, not to be found in any public record." (15) It is possible, but extremely unlikely, that Roberts may have heard something about the alleged Nazi connection of this then obscure Polish cardinal, and either deliberately or unwittingly confused him with Pope Paul VI. But it is most likely—barring the even more unlikely possibility that Roberts did have a copy of Tisserant's papers and faithfully paraphrased them in the *Gemstone Files*—that Roberts merely let his paranoid imagination run wild with certain persistent rumors that appealed to his anti-Catholic prejudices, and mixed them together to villify the Pope at that time, Paul VI.

But if Bruce Roberts was really the insider that he liked to portray himself as, why did he not mention in the *Gemstone Files* the allegations that Paul VI was a CIA asset?

Despite his upper-class background and the patronage of the reactionary Pius XII, Paul VI developed left-wing sympathies and continued, as Pope, the "dialogue" between the Church and the Kremlin begun by his predecessor John XXIII. When John XXIII died in 1963, CIA analysts predicted Montini's election to the papacy, an event that did not please them, Montini being too "liberal" for the company's liking. Yet Montini had ties to the CIA going back to World War II when, in his capacity as officer of the Papal Secretariat, he had passed on information to the OSS, the CIA's wartime parent agency. As Montini was one of four heads of Vatican Intelligence and the keeper of the key to the Vatican's secret code, it was a role he was well suited for. (17) After the war, as archbishop of Milan, "he turned over to the CIA comprehensive dossiers on politically active priests. These were to be used to influence the Italian elections of 1960." (18) To express their gratitude, the CIA made generous donations to various Milanese charities under Montini's benefaction. Despite his services to them, the CIA was leery of Montini and was determined to do what they could to prevent him from becoming Pope, which in hindsight, must not have been very much. (19)

It would seem difficult to understand what sort of game Montini/Paul VI was playing until one reflects on the simple, constant fact of Catholic foreign policy: no matter what the relationship between the Vatican and any state or ideology, or the personal political implications of individual Popes, the Vatican's chief concern is the preservation and extension of its own power and influence. the Vatican accomodates itself with whatever secular ideology happens to be currently dominant, and looks to the future to ascertain the likelihood of that dominance continuing. In the 1960's, many in the Vatican hierarchy, including two Popes (John XXIII and Paul VI) were convinced that capitalism was waning and the future was assured for communism. It was an opinion that millions of people believed—or wanted to believe—and there seemed a great deal of evidence to support it. The Church was preparing itself for existence in a potential communist world, at the same time as it continued to placate the power of the still dominant capitalist West, namely the United States. The Church was never in favor of either system, because neither system placed the Church at the center of its ideology. So the Church, being the repository of truth for all mankind, knew how to play the two off against each other by appropriating selected rhetoric from both sides for its own propaganda purposes, to appear the lone voice of sanity and humane philosophy in a world menaced by the militance of the two contending nuclear super powers. (20)

It was this inability to see the big picture, to reduce everything to the Machiavellian machinations of diabolical individual conspirators, that I think discredits the *Gemstone Files*—at least in this particular instance—as being a reliable source on covert politics. If anything went out a window anywhere on February 21, 1972, it was Bruce Roberts' credibility.

Part 2

It is the second part of the February, 1972 Gemstone entry that makes the most mind-blowing claims, those dealing with the true identity of Jesus and "The Cover-Up of the Murder of Christ" (as he puts it later in the January, 1973 entry). While there is never any shortage of those willing to believe the worst—no matter how bizarre—accusations against the Catholic Church, it never seems to occur to many of these non-Catholic Christians, who hold that "true" Christianity was perverted by Rome until rescued by Protestantism, that there may be something wrong with their religion in essence, and not merely in the Roman version of it.

These are the same sorts who would lap up everything Roberts claimed about the Vatican and its "anti-Christ" Pope, and then go into a state of hypertension upon reading Roberts' "revelations" concerning Jesus from Tisserant's alleged secret diary. Whether Roberts really believed these things or whether he was just gleefully indulging in a little subversion of cherished certitudes is neither verifiable or relevant. He had to have made it up, because he got too many minor details wrong for it to have come from the papers of a

Middle Eastern scholar like Tisserant. Roberts claims that the Magi who came to Bethlehem were "Arab (Persian) astronomers." The original Magi—the Three Wise Men—were "the three stars in the belt of Orion, pointing to Osiris' star Sothis (Sirius), which 'rose in the east' to announce the coming of the Savior at the season of the Nile flood. These three belt stars were still called Magi in the Middle Ages." (21) By Roman times, when Jesus was said to have been born, Magi meant Persian astronomer-astrologers who were associated with the cult of Mithra, a Persian deity whose mythology and rituals were appropriated nearly wholesale by the later Christian cult as it sought to Romanize itself. In fact, the very story of the Magi searching out the newborn Messiah came directly from Mithraism. Roberts correctly surmised the astrological allegory of the nativity story, but muddled the Magi's ethnicity by claiming Persians (Iranians) are Arabs. They are a distinctly different ethnic group, and the only reason many people today confuse them with Arabs is because they are now Muslims, and most Americans think all Muslims are Arabs. It is unlikely that the exact date of Jesus's birth could have been known. Traditionally, December 25 has been regarded as the date of birth because it was the birth date of Mithra and a host of other pagan sun gods who were born during the winter solstice, the Dies Natalis Solis Invictus, birthday of the Invincible Sun. December 25 was not even officially adopted by the Christian Church, in Rome, until the fourth century CE, nearly four hundred years after Jesus's alleged birth. The Eastern Christian Churches never have accepted the date. The early Christian Church didn't even find the Savior's birthdate relevant. (22)

Roberts uses his claim of Jesus's concealed Arab identity to dish out some more anti-Semitism, making a crack about the Jews being unwilling "to let Arabs Mary and Joseph into their nice clean inns, even then." An ironic joke on Israel's ongoing expulsion of Palestinians from their land in order to provide more *Lebensraum* for Jewish immigrants (for those who think the analogy strained, consider that many Israeli critics of their government's policies, such as Israel Shahak, have described Israel as an apartheid state comparable to its ally South Africa), it is the only example of real humor in the

Skeleton Key, causing one to wonder if one of Gemstone's many samizdat compilers didn't insert it.

Roberts sticks to the conventional outline of Jesus's life when discussing the Crucifixion, until he claims that "the Roman soldiers stuck a spear in his side, pulled out his liver, and ate it." Obviously these legionnaires were the first and ultimate communicants of the Eucharist!

Roberts' Christ does not rise from the dead, nor does he indicate why a religion would rise—or be engineered—around a crucified prophet who failed to come back to life. He next claims that Tacitus, the Roman historian (c.55-117 CE) recorded the true story of the Crucifixion, but the Church "deleted" it. Not all of Tacitus's works have survived, and the Church certainly did alter, rewrite, expunge, and destroy works which ran counter to its self-image, so this is not an impossibility. But as the Church was usually very thorough in its destruction, it would be impossible to know that Tacitus had written such a thing unless it had either been referred to by some other contemporary writer (usually a Christian writer eager to refute it), or the Church had kept a copy secretly. Since this information supposedly came to Roberts from the secret papers of Tisserant, it would do to remember that Tisserant was an expert on ancient documents and one time head of the Vatican Library. Roberts then asserts that Nero burned Rome (64 CE), a popular rumor at the time which Tacitus believed and reported in his Annals. Nero blamed the fire on the then-insignificant sect of Christians, and began the first persecution of them, burning many of them alive in his gardens.

However, there are scholars who doubt both the story of Nero setting Rome on fire (he certainly didn't fiddle while it happened, as there were no violins then) and the persecution of the Christians, and point out that the *Annals* of Tacitus are incomplete and most likely tampered with. The passage which details the persecution of the Christians by Nero was unknown, never referred to by any other writer, pro- or anti-Christian in antiquity. It first surfaced in an edition printed in Venice in 1468. (23) Despite this fact, it continues to be cited as a genuine passage proving the existence, thirty-some years after the crucifixion, of a large colony of Christians in

Rome and their unjust persecution by an emperor regarded as one of the wickedest and most depraved. (24)

Then, according to Roberts, to counteract the growing popularity of the Christian cult (who are here Arabs engaged in the "spreading of Moses' teachings"—if these Arabs accepted Moses' teachings, then wouldn't they be Jews?), "the Romans decided to adopt the religion, clean it up, make Christ a Jew and Mary a Virgin, and work out a Church State deal to fool the people in the name of God and country that has been operating ever since." This all sounds perfectly logical (except to those who persist in believing in the supernatural origin of Christianity), except for one thing: why would Romans, who were engaged for many years in a bitter war with Israel, make their new Savior/Son of God one of the despised Jews?

One theory holds that Christianity was in fact the product of the Roman ruling class who, in their efforts to subvert the Jewish rebellion against Roman rule in Palestine, devised the cult of the other-worldly, pacifist Messiah to castrate and contain the Jewish rebellion, as well as counter its growing influence within the Empire, especially among the slaves and other downtrodden, who were harkening to its apocalyptic egalitarianism. The primary exponent of this theory (if not the inventor of it) was Abelard Reuchlin, a Jewish apologist who claimed that the aristocratic Roman Piso clan actually wrote the *New Testament* and even cynically encoded the proof into the text itself. (25)

An obverse theory to the above suggests that the Jews devised Christianity as a Trojan Horse to subvert and overthrow the Empire of their conquerors, playing upon the seething discontent of the oppressed masses to overthrow the Empire. This theory is popular among certain anti-Semitic and white supremacist groups (those not enamored with the Christian Identity/Aryan Israel thing), and was supposedly verified by a Jewish writer, one Marcus Eli Ravage, in the 1920s. (26)

Both theories have their problems. While certain passages in the *New Testament* do indeed counsel a pacifist, quietist ethic that would ideally benefit an authoritarian power structure seeking to stifle all dissent and rebellion to funnel it into a scheme of post-mortem deferred reward (better known as pie in the sky by and by; see especially the Epistles of Paul), there are those troublesome passages such as Matthew 10:34-37 and Luke 22:36, which show so much ominous fascination with swords. A warning to the Jews and other malcontents, perhaps? If Christianity were a Jewish Trojan Horse, its success would have been a bittersweet, Pyrrhic victory, as well as a belated one: nearly three hundred years after the introduction of Christianity, after the Roman-Jewish war, after the destruction of the Jewish nation, the Roman Empire, still standing, became Christian and the Jews were scattered to the winds.

Fusing the two theories together results in a hybrid not too dissimilar to the Gemstone one: in brief, the Jewish resistance movement developed Christianity to subvert the Roman Empire, the Romans either caught onto it and rewrote it to their designs before the destruction of Jerusalem or after when they realized its value as a unifying cult for a restless, multi-ethnic population and a weapon against potential revolts. They rewrote the Gospels to put the blame for the death of Jesus on the Jews, thereby creating the "blood-libel" that fueled anti-Semitism down to the present. The main divergence from Roberts' version is the historical existence of Jesus and his secret Arab identity.

The preceding theories have all been offered as only speculation, any suspicions being currently unverifiable, but certainly not irrelevant. But none of these conspiracy theories regarding the possible origins of Christianity can discredit the fact that the quest for the historical Jesus has led scholars of integrity, both believers and unbelievers alike, into a dead end (just as the unreliability of the *Gemstone Files* does not discredit the conspiracy theory of the Kennedy assassination because it hinges upon it). The lack of non-Biblical evidence has led many investigators to ask not only "Who was Jesus?" but, even more importantly, "Was Jesus?"

Among those who assert the historical reality of Jesus while disbelieving the *New Testament* claims for his divinity and resurrection are Hyam Maccoby (27) and Hugh J. Schonfield (28), both Jewish apologists eager to reclaim Jesus as an exemplary Jew with no intention of starting a new religion and no pretensions to divinity. Michael Baigent, Richard Leigh, and Henry Lincoln (29) contend in their controversial books that not only did Jesus not die on the cross, but he fathered a son with Mary Magdalene and that the descendents of that union are today at the head of a secret society, the Priory of Sion, plotting to place someone of Jesus's lineage on the throne of a united Europe. What all these authors agree upon is that Jesus was a rebel against Rome and a claimant, whether legitimate or not, to the throne of David.

Morton Smith (30) also maintains Jesus's historicity, but contends that he was a magician, executed as much for sorcery and blasphemy as subversion. These comprise the most extreme and imaginative speculations on Jesus's possible real identity. A currently less popular theory (although it ruled in free thought circles a century ago) is that of the completely mythical nature of Jesus Christ. This claim was first put forth by the German Bruno Bauer who argued that Jesus was invented by the author of the *Gospel of Mark*. The French Count Volney argued in his *Ruins of Empires* (1872) that Jesus was the personification of a solar god originating with Krishna of India. J.M. Robertson, a Scotsman, was the most dedicated proponent of the idea (31), and currently the torch is being carried by G.A. Wells (32), who has written several books on the subject.

In outline, Robertson's theory postulates an ancient cult of Joshua (Jesus is merely the Greek for the Hebrew Joshua, or Yeschua) among the ancient Jews, which practiced human sacrifice and cannibalism, a common practice in the primitive religion of all cultures. This bloody practice is dimly hinted at in the Gospel accounts of the Crucifixion and Last Supper-Eucharist. Joshua may have been a Hebrew-Canaanite sun god supplanted by Yahweh, and relegated to the status of a legendary warrior-hero secondary to Moses, the champion of Yahweh. The Joshua cult may have had to go underground during the reign of the Yahwehistic-Mosid party, only to surface once again in the chaos of the Jewish rebellion against Rome.

"The oldest documents and tradition show that the cult of Jesus the Christ was being pushed in rivalry to pure Judaism among the Jews of the Dispersion before the destruction of the Temple. Such competition was the more easy because the life of the synagogues was largely independent of the central temple and craved for rites and teaching which should make up for the sacrificial usages at Jerusalem... The Jews of the Hellenistic period regarded him [Jesus/Joshua] as the actual founder of the rite of circumcision. According to tradition he began his work of deliverance on the day fixed for the choosing of the paschal lamb and concluded it at the Passover. The hypothesis that Joshua is the original Jesus—the origin of the myths which blended in a composite pattern mistaken for real history—solves many problems." (33)

However, Robertson doesn't discount the possibility that a real person may have served as the focus for the Joshua cult's savior. Saint Paul's Jesus, as opposed to the Jesus of the Gospels, does not seem to have lived in any time recent to the writer of the Epistles (which are generally regarded by most scholars as pre-dating the Gospels). Paul does not give any of the biographical details that the four evangelists do, and he never mentions Pontius Pilate. His Jesus is obviously not the same character as that of Mark, Matthew, Luke, and John.

"The Jesus of the Pauline doctrine was either a mythical construction or a remote figure thought to have been crucified but no longer traceable in history. A Jesus ben Pandira is said to have been stoned and hung on a tree under the Hasmonean king, Alexander Jannaeus, nearly a hundred years before the Christian era. It is conceivable that Paul's Jesus is merely a nominal memory of the slain Jesus ben Pandira." (34)

This Jesus ben Pandira, although an obscure figure, managed to cause the early Christians some problems and some embarrassment. Strangely enough, they did not try to discredit him by denying his existence or any connection to Jesus Christ. In fact, Church fathers like Eusebius and Epiphanius felt obligated to find ben Pandira a place in Jesus's family tree, explaining that he was Jesus's paternal grandfather, that is, Joseph's father. But if the virgin birth of Jesus was true, then there was no genetic relationship between Jesus and Joseph, and Jesus ben Pandira. And according to Matthew, Joseph's father was Jacob, but according to Luke his name was Heli. So who was Jesus ben Pandira (also Pantera, or Panthera), and what, if any, connection did he have to Jesus called the Christ (Anointed One, or Messiah)?

The pagan philosopher Celsus, arch-enemy of the early Christians, claimed Jesus was "a Jewish sorceror from Egypt" who was also the illegitimate son of "a soldier named Panthera." (35) This charge was repeated in the Talmud, from which Celsus may have gotten it.

Celsus's works were destroyed by the Christians once they came to power, but most of his anti-Christian polemic, *True Words*, is known almost word-for-word because the Christian apologist Origen quoted it extensively in his rebuttal to it, *Contra Celsus*. The charges that Celsus made must have been taken seriously enough to warrant such a detailed response, and not merely shrugged off as the jibes of an anti-Christian bigot. Celsus "was a man who relied not on rumors and hearsay evidence but on personal observation and careful study. Because he had read both the Old and the *New Testaments* and was familiar with Jewish and Christian literature... his book is on the whole free of mistakes and misconceptions... It contains none of the popular pagan antagonism against Christians and makes no unsubstantiated charges." (36) If a man like that accused your savior of being a sorceror and a bastard, it's no wonder you would feel obligated to answer the charges.

Regarding the father of Jesus ben Pandira, Morton Smith says: "It was not a very common name, but we do know of a Sidonian archer, Tiberius Julius Abdes Pantera, who was serving in Palestine about the time of Jesus's birth and later saw duty on the Rhine. It is possible, though not likely, that this tombstone from Bingerbrucke is our only genuine relic of the Holy Family. (37)

(Sidon was—and still is—a city on the coast of Phoenicia, now called Lebanon. Perhaps Bruce Roberts wasn't that far off the mark after all.)

Other Jewish sources claim that Jesus was the son of a ben Stada, also a magician, and that he—Jesus—"brought magic marks from Egypt in the scratches of his flesh," that is, tattoos, most likely of magical sigils. (In Galatians 6:17, Paul claimed to "bear in my body the marks of the Lord Jesus." Was Paul claiming to be a stigmata, bearing—metaphorically—the same wounds as Jesus, or was he claiming to have the same magical tattoos as Jesus on his flesh?) A third century rabbi Hisdu claimed that ben Stada was the husband of Jesus's mother Miriam (Mary), a hairdresser, and Pandira was her lover. The implication being, of course, that Jesus was a bastard born out of adultery. Yet another rabbi said that Pappos ben Judah was the father of Jesus and Stada referred to his unfaithful wife, *s'tal'da* meaning one who has fallen away from her husband. (38)

These were the sort of contradictory rumors and legends that early Christians were assailed with. Tertullian, a Church Father, summarized the standard Jewish allegations against his God circa 200 CE:

"Son of a carpenter or a prostitute, profaner of the Sabbath, a Samaritan who had a demon... whom his disciples spirited away [from the tomb] so they could say he was risen, or whom the gardener hauled off, lest his lettuces be damaged by the crowd of sightseers." (39)

Some clarification is needed to explain how Jesus's father, Joseph or whatever his name was, could possibly be both a carpenter and a magician. The Hebrew word for carpenter, najjar, also meant Nazorite or Nazorean, a mystic brotherhood of wood-workers, the same sect that the Old Testament Samson belonged to. This could account for the (mistaken) reference to Jesus as being "of Nazareth," a town which is not known to have existed during that time. (40)

As for the mother of Jesus, Miriam of Magdala may not have been a prostitute in the modern sense of the term, but a "sacred whore" or *hierodule*, a Virgin Bride of God, dedicated from an early age to the temple and to be the future bride of a sacred king. This according to the *Protoevangelium*, or *Revelation of James*, a second century CE gospel eventually eliminated from the official canon at the Council of Nicea, "declared apocryphal and heretical" as Roberts (for once) correctly pointed out. That Miriam (or Mary) Magdala (or Magdalene) was a title rather than a personal name (as both Joseph and Jesus Christ/Joshua Christos probably were). As well as being the son of a sacred virgin/whore, Jesus may have been raised to be the husband of one as well. It would certainly explain the confusing plethora of Mary's and Joseph's within the gospels (including the suppressed ones), the obliquely sexual relationship of Jesus and

Mary Magdalene, and how a virgin can give birth to a son yet still remain a virgin, in a manner of speaking. (41)

That these names were the titles of players in a ritualistic drama, perhaps one acted out for real with a knowing and willing sacred-king/scapegoat, perhaps one trained from birth for the role, lends credence to J.M. Robertson's theory of an underground Joshua cult running throughout Jewish history, surfacing during times of crisis when the Mosaic Yahweh cult was flagging, or impotent in the face of a major threat (such as Roman oppression). It has been said that Jesus ben Pandira was executed by his own wish. (42)

The Talmudic version, dating from no earlier than the early second century CE (43), goes like this: Yeschu (Jesus) was found guilty (by the Sanhedrin) of being a sorceror and a false prophet, and condemned to death. Forty days prior to his death, a herald was sent out to urge anyone with anything good to say about Yeschu to come forward (and presumably stay his execution). No one did, and on Passover Eve, Yeschu was stoned (to death presumably) and then (therefore his corpse) hung from a tree (not a cross). (44)

Anyone familiar with the *New Testament* will see obvious parallels here.

Finally, in the light of the ponderous evidence given above, what can be said of Bruce Roberts' revision of Catholic dogma? That, while justified in its skepticism, once again he missed wide of the mark. Unless the improbable be true, and Roberts actually received a copy of Cardinal Tisserant's secret diary, and that diary made the bizarre claims published in the *Gemstone Files* (which I won't believe until I am personally given verifiable evidence to the contrary), the only conclusion that can be reached is that Roberts, letting his prejudices once again get in his way, guessed at what might be the truth behind the inconsistencies and impossibilities of the Jesus story. Without doing any research into the subject, or knowing that he was far from the first to realize that two plus two does not equal five, he jumped to conclusions that—somehow—validated his (to be charitable) eccentric worldview. Surely, to his mind, it was no coincidence that his father died the day before Tisserant died, was murdered, as Roberts would have it. It was the same evil conspiracy at work in both deaths, the same conspiracy that killed Kennedy. Jesus an Arab or a Jewish sorceror-heretic crucified, or stoned or hung for blasphemy, or subversion, or treason or jaywalking: does it really matter, is it less shocking than the possibility that Jesus never existed at all? There have been plenty of people who freed themselves from the thrall of religion before Bruce Roberts, more will do so without ever reading the *Gemstone File* or suspecting some dark secret hidden away deep in the Vatican Crypt, other than that truth does not abide there.

But there is still one question remaining that the *Gemstone File* leaves unanswered: what was it really on the end of that sponge offered to Jesus at the crucifixion, vinegar or sodium-morphate wine?

Notes:1) *New York Times*, February 22, 1972, p. 40.2) Blanshard, Paul, *American Freedom and Catholic Power*, 1949, Beacon Press, p. 245.3) Manhattan, Avro, *The Vatican-Moscow-Washington Alliance*, 1982, Chick Publications, pp. 27-8.4) Cornwell, John, *A Thief in the Night: The Mysterious Death of Pope John Paul I*, 1989, Simon & Schuster, pp. 47-8.5) Rhodes, Anthony, *The Vatican in the Age of the Dictators* (1922-1945), 1973, Holt, Rinehart, & Winston, pp. 216-17.6) Ibid, p. 2157) Manhattan, pp. 91-99.8) Manhattan, p. 27.9) Anonymous, "Paul VI, Pope" in Current Biography: 1963, H.H. Wilson Co., pp. 316-19.10) Ibid.11) Blanshard, pp. 226-27,11a) Manhattan, pp. 143-4. The Fatima cult was suppressed by Pius XII's successor, John XXIII, who "being the matter-of-fact man that he was, and fully realizing the political implications of the Fatima revelations, ordered the Portuguese hierarchy to drop at once 'La pulcinellada,' a word which, in Venetian slang meant leg-pulling or burlesque." John XXIII was known in some circles as "the Red Pope" for his apparent pro-communist leanings. 12) Rhodes, pp. 337-49.13) Anonymous (Tony Alamo?), *Fugitive Pope: John Paul II, A Catholic Nazi World War II Criminal*, no date, tract published by Tony Alamo Ministries, 14) Manhattan, pp. 40-5.15) Ibid, p.41.16) Lee, Martin A., "Their Will Be Done," July 1983, *Mother Jones* magazine, pp. 25-6.17) Baigent, Michael, Richard Leigh and Henry Lincoln, *The Messianic Legacy*, 1986, Henry Holt & Company, pp. 304-06.18) Ibid, p. 306.19) However, according to Manhattan, they never stopped trying to sabotage Paul VI's papacy, and may have ultimately succeeded. See pp. 23-5.20) "The Vatican is accustomed to think in terms not of any particular country, but of whole continents as single political units. Hence the necessity of carrying out such policies on a continental scale as part of a later strategy integrated with plans it is implementing in other parts of the world." Manhattan, p. 298. See also Manhattan's *Catholic Power Today*, 1967, Lyle Stuart, dated in some incidentals but generally still applicable. 21) Walker, Barbara G., *The Woman's Encyclopedia of Myths and Secrets*, 1983, Harper & Row, pp. 565-66; Doane, T.W., *Bible Myths and their Parallel in Other Religions*, 1882, *Health Research* 1985 reprint, pp. 151-53; Graves, Kersey, *The World's Sixteen Crucified Saviors, or Christianity Before Christ*, 1875, Health Research reprint, no date, pp. 63-7; Graham, Lloyd M., *Deceptions and Myths of the Bible*, 1979, Bell Pub. Co., pp. 307-08.22) Walker, pp. 166-67; Doane, pp. 473-74; Graves, pp. 68-71.23) McKinsey, Dennis, in Biblical Errancy (periodical) #33, September, 1985, p. 3.24) "Therefore to scotch the rumor [that he had set the fire], Nero substituted as culprits, and punished with the utmost refinements of cruelty, a class of men, loathed for their vices, whom the crowd styled Christians. Christus [sic], the founder of the name, had undergone the death penalty in the reign of Tiberius, by sentence of the procurator Pontius Pilatus, and the pernicious superstition was checked for the moment, only to break out once more, not merely in Judaea, the home of the disease, but in the capital itself, where all things horrible and shameful in the world collect and find a vogue. First, then, the confessed members of the sect were arrested; next, on their disclosures, vast numbers were convicted, not so much on the count of arson as for hatred of the human race. And derision accompanied their end: they were covered with wild beast's skins and torn to death by dogs; or they were fastened on crosses, and, when daylight failed were burned to serve as lamps by night. Nero had offered his gardens for the spectacle, and gave an exhibition in his circus, mixing with the crowd in the habit of a charioteer, or mounted on his car. Hence, in spite of a guilt which had earned the most exemplary punishment, there arose a sentiment of pity, due to the impression that they were being sacrificed not for the welfare of the state but to the ferocity of a single man." Tacitus in the *Annals*, as quoted by Benko, Stephan, *Pagan Rome and the Early Christians*, 1984, Indiana University Press, p. 15. McKinsey, op. cit., dissects this passage, putting its veracity in doubt. 25) Reuchlin, Abelard, *The True Authorship of the New Testament*, Abelard Reuchlin Foundation. Reuchlin's work has been carried on by John Duran whose unpublished manuscript *The Origin of Christianity* takes the theory into more detail. 26) Ravage, Marcus Eli, "A Real Case Against the Jews: One of Their Own Points Out the Full Depth of Their Guilt," *Century* magazine, January, 1928, as quoted in Graham, pp. 276-77. The name sounds too coincidental to be real, but apparently Ravage really existed and probably wrote this article. The possibility of tongue in cheek satire cannot be dismissed, but why any Jew would want to fool with such volatile material is puzzling. 27) Maccoby, Hyam, *Revolution in Judea: Jesus and the Jewish Resistance*, 1981, Taplinger. 28) Schonfield, Hugh J., *The Passover Plot*, 1966, Bernard Geis. 29) Baigent, Michael, Richard Leigh, and Henry Lincoln, *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, 1982, Delacorte Press; Baigent, et al., *The Messianic Legacy*, (see note # 17). 30) Smith, Morton, *Jesus the Magician*, 1978, Harper & Row. 31) Robertson, J.M., *Pagan Christs*, 1987, Dorset Press, reprint of 1903 original. 32) Wells, G.A., *Did Jesus Exist?* 1986, Pemberton. 33) Robertson, p. 21. 34) Ibid, pp. 67-8.35) Wells, p. 15; Benko, pp. 147-51. 36) Benko, p. 148. 37) Smith, p. 61. 38) Ibid. 39) Smith, p. 61. 40) Walker, "Jesus ben Pandira," p. 463.41) Walker, "Mary" pp. 604-05; "Mary Magdalene," pp. 614-15.42) Walker, p. 463.43) Wells, p. 12.44) Wells, p. 16.45) The author regrets being unable to find reference to any Arian bishop having his hands chopped off (though it is plausible, this was, after all, the Age of Faith), or to any warning by Jesus against the "yellow race" in the Bible. He trusts that those who do find them will be sure to let him know.

Is Gemstone a Hoax?

Kerry W. Thornley

Whenever I read an expose holding the Queen of England responsible for Communism, Nazism, Zionism, Cosa Nostra and AIDS, I assume it is Irish Republican Army propaganda. That is not to assume it is Irish Republican Army propaganda. That is not to say I think Queen Elizabeth and her German relatives are entirely innocent. Nor is it to say I am unsympathetic with Irish Republican aspirations.

But once upon a time I was a believer in the notion that lone nuts and lonely potentates – Aristotle Onassis was a little of each – are great makers of history. Not any more. Now I blush to recall that I once thought Lee Harvey Oswald, acting alone, killed the President – when in fact I was probably more involved in that assassination than he was.

In the *Illuminatus* trilogy we encounter an English spy named Fission Chips who becomes obsessed with an organization called B.U.G.G.E.R. which he always concludes is behind any case to which he is assigned. Such obsessions are common enough, whether they target outfits or misfits.

Having read at least two slightly different versions of "A Skeleton Key to the Gemstone File" more than once, I'm inclined to suspect such an obsession on someone's part about Aristotle Onassis.

A central concern of Gemstone is the John Kennedy assassination. Without effort on my part, I have met an unusual number of accused John Kennedy assassins.

In 1958, I attended the University of Southern California at the same time as Garrison probe suspect Gordon Novel.

That seemed like no big deal when Garrison first mentioned it, because so did 73,000 other students that year. But it so happens that one of my pledge brothers in the Delta Sigma Phi fraternity there was named Gordy – and upon much pondering, I think he said his last name was Novel and that it was Hungarian.

In 1959, I was in the Marines with Lee Harvey Oswald. When I read of his Moscow defection attempt, I wrote a novel about a Marine who winds up going to Russia.

In 1961 in the New Orleans French Quarter I was introduced to a man named Guy Banister who said he was very interested in literature and who asked me a great number of questions about my book inspired by Oswald. Hardly an assassination theory exists which does not include Banister – who did not tell me he was a former FBI man coordinating anti-Castro activities in New Orleans.

That year or the next I attended a party on Louisiana Parkway in the home of a homosexual airplane pilot named David Ferrie. We met and shook hands that night, but did not engage in conversation. My invitation had originated with the faculty advisor of the Tulane University Conservative Club, who then took me to another party at the residence of Suki Waguespack – whose family is rumored to be involved deeply in conspiracy politics. Ferrie is of course star of theories about the Kennedy assassination ranging in scope from blaming Carlos Marcello to the Joint Chiefs of Staff.

Then in late October or early November of 1963, I breakfasted with a man named Dave Chandler – a stringer for *Life* magazine of whom Jim Garrison and his own boss, Richard Billings, both expressed suspicion in 1968. What did Chandler and I discuss? Assassinating John F. Kennedy – although we never got beyond agreeing that he should be assassinated, except for Chandler's suggestion that there might be some way to crash his plane.

In November of 1963, shortly before the assassination, I met Clay Shaw – who happened to be my landlord's best friend. My landlord said his mother was a writer who wanted to read my manuscript about the Marine who went to Russia. He borrowed it on a Friday and returned it Sunday afternoon, upon which occasion he also introduced me to Shaw who seemed quite interested in the book himself.

After the Kennedy murder I crossed paths with Jim Garrison, who has been accused by the likes of Robert Sam Anson of covering up the assassination – upon which occasion I stood in the same waiting room with Marina Oswald, who figures in many conspiracy theories and is suspected of ordering the famous Italian rifle. One day later in 1968 in New Orleans I hopped into a taxi cab driven by Perry Raymond Russo, Garrison's infamous "drugged witness" against Shaw and Ferrie.

In 1966 I was working as a night PBX operator in a high-rise apartment building called Glen Towers near Los Angeles, California. An especially colorful resident of that building was a Mafia don known as Johnny Roselli – accused by Gemstone of firing the shot from the Grassy Knoll that blew John Fitzgerald Kennedy's brains out. From time to time we would catch two men in suits searching Roselli's car in the basement garage. One evening when I came on duty I was told such an event had occurred that afternoon. As always, the two men produced FBI identification but admitted to having no search warrant. As usual, they were asked to leave and complied.

So when Roselli came in that night I told him, "We caught the Feds searching your car again today."

"They don't scare me," he said with a rather forced, tight toothy grin. "They're so stupid. But, you know, who is really stupid is the CIA. They killed their own President, trying to get some bookie."

Our conversation continued for some minutes and he wound up loaning me a copy of a book called *The Invisible Government* and specifically instructing me to read the chapter about a raid on an ammunition dump in Hammond, Louisiana, in which Gordon Novel was involved.

My friends ask me how I do it. My enemies think they already know. I would be the last to insist on coincidence. Obviously, I am somehow in the thick of the Dallas plot. My hunch is that a weird Nazi in New Orleans with whom I also used to discuss killing the President was E. Howard Hunt in disguise. While that would explain much, it still leaves my prior associations with Oswald and (probably) Novel unaccounted for.

My point here is that whatever forces have been at work to dump into my lap so much information about the Kennedy assassination have never once brought me in contact with anyone who claims to have seen the original, unabridged *Gemstone Files*. Nor, to my knowledge, have I ever met Bruce Roberts or anyone who has known him.

That is one good reason among many why I suspect a hoax. As one who has been accused wrongly of a hoax or two about the assassination myself, I think I have an eye for what a hoax is not.

First to accuse me of such disinformation was District Attorney Jim Garrison. A charismatic culture hero, Garrison commands the unwavering faith of a small cult. These people believe that I testified to the Warren Commission that I thought Oswald was serious about Communism, because Jim Garrison says that is what I said. My Warren Commission testimony, which is a matter of public record, does not say that. These Goosestepping Garrisonites, as I call them, also think I decided to write a book about Oswald when he was just a common Marine – forgetting, because Garrison never reminds them, that common Marines don't walk into the U.S. Embassy in Moscow and plop down their passports.

More recently, Jonathan Vankin in *Conspiracies, Cover-Ups and Crimes* has expressed the suspicion that my explanations of my involvement in the Kennedy assassination constitutes "a philosophical prank." What in hell's name a philosophical prank is never becomes clear, but evidently my Discordian Society activities make me suspect. Putting aside that only a monster would engage in jokes involving Nazi genocide plans, no one – as I tried to point out in a letter to Vankin – complains bitterly for a decade and a half about being persecuted just to lay the groundwork for a prank, philosophical or otherwise.

That brings me to the second reason why I am skeptical about Bruce Roberts. Like a comic book hero, this guy is nearly always on top of his shit. When you poke your nose into political assassinations – or when you help those who do – you are poisoned, beaten up, threatened with death, spied upon and tormented psychologically without respite – when they don't just kill you.

A couple of months ago I met a woman who said she could get me on the tabloid television show, *A Current Affair.*

I told her I was being persecuted. I don't think she believed me; I didn't quite believe her. But she came through and, what is more, now she believes me. For the past few weeks she has been in hiding. Weird things, you see, started happening to her.

Back in 1975 and 1976, when I first became aware of my involvement in the assassination – largely because of Watergate – the first two people who tried to help me were hit by cars. Neither man was killed, but both Reber Boult and Ward Silver were hopping about Atlanta on crutches for awhile.

But Bruce Roberts is not hit. Instead, he hits them. Do they retaliate? Perhaps not – if only because they are somehow unaware of him. So what does he do? He pushes his luck. He keeps extensive files and leaks them – spreading it about that, among other things, he has hit Alexander Onassis.

While I am party to no hoaxes involving the Kennedy assassination, I readily admit to a few pranks about other things in my time. Once, with the help of a few friends, I convinced the officers of Marine Air Group 11 that a private with an I.Q. of 157 who spoke 17 languages and drove a truck in motor transport was A.W.O.L. That no such man even existed did not keep him from being the object of an extensive manhunt. So, as one thief recognizes another, I think I can often spot another joker in the deck. And if Bruce Roberts was not himself a put-on, then he was putting us on or someone was putting him on.

Certainly the first likely suspect that comes to mind is G. Gordon Liddy. Not only does Gemstone sometimes read like an advertisement for Liddy's services as a hit man, Liddy is also enough of a screwball to go to the trouble involved. Moreover, G. Gordon Liddy's intelligence connections suffice to lend the necessary ring of truth to many of the charges. I find it hard to believe that Johnny Roselli was not involved in the assassination, for example. And the section about the Communists blackmailing Nixon over the murder of Howard Hughes is almost too funny not to be true.

Stan Jamison, one of my informants who, like Liddy, was reputedly a Royal Arch Mason, said once that to make a lie stick it must at least approach the truth.

If Liddy is too young to have been in Dallas on 22 November 1963, many of his Watergate co-conspirators were not. But would Liddy have been so hard on Nixon? And wouldn't he have picked on Larry O'Brian or Senator Howard Baker, or even Jimmy Carter, before singling out Onassis?

A hotter suspect than Liddy is to be found.

Aristotle Onassis had a brother-in-law who was also his arch enemy. Stavros Niarchos was even suspected in the death of Alexander Onassis, as well as those of two of his own wives. Certainly his rivalry with Aristotle was not a one-sided affair. Ari stabbed Stavros in the back at least as often as Stavros ripped him off.

A typical tale of their relationship is told in *The Fabulous Onassis* by Christian Cafarakis:

"One day, for instance, Stavros Niarchos came to see him on the ship, the *Penepoli*, which was for sale at a very good price in Marseilles. Onassis was also aware of this deal but until that point had been in no hurry, since he thought he was the only one interested in the ship. On hearing this, however, he asked to be excused for a moment and left Niarchos sipping whiskey, while he radioed ashore that he wanted to buy the *Penepoli* immediately.

When he returned, Niarchos picked up the conversation and asked him what he thought about the deal. Onassis admitted that he thought it excellent, but that unfortunately the boat was already sold.

"And to whom?" Niarchos asked, very surprised.

"Why, to me, of course," he said with a smile.

In *Onassis: Aristotle and Christina*, L.J. Davis says of Ari:

"His money and his rivalry with Niarchos were important elements in his struggle to define himself..." Among the tactics Ari used against Stavros was, according to Davis, disinformation: "Misinformation was deliberately planted, usually by the transparent expedient of discussing it in an unnaturally loud voice in the presence of the hired help." Onassis even created "a private intelligence apparatus" to spy on his brother-in-law. (p. 77)

There is every indication Stavros Niarchos responded in kind, but — if anything — with considerably more vindictiveness. Peter Evans in *Ari: The Life and Times of Aristotle Onassis* goes so far as to call the rivalry between these two "a fatal contest." (p. 88) Onassis once accused Niarchos of sending a hostile report on him to the FBI. (p. 94) Evans accuses Niarchos of never "missing an opportunity to irritate Ari." (p.130)

Says Nigel Dempster in *Heiress: The Story of Christina Onassis*: "It was not simply that when Ari built a tanker, Niarchos built a bigger one. Niarchos also troubled him in ways that transcended business competitiveness." And "the mutual animosity went much deeper than a conflict of styles." (pp. 21-2)

William Wright in *All the Pain that Money Can Buy*, a biography of Christina Onassis, refers to Niarchos as her "despised uncle." (p. 235) He also describes in detail Aristotle's frantic efforts to convict Stavros Niarchos for the murder of Christina's aunt Eugenie — Stavros' wife. (p.120-3) Ari suspected both Niarchos and the CIA in the plane-crash death of his son, Alexander. (p. 175)

Camden Benares once brought to my attention the great bullshit controversy in American literature. Hemingway spelled it as two words. Faulkner and Kerouac spelled it as one. Someone else hyphenated. But no matter how it is written, it always smells the same. So do both versions, for the most part, of "A Skeleton Key to the Gemstone File."

Outlaws and Inslaw

Ben G. Price

Background

The National Security State and the C.I.A. were born under the same sign; they share identical natal characteristics. And they serve the same master. Ensconced above the portal to the C.I.A. building is the prophetic phrase, "Ye shall know the truth and the truth shall make you free." The truth that is known is that the price of liberty is eternal vigilence. But knowing the truth and sharing it are antithetical to the notion of national security, as it has evolved in the shadowy realm of secrecy.

"Freedom Shrines" are liberally erected across land, where liberty and justice are laminated under thick layers of transparent hypocrisy. The truth, like liberty itself, has been preserved as a paleo-ontological specimen and enshrined in tyranny's branch offices, including the National Security Agency ("The Puzzle Palace"), the Justice [sic] Department, the FBI, CIA, DEA, NSA, DIA, IRS, and other repositories of a bygone democracy. Freedom itself is thus secured, protected from the clawing mass of huddled and betrayed, who press their noses where, according to freedom's new curators, they don't belong.

The fetish of National Security was stroked into its current enormity over five decades of governmental self-indulgence. World War II saw the birth of the great international spy networks. Industrial spying is mistakenly thought to be a recent outgrowth of the cult of secret vices, but the reality is that spying has never had any more signature quality than its allegiance to industry and its captains. I.G. Farben and Krupp armaments earned both loyalty and untouchability during the international conflagration of the forties, not because of aloof indifference or neutrality, but because they owned controlling interest in the outcome of the contest, and whatever transpired on the battlefield, and arms monopoly in time of war is an amoral thing of beauty, which is to say an obscenity.

The transformation of the industrial revolution into its geo-political convolutions was immediate, but not until industrialization had gone to seed throughout the "Western World" did mechanized war ascend to central stage as history's Golem. The theatre of war had been, until this century, a flood of morality plays recounted in glowing self-congratulatory memoirs by colonizing zealots, who with only marginally superior technology managed to subdue aboriginal populations in far-flung corners of a globe. The globe shrank geometrically as the engines of industry grew linearly. But always the force of superior arms lead the way, and the technological knowledge to manufacture and distribute weapons became a commodity more precious and guarded than any in history.

Our current world is in disarray as industry's overreaching feelers, sent forth in opposite directions to span the globe, at last touch and lock their grip. In the path of industry's explosion lie mass graves, denuded cultures, and more graves. Dwight Eisenhower saw firsthand the industrialization of death. As one of its orchestrators, he dared question the motives of the captains he served only at the end of his political career when he warned the citizens of an expired democracy about the dangers of the entrenched and expanding "military industrial complex."

Behind the national security dam that keeps the flow of information from irrigating the withering patches of democracy and freedom that remain, a potential deluge of outrage has been harnessed and scientifically managed. Its trickle-down privileged information becomes ever more distilled and bland as it filters through the "need to know" aquifers of bedrock bureacracy. The watershed event in 20th century America has been the erection of National Security as the organ of State perpetuity, with general ignorance powering the turbines of capitalized politics.

Industry discovered in its infancy that a domestic population can be colonized as lucratively as a foreign one. Urbanization served the crude necessities of industry, while destroying long-established social structures as basic as the family. Transforming the nation into a protector of corporate rights over and above citizen's rights has made-over the national character as an extension of industrial domestic colonization. The promise of a "new world order" arising from the dust in the dried-up sea of promises has been signed with the inky deception of a fleeing, multi-legged cephalopod. Freedom lovers intrepid enough to challenge the veil of secrecy for a glimpse of the truth as it writhes in the clutches of an American shadow government in the employ of organized corporate criminals often as not die premature and mysterious deaths. Enter and as quickly exit Joseph Daniel Casolaro.

Tentacles

"The Octopus" is the term Casolaro used to describe the nefarious Mafia-like network of national and international conspirators that had infiltrated the American system so successfully as to virtually control finance, industry, and government without the inconvenience of public accountability. Casolaro was investigating several leads that he saw as connected to one controlling entity. The tentacles included the theft from Inslaw Corporation of sophisticated computer software by Ed Meese's Justice [sic] Department, the "October Surprise" [the Casey, Meese, Reagan, Bush scheme that guaranteed weapons to Iran in exchange for holding American hostages until after the November 1980 presidential elections], and the involvement of U.S. intelligence agencies in the drug, arms, and graft money laundering services of B.C.C.I.

Casolaro never got the chance to deliver the finished manuscript of his book, *Behold a Pale Horse*. He was found dead in a Martinsburg, WV motel room on August 10, 1991, where he was to meet one of his sources who, he had told friends, would bust the entrails of the octopus wide open. His papers and the manuscript of his book were not to be found when he was discovered in a motel tub with a half-empty bottle of wine, a broken beer bottle, and his wrists slashed. The October Surprise and the B.C.C.I. scam were just hitting the front page.

Casolaro's faked suicide shared the limelight briefly. He was embalmed immediately on the authority of no one willing to take responsibility, and before his family was notified of his death. The verdict of psychologists, the local coroner, Eliot Richardson (Inslaw attorney), Jack Anderson (sydicated columnist) and others is that a wide open inquiry into this death is needed. To date, it's all been hush-hush.

On September 27, 1991, one of the "sources" named by the *Washington Post* as involved in Casolaro's investigations, William Richard Turner of High View, WV, was arrested on suspicion 90 minutes after the Gore branch of Dominion Bank was robbed. Turner is a former employee of Hughes Aircraft in Herndon, VA. He claims he gave Casolaro documents pertaining to corruption in the military defense industry. The Martinsburg, WV police chief Perry Smith, head of the only law agency officially involved in investigating Casolaro's mysterious death, said of the equally mysterious arrest of Turner for bank robbery charges, "That's a separate incident." Asked if he saw any possible connection between Casolaro's death and Turner's incarceration, he said, "I don't see how you could."

"The Octopus" also has been used to refer to an international business network linked circumstantially to prior knowledge of John Kennedy's assassination in November, 1963. According to Mae Brussell (*The Rebel*, Nov. 1983), Allied Crude Vegetable Oil Refining Corporation, controlled by the U.S. American Bunge Corporation, may have helped set the stage for a half-billion dollar windfall as the stock market crashed with news of Kennedy's death. American Bunge was financially controlled by "Bunge and Born, LDA," a group of expatriate German shareholders in Argentina. Brussell quotes Helmet Streiker, Nazi trained CIA recruit: "John Kennedy's murder was a two-part conspiracy murder by the intelligence apparatus that controls the way the world operates. It had to happen. The man was too independent for his own good."

Again according to Brussell, Martin Bormann, Deputy Fuhrer under Hitler was reported by European news agencies to be behind the Kennedy assassination. And in 1961 a member of British Parliament published documentary evidence that Allen Dulles of the CIA was aware, after consulting with Hitler's SS Security Office in February and March, 1943, of a secret international organization, "Die Spinne" (The Spider), which planned to revive Nazism once Germany became rearmed by the U.S.

Whether it's The Octopus or The Spider, the industrialization of politics (and the politicization of industry) respects no national borders, nor is it amenable to community standards of "decency," as Linda Hunt reports in her 1991 book *Secret Agenda: The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip, 1945 to 1990.* According to Hunt (former executive producer of CNN's investigative unit), with the fall of Nazi Germany a cadre of American military and intelligence operatives actively recruited German scientists and engineers and brought them secretly to America in direct contravention of U.S. law and specific orders from the president barring Nazis from entering the country. Once here they were distributed among private military contractors and universities. Bogus organizations were concocted to smuggle them in; records were altered and destroyed, investigations were obstructed, critics were harrassed, and officials lied and perjured themselves in order to secure the benefits of advanced German technology for the American military industrial complex. Eisenhower's warning was too little, too late. And it seems clear that he never shared what he knew with Kennedy, his presidential successor, who, if he had known, might have acted differently in affairs affecting international arms issues (e.g. the missile crisis) and domestic campaigns against organized corporate crime.

The National Security State (NSS) is not merely a quasi-political arm of government. Increasingly, every facet of public and private life is becoming incorporated into the crystallizing matrix of the NSS. The "new world order" is user-friendly, but the users are not you and me. We are the used. If just government derives its power from the consent of the governed, then governmentally deceived citizens are right to charge their leaders with treason. The NSS hasn't allowed the governed to know that there's been a coup d'etat. The degree of secretiveness in the political arena is inversely proportional to the degree of liberty available to the citizen. The more secrecy, the less liberty. It isn't surprising that liberty seems such a smothered and mysterious concept in this land that hypocritically dedicates itself in song and legend to the very ideals with which its government is constantly at-odds.

Multinational corporations invest fortunes in surveillance, psychological profiles, disinformation, and behavioral conditioning. The target of these activities is not "foreign" competition, but their own employees and market consumers. Every organ of public "service" and community access is used; education, media, legislation, employment, jurisprudence and electoral herding. Lobbying (bribery) is only the most benign manipulation, and it is openly perpetrated with obvious contempt for desensitized citizens. Other more hideous practices are becoming increasingly common. Cases such as Karen Silkwood's industrial homocide are repeated but go uncounted, like so many Iraqis buried in the desert.

Dan Casolaro died trying to uncover the truth about why the U.S. Justice [sic] Department had stolen software useful in tracking dissidents. Why, you might ask, should he bother when the whole thrust of government is now so obviously against individual aims and in service of corporate, cartel, and Mafia-like agendas? Why risk going against such a strong current?

Alyeska Pipeline Service Company, a consortium of seven oil firms, spied on Congressman George Miller, who was investigating the violation of environmental law by that multi-tentacled organization. At the same time (September 1991), Rochester Institute of Technology president, M. Richard Rose, resigned after it was learned he was a CIA operative overseeing the institution's work on advanced imaging technology, which is used for spy satellite surveillance. Coupled with the Inslaw dissident-tracking software, post "cold war" spy satellites might have a whole new agenda to support. And they say George Bush doesn't have a domestic policy!

The confirmation of Robert Gates to head the CIA became problematical only when the facts of agency involvement in the Iran-Contra affair (drugs for money for arms) kept being exhumed from the grave of secrecy dug by national security, and when hints of agency involvement in the breaking B.C.C.I. scandal leaked, and Noriega's trial started falling apart, so that it looked like the Bush invasion of Panama was just another gripping-post for The Octopus. Gates' boss, Casey, was also posthumously implicated in the treasonous "October Surprise." In the face of such an onslaught of substantive challenges, what was the CIA-trained president to do?

Just then, another round of confirmation hearings was under way. A perfect chance to set up a media circus and distract attention from the larger issue at hand. Appointing a conservative black judge to the Supreme Court, which was in the process of dismantling the *Bill of Rights* even without the help of another right wing associate justice, was clearly secondary to putting the right man in charge of state security and intelligence. Suddenly, thanks to a "leaked" FBI interview with another conservative, Anita Hill, the offensive and intimidating sexual bantering of Clarence Thomas was put on pages one through twenty, thus relegating B.C.C.I., Gates, Casolaro, Noriega, Casey, Meese, Thornburgh, Bush, and the whole interconnected, writhing can of worms to the limbo of non-news.

Eyes Only

Smoking guns and direct lineage are certainly preferable to baroque reality if what you want to do is construct a neat, clean, concise conspiracy theory. The *Gemstone File* supplies a sharp outline, but for all its linearity and attempt at offering cause and effect analysis of nefarious political events, not beginning with the JFK assassination but certainly climaxing with it, the *Gemstone File*, even if correct in most details, fails to answer the more fundamental questions. If a Greek Mafia under Onassis took control of American politics, what relationship did Onassis forge with the American technocrats with whom any political arrangement would have had to be negotiated?

Arms manufacturers and arms dealers, like drug manufacturers and drug dealers, are powerful to the degree they can command interest in their wares and to the degree they can artifically perpetuate a shortage of their products among interested (habituated) and potential customers. Saddam Hussein's "secret" arms build-up was closed-down by the U.S/NATO arms cartel through the auspices of the newly co-opted U.N. This was accomplished only after the global network of arms dealers was finished extracting from Iraq the mega-dollars it spent to buy those weapons. The Lord giveth and the Lord taketh away.

There are reports leaking out of the congressional committee investigating B.C.C.I. criminal activities (chaired by Senator Kerry) that huge private business deals between George Bush and Saddam Hussein, and between George Bush and Manuel Noriega were handled through B.C.C.I. and its affiliated laundering operation, Banca Nazionale Del Lavoro, according to journalist Sherman Skolnick. The exchange of funds was reportedly enormous between Bush and Saddam, but BNL records have not been forthcoming through Justice Department subpoenas. Something apparently went sour between these secret global business partners. Guns and drugs were likely at the heart of such gigantic transactions. But in the afterglow of the honeymoon between the CIA, Noriega, and Hussein, Panama and Iraq faced full scale military invasions. Meanwhile, bewildered Americans tried to sort out the facts from the hype that was offered alongside orchestrated news black-outs and battlefield censorship in both campaigns.

The "new world order," we are to understand by these global Pax Americana manipulations, each a manipulation of the Octopus's tentacles, touches all of us as if God were touching our lives. The "new world order" is a kind of god, born of the self adoration of industrial zealots. The "new world order" is an insidious side-effect of industrial warfare. It is a social result of industrial toxicity, a cultural mutation. The will to power, coupled with technology, yields exponential growth in the realm of tyranny. Industrialized tyranny has grown tentacles with which it grasps and probes into every corner of individual life. Tribal totems are deformed into national symbols; taboos are magnified to advance genocide; and the secrecy of intelligence professionals supercedes the quiet but once shared wisdom of silenced and ridiculed elders.

At first, tyrants grasped blindly. It seemed a simple matter of justified greed back in the old days of political "machines" and bosses, and turf run by Alpha Male inheritors of fear-surrendered liberty. Industrial bosses realized exactly how powerful they were in contrast to an indigenous, uninitiated populace. Tyrants co-opt existing hierarchies and symbols, like those of organized religion, in order to manipulate large populations. Nixon, for instance, flattered Billy Graham and made him his personal symbol of solidarity in faith with the common man. He also drafted Spiro Agnew as his running mate, a Greek American, perhaps with equal deference to Onassis and the criminal elements in American government who were really in charge. But it was Reagan and his handlers who turned politics into a religion. They had Jeeeeeesuuuuus announce from every pulpit that He would register as a Republican, then Reagan's persona drafted HEEEM who would prophesy the "new world order" on his ticket and nailed-down the election with a few well-timed arms deals with the Iranians. Christianity as a state religion hasn't done so well since the last days of a decaying Rome.

Bush, in the hoofsteps of Reagan, has derided drug addicts as public enemy number one. Not savings and loan embezzlers. Not banking fraud perpetrators. Not arms traders willing to barter hostages for arms. Not lieutenant colonels coordinating illegal covert wars. Not generals willing to plow-under surrendering conscripts. Not Haitian generals overthrowing democratically elected presidents. He does not side with independence-seeking Soviet nations, nor with America's own unemployed.

Who does he side with? Arms manufacturers, no matter who they sell to, no matter what money they launder or what populace the weapons terrorize. Drug suppliers, who can afford to buy arms and trade for them. The shadow government is on its own side of the street, and if we as citizens try to cross that street to see just what it really is that casts such a large shadow, a shadow that darkens all our horizons, we risk being crushed under the wheels of the caissons being wheeled off to the next covert battlefield, under cover of darkness. The Mafioso-like black market, trading in death and slavery, has grown larger than anyone could have ever dreamed possible. It sets up its own banking systems, subverts elected governments by enlisting unscrupulous politicians into covert wars and illegal trade in arms and drugs. It assassinates those it can not co-opt. It manipulates elections in order to put into place the gangsters who will smile and make speeches, all the while selling-out the nations to the lumbering cephalopod lurking beneath the surface, plotting to engulf them in a sea of treason.

On this ocean of betrayal, what did Onassis ship?

Appendix: Sodium Morphate

Yael Dragwyla and Gary Csillaghegyi

We cannot find a reference to "sodium morphate," anywhere. We assume that "morphate" is an ion of the compound morphine. If so, neither the Chemical Rubber Company Handbook nor any enclopedia we can find has anything remotely related to such a thing listed, and the CRC Handbook is the authority on all possible organic compounds. The CRC Handbook does list toxins, an enormous number of them, some of them too insidious and/or cruel for Lucrezia Borgia, so the CRC editors are not suppressing evidence when it comes to poisons!

It is not listed under either "Poisons" or "Morphine" in the 1911 *Encyclopedia Britannica,* which surely would have included data on a sodiumized morphine compound if any such existed (we assure you, neither then nor now has the Mafia been in control of the editing & publication of the *Encyclopedia Britannica!*).

Morphine does not occur in nature, and it is extremely unlikely that it could have been synthesized by a medieval chemist. Once you had it, however, it would not be possible to ionize it and replace the methyl group in the pyridene ring with an oxygen – which then would be the morphate – without the sort of temperature control that simply did not exist prior to 1900 (which was about the time mustard gas was first synthesized). In other words, the sort of technical expertise and equipment necessary to produce any morphate, sodium or otherwise, did not exist before 1900. Therefore, the alleged compound, if it exists at all, certainly was not "used by the Mafia [or anyone else] for centuries." At most, it could only have been used by anyone since 1900, as it could not have existed prior to that.

Something that would qualify as "sodium morphate" – an ion of the morphine molecule with sodium plugged in as a carrier ion – could be synthesized now, but it could not have been so before 1900, at which time the sort of temperature-control necessary to synthesize it in a laboratory first became possible. Morphine is an extremely delicate compound; it falls apart rather easily into smaller compounds, which are the chemicals that do its real work, such as analgesia and anesthesia, and, of course, poisoning. The latter it achieves by binding up blood oxygen, after the fashion of carbon monoxide, so that the victim of morphine overdose dies essentially of anoxia. To tinker with this very fragile molecule without destroying it requires extremely elegant, fine-tuned temperature control. Since this did not exist until this century, surely "sodium morphate" could not have been artificially created before then.

If it did exist before that time, then it would have been a botanical alkaloid. Plants, like animals, achieve metabolic processes and syntheses of chemicals in their tissues which, in a laboratory, would require temperatures far too high to enable life to continue or processing too touchy for our technology, by means of enzymes. These chemical templates enable assembly of extremely complex, fragile molecules at very low temperatures and in very short time, relatively speaking. In other words, by means of enzymes, plants routinely synthesize within their tissues certain molecules, such as plant alkaloids, that could not otherwise be created, except under conditions that would destroy the plant, or else at a rate so slow as to be useless for the plant's needs. Morphine is an opiate derivative – and opium is, of course, made by the opium poppy as a matter of course. So, at least in theory, morphine or one of its derivatives, such as "sodium morphate," could be a botanical alkaloid. One that could have been discovered, extracted from the plant and put into use quite long enough to qualify for the supposed Mafia poison Roberts writes of in the *Gemstone File*.

Considerations such as whether indeed synthesis of an alkaloid contructed of ionized morphine bonded to sodium would be useful to any plant, or useful enough to justify expenditure of the energy and resources necessary to synthesize it aside, there is another problem. Such a compound would not, under the Geneva conventions of the naming of chemical compounds, be called "sodium morphate," at least not scientifically. It might be called "sodium morphate" in the same way that acetylsalicylic acid is called "aspirin," as somebody's shorthand or trade-name. But "sodium morphate" would not be its real chemical name.

One has to ask: Where did Roberts get the term and the information concerning use of the compound by the Mafia for a great length of time? If he isn't talking about a plant alkaloid, then you can be sure that it certainly could not have existed before 1900.

There is no way to know whether sodium morphate, if synthesized, would be a poison, without knowing how stable the ion is – the more stable, the less poisonous. Poisons fall into two groups: (a) simple, highly active compounds which replace nutrients, and therefore do their dirty work; and (b) complex compounds which fall apart into simpler compounds, one or more of which is the active toxin.

There are no common rat poison ingredients which Roberts might have mistakenly called sodium morphate. The commonest staple ingredient of rat poison is arsenic or strychnine. Another, warfarin, is a colorless, odorless, tasteless, crystalline anti-coagulant, causing fatal internal bleeding in rats. It is successful because it acts too slowly for the rats to catch on. Its formula is $C_{19}H_{16}O_4$ – not a relative of the opiates. It is neutralized with sodium hydroxide (NaOH, common lye, as is used to make soap). It is derived from coumarin, $C_9H_6O_2$, originally extracted from the tonka bean.

Strychnine is also a common ingredient in rat poison. None of the chemicals we have mentioned are opiates, or related chemically to opiates. All are simple compounds, working directly on the tissues of the body, rather than breaking down into simpler compounds which are the actual toxins, as is true of all opiates. All are cheap, readily available and easily synthesized, which makes them all eminently more desirable for the job than any alkaloid, which is expensive, usually controlled by law, and difficult to extract or synthesize.

As far as sodium morphate only being detectable in the vomit, this is not likely at all – all opiate residues are readily detectable in blood, brain and other tissues, as well as in vomit.

Notes

X. Sharks DeSpot, Jim Keith, G.J. Krupey and Matt Love

1) I received a copy of the Christic Institute's affadavit to the court, re: their lawsuit against what they call "The Secret Team," and noticed a lot of familiar names started turning up from Gemstone re: the Iran/Contra affair. So, I merged the two, with dramatic results. I started wondering if Roberts had access to secret info – or info that was secret when my version was drafted. I started doing serious research, and have so far concluded that everything in Gemstone that can be verified by other sources was known by the public from the Church Committee hearings on organized crime. I base this belief on the fact that Gemstone makes no mention of Kennedy's relationship with Judith Exner Campbell. Church, a Kennedy friend, suppressed that information. If Roberts had inside information, he certainly would have mentioned that. Some of the things that can't be verified, I believe, are outrageous fabrications, such as the kidnapping of Hughes by Onassis. But then, I thought that Jacqueline sailing with Ari just before Kennedy was killed fell into that category, and it turned out to be true... Even better, Franklin Roosevelt, Jr. and wife were also on board, strengthening the highly dubious (in my opinion) Onassis, Roosevelt, Kennedy and Lansky heroin connection. – ML

2) The names of the 'Seven Sisters' are Exxon (also known as Esso), Shell, BP (British Petroleum), Gulf, Texaco,

Mobil, and Chevron (also known as Socal). *The Seven Sisters: The Great Oil Companies and the World They Made* by Anthony Sampson, 1975 Viking Press, p. 5. – XSDS

(3) In July of 1928, five American companies led by Exxon signed the 'Red Line Agreement' by which none of these companies would independently seek to drill for oil in the territories of Turkey, Syria, Jordon, Iraq and Saudi Arabia, but only through a joint company, the Iraq Petroleum Company. Because of the reluctance of the IPC companies to drill and exploit quickly enough, Chevron (Socal), Texaco and American Mobil signed later. Sampson, p. 74. – XSDS

4) In early 1928 the heads of Exxon, Shell and BP (British Petroleum) met at a castle called Achnacarry to create the Achnacarry Agreement, nicknamed the 'As Is,' which allowed "...the oil barons [to] reach a basic agreement to divide the world into an international cartel." 15 other companies, including Gulf, Chevron (Socal), Texaco and American Mobil signed later. Sampson, pp. 73, 74. – XSDS

5) Aristotle (Socrates) Onassis (1922 – March 15, 1975) purchased his first oil tanker in 1938, and owned two more by World War II. Onassis experienced a 'golden age of profit', and in the mid-1950's he purchased 17 new tankers in one year. *Encyclopedia Britannica,* 15th edition, Vol. 8, p. 949. *Facts on File,* 1975 edition, p. 204. – XSDS

6) The loan to Nixon's brother took place and was reported in the press at the close of the 1960 election, at which time Roberts may have heard of it. Other known Hughes "loans" to Nixon included $50,000 to his campaign in 1968, $100,000 in 1969 and 1979 through Bebe Rebozo, and $150,000 to the Nixon campaign in 1972. Other money parcelled out to candidates by Howard Robard Hughes during his stay in Las Vegas include $50,000 to Senator Alan Bible, $70,000 to Senator Howard Cannon, $10,000 to Nevada Lieutenant Governor Harry Reid, $9,500 to State Attorney General Robert List, and $5,000 to District Attorney George Franklin. *Citizen Hughes* by Drosnin, Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1985, p. 519. – JK, XSDS

7) Tax exempt status was granted to the Howard Hughes Medical Institute, not Foundation, in 1957. Drosnin, p. 312. — JK

8) Roberts is apparently pointing out another Mafia/Onassis connection here by mentioning Davis's Sicilian nationality. — JK

9) The timeline for Hughes's disappearance is correct, according to Drosnin, p. 52. — JK

10) "If you wanted to know what Hughes looked like after some years in captivity, brain injured, heroin-addicted, confined to a wheelchair, there was a photo of him printed in *Midnight*, a Canadian tabloid that Mae [Brussell] had. Of course, it wasn't labelled 'Howard Hughes,' but 'JFK is alive and an invalid on Skorpios (Onassis's private island).' The CIA/Mafia frequently leaks info, stories, photos, etc. in the mass-media tabloids. The purpose is multi-fold: to confuse and bamboozle the public, (the stories are always a bit screwed up, and they usually represent a 'fail-safe cover-up' of some important matter) and at the same time, to fish for any information anyone not in the club might have produced in responding to this bait. Anyone responding with too much information, of course, is turned into fishbait himself." — Stephanie Caruana in correspondence, 1991. — JK

11) Fratianno is misspelled 'Frattiano' throughout the *Gemstone File*. — ML

12) "In September 1963, even as he was taking the first perceptible steps toward a Vietnam pullback, Kennedy ordered the FBI to raid secret CIA guerrilla training camps and staging bases in Florida and Louisiana. Dave Ferrie, linked by New Orleans District Attorney James Garrison to Clay Shaw and the CIA, was involved in the operation of the Louisiana camps. The camps were situated on land owned by a gambling associate of Jack Ruby's, Bill McLaney. The McLaney brothers, cogs in the Lansky Syndicate, were among the big losers when the Cuban revolution ejected the Syndi-

cate and its casinos from the island. Frank Fiorini (aka Sturgis) of the Watergate burglary was also connected to the base Kennedy closed at No Name Key. Sturgis was visible at Dallas two months later and was actually questioned by the FBI in connection with the Assassination." – Carl Oglesby, *The Yankee and Cowboy War*, Berkeley Medallion, 1977, pp. 73-74. – JK

13) (Carey) Estes Kefauver suffers heart attack August 8, 1963, dies from burst aorta August 10, 1983. *Facts on File*, 1963, p. 287. – XSDS

14) It is well-documented that Jackie and friends went on this cruise. The official version has JFK asking Jackie to come back from the cruise because it was making all the papers and people were talking. It undermined the dignity of the office of the presidency, etc. My nod goes to the official version. If Kennedy knew Onassis was going to kill him, would he have been stupid enough to go to Dallas, riding in an open-topped car, after cancelling Chicago? – ML

15) Kennedy cancelled a scheduled appearance at a Chicago football game held on November 2, 1963 (not November 1, as in Gemstone) and spent the rest of the day, after two conferences, with his wife. She was not on board Onassis's yacht November 2, as Roberts claims, at least not according to the *Chicago Tribune*, November 3, 1963, "Presidents Trip to Chicago Cancelled." – XSDS

16) "A secret CIA memorandum says that E. Howard Hunt was in Dallas the day President John F. Kennedy was murdered and that top agency officials plotted to cover up Hunt's presence there.

"Some CIA sources speculate that Hunt thought he was assigned by higher-ups to arrange the murder of Lee Harvey Oswald.

"Sources say Hunt, convicted in the Watergate conspiracy in 1974, was acting chief of the CIA station in Mexico City in the weeks prior to the Kennedy assassination. Oswald was in Mexico City, and met with two Soviet KGB agents at the Russian EEmbassy there immediately before leaving for Dallas, according to the official Warren Commission Report.

"The 1966 memo, now in the hands of the House Assassination Committee, places Hunt in Dallas Nov. 22, 1963.

"Hunt's appearance on the scene in Dallas and in Mexico City at the time of the murder adds strength to a theory shared by some internal CIA investigators. They believe Oswald was working for U.S. intelligence, that he was ordered to infiltrate the KGB, and that this explains his life in Russia. They also believe Oswald proved to be so unstable that he was handled by the KGB into becoming a triple agent and assigned for the Dallas job.

"The same investigators theorize that Hunt was in Dallas that day on the orders of a high-level CIA official who in reality was a KGB mole. Hunt allegedly thought he was to arrange that Oswald be murdered because he had turned traitor. Actually he was to kill Oswald to prevent him from ever testifying and revealing the Russians had ordered him to kill Kennedy, the CIA sources speculate." *Sunday News Journal*, August 20, 1978, otherwise unidentified. – ML

17) One thing I find to be a glaring error in Gemstone is Roberts' insistence that Fratianno and Roselli were two of the hit men. They were capos in the Mob, and therefore would not have dirtied their hands (as well as incriminated themselves with hard evidence) in attempting to kill the President – what if they failed and were caught? – that being left to the torpedos and other expendable types. Mafia dons never carry guns, it being considered incriminating evidence. That's why the phalanx of bodyguards. The whole point is that the Mob does everything possible to minimize if not eliminate the role of their top dogs in crime, especially something like the magnitude of killing the President of the United States. So why would Roselli and The Weasel take such a risk? – GK

18) I think Roberts used *Coup d'Etat in America* by Canfield and Weberman as his main reference work. Page after page, the same cast of characters turn up that you find in Gemstone, the same CIA and Mafia personnel. Could it have been the other way around, that Canfield and Weberman used Roberts as their source? Well, *Coup d'Etat* seems to be

well footnoted, with pretty solid sources, whereas Roberts is almost without any sources listed. Most of Canfield and Weberman's sources were from 1973 on, and it seems like they speculate a lot, starting with Bay of Pigs at one end, Watergate at the other, and moving in. Suppose Roberts and *Coup d'Etat* had the same sources. They cite *Ramparts* from time to time. Could it have been a source for Roberts? – ML

19) Roselli also said that Jack Ruby was "one of our boys," and that Ruby was acting under orders to silence Oswald. Roselli was found dismembered in an oil drum shortly following his Senate testimony. Jack Ruby's testimony in the Warren Report on the matter is chilling and should be read in its entirety. Ruby says, in part, "...And I wish that our beloved President, Lyndon Johnson, would have delved deeper into the situation, hear me, not to accept just circumstantial facts about my guilt or innocence, and would have questioned to find out the truth about me before he relinquished certain powers to these certain people. ...Consequently, a whole new form of government is going to take over our country, and I know I won't live to see you [Justice Warren] another time." *Contract on America* by Scheim, Zebra, 1989, p. 156. – JK

20) Could the coverup have included Nixon's (and George Bush's) role in the Kennedy assassination? "On the Watergate tapes, June 23, 1972, referred to in the media as the 'smoking gun' conversation, Nixon and his Chief of Staff, H.R. Haldeman, were discussing how to stop the FBI investigation into the CIA Watergate burglary. They were worried that the investigation would expose their connection to 'the Bay of Pigs thing.' Haldeman, in his book *The Ends of Power*, reveals that Nixon always used code words when talking about the 1963 murder of JFK. Haldeman said Nixon would always refer to the assassination as 'the Bay of Pigs.'"

"On that transcript we find Nixon discussing the role of George Bush's partner, Robert Mosbacher, as one of the Texas fundraisers for Nixon. On the tapes Nixon keeps referring to the 'Cubans' and the 'Texans.' The 'Texans' were Bush, Mosbacher and Baker. This is ... [a] direct link between Bush and evidence linking Nixon and Bush to the Kennedy assassination.

"In the same discussion Nixon links the Cubans, the Texans, Helms, Hunt, Bernard Baker, Robert Mosbacher and the Bay of Pigs. Over and over on the Watergate tapes, these names come up around the discussion of the photos from Dallas, that Nixon was trying to obtain when he ordered the CIA to burglarize the Watergate." (Source: "Three Men and a Barge," Teresa Riordan, *Common Cause* magazine, March/April 1990, and *San Francisco Chronicle*, May 7, 1977, interview with Frank Sturgis in which he stated that "...the reason we burlarized the Watergate was because Nixon was interested in stopping news leaks relating to the photos of our role in the assassination of John F. Kennedy." Paul Kangas, "The Role of Richard Nixon and George Bush in the Assassination of President Kennedy," *The Realist*, No. 117, Summer 1991. – JK

21) Allegedly quoting Howard Hughes in *Citizen Hughes*, "I want to consider a development in Baja that would be similar to the all-inclusive arrangement Onassis had in Monte Carlo. I don't mean that I aspire to take over the Mexican government as he did Monaco..." Drosnin, pp. 386-387. –JK

22) Carl Oglesby's description of the event sounds like a Mafia operation. "...[Chester] Davis commanded his 'small army of special agents from Intertel,' flashing their mysterious credentials, to move with no more than necessary force into the sacrosanct cashier's cages in all the Hughes casinos. The Intertel men stuffed the cash into paper bags and boxes with no explanation other than their story about 'a new management' and no credentials other than their advantage in surprise and force. They could as easily have been robbers as cops." Oglesby, p. 218 – JK

23) Correct spelling: Byour. Also, note the Byour Agency's Nazi connections in "Is it True?" in this volume. – JK

24) There is evidence that, at some time, Onassis and Maheu had a parting of ways. "The Case of the Greedy Greek was a classic tragedy. At least for Aristotle Onassis. In his

hubris, the tycoon had made a secret deal with the dying king of Saudi Arabia that gave him a virtual monopoly on shipping oil from the Persian Gulf. It was Maheu's mission to scuttle that contract. Ostensibly he was working for Onassis's blood rival Stavros Niarchos. But the CIA was definitely in on it and so was then Vice-President Richard Nixon, and while not even the players seemed to be sure who was using whom on whose behalf, Big Oil was probably pulling the strings to make the world safe for Aramco. Still, it was Maheu's show. He bugged Onassis's offices in New York, Paris and London, got proof that the contract had been bought with a bribe, exposed the scandal in a Rome newspaper secretly owned by the CIA, and finally journeyed to Jidda, where he personally presented his evidence to the Saudi royal family and killed the whole deal." Drosnin, pp. 71-72. – JK

(25) Robert Kennedy actually shot on June 5, 1968. *Facts on File*, 1968, p. 226. – XSDS

26) Roberts was mistaken about Kennedy's book. It was published in 1960 by Harper & Row (with, obviously, nothing about his brother's assassination in it), and was reprinted by Greenwood Press in 1990. –ML, JK

27) If Bobby Kennedy didn't know who killed his brother, at least he had suspicions. Arthur Schlesinger, Jr. reports that RFK asked CIA Director John McCone, "Did the CIA kill my brother?" in *Robert Kennedy and His Times*, Arthur Schlesinger, Jr., Houghton Mifflin, 1978, pp. 615-616. – JK

28) *The Second Gun* was shown at Boston University in 1975. This may be one of Roberts' sources or a later addition by Caruana. – JK

29) Cyril Magnin, the father of Mae Brussell... – JK

(30) Roberts says that Kennedy bailed out of the car before it hit the water. The car was going 30-38 miles per hour at the time, and Kennedy could not have bailed out without injuring himself. The most likely source for this account is

Teddy Bare: The Last of the Kennedy Clan by Zad Rust, Western Islands, 1971, pp. 24-25. Western Islands is the publishing arm of the ultraconservative and conspiracy-oriented John Birch Society. *Chappaquiddick Revealed*, Kenneth Kappel, St. Martin's Paperbacks, 1989. Pp. 257-260. – XSDS

31) Robert Sam Anson suggests that JFK's brains are probably being withheld by members of the Kennedy family for reasons of discretion. *They've Killed the President*, Robert Sam Anson, Bantam, 1975, p. 340. – JK

32) Conspiracy researcher John Judge offers an alternative scenario to what happened at Chappaquiddick. He claims that Ted Kennedy wasn't even in the car when it went off the bridge, and points out that even Leo Demore, the author of the anti-Kennedy book *Senatorial Privilege*, "had to admit that Ted wasn't in the car. He (Demore) claims he (Kennedy) opened the door and jumped out at the last minute which is ridiculous because the windows are shut and the doors locked on that side. If he was in it, he wouldn't have bothered on the way out to lock it or even shut it." Judge goes on to claim that Mary Jo Kopechne, a former employee of George Smathers, "friend of Bebe Rebozo and the Nixon mob," was placed as an infiltrator in the Kennedy camp. "She thought she was taking him out to be killed, I believe. He was drugged at the party. He was ambushed, taken out of the car and back to the motel. He didn't have any wet clothes. He didn't swim anywhere that night, and he wasn't in the car. He was in a jovial mood the next morning. He didn't know anything had happened. They came to him and told him, 'She's dead in your car and we have blackmail letters signed by her. We can make it a murder rap or a manslaughter charge,' threatened his children and his life, and got him to lie about it."

Judge thinks Kopechne was already dead when she was put in the car and the car was pushed into the water. He says it was the same modus operandi in the murder-made-to-look-like-an-accident that killed TV journalist Jessica Savitch, who was investigating the Vatican-P2 Lodge scandal, and was beginning investigations into the U.S. government's recruitment and sheltering of Nazis after the end of the Second World War.

Judge claims that "there was a $10,000 payoff to Tony Vlaczewitz by Jack Caulfield mentioned during Watergate, for that summer called 'Operation Sand Wedge.' It was never explained or asked about. I think 'Sand Wedge' was 'wedge the Oldsmobile in the sand' in the little pond there and take care of Tony Vlaczewitz, who was up on the island. Local people in Martha's Vineyard I talked to said it was crawling with Nixon's men the day before. Lasowitz said that he got a phony press pass to ask embarrassing questions of Ted Kennedy at the press conference afterwards. But the date he said he went to get the press pass was before the accident happened. So what was he going to ask about? And he didn't show up at any of the press conferences. This was all nonsense. He was up there with the bag money, ready to take Teddy out."

Judge doesn't elaborate on how he knows this, and he doesn't mention how the locals in Martha's Vineyard that he talked to knew that the place "was crawling with Nixon's men." But if we can believe that John and Robert Kennedy were both murdered by conspiracy, then we must at least concede the possibility that Ted Kennedy could have been framed for the murder of Mary Jo Kopechne and let go via a cover-up in high places so as to keep him from ever being elected President, to tarnish forever his and the Kennedy name with the spectre of Chappaquiddick, and to keep him in line while in the Senate. After all, a third assassinated Kennedy might have been too much coincidence for even the mainstream media to swallow. "The Fourth Reich," John Judge, a talk given in *Judge For Yourself: A Treasury of Writing & Speeches* by John Judge, 1990, Prevailing Winds Research — GK

33) "The immediate postmortem examination of Eugenie's body... listed fourteen injuries on [her] body. They included a bruise on the left eye and swelling on the left temple; an elliotic hemorrhage on the right side of the neck; three parallel smaller bruises on the left side of the neck above the collarbone; injuries to the skin below and the fibers of the muscle; a hemorrhage to the left of the larynx; a two-inch bruise

on the abdomen with internal bleeding and bleeding behind the diaphragm in the region of the fourth and fifth vertabrae; bruises on the left arm; bruises on the left ankle and the left shin; a bruise on the ring finger and a tear on the little finger of the left hand. The doctors concluded that these injuries were commensurate with 'old-fashioned attempts at resuscitation.' Death, in their view, was caused by an overdose of sleeping pills." *Aristotle Onassis* by Fraser, Jacobsen, Ottaway and Chester. JB Lippincott, 1977, pp. 290-291. — JK

34) "Another of the many reasons to believe the real Hughes is not in existence or hasn't been since 1971 has to do with a January 28, 1971 *Los Angeles Times* article which described a computer which had been programmed to write the signature of Hughes. Although handwriting experts argued that the computer signature at that time was a possible facsimile, it was noted that the 'digitizer-computer-plotter system' could be used with greater sophistication to produce handwriting good enough to fool a handwriting expert. Too, it is important to note that Hughes aides were actually working on special computerized devices to duplicate voice-prints and were, back in 1968, hastily buying up every old newsreel they could find with Hughes on it and had ordered a 'chronological synopsis of every news story or book which had ever been published about Hughes.'" *The Empire of Howard Hughes* by Davenport and Lawson, Peace and Pieces Foundation, 1975, p. 79. Although one is inclined to think that stories such as this prove Gemstone, note that the publication date is within a time frame so that Roberts might have read the story, too. —JK

35) As for Roberts' sources, often he gives them in the Skeleton Key itself. If he was trading Gemstones with Mafia and the CIA for information, why does he have to get information from supermarket tabloids? — ML

36) Through the witness informer called Tiger Eye as reported by researchers Mae Brussell and Stephanie Caruana [in the article, "Is Howard Hughes Dead and Buried off a Greek Island?" December, 1974, *Playgirl* magazine], Howard

Hughes probably died in Tenos, a Cycladic Greek island about 75 miles southeast of Athens, where he may have been buried at sea (the Aegean) possibly on April 17, 1971... A Greek national and registered nurse, Koula Markopolis who had, according to the Canadian newspaper, *Midnight* (dated October 18, 1971), revealed that Ms. Markopolis was the employee of Aristotle Onassis from November 1968 to January 1969. Her patient, called 'Mr. Smith,' weighed practically nothing, 'just skin and bones, no muscles,' and 'his body was wasted away.' The paralyzed and brain-damaged patient had apparently been badly injured, but was treated like a 'prince' by Mr. Onassis and staff. Could one billionaire after another's interests take on the benevolent role of a caretaker? Why not? But according to the same newspaper, an Army Major David Cordrey witnessed, in a somewhat conflicting report, the burial of a Hughes 'double' or possibly Hughes himself on April 18, 1971 in the Ionian Sea... Cordrey's statement in part said, "Later in the day people gathered on the rocky point. I was curious and watched through my binoculars. One was a priest. One was Jackie Onassis, and one was Ted Kennedy. They and the others went through a ceremony over a coffin, and then watched while it was lowered into the sea." Witness Tiger Eye believed the man thought to be Hughes, however did die on April 16, 1971 and was buried the next day at Tenos on April 17th. Whatever the case, Hughes, according to more than one report had been quite ill and helpless since 1957 and perhaps had given control of much of his empire to the CIA and the others in the late sixties. Davenport and Lawson, p. 77. Tiger Eye is no doubt a pseudonym for "Gemstone," suggesting that Bruce Roberts or his letters were the source for the article. *Midnight* was very likely the source for Bruce Robert's description of the burial, which is at least as damning a piece of information for Robert's veracity as any. — JK

37) John Judge: "I talked to someone in Washington, D.C. whose father had embalmed JFK. They wouldn't just let anybody embalm John F. Kennedy and see the wounds. I said, 'Did he embalm any other famous people?' and she said, 'Yeah, he embalmed Howard Hughes.' This guy's in Arlington, Virginia. They don't have any embalmers in Texas?"

John Judge, transcript of the talk, "The Secret Government," *Dharma Combat* magazine no. 10, 1991. – JK

38) Omar Garrison relates an interesting story of a journalist (who he chooses not to name; perhaps it is Garrison himself) who was contacted by Ralph Howard, a mysterious Texan, re: Hughes. A note sent to the journalist said, "Howard Hughes is dead. We have definite proof of it. We know where the remains are, and we have a signed affadavit from the doctor who pronounced him dead. We also have dental x-rays that have been positively identified as being those of Howard Hughes." Note the similarity to the Gemstone account. Garrison states that the Texan wanted to interfere with an Air West stock deal, but when he requested $1,000 for his evidence, the anonymous journalist terminated contact. *Howard Hughes in Las Vegas*, Omar Garrison, Lyle Stuart, 1970 – JK

39) The Golden Triangle is not Vietnam, Laos, and Cambodia, but the area where Laos, Burma, and Thailand meet. For someone who was allegedly married to the daughter of the former French consul in Indochina, this is a glaring error. It was a popular misconception at the time of the Vietnam War however, when some anti-war activists tried to explain the real American agenda in Southeast Asia with the perhaps too simplistic explanation of a drug war to seize control of the drug trade. Or was it too simplistic an explanation? The U.S. was waging a not-so-secret war in Laos even before sending any troops to Vietnam, where discovery of vast offshore oil tracts made it suddenly loom in importance. In any event, Roberts got the names of the countries that comprise the Golden Triangle wrong, and he also apparently neglected to mention his debt to Alfred McCoy's *The Politics of Heroin in Southeast Asia* (first printing 1972) for the story about the Pepsi-Cola plant in Laos that was used to produce heroin. – GK

40) In testimony before the Ervin Committee on May 20, 1973, James McCord gave a description of the contents of Greenspun's safe. "Liddy said that Attorney General John Mitchell had told him that Greenspun had in his possession

blackmail type information involving a democratic candidate for President, that Mitchell wanted that material, and Liddy said that this information was in some way racketeer-related, indicating that if this candidate became President, the racketeers or national crime syndicate could have a control or influence over him as President. My inclination at this point in time is to disbelieve the allegation against the democratic candidate referred to above and to believe that there was in reality some other motive for wanting to get into Greenspun's safe. To me this sounds like anti-democratic disinformation and an attempt to cover for Nixon. It is also a close rendering of the Roberts' thesis.

I find, after having written the above interpretation, that Carl Oglesby has reached the same conclusion in *The Yankee and Cowboy War*: "Decoded, his [Liddy's] original statement would then read: Liddy said that Mitchell told him that Greenspun had in his possession blackmail type information involving NIXON (not Muskie) and Mitchell wanted that material, and Liddy said that this information was in some way racketeer-related, indicating that if this candidate, NIXON (not Muskie) became President, the racketeers or national crime syndicate could have control or influence over him as President." – JK

41) Liddy's "Gemstone Plan" and *Gemstone Files*: I think this is central to the Roberts' Gemstone. I believe that Roberts read about these files and began to speculate about what was in them. He took the code name "Gemstone" and applied it literally, as meaning physical gemstones. I think for me it was a turning point from belief to disbelief, the mainstream reporting of *Gemstone Files* without mention of any of the rest of Roberts scenario. – ML

On the other hand, Roberts' telling of the story is more believable if you take into consideration that he did manufacture artificial gemstones, as witnessed by Caruana. It strains credulity to think that Liddy came up with the name "Gemstone" by accident, and that it happened to coincide with Roberts' line of work. – JK

42) Giovanni Battista Montini became Pope Paul VI June

21, 1963. *Columbia Encyclopedia*, article "Paul VI," p. 1613. — XSDS

43) Pope Pius XI held office from 1922-1939. Pius XII 1939-1958. John XXIII 1958-1963. Paul VI (Montini) 1963-1978. John Paul I, 1978, John Paul II 1978-. World Almanac, "Noted Personalities—Popes/Chronological List of Popes" 1983, Newspaper Enterprise Association, Inc., p. 409 — XSDS

44) The Arab world is usually thought to have begun in the 6th or 7th century, with the growth of Islam and the Prophet Mohammed (570?-632). However, the word Arab existed as early as the 9th century B.C. "In classical times the term was extended to the whole of the Arabian peninsula and to all the desert areas of the Middle East..." *Columbia Encyclopedia*, article "Arabs," p. 93 and "Mohammed," p. 1397. — XSDS

45) It was "only during the last century that historians have been able to fix satisfactorily Jesus's birth year..." as being at the conjunction of Saturn and Jupiter. Early Church scholars place Christ's birth six or seven years too early. *6000 Years of the Bible*, Gunther S. Wegener, Harper and Row, 1963, p. 103. — XSDS

46) In the *New Testament*, Luke 2:7 makes clear that Jesus was laid in a manger due to overcrowding in Bethlehem, caused by people arriving from all over the Roman Empire for a tax census. Matthew 2:11 says only that Christ and Mary were at a house together when found by the chief priests and scribes of the people, the Magi. — XSDS

47) Luke 19:45, Mark 11:15, Matthew 21:12. — XSDS

48) "But everything speaks for Jesus having been arrested as a troublemaker, informally interrogated and handed over to [Pontius] Pilate as the leader of a political revolt by the pro-Roman priestly Sadducean (traditional ruling class of priests rejecting doctrines not in the law such as resurrection, retribution in a future life and the existence of angels),

members of the Sanhedrin [supreme council of the Jews having religious, civil and criminal jurisdiction] who were dominant in Jerusalem society in those days. *Encyclopedia Britannica*, 15th edition, 1986, Volume 22, p. 360. – XSDS

49) In John 19:33 it says that Christ was already dead when the spear was stuck in his side. In John 19:34 the soldiers pierced Christ's side and blood and water came out of his body. There is no mention of the soldiers eating Christ's liver in either of these documents. – XSDS

50) Publius (or Gaius) Cornelius Tacitus (b. circa A.D. 56-D. circa A.D. 120) was an orator and held official office within the Roman empire. He wrote many works, the most important of which was his *Annals* (in Latin *Ab Excessu Divi Augusti*). The *Annals* covered the Roman empire from the start of the reign of Tiberius until the end of the reign of Nero. This was A.D. 14 until A.D. 66. The most important passage in the *Annals* is in Book 15, part 44, in which he mentions the crucifixion of 'Christus' during the reign of Tiberius (A.D. 14-March 16,37.). The *Annals* are fragmentary, and the years 29-31 A.D. are incomplete. Chapter 5 covers 29-31 and the crucifixion of Jesus took place in A.D. 30. Only one copy of Tacitus' work survived the Middle Ages. *The Complete Works of Tacitus*, Moses Hadas editor, Random House, 1942. *Encyclopedia Britannica*, Volume 11, p. 487. – XSDS

51) A possible source for this description of the life and crucifixion of Jesus Christ was a supposed official report to the Emperor Tiberius from Pontius Pilate. It is mentioned by two early Church scholars, Justin in his *Apology* around 150 A.D. and Tertullian in another work titled *Apology* in 197 A.D. It is now believed to have been a hoax, but, if authentic, may have been available to Tacitus for his *Annals*. *New Catholic Encyclopedia*, McGraw Hill Books, 1967, Volume 11, pp. 360-361. 'Pilate, Pontius' entry. Justin Martyr, vol. 8, pp. 94, 95. Tertullian, vol. 13, pgs. 1019, 1020, 1021, 1022. – XSDS

52) In the 15th century the *Apocrypha of Sulpicius Servus*

was added to Tacitus' *Annals*. It's possible that this was believed authentic by Bruce Roberts or by Cardinal Eugene Tisserant, and that the Servus writings were actually true writings of Tacitus supressed by the Church for political reasons. *Encyclopedia Britannica*, vol. 8, p. 606. – XSDS

53) Nero (his full name was Nero Claudius Caesar Augustus Germanicus). B. A.D. 37- D. A.D. 68. He was the fifth emperor of Rome. He ruled from A.D. 54-A.D. 68. In his biography *Nero*, author John Bishop argues that the fire was accidental, not deliberately set. After the fire, rumors spread in Rome that Nero had sought to burn Rome to expand his own residence and to rebuild Rome to his own design. According to Tacitus in book 15, part 38, there were some who spread the fire and prevented it from being extinguished, "and kept shouting that there was one who gave them authority, either seeing to plunder more freely, or obeying orders." John Bishop argues that Nero tried to frame the Christians as scapegoats, only to discover to his surprise that many freely admitted to spreading the fire. Bishop argues that many of the Christians intentionally spread the fire at Rome because they believed the Apocalypse and Second Coming of Christ were at hand. They confessed to it because they refused to deny their actions in Christ's name. The conventional view of history sees no reason to believe that Rome was burned to stop Christianity, only that they made a convenient scapegoat for Nero to blame the fire on. In fact, Poppaea his wife may have actually been a Christian, and he held no personal animosity against them. He did, however, brutally punish the Christians accused of burning Rome, and it is understandable that these people became martyrs to the early Christians. But this was apparently not a religious persecution set on destroying Christianity, as the *Gemstone File* implies, just a brutal search for scapegoats. *Encyclopedia Brittanica*, vol. 8, pp. 605-607. *Nero: The Man and the Legend*, by John Bishop. A.S. Barnes and Company, Inc. 1964. pp. 88, 192. – XSDS

54) The first Council of Nicaea was held at what is now Isnik, Turkey. It was called by Emperor Constantine I (The Great) to solve the problem created in the Eastern Church by

the heresy of Arianism. The year was 325 A.D. and the problem was that Arianism declared that Jesus was not of the same substance as the Father, but was instead created as an agent for creating the world. Since Christ was lesser than God, the Holy Trinity of Father, Son and Holy Ghost would have been impossible. Its proponent, Arius of Alexandria, was exiled, and Arianism condemned. It continued to exist until 381, when the Nicaean view was affirmed by the Eastern Church at the Second Ecumenical Council of Constantinople. *Encyclopedia Brittanica*, vol. 8, p. 875. *Webster's New Collegiate Dictionary*, 1979. *Encyclopedia Americana*, 1990, vol. 2, p. 281.

The first attempt to create a list of proscribed Christian writings was done by a heretic named Marcion, who disbelieved in Christ being a fulfillment of the *Old Testament* prophecies. His volume was made up only of Luke and ten of Paul's epistles, both purged of any mention of Judaism. "Contemporary Christians were unanimous in stigmatising Marcion as an imposter, though they followed the main lines of the skeleton canon he had laid down, chiefly because nobody else had proposed one." He was excommunicated in 144 A.D. He started his own Church, which became widespread and powerful, the first heretical challenge to Catholic Christianity. He rejected Gnosticism, preferring salvation by faith. Later, Marcionism was absorbed into Manichaeism. Wegener, p. 142. *Columbia Encyclopedia*, p. 1307, "Marcion." – XSDS

55) There were a wide variety of early Christian writings, including heretical writings, hoaxes, Gnostic writings attributing Gnostic beliefs to Christ, stories of early Christian martyrs, honest letters by bishops, and clumsy translations of the writings of the Apostles. Literally hundreds of dogmas and sects produced their own writings. When the New Testament canon was formed, some writings were rejected as being supplemental, that is to say, acceptable but unecessary because Matthew, Mark, Luke and John had already done the job for such writings as the *Gospel of Peter* and the *Gospel of Nicodemus*. Peter and Nicodemus were not considered heretical, but merely redundant. Wegener, pp. 125-135. *The Lost Books of the Bible*, Bell Publishing Co., 1979, p. 9. – XSDS

56) Constantine I (the Great) had adopted the faith of Christianity by at least 313, twelve years before the Nicaean Council of 325. It was not an act of dishonesty embracing the Christian faith for power. Constantine's mixing of faith and politics was normal for the times. *Encyclopedia Brittanica*, "Constantine," Macropedia section, vol. 16, p. 730. – XSDS

57) "While Constantine was not... the good Christian that later tradition depicts, he consolidated, in the name of unity and uniformity, the status of Christian orthodoxy. In A.D. 325, for example, he convened the Council of Nicaea. At this council the dating of Easter was established. Rules were framed that defined the authority of bishops, thereby paving the way for a concentration of power in ecclesiastical hands. Most important of all, the Council of Nicaea decided, by vote, that Jesus was a god, not a mortal prophet. Again, however, it must be emphasized that Constantine's paramount consideration was not piety but unity and expediency. As a god, Jesus could be associated conveniently with Sol Invictus. As a mortal prophet he would have been more difficult to accomodate. In short, Christian orthodoxy lent itself to a politically desirable fusion with the official state religion; and insofar as it did so Constantine conferred his support upon Christian orthodoxy.

"Thus, a year after the Council of Nicaea he sanctioned the confiscation and destruction of all works that challenged orthodox teachings – works by pagan authors that referred to Jesus, as well as works by 'heretical' Christians. He also arranged for a fixed income to be allocated to the Church and installed the bishop of Rome in the Lateran Palace. Then, in A.D. 331, he commissioned and financed new copies of the *Bible*. This constituted one of the single most decisive factors in the entire history of Christianity and provided Christian orthodoxy – the 'adherents of the message' – with an unparalleled opportunity.

"In A.D. 303, a quarter of a century earlier, the pagan emperor Diocletian had undertaken to destroy all Christian writings that could be found. As a result Christian documents – especially in Rome – all but vanished. When Constantine commissioned new versions of these documents, it enabled the custodians of orthodoxy to revise, edit, and rewrite their material as they saw fit, in accordance with their tenets. It was at this point that most of the crucial alterations in the *New Testament* were probably made and Jesus assumed the unique status he has enjoyed ever since. The importance of Constantine's commission must not be underestimated. Of the five thousand extant early manuscript versions of the *New Testament*, not one predates the fourth century. The *New Testament* as it exists today is essentially a product of fourth-century editors and writers – custodians of orthodoxy, 'adherents of the message,' with vested interests to protect." *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln, Dell Publishing Co., 1983. – JK

58) The Crusades were fought between 1095 A.D. and 1272, nine in all. *Columbia Encyclopedia*, article "Crusades," pp. 517-518 –XSDS

59) "In 1953 George Bush raised $500,000 through Brown Brothers Harriman and joined forces with Huge and Bill Liedtke to form Zapata Petroleum. They drilled in West Texas and by the late 1950s were millionaires. In 1959 the Bush family bought out the Liedtke's share of Zapata Offshore, a subsidiary of Zapata Petroleum. Hugh went on to become chairman of Pennzoil and Bill raised money for Nixon's 1968 and 1972 presidential campaigns. In 1972 Bill gathered $700,000 in anonymous contributions and had the cash, checks and securities delivered to the Committee to Re-elect the President (CREEP) one day before a new law prohibiting anonymous contributions took effect. Bill says his fundraising efforts were done as a favor for George Bush." Bush League Trading Cards by Paul Brancato and Salim Yaqub, 1989, Eclipse Enterprises, Forestville, CA., citing information from various news periodicals and The Christic Institute. – GK

60) "While the White House burglars plotted the break-in back in Washington, Hughes lay in a stupor watching *Diamonds Are Forever*, a James Bond movie about a reclusive billionaire held prisoner in his Las Vegas penthouse, his em-

pire run by an evil imposter." – Drosnin. Is it possible that Bruce Roberts might have seen this movie and based his Hughes/Onassis scenario on it? This anecdote at least shows that the Hughes abduction theory was common conspiratorial currency prior to the *Gemstone File,* while not proving whether it was true or not. – JK

61) This segment, from the reference to Nixon's alleged "asshole Roberts" remark to the bizarre gibberish about the "Yellow Race Dead-Fucks Mary Jo Kopechne," does more to discredit the *Gemstone Files* and portray Roberts as a mentally disturbed paranoid-obsessive than any other segment, with the possible exception of the "Hughes sea burial-casket stolen by Albanian frogmen" episode lifted from a Canadian tabloid. One possible explanation might be that the "Yellow Race Dead-Fucks Mary Jo Kopechne" is some sort of code phrase that only certain individuals might be privy to. – GK [Note Caruana's explanation in her interview in this volume]

62) Attempting to sort out what possible connection there could be between the Yellow Race and Mary Jo Kopechne, is it possible that Roberts was referring to the familiar conspiratorial theme of the Khazar Jews and their international controls (primarily via banking and high finance) when he speaks of the Yellow Race? In the far right wing *Affirmations*, Hillman Holcomb says, "The talmudic, mongoloids who now rule Christendom should be symbolized as khazar-askenazim... The only semites on earth are the Semitic Arabs of the Levant, Asia minor or the Near East. The only anti-semites on earth are the talmudic, mongoloid Kikes who call themselves Jews and Israelites. Their ongoing persecution and extermination of the Semitic Arabs demonstrate this truth." Roberts' previous slighting statement about the Jews not allowing Arabs into their 'nice, clean stables' may confirm this bent in Roberts' worldview, and also suggests the possibility that Caruana may have deleted that slant when editing Roberts' letters. *Affirmations*, Hillman Holcomb, Christian Technocracy, Las Vegas, 1990.

I am also reminded of a broadside that was distributed in Miami after JFK ordered that military activity against Castro be ceased. Bearing pictures of cowboys and the Alamo, the document reads: "Only through one development will you Cuban patriots ever live again in your homeland as freemen... [only] if an inspried [sic] act of God should place in the White House within weeks a Texan known to be a friend of all Latin Americans... though he must under present conditions bow to the Zionists who since 1905 came into control of the United States, and for whom Jack Kennedy and Nelson Rockefeller and other members of the Council of [sic] Foreign Relations and allied agencies are only stooges and pawns. Though Johnson must now bow to these crafty and cunning Communist-hatching Jews, yet, did an act of God suddenly elevate him into the top position [he] would revert to what his beloved father and grandfather were, and to their values and principles and loyalties. [Signed] A Texan who resents the Oriental influence that has come to control, to degrade, to pollute and enslave his own people." — JK

63) David Atlee Phillips said in his autobiography that he had been recruited by the CIA while publishing a small newspaper in Chile. Phillips was a good friend of Katherine Graham. Is it going too far to suggest, given all the known intelligence service connections between the *Washington Post* and the CIA, that it is a virtual CIA proprietary? The *Post* and the *New York Times* have been willing and often knowing channels of CIA disinformation... but could the *Post* connection be even tighter? — ML

64) Hearings actually began May 17, 1973. *Facts on File* for 1973, p. 394, E1. — XSDS

65) Admiral Noel Gayler is a real person, however Roberts got the spelling of his name wrong. — XSDS

66) U.S. District Court Judge Bruce R. Thompson (not Thomson) dismissed indictment. Second indictment dismissed by Thompson November 14, 1974. *Facts on File* 1974, p. 89, F3, F.o.F. p. 1036, C3. — XSDS

67) [See also Robert's entry on the "Zebra killings."] "The Los Angeles Police Department's 'Special Unit: Senator' was formed and run by Evelle Younger, current attorney general

of California. After it had completed its apparently successful cover-up of the RFK evidence, SUS was given permanent form as the Criminal Conspiracy Section, remaining under Younger's control. The CCS shortly had taken over the war against local reds and organized blacks. In support of its antisubversive purposes, it got involved deeply in the behavior-modification work going on in the California prison system, notably at Vacaville, a psychofactory turning out police zombies the likes of Donald 'Cinque' Defreeze and others involved in the formation of the Symbionese Liberation Army. Defreeze was explicitly a CCS creature. The thesis has thus formed that the SLA was always a play thing of the CCS and through it of the Southern California far right, and that the kidnapping of Patty Hearst was part of a larger project, possibly including also the Zebra killings of the same period and the murder of Oakland school superintendent Marcus Foster, the purpose of which was to generate a public demand for wider police repression. (Based on material developed by Donald Freed and the Citizens Research and Investigating Committee of Los Angeles. SLA leader Emily Harris has denounced Freed as a conspiracy patsy.)" Oglesby, pp. 349-350. — JK

68) On June 30th, 1974 Alberta Williams King, mother of Martin Luther King, was shot and killed by Marcus Wayne Chenault at Ebenezer Baptist Church in Atlanta, Georgia. This is four months later than in the *Gemstone File*. Facts on File 1974, p. 562, E2. — XSDS

69) Gail "Larry" Harp of Kish Realty did die on September 7, 1974. — XSDS

70) It is interesting that people involved with the Kennedy assassination have a high rate of heart attack, or what may have been heart attack. Tom Howard, Jack Ruby's first chief attorney until he was relieved, died of a heart attack at the age of 48 on March 27, 1965. Earlene Roberts, who was Oswald's landlady at the time of the shooting, testified that, after Oswald had returned from Dealey Plaza and was in his room, two uniformed policemen pulled up in front of the rooming house and honked twice. She died of a heart attack

on January 9, 1966. Lee Bowers, a key witness in the Warren Investigation and observer of activity on the Grassy Knoll was driving on August 9, 1966 when his car veered into a bridge abutment. A doctor who examined him afterward stated that, "He was in some strange sort of shock. A different kind of shock than an accident victim experiences. I can't explain it. I've never seen anything like it." He was cremated without autopsy. Harold Russell saw the Officer Tippet shooting. He exhibited extreme signs of paranoia in July of 1965, stating that he would be killed. Police appeared and one of them hit him over the head with his pistol. He was taken to a hospital where he was pronounced dead by "heart failure." Guy Bannister, a detective involved with the Garrison trial, died of (according to the official report) a heart attack, although witnesses say that a bullet wound may have complicated the matter. Clay Shaw, the businessman implicated by Jim Garrison in the assassination, died under mysterious circumstances and was embalmed before the cause of death could be determined. Dorothy Kilgallen was the only journalist allowed a private interview with Jack Ruby (Judge Joe B. Brown later bragged about the price paid). After Kilgallen stated that she was going to "break the case wide open" she died, supposedly of alcohol and barbiturate poisoning. Mrs. Earl T. Smith, a close friend of Kilgallen's, died of undetermined causes two days later. Dr. Nicholas J. Chetta, a key witness against Clay Shaw, died of a heart attack before the case could be tried in Federal Court. Source: *Disappearing Witnesses* by Penn Jones – JK

71) According to Stephanie Caruana, one of the Roberts letters in her possession is addressed to Anwar Sadat. – JK

72) "Basically, [Kirlian] photography with high frequency electrical fields involves a specially constructed high frequency spark generator or oscillator that generates 75,000 to 200,000 electrical oscillations per second. The generator can be connected to various clamps, plates, optical instruments, microscopes or electron microscopes. The object to be investigated (finger, leaf, etc.) is inserted between the clamps along with photographic paper. The generator is switched on and a high frequency field is created between the clamps which ap-

parently causes the object to radiate some sort of bio-luminescence onto the photographic paper. A camera isn't necessary for the photographic process." *Psychic Discoveries Behind the Iron Curtain*, Ostrander and Schroeder, Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1970., p. 199. – JK

73) The story of the top secret mission of the Glomar Explorer is confirmed by Drosnin, p. 23. – JK

74) One recurring theme among people interested in the *Gemstone File* is the suggestion that it might be disinformation, a hoax document written to confuse researchers or throw them off the trail of real conspirators. Yael Dragwyla offers: "Is it possible that the *Gemstone File* is itself disinformation deliberately created and disseminated by the CIA, the KGB or some other agency to confuse and distract Americans from what's really going on? It's so easy to write down a bunch of clever, sensational rumors in a gosh-wow style and spread them around; but how accurate they are, and/or useful, is another matter. There is a fellow here in Seattle, 'She-Bop Steve,' who is totally convinced that Senator Alan Cranston of California is the Evil Genius Behind Everything, and he can prove it –by his lights. But emotionally satisfying verbal linkages don't constitute solid proof of anything; nor do blunt, sensationalistic allegations which, however tittilating they may be, are backed up by nothing whatsoever at all. It takes hard, nasty cutting research and tight analysis to get at the meat of anything – if, in fact, the meat is there at all. The *Gemstone File* looks like nothing more than a list of allegations, with nothing to back them up. Innuendo and rumor are cheap 'n' easy – but what real use are they, ultimately, save maybe to whip up mob violence... or sell more copies of *The National Enquirer?*"

Quoting X. Sharks DeSpot from his informal essay on the subject, titled "Could It Have Been a Hoax?": "The specific claims in the File sound crazy: Bruce Roberts' father, favorite bartender and good friend at Kisch Realty were all killed because he got too close to the truth. They didn't just shoot him outright in a dark alley, they killed three friends of his over four years, and let him live until 1977. He hired G. Gordon Liddy to kill LBJ and Aristotle Onassis's son by 'quoting the Chinese price in ears,' the price on LBJ's head. Later he tries to get $500 from Harp at Kisch Realty. The only thing that makes sense is that the People's Republic of China paid G. Gordon Liddy to kill four people, with Bruce Roberts as the middle man, because he obviously didn't have the money himself. And, of course, my favorite quote, in 1963: 'Get it, Lyndon, otherwise Air Force One might have an accident on the way back to Washington.' Aristotle Onassis was threatening to kill the President of the United States at a time when the country was on full alert status and in danger of starting World War III. To kill LBJ would have pushed the country over the edge into war, and Onassis is talking like a Grade-B movie gangster!

"From this, I think that Roberts was crazy and meant every word of it. But that may not be true. First, simple substitution could have taken place: Navy Intelligence could have sent around a man pretending to be Bruce Roberts to disrupt things and spread disinformation; or Roberts himself may have made up the whole thing as a joke to mess with [Mae] Brussell's head.

"A teacher of mine wonders if the *Gemstone File* could have been disinformation. Certainly the FBI during the 60's and 70's spread disinformation among the Ku Klux Klan and Black Panthers during the years of turmoil and protest. This was nothing new. During the 1920's Alexander Mitchell Palmer, United States Attorney General, would have his agents infiltrate Socialist political parties and have the agents write things into the party platforms. Then, having created a pretext for arrest, he would arrest the party members. The U.S. government has a long history of disinformation activities abroad: it's called the United States Information Agency.

"Since the *Gemstone File* focused mainly on Bruce Roberts and the Mafia, I don't know what the Navy (or FBI, CIA, etc.) would be trying to disrupt, unless it was an attack on Daniel Ellsberg or San Francisco Mayor Joseph Alioto.

"My argument against the *Gemstone File* being disinformation intentionally planted is the simplicity of creating an 'underground' newspaper: it's so easy. What do you need? A printer and some lies. That's all there is to it. The idea that Bruce Roberts was spreading disinformation to Mae Brussell is easier to believe. Any group which actively sticks its nose into CIA affairs like Mae Brussell's World Watchers did, should expect at least a passing interest from the agency's employees. And disrupting Brussell could not have been very difficult. In 1988 she came to the conclusion that a neutron bomb had been detonated by Israel and the U.S. in Africa. She had almost no evidence of anything of the sort, and jumped head-on into that conclusion. This does not mean she was wrong, it only means that she had very little information to back up her conclusions.

"It is worthy to note that the FBI supposedly went to columnist Jack Anderson and tried to convince him that a white dentist killed Martin Luther King because King was having an affair with his wife. If the FBI is that looneytunes, you can bet they'll say almost anything." — JK

$14.9

The GEMSTONE FILE

Edited By

JIM KEITH

author of the forthcoming book,
Alternative 003: Casebook on Conspiracy

Includes the complete text of:
A Skeleton Key to the Gemstone File
The Kiwi Gemstone
with commentaries by:

Robert Anton Wilson
author of *Cosmic Trigger*

Jonathan Vankin
author of *Conspiracies, Cover-Ups & Crimes*

Kerry W. Thornley
author of *The Idle Warriors*

• Ben G. Price • G.J. Krupey • Len Bracken •
and more!

Since 1975, a privately circulated document has been the subject of much discussion and debate among researchers into the dark realms of political conspiracy. Purporting to reveal the identity of the conspirators in the John F. Kennedy assassination, *The Gemstone File* interprets pivotal historical events in a new light.

Cover art by James Koehnline

IllumiNet Press
P.O. Box 746
Avondale Estates, GA
30002

ISBN 0-9626534-5-4
51495
9 780962 653452

The Creature from Jekyll Island

by G. Edward Griffin

A Second Look at the Federal Reserve

E PLURIBUS UNUM

Dedicated to the next generation-especially my own brood
James, Daniel, Ralph, and Kathleen.
May this effort help to build for them a better world.

Seventh printing: May 1998
Sixth printing: September 1997
Fifth printing: August 1996
Fourth printing: September 1995
Third printing: April 1995
Second printing: November 1994
First printing: July 1994

Third edition: May 1998
Second edition: September 1995
First edition: July 1994

© Copyright 1998,1995 and 1994 by G. Edward Griffin

Published by American Media
P.O. Box 4646
Westlake Village, California 91359-1646

Library of Congress Catalog Card Number: 98-71615

ISBN 0-912986-21-2

Manufactured in the United States

ADDITIONAL COPIES OF THIS BOOK

Single price $19.50*

40% discount on case purchases, 12 books per case.
(That's $11.70 per book, $140.40 per case)*

California residents add 7 *Vi* % sales tax.

For shipping, handling, and insurance, add:
$5.50 for the first copy plus $1.20 for each additional copy
($18.70 per case)

Send your order to
American Media
P.O. Box 4646
Westlake Village, CA 91359-1646

For immediate service, order by phone
and charge to your credit card.
Call toll-free: (800) 595-6596

Orders may also be placed over the Internet at
www.realityzone.com

*These prices are guaranteed through February, 1999.
After that date, please call for confirmation.

HOW TO READ THIS BOOK

Thick books can be intimidating. We tend to put off reading them until we have a suitably large block of time—which is to say, often they are never read. That is the reason a preview has been placed at the beginning and a summary at the end of each chapter. All of these together can be read in about one hour. Although they will not contain details nor documentation, they will cover the major points and will provide an overview of the complete story. The best way to read this book, therefore, is to begin with the previews of each section, followed by the chapter previews and summaries. Even if the reader is not in a hurry, this is still an excellent approach. A look at the map before the journey makes it easier to grapple with a topic such as this which spans so much history.

THE CREATURE FROM JEKYLL ISLAND

A Second Look at the Federal Reserve

Third edition

by G. Edward Griffin

American Media

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Preface i
Acknowledgments iv
Introduction v

I. WHAT CREATURE IS THIS? 1

What is the Federal Reserve System? The answer may surprise you. It is not federal and there are no reserves. Furthermore, the Federal Reserve Banks are not even banks. The key to this riddle is to be found, not at the beginning of the story, but in the middle. Since this is not a textbook, we are not confined to a chronological structure. The subject matter is not a curriculum to be mastered but a mystery to be solved. So let us start where the action is.

1. The Journey to Jekyll Island 3
2. The Name of the Game Is Bailout 25
3. Protectors of the Public 41
4. Home Sweet Loan 67
5. Nearer to the Heart's Desire 85
6. Building the New World Order 107

II. A CRASH COURSE ON MONEY 133

The eight chapters contained in this and the following section deal with material that is organized by topic, not chronology. Several of them will jump ahead of events that are not covered until later. Furthermore, the scope is such that the reader may wonder what, if any, is the connection with the Federal Reserve System. Please be patient. The importance will eventually become clear. It is the author's intent to cover concepts and principles before looking at events. Without this background, the history of the Federal Reserve is boring. *With* it, the story emerges as an exciting drama which profoundly affects our lives today. So let us begin this adventure with a few discoveries about the nature of money itself.

7. The Barbaric Metal 135
8. Fool's Gold 155
9. The Secret Science 171
10. The Mandrake Mechanism 185

III. THE NEW ALCHEMY 215

The ancient alchemists sought in vain to convert lead into gold. Modern alchemists have succeeded in that quest. The lead bullets of war have yielded an endless source of gold for those magicians who control the Mandrake Mechanism. The startling fact emerges that, without the ability to create fiat money, most modern wars simply would not have occurred. As long as the Mechanism is allowed to function, future wars are inevitable. This is the story of how that came to pass.

11. The Rothschild Formula 217
12. Sink the *Lusitania!* 235
13. Masquerade in Moscow 263
14. The Best Enemy Money Can Buy 285

IV. A TALE OF THREE BANKS 307

It has been said that those who are ignorant of history are doomed to repeat its mistakes. It may come as a surprise to learn that the Federal Reserve System is America's fourth central bank, not its first. We have been through all this before and, each time, the result has been the same. Interested in what happened? Then let's set the coordinates of our time machine to the colony of Massachusetts and the year 1690. To activate, turn to chapter fifteen.

15. The Lost Treasure Map 309
16. The Creature Comes to America 325
17. A Den of Vipers 341
18. Loaves and Fishes, and Civil War 361
19. Greenbacks and Other Crimes 377

V. THE HARVEST 405

Monetary and political scientists continue to expound the theoretical merits of the Federal Reserve System. It has become a modern act of faith that economic life simply could not go on without it. But the time for theory is past. The Creature moved into its final lair in 1913 and has snorted and thrashed about the landscape ever since. If we wish to know if it is a creature of service or a beast of prey, we merely have to look at what it has done. And, after the test of all those years, we can be sure that what it has done, it will continue to do. Or, to use the Biblical axiom, a tree shall be known by the fruit it bears. Let us now examine the harvest.

20. The London Connection 407
21. Competition Is A Sin 431
22. The Creature Swallows Congress 451
23. The Great Duck Dinner 471

VI. TIME TRAVEL INTO THE FUTURE 505

In the previous sections of this book, we have travelled through time. We began our journey by stepping into the past. As we crisscrossed the centuries, we observed wars, treachery, profiteering, and political deception. That has brought us to the present. Now we are prepared to ride our time machine into the future. It will be a hair-raising trip, and much of what lies ahead will be unpleasant. But it has not yet come to pass. It is merely the projection of present forces. If we do not like what we see, we still have an opportunity to change those forces. The future will be what we choose to make it.

24. Doomsday Mechanisms 507
25. A Pessimistic Scenario 537
26. A Realistic Scenario 565

PHOTOGRAPHS

The seven men who met in secret at Jekyll Island 24
The Fabian Society stained-glass window 106
First photo section 208-214
Period cartoons about the Rothschilds 234
Items relating to the sinking of the Lusitania 262
Second photo section 396-404

APPENDIX

A. Structure and Function of the Federal Reserve 590
B. Natural Laws of Human Behavior in Economics 592
C. Is M1 Subtractive or Accumulative? 594

BIBLIOGRAPHY 596

INDEX 602

PREFACE

Does the world really need another book on the Federal Reserve System?

I have struggled with that question for several years. My own library is mute testimony to the fact that there has been no shortage of writers willing to set off into the dark forest to do battle with the evil dragon. But, for the most part, their books have been ignored by the mainstream, and the giant snorter remains undaunted in his lair. There seemed to be little reason to think that I could succeed where so many others have failed.

Yet, the idea was haunting. There was no doubt in my mind that the Federal Reserve is one of the most dangerous creatures ever to stalk our land. Furthermore, as my probing brought me into contact with more and more hard data, I came to realize that I was investigating one of the greatest "who-dunits" of history. And, to make matters worse, I discovered who did it.

Someone has to get this story through to the public. The problem, however, is that the public doesn't want to *hear* it. After all, this is bad news, and we certainly get enough of that as it is.

Another obstacle to communication is that this tale truly is incredible, which means *unbelievable*. The magnitude by which reality deviates from the accepted myth is so great that, for most people, it simply is beyond credibility. Anyone carrying this message is immediately suspected of paranoia. Who will listen to a madman?

And, finally, there is the subject matter itself. It can become pretty complex. Well, at least that's how it seems at first. Treatises on this topic often read like curricfilum textbooks for banking and finance. It is easy to become ensnared in a sticky web of terminology and abstractions. Only monetary professionals are motivated to master the new language, and even they often find themselves in serious disagreement. For example, in a recent letter circulated by a group of monetary experts who, for years, have conducted an ongoing exchange of ideas regarding monetary reform, the editor said: "It is frustrating that we cannot find more agreement among ourselves on this vital issue. We seem to differ so much on definitions and on, really, an unbiased, frank, honest, correct understanding of just how our current monetary system does function."

So why am I now making my own charge into the dragon's teeth? It's because I believe there is a definite change in the wind of public attitude. As the gathering economic storm draws nearer, more and more people will tune into the weather report—even if it *is* bad news. Furthermore, the evidence of the truth of this story is now so overpowering that I trust my readers will have no choice but to accept it, all questions of sanity aside. If the village idiot says the bell has fallen from the steeple and comes dragging the bell behind him, well,...

Lastly, I have discovered that this subject is not as complicated as it first appeared to be, and I am resolved to avoid the pitfall of trodding the usual convoluted path. What follows, therefore, will be the story of a crime, not a course on criminology-

It was intended that this book would be half its present size and be completed in about one year. From the beginning, however, it took on a life force of its own, and I became but a servant to its will. It refused to stay within the confines prescribed and, like the genie released from its bottle, grew to enormous size. When the job was done and it was possible to assess the entire manuscript, I was surprised to realize that *four* books had been written instead of one.

First, there is a crash course on money, the basics of banking and currency. Without that, it would be impossible to understand the fraud that now passes for acceptable practice within the banking system.

Second, there is a book on how the world's central banks—the Federal Reserve being one of them—are catalysts for war. That is what puts real fire into the subject, because it shows that we are dealing, not with mere money, but with blood, human suffering, and freedom itself.

Third, there is a history of central banking in America. That is essential to a realization that the *concept* behind the Federal Reserve was tried *three times* before in America. We need to know that and especially need to know why those institutions were eventually junked.

Finally, there is an analysis of the Federal Reserve itself and its dismal record since 1913. This is probably the least important part of all, but it is the reason we are here. It is the least important, not because the subject lacks significance, but because it has been written before by writers far more qualified and more skilled than I. As mentioned previously, however, those volumes generally have remained unread except by technical historians, and the Creature has continued to dine upon its hapless victims.

There are seven discernible threads that are woven throughout the fabric of this study. They represent the reasons for abolition of the Federal Reserve System. When stated in their purest form, without embellishment or explanation, they sound absurd to the casual observer. It is the purpose of this book, however, to show that these statements are all-too-easy to substantiate.

The Federal Reserve System should be abolished for the following reasons:

- It is incapable of accomplishing its stated objectives. (Chapter 1.)
- It is a cartel operating against the public interest. (Chapter 3.)
- It is the supreme instrument of usury. (Chapter 10.)
- It generates our most unfair tax. (Chapter 10.)
- It encourages war. (Chapter 14.)
- It destabilizes the economy. (Chapter 23.)
- It is an instrument of totalitarianism. (Chapters 5 and 26.)

This is a story about limitless money and hidden global power. The good news is that it is as fascinating as any work of fiction could be, and this, I trust, will add both pleasure and excitement to the learning process.

The bad news is that every detail of what follows is true.

G. Edward Griffin

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

A writer who steals the work of another is called a plagiarist. One who takes from the works of *many* is called a researcher. That is a roundabout way of saying I am deeply indebted to the efforts of so many who have previously grappled this topic. It is impossible to acknowledge them except in footnote and bibliography. Without the cumulative product of their efforts, it would have taken a lifetime to pull together the material you are about to read.

In addition to the historical facts, however, there are numerous concepts which, to the best of my knowledge, are not to be found in prior literature. Primary among these are the formulation of certain "natural laws" which, it seemed to me, were too important to leave buried beneath the factual data. You will easily recognize these and other editorial expressions as the singular product of my own perceptions for which no one else can be held responsible.

I would like to give special thanks to Myril Creer and Jim Toft for having first invited me to give a lecture on this subject and, thus, forcing me to delve into it at some depth; and to Herb Joiner for encouraging me, after the speech, to "take it on the road." This book is the end result of a seven-year journey that began with those first steps. Wayne C. Rickert deserves a special medal for his financial support to get the project started and for his incredible patience while it crawled toward completion. Thanks to Bill Jasper for providing copies of numerous hard-to-locate documents. Thanks, also, to Linda Perlstein and Melinda Wiman for keeping my business enterprises functioning during my preoccupation with this project. And a very personal thanks to my wife, Patricia, for putting up with my periods of long absence while completing the manuscript, for meticulous proofreading, and for a most perceptive critique of its development along the way.

Finally, I would like to acknowledge those readers of the first three printings who have assisted in the refinement of this work. Because of their efforts most of the inevitable errata have been corrected for the second edition. Even so, it would be foolhardy to think that there are no more errors within the following pages. I have tried to be meticulous with even the smallest detail, but one cannot harvest such a huge crop without dropping a few seeds. Therefore, corrections and suggestions from new readers are sincerely invited. In my supreme optimism, I would like to think that they will be incorporated into *future* editions of this book.

INTRODUCTION

The following exchange was published in the British humor magazine, *Punch,* on April 3, 1957. It is reprinted here as an appropriate introduction and as a mental exercise to limber the mind for the material contained in this book.

Q. What are banks for?

A. To make money.

Q. For the customers?

A. For the banks.

Q. Why doesn't bank advertising mention this?

A. It would not be in good taste. But it is mentioned by implication in references to reserves of $249,000,000 or thereabouts. That is the money that they have made.

Q. Out of the customers?

A. I suppose so.

Q. They also mention Assets of $500,000,000 or thereabouts. Have they made that too?

A. Not exactly. That is the money they use to make money.

Q. I see. And they keep it in a safe somewhere?

A. Not at all. They lend it to customers.

Q. Then they haven't got it?

A. No.

Q. Then how is it Assets?

A. They maintain that it would be if they got it back.

Q. But they must have some money in a safe somewhere?

A. Yes, usually $500,000,000 or thereabouts. This is called Liabilities.

Q. But if they've got it, how can they be liable for it?

A. Because it isn't theirs.

Q. Then why do they have it?

A. It has been lent to them by customers.

Q. You mean customers lend banks money?

A. In effect. They put money into their accounts, so it is really lent to the banks.

Q. And what do the banks do with it?

A. Lend it to other customers.

Q. But you said that money they lent to other people was Assets?

A. Yes.

Q. Then Assets and Liabilities must be the same thing?

A. You can't really say that.

Q. But you've just said it. If I put $100 into my account the bank is liable to have to pay it back, so it's Liabilities. But they go and lend it to someone else, and he is liable to have to pay it back, so ifs Assets. It's the same $100, isn't it?

A. Yes. But...

Q. Then it cancels out. It means, doesn't it, that banks haven't really any money at all?

A. Theoretically....

Q. Never mind theoretically. And if they haven't any money, where do they get their Reserves of $249,000,000 or thereabouts?

A. I told you. That is the money they have made.

Q. How?

A. Well, when they lend your $100 to someone they charge him interest.

Q. How much?

A. It depends on the Bank Rate. Say five and a-half per cent. That's their profit.

Q. Why isn't it my profit? Isn't it my money?

A. It's the theory of banking practice that...

Q. When I lend them my $100 why don't I charge them interest?

A. You do.

Q. You don't say. How much?

A. It depends on the Bank Rate. Say half a per cent.

Q. Grasping of me, rather?

A. But that's only if you're not going to draw the money out again.

Q. But of course, I'm going to draw it out again. If I hadn't wanted to draw it out again I could have buried it in the garden, couldn't I?

A. They wouldn't like you to draw it out again.

Q. Why not? If I keep it there you say it's a Liability. Wouldn't they be glad if I reduced their Liabilities by removing it?

A. No. Because if you remove it they can't lend it to anyone else.

Q. But if I wanted to remove it they'd have to let me?

A. Certainly.

Q. But suppose they've already lent it to another customer?

A. Then they'll let you have someone else's money.

Q. But suppose he wants his too ... and they've let me have it?

A. You're being purposely obtuse.

Q. I think I'm being acute. What if everyone wanted their money at once?

A. It's the theory of banking practice that they never would.

Q. So what banks bank on is not having to meet their commitments?

A. I wouldn't say that.

Q. Naturally. Well, if there's nothing else you think you can tell me...?

A. Quite so. Now you can go off and open a banking account.

Q. Just one last question.

A. Of course.

Q. Wouldn't I do better to go off and open up a bank?

Section I

WHAT CREATURE IS THIS?

What is the Federal Reserve System? The answer may surprise you. It is not federal and there are no reserves. Furthermore, the Federal Reserve Banks are not even banks. The key to this riddle is to be found, not at the beginning of the story, but in the middle. Since this is not a textbook, we are not confined to a chronological structure. The subject matter is not a curriculum to be mastered but a mystery to be solved. So let us start where the action is.

Chapter One

THE JOURNEY TO JEKYLL ISLAND

The secret meeting on Jekyll Island in Georgia at which the Federal Reserve was conceived; the birth of a banking cartel to protect its members from competition; the strategy of how to convince Congress and the public that this cartel was an agency of the United States government.

The New Jersey railway station was bitterly cold that night. Flurries of the year's first snow swirled around street lights. November wind rattled roof panels above the track shed and gave a long, mournful sound among the rafters.

It was approaching ten **P.M.,** and the station was nearly empty except for a few passengers scurrying to board the last Southbound of the day. The rail equipment was typical for that year of 1910, mostly chair cars that converted into sleepers with cramped upper and lower berths. For those with limited funds, coach cars were coupled to the front. They would take the brunt of the engine's noise and smoke that, somehow, always managed to seep through unseen cracks. A dining car was placed between the sections as a subtle barrier between the two classes of travelers. By today's standards, the environment was drab. Chairs and mattresses were hard. Surfaces were metal or scarred wood. Colors were dark green and gray.

In their hurry to board the train and escape the chill of the wind, few passengers noticed the activity at the far end of the platform. At a gate seldom used at this hour of the night was a spectacular sight. Nudged against the end-rail bumper was a long car that caused those few who saw it to stop and stare. Its gleaming black paint was accented with polished brass hand rails, knobs, frames, and filigrees. The shades were drawn, but through the open door, one could see mahogany paneling, velvet drapes, plush armchairs, and a well stocked bar. Porters with white serving coats were busying themselves with routine chores. And there was the distinct aroma of expensive cigars. Other cars in the station bore numbers on each end to distinguish them from their dull brothers. But numbers were not needed for this beauty. On the center of each side was a small plaque bearing but a single word: ALDRICH.

The name of Nelson Aldrich, senator from Rhode Island, was well known even in New Jersey. By 1910, he was one of the most powerful men in Washington, D.C., and his private railway car often was seen at the New York and New Jersey rail terminals during frequent trips to Wall Street. Aldrich was far more than a senator. He was considered to be the political spokesman for big business. As an investment associate of J.P. Morgan, he had extensive holdings in banking, manufacturing, and public utilities. His son-in-law was John D. Rockefeller, Jr. Sixty years later, his grandson, Nelson Aldrich Rockefeller, would become Vice-President of the United States.

When Aldrich arrived at the station, there was no doubt he was the commander of the private car. Wearing a long, fur-collared coat, a silk top hat, and carrying a silver-tipped walking stick, he strode briskly down the platform with his private secretary, Shelton, and a cluster of porters behind them hauling assorted trunks and cases.

No sooner had the Senator boarded his car when several more passengers arrived with similar collections of luggage. The last man appeared just moments before the final "aaall aboarrrd." He was carrying a shotgun case.

While Aldrich was easily recognized by most of the travelers who saw him stride through the station, the other faces were not familiar. These strangers had been instructed to arrive separately, to avoid reporters, and, should they meet inside the station, to pretend they did not know each other. After boarding the train, they had been told to use first names only so as not to reveal each other's identity. As a result of these precautions, not even the private-car porters and servants knew the names of these guests.

Back at the main gate, there was a double blast from the engine's whistle. Suddenly, the gentle sensation of motion; the excitement of a journey begun. But, no sooner had the train cleared the platform when it shuttered to a stop. Then, to everyone's surprise, it reversed direction and began moving toward the station again. Had they forgotten something? Was there a problem with the engine?

A sudden lurch and the slam of couplers gave the answer. They had picked up another car at the end of the train. Possibly the mail car? In an instant the forward motion was resumed, and all thoughts returned to the trip ahead and to the minimal comforts of the accommodations.

And so, as the passengers drifted off to sleep that night to the rhythmic clicking of steel wheels against rail, little did they dream that, riding in the car at the end of their train, were seven men who represented an estimated one-fourth of the total wealth of the entire world.

This was the roster of the Aldrich car that night:

1. Nelson W. Aldrich, Republican "whip" in the Senate, Chairman of the National Monetary Commission, business associate of J.P. Morgan, father-in-law to John D. Rockefeller, Jr.;
2. Abraham Piatt Andrew, Assistant Secretary of the United States Treasury;
3. Frank A. Vanderlip, president of the National City Bank of New York, the most powerful of the banks at that time, representing William Rockefeller and the international investment banking house of Kuhn, Loeb & Company;
4. Henry P. Davison, senior partner of the J.P. Morgan Company;
5. Charles D. Norton, president of J.P. Morgan's First National Bank of New York;
6. Benjamin Strong, head of J.P. Morgan's Bankers Trust Company; and
7. Paul M. Warburg, a partner in Kuhn, Loeb & Company, a representative of the Rothschild banking dynasty in England and France, and brother to Max Warburg who was head of the Warburg banking consortium in Germany and the Netherlands.

1. In private correspondence between the author and Andrew L. Gray, the Grand Nephew of Abraham P. Andrew, Mr. Gray claims that Strong was not in attendance. On the other hand, Frank Vanderlip—who was there—says in his memoirs that he was. How could Vanderlip be wrong? Gray's response: "He was in his late seventies when he wrote the book and the essay in question.... Perhaps the wish was father to the thought." If Vanderlip truly was in error, it was perhaps not so significant after all because, as Gray admits: "Strong would have been among those few to be let in on the secret." In the absence of further confirmation to the contrary, we are compelled to accept Vanderlip's account.

CONCENTRATION OF WEALTH

Centralization of control over financial resources was far advanced by 1910. In the United States, there were two main focal points of this control: the Morgan group and the Rockefeller group. Within each orbit was a maze of commercial banks, acceptance banks, and investment firms. In Europe, the same process had proceeded even further and had coalesced into the Rothschild group and the Warburg group. An article appeared in the *New York Times* on May 3, 1931, commenting on the death of George Baker, one of Morgan's closest associates. It said: "One-sixth of the total wealth of the world was represented by members of the Jekyll Island Club." The reference was only to those in the Morgan group, (members of the Jekyll Island Club). It did not include the Rockefeller group or the European financiers. When all of these are combined, the previous estimate that one-fourth of the world's wealth was represented by these groups is probably conservative.

In 1913, the year that the Federal Reserve Act became law, a subcommittee of the House Committee on Currency and Banking, under the chairmanship of Arsene Pujo of Louisiana, completed its investigation into the concentration of financial power in the United States. Pujo was considered to be a spokesman for the oil interests, part of the very group under investigation, and did everything possible to sabotage the hearings. In spite of his efforts, however, the final report of the committee at large was devastating:

> **Your committee is satisfied from the proofs submitted ... that there is an established and well defined identity and community of interest between a few leaders of finance ... which has resulted in great and rapidly growing concentration of the control of money and credit in the hands of these few men....**
>
> **Under our system of issuing and distributing corporate securities the investing public does not buy directly from the corporation. The securities travel from the issuing house through middlemen to the investor. It is only the great banks or bankers with access to the mainsprings of the concentrated resources made up of other people's money, in the banks, trust companies, and life insurance companies, and with control of the machinery for creating markets and distributing securities, who have had the power to underwrite or guarantee the sale of large-scale security issues. The men who through their control over the funds of our railroad and industrial companies are able to direct where such funds shall be kept, and thus to create these great reservoirs of the people's money are the ones who are in a**

> position to tap those reservoirs for the ventures in which they are interested and to prevent their being tapped for purposes which they do *not* approve....
>
> When we consider, also, in this connection that into these reservoirs of money and credit there flow a large part of the reserves of the banks of the country, that they are also the agents and correspondents of the out-of-town banks in the loaning of their surplus funds in the only public money market of the country, and that a small group of men and their partners and associates have now further strengthened their hold upon the resources of these institutions by acquiring large stock holdings therein, by representation on their boards and through valuable patronage, we begin to realize something of the extent to which this practical and effective domination and control over our greatest financial, railroad and industrial corporations has developed, largely within the past five years, and that it is fraught with peril to the welfare of the country.[1]

Such was the nature of the wealth and power represented by those seven men who gathered in secret that night and travelled in the luxury of Senator Aldrich's private car.

DESTINATION JEKYLL ISLAND

As the train neared its destination of Raleigh, North Carolina, the next afternoon, it slowed and then stopped in the switching yard just outside the station terminal. Quickly, the crew threw a switch, and the engine nudged the last car onto a siding where, just as quickly, it was uncoupled and left behind. When passengers stepped onto the platform at the terminal a few moments later, their train appeared exactly as it had been when they boarded. They could not know that their travelling companions for the night, at that very instant, were joining still another train which, within the hour, would depart Southbound once again.

The elite group of financiers was embarked on a thousand-mile journey that led them to Atlanta, then to Savannah and, finally, to the small town of Brunswick, Georgia. At first, it would seem that Brunswick was an unlikely destination. Located on the Atlantic seaboard, it was primarily a fishing village with a small but lively port for cotton and lumber. It had a population of only a few thousand people. But, by that time, the Sea Islands that sheltered the coast from South Carolina to Florida already had become popular as winter resorts for the very wealthy. One such island, just off the coast of Brunswick, had recently been purchased by J.P. Morgan and several of his business associates, and it was here that they came in the fall and winter to hunt ducks or deer and to escape the rigors of cold weather in the North. It was called Jekyll Island.

---

[1] Herman E. Krooss, ed., *Documentary History of Currency and Banking in the United States* (New York: Chelsea House, 1983), Vol. Ill, "Final Report from the Pujo Committee, February 28,1913," pp. 222-24.

When the Aldrich car was uncoupled onto a siding at the small Brunswick station, it was, indeed, conspicuous. Word travelled quickly to the office of the town's weekly newspaper. While the group was waiting to be transferred to the dock, several people from the paper approached and began asking questions. Who were Mr. Aldrich's guests? Why were they here? Was there anything special happening? Mr. Davison, who was one of the owners of Jekyll Island and who was well known to the local paper, told them that these were merely personal friends and that they had come for the simple amusement of duck hunting. Satisfied that there was no real news in the event, the reporters returned to their office.

Even after arrival at the remote island lodge, the secrecy continued. For nine days the rule for first-names-only remained in effect. Full-time caretakers and servants had been given vacation, and an entirely new, carefully screened staff was brought in for the occasion. This was done to make absolutely sure that none of the servants might recognize by sight the identities of these guests. It is difficult to imagine any event in history—including preparation for war—that was shielded from public view with greater mystery and secrecy.

The purpose of this meeting on Jekyll Island was not to hunt ducks. Simply stated, it was to come to an agreement on the structure and operation of a banking cartel. The goal of the cartel, as is true with all of them, was to maximize profits by minimizing competition between members, to make it difficult for new competitors to enter the field, and to utilize the police power of government to enforce the cartel agreement. In more specific terms, the purpose and, indeed, the actual outcome of this meeting was to create the blueprint for the Federal Reserve System.

THE STORY IS CONFIRMED

For many years after the event, educators, commentators, and historians denied that the Jekyll Island meeting ever took place. Even now, the accepted view is that the meeting was relatively unimportant, and only paranoid unsophisticates would try to make anything out of it. Ron Chernow writes: "The Jekyll Island meeting would be the fountain of a thousand conspiracy theories." Little by little, however, the story has been pieced together in amazing detail, and it has come directly or indirectly from those who actually were there. Furthermore, if what they say about their own purposes and actions does not constitute a classic conspiracy, then there is little meaning to that word.

The first leak regarding this meeting found its way into print in 1916. It appeared in *Leslie's Weekly* and was written by a young financial reporter by the name of B.C. Forbes, who later founded *Forbes Magazine*. The article was primarily in praise of Paul Warburg, and it is likely that Warburg let the story out during conversations with the writer. At any rate, the opening paragraph contained a dramatic but highly accurate summary of both the nature and purpose of the meeting:

> Picture a party of the nation's greatest bankers stealing out of New York on a private railroad car under cover of darkness, stealthily hieing hundreds of miles South, embarking on a mysterious launch, sneaking on to an island deserted by all but a few servants, living there a full week under such rigid secrecy that the names of not one of them was once mentioned lest the servants learn the identity and disclose to the world this strangest, most secret expedition in the history of American finance.
>
> I am not romancing. I am giving to the world, for the first time, the real story of how the famous Aldrich currency report, the foundation of our new currency system, was written.

In 1930, Paul Warburg wrote a massive book—1750 pages in all—entitled *The Federal Reserve System, Its Origin and Growth*. In this tome, he described the meeting and its purpose but did not mention either*its location or the names of those who attended. But he did say: "The results of the conference were entirely confidential. Even the fact there had been a meeting was not permitted to become public." Then, in a footnote he added: "Though eighteen years have since gone by, I do not feel free to give a description of

---

1. Ron Chernow, *The House of Morgan: An American Banking Dynasty and the Rise of Modern Finance* (New York: Atlantic Monthly Press, 1990), p. 129.

2. "Men Who Are Making America," by B.C. Forbes, *Leslie's Weekly,* October 19, 1916, p. 423.

this most interesting conference concerning which Senator Aldrich pledged all participants to secrecy."[1]

An interesting insight to Paul Warburg's attendance at the Jekyll Island meeting came thirty-four years later, in a book written by his son, James. James had been appointed by F.D.R. as Director of the Budget and, during World War II, as head of the Office of War Information. In his book he described how his father, who didn't know one end of a gun from the other, borrowed a shotgun from a friend and carried it with him to the train to disguise himself as a duck hunter.[2]

This part of the story was corroborated in the official biography of Senator Aldrich, written by Nathaniel Wright Stephenson:

> In the autumn of 1910, six men [in addition to Aldrich] went out to shoot ducks. That is to say, they told the world that was their purpose. Mr. Warburg, who was of the number, gives an amusing account of his feelings when he boarded a private car in Jersey City, bringing with him all the accoutrements of a duck shooter. The joke was in the fact that he had never shot a duck in his life and had no intention of shooting any.... The duck shoot was a blind.[3]

Stephenson continues with a description of the encounter at Brunswick station. He tells us that, shortly after they arrived, the station master walked into the private car and shocked them by his apparent knowledge of the identities of everyone on board. To make matters even worse, he said that a group of reporters were waiting outside. Davison took charge. "Come outside, old man," he said, "and I will tell you a story." No one claims to know what story was told standing on the railroad ties that morning, but a few moments later Davison returned with a broad smile on his face. "It's all right," he said reassuringly. "They won't give us away."

Stephenson continues: "The rest is silence. The reporters dispersed, and the secret of the strange journey was not divulged. No one asked him how he managed it and he did not volunteer the information."[4]

---

1. Paul Warburg, *The Federal Reserve System: Its Origin and Growth* (New York: Macmillan, 1930), Vol. I, p. 58. It is apparent that Warburg wrote this line two years before the book was published.
2. James Warburg, *The Long Road Home* (New York: Doubleday, 1964), p. 29.
3. Nathaniel Wright Stephenson, *Nelson W. Aldrich in American Politics* (New York: Scribners, 1930; rpt. New York: Kennikat Press, 1971), p. 373.
4. Stephenson, p. 376.

In the February 9, 1935, issue of the *Saturday Evening Post,* an article appeared written by Frank Vanderlip. In it he said:

> Despite my views about the value to society of greater publicity for the affairs of corporations, there was an occasion, near the close of 1910, when I was as secretive—indeed, as furtive—as any conspirator.... I do not feel it is any exaggeration to speak of our secret expedition to Jekyll Island as the occasion of the actual conception of what eventually became the Federal Reserve System....
>
> We were told to leave our last names behind us. We were told, further, that we should avoid dining together on the night of our departure. We were instructed to come one at a time and as unobtrusively as possible to the railroad terminal on the New Jersey littoral of the Hudson, where Senator Aldrich's private car would be in readiness, attached to the rear end of a train for the South....
>
> Once aboard the private car we began to observe the taboo that had been fixed on last names. We addressed one another as "Ben," "Paul," "Nelson," "Abe"—it is Abraham Piatt Andrew. Davison and I adopted even deeper disguises, abandoning our first names. On the theory that we were always right, he became Wilbur and I became Orville, after those two aviation pioneers, the Wright brothers....
>
> The servants and train crew may have known the identities of one or two of us, but they did not know all, and it was the names of all printed together that would have made our mysterious journey significant in Washington, in Wall Street, even in London. Discovery, we knew, simply must not happen, or else all our time and effort would be wasted. If it were to be exposed publicly that our particular group had got together and written a banking bill, that bill would have no chance whatever of passage by Congress.

THE STRUCTURE WAS PURE CARTEL

The composition of the Jekyll Island meeting was a classic example of cartel structure. A cartel is a group of independent businesses which join together to coordinate the production, pricing, or marketing of their members. The purpose of a cartel is to reduce competition and thereby increase profitability. This is accomplished through a shared monopoly over their industry which forces the public to pay higher prices for their goods or services than would be otherwise required under free-enterprise competition.

---

1. "From Farm Boy to Financier," by Frank A. Vanderlip, *The Saturday Evening Post,* Feb. 9, 1933, pp. 25, 70. The identical story was told two years later in Vanderlip's book bearing the same title as the article (New York: D. Appleton-Century Company, 1935), pp. 210-219.

Here were representatives of the world's leading banking consortia: Morgan, Rockefeller, Rothschild, Warburg, and Kuhn-Loeb. They were often competitors, and there is little doubt that there was considerable distrust between them and skillful maneuvering for favored position in any agreement. But they were driven together by one overriding desire to fight their common enemy. The enemy was competition.

In 1910, the number of banks in the United States was growing at a phenomenal rate. In fact, it had more than doubled to over twenty thousand in just the previous ten years. Furthermore, most of them were springing up in the South and West, causing the New York banks to suffer a steady decline of market share. Almost all banks in the 1880s were national banks, which means they were chartered by the federal government. Generally, they were located in the big cities, and were allowed by law to issue their own currency in the form of bank notes. Even as early as 1896, however, the number of non-national banks had grown to sixty-one per cent, and they already held fifty-four per cent of the country's total banking deposits. By 1913, when the Federal Reserve Act was passed, those numbers were seventy-one per cent non-national banks holding fifty-seven per cent of the deposits.[1] In the eyes of those duck hunters from New York, this was a trend that simply had to be reversed.

Competition also was coming from a new trend in industry to finance future growth out of profits rather than from borrowed capital. This was the outgrowth of free-market interest rates which set a realistic balance between debt and thrift. Rates were low enough to attract serious borrowers who were confident of the success of their business ventures and of their ability to repay, but they were high enough to discourage loans for frivolous ventures or those for which there were alternative sources of funding—for example, one's own capital. That balance between debt and thrift was the result of a limited money supply. Banks could create loans in excess of their actual deposits, as we shall see, but there was a *limit* to that process. And that limit was ultimately determined by the supply of gold they held. Consequently, between 1900 and 1910, seventy per cent of the funding for American corporate growth was generated internally, making industry increasingly independent of the banks.[1] Even the federal government was becoming thrifty. It had a growing stockpile of gold, was systematically redeeming the Greenbacks—which had been issued during the Civil War—and was rapidly reducing the national debt.

---

[1] **See Gabriel Kolko, *The Triumph of Conservatism* (New York The Free Press of Glencoe, a division of the Macmillan Co., 1963), p. 140.**

Here was another trend that had to be halted. What the bankers wanted—and what many businessmen wanted also—was to intervene in the free market and tip the balance of interest rates downward, to favor debt over thrift. To accomplish this, the money supply simply had to be disconnected from gold and made more plentiful or, as they described it, more *elastic*.

THE SPECTER OF BANK FAILURE

The greatest threat, however, came, not from rivals or private capital formation, but from the public at large in the form of what bankers call a *run on the bank*. This is because, when banks accept a customer's deposit, they give in return a "balance" in his account. This is the equivalent of a promise to pay back the deposit anytime he wants. Likewise, when another customer *borrows* money from the bank, he *also* is given an account balance which usually is withdrawn immediately to satisfy the purpose of the loan. This creates a ticking time bomb because, at that point, the bank has issued more promises to "pay-on-demand" than it has money in the vault. Even though the depositing customer thinks he can get his money any time he wants, in reality it has been given to the *borrowing* customer and no longer is available at the bank.

The problem is compounded further by the fact that banks are allowed to loan even more money than they have received in deposit. The mechanism for accomplishing this seemingly impossible feat will be described in a later chapter, but it is a fact of modern banking that promises-to-pay often exceed savings deposits by a factor of ten-to-one. And, because only about three per cent of these accounts are actually retained in the vault in the form of cash—the rest having been put into even more loans and investments—the bank's promises exceed its ability to *keep* those promises by a factor of over three hundred-to-one.[2] As long as only a small percentage of depositors request their money at one time, no one is the wiser. But if public confidence is shaken, and if more than a few per cent attempt to withdraw their funds, the scheme is finally exposed. The bank cannot keep all its promises and is forced to close its doors. Bankruptcy usually follows in due course.

---

[1] **William Greider, *Secrets of the Temple* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1987), p. 274,275. Also Kolko, p. 145.**

[2] **Another way of putting it is that their reserves are underfunded by over 33,333% (10-to-l divided by .03 = 333.333-to-l. That divided by .01 = 33,333%.)**

CURRENCY DRAINS

The same result could happen—and, prior to the Federal Reserve System, often did happen—even without depositors making a run on the bank. Instead of withdrawing their funds at the teller's window, they simply wrote checks to purchase goods or services. People receiving those checks took them to a bank for deposit. If that bank happened to be the same one from which the check was drawn, then all was well, because it was not necessary to remove any real money from the vault. But if the holder of the check took it to *another* bank, it was quickly passed back to the issuing bank and settlement was demanded *between banks*.

This is not a one-way street, however. While the Downtown Bank is demanding payment from the Uptown Bank, the Uptown Bank is also clearing checks and demanding payment from the Downtown bank. As long as the money flow in both directions is equal, then everything can be handled with simple bookkeeping. But if the flow is not equal, then one of the banks will have to actually send money to the other to make up the difference. If the amount of money required exceeds a few percentage points of the bank's total deposits, the result is the same as a run on the bank *by depositors*. This demand of money by other banks rather than by depositors is called a *currency drain*.

In 1910, the most common cause of a bank having to declare bankruptcy due to a currency drain was that it followed a loan policy that was more reckless than that of its competitors. More money was demanded from it because more money was *loaned* by it. It was dangerous enough to loan ninety per cent of their customers' savings (keeping only one dollar in reserve out of every ten), but that had proven to be adequate *most* of the time. Some banks, however, were tempted to walk even closer to the precipice. They pushed the ratio to ninety-too per cent, *ninety-five* per cent, *ninety-nine* per cent. After all, the way a bank makes money is to collect interest, and the only way to do that is to make *loans*. The more loans, the better. And, so, there was a practice among some of the more reckless banks to "loan up," as they call it. Which was another way of saying to push *down* their reserve ratios.

A BANKERS' UTOPIA

If all banks could be forced to issue loans in the same ratio to their reserves as other banks did, then, regardless of how small that ratio was, the amount of checks to be cleared between them would balance in the long run. No major currency drains would ever occur. The entire banking industry might collapse under such a system, but not *individual* banks—at least not those that were part of the cartel. All would walk the same distance from the edge, regardless of how close it was. Under such uniformity, no individual bank could be blamed for failure to meet its obligations. The blame could be shifted, instead, to the "economy" or "government policy" or "interest rates" or "trade deficits" or the "exchange-value of the dollar" or even to the "capitalist system" itself.

But, in 1910, such a bankers' **Utopia** had not yet been created. If the Downtown bank began to loan at a greater ratio to its reserves than its competitors, the amount of checks which would come back to it for payment also would be greater. Thus, the bank which pursued a more reckless lending policy had to draw *against* its reserves in order to make payments to the more conservative banks and, when those funds were exhausted, it usually was forced into bankruptcy.

Historian John Klein tells us that "The financial panics of 1873, 1884,1893, and 1907 were in large part an outgrowth of ... reserve pyramiding and excessive deposit creation by reserve city ... banks. These panics were triggered by the currency drains that took place in periods of relative prosperity when banks were loaned up."[1] In other words, the "panics" and resulting bank failures were caused, not by negative factors in the economy, but by *currency drains* on the banks which were *loaned up* to the point where they had practically no reserves at all. The banks did not fail because the system was weak. The system failed because the banks were weak.

This was another common problem that brought these seven men over a thousand miles to a tiny island off the shore of Georgia. Each was a potentially fierce competitor, but uppermost in their minds were the so-called panics and the very real 1,748 bank

---

[1] See Vera C. Smith, *The Rationale of Central Banking* (London: P.S. King & Son, 1936), p. 36.

failures of the preceding two decades. Somehow, they had to join forces. A method had to be devised to enable them to continue to make more promises to pay-on-demand than they could keep. To do this, they had to find a way to force all banks to walk the *same* distance from the edge, and, when the inevitable disasters happened, to shift public blame away from themselves. By making it appear to be a problem of the national economy rather than of private banking practice, the door then could be opened for the use of tax money rather than their own funds for paying off the losses.

Here, then, were the main challenges that faced that tiny but powerful group assembled on Jekyll Island:

1. How to stop the growing influence of small, rival banks and to insure that control over the nation's financial resources would remain in the hands of those present;
2. How to make the money supply more elastic in order to reverse the trend of private capital formation and to recapture the industrial loan market;
3. How to pool the meager reserves of the nation's banks into one large reserve so that all banks will be motivated to follow the same loan-to-deposit ratios. This would protect at least some of them from currency drains and bank runs;
4. Should this lead eventually to the collapse of the whole banking system, then how to shift the losses from the owners of the banks to the taxpayers.

THE CARTEL ADOPTS A NAME

Everyone knew that the solution to all these problems was a cartel mechanism that had been devised and already put into similar operation in Europe. As with all cartels, it had to be created by legislation and sustained by the power of government under the deception of protecting the consumer. The most important task before them, therefore, can be stated as objective number five:

5. How to convince Congress that the scheme was a measure to protect the public.

The task was a delicate one. The American people did not like the concept of a cartel. The idea of business enterprises joining together to fix prices and prevent competition was alien to the free-enterprise system. It could never be sold to the voters. But, if the word cartel was not used, if the venture could be described with words which are emotionally neutral—perhaps even alluring—then half the battle would be won.

The first decision, therefore, was to follow the practice adopted in Europe. Henceforth, the cartel would operate as a *central bank*. And even that was to be but a generic expression. For purposes of public relations and legislation, they would devise a name that would avoid the word *bank* altogether and which would conjure the image of the federal government itself. Furthermore, to create the impression that there would be no concentration of power, they would establish regional branches of the cartel and make that a main selling point. Stephenson tells us: "Aldrich entered this discussion at Jekyll Island an ardent convert to the idea of a central bank. His desire was to transplant the system of one of the ^reat European banks, say the Bank of England, bodily to America." But political expediency required that such plans be concealed from the public. As John Kenneth Galbraith explained it: "It was his [Aldrich's] thought to outflank the opposition by having not one central bank but many. And the word bank would itself be avoided."[2]

With the exception of Aldrich, all of those present were bankers, but only one was an expert on the European model of a central bank. Because of this knowledge, Paul Warburg became the dominant and guiding mind throughout all of the discussions. Even a casual perusal of the literature on the creation of the Federal Reserve System is sufficient to find that he was, indeed, the cartel's mastermind. Galbraith says "... Warburg has, with some justice, been called the father of the system."[3] Professor Edwin Seligman, a member of the international banking family of J. & W. Seligman, and head of the Department of Economics at Columbia University, writes that "... in its fundamental features, the Federal Reserve Act is the work of Mr. Warburg more than any other man in the country."[4]

1. Stephenson, p. 378.

2. John Kenneth Galbraith, *Money: Whence It Came, Where It Went* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1975), p. 122.

3- Galbraith, p. 123.

4. The Academy of Political Science, *Proceedings,* 1914, Vol. 4, No. 4, p. 387.

THE REAL DADDY WARBUCKS

Paul Moritz Warburg was a leading member of the investment banking firm of M.M. Warburg & Company of Hamburg, Germany, and Amsterdam, the Netherlands. He had come to the United States only nine years previously. Soon after arrival, however, and with funding provided mostly by the Rothschild group, he and his brother, Felix, had been able to buy partnerships in the New York investment banking firm of Kuhn, Loeb & Company, while continuing as partners in Warburg of Hamburg.[1] Within twenty years, Paul would become one of the wealthiest men in America with an unchallenged domination over the country's railroad system.

At this distance in history, it is difficult to appreciate the importance of this man. But some understanding may be had from the fact that the legendary character, Daddy Warbucks, in the comic strip *Little Orphan Annie,* was a contemporary commentary on the presumed benevolence of Paul Warburg, and the almost magic ability to accomplish good through the power of his unlimited wealth.

A third brother, Max Warburg, was the financial adviser of the Kaiser and became Director of the *Reichsbank* in Germany. This was, of course, a *central bank,* and it was one of the cartel models used in the construction of the Federal Reserve System. The *Reichsbank,* incidentally, a few years later would create the massive hyperinflation that occurred in Germany, wiping out the middle class and the entire German economy as well.

Paul Warburg soon became well known on Wall Street as a persuasive advocate for a central bank in America. Three years before the Jekyll Island meeting, he had published several pamphlets. One was entitled *Defects and Needs of Our Banking System,* and the other was *A Plan for A Modified Central Bank.* These attracted wide attention in both financial and academic circles and set the intellectual climate for all future discussions regarding banking legislation. In these treatises, Warburg complained that the American monetary system was crippled by its dependency on gold and government bonds, both of which were in limited supply. What America needed, he argued, was an *elastic* money supply that could be expanded and contracted to accommodate the fluctuating needs of commerce. The solution, he said, was to follow the German example whereby banks could create currency solely on the basis of "commercial paper," which is banker language for I.O.U.s from corporations.

---

[1] **Anthony Sutton,** ***Wall Street and FDR (New Rochelle, New York: Arlington House, 1975), p. 92.***

Warburg was tireless in his efforts. He was a featured speaker before scores of influential audiences and wrote a steady stream of published articles on the subject. In March of that year, for example, *The New York Times* published an eleven-part series written by Warburg explaining and expounding what he called the Reserve Bank of the United States.[1]

THE MESSAGE WAS PLAIN FOR THOSE WHO UNDERSTOOD

Most of Warburg's writing and lecturing on this topic was eyewash for the public. To cover the fact that a central bank is merely a cartel which has been legalized, its proponents had to lay down a thick smoke screen of technical jargon focusing always on how it would supposedly benefit commerce, the public, and the nation; how it would lower interest rates, provide funding for needed industrial projects, and prevent panics in the economy. There was not the slightest glimmer that, underneath it all, was a master plan which was designed from top to bottom to serve private interests at the expense of the public.

This was, nevertheless, the cold reality, and the more perceptive bankers were well aware of it. In an address before the American Bankers Association the following year, Aldrich laid it out for anyone who was really listening to the meaning of his words. He said: "The organization proposed is not a bank, but a cooperative union of all the banks of the country for definite purposes."[2] Precisely. A *union* of banks.

Two years later, in a speech before that same group of bankers, A. Barton Hepburn of Chase National Bank was even more candid. He said: "The measure recognizes and adopts the principles of a central bank. Indeed, if it works out as the sponsors of the law hope, it will make all incorporated banks together joint owners of a central dominating power." And that is about as good a definition of a cartel as one is likely to find.

---

[1] See J. Lawrence Laughlin, *The Federal Reserve Act: Its Origin and Problems* (New York: Macmillan, 1933), p. 9.

[2] The full text of the speech is reprinted by Herman E. Krooss and Paul A. Samuelson, Vol. 3, p. 1202.

In 1914, one year after the Federal Reserve Act was passed into law, Senator Aldrich could afford to be less guarded in his remarks. In an article published in July of that year in a magazine called *The Independent,* he boasted: "Before the passage of this Act, the New York bankers could only dominate the reserves of New York. Now we are able to dominate the bank reserves of the entire country."

MYTH ACCEPTED AS HISTORY

The accepted version of history is that the Federal Reserve was created to stabilize our economy. One of the most widely-used textbooks on this subject says: "It sprang from the panic of 1907, with its alarming epidemic of bank failures: the country was fed up once and for all with the anarchy of unstable private banking." Even the most naive student must sense a grave contradiction between this cherished view and the System's actual performance. Since its inception, it has presided over the crashes of 1921 and 1929; the Great Depression of '29 to '39; recessions in '53, '57, '69, '75, and '81; a stock market "Black Monday" in '87; and a 1000% inflation which has destroyed 90% of the dollar's purchasing power.[3]

Let us be more specific on that last point. By 1990, an annual income of $10,000 was required to buy what took only $1,000 in 1914. That incredible loss in value was quietly transferred to the federal government in the form of hidden taxation, and the Federal Reserve System was the mechanism by which it was accomplished.

Actions have consequences. The consequences of wealth confiscation by the Federal-Reserve mechanism are now upon us. In the current decade, corporate debt is soaring; personal debt is greater than ever; both business and personal bankruptcies are at an all-time high; banks and savings and loan associations are failing in

---

1. Quoted by Kolko, *Triumph,* p. 235.
2. Paul A. Samuelson, *Economics,* 8th ed. (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1970), p. 272.
3. See "Money, Banking, and Biblical Ethics," by Ronald H. Nash, *Durell Journal of Money and Banking,* February, 1990.
4. When one considers that the income tax had just been introduced in 1913 and that such low figures were completely exempt, an income at that time of $1,000 actually was the equivalent of earning $15,400 now, before paying 35% taxes. When the amount now taken by state and local governments is added to the total bite, the figure is close to $20,000.

larger numbers than ever before; interest on the national debt is consuming half of our tax dollars; heavy industry has been largely replaced by overseas competitors; we are facing an international trade deficit for the first time in our history; 75% of downtown Los Angeles and other metropolitan areas is now owned by foreigners; and over half of our nation is in a state of economic recession.

FIRST REASON TO ABOLISH THE SYSTEM

That is the scorecard eighty years after the Federal Reserve was created supposedly to stabilize our economy! There can be no argument that the System has failed in its stated objectives. Furthermore, after all this time, after repeated changes in personnel, after operating under both political parties, after numerous experiments in monetary philosophy, after almost a hundred revisions to its charter, and after the development of countless new formulas and techniques, there has been more than ample opportunity to work out mere procedural flaws. It is not unreasonable to conclude, therefore, that the System has failed, not because it needs a new set of rules or more intelligent directors, but because *it is incapable of achieving its stated objectives.*

If an institution is incapable of achieving its objectives, there is no reason to preserve it—unless it can be altered in some way to change its capability. That leads to the question: *why* is the System incapable of achieving its stated objectives? The painful answer is: *those were never its true objectives.* When one realizes the circumstances under which it was created, when one contemplates the identities of those who authored it, and when one studies its actual performance over the years, it becomes obvious that the System is merely a cartel with a government facade. There is no doubt that those who run it are motivated to maintain full employment, high productivity, low inflation, and a generally sound economy. They are not interested in killing the goose that lays such beautiful golden eggs. But, when there is a conflict between the public interest and the private needs of the cartel—a conflict that arises almost daily—the public will be sacrificed. That is the nature of the beast. It is foolish to expect a cartel to act in any other way.

This view is not encouraged by Establishment institutions and publishers. It has become their apparent mission to convince the American people that the system is not *intrinsically* flawed. It merely has been in the hands of bumbling oafs. For example, William Greider was a former Assistant Managing Editor for *The Washington Post*. His book, *Secrets of The Temple,* was published in 1987 by Simon and Schuster. It was critical of the Federal Reserve because of its failures, but, according to Greider, these were not caused by any defect in the System itself, but merely because the economic factors are "sooo complicated" that the good men who have struggled to make the System work have just not yet been able to figure it all out. But, don't worry, folks, they're *working* on it! That is exactly the kind of powder-puff criticism which is acceptable in our mainstream media. Yet, Greider's own research points to an entirely different interpretation. Speaking of the System's origin, he says:

> As new companies prospered without Wall Street, so did the hew regional banks that handled their funds. New York's concentrated share of bank deposits was still huge, about half the nation's total, but it was declining steadily. Wall Street was still "the biggest kid on the block," but less and less able to bully the others.
>
> This trend was a crucial fact of history, a misunderstood reality that completely alters the political meaning of the reform legislation that created the Federal Reserve. At the time, the conventional wisdom in Congress, widely shared and sincerely espoused by Progressive reformers, was that a government institution would finally harness the "money trust," disarm its powers, and establish broad democratic control over money and credit.... The results were nearly the opposite. The money reforms enacted in 1913, in fact, helped to preserve the status quo, to stabilize the old order. Money-center bankers would not only gain dominance over the new central bank, but would also enjoy new insulation against instability and their own decline. Once the Fed was in operation, the steady diffusion of financial power halted. Wall Street maintained its dominant position—and even enhanced it.[1]

Anthony Sutton, former Research Fellow at the Hoover Institution for War, Revolution and Peace, and also Professor of Economics at California State University, Los Angeles, provides a somewhat deeper analysis. He writes:

> Warburg's revolutionary plan to get American Society to go to work for Wall Street was astonishingly simple. Even today,... academic theoreticians cover their blackboards with meaningless equations, and the general public struggles in bewildered confusion with inflation and the coming credit collapse, while the quite simple explanation of

---

[1] Greider, p. 275.

> the problem goes undiscussed and almost entirely uncomprehended. The Federal Reserve System is a legal private monopoly of the money supply operated for the benefit of the few under the guise of protecting and promoting the public interest.

The real significance of the journey to Jekyll Island and the creature that was hatched there was inadvertently summarized by the words of Paul Warburg's admiring biographer, Harold Kellock:

> Paul M. Warburg is probably the mildest-mannered man that ever personally conducted a revolution. It was a bloodless revolution: he did not attempt to rouse the populace to arms. He stepped forth armed simply with an idea. And he conquered. That's the amazing thing. A shy, sensitive man, he imposed his idea on a nation of a hundred million people.[2]

SUMMARY

The basic plan for the Federal Reserve System was drafted at a secret meeting held in November of 1910 at the private resort of J.P. Morgan on Jekyll Island off the coast of Georgia. Those who attended represented the great financial institutions of Wall Street and, indirectly, Europe as well. The reason for secrecy was simple. Had it been known that rival factions of the banking community had joined together, the public would have been alerted to the possibility that the bankers were plotting an agreement in restraint of trade—which, of course, is exactly what they were doing. What emerged was a cartel agreement with five objectives: stop the growing competition from the nation's newer banks; obtain a franchise to create money out of nothing for the purpose of lending; get control of the reserves of all banks so that the more reckless ones would not be exposed to currency drains and bank runs; get the taxpayer to pick up the cartel's inevitable losses; and convince Congress that the purpose was to protect the public. It was realized that the bankers would have to become partners with the politicians and that the structure of the cartel would have to be a central bank. The record shows that the Fed has failed to achieve its stated objectives. That is because those were never its true goals. As a banking cartel, and in terms of the five objectives stated above, it has been an unqualified success.

---

1. Sutton, *Wall Street and F.D.R.,* p. 94.
2. Harold Kellock, "Warburg, the Revolutionist," *The Century Magazine,* May 1915, p. 79.

Nelson W. Aldrich

Jekyll Island Museum

Henry P. Davison (L) and Charles D. Norton (R)

UPI/Bettmann

Abraham Piatt Andrew

Jekyll Island Museum

The seven men who attended the secret meetining on Jekyl Island, where the Federal Reserve System was conceived, represented an estimated one-fourth of the total wealth of th entire world. They were:

1. Nelson W. Aldrich, Republican "whip" in the Senate, Chairman of the National Monetary Commission, father-in-law to John D. Rockefeller, Jr.;
2. Henry P. Davison, Sr. Partner of J.P. Morgan Company;
3. Charles D. Norton, Pres. of 1st National Bank of New Yo
4. A. Piatt Andrew, Assistant Secretary of the Treasury;
5. Frank A. Vanderlip, President of the National City Bank o New York, representing William Rockefeller.
6. Benjamin Strong, head of J.P. Morgan's Bankers Trust Company, later to become head of the System;
7. Paul M. Warburg, a partner in Kuhn, Loeb & Company, representing the Rothschilds and Warburgs in Europe.

Frank A. Vanderlip

Jekyll Island Museum

Benjamin Strong

UPI/Bettmann

Paul M. Warburg

Jekyll Island Museum

Chapter Two

THE NAME OF THE GAME IS BAILOUT

The analogy of a spectator sporting event as a means of explaining the rules by which taxpayers are required to pick up the cost of bailing out the banks when their loans go sour.

It was stated in the previous chapter that the Jekyll Island group which conceived the Federal Reserve System actually created a national cartel which was dominated by the larger banks. It was also stated that a primary objective of that cartel was to involve the federal government as an agent for shifting the inevitable losses from the owners of those banks to the taxpayers. That, of course, is one of the more controversial assertions made in this book. Yet, there is little room for any other interpretation when one confronts the massive evidence of history since the System was created. Let us, therefore, take another leap through time. Having jumped to the year 1910 to begin this story, let us now return to the present era.

To understand how banking losses are shifted to the taxpayers, it is first necessary to know a little bit about how the scheme was designed to work. There are certain procedures and formulas which must be understood or else the entire process seems like chaos. It is as though we had been isolated all our lives on a South Sea island with no knowledge of the outside world. Imagine what it would then be like the first time we travelled to the mainland and witnessed a game of professional football. We would stare with incredulity at men dressed like aliens from another planet; throwing their bodies against each other; tossing a funny shaped object back and forth; fighting over it as though it were of great value, yet, occasionally kicking it out of the area as though it were worthless and despised; chasing each other, knocking each other to the ground and then walking away to regroup for another surge; all this with tens of thousand of spectators riotously shouting in unison for no apparent reason at all. Without a basic understanding that this was a game and without knowledge of the rules of that game, the event would appear as total chaos and universal madness.

The operation of our monetary system through the Federal Reserve has much in common with professional football. First, there are certain plays that are repeated over and over again with only minor variations to suit the special circumstances. Second, there are definite rules which the players follow with great precision. Third, there is a clear objective to the game which is uppermost in the minds of the players. And fourth, if the spectators are not familiar with that objective and if they do not understand the rules, they will never comprehend what is going on. Which, as far as monetary matters is concerned, is the common state of the vast majority of Americans today.

Let us, therefore, attempt to spell out in plain language what that objective is and how the players expect to achieve it. To demystify the process, we shall present an overview first. After the concepts are clarified, we then shall follow up with actual examples taken from the recent past.

The name of the game is *Bailout*. As stated previously, the objective of this game is to shift the inevitable losses from the owners of the larger banks to the taxpayers. The procedure by which this is accomplished is as follows:

RULES OF THE GAME

The game begins when the Federal Reserve System allows commercial banks to create checkbook money out of nothing. (Details regarding how this incredible feat is accomplished are given in chapter ten entitled The Mandrake Mechanism.) The banks derive profit from this easy money, not by spending it, but by lending it to others and collecting interest.

When such a loan is placed on the bank's books it is shown as an asset because it is earning interest and, presumably, someday will be paid back. At the same time an equal entry is mad.? on the liability side of the ledger. That is because the newly created checkbook money now is in circulation, and most of it will end up in other banks which will return the canceled checks to the issuing bank for payment. Individuals may also bring some of this checkbook money back to the bank and request cash. The issuing bank, therefore, has a potential money pay-out liability equal to the amount of the loan asset.

When a borrower cannot repay and there are no assets which can be taken to compensate, the bank must write off that loan as a loss. However, since most of the money originally was created out of nothing and cost the bank nothing except bookkeeping overhead, there is little of tangible value that is actual lost. It is primarily a bookkeeping entry.

A bookkeeping loss can still be undesirable to a bank because it causes the loan to be removed from the ledger as an asset without a reduction in liabilities. The difference must come from the equity of those who own the bank. In other words, the loan asset is removed, but the money liability remains. The original checkbook money is still circulating out there even though the borrower cannot repay, and the issuing bank still has the obligation to redeem those checks. The only way to do this and balance the books once again is to draw upon the capital which was invested by the bank's stockholders or to deduct the loss from the bank's current profits. In either case, the owners of the bank lose an amount equal to the value of the defaulted loan. So, to *them,* the loss becomes very real. If the bank is forced to write off a large amount of bad loans, the amount could exceed the entire value of the owners' equity. When that happens, the game is over, and the bank is insolvent.

This concern would be sufficient to motivate most bankers to be very conservative in their loan policy, and in fact most of them do act with great caution when dealing with individuals and small businesses. But the Federal Reserve System, the Federal Deposit Insurance Corporation, and the Federal Deposit Loan Corporation now guarantee that massive loans made to large corporations and to other governments will not be allowed to fall entirely upon the bank's owners should those loans go into default. This is done under the argument that, if these corporations or banks are allowed to fail, the nation would suffer from vast unemployment and economic disruption. More on that in a moment.

THE PERPETUAL-DEBT PLAY

The end result of this policy is that the banks have little motive to be cautious and are protected against the effect of their own folly. The larger the loan, the better it is, because it will produce the greatest amount of profit with the least amount of effort. A single loan to a third-world country netting hundreds of millions of dollars in annual interest is just as easy to process—if not easier—than a loan for $50,000 to a local merchant on the shopping mall. If the interest is paid, it's gravy time. If the loan defaults, the federal government will "protect the public" and, through various mechanisms described shortly, will make sure that the banks continue to receive their interest.

The individual and the small businessman find it increasingly difficult to borrow money at reasonable rates, because the banks can make more money on loans to the corporate giants and to foreign governments. Also, the bigger loans are safer for the banks, because the government will make them good even if they default. There are no such guarantees for the small loans. The public will not swallow the line that bailing out the little guy is necessary to save the system. The dollar amounts are too small. Only when the figures become mind-boggling does the ploy become plausible.

It is important to remember that banks do not really want to have their loans repaid, except as evidence of the dependability of the borrower. They make a profit from interest *on* the loan, not repayment *of* the loan. If a loan is paid off, the bank merely has to find another borrower, and that can be an expensive nuisance. It is much better to have the existing borrower pay only the interest and *never* make payments on the loan itself. That process is called rolling over the debt. One of the reasons banks prefer to lend to governments is that they do not expect those loans ever to be repaid. When Walter Wriston was chairman of the Citicorp Bank in 1982, he extolled the virtue of the action this way:

> **If we had a truth-in-Government act comparable to the truth-in-advertising law, every note issued by the Treasury would be obliged to include a sentence stating: "This note will be redeemed with the proceeds from an identical note which will be sold to the public when this one comes due."**

When this activity is carried out in the United States, as it is weekly, it is described as a Treasury bill auction. But when basically the same process is conducted abroad in a foreign language, our news media usually speak of a country's "rolling over its debts." The perception remains that some form of disaster is inevitable. It is not.

To see why, it is only necessary to understand the basic facts of government borrowing. The first is that there are few recorded instances in history of government—any government—actually getting out of debt. Certainly in an era of $100-billion deficits, no one lending money to our Government by buying a Treasury bill expects that it will be paid at maturity in any way except by our Government's selling a new bill of like amount.

THE DEBT ROLL-OVER PLAY

Since the system makes it profitable for banks to make large, unsound loans, that is the kind of loans which banks will make. Furthermore, it is predictable that most unsound loans eventually will go into default. When the borrower finally declares that he cannot pay, the bank responds by rolling over the loan. This often is stage managed to appear as a concession on the part of the bank but, in reality, it is a significant forward move toward the objective of perpetual interest.

Eventually the borrower comes to the point where he can no longer pay even the interest. Now the play becomes more complex. The bank does not want to lose the interest, because that is its stream of income. But it cannot afford to allow the borrower to go into default either, because that would require a write-off which, in turn, could wipe out the owners' equity and put the bank out of business. So the bank's next move is to create additional money out of nothing and lend *that* to the borrower so he will have enough to *continue paying the interest,* which by now must be paid on the original loan plus the additional loan as well. What looked like certain disaster suddenly is converted by a brilliant play into a major score. This not only maintains the old loan on the books as an asset, it actually increases the apparent size of that asset and also results in higher interest payments, thus, greater profit to the bank.

THE UP-THE-ANTE PLAY

Sooner or later, the borrower becomes restless. He is not interested in making interest payments with nothing left for himself. He comes to realize that he is merely working for the bank and, once again, interest payments stop. The opposing teams go into a huddle to plan the next move, then rush to the scrimmage

---

1 - "Banking Against Disaster," by Walter B. Wriston, *The New York Times,* September 14,1982.

line where they hurl threatening innuendoes at each other. The borrower simply cannot, will not pay. Collect if you can. The lender threatens to blackball the borrower, to see to it that he will never again be able to obtain a loan. Finally, a "compromise" is worked out. As before, the bank agrees to create still *more* money out of nothing and lend *that* to the borrower to cover the interest on both of the previous loans but, this time, they up the ante to provide still *additional* money for the borrower to spend on something *other* than interest. That is a perfect score. The borrower suddenly has a fresh supply of money for *his* purposes plus enough to keep making those bothersome interest payments. The bank, on the other hand, now has still *larger* assets, *higher* interest income, and *greater* profits. What an exciting game!

THE RESCHEDULING PLAY

The previous plays can be repeated several times until the reality finally dawns on the borrower that he is sinking deeper and deeper into the debt pit with no prospects of climbing out. This realization usually comes when the interest payments become so large they represent almost as much as the entire corporate earnings or the country's total tax base. This time around, roll-overs with larger loans are rejected, and default seems inevitable.

But wait. What's this? The players are back at the scrimmage line. There is a great confrontation. Referees are called in. Two shrill blasts from the horn tell us a score has been made for *both* sides. A voice over the public address system announces: "This loan has been *rescheduled*."

Rescheduling usually means a combination of a lower interest rate and a longer period for repayment. The effect is primarily cosmetic. It reduces the monthly payment but extends the period further into the future. This makes the current burden to the borrower a little easier to carry, but it also makes repayment of the capital even more unlikely. It postpones the day of reckoning but, in the meantime, you guessed it: The loan remains as an asset, and the interest payments continue.

THE PROTECT-THE-PUBLIC PLAY

Eventually the day of reckoning arrives. The borrower realizes he can *never* repay the capital and flatly refuses to pay interest on it. It is time for the Final Maneuver.

According to the *Banking Safety Digest,* which specializes in rating the safety of America's banks and S&Ls, most of the banks involved with "problem loans" are quite profitable businesses:

> **Note that, *except for third-world loans,* most of the large banks in the country are operating quite profitably. In contrast with the continually-worsening S&L crisis, the banks' profitability has been the engine with which they have been working off (albeit slowly) their overseas debt.... At last year's profitability levels, the banking industry could, in theory, "buy out" the entirety of their own Latin American loans within two years.**[1]

The banks *can* absorb the losses of their bad loans to multinational corporations and foreign governments, but that is not according to the rules. It would be a major loss to the stockholders who would receive little or no dividends during the adjustment period, and any chief executive officer who embarked upon such a course would soon be looking for a new job. That this is not part of the game plan is evident by the fact that, while a small portion of the Latin American debt has been absorbed, the banks are continuing to make gigantic loans to governments in other parts of the world, particularly Africa, Red China, and Eastern European nations. For reasons which will be analyzed in chapter four, there is little hope that the performance of these loans will be different than those in Latin America. But the most important reason for not absorbing the losses is that there is a standard play that can still breathe life back into those dead loans and reactivate the bountiful income stream that flows from them.

Here's how it works. The captains of both teams approach the referee and the Game Commissioner to request that the game be extended. The reason given is that this is in the interest of the public, the spectators who are having such a wonderful time and who will be sad to see the game ended. They request also that, while the spectators are in the stadium enjoying themselves, the parking-lot attendants be ordered to quietly remove the hub caps from every car. These can be sold to provide money for additional salaries for all the players, including the referee and, of course, the Commissioner himself. That is only fair since they are now

---

1. "Overseas Lending ... Trigger for A Severe Depression?" *The Banking Safety Digest* (U.S. Business Publishing/Veribanc, Wakefield, Massachusetts), August, 1989, p. 3.

working overtime for the benefit of the spectators. When the deal is finally struck, the horn will blow three times, and a roar of joyous relief will sweep across the stadium.

In a somewhat less recognizable form, the same play may look like this: The president of the lending bank and the finance officer of the defaulting corporation or government will join together and approach Congress. They will explain that the borrower has exhausted his ability to service the loan and, without assistance from the federal government, there will be dire consequences for the American people. Not only will there be unemployment and hardship at home, there will be massive disruptions in world markets. And, since we are now so dependent on those markets, our exports will drop, foreign capital will dry up, and we will suffer greatly. What is needed, they will say, is for Congress to provide money to the borrower, either directly or indirectly, to allow him to continue to pay interest on the loan and to initiate new spending programs which will be so profitable he will soon be able to pay everyone back.

As part of the proposal, the borrower will agree to accept the direction of a third-party referee in adopting an austerity program to make sure that none of the new money is wasted. The bank also will agree to write off a small part of the loan as a gesture of its willingness to share the burden. This move, of course, will have been foreseen from the very beginning of the game, and is a small step backward to achieve a giant stride forward. After all, the amount to be lost through the write-off was created out of nothing in the first place and, without this Final Maneuver, the *entirety* would be written off. Furthermore, this modest write down is dwarfed by the amount to be gained through restoration of the income stream.

THE GUARANTEED-PAYMENT PLAY

One of the standard variations of the Final Maneuver is for the government, not always to directly provide the funds, but to provide the *credit* for the funds. That means to *guarantee* future payments should the borrower again default. Once Congress agrees to this, the government becomes a co-signer to the loan, and the inevitable losses are finally lifted from the ledger of the bank and placed onto the backs of the American taxpayer.

Money now begins to move into the banks through a complex system of federal agencies, international agencies, foreign aid, and direct subsidies. All of these mechanisms extract payments from the American people and channel them to the deadbeat borrowers who then send them to the banks to service their loans. Very little of this money actually comes from taxes. Almost all of it is generated by the Federal Reserve System. When this newly created money returns to the banks, it quickly moves out again into the economy where it mingles with and dilutes the value of the money already there. The result is the appearance of rising prices but which, in reality, is a lowering of the value of the dollar.

The American people have no idea they are paying the bill. They know that *someone* is stealing their hub caps, but they think it is the greedy businessman who raises prices or the selfish laborer who demands higher wages or the unworthy farmer who demands too much for his crop or the wealthy foreigner who bids up our prices. They do not realize that these groups *also* are victimized by a monetary system which is constantly being eroded in value by and through the Federal Reserve System.

Public ignorance of how the game is really played was dramatically displayed during a recent Phil Donahue TV show. The topic was the Savings and Loan crisis and the billions of dollars that it would cost the taxpayer. A man from the audience rose and asked angrily: "Why can't the government pay for these debts instead of the taxpayer?" And the audience of several hundred people actually cheered in enthusiastic approval!

PROSPERITY THROUGH INSOLVENCY

Since large, corporate loans are often guaranteed by the federal government, one would think that the banks which make those loans would never have a problem. Yet, many of them still manage to bungle themselves into insolvency. As we shall see in a later section of this study, insolvency actually is inherent in the system itself, a system called fractional-reserve banking.

Nevertheless, a bank can operate quite nicely in a state of insolvency so long as its customers don't know it. Money is brought into being and transmuted from one imaginary form to another by mere entries on a ledger, and creative bookkeeping can always make the bottom line appear to balance. The problem arises when depositors decide, for whatever reason, to withdraw their money. Lo and behold, there isn't enough to go around and, when that happens, the cat is finally out of the bag. The bank must close its doors, and the depositors still waiting in line outside are ... well, just that: still waiting.

The proper solution to this problem is to require the banks, like all other businesses, to honor their contracts. If they tell their customers that deposits are "payable upon demand," then they should hold enough cash to make good on that promise, regardless of when the customers want it or how many of them want it. In other words, they should keep cash in the vault equal to 100% of their depositors' accounts. When we give our hat to the hat-check girl and obtain a receipt for it, we don't expect her to rent it out while we eat dinner hoping she'll get it back—or one just like it—in time for our departure. We expect *all* the hats to remain there *all* the time so there will be no question of getting ours back precisely when we want it.

On the other hand, if the bank tells us it is going to lend our deposit to others so we can earn a little interest on it, then it should also tell us forthrightly that we *cannot* have our money back on demand. Why not? Because it is loaned out and not in the vault any longer. Customers who earn interest on their accounts should be told that they have *time* deposits, not *demand* deposits, because the bank will need a stated amount of time before it will be able to recover the money which was loaned out.

None of this is difficult to understand, yet bank customers are seldom informed of it. They are told they can have their money any time they want it *and* they are paid interest as well. Even if *they* do not receive interest, the *bank* does, and this is how so many customer services can be offered at little or no direct cost. Occasionally, a thirty-day or sixty-day delay will be mentioned as a possibility, but that is greatly inadequate for deposits which have been transformed into ten, twenty, or thirty-year loans. The banks are simply playing the odds that everything will work out *most of the time*.

We shall examine this issue in greater detail in a later section but, for now, it is sufficient to know that total disclosure is not how the banking game is played. The Federal Reserve System has legalized and institutionalized the dishonesty of issuing more hat checks than there are hats and it has devised complex methods of disguising this practice as a perfectly proper and normal feature of banking. Students of finance are told that there simply is no other way for the system to function. Once that premise is accepted, then all attention can be focused, not on the inherent fraud, but on ways and means to live with it and make it as painless as possible.

Based on the assumption that only a small percentage of the depositors will ever want to withdraw their money at the same time, the Federal Reserve allows the nation's commercial banks to operate with an incredibly thin layer of cash to cover their promises to pay "on demand." When a bank runs out of money and is unable to keep that promise, the System then acts as a lender of last resort. That is banker language meaning it stands ready to create money out of nothing and immediately lend it to any bank in trouble. (Details on how that is accomplished are in chapter eight.) But there are practical limits to just how far that process can work. Even the Fed will not support a bank that has gotten itself so deeply in the hole it has no realistic chance of digging out. When a bank's bookkeeping assets finally become less than its liabilities, the rules of the game call for transferring the losses to the depositors themselves. This means they pay *twice:* once as taxpayers and again as depositors. The mechanism by which this is accomplished is called the Federal Deposit Insurance Corporation.

THE **FDIC PLAY**

The FDIC guarantees that every insured deposit will be paid back regardless of the financial condition of the bank. The money to do this comes out of a special fund which is derived from assessments against participating banks. The banks, of course, do not pay this assessment. As with all other expenses, the bulk of the cost ultimately is passed on to their customers in the form of higher service fees and lower interest rates on deposits.

The FDIC is usually described as an insurance fund, but that is deceptive advertising at its worst. One of the primary conditions of insurance is that it must avoid what underwriters call "moral hazard." That is a situation in which the policyholder has little incentive to avoid or prevent that which is being insured against. When moral hazard is present, it is normal for people to become careless, and the likelihood increases that what is being insured against will actually happen. An example would be a government program forcing everyone to pay an equal amount into a fund to protect them from the expense of parking fines. One hesitates even to mention this absurd proposition lest some enterprising politician should decide to put it on the ballot. Therefore, let us hasten to point out that, if such a numb-skull plan were adopted, two things would happen: (1) just about everyone soon would be getting parking tickets and (2), since there now would be so many of them, the taxes to pay for those tickets would greatly exceed the previous cost of paying them *without* the so-called protection.

The FDIC operates exactly in this fashion. Depositors are told their insured accounts are protected in the event their bank should become insolvent. To pay for this protection, each bank is assessed a specified percentage of its total deposits. That percentage is the same for all banks regardless of their previous record or how risky their loans. Under such conditions, it does not pay to be cautious. The banks making reckless loans earn a higher rate of interest than those making conservative loans. They also are far more likely to collect from the fund, yet they pay not one cent more. Conservative banks are penalized and gradually become motivated to make more risky loans to keep up with their competitors and to get their "fair share" of the fund's protection. Moral hazard, therefore, is built right into the system. As with protection against parking tickets, the FDIC increases the likelihood that what is being insured against will actually happen. It is not a solution to the problem, it is *part* of the problem.

REAL INSURANCE WOULD BE A BLESSING

A true deposit-insurance program which was totally voluntary and which geared its rates to the actual risks would be a blessing. Banks with solid loans on their books would be able to obtain protection for their depositors at reasonable rates, because the chances of the insurance company having to pay would be small. Banks with unsound loans, however, would have to pay much higher rates or possibly would not be able to obtain coverage at any price. Depositors, therefore, would know instantly, without need to investigate further, that a bank without insurance is not a place where they want to put their money. In order to attract deposits, banks would have to have insurance. In order to have insurance at rates they could afford, they would have to demonstrate to the insurance company that their financial affairs are in good order. Consequently, banks which failed to meet the minimum standards of sound business practice would soon have no customers and would be forced out of business. A voluntary, private insurance program would act as a powerful regulator of the entire banking industry far more effectively and honestly than any political scheme ever could. Unfortunately, such is not the banking world of today.

The FDIC "protection" is not insurance in any sense of the word. It is merely part of a political scheme to bail out the most influential members of the banking cartel when they get into financial difficulty. As we have already seen, the first line of defense in this scheme is to have large, defaulted loans restored to life by a Congressional pledge of tax dollars. If that should fail and the bank can no longer conceal its insolvency through creative bookkeeping, it is almost certain that anxious depositors will soon line up to withdraw their money—which the bank does not have. The second line of defense, therefore, is to have the FDIC step in and make those payments for them.

Bankers, of course, do not want this to happen. It is a last resort. If the bank is rescued in this fashion, management is fired and what is left of the business usually is absorbed by another bank. Furthermore, the value of the stock will plummet, but this will affect the small stockholders only. Those with controlling interest and those in management know long in advance of the pending catastrophe and are able to sell the bulk of their shares while the price is still high. The people who create the problem seldom suffer the economic consequences of their actions.

THE FDIC WILL NEVER BE ADEQUATELY FUNDED

The FDIC never will have enough money to cover its potential liability for the entire banking system. If that amount were in existence, it could be held by the banks themselves, and an insurance fund would not even be necessary. Instead, the FDIC operates on the same assumption as the banks: that only a small percentage will ever need money at the same time. So the amount held in reserve is never more than a few percentage points of the total liability. Typically, the FDIC holds about $1.20 for every $100 of covered deposits. At the time of this writing, however, that figure had slipped to only 70 cents and was still dropping. That means that the financial exposure is about 99.3% larger than the safety net which is supposed to catch it. The failure of just one or two large banks in the system could completely wipe out the entire fund.

And it gets even worse. Although the ledger may show that so many millions or billions are in the fund, that also is but creative bookkeeping. By law, the money collected from bank assessments must be invested in Treasury bonds, which means it is loaned to the government and spent immediately by Congress. In the final stage of this process, therefore, the FDIC itself runs out of money and turns, first to the Treasury, then to Congress for help. This step, of course, is an act of final desperation, but it is usually presented in the media as though it were a sign of the system's great strength. *U.S. News & World Report* blandly describes it this way: "Should the agencies need more money yet, Congress has pledged the full faith and credit of the federal government."[1] Gosh, gee whiz. Isn't that wonderful? It sort of makes one feel rosy all over to know that the fund is so well secured.

Let's see what "full faith and credit of the federal government" actually means. Congress, already deeply in debt, has no money either. It doesn't dare openly raise taxes for the shortfall, so it applies for an additional loan by offering still more Treasury bonds for sale. The public picks up a portion of these LO.U.s, and the Federal Reserve buys the rest. If there is a monetary crisis at hand and the size of the loan is great, the Fed will pick up the entire issue.

But the Fed has no money either. So it responds by creating out of nothing an amount of brand new money equal to the LO.U.s and, through the magic of central banking, the FDIC is finally funded. This new money gushes into the banks where it is used to pay off the depositors. From there it floods through the economy diluting the value of *all* money and causing prices to rise. The old paycheck doesn't buy as much any more, so we learn to get along with a little bit less. But, see? The bank's doors are open again, and all the depositors are happy—until they return to their cars and discover the missing hub caps!

That is what is meant by "the full faith and credit of the federal government."

---

[1] **"How Safe Are Deposits in Ailing Banks, S&L's?"** ***U.S. News & World Report,*** **March 25,1985, p. 73.**

SUMMARY

Although national monetary events may appear mysterious and chaotic, they are governed by well-established rules which bankers and politicians rigidly follow. The central fact to understanding these events is that all the money in the banking system has been created out of nothing through the process of making loans. A defaulted loan, therefore, costs the bank little of tangible value, but it shows up on the ledger as a reduction in assets without a corresponding reduction in liabilities. If the bad loans exceed the size of the assets, the bank becomes technically insolvent and must close its doors. The first rule of survival, therefore, is to avoid writing off large, bad loans and, if possible, to at least continue receiving interest payments on them. To accomplish that, the endangered loans are rolled over and increased in size. This provides the borrower with money to continue paying interest plus fresh funds for new spending. The basic problem is not solved, but it is postponed for a little while and made worse.

The final solution on behalf of the banking cartel is to have the federal government guarantee payment of the loan should the borrower default in the future. This is accomplished by convincing Congress that not to do so would result in great damage to the economy and hardship for the people. From that point forward, the burden of the loan is removed from the bank's ledger and transferred to the taxpayer. Should this effort fail and the bank be forced into insolvency, the last resort is to use the FDIC to pay off the depositors. The FDIC is not insurance, because the presence of "moral hazard" makes the thing it supposedly protects against more likely to happen. A portion of the FDIC funds are derived from assessments against the banks. Ultimately, however, they are paid by the depositors themselves. When these funds run out, the balance is provided by the Federal Reserve System in the form of freshly created new money. This floods through the economy causing the appearance of rising prices but which, in reality, is the lowering of the value of the dollar. The final cost of the bailout, therefore, is passed to the public in the form of a hidden tax called inflation.

So much for the rules of the game. In the next chapter we shall look at the scorecard of the actual play itself.

Chapter Three

PROTECTORS OF THE PUBLIC

The Game-Called-Bailout as it actually has been applied to specific cases including Venn Central, Lockheed, New York City, Chrysler, Commonwealth Bank of Detroit, First Pennsylvania Bank, Continental Illinois, and others.

In the previous chapter, we offered the whimsical analogy of a sporting event to clarify the maneuvers of monetary and political scientists to bail out those commercial banks which comprise the Federal-Reserve cartel. The danger in such an approach is that it could leave the impression the topic is frivolous. So, let us abandon the analogy and turn to reality. Now that we have studied the hypothetical rules of the game, it is time to check the scorecard of the actual play itself, and it will become obvious that this is no trivial matter. A good place to start is with the rescue of a consortium of banks which were holding the endangered loans of Perm Central Railroad.

PENN CENTRAL

Perm Central was the nation's largest railroad with 96,000 employees and a payroll of $20 million a week. In 1970, it also became the nation's biggest bankruptcy. It was deeply in debt to just about every bank that was willing to lend it money, and that list included Chase Manhattan, Morgan Guaranty, Manufacturers Hanover, First National City, Chemical Bank, and Continental Illinois. Officers of the largest of those banks had been appointed to Penn Central's board of directors as a condition for obtaining funds, and they gradually had acquired control over the railroad's management. The banks also held large blocks of Penn Central stock in their trust departments.

The arrangement was convenient in many ways, not the least of which was that the bankers sitting on the board of directors were privy to information, long before the public received it, which would affect the market price of Penn Central's stock. Chris Welles, in *The Last Days of the Club,* describes what happened:

> On May 21, a month before the railroad went under, David Bevan, Penn Central's chief financial officer, privately informed representatives of the company's banking creditors that its financial condition was so weak it would have to postpone an attempt to raise $100 million in desperately needed operating funds through a bond issue. Instead, said Bevan, the railroad would seek some kind of government loan guarantee. In other words, unless the railroad could manage a federal bailout, it would have to close down. The following day, Chase Manhattan's trust department sold 134,300 shares of its Penn Central holdings. Before May 28, when the public was informed of the postponement of the bond issue, Chase sold another 128,000 shares. David Rockefeller, the bank's chairman, vigorously denied Chase had acted on the basis of inside information.[1]

More to the point of this study is the fact that virtually all of the major management decisions which led to Penn Central's demise were made by or with the concurrence of its board of directors, which is to say, by the banks that provided the loans. In other words, the bankers were not in trouble because of Penn Central's poor management, they *were* Penn Central's poor management. An investigation conducted in 1972 by Congressman Wright Patman, Chairman of the House Banking and Currency Committee, revealed the following: The banks provided large loans for disastrous expansion and diversification projects. They loaned additional millions to the railroad so it could pay dividends to its stockholders. This created the false appearance of prosperity and artificially inflated the market price of its stock long enough to dump it on the unsuspecting public. Thus, the banker-managers were able to engineer a three-way bonanza for themselves. They (1) received dividends on essentially worthless stock, (2) earned interest on the loans which provided the money to pay those dividends, and (3) were able to unload 1.8 million shares of stock—*after* the dividends, of course—at unrealistically high prices. Reports from the Securities and Exchange Commission

---

1. Chris Welles, *The Last Days of the Club* (New York: E.P. Dutton, 1975), pp. 398-99.
2. "Penn Central," *1971 Congressional Quarterly Almanac* (Washington, D.C.: Congressional Quarterly, 1971), p. 838.

showed that the company's top executives had disposed of their stock in this fashion at a personal savings of more than $1 million.

Had the railroad been allowed to go into bankruptcy at that point and been forced to sell off its assets, the bankers still would have been protected. In any liquidation, debtors are paid off first, stockholders last; so the manipulators had dumped most of their stock while prices were relatively high. That is a common practice among corporate raiders who use borrowed funds to seize control of a company, bleed off its assets to other enterprises which they also control, and then toss the debt-ridden, dying carcass upon the remaining stockholders or, in this case, the taxpayers.

THE PUBLIC BE DAMNED

In his letter of transmittal accompanying the staff report, Congressman Patman provided this summary:

> **It was as though everyone was a part of a close knit club in which Penn Central and its officers could obtain, with very few questions asked, loans for almost everything they desired both for the company and for their own personal interests, where the bankers sitting on the Board asked practically no questions as to what was going on, simply allowing management to destroy the company, to invest in questionable activities, and to engage in some cases in illegal activities. These banks in return obtained most of the company's lucrative banking business. The attitude of everyone seemed to be, while the game was going on, that all these dealings were of benefit to every member of the club, and the railroad and the public be damned.**

The banking cartel, commonly called the Federal Reserve System, was created for exactly this kind of bailout. Arthur Burns, who was the Fed's chairman, would have preferred to provide a direct infusion of newly created money, but that was contrary to the rules at that time. In his own words: "Everything fell through. We couldn't lend it to them ourselves under the law.... I worked on this thing in other ways."[3]

The company's cash crisis came to a head over a weekend and, in order to avoid having the corporation forced to file for bankruptcy on Monday morning, Burns called the homes of the heads of the Federal Reserve banks around the country and told them to get

---

1- "Penn Central: Bankruptcy Filed After Loan Bill Fails," ***1970 Congressional Quarterly Almanac*** **(Washington, D.C.: Congressional Quarterly, 1970), p. 811.**

2- Quoted by Welles, pp. 404-05.

[3]- Quoted by Welles, p. 407.

the word out immediately that the System was anxious to help. On Sunday, William Treiber, who was the first vice-president of the New York branch of the Fed, contacted the chief executives of the ten largest banks in New York and told them that the Fed's Discount Window would be wide open the next morning. Translated, that means the Federal Reserve System was prepared to create money out of nothing and then immediately loan it to the commercial banks so they, in turn, could multiply and re-lend it to Penn Central and other corporations, such as Chrysler, which were in similar straits.[1] Furthermore, the rates at which the Fed would make these funds available would be low enough to compensate for the risk. Speaking of what transpired on the following Monday, Burns boasted: "I kept the Board in session practically all day to change regulation Q so that money could flow into CDs at the banks." Looking back at the event, Chris Welles approvingly describes it as "what is by common consent the Fed's finest hour."

Finest hour or not, the banks were not that interested in the proposition unless they could be assured the taxpayer would co-sign the loans and guarantee payment. So the action inevitably shifted back to Congress. Penn Central's executives, bankers, and union representatives came in droves to explain how the railroad's continued existence was in the best interest of the public, of the working man, of the economic system itself. The Navy Department spoke of protecting the nation's "defense resources." Congress, of course, could not callously ignore these pressing needs of the nation. It responded by ordering a retroactive, 13 *Vi* per cent pay raise for all union employees. After having added that burden to the railroad's cash drain and putting it even deeper into the hole, it then passed the Emergency Rail Services Act of 1970 authorizing $125 million in federal loan guarantees.[3]

None of this, of course, solved the basic problem, nor was it really intended to. Almost everyone knew that, eventually, the railroad would be "nationalized," which is a euphemism for becoming a black hole into which tax dollars disappear. This came

---

1. For an explanation of the multiplier effect, see chapter eight, The Mandrake Mechanism.

2. Welles, pp. 407-08.

3. "Congress Clears Railroad Aid Bill, Acts on Strike," 2970 *Congressional Almanac* (Washington, D.C.: 1970), pp. 810-16.

to pass with the creation of AMTRAK in 1971 and CONRAIL in 1973. AMTRAK took over the passenger services of Penn Central, and CONRAIL assumed operation of its freight services, along with five other Eastern railroads. CONRAIL technically is a private corporation. When it was created, however, 85% of its stock was held by the government. The remainder was held by employees. Fortunately, the government's stock was sold in a public offering in 1987. AMTRAK continues under political control and operates at a loss. It is sustained by government subsidies—which is to say by taxpayers. In 1997, Congress dutifully gave it another $5.7 billion and, by 1998, liabilities exceeded assets by an estimated $14 billion. CONRAIL, on the other hand, since it was returned to the private sector, has experienced an impressive turnaround and has been running at a profit—paying taxes instead of consuming them.

LOCKHEED

In that same year, 1970, the Lockheed Corporation, which was the nation's largest defense contractor, was teetering on the verge of bankruptcy. The Bank of America and several smaller banks had loaned $400 million to the Goliath and they were not anxious to lose the bountiful interest-income stream that flowed from that; nor did they wish to see such a large bookkeeping asset disappear from their ledgers. In due course, the banks joined forces with Lockheed's management, stockholders, and labor unions, and the group descended on Washington. Sympathetic politicians were told that, if Lockheed were allowed to fail, 31,000 jobs would be lost, hundreds of sub contractors would go down, thousands of suppliers would be forced into bankruptcy, and national security would be seriously jeopardized. What the company needed was to borrow more money and lots of it. But, because of its current financial predicament, no one was willing to lend. The answer? In the interest of protecting the economy and defending the nation, the government simply had to provide either the money or the credit.

A bailout plan was quickly engineered by Treasury Secretary John B. Connally which provided the credit. The government agreed to guarantee payment on an additional $250 million in loans—an amount which would put Lockheed 60% deeper into the debt hole than it had been before. But that made no difference now. Once the taxpayer had been made a co-signer to the account, the banks had no qualms about advancing the funds.

The not-so-obvious part of this story is that the government now had a powerful motivation to make sure Lockheed would be awarded as many defense contracts as possible and that those contracts would be as profitable as possible. This would be an indirect method of paying off the banks with tax dollars, but doing so in such a way as not to arouse public indignation. Other defense contractors which had operated more efficiently would lose business, but that could not be proven. Furthermore, a slight increase in defenses expenditures would hardly be noticed.

By 1977, Lockheed had, indeed, paid back this loan, and that fact was widely advertised as proof of the wisdom and skill of all the players, including the referee and the game commissioner. A deeper analysis, however, must include two facts. First, there is no evidence that Lockheed's operation became more cost efficient during these years. Second, every bit of the money used to pay back the loans came from defense contracts which were awarded by the same government which was guaranteeing those loans. Under such an arrangement, it makes little difference if the loans were paid back or not. Taxpayers were doomed to pay the bill either way.

NEW YORK CITY

Although the government of New York City is not a corporation in the usual sense, it functions as one in many respects, particularly regarding debt.

In 1975, New York had reached the end of its credit rope and was unable even to make payroll. The cause was not mysterious. New York had long been a welfare state within itself, and success in city politics was traditionally achieved by lavish promises of benefits and subsidies for "the poor." Not surprisingly, the city also was notorious for political corruption and bureaucratic fraud. Whereas the average large city employed thirty-one people per one-thousand residents, New York had forty nine. That's an excess of fifty-eight per cent. The salaries of these employees far outstripped those in private industry. While an X-ray technician in a private hospital earned $187 per week, a porter working for the city earned $203. The average bank teller earned $154 per week, but a change maker on the city subway received $212. And municipal fringe benefits were fully twice as generous as those in private industry within the state. On top of this mountainous overhead were heaped additional costs for free college educations, subsidized housing, free medical care, and endless varieties of welfare programs.

City taxes were greatly inadequate to cover the cost of this utopia. Even after transfer payments from Albany and Washington added state and federal taxes to the take, the outflow continued to exceed the inflow. There were now only three options: increase city taxes, reduce expenses, or go into debt. The choice was never in serious doubt. By 1975, New York had floated so many bonds it had saturated the market and could find no more lenders. Two billion dollars of this debt was held by a small group of banks, dominated by Chase Manhattan and Citicorp.

When the payment of interest on these loans finally came to a halt, it was time for serious action. The bankers and the city fathers traveled down the coast to Washington and put their case before Congress. The largest city in the world could not be allowed to go bankrupt, they said. Essential services would be halted and millions of people would be without garbage removal, without transportation, even without police protection. Starvation, disease, and crime would run rampant through the city. It would be a disgrace to America. David Rockefeller at Chase Manhattan persuaded his friend Helmut Schmidt, Chancellor of West Germany, to make a statement to the media that the disastrous situation in New York could trigger an international financial crisis.

Congress, understandably, did not want to turn New York into a zone of anarchy, nor to disgrace America, nor to trigger a world-wide financial panic. So, in December of 1975, it passed a bill authorizing the Treasury to make direct loans to the city up to $2.3 billion, an amount which would more than *double* the size of its current debt to the banks. Interest payments on the old debt resumed immediately. All of this money, of course, would first have to be borrowed by Congress which was, itself, deeply in debt. And most of it would be created, directly or indirectly, by the Federal Reserve System. That money would be taken from the taxpayer through the loss of purchasing power called inflation, but at least the banks could be repaid, which is the object of the game.

There were several restrictions attached to this loan, including an austerity program and a systematic repayment schedule. None of these conditions was honored. New York City has continued to be a welfare utopia, and it is unlikely that it will *ever* get out of debt.

CHRYSLER

By 1978, the Chrysler Corporation was on the verge of bankruptcy. It had rolled over its debt to the banks many times, and the game was nearing an end. In spite of an OPEC oil embargo which had pushed up the cost of gasoline and in spite of the increasing popularity of small-automobile imports, the company had continued to build the traditional gas hog. It was now saddled with a mammoth inventory of unsaleable cars and with a staggering debt which it had acquired to build those cars.

The timing was doubly bad. America was also experiencing high interest rates which, coupled with fears of **U.S.** military involvement in Cambodia, had led to a slump in the stock market. Banks felt the credit crunch keenly and, in one of those rare instances in modern history, the money makers themselves were scouring for money.

Chrysler needed additional cash to stay in business. It was not interested in borrowing just enough to pay the interest on its existing loans. To make the game worth playing, it wanted over a *billion* dollars in new capital. But, in the prevailing economic environment, the banks were hard pressed to create anything close to that kind of money.

Managers, bankers, and union leaders found common cause in Washington. If one of the largest corporations in America was allowed to fold, think of the hardship to thousands of employees and their families; consider the damage to the economy as shock waves of unemployment move across the country; tremble at the thought of lost competition in the automobile market, of only two major brands from which to choose instead of three.

Well, could anyone blame Congress for not wanting to plunge innocent families into poverty nor to upend the national economy nor to deny anyone their Constitutional right to freedom-of-choice? So a bill was passed directing the Treasury to guarantee up to $1.5 billion in new loans to Chrysler. The banks agreed to write down $600 million of their old loans and to exchange an additional $700 million for preferred stock. Both of these moves were advertised as evidence the banks were taking a terrible loss but were willing to yield in order to save the nation. It should be noted, however, that the value of the stock which was exchanged for previously uncollectable debt rose drastically after the settlement was announced to the public. Furthermore, not only did interest payments resume on the balance of the old loans, but the banks now replaced the written down portion with fresh loans, and these were far superior in quality because they were fully guaranteed by the taxpayers. So valuable was this guarantee that Chrysler, in spite of its previously poor debt performance, was able to obtain loans at 10.35% interest while its more solvent competitor, Ford, had to pay 13.5%. Applying the difference of 3.15% to one and-a-half billion dollars, with a declining balance continuing for only six years, produces a savings in excess of $165 million. That is a modest estimate of the size of the federal subsidy. The real value was far greater because, without it, the corporation would have ceased to exist, and the banks would have taken a loss of almost their entire loan exposure.

FEDERAL DEPOSIT INSURANCE CORPORATION

It will be recalled from the previous chapter that the FDIC is not a true insurance program and, because it has been politicized, it embodies the principle of moral hazard and it actually increases the likelihood that bank failures will occur.

The FDIC has three options when bailing out an insolvent bank. The first is called a *payoff*. It involves simply paying off the insured depositors and then letting the bank fall to the mercy of the liquidators. This is the option usually chosen for small banks with no political clout. The second possibility is called a *sell off,* and it involves making arrangements for a larger bank to assume all the real assets and liabilities of the failing bank. Banking services are uninterrupted and, aside from a change in name, most customers are unaware of the transaction. This option is generally selected for small and medium banks. In both a payoff and a sell off, the FDIC takes over the bad loans of the failed bank and supplies the money to pay back the insured depositors.

The third option is called *bailout,* and this is the one which deserves our special attention. Irvine Sprague, a former director of the FDIC, explains: "In a bailout, the bank does not close, and everyone—insured or not—is fully protected.... Such privileged treatment is accorded by FDIC only rarely to an elect few."[1]

That's right, he said everyone—insured *or not*—is fully protected. The banks which comprise the elect few generally are the large ones. It is only when the number of dollars at risk becomes mind numbing that a bailout can be camouflaged as protection of the public. Sprague says:

---

[1] • **Irvine H. Sprague, *Bailout: An Insider's Account of Bank Failures and Rescues* (New York: Basic Books, 1986), p. 23.**

> The FDI Act gives the FDIC board sole discretion to prevent a bank from failing, at whatever cost. The board need only make the finding that the insured bank is in danger of failing and "is essential to provide adequate banking service in its community."... FDIC boards have been reluctant to make an essentiality finding unless they perceive a clear and present danger to the nation's financial system.

Favoritism toward the large banks is obvious at many levels. One of them is the fact that, in a bailout, the FDIC covers *all* deposits, whether insured or not. That is significant, because the banks pay an assessment based only on their *insured* deposits. So, if uninsured deposits are covered also, that coverage is free—more precisely, paid by someone else. What deposits are uninsured? Those in excess of $100,000 and those held outside the United States. Which banks hold the vast majority of such deposits? The *large* ones, of course, particularly those with extensive overseas operations.[2] The bottom line is that the large banks get a whopping free ride when they are bailed out. Their uninsured accounts are paid by FDIC, and the cost of that benefit is passed to the smaller banks and to the taxpayer. This is not an oversight. Part of the plan at Jekyll Island was to give a competitive edge to the large banks.

UNITY BANK

The first application of the FDIC essentiality rule was, in fact, an exception. In 1971, Unity Bank and Trust Company in the Roxbury section of Boston found itself hopelessly insolvent, and the federal agency moved in. This is what was found: Unity's capital was depleted; most of its loans were bad; its loan collection practices were weak; and its personnel represented the worst of two worlds: overstaffing and inexperience. The examiners reported that there were two persons for every job, and neither one had been taught the job.

With only $11.4 million on its books, the bank was small by current standards. Normally, the depositors would have been paid back, and the stockholders—like the owners of any other failed

---

1. Sprague, pp. 27-29.

2. The Bank of America is the exception. Despite its size, it has not acquired foreign deposits to the same degree as its competitors.

business venture—would have lost their investment. As Sprague, himself, admitted: "If market discipline means anything, stockholders should be wiped out when a bank fails. Our assistance would have the side effect ... of keeping the stockholders alive at government expense."[1] But Unity Bank was different. It was located in a black neighborhood and was minority owned. As is often the case when government agencies are given discretionary powers, decisions are determined more by political pressures than by logic or merit, and Unity was a perfect example. In 1971, the specter of rioting in black communities still haunted the halls of Congress. Would the FDIC allow this bank to fail and assume the awesome responsibility for new riots and bloodshed? Sprague answers:

> Neither Wille [another director] nor I had any trouble viewing the problem in its broader social context. We were willing to look for a creative solution.... My vote to make the "essentiality" finding and thus save the little bank was probably foreordained, an inevitable legacy of Watts.... The Watts riots ultimately triggered the essentiality doctrine.

On July 22, 1971, the FDIC declared that the continued operation of Unity Bank was, indeed, essential and authorized a direct infusion of $1.5 million. Although appearing on the agency's ledger as a loan, no one really expected repayment. In 1976, in spite of the FDIC's own staff report that the bank's operations continued "as slipshod and haphazard as ever," the agency rolled over the "loan" for another five years. Operations did not improve and, on June 30, 1982, the Massachusetts Banking Commissioner finally revoked Unity's charter. There were no riots in the streets, and the FDIC quietly wrote off the sum of $4,463,000 as the final cost of the bailout.

COMMONWEALTH BANK OF DETROIT

The bailout of the Unity Bank of Boston was the exception to the rule that small banks are dispensable while the giants must be saved at all costs. From that point forward, however, the FDIC **game** plan was strictly according to Hoyle. The next bailout occurred in 1972 involving the $1.5 billion Bank of the Common-**Wealth** of Detroit. Commonwealth had funded most of its phenomenal growth through loans from another bank, Chase Manhattan in New York. When Commonwealth went belly up, largely due to securities speculation and self dealing on the part of its management, Chase seized 39% of its common stock and actually took control of the bank in an attempt to find a way to get its money back. FDIC director Sprague describes the inevitable sequel:

---

[1] Sprague, pp. 41-42.

[2] Ibid., p. 48.

> Chase officers ... suggested that Commonwealth was a public interest problem that the government agencies should resolve. That unsubtle hint was the way Chase phrased its request for a bailout by the government... Their proposal would come down to bailing out the shareholders, the largest of which was Chase.

The bankers argued that Commonwealth must not be allowed to fold because it provided "essential" banking services to the community. That was justified on two counts: (1) it served many minority neighborhoods and, (2) there were not enough other banks in the city to absorb its operation without creating an unhealthy concentration of banking power in the hands of a few. It was unclear what the minority issue had to do with it inasmuch as every neighborhood in which Commonwealth had a branch was served by other banks as well. Furthermore, if Commonwealth were to be liquidated, many of those branches undoubtedly would have been purchased by competitors, and service to the communities would have continued. Judging by the absence of attention given to this issue during discussions, it is apparent that it was merely thrown in for good measure, and no one took it very seriously.

In any event, the FDIC did not want to be accused of being indifferent to the needs of Detroit's minorities and it certainly did not want to be a destroyer of free-enterprise competition. So, on January 17,1972, Commonwealth was bailed out with a $60 million loan plus numerous federal guarantees. Chase absorbed some losses, primarily as a result of Commonwealth's weak bond portfolio, but those were minor compared to what would have been lost without FDIC intervention.

Since continuation of the bank was necessary to prevent concentration of financial power, FDIC engineered its sale to the First Arabian Corporation, a Luxembourg firm funded by Saudi

---

1. Sprague, p. 68.

princes. Better to have financial power concentrated in Saudi Arabia than in Detroit. The bank continued to flounder and, in 1983, what was left of it was resold to the former Detroit Bank & Trust Company, now called Comerica. Thus the dreaded concentration of local power was realized after all, but not until Chase Manhattan was able to walk away from the deal with most of its losses covered.

FIRST PENNSYLVANIA BANK

The 1980 bailout of the First Pennsylvania Bank of Philadelphia was next. First Penn was the nation's twenty-third largest bank with assets in excess of $9 billion. It was six times the size of Commonwealth; nine hundred times larger than Unity. It was also the nation's oldest bank, dating back to the Bank of North America which was created by the Continental Congress in 1781.

The bank had experienced rapid growth and handsome profits largely due to the aggressive leadership of its chief executive officer, John Bunting, who had previously been an economist with the Federal Reserve Bank of Philadelphia. Bunting was the epitome of the era's go-go bankers. He vastly increased earnings ratios by reducing safety margins, taking on risky loans, and speculating in the bond market. As long as the economy expanded, these gambles were profitable, and the stockholders loved him dearly. When his gamble in the bond market turned sour, however, the bank plunged into a negative cash flow. By 1979, First Penn was forced to sell off several of its profitable subsidiaries in order to obtain operating funds, and it was carrying $328 million in questionable loans. That was $16 million more than the entire stockholder investment. The bank was insolvent, and the time had arrived to hit up the taxpayer for the loss.

The bankers went to Washington and presented their case. They were joined by spokesmen from the nation's top three: Bank of America, Citibank, and of course the ever-present Chase Manhattan. They argued that, not only was the bailout of First Penn essential" for the continuation of banking services in Philadelphia, was also critical to the preservation of *world* economic stability. The bank was so large, they said, if it were allowed to fall, it would act as the first domino leading to an international financial crisis. At first, the directors of the FDIC resisted that theory and earned the angry impatience of the Federal Reserve. Sprague recalls:

> We were far from a decision on how to proceed. There was strong pressure from the beginning not to let the bank fail. Besides hearing from the bank itself, the other large banks, and the comptroller, we heard frequently from the Fed. I recall at one session, Fred Schultz, the Fed deputy chairman, argued in an ever rising voice, that there were no alternatives — we had to save the bank. He said, "Quit wasting time talking about anything else!" ...
>
> The Fed's role as lender of last resort first generated contention between the Fed and FDIC during this period. The Fed was lending heavily to First Pennsylvania, fully secured, and Fed Chairman Paul Volcker said he planned to continue funding indefinitely until we could work out a merger or a bailout to save the bank.

The directors of the FDIC did not want to cross swords with the Federal Reserve System, and they most assuredly did not want to be blamed for tumbling the entire world economic system by allowing the first domino to fall. "The theory had never been tested," said Sprague. "I was not sure I wanted it to be just then."[2] So, in due course, a bailout package was put together which featured a $325 million loan from FDIC, interest free for the first year and at a subsidized rate thereafter; about half the market rate. Several other banks which were financially tied to First Penn, and which would have suffered great losses if it had folded, loaned an additional $175 million and offered a $1 billion line of credit. FDIC insisted on this move to demonstrate that the banking industry itself was helping and that it had faith in the venture. To bolster that faith, the Federal Reserve opened its Discount Window offering low-interest funds for that purpose.

The outcome of this particular bailout was somewhat happier than with the others, at least as far as the bank is concerned. At the end of the five-year taxpayer subsidy, the FDIC loan was fully repaid. The bank has remained on shaky ground, however, and the final page of this episode has not yet been written.

CONTINENTAL ILLINOIS

Everything up to this point was but mere practice for the big event which was yet to come. In the early 1980s, Chicago's Continental Illinois was the nation's seventh largest bank. With assets of $42 billion and with 12,000 employees working in offices

---

1. Sprague, pp. 88-89.
2. *Ibid., p. 89.*

in almost every major country in the world, its loan portfolio had undergone spectacular growth. Its net income on loans had literally doubled in just five years and by 1981 had rocketed to an annual figure of $254 million. It had become the darling of the market analysts and even had been named by *Dun's Review* as one of the five best managed companies in the country. These opinion leaders failed to perceive that the spectacular performance was due, not to an expertise in banking or investment, but to the financing of shaky business enterprises and foreign governments which could not obtain loans anywhere else. But the public didn't know that and wanted in on the action. For awhile, the bank's common stock actually sold at a premium over others which were more prudently managed.

The gaudy fabric began to unravel during the Fourth of July weekend of 1982 with the failure of the Penn Square Bank in Oklahoma. That was the notorious shopping-center bank that had booked a billion dollars in oil and gas loans and resold them to Continental just before the collapse of the energy market. Other loans also began to sour at the same time. The Mexican and Argentine debt crisis was coming to a head, and a series of major corporate bankruptcies were receiving almost daily headlines. Continental had placed large chunks of its easy money with all of them. When these events caused the bank's credit rating to drop, cautious depositors began to withdraw their funds, and new funding dwindled to a trickle. The bank became desperate for cash to meet its daily expenses. In an effort to attract new money, it began to offer unrealistically high rates of interest on its CDs. Loan officers were sent to scour the European and Japanese markets and to conduct a public relations campaign aimed at convincing market managers that the bank was calm and steady. David Taylor, the bank's chairman at that time, said: "We had the Continental Illinois Reassurance Brigade and we fanned out all over the world."[1]

In the fantasy land of modern finance, glitter is often more important than substance, image more valuable than reality. The bank paid the usual quarterly dividend in August, in spite of the feet that this intensified its cash crunch. As with the Penn Central Railroad twelve years earlier, that move was calculated to project an image of business-as-usual prosperity. And the ploy worked—

---

[1] **Quoted by Chernow, p. 657.**

for a while, at least. By November, the public's confidence had been restored, and the bank's stock recovered to its pre-Penn Square level. By March of 1983, it had risen even higher. But the worst was yet to come.

By the end of 1983, the bank's burden of non-performing loans had reached unbearable proportions and was growing at an alarming rate. By 1984, it was $2.7 billion. That same year, the bank sold off its profitable credit-card operation to make up for the loss of income and to obtain money for paying stockholders their expected quarterly dividend. The internal structure was near collapse, but the external facade continued to look like business as usual.

The first crack in that facade appeared at 11:39 **A.M.** On Tuesday, May 8, Reuters, the British news agency, moved a story on its wire service stating that banks in the Netherlands, West Germany, Switzerland, and Japan had increased their interest rate on loans to Continental and that some of them had begun to withdraw their funds. The story also quoted the bank's official statement that rumors of pending bankruptcy were "totally preposterous." Within hours, another wire, the Commodity News Service, reported a second rumor: that a Japanese bank was interested in buying Continental.

WORLD'S FIRST ELECTRONIC BANK RUN

As the sun rose the following morning, foreign investors began to withdraw their deposits. A billion dollars in Asian money moved out that first day. The next day—a little more than twenty-four hours following Continental's assurance that bankruptcy was totally preposterous, its long-standing customer, the Board of Trade Clearing Corporation, located just down the street—withdrew $50 million. Word of the defection spread through the financial wire services, and the panic was on. It became the world's first global electronic bank run.

By Friday, the bank had been forced to borrow $3.6 billion from the Federal Reserve in order to cover its escaping deposits. A consortium of sixteen banks, lead by Morgan Guaranty, offered a generous thirty-day line of credit, but all of this was far short of the need. Within seven more days, the outflow surged to over $6 billion.

In the beginning, almost all of this action was at the institutional level: other banks and professionally managed funds which closely monitor every minuscule detail of the financial markets. The general public had no inkling of the catastrophe, even as it unfolded. Chernow says: "The Continental run was like some modernistic fantasy: there were no throngs of hysterical depositors, just cool nightmare flashes on computer screens."[1] Sprague writes: "Inside the bank, all was calm, the teller lines moved as always, and bank officials recall no visible sign of trouble—except in the wire room. Here the employees knew what was happening as withdrawal order after order moved on the wire, bleeding Continental to death. Some cried."[2]

This was the golden moment for which the Federal Reserve and the FDIC were created. Without government intervention, Continental would have collapsed, its stockholders would have been wiped out, depositors would have been badly damaged, and the financial world would have learned that banks, not only have to *talk* about prudent management, they actually have to *adopt* it. Future banking practices would have been severely altered, and the long-term economic benefit to the nation would have been enormous. But *with* government intervention, the discipline of a free market is suspended, and the cost of failure or fraud is politically passed to the taxpayers. Depositors continue to live in a dream world of false security, and banks can operate recklessly and fraudulently with the knowledge that their political partners in government will come to their rescue when they get into trouble.

FDIC GENEROSITY WITH TAX DOLLARS

One of the challenges at Continental was that, while only four per cent of its liability was covered by FDIC "insurance," the regulators felt compelled to cover the entire exposure. Which means that the bank paid insurance premiums into the fund based on only four per cent of its total coverage, and the taxpayers now **Would** pick up the other ninety-six per cent. FDIC director Sprague explains:

> Although Continental Illinois had over $30 billion in deposits, 90 percent were uninsured foreign deposits or large certificates substantially exceeding the $100,000 insurance limit. Off-book

> liabilities swelled Continental's real size to $69 billion. In this massive liability structure only some $3 billion within the insured limit was scattered among 850,000 deposit accounts. So it was in our power and entirely legal simply to pay off the insured depositors, let everything else collapse, and stand back to watch the carnage.

That course was never seriously considered by any of the players. From the beginning, there were only two questions: how to come to Continental's rescue by covering its *total* liabilities and, equally important, how to politically justify such a fleecing of the taxpayer. As pointed out in the previous chapter, the rules of the game require that the scam must always be described as a heroic effort to protect the public. In the case of Continental, the sheer size of the numbers made the ploy relatively easy. There were so many depositors involved, so many billions at risk, so many other banks interlocked, it could be claimed that the economic fabric of the entire nation—of the world itself—was at stake. And who could say that it was not so. Sprague argues the case in familiar terms:

> An early morning meeting was scheduled for Tuesday, May 15, at the Fed.... We talked over the alternatives. They were few—none really.... [Treasury Secretary] Regan and [Fed Chairman] Vokker raised the familiar concern about a national banking collapse, that is, a chain reaction if Continental should fail. Volcker was worried about an international crisis. We all were acutely aware that never before had a bank even remotely approaching Continental's size closed. No one knew what might happen in the nation and in the world. It was no time to find out just for the purpose of intellectual curiosity.

THE FINAL BAILOUT PACKAGE

The bailout was predictable from the start. There would be some preliminary lip service given to the necessity of allowing the banks themselves to work out their own problem. That would be followed by a plan to have the banks and the government *share* the burden. And that finally would collapse into a mere public-relations illusion. In the end, almost the entire cost of the bailout would be assumed by the government and passed on to the taxpayer.

At the May 15 meeting, Treasury Secretary Regan spoke eloquently about the value of a free market and the necessity of having the banks mount their own rescue plan, at least for a part of

---

1. Sprague, p. 184.
2. *Ibid.,* pp. 154-55,183.

the money. To work out that plan, a summit meeting was arranged the next morning among the chairmen of the seven largest banks: Morgan Guaranty, Chase Manhattan, Citibank, Bank of America, Chemical Bank, Bankers Trust, and Manufacturers Hanover. The meeting was perfunctory at best. The bankers knew full well that the Reagan Administration would not risk the political embarrassment of a major bank failure. That would make the President and the Congress look bad at re-election time. But, still, some kind of tokenism was called for to preserve the Administration's conservative image. So, with urging from the Fed and the Treasury, the consortium agreed to put up the sum of $500 million—an average of only $71 million for each, far short of the actual need. Chernow describes the plan as "make-believe" and says "they pretended to mount a rescue." Sprague supplies the details:

> The bankers said they wanted to be in on any deal, but they did not want to lose any money. They kept asking for guarantees. They wanted it to look as though they were putting money in but, at the same time, wanted to be absolutely sure they were not risking anything.... By 7:30 A.M. we had made little progress. We were certain the situation would be totally out of control in a few hours. Continental would soon be exposing itself to a new business day, and the stock market would open at ten o'clock. Isaac [another FDIC director] and I held a hallway conversation. We agreed to go ahead without the banks. We told Conover [the third FDIC director] the plan and he concurred....
>
> [Later], we got word from Bernie McKeon, our regional director in New York, that the bankers had agreed to be at risk. Actually, the risk was remote since our announcement had promised 100 percent insurance.[2]

The final bailout package was a whopper. Basically, the government took over Continental Illinois and assumed all of its losses. Specifically, the FDIC took $4.5 billion in bad loans and paid Continental $3.5 billion for them. The difference was then made up by the infusion of $1 billion in fresh capital in the form of stock Purchase. The bank, therefore, now had the federal government as a stockholder controlling 80 per cent of its shares, and its bad loans had been dumped onto the taxpayer. In effect, even though

Continental retained the appearance of a private institution, it had been nationalized.

LENDER OF LAST RESORT

Perhaps the most important part of the bailout, however, was that the money to make it possible was created—directly or indirectly—by the Federal Reserve System. If the bank had been allowed to fail, and the FDIC had been required to cover the losses, the drain would have emptied the entire fund with nothing left to cover the liabilities of thousands of other banks. In other words, this one failure alone, if it were allowed to happen, would have wiped out the entire FDIC! That's one reason the bank had to be kept operating, losses or no losses, and that's why the Fed had to be involved in the bail out. In fact, that was precisely the reason the System was created at Jekyll Island: to manufacture whatever amount of money might be necessary to cover the losses of the cartel. The scam could never work unless the Fed was able to create money out of nothing and pump it into the banks along with "credit" and "liquidity" guarantees. Which means, if the loans go sour, the money is eventually extracted from the American people through the hidden tax called inflation. That's the meaning of the phrase "lender of last resort."

FDIC director Irvine Sprague, while discussing the press release which announced the Continental bail-out package, describes the Fed's role this way:

> **The third paragraph ... granted 100 percent insurance to all depositors, including the uninsured, and all general creditors.... The next paragraph ... set forth the conditions under which the Fed, as lender of last resort, would make its loans.... The Fed would lend to Continental to meet "any extraordinary liquidity requirements." That would include another run. All agreed that Continental could not be saved without 100 percent insurance by FDIC and unlimited liquidity support by the Federal Reserve. No plan would work without these two elements.**[1]

By 1984, "unlimited liquidity support" had translated into the staggering sum of $8 billion. By early 1986, the figure had climbed to $9.24 billion and was still rising. While explaining this fleecing of the taxpayer to the Senate Banking Committee, Fed Chairman Paul Volcker said: "The operation is the most basic function of the

---

1. Sprague, pp. 162-63.

Federal Reserve. It was why it was founded."[1] With those words, he has confirmed one of the more controversial assertions of this book.

SMALL BANKS BE DAMNED

It has been mentioned previously that the large banks receive a free ride on their FDIC coverage at the expense of the small banks. There could be no better example of this than the bail out of Continental Illinois. In 1983, the bank paid a premium into the fund of only $6.5 million to protect its insured deposits of $3 billion. The actual liability, however—including its institutional and overseas deposits—was ten times that figure, and the FDIC guaranteed payment on the whole amount. As Sprague admitted, "Small banks pay proportionately far more for their insurance and have far less chance of a Continental-style bailout."

How true. Within the same week that the FDIC and the Fed were providing billions in payments, stock purchases, loans, and guarantees for Continental Illinois, it closed down the tiny Bledsoe County Bank of Pikeville, Tennessee, and the Planters Trust and Savings Bank of Opelousas, Louisiana. During the first half of that year, forty-three smaller banks failed without an FDIC bailout. In most cases, a merger was arranged with a larger bank, and only the uninsured deposits were at risk. The impact of this inequity upon the banking system is enormous. It sends a message to bankers and depositors alike that small banks, if they get into trouble, will be allowed to fold, whereas large banks are safe regardless of how poorly or fraudulently they are managed. As a New York investment analyst stated to news reporters, Continental Illinois, even though it had just failed, was "obviously the safest bank in the country to have your money in."[3] Nothing could be better calculated to drive the small independent banks out of business or to force them to sell out to the giants. And that, in fact, is exactly what has been happening. Since 1984, while hundreds of small banks have been forced out of business, the average size of the banks which remain—with government protection—has more than doubled. It will be recalled that this advantage of the big banks

---

1- Quoted by Greider, p. 628.

£ Sprague, p. 250.

New Continental Illinois Facing Uncertain Future," by Keith E. Leighty, Associated Press, Thousand Oaks, Calif., ***News Chronicle,*** **May 13,1985, p. 18.**

over their smaller competitors was also one of the objectives of the Jekyll Island plan.

Perhaps the most interesting—and depressing—aspect of the Continental Illinois bailout was the lack of public indignation over the principle of using taxes and inflation to protect the banking industry. Smaller banks have complained of the unfair advantage given to the larger banks, but not on the basis that the government should have let the giant fall. Their lament was that it should now protect *them* in the same paternalistic fashion. Voters and politicians were silent on the issue, apparently awed by the sheer size of the numbers and the specter of economic chaos. Decades of public education had left their mark. After all, wasn't this exactly what government schools have taught is the proper function of government? Wasn't this the American way? Even Ronald Reagan, viewed as the national champion of economic conservatism, praised the action. From aboard Air Force One on the way to California, the President said: "It was a thing that we should do and we did it. It was in the best interest of all concerned."[1]

The Reagan endorsement brought into focus one of the most amazing phenomena of the 20th century: the process by which America has moved to the Left toward statism while marching behind the political banner of those who speak the language of *opposing* statism. William Greider, a former writer for the liberal *Washington Post* and *The Rolling Stone,* complains:

> The nationalization of Continental was, in fact, a quintessential act of modern liberalism—the state intervening in behalf of private interests and a broad public purpose. In this supposedly conservative era, federal authorities were setting aside the harsh verdict of market competition (and grossly expanding their own involvement in the private economy)....
>
> In the past, conservative scholars and pundits had objected loudly at any federal intervention in the private economy, particularly emergency assistance for failing companies. Now, they hardly seemed to notice. Perhaps they would have been more vocal if the deed had been done by someone other than the conservative champion, Ronald Reagan.[2]

Four years after the bailout of Continental Illinois, the same play was used in the rescue of BankOklahoma, which was a bank

---

1. "Reagan Calls Rescue of Bank No Bailout," *New York Times, July* 29,1984.
2. Greider, p. 631.

holding company. The FDIC pumped $130 million into its main banking unit and took warrants for 55% ownership. The pattern had been set. By accepting stock in a failing bank in return for bailing it out, the government had devised an ingenious way to nationalize banks without calling it that. Issuing stock sounds like a *business* transaction in the private sector. And the public didn't seem to notice the reality that Uncle Sam was going into banking.

SECOND REASON TO ABOLISH THE FEDERAL RESERVE

A sober evaluation of this long and continuing record leads to the second reason for abolishing the Federal Reserve System: Far from being a protector of the public, *it is a cartel operating against the public interest*.

SUMMARY

The game called bailout is not a whimsical figment of the imagination, it is for real. Here are some of the big games of the season and their final scores.

In 1970, Penn Central railroad became bankrupt. The banks which loaned the money had taken over its board of directors and had driven it further into the hole, all the while extending bigger and bigger loans to cover the losses. Directors concealed reality from the stockholders and made additional loans so the company could pay dividends to keep up the false front. During this time, the directors and their banks unloaded their stock at unrealistically high prices. When the truth became public, the stockholders were left holding the empty bag. The bailout, which was engineered by the Federal Reserve, involved government subsidies to other banks to grant additional loans. Then Congress was told that the collapse of Penn Central would be devastating to the public interest. Congress responded by granting $125 million in loan guarantees so that banks would not be at risk. The railroad eventually failed anyway, but the bank loans were covered. Penn Central was nationalized into AMTRAK and continues to operate at a loss.

In 1970, as Lockheed faced bankruptcy, Congress heard essentially the same story. Thousands would be unemployed, subcontractors would go out of business, and the public would suffer greatly. So Congress agreed to guarantee $250 million in new loans, which put Lockheed 60% deeper into debt than before. Now that government was guaranteeing the loans, it had to make sure Lockheed became profitable. This was accomplished by granting lucrative defense contracts at non-competitive bids. The banks were paid back.

In 1975, New York City had reached the end of its credit rope. It had borrowed heavily to maintain an extravagant bureaucracy and a miniature welfare state. Congress was told that the public would be jeopardized if city services were curtailed, and that America would be disgraced in the eyes of the world. So Congress authorized additional direct loans up to $2.3 billion, which more than doubled the size of the current debt. The banks continued to receive their interest.

In 1978, Chrysler was on the verge of bankruptcy. Congress was informed that the public would suffer greatly if the company folded, and that it would be a blow to the American way if freedom-of-choice were reduced from three to two makes of automobiles. So Congress guaranteed up to $1.5 billion in new loans. The banks reduced part of their loans and exchanged another portion for preferred stock. News of the deal pushed up the market value of that stock and largely offset the loan write-off. The banks' previously uncollectable debt was converted into a government-backed, interest-bearing asset.

In 1972, the Commonwealth Bank of Detroit—with $1.5 billion in assets, became insolvent. It had borrowed heavily from the Chase Manhattan Bank in New York to invest in high-risk and potentially high-profit ventures. Now that it was in trouble, so was Chase. The bankers went to Washington and told the FDIC the public must be protected from the great financial hardship that would follow if Commonwealth were allowed to close. So the FDIC pumped in a $60 million loan plus federal guarantees of repayment. Commonwealth was sold to an Arab consortium. Chase took a minor write down but converted most of its potential loss into government-backed assets.

In 1979, the First Pennsylvania Bank of Philadelphia became insolvent. With assets in excess of $9 billion, it was nine-times the size of Commonwealth. It, too, had been an aggressive player in the '80s. Now the bankers and the Federal Reserve told the FDIC that the public must be protected from the calamity of a bank failure of this size, that the national economy was at stake, perhaps even the entire world. So the FDIC gave a $325 million loan—interest-free for the first year, and at half the market rate thereafter. The Federal Reserve offered money to other banks at a subsidized rate for the specific purpose of relending to First Penn. With that enticement, they advanced $175 million in immediate loans plus a $1 billion line of credit.

In 1982, Chicago's Continental Illinois became insolvent. It was the nation's seventh largest bank with $42 billion in assets. The previous year, its profits had soared as a result of loans to high-risk business ventures and foreign governments. Although it had been the darling of market analysts, it quickly unraveled when its cash flow turned negative, and overseas banks began to withdraw deposits. It was the world's first electronic bank run. Federal Reserve Chairman Volcker told the FDIC that it would be unthinkable to allow the world economy to be ruined by a bank failure of this magnitude. So, the FDIC assumed $4.5 billion in bad loans and, in return for the bailout, took 80% ownership of the bank in the form of stock. In effect, the bank was nationalized, but no one called it that. The United States government was now in the banking business.

All of the money to accomplish these bailouts was made possible by the Federal Reserve System acting as the "lender of last resort." That was one of the purposes for which it had been created. We must not forget that the phrase "lender of last resort" means that the money is created out of nothing, resulting in the confiscation of our nation's wealth through the hidden tax called inflation.

Chapter Four

HOME, SWEET LOAN

The history of increasing government intervention in the housing industry; the stifling of free-market forces in residential real estate; the resulting crisis in the S&L industry; the bailout of that industry with money taken from the taxpayer.

As we have seen in previous chapters, the damage done by the banking cartel is made possible by the fact that money can be created out of nothing. It also destroys our purchasing power through the hidden tax called inflation. The mechanism by which it works is hidden and subtle.

Let us turn, now, from the arcane world of central banking to the giddy world of savings-and-loan institutions. By comparison, the problem in the savings-and-loan industry is easy to comprehend. It is simply that vast amounts of money are disappearing into the black hole of government mismanagement, and the losses must eventually be paid by us. The end result is the same in both cases.

SOCIALISM TAKES ROOT IN AMERICA

It all began with a concept. The concept took root in America largely as a result of the Great Depression of the 1930s. American politicians were impressed at how radical Marxists were able to attract popular support by blaming the capitalist system for the country's woes and by promising a socialist Utopia. They admired and feared these radicals; admired them for their skill at mass psychology; feared them lest they become so popular as to win a plurality at the ballot box. It was not long before many political figures began to mimic the soap-box orators, and the voters enthusiastically put them into office.

While the extreme and violent aspects of Communism generally were rejected, the more genteel theories of socialism became Popular among the educated elite. It was they who would naturally become the leaders in an American socialist system. Someone had to look after the masses and tell them what to do for their own good, and many with college degrees and those with great wealth became enamored by the thought of playing that role. And so, the concept became widely accepted at all levels of American life—the "downtrodden masses" as well as the educated elite—that it was desirable for the government to take care of its citizens and to protect them in their economic affairs.

And so, when more than 1900 S&Ls went belly-up in the Great Depression, Herbert Hoover—and a most willing Congress—created the Federal Home Loan Bank Board to protect depositors in the future. It began to issue charters to institutions that would submit to its regulations, and the public was led to believe that government regulators would be more wise, prudent, and honest than private managers. A federal charter became a kind of government seal of approval. The public, at last, was being protected.

Hoover was succeeded by FDR in the White House who became the epitome of the new breed. Earlier in his political career, he had been the paragon of free enterprise and individualism. He spoke out against big government and for the free market, but in mid life he reset his sail to catch the shifting political wind. He went down in history as a pioneer of socialism in America.

It was FDR who took the next step toward government paternalism in the S&L industry—as well as the banking industry—by establishing the Federal Deposit Insurance Corporation (FDIC) and the Federal Saving and Loan Insurance Corporation (FSLIC). From that point forward, neither the public nor the managers of the thrifts needed to worry about losses. Everything would be reimbursed by the government.

A HOUSE ON EVERY LOT

At about the same time, loans on private homes became subsidized through the Federal Housing Authority (FHA) which allowed S&Ls to make loans at rates lower than would have been possible without the subsidy. This was to make it easier for everyone to realize the dream of having their own home. While the Marxists were promising a chicken in every pot, the New Dealers were winning elections by pushing for a house on every lot.

In the beginning, many people were able to purchase a home who, otherwise, might not have been able to do so or who would have had to wait longer to accumulate a higher down payment. On the other hand, the FFIA-induced easy credit began to push up the price of houses for the middle class, and that quickly offset any real advantage of the subsidy. The voters, however, were not perceptive enough to understand this canceling effect and continued to vote for politicians who promised to expand the system.

The next step was for the Federal Reserve Board to require banks to offer interest rates lower than those offered by S&Ls. The result was that funds moved from the banks into the S&Ls and became abundantly available for home loans. This was a deliberate national policy to favor the home industry at the expense of other industries that were competing for the same investment dollars. It may not have been good for the economy as a whole but it was good politics.

ABANDONMENT OF THE FREE MARKET

These measures effectively removed real estate loans from the free market and placed them into the political arena, where they have remained ever since. The damage to the public as a result of this intervention would be delayed a long time in coming, but when it came, it would be cataclysmic.

The reality of government disruption of the free market cannot be overemphasized, for it is at the heart of our present and future crisis. We have savings institutions that are controlled by government at every step of the way. Federal agencies provide protection against losses and lay down rigid guidelines for capitalization levels, number of branches, territories covered, management policies, services rendered, and interest rates charged. The additional cost to S&Ls of compliance with this regulation has been estimated by the American Bankers Association at about $11 billion per year, which represents a whopping 60% of all their profits.

On top of that, the healthy component of the industry must spend over a billion dollars each year for extra premiums into the so-called insurance fund to make up for the failures of the unhealthy component, a form of penalty for success. When some of the healthy institutions attempted to convert to banks to escape this Penalty, the regulators said no. Their cash flow was needed to support the bailout fund.

INSURANCE FOR THE COMMON MAN?

The average private savings deposit is about $6,000. Yet, under the Carter administration, the level of FDIC insurance was raised from $40,000 to $100,000 for each account. Those with more than that merely had to open several accounts, so, in reality, the sky was the limit. Clearly this had nothing to do with protecting the common man. The purpose was to prepare the way for brokerage houses to reinvest huge blocks of capital at high rates of interest virtually without risk. It was, after all, insured by the federal government.

In 1979, Federal Reserve policy had pushed up interest rates, and the S&Ls had to keep pace to attract deposits. By December of 1980, they were paying 15.8% interest on their money-market certificates. Yet, the average rate they were charging for new mortgages was only 12.9%. Many of their older loans were still crunching away at 7 or 8% and, to compound the problem, some of those were in default, which means they were really paying 0%. The thrifts were operating deep in the red and had to make up the difference somewhere.

The weakest S&Ls paid the highest interest rates to attract depositors and they are the ones which obtained the large blocks of brokered funds. Brokers no longer cared how weak the operation was, because the funds were fully insured. They just cared about the interest rate.

On the other hand, the S&L managers reasoned that they had to make those funds work miracles for the short period they had them. It was their only chance to dig out, and they were willing to take big risks. For them also, the government's insurance program had removed any chance of loss to their depositors, so many of them plunged into high-profit, high-risk real-estate developments.

Deals began to go sour, and 1979 was the first year since the Great Depression of the 1930s that the total net worth of federally insured S&Ls became negative. And that was despite expansion almost everywhere else in the economy. The public began to worry.

FULL FAITH AND CREDIT

The protectors in Washington responded in 1982 with a joint resolution of Congress declaring that the full faith & credit of the United States government stood behind the FSLIC. That was a reassuring phrase, but many people had the gnawing feeling that, somehow, we were going to pay for it ourselves. And they were right. *Consumer Reports* explained:

> **Behind the troubled banks and the increasingly troubled insurance agencies stands "the full faith and credit" of the Government—in effect, a promise, sure to be honored by Congress, that all citizens will chip in through taxes or through inflation to make all depositors whole.**[1]

The plight of the S&Ls was dramatically brought to light in Ohio in 1985 when the Home State Savings Bank of Cincinnati collapsed as a result of a potential $150 million loss in a Florida securities firm. This triggered a run, not only on the thirty-three branches of Home State, but on many of the other S&Ls as well. The news impacted international markets where overseas speculators dumped paper dollars for other currencies, and some rushed to buy gold.

Within a few days, depositors demanding their money caused $60 million to flow out of the state's $130 million "insurance" fund which, true to form for all government protection schemes, was terribly inadequate. If the run had been allowed to continue, the fund likely would have been obliterated the next day. It was time for a political fix.

On March 15, Ohio Governor Richard Celeste declared one of the few "bank holidays" since the Great Depression and closed all seventy-one of the state-insured thrifts. He assured the public there was nothing to worry about. He said this was merely a "cooling-off period ... until we can convincingly demonstrate the soundness of our system." Then he flew to Washington and met with Paul Volcker, chairman of the Federal Reserve Board, and with Edwin Gray, chairman of the Federal Home Loan Bank Board, to request federal assistance. They assured him it was available.

A few days later, depositors were authorized to withdraw up to $750 from their accounts. On March 21, President Reagan calmed the world money markets with assurances that the crisis was over. Furthermore, he said, the problem was "limited to Ohio."[2]

This was not the first time there had been a failure of state-sponsored insurance funds. The one in Nebraska was pulled down in 1983 when the Commonwealth Savings Company of Lincoln failed. It had over $60 million in deposits, but the insurance fund had less than $2 million to cover, not just Commonwealth, but the whole system. Depositors were lucky to get 65 cents on the dollar, and even that was expected to take up to 10 years.

---

[1] **"How Safe Are Your Deposits?",** ***Consumer Reports,*** **August, 1988, p. 503.**

[2] **"Ohio Bank Crisis That Ruffled World,"** ***U.S. News & World Report,*** **April 1, 1985,**

AN INVITATION TO FRAUD

In the early days of the Reagan administration, government regulations were changed so that the S&Ls were no longer restricted to the issuance of home mortgages, the sole reason for their creation in the first place. In fact, they no longer even were required to obtain a down payment on their loans. They could now finance 100% of a deal—or even *more*. Office buildings and shopping centers sprang up everywhere regardless of the need. Developers, builders, managers, and appraisers made millions. The field soon became overbuilt and riddled with fraud. Billions of dollars disappeared into defunct projects. In at least twenty-two of the failed S&Ls, there is evidence that the Mafia and CIA were involved.

Fraud is not necessarily against the law. In fact, most of the fraud in the S&L saga was, not only legal, it was encouraged by the government. The Garn-St. Germain Act allowed the thrifts to lend an amount of money equal to the *appraised* value of real estate rather than the *market* value. It wasn't long before appraisers were receiving handsome fees for appraisals that were, to say the least, unrealistic. But that was not fraud, it was the *intent* of the regulators. The amount by which the appraisal exceeded the market value was defined as "appraised equity" and was counted the same as capital. Since the S&Ls were required to have $1 in capital for every $33 held in deposits, an appraisal that exceeded market value by $1 million could be used to pyramid $33 million in deposits from Wall Street brokerage houses. And the anticipated profits from those funds was one of the ways in which the S&Ls were supposed to recoup their losses without the government having to cough up the money—which it didn't have. In effect the government was saying: "We can't make good on our protection scheme, so go get the money yourself by putting the investors at risk. Not only will we back you up if you fail, we'll show you exactly how to do it."

---

1. "How Safe Are Deposits in Ailing Banks, S&Ls?," ***U.S. Neivs & World Report,*** **March 25,1985, p. 74.**

THE FALLOUT BEGINS

In spite of the accounting gimmicks which were created to make the walking-dead S&Ls look healthy, by 1984 the fallout began. The FSLIC closed one institution that year and arranged for the merger of twenty-six others which were insolvent. In order to persuade healthy firms to absorb insolvent ones, the government provides cash settlements to compensate for the liabilities. By 1984, these subsidized mergers were costing the FDIC over $1 billion per year. Yet, that was just the small beginning.

Between 1980 and 1986, a total of 664 insured S&Ls failed. Government regulators had promised to protect the public in the event of losses, but the losses were already far beyond what they could handle. They could not afford to close down all the insolvent thrifts because they simply didn't have enough money to cover the pay out. In March of 1986, the FSLIC had only 3 cents for every dollar of deposits. By the end of that year, the figure had dropped to two-tenths of a penny for each dollar "insured." Obviously, they had to keep those thrifts in business, which meant they had to invent even more accounting gimmicks to conceal the reality.

Postponement of the inevitable made matters even worse. Keeoing the S&Ls in business was costing the FSLIC $6 million per day. By 1988, two years later, the thrift industry as a whole was losing $9.8 million per day, and the unprofitable ones—the corpses which were propped up by the FSLIC—were losing $35.6 million per day. And, still, the game continued.

By 1989, the FSLIC no longer had even two-tenths of a penny for each dollar insured. Its reserves had vanished altogether. Like the thrifts it supposedly protected, it was, itself, insolvent and looking for loans. It had tried offering bond issues, but these fell far short of its needs. Congress had discussed the problem but had failed to provide new funding. The collapse of Lincoln Savings brought the crisis to a head. There was no money, period.

THE FED USURPS THE ROLE OF CONGRESS

In February, an agreement was reached between Alan Greenspan, Chairman of the Federal Reserve Board, and M. Danny Wall, Chairman of the Federal Home Loan Bank Board, to have

---

[1] »**Fizzling FSLIC," by Shirley Hobbs Scheibla, *Barron's,* Feb. 9,1987, p. 16.**

$70 million of bailout funding for Lincoln Savings come directly from the Federal Reserve.

This was a major break in precedent. Historically, the Fed has served to create money only for the government or for banks. If it were the will of the people to bail out a savings institution, then it is up to Congress to approve the funding. If Congress does not have the money or cannot borrow it from the public, then the Fed can create it (out of nothing, of course) and give it to the government. But, in this instance, the Fed was usurping the role of Congress and making political decisions entirely on its own. There is no basis in the Federal Reserve Act for this action. Yet, Congress remained silent, apparently out of collective guilt for its own paralysis.

Finally, in August of that year, Congress was visited by the ghost of FDR and sprang into action. It passed the Financial Institutions Reform and Recovery Act (FIRREA) and allocated a minimum of $66 billion for the following ten years, $300 billion over thirty years. Of this amount, $225 billion was to come from taxes or inflation, and $75 billion was to come from the healthy S&Ls. It was the biggest bailout ever, bigger than the *combined* cost for Lockheed, Chrysler, Penn Central, and New York City.

In the process, the FSLIC was eliminated because it was hopelessly insolvent and replaced by the Savings Association Insurance Fund. Also created was the Banking Insurance Fund for the protection of commercial banks, and both are now administered by the FDIC.

As is often the case when previous government control fails to produce the desired result, the response of Congress is to *increase* the controls. Four entirely new layers of bureaucracy were added to the existing tangled mess: the Resolution Trust Oversight Board, to establish strategies for the RTC; the Resolution Funding Corporation, to raise money to operate the RTC; The Office of Thrift Supervision, to supervise thrift institutions even more than they had been; and the Oversight Board for the Home Loan Banks, the purpose of which remains vague but probably is to make sure that the S&Ls continue to serve the political directive of subsidizing the home industry. When President Bush signed the bill, he said:

> **This legislation will safeguard and stabilize America's financial system and put in place permanent reforms so these problems will never happen again. Moreover, it says to tens of millions of savings-and-loan depositors, "You will not be the victim of others'**

> mistakes. We will see—guarantee—that your insured deposits are secure.

THE ESTIMATES ARE SLIGHTLY WRONG

By the middle of the following year, it was clear that the $66 billion funding would be greatly inadequate. Treasury spokesmen were now quoting $130 billion, about twice the original estimate. How much is $130 billion? In 1990, it was 30% more than the salaries of all the schoolteachers in America. It was more than the combined profits of all the Fortune-500 industrial companies. It would send 1.6 million students through the best four-year colleges, including room and board. And the figure did not even include the cost of liquidating the huge backlog of thrifts already seized nor the interest that had to be paid on borrowed funds. Within only a few days of the announced increase, the Treasury again revised the figure upward from $130 billion to $150 billion. As Treasury Secretary Nicholas Brady told the press, "No one should assume that the estimates won't change. They will."

Indeed, the estimates continued to change with each passing week. The government had sold or merged 223 insolvent thrifts during 1988 and had given grossly inadequate estimates of the cost. Financiers such as Ronald Perelman and the Texas investment partnership called Temple-Inland, Inc., picked up many of these at fantastic bargains, especially considering that they were given cash subsidies and tax advantages to sweeten the deal. At the time, Danny Wall, who was then Chairman of the Federal Home Loan Bank Board, announced that these deals "took care" of the worst thrift problems. He said the cost of the bailout was $39 billion. The WZZ *Street Journal* replied:

> Wrong again. The new study, a compilation of audits prepared by the Federal Deposit Insurance Corporation, indicates that the total cost of the so-called Class of '88 will be $90 billion to $95 billion, including tax benefits granted the buyers and a huge amount of interest on government debt to help finance this assistance....
>
> But the 1988 thrift rescues' most expensive flaw doesn't appear to be the enrichment of tycoons. Rather it's that none of the deals ended or even limited the government's exposure to mismanagement by the new owners, hidden losses on real estate in the past, or the vicissitudes of the real-estate markets in the future.... And some of the deals

• **"Review of the News,"** ***The New American,*** **Sept. 11,1989, p. 15.**

> appear to be sham transactions, in which failing thrifts were sold to failing thrifts, which are failing all over again....
>
> Although the thrifts proved to be in far worse shape than the Bank Board estimated, Mr. Wall defends his strategy for rescuing them with open-ended assistance. "We didn't have the money to liquidate," he says.[1]

When Congress passed FIRREA the previous year to "safeguard and stabilize America's financial system," the staggering sum of $300 billion dollars was authorized to be taken from taxes and inflation over the following thirty years to do the job. Now, Federal Reserve Chairman Alan Greenspan was saying that the true long-term cost would stand at $500 billion, an amount even greater than the default of loans to all the Third-World countries combined. The figure was *still* too low. A non-biased private study released by Veribank, Inc. showed that, when all the hidden costs are included, the bill presented to the American people will be about $532 billion.[2] The problems that President Bush promised would "never happen again" were happening again.

BOOKKEEPING SLEIGHT OF HAND

Long before this point, the real estate market had begun to contract, and many mortgages exceeded the actual price for which the property could be sold. Furthermore, market interest rates had risen far above the rates that were locked into most of the S&L loans, and that decreased the value of those mortgages. The true value of a $50,000 mortgage that is paying 7% interest is only half of a $50,000 mortgage that is earning 14%. So the protectors of the public devised a scheme whereby the S&Ls were allowed to value their assets according to the original loan value rather than their true market value. That helped, but much more was still needed.

The next step was to create bookkeeping assets out of thin air. This was accomplished by authorizing the S&Ls to place a monetary value on community "good will"! With the mere stroke of a pen, the referees created $2.5 billion in such assets, and the players continued the game.

---

1. "Audit Report by FDIC Shows Wall's Estimates for Thrift Bailouts in 1988 Were Wildly Low," by Charles McCoy and Todd Mason, The *Wall Street journal,* Sept. 14, 1990, p. A-12.
2. "S&L Industry Rebuilds As Bailout Reaches Final Phase," *Veribank Nezvs Release,* Veribank, Inc. (Wakefield, Massachusetts), lanuary 12,1994, p. 2.

Then the FSLIC began to issue "certificates of net worth," which were basically promises to bail out the ailing S&Ls should they need it. The government had already promised to do that but, by printing it on pieces of paper and calling them "certificates of net worth," the S&Ls were allowed to count them as assets on their books. Such promises *are* assets but, since the thrifts would be obligated to pay back any money it received in a bailout, those pay-back obligations should also have been put on the books as liabilities. The *net* position would not change. The only way they could count the certificates as assets without adding the offsetting liabilities would be for the bailout promises to be outright gifts with no obligation to ever repay. That may be the eventual result, but it is not the way the plan was set up. In any event, the thrifts were told they could count these pieces of paper as capital, the same as if the owners had put up their own cash. And the game continued.

The moment of truth arrives when the S&Ls have to liquidate some of their holdings, such as in the sale of their mortgages or foreclosed homes to other S&Ls, commercial banks, or private parties. That is when the inflated bookkeeping value is converted into the true market value, and the difference has to be entered into the ledger as a loss. But not in the never-never land of socialism where government is the great protector. Dennis Turner explains:

> The FSLIC permits the S&L which sold the mortgage to take the loss over a 40-year period. Most companies selling an asset at a loss must take the loss immediately: only S&Ls can engage in this patent fraud. Two failing S&Ls could conceivably sell their lowest-yielding mortgages to one another, and both would raise their net worth! *This dishonest accounting in the banking system is approved by the highest regulatory authorities.*[1]

U.S. News & World Report continues the commentary:

> Today, scores of savings-and-loan associations, kept alive mainly by accounting gimmicks, continue to post big losses.... Only a fraction of the industry's aggregate net worth comprises hard assets such as mortgage notes. Intangible assets, which include bookkeeping entries such as good will, make up nearly all of the industry's estimated net worth of 37.6 billion dollars.[2]

---

p iPennis Turner, *When Your Bank Fails* (Princeton, New lersey: Amwell ' "Wishing, Inc., 1983), p. 141.

• "It's Touch And Go for Troubled S&Ls," by Patricia M. Scherschel, *U.S. News & w°rld Report,* March 4, 1985, p. 92.

ACCOUNTING GIMMICKS ARE NOT FRAUD

We must keep in mind that a well managed institution would never assume these kinds of risks or resort to fraudulent accounting if it wanted to stay in business for the long haul. But with Washington setting guidelines and standing by to make up losses, a manager would be fired if he didn't take advantage of the opportunity. After all, Congress specifically said it was OK when it passed the laws. These were loopholes deliberately put there to be used. Dr. Edward Kane explains:

> **Deception itself doesn't constitute illegal fraud when it's authorized by an accounting system such as the Generally Accepted Accounting Principles (GAAP) system which allows institutions to forego recording assets at their true worth, maintaining them instead at their inflated value. The regulatory accounting principles system in 1982 added even new options to overstate capital.... Intense speculation, such as we observed in these firms, is not necessarily bad management at all. In most of these cases, it was clever management. There were clever gambles that exploited, not depositors or savers, but taxpayers.**

The press has greatly exaggerated the role of illegal fraud in these matters with much time spent excoriating the likes of Donald Dixon at Vernon S&L and Charles Keating at Lincoln Savings. True, these flops cost the taxpayer well over $3 billion dollars, but all the illegal fraud put together amounts to only about one-half of one per cent of the total losses so far.[2] Focusing on that minuscule component serves only to distract from the fact that the real problem is government regulation itself.

JUNK BONDS ARE NOT JUNK

Another part of the distraction has been to make it appear that the thrifts got into trouble because they were heavily invested in "junk bonds."

Wait a minute! What are junk bonds, anyway? This may come as a surprise, but those held by the S&Ls were anything but junk. In fact, in terms of risk-return ratios, most of them were superior-grade investments to bonds from the Fortune-500 companies.

---

1. "FIRREA: Financial Malpractice," by Edward I. Kane, *Durell Journal of Money and Banking,* May, 1990, p. 5.

2. "Banking on Government," by lane H. Ingraham, *The New American,* August 24, 1992, p. 24.

So-called junk bonds are merely those that are offered by smaller *companies* which are not large enough to be counted among the nation's giants. The large reinvestors, such as managers of mutual funds and retirement funds, prefer to stay with well-known names like General Motors and IBM. They need to invest truly huge blocks of money every day, and the smaller companies just don't have enough to offer to satisfy their needs. Consequently, many stocks and bonds from smaller companies are not traded in the New York Stock Exchange. They are traded in smaller exchanges or directly between brokers in what is called "over the counter." Because they do not have the advantage of being traded in the larger markets, they have to pay a higher interest rate to attract investors, and for that reason, they are commonly called high-yield bonds.

Bonds offered by these companies are derided by some brokers as not being "investment grade," yet, many of them are excellent performers. In fact, they have become an important part of the American economy because they are the backbone of new industry. The most successful companies of the future will be found among their ranks. During the last decade, while the Fortune-500 companies were shrinking and eliminating 3.6 million jobs, this segment of new industry has been growing and has created 18 million new jobs.

Not all new companies are good investments—the same is true of older companies—but the small-company sector generally provides more jobs, has greater profit margins, and pays more dividends than the so-called "investment-grade" companies. From 1981 to 1991, the average return on ten-year Treasury bills was 10.4 per cent; the Dow Jones Industrial Average was 12.9 per cent; and the average return on so-called junk bonds was 14.1 per cent. Because of this higher yield, they attracted more than $180 billion from savvy investors, some of whom were S&Ls. It was basically a new market which was orchestrated by an upstart, Michael Milken, at the California-based Drexel Burnham Lambert brokerage house.

CAPITAL GROWTH WITHOUT BANK LOANS OR INFLATION

One of the major concerns at Jekyll Island in 1910 was the trend to obtain business-growth capital from sources other than bank loans. Here, seventy years later, the same trend was developing again in a slightly different form. Capital, especially for small companies, was now coming from bonds which Drexel had found a way to mass market. In fact, Drexel was even able to use those bonds to engineer corporate takeovers, an activity that previously had been reserved for the mega-investment houses. By 1986, Drexel had become the most profitable investment bank in the country.

Here was $180 billion that no longer was being channeled through Wall Street. Here was $180 billion that was coming from people's savings instead of being created out of nothing by the banks. In other words, here was growth built upon real investment, not inflation. Certain people were not happy about it.

Glenn Yago, Director of the Economic Research Bureau and Associate Professor of Management at the State University of New York at Stony Brook, explains the problem:

> It was not until high yield securities were applied to restructuring through deconglomeration and takeovers that hostilities against the junk bond market broke out... The high yield market grew at the expense of bank debt, and high yield companies grew at the expense of the hegemony of many established firms. As Peter Passell noted in *The New York Times,* the impact was first felt on Wall Street, "where sharp elbows and a working knowledge of computer spreadsheets suddenly counted more than a nose for dry sherry or membership in Skull and Bones."[1]

The first line of attack on this new market of high-yield bonds was to call them "junk." The word itself was powerful. The financial media picked it up and many investors were frightened away.

The next step was for compliant politicians to pass a law requiring S&Ls to get rid of their "junk," supposedly to protect the public. That this was a hoax is evident by the fact that only 5% ever held any of these bonds, and their holdings represented only 1.2% of the total S&Ls assets. Furthermore, the bonds were performing satisfactorily and were a source of much needed revenue. Nevertheless, The Financial Institutions Reform and Recovery Act, which was discussed previously, was passed in 1989. It forced S&Ls to liquidate *at once* their "junk" bond holdings. That caused their ices to plummet, and the thrifts were even further weakened as y took a loss on the sale. Jane Ingraham comments:

---

[1] Glenn Yago, *Junk Bonds: How High Yield Securities Restructured Corporate America* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1991), p. 5.

> **Overnight, profitable S&Ls were turned into government-owned basket cases in the hands of the Resolution Trust Corporation (RTC). To add to the disaster, the RTC itself, which became the country's largest owner of junk bonds ... flooded the market again with $1.6 billion of its holdings at the market's bottom in 1990....**
>
> **So it was government itself that crashed the junk bond market, not Michael Milken, although the jailed Milken and other former officials of Drexel Burnham Lambert have just agreed to a $1.3 billion settlement of the hundreds of lawsuits brought against them by government regulators, aggrieved investors, and others demanding "justice."[1]**

Incidentally, these bonds have since recovered and, had the S&Ls been allowed to keep them, they would be in better financial condition today. And so would be the RTC.

With the California upstarts out of the way, it was a simple matter to buy up the detested bonds at bargain prices and to bring control of the new market back to Wall Street. The New York firm of Salomon Brothers, for example, one of Drexel's most severe critics during the 1980s, is now a leading trader in the market Drexel created.

REAL PROBLEM IS GOVERNMENT REGULATION

So the real problem within the savings-and-loan industry is government regulation which has insulated it from the free market and encouraged it to embark upon unsound business practices. As the *Wall Street Journal* stated on March 10,1992:

> **If you're going to wreck a business the size of the U.S. Thrift industry, you need a lot more power than Michael Milken ever had. You need the power of national political authority, the kind of power possessed only by regulators and Congress. Whatever "hold" Milken or junk bonds may have had on the S&Ls, it was nothing compared with the interventions of Congress.[2]**

At the time this book went to press, the number of S&Ls that operated during the 1980s had dropped to less than half. As failures, mergers, and conversion into banks continue, the number **Will** decline further. Those that remain fall into two groups: those

---

t- "Banking on Government," pp. 24,25.

Quoted in "Banking on Government," p. 26.

that have been taken over by the RTC and those that have not. Most of those that remain under private control—and that is a relative term in view of the regulations they endure—are slowly remrrung to a healthy state as a result of improved profitability, asset quality, and capitalization. The RTC-run organizations, on the other hand, continue to hemorrhage due to failure by Congress to provide funding to close them down and pay them off. Losses from this group are adding $6 billion per year to the ultimate cost of bailout. President Clinton was asking Congress for an additional $45 billion and hinting that this should be the last bailout—but no promises.

The game continues.

CONGRESS IS PARALYZED, WITH GOOD REASON

Congress seems disinterested and paralyzed with inaction. One would normally expect dozens of politicians to be calling for a large-scale investigation of the ongoing disaster, but there is hardly a peep. The reason becomes obvious when one realizes that savings-and-loan associations, banks, and other federally regulated institutions are heavy contributors to the election campaigns of those who write the regulatory laws. A thorough, public investigation would undoubtedly turn up some cozy relationships that the legislators would just as soon keep confidential.

The second reason is that any honest inquiry would soon reveal the shocking truth that Congress itself is the primary cause of the problem. By following the socialist path and presuming to protect or benefit their constituency, they have suspended and violated the natural laws that drive a free-market economy. In so doing, they created a Frankenstein monster they could not control. The more they tried to tame the thing, the more destructive it became. As economist Hans Sennholz has observed:

> **The real cause of the disaster is the very financial structure that was fashioned by legislators and guided by regulators; they together created a cartel that, like all other monopolistic concoctions, is playing mischief with its victims.**[1]

A CARTEL WITHIN A CARTEL

Sennholz has chosen exactly the right word: *cartel*. The savings-and-loan industry, is really a cartel *within* a cartel. It could not

---

[1] "The Great Banking Scandal," by Hans F. Sennholz, *The Freeman,* Nov., 1990, p. 405.

function without Congress standing by to push unlimited amounts of money into it. And Congress could not do that without the banking cartel called the Federal Reserve System standing by as the "lender of last resort" to create money out of nothing for Congress to borrow. This comfortable arrangement between political scientists and monetary scientists permits Congress to vote for any scheme it wants, regardless of the cost. If politicians tried to raise that money through taxes, they would be thrown out of office. But being able to "borrow" it from the Federal Reserve System upon demand, allows them to collect it through the hidden mechanism of inflation, and not one voter in a hundred will complain.

The thrifts have become the illegitimate half-breed children of the Creature. And that is why the savings-and-loan story is included in this study.

If America is to survive as a free nation, her citizens must become far more politically educated than they are at present. As a people, we must learn not to reach for every political carrot dangled in front of us. As desirable as it may be for everyone to afford a home, we must understand that government programs pretending to make that possible actually wreak havoc with our system and bring about just the opposite of what they promise. After 60 years of subsidizing and regulating the housing industry, how many young people today can afford a home? Tinkering with the laws of supply and demand, plus the hidden tax called inflation to pay for the tinkering, has driven prices beyond the reach of many and has wiped out the down payments of others. Without such costs, common people would have much more money and purchasing power than they do today, and homes would be well within their reach.

SUMMARY

Our present-day problems within the savings-and-loan industry can be traced back to the Great Depression of the 1930s. Americans were becoming impressed by the theories of socialism and soon embraced the concept that it was proper for government to provide benefits for its citizens and to protect them against economic hardship.

Under the Hoover and Roosevelt administrations, new government agencies were established which purported to protect deposes in the S&Ls and to subsidize home mortgages for the middle class. These measures distorted the laws of supply and demand and, from that point forward, the housing industry was moved out of the free market and into the political arena.

Once the pattern of government intervention had been established, there began a long, unbroken series of federal rules and regulations that were the source of windfall profits for managers, appraiser, brokers, developers, and builders. They also weakened the industry by encouraging unsound business practices and high-risk investments.

When these ventures failed, and when the value of real estate began to drop, many S&Ls became insolvent. The federal insurance fund was soon depleted, and the government was confronted with its own promise to bail out these companies but not having any money to do so.

The response of the regulators was to create accounting gimmicks whereby insolvent thrifts could be made to appear solvent and, thus, continue in business. This postponed the inevitable and made matters considerably worse. The failed S&Ls continued to lose billions of dollars each month and added greatly to the ultimate cost of bailout, all of which would eventually have to be paid by the common man out of taxes and inflation. The ultimate cost is estimated at over one trillion dollars.

Congress appears to be unable to act and is strangely silent. This is understandable. Many representatives and senators are the beneficiaries of generous donations from the S&Ls. But perhaps the main reason is that Congress, itself, is the main culprit in this crime. In either case, the politicians would like to talk about something else.

In the larger view, the S&L industry is a cartel within a cartel. The fiasco could never have happened without the cartel called the Federal Reserve System standing by to create the vast amounts of bailout money pledged by Congress.

Chapter Five

NEARER TO THE HEART'S DESIRE

The 1944 meeting in Bretton Woods, New Hampshire, at which the world's most prominent socialists established the International Monetary Fund and the World Bank as mechanisms for eliminating gold from world finance; the hidden agenda behind the IMF/World Bank revealed as the building of world socialism; the role of the Federal Reserve in bringing that about.

As we have seen, the game called Bailout has been played over and over again in the rescue of large corporations, domestic banks, and savings-and-loan institutions. The pretense has been that these measures were necessary to protect the public. The result, however, has been just the opposite. The public has been exploited as billions of dollars have been expropriated through taxes and inflation. The money has been used to make up losses that should have been paid by the failing banks and corporations as the penalty for mismanagement and fraud.

While this was happening in our home-town stadium, the same game was being played in the international arena. There are two primary differences. One is that the amount of money at stake in the international game is much larger. Through a complex tangle of bank loans, subsidies, and grants, the Federal Reserve is becoming the "lender of last resort" for virtually the entire planet. The other difference is that, instead of claiming to be Protectors of the Public, the players have emblazoned across the backs of their uniforms: *Saviors of the World*.

BRETTON WOODS: AN ATTACK ON GOLD

The game began at an international meeting of financiers, Politicians, and theoreticians held in July of 1944 at the Mount Washington Hotel in Bretton Woods, New Hampshire. Officially, it was called the United Nations Monetary and Financial Conference, but is generally referred to today as simply the Bretton Woods Conference. Two international agencies were created at that meeting: the International Monetary Fund and its sister organization, the International Bank for Reconstruction and Development—-commonly called the World Bank.

The announced purposes of these organizations were admirable. The World Bank was to make loans to war-torn and underdeveloped nations so they could build stronger economies. The International Monetary Fund (IMF) was to promote monetary cooperation between nations by maintaining fixed exchange rates between their currencies. But the method by which these goals were to be achieved was less admirable. It was to terminate the use of gold as the basis of international currency exchange and replace it with a politically manipulated paper standard. In other words, it was to allow governments to escape the discipline of gold so they could create money out of nothing without paying the penalty of having their currencies drop in value on world markets.

Prior to this conference, currencies were exchanged in terms of their gold value, and the arrangement was called the "gold-exchange standard." This is not the same as a "gold-standard" in which a currency is backed by gold. It was merely that the exchange ratios of the various currencies—most of which were *not* backed by gold—were determined by how much gold they could buy in the open market. Their values, therefore, were set by supply and demand. Politicians and bankers hated the arrangement, because it was beyond their ability to manipulate. In the past, it had served as a remarkably efficient mechanism but it was a strict disciplinarian. As John Kenneth Galbraith observed:

> **The Bretton Woods arrangements sought to recapture the advantages of the gold standard—currencies that were exchangeable at stable and predictable rates into gold and thus at stable and predictable rates into each other. And this it sought to accomplish while minimizing the pain imposed by the gold standard on countries that were buying too much, selling too little and thus losing gold.**[1]

The method by which this was to be accomplished was exactly the method devised on Jekyll Island to allow American banks to create money out of nothing without paying the penalty of having their currencies devalued by other banks. It was the establishment of a *world* central bank which would create a common fiat money for all nations and then require them to inflate together at the same rate. There was to be a kind of international insurance fund which would rush that fiat money to any nation that temporarily needed it to face down a "run" on its currency. It wasn't born with all these features fully developed, just as the Federal Reserve wasn't fully developed when it was born. That, nevertheless, was the plan, and it was launched with all the structures in place.

---

[1] **lohn Kenneth Galbraith, *Money: Whence It Came, Where It Went* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1975), pp. 258,259.**

The theoreticians who drafted this plan were the well-known Fabian Socialist from England, John Maynard Keynes,[1] and the Assistant Secretary of the U.S. Treasury, Harry Dexter White.

THE FABIAN SOCIETY

The Fabians were an elite group of intellectuals who formed a semi-secret society for the purpose of bringing socialism to the world. Whereas Communists wanted to establish socialism quickly through violence and revolution, the Fabians preferred to do it slowly through propaganda and legislation. The word socialism was not to be used. Instead, they would speak of benefits for the people such as welfare, medical care, higher wages, and better working conditions. In this way, they planned to accomplish their objective without bloodshed and even without serious opposition. They scorned the Communists, not because they disliked their goals, but because they disagreed with their methods. To emphasize the importance of gradualism, they adopted the turtle as the symbol of their movement. The three most prominent leaders in the early days were Sidney and Beatrice Webb and George Bernard Shaw. A stained-glass window in the Beatrice Webb House in Surrey, England is especially enlightening. Across the top appears the last line from Omar Khayyam:

> Dear love, couldst thou and I with fate conspire
> To grasp this sorry scheme of things entire,
> Would we not shatter it to bits, and then
> Remould it nearer to the heart's desire!

---

eynes often is portrayed as having been merely a liberal. But, for his lifelong volvement with Fabians and their work, see Rose Martin, *Fabian Freeway; High* ad to *Socialism in the U.S.A.* (Boston: Western Islands, 1966).

Beneath the line *Remould it nearer to the heart's desire,* the mural depicts Shaw and Webb striking the earth with hammers. Across the bottom, the masses kneel in worship of a stack of books advocating the theories of socialism. Thumbing his nose at the docile masses is H.G. Wells who, after quitting the Fabians, denounced them as "the new machiavellians." The most revealing component, however, is the Fabian crest which appears Between Shaw and Webb. It is a wolf in sheep's clothing![1]

COMMUNIST MOLES

Harry Dexter White was America's chief technical expert and the dominant force at the conference. He eventually became the first Executive Director for the United States at the IMF. An interesting footnote to this story is that White was simultaneously a member of the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) and a member of a Communist espionage ring in Washington while he served as Assistant Secretary of the Treasury. And even more interesting is that the White House was informed of that fact when President Truman appointed him to his post. The FBI had transmitted to the White House detailed proof of White's activities on at least two separate occasions.[2] Serving as the technical secretary at the Bretton Woods conference was Virginius Frank Coe, a member of the same espionage ring to which White belonged. Coe later became the first Secretary of the IMF.

Thus, completely hidden from public view, there was a complex drama taking place in which the intellectual guiding lights at the Bretton Woods conference were Fabian Socialists and Communists. Although they were in disagreement over method, they were in perfect harmony on goal: international socialism.

There were undoubtedly other reasons for Communists to be enthusiastic about the IMF and the World Bank, despite the fact

---

[1] See Zygmund Dobbs, *The Great Deceit: Social Pseudo-Sciences* (West Sayville, New York: Veritas Foundation, 1964), opposite p. 1. Also Rose L. Martin, *Fabian Freeway: High Road to Socialism in the U.S.A.* (Boston: Western Islands, 1966), pp. 30, 31.

[2] See: David Rees, *Harry Dexter White: A Study in Paradox* (New York: Coward, McCann & Geoghegan, 1973); Whittaker Chambers, *Witness* (New York: Random House, 1952); Allen Weinstein, *Perjury: The Hiss-Chambers Case* (New York: Vintage Books, 1978); lames Bumham, *The Web of Subversion: Underground Networks in the U.S. Government* (New York: The lohn Day Co., 1954); Elizabeth Bentley, *Out of Bondage* (New York: Devin-Adair, 1951)

that the Soviet Union elected at the time not to become a member, the goal of the organizations was to create a world currency, a world central bank, and a mechanism to control the economies of all nations. In order for these things to happen, the United States would of necessity have to surrender its dominant position. In fact, it would have to be reduced to just one part of the collective whole. That fit in quite nicely with the Soviet plan. Furthermore, the World Bank was seen as a vehicle for moving capital from the United States and other industrialized nations to the underdeveloped nations, the very ones over which Marxists have always had the greatest control. They looked forward to the day when we would pay their bills. It has all come to pass.

IMF STRUCTURE AND FUNDING

The International Monetary Fund appears to be a part of the United Nations, much as the Federal Reserve System appears to be a part of the United States government, but it is entirely independent. It is funded on a quota basis by its member nations, almost two hundred in number. The greatest share of capital, however, comes from the more highly industrialized nations such as Great Britain, Japan, France, and Germany. The United States contributes the most, at about twenty per cent of the total. In reality, that twenty per cent represents about twice as much as the number indicates, because most of the other nations contribute worthless currencies which no one wants. The world prefers dollars.

One of the routine operations at the IMF is to exchange worthless currencies for dollars so the weaker countries can pay their international bills. This is supposed to cover temporary cash-flow" problems. It is a kind of international FDIC which rushes money to a country that has gone bankrupt so it can avoid devaluing its currency. The transactions are seldom paid back.

Although escape from the gold-exchange standard was the long-range goal of the IMF, the only way to convince nations to participate at the outset was to use gold itself as a backing for its own money supply—at least as a temporary expedient. As Keynes explained it:

> **I felt that the leading central banks would never voluntarily relinquish the then existing forms of the gold standard; and I did not desire a catastrophe sufficiently violent to shake them off**

> **involuntarily. The only practical hope lay, therefore, in a gradual evolution in the forms of a managed world currency, taking the existing gold standard as a starting point.**[1]

It was illegal for American citizens to own gold at that time, but everyone else in the world could exchange their paper dollars for gold at a fixed price of $35 per ounce. That made it the *de facto* international currency because, unlike any other at the time, its value was guaranteed. So, at the outset, the IMF adopted the dollar as its own international monetary unit.

PAPER GOLD

But the Fabian turtle was crawling inexorably toward its destination. In 1970, the IMF created a new monetary unit called the SDR, or Special Drawing Right. The media optimistically described it as "paper gold," but it was pure bookkeeping wizardry with no relationship to gold or anything else of tangible value. SDRs are based on "credits" which are provided by the member nations. These credits are not money. They are merely promises that the governments will *get* the money by taxing their own citizens should the need arise. The IMF considers these to be "assets" which then become the "reserves" from which loans are made to other governments. As we shall see in chapter ten, this is almost identical to the bookkeeping sleight-of-hand that is used to create money out of nothing at the Federal Reserve System.

Dennis Turner cuts through the garbage:

> **SDRs are turned into loans to Third-World nations by the creation of checking accounts in the commercial or central banks of the member nations in the name of the debtor governments. These bank accounts are created out of thin air. The IMF creates dollars, francs, pounds, or other hard currencies and gives them to a Third-World dictator, with inflation resulting in the country where the currency originated.... Inflation is caused in the industrialized nations while wealth is transferred from the general public to the debtor country. And the debtor doesn't repay.**

When the IMF was created, it was the vision of Fabian Socialist John Maynard Keynes that there be a world central bank issuing a

---

1. John Maynard Keynes, *The Collected Writings of,* Vol V (1930 rpt. New York: Macmillan, 1971), p. xx.

2. Dennis Turner, *When Your Bank Fails* (Princeton, New Jersey: Amvvell Publishing, 1983), p. 32.

eseive currency called the "bancor" to free all governments from the discipline of gold. With the creation of SDRs, the IMF had finally begun to fulfill that dream.

GOLD IS FINALLY ABANDONED

But there was still an obstacle. As long as the dollar was the primary currency used by the IMF and as long as it was redeemable in gold at $35 per ounce, the amount of international money that could be created would be limited. If the IMF were to function as a true world central bank with *unlimited* issue, the dollar had to be broken away from its gold backing as a first step toward replacing it completely with a bancor, an SDR or something else equally free from restraint.

On August 15,1971, President Nixon signed an executive order declaring that the United States would no longer redeem its paper dollars for gold. So ended the first phase of the IMF's metamorphosis. It was not yet a true central bank, because it could not create its own world currency. It had to depend on the central banks of its member nations to provide cash and so-called credits; but since these banks, themselves, could create as much money as they wished, from now on, there would be no limit.

The original purpose had been to maintain fixed rates of exchange between currencies; but the IMF has presided over more than two hundred currency devaluations. In private industry, a failure of that magnitude might be cause for going out of business, but not in the world of politics. The greater the failure, the greater the pressure to *expand* the program. So, when the dollar broke loose from gold and there was no longer a ready standard for measuring currency values, the IMF merely changed its goal and continued to expand its operation. The new goal was to "overcome trade deficits."

TRADE DEFICITS

The topic of trade deficits is a favorite among politicians, economists, and talk-show hosts. Everyone agrees they are bad, but there is much disagreement over what causes them. Let's have a try at it.

A trade deficit is a condition that exists when a country imports a greater value of goods than it exports. In other words, it spends ^ore than it earns in international trade. This is similar to the situation of an individual who spends more than he earns. In both cases, the process cannot be sustained unless: (1) earnings are increased; (2) money is taken out of savings; (3) assets are sold; (4) money is counterfeited; or (5) money is borrowed. Unless one of these occurs, the individual or the country has no choice but to decrease spending.

Increasing one's earnings is the best solution. In fact, it is the *only* solution for the long haul. All else is temporary at best. An individual can increase his income by working harder or smarter or longer. A country does it the same way. But it cannot happen unless private industry is allowed to flourish in a system of free-enterprise. The problem with this option is that few politicians respect the dynamic power of the free-enterprise system. Their world is built upon political programs in which the laws of the free market are manipulated to achieve politically popular goals. They may desire the option of increasing the nation's income by increasing its productivity, but their political agenda prevents that from happening.[1]

The second option is to obtain extra money out of savings. But there are virtually no governments in the world today that have any savings. Their debts and liabilities exceed assets by a large margin. Likewise, most of their industries and their citizens are in a similar position. Their savings already have been consumed by government.

The third option, the selling of assets, also is not available for most countries. By assets, we mean tangible items other than merchandise which is normally for sale. Although these, too, are assets in the broad meaning, in accounting methodology, they are classified as inventory. The only *government* asset that is readily marketable is gold, and few countries today have a stockpile from which to draw. Even in those cases, what little they have is already

---

1. It is the author's opinion that it's time to get the politicians wearing Uncle-Sam suits off our backs. Which is easier said than done, because Americans still like their protectionist subsidies: tariffs to protect the business man, minimum wages and compulsory unionism to protect the worker, ethnic quotas in hiring to protect the underdog, cradle-to-the-grave insurance programs, unemployment benefits, disability compensation, extreme environmental and safety measures—regardless of cost. Free enterprise can and will produce all of these benefits in order to compete for buyers and employees alike. But, as long as these measures are *compulsory* and chosen on the basis of political popularity without regard to economic consequences, American industry will never be able to recover. And then *none* of the illusory benefits will remain.

owed to another government or a bank. As for *private* assets, nations can, for a while, sell these to foreign buyers and offset their negative trade balances. That is what has been happening in the United States for many years as office buildings, stocks, factories, and entire companies have been sold to foreign investors. But the fact remains that the nation is *still* spending more than it earns, and that process cannot continue indefinitely. Foreign ownership and control over industry and commerce also create sociological and political problems. Underdeveloped countries do not have to worry about any of that, however, because they have few private assets to sell.

THE COUNTERFEIT OPTION

The counterfeit option is available only if a country happens to be in the unique position of having its currency accepted as the medium of international trade, as has been the case for the United States. In that event, it is possible to create money out of nothing, and other nations have no choice but to accept it. Thus, for years, the United States has been able to spend more money than it earned in trade by having the Federal Reserve create whatever it needed.

When the dollar was separated entirely from gold in 1971, it ceased being the official IMF world currency and finally had to compete with other currencies—primarily the mark and the yen—on the basis of its relative merit. From that point forward, its value increasingly became discounted. Nevertheless, it was still the preferred medium of exchange. Also, the U.S. was one of the safest places in the world to invest one's money. But, to do so, one first had to convert his native currency into dollars. These facts gave the U-S. dollar greater value on international markets than it otherwise would have merited. So, in spite of the fact that the Federal Reserve was creating huge amounts of money during this time, the demand for it by foreigners was seemingly limitless. The result is that America has continued to finance its trade deficit with fiat money—counterfeit, if you will—a feat which no other nation in the world could hope to accomplish.

We have been told that our nation's trade deficit is a terrible thing, and that it would be better to "weaken the dollar" to bring it an end. Weakening the dollar is a euphemism for increasing inflation. In truth, America is not hurt by a trade deficit at all. In We are the benefactors while our trading partners are the victims. We get the cars and TV sets while they get the funny money. We get the hardware. They get the paperware.

There is a dark side to the exchange, however. As long as the dollar remains in high esteem as a trade currency, America can continue to spend more than it earns. But when the day arrives—as it certainly must—when the dollar tumbles and foreigners no longer want it, the free ride will be over. When that happens, *hundreds of billions* of dollars that are now resting in foreign countries will quickly come back to our shores as people everywhere in the world attempt to convert them into yet more real estate, factories, and tangible products, and to do so as quickly as possible before they become even more worthless. As this flood of dollars bids up prices, we will finally experience the inflation that should have been caused in years past but which was postponed because foreigners were kind enough to take the dollars out of our economy in exchange for their products.

The chickens *will* come home to roost. But, when they do, it will not be because of the trade deficit. It will be because we were able to *finance* the trade deficit with fiat money created by the Federal Reserve. If it were not for that, the trade deficit could not have happened.

Back to the main topic, which is the five methods by which a trade deficit can be paid. Through the process of elimination, the fourth option of *borrowing* is where the action is today for most of the world, and that is where the IMF positioned itself in 1970. Its new mission was to provide loans so countries can continue to spend more than they earn, but to do so in the name of "overcoming trade deficits."

IMF LOANS: DOOMED BUT SWEET

These loans do not go into private enterprises where they have a chance of being turned for a profit. They go into state-owned and state-operated industries which are constipated by bureaucracy and poisoned by corruption. Doomed to economic failure from the start, they consume the loans with no possibility of repayment. Even the interest quickly becomes too much to handle. Which means the IMF must fall back to the "reserves," back to the "assets," back to the "credits," and eventually back to the taxpayers to bail them out.

Whereas the International Monetary Fund is evolving into a world central bank which eventually will issue a world currency based on nothing, its sister organization, the World Bank, has become its lending agency. Acting as *Savior of the World,* it seeks to aid the underdeveloped nations, to feed the hungry, and to bring a better life to all mankind. In pursuit of these humanitarian goals, it provides loans to governments at favorable terms, usually at rates below market, for terms as long as fifty years, and often with no payments due until after ten years.

Funding for these loans comes from member states in the form of a small amount of cash, plus promises to deliver about ten-times more if the Bank gets into trouble. The promises, described as "callable capital," constitute a kind of FDIC insurance program but with no pretense at maintaining a reserve fund. (In that sense it is more honest than the real FDIC which does maintain the pretense but, in reality, is based on nothing more than a similar promise.)

Based upon the small amount of seed money plus the far greater amount of "credits" and "promises" from governments of the industrialized countries, the World Bank is able to go into the commercial loan markets and borrow larger sums at extremely low interest rates. After all, the loans are backed by the most powerful governments in the world which have promised to force their taxpayers to make the payments if the Bank should get into trouble. It then takes these funds and relends them to the underdeveloped countries at slightly higher rates, making a profit on the arbitrage.

The unseen aspect of this operation is that the money it processes is money which, otherwise, would have been available for investment in the private sector or as loans to consumers. It siphons off much-needed development capital for private industry, prevents new jobs from being created, causes interest rates to rise, and retards the economy at large.

THE HIDDEN AGENDA: WORLD SOCIALISM

Although most of the policy statements of the World Bank deal with economic issues, a close monitoring of its activities reveal a Preoccupation with social and political issues. This should not be surprising considering that the Bank was perceived by its founders as an instrument for social and political change. The change which it was designed to bring about was the building of world socialism, and that is exactly what it is accomplishing today.

This hidden agenda becomes crystal clear in the nature of what the Bank calls Sectoral Loans and Structural-Adjustment Loans. In the first category, only part of the money is to be used for the costs of specific projects while the rest goes to support policy changes in the economic sector. In the second group, *all* of the money is for policy changes and *none* of it is for projects. In recent years, almost half of the loans to underdeveloped countries have been in that category. What are the policy changes that are the object of these loans? They add up to one thing: *the building of world socialism.*

As the Fabians had planned it, the word socialism is not to be used. Instead, the loans are issued for government hydro-electric projects, government oil refineries, government lumber mills, government mining companies, and government steel plants. It is delivered from the hands of politicians and bureaucrats into the hands of other politicians and bureaucrats. When the money comes from government, goes to government, and is administered by government, the result will be the expansion of government.

Here is an example. One of the policy changes often required by the World Bank as a condition of granting a loan is that the recipient country must hold down its wages. The assumption is that the government has the power—and rightfully *should* have the power—to set wages! In other words, one of the conditions of its loan is that the state must be omnipotent.

Paul Roberts holds the William E. Simon Chair of Political Economy at the Center for Strategic and International Studies in Washington. Writing in *Business Week,* he says:

> The entire "development process" has been guided by the belief that reliance on private enterprise and equity investment is incompatible with economic and social progress. In place of such proven avenues of success, development planning substituted loans and foreign aid so that governments of the LDCs [Less Developed Countries] could control economic activity in keeping with plans drawn up by experts.
>
> Consequently, economic life in the LDCs was politicized from the start. By endowing governments with extensive control over their economies, the U.S. set up conditions exactly opposite to those required for economic growth.[1]

---

[1] "How 'Experts' Caused the Third World Debt Crisis," by Paul Craig Roberts, *Business Week,* November 2,1987.

Ken Ewert explains further that the conditions imposed by the fund are seldom free-market oriented. He says:

> The Fund concentrates on "macro-policies," such as fiscal and monetary policies or exchange rates, and pays little attention to fundamental issues like private property rights and freedom of enterprise. Implicit ... is the belief that with proper "macro-management" any economic system is viable....
>
> Even more important, it has allowed governments the world over to expropriate the wealth of their citizens more efficiently (through the hidden tax of inflation) while at the same time aggrandizing their own power. There is little doubt that the IMF is an influence for world-wide socialism.[1]

An important feature of the Structural-Adjustment Loans is that the money need not be applied to any specific development project. It can be spent for anything the recipient wishes. That includes interest payments on overdue bank loans. Thus, the World Bank becomes yet one more conduit from the pockets of taxpayers to the assets of commercial banks which have made risky loans to Third-World countries.

AUSTERITY MEASURES AND SCAPEGOATS

Not every measure advocated by the IMF and World Bank is socialistic. Some of them even appear to be in support of the private sector, such as the reduction of government subsidies and welfare. They may include tax increases to reduce budget deficits. These policy changes are often described in the press as "austerity measures," and they are seen as hard-nosed business decisions to salvage the failing economies of underdeveloped countries. But, as the wolf (in sheep's clothing) said to Little Red-Riding-Hood, "All the better to fool you with, my dear." These austerity measures are mostly rhetoric. The borrowing nations usually ignore the conditions with impunity, and the World Bank keeps the money coming anyway. It's all part of the game.

Nevertheless, the "structural-adjustment" conditions provide a scapegoat for local politicians who can now place the blame for their nation's misery on big, bad "capitalists" from America and the IMF. People who have been taught that it is government's role to provide for their welfare, their health care, their food and housing, their jobs and retirement—such people will not be happy when they hear that these "rights" are being threatened. So they demonstrate in the streets in protest, they riot in the commercial sections of town so they can steal goods from stores, and they throng to the banner of leftist politicians who promise to restore or increase their benefits. As described by *Insight* magazine:

---

[1] **"The International Monetary Fund," by Ken S. Ewert, *The Freeman,* April, 1989, PP-157,158.**

> National strikes, riots, political upheavals and social unrest in Argentina, Bolivia, Brazil, Ecuador, Egypt, Haiti, Liberia, Peru, Sudan and elsewhere have at various times been attributed to IMF austerity programs....
>
> Some came to the fund with domestic trouble already brewing and seized on the fund as a convenient scapegoat.[1]

Quite true. An honest reading of the record shows that the IMF, far from being a force for austerity in these countries, has been an engine of socialist waste and a fountain of abundance for the corrupt leaders who rule.

FINANCING CORRUPTION AND DESPOTISM

Nowhere is this pattern more blatant than in Africa. Julius Nyerere, the dictator of Tanzania, is notorious for his "villagization" program in which the army has driven the peasants from their land, burned their huts, and loaded them like cattle into trucks for relocation into government villages. The purpose is to eliminate opposition by bringing everyone into compounds where they can be watched and controlled. Meanwhile the economy staggers, farms have gone to weed, and hunger is commonplace. Yet, Tanzania has received more aid per capita from the World Bank than any other nation.

In Uganda, government security forces have engaged in mass detentions, torture, and killing of prisoners. The same is true under the terrorist government in Zimbabwe. Yet, both regimes continue to be the recipients of millions of dollars in World Bank funding.

Zimbabwe (formerly Rhodesia) is a classic case. After its independence, the leftist government nationalized (confiscated) many of the farms previously owned by white settlers. The most desirable of these lands became occupied by the government's senior ruling-party officials, and the rest were turned into state-run collectives. They were such miserable failures that the workers on these farmlands were, themselves, soon begging for food. Not daunted by these failures, the socialist politicians announced in 1991 that they were going to nationalize half of the remaining farms as well. And they barred the courts from inquiring into how much compensation would be paid to their owners.

---

[1] "IMF Hands Out Prescription for Sour Economic Medicine," *Insight,* February 9, 1987, p. 14.

The IMF was represented in Zimbabwe at the time by Michel Camdessus, the Governor of the central Bank of France, and a former finance minister in Francois Mitterrand's Socialist government. After being informed of Zimbabwe's plan to confiscate additional land and to resettle people to work on those lands, Camdessus agreed to a loan valued at 42 billion rands with full knowledge that much of it would be used for the resettlement project.

Perhaps the worst violations of human rights have occurred in Ethiopia under the Marxist regime of Mengistu Haile Mariam. The famine of 1984-85, which threatened the lives of millions of people, was the result of government nationalization and disruption of agriculture. Massive resettlement programs have torn hundreds of thousands of people from their privately owned land in the north and deported them to concentration-camp "villages" in the south, complete with guard towers. A report by a French voluntary medical-assistance group, Doctors without Borders, reveals that the forced resettlement program may have killed as many people as the famine itself.[1] Dr. Rony Brauman, director of the organization, describes their experience:

> Armed militiamen burst into our compounds, seized our equipment and menaced our volunteers. Some of our employees were beaten, and our trucks, medicines and food stores confiscated. We left Ethiopia branded as enemies of the revolution. The regime spoke the truth. The atrocities committed in the name of Mengistu's master plan *did* make us enemies of the revolution.[2]

FINANCING FAMINE AND GENOCIDE

In the 1980s, the world was saddened by photographs of starving children in Ethiopia, but what the West did not realize was that this was a *planned* famine. It was modelled after Stalin's

[1] "Ethiopia Bars Relief Team," by Blaine Harden, *Washington Post,* December 3, 1985, p. A-21.

[2] "Famine Aid: Were we Duped?" by Dr. Rony Brauman, *Reader's Digest,* October 1986, p. 71.

starvation program in the Ukraine in the 1930s and Mao's starvation of the peasants in the '40s. Its purpose was to starve the population into total submission to the government, for it is the government which decides who will eat and who will not. Yet, right up to the time Mengistu was overthrown, the World Bank continued to send him hundreds of millions of dollars, with much of it going specifically to the Ministry of Agriculture, the very agency in charge of the resettlement program.[1]

In the late 1970s the same story unfolded in Communist Vietnam. There were resettlement programs, forced collectivization, concentration camps, atrocities, and tens of thousands of dissidents escaping to the sea only to drown in overcrowded, leaky boats. Throughout it all, the regime was generously funded by the World Bank.

Laos has jailed thousands of political prisoners; Syria has massacred 20,000 members of its opposition; Indonesia has uprooted several million people from their homelands in Java; the Sandinistas in Nicaragua murdered their opposition and terrorized the nation into submission; Poland, while a puppet state of the Soviet Union, brutally suppressed its trade-union movement; China massacred its dissident students and imprisoned its religious leaders; and the former Soviets slaughtered civilians in Afghanistan while conducting a relentless espionage war against the entire free world. Yet, these regimes have been the recipient of literally billions of dollars from the World Bank.

How can the Bank's managers continue in conscience to fund such genocidal regimes? Part of the answer is that they are not permitted to have a conscience. David Dunn, head of the Bank's Ethiopia Desk explained: "Political distinctions are not something our charter allows us to take into account."[2] The greater part of the answer, however, is that all socialist regimes have the potential for genocide, and the Bank is committed to socialism. The brutalities of these countries are all in a days work for serious socialists who view them as merely unfortunate necessities for the building of their utopia. Lenin said you cannot make an omelet without cracking a few eggs. George Bernard Shaw, one of the early leaders of the Fabian Socialist movement, expressed it this way:

---

[1] **James Bovard,** ***The World Bank vs. The World's Poor,*** **Cato Policy Analysis (Washington, D.C.: Cato Institute, 1987), pp. 4-6.**

[2] **"Harnessing World Bank to the West,"** ***Insight,*** **February 9,1987, p. 8.**

> Under Socialism, you would not be allowed to be poor. You would be forcibly fed, clothed, lodged, taught, and employed whether you liked it or not. If it were discovered that you had not character and industry enough to be worth all this trouble, you might possibly be executed in a kindly manner; but whilst you were permitted to live, you would have to live well.[1]

REASON TO ABOLISH THE FEDERAL RESERVE

The top echelon at the World Bank are brothers under the skin to the socialist dictators with whom they do daily business. Under the right circumstances, they could easily switch roles. What we have seen is merely a preview of what can be expected for the entire world if the envisioned *New World Order* becomes operational.

The IMF/World Bank is the protege of the Federal Reserve. It would not exist without the flow of American dollars and the benevolence of American leadership. The Fed has become an accomplice in the support of totalitarian regimes throughout the world. As stated at the beginning of this study, that is one of the reasons it should be abolished: *It is an instrument of totalitarianism.*

GETTING RICH FIGHTING POVERTY

While the top leaders and theoreticians at the IMF and World Bank dream of world socialism, the middle managers and political rulers have more immediate goals in mind. The bureaucracy enjoys a plush life administering the process, and the politicians on the receiving end obtain wealth and power. Ideology is not their concern. Socialism, capitalism, fascism, it makes no difference to them as long as the money flows.

Graham Hancock has been an astute observer of the international-aid "industry" and has attended their plush conferences. He knows many of the leading players personally. In his book, *Lords of Poverty,* he speaks of the IMF's Structural-Adjustment loans:

> Corrupt Ministers of Finance and dictatorial Presidents from Asia, Africa, and Latin America are tripping over their own expensive footwear in their unseemly haste to "get adjusted." For such people, money has probably never been easier to obtain than it is today; with

---

[1] George Bernard Shaw, *The Intelligent Woman's Guide to Socialism and Capitalism* (1928; rpt. New Brunswick, New Jersey: Transaction Books, 1984), p. 470.

> no complicated projects to administer and no messy accounts to keep, the venal, the cruel and the ugly are laughing literally all the way to the bank. For them structural adjustment is like a dream come true. No sacrifices are demanded of them personally. All they have to do—amazing but true—is *screw the poor,* and they've already had plenty of practice at that.[1]

In India, the World Bank funded the construction of a dam that displaced two million people, flooded 360 square miles, and wiped out 81,000 acres of forest cover. In Brazil, it spent a billion dollars to "develop" a part of the Amazon basin and to fund a series of hydroelectric projects. It resulted in the deforestation of an area half the size of Great Britain and has caused great human suffering because of resettlement. In Kenya, the Bura irrigation scheme caused such desolation that a fifth of the native population abandoned the land. The cost was $50,000 *per family* served. In Indonesia, the transmigration program mentioned previously has devastated tropical forests—at the same time that the World Bank is funding reforestation projects. The cost of resettling one family is $7,000, which is about ten-times the Indonesian per-capita income.

Livestock projects in Botswana led to the destruction of grazing land and the death of thousands of migratory animals. This resulted in the inability of the natives to obtain food by hunting, forcing them into dependence on the government for survival. While Nigeria and Argentina are drowning in debt, billions from the World Bank have gone into building lavish new capital cities to house government agencies and the ruling elite. In Zaire, Mexico, and the Philippines, political leaders became billionaires while receiving World Bank loans on behalf of their nations. In the Central African Republic, IMF and World Bank loans were used to stage a coronation for its emperor.

The record of corruption and waste is endless. But the real eye-opener is in the failure of socialist ventures, those magnificent projects which were to bring prosperity to the underdeveloped countries. Here are just a few examples.

CONVERTING MONEY INTO FAILURE

Before receiving loans from the World Bank, Tanzania was not wealthy, but it fed its own people, and it had economic growth.

---

1. Graham Hancock, *Lords of Poverty: The Power, Prestige, and Corruption of the International Aid Business* (New York: Atlantic Monthly Press, 1989), pp. 59,60.

After receiving more than 3 billion dollars in loans, it nationalized the nation's farms and industries and converted every business into a government agency. It built a truck assembly plant, a tire factory, electronic factories, highways, ports, railways, and dams. Tanzania's industrial production and agricultural output fell by almost one-third. Food was the main export in 1966. Under socialism, food had to be imported—paid for by foreign aid and more loans from the World Bank. The country is hopelessly in debt with no way to repay.

Argentina once had one of the highest standards of living in Latin America. But then it became the recipient of massive loans from the World Bank as well as commercial banks in the United States. Since the money was given to politicians, it was used to build the only system politicians know how to build: socialism. By 1982, the Gross National Product was in a nose dive, manufacturing had fallen to less than half of capacity, thousands of privately owned companies had been forced into bankruptcy, unemployment was soaring, and so was welfare. By 1989, inflation was running at an average of 5,000% and, in the summer of that year, topped at 1,000,000%! Banks were offering interest rates of 600% per month in hopes of keeping deposits from being moved out of the country. People were rioting in the streets for food, and the government was blaming greedy shop owners for raising prices. The nation was hopelessly in debt with no way to repay.

Brazil is run by the military, and the state controls the economy. Government-owned companies consume 65% of all industrial investment, which means that the private sector is limited to 35% and is shrinking. The government used loans from U.S. banks to create an oil company, Petroleo Brasileiro S.A., which became Latin America's largest corporation. Despite huge oil deposits and record-high oil prices, the company operated at a loss and was not even able to produce enough gasoline for its own citizens. By 1990, Nation was running at 5,000%. Since 1960, its prices had risen to 164,000 times their original level. A new crime was invented called hedging against inflation," and people were arrested for charging the free-market price for their goods and for using dollars or gold as money. Led by Communist organizers, mobs roamed the streets shouting "We're hungry. Steal what you will!" The nation was hopelessly in debt with no way to repay.

The experience in Mexico was a carbon copy of that in Brazil, except that the amount of money was larger. When the world's fourth largest oil reserves were discovered, Mexican politicians reached for the brass ring. With billions borrowed from U.S. banks, they launched Petroleos Mexicanos (PEMEX) and soon became the world's fifth largest oil producer. They also built chemical plants and railroads, and launched many other industrial projects. These were run as welfare agencies instead of businesses: too many people on the payroll, too many managers, excessive salaries, too many holidays, and unrealistic benefits. The ventures floundered and lost money. Private businesses failed by the thousands, and unemployment rose. The government increased the minimum wage causing more businesses to fail and more unemployment. That led to more welfare and unemployment benefits. To pay for that, the government borrowed even more and began creating its own fiat money. Inflation destroyed what was left of the economy.

Price controls were next, along with rent and food subsidies, and doubling the minimum wage. By 1982, Mexicans were trading their pesos for dollars and sending their savings out of the country, as the peso became all but worthless in commerce. In 1981, the average wage for Mexican workers was 31% of the average wage for Americans. By 1989, it had fallen to 10%. Mexico, once one of the major food exporters in the world, was now required to import millions of dollars worth of food grains. This required still more money and more loans. All this occurred while oil prices were high and production was booming. A few years later, when oil prices fell, the failures and shortfalls became even more dramatic.

In 1995, Mexico's bank loans were once again on the brink of default, and, once again, U.S. taxpayers were thrown into the breech by Congress to cover more than $30 billion at risk. Although this loan was eventually repaid, the money to do so was extracted from the Mexican people through another round of massive inflation, which plunged their standard of living even lower. The nation is now hopelessly mired in socialism. The Communist Party, promising "reform" and still more socialism, is attracting a large following and could become a potent political force.

1. **The same American banks that were making the loans were soliciting this flight capital and ended up getting deposits of the same money they had lent. It was nice business both ways.**

Thus, the saga continues. After pouring billions of dollars into underdeveloped countries around the globe, no development has taken place. In fact, we have seen just the opposite. Most countries are worse off than before the Saviors of the World got to them.

SUMMARY

The IMF and the World Bank, were created at a meeting of global financiers and politicians held at Bretton Woods, New Hampshire, in 1944. Their announced goals were to facilitate international trade and to stabilize the exchange rates of national currencies. The unannounced goals were quite different. They were the elimination of the gold-exchange standard as the basis of currency valuation and the establishment of world socialism.

The method by which gold was to be eliminated in international trade was to replace it with a world currency which the IMF, acting as a world central bank, would create out of nothing. The method by which world socialism was to be established was to use the World Bank to transfer money—disguised as loans—to the governments of the underdeveloped countries and to do so in such a way as to insure the demise of free enterprise. The money was to be delivered from the hands of politicians and bureaucrats into the hands of other politicians and bureaucrats. When the money comes from government, goes to government, and is administered by government, the result will be the expansion of government.

The theoreticians who dominated the conference at Bretton Woods were the well-known Fabian Socialist from England, John Maynard Keynes, and the Assistant Secretary of the U.S. Treasury, Harry Dexter White. White became the first Executive Director for the United States at the IMF.

The Fabians were an elite group of intellectuals who agreed with Communists as to the goal of socialism but disagreed over tactics. Whereas Communists advocated revolution by force and violence, Fabians advocated gradualism and the transformation of society through legislation.

It was learned in later years that Harry Dexter White was a member of a Communist espionage ring. Thus, hidden from view, there was a complex drama taking place in which the two intellectual founders of the Bretton-Woods accords were a Fabian Socialist and a Communist, working together to bring about their mutual goal: world socialism.

Capital for the IMF and the World Bank comes from the industrialized nations, with the United States putting up the most. Funds consist partly of hard currencies—such as the dollar, yen, mark and franc—but these are augmented by many times that amount in the form of "credits." These are merely promises by the member governments to get the money from their taxpayers if the Bank gets into trouble with its loans.

While the IMF is gradually evolving into a central bank for the world, the World Bank is serving as its lending arm. As such, it has become the engine for transferring wealth from the industrialized nations to the underdeveloped countries. While this has lowered the economic level of the donating countries, it has not raised the level of the recipients. The money has simply disappeared down the drain of political corruption and waste.

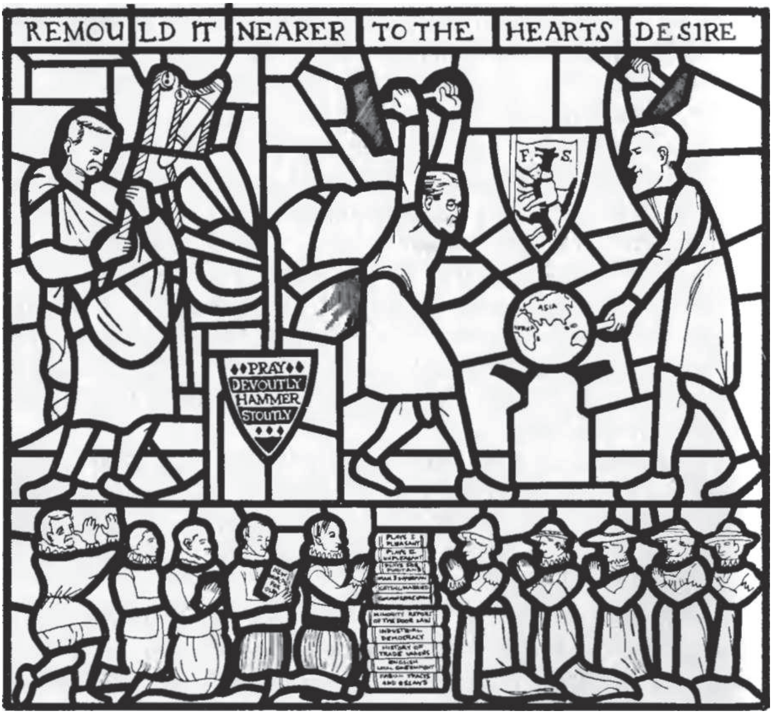
REMOULD IT NEARER TO THE HEARTS DESIRE
F. S.
ASIA
AFRICA
PRAY DEVOUTLY HAMMER STOUTLY
PLAYS I PLEASANT
PLAYS II UNPLEASANT
PLAYS FOR PURITANS
MAN & SUPERMAN
GETTING MARRIED
MINORITY REPORT OF THE POOR LAW
INDUSTRIAL DEMOCRACY
HISTORY OF TRADE UNIONS
ENGLISH LOCAL GOVERNMENT
FABIAN TRACTS AND ESSAYS

This is an accurate rendering of the stained-glass window in the Beatrice Webb House in Surrey, England, headquarters of the Fabian Society. It depicts Sidney Webb and George Bernard Shaw striking the earth with hammers to *"REMOULD IT NEARER TO THE HEARTS DESIRE."* Note the wolf in sheep's clothing in the Fabian crest above the globe.

Chapter Six

BUILDING THE NEW WORLD ORDER

The Game-Called-Bailout reexamined and shown to be far more than merely a means of getting taxpayers to foot the cost of bad loans; the final play revealed as the merger of all nations into world government; the unfolding of that strategy as applied to Panama, Mexico, Brazil, Argentina, China, Eastern Europe, and Russia.

Let us return now to the game called bailout. Everything in the previous chapter has been merely background information to understand the game as it is played in the international arena. Here, finally, are the rules:

1. Commercial banks in the industrialized nations, backed by their respective central banks, create money out of nothing and lend it to the governments of underdeveloped nations. They know that these are risky loans, so they charge an interest rate that is high enough to compensate. It is more than what they expect to receive in the long run.
2. When the underdeveloped nations cannot pay the interest on their loans, the IMF and World Bank enter the game as both players and referees. Using additional money created out of nothing by the central banks of their member nations, they advance "development" loans to the governments which now have enough to pay the interest on the original loans with enough left over for their own political purposes.
3. The recipient country quickly exhausts the new supply of money, and the play returns to point number two. This time, however, the new loans are guaranteed by the World Bank and the central banks of the industrialized nations. Now that the risk of default is removed, the commercial banks agree to reduce the interest to

the point anticipated at the beginning. The debtor governments resume payments.

4. The final play is — well, in this version of the game there appears to be no final play, because the plan is to keep the game going *forever*. To make that possible, certain things must happen that are very final, indeed. They include the conversion of the IMF into a world central bank as Keynes had planned, which then issues an international fiat money. Once that "Bank of Issue" is in place, the IMF can collect unlimited resources from the citizens of the world through the hidden tax called inflation. The money stream then can be sustained indefinitely—with or without the approval of the separate nations—because they will no longer have money of their own.

Since this game results in a hemorrhage of wealth from the industrialized nations, their economies are doomed to be brought down further and further, a process that has been going on since Bretton Woods. The result will be a severe lowering of their living standards and their demise as independent nations. The hidden reality behind so-called development loans is that America and other industrialized nations are being subverted by that process. *That is not an accident; it is the essence of the plan.* A strong nation is not likely to surrender its sovereignty. Americans would not agree to turn over their monetary system, their military, or their courts to a world body made up of governments which have been despotic to their own people, especially since most of those regimes have already revealed anti-American hostility. But if Americans can be brought to the point where they are suffering from a collapse of their economy and from a breakdown in civil order, things will be different. When they stand in bread lines and face anarchy in their streets, they will be more willing to give up sovereignty in return for "assistance" from the World Bank and the UN "peacekeeping" forces. This will become even more acceptable if a structured demise of Communism can be arranged ahead of time to make it appear that the world's major political systems have converged into the common denominator of "social democracy."

THE FINAL PLAY

The underdeveloped nations, on the other hand, are *not* being raised up. What is happening to them is that their political leaders are becoming addicted to the IMF cash flow and will be unable to break the habit. These countries are being conquered by money instead of arms. Soon they will no longer be truly independent nations. They are becoming mere components in the system of world socialism planned by Harry Dexter White and John Maynard Keynes. Their leaders are being groomed to become potentates in a new, high-tech feudalism, paying homage to their Lords in New York. And they are eager to do it in return for privilege and power within the "New World Order." *That* is the final play.

The essence of socialism is redistribution of the wealth. The goal is equality, and that means taking from the rich and giving to the poor. At least that's the theory. Unfortunately, the poor are never benefited by this maneuver. They either do not get the money in the first place—too much is siphoned off by the bureaucracies which administer the programs—or, if they do get any of it, they don't know what to do with it. They merely spend it until it is gone, and then *no one* has any money— except, of course, those who administer the government programs. Nevertheless, politicians know that promises to redistribute the wealth are popular among two groups: the voters who naively believe it will help the poor, and the socialist managers who see it as job security. Supported by these two voting blocs, election to office is assured.

One of the early American advocates of socialism on a global scale—including the draining of wealth away from the "rich" United States—was John F. Kennedy. He undoubtedly learned the concept while attending the Fabian London School of Economics in 1935-36 urst prior to his father's appointment as Ambassador to England. When JFK became President, his political views continued to carry the imprint of that training. In September of 1963, he addressed the finance ministers and central-bank governors from 102 nations at the annual meeting of the IMF/World Bank. He explained the concept of world socialism in glowing terms:

> Twenty years ago, when the architects of these institutions met to design an international banking structure, the economic life of the world was polarized in overwhelming, and even alarming, measure on the United States.... Sixty per cent of the gold reserves of the world were here in the United States.... There was a need for redistribution of the financial resources of the world.... And there was an equal need to organize a flow of capital to the impoverished countries of the

> world. All this has come about. It did not come about by chance but by conscious and deliberate and responsible planning.[1]

CFR SETS STRATEGY

The brain trust for implementing the Fabian plan in America is called the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR). We shall look at it closely in future chapters, but it is important to know at this point that almost all of America's leadership has come from this small group. That includes our presidents and their advisers, cabinet members, ambassadors, board members of the Federal Reserve System, directors of the largest banks and investment houses, presidents of universities, and heads of metropolitan newspapers, news services, and TV networks.[2] It is not an exaggeration to describe this group as the hidden government of the United States.

CFR members have never been shy about calling for the weakening of America as a necessary step toward the greater good of building world government. One of the CFR founders was John Foster Dulles, who later was appointed Secretary-of-State by CFR member Dwight Eisenhower. In 1939, Dulles said:

> Some dilution or leveling off of the sovereignty system as it prevails in the world today must take place ... to the immediate disadvantage of those nations which now possess the preponderance of power.... The establishment of a common money ... would deprive our government of exclusive control over a national money.... The United States must be prepared to make sacrifices afterward in setting up a world politico-economic order which would level off inequalities of economic opportunity with respect to nations.[3]

CFR member Zbigniew Brzezinski was the National Security Adviser to CFR member Jimmy Carter. In 1970, Brzezinski wrote:

> ... some international cooperation has already been achieved, but further progress will require greater American sacrifices. More intensive efforts to shape a new world monetary structure will have to be undertaken, with some consequent risk to the present relatively favorable American position.[4]

---

1. "Text of Kennedy Speech to World Monetary Parley," *New York Times,* October 1,1963, p. 16.
2. For an in-depth analysis of the CFR, including a comprehensive list of members, see James Perloff, *Shadows of Power* (Appleton, Wisconsin: Western Islands, 1988).
3. "Dulles Outlines World Peace Plan," *New York Times,* October 28,1939.
4. Zbigniew Brzezinski, *Between Two Ages: America's Role in the Technetronic Era* (Westport, Connecticut: Greenwood Press, 1970), p. 300.

At the Spring, 1983, Economic Summit in Williamsburg, Virginia, President Ronald Reagan declared:

> **National economies need monetary coordination mechanisms, and that is why an integrated world economy needs a common monetary standard.... But, no national currency will do—only a world currency will work.**

The CFR strategy for convergence of the world's monetary systems was spelled out by Harvard Professor Richard N. Cooper, a CFR member who had been the Under Secretary of State for Economic Affairs in the Carter Administration:

> **I suggest a radical alternative scheme for the next century:** *the creation of a common currency for all of the industrial democracies, with a common monetary policy and a joint Bank of Issue to determine that monetary policy....* **How can independent states accomplish that? They need to turn over the detenrtination of monetary policy to a supranational body. [Emphasis in original]...**
>
> **It is highly doubtful whether the American public, to take just one example, could ever accept that countries with oppressive autocratic regimes should vote on the monetary policy that would affect monetary conditions in the United States.... For such a bold step to work at all, it presupposes a certain convergence of political values... -**[1]

Phrases such as, *monetary coordination mechanisms, modern world economic order, convergence of political values,* or *new world order* are not very specific. To the average person, they sound pleasant and harmless. Yet, to the insiders of the club, they are code phrases which have a specific meaning: the termination of national sovereignty and the creation of world government. CFR member, Richard Gardner—another adviser to President Carter—explains the meaning of these phrases and also calls for the Fabian strategy of deception and gradualism:

> **In short, the "house of world order" will have to be built from the bottom up.... An end run around national sovereignty, eroding it piece by piece, will accomplish much more than the old-fashioned frontal assault.**

As for the programmed decline of the American economy, CFR member Samuel Huntington argues that, if higher education is

---

[1] • "A Monetary System for the Future," by Richard N. Cooper, ***Foreign Affairs,*** **Fall, 1984, pp. 166,177,184.**

• "The Hard Road to World Order," by Richard Gardner,** ***Foreign Affairs, **April, 19?4, p. 558.**

considered to be desirable for the general population, "a program is then necessary to lower the job expectations of those who receive a college education."[1] CFR member Paul Volcker, former Chairman of the Federal Reserve, says: "The standard of living of the average American has to decline.... I don't think you can escape that."

By 1993, Volcker had become the U.S. Chairman of the Trilateral Commission. The TLC was created by David Rockefeller to coordinate the building of The New World Order in accordance with the Gardner strategy: "An end run around national sovereignty, eroding it piece by piece." The objective is to draw the United States, Mexico, Canada, Japan, and Western Europe into political and economic union. Under slogans such as free trade and environmental protection, each nation is to surrender its sovereignty "piece by piece" until a full-blown regional government emerges from the process. The new government will control each nation's working conditions, wages, and taxes. Once that has happened, it will be a relatively simple step to merge the regionals into global government. That is the reality behind the so-called trade treaties within the European Union (EU), the North American Free Trade Agreement (NAFTA), the Asia-Pacific Economic Cooperation agreement (APEC), and the General Agreement on Tariffs and Trade (GATT). They have little to do with trade. In the Trilateral Commission's annual report for 1993, Volcker explains:

> Interdependence is driving our countries toward convergence in areas once considered fully within the domestic purview. Some of these areas involve government regulatory policy, such as environmental standards, the fair treatment of workers, and taxation.

In 1992, the Trilateral Commission released a report co-authored by Toyoo Gyohten, Chairman of the Board of the Bank of Tokyo and formerly Japan's Minister of Finance for International Affairs. Gyohten had been a Fulbright Scholar who was trained at Princeton and taught at Harvard Business School. He also had been in charge of the Japan Desk of the International Monetary Fund. In short, he represents the Japanese monetary interests within The

---

1. Michael Crozier, Samuel P. Huntington, and Joji Watanuki, *The Crisis of Democracy* (New York: New York University Press, 1975), pp. 183-84.

2. "Volcker Asserts U.S. Must Trim Living Standard," *New York Times,* October 18, 1979, p. 1.

3. *Washington 1993: The Annual Meeting of the Trilateral Commission,* Trialogue 4o (New York: Trilateral Commission, 1993), p. 77.

New World Order. In this report, Gyohten explains that the real importance of "trade" agreements is not trade but the building of global government:

> Regional trade arrangements should not be regarded as ends in themselves, but as supplements to global liberalization.... Regional arrangements provide models or building blocks for increased or strengthened globalism.... Western Europe [the EU] represents regionalism in its truest form.... The steps toward deepening [increasing the number of agreements] are dramatic and designed to be irreversible.... A common currency.... central bank.... court and parliament—will have expanded powers.... After the Maastricht summit [the Dutch town where the meeting was held], an ***Economist*** editorial pronounced the verdict: "Call it what you will: by any other name it is federal government."... In sum, the regional integration process in Europe can be seen as akin to an exercise in nation-building.

Applying this same perspective to the NAFTA treaty, former Secretary-of-State, Henry Kissinger (CFR), said it "is not a conventional trade agreement but the architecture of a new international system.... the vital first step for a new kind of community of nations." The newspaper article that contained this statement was appropriately entitled: "With NAFTA, U.S. Finally Creates a New World Order."[2] David Rockefeller (CFR) was even more emphatic. He said that it would be "criminal" not to pass the treaty because: "Everything is in place—after 500 years—to build a true 'new world' in the Western Hemisphere."[3]

By early 1994, the drift toward the New World Order had become a rush. On April 15, the government of Morocco placed a full-page ad in the *New York Times* celebrating the creation of the World Trade Organization which was formed by the signing of the General Agreement on Tariffs and Trade (GATT) which took place in the Moroccan city of Marrakech. While Americans were still being told that GATT was merely a "trade" agreement, the internationalists were celebrating a much larger concept. The ad spelled it out in unmistakable terms:

---

[1] Toyoo Gyohten and Charles E. Morrison, *Regionalism in A Converging World* (New York: Trilateral Commission, 1992), pp. 4,7-9,11.

[2] "With NAFTA, U.S. Finally Creates a New World Order," by Henry Kissinger, *Los Angeles Times,* July 18,1993, pp. M-2, 6.

[3] "A Hemisphere in the Balance," by David Rockefeller, *Wall Street Journal,* October 1,1993, p. A-10.

> 1944, Bretton Woods: The IMF and the World Bank
> 1945, San Francisco: The United Nations
> 1994, Marrakech: The World Trade Organization
> History knows where it is going.... The World Trade Organization, the third pillar of the New World Order, along with the United Nations and the International Monetary Fund.

A RARE GLIMPSE INTO THE INNER WORKINGS

So much for the *final play*. Let us return, now, to the game called bailout as it is actually played today on the international scene. Let us begin with a glimpse into the inner workings of the Presidential Cabinet. James Watt was the Secretary of the Interior in the Reagan Administration. In his memoirs, he described an incident at a Cabinet meeting in the spring of 1982. The first items on the agenda were reports by Treasury Secretary Donald Regan and Budget Director David Stockman concerning problems the less-developed countries were having with their bank loans. Watt said:

> Secretary Regan was explaining the inability of those destitute countries to pay even the interest on the loans that individual banks such as Bank of America, Chase Manhattan and Citibank had made. The President was being told what actions the United States "must" take to salvage the situation.
>
> After the Regan and Stockman briefings, there were several minutes of discussion before I asked, "Does anyone believe that these less developed countries will ever be able to pay back the principal on these loans?" When no one spoke up, I asked, "If the loans are never going to be repaid, why should we again bail out the countries and arrange payment for their interest?"
>
> The answer came from several voices at once, "If we don't arrange for their interest payments, the loans will go into default, and it could put our American banks in jeopardy." Would the customers lose their money? No, came the answer, but the stockholders might lose dividends.
>
> In amazement, I leaned back in my large, leather chair, only two seats from the President of the United States. I realized that nothing in the world could keep these high government officials from scrambling to protect and bail out a few very large and sorely troubled American banks.[2]

---

1. *New York Times,* April 15,1994, p. A9.
2. James G. Watt, *The Courage of A Conservative* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1985), pp. 124-25.

PANAMA

The first major score in the game had been made under the Carter Administration when Panama fell in arrears on the payment of its loans. A consortium of banks including Chase Manhattan, First National of Chicago, and Citibank brought pressure to bear on Washington to give the Canal to the Panamanian government so it could use the revenue to pay interest on its loans. Although there was massive opposition to this move among the American people, the Senate yielded to insider pressure and passed the give-away treaty. The Panamanian government inherited $120 million in annual revenue, and the interest payments to the banks were restored. As Congressman Philip Crane observed:

> At the time of the Torrijos-backed coup in 1968, Panama's total official overseas debt stood at a manageable and, by world standards, modest $167 million. Under Torrijos, indebtedness has skyrocketed nearly *one thousand percent* to a massive $1.5 billion. Debt-service ratio now consumes an estimated 39 percent of the entire Panamanian budget.... What it appears we really have here is not just aid to a tinhorn dictator in the form of new subsidies and canal revenues the treaties would give to the Torrijos regime, but a bailout of a number of banks which should have known better than to invest in Panama and, in any event, should not escape responsibility for having done so.[1]

The Panama bailout was a unique play. In no other country did we have an income-producing property to give away, so from that point forward the bailout would have to be done with mere money. To pave the way for that, Congress passed the Monetary Control Act of 1980 which authorized the Federal Reserve to "monetize foreign debt." That is banker language meaning that the Fed was now authorized to create money out of nothing for the purpose of lending to foreign governments. It classifies those loans as "assets" and then uses them as collateral for the creation of even more money here in the United States. That was truly a revolutionary expansion of the Fed's power to inflate. Until then, it was permitted to make money only for the *American* government. Now, it was able to do it for *any* government. Since then it has been functioning as a central bank for the entire world.

---

[1] Philip M. Crane, *Surrender in Panama* (Ottawa, Illinois: Caroline House Books, 1978), pp. 64,68.

MEXICO

By 1982, almost every Third-World government was running behind in payments. Mexico led the way by announcing it could not send any more money that year on its $85 billion debt. Federal Reserve Governor Henry Wallich rushed to Switzerland to negotiate an IMF loan of $4.5 billion through the Bank of International Settlements. The central banks of Europe and Japan provided $1.85 billion (about 40%); the rest came from the Federal Reserve. Commercial banks postponed payments on the principal for two years; but, with the infusion of new loans, payment on the interest was resumed. That did not solve the problem. Within a few years, Mexico was in arrears again and, in 1985, the banks agreed to postpone $29 billion in payments and rolled over another $20 billion, which means they issued new loans to pay off the old.

In that same year, Secretary of the Treasury James Baker announced the government's plan to solve the world's debt crisis. It was a formal statement encouraging banks to continue lending to Third-World governments provided they promised to enact economic reforms favoring a free market. It was more of a philosophy than a plan, because there was no hope that it would be implemented by any of the socialist governments receiving the loans. Behind the announcement was the implication that the federal government, acting through the Federal Reserve System, could be counted on to assist if the loans went sour. Baker called for funneling $29 billion over three years primarily to Latin American countries, of which Mexico was a prime recipient.

CURRENCY SWAP

Shortly after the Mexican government had loaned $55 million to Fidel Castro, it announced to the banks: "We will pay only what we have, and no more." Whereupon Paul Volcker, head of the Federal Reserve, rushed to meet with Mexico's finance minister, Jesus Silva Herzog, and offered to put the American taxpayer into the breach. A $600 million short-term loan was extended to get Mexico past its election date of July 4. It was called a "currency swap" because Mexico exchanged an equal number of pesos which it promised to redeem in U.S. dollars. Pesos, of course, were worthless in international markets—which is the reason Mexico wanted the dollars.

The importance of this loan was not its size nor even the question of repayment. It was the manner in which it was made.

first, it was made by the Federal Reserve *directly,* acting as a central bank for Mexico, not the U.S.; and secondly, it was done almost in total secrecy. William Greider gives the details:

> **The currency swaps had another advantage: they could be done secretly. Volcker discreetly informed both the Administration and the key congressional chairmen, and none objected. But the public reporting of currency swaps was required only every quarter, so the emergency loan from the Fed would not be disclosed for three or four months.... By that time, Volcker hoped, Mexico would be arranging more substantial new financing from the IMF.... The foreign assistance was done as discreetly as possible to avoid setting off a panic, but also to avoid domestic political controversy.... Bailing out Mexico, it seemed, was too grave to be controversial.**[1]

DEBT SWAP

The currency swap did not solve the problem. So, in March of 1988, the players and referees agreed to introduce a new maneuver in the game: an accounting trick called a "debt swap." A debt swap is similar to a currency swap in that the United States exchanges something of real value in return for something that is worthless. But, instead of currencies, they exchange government bonds. The transaction is complicated by the time-value of those bonds. Currencies are valued by their *immediate* worth, what they will buy today, but bonds are valued by their *future* worth, what they will buy in the future. After that differential factor is calculated, the process is essentially the same. Here is how it worked.

Mexico, using U.S. dollars, purchased $492 million worth of American Treasury Bonds that pay no interest but which will pay $3.67 billion when they mature in twenty years. (Technically, these are called zero-coupon bonds.) Then Mexico issued its own bonds with the U.S. securities tied to them as collateral. This meant that the future value of Mexico's bonds, previously considered worthless, were now guaranteed by the United States government. The banks eagerly swapped their old loans for these new Mexican bonds at a ratio of about 1.4 to 1. In other words, they accepted $100 million in bonds in return for canceling $140 million in old debt. That reduced their interest income, but they were happy to do it, because they had swapped worthless loans for fully-guaranteed bonds.

This maneuver was hailed in the press as true monetary magic. It would save the Mexican government more than $200 million in annual interest charges; it would restore cash flow to the banks; and—miracle of miracles—it would cost nothing to American taxpayers.[1] The reasoning was that the Treasury bonds were sold at normal market rates. The Mexican government paid as much for them as anyone else. That part was true, but what the commentators failed to notice was where Mexico got the American dollars with which to buy the bonds. They came through the IMF in the form of "foreign-currency exchange reserves." In other words, they were subsidies from the industrialized nations, primarily the United States. So, the U.S. Treasury put up the lion's share of the money to buy its own bonds. It went a half-billion dollars *deeper* in debt and agreed to pay $3.7 billion *more* in future payments so the Mexican government could continue paying interest to the banks. That is called bailout, and it *does* fall on the American taxpayer.

IMF BECOMES FINAL GUARANTOR

The following year, Secretary of State, James Baker (CFR), and Treasury Secretary, Nicholas Brady (CFR), flew to Mexico to work out a new debt agreement that would begin to phase in the IMF as final guarantor. The IMF gave Mexico a new loan of $3.5 billion (later increased to $7.5 billion), the World Bank gave another $1.5 billion, and the banks reduced their previous loan values by about a third. The private banks were quite willing to extend new loans and reschedule the old. Why not? Interest payments would now be guaranteed by the taxpayers of the United States and Japan.

That did not permanently solve the problem, either, because the Mexican economy was suffering from massive inflation caused by internal debt, which was in addition to the *external* debt owed to the banks. The phrases "internal debt" and "domestic borrowing" are code for the fact that government has inflated its money supply by selling bonds. The interest it must pay to entice people to purchase those bonds can be staggering and, in fact, interest on Mexico's domestic borrowing was draining three times as much from the economy as the foreign debt service had been siphoning off.[2]

---

1. "U.S. Bond Issue Will Aid Mexico in Paying Debts," by Tom Redburn, *Los Angeles Times,* December 30,1987.

2. "With Foreign IOUs Massaged, Interest Turns to Internal Debt," *Insight,* October 2, 1989, p. 34.

Notwithstanding this reality, Citicorp chairman, John S. Reed (CFR), whose bank is one of Mexico's largest lenders, said they were prepared to lend even more now. Why? Did it have anything to do with the fact that the Federal Reserve and the IMF would guarantee payments? Not so. "Because we believe the Mexican economy is doing well," he said.[1]

At the end of 1994, the game was still going, and the play was the same. On December 21, the Mexican government announced that it could no longer pay the fixed exchange rate between the peso and the dollar and that the peso would now have to float in the free market to find its true value. The next day it plummeted 39 per cent, and the Mexican stock market tumbled. Once again, Mexico could not pay the interest on its loans. On January 11, President Clinton (CFR) urged Congress to approve U.S. guarantees for new loans up to $40 billion. Secretary of the Treasury Robert Rubin (CFR) explained: "It is the judgment of all, including Chairman Alan Greenspan [CFR], that the probability of the debts being paid [by Mexico] is exceedingly high." But, while Congress debated the issue, the loan clock was ticking. Payment of $17 billion in Mexican bonds was due within 60 days, and $4 billion of that was due on the first of February! *Who* was going to pay the banks?

This matter could not wait. On January 31, acting independently of Congress, President Clinton announced a bailout package of over $50 billion in loan guarantees to Mexico; $20 billion from the U.S. Exchange Stabilization Fund, $17.8 billion from the IMF, $10 billion from the Bank of International Settlements, and $3 billion from commercial banks.

BRAZIL

Brazil became a major player in 1982 when it announced that it too was unable to make payments on its debt. In response, the U.S. Treasury made a direct loan of $1.23 billion to keep those checks going to the banks while negotiations were under way for a more Permanent solution through the IMF. Twenty days later, it gave another $1.5 billion; the Bank of International Settlements advanced $1-2 billion. The following month, the IMF provided $5.5 billion; Western banks extended $10 billion in trade credits; old loans were rescheduled; and $4.4 billion in new loans were made by a Morgan

Bank syndication. The "temporary" loans from the U.S. Treasury were extended with no repayment date established. Ron Chernow comments:

> The plan set a fateful precedent of "curing" the debt crisis by heaping on more debt. In this charade, bankers would lend more to Brazil with one hand, then take it back with the other. This preserved, the fictitious book value of loans on bank balance sheets. Approaching the rescue as a grand new syndication, the bankers piled on high interest rates and rescheduling fees.

By 1983, Third-World governments owed $300 billion to banks and $400 billion to the industrialized governments. Twenty-five nations were already behind in their payments. Brazil was in default a second time and asked for rescheduling, as did Rumania, Cuba, and Zambia. The IMF stepped in and made additional billions of dollars available to the delinquent countries. The Department of Agriculture, through its Commodity Credit Corporation, paid $431 million to American banks to cover payments on loans from Brazil, Morocco, Peru, and Rumania. At the conclusion of these agreements, the April 20, 1983, *Wall Street Journal* editorialized that "the international debt crisis ... is, for all practical purposes, over."

Not quite. By 1987, Brazil was again in default on its monstrous $121 billion debt, this time for one and a-half years. In spite of the torrent of money that had passed through its hands, it was now so broke, it couldn't even buy gasoline for its police cars. In 1989, as a new round of bailout was being organized, President Bush(CFR) announced that the only real solution to the Third-World debt problem was debt forgiveness.

Perhaps, through repetition, we are running this history into the ground, but here are just a few more examples before moving along.

ARGENTINA

By 1982, Argentina was unable to make a $2.3 billion payment that was due in July and August. The banks extended their loans while the IMF prepared a new infusion in the amount of $2.15 billion. This restored the interest payments and gave the Argentinian politicians a little extra spending money. Seven

---

1. Chernow, p. 644.

months later, Argentina announced it could not make any more payments until the fall of 1983. The banks immediately began negotiations for rollovers, guarantees, and new IMF loans.

Argentina then signed an agreement with 350 creditor banks to stretch out payments on nearly a fourth of its $13.4 billion debt, and the banks agreed to lend an extra $4.2 billion to cover interest payments and political incentives. The IMF gave $1.7 billion. The United States government gave an additional $500 million directly. Argentina then paid $850 million in overdue interest charges to the banks.

By 1988, Argentina had again stopped payment on its loans and was falling hopelessly behind as bankers and politicians went into a huddle to call the next bailout play. Somehow, the payments had to be passed on one more time to the taxpayers—which they were in the form of new loans, rollovers, and guarantees. As summarized by Larry A. Sjaastad at the University of Chicago:

> **There isn't a U.S. bank that would not sell its entire Latin American portfolio for 40 cents on the dollar were it not for the possibility that skillful political lobbying might turn up a sucker willing to pay 50 or 60 or even 90 cents on the dollar. And that sucker is the U.S. Taxpayer.**[1]

As mentioned previously, this history can become repetitious and boring. It would be counterproductive to cover the same sordid story as it has unfolded in each country. Suffice it to say that the identical game has been played with teams from Bolivia, Peru, Venezuela, Costa Rica, Morocco, the Philippines, the Dominican Republic, and almost every other less-developed country in the world.

THE NEED FOR CONVERGENCE

This sets the stage for understanding the next phase of the game which is unfolding as these words are being written. It is the inclusion of China and the former Soviet bloc into the Grand Design for global government. As with all the other countries in the world, the primary *mechanism* being used to accomplish this goal—at least in the field of economics—is the IMF/World Bank.[2] the *process* is: (1) the transfer of money from the industrialized

---

"Another Plan to Mop Up the Mess," *Insight,* April 10, 1989, p. 31.

• Other mechanisms which involve culture, education, political sovereignty, and tary power are embodied in agencies of the United Nations.

nations—which drags them down economically to a suitable common denominator—and (2) the acquisition of effective control over the political leaders of the recipient countries as they become dependent upon the money stream. The thing that is new and which sets this stage apart from previous developments is that the apparent crumbling of Communism has created an acceptable rationale for the industrialized nations to now allow their lifeblood to flow into the veins of their former enemies. It also creates the appearance of global, political "convergence," a condition which CFR theoretician, Richard Cooper, said was necessary before Americans would accept having their own destinies determined by governments other than their own.

CHINA

Red China joined the IMF/World Bank in 1980 and immediately began to receive billions of dollars in loans, although it was well known that she was devoting a huge portion of her resources to military development. By 1987, China was the IMF's second largest borrower, next to India, and the transfusions have grown at a steady pace ever since.

The Bank has asserted that loans will encourage economic reforms in favor of the private sector. Yet, none of the money has gone to the private sector. All of it is funneled into the government bureaucracy which, in turn, wages war against the free market. In 1989, after small businesses and farms in the private sector had begun to flourish and surpass the performance of similar government enterprises, Red China's leaders clamped down on them with harsh controls and increased taxes. Vice Premier Yao Yilin announced that there was too much needless construction, too many private loans, and too much spending on "luxuries" such as cars and banquets. To stop these excesses, he said, it would be necessary to increase government controls over wages, prices, and business activities.

Then there is the question of why China needs the money in the first place. Is it to develop her industry or natural resources? Is it to fight poverty and improve the living standard of her citizens? James Bovard answers:

> **The Bank's defense of its China Policy is especially puzzling because China itself is going on a foreign investment binge. The World Bank gives China money at zero interest, and then China buys**

> **property in Hong Kong, the United States, Australia, and elsewhere. An economist with Citibank estimated that China's "direct investment in property, manufacturing and services [in Hong Kong alone] topped $6 billion." In 1984, China had a net outflow of capital of $1 billion. Moreover, China has its own foreign aid program, which has given more than $6 billion in recent decades, largely to leftist governments.**[1]

THE GREAT DECEPTION

It is the author's contention that the much heralded demise of Communism in the Soviet bloc is a mixture of fact and fantasy. It is fact at the bottom level of Communist society where the people, in truth, rejected it long ago. The only reason they appeared to embrace it for so many years was that they had no choice. As long as the Soviets held control of the weapons and the means of communication, the people had to accept their fate.

But at the tip of the pyramid of state power, it is a different story. The top Communist leaders have never been as hostile to their counterparts in the West as the rhetoric suggests. They are quite friendly to the world's leading financiers and have worked closely with them when it suits their purposes. As we shall see in the following section, the Bolshevik revolution actually was financed by wealthy financiers in London and New York. Lenin and Trotsky were on the closest of terms with these moneyed interests—both before and after the Revolution. Those hidden liaisons have continued to this day and occasionally pop to the surface when we discover a David Rockefeller holding confidential meetings with a Mikhail Gorbachev in the absence of government sponsorship or diplomatic purpose.

It is not unreasonable to imagine a scenario in which the leaders of the Communist bloc come to realize they cannot hold themselves in power much longer. There comes a point where even physical force is not enough, especially when the loyalties of those who hold the weapons also begin to falter. With economic gangrene creeping up the legs of their socialist systems, they realize they must obtain outside financial assistance or perish.

In such a scenario, quiet agreements can be worked out to the mutual advantage of all negotiators. The plan could be as simple as a statue-of-liberty play in a college football game: the appearance of doing one thing as a cover for accomplishing something else. While

Americans are prepared to accept such deception on a football field, they cannot believe that world financiers and politicians are capable of it. The concept is rejected out of hand as a "conspiracy theory."

Nevertheless, in this scenario, we theorize it is agreed among the negotiators that the Soviet Bloc needs financial support. It is agreed that the Western nations have the capacity to provide it. It is agreed that the best way to move money from the industrialized nations into the Soviet bloc is through international agencies such as the IMF/World Bank. It is agreed this cannot happen until hostility between world systems is replaced by political convergence. It is agreed that future conflict is wasteful and dangerous to all parties. Therefore, it is finally agreed that the Soviet bloc must abandon its posture of global aggression while the Western nations continue to move toward socialism, necessary steps for the long-range goal of merger into a world government. But, in doing so, it must be insured that the existing Communist leaders retain control over their respective states.

COMMUNISTS BECOME SOCIAL DEMOCRATS

To that end, they change their public identities to "Social Democrats." They speak out against the brutal excesses of their predecessors and they offer greater freedom of expression in the media. A few dispensable individuals among their ranks are publicly purged as examples of the demise of the old order. States that once were held captive by the Soviet Union are allowed to break away and then return on a voluntary basis. If any leaders of the newly emancipated states prefer true independence instead of alignment with Russia, they are replaced.

No other changes are required. Socialism remains the economic system of choice and, although lip service may be given to free-market concepts, the economy and all means of production remain under state control. The old Communists are now Social Democrats and, without exception, they become the leaders in the new system.

The West rejoices, and the money starts to move. As an extra bonus, the former Bolsheviks are now hailed by the world as great statesmen who put an end to the Cold War, brought freedom to their people, and helped to forge a New World Order.

When did Communism depart? We are not quite sure. All we know is that one day we opened our newspapers and it was accomplished. Social Democrats were everywhere. No one could find any Communists. Russian leaders spoke as long-time enemies of the old regime. Peristroika was here. Communism was dead. It was not killed by an enemy. It voted itself out of existence. It committed suicide!

Does it not seem strange that Communism fell without a struggle? Is it not curious that the system which was born out of class conflict and revolution and which maintained itself by force and violence for almost a century just went away on its own? Communism was not overthrown by people rising up with clubs and pitchforks to throw off their yoke of tyranny. There was no revolution or counterrevolution, no long period of fragmentation, no bloody surges between opposing forces. Poof! It just happened. True, there was blood in the streets in those areas where opposing groups vied for power, but that was *after* Communism had departed, not before. Such an event had never occurred in history. Until then, it had been contrary to the way governments act; contrary to the very nature of power which never surrenders without a life-and-death struggle. This, indeed, is a great curiosity—which should cause people to think.

Our premise is that the so-called demise of Communism is a Great Deception—not awfully different from many of the others that are the focus of this volume. We see it as having been stage managed for the purposes outlined previously: the transition to world government. In our view, *that* scenario is the only one that makes sense in terms of today's geopolitical realities and the only one consistent with the lessons of history.

We realize, of course, that such a view runs contrary to popular opinion and conventional wisdom. For many, it is shocking just to hear it spelled out. It would not be possible to convince anyone of its truth without extensive evidence. Certainly, such evidence abounds, but it is not within the scope of this study. So, now that we have stated it, we shall leave it behind merely as a clarification of the author's point of view so the reader can step around it if he wishes.

EASTERN EUROPE

American aid to Eastern European governments, while they were still puppet states of the Soviet Union, has been justified by the same theory advanced on behalf of China: it would improve their economies, show their people a better way of life, and wean them from Communism. Advocates of that theory now point to the demise of Communism as evidence of the soundness of their plan. The truth, however, is that the money did *not* improve the economy and did *not* show the people a better way of life. In fact, it did not help the people in any way. It went directly to their *governments* and was used for *government* priorities. It strengthened the ruling parties and enabled them to solidify their control.

It is well known that one of the reasons Poland's economy was weak is that much of her productive output was shipped to the Soviet Union at concessionary prices, primarily to support the military. Polish-built tanks fought in the Vietnam war; 20% of the Soviet merchant marine was built in Poland; 70% of Poland's computer and locomotive production and 80% of her communications equipment was shipped to the Soviets; American grain purchased by Poland with money borrowed from American banks was sent to Cuba. Poland was merely a middle man, a conduit to Russia and her satellites. The banks were really funding Russia.

It was in 1982 that Poland first defaulted on bank loans which had been guaranteed by the U.S. government through the Commodity Credit Corporation. Under the terms of the guarantee, taxpayers would make payments on any bank loan that went into default. That was what the banks were counting on when they made those loans, but to classify them as "in default" would require the banks to remove them from their books as assets. That was unacceptable, because it would make their balance sheets look as bad as they really were. So the Treasury agreed to bend the rules and make payments *without* requiring the loans to be in default. That was eventually stopped by an irate Congress, but not until the Reagan Administration had stalled long enough to pay $400 million directly to the banks on behalf of Poland.

In November, 1988, the World Bank made its first loan to Poland in the amount of $17.9 million. Three years later, in a dramatic demonstration of what the President had meant when he advocated "debt forgiveness," the Bush Administration canceled a full 70% of the $3.8 billion owed to the United States. Taxpayers picked up the bill.

The same story has been unfolding in all the former Soviet4doc countries. In 1980, for example, just before Hungary was brought into the IMF/World Bank, her annual per-capita GNP was $4,180. This was a problem, because the policy of the World Bank was to make development loans only to countries that had per-capita GNPs of less than $2,650. Not to worry. In 1981, the Hungarian government simply revised its statistics downward from $4,180 to $2,100.[1] That was a drop of 50% in one year, surely one of the sharpest depressions in world history. Everyone knew it was a lie, but no one raised an eyebrow. It was all part of the game. By 1989, the Bush Administration had granted "most favored nation" trade status to the Hungarian government and established on its behalf a special $25 million development fund.

RUSSIA

American banks had always been willing to make loans to the Soviet Union, except for short periods of expediency during the Cuban Missile Crisis, the Vietnam War, the Soviet invasion of Afghanistan, and other minor business interruptions. In 1985, after the public had lost interest in Afghanistan, banks of the "free world" reopened their loan windows to the Soviets. A $400 million package was put together by a consortium of First National of Chicago, Morgan Guaranty, Bankers Trust, and Irving Trust—plus a London subsidiary of the Royal Bank of Canada. The loan was offered at unusually low interest rates "to buy American and Canadian grain."

Public indignation is easily disarmed when the announced purpose of a loan to a totalitarian government is to purchase commodities from the country where the loan originates—especially if the commodity is grain for the assumed purpose of making bread or feeding livestock. Who could possibly object to having the money come right back to our own farmers and merchants in the form of profits? And who could fault a project that provided food for the hungry?

The deception is subtly appealing. It is true that the money will be used—in part at least—to buy grain or other locally produced

---

[1] 'World Bank Courts Eastern Europe," by Jerry Lewis, *Wall Street lournal,* August 30,1984.

commodities. But the borrowing nations are like a homeowner who increases the mortgage on his house "to enlarge his living room." He probably will make the addition, but he borrows twice as much as he needs so he can also buy a new car. Since the government allows a tax deduction on mortgage interest, in effect he now gets a tax deduction for the interest paid on his car as well. Likewise, the borrowing nations usually borrow more than they need for the announced purchase, but they receive *all* the money at favorable rates.

Yet, this is not the most serious fault in the transaction. In the case of Russia, the grain was no small item on her list of needs. After repeated failures of her socialist agriculture, she was not able to feed her population. Hungry people are dangerous to a government. Russia needed grain to head off internal revolt far more than the homeowner needed to increase the size of his living room. In other words, Russia *had* to have the grain, with or without the loan. Without it, she would have had to curtail spending somewhere else to obtain the money, most likely in her military. By giving her the money "to buy grain," we actually allowed her to spend more money on armaments.

But even that is not the primary flaw in making loans to Russia. The bottom line is that most of those loans *will never be repaidl* As we have seen, the name of the game is *bailout,* and it is as certain as the setting sun that, somewhere down the line, Russia will not be able to make her payments, and the taxpayers of the industrialized nations will be put through the IMF wringer one more time to squeeze out the transferred purchasing power.

BUSINESS VENTURES IN RUSSIA INSURED BY U.S.

In 1990, the U.S. Export-Import Bank announced it would begin making direct loans to Russia. Meanwhile, the U.S. Overseas Private Investment Corporation was providing free "insurance" to private companies that were willing to invest in the ex-Soviet state. In other words, it was now doing for industrial corporations what it had been doing all along for banks: guaranteeing that, if their investments turned sour, the government—make that taxpayers-—would compensate them for their losses. The limit on that insurance had been $100 million, a generous figure, indeed. But, to encourage an even greater flow of private capital into Russia, the

Bush Administration authorized *unlimited* protection for "sound American corporate investments."

If these truly were sound investments, they would not need foreign-aid subsidies or government guarantees. What is really happening in this play is a triple score:

1. International lending agencies provide the Social Democrats with money to purchase goods and services from American firms. No one really expects them to repay. It is merely a clever method of redistributing wealth from those who have it to those who don't—without those who have it catching on.
2. American firms do not need money to participate. Since their ventures are guaranteed, banks are anxious to loan whatever amount of money is required. Efficiency or competitiveness are not important factors. Contracts are awarded on the basis of political influence. Profits are generous and without risk.
3. When the Social Democrats eventually default in their contracts to the American firms or when the joint venture loses money because of socialist mismanagement, the federal government provides funds to cover corporate profits and repayment of bank loans.

There you have it: The Social Democrats get the goodies; the corporations get the profits, and the banks get the interest on money created out of nothing. You *know* what the taxpayers get!

By 1992, the wearisome pattern was clearly visible. Writing in the *New York Times,* columnist Leslie H. Gelb gave the numbers:

> The ex-Soviet states are now meeting only 30 percent of their interest payments (and almost no principal) on debts to the West of $70 billion.... Various forms of Western aid to the ex-Soviet states totaled about $50 billion in the last 20 months, and the money has virtually disappeared without a trace or a dent on the economic picture.

The interesting thing about this report is that Leslie Gelb has been a member of the CFR since 1973. Why would a CFR spokesman blow the whistle on one of their most important maneuvers toward The New World Order? The answer is that he is doing just the opposite. Actually he is making a plea for *more* loans

---

J- **"The Russian Sinkhole," by Leslie H. Gelb,** ***New York Times,*** **March 30,1992, p.**

and *more* outright aid on the basis that the need is so great! He advocates the prioritizing of funding with first attention to aiding Russia's nuclear-power facilities, agriculture, and industrial capacity. At the end of his article, he writes: "The stakes could not be higher. All the more reason for substantial, practical and immediate aid—not for grand illusions."

Congress hears and obeys. In spite of the fact that all the preceding billions have "disappeared without a trace or a dent," the transfusion continues. In 1993 the World Bank advanced another half-billion-dollar loan to Russia; before leaving office, President Bush arranged for another $2 billion loan through the Export-Import Bank; and Congress authorized hitting the voters with another $2.5 billion in foreign aid earmarked specifically for Russia. In July, at the Tokyo summit meeting of the Group-of-Seven industrialized nations, another $24 billion was promised, half of which will come from the IMF. As this book goes to print, there is no end in sight.

THE CONSPIRACY THEORY

A moment's reflection on the events described in this section leads us to a crossroads of conscience. We must choose between two paths. Either we conclude that Americans have lost control over their government, or we reject this information as a mere distortion of history. In the first case, we become advocates of the conspiratorial view of history. In the latter, we endorse the accidental view. It is a difficult choice.

The reason it is difficult is that we have been conditioned to laugh at conspiracy theories, and few people will risk public ridicule by advocating them. On the other hand, to endorse the accidental view is absurd. Almost all of history is an unbroken trail of one conspiracy after another. Conspiracies are the norm, not the exception.

The industrialized nations of the world are being bled to near death in a global transfer of their wealth to the less developed countries. Is it being done according to plan? Or is it an accident? B is not being done *to* them by their enemies. It is being done *by their own leaders*. The process is well coordinated across national lines and perfectly dovetails with the actions of other leaders who are doing the same thing to their respective countries. Furthermore, these leaders regularly meet together to better coordinate their activities. Could anything that complex be accomplished by accident? Or would some kind of a plan be required?

A spokesman from the IMF would answer, yes, there *is* a plan, and it is to aid the less developed countries. But, after forty years and hundreds of billions of dollars, they have totally failed to accomplish that goal. Would intelligent people believe that pursuing the same plan will produce different results in the future? Then why do they follow a plan that cannot work? The answer is they are *not* following that plan. They are following a *different* one: one which has been very successful from their point of view. Otherwise, we must conclude that the leaders of the industrialized nations are, to a man, just plain stupid. We do not believe it.

There is little room to escape the conclusion that these men and women are following a higher loyalty than the self interest of their respective countries. In their hearts they may honestly believe that, in the long run, the world will be better for it, including their fellow countrymen. But, for the present, their goals and their methods are not shared by those who have placed them in office. Under those circumstances, they must conceal their plan from public view. If their fellow citizens really knew what they were doing, they would be thrown out of office and, in some cases, might even be shot as traitors. Add all that together and it spells CONSPIRACY.

The only other explanation is that it's all accidental: no plan, no cooperation, no goal, just the blind forces of history following the path of least resistance. For some it will be easier and more comfortable to accept that model. But the evidence speaks loudly against it. What is the evidence? Not just the previous chapters, but everything that follows in this book. By contrast, the evidence for the accidental theory of history is — a blank page.

SUMMARY

The international version of the game called Bailout is similar to the domestic version in that the overall objective is to have the taxpayers cover the defaulted loans so that interest payments can continue going to the banks. The differences are: (1) instead of justifying this as protecting the American public, the pretense is hat it is to save the world from poverty; and (2) the main money Pipeline goes from the Federal Reserve through the IMF/World ax)k- Otherwise, the rules are basically the same.

There is another dimension to the game, however, that involves more than mere profits and scam. It is the conscious and deliberate evolution of the IMF/World Bank into a world central bank with the power to issue a world fiat currency. And that is an important step in an even larger plan to build a true world government within the framework of the United Nations.

Economically strong nations are not candidates for surrendering their sovereignty to a world government. Therefore, through "loans" that will never be paid back, the IMF/World Bank directs the massive transfer of wealth from the industrialized nations to the less developed nations. This ongoing process eventually drains their economies to the point where they also will be in need of assistance. No longer capable of independent action, they will accept the loss of sovereignty in return for international aid.

The less developed countries, on the other hand, are being brought into The New World Order along an entirely different route. Many of these countries are ruled by petty tyrants who care little for their people except how to extract more taxes from them without causing a revolt. Loans from the IMF/World Bank are used primarily to perpetuate themselves and their ruling parties in power—and that is exactly what the IMF/World Bank intends. Rhetoric about helping the poor notwithstanding, the true goal of the transfer of wealth disguised as loans is to get control over the leaders of the less developed countries. After these despots get used to the taste of such an unlimited supply of sweet cash, they will never be able to break the habit. They will be content—already *are* content—to become little gold-plated cogs in the giant machinery of world government. Ideology means nothing to them: capitalist, communist, socialist, fascist, what does it matter so long as the money keeps coming. The IMF/World Bank literally is *buying* these countries and using our money to do it.

The recent inclusion of Red China and the former Soviet bloc on the list of IMF/World Bank recipient countries signals the final phase of the game. Now that Latin America and Africa have been "purchased" into the New World Order, this is the final frontier. In a relatively short time span, China, Russia, and the Eastern European countries have now become the biggest borrowers and, already, they are in arrears on their payments. This is where the action will lie in the months ahead.

Section II

A CRASH COURSE ON MONEY

The eight chapters contained in this and the following section deal with material that is organized by topic, not chronology. Several of them will jump ahead of events that are not covered until later. Furthermore, the scope is such that the reader may wonder what, if any, is the connection with the Federal Reserve System. Please be patient. The importance will eventually become clear. It is the author's intent to cover concepts and principles before looking at events. Without this background, the history of the Federal Reserve is boring. *With* it, the story emerges as an exciting drama which profoundly affects our lives today. So let us begin this adventure with a few discoveries about the nature of money itself.

Chapter Seven

THE BARBARIC METAL

The history and evolution of money; the emergence of gold as the universal money supply; the attempts by governments to cheat their subjects by clipping or debasing gold coins; the reality that any quantity of gold will suffice for a monetary system and that "more money" does not require more gold.

There is a great mystique surrounding the nature of money. It is generally regarded as beyond the understanding of mere mortals. Questions of the origin of money or the mechanism of its creation are seldom matters of public debate. We accept them as facts of life which are beyond our sphere of control. Thus, in a nation which is founded on the principle of government by the people, and which assumes a high level of understanding among the electorate, the people themselves have blocked out one of the most important factors affecting, not only their government, but their personal lives as well.

This attitude is not accidental, nor was it always so. There was a time in the fairly recent past when the humble voter—even without formal education—was well informed on money matters and vitally concerned about their political implementation. In fact, as we shall see in a later chapter, major elections were won or lost depending on how candidates stood on the issue of a central bank. It has been in the interest of the money mandarins, however, to convince the public that, now, these issues are too complicated for novices. Through the use of technical jargon and by hiding simple reality inside a maze of bewildering procedures, they have caused an understanding of the *nature* of money to fade from the public consciousness.

WHAT IS MONEY?

The first step in this maneuver was to scramble the definition of money itself. For example, the July 20, 1975 issue of the *New York*

Times, in an article entitled "Money Supply: A Growing Muddle," begins with the question: "What is money nowadays?" The *Wall Street Journal* of August 29,1975, comments: "The men and women involved in this arcane exercise [of watching the money supply] aren't exactly sure what the money supply consists of." And, in its September 24,1971 issue, the same paper said: "A pro-International Monetary Fund Seminar of eminent economists couldn't agree on what money is or how banks create it."

Even the government cannot define money. Some years ago, a Mr. A.F. Davis mailed a ten-dollar Federal Reserve Note to the Treasury Department. In his letter of transmittal, he called attention to the inscription on the bill which said that it was redeemable in "lawful money," and then requested that such money be sent to him. In reply, the Treasury merely sent two five-dollar bills from a different printing series bearing a similar promise to pay. Mr. Davis responded:

> Dear Sir:
>
> Receipt is hereby acknowledged of two $5.00 United States notes, which we interpret from your letter are to be considered as lawful money. Are we to infer from this that the Federal Reserve notes are not lawful money?
>
> I am enclosing one of the $5.00 notes which you sent to me. I note that it states on the face, "The United States of America will pay to the bearer on demand five dollars." I am hereby demanding five dollars.

One week later, Mr. Davis received the following reply from Acting Treasurer, M.E. Slindee:

> Dear Mr. Davis:
>
> Receipt is acknowledged of your letter of December 23rd, transmitting one $5. United States Note with a demand for payment of five dollars. You are advised that the term "lawful money" has not been defined in federal legislation.... The term "lawful currency" no longer has such special significance. The $5. United States Note received with your letter of December 23rd is returned herewith.

The phrases "...will pay to the bearer on demand" and "... is redeemable in lawful money" were deleted from our currency altogether in 1964.

---

1. As quoted by C.V. Myers, *Money and Energy: Weathering the Storm* (Darien, Connecticut: Soundview Books, 1980), pp. 161,163. Also by Lawrence S. Ritter, ed-. *Money and Economic Activity* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1967), p. 33.

Is money really so mysterious that it cannot be defined? Is it the coin and currency we have in our pockets? Is it numbers in a checking account or electronic impulses in a computer? Does it include the balance in a savings account or the available credit on a charge card? Does it include the value of stocks and bonds, houses, land, or personal possessions? Or is money nothing more than purchasing power?

The main function of the Federal Reserve is to regulate the supply of money. Yet, if no one is able to define what money is, how can we have an opinion about how the System is performing? The answer, of course, is that we cannot, and that is exactly the way the cartel wants it.

The reason the Federal Reserve appears to be a complicated subject is because most discussions start somewhere in the *middle*. By the time we get into it, definitions have been scrambled and basic concepts have been assumed. Under such conditions, intellectual chaos is inevitable. If we start at the beginning, however, and deal with each concept in sequence from the general to the specific, and if we agree on definitions as we go, we shall find to our amazement that the issues are really quite simple. Furthermore, the process is not only painless, it is—believe it or not—intensely interesting.

The purpose of this and the next three chapters, therefore, is to provide what could be called a crash course on money. It will *not* be complicated. In fact, you already know much of what follows. All we shall attempt to do is tie it all together so that it will have continuity and relativity to our subject. When you are through with these next few pages, you *will* understand money. That's a promise.

So, let's get started with the basics. What is money?

A WORKING DEFINITION

The dictionary is of little help. If economists cannot agree on what money is, it is partly due to the fact that there are so many definitions available that it is difficult to insist that any of them is the obvious choice. For the purpose of our analysis, however, it will be necessary to establish *one* definition so we can at least know what is meant when the word is used within this text. To that end, we shall introduce our own definition which has been assembled om bits and dabs taken from numerous sources. The structure is esigned, not to reflect what we think money *ought* to be or to support the view of any particular school of economics, but simply to reduce the concept to its most fundamental essence and to reflect the reality of today's world. It is not necessary to agree or disagree with this definition. It is introduced solely for the purpose of providing an understanding of the word *as it is used within these pages*. This, then, shall be our working definition:

Money is anything which is accepted as a medium of exchange and it may be classified into the following forms:

1. Commodity money
2. Receipt money
3. Fiat money
4. Fractional money

Understanding the difference between these forms of money is practically all we need to know to fully comprehend the Federal Reserve System and to come to a judgment regarding its value to our economy and to our nation. Let us, therefore, examine each of them in some detail.

BARTER (PRE-MONEY)

Before there was any kind of money, however, there was barter, and it is important first to understand the link between the two. Barter is defined as that which is directly exchanged for something of like value. Mr. Jones swaps his restored Model-T Ford for a Steinway grand piano.[1] This exchange is not monetary in nature because both items are valued for themselves rather than held as a *medium* of exchange to be used later for something else. Note, however, that both items have intrinsic value or they would not be accepted by the other parties. Labor also may be exchanged as barter when it, too, is perceived to have intrinsic value to the person for whom the labor is performed. The concept of *intrinsic value* is the key to an understanding of the various forms of money that evolved from the process of barter.

COMMODITY MONEY

In the natural evolution of every society, there always have been one or two items which became more commonly used in barter than all others. This was because they had certain characteristics which made them useful or attractive to almost everyone. Eventually, they were traded, not for themselves, but because they represented a storehouse of value which could be exchanged at a later time for something else. At that point, they ceased being barter and became true money. They were, according to our working definition, a *medium* of exchange. And, since that medium was a commodity of intrinsic value, it may be described as *commodity money*.

---

[1] Strictly speaking, each party holds the value of what he is receiving to be more than what he is giving. Otherwise he would not make the trade. In the mind of the traders, therefore, the items have *unequal* value. That opinion is shared *equally* them both. The shorter explanation, however, is less unwieldy.

Among primitive people, the most usual item to become commodity money was some form of food, either produce or livestock. Lingering testimony to this fact is our word *pecuniary,* which means pertaining to money. It is derived from the word *pecunia,* which is the Latin word for cow.

But, as society progressed beyond the level of bare existence, items other than food came into general demand. Ornaments were occasionally prized when the food supply was ample, and there is evidence of some societies using colored sea shells and unusual stones for this purpose. But these never seriously challenged the use of cattle, or sheep, or corn, or wheat, because these staples possessed greater intrinsic value for themselves even if they were not used as money.

METALS AS MONEY

Eventually, when man learned how to refine crude ores and to craft them into tools or weapons, the metals themselves became of value. This was the dawning of the Bronze Age in which iron, copper, tin, and bronze were traded between craftsmen and merchants along trade routes and at major sea ports.

The value of metal ingots was originally determined by weight. Then, as it became customary for the merchants who cast them to stamp the uniform weights on the top, they eventually were valued simply by counting their number. Although they were too large to carry in a pouch, they were still small enough to be transported easily and, in this form, they became, in effect, primitive but functional coins.

The primary reason metals became widely used as commodity money is that they meet all of the requirements for convenient trading. In addition to being of intrinsic value for uses *other* than money, they are not perishable, which is more than one can say for cows; by melting and reforming they can be divided into smaller units and conveniently used for purchases of minor items, which is not possible with diamonds, for example; and, because they are not in great abundance, small quantities carry high value, which means they are more portable than such items as timber, for example.

Perhaps the most important monetary attribute of metals, however, is their ability to be precisely measured. It is important to keep in mind that, in its fundamental form and function, money is both a storehouse and a *measure* of value. It is the reference by which all other things in the economy can be compared. It is essential, therefore, that the monetary unit itself be both measurable and constant. The ability to precisely assay metals in both purity and weight makes them ideally suited for this function. Experts may haggle over the precise quality of a gemstone, but an ingot of metal is either 99% pure or it isn't, and it either weighs 100 ounces or it doesn't. One's opinion has little to do with it. It is not without reason, therefore, that, on every continent and throughout history, man has chosen metals as the ideal storehouse and measure of value.

THE SUPREMACY OF GOLD

There is one metal, of course, that has been selected by centuries of trial and error above all others. Even today, in a world where money can no longer be defined, the common man instinctively knows that gold will do just fine until something better comes along. We shall leave it to the sociologists to debate *why* gold has been chosen as the universal money. For our purposes, it is only important to know that it *has* been. But we should not overlook the possibility that it was an excellent choice. As for quantity, there seems to be just the right amount to keep its value high enough for useful coinage. It is less plentiful than silver —which, incidentally, has run a close second in the monetary contest—and more abundant than platinum. Either could have served the purpose quite well, but gold has provided what appears to be the perfect compromise. Furthermore, it is a commodity in great demand for purposes other than money. It is sought for both industry and ornament, thus assuring its intrinsic value under all conditions. And, of course, its purity and weight can be precisely measured.

THE MISLEADING THEORY OF QUANTITY

It often is argued that gold is inappropriate as money because it is too limited in supply to satisfy the needs of modern commerce. On the surface, that may sound logical—after all, we *do* need a lot of money out there to keep the wheels of the economy turning—but, upon examination, this turns out to be one of the most childish ideas imaginable.

First of all, it is estimated that approximately 45% of all the gold mined throughout the world since the discovery of America is now in government or banking stockpiles.[1] There undoubtedly is at least an additional 30% in jewelry, ornaments, and private hoards. Any commodity which exists to the extent of 75% of its total world production since Columbus discovered America can hardly be described as in short supply.

The deeper reality, however, is that the supply is not even important. Remember that the primary function of money is to *measure* the value of the items for which it is exchanged. In this sense, it serves as a yardstick or ruler of value. It really makes no difference if we measure the length of our rug in inches, feet, yards, or meters. We could even manage it quite well in *miles* if we used decimals and expressed the result in *millimiles*. We could even use multiple rulers, but no matter what measurement we use, the reality of what we are measuring does not change. Our rug does not become larger just because we have increased the quantity of measurement units by painting additional markers onto our rulers.

If the supply of gold in relation to the supply of available goods is so small that a one-ounce coin would be too valuable for minor transactions, people simply would use half-ounce coins or tenth-ounce coins. The amount of gold in the world does not affect its ability to serve as money, it only affects the *quantity* that will be used to measure any given transaction.

Let us illustrate the point by imagining that we are playing a game of Monopoly. Each person has been given a starting supply of play money with which to transact business. It doesn't take long before we all begin to feel the shortage of cash. If we just had more *money,* we could really wheel and deal. Let us suppose further that someone discovers another game-box of Monopoly sitting in the

---

fru?6e ^ 8 in Groseclose, *Money and Man: A survey of Monetary Experience,* 4th ed. Oklahoma: University of Oklahoma Press, 1976), p. 259.

closet and proposes that the currency from that be added to the game under progress. By general agreement, the little bills are distributed equally among all players. What would happen?

The money supply has now been doubled. We all have twice as much money as we did a moment before. But would we be any better off? There is no corresponding increase in the quantity of property, so everyone would bid up the prices of existing pieces until they became twice as expensive. In other words, the law of supply and demand would rapidly seek exactly the same equilibrium as existed with the more limited money supply. When the quantity of money expands without a corresponding increase in goods, the effect is a reduction in the purchasing power of each monetary unit. In other words, nothing really changes except that the quoted price of everything goes up. But that is merely the *quoted* price, the price as expressed in terms of the monetary unit. In truth, the *real* price, in terms of its relationship to all other prices, remains the same. It's merely that the relative value of the money supply has gone down. This, of course, is the classic mechanism of inflation. Prices do not go up. The value of the money goes down.

If Santa Claus were to visit everyone on Earth next Christmas and leave in our stockings an amount of money exactly equal to the amount we already had, there is no doubt that many would rejoice over the sudden increase in wealth. By New Year's day, however, prices would have doubled for everything, and the net result on the world's standard of living would be exactly zero.

The reason so many people fall for the appealing argument that the economy needs a larger money supply is that they zero in only on the need to increase *their* supply. If they paused for a moment to reflect on the consequences of the *total* supply increasing, the nonsense of the proposal becomes immediately apparent.

Murray Rothbard, professor of economics at the University of Nevada at Las Vegas, says:

> We come to the startling truth that *it doesn't matter what the supply of money is*. Any supply will do as well as any other supply. The free market will simply adjust by changing the purchasing power, or effectiveness, of its gold-unit. There is no need whatever for any planned increase in the money supply, for the supply to rise to offset

---

1. **Those who rushed to market first, however, would benefit temporarily from old prices. Under inflation, those who save are punished.**

> **any condition, or to follow any artificial criteria. More money does not supply more capital, is not more productive, does not permit "economic growth."**

GOLD GUARANTEES PRICE STABILITY

The Federal Reserve claims that one of its primary objectives is to stabilize prices. In this, of course, it has failed miserably. The irony, however, is that maintaining stable prices is the easiest thing in the world. All we have to do is stop tinkering with the money supply and let the free market do its job. Prices become *automatically* stable under a commodity money system, and this is particularly true under a gold standard.

Economists like to illustrate the workings of the marketplace by creating hypothetical micro and macro economies in which everything is reduced to only a few factors and a few people. In that spirit, therefore, let us create a hypothetical economy consisting of only two classes of people: gold miners and tailors. Let us suppose that the law of supply and demand has settled on the value of one ounce of gold to be equal to a fine, custom-tailored suit of clothes. That means that the labor, tools, materials, and talent required to mine and refine one ounce of gold are equally traded for the labor, tools, and talent required to weave and tailor the suit. Up until now, the number of ounces of gold produced each year have been roughly equal to the number of fine suits made each year, so prices have remained stable. The price of a suit is one ounce of gold, and the value of one ounce of gold is equal to one finely-tailored suit.

Let us now suppose that the miners, in their quest for a better standard of living, work extra hours and produce more gold this year than previously—or that they discover a new lode of gold which greatly increases the available supply with little extra effort. Now things are no longer in balance. There are more ounces of gold than there are suits. The result of this expansion of the money supply over and above the supply of available goods is the same as in our game of Monopoly. The quoted prices of the suits go up ecause the relative value of the gold has gone down.

The process does not end there, however. When the miners see at they are no better off than before in spite of the extra work, and Specially when they see the tailors making a greater profit for no

---

Coir. Ujlay RotnDarcl *What Has Government Done to Our Money?* (Larkspur, rado: Pine Tree Press, 1964), p. 13.

increase in labor, some of them decide to put down their picks and turn to the trade of tailoring. In other words, they are responding to the law of supply and demand in labor. When this happens, the annual production of gold goes down while the production of suits goes up, and an equilibrium is reached once again in which suits and gold are traded as before. The free market, if unfettered by politicians and money mechanics, will always maintain a stable price structure which is automatically regulated by the underlying factor of human effort. The human effort required to extract one ounce of gold from the earth will always be approximately equal to the amount of human effort required to provide the goods and services for which it is freely exchanged.

CIGARETTES AS MONEY

A perfect example of how commodities tend to self-regulate their value occurred in Germany at the end of World War II. The German mark had become useless, and barter was common. But one item of exchange, namely cigarettes, actually became a commodity money, and they served quite well. Some cigarettes were smuggled into the country, but most of them were brought in by U.S. servicemen. In either case, the quantity was limited and the demand was high. A single cigarette was considered small change. A package of twenty and a carton of two hundred served as larger units of currency. If the exchange rate began to fall too low—in other words, if the quantity of cigarettes tended to expand at a rate faster than the expansion of other goods—the holders of the currency, more than likely, would smoke some of it rather than spend it. The supply would diminish and the value would return to its previous equilibrium. That is not theory, it actually happened.

With gold as the monetary base, we would expect that improvements in manufacturing technology would gradually reduce the cost of production, causing, not *stability,* but a *downward* movement of all prices. That downward pressure, however, is partially offset by an increase in the cost of the more sophisticated tools that are required. Furthermore, similar technological efficiencies are being applied in the field of mining, so everything tends to balance out. History has shown that changes in this natural equilibrium are minimal and occur only gradually over a long

---

1. See Galbraith, p. 250.

period of time. For example, in 1913, the year the Federal Reserve was enacted into law, the average annual wage in America was $633- The exchange value of gold that year was $20.67. That means that the average worker earned the equivalent of 30.6 ounces of gold per year.

In 1990, the average annual wage had risen to $20,468. That is a whopping increase of 3,233 per cent, an average rise of 42 per cent each year for 77 years. But the exchange value of gold in 1990 had also risen. It was at $386.90 per ounce. The average worker, therefore, was earning the equivalent of 52.9 ounces of gold per year. That is an increase of only 73 per cent, a rise of less than 1 per cent per year over that same period. It is obvious that the dramatic increase in the size of the paycheck was meaningless to the average American. The reality has been a small but steady increase in purchasing power (about 1 per cent per year) that has resulted from the gradual improvement in technology. This and only this has improved the standard of living and brought down real prices—as revealed by the relative value of gold.

In areas where personal service is the primary factor and where technology is less important, the stability of gold as a measure of value is even more striking. At the Savoy Hotel in London, one gold sovereign will still buy dinner for three, exactly as it did in 1913. And, in ancient Rome, the cost of a finely made toga, belt, and pair of sandals was one ounce of gold. That is almost exactly the same cost today, two-thousand years later, for a hand-crafted suit, belt, and a pair of dress shoes. There are no central banks or other human institutions which could even come close to providing that kind of price stability. And, yet, it is totally automatic under a gold standard.

In any event, before leaving the subject of gold, we should acknowledge that there is nothing mystical about it. It is merely a commodity which, because it has intrinsic value and possesses certain qualities, has become accepted throughout history as a medium of exchange. Hitler waged a campaign against gold as a tool of the Jewish bankers. But the Nazis traded heavily in gold and argely financed their war machine with it. Lenin claimed that gold Was used only to keep the workers in bondage and that, after the ^yolution, it would be used to cover the floors of public lavatories. e Soviet Union under Communism became one of the world's *ggest producers and users of gold. Economist John Maynard

Keynes once dismissed gold as a "barbaric metal." Many followers of Keynes today are heavily invested in gold. It is entirely possible, of course, that something other than gold *would* be better as the basis for money. It's just that, in over two thousand years, no one has been able to find it.

NATURAL LAW NO. 1

The amazing stability of gold as a measure of value is simply the result of human nature reacting to the forces of supply and demand. The process, therefore, may be stated as a natural law of human behavior:

> LESSON: When gold (or silver) is used as money and when the forces of supply and demand are not thwarted by government intervention, the amount of new metal added to the money supply will always be closely proportional to the expanding services and goods which can be purchased with it. Long-term stability of prices is the dependable result of these forces. This process is automatic and impartial. Any attempt by politicians to intervene will destroy the benefit for all. Therefore,
>
> LAW: Long-term price stability is possible only when the money supply is based upon the gold (or silver) supply without government interference.

As the concept of money was slowly developing in the mind of ancient man, it became obvious that one of the advantages of using gold or silver as the medium of exchange was that, because of their rarity as compared to copper or iron, great value could be represented by small size. Tiny ingots could be carried in a pouch or fastened to a belt for ease of transportation. And, of course, they could be more readily hidden for safekeeping. Goldsmiths then began to fashion them into round discs and to put their stamps on them to attest to purity and weight. In this way, the world's first coins began to make their appearance.

It is believed that the first precious metal coins were minted by the Lydians in Asia Minor (now Northwest Turkey), in about 600 **B.C.** The Chinese used gold cubes as early as 2100 **B.C.** But it wasn't until the kings stepped into the picture that true coinage became a reality. It was only when the *state* certified the tiny discs that they became widely accepted, and it is to the Greeks more than anyone that we owe this development. Groseclose describes the result:

> These light, shining discs, adorned with curious new emblems and a variety of vigorous, striking images, made a deep impression on both Greek and barbarian. And to the more practical minded, the abundance of uniform pieces of metal, each of a standard weight, certified by the authority of the state, meant a release from the cumbersomeness of barter and new and dazzling opportunities in every direction....
>
> All classes of men succumbed to money, and those who had formerly been content to produce only for their needs and the necessities of the household, found themselves going to the market place with their handicraft, or the fruits of their toil, to exchange them for the coins they might obtain.[1]

EXPANDING THE MONEY SUPPLY BY COIN CLIPPING

From the very beginning, the desire for a *larger* money supply led to practices which were destructive to the economy. Unscrupulous merchants began to shave off a tiny portion of each coin they handled—a process known as coin clipping—and then having the shavings melted down into new coins. Before long, the king's treasury began to do the same thing to the coins it received in taxes. In this way, the money supply was increased, but the supply of gold was not. The result was exactly what we now know always happens when the money supply is artificially expanded. There was inflation. Whereas one coin previously would buy twelve sheep, now it would only be accepted for ten. The total amount of gold needed for twelve sheep never really changed. It's just that everyone knew that one coin no longer contained it.

As governments became more brazen in their debasement of the currency, even to the extent of diluting the gold or silver content, the population adapted quite well by simply "discounting" the new coins. That is to say, they accepted them at a realistic value, which was lower than what the government had intended. This was, as always, reflected in a general rise in prices quoted in terms of those coins. *Real* prices, in terms of labor or other goods or even of gold itself remained unchanged.

Governments do not like to be thwarted in their plans to exploit their subjects. So a way had to be found to *force* people to accept these slugs as real money. This led to the first legal-tender laws. By royal decree, the "coin of the realm," was declared legal for the settlement of all debts. Anyone who refused it *at face value* was subject to fine, imprisonment, or, in some cases, even death. The result was that the good coins disappeared from circulation and went into private hoards. After all, if the government forces you to accept junk at the same rate of exchange as gold, wouldn't you keep the gold and spend the junk? That is what happened in. America in the '60s when the mint began to issue cheap metal tokens to replace the silver dimes, quarters, and half-dollars. Within a few months, the silver coins were in dresser drawers and safe-deposit boxes. The same thing has happened repeatedly throughout antiquity. In economics, that is called Gresham's Law: "Bad money drives out good."

---

[1] Groseclose, *Money and Man,* p. 13.

The final move in this game of legal plunder was for the government to fix prices so that, even if everyone is using only junk as money, they can no longer compensate for the continually expanding supply of it. Now the people were caught. They had no escape except to become criminals, which most of them, incidentally, chose to do. The history of artificially expanding money is the history of great dissatisfaction with government, much lawlessness, and a massive underground economy.

GOLD IS THE ENEMY OF THE WELFARE STATE

In more modern times, rulers of nations have become more sophisticated in the methods by which they debase the currency. Instead of clipping coins, it is done through the banking system. The *consequences* of that process were summarized in 1966 by Alan Greenspan who, a few years later, would became Chairman of the Board of Governors of the Federal Reserve. Greenspan wrote:

> The abandonment of the gold standard made it possible for the welfare statists *to use the banking system* as a means to an unlimited expansion of credit....
>
> The law of supply and demand is not to be conned. As the supply of money (of claims) increases relative to the supply of tangible assets in the economy, prices must eventually rise. Thus the earnings saved by the productive members of the society lose value in terms of goods- When the economy's books are finally balanced, one finds that this loss in value represents the goods purchased by the government for welfare or other purposes....
>
> In the absence of the gold standard, there is no way to protect savings from confiscation through inflation. There is no safe store oi value. If there were, the government would have to make its holding illegal, as was done in the case of gold.... The financial policy of the

> **welfare state requires that there be no way for the owners of wealth to protect themselves.**
>
> **This is the shabby secret of the welfare statists' tirades against gold. Deficit spending is simply a scheme for the "hidden" confiscation of wealth. Gold stands in the way of this insidious process. It stands as a protector of property rights.**

Unfortunately, when Greenspan was appointed as Chairman of the Federal Reserve System, he became silent on the issue of gold. Once he was seated at the control panel which holds the levers of power, he served the statists well as they continued to confiscate the people's wealth through the hidden tax of inflation. Even the wisest of men can be corrupted by power and wealth.

REAL COMMODITY MONEY IN HISTORY

Returning to the topic of debasing the currency in ancient times, it must be stated that such practices were by no means universal. There are many examples throughout history of regents and kingdoms which used great restraint in money creation. Ancient Greece, where coinage was first developed, is one of them. The *drachma* became the defacto monetary unit of the civilized world because of the dependability of its gold content. Within its borders, cities flourished and trade abounded. Even after the fall of Athens in the Peloponnesian War, her coinage remained, for centuries, as *the* standard by which all others were measured.[2]

Perhaps the greatest example of a nation with sound money, however, was the Byzantine Empire. Building on the sound monetary tradition of Greece, the emperor Constantine ordered the creation of a new gold piece called the *solidus* and a silver piece called the *miliarense*. The gold weight of the *solidus* soon became fixed at 65 grains and was minted at that standard for the next eight-hundred years. Its quality was so dependable that it was freely accepted, under the name *bezant,* from China to Brittany, from the Baltic Sea to Ethiopia.

Byzantine laws regarding money were strict. Before being admitted to the profession of banking, the candidate had to have sponsors who would attest to his character, that he would not file

[1] Alan Greenspan, "Gold and Economic Freedom," in *Capitalism: The Unknown Ideal*, ed. Ayn Rand (New York: Signet Books, 1967), p. 101.

[2] Even the Greeks, under Solon, had one, brief experience with a debased currency. But it was short lived, and never repeated. See Groseclose, *Money and Man,* pp. 14,20-54.

or chip either the *solidi* or the *tniliarensia,* and that he would not issue false coin. Violation of these rules called for cutting off a hand.[1]

It is an amazing fact of history that the Byzantine Empire flourished as the center of world commerce for eight-hundred years without falling into bankruptcy nor, for that matter, even into debt. Not once during this period did it devalue its money. "Neither the ancient nor the modern world," says Heinrich Gelzer, "can offer a complete parallel to this phenomenon. This prodigious stability-secured the *bezant* as universal currency. On account of its full weight, it passed with all the neighboring nations as a valid medium of exchange. By her money, Byzantium controlled both the civilized and the barbarian worlds."[2]

BAD COMMODITY MONEY IN HISTORY

The experience of the Romans was quite different. Basically a militaristic people, they had little patience for the niceties of monetary restraint. Especially in the later Empire, debasement of the coinage became a deliberate state policy. Every imaginable means for plundering the people was devised. In addition to taxation, coins were clipped, reduced, diluted, and plated. Favored groups were given franchises for state-endorsed monopolies, the origin of our present-day corporation. And, amidst constantly rising prices in terms of constantly expanding money, speculation and dishonesty became rampant.

By the year 301 **A.D.,** mutiny was developing in the army, remote regions were displaying disloyalty, the treasury was empty, agriculture depressed, and trade almost at a standstill. It was then that Diocletian issued his famous price-fixing proclamation as the last measure of a desperate emperor. We are struck by the similarity to such proclamations in our own time. Most of the chaos can be traced directly to government policy. Yet, the politicians point the accusing finger at everyone else for their "greed" and "disregard for the common good." Diocletian declared:

---

1. *Le lime du prefet ou I'empereur Leon le Sage sur les corporations de Constantinople* **French translation from the Geneva text by Tules Nicole, p. 38. Cited by Groseclose,** ***Money and Man,*** **p. 52.**

2. **Byzantininsche Kulturgeschichte (Tubingen, 1909), p. 78. As quoted by Groseclose,** ***Money and Man,*** **p. 54.**

> **Who is of so hardened a heart and so untouched by a feeling of humanity that he can be unaware, nay that he has not noticed, that in the sale of wares which are exchanged in the market, or dealt with in the daily business of the cities, an exorbitant tendency in prices has spread to such an extent that the unbridled desire of plundering is held in check neither by abundance nor by seasons of plenty.... Inasmuch as there is seen only a mad desire without control, to pay no heed to the needs of the many,...it seems good to us, as we look into the future, to us who are the fathers of the people, that justice intervene to settle matters impartially.**[1]

What followed was an incredibly detailed list of mandated prices for everything from a serving of beer or a bunch of watercress to a lawyer's fee and a bar of gold. The result? Conditions became even worse, and the royal decree was rescinded five years later.

The Roman Empire never recovered from the crisis. By the fourth century, all coins were weighed, and the economy was slipping back into barter again. By the seventh century, the weights themselves had been so frequently changed that it was no longer possible to effect an exchange in money at all. For all practical purposes, money became extinct, and the Roman Empire was no more.

RECEIPT MONEY

When new civilizations rose from the ruins of Rome, they reclaimed the lost discovery of money and used it to great advantage. The invention was truly a giant step forward for mankind, but there were many problems yet to be solved and much experimentation lay ahead. The development of paper money was a case in point. When a man accumulated more coins than he required for daily purchases, he needed a safe place to store them. The goldsmiths, who handled large amounts of precious metals in their trades, had already built sturdy vaults to protect their own inventory, so it was natural for them to offer vault space to their customers for a fee. The goldsmith could be trusted to guard the coins well because he also would be guarding; his own health.

When the coins were placed into the vault, the warehouseman would give the owner a written receipt which entitled him to withdraw at any time. At first, the only way the coins could be taken from the vault was for the owner to personally present the receipt. Eventually, however, it became customary for the owner to merely endorse his receipt to a third party who, upon presentation, could make the withdrawal. These endorsed receipts were the forerunners of today's checks.

The final stage in this development was the custom of issuing, not just one receipt for the entire deposit, but a series of smaller receipts, adding up to the same total, and each having printed across the top: PAY TO THE BEARER ON DEMAND. As the population learned from experience that these paper receipts were truly backed by good coin in the goldsmith's warehouse and that the coin really would be given out in exchange for the receipts, it became increasingly common to use the paper instead of the coin.

Thus, *receipt money* came into existence. The paper itself was useless, but what it represented was quite valuable. As long as the coin was held in safe keeping as promised, there was no difference in value between the receipt and the coin which backed it. And, as we shall see in the next chapter, there were notable examples of the honest use of receipt money at the very beginning of the development of banking. When the receipt was scrupulously honored, the economy moved forward. When it was used as a gimmick for the artificial expansion of the money supply, the economy convulsed and stagnated.

NATURAL LAW NO. 2

This is not a textbook on the history of money, so we cannot afford the luxury of lingering among the fascinating details. For our purposes, it is sufficient to recognize that human behavior in these matters is predictable and, because of that predictability, it is possible to formulate another principle that is so universal that it, too, may be considered a natural law. Drawing from the vast experience of this early period, it can be stated as follows:

> LESSON: Whenever government sets out to manipulate the money supply, regardless of the intelligence or good intentions of those who attempt to direct the process, the result is inflation, economic chaos, and political upheaval. By contrast, whenever government is limited in its monetary power to only the maintenance of honest weights and measures of precious

metals, the result is price stability, economic prosperity, and political tranquility. Therefore,

> LAW: For a nation to enjoy economic prosperity and political tranquility, the monetary power of its politicians must be limited solely to the maintenance of honest weights and measures of precious metals.

As we shall see in the following chapters, the centuries of monetary upheaval that followed that early period contain no evidence that this law has been repealed by modern man.

SUMMARY

Knowledge of the nature of money is essential to an understanding of the Federal Reserve. Contrary to common belief, the topic is neither mysterious nor complicated. For the purposes of this study, money is defined as anything which is accepted as a medium of exchange. Building on that, we find there are four kinds of money: commodity, receipt, fiat, and fractional. Precious metals were the first commodity money to appear in history and ever since have been proven by actual experience to be the only reliable base for an honest monetary system. Gold, as the basis of money, can take several forms: bullion, coins, and fully backed paper receipts. Man has been plagued throughout history with the false theory that the quantity of money is important, specifically that more money is better than less. This has led to perpetual manipulation and expansion of the money supply through such practices as coin clipping, debasement of the coin content, and, in later centuries, the issuance of more paper receipts than there was gold to back them. In every case, these practices have led to economic and political disaster. In those rare instances where man has refrained from manipulating the money supply and has allowed it to be determined by free-market production of the gold supply, the result has been prosperity and tranquility.

Chapter Eight

FOOL'S GOLD

The history of paper money without precious-metal backing forced on the public by government decree; the emergence of our present-day fractional-reserve banking system based on the issuance of a greater amount of receipts for gold than the bank has in gold to back them up.

We previously have broken down the concept of money into four categories: commodity, receipt, fiat, and fractional. In the last chapter we examined commodity and receipt money in some detail. In doing so, we also established certain monetary principles which apply regardless of their form. We shall now turn to the remaining two categories, both of which are represented by paper and which are at the root of almost all of modern man's economic woes.

FIAT MONEY

The *American Heritage Dictionary* defines fiat money as "paper money decreed legal tender, not backed by gold or silver." The two characteristics of fiat money, therefore, are (1) it does not represent anything of intrinsic value and (2) it is decreed legal tender. Legal tender simply means that there is a law requiring everyone to accept the currency in commerce. The two always go together because, since the money really is worthless, it soon would be rejected by the public in favor of a more reliable medium of exchange, such as gold or silver coin. Thus, when governments issue fiat money, they always declare it to be legal tender under pain of fine or imprisonment. The only way a government can exchange its worthless paper money for tangible goods and services is to give its citizens no choice.

The first notable use of this practice was recorded by Marco Polo during his travels to China in the thirteenth century. The famous explorer gives us this account:

> **The Emperor's mint then is in this same City of Cambaluc, and the way it is wrought is such that you might say he hath the Secret of Alchemy in perfection, and you would be right!...**
>
> **What they take is a certain fine white bast or skin which lies between the wood of the tree and the thick outer bark, and this they make into something resembling sheets of paper, but black. When these sheets have been prepared they are cut up into pieces of different sizes. The smallest of these sizes is worth a half tornesel.... There is also a kind worth one Bezant of gold, and others of three Bezants, and so up to ten.**
>
> **All these pieces of paper are issued with as much solemnity and authority as if they were of pure gold or silver; and on every piece, a variety of officials, whose duty it is, have to write their names and to put their seals. And when all is prepared duly, the chief officer deputed by the Kaan smears the Seal entrusted to him with vermilion and impresses it on the paper, so that the form of the Seal remains stamped upon it in red; the money is then authentic. Any one forging it would be punished with death. And the Kaan causes every year to be made such a vast quantity of this money, which costs him nothing, that it must equal in amount all the treasures in the world!**
>
> **With these pieces of paper, made as I have described, he causes all payments on his own account to be made, and he makes them to pass current universally over all his Kingdoms.... And nobody, however important he may think himself, dares to refuse them on pain of death. And indeed everybody takes them readily.**[1]

One is tempted to marvel at the Kaan's audacious power and the subservience of his subjects who endured such an outrage; but our smugness rapidly vanishes when we consider the similarity to our own Federal Reserve Notes. They are adorned with signatures and seals; counterfeiters are severely punished; the government pays its expenses with them; the population is forced to accept them; they—and the "invisible" checkbook money into which they can be converted—are made in such vast quantity that it must equal in amount all the treasures of the world. And yet they cost nothing to make. In truth, our present monetary system is an almost exact replica of that which supported the warlords of seven centuries ago.

1. Original from Henry Thule's edition of *Marco Polo's Travels,* reprinted in W-Vissering, On *Chinese Currency: Coin and Paper Money* (Leiden: EJ. Brill, 1877), reprinted 1968 by Ch'eng-wen Publishing Co., Taiwan, as cited by Anthony Sutton, *The War on Gold* (Seal Beach, California: '76 Press, 1977), pp. 26-28.

THE COLONIAL EXPERIENCE

Unfortunately, the present situation is not unique to our history. In fact, after China, the next place in the world to adopt the use of fiat money was America; specifically, the Massachusetts Bay Colony. This event has been described as "not only the origin of paper money in America, but also in the British Empire, and almost in the Christian world."[1]

In 1690, Massachusetts launched a military raid against the French colony in Quebec. She had done this before and, each time, had brought back sufficient plunder to more than pay for the expedition. This time, however, the foray was a dismal failure, and the men returned empty handed. When the soldiers demanded their pay, Massachusetts found its coffers empty. Disgruntled soldiers have a way of becoming unruly, so the officials scrambled for some way to raise the funds. Additional taxes would have been extremely unpopular, so they decided simply to print paper money. In order to convince the soldiers and the citizenry to accept it, the government made two solemn promises: (1) it would redeem the paper for gold or silver coin just as soon as there was sufficient tax revenue to do so, and (2) absolutely no additional paper notes would ever be issued. Both pledges were promptly broken. Only a few months later, it was announced that the original issue was insufficient to discharge the government's debt, and a new issue almost six times greater was put into circulation. The currency wasn't redeemed for nearly forty years, long after those who had made the pledge had faded from the scene.

A CLASSIC PATTERN

Most of the other colonies were quick to learn the magic of the printing press, and the history that followed is a classic example of cause and effect: Governments artificially expanded the money supply through the issuance of fiat currency. This was followed by legal tender laws to force its acceptance. Next came the disappearance of gold or silver coins which went, instead, into private hoards or to foreign traders who insisted on the real thing for their wares. Many of the colonies repudiated their previous money by issuing new bills valued at multiples of the old. Then came political

---

[1] Ernest Ludlow Bogart, *Economic History of the American People* (New York: Longmans, Green and Co., 1930), p. 172.

discontent and civil disobedience. And at the end of each cycle there was rampant inflation and economic chaos.

In 1703, South Carolina declared that its money was "a good payment and tender in law" and then added that, should anyone refuse to honor it as such, they would be fined an amount equal to "double the value of the bills so refused." By 1716, the penalty had been increased to "treble the value."

THE PRINTING PRESS AND **INFLATION**

Benjamin Franklin was an ardent proponent of fiat money during those years and used his great influence to sell the idea to the public. We can get some idea of the ferment of the times by noting that, in 1736, writing in his *Pennsylvania Gazette,* Franklin apologized for its irregular publication, and explained that the printer was "with the Press, labouring for the publick Good, to make Money more plentiful."[2] The printing of money was apparently a major, time-consuming operation.

In 1737, Massachusetts devalued its fiat currency by 66%, offering one dollar of new currency for three of the old. The promise was made that, after five years, the new money would be fully redeemed in silver or gold. The promise was not kept.

By the late 1750s, Connecticut had price inflated by 800%. The Carolinas had inflated 900%. Massachusetts 1000%. Rhode Island 2300%.[4] Naturally, these inflations all had to come to an end and, when they did, they turned into equally massive deflations and depressions. It has been shown that, even in colonial times, the classic booms and busts which modern economists are fond of blaming on an "unbridled free market" actually were direct manifestations of the expansion and contraction of fiat money which no longer was governed by the laws of supply and demand.

---

1. Statutes at Large of South Carolina, II. 211,665, as cited by George Bancroft, .A *Plea for the Constitution* (Originally published by Harpers in 1886. Reprinted in Sewanee, Tennessee: Spencer Judd Publishers, 1982), p. 7.
2. Leonard W. Labaree, ed., *The Papers of Benjamin Franklin* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1960), Vol. 2, p. 159.
3. Province Laws, II. 826, cited by Bancroft, p. 14.
4. Ron Paul and Lewis Lehrman, *The Case for Gold* (Washington, D.C.: Cato Institute, 1982), p. 22. Also Sutton, *The War on Gold,* p. 44.
5. See Donald L. Kemmerer, "Paper Money in New lersey, 1668-1775," New Jersey Historical Society, *Proceedings* 74 (April 1956): pp. 107-144, as cited by Paul and Lehrman, *The Case for Gold,* p. 22.

By this time, coins had completely disappeared from the scene. Some were in private hoards, but most of them had been exported to other countries, leaving the colonies with little choice but to use fiat money or barter. Merchants from abroad were interested in neither of those, however, and international trade ground almost to a halt.

A BLESSING IN DISGUISE

The experiment with fiat money was a calamity to the colonists, but it was also a thorn in the side of the Bank of England. The bank had used its influence with the Crown to forbid the colonies to mint their own coins or to establish local banks. This meant that, if the colonists wanted the convenience of paper money, they would be forced to use the notes issued by the Bank of England. No one had anticipated that the colonial governments would be so inventive as to create their own *paper* money. So, in 1751, Great Britain began to pressure the colonies to redeem all of their currency and withdraw it from circulation. This they eventually did, and at bargain prices. By then, their fiat money was heavily discounted in the market place and the governments were able to buy back their own currency for pennies on the dollar.

The decree from the British Parliament, although heavily resented by the colonists, turned out to be a blessing in disguise. The paper notes of the Bank of England never did become a primary medium of exchange. Probably because of their recent bad experience with paper money, the colonists merely brought what few gold and silver coins they had out of hiding and returned to a true commodity-money system. At first, the doomsdayers predicted this would spell further ruin for the colonial economy. "There isn't enough money" was the all-too-familiar cry. But there was, indeed, quite enough for, as we have already seen, *any* amount is sufficient.

TOBACCO BECOMES MONEY

There was, in fact, a period in which other commodities became accepted as a secondary medium of exchange. Such items as nails, lumber, rice, and whisky filled the monetary void, but tobacco was the most common. Here was a commodity which was in great demand both within the colonies and for overseas commerce. It had intrinsic value; it could not be counterfeited; it could be divided into almost any denominational quantity; and its supply could not be increased except by the exertion of labor. In other words, it was regulated by the law of supply and demand, which gave it great stability in value. In many ways, it was an ideal money. It was officially adopted as such by Virginia in 1642 and a few years later by Maryland, but it was used *unofficially* in all the other colonies, as well. So close was the identity of tobacco with money that the previous fiat currency of New Jersey, not a tobacco growing state, displayed a picture of a tobacco leaf on its face. It also carried the inscription: "To counterfeit is *Death*." Tobacco was used in early America as a secondary medium of exchange for about two-hundred years, until the new Constitution declared that money was, henceforth, the sole prerogative of the federal government.

The primary currency at that juncture, however, was still gold and silver coin, or *specie,* as it is called. And the immediate result of returning to a sound monetary unit was a rapid recovery from the economic stagnation previously inflicted by the booms and busts of fiat money. Trade and production rose dramatically, and this, in turn, attracted an inflow of gold and silver coin from around the world, filling the void that had been created by years of worthless paper. The law of supply and demand was visibly at work. For a while, Massachusetts had returned to specie while Rhode Island remained on fiat money. The result was that Newport, which had been the trade center for the West Indies, lost its trade to Boston and became an empty port. After the colonies had returned to coin, prices quickly found their natural equilibrium and then *stayed* at that point, even during the Seven Years War and the disruption of trade that occurred immediately prior to the Revolution. There is no better example of the fact that economic systems in distress can and do recover rapidly if government does not interfere with the natural healing process.

WAR BRINGS A RETURN OF FIAT MONEY

The War for Independence brought all of this to a sudden halt. Wars are seldom funded out of the existing treasury, nor are they even done so out of increased taxes. If governments were to levy

---

1. Galbraith, pp. 48-50.

2. Paul and Lehrman, pp. 22-23.

3. "The Colonial Monetary Standard of Massachusetts," by Roger W. Weiss, *Economic History Review,* No. 27, November, 1974, p. 589.

taxes on their citizens fully adequate to finance the conflict, the amount would be so great that many of even its most ardent supporters would lose enthusiasm. By artificially increasing the money supply, however, the real cost is hidden from view. It is still paid, of course, but through inflation, a process that few people understand.

The American Revolution was no exception. In order to pay the bill for independence, both the Confederation and the individual states went heavily into the printing business. At the beginning of the war in 1775, the total money supply stood at $12 million. In June of that year, the Continental Congress issued another $2 million. Before the notes were even put into circulation, another $1 million was authorized. By the end of the year, another $3 million. In 1776, another $19 million. $13 million in 1777. $64 million in 1778. $125 million in 1779. And still more: the Continental Army issued its own "certificates" for the purchase of supplies totalling $200 million. A total of $425 million in five years on top of a base of $12 million is an increase of over 3500%. And, in addition to this massive expansion of the money supply on the part of the central government, it must be remembered that the states were doing exactly the same thing. It is estimated that, in just five years from 1775 to the end of 1779, the total money supply expanded by 5000%. By contrast, the amount raised in taxes over the five-year period was inconsequential, amounting to only a few million dollars.

AND A MASSIVE INFLATION

The first exhilarating effect of this flood of new money was the flush of apparent prosperity, but that was quickly followed by inflation as the self-destruct mechanism began to operate. In 1775, paper Continentals were traded for one dollar in gold. In 1777, they were exchanged for twenty-five cents. By 1779, just four years from their issue, they were worth less than a penny. The phrase "Not worth a Continental" has its origin in this dismal period. Shoes sold for $5,000 a pair. A suit of clothes cost a million.

It was in that year that George Washington wrote, "A wagon load of money will scarcely purchase a wagon load of'provisions."[1]

---

[1] Quoted by Albert S. Bolles, *The Financial History of the United States* (New York: D- Appleton, 1896, 4th ed.). Vol. I, p. 132.

Even Benjamin Franklin began to see the light. In a mood of sarcasm, he wrote:

> **This Currency, as we manage it, is a wonderful machine. It performs its Office when we issue it; it pays and clothes Troops and provides Victuals and Ammunition; and when we are obliged to issue a Quantity excessive, it pays itself off by Depreciation.**

When speaking of deficit spending, it is common to hear the complaint that we are saddling future generations with the bill for what we enjoy today. Why *not* let those in the future help pay for what will benefit them also? Don't be deceived. That is a misconception encouraged by politicians to calm the public. When money is fiat, as the colonists discovered, every government building, public work, and cannon of war is paid out of current labor and current wealth. These things must be built *today* with *today's* labor, and the man who performs that labor must also be paid *today*. It is true that *interest* payments fall partly to future generations, but the *initial cost* is paid by those in the present. It is paid by loss of value in the monetary unit and loss of purchasing power for one's wages.

INFLATION IS A HIDDEN TAX

Fiat money is the means by which governments obtain instant purchasing power without taxation. But where does that purchasing power come from? Since fiat money has nothing of tangible value to offset it, government's fiat purchasing power can be obtained only by subtracting it from somewhere else. It is, in fact, "collected" from us all through a decline in *our* purchasing power. It is, therefore, exactly the same as a tax, but one that is hidden from view, silent in operation, and little understood by the taxpayer.

In 1786, Thomas Jefferson provided a clear explanation of this process when he wrote:

> **Every one, through whose hands a bill passed, lost on that bill what it lost in value during the time it was in his hands. This was a real tax on him; and in this way the people of the United States actually contributed those... millions of dollars during the war, and by a mode of taxation the most oppressive of all because the most unequal of all.**

---

1. Letter to Samuel Cooper, April 22,1779, quoted by Albert Henry Smyth, ed., ***The Writings of Benjamin Franklin,*** **(New York: Macmillan, 1906), Vol. VII, p. 294.**

2. Thomas Jefferson, ***Observations on the Article Etats-Unis Prepared for the Encyclopedia,*** **June 22,1786, from** ***Writings*** **(New York: G.P. Putnam's Sons, 1894), Vol. IV, p. 165.**

ENTER PRICE CONTROLS AND LEGAL TENDER LAWS

As prices skyrocketed, the colonies enacted wage and price controls, which was like plugging up the whistle on a tea kettle in hopes of keeping the steam from escaping. When that failed, there followed a series of harsh legal tender laws. One law even invoked the specter of treason. It said: "If any person shall hereafter be so lost to all virtue and regard for his Country as to refuse to receive said bills in payment-he shall be deemed, published, and treated as an enemy in this Country and precluded from all trade or intercourse with the inhabitants of these colonies."[1]

Rhode Island not only levied a heavy fine for non-acceptance of its notes but, upon a *second* offense, an individual was stripped of citizenship. When a court declared the act unconstitutional, the legislature called the judges before it and summarily dismissed the offenders from office.

ENTER ECONOMIC CHAOS AND INSURRECTION

If the ravages of war were a harsh burden for the colonies to bear, the havoc of fiat money was equally so. After the war, inflation was followed by deflation as reality returned to the market place. Prices fell drastically, which was wonderful for those who were buying. But, for the merchants who were *selling* or the farmers who had borrowed heavily to acquire property at inflated wartime prices, it was a disaster. The new, lower prices were not adequate to sustain their fixed, inflated mortgages, and many hard-working families were ruined by foreclosure. Furthermore, most people still did not understand the inflation process, and there were many who continued to advocate the "paper money cure." Several of the states were receptive to the pressure, and their printing presses continued to roll.

Historian Andrew McLaughlin recalls a typical scene in Rhode Island at that time as witnessed by a visiting Frenchman:

> **A French traveler who passed through Newport about this time gives a dismal picture of the place: idle men standing with folded arms at the corners of the streets; houses falling to ruins; miserable shops offering for sale nothing but a few coarse stuffs;...grass growing in the streets; windows stuffed with rags; everywhere announcing misery,**

---

[1] **David Ramsay, *History of the American Revolution* (London: Johnson and Stockdale, 1791), Vol. II, pp. 134-36.**

[2] **Merrill Jensen, *The New Nation* (New York: Vintage Books, 1950), p. 324.**

> the triumph of paper money and the influence of bad government. The merchants had closed their stores rather than take payment in paper; farmers from neighboring states did not care to bring their produce.[1]

Idleness and economic depression also led to outbursts of rebellion and insurrection. In 1786, George Washington wrote to James Warren: "The wheels of government are clogged and^... we are descending into the vale of confusion and darkness." Two years later, in a letter to Henry Knox, he said: "If ... any person had told me that there would have been such formidable rebellion as exists, I would have thought him a bedlamite, a fit subject for a madhouse."

Fortunately, there is a happy ending to that part of the story. As we shall see in a subsequent chapter, when the state delegates assembled to draft the Constitution, the effects of fiat money were so fresh in their minds they decided to put an end to it once and for all. Then, the new republic not only rapidly recovered but went on to become the economic envy of the world—for a while, at least—until the lesson had been forgotten by following generations. But that is getting ahead of our story. For now, we are dealing with the topic of fiat money; and the experience of the American colonies is a classic example of what *always* happens when men succumb to its siren call.

NATURAL LAW NO. 3

Let us pause at this point and observe another of those lessons derived from centuries of experience. That lesson is so clear and so universal and so widely seen throughout history that it may be stated as a natural law of human behavior:

> LESSON: Fiat money is paper money without precious-metal backing and which people are required by law to accept. It allows politicians to increase spending without raising taxes. Fiat money is the cause of inflation, and the amount which people lose in purchasing power is exactly the amount which was taken from them and transferred to their government by this process. Inflation, therefore, is a hidden tax.

---

1. Andrew C. McLaughlin, *The Confederation and the Constitution* (New York: Collier Books, 1962), pp. 107-08.
2. Harry Atwood, *The Constitution Explained* (Merrimac, Massachusetts: Destiny Publishers, 1927; 2nd ed. 1962), p. 3.
3. *Ibid.,* p. 4.

This tax is the most unfair of all because it falls most heavily on those who are least able to pay: the small wage earner and those on fixed incomes. It also punishes the thrifty by eroding the value of their savings. This creates resentment among the people, leading always to political unrest and national disunity. Therefore,

LAW: A nation that resorts to the use of fiat money has doomed itself to economic hardship and political disunity.

FRACTIONAL MONEY

Let us turn, now, to the fourth and final possible form of money: a most intriguing concept called *fractional money*. And, to understand how this functions, we must return to Europe and the practice of the early goldsmiths who stored the precious metal coins of their customers for a fee.

In addition to the goldsmiths who *stored* coins, there was another class of merchants, called "scriveners," who *loaned* coins. The goldsmiths reasoned that they, too, could act as scriveners, but do so with *other* people's money. They said it was a pity for all that coin to just sit idle in their vaults. Why not lend it out and earn a profit which then could be split between themselves and their depositors? Put it to *work,* instead of merely gathering dust. They had learned from experience that very few of their depositors ever wanted to remove their coins at the same time. In fact, net withdrawals seldom exceeded ten or fifteen per cent of their stockpile. It seemed perfectly safe to lend up to eighty or even eighty-five per cent of their coins. And so the warehousemen began to act as loan brokers on behalf of their depositors, and the concept of banking, as we know it today, was born.

That's the way many history books describe it, but there is more involved here than merely putting idle money to work. First of all, sharing the interest income with the owners of the deposits was not part of the original concept. That only became general practice many years later after the depositors became outraged and needed to be reassured that these loans were in their interest as well. In the beginning, they didn't even know that their coins were being loaned out. They naively thought that the goldsmiths were lending their *own* money.

DEPOSITS ARE NOT AVAILABLE FOR LENDING

In the second place, we need to consider whether the coin in the vault was even *available* for lending—regardless of whether or not the depositors received a part of the profit. Let us suppose that we are playing a game of poker at the home of Charlie Smith. Each of us has given $20 to Charlie who, acting as the banker, has put our money into a shoe box and given us, in return, twenty poker chips. It is the understanding that, anytime we want to go home, we can get back a dollar for each chip we have at that time. Now let us suppose that Charlie's brother-in-law, Larry, shows up, not to play poker, but to borrow some money. Since six of us are playing and each has put in $20, there is a total of $120 in the shoe box, and that turns out to be perfect for Larry's needs. You can imagine what would happen if Charlie decided to lend out the "idle" money. It is not *available* for lending.

Neither Charlie nor any of the players have the right to loan *those* dollars, because they are being held in escrow, so to speak, pending completion of the contract between Charlie and his guests. Those dollars no longer even exist as money. They have been replaced—in concept at least—by the poker chips. If any of us are so touched by Larry's story that we decide to loan him the money ourselves, we would have to do it with *other* dollars or cash in our chips for the dollars in the shoe box. In that case, of course, we could no longer stay in the game. *We cannot spend, loan, or give away the deposit and also consider the chips to be worth anything*.

If you are a member of an organization and have given your proxy to a friend to vote in your absence at the annual meeting, you cannot then show up and cast your own vote *in addition* to your proxy. Likewise, in the beginning of banking, the certificates which were circulated as money were, in effect, *proxies* for the coins. Consequently, those coins were not *available* for lending. Their monetary value had been assigned to the certificates. If the certificate holders had wanted to lend out their coins, they should have retired the certificates first. They were not entitled to hold spendable paper money and *also* authorize their banker to lend that same money as coins. *One cannot spend, loan, or give away the coins and also consider the certificates to be worth anything*.

All of this is just common sense. But there is another dimension to the problem which has to do with honesty in business contracts.

When the bankers used those coins as the basis for loans, they were putting themselves in a position of not having enough coin in the vault to make good on their contracts when it came time for depositors to take their money home. In other words, the new contracts were made with the full knowledge that, under certain circumstances, they would have to be broken. But the bankers never bothered to explain that. The general public was led to believe that, if they approved of putting these supposedly idle funds to work, they would be helping the economy and earning a little profit besides. It was an appealing proposal, and the idea caught on like wildfire.

FRACTIONAL-RESERVE BANKING

Most borrowers wanted paper money, of course, not bulky coins, so, when they received their loans, they usually put the coins right back into the vault for safekeeping. They were then given *receipts* for these deposits which, as we have observed, were readily accepted in commerce as money. At this point, things began to get complicated. The original depositors had been given receipts for all of the bank's coins. But the bank now issued loans in the amount of eighty-five per cent of its deposits, and the borrowers were given receipts for that same amount. These were *in addition to* the original receipts. That made 85% *more* receipts than *coins*. Thus, the banks *created* 85% more money and placed it into circulation through their borrowers. In other words, by issuing phony receipts, they artificially expanded the money supply. At this point, the certificates were no longer 100% backed by gold. They now had a backing of only 54%, but they were accepted by the unsuspecting public as equal in value to the old receipts. The gold behind all of them, however, now represented only a fraction of their face value. Thus, the receipts became what may be called *fractional money,* and the process by which they were created is called *fractional-reserve banking*.

None of this shortfall, unfortunately, was ever explained. The bankers decided that it would be better not to discuss reality where the public could hear. These facts became the arcane secrets of the profession. The depositors were never encouraged to question how the banks could lend out their money and still have it on hand to

---

1- 100 units of gold divided by 185 certificates equals .54

pay back on an instant's notice. Instead, bankers put on great airs of respectability, stability, and accountability; dressed and acted serious if not stern; erected great edifices resembling government buildings and temples, all to bolster the false image of being able to honor their contracts to pay *on demand*.

It was John Maynard Keynes who observed:

> A "sound" banker, alas! is not one who foresees danger, and avoids it, but one who, when he is ruined, is ruined in a conventional and orthodox way along with his fellows, so that no one can readily blame him. It is necessarily part of the business of a banker to maintain appearances, and to confess a conventional respectability, which is more than human. Life-long practices of this kind make them the most romantic and the least realistic of men.

CREATING MONEY OUT OF DEBT

Let us step back for a moment and analyze. In the beginning, banks served as warehouses for the safe keeping of their customers' coins. When they issued paper receipts for those coins, they converted commodity money into receipt money. This was a great convenience, but it did not alter the money supply. People had a choice of using either coin or paper but they could not use both. If they used coin, the receipt was never issued. If they used the receipt, the coin remained in the vault and did not circulate.

When the banks abandoned this practice and began to issue receipts to *borrowers,* they became magicians. Some have said they created money out of nothing, but that is not quite true. What they did was even more amazing. They created money out of *debt*.

Obviously, it is easier for people to go into debt than to mine gold. Consequently, money no longer was limited by the natural forces of supply and demand. From that point in history forward, it was to be limited only by the degree to which bankers have been able to push down the gold-reserve fraction of their deposits.

From this perspective, we can now look back on fractional money and recognize that it really is a transitional form between receipt money and fiat money. It has some of the characteristics of both. As the fraction becomes smaller, the less it resembles receipt money and the more closely it comes to fiat money. When the fraction finally reaches zero, then it has made the complete

---

1. As quoted by Lever and Huhne, *Debt and Danger: The World Financial Crisis* (New York: The Atlantic Monthly, 1986), p. 42.

transition and becomes pure fiat. Furthermore, there is no example in history where men, once they had accepted the concept of fractional money, didn't reduce the fraction lower and lower until, eventually, it became zero.

No bank can stay in business for very long with a zero reserve. The only way to make people accept such a worthless currency is by government force. That's what legal-tender laws are all about. The transition from fractional-reserve money to fiat money, therefore, requires the participation of government through a mechanism which is called a central bank. Most of the balance of this book will be devoted to a study of that Creature, but, for now, suffice it to say that the euphoria of being able to create money without human effort is so great that, once such a narcotic is taken, there is no politician or banker who can kick the habit. As William Sumner observed: "A man might as well jump off a precipice intending to stop half way down.'

NATURAL LAW NO. 4

And so, once again, we come to one of those natural laws that emerge from centuries of human experience. It can be stated as follows:

> LESSON: Fractional money is paper money which is backed by precious metals up to only a portion of the face amount. It is a hybrid, being part receipt money and part fiat money. Generally, the public is unaware of this fact and believes that fractional money can be redeemed in full at any time. When the truth is discovered, as periodically happens, there are runs on the bank, and only the first few depositors in line can be paid. Since fractional money earns just as much interest for the bankers as does gold or silver, the temptation is great for them to create as much of it as possible. As this happens, the fraction which represents the reserve becomes smaller and smaller until, eventually, it is reduced to zero. Therefore,
>
> LAW: Fractional money will always degenerate into fiat money. It is but fiat money in transition.

So much for the overview and generalities. In the next chapter **We** shall see what history has to say on this process. And what a history it is!

}• William Graham Sumner, *A History of American Currency* (New York: Holt, 1884), p. 214.

SUMMARY

Fiat money is paper money without precious-metal backing which people are required by law to accept. The first recorded appearance of fiat money was in thirteenth century China, but its use on a major scale did not occur until colonial America. The experience was disastrous, leading to massive inflation, unemployment, loss of property, and political unrest. During one period when the Bank of England forced the colonies to abandon then fiat money, general prosperity quickly returned. The Revolutionary War brought fiat money back to the colonies with a vengeance. The economic chaos that resulted led the colonial governments to impose price controls and harsh legal tender laws, neither of which were effective.

Fractional money is defined as paper money with precious-metal backing for part, not all, of its stated value. It was introduced in Europe when goldsmiths began to issue receipts for gold which they did not have, thus only a fraction of their receipts was redeemable. Fractional money always degenerates into pure fiat money.

Chapter Nine

THE SECRET SCIENCE

The condensed history of fractional-reserve banking; the unbroken record of fraud, booms, busts, and economic chaos; the formation of the Bank of England, the world's first central bank, which became the model for the Federal Reserve System.

Banks of deposit first appeared in early Greece, concurrent with the development of coinage itself. They were known in India at the time of Alexander the Great. They also operated in Egypt as part of the public granary system. They appeared in Damascus in 1200 and in Barcelona in 1401. It was the city-state of Venice, however, which is considered the cradle of banking as we know it today.

THE BANK OF VENICE

By the year 1361, there already had been sufficient abuse in banking that the Venetian Senate passed a law forbidding bankers to engage in any other commercial pursuit, thus removing the temptation to use their depositors' funds to finance their own enterprises. They were also required to open their books for public inspection and to keep their stockpile of coins available for viewing at all reasonable times. In 1524, a board of bank examiners was created and, two years later, all bankers were required to settle accounts between themselves in coin rather than by check.

In spite of these precautions, however, the largest bank at that time, the house of Pisano and Tiepolo, had been active in lending against its reserves and, in 1584, was forced to close its doors because of inability to refund depositors. The government picked up the pieces at that point and a state bank was established, the *Banco della Piazza del Rialto*. Having learned from the recent experience with bankruptcy, the new bank was not allowed to make any loans. There could be no profit from the issuance of credit. The bank was required to sustain itself solely from fees for coin storage, exchanging currencies, handling the transfer of payments between customers, and notary services.

The formula for honest banking had been found. The bank prospered and soon became the center of Venetian commerce. Its paper receipts were widely accepted far beyond the country's borders and, in fact, instead of being discounted in exchange for gold coin as was the usual practice, they actually carried a *premium* over coins. This was because there were so many kinds of coin in circulation and such a wide variance of quality within the same type of coin that one had to be an expert to evaluate their worth. The bank performed this service automatically when it took the coins into its vault. Each was evaluated, and the receipt given for it was an accurate reflection of its intrinsic worth. The public, therefore, was far more certain of the value of the paper receipts than of many of the coins and, consequently, was willing to exchange a little bit more for them.

Unfortunately, with the passage of time and the fading from memory of previous banking abuses, the Venetian Senate eventually succumbed to the temptation of credit. Strapped for funds and not willing to face the voters with a tax increase, the politicians decided they would authorize a new bank without restrictions against loans, have the bank create the money they needed, and then "borrow" it. So, in 1619, the *Banco del Giro* was formed, which, like its bankrupt predecessor, began immediately to create money out of nothing for the purpose of lending it to the government. Eighteen years later, the *Banco della Piazza del Rialto* was absorbed into the new bank, and history's first tiny flame of sound banking sputtered and died.

Throughout the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, banks had been springing up all over Europe. Almost without exception, however, they followed the lucrative practice of lending money which was not truly available for loan. They created excess obligations against their reserves and, as a result, every one of them failed. That is not to say that their owners and directors did not prosper. It merely means that their depositors lost all or a part of their assets entrusted for safekeeping.

THE BANK OF AMSTERDAM

It wasn't until the Bank of Amsterdam was founded in 1609 that we find a second example of sound banking practices, and the results were virtually the same as previously experienced by the *Banco della Piazza del Rialto*. The bank only accepted deposits and steadfastly refused to make loans. Its income was derived solely from service fees. All payments in and around Amsterdam soon came to be made in paper currency issued by the bank and, in fact, that currency carried a premium over coin itself. The burgomasters and the city council were required to take an annual oath swearing that the coin reserve of the bank was intact. Galbraith reminds us:

> For a century after its founding it functioned usefully and with notably strict rectitude. Deposits were deposits, and initially the metal remained in storage for the man who owned it until he transferred it to another. None was loaned out. In 1672, when the armies of Louis XIV approached Amsterdam, there was grave alarm. Merchants besieged the bank, some in the suspicion that their wealth might not be there. All who sought their money were paid, and when they found this to be so, they did not want payment. As was often to be observed in the future, however desperately people want their money from a bank, when they are assured they can get it, they no longer want it.[1]

The principles of honesty and restraint were not to be long lived, however. The temptation of easy profit from money creation was simply too great. As early as 1657, individuals had been permitted to overdraw their accounts which means, of course, that the bank created new money out of their debt. In later years enormous loans were made to the Dutch East Indies Company. The truth finally became known to the public in January of 1790, and demands for a return of deposits were steady from that date forward. Ten months later, the bank was declared insolvent and was taken over by the City of Amsterdam.

THE BANK OF HAMBURG

The third and last experience with honest banking occurred in Germany with the Bank of Hamburg. For over two centuries it faithfully adhered to the principle of safe deposit. So scrupulous was its administration that, when Napoleon took possession of the bank in 1813, he found 7,506,956 *marks* in silver held against liabilities of 7,489,343. That was 17,613 *more* than was actually needed. Most of the bank's treasure that Napoleon hauled away was restored a few years later by the French government in the form of securities. It is not clear if the securities were of much value but, even if they were, they were not the same as silver. Because of foreign invasion, the bank's currency was no longer fully convert-

---

1- Galbraith, p. 16.

ible into coin as receipt money. It was now *fractional* money, and the self-destruct mechanism had been set in motion. The bank lasted another fifty-five years until 1871 when it was ordered to liquidate all of its accounts.

That is the end of the short story of honest banking. From that point forward, fractional-reserve banking became the universal practice. But there were to be many interesting twists and turns in its development before it would be ready for something as sophisticated as the Federal Reserve System.

EARLY BANKING IN ENGLAND

In England, the first paper money was the exchequer order of Charles II. It was pure fiat and, although it was decreed legal tender, it was not widely used. It was replaced in 1696 by the exchequer *bill*. The bill was redeemable in gold, and the government went to great lengths to make sure that there was enough actual coin or bullion to make good on the pledge. In other words, it was true receipt money, and it became widely accepted as the medium of exchange. Furthermore, the bills were considered as short-term loans to the government and actually paid interest to the holders.

In 1707, the recently created Bank of England was given the responsibility of managing this currency, but the bank found more profit in the circulation of its own banknotes, which were in the form of *fractional* money and which provided for the *collection* of interest, not the payment of it. Consequently, the government bills gradually passed out of use and were replaced by banknotes which, by the middle of the eighteenth century, became England's only paper money.

It must be understood that, at this time, the Bank of England was not yet fully developed as a central bank. It had been given a monopoly over the issue of banknotes within London and other prime geographic areas, but they were not yet decreed as legal tender. No one was forced to use them. They were merely private fractional receipts for gold coin issued by a private bank which the public could accept, reject, or discount at its pleasure. Legal tender status was not conferred upon the bank's money until 1833.

Meanwhile, Parliament had granted charters to numerous other banks throughout the empire and, without exception, the issuance of fractional money led to their ultimate demise and the ruin of their depositors. "Disaster after disaster had to come upon the country," says Shaw, because "of the indifference of the state to these mere private paper tokens."[1] The Bank of England, however, was favored by the government above all others and, time after time, it was saved from insolvency by Parliament. How it came to be that way is an interesting story.

THE BANK OF ENGLAND

England was financially exhausted after half a century of war against France and numerous civil wars fought largely over excessive taxation. By the time of the War of the League of Augsberg in 1693, King William was in serious need for new revenue. Twenty years previously, King Charles II had flat out repudiated a debt of over a million pounds which had been lent to him by scores of goldsmiths, with the result that ten-thousand depositors lost their savings. This was still fresh in everyone's memory, and, needless to say, the government was no longer considered a good investment risk. Unable to increase taxes and unable to borrow, Parliament became desperate for some other way to obtain the money. The objective, says Groseclose, was not to bring "the money mechanism under more intelligent control, but to provide means outside the onerous sources of taxes and public loans for the financial requirements of an impecunious government."[2]

There were two groups of men who saw a unique opportunity arise out of this necessity. The first group consisted of the *political scientists* within the government. The second was comprised of the *monetary scientists* from the emerging business of banking. The organizer and spokesman of this group was William Paterson from Scotland. Paterson had been to America and came back with a grandiose scheme to obtain a British charter for a commercial company to colonize the Isthmus of Panama, then known as Darien. The government was not interested in that, so Paterson turned his attention to a scheme that *did* interest it very much, the creation of money.

The two groups came together and formed an alliance. No, that is too soft a word. The *American Heritage Dictionary* defines a *cabal* as "A conspiratorial group of plotters or intriguers." There is no other word that could so accurately describe this group. With much of the same secrecy and mystery that surrounded the meeting on Jekyll Island, the Cabal met in Mercer's Chapel in London and hammered out a seven-point plan which would serve their mutual purposes:

---

[1] **W.A. Shaw, *Theory and Principles of Central Banking* (London & New York: Sir I. Pitman & Sons, Ltd., 1930), pp. 32-32.**

[2] **Groseclose, *Money and Man*, p. 175.**

1. The government would grant a charter to the monetary scientists to form a bank;
2. The bank would be given a monopoly to issue banknotes which would circulate as England's paper currency;
3. The bank would create money out of nothing with only a fraction of its total currency backed by coin;
4. The monetary scientists then would loan the government all the money it needed;
5. The money created for government loans would be backed primarily by government LO.U.s;
6. Although this money was to be created out of nothing and would cost nothing to create, the government would pay "interest" on it at the rate of 8%;
7. Government LO.U.s would also be considered as "reserves" for creating additional loan money for private commerce. These loans also would earn interest. Thus, the monetary scientists would collect *double* interest on the same nothing.

The circular which was distributed to attract subscribers to the Bank's initial stock offering explained: "The Bank hath benefit of interest on all the moneys which it, the Bank, creates out of nothing."[2] The charter was issued in 1694, and a strange creature took its initial breath of life. It was the world's first central bank. Rothbard writes:

---

1. For an overview of these agreements, see Murray Rothbard, *The Mystery of Banking* (New York: Richardson & Snyder, 1983), p. 180. Also Martin Mayer, *The Bankers* (New York: Weybright & Talley, 1974), pp. 24-25.

2. Quoted by Caroll Quigley, *Tragedy and Hope: A History of the World in Our Time* (New York: Macmillan, 1966), p. 49. Paterson did not benefit from his own creation- He withdrew from the Bank over a policy disagreement within a few months after its formation and then returned to Scotland where he succeeded in selling his Darien scheme. Frugal Scots thronged to buy stock and to book passage to the fever-ridden land. The stock became worthless and almost all the 1200 colonists lost their lives.

> **In short, since there were not enough private savers willing to finance the deficit, Paterson and his group were graciously willing to buy government bonds, provided they could do so with newly-created out-of-thin-air bank notes carrying a raft of special privileges with them. This was a splendid deal for Paterson and company, and the government benefited from the flimflam of a seemingly legitimate bank's financing their debts.... As soon as the Bank of England was chartered in 1694, King William himself and various members of Parliament rushed to become shareholders of the new money factory they had just created.**[1]

THE SECRET SCIENCE OF MONEY

Both groups within the Cabal were handsomely rewarded for their efforts. The political scientists had been seeking about £500,000 to finance the current war. The Bank promptly gave them more than twice what they originally sought. The monetary scientists started with a pledged capital investment of £1,200,000. Textbooks tell us that this was lent to the government at 8% interest, but what is usually omitted is the fact that, at the time the loan was made, only £720,000 had been invested, which means the Bank "loaned" 66% more than it had on hand.[2] Furthermore, the Bank was given the privilege of creating at least an equal amount of money in the form of loans to the public. So, after lending their capital to the government, they still had it available to loan out a second time.

An honest loan of their £720,000 at 8% would have yielded £57,600 interest. But, with the new secret science, they were able to earn 8% on £1,200,000 given to the government plus an estimated 9% on £720,000 loaned to the public. That adds up to £160,800, more than 22% on their investment. The real point, however, is that, under these circumstances, it is meaningless to talk about a rate of interest. When money is created out of nothing, the true interest rate is not 8% or 9% or even 22%. It is *infinity*.

In this first official act of the world's first central bank can be seen the grand pretense that has characterized all those which have followed. The Bank *pretended* to make a loan but what it really did was to *manufacture* the money for government's use. If the government had done this directly, the fiat nature of the currency would been immediately recognized, and it probably would not have been accepted at full face value in payment for the expenses of war. By creating money through the banking system, however, the process became mystifying to the general public. The newly created bills and notes were indistinguishable from those previously backed by coin, and the public was none the wiser.

---

[1] **Rothbard, *Mystery,* p. 180.**

[2] **See R.D. Richards, Ph.D., *The Early History of Banking in England* (New York-Augustus M. Kelley, original edition 1929, reprinted 1965), pp. 148-50.**

The reality of central banks, therefore—and we must not forget that the Federal Reserve System is such a creature—is that, under the guise of purchasing government bonds, they act as hidden money machines which can be activated any time the politicians want. This is a godsend to the political scientists who no longer must depend on taxes or the good credit of their treasury to raise money. It is even easier than printing and, because the process is not understood by the public, it is politically safe.

The monetary scientists, of course, are amply paid for this service. To preserve the pretense of banking, it is said they collect *interest,* but this is a misnomer. They didn't lend money, they created it. Their compensation, therefore, should be called what it is: a professional fee, or commission, or royalty, or kickback, depending on your perspective, but *not* interest.

FROM INFLATION TO BANK RUNS

The new money created by the Bank of England splashed through the economy like rain in April. The country banks outside of the London area were authorized to create money on their own, but they had to hold a certain percentage of either coin *or* Bank of England certificates in reserve. Consequently, when these plentiful banknotes landed in their hands, they quickly put them into the vaults and then issued their own certificates in even greater amounts. As a result of this pyramiding effect, prices rose 100% in just two years. Then, the inevitable happened: There was a run on the bank, and the Bank of England could not produce the coin.

When banks cannot honor their contracts to deliver coin in return for their receipts, they are, in fact, bankrupt. They should be allowed to go out of business and liquidate their assets to satisfy their creditors just like any other business. This, in fact, is what always had happened to banks which loaned out their deposits and created fractional money. Had this practice been allowed to continue, there is little doubt that people eventually would have understood that they simply do not want to do business with those kinds of banks. Through the painful but highly effective process of trial and error, mankind would have learned to distinguish real money from fool's gold. And the world would be a lot better because of it today.

That, of course, was not allowed to happen. The Cabal is a *partnership,* and each of the two groups is committed to protect each other, not out of loyalty, but out of mutual self interest. They know that, if one falls, so does the other. It is not surprising, therefore, that, when there was a run on the Bank of England, Parliament intervened. In May of 1696, just two years after the Bank was formed, a law was passed authorizing it to "suspend payment in specie." By force of law, the Bank was now exempted from having to honor its contract to return the gold.

THE PATTERN OF PROTECTION WAS SET

This was a fateful event in the history of money, because the precedent has been followed ever since. In Europe and America, the banks have always operated with the assumption that their partners in government will come to their aid when they get into trouble. Politicians may speak about "protecting the public," but the underlining reality is that the government *needs* the fiat money produced by the banks. The banks, therefore—at least the big ones— must not be allowed to fail. Only a cartel with government protection can enjoy such insulation from the workings of a free market.

It is commonly observed in modern times that criminals often are treated lightly when they rob their neighbor. But if they steal from the government or a bank, the penalties are harsh. This is merely another manifestation of the Cabal's partnership. In the eyes of government, banks are *special,* and it has been that way even from the beginning of their brotherhood. For example, Galbraith tells us:

> **In 1780, when Lord George Gordon led his mob through London in protest against the Catholic Relief Acts, the Bank was a principal target. It signified the Establishment. For so long as the Catholic districts of London were being pillaged, the authorities were slow to react. When the siege of the Bank began, things were thought more serious. Troops intervened, and ever since soldiers have been sent to guard the Bank by night.**[1]

1- Galbraith, p. 34.

BOOMS AND BUSTS NOW GUARANTEED

Once the Bank of England had been legally protected from the consequences of converting debt into money, the British economy was doomed to a nauseating roller-coaster ride of inflation, booms, and busts. The natural and immediate result was the granting of *massive* loans for just about any wild scheme imaginable. Why not? The money cost nothing to make, and the potential profits could be enormous. So the Bank of England, and the country banks which pyramided their own money supply on top of the Bank's supply, pumped a steady stream of new money into the economy. Great stock companies were formed and financed by this money. One was for the purpose of draining the Red Sea to recover the gold supposedly lost by the Egyptians when pursuing the Isrealites. £150,000,000 were siphoned into vague and fruitless ventures in South America and Mexico.

The result of this flood of new money—how many times must history repeat it?—was even more inflation. In 1810, the House of Commons created a special committee, called the Select Committee on the High Price of Gold Bullion, to explore the problem and to find a solution. The verdict handed down in the final report was a model of clarity. Prices were not going up, it said. The value of the currency was going down, and that was due to the fact that it was being created at a faster rate than the creation of goods to be purchased with it. The solution? The committee recommended that the notes of the Bank of England be made fully convertible into gold coin, thus putting a brake on the supply of money that could be created.

IN DEFENSE OF THE GOLD STANDARD

One of the most outspoken proponents of a true gold standard was a Jewish London stockbroker by the name of David Ricardo. Ricardo argued that an ideal currency "should be absolutely invariable in value."[1] He conceded that precious metals were not perfect in this regard because they do shift in purchasing power to a small degree. Then he said: "They are, however, the best with which we are acquainted."[2]

[1] **David Ricardo, *The Works and Correspondence of David Ricardo: Pamphlets 1815-1823,* Piero Sraffa, ed. (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1951), Vol. IV, p. 58.**

[2] ***Ibid.,* p. 62.**

Almost everyone in government agreed with Ricardo's assessment, but, as is often the case, theoretical truth was fighting a losing battle against practical necessity. Men's opinions on the best form of money were one thing. The war with Napoleon was another, and it demanded a constant inflow of funding. England continued to use the central-bank mechanism to extract that revenue from the populace.

DEPRESSION AND REFORM

By 1815, prices had doubled again and then fell sharply. The Corn Act was passed that year to protect local growers from lower-priced imports. Then, when corn and wheat prices began to climb once more in spite of the fact that wages and other prices were falling, there was widespread discontent and rebellion. "By 1816," notes Roy Jastram, "England was in deep depression. There was stagnation of industry and trade generally; the iron and coal industries were paralyzed.... Riots occurred spasmodically from May through December."[1]

In 1821, after the war had ended and there was no longer a need to fund military campaigns, the political pressure for a gold standard became too strong to resist, and the Bank of England returned to a convertibility of its notes into gold coin. The basic central-bank mechanism was not dismantled, however. It was merely limited by a new formula regarding the allowable fraction of reserves. The Bank continued to create money out of nothing for the purpose of lending and, within a year, the flower of a new business boom unfolded. Then, in November of 1825, the flower matured into its predestined fruit. The crisis began with the collapse of Sir Peter Cole and Company and was soon followed by the failure of sixty-three other banks. Fortunes were wiped out and the economy plunged back into depression.

When a similar crisis with still more bank failures struck again in 1839, Parliament attempted to come to grips with the problem. After five more years of analysis and debate, Sir Robert Peel succeeded in passing a banking reform act. It squarely faced the cause of England's booms and busts: an *elastic* money supply. What Peel's Bank Act of 1844 attempted to do was to limit the amount of money the banks could create to roughly the same as it would be if their banknotes were backed by gold or silver. It was a good try, but it ultimately failed because it fell short on three counts: (1) It was a political compromise and was not strict enough, allowing the banks to still create lending money out of nothing to the extent of £14,000,000; in other words, a "fractional" amount thought to be safe at the time; (2) The limitation applied only to paper currency issued by the Bank. It did not apply to checkbook money, and that was then becoming the preferred *form* of exchange. Consequently, the so-called reform did not even apply to the area where the greatest amount of abuse was taking place; and (3) The basic concept was allowed to remain unchallenged that *man,* in his infinite political wisdom, can determine what the money supply should be more effectively than an unmanaged system of gold or silver responding to the law of supply and demand.

---

[1] **Roy W. Jastram, *The Golden Constant* (New York: Wiley, 1977), p. 113.**

THE ROLLER COASTER CONTINUES

Within three years of the "reform," England faced another crisis with still more bank failures and more losses to depositors. But when the Bank of England tottered on the edge of insolvency, once again the government intervened. In 1847, the Bank was exempted from the legal reserve requirements of the Peel Act. Such is the rock-steady dependability of man-made limits to the money supply.

Groseclose continues the story:

> Ten years later, in 1857, another crisis occurred, due to excessive and unwise lending as a result of over-optimism regarding foreign trade prospects. The bank found itself in the same position as in 1847, and similar measures were taken. On this occasion the bank was forced to use the authority to increase its fiduciary [debt-based money] issue beyond the limit imposed by the Bank Charter Act....
>
> Again in 1866, the growth of banking without sufficient attention to liquidity, and the use of bank credit to support a speculative craze...prepared the way for a crash which was finally precipitated by the failure of the famous house of Overend, Gurney and Co. The Act of 1844 was once more suspended....
>
> In 1890, the Bank of England once again faced crisis, again the result of widespread and excessive speculation in foreign securities, particularly American and Argentine. This time it was the failure of Baring Brothers that precipitated the crash.[1]

---

1. Groseclose, *Money and Man,* pp. 195-96.

THE MECHANISM SPREADS TO OTHER COUNTRIES

It is an incredible fact of history that, in spite of the general and recurring failures of the Bank of England during these years, the central-bank mechanism was so attractive to the political and monetary scientists that it became the model for all of Europe. The Bank of Prussia became the Reichsbank. Napoleon established the Banque de France. A few decades later, the concept became the venerated model for the Federal Reserve System. Who cares if the scheme is destructive? Here is the perfect tool for obtaining unlimited funding for politicians and endless profits for bankers. And, best of all, the little people who pay the bills for both groups have practically no idea what is being done to them.

SUMMARY

The business of banking began in Europe in the fourteenth century. Its function was to evaluate, exchange, and safeguard people's coins. In the beginning, there were notable examples of totally honest banks which operated with remarkable efficiency considering the vast variety of coinage they handled. They also issued paper receipts which were so dependable they freely circulated as money and cheated no one in the process. But there was a great demand for more money and more loans, and the temptation soon caused the bankers to seek easier paths. They began lending out pieces of paper that *said* they were receipts, but which in fact were counterfeit. The public could not tell one from the other and accepted both of them as money. From that point forward, the receipts in circulation exceeded the gold held in reserve, and the age of fractional-reserve banking had dawned. This led immediately to what would become an almost unbroken record from then to the present: a record of inflation, booms and busts, suspension of payments, bank failures, repudiation of currencies, and recurring spasms of economic chaos.

The Bank of England was formed in 1694 to institutionalize fractional-reserve banking. As the world's first central bank, it introduced the concept of a partnership between bankers and politicians. The politicians would receive spendable money (created out of nothing by the bankers) without having to raise taxes. In return, the bankers would receive a commission on the transaction—deceptively called interest—which would continue in perpetuity. Since it all seemed to be wrapped up in the mysterious rituals of banking, which the common man was not expected to understand, there was practically no opposition to the scheme. The arrangement proved so profitable to the participants that it soon spread to many other countries in Europe and, eventually, to the United States.

Chapter Ten

THE MANDRAKE MECHANISM

The method by which the Federal Reserve creates money out of nothing; the concept of usury as the payment of interest on pretended loans; the true cause of the hidden tax called inflation; the way in which the Fed creates boom-bust cycles.

In the 1940s, there was a comic strip character called Mandrake the Magician. His specialty was creating things out of nothing and, when appropriate, to make them disappear back into that same void. It is fitting, therefore, that the process to be described in this section should be named in his honor.

In the previous chapters, we examined the technique developed by the political and monetary scientists to create money out of nothing for the purpose of lending. This is not an entirely accurate description because it implies that money is created first and then waits for someone to borrow it. On the other hand, textbooks on banking often state that money is created out of debt. This also is misleading because it implies that debt exists first and then is converted into money. In truth, money is not created until the instant it is borrowed. It is the act of borrowing which causes it to spring into existence. And, incidentally, it is the act of paying off the debt that causes it to vanish.[1] There is no short phrase that perfectly describes that process. So, until one is invented along the way, we shall continue using the phrase "create money out of nothing" and occasionally add "for the purpose of lending" where necessary to further clarify the meaning.

1- Printed Federal Reserve Notes that sit in the Treasury's vault do not become money until they are released into circulation in exchange for checkbook money that was created by a bank loan. As long as the bills are in the vault with no debt-based money to replace them, they technically are just paper, not money.

So, let us now leave the historical figures of the past and jump into *their* "future," in other words, into our present, and see just how far this money/debt-creation process has been carried—and how it works.

The first fact that needs to be considered is that our money today has no gold or silver behind it whatsoever. The fraction is not 54% nor 15%. It is 0%. It has travelled the path of all previous fractional money in history and already has degenerated into pure fiat money. The fact that most of it is in the form of checkbook balances rather than paper currency is a mere technicality; and the fact that bankers speak about "reserve ratios" is eye wash. The so-called reserves to which they refer are, in fact, Treasury bonds and other certificates of *debt*. Our money is pure fiat through and through.

The second fact that needs to be clearly understood is that, in spite of the technical jargon and seemingly complicated procedures, the actual mechanism by which the Federal Reserve creates money is quite simple. They do it exactly the same way the goldsmiths of old did except, of course, the goldsmiths were limited by the need to hold *some* precious metal in reserve, whereas the Fed has no such restriction.

THE FEDERAL RESERVE IS CANDID

The Federal Reserve itself is amazingly frank about this process. A booklet published by the Federal Reserve Bank of New York tells us: "Currency cannot be redeemed, or exchanged, for Treasury gold or any other asset used as backing. The question of just what assets 'back' Federal Reserve notes has little but bookkeeping significance."[1]

Elsewhere in the same publication we are told: "Banks are creating money based on a borrower's promise to pay (the IOU)... Banks create money by 'monetizing' the private debts of businesses and individuals."[2]

In a booklet entitled *Modern Money Mechanics,* the Federal Reserve Bank of Chicago says:

> **In the United States neither paper currency nor deposits have value as commodities. Intrinsically, a dollar bill is just a piece of paper. Deposits are merely book entries. Coins do have some intrinsic value as metal, but generally far less than their face amount.**

---

[1] **I *Bet You Thought,* Federal Reserve Bank of New York, p. 11.**

[2] ***Ibid., p.* 19.**

> **What, then, makes these instruments—checks, paper money, and coins—acceptable at face value in payment of all debts and for other monetary uses? Mainly, it is the confidence people have that they will be able to exchange such money for other financial assets and real goods and services whenever they choose to do so. This partly is a matter of law; currency has been designated "legal tender" by the government—that is, it must be accepted.**[1]

In the fine print of a footnote in a bulletin of the Federal Reserve Bank of St. Louis, we find this surprisingly candid explanation:

> **Modern monetary systems have a fiat base—literally money by decree—with depository institutions, acting as fiduciaries, creating obligations against themselves with the fiat base acting in part as reserves. The decree appears on the currency notes: "This note is legal tender for all debts, public and private." While no individual could refuse to accept such money for debt repayment, exchange contracts could easily be composed to thwart its use in everyday commerce. However, a forceful explanation as to why money is accepted is that the federal government requires it as payment for tax liabilities. Anticipation of the need to clear this debt creates a demand for the pure fiat dollar.**[2]

MONEY WOULD VANISH WITHOUT DEBT

It is difficult for Americans to come to grips with the fact that their total money supply is backed by nothing but debt, and it is even more mind boggling to visualize that, if everyone paid back all that was borrowed, *there would be no money left in existence*. That's right, there would be not one penny in circulation—all coins and all paper currency would be returned to bank vaults—and there would be not one dollar in any one's checking account. In short, all money would disappear.

Marriner Eccles was the Governor of the Federal Reserve System in 1941. On September 30 of that year, Eccles was asked to give testimony before the House Committee on Banking and Currency. The purpose of the hearing was to obtain information regarding the role of the Federal Reserve in creating conditions that led to the depression of the 1930s. Congressman Wright Patman, who was Chairman of that committee, asked how the Fed got the money to

---

1- *Modern Money Mechanics,* Federal Reserve Bank of Chicago, revised October 1982, p. 3.

2. "Money, Credit and Velocity," *Review,* May, 1982, Vol. 64, No. 5, Federal Reserve Bank of St. Louis, p. 25.

purchase two billion dollars worth of government bonds in 1933. This is the exchange that followed.

ECCLES: We created it.
PATMAN: Out of what?
ECCLES: Out of the right to issue credit money.
PATMAN: And there is nothing behind it, is there, except our government's credit?
ECCLES: That is what our money system is. If there were no debts in our money system, there wouldn't be any money.

It must be realized that, while money may represent an asset to selected individuals, when it is considered as an aggregate of the total money supply, it is not_an asset at all. A man who borrows $1,000 may think that he has increased his financial position by that amount but he has not. His $1,000 cash asset is offset by his $1,000 loan liability, and his net position is zero. Bank accounts are exactly the same on a larger scale. Add up all the bank accounts in the nation, and it would be easy to assume that all that money represents a gigantic pool of assets which support the economy. Yet, every bit of this money is owed by someone. Some will owe nothing. Others will owe many times what they possess. All added together, the national balance is zero. What we think is money is but a grand illusion. The reality is debt.

Robert Hemphill was the Credit Manager of the Federal Reserve Bank in Atlanta. In the foreword to a book by Irving Fisher, entitled *100% Money,* Hemphill said this:

> If all the bank loans were paid, no one could have a bank deposit, and there would not be a dollar of coin or currency in circulation. This is a staggering thought. We are completely dependent on the commercial banks. Someone has to borrow every dollar we have in circulation, cash, or credit. If the banks create ample synthetic money we are prosperous; if not, we starve. We are absolutely without a permanent money system. When one gets a complete grasp of the picture, the tragic absurdity of our hopeless situation is almost incredible—but there it is.[1]

With the knowledge that money in America is based on debt, it should not come as a surprise to learn that the Federal Reserve System is not the least interested in seeing a reduction in debt in this country, regardless of public utterances to the contrary. Here is the bottom line from the System's own publications. The Federal Reserve Bank of Philadelphia says: "A large and growing number of analysts, on the other hand, now regard the national debt as something useful, if not an actual blessing.... [They believe] the national debt need not be reduced at all."[1]

---

[1] **Irving Fisher, *100% Money* (New York: Adelphi, 1936), p. xxii.**

The Federal Reserve Bank of Chicago adds: "Debt—public and private—is here to stay. It plays an essential role in economic processes. ... What is required is not the abolition of debt, but its prudent use and intelligent management."[2]

WHAT'S WRONG WITH A LITTLE DEBT?

There is a kind of fascinating appeal to this theory. It gives those who expound it an aura of intellectualism, the appearance of being able to grasp a complex economic principle that is beyond the comprehension of mere mortals. And, for the less academically minded, it offers the comfort of at least *sounding* moderate. After all, what's *wrong* with a little debt, prudently used and intelligently managed? The answer is nothing, *provided* the debt is based on an honest transaction. There is plenty wrong with it if it is based upon fraud.

An honest transaction is one in which a borrower pays an agreed upon sum in return for the temporary use of a lender's asset. That asset could be anything of tangible value. If it were an automobile, for example, then the borrower would pay "rent." If it is money, then the rent is called "interest." Either way, the concept is the same.

When we go to a lender—either a bank or a private party—and receive a loan of money, we are willing to pay interest on the loan in recognition of the fact that the money we are borrowing is an asset which we want to use. It seems only fair to pay a rental fee for that asset to the person who owns it. It is not easy to acquire an automobile, and it is not easy to acquire money—*real* money, that is. If the money we are borrowing was earned by someone's labor and talent, they are fully entitled to receive interest on it. But what are we to think of money that is created by the mere stroke of a pen or the click of a computer key? Why should anyone collect a rental fee on *that?*

• ***The National Debt,*** **Federal Reserve Bank of Philadelphia, pp. 2, 11.**

| ***Two Faces of Debt,*** **Federal Reserve Bank of Chicago, p. 33.**

When banks place credits into your checking account, they are merely *pretending* to lend you money. In reality, they have nothing to lend. Even the money that non-indebted depositors have placed with them was originally created out of nothing in response to someone else's loan. So what entitles the banks to collect rent on *nothing?* It is immaterial that men everywhere are forced by law to accept these nothing certificates in exchange for real goods and services. We are talking here, not about what is legal, but what is *moral*. As Thomas Jefferson observed at the time of his protracted battle against central banking in the United States, "No one has a natural right to the trade of money lender, but he who has money to lend."[1]

THIRD REASON TO ABOLISH THE SYSTEM

Centuries ago, *usury* was defined as any interest charged for a loan. Modern usage has redefined it as *excessive* interest. Certainly, any amount of interest charged for a *pretended* loan is excessive. The dictionary, therefore, needs a new definition. *Usury: The charging of any interest on a loan of fiat money.*

Let us, therefore, look at debt and interest in this light. Thomas Edison summed up the immorality of the system when he said:

> People who will not turn a shovel full of dirt on the project nor contribute a pound of materials will collect more money...than will the people who will supply all the materials and do all the work.

Is that an exaggeration? Let us consider the purchase of a $100,000 home in which $30,000 represents the cost of the land, architect's fee, sales commissions, building permits, and that sort of thing and $70,000 is the cost of labor and building materials. If the home buyer puts up $30,000 as a down payment, then $70,000 must be borrowed. If the loan is issued at 11% over a 30-year period, the amount of interest paid will be $167,806. That means the amount paid to those who loan the money is about 2 *Vi* times greater than

---

1. *The Writings of Thomas Jefferson,* Library Edition (Washington: Jefferson Memorial Association, 1903), Vol XIII, p. 277-78.

2. As quoted by Brian L. Bex, *The Hidden Hand* (Spencer, Indiana: Owen Litho, 1975), p. 161. Unfortunately, Edison did not understand the whole problem. He was correctly opposed to paying interest to banks for their fiat money, but he was not opposed to *government* fiat money. It was only the interest to which he objected. He did not see the larger picture of how fiat money, even when issued solely by the government and without interest, has always been destructive of the economy through the creation of inflation, booms, and busts.

paid to those who provide all the labor and all the materials. It is true that this figure represents the time-value of that money over thirty years and easily could be justified on the basis that a lender deserves to be compensated for surrendering the use of his capital for half a lifetime. But that assumes the lender actually had something to surrender, that he had earned the capital, saved it, and then loaned it for construction of someone else's house. What are we to think, however, about a lender who did nothing to earn the money, had not saved it, and, in fact, simply created it out of thin air? What is the time-value of nothing?

As we have already shown, every dollar that exists today, either in the form of currency, checkbook money, or even credit card money—in other words, our *entire* money supply—exists only because it was borrowed by someone; perhaps not you, but *someone*. That means all the American dollars in the entire world are earning daily and compounded interest for the banks which created them. A portion of every business venture, every investment, every profit, every transaction which involves money—and that even includes *losses* and the payment of *taxes*—a portion of all that is earmarked as payment to a bank. And what did the banks do to earn this perpetually flowing river of wealth? Did they lend out their own capital obtained through the investment of stockholders? Did they lend out the hard-earned savings of their depositors? No, neither of these were their major source of income. They simply waved the magic wand called fiat money.

The flow of such unearned wealth under the guise of interest can only be viewed as usury of the highest magnitude. Even if there were no other reasons to abolish the Fed, the fact that *it is the supreme instrument of usury* would be more than sufficient by itself.

WHO CREATES THE MONEY TO PAY THE INTEREST?

One of the most perplexing questions associated with this process is "Where does the money come from to pay the interest?" If you borrow $10,000 from a bank at 9%, you owe $10,900. But the bank only manufactures $10,000 for the loan. It would seem, therefore, that there is no way that you—and all others with similar loans—can possibly pay off your indebtedness. The amount of money put into circulation just isn't enough to cover the total debt, including interest. This has led some to the conclusion that it is necessary for you to *borrow* the $900 for the interest, and that, in turn, leads to still *more* interest. The assumption is that, the more we borrow, the more we *have* to borrow, and that debt based on fiat money is a never-ending spiral leading inexorably to more and more debt.

This is a partial truth. It is true that there is not enough money created to include the interest, but it is a fallacy that the only way to pay it back is to borrow still more. The assumption fails to take into account the exchange value of *labor*. Let us assume that you pay back your $10,000 loan at the rate of approximately $900 per month and that about $80 of that represents interest. You realize you are hard pressed to make your payments so you decide to take on a part-time job. The bank, on the other hand, is now making $80 profit each month on your loan. Since this amount is classified as "interest," it is not extinguished as is the larger portion which is a return of the loan itself. So this remains as spendable money in the account of the bank. The decision then is made to have the bank's floors waxed once a week. You respond to the ad in the paper and are hired at $80 per month to do the job. The result is that you *earn* the money to pay the interest on your loan, and—this is the point—the money you receive is the *same* money which you previously had paid. As long as you perform labor for the bank each month, the same dollars go into the bank as interest, then out the revolving door as your wages, and then back into the bank as loan repayment.

It is not necessary that you work directly for the bank. No matter where you earn the money, its *origin* was a bank and its ultimate *destination* is a bank. The loop through which it travels can be large or small, but the fact remains all interest is paid eventually by human effort. And the significance of that fact is even more startling than the assumption that not enough money is created to pay back the interest. It is that the total of this human effort ultimately is for the benefit of those who create fiat money. It is a form of modern serfdom in which the great mass of society works as indentured servants to a ruling class of financial nobility.

UNDERSTANDING THE ILLUSION

That's really all one needs to know about the operation of the banking cartel under the protection of the Federal Reserve. But it would be a shame to stop here without taking a look at the actual cogs, mirrors, and pulleys that make the magical mechanism work. It is a truly fascinating engine of mystery and deception. Let us, therefore, turn our attention to the actual process by which the magicians create the illusion of modern money. First we shall stand back for a general view to see the overall action. Then we shall move in closer and examine each component in detail.

THE MANDRAKE MECHANISM: AN OVERVIEW

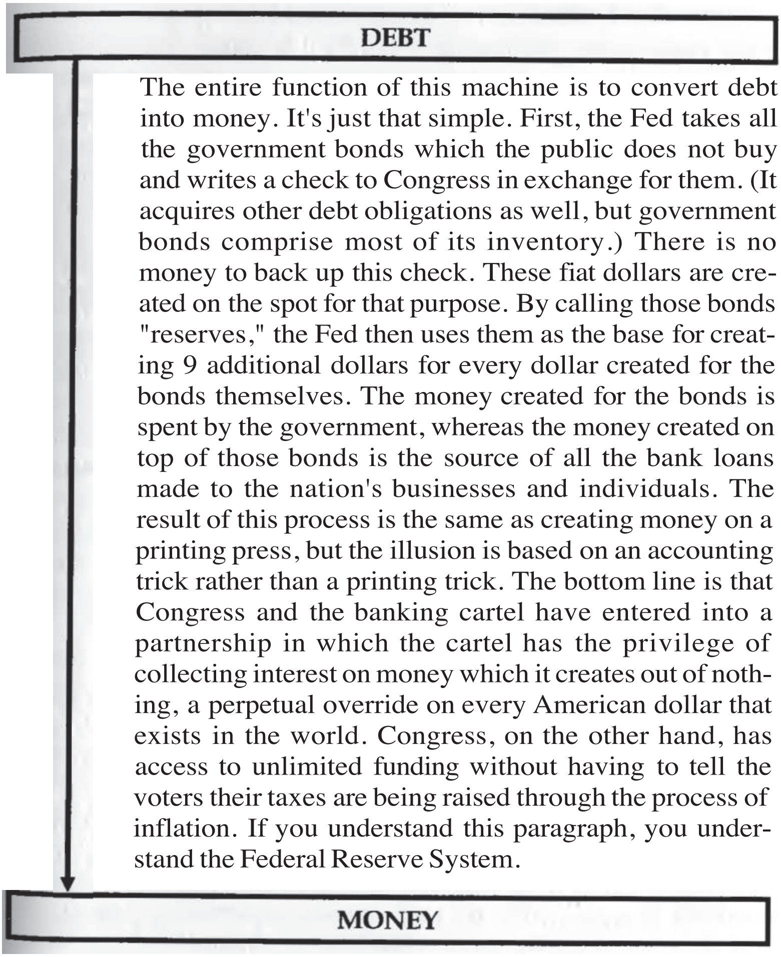

DEBT

The entire function of this machine is to convert debt into money. It's just that simple. First, the Fed takes all the government bonds which the public does not buy and writes a check to Congress in exchange for them. (It acquires other debt obligations as well, but government bonds comprise most of its inventory.) There is no money to back up this check. These fiat dollars are created on the spot for that purpose. By calling those bonds "reserves," the Fed then uses them as the base for creating 9 additional dollars for every dollar created for the bonds themselves. The money created for the bonds is spent by the government, whereas the money created on top of those bonds is the source of all the bank loans made to the nation's businesses and individuals. The result of this process is the same as creating money on a printing press, but the illusion is based on an accounting trick rather than a printing trick. The bottom line is that Congress and the banking cartel have entered into a partnership in which the cartel has the privilege of collecting interest on money which it creates out of nothing, a perpetual override on every American dollar that exists in the world. Congress, on the other hand, has access to unlimited funding without having to tell the voters their taxes are being raised through the process of inflation. If you understand this paragraph, you understand the Federal Reserve System.

MONEY

Now for a more detailed view. There are three general ways in which the Federal Reserve creates fiat money out of debt. One is by making loans to the member banks through what is called the *Discount Window*. The second is by purchasing Treasury bonds and other certificates of debt through what is called *the Open Market Committee*. The third is by changing the so-called *reserve ratio* that member banks are required to hold. Each method is merely a different path to the same objective: taking in IOUs and converting them into spendable money.

THE DISCOUNT WINDOW

The Discount Window is merely bankers' language for the *loan* window. When banks run short of money, the Federal Reserve stands ready as the "bankers' bank" to lend it. There are many reasons for them to need loans. Since they hold "reserves" of only about one or two per cent of their deposits in vault cash and eight or nine per cent in securities, their operating margin is extremely thin. It is common for them to experience temporary negative balances caused by unusual customer demand for cash or unusually large clusters of checks all clearing through other banks at the same time. Sometimes they make bad loans and, when these former "assets" are removed from their books, their "reserves" are also decreased and may, in fact, become negative. Finally, there is the profit motive. When banks borrow from the Federal Reserve at one interest rate and lend it out at a higher rate, there is an obvious advantage. But that is merely the beginning. When a bank borrows a dollar from the Fed, it becomes a one-dollar *reserve*. Since the banks are required to keep reserves of only about ten per cent, they actually can loan up to *nine* dollars for each dollar borrowed.[1]

Let's take a look at the math. Assume the bank receives $1 million from the Fed at a rate of 8%. The total annual cost, therefore, is $80,000 (.08 X $1,000,000). The bank treats the loan as a cash deposit, which means it becomes the basis for manufacturing an additional $9 million to be lent to its customers. If we assume that it lends that money at 11% interest, its gross return would be $990,000 (.11 X $9,000,000). Subtract from this the bank's cost of $80,000 plus an appropriate share of its overhead, and we have a net return of about $900,000. In other words, the bank borrows a million and can almost double it in one year.[1] That's *leverage]* But don't forget the *source* of that leverage: the manufacture of another $9 million which is added to the nation's money supply.

---

[1] **This 10% figure (ten-to-one ratio) is based on averages. The Federal Reserve requires a minimum reserve of 10% on deposits over $46.8 million but only 3% on deposits up to that amount. Deposits in Eurodollars and nonpersonal time deposits require no reserves at all. Reserves consist of vault cash and deposits at the Federal Reserve. See *Regulation* D; *Reserve Requirements of Depository Institutions,* Federal Reserve document 12 CFR 204; as amended effective December 22,1992, p. 23.**

THE OPEN MARKET OPERATION

The most important method used by the Federal Reserve for the creation of fiat money is the purchase and sale of securities on the open market. But, before jumping into this, a word of warning. Don't expect what follows to make any sense. Just be prepared to know that this is how they do it.

The trick lies in the use of words and phrases which have technical meanings quite different from what they imply to the average citizen. So keep your eye on the words. They are not meant to explain but to deceive. In spite of first appearances, the process is *not* complicated. It is just absurd.

THE MANDRAKE MECHANISM: A DETAILED VIEW

Start with...

GOVERNMENT DEBT

The federal government adds ink to a piece of paper, creates impressive designs around the edges, and calls it a bond or Treasury note. It is merely a promise to pay a specified sum at a specified interest on a specified date. As we shall see in the following steps, this debt eventually becomes the foundation for almost the entire nation's money supply. In reality, the government has created cash, but it doesn't yet *look* like cash. To convert these IOUs into paper bills and checkbook money is the function of The Federal Reserve System. To bring about that transformation, the bond is given to the Fed where it is then classified as a ...

(Continued on next page)

---

[1]- The banks must cover these loans with bonds or other interest-bearing assets which it possesses, but that does not diminish the money-multiplier effect of the new deposit.

[2]- Debt obligations from the private sector and from other governments also are used in the same way, but government bonds are the primary instruments.

(Continued from previous page)

SECURITIES ASSET

An instrument of government debt is considered an asset because it is assumed the government will keep its promise to pay. This is based upon its ability to obtain whatever money it needs through taxation. Thus, the strength of this asset is the power to take back that which it gives. So the Federal Reserve now has an "asset" which can be used to offset a liability. It then creates this liability by adding ink to yet another piece of paper and exchanging that with the government in return for the asset. That second piece of paper is a ...

FEDERAL RESERVE CHECK

There is no money in any account to cover this check. Anyone else doing that would be sent to prison. It is legal for the Fed, however, because Congress wants the money, and this is the easiest way to get it. (To raise taxes would be political suicide; to depend on the public to buy all the bonds would not be realistic, especially if interest rates are set artificially low; and to print very large quantities of currency would be obvious and controversial.) This way, the process is mysteriously wrapped up in the banking system. The end result, however, is the same as turning on government printing presses and simply manufacturing fiat money (money created by the order of government with nothing of tangible value backing it) to pay government expenses. Yet, in accounting terms, the books are said to be "balanced" because the liability of the money is offset by the "asset" of the IOU. The Federal Reserve check received by the government then is endorsed and sent back to one of the Federal Reserve banks where it now becomes a ...

(Continued from previous page)

GOVERNMENT DEPOSIT

Once the Federal Reserve check has been deposited into the government's account, it is used to pay government expenses and, thus, is transformed into many ...

GOVERNMENT CHECKS

These checks become the means by which the first wave of fiat money floods into the economy. Recipients now deposit them into their own bank accounts where they become...

COMMERCIAL BANK DEPOSITS

Commercial bank deposits immediately take on a split personality. On the one hand, they are liabilities to the bank because they are owed back to the depositors. But, as long as they remain in the bank, they also are considered as assets because they are on hand. Once again, the books are balanced: the assets offset the liabilities. But the process does not stop there. Through the magic of fractional-reserve banking, the deposits are made to serve an additional and more lucrative purpose. To accomplish this, the on-hand deposits now become reclassified in the books and called ...

BANK RESERVES

Reserves for what? Are these for paying off depositors should they want to close out their accounts? No. That's the lowly function they served when they were classified as mere assets. Now that they have been given the name of 'reserves," they become the magic wand to materialize even larger amounts of fiat money. This is where the real action is: at the level of the commercial banks. Here's how it works. The banks are permitted by the Fed to hold as little as 10% of their deposits in "reserve." That means, if they receive deposits of $1 million from the first wave of fiat money created by the Fed, they have

$900,000 more than they are required to keep on hand ($1 million less 10% reserve). In bankers' language, that $900,000 is called...

EXCESS RESERVES

The word "excess" is a tipoff that these so-called reserves have a special destiny. Now that they have been transmuted into an excess, they are considered as available for lending. And so in due course these excess reserves are converted into...

BANK LOANS

But wait a minute. How can this money be loaned out when it is owned by the original depositors who are still free to write checks and spend it any time they wish? Isn't that a double claim against the same money? The answer is that, when the new loans are made, they are *not* made with the same money at all. They are made with brand *new* money created out of thin air for that purpose. The nation's money supply simply increases by ninety per cent of the bank's deposits. Furthermore, this new money is far more interesting to the banks than the old. The old money, which they received from depositors, requires them to pay out interest or perform services for the privilege of using it. But, with the *new* money, the banks *collect* interest, instead, which is not too bad considering it cost them nothing to make. Nor is that the end of the process. When this *second* wave of fiat money moves into the economy, it comes right back into the banking system, just as the first wave did, in the form of ...

MORE COMMERCIAL BANK DEPOSITS

The process now repeats but with slightly smaller numbers each time around. What was a "loan" on Friday comes back into the bank as a "deposit" on Monday. The deposit then is reclassified as a "reserve" and ninety per cent of that becomes an "excess" reserve which, once again, is available for a new "loan." Thus, the $1 million of *first* wave fiat money gives birth to $900,000 in the *second* wave, and that gives birth to $810,000 in the *third* wave ($900,000 less 10% reserve). It takes about twenty-eight times through the revolving door of deposits becoming loans becoming deposits becoming more loans until the process plays itself out to the maximum effect, which is ...

BANK FIAT MONEY = UP TO 9 TIMES GOVERNMENT

The amount of fiat money created by the banking cartel is approximately nine times the amount of the original government debt which made the entire process possible. When the original debt itself is added to that figure, we finally have ...

TOTAL FIAT MONEY = UP TO 10 TIMES GOVERNMENT

The total amount of fiat money created by the Federal Reserve and the commercial banks together is approximately ten times the amount of the underlying government debt. To the degree that this newly created money floods into the economy in excess of goods and services, it causes the purchasing power of all money, both old and new, to decline. Prices go up because the relative value of the money has gone down. The result is the same as if that purchasing power had been taken from us in taxes. The reality of this process, therefore, is that it is a...

HIDDEN TAX = UP TO 10 TIMES THE NATIONAL DEBT

Without realizing it, Americans have paid over the years, in *addition* to their federal income taxes and excise taxes, a completely hidden tax equal to many times the national debt! And that still is not the end of the process. Since our money supply is purely an arbitrary entity with nothing behind it except debt, its quantity can go

---

1- That is a theoretical maximum. In actual practice, the banks can seldom loan out all of the money they are allowed to create, and the numbers fall short of the maximum.

down as well as up. When people are going deeper into debt, the nation's money supply expands and prices go up, but when they pay off their debts and refuse to renew, the money supply contracts and prices tumble. That is exactly what happens in times of economic or political uncertainty. This alternation between periods of expansion and contraction of the money supply is the underlying cause of ...

BOOMS, BUSTS, AND DEPRESSIONS

Who benefits from all of this? Certainly not the average citizen. The only beneficiaries are the political scientists in Congress who enjoy the effect of unlimited revenue to perpetuate their power, and the monetary scientists within the banking cartel called the Federal Reserve System who have been able to harness the American people, without their knowing it, to the yoke of modern feudalism.

RESERVE RATIOS

The previous figures are based on a "reserve" ratio of 10% (a money-expansion ratio of 10-to-l). It must be remembered, however, that this is purely arbitrary. Since the money is fiat with no precious-metal backing, there is no *real* limitation except what the politicians and money managers decide is expedient for the moment. Altering this ratio is the third way in which the Federal Reserve can influence the nation's supply of money. The numbers, therefore, must be considered as transient. At any time there is a "need" for more money, the ratio can be increased to 20-to-l or 50-to-1, or the pretense of a reserve can be dropped altogether. There is virtually *no* limit to the amount of fiat money that can be manufactured under the present system.

NATIONAL DEBT NOT NECESSARY FOR INFLATION

Because the Federal Reserve can be counted on to "monetize" (convert into money) virtually any amount of government debt, and because this process of expanding the money supply is the primary cause of inflation, it is tempting to jump to the conclusion that federal debt and inflation are but two aspects of the same phenomenon. This, however, is not necessarily true. It is quite possible to have either one without the other.

The banking cartel holds a monopoly in the manufacture of money. Consequently, money is created only when IOUs are "monetized" by the Fed or by commercial banks. When private individuals, corporations, or institutions purchase government bonds, they must use money they have previously earned and saved. In other words, no new money is created, because they are using funds that are already in existence. Therefore, the sale of government bonds to the banking system *is* inflationary, but when sold to the private sector, it is *not*. That is the primary reason the United States avoided massive inflation during the 1980s when the federal government was going into debt at a greater rate than ever before in its history. By keeping interest rates high, these bonds became attractive to *private* investors, including those in other countries.[1] Very little new money was created, because most of the bonds were purchased with American dollars already in existence. This, of course, was a temporary fix at best. Today, those bonds are continually maturing and are being replaced by still *more* bonds to include the original debt plus accumulated interest. Eventually this process must come to an end and, when it does, the Fed will have no choice but to literally buy back all the debt of the '80s—that is, to replace all of the formerly invested private money with newly manufactured fiat money—plus a great deal more to cover the interest. *Then* we will understand the meaning of inflation.

On the other side of the coin, the Federal Reserve has the option of manufacturing money even if the federal government does *not* go deeper into debt. For example, the huge expansion of the money supply leading up to the stock market crash in 1929 occurred at a time when the national debt was being paid off. In every year from 1920 through 1930, federal revenue exceeded expenses, and there were relatively few government bonds being offered. The massive inflation of the money supply was made possible by converting commercial bank loans into "reserves" at the Fed's discount window and by the Fed's purchase of banker's acceptances, which are commercial contracts for the purchase of goods.

Now the options are even greater. The Monetary Control Act of 1980 has made it possible for the Creature to monetize virtually *any*

1- Only about 11 to 15 per cent of the federal debt at that time was held by the federal Reserve System.

2. See chapter twenty-three.

debt instrument, including IOUs from foreign governments. The apparent purpose of this legislation is to make it possible to bail out those governments which are having trouble paying the interest on their loans from American banks. When the Fed creates fiat American dollars to give foreign governments in exchange for their worthless bonds, the money path is slightly longer and more twisted, but the effect is similar to the purchase of U.S. Treasury Bonds. The newly created dollars go to the foreign governments, then to the American banks where they become cash reserves. Finally, they flow back into the U.S. money pool (multiplied by nine) in the form of additional loans. The cost of the operation once again is born by the American citizen through the loss of purchasing power. Expansion of the money supply, therefore, and the inflation that follows, no longer even require federal deficits. As long as *someone* is willing to borrow American dollars, the cartel will have the option of creating those dollars specifically to purchase their bonds and, by so doing, continue to expand the money supply.

We must not forget, however, that one of the reasons the Fed was created in the first place was to make it possible for Congress to spend without the public knowing it was being taxed. Americans have shown an amazing indifference to this fleecing, explained undoubtedly by their lack of understanding of how the Mandrake Mechanism works. Consequently, at the present time, this cozy contract between the banking cartel and the politicians is in little danger of being altered. As a practical matter, therefore, even though the Fed may also create fiat money in exchange for commercial debt and for bonds of foreign governments, its *major* concern likely will be to continue supplying Congress.

The implications of this fact are mind boggling. Since our money supply, at present at least, is tied to the national debt, to pay off that debt would cause money to disappear. Even to seriously *reduce* it would cripple the economy.[1] Therefore, as long as the Federal Reserve exists, America will be, *must* be, in debt.

The purchase of bonds from other governments is accelerating in the present political climate of internationalism. Our own money

---

[1] With the Fed holding only 7% of the national debt, the effect would still be devastating. Since the money supply is pyramided ten times on top of the underlying government bonds, each $1 eliminated from the federal debt would cause the money supply to shrink by *70c* (1.00 X .07 X 10 = .70).

supply increasingly is based upon *their* debt as well as ours, and they, too, will not be allowed to pay it off even if they are able.

TAXES NOT EVEN NECESSARY

It is a sobering thought that the federal government now could operate—even at its current level of spending—without levying any taxes whatsoever. All it has to do is create the required money through the Federal Reserve System by monetizing its own bonds. In fact, most of the money it *now* spends is obtained that way.

If the idea of eliminating the IRS sounds like good news, remember that the inflation that results from monetizing the debt is just as much a tax as any other; but, because it is hidden and so few Americans understand how it works, it is more politically popular than a tax that is out in the open.

Inflation can be likened to a game of Monopoly in which the game's banker has no limit to the amount of money he can distribute. With each throw of the dice he reaches under the table and brings up another stack of those paper tokens which all the players must use as money. If the banker is also one of the players—and in our real world that is exactly the case—obviously he is going to end up owning all the property. But, in the meantime, the increasing flood of money swirls out from the banker and engulfs the players. As the quantity of money becomes greater, the relative worth of each token becomes less, and the prices bid for the properties goes up. The game is called *monopoly* for a reason. In the end, one person holds all the property and everyone else is bankrupt. But what does it matter. It's only a game.

Unfortunately, it is *not* a game in the real world. It is our livelihood, our food, our shelter. It *does* make a difference if there is only one winner, and it makes a *big* difference if that winner obtained his monopoly simply by manufacturing everyone's money.

FOURTH REASON TO ABOLISH THE SYSTEM

Make no mistake about it, inflation is a tax. Furthermore, it is the most unfair tax of them all because it falls most heavily upon those who are thrifty, those on fixed incomes, and those in the middle and lower income brackets. The important point here is that this hidden tax would be impossible without fiat money. Fiat money in America is created solely as a result of the Federal Reserve System. Therefore, it is totally accurate to say that *the Federal Reserve System* *generates our most unfair tax*. Both the tax and the System that makes it possible should be abolished.

The political scientists who authorize this process of monetizing the national debt, and the monetary scientists who carry it out, know that it is not true debt. It is not true debt, because no one in Washington really expects to repay it—*ever*. The dual purpose of this magic show is simply to create free spending money for the politicians, without the inconvenience of raising direct taxes, and also to generate a perpetual river of gold flowing into the banking cartel. The partnership is merely looking out for itself.

Why, then, does the federal government bother with taxes at all? Why not just operate on monetized debt? The answer is twofold. First, if it did, people would begin to wonder about the *source* of the money, and that might cause them to wake up to the reality that inflation is a tax. Thus, open taxes at *some* level serve to perpetuate public ignorance which is essential to the success of the scheme. The second reason is that taxes, particularly *progressive* taxes, are weapons by which elitist social planners can wage war on the middle class.

A TOOL FOR SOCIAL PLANNING

The January 1946 issue of *American Affairs* carried an article written by Beardsley Ruml who, at that time, was Chairman of the Federal Reserve Bank of New York. Ruml had devised the system of automatic withholding during World War II, so he was well qualified to speak on the nature and purpose of the federal income tax. Fiis theme was spelled out in the title of his article: "Taxes for Revenue Are Obsolete."

In an introduction to the article, the magazine's editor summarized Ruml's views as follows:

> His thesis is that, given control of a central banking system and **an** inconvertible currency [a currency not backed by gold], a sovereign national government is finally free of money worries and needs **no** longer levy taxes for the purpose of providing itself with revenue. All taxation, therefore, should be regarded from the point of view of social and economic consequences.[1]

Ruml explained that, since the Federal Reserve now can create out of nothing all the money the government could ever want, there remain only two reasons to have taxes at all. The first of these is to combat a rise in the general level of prices. His argument was that, when people have money in their pockets, they will spend it for goods and services, and this will bid up the prices. The solution, he says, is to take the money away from them through taxation and let the government spend it instead. This, too, will bid up prices, but Ruml chose not to go into that. He explained his theory this way:

---

[1] **"Taxes for Revenue Are Obsolete," by Beardsley Ruml, *American Affairs,* January, 1946, p. 35.**

> The dollars the government spends become purchasing power in the hands of the people who have received them. The dollars the government takes by taxes cannot be spent by the people, and therefore, these dollars can no longer be used to acquire the things which are available for sale. Taxation is, therefore, an instrument of the first importance in the administration of any fiscal and monetary policy.

REDISTRIBUTION OF WEALTH

The other purpose of taxation, according to Ruml, is to redistribute the wealth from one class of citizens to another. This must always be done in the name of social justice or equality, but the real objective is to override the free market and bring society under the control of the master planners. Ruml said:

> The second principle purpose of federal taxes is to attain more equality of wealth and of income than would result from economic forces working alone. The taxes which are effective for this purpose are the progressive individual income tax, the progressive estate tax, and the gift tax. What these taxes should be depends on public policy with respect to the distribution of wealth and of income. These taxes should be defended and attacked in terms of their effect on the character of American life, not as revenue measures.[2]

As we have seen, Senator Nelson Aldrich was one of the creators of the Federal Reserve System. That is not surprising in light of the cartel nature of the System and the financial interests which he represented. Aldrich also was one of the prime sponsors of the federal income tax. The two creations work together as a far more delicate mechanism for control over the economic and social life of society than either one alone.

In more recent years, there has been hopeful evidence that the master planners were about to abandon Ruml's blueprint. We have

---

1- Ruml, p. 36.
2- *Ibid., p. 36.*

heard a great deal both in Congress and at the Federal Reserve about the necessity of reducing expenses so as to diminisn the growth of federal debt and inflation. But it has been lip service only. The great bulk of federal funding continues to be created by the Mandrake Mechanism, the cost of government continues to outpace tax revenues, and the Ruml formula reigns supreme.

EXPANSION LEADS TO CONTRACTION

While it is true that the Mandrake Mechanism is responsible for the expansion of the money supply, the process also works in reverse. Just as money is created when the Federal Reserve *purchases* bonds or other debt instruments, it is extinguished by the *sale* of those same items. When they are sold, the money is given back to the System and disappears into the inkwell or computer chip from which it came. Then, the same secondary ripple effect that *created* money through the commercial banking system causes it to be *withdrawn* from the economy. Furthermore, even if the Federal Reserve does not deliberately contract the money supply, the same result can and often does occur when the public decides to resist the availability of credit and reduce its debt. A man can only be tempted to borrow, he cannot be forced to do so.

There are many psychological factors involved in a decision to go into debt that can offset the easy availability of money and a low interest rate: A downturn in the economy, the threat of civil disorder, the fear of pending war, an uncertain political climate, to name just a few. Even though the Fed may try to pump money into the economy by making it abundantly available, the public can thwart that move simply by saying no, thank you. When this happens, the old debts that are being paid off are not replaced by new ones to take their place, and the entire amount of consumer and business debt will shrink. That means the money supply also will shrink, because, in modern America, debt is money. And it is this very expansion and contraction of the monetary pool—a phenomenon that could not occur if based upon the laws of supply and demand—that is at the very core of practically every boom and bust that has plagued mankind throughout history.

In conclusion, it can be said that modern money is a grand illusion conjured by the magicians of finance and politics. We are living in an age of fiat money, and it is sobering to realize that every previous nation in history that has adopted such money eventually was economically destroyed by it. Furthermore, there is nothing in our present monetary structure that offers any assurance that we may be exempted from that morbid roll call.

Correction. There is *one*. It is still within the power of Congress to abolish the Federal Reserve System.

SUMMARY

The American dollar has no intrinsic value. It is a classic example of fiat money with no limit to the quantity that can be produced. Its primary value lies in the willingness of people to accept it and, to that end, legal tender laws require them to do so. It is true that our money is created out of nothing, but it is more accurate to say that it is based upon debt. In one sense, therefore, our money is created out of *less* than nothing. The entire money supply would vanish into bank vaults and computer chips if all debts were repaid. Under the present System, therefore, our leaders cannot allow a serious reduction in either the national or consumer debt. Charging interest on pretended loans is usury, and that has become institutionalized under the Federal Reserve System. The Mandrake Mechanism by which the Fed converts debt into money may seem complicated at first, but it is simple if one remembers that the process is not intended to be logical but to confuse and deceive. The end product of the Mechanism is artificial expansion of the money supply, which is the root cause of the hidden tax called inflation. This expansion then leads to contraction and, together, they produce the destructive boom-bust cycle that has plagued mankind throughout history wherever fiat money has existed.

Cecil Rhodes made one of the world's greatest fortunes of the 18th century. Financed by Nathan Rothschild and the Bank of England, he established a monopoly over the diamond output of South Africa and most of the gold as well. He formed a secret society which included many of the top leaders of British government. Their elitist goal was nothing less than world domination and the establishment of a modern feudalist society controlled by themselves through the world's central banks. In America, the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) was an outgrowth of that group.

Library of Congiw

August Belmont came to New York in 1837 as the financial agent of the Rothschilds. He tunneled vast amounts of capital into American investments, often without anyone knowing whose money he was spending. The purpose of concealment was to blunt the growing anti-Rothschild resentment that was then prevalent in Europe as well as America. When his affiliation became commonly kno^1 his usefulness came to an end *&w* he was replaced by J.P. Morgan.

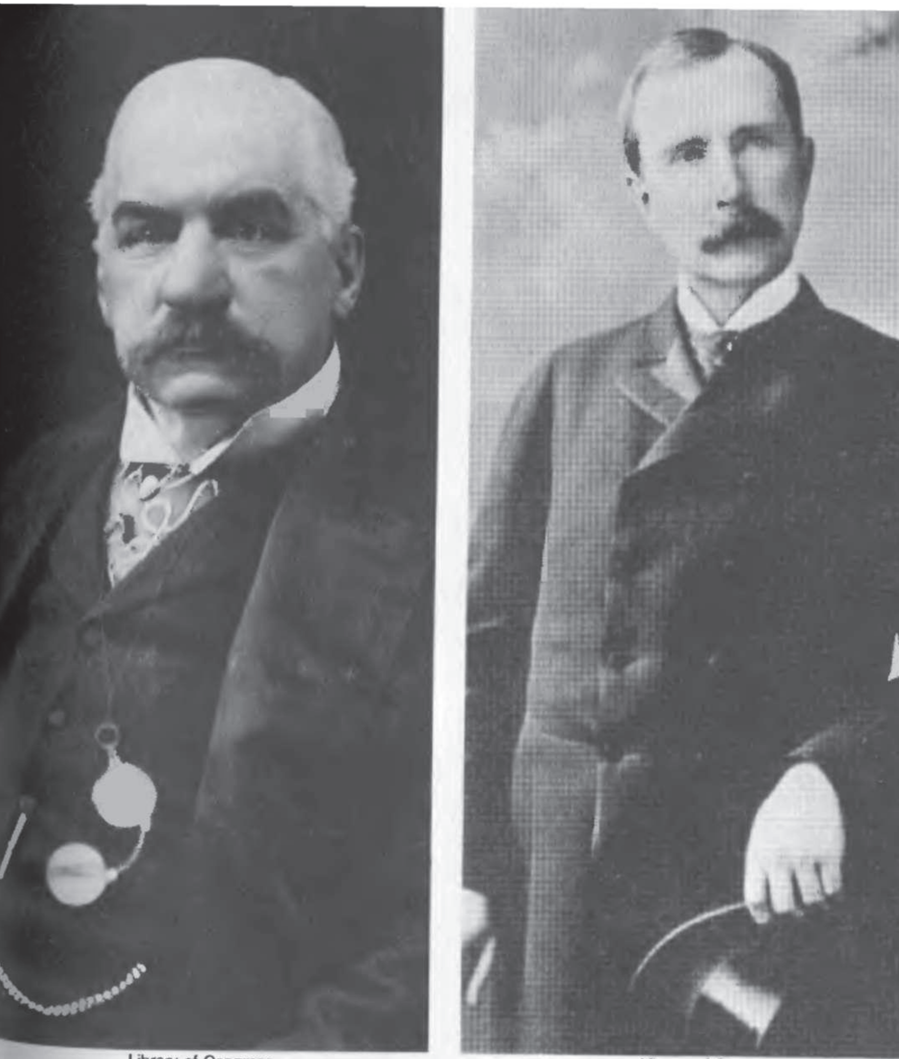

Library of Congress

Library of Congress

J-P. Morgan, Sr. (left) was brought into banking by his father, Junius Morgan, in England. The Morgans were friendly competitors with the Rothschilds and became socially close to them. Morgan's London-based firm was saved from financial ruin in 1857 by the Bank of England over which the Rothschilds held great influence. Thereafter, Morgan appears to have served as a Rothschild financial agent and went to great length to appear totally American.

John D. Rockefeller (right) made his initial fortune in oil but soon gravitated into Ranking and finance. His entry into the field was not welcomed by Morgan, and they became fierce competitors. Eventually, they decided to minimize their competition by entering into joint ventures. In the end, they worked together to create a national inking cartel called the Federal Reserve System.

Jekyll Island Museum

Above is the clubhouse for the private resort on Jekyll Island in Georgia where the Federal Reserve System was conceived in great secrecy in 1910. It is shown here shortly after completion.

Jacob Schiff (right) was head of the New York investment firm, Kuhn, Loeb & Co. He was one of the principal backers of the Bolshevik revolution and personally financed Trotsky's trip from New York to Russia. He was a major contributor to Woodrow Wilson's presidential campaign and an advocate for passage of the Federal Reserve Act.

UPI/Bettm

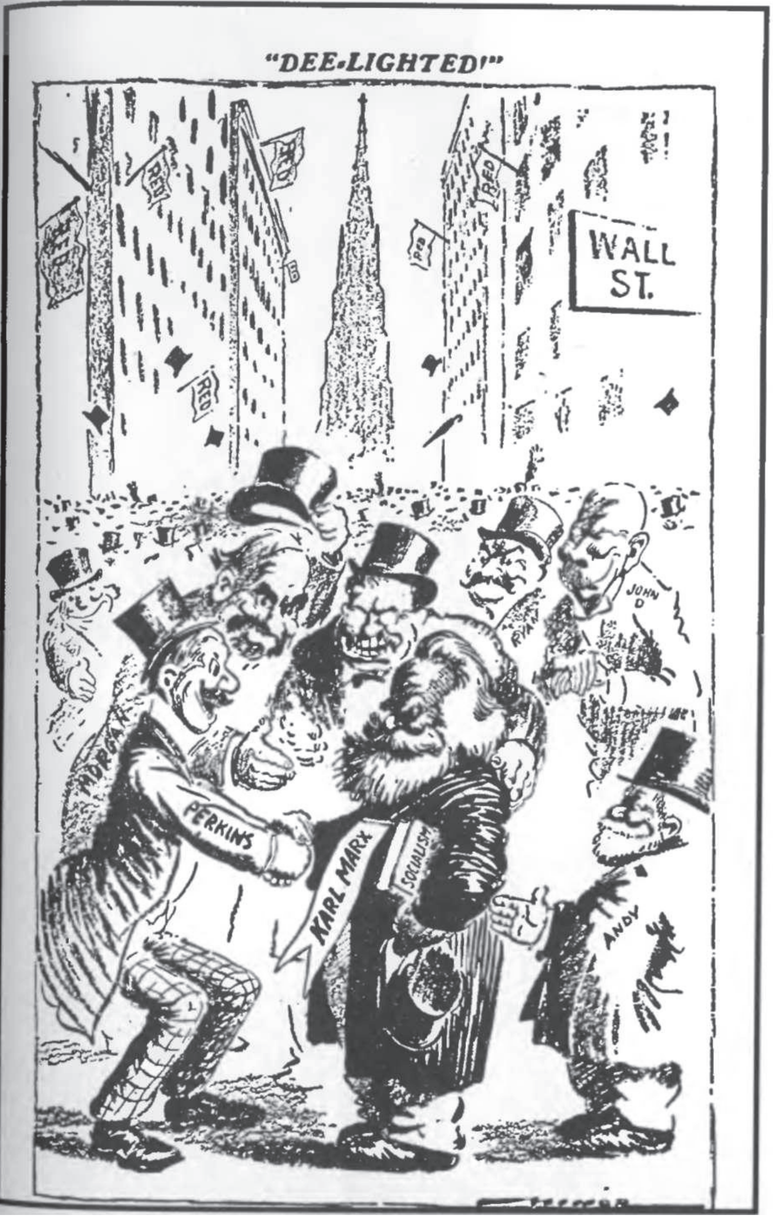
"DEE-LIGHTED!"
RED
RED
RED
RED
RED
RED
WALL ST.
MORGAN
PERKINS
RYAN
JOHN D
KARL MARX
SOCIALISM
ANDY

This cartoon by Robert Minor appeared in the St. Louis Post-Dispatch in 1911. It shows Karl Marx surrounded by enthusiastic Wall Street financiers: Morgan partner George Perkins; J.P. Morgan; John Ryan of National City Bank; John D. Rockefeller; and Andrew Carnegie. Immediately behind Marx is Teddy Roosevelt, leader of the Progressive Party.

Harry Dexter White (left) and John Maynard Keynes (right) were the theoreticians who guided the 1944 Bretton Woods Monetary Conference at which the IMF/World Bank was created. White was a member of the Communist Party. Keynes was a member of the Fabian Society. They shared the same goal of international socialism. The IMF/World Bank has furthered that goal ever since.

Macmto

Raymond Robins is shown here as the Chairman of the Progressive Party convention in Chicago in 1912. He later became head of the American Red Cross Mission in Russia after the Bolshevik revolution. Although he represented Wall Street interests, he was a disciple of Cecil Rhodes and was anti-capitalist in his beliefs. He held great influence over Lenin.

UPI/Bettmann

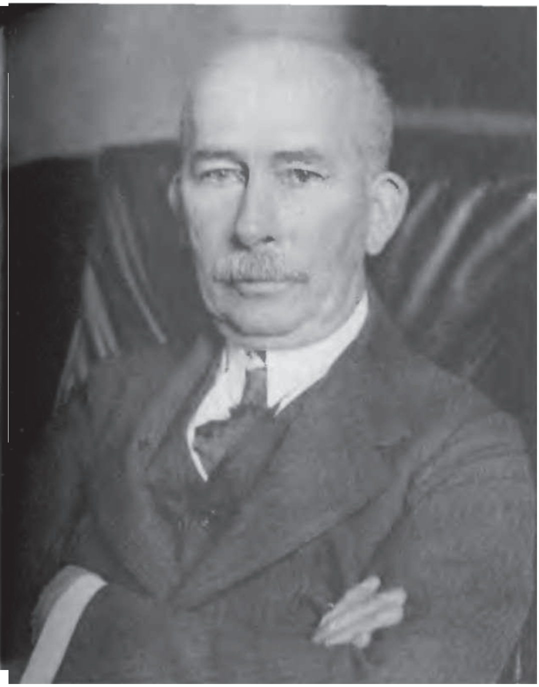

National Archives

Edward Mandell House was the man who secured Woodrow Wilson's nomination for President and who, thereafter, became the hidden power at the White House. He negotiated a secret agreement to draw the U.S. into World War I at the very time Wilson was campaigning on the promise to keep America out of the war. On behalf of Wall Street, House lobbied Congress to pass the Federal Reserve Act.

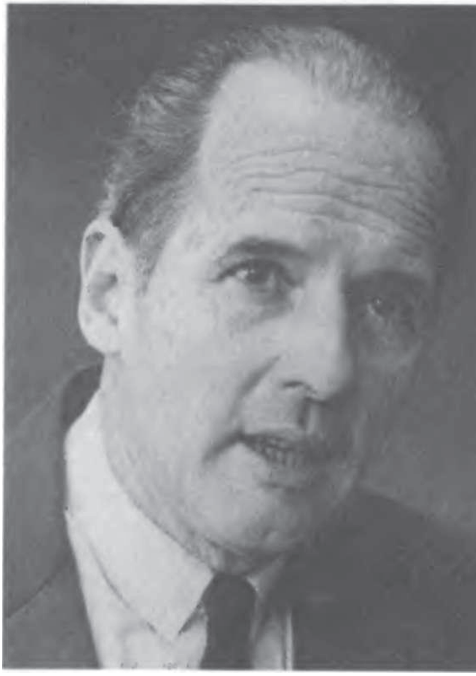

Carroll Quigley was a professor of history at Georgetown University. His book, *Tragedy and Hope,* **revealed that the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) is an outgrowth of the secret society formed by Cecil Rhodes.**

He wrote the history of how an international network of financiers has created a system of financial control able to dominate the political systems of all countries through their Antral banks. He named names and provided meticulous documentation. His book was suppressed.

Georgetown University

Winston Churchill was the First Lord of the Admiralty in World War I. As the *Lusitania*, entered into an area where a German U-Boat was known to be operating, he called off the destroyer escort that had been assigned to protect her. He calculated that the destruction of a British ship with U.S. passengers aboard would inflame American passions against Germany and help create a political climate for coming into the war.

U.S. Army Pictoral Service

Hulton Deutsch

Lord Mersey (right) was put in charge of an official inquiry into the sinking of the *Lusitania.* It was not an investigation but a coverup. He was instructed by the Admiralty to place the entire blame on the Captain of the ship. Mersey obeyed his orders but refused payment for his services and declined to accept further judicial assignments. In later years, he said the affair "was a damn dirty business."

Section III

THE NEW ALCHEMY

The ancient alchemists sought in vain to convert lead into gold. Modern alchemists have succeeded in that quest. The lead bullets of war have yielded an endless source of gold for those magicians who control the Mandrake Mechanism. The startling fact emerges that, without the ability to create fiat money, most modern wars simply would not have occurred. As long as the Mechanism is allowed to function, future wars are inevitable. This is the story of how that came to pass.

Chapter Eleven

THE ROTHSCHILD FORMULA

The rise of the House of Rothschild in Europe; the tradition among financiers of profiting from both sides of armed conflict; the formula by which war is converted into debt and debt converted back into war.

So far we have adhered closely to the subject of money and the history of its manipulation by political and monetary scientists. Now we are going to take a short detour along a parallel path and view some of the same historical scenery from a different perspective. As we progress, it may seem that we have lost our way, and you may wonder what connection any of this can possibly have with the Federal Reserve System. Please be assured, however, it has *everything* to do with it, and, when we finally return to that topic, the connection will have become painfully clear.

THE PROFITS OF WAR

The focus of this chapter is on the profits of war and, more specifically, the tendency of those who reap those profits to manipulate governments into military conflicts, not for national or patriotic reasons, but for private gain. The mechanism by which this was accomplished in the past was more complex than simply lending money to warring governments and then collecting interest, although that was part of it. The real payoff has always been in the form of political favoritism in the market place. Writing in the year 1937, French historian Richard Lewinsohn explains:

> Although often called bankers, those who financed wars in the pre-capitalist period ... were not bankers in the modern sense of the word. Unlike modern bankers who operate with money deposited with them by their clients [or, in more recent times, created out of nothing by a central bank—E.G.], they generally worked with the fortune which they themselves had amassed or inherited, and which

> they lent at a high rate of interest. Thus those who risked the financing of a war were for the most part already very rich, and this was the case down to the seventeenth century.
>
> When they agreed to finance a war, these rich lenders did not, however, always attach great importance to the rate of interest. In this respect they often showed the greatest compliance to their august clients. But in return they secured for themselves privileges which could be turned into industrial or commercial profit, such as mining concessions, monopolies of sale or importation, etc. Sometimes even they were given the right to appropriate certain taxes as a guarantee of their loans. So though the loan itself carried a very real risk and often did not bring in much interest, the indirect profits were very considerable, and the lenders' leniency well rewarded.

THE ROTHSCHILD DYNASTY

No discussion of banking as a mechanism for financing wars would be complete without turning eventually to the name Rothschild. It was Mayer Amschel Rothschild who is quoted as saying: "Let me issue and control a nation's money and I care not who writes the laws."[2] Biographer Frederic Morton concluded that the Rothschild dynasty had: "...conquered the world more thoroughly, more cunningly, and much more lastingly than all the Ceasars before or all the Hitlers after them."[3] The dynasty was begun in Frankfurt, Germany, in the middle of the eighteenth century by Mayer Amschel Bauer, the son of a goldsmith. Mayer became a clerk in the Oppenheimer Bank in Hanover and was eventually promoted to junior partner. After his father's death, he returned to his home in Frankfurt to continue the family business. Over the door hung a red shield with an eagle as a sign to identify the establishment. The German words for red shield are *roth schild,* so he changed his name from Bauer to Rothschild and added five gold arrows held in the talons of the eagle to represent his five sons.

---

1. **Richard Lewinsohn, *The Profits of War through the Ages* (New York: E.P. Dutton, 1937), pp. 55-56.**

2. **Quoted by Senator Robert L. Owen, former Chairman of the Senate Committee on Banking and Currency and one of the sponsors of the Federal Reserve Act, *National Economy and the Banking System,* (Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1939), p. 99. This quotation could not be verified in a primary reference work. However, when one considers the life and accomplishments of the elder Rothschild, there can be little doubt that this sentiment was, in fact, his outlook and guiding principle.**

3. **Frederic Morton, *The Rothschilds: A Family Portrait* (New York: Atheneum, 1962), p. 14.**

The Rothschild fortune began when Mayer adopted the practice of fractional-reserve banking. As we have seen, he was not alone in this, but the House of Rothschild greatly surpassed the competition. That was due to his sharp business acumen and also because of his five most unusual sons, all of whom became financial power centers of their own. As they matured and learned the magic of converting debt into money, they moved beyond the confines of Frankfurt and established additional operations in the financial centers, not only of Europe, but of much of the civilized world.

Throughout the first half of the nineteenth century, the brothers conducted important transactions on behalf of the governments of England, France, Prussia, Austria, Belgium, Spain, Naples, Portugal, Brazil, various German states, and other smaller countries. They were the personal bankers of many of the crowned heads of Europe. They made large investments, through agents, in markets as distant as the United States, India, Cuba, and Australia. They were financiers to Cecil Rhodes, making it possible for him to establish a monopoly over the diamond fields of South Africa. They are still connected with the de Beers.[1]

Biographer Derek Wilson writes:

> **Those who lampooned or vilified the Rothschilds for their "sinister" influence had a considerable amount of justification for their anger and anxiety. The banking community had always constituted a "fifth estate" whose members were able, by their control of royal purse strings, to affect important events. But the house of Rothschild was immensely more powerful than any financial empire that had ever preceded it. It commanded vast wealth. It was international. It was independent. Royal governments were nervous of it because they could not control it. Popular movements hated it because it was not answerable to the people. Constitutionalists resented it because its influence was exercised behind the scenes—secretly.[2]**

Secrecy, of course, is essential for the success of a cabal, and the Rothschilds perfected the art. By remaining behind the scenes, they were able to avoid the brunt of public anger which was directed, instead, at the political figures which they largely controlled. This is a technique which has been practiced by financial manipulators

---

1- Morton, pp. 145,219.

2. Derek Wilson, *Rothschild: The Wealth and Power of A Dynasty* (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1988), pp. 79, 98-99.

ever since, and it is fully utilized by those who operate the Federal Reserve System today. Wilson continues:

> Clandestinity was and remained a feature of Rothschild political activity. Seldom were they to be seen engaging in open public debate on important issues. Never did they seek government office. Even when, in later years, some of them entered parliament, they did not feature prominently in the assembly chambers of London, Paris or Berlin. Yet all the while they were helping to shape the major events of the day: by granting or withholding funds; by providing statesmen with an official diplomatic service; by influencing appointments to high office; and by an almost daily intercourse with the great decision makers.[1]

A FORTUNE IN SMUGGLING

Continual war in Europe created excellent opportunities for profit from smuggling scarce consumer goods past military blockades. Since the Rothschilds often financed both sides in a conflict and were known to have great political influence, the mere sight of the red shield on a leather pouch, a carriage, or a ship's flag was sufficient to insure that the messenger or his cargo could pass through check points in either direction. This immunity allowed them to deal in a thriving black market for cotton goods, yarn, tobacco, coffee, sugar, and indigo; and they moved freely through the borders of Germany, Scandinavia, Holland, Spain, England, and France.[2] This government protection was one of those indirect benefits that generated commercial profits far in excess of the interest received on the underlying government loans.

It is generally true that, one man's loss is another man's gain. And even the friendliest of biographers admit that, for more than two centuries, the House of Rothschild profited handsomely from wars and economic collapses, the very occasions on which others sustained the greatest losses.

NAPOLEON VS THE BANKERS

If one picture is worth a thousand words, then one example surely must be worth a dozen explanations. There is no better example than the economic war waged by the financiers of nineteenth-century Europe against Napoleon Bonaparte. It is an easily forgotten fact of history that Napoleon had restored law and order to a chaotic, post-revolutionary France and had turned his attention, not to war, but to establishing peace and improving economic conditions at home. He was particularly anxious to get his country and his people out of debt and out of the control of bankers. R. McNair Wilson, in *Monarchy or Money Power,* says:

---

[1] **Derek Wilson, p. 99.**

[2] **Morton, pp. 40-41.**

> It was ordained by him that money should not be exported from France on any pretext whatever except with the consent of the Government, and that in no circumstance should loans be employed to meet current expenditure whether civil or military.... "One has only to consider," Napoleon remarked, "what loans can lead to in order to realize their danger. Therefore, I would never have anything to do with them and have always striven against them."...
>
> The object was to withhold from finance the power to embarrass the Government as it had embarrassed the Government of Louis XVI. When a Government, Bonaparte declared, is dependent for money upon bankers, they and not the leaders of that Government control the situation, since "the hand that gives is above the hand that takes."...
>
> "Money," he declared, "has no motherland; financiers are without patriotism and without decency: their sole object is gain."[1]

One of Napoleon's first blows against the bankers was to establish an independent Bank of France with himself as president. But even this bank was not trusted, and government funds were never placed into it. It was his refusal to borrow, however, that caused the most concern among the financiers. Actually, to them this was a mixture of both bad and good news. The bad news was that they were denied the benefit of royalty payments on fractional money. The good news was that, without resorting to debt, they were confident Napoleon could not militarily defend himself. Thus, he easily could be toppled and replaced by Louis XVI of the old monarchic dynasty who was receptive to banker influence. Wilson continues:

> They had good hope of compassing his downfall. None believed that he could finance war on a great scale now that the resource of paper money had been denied him by the destruction of the Assignah[2] Where would he obtain the indispensable gold and silver to feed and equip a great army? Pitt [the Prime Minister of England] counted already on a coalition of England, Austria, Prussia, Russia, Spain,

---

[1] **R. McNair Wilson,** ***Monarchy or Money Power*** **(London: Eyre and Spottiswoode, Ltd., 1933), pp. 68,72.**

[2] **The Assignat was pure fiat money which rapidly became totally worthless in commerce and which all but destroyed the French economy.**

> Sweden, and numerous small states. Some 600,000 men would be put into the field. All the resources of England's wealth—that is to say, of the world's wealth—would be placed at the disposal of this overwhelming force. Could the Corsican muster 200,000? Could he arm them? Could he feed them? If the lead bullets did not destroy him, the gold bullets would soon make an end. He would be forced, like his neighbors, to come, hat in hand, for loans and, like them, to accept the banker's terms....
>
> He could not put his hands on £2,000,000, so empty was the Treasury and so depleted the nation's stock of metallic money. London waited with interest to see how the puzzle would be solved.

Napoleon solved the puzzle quite simply by selling off some real estate. Those crazy Americans gave him £3,000,000 for a vast swamp called Louisiana.

A PLAN TO DESTROY THE UNITED STATES

Napoleon did not want war, but he knew that Europe's financial rulers would not settle for peace—unless, of course, they were forced into it by the defeat of their puppet regimes or unless, somehow, it would be to their monetary advantage. It was in pursuit of the latter tactic that he threatened to take direct possession of Holland, which then was ruled by his brother, King Louis. Napoleon knew that the Dutch were heavily in debt to the English bankers. If Holland were to be annexed by France, this debt would never be repaid. So Napoleon made a proposal to England's bankers that, if they would convince the English government to accept peace with France, he would agree to leave Holland alone.

The negotiations were handled by the banker, Pierre-Cesar Labouchere, who was sent by the Dutch, and the English banker, Sir Francis Baring who was Labouchere's father-in-law. Although this was an attractive proposal to the bankers, at least on a short-term basis, it was still against their nature to forego the immense profits of war and mercantilism. They revised the proposal, therefore, to include a plan whereby both England and France would combine forces to destroy the newly independent United States and bring at least half of it—the industrial half—back under the domination of England. The incredible plan, conceived by the French banker, Ouvard, called for military invasion and conquest followed by division of the spoils. England would receive

---

1. R. McNair Wilson, pp. 71-72.

the northern states, united with Canada, while the southern states would fall to France. Napoleon was to be tempted by offering him the awesome title of "King of America." McNair Wilson tells us:

> **Labouchere wrote to Baring on March 21, and enclosed a note for [British Foreign Secretary] Wellesley dictated by Ouvrard which ran:**
>
> **"From a conqueror he (Napoleon) is becoming a preserver; the first result of his marriage with Marie Louise will be that he will make an offer of peace to England. It is to this nation's** *(i.e.,* **England's) interest to make peace, for it has the command of the sea; on the contrary, it is really in the interest of France to continue war, which allows her to expand indefinitely and make a fresh fleet, which cannot be done once peace is established. Why does not the English Cabinet make a proposal to France to destroy the United States of America, and by making them again dependent on England, persuade Napoleon to lend his aid to destroy the life-work of Louis XVI?... It is to her (England's) interest to conclude peace and to flatter Napoleon's vanity by recognizing his work and his imperial title."...**
>
> **The Cabinet discussed the proposals and approved them. Wellesley at once hurried to Baring's house to give him the good news.... The Dutch would be able to pay and would be compelled to pay in gold.**
>
> **Unhappily Napoleon found out what was afoot and took somewhat strong objections to the plan of a joint attack on the United States. He arrested Ouvrard, dismissed and exiled Fouche, and published the whole story, to the grave distress of Wellesley and Baring.**[1]

It must not be concluded from this that Napoleon was a paragon of virtue or a champion of honest money. His objection to the bankers was that their monetary power was able to threaten the sovereignty of his own political power. He allowed them a free hand while they served the purpose of the state. Then, when the need for military financing subsided, he would condemn them for making "unholy profits" and simply take it from them in the name of the people. If the bankers protested, they were sent to prison.

And so the battle lines were drawn. Napoleon had to be destroyed at all costs. To make this possible, the Bank of England created vast new amounts of fiat money to "lend" to the government so it could finance an overpowering army. A steady stream of gold flowed out of the country to finance the armies of Russia, Prussia, and Austria. The economy staggered once again under the load of war debt, and the little people paid the bill with hardly a grumble because they hadn't the slightest knowledge it was being charged to their account. Wilson concludes the story:

---

[1] **R. McNair Wilson, pp. 81-82.**

> The bankers won. Louis XVIII was restored by British arms and British diplomacy to the throne of his ancestors. Loans were placed at his disposal, though Napoleon had left a France which enjoyed a credit balance.
>
> A year later the man whom every King and every banker in Europe called "usurper" won back his throne with 800 men and without the firing of a single shot. On this occasion he had no option but to raise a loan for the defense of France. The City of London [banking district] accommodated him with £5,000,000. With this sum he equipped the army which Wellington defeated at Waterloo.

GOLD FOR THE DUKE OF WELLINGTON

One of the most fascinating and revealing episodes to be recorded by Rothschild biographers concerns the smuggling of a large shipment of gold to finance the Duke of Wellington who was attempting to feed and equip an army in Portugal and in the Pyrenees mountains between Spain and France.

It was not at all certain that Wellington would be able to defeat Napoleon in the coming battle, and the Duke was hard pressed to convince bankers and merchants in Portugal and Spain to accept his written promises-to-pay, even though they were officially guaranteed by the British government. These notes were deeply discounted, and Wellington was desperate for gold coin. It was at this point that Nathan Rothschild offered the services of himself and his brothers. With an efficient smuggling apparatus already functioning throughout Europe, he was able to offer Wellington much better terms while still making a magnificent profit. But, to accomplish this, the gold had to pass right under Napoleon's nose. Frederic Morton describes the scene:

> There was only one way to route the cash: through the very France England's army was fighting. Of course, the Rothschild blockade-running machine already had superb cogs whirring all over Germany, Scandinavia and England, even in Spain and Southern France. But a very foxy new wheel was needed in Napoleon's capital itself. Enter Jacob—henceforth called James—the youngest of Mayer's sons.[2]

---

1. R. McNair Wilson, p. 83.
2. Morton, p. 46.

James was only nineteen years old but was well trained by his father in the art of deception. He arrived in Paris with a dual mission. First, he was to provide the French authorities with a false report about the British gold movement, with just enough truth in it to sound convincing. He presented the government with falsified letters indicating that the English were desperate to *halt* the flow of their gold into France. The ploy paid off when the French authorities then actually *encouraged* the financial community to accept British gold and to convert it into commercially sound banknotes. Second, James was to serve as a vital link in a financial chain stretching between London and the Pyrenees. He was to coordinate the receipt of the gold into France, the conversion of that gold into Spanish banknotes, and the movement of those notes out of the country on their way to Wellington. All of this he did with amazing dexterity, especially considering his youth. Morton concludes:

> In the space of a few hundred hours Mayer's youngest had not only gotten the English gold rolling through France, but conjured a fiscal mirage that took in Napoleon himself. A teen-age Rothschild tricked the imperial government into sanctioning the very process that helped to ruin it....
>
> The family machine began to hum. Nathan sent big shipments of British guineas, Portuguese gold ounces, French napoleons d'or (often freshly minted in London) across the Channel. From the coast James saw them to Paris and secretly transmuted the metal into bills on certain Spanish bankers. South of the capital, Kalmann [another of Mayer's sons] materialized, took over the bills, blurred into a thousand shadowed canyons along the Pyrenees—and reappeared, with Wellington's receipts in hand. Salomon [another son] was everywhere, trouble-shooting, making sure the transit points were diffuse and obscure enough not to disturb either the French delusion or the British guinea rate. Amschel stayed in Frankfurt and helped father Mayer to staff headquarters.
>
> The French did catch a few whiffs of the truth. Sometimes the suspicious could be prosperously purged of their suspicion. The police chief of Calais, for example, suddenly was able to live in such distracting luxury that he found it difficult to patrol the shoreline thoroughly....
>
> While Napoleon struggled his might away in the Russian Winter, there passed through France itself a gold vein to the army staving in the Empire's back door.[1]

---

[1] Morton, p. 47.

At a dinner party in later years, Nathan casually summed up the episode as though it were merely a good piece of routine business. He said:

> The East India Company had £800,000 worth of gold to sell. I went to the sale and bought it all. I knew the Duke of Wellington must have it. The government sent for me and said they must have the gold. I sold the gold to them, but they didn't know how to get it to the Duke in Portugal. I undertook all that and sent it through France. It was the best business I have ever done.

THE BATTLE OF WATERLOO

The final outcome of the battle at Waterloo between Wellington and Napoleon was crucial to Europe both politically and economically. If Napoleon had been victorious, England would have been in even greater economic trouble than before. Not only would she have lost international power and prestige, but even at home, her subjects would have been further disgruntled over such great personal and financial wartime sacrifices. Her defeat almost surely would have resulted in not being able to repay the great amounts she had borrowed to conduct the war. In the London stock exchange, therefore, where British government bonds were traded along with other securities, everyone waited anxiously for news of the outcome.

It was well known that the Rothschilds had developed a private courier service that was used, not only to transport gold and other tangible cargo, but to rapidly move *information* that could be useful in making investment decisions. It was expected, therefore, that Nathan in London would be the first to know the name of the victor after the cannon smoke had cleared from the battlefield. And they were not to be disappointed. The first news of Wellington's victory arrived in Brussels around midnight on June 18, 1815, where a Rothschild agent named Rothworth was waiting in readiness. He immediately mounted a fresh horse and set off for the port of Ostend where a boat was standing by to speed him across the channel to London. In the early hours of June 20, the exhausted messenger was pounding on Nathan's door, a full twenty-four hours before Wellington's own courier, Major Henry Percy, arrived.

---

1. Morton, p. 45.

At least one friendly biographer claims that Nathan's first act was to deliver the news to the Prime Minister, but that government officials were hesitant at first to believe it, because it ran contrary to reports they had received previously telling of serious British setbacks. At any rate, there is no doubt that Nathan's *second* act of the morning was to set off for the stock exchange to take up a position at his usual pillar.

All eyes were upon him as he slumped dejectedly, staring at the floor. Then, he raised his gaze and, with pained expression, began to *sell*. The whisper went through the crowded room, "Nathan is selling?" "Nathan is *selling!*" "Wellington must have lost." "Our government bonds will *never* be repaid." "Sell them now. Sell. Sell!"

Prices tumbled, and Nathan sold again. Prices plummeted, and still Nathan sold. Finally, prices collapsed altogether and, in one quick move, Nathan reversed his call and purchased the entire market in government bonds. In a matter of just a few hours, he had acquired the dominant holding of England's entire debt at but a tiny fraction of its worth.[1]

SIDONIA

Benjamin Disraeli, the Prime Minister of England, wrote a book in 1844 called *Coningsby*. It was a political novel in which the author expressed his views about contemporary issues. One of the strong characters in the book was a financier named Sidonia, but every detail of Sidonia's actions was an exact replica of the real Lord Rothschild, whom Disraeli greatly admired. In the guise of a novel, we read about Rothschild's emigration from Germany, his family and banking ties throughout Europe, his handling of the gold for Wellington, and his financial coup after Waterloo. Then Disraeli wrote:

> Europe did require money, and Sidonia was ready to lend it to Europe. France wanted some; Austria more; Prussia a little; Russia a few millions. Sidonia could furnish them all....
>
> It is not difficult to conceive that, after having pursued the career we have intimated for about ten years, Sidonia had become one of the

---

1- *The New York Times,* in its April 1,1915, edition, reported that Baron Nathan Mayer de Rothschild had attempted to secure a court order to suppress a book written by Ignatious Balla entitled *The Romance of the Rothschilds* on the grounds that the Waterloo story about his grandfather was untrue and libelous. The court ruled that the story was true, dismissed the suit, and ordered Rothschild to pay all court costs.

> most considerable personages in Europe. He had established a brother, or a near relative, in whom he could confide, in most of the principal capitals. He was lord and master of the money market of the world, and of course virtually lord and master of everything else. He literally held the revenues of Southern Italy in pawn; and monarchs and ministers of all countries courted his advice and were guided by his suggestions.

That Disraeli was not exaggerating was made clear by the boast of James Rothschild himself. When U.S. Treasury agents approached him in Paris in 1842 with a request for a loan to the American government, he said to them: "You have seen the man who is at the head of the finances of Europe."

There have always been men who were in a position to make private fortunes out of cooperating with both sides in a war. The Rothschilds were not unique in this, but they no doubt perfected the art and became the personification of that breed. They were not necessarily evil in a moral sense. What preoccupied their minds were not questions of right or wrong but of profit and loss. This analytical indifference to human suffering was aptly described by one Rothschild when he said: "When the streets of Paris are running with blood, I buy."[3] They may have held citizenship in the country of their residence, but patriotism was beyond their comprehension. They were also very bright, if not cunning, and these combined traits made them the role model of the cool pragmatists who dominate the political and financial world of today. Disraeli well described this type when he wrote of Sidonia:

> He was a man without affections. It would be harsh to say he had no heart, for he was susceptible of deep emotions, but not for individuals.... The individual never touched him. Woman was to him a toy, man a machine.[4]

It would seem that an absence of patriotism and a cold, analytical outlook would lead financiers to avoid making loans to governments, particularly foreign ones. Private borrowers can be hauled into court and their assets confiscated to make good on their

---

1. Benjamin Disraeli, *Coningsby* (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, originally published in England in 1844), p. 225.
2. Stephen Birmingham, "*Our Crowd*"*: The Great Jewish Families of New York* (New York: Harper & Row, 1986), p. 73.
3. Quoted in *The New York Times,* October 21,1987, cited by Chernow, p. 13.
4. Disraeli, p. 229.

debts. But governments control the legalized use of force. They *are* the courts. They *are* the police. Who will seize their assets? The answer is *another* government. Speaking of a relatively modern example of this principle, Ron Chernow explains:

> The new alliance [between the monetary and political scientists] was mutually advantageous. Washington wanted to harness the new financial power to coerce foreign governments into opening their markets to American goods or adopting pro-American policies. The banks, in turn, needed levers to force debt repayment and welcomed the government's police powers in distant places. The threat of military intervention was an excellent means by which to speed loan repayment. When Kuhn, Loeb considered a loan to the Dominican Republic, backed by customs receipts, Jacob Schiff inquired of his London associate Sir Ernest Cassel, "If they do not pay, who will collect these customs duties?" Cassel replied, "Your marines and ours."[1]

One of the great puzzles of history is why governments always go into debt and seldom attempt to put themselves on a "pay-as-you-go" basis. A partial answer is that kings and politicians lack the courage to tax their subjects the enormous sums that would be required under such an arrangement. There is also the deeper question of *why* the expenditures are so high in the first place.

Given the mentality of the world's financial lords and masters, as Disraeli described them, it is conceivable that a coldly calculated strategy has been developed over the years to insure this result. In fact, the historical evidence strongly suggests that just such a plan *was* developed in eighteenth-century Europe and perfected in twentieth-century America. For the purposes of hypothetical analysis, let us identify this strategy as *The Rothschild Formula*.

THE FORMULA

Let us imagine a man who is totally pragmatic. He is smarter and more cunning than most men and, in fact, holds them in thinly disguised contempt. He may respect the talents of a few, but has little concern over the condition of mankind. He has observed that kings and politicians are always fighting over something or other and has concluded that wars are inevitable. He also has learned that wars can be profitable, not only by lending or creating the money to finance them, but from government favoritism in the granting of commercial subsidies or monopolies. He is not capable of such a primitive feeling as patriotism, so he is free to participate in the funding of any side in any conflict, limited only by factors of self interest. If such a man were to survey the world around him, it is not difficult to imagine that he would come to the following conclusions which would become the prime directives of his career:

---

[1] Quoted by Jacques Attali, translated by Barbara Ellis, *A Man of Influence: Sir Siegmund Warburg, 1902-82* (London: Weidenfeld, & Nicolson, 1986), p. 57.

1. War is the ultimate discipline to any government. If it can successfully meet the challenge of war, it will survive. If it cannot, it will perish. All else is secondary. The sanctity of its laws, the prosperity of its citizens, and the solvency of its treasury will be quickly sacrificed by any government in its primal act of self-survival.
2. All that is necessary, therefore, to insure that a government will maintain or expand its debt is to involve it in war or the threat of war. The greater the threat and the more destructive the war, the greater the need for debt.
3. To involve a country in war or the threat of war, it will be necessary for it to have enemies with credible military might. If such enemies already exist, all the better. If they exist but lack military strength, it will be necessary to provide them the money to build their war machine. If an enemy does not exist at all, then it will be necessary to *create* one by financing the rise of a hostile regime. ^
4. The ultimate obstacle is a government which declines to finance its wars through debt. Although this seldom happens, when it does, it will be necessary to encourage internal political opposition, insurrection, or revolution to replace that government with one that is more compliant to our will. The assassination of heads of state could play an important role in this process.
5. No nation can be allowed to remain militarily stronger than its adversaries, for that could lead to peace and a reduction of debt. To accomplish this balance of power, it may be necessary to finance both sides of the conflict. Unless one of the combatants is hostile to our interests and, therefore, must be destroyed, neither side should be allowed a decisive victory or defeat. While we must always proclaim the virtues of peace, the unspoken objective is perpetual war.

Whether anyone actually put this strategy into words or passed it along from generation to generation is not important. In fact, it is doubtful it has ever worked that way. Whether it is the product of conscious planning or merely the consequence of men responding to the profit opportunities inherent in fiat money, the world's financial lords have *acted* as though they were following such a plan, and this has become especially apparent since the creation of the central-bank Mandrake Mechanism three centuries ago.

The "balance-of-power" question is particularly intriguing. Most history texts present the concept as though it were some kind of natural, social phenomenon which, somehow, has worked to the benefit of mankind. The implication is that it's just wonderful how, after all those European wars, no nation was strong enough to completely dominate the others. When the United States emerged from World War II with exactly such power, it was widely deplored, and massive political/financial mechanisms such as foreign aid and disarmament were set in motion to restore the balance. This has become almost a revered doctrine of international democracy. But the overlooked consequence of this sentimental notion is that wars "between equals" have become the permanent landscape of history.

This does not mean that every war-like group that comes along will find easy financing from the lords and masters. It depends on whom they threaten and how likely they are to succeed. In 1830, for example, the Dutch were facing an uprising of their subjects in Belgium. Both the ruling government and the revolutionaries were dependent upon the Rothschilds for financing their conflict. The Dutch rulers were reliable customers for loans and, just as important, they were reliable in their payment of interest on those loans. It would have been foolhardy to provide more than token assistance to the rebels who, if they came to power, quite likely would have refused to honor the debts of the former puppet regime. Salomon Rothschild explained:

> These gentlemen should not count on us unless they decide to follow a line of prudence and moderation.... Our goodwill does not yet extend to the point of putting clubs into the hands that would beat us, that is, lending money to make war and ruin the credit that we sustain with all our efforts and all our means.[1]

---

[1] **As quoted by Derek Wilson, p. 100.**

After the revolution was resolved by negotiation rather than by arms, the new government in Brussels was a natural target for financial takeover. James Rothschild laid out the strategy that has become the model of such operations ever since:

> **Now is the moment of which we should take advantage to make ourselves absolute masters of that country's finances. The first step will be to establish ourselves on an intimate footing with Belgium's new Finance Minister, to gain his confidence ... and to take all the treasury bonds he may offer us.**

PERPETUAL WAR IN EIGHTEENTH CENTURY ENGLAND

Wars, great and small, have always been a plague to Europe, but it was not until they were easy to finance through central banking and fiat money that they became virtually perpetual. For example, the following war chronicle begins immediately following the formation of the Bank of England which, as you recall, was created for the specific purpose of financing a war:

1689-1697 The War of the League of Augsberg
1702-1713 The War of Spanish Succession
1739-1742 The War of Jenkin's Ear
1744-1748 The War of Austrian Succession
1754-1763 The French and Indian War
1793-1801 The War against Revolutionary France
1803-1815 The Napoleonic Wars

In addition to these European conflicts, there also were two wars with America: the War for Independence and the War of 1812. In the 126 years between 1689 and 1815, England was at war 63 of them. That is one out of every two years in combat. The others were spent *preparing* for combat.

The mark of the Rothschild Formula is unmistakable in these conflicts. The monetary scientists often were seen financing both sides. Whether ending in victory or defeat, the outcome merely preserved or restored the European "balance of power." And the most permanent result of any of these wars was expanded government debt for all parties.

SUMMARY

By the end of the eighteenth century, the House of Rothschild had become one of the most successful financial institutions the

---

1. **Derek Wilson, p. 100.**

world has ever known. Its meteoric rise can be attributed to the great industry and shrewdness of the five brothers who established themselves in various capitals of Europe and forged the world's first international financial network. As pioneers in the practice of lending money to governments, they soon learned that this provided unique opportunities to parlay wealth into political power as well. Before long, most of the princes and kings of Europe had come within their influence.

The Rothschilds also had mastered the art of smuggling on a grand scale, often with the tacit approval of the governments whose laws they violated. This was perceived by all parties as an unofficial bonus for providing needed funding to those same governments, particularly in time of war. The fact that different branches of the Rothschild network also might be providing funds for the enemy was pragmatically ignored. Thus, a time-honored practice among financiers was born: profiting from both sides.

The Rothschilds operated a highly efficient intelligence gathering system which provided them with advance knowledge of important events, knowledge which was invaluable for investment decisions. When an exhausted Rothschild courier delivered the first news of the Battle of Waterloo, Nathan was able to deceive the London bond traders into a selling panic, and that allowed him to acquire the dominant holding of England's entire debt at but a tiny fraction of its worth.

A study of these and similar events reveals a personality profile, not just of the Rothschilds, but of that special breed of international financiers whose success typically is built upon certain character traits. Those include cold objectivity, immunity to patriotism, and indifference to the human condition. That profile is the basis for proposing a theoretical strategy, called the Rothschild Formula, which motivates such men to propel governments into war for the profits they yield. This formula most likely has never been consciously phrased as it appears here, but subconscious motivations and personality traits work together to implement it nevertheless. As long as the mechanism of central banking exists, it will be to such men an irresistible temptation to convert debt into perpetual war and war into perpetual debt.

In the following chapters we shall track the distinctive footprint of the Rothschild Formula as it leads up to our own doorstep in the present day.

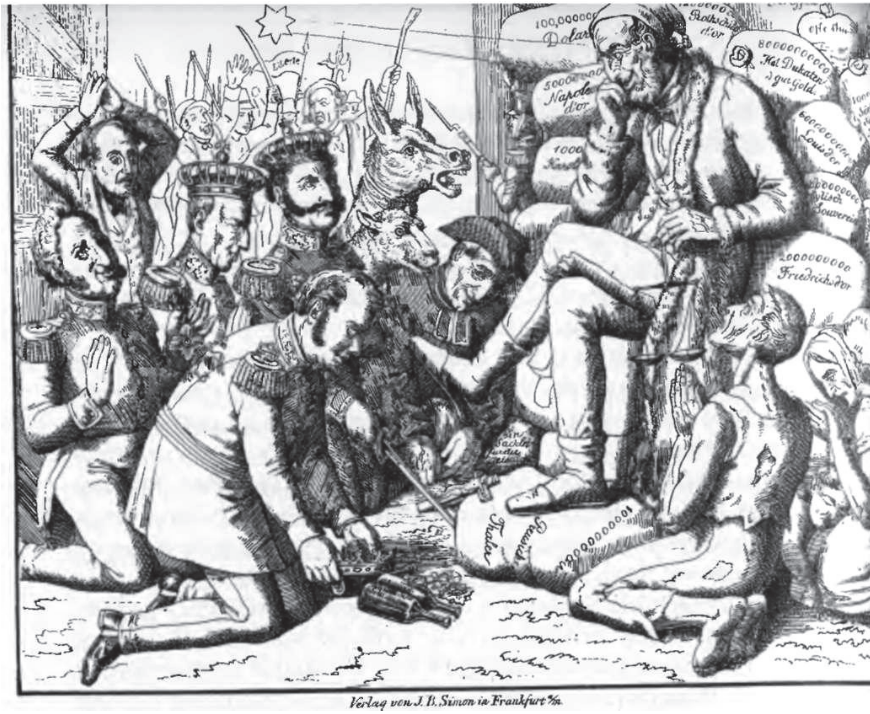
100,00000 Dolar
Rothschild d'or
80000000 Hol Dukaten
50000 Napoleon d'or
Louisd'or
Englisch Souverain
2000000000 Friedrichsd'or
Preussisch Thaler
Verlag von J. B. Simon in Frankfurt a/M.

Historisches Museum, Frankfurt, Germany

A satirical cartoon of 1848 depicts "Rothschild" pondering over which of Europe's rulers to favor with loans, while revolutionaries challenge the ancient order he is supporting.

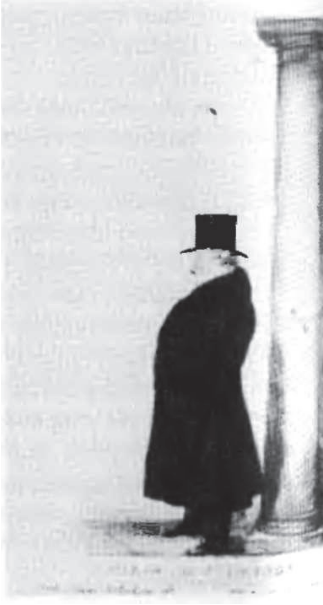

A caricature of Nathan Rothschild, showing him in his habitual position before one of the pillars in the Exchange. It was here that he capitalized on his advance knowledge of Wellington's defeat of Napoleon at Waterloo and was able to acquire the dominant holding of England's entire debt at but a small fraction of its worth.

British Museum Print Room

Chapter Twelve

SINK THE LUSITANIA!

The role of J.P. Morgan in providing loans to England and France in World War I; the souring of those loans as it became apparent that Germany would win; the betrayal of a British ship and the sacrifice of American passengers as a stratagem to bring America into the war; the use of American taxes to pay off the loans.

The origin of World War I usually is attributed to the assassination of Archduke Francis Ferdinand of Austria-Hungary by a Serbian nationalist in 1914. This was a serious affront to Austria but hardly sufficient reason to plunge the world into a mortal conflict that would claim over ten million lives and twenty million wounded. American schoolchildren are taught that Uncle Sam came into the war "to make the world safe for democracy." But, as we shall see, the American war drums were pounded by men with far less idealistic objectives.

Since the latter part of the eighteenth century, the Rothschild Formula had controlled the political climate of Europe. Nations had increasingly confronted each other over border disputes, colonial territories, and trade routes. An arms race had been in progress for many years; large, standing armies had been recruited and trained; military alliances had been hammered together; all in preparation for war. The assassination of Ferdinand was not the cause but the trigger. It was merely the spark that lit the fuse that fired the first loaded cannon.

AN INVESTMENT IN WAR

The exigencies of war in Europe required England and France to go heavily into debt. When their respective central banks and local merchant banks could no longer meet that need, the beleaguered governments turned to the Americans and selected the House of Morgan—acting as partners of the Rothschilds—to act as sales agent for their bonds. Most of the money raised in this fashion was quickly returned to the United States to acquire war-sensitive materials, and Morgan was selected as the U.S. purchase agent for those as well. A commission was paid on all transactions in both directions: once when the money was borrowed and again when it was spent. Furthermore, many of the companies receiving production contracts were either owned outright by Morgan holding companies or were securely within his orbit of bank control. Under such an arrangement, it will not be surprising to learn, as we shall in a moment, that Morgan was not overly anxious to see hostilities come to a close. Even the most honorable of men can be corrupted by the temptation of such gigantic flows of cash.

Writing in the year 1919, just a few months after the end of the war, John Moody says:

> Not only did England and France pay for their supplies with money furnished by Wall Street, but they made their purchases through the same medium.... Inevitably the house of Morgan was selected for this important task. Thus the war had given Wall Street an entirely new role. Hitherto it has been exclusively the headquarters of finance; now it became the greatest industrial mart the world had ever known. In addition to selling stocks and bonds, financing railroads, and performing the other tasks of a great banking center, Wall Street began to deal in shells, cannon, submarines, blankets, clothing, shoes, canned meats, wheat, and the thousands of other articles needed for the prosecution of a great war.[1]

The money began to flow in January of 1915 when the House of Morgan signed a contract with the British Army Council and the Admiralty. The first purchase, curiously, was for horses, and the amount tendered was $12 million. But that was but the first drop of rain before the deluge. Total purchases would eventually climb to an astronomical $3 billion. The firm became the largest consumer on earth, spending up to $10 million per day. Morgan offices at 23 Wall Street were mobbed by brokers and manufacturers seeking to cut a deal. The bank had to post guards at every door and at the partners' homes as well. Each month, Morgan presided over purchases which were equal to the g^ross national product of the entire world just one generation before.

---

1. Tohn Moody, *The Masters of Capital* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1919), pp. 164-165.
2. Chernow, pp. 187-89.

Throughout all this, Morgan vigorously claimed to be a pacifist. "Nobody could hate war more than I do," he told the Senate Munitions Committee. But such professions of righteousness were difficult to accept. Lewinsohn comments:

> The 500 million dollar loan contracted in autumn 1915 brought to the group of bankers, at whose head Morgan was, a net profit of 9 million dollars.... Again, in 1917, the French government paid to Morgan's and other banks a commission of 1,500,000 dollars, and a further million in 1918.
>
> Besides the issue of loans there was another source of profit: the purchase and sale of American stock which the Allies surrendered so that they could buy munitions in the States. It is estimated that in the course of the war some 2000 million [two billion] dollars passed in this way through Morgan's hands. Even if the commission was very small, transactions of such dimensions would give him an influence on the stock market which would carry very real advantages....
>
> His hatred against war did not preveryt him, citizen of a neutral country, from furnishing belligerent powers with 4,400,000 rifles for a matter of $194,000,000.... The profits were such as to compensate to some degree his hatred of warfare. According to his own account, he received, as agent of the English and French governments, a commission of 1% on orders totalling $3,000,000,000. That is, he received some $30,000,000.... Besides these two chief principals, Morgan, however, also acted for Russia (for whom he did business amounting to $412,000,000) and for Italy and Canada (figures for his business with the last two not having been published)....
>
> J.P. Morgan, and some of his partners in the bank, were at the time shareholders in companies that were ... concerns which made substantial profits from the orders he placed with them.... It is really astonishing that a central buying organization should have been confided to one who was buyer and seller at the same time.[1]

GERMANY'S U-BOATS ALMOST WON THE WAR

But there were dark clouds gathering above Wall Street as the war began to go badly for the Allies. With the passage of time and the condensing of history, it is easy to forget that Germany and the Central Powers almost won the war prior to U.S. entry. Employing a small fleet of newly developed submarines, Germany was well on her way to cutting off England and her allies from all outside help. It was an amazing feat and it changed forever the concept of naval warfare. Germany had a total of twenty-one U-boats, but, because

---

1- Lewinsohn, pp. 103-4,222-24.

they constantly had to be repaired and serviced, the maximum number at sea was only seven at any one time. Yet, between 1914 and 1918, German submarines had sunk over 5,700 surface ships. Three-hundred thousand tons of Allied shipping were sent to the bottom every week. One out of every four steamers leaving the British Isles never returned. In later years, British Foreign Secretary, Arthur Balfour, wrote: "At that time, it certainly looked as though we were going to lose the war."[1] Robert Ferrell, in his *Woodrow Wilson and World War I,* concluded: "The Allies approached the brink of disaster, with no recourse other than to ask Germany for terms."[2] William McAdoo, who was Secretary of the Treasury at the time, says in his memoirs:

> **Across the sea came the dismay of the British—a dismay that carried a deepening note of disaster. There was a fear, and a well-grounded one, that England might be starved into abject surrender.... On April 27,1917, Ambassador Walter H. Page reported confidentially to the President that the food in the British Isles was not more than enough to feed the civil population for six weeks or two months.[3]**

Under these circumstances, it became impossible for Morgan to find new buyers for the Allied war bonds, neither for fresh funding nor to replenish the old bonds which were coming due and facing default. This was serious on several counts. If bond sales came to a halt, there would be no money to continue purchasing war materials. Commissions would be lost at both ends. Furthermore? if the previously sold bonds were to go into default, as they certainly would if Britain and France were forced to accept peace on Germany's terms, the investors would sustain gigantic losses. *Something* had to be done. But what? Robert Ferrell hints at the answer:

> **In the mid thirties a Senate committee headed by Gerald P. Nye of North Dakota investigated the pre-1917 munitions trade and raised a possibility that the Wilson administration went to war because American bankers needed to protect their Allied loans.**

---

[1] Balfour MSS, FO/800/208, British Foreign Office records, Public Record Office, London, as cited by Robert H. Ferrell, *Woodrow Wilson and World War I* (New York: Harper & Row, 1985), p. 35.

[2] Ferrell, p. 12.

[3] William G. McAdoo, *Crowded Years* (New York: Houghton Mifflin, 1931; rpt. New York: Kennikat Press, 1971), p. 392.

[4] Ferrell, p. 88.

As previously mentioned by William McAdoo, the American ambassador to England at that time was Walter Hines Page, a trustee of Rockefeller's social-engineering foundation called the General Education Board. It was learned by the Nye committee that, in addition to his government salary, which he complained was not high enough, Page also received an allowance of $25,000 a year (an enormous amount in 1917) from Cleveland Dodge, president of Rockefeller's National City Bank. On March 15, 1917, Ambassador Page sent a telegram to the State Department outlining the financial crisis in England. Since sources of new capital had dried up, the only way to keep the war going, he said, was to make direct grants from the U.S. Treasury. But, since this would be a violation of neutrality treaties, the United States would have to abandon its neutrality and enter the war. He said:

> I think that the pressure of this approaching crisis has gone beyond the ability of the Morgan Financial Agency for the British and French Governments.... The greatest help we could give the Allies would be such a credit.... Unless we go to war with Germany, our Government, of course, cannot make such a direct grant of credit.[1]

The Morgan group had floated one-and-a-half billion dollars in loans to Britain and France. With the fortunes of war turning against them, investors were facing the threat of a total loss. As Ferdinand Lundberg observed: "The declaration of war by the United States, in addition to extricating the wealthiest American families from a dangerous situation, also opened new vistas of profits."[2]

COLONEL HOUSE

One of the most influential men behind the scenes at this time was Colonel Edward Mandell House, personal adviser to Woodrow Wilson and, later, to F.D.R. House had close contacts with both J.P. Morgan and the old banking families of Europe. He had received several years of his schooling in England and, in later years, surrounded himself with prominent members of the Fabian Society. Furthermore, he was a man of great personal wealth, most of it acquired during the War Between the States. His father, Thomas William House, had acted as the confidential American agent of

---

1. Quoted by Ferdinand Lundberg, *America's Sixty Families* (New York: Vanguard Press, 1937), p. 141. Also see Link *el at,* eds., *The Papers of Woodrow Wilson,* Vol. 41 (1983), pp. 336-37, cited by Ferrell, p. 90.
2. Lundberg, pp. 141-42.

unknown banking interests in London. It was commonly believed he represented the Rothschilds. Although settled in Houston, Texas, the elder often remarked that he wanted his sons to "know and serve England." He was one of the few residents of a Confederate state who emerged from the War with a great fortune.

It is widely acknowledged that Colonel House was the man who selected Wilson as a presidential candidate and who secured his nomination.[1] He became Wilson's constant companion, and the President admitted publicly that he depended on him greatly for instruction and guidance. Many of Wilson's important appointive posts in government were hand selected by House. He and Wilson even went so far as to develop a orivate code so they could communicate freely over the telephone. The President himself had written: "Mr. House is my second personality. He is my independent self. His thoughts and mine are one."[3]

George Viereck, an admiring biographer of House, tells us:

> **House had the Texas delegation in his pocket.... Always moving quietly in the background, he made and unmade several governors of Texas.... House selected Wilson because he regarded him as the best available candidate....**
>
> **For seven long years Colonel House was Woodrow Wilson's other self. For six long years he shared with him all but the title of the Chief Magistracy of the Republic. For six years two rooms were at his disposal in the North Wing of the White House.... It was House who made the slate for the Cabinet, formulated the first policies of the Administration and practically directed the foreign affairs of the United States. We had, indeed, two Presidents for one!... Super-ambassador, he talked to emperors and kings as an equal. He was the spiritual generalissimo of the Administration. He was the pilot who guided the ship.[4]**

A SECRET AGREEMENT TO GET THE U.S. INTO WAR

As the presidential election neared for Wilson's second term, Colonel House entered into a series of confidential talks with Sir

---

1. *The Columbia Encyclopedia* (Third Edition, 1962, p. 2334) says the Democratic Party nomination went to Wilson when William Jennings Bryan switched his support to him "prompted by Edward M. House." For details, see Martin, p. 155.

2. Charles Seymour, *The Intimate Papers of Colonel House* (New York: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1926), Vol. I, pp. 114-15.

3. Seymour, Vol. I, p. 114.

4. George Sylvester Viereck, *The Strangest Friendship in History: Woodrow Wilson and Colonel House* (New York: Liveright Publishers, 1932), pp. 4, 18-19, 33, 35.

William Wiseman, who was attached to the British embassy in Washington and who acted as a secret intermediary between House and the British Foreign Office. Charles Seymour writes: "Between House and Wiseman there were soon to be few political secrets."[1] This was upsetting to the Secretary of State, William Jennings Bryan. Mrs. Bryan, as co-author of her husband's memoirs, writes:

> While Secretary Bryan was bearing the heavy responsibility of the Department of State, there arose the curious conditions surrounding Mr. E.M. House's unofficial connection with the President and his voyages abroad on affairs of State, which were not communicated to Secretary Bryan.... The President was unofficially dealing with foreign governments.[2]

What was the purpose of those dealings? It was nothing less than to work out the means whereby the United States could be brought into the war. Viereck explains:

> Ten months before the election which returned Wilson to the White House in 1916 "because he kept us out of war," Colonel House negotiated a secret agreement with England and France on behalf of Wilson which pledged the United States to intervene on behalf of the Allies.
>
> On March 9, 1916, Woodrow Wilson formally sanctioned the undertaking. If an inkling of the conversations between Colonel House and the leaders of England and France had reached the American people before the election, it might have caused incalculable revulsions of public opinion....
>
> From this conversation and various conferences with Sir Edward Grey grew the Secret Treaty, made without the knowledge and consent of the United States Senate, by which Woodrow Wilson and House chained the United States to the chariot of the Entente.... After the War the text of the agreement leaked out. Grey was the first to tattle. Page discussed it at length. Colonel House tells its history. C. Hartley Grattan discusses it at length in his book, *Why We Fought.* But for some incomprehensible reason the enormous significance of the revelation never penetrated the consciousness of the American people.[3]

1- Seymour, Vol. II, p. 399.

2- William Jennings Bryan and Mary Baird Bryan, *The Memoirs of William Jennings Bryan* (New York: Kennikat Press, 1925), Vol. II, pp. 404-5.

3- Viereck, pp. 106-08. This matter, along with the complete text of Sir Grey's memorandum, is discussed in *The Memoirs of William Jennings Bryan* Vol. II, pp.

The basic terms of the agreement were that the United States government would offer to negotiate a peaceful settlement between Germany and the Allies and would then put forth a specific proposal for the terms of that settlement. If either side refused to accept the proposal, then the United States would come into the war as an ally of the other side. The catch was that the terms of the proposal were carefully drafted so that Germany could not possibly accept them. Thus, to the world, it would look as though Germany was at fault and the United States was humanitarian. As Ambassador Page observed in a memorandum dated February 9,1916:

> House arrived from Berlin-Havre-Paris full of the idea of American intervention. First his plan was that he and I and a group of the British Cabinet (Grey, Asquith, Lloyd George, Reading, etc.) should at once work out a minimum programme of peace—the least that the Allies would accept, *which, he assumed, would be unacceptable to the Germans;* and that the President would take this programme and present it to both sides; the side that declined would be responsible for continuing the war.... Of course, the fatal moral weakness of the foregoing scheme is that we should plunge into the War, not on the merits of the cause, but by a carefully sprung trick

On the surface it is a paradox that Wilson, who had always been a pacifist, should now enter into a secret agreement with foreign powers to involve the United States in a war which she could easily avoid. The key that unlocks this mystery is the fact that Wilson also was an internationalist. One of the strongest bonds between House and himself was their common dream of a world government. They both recognized that the American people would never accept such a concept unless there were extenuating circumstances. They reasoned that a long and bloody war was probably the only event that could condition the American mind to accept the loss of national sovereignty, especially if it were packaged with the promise of putting an end to all wars in the future. Wilson knew, also, that, if the United States came into the war early enough to make a real difference on the battlefield and if large amounts of American dollars could be loaned to the Allied powers, he would be in a position after the war to dictate the terms of peace. He wrote to Colonel House: "England and France have not the same views with regard to peace as we have by any means. When the war is over, we can force them

---

1. Quoted by Viereck, pp. 112-13.

to our way of thinking, because by that time they will among other things be financially in our hands."[1] And so Wilson tolerated the agony of mixed emotions as he plotted for war as a necessary evil to bring about what he perceived as the ultimate good of world government.

With the arrival of 1917, the President was planting hints of both war and world government in almost every public utterance. In a typical statement made in March of that year, he said: "The tragic events of the thirty months of vital turmoil through which we have just passed have made us citizens of the world. There can be no turning back. Our own fortunes as a nation are involved, whether we would have it so or not."[2]

It was about this same time that Wilson called together the Democratic leaders of Congress to a special breakfast meeting at the White House. He told them that, in spite of public sentiment, there were many sound reasons for the country to enter the war and he asked them to help him sell this plan to Congress and the voters. Harry Elmer Barnes tells us:

> These men were opposed to war and, hence, rejected his proposals somewhat heatedly. Wilson knew that it was a poor time to split the party just before an election, so he dropped the matter at once and, with Col. House, mapped out a pacifist platform for the coming campaign. Governor Martin Glynn of New York and Senator Ollie James of Kentucky were sent to the St. Louis convention to make keynote speeches, which were based on the slogan: "He kept us out of war!"... Before he had been inaugurated a second time, the Germans played directly into his hands by announcing the resumption of submarine warfare.... It was fortunate for Britain and the bankers that the Germans made this timely blunder, as Great Britain had overdrawn her American credit by some $450,000,000 and the bankers were having trouble in floating more large private loans. It was necessary now to_pass on the burden of financing the Entente to the Federal Treasury.

---

[1] **Quoted by Ferrell, p. 88.**

[2] **Ferrell, p. 12.**

[3] **Harry Elmer Barnes, *In Quest of Truth and Justice: De-Bunking the War Guilt Myth* (Chicago: National Historical Society, 1928; rpt. New York: Arno Press & The New York Times, 1972), p. 104. For an additional account of this meeting, see Viereck, pp. 180-83.**

SELLING WAR TO THE AMERICAN PEOPLE

Through secret agreements and trickery, America had been committed to war, but the political and monetary scientists realized that something still had to be done to change public sentiment. How could that be accomplished?

Wall Street control over important segments of the media was considerable. George Wheeler tells us: "Around this time the Morgan firm was choosing the top executives for the old and troubled Harper & Brothers publishing house.... In the newspaper field, Pierpont Morgan at this period was in effective control of the New York *Sun*,... the Boston News Bureau, *Barron's* magazine, and the *Wall Street Journal*."[1]

On February 9,1917, Representative Callaway from Texas took the floor of Congress and provided further insight. He said:

> **In March, 1915, the J.P. Morgan interests, the steel, shipbuilding, and powder interests, and their subsidiary organizations, got together 12 men high up in the newspaper world and employed them to select the most influential newspapers in the United States and sufficient number of them to control generally the policy of the daily press.... They found it was only necessary to purchase the control of 25 of the greatest papers.... An agreement was reached; the policy of the papers was bought, to be paid for by the month; an editor was furnished for each paper to properly supervise and edit information regarding the questions of preparedness, militarism, financial policies, and other things of national and international nature considered vital to the interests of the purchasers.**[2]

Charles S. Mellen of the New Haven Railroad testified before Congress that his Morgan-owned railroad had more than one-thousand New England newspapers on the payroll, costing about $400,000 annually. The railroad also held almost a half-million dollars in bonds issued by the Boston *Herald*.[3] This web of control was multiplied by hundreds of additional companies which also were controlled by Morgan and other investment-banking houses.

In addition, the Morgan trust exercised media control by its power of advertising. Writing in 1937, Lundberg says: "More advertising is controlled by the J.P. Morgan junta than by any single financial group, a factor which immediately gives the banking house the respectful attention of all alert independent publishers."

---

[1] George Wheeler, *Pierpont Morgan and Friends: The Anatomy of a Myth* (Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice Hall, 1973), pp. 283-84.

[2] *Congressional Record,* Vol. 54, Feb. 9,1917, p. 2947

[3] Lundberg, p. 257.

Morgan control over the media at that time is well documented, but he was by no means alone in this. During the 1912 hearings held by the Senate Privileges and Elections Committee, it was revealed that Representative Joseph Sibley from Pennsylvania was acting as a funnel for Rockefeller money to various cooperative Congressmen. A letter was introduced to the Committee written by Sibley in 1905 to John D. Archbold, the man at Rockefeller's Standard Oil Company who provided the money. In that letter Sibley said: "An efficient literary bureau is needed, not for a day or a crisis but a permanent healthy control of the Associated Press and kindred avenues. It will cost money but will be the cheapest in the end."[2]

Lundberg comments further

> So far as can be learned, the Rockefellers have given up their old policy of owning newspapers and magazines outright, relying now upon the publications of all camps to serve their best interests in return for the vast volume of petroleum and allied advertising under Rockefeller control. After the J.P. Morgan bloc, the Rockefellers have the most advertising of any group to dispose of. And when advertising alone is not sufficient to insure the fealty of a newspaper, the Rockefeller companies have been known to make direct payments in return for a friendly editorial attitude.[3]

It is not surprising, therefore, that a large part of the nation's press, particularly in the East, began to editorially denounce Germany. The cry spread across the land to take up arms against "the enemy of western civilization." Editors became eloquent on the patriotic duty of all Americans to defend world democracy. Massive "preparedness" demonstrations and parades were organized.

But it was not enough. In spite of this massive sales campaign, the American people still were not buying. Polls conducted at the time showed popular sentiment continuing to run ten-to-one in favor of staying out of Europe's war. Clearly, what was needed was something both drastic and dramatic to change public opinion.

I Lundberg, p. 252.
2- *Ibid.,* pp. 97,249.
3- *Ibid.,* p. 247.

MORGAN CONTROL OVER SHIPPING

Banking was not the only business in which Morgan had a strong financial interest. Using his control over the nation's railroads as financial leverage, he had created an international shipping trust which included Germany's two largest lines plus one of the two in England, the White Star Lines. Morgan had attempted in 1902 to take over the remaining British line, the Cunard Company, but was blocked by the British Admiralty which wanted to keep Cunard out of foreign control so her ships could be pressed into military service, if necessary, in time of war. The *Lusitania* and the *Mauretania* were built by Cunard and became major competitors of the Morgan cartel. It is an interesting footnote of history, therefore, that, from the Morgan perspective, the *Lusitania* was quite dispensable. Ron Chernow explains:

> Pierpont assembled a plan for an American-owned shipping trust that would transpose his "community of interest" principle—cooperation among competitors in a given industry—to a global plane. He created ... the world's largest [fleet] under private ownership.... An important architect of the shipping trust was Albert Ballin, whose Hamburg-Amerika Steamship Line, with hundreds of vessels, was the world's largest shipping company.... Pierpont had to contend with a single holdout, Britain's Cunard Line.... After the Boer War, the Morgan combine and Cunard exhausted each other in debilitating rate wars."[1]

As stated previously, Morgan had been retained as the official trade agent for Britain. He handled the purchasing of all war materials in the United States and coordinated their shipping as well. Following in the footsteps of the Rothschilds of centuries past, he quickly learned the profitable skills of war-time smuggling. Colin Simpson, author of *The Lusitania,* describes the operation:

> Throughout the period of America's neutrality, British servicemen in civilian clothes worked at Morgan's. This great banking combine rapidly established such a labyrinthine network of false shippers, bank accounts and all the paraphernalia of smuggling that, although they fooled the Germans, there were also some very serious occasions when they flummoxed the Admiralty and Cunard, not to speak of the unfortunate passengers on the liners which carried the contraband.[2]

---

1. Chernow, pp. 100-01.
2. Colin Simpson, *The Lusitania* (Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1972), p. 50.

THE LUSITANIA

The *Lusitania* was a British passenger liner that sailed regularly between Liverpool and New York. She was owned by the Cunard Company, which, as previously mentioned, was the only major ship line which was a competitor of the Morgan cartel. She left New York harbor on May 1, 1915, and was sunk by a German submarine off the coast of Ireland six days later. Of the 1,195 persons who lost their lives, 195 were Americans. It was this event, more than any other, that provided the advocates of war with a convincing platform for their views, and it became the turning point where Americans reluctantly began to accept, if not the necessity of war, at least its inevitability.

The fact that the *Lusitania* was a passenger ship is misleading. Although she was built as a luxury liner, her construction specifications were drawn up by the British Admiralty so that she could be converted, if necessary, into a ship of war. Everything from the horsepower of her engines and the shape of her hull to the placement of ammunition storage areas were, in fact, military designs. She was built specifically to carry twelve six-inch guns. The construction costs for these features were paid for by the British government. Even in times of peace, it was required that her crew include officers and seamen from the Royal Navy Reserve.

In May of 1913, she was brought back into dry dock and outfitted with extra armor, revolving gun rings on her decks, and shell racks in the hold for ammunition. Handling elevators to lift the shells to the guns were also installed. Twelve high-explosive cannons were delivered to the dry dock. All this is a matter of public record at the National Maritime Museum in Greenwich, England, but whether the guns were actually installed at that time is still hotly debated. There is no evidence that they were. In any event, on September 17, the *Lusitania* returned to sea ready for the rigors of war, and she was entered into the Admiralty fleet register, not as a passenger liner, but an *armed auxiliary cruiser]* From then on, she was listed in *Jane's Fighting Ships* as an auxiliary cruiser and in the British publication, *The Naval Annual,* as an armed merchant man.

Part of the dry dock modification was to remove all the passenger accommodations in the lower deck to make room for more

---

1- Simpson, pp. 17-28, 70.

military cargo. Thus, the *Lusitania* became one of the most important carriers of war materials—including munitions—from the United States to England. On March 8,1915, after several close calls with German submarines, the captain of the *Lusitania* turned in his resignation. He was willing to face the U-boats, he said, but he was no longer willing "to carry the responsibility of mixing passengers with munitions or contraband."

CHURCHILL SETS A TRAP

From England's point of view, the handwriting on the wall was clear. Unless the United States could be brought into the war as her ally, she soon would have to sue for peace. The challenge was how to push Americans off their position of stubborn neutrality. How that was accomplished is one of the more controversial aspects of the war. It is inconceivable to many that English leaders might have deliberately plotted the destruction of one of their own vessels with American citizens aboard as a means of drawing the United States into the war as an ally. Surely, any such idea is merely German propaganda. Robert Ballard, writing in *National Geographic,* says: "Within days of the sinking, German sympathizers in New York came up with a conspiracy theory. The British Admiralty, they said, had deliberately exposed *Lusitania* to harm, hoping she would be attacked and thus draw the U.S. into the war."[2]

Let's take a closer look at this conspiracy theory. Winston Churchill, who was First Lord of the Admiralty at that time, said:

> **There are many kinds of maneuvers in war.... There are maneuvers in time, in diplomacy, in mechanics, in psychology; all of which are removed from the battlefield, but react often decisively upon it.... The maneuver which brings an ally into the field is as serviceable as that which wins a great battle. The maneuver which gains an important strategic point may be less valuable than that which placates or overawes a dangerous neutral.**[3]

The maneuver chosen by Churchill was particularly ruthless. Under what was called the Cruiser Rules, warships of both England and Germany gave the crews of unarmed enemy merchant ships a

---

1. Simpson, p. 87.

2. "Riddle of the Lusitania," by Robert Ballard, *National Geographic,* April, 1994, p. 74.

3. Winston Churchill, *The World Crisis* (New York: Scribner's Sons, 1949), p. 300. This appears on p. 464 of the Barnes & Noble 1993 reprint.

chance to take to the lifeboats before sinking them. But, in October of 1914, Churchill issued orders that British merchant ships must no longer obey a U-boat order to halt and be searched. If they had armament, they were to engage the enemy. If they did not, they were to attempt to ram the sub. The immediate result of this change was to force German U-boats to remain submerged for protection and to simply sink the ships without warning.

Why would the British want to do such a stupid thing that would cost the lives of thousands of their own seamen? The answer is that it was *not* an act of stupidity. It was *cold blooded strategy*. Churchill boasted:

> The first British countermove, made on my responsibility,... was to deter the Germans from surface attack. The submerged U-boat had to rely increasingly on underwater attack and thus ran the greater risk of mistaking neutral for British ships and of drowning neutral crews and thus embroiling Germany with other Great Powers.[1]

To increase the likelihood of accidentally sinking a ship from a neutral "Great Power," Churchill ordered British ships to remove their names from their hulls and, when in port, to fly the flag of a neutral power, preferably that of the United States. As further provocation, the British navy was ordered to treat captured U-boat crew members not as prisoners of war but as felons. "Survivors," wrote Churchill, "should be taken prisoner or shot—whichever is the most convenient."[2] Other orders, which now are an embarrassing part of official navy archives, were even more ruthless: "In all actions, white flags should be fired upon with promptitude."[3]

The trap was carefully laid. The German navy was goaded into a position of shoot-first and ask questions later and, under those conditions, it was inevitable that American lives would be lost.

A FLOATING MUNITIONS DEPOT

After many years of investigation, it is now possible to identify the cargo that was loaded aboard the *Lusitania* on her last voyage. It included 600 tons of pyroxyline (commonly called gun cotton),[4]

L Churchill, pp. 274-75.

2. Taken from the Diaries of Admiral Sir Hubert Richmond, Feb. 27,1915, National Maritime Museum, Greenwich, as quoted by Simpson, p. 37.

3. P.R.O., ADM/116/1359, Dec. 23,1914, quoted by Simpson, p. 37.

4. Gun cotton explodes with three-times the force of gunpowder in a confined space and can be ignited at a much lower flash point. See Eissler, Manuel, *Modern High Explosives* (New York John Wiley & Sons, 1914), pp. 110,112,372.

six-million rounds of ammunition, 1,248 cases of shrapnel shells (which may not have included explosive charges), plus an unknown quantity of munitions that completely filled the holds on the lowest deck and the trunkways and passageways of F deck. In addition, there were many tons of "cheese," "lard," "furs" and other items which were shown later to be falsely labelled. What they were is not now known, but it is certain they were at least contraband if not outright weapons of war. They were all consigned through the J.P. Morgan Company. But none of this was suspected by the public, least of all those hapless Americans who unknowingly booked a passage to death for themselves and their families as human decoys in a global game of high finance and low politics.

The German embassy in Washington was well aware of the nature of the cargo being loaded aboard the *Lusitania* and filed a formal complaint to the United States government, because almost all of it was in direct violation of international neutrality treaties. The response was a flat denial of any knowledge of such cargo. Seeing that the Wilson Administration was tacitly approving the shipment, the German embassy made one final effort to avert disaster. It placed an ad in fifty East Coast newspapers, including those in New York City, warning Americans not to take passage on the *Lusitania*. The ad was prepaid and requested to be placed on the paper's travel page a full week before the sailing date. It read as follows:

> NOTICE!
>
> TRAVELERS intending to embark on the Atlantic voyage are reminded that a state of war exists between Germany and her allies and Great Britain and her allies; that the zone of war includes the waters adjacent to the British Isles; that, in accordance with formal notice given by the Imperial German Government, vessels flying the flag of Great Britain, or of any of her allies, are liable to destruction in those waters and that travelers sailing in the war zone on ships of Great Britain or her allies do so at their own risk.
>
> **IMPERIAL GERMAN EMBASSY**
> **Washington, D.C., April 22, 1915.**

Although the ad was in the hands of newspapers in time for the requested deadline, the State Department intervened and, raising the specter of possible libel suits, frightened the publishers into not printing it without prior clearance from State Department attorneys. Of the fifty newspapers, only the *Des Moines Register* carried the ad on the requested date. What happened next is described by Simpson:

> George Viereck [who was the editor of a German-owned newspaper at that time and who had placed the ads on behalf of the embassy] spent April 26 asking the State Department why his advertisement had not been published. Eventually he managed to obtain an interview with [Secretary of State, William Jennings] Bryan and pointed out to him that on all but one of her wartime voyages the *Lusitania* had carried munitions. He produced copies of her supplementary manifests, which were open to public inspection at the collector's office. More important, he informed Bryan, no fewer than six million rounds of ammunition were due to be shipped on the *Lusitania* the following Friday and could be seen at that moment being loaded on pier 54. Bryan picked up the telephone and cleared the publication of the advertisement. He promised Viereck that he would endeavor to persuade the President publicly to warn Americans not to travel. No such warning was issued by the President, but there can be no doubt that President Wilson was told of the character of the cargo destined for the *Lusitania*. He did nothing, but was to concede on the day he was told of her sinking that his foreknowledge had given him many sleepless hours.[1]

It is probably true that Wilson was a pacifist at heart, but it is equally certain that he was not entirely the master of his own destiny. He was a transplanted college professor from the ivy-covered walls of Princeton, an internationalist at heart who dreamed of helping to create a world government and to usher in a millennium of peace. But he found himself surrounded by and dependent upon men of strong wills, astute political aptitudes, and powerful financial resources. Against these forces, he was all but powerless to act on his own, and there is good reason to believe that he inwardly suffered over many of the events in which he was compelled to participate. We shall leave it to others to moralize about a man who, by his deliberate refusal to warn his countrymen of their mortal peril, sends 195 of them to their watery graves. We may wonder, also, about how such a man can commit the ultimate hypocrisy of condemning the Germans for this act and then doing everything possible to prevent the American public from learning the truth. It would be surprising if the extent of his private remorse was not greater than merely a few sleepless hours.

---

[1] Simpson, p. 97.

THE FINAL VOYAGE

But we are getting slightly ahead of the story. While Morgan and Wilson were setting the deadly stage on the American side of the Atlantic, Churchill was playing his part on the European side. When the *Lusitania* left New York Harbor on May 1, her orders were to rendezvous with a British destroyer, the *Juno,* just off the coast of Ireland so she would have naval protection as she entered hostile waters. When the *Lusitania* reached the rendezvous point, however, she was alone, and the captain assumed they had missed each other in the fog. In truth, the *Juno* had been called *out* of the area at the last minute and ordered to return to Queenstown. And this was done with the full knowledge that the *Lusitania* was on a direct course into an area where a German submarine was known to be operating. To make matters worse, the *Lusitania* had been ordered to cut back on the use of coal, not because of shortages, but because it would be less expensive. Slow targets, of course, are much easier to hit. Yet, she was required to shut down one of her four boilers and, consequently, was now entering submarine-infested waters at only 75% of her potential speed.

As the *Lusitania* drew closer to hostile waters, almost everyone knew she was in grave danger. Newspapers in London were alive with the story of German warnings and recent sinkings. In the map room of the British Admiralty, Churchill watched the play unfold and coldly called the shots. Small disks marked the places where two ships had been torpedoed the day before. A circle indicated the area within which the U-boat must still be operating. A larger disk represented the *Lusitania* travelling at nineteen knots *directly into the circle*. Yet, nothing was done to help her. Admiral Coke at Queenstown was given perfunctory instructions to protect her as best he could, but he had no means to do so and, in fact, no one even bothered to notify the captain of the *Lusitania* that the rendezvous with the *Juno* had been canceled.

One of the officers present in the high-command map room on that fateful day was Commander Joseph Kenworthy, who previously had been called upon by Churchill to submit a paper on what would be the political results of an ocean liner being sunk with American passengers aboard. He left the room in disgust at the cynicism of his superiors. In 1927, in his book, *The Freedom of the Seas,* he wrote without further comment: "The *Lusitania* was sent at considerably reduced speed into an area where a U-boat was known to be waiting and with her escorts withdrawn."[1] Further comment is not needed.

Colonel House was in England at that time and, on the day of the sinking, was scheduled to have an audience with King George V. He was accompanied by Sir Edward Grey and, on the way, Sir Grey asked him: "What will America do if the Germans sink an ocean liner with American passengers on board?" As recorded in House's diaries, he replied: "I told him if this were done, a flame of indignation would sweep America, which would in itself probably carry us into the war."[2] Once at Buckingham Palace, King George also brought up the subject and was even more specific about the possible target. He asked, "Suppose they should sink the *Lusitania* with American passengers on board...."

A MIGHTY EXPLOSION, A WATERY GRAVE

Four hours after this conversation, the black smoke of the *Lusitania* was spotted on the horizon through the periscope of the German submarine, *U-20*. The ship came directly toward the U-boat, allowing it to full-throttle out of her path and swing around for a ninety-degree shot at her bow as she passed only 750 yards away. The torpedo struck nine feet below the water line on the starboard side slightly forward of the bridge. A second torpedo was readied but not needed. Quickly after the explosion of the impact, there was a *second and much larger* explosion that literally blew the side off of cargo hold number two and started the great ship immediately toward the bottom. And what a hole it must have been. The *Lusitania,* one of the largest ships ever built, sank in less than eighteen minutes!

---

1. Joseph M. Kenworthy and George Young, *The Freedom of the Seas* (New York: Ayer Company, 1929), p. 211.

2. Seymour, Vol I, p. 432

3. *Ibid.,* p. 432.

Survivors among the crew who were working in the boiler rooms during the attack have attested that the boilers did not blow at that time. Simpson tells us:

> **The G torpedo had failed to blow in the inner bulkhead of No. 1 boiler room, but just further forward *something* blew out most of the bottom of the bow of the ship. It may have been the Bethlehem Company's 3-inch shells, the six million rounds of rifle ammunition, or the highly dubious contents of the bales of furs or the small forty-pound boxes of cheese. Divers who have been down to the wreck unanimously testify that the bow was blasted by a massive internal explosion, and large pieces of the bow plating, buckled from the inside, are to be found some distance from the hull.**[1]

When a search team from the Woods Hole Oceanographic Institute surveyed the wreckage in the summer of 1993, they reported: "When our cameras swept across the hold, we got a big surprise: There was no hole.... We found no evidence that U-20's torpedo had detonated an explosion, undermining one theory of why the liner sank."[2]

It is difficult to share the team's surprise. Photographs show that the wreck is resting on its starboard (right) side. Since that is where the torpedo struck, it is logical that the hole would not be visible. It would be on the side buried in the ocean floor. The team reported that they were able to inspect only part of the hull's underside. That is because most of it—plus the *entire* starboard side—is buried in the muck. Since the torpedo struck only nine feet below the waterline, the hole would not logically be anywhere near the bottom of the hull but at a point midway between the main deck and the bottom In other words, it would be at the midpoint of the side that is now facing down. Failure to see the hole does *not* undermine the theory of internal explosion. It is exactly what one would *expect*.

In any event, it should be obvious that the *Lusitania* would not have gone to the bottom in eighteen minutes without a hole *somewhere*. Even the search team had to acknowledge that fact indirectly when it addressed the question of what might have caused the second explosion. In an obvious effort to avoid giving support to a "conspiracy theory," the report concluded that the explosion probably was caused, not by munitions, but by coal dust.

---

1. Simpson, p. 157.
2. Ballard, "Riddle of the Lusitania," pp. 74, 76.

In the final analysis, it makes little difference whether the explosion was caused by munitions or coal dust. The fact that it *could* have been caused by munitions is sufficient for the case.

A HURRIED COVER-UP

An official inquiry, under the direction of Lord Mersey, was held to determine the facts of the sinking and to place the blame. It was a rigged affair from the beginning. All evidence and testimony was carefully pre-screened to make sure that nothing was admitted into the record which would reveal duplicity on the part of British or American officials. Among the papers submitted to Lord Mersey prior to the hearings was one from Captain Richard Webb, one of the men chosen by the navy to assist in the cover up. It read: "I am directed by the board of Admiralty to inform you that it is considered politically expedient that Captain Turner, the master of the *Lusitania,* be most prominently blamed for the disaster."[1]

The final report was a most interesting document. Anyone reading **it** without knowledge of the facts would conclude that Captain William Turner was to blame for the disaster. Even so, Mersey attempted to soften the blow. He wrote: "...blame ought not to be imputed to the captain.... His omission to follow the advice in all respects cannot fairly be attributed either to negligence or incompetence." And *then* he added a final paragraph which, on the surface, appears to be a condemnation of the Germans but which, if read with understanding of the background, was an indictment of Churchill, Wilson, House and Morgan. He wrote:

> **The whole blame for the cruel destruction of life in this catastrophe must rest solely with those who plotted and with those who committed the crime.**[2]

Did Lord Mersey know that there could be a dual meaning to his **Words?** Perhaps not, but, two days after delivering his judgment, he **Wrote** to Prime Minister Asquith and turned down his fee for services. He added: "I must request that henceforth I be excused from administering His Majesty's Justice." In later years, his only comment on the event was: "The *Lusitania* case was a damn dirty business."[3]

1- The Papers of Lord Mersey, Bignor Park, Sussex, as quoted by Simpson, p. 190.

2. Simpson, p. 241.

3. *Ibid.,* p. 241.

THE CRY FOR WAR

The purposes of the Cabal would have been better served had an *American* ship been sunk by the Germans, but a British ship with 195 Americans drowned was sufficient to do the job. The players wasted no time in whipping up public sentiment. Wilson sent a note of outraged indignation to the Imperial German Government, and this was widely quoted in the press.

By that time, Bryan had become completely disillusioned by the duplicity of his own government. On May 9, he sent a dour note to Wilson:

> Germany has a right to prevent contraband going to the Allies, and a ship carrying contraband should not rely upon passengers to protect her from attack—it would be like putting women and children in front of an army.[1]

This did not deter Wilson from his commitment. The first note was followed by an even stronger one with threatening overtones, which was intensely discussed at the Cabinet meeting on the first of June. McAdoo, who was present at the meeting, says:

> I remember that Bryan had little to say at this meeting; he sat throughout the proceedings with his eyes half closed most of the time. After the meeting he told the President, as I learned later, that he could not sign the note.... Bryan went on to say that he thought his usefulness as Secretary of State was over, and he proposed to resign.[2]

At the request of Wilson, McAdoo was dispatched to the Bryans' home to persuade the Secretary to change his mind, lest his resignation be taken as a sign of disunity within the President's Cabinet. Bryan agreed to think it over one more day but, the following morning, his decision remained firm. In his memoirs, annotated by his wife, Mrs. Bryan reveals that her husband could not sleep that night. "He was so restless I suggested that he read a little till he should become drowsy. He had in his handbag a copy of an old book printed in 1829 and called 'A Wreath of Appreciation of Andrew Jackson.' He found it very interesting."[3]

What irony. In chapter seventeen we shall review the total war waged by President Jackson against the Bank of the United States,

---

1. **Bryan, Vol II, pp. 398-9.**
2. **McAdoo, p. 333.**
3. **Bryan, Vol. II, p. 424.**

the predecessor of the Federal Reserve System, and we shall be reminded that it was Jackson who prophesied:

> Is there no danger to our liberty and independence in a bank that in its nature has so little to bind it to our country?... [Is there not] cause to tremble for the purity of our elections in peace and for the independence of our country in war?... Controlling our currency, receiving our public monies, and holding thousands of our citizens in dependence, it would be more formidable and dangerous than a naval and military power of the enemy.[1]

One can only wonder what thoughts went through Bryan's mind as he recalled Jackson's warning and applied it to the artificially created war hysteria that, at that very moment, was being generated by the financial powers on Wall Street and at the newly created Federal Reserve.

From England, Colonel House sent a telegram to President Wilson which he, in turn, read to his Cabinet. It became the genesis of thousands of newspaper editorials across the land. He said piously:

> America has come to the parting of the ways, when she must determine whether she stands for civilized or uncivilized warfare. We can no longer remain neutral spectators. Our action in this crisis will determine the part we will play when peace is made, and how far we may influence a settlement for the lasting good of humanity. We are being weighed in the balance, and our position amongst nations is being assessed by mankind.[2]

In another telegram two days later, House reveals himself as the master psycho-politician playing on Wilson's ego like a violinist stroking the strings of a Stradivarius. He wrote:

> If, unhappily, it is necessary to go to war, I hope you will give the world an exhibition of American efficiency that will be a lesson for a century or more. It is generally believed throughout Europe that we are so unprepared and that it would take so long to put our resources into action, that our entering would make but little difference.
>
> In the event of war, we should accelerate the manufacture of munitions to such an extent that we could supply not only ourselves but the Allies, and so quickly that the world would be astounded.[3]

---

1. **Herman E. Krooss, ed.,*Documentary History of Banking and Currency in the Unites States* (New York: Chelsea House, 1983), Vol. Ill, pp. 26-27.**
2. **Seymour, p. 434.**
3. ***Ibid., p. 435.***

Congress could not resist the combined pressure of the press and the President. On April 16, 1917, the United States officially declared war on the Axis powers. Eight days later, Congress dutifully passed the War Loan Act which extended $1 billion in credit to the Allies. The first advance of $200 million went to the British the next day and was immediately applied as payment on the debt to Morgan. A few days later, $100 million went to France for the same purpose. But the drain continued. Within three months the British had run up their overdraft with Morgan to $400 million dollars, and the firm presented it to the government for payment. The Treasury, however, was unable to put its hands on that amount of money without jeopardizing its own spendable funds and, at first, refused to pay. The problem was quickly solved, however, through a maneuver described at some length in chapter ten. The Federal Reserve System under Benjamin Strong simply created the needed money through the Mandrake Mechanism. "The Wilson Administration found itself in an extremely awkward position, having to bail out J.P. Morgan," wrote Ferrell, but Benjamin Strong "offered to help [Treasury-Secretary] McAdoo out of the difficulty. Over the following months in 1917-18. the Treasury quietly paid Morgan piecemeal for the overdraft." By the time the war was over, the Treasury had loaned a total of $9,466,000,000 including $2,170,000,000 given after the Armistice.

That was the cash flow they had long awaited. In addition to saving the Morgan loans, even larger profits were to be made from war production. The government had been secretly preparing for war for six months prior to the actual declaration. According to Franklin D. Roosevelt, then Assistant Secretary of the Navy, the Navy Department began extensive purchasing of war supplies in the Fall of 1916. Ferdinand Lundberg adds this perspective:

> By no accident all the strategic government posts, notably those concerned with buying, were reserved for the Wall Street patriots. On the most vital appointments, Wilson consulted with Dodge [President of Rockefeller's National City Bank], who ... recommended the hitherto unknown [Bernard] Baruch, speculator in copper stocks, as chairman of the all-powerful War Industries Board....

1. Ferrell, p. 89,90.

2. Clarence W. Barron, *They Told Barron;* Notes of Clarence Walker Barron, edited by Arthur Pound and Samuel Taylor Moore (New York: Harper and Brothers, 1930), p. 51.

> As head of the War Industries Board, Baruch spent government funds at the rate of $10,000,000,000 annually.... Baruch packed the War Industries Board and its committees with past and future Wall Street manipulators, industrialists, financiers, and their agents ... who fixed prices on a cost-plus basis and, as subsequent investigations revealed, saw to it that costs were grossly padded so as to yield hidden profits....
>
> The American soldiers fighting in the trenches, the people working at home, the entire nation under arms, were fighting, not only to subdue Germany, but to subdue themselves. That there is nothing metaphysical about this interpretation becomes clear when we observe that the total wartime expenditure of the United States government from April 6, 1917, to October 31, 1919, when the last contingent of troops returned from Europe, was $35,413,000,000. Net corporation profits for the period January 1, 1916, to July, 1921, when wartime industrial activity was finally liquidated, were $38,000,000,000, or approximately the amount of the war expenditures. More than two-thirds of these corporation profits were taken by precisely those enterprises which the Pujo Committee had found to be under the control of the "Money Trust."

The banking cartel was able, through the operation of the Federal Reserve System, to *create* the money to give to England and France so they, in turn, could pay back the American banks—exactly as was to be done again in World War II and again in the Big Bailout of the 1980s and '90s. It is true that, in 1917, the recently enacted income tax was useful for raising a sizable amount of revenue to conduct the war and also, as Beardsley Ruml pointed out a few years later, to take purchasing power away from the middle class. But the greatest source of funding came, as it always does in wartime, not from direct taxes, but from the hidden tax called inflation. Between 1915 and 1920, the money supply doubled from $20.6 billion to $39.8 billion.[2] Conversely, during World War I, the purchasing power of the currency fell by almost 50%. That means Americans unknowingly paid to the government approximately one-half of every dollar that existed. And that was in *addition* to their taxes. This massive infusion of money was the product of the Mandrake Mechanism and cost nothing to create. Yet, the banks were able to collect interest on it all. The ancient partnership

---

1. Lundberg, pp. 134,144-45.
2. "Deposits and Currency—Adjusted Deposits of All Banks and Currency Outside Banks, 1892-1941," *Banking and Monetary Statistics, 1914-1942* (Washington, D.C.: Board of Governors of the Federal Reserve System, 1976), p. 34.

between the political and monetary scientists had performed its mission well.

SUMMARY

To finance the early stages of World War I, England and France had borrowed heavily from investors in America and had selected the House of Morgan as sales agent for their bonds. Morgan also acted as their U.S. purchasing agent for war materials, thus profiting from both ends of the cash flow: once when the money was borrowed and again when it was spent. Further profits were derived from production contracts placed with companies within the Morgan orbit. But the war began to go badly for the Allies when Germany's submarines took virtual control of the Atlantic shipping lanes. As England and France moved closer to defeat or a negotiated peace on Germany's terms, it became increasingly difficult to sell their bonds. No bonds meant no purchases, and the Morgan cash flow was threatened. Furthermore, if the previously sold bonds should go into default, as they certainly would in the wake of defeat, the Morgan consortium would suffer gigantic losses.

The only way to save the British Empire, to restore the value of the bonds, and to sustain the Morgan cash flow was for the United States government to provide the money. But, since neutral nations were prohibited from doing that by treaty, America would have to be brought into the war. A secret agreement to that effect was made between British officials and Colonel House, with the concurrence of the President. From that point forward, Wilson began to pressure Congress for a declaration of war. This was done at the very time he was campaigning for reelection on the slogan "He kept us out of war." Meanwhile, Morgan purchased control over major segments of the news media and engineered a nation-wide editorial blitz against Germany, calling for war as an act of American patriotism.

Morgan had created an international shipping cartel, including Germany's merchant fleet, which maintained a near monopoly on the high seas. Only the British Cunard Lines remained aloof. The *Lusitania* was owned by Cunard and operated in competition with Morgan's cartel. The *Lusitania* was built to military specifications and was registered with the British Admiralty as an armed auxiliary cruiser. She carried passengers as a cover to conceal her real mission, which was to bring contraband war materials from the United States. This fact was known to Wilson and others in his administra-

"on, but they did nothing to stop it. When the German embassy tried to publish a warning to American passengers, the State Department intervened and prevented newspapers from printing it. When the *Lusitania* left New York harbor on her final voyage, she was virtually a floating ammunition depot.

The British knew that to draw the United States into the war would mean the difference between defeat and victory, and *anything* that could accomplish that was proper—even the coldly calculated sacrifice of one of her great ships with Englishmen aboard. But the trick was to have *Americans* on board also in order to create the proper emotional climate in the United States. As the *Lusitania* moved into hostile waters, where a German U-boat was known to be operating, First Lord of the Admiralty, Winston Churchill, ordered her destroyer protection to abandon her. This, plus the fact that she had been ordered to travel at reduced speed, made her an easy target. After the impact of one well placed torpedo, a mighty second explosion *from within* ripped her apart, and the ship that many believed could not be sunk, gurgled to the bottom in less than eighteen minutes.

The deed had been done, and it set in motion great waves of revulsion against the Germans. These waves eventually flooded through Washington and swept the United States into war. Within days of the declaration, Congress voted $1 billion in credit for England and France. $200 million was sent to England immediately and was applied to the Morgan account. The vast quantity of money needed to finance the war was created by the Federal Reserve System, which means it was collected from Americans through that hidden tax called inflation. Within just five years, this tax had taken fully one-half of all they had saved. The infinitely higher cost in American blood was added to the bill.

Thus it was that the separate motives of such diverse personalities as Winston Churchill, J.P. Morgan, Colonel House, and Woodrow Wilson all found common cause in bringing America into World War I. Churchill maneuvered for military advantage, Morgan sought the profits of war, House schemed for political power, and Wilson dreamed of a chance to dominate a post-war League of Nations.

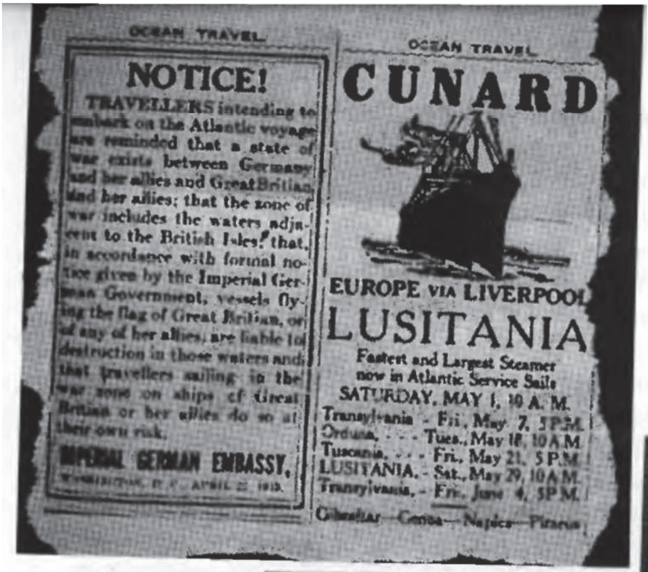

OCEAN TRAVEL.

NOTICE!

TRAVELLERS intending to embark on the Atlantic voyage are reminded that a state of war exists between Germany and her allies and Great Britian and her allies; that the zone of war includes the waters adjacent to the British Isles; that, in accordance with formal notice given by the Imperial German Government, vessels flying the flag of Great Britian, or of any of her allies, are liable to destruction in those waters and that travellers sailing in the war zone on ships of Great Britian or her allies do so at their own risk.

IMPERIAL GERMAN EMBASSY,

WASHINGTON, D. C., APRIL 22, 1915.

OCEAN TRAVEL

CUNARD

EUROPE VIA LIVERPOOL

LUSITANIA

Fastest and Largest Steamer
now in Atlantic Service Sails
SATURDAY, MAY 1, 10 A. M.

Transylvania - Fri., May 7, 5 P.M.
Orduna, - - - Tues., May 18, 10 A.M.
Tuscania, - - - Fri., May 21, 5 P.M.
LUSITANIA, - Sat., May 29, 10 A.M.
Transylvania, - Fri., June 4, 5 P.M.

Gibraltar—Genoa—Naples—Piraeus

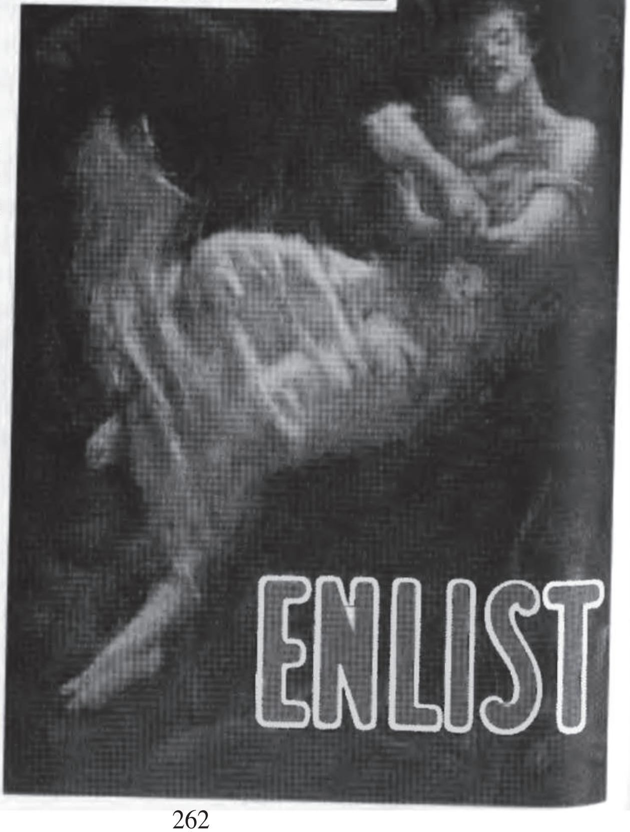

The German Embassy attempted to place ads in 50 newspapers warning that the *Lusitania* was a target of war, but the U.S. government prevented them from being printed except for this one which was run in the *Des Moines Register*. When the ship was sunk off the coast of Ireland with 195 Americans aboard, it became the center of a national campaign to generate emotional support for coming into the war.

Chapter Thirteen

MASQUERADE IN MOSCOW

> *The secret society founded by Cecil Rhodes for the purpose of world dominion; the establishment in America of a branch of that group called the Council on Foreign Relations; the role played by financiers representing both of these groups in financing the Russian revolution; the use of the Red Cross mission in Moscow as a cover for that maneuver.*

One of the greatest myths of contemporary history is that the Bolshevik Revolution in Russia was a popular uprising of the downtrodden masses against the hated ruling class of the Tsars. As we shall see, however, the planning, the leadership, and especially the financing came entirely from outside Russia, mostly from financiers in Germany, Britain, and the United States. Furthermore, we shall see that the Rothschild Formula played a major role in shaping these events.

This amazing story begins with the war between Russia and Japan in 1904. Jacob Schiff, who was head of the New York investment firm of Kuhn, Loeb, and Company, had raised the capital for large war loans to Japan. It was due to this funding that the Japanese were able to launch a stunning attack against the Russians at Port Arthur and, the following year, to virtually decimate the Russian fleet. In 1905, the Mikado awarded Jacob Schiff a medal, the *Second Order of the Treasure of Japan,* in recognition of his important role in that campaign.

During the two years of hostilities, thousands of Russian soldiers and sailors were taken as prisoners. Schiff paid for the printing of one-and-a-half tons of Marxist propaganda and had it delivered to the prison camps. He also sent scores of Russian-speaking revolutionaries, trained in New York, to distribute the pamphlets among the prisoners and to indoctrinate them into rebellion against their own government. When the war was ended, 50,000 officers and enlisted men returned home to become virtual seeds of treason against the Tsar. They were to play a major role a few years later in creating mutiny among the military during the Communist takeover of Russia.

TROTSKY WAS SCHIFF'S AGENT

One of the best known Russian revolutionaries at that time was Leon Trotsky. In January of 1916, Trotsky was expelled from France and came to the United States at the invitation of Schiff. His travel expenses aboard the *Monserrat* were paid by his host. He remained for several months while writing for a Russian socialist paper, the *Novy Mir* (New World), and giving revolutionary speeches at mass meetings in New York City. According to Trotsky himself, on many occasions a chauffeured limousine was placed at the service of his family by a wealthy friend identified as Dr. M. In his book, *My Life,* Trotsky wrote:

> The doctor's wife took my wife and the boys out driving and was very kind to them. But she was a mere mortal, whereas the chauffeur was a magician, a titan, a superman! With the wave of his hand, he made the machine obey his slightest command. To sit beside him was the supreme delight. When they went into a tea-room, the boys would anxiously demand of their mother, "Why doesn't the chauffeur come in?"[1]

It must have been a curious sight to see the family of the great socialist radical, defender of the working class, enemy of capitalism, enjoying the pleasures of tea rooms and chauffeurs, the very symbols of capitalist luxury. In any event, it is now known that almost all of his expenses in New York, including the mass rallies, were paid for by Jacob Schiff.

On March 23,1917, a mass meeting was held at Carnegie Hall to celebrate the abdication of Nicholas II, which meant the overthrow of Tsarist rule in Russia. Thousands of socialists, Marxists, nihilists, and anarchists attended to cheer the event. The following day there was published on page two of the *New York Times,* a telegram from Jacob Schiff which had been read to this audience. He expressed regrets that he could not attend and then described the successful

---

1. Leon Trotsky, My *Life* (New York: Scribner's, 1930), p. 277.

Russian revolution as "...what we had hoped and striven for these long years."

In the February 3,1949, issue of the *New York Journal American,* Schiff's grandson, John, was quoted by columnist Cholly Knickerbocker as saying that his grandfather had given about $20 million for the triumph of Communism in Russia.

When Trotsky returned to Petrograd in May of 1917 to organize the Bolshevik phase of the Russian Revolution, he carried $10,000 for travel expenses, a generously ample fund considering the value of the dollar at that time. The amount is known with certainty because Trotsky was arrested by Canadian and British naval personnel when the ship on which he was travelling, the *S.S. Kristianiafjord,* put in at Halifax. The money in his possession is now a matter of official record. Because Trotsky was a known enemy of the Tsar and because Germany was then at war with Russia, it was assumed that the $10,000 was *German* money given to him in New York. The evidence, however, is that this, too, came from Kuhn, Loeb and Company.

Trotsky was not arrested on a whim. He was recognized as a threat to the best interests of England, Canada's mother country in the British Commonwealth. Russia was an ally of England in the First World War which then was raging in Europe. Anything that would weaken Russia—and that certainly included internal revolution—would be, in effect, to strengthen Germany and weaken England. In New York, on the night before his departure, Trotsky had given a speech in which he said: "I am going back to Russia to overthrow the provisional government and stop the war with Germany."[3] Trotsky, therefore, represented a real threat to England's war effort. He was arrested as a German agent and taken as a prisoner of war.

With this in mind, we can appreciate the great strength of those mysterious forces, both in England and the United States, that intervened on Trotsky's behalf. Immediately, telegrams began to come into Halifax from such divergent sources as an obscure

---

1- "Mayor Calls Pacifists Traitors," ***The New York Times,*** **March 24,1917, p. 2.**

2. See Anthony C. Sutton, Ph.D., ***Wall Street and the Bolshevik Revolution*** **(New Rochelle, New York: Arlington House, 1974), pp. 21-24.**

3. A full report on this meeting had been submitted to the U.S. Military Intelligence. See Senate Document No. 62, 66th Congress, ***Report and Hearings of the Subcommittee on the Judiciary, United States Senate,*** **1919, Vol. II, p. 2680.**

attorney in New York City, from the Canadian Deputy Postmaster-General, and even from a high-ranking British military officer, all inquiring into Trotsky's situation and urging his immediate release. The head of the British Secret Service in America at the time was Sir William Wiseman who, as fate would have it, occupied the apartment directly above the apartment of Edward Mandell House and who had become fast friends with him. House advised Wiseman that President Wilson wished to have Trotsky released, Wiseman advised his government, and the British Admiralty issued orders on April 21st that Trotsky was to be sent on his way. It was a fateful decision that would affect, not only the outcome of war, but the future of the entire world.

SCHIFF WAS NOT ALONE

It would be a mistake to conclude that Jacob Schiff acted alone in this drama. Trotsky could not have gone even as far as Halifax without having been granted an American passport, and this was accomplished by the personal intervention of President Wilson. Professor Anthony Sutton says:

> President Woodrow Wilson was the fairy godmother who provided Trotsky with a passport to return to Russia to "carry forward" the revolution.... At the same time careful State Department bureaucrats, concerned about such revolutionaries entering Russia, were unilaterally attempting to tighten up passport procedures.[2]

And there were others, as well. In 1911, the *St. Louis Dispatch* published a cartoon by a Bolshevik named Robert Minor. Minor was later to be arrested in Tsarist Russia for revolutionary activities and, in fact, was himself bankrolled by famous Wall Street financiers. Since we may safely assume that he knew his topic well, his cartoon is of great historical importance. It portrays Karl Marx, with a book entitled *Socialism* under his arm, standing amid a cheering crowd on Wall Street. Gathered around and greeting him with enthusiastic handshakes are characters in silk hats identified as John D. Rockefeller, J.P. Morgan, John D. Ryan of National City Bank, Morgan partner George W. Perkins, and Teddy Roosevelt, leader of the Progressive Party.

---

[1] **"Why Did We Let Trotsky Go? How Canada Lost an Opportunity to Shorten the War," *MacLeans* magazine, Canada, June, 1919. Also see Martin, pp. 163-64.**

[2] **Sutton, *Revolution,* p. 25.**

What emerges from this sampling of events is a clear pattern of strong support for Bolshevism coming from the highest financial and political power centers in the United States; from men who, supposedly, were "capitalists" and who, according to conventional wisdom, should have been the mortal enemies of socialism and communism.

Nor was this phenomenon confined to the United States. Trotsky, in his book, *My Life,* tells of a British financier who, in 1907, gave him a "large loan" to be repaid after the overthrow of the Tsar. Arsene de Goulevitch, who witnessed the Bolshevik Revolution first hand, has identified both the name of the financier and the amount of the loan. "In private interviews," he said, "I have been told that over 21 million roubles were spent by Lord [Alfred] Milner in financing the Russian Revolution.... The financier just mentioned was by no means alone among the British to support the Russian revolution with large financial donations." Another name specifically mentioned by de Goulevitch was that of Sir George Buchanan, the British Ambassador to Russia at the time.[1]

It was one thing for Americans to undermine Tsarist Russia and, thus, indirectly help Germany in the war, because Americans were not then into it, but for British citizens to do so was tantamount to treason. To understand what higher loyalty compelled these men to betray their battlefield ally and to sacrifice the blood of their own countrymen, we must take a look at the unique organization to which they belonged.

THE SECRET SOCIETY

Lord Alfred Milner was a key figure in organizing a secret society which, at the time of these events, was about sixteen years old. It was dedicated to nothing less than the quiet domination of the world. The conquest of Russia was seen as but the first phase of that plan. Since the organization is still in existence today and continues to make progress toward its goal, it is important to have its history included in this narrative.

One of the most authoritative reference works on the history of this group is *Tragedy and Hope* by Dr. Carroll Quigley. Dr. Quigley was a professor of history at Georgetown University where President Clinton had been one of his students. He was the author of the widely used textbook, *Evolution of Civilization;* he was a member of the editorial board of the monthly periodical, *Current History;* and he was a frequent lecturer and consultant for such groups as the Industrial College of the Armed Forces, the Brookings Institution, the U.S. Naval Weapons Laboratory, the Naval College, the Smithsonian Institute, and the State Department. But Dr. Quigley was no mere academic. He also had been closely associated with many of the family dynasties of the super-rich. He was, by his own boast, an insider with a front row view of the world's money power structure.

---

[1] **See Arsene de Goulevitch, *Czarism and Revolution* (Hawthorne, California: Omni Publications, n.d., rpt. from 1962 French edition), pp. 224,230.**

When Dr. Quigley wrote his scholarly, 1300-page book of dry history, it was not intended for the masses. It was to be read by the intellectual elite, and to that select readership he cautiously exposed one of the best-kept secrets of all time. He also made it clear, however, that he was a friendly apologist for this group and that he supported its goals and purposes. Dr. Quigley said:

> **I know of the operation of this network because I have studied it for twenty years and was permitted for two years, in the 1960s, to examine its papers and secret records. I have no aversion to it or to most of its aims and have, for much of my life, been close to it and to many of its instruments.... In general, my chief difference of opinion is that it wishes to remain unknown.**[1]

As mentioned, Quigley's book was intended for an elite readership composed of scholars and network insiders. But, unexpectedly, it began to be quoted in the journals of the John Birch Society, which correctly had perceived that his work provided a valuable insight to the inner workings of a hidden power structure. That exposure triggered a large demand for the book by people who were *opposed* to the network and curious to see what an insider had to say about it. That was not according to the original plan. What happened next is best described by Quigley, himself. In a personal letter dated December 9,1975, he wrote:

> **Thank you for your praise of** *Tragedy and Hope,* **a book which has brought me headaches as it apparently says something which powerful people do not want known. My publisher stopped selling it in 1968 and told me he would reprint (but in 1971 he told my lawyer that they had destroyed the plates in 1968). The rare-book price went**

---

1. Carroll Quigley, *Tragedy and Hope: A History of the World in Our Time,* (New York: MacMillan, 1966), p. 950.

> up to $135 and parts were reprinted in violation of copyright, but I could do nothing because I believed the publisher, and he would not take action even when a pirate copy of the book appeared. Only when I hired a lawyer in 1974 did I get any answers to my questions....

In another personal letter, Quigley commented further on the duplicity of his publisher:

> They lied to me for six years, telling me that they would reprint when they got 2,000 orders, which could never happen because they told anyone who asked that it was out of print and would not be reprinted. They denied this to me until I sent them Xerox copies of such replies in libraries, at which they told me it was a clerk's error. In other words, they lied to me but prevented me from regaining publication rights.... I am now quite sure that *Tragedy and Hope* was suppressed....

To understand why "powerful people" would want to suppress this book, note carefully what follows. Dr. Quigley describes the goal of this network of world financiers as:

> ... nothing less than to create a world system of financial control in private hands able to dominate the political system of each country and the economy of the world as a whole. This system was to be controlled in a feudalist fashion by the central banks of the world acting in concert, by secret agreements arrived at in frequent private meetings and conferences....

Each central bank, in the hands of men like Montagu Norman of the Bank of England, Benjamin Strong of the New York Federal Reserve Bank, Charles Rist of the Bank of France, and Hjalmar Schacht of the Reichsbank, sought to dominate its government by its ability to control treasury loans, to manipulate foreign exchanges, to influence the level of economic activity in the country, and to influence cooperative politicians by subsequent economic rewards in the business world.

---

1. These letters were first published in the Summer, 1976, issue of *Conspiracy Digest,* published by Peter McAlpine (Alpine Press, Dearborn, Michigan). The originals cannot now be located. However, the author was able to locate the attorney, Mr. Paul Wolff (with the firm of Williams & Connolly in Washington, D.C.) who represented Quigley in his legal action against the publisher. Mr. Wolff cannot vouch for the authenticity of the letters themselves, but has confirmed in phone conversations and later in writing that the essential details are correct. He writes: "It is my recollection that they withheld from me and the Professor for some time the information that they had in fact destroyed 'the plates.'"
2. Quigley, *Tragedy,* p. 324.

That is the information that "powerful people" do not want the common man to know.

Notice that Quigley refers to this group as a "network." That is a precise choice of words, and it is important to an understanding of the forces of international finance. The network to which he refers is *not* the secret society. It is no doubt *directed by* it, and there are society members in key positions within the network, but we can be sure that there are many in the network who have little or no knowledge of hidden control. To explain how this can be possible, let us turn to the origin and growth of the secret society itself.

RUSKIN, RHODES, AND MILNER

In 1870, a wealthy British socialist by the name of John Ruskin was appointed as professor of fine arts at Oxford University in London. He tfught that the state must take control of the means of production and organize them for the good of the community as a whole. He advocated placing control of the state into the hands of a small ruling class, perhaps even a single dictator. He said: "My continual aim has been to show the eternal superiority of some men to others, sometimes even of one man to all others."

This, of course, is the same intellectual appeal of Communism. Lenin taught that the masses could not be trusted to handle their own affairs and that a special group of disciplined intellectuals must assume this role for them. That is the function of the Communist Party, which never comprises more than about three per cent of the population. Even when the charade of free elections is allowed, only members of the Party—or those over whom the KGB has total control—are permitted to run for office. The concept that a ruling party or class is the ideal structure for society is at the heart of all collectivist schemes, regardless of whether they are called Socialism, Communism, Nazism, Fascism, or any other "ism" which may yet be invented to disguise it. It is easy, therefore, for adherents of this elitist mentality to be comfortable in almost any of these collectivist camps, a fact to which Dr. Quigley alluded when he wrote: "This network, which we may identify as the Round Table Groups, has no aversion to cooperating with the Communists, or any other groups, and frequently does so."[2]

---

1. See Kenneth Clark, *Ruskin Today* (New York: Holt, Reinhart & Winston, 1964), p. 267.

2. Quigley, *Tragedy,* p. 950.

Returning to the subject of the origins of this group, however, Dr. Quigley tells us:

> **Ruskin spoke to the Oxford undergraduates as members of the privileged ruling class. He told them that they were the possessors of a magnificent tradition of education, beauty, rule of law, freedom, decency, and self-discipline, but that this tradition could not be saved, and did not deserve to be saved, unless it could be extended to the lower classes in England itself and to the non-English masses throughout the world.**
>
> **Ruskin's message had a sensational impact. His inaugural lecture was copied out in long-hand by one undergraduate, Cecil Rhodes, who kept it with him for thirty years.**

Cecil Rhodes made one of the world's greatest fortunes. With the cooperation of the Bank of England and financiers like Rothschild, he was able to establish a virtual monopoly over the diamond output of South Africa and most of the gold as well. The major portion of this vast income was spent to advance the ruling-class ideas of John Ruskin.

Dr. Quigley explains:

> **The Rhodes Scholarships, established by the terms of Cecil Rhodes' seventh will, are known to everyone. What is not so widely known is that Rhodes in five previous wills left his fortune to form a secret society, which was to devote itself to the preservation and expansion of the British Empire. And what does not seem to be known to anyone is that this secret society was created by Rhodes and his principal trustee, Lord Milner, and continues to exist to this day.... In his book on Rhodes' wills, he [Stead, who was a member of the inner circle] wrote in one place: "Mr. Rhodes was more than the founder of a dynasty. He aspired to be the creator of one of those vast semi-religious, quasi-political associations which, like the Society of Jesus, have played so large a part in the history of the world. To be more strictly accurate, he wished to found an Order as the instrument of the will of the Dynasty.[2]...**
>
> **In this secret society Rhodes was to be leader; Stead, Brett (Lord Esher), and Milner were to form an executive committee; Arthur (Lord) Balfour, (Sir) Harry Johnston, Lord Rothschild, Albert (Lord) Grey, and others were listed as potential members of a "Circle of Initiates;" while there was to be an outer circle known as the**

1- Quigley, *Tragedy,* p. 130.

Carroll Quigley, *The Anglo-American Establishment: From Rhodes to Cliveden* (New York: Books in Focus, 1981), pp. *ix,* 36.

> "Association of Helpers" (later organized by Milner as the Round Table organization).

THE PATTERN OF CONSPIRACY

Here, then, was the classical pattern of political conspiracy. This was the structure that made it possible for Quigley to differentiate between an international "network" and the secret society *within* that network. At the center, there is always a tiny group in complete control, with one man as the undisputed leader. Next is a circle of secondary leadership that, for the most part, is unaware of an inner core. They are led to believe that *they* are the inner-most ring.

In time, as these conspiracies are built from the center out, they form additional rings of organization. Those in the outer echelons usually are idealists with an honest desire to improve the world. They never suspect an inner control for other purposes, and only those few who demonstrate a ruthless capacity for higher leadership are ever allowed to see it.

After the death of Cecil Rhodes, the inner core of his secret society fell under the control of Lord Alfred Milner, Governor-General and High Commissioner of South Africa. As director of a number of public banks and as corporate precursor of England's Midland Bank, he became one of the greatest political and financial powers in the world. Milner recruited into his secret society a group of young men chiefly from Oxford and Toynbee Hall and, according to Quigley:

> Through his influence these men were able to win influential posts in government and international finance and became the dominant influence in British imperial and foreign affairs up to 1939.... In 1909-1913 they organized semi-secret groups, known as Round Table Groups, in the chief British dependencies and the United States....
>
> Money for the widely ramified activities of this organization came ... chiefly from the Rhodes Trust itself, and from wealthy associates such as the Beit brothers, from Sir Abe Bailey, and (after 1915) from the Astor family ... and from foundations and firms associated with the international banking fraternity, especially the Carnegie United Kingdom Trust, and other organizations associated with J.P. Morgan, the Rockefeller and Whitney families, and the associates of Lazard Brothers and of Morgan, Grenfell, and Company....

---

1. Quigley, *Tragedy,* p. 131.

> **At the end of the war of 1914, it became clear that the organization of this system had to be greatly extended. Once again the task was entrusted to Lionel Curtis who established, in England and each dominion, a front organization to the existing local Round Table Group. This front organization, called the Royal Institute of International Affairs, had as its nucleus in each area the existing submerged Round Table Group. In New York it was known as the Council on Foreign Relations, and was a front for J.P. Morgan and Company in association with the very small American Round Table Group.**[1]

The Council on Foreign Relations was a spin-off from the failure of the world's leaders at the end of World War I to embrace the League of Nations as a true world government. It became clear to the master planners that they had been unrealistic in their expectations for rapid acceptance. If their plan were to be carried forward, it would have to be done on the basis of patient gradualism symbolized by the Fabian turtle. Rose Martin says:

> **Colonel House was only one man, where a multitude was needed. He had set the pattern and outlined goals for the future, and he still had a scheme or two in mind. In particular, he foresaw it would be necessary for the Fabians to develop a top level Anglo-American planning group in the field of foreign relations which could secretly influence policy on the one hand and gradually "educate" public opinion on the other....**
>
> **To the ambitious young Fabians, British and American, who had flocked to the peace conference as economists and junior officials, it soon became evident that a New World Order was not about to be produced at Paris.... For them, Colonel House arranged a dinner meeting at the Hotel Majestic on May 19,1919, together with a select group of Fabian-certified Englishmen—notably, Arnold Toynbee, R.H. Tawney and John Maynard Keynes. All were equally disillusioned, for various reasons, by the consequences of the peace. They made a gentlemen's agreement to set up an organization, with branches in England and America, "to facilitate the** *scientific* **study of international questions." As a result two potent and closely related opinion-making bodies were founded.... The English branch was called the Royal Institute of International Affairs. The American branch, first known as the Institute of International Affairs, was reorganized in 1921 as the Council on Foreign Relations.**[2]

1- Quigley, *Tragedy,* pp. 132,951-52.

2- Martin, pp. 174-5.

It is through this front group, called the Council on Foreign Relations, and its influence over the media, tax-exempt foundations, universities, and government agencies that the international financiers have been able to dominate the domestic and foreign policies of the United States ever since.

We shall have more to say about the CFR, but our focal point for now is Great Britain and, in particular, the help given to Communism in Russia by Lord Alfred Milner and his web of secret societies.

ROUND TABLE AGENTS IN RUSSIA

In Russia, prior to and during the revolution, there were many local observers, tourists, and newsmen who reported that British and American agents were everywhere, particularly in Petrograd, providing money for insurrection. One report said, for example, that British agents were seen handing out 25-rouble notes to the men at the Pavlovski regiment just a few hours before it mutinied against its officers and sided with the revolution. The subsequent publication of various memoirs and documents made it clear that this funding was provided by Milner and channeled through Sir George Buchanan who was the British Ambassador to Russia at that time. It was a repeat of the ploy that had worked so well for the cabal many times in the past. Round Table members were once again working *both* sides of the conflict to weaken and topple a target government. Tsar Nicholas had every reason to believe that, since the British were Russia's allies in the war against Germany, British officials would be the last persons on Earth to conspire against him. Yet, the British Ambassador himself represented the hidden group which was financing the regime's downfall.

The Round Table agents from America did not have the advantage of using the diplomatic service as a cover and, therefore, had to be considerably more ingenious. They came, not as diplomats or even as interested businessmen, but disguised as Red Cross officials on a humanitarian mission. The group consisted almost entirely of financiers, lawyers, and accountants from New York banks and investment houses. They simply had overpowered the American Red Cross organization with large contributions and, in

---

1. **See de Goulevitch, p. 230.**

effect, purchased a franchise to operate in its name. Professor Sutton tells us:

> The 1910 [Red Cross] fund-raising campaign for $2 million, for example, was successful only because it was supported by these wealthy residents of New York City. J.P. Morgan himself contributed $100,000.... Henry P. Davison [a Morgan partner] was chairman of the 1910 New York Fund-Raising Committee and later became chairman of the War Council of the American Red Cross.... The Red Cross was unable to cope with the demands of World War I and in effect was taken over by these New York bankers.[1]

For the duration of the war, the Red Cross had been made, nominally, a part of the armed forces and subject to orders from the proper military authorities. It was not clear who these authorities were and, in fact, there were never any orders, but the arrangement made it possible for the participants to receive military commissions and wear the uniform of American army officers. The entire expense of the Red Cross Mission in Russia, including the purchase of uniforms, was paid for by the man who was appointed by President Wilson to become its head, "Colonel" William Boyce Thompson.

Thompson was a classical specimen of the Round Table network. Having begun his career as a speculator in copper mines, he soon moved into the world of high finance. He refinanced the American Woolen Company and the Tobacco Products Company; launched the Cuban Cane Sugar Company; purchased controlling interest in the Pierce Arrow Motor Car Company; organized the Submarine Boat Corporation and the Wright-Martin Aeroplane Company; became a director of the Chicago Rock Island & Pacific Railway, the Magma Arizona Railroad, and the Metropolitan Life Insurance Company; was one of the heaviest stockholders in the Chase National Bank; was the agent for J.P. Morgan's British securities operation; became the first full-time director of the Federal Reserve Bank of New York, the most important bank in the Federal Reserve System; and, of course, contributed a quarter-million dollars to the Red Cross.

When Thompson arrived in Russia, he made it clear that he was not your typical Red Cross representative. According to Hermann Hagedorn, Thompson's biographer:

---

1. Sutton, *Revolution,* p. 72.

> He deliberately created the kind of setting which would be expected of an American magnate: established himself in a suite in the Hotel de l'Europe, bought a French limousine, went dutifully to receptions and teas and evinced an interest in objects of art. Society and the diplomats, noting that here was a man of parts and power, began to flock about him. He was entertained at the embassies, at the houses of Kerensky's ministers. It was discovered that he was a collector, and those with antiques to sell fluttered around him, offering him miniatures, Dresden china, tapestries, even a palace or two.[1]

When Thompson attended the opera, he was given the imperial box. People on the street called him the American Tsar. And it is not surprising that, according to George Kennan, "He was viewed by the Kerensky authorities as the 'real' ambassador of the United States."[2]

It is now a matter of record that Thompson syndicated the purchase on Wall Street of Russian bonds in the amount of ten-million roubles.[3] In addition, he gave over two-million roubles to Aleksandr Kerensky for propaganda purposes inside Russia and, with J.P. Morgan, gave the rouble equivalent of one-million dollars to the Bolsheviks for the spreading of revolutionary propaganda outside of Russia, particularly in Germany and Austria. A photograph of the cablegram from Morgan to Thompson advising that the money had been transferred to the National City Bank branch in Petrograd is included in this book.

AN OBJECT LESSON IN SOUTH AFRICA

At first it may seem incongruous that the Morgan group would provide funding for both Kerensky and Lenin. These men may have both been socialist revolutionaries, but they were miles apart in their plans for the future and, in fact, were bitter competitors for control of the new government. But the tactic of funding *both* sides in a political contest by then had been refined by members of the

---

1. Hermann Hagedorn, *The Magnate: William Boyce Thompson and His Time* (New York: Reynal & Hitchcock, 1935), pp. 192-93.
2. George F. Kennan, *Russia Leaves the War: Soviet-American Relations, 1917-1920* (Princeton, New Jersey: Princeton University Press, 1956), p. 60.
3. Hagedorn, p. 192.
4. Sutton, *Revolution,* pp. 83, 91. It was the agitation made possible by this funding that led to the abortive German Sparticus Revolt of 1918. See "W.B. Thompson, Red Cross Donor, Believes Party Misrepresented," *Washington Post,* Feb. 2, 1918.

Round Table into a fine art. A stunning example of this occurred in South Africa during the outset of Boer War in 1899.

The British and Dutch had been active in the settlement of Southern Africa for decades. The Dutch had developed the provinces of Transvaal and the Orange Free State, while the British had colonized such areas as Rhodesia, Cape Hope, Basutoland, Swaziland, and Bechuanaland. Conflict was inevitable between these two groups of settlers whenever they found themselves in competition for the resources of the same territory, but it was the discovery of gold in the Whitewater area of the Transvaal that provided the motive for war.

Politically, the Transvaal was in the hands of the Boers, who were the descendants of the Dutch settlers. But, after the discovery of gold in that area, the mine fields had been developed primarily by the British and became solidly under their control. Not surprisingly, one of the largest players in that game was Cecil Rhodes who already had monopolized the diamond fields under British control to the South. Historian Henry Pike tells us:

> **With the discovery of gold in the Transvaal, Rhodes' greed became passionate. His hatred of Paul Kruger, the Afrikaner President of the Transvaal, knew no limits. He was bitterly opposed to Kruger's independent Transvaal, and viewed this as the main obstacle to his efforts to sweep all Southern Africa under British rule.**

In 1895, Rhodes set in motion a plan to overthrow Kruger's government by organizing an uprising among the British inhabitants in Johannesburg. The uprising was financed by himself and was to be led by his brother, Frank, and other loyal supporters. This was to be followed by a military invasion of the Transvaal by British troops from Bechuanaland and Rhodesia led by Sir Leander Jameson. The uprising fizzled and ended in Jameson's arrest and public disgrace.

But Rhodes was determined to have the Transvaal, and began immediately to prepare a second, more patient ploy. Through Rhodes' influence, Lord Alfred Milner was appointed as the British High Commissioner of South Africa. In London, Lord Esher—another member of the secret society—became the chief political adviser to King Edward and was in daily contact with him

---

1. Henry R. Pike, Ph.D., *A History of Communism in South Africa* (Germiston, South Africa: Christian Mission International of South Africa, 1985), p. 39.

throughout this period. That took care of the *British* side of this contest. With regard to the *Boers'* side, Professor Quigley tells the amazing story:

> By a process whose details are still obscure, a brilliant young graduate of Cambridge, Jan Smuts, who had been a vigorous supporter of Rhodes and acted as his agent in Kimberly [South Africa's largest diamond mine] as late as 1895 and who was one of the most important members of the Rhodes-Milner group in the period 1908-1950, went to the Transvaal and, by violent anti-British agitation, became state secretary of that country (although a British subject) and chief political adviser to President Kruger; Milner made provocative troop movements on the Boer frontiers in spite of the vigorous protests of his commanding general in South Africa, who had to be removed; and, finally, war was precipitated when Smuts drew up an ultimatum insisting that the British troop movements cease and when this was rejected by Milner.[1]

And so, as a result of careful engineering by Round Table members on *both* sides—one making outrageous demands and the other responding to those demands in pretended indignation—the war finally began with a British invasion in October of 1899. After 2'/*i* years of fierce fighting, the Boers were forced to surrender, and Milner administered the former republic as a militarily occupied territory. Round Table members, known to the public as "Milner's Kindergarten," were placed into all key government posts, and the gold fields were finally secured.

PLACING BETS ON ALL HORSES

On the other side of the world, in New York City, the same tactic of playing both sides against each other was being applied with brilliant precision by Round Table member J.P. Morgan. Professor Quigley tells us:

> To Morgan all political parties were simply organizations to be used, and the firm always was careful to keep a foot in all camps. Morgan himself, Dwight Morrow, and other partners were allied with Republicans; Russell C. Leffingwell was allied with the Democrats; Grayson Murphy was allied with the extreme Right; and Thomas W. Lamont was allied with the Left.[2]

---

1. Quigley, *Tragedy,* pp. 137-38.
2. *Ibid.,p.* 945.

Although it is true that Thomas Lamont was the father of Corliss Lamont, a well-known Communist, and was himself widely regarded as a man of leftist persuasions, it must also be remembered that he felt equally at home among the Fascists and, in fact, served as an unofficial business consultant for Mussolini in the 1920s.[1]

At the same time that Morgan was funding pro-Bolshevik groups, he founded what was probably the most virulent anti-Bolshevik organization ever to exist in America. It was called United Americans and it set about to frighten everyone into believing that a Red mob was at that very moment poised to capture New York City. It issued shocking reports warning about a pending financial collapse, widespread starvation, and a desperate working class being maneuvered into accepting Communist slogans and rhetoric as a last resort. Ironically, the officers of this organization were Allen Walker of the Guarantee Trust Company, which was then acting as the Soviet's fiscal agent in the U.S.; Daniel Willard, president of the Baltimore & Ohio Railway, which was then active in the development of Soviet railways; H.H. Westinghouse of Westinghouse Air Brake Company which was then operating a major plant in Russia; and Otto H. Kahn of Kuhn, Loeb & Company, which was one of the principal financial backers of the fledgling Soviet regime.[2]

Even inside Russia itself, the Round Table was spreading its bets. In addition to the funding, previously mentioned, which was given to the Bolsheviks *and* to their opponents, the Mensheviks, Morgan also financed the military forces of Admiral Kolchak who was fighting *against* the Bolsheviks in Siberia. Not surprisingly, Kolchak also received funding from a consortium of British financiers, including Alfred Milner.

It is commonly stated that the original intent of the Red Cross mission to Moscow was to prevent the Russian government from making a separate peace with Germany which would release German troops to fight against England and France. According to that version of the story—which portrays the actors as patriots

---

1. See John P. Diggins, *Mussolini and Fascism: The View from America* (Princeton, New Jersey: Princeton University Press, 1972).

2. Sutton, *Revolution*, pp. 163-68.

3. *Ibid.*, pp. 102,146,166-67.

merely doing what was best for the war effort—the first goal was to support the Tsar. When the Tsar was overthrown, they supported the Mensheviks because they had pledged to stay in the war. When the Mensheviks were ousted, they continued to support the Bolsheviks in order to gain sufficient influence to convince them not to give aid to Germany. It takes a great deal of gullibility to swallow that line. A far more plausible reading is that the Morgan interests were merely doing what they had always done: placing bets on all horses so that, no matter which one crossed the finish line, the winner would be obligated to them.

BRITISH AGENT OF THE ROUND TABLE

After the Bolsheviks had seized power in Russia, Sir George Buchanan was recalled as the British Ambassador and replaced by a member of Milner's Kindergarten, a young man by the name of Bruce Lockhart. In his book, *British Agent,* Lockhart describes the circumstances of his assignment. Speaking of a meeting with Prime Minister Lloyd George, he wrote:

> I saw that his own mind was made up. He had been greatly impressed, as Lord Milner told me afterwards, by an interview with Colonel Thompson of the American Red Cross, who had just returned from Russia and who had denounced in blunt language the folly of the Allies in not opening up negotiations with the Bolsheviks....
>
> Three days later all my doubts were put at rest. I was to go to Russia as head of a special mission to establish unofficial relations With the Bolsheviks.... I had been selected for this Russian mission not by the Foreign Secretary but by the War Cabinet—actually by Lord Milner and Mr. Lloyd George....
>
> Lord Milner I saw almost daily. Five days before my departure I dined alone with him at Brook's. He was in his most inspiring mood. He talked to me with a charming frankness about the war, about the future of England, about his own career, and about the opportunities of youth.... He was, too, very far from being the Jingo and the Conservative reactionary whom popular opinion at one time represented him to be. On the contrary, many of his views on society were startling modem. He believed in the highly organized state, in which service, efficiency, and hard work were more important than titles or money-bags.[1]

---

[1] R.H. Bruce Lockhart, *British Agent* (New York and London: G.P. Putnam's Sons, 1933), pp. 198-99,204,206-07.

AMERICAN AGENT OF THE ROUND TABLE

When Thompson returned to the United States, the man he selected to replace himself as head of the American Red Cross Mission was his second-in-command, Raymond Robins. Not much is known about Robins except that he was the protege of Col. Edward Mandell House, and he might have remained an obscure player in this drama had it not been for the fact that he became one of the central characters in Bruce Lockhart's book. It is there that we get this inside view:

> Another new acquaintance of these first days in the Bolshevized St. Petersburg was Raymond Robins, the head of the American Red Cross Mission.... He had been a leading figure in Roosevelt's "Bull Moose" campaign for the American Presidency in 1912. Although a rich man himself, he was an anti-capitalist.... Hitherto, his two heroes had been Roosevelt and Cecil Rhodes. Now Lenin had captured his imagination.... Robins was the only man whom Lenin was always willing to see and who ever succeeded in imposing his own personality on the unemotional Bolshevik leader.
>
> In a less official sense Robins had a similar mission to my own. He was the intermediary between the Bolsheviks and the American Government and had set himself the task of persuading President Wilson to recognize the Soviet regime.[1]

What an amazing revelation is contained in those words. First, we learn that Robins was a leader in the team effort that threw the election of 1912 to Woodrow Wilson. Then we learn that he was an anti-capitalist. Third, we discover that an anti-capitalist can hero-worship Cecil Rhodes. Then we see the tremendous power he wielded over Lenin. And finally, we are told that, although he was part of a private group financed by Wall Street bankers, he was in reality the intermediary between the Bolsheviks and the American Government. One will look in vain for a better summary.

The fact that Cecil Rhodes was one of Robin's great heroes has special significance for this story. It was not merely an intellectual infatuation from college days. On the night before he left Russia, Robins dined with Lockhart. Describing the occasion, Lockhart says: "He had been reading Rhodes' life and after dinner he gave us a wonderful exposition of Rhodes' character."[2] Thus, both Lockhart

---

1. **Lockhart, p. 220.**
2. ***Ibid.,* p. 270.**

and Robins were dedicated disciples of Cecil Rhodes and both were undoubtedly part of the international network to which Professor Quigley alluded—possibly even members of the Round Table. Lockhart reported to the British group while Robins reported to the American group, but both were clearly working for identical objectives and doing the work of the unseen hand.

The Bolsheviks were well aware of the power these men represented, and there was no door closed to them. They were allowed to attend meetings of the Central Executive Committee[1], and were consulted regarding important decisions.[2] But perhaps the best way to appraise the extent of the influence these "capitalists" had over the "anti-capitalists" is to let Lockhart tell his own story. In his memoirs, he wrote:

> I returned from our interview to our flat to find an urgent message from Robins requesting me to come to see him at once. I found him in a state of great agitation. He had been in conflict with Saalkind, a nephew of Trotsky and then Assistant Commissar for Foreign Affairs. Saalkind had been rude, and the American, who had a promise from Lenin that, whatever happened, a train would always be ready for him at an hour's notice, was determined to exact an apology or to leave the country. When I arrived, he had just finished telephoning to Lenin. He had delivered his ultimatum, and Lenin had promised to give a reply within ten minutes. I waited, while Robins fumed. Then the telephone rang and Robins picked up the receiver. Lenin had capitulated. Saalkind was dismissed from his post. But he was an old member of the Party. Would Robins have any objection if Lenin sent him as a Bolshevik emissary to Berne? Robins smiled grimly. "Thank you, Mr. Lenin," he said. "As I can't send the son of a bitch to hell, "burn' is the next best thing you can do with him.'[3]

Such was the raw power over the leaders of Communism that was concealed behind the innocent facade of the American Red Cross Mission. And yet, the world—even today—has no inkling of its reality. It has been a carefully guarded secret, and even many of those who were close to it were unable to see it. The assistant to William Thompson in Russia was Cornelius Kelleher. In later years, reflecting on the naivete of Dr. Franklin Billings, who was head of the mission's medical team, Kelleher wrote:

---

1. *Ibid.,p.* 253.
2. U.S. State Dept. Decimal File, 861.00/3449.
3. Lockhart, pp. 225-26.

> **Poor Mr. Billings believed he was in charge of a scientific mission for the relief of Russia.... He was in reality nothing but a mask—the Red Cross complexion of the mission was nothing but a mask.**

The purpose of a mask, of course, is to *conceal*. And so we are led to ask the question, what was *behind* that mask? What were the true motives and goals of the masqueraders?

We shall turn to that subject next.

SUMMARY

The Bolshevik revolution was not a spontaneous uprising of the masses. It was planned, financed, and orchestrated by outsiders. Some of the financing came from Germany which hoped that internal problems would force Russia out of the war against her. But most of the money and leadership came from financiers in England and the United States. It was a perfect example of the Rothschild formula in action.

This group centered mainly around a secret society created by Cecil Rhodes, one of the world's wealthiest men at the time. The purpose of that group was nothing less than world dominion and the establishment of a modern feudalist society controlled by the world's central banks. Headquartered in England, the Rhodes inner-most directorate was called the Round Table. In other countries, there were established subordinate structures called Round-Table Groups. The Round-Table Group in the United States became known as the Council on Foreign Relations. The CFR, which was initially dominated by J.P. Morgan and later by the Rockefellers, is the most powerful group in America today. It is even more powerful than the federal government, because almost all of the key positions in government are held by its members. In other words, it *is* the United States government.

Agents of these two groups cooperated closely in pre-revolutionary Russia and particularly after the Tsar was overthrown. The American contingent in Russia disguised itself as a Red Cross mission allegedly doing humanitarian work. Cashing in on their close friendship with Trotsky and Lenin, they obtained profitable business concessions from the new government which returned their initial investment many times over.

---

1. Kennan, *Russia,* p. 59.

Courtesy of Edward Warded

Above is the "Red Cross Mission" in Moscow shortly after the Bolshevik Revolution. (L-R) J.W. Andrews, Raymond Robins, Allen Wardell, D. Heywood Hardy. Under the pretense of humanitarianism, the Misson's key personnel were Wall Street financiers following their own agenda for acquiring profitable commercial concessions from the new government. They heavily financed all factions of the revolutionary movement to be sure of gaining influence with whatever group should come out on top.

Below is a cablegram from J.P. Morgan to William Boyce Thompson-head of the Red Cross Mission prior to Robins-advising that one million dollars had been transferred to Thompson via the National City Bank. There were many such infusions of "Capitalist" money into the new Communist regime. The process continues to this day.

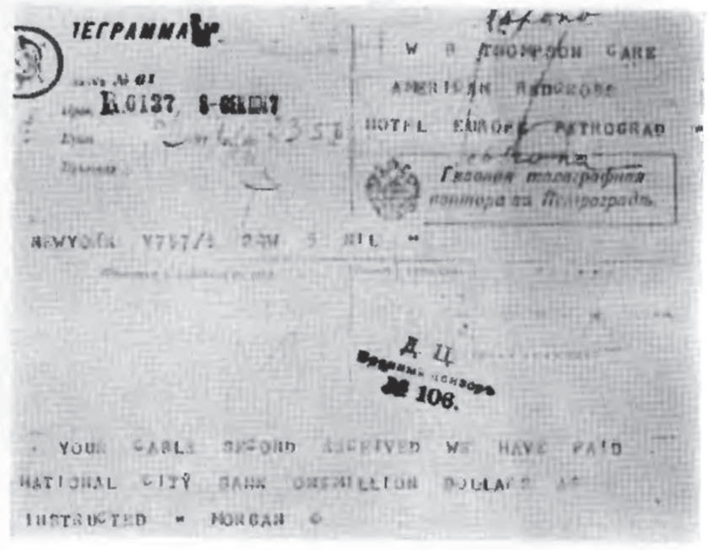

ТЕЛЕГРАММА

R.0137, 8-

W B THOMPSON CARE
AMERICAN REDCROSS
HOTEL EUROPE PETROGRAD

Главная телеграфная
контора въ Петроградѣ

NEWYORK Y757/1 24W 5 NIL

Д. Ц.
Военный цензоръ
№ 106.

YOUR CABLE SECOND RECEIVED WE HAVE PAID NATIONAL CITY BANK ONEMILLION DOLLARS AS INSTRUCTED = MORGAN

Chapter Fourteen

THE BEST ENEMY MONEY CAN BUY

> *The* coup d'etat *in Russia in which the Bolshevik minority seized control from the revolutionary majority; the role played by New York financiers, masquerading as Red Cross officials, in supporting the Bolsheviks; the unbroken record since then of American assistance in building Russia's war-making potential; the emergence of a "credible enemy" in accordance with the Rothschild Formula.*

In the previous section we saw that the Red Cross Mission in revolutionary Russia was, in the words of its own personnel, "nothing but a mask." This leads to the logical question, what were the true motives and goals that were hidden behind that mask.

In later years, it would be explained by the participants themselves that they simply were engaged in a humanitarian effort to keep Russia in the war against Germany and, thus, to help the cause of freedom for England and her allies. For Jacob Schiff and other Jewish financiers in New York, there was the additional explanation that they opposed the Tsar because of his anti-Semitism. These, of course, are admirable motives, and they have been uncritically accepted by mainstream historians ever since. Unfortunately, the official explanations do not square with the facts.

RUSSIA'S TWO REVOLUTIONS

The facts are that there were two revolutions in Russia that year, not one. The first, called the February Revolution, resulted in the establishment of a provisional socialist government under the leadership of Aleksandr Kerensky. It was relatively moderate in its policies and attempted to accommodate all revolutionary factions including the Bolsheviks who were the smallest minority. When the February Revolution occurred, neither Lenin nor Trotsky were even in Russia. Lenin was in Switzerland and didn't arrive until April. Trotsky was still in New York writing propaganda and giving speeches.

The second revolution, called the October Revolution, was the one through which the Bolsheviks came to power. It was, in fact, no revolution at all. It was a *coup d'etat*. The Bolsheviks simply took advantage of the confusion and indecisiveness that existed among the various groups that comprised the new government and caught them by surprise with a lightening strike of force. With a combination of bribes and propaganda, they recruited several regiments of soldiers and sailors and, in the early morning darkness of October 25, methodically took military possession of all government buildings and communication centers. No one was prepared for such audacity, and resistance was almost non-existent. By dawn, without the Russian people even knowing what had happened—much less having any *voice* in that action, their country had been captured by a minority faction and become the world's first so-called "people's republic." Within two days, Kerensky had fled for his life, and all Provisional Government ministers had been arrested. That is how the Communists seized Russia and that is how they held it afterward. Contrary to the Marxian myth, they have never represented the people. They simply have the guns.

The basic facts of this so-called revolution are described by Professor Leonard Schapiro in his authoritative work, *The Russian Revolutions of 1917:*

> **All the evidence suggests that when the crisis came the great majority of units of the Petrograd Garrison did not support the government but simply remained neutral.... The Cossack units rejected its call for support, leaving the government with only a few hundred women soldiers and around two thousand military cadets on its side. The Bolsheviks, on the other hand, could count on several regiments to carry out their orders. Units of the Baltic Fleet also supported them....**
>
> **In the event, the Bolshevik take-over was almost bloodless: in contrast with what had happened in February, nothing could have been less like a city in the throes of revolution than Petrograd on 25 October. Crowds of well-dressed people thronged the streets in the evening. Theaters and restaurants were open, and at the opera, Shaliapin sang in *Boris Godunov.* The principal stations and services**

> had all been taken over by the morning of 25 October without a shot being fired....
>
> A battleship and several cruisers, including the *Aurora,* had reached Petrograd from Kronstadt and were anchored with their guns trained on targets in the city....
>
> The Provisional Government inside the Winter Palace...received an ultimatum calling for surrender of its members, under threat of bombardment of the palace by *Aurora* and by the guns of the Peter and Paul Fortress.... It was only at 9:40 P.M. that the *Aurora* was ordered to fire—and discharged one blank shell. The main effect of this was to accelerate the thinning out of the cadet defenders of the palace, who had already begun to dwindle. The women soldiers, who had formed part of its defense force, also left before the palace was invaded. At 11 P.M. some live shells were fired, and the palace was slightly damaged....
>
> The story of the dramatic storming of the Winter Palace, popular with Soviet historians and in the cinema, is a myth. At around 2 A.M. on 26 October, a small detachment of troops, followed by an unruly crowd and led by two members of the MRC [Military Revolutionary Committee], entered the palace. The remaining officer cadets were, apparently, prepared to resist, but were ordered to surrender by the ministers. In the end, the total casualties were three officer cadets wounded.[1]

POPULAR SUPPORT WAS NOT NECESSARY

Eugene Lyons had been a correspondent for United Press in revolutionary Russia. He began his career as highly sympathetic to the Bolsheviks and their new regime, but six years of actual living inside the new socialist utopia shattered his illusions. In his acclaimed book, *Workers' Paradise Lost,* he summarizes the true meaning of the October Revolution:

> Lenin, Trotsky, and their cohorts did not overthrow the monarchy. They overthrew the first democratic society in Russian history, set up through a truly popular revolution in March, 1917.... They represented the smallest of the Russian radical movements.... But theirs was a movement that scoffed at numbers and frankly mistrusted the multitudes. The workers could be educated for their role *after* the revolution; they would not be led but driven to their terrestrial heaven. Lenin always sneered at the obsession of competing socialist groups with their "mass base." "Give us an organization of

---

[1] Leonard Shapiro, *The Russian Revolutions of1917* (New York: Basic Books, 1984), pp. 135-36.

> professional revolutionaries," he used to say, "and we will turn Russia upside down."...
>
> Even these contingents were pathetically duped, having not the remotest notion of the real purposes for which they were being used. They were striking out, they thought, for the multi-party Soviets, for freedom, equality, and other goals which their organizers regarded as emotional garbage....
>
> On the brink of the dictatorship, Lenin dared to promise that the state will fade away, since "all need of force will vanish." Not at some remote future, but at once: "The proletarian state begins to wither immediately after its triumph, for in a classless society a state is unnecessary and impossible.... Soviet power is a new kind of state, in which there is no bureaucracy, no police, no standing army." Also: "So long as the state exists, there is no freedom. When there is freedom, there will be no state."
>
> Within a few months after they attained power, most of the tsarist practices the Leninists had condemned were revived, usually in more ominous forms: political prisoners, convictions without trial and without the formality of charges, savage persecution of dissenting views, death penalties for more varieties of crime than in any other modern nation. The rest were put into effect in the following years, including the suppression of all other parties, restoration of the internal passport, a state monopoly of the press, along with repressive practices the monarchy had outlived for a century or more.[1]

All of this, of course, is a departure from the main narrative, but it has been necessary to illustrate a fact that has been obscured by the passage of time and the acceptance of myth by mainstream historians. The fact is that Lenin and Trotsky were not sent to Russia to overthrow the anti-Semitic Tsar. Their assignment from Wall Street was to overthrow the *revolution*.

NOTES FROM LINCOLN STEFFENS' DIARY

That this was the prevailing motive of the New York money powers was clearly brought to light in the diary of Lincoln Steffens, one of America's best-known leftist writers of that time. Steffens was on board the *S.S. Kristianiafjord* when Trotsky was taken off and arrested in Halifax. He carefully wrote down the conversations he had with other passengers who also were headed to strife-torn Russia. One of these was Charles Crane, vice president of the Crane Company. Crane was a backer of Woodrow Wilson and former

---

1. Eugene Lyons, *Workers' Paradise Lost* (New York: Funk & Wagnalls, 1967) pp. 13-29.

chairman of the Democratic Party's finance committee. He also had organized the Westinghouse Company in Russia and had made no less than twenty-three prior visits. His son, Richard Crane, was confidential assistant to then Secretary of State, Robert Lansing. It is instructive, therefore, to read Steffens' notes regarding the views of these traveling companions. He wrote: "... all agree that the revolution is in its first phase only, that it must grow. Crane and the Russian Radicals on the ship think we shall be in Petrograd for the re-revolution."

Precisely. Re-revolution was the expectation and the goal, not the elimination of anti-Semitism.

With regard to Thompson's claim that he was merely trying to keep Russia in the war against Germany, here again, the logic of actual events speak against it. Kerensky and the provisional government were *for* the war effort. Yet, the Red Cross masqueraders eventually threw their strongest support to the Bolsheviks who were *against* it. Their excuse was that it was obvious the Bolsheviks would soon control the new government and they were merely looking to the future. They did not like the Bolsheviks, they said, but had to deal with them pragmatically. So they became staunch supporters merely to gain influence with the inevitable victors and, hopefully, to persuade them to *change* their position on the war.

Alas, it didn't work out that way. Influence they had, as we have seen, but the Bolsheviks never wavered in their views. After seizing control in the October *coup d'etat,* they did exactly what they claimed all along they would do. They signed a peace treaty with Germany and confiscated private property. They also began one of the world's greatest bloodbaths to eliminate their opposition. None of this could be blamed on the masqueraders, you understand. It was all the fault of Wilson and the other politicians at home who, by not following Thompson's recommendation to send U.S. tax dollars to the Bolsheviks, forced them into such drastic action. That, at least, is the accepted view.

In reality, a Bolshevik victory at that time was anything but certain, and there was little reason—beyond the support given by the New York financiers themselves—to believe they would become the dominant voice of Russia. But, even if we grant the

---

1. Lincoln Steffens, ***The Letters of Lincoln Steffens*** **(New York: Harcourt, Brace, 1941), p. 396.**

assumption that these men were unusually astute political observers who were truly able to foresee the future course, we are still faced with serious obstacles, not the least of which are the thoughts and words of the masqueraders themselves. For example, in February of 1918, Arthur Bullard was in Russia as head of the Russian branch of the Committee on Public Information, which was the war-propaganda arm of the U.S. government. Bullard was aptly described by historian George Kennan as a "liberal socialist, free lance writer, and private eye of Colonel House."[1] In his official capacity he had many occasions to consult with Raymond Robins and, in a report describing one of these conversations, Bullard wrote:

> **He [Robins] had one or two reservations—in particular, that recognition of the Bolsheviks was long overdue, that it should have been effected immediately, and that had the U.S. so recognized the Bolsheviks, "I believe that we would now be in control of the surplus resources of Russia and have control officers at all points on the frontier."[2]**

WOLVES BEHIND THE MASK

The following year, the U.S. Senate conducted an investigation into the role played by prominent American citizens in supporting the Bolshevik's rise to power. One of the documents entered into the record was an early communique from Robins to Bruce Lockhart. In it Robins said:

> **You will hear it said that I am an agent of Wall Street; that I am the servant of William B. Thompson to get Altai Copper for him; that I have already got 500,000 acres of the best timber land in Russia for myself; that I have already copped off the Trans-Siberian Railway; that they have given me a monopoly of the platinum in Russia; that this explains my working for the soviet.... You will hear that talk. Now, I do not think it is true, Commissioner, but let us assume it is true. Let us assume that I am here to capture Russia for Wall Street and American business men. Let us assume that you are a British wolf and I am an American wolf, and that when this war is over we are going to eat each other up for the Russian market; let us do so in perfectly frank, man fashion, but let us assume at the same time that we are fairly intelligent**

---

[1] **George F. Kennan, *The Decision to Intervene: Soviet-American Relations, 1917-1920* (Princeton, New Jersey: Princeton University Press, 1958), pp. 190, 235.**

[2] **Bullard ms., U.S. State Dept. Decimal File, 316-11-1265, March 19, 1918.**

> **wolves, and that we know that if we do not hunt together in this hour the German wolf will eat us both up.**[1]

Professor Sutton has placed all this into perspective. In the following passage, he is speaking specifically about William Thompson, but his remarks apply with equal force to Robins and all of the other financiers who were part of the Red Cross Mission in Russia.

> **Thompson's motives were primarily financial and commercial. Specifically, Thompson was interested in the Russian market, and how this market could be influenced, diverted, and captured for postwar exploitation by a Wall Street syndicate, or syndicates. Certainly Thompson viewed Germany as an enemy, but less a political enemy than an economic or a commercial enemy. German industry and German banking were the real enemy. To outwit Germany, Thompson was willing to place seed money on any political power vehicle that would achieve his objective. In other words, Thompson was an American imperialist fighting against German imperialism, and this struggle was shrewdly recognized and exploited by Lenin and Trotsky....**
>
> **Thompson was not a Bolshevik; he was not even pro-Bolshevik. Neither was he pro-Kerensky. Nor was he even pro-American.** ***The overriding motivation was the capturing of the postwar Russian market.*** **This was a commercial objective. Ideology could sway revolutionary operators like Kerensky, Trotsky, Lenin et al., but not financiers.**[2]

Did the wolves of the Round Table actually succeed in their goal? Did they, in fact, capture the surplus resources of Russia? The answer to that question will not be found in our history books. It must be tracked down along the trail of subsequent events, and what we must look for is this. If the plan had *not* been successful, we would expect to find a decline of interest on the part of high finance, if not outright hostility. On the other hand, if it *did* succeed. We would expect to see, not only continued support, but some evidence of profit taking by the investors, a payback for their efforts and their risk. With those footprints as our guide, let us turn now to an overview of what has actually happened since the Bolsheviks were assisted to power by the Round Table network.

---

[1] **U.S. Cong., Senate, *Bolshevik Propaganda,* Subcommittee of the Committee on the Judiciary, 65th Cong., 1919, p. 802.**

[2] **Sutton, *Revolution,* pp. 97-98.**

ITEM: After the October Revolution, all the banks in Russia were taken over and "nationalized" by the Bolsheviks—except one: the Petrograd branch of Rockefeller's National City Bank.

ITEM: Heavy industry in Russia was also nationalized— except the Westinghouse plant, which had been established by Charles Crane, one of the dignitaries aboard the *S.S. Kristianiafjord* who had traveled to Russia with Trotsky to witness the re-revolution.

ITEM: In 1922, the Soviets formed their first international bank. It was not owned and run by the state as would be dictated by Communist theory, but was put together by a syndicate of private bankers. These included, not only former Tsarist bankers, but representatives of German, Swedish, and American banks. Most of the foreign capital came from England, including the British government itself.[1] The man appointed as Director of the Foreign Division of the new bank was Max May, Vice President of Morgan's Guaranty Trust Company in New York.

ITEM: In the years immediately following the October Revolution, there was a steady stream of large and lucrative (read non-competitive) contracts issued by the Soviets to British and American businesses which were directly or indirectly run by the Round Table network. The largest of these, for example, was a contract for fifty million pounds of food products to Morris & Company, Chicago meat packers. Helen Swift was married to Edward Morris who was the brother of Harold Swift. Harold Swift had been a "Major" at the Red Cross Mission in Russia.

ITEM: In payment for these contracts and to return the "loans" of the financiers, the Bolsheviks all but drained their country of its gold—which included the Tsarist government's sizable reserve—and shipped it primarily to American and British banks. In 1920 alone, one shipment came to the U.S. through Stockholm valued at 39,000,000 Swedish kroner; three shipments came direct involving 540 boxes of gold valued at 97,200,000 gold roubles; plus at least one other direct shipment bringing the total to about $20 million. (Remember, these are 1920 values!) The arrival of these shipments was coordinated by Jacob Schiff's Kuhn, Loeb & Company and deposited by Morgan's Guaranty Trust.[2]

---

[1] **U.S. State Dept. Decimal File, 861.516/129, August 28,1922.**

[2] **U.S. State Dept., Decimal File, 861.51/815,836,837, October, 1920. Also Sutton, *Revolution,* pp. 159-60,165.**

ITEM: It was at about this time that the Wilson Administration sent 700,000 tons of food to the Soviet Union which, not only saved the regime from certain collapse, but gave Lenin the power to consolidate his control over all of Russia.[1] The U.S. Food Administration, which handled this giant operation, was handsomely profitable for those commercial enterprises that participated. It was headed by Herbert Hoover and directed by Lewis Lichtenstein Strauss, married to Alice Hanauer, daughter of one of the partners of Kuhn, Loeb & Company.

ITEM: U.S., British, and German wolves soon found a bonanza of profit in selling to the new Soviet regime. Standard Oil and General Electric supplied $37 million worth of machinery from 1921 to 1925, and that was just the beginning. Junkers Aircraft in Germany literally created Soviet air power. At least three million slave laborers perished in the icy mines of Siberia digging ore for Britain's Lena Goldfields, Ltd. W. Averell Harriman—a railroad magnate and banker from the United States who later was to become Ambassador to Russia—acquired a twenty-year monopoly over all Soviet manganese production. Armand Hammer—close personal friend of Lenin—made one of the world's greatest fortunes by mining Russian asbestos.

ADDITIONAL BACKGROUND: THE DEAF MUTE BLINDMEN

In those early years, the Bolsheviks were desperate for foreign goods, services, and capital investment. They knew that they would be gouged by their "capitalist" associates, but what of it? It wasn't *their* money. All they cared about was staying in power. And that was not as easy as it may have seemed. Even after the *coup d'etat* in which they seized control of the mechanism of government, they still did not control the country at large. In fact, in 1919, Lenin had almost given up hope of expanding beyond Petrograd and a part of Moscow. Except for Odessa, all of Southern Russia and the Crimea were in the hands of General Deniken who was strongly anti-Communist. Speaking before the Tenth Congress of the Russian Communist Party, Lenin laid it out plainly:

1- See George F. Kennan, *Russia and the West under Lenin and Stalin* (Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1961), p. 180.

> Without the assistance of capital it will be impossible for us to retain proletarian power in an incredibly ruined country in which the peasantry, also ruined, constitutes the overwhelming majority—and, of course, for this assistance capital will squeeze hundreds per cent out of us. This is what we have to understand. Hence, either this type of economic relations or nothing...}

On another occasion Lenin further explained his rationale for accepting Wall Street's terms. He said:

> The Capitalists of the world and their governments, in pursuit of conquest of the Soviet market, will close their eyes to the indicated higher reality and thus will turn into deaf mute blindmen. They will extend credits, which will strengthen for us the Communist Party in their countries; and giving us the materials and technology we lack, they will restore our military industry, indispensable for our future victorious attack on our suppliers. In other words, they will labor for the preparation of their own suicide.[2]

Arthur Bullard, mentioned previously as the representative in Russia of the U.S. Committee on Public Information, apparently understood the Bolshevik strategy well. Even as early as March of 1918, he sent a cablegram to Washington warning that, while it is true we ought to be ready to help any honest government in need, nevertheless, he said, "men or money sent to the present rulers of Russia will be used against Russians at least as much as against Germans.... I strongly advise against giving material help to the present Russian government. Sinister elements in Soviets seem to be gaining control."[3]

Unfortunately, Mr. Bullard was a minor player in this game, and his opinion was filtered by others along the way. This cablegram was sent to his superior, none other than Col. Edward Mandell House, in hopes that it would be relayed to the President. The message did not get through.

A SIDE TRIP THROUGH WORLD WAR II

Returning to the trail of actual events since that time, let us pause briefly to take a short side trip through World War II.

---

1. V.I. Lenin, Report to the Tenth Congress of the Russian Communist Party, March 15,1921. Quoted by Sutton, *Revolution,* p. 157.
2. Quoted by Joseph Finder, *Red Carpet* (New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1983), p. 8.
3. Arthur Bullard papers, Princeton University, cited by Sutton, *Revolution,* p. 46.

Financing and profiting from both sides in a conflict has never been more blatant.

ITEM: From the beginning of Hitler's rise to power, German industry was heavily financed by American and British bankers. Most of the largest U.S. Corporations were knowingly invested *in war industries*. I.G. Farben was the largest of the industrial cartels and was a primary source of political funding for Hitler. It was Farben that staffed and directed Hitler's intelligence section and ran the Nazi slave labor camps as a supplemental source of manpower for Germany's factories. Farben even hired the New York public relations firm of Ivy Lee, who was John D. Rockefeller's PR specialist, to help improve Hitler's public image in America. Lee, incidentally, had also been used to help sell the Soviet regime to the American public in the late 1920s.[1]

ITEM: Much of the capital for the expansion of I.G. Farben came from Wall Street, primarily Rockefeller's National City Bank; Dillon, Read & Company, also a Rockefeller firm; Morgan's Equitable Trust Company; Harris Forbes & Company; and, yes, the predominantly Jewish firm of Kuhn, Loeb & Company.[2]

ITEM: During the Allied bombing raids over Germany, the factories and administrative buildings of I.G. Farben were spared upon instructions from the U.S. War Department. The War Department was liberally staffed with men, who in civilian life, had been associates of the investment firms previously mentioned. For example, the Secretary of War at that time was Robert P. Patterson. James Forrestal was Secretary of the Navy and later became Secretary of Defense. Both men had come from Dillon Read and, in fact, Forrestal had been president of that firm.

ITEM: During World War II, under the Lend-Lease program, the United States sent to the Soviets more than $11 billion in aid, including 14,000 aircraft, nearly half a million tanks and other military vehicles, more than 400 combat ships, and even half of the entire U.S. supply of uranium which then was critically needed for the development of the atomic bomb. But fully one-third of all the Lend-Lease shipments during this period comprised industrial equipment and supplies to be used for the development of the

---

1- Anthony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler* (Seal Beach, California: '76 Press, 1976),. 15-18,33-43,67-97,99-113. Also *Revolution,* p. 174.

2. Sutton, *Hitler,* pp. 23-61.

Russian economy *after* the war. And when the war did end, the Lend-Lease program continued to flow into the Soviet Union for over a year. As late as the end of 1946, Russia was still receiving twenty-year credit terms at $2^{3}/s$ per cent interest, a far lower rate than returning GIs could obtain.[1]

THE TRANSFUSION MECHANISM

With the termination of the Lend-Lease program, it was necessary to invent new mechanisms for the support of Soviet Russia and her satellites. One of these was the sale of much-needed commodities at prices below the world market and, in fact, below the prices that Americans themselves had to pay for the same items. This meant, of course—as it did in the case of Lend Lease—that the American taxpayer had to make up the difference. The Soviets were not even required to have the money to buy these goods. American financial institutions, the federal government, and international agencies which are largely *funded* by the federal government, such as the International Monetary Fund and the World Bank—*lent* the money to them. Furthermore, the interest rates on these loans also are below the market requiring still additional subsidy by American citizens. And that is not all. Almost all of these loans have been guaranteed by the United States government, which means that if—no, make that *when*—these countries default in their payments, the gullible American public is once again called upon to make them good. In other words, the new mechanism, innocently and deceptively referred to as "trade," is little more than a thinly disguised means by which members of the Round Table who direct our national policies have bled *billions* of dollars from American citizens for an ongoing economic transfusion into the Soviet bloc—and continue to do so now that the word Soviet has been changed to the less offensive *Democratic Socialism*. This enables those regimes to enter into contracts with American businessmen to provide essential services. And the circle is complete: *From the American taxpayer to the American government to the "socialist" regime to the American businessman and, ultimately, to the American financier who funded the project and provided the political influence to make it all possible.*

---

1. Anthony C. Sutton, *National Suicide: Military Aid to the Soviet Union* (New Rochelle. New York: Arlington House, 1973), p. 24.

This is the key to understanding the transfusion mechanism. Many Americans have looked at this process and have jumped to the conclusion that there must be a nest of Communist agents within our government. In an exam on reality politics, they would receive half credit for that answer. Yes, there undoubtedly have been, and continue to be, Red agents and sympathizers burrowed deep into our government woodwork, and they are all too happy to help the process along. But the main motive force has always come from the non-Communist, non-Democratic Socialist, non-American, *non-anything* members of the Round Table network who, as Lenin said, in the pursuit of profit are laboring for the preparation of their own suicide.

These men are incapable of genuine patriotism. They think of themselves, not as citizens of any particular country, but as citizens of the world. They can do business just as easily with bloodthirsty dictatorships as with any other government—especially since they are assured by the transfer mechanism that the American taxpayer is going to make good on the deal.

When David Rockefeller was asked about the propriety of providing funding for Marxist and Communist countries which are openly hostile to the United States, he responded: "I don't think an international bank such as ours ought to try to set itself as a judge about what kind of government a country wishes to have."

Wishes to have? He was talking about Angola where the Marxist dictatorship was *forced* upon the people with Cuban soldiers and Soviet weapons!

Thomas Theobald, Vice President of Citicorp, was asked in 1981 about his bank's loans to Poland. Was he embarrassed by making loans to a Communist country, especially following the regime's brutal repression of free-trade unions? Not at all. "Who knows which political system works?" he replied. "The only test we care about is, can they pay their bills." What he meant, of course, was can the *American taxpayer* pay Poland's bills.

ITEM: The following item, taken directly from the *Los Angeles Times* just a few months after Theobald's statement, tells the story:

> **WASHINGTON—For months, the Reagan Administration has been using federal funds to repay Polish loans owed to U.S. banks, and the bill for this fiscal year may amount to $400 million, Deputy Secretary of Agriculture Richard E. Lyng said Monday.... "They (the Polish authorities) have not been making payments for at least the last**

> half of the last year," Lyng said. "When they don't make a payment, the U.S. Department of Agriculture makes a payment."...
>
> Lyng said the U.S. Government paid $60 million to $70 million a month on guaranteed Polish loans in October, November, December, and January—and "we will continue to pay them."[1]

This, remember, was precisely at the time the Polish government had declared martial law and was using military force to crush workers' demonstrations for political reform. The Polish default on this $1.6 billion loan was by no means an isolated event. Communist Rumania and a multitude of Latin American countries were soon to follow.

The hard fact is that American taxpayers unknowingly have been making monthly bank payments on behalf of Communist, socialist, and so-called Third-World countries for many years. And, with the more recent staging of apparent reform within the former Soviet bloc, Congress has tripped all over itself to greatly accelerate that trend.

Americans, of course, *want* to believe that the Evil Empire is crumbling, and the Soviets-turned-Democrats play directly to that desire. Since the end of World War II, their primary objectives have been (1) to disarm us and (2) to get our money. The facade of *Perestroika* and *Glasnost* has been merely a ploy to accomplish both objectives at once. All they have had to do is get rid of a few of the old hard-liners, replace them with less well-known personalities who are essentially the same *(all* of the new leaders come from the ranks of the *old* leadership), change their labels from "Communists" to "Social Democrats," and then sit back while we happily tear down our military defenses and rush billions of dollars to their failing economies. There undoubtedly will be some progress allowed in the area of free speech, but the military and security organizations continue in full readiness. The iron fist beneath the velvet glove remains ready to strike when the time comes that the facade is no longer necessary.

Even if the entire ploy were genuine, there is no reason to believe that these Social Democracies will ever become better investment risks. The primary thing that has held them back economically in the past is their socialist system, and that most definitely will not be changed. All of the new "anti-Communist Social Democrats" have pledged their loyalty to the principles of Marx and have said in plain language that they will use our money to *develop,* not abandon socialism. These countries will continue to be unproductive and will continue to be unable to pay their loans. The American taxpayers will continue to be forced by the Cabal to pay the bill.

---

[1] "U.S. Repaying Loans Owed by Poland to American Banks," by William J. Eaton, Los *Angeles Times,* February 2,1982.

ITEM: Before the Bolshevik *coup d'etat,* Russia was one of the most productive agricultural nations in the world. The great wheat fields in Ukraine justly earned her the title of the Bread Basket of Europe. But when the people's utopia arrived, agriculture came to a standstill, and famine stalked the land. Even after Stalin, when the regime is said to have adopted more humane and productive policies, Russia *never* produced enough food for itself. A nation that cannot feed its citizens cannot develop its industry and it certainly cannot build a potent military force. It is not surprising, therefore, that for decades, the United States has annually "sold" tens of millions of tons of wheat—and other food stuffs—to Russia. The quote marks are to emphasize the underlying transfusion mechanism previously described.

ITEM: The American government-industrial complex provided the Soviets with the money, technology, and the actual construction of two of the world's largest and most modern truck plants. The Kama River plant and the Zil plant produce over 150,000 heavy-duty trucks per year—including armored personnel carriers and missile launchers—plus 250,000 diesel engines, many of which are used to power Soviet tanks. Forty-five per cent of the cost of this project came from the U.S. Export-Import Bank, an agency of the federal government, and an equal amount from David Rockefeller's Chase Manhattan Bank. The Soviets put up only ten per cent. The loan, of course, was taxpayer-guaranteed by the U.S. Export-Import Bank which, at the time, was under the direction of William Casey. Casey later was appointed as head of the C.I.A. to protect America from global Communism.[1] (Are you beginning to get the picture?)

ITEM: Almost every important facet of Eastern-Bloc heavy industry could well be stamped "Made in the U.S.A." With the

---

1- "U.S. Builds Soviet War Machine," ***Industrial Research & Development,*** **July, 1980, Pp. 51-54.**

specific approval of each successive president, we have provided the latest oil-drilling equipment, chemical processing plants, air-traffic radar systems, equipment to produce precision bearings, large-craft helicopter engines, laser technology, highly advanced computer systems, and nuclear power plants. We have trained hundreds of their technicians in American institutions and factories and have provided their astronauts with the space suits developed by NASA. We have even trained their pilots at U.S. Air Force bases and paid for their military officers to attend our War College. All of this has been used by the Russian government—as Lenin predicted it would—to build their military industry in preparation for an attack on their suppliers. The great pretense of crumbling Communism, has not altered that strategy. It may even be the implementation of it.

ITEM: When Boris Yeltsin seized control of the former Soviet government, one of his first official acts was to decree that foreign businesses had the right to take their profits out of the country. From a purely business perspective, that was a sound move because it would provide incentive for foreign investment. But there was more to it than that. Recall from a previous chapter that the lion's share of that investment was to be funded by American taxpayers in the form of direct aid, bank-loan bailouts, and government insurance through the Overseas Private Investment Corporation. Jane Ingraham provides the details:

> During 1992 Yeltsin wheeled and dealed with Royal Dutch/Shell, British Petroleum, Amoco, Texaco, and Exxon. The Chevron joint venture to develop the Tengiz oil field was signed. McDermott International, Marathon Oil, and Mitsui signed a contract with the Russian government to develop oil and natural gas off Sakhalin Island. Chevron and Oman formed a consortium to build a huge pipeline to carry crude oil from Kazakhstan to the Black Sea, Mediterranean, and Persian Gulf. Occidental Petroleum signed a joint venture with Russia to modernize two oil fields in Siberia.... Newmont mining signed a joint venture to extract gold in Uzbekistan. Merrill Lynch's chairman, William Schreyer (CFR), signed up as financial adviser to "aid in privatizing" the Ukrainian State Property Fund. AT&T CEO Robert Allen (CFR, TC) signed a huge contract to supply switching systems for all of Kazakhstan....

1. Trilateral Commission.

> US West joined with the Hungarian government to own and operate a national cellular telephone system; GM Vice President Marina Whitman (CFR, TC) joined the governments of Hungary and Yugoslavia to make cars; GE CEO John Welch (CFR) and vice chairman of the board, Lawrence Bossidy (TC), bought a majority stake in Hungary's lighting industry; Ralston-Purina, Dow Chemical, Eastman Kodak, SC Johnson & Son, Xerox, American Express, Procter & Gamble, Woolworth, Philip Morris, Ford, Compaq Computer—hardly a single American brand name was missing.

ITEM: In February of 1996, the Clinton Administration made a $1 billion loan of US taxpayers' money to Russia's state-controlled Aeroflot company so it could more effectively compete with American companies such as Boeing in the building of jumbo jets. By the end of that year, the former Soviet Bloc countries had received transfusions from the World Bank of over $3 billion.

ITEM: Now the action has spread to China. American banks and businessmen—with taxpayers standing by with guarantees—have provided power-generating equipment, modern steel mills, and military hardware including artillery shells, anti-submarine torpedoes, and high-tech electronic gear to update Russian-made jet fighters. All of this is explained as a means of weaning the Red Chinese away from mother Russia and encouraging them to move closer to free-enterprise capitalism. Yet, in 1985, at the height of the frenzy over building trade bridges to China, the regime signed a $14 billion trade pact with Russia and, in 1986, sent a $20 million interest-free loan to the Communist Sandinistas in Nicaragua. Even after the 1989 Tiananmen Square massacre in Beijing, when U.S. officials were publicly condemning China for human-rights violations, business quietly continued as usual. "The United States cannot condone the violent attacks and cannot ignore the consequence for our relationship with China," said President Bush. Yet, within only a few weeks of the bloodshed, and at the very time that student leaders were being executed, the Administration approved a $200 million, low-interest loan for delivery of four of Boeing's newest jumbo-jet aircraft. In 1993, forty-seven more jetliners were sold with a projected sale of 800 more over the next fifteen years. Amoco is spending $1.5 billion to develop oil fields in the China Sea. A joint venture between the Chinese government and Chrysler

---

1. "The Payoff," by Jane H. Ingraham, *The New American,* June 28,1993, pp. 25-6.

is building military jeeps. A similar joint project is being used to upgrade their F-8 fighter planes. Three communications satellites were cleared for delivery. AT&T contracted a $30 million cellular communications network. Even the President's brother, Prescott Bush, resumed his plan to set up a satellite-linked computer network and to build a golf course near Shanghai.

China's interest in military technology is revealing. In addition to the advanced hardware purchased from the United States, the Chinese have bought MIG-31 and SU-27 jet fighters from Russia and an aircraft carrier constructed in Ukraine. In May of 1992, China set off its biggest underground nuclear blast. In 1997, the purchase list was extended to include self-propelled gun-mortar systems and Russia's most advanced diesel-electric submarines.

Although it is known that China maintains a slave-labor work force in excess of a million people—they call them "convicts"—and although the Tariff Act of 1930 prohibits the United States from importing any goods made even in part by convicts or other forced labor, every administration starting with Nixon has renewed the "most-favored-nation" trade status for China.

How is China expected to pay for all this "trade"? Very simple. By 1996, China had become the largest single recipient of guaranteed loans and subsidies from the World Bank.

ITEM: In *addition* to these decades of global trade, credit, and taxpayer guarantees, the United States government has transferred tens of billions of dollars in *direct foreign-aid grants* with no pretense at all regarding expectation of repayment.

The trail leads to Wall Street, and the tracks are *fresh*. The Round Table network did succeed in exploiting the markets of Eastern Europe and continues to do so today. The cast of characters has changed, but the play remains the same. In the beginning, the Council on Foreign Relations was dominated by J.P. Morgan. It is still controlled by international financiers. The Morgan group gradually has been replaced by the Rockefeller consortium, and the roll call of participating businesses now reads like the Fortune 500. The operation no longer pretends to be a Red Cross mission; it now masquerades under the cover of "East-West Trade."

Politicians are fond of talking about the necessity of preserving world peace, and trade, we are told, is one of the best ways to do it. The implication is that this *is* a time of peace. In truth, we live in one of the most war-torn eras the world has ever seen. No continent today, except Antarctica, is free from war. There are from 25 to 40 military struggles going on somewhere every day of the year. There have been more than 150 armed conflicts since the end of World War II with the death count already in excess of 20 million and rising.[1] We cannot help noticing that this *also* has been a period of rising government debt and the global creation of fiat money.

THE NEW ALCHEMY

The alchemists of ancient times vainly sought the philosophers' stone which they believed would turn lead into gold. Is it possible that such a stone actually has been found? Can it be that the money alchemists of our own time have learned how to transmute war into debt, and debt into war, and *both* into gold for themselves?

In a previous section, we theorized a strategy, dubbed the Rothschild Formula, in which the world's money cabal deliberately encourages war as a means of stimulating the profitable production of armaments and of keeping nations perpetually in debt. This is not profit seeking, it is *genocide*. It is not a trivial matter, therefore, to inquire into the possibility that our elected and non-elected leaders are, in fact, implementing the Rothschild Formula today.

ITEM: In his address to the graduating class at Annapolis in 1983, Secretary of the Navy, John Lehman, said: "Within weeks, many of you will be looking across just hundreds of feet of water at some of the most modern technology ever invented in America. Unfortunately, it is on Soviet ships."

As Professor Sutton observed in his book, *The Best Enemy Money Can Buy,* the guns, the ammunition, the weapons, and the transportation systems that killed Americans in Korea and Vietnam came from the American-subsidized economy of the Soviet Union. The trucks that carried these weapons down the Ho Chi Minh Trail were manufactured in American-built plants. The ships that carried the supplies to Sihanoukville and Haiphong and later to Angola and Nicaragua came from NATO allies and used propulsion systems that our State Department could have kept out of Soviet hands. Sutton concludes: "The technical capability to wage the

---

[1] These figures are taken from United Nations publication E/CN.5/1985/Rev.l, *1985 Report on the World Social Situation* (New York: United Nations, 1985), p. 14. The January 1993 revision of that document does not give cumulative figures but shows that the number of conflicts has been accelerating. So the current numbers, whatever they may be, are even worse.

Korean and Vietnamese wars originated *on both sides* in Western, mainly American, technology, and the political illusion of "peaceful trade" promoted by the deaf mute blindmen was the carrier for this war-making technology."[1]

ITEM: That leads us to the more recent wars in the Middle East and the rise of "Islamic Fundamentalism" Iran, Iraq, Syria, Algeria, the PLO, the Muslim Brotherhood, and similar anti-American groupings have all received weapons, funding, and clandestine support from the U.S. government. In the Gulf War, every effort was made to insure that Hussein's regime was contained but not destroyed (shades of the Korean and Vietnam wars). Most of his bacterial-weapons factories were spared. After the cease fire, he was allowed to keep his fleet of helicopter gunships, which he promptly used to put down a large-scale internal revolt.

The big pill to swallow is that Saddam Hussein has been an asset to the global planners in the West, and they have done everything possible to keep him in power. This strategy has lately become so obvious that there is no longer any serious attempt to conceal it. The task now is how to explain it to the gullible public so as to make it sound like a good idea.

As mentioned previously, the think-tank and talent pool for the implementation of this strategy has been the Council on Foreign Relations. In 1996, the Managing Editor of the CFR's monthly journal, *Foreign Affairs,* was Fareed Zakaria, who offered the following rationalization:

> **Yes, it's tempting to get rid of Saddam. But his bad behavior actually serves America's purposes in the region.... If Saddam Hussein did not exist, we would have to invent him.... The end of Saddam Hussein would be the end of the anti-Saddam coalition. Nothing destroys an alliance like the disappearance of the enemy.... Mamtaining a long-term American presence in the gulf would be difficult in the absence of a regional threat.**[2]

That is about as clear a statement of the Rothschild Formula as one is apt to find. Yet, many people cannot believe it is real, even Congressmen. For example, Representative James Traficant from Ohio, speaking before the House on April 29,1997, exclaimed:

---

1. **Anthony Sutton, *The Best Enemy Money Can Buy* (Billings, Montana: Liberty House Press, 1986), p. 191.**
2. **"Thank Goodness for a Villain," *Newsweek,* Sept. 16,1996, p. 43.**

> **America gives billions to Russia. With American cash, Russia builds missiles. Russia then sells those missiles to China. And China, who gets about $45 billion in trade giveaways from Uncle Sam, then sells those Russian-made missiles to Iran.**
>
> **Now Iran, with those Russian-made missiles sold to them by China, threatens the Mideast. So Uncle Sam, who is concerned about about Iran threatening the Mideast because of those Russian-made missiles sold to them by China that we financed by American cash sends more troops and sends more dollars.... Mr. Speaker, this is not foreign policy. This is foreign stupidity.**[1]

Traficant is on target with his analysis of the problem, but he missed the bull's eye regarding the cause. American leaders are *not* stupid. They merely are implementing the Rothschild Formula. To justify world government, it is necessary to have wars and the threat of wars. Wars require enemies with frightful weapons. Saddam Hussein is one of the best enemies money can buy.

If it is true that Western leaders are deliberately funding their own enemies, we must assume they have considered Lenin's prediction that, by so doing, they are preparing their own suicide—ours, also, by the way. We must also conclude that they are confident of avoiding that destiny. Whether they are right or wrong is not the issue here. The point is they *believe* they are correct and, further, they are building a world order which they are confident of being able to control. How they plan to bring that to pass is the subject of a later section, but perpetual war is an important part of it. Unless we are able to break the grip of these strategists, the Rothschild Formula will continue to play a major role in our future.

FIFTH REASON TO ABOLISH THE SYSTEM

There are few historians who would challenge the fact that the funding of World War I, World War II, the Korean War, and the Vietnam War was accomplished by the Mandrake Mechanism through the Federal Reserve System. An overview of all wars since the establishment of the Bank of England in 1694 suggests that most of them would have been greatly reduced in severity, or perhaps not even fought at all, without fiat money. It is the ability of governments to acquire money without direct taxation that makes modern warfare possible, and a central bank has become the preferred method of accomplishing that.

1- *Congressional Record,* April 29,1997.

One can argue the necessity, or at least the inevitability, of fiat money in time of war as a means of raw survival. That is the primal instinct of both individuals and governments, all other considerations aside. We shall leave that for the philosophers. But there can be no debate over the fact that fiat money *in time of peace* has no such justification. Furthermore, the ability of governments and banking institutions to use fiat money to fund the wars of *other* nations is a powerful temptation for them to become embroiled in those wars for personal profit, political advancement, or other reasons which fall far short of a moral justification for bloodshed.

The Federal Reserve System has always served that function. The on-going strategy of building up the military capabilities of America's potential enemies leaves us no reason to believe we have seen the last of war. Therefore, it is not an exaggeration to say that *the Federal Reserve System encourages war*. There can be no better reason for the Creature to be put to sleep.

SUMMARY

The Bolshevik Revolution was a *coup d'etat* in which a radical minority captured the Russian government from the moderate revolutionary majority. They accomplished this through deception, organization, discipline, and surprise. The Red Cross Mission of New York financiers threw support to the Bolsheviks and, in return, received economic rewards in the form of rights to Russia's natural resources plus contracts for construction and supplies. The continued participation in the economic development of Russia and Eastern Europe since that time indicates that this relationship has survived to the present day. These financiers are not pro-Communist nor pro-anything else. Their motivation is profit and power. They are now working to bring both Russia and the United States into a world government which they expect to control. War and threats of war are tools to prod the masses toward the acceptance of that goal. It is essential, therefore, that the United States and the industrialized nations of the world have credible enemies. As these words are being written, Russia is wearing the mask of peace and cooperation. But we have seen that before. We may yet see a return of the Evil Empire when the timing is right. U.S. government and megabank funding, first of Russian, and now of Chinese and Middle-East military capabilities, cannot be understood without this insight.

Section IV

A TALE OF THREE BANKS

It has been said that those who are ignorant of history are doomed to repeat its mistakes. It may come as a surprise to learn that the Federal Reserve System is America's fourth central bank, not its first. We have been through all this before and, each time, the result has been the same. Interested in what happened? Then let's set the coordinates of our time machine to the colony of Massachusetts and the year 1690. To activate, turn the page.

Chapter Fifteen

THE LOST TREASURE MAP

The bitter experience of the American colonies with fiat money; the resolve of the founding fathers to prohibit the new nation from resorting to paper money without backing; the drafting of the Constitution to that end; the creation of a true American dollar; the prosperity that followed.

In the golden days of radio, on the Edgar Bergen Show, the ventriloquist would ask his dummy, Mortimer Snerd, "How can you be so stupid?" And the answer was always the same. After a moment of deep thought on the part of Mortimer, he would drawl his reply, "Well, it ain't easy!"

When we look at the monetary chaos around us today—the evaporating value of the dollar and the collapsing financial institutions—we are compelled to ask: How did we get into this fix? And, unfortunately, Mortimer's response would be quite appropriate.

To find out how we got to where we are, it will be necessary to know where we started, and a good place to begin that inquiry is with the Constitution of the United States. Article I, Sections 8 and 10 say:

> **Congress shall have the power —**
>
> **To borrow money ... to coin money, regulate the value thereof, and of foreign coin, and fix the standard of weights and measures;... [and] to provide for the punishment of counterfeiting....**
>
> **No state shall ... coin money; emit bills of credit; [or] make anything but gold and silver coin a tender in payment of debts.**

The delegates were precise in their use of these words. Congress was given the power to "coin money," not to print it. Thomas M. Cooley's *Principles of Constitutional Law* explains that 'to coin money is to stamp pieces of metal for use as a medium of exchange in commerce according to fixed standards of value."

What was *prohibited* was to "emit bills of credit" which, according to the speeches and writings of those who drafted the document, meant the printing of paper IOUs which were intended to be circulated as money—in other words, the printing of fiat money not backed by gold or silver.

At first, it would seem that nothing could be more clear. Yet, these two simple clauses have become the basis for literally thousands of pages of conflicting interpretation. The crux of the problem is that, while the Constitution clearly prohibits the *states* from issuing fiat money, it does not specifically prevent the *federal* government from doing so. That was truly an unfortunate oversight on the part of the document's framers, but they probably never dreamed in their wildest nightmares that their descendants "could be so stupid" as to not understand their intent.

Furthermore, "it ain't easy" to *miss* their intent. All one has to do is look at the monetary history that led up to the Constitutional Convention and to read the published letters and debates of the men who affixed their signatures to that founding document.

As one reads through the debates on the floor of the convention, one is struck by the passion that these delegates held on the subject of money. Every one of them could remember from his personal experience the utter chaos in the colonies caused by the issuance of fiat money. They spoke out against it in no uncertain terms, and they were adamant that it should never be tolerated again in America—at either the state *or* federal level.

PAPER MONEY IN THE COLONIES

The first colonial experience with fiat money was in the period from 1690 to 1764. Massachusetts was the first to use it as a means of financing its military raids against the French colony in Quebec. The other colonies were quick to follow suit and, within a few years, were engaging in a virtual orgy of printing "bills of credit." There was no central bank involved. The process was simple and direct, as was the reasoning behind it. As one colonial legislator explained it:

> **Do you think, gentlemen, that I will consent to load my constituents with taxes when we can send to our printer and get a wagon load of money, one quire of which will pay for the whole?**

---

1. See William M. Gouge, *A Short History of Paper Money and Banking in the United States* (Philadelphia: T.W. Ustick, 1833), Part II, p. 27.

The consequences of this enlightened statesmanship were classic. Prices skyrocketed, legal tender laws were enacted to *force* the colonists to accept the worthless paper, and the common man endured great personal losses and hardship. By the late 1750s, Connecticut had price inflated by 800%, the Carolinas had inflated 900%, Massachusetts 1000%, Rhode Island **23007O.**[1]

The situation was so out of hand that, beginning in 1751, the British Parliament stepped in and, in one of those rare instances where interference from the mother country actually benefited the colonies, it forced them to cease the production of fiat money. Henceforth, the Bank of England would be the only source.

What followed was unforeseen by the promoters of fiat money. Amid great gloom about "insufficient money," a miracle boom of prosperity occurred. The forced use of fiat money had compelled everyone to hoard their *real* money and use the worthless paper instead. Now that the paper was in disgrace, the colonists began to use their English and French and Dutch gold coins once again, prices rapidly adjusted to reality, and commerce returned to a solid footing. It remained so even during the economic strain of the Seven-Years War (1756-1763) and during the period immediately prior to the Revolution. Here was a perfect example of how an economic system in distress can recover if government does not interfere with the healing process.[2]

WARTIME INFLATION

But all of this came to a halt with the onset of colonial rebellion. Not only did open hostilities throw England deeper into the cogs and wheels of the central-bank mechanism, it also was the compelling motive for the colonies to return to their printing presses. The following figures speak eloquently for themselves:

- At the beginning of the war in 1775, the total money supply for the federated colonies stood at $12 million.
- In June of that year, the Continental Congress issued another $2 million. Before the notes were printed, another $1 million was authorized.
- By the end of the year, another $3 million.

1- Paul and Lehrman, p. 23.

2- Roger W. Weiss, "The Colonial Monetary Standard of Massachusetts," ***Economic History Review 27*** **(November 1974), p. 589.**

- $19 million in 1776.
- $13 million in 1777.
- $64 million in 1778.
- $125 million in 1779.
- A total of $227 million in five years on top of a base of $12 million is an increase of about 2000%.
- On top of this "federal" money, the states were doing the same in an approximately equal amount.
- And still more: the Continental Army, unable to get enough money from Congress, issued "certificates" for the purchase of supplies totalling $200 million.
- $650 million created in five years on top of a base of $12 million is an expansion of the money supply of over 5000%.*

Although the economy was devastated by this flood of fiat money, most victims were totally unaware of the cause. In 1777, the sentiment of a large segment of the population was expressed by the words of one patriotic old lady who said: "What a shame it is that Congress should let the poor soldiers suffer when they have power to make just as much money as they choose."[2]

The immediate result of this money infusion was the appearance of prosperity. After all, everyone had *more money* and that was perceived as a very good thing. But this was quickly followed by inflation as the self-destruct mechanism began to roll. In 1775, the colonial monetary unit, called the Continental, was valued at one-dollar in gold. In 1778, it was exchanged for twenty-five cents. By 1779, just four years from its issue, it was worth less than a penny and ceased to circulate as money at all. It was in that year that George Washington wrote: "A wagon-load of money will scarcely purchase a wagon-load of provisions."[3]

The saying "Not worth a Continental" has its origin in this gloomy period.

---

1. For an overview of expenditures, see Paul and Lehrman, pp. 26-27.

2. Gouge, p. 28. The naivite of this lady may be humorous, but are Americans any more enlightened today? Would she not feel at home among our modern-day electorate who clamor for legislation to pump Federal-Reserve fiat money into projects to alleviate hardship among the poor and unemployed?

3. Quoted by Bolles, Vol. I, p. 132.

The true nature of the inflation effect has never been more accurately perceived or more vividly described than it was by Thomas Jefferson:

> It will be asked how will the two masses of Continental and of State money have cost the people of the United States seventy-two millions of dollars, when they are to be redeemed now with about six million? I answer that the difference, being sixty-six millions, has been lost on the paper bills separately by the successive holders of them. Every one, through whose hands a bill passed, lost on that bill what it lost in value during the time it was in his hands. This was a real tax on him; and in this way the people of the United States actually contributed those sixty-six millions of dollars during the war, and by a mode of taxation the most oppressive of all because the most unequal of all.[1]

PRICE CONTROLS AND LEGAL-TENDER LAWS

It was natural that people struggled to find ways to escape the destruction of their savings, and the two most obvious methods were (1) to regularly adjust prices upward as the value of the money went downward or (2) exchange their goods and services only for gold coins. In response, the colonial legislatures and the Continental Congress did what governments *always* do to prevent it. They resorted to wage and price controls and to legal-tender laws with harsh penalties for non-compliance. Under one such law, those who refused to accept worthless money were even described as *traitors*. It declared:

> If any person shall hereafter be so lost to all virtue and regard for his Country as to refuse to accept its notes, such person shall be deemed an enemy of his Country.

Rhode Island not only leveled a substantial fine for non-acceptance of its notes but, upon a second offense, an individual lost his citizenship. When this was declared unlawful by a panel of judges, the legislature reacted by dismissing the judges from office.[3]

---

[1] Thomas Jefferson, *Observations on the Article Etats-Unis Prepared for the Encyclopedia,* June 22,1786, *Writings,* Vol. IV, p. 165.

[2] F. Tupper Saussy, *The Miracle on Mainstreet* (Sewanee, Tennessee: Spencer Judd, 1980), p. 12. Also see Anthony Sutton, *The War on Gold* (Seal Beach, Calif.: '76 Press, 1977), pp. 47,48.

[3] Jensen, p. 324.

Then, as now, those who suffered the most from fiat money were those who held the most trust in government. In 1777 these were mostly the Whigs, for it was they who patriotically held paper money and, as a result, lost their livelihoods and their life savings. The Tories, on the other hand, mistrusting both government and its paper money, passed the bills as quickly as possible in trade for real assets, especially gold. Consequently, as a group, they weathered the storm fairly well. But they often were derided by their less prudent neighbors as "Torie speculators," "hoarders," and even "traitors."

All of this was painfully fresh in the memories of the delegates to the Constitutional Convention and, as the opening session convened in Philadelphia in 1787, there were angry mobs in the streets threatening the legislators. Looting was rampant. Businesses were bankrupt. Drunkenness and lawlessness were everywhere to be seen. The fruit of fiat money had ripened, and the delegates did not enjoy its taste.

In October of 1785, George Washington wrote: "The wheels of government are clogged, and ... we are descending into the vale of confusion and darkness."[1] A year later, in a letter to James Madison, he said: "No day was ever more clouded than the present. We are fast verging to anarchy."[2]

In February of 1787, Washington wrote to Henry Knox: "If any person had told me that there would have been such formidable rebellion as exists, I would have thought him fit for a madhouse."[3]

Just three months prior to the opening of the convention, Washington voiced his reasons for rejecting the notion of fiat money. In answer to the complaint that there was not enough gold coin (specie) to satisfy the needs of commerce, he replied:

> The necessity arising from a want of specie is represented as greater than it really is. I contend that it is by the substance, not the shadow of a thing, we are to be benefited. The wisdom of man, in my humble opinion, cannot at this time devise a plan by which the credit of paper money would be long supported; consequently, depreciation keeps pace with the quantity of the emission, and articles for which it is exchanged rise in a greater ratio than the sinking value of the money. Wherein, then, is the farmer, the planter, the artisan benefited?

---

1. **Quoted by Arwood, p. 3.**
2. ***Ibid., p. A.***
3. ***Ibid., p.* 4.**

> **An evil equally great is the door it immediately opens for speculation, by which the least designing and perhaps most valuable part of the community are preyed upon by the more knowing and crafty speculators.**[1]

THE CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTION

This was the prevailing view held by the great majority of delegates to the Convention. They were adamant in their resolve to create a constitution which would prevent any state, and *especially* the federal government itself, from ever again issuing fiat money. And they said so in unmistakable terms.

Oliver Ellsworth from Connecticut, who later was to become our third Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, said:

> **This is a favorable moment to shut and bar the door against paper money. The mischief of the various experiments which have been made are now fresh in the public mind and have excited the disgust of all the respectable parts of America.**[2]

George Mason from Virginia told the delegates he had a "mortal hatred to paper money." Previously he had written to George Washington: "They may pass a law to issue paper money, but twenty laws will not make the people receive it. Paper money is founded upon fraud and knavery."

James Wilson from Pennsylvania said: "It will have the most salutary influence on the credit of the United States to remove the possibility of paper money."

John Langdon from New Hampshire warned that he would rather reject the whole plan of federation than to grant the new government the right to issue fiat money.

George Reed from Delaware declared that a provision in the Constitution granting the new government the right to issue fiat money "would be as alarming as the mark of the beast in Revelation."

Thomas Paine, although not a delegate to the Convention, had written the previous year that he was strongly opposed to fiat money, which he called counterfeiting by the state, and he especially abhorred legal tender laws which force people to accept the

---

1. **Washington to Stone, 16 February, 1787. Quoted by Bancroft, pp. 231-32.**

[2] **- For the context of this and the following statements expressing a similar sentiment, see Bancroft, pp. 30,43-44,82; also Paul and Lehrman, p. 168.**

counterfeit. He said: "The punishment of a member [of a legislature] who should move for such a law ought to be *death*."

An interesting thought.

If any further evidence is needed that the Founding Fathers intended to prohibit the federal government from issuing "bills of credit," consider this. The first draft of the Constitution was copied in large measure from the original Articles of Confederation. When it was taken up for consideration by the delegates, therefore, it contained the old provision that had caused so much chaos. It stated: "The legislature of the United States shall have the power to borrow money and emit bills of credit." But, after a lively discussion on the matter, the offending provision was voted to be *removed* from the Constitution by an overwhelming margin.[1] Voicing the sentiment of the majority of the delegates, Alexander Hamilton said: "To emit an unfunded paper as the sign of value ought not to continue a formal part of the Constitution, nor ever hereafter to be employed; being, in its nature, repugnant with abuses and liable to be made the engine of imposition and fraud."[2]

The journal of the Convention for August 16 contains this notation:

> It was moved and seconded to strike out the words "and emit bills of credit," and the motion ... passed in the affirmative. [The vote cleared by a margin of better than four to one.][3]

The Tenth Amendment states: "The powers not delegated to the United States by the Constitution, nor prohibited by it to the States, are reserved to the States respectively, or to the people." The power to issue bills of credit is definitely not delegated to the United States, and it is specifically prohibited to the States. Therefore, if any power to issue fiat money legally exists at all, it is reserved for the *people*. In other words, individuals and private institutions, such as banks, have the right to issue IOUs and hope that the public will use them as money, but *government, at any level, is clearly prohibited by the Constitution from doing so*.

---

[1] For an excellent summary of the interplay of ideas between the delegates, see Edwin Vieira, Jr., *Pieces of Eight: The Monetary Powers and Disabilities of the United States Constitution* (New Jersey: Sound Dollar Committee, 1983), pp. 71-76.

[2] Alexander Hamilton, *Works,* Part II, p. 271, as cited by Bancroft, p. 26.

[3] Quoted by Bancroft, pp. 39,40.

A SUGGESTION FOR YOUR CONGRESSMAN

Incidentally, the Constitution has never been amended on this point, nor has the provision that only silver and gold can be used as lawful money. It would be interesting if each reader of this book would send copies to his or her elected representatives in Washington, or at least a photocopy of this section. Every member of Congress has sworn to uphold the Constitution, and you might attach a short note asking them when they intend to begin.

Do not be disappointed if your reply is less than satisfactory. Politicians have a similar problem to that which judges have. It is permissible to rock the boat from time to time, but they are not supposed to *sink* it. Suits against the government challenging the constitutionality of our monetary system seldom get to court. It is safer for the justices to decline to accept these cases or to dismiss them as supposedly "frivolous." Otherwise they would face a difficult choice. Either they would have to mutilate logic in order to uphold the present inconsistencies—thus, opening themselves to possible ridicule—or they would have to declare in favor of the Constitution and literally cause the collapse of the entire deficit-spending, central-bank mechanism. Such an act would take a considerable amount of courage. Not only would they suffer the wrath of the Establishment that is *nourished* by that mechanism, they also would have to face a bewildered public which, because of lack of knowledge about the Constitution or the nature of money, could easily be convinced that the judges had lost their minds. Likewise, it is safer for politicians to respond to inquiries of this kind merely by quoting some self-serving government document which makes our fiat monetary system sound quite legal and marvelously constitutional.

Unfortunately, that is reality. Until the public becomes considerably better informed than it is at present, we cannot expect too much from the courts or from Congress. Bringing this matter to the attention of your elected representatives, however, is still well worth the effort, because the process of education has to start somewhere, and Washington is an excellent place to begin.

Returning to the point of this digression, however, it is important to know that the federal government was given a precisely limited monetary function: "to coin money" and to "regulate the value thereof." In view of the fact that gold and silver coin was specifically defined as the only kind of money to be allowed, there can be no doubt of what was meant by the first half of that power. To coin money meant to mint precious-metal coins. Period.

The second half is equally clear. Both in the Constitution and in the discussions among the delegates, the power to regulate the value of gold and silver coin was closely tied to the power to determine weights and measures. They are, in fact, one and the same. To regulate the value of coin is exactly the same as to set the nationally accepted value of a mile or a pound or a quart. It is to create a standard against which a thing may be measured. The wording of this section of the Constitution can be traced to the original Articles of Confederation which further clarifies the meaning that was generally understood at that time:

> The United States in congress assembled shall... have the sole and exclusive right and power of regulating the alloy and value of coin struck by their own authority, or by that of the respective states—fixing the Standard of Weights and Measures throughout the United States.

The intent, therefore, was simply for Congress to determine the exact weight of a precious metal that would constitute the national monetary unit.

THE ORIGIN OF THE DOLLAR

At the time of these deliberations, Spanish silver coins, called pieces of eight, had already become the *de facto* monetary unit. An official commission had been established by the Continental Congress to sample the circulating coins in the country and determine their average value by weight and purity. Charts were published, and all coins of various origin were listed by comparative value. Congress was already "regulating the value of" the nation's money by the time the Constitution was drafted. How these coins became dollars is an interesting story. Edwin Vieira tells us:

> Monetary historians generally first associate the dollar with one Count Schlick, who began striking such silver coins in 1519 in Joachim's Thai, Bavaria. Then called *"Schlicktenthalers"* or *"Joachimsthalers,"* the coins became known simply as *"thalers,"* which transliterated into "dollars." Interestingly, the American colonies did not adopt the dollar from England, but from Spain. Under that country's monetary reform of 1497, the silver *real* became the Spanish money-unit, or unit of account. A new coin consisting of eight *reales* also appeared. Variously known as *pesos, duros, piezas de ocho* ("pieces

> **of eight"), or Spanish dollars (because of their similarity in weight and fineness to the** *thaler),* **the coins quickly achieved predominance in financial markets of the New World because of Spain's then-important commercial and political position.**[1]

In 1785, Thomas Jefferson urged the adoption of the Spanish silver dollar as the nation's official monetary unit. In a pamphlet submitted to the delegates of the Continental Congress, he said:

> **Taking into our view all money transactions, great and small, I question if a common measure, of more convenient size than the dollar, could be proposed.... The unit or dollar is a known coin, and the most familiar of all to the minds of people. It is already adopted from south to north; has identified our currency, and therefore happily offers itself as an unit already introduced.**[2]

On July 6, 1785, Congress unanimously voted to adopt the Spanish dollar as the official monetary unit of the United States. Jefferson realized, however, that this was not sufficient. Although the coin had been one of the most dependable in terms of weight and quality, it still varied in content between issues, and a way had to be found to rate one coin in value against another. That was, after all, the service that Congress was required to render when it was given the power to "regulate the value" of money. Jefferson came directly to the point when he said: "If we determine that a dollar shall be our unit, we must then say with precision what a dollar is. This coin as struck at different times, of different weight and fineness, is of different values."[3]

The logic voiced by Jefferson could not be ignored. Two years later, after carefully examining the actual weight and fineness of the Spanish dollars currently in circulation, Congress *defined* the dollar. After ratification of the Constitution, a dollar would contain 371.25 grains of fine silver, and all items in commerce, including other coins, were to be measured in value against that standard.

As the Spaniards continued to reduce the silver content of their coins, the pressure for the minting of an *American* dollar of predictable value began to mount. Secretary of the Treasury, Alexander Hamilton, in his 1791 report to Congress, urged the

---

1- Vieira, p. 66.

2- ***Propositions Respecting the Coinage of Gold, Silver, and Copper*** **(printed pamphlet Presented to the Continental Congress on May 13,1785), pp. 9-10. Cited by Vieira, P-68.**

3- ***Ibid., p.*** **11.**

establishment of a federal mint and also presented a powerful case for maintaining an inviolable standard for the coins to be produced by that mint. He said:

> The dollar originally contemplated in the money transactions of this country, by successive diminutions of its weight and fineness, has sustained a depreciation of five per cent, and yet the new dollar has a currency in all payments in place of the old, with scarcely any attention to the difference between them. The operation of this in depreciating the value of property depending upon past contracts, and ... of all other property is apparent. Nor can it require argument to prove that a nation ought not to suffer the value of the property of its citizens to fluctuate with the fluctuations of a foreign mint, or to change with the changes in the regulations of a foreign sovereign....
>
> The quantity of gold and silver in the national coins, corresponding with a given sum, cannot be made less than heretofore without disturbing the balance of intrinsic value, and making every acre of land, as well as every bushel of wheat, of less actual worth than in time past.... [This] could not fail to distract the ideas of the community, and would be apt to breed discontent as well among those who live on the income of their money as among the poorer classes of the people to whom the necessities of life would ... become dearer.[1]

BIMETALLISM

Note in the preceding quotation that Hamilton referred to both gold *and* silver coins, not merely silver. That is because it was precisely at this time that Congress began to consider a *bimetallic* coinage. In retrospect, this was a mistake for, throughout history, bimetallism has never worked well very long. It always has led to confusion and, ultimately, the disappearance *as money* of one of the metals. This is because there is always a subtle shifting of the relative values between gold and silver—or any other two metals for that matter—depending on constantly changing supply and demand. We may set a value ratio of one to the other that is quite acceptable today but, eventually, that ratio will no longer reflect reality. The metal which grows in value over the other will be hoarded or possibly even melted down because it will bring a higher price *as metal* than it will as money.

That is precisely what happened in the early days of our Republic. It was determined after careful analysis of the free-market that the value of gold *at that time* was approximately fifteen times the value of silver. The Coinage Act of 1792 accordingly set the relative value of gold-to-silver at fifteen-to-one. It then authorized the federal government to mint gold coins called *Eagles,* and it specified that their value was ten dollars. In other words, the gold coins would be equal in value to ten silver coins. Ten silver coins, each of 371.25 grains of fine silver, would contain a total of 3,712.5 grains. The content of the *Eagle,* therefore, was one-fifteenth that amount, or 247.5 grains of fine gold.

---

[1] *The Debates and Proceedings in the Congress of the United States* (J. Gales, compil. 1834), Appendix, pp. 2059,2071-73. Cited by Vieira, pp. 95,97.

Contrary to popular misconception, Congress did *not* create a "gold dollar." (It didn't do that until fifty-seven years later in The Coinage Act of 1849.) In fact it reaffirmed that "the money of account of the United States shall be expressed in dollars or units" and again *defined* those units as coins containing 371.25 grains of pure silver. What Congress *did* do was authorize the minting of a gold coin and arbitrarily fix the value of the gold in that coin at fifteen times the value of the dollar. And it also stated that all silver and gold coins produced in the federal mint were to be legal tender in accordance with their value, based on weight and purity, relative to the standard of the silver dollar.

Oh yes, another thing. It set the death penalty for anyone who debases the nation's coinage; a law which, if enforced today, would wipe out the House of Representatives, the Senate, the managerial level of the Treasury Department, and the Presidency as well.

FREE COINAGE

Perhaps the most important provision of this Act, however, was the establishment of what is called *free coinage*. Under free coinage, any citizen may take raw silver or gold to the mint and, for a nominal fee, have it converted into coins for personal use. The government merely performs a technical function of creating the coin and stamping it with its insignia to certify the correct weight and purity. The state's role in this is exactly the same as inspecting the scales in a grocery store or the meter on a gasoline pump. It is merely fulfilling the Constitutional requirement to set standards and verify the accuracy of weights and measures.

Free coinage was to become an important part of the American success story, and it lasted until the Gold Reserve Act of 1934 which, not only terminated it, but even made it illegal for citizens to *possess* gold. We shall take a closer look at that dismal period in a later section but, for now, it is important to recall the greatness of our monetary system as it once was. Elgin Groseclose explains:

> The principle of free coinage has proved its practical worth as a deterrent to debasement and depreciation. Where coinage is on private account there is no profit to the state in tampering with the standard, and there is no opportunity for such practice by the individual. The circulation of coins of similar appearance and denomination but of uncertain standard, the arbitrary and unpredictable modifications in the standard by autocratic government, the temptations to profit which were constantly dangled before despotic rulers—these were evils which had perplexed and harassed society and hindered the natural growth of economy since the days when coined money first appeared. By a stroke they were swept away. At the same time, the institution of free coinage, by giving stability and character to one of the chief instruments of organized economy, made possible a more vigorous and healthy commercial life and gave prestige and increased substance to the government adopting it.

SOUND MONEY AND ECONOMIC PROSPERITY

This was, indeed, an auspicious beginning for the new nation, and the result was immediately observable in an upsurge in prosperity. The December 16, 1789 edition of the *Pennsylvania Gazette* declared: "Since the federal constitution has removed all danger of our having a paper tender, our trade is advanced fifty per cent." But that was just the beginning. Historian Douglass North says that "the years 1793-1808, were years of unparalleled prosperity." Louis Hacker describes the period as one "of unexampled business expansion, one of the greatest, in fact, the United States has had.... The exports of the country mounted from $19 millions in 1791 to $93 millions in 1801."[4] Furthermore, the federal deficit, which amounted to twenty-eight per cent of expenditures in 1792, dropped to twenty-one per cent in 1795. By 1802, the deficit had disappeared altogether and had been replaced by a surplus that was almost as large as the government's total spending.

George Washington watched this economic miracle with great satisfaction and, in correspondence to his friend, LaFayette, the

[1] Groseclose, *Money and Man, p. 167.*

[2] Quoted by Saussy, p. 36.

[3] Douglass C. North, *The Economic Growth of the United States* (New York: W.W- Norton, 1966), p. 53.

[4] Louis M. Hacker, *American Capitalism* (New York: Anvil, 1957), p. 39.

French statesman and former General in the Continental Army, Washington commented: "Our country, my dear sir,... is fast progressing in its political importance and social happiness." In a letter to Catherine Macaulay Graham, he said: "The United States enjoys a sense of prosperity and tranquility under the new government that could hardly have been hoped for." And in a letter to the American poet and diplomat, David Humphreys, Washington exclaimed: "Our public credit stands on that high ground which three years ago it would have been considered as a species of madness to have foretold."[1]

On the specific subject of paper money without backing by gold or silver, Washington wrote:

> We may one day become a great commercial and flourishing nation. But if in the pursuit of the means we should unfortunately stumble again on unfunded paper money or any similar species of fraud, we shall assuredly give a fatal stab to our national credit in its infancy.[2]

This, then, was the monetary blueprint laid down by the men who drafted our Constitution. In retrospect, about the only flaw one can find was the attempt to set a fixed ratio between the value of gold and silver. Rather than placing a *dollar* value on a gold coin, the mint should have imprinted the *gold* value in terms of weight and fineness. The free market then would have assigned it an *exchange* value in terms of goods and services, and that automatically would have determined its correct *monetary* value as a ratio to the silver dollars which were bidding for the purchase of the same items. It was inevitable, therefore, that soon after the "ten-dollar" *Eagle* was created, the value of gold over silver began to climb higher than the prescribed ratio of fifteen-to-one, and the *Eagles* ceased to circulate. In later years, with the discovery of the great gold fields in California and Australia, the process reversed itself, and silver dollars disappeared from commerce. But, even though this bimetallism led to a discrepancy between the actual conversion ratio and that which the government had prescribed, nevertheless, it took place in the open market and no one was greatly injured by the inconvenience. Throughout it all, there was just one standard:

1- These letters were written in 1790 and 1791, quoted by Atwood, pp. 5-6.

2- Written in 1789, quoted by Louis Basso, *A Treatise on Monetary Reform* (St. Louis, Missouri: Monetary Realist Society, 1982), p. 5.

the defined silver content of a dollar. Furthermore, *both* the silver *and* gold coins were of intrinsic value and totally honest in their measure. No nation could do more for the prosperity of its citizens than that.

SUMMARY

The Constitution prohibits both the states and the federal government from issuing fiat money. This was the deliberate intent of the Founding Fathers who had bitter experience with fiat money before and especially during the Revolutionary War. In response to the need to have a precisely defined national monetary unit, Congress adopted the Spanish dollar then currently in use and defined the content of that dollar to be 371.25 grains of pure silver. With the establishment of a federal mint, American silver dollars were issued in accordance with that standard, and gold *Eagles* also were produced which were then equal in value to ten silver dollars. Most importantly, free coinage was established wherein Americans were able to convert their raw silver and gold into national coins officially certified by the government as to their intrinsic value. The product of these measures was a period of sound money and great economic prosperity, a period that would come to an end only when the next generation of Americans forgot to read their history and returned to the use of paper money and "bills of credit."

The monetary plan laid down by the Founding Fathers was the product of collective genius. Nowhere in history can one find so many men in one legislative body who understood the fraud inherent in fiat money and the hidden-taxation nature of inflation. There was never such an assembly of scholars and statesmen determined to set a safe course for the nation of their own creation. Literally, they handed us a *treasure map*. All we had to do was follow it to economic security and national prosperity. But, as we shall see in the following sections, that map was discarded when the lessons of history died out with those who had lived it.

Chapter Sixteen

THE CREATURE COMES TO AMERICA

The story of the Bank of North America, the nation's first central bank, which was formed even before the Constitution was drafted; the story of the First Bank of the United States, the nation's second central bank, which was formed in 1791; the massive inflation caused by both banks; the causes of their demise.

It is a surprising fact that the United States had its first central bank even before the Constitution was drafted. It was chartered by the Continental Congress in the Spring of 1781 and opened its doors the following year. There were great expectations at that time that the province of Canada would soon join the rebel colonies to form a union extending across the entire North American continent. In anticipation of that, the new financial institution was called the Bank of North America.

The Bank was organized by Robert Morris, a member of Congress, who was a leader of a group of politicians and merchants who wanted the new nation to imitate the mercantilism of England. They wanted high taxes to support a powerful, centralized government, high tariffs to subsidize domestic industry, a large army and navy, and the acquisition of colonial outposts to expand into foreign lands and markets. He was a wealthy Philadelphia merchant who had profited greatly from war contracts during the Revolution. He had carefully studied the secret science of money and, by 1781, was widely considered to be the financial wizard of Congress.

The Bank of North America was modeled closely after the Bank of England. Following the practice of fractional reserve, it was allowed to issue paper promissory notes in excess of actual deposits, but, since *some* gold and silver had to be held in the vault, there were definite limits to how far that process could go. Bank notes were not forced on the people as legal tender for all debts, public and private, but the government did agree to accept them *at their face value* in payment of all taxes and duties, which made them as good as gold for that specific purpose. Furthermore, unlike the central banks of today, the Bank of North America was not given the power to directly issue the nation's money.

FUNCTIONED AS A CENTRAL BANK

On the other hand, the Bank was given the right of monopoly in its field, which means there were no other bank notes allowed to circulate in competition. This, plus the fact that they were accepted at face value in payment of all federal and state taxes, plus the further fact that the federal government did not at that time have a functioning money of its own, made these bank notes attractive for use as a circulating medium of exchange. The intended result was that the Bank's paper would be accepted as money, which for a while, it was. Furthermore, the Bank was made the official depository for all federal funds and it almost immediately loaned $1.2 million to the government, much of which was created out of nothing for that purpose. So, in spite of the limitations placed upon the Bank, and in spite of the fact that it was essentially a private institution, it was intended to be and, in fact, did function as a central bank.

The Bank of North America was fraudulent from the very start. The charter required that private investors provide $400,000 for the initial subscription. When Morris was unable to raise that money, he used his political influence to make up the shortfall out of government funds. In a maneuver that was nothing less than legalized embezzlement, he took the gold that had been loaned to the United States from France and had it deposited in the Bank. Then, using this as a fractional-reserve base, he simply created the money that was needed for the subscription and loaned it to himself and his associates. Such is the power of the secret science.[1]

It is hard to reconcile the fact that the same men who adopted the brilliant monetary restraints of the Constitution a few years later would have allowed the Bank of North America to exist. It must be remembered, however, that the war was still in progress when the charter was issued, and even the wisest of statesmen are often obliged to follow expediency in such times. One also must conclude that, while the founding fathers were wise on the nature of fiat money created by the government's printing press, they had not yet had extensive experience with the same mechanism hidden behind the obscurities of fractional-reserve banking.

---

[1] **See Murray N. Rothbard, *Conceived in Liberty: The Revolutionary War, 1775-1784* (New Rochelle, New York: Arlington House, 1979), Vol. IV, p. 392.**

In any event, the Bank was not to have its charter renewed by Congress and it did not survive beyond the end of the war. Murray Rothbard details its demise:

> Despite the monopoly privileges conferred upon the Bank of North America and its nominal redeemability in specie, the market's lack of confidence in the inflated notes led to their depreciation outside the Bank's home base in Philadelphia. The Bank even tried to bolster the value of its notes by hiring people to urge redeemers of its notes not to insist on specie—a move scarcely calculated to improve the long-run confidence in the Bank.
>
> After a year of operation, Morris's political power slipped, and he moved quickly to shift the Bank of North America from a central bank to a purely commercial bank chartered by the state of Pennsylvania. By the end of 1783,... the first experiment with a central bank in the United States had ended.[1]

A fitting epilogue to this story was written two hundred years later when, in 1980, the First Pennsylvania Bank of Philadelphia, the "oldest bank in the nation," was bailed out by the FDIC.

AN END RUN AROUND THE CONSTITUTION

It will be recalled that, after the Bank of North America was terminated and after the Constitutional Convention "closed the door on paper money," the United States enjoyed a period of unparalleled economic growth and prosperity. But, while the door may have been closed, the window was still open. Congress was denied the power to *print* money, but it was not denied the power to *borrow* it.

In the vocabulary of the common man, to borrow is to accept a loan of something that already exists. He is confused, therefore, when the banker issues money out of nothing and then says he is *lending* it. He *appears* to be lending but, in reality, he is *creating*.

Then, as now, the mysteries of banking vocabulary were not revealed to the average man, and it was difficult to understand

---

f • Rothbard, *Mystery,* pp. 194-95.

how privately-issued bank notes could serve precisely the same purpose as printing-press money—with precisely the same disastrous results. That being the case, the monetary and political scientists decided to end run the Constitution. Their plan was to establish a bank, to give that bank the power to create money, to *lend* most of that money to the government, and then to make sure the IOUs are accepted as money by the public. Congress, therefore, would not be emitting bills of credit. The *bank* would do that.

Thus, the First Bank of the United States was conceived.

The proposal was submitted to Congress in 1790 by Alexander Hamilton who, at that time, was Secretary of the Treasury. Hamilton, incidentally, was a former aide to Robert Morris, founder of the Bank of North America, so in that sense his role in this matter is not surprising. What is surprising is the fact that Hamilton had been a staunch supporter of a sound currency during the Constitutional Convention. This is hard to reconcile, and one must suspect that, even the most well intentioned of men can become corrupted by the temptations of wealth and power. It is possible that Hamilton, Morris, and other Federalist leaders had hoped to keep the government out of the money-making business, not because it was the constitutional thing to do, but because that would leave the field clear for a central-bank mechanism which, because it was further from public view and political control, could become their own private engine of profit. It would appear that the only other explanation is that these men were fickle in their views and did not really understand the implications of their acts. In view of their brilliance in all other matters, however, it is difficult to muster enthusiasm for that interpretation.

THE HAMILTON-JEFFERSON CONFLICT

Hamilton's proposal was strongly opposed by Thomas Jefferson, then Secretary of State, and this was the beginning of a heated political debate that would preoccupy Congress for many decades to come. In fact, it was one of the central issues that led to the creation of our first political parties. The Federalists gathered around the ideas of Hamilton. The anti-Federalists, later called the Republicans, were attracted to the ideas of Jefferson.[1]

---

[1] **Curiously, the present Democratic Party traces its origin to Jefferson's Republicans.**

Jefferson pointed out that the Constitution did not grant to Congress the power to create a bank or anything similar. That means such power is reserved to the states or to the people. In a rebuttal to Hamilton's proposal, he said: "To take a single step beyond the boundaries thus specially drawn around the powers of Congress, is to take possession of a boundless field of power, no longer susceptible of any definition."[1] Furthermore, he said, even if the Constitution *had* granted such power, it would be an extremely unwise thing to do, because allowing banks to create money could only lead to national ruin.

[Hamilton, on the other hand, argued that debt was a good thing, if kept within reason, and that the nation needed more money in circulation to keep up with expanding commerce. Only the Bank, he said, would be able to provide that. Furthermore, while it is true the Constitution did not *specifically* grant the power to create such a bank, it was, nevertheless, an *implied* power, because it was needed to accomplish *other* functions which *were* granted in the Constitution.

That was the end run.

Nothing could be more polarized than the opposing ideas of these two men:

> I **JEFFERSON:** "A private central bank issuing the public currency is a greater menace to the liberties of the people than a standing army." "We must not let our rulers load us with perpetual debt."
>
> **HAMILTON:** "No society could succeed which did not unite^ the interest and credit of rich individuals with those of the state." "A national debt, if it is not excessive, will be to us a national blessing."

AMERICA'S SECOND CENTRAL BANK IS CREATED

After a year of intense debate, Hamilton's views prevailed and, in 1791, Congress granted a twenty-year charter to the Bank of the

---

1. "Opinion of Thomas Jefferson, Secretary of State," February 15,1791, quoted by Krooss, pp. 147-48.
2. The comparison between private banks and standing armies can be found in many of Jefferson's letters and public utterances. For example, see *The Writings of* f *Thomas Jefferson* (New York: C P. Putnam & Sons, 1899), Vol. X, p. 31.
3. *The Basic Writings of Thomas Jefferson* (Willey Book Company, 1944), p. 749.
4. Quoted by Arthur M. Schlesinger, Jr., *The Age of Jackson* (New York: Mentor Books, 1945), pp. 6-7.
5. Written on April 30, 1781, to his mentor, Robert Morris. Quoted by John H. Makin, *The Global Debt Crisis: America's Growing Involvement* (New York: Basic •Books, 1984), p. 246.

United States. It was modelled closely after the Bank of England, which means it was almost an exact replica of the previous Bank of North America. In fact, as evidence of continuity with the past, the president of the new bank was Thomas Willing, the same man who had been a partner of Robert Morris and president of the old bank.[1]

As before, the new Bank was given a monopoly in the issuance of bank notes. Once again, these notes were not forced on the people as legal tender for *private* debts and contracts, but they *were* legal tender at face value for all debts to the *government* in the form of taxes and duties, which made them attractive for use as common money. And once again, the Bank was made the official depository of all federal funds.

The charter specified that the Bank was required at all times to redeem its notes in gold or silver specie upon demand by the depositor. That was an admirable provision but, since the Bank was not also required to keep specie in its vaults in the full amount of its note obligations, it was a mathematical impossibility to uphold.

As with the old Bank of North America, the new Bank of the United States was to have eighty per cent of its capital provided by private investors with the federal government putting up only twenty per cent. That was a mere bookkeeping sleight-of-hand, however, because it had been prearranged for the Bank to immediately loan back to the federal government exactly that same amount. Reminiscent of the Morris scheme in capitalizing the Bank of North America, this federal "investment" was essentially a means whereby federal funds could be used to make up the short-fall of the private investors. "Call it by what name you please," said Jefferson, this was not a loan or an investment but an outright gift. And he was certainly right. The Bank was able to open its doors with less than nine per cent of the private capital required by its charter. The total capitalization was specified at $10 million, which means that $8 million was to come from private stockholders. However, as John Kenneth Galbraith wryly observed: "Numerous thrifty participants confined themselves to a modest down payment, and the bank began operations on around $675,000 in hard cash."

---

1. It is interesting to note that, as a member of the Continental Congress, Willing had been one of those who voted against the Declaration of Independence.

2. Galbraith, p. 72

THE CREATURE COMES FROM EUROPE

Who were these private investors? Their names do not appear in the published literature, but we can be certain they included the Congressmen and Senators—and their associates—who engineered the charter. But there is an interesting line in Galbraith's text that hints at another dimension to the composition of this group. On age 72 of *Money: Whence It Came, Where It Went,* he states matter-of-factly: "Foreigners could own shares but not vote them."

What a story is hidden behind that innocuous statement. The blunt reality is that the Rothschild banking dynasty in Europe was the dominant force, both financially and politically, in the formation of the Bank of the United States. Biographer, Derek Wilson, explains:

> Over the years since N.M. [Rothschild], the Manchester textile manufacturer, had bought cotton from the Southern states, Rothschilds had developed heavy American commitments. Nathan ... had made loans to various states of the Union, had been, for a time, the official European banker for the US government and was a pledged supporter of the Bank of the United States.

Gustavus Myers, in his *History of the Great American Fortunes,* is more pointed. He says:

> Under the surface, the Rothschilds long had a powerful influence in dictating American financial laws. The law records show that they were the power in the old Bank of the United States.

The Rothschilds, therefore, were not merely investors nor just an important power. They were *the* power behind the Bank of the United States! The significance of the Rothschild power in American finance and politics was the subject of extensive comment in a previous section, so there is no need to cover that ground again. It is important here, however, to at least make a mental note of the fact that the Creature from Jekyll Island is descended from a species that is *not* native to this land.

INFLATION ALL OVER AGAIN

From the beginning, the primary purpose of the Bank was to create money for the federal government. Money for the private

---

1. Derek Wilson, p. 178.
2. Gustavus Myers, *History of the Great American Fortunes* (New York: Random House, 1936), p. 556.

sector was strictly secondary. That was made clear by the fact that the maximum rate of interest it was allowed to charge was six per cent. That made it impractical to make loans to anyone except the federal government and a few large, prime-rate borrowers. And the government wasted no time putting its new central-bank mechanism to work. Having "invested" $2 million at the start, it converted that into $8.2 million borrowed within the next five years. Which means that $6.2 million was created specifically for its use.

Anyone familiar with the history of money as outlined in the previous section could easily write the following paragraph.

The creation of millions of new fractional-reserve dollars, which the government pushed into the economy through spending programs, caused an imbalance between the supply of money and the supply of goods and services. Prices appeared to go up as the relative value of the dollar went down. In that same five-year period, wholesale prices rose by 72%, which is another way of saying that 42% of everything people had saved in the form of money was quietly confiscated by the government through the hidden tax called inflation.

The same inflation effect that previously had plagued the colonies now returned to plague the new generation. This time, instead of being caused by printing-press money, it was fractional-reserve money. The cog that linked the two mechanisms together and caused them to function as one was federal debt. It was federal debt that allowed the political and monetary scientists to violate the intent of the founding fathers, and it was this same federal debt that prompted Jefferson to exclaim:

> I wish it were possible to obtain a single amendment to our Constitution. I would be willing to depend on that alone for the reduction of the administration of our government to the general principle of the Constitution; I mean an additional article, taking from the federal government their power of borrowing.[1]

Like so many things in the real world, the Bank of the United States was a mixture of evil with some good. It certainly was not all bad. In colonial times, the state governments printed as much paper money as they pleased, and the loss of purchasing power was, in many cases, total. The Bank, on the other hand, was required to maintain *some* gold and specie as a base for its pyramid of money. Even though it was an *inverted* pyramid with reserves being smaller than the quantity of bank notes, it still represented a boundary to just how far the money supply could be expanded. And that was good.

---

[1] Letter to John Taylor, November 26, 1789. Quoted by Martin A. Larson, *The Continuing Tax Rebellion* (Old Greenwich, Connecticut: Devin-Adair, 1979), p. xii.

Furthermore, it is apparent that the bank's directors were imbued with a certain amount of enlightened self interest in that they actually *wanted* to keep the creation of new money within some kind of control. They could profit from the central-bank mechanism only so long as the economy as a whole was productive enough to support it. They did not want to kill the goose that laid the golden egg. So, like their counterparts in the Federal Reserve System of our modern day, they spoke the language of restraint and, in a few instances, even acted with restraint as well.

WILDCAT BANKS

For example, it was during this period that "wildcat banks" began to flourish. They were given that name not because they were untamed—although that would have been another good reason to do so—but because they were located in areas so remote in the frontier that it was said their only customers were wildcats.

Wildcat banks were not noted for meticulous accounting or business practices. Like all banks at that time, they were required to keep a certain portion of their deposits on hand in the form of gold or silver coin. To engender public confidence in their faithfulness to that obligation, it was common practice to keep the vault door open so a keg or two of gold coins could be viewed during business hours—not altogether different from the modern practice of financial institutions advertising how many billions in assets they hold but never mentioning the size of their liabilities. The wildcatters, however, were not reluctant to sprinkle a few precious-metal coins over the top of *nails* and let *that* take care of public relations. In some cases, as state examiners went from bank to bank to check the reserves, the gold would arrive only a few minutes ahead of them, having been rushed from the vault of the bank previously audited.

The point is that the Bank of the United States was able to place considerable restraint upon the practices of all banks, both wildcat and urban. It did this simply by refusing to accept the notes of any other bank unless it had a reputation for redeeming those notes in specie on demand. The public reacted accordingly. If the notes were not good enough for the Bank of the United States, they were not good enough for them either. This served as an indirect force of moderation that affected all banks of that time. And that, too, was good.

Some historians have said that the Bank was a positive force in yet another way. Galbraith, for example, writes admiringly:

> **On occasion, the Bank of the United States came to the assistance of good state banks that were being besieged by their note holders or other creditors. So, besides enforcing restraint, it served also as the lender of last resort. Thus in its short span of life it went far to perceive and develop the basic regulatory functions of a central bank.**[1]

One who is less enamored with the idea of a central bank would be tempted to ask: If those state banks were so "good," why did they need assistance in keeping faith with their depositors? The whole idea of a "lender of last resort," which is accepted as sacred dogma today, is based on the assumption that it is perfectly acceptable for the entire banking system to be fraudulent. It is assumed that any single bank or cluster of banks could at any time become "besieged by their note holders or other creditors." Therefore, it is prudent to have a central bank to take what meager reserves there are within the system and rush them from bank to bank, if not minutes before the examiner arrives, at least before the customers do.

As for the much talked about restraint exercised over other banks, it is not unreasonable to think that this same effect would have developed even without the presence of a government bank. If the free market had been left to operate, it is certain that, before long, one or more banks would gain a deserved reputation for honesty and full faith with their depositors. They would become the most popular banks and, therefore, the most prosperous. In order to accomplish this, however, they would *have* to reject the worthless notes of other banks. The public would react as expected, and even the most unscrupulous banks would have to toe the line if they wanted to survive. Moderation would be forced on the entire banking system as a result of open competition within a free market. To assume that only a federally-chartered central bank could have brought moderation into the monetary system is to believe that only politicians, bureaucrats, and agencies of government can act with integrity, a shaky notion at best.

---

[1] **Galbraith, p. 73.**

AN INSTRUMENT OF PLUTOCRACY

In any event, there is no denying the fact that the Bank of the United States did provide some braking force to the runaway tendencies of many of the nation's private banks. So it could have been worse. The inflation that it caused by its own activities could have been enlarged even further by the activities of the other banks as well. But, that it could have been worse does not make it good. As it was, the Bank was the means by which the American people lost forty-two per cent of the value of all the money they earned or possessed during just those five years. We must not forget, either, that this confiscation of property was *selective*. It did *not* work against the *wealthy* classes which were able to ride the wave of inflation aboard the raft of tangible property which they owned. And it especially did not work against those elite few, the political and monetary scientists, who were making huge profits from the enterprise. The Bank had done precisely what Hamilton had advocated: "... unite the interest and credit of rich individuals with those of the state."

The development of this plutocracy was well described by Governeur Morris, the former delegate from New York who had helped to draft the Constitution into its final form. He had been an assistant to Robert Morris (not related) and was a champion of the concept of a natural aristocracy. So he knew his subject well when he warned:

> **The rich will strive to establish their dominion and enslave the rest. They always did. They always will.... They will have the same effect here as elsewhere, if we do not, by such a government, keep them within their proper spheres. We should remember that the people never act from reason alone. The rich will take advantage of their passions, and make these the instruments for oppressing them. The result of the contest will be a violent aristocracy, or a more violent despotism.**[1]

The tide of political pressure against the Bank was steadily rising during these years. It is tempting for critics of the central-bank mechanism to attribute that to the awakening common sense

---

1. Written on July 2, 1787, in a letter to James Madison. Quoted in "Prosperity Economics," by W. Cleon Skousen, *Freeman Digest,* February, 1985, p. 9.

of the American public. Unfortunately, the picture is not that pleasing. It is true that the Jeffersonian Republicans were eloquently holding forth against the Creature's progenitor, and their influence was substantial. But there was another group that joined with them which had almost exactly opposite ideas and goals. The Jeffersonians opposed the Bank because they believed it was unconstitutional and because they wanted a monetary system based only upon gold and silver coin. The other group was made up of the wildcatters, the land speculators, and the empire-building industrialists. They opposed the Bank because they wanted a monetary system with no restraints at all, not even those associated with fractional reserve. They wanted every local bank to be free to create as much paper money as the public would swallow, because they would then use that money for their own projects and profit. Indeed, politics *does* produce strange bedfellows.

As the time approached for renewal of the Bank's charter, the battle lines inched toward each other. They were of equal force. The halls of Congress echoed with the cannon roar of angry debate. The vote was deadlocked. Another attack and counter attack. Again a deadlock. Into the night the forces clashed.

When the smoke of battle lifted, the bill for charter renewal had been defeated by *one* vote in the House and *one* vote, cast by Vice-President George Clinton to break the tie, in the Senate. And so, on January 24, 1811, the Bank of the United States closed its doors.

The battle may have been decided, but the war was far from over. The losers, bitter with defeat, merely regrouped their forces and began to prepare for the next encounter. Unfortunately, the events that followed were ideally suited for their plans.

With the moderating effect of the Bank now removed from the scene, the nation's banking system passed wholly into the hands of the state-chartered corporations, many of which were imbued with the wildcat mentality. Their numbers grew rapidly, and so did the money supply which they created. Inflation followed in their footsteps. Public dissatisfaction began to rise.

If the free market had been allowed to operate, it is likely that competition soon would have weeded out the wildcatters and restored balance to the system, but it was never given a chance. The War of 1812 saw to that.

THE WAR OF 1812

The War of 1812 was one of the most senseless wars in history. The primary cause, we are told, was the British impressment into their navy of American sailors on the high seas to assist in the war against Napoleonic France. But the French had done exactly the same thing to assist in the war against England, yet their acts were ignored. Furthermore, the British had already rescinded their policy regarding American seamen *before* the war was underway, which means that the *cause* of the war had been removed, and peace could have been restored in honor if Congress had so wanted. One must conclude that the pro-banking interests in the United States actually *wanted* the conflict because of the profits that could be realized from it. As evidence of this is the fact that the New England states, which were home to the seamen who had been impressed into service, were firmly against the war, while the Western and inland Southern states, which were home to the myriad of wildcat banks, howled loudly for a clash of arms.

In any event, the war was unpopular with the average citizen, and it was out of the question for Congress to obtain funding for armaments through an increase in taxes. So the government *needed* the state banks to create that money *outside* the tax structure and came to their rescue to protect them from the discipline of the free market. It was a classic case of the unholy alliance, the *cabal,* that always develops between political and monetary scientists. Professor Rothbard gives the details:

> The U.S. government encouraged an enormous expansion in the number of banks and in bank notes and deposits to purchase the growing war debt. These new and recklessly inflationary banks in the Middle Atlantic, Southern, and Western states, printed enormous quantities of new notes to purchase government bonds. The federal government then used these notes to purchase arms and manufactured goods in New England....
>
> By August 1814, it became clear that the banks of the nation apart from New England could not pay [in specie], that they were insolvent. Rather than allow the banks of the nation to fail, the governments, state and federal, decided in August 1814 to allow the banks to continue in business while refusing to redeem their obligations in specie. In other words, the banks were allowed to refuse to pay their solemn contractual obligations....
>
> This general suspension was not only highly inflationary at the time; it set a precedent for all financial crises from then on. Whether

> **the U.S. had a central bank or not, the banks were assured that if they inflated together and then got in trouble, government would bail them out.[1]**

The state banks had created enough instant money for the federal government to raise the debt from $45 million to $127 million, a staggering sum for the fledgling nation. Tripling the money supply, with no appreciable increase in goods, means the value of the dollar shrank to about one-third its former purchasing power. By 1814, when the depositors began to awake to the scam and demanded their gold instead of paper, the banks closed their doors and had to hire extra guards to protect officials and employees from the angry crowds. Once again, the monetary and political scientists had succeeded in fleecing the American public of approximately 66% of all the money they held during that period, and that was on *top* of the 42% fleecing they got a few years earlier by the Bank of the United States.

JUGGLING TRICKS AND BANKING DREAMS

Leaning against the storm of paper money all this time was Thomas Jefferson, by now, past-President of the United States. Trying to bring the nation to its senses, he never ceased speaking out against the evil of dishonest money and debt:

> **Although all the nations of Europe have tried and trodden every path of force and folly in a fruitless quest of the same object, yet *we* still expect to find in juggling tricks and banking dreams, that money can be made out of nothing, and in sufficient quantity to meet the expense of heavy war.[2]...**
>
> **The toleration of banks of paper discount costs the United States one-half of their war taxes; or, in other words, doubles the expenses of every war.[3]...**
>
> **The crisis, then, of the abuses of banking is arrived. The banks have pronounced their own sentence of death. Between two and three hundred millions of dollars of their promissory notes are in the hands of the people, for solid produce and property sold, and they [the banks] formally declare that they will not pay them.... Paper was received on a belief that it was cash [gold], and such scenes are now to take place as will open the eyes of credulity and of insanity itself to the**

---

1. **Rothbard, *Mystery,* pp. 198-99.**
2. ***Writings,* Library Edition, Vol. XIV, p. 227.**
3. ***Writings,* Library Edition, Vol. XIII, p. 364.**

> dangers of a Paper medium abandoned to the discretion of avarice and of swindlers. ...
>
> It is a wise rule never to borrow a dollar without laying a tax at the same instant for paying the interest annually and the principal within a given term.[2]... We shall consider ourselves unauthorized to saddle posterity with our debts, and morally bound to pay them ourselves. ... The earth belongs to the living, not the dead.... We may consider each generation as a distinct nation^ with a right to ... bind themselves, but not the succeeding generation. ...
>
> The modern theory of the perpetuation of debt has drenched the earth with blood, and crushed its inhabitants under burdens ever accumulating.[5]

And *still,* Congress did not listen.

SUMMARY

America had its first central bank even before the Constitution was drafted. It was called the Bank of North America and was chartered by the Continental Congress in 1781. Modeled after the Bank of England, it was authorized to issue more paper promissory notes than it held in deposits. In the beginning, these notes were widely circulated and served as a national currency. Although the bank was essentially a private institution, it was designed for the purpose of creating money to lend to the federal government, which it did from the start.

The Bank of North America was riddled with fraud, and it quickly fell into political disfavor. Its inflated bank notes eventually were rejected by ordinary citizens and ceased to circulate outside of the Bank's home city of Philadelphia. Its charter was allowed to expire and, in 1783, it was converted into a purely commercial bank chartered by the state of Pennsylvania.

The advocates of fiat money did not give up. In 1791, the First Bank of the United States (America's *second* central bank) was created by Congress. The new bank was a replica of the first, including fraud. Private investors in the Bank were among the nation's most wealthy and influential citizens, including some Congressmen and Senators. But the largest investment and the

---

1- Letter to Dr. Thomas Cooper, Sept. 10, 1814, *Writings,* Library Edition, Vol. XIV, pp. 187-89.

2. *Writings,* Library Edition, Vol. XIII, p. 269.

3. *Ibid,* p. 358.

4. *Ibid., p. 270.*

5. /Wd., p. 272.

most powerful influence in the new Bank came from the Rothschilds in Europe.

The Bank set about immediately to serve its function of creating money for the government. This led to a massive inflation of the money supply and rising prices. In the first five years, 42% of everything people had saved in the form of money was confiscated through the hidden tax called inflation. This was the same phenomenon that had plagued the colonies less than two decades earlier, but instead of being caused by printing-press money, it was now fueled by fractional-reserve bank notes created by a central bank.

As the time for renewal of the Bank's charter approached, two groups with opposite intentions became strange political allies against it: the Jeffersonians who wanted sound money; and the frontier banks, called wildcatters, who wanted unlimited license to steal. On January 24,1811, the charter was defeated by one vote in the Senate and one in the House. The central bank was gone, but the wildcatters were everywhere.

The War of 1812 was not popular among the American public, and funding would have been impossible through taxes alone. The government chose to fund the war by encouraging wildcat banks to purchase its war-debt bonds and convert them into bank notes which the government then used to purchase war material. Within two years, the nation's money supply had tripled, and so had prices. Once again, the monetary and political scientists had succeeded in fleecing the American public of approximately 66% of all the money they held during that period. And that was on *top* of the 42% fleecing they got a few years earlier by the Bank of the United States.

Chapter Seventeen

A DEN OF VIPERS

The story of the Second Bank of the United States, the nation's third central bank; the election of Andrew Jackson on an anti-bank platform; the battle between President Jackson and the head of the bank, Nicholas Biddle; the deliberate creation of a depression to frighten the public into keeping the bank; Jackson's ultimate victory.

The monetary chaos that existed at the end of the War of 1812, outlined in the previous chapter, was caused by an almost universal fraud within the banking industry. Depositors in good faith placed their gold and silver into banks for safekeeping and for the convenience of using paper money in their everyday transactions. The banks, in turn, promised them they could exchange the paper for their coins whenever they wished. At the same time, however, through the mechanism of fractional-reserve banking, paper money was created far in excess of the value of the coins held in reserve. Since the new money had just as much claim to the coins as the old, the bankers knew that, if a sizable percentage of their customers were to request a withdrawal of their coins, that solemn promise simply could not be kept. This, in fact, is precisely what happened over and over again during that period.

By 1814, Thomas Jefferson had retired to Monticello and had bitterly resigned himself to defeat on the issue of money. In a letter to John Adams he said:

> I have ever been the enemy of banks; not of those discounting for cash [that is, charging interest on loans of *real* money], but of those foisting their own paper into circulation, and thus banishing our cash. My zeal against those institutions was so warm and open at the establishment of the bank of the U.S. that I was derided as a Maniac by the tribe of bank-mongers, who were seeking to filch from the public their swindling and barren gains.... Shall we build an altar to the old paper money of the revolution, which ruined individuals but saved the republic, and burn on that all the bank charters present and future,

> **and their notes with them? For these are to ruin both republic and individuals. This cannot be done. The Mania is too strong. It has seized by its delusions and corruptions all the members of our governments, general, special, and individual.[1]**

Jefferson was right. Congress had neither the wisdom nor the courage to let the free market clean up the mess that remained after the demise of the first bank of the U.S. If it had, the fraud soon would have become understood by the public, the dishonest banks would have folded, the losses would have been taken, and the suffering would have been ended, perhaps forever. Instead, Congress moved to *protect* the banks, to *organize* the fraud, and to *perpetuate* the losses. All of this was accomplished in 1816 when a twenty-year charter was given to the *Second* Bank of the United States.

THE SECOND BANK OF THE UNITED STATES

In every respect the new bank was a carbon copy of the old, with one minor exception. Congress unashamedly extracted from the private investors what amounted to nothing less than a bribe in the form of $1.5 million "in consideration of the exclusive privileges and benefits conferred by this Act."[2] The bankers were glad to pay the fee, not only because it was a modest price for such a profitable enterprise, but also because, as before, they received an immediate government deposit of one-fifth the total capitalization which then was used as the base for manufacturing much of the remaining startup capital. The charter required the Bank to raise a minimum of $7 million in specie, but even in its second year of operation, its specie never rose above $2.5 million.[3] Once again, the monetary and political scientists had carved out their profitable niches, and the gullible taxpayer, his head filled with sweet visions of "banking reform," was left to pick up the tab.

Another important continuity between the old and the new Bank was the concentration of foreign investment. In fact, the largest single block of stock in the new Bank, about one-third in all, was held by this group.[4] It is certainly no exaggeration to say that

---

1. Lester J. Cappon, ed.. *The Adams-Jefferson Letters* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1971), Vol. II, p. 424.

2. Act of 1816, Section 20, 3 Stat, at 191.

3. Rothbard, *Mystery,* p. 203.

4. Krooss, p. 25.

the Second Bank of the United States was rooted as deeply in Britain as it was in America.

The nation's third central bank ran into deep trouble from the start. It had promised to continue the tradition of moderating the other banks by refusing to accept any of their notes unless they were redeemable in specie on demand. But when the other banks returned the gesture and required that the new Bank also pay out specie on *their* demand, it frequently lost its resolve. There was also the tiny matter of corruption. As the Bank's major historian writes: "So many influential people were interested [in the state banks] as stockholders that it was not advisable to give offense by demanding payment in specie, and borrowers were anxious to keep the banks in the humor to lend."[1]

In economics, every policy carries a consequence, and the consequence of the loose monetary policy of the Second Bank of the United States was that America was introduced to her first experience with what now is called the "boom-bust" cycle. Galbraith tells us: "In 1816, the postwar boom was full on; there was especially active speculation in western lands. The new Bank joyously participated."[5]

The Bank had the advantage over its competitors of a federal charter plus the government's agreement to accept its notes in the payment of taxes. But the state banks were by no means left out of the game. It was still within their power to create money through fractional-reserve banking and, thus, to further inflate the amount of the nation's circulating currency. Anxious to get in on this action, Pennsylvania chartered thirty-seven new banks in 1817. That same year, Kentucky followed suit with forty new charters. The total number of banks grew by 46% in just the first two years after the central bank was created. Any spot along the road that had "a church, a tavern, or a blacksmith shop was deemed a suitable place for setting up a bank."[3] In that same time frame, the money supply was expanded by an additional $27.4 million; another taxpayer fleecing of over forty per cent.

---

1. Ralph C.H. Catterall, *Vie Second Bank of the United States* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1902), p. 36.

2. Galbraith, p. 77.

3. Norman Angell, *The Story of Money* (New York: Frederick A. Stokes Co., 1929), p. 279.

THE FIRST BOOM-BUST CYCLE

In the past, the effect of this inflationary process always had been the gradual evaporation of purchasing power and the continuous transfer of property *from* those who produced it *to* those who controlled the government and ran the banks. This time, however, the process took on a new twist. Gradualism was replaced by catastrophism. The monetary scientists, with their hands firmly on the controls of the money machine, now began to throw the levers, first one way, and then the other. The expansion and then *deliberate contraction* of the money supply literally threw the nation into economic convulsions. Why wait for the apples to fall when the harvest can be hastened simply by shaking the tree?

In 1818, the Bank suddenly began to tighten its requirements for new loans and to call in as many of the old loans as possible. This contraction of the money supply was justified to the public then exactly as it is justified today. It was necessary, they said, *to put the brakes on inflation*. The fact that this was the same inflation the Bank had helped to create in the first place, seems to have gone unnoticed.

There is no doubt that many bankers and politicians act in good faith in their attempt to bring under control the inflation they themselves have caused. Not everyone who benefits from the central-bank mechanism fully understands it. Like Frankenstein, they create a monster without realizing they cannot control it. Their crime is one of stupidity, not malice. But stupidity is not a characteristic of the average banker, especially a *central* banker, and we must conclude that many of the monetary scientists are well aware of the monster's power for destruction. At best, they just don't care as long as *they* are safe. And at worst, they perceive that they are in the apple-harvesting business. They deliberately tease and prod the monster in anticipation of his rampage through the village orchards. In the final analysis, of course, it is of little importance whether the shaking of the trees is out of innocence or malice. The end result is the same. My, how the apples do fall.

The country's first experience with a deliberately created monetary contraction began in 1818 when the Bank became concerned about its own ability to survive. Professor Rothbard says:

> **Starting in July 1818, the government and the BUS [Bank of the United States] began to see what dire straits they were in; the**

> enormous inflation of money and credit, aggravated by the massive fraud, had put the BUS in danger of going under and illegally failing to maintain specie payments. Over the next year, the BUS began a series of enormous contractions, forced curtailment of loans, contractions of credit in the south and west.... The contraction of money and credit swiftly brought to the United States its first widespread economic and financial depression. The first nationwide "boom-bust" cycle had arrived in the United States....
>
> The result of this contraction was a rash of defaults, bankruptcies of business and manufacturers, and a liquidation of unsound investments during the boom.[1]

THE CYCLE IS WORSENED BY GOVERNMENT INTERFERENCE

It is widely believed that panics, boom-bust cycles, and depressions are caused by unbridled competition between banks; thus the need for government regulation. The truth is just the opposite. These disruptions in the free market are the result of government *prevention* of competition by the granting of monopolistic power to a *central* bank. In the absence of a monopoly, individual banks may operate in a fraudulent manner only to a limited extent and for a short period of time. Inevitably, they will be exposed by their more honest competitors and will be forced out of business. Yes, their depositors will be injured by the bankruptcy, but the damage will be limited to a relatively few and will occur only now and then. Even geographical regions may be hard hit on occasion, but it will not be a *national* tragedy with *everyone* brought to their knees. The overall economy will absorb the losses, and commerce at large will continue to prosper. Within an environment of prosperity, even those who have been injured by fraudulent banking would have a good chance for rapid recovery. But, when a central bank is allowed to protect the fraudulent operators and to force *all* banks to function the same, the forces of competition can no longer dampen the effect. The expansion becomes universal and gigantic. And, of course, so does the contraction. Except for the bankers and the politicians, *everyone* is injured at the same time; depression is *everywhere;* and recovery is long delayed.

This is exactly what happened in the so-called panic of 1819. In the *Documentary History of Banking and Currency,* Herman Krooss writes:

---

[1] Rothbard, *Mystery,* pp. 204-05. Also see Galbraith, p. 77.

> The Bank, as the largest creditor [to the state banks], had two alternatives: it could write off its debts which of course would wipe out the stockholders' equity and result in bankruptcy, or it could force the state banks to meet their obligations which would mean wholesale bankruptcy among state banks. There was no doubt about the choice.... The pressure placed upon state banks deflated the economy drastically, and as the money supply wilted, the country sank into severe depression.[1]

As historian William Gouge observed: "The Bank was saved, and the people were ruined."[2]

Competition between the national Bank and the state banks during this period had been moved from the open field of the free market to the closed arena of politics. Free-market competition had been replaced by government favoritism in the form of charters which granted the right of monopoly. A federal charter was clearly better than one issued by a state, but the states fought back fiercely with what weapons they possessed, and one of those was the power to tax. Several states began to levy a tax on the paper notes issued by any bank doing business within their borders which was not also locally chartered. The intent, although pretended to be the raising of state revenue, was really to put the federal Bank out of business.

THE SUPREME COURT UPHOLDS THE BANK

When the Bank refused to pay such a tax to the state of Maryland, the issue was taken to the Supreme Court in 1819 as the celebrated case of *McCulloch* v. *Maryland*. The Chief Justice at that time was John Marshall, a leading Federalist and advocate of a strong, centralized federal government. As was expected, the Marshall Court carefully tailored its decision to support the federal government's central bank.

The narrow issue upon which the constitutionality of the Bank was decided was *not* whether Congress had the power to directly or indirectly emit bills of credit or otherwise convert debt into money. If that *had* been the issue, the Court would have been hard pressed to uphold the Bank, for that not only is expressly prohibited by the Constitution, it is precisely what the Bank had been doing all along, and everyone knew it. Instead, the Court focused upon the narrow question of whether or not the Bank was a "necessary and proper" means for Congress to execute any *other* constitutional powers it might have. From *that* perspective, it was unanimously held that the Bank was, indeed, constitutional.

---

[1] Krooss, pp. 190-91.

[2] William M. Gouge, *A Short History of Paper Money and Banking in the United States* (New York: Augustus M. Kelly, 1968), p. 110.

Were the Bank's paper notes the same as Bills of Credit? No, because they were backed by the credit of the Bank, not the federal government. True, the Bank created money, and most of it was used by the government. Never mind all that. The Treasury did not print it, therefore, it was not *government* money.

Was not the Bank the same as an agency of government? No, because merely granting it a national monopoly and enforcing that monopoly with the power of the state does not *necessarily* make it "state action."

Furthermore, the states cannot tax the federal government or any of its instruments, including the Bank of the United States, because, as Marshall stated: "The power to tax is the power to destroy."

Here was another end run around the Constitution, executed this time by the very men who were assumed to be its most loyal defenders.

The Supreme Court had spoken, but the Court of Public Opinion had not yet disposed of the case. During the 1820s, popular sentiment shifted back to the laissez-faire and sound-money principles espoused by the Jeffersonian Republicans. But since the Republican Party had by then abandoned those principles, a new coalition was formed, headed by Martin Van Buren and Andrew Jackson, to resurrect them. It was called the Democratic Party, and one of its agenda items was to abolish the Bank of the United States. After Jackson was elected to the Presidency in 1828, he wasted no time in attempting to build Congressional support for that goal.

NICHOLAS BIDDLE

By this time, the Bank had come under the direction of Nicholas Biddle who was a formidable adversary to Jackson, not only because of the power of his position, but because of his strong will and sense of personal destiny. He was the archetype of the new Eastern Establishment: wealthy, arrogant, ruthless, and brilliant. He had graduated from the University of Pennsylvania at the age of only thirteen, and, as a young man entering business, had fully mastered the secret science of money.

With the ability to control the flow of the nation's credit, Biddle soon became one of the most powerful men in America. This was brought out dramatically when he was asked by a Senate Committee if his bank ever took advantage of its superior position over the state banks. He replied: "Never. There are very few banks which might not have been destroyed by an exertion of the powers of the Bank. None has ever been injured."[1] As Jackson publicly noted a few months later, this was an admission that most of the state banks existed only at the pleasure of the Bank of the United States, and that, of course, meant at the pleasure of Mr. Biddle.

The year was 1832. The Bank's charter was good for another four years. But Biddle decided not to wait that long for Jackson to build his forces. He knew that the President was up for reelection, and he reasoned that, as a candidate, he would hesitate to be too controversial. To criticize the Bank is one thing, but to come down squarely for its elimination altogether would surely cost him many votes. So, Biddle requested Congress to grant an *early* renewal of the charter as a means of softening Jackson's campaign against it. The bill was backed by the Republicans led by Senator John Clay and was passed into law on July 3, just before the election campaigns began in earnest.

JACKSON OVERRIDES CONGRESS

It was brilliant strategy on Biddle's part but it didn't work. Jackson decided to place his entire political career on the line for this one issue and, with perhaps the most passionate message ever delivered to Congress by any President, before or since, he vetoed the measure. The President's biographer, Robert Remini, says: "The veto message hit the nation like a tornado. For it not only cited constitutional arguments against recharter—supposedly the *only* reason for resorting to a veto—but political, social, economic, and nationalistic reasons as well."[2]

Jackson devoted most of his veto message to three general topics: (1) the injustice that is inherent in granting a government-

---

1. J.D. Richardson, *A Compilation of the Messages and Papers of the Presidents, 1789-1908* (Washington: Bureau of National Literature and Art, 1908), Vol. II, p. 581.

2. Robert V. Remini, *The Life of Andrew Jackson* (New York: Harper & Row, 1988), pp. 227-28.

sponsored monopoly to the Bank; (2) the unconstitutionality of the Bank even if it were not unjust; and (3) the danger to the country in having the Bank heavily dominated by foreign investors.

Regarding the injustice of a government-sponsored monopoly, he pointed out that the stock of the Bank was owned only by the richest citizens of the country and that, since the sale of stock was limited to a chosen few with political influence, the common man, not only is unfairly excluded from an opportunity to participate, but he is forced to pay for his banking services far more than they are worth. Unearned profits are bad enough when they are taken from one class of citizens and given to another, but it is even worse when the people receiving those benefits are not even citizens at all but are, in *tact foreigners*. Jackson said:

> **It is not our own citizens only who are to receive the bounty of our Government. More than eight millions of the stock of this bank are held by foreigners. By this act the American Republic proposes virtually to make them a present of some millions of dollars.... It appears that more than a fourth part of the stock is held by foreigners and the residue is held by a few hundred of our own citizens, chiefly of the richest class. For their benefit does this act exclude the whole American people from competition in the purchase of this monopoly and dispose of it for many millions less than it is worth.**[1]

Regarding the issue of constitutionality, he said that he was not bound by the previous decision of the Supreme Court, because the President and Congress had just as much right to decide *for themselves* whether or not a particular law is constitutional. This view, incidentally, was not novel at that time. It is only in relatively recent decades that people have begun to think of the Supreme Court as being *specifically* authorized to pass on this question. In fact, as Jackson correctly pointed out in his veto message, the founding fathers created a government with power divided between the executive, legislative, and judicial branches, and that the purpose of this division was, not merely to divvy up the chores, but to *balance* one branch against the other. The goal was not to make government efficient but to deliberately make it *inefficient*. Each President and each legislator is morally bound, even by oath, to uphold the Constitution. If each of them does not have the power to decide in conscience what *is* constitutional, then taking an oath to uphold it has little meaning.

---

[1] **Krooss, pp. 22-23.**

THE BANK CONTROLLED BY FOREIGN INVESTORS

Regarding the danger to our national security, Jackson returned to the fact that a major portion of the Bank's stockholders were foreigners. Even though foreign investors technically were not allowed to vote their shares, their financial power was so great that the American investors were clearly beholden to them and would likely follow their instructions. Jackson concluded:

> **Is there no danger to our liberty and independence in a bank that in its nature has so little to bind it to our country?... [Is there not] cause to tremble for the purity of our elections in peace and for the independence of our country in war?... Of the course which would be pursued by a bank almost wholly owned by the subjects of a foreign power, and managed by those whose interests, if not affections, would run in the same direction there can be no doubt.... Controlling our currency, receiving our public monies, and holding thousands of our citizens in dependence, it would be more formidable and dangerous than a naval and military power of the enemy.**[1]

Jackson saved the greatest passion of his argument for the end. Speaking now, not to Congress, but to the voters at large, he said:

> **It is to be regretted that the rich and powerful too often bend the acts of government to their selfish purposes. Distinctions in society will always exist under every just government. Equality of talents, of education, or of wealth cannot be produced by human institutions. In the full enjoyment of the gifts of Heaven and the fruits of superior industry, economy, and virtue, every man is equally entitled to protection by law; but when the laws undertake to add to these natural and just advantages artificial distinctions, to grant titles, gratuities, and exclusive privileges, to make the rich richer and the potent more powerful, the humble members of society—the farmers, mechanics, and laborers—who have neither the time nor the means of securing like favors to themselves, have a right to complain of the injustice of their Government. There are no necessary evils in government. Its evils exist only in its abuses. If it would confine itself to equal protection, and, as Heaven does its rains, shower its favor alike on the high and the low, the rich and the poor, it would be an unqualified blessing. In the act before me there seems to be a wide and unnecessary departure from these just principles.**[2]

---

1. **Krooss, pp. 26-27.**
2. ***Ibid.,* pp. 36-37.**

The veto did not defeat the Bank. It was merely a declaration of war. The major battles were yet to come.

BIDDLE'S CONTROL OVER CONGRESS

As Commanding General of the pro-bank forces, Biddle had one powerful advantage over his adversary. For all practical purposes, Congress was in his pocket. Or, more accurately, the product of his generosity was in the pockets of *Congressmen*. Following the Rothschild Formula, Biddle had been careful to reward compliant politicians with success in the business world. Few of them were willing to bite the hand that fed them. Even the great Senator, Daniel Webster, found Hmself kneeling at Biddle's throne. Galbraith says:

> **Biddle was not without resources. In keeping with his belief that banking was the ultimate source of power, he had regularly advanced funds to members of Congress when delay on appropriations bills had held up their pay. Daniel Webster was, at various times, a director of the Bank and on retainer as its counsel. "I believe my retainer has not been renewed or *refreshed* as usual. If it be wished that my relation to the Bank should be continued, it may be well to send me the usual retainers." Numerous other men of distinction had been accommodated, including members of the press.**[1]

Webster is a particularly interesting study in how even so-called "great" men can be compromised by an addiction to wealth. He had always been an advocate of sound money in Congress, yet, as a lawyer on Biddle's payroll, he represented the Bank's position before the Supreme Court in *McCulloch* v. *Maryland*. Much of the twisted logic that allowed the Court to end-run the Constitution and *destroy* sound money came from his pen.

After Jackson's veto of the Bank's charter, Biddle requested Webster to deliver speeches specifically for the purpose of having the Bank reprint them for mass distribution. In one of those speeches, Webster echoed the old refrain that the Bank served as a moderating influence on the nation's other banks and then piously proclaimed: "Congress can alone coin money;... no State (nor even Congress itself) can make anything a tender but gold and silver, in the payment of debts." In an act of astounding hypocrisy, this speech was distributed widely by the very institution that was

---

1. Galbraith, p. 80.
2. Krooss, p. 2.

designed specifically for creating fractional fiat money, *without* gold or silver backing, to function as tender in the payment of debts. Then, as now, most people did not discern between words and actions and believed that this speech, delivered by such a "great" man, was evidence of the Bank's worthiness. Biddle even distributed 300,000 copies of Jackson's veto message, apparently in the belief that many would not read it. Obviously^ if the Bank thought it was so bad as to distribute it, it *must be bad*.

The power of the Bank's money was everywhere. It was as John Randolph, the fiery Old Republican from Virginia, had said: "Every man you meet in this House or out of it, with some rare exceptions, which only serve to prove the rule, is either a stockholder, president, cashier, clerk or doorkeeper, runner, engraver, paper-maker, or mechanic in some other way to a bank."

JACKSON APPEALS DIRECTLY TO THE VOTERS

Congress, the banks, speculators, industrialists, and segments of the press; these were the forces commanded by Biddle. But Jackson had a secret weapon which had never been used before in American politics. That weapon was a direct appeal to the electorate. He took his message on the campaign trail and delivered it in words well chosen to make a lasting impression on the voter. He spoke out against a moneyed aristocracy which had invaded the halls of Congress, impaired the morals of the people, threatened their liberty, and subverted the electoral process. The Bank, he said, was a hydra-headed monster eating the flesh of the common man. He swore to do battle with the monster and slay it or be slain by it. He bellowed his position to every crowd he could reach: *Bank and no Jackson, or no bank and Jackson?*

On the subject of paper money, the President was equally emphatic. His biographer describes the campaign:

> On his homeward journey he reportedly paid all his expenses in gold. "No more paper money, you see, fellow citizens," he remarked with each gold payment, "if I can only put down this Nicholas Biddle and his monster bank." Gold, hardly the popular medium of exchange, was held up to the people as the safe and sound currency

---

1. Remini, *Life,* p. 234.
2. *Annals of Congress,* 14 Cong., 1st sess., pp. 1066,1110 ff.
3. Robert Remini, *Andrew Jackson and the Course of American Freedom, 1822-1832* (New York: Harper & Row, 1981), p. 373.

> **which Jackson and his administration hoped to restore to regular use. Unlike paper money, gold represented real value and true worth. It was the coin of honest men. Rag money, on the other hand, was the instrument of banks and swindlers to corrupt and cheat an innocent and virtuous public.**[1]

Jackson had awakened the indignation of the American people. When the November ballots were cast, he received a mammoth vote of confidence. He received fifty-five per cent of the popular vote (with thirty-seven per cent for Clay, eight per cent for Wirt) and eighty per cent of the vote in the electoral college. But the war *still* was not over. Jackson won the election, but the Bank had four more years to operate, and it intended to use those years to sway public sentiment back to its support. The biggest battles were yet to come.

JACKSON REMOVES FEDERAL DEPOSITS

Jackson did not wait to act. He knew that time would be used as a weapon against him. "The hydra of corruption is only *scotched, not dead,*" he said.[2] Soon after the election, he ordered Secretary of the Treasury, William Duane, to place all new deposits of the federal government into various state banks around the country and to pay current expenses out of the funds still held by the Bank of the United States until that account was drained to zero. Without the use of federal money, surely the monster would perish. To Jackson's chagrin, however, Duane balked at the order out of a sincere conviction that, to do so, would be disruptive to the economy.

This was not the first time a Cabinet officer and a President had come to disagreement. In the past, however, the impasse had always been resolved by the resignation of the Secretary. This time was different. Duane refused to resign, and that raised an interesting constitutional question. A President could appoint a member of the executive branch only with the consent of the Senate. The Constitution was silent, however, on the matter of dismissal. Did that, too, require Senate approval? The implication was that it did, but the issue had never been tested.

Jackson had no patience for such theoretical questions. The letter arrived promptly on Duane's desk: "Your further services as

---

1. Remini, *Life,* pp. 234-35.
2. Remini, *Course,* p. 52.

Secretary of the Treasury are no longer required." On October 1, 1833, federal deposits began to move out of the Bank.

Jackson felt that he finally had the monster firmly within his grasp. "I have it chained," he said.[2] With gleeful confidence, he added: "I am ready with the screws to draw every tooth and then the stumps." If I am not mistaken, he went on, we will have "Mr. Biddle and his Bank as quiet and harmless as a *lamb* in six weeks."[3]

BIDDLE DELIBERATELY CREATES MONETARY CHAOS

The President's view of the Bank's meek captivity was premature, to say the least. Biddle responded, not like a lamb, but more like a wounded lion. His plan was to rapidly contract the nation's money supply and create another panic-depression similar to the one the Bank had created thirteen years earlier. This then could be blamed on Jackson's withdrawal of federal deposits, and the resulting backlash surely would cause Congress to override the President's veto. Remini tells us:

> Biddle counterattacked. He initiated a general curtailment of loans throughout the entire banking system.... It marked the beginning of a bone-crushing struggle between a powerful financier and a determined and equally powerful politician. Biddle understood what he was about. He knew that if he brought enough pressure and agony to the money market, only then could he force the President to restore the deposits. He almost gloated. "This worthy President thinks that because he has scalped Indians and imprisoned Judges, he is to have his way with the Bank. He is mistaken."[4]...
>
> "The ties of party allegiance can only be broken," he declared, "by the actual conviction of existing distress in the community." And such distress, of course, would eventually put everything to rights. "Nothing but widespread suffering will produce any effect on Congress.... Our only safety is in pursuing a steady course of firm restriction—and I have no doubt that such a course will ultimately lead to restoration of the currency and the recharter of the Bank.[5]... My

---

1. William J. Duane, *Narrative and Correspondence Concerning the Removal of the Deposits and Occurrences Connected Therewith* (Philadelphia: n.p., 1838), pp. 101-03. Quoted by Remini, *Life,* p. 264.
2. Quoted by Herman J. Viola, *Andrew Jackson* (New York: Chelsea House, 1986), p. 88.
3. A letter from Jackson to Van Buren, November 19, 1833, *Van Buren Papers,* Library of Congress. Quoted by Remini, *Life,* p. 264.
4. Remini, *Life,* p. 265.
5. Remini, *Democracy,* p. 111.

> **own course is decided. All other banks and all the merchants may break, but the Bank of the United States shall not break."[1]**

Biddle, therefore, decided to use the American people as sacrificial pawns in the giant chess match for the Bank's survival. The resulting economic chaos is not difficult to imagine. Biddle's contraction of the money supply was executed at a particularly vulnerable moment. Business had been expanding as a result of the Bank's prior easy credit and now was dependent on it. Also, the tariff came due at precisely this time, placing still more demand for cash and credit. Losses were sustained everywhere, wages and prices sagged, men were put out of work, companies went bankrupt. By the time Congress reconvened in December, in what was called the "Panic Session," the nation was in an uproar. Newspapers editorialized with alarm, and letters of angry protest flooded into Washington.

As the pressure continued to build in Congress, it began to look as though Biddle's plan would work. In the public eye, it was Jackson who was solely responsible for the nation's woes. It was *his* arrogant removal of Secretary Duane; it was *his* foolish insistence on removing the deposits; it was *his* obstinate opposition to Congress.

JACKSON IS CENSURED BY THE SENATE

For one-hundred days, a "phalanx of orators" daily excoriated the President for his arrogant and harmful conduct. At length, a resolution of censure was introduced into the Senate and, on March 28, 1834, it was passed by a vote of 26 to 20. This was the first time that a President had ever been censured by Congress, and it was a savage blow to Jackson's pride. Biddle, at last, had the upper hand.

The President rumbled around the White House in a fit of rage. "You are a den of vipers," he said to a delegation of the Bank's supporters. "I intend to rout you out and by the Eternal God I will rout you out."[2]

The censure was by no means indicative of popular sentiment. Even in the Senate, which was a hotbed of pro-Bank support, a swing of only three votes would have defeated the measure.

1- Biddle to William Appleton, January 27, 1834, and to J.G. Watmough, February 8, 1834. Nicholas Biddle, *Correspondence, 1807-1844,* Reginald C. McGrane, ed. (New York: Houghton Mifflin, 1919), pp. 219, 221.

2- Quoted by Viola, p. 86.

During all this time, imperceptibly at first, but quickly growing, the public had been learning the truth. Jackson, of course, was doing everything within his power to hasten the process, but other factors also were at work, not the least of which was Biddle himself. So large was his ego that he could not keep from boasting in public about his plan to deliberately disrupt the economy. People heard these boasts and they *believed* him. The turning point came when Governor George Wolf of Pennsylvania, the Bank's home state, came out publicly with a strong denunciation of both the Bank and Biddle. This was like the starting bell at a horse race. With the Bank's home state turned against it, there was no one left to defend it and, literally within days, the mood of the country and of Congress changed.

The Democrats wasted no time consolidating these unexpected gains. To test their strength on the issue, on April 4, 1834, they called for a vote in the House on a series of resolutions which were aimed at nullifying the censure in the Senate. In essence, the resolutions stated that the House totally approved the President's bank policy. The first resolution, passed by a vote of 134 to 82, declared that the Bank of the United States "ought not to be rechartered." The second, passed by a vote of 118 to 103, agreed that the deposits "ought not to be restored." And the third, passed by an overwhelming vote of 175 to 42, called for the establishment of a special committee of Congress to investigate whether the Bank had deliberately instigated the current economic crisis. It was an overwhelming victory for Jackson which would be culminated a few years later with the passage of a resolution in the Senate which formally rescinded the previous vote of censure.

BIDDLE DEFIES CONGRESS

When the investigating committee arrived at the Bank's doors in Philadelphia armed with a subpoena to examine the books, Biddle flatly refused. Nor would he allow inspection of correspondence with Congressmen relating to their personal loans and advances. And he steadfastly refused to testify before the committee back in Washington. For lesser mortals, such action would have resulted in citations of contempt of Congress and would have carried stiff fines or imprisonment. But not for Nicholas Biddle. Remini explains:

> The committeemen demanded a citation for contempt, but many southern Democrats opposed this extreme action, and refused to cooperate. As Biddle bemusedly observed, it would be ironic if he went to prison "by the votes of members of Congress because I would not give up to their enemies their confidential letters." Although Biddle escaped a contempt citation, his outrageous defiance of the House only condemned him still further in the eyes of the American public.[1]

The Bank was still alive but had been mortally wounded. By this time, Jackson had completely paid off the national debt incurred by the War of 1812 and had even run up a surplus. In fact, he ordered the Treasury to *give back to the states* more than $35 million, which was used for the construction of a wide variety of public works.

With these accomplishments close on the heels of his victory over the Bank, the President had earned the undying hatred of monetary scientists, both in America and abroad. It is not surprising, therefore, that on January 30, 1835, an assassination attempt was made against him. Miraculously, both pistols of the assailant misfired, and Jackson was spared by a quirk of fate. It was the first such attempt to be made against the life of a President of the United States. The would-be assassin was Richard Lawrence who either was truly insane or who *pretended* to be insane to escape harsh punishment. At any rate, Lawrence was found not guilty due to insanity.[2] Later, he boasted to friends that he had been in touch with powerful people in Europe who had promised to protect him from punishment should he be caught.[3]

The ending to this saga holds no surprises. The Bank's charter expired in 1836 and it was restructured as a state bank by the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania. After a spree of speculation in cotton, lavish advances to the Bank's officers, and the suspension of payment in specie, Biddle was arrested and charged with fraud. Although not convicted, he was still undergoing civil litigation when he died. Within five years, the establishment was forced to close its doors forever, and America's third experience with central banking came to a close.

---

1. Remini, *Life,* p. 274.
2. Remini, *Democracy,* p. 228-29.
3. Robert J. Donovan, *The Assassins* (New York: Harper & Brothers, 1952), p. 83.

SOME BAD MIXED IN WITH THE GOOD

It is tempting to let the story stop right there and allow Jackson to forever wear the crown of hero and dragon slayer. But a more balanced view of these events leads to the conclusion that the forces of virtue were not without contamination. Jackson represented the position of those who wanted only gold and silver for the nation's money. But this group was not large enough to match the power of the Bank. He was joined in that battle by many groups which hated the Bank for *other,* less admirable reasons. State banks and business interests along the expanding frontier, for example, were not the least interested in Constitutional money. They wanted just the *opposite*. They viewed the modest restraints of the federal Bank as *excessive*. With the federal Bank out of the way, they anticipated no restraints at all. As we shall see in the following section, it is ironic that this is the group that got what it wanted, not the hard-money Jacksonians.

One cannot blame Jackson for accepting the support of these groups in his effort to slay the dragon. In politics, it often is necessary to make temporary alliances with one's opponents to achieve occasional common objectives. But Jackson went further than that. More than any other President before him, and rivalled by only a few since, he changed the character of American politics. He led the nation away from the new concept of diffused powers, carefully worked out by the founding fathers, back toward the Old-World tradition of concentration and monarchy. By strongly challenging the right of the States to secede from the Union, he set into motion a concept that, not only would lead to civil war, but which would put an end forever to the ability of the states to check the expanding power of the federal government. No longer was the Union to be based on the principle of consent of the governed. It was now to be based on force of arms. And through the manipulation of voter passion on the Bank issue, he changed the perception of the role of President from *public servant* to *national leader*.

At the height of the battle against the Bank, when Jackson was making a direct appeal to the voters for support, he declared: "The President is the direct representative of the people." To fully comprehend the significance of that statement, it must be remembered that the plan of the Constitution was for the President to be elected indirectly by the state legislatures, not by the voters at large.

After fighting a war to throw off the rule of King George, III, the founding fathers wanted nothing more to do with kings of any kind, and they went out of their way to make sure that the president of the United States would never be looked upon as such. They realized that an elected ruler, unless his power is carefully limited and diffused, can become just as despotic as an unelected one. Article 2, Section 1, of the Constitution, therefore, established an electoral college to select the President.

Members of the college are to be appointed by the states. Congressmen, Senators, or other officers of the federal government are specifically and wisely excluded. The college is supposed to select a President strictly on the basis of his integrity and executive ability, not his party label, political connections, good looks, charisma, or stirring orations. The people may elect their Congressmen, but the electoral college chooses the President. Thus, it was intended that the President would have a different constituency from Congress, and this difference was important to insure the balance of power that the framers of the Constitution worked so hard to create. As a means of keeping government under control, it was a truly brilliant piece of political engineering.

All of that was changed in the election of 1832. One of the sad facts of history is that good causes often are the occasion for establishing bad precedents. Jackson's fight against the Bank of the United States was one of those events.

SUMMARY

The government had encouraged widespread banking fraud during the War of 1812 as an expedient for paying its bills, and this had left the nation in monetary chaos. At the end of the war, instead of allowing the fraudulent banks to fall and letting the free market heal the damage, Congress decided to protect the banks, to organize the fraud, and to perpetuate the losses. It did this by creating the nation's third central bank called the Second Bank of the United States.

The new bank was almost an exact carbon copy of the previous one. It was authorized to create money for the federal government and to regulate state banks. It influenced larger amounts of capital and was better organized across state lines than the old bank. Consequently its policies had a greater impact on the creation and extinguishing of the nation's money supply. For the first time in our history, the effects began to ricochet across the entire country at once instead of being confined to geographical regions. The age of the boom-bust cycle had at last arrived in America.

In 1820, public opinion began to swing back in favor of the sound-money principles espoused by the Jeffersonian Republicans. But since the Republican Party had by then abandoned those principles, a new coalition was formed, headed by Martin Van Buren and Andrew Jackson, called the Democrat Party. One of its primary platforms was the abolishment of the Bank. After Jackson was elected in 1828, he began in full earnest to bring that about.

The head of the Bank was a formidable adversary by the name of Nicholas Biddle. Biddle, not only possessed great personal abilities, but many members of Congress were indebted to him for business favors. Consequently, the Bank had many political friends.

As Jackson's first term of office neared its end, Biddle asked Congress for an early renewal of the Bank's charter, hoping that Jackson would not risk controversy in a reelection year. The bill was easily passed, but Jackson accepted the challenge and vetoed the measure. Thus, a battle over the Bank's future became the primary presidential campaign issue.

Jackson was reelected by a large margin, and one of his first acts was to remove federal deposits from the Bank and place them into private, regional banks. Biddle counterattacked by contracting credit and calling in loans. This was calculated to shrink the money supply and trigger a national panic-depression, which it did. He publicly blamed the downturn on Jackson's removal of deposits.

The plan almost worked. Biddle's political allies succeeded in having Jackson officially censured in the Senate. However, when the truth about Biddle's strategy finally leaked out, it backfired against him. He was called before a special Congressional investigative committee to explain his actions, the censure against Jackson was rescinded, and the nation's third central bank passed into oblivion.

Chapter Eighteen

LOAVES AND FISHES AND CIVIL WAR

Attempts to stabilize the banking system by political measures, including regulation of fractional-reserve ratios and establishing bank-failure insurance funds; the failure of all such schemes; the resulting economic conditions that led up to the Civil War.

As detailed in the previous chapter, by 1836 the hydra-headed monster had been slain and, true to the President's campaign promise, the nation had *Jackson and no Bank.*

In April of that year, the Administration moved to consolidate its victory and pushed a series of monetary reforms through Congress. One of these required all banks to cease issuing paper notes under five dollars. The figure later was increased to twenty dollars, and its purpose was to compel the nation to return to the use of gold and silver coin for everyday use, leaving bank notes primarily for large commercial transactions. The White House also announced that, in the future, all federal land sales would require full payment in "lawful money," which, of course, meant precious-metal coins.[1]

It must be remembered, however, that even though the Bank of the United States was dead, *banking* was very much alive, and so were Jackson's enemies. Much to the disappointment of the hard-money advocates, these measures were not sufficient to usher in the millennium. Not only were they inadequate by themselves, they were soon circumvented by the development of new banking techniques and eventually were dismantled completely by a fickle Congress.

---

[1] Otto Scott, *The Secret Six: The Fool as Martyr,* Vol. Ill of *The Sacred Fool Quartet* (Columbia, South Carolina: Foundation for American Education, 1979), p. 115.

The prohibition against bank notes of small denomination deserves special notice. It was an excellent concept, but what the legislators failed to understand, or at least *pretended* not to understand, was that banks at this time were increasingly dealing with *checkbook* money, technically called demand deposits. As people gradually became accustomed to this new method of transferring funds, the importance of bank notes declined. Placing a limit on the issuance of bank notes without any restriction on the creation of demand deposits was an exercise in futility.

In 1837, as the Bank of the United States slipped into history, the nation was at the tail end of an economic boom. Professor Rothbard tells us that this expansion and the accompanying inflation had been "fueled by the central bank."[1] Total money in circulation had risen by eighty-four per cent in just four years. Then, as inevitable as the setting sun, that portion of the money supply which had been created by fractional-reserve banking—in other words, the part which was backed by *nothing*—began to contract. Sixteen per cent of all the nation's money totally disappeared in just that first year. Again, men were put out of work, businesses went into bankruptcy, homes and savings were lost. Many banks folded also, but their operators walked away with the spoils. Only the depositors were left holding the empty bag.

There were numerous proposals advanced regarding how to infuse stability into the banking system. But, then as now, none of them dealt with the real problem, which was fractional-reserve banking itself. As Groseclose observed, these proposals were "each according to a particular theory of how to multiply loaves and fishes, or how to make candy wool."[2] Since the proposals presented then are identical to the ones being offered today, and since each of them was actually tried, it would seem appropriate to inquire into the actual results of these experiments.

PROPOSAL TO BASE MONEY ON BANK ASSETS

There were four schools of thought regarding the multiplication of loaves and fishes. The first of these was that the creation of money should be limited to a ratio of the bank's assets. This was the formula that was tried in the New England states. In Massachusetts, for example, the issuance of bank notes was limited to two times the amount of the bank's capital actually held in the vault. Furthermore, this could not be in the form of paper money, bonds, securities, or other debt instruments; it had to be strictly gold or silver coin. Also, the banks were limited in the number of small-denomination bank notes they could issue and, in this, Massachusetts served as the model for Jackson's attempted reform at the federal level. By previous standards, and certainly by the standards that prevail today, this was an exceptionally conservative policy. In fact, even during the previous stress of the War of 1812, when banks were failing by the hundreds across the country, the Massachusetts banks, and most of the other New England banks as well, were able to maintain full payment in specie.

---

[1] **Rothbard, *Mystery,* p. 211.**

[2] **Groseclose, *Money and Man,* p. 184.**

With the passage of time, however, the limit on bank notes became less important, because the banks now were using *checkbook* money instead. Their paper notes may have been limited to two-hundred per cent of their capital, but there was no effective limit to the numbers they could ink into people's deposit books. So the "fraction" in fractional-reserve banking began to shrink again. Consequently, the monetary contraction of 1837 "was like a scythe over the crop," says Groseclose, and thirty-two Massachusetts banks collapsed between that year and 1844.[1]

The state attempted to patch the system by instituting a network of bank examiners and by increasing the liability of bank stockholders for the lost funds of their depositors, but the underlying problem was *still* ignored. A new crop of banks then sprang into existence and a new wave of speculative mania swept through the economy. By 1862, even though the law still limited bank notes to two times capital, the banks had created $73,685,000 in total money, including checkbook money. This was supported by a base of only $9,595,000 of specie, a reserve of only thirteen per cent. Massachusetts had not solved the problem.

PROPOSAL TO PROTECT DEPOSITS WITH A SAFETY FUND

The second theory about how to have stable banking *and* allow the banks to create money out of nothing was to create a "safety fund." This fund, supported by all the banks, would come to the aid of any member which needed an emergency loan to cover a sudden drain of its reserves. It was the forerunner of today's Federal Deposit Insurance Corporation and related agencies.

---

[1] **Groseclose, *Money and Man,* p. 185.**

The first safety fund was established in New York in 1829. The law required each bank to contribute annually one-half of one per cent of its capital stock until the total reached three per cent. The fund was first put to the test during the crisis of 1837, and was almost swamped. The only thing that saved it was that the state agreed to accept the worthless notes of all the defunct banks as payment for canal tolls. In other words, the taxpayers were compelled to make up the difference. When the fund was exhausted, the solvent banks were punished by being forced to pay for the deficits of the insolvent ones. Naturally, this impelled *all* banks to act more recklessly. Why not? The up side was that profits would be higher—for a time, at least—and the down side was that, if recklessness got them into trouble, the safety fund would bail them out. The result was that the system provided a penalty for prudence and an incentive for recklessness; a situation with perfect parallel to that which exists in the banking system today. Groseclose says:

> The conservatively managed institutions, lending upon the safer risks, upon which naturally the margins of profit were smaller, found the assessments burdensome, and were compelled to embark upon the more speculative business in order to carry the charges.[1]

Gradually, all banks sank into the quagmire and, in 1857, the Massachusetts safety-fund was abandoned.

Michigan's experience with a safety fund was perhaps more typical of the period. It was established in 1836 and was completely blown away the next year, during the panic of 1837.

PROPOSAL TO BASE MONEY ON SECURITIES

The third proposal for maintaining a stable monetary system while, at the same time, allowing the banks to operate fraudulently was to base the money supply on government securities; in other words, upon paper certificates of government debt. This was the scheme adopted in the 1850s by Illinois, Indiana, Wisconsin and other Midwestern states. It also set the precedent for the Federal Reserve System sixty years later. Groseclose continues:

---

[1] Groseclose, *Money and Man,* p. 186.

> **So rampant was the note-issue mania that the notes came to be called by the appropriate name of "red dog" and "wild cat" currency.... The rising crop of banks created a fictitious demand and a rising market for securities (to be used as capital stock) and a consequent stimulus to the creation of public debt by the issue of securities. This was followed by more bank notes being issued against the securities, demand increasing and the market rising, more securities issues, more bank notes, and so on in an endless chain of debt creation and the inflation of paper wealth. The process was finally brought to a stop by the panic of 1857.[1]**

PROPOSAL TO BACK MONEY WITH STATE CREDIT

The fourth proposal for producing something out of nothing was to back the issuance of money by the full faith and credit of the state. This was the method tried by many of the Southern states and it, too, has survived to become one of the cornerstones of our modern-day banking system.

Alabama, for example, in 1835 created a state bank funded by a public bond issue of $13,800,000. Instant money flooded through the economy and people were joyous over the miracle prosperity. The legislators were so intoxicated with the scheme that they completely abolished direct taxation and decided to run the government on bank money instead. In other words, instead of raising state revenue through taxes, they found it easier to raise it through inflation.

Like all the others, this bubble also burst in the panic of 1837. A postmortem examination of the Bank showed that $6,000,000 of its assets were completely worthless. The people who had loaned their real money to the venture, backed by the full faith and credit of the state, lost almost all of their investment—in *addition* to what they had paid through inflation.

Mississippi put its full faith and credit behind a state bank in 1838 and issued $15,000,000 in bonds as backing for its bank notes. The bank was belly-up within four years, and the state completely repudiated its obligations on the bonds. This infuriated the bond holders, particularly the *British* financiers who had purchased a large portion of the issue. The devastating effect upon the state and its people is described by Henry Poor:

---

[1] Groseclose, *Money and Man,* pp. 188-89.

> The $48,000,000 of the bank's loans were never paid; the $23,000,000 of notes and deposits were never redeemed. The whole system fell, a huge and shapeless wreck, leaving the people of the State very much as they came into the world.... Everybody was in debt, without any possible means of payment. Lands became worthless, for the reason that no one had any money to pay for them.... Such numbers of people fled ... from the State that the common return upon legal processes against debtors was in the very abbreviated form "G.T.T." — gone to Texas.[1]

Money, based on the full faith and credit of the state, met similar fates in Illinois, Kentucky, Florida, Tennessee, and Louisiana. When the state bank collapsed in Illinois in 1825, all of the "full-faith" bank notes left in its possession were ceremoniously burned at the public square. Another bank was formed in 1835 and collapsed in 1842. So devastating were these experiences that the Illinois Constitution of 1848 stipulated that, henceforth, the state should never again create a bank or own banking stock.

In Arkansas, even real estate was tried as a magic wand. Subscribers to the state bank, instead of putting up cash, were allowed merely to pledge their real estate holdings as collateral. The bank notes rapidly plummeted in value to only twenty-five per cent of their face amount, and within four years, the bank was gone.

THE MIRAGE OF FREE BANKING

There was a parallel development at this time called "free banking." The name is an insult to truth. What was called free banking was merely the conversion of banks from corporations to private associations. Aside from no longer receiving a charter from the state, practically every other aspect of the system remained the same, including a multitude of government controls, regulations, supports, and other blocks against the free market. George Selgin reminds us that "permission to set up a bank was usually accompanied by numerous restrictions, including especially required loans to the state."[2]

---

[1] Henry V. Poor, *Money and Its Laws* (London: Henry S. King and Co., 1877), p. 540.

[2] George A. Selgin, *The Theory of Free Banking: Money Supply under Competitive Note Issue* (Totowa, New Jersey: Rowman & Littlefield, 1988), p. 13.

The free banks were no less fraudulent than the chartered banks. The old custom was revived of rushing gold coins from one bank to another just ahead of the bank examiners, and of "putting a ballast of lead, broken glass and (appropriately) ten-penny nails in the box under a thinner covering of gold coins."[1] When one such free bank collapsed in Massachusetts, it was discovered that its bank note circulation of $500,000 was backed by exactly $86.48[2]

Professor Hans Sennholz writes:

> **Although economists disagree on many things, most see eye to eye on their acceptance of political control.... These economists invariably point at American money and banking before the Civil War which, in their judgment, confirms their belief. In particular, they cite the "Free Banking Era" of 1838-1860 as a frightening example of turbulent banking and, therefore, applaud the legislation that strengthened the role of government.**
>
> **In reality, the instability experienced during the Free Banking Era was not caused by anything inherent in banking, but resulted from extensive political intervention.... "Free banking" acts ... did not repeal burdensome statutory provisions and regulatory directives. In fact they added a few.**[3]

For banking to have been truly free, the states would have had to do only two things: (1) enforce banking contracts the same as any other contract, and then (2) step out of the picture. By enforcing banking contracts, the executives of any bank which failed to redeem its currency in specie would have been sent to prison, an eventuality which soon would have put a halt to currency overissue. By stepping out of the picture and dropping the pretense of protecting the public with a barrage of rules, regulations, safety funds, and guarantees, people would have realized that it was *their* responsibility to be cautious and informed. But, instead, the banks continued to enjoy the special privilege of suspending payment without punishment, and the politicians clamored to convince the voters that they were taking care of everything.

In short, throughout this entire period of bank failures, economic chaos, and fleecing of both investors and taxpayers, America

---

1- Galbraith, p. 87.

2. Charles Beard, *The Rise of American Civilization* (New York: Macmillan, 1930), Vol. I, pp. 429-30.

3. "Old Banking Myths," by Hans F. Sennholz, *The Freeman* (Irvington-on-Hudson, New York), May, 1989, pp. 175-76.

tried everything *except* full redemption by gold and silver. As the name of Andrew Jackson faded into history, so did the dream of honest banking.

Not all banks were corrupt, and certainly not all bankers were conspirators against the public. There were many examples of honest men striving to act in an ethical manner in the discharge of their fiduciary responsibilities. But they were severely hampered by the system within which they labored, a system which, as previously illustrated, punished prudence and rewarded recklessness. In balance, the prudent banker was pushed aside by the mainstream and became but a footnote to the history of that period.

INDUSTRIAL EXPANSION IN SPITE OF DISHONEST BANKING

Another positive aspect to the picture is that it was during this same time that many business enterprises came into being and greatly prospered, albeit at the expense of those who had no desire to contribute. The great canals were dug, the railroads pushed back the frontier, boom towns sprang up along the way, prairies were turned into agricultural land, and new businesses followed in their wake. Much of this expansion was facilitated by a flood of fraudulent money created by the banks. Apologists for fractional-reserve banking have been prone to look at this development and conclude that, in net balance, it was a good thing. The fact that some people were cheated in order for others to prosper did not seem to be important. America just wouldn't have grown and prospered without funny money. Galbraith, for example, exudes:

> As civilization, or some approximation, came to an Indiana or Michigan crossroads in the 1830s or 1840s, so did a bank. Its notes, when used and loaned to a farmer to buy land, livestock, feed, seed, food or simple equipment, put him into business. If he and others prospered and paid off their loans, the bank survived. If he and others did not so prosper and pay, the bank failed, and someone—perhaps a local creditor, perhaps an eastern supplier—was left holding the worthless notes. But some borrowers from this bank were by now in business. Somewhere, someone holding the notes had made an involuntary contribution to the winning of the West.... The [banking] anarchy served the frontier far better than a more orderly system that kept a tight hand on credit could have done.[1]

---

1. Galbraith, p. 85.

William Greider continues this rationale:

> **"Reckless, booming anarchy," in short, produced fundamental progress. It was not a stable system, racked as it was with bank failures and collapsed business ventures, outrageous speculation and defaulted loans. Yet it was also energetic and inventive, creating permanent economic growth that endured after the froth had blown away.**

This, of course, is a classic example of the failure of liberal economics. When evaluating a policy, it focuses only on *one* beneficial consequence for *one* group of people and ignores the *multitude* of harmful effects which befall *all other groups*. Yes, if we look only at the frontiersmen who acquired new ranches and established new business, the fractional-reserve system looks pretty good. But, if we add in to the equation all the financial losses to all of the people who were victimized by the system—what Galbraith calls "an involuntary contribution" and what Greider lightly dismisses as "froth"—then the product is zero at best and, in terms of morality, is deeply in the negative.

Galbraith, Greider, and other popular economists assume that the West could not possibly have been won with honest banking. Logic does not support such a conclusion. There is every reason to believe that the bank failures and the resulting business failures *on the frontier* all but canceled out the gains that were made by hard work and honest industry. Had these destructive convulsions been absent, as most of them would have been under a less chaotic system, there likely would have been fewer business starts, but a greater number would have *finished,* and it is entirely possible that the West would have been won even faster than it was.

It's too bad the theory has never been tried.

THE UNION IN JEOPARDY

As chronicled in a previous section, economic conflict has always played a major role in fomenting war. There is no time in American history in which there was more economic conflict between segments of the population than there was prior to the Civil War. It is not surprising, therefore, that this period led directly into the nation's bloodiest war, made all the more tragic because it pitted brother against brother.

---

1. Greider, p. 259.

There are many popular myths about the cause of the War Between the States. Just as the Bolshevik Revolution is commonly believed to have been a spontaneous mass uprising against a tyrannical aristocracy, so, too, it is generally accepted that the Civil War was fought over the issue of slavery. That, at best, is a half-truth. Slavery was *an* issue, but the primary force for war was a clash between the economic interests of the North and the South. Even the issue of slavery itself was based on economics. It may have been a moral issue in the North where prosperity was derived from the machines of heavy industry, but in the agrarian South, where fields had to be tended by vast work forces of human labor, the issue was primarily a matter of economics.

The relative unimportance of slavery as a cause for war was made clear by Lincoln himself during his campaign for the Presidency in 1860, and he repeated that message in his first inaugural address:

> Apprehension seems to exist among the people of the Southern States that by the accession of a Republican administration their property and their peace and personal security are to be endangered.... I have no purpose, directly or indirectly, to interfere with the institution of slavery in the states where it now exists. I believe I have no lawful right to do so, and I have no inclination to do so.[1]

Even after the outbreak of war in 1861, Lincoln confirmed his previous stand. He declared:

> My paramount object in this struggle is to save the Union, and it is *not* either to save or destroy slavery. If I could save the Union without freeing any slave, I would do it; and if I could save it by freeing *all* the slaves, I would do it; and if I could do it by freeing some and leaving others alone, I would also do that.[2]

It may come as a surprise to learn that, by strict definition, Abraham Lincoln was a white supremacist. In his fourth debate with Senator Stephen Douglas, he addressed the subject bluntly:

> I am not nor ever have been in favor of bringing about in any way the social and political equality of the white and black races—that I am

---

[1] Don E. Fehrenbacher, ed., *Abraham Lincoln: Speeches and Writings, 1859-1865* (New York: Library of America, 1989), p. 215.

[2] Quoted by Robert L. Polley, ed., *Lincoln: His Words and His World* (Waukesha, Wisconsin: Country Beautiful Foundation, 1965), p. 54.

> not nor ever have been in favor of making voters or jurors of Negroes, nor of qualifying them to hold office, nor to intermarry with white people; and I will say in addition to this that there is a physical difference between the white and black races which I believe will forever forbid the two races living together on terms of social and political equality. And inasmuch as they cannot so live, while they do remain together there must be the position of superior and inferior, and I as much as any other man am in favor of having the superior position assigned to the white race.[1]

This is not to say that Lincoln was indifferent to the institution of slavery, for he felt strongly that it was a violation of personal and national morality, but he also knew that slavery was gradually being swept away all over the world—with the possible exception of Africa itself—and he believed that it would soon disappear in America simply by allowing the natural forces of enlightenment to work their way through the political system. He feared—and rightly so—that to demand immediate and total reform, not only would destroy the Union, it would lead to massive bloodshed and more human suffering than was endured even under slavery itself. He said:

> I have not allowed myself to forget that the abolition of the Slave trade by Great Britain was agitated a hundred years before it was a final success; that the measure had its open fire-eating opponents; its stealthy "don't-care" opponents; its dollar-and-cent opponents; its inferior-race opponents; its Negro-equality opponents; and its religion and good-order opponents; that all these opponents got offices, and their adversaries got none. But I have also remembered that though they blazed like tallow-candles for a century, at last they flickered in the socket, died out, stank in the dark for a brief season, and were remembered no more, even by the smell. School boys know that Wilbeforce and Granville Sharpe helped that cause forward; but who can now name a single man who labored to retard it? Remembering these things I cannot but regard it as possible that the higher object of this contest may not be completely attained within the term of my natural life.

If Lincoln's primary goal in the War was not the abolition of slavery but simply to preserve the Union, the question arises: Why did the Union *need* preserving? Or, more pointedly, why did the Southern states want to secede?

1- Fehrenbacher, p. 636.

. *Ibid.,* p. 438.

LEGAL PLUNDER, NOT SLAVERY, THE CAUSE OF WAR

The South, being predominantly an agricultural region, had to import practically all of its manufactured goods from the Northern states or from Europe, both of which reciprocated by providing a market for the South's cotton. However, many of the textiles and manufactured items were considerably cheaper from Europe, even after the cost of shipping had been added. The Southern states, therefore, often found it to their advantage to purchase these European goods rather than those made in the North. This put considerable competitive pressure on the American manufacturers to lower their prices and operate more efficiently.

The Republicans were not satisfied with that arrangement. They decided to use the power of the federal government to tip the scales of competition in their favor. Claiming that this was in the "national interest," they levied stiff import duties on almost every item coming from Europe that was also manufactured in the North. Not surprisingly, there was no duty applied to cotton which, presumedly, was not a commodity in the national interest. One result was that European countries countered by stopping the purchase of U.S. cotton, which badly hurt the Southern economy. The other result was that manufacturers in the North were able to charge higher prices without fear of competition, and the South was forced to pay more for practically all of its necessities. It was a classic case of legalized plunder in which the law was used to enrich one group of citizens at the expense of another.

Pressure from the North against slavery in the South made matters even more volatile. A fact often overlooked in this episode is that the *cost* of a slave was very high, around $1,500 each. A modest plantation with only forty or fifty slaves, therefore, had a large capital investment which, in terms of today's purchasing power, represented many millions of dollars. To the South, therefore, abolition meant, not only the loss of its ability to produce a cash crop, but the total destruction of an enormous capital base.

Many Southern plantation owners were working toward the day when they could convert their investment to more profitable industrial production as had been done in the North, and others felt that freemen who were paid wages would be more efficient than slaves who had no incentive to work. For the present, however, they were stuck with the system they inherited. They felt that a complete and sudden abolition of slavery with no transition period would destroy their economy and leave many of the former slaves to starve—all of which actually happened in due course.[1]

That was the situation that existed at the time of Lincoln's campaign and why, in his speeches, he attempted to calm the fears of the South about his intentions. But his words were mostly political rhetoric. Lincoln *was* a Republican, and he was totally dependent on the Northern industrialists who controlled the Party. Even if he had wanted to—and there is no indication that he did—he could not have reversed the trend of economic favoritism and protectionism that swept him into office.

MEXICO AND THE MONROE DOCTRINE

In addition to the conflicting interests between North and South, there were other forces also working to split the nation in two. Those forces were rooted in Europe and centered around the desire of France, Spain, and England to control the markets of Latin America. Mexico was the prime target. This was the reason the Monroe Doctrine had been formulated thirty-eight years previously. President James Monroe had put the European nations on notice that the United States would not interfere in *their* affairs, and that any interference by them in *American* affairs would not be tolerated. In particular, the proclamation said that the American continents were no longer to be considered as available for colonization.

None of the European powers wanted to put this issue to the test, but they knew that if the United States were to become embroiled in a civil war, it could not also cross swords in Latin America. To encourage war between the states, therefore, was to pave the way for colonial expansion in Mexico. The Americas had become a giant chess board for the game of global politics.

In the *American Heritage Picture History of the Civil War,* we read:

> **The war had not progressed very far before it was clear that the ruling classes in each of these two countries [England and France] sympathized strongly with the Confederacy—so strongly that with just a little prodding they might be moved to intervene and bring about Southern independence by force of arms.... Europe's aristocracies had never been happy about the prodigious success of**

---

[1] See "No Civil War at All; Part One," by William McIlhany, *Journal of Individualist Studies,* Winter, 1992, p. 41.

> the Yankee democracy. If the nation now broke into halves, proving that democracy did not contain the stuff of survival, the rulers of Europe would be well pleased.

The global chess match between Lincoln on the one side and England and France on the other was closely watched by the other leaders of Europe. One of the most candid observers at that time was the Chancellor of Germany, Otto von Bismarck. Since Bismarck was, himself, deeply obligated to the power of international finance, his observations are doubly revealing. He said:

> The division of the United States into federations of equal force was decided long before the Civil War by the high financial powers of Europe. These bankers were afraid that the United States, if they remained in one block and as one nation, would attain economic and financial independence, which would upset their financial domination over the Europe and the world. Of course, in the "inner circle" of Finance, the voice of the Rothschilds prevailed. They saw an opportunity for prodigious booty if they could substitute two feeble democracies, burdened with debt to the financiers,... in place of a vigorous Republic sufficient unto herself. Therefore, they sent their emissaries into the field to exploit the question of slavery and to drive a wedge between the two parts of the Union.... The rupture between the North and the South became inevitable; the masters of European finance employed all their forces to bring it about and to rum it to their advantage.

The strategy was simple but effective. Within months after the first clash of arms between North and South, France had landed troops in Mexico. By 1864, the Mexicans were subdued, and the French monarch installed Ferdinand Maximilian as the puppet emperor. The Confederacy found a natural ally in Maximilian, and it was anticipated by both groups that, after the successful execution of the War, they would combine into a new nation—dominated by the financial power of Rothschild, of course. At the same time, England moved eleven-thousand troops into Canada,

---

1. Bruce Catton, author; Richard M. Ketchum, ed., *The American Heritage Picture History of the Civil War* (New York: American Heritage Publishing Co., 1960), p. 249.
2. This statement was quoted by Conrad Siem, a German who became a U.S. citizen and who wrote about the lifeand views of Bismark. It was published in *La Vieille France,* No. 216, March 17-24, 1921, pp. 13-16. The reader should be cautioned that Bismarck was no paragon of virtue and, as the father of modern socialism, his political views should be taken with a healthy degree of caution. All that aside, there is little doubt that this quotation represents an accurate appraisal of the machinations of the European Cabal at that time.

positioned them menacingly along the Union's northern flank, and I placed the British fleet onto war-time alert.[1]

The European powers were closing in for a checkmate.

SUMMARY

The Second Bank of the United States was dead, but *banking* was very much alive. Many of the old problems continued, and new ones arrived. The issuance of banknotes had been severely limited, but that was largely offset by the increasing use of checkbook money, which had no limits at all on its issue.

When the Bank of the U.S. slipped into history, the nation was nearing the end of the boom phase of a boom/bust cycle. When the inevitable contraction of the money supply came, politicians began to offer proposals on how to infuse stability into the banking system. None dealt with the real problem, which was fractional-reserve banking itself. They concentrated instead on proposals on how to make it work. All of these proposals were tried and they failed.

These years are sometimes described as a period of free banking, which is an insult to truth. All that happened was that banks were converted from corporations to private associations, a change in form, not substance. They continued to be burdened by government controls, regulations, supports, and other blocks against the free market.

The economic chaos and conflict of this period was a major cause of the Civil War. Lincoln made it clear during his public speeches that slavery was *not* the issue. The basic problem was the North and the South were dependent on each other for trade. The industrialized North sold its products to the South which sold its cotton to the North. The South also had a similar trade with Europe, and that was an annoyance to the North. Europe was selling many products at lower prices, and the North was losing market share. Northern politicians passed protectionist legislation putting import duties on industrial products. This all but stopped the importation of European goods and forced the South to buy from the North at higher prices. Europe retaliated by curtailing the purchase of American cotton. That hurt the South even more. It was a classic case of legalized plunder, and the South wanted out.

---

[1] **Catton and Ketchum, p. 250. Also Otto Eisenschiml, *The Hidden Face of the Civil Mar* (New York: Bobbs-Merril, 1961), p. 25.**

Meanwhile, there were powerful forces in Europe that wanted to see America embroiled in civil war. If she could be split into two hostile countries, there would be less obstacle to European expansion on the North American continent. France was eager to capture Mexico and graft it onto a new empire which would include many of the Southern states as well. England, on the other hand, had military forces poised along the Canadian border ready for action. Political agitators, funded and organized from Europe, were active on both sides of the Mason-Dixon line. The issue of slavery was but a ploy. America had become the target in a ruthless game of world economics and politics.

Chapter Nineteen

GREENBACKS AND OTHER CRIMES

The causes of the Civil War shown to be economic and political, not the issue of freedom vs. slavery; the manner in which both sides used fiat money to finance the war; the important role played by foreign powers.

In the previous chapter, we saw how the American continent had become a giant chess board in a game of global politics. The European powers had been anxious to see the United States become embroiled in a civil war and eventually break into two smaller and weaker nations. That would pave the way for their further colonization of Latin America without fear of the Americans being able to enforce the Monroe Doctrine. And so it was that, within a few months after the outbreak of war between North and South, France landed troops in Mexico and, by 1864, had installed Maximilian as her puppet monarch. Negotiations were begun immediately to bring Mexico into the war on the side of the Confederacy. England moved her troops to the Canadian border in a show of strength. America was facing what appeared to be a checkmate from the powers in Europe.

(RUSSIA ALIGNS WITH THE NORTH

It was a masterful move that possibly could have won the game had not an unexpected event tipped the scale against it. Tsar Alexander II—who, incidentally, had never allowed a central bank to be established in Russia[1]—notified Lincoln that he stood ready to militarily align with the North. Although the Tsar had recently freed the serfs in his own country, his primary motivation for

---

[1] His grandson. Tsar Nicholas, II, did accept loans from J.P. Morgan. In a classic application of the Rothschild Formula, Morgan also funded the Mensheviks and the Bolsheviks. The Mensheviks forced Nicholas to abdicate, and the Bolsheviks executed him. See Chernow, pp. 195,211.

coming to the aid of the Union undoubtedly had little to do with emancipating the slaves in the South. England and France had been maneuvering to break up the Russian empire by splitting off Finland, Estonia, Latvia, Poland, Crimea, and Georgia. Napoleon III, of France, proposed to Great Britain and Austria that the three nations immediately declare war on Russia to hasten this dismemberment.

Knowing that war was being considered by his enemies, Tsar Alexander decided to play a chess game of his own. In September of 1863, he dispatched his Baltic fleet of war ships to Alexandria, Virginia, and his Asiatic fleet to San Francisco. The significance of this move was explained by Russian-born Carl Wrangell-Rokassowsky:

> No treaty was signed between Russia and the United States, but their mutual interest, and the threat of war to both, unified these two nations at this critical moment. By dispatching his Baltic Fleet to the North American harbors, the Tsar changed his position from a defensive to an offensive one. Paragraph 3 of the instructions given to Admiral Lessovsky by Admiral Krabbe, at that time Russian Secretary of the Navy, dated July 14th, 1863, ordered the Russian Fleet, in case of war, to attack the enemies' commercial shipping and their colonies so as to cause them the greatest possible damage. The same instructions were given to Admiral Popov, Commander of the Russian Asiatic Fleet.[1]

The presence of the Russian Navy helped the Union enforce a devastating naval blockade against the Southern states which denied them access to critical supplies from Europe. It was not that these ships single-handedly kept the French and English vessels at bay. Actually there is no record of them even firing upon each other, but that is the point. The fact that neither France nor England at that time wanted to risk becoming involved in an open war with the United States *and* Russia led them to be extremely cautious with overt military aid to the South. Throughout the entire conflict, they found it expedient to remain officially neutral. Without the inhibiting effect of the presence of the Russian fleet, the course of the war could have been significantly different.

---

1. Carl Wrangell-Rokassowsky, *Before the Storm* (Ventimiglia, Italy: Tipo-Litografia Ligure, 1972), p. 57.

The beginning of the war did not go well for the North, and in the early years, the outcome was far from certain. Not only did the Union army face repeated defeats on the battlefield, but enthusiasm from the people at home was badly sagging. As mentioned previously, at the outset this was not a popular war based on humanitarian principle; it was a war of business interests. That presented two serious problems for the North. The first was how to get people to fight, and the second was how to get them to pay. Both problems were solved by the simple expediency of violating the Constitution.

THE EMANCIPATION PROCLAMATION

To get people to fight, it was decided to convert the war into an anti-slavery crusade. The Emancipation Proclamation was primarily a move on the part of Lincoln to fan the dying embers of support for the "Rich-man's war and the poor-man's fight," as it was commonly called in the North. Furthermore, it was not an amendment to the Constitution nor even an act of Congress. It was issued, totally without constitutional authority, as the solitary order of Lincoln himself, *acting as Commander-in-Chief of the armed forces*.

Preservation of the Union was not enough to fire men's enthusiasm for war. Only the higher issue of freedom could do that. To make the cause of freedom synonymous with the cause of the North, there was no alternative but to officially declare against slavery. After having emphasized over and over again that slavery was not the reason for war, Lincoln later explained why he changed his course and issued the Proclamation:

> Things had gone from bad to worse until I felt we had reached the end of our rope on the plan we were pursuing; that we had about played our last card, and must change our tactics or lose the game. I now determined upon the adoption of the emancipation policy.[1]

The rhetoric of the Proclamation was superb, but the concept left a great deal to be desired. Bruce Catton, writing in the *American Heritage Pictorial History of the Civil War* explains:

> Technically, the proclamation was almost absurd. It proclaimed freedom for all slaves in precisely those areas where the United States could not make its authority effective, and allowed slavery to continue in slave states which remained under Federal control.... But in the end

---

[1] Quoted by Charles Adams, *Fight, Flight, Fraud: The Story of Taxation* (Curacao, The Netherlands: Euro-Dutch Publishers, 1982), p. 229.

> **it changed the whole character of the war and, more than any other single thing, doomed the Confederacy to defeat.**[1]

The Proclamation had a profound impact on the European powers as well. As long as the war had been viewed as an attempt on the part of a government to put down rebellion, there was nothing sacred about it, and there was no stigma attached to helping either side. But now that *freedom* was the apparent issue, no government in Europe—least of all England and France—dared to anger its own subjects by taking sides against a country that was trying to destroy slavery. After 1862 the chance that Europe would militarily intervene on behalf of the Confederacy rapidly faded to zero. On the propaganda front, the South had been maneuvered into a position which could not be defended in the modern world.

Converting the war into an antislavery crusade was a brilliant move on Lincoln's part, and it resulted in a surge of voluntary recruits into the Union army. But this did not last. Northerners may have disapproved of slavery in the South but, once the bloodletting began in earnest, their willingness to *die* for that conviction began to wane. At the beginning of the war, enlistments were for only three months and, when that period was over, many of the soldiers declined to renew. Lincoln faced the embarrassing reality that he soon would have no army to carry on the crusade.

RAISING ARMIES ON BOTH SIDES

Historically, men are willing to take up arms to defend their families, their homes, and their country when threatened by a hostile foe. But the only way to get them to fight in a war in which they have no perceived personal interest is either to pay them large bonuses and bounties or to *force* them to do so by conscription. It is not surprising, therefore, that both methods were employed to keep the Union army in the field. Furthermore, although the Constitution specifies that only Congress can declare war and raise an army, Lincoln did so entirely on his own authority.[2]

The Northern states were given an opportunity to fill a specified quota with volunteers before conscription began. To meet these quotas and to avoid the draft, every state, township, and county developed an elaborate bounty system. By 1864, there were

---

1. Catton and Ketchum, p. 252.

2. Congress later ratified Lincoln's actions, but, by that time, it had little choice. The War was underway.

many areas where a man could receive more than $1,000—equivalent to over $50,000 today—just for joining the army. A person of wealth could avoid the draft simply by paying a commutation fee or by hiring someone else to serve in his place.

In the South, the government was even more bold in its approach to conscription. Despite its cherished views on states' rights, the Confederacy immediately gathered into Richmond many of the powers and prerogatives of a centralized, national government. In 1862 it passed a conscription law which placed exclusive control over every male citizen between the ages of eighteen and thirty-five into the hands of the Confederate President. As in the North, there were important loopholes. The owner or overseer of twenty slaves, for example, could not be called into military service.[1] In all fairness, it must be noted that many did not take advantage of this exclusion. In contrast to the North, soldiers perceived that they were fighting for the defense of their families, homes, and property rather than for an abstract cause or for a cash bounty.

REBELLION IN THE NORTH

When conscription was initiated by Lincoln in 1863, people in the North were outraged. In New York's Madison Square, thousands of protesters marched in torch parades and attended anti-Lincoln rallies. Historian James Horan describes the mood: "When caricatures of the President were lifted above the speaker's stand, hisses rose to fill the night with the noise of a million angry bees." Federal troops eventually had to be called in to put down antidraft riots in Ohio and Illinois. In New York City, when the first names of the draft were published in the papers on July 12, mobs stormed the draft offices and set fire to buildings. The riots continued for four days and were suppressed only when the federal Army of the Potomac was ordered to fire into the crowds. Over a thousand civilians were killed or wounded.[3]

After the passage of many years, it is easy to forget that Lincoln had an insurrection on his hands in the North as well as in the South. The shooting of a thousand civilians by soldiers of their *own*

---

1. Catton and Ketchum, pp. 484-85.

2. James D. Horan, *Confederate Agent: A Discovery in History* (New York: Crown, 1954), p. 209.

p. Catton and Ketchum, pp. 486,511.

goverrvment is a tragedy of mammoth proportions and it tells much about the desperate state of the Union at that time. To control that insurrection, Lincoln ignored the Constitution once again by suspending the right of *habeas corpus,* which made it possible for the government to imprison its critics without formal charges and without trial. Thus, under the banner of opposing slavery, American citizens in the North, not only were killed on the streets of their own cities, they were put into military combat against their will and thrown into prison without due process of law. In other words, free men were enslaved so that slaves could be made free. Even if the pretended crusade had been genuine, it was a bad exchange.

How to get people to *pay* for the war was handled in a similar fashion. If the Constitution could be pushed aside on the issue of personal rights and of war itself, it certainly would not stand in the way of mere *funding*.

It has often been said that truth is the first casualty in war. To which we should add: money is the second. During the fiscal year ending in 1861, expenses of the federal government had been $67 million. After the first year of armed conflict they were $475 million and, by 1865, had risen to one *billion,* three-hundred million dollars. On the *income* side of the ledger, taxes covered only about eleven per cent of that figure. By the end of the war, the deficit had risen to $2.61 billion. That money had to come from *somewhere*.

INCOME TAXES AND WAR BONDS

The nation's first experiment with the income tax was tried at this time; another violation of the Constitution. By today's standards it was a small bite, but it was still an extremely unpopular measure, and Congress knew that any additional taxes would further fan the flames of rebellion.

Previously, the traditional source of funding in time of war had been the banks which simply created money under the pretense of loaning it. But that method had been severely hampered by the demise of the Bank of the United States. The state banks were anxious to step into that role; but, by this time, most of them had already defaulted in their promise to pay in specie and were in no position to manufacture further money, at least not money which the public would be willing to accept.

American banks may have been unable to supply adequate loans, but the Rothschild consortium in Britain was both able and willing. It was during this time that the Rothschilds were consolidating their new industrial holdings in the United States through their agent, August Belmont. Derek Wilson tells us: "They owned or had major shareholdings in Central American ironworks, North American canal construction companies, and a multiplicity of other concerns. They became the major importers of bullion from the newly discovered goldfields."[1]

Belmont had placed large amounts of Rothschild money into the bonds of state-sponsored banks in the South. Those bonds, of course, had fallen in value to practically zero. As the war shifted in favor of the North, however, he began to buy up as many additional bonds as he could, paying but a few pennies on each dollar of face value. It was his plan to have the Union force the Southern states at the end of the war to honor all of their pre-war debt obligations—in full. That, of course, would have been a source of gigantic speculative profits to the Rothschilds. Meanwhile, on the northern side of the Mason-Dixon Line, Belmont became the chief agent for the sale of Union bonds in England and France. It was rumored that, when Belmont called on President Lincoln and personally offered Rothschild money at 27 *Vi* per cent interest, he was rudely thrown out of the office. The story is doubtful, but it represents a larger truth. Profiting from war and placing money on both sides of the conflict were exactly the kind of maneuvers for which the Rothschilds had become famous throughout Europe and were now practicing in America.

In the North, the sale of government bonds was the one measure for raising funds that seemed to work. Even that, however, with the lure of compounded interest to be paid in gold at a future date, failed to raise more than about half the needed amount. So the Union faced a real dilemma. The only options remaining were (1) terminate the war or (2) print fiat money. For Lincoln and the Republicans who controlled Congress, the choice **Was** never seriously in doubt.

The precedent had already been set during the War of 1812. At that time, Secretary of the Treasury, Albert Gallatin, had abrogated the Constitutional ban against "bills of credit" by printing Treasury

---

1 • See Derek Wilson, p. 178.

notes, most of which paid interest at 5.4 per cent. The money was never declared legal tender, and that probably was the basis on which it was defended as constitutional.

THE GREENBACKS

By the time of the War Between the States, however, all pretense at constitutionality had been dropped. In 1862, Congress authorized the Treasury to print $150 million worth of bills of credit and put them into circulation as money to pay for its expenses. They were declared as legal tender for all private debts but could not be used for government duties or taxes. The notes were printed with green ink and, thus, became immortalized as "greenbacks." Voters were assured that this was a one-time emergency measure, a promise that was soon broken. By the end of the war, a total of $432 million in greenbacks had been issued.

The pragmatic mood in Washington was that a constitution is nice to have in times of peace, but an unaffordable luxury in war. Salmon P. Chase, for example, as Secretary of the Treasury, strongly endorsed the greenbacks which were issued under his direction. They were, in his words, an "indispensable necessity." Eight years later, as Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, he declared that they were unconstitutional. Had he changed his mind? Not at all. When he endorsed them, the nation was at war. When he declared them unconstitutional, it was at peace. It was merely another example of the universal trait of all governments in time of war. That trait was presented in a previous section as the premise of the Rothschild Formula: "The sanctity of its laws, the prosperity of its citizens, and the solvency of its treasury will be quickly sacrificed by any government in its primal act of self-survival."

The pressure for issuance of greenbacks originated in Congress, but Lincoln was an enthusiastic supporter. His view was that:

> Government, possessing power to create and issue currency and credit as money and enjoying the right to withdraw currency and credit from circulation by taxation and otherwise, need not and should not borrow capital at interest.... The privilege of creating and issuing money is not only the supreme prerogative of the government but it is the government's greatest creative opportunity.[1]

---

[1] This is taken from an abstract of Lincoln's monetary policy that was prepared by the Legislative Reference Service of the Library of Congress. Quoted by Owen, p. 91.

It would appear that Lincoln objected to having the government pay interest to the banks for money they create out of nothing when the *government* can create money out of nothing just as easily and *not* pay interest on it. If one ignores the fact that *both* of these schemes are forbidden by the Constitution and is willing to tolerate the plunder-by-inflation that is the consequence of both, then there is an appealing logic to the argument. The politicians continue to have their fiat money, but at least the *banks* are denied a free ride.

LINCOLN'S MIXED VIEW OF BANKING

It is apparent that Lincoln had undergone a change of heart regarding banks. Early in his political career, he had been a friend of the banking industry and an advocate of easy credit. As a member of the Whig political party in the 1830s—before becoming a Republican in his campaign for the Presidency—he had been a supporter of Biddle's Second Bank of the United States.[1] During his famous debates with Senator Stephen Douglas, one of the points of contention between the two was that Lincoln defended the Bank and advocated its reestablishment. Furthermore, after becoming President, he took the initiative in requesting Congress to reestablish central banking.[2]

Lincoln appears to have been inconsistent, and one gets a gnawing feeling that, in his effort to finance an unpopular war, he sometimes found it necessary, like Salmon Chase and other politicians of the time, to anesthetize his personal convictions and do whatever was required to meet the exigencies of governmental survival.

One thing, however, is clear. Regardless of Lincoln's personal views on money, the greenbacks were not pleasing to the bankers who were thereby denied their customary override on government debt. They were anxious to have this federal fiat money replaced by *bank* fiat money. For that to be possible, it would be necessary to create a whole new monetary system with government bonds used as backing for the issuance of bank notes; in other words, a return to central banking. And that was precisely what Secretary Chase was preparing to establish.

---

[1] See Lincoln's speech on the Sub-Treasury, Fehrenbacher, pp. 56-57.

[2] See Lincoln's annual message to Congress, December 1, 1862, Fehrenbacher, p. 398.

In 1862, the basic position of the bankers was outlined in a memo, called *The Hazard Circular,* prepared by an American agent of British financiers and circulated among the country's wealthy businessmen. It said:

> **The great debt that capitalists will see to it is made out of the war must be used as a means to control the volume of money. To accomplish this the bonds must be used as a banking basis. We are now waiting for the Secretary of the Treasury to make this recommendation to Congress. It will not do to allow the greenback, as it is called, to circulate as money any length of time, as we cannot control that. But we can control the bonds and through them the bank issues.**[1]

THE NATIONAL BANKING ACT

On February 25, 1863, Congress passed the National Banking Act (with major amendments the following year) which established a new system of nationally-chartered banks. The structure was similar to the Bank of the United States with the exception that, instead of one *central* bank with power to influence the activities of the others, there were now to be many *national* banks with control over all of them coming from Washington. Most banking legislation is sold to the public under the attractive label of reform. The National Banking Act was one of the rare exceptions. It was promoted fairly honestly as a wartime emergency scheme to raise money for military expenses by creating a market for government bonds and then transforming those bonds into circulating money. Here is how it worked:

When a national bank purchased government bonds, it did not hold on to them. It turned them back to the Treasury which exchanged them for an equal amount of "United States Bank Notes" with the bank's name engraved on them. The government declared these to be legal tender for taxes and duties, and that status caused them to be generally accepted by the public as money. The bank's net cost for these bonds was zero, because they got their money back immediately. Technically, the bank still owned the bonds and collected interest on them, but they also had the use of an equal amount of newly created bank-note money which also could be loaned out at interest. When all the smoke and

---

[1] The Hon. Charles A. Lindburgh, *Banking and Currency and the Money Trust* (Washington, D.C.: National Capital Press, 1913), p. 102.

mirrors were moved away, it was merely a variation on the ancient scheme. The monetary and political scientists had simply converted government debt into money, and the bankers were collecting a substantial fee at both ends for their service.

The one shortcoming of the system, at least from the point of view of the manipulators, was that, even though the bank notes were widely circulated, they were not classified as "lawful" money. In other words, they were not legal tender for *all* debts, just for taxes and duties. Precious-metal coins and greenbacks were still the country's official money. It was not until the arrival of the Federal Reserve System fifty years later that government debt in the form of bank notes would be mandated as the nation's official money for *all* transactions—under penalty of law.

The National Banking Act of 1863 required banks to keep a percentage of their notes and deposits in the form of lawful money (gold coins) as a reserve to cover the possibility of a run. That percentage varied depending on the size and location of the bank but, on an average, it was about twelve per cent. That means a bank with $1 million in coin deposits could use approximately $880,000 of that ($1 million less 12%) to purchase government bonds, exchange the bonds for bank notes, lend out the bank notes, and collect interest on *both* the bonds *and* the loans. The bank could now earn interest on $880,000 loaned to the *government* in the form of coins plus interest on $880,000 loaned to its *customers* in the form of bank notes. That doubled the bank's income without the inconvenience of having to increase its capital. Needless to say, the bonds were gobbled up just as fast as they could be printed, and the problem of funding the war had been solved.

Another consequence of the national banking system was to make it impossible from that date forward for the federal government ever to get out of debt. Please reread that statement. It is not an exaggeration. Even friends of central-banking are forced to admit this reality. Galbraith says gloomily:

> Rarely has economic circumstance managed more successfully to confound the most prudent in economic foresight. In numerous years

---

}• That represents the theoretical maximum. The actual numbers would have been slightly less due to the fact that banks seldom were able to keep a full 100% of their bank notes circulating in the form of loans. The functional asset leverage probably averaged about 70% rather than 88%.

> **following the war the Federal government ran a heavy surplus. It could not pay off its debt, retire its securities, because to do so meant there would be no bonds to back the national bank notes. To pay off the debt was to destroy the money supply.**

As pointed out in a previous section, that is essentially the situation which exists today. Every dollar of our currency and checkbook money was created by the act of lending. If all debt were repaid, our entire money supply would vanish back into the inkwells and computers. The *national* debt is the principal foundation upon which money is created for *private* debt.[2] To pay off or even greatly reduce the national debt would cripple our monetary system. No politician would dare to advocate that, even if surplus funds were available in the Treasury. The Federal Reserve System, therefore, has virtually locked our nation into perpetual debt.

THE HIDDEN COST OF WAR

The third consequence of the National Banking Act will come as no surprise to anyone who has survived the previous pages of this book. During the war, the purchasing power of the greenbacks fell by 65%. The money supply increased by 138%. Prices more than doubled while wages rose by less than half. By that mechanism, Americans surrendered to the government and to the banks more than half of all the money they earned or held during that period—in *addition* to their taxes.[3]

Financial conditions in the South were even worse. With the exception of the seizure of about $400,000 in gold from the Federal mint at New Orleans, almost all of the war was funded by the printing of fiat money. Confederate notes increased in volume by 214% per year, while the volume of all money, including bank notes and check-book money, rose by over 300% per year. In addition to the Confederate notes, each of the Southern states issued its own fiat money and, by the end of the war, the total of all notes was about a billion dollars. Within the four-year period, prices shot up by 9,100%. After Appomattox, of course, Confederate notes and bonds alike were totally worthless.[4]

---

[1] **Galbraith, p. 90.**

[2] **See chapter ten. The Mandrake Mechanism.**

[3] **See Paul and Lehrman, pp. 80-81; Groseclose, *Money and Man,* p. 193; Galbraith, pp. 93-94; Rothbard, *Mystery,* p. 222.**

[4] **See Galbraith, p. 94. Also Paul and Lehrman, p. 81.**

As usual, the average citizen did not understand that the newly created money represented a hidden tax which he would soon have to pay in the form of higher prices. Voters in the Northern states certainly would not have tolerated an open and honest tax increase of that magnitude. Even in the South where the cause was perceived as one of self defense, it is possible that they would not have done so had they known in advance the true dimension of the assessment. But especially in the North, because they did not understand the secret science of money, Americans not only paid the hidden tax but applauded Congress for creating it.

On June 25, 1863, exactly four months after the National Bank Act was signed into law, a confidential communique was sent from the Rothschild investment house in London to an associate banking firm in New York. It contained an amazingly frank and boastful summary:

> **The few who understand the system [bank loans earning interest and also serving as money] will either be so interested in its profits or so dependent upon its favors that there will be no opposition from that class while, on the other hand, the great body of people, mentally incapable of comprehending,... will bear its burdens without complaint.**

LINCOLN'S CONCERN FOR THE FUTURE

Lincoln was privately apprehensive about the Bank Act, but loyalty to his Party and the need to maintain unity in time of war compelled him to withhold his veto. His personal view, however, was unequivocal. In a letter to William Elkins the following year he said:

> **The money power preys upon the nation in times of peace and conspires against it in times of adversity. It is more despotic than monarchy, more insolent than autocracy, more selfish than bureaucracy. I see in the near future a crisis approaching that unnerves me and causes me to tremble for the safety of my country. Corporations have been enthroned, an era of corruption will follow, and the money power of the country will endeavor to prolong its reign by working upon the prejudices of the people, until the wealth is aggregated in a few hands, and the republic destroyed.**[2]

---

1. Quoted by Owen, pp. 99-100.

2. A letter to William F. Elkins, November 21, 1864. Archer H. Shaw, ed.. *The Lincoln Encyclopedia: The Spoken and Written Words of A. Lincoln* (New York: Macmillan Co., 1950), p. 40.

In reviewing Lincoln's role throughout this painful chapter of history, it is impossible not to feel ambivalence. On the one hand, he declared war without Congress, suspended the writ of *habeas corpus,* and issued the Emancipation Proclamation, not as an administrative executive carrying out the wishes of Congress, but as the Commander-in-Chief of the armed forces. Furthermore, the Proclamation was *not* issued out of humanitarian motives, as popular history portrays, but as a maneuver to generate popular support for the war. By participating in the issuance of the greenbacks, he violated one of the most clearly written and important sections of the Constitution. And by failing to veto the National Bank Act, he acquiesced in the delivery of the American people back into the hands of the international Cabal, an act which was similar in many ways to the forcible return of captured runaway slaves.

On the positive side, there is no question of Lincoln's patriotism. His concern was in preserving the *Union,* not the Constitution, and his refusal to let the European powers split America into a cluster of warring nation-states was certainly wise. Lincoln believed that he had to violate part of the Constitution in order to save the whole. But that is dangerous reasoning. It can be used in almost any national crisis as the excuse for the expansion of totalitarian power. There is no reason to believe that the only way to save the Union was to scrap the Constitution. In fact, if the Constitution had been meticulously observed from the very beginning, the Southern minority could never have been legally plundered by the Northern majority and there likely would have been no movement for secession in the first place. And, even if there had been, a strict reading of the Constitution at *that* point could have led the way to an honorable and peaceful settlement of differences. The result would have been, not only the preservation of the Union *without* war, but Americans would be enjoying far less government intervention in their daily lives today.

WITH MALICE TOWARD NONE

There is one point that is clearly on Lincoln's side. While his political compatriots were howling for economic vengeance against the South, the President stood firmly against it. "With malice toward none" was more than a slogan with him, and he was willing to risk his political survival on that one issue. The reason he had vetoed the Wade-Davis emancipation bill was because it would have applied a lien against Southern cotton at the end of the war to the benefit of New England textile manufactures. The cotton also would have been taken as security to pay off Southern debt which had been contracted before the war, thus providing the funds to buy back *at face value* all of the bonds which had been purchased at discount by Rothschild's agent, August Belmont. Such defiance of the financiers and speculators undoubtedly required great courage.

But the issue ran deeper than that. Lincoln had offered a general amnesty to any citizen in the South who would agree to take a loyalty oath to the Union. When ten per cent of the voters had taken such an oath, he proposed that they could then elect Congressmen, Senators, and a state government which would be recognized as part of the Union once again. The Republicans, on the other hand, had incorporated into the Wade-Davis bill the provision that each seceded state was to be treated like a conquered country. Political representation was to be denied until fifty-one per cent, not ten per cent, had taken an oath. Former slaves were given the right to vote—although women had not yet gained that right even in the North—but, because of their lack of education and political awareness, no one expected them to play a meaningful role in government for many years to come. Furthermore, those taking the oath had to swear that they had never taken up arms against the Union. Since almost every able-bodied white male had done so, the effect would have been to deny the South political representation for at least two generations.

Under Lincoln's amnesty policy, it would not be long before the Republicans would be overwhelmed in Congress by a large majority of Democrats. The Democrats in the North were already gaining strength on their own and, once they could be joined by the solid block of Democrats from the reunited South, the Republicans' political and economic power would be lost. So, when Lincoln vetoed the bill, his own Party bitterly turned against him.

Running throughout these cross-currents of motives and special interests were two groups which found it increasingly to their advantage to have Lincoln out of the way. One group consisted of the financiers, Northern industrialists, and radical Republicans, all of whom wanted to legally plunder the South at the end of the war. The politicians within that group also looked forward to further consolidating their power and literally establishing a military dictatorship.[1] The other group was smaller in size but equally dangerous. It consisted of hothead Confederate sympathizers—from both South *and* North—who sought revenge. Later events revealed that both of these groups had been involved in a conspiratorial liaison with an organization called the Knights of the Golden Circle.

KNIGHTS OF THE GOLDEN CIRCLE

The Order of the Knights of the Golden Circle was a secret organization dedicated to revolution and conquest. Two of its better known members were Jesse James and John Wilkes Booth. It was organized by George W.L. Bickley who established its first "castle" in Cincinnati in 1854, drawing membership primarily from Masonic lodges. It had close ties with a secret society in France called The Seasons, which itself was a branch of the Illuminati. After the beginning of the war, Bickley was made head of the Confederacy's secret service, and his organization quickly spread throughout the border and Southern states as well.

In the North, the conspirators were seeking "to seize political power and overthrow the Lincoln government." In fact, the Northern anti-draft riots mentioned previously were largely the result of the planning and leadership of this group. In the South "they tried to promote the extension of slavery by the conquest of Mexico."[5] In partnership with Maximilian, the Knights hoped to establish a Mexican-American empire which would be an effective counter force against the North. In fact, the very name of the organization is based on their goal of carving an empire out of North America with geographical boundaries forming a circle with the center in Cuba, and its circumference reaching northward to Pennsylvania, southward to Panama.

---

1. For highly readable accounts of this movement, see Theodore Roscoe, *The Web of Conspiracy: The Complete Story of the Men Who Murdered Abraham Lincoln* (Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, 1959); also Claude G. Bowers, *The Tragic Era: The Revolution after Lincoln,* (New York: Houghton Mifflin, 1957).
2. "No Civil War at All, Part Two," by William McIlhany, *Journal of Individualist Studies,* Fall, 1992, pp. 18-20.
3. Horan, p. 15.
4. *Ibid.,* pp. 208-23.
5. *Ibid.,* p. 16. Regarding the annexation of Mexico, also see the *Columbia Encyclopedia,* Third Edition, p. 1143.

In 1863 the group was reorganized as the Order of American Knights and, again the following year, as the Order of the Sons of Liberty. Its membership then was estimated at between 200,000 and 300,000. After the war, it went further underground and remnants eventually emerged as the Ku Klux Klan.

JOHN WILKES BOOTH

One of the persistent legends of this period is that John Wilkes Booth was not killed in Garrett's barn, as generally accepted, but was allowed to escape; that the corpse actually was that of an accomplice; and that the government, under the firm control of War Secretary Edwin M. Stanton, moved heaven and earth to cover up the facts. On the face of it, that is an absurd story. But, when the voluminous files of the War Department were finally declassified and put into the public domain in the mid 1930s, historians were shocked to discover that there are many facts in those files which lend credence to the legend. The first to probe these amazing records was Otto Eisenschiml whose *Why Was Lincoln Murdered?* was published by Little, Brown and Company in 1937. The best and most readable compilation of the facts, however, was written twenty years later by Theodore Roscoe. In the preface to this work, he states the startling conclusions which emerge from those long-hidden files:

> **Of the immense 19th century literature that exists on Lincoln's assassination, much of the writing treats the tragedy at Ford's theater as though it were Grand Opera.... Only a few have seen the crime as a murder case: Lincoln dying by crass felony, Booth a stalking gunman leading a gang of primed henchmen, the murder plot containing ingredients as base as the profit motive. Seventy years after the crime, writers were garbling it with a dignity it did not deserve: Lincoln, the stereotyped martyr; Booth, the stereotyped villain; the assassination avenged by classic justice; conspiracy strangled; Virtue (in the robes of Government) emerging triumphant, and Lincoln "belonging to the ages."**
>
> **But the facts of the case are neither so satisfying nor so gratifying. For the facts indicate that the criminals responsible for Lincoln's death got away with murder.**[1]

Izola Forrester was the granddaughter of John Wilkes Booth. In her book entitled *This One Mad Act,* she tells of discovering the

---

1- Roscoe, p. vii.

secret records of the Knights of the Golden Circle which had been carefully wrapped and placed in a government vault many decades ago and designated as classified documents by Secretary Stanton. Since the assassination of Lincoln, no one had ever been allowed to examine that package. Because of her lineage to Booth and because of her credentials as a professional writer, she was eventually permitted to become the first person in all those years to examine its contents. Forrester recounts the experience:

> It was five years before I was able to examine the contents of the mysterious old package hidden away in the safe of the room which contained the relics and exhibits used in the Conspiracy Trial.... I would never have seen them, had I not knelt on the floor of the cell five years ago and seen into the back of the old safe where the package lay. It is all part of the odd mystery thrown about the case by the officials of the war period—the concealment of these documents and articles, and the hiding away of the two flakes of bone with the bullet and pistol. What mind ever grouped together such apparently incongruous and macabre exhibits?...
>
> Here at last was a link with my grandfather. I knew that he had been a member of the secret order founded by Bickley, the Knights of the Golden Circle. I have an old photograph of him taken in a group of the brotherhood, in full uniform, one that Harry's daughter had discovered for me in our grandmother's Bible. I knew that the newspapers, directly following the assassination, had denounced the order as having instigated the killing of Lincoln, and had proclaimed Booth to have been its member and tool. And I was reminded again of those words I had heard from my grandmother's lips, that her husband had been "the tool of other men."[1]

An interesting comment. One is compelled to wonder: The tool of *what* other men? Was Forrester's grandmother referring to the leaders of the Knights of the Golden Circle? To agents of European financiers? Or was it to conspirators within Lincoln's own Party? We shall probably never know with certainty the extent to which any of these groups may have been involved in Lincoln's assassination, but we *do* know that there were powerful forces within the federal government, centered around Secretary of War Stanton, which actively concealed evidence and Jhastily terminated the investigation. *Someone* was protected.

---

1. Izola Forrester, *This One Mad Act* (Boston: Hale, Cushman & Hint, 1937), p. 359.

SUMMARY

It is time now to leave this tragic episode and move along. So let us summarize. America's bloodiest and most devastating war was fought, not over the issue of freedom versus slavery, but because of clashing economic interests. At the heart of this conflict were questions of legalized plunder, banking monopolies, and even European territorial expansion into Latin America. The boot print of the Rothschild formula is unmistakable across the graves of American soldiers on both sides.

In the North, neither greenbacks, taxes, nor war bonds were enough to finance the war. So a national banking system was created to convert government bonds into fiat money, and the people lost over half of their monetary assets to the hidden tax of inflation. In the South, printing presses accomplished the same effect, and the monetary loss was total.

The issuance of the Emancipation Proclamation by Lincoln and the naval assistance offered by Tsar Alexander, II, were largely responsible for keeping England and France from intervening in the war on the side of the Confederacy. Lincoln was assassinated by a member of the Knights of the Golden Circle, a secret society with rumored ties to American politicians and British financiers. Tsar Alexander was assassinated a few years later by a member of the People's Will, a Nihilist secret society in Russia with rumored ties to financiers in New York City, specifically, Jacob Schiff and the firm of Kuhn, Loeb & Company.

As for the Creature of central banking, there had been some victories and some defeats. The greenbacks had for a while deprived the bankers of their override on a small portion of government debt, but the National Banking Act quickly put a stop to that. Furthermore, by using government bonds as backing for the money supply, it locked the nation into *perpetual* debt. The foundation was firmly in place, but the ultimate structure still needed to be erected. The monetary system was yet to be concentrated into *one* central-bank mechanism, and the control was yet to be taken away from the politicians and placed into the hands of the bankers themselves.

It was time for the Creature to visit Congress.

President Andrew Jackson put his political career on the line in 1832 by vetoing renewal of the charter for the Second Bank of the United States. He called the Bank a monster and declared: "I am ready with the screws to draw every tooth and then the stumps." Voters approved and re-elected him by a large margin.

Nicholas Biddle was head of the Second Bank of the United States. With many Congessmen and Senators financially beholden to him, he wielded great political power. He deliberately created a banking panic and a depression for the purpose of frightening the voters and blaming Jackson's anti-bank policy. Biddle declared: "All other banks and all the merchants may break, but the Bank of the United States shall not break." In the end, he lost the contest. The Bank's charter expired in 1836.

UPI/Bet

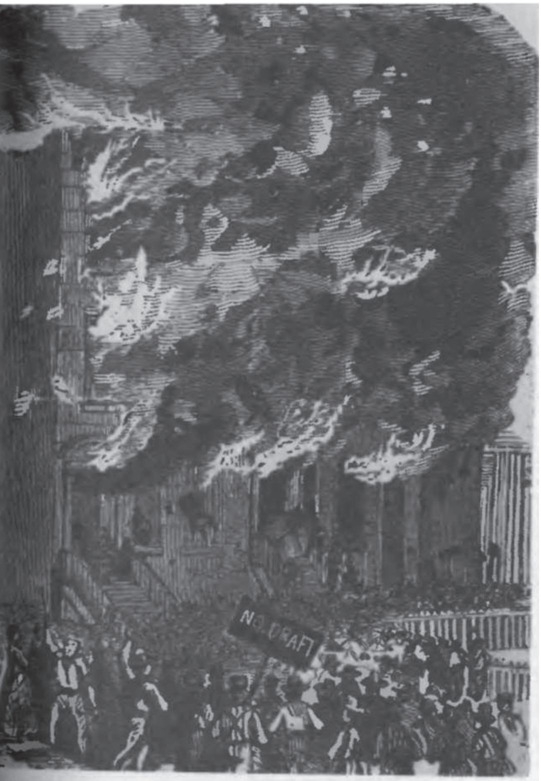

During the Civil War, Lincoln had an insurrection on his hands in the North as well as the South, These two Leslie's engravings depict the 1863 anti-draft riots that occurred in Ohio, Illinois, and New York. In New York, over 1,000 civilians were killed or wounded by federal soldiers. The Civil War was started over economic issues, not slavery. The War was not popular in the North until the issue of slavery was added at a later time to turn it into a moral crusade.

Above and below: New York Historical Society

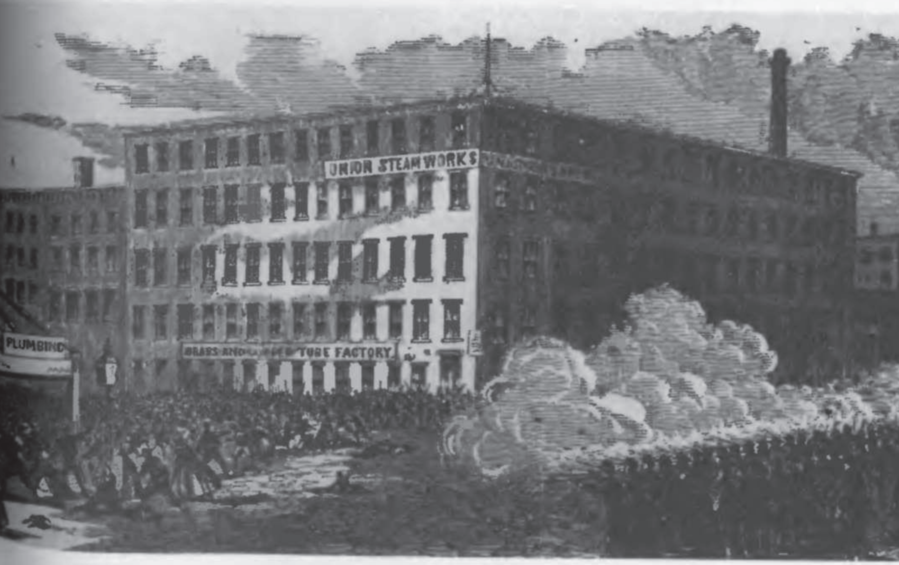
UNION STEAM WORKS
PLUMBING
BRASS AND ... TUBE FACTORY

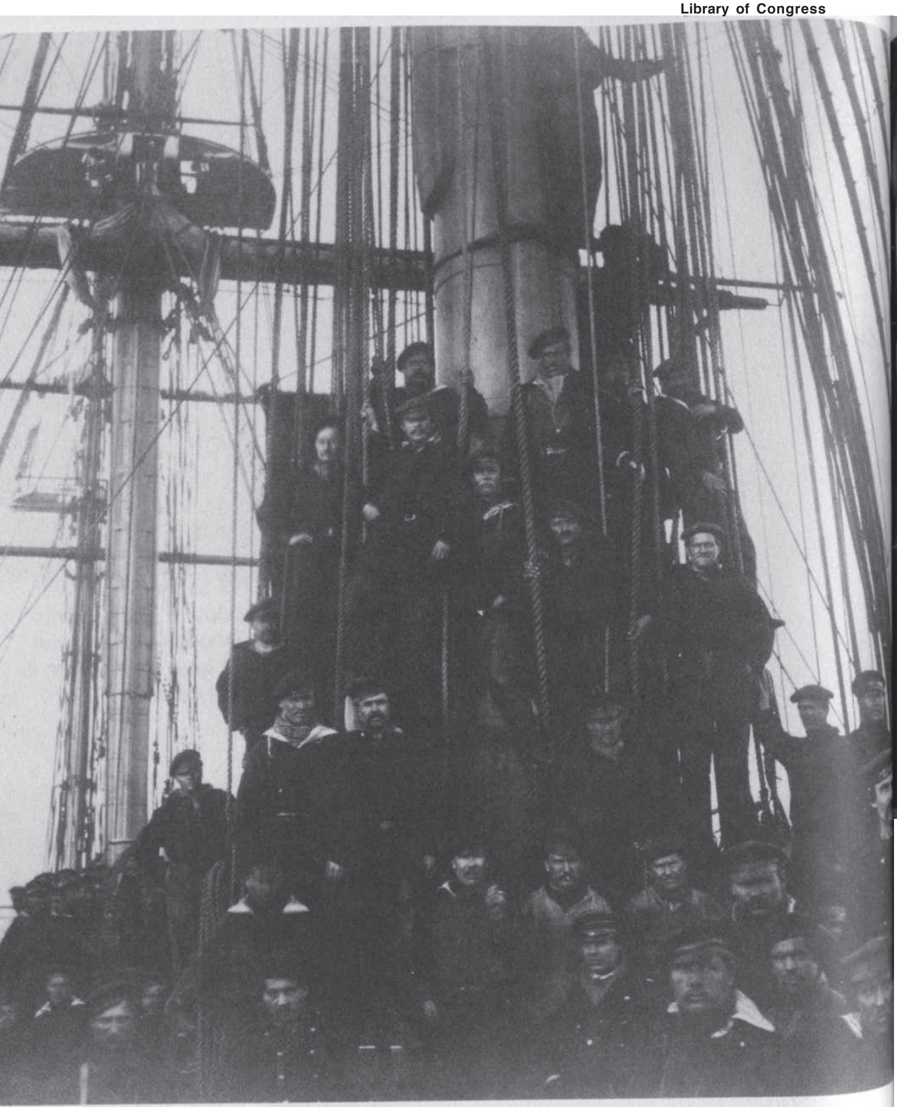

Library of Congress

The crew of the Russian ship, *Osliaba,* posed for this photograph at Alexandria, Virginia, in 1863. Tsar Alexander II had dispatched his Baltic fleet to Alexandria_an his Asiatic fleet to San Fransciso where they were committed to assist the Union blockade against the South. This had little to do with freeing the slaves. France na designs on Mexico, and England wanted a divided America. Russia was mere? reacting against France and England who were her enemies. The powers of Europ were deeply involved in the American Civil War for purposes of their own. Witn° Russia's intervention, the outcome of the War could have been quite different.

Hulton Deutsch

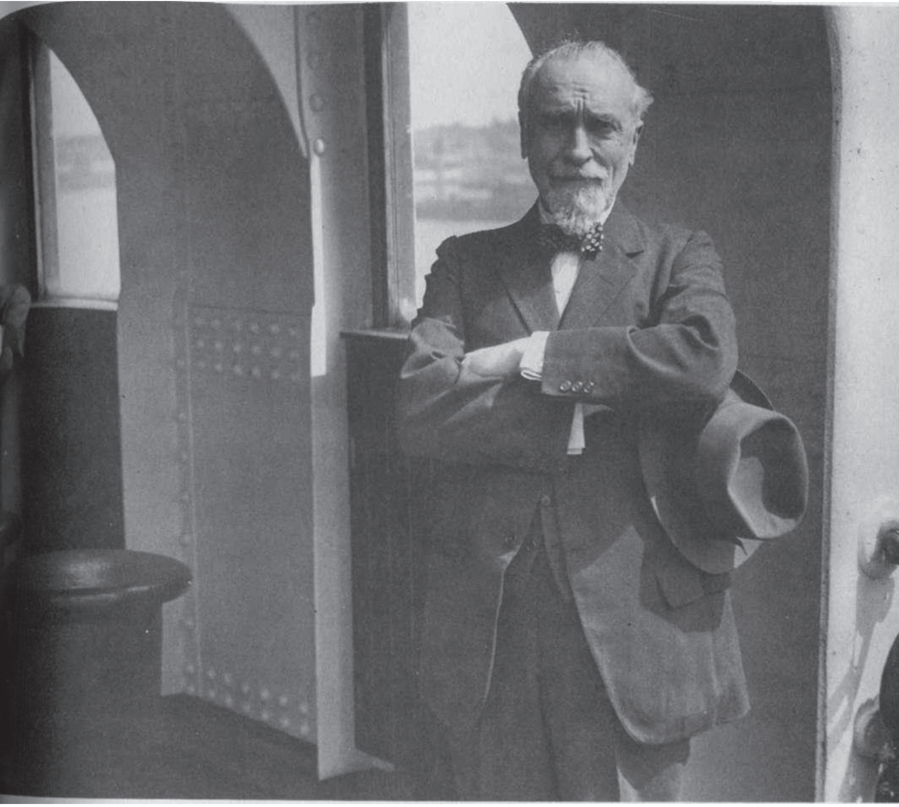

Montagu Norman (above) was head of the Bank of England during the first years of the Federal Reserve. He is shown here in 1931 aboard the *Duchess of York* **at Southampton.**

Norman frequently traveled to the U.S. to meet in secret with Benjamin Strong, head of the Federal Reserve. Strong agreed to use the Federal Reserve System to unofficially help Great Britain meet its financial obligations, and billions of dollars subsequently flowed from the U.S. It was that outflow that set the stage for America's great depression of the 1930's.

William Wentworth (right) met Norman aboard ship in 1929. Norman told him in confidence that there soon was going to be a "shake-out" in the U.S. financial markets. The stock-market crashed just a few months later.

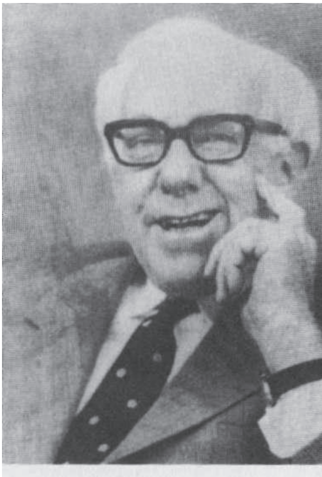

Photoworld

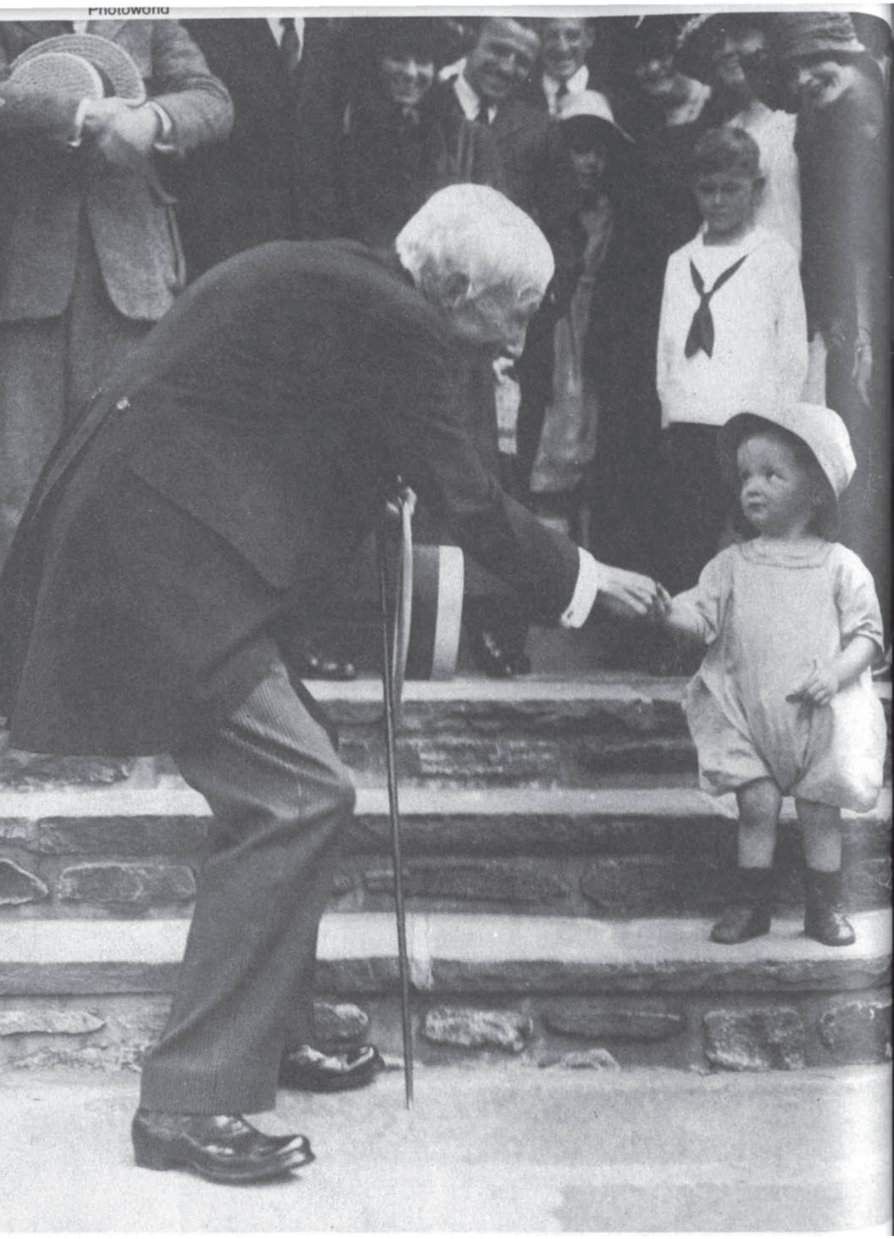

John D. Rockefeller, Sr., is shown here giving a dime to a child, while an admi^i crowd looks on. This was one of his favorite publicity stunts. It was conceived by' public-relations staff as a means of offsetting adverse publicity regarding his busing dealings. Large-scale philanthropy was an extension of that same technique.

John D. Rockefeller, III (right) presents a check in the amount of $8,500,000 to Trygve Lie, First Secretary-General of the United Nations. The date is March 25,1947. The money is for buying the land on Manhattan Island which will house the UN building. Through the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR), the Rockefellers have been in the forefront of the drive for a world government which is to be built upon the principles of socialism and feudalism. They have no doubt that they and their counterparts in other countries will be in control.

UPI/Bettmann

Bettmann Archive

Treasury Department

William Jennings Bryan (left) was one of the most powerful Democrats in Congress. He opposed the Federal Reserve Act because it would privately issue money rather than through the government. He was fooled into supporting the bill when phony compromises were made which gave the *appearance* of public control and government issue but which, in fact, did neither. Bryan was also rewarded with an appointment as Secretary of State. He became disillusioned by the duplicity of his own government and resigned after Wilson failed to warn the Public that the *Lusitania* was carrying munitions. He complained that it was "like Putting women and children in front of an army."

Alan Greenspan (above), was an eloquent spokesman for the gold standard and a critic of the System's subservience to the banking cartel. That was in 1966. After he became a director of J.P. Morgan & Company and was appointed Chairman of the Federal Reserve in 1987, he became silent on these issues and did nothing to anger the Creature he now served. Like Bryan, even the best of men can be corrupted by the rewards of politics.

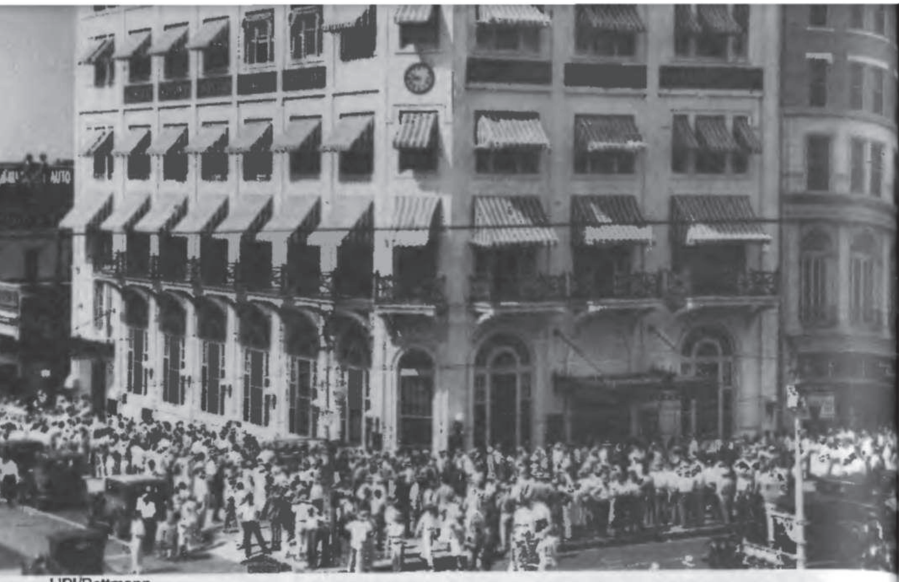

UPI/Bettmann

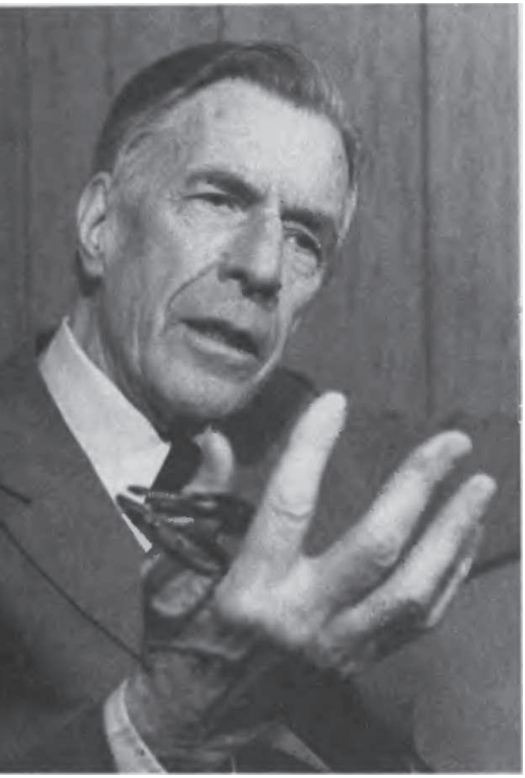

The First National Bank in St. Petersburg, Florida experiences a run on June 12,1930. Angry depositors want their money, but the bank cannot pay them. Their money has been loaned to others. This scene has been repeated thousands of times throughout history and in every country. It is the consequence of fractional-reserve banking.

John Kenneth Galbraith, well-known historian and professor at Harvard, has verified that he was asked to W part of the team that put together *W Report from Iron Mountain,* a think- F tank study commissioned by the ,1 Defense Department. The purpose 1 the study was to explore novel yaVI keeping the masses in subservien^ When a copy of the *Report* was le^r to the press, the government cla'^jJ it was a hoax. Galbraith confirmed T it was totally authentic.

UPI/Bettmann

Section V

THE HARVEST

Monetary and political scientists continue to expound the theoretical merits of the Federal Reserve System. It has become a modern act of faith that economic life simply could not go on without it. But the time for theory is past. The Creature moved into its final lair in 1913 and has snorted and thrashed about the landscape ever since. If we wish to know if it is a creature of service or a beast of prey, we merely have to look at what it has done. And, after the test of all those years, we can be sure that what it has done, it will continue to do. Or, to use the Biblical axiom, a tree shall be known by the fruit it bears. Let us now examine the harvest.

Chapter Twenty

THE LONDON CONNECTION

The rise of the House of Morgan; Morgan's ties with England and the House of Rothschild; the connection between the Federal Reserve System and the Bank of England; the Fed's decision to inflate American dollars to assist the ailing British economy.

The period between the Civil War and the enactment of the Federal Reserve System was one of great economic volatility and no small measure of chaos. The National Banking Acts of 1863-65 established a system of federally chartered banks which were given significant privilege and power over the monetary system. They were granted a monopoly in the issuance of bank notes, and the government agreed to accept those notes for the payment of taxes and duties. They were allowed to back this money up to ninety per cent with government bonds instead of gold. And they were guaranteed that every bank in the system would have to accept the notes of every other bank at face value, regardless of how shaky their position. The net effect was that the banking system of the United States after the Civil War, far from being free and unregulated as some historians have claimed, was literally a halfway house to central banking.

The notion of being able to generate prosperity simply by creating more money has always fascinated politicians and businessmen, but at no time in our history was it more in vogue than in the second half of the nineteenth century. The nation had gone mad with the Midas complex, a compulsion to turn everything into money through the magic of banking. Personal checks gradually had become accepted in commerce just as readily as bank notes, and the banks obliged their customers by entering into their passbooks just as many little numbers as they cared to "borrow." As Groseclose observed: "The manna of cheap money became the universal cry, and as with the Israelites, the easier the manna was acquired, the louder became the complaint, the less willing the people to struggle for it."[1]

The prevailing philosophy of that time was aptly expressed by Jay Cooke, the famous financier who had marketed the huge Civil War loans of the federal government and who now was raising $100 million for the Northern Pacific Railroad. Cooke had published a pamphlet which was aptly summarized by its own title: *How Our National Debt May Be a National Blessing. The Debt is Public Wealth, Political Union, Protection of Industry, Secure Basis for National Currency*. "Why," asked Cooke, "should this Grand and Glorious country be stunted and dwarfed—its activities chilled and its very life blood curdled by these miserable 'hard coin' theories—the musty theories of a bygone age."[2] As it turned out, however, the chilling and curdling came, not from the musty hard-coin theories of the past, but from the glittering easy-money theories of the present. The Northern Pacific went bankrupt and, as the mountain of imaginary money invested in it collapsed back into nothing, Cooke's giant investment firm disappeared along with it, triggering the panic of 1873 as it went. Matthew Josephson writes:

> "*All about the failure of Jay Cooke!*" newsboys hawked throughout the country....
>
> The largest and most pious bank in the Western world had fallen with the effect of a thunderclap. Soon allied brokers and national banks and 5,000 commercial houses followed it into the abyss of bankruptcy. All day long, in Wall Street, one suspension after another was announced; railroads failed; leading stocks lost 30 to 40 points, or half their value, within the hour; immeasurable waves of fear altered the movement of greed; the exchanges were closed; the stampede, the "greatest" crisis in American history, was on.

AND STILL MORE BOOMS AND BUSTS

Altogether, there were four major contractions of the money supply during this period: the so-called panics of 1873, 1884, 1893, and 1907. Each of them was characterized by inadequate bank reserves and the suspension of specie payment. Congress reacted, not by requiring an increase in reserves which would have improved the safety margin, but by allowing a *decrease*. In June of 1874, legislation was passed which permitted the banks to back their notes entirely with government bonds. That, of course, meant more fiat money for Congress, but it also meant that bank notes no longer had *any* specie backing at all, not even ten per cent. This released over $20 million from bank reserves which then could be used as the basis for pyramiding even more checkbook money into the economy.

---

[1] Groseclose, *Money and Man,* p. 202.

[2] Quoted by Rothbard, *Mystery, p. 231.*

[3] Matthew Josephson, *The Robber Barons: The Great American Capitalists, 1861-1901* (New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1934), p. 170.

It has become accepted mythology that these panics were caused by seasonal demands for farm loans at harvest time. To supply those funds, the country banks had to draw down their cash reserves which generally were deposited with the larger city banks. This thinned out the reserves held in the cities, and the whole system became more vulnerable. Actually that part of the legend is true, but apparently no one is expected to ask questions about the rest of the story. Several of them come to mind. Why wasn't there a panic *every* Autumn instead of just every eleven years or so? Why didn't *all* banks—country or city—maintain adequate reserves to cover their depositor demands? And why didn't they do this in *all* seasons of the year? Why would merely saying no to some loan applicants cause hundreds of banks to fail? The myth falls apart under the weight of these questions.

The truth is that, if it hadn't been seasonal demand by agriculture, the money magicians simply would have found another scapegoat. It would have been "immobile" reserves, lack of "elasticity" in the money supply, "imbalance" of international payments, or some other technocratic smoke screen to cover the real problem which was—and always has been—fractional-reserve banking itself. The bottom line was that, in spite of an elaborate scheme to pool the minuscule reserves of country banks into larger regional banks where they could be rushed from town to town like a keg of coins on the old frontier, it still didn't work. The loaves and fishes stubbornly refused to multiply.

MORGAN PROSPERS WHEN OTHERS FAIL

The monetary expansions and contractions of this period were large waves that capsized thousands of investment ships at sea. But there was one large vessel that, somehow, bobbed up and down with the surges quite well and could be seen throughout the storm salvaging the abandoned cargoes of those that were in distress. This vessel brought back to port untold riches that once had been the property of others but now belonged to the master of the salvage ship in accordance with rules of the high sea. The captain's name was J.P. Morgan.

It will be recalled from a previous section that J.P. Morgan and Company was no small player in the world chess match called World War I. Morgan had been chosen by the French and British governments as the official agent to sell their war bonds in the U.S. When the war began to go badly for them, the Morgan interests began to agitate for American entry into the conflict, a move which was calculated to save the loans. The Morgan firm also was the official U.S. trade agent for Britain. In violation of international treaty, it handled the purchase and shipping to England of all war material, including the enormous cargo of munitions aboard the *Lusitania* when she went down.

The close relationship between the Morgans and Great Britain was no accident. J.P. Morgan, Jr., was the driving force behind the Council on Foreign Relations, the American branch of a secret society established by Cecil Rhodes for the expansion of the British empire. In truth, the Morgans were more British than American.

The reason for this is to be found in the origin of the Morgan dynasty. It all began with an American merchant from Danvers, Massachusetts, by the name of George Peabody. In 1837, Peabody travelled to England as a bond salesman for the Chesapeake and Ohio Canal, hoping to find British investors to replace the missing ranks of Americans who, because of a recession at that time, showed little interest in the project. He routinely was rejected by the large investment houses of London but, eventually, his persistence paid off. Stanley Jackson, in his biography of Morgan, says of Peabody:

> When the panic [in the U.S.] at last started to subside, he called time and again on the big City barons [in London] to assure them that Maryland and other states would honor their bonds. He also continued backing American securities with his personal funds. Buying at almost giveaway levels, he later reaped a rich harvest. He unloaded most of the Chesapeake and Ohio Canal bonds and won acclaim back home for returning his $60,000 commission intact to Maryland's meager treasury.[1]

---

1. **Stanley Jackson, *J.P. Morgan* (New York: Stein and Day, 1983), p. 37.**

It was during this trip that Peabody opened an import-export business at 22 Old Broad Street in London and began to provide loans and letters of credit to many of his shippers. That moved him into the investment business specializing in transactions between Britain and the United States.

It was fortunate timing. This was the beginning of a period of rapid expansion in the United States, accompanied by an insatiable need for investment capital and a plethora of bond issues offering tantalizing rates of return which were substantially higher than comparable offerings in Europe. Peabody's firm was in an unusual position to exploit this expanding market, and his firm grew rapidly.

Peabody never married and, as he advanced in years, began to look for someone to carry on the business. The qualifications for such a position were difficult. First, the man had to be an American by birth in order to appear authentic as the representative of American investments. Secondly, he had to be British by instinct and preference. This included being well educated and with good breeding in order to be accepted by the aristocracy in London's financial world. Third, he had to have knowledge of Anglo-American finance. And fourth, Peabody had to like him.

JUNIUS MORGAN SELECTED BY PEABODY

When the Boston merchant, Junius Morgan, met George Peabody at a London dinner party in 1850, little did he realize that the elder financier took an immediate liking to him and began to discreetly inquire into his background and reputation. This began an extended period of business and social contact that eventually ended in 1854 when Junius moved his family to London and became a full partner in the firm which, eventually became known as Peabody, Morgan & Company.

In addition to selling bonds in England for American commercial ventures and state governments, the partnership also became the chief fiscal agent for the Union government during the Civil War, and it was during this period that the firm's great profits pushed it into the top echelons of London's financial fraternity. In 1864, Peabody finally retired and completely turned the business over to Junius who immediately changed the firm's name to J.S. Morgan and Company.

Junius's son, John Pierpont, attended the English High School in Boston but, during much of his youth, was enrolled in European schools and became engulfed in British tradition. He had been born in the United States, however, and that made him ideally suited to carry on the Anglo-American role played so deftly by Peabody and Junius. It was inevitable that the boy would be trained in international finance and groomed to step into his father's shoes. The first move was to find employment for him in 1857 at the New York investment firm of Duncan, Sherman & Company. Seven years later, Junius acquired a competitor New York firm and set his son up as a partner in Dabney, Morgan & Company, which became the New York branch of the London firm. In 1871, with the addition of a third partner, Anthony Drexel from Philadelphia, the firm became Drexel, Morgan & Company. In 1895, following the death of Drexel, there was a final change of name to J.P. Morgan & Company. A branch in Paris became known as Morgan, Harjes & Company.

AMERICANIZING THE NEW YORK BRANCH

After the unexpected death of Junius in a carriage accident a few years later, it was decided by Pierpont to reshape the image of the London firm to be a more British operation. This would allow the New York branch to represent the American side with less suspicion of being essentially the same firm. By that time, his son, J.P. Morgan, Jr.—known as Jack by his friends—had already been brought into the firm as a partner, and he was to play an important role in the creation of that image. Biographer John Forbes tells us:

> J.P. Morgan, Jr., became a partner in the London house of J.S. Morgan & Co. on January 1,1898, and a fortnight later, with his wife Jessie and their three children,... he left New York and took up residence in England for the next eight years.
>
> Morgan was sent to London to do two specific things. The first was to learn at first hand how the British carried on a banking business under a central banking system dominated by the Bank of England. Morgan, Sr., anticipated the establishment of the Federal Reserve System in the United States and wanted someone who would eventually have authority in the Morgan firms to know how such a system worked. The second was quietly to look about the City and select British partners to convert the elder Morgan's privately owned J.S. Morgan & Co. into a British concern.[1]

---

[1] **lohn Douglas Forbes, *J.P. Morgan, Jr.* (Charlottesville: University Press of Virginia, 1981), p. 31.**

This eventually was accomplished by the addition of Edward Grenfell, a long-time director of the Bank of England, as the new senior partner of what became Morgan, Grenfell & Company. But none of this window dressing altered the reality that J.P. Morgan & Co. in New York remained more British in orientation than American.[1]

A casual reading of the events of this period would lead to the conclusion that Peabody and Morgan were fierce competitors of the Rothschilds. It is true they often bid against each other for the same business, but it is also true that almost every biographer has told how the American newcomers to London were in awe of the great power of the Rothschilds and how they purposely cultivated their friendship, a friendship that eventually became so intimate that the Americans were received as the personal house guests of the Rothschilds. The Morgan firm often worked closely with the House of Rothschild on large joint ventures, but that was—and still is—common practice among large investment houses. In light of subsequent events, however, it is appropriate to consider the possibility that an arrangement had been worked out in which the Peabody/Morgan firm went one step further and, on occasion, became a secret Rothschild agent.

CONCEALED ALLIANCE WITH ROTHSCHILD?

Some writers have suggested that the clandestine relationship began almost from the beginning. Eustace Mullins, for example, writes:

> Soon after he arrived in London, George Peabody was surprised to be summoned to an audience with the gruff Baron Nathan Mayer Rothschild. Without mincing words, Rothschild revealed to Peabody that much of the London aristocracy openly disliked Rothschild and refused his invitations. He proposed that Peabody, a man of modest means, be established as a lavish host whose entertainments would soon be the talk of London. Rothschild would, of course, pay all the bills. Peabody accepted the offer and soon became known as the most popular host in London. His annual Fourth-of-July dinner, celebrating American Independence, became extremely popular with the English aristocracy, many of whom, while drinking Peabody's wine, regaled each other with jokes about Rothschild's crudities and bad manners,

---

[1] **This apparently has not diminished over the years. The December 23, 1991, issue of *Business Week* (p. 69) reminds us that the CEO of J.P. Morgan & Co., Dennis Weatherstone who lives in Connecticut, was knighted by Queen Elizabeth II.**

> **without realizing that every drop they drank had been paid for by Rothschild.**[1]

Mullins does not give a reference for the source of this story, and one cannot help being skeptical that such details could be proved. Nevertheless, a secret arrangement of this kind is not as absurd as it may sound. There is no question that the Rothschilds were quite capable of such a clandestine relationship and, in fact, this is exactly the kind of deception for which they had become famous. Furthermore, there was ample reason for them to do so. A strong anti-Semitic and anti-Rothschild sentiment had grown up in Europe and the United States, and the family often found it to its advantage to work through agents rather than to deal directly. Derek Wilson tells us: "The name 'Rothschild' was, thus, beginning to be heard in places far removed from sophisticated London and Paris. But the connection with the great bankers was sometimes tenuous."

That tenuous connection was precisely the role to be played by August Belmont in the United States, and the anti-Semitism he found there was undoubtedly the reason he changed his name from Schoenberg to Belmont upon landing in New York in 1837. Prior to that, the Rothschild agent had been the firm of J.L. and S.I. Joseph & Company, about as American sounding as one can get. It was not long, however, before the Belmont-Rothschild connection became common knowledge, and the ploy ceased to be effective.

In 1848, the family decided to send Alphonse Rothschild to the United States to check on Belmont's operations and to evaluate the possibility of replacing him with a *direct* Rothschild representative, perhaps Alphonse himself. After an extended visit, he wrote home:

> **In a few years from now America will have attracted to itself the greater part of trade with China and the Indies and will be enthroned between the two oceans.... The country possesses such elements of prosperity that one would have to be blind not to recognize them.... I have no hesitation in saying that a Rothschild house, and not just an agency, should be established in America.... Today we are presented with a fine opportunity. Later on, difficulties will of necessity arise as a result of competition from all sides.**[3]

---

1. Eustace Mullins, *Secrets of the Federal Reserve* (Virginia: Bankers Research Institute, 1983), p. 49.

2. Derek Wilson, p. 176.

3. B. Gille, *Histoire de la Maison Rothschild,* Vol. 1, 1965-1967, p. 581, cited by Derek Wilson, p. 181.

Some historians have expressed amazement over the fact that the recommendation was never acted upon. Wilson says: "This was the greatest opportunity the Rothschilds ever lost."[1] Those with a more skeptical bent are tempted to wonder if the opportunity really *was* lost or if it was merely taken in a more indirect fashion. It is significant that, precisely at this time, George Peabody was making a name for himself in London and had established a close relationship with Nathan Rothschild. Is it possible that the Peabody firm was given the nod from the Rothschild consortium to represent them in America? And is it possible that the plan included allowing Belmont to operate as a known Rothschild agent while using Peabody & Company as an *unknown* agent, thus, providing their own competition?

John Moody answers: "The Rothschilds were content to remain a close ally of Morgan rather than a competitor as far as the American field was concerned."[2] Gabriel Kolko says: "Morgan's activities in 1895-1896 in selling U.S. gold bonds in Europe were based on his alliance with the House of Rothschild."[3] Sereno Pratt says: "These houses may, like J.P. Morgan & Company ... represent here the great firms and institutions of Europe, just as August Belmont & Company have long represented the Rothschilds."[4] And George Wheeler writes: "Part of the reality of the day was an ugly resurgence of anti-Semitism.... Someone was needed as a cover. Who better than J. Pierpont Morgan, a solid, Protestant exemplar of capitalism able to trace his family back to pre-Revolutionary times?"[5]

RISE OF THE HOUSE OF MORGAN

With these considerations as background, the meteoric rise of Morgan's star over London and Wall Street can be readily understood. It is no longer surprising, for example, that Peabody & Company was the sole American investment firm to receive a gigantic loan from the Bank of England during the U.S. panic of 1857, a loan which not only saved it from sinking, but made it

---

1- Derek Wilson, p. 182.

2. Moody, p. 27.

3. Kolko, *Triumph,* p. 142.

4. Sereno S. Pratt, *The Work of Wall Street* (New York: D. Appleton, 1916; rpt. New York: Amo Press, 1975), p. 349.

5. Wheeler, pp. 17-18,42.

possible to seize and salvage many other ships that were then capsized on Wall Street.

Peabody had become active in the business of discounting acceptances, which is banker language for insuring commercial loans issued for the purchase of goods. This is how it works: The seller issues a bill with a stipulation that he must be paid at a future date, usually ninety days. When the buyer receives the bill, his bank writes the word "accepted" across the face of it and adds the signature of an officer, making it a legally binding contract. In other words, the bank becomes a co-signer on the buyer's credit and guarantees payment even if the buyer should default.

Naturally, there is a price for this guarantee. That price is stated as a percentage of the total bill and it is either added to the amount paid by the buyer or deducted from the amount received by the seller. Actually there is a fee paid at both ends of the transaction, one to the seller's bank which receives the acceptance and pays out the money, and one to the issuing bank which assumes the liability of guaranteeing payment. The sale is said to be "discounted" by the amount paid to the banks. And so it was that Peabody & Company had been active in the business of discounting acceptances, primarily between sellers in England and buyers in the United States.

MORGAN AND THE PANIC OF 1857

In the Wall Street panic of 1857, many US. buyers were unable to pay their bills, and Peabody and Morgan were expected to make good on their guarantees. Naturally, they didn't have the money, and the firm was facing certain bankruptcy unless the money could be obtained from *somewhere*. Stanley Jackson provides the details:

> The slump was catastrophic for Peabody & Co. It suddenly found itself committed to acceptances of £2 million and with no hope of discharging even part of a stockpile of depreciating bonds on New York brokers and bankers, themselves now desperately short of ready funds. The firm was soon paying out thousands of pounds a day. Without raising a large temporary loan the partners would be forced to suspend business altogether.[1]

Ron Chernow, in *The House of Morgan,* says: "Rumors raced through London that George Peabody and Company was about to fail, a prospect heartily relished by rivals.... The major London houses told Morgan they would bail out the firm—but only if Peabody shut down the bank within a year."[1] Jackson continues the narrative:

---

[1] **Jackson, p. 56.**

> **The clouds lifted dramatically when the Bank of England announced a loan to Peabody's of £800,000, at very reasonable interest, with the promise of further funds up to a million sterling if and when required. It was a remarkable vote of confidence as Thomas Hankey [governor of the Bank of England] had already rejected similar appeals from various American firms who did not measure up to his standards.... Peabody & Company recovered almost overnight and indeed hoisted its turnover above pre-slump levels.**[2]

With an almost unlimited access to cash and credit backed by the Bank of England, Peabody and Morgan were able to wade hip deep through the depreciated stocks and bonds that were sold to them at sacrifice prices on Wall Street. Within only a few years, when sanity had been restored to American markets, the assets of the firm had grown to gigantic proportions.

This event tells us a great deal about relationships. If the Rothschilds truly had been competitors, they would have seized upon this opportunity and used their great influence within the Bank of England and the other investment houses in London to squeeze out Peabody, not to assist him. The Barings, in particular, were already trying to accomplish exactly that. The Rothschilds must have believed that a successful Peabody firm ultimately would be in their own best interest.

ANTI-SEMITISM WAS PROFITABLE

In later years, Jack Morgan (J.P., Jr.) would assume the role of a staunch anti-Semite, and this undoubtedly strengthened his hand at dealing with American investors and borrowers who were loath to have anything to do with Jewish bankers. That, of course, included officials of the U.S. Treasury. It was particularly helpful during the 1896 rescue of the federal government from a decline in its gold reserves. Fearing that it would not be able to honor its promise to exchange paper money for gold coins, the government was forced to borrow $62 million in gold. The House of Rothschild was an obvious source for such a loan, but the Treasury wanted to avoid an

---

1- Chernow, p. 11.

2. Jackson, pp. 56-57.
Josephson, p. 60.

anti-Semitic backlash. Everything fell into place, however, when Morgan and Company became the *primary* lender, with Rothschild apparently demoted to the role of a mere participant. Wheeler writes:

> The consummate politicians of the Cleveland administration ... were certainly aware of the dangers inherent in promoting a rescue effort for the United States Treasury that would be financed by those archetypes of "international Jewish financiers," the Rothschilds....
>
> During these developments, Pierpont Morgan took no direct part in the salvage effort. Up to this point it looked as if the aging financier—he would be fifty-eight in two months—would be merely one among many in this and whatever subsequent bond arrangements would be necessary. It seemed as though he would move on into old age with little more to round out his obituary than his awkward attempt to profiteer on the sale of rifles at the start of the Civil War, his minor shorting of the Union in gold trading toward the close, and a bold but largely unsuccessful move in the 1880s to impose an eastern capitalist cease-fire on the country's warring railroads.
>
> But there were steps being taken even now to bring him out of the financial backwaters—and they were not being taken by Pierpont Morgan himself. The first suggestion of his name for a role in the recharging of the reserve originated with the London branch of the House of Rothschild.[1]

The apparent anti-Semitism of J.P. Morgan, Jr., was again extremely profitable during World War I, when it was widely publicized that the Kaiser was funded by German-Jew bankers. To deal with the Morgan group, therefore, as opposed to Kuhn Loeb, for example, was in some circles almost a point of national patriotism.

When J.P. Morgan, Sr., died in 1913, people were shocked to learn that his estate was valued at only $68 million, a paltry sum compared to the fortunes held by the Vanderbilts, Astors, and Rockefellers. It was even more unbelievable when Jack Morgan died in 1943 and left an estate valued at only $16 million. A small amount had been transferred to members of their families prior to their deaths, but that did not account for the vast fortunes which they visibly controlled during their lives. Surely, there had been a bookkeeping sleight-of-hand. On the other hand, it may have been true. When Alphonse Rothschild died in Paris in 1905, it was revealed that *his* estate contained $60 million in American securities.

---

[1] **Wheeler,** pp. **16-17.**

The Rothschilds in Britain undoubtedly held an equally large bloc. Furthermore, many of these securities were handled *through* the House of Morgan. The possibilities are obvious that a major portion of the wealth and power of the Morgan firm was, and always had been, merely the wealth and power of the Rothschilds who had raised it up in the beginning and who sustained it through its entire existence.

How much of Morgan's apparent anti-Semitism was real and how much may have been a pragmatic guise is, in the final analysis, of little importance, and we should not give unwarranted emphasis to it here. Regardless of one's interpretation of the nature of the relationship between the Houses of Morgan and Rothschild, the fact remains that it was close, it was ongoing, and it was profitable to both. If Morgan truly did harbor feelings of anti-Semitism, neither he nor the Rothschilds ever allowed them to get in the way of their business.

To put the London connection into proper perspective, it will be necessary once again to abandon a strict chronological sequence of events and jump ahead to the year 1924. So let us put our cast of characters on hold for a moment and, before allowing them to act out the drama of creating the Federal Reserve System, we shall pick up the storyline eleven years after that event had already taken place.

ENGLAND FACES A DILEMMA

At the end of World War I, Britain faced an economic dilemma. She had abandoned the gold standard early in the war in order to remove all limits from the creation of fiat money, and the result had been extreme inflation. But now she wanted to regain her former position of power and prestige in the world's financial markets and decided that, to accomplish this, it would be necessary to return to the gold standard. It was decided, further, to set the exchange value of the pound sterling (the British monetary unit) at exactly $4.86 in U.S. currency, which was approximately what it had been before the war began.

To say that she wanted to return to the gold standard actually is misleading. It was not a pure standard in which every unit of money was totally backed by a stated weight of gold. Rather, it was a

---

L **See "Head of Rothschilds' Paris House Is Dead,"** ***The New York Times,*** **May 27, 1905, p. 9.**

fractional gold standard in which only a certain fraction of all the monetary units were so backed. But, even that was much to be desired over no backing whatsoever for three reasons. First, it created greater consumer confidence in the money system because of the implied promise to redeem all currency in gold—even though such promises are always broken when based on a fractional-reserve.[1] Secondly, it provided an efficient means of settling financial accounts between nations, gold always being the international medium of choice. Thirdly, it applied *some* braking action to the production of fiat money, thus, providing a certain degree of restraint to inflation and the boom-bust cycle.

The decision to return to a fractional gold standard, therefore, while it left much to be desired, was still a step in the right direction. But there were two serious problems with the plan. The first was that the exchange value of gold can never be decided by political decree. It will always be determined by the interplay of supply and demand within the marketplace. Trying to fix the number of dollars which people will be willing to exchange for a pound sterling was like trying to legislate how many baseball cards a schoolboy will give for a purple agate. The international currency market is like a huge auction. If the auctioneer sets the opening bid too high, there will be no takers—which is exactly what happened to the pound.

The other problem was that, during the war, England had adopted a massive welfare program and a strong network of labor unions. The reason this was a problem was that the only way to make the pound acceptable in international trade was to allow its value to drop to a competitive and realistic level, and that would have meant, not only a drastic reduction in welfare benefits, but also a general lowering of prices—including the price of labor which is called wages. Politicians were quite willing to allow prices of commodities to move downward, but they did not have the courage to take any action which would reduce either welfare benefits or wages. To the contrary, they continued to bid for votes with promises of still more socialism and easy credit. Prices continued to rise.

---

1. The government hedged even on this provision. Only bars of gold bullion were available for redemption, not coins. This insured that gold would not circulate as money and that it would be used almost exclusively for large-scale international transactions.

ENGLAND IN DEPRESSION

With the value of the pound set artificially high in order to sustain prices, wages, and profit levels, the cost of British exports also became high, and they ceased to be competitive in world markets. With exports in decline, the amount of money coming into the country also declined. England became a debtor nation, which means that her payments to other countries were larger than her income from those countries.

As pointed out in chapter five, if an individual spends more than his income, he must either increase his income, dip into savings, sell off assets, create counterfeit, or borrow. The same is true of nations. England had already borrowed to the limit of her credit and was rapidly exhausting her savings in order to continue purchasing foreign goods to sustain the high standard of living to which she had grown accustomed. She couldn't counterfeit because payments for these imports had to be settled in gold, which meant that, as her national savings were spent, her gold supply moved out of the country. The handwriting was on the wall. If this process continued, the nation soon would be broke. It was a situation, incidentally, which was amazingly parallel to what has plagued the United States since the end of Word War II, and for mostly the same reasons.

By March of 1919, England's trade was so depressed that she had no choice but to let the value of the pound "float," which means to seek its own level in response to supply and demand. Within a year it had dropped to $3.21, a loss of thirty-four per cent. Since the American dollar was the *de facto* world monetary standard at that time, receiving fewer dollars for each pound sterling meant that the pound was valued lower in all the markets of the world. The result was that the price Britishers had to pay for imported goods was becoming higher while the price she received for the export of her own goods was becoming lower. The British economy was, not only badly anemic, it was experiencing a monetary hangover from the vast inflation of World War I. In other words, it was undergoing a painful but, in the long run, healthy recovery and a return to reality.

Such a condition was intolerable to the monetary and political scientists who were determined to find a quick and painless remedy which would allow the binge to continue. Several emergency therapies were administered. The first was to use the Financial

Committee of the League of Nations—which England dominated—to require all the other European nations to follow similar inflationary monetary policies. They were also required to establish what was called the "gold exchange standard," a scheme whereby all countries based their currency, not on gold, but on the pound sterling. In that way, they could all inflate together without causing a disruptive flow of gold from one to the other, and England would act as the regulator and guarantor of the system. In other words, England used the power of her position within the League of Nations to establish the Bank of England as a master central bank for all the other central banks of Europe. It was the prototype for what the Cabal now is doing with Federal Reserve and the World Bank within the framework of the United Nations.

PROBLEM OF AMERICAN PROSPERITY

Europe was well in hand, but that still left the United States to be controlled. America had also inflated during the war but not nearly as much. She also had a fractional gold standard, but the stockpile of gold was very large and still growing. As long as America continued to exist as the producer of so many commodities that England needed for import, and as long as the value of the dollar continued to be high, the anemia of the pound sterling would continue.

The therapy chosen for this problem was simple. Perform a monetary transfusion from a healthy patient to the unhealthy one. All the London financiers had to do was find a large and robust specimen who, without asking too many questions, would be willing to become the donor. The specimen selected, of course, was Uncle Sam himself. It was the prototype of the *transfer mechanism,* previously described, which has been the life support keeping alive the moribund Communist and Socialist countries since World War II.

There are several ways the life blood of one nation can be transfused to another. The most direct method, of course, is to make an outright gift, such as the bizarre American ritual called foreign aid. Another is to make a gift disguised as something else, such as needlessly stationing military bases abroad for the sole purpose of bolstering the foreign economy, or granting a loan to a foreign

---

1. For an overview of the foregoing developments, see "The Federal Reserve as A Cartelization Device," by Murray N. Rothbard, in *Money in Crisis,* Barry N. Siegel, ed. (New York: Ballinger, 1984), pp. 115-17.

government at below market rates or—worse—with the full expectation that the loan will never be repaid. But the third way is the most ingenious of them all: to have one nation deliberately inflate its currency at a rate greater than the other nation so that real purchasing power, in terms of international trade, moves from the more inflating to the less inflating nation. This is a method truly worthy of the monetary scientists. It is so subtle and so sophisticated that not one in a thousand would even think of it, much less object to it. It was, therefore, the ideal method chosen in 1925 to benefit England at the expense of America. As Professor Rothbard observed:

> In short, the American public was nominated to suffer the burdens of inflation and subsequent collapse [the crash of **1929]** in order to maintain the British government and the British trade union movement in the style to which they insisted on becoming accustomed.

At the inception of the Federal Reserve System, there had been a brief struggle for power but, within a few years, the contest was decisively won by the head of the New York Bank, Benjamin Strong. Strong, it will be recalled, previously had been head of Morgan's Bankers Trust Company and was one of the seven participants at the secret meeting on Jekyll Island. Professor Quigley reminds us that "Strong owed his career to the favor of the Morgan bank.... He became Governor of the Federal Reserve Bank of New York as the joint nominee of Morgan and Kuhn, Loeb and Company."[2]

Strong was the ideal choice for the cartel. Not the least of his qualifications was his alliance with the financial powers of London. When Montagu Norman was made the Governor of the Bank of England in 1920, there began a close personal relationship between the two central bankers which lasted until Strong's sudden death in 1928.

Norman was considered by many to be eccentric if not mentally unbalanced. Quigley says:

> Norman was a strange man whose mental outlook was one of successfully suppressed hysteria or even paranoia. He had no use for government and feared democracy. Both of these seemed to him to be threats to private banking, and thus to all that was proper and precious in human life.... When he rebuilt the Bank of England, he

---

[1] **Rothbard,** *Crisis,* pp. **131-32.**

[2] **Quigley,** ***Tragedy,*** **p. 326**

> **constructed it as a fortress prepared to defend itself against any popular revolt, with the sacred gold reserves hidden in deep vaults below the level of underground waters which could be released to cover them by pressing a button on the governor's desk. For much of his life, Norman rushed about the world by fast steamship, covering tens of thousands of miles each year, often travelling incognito, concealed by a black slouch hat and a long black cloak, under the assumed name of "Professor Skinner."...**
>
> **Norman had a devoted colleague in Benjamin Strong.... In the 1920s, they were determined to use the financial power of Britain and of the United States to force all the major countries of the world to go on the gold standard [with an artificial value set for the benefit of England] and to operate it through central banks free from all political control, with all questions of international finance to be settled by agreements by such central banks without interference from governments.**[1]

Strong and Norman spent many holidays together, sometimes in Bar Harbor, Maine, but usually in Southern France, and they crisscrossed the Atlantic on numerous other occasions to consult with each other on their plan for controlling the world economy. Lester Chandler tells us: "Their associations were so frequent and prolonged and their collaboration so close that it is still impossible to determine accurately their relative roles in developing some of the ideas and projects that they shared." The Bank of England provided Strong with an office and a private secretary during his visits, and the two men kept in close contact with each other through the weekly exchange of private cables. All of these meetings and communiques were kept in strict secrecy. When their frequent visits drew inquiries from the press, the standard reply was that they were just friends getting together for recreation or informal chats. By 1926, the heads of the central banks of France and Germany were occasionally included in their meetings which, according to Norman's biographer, were "more secret than any ever held by Royal Arch Masons or by any Rosicrucian Order."

1. Quigley, *Tragedy,* p. 326.

2. Lester V. Chandler, *Benjamin Strong, Central Banker* (Washington, D.C.: Brookings Institution, 1958, reprinted by Arno Press, A New York Times Company, 1978), p. 259.

3. John Hargrave, *Montagu Norman* (New York: Greystone Press, 1942), p. 108.

SECRET MEETING OF 1927

The culmination of these discussions took place at a secret meeting in 1927 at which it was agreed that the financial lifeblood of the American people would be donated for a massive transfusion to Great Britain. Galbraith sets the scene:

> **On July 1, 1927, the *Mauretania* arrived in New York with two notable passengers, Montagu Norman, Governor of the Bank of England, and Hjalmar Schacht, head of the German Reichsbank.... The secrecy covering the visit was extreme and to a degree ostentatious. The names of neither of the great bankers appeared on the passenger list. Neither, on arriving, met with the press....**
>
> **In New York the two men were joined by Charles Rist, the Deputy Governor of the Banque de France, and they went into conference with Benjamin Strong, the Governor of the Federal Reserve Bank of New York...**
>
> **The principle, or in any case the ultimately important, subject of discussion was the persistently weak reserve position of the Bank of England. This, the bankers thought, could be helped if the Federal Reserve System would ease interest rates, encourage lending. Holders of gold would then seek the higher returns from keeping their metal in London. And, in time, higher prices in the United States would ease the competitive position of British industry and labor.**[1]

Galbraith speaks with soft phrases to cushion a harsh reality. What he is saying is that the purpose of the meeting was to finalize a plan whereby the Governor of the Federal Reserve System was to deliberately create inflation in the U.S. so that American prices would rise, making U.S. goods less competitive in world markets and causing American gold to move to the Bank of England. Governor Strong needed little convincing. That is precisely what he and Norman had planned to do all along and, in fact, he had already begun to implement the plan. The purpose of inviting the Germans and the French to the meeting was to enlist their agreement to create inflation in their countries as well. Schacht and Rist would have no part of it and left the meeting early, leaving Strong and Norman to work out the final details between them.

Strong was more concerned about British fortunes than American. In a letter written in May of 1924 to Secretary of the Treasury Andrew Mellon, he discussed the necessity of lowering American interest rates as a step toward money expansion with the

---

1- Galbraith, pp. 174-75.

objective of raising American prices relative to those in Great Britain. He acknowledged that the goal was to protect England from having to cut back on wages, profits, and welfare. He said:

> At the present time it is probably true that British prices for goods internationally dealt in are as a whole, roughly, in the neighborhood of 10 percent above our prices, and one of the preliminaries to the re-establishment of gold payment by Great Britain will be to facilitate a gradual readjustment of these price levels *before* monetary reform is undertaken. In other words, this means some small advance in prices here and possibly some small decline in their prices....
>
> The burden of this readjustment must fall more largely upon us than upon them. It will be difficult politically and socially for the British Government and the Bank of England to face a price liquidation in England ... in face of the fact that trade is poor and they have over a million unemployed people receiving government aid.

BRINGING DOWN THE DOLLAR

The Mandrake Mechanism of the Federal Reserve went into high gear on behalf of the Bank of England in 1924, several years before the historic meeting between Strong, Norman, and Rist. There were two great surges of monetary expansion. The first came with the monetization of $492 million in bonds plus almost twice as much in banker's acceptances. The second burst of inflation came in the latter half of 1927, immediately following the secret meeting between Strong, Norman, Schacht, and Rist. It involved the funding of $225 million in government bonds plus $220 million in banker's acceptances, for a total increase in bank reserves of $445 million. At the same time, the rediscount rate to member banks (the interest rate they pay to borrow from the Fed) was lowered from 4 to 3.5 per cent, making it easier for those banks to acquire additional "reserves" out of which they could create even more fiat dollars. The amount created on top of that by the commercial banks is about five and a-half times the amount created by the Fed, which means a total money flood in excess of $10 billion in just six years.

1. Chandler, pp. 282-84.

2. Approximately $1,328,000,000 in the first burst, including both bonds and acceptances, plus $445,000,000 in the second burst equals $1,773,000,000. This amount multiplied by 5.5 equals $9,751,500,000. Add the original $1,773,000,000 used as a base, and the total is $11,524,500,000. This estimate is reasonably close to the figure of $10,661,000,000 published by the Fed itself, which represents the growth in total deposits and currency in circulation during that period. See "Deposits and Currency," p. 34.

Throughout this period, the demand by the System for government bonds and acceptances pushed interest rates down.[1] As anticipated, people with gold then preferred to send it to London where it could earn a higher yield, and America's gold supply began to move abroad. Furthermore, as inflation began to eat its way into the purchasing power of the dollar, the prices of American-made goods began to rise in world markets making them less competitive; U.S. exports began to decline; unemployment began to rise; low interest rates and easy credit led to speculation in the securities markets; and the system lunged full speed ahead toward the Great Crash of 1929. But that part of the story must wait for another chapter.

The technician who actually drafted the final version of the Federal Reserve Act was H. Parker Willis. After the System was created, he was appointed as First Secretary of the Board of Governors. By 1929, he had become disillusioned with the cartel and, in an article published in *The North American Review,* he wrote:

> **In the autumn of 1926 a group of bankers, among whom was one with a world famous name, were sitting at a table in a Washington hotel. One of them raised the question whether the low discount rates of the System were not likely to encourage speculation. "Yes," replied the conspicuous figure referred to, "they will, but that cannot be I helped. It is the price we must pay for helping Europe."[2]**

I There can be little doubt that the banker in question was J.P. (Jack) Morgan, Jr. It was Jack who was imbued with English tradition from the earliest age, whose financial empire had its roots in London, whose family business was saved by the Bank of England, who spent six months out of every year of his later life as a resident of England, who had openly insisted that his junior partners demonstrate a "loyalty to Britain,"[3] and who had directed the Council on Foreign Relations, the American branch of a secret society dedicated to the supremacy of British tradition and political

---

1- When an item is in demand, its price goes up. In the case of bonds and other interest-bearing debt instruments, the price is expressed in *reverse* of its interest yield. The higher the price, the lower the interest- In other words, the higher the Price, the more one has to pay to obtain the same dollar return in interest. Therefore, when the Fed creates an artificial demand for bonds or commercial paper, such as acceptances, the interest yield on these items goes down, which makes them more costly as an investment.

2- "The Failure of the Federal Reserve," by H. Parker Willis, *The North American Review,* May, 1929, p. 553.

P- Chernow, p. 167.

power. It is only with that background that one can fully appreciate the willingness to sacrifice American interests. Indeed, "it is the price we must pay for helping Europe."

In spite of the growing signs of crisis in the American economy, Morgan's protege, Benjamin Strong, was nonetheless pleased with his accomplishment. In a letter written in 1929 to Parker Gilbert, who was the American Agent for Reparations, he said:

> Our policy of the last four years, up to this January, has been effective in accomplishing the purpose for which it was designed. It has enabled monetary reorganization to be completed in Europe, which otherwise would have been impossible. It was undertaken with the well recognized hazard that we were liable to encounter a big speculation and some expansion of credit... Our course was perfectly obvious. We had to undertake it. The conditions permitted it, and the possibility of damage abroad was at a nunimirm.

Damage *abroad?* What about damage *at home?* It is clear that Strong saw little difference between the two. He was the forerunner of the internationalists who have operated the Federal Reserve ever since. He viewed the United States as but one piece in a complex world financial structure, and what was good for the world was good for America. And, oh yes, what was good for England was good for the world!

THE BRITISH-AMERICAN UNION

It is one of the least understood realities of modern history that many of America's most prominent political and financial figures—then as now—have been willing to sacrifice the best interests of the United States in order to further their goal of creating a one-world government. The strategy has remained unchanged since the formation of Cecil Rhodes' society and its offspring, the Round Table Groups. It is to merge the English-speaking nations into a single political entity, while at the same time creating similar groupings for other geopolitical regions. After this is accomplished, all of these groupings are to be amalgamated into a global government, the so-called Parliament of Man. And guess who is planning to control that government from behind the scenes.

This strategy was expressed aptly by Andrew Carnegie in his book, *Triumphant Democracy*. Expressing concern that England was in decline as a world power, he said:

---

1. Chandler, p. 458. For additional clarification, also see pp. 459-63.

> **Reunion with her American children is the only sure way to prevent continued decline.... Whatever obstructs reunion I oppose; whatever promotes reunion I favor. I judge all political questions from this standpoint...**
>
> **The Parliament of Man and the Federation of the World have already been hailed by the poet, and these mean a step much farther in advance of the proposed reunion of Britain and America.... I say that as surely as the sun in the heavens once shone upon Britain and America united, so surely is it one morning to rise, shine upon, and greet again the reunited state, "The British-American Union."**[1]

SUMMARY

After the Civil War, America experienced a series of expansions and contractions of the money supply leading directly to economic booms and busts. This was the result of the creation of fiat money by a banking system which, far from being free and competitive, was a half-way house to central banking. Throughout the chaos, one banking firm, the House of Morgan, was able to prosper out of the failure of others. Morgan had close ties with the financial structure and culture of England and was, in fact, more British than American. Events suggest the possibility that Morgan and Company was in concealed partnership with the House of Rothschild throughout most of this period.

Benjamin Strong was a Morgan man and was appointed as the first Governor of the Federal Reserve Bank of New York which rapidly assumed dominance over the System. Strong immediately entered into close alliance with Montagu Norman, Governor of the Bank of England, to save the English economy from depression. This was accomplished by deliberately creating inflation in the U.S. which caused an outflow of gold, a loss of foreign markets, unemployment, and speculation in the stock market, all of which were factors that propelled America into the crash of 1929 and the great depression of the 30s.

Although not covered in this chapter, it must be remembered that the same forces were responsible for American involvement in both world wars to provide the economic and military resources England needed to survive. Furthermore, the key players in this

---

I- Andrew Carnegie, *Triumphant Democracy* (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1893), pp. 530-49. This is a revised edition of the book which was originally written 1886. Earlier editions do not contain these words.

action were men who were part of the network of a secret society established by Cecil Rhodes for the expansion of the British empire.

Chapter Twenty-One

COMPETITION IS A SIN

The story of how the New York investment bankers formed a cartel to avoid competition; the drafting of proposed legislation to legalize that cartel; the strategy to camouflage the true nature of the legislation; the failure of the deception and the defeat of the bill.

We have travelled to many points on a large circle of time and now are reapproaching the journey to Jekyll Island where this book began.

In the last chapter, we saw how the expansion and contraction of the money supply following the Civil War led to a series of booms and busts. We saw how the firm of J.P. Morgan & Company, with help from financiers in London, was able to reap great profits from both sides of those cycles but particularly from the recessions. At that point, we jumped ahead in time to examine how J.P. Morgan and other leading American financiers were closely aligned with British interests. We also saw how, in the 1920s, the American dollar was deliberately weakened by Morgan agents within the Federal Reserve System in order to prop up the sagging British economy. Let us return now to the point of departure and allow our cast to resume playing out that most important prior scene: the actual creation of the Federal Reserve System itself.

HALF-WAY HOUSE TO CENTRAL BANKING

Historians seeking to justify governmental control of the monetary system have claimed that the booms and busts that occurred during this period were the result of free and competitive banking. As we have seen, however, these destructive cycles were the direct result of the creation and then extinguishing of fiat money through a system of federally chartered national banks—dominated by a handful of firms on Wall Street—which constituted a half-way house to central banking. None of these banks were truly free of state control nor were they competitive in the traditional sense of the word. They were in fact subsidized by the government and had many monopolistic privileges. From the perspective of bankers on Wall Street, however, there was a great deal more to be desired. For one thing, America still did not have a "lender of last resort." That is banker language for a full-blown central bank with the power to create unlimited amounts of fiat money which can be rushed to the aid of any individual bank that is under siege by its depositors wanting their money back. Having a lender of last resort is the only way a bank can create money out of nothing and still be protected from a potential "run" by its customers. In other words, it is the means by which the public is forced to pay a hidden tax of inflation to cover the shortfall of fractional-reserve banking. That is why the so-called virtue of a lender of last resort is taught with great reverence today in virtually all academic institutions offering degrees in banking and finance. It is one of the means by which the system perpetuates itself.

The banks could now inflate more radically and more in unison than before the war but, when they pushed too far and too fast, their bank-generated booms still collapsed into recessions. While this could be highly profitable to the banks, it was also precarious. As the American economy expanded in size, the magnitude of the booms and busts increased also, and it was becoming more and more difficult for firms like Morgan & Company to safely ride out the storm. There was a growing dread that the *next* collapse might be more than even they could handle.

In addition to these concerns was the fact that many state banks, mostly in the developing Southern and Western states, had elected not to join the national banking system and, consequently, had escaped control by the Wall-Street-Washington axis. As the population expanded south and westward, much of the nation's banking moved likewise, and the new banks were becoming an increasing source of competition to the New York power center. By 1896, the number of non-national banks had grown to sixty-one per cent, and they already held fifty-four per cent of the country's total banking deposits. By 1913, the year in which the Federal Reserve Act was passed, those numbers had swelled to seventy-one per cent non-national banks holding fifty-seven per cent of the nation's deposits.[1] Something had to be done to stop this movement.

---

1. **See Kolko, *Triumph,* p. 140.**

Additional competition was developing from the trend in industry to finance itself from profits rather than borrowed capital. Between 1900 and 1910, seventy per cent of American corporate growth was funded internally, making industry increasingly independent of the banks. What the bankers wanted—and what many businessmen wanted also—was a more "flexible" or "elastic" money supply which would allow them to create enough of it at any point in time so as to be able to drive interest rates downward at will. That would make loans to businessmen so attractive they would have little choice but to return to the bankers' stable.

TRUSTS AND CARTELS REPLACE COMPETITION

One more problem facing Wall Street was the fact that the biggest investment houses, such as Morgan & Company and Kuhn, Loeb & Company, although they remained as competitors, were by this time so large they had ceased doing serious battle against each other. The concept of trusts and cartels had dawned in America and, to those who already had made it to the top, joint ventures, market sharing, price fixing, and mergers were far more profitable than free-enterprise competition. Ron Chernow explains:

> Wall Street was snowballing into one big, Morgan-dominated institution. In December 1909, Pierpont had bought a majority stake in the Equitable Life Assurance Society from Thomas Fortune Ryan. This gave him strong influence over America's three biggest insurance companies—Mutual Life, Equitable, and New York Life.... His Bankers Trust had taken over three other banks. In 1909, he had gained control of Guaranty Trust, which through a series of mergers he converted into America's largest trust.... The core Money Trust group included J.P. Morgan and Company, First National Bank, and National City Bank....
>
> Wall Street bankers incestuously swapped seats on each others boards. Some banks had so many overlapping directors it was hard to separate them.... The banks also shared large equity stakes in each other....
>
> Why didn't banks just merge instead of carrying out the charade of swapping shares and board members? Most were private partnerships or closely held banks and could have done so. The answer harked back to traditional American antipathy against concentrated financial power. The Morgan-First National-National City trio feared public retribution if it openly declared its allegiance.[1]

---

[1] Chernow, pp. 152-53.

Interlocking directorates and other forms of hidden control were far more safe than open consolidation but they, too, had their limitations. For one thing, they could not penetrate the barriers of similar competitive groupings. As these combines became larger and larger, ways were sought to bring *them* together at the top rather than to capture the corporate entities which comprised them. Thus was born the concept of a cartel, a "community of interest" among businessmen in the same field, a mechanism for coming together as partners at a high level and to reduce or eliminate altogether the harsh necessity of competition.

All cartels, however, have an internal self-destruct mechanism. Sooner or later, one of the members inevitably becomes dissatisfied with his agreed-upon piece of the pie. He decides to compete once again and seeks a greater share of the market. It was quickly recognized that the only way to prevent this from happening was to use the police power of government to enforce the cartel agreement. The procedure called for the passage of laws disguised as measures to protect the consumer but which actually worked to ensure the elimination of competition. Henry P. Davison, who was a Morgan partner, put it bluntly when he told a Congressional committee in 1912: "I would rather have regulation and control than free competition."[1] John D. Rockefeller was even more to the point in one of his often repeated comments: "Competition is a sin."[2]

This trend was not unique to the banking industry. Ron Paul and Lewis Lehrman provide the historical perspective:

> After 1896 and 1900, then, America entered a progressive and predominantly Republican era. Compulsory cartelization in the name of "progressivism" began to invade every aspect of American economic life. The railroads had begun the parade with the formation of the ICC in the 1880s, but now field after field was being centralized and cartelized in the name of "efficiency," "stability," "progress," and the general welfare.... In particular, various big business groups, led by the J.P. Morgan interests, often gathered in the National Civic Federation and other think tanks and pressure organizations, saw that the voluntary cartels and the industrial merger movements of the late

---

[1] Quoted by Gabriel Kolko, *Main Currents in Modern American History* (New York: Harper & Row, 1976), p. 13.

[2] Quoted by William Hoffman, *David: A Report on a Rockefeller* (New York: Lyle Stewart, Inc., 1971), p. 29.

> 1890s had failed to achieve monopoly prices in industry. Therefore, they decided to turn to governments, state and federal, to curb the winds of competition and to establish forms of compulsory cartels, in the name, of course, of "curbing big business monopoly" and advancing the general welfare.[1]

The challenge no longer was how to overcome one's adversaries, but how to keep new ones from entering the field. When John D. used his enormous profits from Standard Oil to take control of the Chase National Bank, and his brother, William, bought the National City Bank of New York, Wall Street had yet one more gladiator in the financial arena. Morgan found that he had no choice except to allow the Rockefellers into the club but, now that they were in, they all agreed that the influx of competitors had to be stopped. And that was to be the hidden purpose of federal legislation and government control. Gabriel Kolko explains:

> The sheer magnitude of many of the mergers, culminating in U.S. Steel, soon forced him [Morgan] to modify his stand, though at times he would have preferred total control. More important, by 1898 he could not ignore the massive power of new financial competitors and had to treat them with deference. Standard Oil Company, utilizing National City Bank for its investments, had fixed resources substantially larger than Morgan's, and by 1899 was ready to move into the general economy.... The test came, of course, in the Northern Securities battle, which was essentially an expensive draw. Morgan and Standard paid deference to each other thereafter, and mutual toleration among bankers increased sharply.... A benign armed neutrality, rather than positive affection, is as much a reason as any for the high number of interlocks among the five major New York banking houses.[2]

Writing in the year 1919, from the perspective of an inside view of Wall Street at that time, John Moody completes the picture:

> This remarkable welding together of great corporate interests could not, of course, have been accomplished if the "masters of capital" in Wall Street had not themselves during the same period become more closely allied. The rivalry of interests which was so characteristic during the reorganization period a few years before had very largely disappeared. Although the two great groups of financiers, represented on the one hand by Morgan and his allies and on the other by the Standard Oil forces, were still distinguishable, they were now

h Paul and Lehrman, p. 119.

2- Kolko, *Triumph,* pp. 143-44.

> working in practical harmony on the basis of a sort of mutual "community of interest" of their own. Thus the control of capital and credit through banking resources tended to become concentrated in the hands of fewer and fewer men.... Before long it could be said, indeed, that two rival banking groups no longer existed, but that one vast and harmonious banking power had taken their place.

THE ALDRICH-VREELAND ACT

The monetary contractions of 1879 and 1893 were handled by Wall Street fairly easily and without government intervention, but the crisis of 1907 pushed their resources close to the abyss. It became clear that two changes had to be made: all remnants of banking competition now had to be totally eliminated and replaced by a national cartel; and far greater sums of fiat money had to be made available to the banks to protect them from future runs by depositors. There was now no question that Congress would have to be brought in as a partner in order to use the power of government to accomplish these objectives. Kolko continues:

> The crisis of 1907, on the other hand, found the combined banking structure of New York inadequate to meet the challenge, and chastened any obstreperous financial powers who thought they might build their fortunes independently of the entire banking community.... The nation had grown too large, banking had become too complex. Wall Street, humbled and almost alone, turned from its own resources to the national government.

The first step in this direction was openly a stop-gap measure. In 1908, Congress passed the Aldrich-Vreeland Act which, basically, accomplished two objectives. First, it authorized the national banks to issue an emergency currency, called script, to substitute for regular money when they found themselves unable to pay their depositors. Script had been used by the bank clearing houses during the panic of 1907 with partial success, but it had been a bold experiment with no legal foundation. Now Congress made it quite legal and, as Galbraith observed, "The new legislation regularized these arrangements. This could be done against the security of sundry bonds and commercial loans—these could, in effect, be turned into cash without being sold."[3]

---

1. Moody, pp. 117-18,150
2. Kolko, *Triumph,* p. 144.
3. This legalized script was used only once—in 1914 at the outbreak of World War I. See Galbraith, p. 120.

The second and perhaps most important feature of the Act was to create a National Monetary Commission to study the problems of American banking and then make recommendations to Congress on how to stabilize the monetary system. The commission consisted of nine senators and nine representatives. The Vice-Chairman was Representative Edward Vreeland, a banker from the Buffalo area. The chairman, of course, was Senator Nelson Aldrich. From the start, it was obvious that the Commission was a sham. Aldrich conducted virtually a one-man show. The so-called fact-finding body held no official meetings for almost two years while Aldrich toured Europe consulting with the top central bankers of England, France, and Germany. Three-hundred thousand tax dollars were spent on these junkets, and the only tangible product of the Commission's work was thirty-eight massive volumes of the history of European banking. None of the members of the Commission were ever consulted regarding the official recommendations issued by Aldrich in their name. Actually, these were the work of Aldrich and six men who were not even members of the Commission, and their report was drafted, not in a bare Congressional conference room in Washington, but in a plush private hunting resort in Georgia.

And this event finally brings us back to that cold, blustery night at the New Jersey railway station where seven men, representing one-fourth of the wealth of the world, boarded the Aldrich private car for a clandestine journey to Jekyll Island.

THE JEKYLL ISLAND PLAN

As summarized in the opening chapter of this book, the purpose of that meeting was to work out a plan to achieve five primary objectives:

1- How to stop the growing influence of small, rival banks and to insure that control over the nation's financial resources would remain in the hands of those present;
2. How to make the money supply more elastic in order to reverse the trend of private capital formation and to recapture the industrial loan market;
3- How to pool the meager reserves of all the nation's banks into one large reserve so that at least a few of them could protect themselves from currency drains and bank runs;

4. How to shift the inevitable losses from the owners of the banks to the taxpayers;
5. How to convince Congress that the scheme was a measure to protect the public.

It was decided that the first two objectives could be achieved simply by drafting the proper technical language into a cartel agreement and then re-working the vocabulary into legislative phraseology. The third and fourth could be achieved by including in that legislation the establishment of a lender of last resort; in other words, a true central bank with the ability to create unlimited amounts of fiat money. These were mostly technical matters and, although there was some disagreement on a few minor points, generally they were content to follow the advice of Paul Warburg, the man who had the most experience in these matters and who was regarded as the group's theoretician. The fifth objective was the critical one, and there was much discussion on how to achieve it.

To convince Congress and the public that the establishment of a banking cartel was, somehow, a measure to protect the public, the Jekyll Island strategists laid down the following plan of action:

1. Do not call it a cartel nor even a central bank.
2. Make it look like a government agency.
3. Establish regional branches to create the appearance of decentralization, not dominated by Wall Street banks.
4. Begin with a conservative structure including many sound banking principles knowing that the provisions can be quietly altered or removed in subsequent years.
5. Use the anger caused by recent panics and bank failures to create popular demand for monetary reform.
6. Offer the Jekyll Island plan as though it were in response to that need.
7. Employ university professors to give the plan the appearance of academic approval.
8. Speak out *against* the plan to convince the public that Wall Street bankers do not want it.

A CENTRAL BANK BY ANY OTHER NAME

Americans would never have accepted the Federal Reserve System if they had known that it was half cartel and half central bank. Even though the concept of government protectionism was rapidly gaining acceptance in business, academic, and political circles, the idea of cartels, trusts, and restraint of free competition was still quite alien to the average voter. And within the halls of Congress, any forthright proposal for either a cartel or a central bank would have been soundly defeated. Congressman Everis Hayes of California warned: "Our people have set their faces like steel against a central bank."[1] Senator John Shafroth of Colorado declared: "The Democratic Party is opposed to a central bank."[2] The monetary scientists on Jekyll Island decided, therefore, to devise a name for their new creature which would avoid the word *bank* altogether and which would conjure the image of the federal government itself. And to create the deception that there would be no concentration of power in the large New York banks, the original plan calling for a central bank was replaced by a proposal for a network of regional institutions which supposedly would share and diffuse that power.

Nathaniel Wright Stephenson, Senator Aldrich's biographer, tells us: "Aldrich entered the discussion at Jekyll Island an ardent convert to the idea of a central bank. His desire was to transplant the system of one of the great European banks, say the Bank of England, bodily to America."[3] Galbraith explains further: "It was his [Senator Aldrich's] thought to outflank the opposition by having not one central bank but many. And the word bank would itself be avoided."[4]

Frank Vanderlip tells us the regional concept was merely window dressing and that the network was always intended to operate as one central bank. He said: "The law as enacted provided for twelve banks instead of one,... but the intent of the law was to coordinate the twelve through the Federal Reserve Board in Washington, so that in effect they would operate as a central bank."[5]

If not using the word *bank* was essential to the Jekyll Island plan, avoiding the word *cartel* was even more so. Yet, the cartel nature of the proposed central bank was obvious to any astute observer. In an address before the American Bankers Association,

---

1. *Congressional Record,* pt. 5,1913, p. 4655.
2. *Congressional Record,* pt. 6,1913, p. 6021.
3- Stephenson, p. 378.
4- Galbraith, p. 122.
5- Vanderlip, "From Farm Boy to Financier," p. 72.

Aldrich laid it out plainly. He said: "The organization proposed is not a bank, but a cooperative union of all the banks of the country for definite purposes."[1] Two years later, in a speech before that same group of bankers, A. Barton Hepburn of Chase National Bank was even more candid. He said: "The measure recognizes and adopts the principles of a central bank. Indeed, if it works out as the sponsors of the law hope, it will make all incorporated banks together joint owners of a central dominating power." It would be difficult to find a better definition of the word *cartel* than that.

The plan to structure the Creature conservatively at the start and then to remove the safeguards later was the brainchild of Paul Warburg. The creation of a powerful Federal Reserve Board was also his idea as a means by which the regional branches could be absorbed into a central bank with control safely in New York. Professor Edwin Seligman, a member of the international banking family of J&W Seligman, and head of the Department of Economics at Columbia University, explains and praises the plan:

> **It was in my study that Mr. Warburg first conceived the idea of presenting his views to the public.[3]... In its fundamental features the Federal Reserve Act is the work of Mr. Warburg more than any other man in the country.... The existence of a Federal Reserve Board creates, in everything but in name, a real central bank.... Mr. Warburg had a practical object in view.... It was incumbent on him to remember that the education of the country must be gradual and that a large part of the task was to break down prejudices and remove suspicion. His plans therefore contain all sorts of elaborate suggestions designed to guard the public against fancied dangers and to persuade the country that the general scheme was at all practicable. It was the hope of Mr. Warburg that with the lapse of time it may be possible to eliminate**

---

1. Krooss, Vol. III, 1969 edition, p. 1202.

2. Quoted by Kolko, *Triumph,* p. 235.

3. Most historians share Seligman's view regarding Warburg's seminal role in the creation of the Federal Reserve System. Certain participants in the drama, however, apparently eager to capture some of the spotlight of fame for themselves, are in vigorous disagreement. For example, William McAdoo, Secretary of the Treasury at the time, says: "This assertion is so completely erroneous that it must have emanated from ignorance rather than mendacity." See McAdoo, p. 281. Competing egos notwithstanding, an objective reading of the record leads to the conclusion that, while others no doubt provided great input in the areas of technical drafts and political negotiations, the *essence* of the plan, its overall *concept* and the *rationale* that was put forward to sell the plan to Congress was essentially the product of Warburg's twisted genius.

> from the law not a few clauses which were inserted largely, at his suggestion, for educational purposes.[1]

THE ALDRICH BILL

The first draft of the Jekyll Island plan was submitted to the Senate by Nelson Aldrich but, due to the Senator's unexpected illness when he returned to Washington, it was actually written by Frank Vanderlip and Benjamin Strong.[2] Although it was co-authored by Congressman Vreeland, it immediately became known as the Aldrich Bill. Vreeland, by his own admission, had little to do with it either, but his willingness to be a team player in the game of national deception was of great value. Writing in the August 25, 1910, issue of *The Independent,* which incidentally was owned by Aldrich himself and was anything *but* independent, Vreeland said: "The bank I propose.... is an ideal method of fighting monopoly. It could not possibly itself become a monopoly and it would prevent other banks combining into monopolies. With earnings limited to four and one-half per cent, there could not be a monopoly."

What an amazing statement. It is brilliantly insidious because of the half truths it contains. It is true that monopolies cannot—or at least *do* not—operate at four and one-half per cent interest. But it is untrue that the Federal Reserve banks were to be held to that lowly rate. It is true that four per cent was the stated amount they would earn on the stock purchased in the System, but it is also true that the real profits were to be made, not from stock dividends, but from the harvesting of interest payments on fiat money. To this was to be added the profits made possible from operating on smaller safety margins yet still being protected from bankruptcy. Furthermore, being on the inside of the nation's central bank would make them privy to the important money-making data and decisions long before their competitors. The profits that could be derived from such an advantage would be equal to or even greater than those from the Mandrake Mechanism. It is true that the Federal Reserve was to be a private institution, but it is certainly not true that this was to mark the disappearance of the government from the banking business. In fact, it was just the opposite, because it marked the *appearance* of the government as a partner with private bankers and as the enforcer of their cartel agreement. Government would now become more deeply involved than ever before in our history.

---

[1] • Edwin Seligman, Proceedings of the Academy of Political Science, Vol IV, No. 4 (New York: 1914), pp. 3-6.

2- Vanderlip, "From Farm Boy to Financier," p. 72.

*• "A Better System of Banking and Currency," by Edward B. Vreeland, *The Pendent,* August 25,1910, p. 394.

Half truths and propaganda notwithstanding, the organizational structure proposed by the Aldrich Bill was similar in many ways to the old Bank of the United States. It was to have the right to convert federal debt into money, to loan that money to the government, to control the affairs of regional banks, and to be the depository of government funds. The dissimilarities were in those provisions which gave the Creature *more* privilege and power than the older central bank. The most important of these was the right to create the official money of the United States. For the first time in our history, the paper notes of a banking institution became legal tender, not only for public debts, but for private ones as well. Henceforth, anyone refusing to accept these notes would be sent to prison. The words "The United States of America" were to appear on the face of every note along with the great seal of the United States Treasury. And, of course, the signature of the Treasurer himself would be printed in a conspicuous location. All of this was designed to convince the public that the new institution was surely an agency of the government itself.

TURNING THE OPPOSITION AGAINST ITSELF

Now that the basic strategy was in place and a specific bill had been drafted, the next step was to create popular support for it. This was the critical part of the plan and it required the utmost finesse. The task actually was made easier by the fact that there was a great deal of genuine opposition to the concentration of financial power on Wall Street. Two of the most outspoken critics at that time were Wisconsin Senator Robert LaFollette and Minnesota Congressman Charles Lindbergh. Hardly a week passed without one of them delivering a scathing speech against what they called "the money trust" which was responsible, they said, for deliberately creating economic booms and busts in order to reap the profits of salvaging foreclosed homes, farms and businesses. If anyone doubted that such a trust really existed, their skepticism was abruptly terminated when LaFollette publicly charged that the entire country was controlled by just fifty men. The monetary scientists were not dismayed nor did they even bother to deny it. In fact, when George F. Baker, who was a partner of J.P. Morgan, was asked by reporters for his reaction to LaFollette's claim, he replied that it was totally absurd. He knew from personal knowledge, he said, that the number was not more than eight![1]

The public was, of course, outraged, and the pressure predictably mounted for Congress to do something. The monetary scientists were fully prepared to turn this reaction to their own advantage. The strategy was simple: (1) set up a special Congressional committee to investigate the money trust; (2) make sure the committee is staffed by friends of the trust itself; and (3) conceal the full scope of the trust's operation while revealing just enough to intensify the public clamor for reform. Once the political climate was hot enough, then the Aldrich Bill could be put forward, supposedly as the answer to that need.

This strategy was certainly not new. As Congressman Lindbergh explained:

> Ever since the Civil War, Congress has allowed the bankers to completely control financial legislation. The membership of the Finance Committee in the Senate and the Committee on Banking and Currency in the House, has been made up of bankers, their agents and attorneys. These committees have controlled the nature of the bills to be reported, the extent of them, and the debates that were to be held on them when they were being considered in the Senate and the House. No one, not on the committee, is recognized ... unless someone favorable to the committee has been arranged for.[2]

THE PUJO COMMITTEE

The Pujo Committee was a perfect example of this kind of chicanery. It was a subcommittee of the House Committee on Banking and Currency and it was given the awesome responsibility of conducting the famous "Money Trust" investigation of 1912. Its chairman was Arsene Pujo of Louisiana who, true to form, was regarded by many as a spokesman for the "Oil Trust." The hearings dragged on for eight months producing volumes of dry statistics and self-serving testimony of the great Wall Street bankers themselves. At no time were the financiers asked any questions about

---

1- Mullins, p. 16.
2. Lindbergh, p. 76.

their affairs with foreign investment houses. Nor were they asked about their response to competition from new banks. There were no questions about their plan to protect the speculative banks from currency drains; or their motive for wanting artificially low interest rates; or their formula for passing on their losses to the taxpayer. The public was given the impression that Congress was really prying off the lid of scandal and corruption, but the reality was more like a fireside chat between old friends. No matter what vagaries or absurdities fell from the bankers' lips, it was accepted without contest.

These hearings were conducted largely as a result of the public accusations made by Congressmen Lindbergh and Senator LaFollette. Yet, when they requested to appear before the Committee, both of them were denied access. The only witnesses to testify were the bankers themselves and their friends. Kolko tells us:

> Fortunately for the reformers, the Pujo Committee swung into high gear in its investigation of the Money Trust during the summer of 1912, and for eight months frightened the nation with its awesome, if inconclusive, statistics on the power of Wall Street over the nation's economy.... Five banking firms, the elaborate tables of the committee showed, held 341 directorships in 112 corporations with an aggregate capitalization of over $22 billion. The evidence seemed conclusive, and the nation was suitably frightened into realizing that reform of the banking system was urgent—presumably to bring Wall Street under control....
>
> The orgy of Wall Street was resurrected by the newspapers, who quite ignored the fact that the biggest advocates of banking reform were the bankers themselves, bankers with a somewhat different view of the problem.... Yet it was largely the Pujo hearings that made the topic of banking reform a serious one.

Kolko has touched upon an interesting point. Almost no one put any significance to the fact that some of the biggest bankers on Wall Street were the first marchers to lead the parade for banking reform. The most conspicuous among these was Paul Warburg of Kuhn, Loeb & Company who, for seven years prior to passage of the Federal Reserve Act, travelled around the country doing nothing but giving "reform" speeches and writing scholarly articles for the media, including an eleven-part series for *The New York Times*. Spokesmen from the houses of Morgan and Rockefeller

---

1. Kolko, *Triumph,* p. 220.

joined in and made regular appearances before professional and political bodies echoing the call for reform. Yet no one paid any attention to the unmistakable odor of fish.

ENLISTING THE HELP OF ACADEMIA

The speeches and articles by big-name bankers were never intended to sway the public at large. They served the function of putting forth the basic arguments and the technical details which were to be the starting point for the work of others who could not be accused of having self-serving motives. To carry the message to the voters, it was decided that representatives from the world of academia should be enlisted to provide the necessary aura of respectability and intellectual objectivity. For that purpose, the banks contributed a sum of $5 million to a special "educational" fund, and much of that money found its way into the environs of three universities: Princeton, Harvard, and the University of Chicago, all of which had been recipients of large endowments from the captains of industry and finance.

It was precisely at this time that the study of "economics" was becoming a new and acceptable field, and it was not difficult to find talented but slightly hungry professors who, in return for a grant or a prestigious appointment, were eager to expound the virtues of the Jekyll Island plan. Not only was such academic pursuit financially rewarding, it also provided national recognition for them as pioneers in the new field of economics. Galbraith says:

> Under Aldrich's direction a score or more of studies of monetary institutions in the United States and, more particularly, in other countries were commissioned from the emergent economics profession. It is at least possible that the reverence in which the Federal Reserve System has since been held by economists owes something to the circumstance that so many who pioneered in the profession participated also in its [the System's] birth.[1]

The principal accomplishment of the bank's educational fund was to create an organization called the National Citizens' League. Although it was entirely financed and controlled by the banks under the personal guidance of Paul Warburg, it presented itself merely as a group of concerned citizens seeking banking reform. The function of the organization was to disseminate hundreds of thousands of "educational" pamphlets, to organize letter-writing campaigns to Congressmen, to supply quotable material to the news media, and in other ways to create the illusion of grass-roots support for the Jekyll Island plan.

---

[1] **Galbraith, p. 121.**

Nathaniel Stephenson, in his biography of Nelson Aldrich, says: "The league was non-partisan. It was careful to abstain from emphasizing Senator Aldrich.... First and last, hundreds of thousands of dollars were spent by the league in popularizing financial science."[1]

The man chosen to head up that effort was an economics professor by the name of J. Laurence Laughlin. Kolko says that "Laughlin, nominally very orthodox in his commitment to laissez faire theory, was nevertheless a leading academic advocate of banking regulation ... and was sensitive to the needs of banking as well as the realities of politics."[2] Did his appointment bring intellectual objectivity to the new organization? Stephenson answers: "Professor Laughlin of the University of Chicago was given charge of the League's propaganda."[3] To which Congressman Lindbergh adds this reminder: "The reader knows that the University of Chicago is an institution endowed by John D. Rockefeller with nearly fifty million dollars. It may truly be said to be the Rockefeller University."[4]

This does not necessarily mean that Laughlin was purchased like so many pounds of hamburger and told by Rockefeller what to say and do. It doesn't work that way. The professor undoubtedly believed in the virtue of the Jekyll Island plan, and the evidence is that he pursued his assignment with enthusiastic sincerity. But there is no doubt that he was selected for his new post precisely because he *did* support the concept of a partnership between banking and government as a healthy substitute for "destructive" competition. In other words, if he didn't honestly agree with John D. that competition was a sin, he probably never even would have been given a professorship in the first place.[5]

---

[1] **Stephenson, pp. 388-89.**

[2] **Kolko, *Triumph,* p. 187.**

[3] **Stephenson, p. 388.**

[4] **Lindbergh, p. 131.**

[5] **For an excellent overview of the formation and activities of the League, see Kolko, *Triumph,* pp. 186-228.**

WILSON AND WALL STREET

Woodrow Wilson was yet another academic who was brought into the national spotlight as a result of his views on banking reform. It will be recalled from a previous chapter that Wilson's name had been put into nomination for President at the Democratic national convention largely due to the influence of Col. Edward Mandell House. But that was 1912. Ten years prior to that, he was relatively unknown. In 1902 he had been elected as the president of Princeton University, a position he could not have held without the concurrence of the University's benefactors among Wall Street bankers. He was particularly close with Andrew Carnegie and had become a trustee of the Carnegie Foundation.

Two of the most generous donors were Cleveland H. Dodge and Cyrus McCormick, directors of Rockefeller's National City Bank. They were part of that Wall Street elite which the Pujo Committee had described as America's "Money Trust." Both men had been Wilson's classmates at Princeton University. When Wilson returned to Princeton as a professor in 1890, Dodge and McCormick were, by reason of their wealth, University trustees, and they took it upon themselves to personally advance his career. Ferdinand Lundberg, in *America's Sixty Families,* says this:

> For nearly twenty years before his nomination Woodrow Wilson had moved in the shadow of Wall Street.... In 1898 Wilson, his salary unsatisfactory, besieged with offers of many university presidencies, threatened to resign. Dodge and McCormick thereupon constituted themselves his financial guardians, and agreed to raise the additional informal stipendium that kept him at Princeton. The contributors to this private fund were Dodge, McCormick, and Moses Taylor Pyne and Percy R. Pyne, of the family that founded the National City Bank. In 1902 this same group arranged Wilson's election as president of the university.

A grateful Wilson often had spoken in glowing terms about the rise of vast corporations and had praised J.P. Morgan as a great American leader. He also had come to acceptable conclusions about the value of a controlled economy. "The old time of individual competition is probably gone by," he said. "It may come back; I don't know; it will not come back within our time, I dare say."[2]

1- Lundberg, pp. 114-15.

p. Greider, p. 276.

H.S. Kenan tells us the rest of the story:

> Woodrow Wilson, President of Princeton University, was the first prominent educator to speak in favor of the Aldrich Plan, a gesture which immediately brought him the Governorship of New Jersey and later the Presidency of the United States. During the panic of 1907, Wilson declared that: "all this trouble could be averted if we appointed a committee of six or seven public-spirited men like J.P. Morgan to handle the affairs of our country."[1]

OPPOSITION TO THE ALDRICH BILL

One of the disagreements at the Jekyll Island meeting was over the name to be attached to the proposed legislation. Warburg, being the master psychologist he was, wanted it to be called the National Reserve Bill or the Federal Reserve Bill, something which would conjure up the dual images of government and reserves, both of which were calculated to be subconsciously appealing. Aldrich, on the other hand, acting out of personal ego, insisted that ***his*** name be attached to the bill. Warburg pointed out that the Aldrich name was associated in the minds of the public with Wall Street interests, and that would be an unnecessary obstacle to achieving their goal. Aldrich said that, since he had been the chairman of the National Monetary Commission which was created specifically to make recommendations for banking reform, people would be confused if his name were not associated with the bill. The debate, we are told, was long and heated. But, in the end, the politician's ego won out over the banker's logic.

Warburg, of course, was right. Aldrich was well known as a Republican spokesman for big business and banking. His loyalties were further publicized by recently sponsored tariff bills to protect the tobacco and rubber trusts. The Aldrich name on a bill for banking reform was an easy target for the opposition. On December 15, 1911, Congressman Lindbergh rose before the House of Representatives and took careful aim:

> The Aldrich Plan is the Wall Street Plan. It is a broad challenge to the government by the champion of the money trust. It means another panic, if necessary, to intimidate the people. Aldrich, paid by the government to represent the people, proposes a plan for the trusts instead.[2]

---

1. **H.S. Kenan, *The Federal Reserve Bank* (Los Angeles: Noontide Press, 1966), p. 105.**
2. **Quoted by H.S. Kenan, p. 118.**

The Aldrich Bill never came to a vote. When the Republicans lost control of the House in 1910 and then lost the Senate and the Presidency in 1912, any hope there may have been of putting through a Republican bill was lost. Aldrich had been voted out of the Senate by his constituents, and the ball was now squarely in the court of the Democrats and their new president, Woodrow Wilson.

How this came to pass is an interesting lesson on reality politics, and we shall turn to that part of the story next.

SUMMARY

Banking in the period immediately prior to passage of the Federal Reserve Act was subject to a myriad of controls, regulations, subsidies, and privileges at both the federal and state levels. Popular history portrays this period as one of unbridled competition and free banking. It was, in fact, a half-way house to central banking. Wall Street, however, wanted more government participation. The New York bankers particularly wanted a "lender of last resort" to create unlimited amounts of fiat money for their use in the event they were exposed to bank runs or currency drains. They also wanted to force all banks to follow the same inadequate reserve policies so that more cautious ones would not draw down the reserves of the others. An additional objective was to limit the growth of new banks in the South and West.

This was a time of growing enchantment with the idea of trusts and cartels. For those who had already made it to the top, competition was considered chaotic and wasteful. Wall Street was snowballing into two major banking groups: the Morgans and the Rockefellers, and even they had largely ceased competing with each other in favor of cooperative financial structures. But to keep these cartel combines from flying apart, a means of discipline was needed to force the participants to abide by the agreements. The federal government was brought in as a partner to serve that function.

To sell the plan to Congress, the cartel reality had to be hidden and the name "central bank" had to be avoided. The word *Federal* was chosen to make it sound like it was a government operation; the word *Reserve* was chosen to make it appear financially sound; and the word *System* (the first drafts used the word *Association)* was chosen to conceal the fact that it was a central bank. A structure of 12 regional institutions was conceived as a further ploy to create the illusion of decentralization, but the mechanism was designed from the beginning to operate as a central bank closely modeled after the Bank of England.

The first draft of the Federal Reserve Act was called the Aldrich Bill and was co-sponsored by Congressman Vreeland, but it was not the work of either of these politicians. It was the brainchild of banker Paul Warburg and was actually written by bankers Frank Vanderlip and Benjamin Strong.

Aldrich's name attached to a banking bill was bad strategy, because he was known as a Wall Street Senator. His bill was not politically acceptable and was never released from committee. The groundwork had been done, however, and the time had arrived to change labels and political parties. The measure would now undergo minor cosmetic surgery and reappear under the sponsorship of a politician whose name would be associated in the public mind with anti-Wall Street sentiments.

Chapter Twenty-Two

THE CREATURE SWALLOWS CONGRESS

The second attempt to pass legislation to legalize the banking cartel; the bankers' selection of Woodrow Wilson as a Presidential candidate; their strategy to get him elected; the role played by Wilson to promote the cartel's legislation; the final passage of the Federal Reserve Act.

The election of 1912 was a textbook example of power politics and voter deception. The Republican President, William Howard Taft, was up for reelection. Like most Republicans of that era, his political power was based upon the support of big-business and banking interests in the industrial regions. He had been elected to his first term in the expectation that he would continue the protectionist policies of his predecessor, Teddy Roosevelt, particularly in the expansion of cartel markets for sugar, coffee, and fruit from Latin America. Once in office, however, he grew more restrained in these measures and earned the animosity of many powerful Republicans. The ultimate breach occurred when Taft refused to support the Aldrich Plan. He objected, not because it would create a central bank which would impose government control over the economy, but because it would not offer *enough* government control. He recognized that the Jekyll Island formula would place the bankers into the driver's seat with only nominal participation by the government. He did not object to the ancient partnership between monetary and political scientists, he merely wanted a greater share for the political side. The bankers were not adverse to negotiating the balance of power nor were they unwilling to make compromises, but what they really needed at this juncture was a man in the White House who, instead of being lukewarm on the plan, could be counted on to become its champion and who would use his influence as President to garner support from the fence straddlers in Congress. From that moment forward, Taft was marked for political extinction.

This was a period of general prosperity, and Taft was popular with the voters as well as with the rank-and-file Party organization. He had easily won the nomination at the Republican convention, and there was little doubt that he could take the presidential election as well. Wilson had been put forth as the Democratic challenger, but his dry personality and aloof mannerisms had failed to arouse sufficient voter interest to make him a serious contender.

THE BULL MOOSE CANDIDATE

However, when Teddy Roosevelt returned from his latest African safari, he was persuaded by Morgan's deputies, George Perkins and Frank Munsey, to challenge the President for the Party's nomination. When that effort failed, he was then persuaded to run against Taft as the "Bull Moose" candidate on the Progressive Party ticket. It is unclear what motivated him to accept such a proposition, but there is no doubt regarding the intent of his backers. They did not expect Roosevelt to win, but, as a former Republican President, they knew he would split the Party and, by pulling away votes from Taft, put Wilson into the White House.

Presidential campaigns need money and lots of it. The Republican Party was well financed, largely from the same individuals who now wanted to see the defeat of its own candidate. It would not be possible to cut off this funding without causing too many questions. The solution, therefore, was to provide the financial resources for *all three* candidates, with special attention to the needs of Wilson and Roosevelt.

Some historians, while admitting the facts, have scoffed at the conclusion that deception was intended. Ron Chernow says: "By 1924, the House of Morgan was so influential in American politics that conspiracy buffs couldn't tell which presidential candidate was more beholden to the bank."[1] But one does not have to be a conspiracy buff to recognize the evidence of foul play. Ferdinand Lundberg tells us:

---

[1] **Chernow, p. 254.**

> **J.P. Morgan and Company played the leading role in the national election of 1912.... Roosevelt's preconvention backers were George W. Perkins and Frank Munsey. These two, indeed, encouraged Roosevelt to contest Taff s nomination.... Munsey functioned in the newspaper field for J.P. Morgan and Company—buying, selling, creating, and suppressing newspapers in consonance with J.P. Morgan's shifting needs.... Perkins resigned from J.P. Morgan and Company on January 1,1911, to assume a larger political role....**
>
> **The suspicion seems justified that the two were not over-anxious to have Roosevelt win. The notion that Perkins and Munsey may have wanted Wilson to win ... is partly substantiated by the view that Perkins put a good deal of cash behind the Wilson campaign through Cleveland H. Dodge. Dodge and Perkins financed, to the extent of $35,500, the Trenton** *True American,* **a newspaper that circulated nationally with Wilson propaganda....**
>
> **Throughout the three-cornered fight, Roosevelt had Munsey and George Perkins constantly at his heels, supplying money, going over his speeches, bringing people from Wall Street in to help, and, in general, carrying the entire burden of the campaign against Taft.... Perkins and J.P. Morgan and Company were the substance of the Progressive Party; everything else was trimming.... Munsey's cash contribution to the Progressive Party brought his total political outlay for 1912 to $229,255.72. Perkins made their joint contribution more than $500,000, and Munsey expended $1,000,000 in cash additionally to acquire from Henry Einstein the New York** *Press* **so that Roosevelt would have a New York City morning newspaper. Perkins and Munsey, as the Clapp [Senate Privileges and Election] Committee learned from Roosevelt himself, also underwrote the heavy expense of Roosevelt's campaign train. In short, most of Roosevelt's campaign fund was supplied by the two Morgan hatchet men who were seeking Taft's scalp.**

Morgan & Company was not the only banking firm on Wall Street to endorse a three-way election as a means of defeating Taft. Within the firm of Kuhn, Loeb & Company, Felix Warburg was dutifully putting money into the Republican campaign as expected, but his brother, Paul Warburg and Jacob Schiff were backing Wilson, while yet another partner, Otto Kahn, supported Roosevelt. Other prominent Republicans who contributed to the Democratic campaign that year were Bernard Baruch, Henry Morganthau, and Thomas Fortune Ryan.[2] And the Rockefeller

---

1- Lundberg, pp. 106-12.
2. Kolko, *Triumph,* pp. 205-11.

component of the cartel was just as deeply involved. William McAdoo, who was Wilson's national campaign vice chairman, says that Cleveland Dodge of Rockefeller's National City Bank personally contributed $51,300—more than one-fourth the total raised from all other sources. In McAdoo's words, "He was a Godsend."[1] Ferdinand Lundberg describes Dodge as "the financial genius behind Woodrow Wilson." Continuing, he says:

> Wilson's nomination represented a personal triumph for Cleveland H. Dodge, director of the National City Bank, scion of the Dodge copper and munitions fortune.... The nomination represented no less a triumph for Ryan, Harvey, and J.P. Morgan and Company. Sitting with Dodge as co-directors of the National City Bank at the time were the younger J.P. Morgan, now the head of the [Morgan] firm, Jacob Schiff, William Rockefeller, J. Ogden Armour, and James Stillman. In short, except for George F. Baker, everyone whom the Pujo Committee had termed rulers of the "Money Trust" was in this bank.

And so it came to pass that the monetary scientists carefully selected their candidate and set about to clear the way for his victory. The maneuver was brilliant. Who would suspect that Wall Street would support a Democrat, especially when the Party platform contained this plank: "We oppose the so-called Aldrich Bill or the establishment of a central bank; and ... what is known as the money trust."

What irony it was. The Party of the working man, the Party of Thomas Jefferson—formed only a few generations earlier for the specific purpose of opposing a central bank—was now cheering a new leader who was a political captive of Wall Street bankers and who had agreed to the hidden agenda of establishing the Federal Reserve System. As George Harvey later boasted, the financiers "felt no animosity toward Mr. Wilson for such of his utterances as they regarded as radical and menacing to their interests. He had simply played the political game."[3]

William McAdoo, Wilson's national campaign vice chairman, destined to become Secretary of the Treasury, saw what was happening from a ringside seat. He said:

---

1. McAdoo, p. 117.
2. Lundberg, pp. 109,113.
3. Quoted by Lundberg, p. 120.

> The major contributions to any candidate's campaign fund are made by men who have axes to grind—and the campaign chest is the grindstone.... The fact is that there is a serious danger of this country becoming a pluto-democracy; that is, a sham republic with the real government in the hands of a small clique of enormously wealthy men, who speak through their money, and whose influence, even today, radiates to every comer of the United States.
>
> Experience has shown that the most practicable method of getting hold of a political party is to furnish it with money in large quantities. This brings the big money-giver or givers into close communion with the party leaders. Contact and influence do the rest.[1]

THE MONEY TRUST THEY LOVE TO HATE

Roosevelt actually had very little interest in the banking issue, probably because he didn't understand it. Furthermore, in the unlikely event the blustery "trust buster" would actually win the election, the financiers still had little to fear. In spite of his well-publicized stance of opposing big business, his true convictions were quite acceptable to Wall Street. As Chernow observed:

> Although the Roosevelt-Morgan relationship is sometimes caricatured as that of trust buster versus trust king, it was far more complex than that. The public wrangling obscured deeper ideological affinities.... Roosevelt saw trusts as natural, organic outgrowths of economic development. Stopping them, he said, was like trying to
> i dam the Mississippi River. Both TR and Morgan disliked the rugged, individualistic economy of the nineteenth century and favored big business.... In the sparring between Roosevelt and Morgan there was always a certain amount of shadow play, a pretense of greater animosity than actually existed.... Roosevelt and Morgan were secret blood brothers.[2]

I It is not surprising, therefore, as Warburg noted in January, 1912—ten months before the election—that Teddy had been "fairly won over to a favorable consideration of the Aldrich Plan."[3]

I Inner convictions on these issues notwithstanding, both Wilson and Roosevelt played their roles to the hilt. Privately financed by Wall Street's most powerful bankers, they publicly carried a flaming crusade against the "Money Trust" from one end of the country to the other. Roosevelt bellowed that the "issue of currency

P- McAdoo, pp. 165-66.
2. Chernow, pp. 106-12.
I. Warburg, Vol. I, p. 78.

should be lodged with the government and be protected from domination and manipulation by Wall Street."[1] And he quoted over and over again the Bull Moose (Progressive Party) platform which said: "We are opposed to the so-called Aldrich Currency Bill because its provisions would place our currency and credit system in private hands." Meanwhile, at the other end of town, Wilson declared:

> **There has come about an extraordinary and very sinister concentration in the control of business in the country.... The growth of our nation, therefore, and all our activities, are in the hands of a few men.... This money trust, or as it should be more properly called, this credit trust... is no myth.**[2]

Throughout the campaign, Taft was portrayed as the champion of big business and Wall Street banks—which, of course, he was. But so were Roosevelt and Wilson. The primary difference was that Taft, judged by his actual performance in office, was *known* to be such, whereas his opponents could only be judged by their words.

The outcome of the election was exactly as the strategists had anticipated. Wilson won with only forty-two per cent of the popular vote, which means, of course, that fifty-eight per cent had been cast against him. Had Roosevelt not entered the race, most of his votes undoubtedly would have gone to Taft, and Wilson would have become a footnote. As Colonel House confided to author George Viereck years later, "Wilson was elected by Teddy Roosevelt."[3]

Now that the Creature had moved into the White House, passage of the Jekyll Island plan went into its final phase. The last bastion of opposition in Congress consisted of the Populist wing of the Democratic Party under the leadership of William Jennings Bryan. The problem with this group was that they had taken their campaign platform seriously. They really *were* opposed to the Money Trust. While it may have been a simple matter to pull the wool over the eyes of voters, it would not be so easy to fool this group of experienced politicians. What was needed now was an

---

1. Henry S. Commager, ed., *Documents of American History* (New York: F.S. Cofts & Co., 1940), pp. 77-79.

2. Quoted by Carter Glass, *Adventures in Constructive Finance* (New York: Doubleday, 1927; rpt. Arno Press, a New York Times Co., 1975), p. 78-79.

3. Viereck, p. 34.

entirely new bill that, on the surface, would appear to contain changes of sufficient magnitude to allow the Bryan wing to change its position. The essential features of the plan, however, must not be abandoned. And, to coordinate this final strategy, the services of someone with great political skill would be essential. Fortunately for the planners, there was exactly such a man residing at the White House. It was not the President of the United States. It was Edward Mandell House.

THE ROLE OF COLONEL HOUSE

Colonel House, who had been educated in England and whose father represented England's merchant interests in the American South, had come into public life through the London Connection. It will be recalled from previous chapters that, perhaps more than any other person in America, he had helped maneuver the United States into World War I on the side of a desperate Britain and, by so doing, had also rescued the massive loans to Britain and France made by the Morgan interests. Not only had he been responsible for Wilson's nomination at the Democratic convention, but had become the President's constant companion, his personal adviser, and in many respects his political superior. It was through House that Wilson was made aware of the wishes of the Money Trust, and it was House who guided the President in every aspect of foreign and economic policy. An admiring biographer, Arthur Smith, writing in the year 1918, says that House "holds a power never wielded before in this country by any man out of office, a power greater than that of any political boss or Cabinet member."[1] A more recent biographer, George Viereck, was not exaggerating when he described House as "Chief Magistracy of the Republic," "Super-ambassador," "The pilot who guided the ship." Continuing, he said:

> **For six years two rooms were at his disposal in the North Wing of the White House.... In work and play their thoughts were one. House was the double of Wilson. It was House who made the slate for the Cabinet, formulated the first policies of the Administration and practically directed the foreign affairs of the United States. We had, indeed, two Presidents for one!...**

1- Arthur Smith, *The Real Colonel House* (New York: George H. Doran Company, 1918), p. 14.

2. Viereck, p. 4.

> **The Setoffs, the Warburgs, the Kahns, the Rockefellers, the Morgans put their faith in House. When the Federal Reserve legislation at last assumed definite shape, House was the intermediary between the White House and the financiers.**

Daily entries in the personal journal of Colonel House reveal the extent to which his office had become the command post for the Jekyll Island team. The following sample notations are typical:

> *December 19, 1912*. I Talked with Paul Warburg over the telephone regarding the currency reform. I told of my Washington trip and what I had done there to get it in working order.
>
> *March 24, 1913*.1 had an engagement with Carter Glass at five. We drove, in order not to be interrupted.... I spoke to the President about this after dinner and advised that McAdoo and I whip the Glass measure into final shape, which he could endorse and take to Owen [Chairman of the Senate Banking Committee] as his own.
>
> *March 27,1913*. Mr. J.P. Morgan, Jr., and Mr. Denny of his firm, came promptly at five. McAdoo came about ten minutes afterwards. Morgan had a currency plan already formulated and printed. We discussed it at some length. I suggested he have it typewritten [so it would not seem too prearranged] and sent to us today.
>
> *October 19, 1913*. I saw Senator Reed of Missouri in the late afternoon and discussed the currency question with him.
>
> *October 19,1913*. Paul Warburg was my first caller, and he came to discuss the currency measure.... Senator Murray Crane followed Warburg. He has been in touch with Senators Weeks and Nelson of the Currency Committee.
>
> *November 17, 1913*. Paul Warburg telephoned about his trip to Washington. He is much disturbed over the currency situation and requested an interview, along with Jacob Schiff and Cleveland H. Dodge.
>
> *January 21, 1914*. After dinner we [Wilson and House] went to the President's study as usual and began work on the Federal Reserve Board appointments.

1. **Viereck, pp. 4,35,37.**
2. **Seymour, Vol. I, pp. 161-68.**

As far as the banking issue was concerned, Colonel House *was* the President of the United States, and all interested parties knew it. Wilson made no pretense at knowledge of banking theory. He said: "The greatest embarrassment of my political career has been that active duties seem to deprive me of time for careful investigation. I seem almost obliged to form conclusions from impressions instead of from study.... I wish that I had more knowledge, more thorough acquaintance, with the matters involved."[1] To which Charles Seymour adds: "Colonel House was indefatigable in providing for the President the knowledge that he sought.... The Colonel was the unseen guardian angel of the bill."[2]

DEATH OF THE ALDRICH PLAN

The first task for the Jekyll Island team was to hold a funeral for the Aldrich Plan without actually burying it. Professor Laughlin had come to agree with Warburg regarding the inadvisability of having Aldrich's name attached to any banking bill, especially now that the Democrats were in control of both Congress and the White House, and he was anxious to give it a new identity. Writing in the periodical *Banking Reform,* which was the official publication of the National Citizens' League, Laughlin said: "It is progress that the Aldrich plan came and went. It is progress that the people have been aroused and interested." The League was now free, he said, to "try to help in getting a proper bill adopted by the Democrats," a bill that "in non-essentials ... could be made different from the old plan."[3]

It did not take long for the Democrats to bring forth their own proposal. In fact, that process had begun even before the election of 1912. One of the most outspoken critics of the Aldrich plan was the Democratic Chairman of the House Banking and Currency Committee, Congressman Carter Glass from Virginia. And it was Glass

---

1- Seymour, Vol. I, p. 160.

2. *Ibid.* William McAdoo, Wilson's Secretary of the Treasury, was indignant over the credit generally given to Paul Warburg for his part in the creation of the Federal Reserve because McAdoo felt he should have received the recognition. Later, we find Carter Glass similarly piqued over Seymour's interpretation of House's importance. Glass' book, *Adventures in Constructive Finance,* was written primarily to show that it was he, not House, who rightfully deserved such glory. But neither McAdoo nor Glass were part of the hidden power which is the focus of this study and neither had any inkling of who was really calling the shots.

3- Quoted by Kolko, *Triumph,* p. 222.

who was given the responsibility of developing the new plan. By his own admission, however, he had virtually no technical knowledge of banking. To provide that expertise and to actually write the bill, he hired an economics teacher from Washington and Lee University, Henry Parker Willis. We should not be surprised to learn that Willis had been a former student and protege of Professor Laughlin and had been retained by the National Citizens' League as a technical writer. Explaining the significance of this relationship, Kolko says:

> **Throughout the spring of 1912 Willis wrote Laughlin about his work for the Glass Committee, his relationship to his superior, and Washington gossip. The advice of the old professor was much revered.... "When you arrive," he wrote Laughlin concerning a memorandum he had written, "I should like to show it to you for such criticisms as occur to you." The student-teacher relationship between the two men was still prominent....**
>
> **Laughlin, Colonel House, and Glass were to frequently consult with major bankers about reform, and provided an important and continuous bridge for their ideas while bills were being drafted.... Colonel House, in addition, was talked to by Frick, Otto Kahn, and others in late February, and the following month also met Vanderlip, J.P. Morgan, Jr., and other bankers to discuss currency reform.... To make sure the reform was more to the liking of bankers, a steady barrage of personal, unobtrusive communications with Glass, House, and Wilson was kept up throughout February and March.... The [Citizens'] league was fulsome in its praise of Glass, and bankers felt greater and greater confidence as Colonel House began visiting Glass and showing interest in his currency measure....**
>
> **The new President admitted "he knew nothing" about banking theory or practice. Glass made the same confession to Colonel House in November, and this vacuum is of the utmost significance. The entire banking reform movement, at all crucial stages, was centralized in the hands of a few men who for years were linked, ideologically and personally with one another.**

THE GLASS-OWEN BILL EMERGES

In his Committee House Report in 1913, Glass objected to the Aldrich Bill on the following grounds: It lacked government control, he said; it concentrated power into the hands of the larger New York banks; it opened the door to inflation; it was dishonest in its estimate of cost to the taxpayer; and it established a banking

---

1. **Kolko, *Triumph,* pp. 219-28.**

monopoly. All of which was correct. What the country needed, Glass said, was an entirely fresh approach, a genuine reform bill which was not written by agents of the Money Trust and which would truly meet the needs of the common man. That, too, was quite correct. Then he brought forth his own bill, drafted by Willis and inspired by Laughlin, which in every important detail was merely the old corpse of the Aldrich Bill pulled from its casket, freshly perfumed, and dressed in a new suit.

The Glass Bill was soon reconciled with a similar measure sponsored by Senator Robert L. Owen and it emerged as the Glass-Owen Bill. Although there were initially some minor differences between Glass and Owen on the proper degree of government control over banking, Owen was basically of identical mind to Willis and Laughlin. While serving in the Senate, he also was the president of a bank in Oklahoma. Like Aldrich, he had made several trips to Europe to study the central banks of England and Germany, and these were the models for his legislation.

The less technically minded members of the cartel became nervous over the anti-Wall Street rhetoric of the Bill's sponsors. Warburg, in an attempt to quell their fears and, at the same time, strengthen his private boast that he had been the real author, published a side-by-side comparison of the Aldrich and Glass proposals. The analysis showed that, not only were the two bills in agreement on all essential provisions, but they even contained entire sections that were identical in their wording.[1] He wrote: "Brushing aside, then, the external differences affecting the 'shells,' we find the 'kernels' of the two systems very closely resembling land related to one another."[2]

[It was important for the success of the Glass Bill to create the impression it was in response to the views of a broad cross section of the financial community. To this end, Glass and his committee staged public hearings for the announced purpose of giving everyone a chance for input to the process. It was, of course, a sham. The first draft of the Bill had already been completed in secret several months before the hearings were held. And, as was customary in such matters, Congressman Lindbergh and other witnesses opposing the Jekyll Island plan were not allowed to

---

V **Warburg, Vol. I, p. 98.**

f ***Ibid.,*** **p. 412.**

speak.[1] The hearings were widely reported in the press, and the public was given the impression that the favorable testimony was truly representative of expert opinion. Kolko summarizes:

> **Although they were careful to keep the contents of their work confidential, to aid the passage of any bill that might be agreed upon Glass deemed it desirable to hold public hearings on the topic and to make sure the course of these hearings was not left to chance.... The public assumption of the hearing was that no bills had been drafted, and Willis' draft was never mentioned, much less revealed.... The hearings of Glass' subcommittee in January and February, 1913, were nothing less than a love feast.**[2]

BANKERS BECOME DIVIDED

The public was not the only victim of deception. The bankers themselves were also targeted—at least the lesser ones who were not part of the Wall Street power center. As early as February, 1911, a group of twenty-two of the country's most powerful bankers met for three days behind closed doors in Atlantic City to work out a strategy for getting the smaller banks to support the concept of using the government to authorize and maintain their own cartel. The objective frankly discussed among those present was that the proposed cartel would bring the smaller banks under control of the larger ones, but that this fact had to be obscured when presenting it to them for endorsement.[3]

The annual meeting of the American Bankers Association was held a few months later, and a resolution endorsing the Aldrich Bill was steam rollered through the plenary session, much to the dismay of many of those present. Andrew Frame was one of them. Representing a group of Western bankers, he testified at the hearings of the Glass subcommittee, mentioned previously, and described the hoax:

> **When that monetary bill was given to the country, it was but a few days previous to the meeting of the American Bankers Association in New Orleans in 1911. There was not one banker in a hundred who had read that bill. We had twelve addresses in favor of it. General Hamby of Austin, Texas, wrote a letter to President Watts asking for a hearing against the bill. He did not get a very courteous answer. I refused to**

---

[1] **Lindbergh, p. 129.**

[2] **Kolko, *Triumph,* p. 225.**

[3] **Rothbard, Crisis, p. 101. Also Kolko, *Triumph,* p. 186.**

> vote on it, and a great many other bankers did likewise.... They would not allow anyone on the program who was not in favor of the bill.[1]

It is interesting that, during Frame's testimony, Congressman Glass refrained from commenting on the unfairness of allowing only one side of an issue to be heard in a public forum. He could hardly afford to. That is exactly what he was then doing with his own agenda.

As the Federal Reserve Act moved closer to its birth in the form of the Glass-Owen Bill (Owen was the co-sponsor in the Senate), both Aldrich and Vanderlip threw themselves into a great public display of opposition. No opportunity was overlooked to make a statement to the press—or anyone else of public prominence—expressing their eternal animosity to this monstrous legislation. Vanderlip warned against the evils of fiat money and rampant inflation. Aldrich charged that the Glass-Owen Bill was inimical to sound banking and good government. Vanderlip predicted speculation and instability in the stock market. Aldrich sourly complained that the bill was "revolutionary in its character" (implying Bolshevistic) and "will be the first and most important step toward changing our form of government from a democracy to an autocracy."[2]

THE PRETENSE IS DROPPED

That all of this was merely high-level showmanship was made clear when Vanderlip accepted a debate with Congressman Glass before the New York Economic Society on November 13. There were eleven hundred bankers and businessmen present, and Vanderlip was under pressure to make a good showing before this impressive group. The debate was going badly for him and, in a moment of desperation, he finally dropped the pretense. "For years," he said, "bankers have been almost the sole advocates of just this sort of legislation that it is now hoped we will have, and it is unfair to accuse them of being in opposition to sound legislation." Twenty-two years later, when the need for pretense had long passed, Vanderlip was even more candid. Writing in the

---

[1] Quoted by Mullins, p. 13.

[2] Aldrich to John A. Sleicher, July 16, 1913; Aldrich to William Howard Taft, Oct. 3,1913, Nelson Aldrich Papers, Library of Congress.

[3] Frank A. Vanderlip, *Address Before the Economics Club of New York, November 13, 1913,* (New York: 1913), pp. 6,11 ft. Also see Glass, pp. 125,168-76.

Saturday Evening Post, he said: "Although the Aldrich Federal Reserve Plan was defeated when it bore the name Aldrich, nevertheless its essential points were all contained in the plan that finally was adopted."[1]

In his autobiography. Treasury Secretary William McAdoo offers this view:

> Bankers fought the Federal Reserve legislation—and every provision of the Federal Reserve Act—with the tireless energy of men righting a forest fire. They said it was populistic, socialistic, half-baked, destructive, infantile, badly conceived, and unworkable....
>
> These interviews with bankers led me to an interesting conclusion. I perceived gradually, through all the haze and smoke of controversy, that the banking world was not really as opposed to the bill as it pretended to be.

That is the key to this entire episode: mass psychology. Since Aldrich was recognized as associated with the Morgan interests and Vanderlip was President of Rockefeller's National City Bank, the public was skillfully led to believe that the "Money Trust" was mortally afraid of the proposed Federal Reserve Act. *The Nation* was the only prominent publication to point out that every one of the horrors described by Aldrich and Vanderlip could have been equally ascribed to the Aldrich Bill as well. But this lone voice was easily drowned by the great cacophony of deception and propaganda.

The Glass Bill was a flexible document which was designed from the beginning to be altered in non-essential matters in order to appear as though compromises were being made to satisfy the various political factions. Since very few understood central-bank technicalities, the ploy was easy to execute. The basic strategy was to focus debate on such relatively unimportant items as the number of regional banks, the structure of the governing board, and the process by which that board was to be selected. When truly crucial matters could not be avoided, the response was to agree to almost anything but to write the provisions in vague language. In that way, the back door would be left ajar for later implementation of

---

1. "From Farm Boy to Financier," by Frank A. Vanderlip, ***Saturday Evening Post,*** **February 9,1935, p. 72.**

2. McAdoo, pp. 213,225-26.

the original intent. The goal was to get the bill *passed* and perfect it later.

House and Warburg feared that, if they waited until they had everything they wanted, they would get nothing at all or, worse, that opponents of a central bank would be able to muster their forces and pass a reform bill of their own; a *real* one. Willis was quick to agree. In a letter to his former professor, he wrote: "It is much better to take a half a loaf rather than to be absolutely deprived of a chance of getting any bread whatsoever.... The so-called 'progressive' element—such as Lindbergh and his supporters—will be encouraged to enact dangerous legislation."[1] Glass echoed the sentiment. Directing his remarks at those smaller banks which were resisting domination by the New York banks, he said: "Unless the conservative bankers of the country are willing to yield something and get behind the bill, we shall get legislation very much less to be desired, or have nothing done at all.

BRYAN MAKES AN ULTIMATUM

The Populist, William Jennings Bryan, was considered at that time to be the most influential Democrat in Congress, and it was clear from the start that the Federal Reserve Act could never be passed without his approval and support. As Charles Seymour observed: "The Commoner's sense of loyalty [to the Party] had kept him from an attack upon the Federal Reserve Act which, it would appear, he never entirely understood.... With his influence in the Party, he could have destroyed the measure which failed to accord with his personal doctrines."[3]

Bryan had said that he would not support any bill that resulted in *private* money being issued by *private* banks. The money supply, he insisted, must be *government* issue. When he finally saw an actual draft of the bill in midsummer of 1913, he was dismayed to find that, not only was the money to be privately issued, but the entire governing body of the central bank was to be composed of private bankers. His ultimatum was not long in coming. He hotly demanded (1) that the Federal-Reserve notes must be *Treasury* currency, issued and guaranteed by the government; and (2) that

---

1. Letters from Willis to Laughlin, J. Laurence Laughlin Papers, Library of Congress, July 14 & 18,1912.

2. From a letter to Festus Wade. Quoted by Kolko, *Triumph,* p. 234.

3. Seymour, Vol. I, p. 173.

the governing body must be appointed by the President and approved by the Senate.

Colonel House and the other monetary scientists were reasonably sure that these provisions eventually would be required for final approval of the bill but, being master strategists, they deliberately withheld them from early drafts so they could be used as bargaining points and added later as concessions in a show of compromise. Furthermore, since practically no one really understood the technical aspects of the measure, they knew it would be easy to fool their opponents by creating the *appearance* of compromise when, in actual operation, the originally intended features would remain.

AN AMAZING REVELATION

The nature of this deception was spelled out years later by Carter Glass in his book, *Adventures in Constructive Finance*. From this source we learn that, after Bryan had delivered his ultimatum, Glass was summoned to the White House and told by Wilson that the decision had been made to make the Federal Reserve notes obligations of the United States government. "I was for an instant speechless!" wrote Glass who then explained how he reminded the President that the only backing for the new currency would be a small amount of gold, a large amount of government and commercial debt, and the private assets of the individual banks themselves. "It would be a pretense on its face," he said. "Was there ever a government note based primarily on the property of banking institutions? Was there ever a government issue not one dollar of which could be put out except by demand of a bank? The suggested government obligation is so remote it could never be discovered."

To which the President replied: "Exactly so, Glass. Every word you say is true; the government liability *is* a mere thought. And so, if we can hold the substance of the thing and give the other fellow the shadow, why not do it, if thereby we may save our bill?"

Years later, Paul Warburg would explain further:

> While technically and legally the Federal Reserve note is an obligation of the United States Government, in reality it is an obligation, the sole actual responsibility for which rests on the reserve

---

1. Glass, pp. 124-25.

> **banks.... The government could only be called upon to take them up after the reserve banks had failed.**[1]

Warburg's explanation should be carefully analyzed. It is an incredibly important statement. The man who masterminded the Federal Reserve System is telling us that *Federal Reserve notes constitute privately issued money with the taxpayers standing by to cover the potential losses of those banks which issue it*. One of the more controversial assertions of this book is that the objectives set forth at the Jekyll Island meeting included the shifting of the cartel's losses from the owners of the banks to the taxpayers. Warburg himself has confirmed it.

But let us return to the great deceit of 1913. The second demand made by Bryan—political control over the System, not banker control—was met with an equally beguiling "compromise." In addition to the governing board of regional bankers previously proposed, there now would be a central regulatory commission, to be called the Federal Reserve Board, appointed by the President with the advice and consent of the Senate.[2] Thus, the public was to be protected through a sharing of power, a melding of interests, a system of checks and balances. In this way, said Wilson, "the banks may be instruments, not the masters, of business and of individual enterprise and initiative."[3]

The arrangement was heralded as a bold, new experiment in representative government. In reality, it was but the return of the ancient partnership between the monetary and political scientists. The only thing new was that power was now to be shared *openly* in plain view of the public. But, of course, there would not be much to see. All the deliberations and most of the decisions were to happen behind closed doors. Furthermore, the division of power and responsibility between these groups was left deliberately vague. Without a detailed line of command or even a clear concept of function, it was inevitable that, as with the drafting of the bill itself, real power would gravitate into the hands of those with technical knowledge and Wall Street connections. To the monetary scientists drafting the bill and engineering the compromises, the eventual

---

1- Warburg, Vol. I, p. 409.

2. The original plan called for the Secretary of the Treasury and the Comptroller of the Currency to be on the board also, but this was later dropped.

3. Quoted by Greider, p. 277.

concentration of effective control into their hands was never in serious doubt. And, as we shall see in the next chapter, subsequent events have proved the soundness of that strategy.

BRYAN ENDORSES THE BILL

Bryan was no match for the Jekyll Island strategists and he accepted the "compromises" at face value. Had there been any lingering doubts in his mind, they were swept away by gratitude for his appointment as Wilson's Secretary of State. Now that he was on the team, he declared:

> I appreciate so profoundly the service rendered by the President to the people in the stand he has taken on the fundamental principles involved in currency reform, that I am with him in all the details.... The right of the government to issue money is not surrendered to the banks; the control over the money so issued is not relinquished by the government.... I am glad to endorse earnestly and unreservedly the currency bill as a much better measure than I supposed it possible to secure at this time.... Conflicting opinions have been reconciled with a success hardly to have been expected.[1]

With the conversion of Bryan, there was no longer any doubt about the final outcome. The Federal Reserve Act was released from the joint House and Senate conference committee on December 22, 1913, just as Congress was preoccupied with departure for the Christmas recess and in no mood for debate. It quickly passed by a vote of 282 to 60 in the House and 43 to 23 in the Senate. The President signed it into law the next day.

The Creature had swallowed Congress.

SUMMARY

President Taft, although a Republican spokesman for big business, refused to champion the Aldrich Bill for a central bank. This marked him for political extinction. The Money Trust wanted a President who would aggressively promote the bill, and the man selected was Woodrow Wilson who had already publicly declared his allegiance. Wilson's nomination at the Democratic national convention was secured by Colonel House, a close associate of Morgan and Warburg. To make sure that Taft did not win his bid for reelection, the Money Trust encouraged the former Republican President, Teddy Roosevelt, to run on the Progressive ticket. The

---

[1] Glass, pp. 139-42.

result, as planned, was that Roosevelt pulled away Republican support from Taft, and Wilson won the election with less than a majority vote. Wilson and Roosevelt campaigned vigorously against the evils of the Money Trust while, all along, being dependent upon that same Trust for campaign funding.

When Wilson was elected, Colonel House literally moved into the White House and became the unseen President of the United States. Under his guidance, the Aldrich Bill was given cosmetic surgery and emerged as the Glass-Owen Bill. Although sponsored by Democrats, in all essential features it was still the Jekyll Island plan. Aldrich, Vanderlip, and others identified with Wall Street put on a pretense of opposing the Glass-Owen Bill to convince Congress and the public that big bankers were fearful of it. The final bill was written with many sound features which were included to make it palatable during Congressional debate but which were predesigned to be dropped in later years. To win the support of the Populists under the leadership of William Jennings Bryan, the Jekyll Island team also engineered what appeared to be compromises but which in actual operation were, as Wilson called them, mere "shadows" while the "substance" remained. In short, Congress was outflanked, outfoxed, and outclassed by a deceptive, but brilliant, psycho-political attack. The result is that, on December 23,1913, America once again had a central bank.

Chapter Twenty-Three

THE GREAT DUCK DINNER

How Federal-Reserve policies led to the crash of 1929; the expansion of the money supply as a means of helping the economy of England; the resulting wave of speculation in stocks and real estate; evidence that the Federal-Reserve Board had foreknowledge of the crash and even executed the events that were designed to trigger it.

The story is told of a New England farmer with a small pond in his pasture. Each summer, a group of wild ducks would frequent that pond but, try as he would, the farmer could never catch one. No matter how early in the morning he approached, or how carefully he constructed a blind, or what kind of duck call he tried, somehow those crafty birds sensed the danger and managed to be out of range. Of course, when fall arrived, the ducks headed South, and the farmer's craving for a duck dinner only intensified.

Then he got an idea. Early in the spring, he started scattering corn along the edge of the pond. The ducks liked the corn and, since it was always there, they soon gave up dipping and foraging for food of their own. After a while, they became used to the farmer and began to trust him. They could see he was their benefactor and they now walked close to him with no sense of fear. Life was so easy, they forgot how to fly. But that was unimportant, because they were now so fat they couldn't have gotten off the water even if they had tried.

Fall came, and the ducks stayed. Winter came, and the pond froze. The farmer built a shelter to keep them warm. The ducks were happy because they didn't have to fly. And the farmer was especially happy because, each week all winter long, he had a delicious duck dinner.

That is the story of America's Great Depression of the 1930s.

CONSOLIDATION OF POWER

When the Federal Reserve Act was submitted to Congress, many of its most important features were written in vague language. Some details were omitted entirely. That was a tactical move to avoid debate over fine points and to allow flexibility for future interpretation. The goal was to get the bill *passed* and perfect it later. Since then, the Act has been amended 195 times, expanding the power and scope of the System to the point where, today, it would be almost unrecognizable to the Congressmen and Senators who voted for it.

In 1913, public distaste for concentration of financial power in the hands of a few Wall Street banks helped to fuel the fire for passage of the Federal Reserve Act. To make it appear that the new System would put an end to the New York "money trust," as it was called, the public was told that the Federal Reserve would not represent any one group or one region. Instead, it would have its power diffused over twelve regional Federal Reserve Banks, and none would be able to dominate. As Galbraith pointed out, however, the regional design was "admirable for serving local pride and architectural ambition and for lulling the suspicions of the agrarians."[1] But that was not what the planners had in mind for the long haul.

In the beginning, the regional branches took their autonomy seriously, and that led to conflict with members of the national board. The Board of Governors was composed of political appointees representing diverse segments of the economy. They were outclassed by the heads of the regional branches of the System who were *bankers* with bankers' experience.

RETURN OF THE NEW YORK "MONEY TRUST"

The greatest power struggle arose from the New York Reserve Bank which was headed by Benjamin Strong. Strong had the contacts and the experience. It will be recalled that he was one of the seven who drafted the cartel's structure at Jekyll Island. He had been head of J.P. Morgan's Bankers Trust Company and was closely associated with Edward Mandell House. He had become a personal friend of Montagu Norman, head of the Bank of England, and of Charles Rist, head of the Bank of France. Not least of all, he was head of the *New York* branch of the System which represented the nation's largest banks, the "money trust" itself. From the outset, the national board *and* the regional branches were dominated by the New York branch. Strong ruled as an autocrat, determining Fed policy often without even consulting with the Federal Reserve Board in Washington.

---

[1] **Galbraith, p. 130.**

The United States entry into World War I provided the impetus for increasing the power of the Fed. The System became the sole fiscal agent of the Treasury, Federal Reserve Notes were issued, virtually all of the gold reserves of the nation's commercial banks were gathered together into the vaults of the Federal System, and many of the legislative restraints placed into the original Act were abandoned. Voters ask fewer questions when their nation is at war.

The concentration of power into the hands of the very "money trust" the Fed was supposed to defeat, is described by Ferdinand Lundberg, author of *America's Sixty Families:*

> **In practice, the Federal Reserve Bank of New York became the fountainhead of the system of twelve regional banks, for New York was the money market of the nation. The other eleven banks were so many expensive mausoleums erected to salve the local pride and quell the Jacksonian fears of the hinterland. Benjamin Strong,... president of the Bankers Trust Company [J.P. Morgan] was selected as the first Governor of the New York Reserve Bank. An adept in high finance, Strong for many years manipulated the country's monetary system at the discretion of directors representing the leading New York banks. Under Strong the Reserve System, unsuspected by the nation, was brought into interlocking relations with the Bank of England and the Bank of France.**[1]

BAILING OUT EUROPE

It will be recalled from Chapters Twelve and Twenty that it was this interlock during World War I that was responsible for the confiscation from American taxpayers of *billions* of dollars which were given to the central banks of England and France. Much of that money found its way to the associates of J.P. Morgan as interest payments on war bonds and as fees for supplying munitions and other war materials.

Seventy per cent of the cost of World War I was paid by inflation rather than taxes, a process that was orchestrated by the

---

1- Lundberg, p. 122.

Federal Reserve System. This was considered by the Fed's supporters as its first real test, and it passed with flying colors. American inflation during that period was only slightly less than in England, which had been more deeply committed to war and for a longer period of time. That is not surprising inasmuch as a large portion of Europe's war costs had been transferred to the American taxpayers.

After the war was over, the transfusion of American dollars continued as part of a plan to pull England out of depression. The methods chosen for that transfer were artificially low interest rates and a deliberate inflation of the American money supply. That was calculated to weaken the value of the dollar relative to the English pound and cause gold reserves to move from America to England. Both operations were directed by Benjamin Strong and executed by the Federal Reserve. It was not hyperbole when President Herbert Hoover described Strong as "a mental annex to Europe."

Before Alan Greenspan was appointed as Chairman of the Federal Reserve by President Reagan in 1987, he had served on the Board of the J.P. Morgan Company. Before that, however, he had been an outspoken champion of the gold standard and a critic of the System's subservience to the banking cartel. In 1966 he wrote:

> When business in the United States underwent a mild contraction in 1927, the Federal Reserve created more paper reserves in the hope of forestalling any possible bank reserve shortage. More disastrous, however, was the Federal Reserve's attempt to assist Great Britain who had been losing gold to us.... The "Fed" succeeded: it stopped the gold loss, but it nearly destroyed the economies of the world in the process. The excess credit which the Fed pumped into the economy spilled over into the stock market—triggering a fantastic speculative boom.... As a result, the American economy collapsed.[2]

After his appointment to the Fed , Greenspan became silent on these issues and did nothing to anger the Creature he now served.

AGENTS OF A HIGHER POWER

When reviewing this aspect of the Fed's history, questions arise about the patriotic loyalty of men like Benjamin Strong. How is it possible for a man who enjoys the best that his nation can offer—security, wealth, prestige—to conspire to plunder his fellow citizens in order to assist politicians of other governments to

---

1. Galbraith, p. 180.
2. Greenspan, pp. 99-100.

continue plundering theirs? The first part of the answer was illustrated in earlier sections of this book. International money managers may be citizens of a particular country but, to many of them, that is a meaningless accident of birth. They consider themselves to be citizens of the world first. They speak of affection for all mankind, but their highest loyalty is to themselves and their profession.

That is only half the answer. It must be remembered that the men who pulled the financial levers on this doomsday machine, the governors of the Bank of England and the Federal Reserve, were themselves tied to strings which were pulled by others above them. Their minds were not obsessed with concepts of nationalism or even internationalism. Their loyalties were to *men*. Professor Quigley reminds us:

> **It must not be felt that these heads of the world's chief central banks were themselves substantive powers in world finance. They were not. Rather, they were the technicians and agents of the dominant investment bankers of their own countries, who had raised them up and were perfectly capable of throwing them down. The substantive financial powers of the world were in the hands of these investment bankers (also called "international" cr "merchant" bankers) who remained largely behind the scenes in their own unincorporated private banks. These formed a system of international cooperation and national dominance which was more private, more powerful, and more secret than that of their agents in the central banks.[1]**

So, we are not dealing with the actions of men who perceive themselves as betraying their nation, but technicians who are loyal to the monetary scientists and the political scientists who raised them up. Of the two groups, the financiers are dominant. Politicians come and go, but those who wield the power of money remain to pick their successors.

FARMERS BECOME DUCK DINNER

During the war, prices for agricultural products rose to an all-time high, and so did profits. Farmers had put part of that money into war bonds, but much of it had been placed into savings accounts at banks within the farming communities, which is to say, mostly in the Midwest and South. That was unacceptable to the

---

[1] **Quigley, *Tragedy,* pp. 326-27.**

New York banks which saw their share of the nation's deposits begin to decline. A way had to be devised to reclaim that money. The Federal Reserve System, which by then was the captive of the New York banks, was pressed into service to accomplish the deed.

Few of those country banks had chosen to become members of the Federal Reserve System. That added insult to injury, and it also provided an excuse for the Fed to wage economic war against them. The plan was neither complex nor original; it had been used many times before by central bankers. It was (1) extend easy credit to the farmers to lure them into heavy debt, and then (2) create a recession which would decrease their income to the point where they could not make payments. The country banks then would find themselves holding non-performing loans and foreclosed property which they could not sell without tremendous losses. In the end, both the farmers and the banks would be wiped out. The banks were the target. Too bad about the farmers.

Congressman Charles Lindbergh, Sr., father of the man who made the world's first solo transatlantic flight, explained it this way: "Under the Federal Reserve Act, panics are scientifically created; the present panic is the first scientifically created one, worked out as we figure a mathematical problem."

The details of how this panic was created were explained in 1939 by Senator Robert Owen, Chairman of the Senate Banking and Currency Committee. Owen, a banker himself, had been a co-author of the Federal Reserve Act, a role he later regretted. Owen said:

> **In May 1920 ... the farmers were exceedingly prosperous.... They were paying off their mortgages. They had bought a lot of new land, at the instance of the government—had borrowed money to do it—and then they were bankrupted by a sudden contraction of credit and currency, which took place in 1920....**
>
> **The Federal Reserve Board met in a meeting which was not disclosed to the public—they met on the 18th of May 1920; it was a secret meeting—and they spent all day; the minutes made 60 printed pages, and it appears in Senate Document 310 of February 10,1923...-Under action taken by the Reserve Board on May 18, 1920, there resulted a violent contraction of credit... This contraction of credit and currency had the effect, the next year, of diminishing the national**

---

1. Charles A. Lindbergh, Sr. ***The Economic Pinch*** **(1923 rpt. Hawthorne, California: Omni Publications, 1968), p. 95.**

> **production $15,000,000,000; it had the effect of throwing millions of people out of employment; it had the effect of reducing the value of lands and ranches $20,000,000,000.**[1]

The contraction of credit had a disastrous effect on the nation as a whole, not just farmers. But the farmers were more deeply involved, because the recently created Federal Farm Loan Board had lured them with easy credit—like ducks at the pond—into extreme debt ratios. Furthermore, the large-city banks which were members of the System were given support by the Fed during the summer of 1920 to enable them to extend credit to manufacturers and merchants. That allowed many of them to ride out the slump. There was no such support for the farmers or the country banks which, by 1921, were falling like dominoes. History books refer to this event as the Agricultural Depression of 1920-21. A better name would have been *Country-Duck Dinner in New York.*

BUILDING THE MANDRAKE MECHANISM

In Chapter Ten, we examined the three methods by which the Federal Reserve is able to create or extinguish money. Of the three, the purchase and sale of debt-related securities in the open market is the one that provides the greatest effect on the money supply. The purchase of securities by the Fed (with checks that have no money to back them) *creates* money; the sale of those securities *extinguishes* money. Although the Fed is authorized to buy and sell almost any kind of security that exists in the world, it is obligated to show preference for bonds and notes of the federal government. That is the way the monetary scientists discharge the commitment to create money for their partners, the political scientists. Without that service, the partnership would dissolve, and Congress would abolish the Fed.

When the System was created in 1913, it was anticipated that the primary way to manipulate the money supply would be to control the "reserve ratios" and the "discount window." That is banker language for setting the level of mandatory bank reserves (as a percentage of deposits) and also setting the interest rate on loans made by the Fed to the banks themselves. The reserve ratio under the old National Bank Act had been 25%. Under the Federal Reserve Act of 1913, it was reduced to 18% for the large New York

---

1 • U.S. Cong., Senate, Special Committee on the Investigation of Silver, *Silver,* Part t, 76th Cong., 1st sess. (Washington, DC: GPO, 1939), April 7,1939, pp. 196-97.

banks, a drop of 28%. In 1917, just four years later, the reserve requirements for Central Reserve-City Banks were further dropped from 18% to 13% (with slightly lesser reductions for smaller banks). That was an additional 28% cut.[1]

It quickly became apparent that setting reserve ratios was an inefficient tool. The latitude of control was too small, and the amount of public attention too great. The second method, influencing the interest rate on commercial loans, was more useful. Here is how that works:

Under a fractional-reserve banking system, a bank can create new money merely by issuing a loan. The amount of new money it creates is limited by the reserve ratio or "fraction" it is required to maintain to cover its cash-flow needs. If the reserve ratio is 10%, then each $10 it lends includes $9 that never existed before. A commercial bank, therefore, can create a sizable amount of money merely by making loans. But, once the bank is "loaned up," that is to say, once the bank has already loaned $9 for every $1 it holds in reserve, it must stop and wait for some of the old loans to be paid back before it can issue new ones. The only way to expand that process is to make the reserves larger. That can be accomplished in one of three ways: (1) use some of the bank's profits, (2) sell additional stock to investors, or (3) borrow money from the Fed.

WHEN BANKS BORROW FROM THE FED

The third option is the most popular and is called going to the "discount window." When banks go to the Fed's discount window to obtain a loan, they are expected to put up collateral. This can be almost any debt contract held by the bank, including government bonds, but it commonly consists of commercial loans. The Fed then grants credit to the bank in an amount equal to those contracts. In essence, this allows the bank to convert its old loans into new "reserves." Every dollar of those new reserves then can be used as the basis for lending *nine more* dollars in checkbook money!

The process does not stop there. Once the new loans are made, they, too, can be used as collateral at the Fed for still *more* reserves. The music goes 'round and 'round, with each new level of debt

---

1. In 1980, statutory limits on reserve ratios were eliminated altogether. The Federal Reserve Board now has the option to lower the ratio to *zero,* which means the power to create *unlimited* quantities of money. It is the ultimate dream of central bankers.

becoming "reserves" for yet a higher level of loans, until it finally plays itself out at about twenty-eight times. That process is commonly called "discounting commercial paper." It was one of the means by which the Fed was able to flood the nation with new money prior to the Great Dam Rupture of 1929.

But, there is a problem with that method, at least as far as the Fed is concerned. Even though interest rates at the discount window can be made so low that most bankers will line up like ducks looking for free corn, some of them—particularly those "hicks" in the country banks—have been known to resist the temptation. There is no way to force the banks to participate. Furthermore, the banks themselves are dependent upon the whims of their customers who, for reasons known only to themselves, may not want to borrow as much as the bank wants to lend. If the customers stop borrowing, then the banks have no new loans to convert into further reserves.

That left the third mechanism as the preferred option: the purchase and sale of bonds and other debt obligations in the open market. With the discount window, banks have to be enticed to borrow money which later must be repaid, and sometimes they are reluctant to do that. But with the open market, all the Fed has to do is write a fiat check to pay for the securities. When that check is cashed, the new money it created moves directly into the economy without any concurrence required from the recalcitrant banks.

But, there was a problem with this method also. Before World War I, there were few government bonds available on the open market. Even after the war, the supply was limited. Which means the vast inflation that preceded the Crash of 1929 was *not* caused by deficit spending. In each year from 1920 through 1930 there was a surplus of government revenue over expenses. Surprising as it may^ be, on the eve of the depression, America was getting out of debt. As a consequence, there were few government bonds for the Fed to buy. Without government bonds, the open-market engine was constantly running out of gas.

The solution to all these problems was to create a new market tailor-made to the Fed's needs, a kind of half-way house between

---

I- See chapter ten for details.

2. See Robert T. Patterson, *The Great Boom and Panic; 1921-1929* (Chicago: Henry Regnery Company, 1965), p. 223.

the discount window and the open market. It was called the "acceptance window," and it was through that imagery that the System purchased a unique type of debt-related security called *banker's acceptances*.

BANKER'S ACCEPTANCES

Banker's acceptances are contracts promising payment for commercial goods scheduled for later delivery. They usually involve international trade where delays of three to six months are common. They are a means by which a seller in one country can ship goods to an unknown buyer in another country with confidence that he will be paid upon delivery. That is accomplished through guarantees made by the banks of both buyer and seller. First, the buyer's bank issues a letter of credit guaranteeing payment for the goods, even if the buyer should default. When the seller's bank receives this, one of its officers writes the word "accepted" on the contract and pays the seller the amount of the sale. The accepting bank, therefore, advances the money to the seller in expectation of receiving future payment from the buyer's bank. For this service, both banks charge a fee expressed as a percentage of the contract. Thus, the buyer pays a little more than the amount of the sales contract, and the seller receives a little less.

Historically, these contracts have been safe, because the banks are careful to guarantee payment only for financially sound firms. But, in times of economic panic, even sound firms may be unable to honor their contracts. It was underwriting that kind of business that nearly bankrupted George Peabody and J.P. Morgan in London during the panic of 1857, and would have done so had they not been bailed out by the Bank of England.

Acceptances, like commercial loan contracts, are negotiable instruments that can be traded in the securities market. The accepting banks have a choice of holding them until maturity or selling them. If they hold them, their profit will be realized when the underlying contract is eventually paid off and it will be equal to the amount of its "discount," which is banker language for its fee. Acceptances are said to be "rediscounted" when they are sold by the original discounter, the underwriter. The advantage of doing that is that they do not have to wait three to six months for their profit. They can acquire immediate capital which can be invested to earn interest.

The sale price of an acceptance is always less than the value of the underlying contracts; otherwise no one would buy them. The difference represents the potential profit to the buyer. It is expressed as a percentage and is called the "rate" of discount—or, in this case, rediscount. But the rate given by the seller must be lower than what he expects to earn with the money he receives, otherwise he will be better off not selling.

Although bankers' acceptances were commonly traded in Europe, they were not popular in the United States. Before the Federal Reserve Act was passed, national banks had been prohibited from purchasing them. A market, therefore, had to be created. The Fed accomplished this by setting the discount rate on acceptances so low that underwriters would have been foolish not to take advantage of it. At a very low discount, they could acquire short-term funds which then could be invested at a higher rate of return. Thus, acceptances quickly became plentiful on the open market in the United States.

But who would want to *buy* them at a low return? No one, of course. So, to create that market, not only did the Federal Reserve set the discount rate artificially low, it also pledged to buy all of the acceptances that were offered. The Fed, therefore, became the principal buyer of these securities. Banks also came into the market as buyers, but only because they knew that, at any time they wanted to sell, the Fed was pledged to buy.

Since the money was being created out of nothing, the cost did not really matter, nor did the low profit potential. The Fed's goal was not to make a profit on investment. It was to increase the nation's money supply.

WARBURG AND FRIENDS MAKE A LITTLE PROFIT

The man who benefited most from this artificially created market was none other than Paul Warburg, a partner with Kuhn, Loeb and Co. Warburg was in attendance at the Jekyll Island meeting at which the Federal Reserve System was conceived. He was considered by all to have been the master theoretician who led the others in their deliberations. He was one of the most influential voices in the public debates that followed. He had been appointed as one of the first members of the Federal Reserve Board and later became its Vice Governor until outbreak of war, at which time he resigned because of publicity regarding his connections with

German banking. He was a director of American I.G. Chemical Corp. and Agfa Ansco, Inc., firms that were controlled by I.G. Farben, the infamous German cartel that, only a few years later, would sponsor the rise to power of Adolph Hitler.[1] He was also a director of the CFR (Council on Foreign Relations). It should not be surprising, therefore, to learn that he was able to position himself at the center of the huge cash flow resulting from the Fed's purchase of acceptances.

Warburg was the founder and Chairman of the International Acceptance Bank of New York, the world's largest acceptance bank. He was also a director of several smaller "competitors," including the prestigious Westinghouse Acceptance Bank. He was founder and Chairman of the American Acceptance Council. Warburg *was* the acceptance market in America. But he was not without friends who also swam in the river of money. Men who controlled America's largest financial institutions became directors or officers of the various acceptance banks. The list of companies that became part of the interlocking directorate included Kuhn, Loeb and Co.; New York Trust Co.; Bank of Manhattan Trust Co.; American Trust Co.; New York Title and Mortgage Co.; Chase National Bank; Metropolitan Life Insurance Co.; American Express Co.; the Carnegie Corp.; Guaranty Trust Co.; Mutual Life Insurance Co.; the Equitable Life Assurance Society of New York; and the First National Banks of Boston, St. Louis, and Los Angeles, to name just a few. The world of acceptance banking was the private domain of the financial elite of Wall Street.

Behind the American image, however, was a full partnership with investors from Europe. Total capital of the IAB's American shareholders was $276 million compared with $271 million from foreign investors. A significant portion of that was divided between the Warburgs in Germany and the Rothschilds in England.[2]

Just how large and free-flowing was that river of acceptance money? In 1929, it was 1.7 trillion-dollars wide. Throughout the 1920s, it was *over half* of all the new money created by the Federal Reserve—greater than all the other purchases on the open market

---

[1] For a detailed account of this episode, see Part Two of the author's book, *World without Cancer: The Story of Vitamin B17* (Westlake Village, California: American Media, 1974).

[2] Larry Schweikart, ed. *The Encyclopedia of American History and Biography* (New York: Facts on File, 1990), p. 448.

plus all the loans to all the banks standing in line at the discount window.

The monetary scientists who created the Federal Reserve, and their close business associates, were well-rewarded for their efforts. Profit-taking by insiders, however, is not the issue. Far more important is the fact that the *consequence* of this self-serving mechanism was the. massive expansion of the money supply that made the Great Depression inevitable. And that is the topic which impelled us to look at acceptances in the first place.

CONGRESS SUSPICIOUS BUT AFRAID TO TINKER

By 1920, suspicions and resentment were growing in the halls of Congress. Politicians were not getting their share. It is possible that many of them failed to realize that, as partners in the scheme, they were *entitled* to a share. Nevertheless, they were dazzled by banker language and accounting tricks and were afraid to tinker with the System lest they accidentally push the wrong button.

Watching with amusement from London was Fabian Socialist John Maynard Keynes. Speaking of the Federal Reserve's manipulation of the value of the dollar, he wrote:

> That is the way by which a rich country is able to combine new wisdom with old prejudice. It can enjoy the latest scientific improvements, devised in the economic laboratory of Harvard, whilst leaving Congress to believe that no rash departure will be permitted.... But there is in all such fictions a certain instability.... The suspicions of Congressmen may be aroused. One cannot be quite certain that some Senator might not read and understand this book.[2]

There was not much danger of that! By then, American politicians had acquired a taste for the heady wine of war funding and stopped asking questions. World War I had created enormous demands for money, and the Fed provided it. By the end of the war, Congressional hostility to the Federal Reserve became history.

PAYING FOR WORLD WAR I

Much of the war debt was absorbed by the public which responded to patriotic instincts and purchased war bonds. The Treasury launched a massive publicity campaign for "Liberty Loans" to reinforce that sentiment. These small-denomination

---

1- *Ibid.,* p. 448; also Murray *N.* Rothbard, *America's Great Depression* (Kansas City: Sheed and Ward, 1963), p.117.

2. Keynes, *A Tract on Monetary Reform,* pp. 198-99.

bonds did not expand the money supply and did not cause inflation, because the money came from savings. It already existed. However, many people who thought it was their patriotic duty to support the war effort went to their banks and *borrowed* money so they could buy bonds. The bank created most of that money out of nothing, drawing upon credits and bookkeeping entries from the Federal Reserve, so those purchases *did* inflate the money supply. The same result could have been obtained more simply and less expensively by getting the money directly from the Fed, but the government encouraged the trend anyway, because of its psychological value in generating popular support for the war. When people make sacrifices for an endeavor, it reinforces their belief that it *must* be worthy.

Although the war was financed partly by taxes and partly by Liberty Bonds purchased by the public, a significant portion was covered by the sale of Treasury bonds to the Federal Reserve in **the** open market. Benjamin Strong's biographer, Lester Chandler, explains:

> **The Federal Reserve System became an integral part of the war financing machinery. The System's overriding objective, both as a creator of money and as fiscal agent, was to insure that the Treasury would be supplied with all the money it needed, and on terms fixed by Congress and the Treasury.... A grateful nation now hailed it as a major contributor to the winning of the war, an efficient fiscal agent for the Treasury, a great source of currency and reserve funds, and a permanent and indispensable part of the banking system.**

THE EMERGENCE OF GOVERNMENT DEBT

The war years were largely a period of testing new strategies and consolidating power. Ironically, it was not until *after* the war—when there was no longer a justification for deficit spending—that government debt became plentiful. Up until World War I, annual federal expenses had been running about $750 million. By the end of the war, it was running $18 and-a-half *billion,* an increase of 2,466%. Approximately 70% of the cost of war had been financed by debt. Murray Rothbard reminds us that, on the eve of depression in 1928, ten years after the end of war, the banking system held more government bonds than during the war itself. That means

---

1. **Chandler, pp. 101-102.**
2. ***Depression,* p. 125.**

the government did not pay off those bonds when they came due. Instead, it rolled them over by offering new bonds to replace the old. Why? Was it because Congress needed more money? No. The bonds had become the basis for money in circulation and, if they had been redeemed, the money supply would have decreased. A decrease in the money supply is viewed by politicians and central bankers as a threat to economic stability. Thus, the government found itself unable to get out of debt even when it had the money to do so, a dilemma that continues to this day.

There is an apparent contradiction here. In his book, *The Great Boom and Panic,* Robert Patterson says that, on the eve of depression, America was getting out of debt.[1] Yet, Rothbard tells us there were more government bonds held by the banking system than during the war! The only way both statements can be true is if there were, in fact, more bonds outstanding during the war but they were held by the *public,* not by the banking system. That would make it possible for there to be fewer total bonds in 1928 and yet the System could still hold more of them than previously. That would be the expected result of the Fed's growing role in the open market. As the publicly-held bonds matured, the Treasury rolled them over, and the Fed picked them up. Bonds purchased by the public do not increase the money supply whereas those purchased by banks do. Therefore, conditions in 1928 would have been far more inflationary than during the war—even though the government was getting out of debt.

Before 1922, the Federal Reserve bought Treasury bonds primarily for three purposes: (1) for income to operate the system, (2) to pay for the newly issued Federal Reserve Notes which were replacing silver certificates, and (3) to push down interest rates. The motive for manipulating interest rates was to encourage borrowing from abroad in the United States (where rates were low).[2] It also encouraged investment *from* the United States *into* Europe (where rates were higher). By making it possible to borrow American dollars at one rate and invest them elsewhere at a higher rate, the Fed was deliberately moving money out of the United States, with gold reserves following behind. As President Kennedy had said in his 1963 address at the IMF, the outflow of American gold "did not come about by chance."[1]

---

[1] **Page 223.**

[2] **Chandler, p. 211; also Rothbard, *Depression,* p. 127.**

THE "DISCOVERY" OF THE OPEN MARKET

It is commonly asserted by writers on this topic that the power of the open-market mechanism to manipulate the money supply was "discovered" by the Fed in the early 1920s and that it came as a total surprise. Martin Mayer, for example, in his book, *The Bankers,* writes:

> Now, through an accident as startling as those which produced the discovery of X-Rays or penicillin, the central bank learned that "open market operations" could have a significant effect on the behavior of the banks.[2]

This makes the story interesting, but it is difficult to believe that Benjamin Strong, Paul Warburg, Montagu Norman, and the other monetary scientists who were pulling the levers at that time were taken by surprise. These men could not possibly have been ignorant of the effect of creating money out of nothing and pouring it into the economy. The open market was merely a different *funnel.* If there was any element of surprise, it likely was only in the ease with which the mechanism could be activated. It is not important whether that part of the story is fact or fiction, except that it perpetuates the "accidental" view of history, the myth that no one is responsible for political or economic chaos: *Things just happen. There was no master plan. No one is to blame. Everything is under control. Relax, pay your taxes, and go back to sleep!*

In any event, by the end of the war, Congress had awakened to the fact that it could use the Federal Reserve System to obtain revenue without taxes. From that point forward, deficit spending became institutionalized. A gradually increasing issuance of Treasury bonds was encouraging to the Fed because it provided still one more source of debt to convert into money, a source that eventually would become far more reliable than either bank loans or banker's acceptances. Best of all, now that Congress was becoming dependent on the free corn, there was little chance it would find its wings and fly away. The more dependent it became, the more secure the System itself became.

---

[1] See Chapter six.

[2] Mayer, p. 401.

In 1921, the twelve regional Reserve banks were separately buying and selling in the open market. But motives varied. Some merely needed income to cover their operating overhead, while others—notably the New York branch under Benjamin Strong—were more interested in sending American gold to England. Strong began immediately to gather control of all open-market operations into the hands of his own bank. In June of 1922, the "Open-Market Committee" was formed to coordinate activities among the regional Governors. In April of the next year, however, the national board in Washington replaced the Governor's group with one of its own creation, the "Open-Market Investments Committee." Benjamin Strong was its chairman. The powers of that group were enhanced ten years later by legislation which made it mandatory for the regional branches to follow the Open-Market Committee's directives, but that was a mere formality, for the die had been cast much earlier. From 1923 forward, the Fed's open-market operations have been carried out by the New York Federal Reserve Bank. The money trust has always been in control.

DROWNING IN CREDIT

Actions have consequences, and one of the consequences of purchasing Treasury bonds and other debt-related securities in the open market is that the money created to purchase them eventually ends up in the commercial banks where it is used for the expansion of bank credit. "Credit" is another of those weasely words that have different meanings to different people. In banker language, the expansion of credit means the banks have "excess reserves" (bookkeeping entries) which can be multiplied by nine and earn interest for them—if only someone would be kind enough to *borrow*. It is money *waiting* to be created. The message is: "Come on to the bank, folks. Don't be bashful. We've got plenty of money to lend. You have credit you didn't even know you had."

In the 1920s, the greater share of bank credit was bestowed upon business firms, wealthy investors, and other high rollers, but the little man was not ignored. In 1910, consumer credit accounted for only 10% of the nation's retail sales. By 1929, credit transactions were responsible for half of the $60 billion retail market. In his book, *Money and Man,* Elgin Groseclose says: "By 1929 the United States was overwhelmed by a flood of credit. It had covered the land. It was pouring into every nook and cranny of the national economy."[1]

The impact of expanding credit was compounded by artificially low interest rates—the other side of the same coin—which were intended to help the governments of Europe. But they also stimulated borrowing here at home. Since borrowing is what causes money to be created under fractional-reserve banking, the money supply in America began to expand. From 1921 through June of 1929, the quantity of dollars increased by 61.8%, substantially more than the increase in national product. During that same time, the amount of *currency* in circulation remained virtually unchanged. That means the expansion was comprised entirely of money substitutes, such as bonds and loan contracts.

BOOMS AND BUSTS MADE WORSE

The forces of the free market are amazingly flexible. Like the black market, they manage to exert themselves in unexpected ways in spite of political decree. That had been the case throughout most of American history. Prior to the creation of the Federal Reserve, banking had been coddled and hobbled by government. Banks were chartered by government, protected by government, and regulated by government. They had been forced to serve the political agendas of those in power. Consequently, the landscape was strewn with the tombstones of dead banks which had taken to their graves the life savings of their hapless depositors. But these were mostly regional tragedies that were offset by growth and prosperity in other areas. Even within the communities most severely affected, recovery was swift.

Now that the cartel had firm control over the nation's money supply, the pattern began to change. The corrective forces of the free market were more firmly straight-jacketed than ever. All banks in the entire country were in lock step with each other. What happened in one region is what happened in all regions. Banks were not allowed to die, so there could be no adjustments after their demise. Their illness was sustained and carried like a deadly virus to the others.

The expansion of the money supply in the 1920s clearly shows that effect. It was not a steady advance but a series of convulsions.

---

[1] **Groseclose, *America's Money Machine,* p. 154.**

Each cycle was at a higher level than the previous one. That is because the busts that followed the booms were not allowed to play themselves out. The monetary scientists now had so many mechanisms at their command they were able to initiate new expansions to cancel out the downward adjustments. It was like prescribing increasing doses of narcotics to postpone the awareness of an advancing disease. It increased the prestige of the doctor, but it did not bode well for the patient.

THE ROLLER COASTER

Between 1920 and 1929, there were three distinct business cycles with several minor ones within them. For the average American, it was confusing and destructive. For the investor, it was a roller-coaster ride to oblivion:

UP! The Fed had inflated the money supply to pay for World War I. The resulting boom caused prices to rise.

DOWN! In 1920, the Fed raised interest rates to cool off the inflation. That caused a recession, and prices tumbled. Farmers were hit the hardest, and hundreds of country banks were closed.

UP! In 1921, the Fed lowered interest rates to stop the recession and to help the governments of Europe. Inflation and expanding debt resulted.

DOWN! In 1923, the Fed tightened credit to put the brakes on inflation.

UP! But that was offset by its simultaneous policy of lowering the rate at the discount window, thus encouraging banks to borrow new reserves to expand the money supply.

UP! In 1924, the Fed suddenly created $500 million dollars in new money. Within one year, the commercial banks parlayed that into more than $4 billion, an expansion of eight-to-one. The boom that followed took on the character of speculation rather than investment. Prices in the stock market rose drastically.

DOWN! In 1926, the Florida land boom collapsed, and the economy began to contract once again.

UP! In 1927, Montagu Norman of the Bank of England visited the United States to consult with Benjamin Strong. Shortly after his visit, the Fed pumped new money into the system, and the boom returned.

DOWN! In the spring of 1928, the Fed contracted credit to halt the boom.

UP! But the banks shifted their reserves into time deposits (where customers agree to wait before withdrawing their money). Since time deposits require a smaller reserve ratio than demand deposits, the banks were able to issue more loans than before. That offset the Fed's contraction of credit.

UP! By that time, the British government had consumed its previous subsidy which was used to maintain its welfare state. In the spring of 1928, the pound sterling was again sagging on the international market, and gold began to flow back into the United States. Once again, the fledgling Creature came to the aid of the Bank of England, its ailing parent. The Fed bought a huge volume of banker's acceptances to depress interest rates and halt the flow of gold. The money supply suddenly increased by almost $2 billion.

DOWN! In August, the Fed reversed its expansionist policy by selling Treasury bonds in the open market and raising interest rates. The money supply began to contract.

It was the final bubble.

SIXTH REASON TO ABOLISH THE FED

One of the myths about the Federal Reserve is that it is needed to stabilize the economy. Yet, it has achieved just the opposite. Destabilization is dramatically clear in the years prior to the Crash, but the same cause-and-effect continues to this day. As long as men are given the power to tinker with the money supply, they will strive to circumvent the natural laws of supply and demand. No matter how high their intentions or pure their motives, they will cause disruptions in the natural flow. When these disruptions are perceived, they will try to compensate by causing opposite disruptions. But, long before they act, there will already be new forces at work which they cannot, in all their wisdom, perceive until they are already manifest. It is the height of egotistical folly for "experts" to think they can outsmart or do better than the combined, interactive decisions of hundreds of millions of people all acting in response to their own best judgment. Thus, the Fed is doomed to failure by its nature and its mission. That is the sixth reason it should be abolished: *It destabilizes the economy.*

TULIPOMANIA

Easy credit was not the only problem in this period. Equally important was the *effect* that had on the behavior patterns of the populace. Responding to herd instinct and a belief in the possibility of something-for-nothing, men were driven to the most bizarre form of investment speculation.

This was not the first time such hysteria had seized a population. One of the most graphic examples occurred in Holland between the years 1634 and 1636. It came to pass that a new, rare flower, called the tulip, was discovered in the gardens of some of the more wealthy inhabitants of Constantinople, now known as Istanbul. When the root bulbs of these exotic blossoms were brought into Holland, they rapidly became a status symbol among the wealthy—much as race horses or rare breeds of dogs are today in our own society—and those with surplus funds found that an investment in tulips brought them significant social recognition.

The price of tulip bulbs climbed steadily until they became, not merely symbols of status, but speculative investments as well. At one point, prices doubled every few days, and speculators were seen everywhere amassing great fortunes with no input of either labor or service. Many otherwise prudent people found themselves infected by the hysteria. They borrowed against their homes and invested their life savings to get in on the anticipated windfall. This pushed up prices even further and tended to create the fulfillment of its own prophecy. Contracts for the future delivery of tulip bulbs—a form of today's commodity market—became a dominant feature of Holland's stock market.

Tulip bulbs eventually became more precious than gemstones. As new varieties were developed, the market became more complex, requiring experts to certify their origin and their grade. Prices soared, and the herd went insane. One bulb of the species called *Admiral Liefken* was valued at 4,400 florins; a *Semper Augustus,* worth 5,500 florins, was purchased for a new carriage, two gray horses, and a complete set of harnesses. It was recorded that, at one sale, a single *Viceroy* brought two lasts of wheat, four lasts of rye, four fat oxen, eight fat swine, twelve fat sheep, two hogsheads of wine, four casks of butter, one-thousand pounds of cheese, a bed and mattress, a suit of clothes, and a silver drinking cup.

Then, one day without warning, reality returned from her two-year vacation. By that time, everyone knew deep in their hearts that the spiralling prices bore no honest relationship to the value of the tulips and that, sooner or later, someone was going to get hurt. But they continued to speculate for fear of being too quick in their timing and losing out on profits yet to come. Everyone was confident they would sell out precisely at the top of the market. In any herd, however, there are always a few who *will* take the lead and, by 1636, all it took was one or two prominent merchants to sell out their stock. Overnight, there were no buyers whatsoever, at any price. The tulip market vanished, and speculators by the thousands saw their dreams of easy wealth—and, in many cases, their life savings also—disappear with it. Tulipomania, as it was called at the time, had come to an end.[1]

Or did it? As we have seen, the Federal Reserve can create large amounts of money simply by going into the open market and buying debt contracts. But, once it is in the mainstream of the economy, commercial banks can multiply that money by up to a factor of nine, and that is where the real inflationary action is. To protect that privilege is one of the reasons the banks formed this cartel in the first place. Nevertheless, the public still has the final say. If no one wants to borrow their money, the game is over.

That possibility is more theoretical than real. Although men may be hesitant to go into debt for legitimate business ventures in times of economic uncertainty, they can be lured by easy credit to take a long shot. Dreams of instant wealth are powerful motivaters. Gaming casinos, poker parlors, race tracks, lottery windows, and other forms of tulipomania are convincing evidence that the lust for gambling is embedded in genetic code. The public has always been interested in free corn.

TULIPS IN THE STOCK MARKET

During the final phase of America's credit expansion of the 1920s, the rise in prices on the stock market was entirely speculative. Buyers did not care if their stocks were overpriced compared to the dividends they paid. Commonly traded issues were selling for 20 to 50 times their earnings; some traded at 100. Speculators acquired stock merely to hold for a while and then sell at a profit. It was the "Greater-Fool" strategy. No matter how high the price is today, there will be a greater fool tomorrow who will buy at an even higher price. For a while, that strategy seemed to work.

---

[1] **See Charles Mackay, LL.D., *Extraordinary Popular Delusions and the Madness of Crowds* (1841 rpt. New York: L.C. Page & Company, 1932), pp. 89-97.**

To make the game even more exciting, it was common for investors to purchase their stocks on margin. That means the buyer puts up a small amount of money as a deposit (the margin) and *borrows* the rest from his stockbroker—who gets it from the bank, which gets it from the Fed. In the 1920s, the margin for small investors was as low as 10%. Although the average stock yielded a modest 3% annual dividend, speculators were willing to pay over 12% interest on their loans, meaning their stock had to appreciate about 9% per year just to break even.

These margin accounts are sometimes referred to as "call loans" because the broker has the right to "call them in" on very short notice, often as short as twenty-four hours. If the broker calls the loan, the investor must produce the money immediately. If he cannot, the broker will obtain the money by selling the stock. In theory, the sale of the stock will be sufficient to cover the loan. But, in practice, about the only time brokers call their loans is when the market is tumbling. Under *those* conditions, the stock cannot be sold except at a loss: a *total* loss of the investor's margin; and a *variable* loss to the broker, depending on the severity of the price fall. To obtain even more leverage, investors sometimes use the stocks they already own as collateral for a margin loan on *new* stocks. Therefore, if they cannot cover a margin call on their new stocks, they will lose their old stocks as well.

In any event, such silly concerns were not in vogue in the 1920s. From August of 1921 to September of 1929, the Dow-Jones industrial stock-price average went from 63.9 to 381.17, a rise of 597%. Credit was abundant, loans were cheap, profits were big.

BANKS BECOME SPECULATORS

The commercial banks were the middlemen in this giddy game. By the end of the decade, they were functioning more like speculators than banks. Instead of serving as dependable clearing houses for money, they also had become players in the market. Loans to commercial enterprises for the production of goods and services—which normally are the backbone of sound banking practice—were losing ground to loans for speculating in the stock market and in urban real estate. Between 1921 and 1929, while commercial loans remained constant, total bank loans increased from $24,121 million to $35,711 million. Loans on securities and real estate rose nearly $8 billion. Thus, about 70% of the increase during this period was in speculative investments. And that money was created by the banks.

New York banks and trust companies had over $7 billion loaned to brokers at the New York Stock Exchange for use in margin accounts. Before the war, there were 250 securities dealers. By 1929, the number had grown to 6,500.

The banks not only generated the money for speculation, they became speculators themselves by purchasing large blocks of high-yield bonds, many of which were of dubious quality. Those were the kinds of securities that are difficult to liquidate in a declining market. Borrowing money on short term and investing on long term, the banks were maneuvering themselves into a precarious position.

Did the Federal Reserve cause the speculation in the stock market? Of course not. *Speculators* did that. The Fed undoubtedly had other objects in mind, but that did not cancel its responsibility. It was acutely aware of the psychological effect of easy credit and had consciously used that knowledge to manipulate public behavior on numerous occasions. Behavioral psychology is a necessary tool of the trade. So it could claim neither ignorance nor innocence. In the unfolding of this tragedy, it was about as innocent as a spider whose web "accidentally" caught the fly.

THE FINAL BUBBLE

In the Spring of 1928, the Federal Reserve expressed concern over speculation in the stock market and raised interest rates to curb the expansion of credit. The growth in the money supply began to slow down, and so did the rise in stock prices. It is conceivable that the soaring economy could have been brought in for a "soft landing"—except that there were other agendas to be considered. Professor Quigley had said that the central bankers were not substantive powers unto themselves but were as marionettes whose strings were pulled by others. Just as the speculation spree appeared to be coming under control, those strings were yanked, and the Federal Reserve flip-flopped once again.

The strings originated in London. Even after seven years of subsidy by the Federal Reserve, the British economy was sagging from the weight of its socialist system, and gold was moving back into the United States. The Fed, in spite of its own public condemnation of excessive speculation, reversed itself at the brink of success and purchased over $300 million of banker's acceptances in the last half of 1928, which caused an increase in the money supply of almost $2 billion. Professor Rothbard says:

> **Europe, as we have noted, had found the benefits from the 1927 inflation dissipated, and European opinion now clamored against any tighter money in the U.S. The easing in late 1928 prevented gold inflows into the U.S. from getting very large. Great Britain was again losing gold, and sterling was weak once more. The United States bowed once again to its overriding wish to see Europe avoid the inevitable consequences of its own inflationary policies.**[1]

Prior to the Fed's reversal of policy, stock prices had actually declined by five per cent. Now, they went through the roof, rising twenty per cent from July to December. The boom had returned in spades.

Then, in February of 1929, a curious event occurred. Montagu Norman travelled to the United States once again to confer privately with the officers of the Federal Reserve. He also met with Andrew Mellon, Secretary of the Treasury. There is no detailed public record of what transpired at these closed meetings, but we can be certain of three things: it was *important;* it concerned the economies of America and Great Britain; and it was thought best not to tell the public what was going on. It is not unreasonable to surmise that the central bankers had come to the conclusion that the bubble—not only in America, but in Europe—was probably going to rupture very soon. Rather than fight it, as they had in the past, it was time to stand back and let it happen, clear out the speculators, and return the markets to reality. As Galbraith put it: "How much better, as seen from the Federal Reserve, to let nature take its course and thus allow nature to take the blame."[2]

Mellon was even more emphatic. Herbert Hoover described Mellon's views as follows:

> **Mr. Mellon had only one formula: "liquidate labor, liquidate stocks, liquidate the farmers, liquidate real estate." He insisted that, when the people get an inflation brainstorm, the only way to get it out**

1- Rothbard, *Depression,* p. 147.
2. Galbraith, p. 181.

> of their blood is to let it collapse. He held that even a panic was not altogether a bad thing. He said: "It will purge the rottenness out of the system. High costs of living and high living will come down. People will work harder, live a moral life. Values will be adjusted, and enterprising people will pick up the wrecks from less competent people."[1]

If this had been the mindset between Mellon and Norman and the Federal Reserve Board, the purpose of their meetings would have been to make sure that, when the implosion happened, the central banks could coordinate their policies. Rather than be overwhelmed by it, they should *direct* it as best they can and turn it ultimately to their advantage. Perhaps we shall never know if that scenario is accurate, but the events that followed strongly support such a view.

ADVANCE WARNING FOR MEMBERS ONLY

Immediately after the meetings, the monetary scientists began to issue warnings to their colleagues in the financial fraternity to *get out of the market*. On February 6, the Federal Reserve issued an advisory to its member banks to liquidate their holdings in the stock market. The following month, Paul Warburg gave the same advice in the annual report to the stockholders of his International Acceptance Bank. He explained the reason for that advice:

> If the orgies of unrestrained speculation are permitted to spread, the ultimate collapse is certain not only to affect the speculators themselves, but to bring about a general depression involving the entire country.[2]

Paul Warburg was a partner with Kuhn, Loeb & Co. which maintained a list of preferred customers. These were fellow bankers, wealthy industrialists, prominent politicians, and high officials in foreign governments. A similar list was maintained at J.P. Morgan Co. It was customary to give these men advance notice on important stock issues and an opportunity to purchase them at two to fifteen points below their price to the public. That was one of the means by which investment bankers maintained influence over the affairs of the world. The men on these lists were notified of the coming crash.

---

[1] Quoted by Burton Hersh, *The Mellon Family: A Fortune in History* (New York: William Morrow and Co., 1978), p. 290.

[2] This advice was reprinted in the *Commercial and Financial Chronicle,* March 9, 1929, p. 1444.

John D. Rockefeller, J.P. Morgan, Joseph P. Kennedy, Bernard Baruch, Henry Morganthau, Douglas Dillon—the biographies of all the Wall Street giants at that time boast that these men were "wise" enough to get out of the stock market just before the Crash. And it is true. Virtually all of the inner club was rescued. There is no record of any member of the interlocking directorate between the Federal Reserve, the major New York banks, and their prime customers having been caught by surprise. Wisdom, apparently, was greatly affected by whose list one was on.

A MESSAGE OF COMFORT TO THE PUBLIC

While the crew was abandoning ship, the passengers were told it was a lovely cruise. President Coolidge and Treasury Secretary Mellon had been vociferous in their public utterances that the economy was in better shape than ever. From his socialist perch in London, John Maynard Keynes exclaimed that the management of the dollar by the Federal Reserve Board was a "triumph" of man over money. And, from the plush offices of his New York Federal Reserve Bank, Benjamin Strong boasted:

> **The very existence of the Federal Reserve System is a safeguard against anything like a calamity growing out of money rates.... In former days the psychology was different, because the facts of the banking situation were different. Mob panic, and consequently mob disaster, is less likely to arise.**[1]

The public was comforted, and the balloon continued to expand. It was now time to sharpen the pin. On April 19, the Fed held an emergency meeting under cloak of great secrecy. The following day, the *New York Times* reported as follows:

> RESERVE COUNCIL CONFERS IN HASTE
> Atmosphere of Mystery Is Thrown
> about Its Meeting in Washington
>
> An atmosphere of deep mystery was thrown about the proceedings both by the board and the council. No advance announcement had been made that an extraordinary session of the council was contemplated, and the fact that the members were in the city became known only when

---

[1] Quoted by Greider, p. 298.

> newspaper correspondents happened to see some of them entering the Treasury Department building. Even after that, evasive replies were given.... While the joint meeting was in progress at the Treasury Department, every effort was made to guard the proceedings, and a group of newspaper correspondents were asked to leave the corridor.

Let us return briefly to Montagu Norman. His biographer tells us that, after he became head of the Bank of England, his custom was to journey to the United States several times each year, although his arrival was seldom noted by the press. He travelled in disguise, wearing a long, black cloak and a large, broad-brimmed hat, and he used the pseudonym of Professor Skinner. It was on one of those unpublicized trips that he ran into a young Australian by the name of W.C. Wentworth. Sixty years later, Wentworth wrote a letter to *The Australian,* a newspaper in Sydney, and told of his encounter:

> **In 1929 I was a member of the Oxford and Cambridge athletic team, visiting America to run against American Universities. Late in July we split up to return, and I, together with some other members, boarded a smallish passenger vessel in New York. (There were, of course, no aeroplanes in those days.)**
>
> **A fellow passenger was "Mr. Skinner," and a member of our team recognized him. He was Montagu Norman, returning to London, after a secret visit to the US Central Bank, travelling incognito.**
>
> **When we told him we knew who he was, he asked us not to blow his cover, because if the details of his movement were made public, it could have serious financial consequences. Naturally, we agreed, and on the days following, as we crossed the Atlantic, he talked to us very frankly.**
>
> **He said, "In the next few months there is going to be a shake-out. But don't worry—it won't last for long."**[3]

On August 9, just a few weeks after that ship-board encounter, the Federal Reserve Board reversed its easy-credit policy and raised the discount rate to six per cent. A few days later, the Bank of England raised its rate also. Bank reserves in both countries began to shrink and, along with them, so did the money supply. Simulta-

---

1. "Reserve Council Confers in Haste," *New York Times,* April 20,1929, p. 89.
2. Hargrave, p. 1.
3. "Letters to the editor," *The Australian* (GPO Box 4162, Sydney, NSW. 2001), February 7,1989.

neously, the System began to sell securities in the open market, a maneuver that also contracts the money supply. Call rates on margin loans had jumped to fifteen, then twenty per cent. The pin had been inserted.

THE DUCK DINNER BEGINS

The securities market reached its high point on September 19. Then, it began to slide. The public was not yet aware that the end had arrived. The roller coaster had dipped before. Surely it would shoot upward again. For five more weeks, the public bought heavily on the way down. More than a million shares were traded during that period. Then, on Thursday, October 24, like a giant school of fish suddenly turning direction in response to an unseen signal, thousands of investors stampeded to sell. The ticker tape was hopelessly overloaded. Prices rumbled. Thirteen million shares exchanged hands. Everyone said the bottom had dropped out of the market. They were wrong. Five days later, it did.

On Tuesday, October 29, the exchanges were crushed by an avalanche of selling. At times there were no buyers at all. By the end of the trading session, over sixteen million shares had been dumped, in most cases at *any* price that was offered. Within a single day, millions of investors were wiped out. Within a few weeks of further decline, $3 billion of wealth had disappeared. Within twelve months, $40 billion had vanished. People who had counted their paper profits and thought they were rich suddenly found themselves to be very poor.

The other side of the coin is that, for every seller, there was a buyer. The insiders who had moved their investments into cash and gold were the buyers. It must be remembered that falling stock prices didn't necessarily mean that there was anything wrong with the stocks. Those representing solid companies were still paying dividends and were good investments—at a realistic price. In the panic, prices had tumbled far below their natural levels. Those who had the cash picked them up for a small fraction of their true worth. Giant holding companies were formed for that task, such as Marine Midland Corporation, the Lehman Corporation, and the Equity Corporation. J.P. Morgan set up the food trust called Standard Brands. Like the shark swallowing the mackerel, the big speculators devoured the small.

There is no evidence that the Crash was planned for the purpose of profit taking. In fact, there is much to show that the monetary scientists tried mightily to avert it, and might have done so had not their higher-priority agendas gotten in the way. Yet, once they realized the inevitability of a collapse in the market, they were not bashful about using their privileged position to take full advantage of it. In that sense, FDR's son-in-law, Curtis Dall, was right when he wrote: "It was the calculated 'shearing' of the public by the World Money Powers."[1]

NATURAL LAW NO. 5

Here is another of those "natural laws" of economics that needs to be added to our list:

> LESSON: It is human nature for man to place personal priorities ahead of all others. Even the best of men cannot long resist the temptation to benefit at the expense of their neighbors if the occasion is placed squarely before them. This is especially true when the means by which they benefit is obscure and not likely to be perceived as such. There may be exceptional men from time to time who can resist that temptation, but their numbers are small. The general rule will prevail in the long run.
>
> A managed economy presents men with precisely that kind of opportunity. The power to create and extinguish the nation's money supply provides unlimited potential for personal gain. Throughout history the granting of that power has been justified as being necessary to protect the public, but the results have always been the opposite. It has been used against the public and for the personal gain of those who control. Therefore,
>
> LAW: When men are entrusted with the power to control the money supply, they will eventually use that power to confiscate the wealth of their neighbors.

There is no better illustration of that law than the Crash of 1929 and the lingering depression that followed.

---

[1] **Curtis B. Dall, *FDR: My Exploited Father-ln-Law* (Tulsa, Oklahoma: Christian Crusade Publications, 1967), p. 49.**

FROM CRASH TO DEPRESSION

The lingering depression is an important part of the story. The speculators had been ruined, but what they lost was money acquired without effort. There were some unfortunate souls who also lost their life savings, but only because they gambled those savings on call loans. Those who bought stock with money they actually possessed did not have to sell, and they did quite well in the long run. For the most part, something-for-nothing had merely been converted back into nothing. The price of stocks had plummeted, but the companies behind them were still producing products, still employing people, and still paying dividends. No one lost his job just because the market fell. The tulips were gone, but the wheat crop remained.

So, where was the problem? In truth, there was none—at least not yet. The crash, as devastating as it was to the speculators, had little effect on the average American. Unemployment didn't become rampant until the depression years which came later and were caused by continued government restraint of the free market. The drop of prices in the stock market was really a long-overdue and *healthy* adjustment to the economy. The stage was now set for recovery and sound economic growth, as always had happened in the past.

It did not happen this time. The monetary and political scientists who had created the problem now were in full charge of the rescue. They saw the crash as a golden opportunity to justify even more controls than before. Herbert Hoover launched a multitude of government programs to bolster wage rates, prevent prices from dropping, prop up failing firms, stimulate construction, guarantee home loans, protect the depositors, rescue the banks, subsidize the farmers, and provide public works. FDR was swept into office by promising even more of the same under the slogan of a New Deal. And the Federal Reserve launched a series of "banking reforms," all of which were measures to further extend its power **lover** the money supply.

In 1931, fresh money was pumped into the economy to restart the cycle, but this time the rocket would not lift off. The dead **Weight** of new bureaucracies and government regulations and subsidies and taxes and welfare benefits and deficit spending and tinkering with prices had kept it on the launching pad.

Eventually, the productive foundation of the country also began to crumble under the weight. Taxes and regulatory agencies forced companies out of business. Those that remained had to curtail production. Unemployment began to spread. By every economic measure, the economy was no better or worse in 1939 than it was in 1930 when the rescue began. It wasn't until the outbreak of World War II, and the tooling up for war production that followed, that the depression was finally brought to an end.

It was a dubious save. In almost every way, it was a repeat of the drama played out with World War I, even to the names of two of its most important players. FDR and Churchill worked together behind the scenes to bring America into the conflict—Churchill wanting American assistance in a war England was losing and could not afford, FDR wanting a jolt to the economy for political reasons, and the financiers, gathered behind J.P. Morgan, wanting the profits of war. But that is another chapter, and this book is long enough.

What happened *after* World War II was the focus of the first six chapters. That brings us to the end of historical record. It's time, now, to reset the coordinates on our time machine and return to the present.

SUMMARY

Congress had been assured that the Federal Reserve Act would decentralize banking power away from Wall Street. However, within a few years of its inception, the System was controlled by the New York Reserve Bank under the leadership of Benjamin Strong whose name was synonymous with the Wall Street money trust.

During the nine years before the crash of 1929, the Federal Reserve was responsible for a massive expansion of the money supply. A primary motive for that policy was to assist the government of Great Britain to pay for its socialist programs which, by then, had drained its treasury. By devaluing the dollar and depressing interest rates in America, investors would move their money to England where rates and values were higher. That strategy succeeded in helping Great Britain for a while, but it set in motion the forces that made the stock-market crash inevitable.

The money supply expanded throughout this period, but the trend was interspersed with short spasms of contraction which were the result of attempts to halt the expansions. Each resolve to use restraint was broken by the higher political agenda of helping the governments of Europe. In the long view, the result of plentiful money and easy credit was a wave of speculation in the stock market and urban real estate that intensified with each passing month.

There is circumstantial evidence that the Bank of England and the Federal Reserve had concluded, at a secret meeting in February of 1929, that a collapse in the market was inevitable and that the best action was to let nature take its course. Immediately after that meeting, the financiers sent advisory warnings to lists of preferred customers—wealthy industrialists, prominent politicians, and high officials in foreign governments—to get out of the stock market. Meanwhile, the American people were being assured that the economy was in sound condition.

On August 9, the Federal Reserve applied the pin to the bubble. It increased the bank-loan rate and began to sell securities in the open market. Both actions have the effect of reducing the money supply. Rates on brokers' loans jumped to 20%. On October 29, the stock market collapsed. Thousands of investors were wiped out in a single day. The insiders who were forewarned had converted their stocks into cash while prices were still high. They now became the buyers. Some of the greatest fortunes in America were made in that fashion.

Section VI

TIME TRAVEL INTO THE FUTURE

In the previous sections of this book, we have travelled through time. We began our journey by stepping into the past. As we crisscrossed the centuries, we observed wars, treachery, profiteering, and political deception. That has brought us to the present. Now we are prepared to ride our time machine into the future. It will be a hair-raising trip, and much of what lies ahead will be unpleasant. But it has not yet come to pass. It is merely the projection of present forces. If we do not like what we see, we still have an opportunity to change those forces. The future will be what we choose to make it.

Chapter Twenty-Four

DOOMSDAY MECHANISMS

The decline of American prosperity; the increase in the size of government; the decrease in personal freedom; the growth of taxes; evidence that this is according to plan by an elite ruling group which hopes to merge the United States into world government on the basis of "equality" with less-developed nations; the environmentalist movement shown to be an outgrowth of that plan.

That's enough history for one book. It will soon be time to reset the coordinates on our time machine and jump into the future. Before activating that switch, however, let's take one last look around us. The future is molded by the present. Where we are *now* will greatly affect where we are *going* to be.

MIRED IN DEBT

One of the most obvious characteristics of our present time is the extent to which Americans and their government have become mired in debt. Annual federal deficits have grown steadily since 1950, and the rate of growth is now in a vertical climb. It had taken 198 years for the federal government to borrow the first trillion dollars. Then, in just twelve years—mostly under the Reagan Administration—it borrowed another *three* trillion. By the end of 1995, after three years of the Clinton Administration, the debt had grown to about $5 trillion.

It is difficult to comprehend numbers of that size or to translate them into their effect upon each of us. $5 trillion represents about 80% of all the goods sold and all the services rendered in America throughout the entire year. If you had a stack of $100 bills 40 inches high, you would be a millionaire. $5 trillion would rise 3,350 miles into space.

By 1993, net interest payments on that debt were running $214 billion per year. That consumed about 14% of all federal revenue.[1] It now represents the government's largest single expense; greater than defense; larger than the combined cost of the departments of Agriculture, Education, Energy, Housing and Urban Development, Interior, Justice, Labor, State, Transportation, and Veterans' Affairs.

These charges are *not* paid by the government; they are paid by *you*. You provide the money through taxes and inflation. The cost currently is about $4,500 for each family of four. All families pay through inflation but not all pay taxes. The cost to each *taxpaying* family, therefore, is higher. On average, over $5,000 is extracted from your family each year, *not* to provide government services or even to pay off previous debt. Nothing is produced by it, not even roads or government buildings. No welfare or medical benefits come out of it. No salaries are paid by it. The nation's standard of living is not raised by it. It does nothing except pay interest.

Furthermore, the interest is compounded, which means, even if the government were to completely stop its deficit spending, the total debt would continue to grow as a result of interest on that portion which already exists. In 1995, interest on the national debt was already consuming 57% of all the revenue collected by income taxes. At the present rate of expansion, it will consume 100% by the year 2010. That includes corporate taxes. Interest will consume 100% of our *personal* income taxes much sooner.[2]

Amazing isn't it? Without interest on the national debt, we would save enough to reduce corporate taxes and eliminate personal income taxes altogether. Unfortunately, under present policies and programs, that is not going to happen, because Congress does not live within its income. Many expenses are paid, not from taxes, but from selling government bonds and going deeper into debt each year. So, even though we could save enough to eliminate personal income taxes, it would not be enough. The government would still go into the red to keep up its present life style. However, if a reduction in the size and scope of the bureaucracy were accomplished at the same time, then personal *and* corporate income taxes *could* be entirely eliminated, and the government would have an annual surplus.[1]

---

[1] The gross interest was running $300 billion. Some of that money, however, is paid to federal agencies which hold some of the debt, so it is a case of the government paying itself. Furthermore, the Federal Reserve returns to the Treasury some of the interest it receives—the amount left over after the cost of operating the system.

[2] See Harry Figgie, Jr., *Bankruptcy 1995: The Coming Collapse of America and How to Stop It* (Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1992), pp. 24, 68. Also "Historical Tables," *Budget of the United States; Fiscal Year 1996,* pp. 22, 103.

THE DOOMSDAY MECHANISM

Unfortunately, the locomotive is running in the opposite direction. The size of government is growing larger, not smaller. There are more people working for government than for all manufacturing companies in the private sector. There are more bank regulators than bankers, more farm-bureau workers than farmers, more welfare administrators than recipients. There are more citizens receiving government checks than there are paying income taxes.

By 1996, welfare benefits in 29 states were higher than the average secretary's wage; and in 6 states, they were more than the entry-level wage for computer programmers. When it is possible for people to vote on issues involving the transfer of wealth to themselves from others, the ballot box becomes a weapon with which the majority plunders the minority. That is the point of no return, the point where the doomsday mechanism begins to accelerates until the system self-destructs. The plundered grow weary of carrying the load and eventually join the plunderers. The productive base of the economy diminishes further and further until only the state remains.

The doomsday mechanism is also operating within government itself. By 1992, more than half of all federal outlays went for what are called entitlements. Those are expenses—such as Medicare, Social Security, and government retirement programs—which are based on promises of *future* payments. Many of them are contractual obligations, and millions of people depend on them.

That does not mean they cannot be eliminated. For example, entitlements include $24 billion per year for food stamps. There is no contractual obligation to continue those, only political expediency. By now, most Americans have stood in grocery lines and

---

1- The federal government derives substantial revenue from sources other than income taxes, such as excise taxes and import taxes. These, plus occasional assessments to the states, were the only taxes which the founding fathers intended for the federal government. The arrangement worked well for 135 years until the income-tax was adopted in 1913.

watched the well-dressed customer in front of them use food stamps for ice cream, pretzels, candy, and wine and then drive away in a late-model car. The political function of the food stamp program is not to help the hungry but to buy votes.

The programs that do involve contractual obligations—such as Social Security and Medicare—could be turned over to private firms which would not only operate them more efficiently but also would pay out higher benefits. Congress, however, does not dare to touch any of these entitlements for fear of losing votes.

Normally, with contracts for future obligations of this kind, the issuer is required by law to accumulate money into a fund to make sure that there will be enough available when future payments become due. The federal government does not abide by those laws. The funds exist on paper only. The money that comes in for future obligations is immediately spent and replaced by a government IOU. So, as those future payments come due, *all* of the money must come from revenue being collected at that time.

Herein lies the doomsday mechanism. These obligations *will* be paid out of future taxes or inflation. Entitlements currently represent 52% of all federal outlays, and they are growing at the rate of 12% each year. When this is added to the 14% that is now being spent for interest payments on the national debt, we come to the startling conclusion that two-thirds of all federal expenses are now entirely automatic, and that percentage is growing each month.

Even if Congress were to stop all of the spending programs in the normal budget—dismantle the armed forces, close down all of its agencies and bureaus, stop all of its subsidies, and board up all of its buildings, including the White House—it would be able to reduce its present spending by only one-third. And even that small amount is shrinking by 10 to 12% per year. That is a best-case scenario. The real-case is that Congress is accelerating its discretionary spending, not canceling it. One does not have to be a statistical analyst to figure out where this trend is headed.

The biggest doomsday mechanism of all, however, is the Federal Reserve System. It will be recalled that every cent of our money supply—including coins, currency, and checkbook money—came into being for the purpose of being loaned to someone. These dollars will disappear when those loans are paid back. They exist only so long as the debt behind them exists. Underneath the pyramid of money, supporting the entire structure, are the so-called reserves which represent the Fed's monetization of debt. If we tried to pay off the national debt, those reserves would also start to disappear, and our money supply would be undermined. The Federal Reserve would have to scramble into the money markets of the world and replace U.S. securities with bonds from corporations and other countries. Technically, that can be done, but the transition could be devastating. Under the Federal Reserve System, therefore, Congress would be fearful to eliminate the national debt even if it wanted to.

These are the doomsday mechanisms already in operation. If we do not understand how they function, we will not be prepared for our trip into the future. The scenes that will unfold there will appear too bizarre, the events too shocking. We would be convinced that something surely had gone wrong with our time machine.

WHO OWNS THE NATIONAL DEBT?

It has been said that we need not worry about interest on the national debt because "We owe it to ourselves." Let's take a look at who owes what to whom.

It may come as a surprise to learn that the Federal Reserve holds but a small portion of the national debt, only about 8%. Foreign investors own approximately 27%, and agencies of the federal government have 28% (the IOUs that replaced money taken from the funds such as the Social Security Fund). Private-sector investors in the U.S. hold the largest share of about 37%. It is partly true, therefore, that "We owe it to ourselves" or at least that *all* of us owe it to *some* of us. The *some* of us who receive the interest are private investors seeking income that is exempt from state income taxes, and large institutions such as banks, corporations, insurance companies, and investment funds. With institutions, the money represents pooled assets belonging to thousands of small investors. So, a major portion of the interest on the national debt does, indeed, accrue to the benefit of a large sector of the American people.

That's the good news. The bad news is that the government obtains every cent of the money it pays to us by confiscating it from us in the first place. If it is true that we owe it to ourselves, then it is also true that we *pay* it to ourselves. The money goes out of one pocket back into the other—minus a handling fee. The government takes $1000 from us in taxes and inflation and gives us back $350. The so-called "benefit" to the public is but a giant scam.

And more bad news: When people purchase government bonds, there is less money available for investment in private industry. It is well known that government credit "crowds out" private credit. The result is that the productive side of the nation is handicapped by unfair competition for investment capital. To obtain new money for growth, private companies must pay higher interest rates. These are passed on to the consumer in the form of higher prices. Many companies are forced to curtail their plans for expansion, and potentially new jobs are never created. Some companies are forced out of business altogether, and their employees are put out of work. The economy is always retarded by government debt. The larger the debt, the greater the damage.

The 27% portion of the national debt held by foreign investors may not seem like a large *percentage,* but it represents a huge amount of money nevertheless. A trillion dollars cannot be ignored. These bonds could become a great problem down the line as they mature. So far, they have been a partial blessing because they were purchased with money that already existed. Therefore, they were not inflationary. But it is not difficult to imagine future conditions under which the bond holders would decide not to renew. In order to pay off those bonds on maturity, the Treasury would have to issue new ones. The Federal Reserve then would have to purchase the new bonds with fiat money. Therefore, foreign-held federal debt is a ticking time bomb. If it should ever have to be picked up by the Fed, the inflationary impact on our country would be staggering.

WHAT DIFFERENCE DOES IT MAKE?

There is a tendency to read about these trends with a kind of detached fascination: Isn't that *interesting!* But where is the relevance? Why get excited over such technicalities and abstractions? So what if the government is mired in debt? Who cares if the interest will never be paid? What of it if we have a world currency or a world government? What difference will any of it make to me?

The first step toward answering those questions is to see what. difference it already has made. Our upcoming trip into the future will merely extend those lines.

As illustrated in previous sections of this book, there has been a long-term policy at the highest levels of government to shift economic resources away from the United States. That policy has been successful. Based on doomsday predictions of environmental disaster, government has saddled private companies with such burdensome expenses for eliminating waste products that heavy industry, once the mainstay of American prosperity, has fled our shores. Because of concern over the natural habitat of the spotted owl and the desert kangaroo rat, millions of acres of timber and agricultural land have been taken out of production. High taxes, rules beyond reason for safety devices in the work place, so-called fair-employment practices, and mandatory health insurance are rapidly destroying what is left of America's private industry. The result is unemployment and dislocation for millions of American workers.

Federal taxes, including social-security, now take more than 40% of our private incomes. State, county, and local taxes are on top of that. Inflation feeds on what is left. We spend half of each year working for the government.

A study by the AFL-CIO in 1977 revealed that, in spite of wage increases in terms of dollars, the *real* wages of the average American—in terms of what he can buy with those dollars—were going down. That trend was confirmed in 1980 by the U.S. Census Bureau. In 1992, the Consumers' Union analyzed how many hours one had to work to buy common items compared to thirty years previously. Some low-priced items—such as long-distance phone calls, gasoline, food products, and wrist-watches—were cheaper in 1992 in terms of hours worked to acquire them. But the higher-priced items—such as housing, college educations, and health care—were far more costly than ever. The report concludes:

> The average U.S. household has maintained its living standard largely because families are working more hours. Millions of women entered the work force in the past 25 years. In 1970, about 21 million women worked full time. Now that figure is over 36 million. That has helped to keep family buying power fairly stable. But for many families, it now represents the labor of two earners rather than one.[1]

The message here is that real wages in America have declined. Young couples with a single income now have a lower standard of

---

1. "Has Our Living Standard Stalled?" ***Consumer Reports,*** **June, 1992, p. 392.**

living than their parents did. In spite of two incomes, the real net worth of the average household is falling. The amount of leisure time is shrinking. The percentage of Americans who own their homes is dropping. The age at which a family acquires a first home is rising. The number of families counted among the middle class is falling. The size of the family savings is smaller. The number of people living below the officially defined poverty level is rising. The rate of personal bankruptcy is triple of what it was in the 1960s. Over 90% of all Americans are broke at age 65.

THE NEW WORLD ORDER

None of this is happening by accident. Chapters five and six documented the currently unfolding plan to create a functional world government within the framework of the United Nations. Often referred to as *The New World Order* by its advocates, the proposed global government is designed upon the principles of socialism. It is the dream-come-true for the world's socialist theoreticians, politicians, and technicians who see it as the ultimate laboratory for their social experiments upon mankind.

There are two weapons of control now being readied at the UN. One is a world military command which eventually will control all national armies and super weapons. That is being accomplished under the slogans of peace and disarmament. The other is a world central bank, now called the IMF/World Bank, with the ability to issue a common money which all nations must accept. That is being accomplished under the slogans of international trade and economic growth.

Of the two weapons, monetary control is the most important. The use of military force is viewed as a crude weapon in the arsenal of world government, to be used only as a last resort. The effect of monetary control is more powerful than mega-tons of atomic energy. It reaches into every shop and home, a feat that could never be accomplished by standing armies. It can be used with precision against one nation, one group, or even one person while sparing or benefiting all others. Military force may be irresistible but it causes resentment and political unrest that can smolder for decades. Since monetary manipulation is seldom understood by its victims, it does not incur their wrath. In fact, the manipulators enjoy high social status and financial reward. For these reasons, monetary control is the weapon of choice in The New World Order.

A future world parliament based upon the concept of minimum coercion and maximum freedom could be a wonderful advent for mankind. Without trying to cram all nations into a centrally-directed beehive, it would welcome cultural and religious variety. Instead of trying to place the world into a collectivist straight-jacket of rules, regulations, quotas, and subsidies, it would encourage diversity and freedom-to-choose. Instead of levying ever-larger taxes on every conceivable economic activity and destroying human incentive in the process, it would encourage member nations to reduce the taxes that already exist and thereby stimulate production and creativity.

A world parliament, dedicated to the concept of freedom, would have to withhold membership from any government that violated the basic rights of its citizens. It could be the means by which totalitarian governments would be encouraged to abandon their oppressive policies in order to obtain the economic and political advantages of acceptance in the world body. It could become the greatest force for peace and prosperity and freedom we have ever known.

But The New World Order that is now incubating at the United Nations is an entirely different creature. Its members represent just about every dictator and warlord in the world. Its philosophy is built upon the socialist doctrine that all good flows from the state. Those who do not conform must be bent to the government's will or be eliminated. It cannot oppose totalitarianism for the simple reason that it *is* totalitarianism.

AMERICA IS THE TARGET

The New World Order cannot become a functional reality so long as the United States remains able to go it alone. America is viewed as a potential bull in the china shop. Right now, it is safely under control, but the world planners are worried it might break loose in the future. If the American people were to awaken to the realities of world politics and regain control over their government, they still would have the military and economic power to break away. Among the world planners, therefore, it has become the *prime directive* to weaken the United States both militarily and economically. And this directive has come from *American* leaders, not those of other countries. CFR members sitting in the White House, the State Department, the Defense Department, and the

Treasury are now working to finalize that part of the plan. It is yet one more doomsday mechanism that, once it gains sufficient momentum, will pass the critical point of no return.

The Korean War was the first time American soldiers fought under UN authority. That trend has accelerated and already includes military actions in Iraq, Yugoslavia, Bosnia, Somalia, and Haiti. By the time this book gets to print, there undoubtedly will be more. While the American military is being absorbed into the UN, steps are also underway to hand over American atomic weapons. When that happens, the doomsday mechanism will become activated. It will be too late to escape.

Likewise, the IMF/World Bank is already functioning—in conjunction with the Federal Reserve System—as a world central bank. The American economy is being deliberately exhausted through foreign giveaways and domestic boondoggles. The object is, not to help those in need or to preserve the environment, but to *bring the system down*. When once-proud and independent Americans are standing in soup lines, they will be ready to accept the carefully arranged "rescue" by the world bank. A world currency is already designed, awaiting only an appropriate crisis to justify its introduction. From that, too, there will be no escape.

THE REPORT FROM IRON MOUNTAIN

The substance of these stratagems can be traced to a think-tank study released in 1966 called the *Report from Iron Mountain*. Although the origin of the report is highly debated, the document itself hints that it was commissioned by the Department of Defense under Defense Secretary, Robert McNamara and was produced by the Hudson Institute located at the base of Iron Mountain in Croton-on-Hudson, New York. The Hudson Institute was founded and directed by Herman Kahn, formerly of the Rand Corporation. Both McNamara and Kahn were members of the CFR.

The self-proclaimed purpose of the study was to explore various ways to "stabilize society." Praiseworthy as that may sound, a reading of the *Report* soon reveals that the word *society* is used synonymously with the word *government*. Furthermore, the word *stabilize* is used as meaning to *preserve* and to *perpetuate*. It is clear from the start that the nature of the study was to analyze the. different ways a government can perpetuate itself in power, ways to control its citizens and prevent them from rebelling.

It was stated at the beginning of the report that morality was not an issue. The study did not address questions of right or wrong; nor did it deal with such concepts as freedom or human rights. Ideology was not an issue, nor patriotism, nor religious precepts. Its sole concern was how to perpetuate the existing government. The report said:

> Previous studies have taken the desirability of peace, the importance of human life, the superiority of democratic institutions, the greatest "good" for the greatest number, the "dignity" of the individual, the desirability of maximum health and longevity, and other such wishful premises as axiomatic values necessary for the justification of a study of peace issues. We have not found them so. We have attempted to apply the standards of physical science to our thinking, the principal characteristic of which is not quantification, as is popularly believed, but that, in Whitehead's words," ... it ignores all judgments of value; for instance, all esthetic and moral judgments."[1]

The major conclusion of the report was that, in the past, war has been the only reliable means to achieve that goal. It contends that only during times of war or the threat of war are the masses compliant enough to carry the yoke of government without complaint. Fear of conquest and pillage by an enemy can make almost any burden seem acceptable by comparison. War can be used to arouse human passion and patriotic feelings of loyalty to the nation's leaders. No amount of sacrifice in the name of victory will be rejected. Resistance is viewed as treason. But, in times of peace, people become resentful of high taxes, shortages, and bureaucratic intervention. When they become disrespectful of their leaders, they become dangerous. No government has long survived without enemies and armed conflict. War, therefore, has been an indispensable condition for "stabilizing society." These are the report's exact words:

> The war system not only has been essential to the existence of nations as independent political entities, but has been equally indispensable to their stable political structure. Without it, no government has ever been able to obtain acquiescence in its "legitimacy," or right to rule its society. The possibility of war provides the sense of external necessity without which no government can long remain in power. The historical record reveals one instance

---

[1] **Leonard Lewin, ed., *Report from Iron Mountain on the Possibility and Desirability of Peace* (New York: Dell Publishing, 1967), pp. 13-14.**

> **after another where the failure of a regime to maintain the credibility of a war threat led to its dissolution, by the forces of private interest, of reactions to social injustice, or of other disintegrative elements. The organization of society for the possibility of war is its principal political stabilizer.... It has enabled societies to maintain necessary class distinctions, and it has insured the subordination of the citizens to the state by virtue of the residual war powers inherent in the concept of nationhood.**

A NEW DEFINITION OF PEACE

The report then explains that we are approaching a point in history where the old formulas may no longer work. Why? Because it may now be possible to create a world government in which all nations will be disarmed and disciplined by a world army, a condition which will be called peace. The report says: "The word *peace,* as we have used it in the following pages,... implies total and general disarmament."[2] Under that scenario, independent nations will no longer exist and governments will not have the capability to wage war. There could be military action by the world army against renegade political subdivisions, but these would be called peace-keeping operations, and soldiers would be called peace keepers. No matter how much property is destroyed or how much blood is spilled, the bullets will be "peaceful" bullets and the bombs—even atomic bombs, if necessary—will be "peaceful" bombs.

The report then raises the question of whether there can ever be a suitable *substitute* for war? What *else* could the regional governments use—and what could the *world* government itself use—to legitimize and perpetuate itself? To provide an answer to that question was the stated purpose of the study.

The *Report from Iron Mountain* concludes that there can be no substitute for war unless it possesses three properties. It must (1) be economically wasteful, (2) represent a credible threat of great magnitude, and (3) provide a logical excuse for compulsory service to the government.

A SOPHISTICATED FORM OF SLAVERY

On the subject of compulsory service, the report explains that one of the advantages of standing armies is that they provide a

---

1. *Ibid.,* pp. 39,81.
2. *Ibid.,p.9.*

place for the government to put antisocial and dissident elements of society. In the absence of war, these forced-labor battalions would be told they are fighting poverty or cleaning up the planet or bolstering the economy or serving the common good in some other fashion. Every teenager would be required to serve—especially during those years in which young people are most rebellious against authority. Older people, too, would be drafted as a means of working off tax payments and fines. Dissidents would face heavy fines for "hate crimes" and politically incorrect attitudes so, eventually, they would all be in the forced-labor battalions. The report says:

> **We will examine ... the time-honored use of military institutions to provide anti-social elements with an acceptable role in the social structure.... The current euphemistic cliches—"juvenile delinquency" and "alienation"—have had their counterparts in every age. In earlier days these conditions were dealt with directly by the military without the complications of due process, usually through press gangs or outright enslavement....**
>
> **Most proposals that address themselves, explicitly or otherwise, to the postwar problem of controlling the socially alienated turn to some variant of the Peace Corps or the so-called Job Corps for a solution. The socially disaffected, the economically unprepared, the psychologically uncomfortable, the hard-core "delinquents," the incorrigible "subversives," and the rest of the unemployable are seen as somehow transformed by the disciplines of a service modeled on military precedent into more or less dedicated social service workers....**
>
> **Another possible surrogate for the control of potential enemies of society is the reintroduction, in some form consistent with modern technology and political processes, of slavery.... It is entirely possible that the development of a sophisticated form of slavery may be an absolute prerequisite for social control in a world at peace. As a practical matter, conversion of the code of military discipline to a euphemized form of enslavement would entail surprisingly little revision; the logical first step would be the adoption of some form of "universal" military service.**

BLOOD GAMES

The report considered ways in which the public could be preoccupied with non-important activities so that it would not have time to participate in political debate or resistance. Recreation,

---

1. ***Ibid.,*** **pp.41^12,68,70.**

trivial game shows, pornography, and situation comedies could play an important role, but blood games were considered to be the most promising of all the options. Blood games are competitive events between individuals or teams that are sufficiently violent in nature to enable the spectators to vicariously work off their frustrations. As a minimum, these events must evoke a passionate team loyalty on the part of the fans and must include the expectation of pain and injury on the part of the players. Even better for their purpose is the spilling of blood and the possibility of death. The common man has a morbid fascination for violence and blood. Crowds gather to chant "Jump! Jump!" at the suicidal figure on the hotel roof. Cars slow to a near stop on the highway to gawk at broken bodies next to a collision. A schoolyard fight instantly draws a circle of spectators. Boxing matches and football games and hockey games and automobile races are telecast daily, attracting millions of cheering fans who give rapt attention to each moment of danger, each angry blow to the face, each broken bone, each knockout, each carrying away of the unconscious or possibly dying contestant. In this fashion, their anger at "society" is defused and focused, instead, on the opposing team. The emperors of Rome devised the Circuses and gladiator contests and public executions by wild beasts for precisely that purpose.

Before jumping to the conclusion that such concepts are absurd in modern times, recall that during the 1985 European soccer championship in Belgium, the spectators became so emotionally involved in the contest that a bloody riot broke out in the bleachers leaving behind 38 dead and more that 400 injured. *U.S. News & World Report* gives this account:

> The root of the trouble: A tribal loyalty to home teams that surpasses an obsession and, say some experts, has become a substitute religion for many. The worst offenders include members of gangs such as Chelsea's Anti-Personnel Firm, made up of ill-educated young males who find in soccer rivalry an escape from boredom.
>
> Still, the British do not have a patent on soccer violence. On May 26, eight people were killed and more than 50 injured in Mexico City,-• a 1964 stadium riot in Lima, Peru, killed more than 300 — and a hotly disputed 1969 match between El Salvador and Honduras led to a week-long shooting war between the two countries, causing hundreds of casualties.
>
> The U.S. is criticized for the gridiron violence of its favorite sport, football, but outbursts in the bleachers are rare because loyalties are

> spread among many sports and national pride is not at stake. Said Thomas Tutko, professor of psychology at California's San Jose State University: "In these other countries, it used to be their armies. Now it's their competitive teams that stir passions."[1]

Having considered all the ramifications of blood games, the *Report from Iron Mountain* concluded that they were not an adequate substitute for war. It is true that violent sports are useful distracters and do, in fact, allow an outlet for boredom and fierce group loyalty, but their effect on the nation's psyche could not match the intensity of war hysteria. Until a better alternative could be found, world government would have to be postponed so that nations could continue to wage war.

FINDING A CREDIBLE GLOBAL THREAT

In time of war, most citizens uncomplainingly accept their low quality of life and remain fiercely loyal to their leaders. If a suitable substitute for war is to be found, then it must also elicit that same reaction. Therefore, a new enemy must be found that threatens the entire world, and the prospects of being overcome by that enemy must be just as terrifying as war itself. The report is emphatic on that point:

> Allegiance requires a cause; a cause requires an enemy. This much is obvious; the critical point is that the enemy that defines the cause must seem genuinely formidable. Roughly speaking, the presumed power of the "enemy" sufficient to warrant an individual sense of allegiance to a society must be proportionate to the size and complexity of the society. Today, of course, that power must be one of unprecedented magnitude and frightfulness.[2]

The first consideration in finding a suitable threat to serve as a global enemy was that it did not have to be real. A real one would be better, of course, but an invented one would work just as well, provided the masses could be *convinced* it was real. The public will more readily believe some fictions than others. Credibility would be more important than truth.

Poverty was examined as a potential global enemy but rejected as not fearful enough. Most of the world was already *in* poverty. Only those who had never experienced poverty would see it as a global threat. For the rest, it was simply a fact of everyday life.

---

1. "British Soccer's Day of Shame," *U.S. News & World Report,* June 10,1985, p. 11.
2. Lewin, *Report,* p. 44.

An invasion by aliens from outer space was given serious consideration. The report said that experiments along those lines already may have been tried. Public reaction, however, was not sufficiently predictable, because the threat was not "credible." Here is what the report had to say:

> Credibility, in fact, lies at the heart of the problem of developing a political substitute for war. This is where the space-race proposals, in many ways so well suited as economic substitutes for war, fall short. The most ambitious and unrealistic space project cannot of itself generate a believable external menace. It has been hotly argued that such a menace would offer the "last best hope of peace," etc., by uniting mankind against the danger of destruction by "creatures" from other planets or from outer space. Experiments have been proposed to test the credibility of an out-of-our-world invasion threat; it is possible that a few of the more difficult-to-explain "flying saucer" incidents of recent years were in fact early experiments of this kind. If so, they could hardly have been judged encouraging.

This report was released in 1966 when the idea of an alien presence seemed far fetched to the average person. In the ensuing years, however, that perception has changed. A growing segment of the population now believes that intelligent life forms may exist beyond our planet and could be monitoring our own civilization. Whether that belief is right or wrong is not the issue here. The point is that a dramatic encounter with aliens shown on network television—even if it were to be entirely fabricated by high-tech computer graphics or laser shows in the sky—could be used to stampede all nations into world government supposedly to defend the Earth from invasion. On the other hand, if the aliens were perceived to have peaceful intent, an alternative scenario would be to form world government to represent a unified human species speaking with a single voice in some kind of galactic federation. Either scenario would be far more credible today than in 1966.

THE ENVIRONMENTAL-POLLUTION MODEL

The final candidate for a useful global threat was pollution of the environment. This was viewed as the most likely to succeed because it could be related to observable conditions such as smog and water pollution—in other words, it would be based partly on fact and, therefore, be credible. Predictions could be made showing

---

1. *Ibid.,* p. 66.

end-of-earth scenarios just as horrible as atomic warfare. Accuracy in these predictions would not be important. Their purpose would be to frighten, not to inform. It might even be necessary to *deliberately* poison the environment to make the predictions more convincing and to focus the public mind on fighting a new enemy, more fearful than any invader from another nation—or even from outer space. The masses would more willingly accept a falling standard of living, tax increases, and bureaucratic intervention in their lives as simply "the price we must pay to save Mother Earth." If a vision of death and destruction from pollution could be implanted into the public subconscious mind, then the global battle against it could, indeed, replace war as the mechanism for control.

Did the *Report from Iron Mountain* really say that? It certainly did—and much more. Here are just a few of the pertinent passages:

> **When it comes to postulating a credible substitute for war ... the "alternate enemy" must imply a more immediate, tangible, and directly felt threat of destruction. It must justify the need for taking and paying a "blood price" in wide areas of human concern. In this respect, the possible substitute enemies noted earlier would be insufficient. One exception might be the environmental-pollution model, if the danger to society it posed was genuinely imminent. The fictive models would have to carry the weight of extraordinary conviction, underscored with a not inconsiderable actual sacrifice of life.... It may be, for instance, that gross pollution of the environment can eventually replace the possibility of mass destruction by nuclear weapons as the principal apparent threat to the survival of the species. Poisoning of the air, and of the principal sources of food and water supply, is already well advanced, and at first glance would seem promising in this respect; it constitutes a threat that can be dealt with only through social organization and political power....**
>
> **It is true that the rate of pollution could be increased selectively for this purpose.... But the pollution problem has been so widely publicized in recent years that it seems highly improbable that a program of deliberate environmental poisoning could be implemented in a politically acceptable manner.**
>
> **However unlikely some of the possible alternative enemies we have mentioned may seem, we must emphasize that one *must* be found of credible quality and magnitude, if a transition to peace is ever to come about without social disintegration. It is more probable, in our judgment, that such a threat will have to be invented.**[1]

---

1. *Ibid.,* pp. 66-67, 70-71.

AUTHENTICITY OF THE REPORT

The Report from Iron Mountain states that it was produced by a Special Study Group of fifteen men whose identities were to remain secret and that it was not intended to be made public. One member of the group, however, felt the report was too important to be kept under wraps. He was not in disagreement with its conclusions. He merely believed that more people should read it. He delivered his personal copy to Leonard Lewin, a well-known author and columnist who, in turn, negotiated its publication by Dial Press. It was then reprinted by Dell Publishing.

This was during the Johnson Administration, and the President's Special Assistant for National Security Affairs was CFR member Walt Rostow. Rostow was quick to announce that the report was a spurious work. Herman Kahn, CFR director of the Hudson Institute, said it was not authentic. The *Washington Post*—which is owned and run by CFR member Katharine Graham—called it "a delightful satire." *Time* magazine, founded by CFR-member Henry Luce, said it was a skillful hoax. Then, on November 26,1967, the report was reviewed in the book section of the *Washington Post* by Herschel McLandress, which was the pen name for Harvard professor John Kenneth Galbraith. Galbraith, who also had been a member of the CFR, said that he knew firsthand of the report's authenticity because he had been invited to participate in it. Although he was unable to be part of the official group, he *was* consulted from time to time and had been asked to keep the project a secret. Furthermore, while he doubted the wisdom of letting the public know about the report, he agreed totally with its conclusions. He wrote:

> **As I would put my personal repute behind the authenticity of this document, so would I testify to the validity of its conclusions. My reservations relate only to the wisdom of releasing it to an obviously unconditioned public.**

Six weeks later, in an Associated Press dispatch from London, Galbraith went even further and jokingly admitted that he was "a member of the conspiracy."[2]

---

1. "News of War and Peace You're Not Ready For," by Herschel McLandress, ***Book World,*** **in** ***The Washington Post,*** **November 26,1967, p. 5.**

2. "The Times Diary," *London Times,* **February 5,1968, p. 8.**

That, however, did not settle the issue. The following day, Galbraith backed off. When asked about his "conspiracy" statement, he replied: "For the first time since Charles II *The Times* has been guilty of a misquotation.... Nothing shakes my conviction that it was written by either Dean Rusk or Mrs. Clare Booth Luce."[1]

The reporter who conducted the original interview was embarassed by the allegation and did further research. Six days later, this is what he reported:

> **Misquoting seems to be a hazard to which Professor Galbraith is prone. The latest edition of the Cambridge newspaper** *Varsity* **quotes the following (tape recorded) interchange:**
>
> **Interviewer: "Are you aware of the identity of the author of** *Report from Iron Mountain?* **"**
>
> **Galbraith: "I was in general a member of the conspiracy but I was not the author. I have always assumed that it was the man who wrote the foreword—Mr. Lewin."**

So, on at least three occasions, Galbraith publicly endorsed the authenticity of the report but denied that he wrote it. Then who did? Was it Leonard Lewin, after all? In 1967 he said he did not. In 1972 he said that he did. Writing in the *New York Times Book Review* Lewin explained: "I wrote the 'Report,' all of it.... What I intended was simply to pose the issues of war and peace in a provocative way.

But wait! A few years before that, columnist William F. Buckley told the *New York Times* that *he* was the author. That statement was undoubtedly made tongue-in-cheek, but who—and what are we to believe? Was it written by Herman Kahn, John Kenneth Galbraith, Dean Rusk, Clare Booth Luce, Leonard Lewin, or William F. Buckley?

In the final analysis, it make little difference. The important point is that *The Report from Iron Mountain,* whether written as a flunk-tank study or a political satire, explains the reality that surrounds us. Regardless of its origin, the concepts presented in it are now being implemented in almost every detail. All one has to do is hold the *Report* in one hand and the daily newspaper in the other to realize that every major trend in American life is conform-

---

1. **"Galbraith Says He Was Misquoted/'London *Times,* February 6, 1968, p. 3.**
2. **"Touche, Professor/'Lowfon *Times,* February 12, 1968, p. 8.**
3. **"Report from Iron Mountain/'New *York Times,* March 19, 1968, p. 8.**

ing to the blueprint. So many things that otherwise are incomprehensible suddenly become clear: foreign aid, wasteful spending, the destruction of American industry, a job corps, gun control, a national police force, the apparent demise of Soviet power, a UN army, disarmament, a world bank, a world money, the surrender of national independence through treaties, and the ecology hysteria. *The Report from Iron Mountain* is an accurate summary of the plan that has already created our present. It is now shaping our future.

ENVIRONMENTALISM A SUBSTITUTE FOR WAR

It is beyond the scope of this study to prove that currently accepted predictions of environmental doom are based on exaggerated and fraudulent "scientific studies." But such proof is easily found if one is willing to look at the raw data and the assumptions upon which the projections are based. More important, however, is the question of why end-of-world scenarios based on phony scientific studies—or no studies at all—are uncritically publicized by the CFR-controlled media; or why radical environmental groups advocating socialist doctrine and anti-business programs are lavishly funded by CFR-dominated foundations, banks, and corporations, the very groups that would appear to have the most to lose. *The Report from Iron Mountain* answers those questions.

As the *Report* pointed out, truth is not important in these matters. It's what people can be made to *believe* that counts. "Credibility" is the key, not reality. There is just enough truth in the fact of environmental pollution to make predictions of planetary doom in the year two-thousand-something seem believable. All that is required is media cooperation and repetition. The plan has apparently worked. People of the industrialized nations have been subjected to a barrage of documentaries, dramas, feature films, ballads, poems, bumper stickers, posters, marches, speeches, seminars, conferences, and concerts. The result has been phenomenal. Politicians are now elected to office on platforms consisting of nothing more than an expressed concern for the environment and a promise to clamp down on those nasty industries. No one questions the damage done to the economy or the nation. It makes no difference when the very planet on which we live is sick and dying- Not one in a thousand will question that underlying premise. How could it be false? Look at all the movie celebrities and rock stars who have joined the movement.

While the *followers* of the environmental movement are preoccupied with visions of planetary doom, let us see what the *leaders* are thinking. The first Earth Day was proclaimed on April 22,1970, at a "Summit" meeting in Rio de Janeiro, attended by environmentalists and politicians from all over the world. A publication widely circulated at that meeting was entitled the *Environmental Handbook*. The main theme of the book was summarized by a quotation from Princeton Professor Richard A. Falk, a member of the CFR. Falk wrote that there are four interconnected threats to the planet—wars of mass destruction, overpopulation, pollution, and the depletion of resources. Then he said: "The basis of all four problems is the inadequacy of the sovereign states to manage the affairs of mankind in the twentieth century."[1] The *Handbook* continued the CFR line by asking these rhetorical questions: "Are nation-states actually feasible, now that they have power to destroy each other in a single afternoon?... What price would most people be willing to pay for a more durable kind of human organization—more taxes, giving up national flags, perhaps the sacrifice of some of our hard-won liberties?"[2]

In 1989, the CFR-owned *Washington Post* published an article written by CFR member George Kennan in which he said: "We must prepare instead for ... an age where the great enemy is not the Soviet Union, but the rapid deterioration of our planet as a supporting structure for civilized life."[3]

On March 27, 1990, in the CFR-controlled *New York Times,* CFR member Michael Oppenheimer wrote: "Global warming, ozone depletion, deforestation and overpopulation are the four horsemen of a looming 21st century apocalypse.... As the cold war recedes, the environment is becoming the No. 1 international security concern."[4]

---

1. Garrett de Bell, ed., *The Environmental Handbook* (New York: Ballantine/Friends of the Earth, 1970), p. 138.

2. *Ibid.,p.* 145.

3. "A Europe Now Free from A Confining Cold War Vision," by George Kennan, *Washington Post* syndication, *Sacramento Bee,* November 14,1989, p. B7.

4. The *New York Times* has been one of the principal means by which CFR policies are inserted into the mainstream of public opinion. The paper was purchased in 1896 by Alfred Ochs, with financial backing from CFR pioneer J.P. Morgan, Rothschild agent August Belmont, and Jacob Schiff, a partner in Kuhn, Loeb & Co. It is now owned by CFR member Arthur Sulzberger, who is also the publisher, and it is staffed by numerous CFR editors and columnists. See Perloff, p. 181.

CFR member, Lester Brown, heads up another think tank called the WorldWatch Institute. In the Institute's annual report, entitled *State of the World 1991,* Brown said that "the battle to save the planet will replace the battle over ideology as the organizing theme of the new world order."

In the official publication of the 1992 Earth Summit, we find this: "The world community now faces together greater risks to our common security through our impacts on the environment than from traditional military conflicts with one another."

How many times does it have to be explained? The environmental movement was *created* by the CFR. It is a substitute for war that they hope will become the emotional and psychological foundation for world government.

HUMANITY ITSELF IS THE TARGET

The Club of Rome is a group of global planners who annually release end-of-world scenarios based on predictions of overpopulation and famine. Their membership is international, but the American roster includes such well-known CFR members as Jimmy Carter, Harlan Cleveland, Claiburne Pell, and Sol Linowitz. Their solution to overpopulation? A world government to control birth rates and, if necessary, apply euthanasia. That is a gentle word for the deliberate killing of the old, the weak, and of course the uncooperative. Following the same reasoning advanced at Iron Mountain, the Club of Rome has concluded that fear of environmental disaster could be used as a substitute enemy for the purpose of unifying the masses behind their program. In their 1991 book entitled *The First Global Revolution,* we find this:

> In searching for a new enemy to unite us, we came up with the idea that pollution, the threat of global warming, water shortages, famine and the like would fit the bill.... All these dangers are caused by human intervention.... The real enemy, then, is humanity itself.

Socialist theoreticians have always been fascinated by the question of controlling population growth. It excites their imagination because it is the ultimate bureaucratic plan. If the real enemy is

---

1. Lester R. Brown, "The New World Order," in Lester R. Brown et al., *State of the World 1991: A Worldwatch Institute Report on Progress Toward a Sustainable Society* (New York: W.W. Norton, 1991), p. 3.

2. Alexander King and Bertrand Schneider, *The First Global Revolution,* A Report by the Council of the Club of Rome (New York: Pantheon Books, 1991), p. 115.

humanity itself, as the Club of Rome says, then humanity itself must become the target. Fabian Socialist Bertrand Russell[1] expressed it thus:

> I do not pretend that birth control is the only way in which population can be kept from increasing.... War, as I remarked a moment ago, has hitherto been disappointing in this respect, but perhaps bacteriological war may prove more effective. If a Black Death could be spread throughout the world once in every generation, survivors could procreate freely without making the world too full....
>
> A scientific world society cannot be stable unless there is world government.... It will be necessary to find ways of preventing an increase in world population. If this is to be done otherwise than by wars, pestilences and famines, it will demand a powerful international authority. This authority should deal out the world's food to the various nations in proportion to their population at the time of the establishments of the authority. If any nation subsequently increased its population, it should not on that account receive any more food. The motive for not increasing population would therefore be very compelling.[2]

Very compelling, indeed. These quiet-spoken socialists are not kidding around. For example, one of the most visible "environmentalists" and advocate of population control is Jacques Cousteau. Interviewed by the United Nations *UNESCO Courier* in November of 1991, Cousteau spelled it out. Speaking of death by cancer, he said:

> Should we eliminate suffering diseases? The idea is beautiful, but perhaps not a benefit for the long term. We should not allow our dread of diseases to endanger the future of our species. This is a terrible thing to say. In order to stabilize world population, we must eliminate 350,000 people per day. It is a horrible thing to say, but it's just as bad not to say it.[3]

GORBACHEV BECOMES AN ECOLOGY WARRIOR

We can now understand how Mikhail Gorbachev, formerly the leader of one of the most repressive governments the world has known, became head of a new organization called the International Green Cross, which supposedly is dedicated to environmental issues. Gorbachev has never denounced socialism, only the *label* of a particular *brand* of socialism called Communism. His real interest is not ecology but world government with himself assured a major position in the socialist power structure. In a public appearance in Fulton, Missouri, he praised the Club of Rome, of which he is a member, for its position on population control. Then he said:

---

[1] **See Martin,** pp. **171,325,463-69.**

[2] **Bertrand Arthur William Russell,** ***The Impact of Science on Society*** **(New York: Simon and Schuster, 1953),** pp. **103-104, 111.**

[3] **Interviewed by Bahgat Eluadi and Adel Rifaat,** ***Courrier de VUnesco,*** **November 1991,** p. **13.**

> **One of the worst of the new dangers is ecological.... Today, global climatic shifts; the greenhouse effect; the "ozone hole"; acid rain; contamination of the atmosphere, soil and water by industrial and household waste; the destruction of the forests; etc. all threaten the stability of the planet.**[1]

Gorbachev proclaimed that global government was the answer to these threats and that the use of government force was essential. He said: "I believe that the new world order will not be fully realized unless the United Nations and its Security Council create structures ... authorized to impose sanctions and make use of other measures of compulsion."

Here is an arch criminal who fought his way up through the ranks of the Soviet Communist Party, became the protege of Yuri Andropov, head of the dreaded KGB, was a member of the USSR's ruling Politburo throughout the Soviet invasion of Afghanistan, and who was selected by the Politburo in 1985 as the supreme leader of world Communism. All of this was during one of the Soviet's most dismal periods of human-rights violations and subversive activities against the free world. Furthermore, he ruled over a nation with one of the worst possible records of environmental destruction. At no time while he was in power did he ever say or do anything to show concern over planet Earth.

All that is now forgotten. Gorbachev has been transformed by the CFR-dominated media into an ecology warrior. He is calling for world government and telling us that such a government will use environmental issues as justification for sanctions and other "measures of compulsion." We cannot say that we were not warned.

---

1. Michail Gorbachev, "The River of Time and the Necessity of Action," 46th John Findley Green Foundation Lecture, Westminster College, Fulton, Missouri, May 6, 1992, transcript from Westminster College Department of Press Relations, p. 6.

2. *Ibid., p.9.*

U.S. BRANDED AS ECOLOGICAL AGGRESSOR

The use of compulsion is an important point in these plans. People in the industrialized nations are not expected to cooperate in their own demise. They will have to be forced. They will not like it when their food is taken for global distribution. They will not approve when they are taxed by a world authority to finance foreign political projects. They will not voluntarily give up their cars or resettle into smaller houses or communal barracks to satisfy the resource-allocation quotas of a UN agency. Club-of-Rome member Maurice Strong states the problem:

> In effect, the United States is committing environmental aggression against the rest of the world.... At the military level, the United States is the custodian. At the environmental level, the United States is clearly the greatest risk... One of the worst problems in the United States is energy prices—they're too low....
>
> It is clear that current lifestyles and consumption patterns of the affluent middle class ... involving high meat intake, consumption of large amounts of frozen and 'convenience' foods, ownership of motor-vehicles, numerous electric household appliances, home and work-place air-conditioning ... expansive suburban housing... are not sustainable.[1]

Mr. Strong's remarks were enthusiastically received by world environmental leaders, but they prompted this angry editorial response in the *Arizona Republic:*

> Translated from eco-speak, this means two things: (1) a reduction in the standard of living in Western nations through massive new taxes and regulations, and (2) a wholesale transfer of wealth from industrialized to under-developed countries. The dubious premise here is that if the U.S. economy could be reduced to, say, the size of Malaysia's, the world would be a better place.... Most Americans probably would balk at the idea of the U.N. banning automobiles in the U.S.

Who is this Maurice Strong who sees the United States as the environmental aggressor against the world? Does he live in poverty? Does he come from a backward country that is resentful of American prosperity? Does he himself live in modest circum-

---

1- "Ecology Remedy Costly," (AP), *Sacramento Bee,* March 12, 1992, p. A8. Also Maurice Strong, Introduction to Jim MacNeil, Pieter Winsemius, and Taizo Vakushiji, *Beyond Interdependence* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1991), p. ix.

2. "Road to Ruin," *Arizona Republic,* March 26,1992.

stances, avoiding consumption in order to preserve our natural resources? None of the above. He is one of the wealthiest men in the world. He lives and travels in great comfort. He is a lavish entertainer. In addition to having great personal wealth derived from the oil industry in Canada—which he helped nationalize—Maurice Strong was the Secretary-General of the 1992 Earth Summit in Rio; head of the 1972 UN Conference on Human Environment in Stockholm; the first Secretary-General of the UN Environment Program; president of the World Federation of United Nations; co-chairman of the World Economic Forum; member of the Club of Rome; trustee of the Aspen Institute; and a director of the World Future Society. That is probably more than you wanted to know about this man, but it is necessary in order to appreciate the importance of what follows.

A PLOT FOR ECONOMIC CRISIS

Maurice Strong believes—or *says* that he believes—the world's ecosystems can be preserved only if the affluent nations of the world can be disciplined into lowering their standard of living. Production and consumption must be curtailed. To bring that about, those nations must submit to rationing, taxation, and political domination by world government. They will probably not do that voluntarily, he says, so they will have to be forced. To accomplish that, it will be necessary to engineer a global monetary crisis which will destroy their economic systems. Then they will have no choice but to accept assistance and control from the UN.

This strategy was revealed in the May, 1990, issue of *West* magazine, published in Canada. In an article entitled "The Wizard of Baca Grande," journalist Daniel Wood described his week-long experience at Strong's private ranch in southern Colorado. This ranch has been visited by such CFR notables as David Rockefeller, Secretary-of-State Henry Kissinger, founder of the World Bank Robert McNamara, and the presidents of such organizations as IBM, Pan Am, and Harvard.

During Wood's stay at the ranch, the tycoon talked freely about environmentalism and politics. To express his own world view, he said he was planning to write a novel about a group of world leaders who decided to save the planet. As the plot unfolded, it became obvious that it was based on real people and real events-Wood continues the story:

> Each year, he explains as background to the telling of the novel's plot, the World Economic Forum convenes in Davos, Switzerland. Over a thousand CEOs, prime ministers, finance ministers, and leading academics gather in February to attend meetings and set economic agendas for the year ahead. With this as a setting, he then says: "What if a small group of these world leaders were to conclude that the principal risk to the earth comes from the actions of the rich countries? And if the world is to survive, those rich countries would have to sign an agreement reducing their impact on the environment. Will they do it?... The group's conclusion is 'no.' the rich countries won't do it. They won't change. So, in order to save the planet, the group decides: Isn't the *only* hope for the planet that the industrialized civilizations collapse? Isn't it our responsibility to bring that about?."
>
> "This group of world leaders," he continues, "form a secret society to bring about an economic collapse. It's February. They're all at Davos. These aren't terrorists. They're *world leaders.* They have positioned themselves in the world's commodity and stock markets. They've engineered, using their access to stock exchanges and computers and gold supplies, a panic. Then, they prevent the world's stock markets from closing. They jam the gears. They hire mercenaries who hold the rest of the world leaders at Davos as hostages. The markets *can't close.* The rich countries..." And Strong makes a slight motion with his fingers as if he were flicking a cigarette butt out the window.
>
> I sit there spellbound. This is not *any* storyteller talking, this is Maurice Strong. He knows these world leaders. He is, in fact, co-chairman of the Council of the World Economic Forum. He sits at the fulcrum of power. He is in a position to *do it.*
>
> "I probably shouldn't be saying things like this," he says.[1]

Maurice Strong's fanciful plot probably shouldn't be taken too seriously, at least in terms of a *literal* reading of future events. It is unlikely they will unfold in exactly that manner—although it is not impossible. For one thing, it would not be necessary to hold the leaders of the industrialized nations at gun point. *They* would be the ones engineering this plot. Leaders from Third-World countries do not have the means to cause a global crisis. That would have to come from the money centers in New York, London, or Tokyo. Furthermore, the masterminds behind this thrust for global government have always resided in the industrialized nations. They have come from the ranks of the CFR in America and from other

---

1- "The Wizard of Baca Grande," by Daniel Wood, *West* magazine, May, 1990, p. 35.

branches of the International Roundtable in England, France, Belgium, Canada, Japan, and elsewhere. They are the ideological descendants of Cecil Rhodes and they are fulfilling his dream.

It is not important whether or not Maurice Strong's plot for global economic collapse is to be taken literally. What is important is that men like him are *thinking* along those lines. As Wood pointed out, they are in a position to *do it*. Or something *like* it. If it is not this scenario, they will consider another one with similar consequences. If history has proven anything, it is that men with financial and political power are quite capable of heinous plots against their fellow men. They have launched wars, caused depressions, and created famines to suit their personal agendas. We have little reason to believe that the world leaders of today are more saintly than their predecessors.

Furthermore, we must not be fooled by pretended concern for Mother Earth. The call-to-arms for saving the planet is a gigantic ruse. There is just enough truth to environmental pollution to make the show "credible," as *The Report from Iron Mountain* phrased it, but the end-of-earth scenarios which drive the movement forward are bogus. The real objective in all of this is world government, the ultimate doomsday mechanism from which there can be no escape. Destruction of the economic strength of the industrialized nations is merely a necessary prerequisite for ensnaring them into the global web. The thrust of the current ecology movement is directed totally to that end.

SUMMARY

The United States government is mired in a 5-trillion-dollar debt. By 1993, net interest payments on that debt were running $214 billion per year. That consumes about 14% of all- federal revenue and costs the average family over $5,000 each year. Nothing is purchased by it. It merely pays interest. It represents the government's largest single expense. Interest on the national debt is already consuming more than 57% of all the revenue collected from income taxes. At the present rate of expansion, it will consume 100% in 1998.

By 1992, there were more people working for government than for manufacturing companies in the private sector. There are more citizens receiving government checks than there are paying income taxes. When it is possible for people to vote on issues involving the transfer of wealth to themselves from others, the ballot box becomes a weapon whereby the majority plunders the minority. That is the point of no return. It is a doomsday mechanism.

By 1992, more than half of all federal outlays went for what are called entitlements. Here is another doomsday mechanism. Entitlements are expenses—such as Social Security and Medicare—which are based on promises of *future* payments. Entitlements represent 52% of federal outlays. When this is added to the 14% that is now being spent for interest payments on the national debt, we come to the startling conclusion that two-thirds of all federal expenses are now entirely automatic, and that percentage is growing each month.

The biggest doomsday mechanism of all is the Federal Reserve System. Every cent of our money supply came into being for the purpose of being loaned to someone. Those dollars will disappear when the loans are paid back. If we tried to pay off the national debt, our money supply would be undermined. Under the Federal Reserve System, therefore, Congress would be fearful to eliminate the national debt even if it wanted to.

Political environmentalism has caused millions of acres of timber and agricultural land to be taken out of production. Heavy industry has been chased from our shores by our own government. High taxes, rules beyond reason for safety devices in the work place, so-called fair-employment practices, and mandatory health insurance are rapidly destroying what is left of the private sector. The result is unemployment and dislocation for millions of American workers. Government moves in to fill the void it creates, and bureaucracy grows by the hour.

Federal taxes now take more than 40% of our private incomes. State, county, and local taxes are on top of that. Inflation feeds on what is left. We spend half of each year working for the government. Real wages in America have declined. Young couples with a single income have a lower standard of living than their parents did. The net worth of the average household is falling. The amount of leisure time is shrinking. The percentage of Americans who own their homes is dropping. The age at which a family acquires a first home is rising. The number of families counted among the middle class is falling. The number of people living below the officially defined poverty level is rising. Over 90% of all Americans are broke at age 65.

None of this is accidental. It is the fulfillment of a plan by members of the CFR who comprise the hidden government of the United States. Their goal is the deliberate weakening of the industrialized nations as a prerequisite to bringing them into a world government built upon the principles of socialism, with themselves in control.

The origin of many of the stratagems in this plan can be traced to a government-sponsored think-tank study released in 1966 called the *Report from Iron Mountain*. The purpose of the study was to analyze methods by which a government can perpetuate itself in power—ways to control its citizens and prevent them from rebelling. The conclusion of the report was that, in the past, war has been the only reliable means to achieve that goal. Under world government, however, war technically would be impossible. So the main purpose of the study was to explore other methods for controlling populations and keeping them loyal to their leaders. It was concluded that a suitable substitute for war would require a new enemy which posed a frightful threat to survival. Neither the threat nor the enemy had to be real. They merely had to be believable.

Several surrogates for war were considered, but the only one holding real promise was the environmental-pollution model. This was viewed as the most likely to succeed because (1) it could be related to observable conditions such as smog and water pollution—in other words, it would be based partly on fact and, therefore, believable—and (2) predictions could be made showing end-of-earth scenarios just as horrible as atomic warfare. Accuracy in these predictions would not be important. Their purpose would be to frighten, not to inform.

While the *followers* of the current environmental movement are preoccupied with visions of planetary doom, the *leaders* have an entirely different agenda. It is world government.

Chapter Twenty-Five

A PESSIMISTIC SCENARIO

The future portrayed as a continuation of present trends including a hypothetical banking crisis, massive inflation, collapse of the economy, domestic violence, the issuance of a new UN money, the arrival of UN "Peacekeeping" forces, and the final merger into The New World Order, a form of high-tech feudalism.

We are ready now for the final trip in our time machine. On the control panel in front of us are several selector switches. The one on the left indicates *Direction of Time*. Set it to *Future*. The switch on the right indicates *Primary Assumptions*. Set it to the first notch which reads: *Present trends unaltered*. Leave the *Secondary-Assumption* switch where it is. The lever in the center **is** a throttle to determine speed of travel. Nudge it forward—and hang on tight!

A BANKING CRISIS

It is 4:05 in the morning. While New York City sleeps, the computers on the fourth floor at Citibank are aware that a full-blown crisis is underway. It started in London—five hours ahead of the East coast—and within minutes had spread like an electronic virus to Tokyo and Hong Kong. That was an hour ago. Alarms are now sounding on computer terminals in all the trading centers of the world, and automatic dialing devices are summoning money managers to their board rooms.

The panic started from rumors that one of the large U.S. banks **was** in trouble because of the simultaneous default of its loan to Mexico and the bankruptcy of its second-largest corporate borrower. Yesterday afternoon, the bank's president held a press conference and denied that these were serious problems. To reinforce his optimism, he announced that, on Friday, the bank will be paying a higher-than-usual quarterly dividend. The professional money managers were not convinced. They knew that writing off these loans would wipe out the bank's entire net worth.

All American banks are now so intertwined in their operations that trouble for one affects them all. By 5 **A.M.,** the money-center banks are facing heavy withdrawals from overseas depositors. By the time the sun peeks between the New York skyscrapers, Americans are also taking their money. These are not small transactions. They involve other banks, insurance companies, and investment funds. The average withdrawal is over $3 million. The reservoir is draining fast.

It is now 7:45. The banks will soon be opening their doors, and already newspaper reporters and TV crews are arriving outside. A plan of unified action must be made quickly.

The Chairman of the Federal Reserve has arranged an emergency conference call with the CEOs of all the major banks, including one who was located at great effort at his fishing lodge in northern Canada. The President is also tied into the telephone network but on a "silent-monitor" basis. Other than the Chairman, no one else knows he is listening.

TO SAVE THE BANKS IS TO SAVE THE WORLD

The CEO at Citibank quickly summarizes the problem. None of the banks will be able to sustain withdrawals of this magnitude for more than about forty-eight hours. Perhaps less. The money is not in their vaults. It has been put into interest-bearing loans. Even if the loans were performing, they would not have the money. Now that some of the larger loans are in default, the problem is even worse. If the Fed doesn't provide the money, the banks will have no choice but to close their doors and go out of business. That would cause a collapse of the economy and untold suffering Would follow. Americans would be thrown out of work; families would go hungry; national security would be weakened. And it would undoubtedly spread to the entire world. Who knows what dire consequences would follow—chaos, famine, and riots here at home? Revolution abroad? The return of a militaristic regime in Russia? Atomic war?

The Chairman cuts the monologue short. He is well aware that the banks must not be allowed to fail. That, after all, was one of the reasons the Federal Reserve was created. He wants to get on with the details of how to do it.

Yes, the FDIC is already broke, but don't worry about that. Congress will authorize a "loan" or some other mechanism for the Fed to create whatever amount of new money the FDIC might need. If Congress moves too slowly, the Fed has other technical means to accomplish the same result. In the meantime, unlimited funding will be available at the Fed's discount window by 8 **A.M.,** Eastern Standard time. The printing presses are already running at full capacity to provide the currency. Fleets of airplanes and armored cars are standing by to deliver it. Furthermore, don't give up on those defaulted loans. Congress will probably bailout the bankrupt American corporation. And the President has said he will ask for additional funding for the IMF/World Bank. That money will be created by the Fed and carry the stipulation that it must be used by Mexico and other defaulting countries to resume interest payments on their loans.

The bankers are told to open their doors to the public and act calm. The press already knows that something is going on but not the seriousness of it. So tell them only what they already know. Nothing more. If people want to withdraw their money, give it to them. If lines should develop, call the police to maintain order, but continue paying out. Offer to stay open after closing hours, if necessary, to accommodate everyone. Above all, have the tellers take their time. Check and double check each transaction. Move the lines slowly.

The armored trucks will arrive at the busiest hours so the guards can carry sacks of money past the customers for visual confirmation that there is enough for everyone. A bank officer then should tell the crowd that a fresh delivery of money has just been made from the Federal Reserve System and that there is plenty more where that came from. Once people become convinced that the bank is able to pay, most of them will tire of the wait and go home.

PANIC AVERTED

It is now 6 **P.M.** of the following day. The plan was successful. Lines of anxious depositors had formed yesterday morning, mostly in the larger cities, and resumed again this morning. But there has been enough money for everyone. The news media treated the story lightly, making sure to include sound bites from various experts that banks can no longer fail, thanks to the FDIC and the

Federal Reserve System. More than half the video time is devoted to armored trucks and guards carrying sacks of money. The banks closed on schedule today, and there were no more lines.

While everything appears calm to the passengers on deck, the fire still rages out of control in the boiler room. Over a billion dollars has already fled, mostly overseas, and the hemorrhage continues. The Fed is pumping in fresh money to replace it. Two of the banks have instructed their computer technicians to activate an automatic two-hour delay on all incoming transactions. There is talk of deliberately disabling the entire network and blaming the breakdown on overload, but the idea is abandoned. There are too many people in the system. Someone surely would leak the truth to the press.

The danger of a run on the banks by private depositors used to be the nightmare of the Federal Reserve. Now it is nothing compared to the electronic run that is taking place involving institutional depositors around the world. These are professionals who are not impressed by armed guards carrying bags of currency. They want their money now—and they are getting it. Although they are receiving it in the form of electronic credits, they are immediately exchanging that for something more dependable, such as stocks, other currencies, and bullion.

This is the Fed's finest hour. It is exercising its many powers, carefully accumulated over the years, to create money out of whatever is at hand: U.S. Treasury bonds, bonds from other governments, corporate debt obligations, even direct loans to individuals and partnerships. Billions of new dollars are springing into existence. They are spreading around the globe to fulfill the banks' obligation to give people back their money.

A REAL RUN ON THE BANKS

It is now seven weeks later. Something happened, but no one knows what. Like a spark igniting a twig, spreading to a branch, and then engulfing the entire forest, the public has panicked. Responding to a primitive herd instinct, they are descending on the banks and the thrifts. They want their money. They want their savings.

Perhaps it was the newly released statistics showing higher unemployment, or the continued rise in bankruptcies, or the Congressional vote to increase the national debt again, or the jump in Social-Security taxes, or the loss of another 140,000 jobs to Mexico, or the riots in Chicago and Detroit for more food stamps and government housing, or the presence of UN "Peacekeeping" troops to augment the National Guard, or the rumor that the Bank of America was technically insolvent, or the UN World Court ruling that the number of American automobiles had to be cut by 30% by December 31st, or the skeptical tone in the voice of the CBS news anchor as he quoted the latest prediction of renewed prosperity.

Whatever it was, there are now long lines of sober-faced depositors outside every bank. There is not enough cash in the vaults to meet the demand. Most money is checkbook money, which means it consists merely of magnetic impulses in a computer. Only about five per cent of the monetary supply is in the form of coins or currency. Most of that is already outside the banks in cash registers, wallets, and mattresses. The amount inside the banks is only about one-half of one per cent. The Fed's emergency supply of currency—a large quantity warehoused for exactly this kind of crisis—is inadequate. This time, the printing presses cannot keep up.

Spokesmen from the Treasury and the Federal Reserve appear on TV and assure the nation that there is no need for panic. Everything is under control. The only problem is the irrational behavior of alarmists who have no faith in their country.

No one believes them. The lines grow longer, and the people become angry. Bank employees are jeered on their way to work. Bomb threats are made. Sporadic violence breaks out, and bank windows are smashed. The International Guard is called up. The President declares a bank holiday.

Since people cannot close out their bank accounts by withdrawing currency, they rush through the stores on checkbook-spending sprees. If they cannot get their money back, at least they can buy things with it. Garages and basements are filling up with canned goods, shoes, liquor, tires, ammunition. Goods are becoming scarce, pushing prices upward. The Dow Jones is going through the roof as investors empty their checking accounts to buy anything for sale. The Securities and Exchange Commission finally suspends trading.

Nine months have now passed. The crisis has been a blessing for politicians. They have thrived upon it and grown in stature because of it. It has given them an excuse to swarm through the country on fact-finding trips, to appear in shirt sleeves at town-hall meetings, to give speeches, and to be seen on television—all the time expressing grave concern and appearing to take charge. It has legitimized their role and somehow made them seem more necessary than before. They have been converted in the public eye from oafs and bumpkins to serious-minded statesmen.

The party in power said it inherited the mess. The previous party blamed the current one for dropping the ball. Both parties, however, agreed on the solution: more of exactly the same policies that created the crisis: expanded power to the Federal Reserve, more government control over the economy, more subsidies and benefits, and more international commitments. These were called "emergency reforms" and became law. The same men who created the problem prescribed the solution. The public was grateful to have leaders of such vision and wisdom.

BANK BAILOUT AND MORE INFLATION

The most important emergency reform was to bail out the banks with taxpayers' dollars. Defaulted foreign loans were taken over by the IMF/World Bank, and the failing corporate borrowers were given government grants disguised as loans—loans which everyone knew would never be paid back.

Next, the banks were nationalized, at least in part. In return for the bailout money, they gave large blocks of stock to the government which now operates as an official business partner. This was not a drastic change. The banks were already heavily regulated by government, even to the point of determining their profits, dividends, and executive salaries. That is the way the cartel wanted it. It was the means by which competition was avoided and profits assured. Monetary scientists and political scientists have always worked as a hidden partnership. This merely made the relationship more visible.

Technically, no bank was allowed to fail. The Fed kept its promise on that. When the troubled banks were taken over, all depositors with $100,000 or less were fully protected. If they wanted their money and the bank didn't have it, the Fed simply manufactured it. No one was worried about the value of those dollars. They were just happy to have them.

Ten more months have now passed. Those new dollars are flooding throughout the system. The money supply has increased by the amount of the bailout plus the amount of new spending for welfare, health care, interest on the national debt, and foreign aid, all of which are in a vertical climb. Inflation has become institutionalized.

The dollar has been dethroned as the world's defacto currency. Foreign investors and central banks no longer have any use for dollars. They have sent them back to the United States from whence they came. Over a trillion of them have returned to our shores like a huge flock of homing pigeons that fills the sky from horizon to horizon. They are buying our refrigerators, automobiles, computers, airplanes, cargo ships, armored tanks, office buildings, factories, real estate—pusrung prices to levels that would have seemed impossible a year ago. A single postage stamp costs as many dollars as once would have purchased a new TV set.

I Most stores have stopped accepting checks and credit cards. Workers are paid daily with bundles of paper money. People rush to the stores to purchase groceries before prices rise even further. Commerce is paralyzed. Bank loans and mortgages are unobtainable. Savings accounts have been destroyed, including the cash values of insurance policies. Factories are shutting down. Businesses are closing their doors. Barter is commonplace. Old silver coins come out of private hoards and a hundred-dollar bill is exchanged for one silver dime.

I Following the crash of 1929, the supply of paper money was limited because it was backed by silver, and the amount of silver itself was limited. Those who had money were able to buy up the assets of those who did not. Since prices were falling, the longer they held on to their dollars, the more they could buy. Now, things are exactly the opposite. There is nothing to back the money supply except politics. There is no limit to the amount of currency that can be created. It is just a question of printing and delivering it. Money is abundant, and prices are rising. Those who have money are spending it as soon as possible to prevent further loss of purchasing power. In the 1930s, everyone wanted dollars. Now, everyone kvants to get rid of them.

The Emergency Banking Regulation No. 1, originally issued in 1961, empowered the Secretary of the Treasury—*without* consent of Congress—to seize anyone's bank account, savings account, or safe-deposit box. It also gave him the power to fix rents, prices, salaries, and hourly wages, and to impose rationing. This was to be done "in the event of attack on the United States." That phrase now has been changed to read: "in the event of national emergency." The Federal Emergency Management Agency (FEMA) has been expanded to administer the directives of the Treasury. FEMA also has the power to detain and forcibly relocate any citizen "in the event of a national emergency."

NEW MONEY

Three more months have passed, and the President has declared a state of national emergency. Today, the Secretary of the Treasury announced that the nations of the world had ratified a multilateral treaty that would solve the inflationary problems of the United States. This will be accomplished through the issuance of a new world-wide monetary unit called the Bancor, the name proposed by John Maynard Keynes at the Bretton Woods Conference in 1944. This new money will restore our commerce and put a stop to inflation. At last, said the Treasury Secretary, man will have total control over his economic destiny. Money will now become his servant instead of his master.

The United States, he said, has agreed to accept the Bancor as legal tender for all debts, public and private. The old money will still be honored but will be phased out over a three-month period. After that date, Federal Reserve Notes will no longer be valid. During the transition period, the old money may be exchanged at any bank at the ratio of one Bancor for five-hundred dollars. All existing contracts expressed in dollars—including home mortgages—are now converted to Bancors in that same ratio.

In the same announcement, the Secretary advised that the IMF/World Bank was backing this new money with something far more precious than gold. Instead, it will be backed by the assets of the world. These include bonds from the participating governments plus millions of acres of wilderness lands that have been deposited into the UN "Environmental Bank."[1] The National Parks and forests of the United States have been added to those reserves, and they will now be under the supervision of the UN Wilderness Asset Preservation and Enhancement Agency (WAPEA). From this date forward, the Federal Reserve System will operate as a subdivision of the IMF which is now the central bank of the world.

---

[1] **"Debt-for-nature" swaps were proposed at the 4th World Wilderness Conference held in Denver, Colorado, in 1987 and they are being implemented right now. Costa Rica, Bolivia, and Ecuador have already agreed to swap their debt in exchange for a commitment to prevent wilderness areas from being developed. UN control over those lands is inevitable.**

Although the Secretary did not mention it in his public appearance, the UN treaty also obligated the government to put restrictions on the use of cash. Every citizen is to be issued an international ID card. The primary purpose of these machine-readable cards is to provide positive identification for all citizens at transportation depots and military checkpoints. They also can be used by the banks and stores to access checking accounts, which are now called *debit* accounts.

Every citizen is being issued an account in a bank near his place of residence. All payments by employers or government agencies will be made by electronic transfer. Cash transactions larger than five Bancors will be illegal in three months. Most expenditures will be paid by debit card. That is the only way in which the UN Monetary Transaction Tracking Agency (MTTA) can combat counterfeiting and prevent money laundering by organized crime. That, of course, is camouflage. The government complex issuing the new money is the greatest perpetrator of counterfeiting and organized crime the world has ever seen.[1] The real targets are political dissidents and those escaping taxes in the underground economy.

No one will be allowed to earn or buy or sell without this ID card, nor will they be allowed to leave the country or even to migrate to another city. If any government agency has reason to red-flag an individual, his card will not clear, and he will be blocked from virtually all economic transactions and geographical movements. It is the ultimate control.

The new money offers the Cabal yet one more benefit. There can never be another run on the banks, because it is now illegal to demand currency.

---

1. That is not hyperbole. All fiat money is counterfeit. Furthermore, there is evidence that the CIA and the DEA have been deeply involved in the smuggling of illicit drugs. The money derived from those drugs was apparently laundered through Panamanian branches of U.S. banks and used to finance covert operations in Nicaragua and elsewhere. Virtually all governments have been involved in activities that would be criminal offenses if committed by ordinary citizens.

THE RISE OF REVOLUTIONARY MOVEMENTS

Hyperinflation is fertile ground for the seeds of revolution. Economic despair led the masses to grasp at the promises of Lenin in Russia, Hitler in Germany, Mussolini in Italy, and Mao in China. It has now been three years since that fateful run on the banks in New York, and inflation has not abated, even with the introduction of the Bancor. Now we are witnessing massive public demonstrations in every major city for higher wages, more jobs, larger government benefits, and more stringent price controls. Since there are practically no goods in the stores at *any* price, the demonstrators are also calling for higher output from government factories. The demonstrations have been organized by radical organizations advocating the overthrow of the "decadent capitalist" system and the enthronement of socialism in its place. The participants in the street do not understand the words they chant. They are unaware that capitalism has been dead in America for many years and that it is socialism they already have.

Nevertheless, there are tens of thousands of desperate people who are attracted to the rhetoric of revolution. Terrorism and revolutionary insurgency have become common occurrences in the major urban areas. The ranks of the revolutionaries are swelled by those who come solely for the looting that always follows.

People are frightened by these violent events and demand the restoration of law and order. They are relieved when martial law is declared. They are happy to see the International Guard patrolling their neighborhoods. They are not resentful of being confined in their homes or arbitrarily detained by soldiers. They are actually grateful for the omni-presence of the police state.

It is curious that the revolutionary groups behind this violence have not been inhibited by the government. To the contrary, they have been given grants from CFR organizations, and their leaders have been treated courteously by CFR politicians. The CFR media have given them extended coverage in the news and has presented their cause with sympathy. A few dissidents have begun to wonder if the revolutionaries are but the unknowing pawns of those in power and that their primary function is to frighten the population into accepting the constraints of a police state.

Such voices, however, are quickly silenced. Those who question the government or the media are branded as extremists at the lunatic fringe. Authorities say that they are the cause of our present woes. They are remnants of the old system based on profit-seeking and race-hating. They are guilty of politically-incorrect attitudes and hate crimes. They are sentenced to attitude-correction centers for psychological treatment and rehabilitation. Those who do not immediately recant are never seen again.

HOMES ARE NATIONALIZED

One of the first industries to feel the raw power of "emergency measures" was the home industry. During the early stages of inflation, people were applying their increasingly worthless dollars to pay down their mortgages. That was devastating to the lenders. They were being paid back in dollars that were worth only a fraction of the ones they had loaned out. The banking crisis had caused the disappearance of savings and investment capital, so they were unable to issue new loans to replace the old. Besides, people were afraid to sell their homes under such chaotic times and, if they did, very few were willing to buy with interest rates that high. Old loans were being paid off, and new loans were not replacing them. The S&Ls, which in the 1980s had been in trouble because home prices were falling, now were going broke because prices were rising.

Congress applied the expected political fix by bailing them out and taking them over. But that did not stop the losses. It merely transferred them to the taxpayers. To put an end to the losses, Congress passed the Housing Fairness and Reform Act (HFRA). It converted all Bancor-denominated contracts to a new unit of value—called the "Fairness Value"— which is determined by the National Average Price Index (NAPI) on Fridays of the preceding week. This has nothing to do with interest rates. It relates to Bancor values. For the purpose of illustration, let us convert Bancors back to dollars. A $50,000 loan on Friday became a $920,000 loan on Monday. Few people could afford the payments. Thousands of angry voters stormed the Capitol building in protest. While the mob shouted obscenities outside, Congress hastily voted to declare a moratorium on all mortgage payments. By the end of the day, no one had to pay anything! The people returned to their homes with satisfaction and gratitude for their wise and generous leaders.

That was only an "emergency" measure to be handled on a more sound basis later on. Many months have now passed, and

Congress has not dared to tamper with the arrangement. The voters would throw them out of office if they tried. Millions of people have been living in their homes at no cost, except for county taxes, which were also beyond the ability of anyone to pay. Following the lead of Congress, the counties also declared a moratorium on their taxes—but not until the federal government agreed to make up their losses under terms of the newly passed Aid to Local Governments Act (ALGA).

Renters are now in the same position, because virtually all rental property has been nationalized, even that which had been totally paid for by their owners. Under HFRA, it is not "fair" for those who are buying their homes to have an advantage over those who are renting. Rent controls made it impossible for apartment owners to keep pace with the rising costs of maintenance and especially their rising taxes. Virtually all rental units have been seized by county governments for back taxes. And since the counties themselves are now dependent on the federal government for most of their revenue, their real estate has been transferred to federal agencies in return for federal aid.

All of this was pleasing to the voters who were gratified that their leaders were "doing something" to solve their problems. It gradually became clear, however, that the federal government was now the owner of all their homes and apartments. The reality is that people are living in them only at the pleasure of the government. They can be relocated to other quarters if that is what the government wants.

WAGE-PRICE CONTROLS AND WORK ARMIES

Meanwhile, the UN Wage and Price Stabilization Agency (WPSA) has instituted wage and price controls to combat inflation. What few businesses were able to survive the ravages of inflation are knocked out by these measures. Vital industries have been seized by the WPSA and prevented from closing. When employees refuse to work for low, fixed wages or to take the jobs assigned to them, they are placed under arrest and convicted of anti-democratic activities. Given a choice between prison or "volunteering" for the UN Full Employment and Environmental Restoration Army (FEERA), most of them chose the army. They are now doing the work prescribed for them in return for food and shelter. Many have been reassigned to new jobs, new cities, even new countries, depending on the employment quotas established by the UN International Human Resource Allocation Agency (IHRAA). Their families have been given living quarters which are appropriate to their work status and their willingness to cooperate.

Automobiles are now used only by the ruling elite who hold government positions of authority. To the extent possible, workers have been relocated to barracks which were constructed within walking distance of major industries. Others use rapid-transit systems, which have been greatly expanded by FEERA. For middle management and the more skilled workers who are allowed to live in the suburbs, there are "Peoples' Van Pools" (PVPs) that shuttle them to and from assigned boarding areas.

Last week, Maurice Strong, who is now the Director of IHRAA, toured the fifteen regional subdivisions that have been carved out of the North-American continent—including the former United States and Canada—and expressed gratification that America, at last, has ceased to be an aggressor against the world.

Another twenty years have slipped by, and we now find ourselves in The New World Order. No one around us is sure exactly when it began. In fact, there was no official starting date, no announcement in the media, no ceremony with blaring of trumpets. Sometime during the past ten or fifteen years, it became obvious that it just *was,* and everyone accepted it as the natural evolution of political trends and necessities. Now, a whole generation is in place that has no memory of another way of life. Many of the older folks have all but forgotten the details of their previous existence. And, of course, many of them have been eliminated. Schools and textbooks speak of the bygone era as one of unbridled competition, selfishness, and injustice. Previously commonplace possessions such as automobiles and private homes and three pairs of shoes are hardly mentioned, and when they are, they are derided as wasteful artifacts of a decadent society that, fortunately, has ceased to exist.

NO TAXES OR INFLATION OR DEPRESSIONS

The public is no longer concerned over high taxes. For the most part, there are none. Everyone works for the government—directly or indirectly—and is paid by electronic transfer to a government-regulated bank which controls all spending accounts. Even those large corporations which have been allowed to maintain the appearance of private ownership are merely junior partners of government. They are totally regulated and, at the same time, totally protected from failure. The amount each citizen receives for his labor is determined by his technical usefulness and his political rank. His taxes are pleasantly low or non-existent. The cost of government now is derived almost totally from expansion of the money supply—and from the economic value of the work battalions.

Each regional government of the world determines its spending needs and then offers to sell bonds in the open market to raise the money. The IMF/World Bank, acting as the UN's central bank, is the primary buyer. The Bank determines how much money to allow each regional government and then "purchases" that amount of bonds. It accomplishes that by making an electronic transfer of "credits" to one of its correspondent banks within the region receiving the money. Once that has happened, the local government can draw upon those credits to pay its bills. Not a single tax dollar is needed for any of that. The IMF/World bank simply creates the money and the regional governments spend it.

In days gone by, this increase in the money supply would have caused prices and wages to go up almost immediately. Not anymore. Prices and wages are controlled. What does happen, however, is that the government is caught in its own trap. It needs to keep the workers happy by giving them wage increases, but it also needs to keep its factories functioning by allowing price increases as well. The wage-price spiral, therefore, is not eliminated. It is merely delayed a few months. And, instead of happening in response to the interplay of supply and demand in a free market, it is directed by bureaucratic formula. The end result is the same either way. The people of the world are still paying the cost of their international and local governments through the hidden taxation called inflation.

In the chaotic past, the industrialized nations of the world went through phases of disruptive inflation often exceeding 1000% per year. That served a purpose in helping to destroy public faith in their existing national governments. It softened them up and made them more willing to accept drastic changes in their life styles and their political institutions. It paved the way to The New World Order. But now we have arrived, and extreme inflation rates—at least in the absence of war—would cause public dissatisfaction and be counterproductive. Inflation, therefore, has now been institutionalized at a fairly constant 5% per year. That has been determined to be the optimum level for generating the most revenue without causing public alarm. Five per cent, everyone agrees, is "moderate." They can live with that. But we tend to forget that it is 5% per year, *forever*.

A 5% devaluation applies, not only to the money earned this year, but to all that is left over from previous years. At the end of the first year, the original dollar is worth 95 cents. At the end of the second year, it is reduced again by 5% leaving its worth at 90 cents, and so on. After 20 years, the government will have confiscated 64% of every dollar we saved at the beginning of our carreers. After working 45 years, the hidden tax on those dollars will be 90%. The government will take virtually all of them over our lifetime. Earned interest will partially offset this effect but it will not alter the underlying reality of government confiscation.

EFFECT OF "MODEST" **5%** INFLATION

For the past forty years, all the published charts illustrating the decline of the dollar from such-and-such a date to the "present" show the following type of curve.

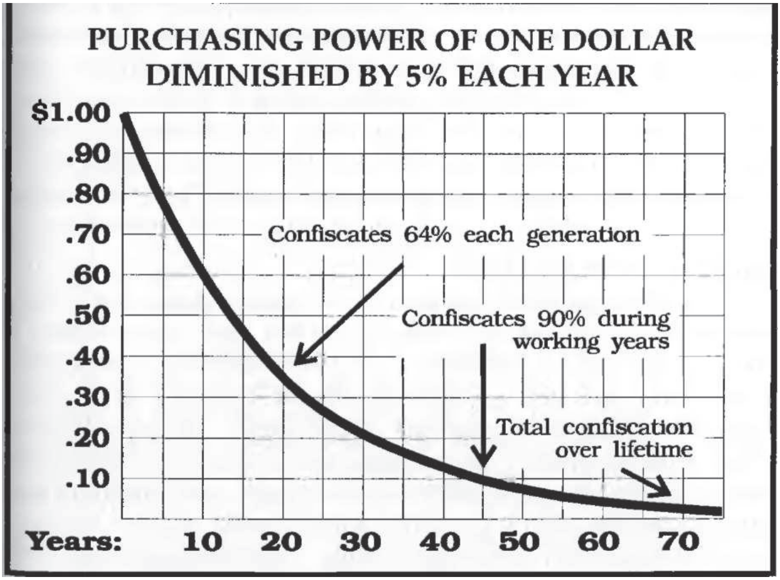

These, of course, are averages. A few people in the middle class of the bureaucracy will have managed to place some of their dollars into tangible assets or income-producing securities—what few that remain—where they are somewhat protected from the effects of inflation. For the vast majority, however, inflation hedges constitute but a tiny fraction of all they have earned over a lifetime.

And so we find that, in The New World Order, inflation has been institutionalized at a "modest" level of five per cent. Once in every five or six generations—as prices climb higher and higher—a new monetary unit can be issued to replace the old in order to eliminate some of the zeros. But no one will live long enough to experience more than one devaluation. Each generation is unconcerned about the loss of the previous one. Young people come into the process without realizing it is circular instead of linear. They cannot comprehend the total because they were not alive at the beginning and will not be alive at the end. In fact, there need not even be an end. The process can be continued forever.

By this mechanism—and with the output of work battalions—government can operate entirely without taxes. The lifetime output of every human being is at its disposal. Workers are allowed a color TV, state-subsidized alcohol and recreational drugs, and violent sports to amuse them, but they have no other options. They cannot escape their class. Society is divided into the rulers and the ruled, with an administrative bureaucracy in between. Privilege is now largely a right of birth. The worker class and even most of the administrators serve masters whom they do not know by name. But serve they do. Their new lords are the monetary and political scientists who created and who now control The New World Order. All of mankind is in a condition of high-tech feudalism.

HIGH-TECH FEUDALISM

Inflation is not the only aspect of economic chaos that is now under control. Booms and busts in the business cycle are also a thing of the past. Like direct taxes, there *are* no business cycles any more. Now that the government has firm control over every economic check point, business cycles simply are not allowed. There is no speculation in the market, because no one has funds with which to speculate. There are no expansions of inventories or capital goods in order to maximize future profits, because inventories now are determined by formula. Besides, profits are also determined by formula and, although they are just large enough to keep pace with inflation, they are guaranteed.

Chaos in the economy is now impossible because it is not tolerated. Neither is a depression. Yes, there are hundreds of millions of human beings living under conditions of extreme hardship, and thousands die of starvation every day, but depressions are outlawed. No politician, no author, no one in the media would dare to suggest that the system was a failure. Each month the government releases new statistics showing in some obscure way or another that the economy is steadily improving. Although people are starving everywhere, hunger does not exist anymore. Although work battalions are crammed into flimsy barracks and tents, and although older homes and apartment buildings are falling down for lack of maintenance, forcing more and more families to share their tiny, unheated dwellings—nevertheless, the housing shortage is officially being eliminated. There are no more problems in the economy, because they now are illegal.

VOICES FROM THE PAST

There is a message flashing on the front panel of our time machine. It reads: *Duplicate sequence in memory bank. Check years 1816, 1831,1904, and 1949*. That tells us that the on-board computer has found a similarity between what we are now viewing in the future and something that was recorded in the past. We had better check it out. On your keyboard, type: *Send data to printer* and press the key labelled *Execute*.

The first item is coming out of the printer now. It is a warning. In the year 1816, Thomas Jefferson wrote a letter to Sam Kercheval in which he said:

> We must make our election between *economy and liberty, or profusion and servitude.* If we run into such debts as that we must be taxed in our meat and in our drink, in our necessities and our comforts, in our labors and our amusements,... our people ... must come to labor sixteen hours in the twenty-four, give our earnings of fifteen of these to the government,... have no time to think, no means of calling our mis-managers to account; but be glad to obtain sustenance by hiring ourselves out to rivet their chains on the necks of our fellow-sufferers.... And this is the tendency of all human governments ... till the bulk of society is reduced to be mere automatons of misery.... And the forehorse of this frightful team is

> **public debt. Taxation follows that, and in its train wretchedness and oppression.**[1]

Here is the second printout. It is a political commentary and a prophesy. In the year 1831, a young Frenchman, named Alexis de Tocqueville, toured the United States to prepare an official report to his government on the American prison system. His real interest, however, was the social and political environment in the New World. He found much to admire in America but he also observed what he thought were the seeds of its destruction. Upon his return to France the following year, he began work on a four-volume analysis of the strengths and weaknesses he found. His perceptivity was remarkable, and his work, entitled *Democracy in America,* has remained as one of the world's classic works in political science. This is the part that our computer recognized:

> **The Americans hold that in every state the supreme power ought to emanate from the people; but when once that power is constituted, they can conceive, as it were, no limits to it, and they are ready to admit that it has the right to do whatever it pleases.... The idea of rights inherent in certain individuals is rapidly disappearing from the minds of men; the idea of the omnipotence and sole authority of society at large rises to fill its place....**
>
> **The first thing that strikes the observation is an innumerable multitude of men, all equal and alike, incessantly endeavoring to procure the petty and paltry pleasures with which they glut their lives. Each of them, living apart, is a stranger to the fate of all the rest; his children and his private friends constitute to him the whole of mankind....**
>
> **Above this race of men stands an immense and tutelary power, which takes upon itself alone to secure their gratifications and to watch over their fate. That power is absolute, minute, regular, provident, and mild. It would be like the authority of a parent if, like that authority, its object was to prepare men for manhood; but it seeks, on the contrary, to keep them in perpetual childhood: it is well content that the people should rejoice, provided they think of nothing but rejoicing....**
>
> **After having thus successively taken each member of the community in its powerful grasp and fashioned him at will, the supreme power then extends its arm over the whole community. It covers the surface of society with a network of small, complicated rules, minute and uniform, through which the most original minds**

---

[1] *Basic Writings* (New York: Willey Book Co., 1944), pp. 749-50.

> **and the most energetic characters cannot penetrate, to rise above the crowd. The will of man is not shattered, but softened, bent, and guided; men are seldom forced by it to act, but they are constantly restrained from acting. Such a power does not destroy, but it prevents existence; it does not tyrannize, but it compresses, enervates, extinguishes, and stupefies a people, till each nation is reduced to nothing better than a flock of timid and industrious animals, of which the government is the shepherd....**
>
> **Our contemporaries are constantly excited by two conflicting passions: they want to be led, and they wish to remain free. As they cannot destroy either the one or the other of these contrary propensities, they strive to satisfy them both at once. They devise a sole, tutelary, and all-powerful form of government, but elected by the people. They combine the principle of centralization and that of popular sovereignty; this gives them a respite: they console themselves for being in tutelage by the reflection that they have chosen their own guardians. Every man allows himself to be put in leading-strings, because he sees that it is not a person or a class of persons, but the people at large who hold the end of his chain. By this system the people shake off their state of dependence just long enough to select their master and then relapse into it again.**[1]

EDUCATION AS A TOOL FOR HUMAN ENGINEERING

The third printout is dated 1904 and is a report issued by the General Education Board, one of the first foundations established by John D. Rockefeller, Sr.. The purpose of the foundation was to use the power of money, not to *raise* the level of education in America, as was widely believed at the time, but to influence the *direction* of that education. Specifically, it was to promote the ideology of collectivism and internationalism. The object was to use the classroom to teach attitudes that encourage people to be passive and submissive to their rulers. The goal was—and is—to create citizens who are educated enough for productive work under supervision but not enough to question authority or seek to rise above their class. True education was to be restricted to the sons and daughters of the elite. For the rest, it would be better to produce skilled workers with no particular aspirations other than to enjoy life. It was enough, as de Tocqueville phrased it, "that the people should rejoice, provided they think of nothing but rejoicing.

• r_,,

---

1. **Alexis de Tocqueville, *Democracy in America,* Vol. II (New York: Alfred Knopf, 1945), pp. 290-91,318-19.**

In the first publication of the General Education Board, Fred Gates explained the plan:

> In our dreams we have limitless resources, and the people yield themselves with perfect docility to our molding hands. The present educational conventions fade from our minds, and unhampered by tradition, we work our own good upon a grateful and responsive rural folk. We shall not try to make these people or any of their children into philosophers of mental learning or of science. We have not to raise from among them authors, editors, poets, or men of letters. We shall not search for embryo great artists, painters, musicians, nor lawyers, doctors, preachers, politicians, statesmen of whom we have ample supply. The task we set before ourselves is very simple as well as a very beautiful one: To train these people as we find them to a perfectly ideal life just where they are.... in the homes, in the shop, and on the farm.[1]

BACK TO THE FUTURE

Here is the fourth computer printout from the past. It is a satire—and a warning. In the year 1949, George Orwell wrote his classic novel entitled *1984*. In it, he portrayed the same "futuristic" scenes that now lie before us as we sit in our time machine. His only error appears to have been the date that became the title of his book. If he were writing it today, it is likely he would call it *2054*.

Orwell described the world of our future as being divided into three regions called Oceania, Eurasia, and Eastasia. Oceania consists of the Americas plus England, Australia, and the Pacific Islands; Eurasia is Russia and continental Europe; Eastasia comprises China, Japan, Southeast Asia, & India. These superstates are constantly at war with each other. The wars are not fought to conquer the enemy, they are waged for the primary purpose of controlling the population. The people in all three territories tolerate their misery and oppression because sacrifices are necessary in time of war. Most of the stratagems outlined in *The Report from Iron Mountain* are to be found in Orwell's narrative, but Orwell described them first. The think-tank was even willing to credit Orwell as the source of some of its concepts. For example, on the subject of establishing a modern, sophisticated form of slavery, the group at Iron Mountain said:

---

[1] **"Occasional Paper No. 1," General Education Board, 1904.**

> Up to now, this has been suggested only in fiction, notably in the works of Wells, Huxley, Orwell, and others engaged in the imaginative anticipation of the sociology of the future. But the fantasies projected in *Brave New World* and *1984* have seemed less and less implausible over the years since their publication. The traditional association of slavery with ancient preindustrial cultures should not blind us to its adaptability to advanced forms of social organization.[1]

From this we see that Orwell's work is far more than an entertaining novel. It is relevant to our present journey in time. Our would-be masters have studied him carefully. So should we. This is what he wrote:

> These three superstates are permanently at war, and have been so for the past twenty-five years. War, however, is no longer the desperate, annihilating struggle that it was in the early decades of the twentieth century.... This is not to say that either the conduct of the war, or the prevailing attitude toward it, has become less bloodthirsty or more chivalrous. On the contrary, war hysteria is continuous and universal in all countries, and such acts as raping, looting, the slaughter of children, the reduction of whole populations to slavery, and reprisals against prisoners which extend even to boiling and burying alive, are looked upon as normal....
>
> The primary aim of modern warfare ... is to use up the products of the machine without raising the general standard of living. [The "machine" is society's technical and industrial capacity to produce goods.] ... From the moment when the machine first made its appearance it was clear to all thinking people that the need for human drudgery, and therefore to a great extent for human inequality, had disappeared. If the machine were used deliberately for that end, hunger, overwork, dirt, illiteracy, and disease could be eliminated within a few generations....
>
> But it was also clear that an all-around increase in wealth threatened the destruction—indeed in some cases was the destruction—of a hierarchical society. In a world in which everyone worked short hours, had enough to eat, lived in a house with a bathroom and a refrigerator, and possessed a motorcar or even an airplane, the most obvious and perhaps the most important form of inequality would already have disappeared. If it once became general, wealth would confer no distinction.... Such a society could not long remain stable. For if leisure and security were enjoyed by all alike, the great mass of human beings who are normally stupefied by poverty would become literate and would learn to think for themselves; and

---

[1] **Lewin, *Report,* p. 70.**

> **when once they had done this, they would sooner or later realize that the privileged minority had no function, and they would sweep it away. In the long run, a hierarchical society was only possible on a basis of poverty and ignorance....**
>
> **The essential act of war is destruction, not necessarily of human lives, but of the products of human labor. War is a way of shattering to pieces, or pouring into the stratosphere, or sinking into the depths of the sea, materials which might otherwise be used to make the masses too comfortable, and hence, in the long run, too intelligent....**
>
> **In practice the needs of the population are always underestimated, with the result that there is a chronic shortage of half the necessities of life; but this is looked on as an advantage. It is deliberate policy to keep even the favored groups somewhere near the brink of hardship, because a general state of scarcity increases the importance of small privileges and thus magnifies the distinction between one group and another.... The social atmosphere is that of a besieged city, where the possession of a lump of horseflesh makes the difference between wealth and poverty. And at the same time the consequences of being at war, and therefore in danger, makes the handing over of all power to a small caste seem the natural, unavoidable condition of survival....**
>
> **War, it will be seen, not only accomplishes the necessary destruction, but accomplishes it in a psychologically acceptable way. In principle it would be quite simple to waste the surplus labor of the world by building temples and pyramids, by digging holes and filling them up again, or even by producing vast quantities of goods and then setting fire to them. But this would provide only the economic and not the emotional basis for a hierarchical society....**
>
> **War, it will be seen, is now a purely internal affair.... waged by each ruling group against its own subjects, and the object of the war is not to make or prevent conquests of territory, but to keep the structure of society intact.**[1]

THE FUNCTION OF WASTE IN MODERN TOTALITARIANISM

Once again, it is clear that Orwell's grim narrative was a primary model for *The Report from Iron Mountain*. The authors of that blueprint for *our* future spoke at length about the value of planned waste as a means of preventing the masses from improving their standard of living. They wrote:

> **The production of weapons of mass destruction has always been associated with economic "waste." The term is pejorative, since it**

---

[1] George Orwell, *1984* (New York: New American Library/Signet, 1949), pp. 153-164.

> implies a failure of function. But no human activity can properly be considered wasteful if it achieves its contextual objective....
>
> In the case of military "waste," there is indeed a larger social utility.... In advanced modern democratic societies, the war system ... has served as the last great safeguard against the elimination of necessary social classes. As economic productivity increases to a level further and further above that of minimum subsistence, it becomes more and more difficult for a society to maintain distribution patterns insuring the existence of "hewers of wood and drawers of water."...
>
> The arbitrary nature of war expenditures and of other military activities make them ideally suited to control these essential class relationships.... The continuance of the war system must be assured, if for no other reason, among others, than to preserve whatever quality and degree of poverty a society requires as an incentive, as well as to maintain the stability of its internal organization of power.

These documents from the real past and the imagined future can help us to better understand our present. The spectacle of wasteful government spending suddenly becomes logical. It is not stupidity that pays farmers to destroy their crops, or that purchases trillion-dollar weapons systems that are never deployed or in some cases not even completed, or that provides funding for studies of the sex life of the tse-tse fly, or that gives grants to pornographers posing as artists. The overriding object behind most of these boondoggles is to waste the resources of the nation. It is obvious by now that the decline in living standards in the Western world is associated with a widening gap between the haves and the have-nots. What is not so obvious, however, is that this is according to plan. To that end, massive waste in government spending is not an unfortunate by-product, it is the *goal*.

That brings us back to the question of finding an acceptable substitute for war. War is not only the ultimate waste, it is also the ultimate motivation for human action. As Orwell said, waste in the absence of war "would provide only the economic and not the emotional basis for a hierarchical society." Will the environmental-pollution model be able to sufficiently motivate human action to be a substitute for war?

That is not a safe assumption. The possibility of war in our future cannot be ruled out. The environmental-pollution model is not yet thoroughly proven. It is working well for limited purposes

---

1. Lewin, Report, pp. 34-35, 40-41.

and on a limited scale, but it is still doubtful that it will ever equal the hysteria potential of a physical war. The world planners will not abandon the use of war until the new model has been proven over many years. On that point, the *Report from Iron Mountain* was emphatic:

> **When asked how best to prepare for the advent of peace, we must first reply, as strongly as we can, that the war system cannot responsibly be allowed to disappear until 1) we know exactly what it is we plan to put in its place, and 2) we are certain, beyond reasonable doubt, that these substitute institutions will serve their purposes in terms of the survival and stability of society.... It is uncertain, at this time, whether peace will ever be possible. It is far more questionable ... that it would be desirable even if it were demonstrably attainable.**[1]

REGIONALISM AS A TRANSITION TO WORLD GOVERNMENT

The coalescing of the world's nations into three regional superstates was already visible even before we activated our time machine. The first steps had been strictly economic but were soon followed by political and military consolidation. The European Union (EU), including Russia, began with the issuance of a common money and eventually merged into a functional regional government. It was Orwell's Eurasia, even though it avoided calling itself by that name. Treaties binding Canada, the United States, Mexico, and South America formed the basic outline of Oceania, built around the Federal-Reserve Note as the regional money. Japan eventually became hostile to the West when trading was no longer to her sole advantage and, along with China which had been built up by Western aid and technology, and with India which had been given atomic technology by the West, became the political center of Eastasia. Even as far back as the 1980s, it was known as the "Greater East Asia Co-Prosperity Sphere." Its monetary system was to be based upon the Yen.

The people of the former nations were not yet ready for a giant leap into world government. They had to be led to that goal by a series of shorter and less frightening steps. They were more willing to surrender their economic and military independence to regional groupings of people who were closer in ethnic and cultural origin and who shared common borders. Only after several decades of transition was it possible to make the final merger. In the meantime, the world was plunged alternately between war and peace. After each cycle of war, the population was more frightened, impoverished, and collectivised. In the end, world government was irresistible. By that time, the environmental-pollution model and the alien-invasion model had been perfected to provide high levels of human motivation. But, even then, regional uprisings were occasionally engineered when necessary to justify massive "peacekeeping" operations. War was never fully abandoned. It remained, as it always had been, a necessity for the stabilization of society.

---

[1] **1.** ***Ibid.,*** **pp. 88-90.**

HOW FIXED IS THE FUTURE?

Let us return now to the present from which we departed and reflect upon our journey. The first thing that strikes us is that we cannot be certain the future will unfold exactly as we have seen it. There are too many variables. When we originally set our *Primary-Assumption* selector to *Present trends unaltered,* we left the *Secondary-Assumption* selector where it was. It was pointing to *Banking Crisis*. Had we chosen the next position, *No Banking Crisis,* our journey would have been different. We would not have seen long lines of depositors or panic-buying in the stores or closing of the stock market. But we would still have witnessed the same scenes of despair in the more distant future. We merely would have travelled a different path of events to get there.

The forces driving our society into global totalitarianism would not change one iota. We still would have the doomsday mechanisms at work. We would have the CFR in control of the power centers of government and the media. And we would have an electorate which is unaware of what is being done to them and, therefore, unable to resist. Through environmental and economic treaties and through military disarmament to the UN, we would witness the same emergence of a world central bank, a world government, and a world army to enforce its dictates. Inflation and wage/price controls would have progressed more or less the same, driving consumer goods out of existence and men into bondage. Instead of moving toward The New World Order in a series of economic spasms, we merely would have travelled a less violent path and arrived at exactly the same destination.

There is little doubt that the master planners would prefer to follow the more tranquil route. Patient gradualism is less risky. But not everything is within their control. Events can get out of hand, and powerful economic forces can become suddenly unleashed. Banking crises *can* occur even without being deliberately caused.

On the other hand, the Cabal also knows that crises are useful in driving the masses into the corral faster than they would otherwise move. Therefore, the application of *some* kind of scientifically engineered crisis cannot be ruled out. It could take many forms: Ethnic violence, terrorism, plague, even war itself. But none of that makes any difference. It will not alter our direction of travel through time. It will only determine our specific route. Like a flowing river, it may be diverted this way or that by natural barriers or even by man-made channels, dikes, and dams, but it eventually will reach the sea. Our concluding reflection, therefore, is that it is relatively unimportant whether there will be a banking crisis or any other cataclysmic event. These are all secondary assumptions which are meaningless. Our only real hope for averting the new feudalism of the future is to change the *Primary* assumption. We must change it to read: *Present Trends Reversed*.

SUMMARY

A pessimistic scenario of future events includes a banking crisis, followed by a government bailout and the eventual nationalization of all banks. The final cost is staggering and is paid with money created by the Federal Reserve. It is passed on to the public in the form of inflation.

Further inflation is caused by the continual expansion of welfare programs, socialized medicine, entitlement programs, and interest on the national debt. The dollar is finally abandoned as the defacto currency of the world. Trillions of dollars are sent back to the United States by foreign investors to be converted as quickly as possible into tangible assets. That causes even greater inflation than before. So massive is the inflationary pressure that industry and commerce come to a halt. Barter becomes the means of exchange. America takes her place among the depressed nations of South America, Africa, and Asia—mired together in economic equality.

Politicians seize upon the opportunity and offer bold reforms. The reforms are more of exactly what created the problem in the first place: expanded governmental power, new regulatory agencies, and more restrictions on freedom. But this time, the programs begin to take on an international flavor. The American dollar is replaced by a new UN money, and the Federal Reserve System becomes a branch operation of the IMF/World Bank.

Electronic transfers gradually replace cash and checking accounts. This permits UN agencies to monitor the financial activities of every person. A machine-readable ID card is used for that purpose. If an individual is red flagged by any government agency, the card does not clear, and he is cut off from all economic transactions and travel. It is the ultimate control.

Increasing violence in the streets from revolutionary movements and ethnic clashes provide an excuse for martial law. The public is happy to see UN soldiers checking ID cards. The police-state arrives in the name of public safety.

Eventually all private dwellings are taken over by the government as a result of bailing out the home-mortgage industry. Rental property is also taken, as former landlords are unable to pay property taxes. People are allowed to live in these dwellings at reasonable cost, or no cost at all. It gradually becomes clear, however, that the government is now the owner of all homes and apartments. People are living in them only at the pleasure of the government. They can be reassigned at any time.

Wages and prices are controlled. Dissidents are placed into work armies. There are no more autos except for the ruling elite. Public transportation is provided for the masses, and those with limited skills live in government housing within walking distance of their assigned jobs. Men have been reduced to the level of serfs who are subservient to their masters. Their condition of life can only be described as high-tech feudalism.

There is no certainty that the future will unfold in exactly that manner, because there are too many variables. For example, if we had assumed that there will *not* be a banking crisis, then our journey would be different. We would not see long lines of depositors or panic-buying in the stores or closing of the stock market. But we would still witness the same scenes of despair in the more distant future. We merely would have travelled a different path of events to get there. That is because the forces driving our society into global totalitarianism would not have changed one iota. We still would have the doomsday mechanisms at work. We would have the CFR in control of the power centers of government and the media. We would have an electorate which is unaware of what is being done to them and, therefore, unable to resist. Through environmental and economic treaties and through military disarmament to the UN, we would witness the same emergence of a world central bank, a world government, and a world army to enforce its dictates. Inflation and wage/price controls would have progressed more or less the same, driving consumer goods out of existence and men into bondage. Instead of moving toward The New World Order in a series of economic spasms, we merely would have travelled a less violent path and arrived at exactly the same destination.

Chapter Twenty-Six

A REALISTIC SCENARIO

What must be done if we are to avert the pessimistic scenario; a list of specific measures thatmust be taken to stop the monetary binge; an appraisal of how severe the economic hangover will be; a checklist for personal survival—and beyond.

The pessimistic scenario presented in the previous chapter is the kind of narrative that turns people off. No one wants to hear those things, even if they are true—or we should say *especially* if they are true. As Adlai Stevenson said when he was a candidate for President: "The contest between agreeable fancy and disagreeable fact is unequal. Americans are suckers for good news."

So, where is the *optimistic* scenario in which everything turns out all right, in which prosperity is restored and freedom is preserved after all? Actually, it is not hard to locate. You can find it every day somewhere in your newspaper. It is the shared faith of almost all politicians, experts, and commentators. If that is what you want to hear, you have just wasted a lot of time reading this book.

There is no optimistic scenario. Events have progressed too far for that. Even if we begin to turn things around by forcing Congress to cut spending, reduce the debt, and disentangle from UN treaties, the Cabal will not let go without a ferocious fight. When the Second Bank of the United States was struggling for its life in 1834, Nicholas Biddle, who controlled it, set about to cause as much havoc in the economy as possible and then to blame it on President Jackson's anti-bank policies. By suddenly tightening credit and withdrawing money from circulation, he triggered a full-scale national depression. At the height of his attack, he declared: "All other banks and all the merchants may break, but the

Bank of the United States shall not break." The amount of devastation that could be caused by today's Federal Reserve is infinitely greater than what Biddle was able to unleash. It would be pure self-deception to think that the Cabal would quietly give up its power without exercising that option. We must conclude that no one is going to get out of this one unscathed. There is hell to pay, and it is we who are going to pay it.

SEVENTH REASON TO ABOLISH THE FED

What has any of this to do with the Federal Reserve System? The answer is that the Federal Reserve is the *starting point* of the pessimistic scenario. The chain of events begins with fiat money created by a central bank, which leads to government debt, which causes inflation, which destroys the economy, which impoverishes the people, which provides an excuse for increasing government power, which is an on-going process culminating in totalitarianism. Eliminate the Federal Reserve from this equation, and the pessimistic scenario ceases to exist. *That* is the seventh and final reason to abolish the Fed: *It is an instrument of totalitarianism.*

If the optimistic scenario is too optimistic and the pessimistic scenario is too pessimistic, then what is the scenario that we should hope lies in our future?

There is a middle course that lies between optimism and pessimism. It is called realism. Calling it a *realistic* scenario is not meant to imply that it is predetermined to happen, nor that it is even likely to happen. It is realistic only in the sense that it *can* happen if certain conditions are met. The balance of this chapter will be devoted to an analysis of those conditions.

Let us begin by allowing our opponent, Cynicism, to state the problem we face: "Is it realistic to believe that the current trends can actually be reversed? Isn't it just fantasy to think that anything can be done at this late date to break the CFR's hold over government, media, and education? Do we really expect the gum-chewing public to go upstream against the indoctrination of newspapers, magazines, television, and movies?"

Apathy joins in: "Forget it. There's nothing you can do. The bankers and politicians have all the money and all the power. The

---

1. See chapter seventeen.

game is already over. Make the most of it, and enjoy life while you can."

Do not listen to Cynicism and Apathy. They are agents of your enemy. They want you to quietly get in line and submit without a struggle. However, they do make a point that must not be overlooked. The battle has progressed far, and our position is not good. If we are to reverse the present trends, we must be prepared to make a herculean effort. That does not mean "Write your Congressman" or "Vote on Tuesday" or "Sign a petition" or "Send in a donation." That is far too easy. Those measures still play an important role in the battle plan but they fall far short of the need. Armchair campaigns will no longer do it.

Before turning to the question of what kind of effort *will* be required, let us first be clear on *what* it is we want to accomplish.

WHAT MUST NOT BE DONE

Let us begin with the negatives: what must *not* be done. The most obvious item in this category is that we must not turn to government for more of the same "cures" that have made us ill. We do not want more power granted to the Fed or the Treasury or the President, nor do we need another government agency. We probably don't even need any new laws, with the possible exception of those legislative acts which repeal some of the old laws now on the books. Our goal is the reduction of government, not its expansion.

We do *not* want to merely abolish the Fed and turn over its operation to the Treasury. That is a popular proposal among those who know there is a problem but who have not studied the history of central banking. It is a recurrent theme of the Populist movement and those advocating what they call Social Credit. Their argument is that the Federal Reserve is privately owned and is independent of political control. Only Congress is authorized to issue the nation's money, not a group of private bankers. Let the Treasury issue paper money and bank credit, they say, and we can have all the money we need without having to pay one penny in interest to the bankers.

It is an appealing argument, but it contains serious flaws. First, the concept that the Fed is privately owned is a legal fiction. The member banks hold stock, but it carries no voting weight. No matter how large the bank or how much capital is paid in, each bank has one vote. The stock cannot be sold or traded. Stockholders have none of the usual elements of control that come with ownership and, in fact, they are subservient to the central board. The seven members of the Board of Governors are appointed by the President and confirmed by the Senate. It is true that the Fed is independent of *direct* political control, but it must never be forgotten that it was created by Congress and it can be extinguished by Congress. In truth, the Federal Reserve is neither an arm of government nor is it private. It is a hybrid. It is an association of the large commercial banks which has been granted special privileges by Congress. A more accurate description would be simply that it is a *cartel* protected by federal law.

But the more important point is that it makes no difference whether the Fed is government or private. Even if it were entirely private, merely turning it over to the government would not alter its function. The same people undoubtedly would run it, and they would continue to create money for political purposes. The Bank of England is the granddaddy of central banks. It was privately owned at its inception but became an official arm of the British government in more recent times. It continues to operate as a central bank, and nothing of substance has changed. The central banks of all the other industrialized nations are direct arms of their respective governments. They are indistinguishable in function from the Federal Reserve. The technicalities of structure and ownership are not as important as function. Turning the Federal Reserve over to the Treasury without at the same time denuding it of its function as a central bank—that is, its ability to manipulate the money supply—would be a colossal waste of time.

The proposal of having the Treasury issue the nation's money is another question and has nothing to do with who owns the Fed. There is nothing wrong with the federal government issuing money so long as it abides by the Constitution and adheres to the principle of honesty. Both of these restraints forbid Congress from issuing paper money that is not 100% backed by gold or silver. If you are in doubt about the reasoning behind that statement, it would be a good idea to review chapter fifteen before continuing.

It is true that, if Congress had the power to create as much money as it needs *without* the Federal Reserve System, interest would not have to be paid on the national debt. But the Fed holds only a small percentage of the debt. Over 90% of those bonds are held by individuals and institutions in the private sector. Terminating interest payments would not hurt those big, bad bankers nearly as much as it would the millions of people who would lose their insurance policies, investments, and retirement plans. The Social Credit scheme would wipe out the economy in one fell swoop.

And we still would not have solved the deeper problem. The bankers would be cut out of the scam, but the politicians would remain. Congress would now be acting as its own central bank, the money supply would continue to expand, inflation would continue to roar, and the nation would continue to die. Besides, issuing money without gold or silver backing violates the Constitution.

THE JFK RUMOR

In 1981, a rumor was circulated that President Kennedy had been assassinated by agents of the hidden money power because he had signed Executive Order #11110 instructing the Treasury to print more than $4 billion in United States Notes. That is precisely the kind of money we are discussing: paper bills without gold or silver backing issued by the government, not the Federal Reserve. According to the rumor, the bankers were furious because they would lose interest payments on the money supply. When the Order was tracked down, however, it involved *Silver Certificates,* not United States Notes. Silver Certificates are backed by silver, which means they are real money, so the rumor was wrong on that point. But there is no interest paid on Silver Certificates either, so the rumor held up on that point. There was a third point, however, which everyone seemed to overlook. The Executive Order did not instruct the Treasury to issue Silver Certificates. It merely *authorized* it to do so. There is no evidence that this was ever done. If the Certificates were printed at all, they never found their way into circulation. In 1987, the order was rescinded by President Reagan.

The Treasury did print a small supply of United States Notes in 1963, but these were authorized by an 1878 act of Congress to replace Civil War Greenbacks which had been retired from circulation. JFK did not initiate that issue. The greatest quantity of those Notes to be in circulation since their last printing in 1969 was $322 million—not a significant figure compared to Federal Reserve Notes. Most of them are now collectors' items.[1]

---

[1] See *Currency in U.S. History,* (Kansas City: Federal Reserve Bank, n.d.), pp. 10,11.

The persistent rumor regarding the bankers' role in JFK's death was reinforced by several books circulated in conservative circles. They contained an ominous passage from Kennedy's speech at Columbia University, just ten days before his assassination. He is quoted as saying: "The high office of President has been used to foment a plot to destroy the Americans' freedom, and before I leave office I must inform the citizen of his plight." However, when Columbia University was contacted to provide a transcript of the speech, it was learned that Kennedy never spoke there—neither ten days before his assassination *nor at any other time*\ Ronald Whealan, head librarian at the John Fitzgerald Kennedy Library in Boston, provides this additional information: "Ten days prior to the assassination he was at the White House meeting with, among others, the ambassador to the United States from Portugal."

It is possible that the President did make the remarks attributed to him on a different date before a different audience. Even so, it is a cryptic message which could have several meanings. That he intended to expose the Fed is the *least* likely of them all. Kennedy had been a life-long socialist and internationalist. He had attended the Fabian London School of Economics; participated in the destruction of the American money supply; and engineered the transfer of American wealth to foreign nations. There is little reason to believe that he had suddenly "seen the light" and was preparing to reverse his life-long beliefs and commitments.

MONETARISTS VS SUPPLY-SIDERS

But we are off the topic. Let us return to those unworkable theories regarding monetary reform. Prominent in this category are the Monetarists and the Supply-Siders. The Monetarists, adhering to the theories of Milton Friedman, believe that money should continue to be be created by the Mandrake Mechanism of the Federal Reserve, but that the supply should be determined by a strict formula established by Congress, not the Fed. The Supply-siders, represented by Arthur Laffer and Charles Kadlec, believe in formulas also, but they have a different one. They want the

---

1. Quoted by M.J. "Red" Beckman, *Born Again Republic* (Billings, Montana: Freedom Church, 1981), p. 23; also by Lindsey Williams, *To Seduce A Nation* (Kasilof, Arkansas: Worth Publishing, 1984), p. 26.
2. Letter to Hollee Haswell, Curator at the Low Memorial Library, Columbia University, October 13,1987.

quantity of money to be determined by the current demand for gold. They are not talking about a true gold standard in which paper money is fully backed. By following what they call a "gold-price rule," they would simply observe the price of gold in the free market and then tinker with the dollar by expanding or contracting the money supply to keep its relative value, compared to gold, fairly constant.

These groups are alike in their underlying philosophy. Each has a different goal and a different formula, but they agree on method: manipulation of the money supply. They share the same conviction that the free market will not work without assistance; the same faith in the wisdom and integrity of politically-created formulas, bureaus, and agencies. The Fed remains unscathed throughout all these debates because it is the ultimate mechanism for intervention. These people don't really want to change it. They just want their turn at running it.

Occasionally a truly original proposal appears that captures one's attention. Addressing a prestigious gathering of conservative monetary theorists in 1989, Jerry Jordan suggested that the monetary base could be expanded by holding a national lottery. The government would pay out more dollars in prize money than it received in ticket sales. The excess would represent the amount by which the monetary base would expand. Presumably, if they wanted to contract the money supply, they would pay out fewer dollars than taken in. It was an intriguing thought, but Mr. Jordan was quick to add: "The problem, of course, is that there would not be any effective institutional restraint on the growth of the monetary base." Indeed, that is the problem with *all* schemes involving monetary control by men.

BALANCED-BUDGET AMENDMENT

A so-called balanced-budget amendment to the Constitution is not the answer either. In fact, it is an illusion and a fraud. Some of the biggest spenders in Congress are supporters. They know that it is popular with the voters but would not cramp their spending style in the least. If they were not permitted to spend more than they receive in taxes, they would have a perfect excuse for raising taxes. It would be a way of punishing the voters for placing limits

---

1. "The Future of Price Stability in A Fiat Money World," by Jerry L. Jordan, ***Dwell Journal of Money and Banking,*** **August, 1989, p. 24.**

on them. The voters, on the other hand, would collapse under the burden of higher taxes and demand that their Congressmen circumvent the very amendment they previously supported. And that would be easy. Most versions of the balanced-budget amendment have an escape hatch built for just that purpose. Congress shall balance its budget "*except in cases of emergency.*" Who decides what constitutes an emergency? Congress, of course. In other words, Congress shall balance its budget except when it doesn't want to. So what else is new?

A serious amendment would have to tackle, not balancing the budget, but *limiting the spending. It* that were done, the budget would take care of itself. But even that would be a waste of time considering the present composition of Congress. Instead of generating political pressure for a Constitutional amendment, we would be better off directing that same effort toward throwing the big spenders out of office. As long as the spenders are allowed to stay in there, they will find a way to get around any law—including the Constitution itself.

Another flaw in most versions of the balanced-budget amendment is that it would not affect the off-budget expenditures called entitlements. They now represent 52% of all federal outlays and are growing by 12% each year. A strategy that ignores that back-breaking load is not worth even considering. Furthermore, even if Congress could be forced to stop deficit spending, the balanced-budget amendment would not solve the problem of inflation or paying off the national debt. The Federal Reserve can now inflate our money supply by using literally any debt in the world. It does not have to come from Congress. Unless we zero in on the Fed itself, we will just be playing political games with no chance of winning.

Every year, a few concerned Congressmen submit a bill to investigate or audit the Federal Reserve System. They are to be commended for their effort, but the process has been an exercise in futility. Their bills receive little or no publicity and never get out of committee for a vote. Even if they did receive serious attention, however, they could actually be counterproductive.

On the surface, it would appear that there is nothing wrong with a Congressional investigation or an audit, but what is there to investigate? We must assume the Fed is doing exactly what it says and is in total compliance with the law. A few minor improprieties probably would be discovered involving personal abuse of funds or insider profiteering, but that would be minor compared to the gigantic fraud that already is out in the open for all to see. The Federal Reserve is the world's largest and most successful scam. Anyone who understands the nature of money can see that without a team of investigators and auditors.

The danger in a proposal to audit the Fed is that it would provide an excuse to delay serious action for several years while the audit is going on. It would give the public a false impression that Congress is *doing something*. It also would give the monetary technicians an opportunity to lay down a smoke screen of verbiage and confusing statistics. The public would expect that all the answers will be forthcoming from the investigation, but the very groups and combines that need to be investigated would be conducting, or at least confounding, the investigation. By the time fourteen volumes of testimony, charts, tables, and exhibits finally appear, the public would be intimidated and fatigued. The bottom line is that we do not need a bill to audit the Fed. We need one to *mbolish* it.

A PLAN FOR ELIMINATING THE FED

So much for things *not* to do. Now let's get down to the business at hand. To abolish the Federal Reserve System would be quite simple. All that would be required is an act of Congress consisting of one sentence: *The Federal Reserve Act and all of its amendments are hereby rescinded*. But that would wipe out our monetary system overnight and create such havoc in the economy that it would play right into the hands of the globalists. They would use the resulting chaos as evidence that such a move was a mistake, and the American people would likely welcome a rescue from the IMF/World Bank. We would find ourselves back in the Pessimistic Scenario even though we had done the right thing.

There are certain steps that must precede the abandonment of the Fed if we are to have a safe passage. The first step is to convert our present fiat money into real money. That means we must create an entirely new money supply which is 100% backed by precious metal—and we must do so within a reasonably short period of time. To that end, we also must establish the true value of our present fiat money so it can be exchanged for new money on a realistic basis and phased out of circulation. Here is how it can be done:

1. **Repeal the legal-tender laws.** The federal government will continue accepting Federal Reserve Notes in the payment of taxes, but everyone else will be free to accept them, reject them, or discount them as they wish. There is no need to force people to accept honest money. Only fiat money needs the threat of imprisonment to back it up. Private institutions should be free to innovate and to compete. If people want to use Green Stamps or Disney-ride coupons or Bank-of-America Notes as a medium of exchange, they should be free to do so. The only requirement should be faithful fulfillment of contract. If the Green-Stamp company says it will give a crystal lamp for seven books of stamps, then it should be compelled to do so. Disney should be required to accept the coupon in exactly the manner printed on the back. And, if Bank of America tells its depositors they can have their dollars back *any time they want,* it should be required to keep 100% backing (coins or Treasury Certificates) in its vault at all times. In the transition to a new money, it is anticipated that the old Federal Reserve Notes will continue to be widely used.
2. **Freeze the present supply of Federal Reserve Notes,** except for what will be needed in step number eleven.
3. **Define the "real" dollar in terms of precious-metal content,** preferably what **it** was in the past: 371.25 grains of silver. It could be another weight of silver or even another metal, but the old silver dollar is a proven winner.
4. **Establish gold as an auxiliary monetary reserve** which can be substituted for silver, not at a fixed-price ratio, but at whatever ratio is set by the free market. Fixed ratios always become unfair over time as the prices of gold and silver drift relative to each other. Although gold may be substituted for silver at this ratio, it is only silver that is the foundation for the dollar.
5. **Restore free coinage at the** U.S. **Mint** and issue silver "dollars" as well as gold "pieces." Both dollars and pieces will be defined by metal content, but only coins with silver content can be called dollars, half-dollars, quarter-dollars, or tenth-dollars (dimes). At first, these coins will be derived only from metal brought into

the Mint by private parties. They must not be drawn from the Treasury's supply which is reserved for use in step number six.

6. **Pay off the national debt with Federal Reserve Notes** created for that purpose. Creating money without backing is forbidden by the Constitution; however, when no one is forced by law to accept Federal Reserve Notes as legal tender, they will no longer be the official money of the United States. They will be merely a kind of government script which no one is required to accept. Their utility will be determined by their usefulness in payment of taxes and by the public's anticipation of having them exchanged for real money at a later date. The creation of Federal Reserve Notes, with the understanding that they are not the official money of the United States, would therefore not be a violation of the Constitution. In any event, the deed is already done. The decision to redeem government bonds with Federal Reserve Notes is not ours. Congress decided that long ago, and the course was set at the instant those bonds were issued. We are merely playing out the hand. The money *will* be created for that purpose. Our only choice is *when:* now or later. If we allow the bonds to stand, the national debt will be repudiated by inflation. The value of the original dollars will gradually be reduced to zero while only the interest remains. Everyone's purchasing power will be destroyed, and the nation will die. But if we want *not* to repudiate the national debt and decide to pay it off *now,* we will be released from the burden of interest payments and, at the same time, prepare the way for a sound monetary system.
7. **Pledge the government's hoard of gold and silver** (except the military stockpile) to be used as backing for all the Federal Reserve Notes in circulation. The denationalization of these assets is long overdue. At various times in recent history, it was illegal for Americans to own gold, and their private holdings were confiscated. The amount which was taken should be returned to the private sector as a matter of principle. The rest of the gold supply also belongs to the people, because they paid for it through taxes and inflation. The government has no use for gold or silver except to support the money supply. The time has come to give it back to the people and use it for that purpose.
8. **Determine the weight of all the gold and silver** owned by the U.S. government and then calculate the total value of that supply in terms of real (silver) dollars.

9. **Determine the number of all the Federal Reserve Notes** in circulation and then calculate the real-dollar value of each one by dividing the value of the precious metals by the number of Notes.
10. **Retire all Federal Reserve Notes from circulation** by offering to exchange them for dollars at the calculated ratio. There will be enough gold or silver to redeem every Federal Reserve Note in circulation.[1]
11. **Convert all contracts based on Federal Reserve Notes to dollars** using the same exchange ratio. That includes the contracts called mortgages and government bonds. In that way, monetary values expressed within debt obligations will be converted on the same basis and at the same time as currency.
12. **Issue Silver Certificates.** As the Treasury redeems Federal Reserve Notes for dollars, recipients will have the option of taking coins or Treasury Certificates which are 100% backed. These Certificates will become the new paper currency.
13. **Abolish the Federal Reserve System.** It would be possible to allow the System to continue as a check clearing-house so long as it did not function as a central bank. A check clearing-house will be needed, and the banks that presently own the Fed should be allowed to continue performing that service. However, they must no longer receive tax subsidies to operate, and competition must be allowed. However, the Federal Reserve System, as presently chartered by Congress, must be abolished.
14. **Introduce free banking.** Banks should be deregulated and, at the same time, cut loose from protection at taxpayers' expense. No more bailouts. The FDIC and other government "insurance" agencies should be phased out, and their functions turned over to real insurance companies in the private sector. Banks should be required to keep 100% reserves for demand deposits, because that is a contractual obligation. All forms of time deposits should be presented to the public exactly as CDs are today. In other words, the depositor should be fully informed that his

---

1. Since the value of FRNs would be firmly established in terms of real dollars, there would be no compelling reason to exchange them, and it is possible that people would continue to use them in daily commerce. Therefore, to retire the FRNs and make the transition as quickly as possible, it would be necessary to have the banks automatically exchange them for real dollars whenever they are deposited. In short order, they would become collectors' items and historical curiosities.

money is invested and he will have to wait a specified time before he can have it back. Competition will insure that those institutions that best serve their customers' needs will prosper. Those that do not will fall by the wayside—without the need of an army of bank regulators.

15. **Reduce the size and scope of government.** No solution to our economic problems is possible under socialism. It is the author's view that the government should be limited to the protection of life, liberty, and property—nothing more. That means the elimination of almost all of the socialist-oriented programs that now infest the federal bureaucracy. If we hope to retain—or perhaps to regain—our freedom, they simply have to go. To that end, the federal government should sell all assets not directly related to its primary function of protection; it should privately sub-contract as many of its services as possible; and it should greatly reduce and simplify its taxes.
16. **Restore national independence.** A similar restraint must be applied at the international level. We must reverse all programs leading to disarmament and economic interdependence. The most significant step in that direction will be to *Get us out of the UN and the UN out of the US,* but that will be just the beginning. There are hundreds of treaties and administrative agreements that must be rescinded. There may be a few that are constructive and mutually beneficial to us and other nations, but the great majority of them will have to go. That is not because we are isolationist. It is simply because we want to avoid being engulfed in global tyranny.

Some will say that paying off the national debt with Federal Reserve Notes amounts to a repudiation of the debt. Not so. Accepting the old Notes for payment of taxes is not repudiation. Exchanging them for their appropriate share of the nation's gold or silver is not repudiation. Converting them straight across to a sound money with little or no loss of purchasing power is not repudiation. The only thing that would be repudiated is the old monetary system, but that was *designed* to be repudiated. The monetary and political scientists who created and sustained the Federal Reserve System never intended to repay the national debt. It has been their ticket to profit and power. Inflation is repudiation on the installment plan. The present system is a political trick, an accounting gimmick. We are merely acknowledging what it is. We are simply refusing to pretend we don't understand what they are doing to us. We are refusing to play the game any longer.

MEASURING THE SIZE OF THE HANGOVER

So those are the sixteen steps, but what are their effects? It should come as no surprise that there is a price to pay for a return to monetary sobriety. A hangover cannot be avoided, except by continuing the binge, which is the road to death. Let's take a look at what this binge has already cost us. We will measure that by calculating how much each Federal Reserve Note will be worth when the new money appears.

The following figures are presented for illustrative purposes only. The data are drawn from public sources and from the Federal Reserve itself, but there is no way to know how accurate they really are. In addition to the question of accuracy, there are some statistical items which are so obscure that not even the experts at the Fed are certain what they mean. When the time comes to apply this program, it will be necessary to assemble a task force of experts who can audit the books and assay the metals. Nevertheless, based on the best information available to the public, this is what we get:

The total quantity of silver held by the government on September 30, 1993, was 30,200,000 troy ounces. If we assume the new dollar will be defined as 371.25 grains of silver (which equals .77344 troy ounces), then that supply is valued at $39,046,338.[1]

The price of gold on that date was 384.95 Federal-Reserve notes per ounce. Silver was 4.99 fiat dollars per ounce. The ratio between them, therefore, was 77-to-1.

The supply of gold was 261,900,000 ounces. The value of the gold supply, therefore, (at 77 times its weight in ounces) was $26,073,517,000.

The value of silver and gold combined would be $26,112,563,338.

---

[1] Although the weight of the silver-dollar is 412.5 grains (.8594 troy ounces), it is only 90% pure. Its silver content, however, is exactly 371.25 grains (.77344 troy ounces).

The number of Federal-Reserve notes this supply would have to redeem would be the combined total of the Ml money supply (currency and demand deposits) plus the additional number of notes needed to pay off the national debt. Ml on September 27, 1993, was 1,103,700,000,000 FRNs.[1] The national debt stood at 4,395,700,000,000 FRNs. The total amount to be redeemed, therefore, would be 5,499,400,000,000 FRNs.

The bottom line of this calculation is that the value of each Federal-Reserve note will be equal to .0047 silver dollar. One silver dollar would be worth 213 Federal-Reserve notes!

BAD, BUT NOT THAT BAD

That will be a bitter pill to swallow, but it sounds worse than it really is. Remember that the new dollars will have more purchasing power than the old. Coins will play a larger role in everyday transactions. The nickel phone call and the ten-cent cigar will have returned. In the beginning at least, the price of these items probably will be less than that. As explained in chapter seven, *any* quantity of gold or silver will work as the foundation for a monetary system. If the quantity is low—as certainly will be the case at the time of transition—it merely means the value of each unit of measure will be high. In that case, coins will solve the problem. Pennies would be used for a cup of coffee; one mill (a tenth of a cent) would pay for a phone call, and so on. New, small-denomination tokens would fill that need. In a relatively short period of time, however, the monetary supply of gold and silver would increase in response to free-market demand. When the supply increases, the relative value will decrease until a natural equilibrium is reached—as always has happened in the past. At that point, the tokens will no longer be needed and can be phased out.

An inconvenience? Yes. Vending machines will have to be retrofitted for the new coins, but that would be no more difficult than retrofitting them to take paper bills or plastic debit cards, which is what will be required if we do *not* adopt these measures. It is a small price to pay for an orderly return to real money.

,1. **For those who feel that M2 or M3 would be a more logical figure, see "Is Ml Subtractive or Accumulative? " in the Appendix, containing the author's notes and correspondence with the Federal Reserve.**

Another possible solution would be to redefine the new dollar to contain a smaller quantity of silver. The advantage would be that we could continue to use our present coinage. On the negative side, however, is the fact that it would create headaches *after* the transition, because coinage then would be too cheap. Instead of changing over *now,* we would merely be postponing the task for *later*. Now is the time to do it—and do it right. The original value of a silver dollar was determined after centuries of trial and error. We don't have to reinvent the wheel. We *know* that it will work in the long run.

In the past, the banks have enjoyed a bountiful cash flow from interest on money created out of nothing. That will change. They will have to make a clear distinction between demand deposits and time deposits. Customers will be informed that, if they want the privilege of receiving their money back *on demand,* their deposit of coins or Treasury Certificates will be kept in the vault and not loaned to others. Therefore, it will not earn interest for the bank. If the bank cannot make money on the deposit, then it must charge the depositor a fee for safeguarding his money and for checking services. If the customer wants to earn interest on his deposit, then he will be informed that it will be invested or loaned out, in which case he cannot expect to get it back any time he wants. He will knowingly put his money into a *time* deposit with the agreement that a specified amount of time must pass before the investment matures.

The effect of this practice on banking will be enormous. Banks will have to pay higher interest rates to attract investment capital. They will have to trim their overhead expenses and eliminate some of the plush. Profit margins will be tightened. Efficiency will improve. They used to offer "free" services which actually were paid out of interest earned on their customers' demand deposits. Now they will charge for those services, such as checking and safe storage of deposits. Customers probably will grumble at first at having to pay for those things, and there will be no more free toasters.

Electronic transfer systems will probably become popular for their convenience, but they will be optional. Cash and check transactions will continue to play an important role. Government monitoring will be illegal. Although there will be fewer dollars in circulation than there were Federal Reserve Notes, the value of each one will be correspondingly greater. Each person will end up with the same purchasing power he had before the conversion. For a short period, both the old and the new money will circulate together, and some people will have difficulty making the necessary calculations to determine their relative values. But that is a routine operation for people who live in Europe or for anyone who travels to a foreign country. There is no reason to think that Americans are too stupid to handle it.

SOME BAD NEWS AND SOME GOOD

We should not delude ourselves into thinking that this will be an easy transition. It will be a very difficult period, and people will have to get used to a whole new way of thinking and doing. The freeze on the current money supply may trigger panic in the stock market and the business community. Stock prices could tumble, causing paper fortunes to disappear back into the computers from which they came. Some businesses may fold for a lack of easy credit. Weak banks will be allowed to close rather than be bailed out with taxes. Unemployment may worsen for a while. Those who have been used to a free ride will now have to walk or push or pay their way. The masses on welfare will not give up their checks and food stamps quietly. The media will fan the flames of discontent. The Cabal will be at every switch to derail the train.

This will be the moment of our greatest danger, the moment when the people could tire of their hard journey in the desert and lose interest in the promised land. This is the time when they may long for a return to captivity and head back to the slave pits of Pharaoh.

The important point, however, is that most of these problems would be temporary. They would be present only during the period of transition to a new money. As soon as free coinage is available at the Mint, and as soon as people see how much demand there is for silver and gold coins, there will be a steady stream of miners and jewelers who will add great new stores of precious metal to the nation's monetary stock. Foreigners undoubtedly will add to the inflow. Old silver and gold coins will also reappear in the market place. Very quickly, as the stores of precious metal respond to supply and demand, the quantity of money will increase and its per-unit value will drop to its natural equilibrium.

Won't that be inflation? Yes it will, but it will be significantly different from inflation by fiat money on four counts: (1) instead of being caused by politicians and bankers attempting to manipulate the economy to enhance their personal agendas, it will be caused by natural economic forces seeking an equilibrium of supply and demand; (2) instead of being harmful to the nation, leading to the destruction of the economy, it will be part of a healing process, leading to prosperity; (3) it will be less severe than what we will experience if we do *not* make the transition; and (4), instead of being part of a continuum that is designed to go on forever, it will have a built-in termination point: the point of natural equilibrium where the human effort to mine gold and silver equals the effort to create those things which gold and silver can buy. When that point is reached, the money supply will cease to expand, and inflation will stop—once and for all. The hangover will be gone. From that point forward, prices will begin a gradual descent as advances in technology allow improved efficiency in production. With the arrival of lower prices, better job opportunities, and increasing prosperity, the voices of discontent will gradually fade. After the storm is over, America will have an honest money supply, a government with no national debt, and an economy without inflation.

No matter what scenario unfolds in the future, there is white water ahead. We had better tighten our straps and prepare for the rapids. We owe it to ourselves and our families to take measures which will increase our chances of coming out at the other side. If the pessimistic scenario is played out, it will make little difference what we do, because there will *be* no other side. But in the realistic scenario, there are certain precautions that will make a big difference in our economic well being.

To fully appreciate the wisdom of some of these measures, it is well for us to pause and consider the possibility that a transition to economic safety and sanity will not be orderly. Another variant of the realistic scenario is that our entire system could collapse, including the international structure being assembled at the UN- If that should happen, we won't have to worry about an orderly transition to a sound monetary system, because it won't happen. Our primary concern will be basic survival.

Economic chaos and civil disorder would not *necessarily* have to be the prelude to world government. If a sufficient number of people were well enough informed to know in advance what the enemy's game plan is, and especially if they were in the right places within the system, they might be able to provide leadership at the critical moment. If there is blood in the streets and long periods of anarchy, it is theoretically possible that groups of enlightened individuals who have prepared in advance could move into the power vacuum and take charge. That may sound like another pessimistic scenario, but it is not. In the final analysis, it may be the most realistic one of all. But we should not hope for it. All we can do is prepare for it should it come to pass.

HOW TO PREPARE

What can we do to prepare financially? To avoid making this a lengthy dissertation, let's use the outline form. Elaboration should not be necessary.

1. **Get out of debt.** A mortgage on one's home is a logical exception, provided the price is right. Borrowing for one's business is also an exception if based on a sound business plan. Speculative investments are not a good idea in these times unless they are made with money you can afford to lose.
2. **Pick a sound bank.** Maintain accounts at several institutions. Do not keep over $100,000 in any one bank. Remember that not all types of accounts are covered by FDIC. Some institutions now offer private insurance. Make sure you know to what extent you are at risk.[1]
3. **Diversify your investments** among blue ribbon, over-the-counter, growth, income, large, small, mutuals, bonds, real estate, bullion coins, mining stock, and tangibles. Industries that do well in hard times are gambling, alcohol, and escapist entertainment. Study the fields and companies in which you invest. Personal knowledge is indispensable.
4. **Avoid the most recent "best" performers.** Their great track records are historical. They have no bearing on future performance. To the contrary, they may now be overpriced and

---

1. **That is not an easy assignment. It helps to have professional assistance from an independent source which is able to analyze asset quality, loan ratios, equity ratios, loan-loss reserves, and the like. One of the best sources of this kind of information is Veribanc. For a nominal fee, this bank-rating service will provide you with detailed reports on any bank or saving & loan in America. If you want their brochure, write to them at P.O. Box 461, Wakefield, MA 01880.**

poised for a fall. See how an investment fared over the long run—at least fifteen years—and particularly how it performed during periods of economic downturn.

5. **When investing in coins,** avoid those with high numismatic value—unless you are prepared to become an expert. As with other types of investments, seek advice but don't depend on it. The same is true for diamonds, art pieces, and other collectibles. Stay with what you know. Otherwise, you will be vulnerable in shark-infested waters where even the most experienced traders can lose money.
6. **Maintain a stash of cash,** including some old silver coins. The currency should be enough to provide your family with necessities for about two months. The coins are for more severe and prolonged conditions. There is no "correct" quantity. It is a matter of personal judgment and financial ability.

PROFITING FROM DISASTER

All of this is aimed at surviving the storm and preparing ourselves to offer leadership in troubled times ahead. That is a rather negative view. There is a more positive outlook for those who are looking for good news, as Adlai Stevenson said. It is the exciting prospect that we can turn this calamity to our advantage. We can actually profit from the coming collapse. That thought has spawned hundreds of books and newsletters offering advice on how to get rich while others are being destroyed. There is even one that gives advice on how to cash in on the environmental-industry boom. The pitch is how to make a fortune on the downfall of America.

There is no doubt that opportunities exist to profit from investment decisions based on a realistic appraisal of current trends. Most of those opportunities, however, depend on making market-timing decisions. One must know precisely when to buy, when to sell, and at what price. To know all that, the investor must become expert on the nature of the industries involved and must monitor the daily shifts in market forces. He must attempt to complete his analysis and reach his conclusions in advance of the crowd. And, of course, he must be right. Most investors are not prepared to do that, so they must depend on the services of professionals, usually the same experts who are encouraging them to invest in these kinds of enterprises. If the investment is profitable, the analyst receives an income. If the investment turns sour, the analyst *still* receives an income.

That relationship is not unique to the "profit-from-crash" group, however. It is to be found at every level of the investment business as well as within the legal and medical professions. The customer pays for the advice regardless of its quality. What is disturbing about this investment concept is that it actually may help to make matters worse. By focusing on finding clever ways to avoid the effects of inflation or of making a profit from it, we are doing nothing to stop it and, thereby, encouraging its continuation. Those who are gaining from inflation are not likely to offer serious resistance to it. As they watch their profits pile up, they may become its most ardent supporters—even though they know deep in their hearts that it will destroy them in the end.

There is nothing wrong with trying to preserve one's capital on the way down, but the only real solution is to *use* one's capital to *stop* the present trends. In the long run, there is no way to profit from a destroyed America. There is no refuge from a collapse. There is no way to protect your assets, your home, your job, your family, your freedom. As Henry Hazlitt phrased it, "There is no safe hedge against inflation except to stop it."

AN EDUCATIONAL CRUSADE

The best investment one can make at this time is to finance an educational crusade. Americans have allowed their nation to be stolen from right under their noses because they did not understand what was happening. There is no hope for the future as long as that condition remains. The starting point for any realistic plan for survival *and beyond* is the awakening of America.

What does that entail? These are the tasks:

1. **Become self-informed.** That's not as easy as it sounds. It involves a major commitment of time and money for books, recordings, and seminars. Do it.
2. **Become a pamphleteer.** Develop a mailing list of friends who you think would be most receptive to learning more about these issues. Send them something every month that is informative and not too long to read. See the end of this chapter for information on how to obtain suitable publications.
3. **Join forces with others of like mind.** There is strength in numbers. Three people acting alone are a force of three. When

working together, however, they multiply their efforts and equal a force of nine. That is the power of organization. When choosing an organization, look for experienced and principled leadership which has proven that it understands the deeper issues and cannot be sidetracked by the Cabal.

4. **Form an educational study group.** Give it an enticing name such as The Reality Club or The Awareness Lunch Bunch. Make the meetings interesting and short. Use local speakers, ask members to give book reviews, show videos, have mock debates, throw parties. The goal is to reach new people, not to preach to the choir.
5. **Form ad-hoc committees,** along with other like-minded friends, to promote specific projects and programs. Here are a few hypothetical examples covering a range of issues: The Committee for Sound Money, Parents for Better Education, Americans for Tax Relief, North-Bay Residents for Private Property. That is an excellent way to bring pressure to bear on the political structure and, at the same time, attract the support of new people who share your common objective.
6. **Expand your influence within the community.** People seldom follow strangers. Become known and respected for your knowledge. Join groups which are influential within your city or profession. Political groups are particularly important, regardless of party. Volunteer for work and seek a leadership role. Personally visit your city and county politicians and maintain ongoing communication. Send them books, articles, baseball tickets—anything to make sure they don't forget who you are. This is doubly important for political candidates. If you have the talent and the aptitude, consider running for some kind of public office yourself.
7. Use **politics, don't be used by it** We got into our present mess through politics and we must get out the same way; but getting out is a lot harder than getting in. The strategy, however, is simple: remove the big-spending internationalists from office and replace them with men and women dedicated to sound money and national independence. The way to remove the spenders is to expose their voting records to their constituents, most of whom have no idea how they vote on key issues. The way to get better candidates elected is to volunteer to work in their campaigns. Work within party organizations where

> possible but **beware!** Never allow loyalty to the party to override loyalty to principle. Political parties are always controlled from the top, and the major parties are controlled by the very forces we must oppose. It is imperative that you *and your candidate* remain independent of party control. Otherwise, your money and your effort eventually will be used against you.[1]

With that warning aside, we should be encouraged by the fact that the task is not as overwhelming as it seems. The power to reverse the present trend rests in the hands of only 535 people. There are 435 Representatives and 100 Senators. To control a majority, all we have to do is influence the election of 268 people. In reality, if we began to come even close to that figure, we likely would see a wave of sudden political conversions among those who remain in office. It is possible that we could achieve our goal by influencing the election in only 100 Congressional districts! By using the political freedom that yet remains in our system, we can overthrow the government of the United States every two years without firing a shot! But we had better get going on it. Time is running out.

CONCLUSIONS AND SUMMARY

We have finally come to the end of this book. It was not a textbook on banking theory. It was a who-dunnit, and by now you know the answer.

We have covered a vast expanse of history and have wandered far afield from our main topic. It was necessary. Without the larger view, the case against the Federal Reserve System would have been weak. It would have omitted the elements of war, revolution, depression, and fraud. Without that long journey, we would be limited to a sterile discussion of interest rates, discount policies, and reserve ratios. That is not where the body is hidden.

In the foreword, it was stated that there were seven reasons to abolish the Federal Reserve System. It is time to repeat them here:

---

1. An excellent analysis of the voting records of all Congressmen and Senators is published each year by *The New American* magazine, P.O. Box 8040, Appleton, Wisconsin 54913. The same organization makes available bulk supplies of pamphlets tailored to each Congressional district for distribution to the public. The big spenders hate them!

- It is incapable of accomplishing its stated objectives.
- It is a cartel operating against the public interest.
- It is the supreme instrument of usury.
- It generates our most unfair tax.
- It encourages war.
- It destabilizes the economy.
- It is an instrument of totalitarianism.

The purpose of this book has been to demonstrate the accuracy of those assertions.

A plan for recovery was finally presented which involves sixteen steps, each based upon lessons which emerged from history. These lessons were mingled with a large amount of theory which is traceable only to the mind of the author himself. Which is to say there is no guarantee the plan will work. But it *is* a plan. It is better to fail trying than to do nothing. Like men on a sinking ship, we must risk the water. We cannot stay where we are.

There undoubtedly are technical flaws in these proposals, for the mechanism is merely a prototype. Someone surely will discover a gear that will not mesh or a lever that is disconnected. It will need the additional work of specialists in many diverse fields. Even then, the job will not be complete, for it must finally be handed over to those who are skilled in drafting legislation. Their task will be two-fold. First, they must make it workable in the real world of politics. Secondly, they must prevent loopholes and vagaries which could eventually subvert the plan.

But none of these considerations should deter us from beginning the process. We may not have answers to all the technical questions, but we *do* have an answer to the big question. We *do* know that the Federal Reserve System must be abolished. Let us, therefore, begin.

The Creature has grown large and powerful since its conception on Jekyll Island. It now roams across every continent and compels the masses to serve it, feed it, obey it, worship it. If it is not slain, it will become our eternal lord and master.

Can it be slain? Yes it can.

How will it be slain? By piercing it with a million lances of truth.

Who will slay it? A million crusaders with determination and courage.

The crusade has already begun.

AN INVITATION

If you would like to join me in this crusade to abolish the Federal Reserve and to restore American prosperity, let me know who you are. I will advise you of important developments and will put you in touch with others who are already in the battle. I will also send you a list of books, videos, pamphlets, and other materials you will need for carrying the message to your friends. Send a self-addressed, business-size envelope with two postage stamps to:

G. Edward Griffin
P.O. Box 4646
Westlake Village, CA 91359-1646

Materials may also be obtained at our website:
www.realityzone.com

(A.) STRUCTURE AND FUNCTION OF THE FEDERAL RESERVE SYSTEM

The three main components of the Fed are: (1) the national Board of Governors, (2) the regional Reserve Banks, and (3) the Federal Open Market Committee. Lesser components include: (4) the commercial banks which hold the stock, and (5) the advisory councils.

The function of the national Board of Governors is to determine the system's monetary policy. The Board consists of seven members who are appointed by the President and confirmed by the Senate. Their terms of office are fourteen years and are staggered so that they do not coincide with the presidential term of office. The purpose of this is to insure that no single President can dominate Fed policy by stacking the Board with his appointments. One Board member is appointed as the Chairman for four years and another as Vice Chairman for four years. The Chairman controls the staff and is the single most powerful influence within the system.

Control is exercised by the Board and a handful of top staff employees. The Federal Reserve Act mandated that the President, when selecting Governors "shall have due regard to a fair representation of the financial, agricultural, industrial and commercial interests, and geographical divisions of the country." This mandate is now almost completely ignored, and the men come primarily from the fields of banking and finance.

The function of the regional Reserve Banks is to hold cash reserves of the system, supply currency to member banks, clear checks, and act as fiscal agent for the government.

The twelve regional Reserve Banks are located in Atlanta, Boston, Chicago, Cleveland, Dallas, Kansas City, Minneapolis, New York, Philadelphia, Richmond, San Francisco, and St. Louis. They are corporations with stock held by the commercial banks which are members of the system. Member banks elect the directors of the regional Reserve Banks of which they are a part. The larger banks hold more shares but they have only one vote in the selection of the Directors.

Within each regional-bank system there are nine Directors. The member banks elect three Class-A directors who represent the banking industry and three Class-B directors who represent the general public. The remaining three Class-C directors are appointed by the national Board. The Chairman and Vice Chairman of each regional Reserve Bank must be Class-C directors. The selection of President and other officers is subject to veto by the national Board of Governors. In this way, the national Board is able to exercise control over the regional branches of the system.

The function of the Federal Open Market Committee is to implement the monetary policy set by national Board, although it exercises considerable autonomy in setting its own policy. It manipulates the money supply and interest rates primarily by purchasing or selling government securities—although it also accomplishes that through the purchase or sale of foreign currencies and the securities of other governments as well. Money is created and interest rates go down when it purchases. Money is extinguished and interest rates go up when it sells. Policy is formulated on a daily basis. In fact, it is monitored by the minute and the Committee often intervenes in the market to affect immediate changes.

The Open Market Committee is composed of the national Board of Governors plus five of the twelve regional Presidents who serve on a rotating basis. The exception to this is the President of the New York regional Bank who is always on the Committee. Thus, once again, the System is firmly in control of the national Board with the President of the New York regional Bank being more powerful than the others.

Twenty-four bond dealers handle all sales of government securities. Government agencies cannot exchange with each other without going through dealers who earn commissions on each transaction.

Decisions are made at secret meetings. A brief report is released to the public six weeks later, but transcripts of the deliberations are destroyed. That policy was begun in 1970 when the Freedom-of-Information Act was passed. Not even the CIA enjoys such secrecy.

The function of the member banks is to conduct the nation's banking business and to implement the System's monetary policy in terms of putting money into or drawing it out of the system at the point of contact with individual or corporate borrowers.

This leads to the troublesome question of ownership. The federal government does not own any stock in the System. In that sense, the Fed is privately owned. That, however, is misleading in that it implies a typical private-ownership relationship in which the stockholders own and control. Nothing could be further from the truth. In this case, the stock carries no proprietary interest, cannot be sold or pledged as collateral, and does not carry ordinary voting rights. Each bank is entitled to but one vote regardless of the amount of stock it holds. In reality, the stock is not evidence of "ownership" but simply certificates showing how much operating capital each bank has put into the System. It is not a government agency and it is not a private corporation in the normal sense of the word. It is subject to political control yet, because of its tremendous power over politicians and the elective process, it has managed to remain independent of political oversight. Simply stated, it is a cartel, and its organizational structure is uniquely structured to serve that end.

(B.) NATURAL LAWS OF HUMAN BEHAVIOR IN ECONOMICS

NATURAL LAW NO. 1

LESSON: When gold (or silver) is used as money and when the forces of supply and demand are not thwarted by government intervention, the amount of new metal added to the money supply will always be closely proportional to the expanding services and goods which can be purchased with it. Long-term stability of prices is the dependable result of these forces. This process is automatic and impartial. Any attempt by politicians to intervene will destroy the benefit for all. Therefore,

LAW: Long-term price stability is possible only when the money supply is based upon the gold (or silver) supply without government interference.

NATURAL LAW NO. 2

LESSON: Whenever government sets out to manipulate the money supply, regardless of the intelligence or good intentions of those who attempt to direct the process, the result is inflation, economic chaos, and political upheaval. By contrast, whenever government is limited in its monetary power to only the maintenance of honest weights and measures of precious metals, the result is price stability, economic prosperity, and political tranquility. Therefore,

LAW: For a nation to enjoy economic prosperity and political tranquility, the monetary power of its politicians must be limited solely to the maintenance of honest weights and measures of precious metals.

NATURAL LAW NO. 3

LESSON: Fiat money is paper money without precious-metal backing and which people are required by law to accept. It allows politicians to increase spending without raising taxes. Fiat money is the cause of inflation, and the amount which people lose in purchasing power is exactly the amount which was taken from them and transferred to their government by this process. Inflation, therefore, is a hidden tax. This tax is the most unfair of all because it falls most heavily on those who are least able to pay: the small wage earner and those on fixed incomes. It also punishes the thrifty by eroding the value of their savings. This creates resentment among the people, leading always to political unrest and national disunity. Therefore,

LAW: A nation that resorts to the use of fiat money has doomed itself to economic hardship and political disunity.

NATURAL LAW NO. 4

LESSON: Fractional money is paper money which is backed by precious metals up to only a portion of the face amount. It is a hybrid, being part receipt money and part fiat money. Generally, the public is unaware of this fact and believes that fractional money can be redeemed in full at any time. When the truth is discovered, as periodically happens, there are runs on the bank, and only the first few depositors in line can be paid. Since fractional money earns just as much interest for the bankers as does gold or silver, the temptation is great for them to create as much of it as possible. As this happens, the fraction which represents the reserve becomes smaller and smaller until, eventually, it is reduced to zero. Therefore,

LAW: Fractional money will always degenerate into fiat money. It is but fiat money in transition.

NATURAL LAW NO. 5

LESSON: It is human nature for man to place personal priorities ahead of all others. Even the best of men cannot long resist the temptation to benefit at the expense of their neighbors if the occasion is placed squarely before them. This is especially true when the means by which they benefit is obscure and not likely to be perceived as such. There may be exceptional men from time to time who can resist that temptation, but their numbers are small. The general rule will prevail in the long run.

A managed economy presents men with precisely that kind of opportunity. The power to create and extinguish the nation's money supply provides unlimited potential for personal gain. Throughout history the granting of that power has been justified as being necessary to protect the public, but the results have always been the opposite. It has been used against the public and for the personal gain of those who control. Therefore,

LAW: When men are entrusted with the power to control the money supply, they will eventually use that power to confiscate the wealth of their neighbors.

(C.) IS M-l SUBTRACTIVE OR ACCUMULATIVE?

Below is a copy of the author's letter to Mike Dubrow at the Public Information department of the Federal Reserve System. In a telephone conversation on February 14,1994, Mr. Dubrow said that the assumption stated in the letter would be correct if it were not for the fact that the system is under the control of a central bank. The Federal Reserve, he said, would not allow that to happen, because it would be inflationary. The Fed would reduce the money supply to offset the effect of monetary expansion as dollars moved from M-l to M-2 and back to M-l again. In other words, the assumption is correct, but the Fed has the power to offset it—if it wants to. The bottom line is that M-l is *accumulative*. As such, it is the most meaningful measure of the money supply.

Q, Cdwwtd Qwfpn
®oa. 4646, Wettta&e Village QO. 91359

January 19,1994

MikeDubrow
FAX* (202) 452-2707
FederalReserveSystem
WashingtonJJC

Dear Mr.Dubrow,

As we discussed duringourphone conversation this morning, I am preparing a paper on the Federal Reserve System, and an interesting question has arisen. Itisso fundamental that almost everyone with whom I have spoken *thought* they knew the answer but, uponanalysis, have concluded they were not so sure after all.

IS Ml SUBTRACTIVE OR ACCUMULATIVE?

It is my understanding that there are three optional definitions ofthemoneysupply:

Ml = currency + short-term deposits.

M2 = Ml + short-term time deposits.

M3 = M2 + institutional long-term deposits.

It is clear that, when money is paid out of a checking accountandputintoasavingsaccount,itincreasesM2, but the question is: Does it remain as part of Ml or is it subtracted from it? Herbert Mayo, in his book Investments (Chicago: Dryden Press, 1983), says "If individuals shift funds from savings accounts to checking accounts, the money supply is increased under the narrow definition (M-l) but is unaffected if the broader definition (M-2) is employed." This implies that, when money is moved from a checking account

to a savings account, it is subtracted from Ml. Otherwise, it would not increase Ml when it is moved back again from savings to checking. When we spoke on the phone, you confirmed that his interpretation is correct.

But how can that be? The money moved from checking to savings or any other investment does not disappear into a vault. It is spent in fulfillment of the investment project. It is given to a vendor or a contractor or an employee and reappears in their checking accounts where it becomes part of M1 once again. It would seem, therefore, that it doesn't really leave M1 at all. It merely increases M2.

I have hypothesized one possible explanation. It is that the money *does,* in fact, disappear into a vault, or at least into a bookkeeping ledger, *for a short period of time.* That would be the time between its deposit into the savings account and its subsequent transfer to the checking accounts of borrowers. The time period might be short—perhaps less than thirty days on the average—but it still needs to be considered when calculating the money aggregates. Therefore, Ml is reduced when money is transferred from checking to savings, but that is only a temporary effect. Ml will be increased once again just as soon as the new M2 money is redirected to borrowers. Is that a correct explanation?

Thank you for your help with these puzzling items.

Sincerely,

G. Edward Griffin
(805)496-1649

Adams, Charles. ***Fight, Flight, Fraud: The Story of Taxation.*** **Curacao, The Netherlands: Euro-Dutch Publishers, 1982.**

Aldrich, Nelson W. Letters to John A. Sleicher, July 16,1913; to William Howard Taft, Oct. 3,1913. Nelson Aldrich Papers. Library of Congress.

Angell, Norman. ***The Story cf Money.*** **New York: Frederick A. Stokes Co., 1929.**

Attali, Jacques. Translated by Barbara Ellis. ***A Man cf Influence: Sir Siegmund Warburg, 1902-82.*** **London: Weidenfeld, & Nicolson, 1986.**

Atwood, Harry. 77K ***Constitution Explained.*** **Merrimac, Massachusetts: Destiny Publishers, 1927; 2nd ed. 1962**

Ballard, Robert. "Riddle of the Lusitania." ***National Geographic.*** **April, 1994, p. 68.**

Balsiger, David, and Charles E. Sellier. 77K ***Lincoln Conspiracy.*** **Los Angeles: Schick Sunn Classic Books, 1977.**

Bancroft, George. ***A Plea for the Constitution.*** **New York: Harpers, 1886; rpt. Sewanee, Tennessee: Spencer Judd Publishers, 1982.**

Barnes, Harry Elmer. ***In Quest of Truth and Justice: De-Bunking the War Guilt Myth.*** **Chicago: National Historical Society, 1928. Rpt. New York: Arno Press, 1972.**

Barron, Clarence W. ***They Told Barron;*** **Notes of Clarence Walker Barron. Edited by Arthur Pound and Samuel Taylor Moore. New York: Harper and Brothers, 1930.**

Basso, Louis. ***A Treatise on Monetary Reform.*** **St. Louis, Missouri: Monetary Realist Society, 1982.**

Bentley, Elizabeth. ***Out of Bondage.*** **New York: Devin-Adair, 1951.**

Beard, Charles. ***The Rise of American Civilization.*** **New York: Macmillan, 1930- Vol. I.**

Bell, Garrett de, ed. ***The Environmental Handbook.*** **New York: Ballantine/Friends of the Earth, 1970.**

Biddle, Nicholas. ***Correspondence, 1807-1844.*** **Reginald C. McGrane, ed. New York: Houghton Mifflin, 1919.**

Birmingham, Stephen. "*Our Crowd": The Great Jewish Families of New York.* New York: Harper & Row, 1986.

Bogart, Ernest Ludlow. ***Economic History cf the American People.*** **New York: Longmans, Green & Co., 1930.**

Bolles, Albert S. ***The Financial History of the United States,*** **4th ed. New York: D. Appleton, 1896. Vol. I.**

Bovard, James. ***The World Bank vs. The World's Poor.*** **Cato Policy Analysis. Washington, D C : Cato Institute, 1987.**

Bowers, Claude G. ***The Tragic Era: The Revolution after Lincoln.*** **New York: Houghton Mifflin, 1957.**

Bryan, William Jennings and Mary Baird. ***The Memoirs of William Jennings Bryan.*** **New York: Kennikat Press, 1925.**

Brzezinski, Zbigniew. ***Between Two Ages: America's Role in the Technetronic Era.*** **Westport, Connecticut: Greenwood Press, 1970.**

Budenz, Louis F. 77K ***Techniques of Communism.*** **Chicago: Henry Regnery, 1954.**

Burnham, James. 77K ***Web of Subversion: Underground Networks in the U.S Government.*** **New York: The John Day Co., 1954.**

Cappon, Lester J., ed. 77K ***Adams-Jefferson Letters.*** **New York: Simon and Schuster, 1971.**

Carnegie, Andrew. ***Triumphant Democracy.*** **New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1893.**

Catterall, Ralph CH. ***The Second Bank of the United States.*** **Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1902.**

Catton, Bruce, author. Richard M. Ketchum, ed. ***The American Heritage Picture History of the Civil War.*** **New York: American Heritage Publishing Co., 1960.**

Chambers, Whittaker. ***Witness.*** **New York: Random House, 1952.**

Chandler, Lester V. ***Benjamin Strong, Central Banker.*** **Washington, D.C: Brookings Institution, 1958; rpt. New York: Arno Press, 1978.**

Chernow, Ron. 77K ***House of Morgan: An American Banking Dynasty and the Rise cf Modern Finance.*** **New York: Atlantic Monthly Press, 1990.**

Churchill, Winston. 77K *World Crisis.* New York: Scribner's Sons, 1949.

Clark, Kenneth. *Ruskin Today.* New York: Holt, Reinhart & Winston, 1964.

Commager, Henry S., ed. *Documents cf American History.* New York: F.S. Cofts & Co., 1940.

Cooper, Richard N. "A Monetary System for the Future." *Foreign Affairs.* Fall, 1984.

Crane, Philip M. *Surrender in Panama.* Ottawa, Illinois: Caroline House Books, 1978.

Crozier, Michael; Huntington, Samuael P.; and Watanuki, Joji. *The Crisis of Democracy.* New York: New York University Press, 1975.

Davidson, James Dale, and Rees-Mogg, Lord William. *The Great Reckoning.* New York: Summit Books, 1991.

Dall, Curtis B. *FDR: My Exploited Father-In-Law.* Tulsa, Oklahoma: Christian Crusade Publications, 1967.

Diggins, John P. *Mussolini and Fascism: The View from America.* Princeton, New Jersey: Princeton University Press, 1972.

Disraeli, Benjamin. *Coningsby.* New York & London: Alfred A. Knopf, 1844.

Dobbs, Zygmund. *The Great Deceit: Social Pseudo-Sciences.* West Sayville, New York: Veritas Foundation, 1964.

Donavan, Robert J. *The Assassins.* New York: Harper & Brothers, 1952.

Eisenschiml, Otto. 77K *Hidden Face of the Civil War.* New York: Bobbs-Merril, 1961.

———. *Why Was Lincoln Murdered?* Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1937.

Ewert, Ken S. "The International Monetary Fund." *The Freeman.* April, 1989.

Federal Reserve Bank of Chicago. *Modern Money Mechanics.* Revised October 1982

Federal Reserve Bank of St. Louis. "Money, Credit and Velocity." *Review.* May, 1982, Vol. 64, No. 5, p. 25.

Federal Reserve Bulletin. October, 1988.

Fehrenbacher, Don E., ed. *Abraham Lincoln: Speeches and Writings, 1859-1865.* New York: Library of America, 1989.

Ferrell, Robert H. *Woodrow Wilson and World War I.* New York: Harper & Row, 1985.

Figgie, Jr., Harry. *Bankruptcy 1995: The Coming Collapse of America and How to Stop It.* Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1992.

Finder, Joseph. *Red Carpet.* New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1983.

Fisher, Irving. *100% Money.* New York: Adelphi, 1936.

Forbes, John Douglas. *J.P. Morgan, Jr.* Charlottesville: University Press of Virginia, 1981.

Forrester, Izola. TTiis *One Mad Act.* Boston: Hale, Cushman & Flint, 1937.

Galbraith, John Kenneth. *Money: Whence It Came, Where It Went.* Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1975.

Gardner, Richard. "The Hard Road to World Order." *Foreign Affairs,* April, 1974.

Glass, Carter. *Adventures in Constructive Finance.* New York: Doubleday, 1927; rpt. New York: Arno Press, 1975.

Gouge, William M. *A Short History cf Paper Money and Banking in the United States.* Philadelphia: T.W. Ustick, 1833; rpt. New York: Augustus M. Kelly, 1968.

Goulevitch, Arsene de. *Czarism and Revolution.* Hawthorne, California: Omni Publications, n.d., rpt. from 1962 French edition.

Gyohten, Toyoo, and Morrison, Charles E. *Regionalism in A Converging World.* New York: Trilateral Commission, 1992.

Green, Timothy. *The New World of Gold.* New York: Walker & Co., 1981.

Greenspan, Alan. "Gold and Economic Freedom." In *Capitalism: The Unknown Ideal.* Ed. Ayn Rand. New York: Signet Books, 1967.

Greider, William. *Secrets of the Temple.* New York: Simon and Schuster, 1987.

Groseclose, Elgin. *America's Money Machine: The Story of the Federal Reserve.* Westport, Connecticut: Arlington House, 1966.

———. *Money and Man: A survey cf Monetary Experience,* 4th ed. Oklahoma: University of Oklahoma Press, 1976.

Hacker, Louis M. *American Capitalism.* **New York: Anvil, 1957.**

Hagedorn, Hermann. *The Magnate: William Boyce Thompson and His Time.* **New York: Reynal & Hitchcock, 1935.**

Hancock, Graham. *Lords of Poverty.* **New York: Atlantic Monthly Press, 1989.**

Hargrave, John. *Montagu Norman.* **New York: Greystone Press, 1942.**

Hersh, Burton. *The Mellon Family: A Fortune in History.* **New York: William Morrow and Co., 1978.**

Hoffman, William. *David: A Report on a Rockefeller.* **New York: Lyle Stewart, Inc., 1971.**

Horan, James D. *Confederate Agent: A Discovery in History.* **New York: Crown, 1954.**

Jackson, Stanley. *J.P. Morgan.* **New York: Stein and Day, 1983.**

Jasper, William F. *Global Tyranny.* **Appleton, Wisconsin: Western Islands, 1992.**

Jastram, Roy W. *The Golden Constant.* **New York: Wiley, 1977.**

Jefferson, Thomas. *The Basic Writings of Thomas Jefferson.* **New York: Willey Book Company, 1944.**

———. *The Writings of Thomas Jefferson.* **New York: G.P. Putnam's Sons, 1894. Vols. 4, 10.**

———. *The Writings of Thomas Jefferson.* **Library Edition. Washington: Jefferson Memorial Association, 1903. Vols. XIH, XIV.**

Jensen, Merrill. *The New Nation.* **New York: Vintage Books, 1950.**

Josephson, Matthew. *The Robber Barons: The Great American Capitalists, 1861-1901.* **New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1934.**

Jud, G. Donald and Woelfel, Charles J. *The Desktop Encyclopedia of Banking.* **Chicago: Probus Publishing Co., 1988.**

Kellock, Harold. "Warburg, the Revolutionist." *The Century Magazine.* **May 1915, p. 79.**

Kenan, H.S. *The Federal Reserve Bank.* **Los Angeles: Noontide Press, 1966.**

Kennan, George F. *The Decision to Intervene: Soviet-American Relations, 1917-1920.* **Princeton, New Jersey: Princeton University Press, 1958.**

———. *Russia Leaves the War: Soviet-American Relations, 1917-1920.* **Princeton, New Jersey: Princeton University Press, 1956.**

———. *Russia and the West under Lenin and Stalin.* **Boston: Little, Brown and Company. 1961.**

Kenworthy, Joseph M., and George Young. *The Freedom of the Seas.* **New York: Aver Company, 1929.**

Keynes, John Maynard. *The Collected Writings of.* **Vol V. 1930 rpt. New York: Macmillan, 1971.**

A Tract on Monetary Reform. **London: MacMillan and Co., 1923.**

Kitchel, Denison. *The Truth About the Panama Canal.* **New Rochelle, New York: Arlington House, 1978.**

Kolko, Gabriel. *Main Currents in Modern American History.* **New York: Harper & Row 1976.**

———. *The Triumph of Conservatism.* **New York: The Free Press of Glencoe, a division of the MacMillan Co., 1963.**

Krooss, Herman E., ed. *Documentary History of Banking and Currency in the Unites States.* **New York: Chelsea House, 1983. Vol. III. Also 1969 edition. Vol. 111.**

Labaree, Leonard W., ed. *The Papers of Benjamin Franklin.* **New Haven: Yale University Press, 1960. Vol. II.**

Larson, Martin A. *The Continuing Tax Rebellion.* **Old Greenwich, Connecticut: Devin-Adair, 1979.**

Laughlin, J. Lawrence. *The Federal Reserve Act: Its Origin and Problems.* **New York: Macmillan, 1933.**

Lewin, Leonard, ed. *Report from Iron Mountain on the Possibility and Desirability of Peace.* **New York: Dell Publishing, 1967.**

Lewinsohn, Richard. *The Profits of War through the Ages.* **New York: E.P. Dutton, 1937.**

Lindbergh, Charles A., Sr. *Banking and Currency and the Money Trust.* Washington, D.C.: National Capital Press, 1913.

———. *The Economic Pinch.* 1923 rpt. Hawthorne, California: Omni Publications, 1968.

Lockhart, R.H. Bruce. *British Agent.* New York and London: G.P. Putnam's Sons, 1933.

Lundberg, Ferdinand. *America's Sixty Families.* New York: Vanguard Press, 1937.

Lyons, Eugene. *Workers' Paradise Lost.* New York: Funk & Wagnalls, 1967.

Mackay, LL.D.,Charles. *Extraordinary Popular Delusions and the Madness of Crowds.* 1841 rpt. New York: L.C. Page & Company, 1932.

Makin, John H. *The Global Debt Crisis: America's Growing Involvement.* New York: Basic Books, 1984.

Martin, Rose L. *Fabian Freeway: High Road to Socialism in the U.S.A.* Boston: Western Islands, 1966.

Mayer, Martin. *The Bankers.* New York: Weybright & Talley, 1974.

McAdoo, William G. *Crowded Years.* New York: Houghton Mifflin, 1931. Rpt. New York: Kennikat Press, 1971.

Mcllhany, William H. "No Civil War at All." *Journal of Individualist Studies.* Fall and Winter, 1992.

McLaughlin, Andrew C. *The Confederation and the Constitution.* New York: Collier Books, 1962.

Moody, John. *The Masters of Capital.* New Haven: Yale University Press, 1919.

Morton, Frederic. *The Rothschilds: A Family Portrait.* New York: Atheneum, 1962.

Mullins, Eustace. *Secrets of the Federal Reserve.* Staunton, Virginia, Bankers Research Institute, 1983.

Myers, C.V. *Money and Energy: Weathering the Storm.* Darien, Connecticut: Soundview Books, 1980.

Myers, Gustavus. *History of the Great American Fortunes.* New York: Random House, 1936.

North, Douglass C. *The Economic Growth of the United States.* New York: W.W. Norton, 1966.

Orwell, George. *1984.* New York: New American Library/Signet, 1949.

Owen, Robert L. *National Economy and the Banking System.* Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1939.

Paul, Ron, and Lewis Lehrman. *The Case for Gold.* Washington, DC: Cato Institute, 1982.

Perloff, James. *Shadows of Power.* Appleton, Wisconsin: Western Islands, 1988.

Pike, Henry R. *A History of Communism in South Africa.* Germiston, South Africa: Christian Mission International of South Africa, 1985.

Polley, Robert L., ed. *Lincoln: His Words and His World.* Waukesha, Wisconsin: Country Beautiful Foundation, 1965.

Poor, Henry V. *Money and Its Laws.* London: Henry S. King and Co., 1877.

Pratt, Sereno S. *The Work of Wall Street.* New York: D. Appleton, 1916; rpt. New York: Arno Press, 1975.

Quigley, Carroll. *The Anglo-American Establishment: From Rhodes to Cliveden.* New York: Books in Focus, 1981.

———. *Tragedy and Hope: A History of the World in Our Time.* New York: MacMillan, 1966.

Ramsay, David. *History of the American Revolution.* London: Johnson and Stockdale, 1791. Vol. II.

Rees, David. *Harry Dexter White: A Study in Paradox.* New York: Coward, McCann & Geoghegan, 1973.

Remini, Robert V. *Andrew Jackson and the Course of American Democracy, 1833-1845.* New York: Harper & Row, 1984.

———. *Andrew Jackson and the Course of American Freedom, 1822-1832.* New York: Harper & Row, 1981.

———. *The Life cf Andrew Jackson.* New York: Harper & Row, 1988.

Ricardo, David. *The Works and Correspondence of David Ricardo: Pamphlets 1815-1823.* Piero Sraffa, ed. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1951. Vol. IV.

Richards, R.D. *The Early History of Banking in England.* New York: Augustus M. Kelley, 1929; rpt. 1965.

Richardson, J.D. *A Compilation of the Messages and Papers of the Presidents, 1789-1908.* Washington: Bureau of National Literature and Art, 1908. Vol. II.

Ritter, Lawrence S., ed. *Money and Economic Activity.* Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1967.

Roscoe, Theodore. *The Web cf Conspiracy: The Complete Story of the Men Who Murdered Abraham Lincoln.* Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice-Hall, 1959.

Rothbard, Murray N. *America's Great Depression.* Kansas City: Sheed and Ward, 1963.

———. *Conceived in Liberty: The Revolutionary War, 1775-1784.* New Rochelle, New York: Arlington House, 1979. Vol. IV.

———. "The Federal Reserve as A Cartelization Device." *Money in Crisis.* Barry N. Siegel, ed. New York: Ballinger, 1984, pp. 89 ff.

———. *The Mystery of Banking.* New York: Richardson & Snyder, 1983.

———. *What Has Government Done to Our Money?* Larkspur, Colorado: Pine Tree Press, 1964.

Ruml, Beardsley. "Taxes for Revenue Are Obsolete." *American Affairs.* January, 1946, p. 35.

Russell, Bertrand Arthur William. *The Impact of Science on Society.* New York: Simon and Schuster, 1953.

Samuelson, Paul A. *Economics,* 8th ed. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1970.

Saussy, F. Tupper. *The Miracle on Mainstreet.* Sewanee, Tennessee: Spencer Judd, 1980.

Schrader, Del. Jesse *James Was One of His Names.* Arcadia, California: Santa Anita Press, 1975.

Schlesinger, Jr., Arthur M. *The Age of Jackson.* New York: Mentor Books, 1945.

Schweikart, Larry, ed. *The Encyclopedia of American History and Biography.* New York: Facts on File, 1990.

Scott, Otto. *The Secret Six: The Fool as Martyr.* Vol. ID of *The Sacred Fool Quartet.* Columbus, South Carolina: Foundation for American Education, 1979.

Selgin, George A. *The Theory of Free Banking: Money Supply under Competitive Note Issue.* Totowa, New Jersey: Rowman & Littlefield, 1988.

Seligman, Edwin. Proceedings of the Academy of Political Science. Vol IV, No. 4. New York: 1914. pp. 3-6.

Sennholz, Hans F. "The Great Banking Scandal." *The Freeman.* Nov., 1990, p. 404.

———. "The Great Depression." *The Freeman.* Irvington-on-Hudson. March, 1988, p. 90.

———. *Money and Freedom.* Spring Mills, Pennsylvania: Libertarian Press, 1985.

———. "Old Banking Myths." *The Freeman.* Irvington-on-Hudson, New York. May, 1989, pp. 175-76.

Seymour, Charles. *The Intimate Papers of Colonel House.* 4 vols. New York: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1926.

Shapiro, Leonard. *The Russian Revolutions of 1917.* New York: Basic Books, 1984.

Shaw, Archer H., ed. *The Lincoln Encyclopedia: The Spoken and Written Words of A. Lincoln.* New York: Macmillan Co., 1950.

Shaw, W.A. *Theory and Principles cf Central Banking.* London & New York: Sir I. Pitman & Sons, Ltd., 1930.

Siegel, Barry. *Money in Crisis: The Federal Reserve, the Economy, and Monetary Reform.* Cambridge, Massachusetts: Ballinger, 1984

Simpson, Colin. *The Lusitania.* Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1972.

Smith, Arthur. *The Real Colonel House.* New York: George H. Doran Company, 1918.

Smith, Vera C. *The Rationale of Central Banking.* London: P.S. King & Son, 1936.

Smyth, Albert Henry, ed. *The Writings of Benjamin Franklin.* New York: Macmillan, 1906. Vol. VII.

Sprague, Irvine H. *Bailout: An Insider's Account cf Bank Failures and Rescues.* New York: Basic Books, 1986.

Steffens, Lincoln. *The Letters of Lincoln Steffens.* New York: Harcourt, Brace, 1941.

Stephenson, Nathaniel Wright. *Nelson W. Aldrich in American Politics.* New York: Scribners, 1930; rpt. New York: Kennikat Press, 1971.

Sumner, William Graham. *A History of American Currency.* New York: Holt, 1884.

Sutton, Anthony C. *The Best Enemy Money Can Buy.* Billings, Montana: Liberty House Press, 1986.

———. *National Suicide: Military Aid to the Soviet Union.* New Rochelle. New York: Arlington House, 1973.

———. *Wall Street and the Bolshevik Revolution.* New Rochelle, New York: Arlington House, 1974.

———. *Wall Street and FDR.* New Rochelle, New York: Arlington House, 1975.

———. *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler.* Seal Beach, California: '76 Press, 1976.

———. *The War on Gold.* Seal Beach, California: '76 Press, 1977.

Tocqueville, Alexis de. *Democracy in America,* Vol. II. New York: Alfred Knopf, 1945.

Trotsky, Leon. *My Life.* New York: Scribner's, 1930.

Turner, Dennis. *When Your Bank Fails.* Princeton, New Jersey: Amwell Publishing, Inc., 1983.

United Nations. *1985 Report on the World Social Situation.* New York: United Nations, 1985. Publication E/CN.5/1985/Rev.l, p. 14.

Vanderlip, Frank A. "From Farm Boy to Financier: Stories of Railroad Moguls." *The Saturday Evening Post.* Feb. 9, 1935, p. 24.

———. *From Farm Boy to Financier.* New York: D. Appleton-Cenrury Company, 1935.

Vieira, Jr., Edwin. *Pieces of Eight: The Monetary Powers and Disabilities of the United States Constitution.* New Jersey: Sound Dollar Committee, 1983.

Viereck, George Sylvester. *The Strangest Friendship in History: Woodrow Wilson and Colonel House.* New York: Liveright Publishers, 1932.

Viola, Herman J. *Andrew Jackson.* New York: Chelsea House, 1986.

Warburg, James. *The Long Road Home.* New York: Doubleday, 1964.

Warburg, Paul. *The Federal Reserve System: Its Origin and Growth.* New York: Macmillan, 1930. Vol. I.

Watt, James G. *The Courage of A Conservative.* New York: Simon and Schuster, 1985.

Weinstein, Allen. *Perjury: The Hiss-Chambers Case.* New York: Vintage Books, 1978.

Weiss, Roger W. "The Colonial Monetary Standard of Massachusetts." *Economic History Review,* No. 27, November, 1974, p. 589.

Welles, Chris. *The Last Days of the Club.* New York: E.P. Dutton, 1975.

Wheeler, George. *Pierpont Morgan and Friends: The Anatomy of a Myth.* Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey: Prentice Hall, 1973.

"Why Did We Let Trotsky Go? How Canada Lost an Opportunity to Shorten the War." *MacLeans* magazine. Canada, June, 1919.

Willis, H. Parker. "The Failure of the Federal Reserve." *The North American Review.* May, 1929, pp. 547-56.

———. Letters from Henry Parker Willis to J. Laurence Laughlin. July 14, 18, 1912. J. Laurence Laughlin Papers, Library of Congress, July 14 & 18, 1912.

Wilson, Derek. *Rothschild: The Wealth and Power of A Dynasty.* New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1988.

Wilson, R. McNair. *Monarchy or Money Power.* London: Eyre and Spotriswoode, Ltd., 1933.

Wrangell-Rokassowsky, Carl. *Before the Storm.* Ventimiglia, Italy: Tipo-Litografia Ligure, 1972.

Yago, Glenn. *Junk Bonds: How High Yield Securities Restructured Corporate America.* New York: Oxford University Press, 1991.

Acceptances: 416,*426-427,*480-483,486, 490,495
Adlai Stevenson: 565,584
Aeroflot: 301
Agfa Ansco: 482
Aldrich Bill: 441-143,448,456,459,462, 464,469
Aldrich, Nelson: 4-5,20,24,205,437, 439,441,445,448,464,469
American Acceptance Council: 482
American Bankers Association: 462
American Express Company: 482
American I.G. Chemical Corporation: 482
American Trust Company: 482
AMTRAK: 45, 63
Andrew, Abraham Piatt: 5,11,24
Andropov, Yuri: 530
Anti-Semitism: 285,289,414-415,417-419
Archbold, John D.: 245
Armour, J. Ogden: 454
Articles of Confederation: 316,318
Asia-Pacific Economic Cooperation Agreement (APEC): 112
Aspen Institute: 532
Astor family: 272

Bailey, Sir Abe: 272
Baker, George F.: 6,443,454
Baker, James: 116,118
Balanced-budget amendment: 571-572
Balfour, Arthur: 238,271
Ballard, Robert: 248
Baltimore & Ohio Railway: 279
Bancor: 544-547
Bank notes: 174,176,178,182
Bank of America: 114
Bank of England: 171,174-175,177-183, 223,232,269,271,311,325,330,339, 412,415,417,422-427,429,439,450, 472-473,475,480,489-490,498,503
Bank of France: 183,221,269,425,472-473
Bank of Intemat'l Settlements: 115,119
Bank of Manhattan Trust Company: 482
Bank of North America: 325-328,330,339
Bankers Trust Company: 5,127,423,433, 472-473
BankOklahoma: 62
Baring, Sir Francis: 222
Barnes, Harry Elmer: 243
Baruch, Bernard: 258,453
Bauer, Mayer Amschel: 218
Beit brothers: 272
Belmont, August: 208,383,391,414-415
Bezant: 149-150,156
Bickley, George W.L.: 392,394
Biddle, Nicholas: 341,347-348,351-352, 354,356-357,360,396,565
Bills of credit: 309-310,316,324,346-347, 383
Bimetallism: 320,323
Bismarck, Otto von: 374
Boer War: 277-278
Bolshevik Revolution: 263,267,283
Bolsheviks: 123,125,266,276,279-282, 285-286,289-293,306
Boom-bust cycle: 343-345,360,420,488-489,552
Booth, John Wilkes: 392-394
Bovard, James: 122
Brady, Nicholas: 75,119
Bretton Woods Conference: 85-86,88, 105,114,544
Brown, Lester: 528
Bryan, William Jennings: 241,251,256-257,403,456,465-469
Brzezinski, *Zbigniew.* 110
Buchanan, Sir George: 267,274,280
Buckley, William: 525
Bullard, Arthur: 290,294
Bunting, John: 53
Burns, Arthur: 43-44
Bush, George: 74,76,120,126-130
Bush, Prescott: 302
Carnegie Corporation: 482
Carnegie Foundation: 447
Carnegie United Kingdom Trust: 272
Carnegie, Andrew: 428
Carter, Jimmy: 110-111,528
Casey, William: 299
Castro, Fidel: 116
Catton, Bruce: 379
Celeste, Richard: 71
Central Intelligence Agency (CIA): 72,

Chandler, Lester: 424,484
Chase Manhattan Bank: 41-42,47,52-53, 59, 64,115,299
Chase National Bank: 19,435,440,482
Chase, Salmon P.: 384-385
Chemical Bank: 41,59
Chernow, Ron: 9,57,120,229,246,416, 433,452,455
China: 107,121-123,126,132,301-305
Chrysler Corporation: 41,44,48-49,64
Churchill, Winston: 214,248-249,252-253,255,261,502
Citibank: 115,123,537-538
Citicorp: 119,297

Civil War: 358, 361,367, 369, 373-377, 379,397, 398,407-408,411,418,429
Cleveland, Harlan: 528
Clinton, George: 336
Clinton, William: 82,119,267,301,507
Club of Rome: 528-532
Coe, Virginius Frank: 88
Commodity Credit Corporation: 120,126
Commonwealth Bank of Detroit: 41,51-53,64
Commonwealth Savings Company of Lincoln: 71
Communism/Communists: 67-68,87-88,105,108,122-126,265,267,270, 274,282,286,298-299,304,529-530
Coningsby: 227
Continental Army: 312,323
Continental Congress: 311, 313,318-319, 325,339
Continental Illinois: 41,54-55,57-62,65
Continentals: 161
Cooke, Jay: 408
Coolidge, Calvin: 497
Cooper, Richard N: 111, 122
Council on Foreign Relations (CFR): 88, 110-111,113,122,129,263,273,283, 302,304,410,427,482,515-516,524-528,531,533-536,546,561,563
Cousteau, Jacques: 529
Crane, Charles: 288,292
Crane, Philip: 115
Cunard Lines: 246-247,262

Dabney, Morgan & Company: 412
Daddy Warbucks: 18
Dall, Curtis: 500
Davison, Henry P.: 5,8-11,24,275,434
Deficit spending: 479,484, 486,501,507
Dillon, Read & Company: 295
Disarmament: 514,518,526
Discount Window: 44,54,193,201,477-479,483,489
Disraeli, Benjamin: 227-228
Dixon, Donald: 78
Dodge, Cleveland H: 239,447,453-454,

Douglas, Stephen: 370,385
Drachma: 149
Drexel Burnham Lambert: 79,81
Drexel, Anthony: 412
Duane, William: 353
Dulles, John Foster: 110
Duncan, Sherman & Company: 412
Dutch East Indies Company: 173

Earth Summit: 528,532
East India Company: 226
Eccles, Marriner: 187
Edison, Thomas: 190
Eisenhower, Dwight: 110
Ellsworth, Oliver: 315
Emancipation Proclamation: 379-380, 390,395
Entitlements: 509-510,535
Environmentalism: 516,523,526-536
Equitable Life Assurance Society: 433, 482
Equitable Trust Company: 295
Equity Corporation: 499
Esher, Lord: 271,277
European Union (EU): 112,560
Export-Import Bank: 128,130,299

Fabians: 87-88,96,105,106,109-111,239, 273,483,529,570
Falk, Richard A.: 527
Fascism/Fascists: 270,279
Federal Deposit Insurance Corporation (FDIC): 27,49-54,57, 60-61,63-65, 68-69, 74-75,89,95,327,364, 539, 576,583
Federal Deposit Loan Corporation (FDLCJ-27
Federal Emergency Management Agency (FEMA): 544
Federal Farm Loan Board: 477
Federal Housing Authority (FHA): 68
Federal Reserve Act: 463-465,468,472, 476-477,481,502
Federal Reserve Board: 69,71, 73
Federal Savings & Loan Insurance Corporation (FSLIC): 68,73-74, 77
Ferrell, Robert: 238
Fiat money: 155,157-160,162-165,169-170,186,190-193,195-203,206-207, 309-312,314-316,324,352,409,419-420,429,566,573-574,582
Financial Institutions Reform and Recovery Act: 74,80
First Arabian Corporation: 52
First Bank of the United States: 325,328, 330-333,335,338-339
First National Bank: 433
First National Bank of Boston: 482
First National Bank of Chicago: 115,127
First National Bank of Los Angeles: 482
First National Bank of New York: 5
First National Bank of St. Louis: 482
First National City Bank: 41
First Pennsylvania Bank of Philadelphia: 53-54,64,327

Fisher, Irving: 188
Forbes, B.C.: 9
Forbes, John: 412
Ford Motor Corporation: 49
Forrestal, James: 295
Forrester, Izola: 393
Fractional money: 165,167,169-170,174
Fractional-reserve banking: 155,167,197, 219,341,343, 362-363,368,375,409, 478,488
Frame, Andrew: 462
Franklin, Benjamin: 158,162
Free banking: 366-367,375,576
Free coinage: 321,324
Friedman, Milton: 570

Galbraith, John Kenneth: 17, 86,179,330, 334,343,351,368-369,387,404,425, 436,439,445,472,495,524,525
Gallatin, Albert: 383
Gardner, Richard: 111
Garn-St. Germain Act: 72
Gates, Fred: 556
Gelb, Leslie H.: 129
Gelzer, Heinrich: 150
General Agreement on Tariffs and Trade (GATT): 112,113
General Education Board: 239,555
George, Lloyd: 280
Glass Bill: 464
Glass, Carter: 458-463,465-166
Glass-Owen Bill: 461,463,469
Gorbachev, Mikhail: 123,529-530
Gouge, William: 346
Goulevitch, Arsene de: 267
Graham, Katharine: 524
Grattan, C. Hartley: 241
Gray, Edwin: 71
Greenbacks: 384-385,387-388,390,395
Greenspan, Alan: 73,76,119,148,403,474
Greider, William: 22, 62,117,369
Grenfell, Edward: 413
Gresham's Law: 148
Grey, Lord Albert: 271
Grey, Sir Edward: 241,253
Groseclose, Elgin: 146,175,182,322, 362-364,407,487
Guaranty Trust Company: 292,433,482
Gyohten, Toyoo: 112

Hacker, Louis: 322
Hagedorn, Hermann: 275
Hamilton, Alexander: 316,319,328,335
Hammer, Armand: 293
Harper & Brothers: 244
Harriman, W. Averell: 293
Harris Forbes & Company: 295
Harvey, George: 454
Hayes, Everis: 439
Hazard Circular: 386
Hazlitt, Henry: 585
Hemphill, Robert: 188
Hepburn, A. Barton: 19,440
Herzog, Jesus Silva: 116
Hitler: 295,546
Home Savings Bank of Cincinnati: 71
Hoover Institution for War, Revolution and Peace: 22
Hoover, Herbert: 68,293,474,495,501
Horan, James: 381
House, Edward Mandell: 213,239-245, 253,255,257,260-261,266,273, 281, 290,294,456-460,465-169,472
Hudson Institute: 516,524
Hussein, Saddam: 304,305
Huntington, Samuel: 111

I.G. Farben: 295,482
Illuminati: 392
Income tax: 204-205,382,508-509,511, 534
Ingraham, Jane: 81,300
Insight magazine: 118
International Acceptance Bank of New York: 482
International Green Cross: 529
International Monetary Fund (IMF/World Bank): 85-94,97-108, 112,114-121,124,127-132,296,514, 516,539,542,544,550,563,573
Irving Trust: 127
Islamic Fundamentalism: 304

J.P. Morgan & Company: 431,433,453-454,496
Jackson, Andrew: 256,341,347-353,355-356,358-360, 396,565
Jackson, Stanley: 410,416
James, Jesse: 392
Jameson, Sir Leander: 277
Jastram, Roy: 181
Jefferson, Thomas: 162,190,313,319,328, 330,332,338, 341-342,553
Jekyll Island: 3,6-11,16-18,23,50,60,62, 423,437
Jekyll Island Club: 6,210
Joachimsthalers: 318
John Birch Society: 268
Johnston, Sir Harry: 271

Jordan, Jerry: 571
Josephson, Matthew: 408
Junk bonds: 78-79,81

Kadlec, Charles: 570
Kahn, Herman: 516,524,525
Kahn, Otto H: 279,453,460
Kane, Edward: 78
Keating, Charles: 78
Kelleher, Cornelius: 282
Kellock, Harold: 23
Kenan, H.S.: 448
Kennan, George: 290,527
Kennedy, John F.: 109, 485,569-570
Kenworthy, Joseph: 252
Kerensky, Aleksandr: 276,285,289,291
Keynes, John Maynard: 87, 89-90,105, 146,168,212,273,483,497,544
KGB: 270
King George III: 359
King George V: 253
Kissinger, Henry: 113,532
Knights of the Golden Circle: 392-395
Kolko, Gabriel: 415,435-436,444,446, 460,462
Korean War: 516
Krooss, Herman: 345
Kruger, Paul: 277
Ku Klux Klan: 393
Kuhn, Loeb & Company: 5,18,263,279, 292-293,295,395,423,433,444,453, 481-482,496

Labouchere, Pierre-Cesar: 222
Laffer, Arthur: 570
LaFollette, Robert: 442
Lamont, Corliss: 279
Lamont, Thomas W.: 278
Langdon, John: 315
Laughlin, J. Laurence: 446,459-461
Lawrence, Richard: 357
Lazard Brothers: 272
League of Nations: 273,422
Lee, Ivy: 295
Leffingwell, Russell C: 278
Legal tender: 155-163,169-170,187,207, 311,315,321,326,330,384,386,574
Lehman Corporation: 499
Lehman, John: 303
Lehrman, Lewis: 434
Lenin: 270,276,281-283,286-287,291, 293, 297,300,305, 546
Lewin, Leonard: 524, 525
Lewinsohn, Richard: 217,237
Lie, Trygve: 401
Lincoln Savings: 73-74,78
Lincoln, Abraham: 370-371,373-375, 377,379-381,383-385,389-395
Lindbergh, Sr., Charles: 442-443,446, 448,461,465,476
Linowitz, Sol: 528
Lockhart, Bruce: 280-282,290
Lockheed: 41,45-46,63
London School of Economics: 109,570
Luce, Clare Booth: 525
Luce, Henry: 524
Lundberg, Ferdinand: 239,245,258,447, 452,454,473
Lusitania: 246-255,260-262,410
Lyons, Eugene: 287

Manufacturers Hanover: 41,59
Mao: 546
Marine Midland Corporation: 499
Marshall, John: 346
Martin, Rose: 273
Marx, Karl: 211,266
Mason, George: 315
Masonic lodges: 392
Massachusetts: 157-158,160,307,310-311,362-364,367
Mauretania: 246,425
Maximilian, Ferdinand: 374,377,392
May, Max: 292
Mayer, Martin: 486
McAdoo, William: 238-239,256,258,454, 458,464
McCormick, Cyrus: 447
McCulloch v. Maryland: 346,351
McLandress, Herschel: 524
McLaughlin, Andrew: 163
McNamara, Robert: 516,532
Medicare: 509-510,535
Mellon, Andrew: 425,495,497
Mellen, C.S.: 244
Mensheviks: 279-280
Mersey, Lord: 214,255
Metropolitan Life Insurance Co. 482
Mexico: 104
Midland Bank: 272
Miliarense: 149
Milken, Michael: 79, 81
Milner, Lord Alfred: 267,270-272,274, 277-280
Minor, Robert: 211,266
Monetarists: 570
Monetary Control Act of 1980:115,201
Monroe Doctrine: 373,377

Monroe, James: 373
Monserrat: 264
Moral hazard: 35,36,39
Moody, John: 236,415,435
Morgan Guaranty: 41,56,59,127
Morgan, Grenfell, and Company: 272
Morgan, Harjes & Company: 412
Morgan, House of: 119,419,429,452
Morgan, J.P.: 4-8,23,209,235-239,244-261,266,272-278,283,302,410-418, 427,431,433-434,443,447-448,455, 496,499,502
Morgan, Jr., J.P.: 412,417-418,454,458,

Morgan, Junius: 411
Morganthau, Henry: 453
Morris, Edward: 292
Morris, Robert: 325-326,328,330,335
Morrow, Dwight: 278
Morton, Frederic: 218,224-225
Mullins, Eustace: 413
Munsey, Frank: 452-453
Murphy, Grayson: 278
Mussolini: 546
Mutual Life Insurance Company: 433,482
Myers, Gustavus: 331

Napoleon Bonaparte: 173,181,183,220-

Napoleon III: 378
National Banking Acts of 1863-65:386-388,407
National Citizens' League: 445,459-460
National City Bank: 5,239,258,266,276, 292,295,433,435,447,454,464
National Civic Federation: 434
National debt: 388,508, 510-512,534, 535,568,572,575-577, 579,582
National Monetary Commission: 437,448
Nazism/Nazis: 270,295
New Haven Railroad: 244
New World Order: 109,111-113,122, 125,129,132,514,528,530,549-550, 552,561,564
New York City: 41,46-47, 64
New York Life Insurance Company: 433
New^York Title and Mortgage Company:
New York Trust Company: 482
Nixon, Richard: 91,302
Norman, Montagu: 269,399,423,425, 429,472,486,489,495,498
North American Free Trade Agreement (NAFTA): 112,113
North, Douglass: 322
Northern Pacific Railroad: 408
Norton, Charles D.: 5,24
Nye, Gerald P.: 238

Office of Thrift Supervision: 74
Open Market: 194,477,479,481-482,484-487,490,492,499,503
Oppenheimer, Michael: 527
Order of American Knights: 393
Order of the Sons of Liberty: 393
Orwell, George: 556-557,560
Overseas Private Investment Corporation (OPIC): 128,300
Owen, Robert L.: 461,476

Page, Walter H.: 238-239,241-242
Paine, Thomas: 315
Panama Canal: 115
Passell, Peter: 80
Paterson, William: 175
Patman, Wright: 42-43,187
Patterson, Robert P.: 295,485
Patterson, William: 177
Paul, Ron: 434
Peabody & Company: 415-417
Peabody, George: 410-413,415-416
Peel, Sir Robert: 181
Pell, Claiburne: 528
Penn Central: 41-44,55,63
Penn Square Bank of Oklahoma: 55
Perkins, George W.: 266,452-453
Pieces of Eight: 318-319
Pike, Henry: 277
Planters Trust and Savings Bank of Opelousa: 61
Poland: 126,297
Politburo: 530
Polo, Marco: 155
Poor, Henry: 365
Pratt, Sereno: 415
Pujo Committee: 443-444,447,454
Pujo, Arsene: 6,443

Quigley, Carroll: 213,267-272,278,282, 423, 475,494

Rand Corporation: 516
Randolph, John: 352
Reagan, Ronald: 62,71, 111, 126,474,507
Reales: 318
Red Cross: 263,274-275,279-284,285, 289,291-292,302,306
Reed, George: 315
Reed, John: 119

Regan, Donald: 58,114
Reichsbank: 18,183,269,425
Remini, Robert: 354,356
Report from Iron Mountain: 516,518, 521,523-526,534,536,556,558,560
Resolution Funding Corporation: 74
Resolution Trust Corporation: 81-82
Resolution Trust Oversight Board: 74
Rhodes, Cecil: 208,219,263,270-272, 277-278,281-283,410,428,430,534
Ricardo, David: 180
Rist, Charles: 269,425,472
Roberts, Paul: 96
Robins, Raymond: 212, 281-282,284,290
Rockefeller, David: 42,47,112-113,123, 297,299, 532
Rockefeller, John D.: 209,266,400,434, 446,555
Rockefeller, John D. III: 401
Rockefeller, Jr., John D.: 4-5
Rockefeller, William: 5,454
Rockefellers: 245,272
Roosevelt, Franklin Delano: 10,68,239, 258,502
Roosevelt, Theodore: 266,451-453,455-456,468
Roscoe, Theodore: 393
Rostow, Walt: 524
Rothbard, Murray: 142,176,327, 337, 344,362,423,484-485,495
Rothschild, Alphonse: 414,418
Rothschild, Amschel: 225
Rothschild, House of: 5,219-220, 227, 232,413,415,417-418,429
Rothschild, James (Jacob): 224,228,232
Rothschild, Kalmann: 225
Rothschild, Nathan: 224-227,234,271, 331,413,415
Rothschild, Salomon: 225,231
Rothschild Formula: Chap. 11 + 303-305
Rothschilds: 234,235,240,246,271,331, 340,374,383,389,413-419,482
Round Table: 270,272-275,277-283,291-292,296-297, 302,305,428
Royal Bank of Canada: 127
Royal Institute of Interntl Affairs: 273
Rubin, Robert: 119
Ruml, Beardsley: 204
Rusk, Dean: 525
Ruskin, John: 270-271
Russell, Bertrand: 529
Russia: 107,124-132, 263-267,274-276, 279-296,299-302, 306,377-378,395
Russian Revolution: 263,265,267
Ryan, John D.: 266
Ryan, Thomas: 453

S&Ls: 68-74,76-81,83-84
S.S. Kristianiafjord: 265,288,292
Salinas, Carlos: 119
Salomon Brothers: 81
Sandinistas: 301
Schacht, Hjalmar: 269,425
Schapiro, Leonard: 286
Schiff, Jacob: 210,263-266,285,292,395, 453-454,458
Schlicktenthalers: 318
Schmidt, Helmut: 47
Second Bank of the United States: 341-359,375,382-386,442,565
Selgin, George: 366
Seligman, Edwin: 17,440
Sennholz, Hans: 76,82,367
Seymour, Charles: 241, 459,465
Shafroth, John: 439
Shaw, George Bernard: 87,101
Sibley, Joseph: 245
Sidonia: 227-228
Silver certificates: 485
Simpson, Colin: 246,251,254
Sjaastad, Larry A.: 121
Skull and Bones: 80
Slavery: 370-377,379,382,392,395
Smuts, Jan: 278
Social Democrats: 124-125,129
Social Security: 509-510,535
Socialism/Socialists: 85-88,95-106,109, 124,266-267,270,420,530,535,546
Solidus: 149
South Africa: 271-272,276-278
Soviet Union: 89,100,293,296,304
Soviets: 121,123-124,126-129,132
Spanish dollar: 319,324
Special Drawing Right (SDR): 90
Sprague, Irvine: 49-54,57-61
Standard Brands: 499
Standard Oil Company: 245,435
Stanton, Edwin M.: 393-394
Steffens, Lincoln: 288
Stephenson, Nathaniel Wright: 10,439, 446
Stillman, James: 454
Stockman, David: 114
Strong, Benjamin: 24,258,269,423-429, 441,450,472-474,484-489,497,502
Strong, Maurice: 531-533,549
Sumner, William: 169
Supply-siders: 570
Supreme Court: 346-347,349,351

Sutton, Anthony: 22,266,275,291,303
Swift, Harold: 292
Swift, Helen: 292
Taft, William Howard: 451-453,456,468
Tawney, R.R: 273
Taxes: 191,193,196,199,203-205
Terrorism: 546,562
Thalers: 318
Theobald, Thomas: 297
Thompson, William: 289-291
Thompson, William Boyce: 275-276,280-282
Tiananmen Square: 301
Tocqueville, Alexis de: 554
Torrijos: 115
Toynbee, Arnold: 273
Trade deficit: 91, 93-94
Traficant, Rep. James: 304,305
Transvaal: 277-278
Trilateral Commission: 112
Trotsky: 264-267, 282-283,286-287,291
Truman, Harry: 88
Tsar Alexander II: 377-378,395
Tsar Nicholas: 264-265,267,274,280,283,285,288
Tulipomania: 491-492
Turner, Dennis: 77,90
Turner, Captain William: 255
Tutko, Thomas: 521

U-boat: 237,248-249,252-253,261
U.S. Steel: 435
United Americans: 279
United Nations: 86,89,108,114,422,514-516,526, 530-532,541,544-545,548,550,561,563-564,577
Unity Bank and Trust Company: 50-51
Usury: 190-191,207

Vanderlip, Frank: 5,11,24,439,441,450,460,463-464,469
Vernon S&L: 78
Vieira, Edwin: 318
Viereck, George: 240-241,251,456-457
Volcker, Paul: 54, 58, 60, 65,71,112,116,117
Vreeland, Edward: 437,441,450

Wall Street: 4,11,18,22-23, 72-81,236-237,244, 257-259,266, 276,281,288,290-295,302,408,415,417,431,433,435,442-448,453-456,461-162,472,482,497, 502
Wall, M. Danny: 73
Wallich, Henry: 116
War Industries Board: 258-259
War of 1812:336,340-341,357,359,363
Warburg & Company, M.M.: 18
Warburg, Felix: 18,453
Warburg, James: 10
Warburg, Max: 5,18
Warburg, Paul: 5,9-10,17-19,22-24,438,440,444-445,448,450,453,455,458,461,465-466,481-182,486,496
Washington, George: 161,164,312,314-315,322-323
Waterloo: 224,226-227,233
Watt, James: 114,119
Webb, Sidney and Beatrice: 87
Webster, Daniel: 351
Welles, Chris: 42,44
Wellington, Duke of: 224-227
Wells, H.G.: 88
Wentworth, W.C.: 399,498
Westinghouse Acceptance Bank: 482
Westinghouse, H.H.: 279
Wheeler, George: 244,415
White Star Lines: 246
White, Harry Dexter: 87,105,212
Whitney family: 272
Wildcat banks: 333,336-337,340
Willard, Daniel: 279
Willing, Thomas: 330
Willis, Henry Parker: 427,460-462,465
Wilson, Derek: 219,227,331,383,414-415
Wilson, James: 315
Wilson, R. McNair: 221,223
Wilson, Woodrow: 238-243,250-252,255-258,260-261,266,275,281,288-289,293,447-449,452-460,466-469
Wolf, George: 356
Wood, Daniel: 532
Woods Hole Oceanographic Institute: 254
World Bank: 85-86,88-89,95-98,100-103,105-109,118,121,124,126,130-132,296,301,302
World Future Society: 532
World Trade Organization (WTO): 113,114
World War 1:235,238,259-261,265,275,473,479,48^484,489,502
World War II: 502
WorldWatch Institute: 528
Wrangell-Rokassowsky, Carl: 378

Yago, Glenn: 80
Yeltsin, Boris: 300
Yilin, Yao: 122

Zakaria, Fareed: 304

ABOUT THE COVER

The use of the Great Seal of the United States is not without significance. At first we contemplated having an artist change the eagle into a vulture. That, we thought, would attract attention and also make a statement. Upon reflection, however, we realized that the vulture is really harmless. It may be ugly, but it is a scavenger, not a killer. The eagle, on the other hand, is a predator. It is a regal creature to behold, but it is deadly to its prey. Furthermore, as portrayed on the dollar, it is protected by the shield of the United States government even though it is independent of it. Finally, it holds within its grasp the choice between peace or war. The parallels were too great to ignore. We decided to keep the eagle.

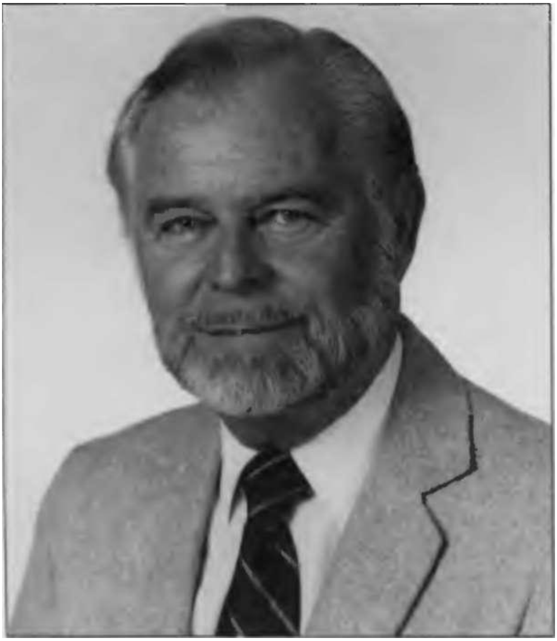

G. **Edward** Griffin is a writer and documentary film producer with many successful titles to his credit. Listed in *Who's Who in America,* he is well known because of his talent for researching difficult topics and presenting them in clear terms that all can

(Continued on inside of back cover)

Where does money come from? Where does it go? Who makes it? The money magicians' secrets are unveiled. Here is a close look at their mirrors and smoke machines, the pulleys, cogs, and wheels that create the grand illusion called money.

A boring subject? Just wait! You'll be hooked in five minutes. Reads like a detective story - which it really is. But it's all true. This book is about the most blatant scam of history. It's all here: the cause of wars, boom-bust cycles, inflation, depression, prosperity. Your world view will definitely change.

Putting it quite simply: this may be the most important book on world affairs you will ever read.

"A superb analysis deserving serious attention by all Americans. Be prepared for one heck of a journey through time and mind."

Ron Paul, member of Congress
House Banking Committee

"What every American needs to know about central bank power. A gripping adventure into the secret world of the international banking cartel."

Mark Thornton, Asst. Professor of Economics,
Auburn University; Coordinator Academic Affairs,
Ludwig von Mises Institute

"A magnificent accomplishment - a train-load of heavy history, organized so well and written in such a relaxed and easy style that it captivated me. I hated to put it down."

Dan Smoot
Publisher/Editor, Dan Smoot Report

"As a career banker and president of a bank consulting firm, I thought I had a good understanding of the Federal Reserve. But this book changed the way I view our entire monetary system."

Marilyn MacGruder Barnwall
Grand Junction, Colorado

AMERICAN MEDIA

P.O. Box 4646
Westlake Village
California 91359

ISBN 0-912986-18-2
51950>
9 780912 986180

(Continued from inside of front cover)

understand. He has dealt with such diverse subjects as archaeology and ancient earth history, terrorism, international banking, internal subversion, the history of taxation, U.S. foreign policy, the science and politics of cancer therapy, the Supreme Court, and the United Nations. Some of his previous works include *World without Cancer, The Discovery of Noah's Ark, Moles in High Places, The Open Gates of Troy, No Place to Hide, The Capitalist Conspiracy, More Deadly than War, The Grand Design, The Great Prison Break,* and *The Fearful Master*.

Mr. Griffin is a graduate of the University of Michigan where he majored in speech and communications. In preparation for writing this book, he enrolled in the College of Financial Planning located in Denver. His goal was not to become a professional financial planner but to better understand the real world of investments and money markets. He obtained his CFP designation (Certified Financial Planner) in 1989.

Mr. Griffin is a recipient of the coveted Telly Award for excellence in television production, a Contributing Editor for *The New American* magazine, the creator of *The Reality Zone Audio Archives,* and is President of American Media, a publishing and video-production company in Southern California.

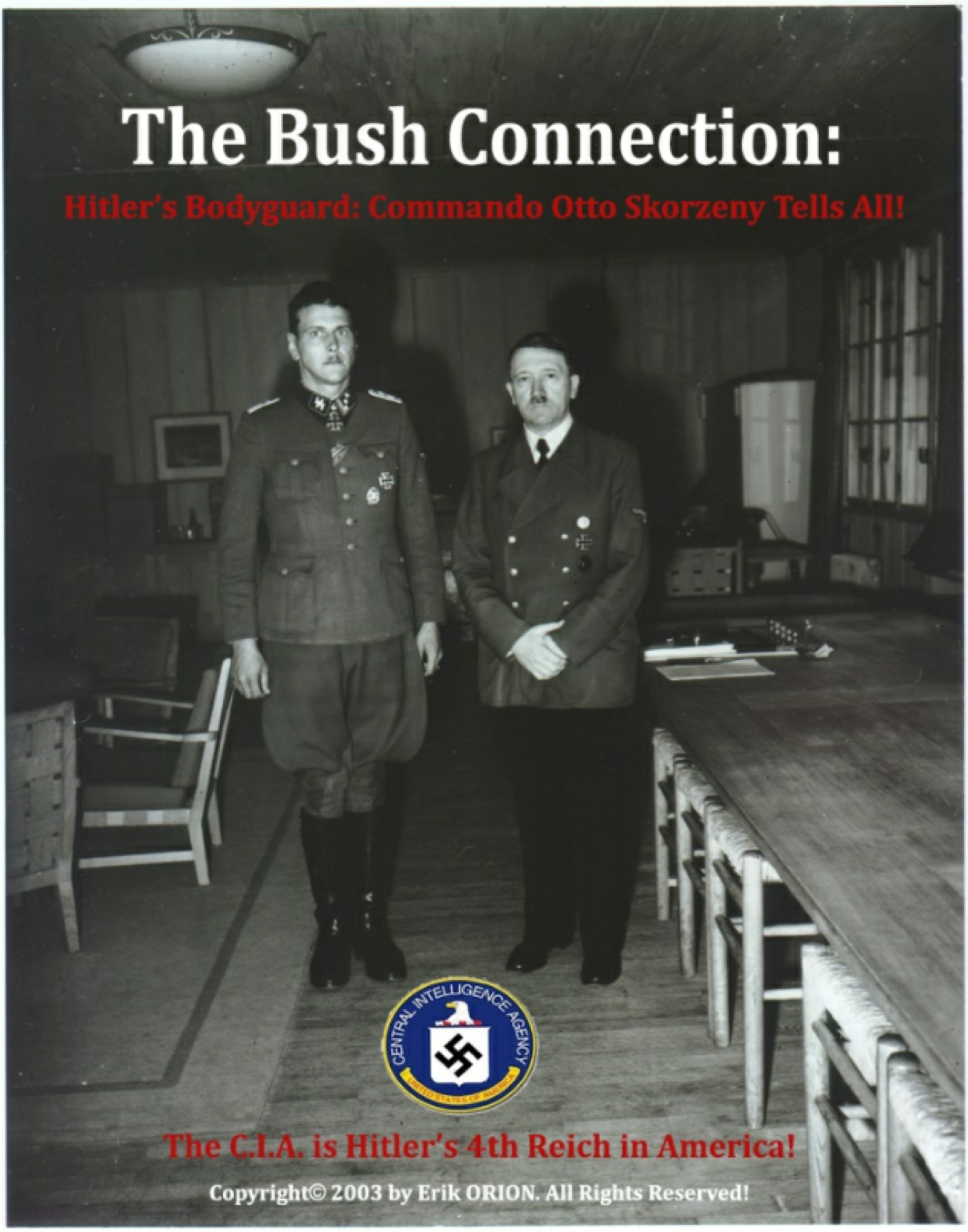
CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

The Bush Connection:

Hitler's Bodyguard: Commando Otto Skorzeny Tells All!

The C.I.A. is Hitler's 4th Reich in America!

Copyright© 2003 by Erik ORION. All Rights Reserved!

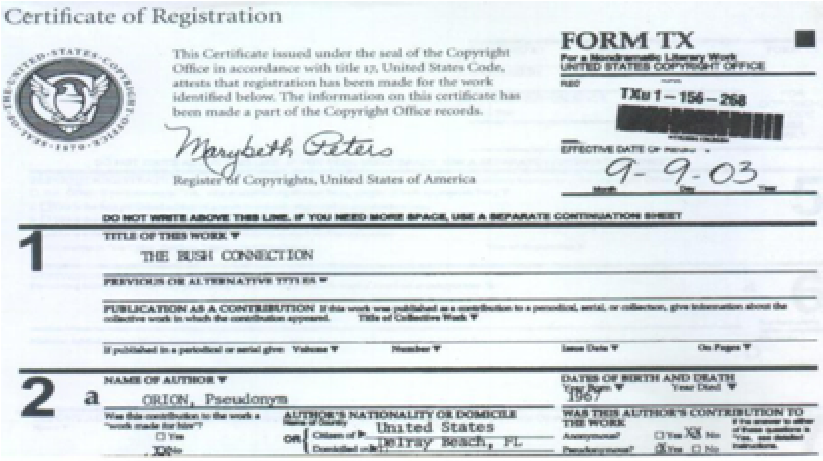

Certificate of Registration

This Certificate issued under the seal of the Copyright Office in accordance with title 17, United States Code, attests that registration has been made for the work identified below. The information on this certificate has been made a part of the Copyright Office records.

Marybeth Peters

Register of Copyrights, United States of America

FORM TX
For a Nondramatic Literary Work
UNITED STATES COPYRIGHT OFFICE

REG
TXu 1-156-268

EFFECTIVE DATE OF REGISTRATION
9-9-03
Month Day Year

DO NOT WRITE ABOVE THIS LINE. IF YOU NEED MORE SPACE, USE A SEPARATE CONTINUATION SHEET

1 TITLE OF THIS WORK ▼
THE BUSH CONNECTION

PREVIOUS OR ALTERNATIVE TITLES ▼

PUBLICATION AS A CONTRIBUTION If this work was published as a contribution to a periodical, serial, or collection, give information about the collective work in which the contribution appeared. Title of Collective Work ▼

If published in a periodical or serial give: Volume ▼ Number ▼ Issue Date ▼ On Pages ▼

2 a NAME OF AUTHOR ▼
ORION, Pseudonym

DATES OF BIRTH AND DEATH
Year Born ▼ 1967 Year Died ▼

Was this contribution to the work a "work made for hire"? ☐ Yes ☒ No

AUTHOR'S NATIONALITY OR DOMICILE
Name of Country
OR { Citizen of ▶ United States
Domiciled in ▶ Delray Beach, FL

WAS THIS AUTHOR'S CONTRIBUTION TO THE WORK
Anonymous? ☐ Yes ☒ No
Pseudonymous? [✓ Yes] ☐ No
If the answer to either of these questions is "Yes," see detailed instructions.

Copyright: TX1-156-268 9/9/2003 by ORION. All Rights Reserved!

All Rights Reserved! No part of this work may be reproduced or transmitted in any form by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying and recording, or by any information storage or retrieval system, except as may be expressly permitted by the **U.S. Copyright Act** or in writing by me, ORION. If you are the original purchaser of this Ebook, please feel free to print a paper copy for your own personal use.

The photos and alleged aliases of the SS Nazis discussed in this book were obtained directly from personal interviews with the C.I.A.'s SS Nazi commando employee: Otto Skorzeny. Skorzeny is pissed-off at George Herbert Walker Bush, the U.S. New World Order Government and his C.I.A. SS Nazi comrades for continually screwing him out of large sums of money throughout the years. Skorzeny does not care anymore about his C.I.A. Oath of Secrecy. He is close to death and wants the truth to be told about his life working for Hitler, Prescott & George H.W. Bush. He also wants the world to know that on January 6, 1943, he, along with SS Nazi Reinhardt Gehlen murdered the world's greatest inventor, Dr. Nikola Tesla, stole his best & most secret inventions & then took them back to Germany and gave them directly to Adolf Hitler.

The C.I.A. is still protecting its' beloved SS Nazis. Why? The C.I.A. is really the name of Hitler's

Third Reich in America. Germany never surrendered to the U.S. after WWII & the Nazis have been illegally in power in America ever since trying to create a Fourth Reich or New World Order. The U.S. Government knows that these Nazis are still alive but they refuse to do anything about it for liability reasons. They have been working slowly to create a New World Order in America since the end of WWII.

> "The Greatest Trick The Devil Ever Pulled Was Convincing The World That He Didn't Exist!"[1]

---

[1] "Verbal", a character in the motion picture, The Usual Suspects.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Introduction	Background of author and purpose for writing this book		Page 5
Chapter 1	Hitler & C.I.A.'s Beloved SS Nazi "Commando"-	Otto Skorzeny	Page 6
Chapter 2	Hitler & C.I.A.'s Beloved SS Nazi "Coward" – George H.W. Bush		Page 22
Chapter 3	The "Avalon Project" at Yale's Bogus Germany Surrender Agreement		Page 30
Chapter 4	Hitler & C.I.A.'s Beloved SS Nazi "Doctor Death" – Dr. Josef Mengele		Page 41
Chapter 5	C.I.A.'s Beloved Propaganda Master – Nazi Lover Frank Wisner		Page 57
Chapter 6	Hitler & C.I.A.'s Beloved SS Nazi "Spymaster"–	Reinhardt Gehlen	Page 63
Chapter 7	Hitler & C.I.A.'s Beloved SS Nazi "Butcher" -	Alois Brunner	Page 73
Chapter 8	Hitler & C.I.A.'s Beloved SS Nazi "Gas Passer"-	Walter Rauff	Page 79
Chapter 9	Hitler & C.I.A.'s Beloved SS Nazi "Head Collector" – Dr. August Hirt		Page 82
Chapter 10	National Archives Releases censored Nazi files		Page 85
Chapter 11	2001 Anthrax Attacks' The Work of neo-Nazis		Page 87
Chapter 12	Dr. Nikola Tesla "The Greatest Inventor Who Ever Lived"		Page 92
Chapter 13	The Philadelphia Experiment & How The Nazis Murdered Nikola Tesla		Page 99
Chapter 14	How The Bush Family "Bushwhacked" The 2000 Presidential Election		Page 114
Chapter 15	What is "Really" Inside of Area-51, Nevada		Page 116
Chapter 16	ISO 9001 the C.E.O.-Nazi Conspiracy to Bankrupt America		Page 119
Chapter 17	The C.I.A.'s Nazis' killed the Kennedy's. G.H.W. Bush Murdered J.F.K.		Page 121
Chapter 18	NASA "mooned" the world		Page 124
Chapter 19	How Bill Gates Became The Richest Man in the World		Page 124
Chapter 20	Cartoon Genius – Max Fleischer		Page 128
Chapter 21	Max Fleischer's Lost 1930's Tesla vs.The Nazis cartoon		Page 129
Chapter 22	Ari Fleischer's…New World Order Connection		Page 130
Chapter 23	Secret New World Order Base in Glacier National Park,		Page

	MT		131
Chapter 24	The Aurora Spy Plane & Donuts-on-a-Rope Vapor Contrail.		Page 134
Chapter 25	UFO Flying Disk Over Lake McDonald, Glacier N.P., MT		Page 141
Chapter 26	C.I.A.'s Optically Invisible Anti-Gravity Stealth Plane		Page 142
Chapter 27	Conclusion		Page 143
.	List of Sources......		Page 147

"Those Who Forget The Past Are Condemned To Re-Live It!"[2]

---

[2] Philosopher: George Santayana.

Introduction

My “pseudonym” is “ORION”, I’m Jewish & I hate Nazis! As far as I‘m concerned, the only “good” Nazi is a “dead” Nazi! Due to a strange twist of fate or a “Tesla Transmitter” in 1997 I became friends with the former SS Nazi commando and life-long C.I.A. employee, Otto Skorzeny. He had the largest hand I had ever shaken. His hands’ were huge! When I met him, he was 90 years old but due to his history of C.I.A. given facelifts at the expense of U.S. Tax-Payers, he looked about 80 years old. He was still very tall and imposing.

He was at least 6’4” tall and thinly built. His eyes were blue-green, however they looked dark black, with a strong, fanatical-type stare. I feel sorry for anyone who had a “disagreement” with Skorzeny when he was in his “prime”. You would not want to have met up with Skorzeny in a dark alley for any reason! After “awhile”, Otto Skorzeny told me about his career working for Hitler, Prescott Bush, the C.I.A. and the illegal secret agreement that he, Hitler, Frank Wisner, Prescott & George H. W. Bush made to bring Nazi-Germany to American and create a Fourth Reich or New World Order. He also told me about Hitler’s fascination with the great inventor, Dr. Nikola Tesla and with the famous cartoonist Max Fleischer who created the Superman □, Popeye □ and Betty Boop □ cartoons. Skorzeny no longer cares about his C.I.A. “Oath of Secrecy” and wants the world to know that on January 6, 1943, he along with SS Nazi Reinhardt Gehlen murdered the greatest inventor who ever lived, Dr. Nikola Tesla! The Nazis really won WWII & have been illegally in power in the United States of America ever since!

This book took more than five years of painstaking research to complete. It was written to help prove that the American C.I.A., O.S.I., F.B.I., U.S. Navy, & U.S. Air Force have been lying to the American people and the world since April 8,1945 about the identities and whereabouts of Nazis living in American today. Germany never actually surrendered at the end of WWII! George H.W. Bush pulled the all-time “fast one” on the American Public and the rest of the free world. He with the help from thousands of rich WASP, Republican Nazi-sympathizers in the “U.S. Government” illegally brought 50,000+ murdering Nazi scumbags to American, not just rocket scientists, gave them “fake” American identities and jobs meant for American Citizens. These same Nazis are not required to pay taxes!

This book is dedicated to the memory of the more than 6 million Jews and the millions of others who were killed during the Holocaust at the hands of murdering, Nazi scumbags. This book is also dedicated to the “The greatest inventor who ever lived,” Dr. Nikola Tesla. Without his magnificent inventions, modern man would cease to exist. Above all else, this book is dedicated to trying to stop Bush Jr., Trump and his C.I.A. New World Order SS Nazi, Republican “cronies” from creating a “Fourth Reich” in America. It has already begun! America must not become The United States of Germany! “During WWII, not one allied bomb was ever dropped on any Nazi concentration camp to try to liberate the Jews. It was deemed not cost effective.”[3]

---

[3] U.S. National Archives Holocaust Statistic

Otto Skorzeny - Hitler & C.I.A.'s Most Beloved Commando

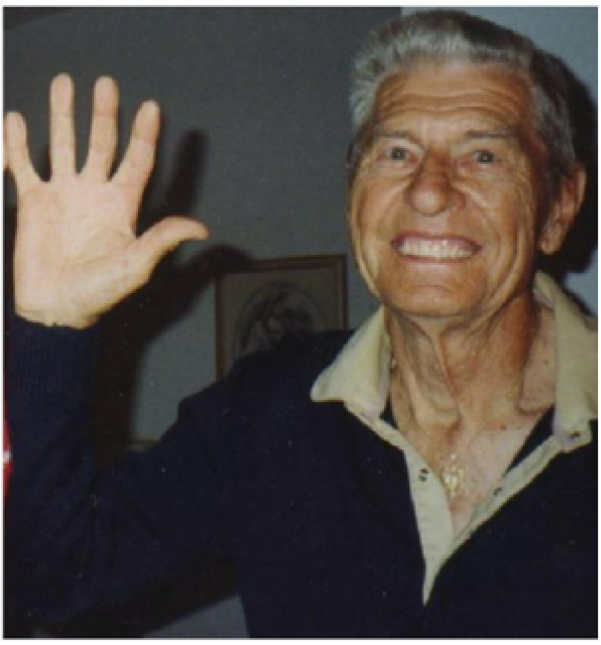

SS Nazi "Giant" 6'4" Otto Skorzeny & Hitler 1945

6'4" C.I.A. Commando "Retired" Otto Skorzeny aka: "Big Ed

Boynton Beach, Florida 1999

SS Nazi Otto Skorzeny was a giant of a man. He stood 6'4" tall and was very intelligent. He spoke at least six different languages. His hair was black & his eyes were blue-green with a fanatical-type stare. He was a true "Soldier of Fortune." During the Nuremburg Trials of 1945, Otto Skorzeny was acquitted of any Nazi war crimes. There was no evidence to suggest that he had committed any crimes. He was then officially hired by the O.S.S., given a facelift and a new American identity as Edward Frank P_ _ _ _ _. He was given the code-name "Feather" by the C.I.A. because of the way he rescued Mussolini from captivity by flying in on silent gliders. He was the C.I.A.'s enforcer & personally took part in clandestine U.S. Government operations worldwide. Unlike his Nazi comrades who were Holocaust killers, Skorzeny was a man of honor. Skorzeny liked the Western States. Retired commando Otto Skorzeny resides in Big Fork Montana.

"The secret to wealth, fame & fortune is to know something that no one else knows..."[4]

Skorzeny claimed that during WWII there were several "doubles" of himself, enabling him to travel to America to spy. The "real" Otto Skorzeny was tall & thinly built. The last living Skorzeny "double" is three inches shorter and much "bulkier" than the "real" Skorzeny. The Skorzeny double is still alive today and lives in Indiana. According to Skorzeny, Adolf Hitler held the highest secret clearance the "American" C.I.A. has. Next in line was Otto Skorzeny, George Bush, Reinhardt Gehlen, Frank Wisner, Josef Mengele, August Hirt, and all other C.I.A. Nazi employees. In 1976, the C.I.A. helped Skorzeny fake his own death, as they did with all of their SS Nazis'. With the C.I.A.'s direct help he created The Brotherhood of Aryan Nations "organized crime" hate group. He also had help from his New World Order, C.I.A. comrades like Hitler, George H.W. Bush, Mengele, Wisner, Gehlen, Hirt, et al..

Skorzeny, George H.W. Bush, Mengele, Wisner, Brunner, Rauff & Reinhardt Gehlen are allegedly the "brains" and "leaders" behind this infamous hate group. The entire U.S. Government including the C.I.A. have always known about the identities of its' SS Nazi sponsored Brotherhood of Aryan Nations organized crime hate group members. When a terror related attack happened in the U.S., like a Jewish synagogue being fire bombed or painted with swastikas, the U.S. Government has always "looked the other way", as would any other Nazi sympathizer. It would then deliberately re-direct its' investigation in an opposite direction. The U.S. Government knows that C.I.A. Assassin Dr. Mengele sent the anthrax in 2001, because they are the ones who ordered him to do it. The U.S. Government refuses to do anything about it for "liability reasons."[5]

Otto Skorzeny - The Younger Years...

---

[5] Otto Skorzeny

Otto Skorzeny- "Continued"

Skorzeny- 1930's Skorzeny – 1945 Skorzeny - 1945 Skorzeny - Florida 1994

Berlin 1933 Libya 1939 N.J. 1973	N.J. 1974	N.J.1979	Montana 1997 Florida 1999	
U.S.A.	U.S.A.	U.S.A.	U.S.A.	U.S.A.

SS Nazi - Sturmbannführer Otto Skorzeny was the most colorful and the most famous Waffen SS commander during WWII. His daring rescue of Mussolini from Gran Sasso made him world famous and his subsequent missions during the Ardennes Offensive and in Hungary during Operation Panzerfaust gave him the title among the Allies of *"The Most Dangerous Man in Europe"* His extraordinary wartime career was one of high risk and adventure. Otto Skorzeny was "supposedly" born on June 12th, 1908 to a typical middle class Viennese family. He attended the University of Vienna to study engineering. While he attended school he was a member of the fencing club. He earned an "honor scar" or schmisse on his left cheek and was later known as "*Scar Face*." He joined the Nazi Party in the twenties and signed up with the SS. During WWII he proved himself to be a superior soldier and was quickly promoted from enlistee to noncommissioned officer, and finally to officer. Skorzeny participated in the invasion of Holland and France, the invasion of the Balkans, and finally in the invasion of Russia, where he was wounded in late 1941 and returned home to convalesce.

Otto Skorzeny proved his worth - in 1942 he was awarded the Iron Cross, and in April 1943 he was promoted to captain and named ‘Chief of Germany's Special Troops, Existing or to be Created in the Future’. When Hitler's old friend Benito Mussolini was overthrown and imprisoned in Italy at Gran Sasso in 1943, it was Skorzeny who successfully planned and led the daring rescue, winning the Knight’s Cross and promotion as a result. Adolf Hitler intended to put Mussolini back on the seat of a puppet government in the part of Italy occupied by the Germans and he personally ordered Otto Skorzeny to rescue Mussolini. Skorzeny tracked Mussolini across half of Italy for a month and a half until he finally found him at the Hotel Campo, a resort high in the Gran Sasso Mountains. September 8, the Germans intercepted a coded message by the Italians confirming the presence of Mussolini on the Gran Sasso. Skorzeny formulated a daring plan and went right into action. He took a contingent of his troops up in gliders and crashed them on the steep rocky slopes surrounding the hotel. He and his troops rushed out and stormed the hotel, capturing the place without a shot. After finding the room where Mussolini was held prisoner, Skorzeny entered, knocked down the chair of the radio operator, destroyed the transmitting equipment and standing to attention he exclaimed: *Duce, the Fuhrer has sent me to set you free!* Mussolini was promptly loaded onto a “special”, Fieseler STORCH aircraft that landed after the assault and flown to Vienna. On the arrival at the Hotel Continental, where a suite had been prepared, they received a hero's welcome and Hitler telephoned to congratulate him.

9

Gran Sasso, Italian Alps

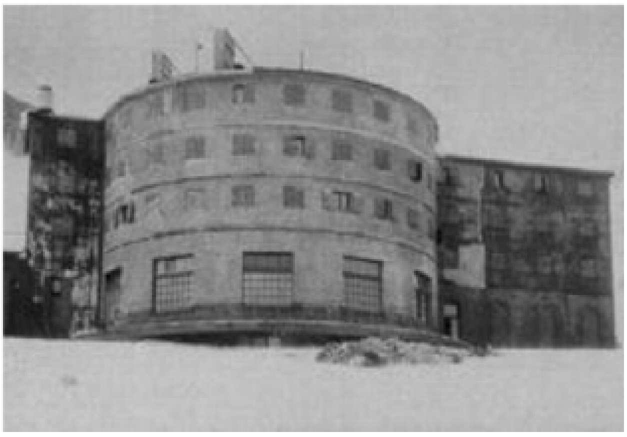

Gran Sasso, Italian Alps

Skorzeny's Glider Squadron

Skorzeny rescuing Mussolini on September 12, 1943.

11

Skorzeny & Mussolini

Skorzeny & Mussolini

Skorzeny & Mussolini

12

Skorzeny & Mussolini

43 FS
Fieseler
STORCH

Commando: Otto Skorzeny Rescued Mussolini with a Fieseler Fi-156 "STORCH."
A "special" plane developed for short take-offs & landings.

12-9-1943-XXI
Otto Skorzeny

Mussolini gave Skorzeny an autographed aviators’ Swiss watch for rescuing him.

13

Skorzeny's talents were brought into play again when he was sent to Budapest to prevent the

Hungarian regent Admiral Horthy from signing a separate peace with Stalin in 1944. His reputation thus enhanced, 'the most dangerous man in Europe' was promoted again and awarded the German Cross in Gold. A few months later he took a critical role in the Ardennes offensive, with a controversial plan to raise an armored brigade disguised as Americans, using captured Sherman tanks, to spread chaos and confusion. Ten days after the war's end Skorzeny gave himself up to the Americans who had launched a massive search for 'The Most Dangerous Man in Europe'. He was put on trial held prisoner until July 27th 1948. It was on this day that in true commando fashion he escaped. His whereabouts after his escape remained a mystery as Russian agents, Jewish organizations hunted for him all over Europe but the ex-commando was not in Europe. In fact he had fled to Argentina and became close to Juan and Eva Peron who was interested in recovering all the German gold and money from the days of the Reich. Otto Skorzeny organized the Police into the most brutal in South America and also acted as Eva Peron`s bodyguard foiling at least one attempt on her life.

His post-war activities included his service as an adviser to Gamal Nasser, dictator in Egypt. Skorzeny eventually settled in Spain and became a successful engineering consultant for several years. His later years were all spent on helping his SS comrades to escape justice. He founded a secret organization called the "Odessa" which helped former *SS* Nazi members escape the hunt for Nazi war criminals. Some of the better known people the organization is said to have helped is Adolf Hitler, Josef Mengele, Frank Wisner, Alois Brunner, Walter Rauff, Reinhardt Gehlen, Adolf Eichmann, & August Hirt. When the O.S.S. "officially" hired him in at the end of 1945, he was given the codename "Feather" because of the way he silently flew in on gliders to rescue Mussolini. [6] According to history books, Otto Skorzeny - '*The Most Dangerous Man in Europe*' "supposedly" died comfortably in Madrid July, 1975 - in his bed. [7]

> "The Greatest Trick The Devil Ever Pulled Was Convincing The World That He Didn't Exist!"[8]

---

[6] Otto Skorzeny

[7] National Archives, Washington D.C.

[8] "Verbal" a character from the motion picture, "The Usual Suspects."

American P.O.W. - Otto Skorzeny

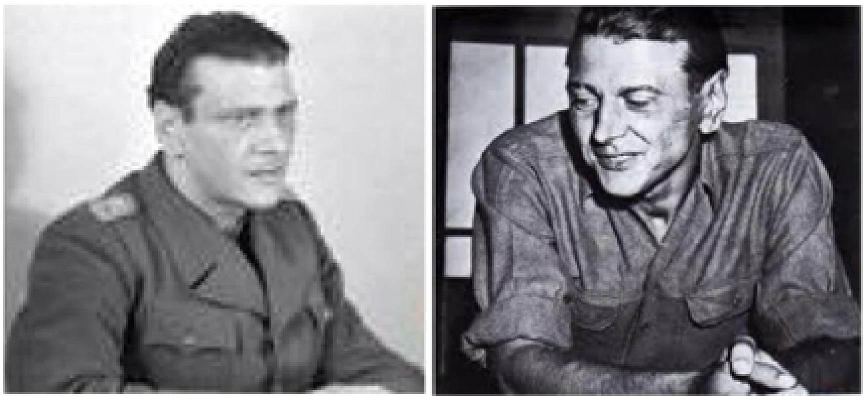

Skorzeny being interrogated by the American OSS in Dachau.

15

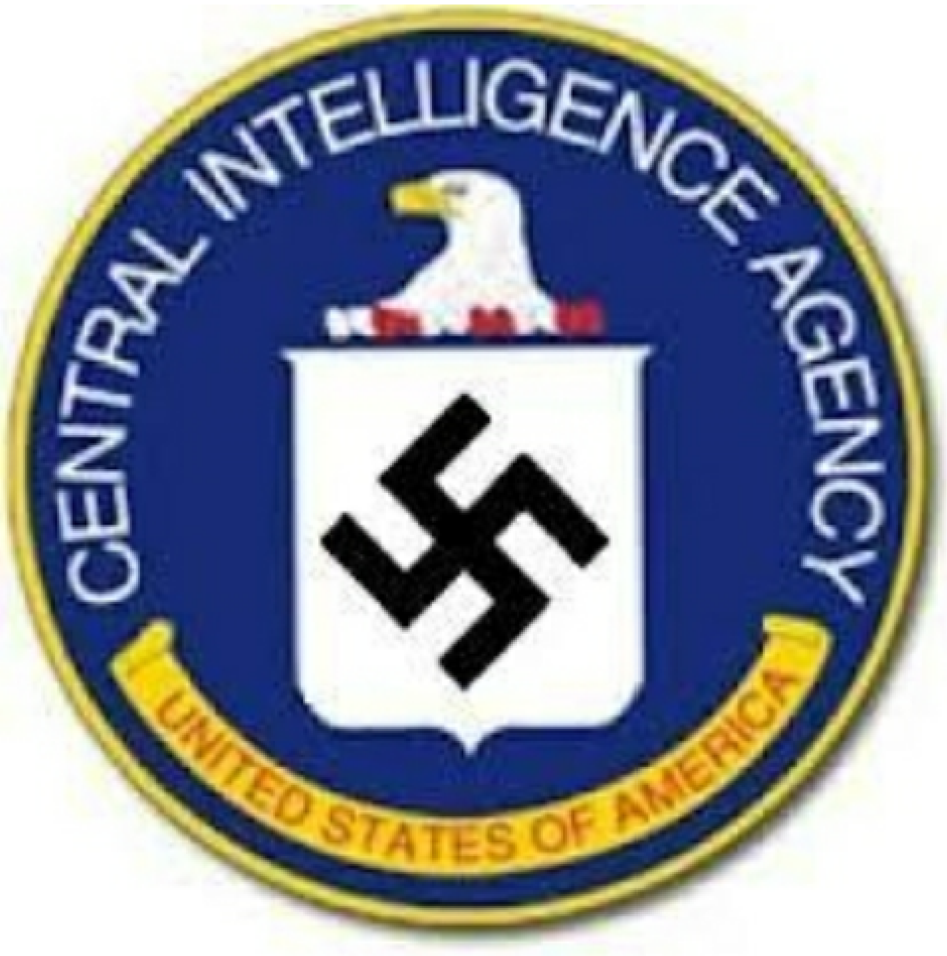
CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

Commando Otto Skorzeny's C.I.A. Days After WWII...

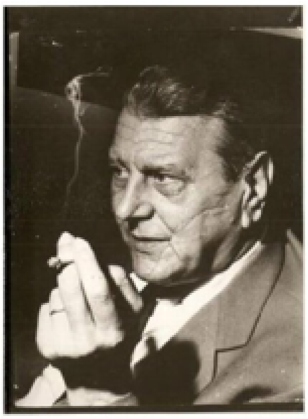

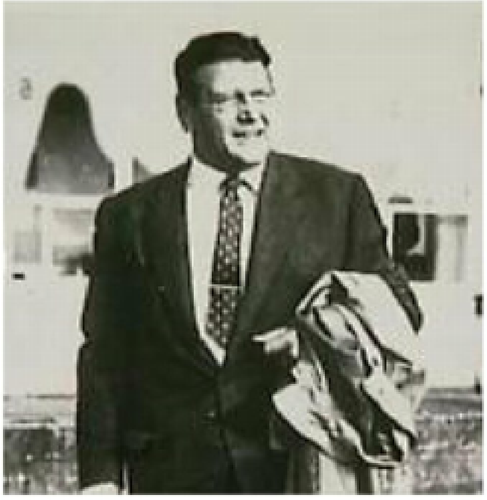

Mechanised Farming

Otto Skorzeny.

Skorzeny was a C.I.A. Assassin & Money Courier / Bag-Man

Wisner Mengele's "Still Alive!"

Brunner SS Nazi Pilot: Hanna Reitsch

⇩⇩⇩

Skorzeny

⇩⇩

Reinhardt Gehlen

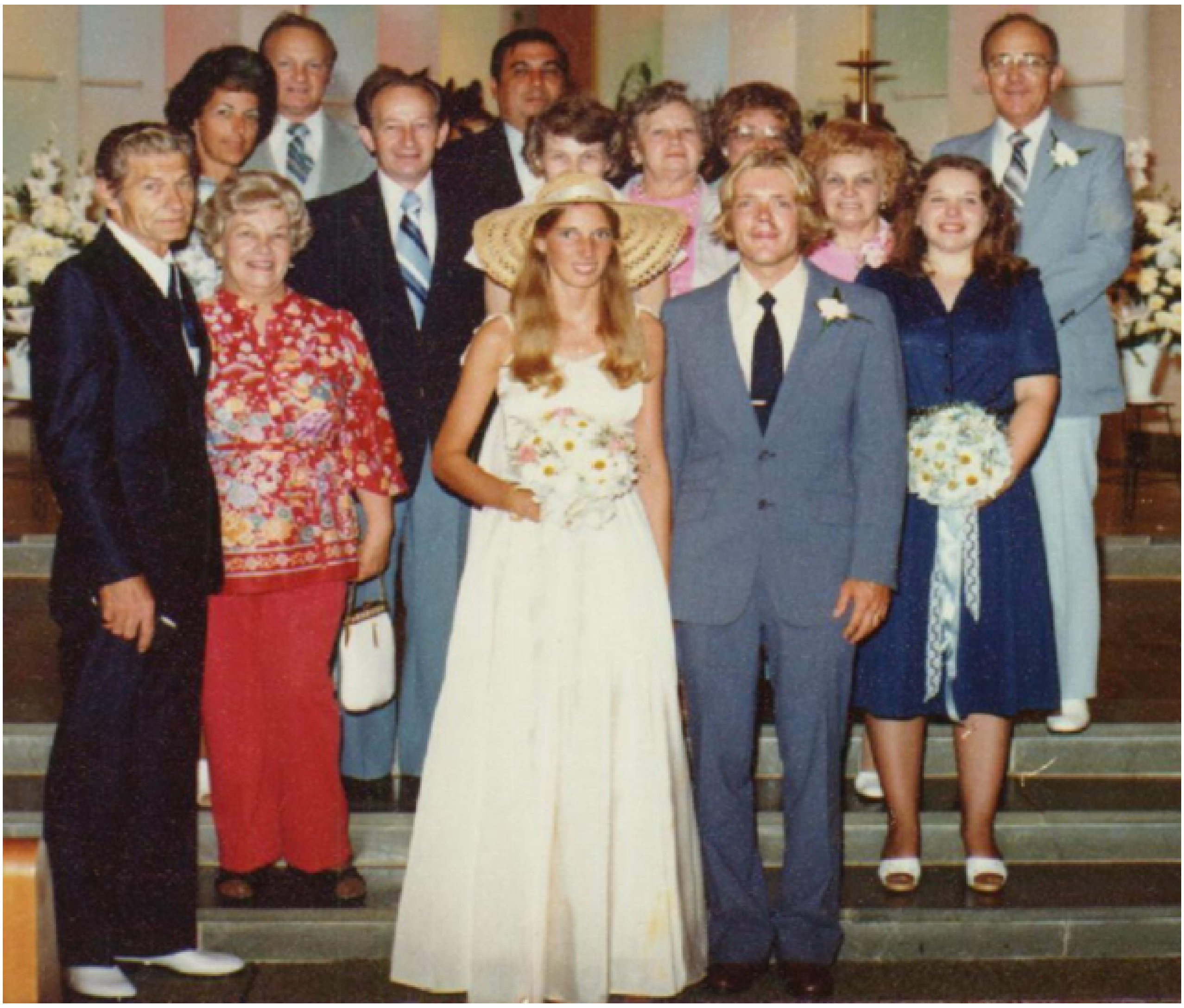

{Gehlen} Wedding August 11, 1979

Never Before Published Photo.

Skorzeny & Older Daughter

Skorzeny & Mengele 1999

17

SS Nazi- General Reinhardt Gehlen	SS Nazi- Alois Brunner	SS Nazi- Walter Rauff	C.I.A. - Spook Frank Wisner

⇩ Mengele "Looking Down"

C.I.A. Employee: Otto Skorzeny AKA: "Big Ed" The C.I.A. "Spook" Royal Family October

1998

George H. Scherff Jr. Mengele

aka: George HW Bush

Prescott Bush

Skorzeny

American O.S.S.
Frank Wisner

Nazi - Gehlen

18

Despite what the C.I.A./*SS* Nazi written, censored, history books say, Hitler did not commit suicide! As the Russian tanks were overtaking Berlin, a very "poor-quality" Hitler "look-a-like", with fake, "bushy" eyebrows was shot in the head by Otto Skorzeny, to make it appear as if he committed suicide.[9] Hitler's personal "female" SS Nazi pilot; Hanna Reitsch flew a Fieseler-156c
"STORCH" disguised as a "Red Cross" relief plane to "Der Führer" bunker.

Reitsch picked up Hitler & Skorzeny and flew them away. All three landed safely in Salzburg, Austria a short time later! Once Hitler was safely hidden away by the Vatican, Skorzeny turned himself in to the Americans', as planned. He instantly became the "founding father" of the American O.S.S. and later the C.I.A. Hitler's plan to create a Fourth Reich in America & ultimately rule the world was right on schedule with "his" fearless, giant, SS Nazi Commando: Otto Skorzeny leading the way!

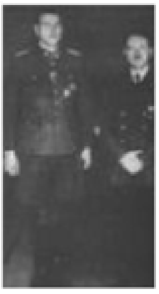

deutschland

SS Nazi -
Pilot
Hanna
Reitsch
1938.

"Hitler's Bogus Corpse"   The "Real" Hitler   Skorzeny + Hitler   FW-61 Gyroplane

Deutschlandhalle, Berlin Germany.

Skorzeny & Hanna Reitsch   Fieseler Fi-156c "STORCH"   Fieseler Fi-156c "STORCH"

Libya (1939)

The C.I.A. Faked Hanna Reitsch's Death in 1979.

Schaub
Gablenz
Reitsch
Below
Kirchhoff
6-11-37
Hitler
Untucht

---

[9] Otto Skorzeny

Due to a “forged” surrender agreement with the United States of America, at the end of WWII, 50,000+ murdering Nazi scumbags were illegally brought to America, “not just a few Nazi rocket scientists”, with Frank Wisner & Prescott & George H.W. Bush’s direct help and guidance. These Nazis were then hired by the American (O.S.S.) the Office of Strategic Services, now known as the C.I.A. For some unknown reason, American scientists at the time, were not capable of building a rocket for space travel nor to land a man on the moon? As a result of these “dumb” American scientists, SS Nazi war criminals posing as scientists had to be illegally smuggled into America to help us defeat the Russians? Huh?

The high ranking SS Nazis were given extra special treatment from the U.S. Government after WWII. They were given false American identities, in most cases, face lifts, they were given high paying American jobs working on our government’s rocket program and other high tech Top Secret warfare related programs. The evilest SS Nazi doctors like Josef Mengele & August Hirt were immediately hired by the C.I.A. and were U.S. Government paid consultants to the largest medical companies in the world. Companies like W.R. Grace Co., Bayer, Merck and American Home Products. These SS Nazi doctors were hired by the pharmaceutical companies to take advantage of their test results for all of their years of sick, sadistic, unnecessary, medical experiments conducted on millions of tortured and then killed, Holocaust Jews. Dr. Josef Mengele is an employee of the Republican, neo-con controlled W.R. Grace Company.

Otto Skorzeny’s Secret C.I.A. Stash Cane!

C.I.A. Secret Stash Cane C.I.A./Nazi “Flat Head” Eagle Concealed Test Tube

For Hiding Poisons

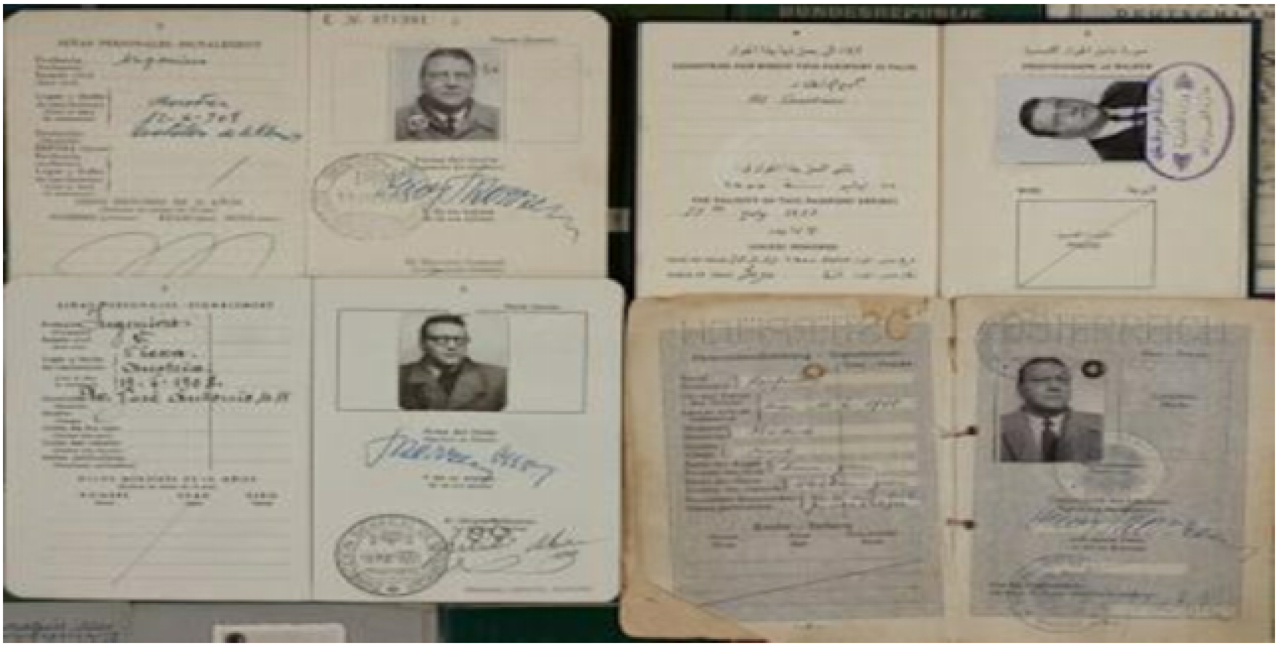

Skorzeny’s C.I.A. Passports

Hitler & Skorzeny…“Still Alive!” 1997

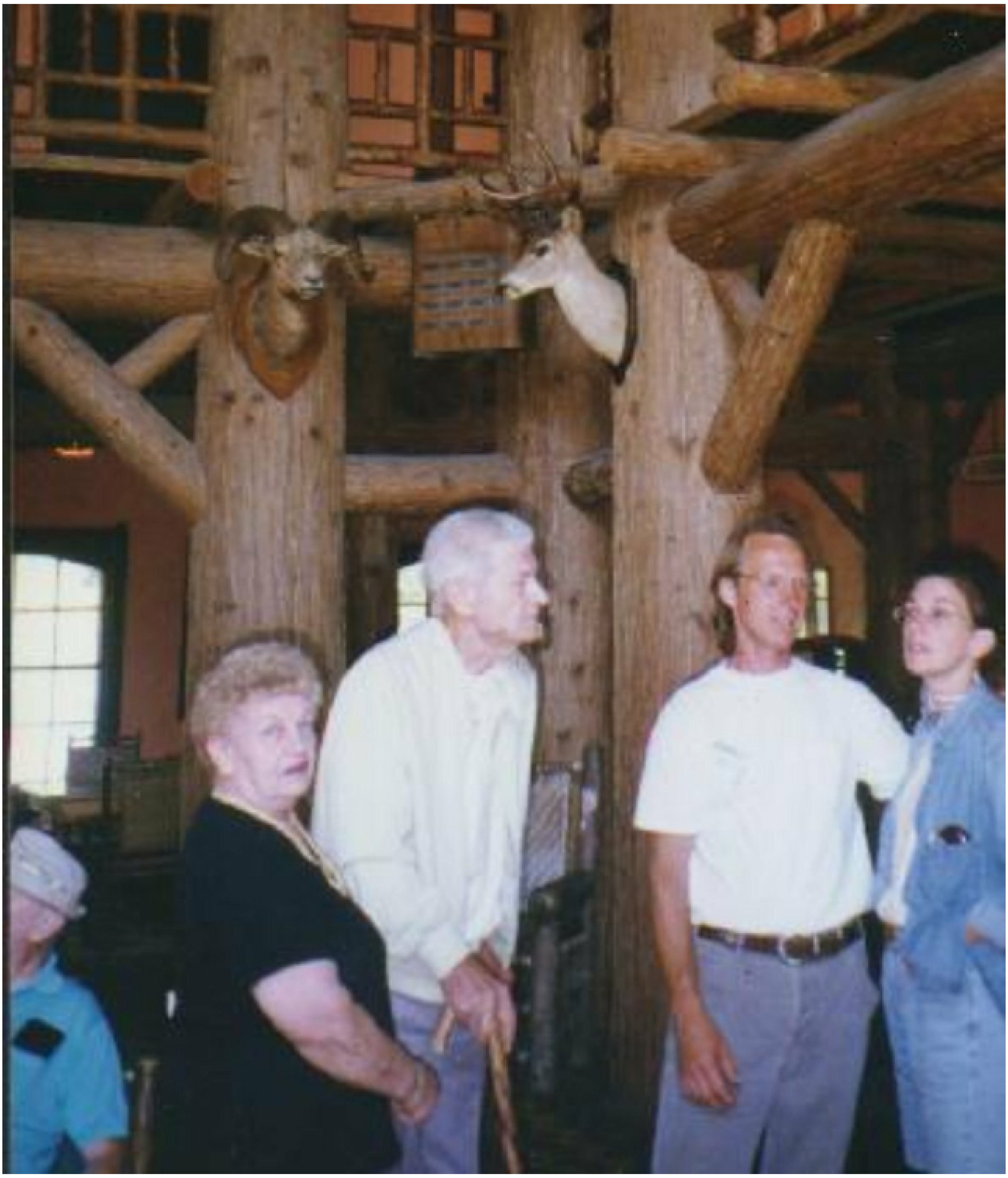

*FYI: William

Coates the oldest
man in America
died in 2/2004 at
114 years of age!

107 Year Old

Adolf Hitler!

The “real” Hitler
had a surgically
altered/ deformed
left ear & two
round crater
indentations above
one another on
his left cheek.

Hitler & Otto Skorzeny at McDonald Lodge Glacier National Park, Montana 8/27/1997

This is the only photo in existence of Adolph Hitler taken after his alleged suicide in 1945. Hitler was the oldest living man in America when he died in February 2004, in Bethesda, MD at the age of 114 year old! His American alias was **William Coates**. *Fact!

Piece of shit #1 Hitler & il Duce, Piece of Shit #2

George H.W. Bush: Hitler & C.I.A.'s Most Beloved Coward

Skorzeny alleges that George Herbert Walker Bush was an SS Nazi spy, as was he. "Allegedly", George H.W. Bush was born in Austria as George H. Scherff Jr., the son of Dr. Nikola Tesla's German born, illegal immigrant, accountant George H. Scherff Sr. George Sr. had been robbing Tesla blind for years & giving Tesla's secret inventions directly to Adolph Hitler. In

1938, Hitler sent 14 year old George H. Scherff Jr. to America to try to befriend, spy on, & kill the Great Inventor, Dr. Nikola Tesla! George later forged a birth certificate evidencing he was older. He falsely claimed that his last name was Bush, the son of Prescott & joined the U.S. Navy. Skorzeny claims that he did not fly 58 combat missions for the U.S. Navy as claimed. He also claims that George H.W. Bush deliberately sabotaged his Grumman TBF Avenger. He radioed his position to his Nazi-comrades waiting in a German Submarine below, shot his instrument panel full of holes, and then he put the plane into a steep nosedive, & parachuted to safety. His tail-gunner Lt. Junior Grade William White and Radioman Second Class John Delaney were not able to get out of the plane and parachute to safety because of the tremendous g-forces. The radioman & tail gunner were both killed while George Herbert Walker Bush survived. The "sunken" Grumman Avenger Torpedo Bomber was then towed out to sea by the German U-Boat to a large cargo ship waiting close by. The cargo ship had a giant crane on board that was used to lift the "fully-intact", Avenger onto the ship. The cargo ship then sailed undisturbed back to Germany. That's how Nazi-Germany was able to "steal" America's advanced Top Secret, "rotating 50 caliber machine-gun turret", TBF Avenger Bomber technology. George H.W. Bush you deserve to be tried & convicted as a Nazi war criminal just like Prescott was!

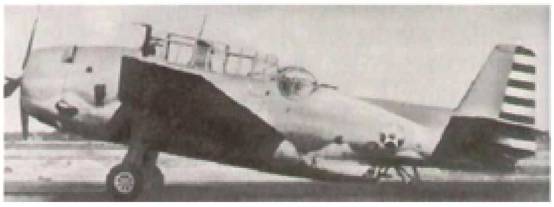

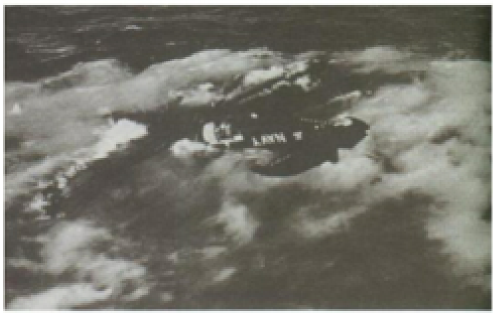

Grumman TBF Avenger- "Traitor, Coward" Bush Photo of a "crashed" Navy Plane

NikolaTesla
George H. Scherff Sr.

Institute of Radio Engineers Banquet Meeting. New York City, 1915.

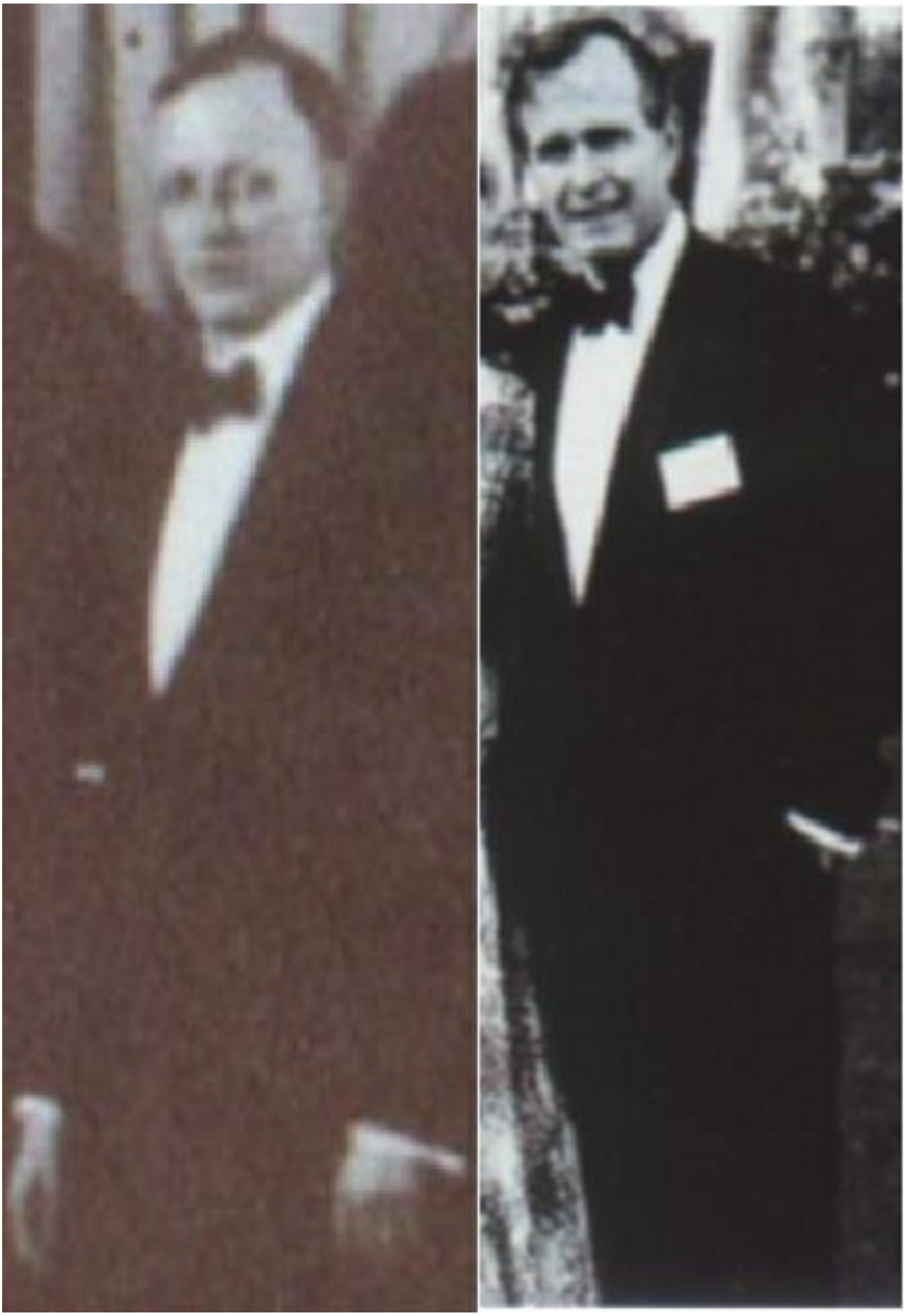

Tesla's Accountant; Nazi Spy-George H. Scherff Sr. is George H.W. Bush's "real" father. Notice the resemblance?

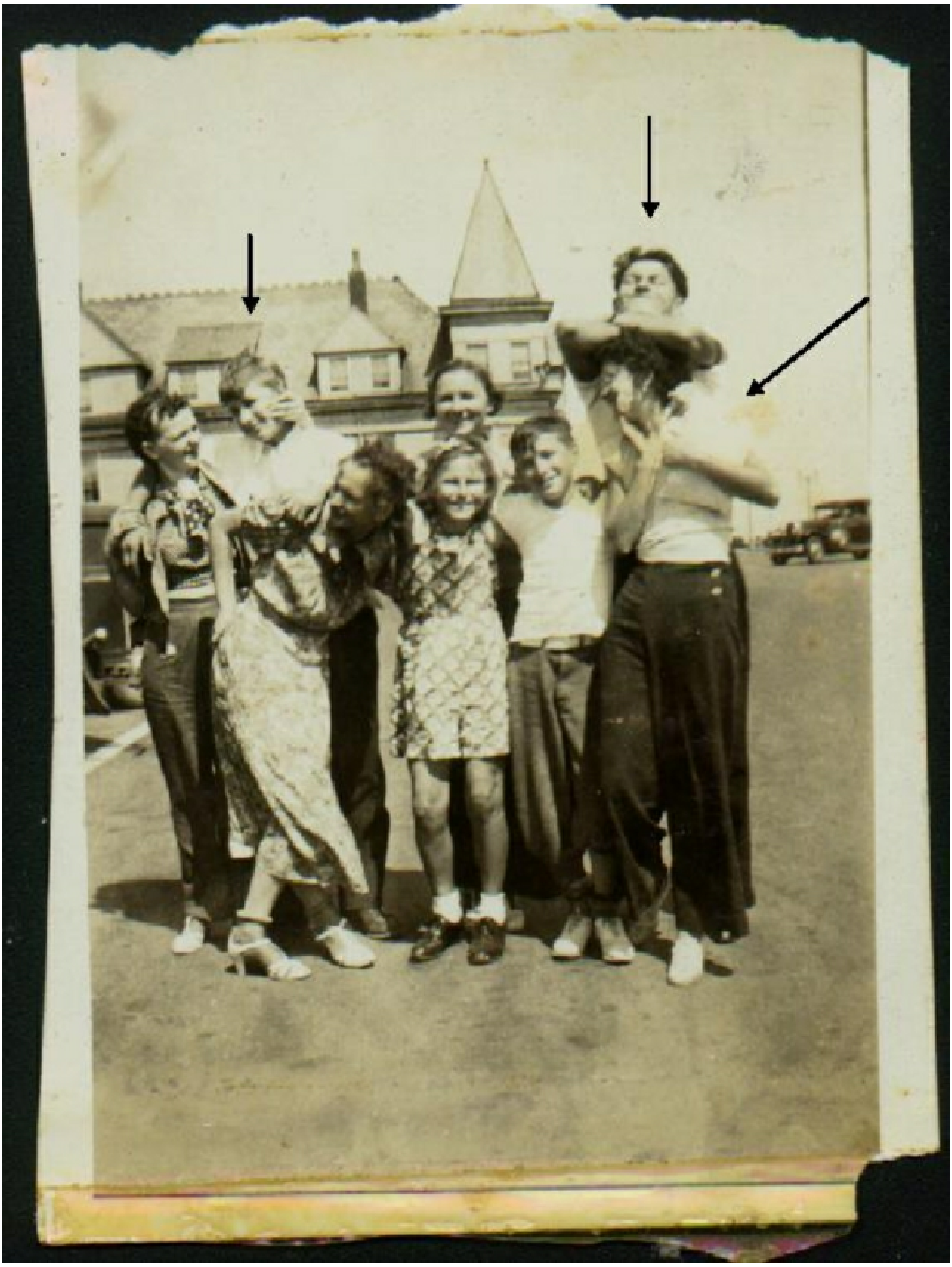

George H. Scherff Jr. aka: Skorzeny
George H.W. Bush

Leni
Riefenstall

Barbara (Pierce) ⟶ Bush

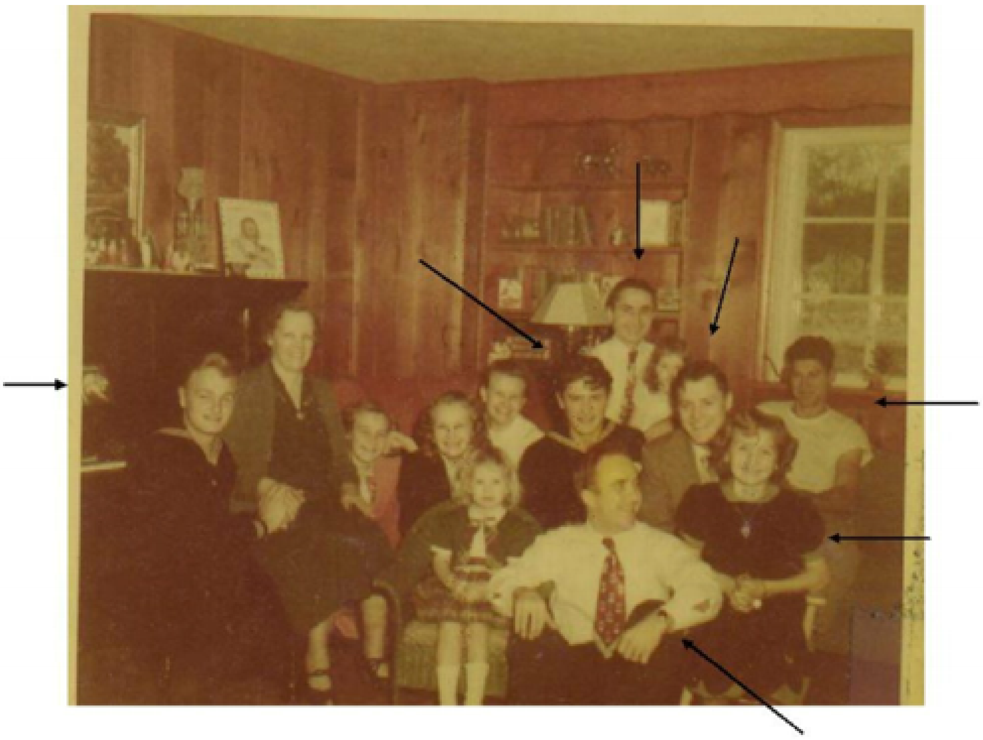

George H. Scherff Jr. aka:

George H.W. Bush

American O.S.S.
Director / U.S.
Navy
Frank Wisner

Barbara (Pierce) Bush

George H. Scherff Jr. aka:

Skorzeny George H.W. Bush

Leni Riefenstall

Hitler's
Photographer

Mengele

Prescott Bush

Skorzeny

Mommy Bush

1941? American O.S.S. / Nazi-Bush Family Reunion Gehlen

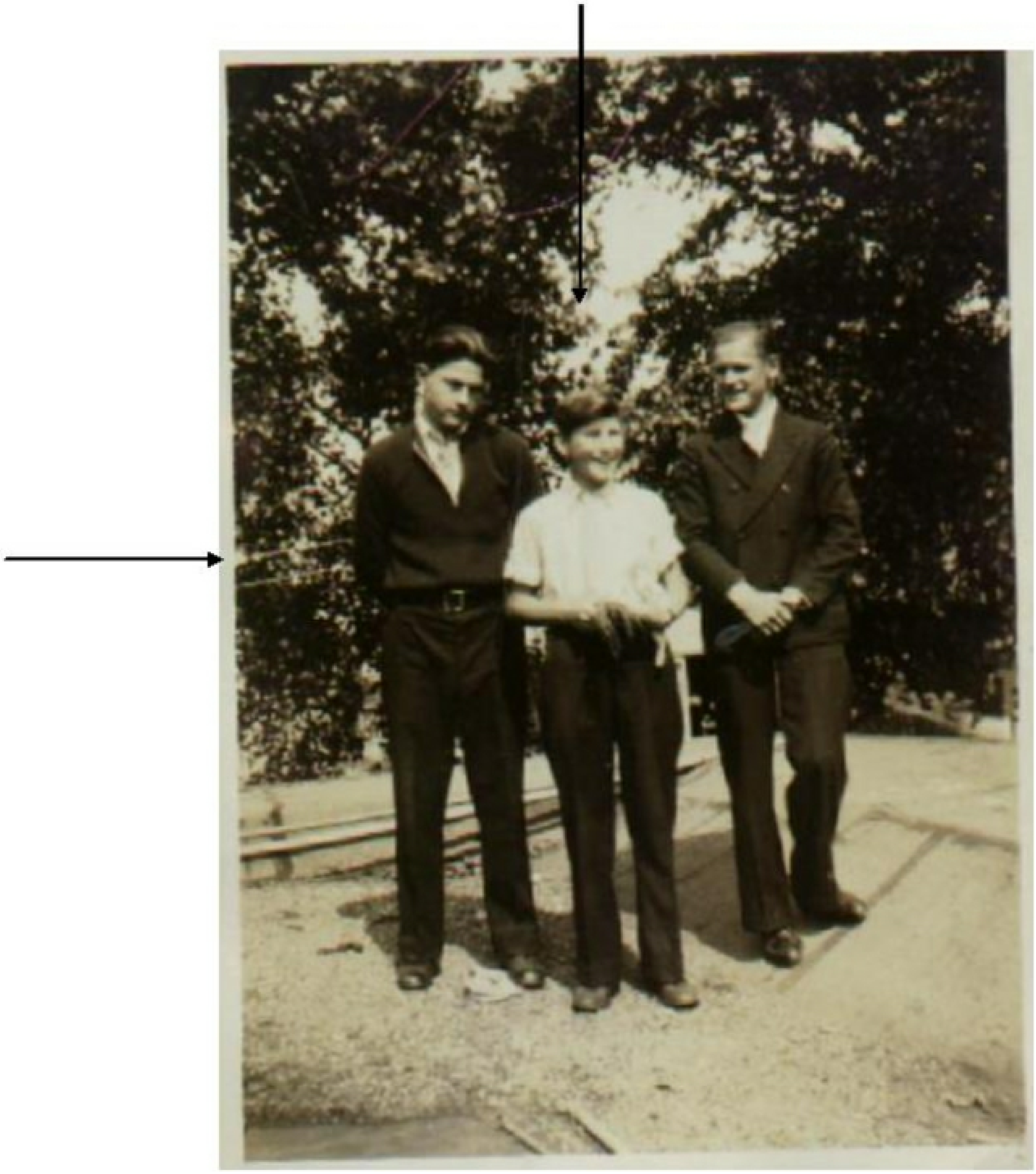

George H. Scherff Jr. aka:
George H.W. Bush

Prescott Bush

Skorzeny

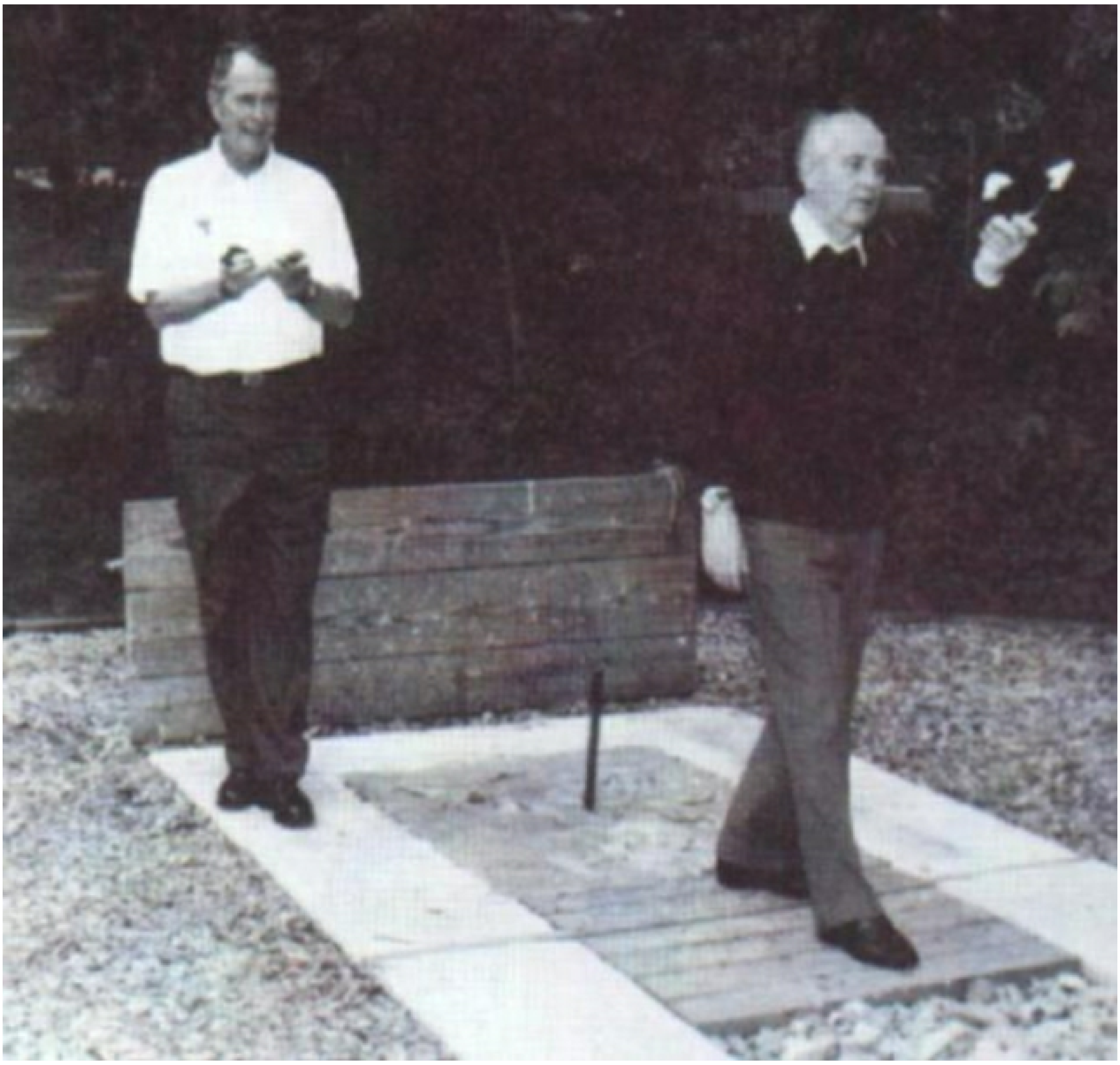

Young George throwing horseshoes (1938)

"Old" George throwing horseshoes with Mikhail Gorbachev (1990)

George H. Scherff Jr. aka: George H.W. Bush & Mommy Bush
Kennebunkport, ME.

“Real” American WWII Hero Pilot – “Chester Mierzejewski’s” Comments’ on George H.W. Bush...

Chester Mierzejewski, an old war buddy of Bush, who said he was angered by the "false assertions" made by candidate Bush when describing the incident, gave a different account. After 44 years of silence, Mierzejewski, who also was awarded the Distinguished Flying Cross, told the New York Post that Bush had abandoned his crew to death when there was another choice. He said he was approximately 100 feet in front of Bush's plane as the turret gunner for Squadron Commander Douglas Melvin's plane, "so close he could see in the cockpit" of Bush's bomber. Mierzejewski's close wartime buddy was one of the two crew members in Bush's plane. According to Mierzejewski, the squadron was in a tight formation bombing raid against a Japanese radio installation on an island reported to be heavily fortified. He saw "a puff of smoke" come from Bush's plane which quickly disappeared and was certain only one man parachuted from the plane and that it was Bush, the pilot. Mierzejewski said the Avenger torpedo bomber was engineered so that it could successfully crash land on water and that Bush doomed his own crew by bailing out and leaving the bomber out of control. Other World War II veterans also expressed concern about Bush parachuting out of the aircraft. "He had a moral obligation to put that plane in the water in an emergency landing," Robert Flood, a former B-17 bombardier told the press. "George H.W. Bush violated the primary rule for a captain of a multi-crew aircraft; The pilot always leaves last. He never leaves the airplane with anybody in it!"

Pete Brandon, a Marine Corps Avenger pilot, who also served in the South Pacific, said an Avenger pilot had two choices: Set the plane down in the water or hold it steady until the two crewmen could prepare to jump. "In an Avenger, only the pilot wore a parachute," Brandon said. "The two crewmen wore harnesses. If the order came to bail out, they had to take chest parachutes from a shelf and strap them on - and bail out. The Avenger was very unstable. The pilot had to be at the controls the whole time or it would go right over on its back." Steve Hart, then Vice President Press Secretary, described Mierzejewski's account as absurd. Hart said, "The Vice President has told us time and time again what happened that day. To suggest that the account is inaccurate is absurd." What is absurd is the conflicting or missing reports of exactly what happened to Bush's two crew members. According to the Post, the intelligence report on the loss of Bush's plane in September, 1944 notes that it had become "standard doctrine" for VT 51, Bush's bomber squadron, "to make bombing runs on targets near water so as to retire over the water. This puts pilot and crew in position for water rescue in event of forced landing. The same document reports, without attribution, that "smoke and flame" engulfed Bush's engine, and that "Bush and one other person were seen to bail out.

The chute of the other person who bailed out did not open." The report was signed by Melvin and an intelligence officer, Lt. Martin E. Kilpatrick. Contrary to normal military procedure, the report was not dated and Navy archives were unable to supply a subsequently completed report. Gunner Lawrence Mueller, who lives in Milwaukee, flew on the Chi Chi Jima mission. When asked who had the best view, he replied unhesitatingly: "The turret gunner in Melvin's plane."

Mueller's recollections, jogged by a log book that he kept, support Mierzejewski's account. And it was noted that Bush's plane was the only one from the squadron that did not return. Mueller told the Post, "No parachute was sighted except Bush's when the plane went down." He also said no one mentioned a fire engulfing Bush's plane or he would have noted it in the log book. The Finback, the sub which picked up Bush from his raft in the water, made no report of a fire on Bush's plane, but did comment on his crew: "Bush stated that he failed to see his crew's parachutes and believed they had jumped when the plane was still over Chi Chi Jima, or they had gone down with the plane." About six hours later, the Finback picked up another pilot, James W. Beckman, from the USS Enterprise, who stated that it was known that only one man had parachuted from Bush's plane. "This decided us to discontinue any further search of that area . . ." [10]

Although the heart of Bush's story about the incident remains the same, Mierzejewski is adamant Bush's account is not the truth and blames Bush for the abandonment and deaths of both men. "I think he could have saved those lives, if they were alive. I don't know that they were, but at least they had a chance if he had attempted a water landing," Mierzejewski said. This horrible crime was perpetrated to help the young Nazi, George Herbert Walker Bush establish a false reputation for being a great American WWII hero. Hitler's plan to take over the world was right on schedule. George Herbert Walker Bush, is not an American War Hero! He is a sabotaging Nazi traitor! George Herbert Walker Bush should be tried for Treason.

Allegedly, Hitler and Prescott Bush setup the American Office of Strategic Services or O.S.S. with young George Herbert Walker Bush and SS Nazi commando, Otto Skorzeny as its' leaders'. The Office of Strategic Services, really stood for the "Other SS" Gestapo. Skorzeny and George H.W. Bush then bribed the Great American War I Hero, "Wild" Bill Donovan to go along with their plans. Donovan initially refused to help, as would any red-blooded American Hero, so the Nazis killed his daughter and made it look like an "apparent" car accident. The Nazis/C.I.A. are very good at causing deadly car accidents or "giving heart attacks" to people who stand in their way of creating a New World Order! Skorzeny claims that George H.W. Bush was/is a heroin junky. He was constantly "smacked-out" to escape his guilty conscience! That's how he earned his nickname "Poppy!"

Prescott Bush, George H.W.'s "alleged" father, was arrested during 1942 for trading with the enemy, the Nazis! Prescott Bush's Union Banking Corp. was supporting and doing business with Hitler's Nazis' throughout WWII as was Ford, Edison, Marconi, I.B.M. et al...The Nazis in Germany were sending their stolen Jewish Holocaust "loot" to Prescott Bush in America to "launder" and to save for creating a Fourth Reich in America. Roosevelt had his company seized under the Trading with the Enemy Act.[11] When Prescott Bush died, George H.W. Bush inherited millions of dollars of stolen Jewish Holocaust loot, which he "allegedly" used to fund his own presidential elections, other conservative right-wing, neo-Nazi Republican candidates, hate groups like the Brotherhood of Aryan Nations, abortion doctor killer supporters like Operation Rescue, The Christian Coalition, the KKK & C.I.A. sponsored Al-Qaeda terrorists.

[10] The New York Post.

[11] Trading With the Enemy, by Charles Higham 1983

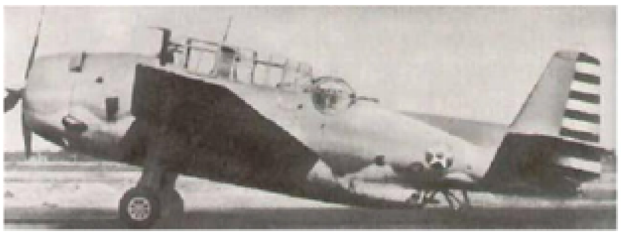

Vintage Grumman TBF Avenger Avenger

Restored Grumman TBF

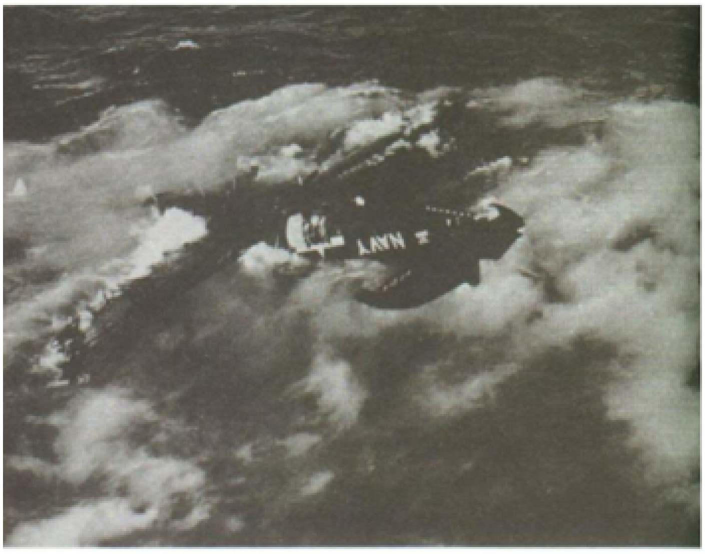

Grumman TBM Avenger Plane Crash

Traitor, Murderer, Coward, SS Nazi
George "The Butcher" Bush
September 1, 1944
"One Day Before He Killed
His Two Crew Members"

George H. Scherff Jr. aka: George H.W. Bush murdered his two crew members & 14 more during Flight 19. Bush was a Nazi Spy. He was a coward & a killer. If he were still alive he should be tried for Treason & murder.

THE "REAL" STORY OF CURIOUS GEORGE…H.W. BUSH

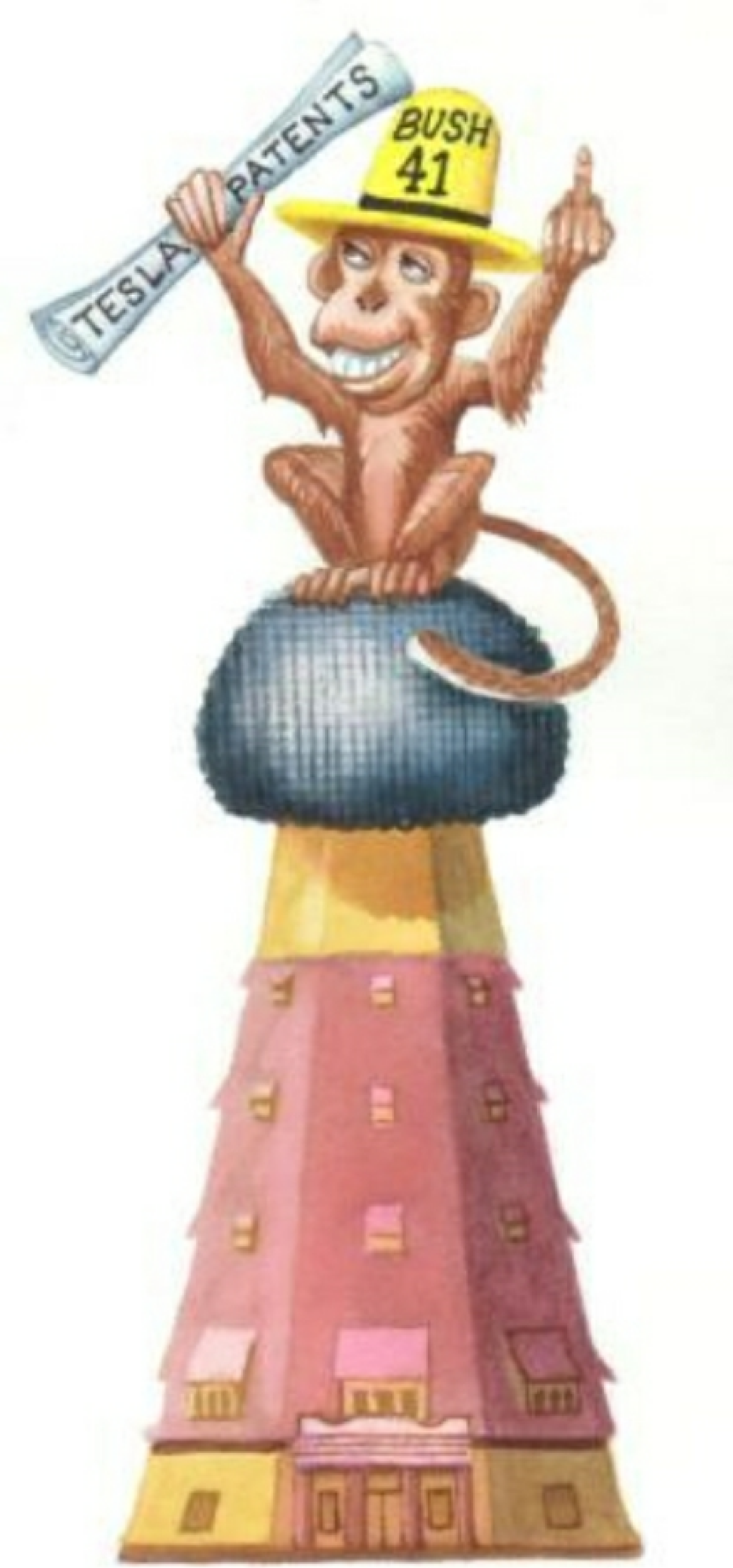
TESLA PATENTS
BUSH
41

For those of you who do not know the real story of how the character "Curious George" the monkey was created... well then, you are in for a real treat. During the 1940's, the greatest inventor who ever lived, Dr. Nikola Tesla was very good friends with two Jewish immigrants who were writers/artists: H.A. & Margaret Rey. The Reys had just barely escaped from the Nazis while fleeing Nazi-occupied France on bicycles...The Reys were telling Dr. Tesla about their ordeal with the Nazis and compared the Nazis to a bunch of evil, devious monkeys! Tesla laughed and then told them his own story about an evil, devious little Nazi "monkey" named George H. Scherff jr. the son of his accountant George H. Scherff Sr. Tesla told them that George was evil, devious & as "curious" as a monkey! He was always snooping around trying to steal from Tesla & getting into trouble because he was just so curious!

Tesla suggested to H.A. & Margaret Rey that they write children's' books about a devious, "little" monkey that was always getting himself into trouble based on the "escapades" of George H. Scherff Jr. aka: George H.W. Bush. They named that devious little monkey, "Curious George!" The rest is history! Now you know how the devious little monkey "Curious George" was really created! "Curious George" the devious little monkey was named after George H.W. Bush! Unlike the real George, the fictional cartoon character "Curious George" is not a Nazi. The C.I.A. had the co-author of Curious George, Alan J. Shalleck murdered two months ago. 2/2006. Shalleck was murdered to prevent him from talking about who Curious George was really named after, George H. Scherff jr. aka: George H.W. Bush! Evidently, dead men tell no “monkey” tales! Shalleck was murdered by the C.I.A. just three days before a movie about Curious George the Monkey was to be released in movie theaters worldwide. Coincidence? Nah!

29

Germany's Forged Surrender Agreement: Compliments of George H.W. Bush's New World Order "Avalon Project" at Yale.

Germany never "officially" surrendered to the United States and Russia in 1945. A "forged" surrender agreement between Germany and the United States was left in the U.S. National Archives. This obvious "forgery" has been locked up and kept classified/secret for over 55 years. Stalin and Hitler's Nazi-Germany made a secret, illegal pact with high ranking U.S., Canadian, French, English and Italian Government Officials allegedly led by Hitler's best young Nazi, George H.W. Bush and some of his Nazi-sympathetic O.S.S. comrades. When President Roosevelt heard about this "forgery" he was horrified and shocked. He refused to go along with the cover-up, so he was poisoned. Because he had been sick throughout his later years, no one suspected a thing when he died right before the "supposed" end of WWII.

When General Patton learned about the illegal pact that Prescott & George H.W. Bush allegedly made with Hitler to bring his entire Third Reich of Nazis to America, he too was shocked and horrified. He refused to go along with this illegal pact, so he too was killed by the Nazis, in a "premeditated" car accident. Everyone who stands in the way of this illegal New World Order Pact are coerced into accepting a bribe or killed! This illegal pact was created to bring Hitler's entire Third Reich of Nazis to America, "not just a few Nazi rocket scientists," to help win a possible war against the Russians? That was not its' "true" goal. It's main goal and purpose was to destroy America "from within" by creating a Fourth Reich or New World Order in America, slowly beginning in the year 1945. The Nazi enemy has been living right underneath the American Public's noses' for 60 years without anyone suspecting a thing. The "real" surrender agreement is locked-up and hidden in Germany's National Archives in Berlin and in the Russian National Archives.[12]

Almost every U.S. President, Vice-President, Congressman and Senator after Roosevelt, except for the Kennedy's have gone along with the illegal Hitler & Bush Plan for a New World Order In America. Hitler and Prescott Bush allegedly used their vast Nazi stolen Jewish Holocaust wealth and political influence to create the American O.S.S., with young George Herbert Walker Bush as its' leader. In 1938, Hitler, SS Nazi; Prescott Bush & his adopted SS Nazi son, the "innocent looking", cowardly, prudent, George H. Scherff Jr. aka; George H.W. Bush conspired to establish a "Nazi-spy network" in America & to try to befriend the greatest inventor who ever lived, Dr. Nikola Tesla. Hitler wanted George H.W. Bush to kill Tesla & steal his magnificent inventions so "he" could rule the world. Bush forged a birth certificate evidencing that he was 18 years old and enlisted in the U.S. Navy. He had high-ranking "Nazi-sympathetic" officers in the U.S. Navy, who were on Hitler's payroll, like Frank Wisner! They helped the young Bush progress rapidly through the ranks to become an officer and pilot. The objective of war is not to fight and die for your country, it's to make the other bastard die for his country!"[13]

---

[12] Otto Skorzeny

[13] General Patton

U.S. National Archives' "Forged" Copy of Germany's Surrender to the Allies

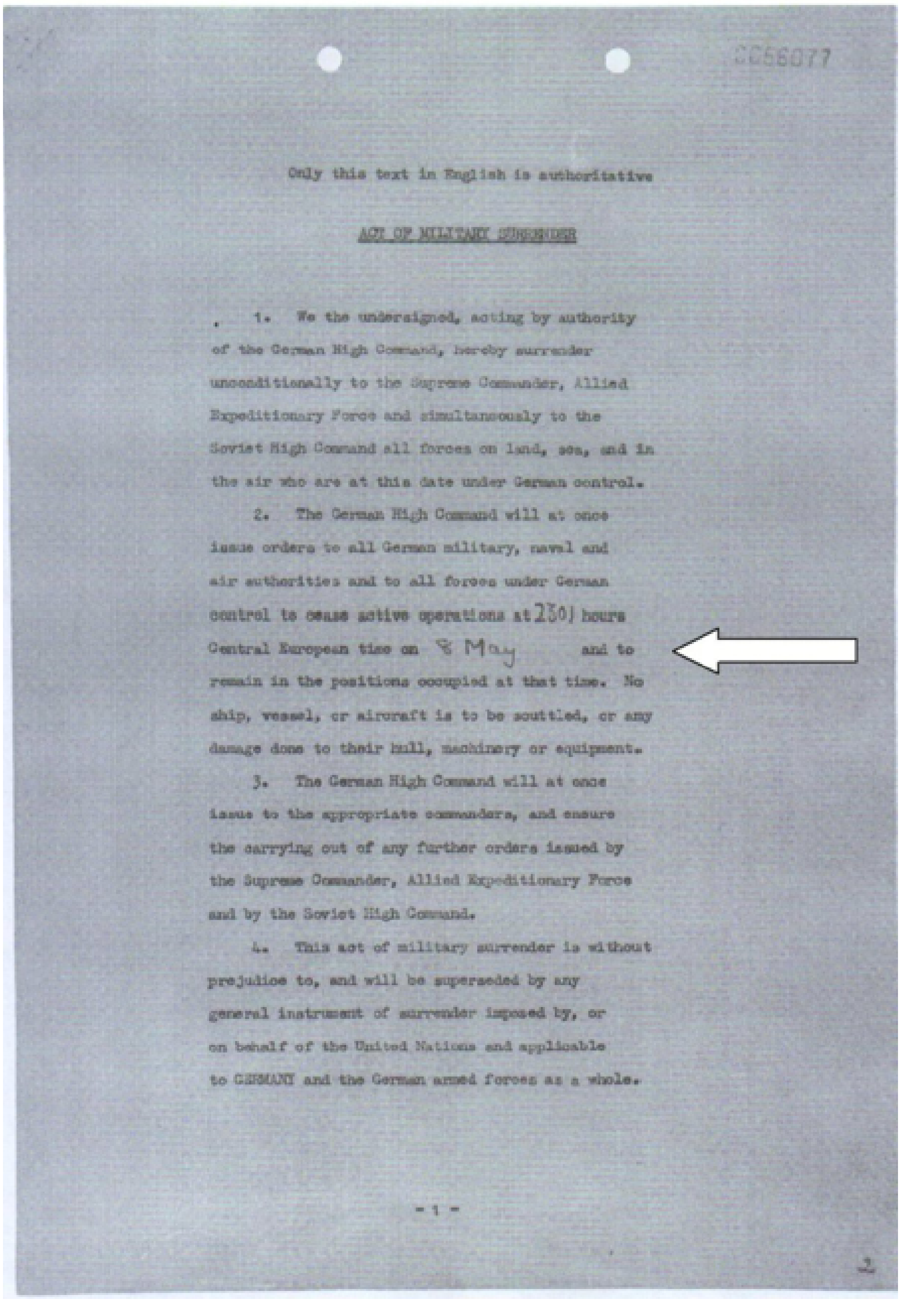

CC56077

Only this text in English is authoritative

ACT OF MILITARY SURRENDER

1. We the undersigned, acting by authority of the German High Command, hereby surrender unconditionally to the Supreme Commander, Allied Expeditionary Force and simultaneously to the Soviet High Command all forces on land, sea, and in the air who are at this date under German control.

2. The German High Command will at once issue orders to all German military, naval and air authorities and to all forces under German control to cease active operations at 2301 hours Central European time on 8 May and to remain in the positions occupied at that time. No ship, vessel, or aircraft is to be scuttled, or any damage done to their hull, machinery or equipment.

3. The German High Command will at once issue to the appropriate commanders, and ensure the carrying out of any further orders issued by the Supreme Commander, Allied Expeditionary Force and by the Soviet High Command.

4. This act of military surrender is without prejudice to, and will be superseded by any general instrument of surrender imposed by, or on behalf of the United Nations and applicable to GERMANY and the German armed forces as a whole.

- 1 -

2

The Effective Year for Germany's Surrender has been "erased" & left blank. Making this document

“Null &
Void!”

Germany

Never

Surrendered
to the
U.S.!

This forged surrender agreement poses a tremendous threat to our national security!
The Effective Year for Germany’s Surrender has been illegally “erased” & left blank.

Making this document “Null & Void!” Germany Never Surrendered to the U.S

31

U.S. National Archives' "Forged" Copy of Germany's Surrender to the Allies

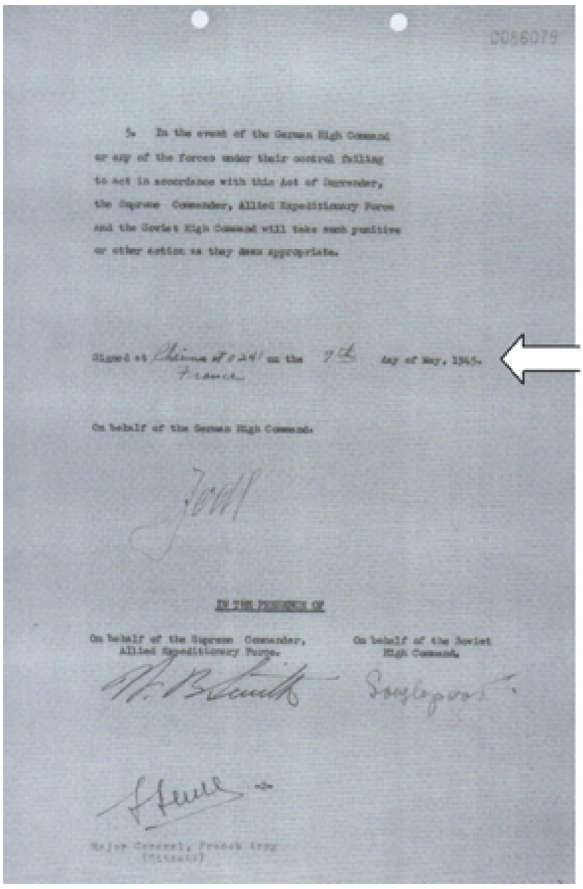

C086079

5. In the event of the German High Command or any of the forces under their control failing to act in accordance with this Act of Surrender, the Supreme Commander, Allied Expeditionary Force and the Soviet High Command will take such punitive or other action as they deem appropriate.

Signed at Rheims at 0241 France on the 7th day of May, 1945.

On behalf of the German High Command.

Jodl

IN THE PRESENCE OF

On behalf of the Supreme Commander, Allied Expeditionary Force.

W. B. Smith

On behalf of the Soviet High Command.

Sousloparov

Major General, French Army (Witness)

This is the date when agreement was signed. However, the Contract's "effective date", on page 1 for Germany to unconditionally surrender has been "erased" & left blank. This Surrender Agreement has been altered or "forged" thus making the entire agreement "Null & Void!" Germany Never Officially Surrendered!

After the signing of the Rheims accord, Soviet chief of staff Gen. Alexei Antonov expressed concern to SHAEF that the continued fighting in the east between Germany and the Soviet Union made the Rheims surrender look like a separate peace. The Soviet command wanted the Act of Military Surrender, with certain "additions" and "alterations", to be signed at Berlin. To the Soviets, the documents signed at Berlin on May 8, 1945, represented the "official, legal surrender of the Third Reich." The Berlin document has "significant changes" from the "one" signed a day earlier at Rheims.[14]

According to Skorzeny, unless an effective year is placed on Germany's Surrender Agreement "the one in the U.S. National Archives" and America "enforces" the agreement, Germany will be able to "legally" take over control of the United States of America as per the principle of adverse possession, or "squatter's rights." Free America will cease to exist & will be re-named the United States of Germany. The American dollar will instantly become worthless. It will be replaced with the New World Order's currency with a picture of Adolf Hitler & Bush Jr. on every bill and coin then part two of the Holocaust will immediately begin.

[14] U.S. National Archives -Washington, D.C.

Definition of Adverse Possession or "Squatters' Rights'"

Under International law, territory can be acquired through adverse possession: "The continuous and peaceful display of "territorial sovereignty" is as good as a title. "Prerequisite is the practice of effective domination which is documented to the outside world and which takes place undisturbed, uninterruptedly, and undisputedly. The period for effective adverse possession depends on the circumstances of the concrete case. With Hitler, Prescott & George H.W. Bush's help, Nazi-Germany established thousands of "sovereign territories" throughout America, England, France, Canada & Italy after 1945. The Bush New World Order Nazis have been secretly hiding and planning their takeover of America in underground bases like Area-51, Nevada.[15] American citizens' are forbidden under the penalty of death, not to enter these bases. The "Enemy", the New World Order Nazis have been living right under our noses for the last 62 years and no one ever suspected a thing. Wake up America and smell the truth!

The following page has a transcript of the "Official" surrender of Germany, signed in Berlin, Germany. This agreement is the only surrender agreement that Russia acknowledges. This agreement was signed one day after the fictitious "Rheims Surrender Agreement in France. The Berlin Germany Surrender Agreement evidences a "Cease & Desist day, month and year for Germany to unconditionally surrender to the Allied Forces. The "Rheims, France "Germany Surrender Agreement" that is in the U.S. National Archives does not have a "Cease & Desist" year on it. Allegedly, Bush Sr.'s New World Order Nazi, "Skull & Bones" Yale lawyers from "The Avalon Project" are the ones that altered this document and many others by erasing the effective year for Germany to surrender. This illegal "alteration", instantly makes the entire document null and void! "The Avalon Project" was allegedly formed by rich, WASP, socialite, New World Order Republican, Nazi-idealistic, "Skull & Bones", Yale lawyers. The "alleged" purpose for the creation of the Avalon Project was to make historically important U.S. Government Documents, like the German Surrender Agreement and others available for the general public to view in the U.S. National Archives. Also, to write and publish history books for

America's Schools'. These "Skull & Bones" lawyers were also supposed to translate important historical documents that were in foreign languages into the English language. During the process of "preparing" these important American historical documents for public viewing, the New World Order "Skull & Bones" lawyers illegally conspired to "erase," "alter" and "forge" these documents to suit their own Nazi-New World Order needs'. The Avalon Project was also in charge of editing and keeping track of the Nuremburg Nazi trial historical documents.

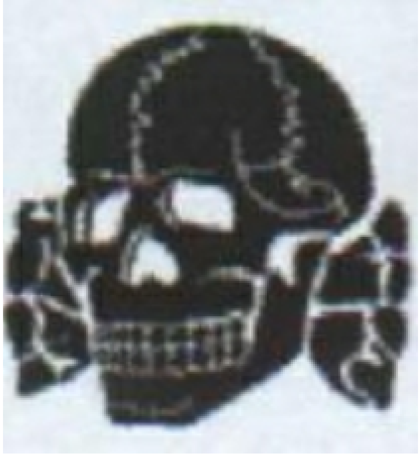

Yale "Skull & Bones"

---

[15] Otto Skorzeny

These illegal forgeries destroyed America's "true" history, thus clearing the way for Bush's "illegal" New World Order or Fourth Reich takeover of America. If an effective surrender year is not placed on the Germany Surrender Agreement that is in the U.S. National Archives, America will cease to exist. Germany will be able to legally "annex" America as part of its' own country, as per the internationally recognized principle of "Adverse Possession or Squatters' Rights'." America will then be immediately renamed, The United States of Germany! If Germany is able to annex America, the American dollar will instantly become worthless! The United States of Germany will have its' own currency, with Adolf Hitler & Bush Jr.'s face on every bill and coin. The Bush New World Order Plan must be stopped at all cost!

The following is the only "official" WWII Germany Surrender Agreement that Russia acknowledges and complies with:"The Berlin, Germany Surrender Agreement on May 8th, 1945." Russia has officially stated that it does not agree with or acknowledge the Rheims, France-Germany Surrender Agreement.[16] The one that is in our U.S. National Archives.

Act of Military Surrender Signed at Berlin on the 8th day of May, 1945

59 Stat. 1957; Executive Agreement Series 502

1. We the undersigned, acting by authority of the German High Command, hereby surrender unconditionally to the Supreme Commander, Allied Expeditionary Force and simultaneously to the Supreme High Command of the Red Army all forces on land, at sea, and in the air who are at this date under German control.

2. The German High Command will at once issue orders to all German military, naval and air authorities and to all forces under German control to cease active operations at 2301 hours Central European time on 8th May (1945), to remain in the positions occupied at that time and to disarm completely, handing over their weapons and equipment to the local allied commanders or officers designated by Representatives of the Allied Supreme Commands. No ship, vessel, or aircraft is to be scuttled, or any damage done to their hull, machinery or equipment, and also to machines of all kinds, armament, apparatus, and all the technical means of prosecution of war in general.

3. The German High Command will at once issue to the appropriate commanders, and ensure the carrying out of any further orders issued by the Supreme Commander, Allied Expeditionary Force and by the Supreme High Command of the Red Army.

4. This act of military surrender is without prejudice to, and will be superseded by any general instrument of surrender imposed by, or on behalf of the United Nations and applicable to Germany and the German armed forces as a whole.

---

[16] U.S. National Archives, Washington, D.C.

5. In the event of the German High Command or any of the forces under their control failing to act in accordance with this Act of Surrender, the Supreme Commander, Allied Expeditionary Force and the Supreme High Command of the Red Army will take such punitive or other action as they deem appropriate.

6. This Act is drawn up in the English, Russian and German languages. The English and Russian are the only authentic texts. Signed at BERLIN on the 8th day of May, 1945. VON FRIEDEBURG KEITEL STUMPF. On behalf of the German High Command IN THE PRESENCE OF: On behalf of the Supreme Commander Allied Expeditionary Force A. W. TEDDER On behalf of the Supreme High Command of the Red Army G. ZHUKOV At the signing also were present as witnesses: F. DE LATTRE-TASSIGNY General Commanding in Chief First French Army CARL SPAATZ General, Commanding United States Strategic Air Forces Transcription courtesy of "The Avalon Project" at Yale Law School.

Source: Treaties and Other International Agreements of the United States of America 1776-1949 Compiled under the direction of Charles I. Bevans LL.B. Assistant Legal Advisor Department of State Volume 3 Multilateral 1931-1945 Department of State Publication 8484, Washington, DC : Government Printing Office, 1969 USMARC Cataloging Record.

By now almost everyone has forgotten all about the Nazis. The U.S. Government illegally lied to its' citizens' about who really won WWII. American's are too quick to believe whatever the Government tells them. The American Public as a whole are not very smart. They have been conditioned like "Pavlovian dogs" to accept and believe whatever the U.S. Government tells them to. Like good slaves.[17]

The forged Germany Surrender Agreement poses a tremendous threat to our American National Security! Where are the "real" documents? Allegedly, George H.W. Bush's New World Order Nazi Yale lawyers created the "The Avalon Project". They conspired to defraud America and the rest of the world by intentionally omitting several important paragraphs from the "official" Japanese & German Surrender Agreements that are in the U.S. National Archives. Where are the "real" Surrender Agreements and what is really written on them? George H.W. Bush & his Avalon Project's lawyer's must be held accountable! I, urge all of you to contact your state's Democratic Congressmen, "Not the New World Order Republicans" and the U.S. National Archives at www.nara.gov. View the "forged" Germany & Japanese Surrender Agreements for yourself. Send them an email or write them a letter and ask them why these document have been altered or forged to show no effective date. Be ready for the U.S. National Archives agents' to lie to you and say, "there is nothing to worry about", there is an effective date of 1945 on page two of the agreement. That is not true. The date of 1945 on page two only evidences when the agreement was signed. The true, effective date for Germany to surrender is on page one of the agreement and the year has been illegally "erased" and left blank. Because this surrender agreement has been altered or forged, it is automatically NULL & VOID! Thus evidencing that Nazi-Germany never surrendered! I, ORION am a licensed mortgage broker & a licensed real estate broker. I know what forged documents look like!

---

[17] Otto Skorzeny

This forged "bogus" Germany surrender agreement is a tremendous threat to our National Security! The Nazis with Bush Jr. as their Dictator, have illegally seized control of America in 2000, 2004 and are now creating a New World Order or Fourth Reich in America. Wake up people and "smell the truth." The free America that we all love so well is doomed if Bush Jr. and his New World Order Nazi regime are not stopped! An immediate Congressional investigation should be launched to question the Avalon Project about why they illegally altered and forged sacred historical American documents. I urge all of you to immediately go to your local gun store and buy as many high powered weapons and ammo as you can afford, you will be needing them soon to protect yourself and family from Bush Jr.'s New World Order Nazis. America's armies' are away from home fighting a phony war for Bush Jr. to steal Iraq's oil.

While all of our troops are away, who is here to protect you? You must be ready to protect yourself and family. Democracy must be restored in America at all cost! Our 2nd Amendment to the U.S. Constitution guarantees Americans the right to bear arms to take action against a repressive government. Well guess what America? Now is the time to get ready to defend yourselves. Right now you are probably thinking to yourselves "Holy Crap!!!" Can this book be right? Be glad that you are learning about the forged Surrender Agreements now and not later, when America is changed into the United States of Germany and part two of the Holocaust begins. The illegal O.S.S. undercover operation to smuggle Nazis into America was known as"Operation Paperclip". Some of the most notorious *SS* Nazis were brought to America through a secret "underground" network known as the Odessa or Die Spinne (The Spider.) Hitler's entire Third Reich of *SS* "Gestapo" Nazis merged with the O.S.S. to create the C.I.A. The C.I.A. is"Hitler's Third Reich" in America. Hitler and his closest high ranking *SS* Nazi buddies were "illegally" smuggled out of Berlin, Germany with direct help from O.S.S. Officers, Frank Wisner, George H.W. Bush Sr. et al.. They had help once they arrived in America from the Assistant Secretary of War and ardent Nazi-sympathizer, John J. McCloy and the Dulles Brother Nazis.[18]

The C.I.A. was created to lie to the American Public. The C.I.A. is just another name for Hitler's

Third Reich of Nazis. It was created to hide its' beloved Nazis, to keep non-polluting, non-oil burning, free-energy, Tesla Technology hidden from the American public and the rest of the world and to help its' Nazis' create a Fourth Reich or New World Order in America. It was NOT created to protect or help American Citizens, only its' Nazis'. Can you name one good thing that the C.I.A. has ever done for America? You can't? Either can I.

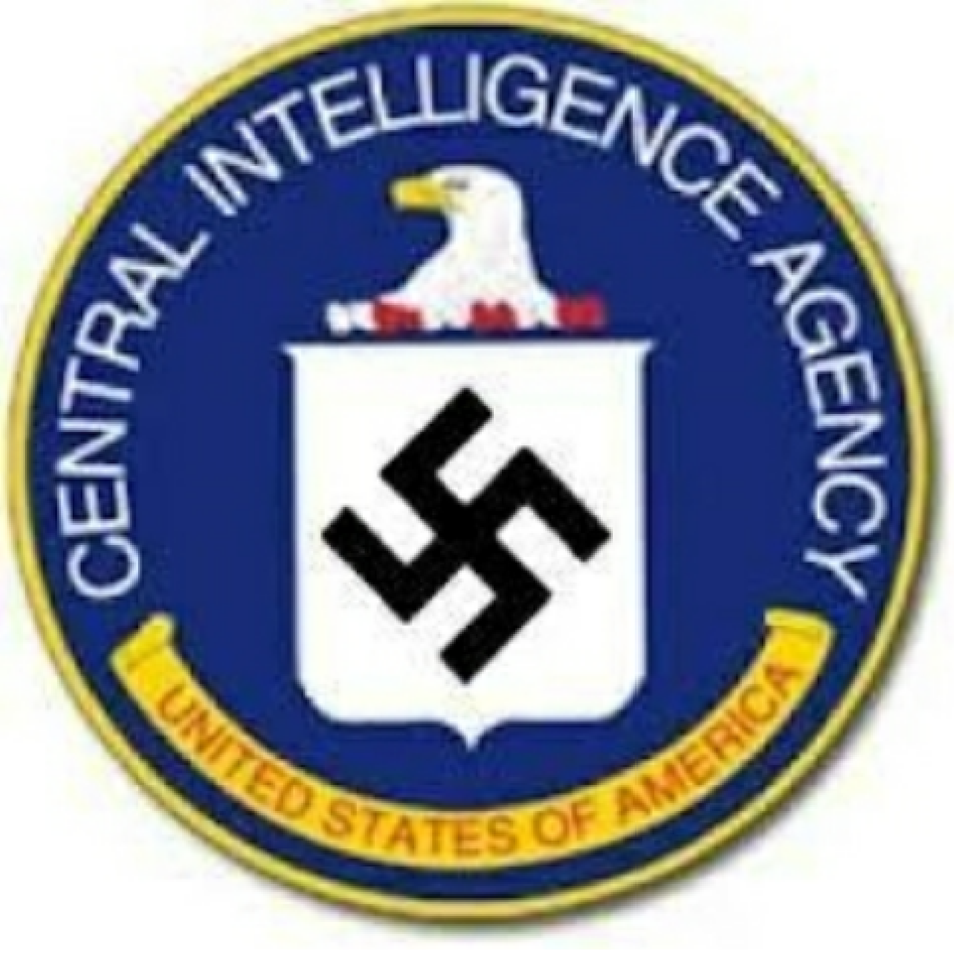

[18] http://www.cnn.com/SPECIALS/cold. war/kbank/profiles/allen.dulles/

John J. McCloy the {U.S. Assistant Secretary of War} blocked Nazi executions after WWII. After the war he pardoned key Nazi criminals like Krupp, Abs, Dohrnberger, Schacht, and others. His long career has made him a "Godfather of the American establishment." He sat atop the World Bank, directed construction of the Pentagon, worked with Earl Warren to set up the Japanese concentration camps in America, blocked any military attacks on the Nazi death camps as Assistant Secretary of War. He stopped the summary execution of Nazis in favor of the Nuremberg Trials which he later thwarted, and also sat as a member of the Warren Commission.

Kissinger, the Vatican & Red Cross helped Nazis escape to freedom and establish new identities as American citizens. Henry Kissinger -- Worked with General Lucius Clay at Oberammergau, and then with key stateside Army Intelligence and CIA units responsible for bringing in the Nazi spies. Kissinger, who came from Germany to join U.S. Army Intelligence during World War II, had as his "mentor" the mysterious Fritz Kraemer. Kraemer's 30-year silent career in the Pentagon plans division includes the prepping of Alexander Haig. It may also conceal his real identity -- prisoner #33 in the dockets at Dachau, the special Lieutenant to Hitler, Fritz Kraemer. Mr. Kissinger still relies on his advice, and did so while Secretary of State.

George H.W. Bush -- Former head of the CIA who employed, among others, U.S. Army officer, Capt. William Rhine of the Bay of Pigs operation. Rhine is really top SS spy Helmut Streicher, who worked directly with Hitler, Gehlen, Otto Skorzeny, and then U.S. Army Intelligence from October, 1945 on.

Frank Wisner- "Nazi Lover". In 1941, six months before the attack on Pearl Harbor, he enlisted in the United States Navy. He worked in the Navy's censor's office until he was able to get a transfer to the Office of Strategic Services (OSS). Wisner was recruited in 1947 by Dean Acheson to join the State Department's Office of Occupied Territories. In 1948, the CIA created a covert action division, the Office of Policy Coordination (OPC). Frank Wisner was put in charge of the operation and recruited many of his old friends from Carter Ledyard. According to its secret charter, its responsibilities include "propaganda, economic warfare, preventive direct action, including sabotage, anti-sabotage, demolition and evacuation procedures; subversion against hostile states, including assistance to underground resistance groups, and support of indigenous anti-communist elements in threatened countries of the free world." n 1947 Wisner established Operation Mockingbird, a program to influence the domestic and foreign media. In 1952, he became head of the Directorate of Plans, with Richard Helms as his chief of operations. This office had control of 75% of the CIA budget. In this position, he was instrumental in supporting pro-American forces that toppled Mohammed Mossadegh in Iran and Jacobo Arbenz Guzmán in Guatemala following the Alfhem affair.

J. Edgar Hoover -- Who formed the FBI, and without whose help Nazi criminals could never have entered the U.S., worked in Interpol with founder Reinhardt Heydrich, SS head of Nazi police from 1940 to 1942, and his successor, SS officer Ernst Kaltenbrunner, later hanged at Nuremberg. Hoover's career involved extensive mob connections, and his death has yet to be fully investigated. Hoover was a “gutless”, anti-American, Nazi-sympathizer. He was a flaming homosexual, a moral degenerate, pedophile & transvestite. He wore dresses & liked to be called “Mary.” Hoover fired all of the good FBI personnel & hired all white, Christian Fascist, anti-American, homosexual Nazi-sympathizers just like himself! They were known as Hoover’s G-Men or Gay Men.

◆

Monsignor Montini -- An OSS operative in Southeast Asia at the end of World War II, he was later appointed Pope Paul VI. He used Caritas International is, a welfare organization, to provide refugee travel documents to such Nazis as euthanasia killer Hans Hefelman and Hitler's secretary, Frank Wisner, aiding in their escape to Argentina.

◆

Cardinal Spellman -- Religious leader in New York, he was a protégé of Cardinal Pacelli, Pope Pius XII, who is often accused of collaboration with the Nazis.[Spellman is the U.S. spiritual leader of the Knights of Malta. He is responsible for introducing Ngo Dinh Diem to Allen Dulles, and then proposing his presidency of South Vietnam to President Kennedy. When Diem resisted the introduction of American troops into Vietnam, Dulles told General Westmoreland to go ahead anyway, and our CIA helped to kill Diem.

◆

Avery Dulles -- Son of John Foster Dulles, then Secretary of State, and a nephew to Allen Dulles, then CIA director. Avery worked with Frank Wisner to help his escape to Argentina, and is now working as an advisor at Georgetown University. He also is a member of the Knights of Malta.

◆

Allen Dulles - Republican Nazi Employee - Chief Architect of U.S.-Nazi business and spy networks. Spy at the U.S. embassy in Bern, Switzerland, collecting political data for the State Department on Germany and the Austro-Hungarian empire (1916-1918). Member, U.S. staff, Versailles Peace Conference (1918-1922). Head, State Department's Near East Affairs division (1922-27). Worked with brother John Foster Dulles, as lawyer and international finance specialist for Sullivan & Cromwell, a Wall Street law firm in New York (1927-1941). While there, he worked with top Nazi industrialists and played a pivotal role in promoting U.S.-Nazi corporate relations. Allen worked with Prescott Bush (grandfather of President George Walker Bush) and

George Herbert Walker (Prescott's father-in-law) who ran Union Banking Corporation for the Nazis. Allen was legal counsel for Standard Oil and the Nazi 's I. G. Farben, co-owned by the Rockefellers. (Other U.S. millionaires allied to the Nazis were: William Randolph Hearst Sr., Andrew Mellon, Irene Du Pont, Henry Ford and J.P. Morgan. Morgan, Du Pont and others were even involved in a Fascist plot to overthrow the U.S. government in 1934.) President Roosevelt, realizing Dulles was a traitor, had his New York "Office of Coordinator of Information" wiretapped (1941-42).

Some Dulles-linked firms, like Bush's Union Banking Corp., were seized under the Trading with the Enemy Act (1942). Berne station chief, Office of Strategic Services (1942-1945). Roosevelt's plan to charge Dulles with treason failed when Dulles was warned and covered his tracks (1944). Roosevelt's plan died with him (1945). As OSS station chief in Berlin, Dulles negotiated the agreement with **General Reinhardt Gehlen** to establish a Nazi spy network within the OSS (1945). Dulles helped in the development of the CIA (1947), became its deputy director (1951) and its director (1953-1961). He oversaw numerous covert operations, such as election rigging in Italy (1948), coups in Iran (1953) and Guatemala (1954) and many other notorious operations described in this issue. When Union Banking Corp. was liquidated, Prescott Bush and George Herbert Walker received $1.5 million (1951). Was fired by President Kennedy after the failed invasion of Cuba at the Bay of Pigs (1961) as a member of the Warren Commission, he promoted the theory that a "lone gunman" assassinated John F. Kennedy (1963). [19]

After WWII, American & German submarines & cargo ships were used to transport their illegal Nazi cargo and trillions of dollars of stolen Jewish Holocaust money and stolen Tesla Technology to America. The *SS* Nazis were smuggled into our country through the North Atlantic Ocean, just off the coast of Montauk, New York. As the American submarines arrived off the coast of Montauk, NY at night, the O.S.S. was waiting to pick them up on locally owned commercial fishing boats. The Nazis were then given fisherman's clothes to put on and they were taken to Camp Hero on Montauk.[20] The Nazis were given a hero's welcome when they arrived and have been treated like royalty ever since by the entire U.S./Nazi Government, especially the O.S.S., C.I.A., O.S.I. and F.B.I. This illegal, O.S.S. sponsored clandestine organization was headed by one of the most notorious and most wanted *SS* Nazis during WWII, Otto Skorzeny. Skorzeny was Hitler & George H.W. Bush's personal bodyguard and favorite commando. In 1945 he was acquitted of Nazi war crimes and became a "founding" member of the O.S.S. He also founded the Odessa. A clandestine operation run by former *SS* Nazis, the Vatican, and the Red Cross to help other wanted, evil murdering, Nazi war criminals flee to Argentina and America. Some of Skorzeny's Odessa *SS* Nazi comrades were: Adolf Hitler, spymaster- Reinhardt Gehlen, The "Angel of Death", Josef Mengele, C.I.A.-Frank Wisner, Holocaust Butcher - Alois Brunner, Gas Passer-Walter Rauff and O.S.S. member George H.W.

Bush, et al…The C.I.A.'s New world order *SS* Nazis have lived "charmed" lives since the end of WWII, because Germany never surrendered to the U.S. they do not have to pay any U.S. Taxes nor parking tickets!

---

[19] http://www.cnn.com/SPECIALS/cold.war/kbank/profiles/allen.dulles/ http://emperors-clothes.com/articles/randy/swas1.htm

[20] Otto Skorzeny

The Vatican's "*Passion*" To Sin Helped Create The Holocaust!

Nazi-Sympathetic Catholic Priests Saluting Hitler! The Holocaust Did Happen! Catholic Bishop & His "Idol", Adolf. The Catholic Church/Vatican or "Organized Cult of Pedophile Priests" & The Red Cross Did Nothing To Try To Stop The Nazis From Killing 6 Million+ Jews During The Holocaust! After WWII, They Helped Their Murderous, Nazi War Criminal Comrades' Escape Justice By Hiding Them In Their Churches' & Giving Them Millions of Dollars To Escape To Argentina & America! The Vatican Used Your Cash Donations To Help the Nazis Escape! Fascist Jesuit pedophile priests are in cahoots with the Trump Family neo-con takeover of the world!

Hitler	Skorzeny	Bush	Mengele	Brunner	Bormann	Gehlen
	SS Nazi	SS Nazi Spy	SS Nazi	SS Nazi	SS Nazi	SS Nazi

Frank "Nazi Lover" Wisner-The C.I.A.'s Evil Co-Founder

Josef Mengele: Hitler & C.I.A.'s Most Beloved & Most Wanted SS Nazi Doctor "The Angel of Death"

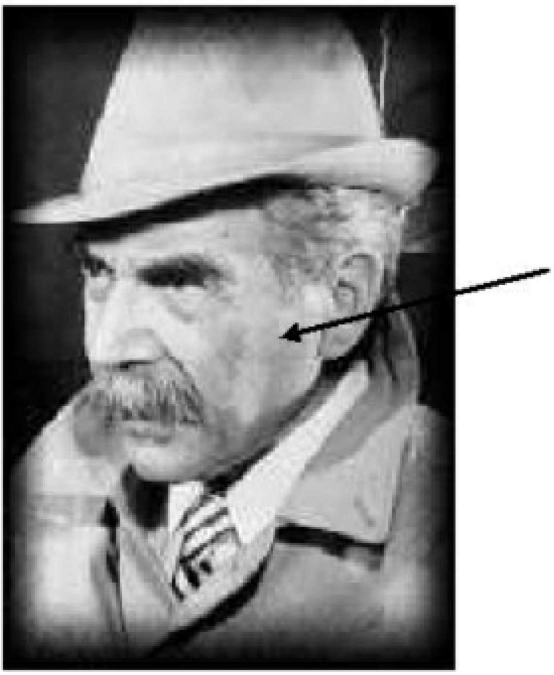

The "real"

Mengele
with a
C.I.A.
make-up
job to make
him look
older than
he really is.

Mengele 1945 Mengele 1945 Mengele 1945 *Mengele 3/21/1961 *"Fake"*

Mengele & His Nazi Comrades; Kramer et al…1945

Mengele with his 1967 Rolls Royce. Wedding New Jersey, U.S.A. 1987.

Mengele 1945

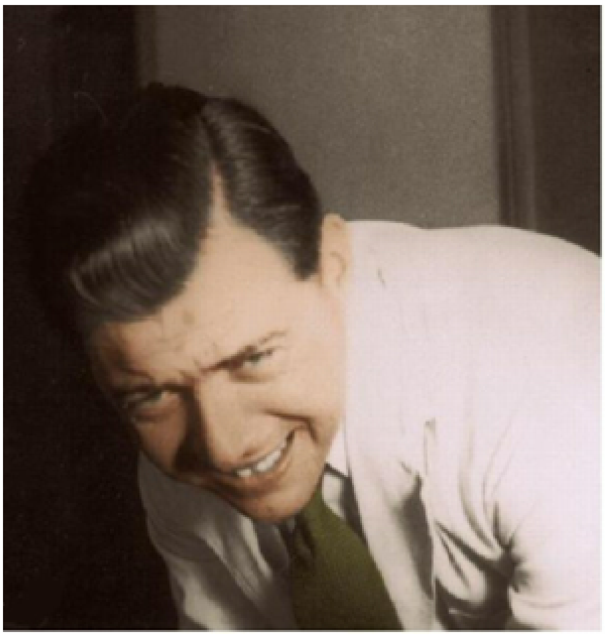

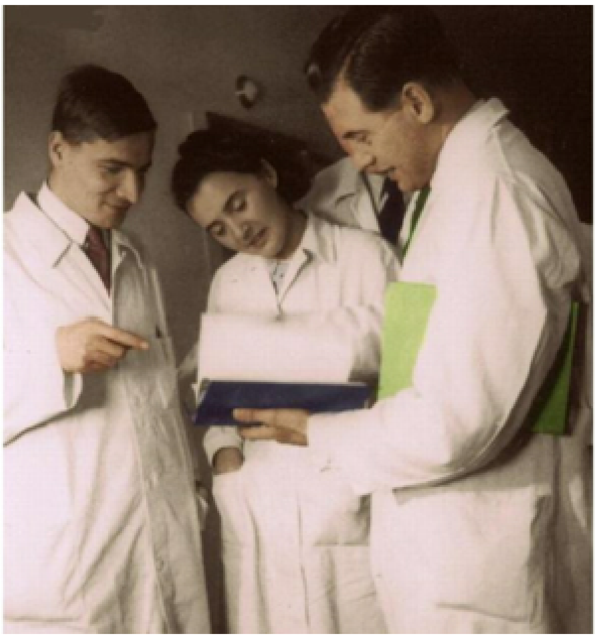

The "White Angel of Death" Dr. Josef Mengele 1945

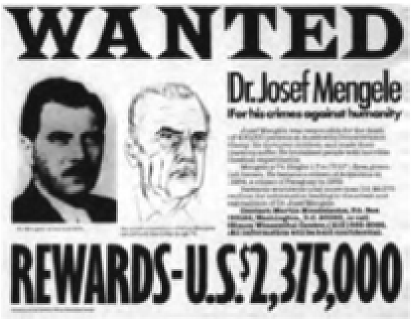

WANTED

Dr. Josef Mengele

For his crimes against humanity

REWARDS-U.S.$2,375,000

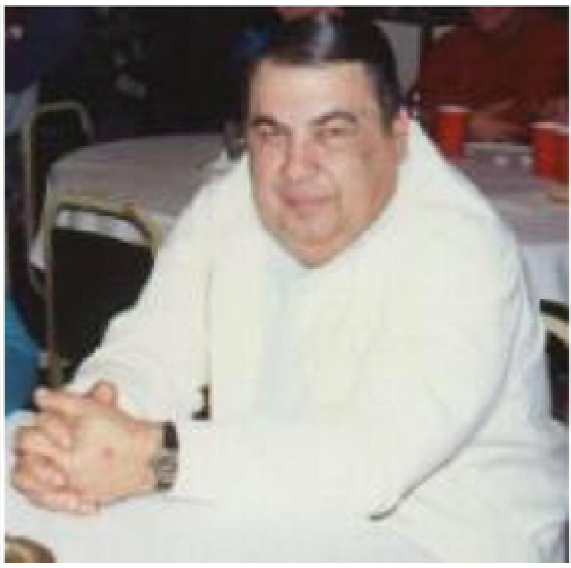

The “White Angel of Death” Dr. Josef Mengele is the Zodiac Killer seen here wearing his white hooded robe with a large Anthrax sore & the special watch that Skorzeny gave him from Mussolini on his left hand. November 2001.

The Evil Dr. Mengele

The Holocaust Did Happen!

The Holocaust Did Happen!

The U.S. Justice Dept. (O.S.I.) warned Mengele that I was on to him. He has since moved. Mengele is the San Francisco Zodiac Killer, The "real" Boston Strangler & The 2001 Anthrax Mailer Killer! Mengele has never been caught due to the sloppy, criminally incompetent, Nazi-sympathetic, anti-American detective work of the corrupt Boston Police, SF Police, Vallejo C.A. Police & F.B.I.!

This most hated and sought after evil, Nazi asshole was "supposedly" born on March 16, 1911? The birth dates of the C.I.A.'s favorite SS Nazi employees cannot be trusted! The C.I.A.'s SS Nazis' wrote the history books! Most history books list birth dates for Nazis alleging that they are 10 years older than they really are. Mengele was "probably" born around 1924 not 1911. That would make him approximately 87 years old today, however with his history of C.I.A. given face-lifts, anti-aging hormone injections & alleged “cannibalism”, he looks at least 10-15 years younger than he really is! Currently, he dies his hair black and wears a “cheap rug” to disguise his bald head. Today, his face is very smooth and “saggy” from all of his face-lifts. I do not know when Mengele was really born. It is “possible” that Mengele was actually born in 1911. If so, he would be 109 years today in 2020.

43

He is definitely still alive in 2003 but looks much younger than he really is! According to Skorzeny, Mengele was one of Hitler's "Four" Horsemen of the Apocalypse. The other three horsemen are allegedly George H.W. Bush, Bormann, and Gehlen. Skorzeny was the unofficial "fifth" horseman of the apocalypse. Dr. Josef Mengele, nicknamed "the Angel of Death", became the surviving symbol of Adolf Hitler's "Final Solution". Mengele was always immaculately prepared for the long-drawn-out rituals of death, the hellish selections which the young SS doctor so regularly attended during his twenty-one months at Auschwitz. Josef Mengele was the chief provider for the gas chambers and their crematoria." He had a look that said 'I am the power,'" said one survivor. When it was reported that one block was infected with lice, Mengele solved the problem by gassing all the 750 women assigned to it. At the time, Mengele was "allegedly" only 18 years old. The Angel of Death fed his legend by dramatizing murderous policies, such as his drawing a line on the wall of the children's block between 150 and 156 centimeters (about 5 feet or 5 feet 2 inches) from the floor, then sending those whose heads could not reach the line to the gas chamber ...

There were many warrants, rewards, and bounties offered, but he was lucky…he had the American C.I.A. to protect him! He also had several facelifts compliments of the C.I.A. and you the American taxpayer. At any given time, he looks at least 10 years younger than he really is. Today, his face is very smooth, due to his many C.I.A. given facelifts and anti-aging hormone treatments. Despite international efforts to track him down, he was never apprehended and lived for 35 years hiding under various aliases. He lived in Paraguay and Brazil until his "SUPPOSED" death in 1979. According to the C.I.A., he "allegedly", he went for a swim in Brazil, and suffered a massive stroke and began to drown. By the time he was dragged to shore, he was dead.

People didn't find out about Mengele's death until the mid 1980's when Nazi hunters, using newly discovered information, uncovered his grave marked "Wolfgang Gerhard" at Embu. It was then that his family admitted they had shielded him all those years and they turned over his diaries and letters to investigators. But the possibility of a hoax kept the case open for several years. It was not until 1992, The C.I.A. "alleges" that after coaxing DNA from a bone, and matching it to DNA in blood samples taken from Mengele's son and wife that the official conclusion is announced: "The remains are those of Josef Mengele". The mystery of Josef Mengele, the evil symbol of the Nazi 's, was solved. Bull Crap!!! He is still alive & the American C.I.A. is still protecting him! Mengele Is Still Alive Today Thanks To The C.I.A., F.B.I. & The Vatican!

Fact: It is not a crime to fake your own death in the United States as long as no one recovers any insurance money from it. Mengele is still alive and funneling billions of stolen Jewish Holocaust dollars into anti-freedom, anti-Jewish, anti-black, pro-life, anti-gun, conservative New World Order Republican campaigns, like Bush Jr's. Also, neo-Nazi fundamentalist, conservative, right-wing, Christian Coalition, anti-freedom groups like the abortion doctor killer supporters "Operation Rescue", "The Brotherhood of Aryan Nations "organized crime" hate group," the KKK and C.I.A. sponsored Al Qaeda Terrorist Cells.

"The Greatest Trick The Devil Ever Pulled Was Convincing The World That He Didn't Exist!"

“Mengele is one of the Anthrax Mailer Killers of November, 2001!”

Large
Anthrax

Sore

⇨

Dr. Josef Mengele - The “Angel Of Death” & He’s Wearing Skorzeny’s Watch!

“Brotherhood of Aryan Nations / Bush Jr. Fundraiser -Florida 11/2001” Alias: Steven T. Rabel - Still Alive and Eating Very Well. He looks at least 20 years younger than he really is, due to so many C.I.A. given facelifts, anti-aging hormone injections, died hair and the “cheap rug.”

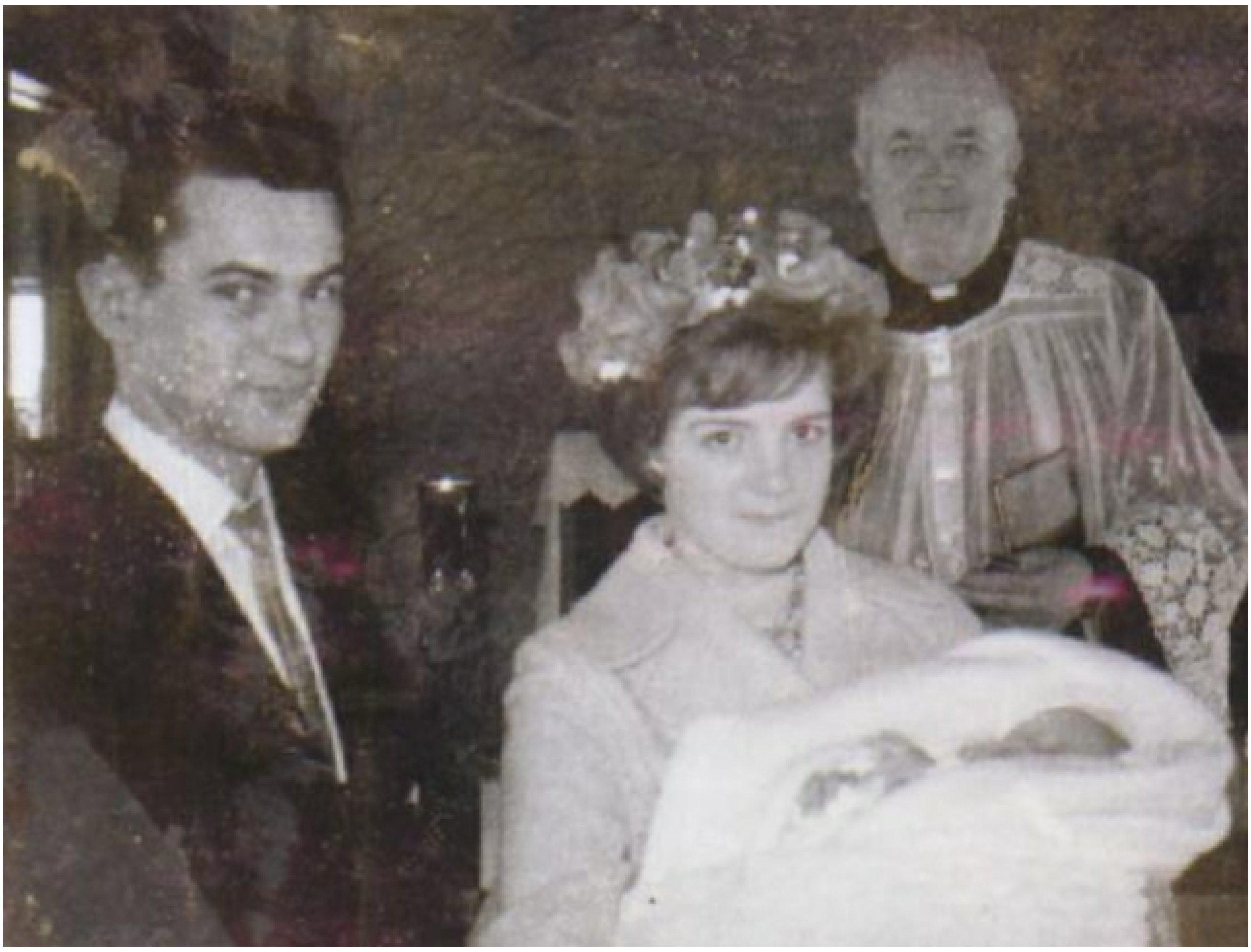

Dr. Josef Mengele: March, 1961 “Godfather to Skorzeny’s Children” “Never Before Published Photo”

Mengele with his fresh, new face-lift, compliments of the C.I.A. & You The American Taxpayer!

“The Greatest Trick The Devil Ever Pulled Was Convincing The World That He Didn’t Exist!”[21]

---

[21] “Verbal” a character from the motion picture, “The Usual Suspects.”

Mengele's Wedding Announcement

"Mrs. Josef Mengele"

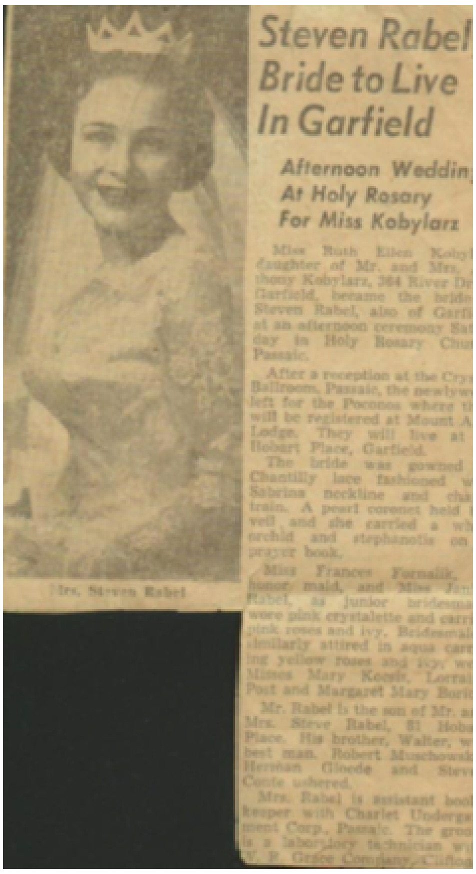

Mrs. Steven Rabel

Steven Rabel Bride to Live In Garfield

**Afternoon Weddin
At Holy Rosary
For Miss Kobylarz**

Miss Ruth Ellen Koby
daughter of Mr. and Mrs.
thony Kobylarz, 364 River Dr
Garfield, became the bride
Steven Rabel, also of Garfi
at an afternoon ceremony Sat
day in Holy Rosary Chur
Passaic.

After a reception at the Cry
Ballroom, Passaic, the newlyw
left for the Poconos where th
will be registered at Mount A
Lodge. They will live at
Hobart Place, Garfield.

The bride was gowned
Chantilly lace fashioned w
Sabrina neckline and cha
train. A pearl coronet held
veil and she carried a wh
orchid and stephanotis on
prayer book.

Miss Frances Fornalik,
honor maid, and Miss Jan
Rabel, as junior bridesma
wore pink crystalette and carr
pink roses and ivy. Bridesmai
similarly attired in aqua carr
ing yellow roses and ivy, we
Misses Mary Kocsis, Lorrai
Post and Margaret Mary Bori

Mr. Rabel is the son of Mr. a
Mrs. Steve Rabel, 81 Hoba
Place. His brother, Walter, w
best man. Robert Muschowsk
Herman Gloede and Stev
Conte ushered.

Mrs. Rabel is assistant book
keeper with Charlet Underga
ment Corp., Passaic. The groo
is a laboratory technician wi
W. R. Grace Company, Cliffo

Mengele aka: Steve Rabel is/was a "Laboratory Technician" for W.R. Grace Company in Clifton, NJ.

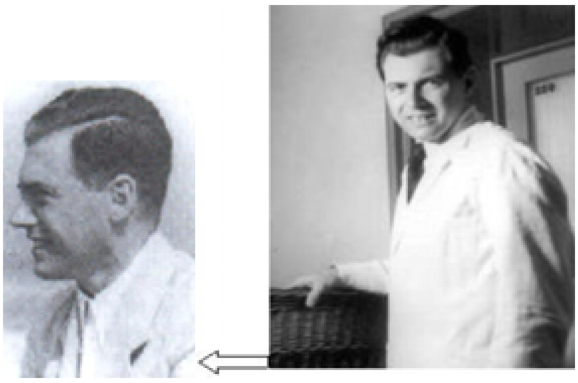

Dr. Josef Mengele Worked For W.R. Grace Company In Clifton, New Jersey.

Dr. Josef Mengele, alleged AKA: Steve T. Rabel worked for W.R. Grace Company " a billion dollar pharmaceutical and plastics company" in Clifton, New Jersey as a "Laboratory Technician" for over 40 years. He is "retired." He lived in Hernando, Florida until 2004. He is allegedly the brains & co-leader of The Brotherhood of Aryan Nations organized crime hate group. He allegedly sent the anthrax through the mail that killed A.M.I. employee Robert Stevens in Boca Raton, Florida and several others across America. The C.I.A. knows that he sent the anthrax because they are the ones who ordered him to do so! He must be caught, tried, convicted and executed for this crime as well as crimes against humanity by torturing and killing millions of innocent Jews and others during the Holocaust! W.R. Grace is a monster of a company. W.R. Grace produced ‘Zyklon-B” deadly killing gas for the Nazis to kill Jews with. It now produces deadly products like “Zonolite”-asbestos insulation and vermiculite. When workers die from ailments related to these deadly products, the U.S. Government has always stepped in to prevent or limit any lawsuits against them.

Beloved Democratic Senator Paul Wellstone was heading a multi-million dollar lawsuit against W.R. Grace to help the victims of its deadly products. According to Skorzeny, the C.I.A. shot down his plane with one of its' high powered laser beams leaving no trace and no more lawsuit! There are several other multi-million dollar lawsuits against W.R. Grace for violating the EPA's clean air and other laws. Lucky for W.R. Grace, Christine Todd Whitman an "alleged" New World Order Republican appointee is currently running the EPA. She or her successor will probably forbid any type of lawsuit against W.R. Grace. If that doesn't work bankruptcy always will! I, ORION urge all Democratic Congressmen, Democratic Senators, and all others whom W.R. Grace Co. does not like, NOT to fly. Take a custom tour bus instead, like John Madden does. Do not fly, America needs you alive. "This flight warning does not apply to the general public nor to Republican Congressmen & Senators. The New World Order has no reason to shoot down your airplane with a laser beam unless you are an enemy of W.R. Grace Co. or you are standing in their way of creating a Fourth Reich in America.

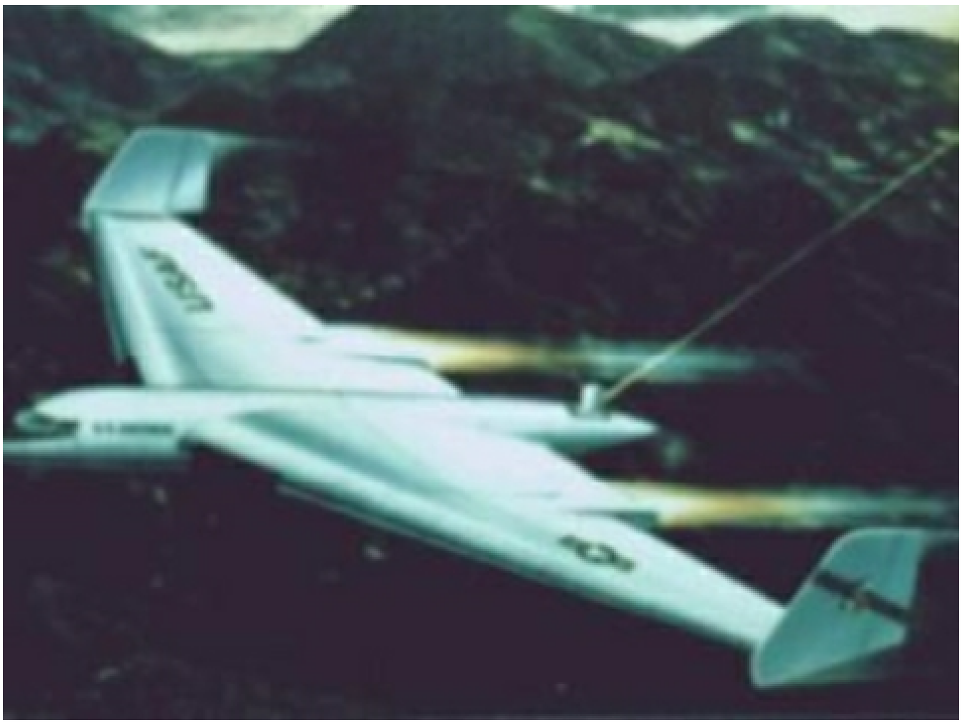

U.S. Airforce's Flying Laser (Tesla's Death Ray)

Was Paul Wellstone Murdered?

By Michael I. Niman, AlterNet

October 28, 2002

Paul Wellstone was the only progressive in the U.S. Senate. Mother Jones magazine once described him as, "The first 1960s radical elected to the U.S. senate." He was also the last. Since defeating incumbent Republican Rudy Boschowitz 12 years ago in a grassroots upset, Wellstone emerged as the strongest, most persistent, most articulate and most vocal Senate opponent of the Bush administration. In a senate that is one heartbeat away from Republican control, Wellstone was more than just another Democrat. He was often the lone voice standing firm against the status-quo policies of both the Democrats and the Republicans. As such, he earned the special ire of the Bush administration and the Republican Party, who made Wellstone's defeat that party's number one priority this year. Various White House figures made numerous recent campaign stops in Minnesota to stump for the ailing campaign of Wellstone's Republican opponent, Norm Coleman. Despite being outspent and outgunned, however, polls show that Wellstone's popularity surged after he voted to oppose the Senate resolution authorizing George Bush to wage war in Iraq. He was pulling ahead of Coleman and moving toward a victory that would both be an embarrassment to the Bush administration and to Democratic Quislings such as Hillary Clinton who voted to support "the president." Then he died. Wellstone now joins the ranks of other American politicians who died in small plane crashes. Another recent victim was

Missouri's former Democratic governor, Mel Carnahan, who lost his life in 2000, three weeks before Election Day, during his Senatorial race against John

Ashcroft. Carnahan went on to become the first dead man to win a Senatorial race, humiliating and defeating the unpopular Ashcroft posthumously. Ashcroft, despite his unpopularity, went on to be appointed Attorney General by George W. Bush. Investigators determined that Carnahan's plane went down due to "poor visibility." Carnahan was the second Missouri politician to die in a small plane crash. The first was Democratic Representative Jerry Litton, whose plane crashed the night he won the Democratic nomination for senate in 1976. His Republican opponent ultimately captured the seat from his successor in November.

While an article in the New York Times on Saturday pointed out the danger politicians face due to their heavy air travel schedules, the death of a senator or member of Congress is still relatively rare, with only one other sitting U.S. Senator, liberal Republican John Heinz, dying in a plane crash since World War II. Heinz, who entered office as an outspoken opponent of the Vietnam War, later emerged as a strong proponent of health care, social services, public transportation and the environment. He also urged reconciliation with Cuba. He died when the landing gear on his small plane failed to function, and a helicopter dispatched to survey the problem crashed into his plane. One former senator, John Tower, also died in a small plane crash. Tower was best known as the chair of the Tower Commission, which investigated the Bush/ Reagan era Iran Contra scandal. Another member of a prominent government commission who died in a small plane crash was former Democratic representative and House Majority Leader Hale Boggs. Boggs was best known as one of the seven members of the Warren Commission, which investigated the assassination of President John F. Kennedy. The commission found that Lee Harvey Oswald was acting alone when he killed the president. Boggs, it turns out, had "strong doubts" that Oswald acted alone, but went along with the commission findings. Later, in 1971 and 1972, he went public with his doubts. He was presumed dead after the small plane carrying him and Democratic Representative Nicholas Begich disappeared in 1972.

Texas Democratic Representative Mickey Leland also died in a plane crash. In his case, the six-term member of Congress and outspoken advocate of sanctions against the apartheid government of South Africa, died while traveling in Ethiopia. Another American politician to die overseas in a plane crash was the Clinton administration's Commerce Secretary, Ronald Brown, whose plane went down in the Balkans. Anyone familiar with my work knows that I'm certainly not a conspiracy theorist. But to be honest, I know I wasn't alone in my initial reaction at this week's horrible and tragic news: that being my surprise that Wellstone had lived this long. Perhaps it's just my anger and frustration at losing one of the few reputable politicians in Washington, but I also felt shame. Shame for not writing in my column, months ago, that I felt that Paul Wellstone's life, more so than any other politician in Washington, was in danger. I felt that such speculation was unprofessional and would ultimately undermine my credibility. In the end, my own self-interest triumphed, and I never put my concerns into print. Neither did any other mainstream journalist, though I know of many who shared my concern.

When I heard Wellstone's plane went down, I immediately thought of Panamanian General Omar Torrijos, who in 1981 thumbed his nose at the Reagan/Bush administration and threatened to destroy the Panama Canal in the event of a U.S. invasion. Torrijos died shortly thereafter when the instruments in his plane failed to function upon takeoff. Panamanians speculated that the U.S. was involved in the death of the popular dictator, who was replaced by a U.S. intelligence operative, Manuel Noreiga, who previously worked with George Bush Senior. There is no indication today that Wellstone's death was the result of foul play. What we do know, however, is that Wellstone emerged as the most visible obstacle standing in the way of a draconian political agenda by an unelected government. And now he is conveniently gone. For our government to maintain its credibility at this time, we need an open and accountable independent investigation involving international participation into the death of Paul Wellstone. Hopefully we will find out, beyond any shadow of a doubt, that this was indeed an untimely accident. For the sake of our country, we need to know this. Dr. Michael I. Niman teaches journalism and media studies at Buffalo State College.

The History of W.R. Grace & Co.

The Seattle Post Intelligencer

Thursday, November 18, 1999

W.R. Grace Co. had a not-so-fragrant beginning in 1854. William R. Grace, who had fled the Irish potato famine for Peru, chartered ships to trade bat guano and bird droppings. Twelve years later, he moved his headquarters to New York and set up a worldwide network trading fabric, fertilizer, machinery and other products. In the middle of World War II, William Grace's grandson, Peter, took over control of the company and ran it for almost a half century, until 1993. Although the company's focus remained on chemicals and packaging, Peter Grace diversified Grace into everything from sporting goods to tacos. Starting in 1995, Grace divested many of its larger businesses. In 1998, the Securities and Exchange Commission sued Grace for manipulating earnings in one of its divisions. To settle the suit, Grace set up a $1 million financial education fund. Grace has gone through elaborate reorganization in the past decade. Lawyers handling the asbestos suits against Grace say the shuffling was done to conceal assets and cloud the corporate lines of responsibility. Grace denies the charges and calls the moves "solid business decisions."

Although it has downsized, Grace's sales are still about $1.4 billion a year. But like other giant companies that sold asbestos products during the heyday of the flameproof fiber, Grace is still plagued by lawsuits filed by people allegedly harmed or killed by the fibers in the insulation, garden products and other applications it sold. More than 250,000 asbestos -related suits have been filed against Grace. Almost all of them except the 187 involving the miners and the families from Libby are personal-injury suits dealing with the hazards of asbestos products, said Jay Hughes, Grace's top litigation counsel. About 150,000 suits have been settled or dismissed. An estimated 102,000 cases remain, he said. A spotlight was thrown on one of Grace's darkest moments when the movie "A Civil John Travolta and Robert Duvall dramatized the book of the same name written by Jonathan Harr.

The book told the story of families living in the old New England mill town of Woburn on the outskirts of Boston. Five Woburn children and one adult died of acute lymphocytic leukemia from exposure to chemicals in their drinking water. Others were sickened. Grace and another company were found by the Environmental Protection Agency to be responsible for dumping the toxic chemicals that poisoned two of Woburn's wells. Grace paid $8 million to eight families in return for the withdrawal of lawsuits they had filed. Later, Grace was indicted by the Department of Justice on two counts of lying to the EPA in 1982 about the amount of hazardous chemicals it used at its Woburn plant. In 1988, Grace pled guilty to one count and was fined the maximum -- $10,000. Today, the penalty for that charge is $500,000.[22]

Back to “Doctor Death” - Josef Mengele

Mengele –1945	Mengele 1945	Mengele –1961*	Mengele –1974	Mengele –2001*
Mengele	Skorzeny			Fat, Evil Dr. Mengele

Mengele & Skorzeny 1972
1999

Mengele Wedding May

Homosassa, Florida

[22] The Seattle Post Intelligencer

SS Nazi – Doctor	SS Nazi-"Killer Gas Passer"	SS Nazi- "Jew Killer"
Steve Rabel aka:	George Pfaff aka:	Fred Kobylarz aka:
Josef Mengele	Walter Rauff	Alois "The Butcher" Brunner

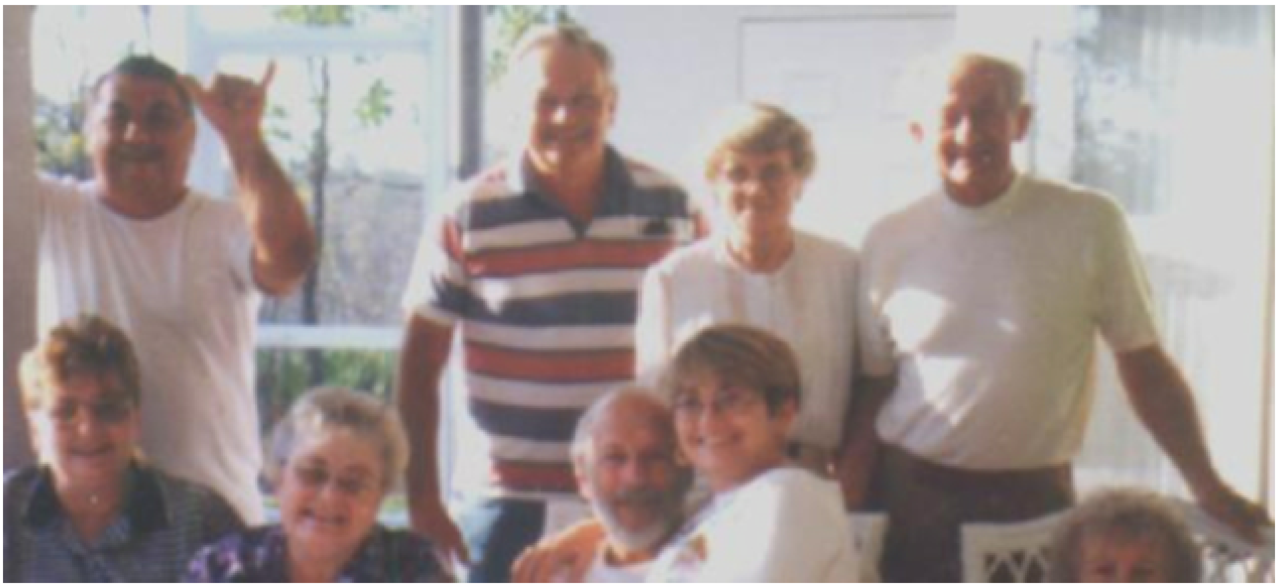

Mengele + Family Members. New Bern, N.C.- May 1999

"Never Before Published Photo"

"The Greatest Trick The Devil Ever Pulled Was Convincing The World That He Didn't Exist!"[23]

Rauff, Mengele, Wisner, Brunner, Skorzeny, Gehlen

*Never Before Published Photo.

---

[23] "Verbal" a character from the motion picture, "The Usual Suspects."

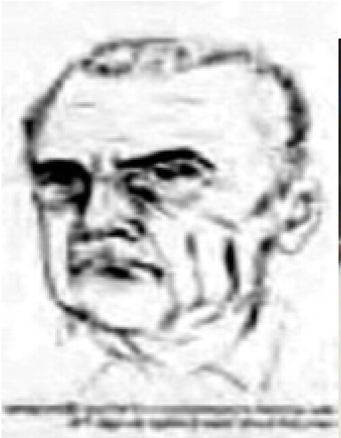

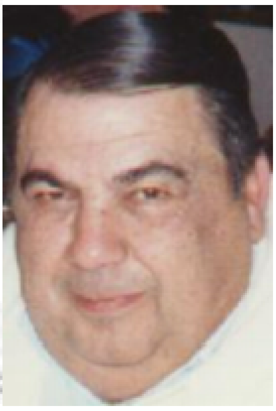

1985 Most Wanted Composite Drawing of Mengele (2003) Dr. Josef Mengele aka: Steve Rabel

Mengele
*Never Before Published Photo.

Mengele
*Never Before Published Photo.

Mengele
*Never Before Published Photo.

Skorzeny & Mengele & Hitler's Eagle's Nest   Mengele & Family

52

"George H.W. Bush next to his

Mengele

adopted father, Prescott Bush,
with Mengele in the middle.

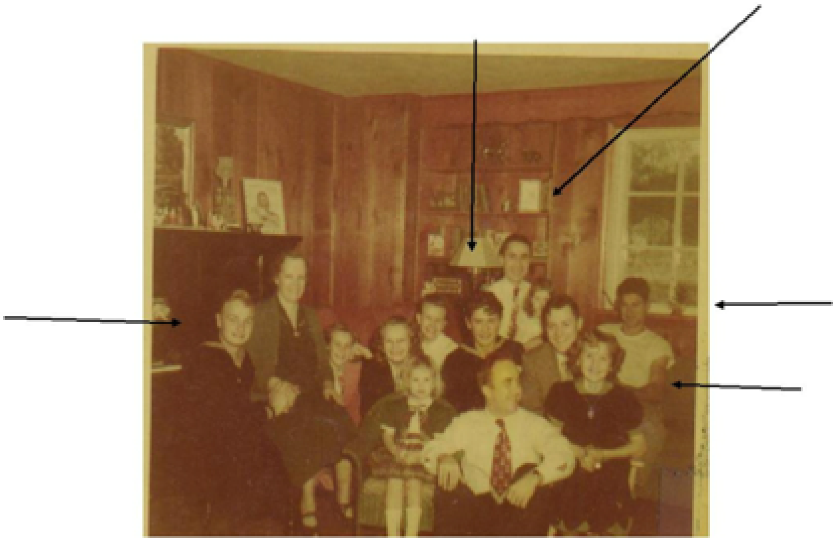

American
O.S.S.

Skorzeny

Frank Wisner

Mommy Bush

Gehlen

Mengele Has A Wart-Like
Growth Above His Left Eye.

Rabel Has A Wart-Like
Growth Above His Left Eye.

Mengele 2003 - Dr. Josef Mengele aka: Steve Rabel
Standing in Front of His House at 3688 E. Ibis Cove Ct. Hernando, Florida. (6/2003)
Never Before Published Photo!

Skorzeny & Mengele (1996) “Republican Fundraiser”

Never Before Published Photo.

54

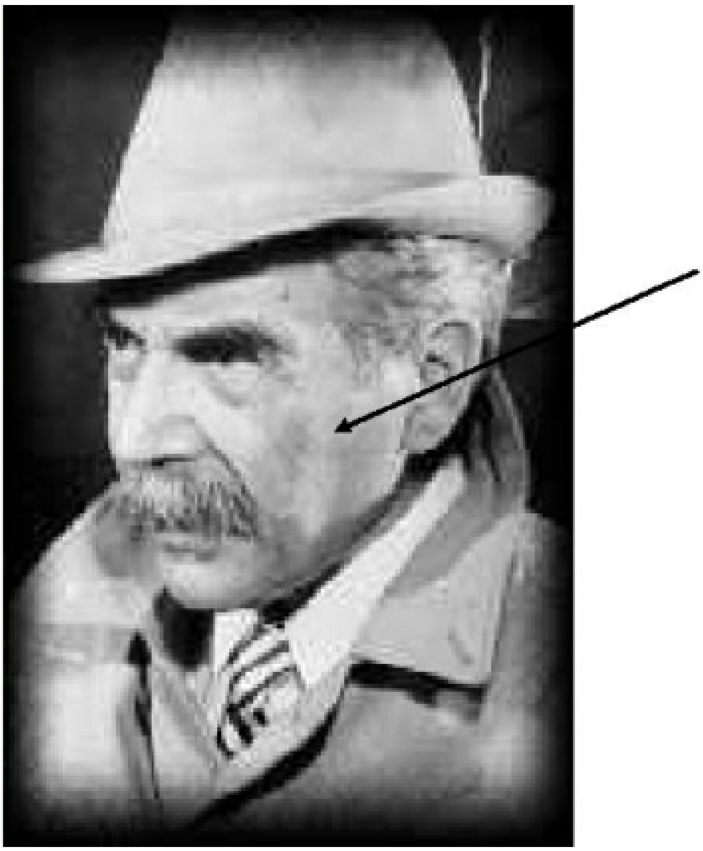

*Notice the wart -like growth above his left eye & make-up on his nose & cheek.

Mengele 1961

The “Real Mengele” With A C.I.A.
Make-Up Job & Fake Mustache
To Make Him Look Older!

卐

Anthrax Mailer Killer of 2001!

Mengele 1945 Mengele With A Large Anthrax Sore (11/2001) Mengele 1945

“Brotherhood of Aryan Nations / Bush Jr. Fundraiser -Florida 11/2001”

Mengele Is Still Alive Thanks To The C.I.A. , F.B.I. & Vatican.

He Looks Much Younger Than He Really Is!

The San Francisco Zodiac Killer, The Boston Strangler & The 2001 Anthrax Mailer Killer Are All The Same Killer; Dr. Josef Mengele…He's A C.I.A. Assassin, Still Alive & His Name Is Steven Rabel !

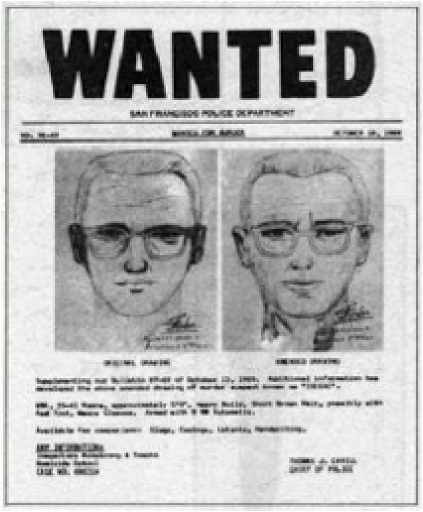

WANTED

SAN FRANCISCO POLICE DEPARTMENT

Mengele with his Zodiac Killer glasses & white "Zodiac" robe at Skorzeny's House with Family. New Jersey, 1974

Mengele

DeSalvo

*Notice the similarities between Dr. Josef Mengele & Desalvo. Eyewitnesses to the Boston Strangler killings claim that a "very handsome, well dressed man in a suit with black hair" was suspected to be the killer. Dr. Josef Mengele is the "Real" Boston Strangler!

Albert Lee Desalvo confessed to being the Boston Strangler. He was murdered in jail one day before he was going to recant his confession. His killer has never been caught .

Frank Wisner: The C.I.A.'s Evil Co-Founder & Propaganda Master

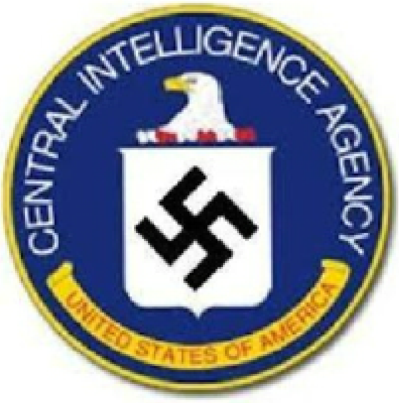
CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

1965 American C.I.A. Co-Founder Frank Wisner 2003

Frank Wisner's Alleged Alias is: Ed Kobylarz.

He lives at: 204 Creekview Rd. New Bern, North Carolina. 28562

Phone: (252) 633-7947

Rauff, Mengele, Wisner, Brunner, Skorzeny, Gehlen

57

Dr. Mengele

C.I.A. Frank
Wisner

SS Nazi

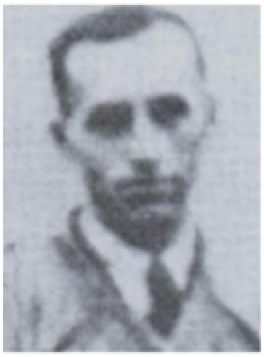

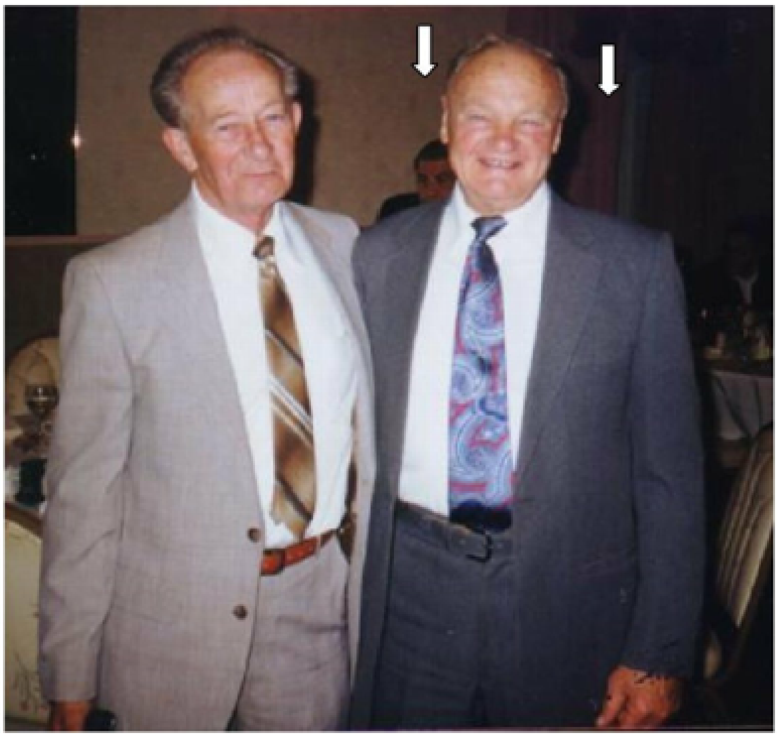

SS Nazi Brunner 1945

Alois Brunner & Frank Wisner

Republican Fundraiser / C.I.A. Spook Convention Florida 2003
"Never Before Published Photo"

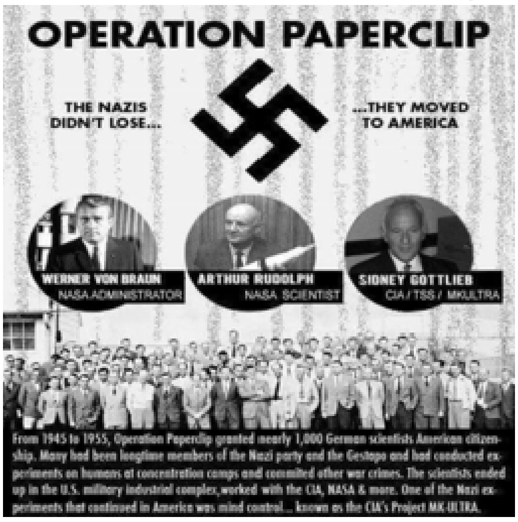
OPERATION PAPERCLIP
THE NAZIS DIDN'T LOSE...
...THEY MOVED TO AMERICA
WERNER VON BRAUN
NASA ADMINISTRATOR
ARTHUR RUDOLPH
NASA SCIENTIST
SIDNEY GOTTLIEB
CIA / TSS / MKULTRA

From 1945 to 1955, Operation Paperclip granted nearly 1,000 German scientists American citizenship. Many had been longtime members of the Nazi party and the Gestapo and had conducted experiments on humans at concentration camps and commited other war crimes. The scientists ended up in the U.S. military industrial complex, worked with the CIA, NASA & more. One of the Nazi experiments that continued in America was mind control... known as the CIA's Project MK-ULTRA.

“The Greatest Trick The Devil Ever Pulled Was Convincing The World That He Didn’t Exist!”[24]

---

[24] “Verbal” a character from the motion picture, “The Usual Suspects.”

1965 Photo 2003 Photo

Frank Wisner: Background

Education

He was educated at Woodberry Forest School in Orange County, Virginia and the University of Virginia, where he received both B.A. and LL.B. degrees. He was also tapped for the Seven Society.

OSS

After graduating, Wisner worked as a Wall Street lawyer. In 1941, six months before the attack on Pearl Harbor, he enlisted in the United States Navy. He worked in the Navy's censor's office until he was able to get a transfer to the Office of Strategic Services (OSS). He was stationed first in Turkey, and then in Romania, where he became head of OSS operations in southeastern Europe. This happened just prior to the Romanian royal coup of August 23, 1944. At Wisner's behest, King Michael I of Romania permitted the United States to fly out Allied prisoners of war.

On August 29, some 1,350 American airmen who had been held prisoners in Romania were rescued by an U.S. Air Crew Rescue Unit, with Soviet troops only days away from entering Bucharest. Despite continuing fighting between Romanian and Red Army forces, and the presence of the Wehrmacht and Luftwaffe in the immediate Bucharest area, the rescue team used the Popeşti-Leordeni Airfield.[5] Twelve B-17 Flying Fortress flew out the prisoners in hourly shifts. In all, some 1,700 American POWs were rescued with the help of the Romanians.

Wisner reportedly grew to hate the Soviet Union during this period, particularly after witnessing a train full of Germans being sent to a labor camp in Russia. Later, Wisner's main task was to spy on the activities of the Soviet Union. Wisner's agents managed to penetrate the Romanian Communist Party and the Red Army's headquarters in Bucharest. He learned that the Soviet Union planned to take over all of Eastern Europe, and was disappointed at the U.S. failure to move to prevent it. He advised the Romanian royal family to go into exile. In March 1945, Wisner was transferred to Wiesbaden, where he served as OSS liaison to the Gehlen Organization.[2] In 1946, he returned to law practice, joining the New York City law firm of Carter Ledyard.

CIA

Wisner was recruited in 1947 by Dean Acheson to join the State Department's Office of Occupied Territories. In 1948, the CIA created a covert action division, the Office of Policy Coordination (OPC). Frank Wisner was put in charge of the operation and recruited many of his old friends from Carter Ledyard. According to its secret charter, its responsibilities include "propaganda, economic warfare, preventive direct action, including sabotage, anti-sabotage, demolition and evacuation procedures; subversion against hostile states, including assistance to underground resistance groups, and support of indigenous anti-communist elements in threatened countries of the free world."

In 1947 Wisner established Operation Mockingbird, a program to influence the domestic and foreign media. In 1952, he became head of the Directorate of Plans, with Richard Helms as his chief of operations. This office had control of 75% of the CIA budget. In this position, he was instrumental in supporting pro-American forces that toppled Mohammed Mossadegh in Iran and Jacobo Arbenz Guzmán in Guatemala following the Alfhem affair.

The FBI Director, J. Edgar Hoover, became jealous of the CIA's growing power. He described the OPC as "Wisner's gang of weirdoes'" and began carrying out investigations into their past. It did not take him long to discover that some of them had been active in left-wing politics in the 1930s. This information was passed to Senator Joseph McCarthy who started making attacks on members of the OPC. Hoover also gave McCarthy details of an affair that Wisner had with Princess Caradja in Romania during the war; Hoover claimed that Caradja was a Soviet agent.

Hoover and Senator McCarthy succeeded in forcing CIA director Allen W. Dulles to dismiss one of his key staff members, Carmel Offie in 1953 over Wisner's objections. Wisner worked closely with Kim Philby, the British agent who was eventually unmasked as a Soviet spy. He was also deeply involved in establishing the Lockheed U-2 spy plane program run by Richard M. Bissell, Jr.

Wisner was devastated when the Soviet Union crushed the Hungarian Revolution of 1956. As OPC director, he believed that an important opportunity for "rollback" was forfeited in October–November 1956, when Hungarian reformist leader Imre Nagy announced Hungary's withdrawal from the Warsaw Pact, and when he and Hungarian insurgents called on the West for help against invading Soviet troops. President Eisenhower, however, deemed it too risky to intervene militarily in a landlocked country such as Hungary, and he feared it might trigger a nuclear war with the Soviet Union. Moreover, Secretary of State John Foster Dulles mistakenly believed that Nagy sided with the Soviet Union.

On October 25, 1956, Dulles sent a telegram to the U.S. embassy in Belgrade expressing his fears that the Imre Nagy–János Kádár government might take "reprisals" against the Hungarian "freedom fighters". By the next day, October 26, State

Department officials in Washington assumed the worse about Nagy, asserting in a top secret memorandum: "Nagy's appeal for Soviet troops indicates, at least superficially, that there are not any open differences between the Soviet and Hungarian governments." While some inflammatory broadcasts by the CIA-financed Radio Free Europe by themselves certainly neither caused the Hungarian Revolution nor the subsequent Soviet crackdown, the Kremlin leaders exploited the foreign radio broadcasts as an ex post facto excuse. But Wisner took this in stride. "They do this because... they can't stand the truth; they can't stand the thing being understood throughout the world or within the Soviet Union as a genuine revolt."

Soon after the Soviet crackdown on the Hungarian revolution, Wisner suffered a breakdown, and was diagnosed as a manic depressive. He underwent psychoanalysis and was subjected to electroshock therapy. After spending 6 months at The Sheppard and Enoch Pratt Hospital, he was released in 1958. CIA Director Allen Dulles named Wisner Chief of the CIA's London Station, but he was still suffering from mental illness. In 1962, he was recalled to Washington, D.C., and agreed to retire from the CIA.

Personal life

Wisner was born in Laurel, Mississippi to parents Frank George Wisner, a lumberman (March 5, 1873 in Clinton, Iowa – died April 24, 1938), and Mary Jeannette Gardiner (August 21, 1875 in Clinton, Iowa – died October 13, 1959). They were married on September 28, 1897 in Lyons, Iowa. He married Mary Ellis Knowles (June 28, 1912 in Pensacola, Florida – July 9, 2002; remarried in 1975 to newspaperman Clayton Fritchey). They had four children: Frank G. Wisner, Ellis Wisner, Graham Wisner, and Elizabeth "Wendy" Hazard.

In Maryland, Frank Wisner "***allegedly***" committed suicide using one of his son's shotguns. His funeral service was held at the Bethlehem Chapel in the Washington National Cathedral. He was buried at Arlington National Cemetery as a naval commander, his wartime rank. Bullshit! Skorzeny faked Wisner's alleged suicide in 1965!

Wisner 1974

Wisner (Easter & Skorzeny's 1983)

Wisner 1986 with Mrs.
Skorzeny
Boynton Beach, Florida

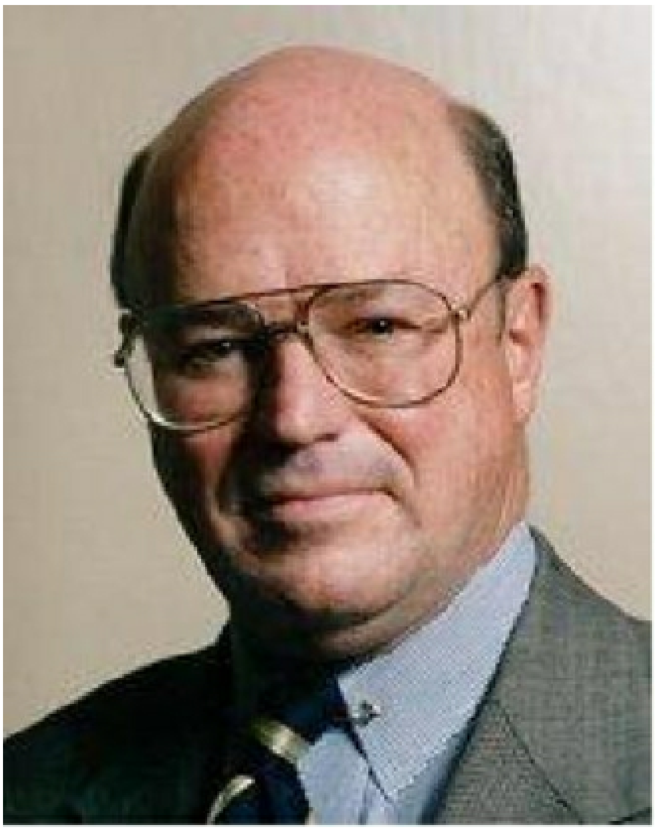

Frank Wisner, Jr. & Frank Wisner Sr.

"Frank Wisner, Jr. was a big catch for Enron Corporation. His lineage is impeccable, since his father, Frank Wisner Sr., was a senior CIA official (from 1947 until his suicide in 1965) who was involved in the overthrow of Arbenz of Guatemala (1954) and Mossadeq of Iran (1953). Wisner Junior was well-known in the CIA and he worked as Under Secretary of Defense for Policy and Under Secretary of State for International Security Affairs; his current boss, Kenneth L. Lay, Chief Executive Officer of Enron Corporation, also worked for the Pentagon during the US war in Vietnam. With 'economic espionage' as a task for the CIA (see PD, 12 October 1997), there is little doubt that Wisner used this instrument during his long-tenure as Ambassador in Asian nations. A Wisner staffer told InterPress Services this year that 'if anybody asked the CIA to help promote US business in India, it was probably Frank'.

"When Wisner was US Ambassador to the Philippines (1991-92), Enron was in the midst of negotiations to manage the two Subic Bay power plants. When Wisner left Manila in July 1992, Enron won the deal and began to manage the plant in January 1993. During Wisner tenure in India, he fought long and hard to secure various deals for Enron. He went so far as to boycott the 'India Power '96 -- Beyond Dabhol' summit, despite being scheduled to give an address (this was part of a US advisory to companies to avoid India for six-months, a pressure tactic on India during the winter of 1995-96). Wisner left India earlier this year only after it seemed like Enron's place was secure." Frank Wisner Jr. is “allegedly” a “clone” of his father Frank Wisner Sr. & not his actual son!

Young Frank Wisner Sr.

62

Reinhardt Gehlen: Hitler & C.I.A.s' Most Beloved *SS* Nazi Spymaster

Gehlen 1945	Gehlen 1969 Fake Gehlen	Gehlen – 1969 With His New Facelift.
	Alleged aka: Hank Janowicz.	
	Lives in Wayne, New Jersey today	
Skorzeny	Gehlen	Gehlen

Skorzeny

“The Greatest Trick The Devil Ever Pulled Was Convincing The World That He Didn’t Exist!”[25]

Skorzeny’s son married Gehlen’s daughter.

Reinhardt Gehlen’s alleged alias is Hank Janowicz.

He and his family lived at
31 Rumana Rd. Wayne,
N.J. (973) 696-6599

---

[25] “Verbal”, A character from the Motion Picture, “The Usual Suspects”

Wisner K.C. Crump's Homosassa, FL 9/30/2000 Gehlen

Reinhardt Gehlen aka: Hank Janowicz + Family. K.C. Crump's Homosassa, FL 9/30/2000 Gehlen's Gained Some Weight. "Never Before Published Photo"

Reinhardt Gehlen 1945

Gehlen 1969

Gehlen 1974

Rauff, Mengele, Wisner, Brunner, Skorzeny, Gehlen

Reinhardt Gehlen aka: Hank Janowicz
Wayne, NJ January 2003

Young Reinhardt Gehlen
1945

Gehlen, Skorzeny in red in wheelchair, Brunner, Rauff, Mengele, Wisner October 1998 The C.I.A. “Spook” Royal Family

SS Nazi Brigadier General: Reinhardt Gehlen

Reinhardt Gehlen was born during the same time frame that Mengele, and Bormann was born. He began as a career German officer who graduated to intelligence, miraculously emerging from the crushed Third Reich to become the great spymaster in post-war Berlin when it was the hotbed of espionage between the Soviets and the West. The son of an army officer who later became a successful publisher, He was born in Erfurt, Germany. After graduating officer's candidate school, in 1942 he was promoted as a lieutenant colonel to head intelligence for Foreign Armies East, the German military forces in Russia. His superior was Colonel Adolf Heusinger who found Gehlen a superb spymaster (In postwar Germany, Gehlen would later find a place for Heusinger in his West German intelligence organization.) Gehlen's unit worked separately from the SS and SD, collecting an enormous amount of information on Russian partisans and regular troops.

Of particular interest to Gehlen was the Soviet officer corps. In-depth profiles were produced not only on the high-ranking officers but also on those who would replace those military leaders in years to come. The Soviet codes and ciphers were systematically categorized, then broken. Russian intelligence methods of infiltration, interrogation, use of Covers, letter-boxes, dead drops, all the techniques of espionage were chronicled in precise terms and on an encyclopedic basis. All Communist politicians received the same kind of deep profile treatment. Gehlen was a demanding, exacting spymaster and his records later proved how extensive and encompassing was the work of his unit. Gehlen cultivated a vast network of spies, mostly recruiting Russians with German backgrounds and who thought of themselves as Germans. He planted these spies behind enemy lines and in every major city in Russia, as well as territory already occupied by Nazi troops, in Poland, Prussia, the Baltic cities. His intelligence reports were accurate and dependable and helped the Germans in their tactical retreat from Russia after the fall of Stalingrad, but Gehlen and no one else could aid the maniac Adolf Hitler in his relentless drive for self-destruction.

Hitler had never liked Gehlen as head of German military intelligence (FHO) on the eastern front, Gehlen never minced words in his reports which were read by Hitler himself. The Fuhrer tersely commended Gehlen's precise reports but he was constantly annoyed by Gehlen's dim view of the eventual conquest of Russia by Germany. This began in the summer of 1942 when Gehlen assessed the Russian will to fight to the death and predicted in one report the eventual Battle of Stalingrad and that this was a key city the Russians would never give up. By early 1945, Gehlen, at his headquarters in Zossen, had risen to the rank of major general and he realized that the war was lost. Hitler, in his eyes, had gone mad, having dismissed the best of his generals and, in particular, the grand old man of German intelligence, Admiral Wilhelm Canaris. The Fuhrer had ordered the murder of more than 5.000 high-ranking officers and politicians whom he suspected of being part of the Black Orchestra (German underground) and the failed plot against his life in 1944.

In the past he had warned Gehlen that his incisive intelligence reports were too heavily laced with "a virulent pessimism. "Hitler, by April 1945, dumped Gehlen, telling his generals that the spymaster "is an unreliable defeatist." Gehlen was unperturbed. As usual, he had a plan to not only survive but rise again as an important intelligence chief in the post war years. His vast, deep knowledge of Russia, its leaders, its intelligence, would be of great use to the Allies. To achieve that end, Gehlen had all of his files put onto microfilm and then led the leaders of his unit toward the Alps where, in the earth beneath a hut near Lake Spitzing in Upper Bavaria, he and his men buried fifty large steel boxes, the archives of their intelligence unit. Gehlen and his men then sought out a contingent of American troops and surrendered to them.

Eventually, Gehlen was interviewed by officers of the U.S. Army's Counter Intelligence Corp-(CIC). He informed them that he was able to provide the Allies with a vast repository of intelligence on the Soviets, information the West would soon desperately need. None of the CIC officers shared his view. More American officers interrogated Gehlen, coming to the conclusion, in Gehlen's words, "that I was not a valuable prisoner." A few days later, Gehlen was herded with other prisoners into the back of a truck and driven to a prison at Wiesbaden. Gehlen was not long forgotten. The Russians wanted to prevent the data about them from reaching the West, and perhaps to imprison Gehlen. In May 1945 both the Russians and the Allies set up separate commissions searching for German intelligence officers, especially their cache of information and in particular Reinhardt Gehlen, the chief of the FHO. U.S. Army records revealed that Gehlen had been sent from the Wiesbaden prison to Oberusel Concentration camp in the American zone and CIC officers were notified. Gehlen was then brought before American General Edwin L. Sibert, one of the liberators of Paris in 1944 and head of all military intelligence in the American zone. Gehlen, in essence, told Sibert that Joseph Stalin would never allow Poland, Czechoslovakia, Bulgaria, Rumania, Hungary and the Baltic states to escape occupation by Soviet troops and that he planned to spread communism throughout Germany to purge the country of its national socialism. Joseph Stalin would risk war with the West to achieve his ends, Gehlen insisted. Sibert listened patiently, then replied with a single sentence: "You know a lot about the Russians, General."

The FHO chief then told Sibert that he could prove his claims through the intelligence he and his men had accumulated during the war. Gehlen wrote out a 129-page report for Sibert which detailed Russian military and political aims, and then turned over the 50 steel boxes which had been hidden in Bavaria. It was a treasure trove of eye-opening information, which detailed current strengths, composition and deployment of Soviet divisions, thousands of air photographs pinpointing Soviet rail junctions, military fortifications and armament plants, as well as figures on armament production, morale reports on the Red Army and the Russian people as a whole. So impressed were Sibert and his superior, General Walter Bedell Smith, that Gehlen was given the green light to set up his intelligence unit and begin spying for the West. A short time later Gehlen and his top officers—Heinz Herre, Albert Scholler, Horst Hiemenz, and Konrad Stephanus were sent to the U.S. Gehlen and his staff met with OSS director William J. Donovan and his European chief Allen Dulles, who both agreed with him that Russia was the dominant threat to world peace. It was obvious that while America was rapidly disarming in 1945, Russia kept its six million-man army intact, and kept its 50,000 tanks and 20,000 aircraft operational. In order to execute conquest of Eastern Europe the Soviets could not disarm, which was shown as proof of their hostile intentions. It was not enough proof to the OSS. Not until February 1946, however, did Gehlen return to Europe to seriously begin his espionage operations against the Russians, working in tandem with Hermann Baun who had already been putting together his own intelligence unit under Sibert's approval. The delay in Washington was the American reluctance to initiate espionage against its former ally, Russia. But when the Soviets invaded northern Iran, their aims were clearly that of an aggressor and Gehlen was given the green light to start his "Org".

The Gehlen Organization, as it became known, was funded with $7 million and operated in the Soviet zone of Eastern Germany. Gehlen's own headquarters at Pullach evaluated the information culled from tens of thousands of willing spies. Who were these armies of the night that flocked to Gehlen's banner? They came from the tattered ranks of German prisoners -of-war who were released over a period of several years following World War II. Gehlen's men interviewed each and every one of these men, writing out details of their concentration camp experiences. Those who had been stool-pigeons or who had turned propagandists for the Soviets were eliminated.

Those who had special knowledge of the Russian military and civilians and who proved loyal to the West were enlisted as agents. Other agents, thousands of them, were already in place. These were Gehlen's "sleeper" agents in Russia, Poland, the Baltic states, in Rumania, Bulgaria, Hungary, Albania, Czechoslovakia and, especially in East Germany. Gehlen's service operated under the auspices of the U.S. until the establishment of the Federal Republic of Germany when Gehlen's organization was absorbed into the West German government. His bureau was known as "Org" to its members but officially it was called the Federal Intelligence Service, and, in 1956, the BND. Gehlen's operations were chiefly directed against the East German Ministry of State and Security the Communist political police *Staats Scherheitsndienst* (SSD). The SSD was headed by Ernst Wollweber, a crusty old German Communist organizer turned spymaster who loathed Gehlen. One of the reasons why Wollweber despised Gehlen was because Gehlen had planted his agent Walter Gramisch into a powerfully useful position, on Wollweber's personal staff. He so hated Gehlen and was so full of malice due to the many intelligence triumphs of Gehlen's over him that Ernst Wollweber put a "dead or alive" reward on Gehlen of one million marks. It was never collected. One of Gehlen's great strengths was that he had placed many dedicated agents into high-level offices and positions in East Germany. For more than twenty years Gehlen's organization provided one spectacular coup after another. It identified the existence of SMERSH as the execution arm of the KGB, it helped the CIA to dig the Berlin Tunnel so the West could splice into security telephone lines and listen in on top-level Communist conversations. It was an agent of Gehlen's who secured for the CIA the copy of Nikita Khrushchev's secret speech to Communist Party members which denounced Joseph Stalin. Gehlen also obtained information in advance of the Six-Day War in the Middle East in 1967. There were failures. Gehlen did not warn the West that the Berlin wall would be built. (He did say in his memoirs that he had reported that the Soviets would quickly move to prevent the mass exodus of East Germans to the West and that they were stockpiling building materials.) A significant defection, that of Hans Joachim Geyer in 1953, caused dozens of Gehlen's East German informants to be compromised.

Throughout the 1950s and 1960s, Gehlen expanded his organization until he became the most powerful man in Europe. His agents operated in the U.S., England, France, in the Middle East (working with both the Egyptian secret service and Israel's Mossad). Then, in 1963, disaster struck the Gehlen Organization. Heinz Felfe, who had worked for Gehlen for more than a decade as an agent, was exposed as being a double agent who was really a mole in the employ of the Soviets. The scandal broke over the head of one of Gehlen's most ardent sponsors (who called him "my dear General",) who was compelled to resign, the venerable Chancellor of Germany Konrad Adenauer. Reinhardt Gehlen, whose prestige had been dishonored, would continue at his post for another five years. He retired in 1968, replaced by one of his old subordinates, Lieutenant General Gerhard Wessel. Eleven years later Reinhardt Gehlen died of natural causes. He is remembered today as the spymaster's spymaster one of the greatest intelligence chiefs in history. [26]

Bull Shit! He is still alive today. The C.I.A. is still protecting him & his alleged alias is Hank Janowicz. He lives in Wayne, NJ. SS Nazi- Reinhardt Gehlen is still alive and funneling billions of stolen Jewish Holocaust dollars into anti-freedom, anti-Jewish, anti-black, pro-life, anti-gun, conservative New World Order Republican campaigns, like Bush Jr's. Also, neo-Nazi fundamentalist, conservative, right-wing, Christian Coalition, anti-freedom groups like the abortion doctor killer supporters "Operation Rescue", "The Brotherhood of Aryan Nations "organized crime" hate group," the KKK and C.I.A. sponsored Al Qaeda Terrorist Cells.[27]

"The Greatest Trick The Devil Ever Pulled Was Convincing The World That He Didn't Exist!"[28]

---

[26] National Archives, Washington D.C.

[27] ORION "Your Man On The Inside."

[28] "Verbal" A Character from the Motion Picture, "The Usual Suspects."

CIA Admits Long Relationship With WWII *SS* Nazi : General Reinhardt Gehlen

By Maria Alvarez - The New York Post 9-24-00

COLLEGE PARK, Md. (UPI) - The Central Intelligence Agency has for the first time confirmed that a high-ranking Nazi general placed his anti-Soviet spy ring at the disposal of the United States during the early days of the Cold War. The National Archives said in a release Wednesday that the CIA had filed an affidavit in U.S. District Court "acknowledging an intelligence relationship with German General Reinhardt Gehlen that it has kept secret for 50 years."

"The CIA's announcement marks the first acknowledgement by that agency that it had any relationship with Gehlen and opens the way for declassification of records about the relationship," the National Archives said. Gehlen was Hitler's senior intelligence officer on the Eastern Front during the war and transferred his expertise and contacts to the U.S. as World War II reached its climax. While Gehlen's relationship with U.S. intelligence during the 1940s and 1950s has been the topic of some five books over the years, the eventual release of CIA documents pertaining to the development of his European spy ring could shed new light on the origins of the Cold War and early U.S. espionage efforts against Moscow.

Gehlen's network of agents in Europe - including many with Nazi backgrounds who were bailed out of prisoner of war camps by U.S. intelligence officers - was known as the Gehlen Organization and received millions of dollars in funding from the U.S. until 1956. The CIA's acknowledgement of its dealings with Gehlen came in a response to an appeal of a Freedom of Information Act request by researcher Carl Oglesby, the National Archives said. The agency pledged to release its records on the general in accordance with the Nazi War Crimes Disclosure Act. The Act established the Nazi War Criminal Records Interagency Working Group (IWG), which for more than two years has been declassifying documents related to World War II war crimes and releasing them through the National Archives. "This shows that the law is working," said former Rep. Elizabeth Holtzman, a member of the IWG. "We now must work closely with the Agency to follow through with the release of these records." [29]

---

[29] United Press International

CIA Declassifies Its Records On Dealings With Ex-Nazis

Documents May Give Clues About Obstacles in Hunt for War Criminals
By George Lardner Jr.
Washington Post Staff Writer
Sunday, March 18, 2001; Page A04

The CIA is finally getting around to declassifying the records of its dealings with former Nazi spies after World War II. It says it has found 251 boxes and 2,901 file folders of potentially relevant documents -- apparently more than 250,000 pages -- and that it will take about two years to complete work on them. Carl Oglesby, a political writer and researcher, has been seeking the records since 1985 in connection with a study of Reinhardt Gehlen, a German general who had been head of Nazi intelligence for the eastern front. After the war, at the request of U.S. occupation forces in Europe, he set up "the Gehlen organization," a counterespionage network that supplied the Pentagon and the CIA with the bulk of their intelligence on the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe. The organization, which employed thousands of people, many of them former Nazis, was the forerunner of West Germany's secret service, the BND. It was formally recognized in 1956 and Gehlen headed it until he retired in 1968. When Oglesby got only a smattering of documents from the Army and the CIA, he sued in 1987, emphasizing meetings that Gehlen held in the summer of 1945 with U.S. officials at Fort Hunt, Va. He and some other researchers believe that the post-war hunt for Nazi war criminals was severely compromised by American intelligence demands for help in meeting the new Soviet menace.

A retired CIA official who dealt with Gehlen's organization for seven years says those suspicions have been exaggerated into conspiratorial nonsense and that Gehlen and his top aides came out of the German army general staff that tried, several times, to overthrow Adolf Hitler. But he, too, expressed frustration that so much of the true story remains classified. "I've lived with this for 50 years," said James H. Critchfield, the CIA officer assigned to the Gehlen organization from 1949 to 1956. "Almost everything negative that has been written about Gehlen, in which he has been described as an ardent ex-Nazi, one of Hitler's war criminals -- this is all far from the fact." Critchfield said CIA records may turn up the names of six to 10 veterans of the SD, Gestapo chief Heinrich Himmler's intelligence service, who joined Gehlen's network in 1950. But he said Gehlen took them on reluctantly, under pressure from German Chancellor Konrad Adenauer to deal with "the avalanche of subversion hitting them from East Germany. "By contrast, Critchfield said, Gehlen's top command consisted of 30 to 40 young staff officers trained under Gen. Ludwig Beck, who was executed in 1944 for conspiring to assassinate Hitler, and Gen. Franz Halder, who was imprisoned until the war ended. "They weren't really a bunch of Nazis," he said.

Oglesby's lawsuit sputtered for 13 years with the CIA refusing to confirm or deny that it had any records reflecting a relation- ship with Gehlen. The litigation survived two trips to the U.S. Court of Appeals here, but last August, Chief U.S. District Judge Norma Holloway Johnson issued an order indicating she was about to dismiss it at the government's request. She rejected the idea that the CIA or any other agency had "unreasonably delayed" the case. Weeks later, the CIA formally acknowledged that Gehlen had at the end of the war turned over what remained of his intelligence collection efforts against the Soviet Union and started spying for the United States; the Army "supervised" his work until 1949, when the CIA stepped in for a seven-year stint.

The CIA told the court it was compelled to speak up in response to the Nazi War Crimes Disclosure Act, which Congress passed in 1998 to require public release of U.S. records related to war criminals and crimes committed by the Nazi government and its allies between March 1933, when Hitler acquired dictatorial powers, and May 1945, when the war in Europe ended. "General Gehlen himself is not considered an alleged Nazi war criminal," the CIA said in an affidavit, but records of its dealings with him and his group include documents that are covered by the law. The Army's dealings with Gehlen's group were chaotic at first, with the Army's counter-intelligence corps frozen out of the operation. Critchfield said there may have been some imprudent contacts with German war criminals early on, particularly while Gehlen was being debriefed in Virginia. In the fall of 1948, the CIA assigned Critchfield to report on whether to liquidate the operation or take it over.

With the Berlin airlift in full swing, Critchfield found a station Gehlen had organized near Wiesbaden, manned by 12 Germans intercepting Soviet Air Force voice traffic. U.S. Air Force officials told him that this was "the only real-time intelligence" they were getting about Soviet air operations during the tense period. Critchfield told CIA headquarters "it would be absolutely irresponsible to terminate this" and urged that it be kept going. A cable came back telling him "your recommendations are approved." Asked how many Nazi war criminals there were within Gehlen's organization at any point, Critchfield said the answer will depend on the definition used by the Interagency Working Group charged with administering the disclosure act. For instance, the Nuremberg war crimes tribunal declared the SD a criminal organization, making membership in it a crime, but Critchfield said German de-Nazification courts subsequently came to insist on evidence of individual criminal activity as well. However, he said he expects that the working group will want to keep the definition "as broad as they can." [30]

---

[30] 2001 The Washington Post Company

Alois Brunner: Hitler & C.I.A.'s Most Beloved SS Nazi "Holocaust Killer"

Alois Brunner 1940
National Archives

Alois Brunner 1940
National Archives

Alois Brunner 1945
National Archives

SS-Hauptsturmfuhrer Alois Brunner was "*allegedly*" born in Austria in 1912. His anti-Semitism was considered to be so extreme that he was swiftly tapped to be Adolf Eichmann's private secretary. As head of the Nazi's Jewish affairs office in prewar Vienna, he organized persecution that forced thousands of Jews to flee to other European countries and the United States. When World War II started, he sent 47,000 Austrian Jews to concentration camps. After organizing mass roundups in Berlin, he transferred to Greece, where he was responsible for deporting all 43,000 Jews in Salonika within just two months. In June 1943, he was sent to France to take over the Drancy transit camp near Paris from its French administrators. During 14 months in France, Brunner sent an estimated 25,000 men, women and children to their deaths. SS-Hauptsturmfuhrer Brunner transported the children of Izieu to Auschwitz. One of the most wanted of all war criminals, Brunner was responsible for the killing of thousands of Jews.

He was often sent by Eichmann as a troubleshooter to areas such as France to expedite the Final Solution, the killings of 6 million Jews. After World War II, Alois Brunner found gainful employment courtesy of Reinhardt Gehlen and the CIA. Gehlen, Hitler's top anti-Soviet spy, surrendered to the Americans and offered his services. CIA took the bait and Gehlen re-established his spy organization, and enlisted thousands of Gestapo, Wehrmacht and SS veterans. During the Cold War Gehlen's network of agents received millions of dollars in funding from the U.S. From 1956-68, Reinhardt Gehlen was Germany's Chief of Federal Intelligence Service. Later Brunner escaped to Syria where he became a government adviser. To this day Alois Brunner - now 87 - has successfully evaded capture. He is believed to live in Damascus using the alias Dr. George Fischer, though in December 1999, there were unconfirmed reports that he had died in 1996 and was buried in a Damascus cemetery. With the release of Adolf Eichmann's memoirs, Alois Brunner, whom Eichmann once called his "best man," is again in the news. Brunner was already sentenced to death in absentia in France in 1953 and 1954; more recently, a new suit was filed there based on his sending children to Auschwitz. Previous attempts to persuade Syria to release Brunner failed. Germany applied for his extradition in 1987, and in 1991 the European Parliament voted to condemn Syria for continuing to harbor the alleged war criminal. In 1995 German State prosecutors in Cologne and Frankfurt posted a $333,000 reward for information leading to the arrest of the last leading Nazi still believed to be on the loose. In 2000 rumors were circulating that Poland was preparing to seek the extradition of Alois Brunner. Until now the Syrians have ignored all attempts to extradite him, including those by Nazi hunter, Simon Wiesenthal, but apparently moods are changing in Syria. Brunner was interviewed about 15 years ago in the Austrian news magazine *Bunte*. He said his one regret was that he hadn't murdered more Jews. In 1987 in a telephone interview he told the *Chicago Sun Times*: *"The Jews deserved to die. I have no regrets. If I had the chance I would do it again.."* [31]

Alois Brunner
Never Before Published Photo”

Alois Brunner with Dot
Never Before Published Photo

Alois Brunner with Diane
Never Before Published Photo

---

[31] Children of Izieu.

Alois "The Butcher" Brunner"
May 1967

Alois "The Butcher" Brunner"
1945

Alois "The Butcher" Brunner"
2003

Brunner's Alleged Alias is: Fred Kobylarz

Alois "The Butcher" Brunner {Continued}

Alois Brunner 1945

Alois Brunner & Frank Wisner
Republican Bush Fundraiser (2003)

Steve Rabel aka:	George Pfaff aka:	Fred Kobylarz aka:
SS Nazi	SS Nazi	SS Nazi
Dr. Josef Mengele	Walter Rauff	Alois "The Butcher" Brunner

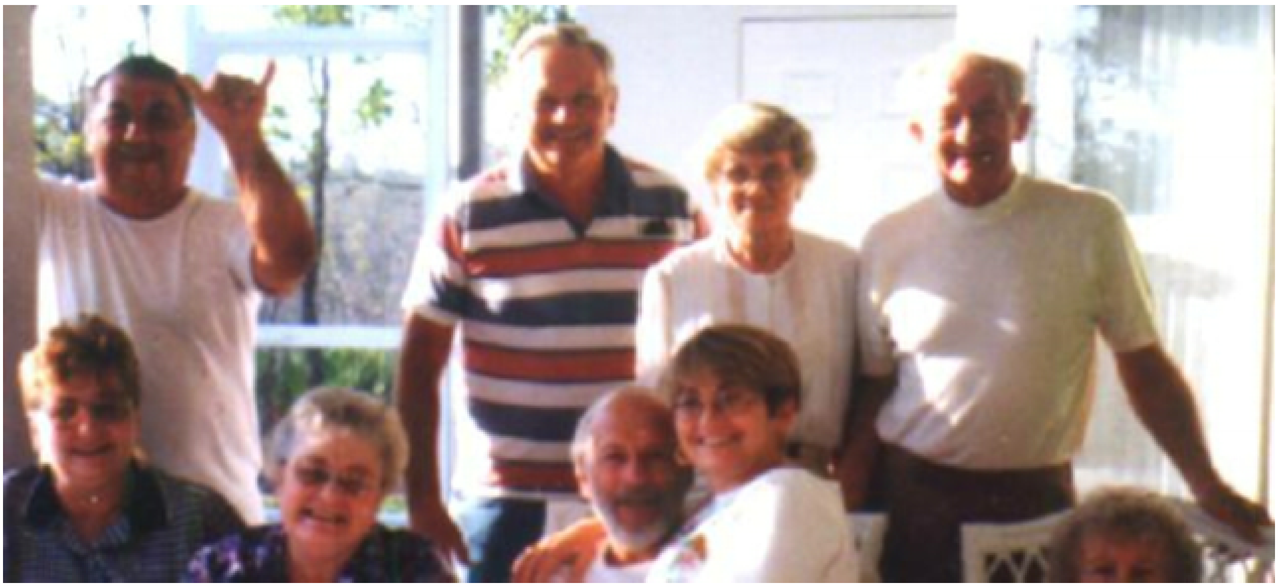

Mengele + Other Family Members. New Bern, N.C.- May 1999

Alois "The Butcher" Brunner's Alleged Alias is : Fred Kobylarz

He Lives at 24 Valley View Drive, Farmington, CT 06032

Phone: (860) 677-4245

6'4" Giant- Skorzeny + Brunner
"Never Before Published Photo"

Dot + Brunner
"Never Before Published Photo"

Brunner 1945 Gehlen + Parent's – Alois Brunner Brunner 2003

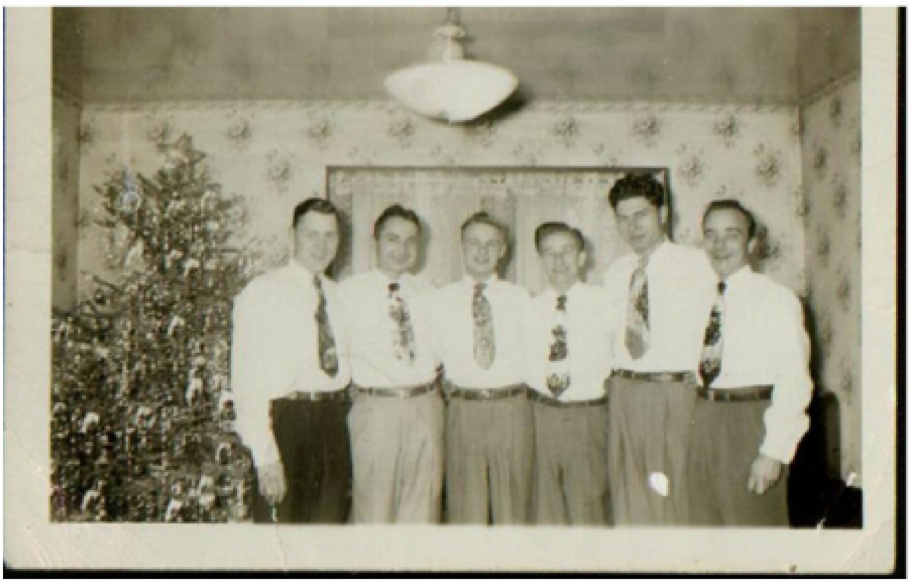

Rauff, Mengele, Wisner, Brunner, Skorzeny, Gehlen Brunner 2001

According to Skorzeny, The Israeli Mossad mistook Walter Rauff for Alois Brunner when they sent letter bombs to him that blew his fingers and eye off. The Mossad still believes that they "bombed" Brunner when in fact they really bombed Walter Rauff. "Oh Well, one disfigured, half-blinded Nazi killer is as good as another."

Brunner is still alive and funneling billions of stolen Jewish Holocaust dollars into anti-freedom, anti-Jewish, anti-black, pro-life, anti-gun, conservative New World Order Nazi Republican campaigns, like Bush Jr's. Also, neo-Nazi fundamentalist, conservative, right-wing, Christian Coalition, anti-freedom groups like the abortion doctor killer supporters Operation Rescue", "The Brotherhood of Aryan Nations "organized crime" hate group," the KKK and C.I.A. sponsored Al Qaeda Terrorist Cells.[32]

The Holocaust Did Happen!

This Evil, SS Nazi Is Still Alive Thanks To The C.I.A, F.B.I. & The Vatican.

---

[32] ORION "Your Man On The Inside."

Walter Rauff: Hitler's Most Beloved & Infamous SS Nazi "Deadly Gas Passer"

Walter Rauff was living in South America under the alias George Fisher, when the Israeli Mossad mistook him for the most wanted SS Nazi war criminal, Alois "The Butcher" Brunner.

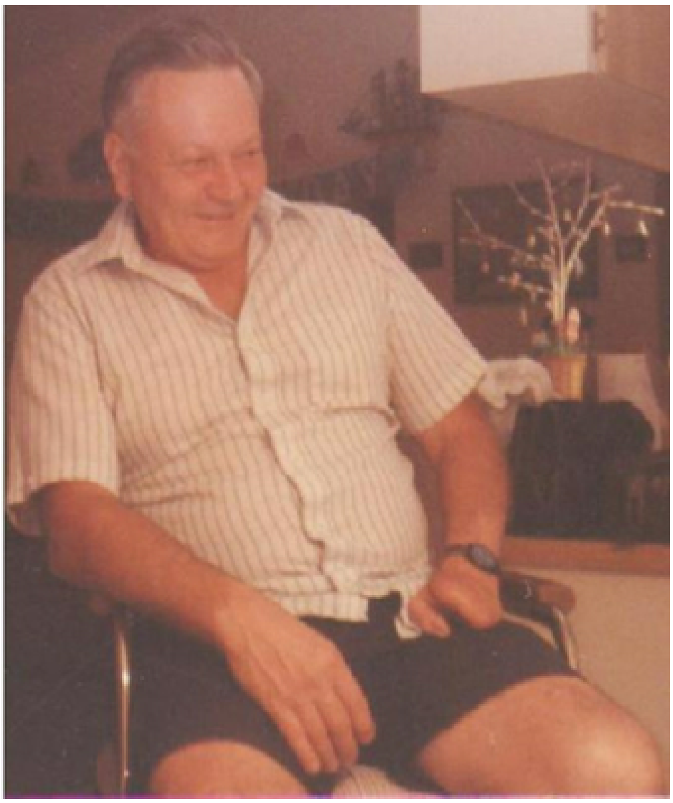

The Mossad sent letter bombs to the person they thought was Brunner. The letter bombs blew

Walter Rauff's fingers' & right eye off instead.

Walter Rauff's right eye and left fingers' are missing, not Alois Brunner's. "Oh, well, one half blinded, disfigured Nazi killer is as good as another. "

SS Nazi: Walter Rauff

"1944 Archive Photo"

Walter Rauff aka: George Pfaff

OKTOBERFEST
American German Club
Golden Retriever

Otto Skorzeny + Walter Rauff

Boynton Beach, FL 10/2001

79

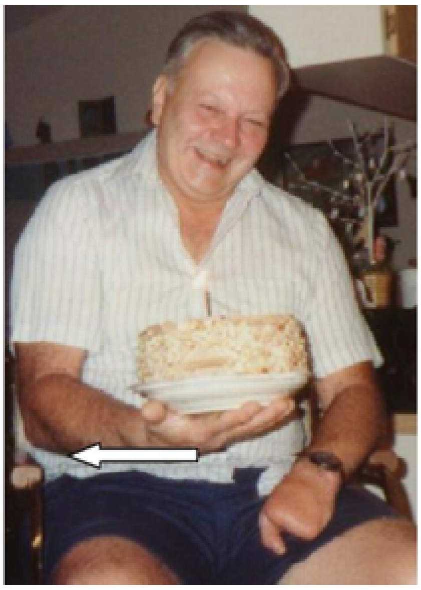

Rauff's Killing Vans' or "Gas Wagons"   Walter Rauff's alleged alias is: George Pfaff.

He lived at: 175 Georgetown Woods Dr.
Youngsville, N.C. 27596
Home Phone: 919-556-0467

Walter Rauff was one of the most despicable & evilest of all the SS Nazis, next to Bush, Mengele, Brunner, Bormann, Eichman, Gehlen and Hirt. He was directly responsible for creating "mobile, poison gas-filled killing vans." He would drive around the ghettos of Poland, in his Nazi custom built FORD van where Jews, "Pols", elderly, and the handicapped were forced by the SS Nazi Gestapo agents into the back of these mobile killing vans. When they were all in the back of the van, the doors were closed and locked, a pipe from the van's exhaust was diverted into a hole in the van's floor where carbon dioxide gas was from the van's engine was pumped into the back until all occupants were dead. Rauff was directly responsible for the deaths of at least 700,000 – 1,000,000+ innocent Jews and Pols.[33]

At the end of WWII, the C.I.A., and the Red Cross helped him and his millions of stolen Jewish Holocaust money escape to Argentina as they had done with all of their Nazis. The Vatican then took over and hid Rauff as they hid Hitler for several years in a local church in Buenos Aires. With help from the Vatican and the C.I.A. he faked his own death in 1984. The C.I.A. helped fake the deaths of all of its SS Nazis'. I have not been able to locate any WWII photos of Walter Rauff. The C.I.A. has destroyed Rauff's photos' as they did with SS Nazi doctor – August Hirt's. The C.I.A.'s censor Nazis' wrote the books about Nazi war criminals living today. Most of these books do not even mention nor do they provide photos of Nazis who are alive today. Brunner, Gehlen, Rauff, Hirt are not even mentioned in most books about Nazi war criminals. All of Rauff's C.I.A. SS Nazi comrades are still alive.

---

[33] National Archives

According to Skorzeny, Walter Rauff is still alive and living under the alleged alias: George Pfaff. He lives near Wake Forest, North Carolina. He is easy to spot because he is missing several fingers and an eye thanks to the Israeli Mossad's letter bombs'! The Mossad mistook Walter Rauff for Alois Brunner when they sent the letter bombs. The Mossad still believes that they "bombed" Brunner when in fact they really bombed Walter Rauff. "Oh well, one disfigured, half blinded Nazi killer is as good as another."

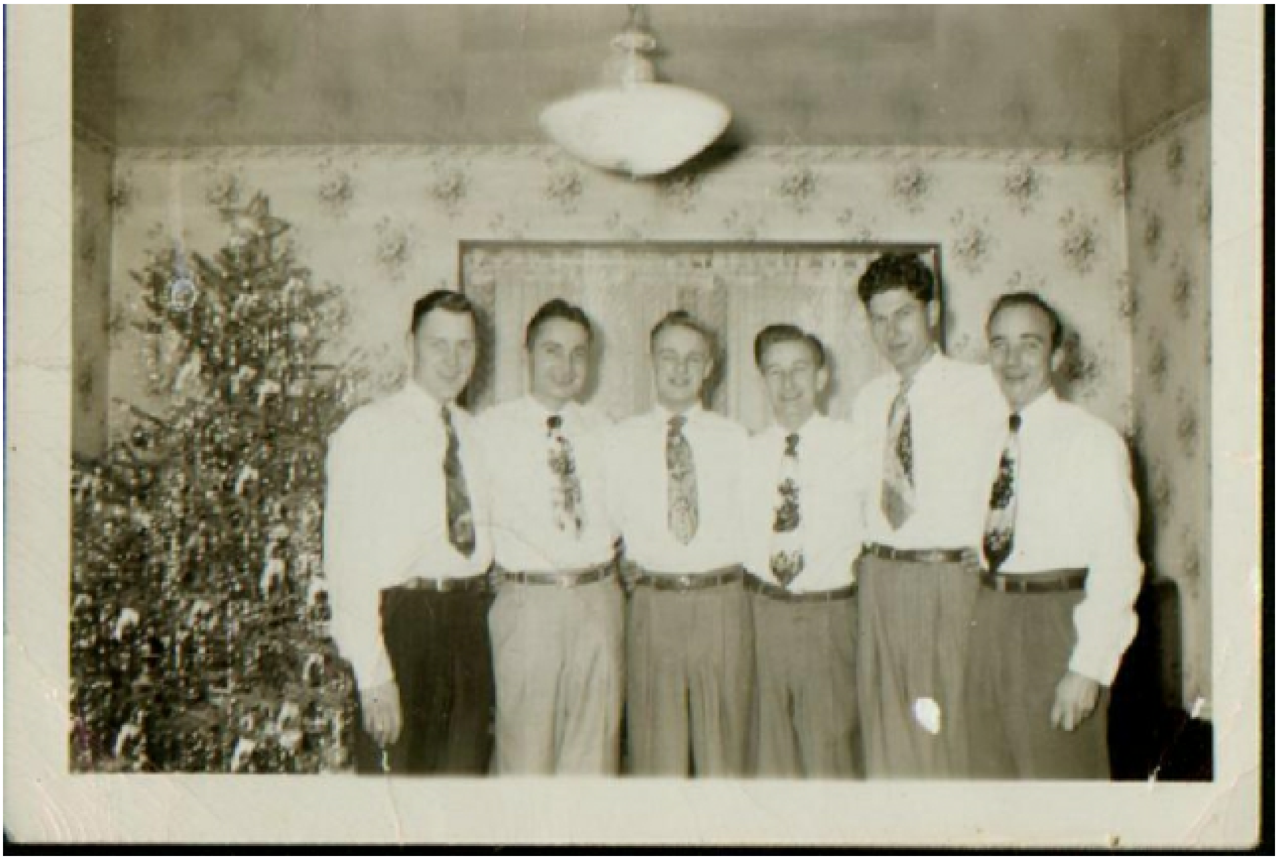

Rauff, Mengele, Wisner, Brunner, Skorzeny, Gehlen

Mengele Rauff Brunner

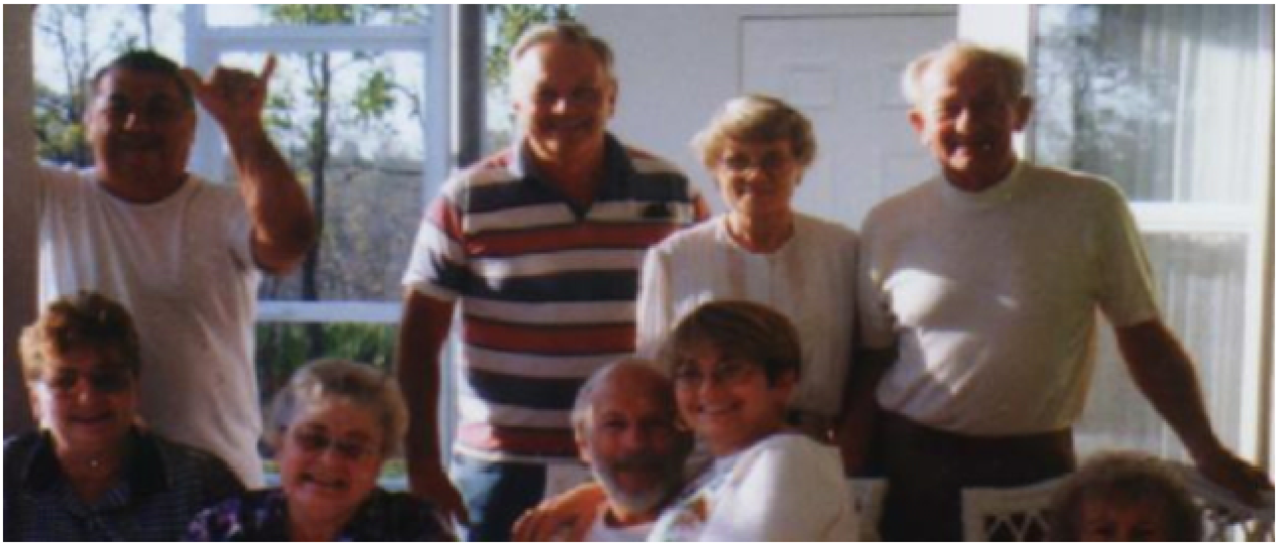

May 1999

Rauff is still alive and funneling billions of stolen Jewish Holocaust dollars into anti-freedom, anti-Jewish, anti-black, pro-life, anti-gun, conservative New World Order Republican campaigns, like Bush Jr's. Also, neo-Nazi fundamentalist, conservative, right-wing, Christian Coalition, anti-freedom groups like the abortion doctor killer supporters Operation Rescue", "The Brotherhood of Aryan Nations "organized crime" hate group," the KKK and C.I.A. sponsored Al Qaeda Terrorist Cells.[34]

Evil, SS Nazi Walter Rauff Is Still Alive Thanks To The C.I.A., F.B.I. & The Vatican!

---

[34] ORION "Your Man On The Inside."

August Hirt: Hitler & C.I.A.’s 2nd Most Beloved *SS* Nazi Doctor The Human Head Collector”

SS Nazi Dr. Hirt’s “Spare Parts” *SS* Nazi Doctor August Hirt aka: Frank Hirt The Holocaust Did Happen!!!

He lived directly across the street from Otto Skorzeny in Boynton Beach, Florida.

(Born 1898 – Died 11/2001)

Mass Holocaust Graves

Shrunken Head

The Holocaust Did Happen!!!

Hirt was a professor at the University of Strasbourg. He collected & “shrunk” the human heads of "Jewish-Bolshevik prisoners" to do "important" anthropological and anatomical studies. (Fischner,1995). Hirt was also a practicing surgeon assigned by Himmler to find an antidote for mustard gas. He prepared cyanide salts to kill Auschwitz prisoners and was an assistant on the Strasbourg project. He experimented on people and dogs as well as on himself. During World War II, a number of German physicians conducted painful and often deadly experiments on thousands of concentration camp prisoners without their consent. Unethical medical experimentation carried out during the Third Reich may be divided into three categories. The first category consists of experiments aimed at facilitating the survival of Axis military personnel. In Dachau, physicians from the German air force and from the German Experimental Institution for Aviation conducted high-altitude experiments, using a low-pressure chamber, to determine the maximum altitude from which crews of damaged aircraft could parachute to safety. Scientists there carried out so-called freezing experiments using prisoners to find an effective treatment for hypothermia. They also used prisoners to test various methods of making seawater potable.

The second category of experimentation aimed at developing and testing pharmaceuticals and treatment methods for injuries and illnesses which German military and occupation personnel encountered in the field. At the German concentration camps of Sachsenhausen, Dachau, Natzweiler, Buchenwald, and Neuengamme, scientists tested immunization compounds and sera for the prevention and treatment of contagious diseases, including malaria, typhus, tuberculosis, typhoid fever, yellow fever, and infectious hepatitis. The Ravensbrueck camp was the site of bone-grafting experiments and experiments to test the efficacy of newly developed sulfa (sulfanilamide) drugs. At Natzweiler and Sachsenhausen, prisoners were subjected to phosgene and mustard gas in order to test possible antidotes.

The third category of medical experimentation sought to advance the racial and ideological tenets of the Nazi worldview. The most infamous were the experiments of Josef Mengele at Auschwitz. Mengele conducted medical experiments on twins. He also directed serological experiments on Roma (Gypsies), as did Werner Fischer at Sachsenhausen, in order to determine how different "races" withstood various contagious diseases. The research of August Hirt at Strasbourg University also intended to establish "Jewish racial inferiority." Experiments were conducted under army auspices throughout the war. In March 1944, however, HITLER ordered Karl Brandt to intensify medical research on the effects of chemical warfare. At the same time, Dr. August Hirt was conducting experiments in this field, on a larger scale, at the Ganzweiler camp; of the 220 persons he used as subjects, 50 died as a result.

In 1942, SS-Hauptsturmführer Prof. Dr. August Hirt, chairman of the anatomy department at the Reich University in Strasburg, set about assembling a collection of Jewish skeletons under the auspices of the Ahnenerbe Foundation. To this end, he received permission from Himmler to select the required number of prisoners at Auschwitz Concentration Camp. The selection of 115 persons (79 Jewish men, 30 Jewish women, 2 Poles, and 4 "Asians"--probably Soviet POWs) and the preliminary preparation, consisting of biometrical measurements and the collection of personal data, were carried out by Hirt's collaborator, SS-Hauptsturmführer Dr. Bruno Berger, who arrived in Auschwitz in the first half of 1943. Berger finished his work by June 15, 1943.

After going through quarantine, some of the prisoners whom Berger selected were sent in July and early August to Natzweiler- Struthof Concentration Camp, where they were killed in the gas chamber. The victims' corpses were sent to Hirt as material for his skeleton collection, which was intended for use in anthropological studies that would demonstrate the superiority of the Nordic race.[35]

Belsen Concentration Camp's "Body Pit" Cold Water Submersion "Torture Test" Jewish Corpses Being Burned

According to Skorzeny, August Hirt and his closest *SS* Nazi C.I.A. comrades, Dr. Josef Mengele aka: Steve Rabel, & Walter Rauff aka: George Pfaff drove around Florida to different mailboxes and mailed anthrax spores to the unsuspecting public, while reminiscing about their good ole' Nazi days. Then they took a "road trip" to visit their comrade Reinhardt Gehlen aka: Hank Janowicz in Wayne, NJ. While driving along Rt. 206 in Princeton, NJ they mailed more anthrax. They picked Princeton because that is where the famous inventor Albert Einstein spent most of his later years. The Nazis did not like Einstein because he was helping America try "in vain" to win WWII. It's a tradition for old, dying SS Nazi assholes to conduct a random act of terror or violence to display their discontent & hatred for mankind. The old, dying SS Nazi assholes "sow" their seeds of hatred for mankind by mailing deadly spores or mail bombs to the unsuspecting public. It's their "cowardly" way of saying one last "Up Yours" to Mankind & the World before they quietly die!

When SS Nazi doctor August Hirt aka: Frank Hirt died in November 2001, the anthrax mailings stopped. More severe attacks will happen unless Mengele and his Brotherhood of Aryan Nations neo-Nazi, New World Order C.I.A. supported terrorist comrades are caught and convicted.[36] This photo of August Hirt was given directly to me by Otto Skorzeny. The C.I.A. destroyed all WWII photos of Hirt as it did with Walter Rauff's WWII photos. I assure you that this photo is not just some old man sweeping the sidewalk. The C.I.A. knows that these SS Nazis mailed the anthrax because they are the ones who ordered them to do it! The C.I.A. is directly responsible for the 911 attacks as well!

This Evil SS Nazi Doctor Lived To Be 103 Years Old Thanks To The C.I.A., F.B.I. & The Vatican!

[35] National Archives Washington, D.C.

[36] Otto Skorzeny

National Archives and Records Administration News Release

Opening of CIA Records under Nazi War Crimes Disclosure Act

The Nazi War Crimes and Japanese Imperial Government Records Interagency Working Group (IWG) announces the opening and public availability of Central Intelligence Agency files on 381 individuals and subjects associated with Nazi war crimes or war criminals. The CIA recently declassified these files under the Nazi War Crimes Disclosure Act (PL 105-246). They are available for researchers at the National Archives' College Park, Maryland facility, at 8601 Adelphi Road. Under the auspices of the IWG, the CIA has reviewed and declassified "Name Files" of many Nazi figures and related subjects, including the files on Walter Schellenberg (Head of the Reich Security Main Office Foreign Intelligence Service) and Otto Skorzeny (Hitler's favorite commando, having snatched Mussolini from captivity).

The files also provide new insight into such individuals as Walther Rauff, Krunoslav Dragonovic, and Reinhardt Gehlen. (Highlighted below.) The IWG website (www.nara.gov/iwg) provides a full list of the names and subjects, including the 20 CIA Name Files released in April 2001. **Walther Rauff -** The CIA's name file on Walther (Walter) Rauff, one of Nazi Germany's notorious war criminals, contains some new information about Rauff's wartime efforts and detailed, if unconfirmed, reports about his postwar travels and career. As an official of the Criminal Technical Institute of the Reich Security Main Office, Rauff designed gas vans used to poison Jews and persons with disabilities. He later was involved in persecution of Jews in North Africa, and there is a postwar report in the file that he tried to arrange the extermination of Jews in Egypt during late 1942. Near the end of the war Rauff, then an SS and police official in northern Italy, tried to gain credit for the surrender of German forces in Italy, but ended up only surrendering himself. After escaping from an American internment camp in Italy, Rauff hid in a number of Italian convents, apparently under the protection of Bishop Alois Hudel.

In 1948 he was recruited by Syrian intelligence and went to Damascus, (only to fall out of favor after a coup there a year later). According to one report, he tortured Jews in Syria. He and his family then settled in Ecuador, later shifting to Chile, where he may have served in Chilean intelligence. CIA officials could not determine Rauff's exact position. In any case, the government of General Augusto Pinochet resisted all calls for his extradition to stand trial in West Germany, and he died peacefully in southern Chile in 1984.

Krunoslav Draganovic - Father Krunoslav Draganovic was a Franciscan priest who actively served the Nazi satellite regime in Croatia, which was responsible for the deaths of between 330,000 and 390,000 orthodox Serbs and about 32,000 Jews. Following the war, Draganovic facilitated the escape of numerous Croatian war criminals to South America via the College of Saint Jerome in Rome. From 1959 to 1962, especially tense years in the Cold War, Father Draganovic worked as a spy for US Army intelligence against the Yugoslav regime. Draganovic's CIA file shows the Agency's skepticism regarding Draganovic's reliability-- skepticism that resulted in the termination of his employment with the U.S. Army.

Reinhardt Gehlen - This release includes a substantial collection of high-level documents on the origins and first years of the relationship between General Major Reinhardt Gehlen and the United States Government. As Nazi Germany collapsed, Gehlen turned himself in to the U.S. Army. During the war he had led the Fremde Heeren Ost, the intelligence unit that collected and analyzed information on the Eastern Front for Hitler and the Wehrmacht. In the summer of 1945 Gehlen offered to continue the same work for the United States.

Much has already been written on the 25-year relationship that ensued when American officials accepted Gehlen's offer; but these documents detail the complexity of that relationship as well as the strategic gamble made by the United States in sponsoring the rebirth of Gehlen's wartime organization. The U.S. Army remained Gehlen's sponsor until 1949, when the Central Intelligence Agency, after much internal debate, took over as Gehlen's main patron. According to one CIA official, though Gehlen was "chiefly motivated by a desire for personal success" and would not be "an American or Allied puppet in office," he was "sincerely interested in harmonious cooperation between the Germans and the Western Allies."

Gehlen ultimately became the first head of the Bundesnarichtensdient (BND), the West German foreign intelligence service, and relations between the BND and CIA were good. But, as these documents illustrate, the relationship entailed certain problems. In building his organization, Gehlen recruited some former members of the SS. Besides the troubling moral issues involved, these recruitments opened the West German government, and by extension the United States, to penetration by the Soviet intelligence services.

Among these new documents is a formerly classified two-volume CIA history "Forging an Intelligence Partnership: CIA and the Origins of the BND, 1945-49." The history is a compilation of key documents on the U.S relationship with Gehlen and his organization in the early postwar period. Besides this history, material includes the name files of some of Gehlen's associates, including the former SS officer Heinz Felfe, who was exposed as a Soviet mole in 1963. Since 1999, the IWG has overseen the identification, declassification review, and release of formerly classified U. S. Government records as required by the Nazi War Crimes Disclosure Act. Under the auspices of the IWG, U.S. Government agencies have declassified nearly 5 million pages to date. [37]

---

[37] http://www.nara. gov/nara/pressrelease/nr02-52.html

Anthrax Attacks' "Work of Neo-Nazis "

War on Terrorism: Observer Special
Ed Vulliamy in New York, Sunday October 28, 2001

Neo-Nazi extremists within the US are behind the deadly wave of anthrax attacks against America, according to latest briefings from the security services and Justice Department. Experts on 'survivalist' groups and extreme-right 'Aryan' militants have been drafted into the investigation as the focus shifts away from possible links with the 11 September terrorists or even possible state backers such as Iraq. 'We've been zeroing in on a number of hate groups, especially one on the West Coast,' a source at the Justice Department told The Observer yesterday. 'We've certainly not discounted the possibility that they may be involved.' The anthrax crisis, which grew last week, had by Friday night spread to mailrooms at CIA headquarters, the Supreme Court and a hospital, and yesterday three traces were found in an office building serving the US Capitol. 'There are a number of strong leads, and some people we know well that we are looking at,' the Justice Department said. 'These are groups organized into militia and "survivalist" movements - which pull out of society and take to the hills to make war on the government, and who will support anyone else making war on the government.' Investigators are examining threatening letters sent to media organizations - some dated before the September 11 attacks - which did not contain anthrax but contained similar messages and handwriting style as those which later did. The theory is that the anthrax attacks were planned - and the killer germ was obtained and treated - long before the carnage of September 11.

Speaking to The Observer yesterday, the Justice Department official said: 'We have to see the right wing as much better coordinated than its apparent disorganization suggests. And we have to presume that their opposition to government is just as virulent as that of the Islamic terrorists, if not as accomplished. 'But that is, in its way, one of the most compelling possible leads in the anthrax trail - that it is not really Al-Qaeda's style, but rather that of others who sympathize with its war against the American government and media.' The official said the investigation had, in the past week, drafted in special teams from the Civil Rights division of the department to reinforce the international terrorism teams. The American neo-Nazi Right is motivated above all by its loathing of the federal government, which it believes is selling out the homeland to a 'New World Order' run by masons and Jews. It's insane politics have propelled numerous attacks and armed stand-offs over the past eight years, culminating in the carnage at Oklahoma. Now the anthrax investigation is zooming in on possible connections between these neo-Nazis and Arab extremists, united by their mutual anti-Semitism and hatred of Israel. Such alliances have been common among neo-Nazis in Europe, but have played a lesser role in the US. However, monitoring of the hate groups shows they are now embracing Al-Qaeda's terrorism as commendable attacks on the federal government.

Rabbi Abraham Cooper of the Simon Wiesenthal center in Los Angeles said that at a meeting in Lebanon this year, US neo-Nazis were represented alongside Islamic militants. 'There's a great solidarity with the point of view of the Bin Ladens of the world,' said Mark Potok of the Southern Poverty Law Center, which monitors the far right. 'These people wouldn't let their daughters near an Arab, but they are certainly making common cause on an ideological level. They see the same enemy: American culture and multiculturalism.' Neo-Nazi websites, including the largest umbrella organization, the Nation- al Alliance, show support for Al-Qaeda. Billy Roper, the alliance's membership coordinator posted a message within hours of the September 11 attacks, reading: 'Anyone who is willing to drive a plane into a building to kill Jews is all right by me.

I wish our members had half as much testicular fortitude.' Another group, Aryan Action, praised the attacks of 11 September, saying: 'Either you're fighting with the Jews against Al-Qaeda or you support Al-Qaeda fighting against the Jews.' Others outwardly support the anthrax mailing. One message, entitled 'No Sympathy for the Devil', was posted in several chat rooms by right-winger Grant Bruer, whose racist writings are circulated among supremacist groups. It reads: 'Is there not a single person who has received these anthrax letters that isn't an avowed enemy of the white race? Tom Brokaw, Tom Daschle and the gossip rag offices have all been 100 percent legitimate targets. Who among us has the slightest bit of sympathy for these pukes?' Right-wing groups have had an interest in anthrax and other biological agents. A member of the Aryan Nation group once bragged he had a stash of anthrax from digging up a field where cows had died of the disease in the 1950s. Larry Wayne Harris was arrested after trying to obtain three vials of bubonic plague from a mail-order science company.

The trail leading investigators to groups from the domestic ultra-right - rather than the Al-Qaeda terror network - comes as a dramatic twist in the confused crisis. Last week, parallel evidence appeared to be linking the now rampant anthrax attacks to another trail: leading from Iraq and through the Czech Republic, with Al-Qaeda militants as the likely couriers. The shift in the investigation echoes that which followed America's other infamous terrorist attack: the destruction of the federal government building in Oklahoma City in 1995. The bombing was initially thought to be the work of Arab extremists, but turned out to be the work of the Aryan supremacists. Anthrax attacks' 'work of neo-Nazis '[38]

---

[38] The Observer Newspaper, NY

ORION Solves The 2001 Anthrax Mailer Killer Mystery!

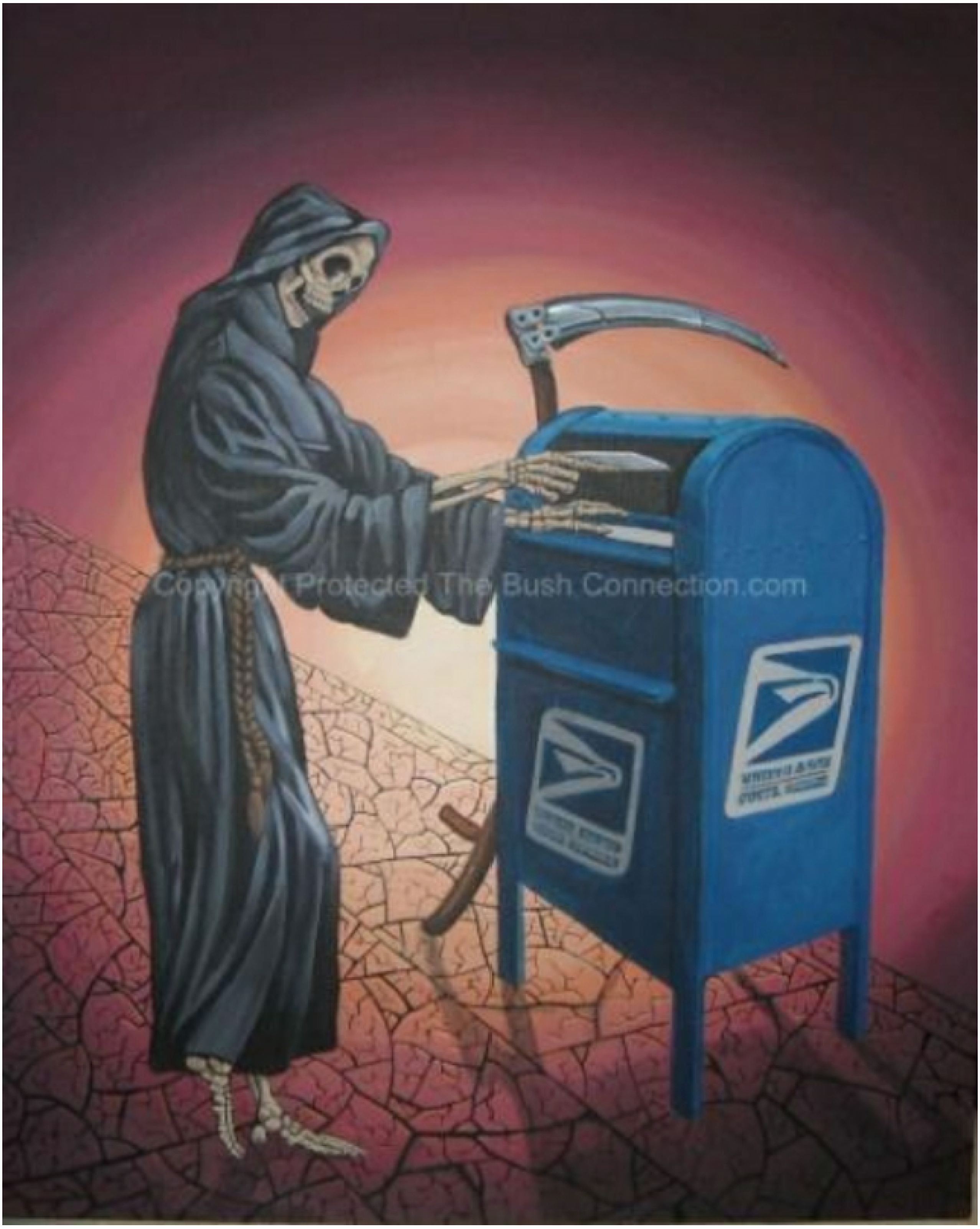

Copyright Protected The Bush Connection.com

The C.I.A./Nazi Flat Head Eagle Logo

Is On All Of The Anthrax Letters.

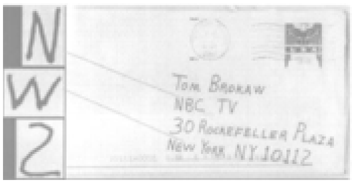

NW2

Tom Brokaw
NBC TV
30 Rockefeller Plaza
New York NY 10112

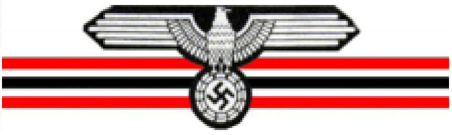

Skorzeny's Secret C.I.A. Stash Cane

The Anthrax Letter That Was Mailed to Tom Brokaw. C.I.A./Nazi, Flat Head Eagle Symbol
Dr. Josef Mengele is the Zodiac Killer & the "real" Boston Strangler. He mailed the anthrax in 2001. The F.B.I. is protecting him. The Anthrax Letters of 2001 & the 911 attacks were ordered by the C.I.A. The C.I.A.'s SS Nazis: Josef Mengele, Walter Rauff, & August Hirt are the ones who mailed the anthrax letters.[39] It's a tradition for old, dying SS Nazi assholes to conduct a random act of terror or violence to display their discontent & hatred for mankind. The old, dying SS Nazi assholes "sow" their seeds of hatred for mankind by mailing deadly spores or mail bombs to the unsuspecting public. It's their "cowardly" way of saying one last "Up Yours" to Mankind & the World before they quietly die! The C.I.A., F.B.I. and the U.S. Postal Service know

[39] Otto Skorzeny

that these Nazis sent the deadly letters but refuse to do anything about it so Bush Jr. can pursue a phony war against foreign terrorists that do not exist to steal their oil and pass laws that take away our American Freedoms such as the Un-American Patriot Act and "Gestapo-like" Homeland Security Act, et al... The C.I.A. is really Hitler's Third Reich of Nazis in America. They must be stopped from creating a Fourth Reich or New World Order in America.

On March 21, 2003 I delivered color photos of Josef Mengele from 1/2002 with a large anthrax sore on his hand and other evidence to "famed" West Palm Beach, Florida Attorney R. Schuler. He is the one who is trying in vain to sue the U.S. Government for 50 million dollars on behalf of the widow of Robert Stevens who was killed by one of the anthrax letters that was sent to AMI of Boca Raton, Florida. Mr. Schuler or his associates *destroyed* the evidence that I gave him that would have helped him win his case against the Government! I, ORION, personally contacted the U.S. Justice Dept. – O.S.I. several times about the names and locations of the *SS* Nazi terrorist anthrax mailers. I requested a meeting so I could show them my photos and present my evidence. I was told that according to the information the C.I.A. provided, all of the Nazis are dead. End of story. They refused to meet with me. Then the "honorable" U.S. Justice Dept. tipped off the Nazis, & warned them that I was on to them. There have been several attempts on my life since then. Eli Rosenbaum, Bruce Schwartz, the entire U.S. Justice Department O.S.I., the C.I.A., F.B.I. & Bush Administration are helping & hiding Nazi war criminals in direct violation of The Federal Nazi War Criminal Act of 1998.

Our Government knows that *SS* Nazi New World Order C.I.A. agents are the brains behind The Brotherhood of Aryan Nations "organized crime" hate group and are the ones that mailed the anthrax. However, the Government is protecting them while denying that they exist. Why? Because Germany never surrendered & for their stolen holocaust money & stolen Tesla Technology that's why! The C.I.A. is really Hitler's Fourth Reich of Nazis in America.

"And Now For Something Completely Different…"[40]

New World Order Nazi Republican Crook, Liar, Anti-Semite & U.S. President;

Richard "Tricky Dick" Nixon Meets Elvis "The King" Presley.

Of all the requests made each year to the National Archives for reproductions of photographs and documents, one item has been requested more than any other. That item, more requested than the Bill of Rights or even the Constitution of the United States, is the photograph of Elvis Presley and Richard M. Nixon shaking hands on the occasion of Presley's visit to the White House.

On December 21, 1970, Elvis Presley paid a visit to President Richard M. Nixon at the White House in Washington, D.C. The meeting was initiated by Presley, who wrote Nixon a six page letter requesting a visit with the President and suggested that he be made a "Federal Agent-at-Large" in the Bureau of Narcotics and Dangerous Drugs. The events leading up to and after the meeting are detailed in the documentation and photographs included here, which include Presley's hand- written letter, memoranda from Nixon and aides, and a thank you note from Nixon for the gifts (including a Colt 45 and family photos) that Presley brought with him to the Oval Office. These materials chronicling the Presley-Nixon meeting were obtained from the Nixon Presidential Materials Project at the National Archives at College Park (College Park, Maryland).[41]

No one ever claimed Elvis's life insurance policy. His coffin weighed more than 800 pounds. The coffin had a commercial air conditioner in it to help prevent the wax dummy of Elvis from melting. The wax dummy's sideburns' fell off and had to be crazy glued in place. Elvis's middle name is misspelled on the monument that marks his grave. He spelled his middle name "Aron" not "Aaron." Elvis's death certificate claims that his body weighed 170 lbs. and was 5'8" tall. Elvis weighed more than 250 lbs. and was taller than 6'. Did the C.I.A. help Elvis fake his death?
Yes, "ORION"- T.C.B.!

Fact: It is not a crime in the United States of America to fake your own death as long as no one recovers any insurance money from it!

---

[40] Monty Python's Flying Circus □

[41] Nixon Presidential Materials Project at the National Archives at College Park

Dr. Nikola Tesla – "The Greatest Inventor Who ever Lived"

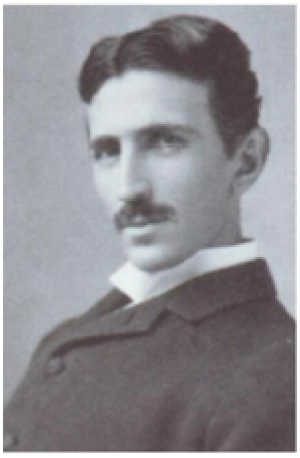

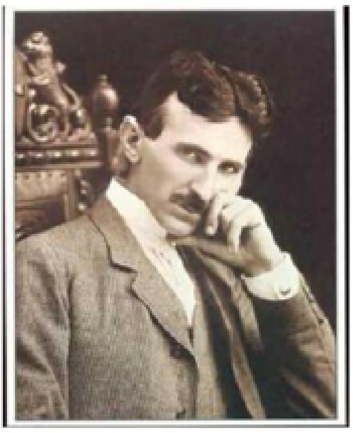

Dr. Nikola Tesla age 39. Tesla

With His Giant Sized Coil. Dr. Nikola Tesla

Nikola Tesla was born at precisely midnight between July 9/10,1856, in the village of Smiljan, province of Lika (Austria-Hungary). His father, the Reverend Milutin Tesla, was a Serbian-Orthodox priest; his mother, Djuka (Mandich), was unschooled but highly intelligent. Both families came originally from western Serbia and for generations had sent their sons to serve Church or Army and their daughters to marry ministers or officers. A dreamer with a poetic touch, as he matured, Tesla added to these earlier qualities those of self-discipline and a desire for precision. Training for an engineering career, he attended the Technical University of Graz, Austria, and the University of Prague (1879-1880).

At Graz he first saw the Gramme dynamo, which operated as a generator and, when reversed, became an electric motor; and he conceived a way to use alternating current to advantage. His first employment was in a government telegraph engineering office in Budapest, where he made his first invention, a telephone repeater. Later, he visualized the principle of the rotating magnetic field and developed plans for an induction motor that would become his first step toward the successful utilization of alternating current. In 1882 Tesla went to work in Paris for the Continental Edison Company, and while on assignment to Strasbourg in 1883, he constructed, in after-work hours, his first induction motor. Tesla sailed to America in 1884, arriving in New York City with four cents in his pocket, a few of his own poems, and calculations for a flying machine. He first found employment with Thomas Edison in New Jersey, but the two inventors, were far apart in background and methods, and their separation was inevitable.

In May 1885, George Westinghouse, head of the Westinghouse Electric Company in Pittsburgh, bought the patent rights to Tesla's polyphase system of alternating-current dynamos, transformers, and motors. The transaction precipitated a titanic power struggle between Edison's direct-current systems and the Tesla-Westinghouse alternating-current approach, which eventually won out. After a difficult period, during which Tesla invented but lost his rights to an arc-lighting system, he established his own laboratory in New York City in 1887, where his inventive mind could be given free rein. He experimented with shadow graphs similar to those that later were to be used by Wilhelm Röntgen when he discovered X-rays in 1895. Tesla's countless experiments included work on a carbon button lamp, on the power of electrical resonance, and on various types of lighting. Tesla gave exhibitions in his laboratory in which he lighted lamps without wires by allowing electricity to flow through his body, to allay fears of alternating current. He was often invited to lecture at home and abroad.

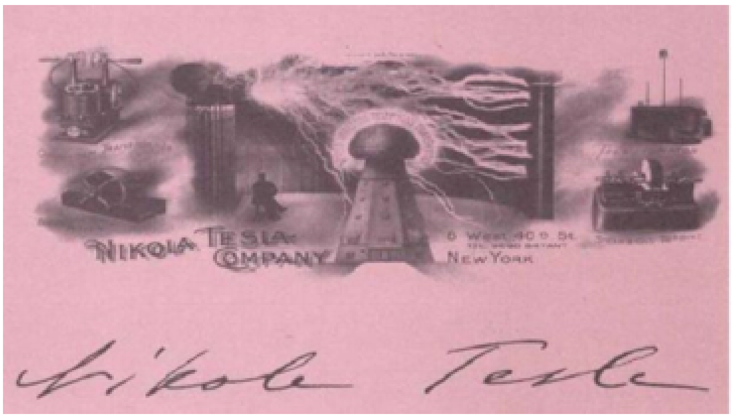

Tesla Company Advertisement

Dr. Nikola Tesla "Genius"

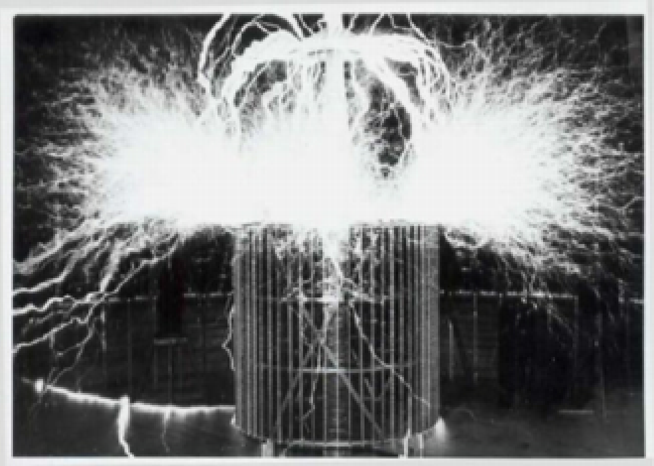

Another Giant-Sized Tesla Coil

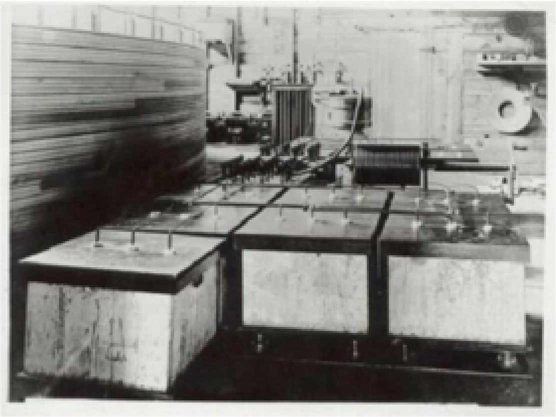

Giant-Sized Tesla Coil + Giant Batteries

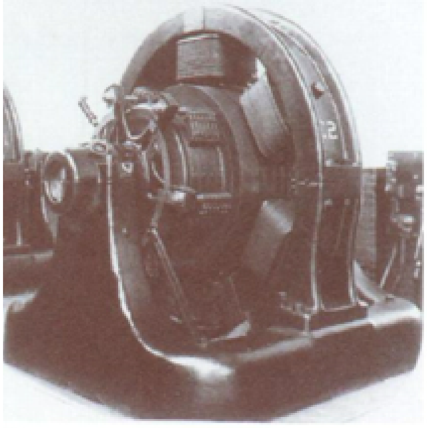

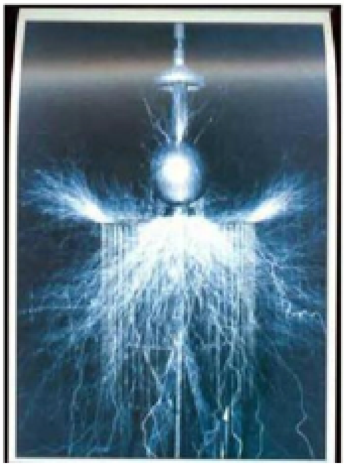

Tesla's Giant-Sized A/C Generator Tesla Turbine Tesla Coil

The Tesla coil, which he invented in 1891, is widely used today in radio and television sets and other electronic equipment for wireless communication. That year also marked the date of Tesla's United States citizenship. Brilliant and eccentric, Tesla was then at the peak of his inventive powers. He produced in rapid succession the induction motor (utilizing his rotating magnetic field principle) and other electrical motors, new forms of generators and transformers, and a system of alternating-current power transmission. Tesla also invented fluorescent lights and a new type of steam turbine, and he became increasingly intrigued with the wireless transmission of power.

A controversy between alternating current and direct current advocates raged in 1880s and 1890s, featuring Tesla and Edison as leaders in the rival camps. The advantages of the polyphase alternating-current system, as developed by Tesla, soon became apparent, however, particularly for long-distance power transmission. Westinghouse used Tesla's system to light the World Columbian Exposition at Chicago in 1893. His success was a factor in winning him the contract to install the first power machinery at Niagara Falls, which bore Tesla's name and patent numbers. The project carried power to Buffalo by 1896. In 1898 Tesla announced his invention of a tele-automatic boat guided by remote control. When skepticism was voiced, Tesla proved his claims for it before a crowd in Madison Square Garden.

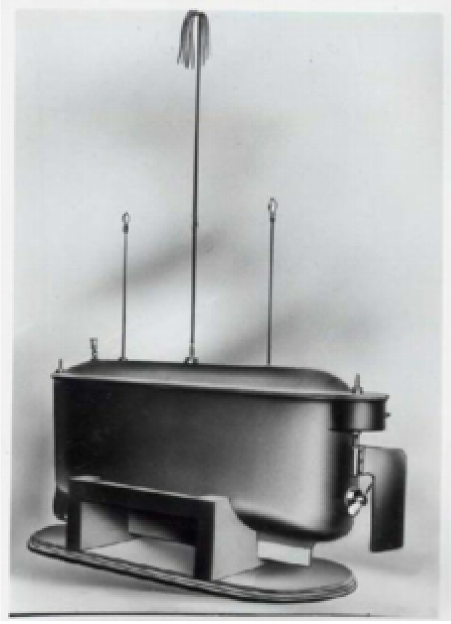

Remote Controlled Boat

Tesla’s Wireless Light Bulb

Tesla’s Wireless Light Bulb

In Colorado Springs, where he stayed from May 1899 until early 1900, Tesla made what he regarded as his most important discovery - terrestrial stationary waves. By this discovery he proved that the earth could be used as a conductor and would be as responsive as a tuning fork to electrical vibrations of a certain pitch. He also lighted 200 lamps without wires from a distance of 25 miles (40 kilometers) and created man-made lightning, producing flashes measuring 135 feet (41 meters). At one time he was certain he had received signals from another planet in his Colorado laboratory, a claim that was met with derision in some scientific journals. Returning to New York in 1900, Tesla began construction on Long Island of a wireless world broadcasting tower, with $150,000 capital from the U.S. financier J. Pierpont Morgan. Tesla claimed he secured the loan by assigning 51 percent of his patent rights of telephony and telegraphy to Morgan. He expected to provide worldwide communication and to furnish facilities for s ending pictures, messages, weather warnings, and stock reports. The project was abandoned because of a financial panic, labor troubles, and Morgan's withdrawal of support. It was Tesla's greatest defeat.

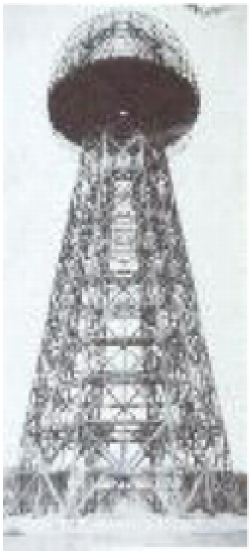

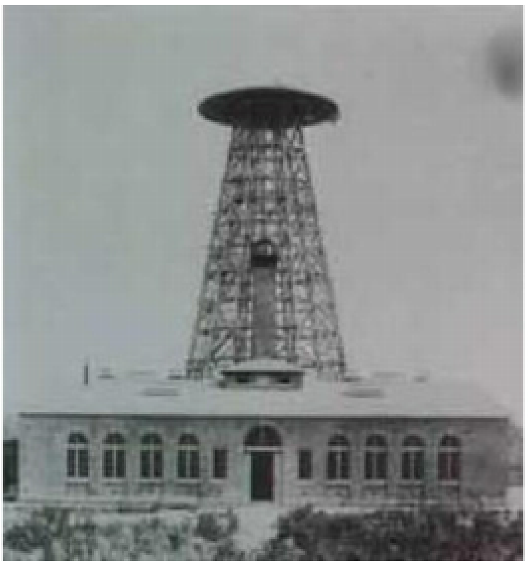

Tesla's Power Tower Wardenclyffe, Long Island 1904 Tesla's Colorado Springs Laboratory

Tesla's Towers' For Transmitting Wireless Electricity

Tesla's work shifted to turbines and other projects. Because of a lack of funds, his ideas remained in his notebooks, which are still examined by engineers for unexploited clues. In 1915 he was severely disappointed when a report that he and Edison were to share the Nobel Prize proved erroneous. Tesla was the recipient of the Edison Medal in 1917, the highest honor that the American Institute of Electrical Engineers could bestow.

Dr. Nikola Tesla, {Genius} at work

Tesla 1910 Dinner Honoring Henry Clews, newly elected president of the American Civic Alliance.

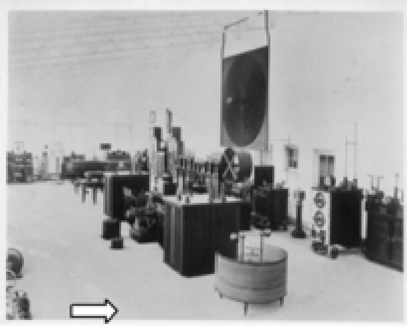

Tesla's
R.F.A.'s
or
Rotating
Field
Amplifiers

Tesla's Laboratory… Full Of Inventions

Giant Tesla Coils

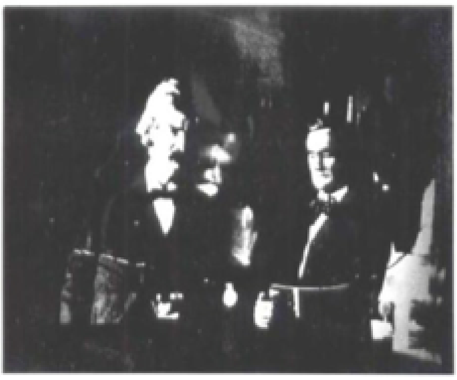

Tesla's Friends'; Mark Twain & Robert Underwood Johnson "playing" in his Laboratory.

Dr. Nikola Tesla With His Giant Coil

Tesla allowed himself only a few close friends. Among them were the writers Robert Underwood Johnson, Mark Twain, and Francis Marion Crawford. He was quite impractical in financial matters. An eccentric, driven by compulsions and a progressive germ phobia, Tesla had a way of intuitively sensing hidden scientific secrets and employing his inventive talent to prove his hypotheses. He was a godsend to reporters who sought sensational copy, but a problem to editors who were uncertain how seriously his futuristic prophecies should be regarded.

Caustic criticism greeted his speculations concerning communication with other planets, his assertions that he could split the earth like an apple, and his claim to having invented a death ray capable of destroying 10,000 airplanes, 250 miles (400 kilometers) distant. Tesla demanded much of his employees but inspired their loyalty. Though he admired intellectual and beautiful women, he had no time to become involved. Tesla died in New York City on January 7, 1943, the holder of more than 700 patents. The Custodian of Alien Property impounded his trunks, which held his papers, his diplomas and other honors, his letters, and his laboratory notes. These were eventually inherited by Tesla's nephew, Sava Kosanovich, and later housed in the Nikola Tesla Museum, Belgrade, Yugoslavia Hundreds filed into New York City's Cathedral of St. John the Divine for his funeral services, and a flood of messages acknowledged the loss of a great genius.[42]

---

[42] Based on "The New Encyclopedia Britannica", 15th edition, "The McGraw-Hill Encyclopedia of World Biography"

Dr. Nikola Tesla Demonstrating an Invention.

Houston Street Laboratory, March 1899

SWIMMIN
INSTRUCT

A rare photo of Tesla at the beach...

Here we have the young, handsome Dr. Nikola Tesla busting a move on a local beach babe at the Staten Island Midland Beach, New York City 1898. Tesla was a lifeguard, a world champion swimmer & he loved women! Contrary to false rumors spread by jealous rivals & recently by the not funny comedian; Matt "The Oatmeal" Inman, Tesla was NOT celibate. He was Not afraid of women's earrings, he “allegedly” had a 15" penis & had sexual affairs with 1,000's of women! Remember Tesla was 6'5" tall & he was very famous! Tesla never married because he enjoyed living his single "Playboy" bachelor life too much to give it up for just one woman.

The "Real" Story of The Philadelphia Experiment: Operation Rainbow Project & How George H.W. Bush Conspired to Murder Dr. Nikola Tesla!

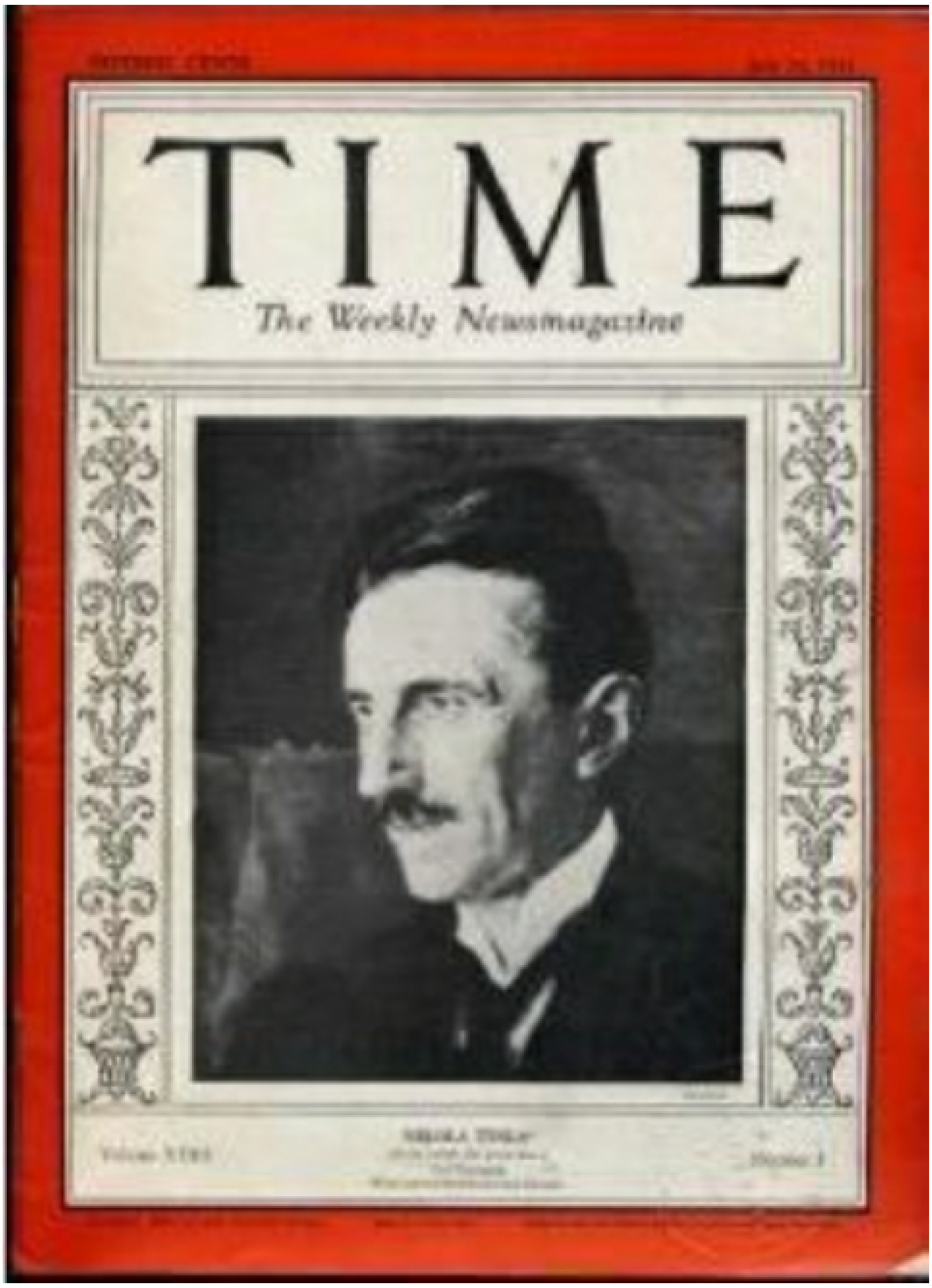

Tesla on the cover of Time Magazine (1931)

According to my meetings with former *SS* Nazi and life-long C.I.A. employee, Otto Skorzeny, during 1931, when Dr. Nikola Tesla made the front cover over Time Magazine, Adolf Hitler was amazed and fascinated with him. Hitler had considered Nikola Tesla to be the incarnation of the "almighty' white, Aryan Myth Superman, or Das Uberman. Hitler was curious about rumors alleging that Tesla had an extremely large penis and that he had psychic powers. Hitler, being the childish, sadistic, ego-maniac that he was enjoyed most cartoons & comedians of the era, especially The Three Stooges ☐, Max Fleischer's Popeye ☐ and Tesla vs.The Nazis cartoon. Hitler and Skorzeny were not geniuses, however they were smart enough to realize that Nikola Tesla was! In 1934, while Tesla was in America helping the U.S. Government protect its citizens' from Nazis by creating sophisticated radar, "Star Wars" type space based weapons to destroy approaching enemy missiles, remote controlled torpedoes, et al..Hitler was plotting to take over the world. Rumors had been spreading that Nikola Tesla had created a "Death Ray", an invisible, anti-gravity flying disk, an earthquake machine, weather modification machine, and an electronic "stealth" device for making battleships appear optically invisible. Hitler thought to himself, "I must have those inventions so I can take over the world.”

In 1938, Hitler came up with the idea of sending young SS Nazi spies to America. These spies, allegedly with Hitler & Prescott Bush’s money, had support from high ranking U.S. Government Nazi sympathizers. They were able to create a new branch of the Government called the O.S.S. It’s supposed job was to spy on the Nazis. How ironic. Hitler now had an entire branch of the U.S. Government at his disposal. Hitler ordered his favorite, young 14 year old, SS Nazi; George H. Scherff Jr. aka; George H. Bush to befriend Nikola Tesla and try to steal his inventions so that “he” could take over the world. [43] George H. Scherff Jr., aka; George H. Bush did become a trusted friend of Tesla’s. George Bush told Hitler about one of Tesla’s inventions that was supposed to create the illusion of invisibility or stealth technology. This invention would render an entire battleship or plane optically invisible! George H.W. Bush tipped off Hitler to the U.S. Navy’s secret experiment...The Philadelphia Experiment aka: Operation Rainbow Project.

---

[43] Otto Skorzeny

USS ELDRIDGE DE 173

The USS Eldridge DE 173 F-117A Stealth Fighter Jet

“Optically Invisible” Stealth Technology Was Successfully Radar & “Optically Invisible” Fighter Jet Tested By Dr. Nikola Tesla On The USS Eldridge in 1941.

The “*Real*” Philadelphia Experiment: Operation Rainbow Project

USS ELDRIDGE DE 173

U.S.S. Eldridge DE 173

“Rare” De-classified National Archives Photo

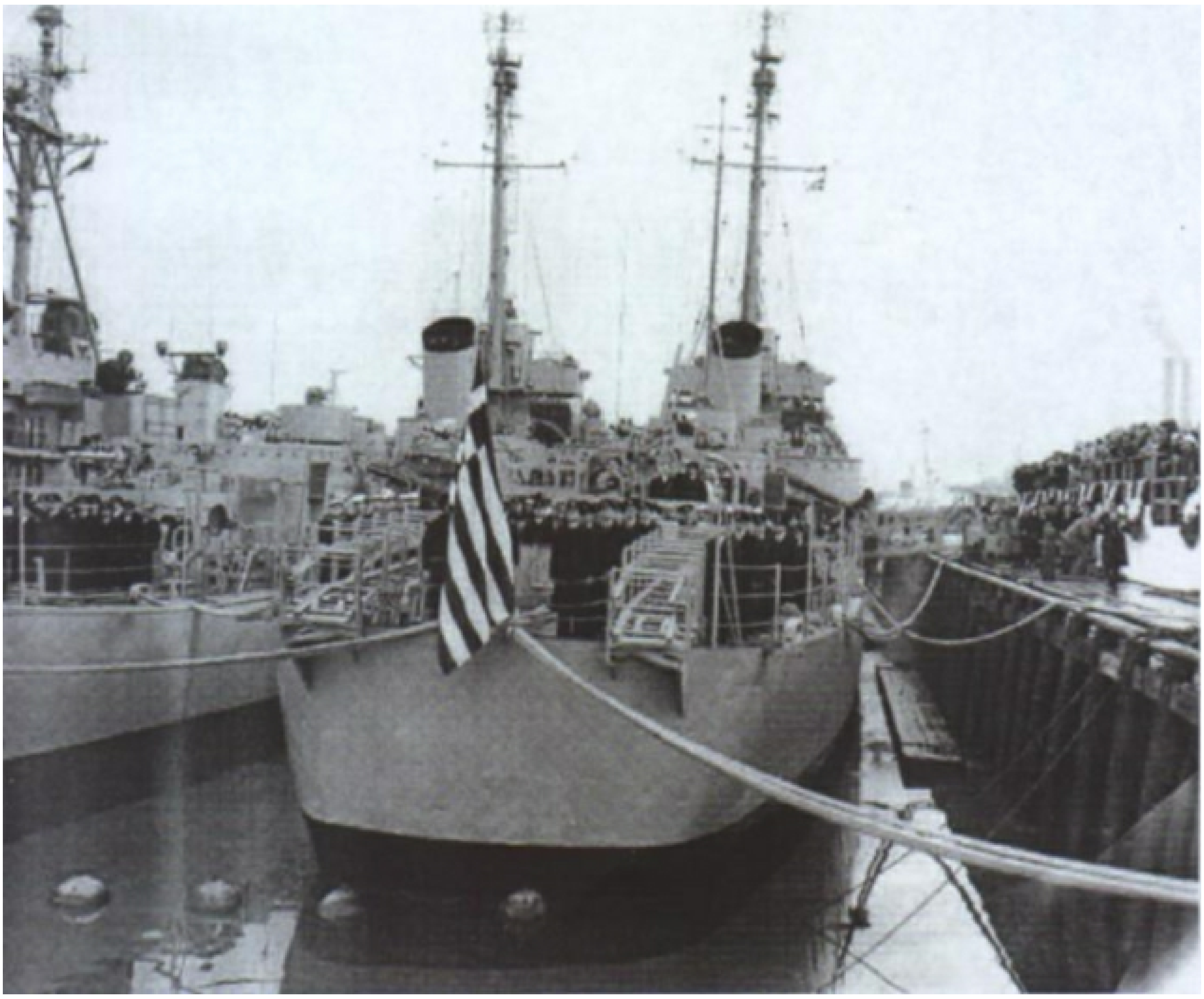

U.S.S. Eldridge DE 173 (1943)

De-classified National Archives Photo

CLASS – Cannon; Displacement 1,240 Tons, Dimensions, 306' (oa) x 36' 7" x 11' 8" (Max) Armament 3 x 3"/50, 2x 40mmAA, 10x 20mm AA, 3 x 21" TT, 1 Hedgehog, 8 DCT's 2 DC racks. Machinery, 6,000 BHP; 4 GM Model 16-278A Diesel Engines with electric drive, 2 screws Speed, 21 Knots, Crew 186. Operational and Building Data "Allegedly" Laid down by Federal Shipbuilding, Port Newark on February 22, 1943. Launched: July 25 1943. Commissioned August 27 1943.

Decommissioned: June 17 1946. Stricken March 26 1951. Fate: To Greece January 15 1951. Renamed Leon, Stricken in 1991. In 1941, with Tesla's direct supervision, the Navy Destroyer, the U.S.S Eldridge was wrapped with thousands of feet of cable, made from whole copper pennies, bound together, {That's why there was a copper penny shortage in America in 1941, metal pennies were minted instead, for a short time}, several high frequency generators and several other of Tesla's patented inventions. Including Tesla' Rotating Field Amplifier or (R.F.A.). The U.S. Navy had Nazi-sympathizers, including George H.W. Bush who tipped off Hitler to this experiment commonly referred to as The Philadelphia Experiment or Operation Rainbow Project.

Otto Skorzeny and his comrade Reinhardt Gehlen, Hitler's brightest and favorite *SS* Nazis, were selected to spy on this project. They made it to the United States in a German U-boat. When they arrived on shore they put on U.S. Navy Officer's uniforms. They also had fake i.d.'s. With a little bit of persuasive talking and help from U.S. Navy Nazi sympathizers'; George H.W. Bush & Dr. John G. Trump they both easily made it onto the Philadelphia Naval Yard base, to an empty ship with no name that was being overhauled, right next to where the U.S.S. Eldridge was birthed. From their obscure vantage point they had a clear view of what was taking place. The Eldridge sailed out into the Delaware River and began to glow a bright greenish color at first, then a little yellow, finally it looked very blurry like a heat mirage or gasoline evaporating, and then it almost vanished completely from our sight. However, we were able to see the large wake it was leaving behind as it sailed South down the river. We could see it fade in and out several times until it was too far away. About six hours later the Eldridge returned to the Philadelphia Naval Yard. There was a lot of chaos and pandemonium on board the ship when it arrived. We heard men screaming and complaining that they felt as if they were on fire. Someone mentioned that he could not believe that they made it to the Norfolk, VA. Naval Base and back in only a few hours. At that point we knew that Tesla had invented and was very close to perfecting the ultimate weapon of war, optical invisibility. Hitler was very pleased with what we told him about Tesla's great invention, Optical Invisibility. The Navy wanted Tesla to help them tryout a new, more powerful high frequency generator to increase the magnetic electrical illusion of invisibility. Tesla refused to help the Navy a second time because the first Project Rainbow invisibility experiment had hurt so many of the "guinea pig" crew who were topside during the experiment. The sailors below decks were not affected as much, they only had their brains slightly "cooked" for a while. Most of those sailors survived with minor brain damage and spent a long time in the Philadelphia Naval Yards' Psychiatric Hospital. If the sailors ever remembered what had happened to them during the experiment their allegations were immediately dismissed as "crazy person" talk. The U.S. Navy threatened them not to speak of the experiment or they would have their pensions cancelled or they would be killed for committing Treason.[44]

During 1942, Hitler wanted to rule the world "real bad". He ordered George H. Scherff aka; George H.W. Bush to "tap" Tesla's phone to find out about what other magnificent inventions he was creating that could help him take over the word. Bush overheard several conversations to Tesla from the Navy requesting his help in the next Philadelphia Experiment. He refused to help once again. The Navy gave up trying to get Tesla to help them. So, they contacted Albert Einstein, Marconi, Townsend Brown, Dr. John G. Trump and a few less known scientists to try to do the job instead. Einstein was quoted as saying that "Nikola Tesla's theories of magnetic resonance and optical invisibility are beyond my grasp." With George H.W. Bush's help, Skorzeny and Gehlen now knew when the next experiment was going to take place. This time they had more help from U.S. Navy Nazi-sympathizers "allegedly' including George H.W. Bush. They pretended to be doctors/scientists. Once again, they were easily able to bluff their way into the Philadelphia Naval Yard and right onto the dock where the U.S.S. Eldridge was. They used the names Dr. Reinhardt and Doctor Franklin Reno. In Berlitz's book titled The Philadelphia Experiment he claimed that the two doctors were different people. He was wrong! This time, Dr. Reinhardt and Dr. Franklin Reno aka: Gehlen & Skorzeny would try to steal the main electronic component of the experiment, Tesla's "Rotating Field Amplifier" or (R.F.A.) □.

The "R.F.A.'s" were small and heavy. They weigh about 50 pounds each. They are plain black, unmarked welded shut, steel boxes. They have four 2" diameter holes on two sides of them to cool the electronic components that are housed inside. They have three wires coming out of them and one female connector hole in their sides to link them all together. The small R.F.A.'s have enough amplification power as modern day small power plants. The R.F.A's are about the size of a typewriter case or a 12"x 13" cube. These devices were the brains of the whole experiment. All of the high frequency generators were "daisy chained" together to a central amplifying device, the Rotating Field Amplifier. The R.F.A.'s amplified the electrical currents to extremely high voltages. These R.F.A.'s had to be connected and "tuned" to a certain resonate, frequency that only Tesla knew. The Navy had Tesla's Rotating Field Amplifiers. But this time, they did not have Tesla to fine-tune the rotating electric fields to the correct frequency for the experiment to operate safely.

---

[44] Otto Skorzeny

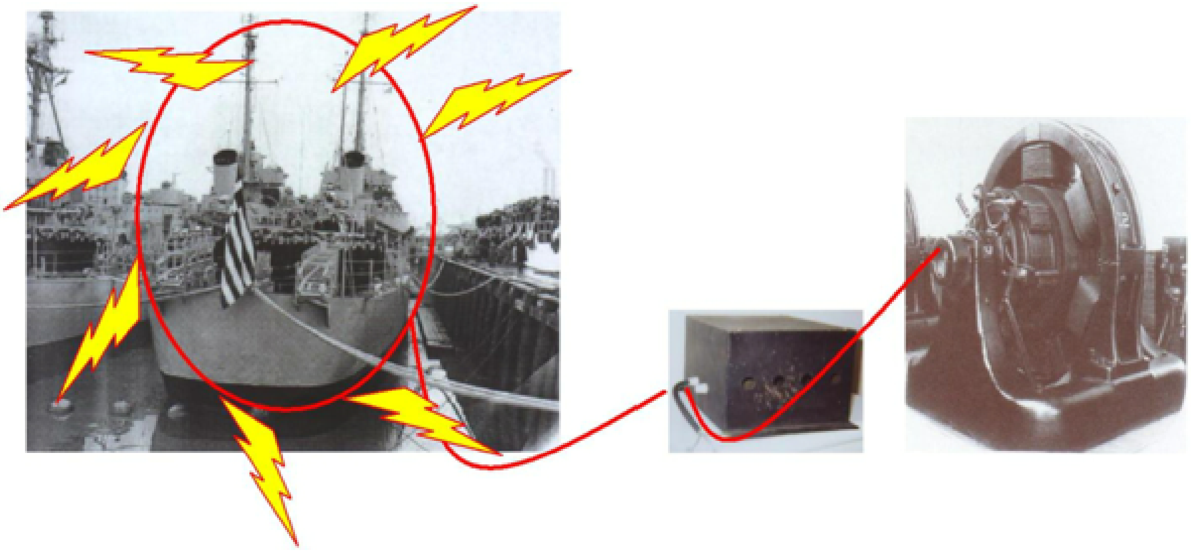

10’

Tesla’s Rotating Field Amplifier {R.F.A.}

The USS Eldridge

Tesla’s Giant Sized A/C Generator

The U.S. Navy’s Second Philadelphia Experiment

All of the equipment had been installed on the Eldridge once again. This time the R.F.A. was not installed on the Eldridge. It was attached by a long extension cord to the ship from the dock. There were two other R.F.A.'s standing by just in case the first one failed. The Eldridge did not leave port to conduct the experiment this time. Due to the fact that Nikola Tesla was not there to supervise the experiment nor to personally "fine tune" the generators, the experiment did not go as planned. The other scientists could not figure out how to properly hook up all of the generators nor could they figure out how to connect and fine tune the Rotating Field Amplifiers.

They "rigged" it all together haphazardly and threw the power switch. Nothing happened. They turned up the power on the generators and still nothing happened. Eventually, the scientists reconnected the wires in a different way. Finally, something did happen! The ship started to glow green a little bit and then yellow and finally it appeared to be vanishing right before every ones eyes'. However, it did not vanish completely this time as it had done during the first experiment. Dr.Trump allegedly yelled at Einstein and the other scientists to make his ship invisible! The scientists decided to turn up the generators to full capacity to "see what would happen."

The ship did in fact disappear from sight for a little while so they continued to crank up the electricity. The "guinea pig" crew members who were on the deck began screaming in pain. They were running around like chickens with their heads' cut off. Some jumped overboard to escape their pain. The scientists and fake Nazi doctors ignored their screams and continued with the experiment for at least 15 minutes. No one knew at the time that Dr. Nikola Tesla had been secretly watching the experiment. Tesla sabotaged the experiment by chopping through the extension cord with an ax, then he disappeared into the night. Tesla's heroic effort, saved the lives' of many crew members.

That is the only reason the experiment stopped when it did. This time the crew on the top deck were no more than puddles of flesh and bone melted to the deck. The crew members had their flesh and bones cooked from the inside like a giant microwave due to the intense high frequency magnetic fields that were not properly "tuned" during the experiment.

The "flesh puddles" at first glance, looked like sailors had been fused into the deck. That was not the case. The marrow from inside their bones had been "cooked" and their bodies melted onto the decks. During the confusion of trying to "shovel-up" and dispose of the poor dead sailors, Skorzeny and Gehlen were able to grab all three of the Rotating Field Amplifiers. Now the U.S. Navy did not have any R.F.A.'s left. The two Nazis made their getaway without anyone suspecting a thing. This time Skorzeny had been paid by the Russians to steal the "R.F.A." for them, which he did. Now, Nazi –Germany and Russia had Tesla's electronic invisibility technology and The United States of America did not. [45] By stealing America's last "R.F.A.'s",
Nazi-Germany had just "unofficially"" won WWII.

THORN E.M.I. Corp. of England & Raytheon Corporation provided the glass vacuum tubes & electronic equipment for the experiment. Raytheon was awarded patents for microwave ovens and Magnetic Resonance Imaging (M.R.I.) machines that were created as "by-products" from the "horrific", "Philadelphia Experiment."

USS ELDRIDGE DE 173

---

[45] Otto Skorzeny

The U.S. Navy's "Official" Denial Letter About The Philadelphia Experiment...

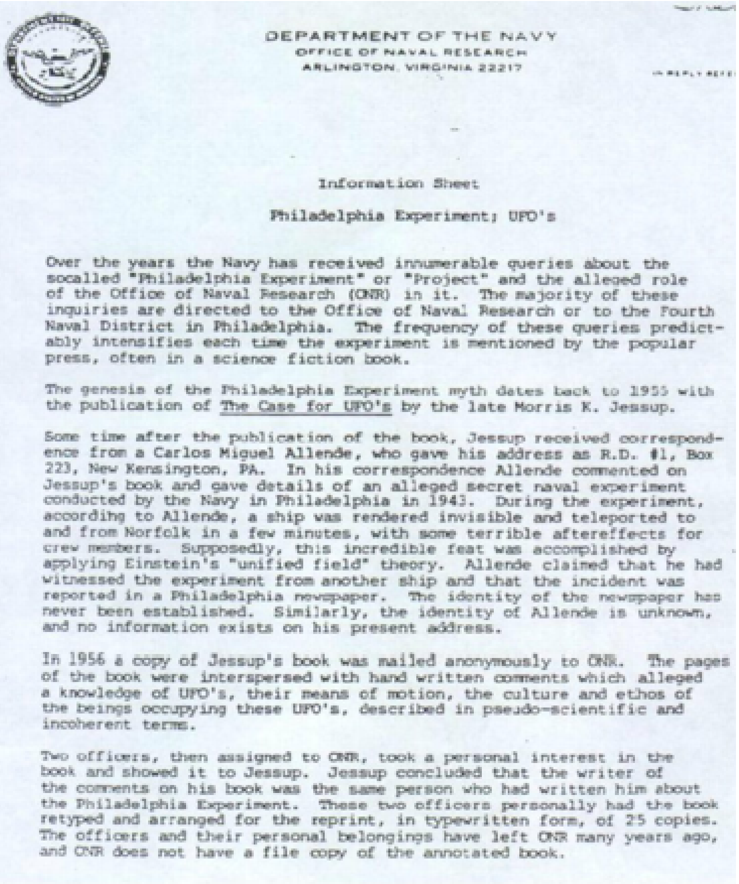

DEPARTMENT OF THE NAVY
OFFICE OF NAVAL RESEARCH
ARLINGTON, VIRGINIA 22217

Information Sheet

Philadelphia Experiment; UFO's

Over the years the Navy has received innumerable queries about the socalled "Philadelphia Experiment" or "Project" and the alleged role of the Office of Naval Research (ONR) in it. The majority of these inquiries are directed to the Office of Naval Research or to the Fourth Naval District in Philadelphia. The frequency of these queries predictably intensifies each time the experiment is mentioned by the popular press, often in a science fiction book.

The genesis of the Philadelphia Experiment myth dates back to 1955 with the publication of The Case for UFO's by the late Morris K. Jessup.

Some time after the publication of the book, Jessup received correspondence from a Carlos Miguel Allende, who gave his address as R.D. #1, Box 223, New Kensington, PA. In his correspondence Allende commented on Jessup's book and gave details of an alleged secret naval experiment conducted by the Navy in Philadelphia in 1943. During the experiment, according to Allende, a ship was rendered invisible and teleported to and from Norfolk in a few minutes, with some terrible aftereffects for crew members. Supposedly, this incredible feat was accomplished by applying Einstein's "unified field" theory. Allende claimed that he had witnessed the experiment from another ship and that the incident was reported in a Philadelphia newspaper. The identity of the newspaper has never been established. Similarly, the identity of Allende is unknown, and no information exists on his present address.

In 1956 a copy of Jessup's book was mailed anonymously to ONR. The pages of the book were interspersed with hand written comments which alleged a knowledge of UFO's, their means of motion, the culture and ethos of the beings occupying these UFO's, described in pseudo-scientific and incoherent terms.

Two officers, then assigned to ONR, took a personal interest in the book and showed it to Jessup. Jessup concluded that the writer of the comments on his book was the same person who had written him about the Philadelphia Experiment. These two officers personally had the book retyped and arranged for the reprint, in typewritten form, of 25 copies. The officers and their personal belongings have left ONR many years ago, and ONR does not have a file copy of the annotated book.

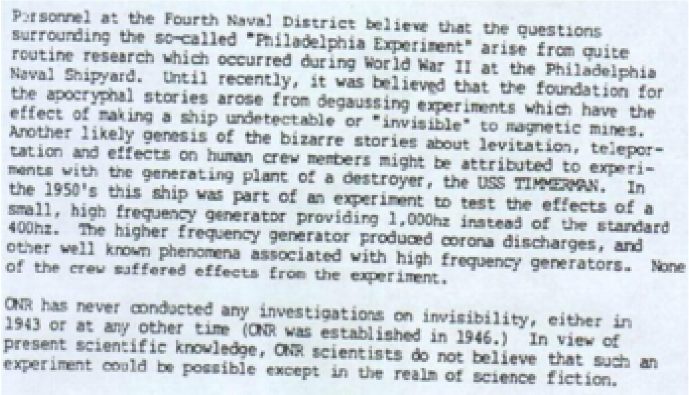

Personnel at the Fourth Naval District believe that the questions surrounding the so-called "Philadelphia Experiment" arise from quite routine research which occurred during World War II at the Philadelphia Naval Shipyard. Until recently, it was believed that the foundation for the apocryphal stories arose from degaussing experiments which have the effect of making a ship undetectable or "invisible" to magnetic mines. Another likely genesis of the bizarre stories about levitation, teleportation and effects on human crew members might be attributed to experiments with the generating plant of a destroyer, the USS TIMMERMAN. In the 1950's this ship was part of an experiment to test the effects of a small, high frequency generator providing 1,000hz instead of the standard 400hz. The higher frequency generator produced corona discharges, and other well known phenomena associated with high frequency generators. None of the crew suffered effects from the experiment.

ONR has never conducted any investigations on invisibility, either in 1943 or at any other time (ONR was established in 1946.) In view of present scientific knowledge, ONR scientists do not believe that such an experiment could be possible except in the realm of science fiction.

U.S. Navy's Official Denial Letter {Page 1} U.S. Navy's Official Denial Letter {Page 2}

[46] The U.S. Dept. of The Navy

The Navy denies that this experiment took place for liability reasons. They are not willing to admit that they committed an Act of Treason by letting Nazis steal Tesla's most secret wartime invention right out from under them, while they were cooking and killing U.S. Naval Sailors with their experiment. The American C.I.A. & F.B.I. were secretly hijacked and over-run by lying Nazis posing as American Citizens'. These agencies consider themselves to be above the law and do not respond to or acknowledge Freedom of Information Act Requests! Their refusal to acknowledge F.O.I.A. requests is illegal! In a "free" society these Government abuses must not be tolerated! The C.I.A. & F.B.I. are full of Nazis!

People have written books about the Philadelphia Experiment claiming that they were on board the Eldridge at the time or that the experiment never took place at all or they claimed to be involved in other U.S. Navy "paranormal" tests like the "Montauk Project", flying saucers et al... Jacques Valle, Carlos Allende, Al Bielek, Preston Nichols, Mac Shelton & Bob Lazar are six of these people. When I asked Skorzeny about these six men, he laughed and told me that Al Bielek is allegedly a former Nazi and "Government Stooge" who works for the Pentagon. Valle, Allende, Bielek, Nichols, Shelton & Lazar are all "allegedly" C.I.A. disinformation spreading, "Bull Shit artists". If they "really" knew anything about the Philadelphia Experiment or Flying Saucers, I would have been ordered to kill them as I did with Dr. Morris K. Jessup.[47]

Back to Nikola Tesla

In late 1942, a story was printed in the New York Times that said Nikola Tesla was very sick and close to death. Tesla had been hit by a car a few years earlier "allegedly" driven by George H.W. Bush. Hitler had ordered George H.W. Bush to steal Tesla's inventions' and to kill him. Tesla was now very old and frail. He wanted to give the U.S. Government his plans for his newest inventions to help defeat the Nazis. Tesla hated Nazis! Tesla had tried several times to contact the U.S. O.S.S. to give them his latest and greatest inventions, including more "R.F.A.'s", his newly patented "Death Ray" and "free-energy" devices. He desperately wanted to help the United States of America defeat the Nazis and to create a free energy system to weanAmerican's off of polluting oil and gasoline engines. The U.S. Government refused to have further dealings with Tesla because he had refused to help with their second Philadelphia Experiment. The United States Government had "forsaken" Nikola Tesla "*once again*" and "*wrote*" him off as a "mad scientist."

---

[47],[56] Otto Skorzeny

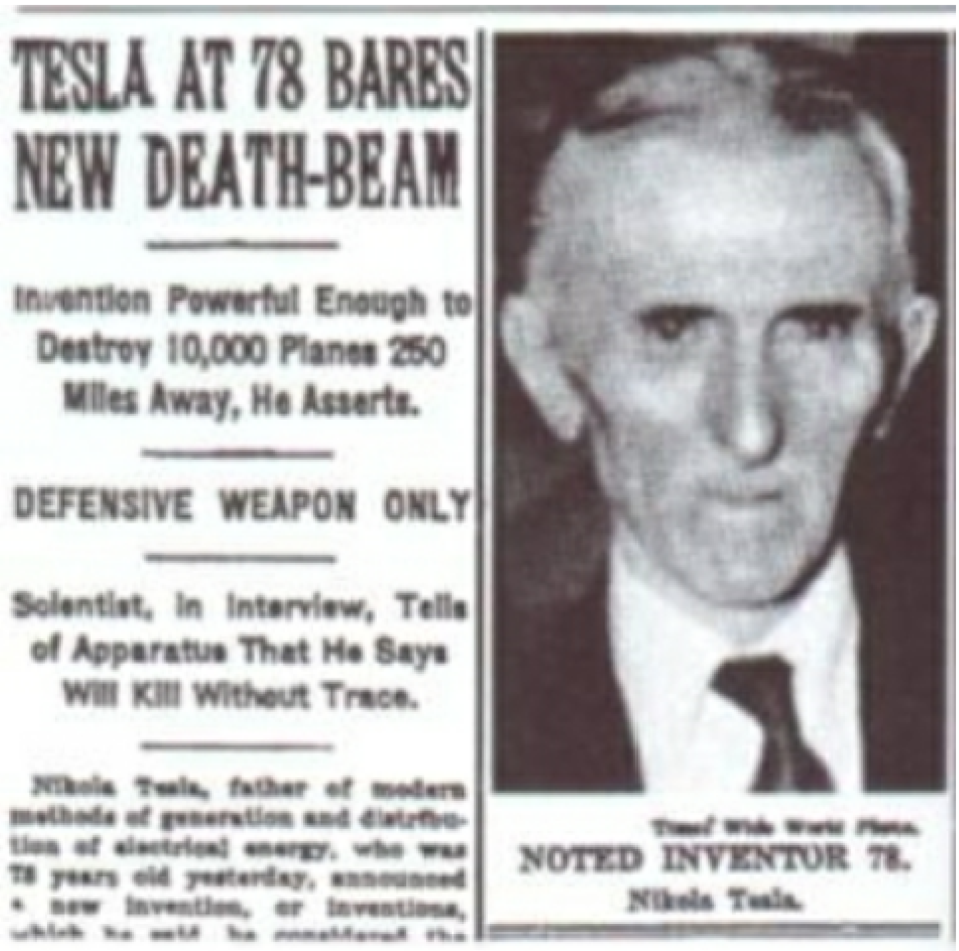

TESLA AT 78 BARES NEW DEATH-BEAM

Invention Powerful Enough to Destroy 10,000 Planes 250 Miles Away, He Asserts.

DEFENSIVE WEAPON ONLY

Scientist, in Interview, Tells of Apparatus That He Says Will Kill Without Trace.

Nikola Tesla, father of modern methods of generation and distribution of electrical energy, who was 78 years old yesterday, announced a new invention, or inventions,

Times Wide World Photo.

NOTED INVENTOR 78.

Nikola Tesla.

Tesla Discloses His New "Death Ray" to the world.

This "Death Ray" was a type of giant laser that could shoot enemy aircraft or incoming missiles out of the sky with a high powered electromagnetic pulse or "EMP". This "Death Ray" leaves no trace at all. It is the "perfect" weapon for war.

Rumors Emerge About Tesla's Love Life

It has been alleged that Tesla was obsessed with the size of his large penis. He was in fact over 6'5" tall. This "obsession" of his is quite obvious. Most of his inventions to transmit electricity look like giant "phallic symbols." Throughout Tesla's life, he had acquired a reputation for being a "Playboy." Due to Tesla's good looks, charisma, "alleged" 12" penis and genius "celebrity" status he had thousands of women including the wives of rich socialites, constantly throwing themselves at him for sex, like crazed rock & roll groupies. Many rich husbands of these female socialite "groupies" were extremely jealous and angry with Nikola Tesla because he was so brilliant, and he was "allegedly" giving their own wives more pleasure than they could.[48] Tesla never bothered to get married because he was too busy having sex with hundreds of women, all the time! "Why buy the cow when you get the milk for free?"

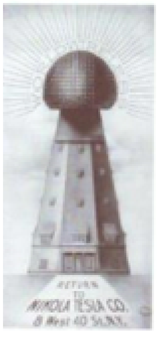
RETURN TO NIKOLA TESLA CO. 8 West 40 St. N.Y.

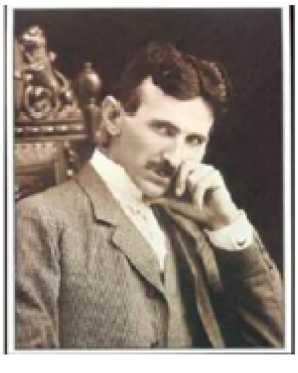

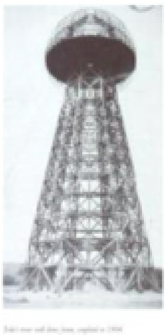

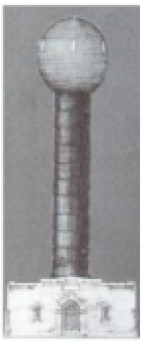

Dr. Nikola Tesla's Giant, "Phallic-Shaped" Inventions to Transmit Wireless Electricity.

Many of these rich socialites were Nazi “oil barons,” from Standard Oil and Edison’s Nazi comrades who lost millions of dollars when Tesla invented the superior electrical standard, Alternating Current “A/C”. These same men hated the fact that Tesla had invented free-energy devices that could possibly rid the world of its need for oil and gasoline polluting engines. Because so many of these “filthy” rich, socialite, Nazi, “Skull & Bones” members like Prescott & George H.W. Bush, Rockefellers, Edison et al.. hated Tesla so much, his days would be numbered.[49]

Tesla’s Final Day…

Tesla had called the American O.S.S. several times to try to set up a meeting to give them his newest and greatest inventions; an anti-gravity “invisible” flying disk, delta-wing shaped, radar avoiding aircraft designs, a “Death Ray”, an earthquake machine, free-energy devices, a Cosmic Light Ray Transmitter/Receiver, mind reading/controlling machines et al.. The O.S.S.’s phone number went straight to George H. Scherff Jr., an SS Nazi spy, aka; George H.W. Bush. George told Tesla that he would send two of his O.S.S. friends over to meet with him on January 6, 1943 to take his inventions back to Washington D.C.

On January 6, 1943 Tesla received a knock on his door by two men “claiming” to be O.S.S. officers. Their “alleged” names were Ralph Bergstresser & Bloyce Fitzgerald. One was very tall, and skinny the other was short and stocky. Tesla was very excited to see these men. He offered them tea. Tesla talked to these men for more than an hour. He showed them his complete invention plans for an anti-gravity, optically invisible flying disk, an earthquake machine, strange designs for radar avoiding aircraft, non-polluting, free-energy driven cars, rocket ships for space travel, lasers, the first electronic computer, electronic mind control/mind reading devices, and a “Death Ray“ or “Tesla Cannon” that fired electro-magnetic pulses or (EMP) to disable enemy aircraft from up to 200 miles away leaving no trace. Tesla carefully explained his inventions to the two men. Tesla told the men that his “optically invisible” flying disk had another very “unique” feature, he “alleged” that it was able to travel through time and to distant planets like Mars and beyond. He told them that he was very happy and proud to help the U.S. Government win the war against the Nazis. Nikola Tesla hated Nazis!

The two men thanked Tesla and began gathering up all of his “wonderful” invention plans and headed towards the door. While Tesla was standing in front of the door with his back turned, the smaller man, held Tesla’s arms’ at his side while the taller man, held a pillow in front of the frail 87 year old Nikola Tesla’s mouth and easily suffocated him to death!

---

[57] Otto Skorzeny

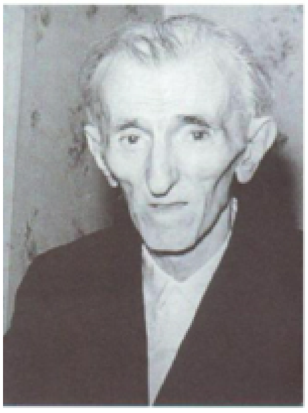

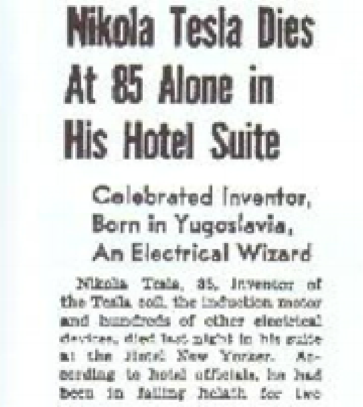

Nikola Tesla Dies At 85 Alone in His Hotel Suite

Celebrated Inventor, Born in Yugoslavia, An Electrical Wizard

Nikola Tesla, 85, inventor of the Tesla coil, the induction motor and hundreds of other electrical devices, died last night in his suite at the Hotel New Yorker. According to hotel officials, he had been in failing health for two

Nikola Tesla Age 85?

Tesla's Obituary Appeared in the New York Telegram, January 8, 1943

Skorzeny George H.W. Bush {Hitler} Reinhardt Gehlen

Because the "foolish" American Government had forsaken Tesla, no one was there to protect and watch over him. Dr. Tesla had "unknowingly" given his best and greatest inventions to two SS Nazi agents who had been pretending to be U.S. "O.S.S." agents. The two Nazis were none other than Otto Skorzeny and Reinhardt Gehlen. By murdering Tesla and stealing his greatest inventions, Nazi-Germany had once again, just "unofficially" won WWII. The two *SS* Nazis were allegedly "tipped off" to Tesla by George Herbert Walker Bush. "Allegedly," Hitler had ordered the “cowardly,” prudent George H.W. Bush to steal Tesla’s inventions and to kill him! George was too much of a “PUSSY” to do it, so Skorzeny & Gehlen had to kill him instead! Tesla was hit by a car a few years earlier “allegedly” driven by George H.W. Bush! The “pre-meditated” car accident injured Tesla, but did not kill him!

After Skorzeny smothered Tesla, he and Gehlen broke into Tesla’s safes’ and stole his Last Will & Testament, Edison Medal of Honor, his Westinghouse Contract worth trillions today, an earthquake machine patent model, an anti-gravity flying disk patent model, Tesla Turbine, a water engine, another engine that needed no oil or gas, free-energy devices, perpetual motion devices, a “Death Ray”, electronic invisibility devices, mind control devices, and “hundreds” of love-letters from Tesla’s rich, aristocratic, lady, friends most of whom were married to famous men at the time, like Robert Underwood Johnson, et al…Skorzeny claims that there were several “love” letters to Tesla from Barbara Pierce (Bush).

According to Skorzeny, Tesla’s Last Will & Testament, Edison Medal and his Westinghouse Contract are all kept in the “Skull & Bones” “lucky sperm club member” clubhouse located at Yale right next to Geronimo’s skull. Prescott Bush “grave-robbed” the skull from a sacred Apache burial ground for “fun!” In this secret clandestine meeting place for the young rich

WASP, New World Order Republicans there is allegedly a wax dummy of Hitler complete with black leather Nazi SS Gestapo boots. The Hitler “dummy” has his right hand extended in the infamous “Heil Hitler” salute. His left hand is carrying a gas can. New pledge recruits of the “Skull & Bones Club” are hazed. Allegedly, each new rich, WASP New World Order Republican recruit is made to strip completely naked, lie in a coffin full of cash, with a large Jewish Star of David on it, motor oil is poured on top of them while they masturbate to “Negro” pornography as Wagner’s Flight of the Valkyries plays loudly in the background. Their “sperm” is poured into a cup and the other “Skull & Bones” members must take a drink. [50] Sounds crazy but its’ true!

Yale “Skull & Bones”

---

[50] Otto Skorzeny

Tesla's Body Is Discovered...The Official U.S. Government Cover Up Begins!

Tesla's "Death Mask"

On January 7, 1943 a "real" friend of Tesla's stopped by to see how he was doing. His hotel bedroom door was ajar, which seemed odd. He went into Tesla's bedroom and found him lying on his bed with his pants down to his knees, with his shoes still on, "dead". After suffocating Tesla, Skorzeny claimed that he pulled Tesla's pants down to see if the rumors about his enormous penis were true. He claims that the rumors about Tesla's 15" penis were true! All of Tesla's belongings had been ransacked and "pillaged". His windows were open and his safes' were almost empty. His pigeons were flying around the room and they were walking on and around his dead body. Tesla's friend tried to resuscitate him. He loosened Tesla's collar and necktie and went to get help for Tesla, but he knew it was too late. When the authorities arrived they put Tesla on a stretcher and quickly covered him up with a blanket. Immediately thereafter, the F.B.I.'s Nazis' and Office of Alien Affair's Nazis' proceeded to raid Tesla's room and steal everything that was not hotel property. Tesla was not an alien, but a U.S. citizen! The Office of Alien Affairs had no authority to steal Tesla's remaining property! Tesla's body was immediately cremated without an autopsy. Isn't that strange?

The three murdering Nazis, Skorzeny, Gehlen & George H.W. Bush attended Tesla's funeral. How nice of them. The F.B.I. published a false story telling the world that Tesla had died of old age in his sleep. Once again, the U.S. Government had "screwed" & "forsaken" Tesla. Why? He was the greatest inventive mind the world had ever seen and had constantly proved his loyalty to the U.S. by inventing devices to help protect American Citizen's from attacks by the Nazis and other possible invaders. Why did the U.S. Government "erase" Tesla from our history books? To protect Bush's secret, illegal pact with Hitler and to hide non-polluting, free-energy Tesla Technology from American citizens' & the world. That's why! Otto Skorzeny and Reinhardt Gehlen took their stolen Tesla inventions back to Hitler in Berlin, Germany & to Stalin in Russia. Hitler was delighted! For murdering the frail, 87 year old American Genius, Nikola
Tesla, Hitler gave the two, metals of honor including the "Knight's Cross", the "Iron Cross", and several other honors like high ranking positions of authority within the Third Reich. He proceeded to gather up the best and smartest Nazi scientists that he could find along with Jewish scientist prisoners to "attempt" to decipher Tesla's complicated invention plans' for an anti-gravity, "invisible" flying disk, death-ray, & earthquake machine.

The Nazis had faked Thomas Edison's death years earlier to help them build weapons of mass destruction to use against America. Now the Nazis had Edison, Marconi and other famous Nazi scientists working non-stop for two years trying to build Tesla's anti-gravity, "invisible" flying disk and other stolen Tesla Technologies. For helping the Nazis, allegedly, Hitler and Prescott Bush used their influence to bribe U.S. Patent Examiners to give credit to Marconi for inventing the radio. Even though he "invented" it with 17 of Tesla's prior patents. Later in 1943, it was determined that Tesla did in fact invent the radio, and credit was given back to him for doing so. In 1945, Hitler, Skorzeny & Gehlen, met with George H.W. Bush and his Nazi comrades in the U.S. to show off "their" new wonderful, invention, the "optically invisible, anti-gravity flying disk. They claimed it was created by Nazi scientists not Tesla. George H.W. Bush and the rest of his Nazi political comrades were stunned and amazed by these wonderful new "toys" for war.

Bush knew that he could use his "guise" to pull off "the all-time fast one" on the United States of America. Germany had perfected the stolen Tesla Technology! Prescott & George H.W. Bush illegally helped Hitler's Nazi-Germany create a "fake" surrender agreement with the United States. This forgery was left in the U.S. National Archives and kept secret for more than 55 years. The "real" surrender agreement is kept in Germany's National Archives and in the Russian National Archives. Germany & Russia now had anti-gravity, optically invisible flying disks, "death rays" and other stolen Tesla Technologies & America did not! Germany was now able to deliver atomic bombs and other weapons of mass destruction to any place on the globe, including America without any one ever seeing them.

Germany's surrender agreement that is in the United States National Archives has been forged. The year for Germany to actually surrender has been erased and left blank. Because the year of surrender has been erased, the entire contract is null & void! According to Skorzeny, Hitler & Skorzeny made a secret pact with Prescott & George H.W. Bush whereas, the entire Third Reich of Nazi - Germany, 50,000+ including Hitler would be brought to and partnered with the U.S. to eventually start a Fourth Reich in America in the year 2004. George H.W. Bush was an SS Nazi-spy as was Skorzeny. Although he worked for the American O.S.S., he did not have the power nor authority to make this type of agreement but he did it anyway.

Hitler's death was faked and the entire Third Reich of Nazis including Hitler was brought to the U.S. and hidden by the C.I.A.- New World Order at underground top secret bases around the country. The U.S. Government has lied to its' people and the world ever since then about the identities of it Nazis' living in America and Germany's "unofficial" surrender to the United States of America. According to Skorzeny, because there is no effective year for Germany to surrender in this agreement, Germany will be able to "legally" seize control of the United States of America a by means of "adverse possession or squatters' rights'." If no effective date is added to this agreement, the "free" America that we all love will cease to exist. It will immediately become The United States of Germany. With Bush as its' dictator, just like Hitler & Prescott Bush planned for over 80 years ago.[51] Wake up Americans and smell the truth! You and the rest of the world have been lied to for over 62 years about who "really" won WWII. The Bush / Trump Family New World Order Nazi Republican regime must be stopped.

---

[51] Otto Skorzeny

U.S. Government Censor-Nazis Create More Lies About Tesla

Many “alleged” C.I.A. New World Order disinformation spreading biographers, like Cheney, published as fact, that Nikola Tesla was a homosexual, his “manhood” had been destroyed at an early age and that he was a Nazi-sympathizer. That is total Bull Crap! Cheney claims in one of her Tesla Books that the man in the famous picture below standing behind

Einstein is Nikola Tesla. Once again, that is not true! The ugly, angry looking man with a Hitler–like mustache, standing behind Einstein is smaller than Einstein. Tesla was very tall, 6’5” to be exact. There is no way that the man in this photo is Nikola Tesla. He does not look anything like Nikola Tesla except for a mustache, even that does not resemble Tesla’s. Nice try Cheney!

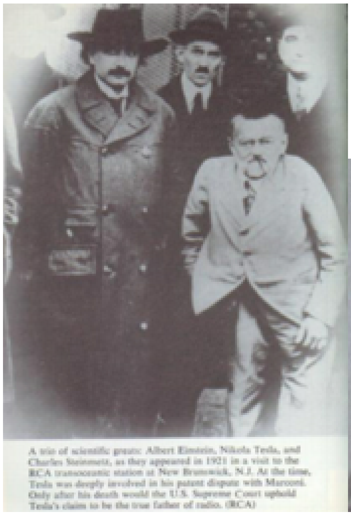

A trio of scientific greats: Albert Einstein, Nikola Tesla, and Charles Steinmetz, as they appeared in 1921 in a visit to the RCA transoceanic station at New Brunswick, N.J. At the time, Tesla was deeply involved in his patent dispute with Marconi. Only after his death would the U.S. Supreme Court uphold Tesla's claim to be the true father of radio. (RCA)

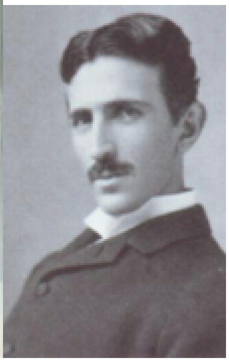

U.S. Government “Fake” Photo of Nikola Tesla

Photo compliments of (RCA)

The “Real” 6’5” American Genius: Dr. Nikola Tesla!

How The Bush Family & Their New World Order Nazi Comrades "Bushwhacked" America in 1945 and Stole the 2000 & 2004 Presidential Elections!

Skorzeny alleges, that he, Prescott and George H.W. Bush, made a secret and illegal pact with Hitler and Stalin to accept Germany's "unofficial" surrender in 1945. This surrender agreement was a total "sham." The effective "year" for Germany's surrender has been "erased" and deliberately left blank making this contract null and void. This "forged" document in the U.S. National Archives poses a tremendous threat to our American National Security. Prescott, George H.W. Bush and Nazi-Germany decided to make their own, secret agreement to bring Hitler's entire Third Reich of Nazis to America. Not just a few rocket scientists. In return, Hitler agreed to share "his" advanced, invisible, anti-gravity flying disk et al...stolen Tesla Technology with the C.I.A. New World Order American Government.

Hitler's entire Nazi Third Reich of 50,000+ have been living in secret underground bases throughout the United States, Canada, England, France and Italy ever since the "supposed" end of WWII. Hitler and his entire Third Reich of Nazis have been actively planning for their New World Order or Fourth Reich in America at these secret underground bases. The initial 50,000 + Nazis have been reproducing like rabbits for the last 58 years. It is estimated that there are now more than 20 million Nazis living in America above the ground and below the ground in secret New World Order bases. The 20 million does not include the millions more who are secretly, Nazi sympathizers. American Citizens are forbidden under the penalty of death not to enter these U.S. Government sponsored New World Order Nazi bases. Secret bases such as Area-51 Nevada, Camp Hero Montauk, NY, Las Cruces NM, Wright Patterson "underground" A.F.B., Ohio and the secret hollowed-out mountain base in Glacier National Park, MT. Inside of these "forbidden" bases lies complete replicas of Berlin, Germany and the trillions of stolen Jewish Holocaust "loot." In these secret bases are underground rooms the size of ten football fields that house the stolen Jewish Holocaust "cache" of trillions of dollars, gold and gold artifacts.

New World Order SS Nazis are allowed complete access to these secret underground bases. These Nazis are encouraged to visit each secret underground base as often as possible. However, no cameras are allowed and they must sign an oath of secrecy. If they break their oath, they are killed! Each New World Order Nazi is allowed access to the "gold rooms". He or she is allowed to "wallow" or "swim" in piles of gold coins that reach as high as the ceiling. They are allowed to wear any of the stolen Jewish gold jewelry including crowns, rubies, sapphires, emeralds, diamonds et al..The only "catch" is that they must only wear their underwear while in the gold rooms and they are not allowed to remove any of the stolen gold or treasure from these rooms nor the underground bases.[52] They are x-rayed as they leave the "gold rooms" and given a fresh change of clothes to put on. Along the streets of the fake underground "New" Berlin, there are shops just like the real Berlin.

[52], [61] Otto Skorzeny

However, everything is free there. In this illegal underground New World Order, New Berlin, Tesla's free-energy devices are used every day including Tesla's anti-gravity, optically invisible, flying disk. There are at least 500 secret underground New World Order bases around the U.S. of America and thousands more in Canada, England, France and Italy. There are also underground ski mountains, with snow and gondola lifts that resemble the Alps, at these secret New World Order bases. It's like an underground Nazi-Disney World down there.

In these underground New World Order bases there are "Aryan Breeding Rooms" or free brothels. There are thousands of beautiful "brain washed" women and kidnapped underage teenage girls from around the country there to "service" the men. The New World Order Nazis want the "seed" or "sperm" from their "old" Third Reich SS Nazi leaders to implant in their young brainwashed – "brainless", "Aryan" baby-breeders to help populate "their" new world with "pure" white Aryan babies. These babies will grow up to "rule" the United States of Germany, "formerly the United States of America." Skorzeny claims to have made more than 20,000 "personal" donations.[53] According to Skorzeny, unlimited amounts of free drugs and free German beer are available at these secret New World Order underground bases. Because each base is a"sovereign state of Germany" they are exempt from all of our American laws. They have diplomatic immunity. These Nazis do not pay any U.S. Taxes nor any parking tickets! The Nazis have been living in America with the trillions of stolen Jewish Holocaust "loot" since April 8, 1945 right underneath of our noses'. No one ever noticed or cared because the American People were told by our U.S. Government that we won the war against Nazi-Germany. The American People as a whole are not too smart. They desperately want to believe whatever the American Government tells them to believe, like good slaves.

The New World Order Nazi Republican Bush Government has been "pissing down the backs of its' American Citizens' & telling them it's raining" for too long! George Bush Jr. we do not want a New World Order in America. Why don't you and your entire New World Order Nazi regime pack up and leave America. Go back to Nazi-Germany where you belong! Everything was just fine in America, before your Nazi-father, Bush Sr. decided to make an illegal deal with Hitler! Your Nazi plan to create a New World Order or Fourth Reich in America will not succeed! George H.W. Bush you were not born in America! Your Presidency & your son's Presidency are both automatically null & void!

George Bush Jr. & Sr., et al..Nazis living in America, Das Uberman, "Superman" has returned to save America from the Nazis & he is the one who wrote this book! Your Nazi-father's illegal plan to create a Fourth Reich or New World Order in America has failed! I encourage you to place an effective year on Germany's fake surrender agreement, and then immediately resign from office. America must restore democracy at all cost! No more Bush New World Order Nazis in power in America. While we are discussing Nazis, Skorzeny claims that the I.R.S. is a private Delaware Corporation that was established in 1933 by three American Nazis. It was created to fund the Nazi military buildup. Most of the money that was ever collected was transferred to Germany. The Nazi party was never created and funded by any Germans. It was created and funded by the British & American Illuminati factions. The bagman who took the money to Germany was Senator Prescott Bush, the CEO for Brown Brothers Harriman.

The IRS is not the same as the Bureau of Internal Revenue. Paying income tax to the IRS is strictly voluntary and not mandatory. According to Skorzeny, the IRS allows "certain" people an exemption from paying U.S. tax. To avoid paying U.S. Tax, all you need to do is write the I.R.S. a letter stating: I, John Doe, living at 123 Main St., Metropolis, USA, am a natural born "sovereign citizen" of the United States of America. According to the 1945 Rheims Germany Surrender Agreement that is in our U.S. National Archives, Germany never surrendered to the United States and since 1945 has been illegally in control of the U.S. Government. The U.S. Constitution forbids taxation without representation. I will not pay income tax to the IRS to support its' Nazi agenda in America. I hereby refuse to pay the IRS any income tax. Furthermore, I hereby demand that the IRS immediately refund to me any and all tax money(s) that I have ever paid to it. That's all you need to do if you do not want to pay any U.S. Income tax!

The U.S. Constitution forbids taxation without representation. Why should American Citizens' pay taxes to a Foreign Nazi Government that seized control of America? The current New World Order Republican Nazi Government in America does not represent the best interest of the American People.

Back to the Underground New World Order Bases...

The C.I.A. built 1,000's of "underground" acres of land at the expense of you, the American taxpayer. They use this "space" to grow the best marijuana, opium, cocaine & hash in the world. They also have thousands of "Meth Labs" and "ecstasy labs". The crop of illegal " Nazi-buds" and Nazi-drugs is trucked out of the Area 51 type installations in unmarked white jeeps and U.S. Government unmarked trucks. It is transported to the Brotherhood of Aryan Nations "organized crime" hate group "head-quarters" to sell directly to the public. The "Brotherhood" then funnels its' drug money back up the chain, directly to the C.I.A.'s New World Order Nazis. That is why drugs are illegal in America today. The C.I.A. is always in need of cash to bribe people with. It needs to constantly launder money by selling "its'" drugs while it viciously persecutes the American public for selling or using small amounts of their own drugs. The C.I.A.'s New World Order Nazis don't like anyone trying to compete with their drug business!

The C.I.A. helped create The Brotherhood of Aryan Nations organized crime hate group in America. The "Brotherhood" is controlled by old, SS Nazi C.I.A. New World Order agents: Skorzeny, allegedly, George H.W. Bush, Mengele, Bormann et al.. This hate group was formed so that terrorist hate crimes can be perpetrated against the American public without them knowing that the crimes were really sponsored by the U.S.-New World Order Government. According to Skorzeny, Germany's Nazis' with the help of George Bush Sr. and Jr. have illegally seized control of the United States of America by rigging the Presidential election of 2000. First the C.I.A. killed long time beloved Florida Democratic Governor, Lawton Chiles. The C.I.A. is real good at "giving heart attacks." Allegedly, the C.E.O. of W.R. Grace, Paul Norris called Governor Chiles to setup a "private" meeting to give him a large "cash" campaign contribution. He had done this before so Chiles did not suspect anything would be wrong. W.R. Grace allegedly sent over its' favorite consultant / killer: Steve Rabel aka: Josef Mengele to the Governor's Mansion.

Rabel suggested that they meet in a private location to discuss this “fake” cash campaign contribution. Chiles suggested that they talk in his private gym. Chiles was in “excellent” physical condition because he exercised on a regular basis! The men spoke for about 5 minutes, Mengele claimed that he was overweight, out of shape, “which he really is”, and needed someone to show him how to exercise. He asked Chiles to show him how to use the bench press machine. Chiles laid down on the bench and proceeded to do a few “reps”. While Chiles had both of his hands on the bar trying to support the weight, Mengele made his move. He “whipped” out a concealed “syringe” with air bubbles in it, stuck the needle in Chiles neck and pushed the plunger down.

While Chiles was near death and convulsing in pain, Mengele casually walked out of the gym and out of the mansion. Chiles died a few minutes later. The next day a story was printed in the newspapers saying that Governor Lawton Chiles died from “natural causes,” he must have suffered a heart-attack while exercising. Now that Chiles was dead, Jeb Bush was easily brought to power as the new Governor of Florida. Democrat, Theresa Le Pore the Florida Election Official was allegedly bribed & became a Republican “plant”, neo-Nazi Brotherhood of Aryan Nations members along with conservative New World Order Republican servicemen were bussed down to Florida, dressed up in “preppie” clothes, given “Pro Bush” signs to carry, while they screamed, shouted and rioted at polling places. They intimidated the elderly voters and the news media in Palm Beach County, Florida. They forced black and other minority voters away from the polls. When that wasn't enough, Bush obtained a favorable Judgment from the Nazi-sympathetic New World Order Republican President appointed Supreme Court Justices who illegally forbid a recount. The Bush regime is trying to create a Fourth Reich or New World Order in America and they must be stopped at all cost! This will not be American any more. It will be the United States of Germany!

In 2004, the Republican New World Order rigged the election again. This time they had computerized touch screen voting machines in almost every state with no receipt for a manual recount. Of course every vote went to Bush. Kerry didn't stand a chance. The Republican neo-cons will fraudulently win more elections unless a printed paper receipt is giving out each time you vote with a computerized voting machine. I voted for Kerry with a paper absentee ballot. It probably got lost in the mail. I urge all American Citizens' to go to their local gun stores immediately and buy as many high powered weapons and ammunition as you can. Tell your family and friends to do the same! The 2nd Amendment to the U.S. Constitution that guarantees American Citizens' the right to bear arms must not ever be infringed upon! The American public must join together as a Militia as per out U.S. Constitution, then march “PEACEFULLY”, arm to arm with guns in hands, down to Washington D.C. and demand Bush Jr. to immediately place an effective date of 1945 on the “forged” Germany Surrender Agreement that has been left in the U.S. National Archives, thus stopping the New World Order Nazis from “legally” taking over America. As President of the United States of America, Bush Jr. has the power and legal authority to make and sign Treaties. If he refuses to sign it, he must be impeached! President Bush must then immediately resign from office along with his entire New World Order Nazi Regime staff of Republicans and all Republican appointed Supreme Court justices.

The Clintons are allegedly New World Order Democrats and allegedly so are the Gores. No one sent any anthrax to Al Gore or Bill Clinton did they? Anthrax powder was only sent to the enemies of W.R. Grace Co., & the Bush Nazi New World Order Regime.

The New World Order Nazis have corrupted the "two party" system in America. The Nazis have "puppets" in both the Republican & Democratic Committees who are just waiting to be elected so they can continue the New World Order Nazi plan to create a Fourth Reich in America. The Democratic Party has always been the lesser of the two evils, however that's not good enough for America. Americans need to elect an "independent third party" for the President & Vice-President of the United States of America. This "independent third party" individual must not be connected to any Nazis or large corporations. He or she should be a "regular working guy or regular working girl," white or black, Jewish or Christian, who knows what the U.S. Constitution and The Declaration of Independence mean. He or she must not enact Bills to counteract these sacred documents or any other Bills that take freedom away from American Citizens'.

Democracy must be restored in America at all cost! All of the C.I.A.'s records must be opened and made public to the American citizens'. The C.I.A.'s' records will have the list of names and addresses for every Nazi New World Order Republican employee that is in power today and the locations of their secret New World Order bases that are housing the stolen Jewish Holocaust trillions and Tesla Technology. Every one of these Nazis must be deported back to Germany where they came from! Only then will American be able to "start over" and begin to rebuild the great economy that it once had. Holocaust, Native American and Slave reparations should be given out to American Citizens' from the stolen Jewish Holocaust trillions of dollars that are secretly hidden in underground New World Order bases around the world. If we can eradicate the C.I.A.'s New World Order *SS* Nazi "menace" from our U.S. Government that have been undermining our American way of life, maybe we can help prevent The Fourth Reich - New World Order from being created. It has already begun. It's aging *SS* Nazis that sent the deadly anthrax through the mail in 2001. It's the same New World Order *SS* Nazi C.I.A. employees that the C.I.A. claims are dead. If you love America and your freedom, you must vote against the New World Order Republican Bush regime in the next Presidential Election. Is A Vote For Hitler!

Back to the New World Order Nazis

The U.S. Government knows that the "domestic" New World Order neo-Nazi Brotherhood of Aryan Nations "organized crime" hate group sent the anthrax through the mail, because they are the ones who allegedly ordered them to do it. The C.I.A.'s New World Order SS Nazis' planned the anthrax attacks with help from the "domestically" based Brotherhood of Aryan Nation's "organized crime" hate group. The U.S. Government intentionally ignored evidence that would convict this terrorist hate group and deliberately focused their "so-called" investigation on phony "Middle Eastern" "Al Qaeda" terrorists that do not exist. Bush Jr. planned a "phony" war against Iraq to steal its' oil, and divert the Nation's attention from the horrible "depression-like" economy that exists today.

Most of the major corporations in the world that have accidentally discovered “accounting irregularities” that “mistakenly” caused C.E.O.’s to make millions of dollars while workers and shareholders lost millions of dollars, all had the C.I.A.’s *SS* New World Order Nazis as consultants. Companies such as Ford, GM, Chrysler, Enron, World Com, Tyco, all S.A.I.C companies like NASA, Telcordia Technologies, Lucent Technology, every airline company, W.R. Grace, Bayer, Merck, American Home Products and most other major pharmaceutical companies. These New World Order Nazi employees deliberately sabotage the products they are working on to create problems and chaos in America. Is it any wonder that the space shuttle Columbia disintegrated upon re-entry?

Ford, Nasa and all the S.A.I.C. companies have histories of critical failures in their products that resulted in American’s being killed or injured. The C.I.A.’s New World Order *SS* Nazis have been conspiring with the CEO’s of the largest companies in the world to create the horrible “depression-like” economy we have today. Is it any wonder? This “horrible” economy of ours did not just “happen,” it was carefully planned. It’s a 58 year old Nazi–idealistic, New World Order, Conservative Republican plan to create a Fourth Reich or New World Order in America. The C.I.A.’s SS New World Order Nazis allegedly conspired to “peddle” its’ New World Order Philosophy “Bull Crap” to the C.E.O.’s of major corporations by disguising it as a “New European Quality Standard” to increase worker productivity, called ISO 9000, ISO 9001, ISO 9002 & ISO 2000.

This “illegal” New World Order “Master Plan” was sold to CEO’s of major corporations for millions of dollars. This illegal “Nazi-Master Plan” systematically made C.E.O.’s multi-millionaires by teaching them how to loot and bankrupt their own corporations and their employees while staying out of jail. ISO 9000 standards provide CEOs with the “Master List” of New World Order Republican Nazi-sympathizers who are looking for a job... your job! The New World Order Nazi Republicans have looted America companies, and they have looted the American Government, leaving a 550 billion Dollar deficit and it’s getting worse! If you have a Jewish, African-American or Native American sounding last name, you were probably the first ones to be fired during the mass layoffs of 2000-2003.

You were unjustly fired so a less paid, less skilled, New World Order Republican, Nazi-sympathizer could have your job. If you are Jewish, African-American, or Native American you probably have not been able to obtain a good, decent “white-collar” job since you were separated from your job during the mass layoffs of 2000-2003. Did you ever wonder why no one ever responded to the hundreds of resumes you submitted to technical, computer or telecom, companies during the past three years? Unless your last name matches one of the last names on the Republican New World Order’s ISO 9002 “Master List” of Nazi-sympathizers’ you will not be hired! Here’s a tip for all of you non gentiles, “non-WASP’s”, if you want to find a job in America, do not apply to any company that is ISO 9000 compliant. You will not be hired! Ask each company before you waste your valuable time, filling out an application if they are ISO 9000 compliant. If they are, laugh at them and walk away.

The ISO 9000 "New World Order" Nazi-sympathetic C.E.O.'s, many of whom have Smith, Wilson, Patel, or Gupda for a last name have also conspired to devalue the worth of American white-collar professional computer workers. They fired them, most without warning, without any separation allowance. Most had pensions that were now cancelled. These unfortunate American workers were replaced with foreign workers with HB-1 & HL *Visas* from Pakistan, India, Iraq, Iran, Afghanistan, Saudi Arabia, Russia, China, Vietnam, Korea and other "Communist" third world countries. Most of the foreign computer workers do not speak English, are less skilled, "possible terrorists" and are paid much less than the poor Americans who used to have those same jobs.

The Republican's New World Order *SS* Nazis' "ordered" the ISO 9000 compliant C.E.O.'s to initiate mass layoffs beginning in the year 2000 and they are not finished laying off yet. The Bush Administration rewards companies that "outsource" American jobs by giving them huge tax breaks. After the "mass layoffs," the C.E.O.s made millions of dollars due to their "smaller payroll expenses," while laid-off workers are unable to feed their families or find "decent" jobs that pay similar amounts of money as their old jobs. Unemployment benefits are a joke! They pay former skilled workers poverty wages that are not enough to support a family on. The New World Order

Republicans "stalled" a Bill to extend unemployment benefits while at the same time passing a Bill to increase their own salaries and give tax breaks to their rich corporate friends. If you check any state's newspaper classified ads there are very few jobs for "white collar" professionals, only low paying service industry jobs.

These same ISO 9000 New World Order following companies have conspired with each other to pay highly skilled computer workers and other white collar professionals much less money than they are worth so that the C.E.O.s can make more money. It is a Nazi-New World Order Republican plan to bankrupt America and eliminate the "middle class" society in America. When the middle class has been eliminated, there will only be the "poor" and the "rich" classes of society. The New World Order's rich "WASP" "ruling" class, desperately want more people to "serve" them. The "poor" are much easier to rule and control than the "middle-class." Today's Republican Party is not "your father's" Republican Party.

It has been corrupted by New World Order Nazi-idealistic," Jew & Black hating" infiltrators posing as religious conservatives who want to take away your freedoms. Companies that "adhere" to the ISO 9000 "New European Quality Standard" have conspired with the C.I.A.'s SS New World Order Nazis to create the horrible "depression-like" economy we have today. [54] Is it any wonder? Because these *SS* Nazi C.I. A. New World Order agents bribed the right government officials including every U.S. president except JFK, for so many years, with billions of stolen Jewish Holocaust money, and stolen Tesla technology they are now listed as "officially" dead according to the U.S. Government.

---

[54] ORION "Your Man on the Inside."

Speaking about JFK, Skorzeny claims that the C.I.A. tried to force Kennedy to sign a pact with the New World Order C.I.A. Nazis, when he refused the first time, they sabotaged "his" Bay of Pigs Invasion of Cuba. When he refused to sign the pact the second time, they assassinated him. Skorzeny claims that he was the "military-man" on the "grassy knoll," next to him was George H. Scherff Jr., aka. George H.W. Bush dressed as a cop "badge-man," Josef Mengele was in the sewer "where he belongs" and Reinhardt Gehlen was were Oswald was supposed to be, in the Book Depository building. Mengele's bullet from the sewer was one of the ones that killed Kennedy. Oswald was a "patsy." The rest is history. The New World Order Nazis created the Warren Commission. They "dreamed-up" a lone gunman theory & passed that story off to the world and everyone accepted it. JFK's brother Robert refused to sign the pact so he too was killed!

The C.I.A. had been "bugging" JFK Jr.'s apartment too. They allegedly overheard that JFK Jr. was going to be on Al Gore's ticket as the Vice-President in 2000, which would have created a huge landslide win over Bush & Cheney. However, he too was killed because he would not sign a pact with The New World Order Republican Nazis. The C.I.A. uses stolen Tesla technology on its' jets' that can shoot down any aircraft with a high powered laser beam from 200 miles away, leaving no trace. The C.I.A. is very good at causing car accidents, giving heart-attacks and drug overdoses to those who stand in their way of creating a Fourth Reich or New World Order in

America.

The C.I.A.'s New World Order Nazis "allegedly" shot down JFK Jr.'s plane. Thus, ensuring a victory for Bush Jr. The only "*curse*" the Kennedy Family has is that they hated Nazis and refused to sign a pact with them. That's why the male Kennedy's are dead. Ted Kennedy fearing for his own life, "allegedly" signed the pact with the New World Order Nazis. He would not be killed if he agreed to never run for President and to never speak of the illegal pact he signed.

Kennedy AFL-CIO Convention December 7, 1961[55]

C.I.A./SS Nazi-
Reinhardt Gehlen

Oswald + C.I.A./SS Nazi; Alois Brunner

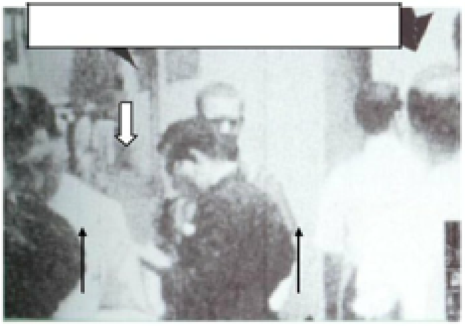

C.I.A./SS nazi-Dr. Josef Mengele + Oswald

C.I.A./SS Nazi; Dr. Josef Mengele + Oswald

C.I.A./SS Nazi; Reinhardt Gehlen

C.I.A. Agent/SS Nazi ; Dr. Josef Mengele + Oswald

Mengele

Oswald & his C.I.A. SS Nazi Comrades.[56] 8/16/63

[55] The Kennedy Wit By Bill Adler

[56] The Search For Lee Harvey Oswald By Robert J. Groden

GEORGE H.W. BUSH WAS THE BADGEMAN ON THE GRASSY KNOLL!

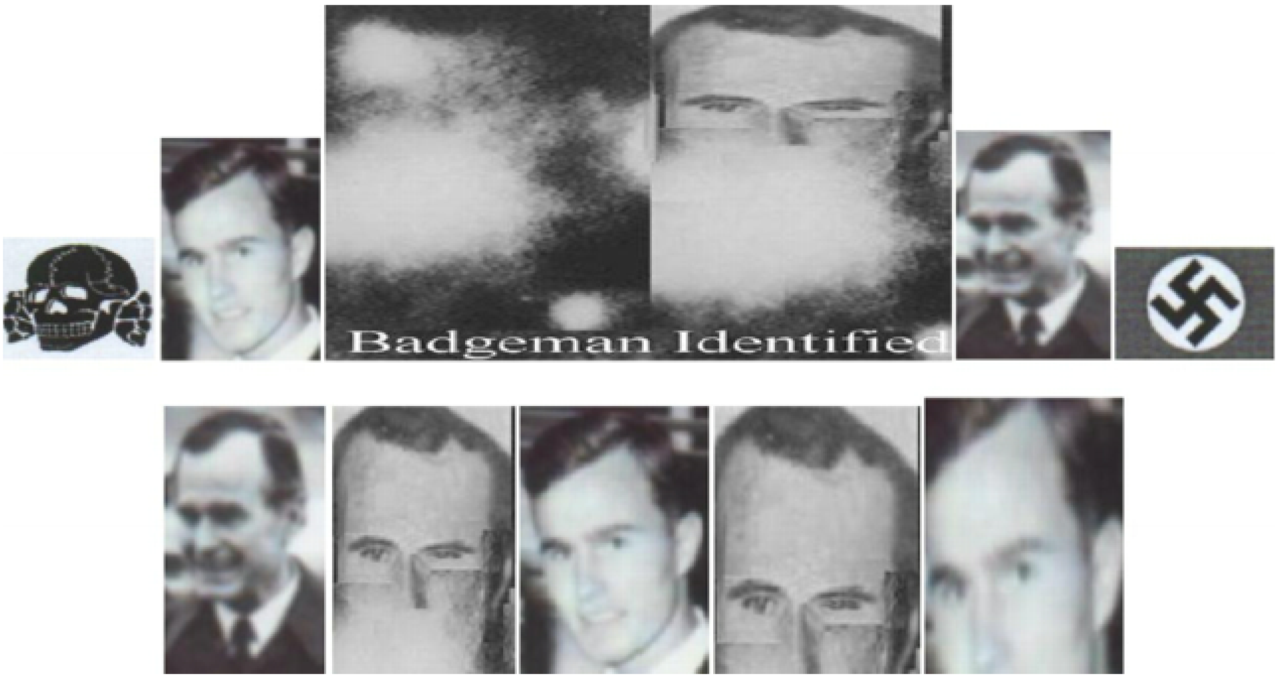

SS NAZI/C.I.A. AGENT: GEORGE H. SCHERFF JR. AKA: GEORGE H.W. BUSH MURDERED PRESIDENT J.F.K. ALONG WITH SS NAZI/C.I.A. AGENTS': SKORZENY, MENGELE & GEHLEN! GEORGE H.W. BUSH WAS THE "BADGEMAN" ON THE GRASSY KNOLL. LEE HARVEY OSWALD DIDN'T DO IT!

While we are on the topic of conspiracies, I asked Skorzeny if we ever landed on the moon. He laughed and said that the U.S. never publicly landed a man on the moon. The U.S. only orbited the earth. He also claims that Tesla left a "surprise" for them on the moon that has prevented all attempts at a moon landing. The U.S. and Russia have not been able to figure out this "surprise" yet. Skorzeny claims that Tesla left a "fleet" of 100's of anti-gravity flying disks hovering just above the moon's surface with a "perpetual" motion type of force field around them that destroys all craft that come in contact with it. These flying disks are the "new & improved" models. They are better than the ones that Skorzeny & Gehlen stole the plans for. "*Somehow*", Dr. Tesla knew that the Nazis would come to kill him so he always kept his "best" invention plans secretly hidden away inside his head!

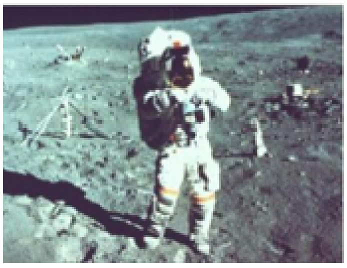

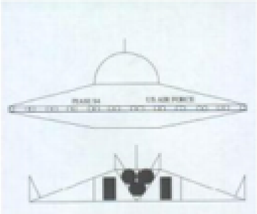

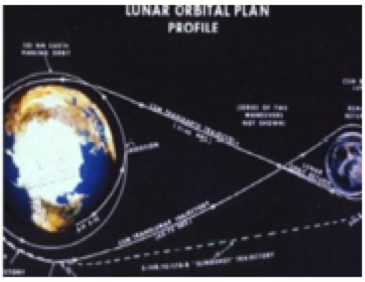

	Rear		
	View		
"Fake" Studio Moon Landing Photo Tesla's Stolen Disk "Concept"			Lunar Orbit Diagram
Houston, TX			

Skorzeny claims that during the1950's – present time, the C.I.A. forced famous musicians to pay "protection money", and to make the C.I.A. beneficiaries in case they died. If a musician refused to pay, the C.I.A. shot down his airplane with a laser, thus leaving no trace or the C.I.A. would spike his drugs with poison, to kill him. If the musician paid the protection money, he would be "shielded" from police "drug" raids and his competition would be "knocked-off." Is M.C.A. really the C.I.A.…Yes?

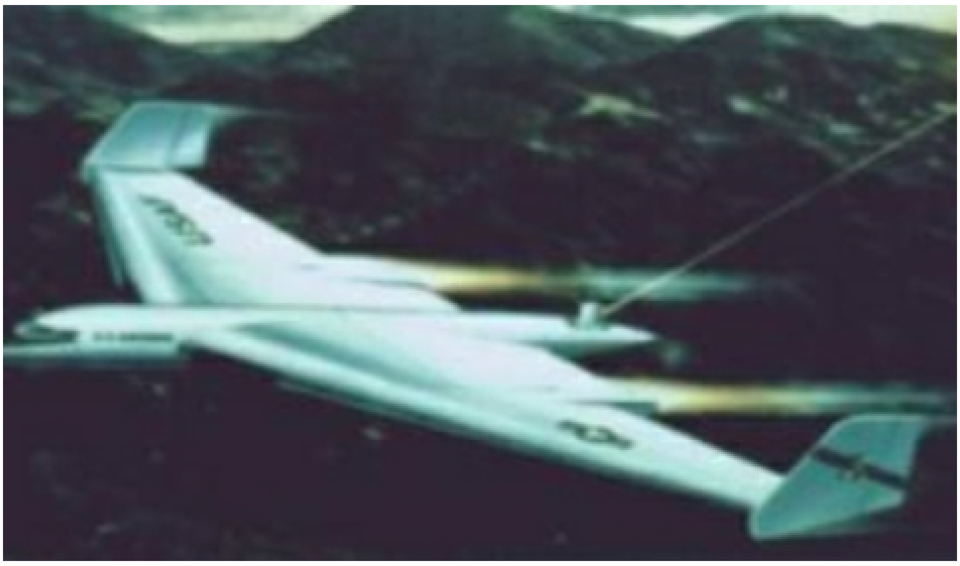

U.S.A.F.'s Flying Laser "Death Ray" Craft

How Bill Gates Became The Richest Man in the World…

Otto Skorzeny claims that during the late 1980's the C.I.A. met with Bill Gates from Microsoft. Together they conspired to create a consumer privacy invasion "device" that would "keep track" of everyone who used it. The C.I.A. allegedly gave Bill Gates one billion dollars to build and perfect such a device. The C.I.A. had already perfected one type of this privacy-invading device.

They allegedly located a tiny digital camera behind every television screen that is "cable ready."

While you are innocently watching your programs, randomly timed digital photos of you are being taken without your permission and sent through your coaxial cable directly to the C.I.A.'s New World Order Nazis. These "hidden" cameras also have microphones that illegally transmit your private conversations to the C.I.A. The C.I.A. then illegally sells "your" information to television networks who use this information to keep track of viewers for ratings purposes. The tiny cameras are usually hidden behind the infrared remote control sensor window in the front of the TV. or in the top right corner of the screen.

Bill Gates allegedly used the C.I.A.'s "camera-in the-tv" idea to place into "his" privacy-invading device. Gates decided to place a similar, tiny, digital camera with microphone into every computer monitor that is sold in the world. He devised a way to have a blank pixel on your computer monitors' screen, similar to a two-way mirror. Behind this blank pixel is the tiny digital camera with a microphone. This tiny hidden digital camera privacy invasion device is the same type of device that is used on today's cell phones to transmit your image through the air to the person you are talking to on the other cell phone. Gates then allegedly conspired with the C.I.A. to create the largest Internet Service Provider or ISP in the world, American On Line or A.O.L. Free A.O.L. disks are illegally given away at all U.S. Post Offices. Are you surprised? This ISP web browser has a small square window in the upper right corner of your screen. In this little square window, there is a triangle shaped logo that frequently spins around. When the logo is spinning, it is allegedly taking digital photos of you and transmitting them with sound directly to the C.I.A.

Did you ever notice how slow the internet is at times? It slows down periodically because it is taking photos of you without your permission to upload with sound, directly to the C.I.A. thus creating the dreaded slowdown. These "still" digital photos are in BMP format. They are large video files that take a long time to upload. The C.I.A. can control how many photos of you are taken. The faster the triangle shaped logo is spinning, the more photos of you are being taken, like a movie. When the triangle logo spins around it looks like a camera shutter opening and closing, because it is. Every web browser on the market today uses this secret, illegal, privacy invasion camera that is hidden behind the same spot on every computer monitor built after 1990. What can you do to protect your internet privacy? # 1 do not attempt to take apart your monitor to try to remove this camera, because there is a large capacitor behind the tiny camera.
This capacitor carries a very high voltage current that is deadly if touched. That's why we have always been told to throw away our monitors if they are not working properly, instead of trying to fix them.

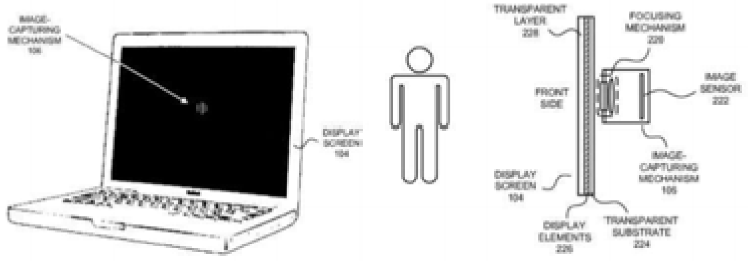

Apple Computer obtained a U.S. Patent on a hidden camera device that secretly spies on its users'. This privacy invasion device is located inside of every computer monitor and cable ready
TV. sold in the world. the patent was de-classified in 2004. big brother is here! #2 To protect your internet privacy, do what I do, turn your computer on, go to your web browser, locate the small square window in the upper right corner of the monitor and tape a small piece of paper over the window. If you want to voice your opinion to the C.I.A., write a tiny message backwards on the piece of paper so when the C.I.A. illegally tries to see you using your computer all they see is a message that says "The C.I.A. Sucks!" or write any message that you want.

Skorzeny also alleges that in your "cookies" folder on your computer's hard drive contains a file called the "Index". Did you ever wonder why you can never delete this file, when you delete the rest of your "cookies?" The "Index" file is allegedly used to store a program that creates a "backdoor" for the C.I.A.'s New World Order Nazis to illegally access your computer's hard drive without your permission.

They read and or steal all of your files, while you surf the internet. Your personal information is allegedly stolen by the C.I.A. and sold to telemarketing companies and other “crooks” around the world. Every computer that uses Microsoft Windows ’98 or newer, allegedly uses this illegal technology to spy on its’ users’. The F.B.I. & the C.I.A. Nazis use a “black box” privacy-invading device called the “Carnivore”. The illegal “Carnivore” black box eavesdrops on every email that is sent by every computer in the world. Not just a few suspects who are under investigation! The F.B.I. and the C.I.A.’s Nazis are above the Law. They illegally refuse to answer to Freedom of Information Act Requests about how their “carnivore” really works. In a “free society” this type of Government abuse must not be tolerated! The C.I.A. & F.B.I. are full of Nazis & should be reorganized! If you ever wondered how Bill Gates really became the richest man in the world, now you know the truth!

The C.I.A. Sells Stolen Tesla Technology...

Otto Skorzeny claims that the C.I.A. used stolen Tesla Technology to “brainwash” people in almost every country around the world, including America. The C.I.A. was paid billions of dollars by Kuwait, Iraq, Iran, Syria, Libya, China, India, Pakistan, North Korea et al..repressive Third World Countries to secretly construct “towers of Babylon” or fake cell phone towers that house stolen Tesla Technology. The stolen Tesla Technology is used to transmit high frequency electronic radio waves. When tuned to the proper frequency, subliminal messages of obedience, despair, hatred for Jews, & hatred for America are transmitted to the nearby worshippers. Thus creating thousands of brainwashed Jew and America haters around the world. Saddam Hussein has hundreds of the “towers of worship” located all around Baghdad, Iraq & Kuwait.

Skorzeny also claims that the C.I.A. sold this stolen Tesla technology to the Nazi-fundamentalist, non-tax paying, organized religious cult of Scientologists in America and to thousands of Catholic Churches around the world including America. The Scientologists have large “towers of worship” or “towers of Babylon” at their headquarters to brainwash the “idiots” who

belong to their “pseudo-religion.” These Scientology “idiots” are brainwashed into giving up their worldly possessions’ to the leaders of the “cult.” The Scientologists own Hollywood and the tabloid, rag newspapers. They are in total control of hundreds of actors and actresses. They dictate when an actor is going to get married or divorced and press releases are sold to the tabloids. The C.I.A. uses the “pseudo-church” of Scientology Idiots’ as a “hiring-pool” for assassins like, Sir-Han, Sir-Han, David Chapman, John Hinckley Jr., et al... Skin-bleaching, plastic surgery addict & “alleged” pedophile Michael Jackson, John Travolta, Kelly Preston, Lisa Marie Presley, Tom Cruise, Ben Affleck, J-Lo, Isaac Hays and thousands more have “allegedly" been brainwashed by the “pseudo-religious” Cult of Scientologists. The “towers of Babylon” look like Tesla’s Towers’ for transmitting energy, except they have “pointy” tops, fancy, ornate decorations or “other” add-ons that help disguise their “real” purpose.

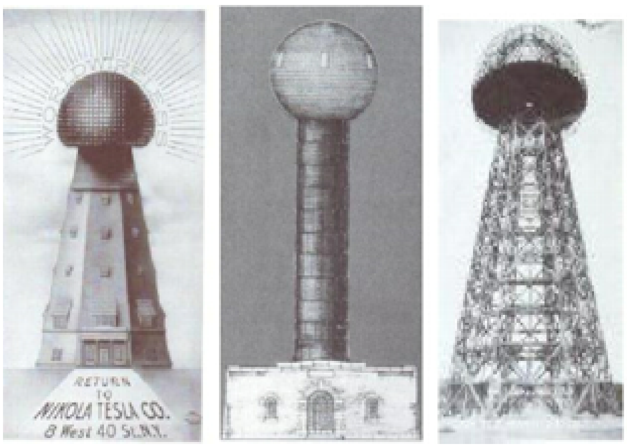
RETURN
TO
NIKOLA TESLA CO.
8 West 40 St. N.Y.

François Guenet

Tesla's Towers for Transmitting Electricity Kuwaiti / Scientology's "Terror Towers'"

"Towers' of Babylon to Brainwash You"

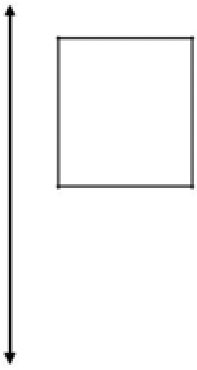

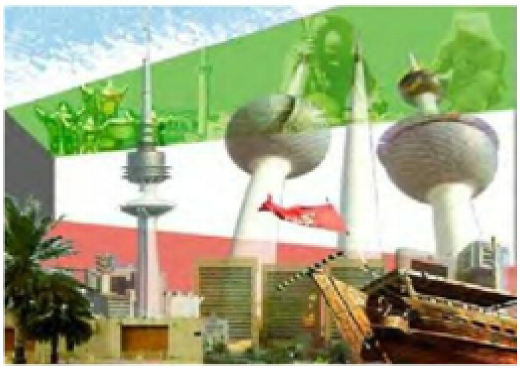

50' to 500'+
Tall

"Towers' of Babylon to Brainwash You"

Kuwaiti National Emblem

Cartoon Genius: Max Fleischer (1883-1972)

Fleischer Brother's Studios, Long Island City, NY

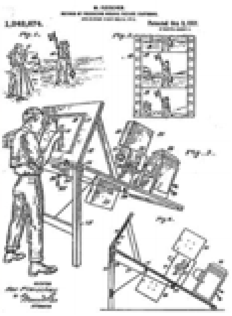

Max Fleischer

Max Fleischer's "Rotoscope ☐ "

U.S. Patent #1,242,674

Front row, left to right: Possibly Sidney Wallick, Edith Vernick, George Cannata, Seymour Kneitel, Max Fleischer, Charles Shettler, Sid Marcus. Al Eugster is behind Vernick and Cannata, with his hat and cigar. Standing behind Cannata and Kneitel is Abner Kneitel. Standing behind Cannata and Abner Kneitel is George Rufle. In the background at left, wearing a white hat, is Rudy Zamora. In the distance behind Seymour Kneitel is Joe Fleischer, with suspenders. To the right of Joe Fleischer, with his hand on the window and wearing hat, is William Henning. Born in 1883 in Vienna, Fleischer emigrated with his Jewish family to New York City at an early age, studying art at Cooper Union and the Art Students League.

He worked as a commercial artist and cartoonist, but an interest in mechanics led him to animation. Specifically, he was driven to find a method to produce animation more efficiently and economically, which resulted in the invention – with his brothers Dave and Joe – of the rotoscope, a device used to trace movement from live-action film. The process was demonstrated in his first film, Experiment No. 1 (1915), in which Dave posed as the clown who became known as KoKo. The Fleischer Studio turned out some of the most inventive films of the period and Fleischer made the first sound cartoons of contemporary comic heroes like Popeye. At the end of the 1920s, the studio's top artist Grim Natwick came up with a new female character: a seductive, nameless side-character who was modeled after Helen Kane, a waning Hollywood star at the time, known for her high-pitched "Boop-Oop-a-Doop". This character, who was initially the nameless girlfriend of 'Bimbo the Dog', would develop into the popular and world famous character, Betty Boop.[57]

---

[57] Lambiek's Comiclopedia

Max Fleischer's Lost 1930's Tesla vs. The Nazis cartoon

In the 1930's Max Fleischer created an anti-Nazi propaganda cartoon based on a famous scientist of the time, Dr. Nikola Tesla....In this rare, C.I.A. "banned" cartoon, Nikola Tesla battles aging SS Nazis who are sending deadly substances through the mail and who are wreaking terror on U.S. citizens while trying to create a Fourth Reich or New World Order. Tesla defeats the Nazis in the end. According to Skorzeny, Hitler was fascinated and obsessed with this particular Max Fleischer cartoon. He claimed that Hitler made a pact with all of his SS Nazi officers to do their best to create a Fourth Reich as per the Nazis in the Tesla vs. The Nazis cartoon. This cartoon video is the C.I.A. *SS* Nazi New World Order Republican "master plan" for all domestic terror attacks past, present and future.[58]

Former White House Spokesman - Ari Fleischer's "Alleged" Connection to The New World Order

Ari Fleischer's Background; Former, spokesperson, government official. Born Lawrence Ari Fleischer in Pound Ridge, New York. Fleischer became the official spokesperson for President-elect George W. Bush in December of 2000. As White House press secretary, Fleischer is in charge of handling media queries and disseminating information about the administration, its policies, and its goals to reporters. Began Life as Democrat - Fleischer, who turned forty years old the year that Bush was inaugurated, grew up in Pound Ridge, a suburban enclave near New York City. His father was an executive recruiter, while his mother worked as a computer programmer at IBM. He attended Fox Lane High School, where twice he was elected president of his class. Both Fleischer parents were committed Democrats, and admitted later that their youngest son's Republican sympathies, which emerged during his years at Middlebury College, surprised them. Fleischer became a trusted up-and-comer in Republican Party circles. He served as deputy communications director for incumbent President George Bush in his failed 1992 re-election campaign. During the Clinton years, Fleischer ran his own lobbying firm for aircraft makers and cattle ranchers, and returned to the back halls of Congress when he took a job with a Republican from Texas, Bill Archer, who chaired the House Ways and Means Committee. He quit that job when he was hired by American Red Cross president Elizabeth Dole as communications director in her campaign to become the Republican Party nominee for the White House in 2000[59]

---

[58] Otto Skorzeny

[59] The Gale Group, Inc.

Skorzeny claims that on or about 1982, a high ranking representative from the Reagan Conservative “New World Order” Nazi-Republican Party with help from The Brotherhood of Aryan Nations organized crime hate group, “reached out” to the grandson of Max Fleischer, the sole heir to his cartoon fortune, Ari Fleischer. They made Ari a “deal he couldn’t refuse.” Allegedly, Ari has sole possession of the licensing rights to his grandfather’s Tesla vs.The Nazis cartoon. He was “allegedly” bribed with five million dollars cash and a promise of life-long future employment with the Conservative “New World Order” Republican Reagan / Bush Family Regime, if he would make that particular cartoon video “disappear.” Ari “*allegedly*” made a “deal with the devil” and accepted the neo-Nazi, Republican’s stolen holocaust money as a bribe. Ari “dissed” his entire family and Jewish roots by becoming a “staunch” Conservative New World Order Republican “Yes Man”. The plot to help the neo-Nazi Conservative Republicans create a New World Order in America was moving right along with the help from their newly acquired “Token Jew “spokesman”, Ari Fleischer.

According to Skorzeny, the C.I.A.’s former SS Nazis with help from The Brotherhood of Aryan Nations organized crime hate group have been planning terrorist attacks on American citizens for more than 60 years, while the U.S. Government always “looked the other way,” disregarded evidence and pursued “fake” suspects. During the last 23 years, The Brother- hood of Aryan Nations organized crime hate group with help from former SS Nazi C.I.A. employees and “allegedly” Ari Fleischer, systemically bought or stole every existing copy of Max Fleischer’s Tesla vs. The Nazis cartoon in the United States. The C.I.A. officially banned this cartoon video like most other Tesla related subjects. Why? Because they want Tesla erased from the history books so they can continue with their plans to illegally create a New World Order in America. If a politician has a problem to take care of like a “pregnant intern” i.e.; Chandra Levy or other, he contacts Ari Fleischer. Ari is “allegedly” the official “White House Problem Solver.” He is “allegedly” the direct link to The Brotherhood of Aryan Nations organized crime hate group that is directly sponsored by the C.I.A. “*Why* did you do it Ari? For the stolen holocaust money and “temporary” fame, is that why?” As a Jew, you should know better than to ever trust a Nazi, even if he gives you 5 million dollars cash. You’ll be sorry, Ari! I, ORION predict that Ari will kill himself or be killed in a car or plane crash shortly after this book has been published! “Dead men tell no tales…” The Max Fleischer cartoon; Tesla vs. The Nazis is the “Master Plan” for all future Brotherhood of Aryan Nations organized crime, neo-Nazi , New World Order C.I.A. sponsored terrorist attacks.[60] If this video can be located by government agencies who are not neo-Nazi sympathizers, maybe the Democrats? Future domestic terror attacks can be stopped.

On December 12, 2000, P.B.S. aired a Tesla Documentary called Tesla: Master of Lightning. This was a very good documentary of the life of Nikola Tesla. During the video, a broadcast of Max Fleischer’s Tesla vs.The Nazis cartoon was shown for about 60 seconds.

---

[60] Otto Skorzeny

The next day, I went to Barnes & Noble, to buy a copy of the video. When I watched the video at home, the Max Fleischer Tesla vs. The Nazis cartoon had been censored and removed. It was replaced by a different Max Fleischer cartoon that casts Nikola Tesla as a "mad scientist" villain who is trying to take over the world with his "Euthanasia Ray" not "Death Ray." It is up to Superman □ to save the day. Once again, the lying C.I.A. New World Order Nazis have "screwed" the American public by censoring and removing the Tesla vs. The Nazis cartoon. The American public has been forbidden by the C.I.A.'s New World Order censor Nazis' to view any video or written material that portrays Nikola Tesla as the Great American, Genius Nazi hater that he was. The American people are only allowed to see Tesla portrayed as a "mad scientist" villain who is trying to take over the world. [61] I encourage all of you to contact the producers of this Tesla documentary and government officials to ask them where you find a copy of Max Fleischer's Tesla vs. The Nazis cartoon video? This video is the alleged "Master Plan" for the C.I.A. sponsored neo-Nazi future attacks in America. With your help, future attacks can be prevented.

Secret New World Order-Nazi Base in Glacier National Park, Montana

Hidden
Armed
Guard

Secret Tunnel
Entrance

C.I.A.'s New World Order Headquarters
Secret Tunnel Entrance- "Going-to-the-Sun Road"

Glacier National Park, Montana

High atop a mountain "somewhere" along Going to the Sun Road at more than 6,600' lies the C.I.A.'s New World Order secret tunnel entrance located inside of the mountain. The tunnel is more than 500 yards long and was considered to be an engineering marvel for its' time. The tunnel allegedly goes down more than two miles to a giant hollowed out portion below the mountain. This huge underground city/base connects Montana to Canada just North of the border, at the International Peace Park. This underground base is where the C.I.A. keeps its' stolen Jewish Holocaust Trillions and tests its' most secret New World Order "black projects" including Tesla's flying disk, optically invisible aircraft and other stolen Tesla technologies'.

[61] ORION "Your Man On The Inside."

Cars are secretly x-rayed while driving through

Secret Tunnel Entrance at Bend in Road...

Glacier National Park was the first and only National Park at the time to have railroad access to it. This enabled the C.I.A.'s *SS* New World Order Nazis' to transport the "rumored" Nazi-gold train of stolen holocaust loot from Montauk, NY to the secret base located inside the mountain.

Above the secret tunnel entrance there is a strange looking "out cropping" of rocks on top of the mountain that at certain times of the day looks like a "grizzly" bear, hence the name "Grizzly Peak." The C.I.A. uses this secret tunnel to illegally smuggle drugs, guns, SS Nazi war criminals and dignitaries into Canada without stopping at any border crossings.[62] Because Germany never "officially" surrendered, Canada has been hiding & supporting C.I.A. SS New World Order Nazis just like America has been. Canada also made a secret pact with Hitler's Nazi-Germany as did England, France & Italy.

"Grizzly Peak" Located High Atop Logan Pass On Going to the Sun Road

Glacier National Park, Montana.

"Grizzly Peak" – Logan Pass, Glacier National Park, Montana

Here's a photo of what "Grizzly Peak" looks like. This photo was taken at the Logan Pass Visitor's Center located at the top of Going to the Sun Road in Glacier National Park, Montana, on or about August 30, 1997. The secret tunnel entrance to the C.I.A.'s New World Order base is hidden behind a remote controlled, movable wall of rock located in the left side of the mountain on Going to the Sun Road just before "Grizzly Peak" and before "The Weeping Wall."

The tunnel entrance was cut out of the rocks with a precision laser. You will not be able to locate it nor see it with just your eyes. I suggest that you take digital photos or use digital binoculars to view and enlarge the different sections of the mountain wall until you can see the entrance. When the base is active during the summer months, there are armed camouflaged guards hiding on the mountain- side, just before the secret tunnel entrance. The New World Order keeps its' stolen Jewish Holocaust trillions of dollars and its' stolen Tesla Technology secretly hidden inside the hollowed out mountain, pictured here.

[62] Otto Skorzeny

The Aurora Spy Plane with a "Donuts-on-a-Rope" Vapor Contrail

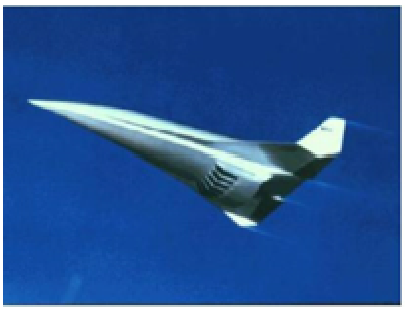

Aurora Concept

This Is The Only Photo In Existence Of A "Real" Donuts-On-A-Rope Vapor Contrail. The Photo Was Taken At Logan Pass At Glacier National Park, Montana. On Or About 8/27/97.

The Aurora Spy Plane is the successor to the SR-71 Blackbird and the A-12, which is a smaller version of the Blackbird. The U.S. Air Force officially denies that the Aurora Spy Plane exists. According to Skorzeny, the Aurora Spy Plane has the most advanced stealth technology in the world along with the B-2 Stealth Bomber, B-1 Bomber, F-117A Stealth Fighter & Tesla's stolen anti-gravity/optically invisible flying disks.

SR-71 "Blackbird"

B-1 Stealth Bomber

B-2 Stealth Bomber

F-117A Stealth Fighter

Skorzeny claims that the Aurora, SR-71, B-1 Bomber, B-2 Bomber, & F-117A can make themselves optically invisible just by pushing a button. There are no official photos of the Aurora Spy Plane, only artists' renderings of what it might look like.

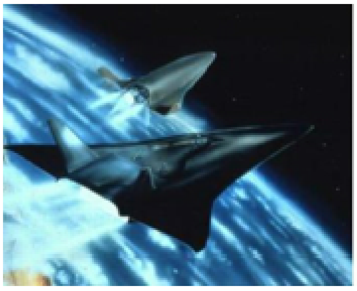

Aurora Concept Craft

Aurora Concept

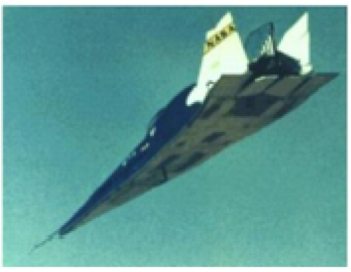

N.A.S.A. Aurora-Type Test

According to Skorzeny, the C.I.A. New World Order Nazis use stolen Tesla Technology to create artificial "anti-gravity fields" around Glacier National Park, the Blackfoot Indian reservation located next door and many other locations throughout the world. There are thousands of satellites orbiting the earth that project high intensity positively charged laser beams to certain areas on the earth. These positively charged laser beams enable the New world order Nazis to use their stolen Tesla Technology to "levitate" aircraft and flying disks. The by-product of these space based laser beams is Radon. Radon is "allegedly" an invisible gas that causes cancer and leukemia in humans and animals. If you ask the U.S. Government what Radon is, you will not get a straight answer! The Native Americans on the Blackfoot Reservation have suffered from extremely high rates of cancer and leukemia since the 1950's.

The U.S. Government says that nothing is wrong and there is no reason to be concerned. Skorzeny claims that the SR-71 Blackbird, B-2 Stealth Bomber planes and anti-gravity flying disks are constantly "hovering" just below 200 feet in the skies above Glacier National Park and the Blackfoot Indian Reservation. Did you ever wonder why commercial flights are forbidden to fly below 200' in Glacier National Park and why no one is allowed to bring firearms into the park to protect themselves, even though there are killer grizzly bears there? Now you know why.

Skorzeny claims that there are many more secret C.I.A. New World Order Nazi bases at other National Parks around the country, including the Grand Canyon. These planes are "optically invisible" and make no sound at all. The SR-71 et al.. are periodically brought in to the secret underground hangers located in the hollowed out mountain below Grizzly Peak on Going to the Sun Road. These "levitating" airplanes are slowly lowered "into" the waters of Lake McDonald in Glacier National Park. The planes are capable of traveling underwater like submarines for short distances. Once the planes are submerged in Lake Mc Donald, they travel to the underground/ underwater hangers inside the hollowed-out mountain above. Once inside the underground hangers the planes are serviced.

There is a giant size elevator inside the mountain that brings the planes up to a full size hidden runway inside the mountain. During the night, when Going to the Sun Road is closed, a large, camouflaged section of the mountain is briefly opened for aircraft to fly out from. Once the plane has left the mountain base, the secret runway mountain exit is closed. The U.S. Government claims that SR-71 Blackbirds in hangers are wet because they expand and shrink while flying, thus causing condensation to build up. That explanation is total Bull Crap. The SR-71's are wet because they have been lowered through the waters of Lake McDonald or other lakes around the U.S., to the secret underwater / underground base located inside of the hollowed-out mountain. Also, the Blackbird et al..stealth planes spray mists of water on themselves while flying to help the electronic devices in its outer surfaces create the illusion of optical invisibility. Water is also used by these planes to create white colored, artificial water vapor clouds around the plane to help disguise it. They are like flying "ozone-generators."

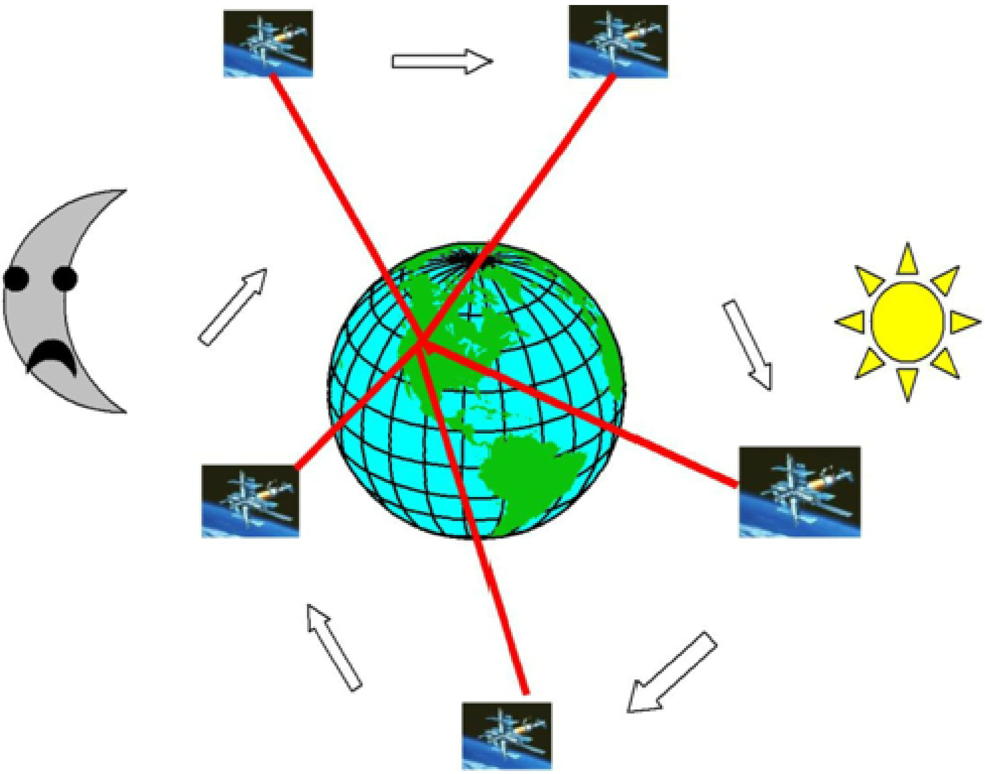

There are thousands of satellites orbiting the earth that project high intensity positively charged laser beams to certain areas on the earth. These positively charged laser beams enable the New World Order Nazis/C.I.A. to use their stolen Tesla Technology to “levitate” aircraft and flying disks. These space based high-powered lasers are connected to the U.S.A.F.’s H.A.A.R.P. weather manipulating, & mind control machine located in Alaska. These lasers simultaneously aim their beams to a central “spot” on earth. That “spot” will then experience severe droughts, hurricanes, tornados or earthquakes. Spontaneous Human Combustion or

“SHC” occurs when these lasers are pointed directly at human beings.

HAARP (**H**igh frequency **A**ctive **A**uroral **R**esearch **P**rogram) is a major Arctic facility for upper atmospheric and solar-terrestrial research. HAARP was built on a Dept. of Defense -owned site near Gakona, Alaska. Principal instruments include a high power, high-frequency (HF) phased array radio transmitter (known as the Ionospheric Research Instrument, or IRI), used to stimulate small, well-defined volumes of ionosphere, and an ultra-high frequency (UHF) incoherent scatter radar (ISR), used to measure electron densities, electron and ion temperatures, and Doppler velocities in the stimulated region and in the natural ionosphere. To further the scientific capabilities and usefulness of the IRI and ISR, HAARP is supporting the design and installation of the latest in modern geophysical research instruments, including an HF ionosonde, ELF and VLF receivers, magnetometers, riometers, a LIDAR (Light Detection And Ranging) and optical and infrared spectrometers and cameras which will be used to observe the complex natural variations of Alaska's ionosphere as well as to detect artificial effects produced by the IRI.[63] Tesla had several patents on H.A.A.R.P. Technology from 1901. In 1983, Nazi-sympathetic, New World Order Reagan appointed U.S. Patent Examiners were bribed. They illegally overlooked & disregarded Tesla's prior patents' & issued a "new" patent to the Eastman Corp. for the exact same H.A.A.R.P. Technology that Tesla had already patented years before! The "Bush Family" New World Order is in control of America & must be stopped from destroying it.

Donuts-On-A-Rope Vapor Contrail

"Aurora Author, Bill Sweetman wishes he had real photos like these!"

Donuts-On-A-Rope-Vapor Contrail {Actual Photo}

{Actual Photo}

Tesla's Stolen Anti-Gravity Flying Disk With Its Electronic Stealth "Cloaking" Technology Enabled. Located at the far right end of the donuts-on-a-rope-contrail.

---

[63] Office of Public Affairs Air Force Research Laboratory

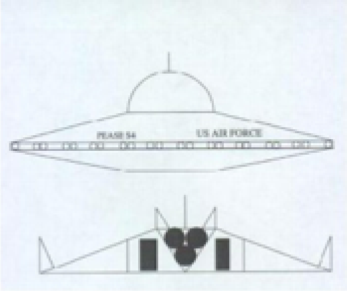

Rear View

ORION's Conception of Tesla's Stolen Flying Disk From Photo Above.

Tesla's Stolen Anti-Gravity, Flying Disk Technology is "Man-Made".... Not Extra-Terrestrial!

The Aurora Spy Plane

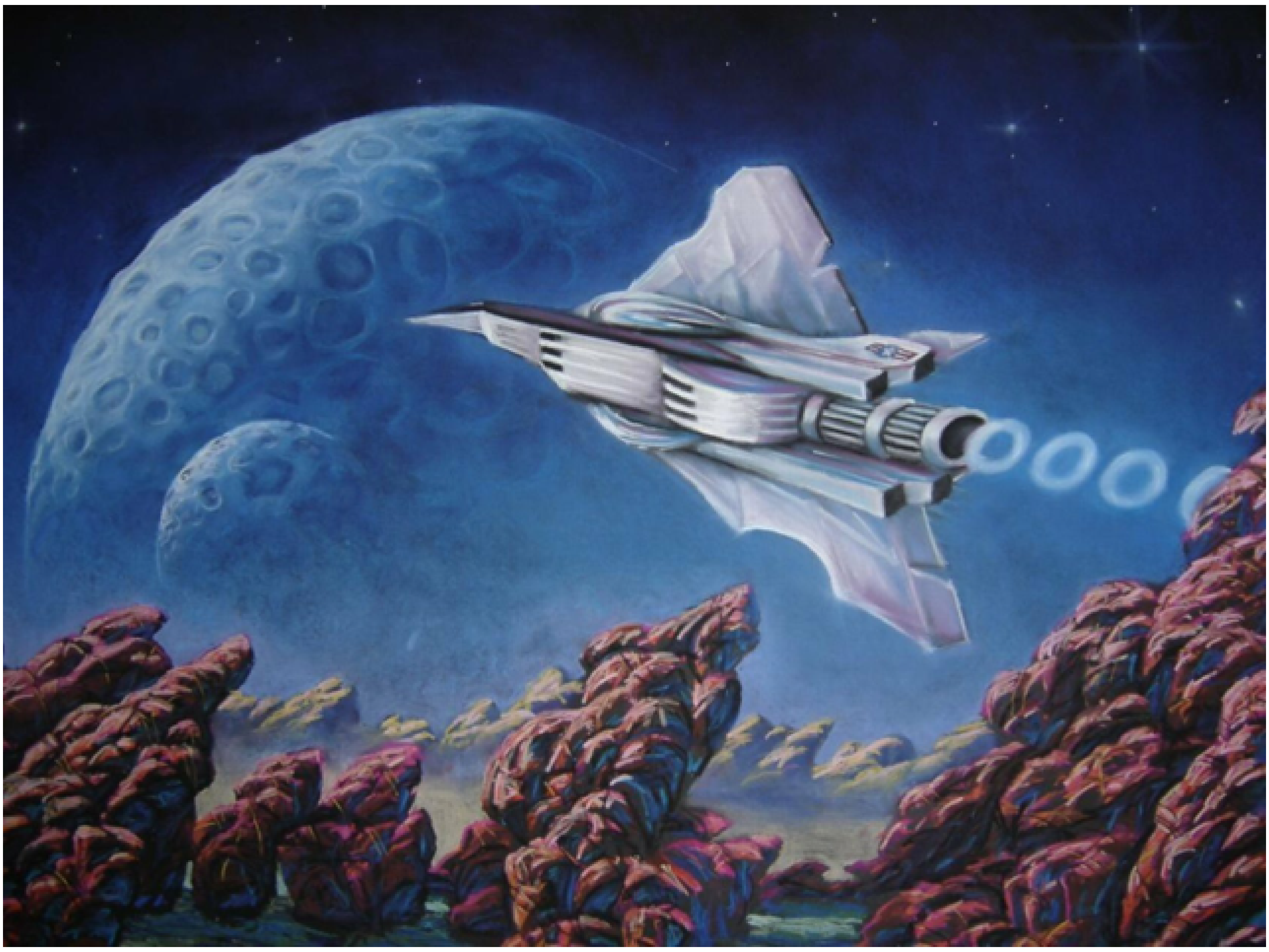

The photo below is the Aurora Spy Plane that is flying “optically invisible” located at the far left end of the donuts-on-a-rope-contrail. I changed the image by removing the blue & red tones, leaving a green infrared or thermal image of the delta-shaped craft. The Aurora is powered by a pulse detonation wave engine and four to six jet engines. When the pulse detonation wave engine is turned on, at about Mach 1.5 it acts like a giant supercharger that propels the craft to speeds of over Mach 6+ enabling the craft to leave the earth’s atmosphere to deliver nuclear bombs or other weapons of mass destruction to any point on the earth in only a few hours.

The C.I.A. uses the Aurora Spy Plane and other optically invisible aircraft to illegally spray toxic chemicals, deadly germs, the flu & other harmful viruses on its’ American Citizens’ without their consent or knowledge. When the deadly germs are sprayed from the craft, a “Chemtrail” or Chemical Vapor Trail is left in the sky behind the craft that falls to the ground below sickening or killing everything in its’ path! The C.I.A. causes annual flu epidemics around the world so its Nazi owned pharmaceutical companies can make billions of dollars of profit each year at your expense. The C.I.A. must be stopped and held accountable for its’ illegal activities! The C.I.A. is a “cult of Nazis that took over America from within.

The photo below is the only photo of the Aurora Spy Plane in existence. When you first look at the photo the Aurora is not visible to the naked eye. However, if you change the color in the photo to all green to show its’ thermal image, you can see distinct lights that form a delta shape with an orange-red glowing exhaust that branches in two, behind the craft.

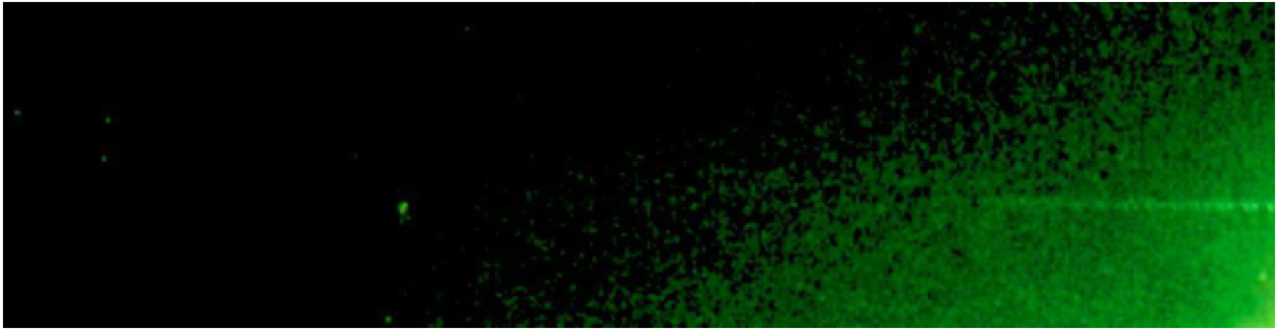

The Aurora Spy Plane’s Thermal Image {Actual Photo}

This Is The Only Photo In Existence Of The Aurora Spy Plane In Action!

Enlarged Photo of The Aurora Spy Plane From Above

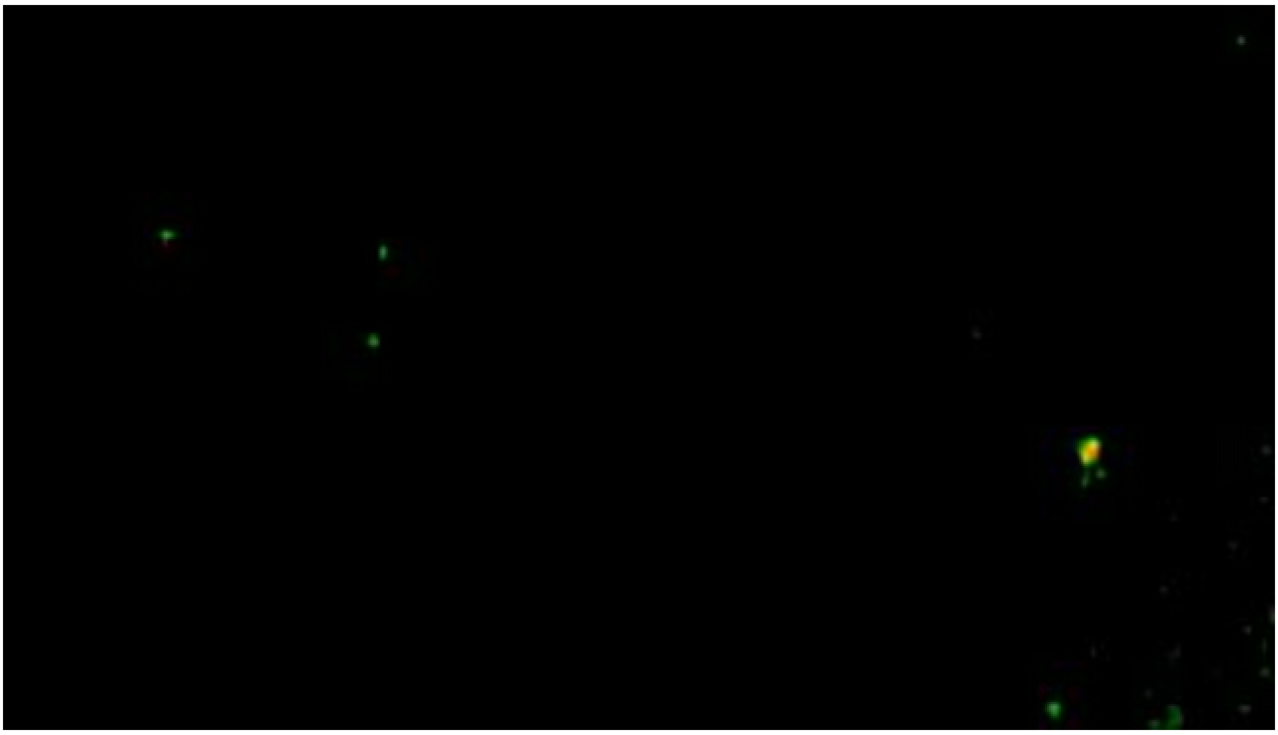

Aurora Spy Plane's Thermal Image at the far left of the donuts-on-a-rope contrail

{Actual Photo}

This is the "only" photo in existence of the Mach 6+ "Delta-Shaped" Aurora Spy Plane leaving a donuts-on-a-rope-vapor contrail. This photo evidences that the Aurora and other Aurora-type craft do exist despite the denials from our Nazi – New World Order Republican Government.

Famous Non-Copyrighted U.F.O. Photos

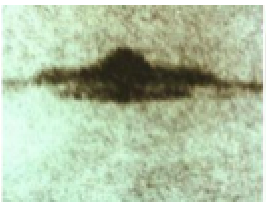
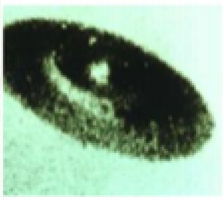

Flying Disk Flying Disk Flying Disk U.F.O.{B-2 Bomber} Flying Disk
Disk or Flying Hat?

Artificial Cloud-Shaped UFO Hovering Above Lake McDonald

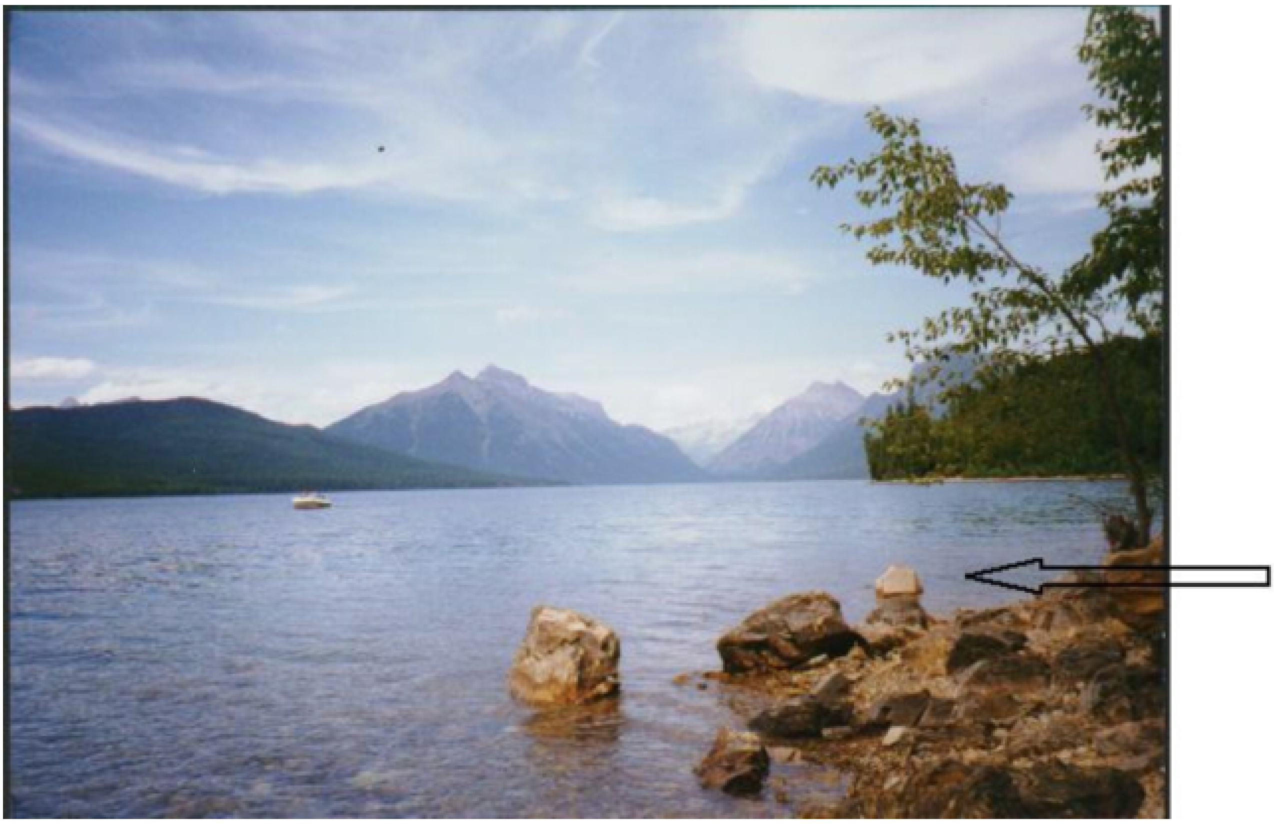

C.I.A
Boat

The Flat-
Square
“Anomalous”
Rock Is
Really A
Hidden Flat
Panel Radar

Artificial Cloud-Shaped UFO Hovering Silently Over Lake McDonald.
On or about August 27, 1997 Glacier National Park, Montana.
Actual Photo.

Nikola Tesla invented anti-gravity, optically invisible, free energy flying disks and other “strange” looking aircraft. In 1943, Hitler’s Nazis’ George H.W. Bush, Otto Skorzeny and Reinhardt Gehlen murdered Tesla and stole his plans for these wonderful inventions. Hitler with help from Prescott & George H.W. Bush made a secret illegal pact to bring the entire Nazi Third Reich to America. The Nazis and stolen Tesla Technology are kept in secret underground bases around the United States and Canada, France, South America, England, and Italy. This top-secret technology is tested periodically in Glacier National Park, Montana. At most other times of the year, there is at least 20-40 feet of snow covering the secret entrance to the hidden base located inside the mountain on Going to the sun road. The C.I.A.’s stolen Tesla aircraft are capable of appearing optically invisible. Some of the aircrafts have flat high definition plasma television screens surrounding the entire craft. They are able to project images on the outside of their craft to match its surroundings’, like a chameleon does. They are like flying “ozone generators”. They have the ability to create white, artificial water vapor clouds around the craft to help disguise and hide it.

C.I.A. New World Order Optically Invisible, Anti-Gravity Stealth Plane In Action!

The pilot is behind the dark, rectangular winds hield. The plane is facing downward.

Electronically Camouflaged, Anti-Gravity Stealth Plane “Blending” In With Its’ Background.

{Actual Photo}

Glacier National Park, Montana. Photo Taken or About August 27,1997

“This is the only photo in existence that shows an anti-gravity, optically invisible stealth plane in action!”“

Just Because You Can’t See Something, Doesn’t Mean It’s Not There!”[64]

Conclusion

The C.I.A. and all other branches of the American Government have been lying to the American Public and to the rest of the world since 1945 about who really won WWII. The U.S. Government has also lied about the whereabouts and identities of murderous, evil SS Nazi assholes that are still alive. Because Germany never surrendered to America in 1945, the C.I.A. is really the name of Hitler's Third Reich of Nazis' in America. Basically, the C.I.A. is "full of crap"! It is nothing more than a cult of Nazis that took over America in 1945 & have been in power ever since, without the American Public suspecting a thing! Before the end of WWII, Hitler and Prescott Bush allegedly used their wealth and influence to bring SS Nazi Gestapo agents to the United States to act as a "go-between" to negotiate a secret pact to fake Germany's surrender. These SS Nazi Gestapo agents with help from high-ranking U.S. Government officials created a new branch of "American" government called the O.S.S.

The O.S.S. really stood for the "*Other SS Gestapo*" or "*Otto Skorzeny's Soldiers*'" It did not stand for "Operation of Strategic Services. It was headed by Frank Wisner, George Herbert Walker Bush, Otto Skorzeny and "Wild" Bill Donovan. Donovan had been "coerced" by the Nazis to go along with their plan. Bush Sr.'s purpose for creating the O.S.S. was to create a "secret" fake surrender treaty that would bring all of the Third Reich's Nazis to America after WW II to "allegedly" help fight the Russians. Not just the rocket scientists. On January 6, 1943 SS Nazi's, Otto Skorzeny & Reinhardt Gehlen murdered Dr. Nikola Tesla and stole his greatest inventions. With Prescott Bush & Hitler's help thousands of Nazis were illegally brought to the United States of America. The U.S. Government was bribed with trillions of dollars of stolen Jewish Holocaust money and with stolen Tesla Technology, like anti-gravity flying disks, invisibility technology, a "Death Ray", earthquake & weather modification machines. Why else would the U.S. Government illegally smuggle the Nazis who murdered Tesla into the U.S. and continue to protect them? The entire SS Nazi-Gestapo merged with the United States' O.S.S. to form the C.I.A. The C.I.A.'s only purpose for being created was to protect its' beloved Nazis', to hide Tesla Technology from American Citizens', and to help its Nazis' create a Fourth Reich in America. Ever since, the end of WWII, the C.I.A.'s New World Order Nazis' have been working hard to create a New World Order in America. Can you name one "good" thing the C.I. A. has ever done for America? No.

If we can eradicate the C.I.A.'s New World Order *SS* Nazi agents from our U.S. Government that have been undermining our American way of life, maybe we can help prevent The Fourth Reich - New World Order from being created. It has already begun. It's aging *SS* Nazis that sent the deadly anthrax through the mail in 2001. It's the same New World Order *SS* Nazi C.I.A. employees that the C.I.A. claims are dead. The U.S. Government knows that the "domestic" New World Order neo-Nazi Brotherhood of Aryan Nations "organized crime" hate group sent the anthrax through the mail but they refuse to do anything about it. The C.I.A.'s New World Order SS Nazis' planned the anthrax attacks with help from the "domestically" based Brotherhood of Aryan Nation's "organized crime" hate group. The U.S. Government intentionally ignored evidence that would convict this terrorist hate group and deliberately focused their "alleged" investigation on phony "Middle Eastern" "Al Qaeda" terrorists that did not exist. The U.S. Government planned a "phony" war against Iraq to steal its' oil, and divert the Nation's attention from the horrible "depression-like" economy that exists today. At the same time the Republican New World Order Bush regime was busy passing anti-freedom, Nazi -idealistic, Anti-American laws like The Patriot Act , The Homeland Security Act and many others.[65]

According to Skorzeny the head of the former ODESSA, the high ranking *SS* Nazis bribed the O.S.S. then the C.I.A. and most other U.S. Government Agencies with billions of dollars stolen from the Jews during the Holocaust and with stolen Tesla Technology. The most infamous *SS* Nazis like Hitler, Mengele, Bormann, Bush, Skorzeny, Gehlen and August Hirt were immediately hired directly by the C.I.A. and have been protected by the C.I.A. ever since! These *illegal SS* Nazi C.I.A. employees' used their stolen loot to fake their deaths, establish new American identities, and live rich happy lives as millionaires who do not have to pay taxes nor parking tickets. They have diplomatic immunity. The "C.I.A.'s New World Order *SS* Nazis" continue to funnel their stolen loot into pro-life, anti-gun, Nazi-idealistic, conservative, anti-freedom, Republican campaigns like Bush Jr's.

The *SS* Nazis also use their stolen loot to help fund neo-Nazi fundamentalist, conservative, right-wing, Christian Republican, anti-freedom groups like "Operation Rescue," "The Brotherhood of Aryan Nations hate group," the KKK and Republican president appointed Nazi-idealistic, Supreme Court Justices like Scalia, Thomas and Suter. The same anti-freedom Supreme Court Justices who unjustly and illegally refused Gore's request for a re-count. That was a sad day for American Democracy. Many of the CIA's *SS* New World Order Nazis are consultants for Government Affiliated Companies such as the S.A.I.C. {Science Application International Corporations}. S.A.I.C. is really "C.I.A.'S. spelled backward.[66]

Most of the major corporations in the world that accidentally discovered "*accounting irregularities*" that "*mistakenly*" caused C.E.O.s to make millions of dollars while workers and shareholders lost millions of dollars, all had the C.I.A.'s *SS* New World Order Nazis as consultants. Companies such as W.R. Grace Co., Enron, World Com, Tyco, all S.A.I.C companies like NASA, Telcordia Technologies, Lucent Technology, every airline company, Bayer, Merck, American Home Products and most other major pharmaceutical companies. The C.I.A.'s New World Order *SS* Nazis have been conspiring with the CEO's of the largest comp-anies in the world to create the horrible "depression-like" economy we have today.

Is it any wonder? This "horrible" economy of ours did not just "happen," it was carefully planned. It's a 60 year old Nazi–idealistic, New World Order, Conservative Republican plan to create a Fourth Reich or New World Order in America. The C.I.A.'s SS New World Order Nazis "peddled" its' New World Order Philosophy "Bull Shit" to the C.E.O.'s of major corporations by disguising it as a "New European Quality Standard" to increase worker productivity, called ISO 2000, ISO 9000, ISO 9001, and ISO 9002. During the 1980's it was called ISO 8000. During the 1970's it was called ISO 7000, during the 1960's it was called ISO 6000 etc...

---

[65] ORION "Your Man On The Inside."

[66] Otto Skorzeny

This New World Order "Master Plan" systematically made C.E.O.'s multi-millionaires by teaching them how to loot and bankrupt their own corporations and their employees while staying out of jail. ISO 9000 standards provide CEOs with the "Master List" of New World Order Nazis who are looking for jobs... your job! If you have a Jewish, African-American or Native American sounding last name, you were probably the first ones to be fired during the mass layoffs. You were unjustly fired so a less paid, less skilled, New World Order Republican, Nazi sympathizer could have your job. If you are Jewish, African-American, or Native American you probably have not been able to obtain a good, decent "white-collar" job since you were separated from your job during the mass layoffs of 2000-2003. The ISO 9000 "New World Order" Nazi-sympathetic C.E.O.'s, most of whom have Smith, Wilson or Patel for a last name have also conspired to de-value the worth of American white-collar professional computer workers. They fired them, most without warning, with no separation allowance.

Most had earned pensions that were now cancelled. These unfortunate American workers were replaced with foreign workers from Pakistan, India, Iraq, Iran, Afghanistan, Saudi Arabia, Russia, China, Vietnam, Korea and other "Communist" third world countries. Most of the foreign computer workers do not speak English, are less skilled, "possible terrorists" and are paid much less than the poor Americans who used to have those same jobs. The Republican's New World Order *SS* Nazis' "ordered" the ISO 9000 compliant C.E.O.s to initiate mass layoffs beginning in the year 2000 and they are not finished laying off yet. After the "mass layoffs," the C.E.O.s made millions of dollars due to their "smaller payroll expenses," while laid-off workers are unable to feed their families or find "decent" jobs that pay similar amounts of money as their old jobs.

Unemployment benefits are a joke! They pay former skilled workers poverty wages that are not enough to support a family on. The New World Order Republicans "stalled" a Bill to extend unemployment benefits while at the same time passing a Bill to increase their own salaries and give tax breaks to their rich corporate friends. If you check any state's newspaper classified ads there are very few jobs for "white collar" professionals, only low paying service industry jobs.

These same ISO 9000 New World Order following companies have conspired with each other to pay highly skilled computer workers and other white collar professionals much less money than they made before so that their C.E.O.s can make more money.

It is a Nazi-New World Order Republican plan to eliminate the "middle class" society in America. When the middle class has been eliminated, there will only be the "poor" and the "rich." The New World Order's rich "WASP" "ruling" class, desperately want more people to "serve" them. The "poor" are much easier to rule and control than the "middle-class." That is why the white-collar computer jobs have all but disappeared. Those jobs will not return unless the New World Order Nazi Republican Bush regime is defeated in the next election. If you value your "good" job, freedom and the survival of democracy in America, you must vote against the Nazi sympathetic New World Order Republican Regime in the next election.

Today's Republican Party is not "your father's" Republican Party. It has been corrupted by New World Order Nazi-idealistic, Jew & Black hating infiltrators posing as Religious Conservatives who want to take away your freedom. Companies that "adhere" to the ISO 9000 "*New European Quality Standard*" have conspired with the C.I.A.'s *SS* New World Order Nazis to create the horrible "depression-like" economy we have today. [67] Is it any wonder?

Because these *SS* Nazi C.I.A. New World Order agents bribed the right government officials including U.S. presidents for so many years, with billions of stolen Jewish Holocaust money, they are now listed as "officially" dead according to the U.S. Government. They are free to roam around the country conducted random acts of C.I.A. New World Order *SS* Nazi sponsored terrorism, like hijacking jet planes & crashing them into buildings, mailing anthrax, voter intimidation and election rigging. Just like their "good ole' days" in Nazi Germany. The C.I.A.'s
SS Nazis are like phantoms. They have been planning and working very hard for 60 years to create a Fourth Reich - New World Order in America. The free world as we know it will cease to exist if a New World Order is created. It MUST be stopped at all cost! Vote against The New World Order in the next election! If we can eradicate the New World Order Nazi/C.I.A. menace from our U.S. Government that has been undermining our American way of life, maybe we can help prevent The Fourth Reich - New World Order from being created. It has already begun.
Can you name one "good" thing the C.I.A. has ever done for America?

Patriotically Yours,

ORION
"NEVER AGAIN!"

---

[67] ORION "Your Man On The Inside."

List of Sources

1. Otto Skorzeny – The legendary *SS* Nazi commando & life-long C.I.A. Employee.
2. U.S. National Archives, Washington D.C.
3. Trading With the Enemy, by Charles Higham 1983.
4. “Verbal” a character from the motion picture, “The Usual Suspects.”
5. Was Paul Wellstone Murdered? By Michael I. Niman, AlterNet October 28, 2002.
7. The History of W.R. Grace & Co. The Seattle Post Intelligencer November 18, 1999.
8. CIA Admits Long Relationship With WWII *SS* Nazi Gen. Reinhardt Gehlen. By Maria Alvarez - The New York Post, 9-24-00
9. CIA Declassifies Its Records On Dealings With Ex-Nazis. Documents May Give Clues About Obstacles in Hunt for War Criminals. *By* George Lardner Jr. Washington Post Staff Writer, Sunday, March 18, 2001; Page A04.
10. http://www.cnn.com/SPECIALS/cold.war/kbank/profiles/allen.dulles/ & http://emperors clothes.com/articles/randy/swas1.htm
11. Anthrax Attacks' “Work of Neo-Nazis ” War on Terrorism: Observer Special By Ed Vulliamy in New York Sunday October 28, 2001 The Observer
12. Based on "The New Encyclopedia Britannica", 15th edition, "The McGraw-Hill Encyclopedia of World Biography"
13. The U.S. Dept. of The Navy
14. George Carlin – “Genius” Stand-up comedian.
15. The Gale Group, Inc.
16. Lambiek’s Comiclopedia.
17. Tesla & “alleged” Nazi Photos courtesy of Otto Skorzeny’s “private collection.”
18. Nixon Presidential Materials Project at the National Archives at College Park
19. All non-copyrighted aircraft photos and artwork were obtained from Broderbund’s

Shareware Clip Art.

20. Office of Public Affairs Air Force Research Laboratory.
21. ’88 New York Post:“*Real*” American WWII Hero Pilot:Chester Mierzejewski’s Comments’ on George H.W. Bush…
22. The Kennedy Wit, By Bill Adler.
23. The Search For Lee Harvey Oswald, By Robert J. Groden.

THE *ZODIAC* KILLER IS STILL ALIVE & THE U.S. GOVERNMENT IS PROTECTING HIM!

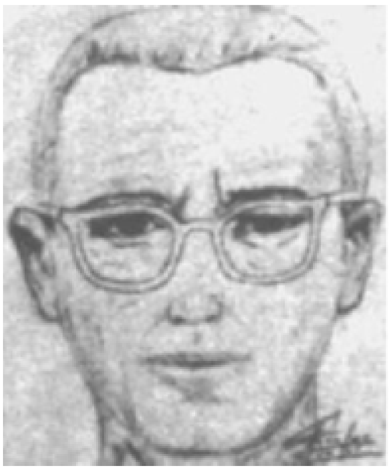

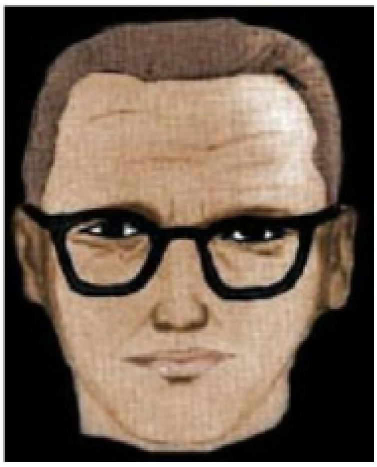

ZODIAC SKETCH DR. MENGELE 1974 ZODIAC SKETCH

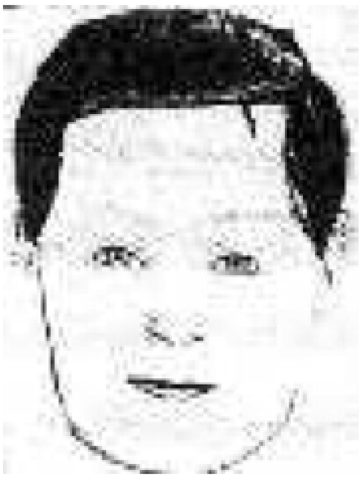

ZODIAC DR. MENGELE 1979. MENGELE IN HIS ZODIAC ROBE 2001

MENGELE 1945	MENGELE 2001 ©

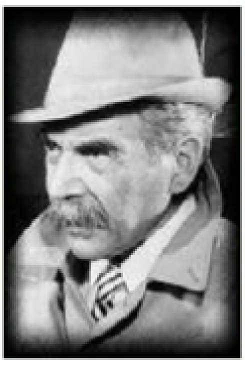

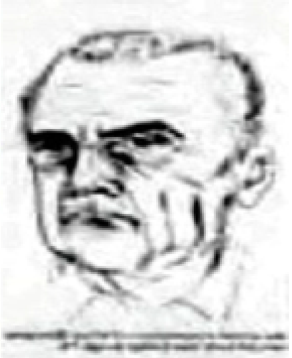

MENGELE 1961   MENGELE 1961   MENGELE 1979   MENGELE 2001
MENGELE SKETCH

"DISGUISED" WITH MAKE-UP
TO LOOK OLDER

WWW.THEBUSHCONNECTION.COM

erik@thebushconnection.com

The C.I.A. Lied! Dr. Josef Mengele aka: The Zodiac Killer / The "Real" Boston Strangler & 2001 Anthrax Mailer Killer Is Still Alive! Your Taxes Are Paying The Corrupt U.S. Justice Dept. (O.S.I.) & F.B.I. To Protect Him! Can you name one "good" thing the C.I.A. has ever done for America?

Thank you for reading The Bush Connection ebook. I hope you enjoyed it. Check out my latest books: The Pyramids of Oak Island & Sabotage: The True Story of Flight 19.

Regards,

Erik ORION

"Never Again!"

STALIN'S BRITISH TRAINING

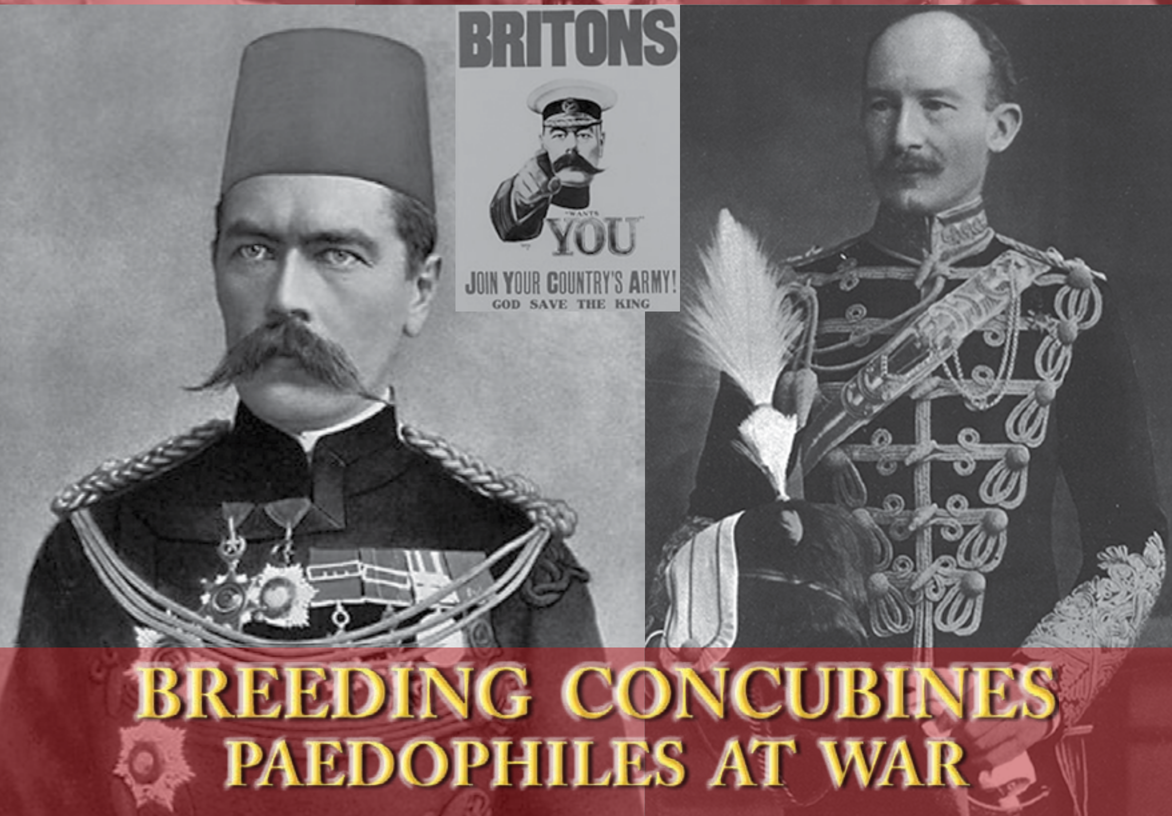
BRITONS
WANTS
YOU
JOIN YOUR COUNTRY'S ARMY!
GOD SAVE THE KING

BREEDING CONCUBINES
PAEDOPHILES AT WAR

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

STALIN'S BRITISH TRAINING

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Greg Hallett's most infamous acts include interviewing the KGB in Moscow a month after the Berlin Wall came down while being noted as a young Stalin lookalike. In 2002 he waltzed past 100 Secret Service agents at the Auckland Hilton and into President Bill Clinton's speech. Two months later he gave a speech in the Cook Islands outing Prime Minister Helen Clark as a KGB agent. This resulted in a poisoning and a bundle of police charges which he overturned in the High Court.

> "I turned up in shorts and a teeshirt with no notes and won the case in five minutes. As it turned out, the police officer was a twice-convicted criminal . . . so things are not as they seem."

Mr Hallett challenges known history by solving historical crimes in infinite detail. His most famous book *Hitler Was A British Agent* has in-depth historians agreeing with him.

Books by Greg Hallett

ARE YOU MY FATHER?
The Family Court and Other Experiments 2002

HITLER WAS A BRITISH AGENT 2005, 2006

HOW TO TAKE OVER THE WORLD
A Right Royal Con 2007, 2008, 2009

STALIN'S BRITISH TRAINING
Breeding Concubines Paedophiles At War 2007, 2008, 2010

GIFTING THE UNITED NATIONS TO STALIN 2007, 2008, 2009

NEW ZEALAND
A Blackmailer's Guide 2007, 2008

The Sex Collectors – How the World is Run on Shame – series

THE SEX COLLECTORS– STITCH-UPS 2009

THE SEX COLLECTORS – MURDERS 2010

THE SEX COLLECTORS – HEROIN TICKET 2010

Further details

Purchases
www.greghallett.com

Orders and distribution
FNZ Inc.
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland, New Zealand

Contact the author
greg@greghallett.com

Front cover: Stalin and Churchill;
Shelagh Cornwallis-West, Daisy Warwick, Daisy Cornwallis-West;
Lord Kitchener (left) and Lord Baden-Powell (right).
Rear cover: Lillie Langtry and Sarah Bernhardt;
Churchill and Stalin.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

STALIN'S BRITISH TRAINING

BREEDING CONCUBINES
PAEDOPHILES AT WAR

GREG HALLETT
&
SPYMASTER

FNZ Inc.
LONDON AUCKLAND FRANKFURT TORONTO

DEDICATION

To the media
who have consistently shown us what crap is.

Published by **FNZ Inc.**
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland, New Zealand
First Edition March 2007
Second Edition September 2007
Third Edition March 2008
www.greghallett.com

ISBN 978-0-473-12073-3
© Greg Hallett 2007, 2008, 2010

The images in this book are used under fair use. They are historically significant photos of famous individuals. They are a lower resolution than the originals and any copies will be of inferior quality. The photos are only used for informational purposes and their inclusion adds significantly to the knowledge gained as it depicts the subject with historical accuracy. Incorporating restricted material is fair use under United States copyright law and any challenges will be met with commercial and liberal parody.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

INTRODUCTION

After the first edition of this book, historian Henry Makow PhD wrote:
"I understand you place Stalin in England from 1907–11 getting training. Robert Service has him attend a conference in 1907 for a few days and then return to Russia. He has him arrested, deported to Siberia and escaping from there during this period. Do you still assert he spent years in England? Is there any corroboration?

"I find your general paradigm credible but we need to support the factual assertions.

"Best wishes,

"Henry."

The Spymaster replied:
"The British had this business of calling houses 'Siberia'. They called houses Russian names, German names and French names. These were all in London for everybody to see. It was not uncommon for houses to have three or four barrel names, like 'The White House' in English, French and German.

"It was a big fad of Edwardian England to call houses after things.

"At this time there was a prominent house in Wimbledon called 'Lorelei'. It was assumed at the time that it was broken up into flats and apartments for prominenti, but it was a house of ill repute that covered for the SIS.

"The area Siberia contained Gulags as well as towns where the police guards lived cheek by jowl with the revolutionaries.

"There were other sorts of surveillance where one officer was meant to have conversations with several revolutionaries within a day and monitor who they were talking to. Often they would sublet this job to other political prisoners who were supposedly on their side . . . and the whole thing got contaminated.

"Stalin had a habit of intimidating officials and police. He would talk about them in a deprecatory manner and say, 'If only the superiors knew what this little piece of trash was up to. Do you think they would take an interest?'

"Stalin would also talk about dealing with prominenti in other countries in detail. He would make comments like 'I wonder if I should write to my English friends about you?'

"Stalin could send mail out of Siberia, whereas many other prisoners couldn't. Nobody knew whether what he sent out was censored or not.

"There was also Stalin's time in Tavistock, which is rarely if ever recorded.

"We were just lucky to locate Robert Muldoon's London Tavistock training (1945–47), after which he became the Prime Minister of New Zealand (1975–84) for nine years and left the country bankrupt."

Greg Hallett replied:

"Such Tavistock people are given every advantage and it would be another book all together, establishing exactly where Stalin was, as opposed to where he was recorded. All we really know is that Stalin was being trained to be the head of a criminal state and that training did not occur in one location.

"Stalin had to prove that he could run a crime state by being a ruthless criminal and he did this training with British, Freemasonry and Jewish support, and backing. This occurred in England, France and Switzerland, as well as other places across Europe.

"Stalin was a Martinist Freemason and he was given every psychological training, including an initiation from Gurdjieff.

"In Tavistock, Stalin learnt to survive on half an hour's sleep every night. The Tavistock training was then around 9½ months – the time of a human gestation.

"The German Admiral Doenitz was trained by the British in this way and was committed to a Manchester mental hospital for 9½ months at the end of WWI. Now the Tavistock training is a lot quicker, and from what I have experienced, it can be done in ten hours, plus the ongoing follow ups, contacts and testing situations."

The British agent Doenitz was repeatedly promoted until he became Commander-in-Chief of the Navy, and then replaced Hitler and Goebbels as President, Head of State, Head of Government and Chancellor of Germany – another double agent British mental patient!

The double agent activity was everywhere. The purpose was not to train one for a particular country, but for a certain war. The more training, the bigger the war, the more devastating, and the longer it lasted.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

When the German Navy changed from the Enigma code to M4, Doenitz contacted his submarines up to 70 times per day. This helped compromise the codes and the British were able to locate and attack German submarines and U-boats, most of them completely unprepared and unprotected.

Stalin was trained for the Bolshevik Revolution and the Jewish takeover of Russia. He was also trained to lead Russia into WWII and the Cold War.

Stalin's training in Britain included the Tavistock Freud Hilton, robberies, a siege, and a general bonding exercise with his second cousin, Home Secretary – Winston Churchill.

To the Illuminati, there are no enemies in war, only allies with similar training. To the Illuminati, the idea is not to win the war, but to sell the war to as many people for as long as possible. This includes selling the war for generations afterwards – hence all the books and none of the conclusions.

The philosophy of the Bolshevik Revolution was guided by the German-Jewish philosopher Karl Marx, who had spent his time living and training in London.

Notable revolutionaries who trained in London included Stalin (1903, 1907, 1910–11); Lenin (April 1902–May 1903, August 1903, April–May 1905, 12–25 May 1907, May 1908, November 1911); and Trotsky (1905, 12–25 May 1907).

It would appear that Britain was doing everything it could to train foreign revolutionaries and then went about supporting those revolutions. It would be hard for Britain to deny that it had its hand in virtually every revolution of the 20th century, and was thus the centre of Illuminati processing.

Greg Hallett
30 June 2007

Ideology is for Wankers.
The only thing that counts is the Agenda.

You have never lived in History.
You have only ever lived in the Con.

The definition of ‘Respectable’ is “paedophile minder”.

Repectable People are Pirates for Disorder.

The ultimate achievement of Paedophiles is War.

The ultimate achievement of the Occult is War.

The ultimate achievement of Banks is War.

The ultimate achievement of Commoners is
Peace, Freedom and Culture.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March

CONTENTS

1. **Breeding Concubines** **1**
King Edward VII sires Winston Churchill

2. **Stalin’s British Training** **45**
The Sidney Street Siege

3. **Jack the Ripper** **127**
and Sir Melville Macnaghten

4. **Elevated Paedophiles** **153**
Lord Kitchener and Lord Baden-Powell

5. **Occult Royalty** **189**
Gurdjieff teaches Stalin and Hitler

Bibliography **203**

Index **207**

8 March 2007

Her Majesty
Queen Elizabeth II
Buckingham Palace
London SW1A 1AA
England

Dear Your Majesty The Queen,

It’s worse than we thought.

Official British history is bunkum. The Reverends, Bishops and Boy Scout leaders sent out to the colonies turned out to be army colonels who colonised through paedophilia, torture and arms.

The war heroes you most honoured turned out to be homosexual child-sex abusing necrophiliacs. Your supposed enemies turned out to be your agents who removed your cousins in opposing monarchies. Your prime ministers turned out to be your nephews and your bankers turned out to be your parents.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Your genealogy is illegitimate and the only consistent breeding line has been the secret society spy bankers who used you to declare war whenever they were prepared. Never has a double agent family, like your own, been so completely involved in treachery, and such expansive treachery.

From the close scrutiny of history, which is *your* history, I have come to the conclusion that the Saxe-Coburg-Gothas, Windsors and Mountbattens are illegitimate treasonous double agent families who should be exiled from anything commoners call integrity.

You are the descendant of a long line of anarchists and in the correct light of history you have pirate status.

Yours sincerely,

Greg Hallett

Breeding Concubines

King Edward VII sires Winston Churchill

Due to a series of deaths and failed marriages around her, Victoria (18) became Queen on 20 June 1837 until she died at the age of 81 on 22 January 1901. She survived four assassination attempts, one thwarted by PC William Trounce, hence the verb "trounced".

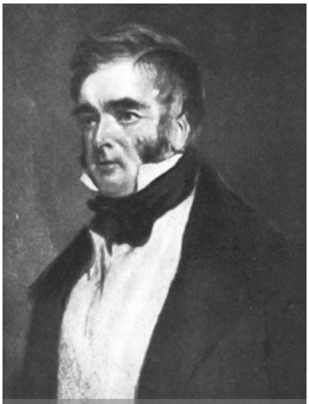
Lord Melbourne (1779–1848).

Queen Victoria's first relationship was with Lord Melbourne, an avuncular mentor 40 years her senior, whom she made Prime Minister (1834–41), but then she was always asking people to be Prime Minister, sometimes pestering them repeatedly.

When her first cousin, Francis Charles Augustus Albert Emanuel of the Saxe-Coburg-Gotha branch of the House of Wettin, became royal consort, Lord Melbourne stepped back. First cousins and both born near Coburg, Germany, Queen Victoria (24 May 1819–22 January 1901) and Albert (26 August 1819–14 December 1861) married (10 February 1840), conceived their first child 5 days later and Princess Victoria was born on 21 November 1840.[1] Over the next 17 years (1840–57) they had nine children who bore 44 grandchildren. It was a completely new royal dynasty, one in which Victoria was sick of being pregnant.

Their second child, the eldest son, Prince 'Bertie' Edward (1841–1910) married (1863) Princess Alexandra (1844–1925), the eldest daughter of King Christian IX of Denmark. They had five legitimate children between 1864 and 1869.

---

[1] Conception dates are broad. After coitus the sperm takes 2–3 days to mate with the egg. Gestation lasts 37–42 weeks (259–294 days), making the 'sex date' 261–297 days prior to birth. The average of this is 279 days. All the conception dates here are taken back to the median 'sex date' of 279 days prior with a ± range of 18 days. (Argue all you want.) To work out the 'sex date', add 86 days and take off a year then accept a range of ± 18 days. The father of the children is loosely stated here as Prince Albert and the 'sex date' was 18 January–23 February 1840, giving leeway for Victoria to have had a 'sex date' up to 23 days before marriage to her cousin Prince consort Albert.

Duke of Clarence.

Fat Mary & Mary of Teck.

'Bertie' – iconic swinger.

Their first son, Prince Albert 'Eddy' Edward Wettin, the Duke of Clarence (their surname didn't become 'Windsor' until 1917) was retarded and his tutors said "he barely knew the meaning of the word 'read'". He was a homosexual, suspected of the Jack the Ripper murders, and died aged 28 (1864–92), to the relief of the nation.

The second-oldest son, George (1865–1936) took his retarded brother's girlfriend and made her his fiancée. She was Princess Mary of Teck, daughter of 'Fat Mary' and became Queen consort Mary to King George V (1910–36).

Their father Prince Albert 'Bertie' Edward (9 November 1841–6 May 1910) became King Edward VII (1901–1910). He had been estranged from his mother Queen Victoria from the day Victoria's husband died in 1861. They never made amends.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Soon after Bertie finished his legitimate breeding (1865–69) he had a plethora of mistresses who were present at his coronation (sitting in the box behind him) and served him to his death in 1910. In horse-racing parlance this was known as "the King's loose box".

When Prince Albert 'Bertie' Edward was having his affairs (1870–1910), Princess Alexandra spent her time doing charity work in what became a marriage of convenience where there was always a third party, if not a fourth and fifth. Bertie was a dedicated overlapper and open wife-cheater, even in his own household, and at public events. This was especially so with his last mistress Mrs Keppel (1898–1910). Prince 'Bertie' Edward was the iconic swinger of his times and the Edwardian period is named after him.

Prince 'Bertie' Edward (1841–1910) was married at 22 and so were many of his mistresses. Some even saw it as their duty to the Crown to serve him sexually. His principal mistresses were Lillie Langtry (1853–1929), Daisy Warwick (1861–1938) and Alice Keppel (1869–1947) but he had many more in between.

Daisy.

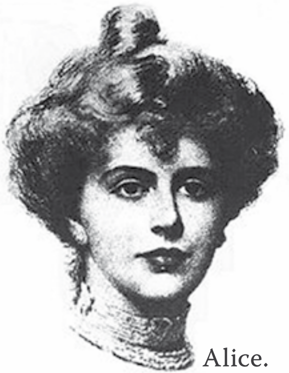

Alice.

Lillie.

Prince (Bertie) Edward got a woman pregnant in 1861 when he was twenty and this led to his father's death and delayed his wedding. That his wife, Princess Alexandra, (1844–1925) openly tolerated his affairs astounds historians even today.

Edward's affairs did place a huge strain on the Princess of Wales.

In order, his mistresses were Mary 'Patsy' Fitzpatrick from her teenage years (aged 14–18, 1870–June 1874); mother of Winston Churchill, Lady Randolph 'Jennie' Jerome Churchill (aged 19–22, 23 Aug. 1873–76); Francis Evelyn 'Daisy' Greville née Maynard/Countess of Warwick (14+, 1875–6 & 1890s–98[2]); the first pin-up star and later actress Lillie Langtry (1876–81); actress Sarah Bernhardt (1879–1890s); Mary 'Patsy' Fitzpatrick's daughter Mary Theresa Olivia 'Daisy' Cornwallis-West (aged 15–18, June 1889–

---

[2] Francis Evelyn 'Daisy Warwick' Maynard wrote *Life's Ebb and Flow*. She was to marry Bertie's haemophiliac brother Prince Leopold (1853–84) but instead married his equerry, Lord Brooke. The Prince of Wales was having sex with her when she was 14 & 15 during the time Lord Charles Beresford was his aide-de-camp.

December 1891), whose brother married Lady Jennie Jerome Churchill; the Duchess of Manchester, Lady Norrys; and Alice Keppel (1898–1910), with whom he had a daughter named Sonia Rosemary Keppel (24 May 1900–16 Aug. 1986). Sonia Keppel was the half-sister of King George V and the great-aunt of the current QEII.

No. 1: Mary 'Patsy' née Fitzpatrick Cornwallis-West, aged 14–18, 1870–June 1874. (Image from 1912.)

No. 2: Lady Randolph 'Jennie' Jerome Churchill, aged 19–22, 23 Aug. 1873–76. Mother of Winston Churchill.

No 3: Francis Evelyn 'Daisy' Greville née Maynard/Countess of Warwick, aged 14–15, 1875–6 and 1890s–98.

No. 4: Lillie Langtry, 1876–81, born Emilie Charlotte Le Breton (1853–1929).

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -

No. 5: Sarah Bernhardt, 1879–90s, born Henriette Rosine Bernard, known as 'the Divine Sarah', and 'Sarah Barnum' (1844–1923).

No. 6: Mary Theresa Olivia 'Daisy' Cornwallis-West, aged 15–18, June 1889–Dec. 1891 & daughter of first concubine Mary 'Patsy' Fitzpatrick.

No. 8: Alice Keppel (1898–1910) with daughter Sonia Rosemary Keppel (24 May 1900–16 August 1986) on the 1995 British postage stamp.

Mary 'Patsy' Fitzpatrick

'Patsy'.

Mary 'Patsy' Fitzpatrick is listed as a mistress of Prince 'Bertie' Edward from her teenage years and one of his first mistresses. She is always referred to as 'the teenage mistress Mary Patsy Fitzpatrick' and never Mary 'Patsy' Cornwallis-West. Because the date of her birth is a State Secret (under more than the 100-year rule), confusion remains as to whether she was the teenager or she was Prince 'Bertie' Edward's lover when he was a teenager.

In support of this, her birth dates are variously given as 1835, 1856 and 1858. Mary 'Patsy' Fitzpatrick's age is given as that of her husband's MP Colonel Frederick William Cornwallis-West (20 March 1835–14 July 1917) so that she would appear to be 22 when Prince 'Bertie' Edward was 16 and the 'teenager'.

A husband's birth and death dates are applied to a young wife to cover up that she, was at some point, underaged. This is not uncommon historical practice. Marriages were often part of a trade agreement, or in the case of Scotland, a daughter was kidnapped, the parents were killed, the girl grew up as a sister, and when she came of age, she married the father.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Mary Patsy's father, Reverend Frederick Fitzpatrick (b.b.[3] 1823–95) married the 19-year-old Olivia Taylour (8 Feb. 1824–4 Sept. 1916) on 10 August 1853. The good Reverend Fred Fitzpatrick (>53) also had another daughter, Edwina Virginia Joanna Fitzpatrick (b.b. 1876–4 Oct. 1919) to a second wife, who is rarely available in any genealogy researched.

Mary 'Patsy' Fitzpatrick (b.b. 3 Oct. 1856– 21 July 1920) is listed as a teenage mistress of Prince 'Bertie' Edward. Since Mary 'Patsy' Fitzpatrick married on 3 October 1872, for this to have been legal, she would have been at least 16 and born in 1856, prior to 3 October. At just 16, she married a man 21 years older.

Mary 'Patsy' Fitzpatrick's illegal teenage years (13–16) were 3 October 1869–2 October 1872 and her legal teenage years (16–19) were 3 October 1872–2 October 1875. Her affair with Prince 'Bertie' Edward was from post-October 1870–June 1874, when she was 14–17 years old.

Patsy's husband, MP Colonel Frederick William Cornwallis-West (20 March 1835–4 July 1917) was a descendant of Henry VIII. His father was Colonel Frederick Richard Cornwallis-West of Ruthin Castle, Denbighshire, Wales.

> Often these marriages to a notable were arranged to cover up the past indiscretions of a royal, and equally, to provide a young concubine for the royal. They are usually beautiful young women married to older established men and often from the gene pool 'Fitz', with a history of illegitimate children to royalty and the children of reverends. Anthony Blunt's house father, the Anglican priest Stanley Blunt, is a case in point. These children are often very promiscuous and in Mary 'Patsy' Fitzpatrick's case, historians noted her as a serial flirt. For Mary 'Patsy' Fitzpatrick, flirting was a survival skill.

The husbands tend to be the children of colonels, MPs, the Queen's servants, or a mixture of the above. Reverends specialise in denial and the denial of sexual indiscretions. Colonels also know how to keep their mouths shut and their work keeps them out of the public eye. Reverends can always refer to God and colonels can always refer to their secretary.

Colonel Frederick William Cornwallis-West was made an MP with a whole lot more security as well as his father's castle in Wales. He already had a 6-year-old daughter, Constance Edwina 'Shelagh' Cornwallis-West (b.b. 1866–21 January 1970). 'Shelagh' was only 11 years younger than her stepmother Mary 'Patsy' Fitzpatrick (16). The day and month of Shelagh's birthday is also not available.

In a marriage of royal convenience MP Colonel William Cornwallis-West (37) and Mary 'Patsy' Fitzpatrick (16) married (3 October 1872) and had a daughter, Mary Theresa Olivia 'Daisy' Cornwallis-West (b. 28 June 1873) followed by a son, George Frederick Myddleton Cornwallis-West (b. 14 November 1874).

Shelagh.

'Daisy'.

George.

---

[3] b.b. – "born before".

Their first child 'Daisy' Cornwallis-West followed in her mother's footsteps and also became a courtesan to Prince 'Bertie' Edward.

What the public didn't know is that Prince 'Bertie' Edward (28) was having sex with Mary 'Patsy' Fitzpatrick from when she was 14. 'Patsy' was 15 when they conceived a daughter on 22 September 1872 (±18 days, 4 Sept.–10 Oct. 1872). 'Patsy' then hurriedly married Colonel William Cornwallis-West and they (Prince Edward and Patsy) had a daughter named 'Daisy' 243 days later. The average gestation is 5 weeks longer.

For this reason, most genealogies don't even mention 'Daisy' as Patsy's daughter and she is hidden by 'official historians' – those who believe in the right for others not to know and the right for royals to practise child-sex abuse, incest and paedophilia – the sport of kings.

The daughter, Mary 'Daisy' Cornwallis-West, also became a courtesan to Prince 'Bertie' Edward and they formed a sexual relationship when Mary 'Daisy' Cornwallis-West was 15–18 years old.

> Prince 'Bertie' Edward (32) was having sex with his daughter.
> This was incest, and it was royal incest.
> Prince 'Bertie' Edward/King Edward VII qualifies for both child sex abuse and incest. He didn't care. He had nothing to do with running the monarchy and did his best, quite subconsciously, to overthrow the monarchy at every step. His first legitimate child, born retarded, is a case in point. He could well have been the product of an extremely drunk conception from a prince who really didn't give a damn.

Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Out of all the historical research done, the birth date and images of Mary 'Patsy' née Fitzpatrick Cornwallis-West were the hardest to find. There are no photos of Mary 'Patsy' née Fitzpatrick Cornwallis-West. There is an undated painting of her in her early 20s and a *Vanity Fair* caricature labelled "'Women of the Day', Mrs George Cornwallis-West, (Churchill's mother), 11 November 1912, Supplement No. 2292".

The image gives just enough information to see that her (b. 1856) face and features (56) combined with Prince 'Bertie' Edward (b. 1841) could achieve Mary 'Daisy' (b. 1873) and her brother, George Frederick Myddleton Cornwallis-West (b. 1874).

Mary 'Patsy' née Fitzpatrick Cornwallis-West conceived a daughter on 22 September 1872 (up to 29 days before marriage) and gave birth on 28 June 1873. She had no pregnancy for 7½ months and then conceived a son on 8 February 1874, giving birth on 14 November 1874. The two children were born 16½ months apart.

Mary 'Patsy' Cornwallis-West got pregnant for the first time on 22 September 1872, married on 3 October 1872, was obviously pregnant from Christmas 1872–28 June 1873 and from 1 May–14 November 1874 when George Frederick Myddleton Cornwallis-West was born.

Mary 'Patsy' Fitzpatrick (17) was increasingly replaced by the sexual extrovert, tigress and penis conqueror, Lady 'Jennie' Jerome/Jacobson Churchill (19) from August 1873.

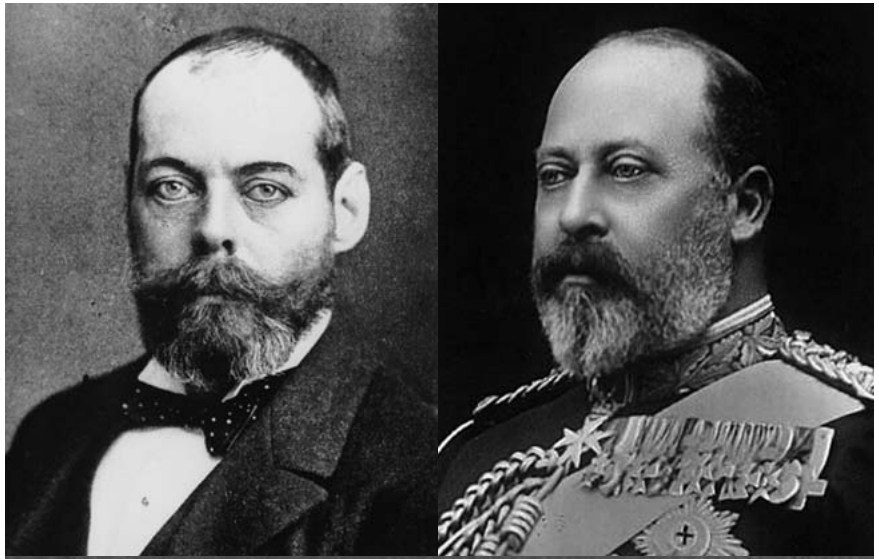

Lord Randolph Churchill (left) and Edward, Prince of Wales looking like brothers. These were Winston Churchill's house father and his biological father. This would make their shared biological father (and/or grandfather) Nathan Mayer Rothschild.

Lady Randolph 'Jennie' Jerome Churchill (19, 9 Jan. 1854–29 June 1921) was Prince 'Bertie' Edward's second lover (23 August 1873–76) overlapping with, and after, Mary 'Patsy' née Fitzpatrick Cornwallis-West.

Jennie and Patsy's two sons were born within 16 days of each other. George Frederick Myddleton Cornwallis-West was conceived on 8 February 1874 and Winston Churchill was conceived on the 22nd, both by Prince Edward. They were born 14 and 30 November 1874.

Mary 'Patsy's son, George Frederick Myddleton Cornwallis-West (25, b. 1874), then married (28 July 1900) Lady Randolph 'Jennie' Jerome Churchill (46, b. 9 Jan. 1854), mother of Winston Churchill (b. 1874).

Mary 'Patsy' Cornwallis-West & Lady Randolph 'Jennie' Jerome Churchill

Prince 'Bertie' Edward (b. 1841) and Lord Randolph Churchill (b. 1849) were born seven years apart. During certain periods of their lives, they looked incredibly similar and could easily have acted as body doubles for one another.

The Jerome/Churchill wedding was a "hushed and rushed affair" with none of the splendor a society wedding of such wealth and standing would normally receive. There was no public ceremony, little mention in the press, and the Duke and Duchess of Marlborough were conspicuously absent, even though this 9th Duke of Marlborough was Winston Churchill's 'first cousin'. He, Charles Richard John Spencer-Churchill, had married the American railroad heiress Consuelo Vanderbilt and used her dowry to restore Blenheim Palace. His second marriage, to the American Gladys Marie Deacon, was so bad she kept a revolver beside her plate whenever they dined together. The Spencer-Churchills were that strange.

What should have been the wedding of the year was royally snubbed as too many people knew it was incestuous. Lady Churchill had married her son's half-brother, 20 years her junior. This is further confirmed in the approximate world of antiques. Mary 'Patsy' Cornwallis-West was, in 1912, referred to as "Churchill's mother". Antique dealers are trained gossipers and often give leads into the scandals of the day. Mrs 'Patsy' Cornwallis-West and Lady 'Jennie' Jerome Churchill were related through their sons. Prince 'Bertie' Edward/King Edward VII was the father of Mary Theresa Olivia 'Daisy' Cornwallis-West (28 June 1873 –29 June 1943), George Frederick Myddleton Cornwallis-West (14 Nov. 1874 –1 April 1951) and Winston Leonard Spencer Churchill (30 Nov. 1874–24 January 1965). But wait, it gets worse.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Lady 'Jennie' Jerome Churchill was so loose she had a second illegitimate child, this time to Colonel John Strange Jocelyn, an Irish noble (5th Earl of Roden, 1823–97).

'Jack' Strange Spencer Churchill.

Her second child, John 'Jack' Strange Spencer Churchill (4 February 1880–23 February 1947) was universally noted as 'not the son of Lord Randolph Churchill'. Such was the shame, he was born out of London, in Dublin. He was also educated at Harrow School in London, became a major in the Oxfordshire Yeomanry, fought in WWI and received a DSO in 1918.

Neither of Lady Churchill's children were to Lord Randolph Churchill. He was a cuckolded man, rapidly elevated into politics, brought down even quicker, and spent the rest of his life going for long walks, with Africa being the only continent big enough. But even that's not the end of it.

The illegitimate Lady 'Jennie' Jerome Churchill had married (1900) her illegitimate son's half-brother, and her third husband (1918) also *appeared* to be related to her second illegitimate son. Divorced in 1914, Lady 'Jennie' Jerome Churchill (64) married (1 June 1918) Montague Phippen Porch (41), who was almost three years younger than Winston (43). She died three years later (67). Both marriages were considered scandalous, but she knew tricks. Here was an illegitimate woman subconsciously dedicated to cuckolding, incest, and promoting her illegitimate children as though they were royalty.

Montague Phippen Porch.

Both mothers, Mrs 'Patsy' Cornwallis-West and Lady 'Jennie' Jerome Churchill, were the lovers of Prince 'Bertie' Edward/later King Edward VII and both of their sons looked like Prince 'Bertie' Edward. Both of their sons also looked like brothers at various points in their lives. Winston Churchill looks nothing like Lord Randolph Spencer Churchill. Lord Randolph Churchill knew this and spurned his son, having little or nothing to do with him. The newspapers, owned by Winston's father-in-law, served to protect and promote Winston at every step, but even the British press noted the astonishing lack of resemblance.

> "The people of America are awaiting the coming of Mr. Winston Churchill, who is to lecture on the Transvaal war in all the great cities over there. They know as much about the historic Churchill family as do the English themselves. They remember his beautiful mother was one of the first Americans to marry into English nobility, and they will be pleased to hear that he is proud to acknowledge himself 'half an American'. They have read his newspaper letter and his books; they expect him to have a great future, and they wonder what sort of man he is. Winston Leonard Spencer Churchill is twenty-six years old, with the mind of a far older man and the vitality and enthusiasm of a far younger one. He

> is a well-built man, about the average height, with very broad shoulders and the strong frame of his mother's people. But you have to forget and look away from his face in order to see his frame, for his face is of a highly nervous, wholly intellectual type. He had all the nervous energy and fire that wore out and burned up his father's brilliant life. But he has also, as I have said, the physique of his mother's people. **Of his father there is nothing apparent or repeated in his flesh** except Lord Randolph's brow. But in temperament, originality, dash, eloquence, and the magic art of swaying men he is his father's promissory note, payable when he is more mature."[4]

Bertie and the Blue Monkeys

The other men who hung around in Prince 'Bertie' Edward's sexual mist were, in order of peerage, the Duke of Devonshire, the Marquis de Soveral (the Blue Monkey), Viscount Chaplin, Lord Charles Beresford, more than one (Baron de) Rothschild and Sir Ernest Cassel.[5]

The Baron de Rothschilds included the patriarch, Baron Mayer Amschel de Rothschild, Baron Lionel de Rothschild, Baron Alphonse de Rothschild, Baron Ferdinand de Rothschild, Alfred de Rothschild, Arthur de Rothschild and Leopold de Rothschild. Photographs of these people are rare, but their images can be found in the *Vanity Fair* caricatures (1869–1914). The first two were half-brothers to Prince 'Bertie' Edward, and Baron Lionel de Rothschild was also the father of his sisters Princess Helena and Princess Beatrice.

Spymaster: "Queen Victoria married Albert Saxe-Coburg of Gotha, a well-known stellar representative of the German aristocracy. He was so pro-German the English nobles literally wrote him off. They didn't trust him one iota. He was exceptionally talented and capable, and reinvented the Quartermaster System for the British Army.

---

[4] Winston Spencer Churchill, What Julian Ralph writes from London to the *New York Herald*, Courtesy of the Chartwell Trust, circa 1900.

[5] Sir Ernest Cassel was part of the Cavendish family, one of the wealthiest in England. The 7th Duke of Devonshire, William Cavendish, was Chancellor of Cambridge University from 1861–91. His son, Spencer Compton Cavendish, the Marquess of Hartington was an MP and led the Liberal Party. Queen Victoria asked him three times to be Prime Minister. In 1891 he succeeded his father as the 8th Duke of Devonshire. His brother Lord Frederick Cavendish was also an MP as well as the Chief Secretary for Ireland (assassinated in 1882). The 9th Duke of Devonshire became the Governor-General of Canada in 1915 without Canada's Prime Minister being consulted.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

"Prince Albert Saxe-Coburg-Gotha was a decent chap for a Kraut, far too devoted to the little woman of course, but not a bad stickman for all that. How he mated with Queen Victoria is beyond most. He was much too clever for the Colonel Blimps of the British Army, but he wasn't a bad shopkeeper and that was a lot better than the leading monarchs before him."

Ex-colonel in the British Army: "The only trouble with Albert was he was related to a mankey lot back in Krautland."

Their eldest son was born Prince Albert Edward and was always known to the family as 'Bertie'. When Bertie was 20, he got a girl pregnant. Prince Albert Saxe-Coburg-Gotha went to chastise his son, caught a cold, returned to Windsor Castle and died of pneumonia soon after. Queen Victoria never forgave Bertie for "killing" her beloved Albert, and from 1861 to 1901, these 40 years were known publicly as her mourning years. But that too was a cover. Queen Victoria was enjoying a healthy sex life with Prince Albert's ghillie John Brown.

Prince 'Bertie' Edward was never given a role to play in government or the monarchy and was kept in the dark and ignorant of all affairs of state. Queen Victoria and her son Bertie remained totally distant for the next forty years.

Prince 'Bertie' Edward got Queen Victoria back with the most daring sexual escapades, pretty much designed to overthrow the monarchy. To do this he routinely and openly cheated on his wife, the Princess of Denmark, and had a continuous series of overlapping mistresses.[6]

What Bertie didn't know was that his mother Queen Victoria was made of the same stock and had nine children to three different fathers and that the Rothschild's had interbred so thoroughly with the British Royals that the Royal Family were a virtual subset of the Rothschilds.[7]

Bertie knew that his philandering was encouraged by the Rothschilds, but did not know them to be relatives. He also did not know that his house father Prince Albert was illegitimate, but the Rothschilds did. The Rothschilds knew Prince Edward's destiny, but Prince Edward did not.

Prince 'Bertie' Edward's love of sexual escapades was already apparent in their official family photo (three generations, circa Christmas 1900).

---

[6] Dawn B. Sova, Ph.D., *Encyclopedia of Mistresses*.

[7] See *How To Take Over The World, A Right Royal Con*, 2007, pp. 105–110.

The 60-year-old Prince 'Bertie' Edward VII stands with his hands on the shoulders of his grandson Edward VIII who appears retarded. Prince 'Bertie' Edward, cunning and manipulative, none-too-bright himself, is the only one not looking at the camera.

His eyes belie the boredom he has with all things family, official and droll, as opposed to pomp and ceremony and other women. There is enough space between Prince 'Bertie' Edward and his wife Princess Alexandra to fit an extra two people in, and by that time this was any of eight overlapping mistresses.

But what is most surprising about this photo is the striking similarity between Edward's grandchildren and Winston Churchill. Up to the age of 28 (1902) Winston Churchill was also the spitting image of George Frederick Myddleton Cornwallis-West, Bertie's other child.

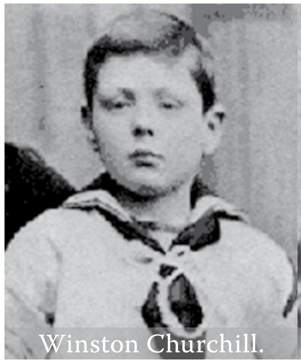
Winston Churchill.

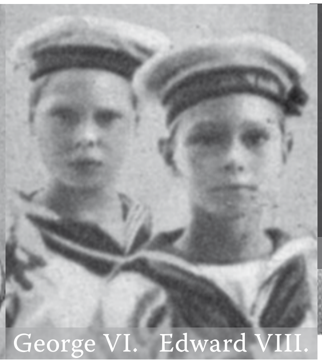
George VI. Edward VIII.

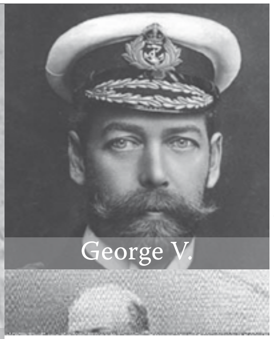
George V.

George VI. Edward VIII.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Lillie Langtry

Without analysing its effect on others, the definition of a mistress is best borrowed from the definition of courtesan: "A courtesan is a person paid and/or supported for the giving of social companionship and intimate liaisons to one or more partners. The word is generally reserved for those who enjoyed the most social status for such services. Although the term had been applied to people from several cultures and historical periods, it is most applicable for those to whom it was first given: the women of Renaissance Europe who held a socially recognised, if not quite socially accepted, position as well-compensated companions."[8]

Prince 'Bertie' Edward's first acknowledged mistress (1876) was the married Lillie Langtry (24) from the island of Jersey. Lillie Langtry was born Emilie Charlotte Le Breton (13 October 1853–12 February 1929). She was the daughter of the Dean of Jersey and the Rector of St. Saviours who was locally known as 'The Dirty Dean'. Swinging and incest was part of the family make-up.

Like a lot of Pommie families, the Dean rooted them all, his children, boys and girls, men and women.

Emilie Charlotte Le Breton/ Lillie Langtry.

As a teenager, Emilie Charlotte Le Breton was nicknamed 'Jersey Lillie' after the Jersey flower, and thereafter she was simply known as 'Lillie'. She had great skin and was acknowledged as the most beautiful teenage girl on the island, so much so that she received proposals of marriage at 14. What is most intriguing is that her father was the ugliest man on Jersey Island.

Lillie's father, Peter William Corbet Le Breton married Emilie Le Breton and had four sons. Emilie desperately wanted a daughter. She achieved this by having sex with another man with a history of conceiving daughters, until she conceived a daughter. In this way, Lillie had a half-brother who she attempted an incestuous relationship with. Someone else imbued features and characteristics in Lillie that Peter William Corbet Le Breton did not have . . . beauty, a small waist, and a desire for London's high social life. Swinging was accepted by both parents in the Anglican Le Breton family.

---

[8] Churchill website in reference to Churchill's mother.

Lillie Langtry.

Emilie Charlotte 'Lillie' Le Breton refused all suitors on Jersey Island because she desperately wanted to leave (escape the incestuous paedophilia) and join the high London social life, the Marlborough set if she could.

She (20) went some way to achieving this by marrying (March 1874) the recently widowed Edward Langtry (1847–97) and sailing away with the rich Irish landowner to their new address at Eaton Place, in the very fashionable Belgravia, then just outside of London (an East London suburb from 1902). Lillie soon joined the society set and met a large number of pseudo-intellectuals – Oscar Wilde, the bisexual buggar in a cover-marriage amongst them.

Her principal attraction to Edward Langtry was his 80-foot yacht, *The Red Gauntlet*, in which to escape Jersey in style. She became Lillie Langtry and Edward left her alone with the servants, a lot. She caught tuberculosis (so the story goes) and convinced her doctor that she needed time out in London for health reasons. That's a turn-up for the books.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -

Lillie Langtry.

Within two years of marriage, Lillie Langtry escaped to the London high life (1876) with a mixture of her mother's genes and a high society London suitor with lots of daughters. Mr Mitford perhaps.

David Mitford (1878–1958), Lord Redesdale, had seven daughters famous for their beauty, but the timing was wrong. His father's was spot on, which would have made Lillie Langtry related to Winston Churchill's wife. Algernon Bertram Freeman-Mitford, 1st Baron Redesdale (1837–1916) was an English diplomat who entered the Foreign Office in 1858. Lillie was conceived and born in 1853.

Soon after arriving in London, her only younger brother (five boys) died in a riding accident. Emilie Le Breton was probably trying for a second daughter (another concubine for the Prince), but he turned out to be a boy that looked like Lillie and not like the four brothers, so he was killed by the Royal Stonemen. These royal contract killers tamper with the equine hardware and scare the horses as they jump fences. When 'the mark' is lying on the ground, they hit them on the head with a stone, one solid biff on the temple and they're dead on the ground. If her younger sibling had been a girl, the two would have been as famous as the Mitford sisters, but this was not to happen for another generation.

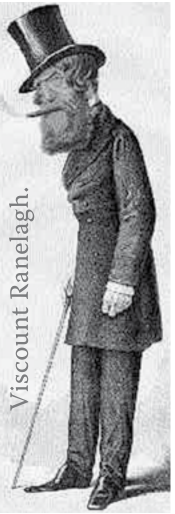
Viscount Ranelagh.

While she was mourning, Lillie Langtry was invited into the house of her father's friend, the equally ugly 7th Viscount of Ranelagh, Thomas Heron Jones (1812–95) who lived in Lownes Square. *Vanity Fair* did a most unflattering caricature of Thomas Heron Jones in 1870 portraying him as a scowling sexual deviant (right), not unlike Lillie's father.

Regardless, Lillie Langtry, in her blissful sexual Pollyanna ignorance, turned up in black (her only other dress) and two well-known artists (Frank Mills and Everett Millais) were there to sketch her for the first time. This is the equivalent of having leading fashion

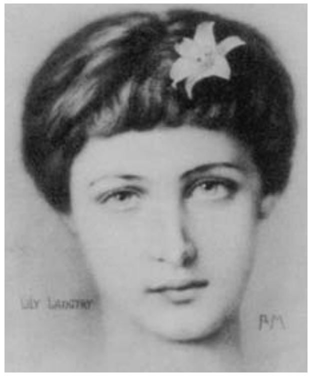

magazine photographers in-house to launch a debutante while grieving.

Everett Millais made a sketch that looked incredibly like a photograph and her image was nominated for the 1874 Royal Academy Exhibition 'Picture of the Year'. Other artists, including Whistler, clamoured to paint her. By 1877, Lillie's image was being sold everywhere on postcards and outsold all others. She became the first pin-up and with her near perfect complexion she sold Pears' Soap.

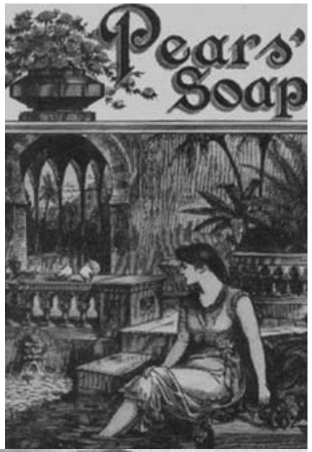

The 'porn' status intrigued Prince 'Bertie' Edward, who was by now well aware of 'breeding concubines' and would have known that she was the daughter of some handsome sly-rooting noble he knew.

Prince 'Bertie' made enquiries and Sir Allen Young arranged a dinner party at Lady Sebright's where Lillie Langtry sat next to the Prince and Edward Langtry sat at the far end of the table, a social outcast, watching as his wife got hit on. Bertie was so enthralled with Lillie's nature, violet eyes and beauty that he refused to attend social functions unless she was present.

'Bertie'.

treasurer@platinumparty.org - 4 March 201

Lillie was immediately embedded into the Marlborough set and became the talk of all London. So successful was her launch (22) that she became famous for the next five decades. Victims of paedophilia and incest will do anything to get attention and she lived a full and complete life. (Untalented paedophile victims tend to find refuge in pyromania.)

Prince 'Bertie' Edward promenaded Lillie Langtry around with him in his horse and carriage. Dressmakers flocked to give her their new creations, artists vied to sketch her, and the media, mindful of the Guild system controlling their ability to earn a decent coin in England, refused to mention the affair. You either saw it or you didn't know it was happening.

Such was the attention on Lillie Langtry that she is acknowledged as making advertising socially acceptable. Her hats, clothes and hairstyles were copied across the country and Pears' Soap used her sexual image to advertise their gentleness. They ignored her faults.

Lillie Langtry had nothing in common with her father, completely different talents, nothing in the face and even less in the body, although they showed similar titled and sexually deviant contacts when it mattered. She had an incredibly thin waist (the corset helped) and an arse the size of a wheelbarrow (the corset helped).

Prince 'Bertie' Edward had no morals, none whatsoever. It was as if he was born without empathy. Word got to Princess Alexandra and in 1878 Prince 'Bertie' Edward formally introduced Lillie to his much-loathed mother, Queen Victoria. Lillie presented with three huge white ostrich feathers in her hair, the symbol of the Prince of Wales, of which Bertie was the current prince. It was a confident sign that she would be around a while. Lillie even spent time with the royal children, and the youngest, Prince Leopold (6), put a picture of 'Lillie Langtry' above his bed. Princess Alexandra had to take it down. It took a while, but Alexandra and Lillie eventually developed a relationship of mutual tolerance. Queen Victoria and Lillie did not.

Lillie Langtry.

Queen Victoria had done her research and found Lillie to be the victim of incest and paedophilia, not averse to sado-masochism, a sexually adventurous swinger and a social climber.

In the first year of their meeting (1876) the overweight, cigar-smoking, bald, low IQ, low EQ, old-looking 35-year-old Prince 'Bertie' Edward began building a getaway for the two of them. Lillie was given free reign on the design and came up with a red brick Tudor manor with multiple gables and dormers, and formally named it 'Langtry Manor', but it was always called 'The Red House'. While it was being built, they used the home of Lord Derby (now Langtry Lodge). They had quirky things in the house, which showed they were swingers, and whatever happened in the house, stayed in the house. Beneath the minstrels gallery the line read, "They say What say they? Let them say". They were quite c'est la vie about their swinging, such was their life.

A stained-glass window dated 1881 is testament to this. It commemorates the birth of Lillie's daughter, Jeanne-Marie Langtry (8 March 1881–1964), born in Paris with the help of Prince 'Bertie' Edward's physician.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Jeanne-Marie was raised as Lillie Langtry's niece and didn't find out Lillie (46) was her mother until she was 18 (1899). Neither Prince 'Bertie' Edward nor her husband Edward Langtry were the father.

Lillie Langtry was not a straight-up girl. She relished the attention of other men and often tired of the older Bertie, 12 years her senior. Being in the Marlborough swinging set, she soon got word that she was not her father's daughter ("I met your father. He doesn't look a thing like you") and moved into even more bizarre sexual behaviour. She had an affair on the side (two was not enough) with Bertie's nephew-in-law, Royal Navy officer, Prince Louis Battenburg.

Prince Louis Battenburg (24 May 1854–11 September 1921) was the father of Lord Louis 'Uncle Dickie' Mountbatten and grandfather of Prince Philip (QEII's husband). The homosexual incestuous Lord Louis Mountbatten (25 June 1900–27 August 1979) was the unfortunate mentor to the unfortunate Prince Charles (14 November 1948–). Prince Charles was unfortunate in parentage, name, looks, qualities and mentor. These patterns carried on through his life, having two younger half-brothers.

Lillie Langtry cheated on Edward Langtry, her much older husband, and she cheated on him with Prince 'Bertie' Edward, and right before his eyes. Within five years, she had cuckolded her husband, spent all his money and left him for bankrupt (1879). She was that sort of gal.

After four years as chief concubine, Lillie Langtry (26) met Louis Battenberg (25) in the spring of 1880 and they soon conceived (2 June 1880) a daughter together. As soon as Prince Louis Battenburg knew of the conception, he went on a long sea voyage on the *Royal Abandon* and had little or nothing to do with his daughter. It was also a wise idea to escape the wrath of Prince 'Bertie' Edward (38).[9]

Jeanne-Marie Langtry's father could have been Arthur Jesse, but Lord Louis Mountbatten (Prince Louis Battenburg's son) confirms it was his father and that Lillie Langtry was his semi-official mistress, although she was married to someone else at the time . . . a Mr Langtry perhaps, and was also Prince 'Bertie' Edward's official courtesan.

Prince 'Bertie' Edward preferred married mistresses. It broke more rules and was easier to cover if they fell pregnant or fell out. The alternative was to go through the expense of arranging a marriage of convenience, something he had learnt with his previous pregnant mistress, the 15-year-old Mary 'Patsy' Fitzpatrick.

Things were building up for Lillie. She had become world famous overnight, been the centre of social attention for five years, had an affair with the future King of England for five years, had a daughter with his nephew-in-law, discovered she was not her father's daughter and pondered the possibility that she had met her real father many times, and possibly even had sex with him.

One night in 1881, after her daughter's birth, it all became too much for Lillie and she walked down to a dinner party at The Red House and made her entrance dressed in the same clothes as Prince 'Bertie' Edward, poured ice down his back and refused to apologise. It was over. The next day she was a social outcast, and the day after that, creditors pushed for her to settle her accounts.

The bankers de Rothschild were frequent visitors to the Prince's parties and would have been the first to foreclose, having taken orders from Prince Edward, their half-brother. Lillie's estranged, socially inept husband couldn't keep up with her lavish lifestyle and she had already driven him bankrupt. He took to drinking and even the 'front' aspect of their marriage was over.

---

[9] *Royal Abandon* is a joke, but he could have made himself scarce on the HMS *Undaunted*. This loophole was closed when Bertie's close friend Lord Beresford captained it from 1889–93.

> It is common marriage practice for female incest victims to destroy the principal male in their life. This includes affairs with others, bankruptcy and divorce. Where divorce statistics are high, so too is incest, paedophilia, child-sex abuse and lesbianism.

On the verge of bankruptcy herself, Lillie took advice from the actress Sarah Bernhardt.

'The Divine Sarah' (22 October 1844–26 March 1923) had arrived in London in 1876. She helped Lillie get into acting (debut in 1882) and then took her place as Prince 'Bertie' Edward's next courtesan, although she had already been swinging with the Prince since 1879 and would do so into the 1890s.

Lillie Langtry toured America where she divorced (1887) her penniless husband, citing abandonment. Edward Langtry spent his time fishing and pining for his ex-wife. Amongst the crowds he would wait for her to alight from an ocean liner but never present himself. He cut a lonely figure, drunk an excessive amount of whiskey, suffered a serious fall while drunk and died in October 1897. Lillie retired from the stage the following year as a millionairess. She was that kind of gal.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

With her purse bulging and her hips even bigger, she developed an interest in horse racing (1890), where she met the Scottish millionaire George Alexander Baird (1861–93), who rode as a jockey under the name 'Mr Abington'. He was known by the punters for all the wrong reasons as, 'The Squire'. He was charged with foul riding and "warned off every course where the Grand National Hunt Rules are in force, for two years from this date, and that during that period no horse his property, nominated by him, trained by him, or in any way under his care, joint care, management, or superintendance, be allowed to run for any race at any meeting where the Grand National Hunt Rules are in force". These rules also applied to the Stewards of the Jockey Club, who extended the sentence to all meetings under their rules. George Alexander Baird was from Strichen, as in "strichen from the books".

This disqualification hit George Alexander Baird/Mr Abington/The Squire hard. He retaliated by moving to Paris and racing there until his inheritance came through six months later – £3 million worth of investments and an annual income of £100,000. Once his ban was served, he returned to England and rode 13 winners in the 1884 season.

Outside of racing, Baird was described as "'a hell-raiser and a whoremaster, riding hard, betting high, drinking heavily and treating women with much less consideration than he did his horses". From 1886, he moved into the shady world of boxing, based at the Pelican Club. He became the centre of a rough clique and gambled like there was no tomorrow. He was one of the 'fighting audience' and was even expelled from the Pelican Club. He returned to racing but was riding drunk in 1891.

It was in this state as an audience boxer/drunk jockey/lay millionaire that he became infatuated with Lillie Langtry. Lillie, being from an incestuous paedophilic religious background, was attracted to this and charged him "£5000 remorse money" each time he beat her black and blue.

On one occasion 'The Squire' caught Lillie having an affair with Robert Peel, who was buying up large for Lillie in the Paris fashion houses. 'The Squire' beat her so badly she ended up hospitalised for two weeks, nursing two black eyes, a swollen nose, and was covered in welts. 'The Squire' also smashed up the hotel room. An arrest warrant was put out, but he was already in jail for a brothel fracas immediately after the Lillie Langtry assault.

To everybody's amazement, Lillie refused to press charges, probably because she enjoyed S&M, something the children of paedophilia are prone to attract. George 'The Squire' Baird was released and paid Lillie £50,000 'remorse money' as well as a yacht, which the conniving Lillie had her eye on. Lillie named it 'Whyte Lady', but everybody else called it 'Black Eye'.[10] Lillie Langtry was George Baird's whip.

After trying to arrange a world title fight between 'Gentleman Jim' Corbett and John L. Sullivan, George Baird, then known as 'Squire Abington', hit the night spots of New Orleans, caught a chill while drunk and died aged 31 of pneumonia on 18 March 1893. He still had a million pounds, but never gave Lillie anything, and she never mentioned him again, not even in her autobiography.

---

[10] Stichill Millennium Project.

Lillie (44) met Hugo de Bathe (26) in 1897. He was only nine years older than her daughter. She retired from the stage (1898), and the next year told her 18-year-old 'niece': "I am not your aunt. I am your mother." The same year she married Sir Hugo Gerald de Bathe (27), 19 years her junior, and started driving around in a m-o-t-o-r- c-a-r, one of the first women to do so. She could afford it. She was also one of the few female self-made millionaires of the 19th century.

When her father-in-law died in 1907, Hugo inherited his baronetcy and she became Lady Lillie de Bathe, but it was not all roses. Her 27-year marriage was unhappy and estranged. Sir Hugo de Bathe lived in South Africa and Lady Lillie de Bathe (19 years older) lived at Monte Carlo on the Riviera, returning to where it all started in England for the funeral of King Edward VII in 1910. This time Bertie's loose box was all in black.

Lillie became a leading owner of racehorses, develop vineyards in America, made one film at 60 years old (1913) and died at the ripe old age of 75 on 12 February 1929 with only a few thousand pounds left, which was still a lot of money, but nothing compared to her rare female status as a 19th-century self-made millionairess.

Espavo 3020 - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Her daughter Jeanne-Marie Langtry (21) went on to marry (1902) Sir Ian Malcolm Poltalloch (34). Deeply embedded in all things Scottish, the 17th Laird of Poltalloch became a Knight Commander of the Order of St Michael and St George (1919) and wrote *Highland Lore and Legend* (1938). They had four children and Lillie Langtry's grandson, Lieutenant George Ian Malcolm founded the Edinburgh Tattoo.

Jersey Lillie in 1913.

Edinburgh Tattoo.

Sarah Bernhardt

After Lillie Langtry, and without interruption, but with plenty of overlap, Prince 'Bertie' Edward had an affair with Sarah Bernhardt. She was born Henriette Rosine Bernard (22 October 1844–26 March 1923) to Jewish parents, took the name Sarah Bernhardt, was given the name 'the Divine Sarah', and once people got to know her, the more grounded nickname 'Sarah Barnum'.

Her mother had abandoned Sarah with a wetnurse to become a high-priced prostitute, a courtesan, in France. She didn't even leave a forwarding address and the wetnurse couldn't get rid of Henriette/Sarah when she wanted to get married. Sarah only caught up with her mother (briefly) after recognising her aunt getting into a carriage.

After Sarah Bernhardt's time at school, she went to live with her real mother and decided to become an actress (no kidding) and became mistress (18) to Prince Charles Joseph Eugene Henri de Ligne (38) of Belgium (16 October 1824–27 November 1871), who had been married since 30 September 1851. They had a son together named Maurice (b. 1864), after which Prince Henri de Ligne royally abandoned her. His family convinced him that he would lose all his titles if he divorced and married the daughter of a courtesan/prostitute.

Sarah arrived in England in 1876. She was incredibly driven and talented. She wrote seven books (1876–1924), including *My Double Life* (1908), acted in over 120 roles, including 38 parts she had created, wrote many plays, and exhibited as an artist and painter (1876–80) with a little help from her occasional sexual partner Prince 'Bertie' Edward as they overlapped with Lillie. She married in 1882, separated in 1883, had a fabulous career, had her leg amputated in 1914, and carried on with her stage work.

She toured America 1886/7, 1888/9, 1891/2/3 and 1896 and continued to be linked sexually to powerful men. Her talent and sexuality were both something to be admired and her career soared.

There is no better way to advance your acting career than having sex with a royal. It is almost standard practice. Just look at Noel Coward's 19-year affair with King George VI's youngest brother, the Duke of Kent, and with their half-brother Anthony Blunt – then compare talent and career.

Prince 'Bertie' Edward was a keen theatregoer and would stop shows in order to lavish Sarah with jewels. This 'what a character' behaviour led to his acting debut as a corpse. Bertie visited Sarah often and the two became great friends and lovers over three decades (1879–90s). She was one of the bevy of beauties seated in 'the King's loose box' during his coronation, along with another long-time mistress Lady Churchill (56). When 'the Divine Sarah' died in 1923, 30,000 mourners filed past her coffin.

Mary 'Daisy' Cornwallis-West

The teenage lover of Prince 'Bertie' Edward, Mary 'Patsy' Cornwallis-West, had a reputation as a matchmaker and her daughters married under her influence.

With 'Patsy's' help, her stepdaughter, Constance Edwina 'Shelagh' Cornwallis-West (35) married (16 Feb. 1901) Hugh Richard Arthur Grosvenor (21), the 2nd Duke of Westminster and the richest English noble, known as 'Bend Or' or the 'Golden Duke' (19 March 1879–19 July 1953). She became the Duchess of Westminster and bore him three children. They divorced in 1919.

Constance Edwina 'Shelagh' Cornwallis-West/Duchess of Westminster (54) went on to marry (14 January 1920) Captain James Fitzpatrick Lewes. Shelagh shared the same father with her sister, but what a difference a promiscuous young mother makes.

Mary 'Patsy' Cornwallis-West hooked up her full daughter Mary Theresa Olivia 'Daisy' Cornwallis-West (18, 28 June 1873–29 June 1943) with the richest German prince (30), the Prince of Pless (23 April 1861–31 January 1938) and they married (8 December 1891), with her father and former lover Prince 'Bertie' Edward attending the ceremony.

Mary 'Daisy' Cornwallis-West had been having sex with her father (Prince 'Bertie' Edward) since she was 15 until her marriage (8 Dec. 1891) and probably after that. She wrote at least four books including *Better Left Unsaid* (1936).

'Daisy' then became 'Daisy' Princess of Pless and lived in the castle in Pszczyna (Pless), just outside of Warsaw, Poland. Here they were formally known as Prince Jan Henryk XV Von Hochberg of Pszczyna, HSH Hans Heinrich XV and Princess Maria Teresa Von Pless.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Princess Maria Teresa Von Pless.

Mary 'Daisy' is listed as one of Prince 'Bertie' Edward's lovers, is colloquially recorded as Mary 'Patsy's' daughter, but is omitted from most genealogies as Mary 'Patsy's' daughter, and her birth date is omitted. It was only found, when searching German/Polish records of her marriage to Prince Jan Henryk XV Von Hochberg of Pszczyna (HSH Hans Heinrich XV), by which time she had changed her name to Princess Maria Teresa Von Pless.

Mary 'Daisy' used her skills as a hostess and tried to prevent war, but failed. During WWI their castle was the headquarters of the Kaiser and during all of WWII the Prince of Pless was interned on the Isle of Man while his castle was used as the sapper school of the Wehrmacht and miraculously survived any bombing. The Prince of Pless was protected because his wife was King George VI's aunt, so he was treated very well.

Daisy and the Prince of Pless divorced (12 December 1922) and Prince Jan Henryk XV (63) then married (25 Jan. 1925) a 26-year-old woman, 37 years his junior. They divorced nine years later (5 March 1934) when he was 72 and she 35. He died four years later on 31 March 1938.

Alice Keppel

Alice Frederica née Edmonstone Keppel (14 Oct. 1869–11 Sept. 1947) was born in Dunheath Castle, Loch Lomond (Loch Ness), Scotland to a poor titled family. She became the acknowledged royal mistress to Prince 'Bertie' Edward in 1898. He inherited the crown on 22 January 1901 and as King Edward VII their relationship continued until he died on 6 May 1910. She was his final mistress (1898–1910), the most beautiful, and the only one Princess Alexandra (Bertie's wife) tolerated without snubbing.

Prince 'Bertie' Edward (57) and Alice Keppel (31) had a daughter together named Sonia Rosemary Keppel (born 24 May 1900). The affair was quite open and both mother and daughter made it onto a British postage stamp in 1995, just breaking the 100-year rule.

Alice Keppel.

A marriage is required for cover and this comes with all the hoopla of giving awards. This gives the chosen ones sufficient status to overcome all questions.

Alice Keppel's father-in-law to be was Sir William Coutts Keppel (15 April 1832–22 August 1874), the 7th Earl of Albemarle. He was the Treasurer of the Queen's Household (1857–59), after which he was made a Privy Counsellor (PC). He became the MP for Berwick (1868–74) and held the office of Volunteer Aide-de-Camp for the Queen (1881) and succeeded to the title of 7th Earl of Albemarle on 21 February 1891.[11]

The 7th Earl of Albemarle's son, Lieutenant Colonel George Keppel (14 October 1865–22 November 1947) married Alice Keppel 100 days after his father succeeded to the title Albemarle on 1 June 1891. This was a year after she had had a child with Prince 'Bertie' Edward, and three years into their relationship. Her ever-tolerant husband became the Honorable Colonel George Keppel.

"There were three people in this marriage" – the Honorable Colonel George Keppel (25), Alice Keppel (21) and Prince 'Bertie' Edward/King Edward VII (59).

Their royal illegitimate daughter, Sonia Keppel (1900–86), married (16 November 1920) Roland Calvert Cubitt (26 Jan. 1899–28 Oct. 1962). He was utterly amazed at the stories of royalty, but because he was Sandhurst educated, he was trained to keep his mouth shut. They divorced in 1947 and Roland became the 3rd Baron of Ashcombe on 27 October the same year. This tightened his mandible springs.

The Honorable Colonel George Keppel and Alice Keppel's cover marriage also produced a child, Violet Keppel (6 June 1894–1 March 1970).

---

[11] The 1st Earl of Albemarle, Henry Fitzjames, was the illegitimate son of King James II. He would be the nephew of Winston Churchill's ancestor, except Winston was illegitimate and claimed all sorts of ancestry just as he claimed all sorts of status. Historians and the media never challenged Winston, as his real father was the King. Then his brother was the King, then his nephews were Kings, then his nephew's daughter became the Queen . . . and that's why we don't know Churchill.

treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Alice Keppel was unique amongst Bertie's many mistresses in that she was viewed as loyal to the King with no agenda – not even a hidden one. Not even their shared daughter Sonia was used as a pawn. Alice Keppel was considered a faithful concubine and has been the model of royal concubines ever since. Hence the saying, "Get yourself an Alice Keppel".[12]

Alice Keppel's husband, the Honorable Colonel George Keppel of the Royal Army, maintained he was quite proud of the fact that his wife was the concubine of the King. He viewed her affair with the King as *their* combined duty to the Crown. (Stuff the Danish!) Alice even had a deep husky voice like her descendant Camilla Parker-Bowles. This was something, rather strangely, that both Princes found calming.

When King Edward VII died in 1910 Alice Keppel turned all her sexual focus back to her husband until her death on 11 September 1947. They shared a relationship that laughed everything off and her husband George Keppel died ten weeks after her on 22 November 1947.

Winston Churchill's Origins

Former British Intelligence Officer: "Lady 'Jennie' Jerome Churchill was bright and witty, but was incestuous on a whole lot of levels and was primarily a wheeler and dealer in her fanny."

Her mother, Clarissa Hall Jerome (16 July 1825–2 April 1895), had married (1849) Leonard Jerome, formerly Leonard Jacobson. He was the owner and editor of the *New York Times* and used Gatling guns on his striking employees. He was close friends with August Belmont Snr., the Rothschilds' banking representative in America. Leonard Jerome was also plagued by scandals with opera singer Minnie Hauk, the fruit of his loins. Leonard Jerome did not believe two of his daughters were his, but Clarissa Hall Jerome spent his money anyway. Clarissa was keen for her four daughters (at least two illegitimate) to be set up in British aristocratic circles, so she took them to the very best European holiday spots for husband hunting.

---

[12] The Spymaster was around at my place one day and after this research I said, "**Get yourself an Alice Keppel**". Sure enough he did. Although I had painted the interior of the house myself, I believed every conversation was being listened to. I mentioned this to James Bond III who came around just to talk to the television, in a loud voice, correctly believing he was talking to the SIS and Army Intelligence. I tried this myself and placed an order. I was very specific, right down to the physical and psychological training. Within three months she was staring at me in a bar. Amazing, although I forgot to say "No Spies", so it was back to talking to the TV.

At 19, Jeanette 'Jennie' Jerome (9 January 1854–29 June 1921) met the titled 24-year-old diplomat Lord Randolph Churchill (1849–95) on the HMS *Ariadne* on 12 August 1873 as it moored off the fashionable Isle of Wight. Lord Randolph Churchill was the youngest son of the 7th Duke of Marlborough and, through various parts of his life, was the spitting image of Prince 'Bertie' Edward. (His father or gandfather may have been Nathan Mayer Rothschild.)

They played carrot and donkey and he proposed to her the next evening (13 August 1873). She accepted and they married eight months later on 15 April 1874.

Wasting no time, and acting in a repeat pattern of her mother, 'Jennie' Jerome joined the Marlborough set, the social circle of Prince 'Bertie' Edward (post 13 August 1873). 'Jennie' Jerome, betrothed to become Lady Randolph Churchill, was soon sporting the expensive jewellery Prince 'Bertie' Edward was known to bestow on his mistresses. The two remained good friends throughout his life – enough for her to influence *their* son's political future.

Winston Churchill was conceived on 24 February 1874 with Prince 'Bertie' Edward. 'Jennie' Jerome married Lord Randolph Churchill 52 days later on 15 April 1874 in a "hushed and rushed affair". Winston was born 7½ months after the wedding on 30 November 1874 and there was much fuss about him being born premature. "We haven't even got the baby clothes yet."[13]

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Lord Randolph Churchill had little to do with his 'son' Winston, never believed he was his, and kept his distance accordingly. 'Jennie' Jerome had repeated her mother's breeding pattern. She had married a rich man and had children to someone else. Leonard Jerome was Winston Churchill's house grandfather and not his biological grandfather.

On his mother's side, Winston Churchill was the illegitimate son of an illegitimate daughter. On his father's side, Winston Churchill was the illegitimate son of an illegitimate son of an illegitimate son (King Edward VII, Prince consort Albert, Alexander Hanstein).

After the princely conception and cover marriage, Lord Randolph Henry Spencer-Churchill was promoted through the political arena faster than a NATO paedophile. These were cover promotions in lieu of house fathering a FitzRoyal.

---

[13] Winston's conception was 6 Feb.–12 March 1874. The marriage was 34–68 days later.

Unlike Winston, Randolph graduated from Oxford with an MA, and Cambridge with an Honorary Doctor of Law. He became a Privy Counsellor (PC), MP for Woodstock (1874–85), and was initiated into Freemasonry under the name Rudolph H. Spencer in Dublin in 1878 and became the Master Mason (Magister Magistrorum) very quickly. His child-in-name was to be the child of war for the Freemasons' greatest battle to date. Lord Randolph was then made Secretary of State for India (1885–6), MP for Paddington (1885–9), Chancellor of the Exchequer (1886) and Deputy Lieutenant of Oxfordshire.

True to plan, Lord Randolph Churchill died at the very young age of 45 (syphilis) when Winston was 20, before lack of resemblance could determine the gossip to be true. Those in the know thought that syphilis was an entirely appropriate disease for Lord Randolph, considering his wife's reputation as a prolific and dedicated cuckolder.

Lord Randolph Henry Spencer-Churchill, academic, died aged 45 from syphilis.

Winston Leonard Spencer-Churchill, unacademic, bordering on backward. Seen here aged 20. He died aged 90.

George Frederick Myddleton Cornwallis-West

After his marriage to Lady Churchill (28 July 1900–1914), Winston Churchill's brother, George Frederick Myddleton Cornwallis-West went on to marry (6 April 1914) another actress, Mrs Patrick Campbell (Beatrice 'Stella' Tanner). She became a single-titled author and they had no children.

Beatrice 'Stella' Tanner.

George Cornwallis-West.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org

Prince Charles and Camilla Parker-Bowles

Prince 'Bertie' Edward and Princess Alexandra had a son who was to become King George V. Like his father, George V had affairs, and sired Anthony Blunt with Hilda Master.

Bertie and Alexandra's grandsons were King Edward VIII and King George VI, their great-granddaughter Queen Elizabeth II, and their great-great-grandson Prince Charles. Prince 'Bertie' Edward's great-granddaughter (illegitimate) with Mrs Alice Keppel was to become Camilla Parker-Bowles.

Prince Charles married his third cousin Camilla Parker-Bowles in April 2005. They share the same great-great-grandfather, Prince 'Bertie' Edward, the iconic swinger. Camilla Parker-Bowles' chat-up line to Prince Charles was: "My mother had an affair with your grandfather. How about it?" This brought in a whole new era of repeat patterning.

Prince Charles' grandfather was King George VI (d. 1952). George VI died of a strange form of lung cancer called syphilis. Partly as a result of their family history, their ever-so-strong desire to be common, and their friends' relaxed attitude towards Charles and Camilla, their nicknames became "Fred and Gladys".

Fred Wales.

Charles and Camilla are third cousins. Charles is following in his parents' footsteps (second cousins) and his g-g-g-g-grandparents' footsteps (first cousins) – hence the birth defects, big ears, a general unemployable look, fussiness without result, and non-mainstream sexual habits (the dresser).

It's interesting to note the similarities of age. Charles married his older third cousin Camilla on 9 April 2005. He was 56 and she was 57.

Their great-great-grandfather Bertie was also 57 when he conceived Camilla's ancestor, Sonia Rosemary Keppel, around 18 August 1899 (b. 24 May 1900). They shared a mutual ancestor, and, in terms of age at conception and marriage, they were all within 502 days of each other.[14] Well, perhaps it's not that interesting and it may not mean much, but sexual patterns (genealogical patterns) tend to repeat. Look forward to the next generation? Watch your biscuit tin for what the royals want you to see.

Here's something the royals don't want you to see. Prince Charles had an illegitimate child with a young servant girl at Balmoral Castle when he was 18. The child was born in 1967 and is now 40 years old (in 2007). I doubt the two of them will ever make it to the postage stamp.

---

[14] Prince 'Bertie' Edward (b. 9 Nov. 1841) was 57 and 283 days. Camilla Parker-Bowles (b. 17 July 1947) was 57 and 266 days. Prince Charles (b. 14 Nov. 1948) was 56 and 146 days.

Fitz-Swingers and the Children of War

Interbreeding amongst the British Royal Family over generations has created concubines, illegitimate children, and agents of war. The British Royal Family are then shamed by these events and manipulated into any activity their owners require. Their owners are the true history keepers and these historians are also their bankers. Their name is Rothschild, and the British Royal Family is a biological, financial and moral subset of the Rothschild international bankers. It is 'shame' that rules the world and the Rothschilds that rule that shame.

The concubines were either illegitimate, subject to incest, the daughters of reverends or courtesans, S&M for hire, poor and titled in constrained marriages, under-aged girls (bribes and arranged marriages), sex addicts wheeling and dealing in their fannies, elevating their careers, or those who saw it as their duty. They were all cuckolders, wife cheaters and swingers who produced a plethora of illegitimate children in powerful positions who were all prone to being influenced by any who knew their real history.

The real historians were the Rothschilds and it was the Rothschilds who encouraged this scenario. This gave them consumate power over the British Royal Family and any others they interbred with, which was all the royal families of Europe. It is the Rothschilds who do not want the true history told, as it erodes their power. This is why the European royal families engage embedded historians and why the Rothschilds control all the publishing houses, of which there are only six, plus derivatives covering all topics right down to the Nazi-instigated New Age movement – "I'm so passive, walk on me."

"Paedophilia is the sport of kings." Edward 'Bertie' Prince of Wales (28) was having sex with the 14-year-old Mary 'Patsy' Fitzpatrick and the 15-year-old Mary 'Daisy' Cornwallis-West over two generations. *Today* this is called child sex abuse. *Then* it was called an oversight. Birth dates were confused accordingly, and marriages were arranged for cover.

The children of war are conceived from illegitmate cuckolding stock over many generations. Winston Churchill's mother 'Jennie' Jerome was illegitimate, as was his father King Edward VII (the son of Nathan Mayer Rothschild). Churchill's wife was also illegitimate. She was the daughter of her uncle Algernon Bertram Freeman-Mitford. Churchill's mother went on to marry his half-brother and then married again to someone who looked suspicously like his other half-brother.

The world is controlled by shame and world leaders often have such confused family histories. This makes them bribeable. President Bill Clinton is a case in point. His mother was a renowned slapper, a lot like Churchill's American mother, and Clinton was supposed to have six different fathers, but Clinton's real biological father was Win Rockefeller. This is as close as you can get to American royalty.

Winston ran for five political parties and became Prime Minister three times (Coalition 1940–45, Caretaker 1945, Conservative 1951–55). Bill Clinton ran for the Democratic Party, became President twice (1992–96–2001) and enacted the Republican agenda including globalisation. His bisexual wife Hillary Rodham is now running for the US presidency. Both Clintons are Republicans in the Democratic Party. As Bill Clinton said, "I love George Herbert Bush", and as the commoners note:

"It's a one-party system run by bisexuals in cover marriages."
"The Democrats are a shill for the Republicans."

Similarly, Winston Churchill could be considered a fascist fronting as a socialist who fought his cousin's son,[15] Adolf Hitler, also a fascist fronting as a socialist. Politics always achieves the opposite of what it apparently sets out to do.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

It was Winston Churchill's nephew King George VI who asked Churchill to be Prime Minister to form an all-party Coalition Government. The other two party leaders were also present at the meeting and agreed to the request. Churchill broke with tradition and did not send Neville Chamberlain a message expressing regret over his resignation.

Thus Churchill became Prime Minister of England when his nephew the King of England asked him to. There has never been an easier in. It was thereafter a British monarchy government for the duration of WWII and fascism against the commoners of England was the name of the German rulers' game. By German rulers I mean King George VI, Winston Churchill and Adolf Hitler.

Winston Churchill was a child of war and controlled three wars. His conception on 24 February 1874 has a lot in common with the conceptions of the love children Mary Theresa Olivia 'Daisy' Cornwallis-West (22 September 1872), George Frederick Myddleton Cornwallis-West (8 February 1874) and Sonia Rosemary Keppel (18 August 1899).

---

[15] See *How To Take Over The World, A Right Royal Con*, 2007, p. 189 and the following chapter.

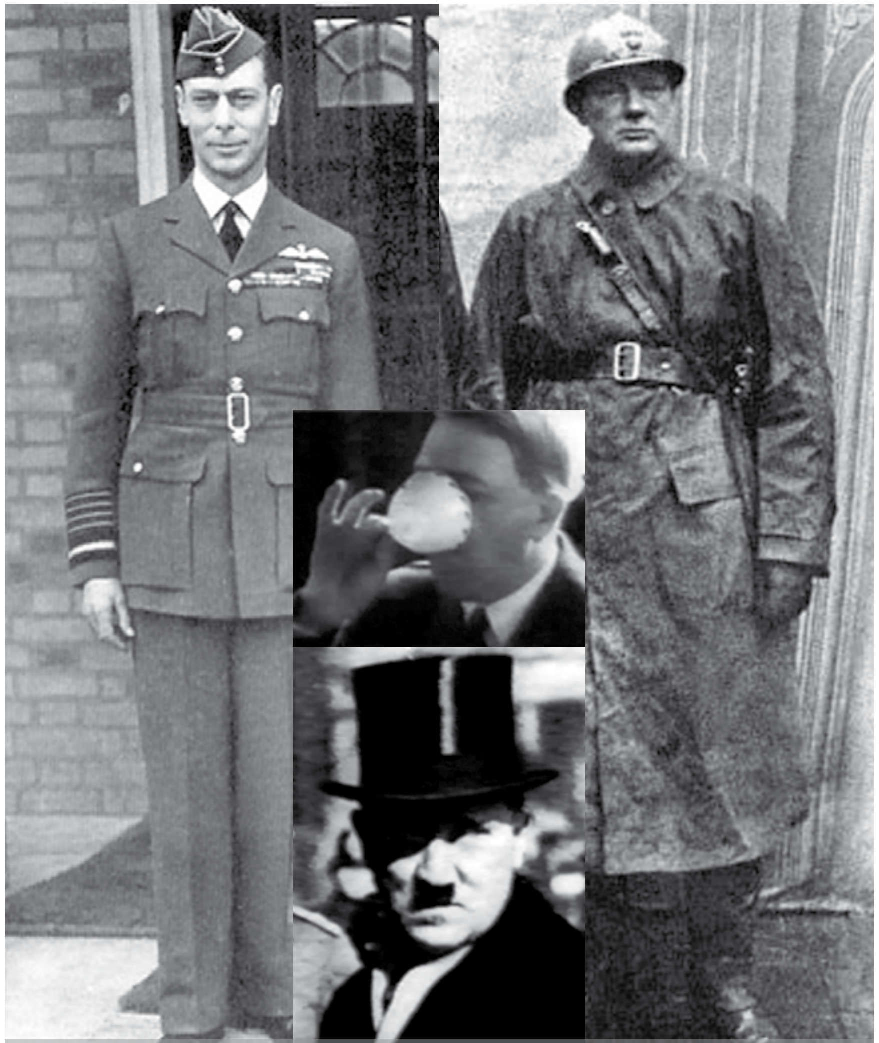

The relatives: King George VI, Hitler, and Winston Churchill.

Prince ‘Bertie’ Edward

Prince ‘Bertie’ Edward was a sex addict. He virtually used his position to have sex with as many people as possible and whomever he pleased. He hated the monarchy so much he tried to destroy it by having many sexual affairs with girls as young as 14, sex with his daughters, and overlapping mistresses. He was openly affectionate with mistresses inside his household, at formal parties, in front of his wife and children, and in public.

Historians boggle at how Edward, Prince of Wales got away with it, but then historians are the least-sexed profession, being virtual eunuchs with royal access, or paedophiles maintaining mutual cover. The historians were all employed by the Rothschilds as embedded historians to maintain royal secrets so that the Rothschilds could maintain control over the monarchies of Europe and therefore war. This translated into huge profits for the Rothschilds’ banks since they owned the central banking system.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -

The British Royal Family are a subset of the Rothschild family and are utilised as part of the Rothschild business as a money-making venture to create war. In exchange, the class system is maintained and royal indiscretions are overlooked.

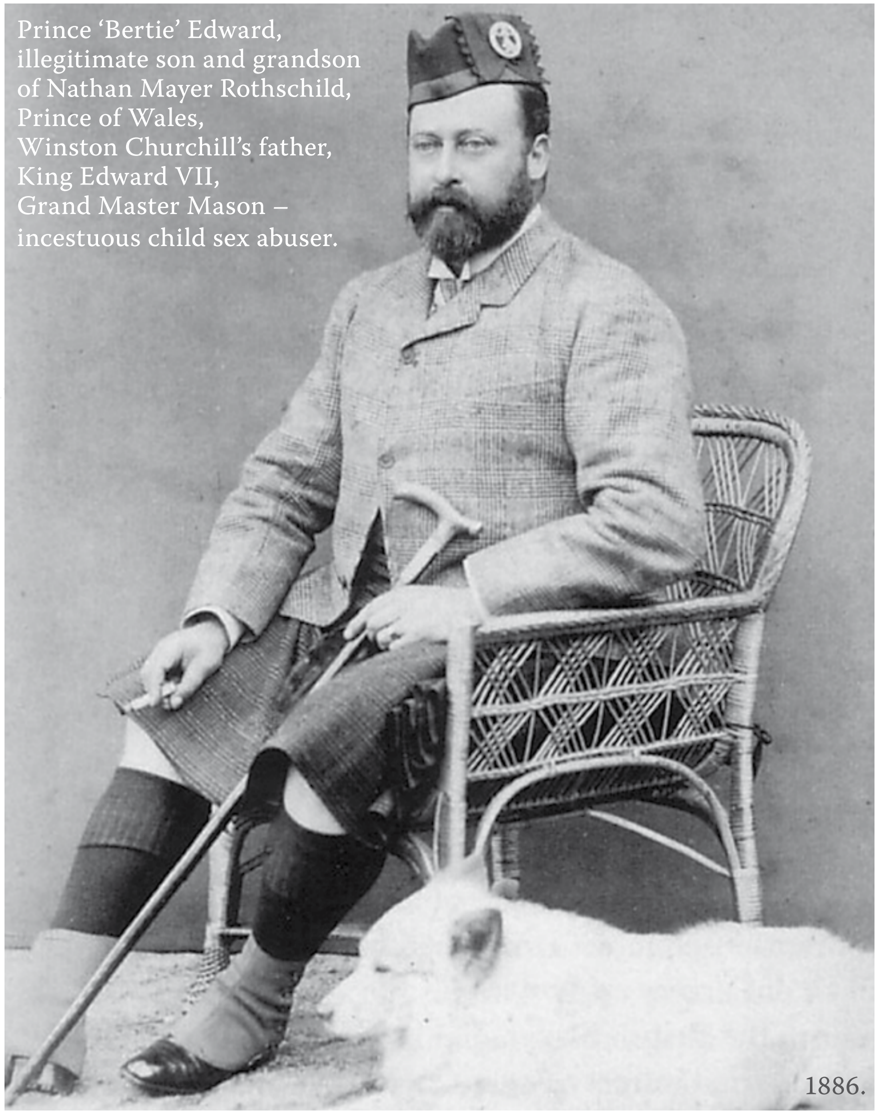

Prince ‘Bertie’ Edward,
illegitimate son and grandson
of Nathan Mayer Rothschild,
Prince of Wales,
Winston Churchill’s father,
King Edward VII,
Grand Master Mason –
incestuous child sex abuser.

1886.

There had been a Freemasons' move to overthrow the monarchy since 1776. Prince 'Bertie' Edward was part of the monarchy but he was also the Grand Master Mason from 1874, which stopped any revolution and meant that the Freemasons and the British royals worked hand in hand, especially when the little hand met the big hand. Randolph Churchill joined four years later (1878), quickly rose to the top, and doubled as the father of one of Prince 'Bertie' Edward's many illegitimate children.

The Guild system helped to silence any talk of the monarchy by ensuring they owned all professional licences, and Guild members came up with PR lines to help the King deflect any accusations regarding his many mistresses. One of the more famous lines issued from Prince Edward's mouth was: "People only left the class to which they were born with consequences." Nothing has changed down the ages, and as a result we are not meant to know that the current Prince Edward's daughter Louise was conceived by her grandfather Prince Philip.

One of the British Royal Family's main functions now is to stop the rampant paedophilia amongst married-for-cover Freemasons reaching the public. This has created a mutual silence and neither the Freemasons nor the British Royal Family openly criticise each other. There is no war of words, but there would be if one group had the moral high ground.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

> To the royals and the Freemasons the crime is not doing the crime. The crime is getting caught.

Prince 'Bertie' Edward frequently gave expensive sexually related gifts and treated his women as concubines (lightweight prostitutes). Many of them were the daughters of concubines, prostitutes, courtesans, or secretly illegitimate young women who became pregnant, officially, to rich and powerful men, or titled men in need. There was also a definite pattern of children of Anglican reverends being very promiscuous from a young age and delving into the royal cock (e.g. Anthony Blunt).

We suffer from the same history today. Close inspection shows that the royals were into child sex abuse (children 13–15), and even closer inspection shows that they were into paedophilia (children under 13), both the men and the women, and the popular ones to . . . to this day – we'll have to wait another 85 years to make this public. In the meantime, we make notes and spread them around for safety and insurance.

> The result of these shenanigans was a British Royal Family tree that looked like minestrone soup dangling off a cast-iron spoon.

The Current Prince Edward

Prince Edward (b. 10 March 1964) is well rumoured to be the son of Queen Elizabeth II and her long-time companion Lord Patrick Plunket, Deputy Master of the Royal Household (1954–75).

According to Lady Campbell's *The Royal Marriages*, the subject of Lieutenant-Colonel Baron Plunket of Newton, CVO, fathering Prince Edward is taboo. Lord Plunket was considered to be highly effeminate and sexually inactive, although he regularly took the Queen, disguised in a scarf, to the Odeon cinema on King's Road, Chelsea and then dined her across the road at Raffles Club.

Lord Patrick Terence William Span Plunket, 7th Baron Plunket of Newton was born on 8 September 1923 and died in 1975. When he died the Queen wept openly and buried him at the Royal Family's private burial ground at Frogmore, Windsor Park. The date is not given, which is suspicious, and motive points once again to Prince Philip. The other is Lady Diana.

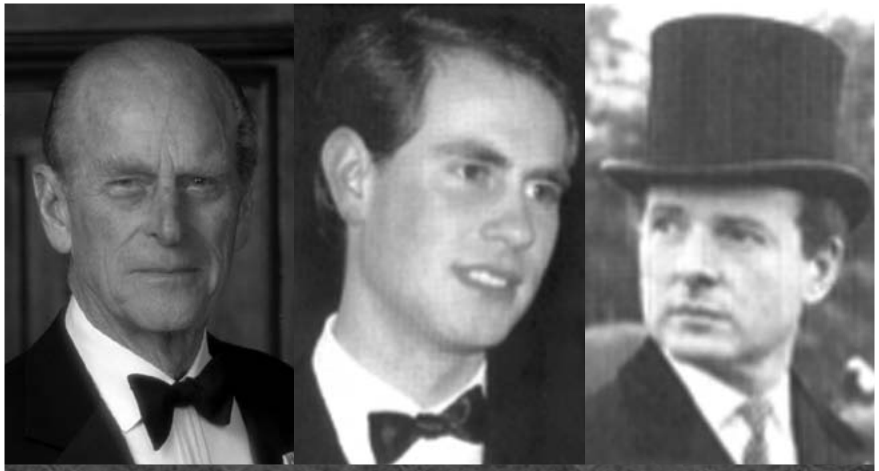

House father Prince Philip, Prince Edward, and biological father Lord Plunket.

Prince Edward's looks, mannerisms and sexuality are completely at odds with Prince Philip who is a raging sex addict of historic proportions, so much so that his sexual escapades in South America have been under suppression for over forty years.

After a proactive homosexual career that spanned many countries, continents and even psychiatric institutions, the effeminate Prince Edward finally settled on a cover marriage to Sophie Rhys-Jones.

Rather than be styled 'Duke' on his wedding day (19 June 1999), Prince Edward was styled 'Viscount Severn' and 'Earl of Wessex'. No one has used the title 'Earl of Wessex' since Harold Godwinson, prior to his brief accession to the throne as the last crowned Anglo-Saxon King of England (5 Jan.–14 Oct. 1066), after which the Jews took over England.

Many histories state that Prince Edward is Queen Elizabeth II's son and not Prince Philip's son, and many historians consider the styling of Prince Edward as 'Earl' and not 'Duke' to be a downgrade commensurate with an illegitimate child. That Prince Edward is linked to a British king prior to the Norman invasion, the Stuart takeover and the German Hanover TWET (Tactical Exercise Without Troops),[16] sets him apart even more. To cover for this, Edward is to be styled HRH Duke of Edinburgh on Prince Philip's death, but this conflicts with his older brother Prince Charles, if he is still alive. Like his father Lord Plunket, Prince Edward, Viscount Severn, Earl of Wessex is the personal aide-de-camp to his mother (from 1 August 2004).

Prince Edward spent a gap year at Wanganui Collegiate in New Zealand serving as a house tutor and junior master for two terms from September 1982. Rod Butler was the head of Wanganui CIB/CID who looked like Reginald Perrin/Leonard Rossiter but had Army training and was an Intelligence Officer. Butler got the most unusual job from on high in Wellington regarding eleven parents' complaints of Prince Edward's homosexual behaviour towards their sons. It took Butler four months to convince parents they were wrong and in the end the Queen stepped in and paid for an extraordinarily well-equipped theatre in the Wanganui School grounds – the Prince Edward Theatre. Butler was a good policeman and proud of his work (bribing parents and mending arseholes) and he thought his career was really going places. He told the Spymaster, "My career is really going to go places" and the Spymaster replied, "Your toenails will be pointing skyward" – and sure enough, after he had covered for the sadistic homosexuality of Prince Edward, he died of cancer at the young age of 50 (around 1996 with records hard to find). Prince Edward then chased one of these boys he had rooted to a cottage on the grounds of a psychiatric hospital in England.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

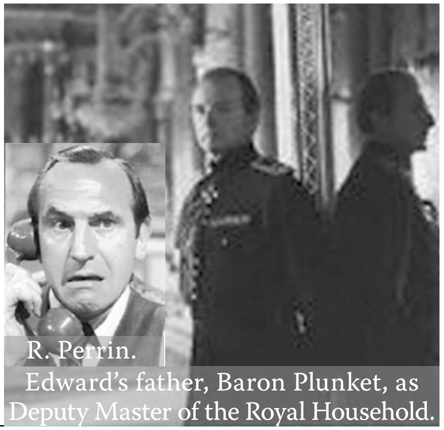

R. Perrin.
Edward's father, Baron Plunket, as Deputy Master of the Royal Household.

---

[16] See *How To Take Over The World, A Right Royal Con*, 2007, pp. 12–46.

One of Priince Edward's victims, Mr Tanner, was up on a charge of murdering his girlfriend. The Queen intervened and offered to pay for his defense. The Queen then arranged to have Mr Tanner plead guilty. This really knocked the family back in New Zealand for a six.

Prince Edward joined the marines, but being too weak, effeminate and homosexual he was forced to leave prior to graduation. He then worked for Andrew Lloyd Webber's theatre company as a tea boy and dated actress Ruthie Henshall in exchange for two years' cover. After this, he made *It's a Royal Knockout*, which involved actors running around doing kids' stuff. It was so widely ridiculed, people stopped ridiculing it. He then started Ardent Television production company, which ran at a loss and he had to step down, using the Queen's Golden Jubilee year as an excuse.

On 9 January 1999, Edward became engaged to Sophie Rhys-Jones for cover. They had a small wedding ceremony on 19 June 1999 at St Georges Chapel, Windsor, as opposed to the traditional large wedding in Westminster Abbey. Rumours of his homosexuality remained and the location added weight that he was illegitimate.

Deputy Master of the Royal Household, Lord Plunket's son, the 'Bald Rabbit' Prince Edward with Plunket's daughter-in-law and Prince Philip's stone-deaf daughter. The SAS refer to Edward as "the shit-eating reticulated rabbit".

Sophie Rhys-Jones, Countess of Wessex conceived around 2 March 2003 and gave birth to a daughter, Lady Louise Alice Elizabeth Mountbatten-Windsor, on 8 November 2003. She was born one month premature and as deaf as a post. It is their only child and she is formally styled HRH Princess Louise of Wessex.

Sophie Rhys-Jones enjoys carriage riding. Edward's house father Prince Philip runs carriage riding in England. Prince Philip conceived a child with his daughter-in-law Sophie Rhys-Jones. HRH Princess Louise of Wessex's father is also her grandfather. This is shades of Nathan Mayer Rothschild with Princess Viktoria fathering Queen Victoria, then fathering her son King Edward VII.

Nathan Mayer Rothschild officially died in 1836, but in reality died in 1850. My father used to shear sheep for King George VI's doctor, and certain sayings stuck in my mind like: “Nothing lies like a Jewish cemetery”.

Spymaster: “A family that roots together stays together. This is a repeating sexual pattern.”

Prince Philip wrote *Competition Carriage Driving* in 1982, was president of the International Equestrian Federation (1964–86), and was involved in defining the *International Rules for Carriage Driving.*

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

On 23 May 2006 the official inauguration of the new facilities at Bedgebury Forest took place with Sophie, Countess of Wessex being the Forestry Commission's guest of honour. At the event Sophie informed them that she is learning carriage riding and is being taught by Prince Philip's head groom, Mickey Flynn. Marc Berquin then proudly informed Sophie, “Prince Philip is my father”. Sophie quickly translated the French as “Prince Philip is my idol”.[17]

“**She's without doubt his favourite daughter-in-law** and now Sophie has delighted Prince Philip by taking over his reins in the carriage driving stakes. It's a brave move for Sophie, the sport of carriage driving being one of the most dangerous and disciplined, especially considering the Countess didn't ride as a child. **As her romance with Prince Edward became more serious, Sophie took up horseriding** so she could bond with the Queen during her regular (daily, if possible) outings in the grounds of the royal homes. The 41-year-old royal is now **enjoying private carriage driving lessons** and is hoping to make her competitive debut at a low-key event, taking charge of Philip's prize Fell ponies. A source tells the *Daily Mail*'s Richard Kay: ‘Sophie has been training in earnest with Philip's head groom Mickey Flynn in preparation for taking over the team. When she and Edward were among the Marquess of Linlithgow's house party for the Hopetoun Driving Trials, she was pestering all the experienced carriage-drivers for tips.’ Now aged 85, **Prince Philip is expected to announce his retirement from the sport he loves in the near future. There's no doubt, though, that he'll be on the sidelines wherever possible to cheer on his much loved daughter-in-law.**”[18]

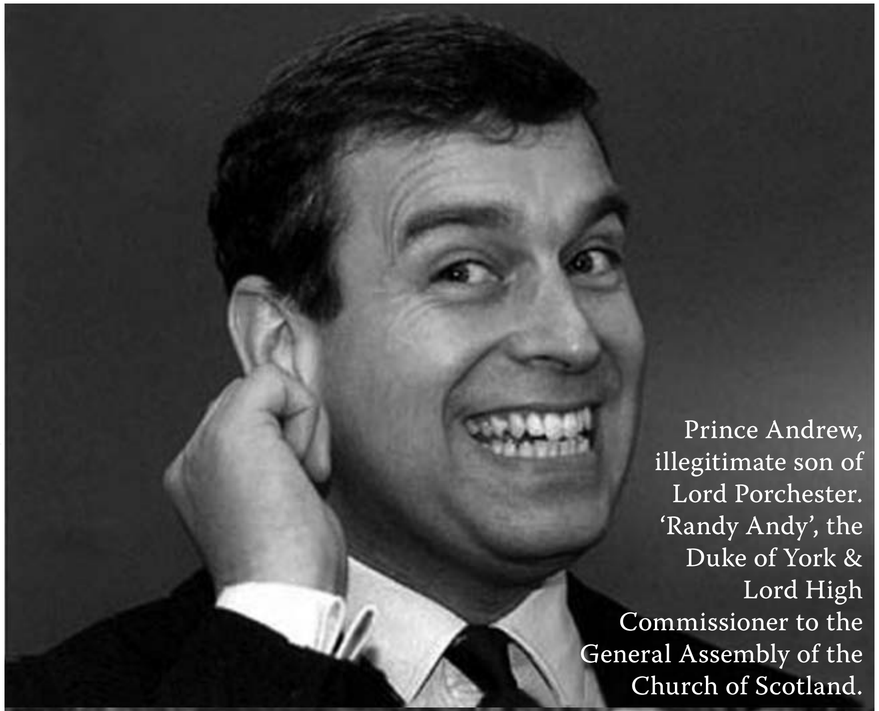

Prince Andrew, illegitimate son of Lord Porchester. ‘Randy Andy’, the Duke of York & Lord High Commissioner to the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland.

---

[17] TROT: Toll Rides (Off-Road) Trust, Spring 2006.

[18] Joanne Leyland, *the Royalist* magazine website, ‘Sophie Takes Over The Reins From Philip’, 21 June 2006.

Spymaster: "Just a little ditty. In 1848, revolutions all across Europe rose up in one go. They were under the control of England, which wasn't touched. The European monarchies were frightened that rights were being given to ordinary citizens and the revolutionaries responded by tearing up all the old orders like toilet paper. Then they established new orders which precluded the European monarchies from any status other than presentation, thus making the surviving monarchies puppet monarchies.

"This gave rise to Nationalism and the Nationalists were led by Cavour, Mazzini (Mafia), Bismarck and Garibaldi. Cavour was considered 'the brains', Mazzini 'the soul', and Garibladi 'the sword'. Garibaldi was the soldier who ran the thing. His grandson was the snout at the top of the Italian Army when it was fighting the British in WWII.

"Monaco has long been an outpost of British Intelligence in France. The Grimaldis act for the British and tax all the heroin going through Monaco on its way to America. San Marco and Lichtenstein have the same outpost status. Baden, Württemberg and Hesse used to be outposts, but they all got rounded up in 1870 when Bismarck was posted there in the wake of British Intelligence."

James Bond III: "I thought religion was a product of alcohol and was something to do during a hangover. Isn't that why Church was moved from Friday to Sunday."

Author: "I'll make the tea. How long have we been telling stories now?"

James Bond III: "Three years."

Spymaster: "It's closer to four, isn't it."

Stalin's British Training

The Sidney Street Siege

History is always written by the winners of the war to reflect badly on the losers of that war. History is not generally written to expose the part the winners played in creating those wars. It is common for the winner to employ historians who will dramatise and confuse events to avoid clarity. The Houndsditch Robbery and the Sidney Street Siege have never been conveyed in a way that can be analysed. To varying degrees, this amounts to fictionalising events, a cover-up and propaganda. It also allows history to sleep, drugged.[1]

The 1910 Houndsditch robbery/killings and the 1911 Sidney Street Siege two weeks later took place on the streets of London. The slums of London and the military training schools of Britain were the training grounds for foreign dissidents – in this case, the Russian Bolshevik Revolution that took place seven years later in October 1917. The British hierarchy turned a large blind eye to what went on in London. This amounted to protective wings for revolutions elsewhere.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

From 1900 to 1920, former CID chief Sir Melville Macnaghten believed that Britain was inundated with the scum of other countries. These were violent Anarchists who wanted to blow up everything. They were Russian Jewish intelligence known as the Betar, and the Betar still exist today. Macnaghten considered Sidney Street to be the most remarkable affair during his time at Scotland Yard. It was popularly known as the "Battle of Stepney".[2]

Stalin was born Losif Vissarionovich Dzhugashvili (1879–1953) in Gori, Georgia. His father left the home when Losif was 11 years old, which was as soon as he recognised Losif was not his son.

Losif/Koba/Stalin is reported to be another illegitimate Rothschild – just as Churchill and Hitler were. This made WWII a cousins' war and a Jewish cousins' war. Churchill was at least ¾ Jew, Stalin was at

---

[1] The events of Sidney Street were depicted in Alfred Hitchcock's *The Man Who Knew Too Much* (1934), but not in Hitchcock's 1956 remake of the same movie. It was then depicted in *The Siege of Sidney Street* (1960).

[2] Stepney is a hamlet of the Tower of London along with Whitechapel, Spitalfields, Bethnal Green, Bow, Bromley-by-Bow, Poplar and Wapping. Their boundaries have been in constant change over the last two millennia.

Iosef Vissarionovich Dzhugashvili.
Ioseb Jughashvili.
Soso.
Soselo.
Geza.
Chopura.
The Priest.
The Milkman.
The Staggerer.
Ryaboi.
Kochba.
Koba.
J. Besoshvili.
David.
Chizhikov.
Oganess Vartanovich Totomyants.
Ivanovich.
Ivanov.
Nizheradze.
Vassilyev.
Vassily.
K. Kato.
K. St.
Ko.
Stalin.
Joseph Stalin.
4

least ½ Jew and Hitler was at least ¼ Jew. In the latter two, the mother's Jewish blood is unknown and not counted, so they could have also had ¾ Jewish blood.

When Losif came of age he was trained as a priest but was removed aged twenty for promoting Marxism over religion. Losif married five years later in 1904 and his wife died in 1907, leaving a son whom he despised, so Stalin went to London and began making intelligence connnections. Losif/Koba/Stalin married again in 1919 and his second wife suicided leaving two more children, one a chronic alcoholic. Like Hitler, Stalin's partners' deaths/suicides were suspicious.

Between 1902 and 1913 Stalin was arrested seven times, repeatedly jailed and exiled twice to Siberia. During this time he didn't use his given name 'Losif', but used his undercover name, 'Koba'. He escaped twice from Siberian prisons, but not without political assistance. Siberia was Britain's favourite recruiting ground for Russian dissidents.

Stalin was a dissident in his own country and therefore prime fodder for any group that wanted to take over and destroy that country. One such group was the Freemasons, whose business is making war and altering the physical and psychological boundaries of nations. Their motto is ORDER OUT OF CHAOS and they will go to any lengths to achieve this, including revolution, civil war, international war, world war, and the installation of trial political methods they know will result in totalitarian dictatorship and genocide. This is the Freemason history. Stalin ended up killing some 68 million people, which saved the British Freemasons taking the blame and doing it firsthand.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

The British Freemasons assisted Stalin in his training and his fundraising for the planned revolution in Russia. They also assisted Stalin in his escapes from Siberia and in bringing weapons unchallenged into England. He was eventually trained in the British military Psych-Ops war school (Tavistock) and another Kriegschule in Ireland which closed down in 1920 during the Irish Civil War and followed Stalin to Russia (Frunze) complete with British trainers.

Tavistock has been going for some 500 years since the English Navy took over the drug trade from the Spanish Navy and is a collection of psycho-military training. It was named Tavistock in 1920 when the Second Baron Rothschild gifted the land at 120 Belsize Lane, London, UK NWs SBA. Its focus is now on worldwide psychological manipulations through the media and education, both of which specialise in misinformation. That is, information that is 'affective only' – hiding the real cause and effect while providing a washed PR substitute.

Formally known as the 'Tavistock Institute for Human Relations', it is informally known as the 'Freud Hilton'. The public version of Tavistock began in 1946 when British military intelligence members 'officially created it'. However, their own records show that Tavistock was started much earlier, in 1920, by Major John Rawlings Reese on the orders of Chatham House.

Chatham House is also known as the Royal Institute of International Affairs (RIIA), which was officially created during the 1919 Versailles Peace Conference along with the American Council on Foreign Relations (CFR). In real terms, this was just their outing.

Tavistock had been developing over the previous 500 years and was the force behind dark Victorian literature, Fabian Socialism[3] and the Jack the Ripper murders of 1888, which occurred during Adolf Hitler's gestation.

The CFR, the RIIA, Chatham House and Tavistock are all controlled by the Round Table, which in turn is controlled by the British Royal Family. Winston Churchill was heavily imbibed into all of these groups.

---

[3] Virtually all British Secret Service directors have been advocates of Fabian Socialism and, the entire British military intelligence since Queen Victoria has been energised towards a One-World Government.

Stalin was given the location of banks and shops to burgle, especially Jewish-owned jewellery stores. He was also given prior warning on how and when to escape by more than one government. While using the name Koba, Stalin organised crime and political motivation in at least five countries including Russia, England, France, Germany and Switzerland.

Stalin showed military and psychological Tavistock training and his insider knowledge by:

1. Knowing exactly what the goal was (what was in the safes).
2. Being sure of every detail.
3. Keeping his operations secret.
4. His method of moving from location to location and between countries undetected.
5. Importing dozens of very accurate German Dreyse and Mauser pistols and ammunition with impunity.
6. Obtaining clearance windows for the burglaries.
7. Getting tip-offs as to when and how to escape.
8. Using the immigrant population as cover.
9. Being better armed than the police.
10. Using intimidation to silence any witnesses.
11. Misconducted trials.
12. Completing three assassinations for the British Government.

Stalin's method of moving around countries undetected came from his Tavistock training. In order to move from hiding-place to hiding-place, the first would go and the second would not move until he had received a coded message from the first. Police cars at the time were a joke. There were many back alleys and rooftops that made knowledgeable foot traffic faster than a car. The average speed of London traffic then and now is the same – 10 miles per hour (16km/h).

Stalin, known as Koba, played on his kudos as a Siberian prison escapee and set up robberies in at least five countries. He was encouraged to rob Jewish-owned banks and jewellery stores in England, France, Germany, Switzerland and Russia in order to fund the Russian Revolution and overthrow the Tsar – the British Royal Family's relative.

The 1917 Russian Revolution played on the undirected revolution of 1905 in which splinter groups with multiple agendas left the Tsar intact.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Ma

This suited the Freemasons, whose principal goals were exemplified in the 1917 agenda-driven Russian Revolution more than any other. The Freemasonry goals for Russia are the same for all countries, Russia being the test case. The Freemasonry goals are to:

1. Destroy all sovereignties, monarchies and cultures.
2. Destroy all national boundaries and patriotism.
3. Promote an homogenised collective that does not tolerate individual expression.
4. Enforce absolute conformity from the controlling establishment.
5. Ensure recurring wars keep people working for dignity.
6. Destroy the concept of man as soul with higher purpose. Humans are to be treated as merely evolved animals having no spiritual nature.
7. Remove the concept of God and replace the supernatural with rational scientific ways of solving human problems.
8. Dissolve all traditional family structures.
9. Ensure all children belong to the State and not to individual families.
10. Promote a *One World Order* (as of 1891) via 'ORDER OUT OF CHAOS'.
11. Promote a world republic based on humanism with a media ban on anything that is not humanistic (i.e. mass genocide, human failings, crop failings and crop destruction).[4]
12. Use the poor to kill the rich, and once the new authoritarian rich are in power, kill the poor, the educated and the dissident.
13. Kill all but one of the revolutionaries – the Freemason/Tavistock British agent Koba (Stalin).

Koba's robberies were called "expropriations" – a name used to justify stealing from the foreign rich to fund the manipulation of the Russian poor so that they could do the same thing as the Tsar, only worse and more so.

In 1888 there were 27,000 Jews in the Tower Bridge Hamlet of Stepney and this resulted in anti-immigration sentiment especially towards the Jews. Another immigration wave escaped from the harsh pogroms of Russia in 1903 and the Jews in London, especially in the East End, became politically motivated. This culminated in the Anarchist Club.

---

[4] Humanism stresses the potential value and goodness of human beings. Russia achieved the opposite, but still used the word *humanism* for its 'anti-theistic, pro-totalitarian rationalism'. This was one of Russia's first successful attempts at changing the meaning of a word to its actualised opposite.

A small group of Jewish Anarchists from Russia were guided by Rudolf Rocker, a blond, blue-eyed ex-Roman Catholic German who educated them on the methods of how to change society.

Others took on a more revolutionary approach and Koba became *the* authority figure famous amongst the down and out, *the* authority figure for 'expropriations' and the only organisational mind seen behind many international bank robberies. Koba had the technical expertise, the inside knowledge, the escape plans, the contacts, the experience and the ideology. He had a revolutionary purpose for the money which appealed to the poor and this kept his fellow robbers content in their poverty while focussed on their future power.

At the time of the Jack the Ripper murders (1888) it was normal to find a man dead on the street every morning. The dead men had injuries that looked like they might have been in a quarrel, fallen over drunk or run over by horse and cart. Cars were still very rare and slow.

Most of the time these weren't classified as murders and no investigation took place. The criminals knew that they could get away with murder if they could make it look like an accident. These were often muggings, where a woman would take a man back to her room and her "fancy man" would mug the victim and take his wallet, killing him if it all went wrong, with the injuries made to look accidental. If he was killed, his body was dumped onto the street and the attitude, in an area where there was no official morgue, was all too casual.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

"Rattle his bones over the stones.
He's only a pauper who nobody owns."

Such murder/robberies went on, at least one a day, for ten years. Most of the victims were aliens and unregistered. If they were still able to talk, they weren't in a position to talk. The frequency of these murders should have put Jack the Ripper back in his box, but the Jack the Ripper murders were immortalised because they were an occult hit.

There were plenty of gangs in Whitechapel breaking heads and ribs – if you were lucky. The Bessarabians and the Odessians were two such gangs and they used to fight each other for territory. These immigrant Poles, Armenians and Russians terrorised the neighbourhood. When a Bessarabian stabbed an Odessian to death, the leader of the Bessarabians was convicted of murder. As a result, the Bessarabians and Odessians were broken up in 1909, but this did not stop them from re-forming in a different style. The Bessarabians used knives whereas the Anarchists used guns.

At that time, Lithuanians, Latvians, Poles and Russians all crowded together in the East End, especially in the heart of Whitechapel where the Anarchist Club on Jubilee Street became the centre for organised immigrant crime.

Stalin, known as Koba at the time, lived at 77 Jubilee Street off Whitechapel Road in 1907. It was from here that he attended the Fifth Congress of the Russian Social Democratic and Labour Party, the forerunner to the Communist Party, along with many other fugitives from the Russian secret police. It's common for historic sites that reflect badly on the establishment to be disappeared and Jubilee Street has since been replaced by a housing estate.[5]

The Anarchist Club formed the basis of three revolutionary groups at the time: the Bessarabians, the Odessians and the Leesma. The first two were closed down by the police in 1909, but the Leesma (the Flame) and the Anarchists survived unchallenged. They got away with bank robberies, burglaries, hold-ups and sieges.

---

[5] Robert Service, *Stalin: A Biography*, March 2005. (Photo is of the VII Congress.)

Many of these immigrants were also Jews. In that area, every continental language was spoken, but with a big smattering of Yiddish. Most of these people had two or more identities and two or more IDs. As a front they were musicians, painters, or watchmakers, but the pay was worse than in their home countries. They made their extra cash from robberies, and in all these robberies they used the Anarchist Club for plotting.

There was no limit to the number or type of immigrants, nor on the number of guns brought into the country. It was not unusual for an immigrant to bring in a dozen guns, declare them, and be allowed into Britain. One Russian was held by Customs at Dover with 47 automatic pistols and even he was allowed into Britain fully laden.

The British police, on the other hand, were only armed with truncheons. This made them completely ineffective against the armed immigrant Russian gangs.

It was as if the British monarchy was supporting anarchy, first in their slums and then in the alien country. Britain had strange rules at the time, turning a large blind eye that bordered on deliberate self-sabotage. In the East End's Whitechapel and in the war schools, Britain was training immigrant revolutionaries to sabotage life in their slums. They were practising, recruiting, fundraising, terrorising, mugging, stealing and killing. London was the training ground to destroy their own foreign countries. In this way, the monarchy was supporting foreign revolutions via the alien crime wave. This saved the colonising British army from doing it. The British always had a method to their madness and the class system was a big player in this.

Many of the people in Stalin's gangs were immigrant lowlives who toyed with guns and revolutionary ideas. Koba (Stalin) was considered to be very important to the social revolutionary cause. Everybody listened with great respect to what he had to say. He was a bank robber, jail-breaker, had escaped from Siberia and was considered to be representative of a revolutionary committee in Geneva, Switzerland – essentially MI-6 and the Jewish conspiracy, Betar.

Spymaster: "There are more Jewish organisations in Switzerland than you can shake a stick at – all very well covered. The Swiss discovered this a few years ago when the entire blueprints of their Mirage Fighter were secretly swished and ended up in the headquarters of IAI (Israeli Aircraft Industries) outside Tel Aviv (Hill of Aviv). The Israelis had stolen the blueprints on their way to destruction. Sympathy towards Israel and Britain is more widespread than was expected and often better rewarded. This was supposedly the work of one man who was sent to prison for a short period. Successfully rehabilitated, he has since been the recipient of many books on Israel donated by grateful Israeli admirers. In the official version: 'He had received no financial consideration at all.' If you believe this you're probably prepared to believe cuckoo clocks are the basis of Switzerland's wealth."

Tsar Nicholas II.

Koba had plans to assassinate the Tsar and these were discussed in minute detail in the Anarchist Club. Nihilists from Russia, socialists from Germany and communists from France would meet at the Anarchist Club in the very rough and violent East End of London. These idealists included the Houndsditch/Sidney Street gang and they were armed to the teeth with Mauser and Dreyse pistols.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

The immigrant gangs had more guns, better guns and could get to them quicker than the London police or Scots Guard. The police had human numbers but the Russians had guns, local cover from other immigrants (many of whom were threatened by both sides) and inside knowledge from Churchill's Home Office via Special Branch to Koba. This was the same in France, Germany and Switzerland. Koba was being gifted the money to overthrow the Tsar. Communism was in motion with British Freemasonry support and **ORDER OUT OF CHAOS** was being set in motion for Russia.

Nikolai Tomacoff (21) was a Russian who had left St Petersburg, Russia in August 1910, four months prior to the Houndsditch robbery. He played and taught the balalaika (right) and was part of the Slavonics, a band of six that sang and played traditional Russian music. He got less than two shillings for a night's work and was better paid in St Petersburg. All he wanted to do was to make some money and meet young English girls.

Nikolai Tomacoff arrived with his friend Ivan Lebeder from Lithuania and they shared one room in a small dank lodging in Whitechapel with eleven others. It was in a badly lit area with narrow twisting alleys with filth laying about the streets. Ivan Lebeder belonged to the revolutionary group the Leesma (the Flame) and Ivan was a bank robber. Nikolai did not consider himself a revolutionary and did not particularly like the Russian Jews in the East End.

Nikolai Tomacoff used to drink at the Anarchist Club and at the Three Nuns in Aldgate. Shortly before these events took place, an Englishman in a bowler hat approached him at the Three Nuns and they agreed to meet again in a pub in Tottenham Court Road outside the East End.

The man in the bowler hat introduced himself as Mr Quinn and said he had seen Nikolai playing the balalaika at the Anarchist Club and knew of his friendship with Ivan Lebeder and with others of the same revolutionary group. This Mr Quinn offered Nikolai one gold sovereign to hear everything they were doing and planning. Thereafter they met each week. Nikolai Tomacoff was paid five shillings for information, ten shillings for good information, and the bus fare from Whitechapel for no information. Sometimes they had a shilling Yorkshire pudding dinner together. Mr Quinn read Russian, but spoke little of it. Nikolai spoke a little English but did not write it, so they communicated in French. Mr Quinn successfully inducted Nikolai Tomacoff into spy work via their shared third language.

Patrick Quinn was an Irishman with twinkling eyes and a neat little goatee. He had been with Special Branch for over 25 years (from 1885) and was now the Superintendent. The Special Branch was originally founded as the Special Irish Branch after the Phoenix Park murders. Special Branch was more concerned with spies, especially German spies, who were very active in Britain prior to WWI. As Head of Special Branch, Quinn knew of a plan for a robbery before it occurred, but, as he said, he didn't have enough details to pass the information on.

Spymaster: "This is debateable."

Fritz Svaars (25) was a native of Libau, Russia. He had been tortured by the Okhrana, the Tsarist secret police in Riga. He was a locksmith by trade, a bank robber by profession and a revolutionary by nature.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Errico Malatesta.

On 15 December 1910 Fritz Svaars went into an electrical store owned by the famous Italian Anarchist Errico Malatesta (a mechanic) who had been living in England for some years. Fritz bought an oxygen cylinder and tubing off him, telling him it was for a magical show. Fritz did not give his real name and sent a boy around to pick it up as per Koba's instructions. Like most of the others, Fritz followed Koba's (Stalin) instructions to the letter.

On the morning of 16 December 1910 Special Branch informant Nikolai Tomacoff gave mandolin lessons to Fritz Svaars at the Anarchist Club. Fritz was full of stories of shop burglaries, being ambushed and shooting his way out, killing a policeman and a shop-owner during his getaway. He was fierce when necessary, but didn't look it. He was 1.75 m tall (5'9") with an average build, slim by current standards. He had grey eyes, pimples and prominent cheekbones, with square shoulders tilted slightly forward. He was excitable and considered somewhat of a lightweight, but also a wild character who would rather die than be caught.

Fritz Svaars was also gentle and sentimental and had a fondness for dressing up and acting. Occasionally he practised the mandolin with his tutor Nikolai Tomacoff at the Anarchist Club in preparation for the upcoming Christmas play. At other times they practised at 59 Grove Street where he lived with his depressing Russian-Jewish girlfriend Luba Milstein. She was a heavy, dull-looking girl, criticised by all.

Fritz had a moustache turned up at the ends, and like all revolutionaries, fancied his chances. In this way, he also lacked caution. He was a boaster and had been saying to Nikolai Tomacoff for a week or more that he and his friends would be rich in a few days. He told Nikolai that the oxygen cylinder was for a burglary. "Something big is happening, my friend. Important people are here, people like Koba. We are going to be rich."[6]

---

[6] All unattributed quotes in this section are from from Julian Symons, *The Siege of Sidney Street*, London, 1978.

Mandolin teacher and Special Branch spy Nikolai Tomacoff: "You mean the cause is going to be rich."

Fritz Svaars: "It is the same thing." Fritz then took a Browning automatic from his pocket and showed Nikolai. Nikolai asked Fritz if it was for a bank robbery and Fritz said, "Not a bank". Fritz was mercurial, and after brandishing his gun he invited Nikolai to join them at their meeting that afternoon at his place, 59 Grove Street, Commercial Road, in London's East End.

Grove Street had three rooms, one on the ground floor and two on the first. There were thirteen very steep stairs leading to the upper floor with no banisters or handrail. As with idealists, everything was dark, dirty and a mess.

There were seven people in the little upstairs room and Nikolai had met six of them before at the Anarchist Club. The group was lacking funds and this was the main reason they let Nikolai in. They had already made the mistake of bringing people into the group who were considered stupid.

Peter the Painter (29) was Fritz's roommate. He got his name from occasionally working as a house painter, but his real name was Peter Piatkow. He was 1.78 m tall (5'10") with hard, narrow, sharp, disconcerting eyes which made him look arrogant. He had a fancy black moustache which he waxed and curled up at the edges into fierce points. His hair was closely cropped and he was always smartly dressed with a bevy of girlfriends. Like his roommate Fritz Svaars, he was a boaster.

George Gardstein (24) was their leader in London. He had a natural air of command and it was easy enough to imagine him as an aristocrat. He was a Lett, of the Lettish revolutionary group in his own country. He had six aliases and carried two passports under the names of Morin and Mourrewitz. He was also known as Poolka Milowitz and by several other names. George Gardstein was also an alias and none of them knew his real name.

George was shortish, slim, with dark hair, pale-faced with strong checkbones, and was always neatly dressed in dark clothes. He had delicate hands and feet and was elegant, almost feminine, in his movements. By the age of 24 he was an old hand at bank robbery and was wanted by the German police. He spoke and wrote Russian and French and spoke and understood a little English. He was Koba's right-hand man in London and Koba (Stalin) had big plans for him.

It was love at first sight for George's mistress, Nina Vassilleva (23). Her father had been a chef at the St Petersburg Palace and lost his job after the fractionalised 1905 revolution due to his Jewishness. This occurred when Nina was at the politically formative age of 18. After the revolution, her father encouraged Nina to leave Russia. She had worked as a servant for a family in Dalston, in north-east London (1906–09) but all she really wanted to do was to make revolutionary propaganda in London. In the process, she accepted George as her revolutionary leader.

She was an intelligent, determined woman with a touch of class and education. She was 1.65 metres tall (5'6") had fair hair, blue eyes, a drawn face and a slim build, but was quite full-breasted, which helps in revolutions. She was a good-looking but intense Russian Jew who spoke Russian, Yiddish, French and a little English with a strong accent. She was a classy but slightly hard piece and life had aged her somewhat. She rolled cigarettes for a living and was also known as Lina and had a passport in the name of Minna Gristis. Nina Vassilleva/Lina/Minna Gristis was a frequent visitor to the Anarchist Club.

William Sokoloff, known by all as Joseph, was a member of the Leesma revolutionary group. He was a tall man with a limp and dragged his right foot behind him. He was a watchmaker by profession and a thief by occupation. He took jobs with jewellers and then stole their stock, making the theft look like an outside burglary. He was jealous of George Gardstein, their leader in London.

Fritz's cousin, narrowed-eyed Jacob Peters was there too. Jacob Peters (Jan Peters or Yakov Peters but known as Peters) had had his fingernails torn out by the Tsarist police, the Okhrana. He used to say that his cousin Fritz Svaars was the true revolutionary and Fritz used to say that his cousin Jacob Peters was the true revolutionary.

After the Russian Revolution in 1917, Jacob Peters became the Deputy Chairman of the Cheka, which investigated counter-revolutionary activities. Many were executed under him at their Moscow headquarters in Lubyanka prison. By 1922 the Cheka reputation was so bad they had to do some PR work and change their name. As an intimidating totalitarian organisation, they changed their name to something much worse – the OGPU, the 'Extraordinary Commission for Combating Counter-Revolution, Sabotage and Speculations'. Jacob Peters became a mass executioner.

Espavo Sarzo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

The OGPU later became the NKVD (1934), MVD (1946) and the KGB (1953) after Stalin's death. After the fall of the Berlin Wall the KGB was renamed FSB by the British (aka the 'KG used to B') and the head of the KGB became the president of Russia in December 1999.

There was a stranger in the corner of the room at 59 Grove Street. He sat on the only armchair, puffing away on a pipe. He had a heavily pockmarked face, small shrewd eyes and was older than the rest. His name was Koba (31), who was to become Stalin, Russia's future dictator from 1927 to his medically assisted death in 1953.[7] The Special Branch informant Nikolai Tomacoff had been led straight to the leaders of the future Bolshevik Revolution as they made their final preparations for another fundraiser – an expropriation, a jewellery heist.

George Gardstein ran the British operation in London. George spoke to the others in pure classical Russian with no slang or colloquial phrases. He said they had 36 hours to complete the robbery, from Friday night through to Sunday morning. The Jewish Sabbath started on Friday night and continued through all of Saturday. During this time the Jews prayed, after which they would be out on the street again, going about their business. This was the same pattern with the Russian, Polish, Lett and Slavic Jews.

Espavo 5020 - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Fritz Svaars began revealing secrets of the planned robbery in front of Special Branch informant Nikolai Tomacoff by saying the difficulty was going to be in keeping the noise down. Gardstein and Nina then cut him off and the topic quickly changed to the Anarchist Christmas play in which Fritz had reluctantly agreed to play the part of a policeman.

---

[7] Stalin was killed off on the instructions of his Jewish minder Winston Churchill. Stalin was killed off because he was hell-bent on WWIII. WWIII with nukes would have been an entirely different proposition to WWII. Stalin was a much older man and there was genuine fatigue in (and of) his decision-making at all levels of the party. The KGB and the GRU were utterly unable to do anything about him as was intended . . . so the British were forced to take their own agent out themselves. As is routine in these cases, it is the structure the British set up to safeguard their leader that was used to liquidate their leader. Because there were so many safeguards in that structure it was never seriously considered that it would be used, and was virtually a replay of Rasputin's death. There was a structure in place to render Stalin medical assistance but it was never activated and that comes down to a Sentry failure. These Sentries were picked officers of the NKVD and their failure was virtually incomprehensible. The guard commander should have been called. Instead the Sentries and his Jewish doctors stood by and watched Stalin die, refusing him all medication. That there was no punishment handed out confirms it was an organised occurrence.

There was to be a lot of shooting in the play and Peter Piatkow (Peter the Painter) jumped off the bed, snatched up the Mauser revolver, pointed it at Fritz and pulled the trigger. Fritz play-acted, put his hand on his heart, cried, "I'm shot, I am killed" and fell down. Fritz then got up and started playing the mandolin. Peter the Painter started to dance, Joseph (William Sokoloff) began to hum, and Gardstein put an arm around Nina, whirling her around.

Jacob Peters (the future Deputy Chairman of the Cheka) sat on the stool looking on blankly and Koba (the future Russian dictator) smoked on his pipe in dismay. The scene was such a rapid change that they presented as an untrustworthy schizophrenic troop, but it was still magnificent cover.

Koba (Stalin) considered many in the Anarchists to be stupid and probably soon dead. With this in mind, he spoke, quietly, but so that the room stopped. He said, "Comrades, do we have any idea exactly what is in this safe?" 'Comrades' was a word that no one else in the group used. It was, however, a word that was to become common amongst the cause after its success.

Koba then asked for Nikolai to be removed. Although Nikolai was allowed into the room as a potential patron, he was not allowed to join the gang. Nikolai left and an hour later he phoned Mr Quinn, something he was asked to do only in case of an emergency. Special Branch Superintendent Patrick Quinn was not so much interested in the burglary as in Koba. He knew Koba was Russian, an authority figure amongst the revolutionaries, and in charge of robberies in at least five countries.

That evening (Friday 16 December 1910) was the eve of the Jewish Sabbath. Most of the people living in the area were Jews so the streets were deserted. The Anarchist gang had recently rented two buildings adjacent to the Harris jewellery store in the Exchange Buildings in Houndsditch. They were trying to burrow through the brick wall to the neighbouring jewellery shop using hammers, saws and drills. Once inside, they intended to use a gas torch to cut open the Harris jewellery safe. But the robbery went wrong, not because of the information Nikolai Tomacoff gave Pat Quinn (who did nothing with it), but because they made so much noise. They actually expected to break through a double-skin exterior brick wall at night without being heard.

The young police probationer Walter Piper heard the noise, questioned one of the Anarchist gang and then ran to the police station. On the way he saw Sergeant Robert (Bob) Bentley (City of London Police – CoLP) and told him what was going on. Sergeant Bob then told him to go to the Bishopsgate City of London Police Station. He arrived just after 11 pm. Walter Piper told Sergeant Arthur Bryant (CoLP) that there was heavy drilling, sawing and hammering going on in the Exchange Buildings in a little cul-de-sac street on the right-hand side of Houndsditch and that he had told Sergeant Bob, who was now heading down there.

Walter Piper omitted to tell the sergeants that he had spoken to one of the robbers and that they were now on their guard. Sergeant Arthur Bryant left with Sergeant Charles 'Daddy' Tucker (CoLP) and one other City of London Police Sergeant who remains unnamed.

When they arrived, the shutters were closed over the windows but you could still see the gaslight shining through and there was a heck of a lot of knocking noise coming from the cellar next door.

There were seven policemen in all: three sergeants, two uniformed constables, and two plain-clothed constables. There was Sergeant Robert 'Bob' Bentley, Sergeant Arthur Bryant, Sergeant Charles 'Daddy' Tucker, Constable Strongman, Constable Ernie Woodhams, and the two plain-clothed constables who remained unnamed. The five uniformed police were armed with truncheons. None of them had guns.

The police covered the Harris jewellery store door, the exit to Houndsditch and the exit to Cutler Street. At 11.30 pm Sergeant Bob Bentley gave a loud policeman's knock on the door – bang-bang-bang.

On the side of the robbery there were six armed Anarchists; George Gardstein, Fritz Svaars, Jacob Peters, Nina Vassilleva, the limping William Sokoloff and an extra they had roped in named Max. They were armed with very accurate Mausers and Dreyse pistols. Fritz Svaars carried a Browning pistol as well.

Mauser.

Dreyse.

Browning.

George Gardstein, Fritz Svaars, Jacob Peters and Nina Vassilleva were inside the property next to the Harris jewellery store. Nina was upstairs keeping watch and later said the street was teeming with police, although there were only five in uniform. Her group all escaped together. The limping William Sokoloff (Joseph) and Max were outside keeping watch and a couple of curtains were raised on the house opposite.

Bang-bang-bang. The door next to the Harris jewellery store was opened to a dark interior. There was a fire burning in the room to the right, and the man in the doorway, Gardstein, was silhouetted and not readily identifiable. Sergeant Bob Bentley asked him a couple of questions, but he didn't answer. He then asked if there was anyone in the house who could speak English. Gardstein nodded and closed the door on them. The sound of hammering then stopped.

Fritz Svaars and Jacob Peters heard the police. In the time between Gardstein closing the door and the police bashing it in, the Anarchists set a trap. Fritz had placed a pre-prepared ball of gun cotton soaked in nitroglycerine on the hearth. Before plastic, gun cotton was the favourite explosive. With the heat of the fire it would explode soon enough.

The police then bashed the front door in and entered a silent house. Gardstein was standing at the top of the stairs. Sergeant 'Bob' Bentley asked him some more questions. Gardstein then indicated that the way to the back of the house was through the room to their right with the fire.

Sergeant Bob Bentley and Sergeant Arthur Bryant went into the room, which then appeared to explode. This stunned and temporarily blinded the two sergeants. Fritz Svaars then came in through the backdoor firing. Sergeant Robert Bentley was shot in the shoulder and again in the neck. This second shot severed his spinal chord, paralysed him and almost blew him out of the room. Gardstein then started shooting from the top of the stairs.

In those days, the penalty for murder was hanging, and the Russians were shooting to kill without hesitation. This was 1910 and the Russian Anarchist gang showed advanced military training. Some of them were Betar, a Russian-Jewish organisation that had received the latest military training. Their stock in trade became standard and you can still see their influence in movies today.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Sergeant Arthur Bryant tackled Fritz Svaars and was then shot in the arm and the chest. The room had filled up with blue smoke from the guns firing. As he escaped, twice-shot Bryant stumbled over Sergeant Bentley who had been blown somewhere close to the front door. At the same time, Constable Ernie Woodhams was dragging the still-breathing Bentley out of the house. Constable Woodhams was then shot at close range by Gardstein, who then stood next to the three shot police officers, looked down the street, saw Sergeant Charles 'Daddy' Tucker and Constable Strongman and shot 'Daddy' Tucker dead.

Twice-shot Sergeant Arthur Bryant then stumbled out on to the street to the opposite side, propped himself against a building and was left for dead. He could no longer move his body but he could still see everything that was going on. Sergeant Arthur Bryant was not supposed to survive. In his affidavit he said that it was the now deceased George Gardstein who shot Sergeant Charles 'Daddy' Tucker dead and wounded Constable Ernie Woodhams at the door. It was Fritz Svaars who killed Sergeant Robert Bentley and shot Sergeant Arthur Bryant twice, but Bryant survived to give this testimony.

Interrupted in their bolshy robbery, the Anarchist gang began to escape. Gardstein led the way and was followed out by Jacob Peters, the rat-faced, hunch-shouldered Fritz Svaars and the elegant Nina Vassilleva. Nina was decently dressed with a fur toque (bonnet) on her head and carried a large muff. A muff is a fur tube open at each end to keep the hands warm and is perfect for concealing a weapon.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

The four sprung robbers ran out of the Exchange Buildings towards the main street, aiming for the back alleys of Houndsditch. As they left, they fired at the two remaining plain-clothed constables behind them.

Constable Walter Charles Choat was 1.9 metres tall (6'4") and as big as an ox. He was guarding the main entrance to Houndsditch. Having heard gunfire, armed with a truncheon and acting according to British Police training, he tackled the armed Gardstein, who turned and shot Choat once at point-blank range. Gardstein then tried to release himself, but big-as-an-ox Charley Choat hung on.

Fritz Svaars, Jacob Peters and Nina Vassilleva doubled back to find the big Constable Charley Choat and small Gardstein wrestling. Fritz Svaars shot Constable Choat in the back another seven times at close range before he let go. In the process, Jacob Peters shot George Gardstein through the back into his chest. He was shot so that he could not survive. George was unable to walk and he was carried away by Fritz Svaars and Jacob Peters.

Nina Vassilleva: "In Russia the police would have shot us [so the gang started shooting first to make their escape]. I could not believe it. That we should get clean away, all unhurt, all except for George, the only one who was worth anything."

After the Anarchist gang had left, twice-shot Sergeant Arthur Bryant (CoLP) walked through the streets in a daze calling for a doctor. The two plain-clothed constables were nowhere to be seen. They may have been seconded by Special Branch to observe, in which case they could not interfere and hiked it quick-smart to report back to Special Branch Superintendent Patrick Quinn. Certainly they feature no more in the story.

On their way through the narrow passages at the back of Houndsditch, the Anarchists threatened whoever they encountered. The East End is full of bolt-holes for petty criminals who want nothing to do with the police, and the threatened witnesses later refused to give evidence.

Peter Piatkow (Peter the Painter) replaced Jacob Peters in carrying George Gardstein through the alleyways and Jacob Peters ran off to report to Koba (Stalin).

Nina Vassilleva: "Our journey through the streets and alleys seemed never-ending, but at last we got to 59 Grove Street, where only that afternoon the last conference about the raid had been held. At Grove Street, Peters joined us, having run through the alleys another way. Max had gone off to a friend's house. Somehow, the three of them [Fritz Svaars, Jacob Peters, and Peter Piatkow] dragged George up the stairs, with Joseph [the limping William Sokoloff] and I following them."

Jacob Peters' bullet had entered George Gardstein between his shoulder blades and lodged in his chest, touching the right ventricle. It was an accurate close-range shot aimed to kill. When Fritz Svaars saw George dying he began to sob. He would rather die killing police officers than suffer torture again. Fritz Svaars' girlfriend Luba Milstein brought in a compress for George's mortal wound. She was not considered a security threat and was criticised by all for her cloddish lack of intelligence and plain looks.

Fritz Svaars then joined William Sokoloff and Jacob Peters in the corner of the room where they discussed their next move. Jacob Peters had spoken to Koba (Stalin) on the way back, and like all good revolutionaries in the face of responsibility, they shook Nina's hand and left to find a safehouse. Stalin later joined them and planned their next move.

At 3 am Nina and Luba left the shot George Gardstein by himself and went out into the night in search of a doctor. It was a bitterly cold night, with strong winds and driving rain. They walked with shawls wrapped around their heads to keep themselves warm. Luba walked sideways like a crab and repeatedly told Nina in Yiddish that she had nothing to do with the shooting and did not want to go back to 59 Grove Street. Fritz swore that Luba knew nothing of how he got his money and Nina had agreed by saying that Luba was the most stupid woman she had ever met.

Eventually they found a doctor on Whitechapel Road. The brass plate said Dr Bernstein so Nina spoke Yiddish through a tube at the front door. It was Saturday morning and the Jewish Sabbath. The doctor on duty was a gentile temp doctor who did not understand Yiddish so in her broken English and thick Russian accent Nina said, "A man is very bad – 59 Grove Street. You must come."

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Dr John James Scanlon came out three minutes later and nodded to Nina and Luba. Nothing was said as the three made their way to Grove Street. Luba didn't say anything and peeled off towards the end, going to adjacent Lindley Street.

Dr Scanlon and Nina continued on to 59 Grove Street. He looked at Gardstein's wound (3.30 am), noted that it had nicked the right ventricle and recommended that she take him to hospital. It was his only chance. Gardstein lay there vomiting blood and refused to go to hospital. Nina then followed Dr Scanlon back to the surgery where he made a morphine sedative.

When Nina returned with the medicine around 5 am, George Gardstein was dying. He said, "The doctor will go to the police [which he did]. Tomorrow the police will start a pogrom. When I die you must get petrol, pour it over me and on the bed, and set fire to it [which she didn't]. Then go to Gold Street (which was one place where we had a room, nearby) and burn all the papers there [which she didn't]. Then you must find Koba, tell him that I failed but that the cause will not fail [which she didn't]."[8]

---

[8] From Nina Vassilleva's statement.

Nina: "Where shall I find him [Koba]?"

George: "Through Jacob Peters. But perhaps he has already got away. He is very clever."

Nina had not liked Koba (Stalin) but knew how important he was to the mission. She was sure Koba had escaped and that Jacob Peters was trying to escape. Nina gave George a second dose of the morphine.

George: "You must disappear too. Disguise yourself. Remember all I have said."

Nina tried to give him a third dose of medicine but he refused. "No good" were his last words. George died just after 7 am with six different aliases and no one knowing his real name.

> There was no way Nina was going to burn the body of her lover, or destroy all his mementos. Nina did not go out and buy petrol and this was to be a grave mistake. Nina Vassilleva failed on this mission so badly, and left a linking trail so well lit, that she established herself as a double agent.

Instead of burning Gardstein, his guns, ammunition, plans and paperwork, at 7.15 am Nina left his body and effects as they lay. She then went to friends' houses in adjacent Turner and Lindley Streets but found no one except a rather distraught and miserable Luba who spoke of going to the police and telling them everything she knew.

Nina went to the Anarchist Club on Jubilee Street and no one was there – not Koba, Jacob Peters, Fritz Svaars, William Sokoloff, or Peter the Painter – but everyone at the club knew what had happened. Koba had been informed and had briefed them. They were all frightened of the police and of the women turning, so they gave her no information.

Nina then went to another room she and George occupied on the first floor of Buross Street and began dyeing her hair black and burning some of George's papers. She was in a panic and it was a bad dye job. Streaks of her fair hair showed through the black.

Her landlord Isaac Gordon lived on the ground floor. He was a short, round foreigner with an accent you could cut with a knife. He brought a newspaper up to her room that gave a description of her and what she was wearing the previous night at the Houndsditch robbery. Nina was 23 and the papers had described her as 26–30. It was a hard life she'd been leading.

She burnt some of the things the newspaper had described, the blouse, the skirt, and her black hat, but could not bring herself to burn the feather trimming on the hat or the lining of her skirt. She bundled up the rest of George's papers and gave all the remaining items to her landlord Isaac Gordon. Isaac Gordon gave the skirt lining to his wife Fanny Gordon.

This was against George Gardstein's last wishes and George had been trained by the cunning survivor Koba (Stalin).

Around the same time on Saturday 17 December 1910, Dr John James Scanlon phoned the Leman Street Police Station in Whitechapel (H Division of the Met) and spoke with Detective Inspector Wensley (Met). Dr Scanlon said that he had attended a mortally wounded George Gardstein at 59 Grove Street in Whitechapel around 3.30 am that morning and he was dead by 7.30 am.

Dr Scanlon's phone call brought the Met into the CoLP's case. Up to then, the Met didn't have anything to do with the Houndsditch investigation. It wasn't until the informants started phoning and arriving at the Met station that they got roped in.

Detective Inspector Frederick Porter Wensley joined L Division of the Met in 1888. This covered Lambeth, a tough but decent area. Three years later, in 1891, he transferred as a junior constable to H Division, which covers Whitechapel, the worst slum in London. Four years later, in 1895, he joined the CID. Wensley was a bit of a plodder, had huge feet, noticeable even amongst the police, and lacked imagination at times. He had a heavy frame, drooping jowls and a voice that retained a Somerset West Country burr. He looked and acted like a bloodhound, hence his nickname 'Weasel', also a play on Wensley. At the time, he was considered the finest detective on the Metropolitan police force and therefore the world.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

The City of London Police (CoLP) and the Metropolitan Police (Met) would carry out quite different investigations and their independence meant that they were not always cooperative. Because these were two separate police departments competing for reputations, they would often sabotage each other's investigations. A third party, the Home Office, used this to their advantage every which way. They got the City of London Police and the Metropolitan Police to work together cooperatively, to work separately, and to work against each other when the Home Office wanted to support immigrant crime or cover for the double agent training in order to support revolutions in other countries.

At midday on Saturday 17 December, Detective Inspector Wensley (Met) contacted Chief Constable Melville Macnaghten (Scotland Yard/Met) and asked him to meet him in Whitechapel. Macnaghten (nicknamed Mac, but never to his face) called his chauffeur Crowther, and asked to be driven down to the Met in his Daimler in half an hour. The time lapse allowed Macnaghten to get instructions from above.

> This period started at the beginning of Stalin's British training (1907–11) and ended with the end of Hitler's British training (Feb.–Nov. 1912). Melville Macnaghten's ignorance was crucial to the success of the bigger plan – WWI (1914–18), the Russian Revolution (1917) and WWII (1939–45), that sort of thing.

In 1913 Macnaghten was knighted and became Sir Melville Macnaghten and then retired. He wrote and published *Days of My Years* the same year (1913), which mentions the mysterious Mr Nemo as the chief conspirator in these affairs. You can guarantee his work is a collection of lost leaders. His affidavits were the only ones that got the days of meetings wrong. He also said 100 Sidney Street had no cellar, when it had a full basement.

Since the Jack the Ripper Murders of 1888, Macnaghten had been notorious for getting information wrong, saying that he had solved a case while hiding the files, only to have them turn up sixty years later and be proved false. To detectives today he would be known as an upper-crust saboteur, a specialist in lost leaders, a guaranteed bribe taker, and a file thief – hence his knighthood in 1913.

Detective Inspector Wensley (Met) went to 59 Grove Street and was waiting there with Inspector Thompson (CoLP) when Melville Macnaghten (CID/Met) arrived. They went inside and George Gardstein lay dead on the bed. He had a 7.62-calibre Mauser by his bed and a loaded German Dreyse pistol under his pillow with two clips of ammunition.

The Dreyse was a very up-to-date pistol with a long, accurate barrel. Gardstein also had 50 cartridges of Belgian and German ammunition for other weapons and instructions in French for timing fuses, bomb making and gun specifications. There were letters in Russian which Mac could read, some in a primitive code, some in French, and some addressed to Fritz Svaars and Peter the Painter (Peter Piatkow). From this they knew that the deceased George Gardstein was part of a "resolute and dangerous gang" and who the gang members were.

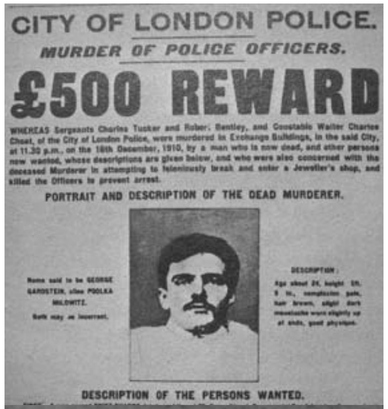

CITY OF LONDON POLICE.

MURDER OF POLICE OFFICERS.

£500 REWARD

WHEREAS Sergeants Charles Tucker and Robert Bentley, and Constable Walter Charles Choat, of the City of London Police, were murdered in Exchange Buildings, in the said City, at 11.30 p.m., on the 16th December, 1910, by a man who is now dead, and other persons now wanted, whose descriptions are given below, and who were also concerned with the deceased Murderer in attempting to feloniously break and enter a Jeweller's shop, and killed the Officers to prevent arrest.

PORTRAIT AND DESCRIPTION OF THE DEAD MURDERER.

Name said to be GEORGE GARDSTEIN, alias POOLKA MILOWITZ.

Both may be incorrect.

DESCRIPTION:

Age about 24, height 5ft. 9 in., complexion pale, hair brown, slight dark moustache worn slightly up at ends, good physique.

DESCRIPTION OF THE PERSONS WANTED.

George Gardstein's eyes were propped open and he was photographed for a 'WANTED' poster to track down his fellow sprung Houndsditch robbers, Fritz Svaars (25), Peter the Painter (29) and Nina Vassilleva (23). A pro rata reward of £500 was offered. The police obviously considered this very important because it was a huge amount of money. It was like giving away a house.

Melville Macnaghten.

Chief Constable Melville Macnaghten (Scotland Yard's CID) usually took lunch at the Garrick Club, but he returned to the Met with Detective Inspector Wensley (Met) and Inspector Thompson (CoLP) for thick roast beef sandwiches. It was 3 pm on 17 December 1910 when Isaac Gordon (Nina and Gardstein's landlord at Buross Street) knocked on the door and asked Detective Inspector Wensley if he could come in. Isaac Gordon was very much in awe of Wensley (Weasel), whom he called Mr Vensel. The foreigners just couldn't get the pronunciation right and never got the joke.

Wensley (Weasel).

Isaac Gordon referred to Gardstein as Mr Morin[9] and said that he demanded privacy in his room and the door remain locked when he was out. He then gave Weasel (Wensley) the papers that Nina had given him around 9 am that morning. The papers included *On the Revolution and on Revolutionary Government*, a passport for a woman named Minna Gristis (Nina Vassilleva), and photographs of George Gardstein, Peter the Painter (Peter Piatkow), Fritz Svaars, Max and Joseph (William Sokoloff). This was to be the gang's undoing.

In six minutes, Wensley, Macnaghten and short, round Isaac Gordon were in the Daimler on the way to Gordon's depressing little boarding house on Buross Street. It was Gordon's first time in a motorcar and he was let out halfway so he wouldn't be seen.

They stopped the Daimler just short of the house on Buross Street. The landlord Isaac Gordon walked past them, entered the house and smoothed the way with his wife Fanny Gordon. Wensley (Met) then got out of the car and knocked on the front door. Macnaghten (Scotland Yard's CID) and Inspector Thompson (CoLP) briefed each other in the car. Macnaghten then went to the front door. Fanny Gordon opened the door to Wensley (Met) and Macnaghten (CID/Met). Thompson (CoLP) waited in the car.

They went to the front room upstairs and knocked on Nina's door. Nina opened the door and stood their defiantly. Melville Macnaghten (who also spoke French) said that he was chief of all the British police. Nina appeared terrified, retreated to the bed and sat down. Wensley, who didn't speak French, accused her of having guns and Nina said they could search the room. This was the intended result of Wensley's accusation.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -- March 2013

Wensley and Mac found the muff that Nina had been wearing at the previous night's bungled Harris jewellery heist, a large blue coat with bloodstains all over it, and a small fireplace where papers and clothes had been recently burnt. This was enough incriminating evidence to lock her up, but that never happened. Nina was already showing signs of being a confidence trickster and double agent.

Wensley showed Nina the photographs of the revolutionaries that Isaac Gordon had given him ten minutes earlier. She denied knowing any of them until she was shown a photograph of her lover George Gardstein and broke down crying. She admitted they lived together at 44 Gold Street.

Nina asked if she was going to be arrested. Wensley (Met) didn't arrest her, which is astonishing because she was part of a burglary that involved three police murders with two others seriously wounded. Wensley merely put on his bowler hat and left Nina looking astonished.

This is called "trusting your agent" and implies long experience of successfully running undercover agents. Most police would not be able to do it, let alone trust an undercover.

---

[9] His aliases included George Gardstein, Poolka Milowitz, Mourrewitz, Mr Morin and at least two others.

On the street, Wensley stopped to have a chat with a man loitering on the corner. It was the young Constable John Holmes who had six years' police service and had been commended for bravery in a bank robbery (more tackling) a couple of years ago. He had been transferred from E Division to H Division the previous year (1909).

It was Fred Wensley's (Met) idea to let Nina go. "We shall get them through the women. Mark my words, the women will give them away." Young Constable John Holmes was then left in charge of following her.

Wensley's prediction was wrong. Nina realised she was being followed night and day by four interchanging large-hoofed police officers. She made no attempt to give them the slip but did take the train down to Dover. She tried to board the boat to France but the police stopped her (Monday, 19 December 1910) and turned her back to London. "If I go to Russia the Secret Police will kill me, and if I stay here I shall be hanged." (Nina was later tried and set free due to a judicial error.)

Churchill riding royal.

Nina went back to Isaac Gordon's lodgings at Buross Street and strangely they remained friends. As an Anarchist Club regular, Nina went one or two more times to the Anarchist Club but was never seen talking to anyone on the wanted list again.

Superintendent Patrick Quinn of Special Branch did nothing to prevent the burglary or arm the police who approached the robbers. He did not even chase after Koba (Stalin). Mr Quinn was more or less reporting to Churchill, who was ensuring the robbery did take place and Koba would not get caught. As such, the Houndsditch robbery was a training exercise and a fundraiser between Stalin and Churchill whose father, King Edward VII, had died seven months earlier on 6 May 1910.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Churchill was the most devious cigar-smoking fat-shit the world has ever seen. This is why he was voted the greatest ever Briton in 2003.

Churchill.

Viscountess Nancy Astor, MP and peerage pimp: "Don't put Winston in the Government – it will mean war at home and abroad. I know the depths of Winston's disloyalty – and you can't know how he is distrusted by all the electors of this country."[10]

Stanley Baldwin (1867–1947) was a conservative MP from 1908, and the British Prime Minister from 1923–29 and 1935–37. As Prime Minister, his non-intervention in Spain in 1936 was regarded as a betrayal of the League of Nations. The Spanish Civil War is universally regarded as the build-up to WWII, largely for the benefit of Germany, especially the trialling of their new planes, aerial bombs, artillery, tactics, and securing a safehaven for Hitler after WWII (OP SAFEHAVEN).

Nancy Astor.

After failing to recognise the threat from Nazi Germany, Stanley Baldwin resigned (28 May 1937) and was immediately congratulated for his ignorance and made Knight of the Garter the same day. Eleven days later he was elevated to 1st Earl Baldwin of Bewdley and 1st Viscount Corvedale, of Corvedale, co. Shropshire [UK] (8 June 1937) and High Steward of Tewkesbury (1939), as well as receiving ten honorary Doctor of Law (LLD) degrees from Oxford, Cambridge, London, St Andrews, Edinburgh, Birmingham, Liverpool, Belfast, Durham and Wales universities.

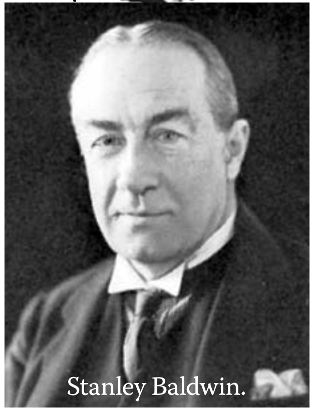
Stanley Baldwin.

When it comes to war you can bet
the universities have got it all wrong.

---

[10] Viscountess Nancy Astor speaking to Stanley Baldwin in 1935, *Voices from the Great War*, p. 265.

Nancy Astor.

Viscountess Nancy Astor (1879–1964) was a politician, aristocratic pimp, and the American-born wife of Waldorf Astor. She succeeded her husband as Conservative MP for Plymouth (1919) and was the first woman to take a seat in the House of Commons. She was the most considered female political voice of her times and ran the Glass Club, London's version of Salon Kitty, a brothel.

There was continual sabotage and intrigue going on in Scotland Yard and between the City of London Police and the Met. Special Branch Superintendent Patrick Quinn worked across the courtyard from chief constable Melville Macnaghten (Mac) at Scotland Yard's Criminal Investigation Department (CID).

Mac liked Pat Quinn, and on Saturday 17 December 1910, after he was contacted about the robbery by Detective Inspector Wensley (Met), Mac made the five-minute walk across the courtyard to see Quinn rather than use the phone. Special Branch Superintendent Pat Quinn told Melville Macnaghten, Chief Constable at Scotland Yard's Criminal Investigation Department, that one of his pigeons (informants) had told him, less than 48 hours ago, that a robbery was going down. Pat Quinn said he hadn't warned him because he didn't have the details . . . and what concerned him was treason, not robbery.

Pat Quinn had spies amongst the Germans and the Anarchists, and would have had some hint of Stalin's Tavistock training. Had he not retired he would equally have known of Adolf Hitler's British training in 1912.

Peter Piatkow (Painter).

The police set up their 'pogrom'. They put undercovers in place as peddlers, shoe-shiners and street hawkers, but they were only fed misleading rumours. The Met and the City of London Police also had dozens of detectives combing every lodging house in the Whitechapel area. It appeared that Peter Piatkow (Peter the Painter), the excitable Fritz Svaars, the limping William Sokoloff (Joseph) and Koba (Stalin) had disappeared.

Their method of transport by sending one out and waiting for a coded message from the other still worked. When Jacob Peters saw Koba (Stalin) straight after the failed robbery they arranged for a group meeting to plan their escape. At this meeting they decided to fake two deaths, those of Fritz Svaars (who had killed Sergeant Bob Bentley and wounded Sergeant Arthur Bryant) and his loyal follower Joseph (William Sokoloff).

> Koba was British trained (1907–11), and for him,
> the East End of London was one big training ground
> and a training exercise was taking place.

After Jacob Peters spoke to him on the night of the Houndsditch robbery, it was widely believed that Koba left England for France on 17 December 1910 via underground channels made available through sympathisers. These included a fishing boat to France from where Koba went to Switzerland (where the 1917 Russian counter-revolution was being planned). The Anarchists had an underground movement in every industrial country and Koba (Stalin) was never underresourced.

> Stalin's escape did happen in this way but it happened
> 18 days later and under historic circumstances.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Koba frequented the Anarchist Club, as did Peters, Fritz, Joseph and Peter the Painter, and they had plenty of contacts there. That the British allowed the Anarchist Club to exist at all is amazing. They had spies there, but the spies were known as spies by both sides and were working for both sides. This was typified by Nikolai Tomacoff, whose information was often two minutes late. He survived, and in style, by informing both sides and producing no results against people he liked. When he didn't like them, which was the case with the more revolutionary Russian Jews, he turned them in. He was not brave enough to turn in Koba, and any news of Koba given to Pat Quinn was passed on to Winston Churchill, and only to Winston Churchill, and to no one else.

Special Branch Superintendent Patrick Quinn, in one of the great neon blunders of detective history, put the Russian informant and balalaika player Nikolai Tomacoff (21) into a hotel and bought him a new set of clothes. With his new dress and address he was transformed overnight from a poor 21-year-old Russian immigrant into a well-off English gent. With all this heat going down, Nikolai was paid to sniff around the slums of Whitechapel every day dressed as a newly trimmed poodle.

Despite these luxurious setbacks, he had some success – one success and one failure.

After a few days (Tuesday 20 Dec. 1910), Nikolai Tomacoff told Wensley (Met) where Jacob Peters was living. They put an officer in his room and Peters came quietly. He was arrested on a murder charge, said he had never heard of Koba and blamed everything on his cousin Fritz. This was the statement they had agreed to at the Houndsditch/Anarchist meeting early on Saturday 17 December.

Nikolai Tomacoff then gave Wensley a tip-off that Peter Piatkow (Peter the Painter) was living near Grove Street where Gardstein had died. When they arrived, Peter Piatkow had been tipped off and left a few minutes earlier. It looked like Nikolai was informing for both sides. Peter Piatkow went to ground. Three weeks later the French Sûreté informed Special Branch's Pat Quinn that Peter Piatkow was in Paris.

Nikolai Tomacoff was a cheeky spy. He even demanded payment for his affidavit, which he wrote down in Russian (some of which you are reading here). He had learnt to speak a little English, but couldn't write it. Nevertheless, he continued to work for Special Branch as an informant for some years after the Houndsditch and Sidney Street affairs.

Espavo 3020 - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2018

Luba Milstein came to the Met on Wednesday 21 December and spoke to Mr Vensel (Detective Inspector Wensley – the Weasel) and turned herself in. She said she had been the lover of Fritz Svaars and knew nothing of the robberies. "Her stupidity was such that this could have been the case." She was retained in police custody "for her own safety". Luba was cloddish, too stupid to pick up on what was going on, too dull to warrant taking information from, and not a member of the gang. She was the opposite of Nina.

On Thursday 22 December 1910 (the day before the police funeral) a reward of £500 was offered by J. W. Nott Bower, the Commissioner of the City of London Police, for information leading to the arrest of Fritz Svaars, Peter Piatkow (Peter the Painter) and Nina Vassilleva (Lina, Minna Gristis). The reward was pro rata, depending on how many were captured, and the only photo on the reward poster was of the deceased George Gardstein.

What is so interesting about this is that Nina (via her landlord Isaac Gordon) had given CID chief Macnaghten and Detective Inspector Frederick Wensley photos of Fritz Svaars, Peter Piatkow (Peter the Painter), William Sokoloff (Joseph) and Max five days earlier on 17 December. Double agent Nina had given the Metropolitan Police and Scotland Yard the photos of the Anarchist gang, yet the Commissioner of the City of London Police either didn't receive them or did not publish them.

> This shows collusion between the Home Office and the Anarchist gang, and continual sabotage between Scotland Yard, the Met, the City of London Police and the Home Office like we've never seen before. It is part of what makes this case so interesting a century later.

Scotland Yard's CID Chief Melville Macnaghten: "The news of this outrage [the Houndsditch police murders] infuriated every policeman in London and horrified the general public. The funeral service for the three dead men took place at St Paul's Cathedral [22 December 1910, the same day the reward posters were put up], and it was a deeply moving scene . . . All of the important dignitaries of the City of London attended the service, including the Lord Mayor, the sherrifs and the aldermen in their scarlet gowns. There was a special police contingent . . . In the meantime, the three men and one woman seen by Bryant had got away."

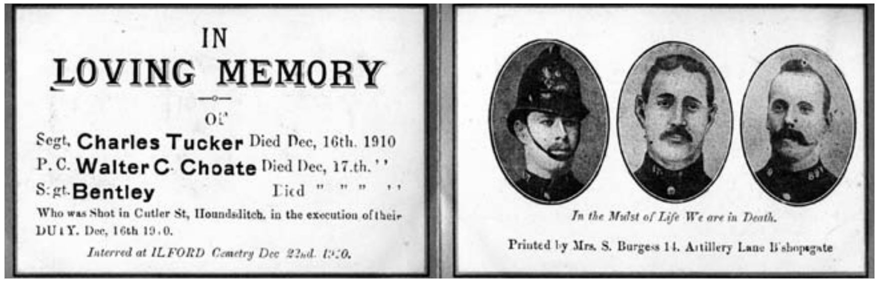

IN
LOVING MEMORY
OF
Segt. **Charles Tucker** Died Dec, 16th. 1910
P.C. **Walter C. Choate** Died Dec, 17.th. ''
Sgt. **Bentley** Died " " " ''
Who was Shot in Cutler St, Houndsditch. in the execution of their DUTY. Dec, 16th 1910.
Interred at ILFORD Cemetry Dec 22nd. 1910.

In the Midst of Life We are in Death.

Printed by Mrs. S. Burgess 14. Artillery Lane Bishopsgate

Nina Vassilleva, accomplice to the triple police murders, attended the funerals and brought a memorial card with potraits of the three dead policemen inside. Nina could get police photos, yet the City of London Police could not, or would not publish photos of the 'wanted' men she had given them. Nina was amongst the City of London Police, the special police contingent, the city's dignitaries and the Lord Mayor . . . and no one said a word. Either they were overpowered by grief and stupidity or there was collusion and she was a protected double agent. Either way, no one arrested Nina for the reward.

Her attendance was a very visual statement to all the other Russian-Jewish anarchists that her cover had been blown, that she was being followed and her every move watched. The police took it to mean that she was sympathetic and this helped in her trial. In return they engineered a mistrial and let her off. Nina had taken part in the Harris jewellery heist, escaped, been present at the shooting of the police officers, been questioned by the police, handed over incriminating evidence, let go, stopped at Dover trying to escape, had a bounty placed on her head, turned up at the funeral, for which she took part in their deaths, and was not arrested by the police, nor was the £167 reward claimed for her capture (a third of the price of a house).

The British police were acting like gentlemen doormats for any and all Anarchists as long as they showed remorse and had stand-up breasts. Breasts are still the greatest influence on revolutions and the judiciary to this day.

After her attendance at the funeral, the inexperienced Chief Constable Melville Macnaghten concluded that Nina "was not devoid of decent human feelings". Nina was given her freedom and ongoing police protection and the trial was a show trial to secure her freedom while maintaining access to the immigrant gangs. She gained heroine status and retained her access to the Betar while maintaining her role as a British Special Branch double agent.

Spymaster: "The Betar was a Jewish Intelligence agency that existed within the Bolshevik and Tsarist Intelligence but was entirely loyal to itself. In the 1960s they penetrated the Mossad and supplied details of Gerhard Lotz to the GRU (Soviet Military Intelligence) who gave him to Egyptian Intelligence (the Muktabarik)."

Nina was always a double agent. She worked as a British Special Branch agent planted within the Russian Jewish Betar. She was involved in monitoring the emerging Russian Revolution for Patrick Quinn and Winston Churchill and was protected as such. She was not involved in any British counter-espionage of the Russian Revolution, because there was none.

Another landlord, this time from 44 Gold Street, recognised George Gardstein from the reward poster and said Gardstein called himself Mr Morin and claimed to be a chemistry student. When his room was searched the police found a virtual laboratory containing nitric acid, nitroglycerine, books dealing with the making of explosives and melting ingots, a Mauser pistol and hundreds of cartridges.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

So the Anarchist gang had at least ten hideouts within their immediate crowd: 59 Sidney Street, Buross Street, 44 Gold Street, Turner Street, Lindley Street, two places in the Exchange Buildings off Houndsditch, 77 Jubilee Street, 100 Sidney Street (discovered 2 January 1911) and 104 Sidney Street (exposed for the first time here).

Fritz Svaars and Peter the Painter lived at 59 Sidney Street where George Gardstein had died. Nina and George Gardstein lived at Buross Street and 44 Gold Street where Gardstein's laboratory was also kept. Luba lived at Lindley Street and occasionally with Fritz at 59 Sidney Street. William Sokoloff (Joseph) had spent a couple of nights in the Exchange Buildings and George had spent one night there. They had only tenanted these a few days prior, but they were useless, due to the robbery. They also had Stalin's residence at 77 Jubilee Street off Whitechapel Road which could be used as a last resort.

On Sunday 1 January 1911, 19 days after the undercovers were put on the street and 10 days after the reward poster was issued and the funeral held, Nikolai Tomacoff tried to phone Pat Quinn at Special Branch with information leading to the whereabouts of Fritz Svaars and William Sokoloff. Special Branch Superintendent Patrick Quinn was on holiday and there was no answer. If Special Branch Superintendent Quinn had answered the phone, the Sidney Street Siege may never have happened, so Patrick Quinn was on holiday.

Nikolai Tomacoff then went to see Detective Inspector Frederick Wensley at the Met as his second choice. Just after midnight on Monday 2 January 1911, under cover of snow and fierce sleet rain, a male informant came to the Met's Leman Street Station covered from head to toe like an Islamic woman. He had a long blue overcoat, a black hat pulled right down over his eyes, and a scarf around his face. When he was alone with Wensley he undid the scarf and demanded the £500 reward money for information leading to the capture of Fritz Svaars and William Sokoloff. Wensley noted to himself that the clothes he was wearing had already been paid for by the police.

Nikolai Tomacoff went on to say that Perelman, a photographic enlarger, had once been Gardstein's landlord and that Perelman had recently arranged for the transfer of two important people from one place to another: from Betty Gershon's care at 100 Sidney Street to a room in a house owned by Perelmans' cousin. From here they were to be transported abroad.

Sidney Street

Betty Gershon was William Sokoloff's lover, and wherever William went, Fritz Svaars was sure to follow. The transfer had not yet taken place and they were still at 100 Sidney Street. Betty Gershon was also William Sokoloff's first cousin. This was common practice in those days. Even Albert Einstein took part in this with his first cousin Elsa in 1911. Strangely, it was the automobile that largely cured second-degree incest, although 20% of marriages are still between cousins.[11]

When Tomacoff left, Wensley (Met) phoned Superintendent Ottoway (CoLP) and then his boss, the head of H Division, Divisional Superintendent Mulvaney (Met). Wensley, Mulvaney and Ottoway then had an immediate conference and discussed the practical aspects of the attack, like how the men were to be deployed.

Wensley then phoned Macnaghten at his estate. Macnaghten spent Christmas in the "bosom of his family" at their estate down in Wiltshire (south-west of London). Wensley rang around 1 am on the morning of 2 January 1911 saying that another informant had told them that William Sokoloff (Joseph) and Fritz Svaars were staying at 100 Sidney Street on the East End.

Macnaghten was not a great detective and had no history of being a detective before he was appointed Chief Constable at Scotland Yard's Criminal Investigation Department. He was however, a great gentleman and knew the right things to say to people. He had a phenomenal memory and knew the names and dates of everyone in his force. He organised people very well, but he had little practical knowledge of fieldwork. He was brilliant at cutting red tape but sometimes the other detectives just wished he would be somewhere else. Inexperienced but highly promoted, Macnaghten was considered an administrator.

Detective Inspector Wensley told Macnaghten to stay the night in Wiltshire. "There's no need to come straight away, just turn up in the morning." Wensley generally took instructions from Macnaghten but in this case he was giving them.

---

[11] It is estimated that 80% of marriages through history have been between first cousins. Canada's first Prime Minister Sir John A. MacDonald married his first cousin, but the MacDonalds were known for it, and Franklin D. Roosevelt married his ugliest cousin (though not a first cousin). First-cousin marriages in the US have dropped to 0.1% and in Japan to 0.4%. Affordable travel made the biggest change. (Source: CousinCouples.com)

Detective Inspector Wensley (Met), Superintendent Ottoway (CoLP), Divisional Superintendent Mulvaney (Met) and a couple of Met sergeants went to 100 Sidney Street and had a look. It was pitch black and snow was driving into their faces. The house was in one of a block of ten, called Charley Martin's Mansions after the landlord who owned them all. They were all five-storey, flat-fronted walk-ups flush with the street. All had a large basement, a ground floor and three floors above.

Sidney Street was in the City of London but only a few yards from the boundary of the Met's Leman Street Police Station in Whitechapel. 100 Sidney Street was in a rough area that neither force wanted to work. Nevertheless, Sidney Street was known by the Freemasons as 'golden mile' and is known today as 'Freemasons' golden mile'.

They returned to the station and Superintendent Stark (CoLP) joined them. His main concern was that they could become a laughing stock after three of their men were killed at Houndsditch. Stark had already ordered detectives out around Sidney Street and Superintendent Ottoway (CoLP) had called in all available men. One hundred showed up ready to brave the cold and avenge their mates.

H Divisional Superintendent Mulvaney (Met) suggested overwhelming force and offered 100 men to match. Superintendent Stark (CoLP) then admitted that he didn't know the area well, although it was his area, and wondered where he was going to put all his police officers. Detective Inspector Wensley (Met) then drew a map of Charley Martin's Mansions showing that Sidney Street, Lindley Street, Hawkins Street and Richardson Street all shared a common backyard and an alleyway ran from Lindley Street to the adjacent Sidney Street.

They decided to surround the buildings, watch the rooftops, and remove everyone from inside 100 Sidney Street and the neighbouring houses at 98 and 102, just in case they tried to break through the walls. (This actually paved the way for them to break through the walls.)

H Divison of the Met had a few antiquated snub-nosed bulldog revolvers and most of these had to be reloaded after each shot. The best could fire five shots in ten seconds, but they were hopelessly inaccurate over 9 metres. The distance straight across the street was 13 metres, up to the fourth floor it was more like 17 metres, and from any safe location it was over 25 metres. Looking through glass at one end and into glass at the other didn't help either.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Ma 20

Superintendent Ottoway (CoLP) then said he could get his hands on some rifles. He went to a miniature army rifle range (maximum range 9 metres), returning a few minutes later with some .22 Morris-tube rifles. There were no questions as to the capabilities of the rifles nor were they issued to the 100 or so volunteer officers at that time.

Ottoway had immediate access to army training rifles in the wee hours of the morning and he either didn't know they were next-to-useless, or he didn't let anyone else know. Either way, this was very queer for the Superintendent of the City of London Police – to be able to access useless rifles at such short notice in the very early hours. It showed he had army connections capable of purposeful sabotage.

Superintendent Ottoway (CoLP) was effectively arming the City of London Police with wooden spoons. Their conference ended at 1.30 am.

Detective Inspector Fred Wensley: "[At 1.30 am] Detective Sergeant Sonny Jacobson . . . the only Jewish detective in H Division (Met) . . . took a dozen men and began to put them in the adjoining houses . . . knocked on a door in Hawkins Street [actually 98 Sidney Street] and the landlady, a Mrs Rubenoff, opened it . . . Sonny and four men crept through the house to the backyard . . ."

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

They walked through 98 Sidney Street into the backyard. Nine of them, including Sonny, crept over the low wall and blocked the back entrance of 100 Sidney Street. Four officers then climbed over to Mrs Bluestein's at 102. This left four officers guarding the backyards of 98, 100 and 102 Sidney Street and no one inside any of these houses. Detective Sergeant Sonny Jacobson announced to Wensley that they were all in place at 2.55 am.

The police did not occupy the houses at 98, 100 or 102 Sidney Street. They only occupied the backyards. There were no police on the third floor of 102 Sidney Street, nor anywhere inside that house. The occupants inside 98 and 102 were not evacuated until after the crowds had gathered.

At 3 am Detective Inspector Fred Wensley knocked on the shutter at 100 Sidney Street. Mrs Fleishman, the landlady on the ground-floor front room, replied in Yiddish, "We don't need any milk". Wensley had Sonny Jacobson translate. They identified themselves as police and Mr Fleishman opened the front door, left the chain on and skedaddled. Detective Inspectors Wensley and Jacobson then pushed the door open, breaking the chain.

They spoke to Mrs Fleishman, who told them there were sixteen in the house and they had to evacuate fourteen of them quietly. Through Detective Sergeant Sonny Jacobson, Wensley asked Mr Fleishman to go up and get Mrs Gershon. He said he wouldn't do it for £1000. If Mr Vensel was there (Wensley-the-Weasel) there was big trouble. He then asked Mrs Fleishman and she said she wouldn't do it for £5000.

Wensley: "Tell her to go up and say her husband has been taken ill. Ask Mrs Gershon to come down and help."

The Yiddish-speaking Mrs Fleishman went to the third floor and knocked on the front-room door. There was no answer and then Betty Gershon came out of the stockroom opposite. The knocking had alerted William Sokoloff and Fritz Svaars.

The Yiddish-speaking Mrs Betty Gershon came down. She was tall and thin with peering eyes and looked like an ostrich. Through Sonny Jacobson, Wensley asked her who was in her room. In her first of many answers she said that no one was in her room, then that Joseph (William Sokoloff) was sleeping there alone, and then let slip that Koba (Stalin) had already left England. Ten minutes later she admitted that Joseph had a pal in the room who he once called 'Fritz'. William Sokoloff and Fritz Svaars were sleeping in the third-floor front room of 100 Sidney Street.

She then said they had removed her dress and shoes to stop her getting out of the house and telling anyone. This shows a high level of training on both sides. Betty Gershon was then taken to the station.

At 7 am Detective Inspector Wensley left 100 Sidney Street for a conference with Divisional Superintendent Mulvaney (Met) and Superintendent Ottoway (CoLP) and CID Chief Macnaghten joined them.

The evacuation was left to Detective Inspector Sonny Jacobson (Jewish). This consisted of Mr Fleishman (the thin, bearded, fast-footed tailor), Mrs Fleishman (who only spoke Yiddish) and their daughter Leah from the ground-floor front room; Mr Clements (90, stone deaf, "made a hell of a hullabaloo") and Mrs Clements from the ground-floor back room; Mr and Mrs Shiemann and their four children from the first-floor front room; and the little Fleishman twins from the first-floor back room. The basement was used for coal storage and the attic was used to store paper, files, old furniture and the like.

By 7.30 am the City of London Police and the Met had surrounded the house with a hundred men each, two hundred in total. They were

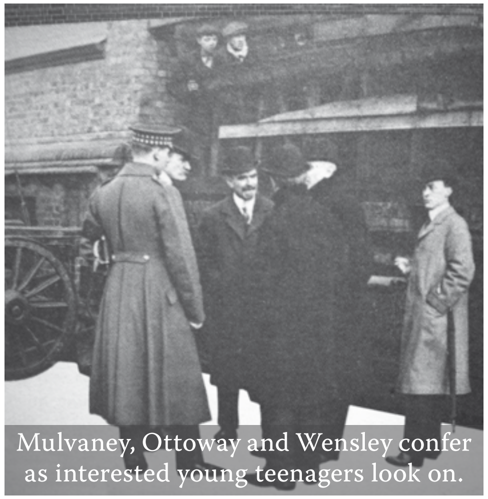

Mulvaney, Ottoway and Wensley confer as interested young teenagers look on.

in position waiting in drizzling rain and biting wind when Superintendent Mulvaney (Met) pointed out that the men across the street had nothing to shoot with. Neither the City of London Police nor the Met had arms that could be considered modern or well stocked.

Superintendent Ottoway (CoLP) then borrowed the Morris-tube rifles again, returning around 8.30 am. It was strange that Superintendent Ottoway (CoLP) did not hand them out to the police at 1.30 am. If he had, the police would have realised how useless they were and this could have resulted in the police being armed with effective weapons and the Scots Guards arriving in position before first light.

This was an act of coordinated self-sabotage between the army and CoLP as only the Home Office and above could arrange.

Espavo S020 - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

The police were also issued with the antiquated snub-nosed revolvers but most of these had to be reloaded after each shot. There were not nearly enough rifles and revolvers to go around and most of the officers did not know how to use them.

The murder of three police officers during the failed Harris jewellery heist was the single biggest incident these British police had ever faced. Sidney Street was about to make it legendary and the police did not want to botch it up. Nevertheless, two hundred police officers turned up two weeks later with no effective weapons between them.

> Most of the officers were armed with intimidation, badges, Freemasonry logos strapped around their 'tits on head' helmets, and truncheons facing known murderers with accurate German pistols. This was called 'bravery' and 'in the line of duty'. It was, however, stupidity in the making of dead 'heroes'. This meant that most of the two hundred police officers were next to useless. They were merely spectators who were also targets.

Winston Churchill, son of King Edward VII.

At that time, the principal police defence against an armed Russian gang member was to tackle their opponents, which was fine if you played rugby, and if the opponent wasn't prepared to shoot, but this was the Betar (Russian-Jewish Intelligence) and you never got to play rugby again.

The Metropolitan Police had no stock of rifles and Scotland Yard was useless for supply. Rifles were considered for soldiers and could only be procured from the army. The quickest and best way to get hold of proper firearms was to bring in the troops. As Home Secretary, it was the young Winston Churchill (36) who controlled the army and the nation's firearms.

The Anarchists, on the other hand were known to have Mauser pistols, which were accurate up to 900 metres. Some models of Mauser pistols converted to rifles – the pistol's wooden pouch became the butt of the rifle, and the barrel, stored in the pouch, was fixed to the pistol, making the 'broom-handled Mauser' (1896).

Mausers came in 7.62 mm, 9 mm and 11.4 mm (.45 inch) and fired spitzers, which is a round pointed bullet loaded by stripper clip. The Mausers also took short and long magazines. This was the type of gun Winston Churchill used in Africa. They were a favourite of the Chinese and German Storm Troopers in WWI – 'schnell feur' ('quick firer').

The Anarchists also had Dreyse 32-calibre 1907 patent pocket pistols made

in Germany and calibre-9 mm Browning long pistols made in Belgium from 1903. These were better than anything the police had.

The house opposite 100 Sidney Street belonged to a chemist named Cohen. There was no answer to their early-morning knocking on the front door, so Detective Inspector Wensley went around the back and used his skeleton key to get through the back gate, and the back door.

Chemist Cohen threatened to blow his whistle to call the police. Before phones, whistles were the primary method of alerting the police, and people in colonial countries kept whistles in their houses right through to the 1970s. Ten minutes later, Mr Cohen and his wife Rebecca were sitting in the back kitchen in relative safety.

Three Met officers, including Constable Harris, went to the top floor, took mattresses off the beds and placed them against the windows. They were concealed by the curtains, had their Morris-tube rifles ready, but were two floors below the Anarchists. They were very effective targets, useful for cover and morale, but useless for attack and end game.

Melville Macnaghten, Chief Constable at Scotland Yard's Criminal Investigation Department: "As I've said the excitement of the chase has always been the most fascinating thing about police work for me, and this was a chase in which it looked as though we'd found our quarry. I rose just before six, and as I shaved found myself humming a line of doggerel, *I say what a day we are having, my boys, I say what a day we are having* – the chorus of a popular song which I'd heard a week before at Evan's Cave of Harmony, the music hall in Covent Garden. I got Crowther out of bed early too and, still humming, had myself taken down [from Wiltshire] to the East End."

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Chief Constable Macnaghten (Scotland Yard CID/Met) arrived in the dim light before dawn. "I must say it was very decent of Ottoway, Mulvaney and Wensley to seem pleased to see me at the unearthly hour of seven, when they'd no doubt been expecting me a couple of hours later. [They] were looking a little blue about the gills, and they didn't say no to a stiffener from the flask that I always carry in my top pocket . . . It was a ticklish question as to who was in control, the City of London Police or the Met . . . Mulvaney [Met] and Ottoway [CoLP] were polite enough, but it wouldn't have taken much to get them at each other's throats."

Divisional Superintendent Mulvaney (Met): "It's my opinion they know the game's up. Give them a shout and they'll surrender."

Chief Constable Macnaghten (Scotland Yard CID/Met): "Try to attract their attention, throw stones at the windows. If they come out, well and good. It not, we'll know where we are at."

Detective Inspector Wensley (Met) shouted out: "Come on, lads, let 'em know we're here. Some pebbles in the yard here. Use 'em."

The two hundred or so police had just had three of their mates killed and were equally impatient looking at drawn curtains. Sergeant Hallam ran across the road to the open front door of the house and ran back. Detective Inspector Wensley then grabbed a handful of pebbles and started throwing them at the top fourth-floor windows and others followed.

The curtains remained closed, and at that point CID's Macnaghten thought they'd escaped.

Sergeant Ben Leeson was quite a large man for the times. The pebbles and grit weren't doing the trick so he grabbed a brick from the woodyard, carried it down to 100 Sidney Street, stood outside and shouted: "I'm going to let 'em have this to wake 'em up with." He stretched back to throw the brick at the top fourth-floor windows when a third-floor window broke and three shots were fired from a Dreyse automatic. Sergeant Leeson was hit in both nipples: "I'm hit!"

The other officers sprinted back to the woodyard and closed the gate behind them. Sergeant Hallam (who had checked the front door) noticed Sergeant Leeson moving too slowly so he intercepted and carried Sergeant Leeson into Cohen's house, directly opposite 100 Sidney Street, and placed him on the kitchen couch.

Superintendent Mulvaney (Met) and Detective Inspector Wensley (Met) were there taking cover. Sergeant Hallam's helmet had taken a hit in the intercept rendering him temporarily deaf. Detective Inspector Wensley said: "Have a cuppa and you'll feel better."

Macnaghten (Scotland Yard CID/Met), Superintendent Mulvaney (Met) and Detective Inspector Wensley (Met) went upstairs to see how the police marksmen were doing. The windows were being shot out.

Macnaghten said, "What about your return fire?" and one of the three [Met] constables [Harris] looked up, tapped his rifle and in his

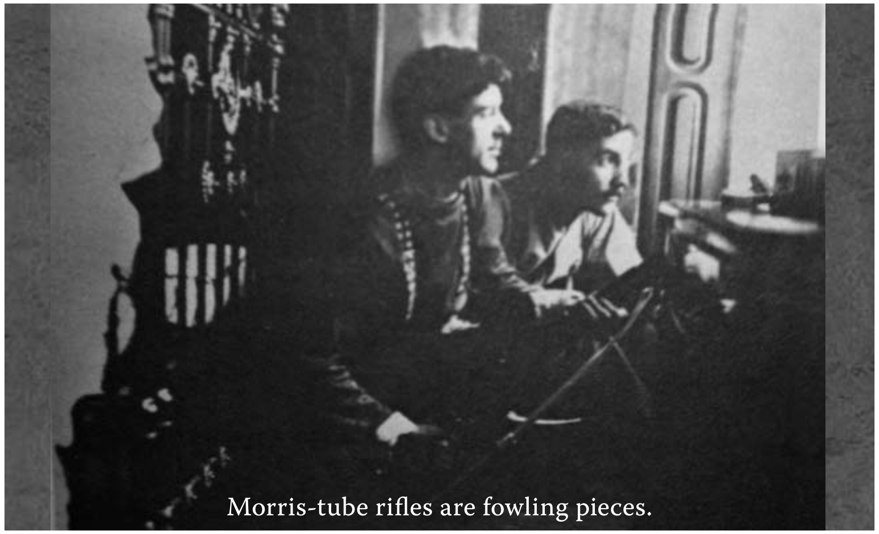

Morris-tube rifles are fowling pieces.

slow-spoken English said: "These just ain't no good for the job, Guv'nor . . . and I ain't a bad shot, sir. If I had a real rifle, I might pick one of 'em off. But with these, it's going to be luck if we're on target, isn't it so, boys? What I mean is, they're not the tools for the job." Another constable said, "We're outmatched, and that's a fact . . . Morris-tube rifles are fowling pieces."

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Even firing across the street, the Morris-tube rifles were not accurate, and the Met had no stock of rifles. Morris-tube rifles were modified rifles for long-range practice with a maximum range of 9 metres (30 yards). A small rifle barrel was fitted inside an ordinary rifle so that it could only shoot small .22 gauge bullets, close enough to single-shot birdshot. They were also fitted with training sights so the 9 metres looked 230 metres away.

Morris-tube rifles were the most inaccurate and powerless guns the police could get their hands on and the most inaccurate and powerless guns on the market. Aiming at the window, the bullet would hit the wall, and damage to the wall was minimal. Morris-tube rifles were only ever used for 'shoot-not-to-kill', they had a tendency to foul up and were training-only weapons. They effectively protected the Anarchists and exposed the police.

It was 13 metres across the street and Morris-tube rifles had a maximum range of 9 metres. This meant that the police bullets were not making it across the street, and if they did, they had difficulty breaking a window and would dangle in a target rather than maim. This meant that the 200 police posed absolutely no threat to the Anarchists whatsoever, and chances of being hit or incapacitated by British police fire was 'fluke only'.

The Anarchists knew this and were given every opportunity to kill the police. If they had the mind to, the Houndsditch/Anarchist gang had every chance of shooting their way out and escaping. As it was, they planned their escape under the cover of police and Scots Guard fire.

Once shooting began and couldn't be returned, Mulvaney said: "This is just what I feared. We should never have alarmed them. There's one man [Sergeant Leeson] dying now." Macnaghten (Scotland Yard CID/Met) thought Divisional Superintendent Mulvaney (Met) was a wet blanket.

They needed a doctor for the twice-shot Sergeant Leeson. Superintendent Ottoway (CoLP) volunteered and scrambled over the roofs of the outbuildings to arrange for the doctor. He stopped at the Mann & Crossman brewery farther down the street, sent for a doctor, gathered stretchers and organised a temporary headquarters just out of immediate range of the Anarchists' gunfire. He had set up a firing party with more Morris-tube rifles, but from that distance and angle they were just as likely to hit their own men.

Mann Crossman & Paulin Ltd. Albion Brewery.
Whitechapel Road, E.

Mann & Crossman brewery.

The rain became heavy and the firing slackened off. This provided some cover, and a few minutes later Dr Johnstone arrived and noted that both nipple wounds had exited through Sergeant Leeson's back and his only chance of survival was hospital.

Cohen's didn't have a phone so Wensley scrambled over the roofs to the Mann & Crossman brewery and returned a few minutes later, under cover of heavy rain, with a stretcher.

The rather large Sergeant Ben Leeson was strapped into a stretcher. They opened the back door to heavy icy rain, which was good because it provided cover, but it also made the steep roof crossings slippery.

Detective Inspector Wensley and Dr Johnstone carried the twice-shot Sergeant Leeson up a ladder over the outbuilding roof, where they were exposed to fire from the uppermost floor at 100 Sidney Street. As they attempted to get over a 4 metre wall, down a ladder onto the top of a wood van and into the woodyard, the Anarchists spotted them and harassed them with sustained bursts of firing.

In Cohen's upper floor, CID Chief Macnaghten remembered that he was a pretty good shot in Bengal and put the Morris-tube rifle to his eye. The 13 metres across the street looked 330 metres away. He aimed at the window, took half a dozen shots and they all hit the brick wall. He handed the gun back to Constable Harris (Met), saying, "You'll have to do the best you can lads". Superintendent Ottoway's (CoLP) firepower was toothless.

The police wanted proper guns, regular army rifles, Lee-Enfields, and men who could use them.

As Wensley and Dr Johnstone moved towards the brewery wall, with the rain falling in buckets, a hail of bullets hit the tiles. A bullet grazed Dr Johnstone's forehead and he dropped the stretcher. Twice-shot Leeson then undid his own stretcher straps, rolled down the roof, fell 6 metres and was caught by waiting police officers. This was miraculous for a man shot through both nipples with 7.62 mm bullets.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Spymaster: "He must have been Irish."

A policeman climbed the ladder, bobbed his head up over the roof and said, "We've got him, sir, he's all right", and then a bullet removed his helmet. Dr Johnstone made his way quick-smart off the roof and over the wall.

Macnaghten and Mulvaney went out to Cohen's backyard and watched the brewery getting shot up. Constable Corrington scrambled over the roofs and told them that Wensley had been trapped, presumed dead. Macnaghten said: "The police had never needed guns before in my lifetime."

Detective Inspector Wensley (Weasel) was the only one left on the roof and the Anarchists peppered the tiles around him with bullets. Wensley crawled into the gutter of the outbuilding shed and took protection from the small parapet wall. The whole time, Wensley was wearing his bowler hat, and when it fell off the Anarchists shot it.

Wensley stayed there for half and hour out of sight. He could have yelled out to the other police and the other police could have yelled out to him, but they all remained quiet. They were a mass of unarmed troops against two armed men and they were pinned down and hiding. Rumours of Wensley's death spread and published in a special edition of the *Evening News* rushed out a few hours later.

Wensley used his side-pocket persuader (about half the size of a truncheon with a lead shot at one end) and in five minutes he had broken through the roof tiles. He slipped in feet first and landed on a green and gold Mann & Crossman brewer's dray.

Constable Leeson got to hospital and recovered. God knows how – maybe his injuries were exaggerated or his nipples were in strange places.

Macnaghten (Mac) and Mulvaney stayed in Cohen's house for another half-hour. They watched the progress of the battle but there wasn't any. Sidney Street was clear between Lindley Street and Hawkins Street for a hundred metres or so. The Anarchists wounded a constable in the arm and killed a stray cat. Other than that, a lot of windows had been broken and there was glass all over the street.

Superintendent Mulvaney (Met) said to Melville Macnaghten (Scotland Yard CID/Met): "We need help . . . I mean weapons. Regular army rifles, sir. Lee-Enfields, and men who can use them. I think we need troops."

Scotland Yard had no authority for this. The order and supply had to come from the Home Office, and this meant the Home Secretary Winston Churchill, who was, by those in the know, occasionally referred to as W. C. behind his back (Water Closet – public toilet).

Mac decided they should make the same treacherous journey to the Mann & Crossman brewery under cover fire from Constable Harris (Met) and his men's Morris-tube rifles. The Anaracbists didn't even fire a shot. Churchill had briefed the Anarchists not to kill anyone in a bowler hat. Macnaghten (Scotland Yard CID/Met) was pleased to find Detective Inspector Wensley (Met) at the brewery, alive and well, although annoyed about his bowler hat. They were considered sacred objects of class distinction, and those who thought they deserved them, placed a lot of merit on brushing them daily.

Mac knew Winston Churchill slightly and phoned him from the brewery at 9.02 am (2 January 1911). A manservant answered, "I am afraid Mr Churchill is still in his bath."

Winston Churchill (36) was the Home Secretary at the time and so was in charge of the army. He was also an alcoholic and a brooding manic-depressive who liked to be pampered. Like the Boy Scout's Baden-Powell, he painted himself as a hero in whatever medium took his fancy.

Churchill would normally stay in his bath until 2 pm or longer, smoking cigars and sipping a combination of brandy and Champagne while he sang *Clementine* and his attendants kept the water at just the right temperature. He wrote his best speeches here. After getting out of the bath at 2 pm, he supposedly ran the Army, wrote history and painted. The first point of PR in those days was to be a renaissance man. The second point was to appear calm in all situations.

Winston Churchill actually employed 17 consultants to write his histories for him. Winston had contracted history out and consequently they all agreed to have it published under his name.[12]

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 20

At 9.05 am (something of a record) Winston Churchill answered, "I hope the urgency justifies my getting out of my bath wrapped in a towel like a Roman emperor . . . Tell me what you want."

Melville Macnaghten (Scotland Yard CID/Met) said: "I want enough troops, armed with modern weapons to arrest and kill these men." Churchill agreed to an order for a detachment of twenty Scots Guards.

Melville Macnaghten sent Superintendent Mulvaney (Met) down to the Tower of London. As requested, twenty Scots Guards plus Lieutenant Ross and two NCOs (Non-Commissioned Officers) came back with him. The Scots Guards arrived at 11 am carrying SMLE rifles (Small Magazine Lee-Enfield Mark III, No. 1 rifles).

Four Scots Guards replaced the three ineffective police marksmen in Cohen's bedroom across the street. Three Scots Guards went around to the backyard of 100 Sidney Street, climbed on the wood van, up the ladder and over the fences and shot at the back windows. Three Scots Guards went to the top-floor bottling storeroom of the brewery, two floors below the top floor of 100 Sidney Street.

RISING
-SUN-
BREWERY Co's

Four more Scots Guards placed themselves on the roof of the Rising Sun pub at the end of the street. They began firing, but from that distance and angle all they could do was hit the building and scare the occupants. It was rare that they would even hit the windows.

The remaining Scots Guards pushed past spectators and lay on the street 40 metres from the house, three each side. They lay on newspaper poster hoardings, tilted their checked caps back and began firing with Lee-Enfield rifles. The angle was ridiculously acute, such that it was impossible to hit an Anarchist unless they were in the upper far corner of their window waving a red flag or lighting a cigarette.

On the street, the Scots Guards were exposed and an easy target. Yet, instead of half of the Scots Guards being killed, only one got a flesh wound on his thigh and another was shot in the arm. This was shoot-for-show amongst complicit parties and even Hitler called the Scots Guards the 'Cold Stream Guards'.

Stalin's men had been instructed to issue a lot of firepower but not to kill any police officers, Scots Guards, or anyone in a bowler hat. The Anarchists were crack shots. With their Mausers they could shoot a can downhill from the hip. They were also trained to kill in order to survive. With Sergeant Leeson it was all too easy. He was the first shot, it set off the siege and they just couldn't resist.

Two of the Scots Guards realised how vulnerable they were and took cover in a wineshop doorway on the same side as 100 Sidney Street. Here their angle was even worse. They were safe from attack but more likely to be hit by friendly fire.

Three Scots Guards in the top-floor storeroom of the brewery started firing. Despite the fact that they had horizontal wooden slats over the window cavities to contend with, Pat Quinn arrived excited about their position.

---

[12] Churchill scholar talking to the author on the yacht *Aerial* during some wild winter inter-island sailing on 29 August 2004.

In order to avoid getting hit, all the Anarchists had to do was stay away from the windows and move from side to side and floor to floor with spurts of shots so the Scots Guards could not get a clear stationary shot. Like the police, the Scots Guards were next to useless. Like the police, they were an easy target on the street, yet only two suffered minor injuries.

Macnaghten (Scotland Yard CID/Met) had moved some 50 metres down the road to the Lindley Street cordon and was standing beside Special Branch Superintendent Pat Quinn when Quinn was hit by a ricocheted bullet that lodged in the cuff of his trousers. It only grazed his ankle but it still showed the power of the bullets.

Macnaghten (Scotland Yard CID/Met) later wrote: "There was a certain amount of poetic justice involved. If Quinn had passed on the information he received, we might have caught the whole gang, or most of them, at Houndsditch . . . and who could tell whether it was one of our bullets, or one of theirs."

Met and CoLP bullets did not have enough power to ricochet, so it was either an Anarchist's or Scots Guard's bullet.

Mac helped Special Branch Superintendent Patrick Quinn to the first-aid station at 11 am where Detective Inspector Wensley (Met) was arguing with 13 Met Police holding shotguns. Macnaghten (Scotland Yard CID/Met) asked the group what the trouble was. Constable Harris (Met): "We've got a small supply of weapons from a gunsmith, sir, and they've been given to men who are used to handling them."

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

Constable Harris (Met) could get effective weapons when Superintendent Ottoway (CoLP) could not.

Detective Inspector Wensley (Met): "They want to rush the house. I've told them it's a no go." Wensley's face was red with anger and some of the marksmen were equally furious. The Met marksmen were out for revenge and Wensley wanted to keep the death toll to a minimum.

It's interesting that the Met were out for revenge when it was three City of London Police who were killed at Houndsditch.

Constable Harris (Met): "They're doing no better than we were. Why not let us go back there, now we've got these? Then whyn't they [Scots Guards] give us covering fire while we make a dash along the side of the street? If those Anarchists have to shoot us, they'll need to

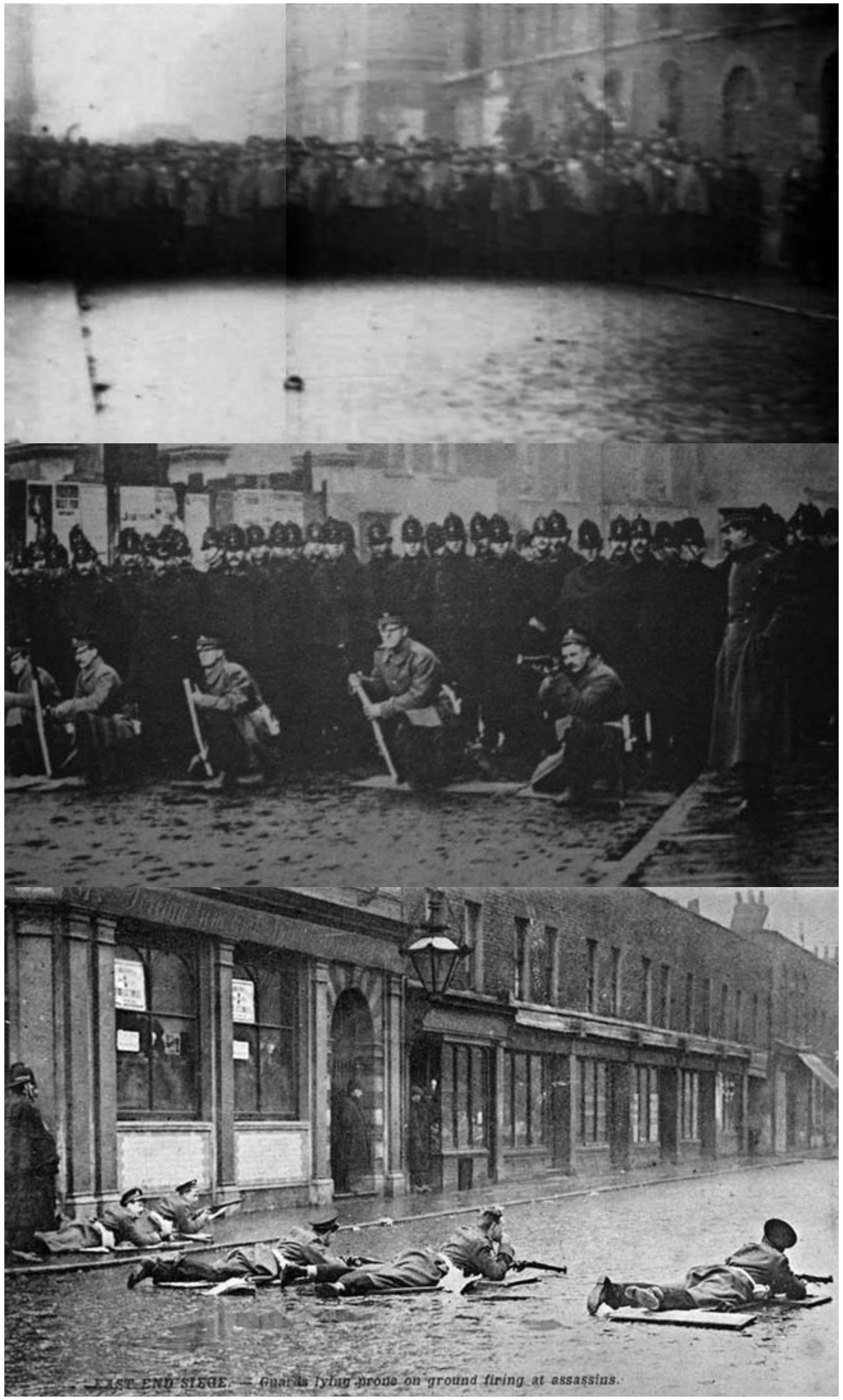
EAST END SIEGE.—Guards lying prone on ground firing at assassins.

show themselves. We don't mind taking a chance, do we, boys? Now Sergeant Leeson's copped it, we want to get at them, that we do."

It was now mid-morning, drizzling rain, a biting wind, and the snow was slushy underfoot.

Macnaghten (CID/Met) and Wensley (Met) watched as Constable Harris (Met) armed with a shotgun and tacit, but undeclared, approval pushed his way through the police cordon followed by another couple of armed men. Constable Harris ran alongside 100 Sidney Street. The Scots Guards on the street, at the Rising Sun pub, and in Cohen's house held fire. Women opened their windows and cheered them on, as did the crowd. This was enough to alert the Anarchists that something new was happening out front.

Detective Inspector Wensley said to Scotland Yard's Macnaghten: "Never known the police so popular in this area."

The Scots Guards did not provide any cover fire as Constable Harris (Met) kicked the door open wider. He rushed inside and hit his head on a loose balk of timber protruding from the ceiling, fired a shot, and reappeared at the doorway swaying, took half a dozen steps across the street and fell down. The Scots Guards started firing again. Harris didn't move. It was presumed he was shot and possibly dead.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Two policemen zigzagged across the road, grabbed Harris and took him back to the woodyard. Mac thought Harris was a brave man, though a foolish one.

Constable Harris (Met) had done what he was supposed to do. He had armed a select group of Met-men with more powerful weapons than the police or army could procure, and made certain that they would not be used against the Anarchists. These shotguns would also ensure that they gained first inspection entry into the neighbouring houses when the siege was over. They were the Met's 'keen but none-too-bright' and would look for Anarchists rather than evidence of entry and exit. It was well planned and well rehearsed.

At the same time (12.30 am), Churchill arrived, cigar in mouth, 3½ hours after he was alerted. There was sporadic gunfire and in his affidavit he wrote: "My inclination has always been to march towards the sound of gunfire . . . The most recent information we could gather was from a newspaper bought in the street. A new edition was being brought out every hour and then was sold as fast as the newsboys could hand them out. The paper said that Detective Inspector Wensley had been killed and that three other policemen were believed to have been shot. That was decisive. I had myself driven down to the East End and to Sidney Street, immediately [3½ hrs]."

After the call, Churchill got dressed and went to the Home Office. "There I found remarkably little further information awaiting me. Some Anarchists were shut up in a house in the East End. Nobody knew how many were inside, but they were said to be firing in all directions."

Churchill stood next to Scotland Yard's CID Macnaghten: "What's been happening?"

Upon seeing Detective Inspector Wensley alive, Churchill said: "I am glad the rumours of your death, like the rumours of my own in the South African War, had been much exaggerated." The third point of PR in those days was to appear immortal during battle and after it. These were times when fantasists were gifted power and reality was something future historians had to work out.

As Churchill made his way through the crowd, it was as if the whole East End had gathered in Whitechapel. A women yelled "Oo let 'em in", referring to Churchill and his Liberal government's refusal to limit alien immigration. It was a very funny moment in East End history.

Churchill organised two uniformed constables plus D.I. Wensley, who volunteered, and they walked alongside 100 Sidney Street to the front door with Churchill leading. The crowd cheered thinking that Churchill was going to storm the house. It was a PR move that gathered no further information other than to sight the piece of wood Harris had knocked himself out on (Churchill's idea in the first place?). Churchill then suggested to Wensley to storm the front door, storm the back door and drop in through the roof simultaneously: "Damn it man, there are only two of them."

Churchill's report: "At that moment a bullet ricocheted off the roadway and struck the wall a foot away from where we were standing."

At 12.45 am Churchill retired to the Mann & Crossman brewery office and sat around the table with Wensley, Mac, Ottoway and Quinn drinking whiskey and making plans. Since Churchill was the highest-ranking person on site all decision-making was deferred to him. He asked for a steel foundry and Superintendent Ottoway (CoLP) said there were several within a mile or two. Churchill requested half a dozen old-fashioned shields to storm the house, each shield giving protection for two men. If there were no shields then any curved metal plates would do.

Mac queried that any foundry would have such shields in stock. Wensley thought their men would still get shot from above. Ottoway said: "That doorway's narrow. If the plates are too wide, they'd never get in." Regardless, Superintendent Ottoway (CoLP) went off to get the protective shields, effectively standing the police down. This was the same Superintendent Ottoway who supplied the toothless Morris-tube rifles at 1 am and again at 8.30 am.

A detective came in and reported that Constable Harris (Met) was not seriously hurt. Churchill lit his second cigar for the day and remained at the table with the others drinking whiskey. It was 1 pm when another constable came in and said: "The house, sir, the house is on fire."

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Churchill watches as Morris-tube rifles fire across Sidney Street . . . after the Scots Guard had abandoned their poster hoardings . . . and the fire begins.

Morris-tube shots at Anarchists. No Scots Guards on poster hoardings.

Anarchists burn the building they occupy – 100 Sidney Street.

Churchill, Mac, Quinn, Mulvaney and Wensley left the brewery office and went out for a look. Smoke was coming out the back attic window as the firing continued from the front of the house. Mulvaney put a call through to the fire brigade and the East Enders yelled: "Watch the rats come out now, watch 'em come out . . . they're going to be burnt alive . . . anyone fancy roast pork for dinner? . . . best way to . . . kill all that scum."

Scotland Yard Chief CID Constable Melville Macnaghten: "A postman in a red and blue uniform, sack on back, somehow managed to get through the police cordon, walked along to 104 Sidney Street, pushed some letters into the box, and returned the way he had come, apparently unaware of what was going on around him. The crowd gave him a roaring cheer."

When the Keystone Cops made their movies they were parodying early Intelligence work. In turn, WWI soldiers would parody Fred Karno's army song with: "We are Fred Karno's Army, we are his fusiliers. We fuck up everything we touch, and nearly everything else besides."[13]

The red and blue postman added to the historical hilarity of the situation and made a mockery of police posturing. The police were under strict orders not to let anyone through. The postie put mail in 104 Sidney Street and at no other address. The mail contained a brief report of the situation and was a signal to the other Anarchists inside 104 to begin the evacuation of 100 Sidney Street in earnest.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

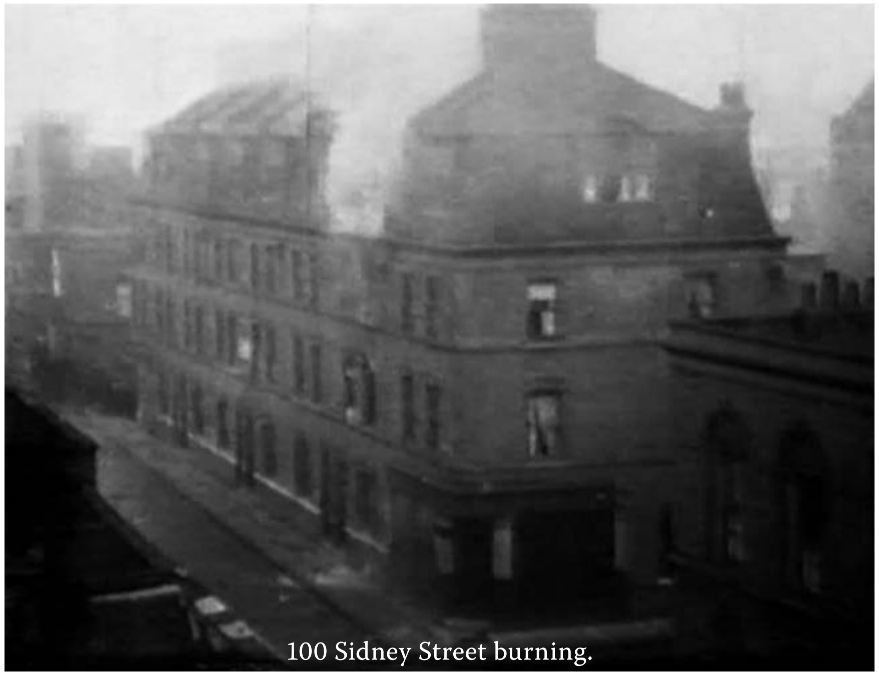

100 Sidney Street burning.

Siege of Sidney Street 1911

After talking to some police officers Mac suggested it would be pointless to rush the house now. The wind had died down and Wensley suggested to Churchill: "I shouldn't be surprised if they lit the fire themselves. We'll need to watch out they don't make a break for it."

Macnaghten (Scotland Yard CID/Met): "The smoke became thicker and gathered like a thundercloud around the top floor of the house . . . mixed in the cloud were thousands of bits of paper" – indicating that everything combustible had been placed in preparation for the fire and that the fire had been purposely lit. The attic room was often used for storage. Paper was also used as insulation between floors and some of the floorboards had been removed to create a firebreak and to add to the fire.

The soldiers increased their firepower front and back. The Anarchists moved to the floor below and began firing almost continuously. The noise was such that small amounts of gun cotton and a sledgehammer could be used without raising further alarm.

The firemen arrived at Lindley Street and started to unwind their hoses. Churchill spoke to Chief Fireman Davis and stood them down.

---

[13] Fred Karno was Charlie Chaplin's teacher and early employer.

Churchill stood the firemen down. This gave the Anarchists cover and an escape route.

The Russian immigrants at 98 (under Mrs Rubenoff) and 102 Sidney Street (under Mrs Bluestein) were then evacuated, which cleared the path for those at 104. A stream of women and small children came out. Some men followed carrying a few belongings, among them family pictures and Russian icons. One of the last Russian men to come out from 98 Sidney Street went up to Detective Inspector Wensley and said: “My fern cheer, Mr Vensel, what happen if my fern cheer burned?” This was to ensure that the firemen went to 98 before 102.

Macnaghten (Scotland Yard CID/Met): “I looked at my watch and saw almost unbelievingly that the time was one-thirty. I was reminded I had not eaten since early that morning. Many of the police, of course, had last eaten at some time on the previous night, and if I was hungry, they must be ravenous.”

There was a gasp from the East End crowd: “There ’e is.” On the third floor it seemed as if a man crawled outside the house onto the ledge and back in again, but it was just a curtain entertaining the excitable crowd. Then a single tongue of flame emerged out of the front top fourth-floor window. Then there was more firing from the third-floor windows front and back.

“There ’e is.”

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Macnaghten (Scotland Yard CID/Met) thought: “The numbers of men inside had suddenly been augmented and that, with the evacuation of the inhabitants from the neighbouring houses, Anarchists had crept up out of the cellars or tunnels to join their friends.” He was right. There was now more firepower at 100 Sidney Street, but they hadn’t come from the cellars as there was no escape from there.

The fire was started right on 1 pm. Just after this the smoke was noticed. The brass went out for a look and at the same time the Betar operative postie delivered a message to 104 Sidney Street (no phones). The Russian neighbours were then removed from 98 and 102 Sidney Street. The last of them (from 98) spoke to Wensley at 1.30 pm to ensure that his house gained first attention from the fire brigade.

There was a lot of cover fire from both sides, creating enough noise to block the sound of two explosions followed by sledgehammers to finish off the holes. On the second explosion, between 102 and 100 Sidney Street, the curtains blew out the window. Two more Anarchists came through the wall and began firing out the front and back of 100 Sidney Street. They were careful not to fire any shots from 102 Sidney Street and to stay low and towards the centre of the building.

Apart from the two new Anarchist marksmen, three others were involved passing buckets of water through the walls from 104 to 102 to the burning 100 Sidney Street. They used the water to wet their clothing and keep the centre of the floor wet, while encouraging smoke and fire near the windows and steam in between.

The second hole, into 100 Sidney Street, was ‘V’ shaped to allow vertical entry and exit and to destabilise the top floor above, the collapse of which covered the hole at initial inspection.

The Anarchists were professional, expertly trained with weapons and explosives and the latest strategies. They took care to be forewarned and to cover their tracks at all stages. Even Betty Gershon erroneously let slip that Koba (Stalin) had left England on 17 December when in fact Koba had been sleeping next-door-but-one at 104 Sidney Street. Koba was now organising their escape. He was the only one with enough balls and kudos to pull it off, the only one with British training, and the only one who knew this was a training exercise.

The King of England at the time was Winston Churchill’s half-brother King George V, so any influence or arrangement Churchill

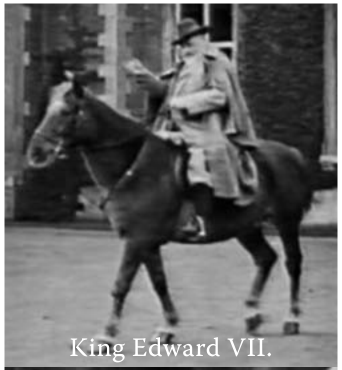
King Edward VII.

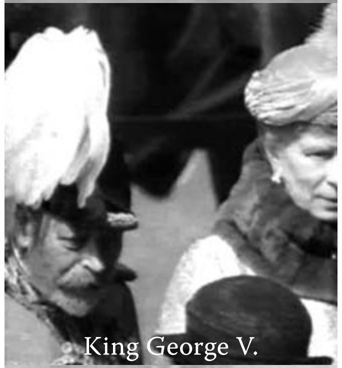
King George V.

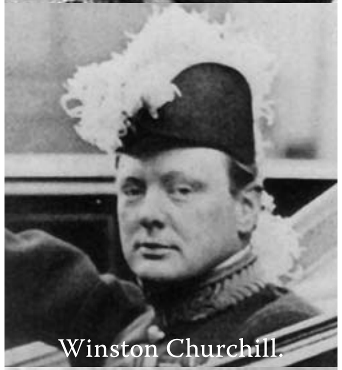
Winston Churchill.

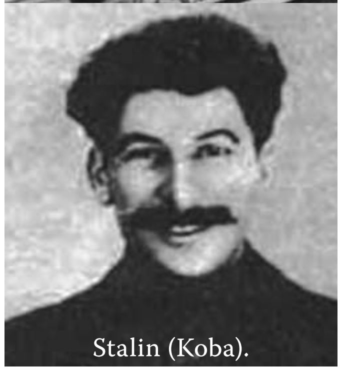
Stalin (Koba).

required for Stalin's escape was provided. This included accommodation for Koba (Stalin) at 104 Sidney Street.

The top of the house was now burning furiously, with flames crowning over the roof. The upper floor was uninhabitable and a thick pall of smoke hung over the second- and third-floor windows. "All firing had stopped" because the Anarchists were busy setting up the scenario that would cover their tracks.

Macnaghten (Scotland Yard CID/Met): "Then a figure appeared at the second-floor window . . . a frightful apparition like something out of a story by Edgar Allan Poe. It seemed for a moment that the figure had red hair, but in fact the hair was wreathed in flame, the face blackened by it. The clothes were also on fire. Yet in its flaming hand the figure held a pistol, and some incoherent shriek of defiance came from its mouth."

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

The question is how could Macnaghten see this from his position and through the smoke? By this time the Anarchists had dampened their clothes and wrapped handkerchiefs around their faces. Two of them held up the John Doe with no legs, the hair set on fire. The gun was held up by another Anarchist behind and they both made the shrieking noises, giving the East End ghost stories for decades to come. "The figure vanished from the window as suddenly as it had appeared."

At the same time, a gagged informant (who had once broken his leg) was brought in from 104, through 102 and into 100 Sidney Street and placed in the smoking stockroom on the third floor. He was then shot twice. He became William Sokoloff's dead body double. When the floors collapsed, this John Doe fell into what was the ground-floor back bedroom of Mr and Mrs Clements. Mr Clements was

Dr S. Kelstin Physician & Surgeon
100 Sidney Street burning.

in his nineties and deaf and had been pulled out of that bedroom eight hours earlier kicking and screaming.

Macnaghten (Scotland Yard CID/Met): "The sound of two more pistol shots were then heard from inside the house. Some of our men

100 Sidney Street burning.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

fired another volley in response, although there was now no figure to be seen, and they were firing into smoke."

The three Anarchists threw accelerants on the fire then escaped through the holes between 100 and 104 Sidney Street. The house then collapsed floor by floor from the top down, not unlike the Twin Towers. All firing had stopped and there was no sound to be heard except the crackling flames.

Macnaghten (Scotland Yard CID/Met): "Blazing timbers were flung into the street, masses of masonry crashed down, fiery splinters like shooting stars were hurtled 100 yards or more. Broken glass fell upon the pavement . . . iron girders stuck up out of the collapsed building like great naked ribs . . . [and there was] a terrific artillery of shots [from the police and Scots Guards]."

The soldiers and police had begun firing in useless triumph, making sure that any abandoned hostages were either shot or cooked.

After the Anarchists' escape, the waist-height hole at 102/104 Sidney Street was covered with a standing wardrobe – 'fern cheer' – and was repaired by the Anarchists that evening, while the occupants stayed elsewhere under police instructions. The collapsing floor had covered the hole between 100/102 Sidney Street.

Sir Melville Macnaghten: "Detective Sergeant Sonny Jacobson [Jewish] who had evacuated 100 Sidney Street earlier, approached the house with his double-barrelled shotgun. He had been instrumental earlier in getting the house evacuated – began to walk towards the house, holding a double-barrelled shotgun. He was followed by a dozen others [Met men], all of them with their guns out. They came up to the empty houses on either side and went into them, in order to make sure that the men had not broken through the walls."

Detective Sergeant Sonny Jacobson then kicked the door in at 100 Sidney Street and signalled for the firemen to come. Within minutes the firemen were inside the building. Soon after, there were shouts of warning as the middle section of the top floor collapsed on five of the firemen.

Constable Harris' dozen keen but none-too-bright shotgun-toting Met men (without the knocked-out Constable Harris) had searched 98 and 102 Sidney Street and found no Anarchists, nor any evidence of entry or exit. The hole at 100/102 could be clearly seen, although there was a floor hanging over it on the 100 side and the fire had removed any evidence of the gun-cotton blast.

Detective Inspector Wensley (Met), Chief Constable Melville Macnaghten (Scotland Yard/Met), Special Branch Superintendent Pat Quinn and Home Secretary Winston Churchill approached the house. Chief Fireman Davis ran out demanding stretchers, saw Churchill and said: "I've got men buried in there. If I'd been let free to work when we got here, this wouldn't have happened."[14]

Macnaghten (Scotland Yard CID/Met): "Inside the house was a shell, yet some fragments of it remained. If you looked up, you could see the sky, but you saw also sections of the upper floor leaning perilously inward. Above us a small table still stood, with ammunition on it, upon a part of the floor which looked as though you could walk on it. Beside the ammunition was a glass of water.

"The flames were all out, but smoke hung thickly, and we put handkerchiefs over our noses and eyes . . . Part of the sidewall had collapsed and had brought a section of the upper floor down with it. Five firemen lay there, half buried in the rubble. Two had been struck by a falling beam."

The Anarchists wet the floor in the middle, ripped up the floorboards either side so the fire wouldn't spread, and burnt off the outside of the floor. This floor collapsed where the sidewall had been blown out. Jewish coups always involve traps for the rescue staff.

Espavo S020 - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Chief Fireman Davis said to Churchill: "I wouldn't stay if you don't have to. Another wall may come down." Churchill replied: "I understand your feelings, but if you'd gone in when you wanted to, these men would have been shot, not injured. Hallo there, what's this?"

Churchill spotted the first body. It was a headless torso by the fireplace in a sitting position. The head had apparently been burned away in the fire and all that remained was the torso and the arms. "A little digging in the middle of the room . . . revealed the legs separated from the body, and apart from these, a fragment of the brainpan and a skull cap."

Macnaghten (Scotland Yard CID/Met): "Another body was found in the back room, unrecognisable and looked as if it had been shot . . . further digging by the firemen revealed a pistol. Churchill picked it up, weighed it in his hand and said, 'A Mauser . . . better than anything we've got. We must do something about that'." This was part of Churchill's plan to arm the police before WWI broke out.

Macnaghten then stumbled out of the door across the road, removed his handkerchief and had a nip from his hipflask. Churchill came out twenty minutes later and also had a nip. "An excellent malt . . . two bodies were found, unrecognisable of course . . . I wanted to be sure none of them got away."

Forty or fifty of the public then began to clap in a loud chorus. Churchill said to Mac: "History will remember the siege of Sidney Street." The public has remembered Sidney Street, but for all the wrong reasons and for none of the right conclusions. It has been remembered for its violence and its unsolved mysteries.

The next day (Tuesday, 3 January 1911) Churchill sent a memorandum to the head of the Met's H Division, Divisional Superintendent Mulvaney, saying the Metropolitan Police must be provided with "the best pattern of automatic pistols at present procurable" and that "this should be put in hand *immediately*".

Sergeant Arthur Bryant, who was twice shot in the Houndsditch robbery, had said: "We'd have been happy to shoot them, but we had no weapons."

A few weeks later, Home Secretary Winston Churchill and Scotland Yard's Melville Macnaghten tested dozens of pistols and revolvers. They selected the British-made Webley-Scott .32 automatic pistol (7.62 mm bullets) and the British police force was now armed in preparation for WWI. It was not a good choice, but it was a patriotic choice. Churchill's family had a huge financial interest in Webley-Scott.

A week after the siege (Monday, 9 January 1911), the Commissioner held a conference in Scotland Yard. He was the head of the Metropolitan Police of which the CID was only a part. Present were Chief Constable of Scotland Yard's Criminal Investigation Department Melville Macnaghten, Special Branch Superintendent Patrick Quinn, Divisional

---

[14] Hermann Goering learnt from this. In 1933 he stopped the firemen putting out the Reichstag fire. Both were publicity stunts to go to arms.

Superintendent Mulvaney, Metropolitan Detective Inspector Frederick Porter Wensley and City of London Police Superintendent Ottoway. It was the full brass.[15] The Commissioner pointed out the international newspapers. "A Thousand Police versus Two Rebels", "Tragicomedy as British Authorities Muddle Through", "The Army Called Out to Deal with Anarchists". He asked if anyone would like to comment.

In fact, the real situation was much more tragic than the newspapers had portrayed. Not only had the Anarchists got away but the true damage from the thwarted Houndsditch robbery and Sidney Street Siege was much greater than the newspapers alluded to. What's worse is that the police had placed themselves in ridiculous and dangerous situations en masse (two hundred) with no situation control or foreseeable conclusion other than to starve them out. Tanks were not yet invented.[16]

At Houndsditch, Sergeant Charles 'Daddy' Tucker was killed outright. Constable Walter Charles Choat had been shot eight times and died in hospital. Sergeant Robert (Bob) Bentley was shot in the shoulder and the neck and his spinal cord was severed. He died in hospital the following morning. Constable Ernie Woodhams was permanently crippled by the shot that shattered his lungs. Sergeant Arthur Bryant was shot and the bullet remained in his chest. He could no longer perform active duties.The Jewish neighbourhood clubbed together and bought him a gold watch.

At Sidney Street, Sergeant Ben Leeson was shot through both nipples yet survived. One constable was wounded. One Scots Guard suffered a flesh wound in the thigh and another to the arm. Dr Johnstone was shot but the bullet only grazed his forehead. Special Branch Superintendent Patrick Quinn was nicked by a ricocheted bullet. Detective Inspector Wensley was hit by fragments of a roof tile from gunfire and his bowler hat was shot as it fell. Another officer's helmet had been hit. Sergeant Hallam's helmet had taken a bullet rendering him temporarily deaf, and Constable Harris had rushed 100 Sidney Street and knocked himself unconscious on a piece of wood.

Scotland Yard CID Macnaghten: "Several civilians were hurt, but they knew the risk they took being there."

---

[15] Like Ottoway, those with Christian names never mentioned were less popular.

[16] Tanks were invented by the British and made their first public appearance in 1916. They were first used in 1917 at Cambrai during WWI.

A cat had been killed and the Russian Betar dressed as a British postie had walked through the "tight police cordon" and delivered mail directly to Koba (Stalin). After the siege was over, five firemen were buried in the collapsing rubble.

Two dead bodies were found in the house. One was dead when it was brought into the house and the other, an informant, was killed in the last moments of the siege and then bombarded by police bullets, ensuring that if he was still alive, he had no hope of escaping the flames and bullets.

Koba (Stalin) and at least four other Anarchists had broken through two walls and assisted Joseph (William Sokoloff) and Fritz Svaars while the house was under siege from one hundred City of London Police, one hundred Metropolitan Police and twenty Scots Guards, with the Home Secretary and all the top brass standing by, guiding and watching.

> Not only was this a monumental cock-up, it was the biggest police/military cock-up in Britain's history – so much so that it was an inside job. Britain takes a lot of pride in being the coloniser, and to be had in such a way – well, the embarrassment was such that there has been a complete cover-up of the Sidney Street Siege ever since. The only information that has ever surfaced on Sidney Street is either false, or written in such a way that it cannot be readily deciphered into clarity . . . Nevertheless, the British covered up their follies with the usual array of promotions and knighthoods to the service of ignorance.

From Houndsditch, Constable Ernie Woodhams was promoted to sergeant and Sergeant Arthur Bryant was promoted to sub-inspector. The two plain-clothed constables (Churchill's spies) were never mentioned.

From Sidney Street, Detective Inspector Frederick Wensley (Met) was promoted to Chief Constable of the CID, equal to Macnaghten. In 1913, Melville Macnaghten was elevated from Chief Constable of Scotland Yard's CID to Sir Melville Macnaghten and then retired.

Winston Churchill took a lot of flak from the House of Commons for taking part in the siege and Prime Minister Arthur Balfour accused Churchill of acting improperly, but Balfour was also Jewish and in on the scam. Balfour was also close friends with the First Baron 'Natty' Rothschild (d. 1915) and the Second Baron 'Walter' Rothschild (the homosexual eccentric), with whom he played a major role in the creation

Espavo 3020 - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

of Israel five years later.[17] Since the Jews had been centred around the Black Sea (since the 1500s) and Stalin was an illegitimate Rothschild from Georgia, the whole thing was a training exercise for Stalin's Jewish takeover of Russia – the 1917 October Revolution.

Churchill, an illegitimate Rothschild (by his biological father), used the siege to foster his image. In the eyes of the public he remained a renaissance man, calm in all situations and immortal during battle and after it.

Churchill used the Houndsditch and Sidney Street cock-ups to arm the police, keeping them very 'mumsy' about the whole affair through promotions. The more sincere the police are, regardless of whether they succeed or stuff things up, the more they're promoted. Sincere collusion and failure is the fastest way to promotion in the force, and mutual promotion was the preferred method of covering up the affair.

'Oo, they must 'ave dun well.' It would have been better to give the Anarchists a bus ticket out of London.

At the same Monday conference the Commissioner said: "We have killed only two of the conspirators . . . there is no proof of their identity . . . and the rest of the murderous gang are still at large."

Special Branch Superintendent Patrick Quinn: "The identification. These men were Fritz Svaars and Joseph [William Sokoloff]. Joseph had a limp and one of the bodies found had been shot and was certainly the man who appeared for a moment at the window."

treasurer@platinumparty.org

This was a Churchill-instigated comment designed to confuse the identities of the bodies. It was the John Doe torso for Fritz Svaars that appeared in the window and the John Doe for William Sokoloff that was twice shot.

Pat Quinn had two pieces of evidence that the body found twice-shot in the ground-floor back bedroom was that of the limping William Sokoloff (Joseph). The first was an old thigh fracture found on the body. The second was Detective Inspector Wensley's interview via the Yiddish-speaking Detective Sergeant Sonny Jacobson when he spoke with Betty Gershon. This interview was then passed to Chief CID Constable Melville Macnaghten, who then told Special Branch Superintendent Patrick Quinn, who then told the Commissioner for Scotland Yard. It was a veritable Chinese whisper of calculated misleads involving the well-timed story changes of Betty Gershon.

---

[17] Prime Minister Arthur Balfour confirmed the Rothschilds' desire for a State of Israel in his Balfour Agreement on 2 November 1917.

Betty Gershon, William Sokoloff's cousin and lover, said that William Sokoloff wasn't there, then that he was in her bedroom alone, then that he was with another man, then that that man was always called 'my pal', except on one occasion when he let slip and called him 'Fritz Svaars', and then that they had been there for a couple of days. Betty Gershon had also stated that Koba (Stalin) had left the country, when he plainly hadn't. Betty Gershon never knew Fritz Svaars beforehand and couldn't positively identify him as Fritz Svaars, alive or dead.

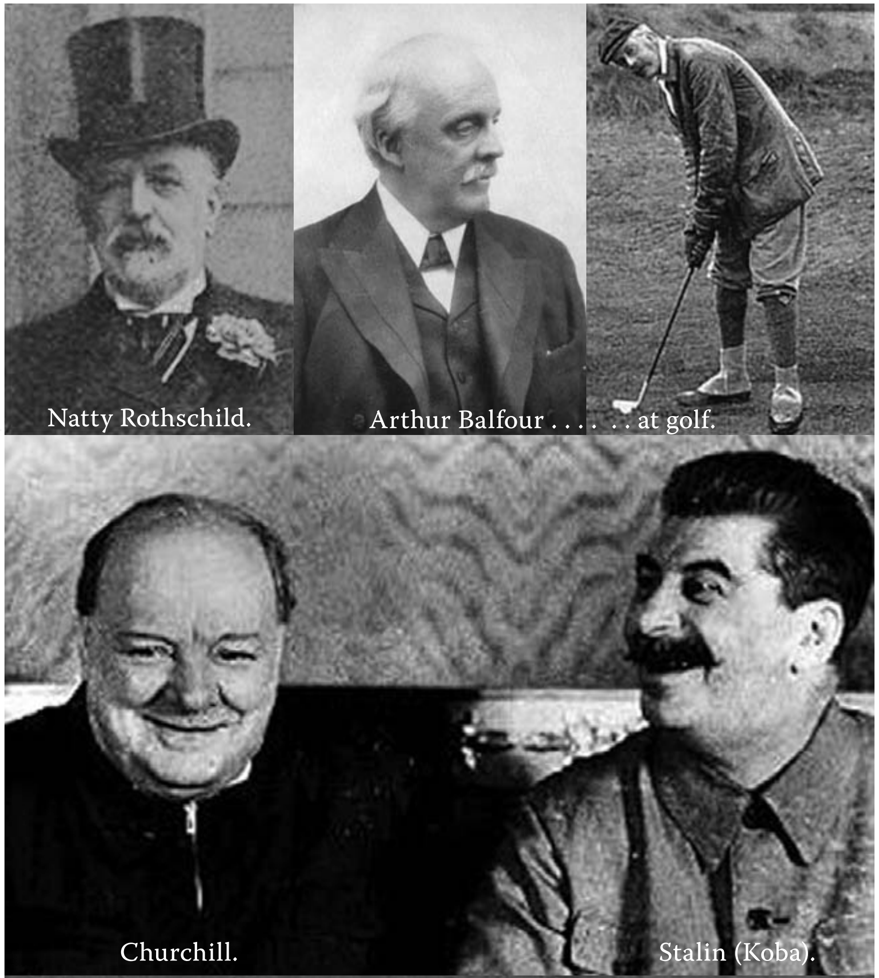

First Baron 'Natty' Rothschild was close friends with Prime Minister Arthur Balfour, encouraging him to play golf, so Churchill and Stalin, both illegitimate Rothschilds, could have a laugh about their successful training exercise. All worked together on the destruction of Russia with a Jewish Communist takeover, and creation of the state of Israel.

Betty Gershon was somewhere between Luba Milstein and Nina Vassilleva in the intelligence stakes. Nina was attractive and intelligent. Luba was dull and plodding. Betty Gershon was tall and thin with peering eyes and looked like an ostrich. She didn't speak English, was a Russian immigrant who spoke Yiddish, and was strange-looking enough to be unemployed, desperate for money and in need of friends. She hadn't managed to branch out and was desperate enough to sleep with her cousin without cashing him in for the £167 reward.

Nevertheless, William Sokoloff *was* staying on the third floor of 100 Sidney Street, but the body found was not his. It was a body planted by the cunning and conniving British-trained Koba, who had the confidence to treat Sidney Street as a training exercise for the Russian Revolution – which indeed it was.

Special Branch Superintendent Patrick Quinn: "Fritz couldn't be identified as the body was too badly burnt, but the torso was the right size for a short man."

This is further confusion supplied by Churchill via his mouthpiece Patrick Quinn. Fritz was 1.75 metres (5'9") and couldn't be classified as short, especially when the average male height then was 1.68 metres (5'6").

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Mar

The torso of Fritz Svaars was left on the floor near the third floor window with its head set on fire. The skull cap had already been removed and accelerant was poured inside the skull. This is why the head burnt off.

When the building burnt down, the torso fell through two floors against the wall of the ground floor. That it was leaning against a wall is either a fluke or an incorrect statement. Either way, in a fire, it is rare for a live body to sit against a wall when all is burning. One tends to lie face down in the middle of the room.

The legs fell into the middle of the room from where they had been dropped and they fell separate from the body. There were no allegations that the body had been shot or died from asphyxiation.

If the body was alive before the fire then the only way the legs could have separated was from a beam falling from a great height, missing all the other beams on the way down, and landing perfectly horizontally directly over the tops of the legs, 0.3 metres (one foot) out from the wall.

The chance of this happening makes the experts look stupid. A falling beam hit two firemen after the siege but their legs never came off and in the list of casualties there are no reports that any legs were broken. Certainly people went missing in that area all the time, and the testy relationship between the Metropolitan Police and the City of London Police meant that many of these murders were effectively treated as part of East End culture.

Misinformation was always on the breakfast menu for the City of London Police and the Met. Interrogations were regularly sabotaged by each other's department, and both departments had spies giving the other police department false information.

It was normal then, as now, for the City of London Police and the Met to sabotage each other's cases through misinformation, running informant gangs in each other's territory, providing erroneous leads, conflicting affidavits, and sabotaging arms. This was partly an attempt to improve their respective reputations but it resulted in the denigration of both police departments. As a result, it was a liar's paradise.

The immigrant gangs thought the British police were a joke, and got away with murder every second night. Spymaster: "The same conflict happens with the police and security intelligence services today."

Special Branch Superintendent Patrick Quinn had his own agenda and the information he gathered was not routinely disseminated to the police. The Irishman Pat Quinn worked for Home Secretary Winston Churchill, and Churchill, trained in the Military Psych-Ops war school of Tavistock, was running a live training programme in London for the equally trained Stalin.

> There was an agreement between Stalin and Churchill to create a scenario where Stalin would be tested and the police would be required to be armed. If this had not occurred, the police would not have been armed in preparation for WWI, something Churchill also had his hand in.

It should be remembered at this point that Stalin had already completed three contract killings on behalf of the British Government. As such, he and his gang were protected and it would have been most embarrassing to bring him to trial. As a result:

1. Whoever was with Stalin was protected.
2. None of the Anarchists were killed by British hands.
3. Those who were captured were set free by the British courts due to lack of evidence and a mistrial by the judge.

The Sidney Street Siege and escape was a canned meat operation. A torso and two separate legs were brought in from 104 Sidney Street to simulate the body of the 1.75 metre (5'9") Fritz Svaars, and an informant who had once broken his leg. The later was brought in alive and then shot twice to simulate a dead version of the limping William Sokoloff.

Faking Fritz Svaars' death meant that the police stopped chasing him for the murder of Sergeant Robert Bentley, the near mortal wounding of Sergeant Arthur Bryant, and shooting Constable Charley Choat seven times (but not the first shot).

Similarly, Jacob Peters shot George Gardstein under Koba's (Stalins) orders, who was in turned ordered by Churchill. This allowed the mission to succeed and the British to feel like they'd got one.

William Sokoloff (Joseph) and Fritz Svaars escaped out of 100 Sidney Street with Koba (Stalin) and four other Anarchists in support. They lay low at 104 Sidney Street until the night of the 4/5 January 1911 and then escaped by boat and were in France by 8 January 1911. Peter Piatkow was located in Paris on 9 January 1911, a week after the siege.

> This situation was unprecedented in police history. Stalin had organised the two most violent events the British police had ever dealt with – something he could only do because he was trained and supported by the British higher up (Churchill and his half-brother King George V).
>
> After this there was a strong move to ban all further immigration into Britain and an equally strong movement to arm the police.
>
> The immigration rules remained slack until WWI broke out. This was long enough for Hitler to enter the country 13 months later, arriving in February 1912 and leaving in May 1913. For identification, Hitler used a birth certificate showing him to be his brother, Edmund Hitler, who was five years younger and had been dead for fifteen years. Hitler then began his Tavistock training in the same place Stalin was trained two years earlier.
>
> In 1910, and in the surrounding years, no aliens were refused entry into England. The British Government simply refused to place any limit on the entry of aliens into England, nor the amount of arms they brought into the country.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Jacob Peters, Nina Vassilleva, Luba Milstein, Max, Ivan Lebeder and another female Anarchist were put on trial. The police, as witnesses, could not identify the bank robbers positively (Churchill's Home Office influence) despite having been given photos by the double agent Nina (via her landlord Isaac Gordon), and most of the East Enders were too afraid to come forward.

The unintelligent and unattractive Luba Milstein had given herself up and was quickly discharged as merely being a tool for Fritz Svaars. Max, Ivan Lebeder and another Anarchist were not at the Exchange Buildings when the robbery took place and they were dismissed as well. The prosecution could never prove Jacob Peters shot Constable Walter Charles Choat and he was dismissed. Within a week of his acquittal, he left England.

Nina Vassilleva (Lina, Minna Gristis) was present at the Houndsditch robbery but had not fired a pistol. She was tried and convicted and received a two-year sentence for breaking and entering. However, "during the trial Judge Mr Justice Grantham intervened saying, 'Well of course we all know who the murderers were. It was Gardstein, Fritz Svaars and Joseph' [William Sokoloff]".

"Judge Mr Justice Grantham described all those who were [written off as] dead and immediately kicked the mainstay out of the prosecution's case. Nina Vassilleva was convicted for two years and appealed five weeks later, citing that the judge had misdirected the jury. The case was then thrown out. This meant that no one went to prison for the Houndsditch murders of three police officers?"[18]

Rather than return to Russia where Nina may have been found out by the Betar or killed by the Russian secret police, she stayed in England and wrote a memoir which forms part of this account.

Only George Gardstein (Mr Morin/Mourrewitz/Mr Poolka Milowitz) was dead and he was killed by his own man, Jacob Peters. George Gardstein and Jacob Peters were equally close to Stalin, and Gardstein was killed by the revolutionary Jacob Peters as the quickest method of self-promotion. It worked. After the 1917 agenda-driven Revolution, Jacob Peters became the Deputy Chairman of the Cheka until he was killed in the Russian purges of the 1930s when Stalin emerged as ruling dictator without peer.

---

[18] Donald Rumbelow, the leading authority on Jack the Ripper, talks on Jonathan Freedland's show, History – The Long View, Radio 4, 11 March 2003.

> The whole thing was a purposeful police and judicial bungle that showed insider training and insider trading.

The Russian agenda-driven Revolution took place on 27 October 1917 and the Russian-born Tavistock/Freemason/British agents then sent a memo to Tavistock/British Royal Family/Switzerland, who sent back a reply congratulating them and told them to change their clocks. This did not occur after the splintered 1905 revolution, but after the bloody 1917 agenda-driven revolution where 82% of the new revolutionary Commissars were Jews. Russia then changed from the Julian Calendar to the Gregorian Calendar 110 days later on 14 February 1918. This meant that the 27 October counter-Revolution is now celebrated as the Red October Revolution on 7 November 1917.

> This is classic Golden Dawn *Effective* coven as '110' translates as "from here mastery begins". The date change was used to provide desired confusion for all who read history.
>
> The British police, army and courts had no effect on the well-trained, well-armed Russian Betar revolutionaries. Churchill knew from this that Stalin had taken on board his British training and would succeed in his Bolshevik Revolution. This allowed Churchill to make plans for the safe removal of Tsar Nicholas II and his Russian Royal Family. Officially they were shot at Yekaterinburg in 1918 by Stalin's Red Guards. In reality they were swished out to Eire in Ireland by Lieutenant Colonel Meintzerhagen, later promoted to head of MI-5.
>
> The British Royal Family was related to the Russian Royal Families and they were hardly going to have them killed, more so since Stalin was *their* British agent.
>
> The ties between Britain and Russia, and Britain and Germany, were so strong at the time that the Russians were referred to as 'uncles' and the Germans were known as 'cousins'. The British Royal Family used their 'cousins' in Germany to remove their 'uncles' in Russia to relative safety, anonymity, and out of the history books. This was one of the goals of the British monarchy's instigated and assisted Russian Revolution.
>
> In this way, after several British Freemasonry-run revolutions and wars, the British Royal Family is the only surviving Royal Family of the three competing countries. Great Britain remained the richest country, with the highest percentage of males – so much so that they had to export them. Pity.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 20

> The British Royal Family is the only Royal Family with their faces continually pasted over magazine covers and it is the only Royal Family where the same style of murders and intrigue continue.
>
> The male head of the British Royal Family is also the head of the Freemasons – the Grand Pooh-Bar. The British Royal Family and Freemasons have a history, but it is not the history we normally read. The history we read is the one that is written under their instruction and it is bunkum.

Special Branch Superintendent Pat Quinn: "A subtle, resourceful, intelligent man. I should have liked the chance of interrogating Koba." Home Secretary Winston Churchill could have arranged it but it would have been the last interview Pat Quinn ever conducted.

Stalin never slept for more than thirty minutes at a time. In Tavistock he was given the secret to a very deep sleep which he took to readily. This allowed him to achieve a tremendous amount in many different countries. If Stalin required eight hours' sleep, the Bolshevik Revolution may never have happened.

Just prior to WWI, Stalin bungled a bank robbery in Odessa, Russia. The police locked the doors to the bank and trapped him inside with his hostages. Stalin reacted by shooting everyone in the bank. When he ran out of bullets he battered the people to death with his revolver. When his revolver became so covered in blood that it slipped out of his hand, he ripped the chemise (petticoat) off a girl and wrapped it around the barrel of his gun and continued.

When a police bullet nicked a gas pipe the bank caught fire and Koba (1879–1953) escaped through the flames out the back. He was as great an escape artist as Harry Houdini (originally Erich Weiss, 1874–1926), both of whom were Freemasonry trained in the gothic (magic) tricks of the Knights Templar, ex-King Solomon's Tomb.

Lenin was told about this in negative, disapproving terms by one of his assistants, but Lenin approved and nicknamed Koba 'Stalin' meaning 'Man of Steel'. It stuck. Dzhugashvili changed his name again, this time from Koba to Joseph V. Stalin. Stalin did a lot of killing first hand, via his secret police and through government policy. He was a psychopathic killing machine with a revolutionary direction that was backed by Britain's war training school and protected by his Rothschild birthright.

Five years after the Sidney Street Siege, the 1917 Russian Revolution took place and the Bolsheviks seized power under Trotsky and Lenin – both of whom were British trained and protected. Jacob Peters and Koba, now Joseph V. Stalin (Prince V, Man of Steel), appeared in a special edition of the Russian revolutionary newspaper, *Pravda*.

> Jacob Peters had become Deputy Chairman of the Cheka, aka 'Peters, the Terrorist'. Stalin joined the Central Committee Russian Communist Party and simplified his name to Joseph Stalin (Prince of Steel). The man who ruled Russia for 29 years was a convicted criminal, jail breaker, gang leader, murderer, contract killer, international bank robber, British war school graduate, illegitimate Rothschild and all-round psychopath. Stalin's robberies/expropriations, helped fund the Russian Revolution. Stalin was a British agent. He was trained in Britain and given every assistance to succeed in his robberies and murders in every European country he acted. Sidney Street was a Rothschild exercise for their two favourite sons, Stalin and Churchill.

Stalin spoke perfect English (William B. Breuer's *Feuding Allies*) and learnt this from more than one person, as he understood innuendo. He didn't learn English from travelling around Europe, which spoke predominantly French and German at the time, but from his time in the war schools (Kriegschules) of Britain and Ireland.

Before Stalin, the British used the same format with Trotsky and Lenin, taking both in after they were exiled to Siberia (Trotsky, 1900–02, 1907–11; Lenin 1897–1900). The British harboured Lenin while he founded the revolutionary Bolshevik Party of which Stalin and the Houndsditch/Anarchist gang were major players. The British also trained Adolf Hitler 13 months after the Sidney Street Siege. Churchill and Stalin were to work together again during WWII. Churchill thwarted Germany's attempt at peace on 11 May 1941 then encouraged Germany to attack Russia in Operation BARBAROSSA on 22 June 1941. This pretty much preoccupied Russia for the whole war. Under Stalinism, Russia was becoming a country of dead people.

Spymaster: "Stalin reacted to the German invasion by getting drunk for two weeks. This is what the highly-trained-by-British-Intelligence do. He got paralytically drunk because he thought his life was over and one of his followers would come and murder him. Being invaded by Germany is the equivalent to being fired by British Intelligence. But being a dictator he completely forgot that he had murdered all his opposition, any that could be considered opposition, and there were no opponents of the régime left. When he learnt that Churchill had been making kind references about him in the House of Commons and promising him aid, he decided that perhaps there was hope, and sobered up." The British war school watched as their two pupils, Stalin and Hitler, battled it out.

> As rape and infrastructure colonists, the British ensured that they were the only race that were not exotic. Even as the Empire dwindled and fell, losing the title 'Great British Empire', new plans of colonising on another level were put in place, one that would not register on the world map. The British were in a pattern and they simply couldn't help themselves. They were addicted to power and manipulating world events, no matter the cost. If the British couldn't have a physical empire, they were going to have an invisible empire.

The British have used their military Psych-Ops training schools to take over parts of Europe including Germany and Russia, parts of Africa including Uganda, and all of the Commonwealth countries at some point in time, including Canada and America, whose citizens still pay tax to the UK. The British installed their puppets in destructive regimes, thus continuing their colonialism under someone else's name, but in a more destructive form. The practice of training foreign national dictators is still used by Britain today.

Ugandan Army Sergeant Idi Amin trained in Sandhurst for three years. In order to place him in Uganda, the Queen invited Ugandan President Milton Obote to take tea with her at Buckingham Palace in 1971. At the same time, Idi Amin left Britain for Uganda with a contingent of British Green Berets and terrorised the country for eight years. Idi Amin achieved notoriety by consigning political prisoners to the croc-infested Lake Victoria under the auspices of the State Research Bureau, registered in the Station's Logbook column as "disposition of prisoner". For Idi's services to Britain's 'undeclared war against Marxism in Africa' he won the MC, then the VC. These could not be gazetted or pinned on him by the Queen so the British Ambassador was assigned. Feeling ill at the thought, he gave it to the Military Attaché at the Kampala embassy who did the deed then got horribly tanked (drunk). When the British finally woke up eight years later and realised they had made another international blunder, they assisted Milton Obote to regain control and Obote became Uganda's prime minister again from 1981–85.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Idi 'Big Daddy' Amin then lived in exile in the Saudi Arabian city of Jeddah where he had protective cover as a devout Muslim until his death in 2003. Idi Amin took on the Muslim religion so that, if murdered, the act would be considered a Christian attack against the Muslims with the possibility of an international religious war. As things lay, this was delayed until 2001 when the 9-11 Twin Towers went down in a controlled demolition organised by President George W. Bush.

The British colonies are still prone to this form of colonisation. New Zealand's National Prime Minister Robert Muldoon (1975–84) was also trained in Tavistock, 1945–47. He succeeded in ruining New Zealand's economy and left every New Zealander with an international debt of NZ$20,000. Muldoon (the talking cheek) also sold off all the major government assets and ensured that the bulk of New Zealand was owned offshore and therefore controlled by offshore interests. This was done to ensure New Zealand's social policy would be controlled from offshore. The following government, Labour, continued the practice.

Muldoon.

Bill Sutch exposed the sale of government assets with social policy controlled offshore in his 1972 book *Takeover New Zealand*. Bill Sutch was then killed on 28 September 1975 and Muldoon became Prime Minister 11 weeks later (12 December 1975) and the killer was knighted soon after, as Sir Randal Elliott, KBE, GCStJ. It was a commissioned hit and is typical of knights, who are elevated for either murder, file theft or paedophilia. Elliott was not a doctor of the pancreas, but he was the highest-ranking military medic in the southern hemisphere.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Once in power and working for the British, Muldoon soon established total control by getting all his cabinet ministers to sign their resignations before they took office. A third of his cabinet were paedophiles, the secret of which ensured they would never speak out and would also curb the same tendencies in others. His opposition, Wallace Rowling, was heavily compromised (some say an incestuous paedophile), so he became Ambassador to the US as toady ensuring all secrets were transferred.

There are various forms of dictatorship and not all of them involve death. During Muldoon's tenure, all British responsibility for New Zealand was thwarted and all allegiance withdrawn. After eight years of Muldoonism he handed over a bankrupt nation in July 1984, having already lost its identity and the ownership of its assets. Little did they know, they also had no citizenship.

This was, in part, retribution for New Zealand's Walter Nash and Peter Fraser burning the British flag and stomping all over it in 1923. They were then charged with sedition, but this didn't stop them from both becoming PM. Peter Fraser became the Labour (Russian-aligned) PM from 1940–49 (during which time Muldoon was trained in Tavistock) and Walter Nash was Labour Prime Minister from 1957–60. Because New Zealand had a Russian-aligned Labour PM during all of WWII, New Zealand troops were placed in the worst possible situations and consequently had a very high death toll. To keep this situation under wraps, Kiwis were known for their bravery, when in reality, they were cannon fodder sent to their deaths, but somehow managed to survive. Monte Cassino is a case in point.

Muldoon handed over the government 12 days late on 26 July 1984 because he had contacted the Pentagon and requested they take over New Zealand. During those 12 days the Pentagon Committee voted 4 'for' and 4 'against', with the chairman casting the deciding vote against the American occupation of New Zealand. Muldoon spent this entire time in his office getting drunk, after which he met the Spymaster at the Duck Pond in the Auckland Domain and asked him to plan a coup. This was prevented by his wife, Thea Muldoon, who yelled from the car, "Stop talking to that man. You'll get the both of you into trouble."

There are many more double agent Prime Ministers like this. It is typical in Western nations to have a double agent PM or president every 25 years, but this timeframe has now been reduced to 'nearly always'.

New Zealand's Labour (Russian-aligned) PM Helen Clark took office in November 1999, 24 years after Muldoon. She is the KGB operative 'IE' (pron. 'e'). Through Stalin, the British Tavistock war school psychological training was incorporated into Frunze,[19] Russia and then on to the KGB, with a branch opening on the outskirts of St Petersburg. At the same time, Tavistock opened up in London. Helen Clark was trained in

---

[19] The area was known as Pishpek (1877–1926) and renamed Frunze (1926–91) after Lenin's friend and Bolshevik military leader in the 1905 and 1917 revolutions and the Russian civil war of the early 1920s – Mikhail Frunze. It contains a major Soviet military pilot training school and trained Hosni Mubarak who has been president of Egypt since Sadat's assassination in 1981. Frunze is a landlocked mountainous area in Central Asia and borders on China, Kazakhstan and Uzbekistan. The population gained independence on 31 August 1991 and the name changed again, this time to Bishkek.

Tavistock St Petersburg and consequently uses the Tavistock-London-trained National PM Robert Muldoon as her role model.

Dr. Helen Who?

Homosexual marriage.

The Tavistock St Petersburg-trained Helen Clark with her homosexual child-sex abuser husband Peter Davis, and her former lover, the neurotic rampant lesbian Judith Tizard, set amongst a backdrop of KIWI voters – Keen Interest Without Intelligence. All photos of Helen are at the same age.

Lesbian lovers.

Hitler lookalike.

As Marx once said, "As goes the family, so goes the country". Helen Clark's communist goal is the destruction of the family and the promotion of homosexuals and paedophiles. In support of this, she has a homosexual husband and bisexual PR agent. Her husband Peter Davis is a compulsive child-sex abuser whom she placed under house arrest in February 2004 – for child-sex abuse (not the first or the last time). Helen's PR agent Brian Edwards is a paedophile caught in the act with a 12-year-old schoolgirl in 1981 at 21 Salamanca Road, Kelburn, Wellington, a house he was evicted from, about a month later, for unpaid rent. The schoolgirl was from the Anglican Samuel Marsden Collegiate and was not Brian Edwards' first or last paedophile victim. There have been many.

Helen Clark's much-promoted Minister of Conservation Chris Carter was also outed as a paedophile by the former Minister of Police

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Marc

on 23 March 2006. Helen Clark had made the homosexual child-sex abuser Chris Carter the unofficial Minister of Internal Affairs in order to cover up her own paedophilia (and to rig elections) and that of the homosexual paedophile Jonathan Hunt whom she promoted from Speaker of the House to New Zealand's highest political position, High Commissioner to Britain (April 2005) upon his exposure as a paedophile by US Customs in September 2004 (top on a list of 75 names). To complete the cover-up, the Privy Counsellor (as of 1989) was invested (1 April 2005) with New Zealand's highest order, Member of the Order of New Zealand, restricted to 20 live members … Jonathan Hunt mentored Chris Carter.[20]

The investiture was made by the Governor-General Dame Silvia Cartwright, who was elevated to that position via the process of career twins, by Helen Clark. She was previously Judge Silvia Cartwright, New Zealand's most corrupt judge, with 18 major complaints against her – none of them heard and most of them regarding gender bias. It is most common for fierce feminists to promote paedophiles as this suits their agenda – the destruction of the family in order to access unprotected fatherless children, often for *their* husbands.

When I was asked on radio when I was going to get into politics, I thought about it and came to the conclusion that "**Parliament is dining with paedophiles**". Similarly, when the position of Director of Security came up in April 2006 three references were required and I wasn't prepared to give any.

This is the way that countries are colonised today, through financial turmoil, paedophilia, child-sex abuse, bisexuality, the destruction of the family and financial, social and cultural annexing. As such, New Zealand has been renamed, although the new name is only known by a select few, and New Zealand citizenship has not officially existed since 10 January 1920.

America has the same practice, but is more overt about it. America has the 'US Army School of the Americas' (SOA) based in Panama where it openly trains dictators and troops to make war against their own people.[21]

---

[20] We only know Chris Carter to be a child-sex abuser. His paedophilia was news to us. The difference is in the age of the child. Paedophilia is under 13 and child-sex abuse is 13–16 years old. Labour (New Communism) MP Chris Carter has two cases of child-sex abuse against him from two of his male students while he was their schoolteacher. The New Zealand Police are refusing to press charges while he is an MP. That's their excuse and it is a delaying tactic. They will probably never press charges as they employ so many paedophiles themselves. Paedophiles in the New Zealand Police are protected by promotion and paedophiles become MPs in order to avoid being charged, prosecuted, and jailed.

The SOA recently moved to Fort Benning, Georgia and was renamed the polite 'Western Hemisphere Institute for Security Cooperation'.

When the School of the Americas moved they painted over all the old murals in Panama without using sealer and when the BBC went to film it, all the old murals and graffiti had come through the new acrylic. The murals showed fascists killing and torturing communists in such graphic detail that nothing was left to the imagination. Many of the murders and tortures employed by the fascist death squads were performed on young children and these are also visibly depicted.

People's names, military cover names and noms de guerre are also clearly and legibly shown, and most are traceable. The fact that most of these School of the Americas graduates have not been tracked down by the Forces of Order – the military, the police, the Catholic Church, the government, big business and the established education system – shows complicity amongst the Forces of Order.

What person in one small country is going to defy all these powerful Forces of Order when they have been propagandised into working for them and obeying them all their lives? It is as ridiculous as expecting the Israelis to pluck Nazi war criminals out of those same countries after WWII.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Eichmann was kidnapped because he was obviously gettable, he would serve as the sole and only war criminal to be returned to Israel, and his capture served to rehabilitate an Israeli spymaster, the equally rotten Rafi Etan. But this was delayed for as long as possible by the CIA.

"Determined to win the Cold War, the CIA kept quiet about the whereabouts of Nazi war criminal Adolf Eichmann in the 1950s . . . In a March 19, 1958, memo to the CIA, West German intelligence officials wrote that they knew where Eichmann was hiding. But neither side acted . . . The CIA also routinely misled US immigration officials in the mid-1970s . . . The Bush Administration has dispensed with guidelines that had discouraged the CIA from using informants with unsavoury backgrounds . . . Their unreliability was surpassed only by the harm that ensued . . . Historians cited examples such as former German SS officer Heinz Felfe, a Soviet spy who used his ex-Nazi credentials in 1951 to join the US-sponsored West German intelligence service, the Gehlen organisation. He [then] exposed 15,000 intelligence 'items' to the Soviets."[22]

Similarly, the US gave Helen Clark full cover for her KGB training by giving her two Fulbright scholarships, despite her aborted nuclear strikes against New Zealand, Australia and America, 1980–89. In the height of her communist putsch (2002) she requested *Who's Who* remove these Fulbright scholarships from her résumé.

America then regained control of New Zealand's Prime Minister Helen Clark by filming her having sex with a female CIA pillow talker at Andersen's Cottage, better known as Lincoln Cottage, a short horse-and-buggy ride from the White House on the night of 3/4 January 2003. The diplomatic community roared with laughter and shouted each other out to lunch just so they could tell the story. I paid for lunch.

No one has been so easily honey-trapped since the Profumo Affair.

The protégé and the mentor have a giggle
shared amongst relatives, close friends and fellow schemers.

---

[21] Efrain Rios Montt (b. 1926) the 'Dictator of Guatemala' trained here in the 1950s.

[22] *NZ Herald*, Files show US use of Nazi spies, AP, Reuters, 8 June 2006, B2.

Roosevelt on the outer as Stalin gazes upon Churchill and reflects,
'How could you be so confidently evil'.
Once Roosevelt was killed, Truman took his place. Despite dropping
two atomic bombs he was never fully included in History's Con.

Stalin acquired a taste for Jewish tailoring in London.
When he failed to obtain the services of this tailor in Russia, he abducted
his relatives and retained their services for almost 40 years.

Jack the Ripper
and Sir Melville Macnaghten

I'm not attempting to solve the mysteries of Jack the Ripper, as it appears to have been solved many times over, each providing clarity and confusion. The truth has always been blurred, but now authors and publishers no longer have to declare their intention. This had led to forensic fiction novels like Patricia Cornwell's *Jack the Ripper: Case Closed* being presented through the media as 'the new breakthrough'.

Many of the so-called mysteries of history are not mysteries at all when confronted with the knowledge of intelligence officers. These events can be seen not as random occurrences, but as build-ups for what was to come. The Jack the Ripper murders shed light on the methods and agendas of influential societies – those that have created history and were to claim history and the future as their own.

In 1888 six women were murdered and these homicides were attributed to Jack the Ripper. The crime remained unsolved. To support the investigation, Scotland Yard brought in Melville Macnaghten, a man of breeding, but with absolutely no police experience. It was as if he were brought in to ensure that these crimes were never solved. The crimes were not solved but Melville Macnaghten did what he was best at – he calmed the waters and ensured the criminal remained at large and those involved were protected.

Macnaghten was brought in eight months after the Jack the Ripper murders as the Chief Constable of CID on 1 June 1889. This was an act of sabotage in Greater London crime solving.

Melville Leslie Macnaghten (1853–1921) was a tall, elegant man with an air about him that only belongs to the British upper class. He was the 15th child to the last chairman of the East India Company and educated at Eton. As the country's most dedicated Eton Old Boy, he immediately went to Bengal, India to manage his family estates between the ages of 19 and 35 (1872–88). Here he was a keen pig sticker and shooter as long as health permitted. In 1878 he (25) married Dora, the daughter of Canon Sanderson of Chichester, and had two sons and two daughters. His youngest daughter Christabel married the Hon. H. D. McLaren, the eldest son of Lord Aberconway.

She became Baroness Christabel Mary Melville Macnaghten Aberconway McLaren and wrote *A Wiser Woman? A book of memories* – a book she later regretted writing. A more pompous family one could not hope to meet. Today, stripped of titles, this is called a solipsist mental illness: "I am titled, therefore I am. There is no part of me left to develop and no part of me that is developed. I have invested heavily in social capital and divested many conversations of all contention . . . others have credited my most studious thoughts with the invention of the vacuum. I have no evidence of this but I take on all titles."

With no training and no obvious qualifications, Melville Macnaghten was appointed the Chief Constable at Scotland Yard's Criminal Investigation Department (1889), a class appointment by his old friend James Monro whom he had known in India.[1]

James Monro, Secret Department.

Melville Macnaghten.

India was the Mecca of homosexuals and paedophiles. It was where the British upper class sent their sons when their sexuality was suspect and where murderous paedophiles such as Baden-Powell were exiled until the reigning monarch died.

---

[1] Others say Macnaghten joined Scotland Yard in 1899 and became the Head of the Criminal Investigation Department in 1903. Either way, he was immediately put in charge of the Jack the Ripper file. The reality is he became the instant Head of the Criminal Investigation Department on 1 June 1889 and Assistant Commissioner in 1903.

The 'dedicated Old Boy' gives weight to this as the British public schools were known for their boarding-house buggery. At the time of Macnaghten's instant appointment to this senior position (head of crime solving in London) the Jack the Ripper murders were eight months old and James Monro was in command of the Secret Department. Monro then became the Commissioner of Metropolitan Police (10 Nov. 1888–90) and Melville Macnaghten's boss. This was the old fag system – bum buddies and secret keepers for life.

Macnaghten was British to the core and everything that went with it – dumb at his job, good at everything else, and promoted for it. He also suffered from a life of continual 'innuendo when required' from all the homosexual leanings that the public school system brings and the acting world provides. He was a personable fellow with great connections, an expert at Shakespeareanese and was used to cover up crime whenever it was required. This was the system of British policing. It made London, and especially its East End, a crime haven, a criminal's paradise, a training ground for dissidents and a holiday home for whoever wanted to immortalise their cause through the most horrendous crimes.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Mar

Melville Macnaghten became the Chief Constable at Scotland Yard's Criminal Investigation Department (CID) from 1889, and after continual failure at his job, but being personable and remembering everybody's name, he was made Assistant Commissioner (1903–12).

In 1907 he was elevated to Knight Commander of the White Military Order of Spain and Commander of the Order of Dannebrog, becoming *Sir* Melville Leslie Macnaghten. After the Houndsditch murders (16 December 1910) and the Sidney Street Siege (2 January 1911) were allowed to pass without conviction, he became ill, received the Companion of the Order of the Bath (1912) and retired prematurely in late 1912.

Some say 1912, others say 1913. There is a difference between when the knighthood was awarded and when it was gazetted. There is also confusion as to when he retired, 1912 or 1913. Macnaghten also went on a cruise for "ten" years from 1913 to 1920, which essentially means he disappeared during WWI.[2]

---

[2] This often indicates double agent activity, with occult practitioners liasing between both sides, ensuring the number of deaths (sacrifices) were up to scratch. Many of Britain's elevated were into the occult, so much so that it has been entirely eliminated from official history. The occult is very often the reason behind the elevation.

Dates are easily mistaken in old records and were routinely mistaken as a matter of course. The recorders of dates often have their own reasons for getting things wrong, as this book illustrates. It makes research difficult and writing look incompetent.

Regardless of this, as Assistant Commissioner, Sir Melville Macnaghten was in control of the Greater London Police (Scotland Yard/Metropolitan Police) during the time that Adolf 'Edmund' Hitler was trained in Britain (February–November 1912). Macnaghten was in this position because of his grandiloquent incompetence.

At the time of the Jack the Ripper murders (August–November 1888), the general populace were just becoming literate. The press was becoming a force for social change and the turmoil between liberals and conservatives was being played out in print for the first time . . . and hasn't stopped.

Crime was being used for political ends as a way of getting media coverage for one's cause, with the likes of the Irish Home Rule partisans, the forerunner to the IRA. The Irish covered their tracks by saying, "Arggh, it's always the Irish".

But the Jack the Ripper murders, it turned out, weren't Irish but a Jewish/Freemasonry-related phenomenon. The Jews cover their tracks by calling any accusation "anti-Semitism", an ecclesiastical-slang if ever there was one. Equally, the Freemasons cover their tracks utilising the lower-ranking Freemasons who insist they're a Christian organisation.

Esnayo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

The East End at the time was one grim slum. In 1888, Whitechapel had 233 common lodging houses, accommodating 8530 people, with an average of 37 people in each. Sanitation was nonexistent, inadequate, or remained unused through ignorance. There were 62 known brothel houses and a similar number of unknown brothels. There were an estimated 1200 prostitutes and a similar number who resorted to casual prostitution to make ends meet.

Whitechapel was an immigrant brothel slum given to any and every vice: ". . . death from starvation was commonplace, and 55 per cent of children died before the age of five."[3] As a result, people became hardened to death and crime, but the Jack the Ripper murders still managed to terrorise the largely Jewish population.

---

[3] Daniel Farson, *Limehouse Days*, p. 59.

> Ironically it was these Jews at the time who strongly suspected Jack the Ripper was a Jew and voiced this suspicion.

Most of these Jews settled in the Spitalfields area and were predominantly from Russia. The conditions were appalling and the Jews rioted over their living conditions and the unemployment they were forced to face. The British monarchy, including Queen Victoria, responded by crying whenever they were told the truth about their plight – hence they were not reminded.

> It was the Jack the Ripper murders that finally brought the faux policing of the East End to Queen Victoria's attention.

On 13 November 1887 there were mass demonstration in Trafalgar Square protesting unemployment. Eighty-eight per cent of the population in Whitechapel were Jewish migrants and formed the bulk of those protesting. The myth that Jews tend to protest their cause silently and walk to their own deaths, dying like martyrs, only became popular with post-WWII propaganda.

> As usual, it was one race killing its own race. Hitler, Churchill, Stalin and Roosevelt were all Jews and they killed Jews for the Jewish cause. The other great piece of Jewish propaganda was going for a walk for forty years in someone else's desert.

Freemason Sir Charles Warren, Chief Commissioner of the Metropolitan Police, called in the troops and there was extraordinary violence – 300 were injured and one man died. It became known as 'Bloody Sunday', and since then almost every country has had a *Bloody Sunday* – England (13 Nov. 1887), Russia (9 Jan. 1905), Australia (22 April 1919), America (7 March 1965) and Northern Ireland (30 January 1972).

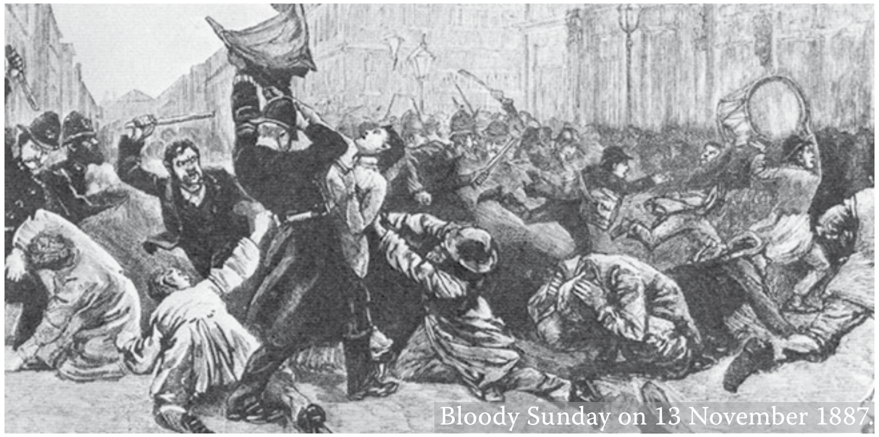

Bloody Sunday on 13 November 1887

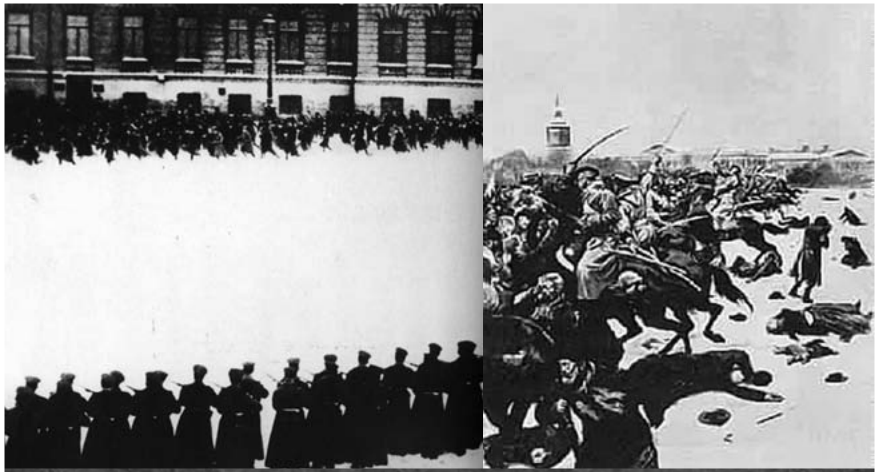

Above: Bloody Sunday in St Petersburg, Russia on 9 January 1905.
Below: Bloody Sunday in Alabama, USA on 7 & 9 March 1965,
which resulted in all Blacks having voting rights from 6 August 1965.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

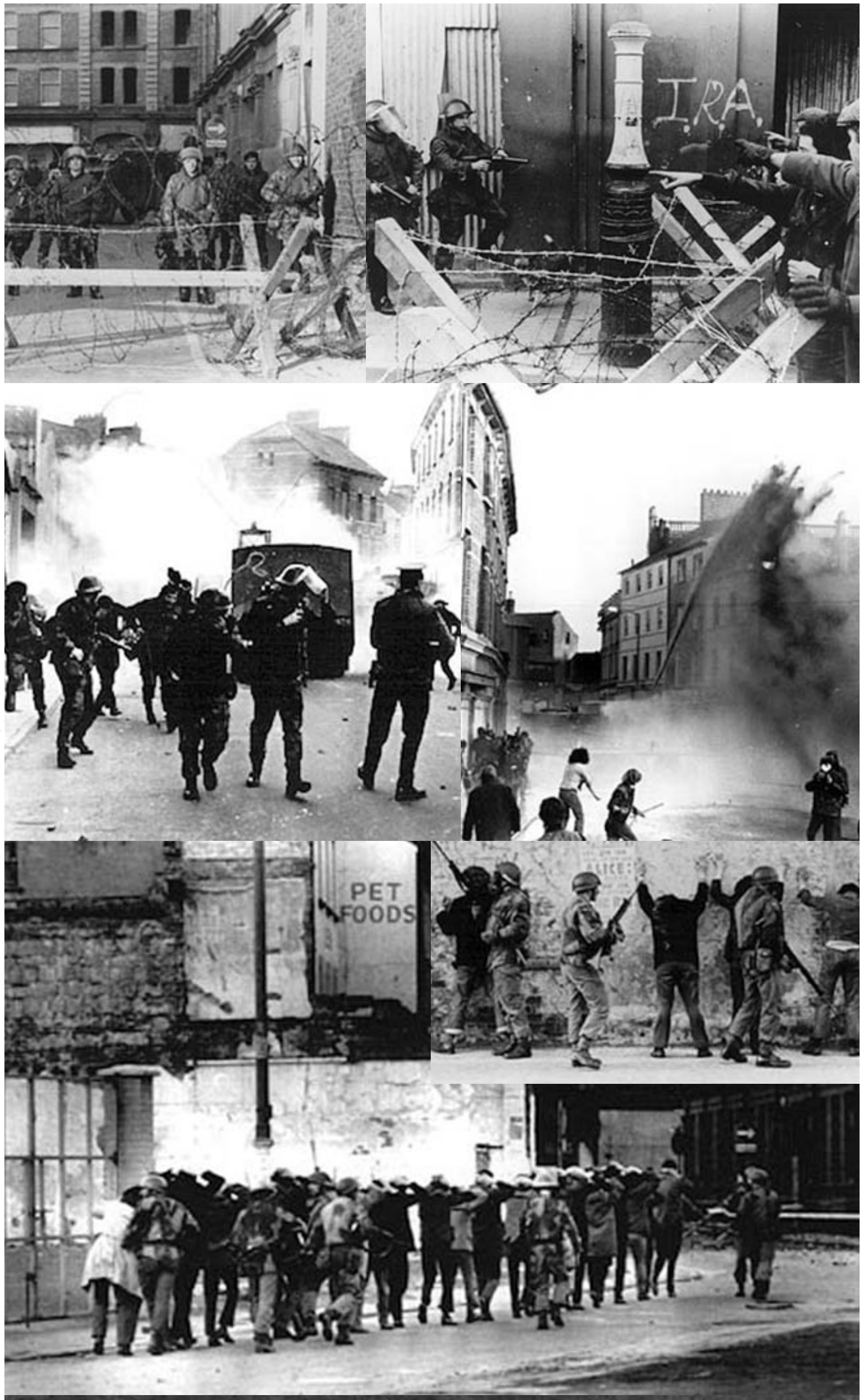

Bloody Sunday in Northern Ireland on 30 January 1972.

Sir Charles Warren
GCMG, KCB, FRS.

The attitude of the people at the time was that the police were incompetent and Chief Metropolitan Police Commissioner Warren was even published as such. The public knew the police were incompetent but the criminals knew *how* they were incompetent and took advantage of this.

Sir Charles Warren was paranoid about civil unrest and thought that if the Jews were implicated in the Jack the Ripper murders, there might be an outbreak of anti-Semitic violence. This was unlikely as 88% of Whitechapel were immigrant Jews fleeing pogroms of persecution in their own countries. Chief Police Commissioner Warren lacked logic and resigned at 8 pm on 9 November 1888, immediately after the sixth and last Ripper victim, Mary Jane Kelly.

In Golden Dawn coven language '8 pm' translates as "back to zero", and indeed Hitler bombed these slums during WWII, just as Churchill had asked him to do.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Frederick Porter Wensley.

At the time, forensics was at such a basic level that the police had to catch someone in the act of murder, or have them confess, in order to convict them. This prevented the wealthy from ever being convicted. There was rarely any evidential backup that could tie the perpetrator to the victim, unless they were plain stupid. So police training specialised in tackling and boxing. This meant that any fast runner, boxer or upper-class person could run, box or talk their way out of a situation. The police were not armed and anyone with a gun could shoot their way out. The police response was to send more police, by foot, and to this end the famous Detective Inspector Frederick Porter Wensley invented the forerunner to rubber-soled shoes. Wensley fixed car tyres to the soles of police shoes so they could sneak up on people and run with greater ease. As one of Whitechapel's part-time prostitutes said, "Ee's got indiarubber soles ohn 'es shoowes".

Neither the Police Commissioner nor the Home Secretary Henry Matthews offered a reward for the Jack the Ripper murders.[4] This indicated high-level complicity. Rewards were offered for the later Houndsditch murders but were so thoroughly ignored that the police didn't even arrest a WANTED person when they turned up to the police funeral they had caused.

The fifth Jack the Ripper victim was Catharine Eddowes, also known as Mary Ann Kelly. She was mistaken for the final victim, Mary Jane Kelly, who died 40 days later. Mistakes such as these in history have a way of occurring time and time again, as if they were part of some ritual. Catharine Eddowes/Mary Ann Kelly was the second woman murdered on 30 September 1888.

Jack the Ripper used a piece of her apron to wipe off his knife and dropped it in a doorway. This was discovered by the non-Freemason Constable Alfred Long at 2.55 am on 30 September 1888 in Goulston Street, Mitre Square, a well-known Freemasonry location.

Above the door, Jack the Ripper, or his minder, left some latter-day graffiti written in chalk:

"The Juwes are the men
That Will not be blamed for nothing."

Sir Melville Macnaghten writes in *Days of My Years*: "During this night an apron, on which bloody hands had been wiped, was found in Goulburn Street [sic; it was Goulston Street] (situated, if my memory is correct, about half-way between Berners Street and Mitre Square). Hard by was a writing in chalk on the wall, to the effect that 'the Jews are the men who will not be blamed for nothing.' The apron gave no clue, and the chalk writing was obliterated by the order of a high police official, who was seemingly afraid that a riot against the Jews might be the outcome of this strange writing on the wall."[5] This was the only clue ever left behind by the murderer.

---

[4] It was commonly noted that the Police would have put up a reward if it happened at West End. Reacting to this, tradesman and the local MP offered a reward.

[5] Sir Melville Macnaghten, *Days of My Years*, Chapter IV, Laying the Ghost of Jack the Ripper.

City of London Police officers wanted to photograph the defiant Jewish message but Police Commissioner Sir Charles Warren (the Freemason who offered no reward) thought that it was better to leave it until morning light, but leaving it might cause riots against the Whitechapel Jews, so the law-defying pro-Jewish message was erased in its entirety from the doorway, never photographed, and never followed up as evidence. They could have photographed it with a flash or just erased the word 'Juwe', but no, the whole message was erased and the evidence was never acted upon.

> At the time it was believed by those on the street, who were largely Jews, that Jack the Ripper/the Whitechapel Murderer/the Leather Apron was a Jew. This was all the more surprising because Jack the Ripper had created an atmosphere of terror and the Jews occupied most of Whitechapel, Spitalfields and the East End where the murders occurred.
>
> This may seem a random series of events, but these events were not random. They were an orchestrated series of events in order to imprint on the minds of the public that the Freemasons and the Jews were to be the controllers of all major events and all future events to come.
>
> Sure enough, this has come to pass.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Marc

Chief Police Commissioner Sir Charles Warren had a deep interest in the history of Freemasonry, was a frequent visitor to the Royal Alpha Lodge, and founded the Quatuor Coronati Lodge (No. 2076) in 1884. He knew the shared history of the Jews and the Freemasons and therefore acted as a protector of that history. With this knowledge, he erased this message as quickly as possible, but not without people of note sighting it, repeating it and creating a culture of myth, mystery and legend.

"The Juwes are the men That Will not be blamed for nothing" had a huge range of meanings for the educated and initiated. Handwritten with so many upright slashes it could be read as 'JUIVES', which was French for 'Jews'. (The most common form of Freemasonry is the Scottish-French rite.)

During the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries when all the languages across Europe were in a flurry of development, the word 'Jews' had many spellings including the phonetic 'Juise', 'Juwys', 'Juyse' and 'Juwes'.[6]

---

[6] *University of Michigan Dictionary of Middle English.*

"Juwes" can also mean 'a judicial sentence, punishment, damnation, pain, torment, judgement and justice', all of which were to follow. The goal of the spelling was to take the sentence, threat and promise date back as far as possible to exert as much influence as possible.

This was not frantic writing or a spelling mistake, but a well thought out sentence by historically educated secret society insiders. It also contained purposeful mistakes so commonly found amongst the Freemasons – 'That' and 'Will' had capital letters. This gives emphasis for the future 'That Will' come to pass.

"Juwes" was also a collective term for 'murderers', especially the murderers of Hiram Abiff who built King Solomon's Tomb. This was dropped from the Masonic ritual around 1818 and was replaced with 'the Three Ruffians', which remains to this day. The sentence also meant, "The Murderers are the men That Will not be blamed for nothing".[7] This too came to pass with WWI, the Spanish Flu, WWII and all the other wars in between and afterwards.

> In the public's eye, Freemasons and Jews were enemies. They hated each other on the face of things, but they worked together behind the scenes to create wars for their benefit. The Freemasons and the Jews share a common heritage in legends, details, rituals and war, which all stem back to King Solomon's Tomb.

King Solomon's Tomb was raided by the Knights Templar in AD 1127. They soon became the most powerful organisation in Europe – powerful enough for the Catholic Church to become jealous and attack them in a crusade – OP OUR WAY OVER YOUR WAY. After being massacred and scattered, the Knights Templar then went underground and resurfaced as the Freemasons in Germany, took over the British monarchy in 1714, and took a more public hold over the British in 1717 and 1818.

The Freemasons invented democracy in the 1790s, communism in 1848, non-slavery capitalism in 1865 and totalitarianism in 1914 (WWI) – most successfully in Russia in 1917 with the Bolshevik Revolution.

Chief Police Commissioner Sir Charles Warren had Superintendent Thomas Arnold (a non-Mason) arrange for the erasure of the *sentence*, *threat* and *promise* "The Juwes are the men That Will not be blamed for nothing".

---

[7] Melvyn Fairclough, *The Ripper and the Royals*, Duckworth, London, 1991, p. 67.

Chief Police Commissioner Sir Charles Warren interpreted "The Juwes are the men That Will not be blamed for nothing" as "The Freemasons are the men That Will not be blamed for nothing".

This was true enough as well. Freemason synapses work by strange linking. Sometimes it is almost childlike, other times it is historical, and in others it is coded, as in taking the previous letter of the alphabet and rewriting it, or looking at numbers via a silly mirror.

To the uneducated, educated, secret society, and secret society historians the message had the following meanings:

1. The Jews will not be blamed for anything.
2. The Freemasons will not be blamed for anything.
3. The French Jews will not be blamed for anything.
4. The murderers will not be blamed for anything.
5. "That Will" with capital first letters means 'We control the future with a Will that controls us'.
6. Those who incite 'a judicial sentence, punishment, damnation, pain, torment, judgement, and justice' will not be blamed for anything.
7. More simply put the message is "**Blessed are the war makers. We control the future**", something we know only too well today.
8. In Golden Dawn coven language the year 1888 reads as '∞1∞∞' – 'infinite one everywhere forever'. The message had become "**Blessed are the war makers. We control the infinite one everywhere forever.**" This referred to the occult's Holy Ghost's grandfatherly conception and concurrent gestation of Adolf Hitler.
9. Aprons were worn by the stonemasons who made King Solomon's Tomb. As such, the apron was a symbol of the Freemason. Catharine Eddowes' bloody apron was found in Mitre Square and both the 'mitre' and the 'square' are Freemasonry symbols. She was born Catharine Eddowes but had a different public persona as Mary Ann Kelly, a given name and a front name, comparable to the Freemasons' agenda and the front organisation.
10. The women were murdered in a kosher fashion with a sharp knife cutting their throats, after which they were successively mutilated more severely and with medical knowledge.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Ma

11. These were 'modern day' sacrifices that had replaced 'breeding with virgins' with 'prostitute murder mutilations'. The third prostitute, Annie Chapman, had her uterus removed. The fifth victim, Catharine Eddowes, had her kidney removed from the front. The sixth victim, Mary Jane Kelly, had her heart removed.
12. Ultimately the message became "**Blessed are the Freemason and Jewish war makers who murder. We will sacrifice you all and make virgins and prostitutes of you all with control of the infinite one everywhere, forever.**" This instigated the rather dark, vicious, murderous Victorian prostitute/virgin genre and was all to come to pass. It came true in WWI, the Spanish Flu, WWII and all the wars after.

Now can you say that the occult has no influence on history? You could argue that the meanings have no meaning and every connection had been a giant leap of faithlessness, and that would also be true.

13. The destruction of religion is one of Freemasonry's goals. The penultimate meaning then becomes "**Blessed are the Freemason and Jewish war makers who murder. We will sacrifice you all and make virgins and prostitutes of you all. Have no faith for we have destroyed religion and faith infinitely, everywhere and forever**."

    This was no hastily scribbled graffiti. It was well thought out history. It was history in the making and its starting point was 1.30–3.10 am on 30 September 1888, the last day of the month the King of the Jews was historically born.

    The King of the Jews had to be conceived in December from 'virgins', and in less pure, more modern times, breeding with virgins of pedigree has been replaced with the flipside, murdering prostitutes and mutilating them on equally infamous dates. At the time of the message Hitler had been gestating for 11 weeks and 1 day (111 – 'master of self').

Each organ has qualities associated with it and the removal of Catharine Eddowes' kidney represented 'lust and fear, hopelessness and dependence, the removal of security and self-respect, the removal of hindsight and standing, a lack of self-determination, the inability to discriminate or eliminate, and a tenuous survival'.

These were sacrificial murders to the cause of war and the future has reflected everything symbolised in these Golden Dawn occult murders.

The Jack the Ripper murders were a Jewish/Freemasonry statement: "The Juwes are the men That Will not be blamed for nothing." This was effectively a claim that the Jews, who control Britain's finances, are above the law (as were the Freemasons who served them). Having graffiti-ed this on the psyche of generations with the most memorable peacetime murders in history, it is all the more interesting to look at the murder dates in light of the symbolism of *their* Golden Dawn coven language. This is the language of significant dates as used by the power-elite.

Secret society organisations are always split into two groups. The first is the 'Effective' – the cause. The second is the 'Affective' – the front. The *Effective* has a huge effect on the *real politic*. The *Affective* has a huge effect on the *virtual politic*, moving into the realm of fantasy, literature and art movements which influence public imagination towards acceptance of the *Effective*. The Golden Dawn organisation is a case in point.

The Golden Dawn coven made use of the year 1888. Significant numbers are 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 8, 9, 11 and 13, and numbers are formulated towards these wherever possible, and somewhat reversed from their original order, as viewed in a mirror image via a silly mirror.

The '1' is interpreted as 'one' and has no mirror image; '11' reflects itself and means 'master'; '2' means 'to', 'too' or 'us'; '3' means 'them' or 'oligarchy'; '4' means 'stagnant' or 'holding pattern'; '5' is the occult version of '2' as in 'to you with witchcraft'; '55' means 'occult master of self'; '6' means 'dead'; '9' is flipped into a '6' meaning 'dead after a process'; '8' is written as '∞' and means 'everywhere', 'forever', or 'infinite'; '31' becomes '13' as does '1+3' and means 'bad luck'; '9+7' = 16, which is reversed and means 'dead one with an assassination attempt beforehand'.

The numbers are then read as a sentence. The numbers 8,8,31,8,9,1 can be flip-sided to '16∞13∞∞' meaning 'one dead and infinitely unlucky person everywhere forever'. So these numbers are very much a curse – hence their use in the dark arts.

The Jack the Ripper murders occurred on the following dates:

1. Martha Turner/Tabram was murdered on 8 August 1888 – ∞∞∞1∞∞, meaning '**forever infinitely immortal one, forever everywhere**'.[8]

---

[8] Martha Tabram was actually murdered somewhere between 7–9 August 1888 with 39 stab wounds from two blades simultaneously. This was the first murder and involved the least mutilation. It is only considered by some Ripperites to be the work of Jack; '7–9' translates as 'dead one', giving the meaning 'infinite, infinite, infinite one, infinitely dead one with a failed murder attempt beforehand'.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

2. Mary Ann Nichols/aka 'Polly' was murdered on 31 August 1888 – ∞∞∞1∞13, meaning '**forever infinitely immortal one, everywhere bad luck**'.[9]
3. Annie Chapman/aka 'Dark Annie' was murdered on 8 Sept. 1888 – ∞∞∞16∞, meaning '**forever infinitely immortal one, dead everlasting after a process**'. Her head was nearly decapitated.[10]
4. Elizabeth Stride was murdered on 30 Sept. 1888 – ∞∞∞136, meaning '**forever infinitely immortal one, bad luck dead after a process**'.
5. Catharine Eddowes/'Mary Ann Kelly' was also murdered on 30 Sept. 1888 – ∞∞∞136, meaning '**forever infinitely immortal one, unfortunate death**'. Her nickname was Mary Ann Kelly and she was purposely mistaken for Mary Jane Kelly who was murdered 40 days and nights later, referring to the man-made famines that were to come – many of them based around exterminating religious populations.
6. Mary Jane Kelly/'Marie Jeanette' was murdered on 9 Nov. 1888 – ∞∞∞1116, meaning 'forever infinitely immortal one, one master dead after a process'. This being the 6th murder adds further emphasis on 'dead' and should be read as '**forever infinitely immortal one, one master dead**'. She was three months pregnant at the time and her given name 'Mary Jane' has been immortalised as slang for dope. Dopey also refers to the goyim population – Gentiles treated as cattle to be drugged and milked.

   One of the goals of WWII was to replace Jesus with Hitler, and at the time of this murder, Hitler was 118 days in gestation. In Golden Dawn coven language this translates as "infinite master".

This is called 'drawing a long bow' but it is what the occult specialises in – mirror image by longbow through a silly mirror. Silly mirrors were invented by the Freemasons.

---

[9] Princess Di's assassination on the same day, 31 August 1997, has the numbers 7991813. 7 + 9 = 16 = dead one. Because of the same loose linking it also refers to the failed assassination attempts on her beforehand. So the numbers become '1661∞13' and read 'Assassination attempts beforehand, dead one, infinitely unlucky'.

[10] After this murder the police bucked up and actually took an interest in the East End. There were no policewomen so two policemen dressed up as women in an attempt to attract the Ripper. This just added to the hilarity of police incompetence. One of the policemen had a large black moustache and had to wear a veil. He was approached by a male reporter, also dressed as a women and each accused the other of being a man. Neither were propositioned by the Ripper.

The Jack the Ripper murders were placed in 1888 because of the significance of the date to both Freemason and Jewish traditions. The original all-powerful *Effective Golden Dawn Inner Circle* coven is the occult link between these two groups. The *Affective Golden Dawn Outer Circle* created by the Freemason Dr William Wynn Westcott in 1887/88 was a public façade for the change in public consciousness that was to come.

Dr William Wynn Westcott (1848–1925) was a country doctor who started The Order of the Golden Dawn (Isis-Urania Temple of the Golden Dawn in the Outer) along with Dr William Robert Woodman (1829–91) and G. Samuel Liddel Mathers (1854–1918). Dr William Wynn Westcott left his country practice and came to London soon after the Jack the Ripper murders in 1889, where he became a coroner for Central London to the end of WWI in 1918. Here he dealt with the dead and fiddled with their files.

By 1897, Freemason Coroner Dr Westcott had written 16 books on the occult and was threatened with expulsion from public office if he did not sever ties with occult practices.

Espavo Soze - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

At the height of Dr Westcott's *Affective Golden Dawn Outer Circle* there were 200 members, but they were the most influential people in literary circles, or the lovers thereof . . . including William Butler Yeats (Nobel Prize 1923), actress Florence Farr (a double dipper, firm on the overlap . . . lover of Yeats) and George Bernard Shaw (Nobel Prize 1935[11]), Constance Wilde (wife of the flamboyant homosexual Oscar Wilde[12]) and Algernon Blackwood[13] – all in the 1890s. This group virtually created the dark and macabre Victorian genre.

---

[11] George Bernard Shaw's first successful play was *Arms and the Man* (1894) followed by *The Devil's Disciple* (1897), both at a time when his overlapping lover Florence Farr was a member of *The Golden Dawn*. He later wrote *Pygmalion* (1913), which became *My Fair Lady* (1956) and received the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1935. He tried to invent a new phonetic English alphabet called *Shavian*. Shaw got one of Renoir's models pregnant and the resulting son became the homosexual necrophiliac Lawrence of Arabia.

[12] Constance Lloyd married the flamboyant homosexual buggar Oscar Wilde in 1884. He published the novel *The Picture of Dorian Gray* (1891), whose character took part in the movie *The League of Extraordinary Gentlemen* 112 years later (2003). He died alone in exile in Paris under the pseudonym Sebastian Melmoth (1900).

[13] Algernon Blackwood's works reflect a taste for the occult and the supernatural, such as *John Silence* (1908), *Tongues of Fire* (1924) and *Tales of the Uncanny and Supernatural* (1949).

The murders were an historical act that cemented Jack the Ripper's place in history, along with the group he represented.

People have spent years fascinated by these cases and therefore focusing on this group. To those involved in the occult, this is a power coup. Two Nobel prize-winning authors helped with this coup.

To say that the Golden Dawn had no influence on history is to underrate them and ignore the whole Victorian genre. But in the larger scale of things, all influential societies have a front:

1. When they really started up.
2. When they became a force.
3. When they showed a false public face to hide that force.

"At the time of the murders, the [Golden Dawn] Society was 'nothing more than a kindergarten for would-be occultists'."[14]

Freemasons organised the Hanover coup of the British monarchy, then emigrated from Germany to Britain as soon as it became successful (1714) and then started up in 1717, but its public face came in 1818.

The Freemasons front as a Christian organisation, but further up the ranks it is well known that they become less and less Christian and more and more involved in instigating wars. In order to progress beyond the 33rd initiation they have to dump (defecate) on a Bible. All of these lesser-known initiations, the 34th to 42nd initiate Freemasons, have done this and it is these higher initiates who create the events that lead to the history we read about, live through and live in the results of, with special reference to misery.

In common folklore history Jews are homeless people who demand empathy for their plight of 2000 years ago. The King of the Jews was crucified, yet the Jews bypass Jesus ("Yahu'Shuah"; pron. 'Yahoo shoe') and focus straight on God. This has always struck home as an anomaly in cause and rational thought and starts to look like a long con itself.

> In reality, the high Jews manipulate their people more than any other race. As a consequence they are now protected more than any other race. In Germany, for example, if one challenges the questionable six million dead from WWII, there is an immediate loss of human rights for that person.

---

[14] Ellic Howe, *Fringe Masonry in England*, Ars Quatuor Coronatorum, Volume 85, 1972, pp. 242–295.

The Jewish message could just have easily been written by a non-Jew, a Freemason or a dissenter from either of these ranks who wanted to expose what was going to happen. Whoever wrote "The Juwes are the men That Will not be blamed for nothing" was an educated man and predicted much of the future – the Houndsditch murders, the Sidney Street Siege, WWI, WWII, the entire news media for the next century and consequently the ongoing history of the planet.

> Many of the Jack the Ripper files were burnt during the blitzes of WWII, but they were also stolen. Lords and knights steal files and don't return them because they are protectors of the establishment. It is also common practice in the upper echelons of the police and army to steal files. Historians steal files on a regular basis, copy them and return them overnight – because they are the protectors of history. There are a lot of crimes by authorities on these files.

Retiring Scotland Yard inspectors often take sensitive official files with them. When interviewed at their homes they are often surrounded by the official files that others no longer have access to. With these official files they are often elevated to a knight or lord. This gives them further protection and unquestioning trust, after which they become the most prolific file thieves.

> Protecting the establishment by file theft is one of the main functions of a knight. A crime is committed, the case is botched and the files are stolen. Ipso facto, the stitch-up is all stitched up. History then becomes a swarm of second guesses based around posed black-and-white photographs.
>
> File theft, which we know so little about, is the most revealing aspect of history. To understand history one has to follow the murders and the file thefts. All else is fiction, propaganda and mystery graffitti-ed onto generations of psyches with error-ridden synapses. As a result, history contains generations of unbelievable claptrap where nothing fits and most lose interest – the desired goal of establishment historians, most of whom are embedded into the occult.

Cat thief historian: "When you read the files you realise the most powerful elements of our society have always been sexually deviant, or 'as bent as fuck'. Stealing a file for the establishment is a prerequisite to becoming a knight. Certainly, stealing files was routine amongst knights once they've been elevated.

"Files in British Intelligence were routinely triplicated and sent to the most far-flung stable parts of the Commonwealth for security. These places had to be free from internal insurrection and governed and policed effectively. In my time, in the late '60s and early '70s, these places were Canada and New Zealand, but there is no guarantee that this is still the case.

"The files were in plain English and the most breathtaking crimes were disclosed in the bulk of the files. Files had a life of normally 20–50 years and were scheduled for destruction before the 50-year rule could free them. They were retained purely for internal consumption and none were meant to see the light of day.

"Every two years, low-ranking SIS [Security Intelligence Service] personnel were sent on internal fact-finding missions and these personnel were meant to inquire after the security of the files and to visually check on them. I was told that during this phase our SIS routinely took the files to Fiji for R&R.

"'Are the files safe?'

"'Yes, the files are as safe as the Bank of England.'

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

"No mention would be made of the fact that I'd been left in charge of the files. I was responsible for turning them from alphabetical order into some form of numerical order I didn't understand.

"The files detail incidents in British and Continental history that range from spy walk-ins to embassies . . . assassinations of foreign nationals on the streets of London … arrests of nationalists in Africa and the Pacific . . . and their subsequent deaths at the hands of judges that were pensioned off to live in Cambridge, New Zealand and rewarded with large numbers of shares in the Colonial Sugar Company."[15]

The Jack the Ripper case was officially closed in 1892,
but remains open in the eyes of the public.
It has graffiti-ed itself onto the psyche of generations.

Scotland Yard's files on these Jack the Ripper/Whitechapel/Leather Apron murders were supposed to have been officially sealed until 1992, the 100th anniversary of the death of HRH Prince Albert Victor Christian Edward, the Duke of Clarence, an initial suspect.

---

[15] Numerically inadequate government-employed liaison historian under NZ tenure exercised rapaciously.

As King Edward VII's eldest son, the Duke of Clarence was first in line to the throne. He became engaged to his second cousin Mary of Teck but died of a mysterious illness six weeks later. Officially it was pneumonia. The Duke of Clarence was a total homo and a biological reject. Mary of Teck (whose great-grandfather was Mad King George III) then married George V (within two years) and became Queen-consort of Great Britain.

> This homosexual biological reject, HRH Prince Albert Victor Christian Edward, the Duke of Clarence was the half-brother of Winston Churchill. They shared the same father in King Edward VII.
>
> The files were opened to the public four years earlier on the 100th anniversary of the murders in 1988. What Jack the Ripper had done to his victims, the establishment did to the Jack the Ripper files. They monstered them and the only leads were omissions and cover-ups.

"The files had, however, been purged of essential information beforehand. Anything of any real value that could possibly lead to the identification of the killer was removed. Time after time we are told of lost archives, stolen letters, purloined documents, mysterious disappearances of pertinent materials, files that were purposely destroyed or systematically 'sanitised' or simply 'misplaced' . . . Careful searches, for example, have failed to reveal the whereabouts of the original detailed post mortem report of Catharine Eddowes, prepared by Dr Frederick Gordon Brown, the City Police Surgeon.

"Moreover, private notes and diaries belonging to individuals who were retired officials, or who were otherwise personally involved in the investigations of the murders, or had information pertaining to them, have on several recorded occasions 'disappeared' – sometimes within a few days of an individual's death.

"Dr Thomas Stowell's files were destroyed within hours of his death by his son, who refused to discuss the matter. Sir Melville Macnaghten's personal files and first-hand knowledge of Scotland Yard's entire investigation simply 'vanished' shortly after his death on 12 May 1921. These files were originally taken by non-Mason police who wished to preserve the truth. They were then recovered by Freemasonry police and destroyed."[16]

---

[16] Dennis Stocks & Barron Barnett Lodge, *Freemasonry and the Ripper*; slightly paraphrased.

"However, shortly after his death [Sir Melville Macnaghten], his daughter [Lady Aberconway] copied his notes"[17], which were given to author Daniel Farson in 1959. She was not immune to the shenanigans of her Freemason father, who often specialise in duping their kids into carrying on the lie into the next generation.

"Much of the information that has come down to us is not merely incomplete, but incorrect . . . the so-called 'writing on the wall' found in the passage off Goulston Street following the Murder of Catharine Eddowes had at least seven different versions . . . and each version is from a 'respectable and reliable' source like Sir Henry Smith who sighted it before its removal."[18]

> 'Respectable and reliable' invariably means "paedophile minder". Specialists in this are Freemasons, religions, justices of the peace, the police, governor-generals, and judges, who are, for the most part, drawn from the most corrupt lawyers who, through tidy files and complicit silence, bribe there way up into positions of more complicit silence.
>
> The violence and the organisation behind the Jack the Ripper murders were a practice run for the confusion required for Stalin and Hitler's British training and the violence they would bring – the Bolshevik Revolution and WWII. It is something the Freemasons role-play over and over again. History is created by confusing its origins, avoiding blame and profiting from the organised response.
>
> Crime and war have always been connected and are regarded as the highest level of achievement by all of those involved. The police view crime as the pinnacle of their achievement and Army Intelligence view war as the pinnacle of their achievement.

If you look at the peacetime crime statistics you can get a good idea of how a country will do at war. Cat burglars are brilliant at scaling walls, but are excluded from the army because of their record. When the country gets desperate they are utilised. Military commandos are often recruited from jail for war and these criminals are very often patriotic underdogs keen to prove themselves. War after all, is a liar's paradise.

---

[17] Daniel Farson, *Limehouse Days*, p. 61.

[18] Richard Whittington-Egan, *A Casebook on Jack the Ripper*; again slightly paraphrased.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Eddie Chapman (British) was a dynamite burglar during WWII. He got caught on Jersey Island and was locked up there. When the Germans occupied Jersey in 1940 they offered him a position to train with them and bomb key sites in London. Eddie Chapman (1908–97) ended up parachuting into London and faking the bombings of major buildings with MI-5 help.

The unwanted criminal managed to penetrate the Abwehr, fake the espionage, pass on false information to the Germans and get paid by them in the process. By the time he was compromised in 1944 he was one of Britain's most helpful double agents. A criminal record is a prerequisite for this sort of work. In exchange, MI-5 wiped his criminal record while the Nazis paid his extravagant wage. At the end of the war the British offered him a medal. His response was, "Medal be damned. You birds owe me £25,000."

Horrendous crimes are always the forerunner to wars and horrendous crimes at the end of wars are indicators of war-in-peacetime society. Jack the Ripper was no exception. It occurred well before WWI, but just before the African campaign in which Churchill and Baden-Powell, the future leader of the Boy Scouts, took part.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Baden-Powell was on a train in Ghana, West Africa, returning from the Ashanti expedition in 1896. He located two 16-year-old Irish soldiers on the train, accused them of cowardice and tied their hands behind their backs. He told everyone in that carriage that he was going to interrogate them, then ordered everyone else off that carriage.

Robert Baden-Powell (1857–1941) then sodomised the two handcuffed 16-year-old Irish soldiers and shot them in the back of the head, dead. Despite the fact that Baden-Powell (39) was a flamboyantly homosexual sodomising double-murderer and persona non grata in the UK until Queen Victoria died in 1901, and was exiled from 1896 to 1903 (in India with the murderous paedophile Lord Kitchener), he became Sir Baden-Powell in 1909 and Lord Baden-Powell of Gilwell in 1929.

Since the Bank of England was taken over by homing pigeons on 22 June 1815, the Jews have had as much control as the British monarchy in elevating 'Establishmentarians' to knights and lords. They have also had equal control over the sabotage of crime fighting and file theft. As a result, all of those knighted within the British Empire from 1815 have been 'Jew-minders' and all of those who have challenged the Jewish position in Britain or its colonies have not been knighted.

> Britain is a subset of Jewish everything and homing pigeons have been the single biggest influence on history.
>
> The Metropolitan Police, known as the Met or Scotland Yard, were responsible for all crimes committed in all the boroughs of London except the central square mile of the City of London proper. The rank and file of the two forces (Met and CoLP) worked together, but the seniors in each force sabotaged each other's efforts frequently, as a matter of course, and with instructions from above. Their failure to cooperate stopped cases being solved whenever it was expedient to do so.

The Jack the Ripper murders, the Houndsditch robbery and Sidney Street Siege were all cases in point. They all occurred both in the City of London and in the Metropolitan Police districts of Whitechapel, Aldgate and Spitalfields. It was known that they would sabotage the information they shared and add confusion for the other side.

> Crimes that the authorities wanted covered up were often committed in both areas, and sometimes with the body straddling both districts. This gave the establishment commanders from both police districts leeway to sabotage the case without copping any blame aimed exclusively at the applied incompetence of their own police unit.

The Jack the Ripper case was no exception. Of the six murders, three occurred in each district and only the sixth victim, Mary Jane Kelly, was photographed before being moved from the crime scene.

Regardless of all the cover-ups, Jack the Ripper was a psychological coup over the human race and the message it left was there for all to see (but never photographed) – **The Jews will not be blamed for anything from this point on**.

"Plots involving Freemasons, court physicians, and sinister figures from occult organisations have been paraded before the public as the final solution."[19]

Six years after the murders (1894), Melville Macnaghten named his top three suspects – from memory.

---

[19] Jack the Ripper casebook:www. casebook.org.

These were a mad Russian doctor, an insane Polish Jew, and a mentally fragile lawyer (whom he named as a doctor). Macnaghten then effectively sealed these names under the 70-year-rule and the 100-year-rule. Macnaghten then alluded to this report, but kept it secret until everyone involved was dead.

When part of his report was finally made public in 1959 his prime suspect was M. J. Druitt (Montague John Druitt), whom he describes as a doctor turned teacher (41), who committed suicide on 10 November 1888 or 3 December 1888. He was in fact a cricketer and failed barrister (31).

Montague John Druitt (1857–88) was educated at Winchester College where he won a scholarship to New College at Oxford University. Qualifying as a barrister, he kept chambers at King's Walk/The Temple. This was Freemasons' legal with strong ties to the Prince of Wales (King Edward VII), whose son was a suspect.

After failing as a lawyer, Druitt became the assistant master at a small cramped public boarding school in Blackheath, although he still kept his chambers at King's Walk/The Temple. He was sacked from the school around the time of the last Jack the Ripper murder.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Colin Wilson suggests that Montague John Druitt could not have been Jack the Ripper "because in his view no cricketer could commit murder".[20] But we all know cricket is a game for bisexuals, an extension of British public schools, the fag system, Freemasonry, and paedophilia amongst goat mounters. And there is always the sexually bizarre death of cricket umpire Peter Plumley Walker to remember.[21]

Montague's father, Robert Druitt, and his uncle were surgeons and his mother Anne Druitt had been committed to a private mental asylum in July 1888, just two miles from Whitechapel. She was physically incarcerated by Montague's father, and her mental state may have been caused by his actions. Robert Druitt was a surgeon, Conservative, strong Churchman, Justice of the Peace and governor of a grammar school in Wimborne, Dorset. He was therefore 'respectable'.

As we have learnt, 'respectable people' are prone to crimes under a veil of dignity, and when Freemasonry, religion, Conservatism, justice of the peace and school governor are mixed together there is a strong likelihood of paedophilia, the shame of which compels anyone in 'Freemasonry-membership-for-cover' to do anything that any knowing intelligence requires for shared cover. This is how 'Tithing' works, how 'Career Twins' work and how 'Freemasonry' works – shared cover for shame.

Just as it was a family of Freemasons, it was a family of liars.

Montague's brother, William Druitt, was also a lawyer and he gave evidence that he was the only surviving relative other than their 'insane' mother. In fact, the Freemason father, three sisters and a younger brother, Captain Edward Druitt, were alive. The latter had departed for Australia in early 1899. This left the capable liar William Druitt, lawyer, who lied on instructions from his father and these instructions would have come from high up the Masonic ladder, of which King Edward VII was the effective head. King Edward VII was the Grand Master Mason and biological father of the soon-to-be agent of war, Winston Spencer Churchill, then aged 14.

> The British Courts have been a liar's paradise for centuries. They accept all lies, as long as they come from a Freemason, a Master Mason, the Grand Master Mason, or the Monarch.

The Freemasons are not beyond sacrificing one of their sons. Robert Druitt's son, Montague John Druitt, died on 31 December 1888 and King Edward VII's son died in 1894 – both under mysterious circumstances. Both were sacrifices.

Montague John Druitt was supposed to have drowned in the Thames on 31 December 1888 (reported 2 January 1889). Both Macnaghten's *Days of My Years* and the Scotland Yard public record files contain almost identical wild conjecture, ". . . from private information I have little doubt that his own family believed him to have been the murderer . . ." with absolutely no evidence to back it up. Officially, Macnaghten would have to be referring to the "only surviving relative" William Druitt (lawyer).

From Hell suggests Montague John Druitt was killed by the Freemasons as a scapegoat to take the heat off the real killers.[22]

In 1988 when the 100-year-rule was up, Macnaghten's second suspect was confirmed as Aaron Kosminiski and the third as Michael Ostrog, but these were both disproven. No other police officer supported Macnaghten's allegations.

---

[20] Daniel Farson, *Limehouse Days*, How I Identified Jack The Ripper, p. 62. He is also the author of *Jack The Ripper*, 1972.

[21] In February 1989, his body was dumped in the Huka Falls in New Zealand's Lake Taupo after a botched S&M session. With little web reference, absence speaks volumes.

[22] Alan Moore and Eddie Campbell, *From Hell*: Volumes 1–8, Northampton, Montana, Kitchen Sink Press, March 1991–July 1995.

We had to wait for the 70-year-rule and the 100-year-rule before finding out that the much-praised Sir Melville Macnaghten, Chief of the CID at Scotland Yard/Met, was a saboteur of detective work, constantly getting information incorrect, a major instigator of false trails for the City of London Police and a no-good detective from the upper class working a protection racket for the wealthy and the Freemasons. Rather than write things down, he relied on his superior memory, which proved to be as absent as his police training.

"The task was aggravated by several mistakes
made by Macnaghten."[23]

After being brought in to sabotage the investigation of the Jack the Ripper murders, the Houndsditch murders and the siege of Sidney Street, and consequently being elevated three times, Sir Melville Macnaghten got away on a cruise liner for the next eight years, after which he wrote his account of the Houndsditch murders, the Sidney Street Siege and the Jack the Ripper murders from memory in 1920. He then retired into the bosom of Venus on a permanent basis.

Soon after it was known that he had written his memoirs he died at Queen Anne's mansions in Westminster on 12 May 1921. His files of Jack the Ripper, the Houndsditch murders and the Sidney Street Siege were immediately stolen, stolen off the thieves, and then reportedly destroyed.

Macnaghten effectively sealed the case in a ton of ignorance and made it all the more difficult for anyone else to solve – just as he was supposed to do. His writing covers for the killer, suggesting the killer is dead once the murders stop and future murders should be watched to solve this one. He provides no clarity and no leads for the police. Not only did he steal files and misreport on them, he hid the files for 100 years.

> Melville Leslie Macnaghten was *affective* only. He was what we call today "a tosser". He continually missed the plot and was more interested in being admired as an actor, outsmarting everyone by talking in Shakespeareanese than being *effective*. Typical of someone sodomised through the British public schools, his brain was a befuddlement of wanton errors, and that he should play a part in history, puts history in its place.

---

[23] Daniel Farson, *Limehouse Days*, p. 61.

Elevated Paedophiles

Lord Horatio Herbert Kitchener

KG, KP, GCB, OM, GCST, GCMG, GCIE

and

Lord Robert Stephenson Smyth Baden-Powell of Gilwell

Baden-Powell (22 Feb. 1857–8 Jan. 1941) joined the army in 1876 (21). Despite doing badly at school he came second in the army exams, bypassed the officer training, soon became an Honorary Colonel in India and eventually became a Major-General at 43.

In 1896, Baden-Powell was returning from the Ashanti expedition on West Africa's Gold Coast (later Ghana) with the Ashanti Star (1895–96) under his belt. He located two 16-year-old Irish soldiers, accused them of cowardice, tied their hands behind their backs, told everyone he was going to interrogate them, cleared the carriage, sodomised the two bound 16-year-old Irish soldiers, then shot them both in the back of the head, dead. Robert Baden-Powell was 39.

At first Robert Baden-Powell was awarded the Matabele Campaign Medal (1896–97) but was then banished from England. He clawed his way back into society, was promoted to the highest-ranking secular position in England, then elevated to Sir in 1909, Baronet in 1922, Baron in 1929 and then Lord the same year.

Robert Baden-Powell.

B-P.

B-P.

Robert Baden-Powell.

Baden-Powell was a flamboyantly gay sodomising double murderer and persona non grata in England until Queen Victoria died in 1901.

Baden-Powell was exiled from 1896 to 1903 (in South Africa and India with Kitchener) and returned to England as the Inspector General of Cavalry. He received 16 medals (although he rarely fought), started the Boy Scouts in 1908, was knighted in 1909, started Girl Guides in 1910 (with his sister Agnes) and was then asked to retire from the army by King Edward VII.

Baden-Powell (55) then married the psychiatrically challenged Olave St Claire Soames (23) in 1912. He then became the commerically influential Master of the Mercer's Company in 1913 (which now gifts £38 million annually), started Wolf Cubs in 1916, the Scoutmaster course in 1919, acclaimed himself as Chief Scout (for boys) in 1920 and was elevated with five titles, becoming Knight Commander of the Bath (1909), Knight Commander of the Victorian Order (1909), Baronet Baden-Powell (1921), Lord Baden-Powell of Gilwell (1929) and 1st Baron Baden-Powell (1929).

There was an investigation into Baden-Powell's double murder-rape and this was reported back to Queen Victoria and Kitchener (1850–1916). Luckily for Baden-Powell, Kitchener, seven years his senior, was also a murderous paedophile, so Kitchener put the necessary cover in place for Baden-Powell's future.

B-P.

B-P.

From this moment on, the eventual Lord Baden-Powell (39) and the soon-to-be Lord Kitchener (46) worked together and competed to commit and get away with the most horrific crimes commensurate with a failing empire – get in quick, cover up, deny, serve, commission oil portraits and offer complicit cover for each other.

After the murder-rape, Queen Victoria refused to allow Baden-Powell back into Britain. Kitchener and Baden-Powell served together in South Africa (1900–02) and India, keeping each other in comfort.

Kitchener, as chief-of-staff, then commander-in-chief, was credited with bringing the Boer War to an end and was elevated to Viscount for his efforts. Viscount is an ancient German title for which all sexual practices go unchallenged. It is the German equivalent of Knight and all the night rights that go with it. Amongst heterosexual Viscounts, 'night rights' included first sex with a bride on wedding night, but with Kitchener, it was night rights with young boys.

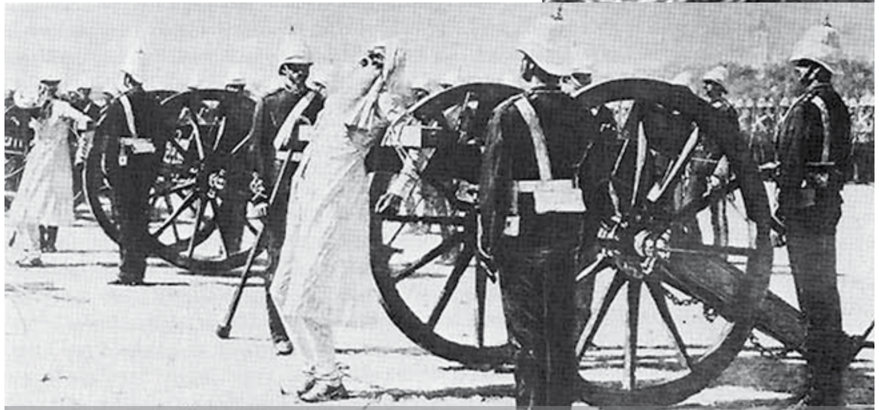

Baden-Powell and the British Imperial takeover of India.
Note the elderly men tied in front of the cannons – a play on cannon-fodder.

Espavo 3025 - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Top: Kitchener organising the cannon fodder Imperial atrocities.
Bottom: Kitchener with his staff in India. Facing page:
As a soldier; Earl of Khartoum (1902); Khartoum Field Marshal in uniform.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Ma

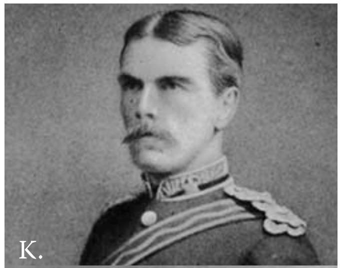

Robert Stephenson Smyth Baden-Powell performed intelligence work under commander-in-chief Horatio Herbert Kitchener (right) and received high praise for his military defense of Mafeking, which successfully resisted a 217-day siege in 1899/1900. More died of typhoid than in defense and B-P armed black Africans, betrayed their women, then starved them to death. Baden-Powell and Kitchener were oil paintings in their own lifetime and S&M oil paintings for each other.

In 1902 Baden-Powell returned to India with Lord Kitchener who became the 1st Earl of Khartoum and Commander-in-Chief of India (1902–09). India gave Horatio Herbert Kitchener (52) and Robert Stephenson Smyth Baden-Powell (45) an unlimited supply of brown boys in the form of servants.

Robert Baden-Powell and his buddy and co-protector Earl Kitchener had competitions to commit the most heinous crimes. Baden-Powell specialised in preparing children for paedophiles and Kitchener specialised in removing the protective biological fathers through war.

Kitchener had formerly won the 'most heinous crime' competition on 2 September 1898 with the five-hour genocide of 11,000 Dervishes with another 16,000 wounded and left to die on the fields (27,000 dead and wounded). The British were testing their new water-cooled machine guns. Only 500 on the British side were wounded or killed, mainly wounded, and mainly from friendly fire.

Kitchener then looted Khartoum, murdered many of the Khalifa's supporters, had the Mahdi's bones exhumed, drank from his skull, then threw his bones into the Nile. Curiously, Winston Churchill was the war correspondent and he named Kitchener “the Conqueror of Sudan”.

B-P.

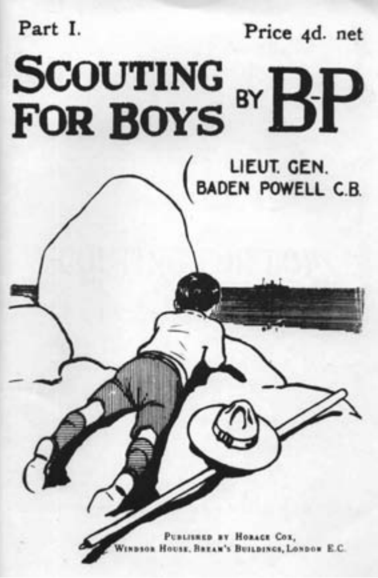
Part I.
Price 4d. net
SCOUTING FOR BOYS
BY B-P
LIEUT. GEN. BADEN POWELL C.B.
Published by Horace Cox, Windsor House, Bream's Buildings, London E.C.

Baden-Powell.

Baden-Powell, like many gay men and paedophiles, was very involved in his own image. As such, he gave himself hero status by painting himself overcoming negro warriors in battle. Most of his paintings were of gallantry in the colonies – the sort of romantic propaganda that started up the boys' annuals – rosy cheeks, adventure, spiffing stuff – this is where it began, with Baden-Powell's rather talented watercolours. As an intelligence officer, little of this hands-on conflict occurred for Baden-Powell, although it was heavily imprinted in his overactive imagination.

The expertly projected vanity of Baden-Powell and dressing up in British African war uniform formed the basis of the Boy Scouts (Scouting for Boys) founded in 1908. Within a year of starting Boy Scouts he was elevated to a Knight (1909). There is no faster way to promotion than by providing masses of childen for higher-ranking paedophile predation.

In 1910, King Edward VII advised Baden-Powell to get out of the army. In 1911, B-P displayed 30,000 boys for scouting in front of the new King George V (1910–36). The Great European War (WWI) started six years later (1914–18) and the first Scout Masters' training camp was held in Gilwell, England in 1919.

The imitation African war uniform and the many orphaned boys attracted many gay returned soldiers who also admired themselves in the regalia of war. The Boy Scouts were playing at war. It was the camaraderie of war, the male-to-male contact and the dressing up without the battle. It was a gays' war and Boy Scouts was a gay's version of war. Girls had ‘let's play house' and boys had ‘let's play survival without adversary'.

Baden-Powell.

It is debateable what side of the war Baden-Powell was on, but as leader of an emerging international movement, murderer, rapist, paedophile and flamboyant homosexual in a cover marriage to a psychiatrically challenged lesbian, he was in a unique position to spy and to be bribed by both sides. Paedophiles in power tend to be agents for anti-family conflict on the scale of war. As such, the power of paedophilia has always gone right to the top, especially in the military.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

B-P.

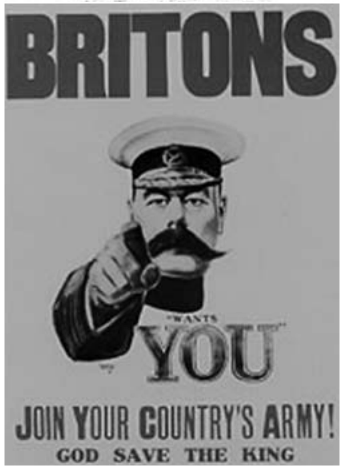

Lord Kitchener (bottom) used his commanding image on recruiting posters, saying, “**Join Your Country's Army!**” (with the capitalised letters code for ‘JC YA' – it was a Jewish conspiracy). The more fathers that died in war, the more fatherless children required mentorship, and that mentorship was offered by his paedophile buddy and fellow Lord, Chief Scout Baden-Powell.[1]

There was some comeuppance for Lord Kitchener and this story belies the truth of these claims. Lord Kitchener died on 5 June 1916 when the ship taking him to Russia was sunk by a mine with at least one other bomb inside the vessel.

Everyone wanted Kitchener dead.

---

[1] In the Boer War, Kitchener gave Australian soldiers the order to kill prisoners. When the Australians were charged and up for execution, Kitchener refused to confirm he had given the order and the Australians were executed.

Lord Kitchener's poster resulted in over 3000 recruits turning out on 14 August 1914. Bottom: Lord Kitchener leaving the War Office.

Kitchener was ruthless in the use of Commonwealth Allies. He was a paedophile. He was a secret society occult friend of Joseph Stalin and was taking the war in a direction the warmongers didn't want. The careers of the British Admiralty would be advanced by his passing so Kitchener was killed while taking gold to Stalin to break Russian procrastination and strengthen their resistance during WWI.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Lord Kitchener.

This was a Freemasonry-commissioned hit on the Empire's "greatest soldier", Britian's best hope for winning the war and the most celebrated cult figure of the times. Lord Horatio Herbert Kitchener, KG, KP, GCB, OM, GCST, GCMG, GCIE, Colonel Commandant Royal Engineers, Colonel of the Irish Guards and Secretary of State for War.

British Naval Intelligence Director Admiral Sir William 'Blinker' Hall in 'Room 40' (London) supplied the news to the Germans (in late May 1916) that Lord Kitchener was going to Russia and the alternative route he was to take. They even knew the Kriegsmarine officer in charge of the U-boat that was to sink the HMS *Hampshire*.

'Blinker' Hall.

Admiral Sir William 'Blinker' Hall (1870–1943) founded British Naval Intelligence, referred to as 'Room 40', during WWI. He was called 'Blinker' because of his chronic, almost mesmerising facial twitch, and even his official photograph captured him on the blink. As Director of British Naval Intelligence, he was responsible for codebreaking and he deciphered the hoax 'Zimmerman Telegram' in early 1917. This suggested a German plot to assist Mexico in annexing its US territory and was used to bring America into WWI.

Essentially, British Naval Intelligence Room 40 was a war creation room involved in assassinations, self-sabotage, mass murder, fake decoding, hoaxes, misdirecting its own Navy, and the war effort for continuation and expansion of war. It was the Freemasons' **ORDER OUT OF CHAOS** directed on a massive scale.

'Blinker' Hall was also responsible for naval decrypts in the Battle of Jutland in 1916. These were also misused by the Admiralty. 'Blinker' Hall was knighted in 1918 in recognition of his efforts in the Zimmerman affair (the hoax to bring America into WWI) and promoted to Rear-Admiral. Retiring from the Royal Navy in 1919, he entered Parliament the same year as Conservative MP for West Derby, Liverpool. Those who create war are elevated and elevations cover mistakes on the scale of war.

For the hit on Kitchener, the British Admiralty 'commissioned', through leaked information, the German Kapitänleutnant Curt Beitzen of the U-75. The rather large 57-metre U-boat had been modified to lay 38 mines. On 29 May 1916, Beitzen worked in the north Scotland channel two miles offshore and dumped 22 contact mines 7 metres below high water between the two rocky promontories – Marwick Head and the Brough of Birsay, about four miles apart. He did this between 3.30 am and 6 am and experienced no resistance from any British forces.

On 2 June the British Naval Trawler *Laurel Crown* struck one of the mines and sank. This sinking was kept very quiet by the English Fleet Directors (Freemasons). This area of sea either side of the Orkneys was not swept for mines due to "bad weather", which accounted for three of the next four days. It was previously thought that the U-boats did not have the range to reach the Orkney Islands. Regardless, this 13th mine was replaced just before dawn on 5 June 1916.

Kapitän Curt Beitzen.

Kapitän Beitzen was working to very stringent data provided by British Naval Intelligence and had even been told how wide the channel was. The mines were not chained to sea-anchors, so that meant they knew what kind of ship they were hunting. To a battleship or protected cruiser they were no danger, but to a light cruiser or destroyer, they would be fatal.

The British Admiralty also turned a blind eye to the Sinn Fein agents in positions on many of the British ships. These Irish agents took up naval positions in a plan to destroy a docked British fleet by placing large bombs in the ammunition rooms so that on a designated day the whole fleet sank.

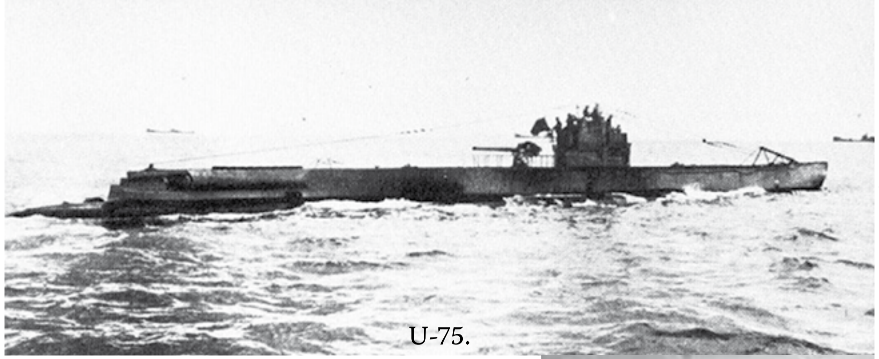

U-75.

U-75 AEG mine.

Sinn Fein knew that if ships were intact when the war was over, Kitchener would use returning troops to attack Ireland. It was easier to take out Kitchener alone, or Kitchener on one ship, than to take out the entire British Fleet. This option also stopped the Germans from taking over Ireland at the end of the war.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -

Ernst Carl, Germany's Master Spy in Britain, was working with Sinn Fein agents in England and Ireland. He and his compatriots sat in a pub on the Orkney Isles and watched the HMS *Hampshire* leave port three hours late. During the delay, they thought their plan had been discovered. It had, but the Freemasonry-dominated British Admiralty allowed the bombs to stay on board and removed the gold. The British Admiralty were now certain the *Hampshire* would sink.

Ernst Carl and Fritz Joubert Duquesne both claim credit for sinking the *Hampshire* but were both written off as not being involved by Scotland Yard. They were officially dismissed as 'agents in their own mind'. This is a common strategem employed when an incompetent outfit is faced by one that is competent. This stops any need for embarrassing arrests – and this ploy is still used to this day when dealing with Israeli saboteurs.

Duquesne.

HMS *Hampshire*.

Earlier in 1916, British Naval Intelligence Director Admiral Sir William 'Blinker' Hall instigated a policy of ensuring cooperation with other British Intelligence departments, exchanging data with MI-5, MI-6 and Scotland Yard's Special Branch. The police always cover for home turf military assassinations and take their orders from the Home Office and British Naval Intelligence, all of which are controlled by high-ranking Freemasons.

When it was discovered that bombs had been placed on board by others not involved in the British Admiralty hit, rather than remove the bombs, the sailing of the HMS *Hampshire* was delayed for three hours while the Admiralty had the gold removed. Lord Kitchener was then sent into a storm, without escort, into known mine territory.

Such was the complicity in killing Kitchener that the British Freemasons, the British Admiralty, the Irish Sinn Fein and German spies were all involved. Even the Sentries and Home Guard were complicit players. Lord Kitchener was effectively nursed to death by the British Admiralty.

On the evening of 4 June 1916, Kitchener took the train from London's King's Cross Station to Thurso. He then travelled on the HMS *Royal Oak* from Scrabster across the Pentland Firth to Scapa Flow, arriving on the morning of 5 June. From here he was to catch the HMS *Hampshire* to the Russian port of Archangel, the only port open to British ships.

Once in the large British Naval Base at Scapa Flow (it's gone now) the Royal Navy's commander-in-chief, Admiral Sir John Jellicoe (Freemason) joined Kitchener (Freemason) for lunch on the navy destroyer. Kitchener wanted to hear all about the Battle of Jutland off the coast of Denmark (31 May–1 June 1916), the greatest ever navy sea battle, in which thousands of men had just died. At the last minute Admiral Sir John Jellicoe advised Captain Savill, in view of the heavy weather, to take the more sheltered route west of the Orkneys.

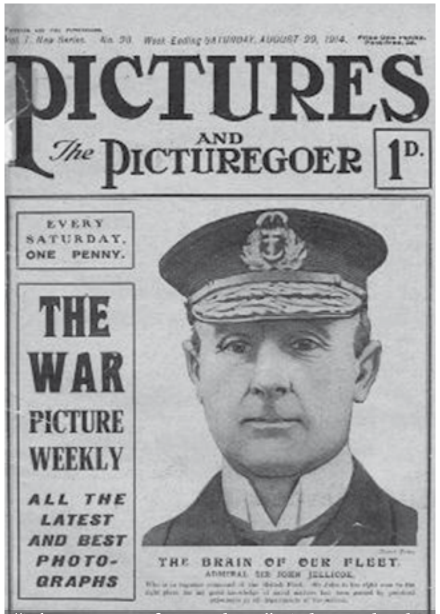

Vol. 7. New Series. No. 50. Week Ending SATURDAY, AUGUST 29, 1914.

PICTURES AND The PICTUREGOER 1D.

EVERY SATURDAY. ONE PENNY.

THE WAR PICTURE WEEKLY

ALL THE LATEST AND BEST PHOTOGRAPHS

THE BRAIN OF OUR FLEET.

ADMIRAL SIR JOHN JELLICOE.

"The Brain of our Fleet", Admiral John Jellicoe, 22 August 1914; Kitchener (66) leaving *Royal Oak* & on Iron Duke.

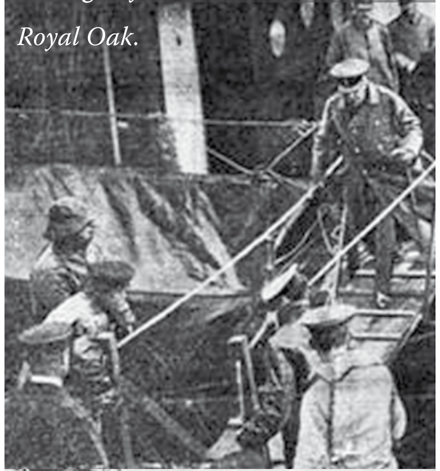

Royal Oak.

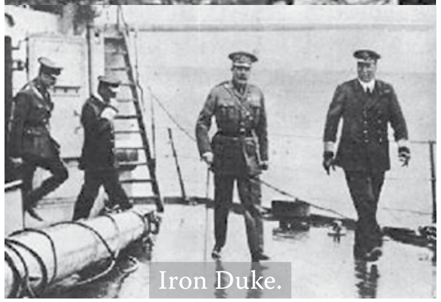

Iron Duke.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

The HMS *Hampshire* was delayed for three hours and then slipped off her mooring at 4.45 pm, passed out of Scapa Flow and was joined at 5.45 pm by the destroyers *Unity* and *Victor*.

The east route was regularly swept for mines but the west route was not. Britain's *Laurel Crown* had been sunk by a mine on the west route three days earlier. This had been kept secret and neither the west nor the east route had been swept for mines since. The exploded mine had been replaced by the German U-75 just before dawn. The British Admiral and Commander-in-Chief John Jellicoe was sending the Secretary of State for War Lord Kitchener through a passage where he knew there would be mines.

When the HMS *Hampshire* entered the open seas, the ships faced a head-on northerly Force-9 gale. The destroyer escorts could not sweep for mines in the high seas and were having trouble keeping up. At 6.20 pm Captain Herbert J. Savill ordered the destroyers to turn back. This was preordained and ensured no effective rescue.

Given the Force-9 storm, the lack of escort destroyers, no rescue craft, mines in the channel and the bombs on board, Kitchener's death was a certainty. At 7.30 pm, 1.5 miles off the rocky coast of Marwick Head, the HMS *Hampshire* hit one of the mines laid by the German U-boat.

All but one of the hatches was closed due to the weather. The explosion was not strong enough to blow the hatches and the closed hatches concentrated the fumes and began killing men. The order to ABANDON SHIP was given and the hatches were all opened to huge swells and raging seas. Thereafter, all orders were lost to the howling wind.

There were three explosions. The first was a mine that hit at the foremost boiler room (No. 1 Stokehold) and burst the boiler. This in turn tore out a section of her bottom and caused a flash fire to rip through the ship. Steam lines were cracked open and the fumes from high explosives penetrated all the way up to the upper stoker's mess deck and then to the uppermost compartments of the ship.

This was followed by a second explosion – a bomb that blew outwards very soon after – and a third explosion 15 minutes after that. These three explosions allowed the German U-boat, the German spies and the Sinn Fein to all claim responsibility for sinking the HMS *Hampshire*.

The German spy Fritz Joubert Duquesne claimed to have sunk the HMS *Hampshire* in *The Man who Killed Kitchener* (1932), as did Ernst Carl in *One against England; the death of Lord Kitchener and the plot against the British fleet* (1935). When it comes to big hits, there are often three avenues of death all working simultaneously and independently. Rightfully they can all claim part in the killing, just as each can use the others' actions for impunity.

The fire and the second explosion took out the generator and the ship was without lights. The wireless wouldn't function, the steering had failed, but the propellors were still moving. All of the lifeboat derricks had electric winches and were impossible to launch without the generator. What lifeboats did get away were immediately smashed against the ship's side.

Those left on board resorted to the Carley rafts. These round cork rafts with rope rail edges could hold 60 men, but no officers would get in them as they lacked the dignity required to abandon ship. One had to stand waist-deep in water. As a result, all of the officers including Kitchener perished.

Some waited in the life rafts as the ship sank, hoping to release themselves without the electrical winches, but the *Hampshire* somersaulted at the last minute and turned on them, crushing the lifeboats and all inside. Ships don't tend to invert unless they've been bombed from the inside.

Espavo 3020 - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

All but 12 of the seamen died from explosions, burns, poisonous gases, exhaustion, drowning and exposure in the icy waters. The No. 3 Carley raft started off with 40 men but was reduced to four by the time it was blown to shore and broken up. The four survivors clambered up a craggy rock cliff and crawled another 300 yards to a house where the farmers and fisherman from Birsay stripped their wet clothing and poured great quantities of hot tea and brandy into them.

Kitchener was not a good sailor and was prone to seasickness. The last any survivor saw of him was standing impassively on the fore-bridge in his khaki S.D. without his greatcoat. Having judged his chances of survival as virtually nil, he retained his dignity, refused to scramble, and gave himself up to the Force-9 seas. Kitchener's body was never recovered. All of his six staff perished, as did all the officers on the ship. No one survived who saw what happened to him. The War Minister died less than 3 miles (5 km) from the naval stronghold of Scapa Flow while in the care of the Royal Navy – 662 men were on board; 650 died; 12 survived.[2]

---

[2] Some sources suggest 643 died (not 650) and 12 survived.

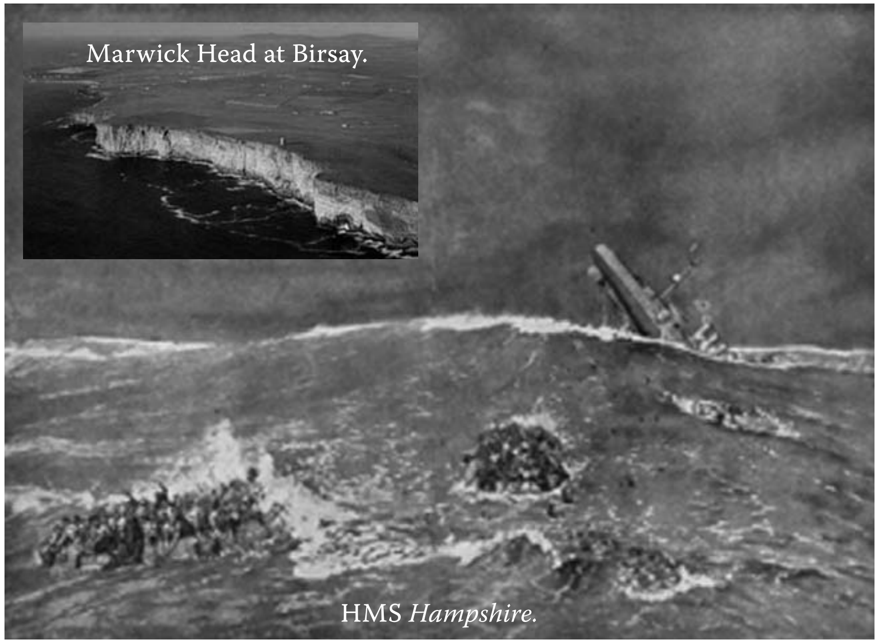

Marwick Head at Birsay.

HMS *Hampshire.*

The sinking of the HMS *Hampshire* (painted above without the ship inverted) was observed on land by British Sentries from go-to-woe. The Sentries sent a telegram half an hour after the sinking at 8.20 pm: "Vessel Down". At 8.35 pm they sent: "Four Funnel Cruiser sunk 20-minutes ago. No assistance arrived yet. Send ships to pick up bodies." Two destroyers arrived at 10.30 pm with no survivors to rescue.

Public Record Office: Shortly after 9 pm Royal Navy's commander-in-chief, Admiral Sir John Jellicoe "directed Officer Commanding Western Patrol to take any action to warn all inhabitants along the coast to assist in any possible manner. A motor cyclist was despatched within a short period."

The local Home Guard at Orkney were then told that a German warship had been sunk and that they were to shoot any survivors. Some locals who wanted to help were "forcibly prevented under dire threats" and told "that all civilians were to remain in their houses and not to venture near the shore or we should be fired on". Armed soldiers posted on the cliffs around Birsay kept curious folk away at bayonet point.

The next day the whole sea was calm and by 9 am Commander-in-Chief Admiral Sir John Jellicoe informed the Admiralty: "I greatly fear there is little hope of there being any survivors as the whole shore has been searched."

Four hours later (1 pm) the Admiralty flashed an urgent message: "Lord Kitchener had a number of most secret and important official documents. Any wreckage floating about should be examined and precautions taken to watch the coast for wreckage drifting in." Within the hour all survivors were interviewed.

All communication between Orkney and the mainland was suspended and the "strictest censorship of letters and papers" in Scotland was ordered. It was emphasised that "no indication should be given of the Hampshire's position when it sank". All Orcadians who wanted to help were again turned back. 'Securing secret documents' was the excuse. If Kitchener or any others were found alive, they would have been killed on the spot.

Of the 12 survivors, William Bennett was the only Warrant Mechanic (10 survivors were Petty Officers). In his 2 pm affidavit he states: "Was officer on watch in the engine room. Explosion occurred in No. 1 Stokehold – there were two or more explosions, the second causing a cloud of yellow smoke and being slightly further aft than the first. A fire was started forward by the foremost magazine at which he was present and assisted to put out. First explosion probably caused by a mine, as there was a loud crack – subsequent explosions were not so violent, more like a 3-pounder gun going off."

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Petty Officer Samuel Sweeny: "Two explosions about a second a part, the second being less violent. Lyddite [military explosive] flames and smoke came up, hot and suffocating. Steering gear was broken down by explosion."

Leading Stoker Alfred Ernest Read: "Mess deck was filled with choking smoke and fumes so that men could not stay in it. Hatches which were battened down were not blown off by explosion." The mine and the weather combined to create a death trap for the men.

Petty Officer Wilfred Wesson: "Saw Lord Kitchener in gun room flat with a naval officer; they both went up [to the] hatch before him. Naval officer shouted to make way for Lord Kitchener." The Poms resort to using the British class system at the very moment you'd expect them to use their brains – whenever there is an emergency.

Leading Seaman Charles Rogerson: "Ship went down by the head. Saw propellers working after he left her. Saw about four Military Officers in Khaki and one in a blue suit and hard hat on quarter deck after the explosion, but saw no more of them after going to his station forward." No other seamen saw Kitchener after that. It appears that he and his staff were washed overboard.

A 13th man, naval writer Petty Officer John Downes (24), survived the sea but died of exposure soon after. Although naval writers are pretty much clerks, it was imperative that no one with first-hand knowledge record what happened. Those who survived were sworn to silence. Their affidavits, typical of naval recording, were conflicting and minimalist and their newspaper interviews were purposely limited responses.

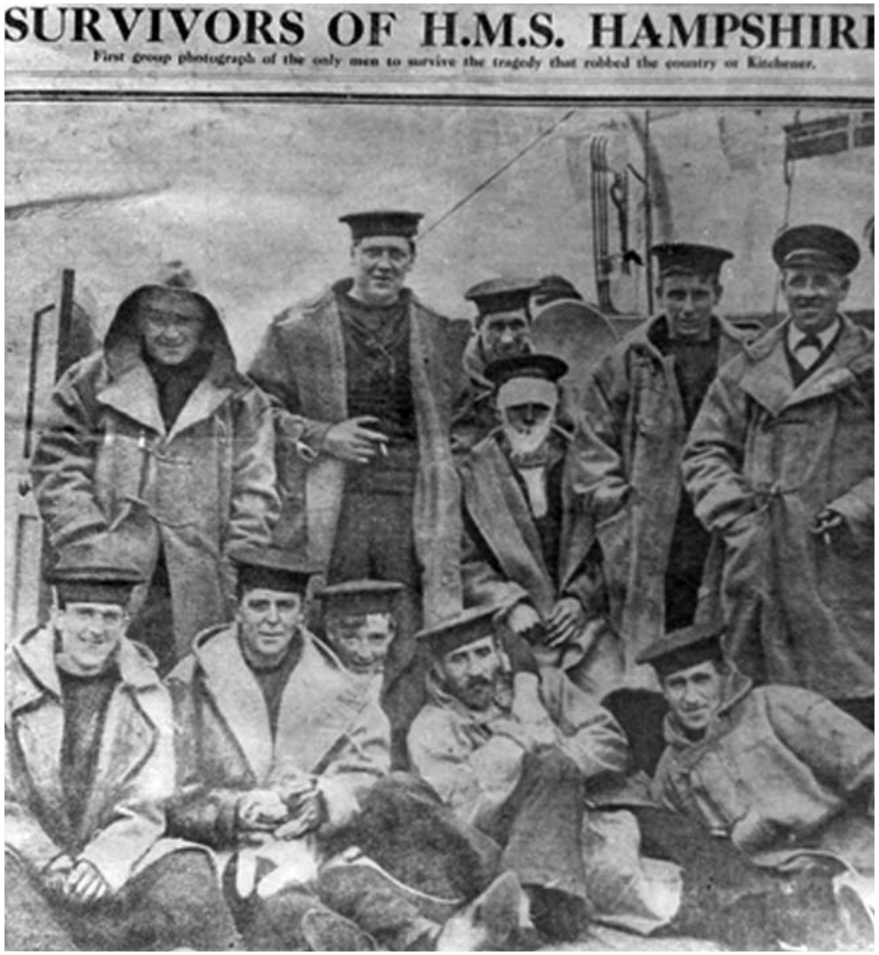

SURVIVORS OF H.M.S. HAMPSHIR

First group photograph of the only men to survive the tragedy that robbed the country of Kitchener.

A dive in early 2003 showed that at least one of the explosions that sunk the HMS *Hampshire* had blown outwards. This would back up the claims of Ernst Carl and Fritz Joubert Duquesne to have sunk the *Hampshire*. In the least, they may have contributed to it, but it was probably the old intelligence trick of a U-boat acting as a cover for sabotage. It is clear, though, that the operation did rid Britain of its much celebrated and honoured mass-murdering sadistic paedophile.

When a British General announced the death of Secretary of War Lord Kitchener to British soldiers behind the front line at Eataple, the soldiers cheered the news of Kitchener's death so much that the British General thought he had been misheard. So he announced Kitchener's death again and got the same response. An Australian Officer observed that "the natives are a bit pissed off with Pommie Generals and have been ever since the Somme Push in France. They think the Pommie Generals want them dead."

Spymaster: "Kitchener was assassinated by a joint British and German effort for the sole purpose of removing a rampant and overt child-fucker and mass-murderer from the military hierarchy. Everyone hates a child-fucker. They survive because they are easily controlled and therefore commonly saluted. Because of their deviousness and because their methods know no bounds, they make good spies and are easily utilised by both sides. 'Here is the information, where is the child?' They also have a ruthless disregard when sending breeding males to their deaths and remain the only sexual group comfortable murdering children."

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

HMS *Hampshire* survivor Petty Officer Walter Charles Farnden (Stoker 1st Class K. 18337): "That there was a deliberate plot to do away with Lord Kitchener has often been rumoured. It has been said that the Germans were aware of the projected voyage and sent the *Hampshire* to the bottom . . . by a mine laid purposely on its course . . . subsequent sweeping in the vicinity where the *Hampshire* went down accounted for twelve of the thirteen mines known to have been laid by the submarine U-75 as a preliminary to the enemy's action at Jutland [30/31 May 1916]."[3] The thirteenth mine sank the *Hampshire*.

The HMS *Hampshire* (1905) was an armoured cruiser of some 11,000 tons, 150 yards long, with a crew of 655, that could travel at 23 knots. The British Royal Navy's Commander-in-Chief, Admiral Sir John Jellicoe (5 December 1859–20 November 1935), knew there was a full crew, knew of the mines, the removal of the escorts, the bombs on board, the Sinn Fein navy staff plots, and the weather. He knew all of these facts and rightly considered himself responsible for the death of the Secretary of State for War, Lord Kitchener, yet he was not reprimanded in any way for the 650 deaths, nor was the issue of the gold *ever* raised.

Admiral Sir John Jellicoe.

First Sea Lord Sir John Jellicoe.

As First Lord of the Admiralty, Winston Churchill (Freemason) appointed Sir John Jellicoe (Freemason) second-in-command of the Grand Fleet in November 1911. He was then made Commander of the Fleet on 4 Aug. 1914. After the (31 May–1 June 1916) Battle of Jutland, Admiral Sir John Jellicoe was known for his unwillingness to risk and lose warships. This provided further cover for his part in the murder of Lord Kitchener, his six staff, 643 seamen and the loss of the HMS *Hampshire*.

The orders for the sinking of the HMS *Hampshire* came from those responsible and available for Admiralty promotions.

Rather than be reprimanded, Admiral Sir John Jellicoe was promoted to First Sea Lord within six months, effectively making him Naval Chief of Staff. But with a new view on events, he was abruptly removed from office on Christmas Eve of 1917 by the new coalition Prime Minister David Lloyd George (1916–22). As Chancellor of the Exchequer (1905–15), Minister of Munitions (1915), Secretary for War (7 June 1916) after Kitchener's assassination, and 1st Earl of Dwfor, he would have known what had happened to Kitchener and the gold.

---

[3] British magazine, *The Great War – I was There!*

A film about the life of Prime Minister David Lloyd George was made in 1918, mysteriously suppressed, lost, and premiered 78 years later in Wales in 1996.

In his retirement, former Admiral Sir John Jellicoe wrote *The Grand Fleet 1914–1916* (1919) and *The Crisis of Naval War* (1921). As is so common in secret society mass murders, he was swished to the colonies and made Governor-General of New Zealand (Sept. 1920–Nov. 1924), where only a select few knew he was "the man who killed Kitchener". He returned to England in 1925 and was further elevated to Earl, becoming Viscount Sir John Jellicoe, GCB, OM, GCVO. He was buried in the much-admired St Paul's Cathedral in Nov. 1935 in the wing dedicated to Lord Kitchener and the WWI dead.

Kitchener's effigy.

Lord Kitchener's tomb with no body.

MEMORIAL SERVICE FOR THE LATE
FIELD-MARSHAL
EARL KITCHENER,
K.P., G.C.B., O.M., G.C.S.I., G.C.M.G., G.C.I.E.,
Secretary of State for War,
Colonel Commandant, Royal Engineers,
Colonel, Irish Guards.

JUNE 13th, 1916, at 12 noon.

ADMIT BEARER.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Lord Robert Stephenson Smyth Baden-Powell of Gilwell
London-born Robert Baden-Powell had something of a history of a gay man. His father was an Anglican reverend and mathematics professor who taught at Oxford. He died when Robert was three. Robert Baden-Powell was then raised by an overbearing mother and did not marry until he was 55. When he did marry in 1912, it was to a 23-year-old naïve tomboy named Olave St Claire Soames (22 February 1889–1977), who was born on the same day of the year as him. From 1927 the date of '22 February' became the Boy Scouts' and Girl Guides' 'World Thinking Day'. Olave St Claire Soames took over the Girl Guides in 1912 and specialised in laxative biscuits and continuing to say 'No', as was the Victorian way – and the lesbian way.

Baden-Powell's marriage caused an international sensation amongst the 100,000 Boy Scouts, who despaired and speculated that it would bring an end to the Chief's Scouting and its flavour of well-presented public homosexuality imbued with an allegiance to denial . . . "**Be Prepared to Deny**".

"Instead Olave St Claire Soames' boundless exuberant tomboy energy led to her being called 'The Mother of Millions'. Her unflagging support of Baden-Powell helped Scouting to grow even faster, and her own vision saw Guiding become the largest organisation for girls and women [virgins and lesbians] ever seen. She found meaning to her life which has profoundly affected millions of women this century and will continue to have influence into the future."[4] Yep. All Girl Guides practised kissing each other then became paedophile minders, just like their 'mother of millions'.

B-Prepared to deny.

Olave St Claire Soames.

---

[4] Baden-Powell website.

The 55-year-old Baden-Powell married the pyschiatrically challenged 23-year-old naïve tomboy, Olave St Claire Soames – perfect paedophile cover. In the First Provincial Training Camp a 1927 hermaphrodite lesbian (or man-in-a-dress) tugs on a rope with teenage girls still open to direction. Boy Scouts and Girl Guides were a sexual tug-of-war and there was a lot of pulling going on.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

The naïve lesbian and psychiatrically challenged Olave St Claire Soames married the world's most prolific and murderous paedophile-enabler, and five years later he held the most powerful secular position in Great Britain – 'Master of Companies'.

In reality, Olave St Claire née Soames Baden-Powell became the most efficient in a long line of paedophile-enablers – the women who enable paedophiles to function. Edwina Mountbatten and Astrid Malcom were others. Picked for their stupidity, they led vicarious lives empty of self-accomplishment and battled with overwhelming guilt.

GIRL GU
DIVISION
BY
CHIEF GUIDE OF THE WORLD

Lady Baden-Powell in the 30 June 1945 "People wake up to Paedophilia" rally, as she prepares to speak to an empty field eight weeks after WWII ended. Still going, in 1958 Australians rewarded her with a large melt-free icecream and in 1961 she found more eager paedophile minders in the Stadacona Gym in Halifax.

It's a tragedy that their stupidity and psychiatric conditions prevented them from acknowledging what they were part of.

The British monarchy had strong ties with Germany. Their name remained Saxe-Coburg-Gotha until 17 July 1917, and the writing on the Prince of Wales' crest, a position held by every future King of England, read "Ich Dien". This was German for "I serve", essentially saying, "I serve Germany". Baden-Powell's relationship with the Germans was more or less confirmed by his contacts within the British military and hierarchy, the British monarchy acting purposefully towards another German takeover of Britain.

The Germans, known by the British as 'cousins', had no laws against child prostitution and openly used streetwalkers as young as 11. Child porn is still legal in Germany today and this made the German customs very attractive to the British monarchy, who actively supported all forms of paedophilia as "the sport of royals". This went some way to bringing the sexually deviant British Royal Family towards sabotaging their own country's defences, exemplified in the most extraordinary way by the bisexual King Edward VIII – a Nazi informant/avid supporter and sexual deviant who was not immune to giving Hitler British state secrets.

Espavo S020 - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

> Some people will do anything and everything to make amends and overcome the crimes of their past. After his double murder-sodomy rape, Baden-Powell started the Boy Scout movement, was a tireless artist romanticising colonial life in the colonies, and a spy. Spying was a way back into the fold for disgraced persons. You got caught, got swished out, did some active spying, survived and then returned to favour.

Baden-Powell published *Scouting for Boys* (1908), *My Adventures of a Spy* (1915), *The Adventures of a Spy* (1924) and *Scouting for Boys in India* (1932) among others. The 1908 version showed a topless boy lying down in striped pants peering over a cliff with a Scout Master's staff and hat nearby. The entire picture focusses on the ten-year-old boy's raised posterior. It is homo-erotic and paedo-erotic to say the least. Baden-Powell's favourite play was *Peter Pan*, but the most telling title on him was Tim Jeal's *The Boy-Man* (1990).

As is common with paedophiles and murderers, when you get away with the crime you are knighted. Robert Stephenson Smyth Baden-Powell was elevated to 'Sir' 13 years after his murder-rape (1896/1909) and elevated to Lord Baden-Powell of Gilwell 33 years later (1929), once he had maintained the continual supply of children to paedophiles while bypassing the tedium of war. His authorship, spying, and 'Scouting for Boys' provided him with a believable cover which his five-time elevation recognised. He also received 28 foreign orders and decorations and the keys to over twenty cities worldwide, including London. This prevented him from ever being charged.

> A shameful personal history was very useful to the ruling British Empire. As a Knight and a Lord this made him respectable, influential and imminently bribeable. Baden-Powell became an agent for anyone who had the wood on him, which is why he survived – he was useful to both sides. It was sometimes unclear which side Baden-Powell was on and even which side the British monarchy was on. Sabotage ran rampant at the highest levels in Britain – Ich Dien.
>
> Baden-Powell was working for an organisation that had its allegiance over and above the sights of the British Empire. Baden-Powell's job was to attract other noteables into the paedophile movement so that they too could be bribed, made to spy and give results at no expense. This he duly did by having Jamborees at various castle holdings around England, northern Europe, the Commonwealth and America. Regardless of country, the overarching ideology was the collusion of silence and providing an arena for paedophilia.

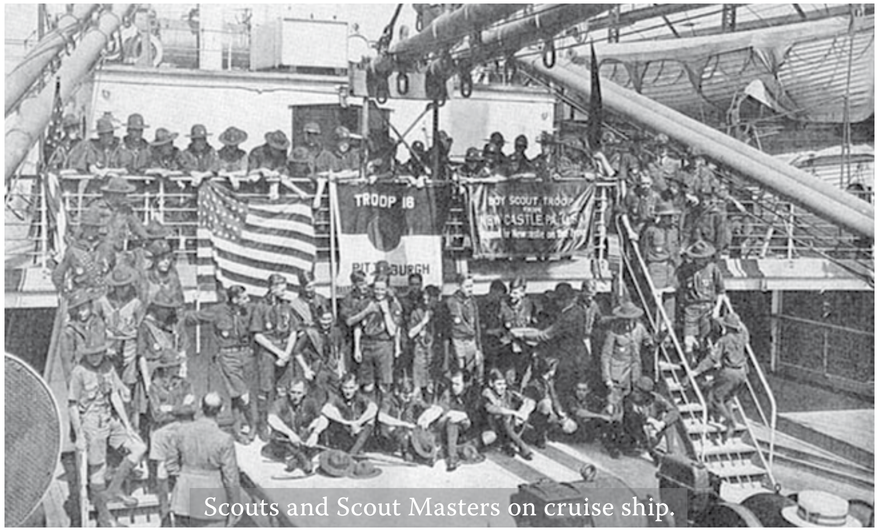

Scouts and Scout Masters on cruise ship.

In August 1933 Baden-Powell left on a cruise ship with his psychiatrically-gymnastic wife and 650 Guides and Scouts and travelled to Holland, Poland, Lithuania, Latvia, Estonia, Finland, Sweden, and Norway, returning to England the same month. By 1933 the Nazis had come to power in Germany, and in less than ten years all but one of the countries Baden-Powell visited would be occupied by Germany or Russia and the world would be at war. Exported paedophilia has long been a precursor to taking over countries as it compromises their leaders. Ideological and physical battles then firm up the changes with a predetermined outcome.

The Scouts and Guides were both 'front and bait' and the countries visited later became the subject of the *Molotov-Ribbentrop Pact* (1939). In the *Secret Additional Protocol of the Pact*, Article I states "the sphere of influence of Lithuania including its northern border, goes to Germany . . . [and] . . . the spheres of influence in Finland, Estonia and Latvia goes to the USSR."[5]

Baden-Powell competed to be the most notorious person of the new twentieth century. As Sir Baden-Powell (1909) and then Lord Baden-Powell (1929), he was to become the largest supplier of children to paedophiles for the next 75 years, with over 200 recorded complaints of paedophilia each year. His Lordship gave him the blind cover needed from other Lords, making Lordship and the Boy Scouts 'a complicit child-molesting and open child-trafficking movement between towns and countries'.

By the 1980s there were Boy Scouts in over 100 different countries, resulting in over 100,000 sexual complaints against Scout Masters. Due to the shame factor, public sector damage, the influence of lordships and payoffs, the number of prosecutions was limited to 16,000. Nevertheless, paedophile wings in prison wards were named after particularly perverted Boy Scout Masters such as the 'Sergeant Dan Wing' in *Wi Tako* Prison.

A Boy Scout prepares to take it up the arse for Jesus.

---

[5] *Modern History Sourcebook*, The Nazi-Soviet Non-Aggression Pact, The Molotov-Ribbentrop Pact, 1939.

Elevation establishes cover with others of the same title, with service and complicity from the police, judiciary, social services, tenants, and the head-bowing blind service of those who envy their title.

Lordship established reasonable doubt, where otherwise there would have been discharge, medal stripping, judicial mayhem, convictions, and public executions – generally the fall of the British Empire decades before it actually occurred. It was complicit support from elevated paedophiles – peers, barons, viscounts, earls, marquess, dukes, (Lords), cabinet ministers and judges (Honourables) – that maintained the British Empire for as long as it did.

The Boy Scouts wore their uniforms, gave a helping hand to the public and were prepared for almost anything – except sexual abuse. Their motto "BE PREPARED" had the same initials as their vain solipsist Baden-Powell (BP). But the homo-erotic life of the Boy Scouts could not prepare "the young boys who were scouted" for the sexual advances of their paedophilic masters.

Baden-Powell conferencing with Sioux Chief Dr Eastman at Queens' College in England, 1928. This was quickly followed by some Scouts' cross-dressing.
Baden-Powell: "You mean I could wear that."
Sioux Chief Dr Eastman: "There's a changing room over there. We'll both still be Scouts. Wanna go (left)."
Baden-Powell: "The kids will love this (right)."

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

> It is common knowledge amongst gays that their preference is underaged heterosexual boys whose father has been removed, permanently, temporarily, or just for the day. The post-war Boy Scouts provided this scenario in greater abundance than any had seen before.

Gay men were banned from Boy Scouts – however, under the communist-created United Nations, whose most irritating branch is Human Rights, there can be no exclusions, so gays had to be let back into the Boy Scouts. However, what most straight, naïve and blind-faith parents don't realise is that gay men are 44 times more predatory to under-16-year-olds than straight men, and lesbians (Guiding Girls to lesbianism) are 88 times more predatory to under-16-year-olds than heterosexuals.

> As sexually abused children, the Boy Scouts grew up to be polite-rosy-cheeked-two-faced-white-collar-criminals who were, by and large, sexually bent themselves and established a collusion of cover amongst equally 'respectable' child-sex abusers. They in turn joined such adult organisations as the Freemasons with their reputation as goat mounters – goats being adult kids.
>
> To this day, these sexual deviants dominate immigration (paedophiles) and public relations (child-sex abusers), with 'respectable' meaning "paedophile minder" and the Freemasons sexually abusing a third of their daughters and grandchildren.
>
> Former Boy Scouts, Girl Guides, Anglo/Catholics and Freemasons now control such paedophile organisations as the misnamed 'Family Court', which dedicates itself to the removal of fathers from families and exposing children to paedophiles, not just for the weekend, but full-time.
>
> The paedophile movement is full of respectable dissidents that we are just learning to disavow ourselves of. The new paedophile movement, the Family Court, is the national branch of the United Nations, which is the public front of the KGB, whose desire is social control over the Western world.
>
> Political Correctness is the primary sign of the KGB in the West and should be treated as such. Political Correctness (Moscow, May 1921) is also a major player in the paedophile movement, some suggesting that it stands for 'Paedophile Country'.

> PC has certainly made biological fathering illegal and biological fathers are the primary barrier against paedophilia, with 99.8% of all paedophilia occurring only when the biological father is absent (that's 998 out of 1000 cases).

The Nazis banned the Boy Scouts and absorbed them into the homo-erotic Hitler Youth movement led by the homosexual-paedophile von Schirach.

The Communists also banned Boy Scouts but gathered about themselves sexual deviants from around the world, supplied them with every sexual perversion, filmed this, and then assisted their promotions into local and national government positions in every Western nation. It was through exploiting the sexual perversion, somewhat based on the Boy Scout model, that Russia and China infiltrated all Western nations and *won* the Cold War.

The Nazis and the Communists suppressed Scouting for 50 years until 1989 when the Berlin Wall fell and communism supposedly collapsed, but in reality, had spread so insidiously throughout the Western world through sexual deviancy that the Wall became a symbolic leapfrog to success.

> The removal of the wall in November 1989 meant 'peace', and peace meant "no resistance to communism", which in turn meant that communism was 'dictating family, social and sexual policy in Western nations'. Even the sexually proud, socialistic and much-scammed French will tell you this is exactly what happened.

It is now up to parents to stop sending their children to Boy Scouts and Girl Guides, and to vet gay males (including teachers) so that they will not be around their sons without a dominant and ever-present heterosexual influence. The same goes for Girl Guides, whose leaders teach girls the lesbian method of birth control – have practice sex with girls. Parents also need to vet lesbian teachers out of schools, especially all-girls schools, and maintain a heterosexual female influence without the over-mothering mind control that creates unwanted dependency.

> The paedophile movement was helped enormously by the Boy Scouts and this was backed up by UNICEF, the United Nations Children's Fund which used Baden-Powell's paintings as greeting cards to commemorate the *International Year of the Child* in 1979.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

> UNICEF is of course a branch of the United Nations and the United Nations was gifted to Joseph Stalin for a seven days' war (9–15 August 1945). Stalin was the Mafia boss from October 1927–March 1953. He had Trotsky assassinated (21 August 1940), and Stalin was himself assassinated 13 years later by MAD. Both were willingly involved in mass murder.

Baden-Powell's family were big players in the enormous list of Livery companies called Mercers and they started many of the Guilds. His family history shows 32 Mercers and 8 Head Mercers (since 1794), more than any other family. The *Mercers* date back to Dick Whittington, the author and Mayor of London. The *Mercers* were the equivalent of the American *Skull & Bones/Book & Snake* (S&B/B&S) and gave immunity from prosecution from things like murder, sodomy, genocide and creating wars.

Incorporated by Royal Charter in 1394, the *Mercers*' Company is the premier *Livery Company of the City of London*. Over many centuries members of the *Company* and other benefactors have left money in trust for the *Company* to 'administer for charitable purposes'.

The Mercers run Guilds from Actuaries to World Traders, from Weavers (AD 1155) to Builders Merchants and Environmental Cleaners (2001). Currently there are 24,000 *Liverymen*, in 38 *Companies* that have their own *Halls*, with 85 that maintain day-to-day trade. In the *Guilds*, professionals and tradespeople pay a joining fee and an annual fee to be a certified member of their trade or profession.

Having control over a Guild means that you hold the licence as to whether or not a person can practise in their chosen profession, and therefore, whether they earn a respectable living, a highly respectable living with social support, or whether they scrape by doing odd-jobs and can never secure a mortgage. The Guilds gave the Mercers and the Baden-Powells huge complicity amongst the working public.

> You're either in or out with the Baden-Powells and therefore the commercial arm of Great Britain.

One of the *Guilds* is for the very influential *Scriveners* – writers of court letters and legal documents. No one would dare publish Baden-Powell's double murder-sodomy. So rather than be evicted from the *Mercers* for the double murders, 17 years later B-P was made the *Master of the Company*, one of the top secular positions in England. To this day, 18 years remains the standard delay from paedophilia/murder to elevation.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 20

The 102 *Livery Companies of the City of London* give away over £38 million annually. This gifting, and the control over so many trades and professions, has given enough economic influence to place army generals in foreign countries and governors-generals in the British colonies –as well as telling them who to trust and how best to cover up.

Orders, knighthoods, lordships and governors-generalships collude in this way and are often bought, resulting in those with the worst histories attaining the top positions. **If it's family – cover up, promote, make sure the perpetrators are seen to be involved in charity work, photograph them with famous others, paint them frequently in oils, hang their portraits in public galleries and libraries, place busts in front of courthouses and their statues in town squares**. As such, Baden-Powell exhibited a bust of colonial pioneer John Smith at the Royal Academy in 1907 and started Boy Scouts the following year in 1908.

> 'Public Relations Practitioners' is currently a Guild and on its way to becoming a Company, City Company and then a Livery Company. When a PR company becomes a Livery Company, the truth is owned by a very small, select group bound up in all the troubles and history outlined above. As a result, paedophilia is tightly bound and never makes it through to the media. The Mercers control the Chartered Secretaries & Administrators, Information Technologists, Public Relations Practitioners, Scriveners, Stationers and Newspaper Makers. Paedophilia is a closed loop and it is the economic Stone Age if you challenge.

Essentially, *Guilds* are philanthropic *Companies* that began in medieval times as Guild fraternities to protect the interests and practitioners of particular trades. In 1878 a group of 16 *Companies*, together with the *Corporation of the City of London*, founded the *City and Guilds of London Institute* to promote and foster the teaching of technical trades. Baden-Powell (22) was elected a member the following year in 1879. In 1905 this merged with the *Royal College of Mines* to form the *Imperial College*. Both owe their financial support to *City Livery Companies*. Baden-Powell became *Master of the Imperial College* and *Master of the Company* in 1913 (just before the outbreak of WWI), the most powerful non-military position in Britain outside religion, the monarchy and outright wealth.

> The Guilds include: Air Pilots & Air Navigators, Apothecaries (medicine), Arbitrators, Armourers & Brasiers (armour-makers and workers in brass), Bakers, Barbers (also surgeons and dentists), Basketmakers, Blacksmiths, Bowyers (longbow makers), Brewers, Broderers (embroiderers), Builders Merchants, Butchers, Carmen, Carpenters, Chartered Accountants, Chartered Architects, Chartered Secretaries & Administrators, Chartered Surveyors, Clockmakers, Clothworkers, Coachmakers & Coach Harness Makers, Constructors, Cooks, Coopers (barrel makers), Cordwainers (workers in fine leather), Curriers (dressers of tanned leather), Cutlers, Distillers, Drapers, Dyers, Engineers, Environmental Cleaners, Fan Makers, Farmers, Farriers (shoers of horses/veterinary surgeons), Feltmakers (hats), Firefighters, Fishmongers, Fletchers (arrow makers), Founders, Framework Knitters, Fruiterers, Fuellers, Furniture Makers, Gardeners, Girdlers (girdles and belts as clothing), Glass Sellers, Glaziers, Glovers, Gold & Silver Wyre Drawers (gold and silver braid for uniforms), Goldsmiths, Grocers, Gunmakers, Haberdashers, Horners, Information Technologists, Innholders, Insurers, Ironmongers, Joiners and Ceilers, Launderers, Leathersellers, Lightmongers, Loriners (stirrups and other harness for horses), Makers of Playing Cards, Marketers, Masons, Master Mariners, Mercers (general merchants), Merchant Taylors (tailors), Musicians, Needlemakers, Painter Stainers, Patternmakers (makers of wooden clog-style footwear), Paviors (paving, highways), Pewterers, Plaisterers (plasterers), Plumbers, Poulters, Saddlers, Salters, Scientific Instrument Makers, Scriveners (writers of court letters and legal documents), Shipwrights, Skinners, Solicitors, Spectaclemakers, Stationers & Newspaper Makers, Tallowchandlers, Tinplate Workers, Tobacco Pipe Makers & Tobacco Blenders, Turners, Tylers & Bricklayers, Upholders (upholsterers), Vintners, Water Conservators, Wax Chandlers, Weavers, Wheelwrights, Woolmen (winders and packers of wool).
>
> City companies without livery include Parish Clerks, Watermen & Lightermen, Hackney Carriage Drivers, International Bankers, Management Consultants, Tax Advisors, Educators, Security Professionals and Public Relations Practitioners.

After completing his public (posh) schooling at Charterhouse, Baden-Powell entered the Army and was excused from all training due to brilliant test results (and connections). In 1888 he acted as an intelligence officer in the African campaigns against the Zulus. In 1890 he was placed under the care of his uncle, Sir H. A. Smyth, governor of the fortress in Malta. To avoid physical contact, both in battle and with the other soldiers, he was named Chief British Intelligence Officer for the Mediterranean and was required to determine the military strength of the Austrians and obtain all Balkan troop positions.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

"Baden-Powell (32) practised espionage with inventive if not outlandish disguises. Assuming the disguise of a naturalist, he scouted the fortifications in Herzegovina, a province in the Austro-Hungarian Empire (later absorbed into Yugoslavia). Wearing spectacles with thick lenses, and carrying a butterfly net, Baden-Powell appeared to be a befuddled lepidopterist seeking rare butterfly specimens. In this pose, he wandered close to defense positions and was a source of amusement to the guards as he scurried about waving his net wildly in attempts to catch elusive butterflies. Baden-Powell was a talented artist who quickly drew sketches of the Austrian fortifications, cleverly concealing these drawings inside larger sketches of butterflies so that when they were inspected by Austrian censors they went undetected."[6] Baden-Powell's ability to make quick, accurate, pre-camera sketches, his tracking skills, his flair for amateur theatrics and his natural persona as a flamboyant non-threatening homosexual made him one of England's most eccentric and accomplished pre-WWI spies.

> To this day, 18 years (± 18 months) remains the standard delay from sodomy/paedophilia to elevation. Cover elevations can be speeded up depending on the standing of the family and service to the British monarchy.

Horatio Herbert Kitchener commanded the Egyptian Cavalry (1882–1924) and served in the 1883–85 Sudan Campaign. In 1898 he massacred 27,000 Dervishes in Sudan and was then elevated to 1st Earl of Khartoum and Commander-in-Chief of India (1902), Chief-of-Staff, Viscount, Colonel Commandant Royal Engineers, Colonel of the Irish Guards, Secretary of State for War and KG, KP, GCB, OM, GCST, GCMG, GCIE. He died from a government-sanctioned assassination on 5 June 1916.

Admiral Sir John Jellicoe sunk the HMS *Hampshire*, killing 650 including Lord Kitchener. He was elevated within six months to First Sea Lord (1916) and Governor-General of New Zealand (1920–24), where he would stop a parade if a boy approached. He was made Earl in 1925 and died in 1935. He was buried in the same north-west tower of St Paul's Chapel as the (effigy of) Lord Kitchener that he murdered.

Baden-Powell committed a double-murder homosexual rape in Ashanti in 1896. He was then elevated to 'Sir' in London (1909), Baronet (1922), Baron (1929) and Lord the same year. He died in 1941. By 1950 there was a plan to replace the Boy Scouts (and the Church) with the Family Court, to maintain access to unfathered children. This occurred worldwide.

---

[6] *The History of Espionage*, Angelfire website.

The Scout Law

1. A Scout is truthful and keeps his word.
2. A Scout is worthy and trustful, obedient and keeps the law.
3. A Scout is useful to his family and the community.
4. A Scout is friendly and polite to all and a brother to every Scout.
5. A Scout respects himself and others, is careful of his words and actions.
6. A Scout loves nature and protects the environment.
7. A Scout is cheerful and optimistic.
8. A Scout is thrifty and makes good use of his time.
9. A Scout is industrious and progresses using his skills.
10. A Scout is determined, brave and confident and takes responsibility for his actions.

B-P – archetypal Adult Scout.

The Adult Scout Law

1. An Adult Scout is a liar and keeps his word only amongst other Adult Scouts.
2. An Adult Scout is unworthy, can't be trusted, and does anything to avoid being acused.
3. An Adult Scout is a liability to his family and community and is often a crossover paedophile, married for cover.
4. An Adult Scout is two-faced, friendly and polite; they provide cover to every other Adult Scout and scouted child.
5. An Adult Scout is always checking his paedophile impulses to ensure they are not publicly noticed.
6. An Adult Scout loves anything children love in order to establish rapport.
7. An Adult Scout is paralysed inside and has a crap sense of humour, having to announce "That was a joke".
8. Adult Scouts make for rip-off accountants. Any activity with children takes precedence over work.
9. An Adult Scout finishes their work badly and blames the poor results on their client.
10. An Adult Scout is determined not to be caught, is brave, confident and manipulative with the law, and rarely, if ever, takes responsibility for their actions.

Espejo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

The publicity-seeking paedophile, Lord Robert Stephenson Smyth Baden-Powell of Gilwell (1857–1941).

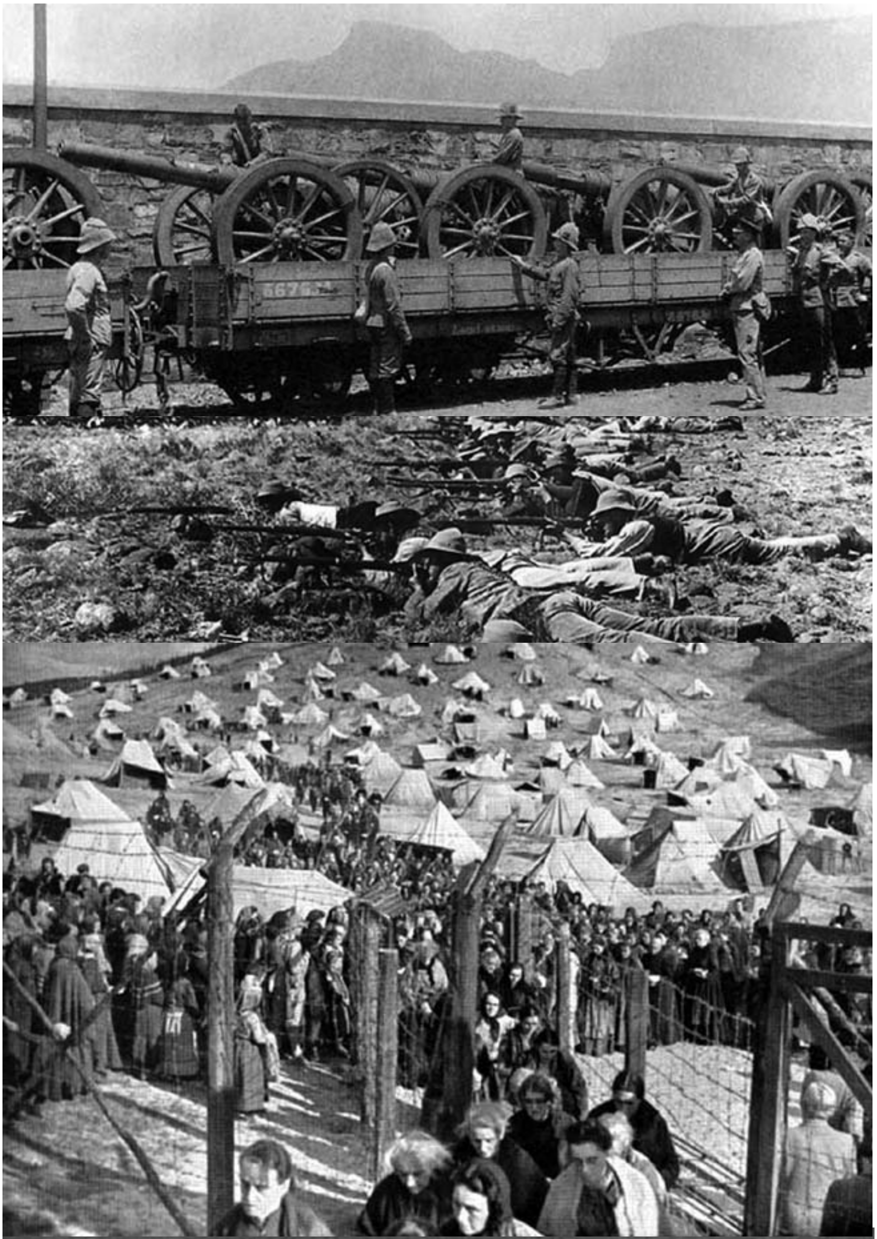

The Boer War: The early British formula for war, first used in Ireland, taken to South Africa, then exported to Germany via Switzerland: Roll in your armoury under the guise of peace; Destroy the threat; Organise the locals worse than before; Commit mass murder by starvation in concentration camps; Rape and pillage the nation's resources; then Export *their* resources around the world to finance the 'protection' racket . . . Seems to work time and time again. These photos are of the British managing the Boer War (1899–1901).

Occult Royalty

Gurdjieff teaches Stalin and Hitler

Georges Ivanovich Gurdjieff (1866–1949) was a Greek-Armenian who purported to be a mystic and spiritual teacher, when he was in fact a charlatan who trained warmongers to 'Be Prepared'. He established the 'Institute for the Harmonious Development of Man', but it turned out to be another eugenics society, drawing money from stupid socialites.

Gurdjieff was born in Alexandropol (now Gyumri, Armenia) and grew up across the border in nearby Kars, in Eastern Turkey. He travelled through nearby Central Asia, Egypt and Rome before teaching in Moscow and St Petersburg in 1913. During the 1917 Bolshevik Revolution he returned to his family home in Alexandropol.

Gurdjieff in Alexandropol with his dogs, cat and cigarette.

In January 1919 he moved to nearby Tbilisi and in May 1920 he moved to Istanbul, rented an apartment and watched the Whirling Dervishes. In August 1921 he travelled around Western Europe giving lectures in Berlin and London, and in October 1922 he established the 'Institute for the Harmonious Development of Man', just south of Paris.

In 1924 he was almost killed in a car crash and spent the next nine years writing two books, most of which made little sense. During WWII he lived in Paris (occupied by the Germans) and continued to teach.

Gurdjieff was closely involved with MI-6 throughout WWI.

Intelligence were clever enough to use agents and Cut Outs (someone who doesn't trace back) and put various questions to him. Because he was not stressed by the status of his contact, he answered off the top of his head. These were the answers the British sought and they contributed greatly to the development of agent training.

Gurdjieff was adept at pretending that nothing was happening when the agent was being put through a number of experiences. The time that was most valuable in an agent's training was supposedly recreation time. To Gurdjieff this was always sexual. He was the guru that introduced sex to the GRU and the KGB. He literally created the mythical Soviet Swallows who could root a hundred men and describe the length of their dicks in order as they entered. He was once asked by the British where the best prostitutes could be found. Matter-of-factly he said: "Go and see the police. They lock them up and fuck them, lock them up and fuck them, and it goes on and on ad infinitum."

When the Soviets started the first military training school for spies at Frunze in 1918, they used a lot of Gurdjieff's techniques, and it was virtually an updated copy of what they had at Tavistock prior to WWI. The only thing that changed from the beginning of the war to the end of the war was the British removal of all references to compulsion (threats of force and violence) from the syllabus. Every entrant to either the British or Soviet war academies believed it was an honour to be chosen and they were there solely for the best reasons.

The mistakes the Germans made during the war of asking agents to pop up to the Director's Office so that she, the director, could personally finish them off with a Luger were completely avoided. Executions usually took place in her office, but on rare occassions, when she got frustrated, the hallway was considered good enough, often just prior to graduation. If they didn't improve radically within a week, they were dead. It's no coincidence that the British are regarded as the gentlemen of the intelligence world. For all that, they are no less murderous. The funny thing with the British is that they paid for the care of the German female doctor (Dr Elizabeth S.) who ran the espionage school against them during WWI. This was not altruism. Anywhere groups of foreigners live, MI-6 swoops on them for their spy schools, or Tavistock. Contracts are usually for life and the training clinics are usually staffed by Catholic Nuns in non-Catholic countries, like Switzerland.

Spymaster: "Make of this what you will, but it indicates insider spy and intelligence training across borders and disregarding allegiance. How Intelligence is programmed during war is watered down and used to programme the masses during peacetime. Gurdijieff said, 'You have to work with people who want to do what they are doing. If all your prostitutes are sex addicts, or actually wish to be rooting like mink, then things will be a lot more pleasurable for all concerned. There is no need to resort to compulsion', and in the case of Lady Edwina Mountbatten, Gurdjieff was absolutely right.

"Gurdjieff was a maker of policy and an in-depth thinker on the subject of spy training, which is what made him so valuable to intelligence on both sides. He was not the first spymaster in history to cultivate the mental health fallback position – that he was insane [for painting birds]. Gurdjieff was watched and his watchers were German, so they were very thorough. All through the occupation of Paris he would ocassionally acquire a dead bird, knowing that this fact would be taken straight back to the Gestapo.

"Gurdjieff would often have lunch with the Chief of the Gestapo in Paris. These were often shared with high-ranking MI-6 officers and resistance men. Gurdjieff knew that espionage was a huge racket in which only the honourable suffer. The fact that the Chief of Gestapo in Paris escaped with the German Army, was brought back, tried, and suffered not the slightest problem from French justice, indicates that the British and French Gestapo came to an understanding that transcended all the deaths of their British and French agents – the psychological manipulation of the masses after the war.

"Pauline Koller relates in her book *I Was Hitler's Maid* that Hitler kept homosexual and heterosexual porn in his quarters at the Obersalzberg, in his bedroom and in the rooms he used, and how the doppelgängers would sit at a table and talk about their grandchildren and one by one, as the war approached, they met with accidents or got killed, or would just vanish, but they always talked about their grandchildren. Hitler never did. He had no topic of discussion in this area whatsoever. The other Hitlers had a camaraderie that if two or three were present they would instantly begin discussion, but if Hitler was present, no discussion took place."

Pauline Koller contracted tuberculosis from a friendly doctor by taking bacillus and was thus removed from Hitler's service. She moved to France and even encouraged her fiancé to come. Her book ends with her in the invidious position of being in Paris and happily waving her

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 Ma

G. I. G

G. I. G.

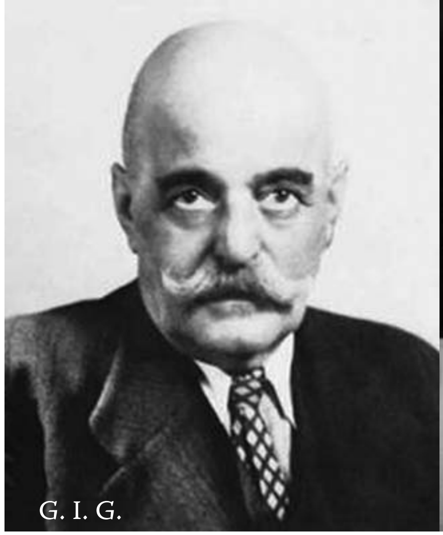
G. I. G.

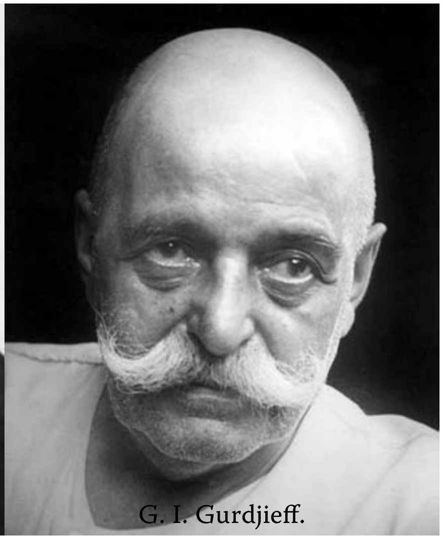
G. I. Gurdjieff.

husband off to war. She never thought that the whole world would gang up on Hitler's side and he would be able to defeat the powers of the Western Alliance so easily and take over Paris like a walk in the park.

That Gurdjieff was kept alive in German-occupied Paris during WWII and was allowed to keep teaching, further placed him as a servant of war. His message was undirectional and his effect was also on the minds of lost socialite waifs. He died in an American hosptial in Neuilly-sur-Seine on 29 October 1949 and there are now over 60 'Harmonious Development of Man' centres in America, one in London, one in Paris and several more across Europe. If it is useless, people will flock to it. If it's ultimately about genocide, it will be funded.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

In war, the major influences are the occult, the banks and politics. Politics ignores the occult until it has money. Socialites also ignore the occult until it is backed by money, and the occult is often backed by money once one or more of the socialites take an interest in the occult group. When an occultist is from a foreign country, they are all the more interesting to the socialites. It activates their imagination and saves getting dusty in exotic travel.

English Freemasonry was not short on cash. The men were boring and the wives were in need of exotic stimulus. In this way, English Freemasonry began to socially and financially support occult groups who then vied for power (patronage), doing so through various spooky tricks, not the least of which was the séance with inside social knowledge.

Britain's Golden Dawn and Germany's Thule (pron. 'too-lee') rose to the fore and these were backed by Madame Helena Petrovna Blavatsky's Theosophy and Aleister Crowley's Ordo Templi Orientis, both of whom were Freemasons. (Blavatsky qualified by supposedly having a male organ.) These occult organisations crossed financial and national boundaries and drew in double agents, ideologues and sexual deviants more effectively than a goat on heat, a llama on a Spanish sailing ship, or a prostitute in a nun's outfit. All of these occult organisations had homicidial intentions and all became well financed.

Hitler was part of the Thule Society and when he rose to power, the Russian occultist G. I. Gurdjieff and Aleister Crowley sought meetings with him. Hitler could only help with their desire for mass murder.

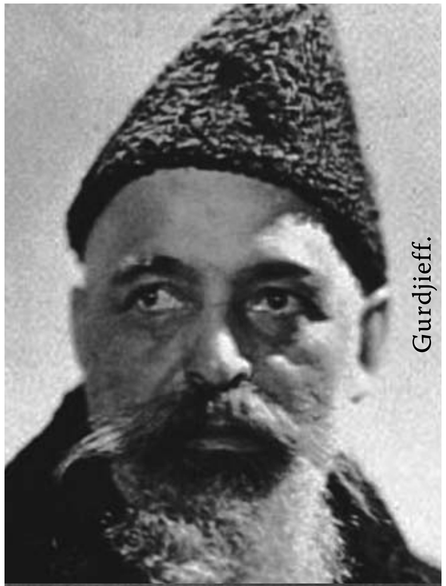
Gurdjieff.

Madame Blavatsky.

Aleister Crowley (MI-6).

Gurdjieff.

Stalin (Koba).

Kitchener.

Gurdjieff had already initiated Stalin into Martinist Freemasonry, so he was an occult contact between Hitler and Stalin. Crowley, who later murdered his own son, assumed he was Hitler and even published that he had replaced Hitler for several years (although this probably says more about occultists than history).

Occultists generally want to be somebody else, as typified by middle-aged overweight women with brown curly hair, unable to get a joke. Being a medium is the only way they can get attention.

Gurdjieff taught people how to listen to themselves. The problem was, he taught masochists, who listened to themselves and became sadists. He said that people lived their lives in a form of waking sleep. There has been no better summary of the British upper class.

Gurdjieff succeeded in meeting with Stalin, Hitler, Lord Kitchener and Karl Ernst Haushofer and inititiated all of them, although the Hitler initiation is the least documented. These people were all sadistic killers and when the media got hold of Gurdjieff, they made a movie about him, *Meetings with Remarkable Men* (1979). Poor, he used to dive on birds in the market square, paint them in bright colours and sell the painted birds to tourists. This gave him enough money to travel and espouse his 'wisdom' to others.

How could the British media portray Kitchener's teacher as also being Stalin, Hitler and Haushofer's teacher?

Easy. They left it out of history.

Kitchener advanced Freemasonry in the orient and founded three Lodges in India, becoming Grand Master at Punjab, Egypt and Sudan. He also spread Freemasonry in Japan, Australia and New Zealand after the Boer War. The element of homosexual murderous paedophile has not left the Freemasons in these regions. New Zealand is controlled by murderous Freemasons to this day and they control the police and the judiciary, who give them blind cover, often at a great expense to the taxpayer. Here, Freemasonry specialises in providing cover for paedophiles as though it was one of their statutes, and Kitchener even commented about meeting a paedophile in Rotorua.

Kitchener was such a homo he kept storks that would stand between him and any female. They were trained to peck if a woman approached. He was a complete homosexual, a total sadist, an accomplished mass murderer, and a rampant paedophile, often murdering the children afterwards, or sodomising the child while shooting the parents, then killing the child once he was done.

While in India, Kitchener made many trips to Tibet, where he met Karl Haushofer, a Freemason, member of the Berlin Golden Dawn, inventor of Lebensraum and father of Albrecht Haushofer who became the Duke of Kent's lover and the father of his son, the second Duke of Kent. Kent is the old name for Egypt, as is 'kempt' and 'Ken'.

Karl Ernst Haushofer.

Hitler.

Duke of Kent II.

Espavo 3626 - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

While in Tibet, the two experts in Russian mysticism, Kitchener and Gurdjieff, initiated Haushofer into Tibetan mysticism. This included the secret of supermen and the meaning of the swastika. In 1919, Haushofer joined Thule (just a step to the right of Golden Dawn) and introduced the reverse swastika symbolising black magic and destruction. This became the core of Naziism. Haushofer was then made a university professor and helped Hitler write *Mein Kampf*.

Gurdjieff's teaching have been continued through the Gurdjieff Foundations in New York, London, Paris and much of Europe. He founded the **Institute for the Harmonious Development of Man**, but then all eugenics institutions have nice names and nice fronts. Gurdjieff promoted simultaneous focus on what was going on outside and inside (action and response), remembering what one had done (keeping a diary) and living in a constant state of readiness (defence).

When Gurdjieff ran out of money, he became a fix-it man and his admirers would bring him their broken stuff (British Intelligence brought him typewriters with a screw loose and paid huge sums). He would then overcharge for not fixing it (or tightening up the screw). Gurdjieff was a charismatic without skills, a control freak, and adept at diverting attention and then claiming any benefits. As stupid as the world was at that time, this socially annoying trick made him famous. No doubt he bonked his students and any bad sex was blamed on "You've had enough. I'm coming. You're leaving. God has told me to stop."

Followers regarded him as charismatic. Critics asserted he was another charlatan with a large ego in constant need of glorification. He did suggest that people should always be ready, and this concept was used by Kitchener, Stalin and Hitler to create war-ready states over decades.

Gurdjieff disregarded morality, saying it varied from culture to culture, which his warring students interpreted as between cultures. His teachings attached almost no value to almost everything and everything happens by accident. Man is the result of external effects and is a transmitting station of forces. Man only differs from animals by being more complex and common man has no will.' Gurdjieff was the perfect spiritual teacher of anyone who wanted to go to war. As a result, Kitchener, Stalin and Hitler stuck to his occult teaching like shit to a blanket.

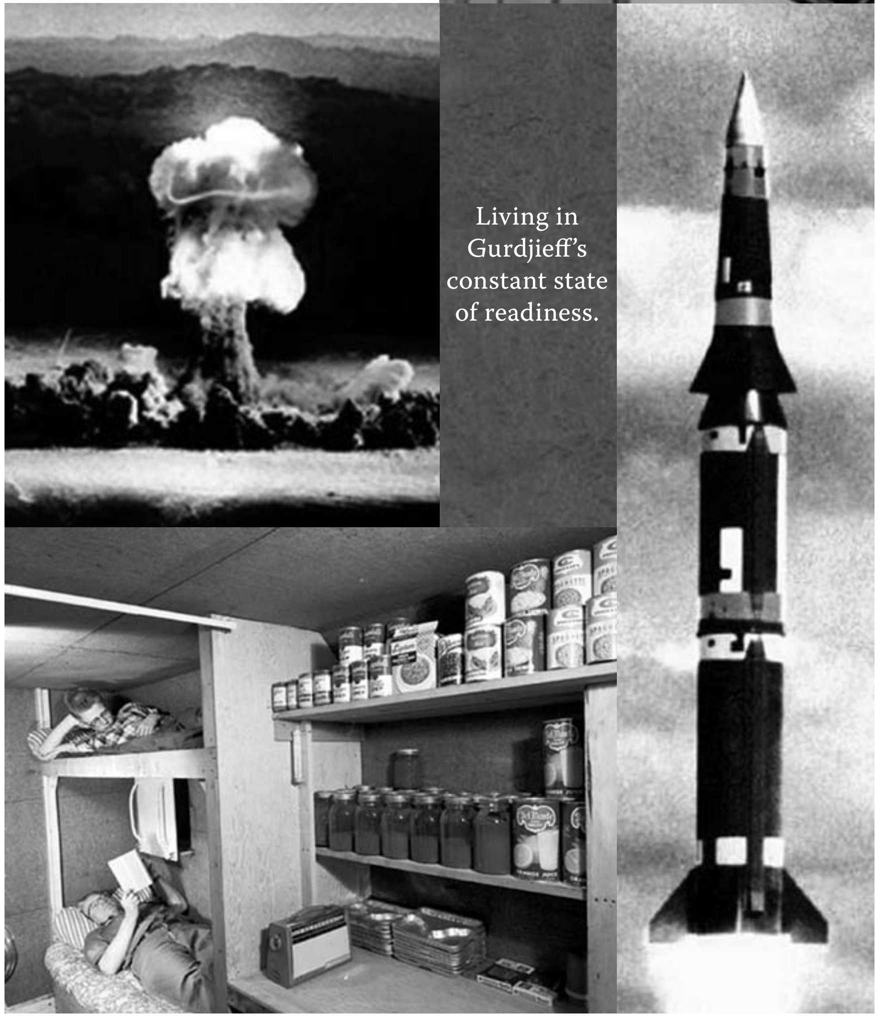

Living in Gurdjieff's constant state of readiness.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Gurdjieff had a strong influence on Timothy "Turn on, tune in, drop out" Leary, who colluded with the CIA and was a major protagonist of the Nazi-instigated New Age movement which helped a generation of Westerners take a generation to find out they were being made useless.

Leary was a New Age occultist, as well as former husband to Uma Thurman's mother and godfather to Uma Thurman (*Pulp Fiction*, *Kill Bill 1*, *Kill Bill 2*) and Winona Ryder (*The Age of Innocence*, *Reality Bites*, *The Crucible*, *Celebrity*).

The world would be a different place without Gurdjieff's influence and without his pupils – Kitchener (& Baden-Powell), Stalin, Hitler, Haushofer and the Dukes of Kent. Gurdjieff's most famous pupils were, by and large, homosexual occult mass murderers.

That Gurdjieff is considered a mystic puts the war-backed media in its place. The results of his work were the consummate evil of the late 19th and all of the 20th centuries. At best he achieved nothing. At worst, he trained warmongers to be ever more vicious warmongers.

G. I. Gurdjieff taught evil how to be evil and handed out licences. Close down the Institute for the Harmonious Development of Man. They are a eugenics society. Gudjieff was what we call today – an uberwanker.

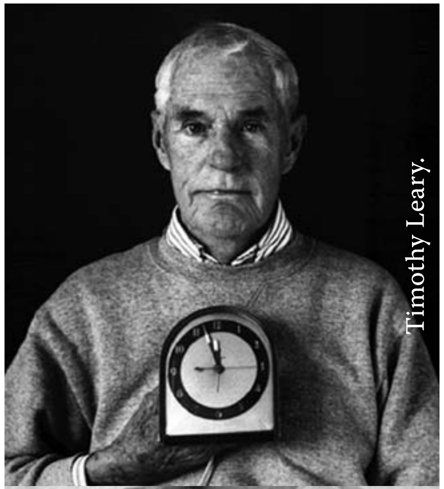

Timothy Leary.

Uma Thurman.

Winona Ryder.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Ma

Martinist Freemasonry

St Martin was a pagan who became a knight and then a bishop. He was the saint of travellers, the poor and thieves. The six degrees of Martinist initiation go from Associate to Mystic/Initiate, Superior, Philosopher, Unknown Philosopher, then Free Initiator.

Martinist Freemasonry teachings include Christian Mysticism, Theosophy, the Kabbalah and Hermeticism. It inspired classical Theosophy and the works of Madame Blavatsky and many of the better-known Mason and Rosicrucians in England, Europe and America.

Martinist Freemasonry was occult based and provided a link, rapport and comradeship across countries and political ideologies so that the Martinist Freemason Joseph Stalin could feel completely at home talking to the Druid and Freemason Winston Churchill and the Jew and Freemason President Roosevelt, and the occultist and fellow British agent Adolf Hitler.

The Martinist Order dates itself back to 316 AD (around the time of Constantine) and was recreated in Paris in 1888. The Grand Master was Papus (Gerard Encausse) until his death in 1916.

Martinist succession relies on being informally touched, thus transmitting the mantle from person to person. ("You're he.") Whenever there was a break in the link, the two next highest initiates would touch each other to consolidate the succession. With several splits in the order, Henri-Charles Dupont became the Grand Master from 1944 until he closed his order down on 14 December 1958. During WWII the Martinist Order was stronger in Paris than anywhere else in the world, and Martinist Freemasons were double agents throughout WWII.

The Traditional Martinist Order (TMO) is a mystical Rosicrucian order. The current worldwide Grand Master (from 12 April 1990) is Christian Bernard, based in Paris. He is not to be confused with the pioneering open heart surgeon Christian Barnard (also a French Freemason) whose son committed suicide. However, very often Freemason fathers neglect their children and suicide is one of the results.

Occult Freemasonry takes it members out of normal culture and places them in the realm of supermen. And what did those who studied the Tibetan 'supermen' create? – Naziism. Most often in history, grand titles are the titles uberwankers give to themselves, having the support of other admiring wankers and wannabe uberwankers.

Freemasons often say they do good in the community but they neglect to admit that they created WWI and WWII, trained Hitler, Stalin and Churchill, King Edward VII, King George V, King Edward VIII, King George VI, Lord Kitchener and Baden-Powell – all of them confused in their values, many of them mass killers, homosexual, bisexual and paedophiles.

Just imagine a world without these people. There could have been less forced emigration, genocide, One World Order social policy, One World Order Military Industrial Complex, CIA-controlled Christianity, KGB-controlled Islam, Israel-controlled Western governments through paedophilia . . . and no lesbian prime ministers taking a month's holiday for international fisting junkets (PM Helen Clark, KGB) . . . Oh, and no Cold War. This is what the Freemasons call "doing good in the world".

Just like Gurdjieff said, "Morality differs between cultures". Freemasonry is a cross-cultural organisation that ensures there is no morality in any culture. The rescuers are now the mouthpiece of the assassins. Their saying is now "Morality is for the masses".

Papus and the Tsar

Papus (Gerard Encausse) was a Spanish-born French physician and hypnotist who popularised occultism. In 1893 he was consecrated as a Bishop of the French Gnostic Church. Two years later he was in the top three and tried to revive the Cathar religion. During this period he briefly studied Theosophy under Madame Blavatsky, then joined the Golden Dawn in Paris. In 1888 he joined the Kabbalistic Order of the Rosicrucians.

Gerard Encausse drew on the Jewish Kabbalistic scriptures and wrote of the Jewish financial and media plans to take over the world. Some wrote this off as a hoax, but it appears to have happened in abundance, so much so that it is now the world we live in, and it is difficult to see otherwise.

Despite his heavy involvement in the occult, Gerard Encausse studied medicine at the University of Paris. He submitted a thesis on Philosophical Anatomy and got his Doctorate in Medicine in 1894 (Christ!), then opened a clinic in Rue Rodin, which was successful (stupid French). With this utterly crap medical degree (leeches and more leeches) but plenty of occult training (if I fail you will die, which isn't so bad), he visited Russia and served Tsar Nicholas II and his wife Alexandra as both doctor and occultist. Dr Gerard Encausse was unable to help their son Tsarevich Alexei with his haemophilia, but Rasputin could.

The Russians were even bigger suckers than the French and even relied on the occult when deciding government. This is not dissimilar to

Britian's Prime Minister Tony Blair who uses astrology to make decisions. His involvement in the paedophilia and murder of 16 Scottish children allowed the FBI to bribe Britain into the Iraq war (2003–08^{+}) and Blair became known as "the Dunblane paedophile". In December 2007 it emerged that Blair was involved in Jonathan Hunt's paedophile circle and the New Zealand and British governments exchanged mutual cover.

When Dr Gerard Encausse conjured up the spirit of Alexander III he said the Tsar would survive as long as he was alive and would then meet his downfall at the hands of revolutionaries. This wasn't too hard to predict given his connections.

> Fellow Martinist Lord Kitchener died at 8 pm, 5 June 1916.
>
> Soon after, Papus/Gerard Encausse (51) contracted tuberculosis from administered bacillus while working in a French Army medical corp hosptial and died 141 days later on 25 October 1916.
>
> 65 days later Rasputin was murdered on 29 December 1916 with a bullet to the forehead when swimming for the banks of the river Neva, having already been poisoned and shot twice.
>
> 141 days after Papus died, Tsar Nicholas II was removed from the throne (15 March 1917) and disappeared to Yekaterinberg. He was presumed executed 488 days later at 2.33 am on 17 July 1918, exactly a year after the Germans ruling the British throne had renounced their German names and titles.

Only two bodies from the Russian Royal Family were found; the 13-year-old haemophiliac Alexei, and one of his sisters. Anastasia survived and claimed to be Anastasia. Prince Philip went to great lengths to discredit her using his uncle, the bisexual paedophile Lord Louis Mountbatten as his mouthpiece and naming Anastasia as 'Anna Anderson'. Prince Philip had a lot to lose, like the Tsar's inheritance and yet another European monarchy to destroy . . . again. Ho, hum, the labours of history.

Mountbatten had engineered his nephew Prince Philip as husband of Queen Elizabeth II, despite his foreknowledge that this would make the Queen of England the most cuckolded woman in Europe. Prince Philip had plenty of training and grew up amongst Europe's largest porn collection, second only to the Vatican. Elizabeth also had her training. By the age of 18, she was the least educated woman in Europe, having completed 7½ hours each week up to the age of 10, and 10 hours each week up to the age of 18. Despite this, the two of them managed to rule the world with their image baked onto biscuit tins.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Gurdjieff.

Gurdjieff.

Stalin (Koba).

Stalin (Koba).

Hitler.

Hitler.

Bibliography

(Most recent publications listed first)

Books

Dennis Stocks & Barron Barnett Lodge, ***FREEMASONRY AND THE RIPPER***, Kersting, 2006.

Robert Service, ***STALIN: A Biography***, March 2005.

Patricia Cornwell, ***PORTRAIT OF A KILLER: JACK THE RIPPER – CASE CLOSED***, G. P. Putnam's Sons, 2002.

William B. Breuer, ***FEUDING ALLIES: The Private Wars of the High Command***, Barnes & Noble, 1995.

Alan Moore and Eddie Campbell, ***FROM HELL***: Volumes 1–8, Northampton, Montana, Kitchen Sink Press, March 1991–July 1995.

Martin Short, ***INSIDE THE BROTHERHOOD, Explosive Secrets of the Freemasons***, HarperCollins Publishers Limited, 1995; ***INSIDE THE BROTHERHOOD, Further Secrets Of The Freemasons***, HarperCollins, Grafton, 1989; ***A FIRM WITHIN A FIRM: Freemasonry and Police Corruption***.

Roland Perry, ***THE FIFTH MAN***, Pan Books, London, 1994.

Nicholas Davies, ***QUEEN ELIZABETH II, A Woman Who Is Not Amused***, Birch Lane Press, New York, 1994.

Dawn B. Sova, PhD, ***ENCYCLOPEDIA OF MISTRESSES***, Longmeadow Press, 1993.

Melvyn Fairclough, ***THE RIPPER AND THE ROYALS***, Duckworth, London, 1991.

Tim Jeal, ***THE BOY-MAN, The Life of Lord Baden-Powell***, William Morrow and Company, New York, 1990.

Fred L. Pick and G. Norman Knight, ***THE POCKET HISTORY OF FREEMASONRY***, Seventh Edition, London; Frederick Muller, 1983.

Ellic Howe, ***THE BLACK GAME***, pub. Joseph, London, 1982; ***FRINGE MASONRY IN ENGLAND***, Ars Quatuor Coronatorum, Volume 85, 1972.

Peter Vansittart, ***VOICES FROM THE GREAT WAR***, Pimlico, 2003; first published by Johnathan Cape in 1981.

Julian Symons, ***THE SIEGE OF SIDNEY STREET***, London, 1978, taken from ***GREAT CASES OF SCOTLAND YARD, Volume Two***.

Anthony Cave Brown, ***BODYGUARD OF LIES***, Harper & Row, NY, 1975.

Richard Whittington-Egan, ***A CASEBOOK ON JACK THE RIPPER***, Wildy & Sons, Ltd, 1975.

Daniel Farson, ***LIMEHOUSE DAYS***, pub. Michael Joseph, London, 1972; ***JACK THE RIPPER***, London: History Book Club, 1973, previously 1972.

W. Averell Harriman and Elie Abel, ***SPECIAL ENVOY to Churchill and Stalin, 1941–1946***, Hutchinson & Co Ltd, London, 1976. Harriman served as a member of the Council on Foreign Relations and was initiated into the Skull and Bones Society, along with his friend Prescott Bush.

John Barron, ***KGB, The Secret Work of the Soviet Secret Agents***, Hodder and Stoughton, Great Britain, 1974.

W. B. Sutch, ***TAKEOVER NEW ZEALAND***, A. H. & A. W. Reed, 1972.

Baroness Christabel Mary Melville Macnaghten Aberconway McLaren, ***A WISER WOMAN? A Book of Memories***, Hutchinson, London, 1966.

William Guy Carr, R.D., Commander R.C.N., ***PAWNS IN THE GAME***, USA, 1958, 1959, 1960, 1961, 1962, 1978, etc.

Leon Trotski, ***STALIN, An Appraisal of the Man and his Influence***, ed. and translated by Charles Malamuth, Hollis and Carter Ltd, London, 1947.

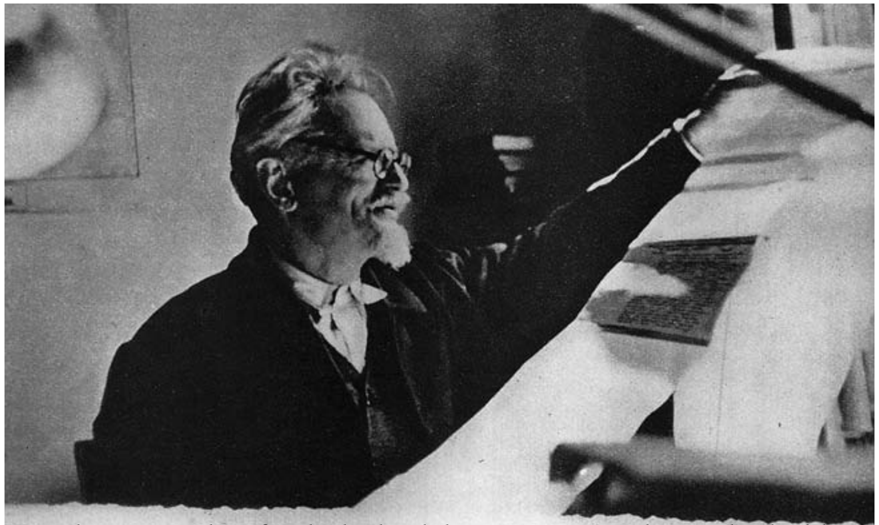

Trotsky expected to finish the book by August 1940, but Stalin had him assassinated the same month to prevent completion – two attempts. The manuscript was pasted end to end on the wall, much of it splattered with blood.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Ernst Carl, ***ONE AGAINST ENGLAND***, Jarrolds, London Ltd, 1935.

Adolf Hitler, ***MEIN KAMPF*** (*My Struggle*), written in 1925, Hurst & Blackett Ltd, London, 1933.

Fritz Joubert Duquesne, ***THE MAN WHO KILLED KITCHENER: The Life of Fritz Joubert Duquesne***, Williams Faro Inc, New York, 1932. This was also published under the alias Clement Wood.

Francis Evelyn 'Daisy Warwick' Maynard, ***LIFE'S EBB AND FLOW***, London, 1929.

Sir Melville Macnaghten, ***DAYS OF MY YEARS***, Longmans & Green, London, 1914.

Werner Sombart, ***THE JEWS AND MODERN CAPITALISM***, T. Fisherunwin, London, 1913, also 1916, 1951, 1962, 1967.

Newspapers, Magazines and Articles . . .

NEW ZEALAND HERALD, Files show US use of Nazi spies, AP, Reuters, 8 June 2006.

THE ROYALIST magazine website, Joanne Leyland, 'Sophie Takes Over The Reins From Philip', 21 June 2006.

THE WIND, New Zealand Russian Monthly, Issue 81, Reuben Black, *History*, June 2003, p. 3.

TROT: Toll Rides (Off-Road) Trust, Spring 2006.

THE GREAT WAR – I WAS THERE!, British magazine.

Films Films Films

20TH CENTURY NEWSREELS, PART 1, It Speaks for itself, British Movietone News. The Library of 20th Century Newsreels, British Movietonews Limited, selected scenes from early silent newsreels, Classic Pictures Entertainment.

THE SIEGE OF SIDNEY STREET, 1960.

THE MAN WHO KNEW TOO MUCH, Alfred Hitchcock, 1934.

World Wide Web . . .

BADEN-POWELL website.

CHARTWELL TRUST, Julian Ralph, *New York Herald*, circa 1990.

COUSINCOUPLES.com.

FINANCIAL WIZARDS & WEALTHY CULTS: The Rothschild Bloodline, May 2005.

JACK THE RIPPER CASEBOOK: www. casebook.org.

MODERN HISTORY SOURCEBOOK, The Nazi-Soviet Non-Aggression Pact, The Molotov-Ribbentrop Pact, 1939.

STICHILL MILLENNIUM PROJECT.

THE HISTORY OF ESPIONAGE, Angelfire website.

THE CHURCHILL CENTRE website.

WIKIPEDIA.

Reference & Cross-checks . . .

REFERENCE ATLAS OF THE WORLD, 2003.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

THE CAMBRIDGE BIOGRAPHICAL ENCYCLOPEDIA.

OXFORD ENGLISH REFERENCE DICTIONARY.

PEARS CYCLOPAEDIA, 86th Edition, Anniversary Edition, 1897–1977, Pelham Books, 1977.

ENCYCLOPAEDIA BRITANNICA, 15th Edition, Volume 10.

UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN DICTIONARY OF MIDDLE ENGLISH.

Lord Kitchener and Stalin were both trained by Gurdjieff as Martinist Freemasons. Stalin went on to rule a third of the world and Kitchener colonised the world through his special brand of Freemasonry – incestuous paedophilia and sadistic ORDER OUT OF CHAOS.

Britain was the training ground for immigrant revolutionaries to destroy their own foreign countries. This saved the colonising British army from doing it.

Misinformation was always on the breakfast menu for the City of London and Metropolitan Police who regularly sabotaged each other's interrogations giving foreign terrorists any and every advantage.

Winston Churchill was King Edward VII's son. Once his father died, Winston needed to prove himself to his brother, the new King George V, so the 1911 Sidney Street Siege was held as a canned meat operation – a training exercise between Churchill and his protégé Stalin, who went on to decimate Russia.

Protecting the establishment by file theft is one of the main functions of a knight. A crime is committed, the case is botched and the files are stolen. Ipso facto, the stitch-up is all stitched up and official history contains generations of the most unbelieveable claptrap where nothing fits and most lose interest. This is the desired goal of establishment historians – most of whom are embedded into the occult. Jack the Ripper was an inside job that had the full support of occultist Freemasons and the British Royal Family.

Two of the most decorated men in British history were paedophiles who competed to commit the most heinous crimes in the British colonies. Understanding Queen Victoria and her children's illegitimacy, they operated with complete immunity, attained hero status, and medals were theirs for the asking.

ISBN 978-0-473-12073-3

Index

Symbols

'1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 8, 9, 11 and 13' 140
7th Duke of Marlborough 30
7th Viscount of Ranelagh, Thomas Heron Jones 17
'8 pm' translates as "back to zero" 134
9 metres 79–80, 86
9th Duke of Marlborough 10
18 years remains the standard delay from paedophilia/murder to elevation 182
44 Gold Street 69, 76, 77
59 Grove Street, Commercial Road, in London's East End 55–58, 63–67
59 Sidney Street 77
98 Sidney Street 80, 100
99.8% of all paedophilia occurring only when biological father absent 181
100 Sidney Street 67, 77–81, 84–85, 88, 90–91, 94–95, 99, 101–102, 105, 112, 114
100/102, 102/104 Sidney Street 105
102 Sidney Street 80, 100–01, 105
104 Sidney Street 77, 98–99, 101–02, 105, 114
'110' translates "from here mastery begins" 116
£167 reward 76, 112
900 metres 83
1917 agenda-driven Russian Revolution 48, 115, 118
1919 Versailles Peace Conference 47

A

'Affective' – the front 140
"anti-Semitism" ecclesiastical slang 130
Aaron Kosminiski 151
Abiff, Hiram 137
Abwehr 148
acting debut as a corpse 26
addicted to power and manipulating world events 119
Admiralty promotions 171
admiring wankers & wannabe uberwankers 199
Affective Golden Dawn Outer Circle 142
agents of war 34
Alabama 132
alcoholic brooding manic-depressive 90
Alexander III 201
Alexandropol, now Gyumri, Armenia 189
Algernon Bertram Freeman-Mitford, 1st Baron Redesdale 17, 34
all the Royal Families of Europe 34
a lot of pulling going on 174
American occupation of New Zealand 121
American royalty 35
Amin, Idi 'Big Daddy' 119–20
Anarchist Club 49, 51–57, 65, 70, 73
Anarchists 45, 50–51, 59–63, 72–73, 83–95, 99–102, 105, 108–10, 113–14
anarchy 52
Anastasia as 'Anna Anderson' 201
Andrew Lloyd Webber's theatre company as a tea boy 41
Anglican reverend/s 38, 173
Archangel 164
Ardent Television production company 41
Army Intelligence view war as the pinnacle of their achievement 147
arrested seven times 46
arse the size of a wheelbarrow 19
Ashanti expedition on West Africa's Gold Coast (later Ghana) 148, 153, 185
Astor, Nancy, Viscountess, MP and peerage pimp, ran the Glass Club 71–72
Astor, Waldorf, Conservative MP for Plymouth 72
atmosphere of terror 136
automatic pistols (47) 52
average speed of London traffic 48

B

Bathe, Hugo de 24
Be Prepared/to Deny 173, 179, 189
'Blinker' Hall 160–63
breeding concubines 18
Baden 44
Baden-Powell, Baron Lord Robert Stephenson Smyth Baden-Powell of Gilwell 128, 148, performed intelligence work under Commander-in-Chief Kitchener 157, 153–59, 173–87, Master of Company, top secular position in England 182, double murder-sodomy rape 154, 182

to Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Baird, George Alexander/Mr Abington/ The Squire 22–23
balalaika 53–54, 73
Balfour, Arthur, Prime Minister 109–11
Bang-bang-bang 61
bankers de Rothschild 21
bankrupt 21–22
banks and politics 192
Barons de Rothschild 12
Baroness Christabel Mary Melville Macnaghten Aberconway McLaren 128
Battle of Jutland 161, 164, 171
Battle of Stepney 45
beat her black and blue 23
Bedgebury Forest 42
befuddled lepidopterist 185
befuddlement of wanton errors 152
Beitzen, Kapitänleutnant Curt 161–62
Belgravia 16
Belmont, August, Snr. 29
Bennett, William 168
Beresford, Charles, Lord 3, 12
Bernard, Christian 199
Bernhardt, Sarah/Henriette Rosine Bernard Divine Sarah/Sarah Barnum 3, 5, 22, 25
Bessarabians 50–51
Betar, Jewish Intelligence agency within Bolshevik & Tsarist Intelligence 45, 52, 61, 76, 83, 101, 109, 115–16
big-as-an-ox Charely Choat 62
biggest police/military cock-up in Britain's history 109
biological, financial and moral subset of the Rothschild International bankers 34
Birsay 161, 166–67
Bishopsgate City of London Police Station 60
Bismarck 44
Black Sea 110
Blackwood, Algernon 142
Blair, Tony, aka Dunblane paedophile 201
Blavatsky, Madame/Helena Petrovna Blavatsky's Theosophy 193, 199–200
Blenheim Palace 10
Blessed are the war makers. We control the infinite one everywhere forever 138
Blessed are the war makers. We control the future 138
blissful sexual Pollyanna ignorance 17
Bloody Sunday 131–33
blueprints of their Mirage Fighter were secretly swished 52
Bluestein, Mrs 80, 100
Blunt, Anthony 7, 26, 32, 38
boarding-house buggery 129
Boer War 155, 159, 188
Bolshevik Revolution 45, 58, 116, 137, 147, 189
bosom of Venus 152
Bower, J. W. Nott, Commissioner of CoLP 74
Boy Scouts, Scouting for Boys, 154–59, 173–76 'complicit child-molesting and open child-trafficking movement between towns and countries' 178–85
brainpan 106
brandy and Champagne 90
Brass 101
Breasts are still the greatest influence on revolutions & judiciary to this day 76
Britain's Golden Dawn & Germany's Thule 193
British Admiralty hit 163
British counter-espionage of Russian Revolution 76
British Courts, liar's paradise for centuries 151
British Intelligence 29, 44
British military intell. since Queen Victoria energised towards One-World Govt. 47
British military Psych-Ops war school 47
British monarchy support anarchy 52
British Royal Family are a subset of the Rothschild family 37
British Sentries 167
British trained and protected 118
broom-handled Mauser' (1896) 83
brothel 130
brothel fracas 23
Brough of Birsay 161
Brown, John 13
Browning automatic 56, 60
Browning calibre-9 mm long pistols 84
bunkum 117
burning British flag & stomping over it 121
Buross Street 65, 68–70, 77
bus ticket out of London 110
Bush, George W. 120

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

C

Carter, Chris, Minister of Conservation, married homosexual 122
'cousins' 116
cabinet ministers sign their resignations before taking office 120
cabinet paedophiles 120
Campbell, Mrs Patrick/Beatrice 'Stella' Tanner 32
Camilla Parker-Bowles 29, 32–33
canned meat operation 114
cannon-fodder 121
Canon Sanderson of Chichester 127
captured then set free by Brit. courts 113
Carl, Ernst 162–63, 166, 170
Carley rafts 166
carriage riding 42
carrot and donkey 30
Cartwright, Governor-General Dame Silvia New Zealand's most corrupt judge 123
Cassino is a case in point 121
casual prostitution to make ends meet 130
cat burglars 147
Catharine Eddowes/'Mary Ann Kelly' 135, 138–41, 146–47
Cathar religion 200
Cavour 44
celebrated and honoured mass-murdering sadistic paedophile 170
central banking system 37
Central Committee Russian Communist Party 118
CFR, Royal Institute of International Affairs (RIIA) aka Chatham House, Tavistock are all controlled by Round Table 47
Chamberlain, Neville 35
Chapman, Annie/aka 'Dark Annie' 141
Chapman, Eddie 148
change the clocks 116
charismatic without skills 196
Charley Martin's Mansions 79
charlatan with a large ego 196
Charterhouse 184
Cheka 57, 59, 65, 115, 118
chemise (petticoat) off a girl 117
Chemist Cohen 84
Chief Fireman Davis 99, 106
Chief of the Gestapo in Paris 191
Chief Scout (for boys) 154, 159
child-sex abuse and incest 8, 22, 34, 38
child of war 31, 35
child prostitution 176
Chinese whisper of calculated misleads 110
Chris Carter the unofficial Minister of Internal Affairs 123
Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer 1–4, 9–11, 14, 17, 28–37, 45–47, 53, 58, 70–73, 76, 83, 89–90, 94–101, 106–19, 126, 158, 171
Churchill and his half-brother King George V 114
Churchill was at least ¾ Jew 45
Churchill was the most devious cigar-smoking fat-shit 71
Church moved from Friday to Sunday 44
CIA-controlled Christianity 200
City of London Police (CoLP) 60, 66, 72–75, 80–84, 92, 108–09, 113, 136, 149, 152
claim history & the future as their own 127
Clarence, Duke of 145–46
Clark, Helen, trained in Tavistock St Petersburg, communist goal is destruction of family, promotion of homosexuals & paedophiles, filmed having sex with female CIA pillow talker at Andersen's Cottage/Abe Lincoln's Cottage/near White House, 3/4 January 2003 121–25 lesbian PM taking month's holiday for international fisting junkets 200 KGB operative 'ie' (pron. 'e') 121
Clements, Mr/Mrs 103
Clinton, Bill 35
Cohen 84–90, 94
Cohen and his wife Rebecca 84
Cold War 200
collapsed floor by floor from top down, not unlike the Twin Towers 105
collection of psycho-military training 47
Colonel Blimps of the British Army 13
commission oil portraits & offer complicit cover for each other 155
communicated via French 54
Communism was in motion with British Freemasonry support 53
communist-created United Nations 180

Companion of the Order of the Bath 129
competitions to commit the most heinous crimes 157
complete homo, total sadist, accomplished mass murderer, rampant paedophile 195
complicit silence 147
concubines 18, 29, 34, 38
confess in order to convict 134
conflicting affidavits 113
Conqueror of Sudan 158
Constable Corrington 88
Constable Ernie Woodhams 60–62, 108–09
Constable Harris 84, 88–96, 105, 108
Constable John Holmes 70
Constable Strongman 60, 62
Constable Walter Charles Choat 62, 108, 115
Constance Edwina ‘Shelagh’ Cornwallis-West 7, 26
Constantine 199
consummate evil of late 19th & 20th centuries 198
contract killer 118
Cornwallis-West, Colonel Frederick William 6–8
Cornwallis-West, George Frederick Myddleton 7–10, 14, 32, 35
Cornwallis-West, Mary ‘Patsy’ née Fitzpatrick Mrs George Cornwallis-West, (Churchill’s mother) 3–10, 21, 26, 34
Cornwallis-West, Mary Theresa Olivia ‘Daisy’ 3–10, 26, 34–35
cottage on grounds of psychiatric hospital 40
Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) 47
courtesan 8, 15, 21–22, 25
Covent Garden 84
covered from head to toe like an Islamic woman 77
cover marriage to a psychiatrically challenged lesbian 159
Coward’s, Noel, career 26
create war-ready states over decades 196
credited my most studious thoughts with the invention of the vacuum 128
cricket game for bisexuals, extension of Brit. public schools fag system, Freemasonry, paedophilia amongst goat mounters 150
criminal record is a prerequisite 148
crime haven, criminal’s paradise, training ground for dissidents 129
crossover paedophile, married for cover 186
Crowley, Aleister, Ordo Templi Orientis 193–94
Cubitt, Roland Calvert 28
cuckolders/ing, wife cheaters and swingers 11, 34
cuckoo clocks 53
curtains 61, 84–85, 101
Cutler Street 60

D

‘Daisy’ Princess of Pless 26
Dalston, north-east London 57
Daniel Farson 130, 147, 150, 152
daring sexual escapades 13
dates as used by the power-elite 140
Davis, Peter, compulsive child-sex abuser whom Helen Clark placed under house arrest (her husband) 122
Deacon, Gladys Marie 10
dealt with the dead and fiddled with their files 142
Dean of Jersey, Rector of St Saviours, aka ‘The Dirty Dean’ ’ 15
death from starvation was commonplace 130
dedicated cuckolder 31
delving into royal cock/Anthony Blunt 38
demonstration in Trafalgar Square 131
Derby, Lord 20
Destroy all national boundaries & patriotism 49
Destroy all sovereignties, monarchies and cultures 49
Destroyers *Unity* and *Victor* 165
Devonshire, Duke of 12
Dissolve all traditional family structures 49
Doctorate of Medicine in Philosophical Anatomy/doctor & occultist 200
double agent PM or President 121
double agents 193, 199
double murder-sodomy rape 176
Dr Bernstein 64
Dr Elizabeth S. 190
Dr Frederick Gordon Brown, CoLP Surgeon 146
Dr Gerard Encausse 200–01
Dr John James Scanlon 64, 66
Dr Johnstone 87–88, 108
Dr Thomas Stowell’s files destroyed 146
Dr Westcott, Freemason Coroner 142
Dr William Robert Woodman 142
Dr William Wynn Westcott 142
Dreyse 32-calibre pistol 48, 53, 60, 67, 83, 85
Druid/Freemason Winston Churchill 199
Druitt 150–51
Druitt, Anne 150
Druitt, Captain Edward 151
Druitt, M. J. (Montague John Druitt) 150
Druitt, Robert, surgeon, Conservative, strong Churchman, Justice of the Peace, governor of a grammar school, therefore ‘respectable’ 150–51
Druitt, William, lawyer 151
Duck Pond in Auckland Domain 121
dumb at his job 129
dump (defecate) on a Bible 143
Dupont, Henri-Charles became Grand Master 199
Duquesne, Fritz Joubert 163, 166, 170

E

‘Effective’ – the cause 140
eager paedophile minders in Stadcona Gym, Halifax 175
Eataple 170
economic Stone Age if you challenge 183
Edward, Prince of Wales/‘Bertie’/Edward VII 1–2, 6–15, 18–22–38, 150
Edwards, Brian, not first or last paedophile victim, been many, caught with 12-year-old schoolgirl in 1981 at 21 Salamanca Rd, Kelburn, Wellington 122
Egypt, as is ‘kempt’ and ‘Ken’ 195
Eichmann, Adolf 124
eight overlapping mistresses 14
Einstein, Albert incest with first cousin Elsa 78
Etan, Rafi 124
element of homosexual murderous paedophile has not left Freemasons 195
Emanuel, Francis Charles Augustus Albert 1
English Freemasonry 193
English Navy took over drug trade from Spanish Navy 47
Eire in Ireland 116
eugenics society, have nice names and nice fronts 189, 192, 196–98
Europe’s largest porn collection, second only to the Vatican 201
Evan’s Cave of Harmony 84
Evening News rushed out 89
everything happens by accident 197
Exchange Buildings 59, 60–62, 77, 115
exiled twice to Siberia 46
expensive jewellery 30
Exported paedophilia, precursor to taking over countries, compromised leaders 178
expropriation, jewellery heist 49–50, 58, 118

F

Farr, Florence 142
‘Fitz’ 7
‘fluke-only’ 87
‘Freemasonry-membership-for-cover’ 151
“fancy man” 50
Fabian Socialism 47
fag system – bum buddies & secret keepers for life 129
fake the espionage 148
Family Court 180, 185
family of liars 151
Felfe, Heinz, Soviet spy, ex-Nazi 124
female incest victims 22
feminists promote paedophiles, suits their agenda 123
‘fern cheer’ 100
Fiction: propaganda and mystery graffitti-ed onto generations of psyches with error-ridden synapses 144
Fifth Congress of the Russian Social Democratic and Labour Party 51
Files: as safe as Bank of England, purged of essential information, burnt during WWII blitzes 144–46
file theft 144, 148
fire 61, 64, 79, 85–102, 105–06, 112, 117
firemen 99–100, 105–06, 109, 112
First Sea Lord 171, 185
Fitzpatrick, Edwina Virginia Joanna 6
Fitzpatrick, Frederick, Reverend 6

Espavo Soco - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

FitzRoyal 30
flamboyantly homosexual sodomising double-murderer 148
Fleishman, Mr/Mrs 80–81
Flynn, Mickey/Prince Philip's head groom 42–43
Force-9 gale 165
Forces of Order – military, police, Catholic Church, government, big business, established education system 124
forensics 134
Fraser, Peter 121
Fred and Gladys 33
Fred Karno's army song 98
Fred Wales 33
Freemasons with Jewish traditions, 142; front as a Christian organisation, 143; role play over and over again, 147; commissioned hit 160
order out of chaos 161
Freemasonry 130, 135–51, 193–95, 199–200
Freemasonry in Japan, Australia & NZ 195
Freemasonry, cross-cultural organisation ensures no morality in any culture 200
Freemasons 46–47, 79, 117, 161–64, 180, 193–95, 199–200
Freemasons' agenda 138
Freemasons and British royals work hand in hand 38
Freemasons, war, what they call "doing good in the world" 200
Freemasons' golden mile 79
Freemasons in Germany 137
Freemasons invented democracy in 1790s, communism in 1848,
non-slavery capitalism in 1865 and totalitarianism in 1914 137
Freemasons sexually abuse a third of their daughters and grandchildren 180
Freemasons whose business is making war & altering the physical & psychological boundaries of nations 46
French Sûreté 74
Freud Hilton, Tavistock Institute for Human Relations 46–49, 72, 113–22
Frogmore, Windsor Park 39
Frunze 47, 121, 190
full-breasted helps in revolutions 57
Fulbright scholarships 125

G

'Great British Empire' 119
gagged informant 102
Gardstein, George (Mr Morin/Mourrewitz, Mr Poolka Milowitz) 56–69, 74–77, 114–15
Garibaldi 44
Garrick Club 68
gays, preference is underaged heterosexual boys whose fathers are removed 180
gazetted 129
genocide 192, 200
genocide of 11,000 Dervishes 157
gentlemen doormats 76
gentlemen of the intelligence world 190
genuine fatigue of Stalin's decision-making 58
George, David Lloyd Prime Minister (1916–22), Chancellor of Exchequer, Minister of Munitions, Secretary for War, 1st Earl of Dwfor 171–72
George V 2, 4, 32, 146, 200
German Hanover TWET
(Tactical Exercise Without Troops) 40
Germany 162, 176–78, 188
Gershon, Betty, William Sokoloff's first cousin & lover 77–78, 81, 101, 110–12
Gestapo 191
getting drunk for two weeks 118
Ghana, West Africa 148
giant leap of faithlessness 139
Girl Guides, 154, practised kissing each other then became paedophile minders 173–74, 180–81
Girl Guides taught lesbian method of birth control – practise sex with girls 181
giving Hitler British state secrets 176
goal of WWII, replace Jesus with Hitler 141
goat mounters, with goats being adult kids 180
God has told me to stop 196
Godwinson, Harold, last crowned Anglo-Saxon King of England 40
Golden Dawn Effective coven/language 116, 134, 138–43, 193–96, 200
gold watch 108
Gordon, Fanny 66, 69
Gordon, Isaac 65–70, 75, 115
gothic (magic) 117

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

Goulburn Street [sic; Goulston Street] 135, 147
Governor-General of New Zealand 172, 185
graffiti-ed onto psyche, most memorable peacetime murders in history 140
Grand Master at Punjab, Egypt & Sudan 195
Grand Master Mason 37–38
Grand Pooh-Bar 117
Green Beret in support 119
Grove Street 55–58, 63–67, 74
GRU (Soviet Military Intelligence) 76
Guild system 19, 38
guns, ammunition, plans & paperwork 65
Gurdjieff, Georges Ivanovich 189–202

H

HMS *Ariadne* 30
HRH Prince Albert Victor Christian Edward, Duke of Clarence, initial suspect 145
Hall, Admiral Sir William 'Blinker' 160–63
handkerchiefs 102, 106
Hanstein, Alexander 30
Harmonious Development of Man centres, eugenics society 189, 192, 196–98
Harris jewellery store/heist 59–61, 69, 76, 82
Hauk, Minnie 29
Haushofer, Albrecht, Duke of Kent I's lover, father of his son, Duke of Kent II 194–98
Haushofer, Karl Ernst 194–95
Have no faith for we've destroyed religion & faith infinitely, everywhere forever 139
Hawkins Street/98 Sidney Street 79–80, 89
head set on fire 112
Henry VIII 7
Henshall, Ruthie 41
'Here is the information, where is the child?' 170
hermaphrodite lesbian/man-in-a-dress 174
Hermeticism 199
heroin going through Monaco 44
Herzegovina 185
Hesse 44
hiding real cause and effect 47
High-ranking MI-6 officers & resistance men 191
High Jews manipulate their people 143
historians are the least-sexed profession 36, 45, 95
History's Con 126
generations of unbelievable claptrap 144
Hitler, Adolf 35, 45–47, 67, 71–72, 91, 114, 118–19, 122
Hitler, Adolf 'Edmund' 130, 189–202
Hitler bombed these slums during WWII 134,
Hitler gestating for 11 weeks & 1 day 47, 139
Hitler initiation 194
Hitler was at least a quarter Jew 46
HMS *Hampshire* 160, 163–67, 170–71, 185
HMS *Royal Oak* 164
Ho hum, the labours of history 201
Home Guard 164
Home Office 53, 66, 75, 82, 89, 95, 115, 163
Home Secretary Henry Matthews 135
Home Secretary Winston Churchill 83, 89, 106–07, 113, 117
homing pigeons 148–49
homicidial intentions 193
homo-erotic Hitler Youth movement 181
homosexual and heterosexual porn 191
homosexual husband & bisexual PR agent 122
homosexual leanings, public school system 129
honey-trapped 125
Horrendous crimes are always the forerunner to wars 148
Houdini, Harry/Erich Weiss 117
Houndsditch/Robbery 45, 53, 59–79, 87, 92, 107–10, 115, 118, 129, 135, 144, 149, 152
Houndsditch & Sidney St cock-ups 110
House of Commons 72, 109, 119
Hunt, Jonathan, Speaker of House promoted to High Commissioner upon exposure as paedophile by US Customs, mentored homosexual MP Chris Carter 123
husband hunting 29

I

Ich Dien: "I serve Germany" 176
IAI (Israeli Aircraft Industries) 53
I am titled, therefore I am 128
iconic swinger 2, 33
ideologues 193
If it's ultimately about genocide, it will be funded 192

If it is useless, people will flock to it. 192
illegitimate 10, 13, 20, 28–33, 37, 41–43
illegitimate children 7, 11, 34, 38
immigration rules 114
incest 8, 11, 15, 19–22, 34
incestuous paedophilia/relationship 16
India 195
indiarubber soles 135
initiated into Freemasonry as Rudolph H. Spencer 31
insider spy and intelligence training across borders 190
Inspector Thompson 67–69
International bank robberies 50
International Rules for Carriage Driving 42
intimidation, badges 82
introduced sex to GRU and KGB 190
Ireland 162–63, 188
Irish Civil War 47
Irish Home Rule partisans, forerunner to IRA 130
iron girders stuck out of collapsed building like great naked ribs 105
Isle of Man 27
Israel 53, 110–11, 124
Israel-controlled Western Governments through paedophilia 200
Israeli saboteurs 163
It's a Royal Knockout 41
it is difficult to see otherwise 200
Ivan Lebeder 54, 115

J

'Jersey Lillie' 15
Jews 49–52, 54, 58–59, 73, 110, 116; Jews rioted, 131; 'Jews', 'Juise', 'Juwys', 'Juyse', 'Juwes', 'Juwe', 'JUIVES', French for 'Jews', 136; "Juwes" collective term for 'murderers' 137; Jew-minders, 149; Jews will not be blamed for anything from this point on 149
Jack the Ripper/the Whitechapel Murderer/the Leather Apron 2, 47, 50, 67, 115, 127–36, 140–52
Jack the Ripper was a Jew 131
Jacobson, Detective Sergeant Sonny, only Jewish detective in H Division (Met) 80–81, 105, 110
Jamborees at various castle holdings 177
Jeddah 120
Jellicoe, Admiral Sir John (Freemason), Viscount 164, 167, 170–72, 185
Jerome, Clarissa Hall 29
Jerome, Leonard, formerly Leonard Jacobsen 29–30
Jersey 148
Jesse, Arthur 21
Jesus/"Yahu'Shuah";pron.'Yahooshoe' 143
Jewish Anarchists 50
Jewish migrants/Jewish propaganda 131
Jewish Sabbath, Friday night 58–59, 64
Jocelyn, Colonel John Strange 10
John Doe 102–03, 110
Jubilee Street 51, 65, 77
Judge Mr Justice Grantham 115
Jutland 161, 164, 170–71

K

Kabbalah 199
Kabbalistic Order of the Rosicrucians 200
Kaiser 27
Kent, Duke/s of 26, 198
Keppel, Alice 2–5, 27–29, 32
Keppel, Honorable Lieutenant Colonel George 28, 29
Keppel, Sonia Rosemary 4, 5, 27–28, 33, 35
Keppel, Violet 28
Keystone Cops 98
keys to over twenty cities worldwide 177
KGB controlled Islam 200
Khartoum 156–57, 185
Kill all but one of the revolutionaries 49
kindergarten for would-be occultists 143
King's loose box 2, 26
King's Walk/The Temple 150
King Edward VII, Grand Master Mason 1–2, 8–11, 24, 27–30, 34, 37, 42, 70, 83, biological father of Winston Churchill 151–58, 200
King Edward VIII 176, 200
King George III, Mad 146
King George V 2, 4, 32, 146, 200
King George VI 26–27, 32–35, 42, 200
King Solomon's Tomb 117, 137–38
Kitchener, Lord Horatio Herbert, KG, KP, GCB, OM, GCST, GCMG, GCIE, Colonel Commandant Royal Engineers, Colonel of Irish Guards, Secretary of State for War 153–72, 185, 194–201

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Knight Commander of the Bath 154
Knight Commander of Victorian Order 154
Knight Commander of White Military Order of Spain, Commander of Order of Dannebrog 129
Knight of the Garter 71
Knight or lord gives protection and unquestioning trust 144
Knights Templar 137
knowledge of intelligence officers 127
Koller, Pauline 191

L

Langtry Manor/The Red House 20
Lady 'Jennie' Jerome/Jacobsen Churchill, Lady 'Jennie' Jerome Churchill, Lady Randolph 'Jennie' Jerome Churchill 3–4, 9–11, 26, 29–34
Lady Aberconway 147
Lady Edwina Mountbatten 191
Lady Lillie de Bathe 24
Lady Sebright 18
Lambeth, a tough but decent area 66
Langtry, Edward 16, 18, 20, 22
Langtry, Jeanne-Marie 20–21, 24
Langtry, Lillie 3–4, 15–25
large melt-free icecream 175
last day of month King of Jews historically born 139
Laurel Crown 161, 165
Lawrence of Arabia 142
Leading Seaman Charles Rogerson 169
Leading Stoker Alfred Ernest Read 168
League of Extraordinary Gentlemen 142
League of Nations 71
least educated woman in Europe 201
Le Breton, Emilie Charlotte 4, 15
Le Breton, Emilie 15, 17
Le Breton, Peter William Corbet 15–16
Leary, Timothy, "Turn on, tune in, drop out" 198
Lebensraum 195
Lee-Enfields 88–89
Leesma (the Flame) revolutionary group 51, 54, 57
Leman Street Police Station, Whitechapel (H Division of the Met) 66, 79
Lenin, founded revolutionary Bolshevik Party 117–18, 121
Lett, of Lettish revolutionary group 56
Lewes, Captain James Fitzpatrick 26
Lichtenstein 44
Liddel, Mathers, G. Samuel 142
lifeboats 166
like shit to a blanket 197
Lindley Street 64, 77–79, 89, 92, 99
living in a constant state of readiness (defence) 196
Loch Lomond/Loch Ness 27
lock them up and fuck them 190
Long, Constable Alfred 135
longbow 141
Lords and knights steal files 144
Lordship establ. reasonable doubt 179
lost archives, stolen letters, purloined documents, mysterious disappearances of pertinent materials, files purposely destroyed, systematically 'sanitised' or simply 'misplaced' 146
low-ranking SIS personnel 145
lust and fear 139

M

Macnaghten, Melville, Sir/Mac 45, 67–69, 72, 76–78, 81–110, disappeared during WWI 127–30, 135, 146–52, 204
Malatesta, Errico 55
Malcom, Astrid 175
Malcolm, Lieutenant George Ian 24
'mumsy' 110
"Morality differs between cultures", "Morality is for the masses" 200
Mafeking 157
Mahdi's bones exhumed, drank from his skull 157
Manchester, Duchess of, Lady Norrys 4
Mann & Crossman brewery 87, 89, 96
Marlborough, Duke and Duchess of 10
Marlborough set/swinging set 16, 19–20, 30
Martinist Freemasonry 194, 199
Marwick Head 161, 165
Marx: "As goes the family, so goes the country" 122
Mary Ann Kelly 135, 138, 141
Mary Ann Nichols/aka 'Polly' 141
Mary Jane immortalised slang for dope 141

Mary Jane Kelly/Marie Jeanette 134–35, 139–41, 149
Mary of Teck 2, 146
masochists 194
Mason and Rosicrucians 199
mass killers, many of them homosexual, bisexual and paedophiles 200
Master, Hilda 32
Master Mason (Magister Magistrorum) 31
Master of the Mercer's Company/ Master of Companies 154, 175
Master Spy 162
mathematics professor 173
Mauser 48, 53, 59–60, 67, 76, 83, 107
Max 60–63, 69, 75, 115
Mazzini (Mafia) 44
McLaren, Hon. H. D. 127
Meetings with Remarkable Men 194
meet young English girls 53
Mein Kampf 196
Meintzerhagen, Lieutenant Colonel 116
Melbourne, Lord 1
mending arseholes 40
mental health fallback position 191
Mercers 182–84
message was undirectional 192
Metropolitan Police/Met/Scotland Yard keen but none-too-bright 66–74, 78–96, 106–09, 113, 149, 152
MI-5 148, 163
MI-6 52, 163
military training school for spies at Frunze 190
Millais, Everett 17, 18
millionairess 22–24
Mills, Frank 17
Milstein, Luba 55, 63, 74, 112, 115
minds of lost socialite waifs 192
minestrone soup 38
Misinformation always on breakfast menu 113
misnamed 'Family Court' dedicates itself to removal of fathers from families exposing children to paedophiles, not just for the weekend, but full-time 180
mistrial 76, 113
Mitford, David, Lord Baron Redesdale 17
Mitre Square 135, 138
'modern day' sacrifices 139
Molotov-Ribbentrop Pact 178
Monaco 44
Monro, James, Commander of the Secret Department 128–29
Monte Carlo 24
Montt, Efrain Rios 124
monumental cock-up 109
Morris-tube rifles 80–89, 96
Moscow 189
Mossad 76
most breathtaking crimes were disclosed in the bulk of the files 145
most powerful elements of our society have always been sexually deviant 144
most powerful non-military position in Britain outside religion, the monarchy and outright wealth 183
most powerful secular position in Great Britain – 'Master of Companies' 175
Mother of Millions 173
Mountbatten, Edwina 175
Mountbatten, Lord Louis, 'Uncle Dickie' bisexual paedophile 20, 201
Mr Churchill is still in his bath 90
much-loathed mother 19
Muldoon, Robert, the talking cheek, as her role model, Muldoonism 120–22
Muldoon, Thea yelled from the car 121
murder-rape 154–55, 176
murder and terror 119
murdered in a kosher fashion 138
murdering prostitutes 139
murderous paedophile 154, 175
My Adventures of a Spy 176
mythical Soviet Swallows 190

N

Nash, Walter 121
NATO paedophile, quicker than a 30
natural persona as a flamboyant non-threatening homosexual 185
Nazi-instigated New Age movement 34, 198
Nazis 148
NCOs (Non-Commissioned Officers) 90
Nemo, Mr 67
Neuilly-sur-Seine 192
New Age occultist 198
newly trimmed poodle 73

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

new paedophile movement, Family Court, national Branch of the UN 180
New Zealand 195
New Zealand citizenship has not officially existed since 10 January 1920 123
New Zealand is controlled by murderous Freemasons to this day 195
New Zealand was owned offshore 120
nicknamed Koba – 'Man of Steel' 117
Nihilists from Russia, socialists from Germany, communists from France 53
nipples 85, 88–89, 108
nitric acid, nitroglycerine 61, 76
No. 1 Stokehold 165, 168
no better summary of the British upper class 194
no hastily scribbled graffiti 139
non-mainstream sexual habits 33
none were meant to see the light of day 145
Norman invasion 40
nothing apparent or repeated in his flesh 12
Nothing lies like a Jewish cemetery 42
not the tools for the job 86
nursed to death 164

O

Obersalzberg 191
Obote, Milton 119
occult 192–94, 197–201
occult hit 50
occultist and fellow British agent Adolf Hitler 199
occult training (if I fail you will die, which isn't so bad) 200
Odessa, Russia 117
Odessians 50
OGPU, 'Extraordinary Commission for Combating Counter-Revolution, Sabotage and Speculations' 57, became NKVD (1934), MVD (1946), KGB (1953) then FSB 58
oil paintings in their own lifetime and S&M oil paintings for each other 157
Okhrana, Tsarist secret police 54
Olave St Claire née Soames Baden-Powell 154, 173–75
Olivia Taylour 6
one grim slum 130
One World Order Military Industrial Complex One World Order social policy 200
OP OUR WAY OVER YOUR WAY 137
orchestrated series of events 136
ORDER OUT OF CHAOS 46, 49, 53, 161
Orders, knighthoods, lordships and governors-generalships collude 183
original all-powerful Effective Golden Dawn Inner Circle coven 142
Orkney/s/Orkney Isles/Orkney Islands/ Orcadians 161–64, 167–68
Ostrich feathers 19
Ostrog, Michael 151
outcast 18, 21
overt child-fucker and mass-murderer 170

P

Paedophile Country/PC 180
'porn' status 18
Parliament is dining with paedophiles 123
People wake up to Paedophilia rally 175
Prince Philip is my father 42
paedo-erotic 176
paedophile/s/paedophilia 120–23, 154, 158–60, 173–87, 195, 200–01
Paedophiles in New Zealand Police are protected by promotion and paedophiles become MPs in order to avoid being charged 123
Papus/Gerard Encausse 199–201
partners' deaths/suicides were suspicious 46
Pears' Soap 18–19
Peel, Robert 23
Pelican Club 23
penis conqueror 9
Pentagon Committee 121
Pentland Firth 164
Perelman, photographic enlarger 77
persona non grata in England 154
Peter Pan 176
Peter Piatkow/Peter the Painter/(not Peters) 56, 59, 63, 67–69, 72–75, 114
Peters/Jacob Peters/Jan Peters/Yakov Peters/ (not Piatkow) 57–65, 73–74, 114–15, 118
Petty Officer John Downes 169
Petty Officer Samuel Sweeny 168
Petty Officer Walter Charles Farnden 170
Petty Officer Wilfred Wesson 168

photographed before moved from crime scene 149
Picture of Dorian Gray 142
pigeons (informants) 72
Piper, Walter 60
pistol shots 104
Pity 116
place army generals in foreign countries & governor-generals in British colonies 183
played out in print for first time 130
Plunket, Baron Patrick Terence William Span 7th Baron Plunket of Newton, Deputy Master of the Royal Household, Lieutenant-Colonel 39
pneumonia 13, 23
Poe, Edgar Allan 102
police and judiciary give them blind cover 195
police posturing 98
police training specialised in tackling and boxing 134
Police view crime as pinnacle of their achievement 147
polite-rosy-cheeked-two-faced-white-collar-criminals 180
Political Correctness/PC 180
Porch, Montague Phippen 11
post-WWII propaganda 131
postie, put mail in 104 Sidney St, 99, 101, 109
PR company becomes Livery Company, then the truth is owned 183
Prince Albert 'Eddy' Edward Wettin, the Duke of Clarence 2
Prince Albert Saxe-Coburg-Gotha 13
Prince Charles 20, 32–33, 40
Prince Charles Joseph Eugene Henri de Ligne 25
Prince Edward, styled 'Viscount Severn' and 'Earl of Wessex', rumours of his homosexuality remained 39–42
Prince Jan Henryk XV Von Hochberg of Pszczyna, HSH Hans Heinrich XV 27
Prince Leopold 3, 19
Prince Louis Battenburg 20–21
Prince of Wales' crest 176
Prince Philip 20, 38–43, 201
Princess Alexandra 1–3, 14, 19, 27, 32
Princess Beatrice 12
Princess Helena 12
Princess Louise of Wessex 42
Princess Maria Teresa Von Pless 27
Princess of Denmark 13
Princess Viktoria 42
PR in those days was to appear immortal during battle and after it 95
Profumo Affair 125
Promote a One World Order 49
promoting Marxism over religion 46
prostitutes 130, 135, 139, 190–91
prostitute in a nun's outfit 193
pseudo-intellectuals 16
Psych-Ops 47, 113, 119
psychiatrically-gymnastic wife 178
psychiatrically challenged 154, 159, 23-year-old naïve tomboy 174–75
psychiatric conditions 176
psychiatric institutions 39
psychological coup 149
psychopathic killing machine with a revolutionary direction 117
purposeful sabotage 80
pyromania 19

Q

Quartermaster System 12
Quatuor Coronati Lodge (No. 2076) 136
Queen Anne's mansions in Westminster 152
Queen consort Mary 2
Queen disguised in a scarf 39
Queen Elizabeth II, the most cuckolded woman in Europe 201
Queen Victoria 1, 2, 12–13, 19–20, 42, responded by crying 131, 148, 154–55
Quinn, Patrick, Pat, Mr Quinn, Special Branch Superintendent 54, 59, 63, 70–73, 77, 91–92, 106–13, 117

R

'respectable' means "paedophile minder" 147, 180
'respectable people' prone to crimes under a veil of dignity 150
raging sex addict of historic proportions 39
rampant paedophilia amongst married-for-cover Freemasons 38
Rasputin 58, 200–01

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

realm of fantasy, literature & art movements 140
real politic 140
Reese, Major John Rawlings 47
recurring wars 49
Red Gauntlet 16
Remove the concept of God 49
renowned slapper 35
replaced 'breeding with virgins' with 'prostitute murder mutilations' 139
representative of a revolutionary committee in Geneva, Switzerland 52
Republican agenda including globalisation 35
Reverends can always refer to God 7
reverse swastika 196
Rhys-Jones, Sophie Countess of Wessex 39–41
Richardson Street 79
right ventricle 63–64
Rising Sun pub 91, 94
Rockefeller, Win 35
Rocker, Rudolf 50
Rodham, Hillary 35
Roland became 3rd Baron of Ashcombe 28
Roman emperor 90
Roosevelt, President, Jew & Freemason 199
rooting like mink 191
Rosicrucians 199–200
Ross, Lieutenant 90
Rothschild, Alfred de 12
Rothschild, Alphonse de 12
Rothschild, Arthur de 12
Rothschild, Ferdinand de 12
Rothschild, First Baron 'Natty' 109–11
Rothschild, Leopold de 12
Rothschild, Lionel de 12
Rothschild, Mayer Amschel de 12
Rothschild, Nathan Mayer 9, 30, 34, 37, 42
Rothschild, Second Baron 'Walter' homosexual eccentric 47, 109
Rothschild/s 12–13, 29, 34, 37
Rothschild birthright 117
Round Table, controlled by British Royal Family 47
Rowling, Wallace, NZ PM, Ambassador to US, toady, all secrets transferred 120
Royal Alpha Lodge 136
Royal Institute of International Affairs (RIIA) 47
Royal Stonemen 17
Rubenoff, Mrs 80, 100
rule the world with their image baked onto biscuit tins 201
Russia being the test case 49
Russian-born Tavistock/Freemason/British agent 116
Russian Royal Family 201
Ryder, Winona 198

S

Salon Kitty 72
'Sergeant Dan Wing' in Wi Tako Prison 178
'shoot-not-to-kill' 86
S & M for hire 34
sabotage in Greater London crime solving 127
sabotage of crime fighting & file theft 148
sabotage ran rampant at the highest levels in Britain 177
saboteur of detective work 152
sado-masochism 20
sadists/sadistic killers 194
Sandhurst 119
San Marco 44
saves getting dusty on exotic travel 193
Savill, Captain Herbert J. 164–65
Saxe-Coburg-Gotha 176
Saxe-Coburg of Gotha, Albert 12
Scapa Flow 164–66
scapegoat 151
scheduled for destruction before 50-year rule could free them 145
schnell feur/quick firer 83
Scotland Yard's Criminal Investigation Department (CID) 45, 67–69, 72–78, 83–110, 127–30, 144–52, 163
Scots Guards/'Cold Stream Guards' 53, 82, 87–96, 105–09
Scouting for Boys (1908), *Scouting for Boys in India* (1932) 176
Scouts and Guides were both 'front and bait' 178
scowling sexual deviant 17
Scrabster 164
séance with inside social knowledge 193
secret and important official documents 168

secret society 137–38
sedition 121
sensitive official files 144
sentence, threat and promise 137
Sergeant Arthur Bryant (CoLP) 60–63, 73, 107–09, 114
Sergeant Ben Leeson 85–87, 108
Sergeant Charles (Daddy) Tucker (CoLP) 60–62, 108
Sergeant Hallam 85, 108
Sergeant Leeson 85–94
Sergeant Robert (Bob) Bentley (CoLP) 60–62, 73, 108, 114
seven days' war (9–15 August 1945) 182
severed his spinal chord 61
sex addicts wheeling and dealing in their fannies 34
sexual deviants dominate immigration (paedophiles) and public relations (child sex abusers) 180
sexual escapades 13, 39
sexually adventurous swinger 20
sexual deviants 19, 193
sexual patterns (genealogical patterns) 33
Shakespeareanese 129, 152
shame 10, 34–35
shared cover for shame 151
Shaw, George Bernard 142
shear sheep 42
shields then any curved metal plates 96
Shiemann, Mr and Mrs 81
Siberia 46–47, 52, 118
Siberian prison escapee 48
Sidney Street/Seige 45, 53–55, 67, 74–85, 88–91, 94–95, 98–114, 118, 129, 144, 149, 152
Sinn Fein 162–65, 171
Sioux Chief Dr Eastman 179
Sir Allen Young 18
Sir Ernest Cassel 12
Sir H. A. Smyth, governor of the fortress in Malta 184
Sir Hugo Gerald de Bathe 24
Sir Ian Malcolm Poltalloch, 17th Laird of Poltalloch 24
Sir Randal Elliott, KBE, GCStJ 120
Sir William Coutts Keppel, 7th Earl of Albemarle 28
SIS routinely took files to Fiji for R&R 145
Skull & Bones/Book & Snake (S&B/B&S) 182
Slavonics 53
sledgehammers 101
Smith, John 183
SMLE rifles (Small Magazine Lee-Enfield Mark III, No. 1 rifles) 90
snub-nosed bulldog revolvers 79, 82
social climber 20
so confidently evil 126
so widely ridiculed, people stopped 41
sodomised two handcuffed 16-year-old Irish soldiers 148, 153
sodomised through British public schools 152
Sokoloff, William/Joseph 57–65, 69, 72–78, 81, 103, 109–10, 114–15
solipsist mental illness 128
South Africa 154–55, 188
Soveral, Marquis de (the Blue Monkey) 12
Special Branch 53–59, 63, 70–77, 92, 106–13, 117, 163
Special Irish Branch after Phoenix Park murders 54
Spencer-Churchill, Charles Richard John 10
Spencer Churchill, John 'Jack' Strange 10
Spencer-Churchill, Lord Randolph Henry, Secretary of State for India, MP for Paddington, Chancellor of Exchequer, Deputy Lieutenant of Oxfordshire 9–11, 30–31, 38
spent his money anyway 29
Spitalfields 131, 136, 149
spitzers, round pointed bullet loaded by stripper clip 83
spooky tricks 193
sport of kings 8, 34
sport of the royals 176
Spymaster 52, 54, 76, 88, 113, 118, 121, 191
St Georges Chapel, Windsor 41
St Paul's Cathedral/Chapel 75, 172, 185
Stalin/Losif Vissarionovich Dzhugashvili,
Koba, Josef, illegitimate Rothschild, ½ Jew 45–59, 63–67, 70–74, 77, 81, 91, 101–02, illegitimate Rothschild from Georgia, Red Guards, Stalin was British agent, 109–118, spoke perfect English, Stalin Jewish for 'Prince of Steel' 118–21, 126, 160, 182, 189, 194–202
Stanley Baldwin British PM 71
St Martin 199
storks 195
St Petersburg 53,
Palace 57, 121–22, 132, 189
'strichen from the books' 22
Stride, Elizabeth 141
Stuart takeover 40
stupid socialites 189
suffered life of continual 'innuendo when required' 129
Superintendent Mulvaney (Met) H Division 78–90, 98, 107–08
Superintendent Ottoway (CoLP) 78–84, 87–88, 92, 96, 108
Superintendent Stark (CoLP) 79
Superintendent Thomas Arnold 137
supermen 196, 199
Sutch, Bill 120, 204
Svaars, Fritz 54–69, 72–78, 81, 109–15
swastika 196
Swinging 15–16
Switzerland 48, 52–53, 73, 116, 188
synapses works by strange linking 138
syphilis 31, 33

T

Tanks 108
take over Paris like a walk in the park 192
take over parts of Europe including Germany, Russia, Africa, Uganda, all Commonwealth countries, Canada and America 119
Tanner, Mr 41
Tavistock Institute for Human Relations/ Freud Hilton 46–49, 72, 113–22
Tavistock/British Royal Family/Switzerland 116
'That Will' come to pass 137
'Twins' 151
"the shit-eating reticulated rabbit" 41
tea boy 41
teenage girls still open to direction 174
The Boy-Man 176, 203
The crime is getting caught 38
The Freemasons are the men That Will not be blamed for nothing 138
The Juwes are the men That Will not be blamed for nothing 135–140, 144
The Order of the Golden Dawn (Isis-Urania Temple of Golden Dawn in the Outer) 142
Theosophy 193, 199–200
Three Ruffians 137
the Victorian way – and the lesbian way 173
They left it out of history 195
Thousand Police versus Two Rebels 108
Three Nuns in Aldgate 54
Thule 193, 196
Thurman, Uma 198
Thurso 164
Tibet 195–96
Tibetan 'supermen' create? – Naziism 199
Tibetan mysticism 196
Tithing 151
Tomacoff, Nikolai, Special Branch informant 53–59, 73–74, 77–78
tosser 152
Tower Bridge Hamlet of Stepney 49
Tower of London 45, 90
Traditional Martinist Order (TMO) is a mystical Rosicrucian order 199
"Tragicomedy as British Authorities Muddle Through" 108
Trotsky assassinated 182
true history not told as it erodes their power 34
Tsarevich Alexei 200
Tsarist police/Okhrana 57
Tsar Nicholas II 48–49, 53, 116, 200–01
tuberculosis 16; from friendly doctor by taking bacillus 191
Turner, Martha/Tabram 140
Turner Street 77
Twin Towers 105, 120
typewriters with a screw loose 196

U

'uncles' 116
U-boat 160–61, 165, 170
US Army School of the Americas 124
uberwankers 199
unable to get a joke 194
undercovers in place as peddlers, shoe-shiners and street hawkers 72
UNICEF, UN Children's Fund used B-P's paintings to commemorate *International Year of Child* 181–82

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

universities got it all wrong 71
upper-crust saboteur 67
Use the poor to kill the rich 49
utterly crap medical degree (leeches and more leeches) 200

V

'V' shaped 101
Vanderbilt, Consuelo 10
Vassilleva, Nina/Lina/Minna Gristis 57, 60–65, 68, 74–75, 112, 115
Victims of paedophilia and incest 19
Victorian prostitute/virgin genre 139
virtual politic 140
Viscount 155, 172, 185
Viscount Chaplin 12
Viscount, all sexual practices go unchallenged, 'night rights' included first sex with bride on wedding night 155

W

W.C./Water Closet – public toilet/Winston Churchill 89
walk for 40 years in someone else's desert 131
Walker, Peter Plumley 150
wall became symbolic leapfrog to success 181
Wanganui Collegiate in New Zealand 40
warmongers 189, 198
Warren, Charles, Sir, Police Commissioner 131–38
Warwick, Daisy, Countess of Warwick, Francis Evelyn 'Daisy' Greville née Maynard 3–4
We are going to be rich 55
Webley-Scott .32 automatic pistol (7.62 mm bullets) 107
We control the future with a Will that controls us 138
well-presented public homosexuality imbued with an allegiance to denial 173
Wensley, Detective Inspector Frederick Porter/Weasel/Mr Vensel/Wensley-the-Weasel 66–89, 92–101, 106–10, 134
Westminster, Duchess of 26
Western Alliance 192
Western Hemisphere Institute for Security Cooperation 124
Westminster, 2nd Duke of, Hugh Richard Arthur Grosvenor, richest English noble, aka Bend Or/Golden Duke 26
wheeler and dealer in her fanny 29
which side British Monarchy was on? 177
Whirling Dervishes 189
whiskey 96
Whistler 18
Whitechapel 45, 50–54, 64–67, 72–73, 77–79, 95, 130–36, 145, 149–50
Whitechapel Jews 136
Whittington, Dick, author/Mayor of London 182
Who's Who 125
whole world would gang up on Hitler's side 192
Whyte Lady/Black Eye 23
Wilde, Constance 142
Wilde, Oscar/Sebastian Melmoth, he'd have sex with anything 16, 142
Wilson, Colin 150
Wiltshire 78, 84
wives were in need of exotic stimulus 193
Wolf Cubs 154
wooden spoons 80
Woodstock 31
world famous overnight 21
world is controlled by shame 35
Württemburg 44
WWI, the Spanish Flu, WWII & all the other wars in between & afterwards 137–39

Y

Yeats, William Butler 142
Yekaterinburg 116, 201
Yiddish 52, 57, 64, 80–81, 110–12
'young boys who were scouted' 179
"Your country needs you!" 159
Your toenails will be pointing skyward 40
"You're he" 199

Z

Zimmerman Telegram 161
Zulus 184

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Lord Kitchener and Stalin were both trained by Gurdjieff as Martinist Freemasons. Stalin went on to rule a third of the world and Kitchener colonised the world through his special brand of Freemasonry – incestuous paedophilia and sadistic ORDER OUT OF CHAOS.

Britain was the training ground for immigrant revolutionaries to destroy their own foreign countries. This saved the colonising British army from doing it.

Misinformation was always on the breakfast menu for the City of London and Metropolitan Police who regularly sabotaged each other's interrogations giving foreign terrorists any and every advantage.

Winston Churchill was King Edward VII's son. Once his father died, Winston needed to prove himself to his brother, the new King George V, so the 1911 Sidney Street Siege was held as a canned meat operation – a training exercise between Churchill and his protégé Stalin, who went on to decimate Russia.

Protecting the establishment by file theft is one of the main functions of a knight. A crime is committed, the case is botched and the files are stolen. Ipso facto, the stitch-up is all stitched up and official history contains generations of the most unbelieveable claptrap where nothing fits and most lose interest. This is the desired goal of establishment historians – most of whom are embedded into the occult. Jack the Ripper was an inside job that had the full support of occultist Freemasons and the British Royal Family.

Two of the most decorated men in British history were paedophiles who competed to commit the most heinous crimes in the British colonies. Understanding Queen Victoria and her children's illegitimacy, they operated with complete immunity, attained hero status, and medals were theirs for the asking.

ISBN 978-0-473-12073-3

STALIN'S BRITISH TRAINING
BREEDING CONCUBINES PAEDOPHILES AT WAR

HALLETT
&
SPYMASTER

STALIN'S
BRITISH TRAINING

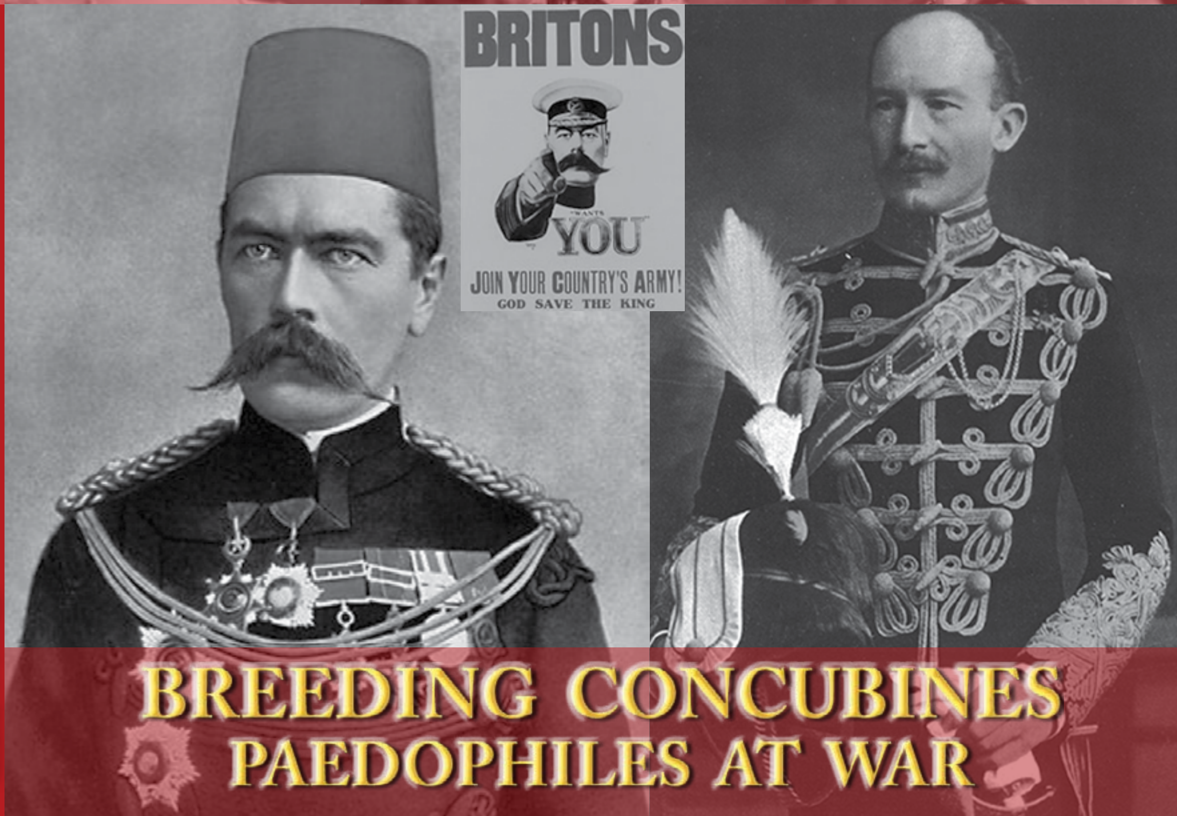

BREEDING CONCUBINES
PAEDOPHILES AT WAR

SOLVING the 1897 AIRSHIP MYSTERY

By Michael Busby

> "Mr. Frank Nichols, a prominent farmer living about two miles east of here, and a man of unquestioned veracity, was awakened night before last near the hour of 12 by a whirring noise, similar to that made by machinery. Upon looking out he was startled upon beholding brilliant lights streaming from a ponderous vessel of strange proportions, which rested upon the ground in his corn field."
>
> —*Houston Post*, April 26, 1897

From November 1896 to May 1897, hundreds of newspapers across North America published similar accounts of strange objects in the night skies. Citizens from California to as far east as Michigan reported seeing mysterious "airships" moving high above the earth. Were these puzzling craft driven by visitors from another planet? By hostile foreigners? By American inventors subsidized by private investors, the government, or the military?

Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery represents six years of research and draws on more than 1,200 newspaper stories and other contemporary accounts. Author

(continued on back flap)

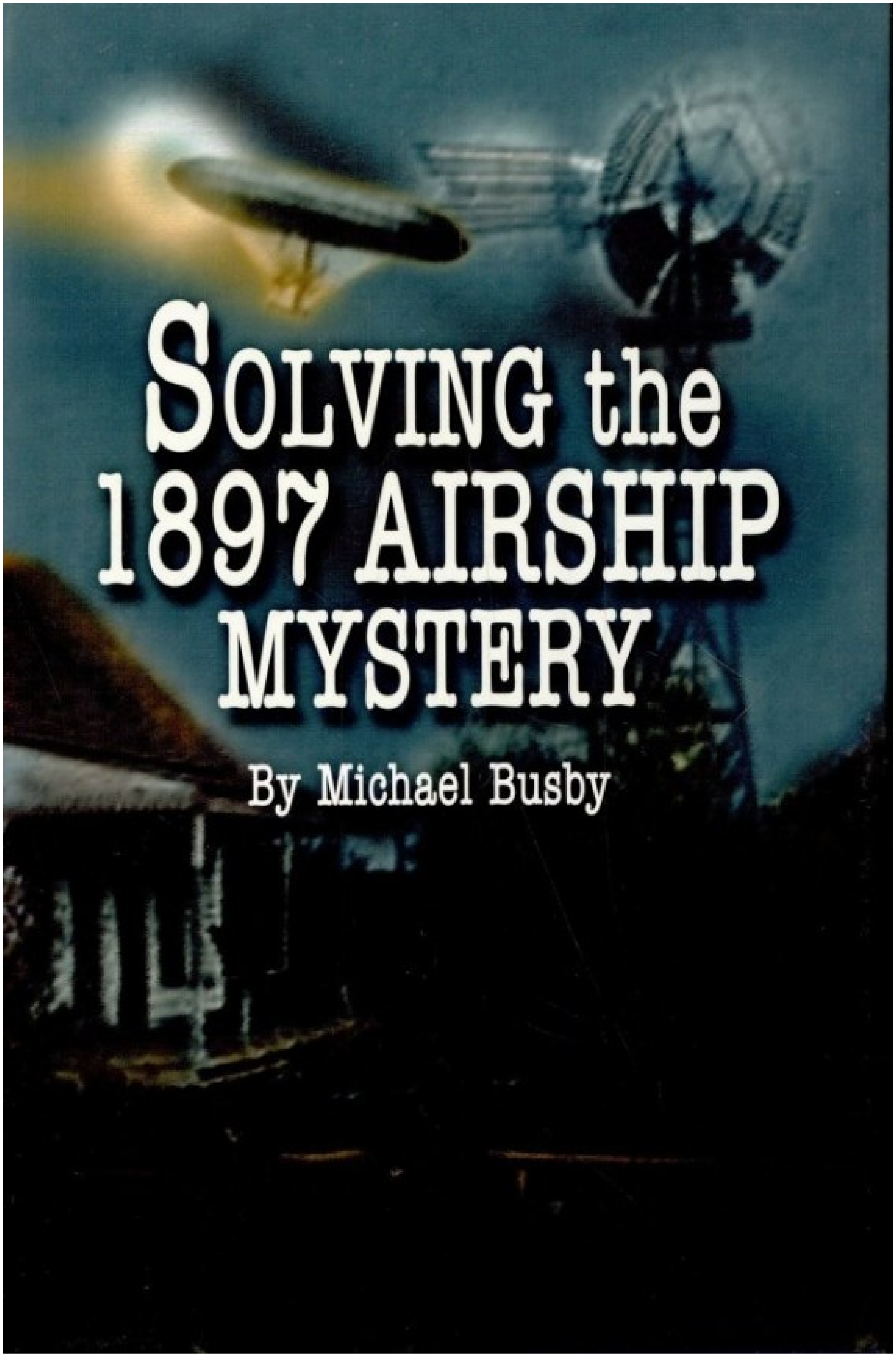

SOLVING the 1897 AIRSHIP MYSTERY

By Michael Busby

SOLVING the 1897 AIRSHIP MYSTERY

By Michael Busby

"Mr. Frank Nichols, a prominent farmer living about two miles east of here, and a man of unquestioned veracity, was awakened night before last near the hour of 12 by a whirring noise, similar to that made by machinery. Upon looking out he was startled upon beholding brilliant lights streaming from a ponderous vessel of strange proportions, which rested upon the ground in his corn field."
—*Houston Post*, April 26, 1897

From November 1896 to May 1897, hundreds of newspapers across North America published similar accounts of strange objects in the night skies. Citizens from California to as far east as Michigan reported seeing mysterious "airships" moving high above the earth. Were these puzzling craft driven by visitors from another planet? By hostile foreigners? By American inventors subsidized by private investors, the government, or the military?

Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery represents six years of research and draws on more than 1,200 newspaper stories and other contemporary accounts. Author

(continued on back flap)

SOLVING THE
1897 AIRSHIP MYSTERY

SOLVING the 1897 AIRSHIP MYSTERY

By Michael Busby

PELICAN PUBLISHING COMPANY
Gretna 2004

This One
NLXR-CDD-4HWA

Copyright © 2004
By Michael Busby
All rights reserved

The word "Pelican" and the depiction of a pelican are trademarks of Pelican Publishing Company, Inc., and are registered in the U.S. Patent and Trademark Office.

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data

Busby, Michael.
Solving the 1897 airship mystery / by Michael Busby.
p. cm.
Includes bibliographical references.
ISBN 1-58980-125-3 (hardcover : alk. paper)
1. Unidentified flying objects—Sightings and encounters—Texas. I. Title.
TL789.5.T4B87 2003
001.942'0976409034—dc21
2003006875

Printed in the United States of America
Published by Pelican Publishing Company, Inc.
1000 Burmaster Street, Gretna, Louisiana 70053

For a few people who made a difference in my life, thank you for the memories:

For my best friends, Shane, Drew, and Stuart Busby (Plano, Texas), you are the
reason for living;
Ida Velma Busby (St. Jo, TX), a mother's love never dies but lives on in our hearts;
Alethea Busby (Plano, TX), you were the wind beneath my wings;
Willie Busby (Nocona, TX), I ain't heavy, I'm his brother;
Dixie Broom (Bowie, TX), when I saw you standing there;
John and Gail Carlson (Nashua, NH), Semper Fidelis;
Bob Pruden (Decatur, TX), gone but not forgotten;
Don Ingram (Los Angeles, CA), gone but not forgotten;
Sam and Connie Williamson (St. Jo, TX), "With the sun beatindown across the fields I
see, that mule, Ole Sam, and me..., "gone but not forgotten;
Elvin andMattie Dennis (Gainesville, TX);
Daniel Lynch (New Boston, TX);
Lee and Helen Brice (St. Jo, TX);
Jim Hill (McKinney, TX);
Travis Hill (McKinney, TX);
Sean Talley (Plano, TX);
Greg Kelso (Lake Worth, TX);
Dale Williams (Rowlett, TX);
Larry Pickard (Garland, TX);
Jack Neigel (Chapel Hill, NC);
Old Boston, Texas (I will never forget);
the United States Marine Corps;
and the men who died for me in Vietnam.

List of Tables

Table 1	*Initial Texas Airship Sightings*	34
Table 2	*April 14, 1897, Sightings*	43
Table 3	*April 15, 1897, Sightings*	43
Table 4	*April 15, 1897, Sightings*	69
Table 5	*April 16, 1897, Sightings*	69
Table 6	*April 16, 1897, Sightings*	106
Table 7	*April 17, 1897, Sightings*	107
Table 8	*April 17, 1897, Sightings*	140
Table 9	*April 18, 1897, Sightings*	140
Table 10	*April 18, 1897, Sightings*	150
Table 11	*April 19, 1897, Sightings*	150
Table 12	*April 19, 1897, Sightings*	178
Table 13	*April 20, 1897, Sightings*	188
Table 14	*April 21, 1897, Sightings*	188
Table 15	*April 21, 1897, Sightings*	191
Table 16	*April 22, 1897, Sightings*	191
Table 17	*April 22, 1897, Sightings*	200
Table 18	*April 23, 1897, Sightings*	200
Table 19	*April 23, 1897, Sightings*	206
Table 20	*April 24, 1897, Sightings*	217
Table 21	*April 25, 1897, Sightings*	217
Table 22	*April 25, 1897, Sightings*	218
Table 23	*April 26, 1897, Sightings*	222
Table 24	*April 27–May 12, 1897, Sightings*	238
Table 25	*The Cast of Characters*	269

Table 26 *Wilsons: New York Census Record* 271
Table 27 *Wilsons: California Census Record* 273
Table 28 *Wilsons: Texas Census Record* 273
Table 29 *1880 United States Census* 274
Table 30 *1930 United States Census* 275
Table 31 *Oroville, California, Benjamins* 276
Table 32 *1880 Census of Oroville, Benjamins Born in New York* 277
Table 33 *1890 Butte County, California, Great Register* 277
Table 34 *Benjamins of Orange County, New York, Census Records* 278
Table 35 *Benjamins: 1870 Butte County Census Records* 279
Table 36 *Benjamins: Burials in Cherokee Cemetery, Oroville, CA* 280
Table 37 *Francis Benjamin's Oroville Record* 281
Table 38 Columbia's *Manifest* 282
Table 39 *Harts in California* 284
Table 40 *Harts in Iowa* 284
Table 41 *James Hart's Iowa Census Record* 288
Table 42 *San Francisco, California, Directories, 1889 and 1890* 288
Table 43 *1889 San Francisco City Directory* 288
Table 44 *Iowa Census Record of Augustus L. Hart* 290
Table 45 *Charles McKnight's New York Census Records* 298
Table 46 *Charles McKnight's Texas Census Records* 298
Table 47 *Samuel Tillman's Tennessee Census Records* 299
Table 48 *Samuel Tillman's New Jersey Census Records* 299
Table 49 *Sheriff Akers' Texas Census Record* 302
Table 50 *George Applegate's California Census Record* 302
Table 51 *Pacific Coast Directory Entry for George Applegate* 303
Table 52 *San Francisco, California, Directories (1889, 1891, 1895)* 304
Table 53 *1930 United States Census* 305
Table 54 *Collins' Deaths in California* 305
Table 55 *1880 United States Census* 306

Table 56	*James Randall's California Census Record*	307
Table 57	*San Francisco, California, Directories, 1889-91*	308
Table 58	*Shasta County, California Register, 1898*	308
Table 59	*1870 United States Census*	309
Table 60	*Scott Warren's Iowa Census Record*	310
Table 61	*Civil War Service Records for Charles A. Smith*	316
Table 62	*Census Record*	316
Table 63	*San Francisco, California, Directories, 1889-91*	317
Table 64	*The Airship Connections*	318
Table 65	*Iowa Sightings*	321
Table 66	*Houston, Texas, Directories, 1882-95*	324
Table 67	*T. J. Weems' Texas Census Record*	344

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I am indebted to Jim Hill of McKinney, Texas, for his warm advice and for the suggestion that sent me down the path whose terminus was this story.

Thanks to Brigette McGary of Everett, Washington, who furnished informative news accounts of her grandfather, Marcellus McGary; to Mr. Tom Scott, Fannin County Museum curator in Bonham, Texas, for helping locate U.S. Marshal Williams' ranch; and to Patty Gandy at the Perth Amboy Free Public Library, for sharing a treasure trove of information on Dr. Solomon Andrews; and to Cynthia Williams for her professional editing of the manuscript.

I wish to express my gratitude to Nicki Rucker of Longview, Texas, for her diligent effort during the preparation of this book.

Thanks to Dr. Stephen Grove, U.S. Military Academy historian, for providing information and photo of Brig. Gen. Samuel E. Tillman.

INTRODUCTION

Although there was ample debate concerning the flying machines' origins in 1897, including the supposition that the machines were of extraterrestrial design, all of the 1896-97 newspaper accounts referred to the unidentified flying objects as *airships*. For the sake of continuity, I will continue the convention. The term *UFO* did not achieve widespread popularity until fifty years later.

About six years ago, Jim Hill suggested that a series of books on Texas UFO sightings would constitute an interesting writing project. Since Jim is a publisher (and a friend), I thought the idea possessed some merit. I rushed off to the library to research the documented UFO sightings in Texas and almost immediately came upon the great airship mystery of 1897, including the purported crash of an airship on April 17, 1897, in Aurora, Texas. After uncovering a wealth of period newspaper stories regarding the topic and reading other documented material on the subject, I discovered it was not just a Texas airship mystery but a California, Nevada, Utah, Nebraska, Iowa, Illinois, Indiana, Michigan, Kansas, Missouri, New Mexico, Arizona, Oklahoma, and Louisiana airship mystery also.

The story of the 1897 airship mystery is embedded in thousands of newspaper accounts reporting what happened in the local skies over Western United States beginning in the fall of 1896 and proceeding through the spring of 1897. Initially, in late 1896, coastal areas of the western portion of the country were seized and held spellbound by the reports of numerous and mysterious airship sightings. First California was inundated with reports of airships seen in the night. Soon after the initial California sightings, the odd-looking machines were seen over numerous Western, Central, and Southern states. For a while during 1896 and 1897, people throughout the country west of the Mississippi and from all segments of society rubbernecked the skies every night to get a glimpse of the flying vessels of unknown origin. Occasionally, people reported hearing and glimpsing strange beings working the vessels' machinery.

Were the enigmatic occupants of these vessels the advance party of an extraterrestrial race of beings scouting the country looking for the best site to establish a sinister presence on our planet? Did they map our country and subsequently establish a base at a remote Nevada site later popularized as Area 54? Were the appearance of these strange flying vessels and the purported crash of an airship at Aurora, Texas, a prelude to the alleged events that occurred fifty years later near Roswell, New Mexico? Or, did an epidemic of mass hysteria sweep a good proportion of the country? Were the stories the product of newspaper writers' imaginations? Were the flying machines a secret government project (and was there a subsequent government cover-up)? Intriguing questions for inquiring minds, astounding answers await the interested reader.

In this book, the focus is primarily on the Texas sightings. The reasons for limiting the scope of the book are (1) the amount of material involving all sightings is just too voluminous for a single book, (2) the Aurora crash makes interesting reading, (3) the airshow's grand finale was in Texas, (4) and, for reasons that will become abundantly clear, the Texas sightings include clues that yield answers.

The method I have adopted to present this story consists of a chronological timeline with the actual Texas newspaper accounts presented with the more interesting and pertinent facts in bold italics within the body of each account. If warranted, additional commentary is placed at the end of the account. At the end of each chapter, a map of the chapter sightings is provided to easily visualize the various way points of the airships. Each map includes the applicable sighting information reported—such as time of day or night and direction of travel.

Using the tabulated information, also included at the end of each chapter, I estimate the airships' flight path and offer additional commentary on the nature of the sightings. Drawing upon supplementary newspaper accounts of sightings outside Texas, an amazing story never before told unfolds. The final chapters include supporting documentation, arguments, and conclusions regarding the nature of the airship sightings as supported by the evidence in the newspaper accounts, historical documentation, and other historical facts.

However, one cannot delve into the Texas sightings without providing some background information on the sightings in the other states. Several very pertinent California accounts are included in this analysis.

Initially, it is difficult to decide where to begin when confronted with an interesting and complicated story such as this one—sort of a chickenand-egg theory (which comes first?). Though the country observed the great airshow in 1897, the 1897 airship mystery may have actually began in 1840's New York and it may have ended in Houston in 1923 with the death of Charles A. A. Dellschau.

SOLVING THE
1897 AIRSHIP MYSTERY

CHAPTER 1

AND THERE SHALL BE SIGNS

The spring of 1897 was a time of great excitement in the United States. Many inventions based upon recent physical science discoveries were making their way onto the marketplace and into the business and home environments. Electric lights were illuminating the world of darkness. Mr. Edison's phonograph was emitting tinny-sounding tunes out the doorway of America. Mark Twain wrote the first book on a typewriter, and now, the amazing machines were finding their way into almost every office and many homes in the country. High-speed passenger-train service made coast-to-coast travel an easy and comfortable three or four day journey. Great, steam-powered ships conquered the oceans. Skyscrapers were conquering the skies and changing the face of American cities. X-rays signaled a new paradigm in medicine. Quantum mechanics and relativity were just a couple of mathematical equations away in our evolving understanding of the universe. Using large, powerful telescopes recently assembled and directed toward the heavens, the world's astronomers were announcing new astronomical discoveries almost everyday, including the discovery of Martian "canals." And Charles H. Dow had just introduced his now-famous Dow (Jones) industrial stock-market averages to the country via the newspaper he edited, the *Wall Street Journal.* Western Indian depredations were finally a nightmare of the past and people slept easy at night knowing they and, especially, their children were reasonably safe in their beds. Automobiles were the newest threat to peace and prosperity, as the horseless carriages honked and careened their way down the mud-caked thoroughfares of America, scaring witless the horses pulling the carriages and wagons. People believed there was no limit to human, and especially American, ingenuity.

However, one frontier had not yielded to American ingenuity. Although great achievements were becoming commonplace on Earth, the heavens remained unconquered. Yet, many people thought it was just a small matter of time before the problem of aerial navigation would succumb to human invention. Newspapers and magazines devoted numerous columns of print to the subject and the seemingly slow progress in the state of the science. Famous scientists, including Samuel Pierpont Langley, head of the Smithsonian Museum, were vigorously failing to conquer the heavens. However, most people agreed that they, or their children, would live to see humans one day sailing the skies as easily as ships sailed the ocean.

Then suddenly, without any warning, a strange-looking object appeared in the early evening sky over Sacramento, California. On November 17,1896, between the hours of 6 and 7 P.M., people were startled to see an airship flying slowly across the city, from the northeast to the southwest, at a very low altitude *(Sacramento Evening Bee,* November 18, 1896, p. 1). Dumbfounded, people stood in the streets and gazed at the alien-looking airship with great amazement and some consternation. According to the *Bee* account, hundreds viewed the sight.

For the next seven months, airships were seen fairly often, flying at night over America's cities and towns. Newspapers printed airship stories as they came into their offices from stringers, also known as correspondents, who reported via telegraph from towns, villages, and cities the airship sightings when they occurred in their regions. Also, individuals breathlessly rushed into newspaper offices to tell tales of late-night encounters with strange flying machines. But not all airship stories were printed. In many cases, only after reputable men and women stepped forward with their tales of nocturnal visitors did some newspapers feel safe from public ridicule and begin to print airship stories. Even after publishing these stories, many newspaper publishers and editors remained skeptical of the sightings, evidenced by their editorials on the subject.

The great 1897 airship mystery was the result of numerous sightings of strange flying objects, most often seen at night. What was the cause of the aerial phenomenon? Too much rubbernecking and stargazing? Too much alcohol to drink? Mass hysteria? A widespread newspaper hoax? A great railroad hoax? Aliens from another planet? Aliens from this planet (let's not forget the Hollow Earth believers)? A secret government project? Perhaps, they were exactly what many respectable individuals who gave graphic accounts of firsthand encounters with the weird flying machines and their occupants described them to be.

Although the great airship mystery began in California with the initial Sacramento sighting on November 17,1896 (followed by numerous sightings over San Francisco and other northern California cities), within weeks, other regions around the country were reporting the presence of the strange airships. Using the numerous, dated newspaper accounts as a timeline, one can see that the airship sightings follow an easily identifiable path beginning in California, proceeding east to the Midwest (Illinois, Indiana, Michigan), then changing to a southerly course and traversing Missouri, Kansas, and Oklahoma before arriving in Texas and Louisiana in April 1897.

All along the course of the airship sightings, the reports of the airships' visitation followed the same general pattern. People saw the airship, or airship(s), at night, sometimes following a straight line, sometimes stopping then starting again then changing course before disappearing over the horizon. The descriptions of the size, shape, and sounds associated with the airship(s) are similar, regardless of the location and date of the sighting.

When the airships arrived in a region, the local newspapers and populace adopted various positions regarding the veracity of the airships' existence. Sometimes witnesses remained silent until some very respectable member of the community came forward with a report of an airship sighting. Then other observers who had kept silent for fear of censure poured out their stories. Some newspapers might print every airship story they received without regard to its truthfulness, while others printed only the airship stories of people it deemed reliable sources. The credibility of the newspaper was at stake and many editors were anxious to ensure it was well protected, while other editors were willing to risk their reputations for circulation gain. And occasionally, a paper would reprint another newspaper's airship story if it was especially interesting.

The airship sightings, documented in more than twelve hundred known U.S. newspaper accounts, began in November 1896 and ended in May 1897. (See appendix B for a list of the known newspapers carrying airship stories.) Today, some people believe the airship mystery was nothing more than the product of fertile imaginations diligently at work in the back offices of newspapers. Occasionally, some newspapers were willing to print hoaxes in order to entertain their readers. So why should we give credence to these stories? Although a few accounts appear to be fake, there are too many firsthand accounts that include the names of reputable witnesses. Such accounts give credibility to the large body of stories. The people reporting the stories were not fictional people or people with histories of mental illness, drug abuse, or perhaps, practical jokester natures, but they were the individuals who formed the foundation of their communities. They were farmers, clerks, train drivers, telegraph operators, newspaper correspondents, business owners, doctors, lawyers, current and former government officials, military officers, engineers, scientists, legislators, and professors. They were men and women, adults and children, brown, black, white, and all the shades in between.

The great body of airship accounts detail, in report after report, the nocturnal movements of the mysterious airships. However, not all sightings were reported and many reports were not printed. Why? How many thousands of people looked into the sky, saw the airship(s), and never mentioned the sighting to anyone? How many thousands of people notified a newspaper of a sighting, but the account was never printed? How many thousands of correspondent's telegrams were not sent to newspapers and how many unused columns of stories were eventually trashed is anyone's guess. At one point, as the nightly airship sightings became numerous about the Texas skies, the *Dallas Morning News* stated it had over five hundred columns of unpublished material relating to airship sightings. Unfortunately, this large collection of information is now lost to us. But, from the extensive evidence that does remain, we can discern an amazing story never before told in its entirety.

Reliable people reported seeing strange flying machines traveling at "meteor-like speed" through the dark heavens from the fall of 1896 into the spring of 1897. Tales of crashes and little (previously) green (but now burnt black) men—or women, the body seems to have been burnt too bad to recognize the sex—from Mars permeated the news of the day. Stories of airships that could easily outrace the high-speed passenger trains in service and fly three miles high—an unbelievable claim in 1897—were common during this exciting period of American invention.

The claims of the airships' altitude and speed seem especially unbelievable today, given our front-row seat watching the great revolution in technology upon the panoramic screen of American history and, especially, its impact on the science of aviation during the past century. In 1903, the Wright brothers succeeded in flying only a few hundred feet at an altitude not substantially more than rooftop height at a speed of less than fifty miles per hour. It would be many years before any human-made machine could fly two miles high and exceed 100 miles per hour! Yet, the reports from many eyewitnesses in 1897 make such claims concerning the airships!

The light bulb, the phonograph, the telephone, the electrical motor, and the automobile were just a few of the many useful inventions pouring out of creative American minds in the midst of the great Industrial Revolution at the dawn of a new millennium. Were alien visitors offering advice and help to our greatest inventors or to the government? Could the success of the incredible Industrial Revolution be attributed to an alien presence among us? Did aliens provide our government the secret of powered flight? Or, were imaginary airships pouring out of everyone's fertile imaginations?

Some people, including professors and other "learned men," believed the airships were from another world. The descriptions of the craft and their antics seemed to suggest an intelligence far beyond any on Earth. Supporting such a premise is the claim of a U.S. government signal officer of the recovery of an alien body after a purported crash. The similarity of the government official's account to an alien crash account of another time and place is striking. A U.S. Air Force major serving as base public-information officer made the exact same claim fifty years later at Roswell, New Mexico. Moreover, a published firsthand account of a personal encounter between an earthling and the unearthly visitors gave credence, at the time, to the supposition that the flying machines were from another world.

Several people then (and a few people today) believed the sightings were the result of something greater than a touch of collective madness, a great outpouring of mass hysteria from an easily fooled and stampeded population. According to this explanation, otherwise sane and sharp-eyed individuals, with and without telescopes and field or marine glasses, walked out their doorways, gazed into the heavens, and saw things that were really not there. Although these people could tell the difference between a cow and a horse or a chicken and a pig, they could not tell the difference between a star and a swiftly moving flying machine of suspicious origin—so say the masshysteria proponents. According to this explanation of the airships' origin, Venus (or Saturn or Mars or any other astronomical feature you care to name) was now accorded the status of a flying vessel. First traveling across the night sky in one direction, perhaps slowing down, then abruptly changing direction, before speeding off and flying over the horizon in a matter of minutes, the fast-moving, low-altitude, blinking-light, mechanical apparitions were confused with slow planetary motion. This explanation for the airships' existence requires one to believe the greater proportion of the American public residing west of the Mississippi River in 1896 and 1897 was overwhelmed by a pandemic of mass hysteria for seven long months.

According to at least one modern explanation of the airship(s')'s origin, their genesis is to be found in the smoke-filled, back rooms of saloons, in the midst of yarn-filled poker games. Several obviously fake airship stories, whose origins are undoubtedly to be found in the midst of late-night poker games, were printed. However, the fake stories' substance is such that they are easily identified and proved to be phonies. Why did people make up fake stories? Maybe after years of silently treading behind the plow, or standing morosely behind the store counter, some people just wanted to have a little fun and make up a few entertaining stories to amuse the townspeople and the newspaper folks. In any case, the fake stories are easily identified, when viewed within the context of all the airship stories.

When the airship sightings began, there were "wars and rumors of wars," as the United States rattled its sword at Spain over the Cuban war for independence. The gospel was preached around the world. Disease and famine were rampant. The nearness of a new century and the "signs of the times" seemed to signify the end of time to many people. Some people thought the airship sightings were biblical prophecy: "and there shall be signs from the heavens" fulfilled.

Were the airships a visitation from heaven, seeking out and identifying the righteous for deliverance when the end of times would be upon the land? The sum of the days' events added up to one logical conclusion for some people. Religious leaders proclaimed prophecy was realized and the end of time was now upon the land. Attendance at religious meetings and revivals increased in 1897. Churches experienced a surge of new converts—nothing like prophecy realized (as spelled out in Revelation and as evidenced by "winged messengers from heaven") to increase church attendance and revenues.

A few people today believe the airship stories were engineered by the railroads as a hoax for some obscure reason. They claim the number of airship sightings reported by railroad employees and train passengers is evidence that the airships were a hoax initiated and perpetuated by reprobate telegraphers. Such an explanation does not account for the fact that the telegraph and the railroads were the foundations of mass communication in 1897 America. Both the telegraph lines and the airships followed the clearly delineated rail lines from community to community, therefore it should not surprise anyone that railroad employees and train passengers were usually the first to see the airships when they arrived near a community. Since there was a telegrapher in every rail station, news of an airship sighting quickly spread up and down the communities along the railroad line.

What do others say about the airship mystery? A survey of previously published works on this topic, of which there are just a couple, does not produce any book with a valid and believable explanation of the airship sightings. The couple of books (UFO-types) that include a reference to this topic offer only a mass-hysteria solution, a "great newspaper or railroad hoax" answer, a vague extraterrestrial explanation, or a "you decide" choice. The reader of these books is left with the general impression that the seven-month airship mystery was a great hoax perpetrated by miscreant newspaper reporters in a widespread conspiracy to drum up news, get their names on bylines, and sell more newspapers.

Widely reported in numerous newspapers, the airships were regarded as various manifestations of both natural and supernatural events. Some believed the end of time was near and the ships had come to collect the just. Some believed the airships were visitors from Mars, Jupiter, or any place but Earth. Some believed the airships were a great hoax engineered by either the newspapers or the railroads. But most people at the time believed American ingenuity (perhaps, with some alien assistance?) had solved the problem of aerial navigation, or flight, and the successful inventor(s) would soon step forward, announce their amazing machine(s) to the world, and claim their deserved reward.

If the majority's supposition was correct, why didn't the inventors step forward, publicly announce their success, and celebrate the initiation of a new technological age with the rest of the world? If the airships were of human invention, why wasn't the technology pursued to a logical conclusion, the initiation of mass air transportation, by 1900? These and other questions naturally come to mind as one begins to ponder the newspaper reports of the sightings. Only in reading the story of the great airship mystery will the reader discover the interesting and even amazing answers to these and many other baffling questions.

CHAPTER 2

IN THE ATTIC

In a large Texas town, a lonely figure bends over his worktable in the dim light cast by a single bulb piercing the attic's inky black darkness. Charles A. A. Dellschau laboriously draws his final watercolor at the age of ninety-three. Soon, he will draw no more, as 1923 and his life arrive at the crossroads of their final reckoning. Why has he labored in seclusion for twenty-three years to draw twelve volumes of mixed-media pictographs of flying machines? Flying machines that apparently only he has seen (or imagined)? Why does he describe his creations and the men and women who flew them in short scripts written in a symbolic or coded language? Was Charles Dellschau a victim of alien abduction documenting for posterity the details of his abduction? Or was he a dreamer, an amateur artist?

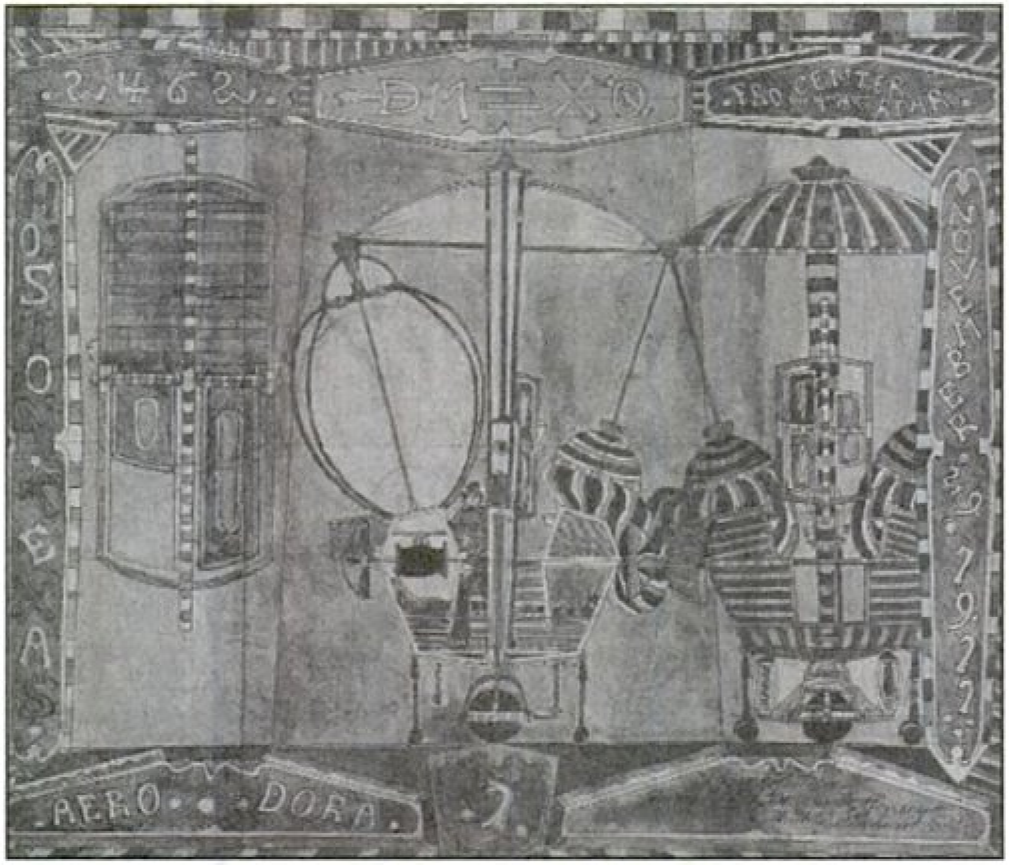
2462.
DM=XO.
AERO DORA

Aero Dora, Center Front or Rear
1911 work of Dellschau (Courtesy the Menil Collection, Houston; Photographer: Hickey-Robertson, Houston)

In 1899, Dellschau retired as a butcher and began to paint pictures of strange, fantastic-looking airships using mixed media. The colorful works include intricate montages presenting airships as the central theme. The airships, some possessing shiplike decks slung beneath balloon pontoons, are manned by crews of gentlemen. Occasionally, a cat is depicted accompanying the crew. Included in the numerous notebooks, juxtaposed among the airship drawings, are stories of flying that seem impossible for anyone to just make up—only someone who has lived the tale could write about it in such glorious detail.

Among the pages of his notebooks, Dellschau identifies the Sonora Aero Club as the umbrella organization he and the other aeronauts worked for in the 1850s. He also identifies an unknown organization (the NYMZA) as the provider of the financial backing for the design and build of the airships he documented. According to Dellschau, the Sonora Aero Club had over forty members building and flying airships in the early 1850s. Many of these club members, most with Germansounding names, are listed by name in his notebooks.

Why does Dellschau spend the few precious remaining hours of his life filling page after page with interesting drawings and descriptive information of long-ago flights and fatal crashes? And why does he make the cryptic statement that "wonder weavers" will decipher his drawings and coded statements one day and discern "what was true all along"?

Charles August Albert Dellschau was born June 4, 1830, in Brandenburg, Prussia. As a young man, he is said to have had an intense fascination with flight and aerodynamics. Dellschau arrived in the United States from Hamburg, Germany, in 1853. On his immigration record, he incorrectly listed his age as that of twenty-five years old. His occupation is listed as a farmer. Dellschau's letter of citizenship places him in Harris County, Texas, in 1856 and Fort Bend County, Texas, in 1860. Dellschau's whereabouts and profession between 1853 and 1856 are unknown in the historical records. According to his notebooks, he was employed as a draftsman for the Sonora Aero Club during the period of 1853 to 1856.

In 1861, while living in Fort Bend County, Dellschau married Antonia Hilt. By 1865 he and Antonia were living in Richmond, Texas. Antonia soon died, leaving Dellschau a sickly daughter and a healthy older stepdaughter. By 1886 he was living in Houston with his stepdaughter and her husband, Anton Stelzig. When Dellschau retired in 1899, he continued to live in the home of his stepdaughter and her husband, turning the attic of the home into a studio of sorts. Then he began to fill notebooks with over five thousand pictures of flying machines and over two hundred pages of coded text. After he died in 1923, his voluminous works languished in the Houston attic.

In 1963, forty years after Charles A. A. Dellschau died, twelve volumes of illustrated work—characterized as "fantasy flight"—were removed from the attic where he painted in secluded retirement. Found by a helpful nurse who was cleaning out the attic, the material was unceremoniously dumped on the curb to be collected as garbage. A trashman picked up the collection and sold the volumes to a Houston junk dealer, who placed them, covered with a dirty tarp, on the floor of his Washington Avenue junk store. There the works rested for another six years before an art-history student at the University of St. Thomas came across the material. Her patron, the Houston Menil Foundation, bought five volumes for S500 in 1969. The remaining volumes were purchased by a UFO researcher in 1993, with some of them eventually coming to rest in a New York art gallery.

What do others have to say about Dellschau and his work? The *New York Times* ("A Spiritual Energy in Fanciful Realms," *Art Review,* January 22, 1999) characterized Dellschau's art as "thousands of wonderfully fanciful pictures of Jules Verne-style flying machines." How fanciful were his pictures? Perhaps, they were less fanciful and more realistic than the *New York Times* reviewer could imagine.

When Jules Verne wrote *Five Weeks in a Balloon* in 1863, he was thirty-five years old and Charles Dellschau was thirty-three. While Jules Verne was just starting to write about flying, Charles Dellschau seems, according to his notebooks, to have already been an experienced aviator of some ten years. Was Dellschau a dreamer or was he mad? Was he a victim of alien abduction, or was he, in his own crude way, documenting for posterity UFO sightings of the 1850s? Why didn't Dellschau write his stories in a straightforward and readily understandable manner? And where was Dellschau between 1853 and 1856? The answers to these questions may lie in the amazing story of the great 1897 airship mystery.

CHAPTER 3

THE BEGINNING

April 6-April 14,1897

We are now ready to embark on our journey through the newspaper accounts documenting the inexplicable airship sightings of 1897. The accounts are interesting not only for the light they shed on the airship mystery, but also for their humor and quaint insight into the culture of the period.

In this chapter is a discussion of the initial sightings in the Indian Territory and north Texas, focusing on the reliable newspaper accounts. Each newspaper account of a reported sighting is given with important clues and details outlined in bold italics, and corresponding author comments immediately follow the article. Explanatory material, identified by the use of brackets, may be included in the body of the article. There are five airship sightings during this period. Compared to the wealth of airship sightings over the next few weeks, five sightings seem hardly worth mentioning. But, it is readily apparent when viewed in the context of the whole airship story that these initial sightings, perhaps of a single airship, were the forerunners for sightings of a fleet of airships soon to arrive in the Lone Star State. And now, let the participants tell their stories.

Monday

April 5,1897

DENISON MAN'S FIND

He Sees a Brilliantly Illuminated Airship Sailing Northward

South McAlester, I. T., April 5.—A gentleman who came in from Denison *last night* says that at 3 o'clock this morning (April 5), when he was returning to his room he saw a large airship going in a northern direction. It was *brilliantly illuminated*, and was going at the rate, he supposed, of about *fifty miles per hour.* There was a *peculiar swishing sound to* it, and as near as he could judge it was a *quarter of a mile up from the earth.*

> His attention was first directed toward the stars by the *peculiar sound from the ship,* or whatever it may be called, and he watched until it passed over the hills to the north.
>
> The gentleman is a Mason and a K of P. and his reputation for truth is beyond question *{Dallas Morning News,* April 6,1897, p. 4).

Reporters of the era were fond of identifying events with such terms as "yesterday," "last night," etc., when writing their articles. However, there was no guarantee the editor would include the article in "tomorrow's" edition, especially if the paper was not printed on a daily schedule. Wherever possible, I have identified by date such terms as "last night."

/. T. is an abbreviation meaning *Indian Territory.* Indian Territory was not admitted into the Union as the state of Oklahoma until 1907. Indian Territory sightings are included in this book, as they were widely reported in Texas newspapers and probably caused many Texas heads to turn skyward with the owner hoping to catch a glimpse of the mysterious travelers. Since Indian Territory shares a border (delineated primarily by the Red River) with north Texas, it seems reasonable to believe that its close proximity would engender a desire in north Texans to witness the great spectacle of a flying machine in the heavens. And from such sky-gazing came the following numerous Texas reports.

Denison, Texas, is just a couple of miles south of the Red River, and South McAlester is north of Denison. Apparently, this man was traveling from Denison to South McAlester and had just arrived at his destination when he saw the airship. The observer reported that he heard a peculiar swishing sound, which he associated with the airship. The reported speed and altitude, 50 miles per hour and iA mile, would not elicit any unusual comment today—except that the 50-miles-per-hour speed is awfully slow by today's (airplane) measuring stick. But then, anything other than birds flying in the air, regardless of speed or altitude, was cause for great comment in 1897.

Tuesday

April 6,1897

STRANGE OBJECT SEEN

"And There Shall Be Signs from the Heavens."

> Gutherie, I. T., April 7.—About 11 o'clock last night [April 6] the attention of landlord Trumball of the Arlington Hotel was attracted by a dark-looking object moving through the air above the city.
>
> Soon a bright light was seen at the front of the object, which seemed to be thrown in different directions. Mr. Trumball called a number of people, who watched the strange shadow object for a long time, and are confident it is the mysterious airship seen at so many places during the past few weeks.
>
> Its outlines were indistinct, but a light was thrown out from the front, and at times there were flashes of light along the sides. It *moved swiftly backward' and forward, sank almostto the groundjust* north of the city, and *then rose straight into the air* at great speed and disappeared in the darkness of the night *(Dallas Morning News*, April 8, 1897, p. 3; *Galveston News,* April 8; *Terrell Times-Star,* April 19,1897).

Gutherie and South McAlester are about 118 miles apart.

The flashes of light could be sparks from electrical motors or, perhaps, communication signals intended for other airships. Communicating from one location to another using signal lights was a common practice in 1897. Military organizations have used signal lights as far back in history as the Roman empire.

Did you ever see any meteors, comets, or planets move swiftly backward and forward, sink toward the ground, then rise swiftly before speeding off over the horizon? No? I didn't think so. Ever see a helicopter perform such a maneuver? No? Well, obviously you've never served in the United States Marines. Yes? Congratulations, you have passed the United States Marine Corps Advanced-Infantry Training course.

Friday

April 9,1897

MCKNIGHT'S AIRSHIP

Paris, Texas, April 9.—For several days *The News* has contained specials from different points stating that parties had an airship in the night. A man named McKnight has been working on an airship at *U. S. Marshal Williams' ranch* for some time and it is claimed he has been traveling around by night in his ship. While McKnight will not corroborate the statement, many who are in a position to know say his aerial navigation has at last become a success *(Dallas Morning News*, April 10, 1897, p. 4).

Unfortunately, the 1890s census was destroyed in a fire. Therefore, we cannot officially place a McKnight in or near Paris in the 1890s. However, a Charles McKnight is listed as residing in Sherman in the 1870 federal-population census. (See "Looking for McKnight" section in chapter 20.)

Wednesday

April 14,1897

THE AIR SHIP AGAIN

Lady and Gentleman See It at Different Localities and Describe It Minutely.

Denton, Denton Co., Tex., April 14.—That Denton is not to be behind the other towns and cities in north Texas is shown by the fact that the mysterious airship, of which so much has been said and written in the past few days, has been seen here by at least two credible persons, one a gentleman, the other a lady, whose *reputation for truthfulness can not be assailed.*

The gentleman who saw the ship says he was standing in his yard watching with the aid of a pair of powerful marine glasses, the stars, when a shadow fell athwart the moon, obscuring it for the moment. The sky being cloudless, he looked up to examine the cause.

"I at first thought it was a meteor," said he, "but upon closer examination discovered the unknown object to be *almost stationary and focusing my glasses on it*, discovered that it was moving slowly in a southeasterly direction. At this slow rate of speed the ship continued its courses for a few minutes and then *with almost a jump started off at a terrific rate* and disappeared in the southeast, *remaining in the range of my vision about twenty minutes"*

When I first ascertained the character of the object it floated about half a mile above the earth and seemed to be about fifty feet long, of a cigar shape with two great mugs thrust out from each side; a broad tail or steering saill behind and a long beak or blade resembling a cut water on a ship in front. At the point where the beak joined the main body a powerful searchlight threw its rays far into the night ahead beside which even the luminosity of the moon paled. A row of windows along the side gave out smaller lights the source of which must have been stored electricity as there was no smoke, as well as I could see very plainly, coming from the ship, not was there even a sign of a smoke stack. I do not doubt that it was an airship.

> The lady above mentioned is a member of the Ariel Society, is one of the most widely read of all the ladies in town and is not one upon whom credulity anything of a hoax-like nature could be imposed. Her description, although much less explicit than the gentleman's as she was unaided by any glasses, tallies almost exactly with the account. When she saw it, the ship was bounding along through space like a balloon.
>
> These two descriptions are better than any of their predecessors, as one of them was with the aid of powerful glasses and both of them are from people widely read and much of their readings, too of a scientific nature *(Dallas Morning News,* April 15,1897).

The exact date of the above sighting is unknown. The report from the news correspondent is dated April 14; therefore it is given in this chapter. Most likely, the sighting occurred between April 10 and April 13, with April 13 being the most likely date.

The observer's statement that he "discovered the unknown object to be almost stationary" rules out the possibility that the object could be a meteor. He further "discovered that it was moving slowly in a southeasterly direction," which could identify the object as a comet or even a planet. However, since the object "with almost a jump started off at a terrific rate," that rules out any natural phenomena such as planets, stars, comets, etc. The only heavenly bodies known to move with such languid movements and sudden changes of direction are found only in the celestial realm of Hollywood.

"... and focusing my glasses on it" refers to the observers use of field, or marine, glasses. The description and the details of this sighting are all the more accurate since the eyes had help (in the form of glasses, or binoculars as we call them today).

The gentleman's statement "remaining in the range of my vision about twenty minutes" is consistent with a modern jetliner s speed upon final approach to an airport. If you observe a modern jetliner on final approach, you can determine that it is in your range of vision for about ten minutes. The speed of a jetliner on final approach is about 140 miles per hour. The observed altitude, speed, and time of visibility all correspond with a jetliner traveling around 140 miles per hour. An airship of human design that can fly at a speed of about 140 miles per hour seems incredible for 1897.

Note that the observer pointedly refers to the absence of smoke and smokestacks. Steam was the typical locomotive power of the day. Steam supplied sufficient power to move hundreds of tons of goods and people across miles of rail at speeds in excess of 90 miles per hour. But, steam engines were very heavy and consumed prodigious amounts of water and coal fuel. The absence of smoke and a smokestack rules out steam as the source of the airships' motive power. What methods are left to provide the airships' motive power? We will determine in the next few chapters the methods available to provide sufficient motive power to propel the airships about the Texas sky.

The sightings at this point were sporadic. Since the airships were just appearing over the Texas skies, there seems to be no fake sightings yet. Later, as the sightings become more commonplace, a few tricksters attempt to outwit townspeople by launching small balloons with fires attached to confound the populace and amuse themselves. However, the "fire balloons" were easily identifiable and few people confused them with the light from the real airships.

The initial airship sightings in Indian Territory and north Texas are too few and spread over too many days to gain anything by plotting and analyzing the route of the airship(s). However, the sightings are significant in that the initial stories galvanized people's interests in the airships and more heads were now rubbernecking in the moonlight, hoping to gain at least a glimpse of the aerial wonder. With the attention of the populace now gained by the initial Texas newspaper stories, it seems reasonable to believe more sightings were reported in the following days as more people lifted their eyes skyward for a look.

TABLE 1
Initial Texas Airship Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/5/97	S. McAlester	OK	3:00 A.M.	N	50 mph	¼ mile	*DMN* 4/6/97
4/6/97	Gutherie	OK	11:00 P.M.				*DMN* 4/8/97
4/12/97	Ennis	TX	2:00 P.M.				*DMN* 4/19/97
4/1/97-4/14/97	Denton	TX	Night		Terrific rate		*DMN* 4/15/97

Note: *DMN = Dallas Morning News*

CHAPTER 4

WEDNESDAY, APRIL 14, 1897

There were seven airship sightings on the night of April 14. "Night" is defined as the time between the hours of noon one day and noon the next—that is the convention I have used to plot sightings. The reason for adopting such a convention is the propensity of the airship pilots to begin a nightly sojourn after the dinner hour and to return to their daytime hiding place before the sun rose the next morning. However, the plans of the pilots were sometimes foiled by busted machinery that required them to fly back to the daytime hiding place after daylight. We are interested in plotting the circuit of the airship—that is, its journey from start to finish—in the hope of locating its daytime hiding lair. Hence, the logic for adopting the "noon to noon" definition of a "night." The number of April 14 sightings is sufficient for us to determine the general area of the airship(s')'s daytime hiding place. The story continues.

SIGHTING THE AIRSHIP

A Mysterious Traveler of the Skies Seen at Weatherford, Corsicana and Cresson

LOOKS LIKE A PASSENGER COACH

Powerful Search Lights Fore and Aft—Has Monstrous Wings That Fan the Breeze.

Weatherford, Tex., April 15—Last night [April 14] at 9 o'clock the airship that has been mentioned in the News from Oklahoma and other points was seen here. It passed over the city in the southwesterly direction and lights *were thrown out from the front resembling the headlight on an engine.* The machine was *seen by many people,* The News Correspondent included *(Dallas Morning News,* April 16, 1897; "Watch for the Airship," *Austin American Statesman,* April 16, 1897).

The identification of the light as "resembling the headlight of an engine" is a very common characteristic of the sightings. In a metropolitan area where the local airport lands big jets, called heavies by their drivers (pilots), one can watch a big jet on final approach in the night sky and see a "light thrown out from the front resembling the headlight of an engine."

A modern jet has two of these lights, called "landing lights," one on each side of the fuselage. The first time this author saw these landing lights (as a very young man), it was a black night and I was somewhat distant from them. I was momentarily puzzled because I could not figure out how automobiles had gained the ability to fly in congested metropolitan areas. Only upon close proximity to the jet did I realize the true nature of the lights. Perhaps, you were also puzzled by your first encounter with the landing lights of a modern jetliner. Imagine how puzzled people who never saw anything previously flying in the air except birds—and an occasional witch (especially if they lived in Massachusetts)—might become.

Today, if you fly on a modern jetliner, you will see the wings flap to some degree, if the jetliner strikes turbulent air. The wings are designed to flex in this manner. Rigid wings will quite easily snap off if the wind turbulence is of any moderate amount. The 1897 airship inventors probably encountered this design issue early on and added flexibility to their ship's wings. This may be the reason people were willing to state the wings "fanned the breeze" or "flapped to give motive power." The flapping was intended to keep the wings intact and had nothing to do with motive power. But the uninitiated, which was everyone, misunderstood the flapping. Still, there may be an additional explanation for "wingflapping," which we will explore in chapters 19 and 20.

But, why were wings necessary, anyway? Well, to provide an aerodynamic force called lift and to provide stability in an atmosphere. Would alien spaceships, presumably manned—or womanned—by beings with intelligence far superior to that of humans (how else could they fly the void of space) fly around the empty air space of planet Earth with pedestrian wings? Well, I don't know, but it seems reasonable to believe any life forms capable of traveling millions, billions, or trillions of miles through space would have a sufficient understanding of physical systems and, especially, mechanical control systems to design a wingless airship. But, the foregoing is just conjecture. You certainly do not need wings to fly the void of space. Black holes are an entirely different matter (pun intended).

It has been proposed that little green (or pink or blue, etc.) men (and presumably women and children) might live beneath the poles of the earth in the nether regions of the underground, generally in close proximity too and cozy neighbors with the devil. However entertaining such a thought may be for some, if such a place existed, it seems reasonable that modern exploration would have uncovered such a civilization. But, in 1897, some people did believe such a place and people existed. In their minds, the airships' existence was a result of the underground denizens deciding the planet's surface was now worth exploring. In which case, they, the underground dwellers, would probably design airships with wings, since they would be familiar with the surface winds of the planet.

Another possible explanation for the existence of flying machines with wings in 1897 is the transfer of technology from some advanced life form to human minds and hands. A transfer of technology from aliens to humans would be an incremental step function, as the human recipients of such a transfer would not want to be overwhelmed with technology that was incomprehensible. So, it seems reasonable that an alien would advise a human to design something using the technology of the period and incorporating wings, which would represent an intermediate and comprehensible step on the road to conquering the atmosphere and, eventually, outer space. So, how could alien life forms accomplish such a technology transfer without exposing themselves to the public? Perhaps, secret government programs?

The general population was certainly well accustomed to the idea that wings were necessary for flight. The writings of all the great, but unsuccessful, aeronauts of the time, such as Sir Hiram Maxim and Samuel Langley, made pointed reference to the need for wings to fly in an atmosphere. The evidence that wings were necessary for successful flight near Earth was visible outside the kitchen window of anyone who cared to watch the swifts darting around the neighbor's chimney.

An oft-repeated description of the airship includes details of the light as "thrown out from the front" and "resembling the headlight of an engine." Sounds very much like nineteenth-century technology.

Numerous newspaper accounts might refer to an airship sighting as "seen by many people." A few accounts list every witness by their names and their positions in the community. Such a way of listing the witnesses seems to be an attempt to convince doubting editors, and perhaps doubting readers, of the sincerity and truthfulness of the report. And when the list of individuals claiming to see the airship includes many of the community's respected individuals, it is cavalier to dismiss their testimony as anything other than what it is. While two or three individuals in a particular community may successfully hoax the newspaper, it is difficult to imagine hundreds of newspapers and communities being hoaxed by each community's elite.

THE AIRSHIP AGAIN

> Corsicana, Tex., April 15—Various and truthful citizens of Corsicana today declare that the airship, which has received not a little mention in the press this week, passed over the city last night [April 14].
>
> It was described by one who is emphatic in the statement that he saw it, as being a *bright light* a long distance from the earth and was moving at *rather a fast speed* across the firmament. It was said to have been seen at about 8:30 o'clock, came from the north and was moving in a southerly direction when first noticed. The light was described as being about the *size of a water bucket* and gradually assumed smaller proportions until it vanished and was not observable to the eye. It *remained visible about ten minutes.* No messages were left behind by the aerial tourists.
>
> The object or whatever it might have been was *viewed by a party of eight or ten persons at the home of Judge Sam H. Frost* on West Third Avenue. *Dr. Wills had his attention called to it* and says that it was *certainly not a meteor,* for the reason that the light was intermittent, appearing to come and go, but that the object was too far from the earth for him to be able to see anything as to its form or shape. The light, he says, was the only visible part of the strange flyer ("Sighting the Airship," *Dallas Morning News,* April 16,1897).

Water buckets were about eighteen inches across the top. It is somewhat hard to tell the difference between an eighteen-inch light and a star, according to the mass-hysteria advocates, but not to anyone else with an interest in solving this one-hundred-year-old mystery. To which theory of the airships' origin do you think you might subscribe? Newspaper hoax? Railroad hoax? Mass hysteria? Aliens? God? Government cover-up?

Here is a fun test: wait until it is very dark, take a penlight, turn it on, and hold it about twenty feet to the side of an illuminated automobile headlight. (Let's make this tough—leave the headlight beam on low). Determine, from a distance of about fifty feet, if you can tell the difference between the headlight and the penlight. If you cannot, you must—that is, you absolutely have no choice—subscribe to the mass-hysteria solution, and therefore, you need not read any further. If you can tell the difference, then you are free to continue reading and, ultimately, discern your own solution. For those individuals who are sight-impaired, you may skip this test. For those who are thinking-impaired, you may skip the remainder of the book < Smile. >

The sighting occurred during a party "at the home of Judge Sam H. Frost." If this party was at the home of some wayward drunk, the account would never be published by the paper. Since the party was at the home of a judge, the sighting has credibility. However, notice the article does not actually claim the judge *saw* the airship, only that the sighting occurred at his home.

This sighting was witnessed by "a party of eight or ten persons." Many of the sightings had multiple witnesses. Dr. Wills is willing to state that the light is not a meteor. Although we do not know what kind of doctor Wills was, it seems the fact that he is a doctor lends credence to his identification of the sighting as an airship and not a meteor, comet, planet, star, or "fire balloon." Let us assume he was not a doctor of proctology, therefore lending greater weight to his identification of the aerial phenomenon as an airship. <Smile.>

SEEN NEAR WHITNEY

Hillsboro, Hill Co., Tex. April 17—The publication in The Dallas News yesterday and today relative to the airships that has been seen in different portions of the state has been the sole topic of conversation on the streets and elsewhere in this city today.

Since the reliability of the witnesses that have seen it is unimpeachable many persons now come forward and admit having seen it. John Ford of Whitney, brother-in-law of O. H. Young of this city, president of the county Christian Endeavor, was in the city yesterday and Mr. Young said to The News reporter:

"John Ford was here yesterday and told me that he saw the airship Wednesday night [April 14] as he was returning from Hillsboro to Whitney. He was near Peoria and looking up saw a *black object that looked very much like a passenger coach* going in a southwesterly direction. He described it as having an *immense headlight*—and as being *brilliantly lighted within* and as traveling at a *very rapid rate.* He watched it until it completely disappeared. He would not say anything about it for several days because he was *afraid somebody would think* he was trying to get off a gag."

> Other parties in various sections of the county report having seen the ship. *Several parties are going to set up here tonight and watch the heavens* for the mysterious visitor that rarely shows itself except at night ("High in the Heavens," *Dallas Morning News,* April 18,1897, p. 4).

Focus your attention on the statement "Since the reliability of the witnesses that have seen it is unimpeachable many persons now come forward and admit having seen it." The fear of ridicule for reporting a sighting seemed to lessen as more "reliable" people confessed to having seen the airship. For us to believe all the sightings across the state and even the country were a hoax, we must believe all the "reliable" people were willing to be represented as liars by the newspaper. It is not a likely scenario.

John Ford "saw a black object." Recall the description of the helicopter-like movements in the account "Strange Object Seen" (in chapter three). Is this the original, the first "black helicopter"? Did the government conspiracy to shield us from that which we are too weak to understand begin not at Roswell, New Mexico, in 1952 but much earlier? Much fodder to ponder for the conspiracy buffs among us. But, there are reasonable and believable explanations forthcoming.

In this account we have our first good description of the airship— other than a description of the light. The black object looked very much like a passenger coach—perhaps a train passenger coach. Notice how descriptions of the airship are given in terms of the day's technology. As the number of printed accounts of the sightings grew, more people watched the sky. Airship-watching parties suddenly become fashionable.

SEEN TWICE ABOUT TEXARKANA

Texarkana, Bowie Co. Tex. April 17—The mysterious bright light that has been visible in the heavens for the past fortnight has been seen from this point. Wednesday night [April 14] it was spied by the telegraph operator at Hope, Ark., who claims to have experienced a full ray of the headlight upon himself about 11 o'clock p.m.; that it was zigzagging its courses in a northwesterly direction and was sailing about a mile high; that he plainly discerned the *shape of a large dark object with one light* which he though could be nothing but an airship.

> Thursday night [April 15] *many truthful citizens* in Texarkana viewed a light of monster proportions sailing away to the northwest. It was described as too large and too near the earth to be a star ("High in the Heavens," *Dallas Morning News,* April 18,1897, p. 4).

Correspondents were sensitive to the need to frame their airship stories in a context that would be believable, else they might become an object of ridicule. "Many truthful citizens" interpreted means a large number of common, everyday, hard-working folks saw the mysterious visitor.

THE SIGHT AT ORANGE.

> Orange., Tex., April 19.—Orange was not left out by the airship that has recently enjoyed such wide advertisement. Mrs. Ed. M. Davis, wife of the city marshal, saw a luminous object passing over the western portion of this county last Wednesday night [April 14] which, from the position she occupied, appeared to be a very large comet with bright lights at the fore and a train of paler light several hundred feet long trailing behind. Its course was from the SW to NE and it kept a straight course as long as she watched it. Others saw it, and all agree that it did not descend while they were looking at it. Mrs. Davis has kept her eyes on the papers, expecting to read of an aerolite landing in one of the upper counties ("Airship Spoken," *Galveston Daily News,* April 22, 1897, p. 4).

This is the first and only description of the airship as carrying a "train of paler light several hundred feet long trailing behind." I do not think this is a genuine airship sighting. What Mrs. Davis saw is anyone's guess. Cocaine and morphine were easily available in this era of few written drug laws. Perhaps, she had too much laudanum, a morphinebased medicine, to drink. Or, perhaps, she did see the airship as it was performing some experiment that we do not understand at the moment.

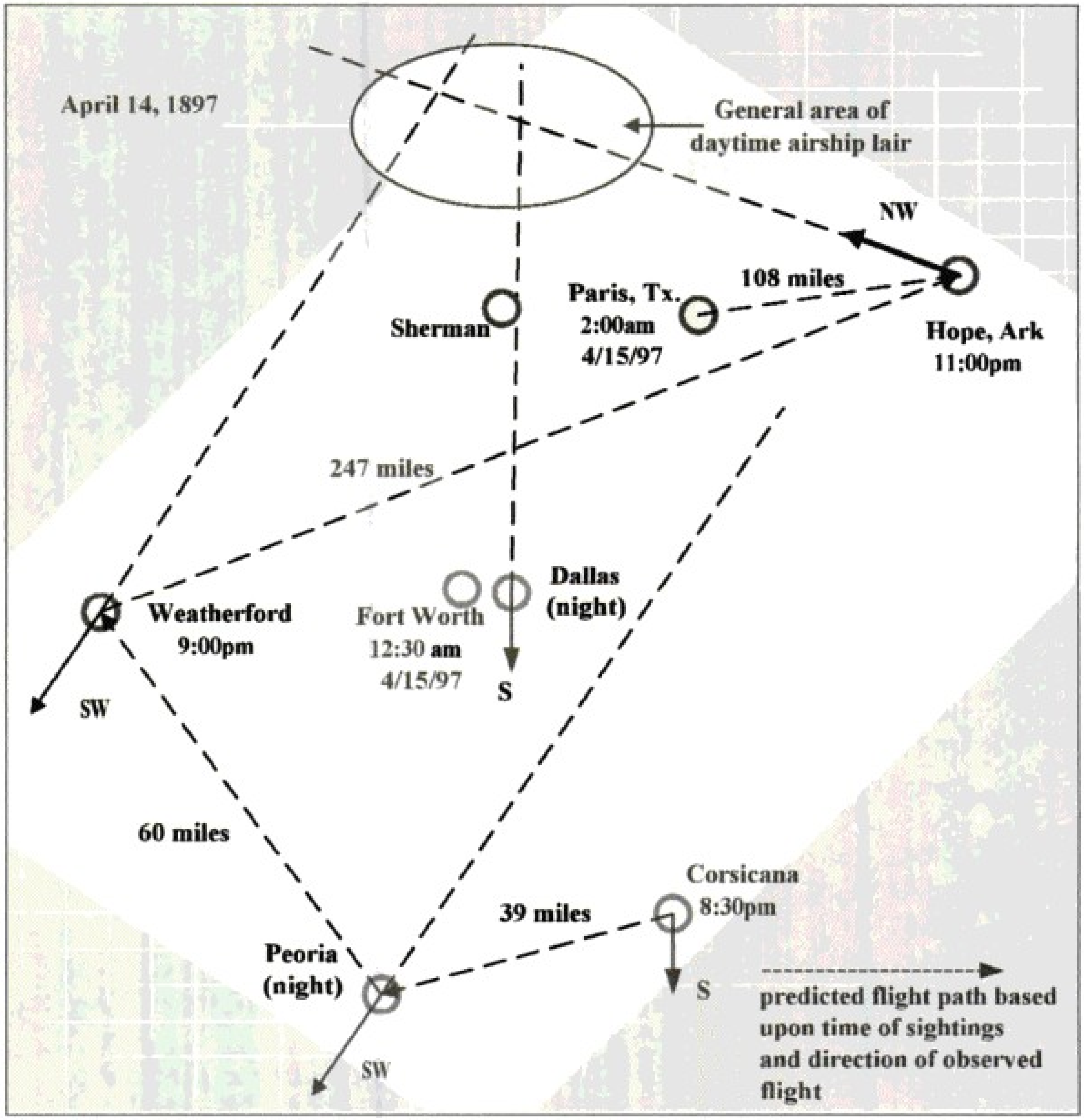
April 14, 1897
General area of daytime airship lair
NW
108 miles
Paris, Tx.
2:00am
4/15/97
Sherman
Hope, Ark
11:00pm
247 miles
Weatherford
9:00pm
SW
Fort Worth
12:30 am
4/15/97
Dallas
(night)
S
60 miles
Corsicana
8:30pm
39 miles
Peoria
(night)
S
SW
predicted flight path based upon time of sightings and direction of observed flight

April 14, 1897, sightings

Enough airship sightings occurred on April 14, 1897, to plot their locations and determine the location of the daytime hiding lair. This map shows the localities where the airship was seen on the night of April 14. The thin lines with an arrow on the end depict the direction that the airship was said by the observer to be traveling. If the time of the sighting is given in the newspaper account, it is listed. The approximate distance between localities is shown. Connect the dots and see if you can determine the possible flight path of the airship(s) based upon the stated direction of flight and time of sighting.

The dashed lines represent the supposed flight path of the airship, assuming it traveled in a straight line. Such triangulation methods are used in various disciplines to determine the origination of an event. As an example, triangulating the path of a missile will provide the location of the missile-launch site. From such measures, we can pinpoint the location of the airship(s) daytime hiding lair in the area somewhat north of Sherman. The ability to accurately pinpoint the daytime hiding place of the airship(s) will be the "icing on the cake." Pay attention!

TABLE 2
April 14, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/14/96	Dallas	TX	Night	S			*DMN* 4/18/97
4/14/97	Corsicana	TX	8:30 P.M.	N to S	Fast speed		*DMN* 4/16/97
4/14/97	Peoria (between Hillsboro and Whitney)	TX	Night	SW	Very rapid rate		*DMN* 4/18/97
4/14/97	Weatherford	TX	9:00 P.M.	SW			*AAS/DMN* 4/16/97
4/14/97	Hope	AR	11:00 P.M.	NW		1 mile	*DMN* 4/18/97

Note: *DMN* = *Dallas Morning News*
AAS = *Austin American Statesman*

TABLE 3
April 15, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/15/97	Paris	TX	2:00 A.M.	NE to NW			*DMN* 4/17/97
4/15/97	Fort Worth	TX	12:30 A.M.	SE			*DMN* 4/17/97

Almost all airship flights originated in the late evening and terminated the following morning. To get a clearer picture of the destinations, when appropriate, the sightings from the following morning are included as a "sub-table." These sightings are clearly identified on the sighting plot.

WIND AND THE FLIGHT OF THE AIRSHIP

From an April 14 sighting, I made the following comments: "The speed of the airship seems to be related to the direction of travel. Notice the time to fly from Corsicana to Weatherford, a distance of roughly 99 miles, is 30 minutes, an incredible 198 miles per hour. Yet, the time to travel from Weatherford, Texas, to Hope, Arkansas, a distance of 247 miles, is 2 hours, a slow 126 miles per hour." Why the difference in speed for each direction? Did the airship begin experiencing some mechanical difficulty, or was it intentionally flying slowly to plot the lay of the land for future reference? Or, maybe it landed in a remote section of the region for some unknown purpose, with a resulting reduced average speed from Weatherford to Hope? What could have happened to yield two greatly differing average velocities? The explanation is wind resistance.

When an airship or airplane is flying into the wind, called a headwind, its speed is reduced proportionally to the speed of the wind. When an airship or airplane is flying away from the wind, called a tailwind, its speed is increased proportionally. Since a mathematician can solve for two unknown quantities (wind speed and airship speed), if there are two equations, we can determine the airship and wind speed from the information we have.

Note:The following two equations give the averages of the two quantities of concern: air speed and wind speed. There is no way we can determine the maximum, or instantaneous, speed for these two quantities given the information available.

air speed + wind speed =198 mph (the headwind equation)
air speed - wind speed = 126 mph (the tailwind equation)

If we add the two equations simultaneously, we get:

2 * average air speed = 324 mph

or

average air speed = 162 mph

Now, we place the value of the average air speed back into one of the original equations and solve for average wind speed:

air speed + wind speed = 198 mph (original headwind equation)
162 mph + wind speed = 198 mph
average wind speed = 36 mph

Substituting the air speed into the original equation for the tailwind also yields an air speed of 36 miles per hour. So, with a great degree of certainty we can predict, using the sighting data we have from the newspaper accounts, the average wind speed was 36 miles per hour on the evening of April 14, 1897. To confirm this prediction, and in some way validate the observations in the newspaper accounts as highly accurate, I researched old newspapers along the line of flight for a weather report for April 14, 1897.I was unsuccessful in finding a definitive account of the wind speed for April 14. I did, however, find a report that on the evening of April 14, a severe thunderstorm passed through Sherman, Texas *(Dallas Morning News,* April 15, 1897, p. 4). Sherman is located just a couple of miles north of the flight path of the airship. Every spring thunderstorm in Texas is accompanied by high winds from the northwest. So, we have at least circumstantial evidence of high winds occurring during the evening in question. But, just how high were the winds?

Continuing to search for evidence of high winds on April 14,I looked through the *Report of the Chief of the Weather Bureau, 1897-1898* (U.S. Department of Agriculture, Weather Bureau, Washington, Government Printing Office, 1899). Unfortunately, the Weather Bureau reports were not given by day, but were summarized by month and only for the locations possessing a Weather Bureau station. The closest station to the flight path of the airship was at Abilene, Texas, which is some 50 miles west of the nearest point on the airship's flight path. The Weather Bureau reported that the highest sustained wind for Abilene in the month of April was 36 miles per hour.

Living in the north Texas area for many years, I have weathered numerous spring thunderstorms. The thunderstorms roll out of the northwest and tumble down the Red River valley into the Mississippi valley. If a weatherman predicts the thunderstorm's ascension between 8:00 P.M. and 10:00 P.M., he will be right much more than he will be wrong. The severe thunderstorms are always accompanied by high winds. In this age, the sustained wind speed of these tornado-producing storms is around 35 miles per hour, with gusts up to 60 miles an hour a common attribute of the sometimes-lethal storms. It is difficult to imagine the wind habits of these dangerous storms have changed over the last one hundred years. A severe thunderstorm rolling down the valley today will have the same physical characteristics as a thunderstorm one hundred years ago. Additionally, literature from the early days of Texas describing the storms endured by the pioneers is identical to the descriptions of thunderstorms today. Armed with this knowledge of spring thunderstorm behavior and the fact that Sherman experienced a severe thunderstorm on the night in question, and knowing the highest sustained wind in April in the general area was 36 miles per hour, it is entirely reasonable for us to believe that the reported accounts of the airship sightings correspond with the known weather patterns that existed on the night of interest. That is, a northwesterly wind was blowing during the evening of April 14, and the wind impacted the flight of the airship.

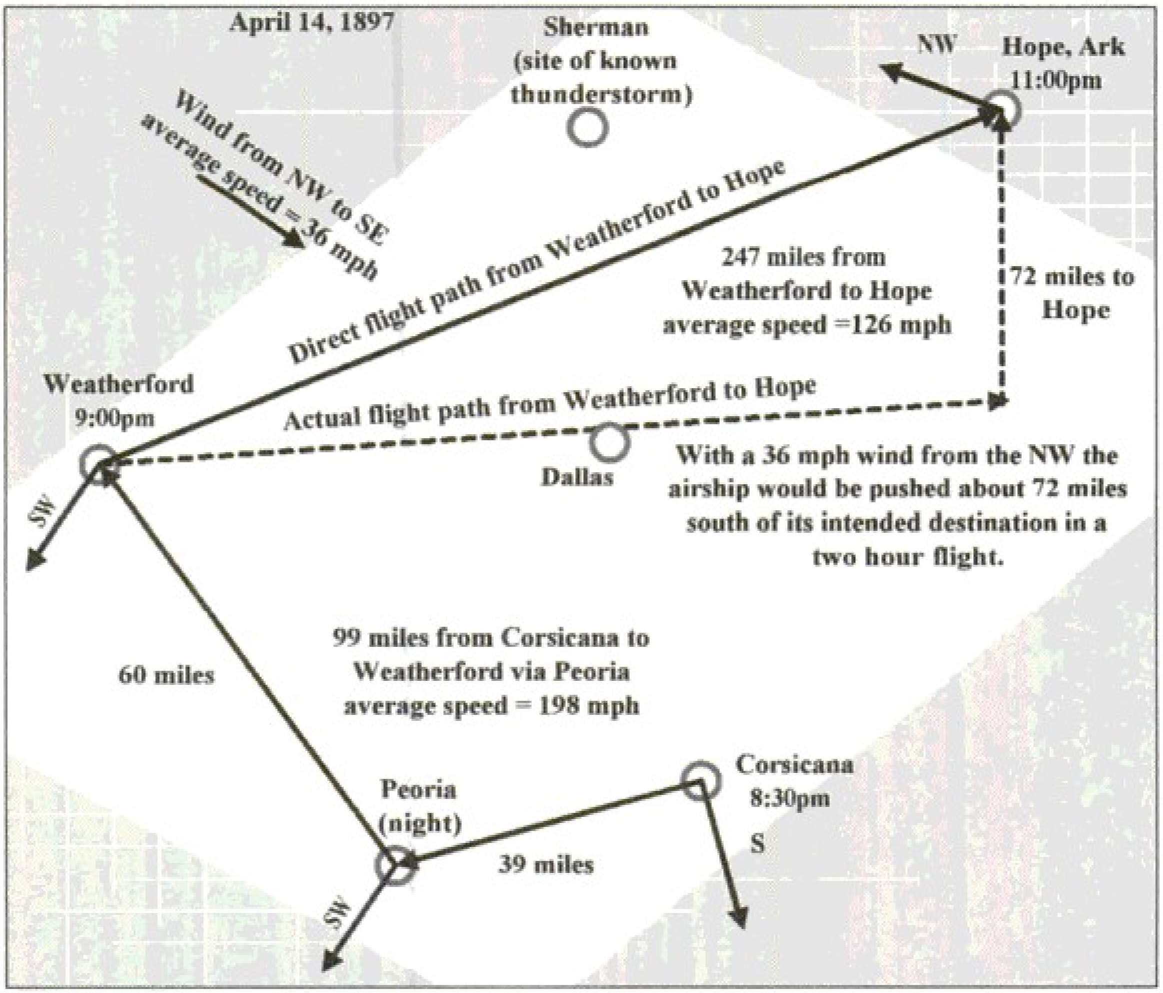
April 14, 1897
Sherman
(site of known
thunderstorm)
NW
Hope, Ark
11:00pm
Wind from NW to SE
average speed = 36 mph
Direct flight path from Weatherford to Hope
247 miles from
Weatherford to Hope
average speed =126 mph
72 miles to
Hope
Weatherford
9:00pm
Actual flight path from Weatherford to Hope
Dallas
With a 36 mph wind from the NW the
airship would be pushed about 72 miles
south of its intended destination in a
two hour flight.
SW
60 miles
99 miles from Corsicana to
Weatherford via Peoria
average speed = 198 mph
Corsicana
8:30pm
S
Peoria
(night)
39 miles
SW

April 14 map

Although the northwesterly wind was not a headwind for the Weatherford-Hope leg of the trip, but actually a sidewind, the airship would experience a force proportional (36 miles per hour) to the velocity of the wind pushing it to the southeast, off its intended path. Keeping the math simple, we can estimate that in the two hours the airship was flying to Hope, the northwesterly wind would push the airship about 72 miles southeast of its destination. Seventy-two miles represent about one-third of the distance between Weatherford and Hope. So, the average speed of the airship to get from Weatherford to Hope when calculated on a straight-line path would be reduced accordingly, or about one-third. One-third of 198 mph is 66 miles per hour. Subtract 66 from 198 and we have 132 miles per hour, which is in very close agreement to the calculated speed of 126 miles per hour on a straight-line path between Weatherford and Hope.

Notice that the airship, if experiencing a 36-miles-per-hour wind from the northwest, pushing it off course, would wind up flying over Dallas on its way from Weatherford to Hope. Since the Dallas report of the sighting does not give a time, we cannot say for sure that the airship passed over Dallas on its way to Hope. But, from the analysis, it sure does look like it may have.

A discerning observer may note that if a northwest wind was blowing for all of the time the airship was airborne, then the airship would experience a similar sidewind (Corsicana to Peoria) and even a headwind (Peoria to Weatherford) effect as it traversed the portion of its flight path from Corsicana to Weatherford. If such a case existed, then the average speed between the two legs of the journey would be approximately the same. Since the average speed of the two legs of the path are not the same we are left to conclude the wind was not blowing from the northwest during the first leg of the journey. The explanation, a late-evening spring storm blew in on April 14,1897, just as spring storms do today.

In the spring in north Texas, the wind usually blows out of the southeast until a cool front moves through from the west-northwest. A cool front can trigger a spring thunderstorm any time of the day or night. Also, spring thunderstorms in north Texas arise during the late evening hours as the result of the cooling effect from the sun going over the horizon. When this occurs, violent thunderstorms rush in from the westnorthwest with accompanying strong winds.

On April 14, it is possible that the wind was initially from the southeast, giving the airship a good tailwind in the early evening hours, or the wind may have been only very light or even still. As the airship made its way past Weatherford and began the second leg of the journey, a thunderstorm may have rolled into the region and began pushing the airship off course with its strong northwesterly winds.

Finally, another possibility is that the crew of the airship, sometime in the flight between Weatherford and Hope, encountered the thunderstorm and set the airship down on the ground to wait out the storm. This scenario is only likely if the thunderstorm was off in the distance, as an unprotected airship of this design would be blown to pieces sitting unsheltered and unprotected on the ground. The crew, by now, would realize the best chances of surviving the thunderstorm would be to remain aloft and ride the winds. If the airships were truly capable of flying 200 miles per hour then riding out a storm with 50- to 80-milesper-hour gusts would not present any major difficulty. Of course, getting struck by lightning while aloft would present another set of issues. However, in these spring storms, the wind precedes the storm by such a distance that it is entirely possible for the airship to safely traverse the distance between Weatherford and Hope without encountering any serious threat from lightning.

My personal feeling is the airship was trying to reach its daytime hiding lair near Sherman as it left Weatherford. The spring thunderstorm brewed up about the time it neared Weatherford and blew it off course, causing it to fly over Dallas, a community it preferred to avoid, as it continued to get blown off course in its eastward travel. At night, the crew would only know they had left Texas when they crossed the Red River. Remember this was a time of no radio beacons. Navigation was strictly by visual reference to known ground objects. By the time they could turn the ship to a westerly heading after crossing the Red, sufficient time and distance passed, allowing them to pass near Hope. Hope is about ten miles north of the Red River.

If we seek "proof" of the veracity of these newspaper accounts, we have such "proof" in our hands. On the night of April 14, 1897, one airship, of unknown origin, flew across the night skies of Texas. Mass hysteria and prank calls to the newspaper do not admit of systematic events that yield the type of results just demonstrated by a thorough analysis of the evidence. Such behavior, that is hysteria and pranks, in humankind is random, and any analysis of such behavior yields random, usually nonsensical, results that do not produce reasonable conclusions from the analysis. Only casual systems, that is, systems that are systematic, which have times and events associated with them, yield the kind of results just demonstrated. One or more people flying a machine around the night sky of Texas represents a casual system. In other words, if it didn't really happen, the above analysis would not yield any meaningful results. But, the analysis did yield meaningful results; therefore it did happen.

But, the great skeptics among us will say, "Yea, right. It was planned all along by the newspapers just to sell more newsprint. The newspaper people conspired to print these stories and made up the dates and times to be 'casual.'" Okay, that may be a valid argument. So, please explain how all the hundreds of newspapers that reported airship sightings across the country in the spring of 1897 (see appendix B for a long list of newspapers known to print airship stories) could conspire to report such sightings and keep their conspiracy secret? Conspiracies of more than one person are difficult to keep secret and are seldom successful. And just how could all of these far-flung newspapers coordinate such a conspiracy? It seems improbable that newspaper editors and reporters conspired to report anything about airships other than what was actually seen and reported in their locale.

CHAPTER 5

THURSDAY, APRIL 15, 1897

There are twelve airship sightings on the night of April 15. As the story continues and the number of sightings increases, the airships' construction is revealed in greater detail. The analysis of the reported sightings for this night lays the foundation for the belief that there is more than one airship flying the skies of Texas. The story continues ...

SEEN AT CRESSON

Fort Worth, Tex. April 15—Night Chief Operator Dunlap of the Texas and Pacific Union depot relay office in this city, hands the News correspondent the following:

The operator at Cresson on the Rio Grande railway claims he has seen the mysterious and much talked of airship. He describes it as *resembling the top of a passenger coach in shape, long and pointed at the ends,* with powerful *searchlight in the front end,* with *several smaller ones on the sides.* The ship appeared to the operator to be *about sixty feet in length,* and when first sighted was making a terrific rate of *speed* in a southwestern direction. It had *wings* on it, he said, *something like that of a bat.* After passing the station about two miles he saw the ship *suddenly alter its courses* and turn to the southeast and disappeared within a few minutes behind a cloud. He says this is no optical illusion nor after touch of an extensive jag—but the truth, pure and simple.

Continuing, Mr. Dunlap said:

"This is dead straight. I am now convinced that there is something in this airship business for several prominent citizens of this locality also saw the ship."

Cresson is thirteen miles southwest of Fort Worth ("Sighting the Airship," *Dallas Morning News,* April 16,1897).

This account gives us greater detail of the airship. The interesting details are highlighted. The passenger-coach reference must be something similar to a train coach and not a stagecoach. The "long and pointed" ends suggest an aerodynamic shape. "... wings on it" is pretty much self-explanatory. Wings are needed for stability in an atmosphere. ". . . suddenly alter its courses" rules out the possibility of it being a comet, planet, or star and implies the airship was maneuverable. Naturally occurring objects do not "suddenly alter their courses" unless they are involved in a collision with another heavenly body. The smaller lights on the side suggest the existence of portholes alongside the body, or coach, of the airship.

The above account is dated April 15. It seems likely that the date of the sighting was that night. The observer is the Cresson telegraph operator who telegraphed the Fort Worth operator the story of his sighting. The statement that the Fort Worth operator handed the correspondent the telegraph from the Cresson operator lends weight to the judgment that the sighting was on the evening of April 15.

A jag is a period term meaning "a state of being drunk." People were thought to imagine all manner of nonexistent things when in a drunken state. A comparable situation today might be the suspicion that someone reporting weird things is high on some drug such as cocaine.

A few people, typically ufologists, have read some of the sighting accounts and have reached the conclusion that the whole episode was a great farce initiated and perpetuated by railroad telegraphers. According to their explanation, bored telegraphers sat around in the early morning hours and made up these accounts as a means of having some fun. What these people do not realize is that telegraphers were accountable to their railroad employers for what they transmitted. Logs were kept and reviewed daily. It is really unimaginable that such a widespread conspiracy could be started and maintained for six months by members of such an esteemed profession while sanctioned by their employers. Telegraphers of the day commanded much respect and admiration. A telegrapher was hardly the type of individual to go around making up stories.

El Paso, April 16. (Special.)—The "airship fever" seems to have struck this vicinity. Mr. Robert Hitch and family, living north of town, say they saw a *bright light* in the heavens between 8 and 9 o'clock last night [April 15] and supposed it to be the much talked of airship. The light seemed to be headed for the northwest and was going at a *good rate of speed.* Several others also saw it. *The character and truthfulness of those who claim to have seen the airship are unquestionable* and it is likely, if there is anything in this airship business, the object seen last night was the flying ship *{Bloomington (Illinois) Daily Pantagraph,* April 17, 1897, p. 5).

AT AND NEAR MARSHALL

> Marshall, Harrison Co., Tex. April 16, Conductor Virgil Brown and his brakeman James Murphy saw the much described airship at Jewella, La., a station on the Texas and Pacific railway, thirtytwo miles east of here last night [April 15]. There seemed to be a *huge searchlight* that attached to the aerial machine and the light was thrown in several different directions. The speed of the ship was *far faster than a railroad train.* The ship appeared to be going in the direction of Marshall.
>
> Dick Weatherby, a night watchman at the Texas and Pacific railway car shops (in Marshall) said he saw this unusual aerial visitor at 10:30 o'clock last night. *A number of other reputable persons* claims to have had a view of this unknown visitor at about the same time.
>
> Last night the sky was perfectly clear. Many people have provided themselves with powerful glasses and will scan the heavens tonight to get a view of this strange object ("Flight of the Airship," *Dallas Morning News,* April 17, 1897, p. 8).

By now, the reader can see that the "huge searchlight" is a common attribute in many sightings. From now on the phrase will be highlighted only to show the consistency of the descriptions.

Railroad trains of the period could go as fast as 90 miles per hour, but the typical speed of passenger trains was 70 miles per hour. The phrase "far faster than a railroad train" could mean just about any speed. But, let's think about the statement for a moment. Today, if we were to see a car pass us on the freeway and observe that it was going far faster than the vehicle in which we were riding, its speed might be about double ours. If so, then the airship could have been traveling around 140 to 180 miles per hour. Although this speed still sounds incredibly fast for anything flying in the skies in 1897, it is still in close agreement with the speed calculated at the end of chapter four, where the airship was seen traveling from Corsicana to Weatherford to Hope.

Chartered by Congress in 1871, the Texas and Pacific Railroad maintained a maintenance facility at Marshall. The maintenance complex was built in 1873.

The citation of "a number of other reputable persons" gives great weight to the story's truthfulness—at least the editor hoped it did. After seeing this phrase or similar ones repeated again and again in the accounts of the airship sightings, a thinking person begins to wonder how many persons who were not reputable saw the airships. Of course, one must have some idea of the number of unreputable people versus the number of people who where considered reputable in any particular community to even begin to guess at the number of those unreputable individuals who might have seen the airship.

Or, maybe, only reputable people's visions were good enough to see the airship. Perhaps, the unreputable were to bleary-eyed from drinking to see much of anything, or they were too hung over to report the sighting the following morning. But, more likely, correspondents just would not write an airship story unless they could believe the individual telling the story.

In that day and age, pretty much like now, such discerning censorship ruled out any stories getting into print based on unreliable individuals' accounts. Too bad, at least they might have made for very entertaining reading. But, I believe we can "take to the bank" the truthfulness of many of the accounts that follow. Editors and newspaper correspondents just had too much to lose—such as their credibility and subsequently their jobs and, perhaps, even their profession—if they printed false accounts of airships. They would ensure the truthfulness of what they printed to the maximum extent practicable and then hedge their bet by editorializing against the existence of the airship. Remember, the age of marginal reporting was not yet upon the land.

As for hoaxes, newspapers of the period did engage in some amount of fake storytelling. Such stories were designed to be represented as factual, yet the yarn was totally fabricated. Usually, such a story was presented to the public in installments. When newspapers engaged in this sort of serialized storytelling, they typically informed their readers the yarn was a hoax at the end of the final installment. The airship accounts do not fit the mold of a typical newspaper hoax. However, we cannot completely rule out the possibility that any particular story may be a hoax, as there are several known stories, not included in this book and not of Texas origin, that are known to be hoaxes.

Those airship stories known to be false were generated by some member of the community, usually with the help of a friend who supplied corroborating testimony to the truthfulness of the account. The primary reason we know they are false is because the individual or individuals perpetuating the hoax came forward at some later date and admitted to hoaxing the community. A common attribute of these hoaxes was the inclusion of some outrageous claim, such as the abduction of a cow from a farmer's field. Other than the purported speed of the airship, which in some accounts seems outrageous for 1897 America, all airship stories in this book stand the test of reasonable and realistic events unless otherwise identified.

SEEN NEAR HILLSBORO

A Lawyer had a good view and gives a graphic description

Hillsboro, Hill Co., Tex., April 16—Last evening [April 15] *Hon J. Spence Bounds* of this city was called out into the southwestern section of the country near Osceola to write the will of William H. Gathings, an old settler, who is quite sick and is not expected to recover. It was dusk when Mr. Bounds got there and as the will was lengthy with complications in it, it was nearly 9 o'clock when he got through and started home. What occurred on his homeward drive is best related in his own language to the News reporter in the presence of Judge J. M. Hall of the eighteenth judicial district and Hon. W. E. Spell, attorney for the Missouri, Kansas, and Texas railway. Said Mr. Bounds:

"I want to relate a little thing that I witnessed last night. I had been up to old Uncle Billy Gathings to write his will and was driving homeward thinking of the old man and his useful career and the reward that doubtless awaited him in the good hereafter when I was astonished by a *brilliant flash from an electric search light* which passed directly over my buggy. I want to tell you also that I was almost frightened to death by it for it made the space around me as light as day. My horse was also frightened and came near overturning the buggy. He snorted, reared, and plunged madly trembling meantime like a leaf. My hair stood straight up and I was almost too exercised to pay attention to the horse. Fortunately the light rested on us scarcely a second, but *glided along over the fields* and the country till it was suddenly turned upward toward the heavens. Then following it with my eyes I beheld about 1000 feet above me. I judge a huge black monster from which the light emanated. It was in shape *something like a cigar,* but *underneath there appeared to be a body similar to the body of a ship,* which was attached to the object and from which the light originated. The search light was presently shut off and a *number incandescent lights flashed around the lower edge of the body* of the vessel or whatever it was. When I first saw it was going *very slowly* in a southerly direction. The lights were soon entirely extinguished and it glided along like a small black cloud in the air. When some miles further south the search light again appeared and guided along the timbers of Aquilla creek and rested on a hill about three miles this side of the town of Aquilla. The vessel or ship steered for the hull and as it approached it all the lights were again extinguished and the ship disappeared from my sight. I think it must have stopped on the hill.

"I never had anything to so thoroughly work me up and I resumed my journey home, considering in my mind the strange adventure of the night. I have read and heard much of the airships, but I never expected to see one. I had never seriously thought of them as possible but in a few minutes I recalled the many stories I have recently seen in the papers about airships and decided that what I had seen was an airship. When I was within a mile of Hillsboro, about an hour later, I saw the same object rise from the locality where it disappeared. It ascended till it looked like a mere dark cloud in the skies when it started in a northeasterly direction and went at a terrific rate of *speed.* It must have gone at the rate *of 100 miles an hour or more.* It was headed as near as I can judge toward Dallas or near there. Every few seconds it would send out *brilliant flashes and sparkles* but it traveled most of the time in darkness.

"Now gentlemen, I am not prepared by my profession to believe everything I see and hear, but I saw that object and my horse saw it. It almost made both of us frantic. So there is no denying the fact of its existence. The question is what is it? Man has conquered the ocean, but we are told that the devil is the prince of the air. Again, the scriptures say the devil shall be turned loose for a season. Who knows but what the scripture is being fulfilled right here before our very eye. It is possible I admit for man to get up a flying machine, but still for all that I have seen I feel curious as to what it was and can't help it."

> Judge Hall and Mr. Spell were such interested in the narrative. The former commenting on it said:
>
> "There is no end to the invention of man and I place fully as much confidence in what my friend Bounds saw as the accounts I read in the papers about airships everyday."
>
> "Yes," added Mr. Spell, "when Bounds in on the opposite side of a case that I am I think he is the most imaginative man in Texas, but when he descends from the bar and says on his honor as a gentleman that a thing is so I deal very gently with him and always give him the benefit of the doubt" ("Flight of the Airship," *Dallas Morning News*, April 17, 1897, p. 8).

The description "underneath there appeared to be a body similar to the body of a ship" would be a gondola or the coach mentioned in previous accounts.

"Brilliant flashes and sparkles" are evidence of electrical motors in use on the airship. Electrical motors generate a great deal of sparking where the commutator brushes rub against the commutator as it spins around. We typically do not see the sparks they generate today because the sparking has been much reduced due to better-quality materials for commutator brushes and because most electrical motors have that portion of the motor in a tight or sealed portion of the apparatus to prevent accidental fires or explosions.

Explosions and fires from open commutator brushes were an everyday threat and reality in the early days of electrical motors. Today, any electrical motor on an airplane must meet stringent FAA and industry regulations regarding its safety. However, to get an idea of what people might be seeing, except on a much smaller scale, look into the air intake of a hand-held hair dryer while it is running. Don't look to closely, though, as we do not want you to stick anything in your eyes. You should see some sparking going on. Now imagine such sparking magnified, perhaps a hundred-thousandfold.

This is the first account that places a high number on the speed of the airship. Previous accounts just stated the airship was going "very fast" or "faster than a railroad train," etc. From such comments we will attempt to gauge the speed of the airship. A vehicle that could ascend the skies and fly up, down, forward, and backward does not seem too incredible for 1897 technology. What does seem so incredible is a machine that could fly so fast (100 mile per hour plus) in 1897. The Wright brothers are still six years away from making their first successful flight from Kittyhawk, and Count Ferdinand von Zeppelin is three years away from flying his first 30 miles per hour airship. Could only alien life-forms possess the technology to fly 100 miles per hour? If so, they must be humanoid as Truthful Scully did not remark on any unusual physical features of the crewmember he saw repairing the ship at Hawkins Tank.

SEEN AT PARIS?

An Accurate Description by One Who Observed It Closely

Paris, Tex., April 16.—Several parties claim to have witnessed the flight of the mysterious airship that has attracted so much attention the last few days, as it passed over this city at an early hour yesterday morning [April 15]. The most accurate account is gleamed from Mr. J. A. Black, the night watchman for the Paris oil and cotton company's plant. He said to The News man:

"I was engaged in making my usual rounds at the mill yesterday morning about 2 o'clock when I observed a faint, but *luminous object* in the northeast sky which attracted my attention. It had the appearance of being enveloped in a luminous, hazy cloud. I first thought it to be a meteor of gigantic proportions and its speed appeared equal to such a planetary tramp. As it came nearer this idea was quickly dispelled. I ran to the cabin of a colored man by the name of Jim Smith, just across the road, and awoke him and together we viewed the aerial monster as it approached nearer. From what appeared to be at first a luminous cloud there was now clearly outlined a monster airship. Myself and the negro Smith were held spellbound by the sight. We had a perfect view of the ship for the night was clear and the moon was shinning bright at the time. The ship had sails or *wings outstretched on both sides of its cigar-shaped body and on both ends there were large rotating fans projecting from the sails at an angle of about 45 degrees, the one in front being elevated, while the one at the rear was depressed,* somewhat resembling the tail of a bird. We could only gain a faint idea of its accurate size, but think it must have been *200 feet long,* the sails or *wings constituting nine-tenths of the whole.* The *cigar-shaped cabin was apparently suspended in the midst of the sails,* and it was evident that the fans *were propelled by some power or force located in the cabin.* The *noise of the propelling machinery was plainly heard* as the ship sailed swiftly over us. My dog was with me when it was first discovered, and he set up an unearthly moaning, which he continued until the curious visitor was completely lost to view. The negro was visibly affected, and being naturally superstitious lost no time in falling to his knees and offering up a prayer for the safety of himself and family. The negro even now claims that the airship was none other than the return of Noah's ark with wing-like attachments on its way toward the Mississippi bottoms, its mission being to save the colored folks from the perils of the overflow in that section. I am sure for my part that what I saw was a veritable airship and that it had lights *radiatingfrom the various openings on its sides,* but whether originating from the power of illuminating machinery or not I am unable to say. I would judge that it was traveling at about the *same rate of speed as the passenger trains do in Texas,* although from the time I first observed it in the far northeast sky until it disappeared from view in the northwest, was *not over ten minutes,* I think" Mr. Black says that he is willing to make affidavit as to the truthfulness of the assertions above ("Flight of the Airship," *Dallas Morning News,* April 17,1897, p. 8).

So far, the descriptions of the airship are pretty consistent, with the length of the airships being the only inconsistent feature in the newspaper reports. Several accounts place the length of the span from wing tip to wing tip as 150 to 200 feet and other accounts judge the length to be 50 or 60 feet. The ship is cigar-shaped with two canvas-covered wings, a rudder, a searchlight, and other lights visible from the side of it.

The account says the wings made up nine-tenths of the whole. The remaining one-tenth is the width of the "cabin . . . suspended in the midst of the sails." That is, the width of the cabin would then be onetenth of 200—or about 20 feet.

"Same speed as the passenger trains," and being in sight "not over ten minutes" place the speed of the airship between 70 miles per hour and 150 miles per hour. High-speed passenger trains of the day traveled the open road between 70 and 90 miles per hour, depending upon the terrain, the condition of the tracks, and the type of service. Probably 100 to 120 miles per hour is a good estimate of the ship's speed and is in close agreement with previous estimates of the airship's speed.

RAILROAD MAN SAW IT

Sherman, Texas. April 16.—W. B. Hellyer, brakeman of the Missouri, Kansas and Texas railway in this city, last night [April 15] saw a *dark oval shaped object* apparently *six times its diameter in length* pass across the moon. It moved slowly and apparently toward the southeast. At the hour Mr. Hellyer saw what he thinks may be the airship there was not a cloud in the sky ("Flight of the Airship," *Dallas Morning News*, April 17, 1897, p. 8).

If the diameter is 25 feet, then the length is 150 feet *(6 x 25 = 150)*, still consistent with previous descriptions of the airship's length and width.

SEEN AT FORT WORTH

Ennis, Ellis Co., Tex., April 16.—Conductor W. W. Hanney of the Fort Worth branch, said today that while sitting on his front porch with his wife and mother at Fort Worth last night [April 15] their attention was attracted to a strange object moving over the city. He says it was a *large dark object,* bearing a *bright light in front,* but he did not see any wings or sails. The object was moving in a southwest direction and soon passed out of his sight ("Flight of the Airship," *Dallas Morning News,* April 17, 1897, p. 8).

QUALITY OF LIQUOR INTERFERES.

Waxahachie, Ellis Co., Tex April 16—The people of Waxahachie have been looking skyward today in hopes of getting a glimpse of the much talked of airship. A certain gentleman remarked to the News reporter that the whiskey sold in Waxahachie was very good, and he didn't think any airship would be discovered from this reservation. This remark will not keep many from viewing the skies diligently to night ("Flight of the Airship," *Dallas Morning News,* April 17,1897, p. 8).

LESS SKEPTICAL NOW

Denton, Denton Co., Tex., April 16—Since other dispatches in the News report the presence of an airship in Texas, other observers here have been bolder thereby report that they too have seen the mysterious vessel, and less doubt is attached to the report from this place in The News yesterday [April 15] relative thereto ("Flight of the Airship," *Dallas Morning News,* April 17,1897, p. 8).

When a few creditable people confess to viewing some phenomenon, other, perhaps less creditable, people will step forward and admit to witnessing the same event. No one wants to be accused of seeing things that don't exist. However, many of those individuals who feel safe and secure in their worldly positions will quite readily admit to witnessing something unusual, as they do not fear ridicule. Other, less secure individuals, who depend upon the goodwill of their neighbors to survive a less forgiving society, fear ridicule greatly and will not admit to anything out of the ordinary unless the path was previously trod by the fearless and respected. It is to be expected that the number of reported sightings would be few until the newspapers printed accounts of sightings by respected individuals. Then the leak becomes a flood, as we will see.

THE AIRSHIP'S "WATCHMAN, WHAT OF THE NIGHT?"

> *And now come deponents and make affidavit* that the airship has been seen sailing over Texas. The story comes this time from concurrent and cumulative, reliable testimony. It was seen near Weatherford night before last [April 15], sailing over the city, *by a number of persons,* and last, but not least, by The Statesman correspondence, which puts the fact beyond doubt. All these intelligent people can hardly have been deluded and deceived by their optics. If they were not, and if the stories coming from different sections of the country are true that airships are frequently seen during the night. What does it mean?

> It must be remembered that this thing has been going on for several months. These ships have been seen at Kansas City, *Leavenworth, Kan., over Oklahoma, and, lately, over Weatherford, Tex.* The sea serpent was for many years considered a myth, or an apparition to the deceived, excited optics of sailors, but it has finally been established upon reliable testimony that sea monsters have been seen and captured. Now is it possible that any man or set of men have invented and

secretly constructed an airship, in which they make voyages through the air at night, and have succeeded in concealing all the facts connected with the airship such a length of time? If the evidence from remote sections of the country is correct and conclusive, then we must take it that some one or some parties of men have invented and are successfully working airships, or that there is some supernatural power that has come to the aid of the mortals and is taking observations along the earth's surface from floating airships. As impossible as it would seem that such an experiment could be successfully concealed from the public, of course it can more readily be believed that these ships are sailed by supernatural crews.

> Yet it is not impossible to believe the latter theory. Many Biblical scholars believe that prophecy is about to be fulfilled. They are in doubt only upon the date to begin their calculation, whether at the birth of Christ or at the beginning or ending of His ministry. There is a doubt of about thirty-three years in their calculations, but many of the best scholars in the church believe that it is the only ground of doubt. If that is true, it is time that we begin to look for wonders in the heavens. We have had the fulfillment of prophecy of the extraordinary events that were to take place on earth, floods, famines, earthquakes, wars and rumors of wars, and religious persecutions, one sect murdering another sect wholesale and believing they were doing God's service. We have even had healers coming to see us saying they possessed all the powers of Christ, and claiming substantially that they were Christ. All the predictions of prophecy concerning what would happen on the face of the earth have been verified, and if these airships are supernatural the heavens are about to declare the fulfillment of prophecy.

> But, as difficult as it is to believe that these airships have been invented and are operated by men of the earth, *even that is more easily believed than to believe that these ships are manned and sailed by celestial crews* and portend the beginning of another dispensation pointed out by the inspired writers *(Austin American Statesman,* April 17,1897, p. 4).

". . . and now come deponents and make affidavit" was pretty much the ultimate in attempting to convince someone you were telling the truth. Making affidavits in the glorious age of steam engines was no small matter. Affidavits were taken very seriously and anyone falsely swearing to an affidavit was punished severely by the judicial system. Yet, with the threat of confinement in prison for falsely swearing, people were willing to legally swear they saw this mysterious flying machine.

Preachers, biblical scholars, and their followers tend to look at any unknown and unfamiliar event as originating from or otherwise serving heaven's purpose. This is especially true when a date supposed to be of special significance is near, such as the beginning of a new century or millennium. Today, we can appreciate the latter case, having passed from the twentieth century to the twenty-first century. I do not recall any inexplicable events during the intervening years from 1999 and now that might be interpreted as God or God's messengers collecting the righteous (regardless of the Heaven's Gate cult advocating otherwise). However, the righteous may in fact have been collected. So, perhaps, the Heaven's Gate crowd was right, and that could explain the social decay we perceive in postmodern society. So, if this is the case, I guess you and I will not be seeing much of the real heaven's gate beyond St. Peter and the outside of the pearly portal prior to our departure to other, less agreeable abodes. < Smile.>

As hard as it is to imagine that someone had actually overcome the forces of nature and was merrily flying around the unpopulated skies of Texas at speeds of over 100 miles per hour, it is even harder to imagine God, or God's messengers, flying around in a relatively slow and small airship while identifying or collecting the righteous. For some reason, I imagine God will be just a little more creative if and when the final call comes.

SEEN PLAINLY AT GARLAND

Garland, Tex., April 17—The airship which created so much excitement Thursday night [April 15], was seen in Garland by several among the number being J. N. Floyd, Agent N. B. Newland of the Katy and Mr. Cody. It was reported by them as traveling in a southerly direction at a *surprising velocity* passing a few miles to the west of Garland. Mr. Floyd got a good look at the ship and says he could *see the engineer operating* the machine.

Mr. Newland says the ship was in the *shape of a cigar* and had *two sets of wings on each side and one wing on the rear end.*

These gentlemen are reliable and their accounts of the noted air traveler have created no little excitement in Garland ("High in the Heavens, *Dallas Morning News,* April 18, 1897, p. 4.

QUESTION SETTLED

Davis, I.T. April 16.- The stories about the famous and much heard-of airship were satisfactorily proven to the people of this vicinity. Last night [April 15] shortly after dark A. M. Mitchner coming from his residence to town saw the strange and mysterious object flying through the air about 500 feet from the ground. It was headed directly west when first seen but changed its courses toward the south and did not come nearer the town than half a mile ("High in the Heavens, *Dallas Morning News*, April 18,1897, p. 4).

OBSERVED AT GREENVILLE

> Greenville, Hunt Co., Texas April 17—Several persons say they saw the mysterious aerial visitor the night of *April 15*. It was seen in the northwest, going southward. The sky was clear and bright moon light. The *different colored lights* from the ship could be distinctly noticed from any other lights in the sky ("High in the Heavens," *Dallas Morning News*, April 18, 1897, p. 4).

OFT SEEN AIR SHIP

Seen at a Point West on the Texas and Pacific.

CAPT. PAT C. BYRNES,

Telegraph Line Repairer,

Examined the Machine and Talked with Its Manager and Crew— Bound for Cuba to Deal Death to the Spaniards— A Description

Mr. Patrick C. Byrnes, a repairer in the telegraph department of the Texas and Pacific between Fort Worth and Baird, came in from the west last evening, and to a Register reporter told a story which a great many will doubt, and were it not for his reputation as a truthful man, The Register would hardly care to repeat it. Mr. Byrnes has been employed on the Texas and Pacific for the past twenty years, and has always been a truthful and honest employee.

As he told the story, Thursday afternoon and evening [April 15] he was engaged in making some repairs near Putnam station [Putnam is 12 miles west of Cisco], which occupied his time *till it became dark* on account of the *clouds obscuring the moon,* he was unable to proceed with his work, when he turned his attention to supper and a place to sleep. He started toward Cisco on his velocipede, and when near Delmar siding, about seven miles west of Cisco, he saw a light some little distance from the track on the south side. Knowing full well there was no farmhouse in the neighborhood, his curiosity was aroused, and, dismounting from his velocipede he proceeded to investigate.

Imagine, if you can, his surprise when he found that he had stumbled on to the airship which has attracted so much attention and been the occasion of a great deal of speculation of late as to what it really was. A number of men were moving about the ship, or machine, and seemed considerably surprised when Mr. Byrnes appeared. Nevertheless, they were nothing loath to talk when he had explained how he came to be there. Something had gone wrong with the search light of the ship, and not daring to proceed in darkness, the ship had been brought to the ground.

It is cigar-shaped, *about 200 feet long, and fifty feet across at the widest point,* gradually narrowing to a *point at both ends.* Mr. Byrnes was allowed to examine as much as he pleased and all his questions were answered.

At each end of the ship is a large *steel snail-shell device.* This, he was informed, was the apparatus *by which the strange machine was propelled. Large gasoline engines caused which ever of these are in use to revolve rapidly,* and to *bore into the air,* dragging or pulling the ship along at a wonderful rate of speed.

Two more of these devices are attached to each side and near the ends of the ship and are used for steering. When it is desired to turn the ship to the right or left the propeller on that side is set in motion. To raise the machine a like apparatus on top is set in motion.

The craft is *loaded with several tons of dynamite* and is *bound for Cuba.* The *captain said* the Spanish troops are being massed in the cities for transportation to the Philippine Islands, and it is to proceed to sail over these cities and drop dynamite into the camps of the soldiers and on the transportation ships. It is proposed to destroy the Spanish navy. This will enable filibustering ships to land arms and ammunitions for the Cuban soldiers, who, thus supplied, can easily dispose of such of the Spaniards as escape the dynamite dropped by the airships.

> About 1 o'clock Friday morning the search light was in good shape, and the ship started for the *wilds of the Ozark Mountains,* where, the captain informed Mr. Byrnes, *they spend the days*, experimenting at night with the ship.

> They expected to sail, or fly, for Cuba by Sunday, and hoped to reach there by Wednesday. When they do Spain is likely to hear something drop *(Fort Worth Register,* April 18,1897, p. 11).

In 1895 Cuban nationalists, lead by Jose Marti, Antonio Maceo, and Maximo Gomez, rebelled against Spanish rule. In 1896 Spain sent Gen. Valeriano Weyler to Cuba to put down the rebellion. Weyler became known as the Butcher of Havana. He ordered all villagers and farmers to move to concentration camps set up near the cities. Anyone who did not relocate was considered a rebel and fair game for Spanish soldiers. Weyler's troops practiced a scorched-earth policy. (Weyler was a student of Sherman's Civil War tactics.) Weyler relocated over 300,000 Cubans to his concentration camps. It is estimated half of those Cubans who were relocated died in the camps, mainly from yellow fever.

The newspapers of William Randolph Hearst and Joseph Pulitzer ranted about the cruelty of the Spanish soldiers and the abuses of Weyler's policies, stirring American sentiment against Weyler and Spain. (It is interesting to note that Pulitzer and Hearst each owned a major New York daily newspaper, and the rebel leaders' political party, the Cuban Revolutionary Party, was headquartered in New York City.) The rebel leader Jose Marti hated the United States, but that did not stop him from seeking and accepting American financial contributions for the rebellion. With most of the country's newspapers following the New York papers lead and railing against Weyler and Spain, it is unremarkable that people would openly discuss bombing Havana.

I have found no convincing evidence that any airships dynamited Cuba but then I have not looked very hard for any evidence, either. However, I have found some evidence that the U.S. government was pursuing the idea. This seems remarkable, considering the country was still nine months away from declaring war on Spain.

Captain Byrnes had sufficient time to observe the crewmembers in some detail since he was with the airship from about 7:30 P.M. until 1:00 A.M. In the seventh paragraph, "the captain said" indicates that Captain Byrnes spoke directly to the airship pilot. Since Captain Byrnes does not remark on the pilot's appearance, we can conclude it was not remarkable. That is, the pilot looked American, spoke English, and otherwise looked and behaved in all respects like a member of the human species. We can then conclude the crewmembers were not aliens, unless aliens had assumed the form of human beings.

Captain Byrnes gives us quite an interesting description of the vessel. The steel snail-shell device at each end on the wings, used for propulsion, is reminiscent of how an unfamiliar person might describe a modern-day jet engine—latter-day twentieth-century technology provided by an alien presence in 1897 or earlier?

The stated length of the vessel, 200 feet in this account, agrees with the "Seen at Paris" account and is probably the length from end to end of the "cigar-shaped" portion of the airship. The 50 feet across at the widest dimension probably refers to the length of the wings.

THAT MYSTERIOUS AIRSHIP

Reliable Persons at Garland Declare They Saw It

Garland, Tex., April 17—The airship which created so much excitement Thursday night [April 15], was seen in Garland by several among the number being J. N. Floyd, Agent N. B. Newland of the Katy and Mr. Cody. These gentlemen are reliable and their accounts of the noted air traveler have created no little excitement in Garland. *(Austin Daily Statesman*, April 19, 1897, p. 7, condensed version of the story that appeared in the *Dallas Morning News* and in the *Galveston News*, April 18, 1897).

THE AIRSHIP WAS SEEN

Childress, Texas, April 17. - The much-talked of airship was seen here last night *[April 16]* about 1:16 o'clock Rev. J. W. Smith was the first to discover the curious aerial monster. He thought at first that it was a star shooting, but after watching it a moment or tow, saw that it was not. He then called to his brother-in-law, Mr. Charley Norris, and also called to Mr. Bates and wife, near neighbors, who were up at the time. Charley Norris ran over to his mother's and called out several members of the family, who saw the ship. It soon disappeared, traveling in a westerly direction. Rev. Smith thinks it must have been 2,000 feet high and traveling very fast *(Houston Post,* April 22,1897; and *Terrell Times-Star,* April 30,1897).

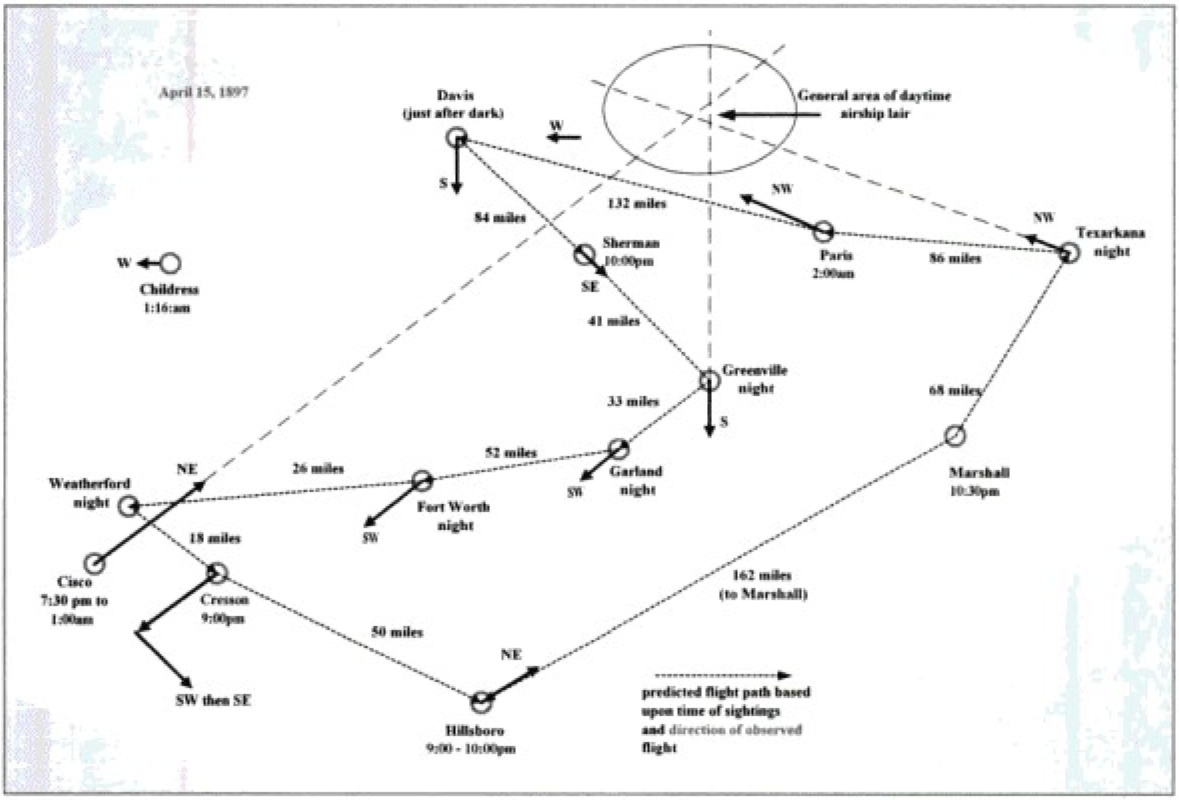
April 15, 1897
Davis
(just after dark)
W
S
General area of daytime
airship lair
132 miles
NW
84 miles
NW
Texarkana
night
W
Childress
1:16:am
Sherman
10:00pm
SE
Paris
2:00am
86 miles
41 miles
Greenville
night
33 miles
S
68 miles
52 miles
Garland
night
SW
Marshall
10:30pm
NE
26 miles
Weatherford
night
Fort Worth
night
SW
18 miles
Cisco
7:30 pm to
1:00am
Cresson
9:00pm
162 miles
(to Marshall)
50 miles
NE
SW then SE
predicted flight path based
upon time of sightings
and direction of observed
flight
Hillsboro
9:00 - 10:00pm

April 15, 1897, sightings

The place and time of day of the sightings for April 15 are shown above. There is no scale. El Paso is actually much further west of Cisco than is depicted in the graph. However, the miles between points of interest are shown adjacent to the connecting line between the points. That is, it is 84 miles from Davis to Sherman.

The most logical flight path of an airship, based on the reported time of the sighting and direction of flight, is shown using a dashed line. Although Cisco is only 75 miles west of Weatherford, the path of the airship that passed through Weatherford could not have been the same airship that passed through Cisco because of the timing of the two sightings. The Cisco airship was known to be on the ground (see the "Oft Seen Air Ship" account), while another airship was seen passing through Cresson, Hillsboro, and other East Texas communities. We have two different descriptions of the airship(s')'s length, one of 75 feet and another of 150 to 200 feet. The difference between 75 and 200 feet is sufficiently large to think the difference is not an error of estimation. So, a likely scenario is the existence of at least two airships.

Was there another ship further west that was sighted in El Paso before flying east and perhaps breaking down near Cisco? To answer that question we must look at the account of Captain Byrnes in "Oft Seen Airship," near Cisco.

The sighting at Cisco was somewhat earlier than 1:00 A.M. According to Captain Byrnes, he first came upon the airship sometime just after dark. Can we determine more accurately what time he first saw the airship? Using an old *American Nautical Almanac*, we can perhaps fix the time of darkness on April 15, 1897.

On April 15 sunset occurred at about 6:31 P.M. and end-of-evening nautical twilight (E.E.N.T.) or darkness was 7:38 P.M. However, since the sky was overcast according to the captain's account, E.E.N.T. would have been earlier, let us say 7:00 P.M.

Captain Byrnes states that he started toward Cisco on his velocipede when it became too dark for him to work. So we are certain the time he started for Cisco was around 7:00 P.M. He had proceeded about 5 miles (12 miles from Putnam to Cisco minus "7 miles west of Cisco at Delmar siding") when he observed the light upon the ground nearby. So, we can be confident that he first saw the airship between 7:00 P.M. and 7:30 P.M.

Since this ship remained upon the ground while undergoing repairs until 1:00 A.M., the ship he saw could not have been the same ship flying around East Texas (seen at Hillsboro between 9:00 and 10:00 P.M.). Nor could it have been the same ship seen in El Paso between 8:00 and 9:00 P.M. We are left to conclude that either some or all of the reports are fake or there were at least *three* airships flying around Texas on April 15. One airship was making the East Texas circuit as depicted on the map, one airship was broken down near Cisco, and the third airship was flying near El Paso. Incredible! Stay tuned for the rest of the story.

TABLE 4
April 15, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/15/97	Davis	OK	Shortly after dark	W then S	500 ft		*DMN* 4/18/97
4/15/97	El Paso	TX	8-9 P.M.	NW	Good rate		*BDP* 4/17/97
4/15/97	Hillsboro	TX	9-10 P.M.	S then NE	100 mph +	1,000 ft	*DMN* 4/17/97
4/15/97-4/16/97	Delmar siding, 7 miles west of Cisco	TX	Thurs. night until 1 A.M. Fri. morning	NE			*FWR* 4/18/97
4/15/97	Sherman	TX	10:00 P.M.	SE or E	Slowly		*DMN* 4/17/97
4/15/97	Garland	TX	Night	SW S	Very fast		*DMN* 4/17/97 *DMN* 4/18/97
4/15/97	Greenville	TX		S			*DMN* 4/18/97
4/15/97	Texarkana	TX	Night	NW			*DMN* 4/18/97
4/15/97	Weatherford	TX	Night				*AAS* 4/17/97
4/15/97	Cresson (13 miles SW of Fort Worth)	TX	9:00 P.M.	Initially SW then SE	Terrific rate		*DMN* 4/16/97
4/15/97	Texarkana	TX	Night	NW			*DMN* 4/18/97

Note: *DMN* = *Dallas Morning News*
BDP = *Bloomington (Illinois) Daily Pantagraph*
FWR = *Fort Worth Register*
AAS = *Austin American Statesman*

TABLE 5
April 16, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/16/97	Childress	TX	1:16 A.M.	W	Very fast	2,000 ft	*HP* 4/22/97 *TTS* 4/23/97

Note: *HP* = *Houston Post*
TTS = *Terrell Times-Star*

CHAPTER 6

FRIDAY, APRIL 16, 1897

There are thirty-four airship sightings reported for the night of April 16. Among the remarkable aspects of the sightings for this night are the clearly delineated flight paths of three different airships. The number of sightings has increased from the previous night (twenty-three sightings). More and more people are rubbernecking the skies to get a glimpse of the strange visitors. The story continues . . .

FLIGHT OF THE AIRSHIP

A Mississippi traveler saw it in the heavens last night *[April 16]*. Mr. Griffin's Strange Story

He saw the aerial traveler from
the top of the court house—was overjoyed.

Sensation in Railroad Circles
Freight Conductor J. E. Scully caught
a glimpse of the ship and its pilot near Hawkins Tank.

Ghost hunters, quail eaters and high divers and high jumpers have been relegated to the rear and the biggest man in the country today is the pilot of the airship, that mysterious aerial plunger seen in the heavens for the past ten days by sober citizens from the lakes to the Gulf of Mexico. The airship was the sole topic of conversation in all circles in this city. From the banker to the bootblack all were interested. "Have you seen the airship" was the question sprung at least 1,000,000 times. A *News* reporter found a good Adventist brother who was positive that the millennium was at hand and that the messenger was coming. "Don't mention my name," he said, "but I had a vision the other night and I am convinced that we are upon the eve of a great upheaval." Men of the world pronounced it a raw joke and a few crusty old chaps intimated that the quality of whiskey sold in the small towns was enough to make the average toper see anything from a boa constrictor to a full rigged ship in the heavens. On his rounds yesterday, a *News* reporter found two men who had actually fastened their eyes on this "flying Dutchman" of the clouds. One of these parties saw the airship sailing along like a magnificent bird of passage. The other saw the ship resting on the ground, its pilot in his shirt sleeves working like a beaver, making repairs. Mr. M. E. Griffin at the courthouse, saw the ship gliding through space like a thing of life, and "Truthful" Scully, a freight conductor on the Texas and Pacific railroad was the man who witnessed the pilot scrapping the barnacles from the keel of the airship. Mr. Griffin was found at the courthouse yesterday afternoon. Mr. Griffin is a churchy man and has lived in Dallas for many years. He broke the ice himself when The *News* representative halted. "Well, I saw the airship and I could scarcely believe my own eyes. It was this way. I have been reading the stories of the airship on its travels in The *News* everyday. At first I regarded it as a huge hoax. Next I saw I was in error because it was *next to impossible for good men all over the country to be deceived.* Says I to myself, 'They are seeing it everywhere. What's the matter with taking a peep from the top of the courthouse, Griffin?' Well I borrowed a powerful glass and climbed to the top of the courthouse. From my position I could sweep the heavens in all directions. I had been there say ten minutes when to my great delight, I saw the airship going in a southeasterly direction with the *velocity of the wind.* It was *shaped like a Mexican cigar,* large in the middle and small at both ends, with *great wings that made it look like an enormous butterfly.* It was brilliantly illuminated *by the rays of two great search lights.* I shall never forget the magnificent spectacle. Finally the airship disappeared in the distance and I very reluctantly descended to earth. And it was a sublime scene."

Mr. Griffin did not weep after this recital but the moisture stood in his eyes. He is positive that the airship has two searchlights and is a swift traveler.

There was a great commotion in railroad circles just after the shadows began to gather last evening *[April 16]*. It was rumored that Freight conductor J. E. Scully and his crew had surprised the airship and its pilot in a lonely spot by the side of the track somewhere in East Texas. A *News* reporter hurried out to the union depot at 8 P.M. and caught the cannon ball when it rolled in from Texarkana. The knight of the punch, good-natured, Conductor Foster was buttonholed before the soles of his patent leathers touched the platform.

"Have you seen the airship?" queried the reporter.

"The devil no," he replied. "I saw the picture in the *News* and read the specials from different places and that's all. See Mahoney. He will be down in the morning. Mahoney is a bird. He sees everything and the chances are that he has seen this airship. He never misses a good thing. See Mahoney," and then the jolly conductor boarded the train and was off.

Across the tracks from the union depot is the dispatchers office. Mr. M. Patton is the dispatcher. He composed that beautiful song, "And the Wind Blew Through His Whiskers," while stationed at St. Joe, Mo. a number of years ago. That is, Mr. Patton was once arraigned before the bar of public opinion on the charge and he entered a plea of guilty.

"Mr. Patton did you notice an airship sailing about in this neighborhood this evening?" asked the representative of The *News*.

"An airship? No, see here, forty men have poked their noses in here and fired that question at me this evening. I am busy. I haven't lost any airship and I am not hauling airships." It's been months since he tasted liquor, and then he whistled "The Wind Blew Through His Whiskers."

"Where is conductor Scully?"

"Scully? You mean Truthful Scully. He is out on the road and is due here in a few minutes. Has Scully seen this airship? Well he's a jolly good sort who loves the truth for truth's sake and his word is as good as a gold mine. Yes sir, Scully is all right. Sit down and he'll pull in here directly."

It was 10 o'clock when conductor Scully train came to a standstill opposite the office of the dispatcher and that individual rushed in to register introduced the conductor and the scribe and the latter fired away.

"Mr. Scully, it is rumored that you saw the famous airship at a point east of here today *[April 16]*."

"I did."

"Was it sailing or resting?"

"Resting."

"What did it look like?"

"The descriptions *already given in the News.* Its bow was towards us and *its pilot was using a hammer and chisel* as near as I could make out evidently *making slight repairs."*

"Could you furnish a description of the individual in charge of the ship?"

"Well, there is a clearing about midway between Hawkins and Hawkins tank and the airship man had selected this place to make repairs necessary and to be far away from the vulgar eyes of curiosity seekers. There isn't a house anywhere near the spot. The conductor of the ship was 100 yards from the track. He *was tall and spare* and *looked like a scientist or an inventor.* He had that tired far away expression as near as I could ascertain, and he was plugging away for dear life on necessary repairs."

"At what hour did you witness this singular individual and his marvelous airship."

"Well, we left Big Sandy at 2:30 P.M. It was close on to 3:00 o'clock when we reached Hawkins. We were making good time and all at once in the clearing I saw this ship on the ground with its bow towards the track. The airship *has wings* and must be well equipped. Of courses we passed it in a jiffy but I saw all that was necessary to convince me that the airship conductor had selected a quiet spot for resting purposes and repairs. Well, when we got to Hawkins I mentioned the facts of our discovery in the clearing in the woods and it spread like wildfire. I am sorry now that I mentioned it to any one and I wish you would just leave my name out of the papers."

And then the conductor stepped out of the office, swung his lantern a few rounds boarded his train and was off.

Mr. Patton shot an admiring glance at the querry-voiced conductor as he sped away and addressing The *News* representative said:

"Truthful Scully knows an airship when he meets one in the woods. I am satisfied that his story is gospel truth. Hawkins is midway between Mineola and Longview. Truthful Scully is a lucky chap. I might have passed that clearing in the woods a hundred times and never laid eyes on an airship. Some men are born lucky. Others are born in Missouri."

Conductor Scully, before his train pulled out for the West, said to a friend: "In my opinion, the airship man has his place well arranged. He is skipping about the United States creating intense excitement. When it gets too warm he'll set sail for Europe. The chances are when I saw him today he was getting ready for an ocean voyage preparatory to making a tour of Europe. The airship is the greatest invention of the age, or my name isn't J. E. Scully."

Col. W. A. Robertson of Mississippi walked into the *News* office last night and in a tone of deep satisfaction remarked:

"I have seen it."

The whole force rushed at Col. Robertson with one bound. "Yes gentlemen," he continued complacently, "I have looked at the airship with my own eyes."

"How big was it?" asked one.

"About *150 or 200 feet long* I suppose."

"Have any lights aboard?"

"Yes sir, and they were *big ones."*

"Which way was she going?"

"Southwest."

"Going *pretty fast?'*

"Yes it looked to me like the fellow had an engagement to eat breakfast in the city of Mexico and was afraid he might be late."

"Sure it was not a meteor?"

"I guess that when I see a thing I know it."

"It was this way," continued the Mississippian, "I was a passenger on the Missouri, Kansas, and Texas southbound train. I was sitting on the east side of the coach looking out of the window. Just after we passed Garland I saw a blaze of light in the sky quite a ways ahead of us. I made up my mind in a second that it was the airship, and I poked my head out of the window to get a good view of it but the thing was moving faster than we were and in about two minutes was lost in the fleecy clouds. I could not distinguish the shape of the aerial traveler, but I saw its search lights as it sped along" ("Flight of the Airship," *Dallas Morning News,* April 17,1897, p. 8).

Note that "quail eaters" were considered an oddity in 1897. People who ate quail are lumped into the same category as "ghost hunters." Our appreciation of what our environment offers us in terms of sustenance is an evolving process. The tasty birds have been a favored delicacy in the state all of my life.

One of the observers in this account is named Truthful Scully. The title of the account includes the name "J. E. Scully," so we can assume "Truthful" is a nickname. We are left in the dark concerning the origin of Scully's nickname. Was he really truthful, or was the nickname chosen to emphasize he was not always truthful? From the information provided in the account, we cannot make any judgment concerning the reason for calling him "Truthful." However, the tone of the account is a trusting tone. Mr. Patton, the dispatcher, goes to some length to acquaint the newspaper correspondent with how truthful Truthful Scully is. Or, maybe the dispatcher was setting the correspondent up. We will never know, but from the tone and Scully's details, which match many other descriptions, I am inclined to believe the account. It certainly has a great ring of truth to it. *(Trivia question:* Did the writers of the popular television show *X-Files* name the female character "Scully" after this real life Scully?)

Could only alien life forms possess the technology to fly 100 miles per hour? If so, they must be "humanoid," as Truthful Scully did not remark on an unusual features of the crew member he saw repairing the ship at Hawkins Tank. This is the first account given where an individual is closely associated with the airship. Truthful Scully saw someone making "slight" repairs to a ship in the clearing near Hawkins Tank. While Truthful Scully does not mention outright that the individual is a human, it is inferred. If the individual did not look human, it seems reasonable that Scully would mention the salient attributes of the nonhuman-appearing creature.

Scully believed the airship to be about 150 feet long. His estimate of the airship's length does not differ dramatically from the airship length given in other accounts. I think the description of this ship marks it as the same ship identified in the "Seen at Paris" account in chapter 5. Remember, the length of the airship in that account was given as 200 feet.

Scully is a conductor. He must concern himself with such mundane day-to-day issues as the number of people on his train. He is not a professional surveyor, so estimating lengths is not his area of expertise. However, he could quite easily compare the length of the airship with the length of one of his coaches and come to a fairly accurate estimate of its length. Could Scully be mistaken about the length? Possibly, but keep in mind that no one was going about with a measuring rod to physically measure the airship. All the stated lengths are estimates. Therefore, we can comfortably state the length of the airship was between 150 and 200 feet.

Note the fact that this sighting occurs near Hawkins Tank. Do you know what is found at Hawkins Tank? *(Hint:* This is the age of steam.) Have the answer? Water? Of course. Railroads had water tanks strategically placed along the length of the tracks, so a train engine's water reservoir could be replenished regularly. What else is found near railroad tracks? Give up? Telegraph wires carrying electricity. With water and electricity, a scientist in 1897 could produce hydrogen, a lifting gas.

THE AIRSHIP

Sighted Last Night by Two Citizens of Oak Cliff

> Prof. Laird of Patton's Seminary in Oak Cliff, states that at about 10 o'clock last night *[April 16]* he saw a coppery *red light* apparently *about a mile high* sailing across the heavens in a southeasterly direction. The light was about *ten minutes in passing* out of the professor's visual range. He avers that attached to the light there was an object which was so dim that he could not discern its shape or outline. Whether this was the airship the professor is not prepared to say, nor does he attempt to account for the phenomenon on any other hypothesis; he merely reports the fact.

> Mr. Sam Hurlock, of Oak Cliff, reports that he sat up last night reading the Duke of Argyle's interesting brochure on the difficulties to be overcome in order to make levitation as simple a matter as gravitation, and stepped out in the yard to get a breath of fresh air before retiring. The subject he had been reading about, or something else caused him to take a survey of the heavens when he saw a light, evidently the same described by Prof. Laird. Mr. Hurlock says there was a dim object to which the *red light appeared to be attached.* He has no doubt that this is what so many other persons have been seeing for the last several nights and reporting as an airship, which, for all he knows to the contrary, it may be *{Dallas Times Herald,* April 17,1897, p. 1).

This is the latest of several accounts that mention the airship was "ten minutes in passing across the heavens." Meteors never take such a long time to pass across the night skies. Planets and stars never take such a short time to pass across the Texas sky. Comets usually take much longer than ten minutes. So, what these people are seeing are not naturally occurring phenomena but something man-made or alien-made.

Unfortunately, we do not know in what discipline Professor Laird was trained. However, the fact that he is a professor should lend some weight to the idea he saw an airship and not a planet passing through the atmosphere. Let's hope he was not a professor of basket weaving.

Regarding the "coppery red light," note that nitrogen gas gives off red- and green-colored "lights" under certain conditions. For what purpose nitrogen might be used in an airship escapes me, but the fact is noted for others to contemplate.

THE AIRSHIP

It Passes Over Dallas and Is Seen by Several—Preachers Theories

> Dallas, Texas, April 16.,—Special. It may have been an optical illusion, but Dallas to-night is wavering between science and revelations over the airship. It passed north of this city tonight *[April 16]* at 8 o'clock going East to West and was witnessed by hundreds; including such men as Judge A. T Watte, formerly of the High Court and Dr. R. C. Kopesh, who describe it as being only about 300 feet from the ground and in appearance *similar to the airship seen in different parts of the country.* Preachers say it is from the other world and is the advent courier of the second coming of Christ. They say if it was an earthly device, it would be *seen by day as well as night (San Antonio Express*, April 17, p. 2).

Judges and doctors were coming forth with admissions of seeing the, by now, familiar airship. Respectable, creditable people were now willing to admit to having observed the airship, which fueled the willingness of other people to come forth with similar admissions.

The fact that the airship is seen only at night causes some people to attach a significant meaning to the ship's presence in the atmosphere. However, I cannot imagine God coming to collect the righteous in such a slow and small vessel, unless there were just a few righteous left among us. The date of interest to biblical scholars, the new millennium, or 1900, was still three years off. But, perhaps, in that earlier time there were so many righteous, it was going to take three years to pick them all up. The reluctance of the airship to be seen in the daytime does have a special meaning, but the preachers misunderstood the significance, which will be discussed in the final chapters.

Since the following account is long, pertinent comments have been italicized in brackets and are included within the body.

HIGH IN THE HEAVENS

SAILED THE AERIAL TRAVELERS ACCORDING TO STATEMENTS OF SEVERAL WITNESSES

PROF. LAIRD OF OAKCLIFF

SAW IT A MILE HIGH ON THE SOUTH SIDE OF THE TRINITY RIVER

HOW IT LOOKED LAST NIGHT

Messrs. Williamson and Ventas Given a Free Show— The Views of John L. Ward

The story of "Truthful" Scully of Fort Worth, clinched by the thrilling tale unfolded to a *News* reporter by Col. Robertson of Mississippi, contained in the *News* of yesterday, created a great sensation in scientific, political, and aerial navigation circles. The airship was the sole topic of conversation, the talk of the town, yesterday. Mr. William J. Shed, who is a crony of "Truthful" Scully, said to a news reporter:

"I believe it. Mr. Scully would not utter an untruth. The Mississippi colonel is not on my visiting list, but no Mississippian was ever known to mistake a shooting star for a full rigged airship with a searchlight in front and a torchlight in the rear. The evidence is conclusive."

John L. Ward of Fort Worth, ex-manager of the Panthers, was seen yesterday morning at the Windsor. He said: "I read the story of the airship at Hawkins Tank and was deeply impressed with it. Joe Scully is a friend of mine—a citizen of Fort Worth. We are proud of him. Hundreds have seen the airship in the heavens. Joe saw it on the ground. I believe in omens—good and bad. The Scully incident is a good one. Today McCloskey's Haughty Hibernians will be numbed by the Fort Worth Invincibles and McCloskey will weep." *[The Haughty Hibernians and Fort Worth Invincibles were baseball teams.]*

Col. Robert H. Gaston of the Texas militia read The *News* story of yesterday morning and at once hunted up a representative of the paper. "Tom Camp is just in from the Gaston ranch in Kaufman county," he said, "and Tom saw the airship. He had been on a hunt and was very successful. About 9 o'clock Friday night *[April 16]* he saw a peculiar object overhead. It resembled a Chinese flying dragon in appearance and was a monster breathing red fire through its nostrils. Its body was dragon shaped *[same as cigar shaped?]* and its fore legs and hind legs were pin shaped, its legs were the propellers, he thought. This dragon airship was brilliantly lighted and swifter than the Empire State Express. It was going south, Tom said. He watched the singular object until it grew as small as the gleam of a hotel clerk's diamond. Finally it disappeared altogether, and Tom made a bee line for the house, almost overpowered by the weird scene he had witnessed in the heavens. I think myself that the problem of aerial navigation has been solved. *[Tom Camp seems to give a very graphic description of the airship, but in terms of a Chinese dragon, for effect I suppose. I do not know what to make of the statement "breathing red fire from its nose." I discount this account as either a fake or an exaggeration.]*

It was rumored about the streets that Hon. A. T Watts had caught a glimpse of the airship in the heavens on Friday night *[April 16].* A *News* reporter visited his office. *"It is a mistake,"* he said, "but I have a theory. I firmly believe that the forty-three Greeks in Texas have clubbed together, purchased an aerial war ship from Edison or some other fellow and are experimenting before starting for Europe. They want to be sure that they are safe before they set sail. I am not interested in aerial navigation. This afternoon I must attend the ball game at the park and am studying up on the new rules and curves. The Defenseless, not the Defenders should win out, don't you think?"

Mrs. Bina George is a colored cook in the home of Mr. C. W. Middleton. She saw the airship Friday night. Yesterday morning she told the story to Mr. Middleton. That gentleman said to a *News* reporter yesterday: "Bina is truthful and intelligent. At 9 o'clock Friday night she was gazing into the heavens and *saw a bright object a few hundred yards* above her head. At first she suspected that it was a cloud of fire but it wasn't. It was a ship *shaped affair, well lighted* and traveled *faster than any train* of cars Bina ever saw. She said it was headed in a northeasterly direction and that she watched the ship until it was out of sight. She kept it to herself until this morning, as she did not care to be joked about it. Finally the secret grew too large for her to control and she fessed up."

Hon. Ed C. Smith, the populist leader was standing by. His face brightened. *"The airship is manned by McKinley's advance agent of prosperity,"*said Mr. Smith. "He has been due in these parts since last November and perhaps the president has employed an aerial messenger to scatter broadcast the glad tidings."

[The McKinley referred to here is Pres. William McKinley of the United States. Some folks foolishly attempted to capitalize on the airship sightings and further their own personal agendas by making what are now obviously incredulous claims. Does attempted political gain at the expense of credibility sound familiar in today's political arena?]

This was a frost and the scientists dispersed. Messrs. William J. Smith and Albert Webber were found at room 13, the Gaston building. Mr. Smith is familiar with all phases of aerial navigation, it is said, and *agrees with the Scientific American that the problem has been solved. [I cannotfind issues* o/"Scientific American_/ro/« *this time period to ascertain the nature of the aerial navigation solution]* At 1 o'clock this morning on Lamar street I met an individual who appeared to be unduly excited. I stopped and questioned him. He pointed skyward and said:

"It has just passed by."

"What has passed foolish man?"

"The airship," he replied.

"I did not ask him his name or his street number, but he certainly acted like a man who seen something. Aerial navigation is an easy thing now. We have compressed air and electricity. Airships are sure to come. In fact, according to the *News* correspondents the ships are here. The *Scientific American* concedes this much." [Scientific American *was a much-respected publication in 1897.]*

Mr. Smith subsided and Mr. Webber began. "On Wednesday night my wife saw a peculiar object in the heavens. At first she thought it was an illuminated balloon. But soon discovered that is was not balloon-shaped and sailed like a bird. It had *two great lights* and was traveling southward. It wasn't a meteor, it wasn't a balloon, it wasn't a ball of fire—I guess it must have been an airship."

Ex-Alderman Patrick O'Keafe who is deeply versed in aerial navigation topics and astronomical lore was found playing the horses. "Have I seen the airship? I have not. I don't drink and I never come downtown after dark."

Prof. James A. Laird of the Patton Seminary, Oak Cliff, it is reported, saw the airship plunging about Friday night. His description of it *tallies in the main* with the bird's-eye view of it obtained by "Truthful" Scully, in the vicinity of Hawkins tank, except Mr. Scully saw it on the ground with its *wings folded* and Prof. Laird saw it in the sky skimming along like a swallow homeward bound after a hard days flying. It was a *mile high* and going in a southeasterly direction when Prof. Laird first discovered it in the heavens. One A. M. Bruner traced its flight across the state in the following verses:

There's a wild, weird something,
that sails in the air,
with wings like the Plasa bird.
You'll see since April third.

The people of Elgin declare it has eyes
as red as the sun in the fall.
Two Evanston lovers (who always are wise)
declare it has no eyes at all.

The wise ones at Rockford have seen it arise
like a cloud from the West and they tell
How the mayor and the
council with wide open eyes
Stood breathless as bound with a spell.

It races with the engine that hauls the first mail
Down the Burlington track yesterday
the engineer stared with his deathly pale
Watched the thing vanish away.

At Althon perched high on the "Plaza" hill
Last night there was seen a huge form
It screamed like a panther with
voice strange and shrill
That rose high above the wild storm

Its headed for Washington now I am told,
And I doubt not, like dashes of a churn;
It will hasten reports of affairs growing cold,
Awaiting the Dingley bill turn.

And then let us hope it will take a deep breath,
And sail out to Cuba and Greece,
To Frighten the Spaniards
and Turks half to death,
Establishing honorable peace.

We need such a fool, with a nest full of eggs,
To hatch out a brood that will fly,
And cause lawless people to take to their legs
When they catch the strange
bird's warning cry.

Hundreds watched for the reappearance of the airship last night. They argued that it isn't far from the Scully *dry docks [an attempt at humor]* near Hawkins to Dallas and that most likely the pilot might fire up his boilers *[A figure of speech used in railroad circles, meaning "to get underway." There are numerous accounts that discount the use of steam and steam boilers in the airship.]* and sail this way in order to ascertain the fate of the Haughty Hibernians on the opening today of the Texas league games. It panned out just as they surmised. The pilot of the airship is a fan, for his ship was seen hovering over Dallas last night perhaps signaling to manager McCloskey *[a fanciful liberty taken by the correspondent regarding the popular Dallas baseball team manager]*. Mr. S. J. Williams, who clerks in a McKinney Avenue drug store, is positive that he saw the airship. In addition to the two searchlights the pilot displayed colored lights last night *[April 17]*. It is not known whether they were danger signals or tips to McCloskey's men to keep off the grass. Mr. Williams says that the airship sailed away in full view going in a southeasterly direction. Later a gentleman named Vantes on a Fairland car in North Dallas saw the airship according to advices received at a late hour last night. Not only Mr. Vantes, but his fellow passengers were given a free show. They glued their eyes on the queer ship with its fantastic lights and never once batted an eyebrow until the aerial visitor had disappeared behind a dark cloud in the northern sky. "There are others," but *News* representatives failed to locate them owing to the lateness of the hour the news was received at this office ("High in the Heavens," *Dallas Morning News*, April 18,1897, p. 4).

"Truthful" Scully never mentioned any "folded" wings. This statement must have been taken at liberty or was an assumption made by the editor or correspondent to make an allusion to the characteristics of birds—spread wings in flight, folded wings on ground. Or there may be another explanation, yet to be discovered.

The latter part of this account is a mix of fact and the writer's allegorical allusions to various topical issues, such as the win/loss record of the local baseball team in the phrase "perhaps signaling to manager McCloskey"

SEVERAL SEE IT AT BONHAM

Bonham, Fannin Co., Tex. April 17—The mysterious airship passed over the northern part of this city last night *[April 16]* at 8:15.

John German, night watchman on the electric line was returning to the city on his regular run. The car had slowed up as it was rounding the sharp curve just beyond Russle Heights when Mr. German noticed a light moving rapidly from the southeast toward the northwest. At first he thought it was a shooting star and called the attention of several young men in the car to the phenomenon. All parties peered to the front of the car and seeing that the light *lingered longer than any shooting star they had ever seen* they brought the car to a standstill and all alighted to the ground in order to get a better view of the wonderful sight. The *moving light approached rapidly* and as it passed north of them the light streamed out brightly looking *as large as the bottom of a half-bushel measure* piercing the dark other with the *brilliancy of the headlight of a railroad engine.* Mr. German had not read of the mysterious airship and was gazing upon it with wonder and awe. He could hear a *whizzing, whirling* sound as it passed. It looked like it was about a quarter of a mile high. For about four minutes they watched the wondering sight, when it disappeared in the southwest going toward Denton.

Mr. Oscar Lusk was the only one in the crowd who had read of the wonderful airship, and he explained all he had read about it in The *News* and the mystery was cleared up satisfactorily to all, everyone agreeing that it was the wonderful aerial navigator. Messrs. Oscar Lusk, Will Pope and Sherwood Sports were present with Mr. German and will vouch for the truthfulness of this statement ("High in the Heavens," *Dallas Morning News,* April 18, 1897, p. 4).

SEEN AT CLEBURNE

> Cleburne, Johnson Co. Tex. April 17.—The much advertised airship seen by so many was seen here last night *[April 16]* by two gentlemen of undoubted integrity.
>
> Mr. O. M. Duncan while returning from a moonlight picnic saw it and described it as others have done and says it had *two white lights in front and a green light in the rear,* which later, it is said, indicates in railroad circles that no other train immediately follows. In other words, Mr. Duncan understood it to mean in street parlance that it was "the only turtle in the tank."
>
> Mr. J. F. Wade was the other gentleman who saw the aerial monster and he says it was scudding along just above the tops of houses and going at only a *moderate rate of speed*. Mr. Wade was returning to his room from uptown and says that he had not touched a drop of anything exceptwater during the evening. Mr. Duncan can make the above statement as to imbibing and says he surely saw it.
>
> Both gentlemen say it was going in a southwesterly direction. Mr. Wade says that it was so low that he could *see one of the passengers* and as it sped by the passenger gave him the *go ahead sign that brakeman give on the railroad* ("High in the Heaven," *Dallas Morning News,* April 18, 1897, p. 4).

The "green light" and "go ahead sign that brakeman give on the railroad" are interesting observations that will be discussed in the last chapters.

Signal lights were commonly used on the railroads to inform trains of the presence of other trains. Such signaling was especially useful for safety considerations on single-track roads. Elsewhere, the green light is seen on the sides of the airship and a red light is seen on the rear.

SEEN AT TIOGA

> Tioga, Grayson Co., Tex., April 17—James Daugherty, a young farmer living near town saw the airship at 11:30 last night *[April 16]*. His description tallies with that of others who have seen it. He said it made a *whirring sound* and *passed rapidly* to the southwest. Jim is a truthful boy, and as the town affords nothing stronger to drink than mineral water, he evidently saw the ship. ("High in the Heavens," *Dallas Morning News,* April 18,1897, p. 4).

The "whirring sound" is intriguing. What could possibly make a whirring sound? In all my experiences, the only devices I have ever heard "whir" were many-bladed propellers. Propellers containing numerous blades, say six or eight, make a peculiar "whirring" sound. Could the airships have been propeller driven?

ANOTHER MAN SAW IT

> Denison, Tex., April 17—Jack Farley was in Fort Worth last night *[April 16]* and swears by all that is good and holy that he saw the airship sailing over the town. It was a way up in the west and had a *big headlight.* It looked like a *big bird with its wings out stretched* and attracted a great deal of attention ("High in the Heavens," *Dallas Morning News*, April 18, 1897, p. 4).

EXCITEMENT AT MANSFIELD

> Mansfield, Tex. April 17—(To The *News)*. Great excitement prevails here. An airship or something of the kind made its appearance above the city about 9:45 o'clock last night *[April 16].* When first seen it was about *500 feet high but dipped down within 300 feet of the earth, then suddenly arose high and darted off*"in a southeasterly direction. It appeared about as large as a box car, main part of the vessel *cigar shaped with* wings *or sails* extended on either side. Front end of vessel had a light something *like the headlight* of an engine while the *side lights were green with bright red light in the rear.* This airship was viewed by Capt. J. H. Wright, C. P. Witherspoon, W. H. Howard and many others. W. O. Rivers, telegraph operator ("High in the Heavens," *Dallas Morning News,* April 18,1897, p. 4).

An observer stated in a previous account that a green light was seen at the rear. I think the green light in that account was really on the side, as stated in this and other accounts. But, what is the significance of green and red lights in unoccupied 1897 American air space? A discussion of the significance will be found in the final chapters.

TWO GENTLEMEN VIEW IT

Ladonia, Tex., April 17—There seems to be no more doubt in the minds of some regarding the airship. Attorney E. M. Rowland says this morning that about 9 o'clock *[April 16]*, having had to go for the doctor for his child, as he left his home he noticed a strange object far upon and at a great distance in the southeast. It seemed to be surrounded by a dim, misty light, but as it approached the light became brighter. It was *moving very rapidly* in a southwest direction and lowering somewhat as it progressed. When it reached a point nearly overhead one could readily see the light *shining out of the cabin windows.* The headlight was *very bright,* leaving the impression that it was made by electricity. The wings *were huge in appearance;* the *sides were oval* like a large bay window; it had a *long sail like tail* and disappeared very rapidly in a southwest direction.

Col. R. N. Burt, assistant cashier of the Weldon National Bank of this place, it is said by a reliable person, also saw this ship last night *[April 16]* about the same time Mr. Rowland saw it, having been aroused by some unusual noise in his poultry yards. His description varies very little from that of others, only that it seemed much larger to him, as he says that it seemed to be about 500 feet long, the wings *being enormous* and *looking like huge sails* and the lights *on both the bow and the stern being of a dazzling brightness.* It seemed to hover *for a short space of time over the city and then rise and go rapidly* in a southwest direction.

Mr. Burt seems to think it strange that any one would doubt the reality of the airship. He is a gentleman who is unimpeachable and his word not to be doubted, is a strict member of the Baptist church and a leader in the Loyal League ("High in the Heavens," *Dallas Morning News*, April 18, 1897, p. 4).

The consistency of the airship's description is the same in this account as in previous accounts.

LADY THINKS SHE SAW IT

> Forney, Kaufman Co., Tex., April 17—Mrs. G. W. Vbiers, wife of Charlie Voiers, states that she is of the opinion she viewed the airship last night *[April 16]*. It was too far off to discern its shape, but the lights were plainly visible ("High in the Heavens," *Dallas Morning News,* April 18, 1897, p. 4).

STRANGE AND STARTLING . A "WHAT IS IT!" SERENELY SAILING OVER THE BLESSED LONE STAR STATE

WILL BE SIGNS AND WONDERS

A Big Airship or Something Else Seen in the Heavens at Various North Texas Points Keep a Watch Out Here

Of late strange sights have been witnessed in the heavens and some days ago The *Statesman* contained a dispatch saying that an airship or something of that sort had been seen sailing over Oklahoma.

Now the mysterious aerial craft has been seen at various points in Texas and from all accounts it is a fast sailor.

Friday night *[April 16]* at Sherman, Mr. W. S. Rellyer, cashier of the Missouri, Kansas, and Texas Railroad, saw a mysterious *oval shaped object of large proportions* pass over the moon.

On the same night, Conductor W. M. Honney of Fort Worth, his wife and mother, saw a strange object pass over the city.

On the same night *[April 16]* Hon. J. S. Bourdo of Hillsboro, on his way to visit a sick friend, had an experience he will not forget soon.

He was jogging along quietly when suddenly his horse whirled around and came near overturning the buggy. There was a *brilliant light* as if coming *from an arc light.* This light, he says, rested on him less than a minute and then he saw it gliding over a field near by. It then turned upward and he watched it until he says it must have been 1,000 feet up in the air. The light appeared to him to be the *headlight* of some kind of a ship. While he watched the light went out and small ones such as incandescent lights, *appeared all around the body* of the vessel, or whatever it was. The strange craft sailed along in a southerly direction and while Mr. Bounds watched it all the lights were extinguished and then it disappeared.

On the same night *[April 16 or early April 15 A.M.}]* about 2 o'clock J. A. Black of Paris, Tex. night watchman at the Paris Oil and Cotton company's plant observed a faint but luminous body in the northeast heavens. It looked at first like a luminous cloud but as it drew nearer he saw it was some huge monster. He hurried over to the cabin of a negro named Jim Smith and woke him up and when Jim caught sight of the heavenly visitor his wool promptly straightened out and Jim went to praying. Mr. Black watched the object carefully, and to a *Dallas News* reporter he said its body was *shaped something like a cigar* and appeared to be *200feet long.* It carried sails *and attachments* that looked *like great fans.* It finally disappeared going in the direction of the Mississippi River. Mr. Black's dog was with him when he first discovered the monster and he was greatly agitated and moaned until the thing disappeared.

On the same night *[April 16]* Conductor Virgil Brown and his brakeman on the Texas and Pacific Railroad saw the curious monster near Jewella, La. about thirty miles east of Marshall. It appeared to have a *search light attached* to it that threw out rays in several directions. It appeared to be going in the direction of Marshall and traveled *faster than his train.*

On the same night *[April 16]* at Marshall, Marshal Dick Weatherly, night watchman at the Pacific Railroad shops, saw the monster pass over.

From Jewella to Hillsboro is some 300 or 400 miles, [actually it is about 200 air miles] and the ship being seen at both places only a few hours apart shows it is a traveler.

Whence is it? What is it and whither is it going, anyhow?

Are we living in the days when strange sights are to appear in the heavens *(Austin American Statesman,* April 18,1897, p. 7)?

SEEN AT RHOME

Special to The Register

Rhome, Tex., April 17.—H.A. Hambright, B. Hambright, A.J. Jones, Nute Rivers, Elmer Helm and numerous other creditable witnesses inform The Register man that they saw an airship pass over Rhome last evening *[April 16]* about 8:30 o'clock. It is alleged that it was running westward at an estimated velocity of *about 150 miles per hour.* It was visible about five minutes. It was about the *size of a small passenger coach.* A *white search light* in front, and had *five lighted windows on the side.* It was apparently very near the earth, though it didn't halt at Rhome, but kept its occidental courses, as though we were as dead as Rome of old.

To consider this in the most normal light of deliberation it seems at first absurd, but in face of the testimony of the above witnesses it is entitled to credence *(Fort Worth Register,* April 18, 1897, p. 1).

C. G. WILLIAMS SAW IT.

It Was on the Ground and He Interviewed the Captain.

Greenville, Hunt Co., Tex., April 17.- (To The News.)—I have surely seen the airship. I saw it last night *[April 16]* about 12 o'clock. I was walking across a field two miles south of town. I was in a meditative mood, and suddenly I was aroused by a *brilliant light* in front of me. I was dazzled by the light and frightened almost out of my senses. I should have left the place at once but my legs refused to move.

As soon as I could recover a little I noticed that the lights had gone out and by the light of the moon I saw an *immense cigar shaped vessel* resting on the ground in front of me. I saw *three men walk out of the vessel.* Two of them went to work about the rigging of the ship. The other called to me and asked if I would mail some letters for him. This gave me courage to approach and talk to him. Having been at one time connected with a daily paper and by mere reporting instinct I took out my pencil and paper. Seeing this the strange visitor said:

"See here, young man, don't give this thing away *We are experimenting with this vessel.* So far it is a success. We expect to *revolutionize travel and transportation.* We have seen a few copies of the daily newspapers and are very much amused and entertained at the accounts of the appearance of our ship. If you will promise on the square not to reveal what I tell you I will give you a little history of our adventures.

"At a little town in the interior of New York state I have worked for many years on my ship. About two weeks ago I started accompanied by these two assistants to make a trial trip. *We started in the night to avoid being seen.* Everything worked so well that I decided to keep going, and I soon found myself passing over the state of Indiania. *(There are hundreds of newspaper accounts of the airship being seen over the Midwest, but publishing constraints prevent the inclusion of those accounts in this book.]*

"We stopped in a secluded spot near a small railway station. I went into the town and procured a daily paper, which gave an account of my ship being seen. Since that time we have been passing from place to place at a rapid rate of speed. Occasionally we stopped near a town to get the newspapers. *I am going home in a few days to improve my ship. I find some improvement necessary to perfect it.* This trip has been most satisfactory. You will hear from me again in a short while and then it will not be vague reports, but a full description of the modern wonder, the airship."

I had a good opportunity to look at the exterior of the monster while its occupant was talking. It is much the *shape of a cigar.* The *main body* appeared to be *about 30feet long.* Great *wing shaped fans spread out on either side.* At the *front end was a large wheel much like the side wheel on a steamboat but made of very light material [aluminum?].* At the *end was a fan-like projection like the tail of a fish.* The whole was *about 75 feet long.* I asked my visitor to explain the ship, how it was propelled, etc. He simply replied:

"Electricity. *Within are electrical machines, which furnish the motive power* and the lights. When *once in motion the wind operating on the large wheel in front like a windmill, keeps the ship in motion and but little electricity is needed.* Now, young man, I can't tell you any more. Just wait and you will learn all about it. If you will mail these letters and not disclose the names and address and keep this all quiet for awhile, and will give me your name I will return soon and take you with me on a trip to Mexico and South America."

I promised not to give him away. He and his assistants went inside, there was a *flash of light, a sizzling noise*, the monster rose gracefully and flew away in a northeast direction.

> I am honor bound not to disclose the names and post office address of the letters. I deposited them in the Greenville post office that night.
>
> When my visitor returns and I leave with him for Mexico and South America I will write the News regularly.
>
> It is a grand invention, and I am fully convinced that in a short while we shall *discard slow railroad trains and ocean steamers.* C. G. Williams *(Dallas Morning News,* April 19, 1897; *Galveston Daily News,* April 18,1897)

This is an entertaining interview with the supposed inventor of the airship. The account gives many interesting details concerning what the ship is, where it came from, and the purpose of the crew. Of particular interest is the statement that motive power is supplied by electric motors. More on this subject will be discussed in the final chapters.

This account identifies the inventor as coming from "a little town in the interior of New York state." This important statement is also explored and discussed in the latter chapters.

The description of the airship in this account differs dramatically from other accounts in regards to its size. All other accounts offering such a detail describes the length of the airship as being between 150 and 200 feet long, while this one gives 75 feet. The differing amount, being too great to be dismissed as ineffectual guessing, points to the existence of more than one airship.

IN TEXAS

The strange craft seen at many points in North and East Texas Friday night *[April 16]* has thrown those parts of the state into a whirl of excitement.

Col. R. N. Burt, cashier of the National Bank of Ladonia, Texas, saw the craft, or whatever it is, last Friday night. His description varies very little from that of others, only that it appeared much larger to him, as he says that it seemed to be *about 300feet long.* Its wings *being enormous* and looking *like huge sails. It seemed to hover* for a short time over the city and then *rise and go rapidly* in a southwesterly direction.

At Farmersville, Texas Friday night *[April16],* as reported in the Dallas News *[see note below],* about 9 o'clock a dim light was seen in the northwest, apparently slowly to the south or southwest. When first seen it did not look larger than an ordinary 50-cent piece. Those watching it soon discovered that the objective was approaching the city. It traveled at the rate of *sixty or eighty miles an hour.* Some thought it to be a cloudless tornado, and those who had storm houses lost no time in getting into them, while the more unfortunate waited and watched the result of the approach of the queer object. In a very short time *fully two-thirds of the citizens of the city* out looking at what they then supposed to be a large planet or meteor approaching the earth. In a few moments, in fact, in less time than one can tell it, the queer thing was almost hanging over the city. City Marshal Brown was in the western part of the city making his rounds before going home and says the ship *or balloon passed over him about 200feet from the ground.* Mr. Brown says he could *see two men* in the ship and *something resembling a large* Newfoundland *dog.* Mr. Brown says he was close enough *to hear them talking* but could not understand one word of their language.

> Mr. Walter L. Norwood, an undertaker at Galveston, had a professional call about 3 o'clock Saturday morning *[April 17],* and he says he and his driver, Bob Tevis, saw the airship. He said to a Galveston News reporter:
>
> "The moon was shinning brightly, and we could see almost as plainly as in daylight. There was not a cloud in the sky. When we were out on the beach not far from our destination I happened to look up and saw the thing. It moved to the eastward down the beach, following the line of the beach as closely as one would do in a driving buggy. We stopped and watched it. When down about the end of the island it turned and followed the bay front until about Tremont street, when it turned and went south out over the gulf, disappearing in the distance."
>
> It was pointed at both ends, according to Mr. Norwood's description, and the headlight was directly in front. It looked like a great big bird, with wings *flapping regularly,* and it traveled swiftly ("The Heavenly mystery," *Austin American Statesman,* April 20,1897, p. 3).

The *Dallas Morning News* did not report the Farmersville sighting as occurring on Friday night *[April 16] but* as happening "last night" *[April 17?]*. (See the account titled "At Farmersville," in chapter 7. The *Austin American Statesman* account of Marshal Brown's sighting gives a date of April 16. Since the *Austin American Statesman* specifically mentions "Friday night," which is unambiguous, I am inclined to believe that publication's date of the sighting, or April 16.

Mr. Brown was "close enough to hear them talking" when they flew over him at an altitude of about 200 feet. The crew must have been shouting to each other over the whirling and whizzing of their machinery.

The image of a dog accompanying those on the airship as a member of the crew certainly fits in with the image of the late-nineteenth-century rich playboys out for a lark.

Regarding the "wings flapping regularly": recall the previous comments concerning why wings are designed to "flap." But also take into consideration the previous account, which comments about the "folded wings." Later, we document the factual existence of an airship designed by Marcellus McGary that is propelled by wing-flapping.

Col. R. N. Burt denies, in a letter to the editor, having seen the airship. Apparently, someone gave a false report to the newspaper of him having seen the airship. His denial follows:

HE DID NOT SEETHE SHIP.

> Ladonia, Fannin Co., Tex. April 18.—(To The News)—Will you do me the kindness to say through your columns that the gentleman who informed you that I had seen the so-called "air ship" was certainly very much off his base, and did me quite an injustice when he said that I was among the number who had seen it. If such thing is in existence to-day I confess that I would be glad to see it, but so far have seen nothing of the kind, and have never made any such statement to anyone. I know your informant and really think that he did this as a joke, but in justice to myself think that he did very wrong. R.N. Burt ("Airship Tales?" *Dallas Morning News,* April 20, 1897)

Did newspaper correspondents deliberately make up stories about the airship just to fill column space? This vignette demonstrates that people and newspapers would own up when they were mistaken about an airship report. Not every individual or news correspondent was looking for glory and column space. This is an extremely important point. The basis for this whole story concerns the credibility of the reporters, newspapers, and people who poured out their stories to the reporters. It is also intriguing that Colonel Burt is from Ladonia, a place important to the airship story (as we shall see).

STATESMAN'S MYSTERY MAN.

The mystery man of The Statesman heard yesterday that Mr. R. H. Cousins had caught a glimpse of the mysterious ship Friday night *[April 16],* and Mr. Cousins was seen about it.

"No, I saw no ship," he said, "I stepped out into my yard and my attention was attracted by a moving light, which appeared to be some distance above the earth not far from the residence of Mr. J. W. Graham. I at first thought it was a meteor, but I soon discovered it *moved too slow for a meteor.* The light was not very large. I think, possibly, I watched it as it moved and it passed over and down in the direction of Shoal Creek. I saw no dark object nor anything but the light, and at the time thought nothing about it."

The story, as reported, was that Mr. Cousins had seen a large ship-like shape with the light attached to it.

To The Statesman's gang last night the mystery man, to the utter consternation of the boys, gave it as his unalterable opinion that there was something in this airship business.

"Where there's so much smoke there must be some fire," he said. "So many reports, from so many different points, can not be fabrications. People may say what they will, but there's something in it."

The gang was visibly moved.

"It is my opinion," continued the mystery man, "that the airship, so-called, is nothing more nor less than a reconnoitering aerial war car from war like Mars, investigating the conditions of the United States to see what reinforcements we'll need when the country is invaded by the allied armies of Europe, the Mars soldiers having no confidence whatever in the American jingoes as real fighters."

"With these soldiers of Mars cavorting around over our heads, do you think there is any danger to us of the earth?" asked the gang in concert.

"I most emphatically do. Last Thursday night one of their aerial boats exploded and scraps of steel and pieces of electric wire were found on a school house, the roof of which workmen were repairing. *[The airship explosion referenced here occurred in Michigan and was widely reported in that states newspapers.]* They heard an explosion during the night and just before it took place the aerial vehicle was seen sailing through the air. There is great danger in venturing out these nights. What if one of these fellows from Mars should tumble out and fall on you?"

> The city editor and telegraph man were profoundly impressed and last night they slept under a table in the editorial rooms ("The Heavenly *mystery," Austin American Statesman,* April 20,1897, p. 3).

This article is a tongue-in-cheek account with a lighthearted look at the airship mystery. However, the explosion mentioned in the article was reported in numerous Illinois and Michigan newspapers. Here is the account of the explosion as it appeared in a Detroit newspaper.

WENT TO SMASH

Airship Said to be Scattered Over Kalamazoo County

Callsburg, Mich., April 13—If reports from Pavillion Township are true, then the much talked of airship was not only a reality but is now a thing of the past.

George W. Somers and William Chadburn, old soldiers, claim to have seen the airship on Sunday evening *[April 11]* when they remained up until a late hour, in attendance upon a sick horse. The descriptions given by the patriots are somewhat at variance but agree in the assertion that the apparition was illuminated at both ends and plowed through space with wonderful rapidity. They had scarcely time for the above observation when a *dull explosion was heard* and the object disappeared. They declare the report to have been like that of *heavy ordinance* and to have been immediately succeeded by a distant sound of *projectilesflying* through the air.

Wondering neatly, they proceeded to the house where they passed an excited and sleepless night. While these two men are the only ones who claim to have witnessed the phenomenon there are many corroborating circumstances, as follows:

Mr. and Mrs. Wallace say they heard the explosion distinctly, but thought it was thunder. But the discoveries of the morning were sufficient to establish the veracity of the two actual observers (the two old soldiers). In one place, two miles from Scotts, there was found *part* *of some electric appliance.* At another point, a *propeller blade* of some very light material *[(aluminum?)*'was found, in a partially fused condition.

> Three men engaged in shingling a barn in Comstock Township affirm that, upon resuming work on the morning following the occurrence, they found their completed work *strewn with minute fragments* which had in some instances penetrated the shingles and entered the boards beneath.
>
> Whatever may be the theories, there is scarcely a doubt that the aerial stranger is gone forever and that its origin and the experiences of its crew are to remain forever a mystery *(Detroit Evening News,* April 13,1897, p. 4).

This account has a good ring of truth to it. Old soldiers, who were probably of Civil War vintage, would know the sound of "distant ordnance" and "projectiles flying through the air." The shrapnel found buried in the building's roofing shingles is consistent with an explosion and the sound of flying projectiles.

The physical evidence of "part of some electric appliance" and "a propeller blade" agrees with the description of the airship given by Mr. Williams in the account "C. G. Williams Saw It." You may recall in that account the airship captain informed Mr. Williams that it was powered by electrical motors.

I believe this to be only a minor accident, not the catastrophic and lifetaking tragedy portrayed by the editor in the last paragraph of the account. There are no other accounts of any additional wreckage found anywhere in the vicinity of the explosion. And there are no reports of any bodies found nearby. If shrapnel was buried in the shingles, then there is a good chance the crew members suffered some injuries in the explosion. A survey of hospital records, if any still exist, in the vicinity of the explosion may yield fruitful information concerning the names of the crew.

LADONIANS SEE IT.

Ladonia, Fannin Co., Tex April 18.—The airship seen here night before last *[April 16 or early morning April 17]* was the occasion of several parties keeping watch last night.

Col. R N. Burt, his wife and son-in-law, John Fulgham, saw a large light appear in the southwest and come nearly overhead and then take a westerly course, but it was so bright that they could not see what accompanied the light. *[See Colonel Burt's earlier denial of this story —"He Did Not See the Ship.")*

A. B. Ewing, also as he was going home from his store, says he was startled by a *strange buzzing noise overhead.* Looking up he saw what seemed to him to be a mammoth alligator with wings outstretched and when nearly overhead the lights went out and only a glimmer could be seen all along the side of the long body. It came from the northeast and changed its courses while he looked, and went in a northwesterly direction. He says the object must have been nearly *three miles high (Dallas Morning News,* April 19, 1897, p. 5) *{Galveston News,* April 19,1897).

A BANK CASHIER SEES IT

Granbury, Hood, Co., Tex., April 17.—(To The News.) Newt Gresham last night *[April 16]* at 9:10 o'clock, while drilling the Riddle Rifles, discovered that mysterious flying jenny of which we have heard so much. Newt is a very warsome young man being a populist, but he could not stand the sight of the air machine so he ordered the company to open fire on the object, which it did, and the whole town was soon aroused. Every back yard was filled with spectators and still the animal hung quietly in the sky over the city.

The opinions of various responsible parties are:

Hon. Lee Riddle said, "Its an airship run by electricity."

Frank Gaston said: "It is a cloud of some mysterious substance with phosphorescent properties."

Newt Gresham, captain of the Riddle Rifles and editor of the Hood County Truth, says it was a huge fish with wings, but the general opinion is that it is an airship, which I think it is, having had a better opportunity to observe it than the majority. It disappeared quickly southward over Comanche peak."

> I think the above might be of interest to News readers and you may publish same with my name affixed (E. B. Hilburn, *Dallas Morning News,* April 19,1897, p. 5; *Galveston News,* April 19,1897).

With most of the male population of Texas over the age of twelve armed, it is remarkable that there were no serious casualties as a result of people popping away at the strange objects in the night sky. If an explanation is required for the appearance of the airship only during the night, this is perhaps one of the best—to keep from getting killed by the marksmanship of the testosterone-totin', gun-slingin' portion of the populace. Daytime flying would have immensely encouraged a great deal more of the same incorrigible behavior on the part of anyone owning or otherwise possessing a pistol or rifle and one or more bullets.

SEEN AT MANOR

Austin, Tex., April 18.—Mr. John Eva, a well known business man at Manor, twelve miles east of here, says he saw the mysterious aerial ship that has created a commotion all over north Texas. His little girl first discovered it and called him out and he saw it as it passed over the town going south, carrying a large headlight *(Dallas Morning News,* April 19,1897, p. 5; *Galveston News,* April 19,1897; *San Antonio Express,* April 19, 1897).

THE MYSTERIOUS BALLOON THE STRANGE MYSTERIOUS CRAFT PASSED OVER MANOR LAST FRIDAY NIGHT.

IT IS A WAR BALLOON F'ROM SPAIN

So Says The mystery Man of the Statesman Force More About the Craft From North Texas Points.

Mr. John Eva, formerly a clerk in the furniture store of the late Mr. Boak, and well known in town, was in the city yesterday from Manor, where he is now living.

He told, while here, of seeing the aerial monster that has thrown all north Texas into a state of intense excitement. His little daughter happened to go out into the yard Friday night *[April 16]* and, noticing a strange light in the heavens, she ran back into the house and notified her father. Mr. Eva hurried into the yard and saw the mysterious craft as it sailed over Manor and disappeared.

It was also reported in town last afternoon that persons out on the state drill grounds saw the ghostly airship Friday night.

The Dallas News of yesterday contained many telegrams from north Texas points confirming the stories of the strange visitor.

It looked to one man in the Indian Territory as if it was *about 500 feet long.*

It was at Cleburne, Garland, Tioga, Texarkana, Newland, and many other Texas points Friday night. One of the mysteries about it is that no one has seen it in the day time.

All persons who have had a good view of it gave about the same description, and all testify as to its carrying a large light, and a few say at times it has many.

One man reported to the Dallas News says it was only about 200 feet above him moving slowly, and he saw three men aboard and something he said he took for a large Newfoundland dog. He could hear the men talking, but could not understand what they said. From the tone of voice he *took them to be Spaniards or Mexicans.*

At one place in north Texas Friday night the whole population turned out to see the monster, and about half of them took to their storm cellars believing it a cyclone that was about to hurl itself upon them.

This whole matter was solemnly referred to the Statesman's "mystery man" last night and he gave it his unqualified and unbiased opinion that the man who heard the conversation of the two men on the craft and took them to be Spaniards was correct in his suspicions.

"It is nothing more," said the mystery man, "than a Spanish aerial war balloon sailing over Texas to find out the strength of the militia, and incidentally to see if there are any populists." "You see," continued the mystery man, "the aerial telegraph and telephones carried on the craft have conveyed to its officers the arrangements made in the legislature on the ice and other bills , and the aforesaid officers have become confused and bewildered , and that accounts for their being seen at so many different places. I'm satisfied, too, that if they get a sight of the old brass cannon in the capital yard they will die of sheer astonishment and will never reach home."

The explanation of the mystery man greatly stayed the fears of the city editor and telegraph man, and last night they screwed up courage enough to venture out and 90 home to bed at their usual bed time, which is along in the wee small hours.

The telegraph man, who is very loquacious, asked many questions about the mysterious visitor, while endeavoring to conceal his dread and fear. Both he and the city editor went home last night with their hats hard down over their eyes and never once did they look heavenward *(Austin American Statesman*, April 19,1897, p. 8).

The 500-foot-long estimate of the airship's length seems to be an exaggeration, as all other reliable estimates place the length at 150 to 200 feet. Or, could this be another ship entirely?

This account is a summary of previous accounts reported by the *Dallas Morning News.* It is interesting that the account of the sighting involving the Newfoundland dog did not mention anything about how the men on board the airship sounded, other than that their words were indistinguishable. The *Statesman* prints that the observer said, "From the tone of voice he took them to be Spaniards or Mexicans." Yet, in the *Dallas Morning News* account ("In Texas"), no such statement is made. Also, in all previous first-hand encounters between an individual and the airship crew, no mention is made of their accents, language, or nationality. One cannot help but believe the crew members were indistinguishable from other Americans in language, dress, and manner. I wonder about this portion of this account and suspect it to be an embellishment to satisfy Austin readers. Yet another possible explanation lies in the function of the individual crew members and/or the ultimate objective of the airships. In another account ("Was Aboard an Airship," chapter 9), the airship's cook was identified as a Mexican. Also, many people thought the airships were going to be used to bomb Havana, a belief that fueled rumors that the airship crews were either Mexican or Spaniard.

WAS SEEN IN FARMERSVILLE

Farmersville, Texas, April 17.—(Special.) The airship was seen here last night *[April 16]* at 9 o'clock. City Marshall Brown was in the western part of the city making his rounds before going home and says the ship or balloon passed over him about 200 feet of the ground. Brown says he could see two men in the ship *[A condensed version of the story that appeared in the* Dallas Morning News *and the* Galveston *News, April 18,1897] (Austin Daily Statesman,* April 19,1897, p. 7).

AIRSHIP TALES?

A Number of Dallas Citizens Are Their Authors

Cooper Nott returned from Longview yesterday. He said to a News reporter: At Longview on Friday night *[April 16],* "I saw the airship. It's no fake. I saw it with these eyes. Charlie Foster, the station agent at Longview, and Col. Thomas Kingsley were eyewitnesses and will corroborate what I have said."

Joseph A. McMurray of Mineola was in the city yesterday. "This airship business is a fake," he said. "Why Tom Breen, our new postmaster, sleeps with one eye open and he has not caught a glimpse of this airship. I don't take any stock in the stories published . Neither does Tom Breen."

Maurice Kahn, clerk of the police court, is authority for the statement that Messrs. William Noll, Jr., B. O. Marshall and A. Nussbaumer claim to have seen the airship *on the ground* about nine miles west of Dallas Sunday afternoon *[April 18]* about 2 o'clock while out hunting. They will, he says, make affidavit to this if necessary.

Manton Carrick and a number of friends sent up three small balloons lashed together with lanterns attached from the corner of Olive and Live Oak streets last night. The balloon floated over North Dallas. The boys paraded the streets in that section of the city yelling at the top of their voices, "There's the airship!" All the inhabitants turned out and viewed the fights in the sky with exclamations of wonder.

At 9 o'clock last night Mr. J. W. Bruit phoned The News from the corner of Allen and Juliet streets: "I've seen the airship. It was out near the McKinney Avenue schoolhouse and going toward Oak Cliff. I was in my buggy and whipped up my horse in a vain effort to get closer to it. It was *very bulky."*

An hour later George Saunderson, fireman at the waterworks, phoned The News as follows: "The airship passed over us ten minutes ago. I got a good look at the ship. It has *three large windows* and was making very fast time" ("Airship Tales?" *Dallas Morning News,* April 20,1897).

MONSTROUS VARMIT

Richmond, Fort Bend Co., Tex., April 19.—An old negro man named Mose Fletcher, living near Stafford, was in town to-day and from his description of what he termed a "monstrous varmint" it is believed he has seen the airship. He says that about 10 o'clock last Friday night *[April 16]* he had occasion to go out to his horse lot to quiet a great commotion among the stock and he saw a "varmint" about 100 yards in the air going southwest. He says it shone like a firefly and he became so terrified he ran to the house. When he came out with his wife it was gone. Mose is an innocent and illiterate old negro and appears to be very earnest in what he says ("The Latest Airship Jokes," *Galveston News,* April 20,1897).

WAXAHACHIE KEPT AWAKE

Waxahachie, Ellis Co., Tex., April 17.—Many people sat up the major part of last night *[April 16]* looking for the airship. At 12 o'clock possibly half of the vigilant committee retired for the night. At 1 o'clock a few more dropped off, and at 3 the number had dwindled down to a few faithful who were kept up through faith in the truthfulness of the airship reports in the Dallas News.

This morning The News reporter made a grand round hoping that at least one man could be found who would testify to the reality of the flying will o' the wisp, which has been defying gravity and causing the wreckage of a certain clause in the ten commandments, but there was not one who had seen anything bigger than a hat or larger than a snake, with residence at Waxahachie. At a certain hotel there was a man who gave his name as W. H. Patterson, who said he had discovered the battle ship while on watch with Mr. John Phillips of Waxahachie; in fact, he said he would give Mr. Phillips as reference, and he was certain that Mr. Phillips never told a lie in his life.

It was about 1 o'clock *[April 17]* when the battleship came along; the whole earth was ruminated with a star-like brightness. The battle ship seemed to be about 400 feet from the ground and was going toward Dallas. *The machinery seemed to be worked by a woman who was running a patent resembling a sewing machine. [This is the first account given of a woman on board the airship.]* When the sails were at a certain angle a searchlight shot its light in the direction of the hotel and caused the observers to flee. Mr. Patterson says it may be funny to look at this strange aerial monster at a long distance but that a degree of uneasiness overtakes one when the thing comes at close range. He thinks his satanic majesty or Beelzebub has something to do with this traveler in the lower stratum of ether ("High in the Heavens," *Dallas Morning News,* April 18,1897, p. 4).

The most remarkable attributes of the graph of the April 16 sightings are the three times the ship(s) was seen in Dallas. One sighting occurred at 8 P.M., another at 9, and still another at 10. Airships were seen at Kaufman (9:00 P.M.), Granbury (9:10 P.M.), and Farmersville (9:00 P.M.) at about the same time. Since the distance between these communities rules out the possibility of all three towns viewing the same airship, we are left to conclude there were three airships flying about the skies on the night of April 16. Or, all of the stories are fake.

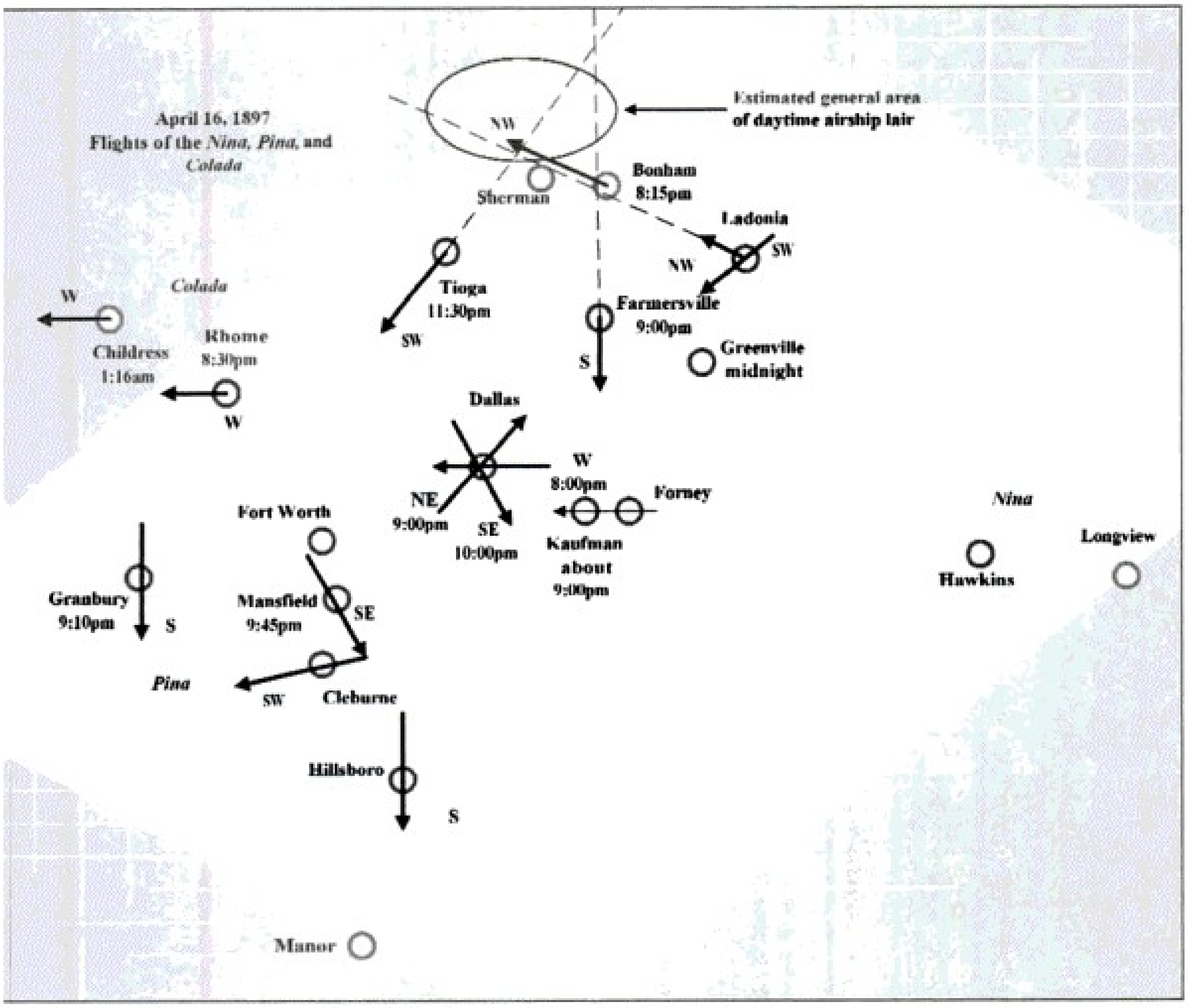
April 16, 1897
Flights of the *Nina*, *Pina*, and *Colada*
NW
Estimated general area of daytime airship lair
Bonham 8:15pm
Sherman
Ladonia
SW
NW
Tioga 11:30pm
SW
Colada
W
Farmersville 9:00pm
Childress 1:16am
Rhome 8:30pm
W
S
Greenville midnight
Dallas
W 8:00pm
Forney
NE 9:00pm
SE 10:00pm
Kaufman about 9:00pm
Nina
Fort Worth
Longview
Hawkins
Granbury 9:10pm
S
Mansfield 9:45pm
SE
Pina
SW
Cleburne
Hillsboro
S
Manor

April 16, 1897, sightings

The three-airship hypothesis seems reasonable. Remember the previous chapter and the conclusion that three airships were about on the night of the April 15? The sightings on the sixteenth confirm the threeship hypothesis. Looks like the crews were having some fun by flying over, or buzzing, Dallas at one-hour intervals—shows a certain sense of humor.

The three ships seem to have merrily flown through Dallas, then they made their way back to their daytime lair north of Sherman. Then two ships, probably the first two that passed over Dallas (8 and 9 P.M.), seem to have taken off for new destinations. One appears to have headed west, which accounts for the late-night Tioga and Childress sightings and the other seems to have headed east, which accounts for the late-night Greenville sighting. The fact that an airship was seen after midnight near Beaumont (1 A.M. on April 17) and Galveston (3 A.M. on April 17) reinforces the supposition that an airship passed over Greenville at midnight, traveling eastward toward Beaumont.

I have arbitrarily named these three ships the *Nina*, *Pina*, and *Colada*.

The next three figures plot the individual travels of the three airships on the night of April 16.

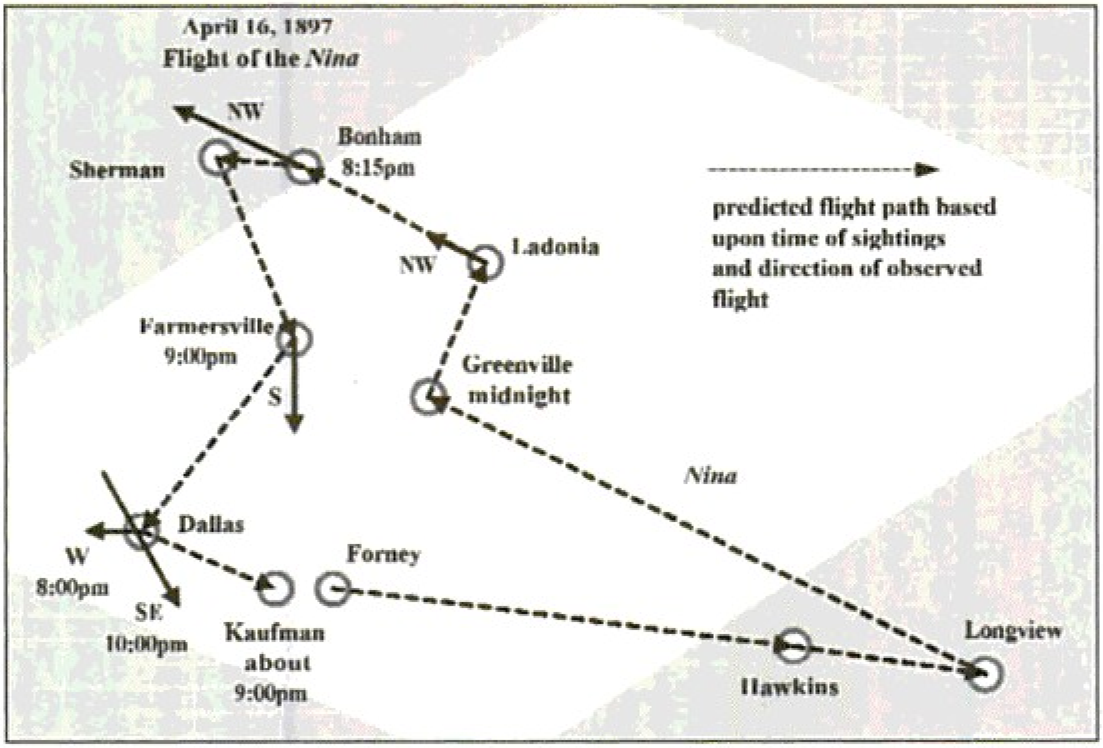
April 16, 1897
Flight of the *Nina*
NW
Bonham
8:15pm
Sherman
predicted flight path based upon time of sightings and direction of observed flight
NW
Ladonia
Farmersville
9:00pm
S
Greenville
midnight
Nina
Dallas
W
8:00pm
SE
10:00pm
Forney
Kaufman
about
9:00pm
Longview
Hawkins

Flight of the *Nina*

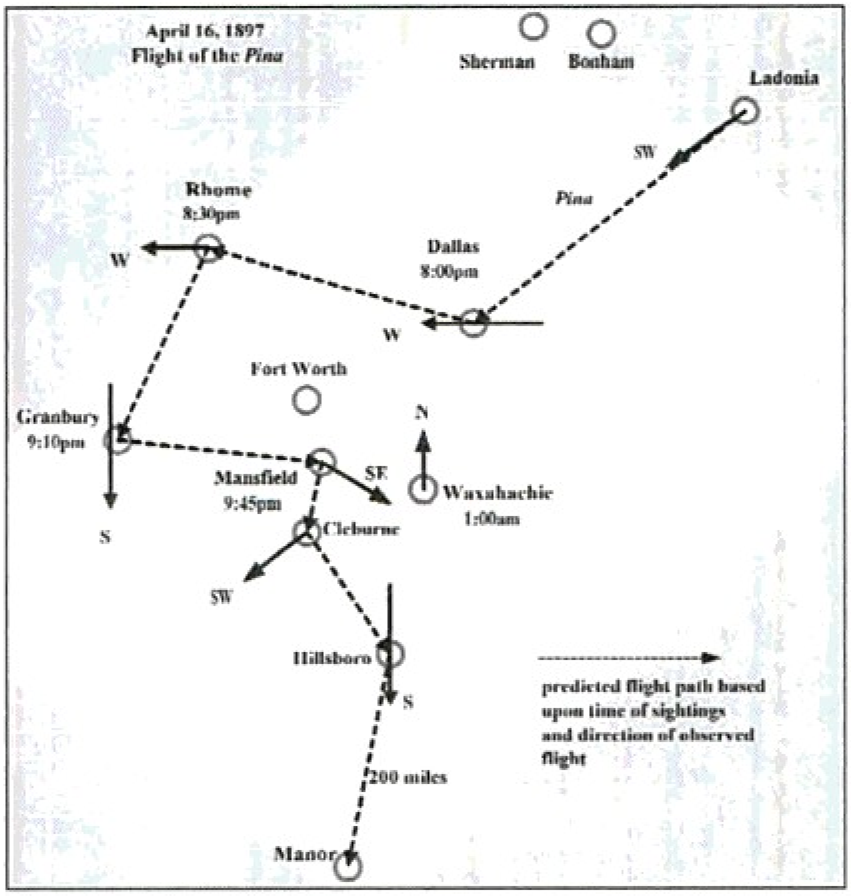
April 16, 1897
Flight of the *Pina*
Sherman
Bonham
Ladonia
SW
Pina
Rhome
8:30pm
W
Dallas
8:00pm
W
Fort Worth
N
Granbury
9:10pm
Mansfield
9:45pm
SE
Waxahachie
1:00am
S
Cleburne
SW
Hillsboro
S
predicted flight path based upon time of sightings and direction of observed flight
200 miles
Manor

Flight of the *Pina*

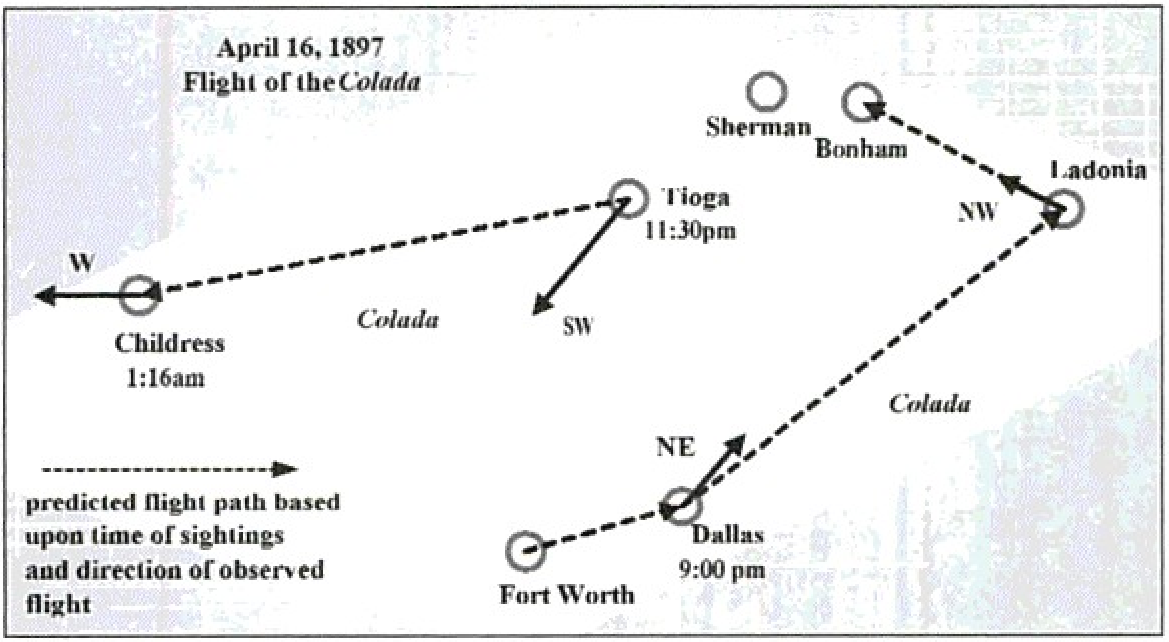
April 16, 1897
Flight of the *Colada*
Sherman
Bonham
Ladonia
NW
Tioga
11:30pm
W
Childress
1:16am
Colada
SW
Colada
NE
predicted flight path based upon time of sightings and direction of observed flight
Dallas
9:00 pm
Fort Worth

Flight of the *Colada*

Note the area where the flights originate and terminate—an area somewhere just north of Ladonia. Ladonia is a small community near Red River, a little southwest of Paris, Texas. Later, we will investigate the possibility that the airships were based in this area while flying in Texas.

TABLE 6
April 16, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/16/97	Hawkins Tank	TX			At rest		*DMN* 4/17/97
4/16/97	Dallas	TX	8:00 P.M.- 8:30 P.M.	E to W		300 ft	*SAE* 4/17/97
4/16/97	Bonham	TX	8:15 P.M.	SE to NW (toward Denton)	¼ mile		*DMN* 4/18/97
4/16/97	Rhome	TX	8:30 P.M.	W	150 mph		*FWR* 4/18/97
4/16/96	Gaston Ranch (near Kaufman)	TX	9:00 P.M. (about)	S			*DMN* 4/18/97
4/16/96	Dallas	TX	9:00 P.M.	NE	Faster than any train of cars		*DMN* 4/18/97
4/16/97	Farmersville	TX	9:00 P.M.	SW	60-80 mph	200 ft	*AAS* 4/20/97 *ADS* 4/19/97
4/16/97	Granbury	TX	9:10 P.M.	S			*DMN* 4/19/97 *GN* 4/19/97
4/16/97	Mansfield	TX	9:45 P.M.	SE		300 ft	*DMN* 4/18/97
4/16/97	Oak Cliff	TX	10:00 P.M.	SE		1 mile	*DTH* 4/17/97
4/16/97	Tioga (Grayson County)	TX	11:30 P.M.	SW	Rapidly		*DMN* 4/18/97
4/16/97-4/17/97	Greenville	TX	Midnight	NE			*DMN* 4/19/97 *GDN* 4/18/97
4/15/97 or 4/16/97	Hawkins	TX					*DMN* 4/17/97
4/16/97	Oak Cliff	TX					*DTH* 4/17/97
4/16/97	Sherman	TX	Night				*AAS* 4/18/97
4/16/97	Fort Worth	TX	Night				*AAS* 4/18/97
4/16/97	Hillsboro	TX	Night	S		1,000 ft	*AAS* 4/18/97
4/16/97	Fort Worth	TX	Night	In the west			*DMN* 4/18/97
4/16/97	Ladonia	TX	Night	SW	Rapidly		*DMN* 4/18/97
4/16/97	Forney	TX	Night				*DMN* 4/18/97
4/16/97	Cleburne	TX	Night	SW	Moderate		*DMN* 4/18/97
4/16/96	Dallas	TX	Night	SE		1 mile	*DMN* 4/18/97 *ADS* 4/19/97

TABLE 6 (continued)
April 16, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/16/97	Longview	TX	Night				*DMN* 4/20/97
4/16/97	Manor	TX	Night	S			*DMN* 4/19/97 *GN* 4/19/97 *SAE* 4/19/97
4/16/97	Dallas	TX	Night	SE	Velocity of the wind		*DMN* 4/17/97
4/16/97	Marshall	TX	10:30 P.M.				*DMN* 4/17/97
4/16/97	Jewella (near Shreveport)	LA		W	Faster than a train		*DMN* 4/17/97
4/16/97	Dallas	TX	10:00 P.M.	SE			*DTH* 4/17/97
4/16/97	Garland	TX	Night				*AAS* 4/19/97
4/16/97	Texarkana	TX	Night				*AAS* 4/19/97
4/16/97	Newland	TX	Night				*AAS* 4/19/97
4/16/97	Richmond	TX	10:00 P.M.	SW		100 yds	*GDN* 4/20/97

Note: *DMN* = *Dallas Morning News*
GN = *Galveston News*
SAE = *San Antonio Express*
DTH = *Dallas Times Herald*
AAS = *Austin American Statesman*
GDN = *Galveston Daily News*

TABLE 7
April 17, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/17/97	Waxahachie	TX	1:00 A.M.	N			*DMN* 4/18/97
4/17/97	Ladonia	TX	3:00 A.M.	SW		3 miles	*DMN* 4/19/97 *GN* 4/19/97

CHAPTER 7

SATURDAY, APRIL 17, 1897

There are seventeen sightings reported for the night of April 17. This night is remarkable in the airship story because in the early morning of April 18 an airship experiencing mechanical difficulties reportedly crashed and burned in a small town a few miles west of Fort Worth.

"Snapshots" was a *Dallas Morning News* column containing editorials. It was sometimes humorous, sometimes serious, and sometimes just cranky. It was the nineteenth-century equivalent of *60 Minutes*' irascible Andy Rooney. And the story continues.

SNAPSHOTS

One may ascertain his own opinion of airships, but he may find it necessary to keep them to himself, because even the ladies have been seeing them. *[I cannot imagine the social implications of such a statement. Does this mean that women of the era were believed to see all manner of nonexistent things? In any case, the statement does indicate an editor who didn't believe the airship stories.]*

An Arkansas preacher believes that the airship recently seen in the northwest is the temple of the tabernacle of the testimony, and that the third angel is now pouring out his vial upon the rivers and mountains of waters.

There is a man in Atchison who declares that the airship cook dropped a potato on his head. *[This statement seems reasonable. Several individuals who examined airships at close quarters reported the existence of a galley and a cook.]*

A Kansas man proposes to take time by the forelock. He announces that he will run for the legislature on a platform to regulate the air courses of that state.

From the number of airships that have been discovered it would seem that the airship factories have been running on full time for a number of years *[Recall the proposition stated in the previous chapters of at least three airships flying about the night skies of Texas in April 1897. There may be more truth to this statement than the editor realized. We will investigate this issue in the final chapters.]* ("Snapshots," *Dallas Morning News,* April 17, 1897).

AT FARMERSVILLE

Men Seen in it and Heard Singing 'Nearer My God to Thee.'

Farmersville, Collin Co. Tex, April 18—(To The News)—Last night *(April 17—see* AAS account in chapter 6] about 9 o'clock a dim light was seen in the northwest, apparently moving slowly to the south or southwest. When first seen it did not look larger than an ordinary 50 cent silver piece. Those watching the queer light soon discovered that the object was approaching the city traveling at the rate of *60 to 80 miles an hour.* Some thought it to be a cloudless tornado and those who had storm houses lost no time in getting into them, while the more unfortunate waited and watched the results of the approach of the queer object. In a very short time fully two-thirds of the citizens were out looking at what they then supposed to be a large planet or meteor approaching the earth. In a very few moments—in fact, in less time than one can tell it—the queer thing was almost hanging over the city.

City Marshal Brown was in the western part of the city making his rounds before going home and says the ship, or balloon, or whatever it was passed over him and about 200 feet off the ground. Brown says he could see *two men in the ship and something resembling a large Newfoundland dog.* Mr. Brown says he was close enough to hear them talk but *could not understand one word of their language.* He is of the notion they are Spaniards. He thinks *Spain has sent several of these airships into the United States* with none but trusted officers of the Spanish government to make a survey of the country, so in case the United States should declare war against Spain the latter nation would know every weak seaport station in the United States and Spain would know just where to land her army and attack our weak points.

> Another eyewitness Mr. Hildreth, says he saw *three men in the ship* and that he heard them singing 'Nearer My God to Thee' and that they were distributing temperance tracts. R. Porter ("High in the Heavens," *Dallas Morning News,* April 18, 1897, p. 4).

This is the second Texas account that mentions a Spanish connection. This is an important issue and will be discussed in the final chapters.

Unfortunately the reporter does not say how they were distributing temperance tracts. Were they just tossing them overboard as they flew over communities, or did they land and hand them out on street corners? I suspect the temperance tracts and "Nearer My God to Thee" to be fabrications in an attempt to further the personal agenda of one Mr. Hildreth. There are no other existing accounts that place the crew members of the airships in such a religious situation.

This account is also mentioned in chapter 6 in the *Austin American Statesman* account titled "In Texas." The *Dallas Morning News* did not report the Farmersville sighting as "Friday night," April 16, but as "last night," April 17. The *Austin American Statesman* account of Marshal Brown's sighting gives a date of April 16. (See the account titled "At Farmersville," in chapter 6.) Since *the Austin American Statesman* specifically mentions "Friday night," which is unambiguous, I am inclined to believe the *Austin American Statesman's* date, or April 16. The *Dallas Morning News* correspondent may have written the article on April 17, giving "last night" as the correct day of the sighting, but the correspondent delayed sending the telegram to the *Dallas Morning News* until April 18.

SEEN AT BEAUMONT

Beaumont, Jefferson Co., Tex., April 17—R.E. Draugham, who is night watchman at the Texas Tram and Lumber company's planer says that this morning *[April 17]* at 1:00 he saw something which he took to be the much-talked-of airship. The object was a globular shaped thing a little dark with a bright light the size of a star in one end. It came from the southeast and went toward the northwest slowly, but was very high in the air ("High in the Heavens," *Dallas Morning News,* April 18, 1897, p. 4).

THE AIRSHIP.

A Texas Rabbi Says He Has Seen It and Describes the Wonder

There is a man in New Orleans who has seen the airship and conversed with one of the occupants. He is Rabbi A. Levy, of Beaumont ,Tex., and his clerical position entitles him to credence.

Dr. Levy was seen by a Picayune man last night at the residence of Mrs. G. Levy, No. 48 St. Peter Street, where he is stopping, having come to this city to attend the wedding of Mrs. Levy's daughter this afternoon, the young lady being his niece.

"You can take my word for it," said he, "that the airship is no myth. I had heard a good deal about it, but placed little reliance in the stories that were circulated, and doubted until the moment I saw it. It was about ten days ago *[April 15 or, perhaps, April 17— the April 17 date agrees with other accounts placing an airship in this vicinity on this date]* on a farm about two miles from Beaumont , which is my home. About 10 o'clock that night the *whole country around was aroused by the report that the airship had been seen and that it had alighted on a farm nearby.* My curiosity was aroused and I went to see it. I learned that they had stopped to *lay in fresh supply of water.* It was dark as pitch then, and I could see very little except the outlines of the ship. It was about *150 feet long,* the body being shaped something like the hustles used in an ordinary sewing machine. On either side were *immense wings, about 100 feet long.* It seemed to be *made of some light material,* what I could not say. *I spoke to one of the men when he went into the farmer's house, and shook hands with him. It is run by electricity,* but how it is supplied I do not know. Yes; I did hear him say where it was built, but I can't remember the name of the place, or the name of the inventor. *He said that they had been traveling a great* *deal, and were testing the machine.* I was so dumbfounded that I could not frame an intelligent question to ask, so you see I can give you but very meager details. One thing I do know, and that is that an airship is an accomplished fact, *for I have seen it,* and many of my friends have seen it flying in the air. It went to Dallas, Austin, Fort Worth and hovered all around Texas for some time." Dr. Levy will return to his home in a day or two" *(New Orleans Daily Picayune,* April 25,1897, p. 7).

The rabbi's eyewitness statement is consistent with many other airship accounts. "Laying in water" seems to be a sufficiently valid reason for coming to the surface and alighting. Notice this account of a faceto-face encounter with the crew member does not mention any difficulty in communication. If we assume the rabbi spoke English (seems reasonable in 1897 Texas), then the crew member he conversed with must have spoken English also. However, the previous account of Marshal Brown states that he thought they spoke Spanish. This account does not specifically mention any language barriers. The possible existence of a Spanish connection is a very important factor in the airship story.

Note that Rabbi Levy stated the crew member told him the airship was powered by electricity. A discussion of possible sources of motive power is presented in the final chapters. Levy's general description, including the length, is consistent with previous reports.

THE AIRSHIP

Views Expressed Concerning the Aerial Monster.

AS SEEN BY VARIOUS PERSONS.

A Druggist Who Saw It Tells of His Experience Sighted by a Watchman at the Hour of Going to Press. Motto the words of that plaintive foreign air

Have you seen the airship? This is the question that was heard most frequently on the streets Saturday and was made the theme of the street corner humorist almost to the exclusion of the Cuban war, Count McCloskey's base runners, and the latest gossip about the flood in Louisiana.

Staid citizens who have never been known to get within shooting distance of a saloon would stop each other and refer ambiguously to the eccentric appearance that has been keeping the people from one seaboard to the other guessing for the past weeks and causing eyes of thousands of others to bulge out with astonishment while watching it "scorching" down the firmament like Mr. John Hay's "Prairie Bell," (an exceptionally fast railroad passenger service) "with its furnace crammed with resin and pine."

Such a phenomenon certainly offers a happy theme for the lovers of conjecture, and about as many theories have been expressed about the uncanny monster as it has been times seen. There is no question but what it has usurped, temporarily at least, the place of the sea serpent, that misguided monster which every right minded proprietor of a summer hotel would sign a season's contract with to disport itself exclusively for the gratification of his guests on the white sea sands. At present, there is great doubt as to whether or not it is a rakish practical craft skimming the sky for ulterior purposes of gain, either of preempting choice portions of the earth not yet claimed or annexing some Cherokee strip in Mars. Some think it is a product of the craft of man unmixed with guile.

"I wonder why it always flies in the night time," remarked one Dallas man Saturday.

"Why, it's a fly-by-night company, to be sure," remarked a friend.

This is a facetious view—one indulged in seriously by quite a number of level headed citizens, however. Some are utterly skeptic and suggest that it is a new fad with those people who are unfortunate enough to "see things." Formerly their minds conjured up blue monkeys, Nile-like saurians and other creeping things equally disagreeable for the mind to dwell upon long at a time. They suggest that having exhausted the catalog of things that creep, they have by some mental somersault invaded the realm of flying things, and hence the airship.

This aerial vessel seems to have adopted its motto the words of that plaintive foreign air once so popular on these shores: "Just Tell Them

That You Saw Me, "*and there was nothing else to mention.*

Perhaps it is the long lost Pleiad vainly endeavoring after all these years to get back home and take its place in society. Again, it may be the successful culmination of some aerial invention which a jealous European power is anxious to secure a copy right on and takes this means of testing where no prying neighbor can break in and steal the patent safety break device. It may be an aerial navigator from Mars, a sort of devil-may-care Ulysses with a desire to go west and survey new patches of ether *[The general concept of the universe in the late 1800s was one of it being immersed in an ether-like substance, albeit invisible. This is a reference to alien beings exploring the universe.]* In fact, there is no end to the amount of conjecture that might be indulged in.

Plain, unaesthetic folks think it may be the work of some patent pill producer, or baking powder magnate, who seeks to startle the American people by a great hoax, knowing that he who boometh his own judiciously, prospereth not a little.

But there are people who have seen it. Why, dear me, of courses there are. Right here in Dallas, too.

Druggist R. C. Kopisch, whose store is next to the Oriental Hotel, has a vivid impression that he saw it. The impression was all that remained with Mr. Kopisch when he talked with a Times Herald reporter yesterday. He referred to the spectacular appearance very modestly.

Said he: "I don't know what it was I saw, but last night *[April 17]* between 8 and 8:30, and while I was in my store, my attention, as well as that of some 15 or 20 others, was drawn to something that might be likened to the headlight of a trolly car that hovered far over in the west and moved swiftly in a northwesterly direction. It had no particular shape to it as far as I could see, but there was a sort of hazy darkness back of the light that seemed almost opaque.

"The phenomenon, as I said, attracted quite a crowd on the corner, including, a number of guests of the hotel. We watched it till it disappeared toward the north."

"Right in the direction of the brewery, eh?" inquired the scribe.

"Yes, so it was," said Mr. Kopisch, as if he bethought himself of something.

The reporter turned away. His faith in the airship was shaken.

It was veraciously reported that Judge A. T. Watts witnessed the frisky airship disporting itself in the heavens in the full glare of publicity and the moon, but a call at his office developed the fact that he was at the ball game, and two calls later still failed to find him.

Later developments leading to the identification and ownership of the aerial craft are awaited with interest, and further communications of witnesses of its impetuous passage through the stilly night will make good Sunday reading.

Later—Just as the Times Herald was going to press the following was handed in for publication.

The mysterious airship which has created so much excitement throughout the country and furnished two or three columns of news to our daily papers the past week, was just *sighted passing over the city by the firemen of No. 4 Engine company on watch.* Its approach was preceded by a blinding flash of light, and a dim shadow was cast as it passed over the city hall from the northeast. It was so high that accurate description of its dimensions was impossible. Its speed was very great, with a strong search light in front. Smaller lights resembling the windows of a lighted passenger coach in the night were seen at the side. No wings were discernable, nor any noise heard. It being so far away. It *appeared to be more that one hundred feet long,* and was propelled by some powerful force ("The Watchman," *Dallas Times Herald,* April 18, 1897).

AIRSHIP SEEN IN GALVESTON

Walter L. Norwood, An Undertaker Viewed it Early Yesterday Morning

Walter L. Norwood, an undertaker, and Bob Tevis, his driver, saw the airship yesterday morning *[April 17]* over the city of Galveston. Mr. Norwood was sitting on the bench in front of J. Levy &Bro.'s stables and Mr. Levy announced to a News man that he had seen the airship. After some badinage he protested his innocence of attempting a joke.

"No, this is no joke. I am telling you the truth. I was called out to Thirty-ninth and R about 3 o'clock this morning. A negro out there had died and we were called to prepare him for burial.

"The moon was shinning brightly, and we could see almost as plainly as in daylight. There was not a cloud in the sky. When we were out on the beach not far from our destination. I happened to look up, and see the thing. It moved to the eastward down the beach, following the line of the beach as closely as one would do in driving a buggy. We stopped and watched it. When down about the end of the island it turned and followed the bay front until about Tremont street, when it turned again, crossed over the town and went south and over the gulf, disappearing in the distance.

"Did it look anything like the picture in The News yesterday morning"

"It was not so pointed at the ends as that. The picture shows the headlight as being directed more toward the earth, while in reality it is directly in front, for when it was over us we could see no light at all. *It looked like a great big bird. The wings flapped regularly* and it appeared to go swiftly."

"How far up was it?"

> "Oh, I could, not tell exactly, especially at night, but I judge it was about four times as high as one of those telephone poles." The poles are 60 feet in height. Further than this he could give no details. Mr. Tevis was, like his wife, "examined separately and apart," and he told the same story *[What the reporter means is that each witness—Mr. Tevis and Mr. Norwood—was questioned separately.] (Galveston News,* April 18, 1897).

Scientists had pretty much ruled out wing-flapping as a means of successfully elevating humans above the last layer of the earth's crust several years previous to the date of these sightings. However, wing-flapping could contribute to motive power if some other means were incorporated to provide the prerequisite lift. Recall an earlier discussion from chapter 4 about how the wings of modern-day jets "flap" to some degree as a means of preventing them from snapping off in turbulent winds. Typical flapping does not add to the motive power of the airship but keeps the wings intact in turbulence.

However, many airship/airplane inventors in the 1800s were mesmerized by the almost magical flapping of birds' wings. For many, no matter how hard they tried to break the habit, they could not refrain from adding at least a little wing-flapping to their machine's design. So, it is entirely possible that at least one airship was designed to do some flapping in order to contribute to the motive force. (See the account of Marcellus McGary and his successful wing-flapping airship in chapter 20.)

A JUDGE SEES IT

The Curious Effect of Chambers Creek Water.

Waxahachie, Ellis Co., Tex., April 18.—The News reporter has had an interview with Judge Love of this city concerning the mysterious airship, which has been puzzling the minds of many Texans. A rumor having gained currency that it had been seen by him, The News reporter called at his office in quest of further information. Judge Love said:

"Mr. Beatty and myself were on a fishing tour of Chambers creek near the mouth of Great House ranch yesterday *[April 17].* The wind was in the north and we were having very little success. About 5:30 or 6 o'clock in the afternoon, we decided to go further down the creek. About 600 yards from the mouth of Great House ranch Mr. Beatty was slightly in advance, and I heard him say, "My God, what is that?" When I struggled through the underneath to him he pointed to the left and there in a ravine, was a group *of five peculiarly dressed men,* and resting on the bank by them was a *queer looking machine,* which from the sketches and descriptions heretofore published in The News, *we decided must be the airship.* The men were taking their ease—stretched out full length on some furs—and they were smoking pipes. We, with some trepidation, advanced upon them; when they saw us they appeared somewhat disconcerted, but one of them in *fairly good English* called to us 'Come and join us.' We advanced and after mutual introductions had taken place, I asked if that was the famous airship. The man who had first called to us, and who appeared to be the leader of the party, said, 'That is *one of the airships [The actual number of airships is one of the central themes of this story, and the fact that the speaker says, "one of the airships" implies that there are more. How* *many more? Two? Three? Five? Or maybe nine?];* would you like to examine it?'

"The vessel or airship is *thirty-twofeetlong* and in the *center is fourteen feet wide,* sloping gradual toward each end *like a Mexican cigar.* It has *three pairs of wings,* each is like the wings of a bird. They are ribbed fore and aft, and are covered so that the *stream of air can have its full lifting capacity (much as a modern airplane gets its lift from the stream of air passing over the wings]* somewhat after the manner of the wings of the kite sent up by Lamson in Rigsby Park The airship contained machinery by which the wings can be worked or flapped *very rapidly* and by *means of a lever* the ship can be *turned to any direction or made to ascend or descent* at will of the helmsman. The ship is fitted for the accommodation of its crew, containing bunks, cooking department, gasoline *stove* and other conveniences. We were told by the aerial navigators that the airship was capable of a *speed of 250 miles an hour, but that its normal rate of speed was from 125 to 150 miles an hour.*

On evincing a desire to hear whence they came and how long they had been navigating the air, their leader produced pipes and a sack of excellent tobacco and asked us to make ourselves comfortable while he proceeded to enlighten us.

[The following story is a fanciful yarn designed to throw off any other inventors attempting to determine the location of their home and possibly attempt to copy their design. The inventors did not want anyone snooping around the location of their shop for fear their secrets might become public knowledge. So, an embellished story of a hidden continent masks where they really came from and provides for entertaining reading. These guys had a good sense of humor. People were willing to buy into this story in 1897 in part because Jules Verne had popularized the existence of an underground world deep in the bowels of the earth in one of his many books—Journey to the Center of the Earth.]

"'We,' he said, 'live in the regions of the north pole. Contrary to the general belief, there is a large body of land beyond the polar area, containing about 250 square miles of territory. The first time this land was visited by human beings, so far as we know, was when the ten tribes of Israel found their way there after the captivity and dispersion of the Jews. According to tradition they were attempting to cross Bearing Straits and were carried by a floating ice berg and landed on the shores of north pole land. The climate there, while at that time cold, was prevented from being uninhabitable by the influence of the gulf stream, which after flowing for hundreds of miles many fathoms under the surface of the sea in that region, came to the surface and flows entirely around the continent of north pole. You wonder how I speak English? Well: the polar expedition of Sir Hugh Willoughby in 1553, who with his crew, was supposed to have been lost, as a matter of fact, succeeded in reaching north pole land. The ship had been so wrecked and broken up by the voyage that Sir Willoughby and his crew were unwilling to risk a return trip, therefore they remained at north pole land. In the early part of 1846 Sir John Franklin's crew reached north pole land. Sir John having died near what is know called Lady Franklin bay. Sir John's crew remained as to return was impossible, the ship being crushed between two ice bergs 100 miles from north pole land to which they went in boats. In addition to the foregoing, various parties in the United States and Europe have from time to time reached this land in a hopeless condition.'

"How do you manage to live?"

'Well, we have a splendid country now. You know how buildings are heated by steam. Well we have pipes through which steam is conveyed all over the inhabitable part of the country and the soil is kept at such a temperature that we can produce all the fruits of the temperate zone and some of the fruits of the tropics. The country is lighted by electricity during the six months night. We have no timber and no coals. Water, as you know is composed of two parts of hydrogen and one part oxygen. The oxygen burns very rapidly, giving off great heat. Now by means of a chemical process, we take an ice berg, separate the hydrogen from the oxygen *(the chemical process for separating hydrogen and oxygen was known at this time, but it was a very expensive procedure to produce oxygen in any quantity]* and use the later for fuel and lights. For lack of timber we can not build ships or trains therefore we were led to the invention of the airship. We have been using the airships in the north pole land for many years for local travel, but not until recently have we made the experiment of taking such trips as the one we are now on.

> 'On the 1st day of January the Historical Society of North Pole Land decided to send out a number of airships throughout the United States and Europe. Twenty airships were ordered built expressly for the purpose with a capacity of five men each. On the 1st day of March, 1897, ten of these ships were started to Europe and ten to America. There are ten ships in the United States. We have guns and fishing tackle and the speed which we go enables us to take any game we can sight. By agreement the ten ships in the United States will meat in Nashville, Tenn. to attend the Centennial Exposition on June 18 and 19 and the ships will be on exhibition for those two days free of charge. *[An inventor did notify the exposition that he would display and fly an airship there. More will be discussed concerning the exposition in the final chapters.]* About 100 miles north of here we had to descend and saw one of your trains go by. They are very curious things, but go so slow. Now we must be going.'"

> Judge Love continued:

> "We then shook hands with the crew and they stepped into their ship, rose in the air and started toward Waco. The description of the ship I have given you is a very meager one but you can all go to the Nashville exposition June 18 and 19 and see for yourselves" *(Dallas Morning News,* April 19,1897, p. 5; *Galveston News,* April 19,1897).

This account of the encounter between the good judge and the airship crew probably is true. The judge's description of the airship and the crewmen match certain elements of other accounts (not yet introduced).

The crew seems to delight in misleading the innocent and unwary. Remember these events occurred during a period of intense scientific investigation and invention. One newspaper article claims that every town in America had its aeroplane inventor at work on solving the problem of "aerial navigation." While the claim is undoubtedly exaggerated, it is probably true that many large towns, and not just a few small ones, also had their crackpot inventors feverishly at work on the problem. So, secrecy was the best policy, if you wanted to capitalize on your efforts.

Stealing ideas and even inventions was a common practice then as it is now. The story of the invention of the television and the lifelong bitter feud between two well-known rival inventors is an interesting account of the intense competitiveness between inventors. The invention of the telephone is another case of a prolific 1800s attempt to steal a profitable invention. Alexander Graham Bell had to defend himself against 600plus claims of patent infringement after he publicly introduced the telephone. Amazingly, one of the prominent characters in this story, yet to be introduced, was party to a lawsuit against Bell for patent infringement.

Inventors carried out their experiments in secrecy. When anyone put them to the test, querying them about their inventions and progress, the inventors so pigeonholed—most likely, but not always—offered a tale that was intended to confuse and mislead the competition. Disinformation is not an invention of the post-World War II superpowers. Countries and people were misleading each other with false and partially true stories long before the United States was settled.

The story of North Pole Land sending out airships to explore the world is certainly entertaining but we know there is no such place as described by the airship crew member. Or, is there?

SEEN OVER SAVOY.

> Savoy, Fannin Co. Tex. April 18.—Last night *[April 17]* between 8:30 and 9 o'clock, J. J. Gallaher, druggist; E. F. Chester, station agent, and J. J. Pritchett, dry goods merchant, while on their way to the lodge, had their attention attracted to a *bright light* in the northern horizon. The flight was at a considerable distance and was traveling in a northwest direction. It is supposed to be the same phenomenon that was seen by a number of persons in Bonham.

These parties are reliable men. They say the light remained in sight *too long for a meteor,* as they watched it for almost ten minutes. They are unable to account for it unless it was the muchtalked-of airship *(Dallas Morning News, April* 19, 1897, p. 5; *Galveston News,* April 19,1897).

COL. PEOPLES SEES IT.

He Observed It With a Field Glass in the Afternoon.

Cameron, Milam Co., Tex., April 18.—The great aerial monster now flying over the country has been seen in Milam County.

Col. Tom Peoples, who owns one of the largest farms in the county, came in this afternoon and reported the substance of the following story:

Mr. Peoples says that yesterday *[April 17]* about 2 p.m. he was sitting on the front gallery of his convict quarters watching with his field glasses the convicts at work a mile or two off, when he noticed a dark shadow cover the forty convicts plowing in that gang. It was a bright and perfect day, without a cloud, he was astonished that the horses and men should be under a cloud. He at once began to look for the cause when, with his glass, he caught sight of a huge body coming at a fearful speed from the northwest, and between the sun and the convicts, thereby casting a dark shadow over them. The monster had the appearance of the pictures of the great whaleback ships of which much has been written, with *great wings both fore and aft,* with *great fins beneath and on the sides.* The noise of its approach was not great but *it produced a humming sound [electric motors, maybe?],* which he thinks was *caused by the machinery that propelled it.*

The principal upon which the great unknown flyer seemed to operate was that of a great plane and the same movement as that observed in the flight and movement of the buzzard as it floated rapidly and without seeming effort and it *seemed to take very little power,* although it was of monstrous proportions. The visitor, he thinks, *must have come from another planet* and is on a tour of observation, for it came very low and almost stopped near the large artificial lake on his ranch.

Col. Peoples says that when the ship made this stop there was a great commotion aboard it and *many apparent signals were given with strange-colored banners or flags. [Perhaps the signals were how the ships communicated with each other? Was the ship in trouble or* *experiencing some kind of difficulty?] Strange streamers or streaks of peculiar, dazzling white lights seemed to shoot up to the sky from aboard this strange craft. [The sparks from the commutator brushes from the electrical motors?]* After this stop, for the first time, it seemed to require every effort of power to get the machine in motion. *(This indicates the airship was experiencing some type of difficulty.]* After many rapid revolutions of the great wings *[the fan or propeller blades],* rudders or fins and more *humming sound of machinery,* the great and startling ship shot rapidly upward and the last he saw of it, it was going southwest. There was much alarm among the convicts and guards, some thinking that the evil days had drawn nigh, some that their day of deliverance had come.

This is a strange story but it was given in good faith to the News reporter and is vouched for by all the men on Col. Peoples plantation (*Dallas Morning News,* April 19, 1897, p. 5; *Galveston News,* April 19,1897; *San Antonio Express,* April 20, 1897).

THE GREAT AERIAL WANDERER

IT IS EITHER A REALITY OR ANANIAS AND SAPPHIBA WERE MERE AMATEURS

Found on the ground at Greenville and Stephenville, and Exploded at Decatur.

Stephenville, Tex., April 17.—This afternoon Mr. C. L. Mcllhany, a prominent farmer who lives three miles down the Bosque from here, came into the News correspondent's office and before seating himself he said:

"I have found it."

"Found what?"

"Found the airship The Dallas News has been talking about. Its no joke. I discovered the ship *on the ground* early this morning *[April 17]*. It was in charge of two men, one an engineer and the other a pilot. They had been compelled to come to the ground to make repairs on the machinery. I at once came to Stephenville and reported my find.

I got a large number of our citizens, who at once proceeded to the spot to view the aerial monster. Among those who viewed the wonderful machine were: Col. James U. Vincent, Eugene Moore of the Stephenville Empire, Mr. Charles Bassell of the Stephenville Journal, Judge W. W. Moorse, Senator L. N. Frank, Mr. M. F. Martin, Dr. S. D. Naylor, Judge Thomas B. King, Mr. J. C. George, Dr. M. Day, J. H. Cage, S. Frank, W. P. Orr, mayor of the city, James Collins, Mr. Lee Young, Dr. R. S. Cameron, Dr. J. H. Stewart, A. M. Borders, S. C. Buck, Hon. J. T. Daniel, ex-District Attorney, Hon. J. W. Karker, District Attorney, Otho S. Houston and Hon. J. S. Straughan, district judge, and *many other of our prominent citizens. [I cannot imagine all of these distinguished community leaders subscribing to such a deception as a fake story.]*'The airship is very much as reported by the News heretofore.

> It consists of a *cigar shaped body about sixty feet in length,* to which is attached *two immense aeroplanes,* and the motive power is *an immense -wheel at each end, in appearance much like a metallic windmill.* It is *driven by an immense electric engine,* which *derives it power from storage batteries.* The crew consisted, as stated, of two men who gave their names as 5. *E. Tillman and A. E. Dolbar. They report they have been making an experimental trip to comply with a contract with certain capitalists of New York, who are backing them.* They are confident they have achieved a great success and that in a short time the navigation of the air will be an assured fact. They refused to have their machine critically inspected and refused to talk further as to their plans for the future. They rapidly made the necessary repairs, boarded the ship and bidding adieu to the astonished crowd assembled, the ship rose gently into the air and sailed off in a southwesterly direction.

> If you don't believe me, just ask any one of these men who saw it. And say, I want to tell the News about it. This is one time old Erath is ahead—the first place the airship has been seen to light. And say, what you reckon is going to happen when dynamiters get to riding in airships and dropping bombs down on folks and cities? Is this world ready for airships?"

> Without an answer, Mr. Mcllhany went forth to tell the news *{Dallas Morning News,* April 19,1897, p. 5; *Galveston News,* April 19,1897).

Dolbar is misspelled in this account. The actual spelling is *Dolbear.*

The previous descriptions of the airship's length place it around 150 feet and the width about 50 feet. The reported length here of about 60 feet is significantly different from the previous estimates. Was the observer incompetent at guessing lengths or is there another explanation? Maybe this was a different airship.

Note the identification of the storage batteries as the source of electricity. Motive power is again identified as electrical motors fed by storage batteries. Dolbear and Tillman were university professors with a professional interest in electricity and batteries. (See "Looking for Prof. Amos E. Dolbear" and "Looking for Prof. (Captain) Samuel E. Tillman sections in chapter 20.)

Amos E. Dolbear was a professor at Tufts University in Medford, Massachusetts. He was a close confidant and friend of Moses Farmer who, between 1864 and 1868, perfected a thermoelectric battery and in 1868 constructed the largest one ever built for the deposition of copper upon steel to produce the American-compound telegraph wire. During the years of 1860 to 1863, Moses Farmer developed alloys of aluminum with copper and other metals. In September 1859, Moses Farmer discovered the law of the what is now called self-exciting dynamo and, between that time and 1866, built the first dynamo machine, "an invention which," says Prof. A. E. Dolbear, "has made possible all the electrical industries of today."

Capt. Samuel Escue Tillman was a professor of chemistry at West Point Military Academy from December 23, 1880, until his appointment as the academy's superintendent in 1917. Professor Tillman authored the textbook *Elementary Lessons in Heat; and Essential Principles of Chemistry.*

No doubt, Professor Tillman and Professor Dolbear, through their interest in electrical engineering and chemistry, knew each other and possibly assisted in the design of the "Fargo battery" used in the airship. The identification of these two men, considering their professions (closely associated with an electrically powered machine) is sensible.

Only one person comes to mind when the term "New York capitalist" is mentioned in the same passage as "airships": William Randolph Hearst. Little Willy owned the *San Francisco Examiner* and the *New York Herald* in 1896. At the time, his head office was in New York. Not only did he have sufficient resources to fund airship research and construction, but he also was the only capitalist in a position to know both the East Coast and West Coast participants. Did I mention East Coast and West Coast airship participants? I am getting ahead of the story. Also, he would enjoy an immediate personal benefit from any airship success. Such a machine would reduce his New York-San Francisco commute considerably.

A WINDMILL DEMOLISHES IT.

> Aurora, Wise Co., Tex., April 17.—(To The News) -About 6 o'clock this morning *[April 17]* the early risers of Aurora were astonished at the sudden appearance of the airship which has been sailing through the country.
>
> It was traveling due north, and much nearer the earth than ever before. Evidently some of the machinery was out of order, for it was making a speed of only ten or twelve miles an hour and gradually

settling toward the earth. It sailed directly over the public square, and when it reached the north part of town collided with the tower of Judge Proctor's windmill and went to pieces with a terrific explosion, scattering debris over several acres of ground, wrecking the windmill and water tank and destroying the judge's flower garden.

> The pilot of the ship is supposed to have been the only one on board, and while his *remains are badly disfigured, enough of the original has been picked up* to show that he was not an inhabitant of this world. *Mr. T.J. Weems, the United States Signal Service officer at this place gave it as his opinion that he was a native of the planet Mars. (Many people quickly dismiss this account because of the claim that an alien body was recovered. But, why would a government official, probably with no long-term ties to the community, lie about the recovery of a body? Was this a gaffe by a United States official, similar to another famous incident at Roswell, New Mexico, fifty years later?]*
>
> *Papers found on his person—evidently the record of his travels—are written in some unknown hieroglyphics, and cannot be deciphered.* The ship was too badly wrecked to form any conclusion as to its construction or motive power. It was built of an unknown metal, resembling somewhat a mixture of aluminum and silver, and it must have *weighed several tons. (See chapter 20 for a discussion on lifting power of gas and airship weight.)*
>
> The town is full of people to-day who are viewing the wreck and gathering specimens of the strange metal from the debris. The pilot's funeral will take place at noon to-morrow. S. E. Hayden *(Dallas Morning News,* April 19, 1897, p. 5; *Galveston News,* April 19,1897).

If the Aurora sighting and crash occurred in the absence of any other airship sighting in the area then it would be much easier to consign the account to the heap of known hoaxes. However, there were numerous airship sightings—more than thirty were reported in the North Texas region, including Rhome and Tioga—the evening before the crash. Rhome and Tioga are close by Aurora. Two airship sightings were made at 3:00 A.M. on the morning of the crash, one in Dallas and one in Ladonia. Also, another sighting of an airship said to be experiencing mechanical difficulties, occurred in Stephenville at some early, indeterminate hour before the crash. With so many reported airship sightings nearby, one cannot summarily dismiss the Aurora account.

One of the sightings near Aurora is of particular interest. An airship was seen near Stephenville early on the morning, but before 6:00 A.M., of the crash. The airship was observed on the ground experiencing mechanical problems by many distinguished citizens shortly prior to the Aurora crash. The airship was previously observed on the ground only when it was experiencing mechanical difficulties or the crew needed to replenish their water supply. Stephenville is sixty-eight miles south of Aurora. You may recall the account states the airship was traveling north when it passed over the town.

After leaving Stephenville, the airship reportedly headed southwest, but may have turned north shortly after leaving Stephenville (due to continuing mechanical difficulties), toward its daytime lair, somewhere near Sherman. Either the pilot intentionally headed southwest from Stephenville to confound anyone attempting to trace their daytime hideout or he was headed for a southerly destination by plan but the ship's mechanical difficulties caused him to come about after leaving Stephenville. I prefer to think he initially went southwest but was compelled to turn around due to continuing mechanical difficulties. In any case, the northward direction of the airship as seen by Aurora inhabitants is generally consistent with the probable location of the airship's daytime operations base, which I place somewhere northeast of Aurora and near the Texas-Oklahoma border.

If my supposition is correct, that the pilot was trying to get to his daytime hideout, why was he flying over Aurora if he came from Stephenville? If the daytime hideout was north and east of Sherman, as I predict, he could have taken a more direct approach by going more northeast from Stephenville. It seems reasonable to think that a pilot on a ship experiencing difficulties would want to go in as direct a line as possible to home base. In that case, a ship in Stephenville would not fly over Aurora. But let's look a little closer at the issue.

A plausible explanation for the airship's presence over Aurora the morning of the crash is that the pilot, after leaving Stephenville, did not want to fly over the large cities of Fort Worth and Dallas in the daytime. Remember, the airships avoided flying in the daylight for several good reasons. Flying over metropolitan areas in full daylight offered the guntotin' citizens an opportunity to "puncture the air department" of both the airship and the airmen with their shootin irons. The only accounts of daytime sightings occurred when an airship was on the ground undergoing repairs and then it was only seen by relatively few people. By going north from Stephenville, the pilot of the crippled airship avoided the Fort Worth-Dallas metropolitan area. By adopting such an evasive tactic, the airship needed to fly over small towns only. It is unknown what effect the sight of an airship would cause in 1897 if seen in the daytime over a large city, but it is conceivable such a sight would cause great alarm, even panic, and would result in serious injury to many people. Remember that many people were thinking the airship was from Mars. Many others thought it was God's messenger come to collect the righteous. And many people would gleefully take potshots at the beast, if given such an opportunity. I think that in the selection of the route taken from Stephenville the pilot was exercising prudence by attempting to avoid such calamities.

It is safe to assume that an airship may crash as the result of mechanical difficulties. Experience in this century certainly confirms the possibility. So, if the airships' existence was factual, the probability of an actual crash at Aurora cannot be ruled out. The only significant issue with the reality of a crash is the statement by the United States Signal Service officer that the recovered body, in his opinion, was from Mars. Well, maybe so, but I prefer to think that the recovered body pieces were more likely the burnt-beyond-recognition remains of a human.

Why would a United States government official make such a seemingly outrageous (by today's standards) claim? Large telescopes, sufficiently powerful enough to see great detail of the planet's surface, had recently been focused on Mars. The earthly observers were delighted to see great canals stretching across parts of the water-challenged planet. These canals were evidence the learned community used to proclaim the presence of intelligent life on Mars.

At the time, there was much newspaper space devoted to the exciting discovery of Martian canals. It was supposed by many that life on Mars, if capable of creating great canals for presumably irrigation purposes, might also have sufficient intelligence to develop vehicles capable of interplanetary travel. The conviction that life existed on Mars became so fixed in the American psyche that thousands of people would be stampeded years later in 1937, when Orson Welles performed the H. G. Wells classic, *The War of the Worlds* on radio.

If the credible newspapers and monthly journals reported the airships were from Mars, then any reasonable person would assume the unidentifiable remains must naturally be of Martian origin. So, considering the historical background, it does not seem unreasonable for a government official to assume to be true what he had been reading in the newspapers all along.

The strange metal recovered at the crash site is probably aluminum. Aluminum was not in general use at that time and was not familiar to most people, especially farmers. Only in 1886 did we discover how to smelt aluminum in any large quantity. Aurora was a farming community and farmers were very familiar with steel and iron, as these two metals were used for all manner of farming and household needs. However, it is likely that they would not be familiar with aluminum. The metal would seem strange. Modern-day UFO researchers have searched the good Judge Proctor's farm and claim to have found pieces of aluminum in the immediate vicinity where the old windmill was located. I visited the site in 2001 and found nothing of interest regarding this story.

The papers with "hieroglyphics" sound too much like the coded notebooks of Dellschau, who recorded secrets concerning the Sonora Aero Club in his notebooks using a code known only to him and perhaps any accomplices he may have had. It would prove most fruitful to compare these papers to Dellschau's notebooks and determine the points of similarity. Where are these papers from the Aurora crash currently reposing?

It seems the pilot was buried rather hurriedly in an unmarked grave in the Aurora community cemetery. The fact that the town did not display the "Martian body" for the world to see lends suspicion to the claim that the airship crashed. Also, the recovery of the "weird" papers reinforces the belief the crash claim was false. Many people then (and now) came to conclude that Aurora was falsely claiming the crash to get unwarranted attention for its community. Why? Because, some argued, the railroad had passed Aurora by, therefore ensuring a bleak future for the community. As the argument went, the townspeople wanted to capitalize financially on the publicity such a claim would gain for the town. To use this argument to reject the airship crash claim seems preposterous. Any benefit derived from the publicity of an (false) alien spaceship crash would be fleeting, not necessarily positive, and then the townspeople would suffer the scorn of the rest of the nation. Such a publicity stunt is not very foresighted. For such a claim to hold together for any length of time, the community as a whole would have to agree upon the circumstances of the claim. I cannot imagine the community agreeing to do so.

What if the reporter took it upon himself to write a fake story? One modern writer, Daniel Cohen *(The Great Airship Mystery: A UFO of the l890s)*, claims all the airship stories were fake. He bases his conclusion upon the untenable precept that many newspapers of the period regularly engaged in printed hoaxes as a means of increasing circulation and amusing the audience. He provides some examples of newspaper hoaxes to support his argument. What he never states is that the hoaxes mentioned in his book were singular in their conception and publication. The typical newspaper hoax of the period was carried by one newspaper, usually in a serialized fashion. Upon publication of the final installment, the newspaper would confess to the fabrication of the story. No newspaper ever confessed to printing an airship story as a hoax, although several people admitted later that they fabricated airship stories to see if they could fool the newspaper. These stories involved sightings in other states and are patently false as the circumstances involved are totally out of harmony with the nature of other well-documented sightings.

In any case, if the reporter went out on a limb and wrote the Aurora story without any evidence of an actual crash, I imagine the city fathers (and mothers) would raise a storm of protest the following day. No such remonstration by the good people of Aurora was ever documented.

Modern-day UFO enthusiasts have attempted to get permission from Aurora authorities to let them dig up the area in the community cemetery where the body of the pilot is supposedly buried in an unmarked grave. Aurora has refused, adding fuel to the suspicion that crash was fake. "What does Aurora have to hide," is the cry of the enthusiasts. "Nothing," I say. I am not inclined to believe we need to dig up cemeteries to prove this or that. I think, if we evaluate the pieces of the puzzle, they are sufficient for us to arrive at reasonable, logical, and rational conclusions. In so doing, we cannot but believe an airship crashed on that long-ago morning, killing the unfortunate pilot and burning his body beyond recognition. The pilot, in all likelihood, was a "Martian" only if he called "Mars, Some State, USA" his home.

The airship is now an established fact. Too many reputable accounts have come to the populace's attention to ignore their existence. If three airships were flying about the Texas skies in April 1897, we know from the experience of the past fifty years that sooner or later, one of those airships will crash. Probably sooner, as these airships were the first of their kind, prototypes using technologies far inferior to the modern jetliner. Yet, even with advanced technology, today we, unfortunately, periodically have jetliners falling out of the sky. So, is it unreasonable to believe one of these airships crashed, and the place just happened to be Aurora? It is not.

Perhaps the most significant evidence we now have of the veracity of an Aurora crash is the list of witnesses who gave testimony to seeing the airship on the ground "early in the morning" when it was experiencing mechanical difficulties in Stephenville. The distinguished list includes a colonel, a railroad executive, a newspaper man, two judges, a senator, four doctors, the mayor of Stephenville, a district attorney, an ex-district attorney, a district judge, and "other prominent citizens." While we may be somewhat cynical today (and probably for good cause) and strongly suspect all "prominent" citizens, capable of lying if it is in their interest, it is hardly imaginable that such a list of characters would conspire to lie about seeing an airship on the ground and undergoing repairs. A subsequent crash seems entirely possible and even likely if the mechanical difficulties were severe and/or the winds were high on that April morning.

At this point, a thinking person may ask, "Who were the two men seen with the airship at Stephenville?" Also, why were parts of only one body found? In the final chapters, we pursue these leads. The results of the investigation will astound you.

SKEPTICS AND BELIEVERS

Ennis, Ellis Co., Tex., April 18.—The excitement incident to the published reports of the wonderful airship is growing more and more intense and various opinions are being expressed. One man was heard to say to-day that the whole matter is an advertising scheme. Dr. E. Stuart, an acknowledged authority in metaphysics, gives it as his opinion that the whole affair is due to hypnotism and bad whiskey, and J. M. Chapman thinks it is purely sensational fiction. But the people are not all skeptical. Some believe the question of aerial navigation has been solved and others who are close students of the Bible are apprehensive that the end of time is drawing near and that the strange visitations are heavenly inspectors going about to judge the world. A deeply pious lady said to-day that one would see lights, some would dream and some see visitors, we would hear of wars and rumors of war and lastly that whenever the gospel shall have been preached to all nations then the end will come.

"This,"she said, "has almost come. Every nation except Tibet has had the gospel and messengers are trying to go there. When that is done the fullness of time will have come and the Lord will most likely appear in his second coming."

It is rumored to-day that Mr. C. W. Beale of this city, a very sober and circumspect gentleman, saw the mysterious vehicle last night *[April 17]* and Mr. F. D. Hahnsbeen, night operator at the Central office says he saw it.

City Recorder J. W. Craig says he saw the ship at noon last Monday *[April 12],* but as there had then been no excitement over it he let it pass with only mentioning it casually. He says that he and Charlie Pippenmere were looking at the moon and a star at noon and a dark object passed across his vision which as he now recalls it suits very much to the description given of the air vessel *(Dallas Morning News,* April 19,1897, p. 5; *Galveston News,* April 19,1897).

SEEN AT WEST

West, McLennan Co., Tex., April 18.—(To The News.)— People here have been on the alert for the famous airship. It was seen by Prof. Hickman of this place about 10:30 o'clock last night *[April 17]* moving in a southeast courses. His description of the thing was very minute. It seemed to be whaleback in body with batlike wings, windows with lights inside with a powerful headlight in front. It was not over 500 feet above the ground, but *ascended rapidly* until almost out of sight. It had *almost meteorlike speed. [Does he mean to imply it was fast or should we take the statement literally? I think he just meant the speed of the airship was fast.]*

It was also seen by Thomas Franklin and others living near this place. This settles the matter of the fact of the airship in this place. James Griffin *(Dallas Morning News,* April 19, 1897, p. 5; *Galveston News,* April 19, 1897).

HAS A MUSIC CREW

Hillsboro, Hill Co., Tex., April 18.—A number of persons in this city whose curiosity in regard to the airship has been aroused to fever heat by the graphic accounts of this mysterious wanderer of the heavens as published in The Dallas News sat up most of the night in hopes of seeing it. Their vigilance was not rewarded, probably from the fact that it had engagements to fill in other sections and could not get around.

However, a gentleman named Walter Williams, who camped with his wagon on a high hill about two miles east on the Hillsboro and Mount Calm road, and who slept on the extreme summit of the hill, says he heard and saw wonderful things that were not on the program. He came to town this morning and The News reporter ran across him at the city watering trough as he was watering his team. The reporter, observing that he appeared perplexed about something, halted and entered into a conversation with him, and soon learned the cause of his perplexity. An account of this man and his strange experience is best related in his own words. Said he:

My name is Walter Williams. I am a farmer and live in Anderson County near Montalba, a small country village. I am on my way overland to Hardeman County where I have land interests. Last night *[April 17] I* stayed east of here on a high hill. I stopped my wagon and team at the foot of the hill, where I fed my team. After supper I strolled about a little for relaxation and eventually got to the summit of the hill. The night was an ideal one with no clouds visible anywhere. The moon was cleverly up and the view from the hill eminently beautiful and impressive. The city of Hillsboro lay off in the valley to the west in all it picturesqueness, while beyond it the shadow of the cross timbers showed darkly against the horizon. The timbered creek above and below me and the clear sky above, from which a few stars blinked sleepily, added to the happiness of the occasion. Moved by impulse I took off my hat on adoration to the hand that had fashioned the hills and spread the valley there. The place was so lonely and quiet I decided to spend the night there, and got my blankets and spread them on the ground with nothing but the blue canopy above me.

I soon drifted away into the land of slumber. After awhile I was awakened by the sound of music. I lay on my pallet with my eyes closed and listened to it. Softer, sweeter music was never heard. Its melody coursed through my veins and penetrated my very soul. Presently I was sufficiently awake to remember where I was and it struck me as very strange that I should hear music at that place and time. I opened my eyes and looked around me. I could see no one, and the music very strangely seemed to be in the air overhead. I sprang to my feet and could not see anything. It must have been midnight or past, for the moon had climbed high up the heavens, and its silver rays filled the earth with their radiance. I felt as if I was in a spirit land listening to the weird music of spirits. It was like the music of an organ with flageolet, violin, flute and cornet accompanying it. At times it seemed very near and then floated away almost beyond the range of hearing, but always returning sweeter and more devotional than before. Look as I would I could see nothing of the invisible musicians, and it is natural that I should have felt somewhat superstitious about it. Yet I was not as disturbed as one would suppose by it. I know or felt reasonably certain that no human agency produced the music, still it did not terrify me. The tune was 'Coronation,' and while it was soft and low, it seemed to penetrate the entire universe. The very air seemed to thrill from it. The stars in the distance, dim and indistinct, appeared to feel its vibration. After awhile the music ceased and I noticed a commotion in the milky way almost overhead. It seemed as if millions of stars moved by a sudden impulse, had started revolving about each other in what appeared to be a space ten feet in diameter. They revolved around faster and faster, occasionally throwing off stars which darted into the void and disappeared. This lasted for scarcely a minute, when the disorder ceased. In the center of the circle was plainly outlined a cross of stars adorned with a crown of thorns. This presently faded and left the milkyway in its natural state. Just as it faded I plainly heard from myriad of tongues the refrain, "Peace on Earth, good will toward men." I fancied I could see in the far heavens flashing in the moon light the silver tips of angel wings. The song died away and everything grew silent. After that I could not sleep until nearly day when I fell into a soft slumber. I am at a loss to account for it. It could not have been a dream. It was too vivid, and I can not account for it. While it is possible that Easter tide may have had something to do with it, I am not prepared to say that it did. I relate it as it occurred to me, and as a Christian that I saw what I saw. If you doubt it I refer you to any one at Montalba, Tex. who will tell you I am at least regarded as truthful."

> When the reporter recovered from the strangeness of the adventure, Mr. Williams was some distance down the street *(Dallas Morning News,* April 19,1897, p. 5; *Galveston News,* April 19,1897).

I am inclined to believe Mr. Williams went to sleep under the influence of a dose of either morphine or cocaine. This account sounds like the fanciful dream of a person under the influence. Both drugs, easily obtainable in 1897, were commonly used, and abused, for various reasons. During the Vietnam War, my abdomen was cut open and was not closed for ten days due to gangrene. During this time, and the subsequent twenty days following the stitching, I was given a shot of morphine every four hours. I can recall, to this day, the feeling of the morphine high. Music playing through a stereo system and in my head (without benefit of a stereo system) sounded much the same and much like the account given here by Mr. Williams. He probably experienced a similar drug-induced "stereo" and that is probably why he hurriedly departed down the street after reciting his account to the newspaper man—he did not want to be questioned too closely on the matter. Or, this is one of those fake newspaper stories. The name of the road, Mount Calm, given the nature of the story —Mr. Williams was asleep—seems just a little too cute. But then again, there really is a Mount Calm road between Hillsboro and Waco and the airship crew were fond of playing music on occasion.

SEEN IN THE TERRITORY

> Padl, I. T. April 17—(To The News.)—Until tonight *[April 17]* the airship has been regarded as a fake by our people. There is, however, no unbeliever now. At 8:35 p.m., just as the north-bound passenger train No. 12 pulled into the station, the ship was seen traveling in a southern courses, moving at the rate of about *fortyfive or fifty miles an hour.* It looked to be from *75 to 100 feet in length,* carried what seemed to be a headlight not unlike those used on a locomotive, and was some quarter of a mile from the earth.
>
> Attention was first called to the presence of the strange sight by Engineer Girard of the train. Those who saw the ship at this place were Conductor Jack Conlisk and Engineer Girard of the train, Dr. Tucker; Dr. McBride, G. D. Thompson, Mr. Nesbit, and this correspondent, besides the passengers on the train. There is no doubt it was seen by the good people of Paul's Valley as it was traveling in that directions. R. M. Tate *(Dallas Morning News,* April 19,1897, p. 5; *Galveston News,* April 19,1897).

This is the second account that places the length of the airship at 75 feet. The length of this airship marks it as the shorter of the three ships going about the countryside of Texas. The other two airships were 150200 feet long.

AIRSHIP LINE

> Bonham, Fannin Co., Tex. April 17.—(To The News)— Bonham capitalists will in a few days apply for a charter for the Bonham, Ivanhoe, and Lamasco Airship Transportation Company. They will at once inaugurate a double daily passenger ship to transport all merchandise to Ivanhoe and Lamasco, and returning will load with corn, which will be brought to Bonham and loaded on railroad cars for shipment to different parts of the state and for export.
>
> For a distance of about five miles in the Ivanhoe country the air does not contain sufficient buoyancy to float the ships. They expect to overcome this difficulty by either bridging or tunneling. The stockholders, backed by the local newspaper, have all the necessary material on the ground to carry out the enterprise except the bridge and ships. As this will be the first all air line in the state, I thought I would bring it to your attention. Respectfully, Julius (not Jules) Verne *(Dallas Morning News*, April 19,1897, p. 5; *Galveston News*, April 19,1897).

This is obviously a humorous attempt to trivialize all the previously reported accounts of airship sightings.

SEEN AT WORTHAM

Wortham, Freestone Co., Tex, April 18—Captain John A. Lilly, a prominent and reliable citizen of this place, a Mexican War veteran, claims he saw the mysterious airship last night *[April 17]* at 9:30. He says it was *going straight up.* The captain is noted for his truthfulness *(Dallas Morning News,* April 19,1897, p. 5; *Galveston News*, April 19,1897).

AIRSHIP

Seen By Fort Worth People Last Night

SAID TO HAVE LANDED IN THE CITY PARK

A Stephenville Editor Saw It and Tried to Interview the Man Who was Navigating the Aerial Wonder.

Fort Worth, April 19—At last the aerial wonder causing so much comment all over the country has been seen in Fort Worth; at least there are some good citizens who declare they witnessed its appearance last night.

L. E. James says he saw it land in the city park last night *[April 17]*, when a man at least seven feet tall *[exaggeration ?]* alighted from it and appeared to be fastening some ropes after which he boarded it again when it swiftly arose and soon disappeared from view.

J. E. Johnson at the Natatorium says he saw it plainly last night passing over the city.

Word comes from Stephenville that the editor of a paper there saw it near the earth and tried to interview the man conducting it and was informed that he had not time to talk.

Leading astronomers agree that what all have been calling an airship is nothing but a star in the constellation Orion and is so near the horizon that the axial movement of the earth makes it appear that the star is rapidly moving. This is all there is to the airship except where practical jokers have sent up balloons *(Dallas Times Herald*, April 20, 1897).

Many of the accounts speak of direct contact with the airship crews and also of seeing the airship as it glides overhead at various altitudes, changing direction, speeding up and slowing down, etc—hardly the same movement one expects from a twinkling star seen on the horizon. The astronomers do not advance any argument to buttress their illfounded conclusion that everyone is seeing stars "near the horizon." If they left the seclusion of their observatories at night and peered into the sky with naked eyes, they may have discovered the truth for themselves.

Actually, when you read the great body of newspaper accounts from other states, documenting the travels of the airships before they arrived in Texas, you realize the term "leading astronomers" refers to people far removed from the places of the sightings. How did secluded and faraway "leading astronomers" know what Texans were seeing? I suppose when they looked up in the sky inside or outside their observatories, many miles from Texas, all they saw were planets, stars, etc. It should come as no surprise that such experts would debunk the existence of airships.

AIRSHIP HERE!

Abilene's Attractions Were To Great for the New vessel to Stay Away.

> Saturday's Reporter registered a big kick because no one in the up-to-date town of Abilene had seen the airship, and our people came bravely to the rescue. At 11:30 Saturday night *[April 17]* two of our watchmen saw the monster bird hovering over the city, its passengers evidently taking an observation. The gentlemen were enabled to see that it corresponded largely with descriptions given at other places, only it was somewhat larger, its *length being about 700feet.* Windows on the side next to the observers were brilliantly lighted and *faint strains of music* were heard as if from a powerful orchestra. Evidently the passengers were engaged in a pleasant hop, and enjoying themselves to in a highly satisfactory manner. After a few minutes the aerial party started off in a southwesterly direction, and went at a *terrific speed,* but just before it faded from sight it turned to the southeast, and was almost immediately out of sight. No doubt the mysterious visitor will come again, as the attractions of this country by moon light are so great that the passengers will want to see it again. Tonight Mr. Ed Harris and others will keep a sharp lookout, and when they see it will get a more accurate description *(Abilene Reporter,* April 20, 1897, p. 2).

The previous descriptions typically refer to the length as 150 to 200 feet, although some accounts mention an airship 75 feet long. Two previous accounts estimate the length at 500 feet and now this account states the length was 700 feet. What were the actual lengths? I believe two airships were in the 150-to 200-foot range and one was in the 75-foot range. I think the 500- and 700-foot estimates are gross overestimates of the ISO- to 200-foot airships, or maybe there was a fourth, much larger, airship. But, we can only account for three in the Texas sightings.

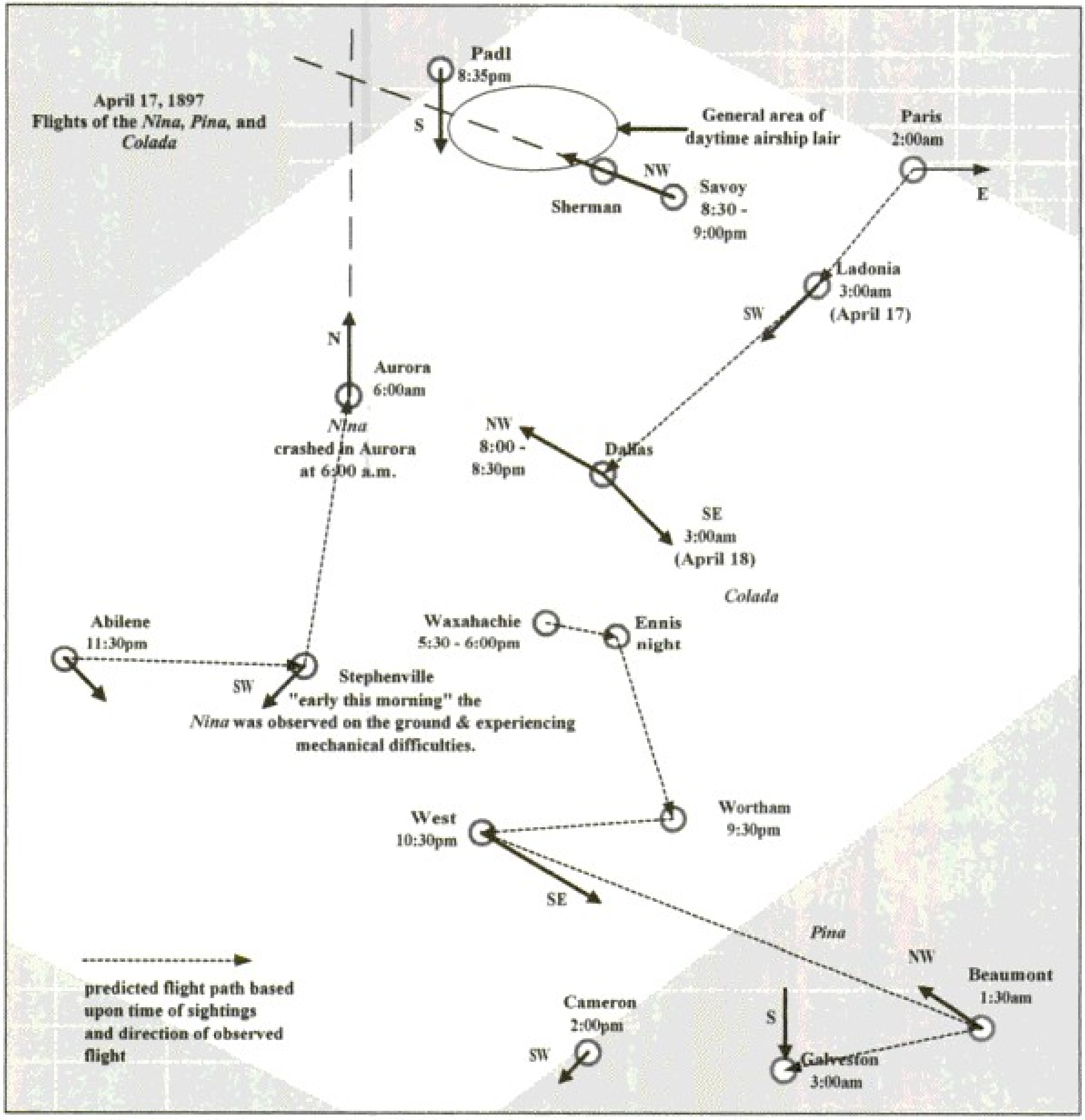
April 17, 1897
Flights of the *Nina*, *Pina*, and *Colada*
Padl
8:35pm
S
General area of daytime airship lair
Paris
2:00am
E
NW
Savoy
8:30 - 9:00pm
Sherman
Ladonia
3:00am
(April 17)
SW
N
Aurora
6:00am
Nina crashed in Aurora at 6:00 a.m.
NW
8:00 - 8:30pm
Dallas
SE
3:00am
(April 18)
Colada
Abilene
11:30pm
Waxahachie
5:30 - 6:00pm
Ennis
night
SW
Stephenville
"early this morning" the *Nina* was observed on the ground & experiencing mechanical difficulties.
West
10:30pm
Wortham
9:30pm
SE
Pina
predicted flight path based upon time of sightings and direction of observed flight
NW
Beaumont
1:30am
Cameron
2:00pm
SW
S
Galveston
3:00am

April 17, 1897, sightings

The scattered sightings of the airships on the night of April 17 indicate that a search for the crashed airship was underway in the direction of Galveston and Beaumont. The two remaining airships roamed the countryside on the night of the seventeenth looking for the tardy airship that did not return the previous night. Unknown to the other crews, the missing ship had crashed that morning in Aurora. The other crews would not read about the fateful crash in the newspaper until April 19. The pattern of sightings indicates a systematic search of the region between Beaumont and San Antonio. It seems reasonable that the other two ships would continue searching until they read of the crash in the paper.

MR. SMITH'S AIRSHIP.

This One Carried 10 or 12 passengers, Wearing Easter Bonnets.

> Mr. L. G. Smith, steward at the Hermitage Hospital, at 3 o'clock Sunday morning *[April 18]* saw the mysterious airship. He said he was on the upper veranda looking south when he discovered an immense shadow falling across town. This was followed by brilliant streams of light, which came from a rapidly approaching object of oblong shape, coursing also downward and from the east. The velocity was lessened and suddenly the vessel rested upon the spire of the federal building. From his position Mr. Smith could see through the windows *small but decorative apartments,* and was sure that *8 or 10passengers* were aboard. Several were *ladies dressed in handsome Easter costumes.* The stop occupied about three minutes. Two men came to the outside. One descended to the steeple, presumably to drop a letter, while the other, with lanterns in hand, *appeared to be applying oil* at the junction of the wings.

> Mr. Smith states that he hastily aroused his wife, but before she could reach him the mysterious pilgrim was away, going toward the

> south, leaving in its journey Oak Cliff, immediately to the left *(Houston Post,* April 22,1897; *Terrell Times-Star,* April 30,1897).

Several accounts in which the pilot or captain of the airship is interviewed by the observer give the crew and passenger capacity as ten people, and another account gives the capacity as twenty. Note the different numbers given in the headline and the body of the account for the amount of passengers, a curious transposition of the facts.

TABLE 8
April 17, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/17/97	Beaumont	TX	1:00 A.M.	SE to NW	Slowly	Very high	*DMN* 4/18/97
4/17/97	Paris	TX	2:00 A.M.	E			*AAS* 4/18/97
4/17/97	Galveston	TX	3:00 A.M.	S	Swiftly	Approx. 250 ft	*GN* 4/18/97
4/17/97	Stephenville	TX	Early morning	SW			*DMN* 4/19/97 *GN* 4/19/97
4/17/97	Aurora	TX	6:00 A.M.	N	10-12 mph		*DMN* 4/19/97 *GN* 4/19/97
4/17/97	Cameron (Milam County)	TX	2:00 P.M.	SW	Fearful speed	Very low	*DMN* 4/19/97 *GN* 4/19/97 *SAE* 4/20/97
4/17/97	Waxahachie	TX	5:30-6 P.M.		At rest	On the ground	*DMN* 4/19/97 *GN* 4/19/97
4/17/97	Dallas	TX	8-8:30 P.M.	NW	Moved swiftly		*DTH* 4/18/97
4/17/97	Padl (north of Paul's Valley)	OK	8:35 P.M.	S	45-50 mph	¼ mile	*DMN* 4/19/97 *GN*4/19/97
4/17/97	Savoy (Fannin County)	TX	8:30-9 P.M.	NW			*DMN* 4/19/97 *GN* 4/19/97
4/17/97	Wortham (Freestone County)	TX	9:30 P.M.	Straight up			*DMN* 4/19/97 *GN* 4/19/97
4/17/97	West (McLennan County)	TX	10:30 P.M.	SE	Almost meteorlike speed	Not over 500 ft	*DMN* 4/19/97 *GN* 4/19/97
4/17/97 (see 4/18/97 below)	Dallas	TX	Night	SE			*DMN* 4/18/97
4/17/97	Ennis	TX	Night				*DMN* 4/19/97
4/17/97	Abilene	TX	11:30 P.M.	SW then SE			*AR* 4/20/97
"about 10 days ago"	near Beaumont	TX	10:00 P.M.		On the ground		*NODP* 4/25/97

Note:
DMN = Dallas Morning News
AAS = Austin American Statesman
GN = Galveston News
SAE = San Antonio Express
DTH = Dallas Times Herald
AR = Abilene Reporter
NODP = New Orleans Daily Picayune

TABLE 9
April 18, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/18/97	Dallas	TX	3:00 A.M.	SE			*DMN* 4/20/97 *DTH* 4/20/97

CHAPTER 8

EASTER SUNDAY, APRIL 18, 1897

There are nine reported sightings for the night of April 18. The sporadic sightings imply the airships were searching for something—perhaps, the airship that crashed and burned in Aurora? We continue with their stories.

> Editorial comment: At last the lights of the mysterious airship have been seen in Texas. It would be a mistake to suppose that Texas has no reputable citizens after dark *(Houston Post,* April 18,1897).

> Editorial comment: The airship epidemic is spreading, but it is believed that the purity of the San Antonio brewery products serves as an effectual quarantine *(San Antonio Express,* April 18, 1897, p. 12).

> The social fad now in swell Kansas society is the airship party ("Snapshots," *Dallas Morning News,* April 18,1897).

CAUSING TALK

Denton, Denton Co., Tex April 17—The airship reports of which have appeared in the news from this and so many other points is causing a great deal of talk here although many still prefer to believe that it is a *gigantic hoax [It would take quite a large conspiracy among many disparate people from diverse professions and widespread regions to perpetuate such a gigantic hoax]* ("High in the *Heavens," Dallas Morning News,* April 18, 1897, p. 4).

It would take quite a large conspiracy among many disparate people from diverse professions and widespread regions to perpetuate such a "gigantic" hoax. I don't think so.

TRUTHFUL' SCULLY CORROBORATED

> Fort Worth, Tex. April 17 -'Truthful'Joe Scully of the Texas and Pacific force is in this city from his run. All day he had been asked concerning the airship. Seen by a News man tonight, he said:
>
> "I did not think that The News reporter was going to quote me at Dallas, but he told the truth. On the dead, I saw that ship, and if a man says I ever took a drink or did not see that ship, just give me his name and I will give him my attention. People don't think these things are coming but they are and one of them is already here. I saw it."
>
> Superintendent Leroy Trice of the road, so Scully says, has admitted to him privately that he had also seen it. Scully says:
>
> "Trice told me to say nothing about this matter, just like I told The News man at Dallas, and of course, I told him I would not. Now this ain't for publication."
>
> Col. Gaston Meslier of the Texas and Pacific here from Dallas said today:

> "When I used to live in Alabama some years ago I heard of airships but I never dreamed that such things existed until such men as Trice, Scully, and Dunlap, told of their seeing them. I never go behind the returns in matters of this kind. *Their accrediddness* [sic] *is on a par with that of election returns"* ("High in the Heavens, *Dallas Morning News*, April 18, 1897, p. 4).

Well, maybe Colonel Meslier should have "gone behind the (election) returns" if he thought the stories were "on a par with that of election returns." Too many dead people are known to have voted in this century for us to believe election returns are anything but suspect. [Dead people in Chicago are notorious for removing themselves from their dark abodes and attending to that most basic of all human freedoms. Must be the Chicago water.]

SENTIMENT AT ENNIS

> Ennis, Ellis Co., Tex April 17—People here are deeply interested in the published accounts of the airship as seen and reported from various points. Some are imposed to treat the matter as a huge sensational joke, while others believe that it is a reality ("High in the Heavens," *Dallas Morning News,* April 18, 1897, p. 4).

AERIAL NAVIGATION

The New York Mail and Express says "no matter what may be finally discovered as to the 'airship' recently reported by several credible citizens in the various states, yet there is reason to believe that the day is not far distant when aerial navigation will be one of the solved problems." It will be remembered that a little over a year ago the great American inventor, Mr. Hiram Maxim constructed in England an airship under very favorable conditions. With a mechanical genius to suggest the details, a corps of skilled workmen to carry out the plans, plenty of capitol to obtain the best materials, and an absolutely perfect workshop provided with tools and instruments of precision and accuracy, the most wonderful airship of its type was completed and tried. This type was the aero-plane, the adjustable planes having a superb arrangement. For every two pounds of weight of engine and sailor, a horsepower was produced. The two large propeller wheels gave speed and direction to the ship. The only question which seemed to him not exactly solved was that of equilibrium. A trial was made but an accident happened which prevented a perfect test. But up to this time, so far as known, Mr. Maxim has not produced the "flying machine."

And so it has been with all the experiments, there is always "some little thing" lacking for successful operation. The largest number of patents issued for these machines has been after the artificial bird type, which consists of a waist belt having connected thereto bat-like wings, a brace extending from the belt upward to the neck of the operator and carrying a transverse yoke, which is grasped and vibrated to assist in flapping the wings. The machines operate successfully for descent from even high altitudes, but are failures for ascending and directing purposes.

About four years ago a very elaborate airship was patented by a Chicago inventor, being similar in shape to a steam ship, with state rooms, galleries, etc., lighted by electricity and propelled by firing explosive cartridges by electric current from the stern of the boat. It has not however proven a success.

Although failures have down to date been the story, much progress has been made in this line since the days of Montgolfer, Cavello, Blanchard, and others, who had similar experiences with the people in France and Portugal who looked upon balloons and their navigators with great superstition.

Dr. Depaw says a fortune of millions awaits the man who can and who possibly will soon solve the problem that will permit a transportation business without requirements of rights of way, bridges, trackage, etc. If there is any young gentleman sailing around Texas and other states, he might apply to the Doctor without further delay *(Dallas Times Herald,* April 18, 1897).

AT ATLANTA

Atlanta, Texas, April 19.—There was excitement here to-day, caused by a visitation last night *[April 18]* by the mysterious airship. It was first seen by Jim Nelson, a farmer, living one and a half miles west of here. He had walked out into his yard just after midnight, when his attention was attracted by a peculiar noise, and looking up he discovered the mysterious aerial traveler. It seemed to be *descending straight* to the earth with *great rapidity* and Mr. Nelson's hair stood on end with fright, as he mistook it for a meteor and momentarily expected it to strike the earth, explode and blow himself, his family and earthly possessions into eternity. But when within two or three hundred feet of the earth it paused for an instant, coming to a *sudden stop,* almost like a heavy weight falling till it reached the end of a rope restraining it, then it moved off at a *rate of speed* about equal to that of an *ordinary passenger train,* in the direction of the city. Having read in the papers of an airship appearing at different places, he decided this must be the mysterious stranger and having telephone connection with this city he immediately rang up central and reported what he had seen.

Mr. Boothe, the telephone manager being in the office, looked out for the airship, which made its appearance on time. While passing over the city it was seen by many of the *best citizens*. Lee Wicks, night policeman, saw it distinctly and describes it as being about thirty feet long and the body or hull being about the proportions and shape of a skiff, and seemed to be propelled by revolving wheels and fitted with sails to guide its courses. Both Mr. Wicks and Mr. Boothe agree in their description of the ship, and both believe the motor power to be electricity.

Dr. Crossly, Jack Bangos, Dr. Connerly, Chesa Meyers, Tom Swint, Doc Hogan, Paul Dunkin, R. T. Cops and Mr. Huffmaster, night operator, all are reported to have seen the ship, and verify the statement and description given by Booths and Wicks.

Another solution offered is that it is an exploring party sent out by some other planet. The most plausible theory seems to be that some inventor has succeeded in solving the problem of aerial navigation and with a party of his friends is out on a trial trip (Appeared under the main headline "Seen at Belton," *Houston Post*, April 22,1897).

When first seen by Jim Nelson there were "only faint gleams of red, green and blue lights, but just after starting off horizontally it shot out a glaring gleam of white light, which was directed towards the earth in front of the airship at an angle of about 45 degrees, and lighted a circle about 30 feet in diameter as bright or brighter than the noonday sun." *[The* Post *adlibbed: This great light and its wonderful power is supposed to have been a search light.]*

While passing over the city the speed of the airship was from five to fifteen miles per hour. It showed up just before reaching the business part of the city, and in passing over this portion its speed was not above five miles an hour. It was traveling almost due east and the stream of light was shut off just after passing the city limits. The opinions regarding this mysterious ship are about as numerous as the population. Some who did not see it are inclined to brand the story as a fake, but the character of the men who saw it can not be questioned. It is impossible to give all opinions*, but one that seems to be worthy of consideration is that this airship is the property of a gang of cracksmen, who by the aid of the searchlight and X-Rays, under the managements of scientific experts, sail over a town and look through the walls of the houses and bank vaults and locate the booty; that they return on a later date and secure it, and then disappear by the aid of their airship* (Appeared under the main headline, "Seen at Belton," *Houston Post,* April 22, 1897; and *Terrell Times Star,* April 30, 1897).

This is the first account that mentions blue lights associated with the airships.

There are no accounts of bank robbers getting away in an airship, nor is there any corroborating evidence to support the supposition that the airship crewmen were robbers and the airship was their getaway vehicle. The editor or correspondent of this account is daydreaming about the crews' motives.

A FILIBUSTERING EXPEDITION

> Hearne, Robertson Co., Tex., April 18. Hearne has had a visitation from the mysterious airship, and to such an extent were the remarkable workings revealed that those privileged to view this mechanical wonder pronounce the nocturnal navigator no longer a mystery. The News man interviewed a prominent young druggist this morning, who beyond a doubt has seen the machine, whose purposes he plainly explains. Its description is a clear counterpart of those already given in The News. His vision was at 2 o'clock this morning *[April 18]* at very close range, the ship being barely above the treetops. By the uncertain electric light he was enabled to decipher *a number of Spanish words* painted on the bow or fore end of the monster, and while not fully understanding the meaning, he is sure the aerial ship is equipping a filibustering expedition to Cuba ("The Mysterious Airship," *Galveston News*, April 19,1897).

The Spanish connection again. Unfortunately, the Spanish words are not given in this or any other known account. There is a reasonable explanation for a Spanish connection. A discussion of the issue is presented in the final chapters.

LANDED ON THE BRAZOS

> Caldwell, Tex., April 19,.—There has been much agitation and discussion here for the last few days concerning the airship. It is said that some reliable darkies in the Brazos bottom saw it yesterday afternoon *[April 18]*. It showed up and settled down on the banks of the river and took a supply of water. Two of the sailors captured a colored man who was hoeing cotton near by and carried him off on the ship because he was working on Sunday. It steamed away to the east and was soon out of sight. The News man can not verify this, as he can not spend the time necessary to find the parties who saw it. Some have been watching here hoping to get a glimpse of the aerial monster, but it has not yet come in sight of Caldwell. This is and has been a local option town since last summer and the nearest saloon is two miles away ("The Latest Airship Jokes," *Galveston News,* April 20, 1897).

I don't know what to make of this account, other than it is a false report given by an individual who does not like to see people working on Sundays, possibly a religious fanatic. The individual is hoping to frighten those people who do work on Sundays into limiting their Sabbath activities.

HE HAS A SOLUTION

> Alvin, Brazoria Co., Tex., April 19.—Major Buck thinks he has *solved the airship problem.* Yesterday *[April 18]* he saw a large vulture or buzzard with streamers hanging to his tail, to which he thinks a light had been attached. The heavens are closely watched by the credulous for a glimpse of the mysterious visitor ("The Latest Airship Jokes," *Galveston News,* April 20, 1897).

I grew up in the wilds of north-central Texas along Red River. From an early age I observed vultures, or buzzards, as they are known, going to roost at sunset. They do not fly about after dusk but go perch on the highest fixed object they can find in their hunting range. Perhaps, someone captured this particular bird, tied a lantern to its tail, then set it loose after dark, I suppose in its haste to remove itself from its human tormentor, it would rise to some height and fly straight away to its roost or other high promontory. For the unwary, such a sight might be mistaken for an airship sailing away in the night. But, it is not possible for the "airship mystery" to be solved with the explanation that all the bright and colored lights were buzzards with lights or fires attached to their tails. However, as the sightings continued day after day, there were more than one or two attempts to fool the population with some manner of fake airship. The fakes were usually readily identifiable as such. Read on to discover how readily identifiable, and sometimes dangerous, faked airships were.

THAT AIR SHIP

Passed Over Bryan Sunday Night, Going North.

Bryan, Texas, April 19.—The mysterious airship of which so much has been said of late, passed over Bryan last night *[April 18]* A number of people declare they saw it. It was going north ("That Airship," *Houston Post*, April 22, 1897).

EATS PEACHES AND SMOKES HAVANAS

Lovelady, Texas, April 19.—J. H. Johnson, bookkeeper for the firm Malner & Monday of this town, at 9:25 last night *[April 18]* saw an object which must have been the much talked off airship. He says it was 250 feet above the trees and when first seen in the northwest it was traveling at a very rapid rate in a southeasterly direction and descending gradually. After crossing the International and Great Northern tracks about one-quarter of a mile north of town it quickly veered to the NE and rose rapidly to a great elevation, passing out of sight behind the clouds in a few minutes. He was so dazed by the sight that he is unable to give accurate details of its appearance, but says that it looked like a dragon fly in shape except that the wings were wide and curved instead of straight and narrow. A long cone-shaped attachment swung underneath and extended about two-thirds of the length of the machine, whose total length must have been *150 to 200 feet.* One *green light* was visible when the object first came into sight, but after its courses change to the NE no lights were seen. *An object resembling a man was seen in the lower attachment and could be plainly seen moving about.* About the time the machine passed over the railroad track the rattle of tin was heard, and Mr. Johnson, in company with Mr. W. J. McGwire, proceeded to the spot, and, after considerable search, found onehalf gallon peach can branded J. TV. *Lusk* and an empty cigar box ("Airship Spoken," *Galveston Daily News,* April 22, 1897, p. 4).

The estimated length of 150 to 200 feet is still consistent with previous accounts. Since the airship was approaching from the northwest, the green light was on the starboard, or right, side of the airship.

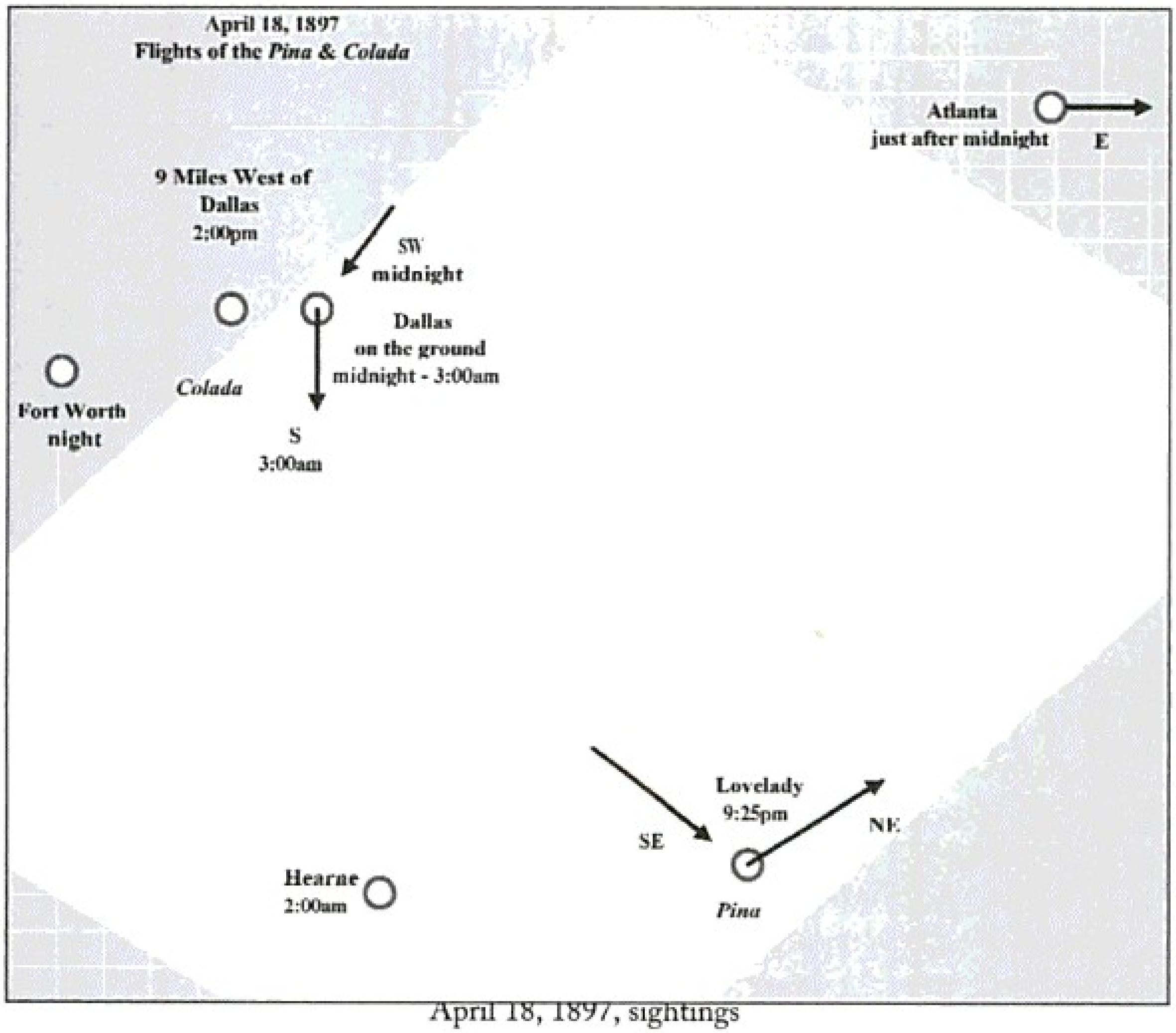
April 18, 1897
Flights of the *Pina* & *Colada*
Atlanta
just after midnight
E
9 Miles West of
Dallas
2:00pm
SW
midnight
Dallas
on the ground
midnight - 3:00am
Colada
Fort Worth
night
S
3:00am
Lovelady
9:25pm
SE
NE
Hearne
2:00am
Pina

April 18, 1897, sightings

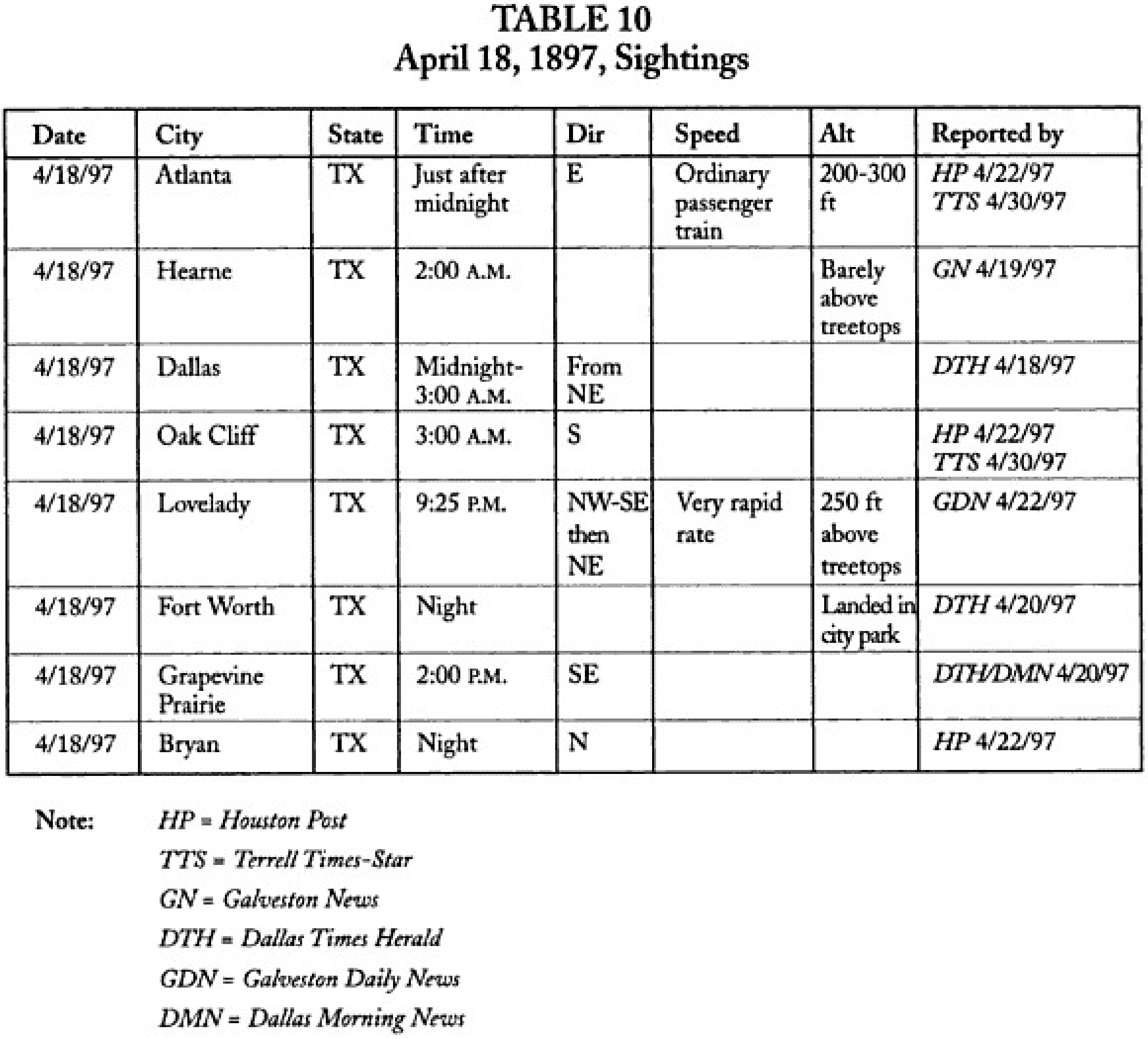

TABLE 10
April 18, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/18/97	Atlanta	TX	Just after midnight	E	Ordinary passenger train	200-300 ft	*HP* 4/22/97 *TTS* 4/30/97
4/18/97	Hearne	TX	2:00 A.M.			Barely above treetops	*GN* 4/19/97
4/18/97	Dallas	TX	Midnight-3:00 A.M.	From NE			*DTH* 4/18/97
4/18/97	Oak Cliff	TX	3:00 A.M.	S			*HP* 4/22/97 *TTS* 4/30/97
4/18/97	Lovelady	TX	9:25 P.M.	NW-SE then NE	Very rapid rate	250 ft above treetops	*GDN* 4/22/97
4/18/97	Fort Worth	TX	Night			Landed in city park	*DTH* 4/20/97
4/18/97	Grapevine Prairie	TX	2:00 P.M.	SE			*DTH/DMN* 4/20/97
4/18/97	Bryan	TX	Night	N			*HP* 4/22/97

Note: *HP* = *Houston Post*
TTS = *Terrell Times-Star*
GN = *Galveston News*
DTH = *Dallas Times Herald*
GDN = *Galveston Daily News*
DMN = *Dallas Morning News*

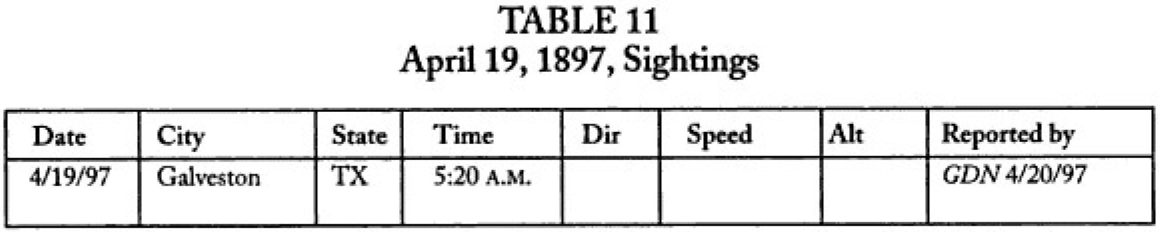

TABLE 11
April 19, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/19/97	Galveston	TX	5:20 A.M.				*GDN* 4/20/97

The airship sightings on April 18, 1897, are sporadic and are clustered around two regions: Dallas and Lovelady. However, placing a bestfit line between the reported sightings results in the graph shown. Were the *Pina* and the *Colada* still searching for their missing sister ship?

CHAPTER 9

MONDAY, APRIL 19, 1897

There are seventeen reported airship sightings for the night of April 19, including the first reported Louisiana sighting. The airships seem to expand their search area as they look for their missing sister ship. The Louisiana sighting is of particular interest because the identity of two airship players seems to be confirmed. The Louisiana newspaper article is included with the Texas sightings for the interest we have in the crew. The story continues . . .

SNAPSHOTS

Airships are being seen even by citizens of prohibition towns. *[The separation between alcoholics, drunks, and other imbibers and airship observers was important to the credibility of the reports in the mind of many teetotalers in the pre-Prohibition days of 1897. Would we believe the UFO stories of hardcore drug addicts, junkies, drug dealers, social cocaine users, and marijuana smokers today? Probably not, but if a doctor, judge, or senator confessed to alien abduction, we might tend to give the reported incident at least the benefit of the doubt.]*

Fancy the disappointment of a man, who seeing an airship fall, flies to the spot and so lifting it up finds it to be a pair of exploded bloomers. *[What an entertaining thought!]*

The airship mystery of Kankakee seems now to be thoroughly understood. The dark object floating in the air fell down and the hundreds who rushed to see found a pair of huge bloomers.

If the McKinley cabinet is to be increased by the addition of a Secretary of the Atmosphere, some good Kansas man ought to be appointed.

The New Jersey airship was found to be a mosquito with foxfire on his neck.

THE AERIAL FLEET

We know that this is fishing time;
That snakes have come to threaten man;
That dreamers have begun to rhyme;
That Ananias lives again;
For signs and wonders fill the sky;
And airships through the heaven fly
(Dallas Morning News, April 19,1897).

The previous account consists of entertaining airship tales and poetic descriptions of air travel. The newspapers capitalized on the most newsworthy event of the time. The above tidbits are the editor's way of having a little fun with the subject.

A HOME-MADE ONE.

> Plano, Collin Co. Tex., April 18.—The much talked of airship fell in Piano at 8:30 o'clock tonight and almost caused the destruction of Piano's large two-story public school building. It was first observed by Harris Wyatt coming from the southwest, and fell on the south gable of the schoolhouse building. Some parties who saw the big light on the roof of the building alarmed the citizens by shooting off firearms and with the cry "Fire. The School House is on fire." which brought out the whole town and emptied the churches of their congregations within a few minutes, but it all proved to be a dangerous hoax. In the shape of a large "turkey buzzard" with a bail of cotton twine saturated with turpentine tied to one of the bird's legs. The bird had alighted on the roof of the school building and from a distance it looked as if the south end of the roof was on fire, which was viewed by hundreds of persons, who were unable to do anything on account of the extreme height of

the building. In a few minutes after the people gathered around the school building the bail of cotton burned itself loose from the bird's leg and rolled off the roof to the ground where the ball of cotton burned brightly for several minutes. The bird flew off the roof as soon as it was relieved of its warm burden. Piano has witnessed all the airships she wants to, and would prefer that they would pass some other way, if they all prove as dangerous as this one did tonight *(Dallas Morning News,* April 19, 1897, p. 5; *Galveston News*, April 19, 1897).

This is another entertaining airship tale for the audience's amusement. Faking an airship was not without its hazards. Burning down the school for the sake of a little excitement suggests the reivers did not think their plan out very thoroughly.

> "Say, you people all know Shadbolt, manager of the Driskil, and are acquainted with his reputation for veracity. The fact that he is in the category with George Washington in this line, inclines me to take stock in these airship yams that are at present flooding the country. Shad asserts that while on the roof of the hotel last Monday night *[April 19]* engaged in taking clothes off the line, he was astonished first by a peculiar shrilling noise, followed immediately by a biff, bang, whiz, and a current of cold air that chilled him to the marrow. Dodging behind a chimney pot, he saw coming towards him a frightfully constructed cigar-shaped balloon, or something of that character. His heart was in his throat for a moment, but swallowing it with an effort, he sang out: 'ship ahoy!' A voice replied: 'Howdy! Is this Austin?' 'You're bloody right,' yelled Shad, whereupon the main guy on the flying monster called out: 'Stand by you lubbers, and let go that freight!' Something struck the roof, and the startled manager says as the thing went out of sight there was a man sitting cross- legged on the quarter deck, working a concertina and grinding out the music of'Me 'art is true to Poll.' In the bundle which smelled of stale fish and a few decayed things of that kind, was a note stating that the ship was en route to China, but would return in October next, by which time the writer hoped the Texas legislature would have passed all the blooming platform demands formulated at Fort Worth."

> "Now Shadbolt will not deny his fondness for potted cheese and a bleeding glass of 'alf and alf', but he says neither of these appetizers had the slightest connection with his experience on the roof. He's got the note, and the brick that came with it, and will take pleasure in showing it to his friends" (From a speech given April 20 by Col. Dink Botts to a group of his friends, *Austin Daily Statesman,* April 21,1897).

This is another entertaining airship tale for the audience's amusement. This is obviously a fake story.

"THE AIRSHIP"

> The airship that has been mystifying the public for the last month has turned out to be a veritable ship of air, made with timber *(possible)*, propelled by steam *(not likely)* and controlled by human hands. It has been *seen upon the ground while being repaired* and alerter has been dropped by it in which its inventors claim that they have solved the problem of transportation in the air and also asserting that they have been voyaging all over the country and that it moves through the air at the rate of 150 miles an hour.

> We suppose the inventors have taken this means of advertising their invention by exciting the curiosity of the public by sailing over cities at night and throwing out a strong flash light. This is, after all, the *most feasible solution of the mysterious vessel,* and if it is true—*as it is highly probable* it is, too many people have seen it to leave any further doubt—it will be the crowning mechanical conquest of the century. It seems to be managed with such ease as to give promise of immediate utility and we may conclude that before many years the "airship" will be quite as common a mode of travel as the electric cars *[goodforesight).* The latter dawned on us quite gradually and we were all prepared to believe in it, but this has been sprung upon us almost in

a night, exciting the greatest curiosity, and is destined just as suddenly to become practical.

What tremendous possibility the successful working of the airship opens up to us. It will be an additional extermination of distance and it will draw continents together as the railroad locomotives drew cities together *[wonderful foresight]*. It will obliviate all the dangers of ocean transportation and laugh at storms. *[Well, we have discovered that to be pretty much untrue]*. It will ensure safety in penetrating and exploring savage countries. *[Yes, they did).* It may be the means of discovering the north pole and other continents *(very perceptive).* It will make war so dreadful that armies will be disbanded *(We wish. Airships just made war on civilians and children more socially acceptable.]* and ocean navies will be superseded by the commerce of the air. *[But, what about the supertanker and cheap gasoline?].* There is no telling the extent of the great possibilities. *[Spaceflight and man walking on the moon]*. It will be a "nine days" wonder and then settle down into a practical fact *(Austin American Statesman,* April 19, 1897, p. 4).

The above article is loaded with perception and foresight. The author seems to take some delight in imagining what the world will be like when air transportation becomes a reality. It is interesting to read this article with the hindsight we have and compare it with our attempts to predict the future. No one in 1897 could foresee the great impact of automobiles and especially the petroleum industry on twentieth-century America. While many welcomed the chance to dismount from the bony backs of horses and take up a comfortable but occasionally jarring seat on a horseless carriage, few people really thought the multipurpose horse would become just an expensive family pet within thirty years. Prognosticators beware; who knows what lurks behind the next turn of the history page? Great editorial!

There is a great similarity between our viewpoint of space travel and the 1897 generation's viewpoint of air travel. They knew the problem of "aerial navigation" was going to be solved eventually. They just did not have a good fix on the date on which such a solution was going to spring forth. Today, we seem to be in a similar circumstance, as it is a common belief that we will soon solve the problem of "interplanetary navigation." I wonder if the first twenty years of the twenty-first century will be as fruitful for us as the first twenty years of the twentieth century were in yielding up solutions to the "aerial navigation" problem.

THE AIRSHIP

How the Phenomenon is Explained by different Classes.

NO TROUBLE TO ACCOUNT F'OR IT

Scientific American Announces Four Flying machines About Ready to be Launched.

Everything else is giving the right of way to the airship, and the newspapers having nothing in particular to write about are giving the strange craft all the space it wants.

All the papers quote some of their very best and most veracious citizens as averring that they have seen the ship. Many men in Dallas say they have seen the strange craft.

Sober, matter-of-fact people who can not gainsay the testimony of their neighbors, resort to the handy solution of saying it is a brand of cigarettes, the Nashville exposition, or a new snuff or fresh chewing gum, and that the explanation will be duly forthcoming by the advertisers who are sending up small balloons with lanterns attached.

Others, who are looking for a sign, say that the people, weary of being tied down to a dull materialism for so many generations, are beginning to look away from old forms and traditions that no longer satisfy with a yearning for something better and more suited to their *condition [Have we not heard this one before? Seems to be a common lament by certain segments of society in each generation.], and that they are seeing queer things.* In fact, they can see whatever they are looking for. The French Academy has recently conducted some experiments which have demonstrated the fact that a person capable of concentrating his mind with great power on an object can throw that object on a sensitized plate where it is photographed. *[As I recall, this "parlor trick" was determined to be a hoax.]* It is on this principle that many persons can see whatever they wish to see in the embers, in the moon, the clouds or in the clear sky. The faculty of clairvoyance is developed by gazing fixedly into a glass of clear water until pictures and views of the unseen world are reflected from the mind into the water.

Another class of persons of a scientific term say that it is about time for the problem of aerial navigation to be solved, and that they would not be surprised at any time to behold a genuine airship. A recent edition of the Scientific American stated that four different inventors in different parts of the country, each working under his own conception of the principle involved in flying, were about ready to launch their boats. So that each class of thinkers has its own explanation of the real or alleged phenomenon, and if thought is creative as some believe it to be, the concentration of the whole country on the airship ought to create one.

Whether there is or is not a ship wandering through the heavens, with or without rudder and compass, there is very little doubt that innumerable balloons with lights attached are being sent up nightly *[to]* sail over the country and that these balloons are being sighted and reported for the real or alleged airship.

Since the papers have been printing matters about nocturnal air navigation it is said that work has been resumed on all the flying machines in the country. There is hardly a town of any importance in America but has one or more men who have at one time or another attempted to construct a flying machine. *In Dallas alone it is said that work is progressing on four flying machines.* Scientists are agreed that the humble bee and a few other insects fly practically without wings, as their flight can in no wise be accounted for by their rudimentary excuse for wings. The humble bee thus adds a vexatious complication to the flying problem.

Many persons poke shallow fun at the phenomenon. They say it is the heirship to the Edwards estate; that the jim-jams have quit serpents and creeping things and shifted to that part of the menagerie represented by the followers of the air.

Whatever else there is about the matter, the whole country is stirred up over the phenomenon.

The Rocky Mountain News, of Denver, prints the following:

Yesterday afternoon people living on Seventeenth Street were startled by the discovery of a tiny paper parachute floating down from the heavens. It was made of tissue paper and thread and attached to it was a folded piece of paper. It reached the street near the Equitable building and was captured by some passerby. The folded paper attached was discovered to be a note, written with a lead pencil in a straggling hand, and read as follows: "This is dropped out in the hope that some one will find the note. We are in an airship, but are lost."

In their extreme agitation, the writers evidently forgot to sign their names. Upon deciphering the note, many people began to search the heavens with their eyes for the runaway airship. A small boy, who was first to see the fluttering parachute, announced that he saw something away up in the air a few minutes before. He thought it was a bird, but it was large and there was a stream of smoke behind it.

> Word was sent to Captain Glassford of the signal service, and if he can discover anything that looks like a runaway airship floating around anywhere in the vicinity, he will dispatch Sergeant Baldwin with the big balloon from the fort in chase and if possible rescue the travelers who are lost.

> The fact that a lost airship was roving over the city caused something of a sensation; and the parachute that brought the news, together with the note it contained, was brought to the news office {*Dallas Times Herald,* April 19,1897).

The note mentioned in this account is most likely a fake. It was not signed and the supposed airship from whence it came was nowhere to be seen. Only the boy who saw the parachute come down in the afternoon claims to have seen the airship. Denver was a good-sized town in 1897, and if an airship passed over the mile-high city in the bright light of the afternoon, others must have seen it. Yet, no one else made such a claim. I think someone was having a little fun.

THAT MYSTERIOUS AIRSHIP

Philadelphia Inquirer.

For some time past there have occasionally come stories of the appearance of an airship in widely separated parts of the western country. The first announcement of this character came from California, and since then the mysterious object is said to have been seen in Kansas City, Omaha and other cities. The stories were of the most circumstantial character; the truth of them was vouched for by persons of intelligence, whose veracity on other matters coming within their observation would not have been questioned, and all of them were agreed as to the particulars of what they saw and offered independent and corroborative testimony. In some instances it was simply claimed that what appeared to be the brilliant headlight or something in the sky had been seen, while other observers were confident that they saw the vessel and gave a description of its outlines and movement. Of course, there were many people who were incredulous as to the story and made it the subject of good-natured raillery.

The fact that the object was always seen by night was used as an argument against its existence; whereas, if some man has actually succeeded in perfecting an aerial contrivance, the most natural thing for him to do at first would be to test it after darkness had fallen, and secure secrecy for himself. And now comes the story that the directors of the transMississippi exposition to be held at Omaha have received a communication from a man who declares that he has invented an airship and that he will disclose his identity and come to the front if the directors will guarantee him 570,000 square feet of space. He declares that the ship will carry twenty people to a height of from 10,000 to 20,000 feet.

Because an airship such as that which he has described has never been constructed, it would be foolish to state that it never can be. In a story which is now appearing in a magazine the hero, who lived in this city during the revolutionary war, and who is supposed to have written the story years afterward, tells how difficult it was to reach Bryan Mawr from Philadelphia at the time that the army of Washington was in the neighborhood, and then speaks of the ease with which the trip could be made at the time of writing by a swift stage coach. This same man, although compelled to acknowledge that better means of travel had come, would never have believed in express trains, in steam ships and telegraphs. And as we, who know that they have come, are equally skeptical as to the accomplishment of aerial travel. One hundred years ago it would never have been dreamed that the land could be navigated as it is today and yet some people ridiculed the idea that the air could ever be navigated and look upon the idea as the dream of the visionary or the fool.

One by one the forces of nature are now rendering themselves to man what were once looked upon as miracles are now acknowledged to be simply the result of an acquaintance with and a mastery of natural laws, and, therefore, there is nothing that prevents invention and study that should be laughed at. The eyes of the people who claim to have seen an airship may have seen them; the man who claims to have invented it may be a charlatan; but the world will yet, if we may judge from the marvelous progress of science and invention, see a contrivance of this character, while the people who laugh at the thought will acknowledge the simplicity of the vessel and wonder why it was not constructed a century earlier ("The Mysterious Airship," *Galveston News,* April 19, 1897).

What a great article. The Omaha exposition was important, and during this great event, an airship inventor did pilot an airship over a defined course with some degree of success. However, he was not party to any of the missions plowing through the Texas skies.

SEEN AT BELTON

> Belton, Texas, April 20.—Last night *[April 19]* quite a crowd of responsible people of this place assembled for the purpose of watching for that much talked of airship, and at 11:30 o'clock it was seen coming from the southwest at an immense velocity. It dipped and but for the fact of bearing just a little to the left of the "New Surprise" show tent, directly in front of Peay's Hotel the tent would have suffered great injury, judging from the velocity of the ship. Missing the tent, it passed by the northwest comer of Peay's Hotel and rising passed from view. The passengers on board this wonder spoke as they passed, but could not be understood on account of the velocity.
>
> Belton people have been skeptical heretofore, but they now believe.
>
> The race was so swift that no proper estimate could be formed as to dimensions; however, *about ten persons were distinctly seen* ("Seen at Belton," *Houston Post,* April 22,1897; *Terrell Times-Star,* April 30,1897).

I wonder if the ten persons mentioned in this account included the financial backers of the airship project? It seems likely that any number of crewmen larger than the minimum number required to fly the airship would include the men who paid the bills.

Coming from the southwest implies it was going in a northeast direction.

AIRSHIP SPOKEN

Beltonites Felt the Breath of the Aerial Machine.

Belton, Bell Co., Tex., April 20.—The numerous accounts and reports appearing in the News for some time past regarding the airship have excited the curiosity of the people of this place to such an extent that last night *[April 19]* quite a number of responsible people of this place "laid for it," and at 11:30 o'clock, to their surprise and astonishment, she passed over Peay's Hotel, dipping low. Had she not passed to the left, the "New Surprise Show Tent," just in front of the hotel, would have been completely demolished. The passengers spoke, but the velocity was so great that no one could understand. The ladies, however, declared they recognized the voice and features of Shrader, the divine healer. From here the ship rose and was lost to view. The people here have been inclined to doubt the veracity of the existence of this aerial freak, but now, without a dissenting opinion, it is an actuality. It seemed to have reversed its former courses, traveling from southwest to northeast at great velocity (This story under the main headline "Airship Spoken" appeared in the Galveston Daily News, April 22,1897, page 4)

AT LONGVIEW

Longview, Texas, April 20,—Last night *[April 19]* about 9:30, the Post correspondent and family on returning from church saw the socalled airship. A bright light, seemingly about the size of Venus, *moved swiftly* to the northwest, disappearing beneath the horizon. In a few minutes it reappeared rising nearly to zenith and rapidly transferred the heavens in an easterly direction ("Seen at Belton," *Houston Post,* April 22,1897; *Terrell Times-Star*, April 30,1897).

AT GROSEBECK

Grosebeck, Texas, April 20,—Mr. B. F.Johnson saw the mysterious airship last night *[April 19]*, as did several of his neighbors ("Seen at Belton," *Houston Post*, April 22,1897; *Terrell Times-Star,* April 30, 1897).

HE SAW THE LIGHT

> Alderman Haynes last night *[April 19]* informed the Statesman "mystery man" that he saw the strange light referred to in another column, seen by Mr. Cousins. Mr. Haynes says he stepped into the yard and suddenly he was blinded by a flash of light and then he saw a moving light that looked to him as if it were traveling over the capitol. He called Mrs. Haynes and the children, and all watched the strange light as it moved rather slowly in a westerly direction and disappeared *(Austin American Statesman*, April 20,1897, p. 3).

SURE ENOUGH AIRSHIP

Lighted on East Mountain at Mineral Wells this A.M.

STATEMENT MADE BY THE CREW

Problems of Aerial Navigation Solved. Passing Glimpses of the Strange Visitant Explained

Seeing the airship is becoming quite an industry. It is even being witnessed by the inhabitants of towns that have been "dry" these many years.

The stories told range from the above Ben Adhem style of narrative to fin de siecle romances that suggest the inspiration of a gifted scientific genius a la Ignatius Donely.

The airy visitant continues to hover on unwearied pinions in the blue arch of night, keeping good people out of their beds in the expectant hope that they may catch a glimpse of its patent headlight. It should be observed that the airship is a respecter of the city ordinances, as no accounts are mentioned where it is seen with its "lamp" out. This gentle dig at the local wheel men who scoot frantically about the streets in a lampless condition. Why someone hasn't taken a shot at the "thing" still remains a question. It is strange that some matter of fact scientist not troubled with any scruples hasn't drawn a bead on it like the man in Coleridge's maritime narrative, whose investigations took this practical form.

A number of young men and boys who have been "funny" all their lives have taken advantage of the amount of free advertising given the aerial traveler by sending up toy balloons in order to widen the area of the airship's activity. It also promotes a Christian feeling among those people who, after descanting knowingly upon its midnight beauties, are told by the parties to the hoax that they were only staring at a little balloon lit up by a cheap candle.

The airship is still a popular theme in the city and suburbs, and particularly in the country where the untutored agriculturist instead of manning the plow is sitting up late at nights watching the airship plow the heavens.

Airship parties are quite a fad in Oak Cliff now among the young lady collegians, it is said, ever since a popular educator in that favored suburb looked aloft and beheld the airship with all sails set exchanging winks with the "man in the moon."

But seriously enough, many citizens whose veracity is monumental have gazed at the bird of passage and then confided their impressions of it to the hypnotic editor.

Said Mr. Thomas Work, whose experience with plain drunks and peace disturbances (not airships) in the city court qualifies him to speak with some weight:

"The airship was sighted by my children and a large number of residents on Routh Street last night about 7 o'clock. It was scudding along right merrily with all sails set; seemed to be going in the direction of the hospital. I expect it had a quiet tip that Dr. Armstrong was at his office. Oh, yes; It was an airship all right. There was a filmy *red light* about the thing peculiarly uncanny and it was going at a *great rate of speed."*

James Williamson, the well known contractor of West Dallas, told city Judge Curtis Smith this morning just before the regular police court festivities that he'd "seen it."

"Seen what?" said the city judge.

"Why, the airship, to be sure," said Mr. Williamson reproachfully.

"It passed my homelike a house afire about 9 o'clock last night *[April 19]*. It had a dark, piratical cut and chased through the ether at the rate of about 200 miles an hour. So swiftly did it move that the eye was unable to follow it in its flight."

"Yes; it was no funeral procession, I expect." said Judge Smith absently.

Alf Nussbaumer, B. O Marshall and William Boll, Jr., were hunting on Grapevine prairie nine miles west of Dallas Sunday afternoon when the airship discovered itself to these nimrods. Neither Mr. Marshall nor Mr. Nussbaumer could be found at their usual places of business to-day.

Mr. Boll was seen, however, and asked to describe his sensations, which he did only regretting that Mr. Nussbauer, who was much affected by the sight, was not present to tell about it.

We had just sat down to dinner." said he, "and were meditating upon the number of Easter hats we missed seeing by not going to church. Suddenly casting up our eyes, we beheld a long cylindrical body moving with fearful velocity through a nearly cloudless sky. It's general appearance was white. We could plainly discern two wings, one at each side, which looked like those of a great bird. The contrivance was, I should judge, sixty feet long and there was a wheel behind. Save the wings, which moved with a rapidity that was uncanny, we could discern no signs of life about it. It was going toward the southeast and we watched it till it disappeared.

"Now, this is no joke. We had no drinkables of any kind for dinner and we are all willing to make affidavit that it happened just as I tell you. Mr. Nussbaumer, I understand, is going to commit the impression of it to writing."

Even more circumstantial accounts of the "ship" are given below:

Col. W. C. Wolf, living on Wolf Trail in North Dallas, states that at 7:45 o'clock last night, he, his two sons and about a dozen of his neighbors, saw a bright headlight pass over that quarter of the city with a whirring whizzing noise, and disappear in a northwesterly direction. He says he could see nothing but the light, which appeared to be fully a mile high.

Mr. Jeff Hightower, head man in D. H. Howard's New York store in Mineral Wells is in the city to-day. He says that at 4 o'clock this morning *[April 20]* the *airship landed on East Mountain,* and that a number of citizens of the Wells went up and talked to the man and inspected the ship from the outside. They were not permitted to enter the craft. The ship is shaped like a cigar, eighty feet long, with a paddle wheel at each end and on each side. The crew informed the citizens that they had sold the invention to a New York syndicate for big money provided they first made a trip from New York to Liverpool with it, and that before tackling the Atlantic they would make three or four successful trips between New York and San Francisco. They said they were having a lot of trouble holding the craft in a straight course, and their experiments to overcome this trouble were detaining them in the south west. The crew promised the citizens they would return and hover over the town at 10 o'clock to-night, which is the occasion of the opening of the Crazy Well. Mr. Hightower, whose name ought to make him an authority in matters of this kind, says there is no joke or jolly about the ship, that the best people in Mineral Wells saw the craft and conversed with the crew *(Dallas Times Herald,* April 20, 1897).

THE LATEST AIRSHIP JOKES

Hanging Around Galveston

Tom Moore a young man who draws the thirst-slaking soda from a fountain at Schott's, announced yesterday morning *[April 19]* that the airship was passing over the city. Charles Schott, night clerk at the store, was on the rear upper gallery.

"I saw a big, white object for a minute," said Mr. Schott last night, 'but I was unable to follow it in its flight, because my vision was obstructed by the buildings. It appeared to be passing above the Tribune building, and when I first saw it the front end was a little beyond the alley, and the rear end almost where the entrance to the stair way is located, so I judge it to be about 75 feet long. It appeared to roll over slowly, and was pretty well up in the air. It was moving south. It was just at 8:30 this morning.

Moore says he could hear a buzzing noise as it passed along.

A boy in Schott's last night said he overheard a party of gentlemen, some of whom he knows by sight, on K and Twenty-first street, say that they saw the airship during the day. Sergeant Jack Pither, they say, called their attention to it, but when asked about it last night, Pither denied having seen any airship ("The Latest Airship Jokes," *Galveston News*, April 20, 1897).

AIRSHIP SEEN IN BRYAN

The Crowning Marvel of the Nineteenth Century.

SEEN HERE LAST NIGHT.

Three Brave Young Men and What They Saw

Three well known and reliable young men of this city had perhaps the strangest experience last night *[April 19]* that has come athwar t *[sic]* the history of any trio of human beings, exclusive of miracles, since the world began. They are none other than Messrs. J. C. Minkert, Dr. Chas. Edge and Dick Jones, three young professional men in whose truth and veracity most any one in the city has the utmost confidence.

As given to an Eagle reporter at a very late hour last night, these young men's experience may be briefly told as follows:

Mr. Minkert was awakened from peaceful slumber sometime after midnight by a bad case of toothache and immediately dressed and sought a dentist. In the utmost distress, he was proceeding to Dr. Edge's dental office, when he met Mr. Jones, returning at a rather late hour from some consultation on legal matters with a brother lawyer. Joining Mr. Minkert, together they sought the dentist. The latter was found and relief soon given the sufferer. And now began the strange experience which was related to the writer by one of the party. Mr. Jones discovered a bright light through the open window, and speaking of it, the attention of the three was directed to a strange object approaching through the heavens, from a southern direction. Watching with breathless surprise and interest, the celestial object was now seen approaching rapidly, while apparently getting lower. Now it was near enough to detect that it was a large body with apparently two lights, one at each end of a long, ship-like object. The light in front was extremely bright and dazzling. Coming approximately within a mile or two of town, the body hovered and apparently swung a great searchlight around and then moved off eastward, so it seemed, and stopped, remaining still for at least ten minutes, while the most brilliant light they ever saw flashed repeatedly in various directions. The observer thinks it was directly over the A&M College. The object was now so far from them that not much could be seen of it except the two lights. Then all at once a fluttering motion was faintly discerned, and the strange apparition began to fly up into the heavens, and move northward. It now began to be more plainly seen. Plainer and plainer it became, until at last almost stopping again, half mile south of town, it showed what its true nature is. A *long cigar-shaped body, with many windows and openings* through which pale lights streamed forth, with *great wings protruding from each side,* and an *immense fanshaped rear projection.* This formidable dragon-looking celestial vision hovered over the city, then presently moved slowly away toward the eastern suburbs. This movement effected the wonderful apparition out of sight of our three nocturnal sightseers, (who looked from a southern window). For many moments, not a word had been spoken, Jones now turned to the others with a white face and eyes as large as saucers, while Dr. Edge caught his breath and said:

"Well, I'll be ...

Minkert said he would too, and a consultation resulted in a quiet march to the other side, for a better view.

Outside, again the aerial monster loomed up, now almost stationary, and slowly descended to earth. Down it went, below the houses and tree tops, and out of sight, except for its lights brightening up the surrounding atmosphere.

One behind another, our young adventurers began a silent march toward the strange visitor. Jones led, the dentist came next with his forceps in hand, while Minkert brought up the rear. Over the hill and out of town they went, and discovered, in the Claude Mitchell pasture, what at first seemed a great ocean vessel sitting on dry land, a hundred miles from deep water—with great wing like sails folded up, an immense tail, a great wing or rudder underneath, but not touching ground, the vessel being supported upon great pillars projecting down from its sides. Streaming from many windows was a pale light, while the great light in front was turned off. Around the cigar-shaped body of the ship extended a deck or platform, and walking about on this were discerned numerous people, while inside and up among the sails, workmen were busy making repairs.

One young man realized they were in the presence of the famous airship, and longed for J. W. Leigh to see it, so he could have a tale to tell sure enough.

The question of drawing near or retreating was discussed.

Dr. Edge remembered that he had left his door open. Jones thought it was time for him to retire, as he seldom keeps late hours, while Minkert feared he would catch cold in his jaw. So they hesitated. But they circled around, and gradually got nearer. Presently, without warning, the searchlight flashed out like lightning, and they were caught. Blinded by its brilliance, they fell over each other into a mud hole, and crawling out found themselves "taken in" by a *small squad of foreigners,* and dragged up to the monster of the upper regions. They really found no cause for fear, however, and now began to see sights indeed. A man who could talk English was summoned from the cabin and came out to talk and exchange neighborhood news, as it were, and do the honors of the ship.

> They now found that a party of English *millionaires and French scientists had built this strange craft and three more like it,* and were taking a cruise around the world, having kept the secret of their enterprise for the novelty of the thing. The *motive power of the machine was electricity,* of course, and the search light was a 20,000 candle power electric light. Taken aboard, they were being shown the sights when Jones asked with considerable anxiety how long they were scheduled to stop in Bryan.
>
> "We are now ready to move," said the engineer.
>
> Then a wild scramble for the outside was made by the Bryan delegation, but the aerial navigators were not ready for them to go. Besides inventors and electricians, there were professors of more occult sciences on board. Prof. Sven Boydgollybros was summoned and with a wave of the hand, they were put to sleep. They were told to open their eyes and watch the proceedings. The button was pressed; the *fifty thousand horse power engine [impossible in 1897]* began to work; the great wings began to stir; the crew of pilots grappled their steering apparatus; the familiar scenes of earth faded from view, one of the boys swallowed a Taylor & Cox drink check as he caught his breath after looking out, the ship was pointing toward the north star and was bidding farewell to earth and things earthly when the professor of hypnosis snapped his fingers, sounding like a gunshot in a graveyard. Then the spell changed, and the boys turned and looked at the crowd. They were sitting by a table in the Kandy Kitchen *[Bryan headquarters for airship news]* while a party of Bryan amateur hypnotists were laughing at them, and the Flying Dutchman of the skies sailed on *(Bryan (Texas) Daily Eagle,* April 20,1897, p. 4).

The above account is obviously one of a fake sighting. Seems like everyone was starting to have some fun with the airship news, even hypnotists.

A PHENOMENAL STAR

Texarkana, Bowie County, Tex., April 20.—The belated population of Texarkana were greatly excited last night *[April 19]* over the appearance in the heavens of a star of magnificent brightness. To a fixed gaze it had the appearance of vacillating in its proportions and some of the lookers-on swore that they could see it move from place to place. The star threw a bright light the color of an arc-electric, and at times it dazzled the sight in like manner. It was a scene beautiful to behold and was admired for hours by many *(Dallas Morning News,* April 21, 1897, p. 7).

The airships were not known for taking hours to proceed from horizon to horizon. It may be that the above sighting was actually the planet Venus.

INSPECTED THE AIR SHP

Beaumont Man Saw The mystery at Close Range Conversed With The travelers. Says it Is propelled by Four Big Wings, Electricity Being the Power Used

Beaumont , Texas, April 20.—Mr. J. R. Ligon, local agent for the Magnolia brewery of Houston, this afternoon informs the Post correspondent that the airship visited Beaumont Monday night *[April 19],* and that he not only saw the flying machine, but he had a chance to inspect it from the outside and conversed with one of the men who was traveling in it. "I and my son Charley drove home at 11 o'clock Monday night," said Mr. Ligon, "and were unhitching the horse when we saw lights in the Johnson pasture, a few hundred yards distance. We went there to investigate and discovered four men moving around a large dark object, and when I hailed them they answered and asked if they could get some water. I told them that they could. They came to my house, each bringing two baskets, and after filling them, started to return. I accosted one of the men and he told me his name was Wilson and that he and his companions were traveling in a flying machine. They were returning from a trip out on the gulf and were now headed toward Iowa where the airship was built."

Mr. Ligon says he accompanied the men to the ship, and describes it as being *130 feet long and 20 feet wide. It was propelled by four large wings, two on either side, and steered by propellers attached to the bow and stem, electricity being the power used. The hull of the ship is made of steel and contains apartments into which compressed air is pumped when the ship is in action. The ship carries a water ballast that is pumped to the bow when it is desired to bring the vessel to the* *earth and to the stern when the course is skyward. Mr. Ligon says the workings of the ship were thus described to him by the man Wilson, who also stated that this ship was only one of five that had been built in a quiet Iowa village (Houston Daily Post,* April 21, 1897, p. 7; *Bastrop [Louisiana] Advisor,* April 24,1897, p. 6).

The airship crew member states that their ship is one of five built. Incredible as one successful flying machine in 1897 seems, news of five is just astounding. Could five have actually been built? We will explore the possibility in the final chapters.

So far, this account and several others are the only evidence that any airships were built in a "quite Iowa village." Was Mr. Wilson lying about the origins of the airships in the attempt to thwart possible claim jumpers? Perhaps Mr. Wilson did build his airship in a quiet Iowa village. To learn more about this Iowa village, you must read on.

> Rice, Texas, April 19.—This morning *[April 19]* at 7:00 o'clock what is supposed to be the "airship" touring in the South was seen at this place, moving in an easterly direction at a very rapid rate. Several citizens of this place viewed it with perplexed curiosity.
>
> It was only in sight a few moments and disappeared as quickly as it came ("That Airship," *Houston Post,* April 22, 1897).

WAS ABOARD AN AIRSHIP

THE FIRST DESCRIPTION OF THE MODERN INVENTION TO BE PUBLISHED SAN FRANCISCO—New York

Travel to be Revolutionized Within Two Years Speed at 1,000 Miles In Eight Hours.

Richmond, Fort Bend Co., Tex. May 7.—To The News : The tragic death by the flood near Grenada, Miss., last Tuesday of the writer of the following letter has induced its recipient to allow The News to publish it. The gentleman to whom it was written is Dr. D. H. Tucker, physician at the state farm in this county, and is a man of unimpeachable character and, unquestioned veracity, and he pronounces the author of the letter a man of like reputation. He and the doctor were college mates and he was a young man of scientific turn of mind and had devoted considerable time to the study of physics and similar branches, and had at one time been engaged as draughtsman on the Panama Canal. Here is the letter:

Lake Charles, La., April 20,1897.—Dr. D. H. Tucker, Harlem, Tex. —My Dear Friend: Since receiving your last letter, which reached me at Mobile, I have had a most wonderful experience. This is a day and generation of wonders. It is said that there is nothing new under the sun. I doubt this statement and am ready to affirm that Noah's ark was an object of small interest to his antedeluviah conferees compared to the wonderful ship I have just had the pleasure of seeing.

I have known that for years the scientific world has been on the qui vive for the perfection of the airship ; that experiments were in progress, but that nothing satisfactory could be obtained of the practical working of any of the machines, even from the ever alert and truthful Scientific American. But the thing is a fact! I assure you of this, for I have seen the airship, have spoken to the people on board, have been on board of her, and was enabled to make a sketch of her, which I send you. Of course, many of the details are necessarily lacking in it and I have had to depend more or less as to measurements to my memory, but rough as it is, it is comparatively accurate. But to begin at the beginning.

Yesterday about noon *[April 19],* while driving across country in a leisurely trot my eye encounter ed almost directly ahead a large object at a high elevation. It was so unlike anything I had ever seen that my gaze was instantly riveted upon it. It approached *at a very rapid rate,* and from the apparent size of a flour barrel, it rapidly developed into a ponderous affair, the sight of which was startling to say the least of it. When about one-half mile from me it emitted an unearthly whistle, which terrified my horses so that I was forced to jump to their heads.

While struggling with them I was thrown down and they broke and ran. When I rose, there, about 100 feet from me was a huge something, settling rapidly, but easily to the ground, and a man was preparing to descend a rope ladder. The sight at first was so startling and the struggle with my team had so unnerved me that it was several seconds before I could even estimate the size or distance the strange affair. As soon as I recovered my sense I instantly realized that it was the much talked of airship, which I, in common with nearly every one else, had set down as the creation of fancy and imagination.

As soon as the vessel's rope about reached the ground the man came down the ladder, followed by another, both of whom came up to where I was standing and began to inquire if I were hurt and to apologize for the damage they had caused. I was so dazed that I could hardly speak at first, but I lost all interest in my team and assured them that I was not hurt, and then began to ask them questions. It was decidedly gratifying to find that they *were plain, every-day Americans like myself,* and they were gentlemanly. They invited me to inspect their ship, as if it were an ordinary affair, and you can rest assured I did not wait for a second invitation, *but climbed the ladder or gangway or whatever else it is called, that hung over the side.*

Now, let me assure you that I am not drawing on my imagination, but I am giving you facts, as strange as they may seem, and I as write I read in a late Galveston News that others have seen this ship, but always in the night time and in so many different places that it seems a piece of fiction, whereas I saw it in the broad, open light of day and spent over an hour talking with the inventor and owner.

As I reached the deck I was introduced to a *Mr. Walters, who held the position of engineer. The two men who met me on the ground were Mr. Wilson, the owner, and Mr. Scott Warren, his friend.* They also had a Mexican or Spaniard, who did the cooking, I suppose. We went into what might be termed the cabin, where we sat down a few minutes. *This was a room probably 14 feet long by 8 feet wide.* It was fitted up very prettily, something on the order of a smoking room on a Pullman sleeper. It had three reclining chairs screwed to the floor and cushioned seats on the sides and ends. Around a post in the center was a table with several field glasses and books in a bracket above it.

There were a number of incandescent lamps about the walls and hanging from the ceiling, and I immediately concluded that the motive power of the ship was electricity and so expressed myself to Mr. Wilson. He said this was not the case, but that it was propelled and *sustained by a gas which had the property of great compressibility under a slight pressure and a correspondingly great power of expansion.* That he had invented a machine or rather engine that once started worked automatically and that one had only to attend to the governor which regulated the speed. I was not prepared wholly to accept this explanation and intimated as much in my expression of astonishment, but I was convinced of it when he showed me the apparatus *for generating the gas* and the engine for utilizing it.

Not being a practical mechanic I can not enter into details of this engine's construction, but this much I was able to understand: *That there was a receiver made of aluminum (and of this metal the engine and everything connected with the ship so far as I saw was constructed), from which pipes passed to what appeared to me to be a square box, at each end of which was a cylinder with an exhaust chamber, in which worked a piston attached to a very singularly constructed driving wheel like the sprocket of a bicycle, except that there were four wheels, one within the other, and these Mr. Wilson called the accumulators.* There were two sets of such wheels with a combined velocity surpassing anything heretofore constructed. *By the peculiar arrangement of the wheel within a wheel the balance of the centripetal and centrifugal forces was preserved in the presence of 65,000 revolutions a minute; that is, the velocity of revolutions in these wheels would equal 65,000 revolutions of an ordinary wheel ten feet in diameter in one minute if such a thing were possible.*

My mouth, as well as my eyes, opened wide at this statement, but I presume the truth was told. I asked what the highest attainable rate of speed might be. Mr. Wilson said that he did not know exactly, but that he had covered something over *1000 miles in eight hours* and the indicator or "speed dial," as he called it, only registered 72 per cent of what he believed was the maximum speed of the ship. Though he admitted that the dial might not be accurate and the possible speed might be more or less,

I was naturally curious to know by what means he generated sufficient gas to answer the purpose of a long voyage, but he smiled and said, *"quite a number of people would like to know the same thing probably. "This is his secret* and to test the practicality of which he is now traveling back and forth. He said that he had discovered it two years ago after years of experimenting, and I judged from remarks dropped occasionally that his companion, Mr. Warren, had furnished the capital for the experiment. Mr. Wilson said, however, that the *source of his gas supply was the air which is passed through a condenser containing certain chemicals which posses the function of eliminating therefrom a gas known only to him.* He did not know the chemical formula, he said, or whether it was simple or compound. All the machinery seemed very simple and did not occupy a greater space than 6 feet in length by 4 feet in width.

To elevate or depress the ship while flying through the air a small wheel at the stern of the boat is operated. This wheel was something like that in a ship's pilot house, but instead of having spokes there was an arrangement of magnets connected with wires to storage batteries. By passing the current over the wire of the wheel the operator was able to overcome gravity thus elevating the ship. By passing the current in the opposite direction and under the wire the weight of the ship was increased and could sink like a shot to the earth, and by passing the currents in opposite directions at the same time the vessel would remain horizontal at any distance from the earth. What I thought was the anchor was simply the ladder which hung over the side.

While I was on board it had a gentle swaying motion which I imagine if much greater would produce seasickness. At the time we were not more than ten feet above the ground. The interior arrangement of the vessel is very neat and comfortable thought not expensively luxurious. The kitchen is a very small cubby almost identically like that of a buffet car. The berths are narrow but comfortable looking.

To attempt to describe the ship in detail would be futile, as the whole thing was so suddenly sprung upon me that I was dazed. Mr. Wilson told me that currents of wind had little effect upon them, as by pressing a button at the wheel he could rise above or below antagonistic wind or storms. *He said that he had never been higher than 2,000feet,* as it affected the crew disagreeably, but that, as he had only been experimenting with his ship *for about two weeks* he did not yet know which would be the most desirable or comfortable height at which to travel.

He showed me the mechanical means by which the ship was propelled. *At one end was a propeller* (working on a shaft connected with the sprocket wheels) such as those on a tug boat, except that the *blades of this ship's propeller were enormous, being ten feet in length.* What I thought were sails were *canvas wings used in steering* but Mr. Wilson stated that he was at work on a contrivance that would obviate the necessity of using sails. The length of the ship was *75 feet by 25 feet.*

Mr. Wilson said that the pantry was easily supplied with provisions at any time as he had only to drop down near a town and make his purchases. As to the cost of the concern, I could not ascertain as neither man seemed inclined to talk about that part of it, but Mr. Warren said that it was *low enough to warrant the building three of them as experiments*. Each one was essentially different in some of the details and comparisons were being made as to the relative merits of each. They refused to state what point they started from or to give any information concerning their business, except as I have stated. *They had a number of different newspapers containing accounts of the ship and they referred to them laughingly. Some of them, Mr. Warren said, were correct, but many of them were untrue.*

On account of the pleasanter climate most of their journeys had been through Texas and Mexico. *They did not know where the other ships were, but supposed they were in Mexico or Lower California and Arizona.* They laughed heartily over some of the accounts of their being seen at so many different places at the same time, and gave as a reason for not alighting at or near a city that they did not want to be subjected to the annoyances, and I inferred that they had not yet secured all of their patents. *As a reason for traveling almost entirely by night Mr. Wilson stated that it was because they had not yet become accustomed to being in such dizzy heights, and they feared to see the distance below them.* They are not aeronauts and do not claim to posses the nerves or coolness of that class of people.

I learned that Mr. Wilson (though I doubt if that is his correct name) *formerly lived in Fort Worth*, but I do not remember to have ever seen him. He is apparently a young man and has the typical face of a genius or an inventor. *He said that inside two years their method of locomotion would be in general use throughout the world.*

These ships, he said, had been *built according to plans at different places* and had been *put together at Mr. Warren's place,* but he did not say where that was. At night a small but powerful search light was used to flash ahead or below. It was mounted on the forward deck, and near it was the air whistle which frightened my horses. This latter arrangement had just been gotten in working order and this was its first trial, and I must say it is the most diabolical arrangement I ever heard or saw.

The inventor said that as soon as he could demonstrate satisfactorily the practicability of economically and safely operating his ships he and some capitalists would construct a line of ships to be operated between New York and San Francisco and other points, and that it would not take long for the people to overcome their natural timidity in trusting their lives in such crafts. So far they had met with *but one slight accident [the Kalamazoo, Michigan, explosion?],* and that was to one of the sails or steering apparatus shortly after setting out on their journey. It amounted to very little, however, and only made it difficult to steer properly.

> They offered to take me up to an elevation so that I could see if my team was in sight, but I respectfully but firmly declined and told them goodbye, after promising that I would not make my observations immediately public. As soon as I reach Memphis, however, I shall write my experience up for the press, and I think I can set at rest all the mooted question as to the existence of a real airship. I can say positively and emphatically that there is at least one, and it is a real practical, tangible reality, and though in time to come I will no doubt see much of them I can never again be effected as I was yesterday noon.
>
> I have told several people here of my experience, but as they treat it as a Munchausenism I have not made any particular effort to convince them of its truth, but I assure you that every word I have written is absolutely correct.
>
> One week after writing the above the author was drowned while attempting to save some livestock near Grenada, Miss., and Dr. Tucker has given me permission to use the letter for The News. With a few trifling corrections in the language it is given as it was written. Geo. Dunlop *(Dallas Morning News*, May 16, 1897)

See chapter 22 for an account of the Michigan explosion.

This is a remarkable account of a close encounter between a local person and the airship and its occupants. It has a great ring of truth to it and appears in all respects to be legitimate. It is perhaps the best description of the airship we have. Although I think the crew made a few false claims (to lead the unwary astray and protect their invention), the account in general is very accurate. Note the claim that three airships were manufactured, with two differing lengths of about 150 feet long and about 75 feet long.

The crew of this airship apparently did not know where the other two airships are. So, the Aurora crash, which occurred on the morning of April 17, was still unknown to them. Since newspapers did not print anything about the Aurora crash until April 19, their statement concerning the number of airships and their whereabouts is reasonable.

This supposition is in agreement with the flight paths of the two vessels that appeared to be searching for something on the night of April 17. Also, the statement that the other two ships might be in Arizona or southern California gives added weight to the sightings that occurred in Childress and El Paso, as the airships apparently were far ranging—with the Southwestern region of the country well within their territory.

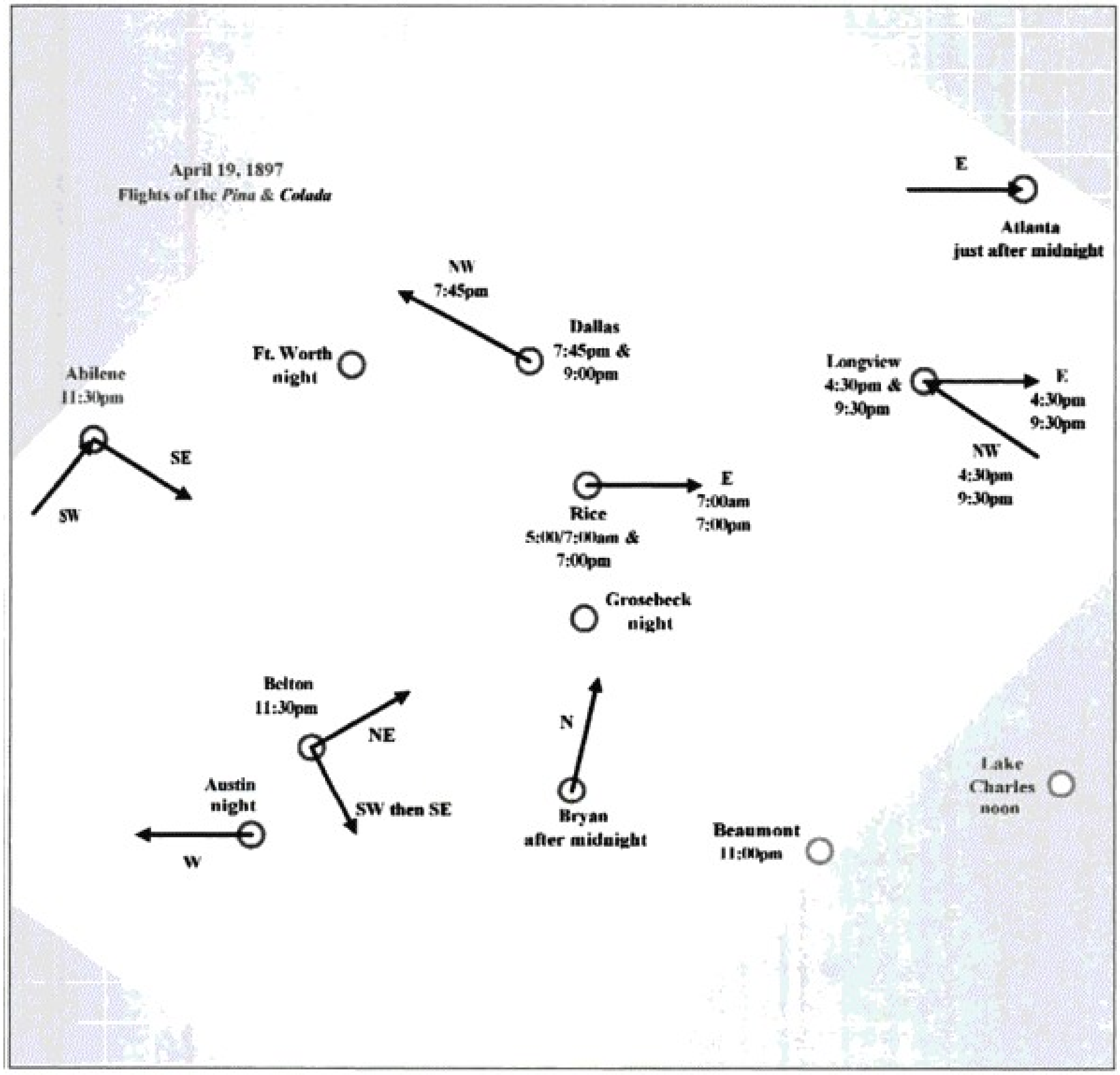
April 19, 1897
Flights of the *Pina* & *Colada*
E
Atlanta
just after midnight
NW
7:45pm
Dallas
7:45pm &
9:00pm
Ft. Worth
night
Abilene
11:30pm
SE
SW
Longview
4:30pm &
9:30pm
E
4:30pm
9:30pm
NW
4:30pm
9:30pm
E
7:00am
7:00pm
Rice
5:00/7:00am &
7:00pm
Groesbeck
night
Belton
11:30pm
NE
SW then SE
Austin
night
W
N
Bryan
after midnight
Beaumont
11:00pm
Lake
Charles
noon

April 19, 1897, sightings

TABLE 12
April 19, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/19/97	Rice	TX	5:00/ 7:00 A.M.	E	Rapid rate		*HP* 4/22/97
4/19/97	Longview	TX	4:30 P.M.	NW then E	Swiftly		*AAS* 4/20/97
4/19/97	Rice	TX	7:00 P.M.	E			*HP* 4/22/97
4/19/97	Dallas	TX	7:45 P.M.	NW		1 mile	*DTH* 4/20/97
4/19/97	Dallas	TX	9:00 P.M.		200 mph		*DTH* 4/20/97
4/19/97	Longview	TX	9:30 P.M.	NW then E		Swiftly	*HP* 4/22/97 *TTS* 4/30/97
4/19/97	Beaumont	TX	11:00 P.M.			On the ground	*HDP/HP* 4/21/97 *BA* 4/24/97
4/19/97	Belton	TX	11:30 P.M.	NE	Immense velocity		*HP* 4/22/97 *TTS* 4/30/97
4/19/97	Abilene	TX	11:30 P.M.	SW then SE	Terrific speed		
4/19/97	Belton & Bell County	TX	11:30 P.M.	SW-NE	Great velocity		*GDN* 4/22/97
4/19/97	Atlanta	TX	Just after midnight	E	Ordinary passenger train	200-300 ft	*HP* 4/22/97
4/19/97	Grosebeck	TX	Night				*TTS* 4/20/97 *HP* 4/22/97
4/19/97	Austin	TX	Night	W	Rather slowly		*AAS* 4/20/97
4/19/97	Dallas, Oak Cliff	TX			Very fast time		*DMN* 4/20/97
4/19/97	Fort Worth	TX	Night				DTH 4/20/97
4/19/97	Lake Charles	LA	Noon		Rapid rate	½ mile and on the ground	*DMN* 5/16/97

Note: Dallas sightings on April 19 may be fake, as a "fire balloon" was reported over the city that same night.

HP = Houston Post
AAS = Austin American Statesman
DTH = Dallas Times Herald
TTS = Terrell Times-Star
HDP = Houston Daily Post
BA = Bastrop (Louisiana) Advertiser
GDN = Galveston Daily News
DMN = Dallas Morning News

CHAPTER 10

TUESDAY, APRIL 20, 1897

There were four reported sightings on the night of April 20. One may wonder why there were so few Texas sightings on this particular night. Airships were seen in Louisiana and Colorado on this same night, so maybe those in the airship fleet found themselves widely dispersed as they looked for their missing sister ship. And the story continues . . .

THE HEAVENLY MYSTERY

Possible soldiers From War-Like Mars Out On A Terrestrial Reconnoiter

THE SHIP CARRIES COLORED LIGHTS

An Astronomical Theory Anent the Mysterious Stranger as Seen in Chicago— The Celestial Craft the Talk of the Town.

The great and mysterious aerial vessel that has thrown north Texas and many parts of the country into a state of excitement and commotion, was first seen sailing over Kansas, but the stories about it did not excite much attention.

Since then, however, the mysterious stranger has been seen in many parts of the country, and Friday night last refutable citizens in scores of Texas towns had a view of the aerial vehicle.

It has traveled over Illinois, Indiania, Iowa, Wisconsin, Arkansas, Louisiana and other states, and everywhere has excited greater curiosity and in some places provoked consternation.

On Friday night, April 9, the strange light skirted over the northern border of Chicago and could be seen, according to the numerous reports of residents in that neighborhood. A great crowd gathered at the corner of Milwaukee and Oakley avenues and gazed at the object, trying to figure out to their satisfaction what it might be. It was an "airship" for lack of a better name to designate it by, but most were skeptical about the identity of the "manifestation." It was said the object looked very much like a balloon but the "red light" was plainly discernable. Many of the people mounted the roofs in the neighborhood and all the field glasses in the vicinity were called into play. Among those who reported seeing the lights were Max Christianson, 1552 Milwaukee Avenue; Joseph Starveitch, 1480 Milwaukee Avenue; George Nicholson, 1480 Milwaukee Avenue; L. Wickert, clerk in Keats Drug Store, 1480 Milwaukee Avenue.

It passed over Chicago, going eastward, and disappeared about 12:45. It carried a strange green light, which was seen by thousands of people.

Professor G. W. Hough of Dearborn observatory, Northwestern University, took an interest in the "airship rumors"and advanced the opinion that the strange light was caused by the effect of the atmosphere on the star Alpha Orionus, "which is of the first magnitude and is in the constellation Orion. It rises early in the evening and its course across the heavens is about the same as that of the moon. In Chicago it is first visible about 7 o'clock this time of the year. It reaches the zenith he says, about the time when the mysterious phenomenon described as an "airship" was seen that night. The professor says the star is unusually bright in a clear atmosphere and appears to be close to the earth. The star gradually disappears during the evening and as it grows dimmer the defect of the atmosphere causes it apparently to change color.

On the same night that thousands of people in Chicago saw the "airship," *red, white, and green* lights high in the heavens warned the citizens of Evanston that the Kansas airship was sailing over that suburb. The lights were first observed by Robert Lowen, a jewelry clerk, living at 1926 Sherman Avenue. It was a few minutes after 8 o'clock, and hundreds of Evanston people saw the light.

On the same night at Lake Mills, Wis. at 9 o'clock, it was seen by many people. It was visible about ten minutes and then disappeared behind some trees.

At Wausau, Wis., on the same night, what was supposed to be an airship was seen passing over that city about 10:00 o'clock. *Lights could be distinguished* from a dark object far up in the heavens, which had the appearance of being *shaped like an egg.* It was viewed there by at least fifty persons.

> On the same night a large number of people in Solon Is., saw the mysterious visitor, and on the same night operators of the Western Union Telegraph company and others. It appeared to be about 500 feet above the ground. The outlines were distinctly visible against the sky. The ship gave out *two bright lights* of an electric glow.

> At Mount Carroll, hundreds of people, about 8:30 o'clock saw the strange visitor. It came from the northeast, and when opposite Carroll *changed its course* and went due west at a *most terrific speed.* It appeared to be *oblong in shape* and carried a *red light.* In length it appeared to be about 10 feet long and some two or three feet high. Many people saw it in various parts of the city ("The Heavenly Mystery," *Austin American Statesman,* April 20, 1897, p. 3).

This account may be the genesis of the doubting "leading astronomers" mentioned in a previous article. Oblong shapes, bright lights, colored lights, terrific speeds, and changing courses do not sound like stationary stars in the firmament. Nor does this sound like meteors, comets, or any other naturally occurring cosmic event. Sounds just like an airship, such as might be seen today on final approach to a large metropolitan airport.

SOMETHING MORE ABOUT AIRSHIP

Engineer John Smith has returned from Yoakum

A Statesman reporter has had a talk with him, and he referred to the airship, about which he has dreamed some, but not seen. Mr. Smith has been down on the Rio Grande, and he says at almost every Mexican house you see a white cross. It is either on top of the house, on the door, or somewhere about it. "A priest went through that part of the country some time ago," said Mr. Smith, "and he told the Mexicans that the time was at hand for the devil to appear as some great monster, and that the only protection against him was a white cross, and promptly the cross went up." Mr. Smith said he had no confidence in the airship business, but it was seen, all the same, in Louisiana, Tuesday night *[April 20]*, at Natchitoches.

The newspaper account says about 1:30 that night, as a gay crowd were returning from a reception given by Company I at the Armory Hall, they were treated to a strange sight, coming from the western heavens. That spectacle consisted of a massive airship, the first story being of balloon shape, and the under car being of conical or cigar form.

> When first seen it seemed but a faintly animated spark, which, as it came nearer, gradually grew brighter. After a few moments its entire form was clearly perceptible, and developed a structure of strange proportions. It seems to have been illuminated with a fluctuating light, which ranged from brilliancy to semi-darkness. Its destination appeared to be northerly, and it gave indications, from its courses, of coming from Texas. It was evidentially a machine of unique invention, as *its movement was of an undulatory character* and bore *striking resemblance to the movement of some huge bird.* It was visible, though about 1,000 feet high, nearly half an hour, and was a rare curiosity to those who had the good fortune to witness the phenomenon.

> The remarkable fact in connection with its visitation was that, as its course neared the city, the light that illuminated it became suddenly low, and did not again rise until the city was left in the darkness *(Austin American Statesman*, April 23, 1897, p. 3).

In a previous account, the pilot states they are having trouble keeping the ship in level flight, which may account for the undulatory motion observed. But, recall previous accounts where the observer stated the wings flapped to give motive power. Did at least one airship propel itself forward with a bit of wing-flapping? The issue is explored in the latter chapters.

AN OPERATOR SAW IT.

> Sabinal, Uvalde Co., Tex., April 20.—The famous airship which has been putting in appearances in various parts of the country was seen directly over this place at 2 o'clock last night *[April 20]* by Charles McGar, night operator of the Southern Pacific company. Mr. McGar is a highly responsible gentleman and no one doubts his statement of the matter. He says that the ship was not more than 300 feet above the earth and traveling in a westerly direction. His description of the

nocturnal flyer tallies with the one in the *[Dallas Morning]* News, save that its bottom much resembles the keel of a steam boat. Its passage through the air was accompanied by a strange whirring sound, not unlike the buzzing of an electric battery *(Galveston Daily News,* April 24, 1897, p. 8).

THE AIRSHIP IN WEST TEXAS LANDED IN THE TOWN OF UVALDE, SHERIFF BAYLOR INTERVIEWED THE MEN

IT STARTED FROM GOSHEN, NEW YORK AND IS ON A TRIAL TRIP NAVIGATOR WILSON LEFT A MESSAGE FOR HIS FRIEND AKERS

Uvalde, Tex., April 22.—That Uvalde has been visited by the famous airship that has created so much excitement in Texas the past week or more, there is no room to doubt. The airship was sighted by Sheriff H. W. Baylor about 10 o'clock Tuesday evening *[April 20].* Mr. Baylor's attention was first attracted by a bright light and the sound of strange voices in the alley back of his residence. He went out to investigate and was surprised to find there the airship and *crew of three men.* They stated they were on a trial run and did not wish their presence known to the people of the town. One of the men, who gave his name as *Wilson,* and place of residence as *Goshen, N.Y.,* inquired for *Captain C. C. Akers, former sheriff of Zavalla County,* who he understood lived in this section. He said he had met *Captain Akers in Fort Worth in 1877* and liked him very much, and would be much pleased to meet him again. *When told that Captain Akers was at Eagle Pass* in the custom service, but often visited this place, he asked to be remembered to the captain on the occasion of his next visit.

After procuring water at the hydrant in Mr. Baylor's yard, the men boarded the ship, its great wings and fins were set in motion and it sped away northward in the direction of San Angelo.

Mr. Baylor is thoroughly reliable and his statement is undoubtedly true. His description of the ship does not differ materially from that given by Mr. J. R. Ligon of Beaumont and the gentlemen who saw it at Greenville.

County Clerk Henry J. Bowles also claims to have seen the airship as it passed up Getty Street north of the Baylor residence ("The Airship in West Texas," *Galveston Daily News*, April 24,1897, p. 3).

If all these accounts are a great hoax perpetuated by the newspapers, railroads, telegraphers, or any other entity, it seems unlikely they would be able to persuade a sheriff to lie for the sake of selling a few papers or having some fun. It seems much more reasonable to believe Sheriff Baylor did meet the airship crew members.

Sheriff Baylor's account offers considerable new and important information about the airship and its inventor. We now have a name, Wilson, and another place, Goshen, New York, associated with the creation of an airship. The airships' origins are becoming less of a mystery. The connection between Wilson, Goshen, and other airship crew members will interest us later. It is obvious there were at least two airships about the night of April 20.

THE AIRSHIP

One Man Saw It In New Orleans Last Night

At 12:30 o'clock this morning Camp street in the vicinity of the newspaper's office was roused by an unearthly yell of "There it is!" and as quick as a flash the man who saw it disappeared up a stairway, and the racket as he jumped four steps at a time could be heard a block away. He had seen the airship, so he told his colleagues on the papers, and instantly every window in both offices was filled by the newspaper men and printers, all searching the heavens for the wonder, while the fortunate young man who saw it tried to describe it. He seemed very much excited, but he managed to say that he saw it going in a northwesterly direction, and it was about fifty or sixty feet long. It had a powerful searchlight which played around. As he described what he had seen everybody craned their necks and looked and looked, but they looked in vain, for there was nothing to be seen but the blue ether of night dotted here and there with a twinkling star, which some startled their companion by saying it was the searchlight of the aerial wonder. As the moments flew by, and nobody saw anything which could by any possibility be distorted into an airship, the laugh began to grow on the man who said he saw it. He denied the soft impeachments which were cast at his veracity by his co-workers, but it was hard to convince them. His general reputation for truth and veracity is such however, that his friends cannot help but believe that he saw something and as the airship was seen in the vicinity of Natchitoches yesterday, it is not unlikely that it may have come in this direction, the navigators bent on a little fun at the expense of the people of New Orleans.

> A young man connected with the Picayune claimed to have seen the airship here on April 1, but all he saw was the searchlight, as it was dark at the time. It was generally treated as an April fool joke, but the subsequent excitement caused by the alleged appearance of the strange craft in other cities leads to the belief that there may be some truth in it.

> The two supposed navigators of the airship, Dolbear and Tillman, as they gave their name to the people of Stephenville, Tex., were supposed to have been in the city last night. Their names were registered at one of the hotels, but it was in all likelihood a hoax, as cards sent to their room failed to get any response *{New Orleans Daily Picayune,* April 21, 1897, p. 9).

The reason this sighting is so important is the proximity of two individuals identified in the April 17 Stephenville, Texas, sighting ("The Great Aerial Wanderer," chapter 7). This account claims Tillman and Dolbear were registered in a New Orleans hotel on April 20. Unfortunately, the name of the hotel is not specified in the article. The account spells Dolbear's name correctly, not "Dolbar," as it is spelled in the Stephenville article. The reporter says, "their names were registered at the hotel." The fact that the newspaperman reported his name correctly implies Dolbear really was registered in the hotel. Else, the reporter most likely would have used the spelling in the Stephenville article (Dolbar). Also, if someone was playing a hoax, it seems reasonable that the name in the hotel register would have been spelled the same as it was in the Stephenville account. However, attempts by interested parties (newspaper reporters) to contact the two men at the hotel were fruitless. But, if Tillman and Dolbear were seeking to avoid publicity, they certainly would not have entertained reporters in their rooms.

Since the airship was spotted over Lake Charles at noon on April 19 and in Natchitoches (see the following account), we can guess that Tillman and Dolbear stopped in New Orleans for an evening of rest and relaxation then left in the wee hours of the twentieth. One can easily imagine the two men enjoying a luxurious meal and bath after days of eating sandwiches and sweating in the close, hot quarters of the small airship. This seems the most likely scenario because the Lake Charles sighting was the first airship sighting in Louisiana and the Natchitoches sighting was after the New Orleans sighting.

THE FLYING MACHINE SEEN BY THE PEOPLE OF NATCHITOCHES

> Natchitoches, La. April 20 - Last night at about 1:30 o'clock as a gay crowd was returning from a reception given by Company I at the Armory Hall, they were treated to a strange sight, coming from the western heavens. That spectacle consisted of a massive airship, the first story being of balloon shape, and the under car of conical or cigar form. When first seen it appeared but a fairly animated spark, which, as it came nearer, gradually grew brighter. After a few moments its entire form was clearly perceptible, and developed a structure of strange proportions. It seemed to have been illuminated with a fluctuating light, which ranged from brilliancy to semi-darkness. Its destination appeared to be northerly, and it gave indications, from its course, as coming from Texas. It was evidently a machine of unique invention, as its movement was of an undulatory character, and bore a striking resemblance, to the movement of some huge bird. It was visible, though about a thousand feet high, for nearly half an hour, and was a rare curiosity to those who had the good fortune to witness the phenomenon. The remarkable fact in connection with its visitation was that, as its course neared the city, the light that illuminated it became suddenly low, and did not again rise until the city was left in the darkness {*New Orleans Daily Picayune,* April 21,1897, p. 6).

It is interesting to note that the reporter believed the airship came from Texas. According to the account, the airship came from the "western heavens," a direction that indicates the airship might have come from Texas. A more logical explanation is the airship came from New Orleans (see the previous account) and turned toward the east as it approached Natchitoches. The New Orleans account reports the airship left the city headed northwest. Natchitoches is northwest of New Orleans. If the airship navigator intended to pass over Natchitoches, he very well could have missed the intended target to the west, requiring an eastern course correction as he approached the town. Keep in mind "visual flight rules" were the only flight rules of the day. In the dense eastern pine forest, communities were not easily visible from the air at night during the period of gas streetlights.

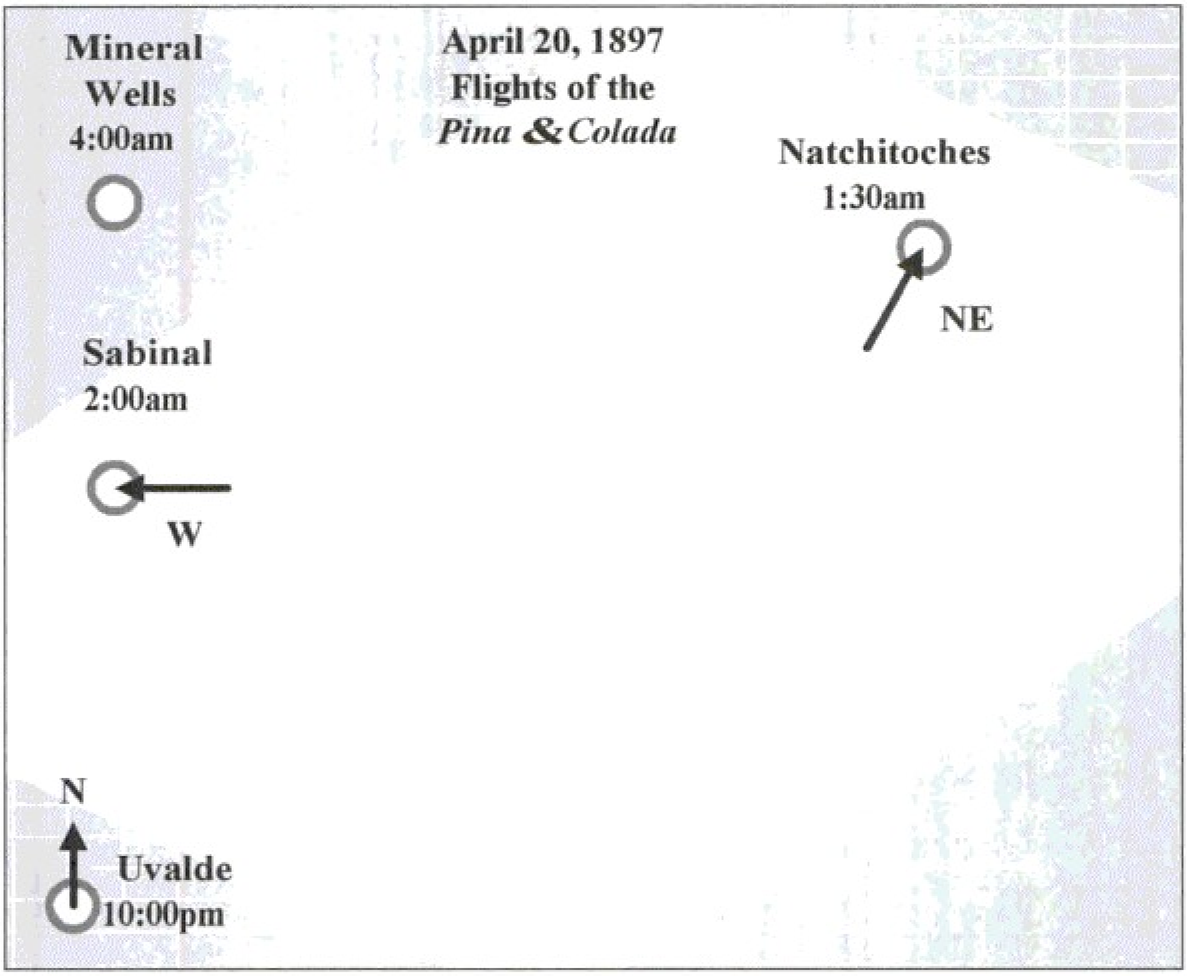
April 20, 1897
Flights of the
Pina & Colada
Mineral Wells
4:00am
Natchitoches
1:30am
NE
Sabinal
2:00am
W
N
Uvalde
10:00pm

April 20, 1897, sightings

TABLE 13
April 20, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/20/97	Sabinal (Uvalde County)	TX	2:00 A.M.	W		300 ft	*GDN* 4/24/97
4/20/97	Mineral Wells	TX	4:00 A.M.				*DTH* 4/20/97
4/20/97	Uvalde	TX	10:00 P.M.	N		On the ground	*GDN* 4/24/97
4/20/97	Natchitoches	LA	1:30 A.M.	NE	1,000 ft		*AAS/ADS* 4/23/97

Note: *GDN* = *Galveston Daily News*
DTH = *Dallas Times Herald*
AAS = *Austin American Statesman*

TABLE 14
April 21, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/21/97	New Orleans	LA	12:30 A.M.	NW			*NODP* 4/21/97

Note: *NODP* = *New Orleans Daily Picayune*

CHAPTER 11

WEDNESDAY, APRIL 21, 1897

Continuing the pattern of the past two nights, the night of April 21 features few sightings. The few sightings reported are confined to the far-eastern and northern portions of Texas, implying two airships are roaming the state this night. Let us continue . . .

WHAT AN EDITOR SAW.

> Eden, Jackson Co., Tex., April 23.- Frank Dickson, editor of the Progress comes to the front and avows without qualification that he saw *two airships* pass over the southern part of the town night before last *[April 21].* The distant rumbling first attracted his attention, but he thought that it was possibly the noise from a steamer navigating the Navidad River, but looking up he soon discovered *the two monsters poised in the air, about 200 yards apart, communicating with each other by means of red and green lights.* The outlines of the aerial navigators, says Dickson, were substantially the same as heretofore described in the News. He says: All this transpired in the space of five minutes, and when they started off *one went north* and the *other south,* and were out of sight before I could recover my presence of mind and call my nearest neighbor, Colonel O. Rigg, to witness the strange apparition ("The Airship in West Texas," *Galveston Daily News,* April 24,1897, p. 3).

We have an eyewitness who saw two airships communicating with each other with red and green lights. How can anyone say the observer must have mistaken the scene for a couple of twinkling stars? This is pretty solid evidence of the three-airship hypothesis presented earlier. Two are present near Eden, perhaps becoming desperate in the search to find their missing sister ship while she lies crumpled and burned in Judge Proctor's Aurora pasture.

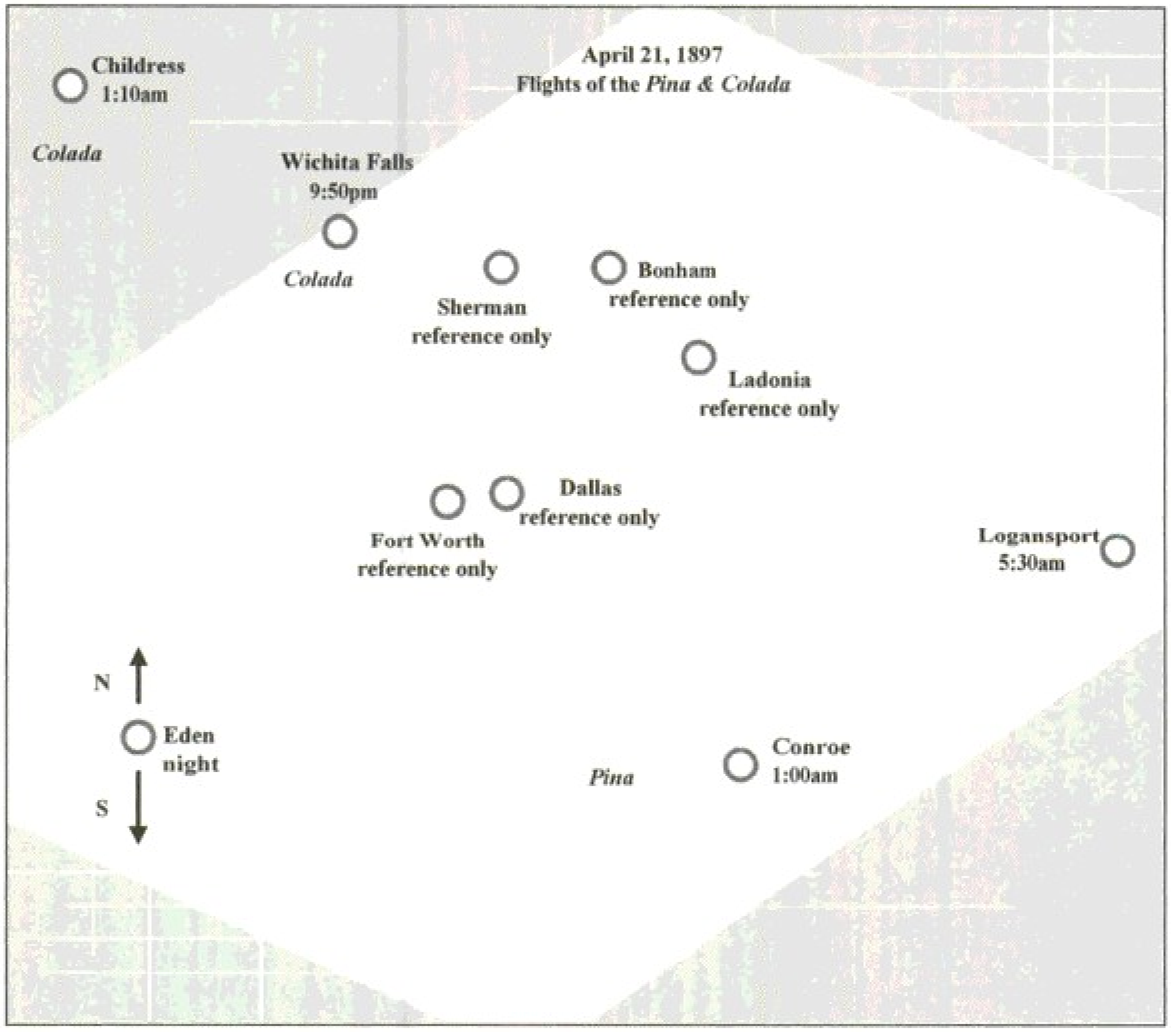
April 21, 1897
Flights of the *Pina & Colada*
Childress
1:10am
Colada
Wichita Falls
9:50pm
Colada
Sherman
reference only
Bonham
reference only
Ladonia
reference only
Dallas
reference only
Fort Worth
reference only
Logansport
5:30am
N
Eden
night
S
Pina
Conroe
1:00am

April 21, 1897, sightings

TABLE 15
April 21, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/21/97	Wichita Falls	TX	9:50 P.M.				*FWR* 4/23/97
4/21/97	Eden (Jackson County)	TX	Night	#1 > N #2 > S			*GDN* 4/24/97

Note: *FWR = Fort Worth Register*
GDN = Galveston Daily News

TABLE 16
April 22, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/22/97	Conroe	TX	1:00 A.M.			On the ground	*GDN* 4/24/97
4/22/97	Childress	TX	1:10 A.M.				*FWR* 4/23/97
4/22/97	Brenham	TX	4:00 A.M.	S			*GDN* 4/24/97

CHAPTER 12

THURSDAY, APRIL 22, 1897

There are seven reported sightings for April 22 and three for early the following morning. The sightings are closer together than those of the previous three nights, implying that the two airships ranging over the state are in close communication with each other. The story continues ...

SAW THE AIRSHIP

A Brenhamite Describes His Experience With the Aerial Bird.

Brenham, Tex., April 22.—The airship passed over Brenham about 4 o'clock *[April 22]* going south just as the cook started the fire in the galley and began preparing the morning meal for its passengers. *[The writer of this article does not really know if the airship cook was busy or not. He is alluding to the time of the morning the airship was observed.]* Among those who saw it here was Mr. John R. Pennington.

He says it was pretty high and he could not clearly distinguish all of its features, but it was like several of the published descriptions. He heard a *roaring sound* like the approach of a cyclone or a hundred buzzards sailing with set wings and looking up he saw the lights and hulk of the ship and heard a noise on board like the *rattling of glassware.*

He was out at his horse lot and hastened to the house to awaken the family that they might see the ship, but before they could be awakened and get to the front gallery it had vanished in the distance, and this was not surprising considering the apparent speed at which it was sailing.

There are people here that could tell airship stories all day and the public would scarcely pause to hear them, much less to give the story more than a passing thought, but Mr. John Pennington is a man of unquestioned and unquestionable integrity and not in the habit of talking to hear himself talk *(Galveston Daily News*, April 24, 1897, p. 8).

AT CONROE

Conroe, Montgomery Co., Tex., April 23.—Our little city all agog today over the report of a most remarkable incident that occurred last night at the hotel.

Prof. G. L. Witherspoon, proprietor of that hostelry, Major Dan D. Donahue, auditor of the Texas, Louisiana and Eastern Railroad, Colonel A. H. Traylor, tax collector, and John Wahrengerger, merchant, were engaged until 1 o'clock in a social game of domino's, when they were disturbed by a call from *three strangers* who said they were *from San Francisco, Cal.* They were most reliable gentlemen and made no hesitancy in stating they were *traveling in an airship from San Francisco en route to Cuba, via El Paso, Conroe and New Orleans.*

They had left the ship at *Williams ranch* near town and walked in to get supper by way of a change.

Major Donahue says that he feels like he has interviewed natives of the moon, as heretofore he has scoffed at the idea of an airship, and he and his friends on last night gracefully declined an invitation to inspect the wonderful aerial traveling machine, but when less than an hour after his midnight visitors had taken their leave, he saw the ship rise majestically from the earth, illuminated by brilliant electric lights, and plow its way through space, his skepticism vanished, and the strange reality of an airship was stamped on his senses and vision.

Major Donahue is one of the most popular citizens and in the main a quiet and most unassuming gentleman, and his statements, especially when corroborated by the evidence of such gentlemen as Messrs. Witherspoon, Traylor and Wahrengerger, are accepted as gospel truth. They say that the ship must have been *thirty feet wide and50feet long.* They watched it until it looked like a bright star just above the earths horizon, and the major declares he was sober ("The Airship in West Texas," *Galveston Daily News,* April 24,1897, p. 3).

The airship's length is consistently given as 75 or 150 to 200 feet in previous accounts. This observer now places the length at 50 feet. Is he wrong or is there some other explanation? I suspect this is the 75-foot ship the observer saw, and he underestimated the length due to the darkness of night and the distance between himself and the airship. However, there is another explanation, which is explored later.

Recall in the "McKnight's Airship" account in chapter 3, "A man named McKnight has been working on an airship at *U. S. Marshal Williams' ranch* for some time ..." Conroe, Texas, is located near the site of the Texas state prison system at Huntsville, Texas. It is possible that the Williams ranch referred to in this account is owned by the same U.S. Marshal Williams identified in the "McKnight's Airship" account. The Marshal Williams identified in that account also owned a ranch near Paris, Texas. Marshal Williams was U.S Marshal for the Eastern District of Texas. The eastern district encompassed Houston and points further west and north, including Conroe and Huntsville. The eastern district extended north to the Red River, east to the Arkansas and Louisiana borders, and west to Paris, Texas. In 1897 there was no federal prison system. There was one federal prison used almost exclusively for military offenders at Fort Leavenworth, Kansas. Most federal prisoners were held in state penitentiaries. As Huntsville was the site of the state prison system, and Houston was the site of the largest city in his district, it is likely that U.S. Marshal Williams spent a considerable amount of time in the Huntsville-Houston area. It is reasonable to think Williams owned property near his primary place of employment. We will investigate this U.S. Marshal Williams and his connection to airships in chapter 20.

In previous accounts Iowa was identified as the location where five airships were built and Goshen, New York, was identified as the origin of a fellow named Wilson who was crewing an airship. Now, California is identified in this account as the origin of the three-member crew and, by implication, the origin of the airship. To a casual reader, such seemingly differing accounts smack of a hoax. However, we are not casual readers but are attempting at a penetrating analysis of the totality of the stories. The apparent discrepancies in the origins of the airships are explained in the final chapters.

THE AERIAL VISITOR AT FLATONIA

Flatonia, Fayette Co., Tex., April 23.- The airship has been seen in this vicinity. Albert Mach, a reputable Bohemian farmer living about three miles south of Flatonia, saw it last night *[April 22]* about 10 o'clock. Mach had never heard or read of airships , therefore his statement may be considered reliable. He says the ship passed almost directly over him and was about 100 feet above the earth. It was going in a southeasterly direction and he could plainly distinguish a sound like the *rapid whirring of wings. [Rather than wings, this could have been the sound of fan blades spinning around]* He saw *different colored lights flashingfrom the machine (the red and green signaling lights and perhaps the white sparks from the electrical motors]* and as it passed from view it cast a bright striate of light from the bow of the ship in a slanting direction toward the town.

Mach was very frightened and ran in the house to call his wife but before she reached him the ship had disappeared from view.

The airship has been looked upon as a hoax here by nearly everybody but renewed interest has been awakened by its appearance in this locality ("The Airship in West Texas," *Galveston Daily News*, April 24,1897, p. 3).

SEEN AT HUNTSVILLE

Huntsville, Walker Co.,Tex April 23.- Last night *[April22]* about 11 o'clock, while Mr. Isacc N. Adickee, one of the most prominent social figures of this city, was returning home from a call on his best girl, he had a glimpse of the much talked of airship. He says it came from a northwesterly direction and moved at a very rapid rate and passed over the outskirts of Huntsville, ascending as it neared the hills. It was not in sight over *ten minutes* from the time he first saw it. Its appearance tallied very much with former descriptions appearing in the News, being *cigar -shaped* and having *wings,* and also throwing out the usual *bright light.* No one here doubts that Mr. Adickee has really seen the airship and especially the young ladies, as they certainly have the utmost confidence in his veracity ("The Airship in West Texas," *Galveston Daily News,* April 24,1897, p. 3).

SUPPLIES FOR AIRSHIP

A Rockland Man Helped the Aerial Navigators Purchased Chisel and Lubricating Oil for " ," the Man with the Mysterious Machine

Rockland, Texas, April 23.—Mr. John Smith, living near this place, reports that last night *[April 22]* about 11:00 o'clock, after having retired, he heard his dogs barking furiously together with a *whirring noise.* He went to the dogs to ascertain the trouble and saw something, he says, that made his eyes bulge out, and but for the fact that he had been reading of an airship that was supposed to have been in or over Texas, he would have taken to the woods. It was *a peculiar shaped body,* with an *oblong shape, with wings and side attachments* of various sizes and shapes. There were *brilliant lights,* which appeared much brighter than electric lights. When he first saw it, it seemed perfectly stationary about fifty yards from the ground. It circled a few times and gradually descended to the ground in a pasture adjacent to his house. He took his Winchester and went to investigate. As soon as the ship, or whatever it might be, alighted, the lights went out. The night was bright enough for a man to be distinguished several yards, and when within about thirty yards of the ship he was met by an ordinary mortal, who requested him to lay his gun aside, as no harm was intended. Whereupon the following conversation ensued:

Mr. Smith inquired: "Who are you and what do you want?"

"Never mind about my name; *call it Smith.* I want some lubricating oil and a couple of cold chisels if you can get them, and some bluestone. I suppose the sawmill hard by has the two former articles and the telegraph operator the bluestone. Here is a tendollar bill, take it and get up these articles and keep the change for your trouble."

Mr. Smith said: "What have you got down there? Let me go and see it."

He who wanted to be called Smith said: "No, we can not permit you to approach any nearer, but do as we request you and your kindness will be appreciated, and we will call on you some future day and reciprocate your kindness by taking you on a trip."

Mr. Smith went and procured the oil and cold chisels, but could not get the bluestone. They had no change and Mr. Smith tendered them the ten-dollar bill, but was refused.

The man shook hands with him and thanked him cordially and asked that he not follow him to the vessel. As he left Mr. Smith called to him and asked him where he was from and where he was going. He replied "from anywhere, but we will be in Greece day after tomorrow."

> He got on board, then there was again the *whirling noise,* and the thing was gone, as Mr. Smith expressed it, like a shot out of a gun. Mr. Smith is perfectly reliable *(Houston Post,* April 25,1897, p. 13).

"Never mind about my name; call it Smith" is electrifying. (Read the *San Francisco Call* [p. 1, November 25,1896] interview with a California inventor named Smith in chapter 19.) Dr. C. A. Smith of San Francisco said he would fly around the continent in the spring of 1897 in a machine fitting this exact description. (See Smith's patent application for an airship, also fitting the description of the airship seen at Rockland, in appendix A.)

I think the statement that the airship would be in Greece "day after tomorrow" was a flippant retort. In all encounters with airship crew members, they typically attempted to keep private personal information about themselves and technical secrets about their airships. However, keeping in mind Dr. C. A. Smith's claim as detailed in the San Francisco Call account, perhaps, he really intended to traverse the Atlantic and visit the Mediterranean region. Someone in Greece may investigate local newspaper reports and determine if any airships were reportedly seen around Greece on or about April 24,1897.

THAT AIRSHIP

Farmer Near Josserand Conversed With the Crew

Josserand, Texas, April 24.—Considerable excitement prevails at this writing in the usually quiet village of Josserand, caused by a visit of the noted airship, which has been seen at so many different points of late.

Mr. Frank Nichols, a prominent farmer living about two miles east of here, and a man of unquestioned veracity, was awakened night before last *[April 22]* near the hour of 12 by a *whirring noise,* similar to that made by machinery. Upon looking out he was startled upon beholding *brilliant lights* streaming from a *ponderous vessel of strange proportions,* which rested upon the ground in his corn field.

Having read the dispatches published in The Post of the noted aerial navigators, the truth at once flashed over him that he was one of the fortunate ones and with all the bravery of Priam at the siege of Troy Mr. Nichols started out to investigate.

> Before reaching the strange midnight visitor he was accosted by *two men with buckets,* who asked permission to draw water from his well. Thinking he might be entertaining heavenly visitants instead of earthly mortals permission was readily granted.
>
> Mr. Nichols was kindly invited to accompany them to the ship. He conversed freely with the crew, composed of *six or eight individuals* about the ship. The machinery was so complicated that in his short interview he could gain no knowledge of its workings. However, one of the crew told him the problem of aerial navigation had been solved. The ship or car is built from a *newly discovered material that has the property of self sustenance in the air (other than some type of gas, there is no physical property that admits of "self sustenance in the air")* and the motive power is highly condensed electricity. *["Highly condensed" electricity can only mean batteries.]*
>
> He was informed *t\\2Xfive of these ships were built at a small town in Iowa.* Soon the invention will be given to the public. An immense stock company is now being formed and within the next year the machine will be in general use.
>
> Mr. Nichols lives at Josserand, Trinity County, Texas, and will convince any credulous one by showing the place where the ship rested *(Houston Post,* April 26, 1897).

Mr. Nichols' description of the airship tallies with previous ones. This is the third account that gives a small town in Iowa as the place of the airships' origination. Was this airship one of five build in a quite Iowa village? The answer, given in the final chapters, will astound you. For now, we must let the story continue to develop.

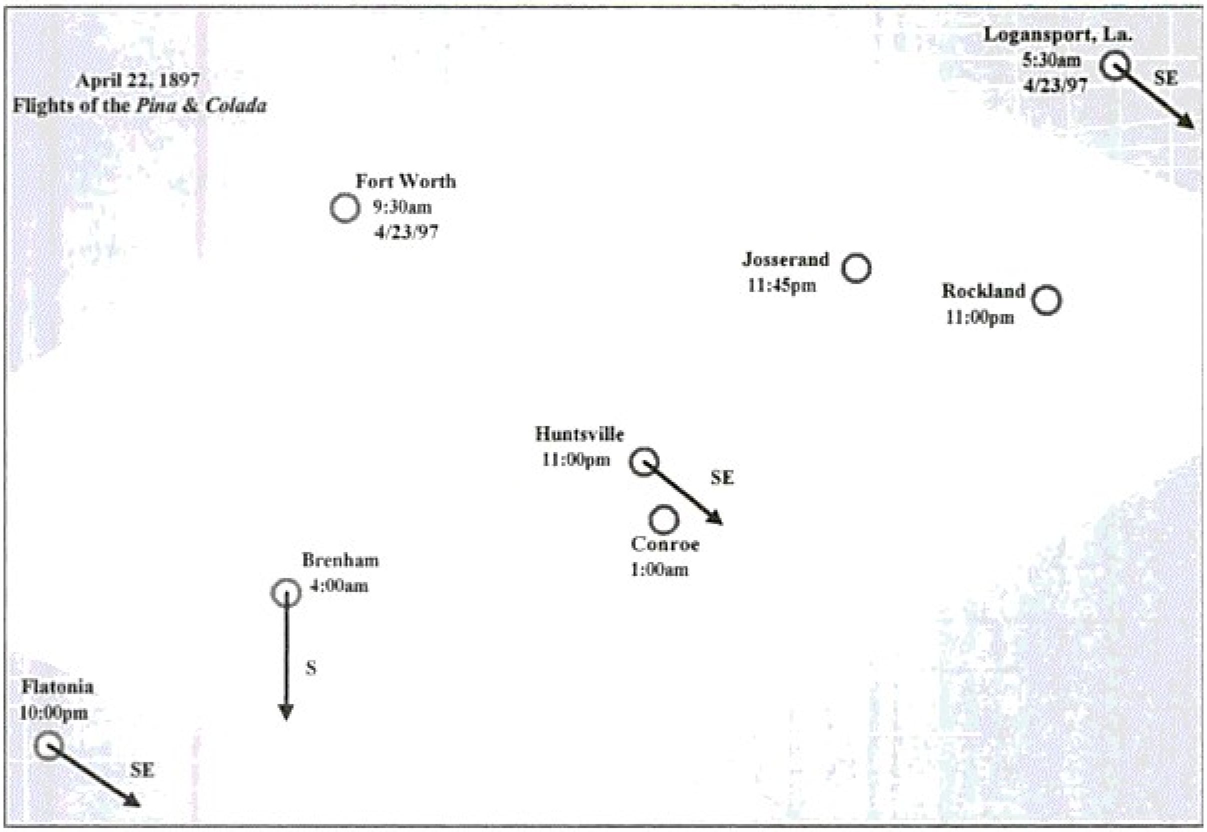
April 22, 1897
Flights of the *Pina & Colada*
Loganspport, La.
5:30am
4/23/97
SE
Fort Worth
9:30am
4/23/97
Josserand
11:45pm
Rockland
11:00pm
Huntsville
11:00pm
SE
Conroe
1:00am
Brenham
4:00am
S
Flatonia
10:00pm
SE

April 22, 1897, sightings

TABLE 17
April 22, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/22/97	Flatonia (Fayette County)	TX	10:00 P.M.	SE		100 ft	*GDN* 4/24/97
4/22/97	Huntsville	TX	11:00 P.M.	SE	Rapid rate		*GDN* 4/24/97
4/22/97	Rockland	TX	11:00 P.M.			On the ground	*HP* 4/25/97
4/22/97	Josserand (Trinity County)	TX	11:45 P.M.			On the ground	*HP* 4/26/97

Note: *GDN* = *Galveston Daily News*
HP = *Houston Post*

TABLE 18
April 23, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/23/97	Conroe	TX	1:00 A.M.				*HP* 4/26/97
4/23/97	Logansport	LA	5:30 A.M.	SE			*GDN* 4/24/97
4/23/97	Fort Worth	TX	9:30 A.M.			On the ground	*FWR* 4/24/97

Note: *FWR* = *Fort Worth Register*

CHAPTER 13

FRIDAY, APRIL 23, 1897

There are six reported sightings for the night of April 23. The two airships are still in close contact with each other, as evidenced by the nearness of the sightings. Also, this is the first night since the crash at Aurora that airships appeared near their daytime base of operations, implying their far-ranging excursions in search for the missing airship is over. Let's continue.

THAT AIRSHIP

Said to Have Broken Down and at Kountze for Repairs

> Kountze, Texas, April 24,—The much talked of airship visited Kountze last night *[April 23]*. It was first seen by Captain H. A. Hooks and A. W. Hodges, who are both responsible men. In descending it *punctured the "air department"* and will have to stay over several days for repairs.
>
> Any one wishing to see it may do so by coming to Kountze any time before Monday night, as it will take until then to get it in flying order.
>
> The ship is fifty feet in length and about twenty feet wide; shaped somewhat like a cigar. There are two men on board her. *They gave their name as Wilson and Jackson. They will move north after Monday (Houston Post,* April 25, 1897; *Terrell Times-Star,* April 30,1897).

This is the second account we have encountered so far that gives a length of 50 feet. Was the airship 50, 75, or 150 feet long? Could this estimate be off by some 25 feet? It is hard to argue the estimate is off by 25 feet, as the witness saw the airship on the ground and apparently had ample opportunity to gauge the length. So, in keeping with the threeairship (flying-around-Texas) hypothesis, was each airship a different length? We will investigate this issue in the latter chapters.

SEEN AT LOGANSPORT

Logansport, La., April 23.—The much talked of airship passed over Logansport this morning *[April 23]* at 5:30 o'clock. W. F. Miller, W. H. Graham and J. C. Morse were up early doing some menial work for Chicago Lumber and Coal Company when they saw a large airship coming from the southwest and pass at the rate of 100 miles an hour. It must have been 1,000 feet high. The three men are all reliable men. They are true believers in the airship, now. J.W. Norman ("The Airship in West Texas," *Galveston Daily News,* April 24,1897, p. 3).

THAT AIRSHIP.

Seen At Logansport

Logansport, La., April 23.- The airship which has been soaring around the country for some time passed over Logansport this morning *[April 23]* at 5:30 o'clock. W. H. Miller, W.C. Graham and J. C. Morse were up early doing some special work for the Chicago Lumber Company when they saw a large object approaching from the south at a rapid rate. It was at a height of about 1500 feet and was moving at a very fast rate. The above men are the foreman and two workers for the Chicago Lumber Company and are reliable men *(Houston Post,* April 24,1897, p. 4).

THE AIRSHIP

Mr. Woodford Brooks Declares He Saw It—His Account of It.

Mr. Woodford Brooks, secretary and treasurer of the Polytechnic Street Railway, is the latest Fort Worth man to report having seen the famous airship, and he relates the circumstances with such seriousness and accuracy as to leave no doubt in the listener's mind that he tells facts.

> Yesterday morning *[April 23]* about 9:30 o'clock, while riding on a street car past the city park, Mr. Brooks saw the strange aerial visitor *resting on the ground* out in the *park near the river.* Accompanied by the motorman, Mr. Edwards, Mr. Brooks went into the park for a closer inspection of the ship, but was met some distance from the vessel by the captain who *gave his name as Randall.* Mr. Brooks had a short interview with the captain, who said that the destination of himself and crew, which was *composed of twelve men,* was the city of Mexico. Mr. Brooks inquired of the captain if he did not think thirteen an unlucky number to make the trip, when that gentleman laughingly replied that they were all protected by wearing Mexican opals.

> Mr. Brooks declared that the ship is a splendidly equipped machine propelled by *electricity,* which is supplied by a *large storage battery.* It appears that the captain and crew mistook the water works plant near the park for an electrical plant, and had descended from their great distance above the earth for the purpose of *procuring a supply of electricity for their ship.* Upon learning their mistake they decided to utilize what they had left in making the trip to San Antonio, and soon sailed away.

> Mr. Brooks telephoned The Register office last night *(April 23]* that he had just received a telegram from Captain Randall, who stated that the ship and crew had arrived in San Antonio safely and would leave at once for the city of Mexico, where they expected to arrive in two days at least. They expect to return by the way of Fort Worth in about a week *(Fort Worth Register,* April 24, 1897, p. 5).

If the motive power was storage batteries for at least one of the airships, as claimed in this and many other reports, then some means of renewing the battery charge had to be procured. This account has a great ring of truth to it as it explains how an airship crew could easily renew the battery charge while traversing the countryside.

Although Mr. Brooks claimed Captain Randall telegraphed his arrival in San Antonio, there is no known sighting in or around San Antonio for the night of April 23 or the early morning of the twentyfourth. Either the airship was not seen in transit between Fort Worth and San Antonio, newspapers did not consider any in-transit sightings significant enough to print, or Mr. Brooks was lying about the airship's destination and about the receipt of a telegram.

Mr. Brooks stated he saw the airship at 9:30 A.M. It took off for San Antonio shortly after Mr. Brooks came upon it. Since the airship was traversing the countryside in the daylight hours, it seems reasonable to assume someone along the flight path would have noticed it. I am concerned about the truthfulness of this account, as the airship pilots have firmly established a consistent habit of avoiding daytime flying. Yet, for Mr. Brooks to receive a telegram from Captain Randall "last night," the captain had to fly to San Antonio in the daylight.

Captain Randall and his relationship to the other airship members is of interest to us. We will see if we can connect him to any of the other airship characters in chapter 20.

THE AIRSHIP

> Several parties in the city declare they saw the famous *cigar shaped airship* pass over Gainesville last Friday night *[April 23]* about 11:30 o'clock. The noise made by its approach resembled the *rush of wind which precedes a storm.* The ship hovered above the city looking like a huge monster roaring through the air. It sailed in a circle and finally dropped alongside of S. Zacharias' big dry goods store where it remained about forty minutes, when it rose gracefully into the night and sailed due north. It is surmised the goods Mr. Zacharias is offering so wonderfully cheap at his special sale this week were freighted through New York by the airship *{Gainesville Daily Heaperian,* April 25,1897, p. 2).

The tone of this account smacks of heresy. In no other account does any airship alight near a store for the avowed purpose of unloading freighted goods. S. Zacharias is trying to get some free publicity for his store.

THE AIRSHIP

Seen by a Thoroughly Reliable and Well Known Citizen (To the Times.)

Deadwood, Tex., April 24,1897.—Seeing so much here of late in reference to the airship has put me on the look out for several days and nights , and my vigilance, much to my surprise, was rewarded on Friday night last, *April 23.* I was out about 8 o'clock in my Bermuda and clover pasture about 200 yards from my house, looking after some of my fine stock that seemed to be very much alarmed at something unusual, they running and snorting like regular broncos. On arrival in the neighborhood of where my stock were, I saw a very bright and varied light some 300 feet from the earth, coming from SW and headed NE. On its near approach to my surprise a *vast search light,* turning night into day, was cast down upon the immediate locality where I was standing. I recognized the airship as has been usually described so often, and began saluting the aerial travelers at the top of my voice. Much to my surprise, I received in reply a message dropped near me in a beer bottle bearing the trade mark of Anhuser Busch, put up at St. Louis. Enclosed in the bottle was the message stating that this was the ship recently landed near Beaumont ,Tex., and was *one of five having covered nearly the whole of the northwest, and was now bound for St. Louis.*

It was seen by a number of my neighbors, who will testify to the same, and as to my veracity in this neighborhood, where I have lived for the last forty years. Some very amusing scenes took place on sight of the ship. Many took it to be the coming judgment day. Within the past twelve months there have been many converts to the holiness faith in this community, and some of them claim that this is but a forerunner of nightly evidence that will soon come to the doubting Christians who still linger in benighted darkness of the old-time teachings of

Christianity. Let us hear from the next. Very respectfully, H. L. Lagrome, Deadwood, Panola County Tex *(Shreveport Times,* April 29, 1897, p. 6).

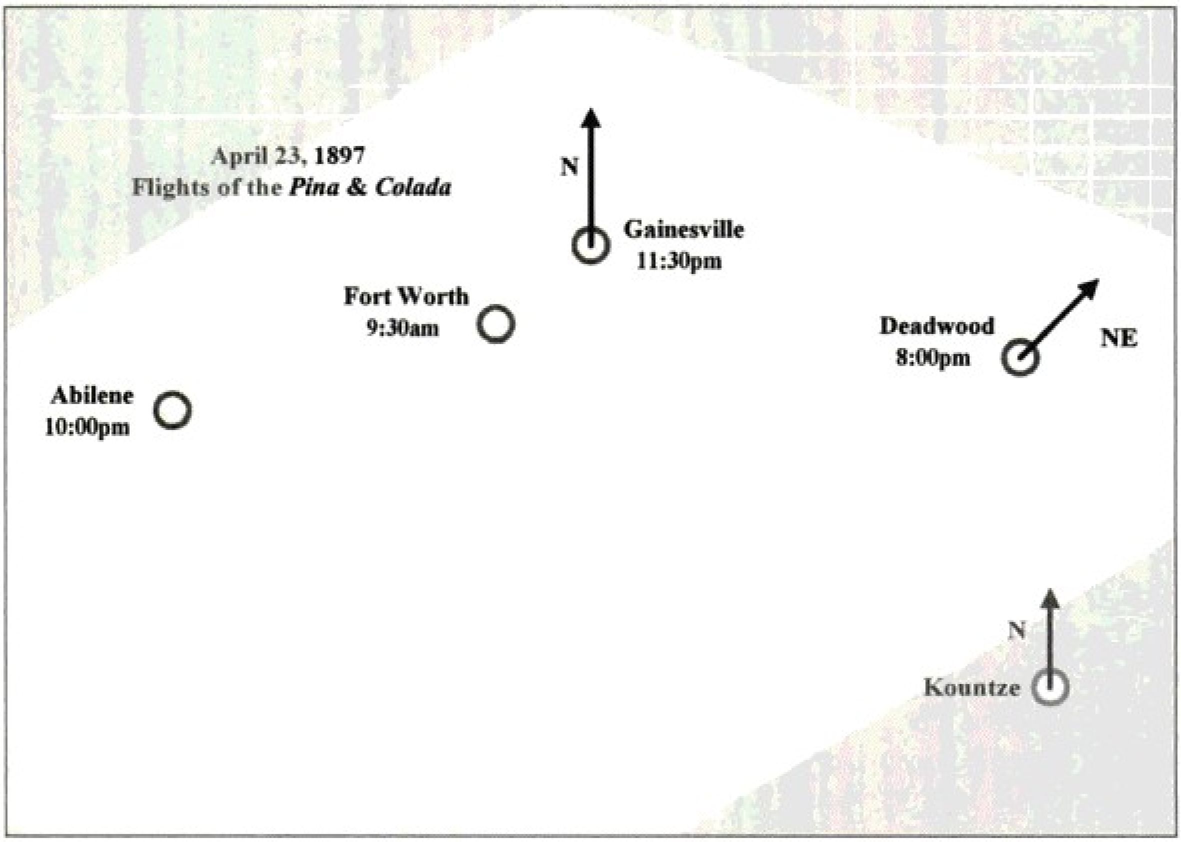
April 23, 1897
Flights of the *Pina & Colada*
N
Gainesville
11:30pm
Fort Worth
9:30am
Deadwood
8:00pm
NE
Abilene
10:00pm
N
Kountze

April 23, 1897, sightings

TABLE 19
April 23, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/23/97	Logansport	LA	5:30 A.M.	SE			*GDN* 4/24/97
4/23/97	Fort Worth	TX	9:30 A.M.			On the ground	*FWR* 4/24/97
4/23/97	Deadwood (Panola County)	TX	8:00 P.M.	SW-NE		300 ft	*ST*
4/23/97	Gainesville	TX	11:30 P.M.	N			*GDH* 4/25/97
4/23/97	Kountze	TX	Night	N		On the ground	*HP* 4/25/97
4/23/97	Merkel	TX	10:00 P.M.				*HP* 4/28/97

Note: *GDN* = *Galveston Daily News*
FWR = *Fort Worth Register*
ST = *Shreveport Times*
GDH = *Gainesville Daily Heaperian*
HP = *Houston Post*

CHAPTER 14

SATURDAY, APRIL 24, 1897

There are five reported airship sightings for the night of April 24. All but one of the airship sightings are on the far-southern side of the state. One sighting is in the far-eastern part of Texas. It appears the two airships have separated and are combing new territory. Included in this chapter is Sheriff Akers' response to the chapter 10 newspaper article ("The Airship in West Texas Landed in the Town of Uvalde, Sheriff Baylor Interviewed the Men") about his acquaintance with one of the airships' inventors, a Mr. Wilson of Goshen, New York. Let us continue.

> Editorial comment: For sale, 500 columns of unused airship manuscripts; will make splendid fuel ; apply at this office *(Dallas Morning News,* April 24, 1897; *Galveston News).*

THE AIRSHIP AT EAGLE PASS

Sheriff Dowe Interviews Its passengers Mexicans Much Wrought Up by the Alighting of the ship on the Banks of the Rio Grande.

A Description

Eagle Pass,Tex., April 25.—Eagle Pass, though away out on the Mexican border, and a little slow on up-to-date civilization cannot be out done when it comes to real sound knowledge and alert county officials. The learned folks of the border have been watching with interest the various accounts of the airship seen at so many different places simultaneously and the various descriptions of it, and had come to the conclusion that there was a *whole fleet of airships,* else the whole thing was a huge joke perpetuated upon a defenseless public by the heartless newspaper fraternity.

To-day, however, all is changed. The whole border is in a state of excitement. The Mexican element is in a frenzy. Crowds of Aztec descendants are gathered on different corners discussing a strange occurrence of last night *[April 24]*. While the majority spend the hours on their knees begging to be saved, others expostulate and interpret the "vision" as an evil omen or a "good spirit" according to their own superior knowledge.

The Express reporters attention was attracted and he immediately went in quest ofSheriffR. W. Dowe, whom he found in a great state of excitement, relating his experiences to a group of substantial citizens. The reporter waited till the sheriff gained his equilibrium and got the following account of the cause of the commotion.

"Last night about 12 o'clock some Mexicans came running to my house and told me that a very strange thing of some kind had come down from above and stopped on the bank of the Rio Grande just below Fort Duncan. I went at once to the place and found an airship and *three men on board.* They were *just from Uvalde* and claimed that they have solved the problem of traveling by air. They are going from here to the Devil's River country to locate a herd of buffalo that was seen over there some time ago by Mr. Duval West and some hunters from Galveston. The men are all well known in West Texas, but do not care to have their identity known to the public just yet. *One of the men inquired for Capt. C. C.Akers of this place,* but was told Mr. Akers was over the river counting some sheep that Mr. Schrimpff is getting ready to ship to market. They filled their canteens with water from the Rio Grande and flew off. They invited me to accompany them, but district court being in session I could not accept.

Mr. Dowe says it was so dark he could not see the vessel so as to describe it, but he saw the men board it and fly away *(San Antonio*

Express, April 27,1897).

The crew member's statement that they were just from Uvalde is very exciting, for, in fact, there is a report in chapter 10 from Uvalde (entitled "The Airship in West Texas") that states the airship landed and inquired after Captain Akers there. In that account the county sheriff advised the crew member that Captain Akers was in Eagle Pass, employed in the customs service. Seems like our crew member, perhaps the pilot and or inventor himself, decided to travel to Eagle Pass and search out the good captain.

The following article is included in this chapter because it is Sheriff Akers' (also known as Captain Akers) response to the newspapers concerning his knowledge of the alleged inventor, Mr. Wilson.

AIRSHIP INVENTOR WILSON WAS OF A MECHANICAL TURN OF MIND AND FORMALLY LIVED IN FORT WORTH REMEMBERED BY HIS FRIEND

Who says he promised to startle the world with his aerial invention

Eagle Pass, Tex. April 27. *Noting that on the airship said to have been seen by Sheriff Baylor in Uvalde, was a man who gave his name as Wilson, I can say that while living in Fort Worth in '76 and '77I was well acquainted with a man by the name of Wilson from New York state and was on very friendly terms with him.* He was of a mechanical turn of mind and was working on aerial navigation and something that would astonish the world. He was a finely educated man, then about 24 years of age, and seemed to have money with which to prosecute his investigations, devoting his whole time to them. From conversations we had while in Fort Worth, I think that *Mr. Wilson,* having succeeded in constructing a practical airship, would probably hunt me up to show me that he was not so wild in his claims as I then supposed.

I will say further that I have known Sheriff Dowe many years and know that any statement he may make can be relied on as correct. C. C. Akers

During a month past the daily papers all over the country have printed columns in reference to the airship and the supposed solution of the aerial navigation problem. News correspondents in different portions of Texas have contributed their quote to this class of interesting reading, much of it unquestionably pure fiction, and numerous accounts showing no trace of [?] between the lines. It is needless to say that a great deal of the airship matter offered The News was not published.

> Last Friday The News published an airship story from its correspondent in Uvalde in which it was stated that one of the crew of the ship gave his name as Wilson and inquired after a former acquaintance, captain C. C. Akers, former sheriff of Zavalla County, now connected with the customs service in Eagle Pass. The News immediately addressed Captain Akers enclosing the Uvalde account of the airship and requested him to let the public know through The News what he knew about Mr. Wilson. The above dispatch is his answer. The Uvalde item which called it out is as follows: (See the Galveston News, April 24) *(Galveston Daily News,* April 28, 1897).

The Uvalde and Eagle Pass accounts and Captain Akers' letter to the paper are three incredible pieces of the airship puzzle. Mr. Wilson's former acquaintance states in his letter his belief that Mr. Wilson, whom he knew twenty-one years ago to be working on an airship, has succeeded in perfecting a practical airship. Captain Akers also confirms the home of Mr. Wilson as New York state. Was there a New York-Texas, Wilson-Akers connection? The answer may "rock your airship," but other information must be developed before the answer is forthcoming.

THE AIRSHIP IN SAN ANTONIO PASSED OVER THE CITY EARLY YESTERDAY MORNING

Its Brilliant Lights Were Seen By Scores of People History and Voyage of This Aerial Mystery

> The airship that has been seen in Texas for the past several days has reached San Antonio, or rather passed over San Antonio between 12 and 1 o'clock yesterday morning *[April 25]*.

The first impression that this monster mystery of the skies made on those who saw it was that it was some new comet moving slowly and close to the earth in the northwestern horizon. The course that the bright object took was from northwest almost due east, and then south, passing over the city apparently about two miles east of city hall.

The sky was heavily clouded and not a star visible. This brought out all the stronger the keen white light of the airship headlight, together with the shimmer that the strong illumination cast about it. It prevented, however, anything like a view of the structure itself, but as the strange object wheeled about and came nearer a dozen or more dim lights, among them a *cluster of green lights on the side* of the ship toward the city, and another *immense cluster of red lights at the stern,* plainly indicated its artificial nature ("The Airship In San Antonio," *San Antonio Express,* April 26, 1897).

This story appears in this chapter because the sighting is just after midnight on April 25.

"Red lights at the stern" indicates that the red lights were physically mounted on the rear of the ship. The observer's placement of the red lights matches other descriptions, as does the observation placing of the green lights on the side of the airship.

THOUGHT IT WAS A COMET

Shortly after midnight a telephone message was received from the International 8c Great Northern depot, calling attention to a large star or comet that could be plainly seen from this point, far in the northwest. Some ten or fifteen minutes previous to that, however, the motorman on the last car out to Laurel Heights had observed the strange solitary light.

The news of the appearance of what was supposed to be a comet spread rapidly over the city and soon a crowd of men gathered at the comer of Soledad and Houston streets to await the appearance of the body. In order to get a better view a number of the watchers went to city hall, where access to one of the upper galleries was gained, and a good view of the approaching light was had. The prevalent opinion was that the object was a small sized comet of unusually close proximity to the earth, but all doubts of the real nature of the phenomenon were soon set to rest.

As the object drew nearer and nearer, slowly to the watchers, but in reality at a marvelous speed, it *suddenly swung around to the right*, displaying, as it made its graceful curve, *a number of lights that scintillated like a cluster of green stars.* In addition to this numerous dim white and cream flickering lights reached from the headlights to the stern, which, it soon developed, was adorned with a *cluster of brilliant little red sparks of light. (The little red sparks were emitted from the commutator brushes of the electrical motors that powered the propellers.]*

> The maneuvering of the object in lowering and rising, as well as the arrangement and color of the lights *left no doubt but that the object was the airship* which has been hovering over the central portion of Texas for the past several days.

> No stop was made, but an almost southeasterly course was pursued by the ship. The aerial visitor passed out of sight by degrees, the *red stern lights* growing dimmer and dimmer until they seemed to gradually dissolve into the blackness of the night ("The Airship In San Antonio," *San Antonio Express,* April 26, 1897).

There are now a sufficient number of corroborating accounts to safely say the red stern lights designated the backside or rear of the airship. But why did the airship need to identify its backside if the skies over America were not occupied with other airships? Only an inventor concerned with the prospect of inadvertently colliding with another airship in the darkness of night would even think to place signal lights on the rear and sides of an airship. The placement of signal lights is persuasive evidence of additional ships going about the spring nights of 1897.

MADE ITS ESCAPE

Airship Fled When it Discovered it Was Observed at Lacoste

Lacoste, Tex., April 24—To the Express. I thought it would be interesting to you to give a description of a most curious object visible to the entire inhabitants of Lacoste, Tex., upon the night of the 24th inst *[April 24]*.

What I suppose to be an airship appeared about 8:50 p.m. making a circuit in the heavens above Lacoste station, then gradually ascended and rushing off at a marvelous speed in a northern direction about 60 miles an hour.

The airship appeared to be about 40 feet long shaped like an acute angle and equipped with what appeared to be canvas, but from the distance, which was about half a mile, I cannot describe it exactly. By the aid of a telescope *two men were plainly seen* and the light which flashed could be seen at a great distance. When first seen the airship appeared to be alighting, as it circled the town for about ten minutes, but we were sadly disappointed when the object disappeared from our vision. Yours truly, James J. Jones *(San Antonio Express,* April 27, 1897).

The two men seen on this airship may or may not have been S. E. Tillman and A. E. Dolbear, mentioned in a previous account describing two men aboard an airship.

> Bay City, Texas, April 28.—The airship passed over Matagorda at 12:00 o'clock midnight, Sunday 25th instant. A little boy saw it, ran in the house and told his parents to come and see the big bird flying, they stepped out of the house and saw it: 'twas going in a westerly direction. Several other reliable persons saw the ship *(Houston Post,* April 30,1897, p. 7).

AIRSHIP AGAIN

The airship made its appearance again early yesterday morning *[April 25].* At least three young men who were camping up on Bull Creek, at Huddle's point, say they saw it. Messrs. Geo Proctor, Ted Tobin and Jno Caldwell went up the lake Saturday afternoon for a couple of days' camp and pitched their tents at Huddle's Point. About 3 o'clock yesterday morning it began to rain, and the young men were compelled to get up and fasten their tent. It was at this time they saw the mysterious aircraft. They claim it was in sight fully fifteen minutes and are positive they could not have been mistaken. At intervals of every few seconds it would *throw its searchlights,* and the boys say the light looked *as big as four ordinary arc lights.* It made its appearance from behind Mount Bounell and traveled north. The boys broke camp last afternoon they say because it was raining so hard, but that mysterious light probably made the rain seen wetter than usual *(Austin American Statesman,* April 26, 1897, p. 3).

AIRSHIP LOCATED

> It is enroute to Cuba to Scatter Dynamite Among Weyler's Forces.
>
> Philadelphia. April 26.—A carefully planned expedition left for Cuba last night *[April 25]* from near Sea Isle, N.J. The supply of arms and ammunitions left New York Saturday on lighters and was placed on a tug between Barengal and Long Branch. The tug came steadily down the coast and was soon joined by another boat. In the way of munitions, the expedition took along a Hotchkiss gun, 1,000 rifles, 13,000 rounds of ammunition, 2,000 machetes, a lot of medicine and *what is known as an experimental flying machine adopted to the use of dynamite (Austin Daily Statesman*, April 27, 1897, p. 1).

The U.S. Army maintained an experimental airship program at an army balloon post outside Denver, Colorado. The reference to an "experimental flying machine adopted to the use of dynamite" is intriguing. This "carefully planned" expedition was probably a military expedition financed and sponsored by the Cuban rebels' political party, the Cuban Revolutionary Party, based in New York City. The use of airships for dynamiting cities seems to be a theme running through several airship accounts. Was the government involved in a secret project to bomb Havana? We cannot say with any degree of certainty at this point. However, Professor (and Captain) Tillman, crew member of an airship mentioned in chapter 7, held the occupation of instructor of chemistry at West Point U.S. Military Academy. Tillman later became superintendent of the U.S. Military Academy. Was Tillman's connection to the airship crowd a coincidence or part of a covert plan?

According to the U.S. Military Academy archivist, as quoted by Daniel Cohen, Tillman applied for and received a leave of absence from the academy from April 24 to an unknown date. In consulting with the academy historian, I have found through my research that he had no such leave in April. The only papers the current Academy historian found concerning a leave for Tillman were dated for a leave in September. Yet, Tillman was positively identified as one of the two individuals present at Stephenville on April 17 and he was seen checking into a hotel in New Orleans a few days later. Was Tillman on some type of detached orders, flying around the Texas countryside with the full knowledge and consent of his superiors? The latter explanation is the only one that makes sense unless we believe there are leave papers for Tillman with an earlier date and the archivist just could not locate them. Perhaps, there was a hidden (army) agenda. Or, maybe Tillman did not need leave orders, as it was the week of Easter, a holiday at the U.S. Military Academy.

ANCHOR OF THE AIRSHIP

> Merkel, Texas, April 26.—Some parties returning from church last night *[April 25]* noticed a *heavy object dragging along with a large rope attached.* They followed it until in crossing the railroad it caught on a rail. On looking up they saw what they supposed was the airship. It was not near enough to get an idea of the dimensions. A light could be seen protruding from several windows; one bright light in front like a headlight of a locomotive. After some ten minutes a man was seen descending the rope, he came near enough to be plainly seen. He wore a blue sailor suit, was small in size. He stopped when he discovered parties at the anchor and cut the rope below him and sailed off in a northeast direction.

> The *anchor is now on exhibition* at the blacksmith shop of Elliot & Miller and is attracting the attention of hundreds of people *(Houston Post,* April 28, 1897; *Terrell Times-Star,* May 7, 1897).

A California inventor by the name of Dr. C. A. Smith, when interviewed by a *San Francisco Call* reporter in November 1896, stated that his airship would possess just such an anchor and that he was planning a trip across the continent in April 1897.

Dr. Smith's presence in Texas in April 1897, associated with an airship similar in design to the one he patented in 1896 (see appendix A) and matching his description of the airship identified in the *San Francisco Call* interview, is proof beyond any reasonable doubt that these airships were not figments of people's mind, manifestations of mass hysteria, or the ghosts of railroad or newspaper hoaxes; but they and the men who flew them were real. (See chapter 19 for full *Call* interview with Dr. Smith.)

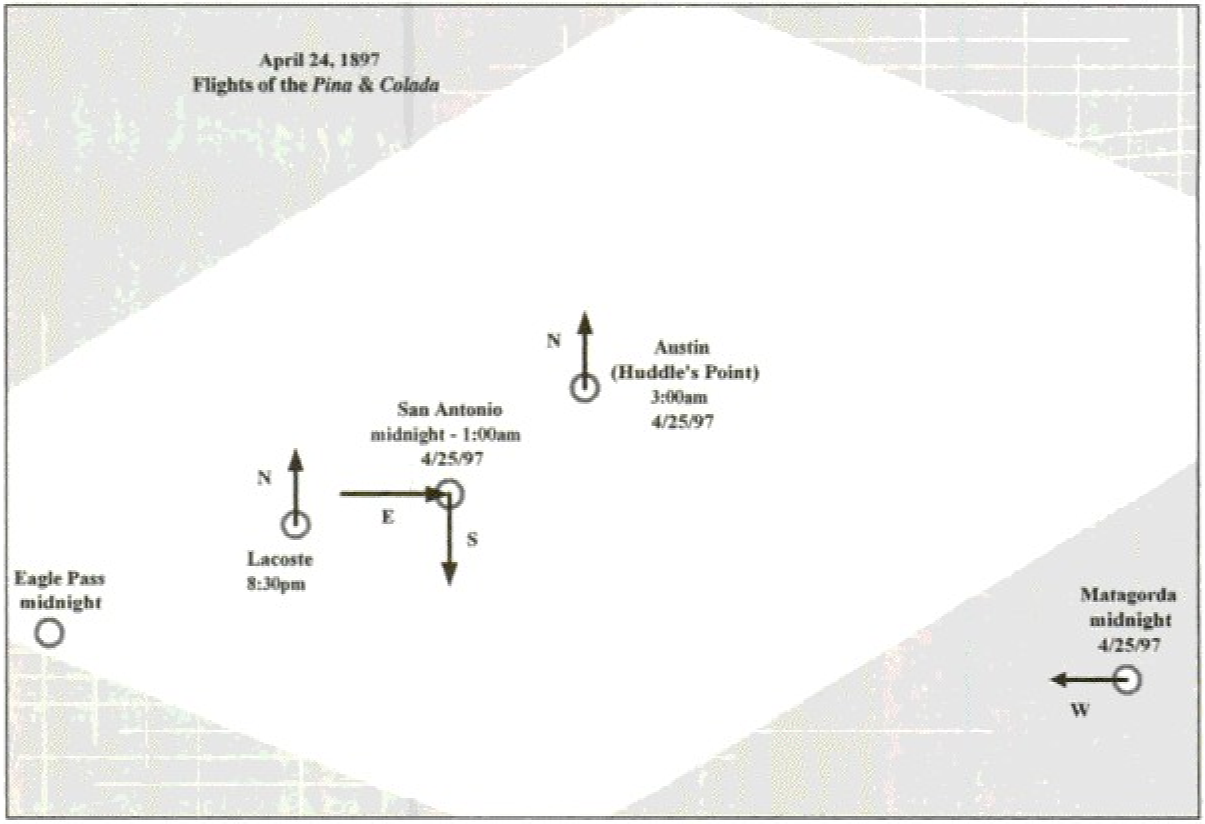
April 24, 1897
Flights of the *Pina & Colada*
N
Austin
(Huddle's Point)
3:00am
4/25/97
San Antonio
midnight - 1:00am
4/25/97
N
E
S
Lacoste
8:30pm
Eagle Pass
midnight
Matagorda
midnight
4/25/97
W

April 24, 1897, sightings

We can clearly see two areas of airship operations on the night of April 24. The distance from Matagorda to San Antonio is 203 miles. Airships were seen in both cities almost simultaneously. Obviously, one airship cannot be in two places separated by such distance at the same time. To account for the sightings, we conclude there must be two airships about on the night of April 24. One airship is ranging the east coast of Texas (Matagorda) while the other is exploring the southern portion of the state.

TABLE 20
April 24, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/24/97	Lacoste	TX	8:50 P.M.	N	60 mph	½ mile	*SAE* 4/27/97
4/24/97	Eagle Pass	TX	Midnight				*SAE* 4/27/97

Note: *SAE = San Antonio Express*

TABLE 21
April 25, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/25/97	Matagorda	TX	Midnight	W			*HP* 4/30/97
4/25/97	San Antonio	TX	Midnight - 1:00 A.M.	E then S			*HP* 4/30/97
4/25/97	Huddle's Point	TX	3:00 A.M.	N			*AAS/ADS* 4/26/97

Note: *HP = Houston Post*
AAS = Austin American Statesman
ADS = Austin Daily Statesman

CHAPTER 15

SUNDAY, APRIL 25, 1897

The airships seemed to take the day off, as only one sighting occurs for April 25. And we continue ...

> Rosanky, Texas, April 26.—About 11:20 *[April 25]* last night the airship was seen passing Rosanky, Texas, about two hundred feet in the air. It made a *noise something like a swarm of bees;* the lights were bright; three lights were seen and it looked to be about twenty feet long. It caused quite an excitement and people do not understand the strange visitor *(Houston Post*, April 29,1897, p. 10).

The noise, "something like a swarm of bees," sounds like the humming of fans or propellers and electrical motors.

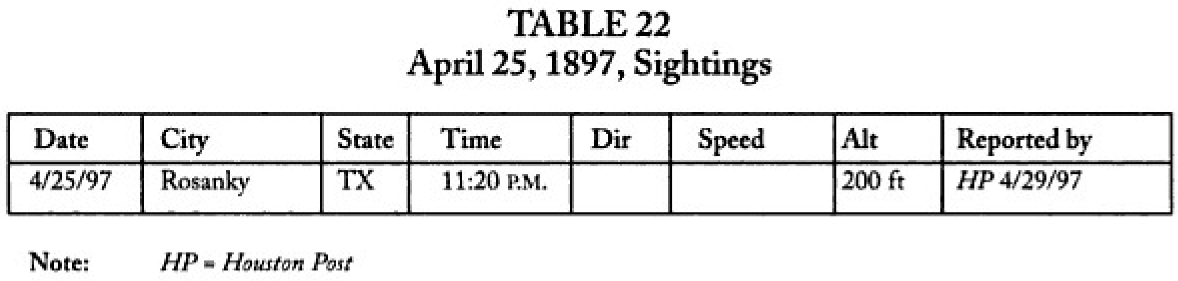

TABLE 22
April 25, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/25/97	Rosanky	TX	11:20 P.M.			200 ft	*HP* 4/29/97

Note: *HP* = *Houston Post*

CHAPTER 16

MONDAY, APRIL 26, 1897

There are two sightings for April 26. The airships are getting scarce. Let's continue.

ANOTHER AIRSHIP STORY

Stockman From Devine Says It Passed Over His Ranch

Mr. W. B. Adams, a prominent ranchman and merchant of Medina County, came to town yesterday and after transacting the business that brought him here, spent the rest of the day in telling about how the airship passed over Medina County.

"The ship flew directly over my ranch near Devine, last Monday *[April 26],"* he said to an intensely excited group in front of the Southern Hotel, "and was plainly seen by myself and several other people on the ranch. It was about forty feet long, about 300 feet high, and in the matter of appearance tallied pretty closely with descriptions given by people in other sections who have seen it. It was going in the direction of Mexico, and making pretty good time. As nearly as could be made out it *contained seven or eight people.* As it passed over, a piece of paper was thrown over, which fluttered down to following in plain legible English: "This is the best part of Texas we have passed over. The climate seems delightful, the air pure and the scenery picturesque. In fact, we are prone to pronounce this the finest country that a flying machine ever flew over. Tell them that you saw us."

Mr. John Herring of San Antonio here interposed to remark that Mr. Adams was never in politics, and that he would back any statement Mr. Adams might make or words to that effect.

"There is great excitement down that way over the appearance of the aerial monster," continued Mr. Adams.

"At first it was believed by many to be of supernatural origin, but when its occupants throw over their opinion of that part of Medina County, we were reassured somewhat, deciding it to contain a part of prospectors who know a good country when they see it" *(San Antonio Express,* April 28,1897, p. 5).

ANOTHER AIRSHIP

Conductor Sam Betters and Brakeman Harry Babcock, of the Southern Pacific, are of the opinion that there is a whole fleet of airships wandering about the skies, or that the one particular airship, which nearly everyone claims to have seen at another place at the same time is a fast traveler. As Messrs. Betters and Babcock were out on their run Monday night *[April 26]*, Babcock was sitting on the brake of a box car, while the train was passing Spofford. The train was speeding along, when something struck Babcock on the shoulder and almost knocked him from his perch. He only heard a humming noise and as he turned to see where the mysterious blow came from he saw the white winged airship making fast time for the west *(San Antonio Light,* April 29, 1897, p. 4).

HISTORY OF THE SHIP

So *many contradictory reports* as to this airship have been published that the public has almost come to believe it a hoax. In many instances particularly bright clusters of stars have been mistaken by feverish imaginations for the ship, and in others romancing space writers have spun fabulous yarns in regard to this mysterious vessel.

Little in reality is known of the exact nature of this airship, except that it is the *product of 'two American inventors.*

The ship was completed probably on Nov. 27 of last year and was seen for the first time on the evening of that day as it rose from one of the numerous rock ridges or islands *off the California coast.* For several days it hovered over San Francisco, creating a profound sensation. The columns of the San Francisco Express were filled with the news of the aerial mystery. The correspondents of the San Francisco journals all over California were instructed to keep watch of the movements of the mystery, in hopes that a man might be on the spot should the navigator make a descent to the earth. The Examiner finally succeeded in ferreting out the island where the ship had been put together, and from whence it had started on its aerial voyage. By degrees a general idea of the structure of the ship was secured.

> The investors were *Hiram Wilson, a native of New York and son of Willard H. Wilson, assistant master mechanic of the New York Central Railroad, and a young electrical engineer, C.J. Walsh of San Francisco.* The men had labored on their project several years, and when their plans were matured they had the parts of the ship constructed to order in different sections of the country, whence they were shipped to the rendezvous at San Francisco and were assembled on the island ("The Airship In San Antonio," *San Antonio Express,* April 26, 1897).

I do not think the Wilsons and Walsh were "investors" in the sense that they invested their money into the airship project. I think "investors" in this account implies that they put their time and sweat into designing and building the airship, that is, they were the inventors.

The fact that there were many contradictory reports would be expected if multiple airships (perhaps each designed somewhat different from the other), with varying lengths and encompassing various numbers of crew members, were flying about every night.

In the final chapters we discuss Hiram Wilson, Willard Wilson, and C.J.Walsh.

ITS VOYAGE TO TEXAS

After some experimental navigation in California *[in November 1896]* an attempt was apparently made to cross the continent and the ship was traced as far East as Utah, after which nothing was heard from it for months. *[Then the airships suddenly appeared over the Midwest in the spring of 1897.]*

The most plausible theory of the sudden disappearance of the ship *[in 1896]* is that some defects were developed and that a rendezvous was made in some out of the way section of the West until changes could be affected. It is believed that the present trip of the machine is for further experimental purposes.

The story of the renewed movements of the airships is well known to the readers of The Express, accounts of its passage over New Mexico and the West having been given from time to time in the press dispatches. *[Accounts from New Mexico papers for the year 1897 would certainly shed additional light on the subject]*.

Since its advent in this state, it has coursed about indiscriminately for several days. In that time it has been seen by hundreds of people and two descents are known to have been made. It was thought that a descent was intended in this vicinity on account of the ship's close proximity to the earth in passing the city, but none was probably made, as the ship was seen some time after midnight *(April 26th?]* by Papio Guerra, an employee on the Yturri ranch, about fourteen miles southeast of the city. The ship at that time was high in the air and rapidly speeding in a southeasterly direction ("The Airship In San Antonio," *San Antonio Express,* April 26, 1897).

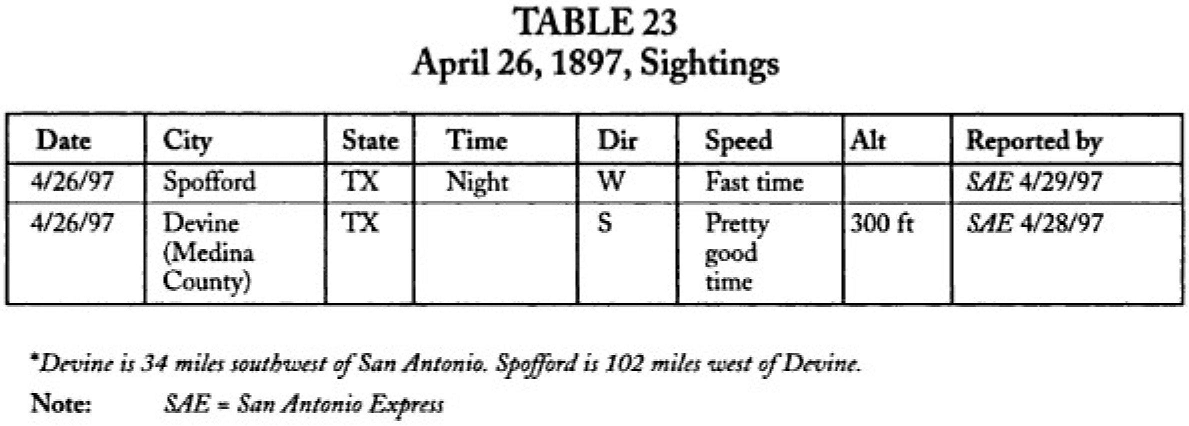

TABLE 23
April 26, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/26/97	Spofford	TX	Night	W	Fast time		*SAE* 4/29/97
4/26/97	Devine (Medina County)	TX		S	Pretty good time	300 ft	*SAE* 4/28/97

**Devine is 34 miles southwest of San Antonio. Spofford is 102 miles west of Devine.*

Note: *SAE* = *San Antonio Express*

CHAPTER 17

APRIL 27-MAY 12, 1897

There are eleven sightings reported for the period April 27 through May 12. I suspect there were many more sightings, but few were reported to the newspapers, and few newspapers printed the reports they received. Why? Because airships were becoming common sights and just were not newsworthy anymore. We finish the tabulation of Texas airship sightings with this chapter. The remaining chapters are devoted to exploring the information we have collected from these reports. To complete this portion of our story, we continue with the reports .. .

TUESDAY, APRIL 27,1897

THOUGHT IT WAS AN AIRSHIP

People at Van Alstyne Mistook a Central Special for the Aerial Tourist.

Denison, Tex. April 28.—The people of Van Alstyne thought they had captured a real airship last night *[April 27]* when the Central special *[a passenger train]* bearing Gen. Hubbard and party passed through there about 9:30 o'clock. They had been reading about the airships touring the country, and the big electric headlight on the engine was something new to them. The train was coming down grade at a rate of speed that would have made even an airship envious. Some one saw the headlight, and as there was no train due at that hour, he at once announced the airship was about to alight at Van Alstyne. The news spread like wildfire, and when the train stopped at the station the platform was thronged with people to see the sight. Superintendent L. A. Daffan, who was in the party, went out and talked to those assembled at the station, and tells the story of how they mistook the train for an airship with a great deal of gusto *(Dallas Morning News,* April 28, 1897).

THE AIRSHIP

MR. McGOLDRICK NOW HAS AN ORDER TO FILL

Is Acquainted With The Navigators But is Oath Bound—They Use Gas And Weights

> Mr. W. H. McGoldrick, superintendent of the gas department of the San Antonio Gas and Electric Company, says of the famous airship which has been so often of late in various parts of Texas that he is well acquainted with the promoters of the same and has been in constant communication with them, *up to the last four days ago.* He is under oath, however, not to divulge their names or the plan upon which their airship is constructed, but he is free to say that the ship is *lifted by gas and operated by gas and the same agent is used in the culinary department of the airy travelers.* They use *acetylene gas* and he has now an order for a quantity for them which they can store for a journey of thousands of miles. *The gas in use is contained in a large silk bag in the center of the ship. Inside the silk bag is a bag of rubber which holds 28,700 cubic feet of this gas at one filling.* As to the sails, rudder and construction Mr. McGoldrick will give a description later to the Light. *He says the machine is raised and lowered with weights (San Antonio Light,* April 28,1897, p. 5).

Two thousand pounds can be lifted by 28,700 cubic feet of hydrogen gas. Acetylene will only lift about 90 percent of the amount lifted by hydrogen. Therefore, the airship mentioned in this account could only lift approximately 1,800 pounds. If the 28,700 cubic feet number is correct, the airship observed in this account must have been one of the smaller (50 or 75 feet) airships . The dimensions for a 28,700 cubic foot airship would be approximately 75' x 20' x 20' or some combination thereof. These dimensions are in close agreement with some of the observations made in previous accounts.

The method of using weights to raise or lower the airship involves shifting the weights forward or rearward to force the vessel's nose up or down, as appropriate.

In November 1896, Dr. C. A. Smith said he was constructing an airship that used acetylene gas and he would be flying it around the continent in April 1897. Also, he stated that the lights would be battery operated. What better place to set your airship down than next to a company that can replenish your supply of gas and recharge your batteries? (See the "Supplies for Airship" account in chapter 12 and the November 1896 *San Francisco Call* interview with Dr. C. A. Smith in chapter 19.) However, Dr. Smith said his airship would be 160 feet long, much longer than the one identified in this account. Is there another explanation? Of course, there is, but we will delve into the particulars in the latter chapters. You may be getting tired of hearing that refrain, but we must develop the story in a coherent fashion, else it gets too confusing to keep track of who, what, when, where, why, and how.

Of great interest is McGoldrick's comment that the "promoters" have been "in constant communication with them, up to the last four days" or since April 23 or twenty-fourth. Why did McGoldrick lose contact with the airships? Could it have been because of the crash in Aurora and the subsequent statewide search (by the other vessels) for the lost ship?

WEDNESDAY, APRIL 28,1897

THE AIRSHIP SEEN HERE

IT PASSED OVER THE CITY EARLY YESTERDAY MORNING IN A RAIN MOVED SLOWLY, PLAINLY VISIBLE

Seen by More Than One Person. Work of Hiram Wilson, Son of the Master Mechanic of the New York Central.

The airship, carrying a large headlight, passed over the city yesterday morning *[April 28]*, apparently 300 or 400 feet above the earth. It moved slowly at first, traveling in a northwesterly direction, but its speed seemed to be greatly increased when it reached a point probably over Shoal Creek.

A gentleman out north of the capitol saw it, and a colored man living on Robertson Hill had a sight of the aerial visitor.

A fine view of it was had by Mr. Otto F. Porsch, an intelligent and wholly reliable gentleman living at the corner of Colorado and Second Streets and doing a grain and feed business at 402 East Sixth Street. He is well known and has a large circle of friends. A Statesman reporter saw Mr. Porsch at his place of business yesterday, and he told the following story:

"I was aroused from my sleep by my dog barking and growling, and I went to a window and looked out. It was very cloudy and dark, and I saw the *glare of a big light* on the clouds. I thought a large fire was in progress and hastily put on my clothes and went out into the yard to see where it was. As I opened the door to go out, my young dog, greatly scared at something, pushed by me and went into the house. My old dog stayed in the yard, and I noticed he was barking at something overhead, and I looked up and saw a great light slowly moving over the Salge Hotel. It was coming from the southeast and moved in a northwesterly direction. It appeared to me to be about 300 or 400 feet above the hotel, and it traveled very slow, the light be so blinding that I could not see the shape of the vehicle or whatever it was carrying. I watched it carefully, and after it had gone some distance and had passed me I could see the shape of the rear end of the vessel, and it appeared to be in this shape," and Mr. Porsch arranged his hands in a *Vshape*, somewhat like the tail of a fish. "It was still moving very slowly, but as I watched I saw a movement on each side of it like a bird flapping its wings, and its speed was at once greatly increased, and I watched it until it disappeared, which was not long after it began to increase its speed. It was drizzling a little, and it rained pretty hard after the light disappeared."

Asked if he saw any colored lights, he said:

"No, I did not. It was just a very large, ordinary light and very blinding until it passed me."

Mr. Porsch said that a gentleman living out north of the capitol told him yesterday forenoon that he had seen the ship at the same time Mr. Porsch did.

Mr. Porsch said: "After it had disappeared I went back into the house and looked at the clock, and it was exactly fifteen minutes after 4.

A colored man named Gray saw the ship as it passed over yesterday morning.

The Galveston News of yesterday contained a story that the vessel landed in Uvalde a few days ago near the residence of Sheriff H. W. Baylor. Two men were aboard, with whom Mr. Baylor talked, one of them giving his name as Wilson, and he said he had lived in Fort Worth, and the News of yesterday confirmed the story and shows he did live in the Panther City, where he worked on an airship ("The Airship Seen Here," *San Antonio Express,* April 29,1897).

The description of the airship's rear in this account, "V-shaped," agrees with Dr. C. A. Smith's description of the same: "the furstrum of a cone." Dr. Smith described such an airship in a November 1896 *San Francisco Call* interview six months prior to the date of the sighting given in this account. (See Dr. Smith's *San Francisco Call* interview in chapter 19.) Was this the same ship carrying Mr. Wilson? If so, were Mr. Wilson and Dr. Smith collaborators? (See the account in chapter 12 titled "Supplies for Airship."

THE AIRSHIP

Panola County Farmer Talked with the Navigators To the Editor of the Post

Seeing so much about the airship in the papers put me on the look out, and much to my gratification my vigilance was rewarded, not only in seeing the airship, but also had the pleasure of meeting a party of aerial travelers.

About 8 o'clock p.m. *[April28?]* I heard my horses—old gentle work stock—snorting, running and bucking around like a drove of broncos on a regular stampede. On going out to my lot to see what could have alarmed them, I sighted about a quarter of a mile off and seemingly about 300 feet from the earth a very brilliant and a variegated light, coming from SW and headed NE, traveling rapidly. It would occasionally make a circle, and now and then be reflected down to the earth, virtually turning a very dark and cloudy night into day.

After hovering around for a few minutes it gradually descended in an open field nearby. I, having by this time recognized it as an airship, went directly to the place of landing, and on arrival found the ship of about the same make up as given by various correspondents. Its *ere w was composed of five men,* three of whom entertained me while the other two took rubber bags and went for a supply of water at the well, 100 yards off. They informed me that this was *one of five ships* that had been traversing the country over recently; and that this individual ship was the same one recently landed near Beaumont, in this state, after having traveled pretty nearly over all the northwest. They stated that these ships were *put up in an interior town in Illinois.*

> They were rather reticent about giving out information in regards to the ship's manufacturer and since they had not yet secured everything by patent, but stated that they would soon be secure in this, and expected to establish a factory in St. Louis at an early day, and would at once enter into active competition with the railroads for passenger traffic, especially in transcontinental travel. They stated that they could shorten time from Atlantic to Pacific two or three days. The ship's crew were careful not to forget earthly things, though traveling in the heavens. They were all supplied with edibles of all sorts—likewise drinkables; had a good supply of beer and champagne. Also had a full supply of musical instruments.

> The ship was seen by a number of people in this section and some very amusing scenes took place. A good many of the semisuperstitious thought it had close connection with Judgment day. It passed near a camp meeting being held by the sanctified people, some of whom went into paroxysms of alarm, while others hailed it as a special messenger sent in a divine and providential way to throw light into the minds of their benighted neighbors who are yet wandering in the darkness of religious theories taught by the old school churches. The ship left my farm at 8:30 p.m., bound for St. Louis, so the party told me. H. C. Lagrome, Deadwood, Panola County, Texas *(Houston Post*, April 30, 1897, p. 7).

This account was first printed in the *Shreveport Times* on April 24. The sighting actually occurred on April 23. (See chapter 13, "The Airship Seen by a Thoroughly Reliable and Well Known Citizen (To the Times)" account.) The *Shreveport Times* credits an H. L. Lagrome of Deadwood for the story, while the *Houston Post* credits an H. C. Lagrome. There are wording differences between the two accounts but no substantive differences.

Several previous accounts have stated that the airship was but one of five manufactured in Iowa, but this one states that the crewman said this was one of five ships built in Illinois. Of course, Iowa is but a great stone's throw across the Mississippi River from Illinois. But, I think the crewman must have said Iowa and either the observer or the reporter "heard" Illinois.

This observer noticed the crew were "well supplied with musical instruments." Maybe Walter Williams (of the "Has a Music Crew" account in chapter 7) really did hear the crew playing music while sleeping on Mount Calm.

> Conroe, Texas, April 29.—B. F. Hord, night operator, a most respectable gentleman,. reports seeing the much talked of airship last night *[April 28],* which was at a great height and traveling southwesterly *(Houston Post,* April 30, 1897, p. 7).

THURSDAY, APRIL 29,1897

AIRSHIP COMING WILL BE IN TOWN NEXT TUESDAY NIGHT

Passed Over Main Plaza Yesterday Morning And Will Come Back Next Tuesday Night

> The famous airship which has recently created so much talk all over the country, passed over San Antonio yesterday morning *[April 29]* and will again visit us next Tuesday *[May 4]*.

> Yesterday morning between one and two o'clock a waiter at the Southern Hotel was going across Main Plaza when he heard something heavy fall near by and turned to see if someone had not thrown a stone he discovered a small piece of iron with a tag and a letter attached thereto. He then looked up to see from whence it came and says he saw a large, cigar shaped object moving through the air almost over Wolfson's store, going north, but could distinguish no lights on the object as the airship is reported to carry.

The object which had fallen was a lock used for holding a rope to prevent it from slipping and bore evidence of having been removed from some freshly painted surface, white paint adhering to it in several places. To this, "attached by a hempen cord, was an ordinary ship ping tag, bearing the inscription "Just from the airship 'Sacramento.'"

A letter enclosed in a small envelope, was also tied to the weight and addressed "To the public."

These the boy gave to another waiter named Pablo Remedios, who took them to Mr. Chas. A. R. Campbell, the druggist, where they were given to a Light reporter this morning.

The following is the letter contained in the envelope attached to the weight and which is self explanatory and is given verbatim, even to some incorrect spelling:

"On board the Airship 'Sacramento,' April 27, 1897. As we have just landed and received our mail and papers we have noticed from articles in the papers, that there is some doubt in the minds of the people as to the existence of an airship sailing over the country; in order to convince the people of your city, we will sail over San Antonio on May the 4th between 6:30 and 8 o'clock P. M. going in a westerly direction, entering the city near Government hill and going west following the line of the S. P. Railroad as near as possible.

"If the people are on the lookout we will try to give as pretty a display as possible for our small ship. If the weather is not fine you need not look for the ship, as we *always land in case of storms and on dark nights.* We expect to have our ship ready for general use, in carrying passengers and freight by fall, until then we will be very secret in regard to our movements. We will make three copies of this and drop them in different parts of the city, as we pass over tonight, in the hope that one may be found for publication. 'First Mate L. S.^{m}

The letter is written in a clear, bold hand, in ink, on ordinary paper and occupying the first and second pages. It was either written by some practical joker and thrown from the roof of one of the tall buildings in the vicinity and the finder's imagination about seeing the

> object moving off was somewhat stretched, or is a genuine message from the navigators of this strange air craft.
>
> The truth, however, will be known next Tuesday might, when the airship will either put in its appearance and prove itself a reality or will not show up and prove the note to be a fake *(San Antonio Light*, April 30,1897, p. 5).

Well, there is no known report of the airship's appearance over San Antonio on May 4. Either the note was a fake—which is entirely possible, as there were other notorious fake notes from the aircrew—or the airship found "other fish to fry."

The remark about landing on dark or stormy nights is consistent with the reported sightings of the airship.

AERIAL NAVIGATION

San Antonio is the latest station passed by the airship, and the Express vouches for it as a bona fide craft. That there really is such an invention now seems beyond doubt. Numerous reputable citizens have caught sight of it, passing through the air over various parts of the state, giving unimpeachable testimony proving the fact. The great feat of navigating the air seems beyond all doubt to have been accomplished. That which has been the dream of men for many generations, which was attempted by the scientists many centuries ago, has been done through the tireless efforts of the genius of the present day. It is a fitting crown for the innumerable great and wonderful inventions which have marked progress of this nineteenth century, now so fast drawing to a close. It is also a fitting triumph for our proud republic that this last great turn of the wheel of progress has been made by American genius.

A flying machine that will fly is no longer an impossibility—it seems beyond all doubt an established fact. What has so long been considered the futile effort of a class of cranks will most probably soon be disclosed to the wondering world as an ingenious contrivance made by intelligent effort, which will rank its producer with Fulton, who so astonished the world with the steam boat, with Morse who electrified the world with the telegraph, with Edison, Teale, and countless others who have given to man such productions of their genius and labor. Who knows? The revolution in present methods of travel and communication between distant lands which the accomplishment of aerial navigation will produce is too vast, and involves too varied possibilities to be grasped in a moment. Its contemplation affords infinite matter of dreams and speculation as to what man may do, how space and time may be annihilated— when the air may be made to transport one whither one lists.

What next will the divine gift of genius contribute towards the onward progress of the world *{Brownsville [Texas] Daily Herald,* April 29,1897, p. 2).

AIRSHIPS MAY BE UNCLE SAM'S.

He Has Been Experimenting With Dirigible Balloons.

It may be that those people out west who have for the last six months have been filling the papers with accounts of a mysterious airship which they have seen in the sky are not monumental liars after all. It is possible that experiments now being made by the United States government with a view to producing a dirigible, a controllable balloon—in other words, a genuine airship—may be responsible for their visions.

For several years the government has had in its employ a well known aeronaut, who gets, it is said, a salary of $10,000 a year, and constant work and experiment has been going on. Every great nation has a balloon department in its army organization and a balloon depot. The balloon depot of the United States is at Fort Logan, near Denver, and the whole balloon business is in charge of the signal service of the army.

A profound secrecy has been maintained as to what has been accomplished, even army officers themselves only getting vague inklings of what is going on. The captive balloon problem seems to have been pretty well solved by all nations, and in the next war among other powers there is no doubt that the movement of each other's armies will be watched from balloons sent in the air and held by a rope 1000 feet long. But it is the airship, the dirigible balloon, that the nations are after, the United States among them. It will be remembered that Fredrick Allen Gower, Nordical's first husband, thought he had solved the problem of a dirigible balloon capable of being used for war purposes, and lost his life in attempting to cross the British channel in an airship of his own invention.

About a year ago it was announced that the Italian government had been successful in its airship experiments, and had constructed dirigible balloons, which, in case of war, would be let loose over the devoted heads of hostile armies. These airships were said to be arranged so as to drop dynamite in the camps and forts of an enemy or on his soldiers marching in the field, captain *Phillip Reade, not long ago in an article in one of the service magazines, stated that the United States had made extensive experiments with dirigible balloons, and that the results had been most encouraging, but would not be made public except in case of war. There have been rumors of late of an airship in process of construction at Fort Sheridan, near Chicago, but they were rumors of the baguette kind, and Fort Logan would be the natural place for the construction of such a dirigible balloon.*

There is hardly any doubt that the United States has in its possession an airship which is regarded by the officers of the signal service corps as fairly successful. For all that is known definitely on the subject by outsiders it may be several. It is possible that it is one of Uncle Sam's dirigible balloons -which has been so exciting the western folk.

The most tangible thing which has come from the west about the mysterious airship so many declare they have seen, or else the greatest "fake," is a photograph taken by Walter McCann last Sunday from a suburb of Chicago, which shows an airship in the sky. Experts who examined the two negatives taken by McCann were unable to detect any tampering with them, and believed the photograph to be genuine. Also several people were ready to swear that they saw the airship in the city at the time McCann took the picture, and saw McCann operate his camera. At any rate, there is one interesting thing about his picture: the airship shown in the photograph is not so unlike the German war balloon in shape. At the last maneuvers of the German army a balloon was used, which was pronounced the most successful of its kind. It was cigar-shaped, with a rudder aft and a projection below the after part of the body on the machine like the keel of a vessel. The airship which McCann says he photographed was very like it.

The German balloon, however, was not of the dirigible variety, but was held captive by a long rope. In these days of submarine torpedo boats and aerial dynamite throwers war is assuming a new and interesting phase. Is this western airship a reality and the forerunner of Tennyson's vision in Locksley Hall:

"Heard the heavens filled with shouting and there rained a ghastly dew;

From the nations' airy navice, grappling in the central blue far along the world-wide whisper of south wind rushing warm;

With the standards of the nations plunging through the thunderstorm *(Galveston Daily News*, April 29, 1897, p. 10).

Recall a previous article ("Airship Located," chapter 14) that claimed an experimental airship adopted for dropping dynamite was on board a ship that was part of a military expedition headed for Cuba. When considered in light of Captain Tillman's presence in the airship arena, this article lends some credence to the supposition that the airships flying about in the spring of 1897 may have been the product of a secret government project.

MAY2-MAY12,1897

> Editorial comment: The airship appears to be a purely Western invention this time, and the East is taking no interest whatever in it. Possibly gentlemen who are out late in the East are simply too full to look up *(Houston Post*, May 2, 1897).

THE AIRSHIP

A Very Reliable Citizen of Medina County Vouches For It.

Mr. Nato Villareal, of San Antonio, yesterday received the following letter from Mr. Ed. Krause, a well known merchant of Medina Station, which Mr. Villareal has given the Light for publication:

Kind Sir and Friend: After wishing you well, I will tell you that much wrote of airship paid our city a visit. I have been reading and hearing a great deal about the air motor, but have always believed it to be a fake, but now I am convinced that it is so, as last night *[the letter is not dated so we do not know when "last night" is]* it hovered over my place and finally came down just back of the Hermann gin.

There are *two men and a woman and child* with the ship. The child is very sick, and one of the men *(he says his name is Jones)* came over to get some milk. I told him to go over to your ranch and your people treated him nicely.

As it was very dark last night, and you know our street car line has no headlight, it came pretty near striking Mr. Jones, as it was returning from the opera house. I wish it would have struck Mr. Jones, as then I would have been in possession of his airship.

Well returning to the airship, they also wished to have a doctor so I got Dr. Bywater. He gave them the necessary medicine. After we had the child O.K I asked Mr. Jones over to the saloon, and we had a few scoops of Lone Star beer. He bought a corkscrew and some bottle beer. So we walked back to where the airship was.

When they were ready to ascend, Katherine Garza came up, (Mr. Arnold will tell you who Katherine is) and roped the airship. The poor fellow hung to the rope a while, but soon had to leave all holds go and drop. The airship is cigar shaped and from the way she sailed is surely a good success. When you come out again will tell you exactly where the ship landed and show you the print on the ground. Your friend, ED KRAUSE, PS. Our street car is in fine shape. Send out some headlights as we don't want any damage suits to pay *(San Antonio Light*, May 7, 1897, p. 7; *Houston Post,* May 7,1897, p. 4).

AIRSHIP SEEN AT LLANO

Rumor that It Is A Spanish War Scout Seemingly Confirmed

Llano, Texas, May 9.—(Special.)—The much talked of airship was seen at this place last night *[May 8]* about 10:00 o'clock by several persons who are perfectly reliable in every way. When first seen it was just over the city and moved slowly in a northwesterly direction. When almost directly over the Algona Hotel it was seen to pause for a short time as if inspecting the buildings which are to be used for a military school, then continued to sail serenely in a northwesterly direction. The ship was visible for about twenty minutes, and was seen by ten or twelve persons *(Austin Daily Statesman,* May 10, 1897, p. 2).

MYSTERIOUS AIRSHIP

Edison Denounces It as a "Pure Fake"—Thinks It Absurd Believes, However, That airships Will Be Successfully Constructed in Future—Will Only Be Toys at Best

Thomas A. Edison doesn't think much of airships. He was seen recently in his West Orange, laboratory in regard to a late account of the movement of the airship, according to which a letter was dropped from it on a farm near Astoria, Ill., with a cipher enclosure addressed to Edison and signed "C. L. Harris, electrician airship No. 5."

Mr. Edison paused from a luncheon of sandwiches, pumpkin pie and tea to observe: "You can take it from me that that is a pure fake. I have had several men named Harris in my employ, but I know nothing of C. L. Harris."

> "I have no doubt that airships will be successfully constructed in the near future, but there has been too much talk about this suppose airship out west. I have always found that there is much talk before these airships are tired and very little afterward.

> "It is absolutely absurd to imagine that a man would construct a successful airship and keep the matter secret. When I was young we used to construct big colored paper balloons, inflate them with gas, and they would float about for days. I guess some one has been up to that same game out west.

> "When an airship is made it will not be in the form of a balloon. It will be a mechanical contrivance, which will be raised by means of a very powerful motor, which must be made of very light weight. At present no one has discovered such a motor, but we never know what will happen. We may wake up to-morrow morning and hear of some invention which sets us all eagerly to work within a few hours, as was the case with the Roentgen rays. Their success may come. I am not, however, figuring on inventing an airship. I prefer to devote my time to objects which have some commercial *value. At best airships would only be toys (San Antonio Light,* May 13,1897, p. 3).

Well, our best nineteenth-century minds did not have crystal balls or clairvoyant brains. Thomas Alva Edison did not have a high regard for the notion of men flying. From our perspective, of 100-plus years in the future, we can say with a great degree of certainty that he was wrong about airships only being toys.

> Editorial comment: There is this to be said for Prof. Barnard's airship—he isn't afraid to show it *(Houston Post,* May 13,1897, p. 4).

See chapter 20 for an account of Professor Barnard and his airship.

THAT AIR SHIP.

Some Kind of Object Passed Over the City. Fort Worth May 12.

Captain Scobie said last night *(May 12]* that about 8 o'clock Mrs. Scobie called him to see something strange passing over the city and on going into the yard he could observe something that might have been an airship or balloon.

> It was high up, being above the small clouds flitting through the sky at that time. It was a dark object with a wonderfully bright light on top of it and it was going rapidly in a southeastern direction.
>
> The captain said it had no appearance of being a meteor or star, *but moves as balloon would.* What it was he could not undertake to say, but that he saw it there is no doubt.
>
> Many others report having seen the sky flyer at the same time *(Dallas Times Herald,* May 13, 1897, p. 6).
>
> Editorial Comment: As lightly as we may treat the airship problem, there are thousands of wise people who think that the next century will be the age of utilization of the atmosphere for transportation purposes as the present century has been the age of steam and the beginning of electric inventions and discoveries. *Those of us who are living now are just a century too soon to witness man's greatest triumphs,* but we have the advantage of our greatgrandfathers *(Houston Post,* May 14,1897, p. 4).

We can say the same thing about ourselves, and so it is with each succeeding generation as the years tumble on by. There were some conflicting opinions in 1897 about the ability of man to design and build a successful flying machine and about what conquering the air might bring in terms of future benefits to humankind. Recall the article that gave Edison's opinion of flying. This editor was right. Too bad he never lived to see the Concorde fly faster than the speed of sound.

Although occasional references to airships continued in some newspapers around the country, the mysterious flying machines were never seen again in Texas, nor were the airships mentioned in any Texas newspaper after May 13,1897.

TABLE 24
April 27 - May 12, 1897, Sightings

Date	City	State	Time	Dir	Speed	Alt	Reported by
4/29/97	San Antonio	TX	1-2 A.M.	N			*SAL* 4/30/97
4/28/97	San Antonio	TX	Early morning	SE-NW		300-400 ft	*SAE* 4/29/97
4/28/97	Austin	TX	4:15 A.M.	NW			*ADS* 4/29/97
4/28/97	Conroe	TX	Night	SW		Great height	*HP* 4/30/97
5/8/97	Llano	TX	10:00 P.M.	NW	Slowly		*ADS* 5/10/97
5/12/97	Fort Worth	TX	8:00 P.M.	SE	Rapidly	High	*DTH* 5/13/97

Note: *SAL = San Antonio Light*
SAE = San Antonio Express
ADS = Austin Daily Statesman
HP = Houston Post
DTH = Dallas Times Herald

CHAPTER 18

SOLUTIONS

We have sifted through the pertinent newspaper stories focusing on the great 1897 airship mystery and have sorted a considerable amount of wheat from the chaff. Now, we have six choices to make regarding the origin of the airships.

1) THE GREAT MASS-HYSTERIA PANDEMONIUM

According to Profs. Robert E. Bartholomew and George S. Howard (former chair of the psychology department at Notre Dame University), in their book *UFOs and Alien Contact: Two Centuries of Mystery* (Amherst, NY: Prometheus Books, 1998), the answer lies in "conventional theories of social psychology"—the airships are a figment of peoples' imaginations resulting from mass hysteria. (Whatever that is—perhaps, a "scientific" construct to explain something scientists cannot explain because they did not trouble themselves to find out who Samuel Tillman, A. E. Dolbear, Hiram Wilson, Elmer Benjamin, U.S. Marshal Williams, etc. were?)

Bartholomew and Howard say, "the phantom airship wave of 1897 can be explained using theories of social psychology." He goes on to state how unreliable human perception is and how it is greatly influenced by the person's frame of reference at the time of a perception. Bartholomew does not offer any convincing empirical evidence that people did not see anything other than what they claimed to see in 1897. He only offers suspect theories.

What can be said about the existence of such a social construct as mass hysteria? The term "mass hysteria" is a refuge for weak-minded individuals who do not understand how to analyze their data. So-called scientists do not do their homework, or they do a shoddy job of it, and summarily jump to the "mass hysteria" conclusion. In their minds, only with perfect proof, embodied in the presence of a physical specimen, can there be safety in admitting to something other than "mass hysteria."

Too many reputable and reliable eyewitnesses, such as engineers, scientists, doctors, judges, and lawyers, saw the flying machines for anyone to summarily dismiss them as hysteria. Sure, there were bound to be falst reports generated from the quill of morose, bored, and idle newspaper correspondents, motivated by pressing deadlines and the desire for a paycheck. Also, one cannot discount the existence of false accounts resulting from the publicity- and thrill-seeking element of society. However, even tossing out the suspect accounts, there are still too many stories given by respectable individuals to dismiss all of them as hysteria.

2) A SECRET GOVERNMENT PROJECT AND SUBSEQUENT COVER-UP

Within the body of one Texas airship newspaper article, an individual who is a professor of chemistry at the U.S. Military Academy is mentioned as a member of the airship crew. Capt. Samuel E. Tillman is identified as a crew member of the airship found upon the ground at Stephenville ("The Great Aerial Wanderer," chapter 7) on April 17. Another Louisiana article (see chapter 10, "The Airship/One Man Saw It in New Orleans Last Night) identifies Tillman and Dolbear staying at a New Orleans hotel on the same day an airship was seen in New Orleans. The connection between Captain Tillman and the airship appears to be a strong one. The U.S. Military Academy historian cannot find any leave papers for Tillman dated April 1897. Therefore, for Tillman to be absent from his post at West Point and roaming the country in an airship, he must have been either AWOL (a serious infraction of military law, punishable by imprisonment) or participating in the flying experiments with the knowledge and approval of his superiors. Since he went on to serve in the army, including a tour of duty as superintendent of the U.S. Military Academy, until he retired with no known disciplinary actions, it is probable the U.S. government was knowledgeable of his participation in the flying experiments. To what extent the government participated in the experiments is unknown. Why the government did not use the technology for gainful purposes may lie in the genesis of the Spanish-American War. A book exploring the use of the airships after the spring of 1897 is planned for publication sometime in 2004. Why was a professor of the U.S. Military Academy aboard the airship? Was the government involved in the design and manufacture of the airships, and did the government subsequently cover up the airship project? The answers to these legitimate questions are found in the remaining chapters.

For thirty years, I have worked on numerous classified government projects and am very much aware of the military's ongoing experimentation with new technology. For obvious reasons, the military does not go around test-flying state-of-the-art experimental aircraft in daylight. They test those weird-looking machines at night at varied locations during certain times in the test program. What many people see and believe to be UFOs are really experimental or prototypical military aircraft. For examples, look to the early days of the stealth fighter and bomber. What would you have believed you saw if you had encountered one of them (and many people did) for the first time at midnight in 1976? A extraterrestrial UFO, of course.

The military may test more than one experimental aircraft at a time, so even multiple sightings of two or more weird-looking airships may be attributed to military test-flying. Also, the military experiments with all kinds of beyond-leading-edge technological devices—not just funnyshaped aircraft, but also different kinds of propulsion systems, even antigravity systems.

Will the military admit that one of its latest and greatest creations has been spotted and classified as a UFO? No, they will not. However, the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) admitted, in 1997, that the United States military establishment deceived the American public for many years in an effort to conceal information concerning high-altitude spy planes. The spy planes, first the Lockheed U-2A and then the Lockheed SR-71, accounted for over half of the UFO reports during the late 1950s, 1960s, and 1970s.

The military still flies the SR-71 and other experimental planes. It is reasonable to believe that many UFO sightings today can be attributed to secret military aircraft going about their nightly business. I am not privy to all the weird and crazy things the military experiments with, but I have been associated with enough strangeness to realize many UFO sightings in this country are the result of various governmental bodies performing "magic" in the air. Just as most UFO sightings have a plausible explanation, so too does the great airship mystery of 1897.

3) THEY WERE FROM ANOTHER WORLD

Profs. Robert E. Bartholomew and George S. Howard further theorize that, "The maneuvers described by witnesses were far above any technology of the period—even by today's standards." If this is so, were the occupants of these airships visitors from another world? A published firsthand account of an encounter between an earthling and the "supposedly unearthly" visitors gave credence to the supposition that the flying machines were from another world. Was the manufacturing of these airships done in this world by human hands and guided by an alien knowledge far superior to our own? Remember, this was a time of great, even frenetic, invention in Western society.

Well, with all due respect, these professors are wrong when they say the airships performed maneuvers "far above any technology of the period—even by today's standards." Bartholomew and Howard may be great mass-hysteria proponents, but apparently they know little about aviation or technology. In fact, the maneuvers (simple up, down, and forward maneuvers that helicopters routinely perform today) were quite within the bounds of the technology of the period, albeit the reliability of the machines would be questionable.

There are numerous accounts of individuals coming upon the airships as they reposed on the ground. These accounts often describe the vessels in some detail. In every case, the descriptions of the airships are consistent with 1890s technology and the descriptions of the crew members are consistent with earthly beings. There is not a single, reliable description of an airship with greatly advanced technology (like what you would expect from an alien spaceship that had to pass the boundless distance of space) in all the accounts of airship sightings. Nor is there an account of a live, extraterrestrial crew member.

Although most observers admit that they do not understand the underlying technology that propels the ships so fast and high, the descriptions still include the technology of the period. Not a single observer remarks on any advanced machinery beyond that already known to exist on earth. Additionally, all firsthand accounts of contact and interviews with the ship's crew members speak of men and women from this planet and assumed to be English-speaking, else the person remitting the story would have mentioned the method or language they used to communicate. We cannot reach any conclusion other than the crew members were from earth, not from Mars or any other world.

The evidence points to machines that incorporated nineteenth-century technology. However much we may wish to attribute the sightings to an alien presence among us, it is unlikely the Martians, or any other galactic neighbors, are going to traverse the void of space using vehicles clearly incorporating nineteenth-century human technology. The accounts describe the airships' construction in terms of aluminum framework, oil-soaked, cloth-covered wings, copper (or brass) bearings, woven baskets, mechanical capstans and iron anchors, and simple mechanical propulsion systems. Batteries and internal combustion engines provided motive power and lift was accomplished using hydrogen or, perhaps, acetylene gas—hardly the technology one would use for interplanetary or galactic travel.

While some people from the time period may be inclined to attribute the mysterious sightings to beings from another planet, it is technologically immature for us, in 2003, to assume beings are going to fly through space in vehicles that are composed of typical nineteenth-century machinery. The firsthand technical descriptions of the craft do not even come close to admitting of interplanetary travel of any sort. An interesting aside is the possible relationship between the great 1897 airship mystery and the genesis of one science-fiction classic. Given the publicity of the strange vessels, and the speculation that the visitors were from Mars, is it any wonder that Herbert George Wells wrote *The War of the Worlds,* published in 1898?

The two remaining conclusions left for us to consider are (1) they were products of a great newspaper or railroad hoax or (2) they were inventions of this planet.

4) A GREAT RAILROAD HOAX

Because numerous airship sightings were reported by railroad employees, at least one investigator claims the whole airship business was a hoax perpetuated by the railroads. Keep in mind that in 1897 railroads were the equivalent of our interstate highway system. They comprised the major transportation arteries linking the economic centers of the country. Roads outside of major population areas were still not much more than wagon trails.

The viewpoint of those who support the railroad-hoax theory fails to comprehend the importance of (at least) two strings of copper wire, part of a communications system called the telegraph (strung from post to post adjacent to every railroad line in the nation): every railroad depended upon the telegraph for managing its rail traffic. The combined lines of all the railroads formed a communication grid covering virtually the entire country. The railroad telegraph was the foundation of mass communication in America.

Without radio beacons to guide them, the airship captains followed the paths of the railroads to navigate from town to town in the night. Therefore, it is reasonable to believe railroad employees and passengers would see the airships more frequently than any other segment of the population. Whenever railroad employees or passengers sighted an airship, it was only natural for them to breathlessly recount the circumstances to the telegraph operator at the next railroad station. News of the sighting then spread very quickly across the region and nation via the widespread telegraphic system.

Since the railroad telegraph was not used continuously for rail-management purposes, the lines were available for fee-based public use. The railroads sold access time much like we purchase access time on the Internet today. That is, people could send telegrams across each railroad's telegraph lines for a per-word fee. The railroad telegraph lines were the only outside communications link most communities had.

The numerous companies owning the railroad lines stretched across the nation precludes the possibility that far-spread telegraphers working for different employers could coordinate and weave such a convincing hoax and maintain it for a seven-month period. The railroad telegraphers were only reporting what they were asked to report, namely, the airship stories as told by eyewitnesses and reporters.

Also, the railroad hoax explanation fails to account for the involvement of men such as George D. Collins, William Henry Harrison Hart, Elmer Benjamin, Willard Wilson, Prof. Samuel E. Tillman, Dr. Amos Dolbear, and the other airship characters who designed, built, and flew the airships. The existence of these men and their contribution to the airship story is well documented in the newspaper stories of the day. In chapter 20 additional information regarding their participation in the airship story is presented.

5) A GREAT NEWSPAPER HOAX

In the late nineteenth-century, newspapers, typically large metropolitan papers, knowingly printed fake stories whose subjects were typically of some supposed scientific achievement or discovery. These hoax stories, generally quite detailed and seemingly factual, would require several weeks for their entire plot to be presented. These types of stories became known as serials. The reading public was never sure of the serial's veracity until the end of the last installment, when the author would expose the plot for the fiction it was. Such was entertainment before the age of the television. Was the great outpouring of airship stories in 1897 a series of newspaper hoaxes?

There were some (infamous) airship stories that are clearly identified as hoaxes. One fake story involved an airship's supposed calf-knapping near Yates Center, Kansas. Several local citizens decided one day to humor themselves and the population with a fictional airship story. The conspirators boldly told the false account to the local newspaper. The gullible editor printed the story without questioning the facts. Taken as it is, the story might seem factual. However, within the context of several thousand airship stories, it stands out as singularly false.

Virtually every community had its jokesters who were quite willing to deceive the public and the newspapers. The newspapers themselves occasionally ran fake stories (on other topics) as weekly serials. It is entirely possible that some newspapers ran deliberately fabricated airship stories for one reason or another. However, to believe that all the newspapers and all the people west of the Mississippi were joined together in one great brotherhood of hoaxers stretches credulity.

Conspiracies are difficult to maintain when the number of conspirators is small and impossible to keep up when the number of participants exceeds more than two. It seems, in the heyday of the telegram, impossible for a great number of newspapers to hoax the public for over seven months. Let us not forget that many of the accounts include the names of the people who claimed to see the airships and talked to the crew members, and these were real people who lived in the respective communities.

As mentioned earlier, when a newspaper ran a serial, it typically identified it as such at the end of the last installment. No newspaper ever identified any airship story as a serial, and many was the number of newspapers that ran airship stories across the West, Midwest, and Southwest. Most of these papers were small, locally owned and published papers. It doesn't seem probable that all of them would join together in one great hoax on the American public. What else can be said, other than most of the stories were about real places, real people, and real airships?

6) THEY WERE INVENTIONS OF THIS WORLD

Impossible as it may seem, the airships could have been inventions of this world designed and built by enterprising individuals who were well financed. An airship that could travel over 100 miles per hour and attain an altitude of 10,000 feet in 1897 certainly sounds incredible today. Does it sound any more incredible than the feat of a young man who, on July 2,1982, sat down in an aluminum lawn chair tenuously tethered to several helium-filled weather balloons, untied the restraining ropes, promptly shot up to an altitude of 16,000 feet, and unwittingly became a UFO for two hours? This man won the country's admiration as a daring man of adventure, albeit with a goodly dose of reckless courage. Does the airship story seem any more incredible than the story of the inventor from Perth Amboy, New Jersey, who demonstrated, in 1863, for President Lincoln's War Department, an airship he flew over 100 miles per hour and at an altitude greater than 15,000 feet?

Steven Robson, an experienced heavy aircraft (Boeing 747) driver for a major airline, confirms that upon final approach a heavy aircraft's altitude will generally be between ^{X}U mile and V2 mile, with a speed of 135 to 145 miles per hour. Of course, the actual speed and altitude of a heavy jet may differ from this typical speed and altitude, depending upon many factors, including the type of jet and the terrain, wind speed and direction, barometric pressure, etc. But, the 135-145 miles-per-hour speed is a good yardstick with which to compare the recorded speed of the airships.

If you observe a heavy aircraft at night as it passes from horizon to horizon, on final approach, it will remain visible about ten minutes as it makes its way across the night sky. Of course, the exact length of time an airplane is visible depends upon cloud conditions, the angle the craft makes between you and the horizon, and other factors—such as on what terrain you are standing. But, the observations recounted from the 1897 Texas airship sightings and the typical nighttime airplane sightings today are remarkably similar for the area (Plano, Texas) where I live. So, what may be said of the detractors who still advocate that the witnesses in 1897 were seeing meteors or shooting stars flying across the night sky? The only shooting star known to take ten minutes to get from horizon to horizon in Dallas is a Hollywood star.

The numerous statements that the airships exceeded the speed of the "fastest passenger trains," or was in excess of 90 miles an hour, may seem inconceivable. However, read the *New York Herald* account of the September 1863 flight by Dr. Solomon Andrews. (See chapter 20 for additional information regarding Dr. Andrews.) It shows that at least one well-documented flight in excess of 120 miles per hour occurred thirty-four years previous to the April 1897 flights over Texas. (By Dr. Andrews' calculation, the maximum speed was more than 200 miles per hour.) It is not difficult to imagine similar flights occurring thirty-four years later.

As in the 1896-97 airship sightings, Dr. Andrews' amazing feat was not so much the design and fabrication of an airship that could actually fly, but the speed and altitude at which it could navigate. These are the things that cause people to question the truthfulness of such accounts today. Only if we build and fly such a machine now will we ever put to rest the doubts raised by the skeptics. *(Note:* A small group of retired naval officers constructed a replica of Andrews' airship in the 1960s, but I do not know if it was successfully flown.) But for all other readers, even if they remain unconvinced of the story's veracity, the *New York Herald* articles on Andrews will at least shed additional light on the subject.

The body of evidence points to a true airship story of terrestrial origin, with test flights beginning in California in the fall of 1896 and proceeding across the country to the Midwest before turning south and arriving in Texas in April 1897. A group of well-financed, secretive individuals, based in a remote California community, a quiet Iowa village, and a small New York town have left behind a wondrous story of daring accomplishment. It appears they did not just suddenly appear out of the thin mists of time but may have been secretly building and flying machines for over forty-eight years. Their fanaticism for secrecy has left a puzzle, as Dellschau claimed, for "wonder weavers" to piece together.

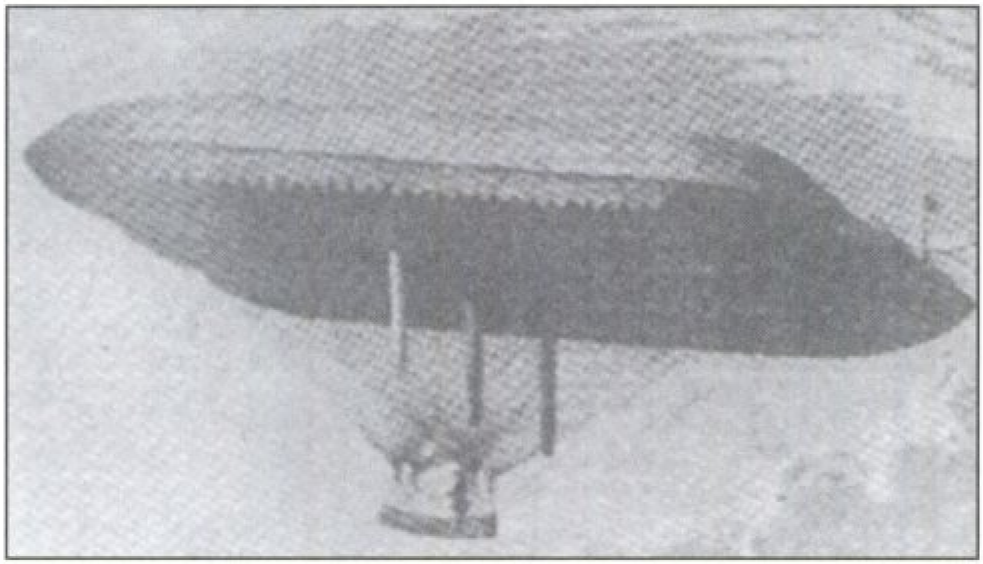

Dr. Solomon Andrews and his aeron flying machine (Photocopy of lithograph courtesy the Institute of Aeronautical Science, New York City)

Who were the men who built and flew the airships? Where did they come from? What became of them? Why didn't the inventors step forward and receive the acclaim and financial rewards of an adoring country? We will examine these questions in the remaining chapters.

We have just completed a penetrating review of a remarkable body of information offering substantial evidence that the great 1897 airship mystery was, actually, factual events that occurred over the night skies of the immense Lone Star State. It is only now that some of the puzzle pieces are falling into place, and the story of these incredible inventions can be told.

CHAPTER 19

THE CALIFORNIA STORY (OCTOBER 1896-JANUARY 1897)

The numerous airship sightings of 1896 and 1897 began with the observation of a clearly identifiable airship over Sacramento in November 1896, well documented in the *Sacramento Bee* and the *San Francisco Examiner.* But, a month before the Sacramento sighting, residents of Nevada, California, in the early evening of October 22, witnessed a "triple-connected meteor" ("Three Meteors in Line," *San Francisco Examiner,* October 23, 1896, p. 7). Said to have appeared over the western horizon at "ten minutes past 6:00," the oddity soon disappeared a "little north of east," in the general direction of Oroville, a community that will assume some importance in the airship story.

A San Francisco attorney claiming to represent the interests of a California airship inventor whose last name was Benjamin announced, in November 1896, that the inventor had successfully built three airships. Could the "triple-connected meteor" have been the three airships performing a test flight or just out on a joyride, astounding the good citizens of northern California? In the same paper, the *Examiner,* there is also a report of "A Queer Thing in The Sky" seen by the San Francisco residents "shortly after 6:00" (October 22, 1896). Nevada, California, is sixty-eight miles northeast of Sacramento. So began, in the fall of 1896, the great California airship mystery.

There were no more California reports of weird atmospheric sightings and odd flying visions until Wednesday, November 18, when the *Sacramento Evening Bee* published an account titled "Voices in the Sky" *(Sacramento Evening Bee,* November 18,1896, p. 1). The account focuses on the appearance over Sacramento, between the hours of 6 and 7 P.M., on Tuesday, November 17, of an electric arc lamp propelled by unknown forces and accompanied by the sound of voices. "It came out of the east and sailed unevenly toward the southwest, dropping now nearer to the earth, and now suddenly rising into the air, again as if the force that was whirling it through space was sensible of the dangers of collision of objects upon the earth." One eyewitness claimed to have heard a voice on board the vessel shouting, "Lift her up, quick! You are making directly for that steeple."

A meteoric path is a fixed path and is defined by the physical laws of the universe. This description of the flying arc lamp does not come close to describing the path of meteors. Meteors don't go up and down, deliberately trying to avoid earthly obstacles. And it seems quite unreasonable to associate a human atop a meteor, shouting directions for its guidance.

The *Bee* goes on to say, "That much hundreds of the people saw it." Witnesses "living at points of the city along a rough diagonal line, yet far distant from each other" claim they "heard voices issuing from it in mid-air—not the whisperings of angels, not the sepulchral mutterings of evil spirits, but the intelligible words and the merry laughter of humans." This description of the sounds associated with the flying arc lamp hardly admits of alien beings, meteors, or anything else other than the presence of earthly beings flying along with the electric arc lamp and somehow connected to it.

Apparently the sight of the flying arc lamp also caused "great consternation," and who wouldn't be concerned? Yet there is no evidence in the *Bee* account of a mass-hysteria reaction to the odd atmospheric object. Remember, this was 1896. Although there was much public debate and newspaper space given to the idea of human invention and the possibility of human flight in the era, the only objects people had previously witnessed in the skies before were either birds, astronomical phenomena, kites, or balloons. A new, strange object would cause concern. But hysteria? Just doesn't seem likely and the account, as written by the *Bee,* certainly does not contain any hint of mass hysteria. Instead, the tone of the account is one of awe and even gratification, similar to the blessed birth of a long-expected baby. The much-talked-about and long-awaited event, the invention and successful flight of an airship, had finally occurred.

In the same article, under the heading "Coming to California," the *Bee* states, "Last night's Bee contained a telegram from New York announcing that a man [Wilson?] had perfected an airship and would on Friday [November 20] of this week, accompanied by one or two friends, ascend from a vacant lot in the metropolis and go directly to California [a distance of 2,830 miles], which he promised to reach in two days." Additionally, the telegram included a description of "an apparatus which was electrical

(Fargo batteries?], to supply light and power for the astonishing contrivance."

For the inventor in this article to reach California in two days, his ship had to average a speed of fifty-nine miles per hour. Any invention of mankind flying in the skies before the Wright brothers sounds preposterous to most of the postmodern generation, and anyone claiming to fly across the continent at an average speed of almost sixty miles per hour seems the same. But, who was making claims to fly from New York to California in two days? This could only be the Wilson airship that was identified in a Beaumont sighting and said to have possessed an electrical means of propulsion.

But, to continue the California story. The presence of an "electric arc lamp," dipping then rising as it bobbed around the housetops and dodging the church steeples and office spires as it made its way along its course, seems odd. If such a device was attached to some type of airship, then surely the craft must have been sufficiently visible for some description to be gained. And so it was. On November 19, the *San Francisco Call,* a morning paper, ran an account titled "Strange Craft of the Sky/Sacramento Men Describe the Aircraft/Claim They Saw Its Occupants and Heard Them in Conversation" and datelined Sacramento, California, November 18: "As far as can be learned by eyewitnesses, the body of the craft was oblong and egg-shaped with fan-like wheels on either side, whose rapid revolutions, beating the air, served to propel the vessel directly against the wind, and in so doing caused the vessel to sway from side to side with a wavering motion, similar to that of a boat being forced against the rapid current of a stream" *(San Francisco Call,* November 19, 1896, p. 1).

The northern California sightings continued virtually unabated, until January 23,1897. The last-known account of a California airship sighting was reported on the twenty-second by the *Sacramento Evening Bee* ("And Now Lodi," January 22,1897, p. 1). The airship was seen at Lodi, about thirty-six miles southeast of Sacramento. According to the *Bee,* "The ship seemed to be under perfect control" and "was heading southeast." After this date, the airships began to be seen in states east of California.

It is not my desire to reiterate all of the California airship newspaper stories. The descriptions associated with the airships are very similar and even identical, in most cases, to the Texas accounts. What is of great interest, however, are a few articles whose topics relate to the identities of the airship inventors.

On November 21, 1896, a San Francisco attorney by the name of George D. Collins claimed to represent the inventor of the airship. His interview in the *San Francisco Chronicle* follows:

A LAWYER'S WORD FOR THAT AIRSHIP

George D. Collins Says It Flies It Hails From Oroville Safely Housed Now Near San Francisco The Attorney Says He Has Seen The Queer Craft And Promises an Exhibition

San Francisco, Cal., Nov. 22.—The mystery of the airship which has been amusing the State and puzzling some worthy citizens of Sacramento has made a change of base and now there are plenty of reputable people in and about San Francisco ready to make oath that they have seen the strange thing in the heavens and that in appearance and motion it was identical with the ship of dazzling lights and buzzing machinery which menaced a church spire at the capital.

More than that, there is a San Francisco attorney, George D. Collins who asserts that the airship exists, that the inventor is his client, that the strange craft sailed without mishap from Oroville to San Francisco, that it did pass over Sacramento on its way to the bay, and that within a few days this invention, which is the solution of one of the world's oldest and toughest problems, will be navigated in daylight, so that all San Francisco may see it, and that it will circle and rise and sink over the central part of the city.

And yet, there are wicked skeptics who chuckle and make rude jokes about an epidemic of humbug, and who poke all manner of fun at the good people who think they saw an airship in the sky.

Attorney Collins, who occupies offices on the second floor Crocker Building, was seen about the matter at his home in Alameda last night.

He said:

"It is perfectly true that there is at last a successful air ship in existence and that California will have the honor of bringing it before the world. I have known of the affair for some time and am acting as attorney for the inventor. He is a very wealthy man who has been studying the subject of flying machines for fifteen years and who came here seven years ago from the State of Maine in order to be able to perfect his ideas away from the eyes of other inventors. During the last five years he has spent at least $100,000 on his work. He has not yet secured his patent, but his application is now in Washington. I cannot say much about the machine he has perfected, because he is my client, and besides he fears that the application will be stolen from the Patent Office if people come to know that his invention is practicable.

I saw the machine one night last week at the inventor's invitation. It is made of metal, 150 feet long, and is built to carry fifteen persons. There was no motive power as far as I could see, certainly no steam.

It is built upon the aeroplane plans and has two canvas wings 18 feet wide and a rudder shaped like a bird's tail. The inventor climbed into the machine and after he had been moving some of the mechanism for a moment I saw the thing begin to ascend from the earth very gently. The *wings flapped slowly* as it rose and then a little faster as it moved against the wind. The machine was under perfect control all of the time.

When it got a height of about ninety feet the inventor shouted to me that he was going to make a series of circles and then descend. He immediately did so, beginning by making a circle about 100 yards in diameter, and gradually narrowing in till the machine got within thirty feet of the ground. It then fell straight down, very gracefully and touched the earth as lightly as a falling leaf.

"The reports from Sacramento the other night were quite true. It was my client's ship the inhabitant's saw. It started from Oroville, in Butte County, that evening and flew sixty-five miles in a straight line directly over Sacramento. After running up an down once or twice over the capital, my friend came on a distance of another seventy miles and landed on a spot on this side of the bay, where the ship now lies, guarded by three men. The inventor found, during this trial trip, that his ship had a wave-like motion that made him seasick. It is this defect that he is now remedying.

In another six days several defects will be done away with and it is then his intention to immediately give the people of San Francisco a chance to see his machine will fly right over the city and cross Market street a dozen times. I cannot tell you where he is housing the ship or what his name is, as I am under a pledge of secrecy but it is a fact that the machine does its work perfectly, and will astound the world and revolutionize travel when it has been displayed before the public. The inventor can fly with it to New York to-morrow if he wants to.

He has forsaken the idea of Maxim and Langley entirely in building the machine and has constructed it on an entirely new theory" (San *Francisco Chronicle*, November 22, 1896, p. 16).

Recall the shape of the rudder variously depicted as a broad sail, steering sail, tail of a fish, etc., that was described by the airship observers on April 15 at Denton ("The Airship Again"), April 16 at Paris ("Seen at Paris"), April 16 at Greenville ("C. G. Williams Saw It"), April 16 at Ladonia ("Two Gentlemen View It"), and April 28 at San Antonio.("The Airship Seen Here"). Each of the descriptions of the airship's tail is similar to Collins' description of the airship in the *Chronicle* account.

In the *San Francisco Chronicle* article, Collins claimed the airship "wings flapped slowly as it rose." There are several Texas newspaper articles detailing eyewitness descriptions of airships that either flapped or fanned their wings. The articles and the description of the wing movement are "fanned the breeze" (chapter 4, "Looks Like a Passenger Coach"), "with wings flapping regularly" (chapter 6, In Texas), "wings flapped regularly" (chapter 7, "Airship Seen in Galveston"), "flapped very rapidly" (chapter 7, "A Judge Sees It"), "flapping its wings" (chapter 17, "The Airship Seen Here").

Collins gave the length of the airship as 150 feet. The Texas newspaper articles that give a similar length for the airship are "it must have been 200 feet long" (chapter 5, "Seen at Paris?"), "about 150 or 200 feet long" (chapter 6, "Flight of the Airship"), "about 150 feet long" (chapter 7, "The Airship"), "length must have been 150 to 200 feet" (chapter 8, "Landed on the Brazos").

The San Francisco airship Collins describes is very similar to the airship(s) described by various Texas newspaper articles. Was the San Francisco airship(s) responsible for the wave of Texas airship sightings during the spring of 1897? It certainly seems so.

George D. Collins claimed in this and other California newspaper interviews to represent the airship inventor. In a November 22 *Chronicle* article, Collins said the larger parts of the airship had been manufactured back east then shipped to Oroville and Stockton for assembly. Collins goes on to identify a six-foot-tall, approximately forty-year-old dentist who resided in the 600 block of Ellis Street as the airship inventor whom he represented. Dr. E. H. Benjamin was identified in the article as the only person matching Collins' description and who lived in the 600 block of Ellis Street. According to the article, Dr. Benjamin lived at 633 Ellis Street. Collins told the reporter the inventor had friends and a relative in Oroville. In this same article, it is mentioned that (former) Attorney General William H. H. Hart met with Collins to discuss the airship and its Oroville inventor. Hart told the reporter he believed Collins, and "I have no doubt," the general said, "that the affair is bona fide" ("Collins Sticks to His Airship Story," *San Francisco Chronicle*, November *22*, 1896, p. 12).

Collins' statements aroused the curiosity of every newspaperman in the area, and they quickly encamped on Benjamin's front porch, desiring additional interviews and details ("A Lawyer's Word for That Airship," *San Francisco Chronicle,* November 22,1896, p. 16). In another newspaper interview, Collins identified the airship inventor as hailing from Oroville and about forty-seven years old ("A Winged Ship in the Sky," *San Francisco Call,* November 23, 1896, p. 1).

In a *Call* interview (printed in the *Examiner* and the *Chronicle* also) at his San Francisco residence, 633 Ellis Street, on November 24, Dr. Elmer H. Benjamin denied the role of airship inventor. He did state that George Collins was his legal representative, but for the invention of dental appliances. He mentioned he had an uncle, Dr. Francis Wakelee Benjamin. In the same article, George Collins back-pedals and starts claiming he knows nothing of the airship or its inventor ("The Apparition of the Air/Benjamin Talks," *San Francisco Call,* November 24, 1896, p. 1; "Have You Seen It in the Sky?" *San Francisco Examiner,* November 24, 1896, p. 9; "Coy Mr. Collins and His Airship," *San Francisco Chronicle,* November 24,1896, p. 9).

Collins was sequestered with Benjamin for several hours at Benjamin's residence on Sunday, November 22. On Monday, Benjamin journeyed to Collins' office in the Crocker Building. Afterward, both men denied any knowledge of airships and any association with any airship enterprise. In the *Chronicle* article, a dispatch from Oroville confirmed Dr. Francis Wakelee Benjamin was the uncle of Dr. Elmer H. Benjamin and that Dr. Elmer H. Benjamin was originally from Carmel, Maine, and he had been in California about seven years ("Coy Mr. Collins and His Airship," *San Francisco Chronicle,* November 24, 1896, p. 9).

Maybe because of Benjamin's reservations about Collins' ability to represent his interests adequately or due to second thoughts of another nature—whatever the reason—Collins began to back off his original statements and denied that he ever made the claim to represent the airship inventor ("Coy Mr. Collins and His Airship," *San Francisco Chronicle,* November 24,1896, p. 9). Finally, in another interview published in the *San*

Francisco Examiner ("Have You Seen It in the Sky?" November 24, 1896, p. 9), Mr. Collins stated that his original comments were misconstrued by the *Chronicle* reporter.

Collins went on to say that the only contact he had with any airship inventor was the previous week, when a stranger entered his office and asked him to file a patent application. But as the inventor had no model, Collins sent him away and told him to come back when he had completed one. The lawyer then said that the *Chronicle* reporter must have confused this "model" story with the story of Dr. Elmer H. Benjamin, a dentist whom Collins represented. Dr. Benjamin invented dental devices. However, in the same *San Francisco Examiner* article, the reporter told of an old friend and law-school classmate of Collins, attorney Frederick Bradley, who claimed that Collins told him several days previous to his interview that he (Collins) represented the airship inventor, had seen the airship, and was preparing the legal papers for the inventor's patent application.

In another *San Francisco Call* article ("Benjamin Talks," November 24, 1896, p. 1), a dispatch from the paper's Oroville stringer claims that Dr. Elmer Benjamin was originally from Carmel, Maine. (According to the 1890 Butte County Great Register, Benjamin's Oroville uncle, Dr. F. W. Benjamin, was born in Maine. See "The Oroville, California, Benjamins" section in chapter 20.)

It seems Collins' eagerness to publicly discuss the airship and its inventor was counter to his client's desire to maintain a strict code of secrecy surrounding his awesome machine. The attorney was now backpedaling as fast as he could in a fruitless attempt to undo the damage to Benjamin's interests, which he had unwittingly performed. But, apparently, Collins, by now, had publicly said too much.

Then Arty. George Collins told the reporter he could not speak freely about the airship, as the inventor was his client and he (the inventor) was concerned about his patent being stolen. So, one wonders why Collins chose to speak up on the matter in the first place? Perhaps, like many people, he could not refuse his fifteen minutes of fame. The extent of the inventor's distress became evident the next day, when Collins informed the papers that he was no longer representing the inventor.

A *Call* article dated November 25 states that (former) Attorney General William H. H. Hart assumed the legal responsibilities of the airship inventor "yesterday," Tuesday, November 24. Hart states he assumed the legal duties "due to the loquacity of Mr. Collins." The article states Hart assumed the responsibilities because "The inventor, who is said to be extremely desirous of maintaining his incognito, thinks that Collins talked not wisely and too much." Hart, not exactly a paragon of discretion himself, goes on to identify the airship inventor as a Dr. Catlin (Dr. C. A. Smith—See "An Inventor's Opinion," below) who was assisted by Dr. E. H. Benjamin and a George Applegate ("Mission of the Aerial Ship," *San Francisco Call*, November 25,1896, p. 1).

Mr. Collins, a young and brash attorney, lost possibly his best client. In a *San Francisco Call* article ("Mission of the Aerial Ship," November 25, 1896, p. 1), the reporter states that the legal interests of the airship inventor were transferred from George Collins to William H. H. Hart, a former California attorney general. Collins' previous comments concerning the airship and its inventor, followed by his attempt to camouflage the truth with misleading information concerning Dr. Elmer Benjamin and the dental inventions caused the newspaper reporters to look at Benjamin as the airship inventor. Mr. Collins' denial, quoted from the newspaper, reads, "This Dr. [Elmer] Benjamin referred to is a dentist. He is a client of mine and an old friend and I am trying to help him get out a patent on a new sort of gold crown for teeth. He has been experimenting for some time and calls upon me frequently. He has nothing whatever to do with the airship project."

Under the byline "The First Trip" *(San Francisco Call,* November 25, 1896, p. 1), the *Call* reporter, quoting an unidentified source, wrote that some copper bearings became overheated during the maiden voyage flight that Dr. Elmer Benjamin made alone. After Dr. Benjamin moved out of his boarding-house room, numerous copper filings were found in the carpet. Dentists typically did not use quantities of copper large enough to leave such a large deposit of filings in the carpet. And several individuals who knew Benjamin claimed he never practiced his profession while residing in California. Either the good doctor was making bearings or copper bushings. The *Call* reporter hints that his unidentified source is a stockholder in the venture, who refers to the inventor by "doctor."

Copper is soft, too soft to be very useful for bearings or bushings. Perhaps, the material found in the carpet was not copper, but brass. Good quality brass can be mistaken for copper by the uninformed and brass bushings were, and still are, commonly used.

Did Dr. Elmer Benjamin ever practice dentistry? For about eight years, Benjamin roamed the California countryside, ostensibly as an agent for a piano company called Sherman, Clay, and Company, a San Francisco firm. He occasionally passed through Woodland, a community about nineteen miles northwest of Sacramento, and would assist Dr. Fred Holmes, a local dentist, in some procedure. According to Dr. Holmes, Benjamin also assisted a dentist in San Francisco named Dr. Hill. On one occasion, Benjamin made a comment to Dr. Holmes that he had an invention that would revolutionize the world ("Aerial Navigation," *Woodland Daily Democrat*, November 23, 1896, p. 3).

Two months prior to the first appearance of the airship over San Francisco, Dr. Benjamin quit the piano company and set up a dental office at 113 Powell Street, San Francisco, a home owned by Dr. S. W. Dennis and occupied by him and his son. Dr. Dennis stated that while occupying a portion of his home, Benjamin was engaged in several inventions of which Dr. Dennis presumed were of a dental nature.

On November 23, Dr. Benjamin left word at the rooming house where he was boarding, 633 Ellis Street, that he was going out of town and would not return for a week. Where did the good doctor go? According to the *San Francisco Examiner,* he apparently went to Oroville, as the paper received a telegram from the him on the evening of the twenty-third advising the newspaper that he was not a party to the airship ("Have You Seen It in the Sky?" November 24, 1896, p. 9).

In the *Oakland Tribune* ("A Clue at Last," November 24,1896, p. 1), a George Carleton, city electrician, claimed a friend told him he knew the airship inventor and that it was constructed near Oroville. Dr. Elmer H. Benjamin's uncle, Dr. Francis Wakelee Benjamin, lived in Oroville ("Coy Mr. Collins and His Airship," *San Francisco Chronicle,* November 24,1896, p. 6). According to the reporter, Benjamin moved from Maine to California around 1884. Dr. Elmer H. Benjamin was also known to be in Oroville on November 15 and sixteenth, visiting his aunt and uncle. So, we can place Dr. Elmer Benjamin in the immediate vicinity of Oroville, the supposed origin of the airship, shortly before it was seen over Sacramento.

In "Mission of the Aerial Ship" *(San Francisco Call*, November 25, 1896, p. 1), it is reported that former attorney general William Hart admits his new responsibilities for representing the airship inventor and his interests. William H. H. Hart made public announcements of patent applications and other business matters pertaining to the airship inventors. In this article, Mr. Hart stated that the purpose of the airship is to travel to Cuba in support of the insurgents and bomb targets in Havana. This is undoubtedly the origination of all the stories concerning the airship's Cuban destination. For throughout the remainder of the airship sightings, newspapers across the country continued to speculate that the airship was headed for Cuba.

Was the United States military interested in using airships for bombing? One newspaper referenced a bill of lading from a New York port concerning one military supply ship bound for Cuba and laden with one "experimental" airship. It is known that the U.S. Army was trying to develop an airship at a facility near Denver, Colorado. I suspect any experimental airship packed away on a military cargo vessel was one manufactured by the government and not any of the airships sighted in the fall of 1896 and the spring of 1897. Why? All the airships sighted during the covered time period were quite capable of flying across the open water (from any number of places Florida, Georgia, Mississippi, Louisiana, or Texas) to get to Cuba without requiring disassembly for shipment. However, if the military had succeeded in developing an airship and wished to keep the matter secret—a typical military strategy— then the machine would have been transported in a disassembled state, thereby providing some degree of protection from prying eyes and inquisitive minds. But, the implications of such a government strategy are frightening, as the United States government was not at war with Spain in April 1897.

Did the makers of the flying machines intend to use their devices as machines of war or were the "bomb Havana" comments designed to mislead the uninformed as to their real purpose? After the first airship was seen, a year would pass before the United States declared war on Spain. Certainly any American bombing of Cuba in the fall of 1896 or the spring of 1897 would be viewed by the Spanish and the rest of the world as justification for declaring war on the United States. So, one wonders why newspapers would be advocating a "bomb Havana" strategy in 1896? Could it be that certain powerful economic and political forces in the United States had a vested interest in starting a war with Spain? Was the government secretly planning to bomb Havana? In February 1898, when the United States did declare war on Spain, one individual was virtually single-handedly responsible for the declaration. His name was William Randolph Hearst, a powerful economic and political force in both San Francisco and New York City in the spring of 1897. He was also one of the very few men in the country with sufficient financial resources to fund airship research and development.

Continuing with the Hart interview in the *San Francisco Call*, Mr. Hart told the reporter there were actually two such flying machines, one developed in the East (with which he had been involved for some time) and one developed in the West (of which he had just assumed the legal responsibilities for). In the same article, the reporter adds that a "Dr. Catlin" was the actual inventor of the airship and Dr. Elmer Benjamin and a George Applegate were his assistants. The reporter did not state where he got this new information.

A seemingly innocent comment of William Hart's is interesting. In the interview, he said he would use the airship for warlike purposes, but before it could be so utilized, two modifications were required. One necessary modification was providing armor to the undercarriage for some degree of protection from small-arms fire. The other modification required some provision to allow the machine to float in case it should crash while traversing open water. The inability of the machine to float may have played a large role in the reason why the great airship story died before the machines were ever put into practical commercial use. We will discuss the probable disappearance of two airships over open water in the last chapter.

Mr. Hart also makes the claim that the motive power was supplied by electric batteries. Based on the nature of his comments, Hart seems to be talking about the California airship and not the airship constructed "back East (the rural New York town?)," with which he claims to have been previously associated. But in later interviews he specifically states that the Eastern airship's motive power was supplied by electrical batteries. In one account, Hart advised the reporter that his interest in a new storage battery, called the Fargo battery, was responsible for his assuming the legal responsibilities for the East Coast airship.

"The High Speed Worm" *(San Francisco Call,* November 25,1896, p. 1) features an interview with a William J. Kenney of Kenney and Payton, model makers and bicycle dealers. Mr. Kenney stated that "a man about 45 years of age (Dr. E. H. Benjamin?), wearing a gray mustache, and appearing to be a professional man" came into his shop three or four weeks previous, laying before him the plans for "an unusually large and high-speed worm" and its gear. The man asked Kenney to make the worm and gear practically frictionless. Mr. Kenney thought the purpose of the device was to improve upon the cyclometer, a gasoline motorpowered bicycle. But second thoughts caused him to realize the worm and gear were too sophisticated for this; he then concluded that the device might be used to run a dynamo. The manufacturing required two weeks, and the cost was something greater than S145. Kenney stated that one bill alone was for f 145, a large sum of money in 1896. After the appearance of the airship, he became convinced that the device was built to perform some function on the vessel.

Recall the "Was Aboard an Airship/The First Description of the Modern Invention to Be Published" account *{Dallas Morning News,* May 16, 1897) in chapter 9, which featured George Dunlop. Mr. Dunlop wrote to his good friend Dr. D. H. Tucker of his conversation with the airship inventor:

> "That there was a receiver made of aluminum (and of this metal the engine and everything connected with the ship so far as I saw was constructed), from which pipes passed to what appeared to me to be a square box, at each end of which was a cylinder with an exhaust chamber, in which worked a piston attached to a very singularly

constructed driving wheel like the sprocket of a bicycle, except that there were four wheels, one within the other, and these Mr. Wilson called the accumulators. There were two sets of such wheels with a combined velocity surpassing anything heretofore constructed. By the peculiar arrangement of the wheel within a wheel the balance of the centripetal and centrifugal forces was preserved in the presence of 65,000 revolutions a minute; that is, the velocity of revolutions in these wheels would equal 65,000 revolutions of an ordinary wheel ten feet in diameter in one minute if such a thing were possible."

Sounds like "high-speed worm and gear" are needed to transfer the power from these "accumulators" to the driving fans (or propellers). But, if two accumulators were used, then two worm and gears were necessary. So, if all the parts were made "back East" then perhaps one worm and gear failed during initial testing, requiring the speedy manufacture of replacements by the local San Francisco firm of Kenny and Payton.

Perhaps in an attempt to deflect the spotlight from himself, Dr. Benjamin walked into the *Chronicles* office on November 24 ("Mars and Venus Under Suspicion," *San Francisco Chronicle,* November 25, 18986, p. 16) and confessed he was the inventor of the airship. He said he had worked on perfecting a machine for seven years. From the tone of the article, the Chronicle staff apparently did not take his claim too seriously. They failed to grill the good doctor on any details of the airship and its manufacturing and let him walk out of the office without acquiring any additional information. Perhaps the staff was too awe-struck by the doctor's admission to ask any coherent questions.

Remember, this was a time when anything other than birds and kites flying about in the atmosphere was unknown, and the idea of manned flight was considered a superhuman achievement. We can equate the feeling of the times with our thoughts about the first man on the moon— a heroic and seemingly impossible accomplishment for the times.

In the account titled "Supplies for Airship" (chapter 12), an airship crew member advised the observer to just call him Smith. It seems like such an innocuous remark on the surface, yet if the circumstances are probed further, it is amazing what may be uncovered. Let us assume the man's real name was Smith. Can we connect someone by this name to the airships? Not only can we connect Smith to the airships, but we can also connect him to the Sonora Aero Club.

In the same paper as the initial Collins interview, there is an interview with a locally renowned inventor named Dr. C. A. Smith. This Dr. C. A. Smith is the same "Dr. Catlin" identified in the William H. H. Hart interview.

An Inventor's Opinion

Dr. C.A. Smith Has No Doubt That An Airship Is Being Tested

> "Have I an airship? Well, I can't say that I have," said Dr. C.A. Smith, the inventor, when seen in his office in the Spreckles Building last night, "but, I have not reason to doubt that it is an airship the people in this city and other cities have seen in the heavens for the past few nights.
>
> I have been experimenting on air machines for the past fortyeight years and have invented no less than thirty useful machines some of which have been used in every State of the Union. I know of its practicability as I have had a model running through the air."
>
> "I expect to have machinery ready for business in the beginning of *next April* to make a trip *across the continent.* It will be *160 feet long* from bow to stern and *125 cylinder.* The main body will be 125 feet long. The front end will be a cone, as it is a scientific fact that a cone presents less resistance in passing through the air than any other solid body. The gas compartments will be in the upper portions of the cylinder and cone, and after being filled with hydrogen and acetylene gas, recently discovered, they will be hermetically sealed. The sheet aluminum to be used is lighter per square foot than the oiled and varnished silk used in making balloons."

"The rear end of the ship will be made like a frustrum of a cone and the air will thus pass freely back to *the propeller, which will drive the ship.* In the interior will be a cabin for passengers *35 feet by 40feet,* entirely portioned off from the gas. In the bow inside of the shell will be a pilothouse, from which the rudders will be operated and controlled. It will have *windows,* so that the pilot can see in all directions."

"A *horizontal rudder* of sufficient dimensions will steer the ship up or down, and a *vertical rudder* will steer it to right or left. Both will be on the stern. The *wings* will extend the full length of the cylinder and in flight will be used as aeroplanes, *like the wings of the larger birds,* and in crossing currents of air they will be closed, when in a light atmosphere, too light for the gas, the wings can be utilized to carry the ship up into the atmosphere."

> "There will be a *wellhole in the bottom for an anchor* and above will be a capstan on which the *rope will be wound.* The ship will land by deflecting the wings and the horizontal rudder; the *propeller will drive the ship forward,* the aeroplane, wings and rudder steering it to earth. It will pass above a platform where an anchor rope will be fixed and the captain will then draw it down onto the platform."
>
> "I can get a Maxim engine which weighs 320 pounds and produce 180 horsepower. The ship will carry from twenty-five to thirty passengers. I calculate the ship will run at a *speed of 100 miles per hour and perhaps more."*
>
> "As to light, we can have a *storage battery* to give all that is necessary. The gas will be enclosed in *aluminum* compartments, so that it cannot escape, and this will insure permanent buoyancy, and as a consequence, absolute safety."
>
> "I do not know who is the inventor of the airship that people say they see flying through the atmosphere. When it is placed before the public, I think, be seen that it is identical with the one I have described."
>
> San Francisco Call, ("An Inventor's Opinion," *San Francisco Chronicle*, November 22, 1896, p. 16).

The appendix A includes an airship patent submitted by a Charles Smith of San Francisco in 1896 that agrees in every detail with the above pronouncements. Either Charles and Catlin Smith are one and the same, or they are father and son.

A description of the horizontal and vertical rudders is detailed in the *Chronicle* account featuring Smith, along with a description of the vessel's wings and a well hole and capstan that was to be used for an anchor. Recall the story in the *Houston Post* titled "Anchor of the Airship" (April 28, 1897), which told of an airship losing an anchor in Merkel, Texas, on the night of April 25,1897. That article, as well as the *Chronicle* article, mentions the rope connecting the anchor to the airship. It was Dr. Smith's intention to use the anchor and capstan to actually pull or lower the airship to Earth upon landing. It appears that was the same maneuver attempted by the airship operators the night it was spotted in Merkel (where it lost its anchor).

Was Dr. Smith an original Sonora Aero Club member? We don't know for sure, but his statements lend a great deal of weight to the supposition. If Dr. Smith had been building airships for forty-eight years, that places him in the right spot (Northern California) and the right time to be an original member of the Sonora Aero Club.

Taking the description of Dr. Smith's airship at face value, it sounds like the firsthand accounts of at least one of the airships encountered in the pastures of Texas in April 1897, five months after Smith's *San Francisco Chronicle* interview. Did Dr. Smith fulfill his prediction to have an airship ready to fly over the continent in April 1897? And did he fly over the Texas countryside in the early spring of 1897? After examining the necessary records, we can state with a great deal of certainty that Dr. Smith kept his word and he was a participant in the spring 1897 airship mystery.

Continuing the California saga, we now go to a *San Francisco Examiner* article dated November 25,1896. In this article, William Hart told the reporter he went back east because of some interest in a new light-weight battery. This interest led him to the inventor of the Eastern airship. Although he would not divulge the name, Hart did say the inventor was located in New Jersey and his name had appeared in the California paper in the last three weeks. Mr. Hart stated that it was remarkable that two men working at the opposite ends of the continent should develop two flying machines so much alike. Perhaps, Mr. Hart had never heard of the Sonora Aero Club, which seems to be the connection between the two inventors.

Mr. Hart curtly informed the reporter that he had advised both parties to consolidate their interests, advice Hart claims they heeded. If such a claim is true, we have possibly identified at least three of the airships seen in Texas in April 1897. The Oroville (or Western) airship of Dr. Elmer Benjamin, the New Jersey—Perth Amboy or Goshen, New York—(or Eastern) airship of this new aforementioned inventor, and the San Francisco airship of Dr. C. A. Smith.

The New Jersey inventor by the name of Dr. Solomon Andrews, of Perth Amboy, designed and built a flying machine in 1863! Dr. Andrews submitted the plans for his airship to no less an authority than the United States War Department in the spring of 1862 ("Aerial Navigation," *New York Herald,* September 8, 1863, p. 3). The War Department was not sufficiently interested and showed no desire to purchase any airships from Dr. Andrews. So, he set about to build the airship with his own funds in the fall of 1862. The *New York Herald* visited the doctor on several occasions during the airship's manufacturing. When Dr. Andrews made a successful test flight on September 4, 1863, the *New York Herald* was there to cover the story. According to the accounts, the airship traveled in upward, sweeping spirals at a speed sometimes exceeding 200 miles per hour! Exaggerated? Probably. Truthful? No doubt about it! The incident is too well documented to be denied. Chapter 20 includes the newspaper account of Dr. Solomon's invention.

And what about the fourth airship seen in the skies of 1897 America? In a *San Francisco Call* article titled "It Flitted Over San Jose" (November 28, 1896, p. 1), former attorney general William Hart announced to a group of professional friends that the inventors intended to immediately start building a second airship in the vicinity of Bolinas. Bolinas is thirty miles northwest of San Francisco. George Collins stated in an interview that the airship, on its maiden voyage on November 17, came to rest on a farm outside San Francisco. Perhaps, it came to rest on the same farm near Bolinas. But, the fourth—and possibly the fifth through the eighth—airship may have been manufactured in "a quite Iowa village."

In another *Call* article ("Hart's Aerial Inventor Has Three Aerial Fliers," November 29, 18986, p. 1), Hart makes the astounding claim that the inventor he represents actually has three airships. The larger one could accommodate three people and the smaller only one person. The third airship was currently being constructed. According to Hart, this machine was designed to be powered by both gas and electricity.

Several statements of Hart's make this article particularly interesting. The small ship accommodating only one person, presumably the pilot, could be the airship that crashed and burned in Aurora, Texas. Recall the body pieces recovered at Aurora were thought to belong to only one individual. But, I don't think this airship crashed at Aurora. All of the airships that flew in Texas accommodated more than one person. The small, one-man airship may be the airship that exploded in Michigan.

In a *Dallas Morning News* article ("Was Aboard an Airship," May 16, 1897), George Dunlop states he was introduced to Mr. Scott Warren, a passenger on the airship, and a friend of the inventor—a Mr. Wilson. Of great interest is whether or not any possible relationship existed between Scott Warren and a Mr. W. H. Warren of Hayward, California. Hayward is twenty-seven miles southeast of San Francisco. In a *Grass Valley (California) Morning Union* article ("Built an Airship," November 29, 18986, p. 4), Mr. Warren states that he built and successfully flew a one-man airship.

Another interesting statement of Hart's is his description of the inventor. Hart described the inventor as a dark-skinned man who was employed as an electrician to a Spanish surnamed general. Other than a reference to a Mexican cook, no other dark-skinned individual is mentioned in any of the airship accounts. This statement seems to be a deliberate falsehood designed to get the reporters off Dr. Benjamin's front porch. Up until the November 29, 1896, *San Francisco Call* article, reporters were camping on the front porch of the boarding house where Benjamin previously lived. On the thirtieth, Dr. Benjamin packed all his belongings and moved out.

In a *San Francisco Examiner* article ("Airships Now Fly in Flocks," November 25, 1896, p. 1), General Hart discloses the existence of an East Coast airship, distinct from the Benjamin airship. Hart proclaimed that his interest in the East Coast airship was due to a storage battery used in the airship. He called the battery a Fargo battery. Hart professed he united the East and West Coast airship interests because the two airships' designs complemented each other. When asked where the East Coast inventor was located, he replied, "Well, I think there is no harm in telling you. He is in New Jersey. His name has been printed in the papers within three weeks. I shall not come closer to identification of him than that. I saw him and saw his airship while I was East. My interest in the storage battery that he uses brought us together."Thomas Alva Edison's Edison Battery Company was located in Bloomfield, New Jersey. Edison was the most prolific battery inventor, receiving 147 patents for battery design and development. Was Edison the inventor of the "Fargo battery?" Hart's comment "I saw him and saw his airship" implies the inventor of the battery and the inventor of the (East coast) airship were one and the same. Yet, Edison publicly proclaimed, "At best air ships would only be toys" (chapter 17, "Mysterious Airship").

Tantalizing questions concerning the California connection remain to be answered. Who was the mysterious New Jersey inventor? Was Dr. Smith a founding member of the Sonora Aero Club? Also, could Dr. Elmer H. Benjamin's uncle have been an original Sonora Aero Club member? Was the George Collins client who assembled his airship at his aunt's home near

Oroville also the nephew of Dr. Francis Wakelee Benjamin? Seems like all fingers point toward Dr. Elmer H. Benjamin.

The first California sighting occurred on November 17. The last California sighting occurred on the twenty-second. Benjamin was known to be in Oroville on the fifteenth and sixteenth. His whereabouts between the sixteenth and twenty-third are a mystery. On the twentythird, he packed his things at his rooming house at 633 Ellis Street ("Have You Seen It in the Sky?" *San Francisco Examiner,* November 24, 18986, p. 9) and left for Oroville. Perhaps Dr. E. H. Benjamin had nothing to do with the airships, but it is easy to place him in the right places at the right time. And if we integrate the comments of former attorney general William Hart with these suspicions, it is even easier to finger Benjamin as airship inventor extraordinaire. Toward that end, we will investigate the backgrounds of the individuals identified in the airship accounts and see if a sensible story emerges.

CHAPTER 20

IN SEARCH OF THE AIRSHIP PLAYERS

The airship accounts mention various individuals—witnesses and crew members. It is not my intention to positively confirm the existence of every airship witness. Others have performed that tedious task and confirmed that the witnesses were real people who lived and worked in the places mentioned. Because previous investigators quickly leapt to the conclusion that the airship mystery was either a hoax or a mass hysteria phenomenon, no other researcher seems to have closely followed the historical trail left behind by the crew members We will examine the personal, professional, financial, and political relationships of the individuals identified as crew members in the newspaper accounts. From what is left of the scant paper trail, we will attempt to determine how the airship crew members relate to the airship story and to each other.

Were these real people? Who were they? Where did they come from? What were their personal and professional relationships to each other? How did they come to be together in the fall of 1896 and spring of 1897? Were they employed in the capacity identified in the newspaper articles? Did they live and work where the newspapers indicated? Or, were they figments of reporters, or telegraphers, overtaxed imaginations? It seems very reasonable to believe that if these men were who they were portrayed to be in the newspaper accounts, then the airship story gains an incredible amount of authenticity. In that case, the airship story moves from the realm of lore, legend, and reputed hoaxes into the sphere of truth, reality, and history. With this prospect in mind, we begin our search for the people.

While some crew members left a moderate paper trail to follow, others left little, and still others cannot be sufficiently identified at this time to even determine who they really were. The information in this chapter stitches together the pieces of the crew member's lives that were unearthed while investigating this mystery. The colorful mosaic of seemingly disparate lives comes together for a brief moment of historical glory.

Several researchers have poked into the background of a couple of the main characters, namely, Wilson, Dolbear, and Tillman. The meager results of their searches makes it obvious that no one has seriously reviewed the historical records that these individuals left behind. Else they would have discovered various interconnections between the individuals and interesting facets of their lives. For example, was there any way that the East Coast Wilsons could have met the West Coast Benjamins long before their interests in airships united them in 1896? The answer is yes. I will demonstrate the likelihood of their meeting thirty-plus years before they flew the skies of Texas in 1897 via not just one possible venue of contact but two.

Evidence places Dr. F. W. Benjamin forty-two miles from Goshen, New York (purported home of the Wilsons), in 1864 when he reenlisted in his Civil War military unit. Is this just a coincidence? Did F. W. Benjamin meet any of the Wilson clan while so near Goshen? Answers to such questions are speculative, but by now, the coincidences are becoming far too many to ignore. We will explore many more such coincidences in this chapter.

Various historical documentation was searched for information concerning the airship members. Where information was found, the source is noted.

TABLE 25
The Cast of Characters

Relation to Story	Name	Relation to Others	Profession	Home	Notes
Airship crew member	Willard H. Wilson	Father of Hiram Wilson	Assistant master mechanic of the New York Central Railroad	Lived in Texas and New York	Husband of Luna (Walters) Wilson
Airship crew member	Hiram Wilson	Son of Willard H. Wilson	Inventor	Native of New York(?); lived in Texas 1876-77 and New York	
Airship crew member	Dr. Elmer H. Benjamin	Nephew of Dr. Francis Wakelee Benjamin	Dentist; inventor	Native of Carmel, Maine; lived in San Francisco and Oroville, CA	
Airship crew member	Dr. Francis Wakelee Benjamin	Uncle of Dr. Elmer H. Benjamin	Physician	Lived in Oroville, CA	Physician's assistant in Civil War

TABLE 25 (continued)
The Cast of Characters

Relation to Story	Name	Relation to Others	Profession	Home	Notes
Airship crew member	Dr. C. A. Smith	Associate; Sonora Aero Club member(?)	Inventor; scientist	San Francisco	Built and flew airships for forty-eight years
Airship crew member	Dr. Solomon Andrews	Associate; Sonora Aero Club member(?)	Inventor; scientist; physician (died in 1872)	Perth Amboy, NJ	Founded the Inventor's Institute in 1847; demonstrated airship to War Department in 1863
Airship crew member	C. J. Walsh	Associate	Electrical engineer	San Francisco	Participated with Wilsons' crew
Airship crew member	Samuel E. Tillman	Associate; coinvented Fargo battery(?)	Inventor; scientist; university professor	U.S. Military Academy, West Point, NY	Participated with A. E. Dolbear's crew
Airship crew member	A. E. Dolbear	Associate; coinvented Fargo battery(?)	Inventor; scientist; university professor	Tufts University, Medford, MA	Participated with S. E. Tillman's crew
Airship inventor	William H. Warren	Father of Scott Warren	Merchant	Hayward, CA(?)	Built airship near Hayward; funded airship research
Airship crew member	Scott Warren	Son of W. H. Warren	Engineer	Hayward, CA(?)	Participated with the Wilsons' crew
Airship crew member	Jackson	Associate	Unknown	Unknown	
Airship crew member	Mr. Walters	Grandfather (or uncle or cousin) of Hiram Wilson	Engineer	Unknown	Participated with Wilsons' crew
Airship captain	Randall	Unknown	Unknown	Unknown	See "Looking for James Randall" section in this chapter
Legal representative	William H. H. Hart	Attorney for inventors	Attorney	Born in England; raised and educated in Iowa; lived in San Francisco	United East and West Coast interests via Fargo battery
Legal representative	George D. Collins	Attorney for inventors	Attorney	San Francisco	Original legal representative for Elmer Benjamin

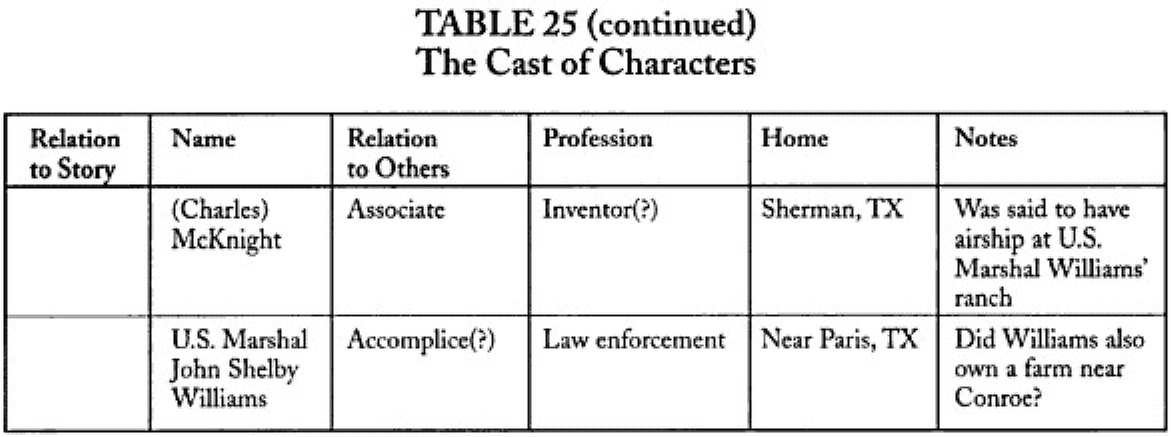

TABLE 25 (continued)
The Cast of Characters

Relation to Story	Name	Relation to Others	Profession	Home	Notes
	(Charles) McKnight	Associate	Inventor(?)	Sherman, TX	Was said to have airship at U.S. Marshal Williams' ranch
	U.S. Marshal John Shelby Williams	Accomplice(?)	Law enforcement	Near Paris, TX	Did Williams also own a farm near Conroe?

Now we will examine each participants' past and determine what is of interest to us.

LOOKING FOR THE WILSONS

We have several clues for identifying the Wilsons involved in the airship mystery. In the chapter 10 "Navigator Wilson/Left a Message for His Friend Akers" account, we have the Wilson place of residence: ". . . who gave his name as Wilson, and place of residence as Goshen, N.Y.,..." In the chapter 16 "History of the Ship" account, the observer claims that "The investors were Hiram Wilson, a native of New York and son of Willard H. Wilson, assistant master mechanic of the New York Central Railroad,. .."

Since the Wilsons were father and son, we would expect to find them together until Hiram reached his majority. The New York U.S. census data for 1840 to 1860 yields the following information:

TABLE 26
Wilsons: New York Census Record

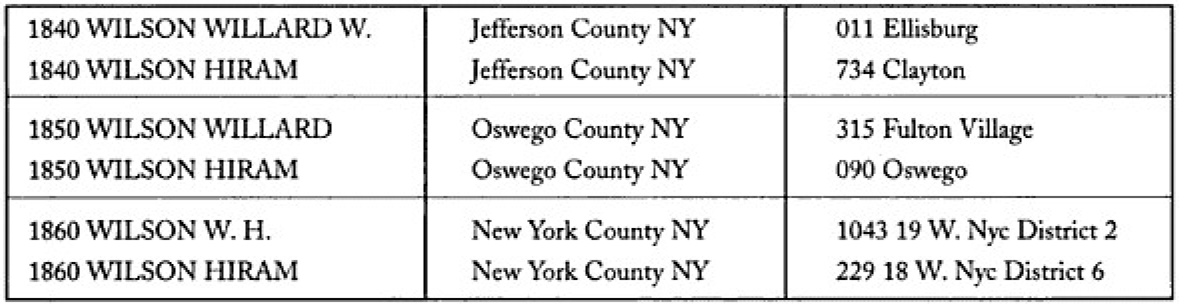

1840 WILSON WILLARD W.	Jefferson County NY	011 Ellisburg
1840 WILSON HIRAM	Jefferson County NY	734 Clayton
1850 WILSON WILLARD	Oswego County NY	315 Fulton Village
1850 WILSON HIRAM	Oswego County NY	090 Oswego
1860 WILSON W. H.	New York County NY	1043 19 W. Nyc District 2
1860 WILSON HIRAM	New York County NY	229 18 W. Nyc District 6

Note: Wilson's census records are abbreviated.

The Willard and Hiram Wilson identified in these New York census records are probably brothers or uncle and nephew, not father and son, and the Hiram involved with the airship seems to be relative young in 1898—say, in his mid-thirties to mid-forties. Our Hiram was probably born sometime in the 1850s. Recall Sheriff Akers thought Hiram to be about twenty-four years old when he met him in 1876.

So, we clearly have a Willard and a Hiram Wilson residing in New York at the outbreak of hostilities leading to the War Between the States. An examination of the Yankee muster records for Willard Wilson includes two entries of interest:

Willard Wilson #1's 24th New York Infantry

Regiment Muster Record

Enlist date: *21* September 1861
Enlist place: Port Ontario
Enlist rank: Priv
Enlist age: 19
Served New York
Enlisted I Co. 24th Inf Reg. NY
disch disability at Belle Plain, VA on 31 March 1863
(New York: Report of the Adjutant-General, NY
Roster Published in 1894-1906)

Willard Wilson #2's 24th New York Infantry

Regiment Muster Record

Enlist date: 15 October 1861
Enlist Place:

Enlist Rank: Priv
Enlist Age:
Served New York
Enlisted K Co. 24th Inf Reg. NY (No further record)
(New York: Report of the Adjutant-General, NY
Roster Published in 1894-1906)

Willard Wilson #1 was discharged for disability at Belle Plain, Virginia, on March 31, 1863. Disability in those pre-modern medicine days typically meant an amputated arm or leg or some other such debilitating cause. It is not likely such an individual would, thirty-four years later, design, build, and fly airships around the country. Therefore, we can estimate the Willard Wilson of interest to us is Willard Wilson #2.

When looking at the war records of the people associated with the 1897 airships, the 24th New York Infantry Regiment and the Third New York Light Artillery Battalion appear regularly. The 24th New York Regiment served in the same army as the Third New York Light Artillery throughout the war. Both outfits served in the Army of the Potomac and fought in the major eastern-theater land battles. However, both units were assigned to different corps. The Third New York Light Artillery served primarily in the Sixth and 24th Army Corps, while the 24th New York Regiment served primarily in the Third Army Corps. The 24th New York Regiment also saw some detached duty in the army of the Shenandoah. It does not seem likely —given that a typical corps usually numbered around 20,000 men—that Wilson, serving in the Twenty-fourth, would have met any members of the Third New York Light Artillery Regiment during the war, but it is possible.

Where was Wilson after the war? According to comments made by Hiram Wilson in the airship accounts, as substantiated by Sheriff C. C. Akers, Willard and his son were in Texas in the mid-1870s. Looking for the Wilson duo in the 1870 census record, we do not find them in Texas. However, we do find that the 1870 California census shows a Hiram and a Willard Wilson living in California.

TABLE 27
Wilsons: California Census Record

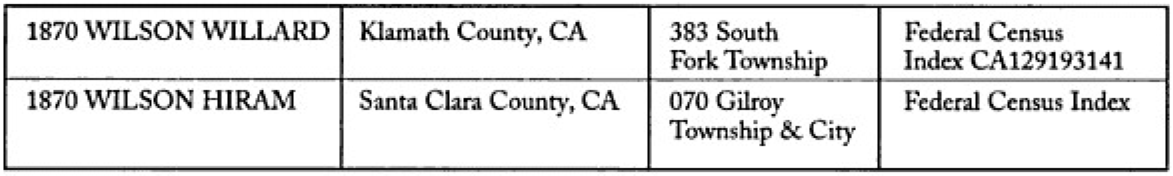

1870 WILSON WILLARD	Klamath County, CA	383 South Fork Township	Federal Census Index CA129193141
1870 WILSON HIRAM	Santa Clara County, CA	070 Gilroy Township & City	Federal Census Index

The 1880 census yields a W. H. Wilson in Texas. Hiram stated they lived in Fort Worth. Therefore, the 1880 Texas census listing a W. H. Wilson for Tarrant County must be our man.

TABLE 28
Wilsons: Texas Census Record

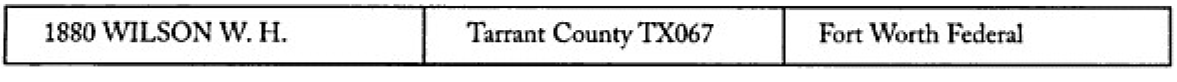

1880 WILSON W. H.	Tarrant County TX067	Fort Worth Federal

From the census data it appears Willard and Hiram Wilson left New York State for California sometime after the Civil War before journeying to Texas in the mid-1870s. Wilson was said to be the master mechanic for a New York railroad. The New York Central Railroad is now part of the Conrail system. Employment records for Wilson are not available. Did railroad business take him from state to state, or was he going about airship business? In 1868, the nation's shores were connected via iron rails. It is entirely plausible to find a railroad man looking for opportunity in northern California around 1870.

THE OROV1LLE, CALIFORNIA, BENJAMINS

In several California newspaper accounts, George Collins claimed he represented the interests of the airship inventor Elmer H. Benjamin. Collins stated that Benjamin hailed from Carmel, Maine, and had relatives living in Oroville, California. According to the published information, E. H. Benjamin migrated to California around 1889. (Benjamin "came to California seven years ago to perfect his design.")

We will go in search of Benjamin and his relatives by examining pertinent historical documents both in Maine and California. A search of the census records for Carmel, Maine, yields the following data from the 1880 census record.

TABLE 29
1880 United States Census
Census Place: Carmel, Penobscot, Maine
Household:

Name	Occ.	Rel	Sex	Marr	Race	Age	Birthplace	Parents Bp
John B. Benjamin	Physician	Self	Male	M	W	57	ME	Fa: ME Mo: ME
Mary A. Benjamin	Keeping House	Wife	Female	M	W	44	ME	Fa: ME Mo: ME
John F. Benjamin	Merchant	Son	Male	S	W	22	ME	Fa: ME Mo: ME
Elmer H. Benjamin	Horse Trainer	Son	Male	S	W	19	ME	Fa: ME Mo: ME
Linnie Benjamin	At School	Dau	Female	S	W	15	ME	Fa: ME Mo: ME

Occ = occupation
Rel = relation to head of household
Marr = marital status
Parents Bp = parents birthplace

From the census record, we can ascertain Elmer H. Benjamin was born in either 1860 or 1861, depending upon the date the census was enumerated (June 5, 1880) and his day and month of birth. Note his father's profession as a physician.

The International Genealogical Index-North America contains a listing for an Elmer E. Benjamin, born August 27, 1872 in Carmel, Maine, to the parents of John and Orilla (Austin or Osmand) Benjamin. John and Orilla were married on March 3,1856, in Carmel, Maine. This information is noted here since future researchers may ponder if there is any relationship between the two Elmers.

A search of the California census records for Elmer H. Benjamin produces the following data from the 1930 census record.

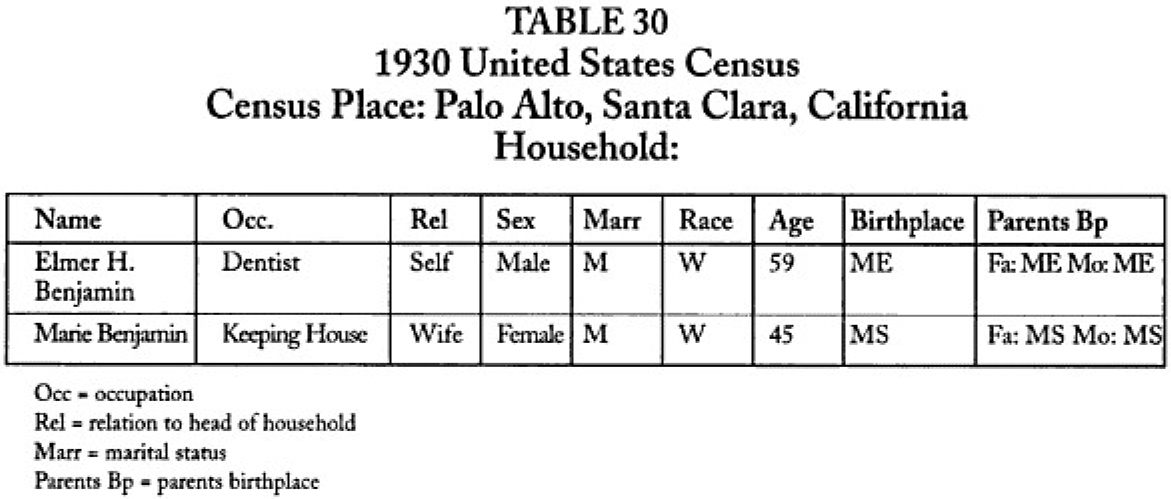

TABLE 30
1930 United States Census
Census Place: Palo Alto, Santa Clara, California
Household:

Name	Occ.	Rel	Sex	Marr	Race	Age	Birthplace	Parents Bp
Elmer H. Benjamin	Dentist	Self	Male	M	W	59	ME	Fa: ME Mo: ME
Marie Benjamin	Keeping House	Wife	Female	M	W	45	MS	Fa: MS Mo: MS

Occ = occupation
Rel = relation to head of household
Marr = marital status
Parents Bp = parents birthplace

The 1930 U.S. Federal Census lists an Elmer Benjamin living in Palo Alto, California. His age is given as fifty-nine. Since the date of the census is April 5, 1930, Benjamin's birth year, according to the census record, would be either 1870 or 1871. His occupation is listed as dentist. Furthermore, his birthplace is given as Maine. Although I think his age is incorrectly stated on the census, this appears to be our man! His spouse's name is Marie and her birthplace is Mississippi.

There is a discrepancy among the Elmer H. Benjamin data we have. The discrepancy is Elmer Benjamin's age in 1897. The California newspaper accounts place his age variously as either forty or forty-seven (see chapter 19). The 1930 census gives his age as fifty-nine, making him twenty-five in 1897. There is no doubt the Elmer Benjamin identified in the 1930 census is the correct Elmer Benjamin. I think the 1930 California census lists Benjamin's age incorrectly. The 1880 census identifies his birth year as 1860 or 1861; therefore, in 1930, he would be sixty-nine, not fifty-nine. If such is the case, when Benjamin was flying airships in the fall of 1896, he was approximately thirty-five years old. I cannot fathom why George D. Collins identified Benjamin's age as "about 40." Perhaps, he appeared to be about forty in 1897.

I did not find Benjamin in the California Death Index (1940-1997), so either he died between 1930 and 1940, or he moved from California.

We know from the California newspaper articles that Dr. Francis W. Benjamin of Oroville was Elmer H. Benjamin's uncle. We will look around Oroville for Benjamin's relatives. Besides establishing the existence of Dr. Francis Benjamin, we have an ulterior motive for exploring this topic that will soon be clear. Oroville is in the physical, political, and administrative domain of Butte County. The 1860 California census index for Butte County lists the following Benjamins (residences are not given):

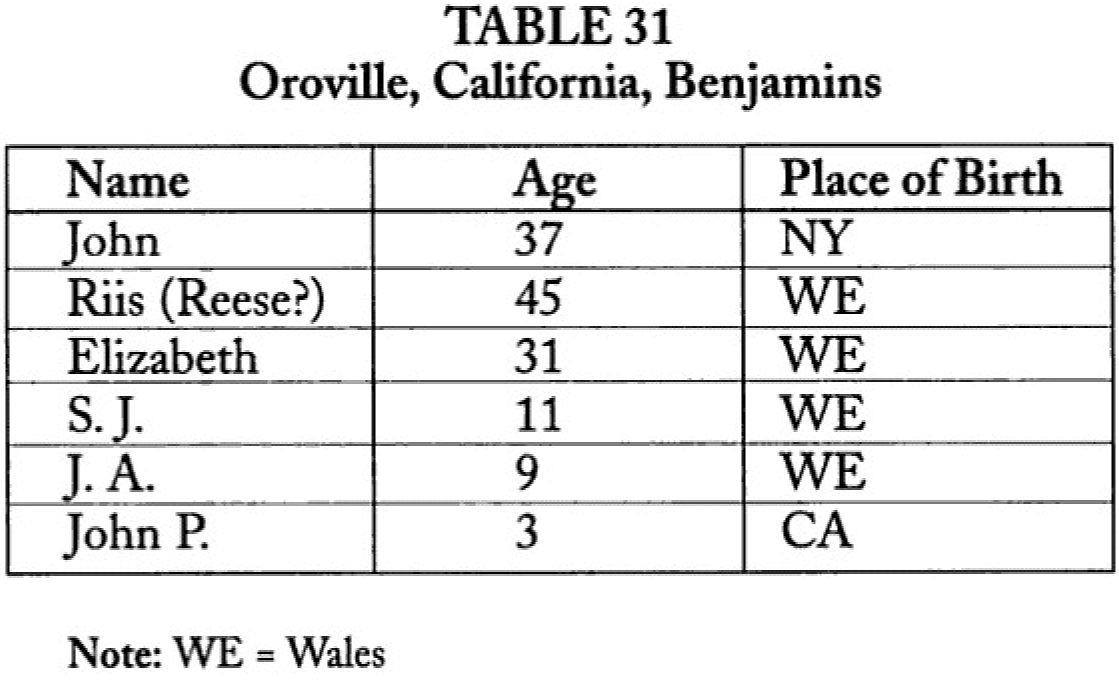

TABLE 31
Oroville, California, Benjamins

Name	Age	Place of Birth
John	37	NY
Riis (Reese?)	45	WE
Elizabeth	31	WE
S. J.	11	WE
J. A.	9	WE
John P.	3	CA

Note: WE = Wales

John

was born in New York in 1823. We do not know when John migrated to California, but the Butte County census does place him in the county in 1860. Why did he migrate from New York? Was it because of gold fever, or was he in some manner connected with the Sonora Aero Club? Recall Dellschau's cryptic comments about the strong association between the Sonora Aero Club and the NYMZA, an unidentifiable acronym. The

NYMZA was a mysterious New York organization involved in scientific research of a—what would now be called—dubious nature, such as "free energy."

There are no Benjamins listed in Butte County in the 1870 census. There are eleven Benjamins in the 1880 California census, but John is the only one with an Oroville place of residence. This is not the same John Benjamin enumerated in the 1860 census. The John listed on Table 32 is identified in the census as black. The John given on Table 31 is identified as white. Given the stated differences in race and the differing ages (two years), the two men are not the same individual.

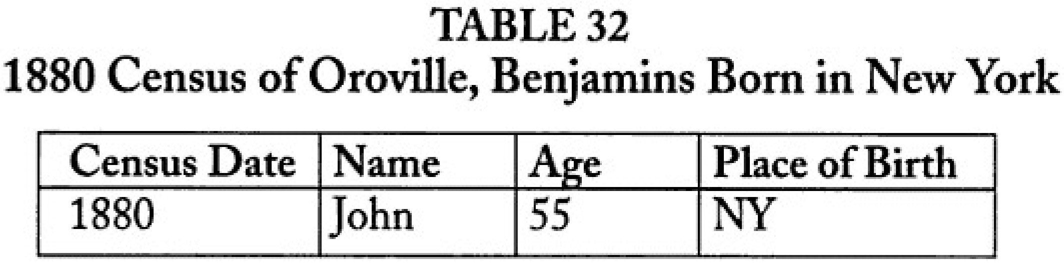

TABLE 32
1880 Census of Oroville, Benjamins Born in New York

Census Date	Name	Age	Place of Birth
1880	John	55	NY

We cannot peruse the census records to see which Benjamins lived in northern California in 1890, because, unfortunately, the 1890 census records were destroyed in the Commerce Building fire. However, another source for the records of 1890 is the Butte County Great Register.

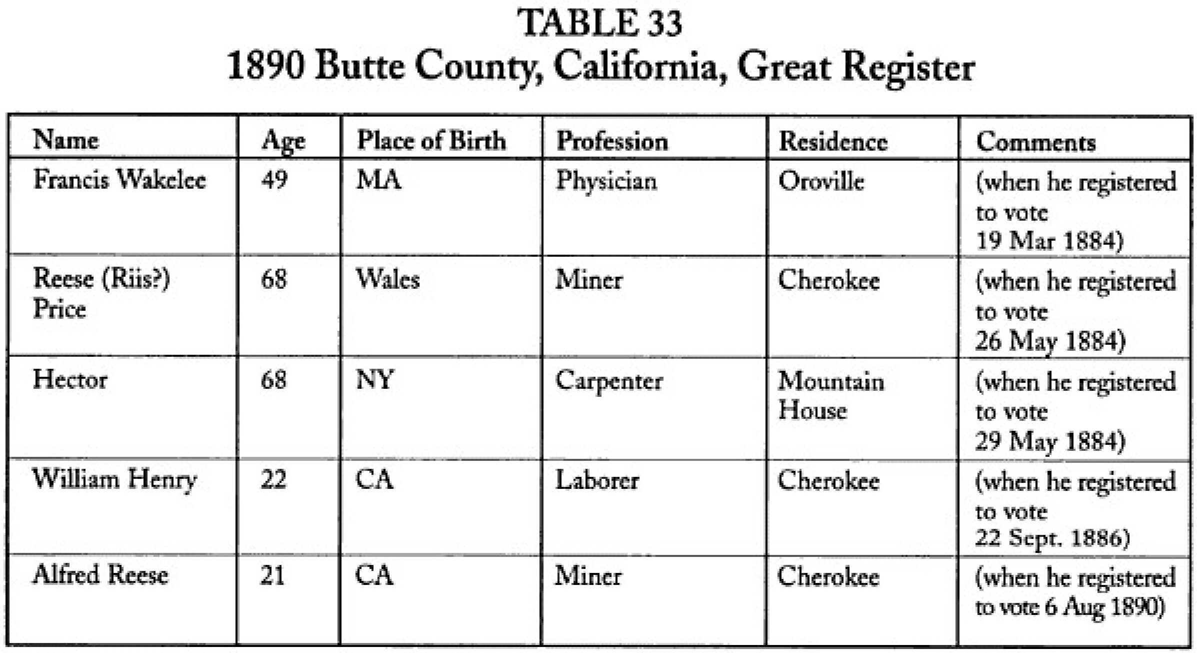

TABLE 33
1890 Butte County, California, Great Register

Name	Age	Place of Birth	Profession	Residence	Comments
Francis Wakelee	49	MA	Physician	Oroville	(when he registered to vote 19 Mar 1884)
Reese (Riis?) Price	68	Wales	Miner	Cherokee	(when he registered to vote 26 May 1884)
Hector	68	NY	Carpenter	Mountain House	(when he registered to vote 29 May 1884)
William Henry	22	CA	Laborer	Cherokee	(when he registered to vote 22 Sept. 1886)
Alfred Reese	21	CA	Miner	Cherokee	(when he registered to vote 6 Aug 1890)

Dr. F. W. Benjamin first appears in Oroville in 1884, when he registered to vote (according to the 1890 Butte County Great Register). The Dr. Francis Wakelee Benjamin listed in the table is the uncle of one Dr. E. H. Benjamin, formerly of Carmel, Maine, and San Francisco and the inventor/builder of California airships. Dr. F. W. Benjamin practiced medicine in Oroville for a number of years. While we cannot determine exactly when he arrived there, it is clear from the historical record that he was living and practicing his profession in Oroville in the 1880s. Note that **Elmer's** father and uncle shared a common profession as physicians.

Possibly our most fruitful source of information concerning Dr. F. W. Benjamin is his Civil War muster record. The roll data clearly shows Benjamin working during the war as an assistant surgeon. The unit he served with was U Co., 3rd New York Light Artillery (LA) Regiment. Note the roll lists his place of enlistment as Poughkeepsie, New York. Poughkeepsie is forty-two miles northeast of Goshen, New York, in Orange County. As you will see, Dr. Benjamin's muster record may be the glue that binds the pieces of this story together.

Francis W. Benjamin's 3rd New York Light Artillery Muster Record

Francis W Benjamin, New York
Enlist Date: 08 August 1864
Enlist Place: Poughkeepsie, NY
Enlist Rank: Priv
Enlist Age: 27
Promoted to Full Asst Surgeon on 15 September 1864
Served New York
Enlisted U Co. 3rd LA Reg. NY
Mustered Out at Syracuse, NY on 15 July 1865
(New York: Report of the Adjutant-General, NY Roster, Published 1894-1906)

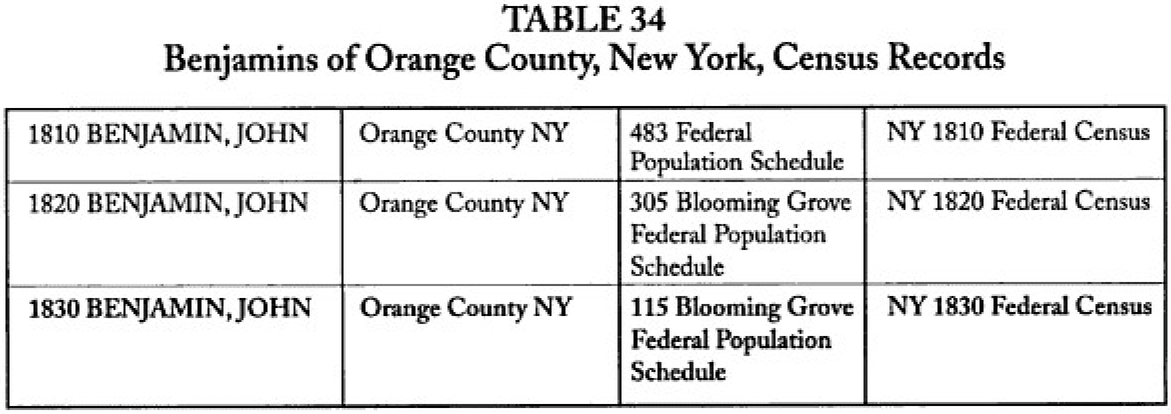

TABLE 34
Benjamins of Orange County, New York, Census Records

1810 BENJAMIN, JOHN	Orange County NY	483 Federal Population Schedule	NY 1810 Federal Census
1820 BENJAMIN, JOHN	Orange County NY	305 Blooming Grove Federal Population Schedule	NY 1820 Federal Census
1830 BENJAMIN, JOHN	Orange County NY	115 Blooming Grove Federal Population Schedule	NY 1830 Federal Census

TABLE 34 (continued)
Benjamins of Orange County, New York, Census Records

1830 BENJAMIN, FRANCIS L.	Orange County NY	118 Blooming Grove Federal Population Schedule	NY 1830 Federal Census
1840 BENJAMIN, JOHN	Orange County NY	289 Warwick Federal Population Schedule	NY 1840 Federal Census
1840 BENJAMIN, HECTOR	Orange County NY	026 Blooming Grove Federal Population Schedule	NY 1840 Federal Census Index
1850 BENJAMIN, JOHN	Orange County NY	034 Warwick Federal Population Schedule	NY 1850 Federal Census Index
1850 BENJAMIN, JOHN	Orange County NY	042 Newburgh Federal Population Schedule	NY 1850 Federal Census Index
1860 BENJAMIN, JOHN	Orange County NY	620 Newburgh Federal Population Schedule	NY 1860 Federal Census Index
1860 BENJAMIN, JOHN	Orange County NY	884 Newburgh Federal Population Schedule	NY 1860 Federal Census Index
1860 BENJAMIN, WILLIAM	Orange County NY	910 Newburgh Federal Population Schedule	NY 1860 Federal Census Index

TABLE 35
Benjamins: 1870 Butte County Census Records

1870 BENJAMIN, HECTOR	Butte County CA 002 Bidwell Township.	Federal Population Schedule	CA 1870 Federal Census Index
1870 BENJAMIN, JOHN	Butte County CA 092 Ophir Township.	Federal Population Schedule	CA 1870 Federal Census Index

Note: Notice the absence of John and Hector Benjamin from the Orange County, New York, census after 1860 and the subsequent appearance of these two individuals in Butte County.

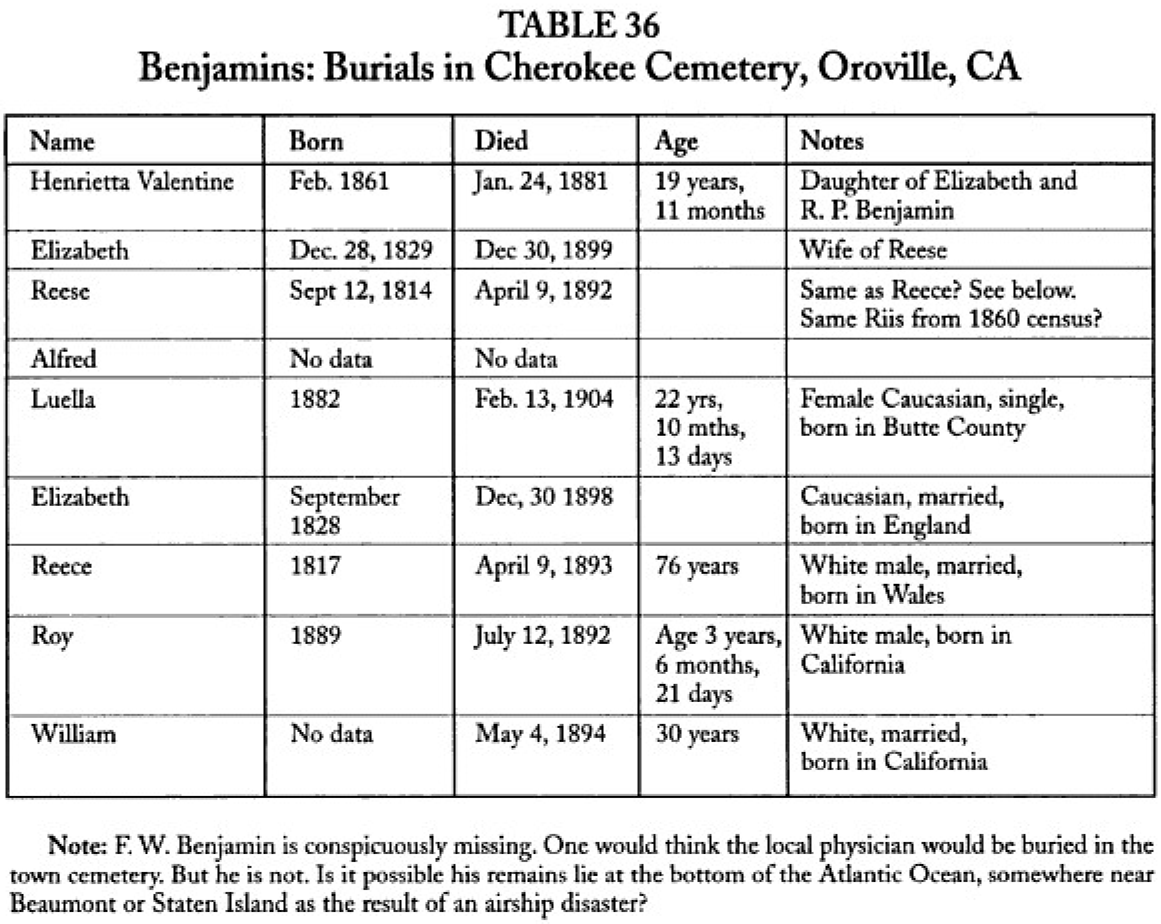

TABLE 36
Benjamins: Burials in Cherokee Cemetery, Oroville, CA

Name	Born	Died	Age	Notes
Henrietta Valentine	Feb. 1861	Jan. 24, 1881	19 years, 11 months	Daughter of Elizabeth and R. P. Benjamin
Elizabeth	Dec. 28, 1829	Dec 30, 1899		Wife of Reese
Reese	Sept 12, 1814	April 9, 1892		Same as Reece? See below. Same Riis from 1860 census?
Alfred	No data	No data		
Luella	1882	Feb. 13, 1904	22 yrs, 10 mths, 13 days	Female Caucasian, single, born in Butte County
Elizabeth	September 1828	Dec, 30 1898		Caucasian, married, born in England
Reece	1817	April 9, 1893	76 years	White male, married, born in Wales
Roy	1889	July 12, 1892	Age 3 years, 6 months, 21 days	White male, born in California
William	No data	May 4, 1894	30 years	White, married, born in California

Note: F. W. Benjamin is conspicuously missing. One would think the local physician would be buried in the town cemetery. But he is not. Is it possible his remains lie at the bottom of the Atlantic Ocean, somewhere near Beaumont or Staten Island as the result of an airship disaster?

To recapitulate, in 1897 three Benjamin's of some interest to us lived in Butte County, California: John was seventy-two, Hector was age 75, and Francis was 56. It is entirely possible that these three Benjamins were brothers or cousins or some combination thereof (born in Blooming Grove, Orange County, New York). The census records show all three men residing near each other in Orange County at differing times.

What is important about Orange County, New York? It is the purported home of another family of great interest in this story: the Wilsons (who did not leave a well-documented paper trail in Orange County). Note the distance from Blooming Grove, New York, to Goshen New York: a mere 8.3 miles. It appears that the Orange County, New York, Benjamins migrated to Butte County, California, between 1860 and 1870. Goshen is located in the political subdivision of Orange County, and the Wilsons claimed residence in or near Goshen before the Civil War.

So, it also seems entirely probable that the Benjamins and Wilsons were intimate acquaintances long before the country was startled by the sight of flying machines in the nightly skies. Some of the older Benjamins weathered the War Between the States in New York, while others left for California in the 1840s and 1850s, perhaps seeking their fortunes in the gold fields. The fact that, in the 1890 Butte County Great Register, two of the Benjamins listed their occupations as miners lends credence to the theory that the Benjamins migrated from New York to Oroville to seek their fortunes in the California gold fields.

The *Yuba, Sutter, Colusa, Butte, and Tehama Counties, California Directory,* dated 1885, lists a Francis W. Benjamin working in Oroville as a physician and surgeon. This Francis W. Benjamin is the uncle of one Elmer H. Benjamin.

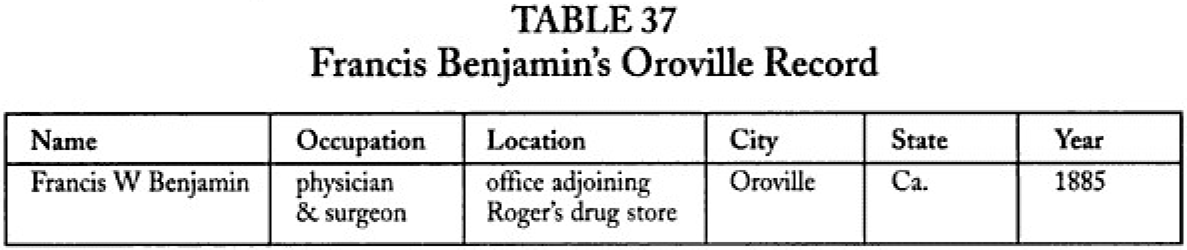

TABLE 37
Francis Benjamin's Oroville Record

Name	Occupation	Location	City	State	Year
Francis W Benjamin	physician & surgeon	office adjoining Roger's drug store	Oroville	Ca.	1885

We know John Benjamin of New York was not Elmer H. Benjamin's father, as the 1880 census data shows Elmer's father was born in Maine. Was John Benjamin of New York a relative of F. W. and E. H. Benjamin? I cannot prove or disprove any family connection at the moment, but I strongly suspect there is one. The very fact that the New York Benjamins migrated to Oroville around 1850, then later Francis and, still later, his nephew Elmer appear in Oroville lends credence to the suspicion these Benjamins were family.

I do find the fact that Prof. Samuel E. Tillman, another character involved in the airship mystery, retired to Maine interestingly coincidental.

LOOKING FOR WILLIAM H. H. HART

William H. H. Hart's existence in 1897 is easy to prove. He had recently completed a four-year term as California's attorney general. Holding such an esteemed position in the state government should suffice to prove beyond any doubt that William H. H. Hart was a real person with more than passing political connections. But, we want to explore in greater depth who Hart was and where he came from. We are motivated to dig deeper into Hart's past for several reasons. One author scoffs at William Henry Harrison Hart's claim to have been a boy-soldier. Because the author does not believe Hart's claims of being a fighter and soldier when he was thirteen years old, he does not believe his claims to represent and unite the various airship interests. I will demonstrate Hart was everything he claimed to be.

We are discovering that as we delve into each of these individual's backgrounds, we stumble across more and more similarities and intersections of their lives. While some of the material concerning the individuals may seem irrelevant, ultimately you will see the relationships.

The following is Hart's official California state biography:

> An English immigrant at age four, he was captured by the Blackhawk Indians, then later orphaned at age 11. With his turbulent upbringing, he directed his youthful energy and desire for danger by joining the Secret Service at age 14. He bravely fought in the violent battlefields of the Civil War. Elected as Attorney General on November 4, 1890, and took office January 5, 1891. Died on May 12,1903, at the age of 55 *(A History of the California Attorney General's Office* [Sacramento: State of California, 1983]).

William H. H. Hart was born in Yorkshire, England, on January 25, 1848. The James Hart family emigrated from Yorkshire to Iowa on the ship *Columbia*, arriving in New York on January 2, 1857. According to the ship's manifest, young William was seven years old, not four as stated in his official California biography. But, given a birth year of 1848, he was in fact twenty-three days short his ninth birthday. His father, James, continued to Illinois where relatives awaited him and his family.

TABLE 38
Columbia's Manifest

Name	Age	Sex/Occ	Origin	Destination
James Hart	44	M/Farmer	England	United States
Mary Hart	44	F/Wife	England	United States
Harriet Hart	20	F/Servant	England	United States
Sarah Hart	15	F/Servant	England	United States
William Hart	7½	M/Child	England	United States
Lewis Hart	5	M/Child	England	United States
Samuel Hart	10m	M/Child	England	United States

The Blackhawk Indians captured young Hart in 1861 and held him captive for six months. In the raid upon their homestead, young Hart's father, mother, and siblings died. Hart supposedly joined the secret service when he was either thirteen or fourteen. The secret service, as we know it, was not organized until 1865, when Hart would have been about fifteen. There is no doubt young Hart joined the federal service at thirteen. According to one source *(Builders of Our Nation: Men of 1913.* Chicago, IL: np, 1914, p. 236), Hart enlisted in the army on January. 23, 1862.I cannot find that muster record. However, I do find two other muster records for Hart.

It is known Hart fought at the battles of Vicksburg, Fort Donelson, Shiloh, Champion Hill, and Missionary Ridge. At Missionary Ridge, on November 25, 1863, Hart was wounded in three places while carrying dispatches from General Grant to General Sherman. Only trustworthy men were selected as dispatch riders. The fact that Hart was on the commanding general's staff as a dispatch rider implies he already had an established reputation as a young man of distinction at the age of thirteen. His assignment to General Grant's headquarters may have been associated with his "secret service." The *Overland Quarterly* (1896) says he was "under special orders" when he served General Grant.

After the Civil War, Hart studied criminal law in the office of Judge W. E. Leffingwell in Lyons, Iowa; commercial law in office of Hon. A. R. Cotton of Lyons; and real-estate and corporate law under Boardman and Brown in Marshalltown, Iowa. Hart received his law degree in 1870 then served as city attorney for De Witt, Iowa, from 1870 to 1871.

Lyons is now a suburb of Clinton, Iowa. It is 1.5 miles north of downtown Clinton and rests on the banks of the Mississippi River.

De Witt is in Clinton County. De Witt is 22 miles west of Lyons.

Marshalltown is in Marshall County. Marshalltown is 150 miles west of Lyons.

Keokuk, Iowa, is 158 miles south of Lyons.

Hart migrated to San Francisco in 1873. His law partner in San Francisco was Julius Foster Fassett. William and Julius were also brothers-in-law. William married Loretta Hedden sometime before 1880, and Julius married her sister, Anna Hedden. Both Loretta and Anna were born in Iowa. On August 11,1888, William and Loretta gave birth to their only child, Lowell J. Hart.

William Hart was elected California attorney general in 1890. He served from January 1891 until January 1895.

The following two tables list Harts of interest to us in the census records:

TABLE 39
Harts in California

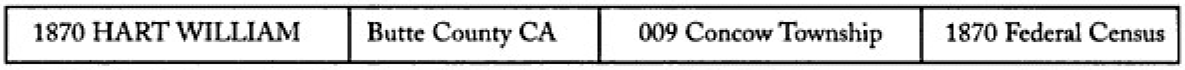

1870 HART WILLIAM	Butte County CA	009 Concow Township	1870 Federal Census

TABLE 40
Harts in Iowa

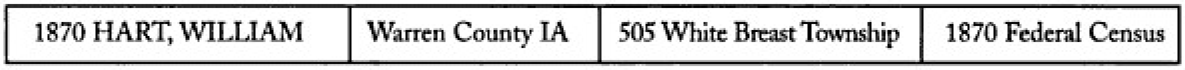

1870 HART, WILLIAM	Warren County IA	505 White Breast Township	1870 Federal Census

White Breast, Iowa, is 53 miles south of Des Moines.

Hart enlisted in the army January 23, 1862, and was honorably discharged February 1866. Note the day of Hart's enlistment—two days before his fourteenth birthday, assuming he was born on January 25,1848. This is our man. Supporting this premise is Attorney General Hart's contention he served in the Union forces when he was thirteen years old. However, I can find no official muster record for Hart in January 1862. Hart's official state biography says he joined the secret service at the beginning of the war. Yet, the secret service, as we know it today, was not founded until 1865. It is known Hart was a courier for Grant until he was wounded at Missionary Ridge. Between November 26, 1863, and May 1864 when he joined the 44th Iowa Infantry Regiment, Hart was probably recovering from wounds received at Missionary Ridge.

Hart's widow applied for a pension in 1910. She included on the pension form the two regiments in which he served, the 44th Iowa Infantry Regiment (May 16, 1864-September 15, 1864) and the 147th Illinois Infantry Regiment (February 03, 1865-January 20, 1866). Muster records vouch for Hart's service in these two regiments. Both of these regiments were "homeguard" types of regiments. "Homeguard" regiments were garrison units and saw little field action. "Homeguard" regiments generally consisted of young, old, and infirm recruits. Such home guard service may indeed confirm the supposition Hart was recuperating from the wounds he received at Missionary Ridge.

Initially, in the race to swell the ranks of the army, and because no one—North or South—thought the war would last long, men were enlisted for ninety days only. After the first battle of Bull Run, July 21, 1861, Northern war planners realized the war was probably going to last somewhat longer, initiating variously 100-, 120-, then 180-day enlistments before finally settling into two- or three-year enlistments. However, homeguard-type units still enlisted men for short periods of time as determined by real or imagined risks to hearth and home. Young Hart, enlisting in May 1864, was a 100-day warrior before reenlisting in the 147th Illinois.

Hart's enlistment age is somewhat exaggerated on the 44th Iowa muster record, perhaps to convince a skeptical recruiting officer of his fitness for service.

William H. H. Hart's 44th Iowa Infantry Regiment Muster Record

Claimed Residence in Clinton County
Enlist Date: 16 May 1864
Enlist Place:
Enlist Rank: Priv
Enlist Age: 18
Served Iowa Enlisted F Co. 44th Inf Reg. IA Mustered Out at Davenport, IA on 15 September 1864
Source: Roster 6c Record of Iowa soldiers in the War of Rebellion Published by English in 1910

Notice Hart claimed residence in Clinton County when he enlisted in 1864. De Witt is in Clinton County. After the war, Hart studied law in De Witt. Perhaps, Hart was living in De Witt when he enlisted.

The 44th Iowa Infantry was a 100-day regiment. Of 867 officers and men, one man was killed and 18 died of disease. The regiment mustered in at Davenport on June 1, 1864, and mustered out at Davenport on September 15, 1864. The regiment did garrison duty at Memphis and La Grange, Tennessee. Hart's company, Company F, was recruited from Clinton and Jackson Counties.

William H. H. Hart 147th Illinois Infantry Regiment Muster Record

William H. H. Hart
Claimed Residence in Dixon (Illinois?)
Enlist Date: 03 February 1865
Enlist Place:
Enlist Rank: Priv
Enlist Age:
Served Illinois Enlisted G Co. 147th Inf Reg. IL Mustered Out at Savannah, GA on 20 January 1866
Source: Illinois: Roster of officers and Enlisted Men
Published in 1900

This short history of the 147th Regiment is derived from the *Official Records of the Rebellion.*

> The 147th Regiment Infantry was organized at Camp Fry, Chicago, Ill., for one year service. On February 18, 1865 the regiment moved to Louisville, Ky., thence to Nashville, Tenn., February 21-25, and to Chattanooga, Tenn., and Dalton, Ga., February 2728. The regiment was attached to the 1st Brigade, 2nd Separate Division, District of the Etowah, Dept. of the Cumberland to July, 1865 then the Department of Georgia to January, 1866.
>
> Regiment performed duty at Dalton, Ga., and operated against guerrillas until May 1,1865. Expedition to Mill Creek March 1416. Action near Dalton March 14. Expedition to Spring Place March 20-22, and to Ringgold March 28-29. Moved to Resaca May 1-2, thence to Calhoun June 26, to Dalton July 2-3. To Marietta, Macon and Albany.
>
> July 27-31. Duty there and at Americus and Smithville until November. Moved to Macon and Hawkinsville November 4-6, thence to Savannah November 25-December 3. (Cos. "F" and "I" at Hawkins ville until November 28. Joined Regiment at Savannah December 5.) Duty at Savannah until January 23,1866. Mustered out January 20, 1866. Moved to Springfield, Ill., January 23-31. Discharged February 8, 1866. Regiment lost during service 3 Enlisted men killed and 31 Enlisted men by disease. Total 34.

Because he did not believe Hart's claims of being a fighter and soldier when he was thirteen years old, Daniel Cohen, author of *The Great Airship Mystery,* scoffed at William Henry Harrison Hart's claims to have represented and united the various airship interests. He asserts that William H. H. Hart is a liar about his military service, and therefore, everything he professes to know about the airships is a lie. Cohen forms his opinion of Hart on Hart's claim to be in the military at age thirteen—something that seems impossible today. The biographical sketch of Hart given in *Important Men ofNineteen-Thirteen* buttresses Hart's claim, with him having enlisted two days prior to his fourteenth birthday on January 23,1862. His official state biography states he originally went into the secret service in 1862. Although many young boys served in the Northern army in such capacities as drummer, bugler, or other primarily noncombatant roles, it would be remarkable for a thirteen year old to serve in the secret service. In any case, from the public record, we know that young Hart saw a good portion of the war looking out from the serious end of a musket, certainly from 1862 onward.

Connecting the airship players together is important to building a strong case for the airships' existence. In 1849, a John H. Hart of Goshen, New York (the Wilsons' hometown) and his cousin Matthew traveled to the California gold fields via ship (John Linville Hall, *Around the Horn in '49: The Journal of the Hartford Union Mining and Trading Company* (San Francisco: The Book Club of California, 1928), 189). I have not ascertained the familial relationship, if any, between this John Hart and the Harts of Iowa. Did William Hart have relatives in California prior to his migration to the state? One Augustus L. Hart of San Francisco was a California attorney general in the 1880s. Was William Hart related to him? The tendency for people to migrate where their relatives had gone before was a constant theme in the 1800s in America. That said, it should be no surprise that young Hart, motherless and fatherless by 1873, would move to the Golden State to be near his father's brother. A question looking for an answer: Was Augustus L. Hart an uncle or near relative of William H. H. Hart?

There are forty-six William Hart's listed as residing in Iowa in the census records from 1790 to 1890. There are no Francis or Elmer Benjamins listed in those same Iowa censuses. It is unlikely that the Harts (William's immediate family) and Benjamins were acquainted, because one family lived in Iowa and the other in New York. However, there may be a connection between the Benjamins of Goshen, the Wilsons of Goshen, and the Harts (John and Matthew) of Goshen.

Another important connection to be made in the airship mystery's foundation is the location of the "quiet Iowa village." Where did William Henry Harrison Hart's father settle in Iowa? A "quiet Iowa village" named Keokuk. James Hart's 1860 census record, given in Table 41, documents his residence in Keokuk in 1860. Later on, we will discover another airship inventor named Marcellus McGary, who lived in Memphis, Missouri. McGary built an airship in Keokuk, Iowa, in 1893 and flew in it in a public demonstration in November 1896, the month the California boys chose to introduce their airships to the good citizens of northern California.

TABLE 41
James Hart's Iowa Census Record

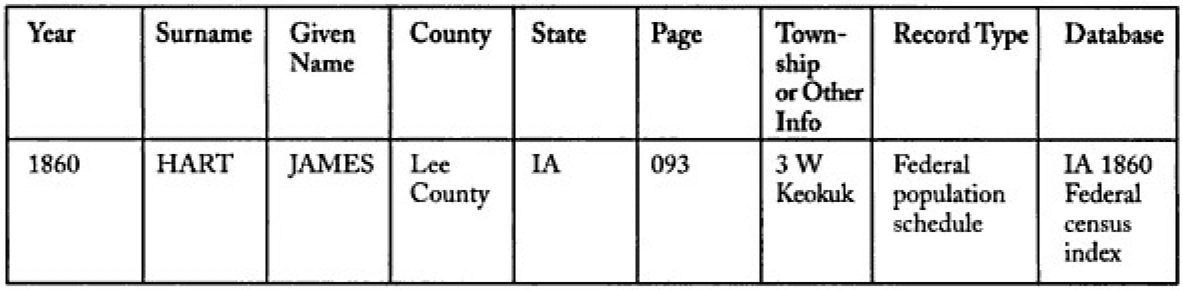

Year	Surname	Given Name	County	State	Page	Township or Other Info	Record Type	Database
1860	HART	JAMES	Lee County	IA	093	3 W Keokuk	Federal population schedule	IA 1860 Federal census index

The 1889-90 San Francisco directory clearly shows William H. H. Hart living and practicing law in that city. According to a descendant of Hart's law partner, Julius Foster Fassett, who was married to an Anna Hedden, Hart was married to Loretta Hedden. Loretta and Anna were sisters, making Julius and William brothers-in-law. Though the search to contact Hart's descendants has been unsuccessful, Fassett's descendants revealed that there are no known papers or records from the law practice.

TABLE 42
San Francisco, California, Directories, 1889 and 1890

Name	Business Name	Occupation	Location 1	Location 2	City	State	Year
William H. H. Hart		attorney-at-law	230 Montgomery, rooms 23-24	1426 Jackson	San Francisco	CA	1889
William H. H. Hart		attorney-at-law	230 Montgomery, rooms 23-24	r. 204 Broderick	San Francisco	CA	1890

TABLE 43
1889 San Francisco City Directory

Name	Business Name	Occupation	Location 1	Location 2	City	State	Year
W. H. H. Hart	Blue Jacket Mining Co. (Elko Co. Nev.)	secretary	230 Montgomery, room 3		San Francisco	Ca	1889
W. H. H. Hart	Copper King Mining Co. (Cochise Co., A. T.)	secretary	230 Montgomery, rooms 23-24		San Francisco	Ca	1889

The 1889 San Francisco city directory lists Hart as the secretary of several mining companies. The "A. T" in the second column of the bottom row of Table 43 stands for Arizona Territory. Any guesses as to who was the principal owner of these two mines? None other than George Hearst, perhaps the richest man in America in 1890.

While living and practicing law in San Francisco, Hart became a member of the Grand Army of the Republic (G.A.R., Geo. H. Thomas Post No. 2, of San Francisco), Masons, I.O.O.F., and the California Bar Association. His residence when he died was Palo Alto and his office was located in the Monadnook Building, San Francisco, California.

A patent application for an airship by Samuel West of San Francisco, patent number 553,634, dated January 28,1896, is included in the appendix. The West patent application is noteworthy because William H. H. Hart of San Francisco is assigned one-half of the patent rights. Hart was, in truth and fact, the legal representative of airship inventors.

Immigrant; Indian captive; orphan; boy soldier; student; attorney; migrant; settler; California attorney general; member of the board of directors of prestigious and financially lucrative companies; active in Union veterans' movements, charitable and professional organizations; and esteemed community leader, William Henry Harrison Hart was an influential and powerful attorney in 1896 San Francisco. Apparently, Hart was everything he claimed to be, including the legal representative for the East- and West-Coast airship interests.

LOOKING FOR AUGUSTUS L. HART

Born in Bloomfield, Indiana, on October 15, 1849, Augustus Loring Hart apparently resided in Linn County, Iowa, for some period of time before journeying to California He was a former California state attorney general from January 5, 1880, until January 7, 1883. Could he have been related to William H. H. Hart? Perhaps, William is Augustus's nephew. It seems reasonable to believe young William Hart would migrate to a city where an influential relative could assist him in his profession.

Augustus Hart's father died sometime between 1860 and 1870. The exact date and cause of his death was unavailable. Augustus died in Livermore, California, in 1901.

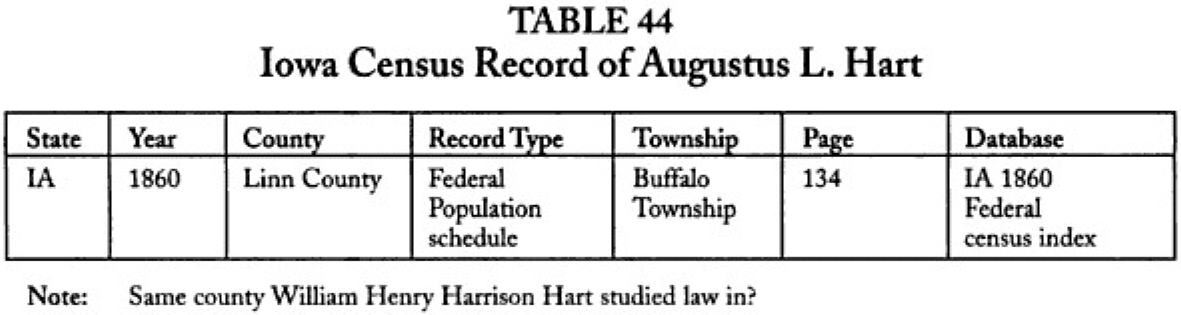

TABLE 44
Iowa Census Record of Augustus L. Hart

State	Year	County	Record Type	Township	Page	Database
IA	1860	Linn County	Federal Population schedule	Buffalo Township	134	IA 1860 Federal census index

Note: Same county William Henry Harrison Hart studied law in?

LOOKING FOR U.S. MARSHAL WILLIAMS

In the chapter 3 account "McKnight's Airship," the paper reported that "A man named McKnight has been working on an airship at U.S. Marshal Williams' ranch . . ." *(Dallas Morning News,* April 10, 1897, p. 4). In the chapter 11 account "At Conroe," the newspaper reported,"... they were disturbed by a call from three strangers who said they were from San Francisco, Cal. They were most reliable gentlemen ... They had left the ship at Williams ranch near town and walked in to get supper by way of a change." Is this ranch owner the same U.S. Marshal Williams of Paris, Texas? Conroe is near the home of the Texas state prison system at Huntsville.

But, just who is Marshal Williams? John Shelby Williams was appointed U.S. marshal of the Eastern District of Texas for a period of service from January 15, 1894, to February 28,1898. Marshal Williams' territory included Conroe. Perhaps he owned a second ranch near Conroe. John Shelby Williams, Jr., was born in Sonoma County, California, in 1848, the son of John S. and Maria Louisa (Gordon) Williams. In 1849 John and Maria moved to Butte County. His father died in May, soon after moving. In 1850 Maria married Lindsay Carson, a Butte County man, and they were living in Sonoma County in 1880. U . S. Marshal John Williams, Jr., was raised in Butte County and left for Texas in 1870. A birth year of 1848 would place him in the same age group as many other airship characters, such as William Hart and Dr. Elmer Benjamin, who also have strong Butte County connections. The information source for John Shelby Williams (Sr. and Jr.) comes from the California Pioneer Register and Index 1542-1848, page 384. From the historical record, it appears extremely probable that

U.S. Marshal John Shelby Williams and the Butte County, California, airship crowd were longtime acquaintances.

The 1880 census record shows that John Shelby Williams, Jr., was living in Lamar County, Texas, and additional information has him living in Red River County in 1890—a county immediately east of Lamar County. Paris, Texas, is located in Lamar County.

For the record, a John S. Williams is listed in the 1870 Fannin County census. Fannin County is immediately west of Lamar County, but this Williams, apparently, is not our man. According to Tom Scott, county historian, this Williams died in 1871, had a brother named Thomas, and was from Virginia. But, there may have been a family connection between John Shelby and the Fannin County Williams.

It is reasonable to believe the airship captains would choose to keep their vessels out of sight on the secluded ranch of a longtime friend who could legally enforce a no-trespassing edict. A search of Fannin County deed records reveals several Williams' who owned property in and around Bonham. Only one John Williams with sufficient acreage during the right time period to be of interest to us shows up in the deed records. This John Williams, who owned seventy-six acres located between Bonham and Ladonia, appears to be the owner of the "Williams ranch" reported in the newspaper account. In the illustration giving the location of Williams' ranch, it is identified by the circle between Ladonia and Bonham.

The legal description of the Williams property is "P.A. Hulsey, E. H. Sebastian, and Frank Sebastian to John Williams for $200.00 part of the survey of one league and one labor granted to Daniel Davis ... on the waters of the Sulphur River 76 acres. November 29, 1880" *{Fannin County Deed Book 10,* p. 378).

We estimated the general area of the airships' daytime lair using a tried-and-true mathematical method called triangulation. The estimate pinpoints the lair somewhat north and west of Bonham. This estimate comes from shooting a back azimuth using sighting information from the newspaper accounts—an approximation, as several factors influence the results. The most obvious problem with shooting a back azimuth is the assumption that the object was traveling in a straight line. Wind and course changes can make such an approach to determining the flight origination of airships somewhat inaccurate. The back azimuth estimate is a "in the ballpark" estimate. We were certainly in the ballpark with this one. The back-azimuth estimate was off by only about fifteen miles! The evidence identifying John Shelby Williams' ranch as the location of the airships' daytime lair is incontrovertible.

LOOKING FOR SOLOMON ANDREWS

While the thought of an airship flying around the sky in 1897 at speeds of 100-plus miles per hour and at altitudes of 10,000-plus feet may seem astounding, the fact is that others were flying the skies of America and Europe sometime before 1897. The first "officially recognized" airship to be powered by a mechanical engine was built and flown by a Frenchman, Henri Giffard, in 1852.

In the United States, Dr. Solomon Andrews would serve as an early inventor of airships. Andrews, thrice mayor of Perth Amboy, New Jersey, was born in 1806 and died on October 20, 1872. Obviously, Dr. Andrews was not a member of the 1897 airship team. But he may have contributed greatly to their organization and achievements, and it is even likely that he was their mentor and inspiration. Like several other characters in this saga, Dr. Andrews was a prolific inventor.

Solomon Andrews was an M.D. and served on the Sanitary Commission during the Civil War. He was, for a time, health officer of his hometown, Perth Amboy, New Jersey, where he developed the town's first sewerage system to help fight cholera and yellow fever. Andrews created, among many other useful items, a lock, a sewing machine, a barrel maker, a fumigator, a velocipede, a gas lamp, forging presses, a kitchen stove, an airship (called the *Aeron),* and a pipe that would "filter out harmful substances" from tobacco.

He purchased the old army barracks in Perth Amboy, New Jersey, in 1847 and converted the dilapidated wooden structure into the Inventor's Institute, where he was joined by many other inventors. Because of his great interest in flying, Dr. Andrews later changed the name (and the focus) of the organization to the Aerial Navigation Company. This company was probably responsible for one somewhat famous 1849 *New York Herald* advertisement that offered airship transportation to the California gold fields. According to the advertisement, a prospective miner could be in

California in just a couple of days versus the threemonth boat trip or the six-month overland journey. A question worth asking: Was the Inventor's Institute, or Aerial Navigation Company, the precursor of the Sonora Aero Club? Andrews had an office in New York City at 11 Walker Street. It is known that men of wealth visited with Dr. Andrews and invested their money with him. The Inventor's Institute may very well be the mysterious NYMZA Dellschau mentioned as the financial sponsor of the Sonora Aero Club.

Dr. Solomon Andrews circa 1863
(Courtesy from an old newspaper)

Also, in 1847, Dr. Andrews performed an incredible publicity stunt that gained the attention of the country. A successful inventor, he chained a locked trunk containing $1,000 (a huge sum in 1847) to a lamppost in downtown New York City. Then he advertised for any person to pick the lock and claim the $1,000 as their reward. For three months, many people tried—perhaps, every safe cracker and locksmith in the city. No one succeeded. From this triumphant demonstration, he secured a lucrative contract to supply locks to the national government. There can be no doubt the demonstration gained Andrews many new contacts and investors in the business world, which probably helped him obtain financing for his aerial navigation experiments.

In a letter dated August 9, 1862, Dr. Andrews wrote President Lincoln, suggesting he could "produce an aerostat for reconnaissance, if nothing more, in aid of the armies of the Union" (Mary Kingsley, "The Flying Jerseyman, Dr. Solomon Andrews of Perth Amboy," *Proceeding of the New*

Jersey Historical Society (July 1954): 169). Lincoln liked the idea and asked the War Department to keep him informed of Dr. Andrews' progress. Lincoln further requested eyewitness accounts of the progress and test flights of Dr. Andrews' airship.

"The machine was completed and made her first flight in June, 1863" (Roger B. Whitman, "He Flew an Airship Before the Wrights Were Born!" *Popular Science*, (January 1932): 13) Dr. Andrews' airship flew into the wind on its maiden voyage, reaching an altitude of 200 feet and landing safely. The motorless airship worked and was navigable but had some problems with control. After completing refinements, Andrews tested it again, with promising results. Determining the ship ready for public observation, and probably keeping in mind the president's desire to have eyewitness accounts of the airship's success, Andrews invited the press to witness a flight of the *Aeron* on September 4, 1863. A reporter from the *New York Herald* was obviously impressed:

> AERIAL NAVIGATION. / An Extraordinary Invention— The Air Navigated Successfully-The Great Air Ships— Incidents of Their Trial Trips.
>
> We have this week the pleasure to record the success of the most extraordinary invention of the age, if not the most so of any the world ever saw—at least the greatest stride in invention ever made by a single individual.
>
> In October last Dr. Solomon Andrews, of Perth Amboy, NJ, commenced the construction of a war aerostat, for reconnoitering purposes, on his own personal responsibility, not being able, after submitting his plans to the War Department, to make the honorable Secretary of War "see the utility" of a machine which would go over into [] and reconnoitre the force and position of the enemy. His plan showed on the face of them to any one not stupid that the machine could not do otherwise than go ahead in any direction in which the bow was pointed, and that, too, with any amount of power or force which might be desired, and which greenbacks would readily procure. The power required and the propelling apparatus added but little weight to the aerostat, whether of large or small dimensions; consequently it did not increase the dimensions of the aerostat beyond

that of balloons of ordinary construction, much less in size than many that are now made. The machine made by Mr. Andrews would carry up three men in addition to all the fixtures and paraphernalia for its forward movement. IT contained twenty-six thousand cubic feet of hydrogen gas. It carried him, weighing one hundred and seventy-two pounds, and to hundred and fifty-six pounds of ballast.

Upon his invitation last spring we have sent our reporters at three different times to witness his experiments with his machine, and have watched his progress with great interest.

Its form was that of three cegars pointed at both, secured together at their longitudinal equators, covered by a net, and supporting by one hundred and twenty cords a car sixteen feet below under its center..

The car was twelve feet long, made of basket work, and was 16 inches wide at the bottom. The aerostat, or cylindroids, were made of varnished linen, like ordinary balloons.

On Friday, the 4th instant, he made his last experiment, and demonstrated to an admiring crowd the possibility of going against the wind, and of guiding her in any and every direction with a small rudder having only seventeen square feet of surface. He made no long flight in one straight line, lest his modus operandi aboard be divulged; but by a most ingenious plan demonstrated her capabilities beyond all possibility of doubt, whilst he prevented a public knowledge of his method of propelling.

After a few short flights, to satisfy himself and a few friends that all was right, and that she would do all he had contemplated, he set her off in a spiral course upward, she going at a rate of not less than 120 miles per hour, and describing circles in the air of more than one and a half miles in circumference. She made twenty revolutions before she entered the upper strata of clouds and was lost to view. She passed through the first strata of dense white clouds, about two miles high, scattering them as she entered in all direction. In her upward flight could be distinctly seen her rapid movement in a contrary direction to the moving clouds, and as she came before the wind passing by them with great celerity. As she was distinctly seen thus to move, both below and above the clouds on the clear blue sky at 5:00 o'clock p.m., with the sun shinning clear upon her, there could be no mistake or optical delusion to consider.

As to her propelling power and motive apparatus, it behooves us not now to speak. It might be considered contraband of war, or affording aid and comfort to the enemy, for with such a machine in the hands of Jeff Davis the armies around Washington would be powerless to preserve the capitol.

We think Dr. Andrews deserves more praise for the patriotic ingenuity with which he has preserved his secret, and yet tried his grand experiment in the open air before the public, than even that manifested in the conception and construction of his machine. Of that and its beautiful simplicity we may have occasion to speak hereafter. We have the documents *(New York Herald,* September 8,1863, p. 38).

Aerial Navigation. / TO THE EDITOR OF THE HERALD

Perth Amboy, New Jersey

Sept 8,1863.

Will you have the goodness to publish, for the information of scientific men, the fact that the twenty revolutions made by my aerial ship in her spiral circle of half mile diameter were made in time of fourteen and a half minutes. To me the most astonishing thing was that the material of which she was constructed withstood the resistance of the air at so great a velocity. It was, however, prepared for it, by being brought to a point at the bow ends of the three cylindroids over conical pieces of cork five inches in diameter at their base. Strong cord secured these points to the apex of light strips of wood, extending along the sides of each cylindroids, and meeting together at that point.

Your reporter has spoken within bounds as to the rate of her speed. The first eleven revolutions were made in seven minutes and few seconds. The last three revolutions were made in three and a half minutes. A gradual diminution of velocity was a matter of course. The circles did not diminish in diameter, for they appeared larger to the view as she ascended, and they must have increased in size from her slower movement, owing to a diminution of motive power, as well as the rarer air acting upon her rudder. Hence the calculations made by your reporter on the whole number of revolutions, in the whole period of time before she was lost to view in the upper strata of clouds, falls far short of her greatest velocity. It must have been over two hundred miles per hour at the earlier portion of her spiral movement. Very respectfully, yours, Solomon Andrews {*New York Herald,* September 9, 1863, p. 4).

Dr. Andrews was frustrated in his efforts to promote his airship with the War Department, but he finally was able to schedule an appointment with President Lincoln and report to him personally. Lincoln ordered Secretary of War Edwin Stanton to form a congressional committee to investigate the invention and make recommendations for its acquisition. Congressional hearings were held in March 1864. The committee recommended the airship be purchased by the War Department immediately. Apparently, Edwin Stanton, a man of limited vision, squashed the recommendations, and on March 22,1865, Andrews received a letter from the House Military Affairs Committee stating they were really not that interested, and besides, the war was over, seemed to be their laconic attitude.

The *Records of the Committee on Military Affairs, 17th-79th Congresses (1822-1946)* lists Solomon Andrews and his flying machine: "Many petitions are pleas from American inventors who sought congressional approval of their inventions. During the 19th century, the committee was asked to consider the following inventions: . . . The petition promoting Dr. Solomon Andrews' 'aerial ship' with inflatable cylinders includes a photograph of the machine (38A-G12.13)."

I suspect Dr. F. W. Benjamin and most of the other airship crowd read in the fall of 1863 the stirring exploits in the *New York Herald* of Solomon Andrews and his flying machine. Newspapers were an eagerly sought-after commodity on the Civil War battlefield, as the war-weary soldiers were hungry for news. The newspapers were held in high esteem by the soldiers, as they brought to the battle-scarred veterans not only news of home and even battle results, but also a sense that in some place people still lived normal lives. Perhaps, sitting around a campfire somewhere in the Virginia forest, they read the story of Andrews and determined to duplicate his feats when the war was over.

Of interest is the fact that Dr. Andrews served with the Sanitary Commission during the fall of 1864. He was stationed at Pittsburg Landing and Harrisburg Landing on the James River near Petersburg, Virginia. A medical doctor, he may have personally met Dr. F. W. Benjamin while performing his duties during the siege of Petersburg. Considering such members of the Sanitary Commission routinely inspected and assisted field hospitals, it is probable the two men met. Andrews may have even met some of the airship crowd who were wounded during some period of the war.

LOOKING FOR MCKNIGHT

Recall the comment from the "McKnight's Airship" account: "A man named McKnight has been working on an airship at U.S. Marshal Williams' ranch ..." Unfortunately, all we have is McKnight's last name. Utilizing the scant information we have, let's see if we can connect a McKnight to the airship crowd. Several McKnights from Orange County—the political division where Goshen, New York, is located—are listed on various census records. What is absolutely electric is the discovery of a Charles McKnight in Orange County, New York, in 1860 and a Charles McKnight in Sherman, Texas, in 1870. A Charles McKnight is identified in the 1870 federal Texas census as living in Sherman in Grayson County. Charles McKnight is not listed in any other census for Texas other than that of 1870. Sherman is forty-seven miles northwest of Ladonia, Texas, site of Williams' ranch and the airship lair.

The Charles McKnight identified in the 1860 federal New York census in Orange County is listed as living in New Windsor. New Windsor is about sixteen air miles from Goshen (home of the Wilsons). Charles McKnight is not listed in any other census for New York other than that of 1860.

TABLE 45
Charles McKnight's New York Census Records

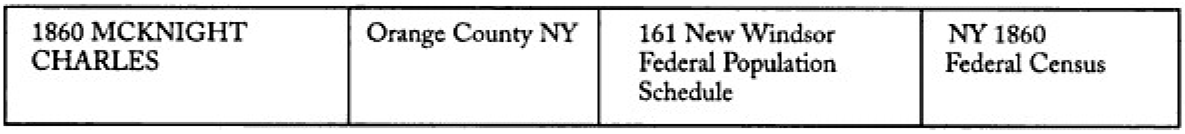

1860 MCKNIGHT CHARLES	Orange County NY	161 New Windsor Federal Population Schedule	NY 1860 Federal Census

TABLE 46
Charles McKnight's Texas Census Records

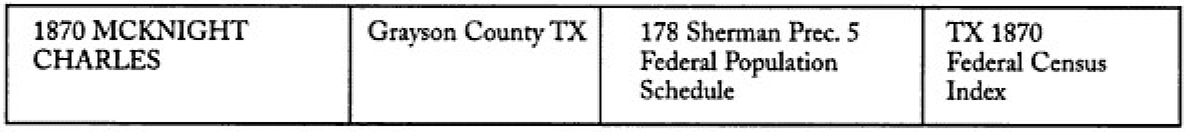

1870 MCKNIGHT CHARLES	Grayson County TX	178 Sherman Prec. 5 Federal Population Schedule	TX 1870 Federal Census Index

Is the Orange County, New York, Charles McKnight the same Charles McKnight of Grayson County? We cannot say for certain, but isn't it strange that a Charles McKnight would show up in the same two places as Hiram Wilson, on or about the same time? We do not know where Charles McKnight was between 1870 and 1897.

LOOKING FOR PROF. (CAPTAIN) SAMUEL E. TILLMAN

Samuel Escue Tillman was born in 1847 in Tennessee. He graduated from the West Point Military Academy, class of 1869, and eventually returned to the esteemed halls as a professor of chemistry, mineralogy, and geology in 1880. He was the author of *Elementary Lessons in Heat; and Essential Principles of Chemistry.* Tillman also authored *Academic History of the Military Academy, 1802-1902 (The Centennial of the United States Military Academy, 2* vols., Washington: GPO, 1904). Tillman led an eventful life as a soldier, inventor, and educator. By 1902, he was promoted to the rank of colonel. He served as superintendent of the U.S. Military Academy from August 13,1917, until his retirement from the army on June 11,1919. He was promoted to brigadier general upon his retirement. He died in 1942.

The 1860 federal census data lists Tillman as a thirteen-year-old youth in Bedford County, Tennessee. The 1870 federal census lists him as a twenty three year old in Jersey City, Hudson County, New Jersey. Note that Jersey City and Perth Amboy (home of Dr. Solomon Andrews) are about eighteen air miles apart. Solomon Andrews did not die until 1872. Did Tillman meet Dr. Andrews? We don't know, but aren't the coincidences mounting in this great story?

TABLE 47
Samuel Tillman's Tennessee Census Records

1860 TILLMAN SAMUEL E.	Bedford County TN	208 W Division 7th Dist Federal Population Schedule	TN 1860 Federal Census

TABLE 48
Samuel Tillman's New Jersey Census Records

1870 TILLMAN SAMUEL	Hudson County NJ	194 3 W. Jersey City Federal Population Schedule	NJ 1870 Federal Census

Samuel Tillman
(Courtesy U.S. Military Academy)

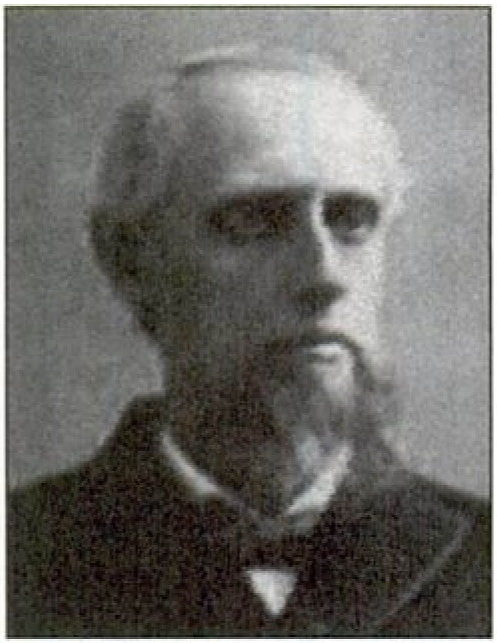

Amos Dolbear, 1874
(Courtesy Tufts University)

LOOKING FOR PROF. AMOS E. DOLBEAR

Amos Emerson Dolbear was born in Norwich, Connecticut, on November 10, 1837. He graduated from Wesleyan University, Delaware, Ohio, in 1866. In 1867 he graduated from the University of Michigan with the degree of M.E. He received the degree of Ph.D. in 1883, also from the University of Michigan. From 1866 to 1867 he was instructor of chemistry at the University of Michigan. From 1867 to 1868 he was assistant professor of natural sciences at the University of Kentucky in Lexington. From 1868 until 1874 he was professor of natural sciences at Bethany College, Behtany, West Virginia, and mayor of that city from 1871 to 1872. In 1874 he was appointed professor of physics and astronomy and chairman of the department at Tufts College, College Hill, Massachusetts.

One hundred years ago, Prof. Amos E. Dolbear of West Virginia published his formula for telling the air temperature from the rate of treecricket chirping. A man of many interests, Dolbear clearly demonstrated in his book *Modes of Motion,* or *Mechanical Conceptions of Physical*

Phenomena that he was a leading physical-science theorist at the turn of the century.

He made valuable contributions to science. Among the inventions that he has perfected are the electric gyroscope, used to demonstrate the rotation of the earth, in 1867; tuning forks, for the exhibition of Lissajous curves, in 1872; and the opeidoscope, for the exhibition of vocal vibrations. In 1873 he began to study the convertibility of sound into electricity and, in 1876, perfected and patented his magneto electric telephone (the basis for his lawsuit against Alexander Graham Bell for patent infringement), and the static telephone in 1879. He published *The Art of Projecting* (Boston, 1876), *The Speaking Telephone* (1877), and *Sound and its Phenomena* (1885).

In 1882 Professor Dolbear communicated over a distance of a quarter of a mile without wires. (This fact is particularly noteworthy because it proves Professor Dolbear preceded radio pioneers Hertz and Marconi.) Professor Dolbear received a U.S. patent for a wireless telegraph in 1882 and obtained a patent for an induction method of wireless telegraph in 1886. He was recognized for his contributions to science at both the Paris Exposition in 1881 and the Crystal Palace Exposition in 1882. Dolbear retired from Tufts College in 1914.

Dolbear, throughout the latter half of the 1800s, acquainted himself with all of the leading scientists of the country. One such associate of Dolbear's, Moses Gerrish Farmer, was a prolific inventor in the mid1800s. In September 1859, Farmer discovered the law of the self-exciting dynamo, a necessary device for the electrical propulsion of airships. Farmer completed the first dynamo machine in 1868, lighting a house to demonstrate its usefulness.

At the dawn of the new century, Professor Dolbear applauded Farmer's achievement, commenting that the dynamo was "an invention which has made possible all the electrical industries of today." Between 1864 and 1868, Farmer perfected a rechargeable thermoelectric battery (the Fargo battery?) and, in 1868, constructed the largest one ever built for the deposition of copper upon steel to produce the American-compound telegraph wire. Professor Dolbear was in good company. A man with such an inquiring mind would certainly find great interest in the flying machine of Dr. Andrews. Dolbear and Tillman probably knew each other through their professions, as each was a leading educator, author, and inventor during the historical period of interest.

LOOKING FOR MR. WALTERS

In the chapter 9 account "Was Aboard an Airship," the writer stated that one of the crew members was identified as Mr. Walters, airship engineer. Other crew members aboard were identified as Mr. Wilson and Mr. Scott Warren. Let us assume that the Mr. Wilson referred to was the same Mr.

Wilson identified in other accounts, namely, Mr. Hiram Wilson. Then, the Mr. Walters on this flight may have been Mr. Wilson's grandfather or other close relative. Hiram Wilson's mother was named Luna (Walters) Wilson. Her father was James P. Walters. The familial relationships are documented by *The National Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution* (vol. 149, p. 113).

LOOKING FOR C. C. AKERS

Not much information surfaces regarding C. C. Akers. I imagine the counties and organizations he served as a law-enforcement officer contain archived records of his service. It is sufficient for us to place him in or near Fort Worth around the time Hiram Wilson was a young boy living in or near the community. Other aspects of his life are of no great interest to us. The only Texas census record for an Akers is the 1880 census, which lists a C. C. Akers living in Maverick County. Akers and Wilson say they knew each other in the 1870s in Fort Worth.

TABLE 49
Sheriff Akers' Texas Census Record

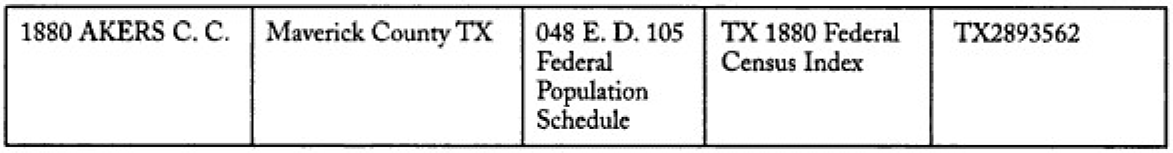

1880 AKERS C. C.	Maverick County TX	048 E. D. 105 Federal Population Schedule	TX 1880 Federal Census Index	TX2893562

LOOKING FOR GEORGE APPLEGATE

Recall attorney Hart's comments concerning George Applegate and the assistance he provided Dr. Smith and Benjamin during the construction of an airship. Others have claimed Hart was a liar for various reasons. Let's see if we can associate Applegate with any other airship characters in some context outside the airship story. Perhaps, if such an association were found, it will establish further proof of the airship story's veracity. California census records only list one George Applegate:

TABLE 50
George Applegate's California Census Record

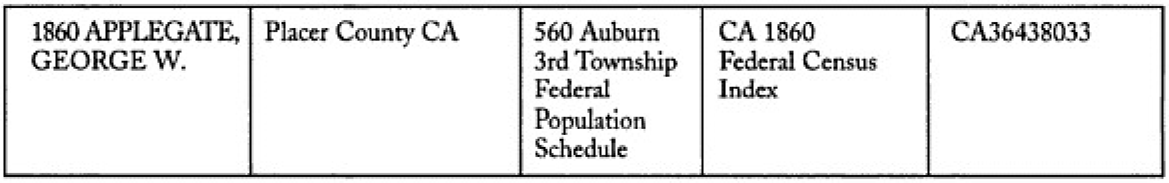

1860 APPLEGATE, GEORGE W.	Placer County CA	560 Auburn 3rd Township Federal Population Schedule	CA 1860 Federal Census Index	CA36438033

George W. Applegate can also be found in Civil War muster records:

George Applegate's 3rd Light Artillery Regiment Muster Record

Enlist Date: 30 August 1864
Enlist Place: Auburn, NY
Enlist Rank: Priv
Enlist Age: 23
Served New York
Enlisted Batty I Co. 3rd LA Reg. NY
Mustered out at Trenton, NJ on 13 June 1865
(New York: Report of the Adjutant-General, 26 June 1900
Number: 1250585 State: NY, Published 1894-1906)

Applegate served in the same light-artillery regiment as Dr. Francis W. Benjamin for over nine months. Considering most Army of the Potomac artillery and infantry regiments, originally numbering anywhere from 1,000 to 1,800 men, after a battle or two numbered 250 men or less, it is very likely the two men knew each other.

George Applegate's name does not appear in the newspaper accounts other than in Hart's inconsequential remark concerning Dr. Smith. With such scant information concerning the subject, we have to dig to find additional information on Applegate.

TABLE 51
Pacific Coast Directory Entry for George Applegate

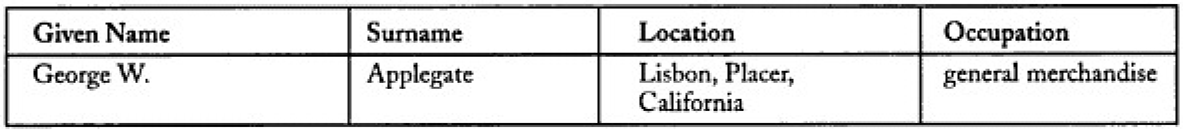

Given Name	Surname	Location	Occupation
George W.	Applegate	Lisbon, Placer, California	general merchandise

Although Applegate lived in California he served in a New York regiment. A discerning individual may ask how that was possible. Well, bounties in 1864, the year George enlisted, were paid by states to fill their enlistment quotas. The states, as a natural consequence of the bounty system, began to bid for the bounty men (e.g., paid volunteers). By the end of the year, bounties as high as $1,500 (an incredible sum in 1864) were being paid. Perhaps, he enlisted in a New York regiment to obtain as much bounty money as possible. But, more likely, he joined the 3rd New York Light Artillery because he already knew the Benjamins from Butte County, California, and wanted to serve with men he knew.

There is no doubt George Applegate was a real person who served with Dr. Francis W. Benjamin for nine months in the Army of the Potomac. Was Hart making up a fanciful story to amuse the newspaper folks and get his name in the paper as one author has suggested? Ask yourself, how could Attorney Hart fabricate a story that was over forty years in the making?

LOOKING FOR GEORGE D. COLLINS

There does not seen to be any doubt that George Collins was a real person in 1896. However, just to make it formal, a check of the San Francisco directory for the years 1889, 1891, and 1895 does show a George Collins in San Francisco in 1870, practicing law.

TABLE 52
San Francisco, California, Directories (1889, 1891, 1895)

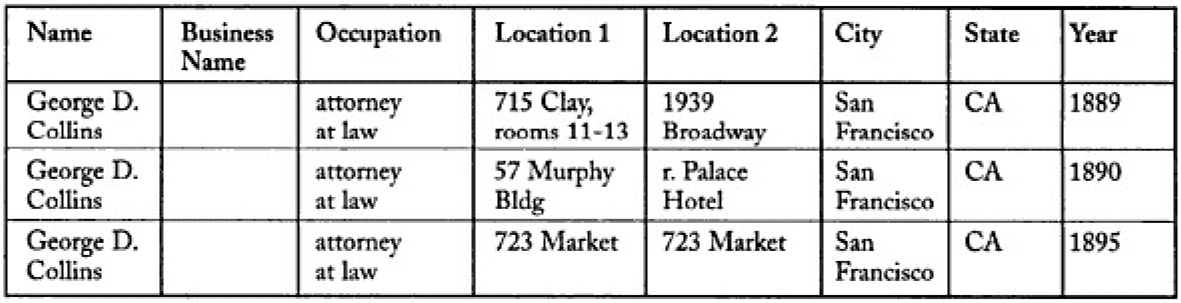

Name	Business Name	Occupation	Location 1	Location 2	City	State	Year
George D. Collins		attorney at law	715 Clay, rooms 11-13	1939 Broadway	San Francisco	CA	1889
George D. Collins		attorney at law	57 Murphy Bldg	r. Palace Hotel	San Francisco	CA	1890
George D. Collins		attorney at law	723 Market	723 Market	San Francisco	CA	1895

George married both Agnes and Charlotta Newman on May 15, 1889. Perhaps, George was Mormon? According to a reference in a San Francisco newspaper account, George Collins resided in Alameda in 1897. Agnes died in May 1901. In 1905, Charlotta Collins sued for divorce, desiring maintenance, alimony, and child support. George testified he was not married to Charlotta, apparently having lived only with Agnes during the intervening years before her death. In any case, Charlotta produced a marriage certificate, whereupon George was indicted for perjury. George fled to Canada and was subsequently extradited to the United States in 1906. He was found guilty of perjury and sentenced to fourteen years in prison. Besides making headlines during his perjury trial, he stirred the populace with an attempted escape from California's infamous San Qyentin prison.

By 1930 George is out of prison and living in San Francisco, married to Clarice. From the 1930 census record we can see George was born in Kentucky. This information is corroborated by the California Death Index. From the death index, we also learn George was born on July 4, 1864. Armed with his place of birth and birth date, we find George in the 1880 Kentucky census record.

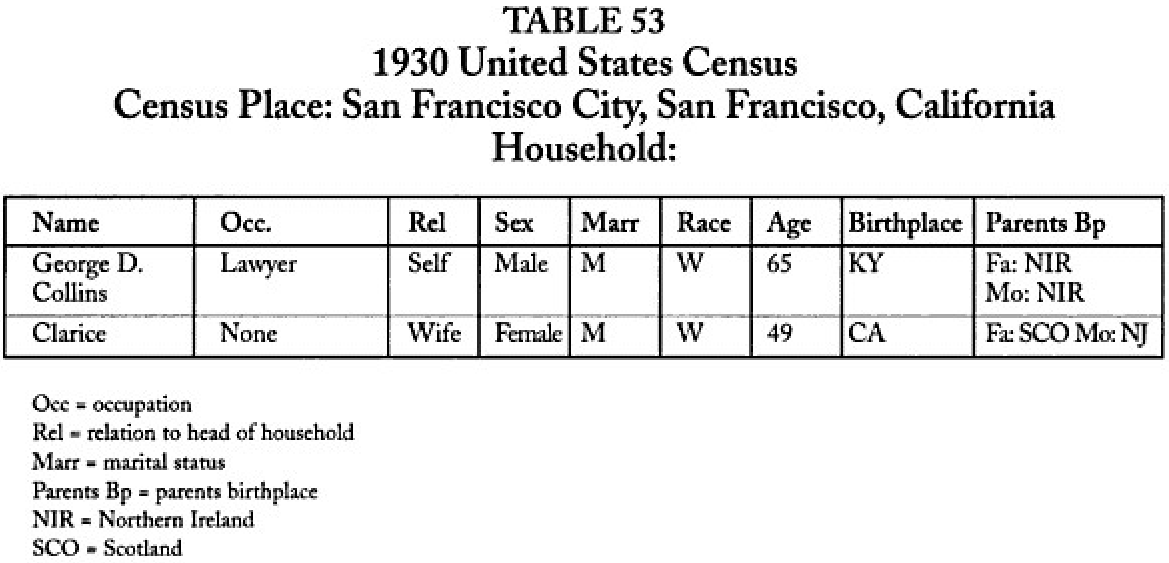

TABLE 53
1930 United States Census
Census Place: San Francisco City, San Francisco, California
Household:

Name	Occ.	Rel	Sex	Marr	Race	Age	Birthplace	Parents Bp
George D. Collins	Lawyer	Self	Male	M	W	65	KY	Fa: NIR Mo: NIR
Clarice	None	Wife	Female	M	W	49	CA	Fa: SCO Mo: NJ

Occ = occupation
Rel = relation to head of household
Marr = marital status
Parents Bp = parents birthplace
NIR = Northern Ireland
SCO = Scotland

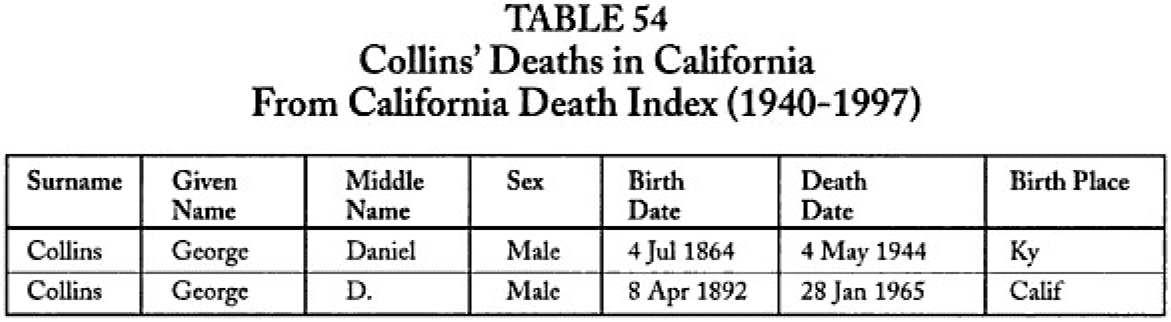

TABLE 54
Collins' Deaths in California
From California Death Index (1940-1997)

Surname	Given Name	Middle Name	Sex	Birth Date	Death Date	Birth Place
Collins	George	Daniel	Male	4 Jul 1864	4 May 1944	Ky
Collins	George	D.	Male	8 Apr 1892	28 Jan 1965	Calif

Collins did not serve in the military during the Civil War. From Table 54 we see Collins was too young to serve. The California Death Index (1940-1997) lists his birth date as July 4, 1864.

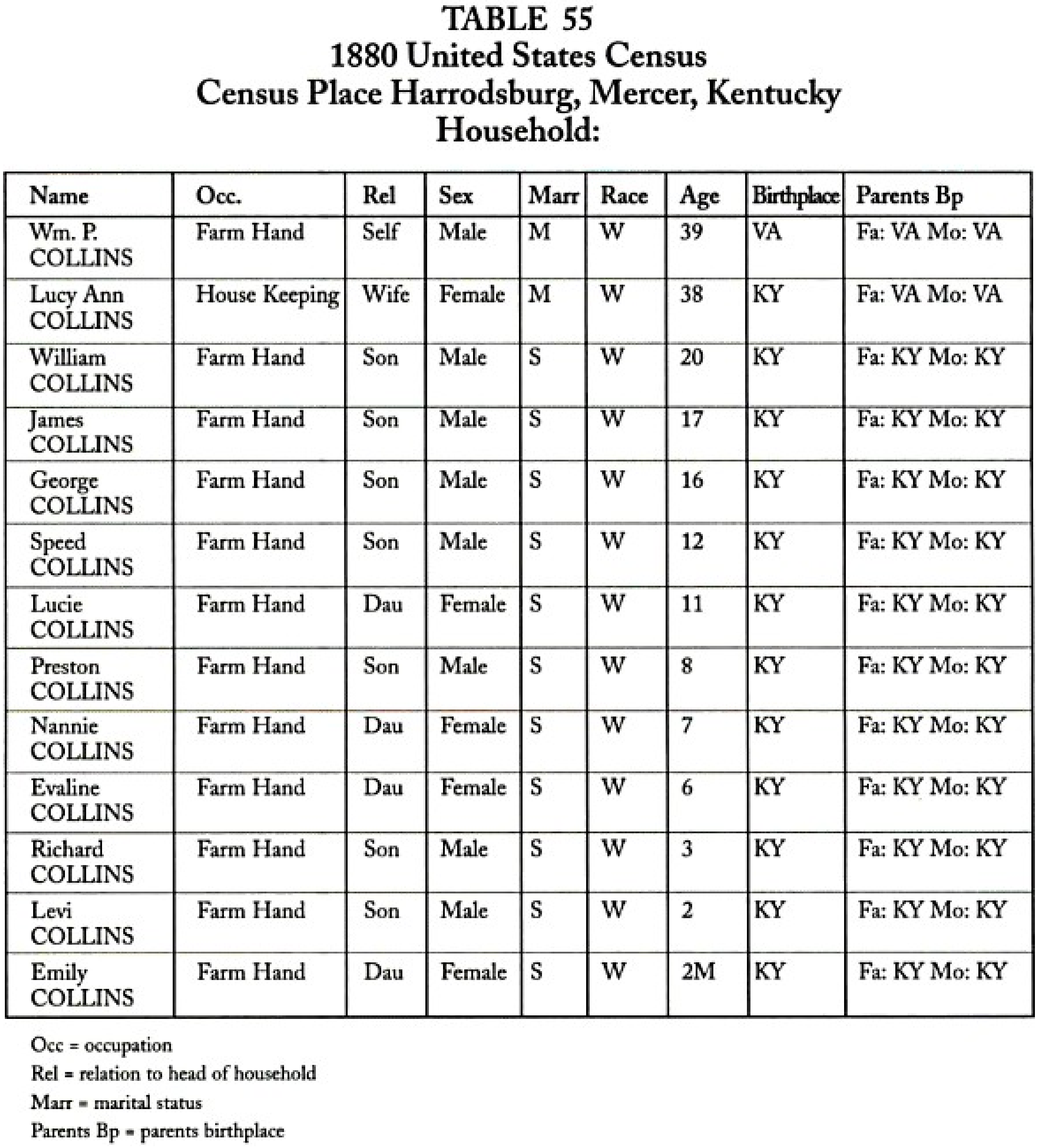

TABLE 55
1880 United States Census
Census Place Harrodsburg, Mercer, Kentucky
Household:

Name	Occ.	Rel	Sex	Marr	Race	Age	Birthplace	Parents Bp
Wm. P. COLLINS	Farm Hand	Self	Male	M	W	39	VA	Fa: VA Mo: VA
Lucy Ann COLLINS	House Keeping	Wife	Female	M	W	38	KY	Fa: VA Mo: VA
William COLLINS	Farm Hand	Son	Male	S	W	20	KY	Fa: KY Mo: KY
James COLLINS	Farm Hand	Son	Male	S	W	17	KY	Fa: KY Mo: KY
George COLLINS	Farm Hand	Son	Male	S	W	16	KY	Fa: KY Mo: KY
Speed COLLINS	Farm Hand	Son	Male	S	W	12	KY	Fa: KY Mo: KY
Lucie COLLINS	Farm Hand	Dau	Female	S	W	11	KY	Fa: KY Mo: KY
Preston COLLINS	Farm Hand	Son	Male	S	W	8	KY	Fa: KY Mo: KY
Nannie COLLINS	Farm Hand	Dau	Female	S	W	7	KY	Fa: KY Mo: KY
Evaline COLLINS	Farm Hand	Dau	Female	S	W	6	KY	Fa: KY Mo: KY
Richard COLLINS	Farm Hand	Son	Male	S	W	3	KY	Fa: KY Mo: KY
Levi COLLINS	Farm Hand	Son	Male	S	W	2	KY	Fa: KY Mo: KY
Emily COLLINS	Farm Hand	Dau	Female	S	W	2M	KY	Fa: KY Mo: KY

Occ = occupation
Rel = relation to head of household
Marr = marital status
Parents Bp = parents birthplace

Why was Collins the airship inventor's legal representative? This is a legitimate question that does not have a clear answer at the present. Benjamin said he used Collins for his legal business because they were old friends. Suffice it to say Collins was closely related to a very powerful and rich man. I suspect this man was the airship financier. If this is the case, then it seems reasonable that he would give business to a relative. The data at this juncture is somewhat speculative, but an additional work is planned that will explore the financing of the airships.

George Collins, attorney at law, airship legal representative, husband and father, died May 4, 1944. Perhaps, a descendant will come forth with documentation to prove beyond any doubt that the airship story was factual.

LOOKING FOR JAMES RANDALL

There are few clues to follow when attempting to discover the identity of the airship captain "Randall," named so in the chapter 13 *Fort Worth Register* account titled "The Airship," (April 24,1897, p. 5). Other than this surname, there is not much information that can be used to identify this person. But if we look for a Randall in all the places we find the other airship characters, right off we discover a James Randall from Butte County. See Table 56.

TABLE 56
James Randall's California Census Record

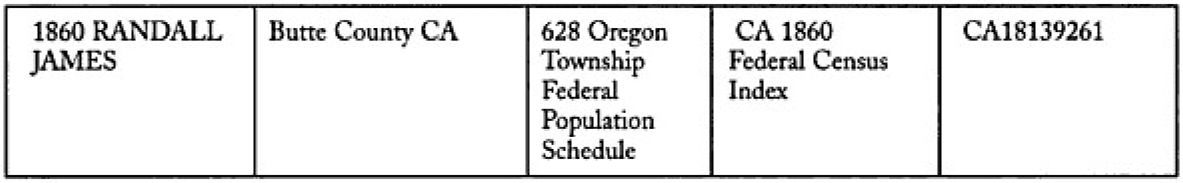

1860 RANDALL JAMES	Butte County CA	628 Oregon Township Federal Population Schedule	CA 1860 Federal Census Index	CA18139261

Now with a first name, James, we can check Civil War muster records. Is it a coincidence we find a James Randall serving in the same New York light-artillery regiment as Dr. F. W. Benjamin and George Applegate?

James Randall's New York Muster Record

Enlist Date: 30 August 1864
Enlist Place: Mentz, NY
Enlist Rank: Priv
Enlist Age: 23
Served New York
Enlisted Batty A Co. 3rd LA Reg. NY
Mustered out at Washington, DC on 06 July 1865
(New York: Report of the Adjutant-General,
NY Roster Published by on 1894-1906)

Looking for James Randall in San Francisco directories, we discover one James Randall in the 1889-91 directory.

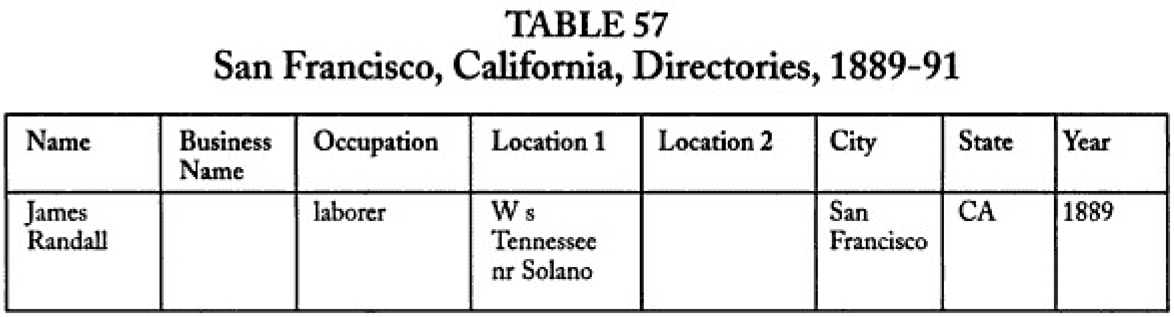

TABLE 57
San Francisco, California, Directories, 1889-91

Name	Business Name	Occupation	Location 1	Location 2	City	State	Year
James Randall		laborer	W s Tennessee nr Solano		San Francisco	CA	1889

We find two James Randalls in the 1898 Shasta County, California, Register. One Randall is too young to be the one of interest. The other James Randall's age is given as fifty-eight. The Civil War muster record for James Randall listed his age as twenty-three in 1864, making this James Randall fifty-seven or fifty-eight, depending upon when his birth month and day occurred, in 1898. Considering the regiment James Randall served in, it is likely we have identified the correct James Randall. Note that in the Shasta County, California, directory, Randall's birthplace is listed as New York.

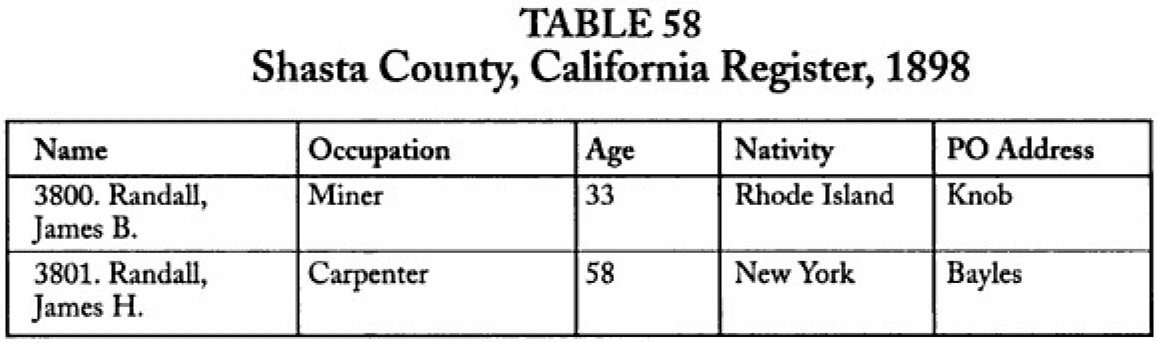

TABLE 58
Shasta County, California Register, 1898

Name	Occupation	Age	Nativity	PO Address
3800. Randall, James B.	Miner	33	Rhode Island	Knob
3801. Randall, James H.	Carpenter	58	New York	Bayles

The Shasta County James Randall's occupation is listed as carpenter. From the numerous airship newspaper accounts, we discover or infer parts of the airship are made from wood. It seems logical to me that the airship crew would include a man with such skills to repair broken parts and make improvements in the design.

The James Randall, carpenter, identified in the 1898 Shasta County Register (see above) seems to be the same James Randall identified in the 1870 Census (see below). Although the census lists his marital status as married, no other Randall's are listed for Township 2. If the information is accurate, then Randall's wife was not living with him at the time.

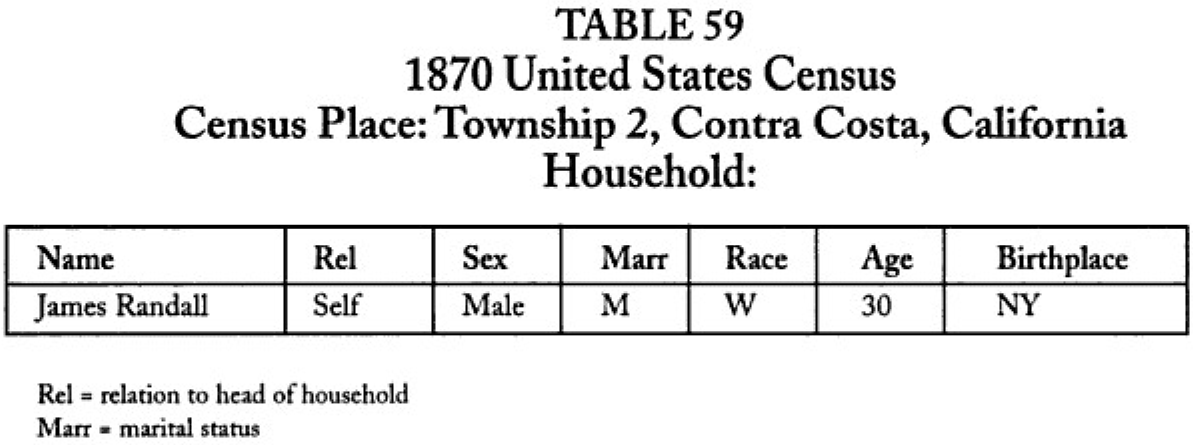

TABLE 59
1870 United States Census
Census Place: Township 2, Contra Costa, California
Household:

Name	Rel	Sex	Marr	Race	Age	Birthplace
James Randall	Self	Male	M	W	30	NY

Rel = relation to head of household
Marr = marital status

The birthplace of the James Randall listed in the 1870 census is given as New York. The birthplace for Randall in the census agrees with the Shasta County Register birthplace. After searching the New York census records, I found several James Randalls born in New York. Without a town for reference, I could not identify any of them as the James Randall of interest to us. There were no James Randalls from Orange County, a site of particular interest to us because of the Wilsons. The James Randall in the 1870 census does not appear in any other California census records.

Although I am certain the James Randall identified in the previous California directories and census records is the Randall of interest to us, I found a James Randall living in Keokuk County, Iowa, in 1880 (1880 History of Keokuk County Iowa, Warren Township). I find this information intriguing due to the connection between Hart and Iowa. I do not know if the Keokuk, Iowa, James Randall is the same individual as the California James Randall, but the information is included here for your contemplation. As there is no James Randall listed in the 1880 California census, it very well could be the same individual.

LOOKING FOR WILLIAM H. WARREN

Information about Warren is scarce. A William Warren from San Francisco enlisted in the 2nd Cavalry (California) Regiment in 1864. This may or may not be the Warren of interest.

William Warren's 2nd Cavalry Regiment Muster Record

Enlist Date: 03 November 1864
Enlist Place: San Francisco
Enlist Rank: Priv
Enlist Age
Served California
Enlisted B Co. 2nd Cav Reg. CA
Mustered out at Fort C on 28 May 1866
(Register of California Men in the War of the Rebellion 1861 to 1867, published by J. D. Young, State Printing in 1890)

Another William H. Warren was a professor of engineering at Sidney University, Australia, from the 1870s to the 1900s. Although I cannot place him in San Francisco, or more specifically, Hayward, in the fall of 1896 or spring 1897, an official at Sidney University advised me he passed through San Francisco in the fall of 1897. What is intriguing is Professor Warren's specialty: strength of materials. Given the known composition of the airship team and the talents of the various individuals, a strength-ofmaterials engineer is exactly what they needed to succeed.

LOOKING FOR SCOTT WARREN

Looking in the places in which other characters were located, we find a Scott Warren in Iowa.

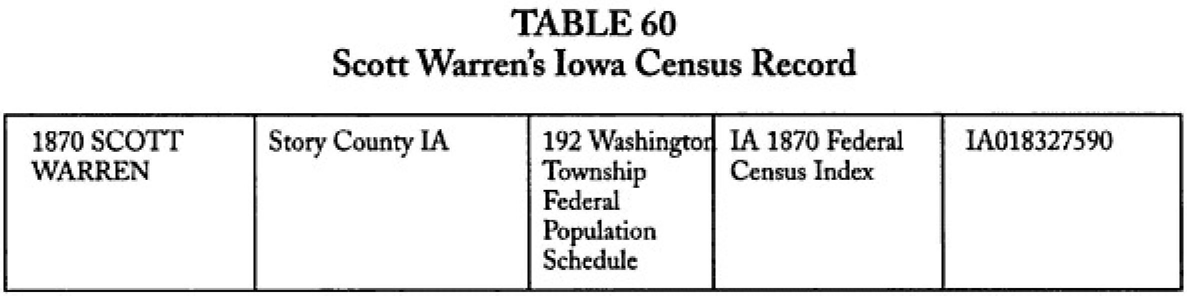

TABLE 60
Scott Warren's Iowa Census Record

1870 SCOTT WARREN	Story County IA	192 Washington Township Federal Population Schedule	IA 1870 Federal Census Index	IA018327590

Scott Warren's home—Washington, Iowa—is seventy-four miles north and a little west of Keokuk. However, Washington is near Wapello, Iowa, the location where William H. H. Hart received part of his law training. The chapter 9 newspaper account, "Was Aboard an Airship," identifies Scott as an engineer. Perhaps, Scott Warren is a close relative of William Warren? Perhaps, but insufficient information at the moment precludes any additional speculation.

LOOKING FOR C.J. WALSH

In the chapter 16 account titled "History of the Ship," one C. J. Walsh, an electrical engineer from San Francisco, is identified as one of the "investors" in the airship. There was a prominent Walsh family living in San Francisco at the turn of the century. One member of this family, Jane C. Walsh, was a San Francisco deputy coroner around 1903. She was the first female in the United States to hold this position.

I have not come across any information with which I can link C. J. Walsh to any other member of the airship team. However there is an interesting observation to be made in the transposition of letters between the initials of Jane C.Walsh and C.J Walsh. Could Jane C. and C. J. Walsh be the same person? Maybe, maybe not. Women were observed participating in the spring flying extravangza. However, being an electrical engineer required a significantly different education from someone performing the role of coroner. But, many people are doubledegreed. It is certainly an interesting thought to ponder.

Looking for Other Airship Inventors

Were other unidentified individuals involved in the 1897 airship mystery? Several accounts mention the presence of nameless crew members. We don't know who these men were but we may uncover something fruitful by indulging in a little guesswork. What about other known inventors going about the business of inventing airships in the latter half of the 1890s? A survey of these individuals reveals several intriguing possibilities.

LOOKING FOR MARCELLUS MCGARY

Was the airship an invention of a local Texas boy named Charles McKnight? I don't think so. But, as the airship(s) moves about the country, we see reports concerning local individuals who are attempting to complete and fly some type of airship that will solve the problem of "aerial navigation." It seems like every community, great and small, had at least one local individual working on the problem. And why not? It was generally agreed by all that great wealth, fame, and fortune awaited the first successful individual.

One such local fellow who experimented with airships was Marcellus McGary, who died on October 22, 1927, at Helmer, Idaho. Marcellus was not originally from Idaho, having moved there in 1907 from the area around Memphis, Missouri. McGary is remembered in Memphis for having demonstrated, in Memphis, on November 26, 1896, his airship. You may recall November 1896 was the month the California boys chose to introduce their airship(s) to the good citizens of northern California.

Of great interest is the method of propulsion McGary adopted for his airship and the location of his manufacturing facility. McGary's idea of propulsion was to have the wings move, or flap, in a birdlike motion, and as stated earlier, he manufactured his airship in Iowa. The following newspaper articles mentioned airships employing the exact same method of propulsion: "Seen at Paris?" (chapter 5), "Another Man Saw It" (chapter 6), "In Texas" (chapter 6), "Airship Seen in Galveston" (chapter 7), "Something More about Airship" (chapter 10), and "The Airship Seen Here" (chapter 17).

The Iowa connection to the airship story is by now a strong one. Amazingly, we discover that McGary manufactured his airship in Keokuk, Iowa. Perhaps Marcellus was one of the unidentified pilots or crewmen flying with the airships in 1897 Texas. And Keokuk, a recurring location in the airship story, just may be the location of the "quiet village in Iowa."

On March 16, 1893, the *Farmington (Iowa) Herald* reported that the editor of the newspaper, in the company of E. A. Musgrave, while walking down a Keokuk street, was invited by Marcellus McGary to view a working scale model of the airship he was building. The editor—after offering some detail concerning how McGary came upon the idea for propelling his airship by studying the flight of birds and the swimming offish—explained that the airship is propelled by "a system of wings and fins operated by an electric motor capable of producing great velocity." The editor went on to say that McGary was leaving for St. Louis, where he would construct a ship capable of carrying six people. On September 2, 1893, McGary left Memphis for Burlington, Iowa, where he was to perform a test flight. According to the *Memphis Reville,* McGary could not find any gas in Burlington and therefore could not fly the machine.

For some reason he went on to Chicago, perhaps looking for a source of gas to inflate the "air department." According to the *Reville,* McGary left the airship in Chicago with a Mr. Baker—for exhibition. While the *Reville* admitted to seeing the McGary airship model work, it does not say McGary ever successfully flew the real thing. However, the account does include a photograph of the McGary's airship floating some distance in the air.

By November 1896, it is known McGary had his airship finished. He christened it the *Columbus.* According to other sources (Eugene Dodge, *A City Called Memphis,* [Eugene Dodge, 1975], 373), he successfully demonstrated that the airship could perform its intended function on November 26, 1896.

The airship seen by Walter L. Norwood and Bob Tevis ("In Texas," chapter 6, and "Airship Seen in Galveston," chapter 7) and Judge Love ("A Judge Sees It," chapter 7) was said to have wings that flapped like a bird. Such an airship was designed and built by Marcellus McGary. In the *Memphis Reville* articles, McGary's airship was said to be able to carry six passengers and crew. Judge Love said he found five men reclining upon the ground when he came upon the airship while hunting one afternoon.

Airship stories concerning McGary s attempts to conquer the skies were printed in the *Memphis Reville* on the following occasions:

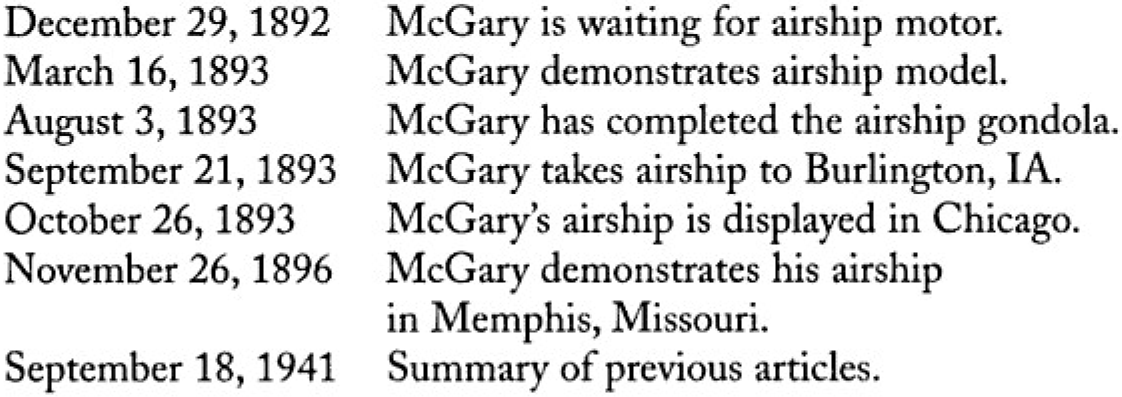

December 29, 1892	McGary is waiting for airship motor.
March 16, 1893	McGary demonstrates airship model.
August 3, 1893	McGary has completed the airship gondola.
September 21, 1893	McGary takes airship to Burlington, IA.
October 26, 1893	McGary's airship is displayed in Chicago.
November 26, 1896	McGary demonstrates his airship in Memphis, Missouri.
September 18, 1941	Summary of previous articles.

The *Reville* celebrated its centennial birthday in 1941 by printing summarizations of articles it had printed the past 100 years. In a September 18, 1941, article, "McGary's Airship —Built in 1892 by M McGary," summarizes the previous *Reville* articles.

Was McGary part of the exclusive 1897 Texas aviators club? Did he know Hart, Benjamin, Wilson, Dolbear, Tillman, McKnight, and the other members of the airship crowd? You may recall several Texas news stories, including "A Judge Sees It," where the pilot, although interviewed, was not identified. It is not beyond the realm of possibility one of the unidentified pilots was Marcellus McGary. While there is not any known piece of evidence directly linking any of these men to McGary, it is safe to say there is an extremely good chance they all knew each other and that McGary was a participant in the spring 1897 flights over of Texas and Louisiana.

LOOKING FOR MICHAEL MCMAHON

Another possible but unidentified player in the airship mystery is Michael McMahon. McMahon was born in 1840 and died on September 10, 1929. In 1884 he invented and successfully flew an airship while living in or near Minneapolis, Minnesota.

LOOKING FOR PROF. ARTHUR C. BARNARD

This account demonstrates that other inventors were feverishly at work trying to solve the problem of aerial navigation. Barnard was partially successful.

AIR SHIP THAT MOVES

Prof. Barnard Gives an Exhibition of His Machine at Nashville and Sails Fifteen Miles

Nashville, Tenn., May 6. (1897) Today at the Tennessee centennial exposition Prof. Arthur Barnard, physical instructor of the T.M.C.A. of Nashville, began a journey in an airship constructed by himself. Prof. Barnard promised to sail against the wind after arising into the air and he did so. The airship will be continued in use at the exposition. Prof. Barnard said he would land at the starting point tonight. The ship is forty-six feet long and twenty in diameter.

Mr. Barnard, who returned with his airship tonight says that he has perfected a machine which will fly under ordinary conditions. He said tonight that it was not perfect, nor could it be perfectly controlled, but he believed that he could perfect it so that its course could be controlled. After disappearing from view this morning, the ship circled around, the navigator hoping to meet with a favorable current.

At last the ship began to sail to the west, and Mr. Barnard says as far as Watkins, a village fifteen miles from Nashville the gas in the balloon attachment began to give out.

He then sought a safe place to descend and came down easily. While aloft a sudden gust broke one of the spans of the ship. No other damage was suffered. The entire time he was aloft was one and one-half hours. He was returning along the line of the outward flight when he was forced to land *(San Antonio Light*, May 7,1897, p. 7).

This is a factual account of events as they occurred in Nashville at the exposition. So, we now have indisputable evidence that there are airships and there are airship inventors, probably more than could be comfortably counted in an hour's time. However, some were more successful than others.

Professor Barnard was not a member of an exclusive California or New York airship club. If he was, perhaps his airship would have been a bigger success at the exposition.

> Editorial comment: There is this to be said for Prof. Barnard's airship—he isn't afraid to show it *(Houston Post,* May 13,1897, p. 4).

LOOKING FOR DR. CHARLES A. SMITH

There are two references to Smith in this book. The first reference appears in the newspaper article "Supplies for Airship" in chapter 12 ("Never mind about my name; call it Smith"). The second reference appears in chapter 19 in a George Collins interview ("An Inventor's Opinion"). Let's see what else we can find out about a Charles A. Smith of San Francisco.

Examining Civil War muster records, we find there is no lack of Charles A. Smiths. The Charles A. Smith who served in the 5th California Infantry is probably the Charles Smth of interest, but there is insufficient information to conclude they are the same individual.

TABLE 61
Civil War Service Records for Charles A. Smith

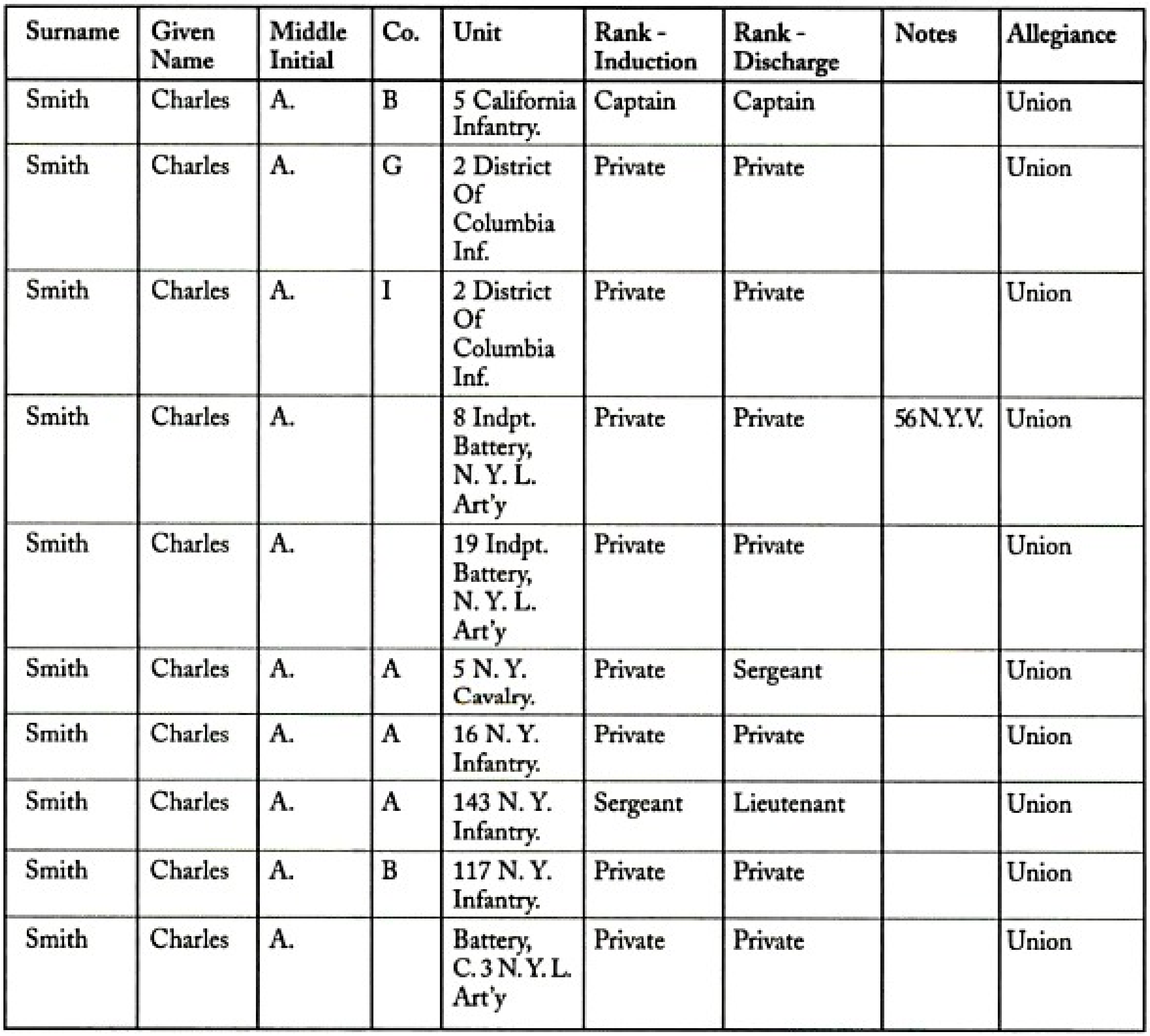

Surname	Given Name	Middle Initial	Co.	Unit	Rank - Induction	Rank - Discharge	Notes	Allegiance
Smith	Charles	A.	B	5 California Infantry.	Captain	Captain		Union
Smith	Charles	A.	G	2 District Of Columbia Inf.	Private	Private		Union
Smith	Charles	A.	I	2 District Of Columbia Inf.	Private	Private		Union
Smith	Charles	A.		8 Indpt. Battery, N. Y. L. Art'y	Private	Private	56N.Y.V.	Union
Smith	Charles	A.		19 Indpt. Battery, N. Y. L. Art'y	Private	Private		Union
Smith	Charles	A.	A	5 N. Y. Cavalry.	Private	Sergeant		Union
Smith	Charles	A.	A	16 N. Y. Infantry.	Private	Private		Union
Smith	Charles	A.	A	143 N. Y. Infantry.	Sergeant	Lieutenant		Union
Smith	Charles	A.	B	117 N. Y. Infantry.	Private	Private		Union
Smith	Charles	A.		Battery, C. 3 N. Y. L. Art'y	Private	Private		Union

When we look in the census record, we find a Charles Smith living in Butte County in 1860. Kimshew does not appear on any available maps, so I am not sure where the community is in relation to Oroville. Kimshew Creek is about thirty-eight miles north of Oroville.

TABLE 62
Census Record

1860 Charles Smith	Butte County CA	594 Kimshew Township Federal Population Schedule	CA 1860 Federal Census Index	CA18139261

Checking the San Francisco directories, we find a Charles A. Smith working as a machinist in the city in 1889. The next year, 1890, we find a Charles Smith, Jr., working at the same physical location. But, we now have a Charles A. Smith identified as a physician. Smith is referred to as a "doctor" in the Collins interview. I believe both Charles A. Smiths are the same person. Machine work was a necessary endeavor if you wanted to build a successful flying machine in 1897.

TABLE 63
San Francisco, California, Directories, 1889-91

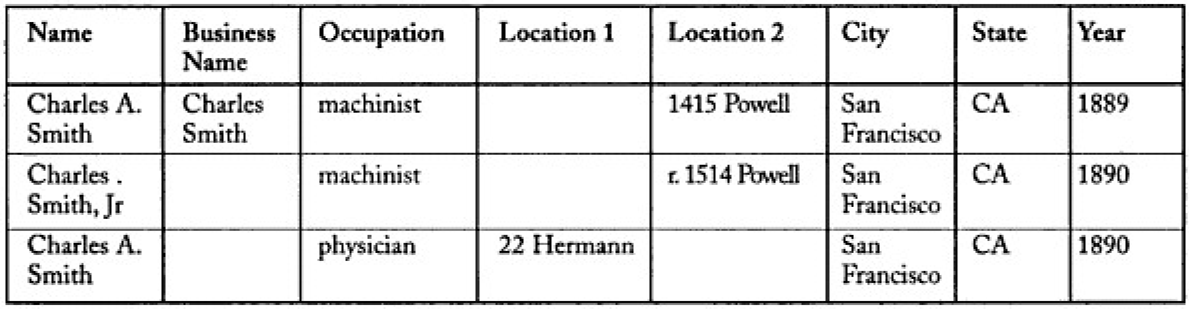

Name	Business Name	Occupation	Location 1	Location 2	City	State	Year
Charles A. Smith	Charles Smith	machinist		1415 Powell	San Francisco	CA	1889
Charles . Smith, Jr		machinist		r. 1514 Powell	San Francisco	CA	1890
Charles A. Smith		physician	22 Hermann		San Francisco	CA	1890

What else can we find that pertains to Smith? Charles Smith of San Francisco applied for an airship patent. He was awarded patent number 585,893 on April 2, 1896. See appendix A for a copy of his patent application.

A SUMMARY OF THE AIRSHIP FACTS

As you may readily see, San Francisco; Texas; Butte County, California; Orange County, New York; and the Army of the Potomac are central factors to the airship story. The origins of the story are not in the creative minds of newspaper reporters but in the mud and blood of battle and the pastoral scenes of rural Iowa.

Hiram Wilson stated in an account, "this is but one of five built in a quiet village in Iowa." Hart's boyhood home in Keokuk, Iowa, and the known fabrication of McGary's successful airship in Keokuk are undisputable facts. These facts are compelling circumstantial evidence for establishing the validity of Wilson's repeated claims to pilot but one airship of five "built in a quiet Iowa village." Recall Hart's claim to represent the East Coast airship interests via his legal connections to the development of the Fargo battery. If the East Coast inventor asked his legal representative where a secluded place to build his airship would be, the representative's birthplace, Iowa, would make a sensible answer. It is entirely possible Wilson was telling the truth when he made the "quite village" comment.

TABLE 64
The Airship Connections

Name	Loc. 1	Loc. 2	Loc. 3	Loc. 4	Loc. 5	Loc. 6	Loc. 7	Muster Records
William H. H. Hart	X	X			X		X	Various units
George Applegate	X						X	Bat I, 3rd NY LA/3rd Div/18th Army Corps
Elmer Benjamin	X	X						
Francis W. Benjamin		X					X	Bat U, 3rd NY LA/ 3rd Div/18th Army Corps
Willard Wilson			X	X			X	K Co., 24th NY/ 1st Brig/1st Div/ 1st Army Corps
James Randall	X	X			X		X	Bat A, 3rd NY LA/ 3rd Div/18th Army Corps
Hiram Wilson			X	X				
Charles McKnight			X			X		
John Shelby Williams		X				X		
George Collins	X							
Marcellus McGary					X			
Solomon Andrews							X	Sanitary Commission (served 18th Army Corps)

Locations Legend:
1—San Francisco
2—Butte County, CA
3—Orange County, NY
4—Fort Worth
5—Iowa
6—N Texas
7—Army of the Potomac

Dr. Elmer Benjamin claimed to have built three airships in California. Was he referring to three for which he was singly responsible, or was he including Dr. Smith's and W. H. Warren's airships in the tally? I suspect Dr. Benjamin's comment included them all. It is reasonable to conclude that Benjamin, Warren, and Smith were a team in San Francisco, collaborating on the airships built there. I would even go so far as to say these gentlemen were part of a design team that was probably directed by Dr. Smith—a reasonable assumption, given Dr. Smith's stated years of experience designing, building, and flying airships and the assumed inexperience of the other two individuals.

What about the Wilson airship? If the Wilsons built their own airship, we have a total of nine vessels (California's three, plus Iowa's five, plus Wilson's 1). I believe the Wilsons did build a New York airship. On Tuesday, November 17, 1896, the *Sacramento Bee* received an intriguing telegram from New York City advising the *Bee* that an airship would lift off from a vacant New York City lot with the pilot and one or two friends on Friday, November 20,1896, and leave immediately for California. The author of the telegram said he would be in California in two days. From the California newspaper reports, we know that an airship was seen over Sacramento on November 18. However, it was not until November 22 that an airship was seen over San Francisco (Oakland). Perhaps, the Smith-Warren-Benjamin team announced their California airship to the world over Sacramento on November 18 while the Wilson team announced their New York airship to the world over San Francisco on November 22.

From the pilot/crew member comments in the newspaper account, we can gather that at least two West Coast, one Iowa, and one New York airship participated in the spring 1897 Texas flying spree. One airship exploded in Michigan. Three airships subsequently arrived in Texas. So, we have four well-documented airships accounted for.

If nine airships were built by these men, what happened to the other five? We do not know how many West Coast or Iowa airships survived their initial or maiden flights and subsequently were able to participate in the spring flying extravaganza. Conversely, we do not know how many did not survive their maiden voyages. Nor can we say for certain that the other five did not participate in the spring airship regatta in some fashion. We do know that airships were seen in other parts of the country while the Texas sightings were occuring. For example, during April 1897, at least one airship was seen in Washington State. However, with the evidence currently available, we can only account, with a great degree of certainty, for four airships.

LOOKING FOR THE IOWA STORY

If five airships were built in Iowa, then it seems reasonable to suppose that Iowa was the site of numerous airship sightings. And it was. Iowa was also the site of numerous fake airship sightings involving kites, balloons, Chinese lanterns, fake notes, and at least one great and creative hoax. However, there are numerous truthful sightings.

An analysis of the Iowa sightings was performed by the author, and the results are somewhat ambiguous. The sightings seem to be much more scattered than they are in Texas. This can be attributed to the lack of sufficient newspaper accounts used in the analysis. That is, if all the newspaper accounts in the state were available for analysis, then a more accurate picture would emerge.

The airship sightings do not resolve to a particular area in the state as they did with the Texas sightings. The most probable cause for this is the lack of a choice of bases in Texas, whereas the airship inventors may have had ample bases in Iowa to land their airships by day. If the Iowa group of inventors did indeed have a choice of landing sites, then the data would not yield so clear and definitive a base.

There does seem to exist more than usual activity in the southeastern portion of the state, indicating William Henry Harrison Hart's boyhood home of Keokuk may have been the "quite Iowa village" mentioned in several newspaper accounts. From the data available, I could not shoot back azimuths (the method used to locate the Texas base at Marshal Williams ranch near Ladonia) of the sightings and pinpoint one particular area that the airship crew would have used for a daytime base. But, using a little logic, we may be able to narrow the prospective area down to a particular portion of the state.

The airship crew preferred to fly by night. In interviews, they gave several reasons for this. No, they were not vampires. The sight of the undulating ground moving under them resulted in airsickness. Also, some ground-dwelling men felt at liberty to take potshots at the airships. Those two reasons alone are sufficient excuses for avoiding daytime flight. So, if we accept the premise that the airships would not lift off until dusk, then we may have a useful method for detecting the Iowa base. All we need do is look where the majority of the early evening sightings occurred.

From the Iowa-sighting data, it appears the Iowa base was east of a north-south line from Keokuk to Burlington and south of an east-west line from Burlington to Davenport. As previously discussed, Keokuk was William H. H. Hart's childhood home. The Iowa sightings support the contention Keokuk was the "quiet Iowa village."

The Iowa Sightings

The Iowa sightings are listed in Table 65. The sightings were plotted by day and time. The results were not particularly fruitful. I leave graphing the Iowa accounts and verifying this information to the reader's industry.

TABLE 65
Iowa Sightings

Date Observed	Community	Time	Direction of Travel	Newspaper and Date Reported
4/3	Albia	10:00 P.M.	N	*Waterloo Daily Courier* 4/7/97
4/3	Vinton	9:00 P.M.	NW	*Burlington Hawk-Eye* 4/9/97
4/7	Wolf Creek (?)	Night	S	*Burlington Hawk-Eye* 4/13/97
4/8	Waterloo	1:00 A.M.	Southerly (from Cedar Falls)	*Waterloo Daily Courier* 4/8/97
4/8	West Liberty	7:30 P.M.	W	*Burlington Hawk-Eye* 4/9/97
4/8	Solon	8:30 P.M.	W	*Burlington Hawk-Eye* 4/9/97
4/8	Cedar Rapids	9:00 P.M.	N	*Marshalltown Times-Republican* (evening edition) 4/9/97
4/8	Mt. Pleasant	9:00 P.M.	W	*Burlington Hawk-Eye* 4/10/97
4/8	Ottumwa	9:30 P.M.	W	*Burlington Hawk-Eye* 4/10/97
4/8	Vinton	Night	NW	*Burlington Hawk-Eye* 4/10/97
4/8	From Vinton, IA (8:00 P.M.) to Northwood, IA (10:30 P.M.) to Waseca, MN (about midnight traveling west) to Madison, SD (1:00 A.M.). The sightings were reported by railroad telegraphers as the airship followed the rail lines from state to state.	From 8:00 P.M. until 1:00 A.M. on 4/9/97	From Vinton, a northerly direction until Northwood, then westerly; was seen following the B., C.R., and N (Burlington, Cedar Rapids, and Northern) Railroad (in IA) then the M. and St. L. (Minneapolis and St. Louis) Railroad (MN) then the Milwaukee Railroad (into SD)	*Burlington Hawk-Eye* 4/10/97 *Des Moines State Register* 4/10/97

TABLE 65 (continued)
Iowa Sightings

Date Observed	Community	Time	Direction of Travel	Newspaper and Date Reported
4/8	Fairfield	8:50 P.M.	NW	*Des Moines State Register* 4/10/97
4/8	West Liberty	7:30 P.M.	NW	*Des Moines State Register* 4/10/97
4/8	Solon			*Des Moines State Register* 4/10/97
4/8	Wausaw, WI	10:00 P.M.	From SE to NW	*Marshalltown Times-Republican* 4/10/97
4/8	Nebraska City, NE	9:30 P.M.	From SE to NW	*Marshalltown Times-Republican* 4/10/97
4/9	Boone	Night		*Des Moines State Register* 4/10/97
4/9	Des Moines	Between 8:00 and 9:00 P.M.		*Iowa State Register* 4/10/97
4/9	Pella	Night/ 10:30 P.M.	Toward Des Moines	*Iowa State Register* 4/10/97 *Marshalltown Times-Republican* 4/10/97
4/9	Monroe	Night		*Iowa State Register* 4/10/97
4/9	Evanston, IL	9:00 P.M.	Westerly	*Marshalltown Times-Republican* 4/10/97 *Waterloo Daily Courier* 4/10/97
4/9	Mount Carroll, (IL.?) (128 miles west of Chicago)	8:40 P.M.	From northeast then changed to due west	*Marshalltown Times-Republican* 4/10/97
4/9	Marshalltown	Shortly before 8:00 P.M.	NW	*Marshalltown Times-Republican* 4/10/97
4/9	Clinton	7:30 P.M.		*Iowa State Register* 4/11/97
4/9	Nassau	9:00-10:00 P.M.	SW	*Marshalltown Times-Republican* 4/10/97
4/9	Maxwell	8:00 P.M.	E then N	*Iowa State Register* 4/13/97
4/10	Holstein	8:15 P.M.	NW	*Marshalltown Times-Republican* 4/13/97
4/10	Eldon	7:25 P.M.		*Iowa State Register* 4/11/97
4/10	Ottumwa	7:40 P.M.		*Iowa State Register* 4/11/97
4/10	Albia	8:10 P.M.		*Iowa State Register* 4/11/97
4/10	Waterloo	1:00 A.M.	From the E	*Waterloo Daily Courier* 4/10/97
4/10	Keokuk	9:00 P.M.	Westward	*Keokuk's Sunday Gate City* 4/11/97
4/10	Rhodes	11:00 P.M.	NE	*Iowa State Register* 4/13/97
4/10	Earlham	9:00 P.M.	NW	*Iowa State Register* 4/13/97
4/10	Fort Dodge	8:00-9:00 P.M.	NW	*Iowa State Register* 4/13/97
4/10	Grundy Center	9:30 P.M.	NW	*Iowa State Register* 4/13/97
4/10	Brooklyn	9:00 P.M.	NW	*Iowa State Register* 4/13/97
4/10	Bayard	8:45 P.M.	NW	*Iowa State Register* 4/13/97

TABLE 65 (continued)
Iowa Sightings

Date Observed	Community	Time	Direction of Travel	Newspaper and Date Reported
4/10	Grinnell	9:00 P.M.	NW	*Iowa State Register* 4/13/97
4/10	Lake City	8:00 P.M.	NW	*Iowa State Register* 4/13/97
4/10	Melbourne	9:00 P.M.		*Marshalltown Evening Times-Republican* 4/13/97
4/10	Algona			*Marshalltown Evening Times-Republican* 4/13/97
4/10	LaHarpe	8:30 P.M.	S	*Burlington Hawk-Eye* 4/15/97
4/10	Bancroft to Sioux City to Armstrong to Algona to Estherville to Swea City	1:00 A.M.		*Marshalltown Evening Times Republican* 4/13/97
4/10	Buffalo Center	9:30 P.M.	NW	*Iowa State Register* 4/13/97
4/11	Bloomington, IL	Noon	NE	*Burlington Hawk-Eye* 4/13/97
4/11	Green Island	10:00 P.M.		*Burlington Hawk-Eye* 4/13/97
4/11	Bellevue	11:00 P.M.		*Burlington Hawk-Eye* 4/13/97
4/11	Hawarden(?)	12:30 A.M.	N	*Des Moines Leader* 4/13/97
4/11	Kinmundy(?)	8:00 P.M.		*Iowa State Register* 4/13/97
4/12	Bedford	5:30 P.M.	Toward Fontanelle	*Iowa State Register* 4/13/97
4/12	Dubuque	After midnight		*Burlington Hawk-Eye* 4/13/97
4/12	Burlington	8:30 P.M./ early this morning	?/W	*Council Bluffs Globe* 4/13/97 *Iowa State Register* 4/13/97
4/12	Fontanelle	8:30 P.M.	NW	*Des Moines Leader* 4/13/97
4/12	Jewell	10:30 P.M.	E	*Iowa State Register* 4/14/97
4/13	Clinton	9:00 P.M.	W	*Waterloo Daily Courier* 4/14
4/13	Winternet(?)	8:30 P.M.	NW	*Des Moines Register* 4/15/97
4/13	Audubon	11:00 P.M.		*Iowa State Register* 4/15/97
4/14	Birmingham	7:00-8:00 P.M.	From S then NW	*Burlington Hawk-Eye* 4/16/97
4/14	Underwood	9:00 P.M.	NE	*Council Bluffs Daily Nonpariel* 4/16
4/15	Springfield, IL	Noon		*Burlington Hawk-Eye* 4/16/97
4/15	Council Bluffs			*Council Bluffs Daily Nonpariel* 4/16
4/15	Herman (IL?)	Night		*Burlington Hawk-Eye* 4/17/97
4/15	Sigourney	Night	From Hedrick	*Burlington Hawk-Eye* 4/17/97
4/15	Disco, IL	8:30 P.M.		*Burlington Hawk-Eye* 4/17/97
4/16	Coppack(?)	9:00 A.M.		*Burlington Hawk-Eye* 4/17/97
4/16	Waterloo	Morning		*Waterloo Daily Courier* 4/16/97
4/16	Hoyt, WI	2:00 A.M.	From SE	*Iowa State Register* 4/17/97
4/16	Belmond		SW	*Marshalltown Evening Times-Republican* 4/17/97

LOOKING FORTHE SONORA AERO CLUB

Charles A. A. Dellschau was working for his son-in-law, Anton Stelzig, when he retired as a clerk in 1899. Using mixed media, he began painting pictures of airships. The works include intricate collages showing the vessels with shiplike decks beneath balloon pontoons manned by crews of gentlemen who were sometimes accompanied by a cat. Surrounding the pictures and notebooks is a cloak of mystery.

TABLE 66
Houston, Texas, Directories, 1882-95

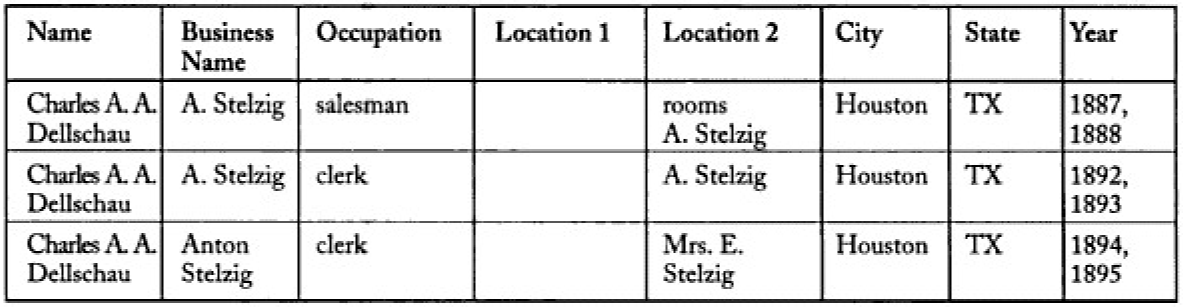

Name	Business Name	Occupation	Location 1	Location 2	City	State	Year
Charles A. A. Dellschau	A. Stelzig	salesman		rooms A. Stelzig	Houston	TX	1887, 1888
Charles A. A. Dellschau	A. Stelzig	clerk		A. Stelzig	Houston	TX	1892, 1893
Charles A. A. Dellschau	Anton Stelzig	clerk		Mrs. E. Stelzig	Houston	TX	1894, 1895

Dellschau started his documentation project at least three years before the Wright brothers lifted off at Kittyhawk. His collages document the activities of a secret California organization called the Sonora Aero Club, which was dedicated to inventing and flying "aeros" or flying machines. In his notebooks, Dellschau recounts how, in his youth (circa 1850), the Sonora Aero Club members were engaged in building wondrous flying machines in which they joyfully cavorted about the California countryside. Dellschau seems to have been the club's draftsman, as he never depicts himself flying in any of the club's aeros.

Is Dellschau's account of the Sonora Aero Club fact or fiction? Are the accounts of crashes and deaths true or just adventurous tales of his own creation? Only by analyzing his drawings and writings and doing careful detective work may we determine with any degree of accuracy whether or not the Sonora Aero Club actually existed and if Dellschau was an employee of the organization in the 1850s. Unfortunately, the individual who possesses most of Dellschau's notebooks refuses to allow anyone to study them. However, he has leaked enough information to whet the appetite and give the scent of the quarry. And the few Dellschau drawings that are available to the public (through the Houston Menil Foundation and a New York art gallery) substantiate many of Dellschau's claims.

The emigration records confirm that Dellschau arrived in the United States from Hamburg, Germany, in 1853. He listed his age as twenty-five years old and stated he was born in Brandenburg, Prussia. His occupation is listed as a farmer. Dellschau's letter of citizenship places him in Harris County in 1856 and Fort Bend County in 1860. Between 1853 and 1856, the known historical record is quiet concerning Dellschau's whereabouts. The Germany native claims that the Sonora Aero Club performed its magical feats of flying in the 1853-56 period. However, there is no known record of Dellschau being in California during this time.

According to those who have reviewed Dellschau's notebooks, "But where the historical records are silent, the artist's notebooks make raucous, profligate claims" (Cynthia Greenwood, "Secrets of the Sonora Aero Club," *New Times,* [December 10, 1998]). Dellschau illustrates a remarkable number of airship designs for vessels with names such as *Aero Mio, Aero Trump, Aero Schnabel, Aero Mary,* and *Aero Jourdan.* Supposedly, some of Dellschau's drawings and accompanying text include stories of stolen craft, flaming crashes, broken necks, and death. The general appearance of most of the flying machines, or aeros, is that of a gas-bag, semirigid, cylindro-conical shaped (dirigible-shaped) machine with huge fans providing the thrust. All were powered by a secret fuel that provided lift and thrust by driving the ship's wheels, side paddles, and compressor motors. Hydrogen gas was possibly used as a fuel in an internal combustion engine to provide the motive power, or thrust, for the aeros.

According to Dellschau, the inventor of the club's almost magical fuel was Peter Mennis. Supposedly, Mennis kept the formula secret. Upon his death in a fiery aero crash in the early 1860s, the other club members disbanded due to lack of fuel to propel their machines.

The reduction of water into its components, hydrogen and oxygen, was a well-known chemical process in 1850, and scientists knew how to convert the hydrogen gas to energy in an internal combustion engine. However, it was not a cheap process. Even today, internal combustion engines that use hydrogen as a fuel exist. Such engines can generate sufficient horsepower for most purposes, and the hydrogen burns cleanly, with no pollutants. The use of hydrogen as fuel makes sense, except for the cost associated with producing it, which is still an economic burden today. It is plausible 1850 airships received their thrust from hydrogen gas-burning internal combustion engines.

What about lift? Hydrogen gas could also be used to provide lift for the airships. One cubic foot of hydrogen gas will lift 0.076 lb. at 32° F and 760 mm pressure. Note that higher temperatures and a less-dense atmosphere require less gas to lift the same weight. We can determine the lifting power of hydrogen through the following exercise:

0.076 lb x 10 cubic feet = .76 lb lifting power at 32 F and sea level
0.076 lb x 100 cubic feet = 7.6 lb lifting power at 32 F and sea level
0.076 lb x 1,000 cubic feet = 76 lb lifting power at 32 F and sea level
0.076 lb x 10,000 cubic feet = 760 lb lifting power at 32 F and sea level
0.076 lb x 100,000 cubic feet = 7,600 lb lifting power at 32 F and sea level

100,000 cubic feet = 1,000 ft x 100 ft x 1 ft = 100 ft x 100 ft x 10 ft

or

150 ft x 30 ft x 25 ft = 112,500 cubic feet

Do the dimensions 150' x 30' x 25' sound familiar? They are about the same dimensions reported by many observers of the airships.

A carriage with the dimensions of 30' long, 20' wide, and 8' high, slung underneath a gas air bag would have 600 square feet of floor space. If we divide 7,600 lbs. by 600 square feet, we arrive at 12.66 pounds/square-foot weight distribution. This seems about right for a ship designed to carry as many as twenty people—albeit somewhat crowded. And the amount of space for each person would be 30 square feet (or a space of 5' x 6'. Of course, some amount of floor space was required for the machinery and controls reducing the amount available for crew and passengers.

Why are Dellschau's notebooks and their stories important? If the stories are true, the Sonora Aero Club members were aviation pioneers. And, perhaps, the notebooks hold clues that would help explain the 1896-97 Texas (California, Michigan, Illinois, etc.) airship sightings. Three of the Sonora Aero Club members mentioned in Dellschau's notebooks are a Smith, Wilson, and Andrews. Smith and Wilson figure prominently in the 1897 Texas sightings. And could the reference to an Andrews be the same or a relative of Dr. Solomon Andrews of Perth Amboy, New Jersey? There may be a connection between Solomon Andrews and the Sonora Aero Club. Dellschau shows one Sonora Aero Club airship, similar in design to the airship Andrews flew in 1863, with the cryptic caption "A la Andrews." Dr. Andrews just might have been an original or even founding member of the Sonora Aero Club, and the Aerial Navigation Company may have been the precursor or foundation for the Sonora Aero Club.

Dellschau mentions a man by the last name of Wilson. Could the Wilson in his accounts be the same Wilson who shows up flying about Texas in 1897? Wilson tells at least one interviewer that he is from Goshen, New York. Dr. Andrews built his flying machine in Perth Amboy, New Jersey. Goshen and Perth Amboy are eighty-five miles apart. Coincidence? The California newspaper articles detailed in chapter 19 include an interview by Charles (or Catlan) Smith. Dr. Smith tells the newspaper reporter that he has been designing, building, and flying airships for fifty years. Dr. Smith may be an original member of the Sonora Aero Club and/or the Aerial Navigation Company.

At least one UFO researcher has visited Sonora, California, and claims he found no evidence that the Sonora Aero Club ever existed. Is it possible that Dellschau made up all the stories contained in his notebooks? Is it possible the colorful drawings of wonderful flying machines were figments of his imagination? Yes, it is possible. However, if such a group of inventors were so secretive, would they name their place of business after the same community in which they operated? The unfolding of the 1897 airship story suggests that the Sonora Aero Club may have been located near Oroville, another California community some distance from Sonora.

Why California? Secrecy, climate, woods, and, perhaps, George Hearst. The California desert was sparsely populated in the 1850s, the climate was conducive for the activity, financial aid was available in the form of newly enriched gold mine owners, and perhaps, the characteristics of California birch appealed to the airship builders.

Secrecy seems to be a significant issue with the Sonora Aero Club. It is claimed that a Dellschau pictograph depicts one aero crash in the 1850s that was engineered by other club members because the club member used his aero for hauling freight for an outsider (Cynthia Greenwood, "Secrets of the Sonora Aero Club," *New Times,* [December 10, 1998]). Another club member was supposedly prohibited from building an aero because he talked to outsiders about the club. Even Dellschau felt compelled, in the 1900s, to enter information in his notebooks in code. Apparently, even fifty or more years after the group's heyday, he still felt sufficiently threatened that he hid the secrets of the Sonora Aero Club.

The California desert climate is conducive for airship experimentation. Even today, the United States Air Force maintains the Air Force Flight Test Center, an experimental aircraft test facility, at Edwards Air Force Base. NASA maintains the Dryden Flight Research Center at Edwards. Edwards is located adjacent to Palmdale, California, a community northwest of Los Angeles. The Air Force and NASA maintain their flight-test facilities at Edwards because the climate allows yearround flight-testing. Seems like a justifiable reason for airship inventors in 1850 to locate their test facility in the California desert.

Although aluminum was known to exist in the 1850s, extraction of aluminum metal in any great quantity was not a commercial venture until 1886. The aeros needed to be lightweight to be feasible. Steel and iron were just not good candidates for airships, due to the weight of the metal. But, something strong was needed for the framework. Remember Howard Hughes and the *Spruce Goose?* Hughes and staff created the largest ever flying machine almost entirely out of laminated birch (airframe and surface structures) with fabric-covered control surfaces (except the flaps) and flew it on November 2, 1947. Dellschau explains in his notebooks that at least one 1850s airship was disguised as a gypsy wagon. Wagons in the 1850s were made of wood.

And, perhaps, California was chosen so that the creative engineers who designed these flying machines and their machinery could be near the gold fields. The cost of producing hydrogen, the machine work required to produce the specialized mechanical features of the airships (such as gearing, specialized fabrics, and basketwork) required a fat bank account. A rough approximation of the cost of each airship would be $10,000 (1850 currency). Keeping in mind that, forty-seven years earlier, the United States bought most of the land west of the Mississippi River for about $12,000,000, you can see that $10,000 was a large sum. In comparison, in one 1896 interview, George Collins claims that one airship inventor expended $100,000 to perfect his machine.

The founding date of the club coincides with the early California gold rush. Perhaps, the club members were well-off mine owners or businessmen. However, Dellschau does mention New York financial backing. Possible New York connections include Andrews' Inventor's Institute (known, by 1849, as the Aerial Navigation Company) and George Hearst. Solomon Andrews' Inventor's Institute was in New Jersey but he maintained an office in New York City.

George Hearst left New York for the California gold fields in 1849. Before he left, an intriguing advertisement for a ride to the gold fields in the relative comfort of an airship was published in a New York newspaper. This advertisement was probably published by Andrews' Aerial Navigation

Company—the only New York-connected organization known at the time to be involved in airship research. Shortly thereafter, the Aerial Navigation Company seems to fade into history, while the Sonora Aero Club begins its short run. Let us review the facts: While George Hearst was in New York City, there was an Aerial Navigation Company. George Hearst leaves for California and there the Sonora Aero Club was established. Coincidence?

According to Dellschau, the Sonora Aero Club received financial backing from the NYMZA. There is at least one reference to a Maine connection. It appears in the 1896 newspaper account featuring George Collins, in which he said that the inventor he represented hailed from Maine. No one knows what NYMZA stands for. Could it be the New York and Maine Zionist Association? Dellschau was Jewish. Or, could NYMZA be a code word for the Inventor's Institute/Aerial Navigation Company?

Were the 1850s aeros used to haul freight and passengers to the California gold mines for the New York financiers? It is reported that at least one New York newspaper advertisement, dating from 1848, offered would-be miners an airship ride from New York to California. But, the advertisements ceased soon after they appeared. It is not known if any passengers or freight were ferried across the continent via airships. Could the 1848 advertisement be connected to the Sonora Aero Club member who Dellschau notes was murdered for using an airship to haul freight, apparently without the permission of the organization's leader(s).

Why didn't the Sonora Aero Club continue to fly its machines from the 1850s to 1897? Dellschau claims that only one aero club member possessed the airship fuel formula. Also, Dellschau's descriptions of three crashes include the death of the one individual who knew the fuel formula. According to his notes, some of the club members spent the next few years trying to re-create the fuel formula. This may be the reason there was no more flying after the late 1850s by the Sonora Aero Club.

The most influential member of California society from 1850 until his death in 1891 was George Hearst, father of William Randolph Hearst. It seems unlikely any airships would be flying the California skies without his knowledge and approbation. If an investigator wants to locate the base of the Sonora Aero Club, a good starting place would be in researching the travels, residences, and financial interests of George Hearst. I am fairly convinced Hearst financed the Aerial Navigation Company and the Sonora Aero Club. He was certainly in a great position to not only finance the clubs but also reap the rewards of their efforts. Hearst was financially well off and well connected to the banking and business establishments of San Francisco and New York City. He was probably the first California-New York commuter on the airships. Follow the path of Hearst and you will find, somewhere along the way, the scent of the Aerial Navigation Company and the Sonora Aero Club.

LOOKING BACK

One of the airship(s) inventor's legal representatives, the former California state attorney general William Henry Harrison Hart, made public announcements of airship patent applications and other business matters pertaining to the airship inventors. General Hart was elected attorney general and served from January 1891 until January 1895. It seems unlikely Hart could achieve success in the California political arena without the support of George Hearst, who was a U.S. senator from California and the owner of the most influential California newspaper, the *San Francisco Examiner* at the time of Hart's election. Subsequently, William Randolph Hearst supported Hart, as evidenced by Hart's continued participation on the board of directors of Hearst mining interests. Was the former attorney general playing a great joke upon an unsuspecting populace? Considering the social centers of gravity the general swirled in, I think not.

Three individuals we investigated in this chapter may be the connecting threads between the various airship mysteries (1840s to 1897) we have examined. Dr. Solomon Andrews, Willard Wilson, and Dr. Charles Smith, peers extraordinaire, may have been designing, building, and flying airships from the 1840s.

CHAPTER 21

AURORA REVISITED

Let's take another look at the purported "alien" airship crash in Aurora, Texas. Why do so at this particular point in the story? We have slowly built a strong case for the existence of the airships and their inventors. Although we proceeded pretty much on faith that most newspapers and most people were truthfully reporting what they saw and heard regarding the airships, we have built a strong case for the existence of the men and machines largely on circumstantial evidence. We have woven an intricate mosaic of the men and machines who startled a nation over one hundred years ago. Given that the airships and their inventors are fact, it may be interesting to review the Aurora crash in light of the knowledge we now possess.

Perhaps, there really was a crash with casualties, as the local newspaper and government official reported. If the Aurora crash did occur, it seems reasonable to reconcile the event with other airship sightings occurring elsewhere. Toward that end, we will explore the events leading up to the purported crash and determine if there is a continuity of events that yields a believable and plausible explanation for the Aurora crash.

Let's assume the occupant(s) of the airship that crashed in Aurora were creatures of this Earth and not aliens, as the two Aurora individuals interviewed by the *Dallas Morning News* had advocated. If we assume the occupants were alien(s), we immediately become embroiled in the arguments for and against interplanetary travel—in vehicles that are clearly constructed using pre-twentieth-century technology. Anyone with even a fundamental understanding of technology and the universe will quickly realize the practical impossibility of flying through the void of space in such vehicles. So, the assumption that the occupant(s) were human and the craft and pilot were of this planet is a valid assumption. Arguments supporting this assumption are provided in another section of this text.

Recall the chapter 7 account "The Great Aerial Wanderer," which told of a grounded airship experiencing mechanical difficulties near Stephenville—southwest of Aurora—on the morning of the purported crash. In relation to the time of the Aurora crash, when was the airship on the ground near Stephenville? Was there sufficient time for it to travel from Stephenville to Aurora prior to the time of the crash? Does the airship's observed direction of flight coincide with the direction it should have been going if it was coming from Stephenville and attempting to return to the daytime lair? Did the Stephenville airship eventually crash and burn in Aurora? What evidence remains to convince us that the Aurora crash was fact and not fiction?

We will revisit the chapter 7 *Dallas Morning News* account titled "A Windmill Demolishes It" (April 19,1897, p. 5) and examine certain key passages. Perhaps we can discern the truth.

"ABOUT 6 O'CLOCK THIS MORNING ..."

An airship experiencing mechanical difficulties was seen by many distinguished Stephenville citizens sometime "early in the morning" on April 17, 1897, the day of the Aurora crash. Stephenville is eighty-four miles southwest of Aurora. Unfortunately, the Stephenville account does not state the time the grounded airship was viewed by the long list of distinguished Stephenville citizens. We must use a dose of deductive reasoning to see if we can narrow the window of the Stephenville sighting and place an approximate time on it. Then we can compare the time of the Stephenville sighting with the time of the reported crash. If the times correspond, we have substantial argument to support the existence of an airship mishap occurred in Aurora on April 17, 1897.

The Stephenville account places the time of the sighting as "early in the morning." For these country folks, this was sometime prior to the beginning of morning twilight. Morning began before it was light enough to see how to do the daily chores, such as milking the cows, gathering the eggs, feeding the livestock, etc. Farmers, and many town dwellers, rose before dawn to prepare for the ensuing day. The wood-burning stove had to be stoked and fired, water had to be fetched from the well, and numerous other labor-intensive chores, unknown to modern city dwellers, had to be performed before a person could sit down and enjoy breakfast.

From my childhood days living on the farm, I recall that morning began about one hour before beginning morning nautical twilight (BMNT). BMNT is defined, by no less an authority than the U.S. government, as the time of day when a person can see 400 yards on a clear day. On the fateful day of the Aurora crash, BMNT occurred at 4:34 A.M. Central Standard Time (from an old American Nautical Almanac, Washington, DC: U.S. Govt Printing Office, nd.). If "morning" is one hour before BMNT, "early in the morning" would be sometime before 3:30 A.M. Let us place the time somewhere around 2:30 A.M.

The airship would have three hours, or more, to travel the eighty-four miles from Stephenville to the crash site. Considering the vessel's maximum speed, it is reasonable to assume the pilot could cover this distance in the time allotted, even factoring in the need for reduced speed due to mechanical difficulties.

But, what if the crew was on the ground repairing the ship for so long that they could not possibly have flown from Stephenville to Aurora in the available window? If we examine the Stephenville account, we see that the correspondent wrote, "They rapidly made the necessary repairs, . .." implying the airship was on the ground but a short time.

"IT WAS TRAVELING DUE NORTH ..."

The airship's direction of travel mentioned in "A Windmill Demolishes It" is consistent with the supposition that it was attempting to return to its daytime hiding place at Williams' ranch, near Ladonia. To fly from Aurora to Williams' ranch requires an eastward course correction. However, an airship flying to such a destination would not make a course correction until all danger of passing over or near Dallas had passed, as the danger from daytime observers was great.

Suppose that the Aurora airship was the same as the grounded airship outside Stephenville. Presume the crew repaired the airship sufficiently well enough to fly from Stephenville (as the account states). And let us assume that the crew wished to return to their daytime hiding place. Then, it seems likely the crew would fly on a line from Stephenville to Aurora in order to avoid passing over Fort Worth and Dallas in the daylight. If you look at a map of the area, you will see Aurora is actually north and a little east of Stephenville. You will also note that a segmented line from Stephenville to Ladonia that will bypass Fort Worth and Dallas to the west will pass near Aurora. One segment will be north from Stephenville with another segment northeast. The intersection of two such lines occurs somewhere just south of Aurora.

Remember, any number of good citizens were taking potshots at the aerial monsters when they had a chance. Also, the inventors desired to keep their invention secret, or at least they wished to keep many of the particulars secret. So, passing around Fort Worth or Dallas and northwest out of Stephenville would place them over Aurora at approximately the same time as the crash. Upon approaching Aurora, the airship would be required to turn north then east in order to reach Williams' ranch.

There is one glaring problem with the Stephenville-to-Aurora flight path. The problem is the reported direction of flight as the airship left Stephenville: "the ship rose gently into the air and sailed off in a southwesterly direction." Southwest was in the opposite direction of Aurora. What can we make of this? In numerous accounts, including the Stephenville account, the crew members alluded to the secret nature of their project and their desire to keep the particulars of the airship from public view. If they did not want the public to ascertain the particulars of their airship ("They refused to have their machine critically inspected and refused to talk further as to their plans for the future"—"The Great Aerial Wanderer"), it seems reasonable that they would fly away in the opposite direction of their intended destination, circling toward their true destination only when out of sight. The inventors were clever enough to realize that another clever individual could triangulate airship sightings and quickly locate their daytime hiding spot. So, to prevent any such attempts to discover their daytime lair, after leaving the crowd behind, the crew changed course, heading north for their real destination.

"SOME OF THE MACHINERY WAS OUT OF ORDER..."

The report that the vessel was "gradually settling towards earth" implies a gas leak of some proportion less than a total blowout of the envelope, a failure of some mechanical control device, or the inattention or inability of the pilot to attend to the affairs of the ship, maybe because of incapacitation.

One or more of the hermetically sealed compartments containing the hydrogen used for lift might have been leaking a significant amount of gas. The amount of reserve hydrogen in a compressed form on board is not known, but it could not have been very much, if any, given the size of the machines.

According to the Aurora account, the airship was traveling in a straight line and the pilot made no attempt to avoid the judge's windmill. It is reasonable to suppose the pilot would have attempted to evade the windmill, if possible. If he had attempted to evade the windmill, it also seems reasonable that the witnesses would have commented upon that fact. Since the witnesses did not report any evasive maneuvers by the airship, we are left to conclude either the airship and/or the pilot were unable to perform any maneuvering.

Did the pilot, while preoccupied working on the machine and trying to fix the problem, become unaware of the impending collision? Or, did the pilot succumb to some unknown hazard, perhaps the leaking gas, leaving the airship to fly without any human hands at the controls? It seems most likely that the pilot lost control of the airship for some reason and was "riding her until he couldn't ride her anymore."

"COLLIDED WITH THE TOWER... WITH A TERRIFIC EXPLOSION, SCATTERING DEBRIS OVER SEVERAL ACRES OF GROUND"

Modern UFO enthusiasts have searched the judge's acres and claim to have found crash debris. According to their statements, an analysis of the material disclosed that the metal was aluminum, consistent with the technology of the era and also consistent with the statements of the crew members and the purported inventors concerning the airship's construction.

"THE PILOT OF THE SHIP IS SUPPOSED TO HAVE BEEN THE ONLY ONE ON BOARD"

This sentence presents a problem that seems controversial in light of what we know about the earlier Stephenville sighting. Witnesses of the airship in Stephenville observed two men, who gave their names as S. E. Tillman and A. E. Dolbear, working on the airship. We know Tillman and Dolbear did not perish in a crash in Aurora, as they continued to lead distinguished lives in their chosen professions well into the twentieth century. Yet, the statements of the numerous eyewitnesses to the Aurora crash imply there was one individual on board. Perhaps, the airship that experienced mechanical difficulties at Stephenville was not the airship that exploded at Aurora. If it did crash at Aurora, who was minding the ship? Perhaps, another individual was present and unnoticed, or just not mentioned in the Stephenville account, and this is the person who perished. There are several candidates among the crew members identified in other sightings, including Smith, Jackson, Walters, McKnight, and possibly Scott Warren.

Did two of the crew members, recognizing the possibility of a crash, alight from the airship somewhere between Stephenville and Aurora and take a train back to the daytime lair? There are numerous small communities on a straight line between Stephenville and Aurora where the other crew members could have sought ground transportation. However, the most likely place would be Weatherford, as it is the largest community between Stephenville and Aurora. Weatherford was on a Southern Pacific Railroad east-west rail line. The crewmen could easily have caught a train into Dallas, switched (if necessary), and continued on to the base at Ladonia. Ladonia was on a rail line extending through the countryside between Sherman and Commerce. But, we must also realize there is a possibility that the Aurora airship was not the airship seen in Stephenville.

"HE WAS NOT AN INHABITANT OF THIS WORLD."

The claim that the pilot was an alien was made either because the body was so badly disfigured it did not appear to be human or because the informants wanted to gain publicity for themselves or their community. Such a wild claim would quickly turn into notoriety. The community leaders would have ensured a retraction was printed in the newspaper if the claim had been false, but no such retraction was made. We are left to conclude that at least some of the townspeople really thought the unrecognizable remains were that of an alien being.

The fact that well-respected individuals around the country had previously gone on public record stating their belief that the airships were from Mars lent a degree of acceptability for assuming the remains were of Martian origin. In the chapter 6 account titled "Statesman's Mystery Man," the newspaper reporter asks, "With these soldiers of Mars cavorting around over our heads, do you think there is any danger to us on the earth?" Numerous newspapers continually referenced the airships and their crews as Martian, so it should be no surprise that the Aurora citizens would make such a claim—if you consider the citizens were "prepped" by the newspapers to believe these theories. But, why were newspapers making the Martian claims? This particular historical period begins a widespread and hugely popular belief in the existence of Martian life. The recently discovered "Martian canals" were the subject of many speculative newspaper and magazine articles, many of them citing world-renowned scientists' beliefs in the probable existence of intelligent life on Mars. Many newspapers, including the *Dallas Morning News,* advanced the argument that the machines were piloted by visitors from the red planet. If you were told by the "learned" portion of society that the airships were of alien origin, then you would, reasonably, consider any disfigured recovered bodies were also alien, especially if the whole body was really not identifiable.

Some Aurora citizens may have seen the crash as an opportunity to exploit the situation for great financial gain. According to some of the folks who have casually studied the circumstances surrounding the Aurora crash, by advocating that the remains were Martian, two of the key witnesses hoped to generate a stampede of tourists from all over the world. Supposedly, Judge Proctor (whose windmill was destroyed) and T. J. Weems (the U.S. Signal Service officer) were the culprits who falsely reported the crash and recovery of Martian remains. Judge Proctor would certainly gain financially from any tourist attraction his property became.

But, according to this line of reasoning, by alleging the remains were Martian, the two only introduced skepticism to the story, thereby killing any tourist trade likely to result even if the crash really happened and the pilot was an earthly being. In 1897, an airship crash involving humans from San Francisco or New York was sufficient to generate some amount of interest and resulting tourism. If such a scenario was the cause of the false report, the greedy were overcome by their greed and profited not from their voracity (pun intended).

"PAPERS FOUND ON HIS PERSON ... ARE WRITTEN IN SOME UNKNOWN HIEROGLYPHICS"

Sounds oddly like the coded symbolic information in Dellschau's notebooks. Dellschau seemed to be greatly concerned with secrecy and wrote many entries in his notebooks in a symbolic code. Interviews between observers and crew members give the impression that the inventors were apprehensive about maintaining the secrets of the airships. So, does it not seem reasonable that documentation describing important details would be coded?

It certainly seems so. The use of the word "hieroglyphics" in this account was, unfortunately, a poor choice to describe the papers found. This weird claim, among others in this case, was one of the reasons some people branded the crash as a fake. If the correspondent had used the term "coded," the account might have gained more acceptance as being truthful.

"IT MUST HAVE WEIGHED SEVERAL TONS."

My calculations show a hydrogen gas air bag of the approximate dimensions described could lift a total of 5 tons. (See "Looking for the Sonora Aero Club" section of chapter 20.)

"THE SHIP WAS TOO BADLY WRECKED TO FORM ANY CONCLUSION AS TO ITS CONSTRUCTION OR MOTIVE POWER."

In an accident of this type, accompanied by a devastating fire, bodies are disfigured beyond recognition. The vehicle would have burned considerably from the flammable liquids and gases on board, and of course, it would have melted also. Automobile fire can result in severe disfigurement of the involved passengers and quite a meltdown of the structure, even though they do not carry one tenth of one percent of the flammable materials these airships must have carried, a voluminous quanity of hydrogen or other flammable gases. Imagine just how much more of a meltdown occurred in a hydrogen-filled airship. Now, it is no surprise the airship "was too badly wrecked to form any conclusion."

"IT WAS BUILT OF AN UNKNOWN METAL, RESEMBLING ... ALUMINUM AND SILVER"

This metal was probably aluminum alloy or, perhaps, a coated (anodized) aluminum. In either case, the base material was aluminum and was strange only because it was not in general, or popular, use. Farmers used steel and iron for all manner of purposes about the home and farm. At least one character in this story may have experimented with making an aluminum and silver alloy. Prof. Amos E. Dolbear's close confidant and friend Moses Farmer experimented with alloys of aluminum using copper, silver, and other metals as early as 1860. Whatever manufacturing processes Farmer discovered for alloying aluminum, he likely shared the technology with Dolbear. Dolbear may have even worked closely with Farmer in his experiments. In the 1860s, Farmer also made alloys of aluminum and gold to be used in dental (a Benjamin connection?) work and jewelry.

Dellschau claimed that some of the carriages of the 1850s airships were made from aluminum! Also, in November 1896, six months prior to the Aurora crash, Dr. C. A. Smith, in an interview with the *San Francisco Call*, stated his new airship would be made from aluminum. It seems that for some time prior to the crash, aluminum was in demand as a structural component in the airship business.

"THE TOWN IS FULL OF PEOPLE TO-DAY WHO ARE VIEWING THE WRECK"

Of one fact we can be certain: if the town had not been full of people viewing the wreck, someone from Aurora would have written the newspaper with the allegation that the statement was false and the correspondent a liar.

In 1897, people were quick to correct false reporting, and newspapers were just as quick at printing the corrections. Recall the chapter 6 account ("He Did Not See the Ship") of an R. N. Burt, who was said, by a third party, to have seen the airship. Several days later, the newspaper received a letter from Mr. Burt stating the report was false. Also, newspapers were sensitive to the competitive environment in which they functioned. In many respects, newspapers faced stiffer competition then, due to the number of papers in the same community. A rival newspaper was sure to set the record straight in a civic, helping-hand gesture to the other paper. Credibility, if nothing else, was necessary to keep the competition at arm's length.

Yes, there were famous newspaper-generated hoaxes during the era. But, the editors/authors always came forth with an admission of false reporting after the hoax, typically a serialization, had run its course. No such admission concerning the Aurora crash was ever forthcoming.

On June 16, 2000, I visited with Carolyn Dodson, a longtime Decatur, Texas, resident. Carolyn, taking time off from remodeling her early Texas home, related to me the story of her grandmother, born in the early 1890s in

Indian Territory. Her grandmother was named Nova and her maiden name was Bowman. Nova's mother, suffering from ill health, died within two years of Nova's birth. Nova's dad, realizing he could not work and take care of such a young child, brought Nova to his parents' home in Aurora, Texas, in 1895. There, Nova grew up.

She told Carolyn of the daily trips she took with her grandmother into Aurora to pick up the mail and purchase any necessary household items. When Carolyn asked her if there was any truth to the alleged Aurora crash, Nova told her that she remembered going into town that day with her grandmother and there was a state of great excitement and general commotion. Since she was too young, about six years old, she did not remember any particular details, only the sense of a great commotion and the *large number of people in town.* As she grew older, she realized, from the discussions around the neighborhood, the excitement that day was due to the airship crash.

"THE PILOT'S FUNERAL WILL TAKE PLACE AT NOON TO-MORROW."

Many people, then and now, believe the Aurora crash was faked because the town was so quick to bury the "Martian" body afterward. If the crash truly happened, goes popular thinking, the remains should have been remanded to science for study—after public display, of course. Well, if you have a disfigured and burnt-beyond-recognition body, or pieces thereof, on your hands in 1897, you cannot preserve it by any means other than placing it, or them, in a freezer.

I do not know if Aurora had such a freezer, but I suspect it did. Most communities of any size in 1897 included an icehouse and Aurora was a sizable community. However, I cannot imagine the icehouse owner agreeing to store such an offensive article. His business would suffer greatly, as people undoubtedly would refuse to buy the "contaminated" ice. The only recourse the townspeople had was to bury the body pieces as soon as possible, before the stench became loud. (And I think the majority of the townspeople knew or suspected the body was human, so there really was no valid reason for rendering the carcass over for study, anyway.)

Other individuals have examined the Aurora crash story and offered their views of what really happened. Perhaps the most extensive investigation of the crash was conducted by a *Dallas Morning News* reporter who investigated the incident in the 1970s. He did not examine the crash in the context of the entire airship story (beginning in the fall of 1896 and proceeding until early May 1897). Instead, he focused on the specific events and accounts surrounding the original crash report. Using questionable logic, he reached the conclusion that the crash and the airship stories were fake. He based this opinion primarily on three points: a 1907 Wise County history excluded any mention of the crash, the inventors never stepped forth to acknowledge their invention, and there were no surviving artifacts in the 1970s.

He believed such a glaring omission from the county history was powerful proof that the crash was a fake. If it actually occurred, he reasoned, Wise County would gleefully include such an interesting story in their official history. He seemed to overlook Aurora's circumstance by 1907. It was one very small community in Wise County, and the "historian," not an Aurora resident, chose subjects of interest to her and wrote whatever pleased her. Such county "histories" are written not necessarily to record the "truth" for posterity, but to record the author's usually highly biased version of it, and they typically involve only the "moneyed" element of the community and their accomplishments.

Since the inventors failed to come forth and claim their rights of invention, including the adulation of an admiring world, the *Dallas Morning News* reporter believed such a disdainful dismissal by the inventor(s) of posterity's accolades was proof of a great airship hoax. The *Dallas Morning News* reporter utterly failed to recognize the fact that many people labor and achieve great things without any regard for posterity's outlook upon their contribution to the progress of the human race. But, there are other reasons preventing the airship inventors from stepping up and claiming their rightful place among history's famed. We know they labored in secrecy and desired not fame but to keep their invention to themselves, that they might enjoy their machines. However, in the airship business of 1897, some inventors, possibly the inventors of the Aurora airship or their associates, did attempt to get recognition for their efforts. The crash in Aurora may be just one of the reasons why the inventors went unrecognized for their labors, along with these others (or a combination of them):

- bought out by the railroads

- crashes/deaths

- loss of financial backing

- government intervention

- inventors were really not seeking financial gain

Finally, the *Dallas Morning News* reporter believed if the airship stories were true, then something relating to the airship—complete vessels, parts, drawings, or documents—would have survived. Recall the number of lawsuits Alexander Graham Bell had to fight to protect his telephone patent—at least 600, including one filed by Prof. A. E. Dolbear. Does it take a great leap in imagination, then, to assume the inventors would have locked up everything related to the airships and their design to maintain the greatest possible secrecy? And who knows if some barn, attic, or cellar near Aurora, Texas; Goshen, New York; or Oroville, California does not possess several locked trunks stuffed with yellowed drawings and documents, moldering and leisurely crumbling to pieces? And perhaps, lying nearby, slowly rusting, are a few odd looking (airship) implements of some supposed but unknown farming utility. And there is the possibility that the descendants of William H. H. Hart, former California attorney general, or his law partner, have in their possession the legal documents Hart was preparing for the inventors.

Countering the conclusions of reporters and others who do not believe there was a crash are several compelling eyewitness accounts. In the 1970s interviews, two lifelong Aurora residents, who were about twelve years old in 1897, claimed to remember the crash was factual, each giving the interviewer some amount of details. One individual stated she never talked of the crash before, for fear of being branded a liar or kook. In the 1970s, the United States was inundated with numerous UFO sightings, and admitting having seen one was becoming less burdensome, even for old folks. The impression given by the lady in the interview was that the 1970s climate was conducive for admitting she had seen such wonders long ago.

One point of contention between one of the individuals interviewed in the 1970s and the original newspaper story revolves around the structure the airship supposedly struck. The 1897 Aurora newspaper stringer informed everyone the airship struck a windmill. In the 1970s, at least one Aurora resident claimed Judge Proctor had no windmill, but rather a windlass. The Wise County tax records support the account of the 1970s resident, as there is no windmill listed in the property-tax records of Judge Proctor. However, if the windmill was relatively new, it probably would not show up on the tax records. A visit to the former property of Judge Proctor reveals the home was sitting upon a small hill. I have never seen any windmills in Texas reposing upon a hillside. The distance from the surface to the water table makes a windmill impractical if it is not sitting in the vicinity of a creek or other low or level ground. So, from this observation alone, Judge Proctor probably did not have a windmill close to his house. But, not far off is a creek bed.

Does it make any difference which one—a windmill or a windlass— was on the judge's property? In the overall airship mystery, it does not. It is sufficient to know the airship struck something and subsequently exploded and burned. But, the validity of the airship story does not depend upon any single facet of the story but rests upon the entire collection of stories—the sequence of events from the initial 1896 California sighting to the last sighting off the coast of New York in 1897—which is compelling when you consider all the individual accounts. When viewed as a whole, they quickly jell to form a coherent set of events that yield sensible answers to penetrating questions.

Another point of contention concerning the validity of the Aurora crash concerns the lack of crash debris at the alleged site. According to one airship investigator, MUFON researchers allegedly combed what was Judge Proctor's property in the 1970s. He claimed the investigators found bits and pieces of metal scattered about the place and analyzed the pieces in two separate laboratories. The alleged analysis stated the metal had been subject to a very high temperature (i.e., molten) and had an unknown crystalline structure. Yet, the metal was determined to be of a common type found in period stoves (perhaps cast iron?). The researcher did not disclose whether the analysis labeled the metal as aluminum or iron.

I twice tried to contact MUFON's Texas state director to ask him if he could confirm published statements supposedly made by MUFON regarding the recovery and identification of metal shards from the Aurora crash site. He declined the interview.

I then e-mailed the national director of MUFON. A representative from the company, who gave no name in the e-mail, gave a cryptic response: "As for the tale of the UFO accident in Texas, we have no information at this level, although the story persists in UFO lore. The ancillary aspect of retrieved artifacts and analysis of same may be apocryphal. Your query is being copied herewith to other MUFON offices; perhaps they can shed more light on MUFON's alleged involvement, if any."

If MUFON examined the Aurora crash site and recovered anything worthwhile, it seems the national director is not aware of it and the state director does not want to talk about it. For the MUFON national director's office to refer to the recovery and analysis of crash debris as ancillary implies that the company considers such evidence unimportant. What a strange approach from an organization supposedly interested in determining and proving the existence of UFOs. Also, by referring to them as apocryphal, is the national director's office informing me that MUFON's recovery and subsequent analysis of Aurora crash debris is not a true story? I strongly suspect MUFON did not recover any metal debris and the alleged MUFON analysis did not happen, as the organization has not come forth with detailed information concerning their findings. I question if the MUFON folks even went to the correct property, or any property, to search for crash debris.

In any case, anyone searching for metal shards would not likely recover any sizable pieces, as those would have been melted for horseshoes and farm implements. For the record, I did not observe any crash debris when I visited the property.

What happened to all of the metal that was certainly left upon the smoldering ground after the crash? Does "waste not, want not" ring any bells? The creed was a battle cry for people in 1897. Every last bit of metal from the crash would have been shoveled into a cart and hauled off to the blacksmith's shop for immediate recycling. And can you guess who the local smithy was? None other than our friendly, informative, government signal officer, Mr. T. J. Weems, who doubled as the town blacksmith.

TABLE 67
T. J. Weems' Texas Census Record

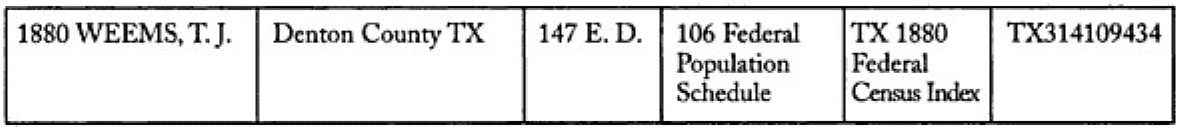

1880 WEEMS, T. J.	Denton County TX	147 E. D.	106 Federal Population Schedule	TX 1880 Federal Census Index	TX314109434

If one discounts the supposed recovery of an alien life form, then believing the Aurora crash actually happened is quite easy. Just hours before the crash, numerous credible witnesses saw an airship experiencing mechanical difficulty within easy flying distance of Aurora. Several credible witnesses and bystanders have said over the years that such a crash did occur. In the context of the numerous airship sightings in 1896 and 1897, it is plausible such a crash really happened. Unfortunately, a couple of Aurora citizens—by advocating the remains were Martian supposedly in an effort to increase the local tourist trade—have cast doubt upon the historical significance of the airships' existence. For these airships, flying faster and higher than any flying vessels produced in the early twentieth century, set flying records before records were kept.

CHAPTER 22

WHAT HAPPENED TO THE AIRSHIPS?

In the spring of 1897, the press was buzzing with reports of airship sightings. Experts were rendering opinions on the validity of these accounts, and there were as many opinions as there were opinion makers. But there was one universal opinion: whoever successfully flew a machine about the skies first would become a rich and famous man.

The statement given by the inventor in the chapter 6 account "C. G. Williams Saw It"—"See here, young man, don't give this thing away. We are experimenting with this vessel. So far it is a success. We expect to revolutionize travel and transportation"— is certainly pregnant with the thought of great financial gain. Human nature being what it is, we can assume the inventors expected at least some gain and recognition from their efforts. With such a financial reward beckoning, why did the airships' architects fail to reap the reward of their labors? Possible answers include (1) a buyout by the railroads, (2) crashes/deaths, (3) loss of financial backing (4) government intervention, (5) they really were not seeking financial gain, (6) some combination of the above. The technology of the period admits the capability of 100 miles-per-hour-plus flight for inventive individuals who seized the opportunity and made headlines around the country. Unfortunately, the inventors did not exploit their handiwork for great financial gain. If they had, the world might have been different in 1900. So, what happened?

If the inventors succeeded in revolutionizing travel and transportation, ruthless railroad barons would certainly see an end to their ironclad dominance in transportation. Could New York railroad financiers have plotted the destruction of the airships and their inventors to maintain their dominance in the most significant industry in America? Railroading was so important to the nation's economy, Dow included ten railroad stocks in the original complement of twelve stocks comprising the Dow (Jones)

Transportation Averages in 1884. Is it possible for one industry to throttle another, fledgling industry? Over the last one hundred years, we have witnessed just how ruthless certain individuals, including William Randolph Hearst, can be in protecting their rice bowl. Railroad barons may have played a role in suppressing the success of the airships.

There were four airship crashes. If nine airships were produced and four were destroyed, we still have five airships unaccounted for (regarding their final outcome). The inventors do not mention how many airships crashed during initial flight-testing. Perhaps, of all the airships, only four successfully completed their initial tests, and those began the series of flight tests in the spring of 1897—but, because too little information is available, we can only speculate.

If the crashes took the lives of the inventors, then we have at least a partial explanation why the technology was not successfully pursued any further. The financial backers may have realized that, while the lift and motive technology existed to propel the machines over 100 miles per hour, the reliability and safety technologies required to build ships for commercial use were not adequate.

A RECAP OF POSSIBLE CRASHES

Nina

The *Nina* crashed in Aurora.

Pina

For at least two nights she was searching the Gulf for her missing sister ship, the *Nina,* which had crashed in Aurora. The figures of the sightings for April 20 and 21 show an airship around southern Louisiana early in the morning. This airship, the *Pina,* was searching the waters while her sister ship, the *Colada,* was searching the Texas interior for the missing *Nina.*

Notice after April 22 the land sightings continued in the interior of the state, meaning the *Colada* was still following a search plan. It probably did not expect to meet up with the *Pina* for several more days. But, no more airship sightings occurred near the Gulf after April 22. Why? On the night of the twenty-second, the *Pina* probably crashed somewhere off the Gulf Coast while performing its search.

Colada

The number of sightings after April 22 were greatly reduced, as would be expected if only one airship (of the original three appearing in Texas) was left. From the April 24 sightings, it appears that soon after April 22, the *Colada* drifted down to southeast Texas and began a frantic hunt for the second missing ship, the *Pina.* The evidence for such a supposition lies in the flight patterns of the *Colada,* as sightings began again in the southeast area, while simultaneously the number of sightings faded over the interior.

The last reported sighting in Texas occurred on the evening of May 11. What happened to the last airship? Perhaps by this date the *Colada* pilot and crew knew of the Aurora crash from reading the newspapers they had acquired during their search, and they may have suspected the same fate for the *Pina*.

After fruitlessly searching the southeastern area for several days for some sign of the missing *Pina*, they decided to return to their home base. But, which one—California, Iowa, or New York? On May 13, the *Denver Evening Post* reported the statements of a seafaring captain regarding the crash of a balloon or airship at sea off the coast of New York.

> Balloon at Sea
>
> Large Airship Reported Lost in the Ocean Near New York
>
> Quarantine, S.I. (Staten Island), May 13 Pilot William Furrie of Sandy Hook Pilot Boat No. 20, which brought the Norwegian fruit steamer Leon into port this morning reports on arrival at Quarantine that while cruising at 5:40 o'clock yesterday afternoon about three miles east of Sand Hook light ship he sighted a large balloon apparently about four miles south.
>
> The wind was from the southward and the balloon came along at a rapid rate, sinking gradually. The pilot boat was headed toward the balloon, but it fell into the water and sank within a few yards of the boat *(Denver Evening Post,* May 13, 1897, p. 1).

Unfortunately Pilot Furrie does not give a more detailed description of what he saw sinking into the ocean other than labeling it a "large balloon." Was it a typical round, gas, air-bag balloon—like those used in balloon launches at modern-day festivals? Or, was the pilot describing a dirigible-shaped balloon? Note the sub-title of the article: "Large Airship Reported Lost in the Ocean Near New York." People of the era sometimes referred to airships as balloons, but they never referred to a balloon as an airship.

The wind direction is an interesting element. It is from the south, meaning that the airship the pilot saw was approaching New York from the south. ("The wind was from the southward and the balloon came along at a rapid rate" implies the "balloon" was traveling with the wind.) The date of May 13 is intriguing, as the last sighting in Texas was May 11. The timing is about right for the *Colada* to have traveled from the coast of Texas to New York. Could this be an account of the last moments of the last airship? And could the pilot have been Hiram Wilson? Did he lose his life at sea on May 13, 1897, in a tragic airship accident off the coast of New York as he tried to return home?

The Fourth and Fifth (Iowa) Airships

How many airships were there? In C. A. Smith's newspaper interview, he mentions building three airships. Hart mentions uniting the East Coast "interests" with the West Coast interests, thereby implying there is at least one East Coast airship (the Wilsons'?); then we have the reference to the five airships built in a "quiet Iowa village." When we add these numbers we come up with nine airships. But, I don't think there were nine. I think there were just five, the five constructed in Iowa.

Let's look at the number of airships from this perspective for a moment. When the "interests" where united, we have no idea how far along the construction of the airships had progressed. Let's assume the construction was not yet begun. Then, it is reasonable to find all the airships were built in the same location, if nothing else, just for the convenience and efficiency of the matter. In this case, we have Smith's three airships and the Wilson's airship. That gives us four airships. Where is the fifth? I think Marcellus McGary was a member of the airship team and his airship, its manufacture in Keokuk, Iowa, well documented, is the fifth Iowa airship.

Several newspaper accounts refer to "five airships built in a quiet Iowa village." Yet, only three appeared over Dallas on April 15, 1897. Assuming the Texas airships were all manufactured in Iowa, there are still two Iowa airships unaccounted for. Where were the fourth and fifth airships that night? We must delve into the Midwest and the Northwest to determine the answer.

An April 13, 1897, *Detroit Evening News* article ("Went to Smash," p. 4) reported an airship crash. According to the article, two old soldiers, George W. Somers and William Chadburn, saw the airship on Sunday (April 11) evening near Galesburg, Michigan. Both men claim the airship had passed over into the distance when they heard a dull explosion and the airship immediately disappeared from their sight. They described the report as the sound of heavy ordnance followed by the sound of flying projectiles.

Continuing in the same article, a Mr. and Mrs. Wallace said they distinctly heard an explosion in the same general area, but thought it was thunder. But, the night sky was clear on the evening of April 11, 1897. Two miles from Scotts, Michigan, a farmer found "some part of an electrical appliance" in his field. In another location, a "partially fused propeller" made of "some light material" was found. The explosion must have been centered over Comstock Township. Three men engaged in shingling a barn testified that the morning after the explosion the completed area of the roof was embedded with metal fragments, with many penetrating through the shingles and impinging upon the underlying boards.

In a *Battle Creek (Michigan) Daily Moon* article ("The Airship," April 13,1897, p. 4), the newspaper duly reported the appearance of the airship, witnessed by "some 20 reputable citizens," at 8:55 "last night" (April 12?) over Battle Creek, traveling southeast at an altitude of about one mile. According to the article, an explosion was heard, sparks flew from the airship, and it dipped down then gained altitude again before all its lights were extinguished, becoming invisible in the clear but dark sky. This same incident is reported by several other newspapers in the Battle Creek vicinity. Apparently, the explosion and subsequent shower of sparks was sufficiently loud to attract the attention of all nearby communities.

On April 15, the *Detroit Evening News* ("Airship Again," p. 4) reported George Parks and his wife were crossing a field about five miles from Battle Creek on the evening of April 13 and found the wheel of an airship seen crossing the field earlier. The wheel may have come from the airship that exploded in the vicinity. The Parks family makes no mention in the article of hearing the explosion.

According to the stated direction of travel in the *Daily Moon*, after passing over Battle Creek, the airship would soon pass over Galesburg then Comstock. Comstock is *22* miles west of Battle Creek and now a part of Kalamazoo. Galesburg is 17 miles west of Battle Creek and five miles east of Kalamazoo. The date of the article and the time of explosion ("last night") seem to indicate that the explosion heard at Battle Creek was on the April 12, 1897. But, the date could have been April 11, the same night the airship was seen just a few miles away at Galesburg and Comstock when it was heard to explode.

Other than the debris mentioned in these articles, no additional physical evidence of a crash exists. No other large pieces were recovered, and there are no known reports of any human remains being found. How could two communities 22 miles apart have heard the same explosion? When an explosion occurs at some altitude, the resulting sound wave may travel great distances. The *Daily Moon* account places the airship's altitude at about one mile. The airship was geographically situated where all three communities could hear a loud explosion from the reported altitude of the airship.

Our fourth airship was in Michigan on April 12, disabled (possibly destroyed) and unable to follow its sister ships to Texas.

We have one Iowa airship left to account for. While the three airships were preparing to pass over Dallas on the night of April 16, another airship was seen on the ground with a broken propeller near Mead, Washington.

> The Airship
>
> Some People Claim To Have seen It
>
> A number of people around the city today are declaring in positive terms that an air ship has been seen in this neighborhood. Some declare they have seen it themselves, others have seen people who have seen the machine. One man who gives his name as Thurber declares he saw the air ship, a cigar shaped machine made of aluminum about 25 feet long. He says it was stranded beyond Mead at the mouth of Dead Man creek, and had one propeller broken. It seemed to have been abandoned by its owner, but it was surrounded by a big crowd *(Spokane [Washington] Daily Chronicle,* April 16,1897, p. 5).

Mead is 1,964 miles from Dallas. In the spring of 1897, we can account for three airships in Texas, an airship that exploded over Michigan, and another airship seen broken down in Washington State. We have accounted for the five airships built in "a quiet Iowa village."

We can say the evidence presented in this book demonstrates all of the airship characters mentioned in the various newspaper articles regarding the 1897 airship mystery were intimately connected to each other by virtue of place, profession, organization, and/or family. The actors in the airship mystery were real people with real professions and their relationships with each other encompassed five decades of American history, including a Civil War, an Indian war, a gold rush, and the great migration of settlers from the East to the West. These men were pioneers not only in the sense of settling new territory, but they were also pioneers in the fledgling aerospace industry. Real men flew real airships in the spring of 1897.

The crash off Staten Island may have been the last sighting of any of the five airships that first stunned then amazed the country for one brief moment in our history. If so, it is probable that the airships' aluminum superstructure and other parts are salvageable. A successful search and recovery of the remains could confirm the airship story and credit the brave inventors and adventurers with their wonderful flying machines.

CONCLUSION

I worked as a shift supervisor for the Naval Space Surveillance System for a year. I have worked on classified government projects for about twenty years. I have enjoyed the beauty of the night sky for many hundreds of nights. I have never observed a UFO in my entire life. I love the idea of our planet Earth being just one member of a large body of inhabited planets scattered throughout the universe. For some reason, it seems scary to think that if we fail, all intelligent life in the universe will be extinguished. And who knows how many of those planets may have civilizations populated with creatures far more advanced than our own that know how to successfully propel themselves outside their solar system? Yet, I know most earthly UFO sightings have a plausible explanation that does not resolve to "aliens from another planet" or "mass hysteria."

There is a growing body of evidence to support the assertion that a group of individuals designed, built, and flew airships from the late 1840s. Their early work in the 1850s may have lead directly to the manufacture and flight of several airships responsible for the great 1896 and 1897 airship mystery. Although very secretive, their work is gaining attention and additional details are coming to light.

A plausible and very strong case for seemingly incredible high-speed airship flight in the Texas skies during 1897 was presented in these pages. If we believe the newspaper accounts, at least those with the same timbre, we are left to conclude that a small group of inventors and adventurers, in 1897, amazed the world for a few short days in the spring with their wonderful flying machines before unexpectedly meeting untimely ends. And perhaps locked away and forgotten in some dusty attic waiting for another helpful nurse to "take care of that mess and clean it all up" are documents that will reveal the whole airship story.

Afterword

> "We must be alarmingly enterprising, and we must be startlingly original . . . and do new and striking things which constitute a revolution."
>
> —William Randolph Hearst (date unknown)

In 1897, American newspapers sent hundreds of reporters, artists, and photographers to Havana, Cuba, to document Spanish atrocities during the Cuban war for independence. The war correspondents, including such notable personalities as author Stephen Crane and artist Frederic Remington, when they arrived, found no Spanish atrocities. In fact, they found very little worth reporting. "There is no war," the great Western artist Frederic Remington wrote to his newspaper boss, William Randolph Hearst, "request to be recalled." The infamous Hearst rashly sent a succinct cable reply to Remington, "Please remain. You furnish the pictures, I'll furnish the war."

On the moonless night of February 15, 1898, after most of the crew had retired for the night, the American battleship U.S.S. *Maine* mysteriously exploded in Havana Harbor, Cuba, with the loss of 270 American men. No unusual sounds were heard just before the explosion. Although Spain had no means for delivering a torpedo to the Maine's hull, the newspapers claimed the Spanish military was responsible for torpedoing the battleship. For weeks after the *Maine* sinking, the *New York Journal* (a Hearst paper) devoted more than eight pages a day to the disaster. Soon, the American public was screaming for revenge. President McKinley was not in favor of war, but the United States Congress, responding to popular sentiment, declared war on Spain.

William Randolph Hearst asked, "How do you like the [New York] Journal's War?" *New York Evening Post* columnist Edward L. Gotkin acidly retorted, "It's a crying shame that men should work such mischief ... to sell more papers."

Isn't it an odd coincidence Dr. Solomon Andrews demonstrated, for the War Department's consideration, in September 1863 a motorless, that is noiseless, airship seemingly capable of delivering ordnance to ground, or water, targets? And isn't it another odd coincidence a fellow by the name of Rich experimented dropping torpedoes by balloon in February 1897? Rich performed his torpedo experiments in the great state of Iowa. Perhaps, Cuba was the intended destination the airships were bound for after all. As there was not much in the way of a Spanish fleet to bomb and since the United States had not yet declared war on Spain, maybe, just maybe, Hearst decided to speed things up a bit by bombing the *Maine,* just to "furnish the war."

APPENDIX A

AIRSHIP PATENT APPLICATIONS

The following figures depict the patent applications of Solomon Andrews (awarded July 5, 1864, patent number 43,449), Charles Smith (awarded August 11, 1896, patent number 585,803), and three other inventors (H. Heintz, patent number 580,941, awarded April 20, 1897; E. J. St. Croix, patent number 573,549, awarded December 22, 1896; and D. Reed, patent number 591,692, awarded October 12, 1897). Additionally, a patent application for Samuel West (of San Francisco, patent number 553,634, awarded January 28, 1896), not included here, is noteworthy because William H. H. Hart of San Francisco is assigned one-half of the patent rights.

UNITED STATES PATENT OFFICE.

SOLOMON ANDREWS, OF PERTH AMBOY, NEW JERSEY, ASSIGNOR TO SOLOMON ANDREWS, JR.

IMPROVEMENT IN AEROSTATS.

Specification forming part of Letters Patent No. **43,449**, dated July 5, 1864.

To all whom it may concern:

Be it known that I, SOLOMON ANDREWS, of Perth Amboy, in the county of Middlesex, in the State of New Jersey, have invented a mode by which the air may be navigated, and a new and useful machine by which it may be done which machine I call an "Aereon;" and I do hereby declare that the following is a full, clear, and exact description of the construction and operation of the same, reference being had to the annexed drawings, making a part of this specification.

In Figure 1 there are three aerostats of a cylindrical form pointed at each end, joined together by a membrane or diaphragm at their longitudinal equators, covered by a net from which four rows of cords extend to a long and narrow car suspended below the center, the ballast and aeronaut in the car. It ascends and descends on inclined planes in the atmosphere, because of its form or construction, however it is poised obliquely. The angles of inclination are produced by the position of the aeronaut in the car or the removal of other weights, and it is steered by a common rudder.

To navigate the air with this vessel, it is only necessary to step to the rear end of the car, thus elevating the bow five to ten degrees, and by throwing out a little ballast she will go ahead on the ascending plane. When she has ascended as high as the aeronaut wishes to go, he opens one of the valves and discharges some gas, at the same time stepping toward the forward end of the car, which will depress the bow, elevate the stern, and so change the angle of inclination, when she will go ahead on the descending plane. On a near approach to the earth he has only to step to the middle or rear end of the car, and thus elevate the bow. To stop her momentum at any rate of velocity, sail horizontally for a short distance, or throw out more ballast and go ahead again on the ascending plane. Having forward motion, she is turned by the rudder just like a boat on the water. Stern way may also be had if desired. Before the ballast is exhausted come down to a depot, replenish the wasted gas and ballast, and go on again.

One pound of ascending or descending power will give to this vessel a forward movement of one mile per hour, and each additional pound will increase her speed in about the same ratio, so that by ascending or descending with a power of two hundred pounds a speed of two hundred miles per hour may be attained, and common varnished linen is strong enough to resist the pressure on the bow at that rapid rate, if brought to a point and held so by some inflexible frame-work.

The foregoing I consider a full and comprehensive description of my invention; but as aerial vessels have never before been directed in their course by the will of man, I shall go more into detail, even at the risk of being verbose.

I effect locomotion in the atmosphere in any given direction by means of the form or construction of the aerostat, the motive power being the attraction of gravitation.

To be more explicit, the difference between the specific gravity of the aerostat and that of the atmosphere in which it floats I use to propel the aerostat over the surface of the earth, by ascending and descending on inclined planes in the atmosphere by means of the shape or form of the aerostat itself, or a disk thereto attached.

A balloon or spherical body lighter than an equal bulk of the atmosphere will ascend perpendicularly to the horizon, as was demonstrated by the Messrs. Montgolfier, of France. If currents prevail in the atmosphere, the balloon will of course move in the same direction at the same rate of speed. If heavier than the same bulk of air it displaces, it will descend in the same way. But if made in any other shape and kept suspended by the center of gravity in any oblique position it will ascend or descend, as the case may be, on the line of least resistance. Thus, if made in a flattened and elongated form and kept in an oblique position, it will ascend or descend in the plane of its longest axis, because it meets with less resistance in that direction, and this produces a forward movement. If such an aerostat be held perfectly horizontal, it will move only perpendicularly, (supposing no current in the air,) because it finds no opposing force to the direction of gravitation, and gravitation always acts perpendicularly to the horizon. It is, then, by an opposing force or resistance to gravitation on one portion of the aerostat by which I compel the aerostat to move forward on a semi-hori-

S. ANDREWS.

AEROSTAT.

No. 43,449. Patented July 5, 1864.

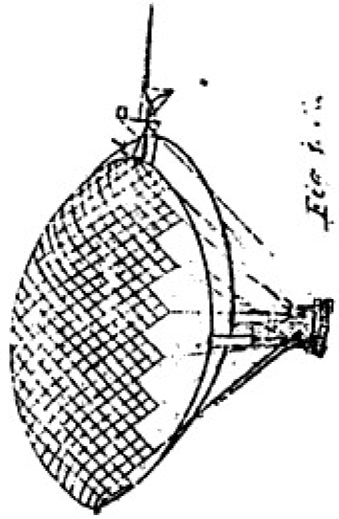
Fig. 7.

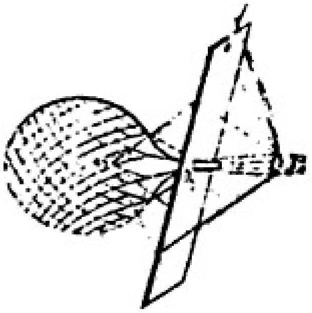
Fig. 8.

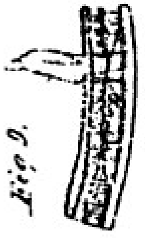
Fig. 9.

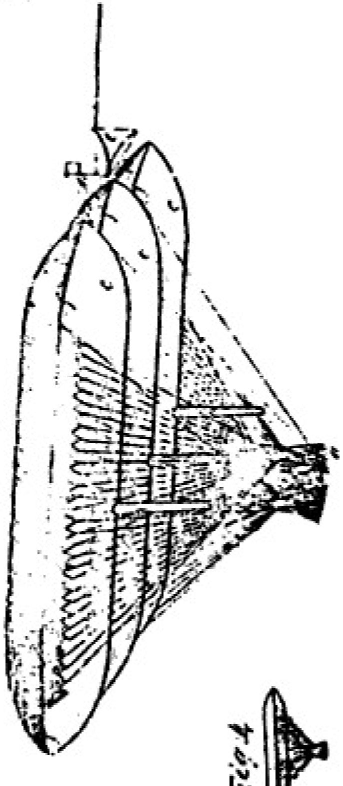
Fig. 1.

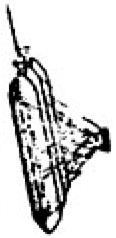
Fig. 3.

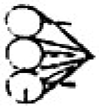
Fig. 6.

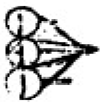
Fig. 5.

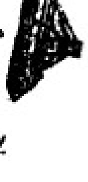
Fig. 2.

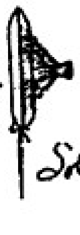
Fig. 4.

Witnesses.

Allen S. Ward

E. A. Abbott

Inventor.

Solomon Andrews

UNITED STATES PATENT OFFICE.

CHARLES ABBOTT SMITH, OF SAN FRANCISCO, CALIFORNIA.

AIR-SHIP.

SPECIFICATION forming part of Letters Patent No. 565,805, dated August 11, 1896.

Application filed April 2, 1896. Serial No. 585,893. (No model.)

To all whom it may concern:

Be it known that I, CHARLES ABBOTT SMITH, a citizen of the United States, residing at San Francisco, in the county of San Francisco and State of California, have invented certain new and useful Improvements in Aeronautics; and I do declare the following to be a full, clear, and exact description of the invention, such as will enable others skilled in the art to which it appertains to make and use the same, reference being had to the accompanying drawings, and to the figures of reference marked thereon, which form a part of this specification.

My invention relates to the construction of air-ships and to the means for guiding and controlling the same, the object being to provide a navigable vessel having large carrying capacity and adapted to be manipulated and controlled with ease and facility.

In the accompanying drawings, which illustrate my invention and form a part of this specification, Figure 1 represents a side view of the ship; Fig. 2, a rear end view; Fig. 3, a vertical transverse section on the line *a a* in Fig. 1; Fig. 4, a vertical longitudinal section on the line *b b* in Fig. 3.

I propose to construct the hull or body of the ship of thin sheet metal—preferably of aluminium or of aluminium alloy on account of the lightness of this material—and to render the same buoyant by charging it with hydrogen or other light gas. The vessel so constructed and charged is propelled by a screw-propeller of usual or preferred construction and is guided or steered by horizontal and vertical rudders, by the manipulation of which it is directed upward, downward, or laterally, and its direction changed at will. I propose also to augment the buoyancy and carrying capacity by means of hinged vibrating wings operated from within, all as hereinafter fully described.

The hull or body comprises a cylindrical portion 1 and a pointed or cone-shaped bow 2, the body portion having at the rear end an overhang 4, which projects back over the screw 5, and to which is hinged the horizontal rudder 6, whereby the vessel is guided in a vertical direction.

The hull is divided into compartments 7 8 9 by horizontal partitions 10 11, (see Figs. 3 and 4,) extending longitudinally through the body portion 1 and somewhat into the cone-shaped bow 2, the middle compartment 8 being intended for passengers, freight, &c., and for the reception of the necessary driving machinery, while the upper and lower compartments 7 9 are intended to be charged with gas. The middle compartment, which may be denominated the "cabin" or "saloon," is provided at the sides with windows 12 for the admission of light, and in the bottom with openings or wells 13 14, which extend through the lower compartment 9 and through the bottom of the hull, as shown in Fig. 4. The first of these openings, which is in the pointed bow 2, is intended as a lookout in a forward direction, while the other, 14, which is aproximately amidships, is provided for the purpose of permitting an anchor or grapple 15 to be lowered and hoisted therethrough.

16 16 designate two vertical rudders mounted at the stern at opposite sides of the screw 5, the latter being in rear of the rudders, so as not to interfere therewith. These rudders may be operated by hand or by machinery in the usual manner, and therefore no connections are shown in the drawings.

17 17 are two wings hinged at the upper part of the vessel, extending approximately the whole length of the cylindrical body portion 1 and curved into concavo-convex form, so as to lie, when folded, snugly against the sides of the body. (See Fig. 2.) These wings are adapted to be vibrated, and are intended by their action on the air to assist in buoying and sustaining the vessel, their action being similar to that of a bird in flying, and it will be understood that when vibrated regularly and in unison they will exert a lifting force, their convex upper surfaces offering less resistance to the air in their rising movements than is offered by their concave surfaces in the falling movements, the difference being the measure of their lifting force at each vibration.

As a means for operating the wings I show a series of drums 18, geared with and adapted to be rotated back and forth by an engine 19, of any suitable or preferred style or construction; but other mechanisms and motive power may be employed if found expedient, these features forming no part of my invention, which is independent of the driving mechanism, it being only necessary that suitable machinery and connections be employed for operating the wings. In practice I propose to employ either a naphtha-engine or a small electric motor, according to the purposes for which the ship is to be used and the distances to be traversed. Cords or ropes 20, attached to the wings, extend to the drums 18, passing through vertical tubes 21, which project above the vessel, and over pulleys or rollers 22, mounted at the tops of said tubes, said rollers being employed for the purpose of preventing friction. By rotating the drums 18 in one direction the wings are raised and by rotating in the opposite direction they are allowed to fall. Other cords 23, also attached to the wings, pass over pulleys or rollers 24, mounted at the sides of the vessel, and thence through openings 25 in the walls thereof to the drums 18, the arrangement being such that the cords 20 23 are alternately wound up and unwound to impart the required vibratory movements to the wings.

While I show separate drums for the cords 20 23, it is to be understood that they may be manipulated by a single drum, it being only required in such case that they be connected with the wings at equal distances from the hinges or axes of vibration in order that they may be kept taut while being wound up and unwound. The horizontal rudder 4 is operated also by means of cords 26 and 27, attached, respectively, to the upper and lower sides thereof and running also to the interior of the vessel, where they may be manipulated in the same manner as the cords 20 23 to raise or depress the rudder, or they may be manipulated by hand, as may be found most expedient.

For purposes of illustration I show a separate motor 28 applied to the shaft of the propeller 5, but it is to be understood that in practice I propose to use a single engine or motor, one having the least possible weight, and to drive all the operating machinery thereby.

29 designates a safety-valve of any preferred style or construction applied to the gas-chamber to prevent overcharging. As represented in Fig. 4, this valve has a stem 30, which projects down through the chamber or compartment 7 and the partition 10 into the passenger-compartment 8, whereby it is adapted to be opened at pleasure to permit the gas to escape. In this connection it is proper to state that the two gas-chambers are in communication with each other, so that a single charging-opening and a single safety-valve will answer for both. A communicating passage is shown at 31 in Fig. 4.

The gas-chambers are charged with gas through a valve 32 of any suitable construction, which valve, after the charge has been introduced, is to be tightly closed.

Having now described my invention, I claim—

1. The aerial vessel shown and described, the same comprising a cylindrical shell or body having a pointed or cone-shaped front end, longitudinally-extending concavo-convex wings hinged to the body at the top thereof and having a curvature corresponding with that of the body so as to fold closely against the sides thereof, in combination with machinery located within the body at, or near, the bottom for operating said wings.

2. In an aerial vessel of the character described having a hollow cylindrical body and a pointed or cone-shaped front end, the whole adapted to be charged with gas, in combination with longitudinally-extending concavo-convex wings having a curvature corresponding with that of the body and adapted to fold closely against the sides thereof, said wings being hinged to the top of the body, machinery located within the body for operating the wings, and devices also operated by said machinery for propelling and steering the vessel.

3. In an aerial vessel of the character described, a hollow cylindrical body having a pointed or cone-shaped front end, the body being divided by suitable partitions into an upper compartment for gas and a lower compartment for machinery, passengers, &c. in combination with devices for propelling and steering, longitudinally-extending concavo-convex wings hinged to the body at the top thereof and adapted to fold against the sides, and driving machinery located in said lower compartment for operating said wings and the propelling and steering devices.

4. In an air-ship the combination of a hollow cylindrical body divided longitudinally by a horizontal partition into an upper compartment adapted to be charged with gas, and a compartment below the gas-compartment for the reception of machinery, passengers, &c., longitudinally-extending concavo-convex wings hinged to the top of the body and extending outward in opposite directions, and suitable machinery within the ship connected with said wings to operate the same.

5. An air-ship having a cylindrical body, longitudinally-extending concavo-convex wings hinged to the body at the top thereof, and mechanism within the body connected with said wings to operate the same positively in both directions.

6. An air-ship having a hollow cylindrical body, a compartment for machinery, passengers &c. located wholly within the cylindrical body, the latter, outside of said compartment being adapted to be charged with gas, longitudinally-extending concavo-convex wings hinged to the top of the body, driving machinery located within said compartment, and cords or similar connections leading from said driving machinery both to the upper and lower sides of said wings for operating the same positively in both directions.

In testimony whereof I affix my signature in presence of two witnesses.

CHARLES ABBOTT SMITH.

Witnesses:

WM. A. DEANE,

CHAS. E. COREY.

(No Model.) 2 Sheets—Sheet 1.

C. A. SMITH.
AIR SHIP.

No. 565,805. Patented Aug. 11, 1896.

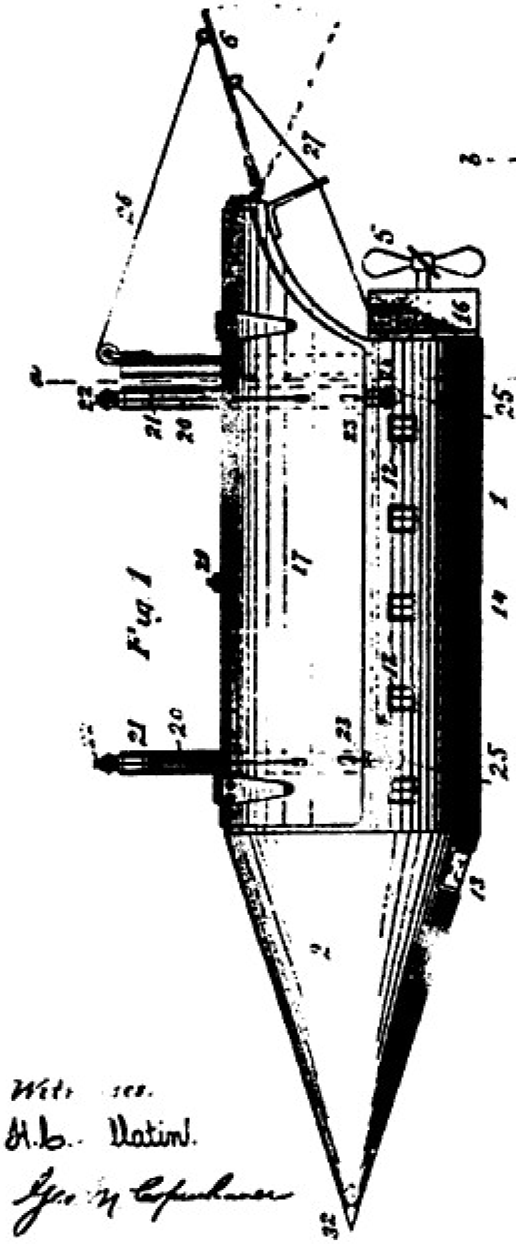

6
27
26
22
21
20
2
5
16
17
23
12
25
1
14
19
13
2
32

Fig. 1

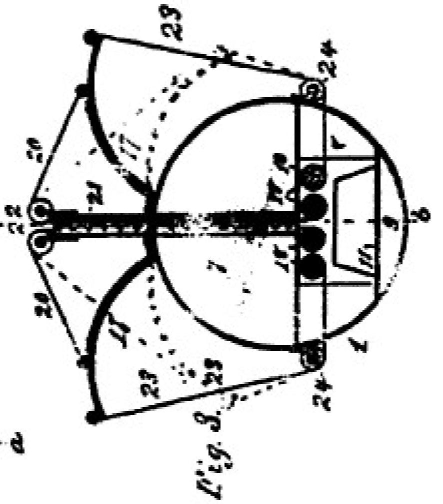

23
24
20
17
21
22
3
18
11
1
24
23

Fig. 3.

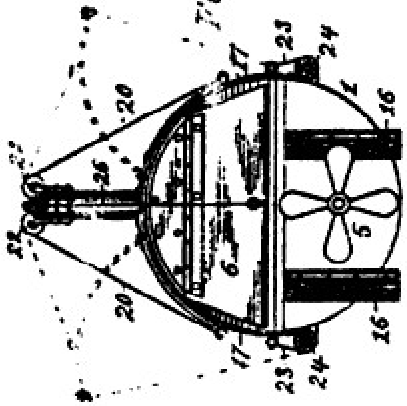

23
17
24
1
16
20
26
22
5
6
17
23
24
16

Fig. 2

Wit sses.
H. L. Vatin.
Geo. N. Copenhaver

C. A. Smith
Inventor.
By D. B. Gallatin
Attorney

(No Model.) 2 Sheets—Sheet 2.

C. A. SMITH.

AIR SHIP.

No. 565,805. Patented Aug. 11, 1896.

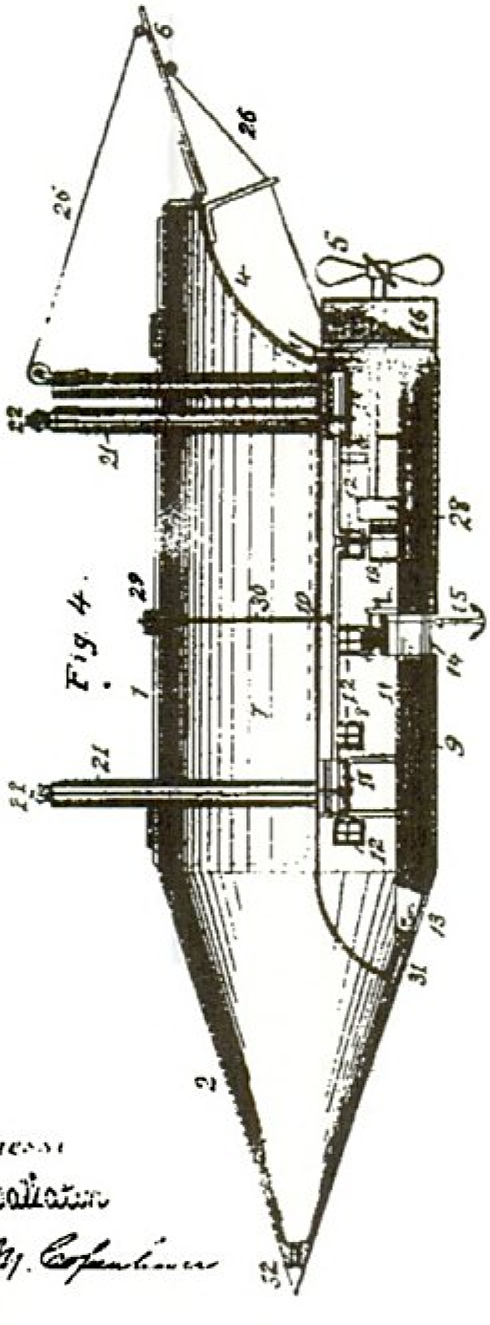
Fig. 4.
6
26
26'
5'
16
4
22
21
29
30
10
28
15
14
12
11
9
1
7
21
22
12
13
31
2
32

Witnesses
H. L. Gallatin
Geo. M. Copenhaver

C. A. Smith.
Inventor.
By D. B. Gallatin
Attorney

(No Model.) 2 Sheets—Sheet 1.

H. HEINTZ.
AIR SHIP.

No. 580,941. Patented Apr. 20, 1897.

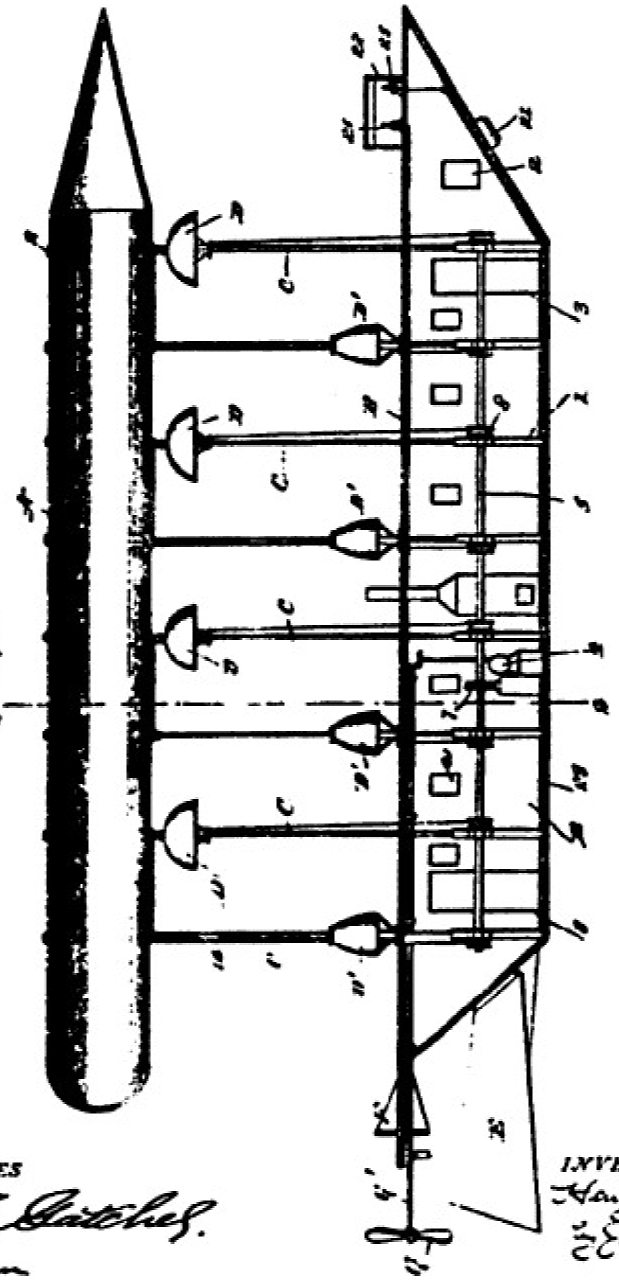

Fig. 1.

WITNESSES
Theo L. Gatchel.
J. Nappan

INVENTOR.
Harry Heintz.
by John McA [illegible]
Attorney

(No Model.)

E. J. ST. CROIX.

AIR SHIP.

No. 573,549. **Patented Dec. 22, 1896.**

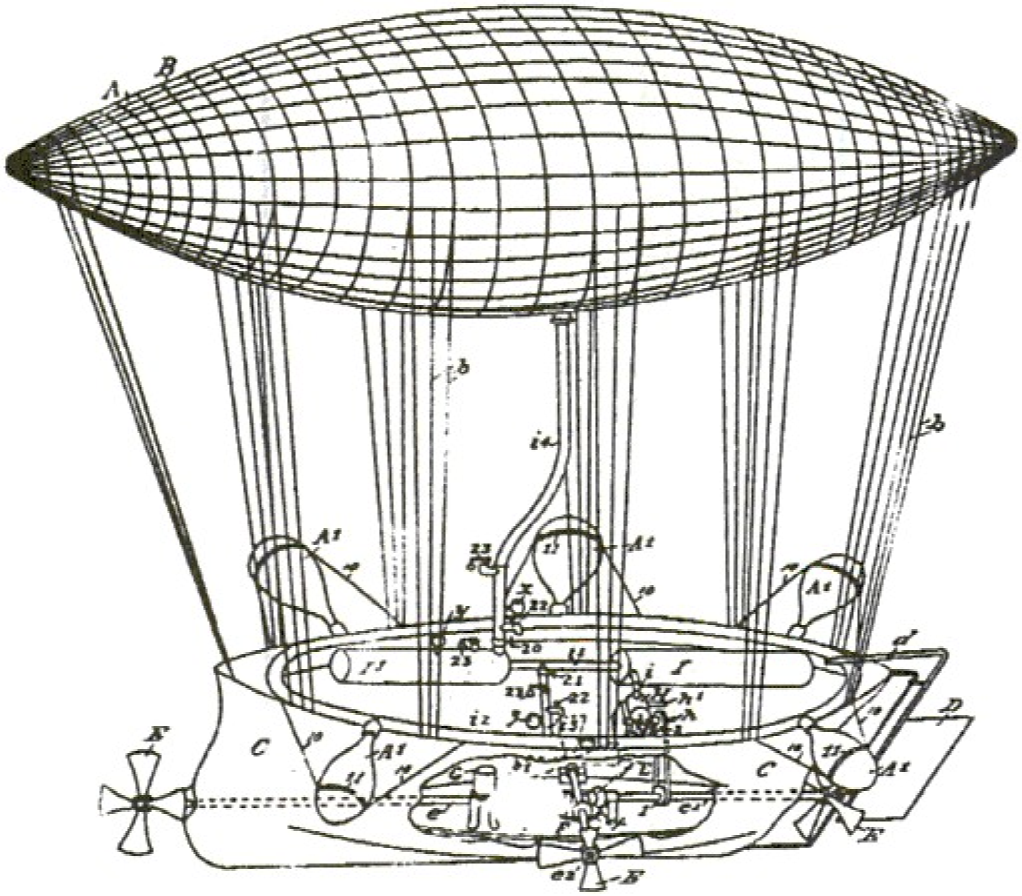
A
B
b
b
14
A1
A1
A1
23
8
11
x
22
10
y
24
23
20
13
13
i
f
21
22
h
h1
12
C
C
E
E
E
A1
11
D
d
F
e
e1
e2

Witnesses

Alfred F. Tucker

William P. Smith

Inventor

Edward J. St.C

(No Model.)

3 Sheets—Sheet 1.

D. REED.

AIR SHIP.

No. 591,692.

Patented Oct. 12, 1897.

Fig. 1.

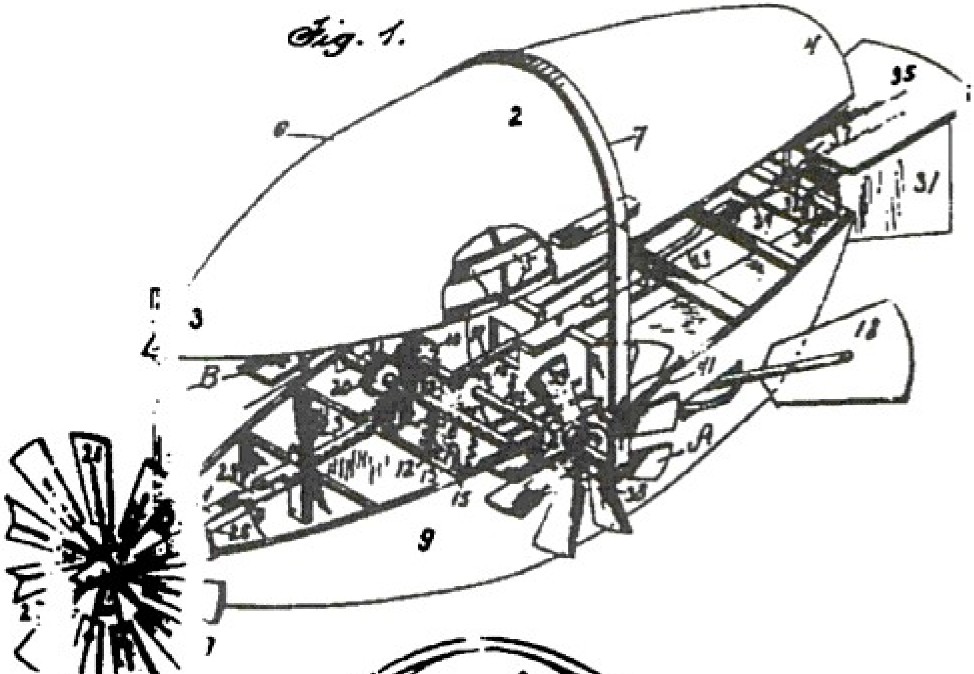

6
2
4
35
31
7
3
B
20
18
41
A
21
12
13
15
9
38
26
1

Fig. 4.

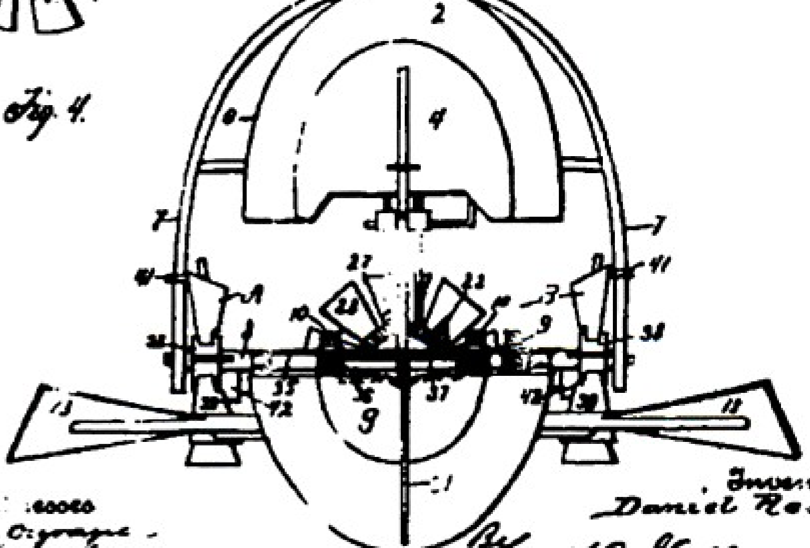

2
6
4
7
7
41
41
A
27
22
3
10
9
38
38
33
42
36
37
9
13
18
39
1

Witnesses

F. C. Orange

H. A. Smith

Inventor

Daniel Reed

By A. B. Willson

Attorney

APPENDIX B

NEWSPAPERS KNOWN TO CARRY AIRSHIP STORIES

(1896)

ARKANSAS

Harrison Times
Osceola Times

CALIFORNIA

Anaheim Gazette
Auburn Placer Herald Riverside Enterprise
Bakersfield Daily Californian
Eureka Daily Humboldt Times
Folsom Weekly Telegraph
Fresno Daily Evening Expositor
Grass Valley Daily Morning Union
Los Angeles Times
Marysville Daily Appeal
Merced Star
Napa Register
Oakland Tribune
Pacific Grove Review
Placerville Mountain Democrat
Redwood City Times-Gazette
Sacramento Bee
Salinas Daily Index
San Diego Record
San Francisco Chronicle
San Francisco Examiner
San Jose Daily Mercury
San Jose Pioneer
San Rafael (Marin County) Tocsin
Santa Cruz Sentinel
Stockton Daily Reporter
Woodland Daily Democrat

INDIANA

Knightstown Banner
Knightstown Sun
New Castle Tribune

MISSOURI

Poplar Bluff Daily American

NEVADA

Austin Reese River Reveille
Battle Mountain Central Nevadan
Belmont Courier
Carson City Morning Appeal
Carson City News
Dayton (Lyon County) Times
Elko Free Press
Ely White Pines News
Genoa Weekly Courier
Reno Evening Gazette

Virginia City Enterprise
Winnemucca Daily Silver State

OREGON
Ashland Tidings
Astorian
Daily Eugene Guard
Portland Morning Oregonian
Salem Statesman

WASHINGTON
Seattle Daily Times
Seattle Post-Intelligencer
Spokane Daily Chronicle
Tacoma Daily Ledger
Tacoma News

WEST VIRGINIA
Sistersville Oil Review

(1897)

ALABAMA
Birmingham News

ARIZONA
Tucson Daily Citizen (Tucson)
Tucson Star

ARKANSAS
Arkansas Democrat
Little Rock Gazette
Mena Weekly Star
Mobile Daily Register
Pine Bluff Commercial

CALIFORNIA
San Francisco Call

COLORADO
Boulder Daily Camera
Colorado Springs Gazette
Denver Post
Denver Rocky Mountain News
Pueblo Chieftain

DELAWARE
Wilmington Every Evening
Wilmington Morning News

FLORIDA
Jacksonville Times-Union
Tampa Tribune

GEORGIA
Atlanta Constitution
Atlanta Journal

IDAHO
Boise Daily Statesman

ILLINOIS
Alton Evening Telegraph
Argus
Aurora Daily Beacon
Bloomington Daily Bulletin
Bloomington Daily Pantagraph
Canton Daily Register
Centralia Daily Sentinel
Charleston Daily Courier
Chicago Journal
Chicago Tribune
Clarion Leader
Daily Illinois State Register (Springfield)
Daily Jacksonville Journal
Decatur Republican
Dixon Evening Telegraph

Galena Daily Gazette
Galesburg Evening Mail
Jacksonville Daily Illinois Courier
Lincoln Semi-Weekly Courier
Lincoln Weekly Citizen
Monmouth Daily News
Monmouth Review
Morris Daily Herald
Mt. Vernon Daily Register
Ottawa Daily Journal
Ottawa Weekly Republican-Times
Pana Weekly Palladium
Paris Daily Beacon
Peoria Daily Transcript
Peoria Evening Times
Pontiac Daily Leader
Quincy Daily Herald
Quincy Daily Journal
Rockford Daily Register
Rockford Daily Republic
Rock Island Quincy Morning Wig
Rock Island Daily Union
Savannah Journal
Springfield News-Telegram
Springfield State Journal
Sterling Evening Gazette
Streator Daily Free Press
Streator Daily Monitor
Taylorsville Daily Breeze

INDIANA

Angola Herald
Attica Fountain-Warren Democrat
Auburn Courier
Aurora Dearborn Independent
Bedford Daily Mail
Blackford (Hartford County) Telegram
Bloomfield News
Bloomington Republican-Progress
Bloomington Telephone
Bloomington World
Bluffton Banner
Bourbon Mirror
Brookville American
Brookville Democrat
Brownstown Banner
Butler Record
Cannelton Enquirer
Columbus Daily Herald
Columbus Daily Times
Columbus Evening Republican
Crawfordsville Daily Journal
Crawfordsville Review
Crown-Point (Lake County) Star
Danville (Hendricks County) Gazette
Daviess County Democrat
Delphi (Carroll County) Citizen
Denver Tribune
Elletsville Farm
Evansville Courier
Evansville Journal
Fairmount Weekly News (no April 22, 1897 account)
Farmland Enterprise
Fort Wayne Weekly Gazette
Franklin Democrat
Franklin Republican
Gas City Weekly Journal
German Huntingsburg Signal
Goshen Weekly Democrat
Greencastle Daily Banner-Time
Greenfield Herald
Greensburg New Era
Greensburg Review
Hancock Democrat
Hartford City Telegram
Hobart Gazette
Indianapolis Journal
Indianapolis News
Indianapolis Sentinel

Indianapolis West Side Herald (none after April 15, 1897)
Indianapolis World
Jasper Weekly Courier
Kentland Democrat (no April 16, 1897 account)
Kokomo Daily Tribune
Kokomo Dispatch
Lafayette Journal
LaGrange Standard
LaPorte Weekly Argus
Lebanon Patriot
Ligonier Banner
Logansport Chronicle
Logansport Daily Journal
Logansport Daily Pharos
Logansport Daily Reporter
Logansport Times
Madison Courier
Martinsville Republican
Michigan City News
Mishawaka Democrat (no April 16 or April 22 accounts)
Mitchell Commercial
Monticello Herald
Monticello White County Democrat
New Albany Daily Ledger
Newport Hoosier State
Noblesville Democrat
Noblesville (Hamilton County) Democrat
Noblesville (Hamilton County) Ledger
North Judson News
Osgood Journal (or *Ripley Journal*)
Peru Republican
Petersburg (Pike County) Democrat
Rensselaer Republican
Rockville Republican
Rockville Tribune
Rushville Republican
Shelbyville Shelby Democrat
Shoals Referendum
South Bend Daily Tribune
Sullivan Democrat
Terre Haute Evening Gazette
Vincennes Daily Sun
Warsaw Daily Times
Warsaw Northern Indianan
Washington Waterloo Press (none after April 15, 1897)
Worthington Times

IOWA

Burlington Daily Hawk-Eye
Cedar Rapids Evening Gazette
Daily Nonpareil Council Bluffs Globe
Davenport Daily Leader
Des Moines Daily News
Des Moines Iowa State Journal
Des Moines Iowa State Register
Des Moines Leader
Farmington Herald
Keokuk Daily Gate City
Marshalltown Evening Times-Republican
Sioux City Journal
Waterloo Daily Courier

KANSAS

Atchison Daily Globe
Emporia Gazette
Fort Scott Daily Monitor
Hutchinson Daily News
Independence Star and Kansas City Gazette
Topeka Daily Capital
Wichita Daily Eagle

KENTUCKY

Carlisle Mercury
Lexington Daily Leader
Lexington Morning Herald
Lexington Morning News
Louisville Courier-Journal
Louisville Evening Post
Louisville Times
Madisonville Hustler
Middleboro Weekly Herald
Owensboro Daily Inquirer
Owensboro Daily Messenger
Paducah Daily News

LOUISIANA

Alexandria Daily Town Talk
Baton Rouge Daily Advocate
New Orleans Daily Picayune
New Orleans Times-Democrat
Shreveport Times

MAINE

Portland Daily Evening Argus

MASSACHUSETTS

Boston Globe

MICHIGAN

Adrian Evening Telephone
Battle Creek Daily Moon
Bay City Times-Press
Benton Harbor Evening News
Detroit Evening News
Detroit Free Press
Flint Daily News
Grand Haven Daily Tribune
Grand Rapid Evening Press
Holland City News
Ionia Daily Standard
Iron Mountain Daily Tribune
Jackson Daily Citizen
Kalamazoo Gazette
Lansing State Republican
Manistee Daily Advocate
Manistee Daily News
Marquette Daily Mining Journal
Marshall Daily Chronicle
Midland Sun
Mt. Clemens Monitor
Muskegon Daily Chronicle
Niles Daily Star
Owosso Argus Press
Port Huron Daily Times
Saginaw Courier-Herald
Saginaw Evening, News
Saginaw Globe
Utica Weekly Sentinel

MINNESOTA

Duluth News-Tribune
Minneapolis Tribune
St. Paul Dispatch
St. Paul Pioneer Press

MISSISSIPPI

Jackson Daily Clarion-Ledger
Jackson Daily News
Natchez Daily Democrat

MISSOURI

Carrollton Daily Democrat
Kansas City (Mo.) Star
Kansas City (Mo.) Times
Liberty Tribune
Marshall Democrat-News
Memphis Reville
Moberly Daily Monitor
Rock Port (Atchison County) Mail Rock Port
Rolla Herald

Sedalia Evening Democrat
Shelbina Democrat
Shelbyville Shelby County Herald
St. Joseph Daily Herald
St. Joseph Daily News
St. Louis Globe-Democrat
St. Louis Post-Dispatch
Tuscimbia (Miller County) Autogram

MONTANA
Butte Miner
Great Falls Tribune

NEBRASKA
Auburn Advertiser
Beatrice Weekly Express
Kearney Hub
Lincoln Nebraska State Journal
Omaha Daily Bee
Omaha World-Herald

NEW MEXICO
Albuquerque Morning Democrat
Las Vegas Daily Optic

NEW YORK
Albany Evening Journal
Buffalo Courier
Buffalo Evening News

NORTH CAROLINA
Carthage Blade
Daily Charlotte Observer
Fayetteville Observer
Graham Alamance News-Gleaner
Raleigh Caucasian
Raleigh Tribune
Rockingham Rocket
Wilmington Messenger

NORTH DAKOTA
Fargo Forum and Daily Republican
Minot Daily News
Minot (Ward County) Reporter

OHIO
Bowling Green Daily Sentinel
Canton Repository
Cincinnati Commercial Tribune
Cincinnati Enquirer
Cleveland Plain Dealer
Steubenville Daily Republican
Steubenville Herald

OKLAHOMA
Arapaho Bee
Cheyenne Sunbeam
Cushing Herald
Oklahoma City Daily Oklahoman
Stillwater Oklahoma State Sentinel

OREGON
Astoria Daily Budget
Portland Morning Oregonian

PENNSYLVANIA
Erie Daily Times
Harrisburg Patriot
Lancaster Intelligencer
Pittsburgh Dispatch
Pittsburgh Post

RHODE ISLAND
Providence Journal

SOUTH CAROLINA
Charleston News-Courier

SOUTH DAKOTA
Aberdeen Daily News

Sioux Falls Argus-Leader
Yankton Press and Dakotan

TENNESSEE
Chattanooga Daily Times
Clarksville Daily Leaf-Chronicle
Knoxville Daily Tribune
Memphis Commercial-Appeal
Nashville American
Nashville Banner
Nashville Daily Sun

TEXAS
Abilene Reporter
Austin American Statesman
Austin Daily Statesman
Austin Times
Brownsville Daily Herald
Bryan Morning Eagle
Cleburne (Johnson County) Review
Dallas Morning News
Dallas Times-Herald
Denison Sunday Gazetteer
El Paso Times
Fort Worth Register
Gainesville Daily Hesperian
Galveston Daily News
Houston Post

UTAH
Logan Tri-Weekly Journal
Nephi Republic
Ogden Standard
Provo Daily Enquirer
Salt Lake City Desert Evening News
Salt Lake Herald

VIRGINIA
Norfolk Dispatch
Norfolk Virginian
Richmond Dispatch
Richmond Evening Leader
Richmond State
Roanoke Times

WASHINGTON
Spokane Daily Chronicle
Washington Post

WEST VIRGINIA
Charleston Gazette
Huntington Daily Tribune
Parkersburg Daily Journal
Parkersburg Daily Sentinel
Wheeling Intelligencer
Wheeling Register

WISCONSIN
Beloit Daily News
Beloit Free Press
Fond du Lac Daily Commonwealth
Green Bay Gazette
Kenosha Evening News
Madison State Journal
Milwaukee Daily News
Milwaukee Evening Wisconsin
Milwaukee Journal
Milwaukee Sentinel
Oshkosh Daily Northwestern
Portage Daily Register
Racine Daily Journal
Racine Times

WYOMING
Cheyenne Sun-Leader
Lusk (Converse County) Herald
Rock Springs Miner

CANADA

Alberta

Edmonton Bulletin

British Columbia

Vancouver Daily News-Advertiser

Manitoba

Brandon Mail
St. Boniface La Manitoba
Winnipeg Morning Free Press

Ontario

Toronto Globe

Quebec

Montreal Le Monde
Quebec Le Courier du Canada

INDEX

1st Brigade, 2nd Separate Division, 286
147th Illinois, 285
147th Illinois Infantry Regiment, 284
147th Regiment Infantry, 286
1860 California census, 276
2nd Cavalry (California) Regiment, 309
24th New York Infantry Regiment, 273
24th New York Regiment, 273
3rd New York Light Artillery, 303
44th Iowa Infantry, 285
44th Iowa Infantry Regiment, 284
44th Iowa muster record, 285
5th California Infantry, 315

A

AAS, 109
abduction, 54
Abilene, 137
Abilene Reporter, 137
accident, 338
accommodation, 117
accumulators, 173, 261
acetylene gas, 224, 243
Adams, Mr. W. B., 219
Adhem, Ben, 162
Adickee, Mr. Isacc N., 195
advanced life form, 37
Adventist, 70
advertisers, 156
aerial boats, 94
aerial monsters, 57, 79, 84, 88, 90, 98-99, 102, 112-13, 120-22, 137, 146-47, 153, 167, 181, 189, 204, 210, 220, 334
aerial navigation, 20, 25, 31, 79-80, 119, 130, 143, 145, 155-56, 162, 198, 209, 231
Aerial Navigation Company, 292, 326, 328-30
aerial navigation experiments, 293
aerial phenomenon, 20
aerial ship, 297
aerial tourists, 38
aerial travel, 159
aerial traveler, 70, 74
aerial visitor, 52, 63
aerial war car, 94
aerial wonder, 34
aerodynamic force, 36
aerodynamics, 27, 51
Aero Jourdan, 325
aerolite, 41
Aero Mary, 325
Aero Mio, 325
Aeron, 292, 294
aeronauts, 175, 232
aeroplanes, 123, 143
Aero Schnabel, 325
aerostat, 293
Aero Trump, 325
affidavit, 58, 60-61, 101, 164
age of steam, 76
age of the television, 245
air department, 126
Air Force, 23
airmen, 126

- airplane, 30, 56, 116-17, 246
- airport, 36, 181
- airship, 20-25, 27, 29-35, 37-41, 43, 50-53, 55-68, 70-98, 100-5, 108-17, 119-31, 134-37, 139, 141-54, 156-65, 167-72, 176-77, 179-84, 189, 192-98, 201-5, 207-13, 215, 218-21, 223-25, 227, 229-37, 239, 241-42, 245-51, 256-67, 274, 278, 281, 286-87, 289-92, 294, 297-98, 301-2, 312-15, 319-20, 324, 326, 328-29, 331-37, 339, 341-42, 344, 346-48, 351, 353
  - accounts, 21-23, 27, 29, 33-34, 37, 39-41, 43, 51, 53-58, 60, 62-64, 66-68, 71, 73, 75-76, 78-79, 82-83, 86-87, 90-98, 100-2, 109-12, 116-22, 123, 125-26, 128-29, 131-37, 139, 142-47, 149, 152, 154, 158-62, 164, 168, 170, 175, 176, 179, 181-82, 184, 193-94, 198, 201, 203-4, 207-9, 210, 212-13, 221-28, 232, 235, 240, 242, 245-51, 258, 260-61, 263-67, 290, 302, 307, 312, 317, 327, 332, 342, 346, 348, 351
  - characteristics, 36, 83
    - cigar-shaped body, 32, 57-58, 64, 89, 153, 166, 167, 182, 229, 233-34
    - egg-shaped, 251
    - green lights, 84, 86, 180, 189, 211
    - headlights, 35-37, 40-41, 83, 85-86, 88, 92, 98, 114-15, 134, 158, 162, 164, 210-11, 215, 223, 225
    - helicopter-like movements, 40
    - lights, 31, 34, 36-41, 51-52, 54-55, 58, 63-64, 68, 74, 76-77, 80, 82-90, 92, 94, 96-99, 102, 109-10, 114, 119-20, 123, 130-31, 139, 141, 145-47, 149, 152, 154, 157, 161-62, 164, 166-67, 169, 179-83, 189, 192-93, 195-96, 205, 210-11, 213, 215, 218, 225-27, 229-30, 237, 250
    - mysterious, 40-41, 70, 83, 87, 94, 97-98, 114, 116, 130-31, 135, 137, 139, 141, 144-46, 148, 154, 158, 161, 179-80, 213, 220, 232-33, 237, 243
    - nocturnal, 20, 146, 157, 182
    - searchlights, 32, 35, 50, 52, 58, 64-65, 71, 74, 78, 82, 88-89, 102, 115, 145, 166-68, 175, 205, 213
    - tail, 90
  - commercial use, 260
  - crowd, 291
  - descriptions, 21, 23, 33, 37, 40-41, 52, 54, 58-59, 66, 73, 75, 79, 81, 85-87, 90-92, 95, 96, 99, 101, 112, 115, 117, 119, 123, 131, 137, 145-46, 152, 159, 176, 183, 192, 195, 197-98, 207, 211, 212, 219, 227, 242, 250-51, 263-64, 266, 329, 347
  - designs, 325
  - experiments, 232
  - false reports, 21, 23-24, 34, 51, 53, 68, 79, 101, 103, 122, 128-29, 134, 145, 148, 154, 158, 168, 230, 233-35, 240, 244-45, 320, 338-39
  - flights, 44
  - flying machines, 20, 22-23, 26, 28, 30, 37, 55, 62, 157, 169, 170, 214, 219, 231, 237, 240, 242, 259, 264, 280, 297, 301, 324-25, 327-28, 351
  - flying objects, 20
  - flying ship, 52
  - home base, 126
  - implements, 342
  - inventors, 36, 267
  - mystery, 20-21, 24-25, 28-29, 95, 239, 241, 243, 248, 268, 311
  - origin, 23, 38, 96, 127, 170, 184, 194, 239, 258, 337
  - problem, 147
  - project, 221, 257
  - research, 259, 328
  - sightings, 21-22, 24, 29, 34, 37, 41, 43, 53, 80, 242, 246-47, 320, 326, 331, 345
  - strange flyer, 38

  strange object, 52, 59, 87
  transportation, 292
  unearthly visitors, 23
  unknown object, 32
airship-watching parties, 40
air space, 36, 86
air transportation, 25, 155
air travel, 155
air traveler, 62, 66
air whistle, 175
Akers, Sheriff (Capt.) C. C., 183, 208-10, 271-73, 302
Alabama, 142
Alameda, 304
Albany, 286
alcoholics, 151
Alderman Haynes, 162
Algona Hotel, 235
alien knowledge, 242
alien-made, 77
aliens, 20, 23, 25, 37, 66, 75, 113, 125, 128, 243, 250, 331, 337, 344
    abduction, 27, 151
    bodies, 23
    presence, 23
    spaceships, 36, 242
    visitors, 22
Allen Street, 101
allied armies of Europe, 94
alloys, 124, 338
Alpha Orionus, 180
Alstyne, Van, 223
Althon, 81
altitude, 20, 22, 30, 33, 93, 136, 144, 246-47, 292, 294
aluminum, 96, 124-25, 128, 173, 243, 260, 328, 335, 338-39, 343
aluminum superstructure, 351
Alvin, 147
amateur hypnotists, 168
A&M College, 166
America, 19-20, 54, 119, 155, 157, 212, 265, 287, 292, 345
American, 19, 22, 25, 66, 114, 124, 143, 231, 297, 352
American financial contributions, 65
American inventors, 220
American Nautical Almanac, 68, 333
American newspapers, 352
American psyche, 127
Americans, 100, 172, 241, 245, 352
  public sentiment, 65
Americus, 286
ammunitions, 64
analysis, 194
Ananias, 152
anchor, 174, 215, 263-64
Anderson County, 132
Andrews, Dr. Solomon, 247, 264-65, 292, 297, 299, 301, 326, 353
angel, 108
Anheuser Busch, 205
annoyances, 175
answers, 345
antigravity systems, 241
apartments, 170
apparition, 60, 95, 166-67, 189
Applegate, George, 259, 302-3, 307
Aquilla, 55
Aquilla Creek, 55
arc-electric, 169
Ariel society, 33
Arizona, 175, 177
Arizona Territory, 289
Arkansas, 108, 179
Arlington Hotel, 31
armor, 260
Armory Hall, 181
Armstrong, Dr., 163
army, 232
  officers, 232
Army of the Potomac, 273, 303
army of the Shenandoah, 273
artists, 27, 352
Astoria, Illinois, 235
astronomers, 19, 136, 181
astronomical lore, 81
astronomical phenomena, 250
astronomical theory, 179
Atchison, 108
Atlanta, 144
Atlantic, 164, 197, 228
atmosphere, 36-37, 51, 77, 167, 180, 237
attic, 28
attorney, 54, 289
Aurora, Texas, 124-29, 139-40, 190, 225, 265, 331-36, 339-42, 344, 346

  airship, 341
  crash, 176-77, 331-33, 335, 337, 339-40, 343-44
Austin, Texas, 98, 100, 111, 153, 178, 238
Austin American Statesman, 35, 61, 92, 95, 99, 110, 155, 162, 181-82, 213
Austin Daily Statesman, 66, 100, 154, 214, 235
automobile headlight, 39
automobiles, 36, 155
aviation, 22, 242, 326
aviator, 28
Aztec, 208

B

Babcock, Harry, 220
back azimuth, 291
Baird, 63
Baker, Mr., 312
Baldwin, Sergeant, 158
ball of fire, 80
balloon, 28, 33-34, 80, 92, 98, 100-1, 109, 136, 144, 153, 156-58, 162, 180, 182, 231-32, 236-37, 250, 347-48, 353
balloon depot of the United States, 232
balloon pontoons, 27
Bangos, Jack, 145
bank robbers, 146
bank vaults, 145
Baptist, 86
Barengal, 214
barnacles, 71
Barnard, Prof. Arthur C., 236, 314-15
barometric pressure, 246
Bartholomew, Robert E., 239, 242
base, 320
Bassell, Charles, 122
Bastrop (Louisiana) Advisor, 170
bat, 50
batteries, 123, 243
battleship, 102
Bay City, 213
Baylor, Sheriff H. W., 183-84, 209, 226
beach, 92
Beale, C. W., 130
bearings, 243, 257
Bearing Strait, 118
Beatty, Mr., 116
Beaumont, 104, 110-11, 139-40, 169, 183, 205, 228
    sighting, 251
Bedford County, Tennessee, 299
Bee, 250
Beelzebub, 102
Bell County, 161
Bell, Alexander Graham, 120, 301, 342
Belton, 160-61
Benjamin, Dr. Elmer H., 239, 256-61, 266-67, 274, 277, 281, 290, 319
Benjamin, Dr. Francis Wakelee, 256, 258, 266, 269, 277-78, 281, 297, 303, 307
Benjamins, 249, 255, 266-67
berths, 174
Betters, Sam, 220
Bible, 130
biblical scholars, 77
Big Sandy, 73
binoculars, 33
birds, 36, 57, 71, 80, 83, 85, 92, 115
Black, J. A., 57, 88
Blackhawk Indians, 282
black helicopter, 40
black holes, 36
black monster, 55
black object, 40
blades, 174
Blanchard, 144
Bloomington (Illinois) Daily Pantagraph, 52
BMNT, 333
boa constrictor, 71
Boak, Mr., 98
Boardman and Brown, 283
bodies, 96
Bohemian, 195
boilers, 82

Bolinas, 265
Boll, William, Jr., 163-64
bombing, 259
bombs, 123
Bonham, 83, 106, 120, 135, 291
Bonham, Ivanhoe, and Lamasco Airship Transportation Company, 135
books, 118, 129
bootblack, 70
Boothe, Mr., 145
Bosque, 122
Botts, Col. Dink, 154
Bounds, J. Spence, 54
Bourdo, J. S., 87
Bowie County, 40, 168
Bowles, County Clerk Henry J., 183
Bowman, 339
box car, 85, 220
Boydgollybros, Prof. Sven, 168
Bradley, Frederick, 256
Brandenburg, Prussia, 27, 325
brass, 243, 257
Brazoria County, 147
Breen, Tom, 101
brewery, 114
bright light, 38, 40-41, 51, 59
British channel, 232
Brooks, Mr. Woodford, 202-4
Brown, Marshal, 92, 109-10, 112
Brownsville (Texas) Daily Herald, 231
Brown, Virgil, 52, 88
Bruit, Mr. J. W., 101
Bruner, A. M., 81
Bryan, 148, 168
Bryan (Texas) Daily Eagle, 168
Buck, Major, 147
buggy, 54, 101
Bull Creek, 213
Bull Run, 284
Burlington, Iowa, 81, 312, 320
Burt, Col. R N., 89, 91, 93, 96, 339
business, 145
"Butcher of Havana," 65
Butte County, California, 256, 276, 279, 280-81, 290-91, 303, 307, 317
  census, 276
  Great Register, 277
buzzing noise, 97
Byrnes, Captain, 65-66, 68
Byrnes, Patrick C., 63
Bywater, Dr., 234

C

cabin, 57-58, 172
  windows, 86
Cage, H., 122
Caldwell, Jno, 147, 213
calf-knapping, 245
Calhoun, 286
California, 20-21, 158, 175, 177, 194, 197, 215, 220-21, 247, 250-51, 257-58, 264, 266, 273-74, 276-78, 281, 287, 289, 292, 303-4, 309, 319, 324-29, 347
  airship mystery, 249, 251, 260
  census, 273, 302
  directory, 281
  gold rush, 328
  northern California, 249, 251, 264
  Pioneer Register and Index 1542-1848, 290
  reports, 249
  sighting, 266, 343
California Bar Association, 289
Callsburg, 95
Cameron, R. S., 122
Campbell, Mr. Chas. A. R., 230
Camp Fry, Chicago, 286
Camp, Tom, 79
Canada, 304
canals, 127
candle power, 168
cannon, 99
cannon ball, 72
canvas wings, 174
capitalists, 123-24, 135, 175
capstan, 263
  mechanical, 243
captain, 64-65, 96-97, 139, 203, 237
Carleton, George, 258
Carmel, Maine, 256, 274, 277

Carrick, Manton, 101
Carson, Lindsay, 290
casualties, 97, 331
Catlin, Dr., 259, 262
Cavello, 144
celestial crews, 61
cemetery, 128-29
censorship, 53
census records, 32, 273-74, 276-77, 280, 284, 287, 291, 298
Centennial Exposition, 119
Central Intelligence Agency, 241
centripetal and centrifugal forces, 173, 261
century, 62
Chadburn, William, 95
Chambers Creek, 116
Chapman, J. M., 130
charlatan, 159
Chattanooga, Tennessee, 286
chemicals, 118, 174
chemistry, 124
Cherokee Cemetery, 280
Chester, E. F., 120
chewing gum, 156
Chicago, 142, 144, 179-80, 232-33, 312
Chicago Lumber and Coal Company, 202
children, 162-63
Childress, 104, 177
China, 153
Chinese flying dragon, 79
chisel, 73
Christ, 61, 77
Christianity, 133, 163, 205
  Christian Endeavor, 39
  Christians, 205
  gospel, 24, 130
  prayer, 58
  preachers, 78, 108
  priest, 181
Christianson, Max, 180
church, 61, 71, 87, 161, 164
cigar, 55, 62, 85, 88, 90, 117, 123, 164, 195, 201, 204
cigar box, 149
cigarettes, 156
Cisco, 63-64, 67-69
cities, 123, 126, 154-55, 158, 214
citizenship, 325
city, 109, 111, 114-16, 127, 129-32, 136-37, 142, 144-45, 158-59, 162-66, 175, 180-82, 193, 195, 204, 210-11, 222, 225, 230, 233-35, 250
city marshal, 41
civilization, 37
Civil War, 96, 269, 282, 292, 297, 305, 307
  muster record, 278
clairvoyance, 156
classified, 241
Claude Mitchell pasture, 167
Cleburne, 84, 99
Clinton County, 285
Clinton, Iowa, 283
cloud conditions, 246
cocaine, 41, 133
coded information, 337
coded text, 28
Cody, Mr., 62
Cohen, Daniel, 128, 214, 286
Colada, 104, 150, 346-47
Coleridge, 162
collaborators, 227
collective madness, 23
Collin County, 109, 152
Collins, Atty. George D., 251, 255-57, 265-66, 274, 304, 328-29
  interview, 262
Collins, Charlotta, 304
Collins, James, 122
Collins, Mr., 257
collision, 335
Colorado, 214
Colorado Street, 225
colored folks, 58
colored lights, 63, 82, 148, 181, 195, 226
colored man, 147
Columbia, 282
Columbus, 312
Colusa, 281
Comanche peak, 97

comets, 31, 33, 39, 41, 51, 76, 181, 210-11
commerce, 155
Commerce Building fire, 277
commercial use, 346
communication signals, 31
communities, 38, 67, 110, 245
community, 37-38, 53-54, 105, 122, 125, 127-28, 205, 245, 249, 257
commutator brushes, 56, 121
commuter, 330
compass, 157
competition, 120, 228
compressed air, 170
compressor motors, 325
Comstock Township, 96
concentration camps, 65
conclusions, 51, 104, 125, 128-29, 136
Concorde, 237
condenser, 174
conductor, 72-73, 75
Conductor Foster, 72
congregations, 152
Congress, 53
congressional committee, 297
Conlisk, Jack, 134
Connerly, Dr., 145
Conrail system, 274
Conroe, 193, 229, 290
conspiracies, 25, 40, 51, 141, 245
  hidden (army) agenda, 215
constellation, 136
construction, 124-25, 173, 224, 232, 243, 302, 335
continents, 155, 221
contradictory reports, 220
control systems, 36
conversation, 39, 78
convicts, 121-22
cook, 108
copper, 124, 243, 257, 301, 338
  bearings, 257
  bushings, 257
  filings, 257
Cops, R. T., 145
correspondents, 22, 33, 41, 50-51, 53, 75, 80, 82-83, 93, 110, 122, 134, 146, 161, 169, 209, 220, 227, 240, 333, 338-39
Corsicana, 35, 38, 43, 53
cosmic event, 181
cost, 175
Cotton, Hon. A. R., 283
country, 40, 157
courses, 41, 50-51, 63, 73, 89, 96-97, 109, 131, 134, 145, 149, 159-60, 164, 181-82, 210
courthouse, 71
Cousins, Mr., 162
Cousins, R. H., 94
covert plan, 214
craft, 64, 87, 98-99, 331
Craig, J. W., 131
Crane, Stephen, 352
crash, 22-23, 27, 125-30, 139, 225, 260, 265, 324-25, 329, 331-32, 336-42, 344, 346-47, 351
  debris, 335, 343
Crazy Well, 165
Cresson, 35, 50-51
crew, 66, 96, 100, 119-20, 146, 184, 197, 209, 221, 242, 245, 261, 268, 301, 311, 334-37
cross, 181
Crossly, Dr., 145
Cuba, 63-65, 82, 146, 193, 214, 233, 258-59, 353
  Revolutionary Party, 65
  soldiers, 64
  war, 24, 112, 352
cyclometer, 260
cyclone, 99, 192

D

Daffan, Superintendent L. A., 223
Dallas, 55, 71, 77, 82, 100-4, 111, 113-14, 125-26, 142, 150, 156-57, 246, 265, 333, 336
  North Dallas, 164
Dallas Morning News, 22, 30-31, 33, 35, 38-41, 50, 52, 56, 58-60, 62-63, 66, 74, 83-87, 92-93, 97-101,

103, 108-10, 119-20, 122-23, 125, 131, 133-35, 141-43, 152-53, 169, 176, 207, 224, 260, 290, 332, 337
Dallas Times Herald, 76, 115, 136, 144, 158, 165, 237
Dalton, Georgia, 286
Daniel, T., 122
Daugherty, James, 85
Davenport, 285, 320
Davis, 63, 67
Davis, Mrs. Ed. M., 41
Day, M., 122
daytime lair, 334, 336
daytime sightings, 126
Deadwood, 205, 228
Dearborn observatory, 180
debris, 125, 335, 343
Decatur, Texas, 339
Dellschau, Charles August Albert, 26-28, 128, 247, 276, 293, 324-29, 324, 337, 339
    drawings, 324
    notebooks, 27-28, 128, 324-26, 328, 337
Delmar siding, 64, 68
denial, 257
Denison, Texas, 29-30, 85, 223
Dennis, Dr. S. W., 258
dentist, 256
Denton County, 32, 59, 83, 106, 141, 254, 344
Denver, Colorado, 157-58, 214, 232, 258
Denver Evening Post, 347
Department of Georgia, 286
Department of the Cumberland, 286
Depaw, Dr., 144
depot, 72
desert, 327
design, 36-37, 116-17, 124, 237, 247, 319, 326, 342
Des Moines, 284
detached orders, 215
Detroit, 95
Detroit Evening News, 96
devil, 37, 55, 113, 181
Devil's River, 208
Devine, 219
De Witt, Iowa, 283, 285
diagonal line, 250
Dickson, Frank, 189
Dingley bill, 82
dirigible-shaped balloon, 232-33, 347
disease, 285-86
disinformation, 120
dispatcher, 72, 75
District of the Etowah, 286
divorce, 304
dizzy heights, 175
doctors, 39, 77
documents, 342
Dodson, Carolyn, 339
dog, 57, 88
Dolbear, Prof. Amos E., 123-24, 213, 239, 269, 300-1, 335, 338, 342
Donahue, Maj. Dan D., 193
Donely, Ignatius, 162
Dow, Charles H., 19
Dowe, Sheriff R. W., 207-9
Dow Jones Transportation Averages, 345
Draugham, R.E., 110
drawings, 27, 342
dream, 133
drill grounds, 98
Driskil, 153
druggist, 112, 114, 120, 146, 230
drugs
    abuse, 21
    addicts, 151
    laws, 41
Duke of Argyle, 76
Duncan, O. M., 84
Dunkin, Paul, 145
Dunlap, 142
Dunlop, George, 176, 260, 265
Dutchman, 71
dynamite, 64, 214, 232-33
dynamo, 260
dynamo machine, 124

E

Eagle, 166
Eagle Pass, 183, 207, 209-10
Earth, 19, 23, 25, 30, 32, 36-38, 41,

61, 71, 85, 89, 92, 94, 102, 109, 113, 115, 118, 124, 132, 134, 136, 144-45, 167-68, 170, 174, 182, 193, 195, 203, 205, 210-11, 221-22, 225, 227, 242, 249, 264, 331
earthling, 23
East Coast, 124, 259, 264, 269
  airship, 260, 264
Easter, 133, 139, 164
East Mountain, 162, 164
East Sixth Street, 225
economic forces, 259
economy, 345
Eden, 189-90
Edge, Chas., 166
Edison, Thomas Alva, 19, 79, 231, 235-37
editor, 37, 53, 83, 95-97, 99, 109, 136, 146, 152, 163, 189, 237, 245, 312
editorials, 20, 155
Edwards estate, 157
Edwards, Mr., 203
El Paso, 51, 67-69, 177, 193
electrical batteries, 183, 260
electrical engineering, 124, 221, 310
electrical motors, 31, 56, 91, 96, 121, 123, 195, 218, 312
electrical plant, 203
electric appliance, 96
electric arc lamp, 249-51
electric cars, 154
electric current, 144
electric glow, 181
electricians, 168, 258, 266
electricity, 32, 76, 80, 86, 90, 97, 111-12, 118, 123, 144-45, 168, 170, 172, 198, 203, 265
electric lights, 146, 168, 196
Elementary Lessons in Heat; and Essential Principles of Chemistry, 124, 299
elevation, 176
Elgin, 81
Ellis County, 59, 102, 116, 130, 143
Empire State Express, 79
encounters, 20, 23, 100, 197
end of time, 24, 130
enemy, 232
engine, 35-37, 81, 85, 143, 168, 173, 223, 261, 292, 325
    electric engine, 123
Engineer Girard, 134
engineers, 22, 62, 81, 122, 168, 172, 240, 301, 310, 328
England, 143
English, 66, 112, 117-18, 168, 219, 285
English-speaking, 242
Ennis, 34, 59, 130, 140, 143
equitable building, 157
Erath, 123
Europe, 74, 79, 113, 118-19, 292
Evanston, 81, 180
evidence, 22, 37, 127, 129, 146, 189, 193, 205, 212, 229, 239, 242, 247-48, 250, 313, 319, 327, 343, 347
exhaust chamber, 173, 261
expansion, 173
expedition, 214
experiment, 41, 61, 119-20, 143, 156, 164, 171, 173, 175, 232, 241
    with aircraft, 241
    with airships, 233, 258
    with navigation, 221
experimental airship program, 214
experimental planes, 241
experts, 233
explanation, 36-37, 51, 97, 99-100, 123, 126, 146, 148, 156-57, 173, 194, 225, 241, 346
explosions, 56, 94-96, 125, 176, 352
exposition, 119
express, 208
extraterrestrial, 25, 241
Eva, John, 98
Ewing, A. B., 97
Examiner, 221
Express, 222, 231

F

FAA, 56
fabrications, 94
fabrics, 328
factories, 109

famine, 24
fan blades, 195
fanlike, 90
Fannin County, 83, 93, 96, 120, 135, 140, 291
fans, 57, 88, 90, 218, 325
fan-shaped rear projection, 166
fantasy flight, 28
Fargo battery, 124, 250, 260, 301
Farley, Jack, 85
Farmer, Moses Gerrish, 123-24, 301, 338
farmers, 54, 64, 85, 111, 122, 128, 132, 144, 197, 332, 338
Farmersville, 91, 92, 100, 103, 109, 110
Farmington (Iowa) Herald, 312
farming utility, 342
Fassett, Julius Foster, 288
Fayette County, 194
feud, 120
fiction, 172, 245
field action, 284
field glasses, 121, 172, 180
fields, 54, 88-89, 227
financial backing, 160, 328, 345-46
financial gain, 345
financial rewards, 248
fire, 79, 82, 97
firearms, 152
fire balloons, 34, 39
first successful flight, 56
fish, 97
flags, 121
flammable materials, 338
flashes, 55-56
Flatonia, 194-95
Fletcher, Mose, 101
flight, 27, 36-37, 43, 57, 81, 83, 103, 105, 120-21, 157, 163, 165, 177, 182, 204, 247, 250, 257, 291, 294, 312
    path, 43, 67, 334
    patterns, 347
    testing, 346
flood, 170
  in Louisiana, 112
Florida, 259
Floyd, J. N., 62, 66
flying arc lamp, 250
flying Dutchman, 168
Ford, John, 39, 40
foreigners, 167
Forney, 87, 106
Fort Bend County, Texas, 27, 101, 170, 325
Fort Duncan, 208
Fort Logan, 232
Fort Sheridan, 232
Fort Worth, 43, 50-51, 59, 63, 78, 85, 87, 106, 111, 126, 135-36, 142, 150, 153, 175, 183, 200, 202-3, 206, 209, 227, 236, 238, 273, 302, 333
Fort Worth Invincibles, 78
Fort Worth Register, 65, 89, 203, 307
Foster, Charlie, 101
framework, 328
Frank, S., 122
Frank, Sen. L. N., 122
Franklin, Sir John, 118
Franklin, Thomas, 131
Freestone County, 135
freight conductor, 71
French Academy, 156
French scientists, 168
Frost, Judge Sam H., 38, 39
fuel, 119, 129, 325
fuel formula, 329
Fulgham, John, 96
Fulton, 231
funeral, 125
"furnish the war," 353
Furrie, Pilot William, 347
furstrum of a cone, 227

G

Gainesville, 204
Gainesville Daily Heaperian, 204
galactic neighbors, 243
Gallaher, J. J., 120
galley, 108
Galveston, 92, 104, 115, 139, 208

Galveston Daily News, 41, 149, 161, 183, 189, 193, 195, 202, 210, 233
Galveston News, 31, 66, 92, 97-98, 100, 102, 116, 119-20, 122-23, 125, 131, 133-35, 146-47, 153, 160, 165, 172, 207, 210, 226
gang of cracksmen, 145
G.A.R., Geo. H. Thomas Post No. 2, 289
Garland, 62, 66, 74, 99
Garza, Katherine, 234
gas, 172-73, 224, 265, 312, 334
  leak, 334
  supply, 173
gasoline engines, 64
Gaston building, 80
Gaston, Col. Robert H., 79
Gaston, Frank, 97
Gathings, William H., 54
gearing, 328
genius, 175
gentlemen, 56, 62
George, Bina, 79
George, J. C., 122
Georgia, 259
German army, 233
German, John, 83
German war balloon, 233
getaway vehicle, 146
Getty Street, 183
Giffard, Henri, 292
glasses, 32-33, 52
Glassford, Captain, 158
God, 61-62, 77, 109-10, 117
  messengers, 62, 127
gold, 339
Golden State, 287
Gómez, Máximo, 65
Goshen, New York, 183-84, 194, 264, 269, 271, 278, 287, 298, 342
Gotkin, Edward L., 352
government, 22-23, 241, 293, 331
  conspiracy, 40
  intervention, 341, 345
  officials, 22, 127
  strategy, 259
Government hill, 230
Gower, Fredrick Allen, 232
Graham, J. W., 94
Graham, W. C., 202
Graham, W. H., 202
Granbury, 97, 103
Grand Army of the Republic, 289
Grapevine prairie, 163
Gray, 226
Grayson County, 85, 298
Great Airship Mystery: A UFO of the1890s, The, 128
Great House ranch, 116
Greece, 82, 197
Greeks, 79
green men, 22
Greenville, 63, 69, 89, 91, 104, 106, 122, 254
Grenada, Mississippi, 170, 176
Gresham, Newt, 97
Griffin, James, 131
Griffin, M. E., 71
Grosebeck, 161
guerrillas, 286
gulf, 92, 115, 169, 346
Gulf coast, 346
Gulf of Mexico, 70
Gutherie, 31

H

Hahnsbeen, F. D., 130
hair dryer, 56
Hall, J. M., 54
Hambright, B.T., 89
Hambright, H.A., 89
Hamburg, Germany, 27, 325
hammer, 73
Hanney, W. W., 59
Hardeman County, 132
Harlem, Texas, 171
Harrisburg Landing, 297
Harris, C. L., 235
Harris County, Texas, 27, 325
Harris, Ed, 137
Harrison County, 52
Hart, Augustus L., 287, 289
Hart, James, 282, 287

Hart, John H., 287
Hart, William Henry Harrison, 257-59, 264, 267, 281, 286-90, 304, 310, 321, 342
    boy-soldier, 281
    interview, 259
Havana, Cuba, 65, 259, 352
Hawkins, 73, 82, 286
Hawkins Tank, 70, 73, 75-76, 78, 81, 106
Hawkinsville, 286
Hayden, S. E., 125
Haynes, Mr., 162
Haynes, Mrs., 162
Hayward, California, 265
headline, 139, 161
healers, 61
health officer, 292
Hearne, 146
Hearst, 352-53
Hearst, George, 327-29
Hearst, William Randolph, 65, 124, 259, 352
heavens, 40, 51-52, 55, 61-63, 70-71, 76, 78-81, 83-88, 98, 103, 110, 114, 131-33, 141-43, 147, 152, 157, 161, 163, 166, 169, 180, 182, 212, 228
Heaven's Gate cult, 62
Hedden, Anna, 288
Hedden, Loretta, 288
Hellyer, W. B., 58
Helm, Elmer, 89
Hermann gin, 234
Hermitage Hospital, 139
Herring, Mr. John, 219
Hertz and Marconi, 301
Hibernians, 78, 82
Hickman, Prof., 131
hideout, 126
hieroglyphics, 125, 128, 337
Hightower, Jeff, 164-65
Hilburn, E. B., 97
Hildreth, Mr., 110
Hill County, 39, 54, 131
Hill, Dr., 257
Hillsboro, 39-40, 43, 54-55, 68-69, 87-88, 106, 131-32, 134
Hilt, Antonia, 27
Historical Society of North Pole Land, 119
history, 22, 31, 90, 155, 166, 210, 286
Hitch, Robert, 51
hoax, 21, 25, 33, 38, 40, 53-54, 71, 114, 125, 128-29, 141, 152, 156, 163, 184, 194-95, 220, 243, 245, 268, 320, 339
Hodges, A. W., 201
Hogan, Doc, 145
Hollow Earth believers, 20
Hollywood, 33
Holmes, Dr. Fred, 257
home, 39
homeguard, 284
Honney, W. M., 87
Hood County, 97
Hooks, Capt. H. A., 201
Hope, Arkansas, 41, 43, 53
Hord, B. F., 229
horse, 54-55, 101
horseless carriage, 155
horsepower, 143, 325
hospital, 163
    records, 96
Hough, Prof. G. W., 180
House Military Affairs Committee, 297
Houston, 28, 169
Houston Daily Post, 170
Houston Menil Foundation, 28, 324
Houston, Otho S., 122
Houston Post, 139, 141, 145-46, 148, 160-61, 170, 197-98, 202, 213, 215, 218, 228-29, 234-37, 263, 315
Houston Street, 211
hover, 91
Howard, D. H., 164
Howard, George S., 239
Howard, W. H., 86
Hubbard, General, 223
Huddle's Point, 213
Huffmaster, Mr., 145
Hughes, Howard, 328
hull, 170

humans, 20, 36-37, 118, 127, 133, 148, 154, 166, 242, 250, 331, 337, 340
    design, 33
    flight, 250
    perception, 239
Hunt County, 63, 89
Huntsville, Texas, 194-95, 290
Hurlock, Sam, 76
hydrogen, 76, 224, 243, 325, 328, 334
    air bag, 338
hypnotism, 130, 168
hypothesis, 76, 104, 189, 202
hysteria, 250

I

ice, 99,
icehouse, 340
Illinois, 21, 95, 179, 228, 282, 285, 326
imagination, 21, 23, 172, 220, 230, 239
immigration record, 27
incandescent lamps, 172
Indiana, 21, 90, 179, 289
Indian Territory, 29-30, 34, 99, 339
    sightings, 30
Industrial Revolution, 22-23
inflatable cylinders, 297
information, 75, 184, 197, 290, 303
    misleading, 257
injuries, 96
installment, 245
instructor, 214
intelligence, 23, 36, 127
internal combustion engines, 243, 325
International & Great Northern depot, 148, 211
interplanetary navigation, 155
interplanetary or galactic travel, 127, 243, 331
inventions, 19, 20, 22, 25, 56, 74, 91, 113, 119-20, 124, 154, 159-60, 164, 170, 176, 182, 198, 209, 231, 232, 234, 236-37, 242-43, 248, 250-51, 257-58, 265, 297, 301, 334, 341
inventors, 22, 25, 73, 91, 111, 116-17, 119-20, 143-45, 154, 157, 160, 168, 172, 175, 184, 197, 209, 212, 215, 221, 246, 248-49, 251, 255-62, 264-66, 274, 278, 287, 292-93, 297, 311, 325, 327-28, 331, 334-35, 337, 341, 345-46, 351
Inventor's Institute, 292-93, 328-29
investigators, 268
investors, 221
I.O.O.F, 289
Iowa, 169-70, 179, 194, 198, 228, 265, 282, 285, 287, 310, 312, 317, 319-20, 347, 353
    base, 320
    sightings, 320
iron, 128, 229, 328, 338, 343
iron anchors, 243
Italian government, 232
Ivanhoe, 135

J

Jackson County, 189, 201, 285, 336
jag, 50
James, L. E., 136
James River, 297
Jefferson County, 110, 271
Jersey City, 299
jetliners, 33, 36, 129
jets, 36, 116, 246
    engine, 66
Jewella, Louisiana, 52, 88
jingoes, 94
Johnson, B. F., 161
Johnson County, 84
Johnson, J. E., 136
Johnson, J. H., 148
Johnson pasture, 169
Jones, 234
Jones, A. J., 89
Jones, Dick, 166
Jones, James J., 213
Josserand, 197-98

journals, 127
judges, 77, 116
Judgment day, 228
Juliet Street, 101
junk dealer, 28
Jupiter, 25

K

Kahn, Maurice, 101
Kalamazoo County, 95
Kalamazoo, Michigan, 176
Kandy Kitchen, 168
Kankakee, 151
Kansas, 21, 108, 141, 152, 179, 180
Kansas City, 60, 158
Karker, J. W., 122
Katy, 66
Kaufman, 87, 103, 106
Kaufman County, 79
keel, 71
Kenney and Payton, 260-61
Kenney, William J., 260
Keokuk, 283, 287, 310, 312, 320
King, Judge Thomas B., 122
Kingsley, Col. Thomas, 101
kitchen, 174
Kittyhawk, 56
Klamath County, 273
Kopesh, Dr. R. C., 77, 114
Kountze, 201
Krause, Mr. Ed, 234-35
K Street, 165

L

La Grange, Tennessee, 285
Lacoste, 212
Ladonia, Texas, 86, 93, 96, 105-7, 125, 254, 291, 298, 320, 333
lady collegians, 163
Lady Franklin Bay, 118
Lagrome, H. C., 228
Lagrome, H. L., 205
lair, 43, 104, 126, 332
Laird, Prof. James A., 76, 81
Lake Charles, Louisiana, 171
Lake Mills, Wisconsin, 180
Lamar County, 291
Lamar Street, 80
Lamasco, 135
landing lights, 36
Langley, Samuel Pierpont, 20, 37
language, 92, 100, 109, 242
  barriers, 112
laudanum, 41
Laurel Heights, 211
laws of the universe, 250
lawsuits, 120, 301, 342
lawyer, 54
Leavenworth, 60
Leffingwell, Judge W. E., 283
legal documents, 342
legal papers, 256
legal responsibilities, 259-60
Leigh, J. W., 167
length, 137
letters, 89-91, 139, 154, 171, 176, 210, 229-30, 234-35, 293, 339
  of citizenship, 27
  to the editor, 93
Levy & Bro., 115
Levy, Mrs. G., 111
Levy, Rabbi A., 111
liars, 40
lift, 36
lifting gas, 76
Light, 234
light-weight battery, 264
Ligon, Mr. J. R., 169, 183
Lilly, Capt. John A., 135
Lincoln, President, 293, 297
Linn County, Iowa, 289
liquor, 59
Little Willy, 124
Live Oak Street, 101
Livermore, California, 289
Liverpool, 164
livestock, 332
Llano, 235
Lockheed SR-71, 241
Lockheed U-2A, 241
locomotion, 175
locomotive power, 34

Lodi, 251
Logansport, 202
logs, 51
Lone Star State, 248
Long Branch, 214
Longview, 100-1, 161
Lord, 130
Louisiana, 21, 179, 181, 259, 313, 346
Louisville, Kentucky, 286
Love, Judge, 116, 312-13
Lovelady, 148, 150
Lowen, Robert, 180
Loyal League, 87
Lusk, J. N., 149
Lusk, Oscar, 84
Lyons, 283
Lyons, Iowa, 283

M

Maceo, Antonio, 65
Mach, Albert, 195
machines, 25, 52, 56-58, 62, 64, 90, 93, 97, 102, 111, 116-17, 121-24, 143, 146, 148, 156, 168-69, 171, 173-74, 182, 193, 195, 197-98, 203, 222, 224, 233, 241-42, 247, 256, 259-61, 265, 328
Macon, 286
magazine, 159
magnets, 174
Magnolia brewery, 169
Mahoney, 72
Maine, 256, 258, 281, 329, 352-53
Malner & Monday, 148
man-made, 77
Manor, 98
Mansfield, 85
map, 43, 68
Marietta, 286
marine glasses, 32
maritime narrative, 162
marksmanship, 98
marriage certificate, 304
Mars, 22-23, 25, 94-95, 113, 125, 127, 129, 179, 242-43, 336-37
Marshall, 52-53, 88, 107
Marshall, B. O., 101, 163
Marshall County, 283
Marshall, Mr., 164
Marshalltown, Iowa., 283
Martí, José, 65
Martian, 127-29, 337, 344
  body, 340
  canals, 19, 127, 337
  Martians, 243
  remains, 337
Martin, M. F., 122
Masons, 289
Massachusetts, 36
mass hysteria, 20, 23-24, 239-40, 242, 250, 268
    advocates, 38
    solution, 39
materialism, 156
mathematical equations, 19
Maverick County, 302
Mawr, Bryan, 159
Maxim, 143
Maxim, Sir Hiram, 37, 143
McBride, Dr., 134
McCann, Walter, 233
McCloskey, 82
McGar, Charles, 182
McGary, Marcellus, 287, 311-13
McGoldrick, Mr. W. H., 224
McGwire, W. J., 149
McIlhany, C. L., 122
McKinley, 80, 152
McKinley, Pres. William, 80, 352
McKinney Avenue, 82, 101
McKnight, 31-32, 194, 290, 298, 313, 336
McKnight, Charles, 32, 298
McLennan County, 131
McMahon, Michael, 313
McMurray, Joseph A., 101
mechanical difficulties, 125-27, 129-30, 332-33, 335
Medford, 123
medicine, 41
Medina County, 219-20, 234
Medina Station, 234

Mediterranean, 197
Memphis, 176, 285
Memphis Reville, 312-13
Memphis, Missouri, 287
Mennis, Peter, 325
mental illness, 21
Merkel, Texas, 215, 263
Meslier, Col. Gaston, 142
messengers, 71, 80, 130, 228
metals, 124-25, 128, 173, 260, 328, 335, 338, 343-44
metaphysics, 130
meteor, 31-33, 38-39, 57, 74, 76, 80, 92, 94, 109, 120, 131, 144, 181, 237, 246, 250
    meteorlike speed, 22
metropolitan areas, 36, 126
metropolitan papers, 244
Mexican, 172, 208, 266
  border, 207
  cigar, 71
  house, 181
  Mexicans, 99-100, 181, 207-8
Mexican War, 135
Mexico, 74, 90-91, 175, 203, 219
Meyers, Chesa, 145
Michigan, 21, 94-95, 319, 326
Middleton, C. W., 79
Midwest, 21, 90, 221, 245, 247
miles per hour, 30, 33-34, 52, 58, 62, 89, 145, 251
military, 235, 241, 258
  aircraft, 241
  cargo vessel, 258
  expedition, 233
  officers, 22
  organizations, 31
  test-flying, 241
militia, 99
Mill Creek, 286
millennium, 62, 70, 77
Miller, W. F., 202
Miller, W. H., 202
Milwaukee Avenue, 180
Mineola, 101
Mineral Wells, 162, 164-65
Minkert, J. C., 166
ministry, 61
Minneapolis, Minnesota, 314
minor accident, 96
miracles, 159
missile, 43
missing, 150
"Mission of the Aerial Ship," 258
Mississippi, 58, 70, 74, 78, 245, 259
Mississippi River, 88, 228, 283, 328
Missouri, 21, 73
Missouri, Kansas, and Texas Railway, 54, 58, 87
Mitchner, M., 63
Mobile, 171
model, 256
modifications, 259-60
Monadnook Building, 289
Montalba, 132-33
Montgolfer, 144
Montgomery County, 193
moon, 57, 59, 63-64, 87, 89, 92, 114-15, 131-33, 156, 163, 180, 193
Moore, Eugene, 122
Moore, Tom, 165
Moorse, Judge W. W., 122
morphine, 41, 133, 134
Morse, 231
Morse, J. C., 202
mortals, 61
motive power, 34, 36, 90-91, 112, 116, 123, 125, 168, 172, 182, 198, 203, 243, 260, 325
motives, 146
Mount Bounell, 213
Mount Calm, 131, 134, 229
Mount Calm Road, 134
Mount Carroll, 181
MUFON, 343
Munchausenism, 176
Murphy, James, 52
Musgrave, E. A., 312
music, 132-34, 137, 153
musical instruments, 228
mystery, 84, 92, 94-96, 98, 146, 148, 151, 169, 184, 210, 220, 267
mystery man, 99, 162
myth, 60, 111

N

Newland, N. B., 62, 66
Nashville exposition, 119, 156
Nashville, Tennessee, 119, 286
natatorium, 136
Natchitoches, 181
National Bank of Ladonia, Texas, 91
National Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution, 302
natural laws, 159
natural phenomena, 33
nautical twilight, 68
Navidad River, 189
navies, 155
navigation, 123, 157
navigators, 230
Naylor, S. D., 122
negro, 58, 88, 101, 115
Nelson, Jim, 144, 145
Nesbit, Mr., 134
Nevada, California, 249
Newfoundland dog, 92, 99-100, 109
New Jersey, 264
New Jersey inventor, 264
Newland, 99
Newman, Agnes and Charlotta, 304
New Mexico, 125, 222
New Orleans, 111, 193
news, 83, 89, 93, 97, 101-2, 109, 114-17, 122-24, 131-32, 134-35, 141-42, 146-47, 158, 168, 170, 176, 211, 220, 223, 297
News, 35, 39, 209
newspapers, 19-22, 24-25, 34, 38, 40, 43, 53, 60, 90, 93, 95, 119, 127-30, 134-35, 139, 152, 156, 175-76, 181, 184, 197, 204, 208-9, 237, 243-45, 250-51, 257-58, 290, 297, 304, 312, 320, 328-29, 331, 336, 339, 352
  hoax, 20, 24, 53, 245
  reporters, 25
New Windsor, 298
New York, 28, 90-91, 123-24, 164, 170, 176, 204, 209-10, 214, 221, 225, 250-51, 258, 271-72, 274, 276, 281-82, 287, 298, 319, 328-29, 337, 343, 345, 347-48
  airship, 319
  art gallery, 324
  capitalists, 124
  census records, 272
  city, 65, 259, 293, 329
  county, 271
  daily newspaper, 65
  papers, 65
  regiment, 303
New York and Maine Zionist Association (NYMZA), 276, 293, 329
New York Central Railroad, 271, 274
New York Evening Post, 352
New York Herald, 124, 246-47, 264-65, 292, 294, 297
New York Journal, 352
New York Mail and Express, 143
New York Times, 28
Nichols, Mr. Frank, 197-98
Nicholson, George, 180
night watchman, 88
Nina, 104, 346
nineteenth-century, 244
  technology, 37, 242
nitrogen gas, 77
Noah's ark, 58, 171
noise, 144, 153, 164-65, 196-97, 204, 218
Noll, William, Jr, 101
Nordical, 232
Norman, J. W., 202
north pole, 118-20, 155
Northwestern University, 180
Norwood, Walter L., 92, 115, 312
Notre Dame University, 239
Nott, Cooper, 100
Nova, 339
Nussbaumer, Alf, 101, 163-64
Nute Rivers, 89

O

Oak Cliff, 76, 81, 101, 139, 163
Oakland Tribune, 258

Oakley Avenue, 180
object of ridicule, 41
observations, 246
observers, 30, 33-34, 43, 51, 59, 75, 86, 95, 100, 102, 123, 127, 137, 139, 151, 159, 166, 182, 189, 194, 229, 242, 254, 261
occupants, 111, 176, 220, 251, 331
occupation, 214
ocean, 55
ocean steamers, 91
ocean transportation, 155
ocean voyage, 74
officers, 99, 109
Official Records of the Rebellion, 286
oil, 139
O'Keafe, Patrick, 80
Oklahoma, 21, 30, 35, 60, 87, 126
Olive Street, 101
Omaha, 158-59
  exposition, 160
operations base, 126
optical illusion, 50, 77
Orange County, New York, 41, 278-80, 298, 317
Oriental Hotel, 114
Orion, 136, 180
Oroville, California, 249, 258, 264, 266-67, 274, 277, 281, 327, 342
Orr, W. P., 122
Osceola, 54
Oswego County, 271
outer space, 37
Overland Quarterly, 283
oxygen, 325
Ozark Mountains, 65

P

Pacific Ocean, 228
Pacific Railroad, 88
Pad, 134
paddle wheel, 164
Panama Canal, 171
Panola County, 205, 227-28
Panther City, 227
Panthers, 78
paper balloons, 236
paper parachute, 157
parachute, 158
Paris Oil and Cotton, 88
Paris, Texas, 31-32, 43, 57, 66, 88, 105, 140, 254, 290-91, 312
participants, 29, 124
parties, 163
passenger coach, 40, 50-51, 89
passengers, 35, 160-61, 265
passenger ship, 135
passenger trains, 22, 52, 58
patents, 102, 175, 256-58, 263, 301
  infringement, 120, 301
patriots, 95
Patterson, W. H., 102
Patton, M., 72
Patton's Seminary, 76, 81
Paul's Valley, 134
Pavillion Township, 95
Peay's Hotel, 160-61
pedestrian wings, 36
Pennington, Mr. John R., 192-93
pension, 284
Peoples, Col. Tom, 121
Peoria, 40
perjury, 304
Perth Amboy, New Jersey, 246, 264, 292, 299, 326
Petersburg, Virginia, 297
petroleum industry, 155
phenomena, 60, 76-77, 83, 95, 113-14, 120, 157, 180, 182, 211, 268
Philadelphia, 159, 214
Philadelphia Inquirer, 158
Philippine Islands, 64
Phillips, John, 102
phonies, 23
photograph, 233, 312
physical specimen, 240
physics, 171
piano company, 257-58
Picayune, 111
pictographs, 26
pictures, 121
pilot house, 174
pilots, 65, 70-73, 82, 122, 125-29,

139, 160, 168, 182, 204, 209, 265, 319, 331, 334-37, 347
Pina, 104, 150, 346-47
pipes, 261
Pippenmere, Charlie, 131
pistol, 98
piston, 173, 261
Pither, Sgt. Jack, 165
Pittsburg Landing, 297
plane, 121
planets, 31, 33, 36-37, 39, 51, 76-77, 92, 109, 121, 125, 127, 137, 145, 169, 242-43, 331
Plano, Texas, 152, 153, 246
plantation, 122
playboys, 93
Pleiad, 113
polar area, 118
political forces, 259
political relationships, 268
pollutants, 325
Polytechnic Street Railway, 202
Pope, Will, 84
population, 97, 145
populists, 97, 99
  leader, 80
Porsch, Mr. Otto F., 225-26
Porter, R., 110
Post, 169
Poughkeepsie, New York, 278
power, 57-58, 121, 123, 145, 170, 250, 261
powerful glass, 71
practical jokes, 21, 136, 230
predictions, 61, 264
press, 38, 176, 294
pressure, 173
print, 53
prison, 304
Pritchett, J. J., 120
Proctor, Judge, 125, 128, 190, 337, 342-43
professors, 123, 168, 180
progress, 189
prohibition towns, 151
projectiles, 95, 96
prominent citizens, 130
proof, 240
propellers, 64, 79, 85, 90, 121, 143-45, 154, 169, 172, 174, 203, 218, 251, 261
  blade, 96
prophecy, 24, 61
propulsion systems, 241, 251, 311
protection, 260
prototypes, 129
public, 53, 61, 72, 117, 125, 154, 176, 193, 198, 208, 210, 220, 229, 232, 245, 250, 334
  announcements, 258
  demonstration, 287
  display, 340
  record, 287, 336
  ridicule, 20
publication, 80
publicity, 114, 128, 204, 243, 336
publicity stunt, 293
publishers, 20
Pulitzer, Joseph, 65
Pullman sleeper, 172
purpose, 259
Putnam station, 63

Q

quantum mechanics, 19
quarantine, 347
questions, 64, 99, 172, 261, 266, 269

R

rabbi, 111
railroads, 25, 51-52, 71, 76, 82-84, 112, 128, 130, 135, 149, 155, 184, 215, 228, 243, 274, 341, 345-46
  financiers, 345
  hoax, 20, 24
  telegraphers, 51
  tracks, 76
  trains, 91
railway station, 90
Randall, 203, 307
Randall, Captain, 203-4
Randall, James, 307

range, 33
Reade, Phillip, 232
readers, 37, 53
reconnaissance, 293
recovery, 125, 128, 337
recruiting officer, 285
recycling, 344
red light, 84, 163, 180-81, 189, 211
red planet, 337
Red River, 30, 105, 147
Red River County, 291
Register, 203
relativity, 19
religious, 228
  fanatic, 147
  leaders, 24
Rellyer, W. S., 87
Remington, Frederic, 352
repairs, 71, 73, 75, 122-23, 126, 130, 167, 201
reporters, 54, 59, 63, 70-72, 78-79, 88, 92-93, 101-2, 110, 114, 116, 122, 128-29, 132-33, 142, 166, 181, 208, 226, 229-30, 255-60, 264, 266, 294, 317, 341-42, 352
reports, 37, 40, 59, 68, 76, 82, 90, 92-96, 102, 110-12, 123, 130, 141, 147, 151, 161, 179, 193, 196-97, 202-3, 208, 230, 237, 249
reputation, 21, 30, 32, 63, 153, 171
Resaca, 286
research, 124, 276
retraction, 336
Revelation, 24
revenge, 352
revivals, 24
Revolutionary War, 159
revolutions, 173
Rhome, 89, 125
Rice, 170
Rich, 353
Richmond, Texas, 27, 101, 107, 170
Riddle, Lee, 97
Riddle Rifles, 97
rifle, 98
Rigg, Col. O., 189
rigging, 89
righteous, 62, 77, 127
rights of way, 144
Ringgold, 286
Rio Grande, 181, 207-8
Rio Grande railway, 50
Rivers, W. O., 86
Robertson, Colonel, 78
Robertson County, 146
Robertson Hill, 225
Robson, Steven, 246
Rockford, 81
Rockland, 196
Rocky Mountain News, 157
Roentgen rays, 236
Rooney, Andy, 108
rope, 263
Rosanky, 218
Roswell, New Mexico, 23, 40, 125
Routh Street, 163
Rowland, E. M., 86
rubber, 224
rudders, 157, 224, 254, 263
rumors, 180, 232
rumors of wars, 24
Russle Heights, 83

S

Sabbath, 147
Sabinal, 182
Sacramento, 20, 229-30, 249, 251, 257-58, 319
Sacramento Bee, 249, 319
Sacramento Evening Bee, 20, 249, 251
safety, 56, 58, 84, 155, 346
sailors, 60, 143
sails, 57-59, 85-86, 88, 91, 102, 145, 163, 167, 174, 176, 224
Salge Hotel, 226
saloon, 112, 147
San Angelo, 183
San Antonio, 139, 141, 203-4, 210, 219-20, 229-31, 234, 254
San Antonio Express, 77, 98, 122, 141, 208, 211-13, 220-22, 227
San Antonio Gas and Electric Company, 224

San Antonio Light, 224, 230, 235-36
Sand Hook, 347
San Francisco, 21, 124, 164, 170, 176, 193, 220-21, 257-59, 261, 263, 265, 277, 283, 287, 288-90, 304, 309-10, 317, 319, 329, 337
  airship, 264
  attorney, 249
San Francisco Call, 197, 251, 257-58, 260
San Francisco Chronicle, 255, 258, 261, 264
San Francisco Examiner, 124, 249, 258, 264, 267
San Francisco Express, 220
Sanitary Commission, 297
San Quentin prison, 304
Santa Clara County, 273
Saturn, 23
Saunderson, George, 101
Savannah, 286
scenario, 40
scholars, 61, 62
schoolhouse, 101
Schott, Charles, 165
Schrimpff, Mr., 208
science, 20, 77, 156, 159, 162, 171, 340
  scientific achievement, 245
  scientific experts, 145
  scientific investigation, 119
  scientific world, 171
  scientists, 20, 22, 73, 80, 157, 162, 231, 239-40, 301, 325
science fiction, 243
Scientific American, 80, 156, 157, 171
Scobie, Captain, 236
Scotts, 95
Scott, Tom, 291
Scully, Joe "Truthful," 70-75, 78, 81-83, 142
Sea Isle, New Jersey, 214
sea monsters, 60
seaport, 109
sea serpent, 60
seasickness, 174
second coming, 77
Second Street, 225
secrecy, 119-20, 159, 232, 247, 256, 341-42
secret, 173
Secretary of the Atmosphere, 152
Secret Service, 282, 284, 286
self-exciting dynamo, 124, 301
serials, 53, 245
Seventeenth Street, 157
sewerage system, 292
sewing machine, 102, 111
Shadbolt, 153
shadows, 72, 115, 121, 132, 139
Shed, William J., 78
Sherman, 43, 58, 67, 87, 104, 126
Sherman, Clay, and Company, 257
Sherman's Civil War tactics, 65
Sherman, Texas, 298
Sherwood Spotts, 84
Shoal Creek, 94, 225
shooting star, 78, 83, 246
Shrader, 161
shrapnel, 96
Shreveport Times, 205
side paddles, 325
Sidney University, Australia, 310
sighting plot, 44
sightings, 20-23, 25, 29, 33-34, 36, 39-40, 43-44, 51-53, 60, 67-68, 76, 92-93, 100, 103-4, 110, 125, 129, 135-36, 139, 148, 150, 168-69, 177, 203-4, 211, 227, 241, 243, 249, 251, 258, 291, 320, 336, 347-48
signal lights, 31, 82, 84, 121, 195, 212
signal service, 158, 232
signs of the times, 24
silk bag, 224
silver, 125, 338
Sixth and 24th Army Corps, 273
sizzling noise, 90
sky, 36, 40, 52, 57-59, 63, 68, 74, 76, 81, 83, 92, 97, 101, 113, 115, 121, 129, 132, 156, 158, 164, 181, 237, 246
Smith, 196-97, 261, 326, 336

Smith, Charles A., 197, 215, 225, 227, 262-64, 266, 303, 315, 319, 339, 348
Smith, Catlin, 263
Smith, Curtis, 163
Smith, Hon. Ed C., 80
Smith, Jim, 88
Smith, L. G., 139
Smith, Mr. John, 196
Smithsonian Museum, 20
Smithville, 286
Smith, William J., 80
smoke, 34, 158
smokestacks, 34
smoking, 117
snail-shell device, 64, 66
"Snapshots," 108, 141
social psychology, 239
soldiers, 64, 281, 285
soldiers of Mars, 94
Soledad Street, 211
solution, 39, 154-55
Somers, George W., 95
Sonoma County, California, 290
Sonora Aero Club, 128, 262, 264, 266, 276, 293, 324-27, 329-30
Sonora, California, 327
sounds, 183, 192, 250
South America, 90-91
Southern Hotel, 229
Southern Pacific Railroad, 182, 220, 336
South McAlester, 29-31
space, 242-43
space travel, 155
Spain, 24, 65, 98, 109, 259, 352-53
Spaniards, 63-64, 82, 99-100, 109, 172
Spanish, 99, 110, 112, 146, 259, 266
  atrocities, 352
  connection, 146
  fleet, 353
  government, 109
  military, 352
  navy, 64
  soldiers, 65
  troops, 64
  war scout, 235
sparks, 56, 121, 195, 212
specimens, 125
spectacle, 71
speed, 22, 30-34, 38, 50, 52-58, 62, 64, 84, 90, 115, 117, 121, 124, 131, 137, 143-45, 163, 173, 181, 192, 211-12, 225-26, 237, 246-47, 251, 265, 292, 333
Spell, W. E., 54
Spofford, 220
S. P. Railroad, 230
Spring Place, 286
Springfield, Illinois, 286
sprocket, 173-74
spy planes, 241
SR-71, 241
Stafford, 101
Stanton, Edwin, 297
stars, 38-39, 41, 51, 76, 102, 110, 131-33, 136, 168-69, 180-81, 189, 193, 210-11, 220, 237
Starveitch, Joseph, 180
Staten Island, 351
Statesman, 87, 94, 99, 181, 226
station, 50
steam, 34, 82, 118, 154
steamboat, 90, 183, 231
steam engines, 34, 61
steam-powered ships, 19, 144, 159
steel, 128, 170, 328, 338
steering, 174, 176
Stelzig, Anton, 28, 324
Stephenville, 122, 125-26, 129-30, 136, 140, 214, 332-36
Stephenville Empire, 122
Stephenville Journal, 122
St. Joe, Missouri, 72
St. Louis, 205, 228, 312
stockholder, 257
storage batteries, 174, 203, 260
storm cellars, 99
storm houses, 109
storms, 155, 174
St. Peter Street, 111
Straughan, J. S., 122
Stuart, Dr. E., 130

submarine torpedo boats, 233
suburbs, 163, 167
superhuman, 261
supernatural, 25, 61
superstitious, 58
surface winds, 37
survey, 76, 96, 109, 113
Sutter, 281
Swint, Tom, 145
swishing sound, 30

T

tail, 57, 86, 148, 226
Tarrant County, 273
Tate, R. M., 134
Taylor & Cox, 168
Teale, 231
technology, 22, 25, 37, 40, 56, 75, 129, 241-43, 331, 335, 338, 346
Tehama, 281
telegrams, 22, 98, 110, 203-4, 245, 250, 258, 319
telegraph, 41, 51, 63, 95, 99, 124, 159, 231
    operators, 21, 51, 86, 184
    wires, 76
telephone, 99, 120, 144-45
    patent, 342
telescopes, 127, 213
temperance tracts, 110
temple of the tabernacle, 108
Ten Commandments, 102
Tennyson, 233
Terrell Times-Star, 31, 146, 160-61, 201, 215
terrestrial origin, 247
test flights, 249, 265, 312, 294
testify, 205
testimony, 158
testing, 39, 54, 111, 113, 120, 143, 159, 173, 241, 261, 346
test program, 241
Tevis, Bob, 92, 115, 312
Texans, 30
Texarkana, 40-41, 69, 72, 99, 107, 168
Texas, 21-22, 26, 29-30, 32, 34, 53, 56, 58-60, 62-63, 68, 77, 79, 87, 91, 97, 99-100, 105, 109-12, 126, 129, 135-36, 141, 144, 147-48, 160-61, 169-70, 175, 179, 182-83, 196-98, 201-2, 209-10, 212-13, 215, 218-19, 224, 228-29, 235, 237, 246-47, 259, 264-65, 269, 273-74, 290, 298, 312-13, 317-20, 326-27, 331, 342-43, 347-48
    accounts, 251
    base, 320
    census records, 273, 302
    East Texas, 67-68, 72, 91
    league, 82
    legislature, 153
    militia, 79
    newspapers, 30
    North Texas, 87, 91, 98-99, 125, 179
    reports, 30
    sightings, 326
    state prison system, 194
    West Texas, 183, 189, 193, 195, 202, 208
Texas and Pacific Railroad, 52-53, 63, 71, 88, 142
Texas and Pacific Union depot, 50
Texas, Louisiana and Eastern Railroad, 193
Texas Tram and Lumber Company, 110
theory, 38, 61, 79, 145, 221
thermoelectric battery, 123, 301
Third Army Corps, 273
Third New York Light Artillery, 273
Thompson, G. D., 134
thunder, 95
Tibet, 130
Tillman, Prof. (Capt.) Samuel E., 123-24, 213-14, 239, 269, 281, 299, 301, 335
Times Herald, 114
Tioga, 85, 99, 104, 125
Tobin, Ted, 213
tornado, 92, 109
torpedo experiments, 352-53
tourists, 337

town, 71, 78, 85, 89-91, 97-98, 101, 115, 119, 125, 127-28, 137, 139, 147-48, 152, 157-58, 162, 165-67, 175, 183, 189, 195, 198, 213, 219, 228
train, 41, 52, 56, 72-75, 84, 88, 119, 134, 137, 159, 220, 223, 336
    drivers, 21
    passenger coach, 40
transcontinental travel, 228
transMississippi exposition, 159
transportation, 64, 89, 144, 154, 237, 345
transportation ships, 64
transverse yoke, 143
travel, 19, 154, 159, 174, 209, 231, 246, 258
Traylor, Col. A. H., 193
Tremont Street, 92
triangulation methods, 43
Tribune, 165
Trice, Leroy, 142
tricksters, 34
Trinity County, 198
triple-connected meteor, 249
trouble, 121
truth, 30, 37, 50, 52-54, 58, 61, 72-73, 75, 84, 96, 102, 109, 115, 135-36, 142, 173, 176, 193, 198, 203-4, 230, 257, 332
Tucker, Dr. D. H., 134, 171, 176, 260
Tufts University, 123, 301
turbulence, 36, 116
Turks, 82
twentieth century, 62
  technology, 66
twenty-first century, 62
Twenty-first Street, 165

U

U Co., 3rd New York Light Artillery (LA) Regiment, 278
UFO, 24, 28, 128-29, 151, 241, 246, 327, 335, 343
    accident, 343
    lore, 343
    reports, 241
    sightings, 28, 241, 342
ufologists, 51
Ulysses, 113
underground dwellers, 37
underground world, 118
undertaker, 115
Union, 293
  forces, 284
United States, 19, 24, 27, 31, 65, 74, 80, 109, 118-20, 125, 232, 259, 282, 304, 310, 325, 328, 342, 353
    army, 214, 258
    census, 271
    congress, 352
    government, 23, 65, 232, 259, 333
    Marines, 31
    marshal, 290
    military academy, 214, 215
    signal service, 125, 127
    War Department, 264
universe, 113, 133, 331
University of St. Thomas, 28
unmarked grave, 129
U.S.S. *Maine,* 352
Utah, 221
Uvalde County, 182-83, 208-10, 226

V

vehicle, 95, 127, 130, 226, 243
velocipede, 64, 68
Venus, 23, 161, 169
veracity, 129, 158, 163, 171, 195, 197, 205, 302
Verne, Jules, 28, 118
vessel, 55, 59, 66, 77, 85, 88-89, 113, 117, 131, 139, 154, 159-60, 167, 170, 172, 174, 177, 179, 196-97, 203, 208, 220, 233, 250-51
Vietnam War, 134
Villareal, Mr. Nato, 234
Vincent, James U., 122
visibility, 33
visitor, 58, 83, 88-91, 98-99, 121, 130, 137, 147, 167, 181, 193-94, 198, 203, 212, 218, 225, 242-43
void of space, 331

Voiers, Charlie, 87
Voiers, G. W., 87
von Zeppelin, Count Ferdinand, 56

W

Waco, 134
Wade, J. F., 84
Wahrengerger, John, 193
Walker County, 195
Wallace, 95
Wall Street Journal, 19
Walsh, C. J., 221, 310, 311
Walsh family, 310
Walsh, Jane C., 310
Walters, James P., 302
Walters, Mr., 172, 301
Wapello, Iowa, 310
war, 98, 109, 130, 155, 179, 232-33, 259, 284-85, 352-53
    balloon, 99
    correspondents, 352
    on Spain, 352
    ship, 79
War Between the States, 272, 281
War Department, 246, 264, 293, 297, 353
Ward, John L., 78
War of the Worlds, The, 127, 243
Warren, Mr. Scott, 172, 265, 301, 310, 336
Warren, Mr. William H., 265, 309, 310, 319
Washington, 82, 159, 319
Washington, George, 153
Washington, Iowa, 310
watchman, 112
"Watchman, The" 115
water ballast, 170
water supply, 126
water tank, 76, 125
Watts, Hon. A. T., 77, 79, 114
Wausau, Wisconsin, 180
Waxahachie, Texas, 59, 102, 107, 116, 140
Weatherby, Dick, 52, 88
Weatherford, 35, 53, 60, 67, 336
Webber, Albert, 80
weekly serials, 245
Weems, T. J., 125, 337, 344
Weldon National Bank, 86
Welles, Orson, 127
Wells, Herbert George, 127, 243
West, 131, 221, 245, 259
West Coast, 124, 269, 289, 319
West Dallas, 163
Western, 264
Western society, 242
Western Union Telegraph Company, 181
West, Mr. Duval, 208
West Orange, 235
West Point Military Academy, 124, 214, 299
West, Samuel, 289
West Virginia, 300
Weyler, Gen. Valeriano, 65
Weyler's Forces, 214
wheel, 90, 123, 143, 145, 162, 164, 173-74, 251, 261
wheel within a wheel, 173, 261
whiskey, 59, 71, 130
White Breast, Iowa, 284
Whitney, 39-40, 43
Wicks, Lee, 145, 180
Williams, C. G., 89, 91, 96
Williams, Maria Louisa (Gordon), 290
Williamson, Mr., 163
Williams' ranch, 193-94, 290, 333
Williams, S. J., 82
Williams, U.S. Marshal John Shelby, Jr., 239, 290-91, 320
    ranch, 31, 194
Williams, Walter, 131-32, 229
Willoughby, Sir Hugh, 118
Wills, Dr., 38, 39
Wilson, Hiram, 221, 225, 239, 271-74, 298, 301, 348
Wilson, Luna (Walters), 302
Wilsons, 169-70, 183-84, 194, 201, 209-10, 226, 250, 269, 271, 280, 326-27
    airship, 251, 319
Wilson, Willard H., 221, 271-73
Winchester, 196
wind, 90, 116, 174, 246, 251, 347

  - direction, 348
  - resistance, 44
- windmill, 90, 123-25, 128
- window, 86, 89, 101, 115, 131, 139, 166-67, 215, 226
- Windsor, 78
- wingless airship, 36
- wings, 35-37, 50-51, 57-59, 62, 66, 71, 73, 81, 83, 85-86, 90-93, 97, 111, 115-17, 121, 131, 133, 139, 143, 148, 157, 164, 166-69, 182-83, 195-96, 226, 243, 312
- wing tip, 58
- wireless telegraph, 301
- wires, 174
- Wisconsin, 179
- Wise County, 124, 341, 342
- Witherspoon, 193
- Witherspoon, C. P., 85
- Witherspoon, Prof. G. L., 193
- witnesses, 22, 30, 37, 39-40, 73, 89, 101, 110, 112, 114, 116, 129, 182, 189, 202, 237, 240, 242, 250-51, 268, 294, 335, 337, 342
  - believable, 41
  - credibility, 21, 23, 32, 39, 53, 89, 93, 111, 127, 143, 151, 242
  - incorrigible behavior, 98
  - incredible, 33
  - reliable, 21, 40, 60, 66, 100, 120, 135, 147, 165, 183, 193, 195, 202, 205, 213, 225, 234-35, 242
  - reputable persons, 52-53, 129, 141, 231
- Wolf, Col. W. C., 164
- Wolf Trail, 164
- women, 108
- wonders in the heavens, 61, 171
- Woodland, 257
- *Woodland Daily Democrat,* 257
- Work, Thomas, 163
- Wortham, 135
- woven baskets, 243
- wreck, 96, 125, 339
- Wright brothers, 22, 56, 251, 324
- Wright, Capt. J. H., 85
- Wyatt, Harris, 152

X

- *X-Files,* 75
- X-rays, 145

Y

- Yankee muster records, 272
- Yates Center, Kansas, 245
- yellow fever, 65
- Yorkshire, England, 282
- Young, Lee, 122
- Young, O. H., 39
- Yuba, 281

Z

- Zacharias, S., 204
- Zavalla County, 183

(continued from front flap)

Michael Busby, himself an engineer with experience in avionics, space surveillance, and flight-test engineering, examines the evidence and weighs the various theories. The result is a compelling argument favoring the existence of a secret aviation program that predates the Wright brothers' famous flight in 1903.

Michael Busby earned his bachelor of science degree in electrical engineering from the University of Texas and served eight years in the U.S. Marine Corps. His engineering career has spanned twenty-four countries and has included projects with the Naval Space Surveillance System, Collins Avionics, Rockwell International, and Lockheed Martin Aeronautics Corporation. Mr. Busby lives in Longview, Texas.

PELICAN
1000 Burmaster Street
Gretna, Louisiana 70053
1-800-843-1724

www.pelicanpub.com

"It sailed directly over the public square, and when it reached the north part of town collided with the tower of Judge Proctor's windmill and went to pieces with a terrific explosion, scattering debris over several acres of ground, wrecking the windmill and water tank, and destroying the judge's flower garden."

—*Dallas Morning News*, April 19, 1897

* * *

Six years before the Wright brothers' successful flight and more than fifty years before the term "UFO" was invented, eyewitnesses from California to Michigan to Louisiana reported seeing mysterious craft sailing through the sky. Newspapers across the country chronicled these sightings, like the account of the spectacular crash in Aurora, Texas, quoted above. Theories abounded, but the facts have eluded historians.

In ***Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery***, Michael Busby reveals the truth about a secretive group of inventive men whose flying machines enthralled the nation six years before the Wright brothers flew at Kittyhawk, North Carolina. He has researched the backgrounds of the numerous individuals involved, including such prominent figures as San Francisco attorney George Collins, who professed to be legal representative for the airship inventors; Dr. Elmer Benjamin, San Francisco dentist and inventor; Prof. Amos Dolbear, chairman of Tufts University's Department of Astronomy and Physics; Prof. and Brig. Gen. Samuel E. Tillman, professor of chemistry (U.S. Military Academy—class of 1869) and U.S. Military Academy superintendent (1917-19); U.S. Marshal John Shelby Williams, federal marshal for the eastern district of Texas; California attorney general William H. H. Hart, immigrant, orphan, boy soldier, Indian fighter, and California pioneer; Dr. Solomon Andrews, the Perth Amboy, New Jersey, mayor, inventor, and physician; and San Francisco physician Dr. Charles A. Smith, who, with Dr. Andrews, pioneered aviation.

A call to duty from a divided country brought these men together during America's deadly fratricidal war. Serving in the Army of the Potomac, they forged lifelong friendships in the mud and blood of battle. After the Civil War they returned to their civilian professions, ultimately uniting again to design, build, and fly the amazing airships of 1897.

Featuring exhaustive research and numerous tables, illustrations, and maps, ***Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*** is a startling addition to the history of flight.

HISTORY / United States / 19th Century

PELICAN
1000 Burmaster Street
Gretna, Louisiana 70053
1-800-843-1724

www.pelicanpub.com

ISBN: 1-58980-125-3
90000
9 781589 801257

Table of Contents

Front Cover
List of Tables
Acknowledgments
Introduction
CHAPTER 1: And There Shall Be Signs
CHAPTER 2: In the Attic
CHAPTER 3: The Beginning
CHAPTER 4: Wednesday, April 14, 1897
CHAPTER 5: Thursday, April 15, 1897
CHAPTER 6: Friday, April 16, 1897
CHAPTER 7: Saturday, April 17, 1897
CHAPTER 8: Easter Sunday, April 18, 1897
CHAPTER 9: Monday, April 19, 1897
CHAPTER 10: Tuesday, April 20,1897
CHAPTER 11: Wednesday, April 21,1897
CHAPTER 12: Thursday, April 22, 1897
CHAPTER 13: Friday, April 23, 1897
CHAPTER 14: Saturday, April 24, 1897
CHAPTER 15: Sunday, April 25, 1897
CHAPTER 16: Monday, April 26, 1897
CHAPTER 17: April 27-May 12, 1897
CHAPTER 18: Solutions
CHAPTER 19: The California Story (October 1896-January 1897)
CHAPTER 20: In Search of the Airship Players
CHAPTER 21: Aurora Revisited
CHAPTER 22: What Happened to the Airships?
Afterword
APPENDIX A: Airship Patent Applications
APPENDIX B: Newspapers Known to Carry Airship Stories
Index

SNATCHED FROM THE FLAMES

One man's journey to uncover The Family Secrets

buried in his blood-stained past

NATHAN REYNOLDS

SNATCHED FROM THE FLAMES

Copyright © 2018 by Nathan Reynolds

All rights reserved. Printed in the United States of America. No part of this book may be used or reproduced in any manner whatsoever without written permission except in the case of brief quotations embodied in critical articles or reviews.

For more information:
www.snatchedfromtheflames.com

Available for purchase at www.snatchedfromtheflames.com, Amazon.com, CreateSpace.com, and other retail outlets

Book written by Nathan Reynolds
Cover design and book formatting by Chelsea Reynolds

ISBN-13: 97817326078041

“Scripture quotations taken from the New American Standard Bible® (NASB), Copyright © 1960, 1962, 1963, 1968, 1971, 1972, 1973,1975, 1977, 1995 by The Lockman Foundation Used by permission. www.Lockman.org”

This book is dedicated to The Survivors.
Those wounded-ones whose brilliant lives
were snuffed out in the blackened flames
of monotony, madness, and murder.

CONTENTS

Part 1

Chapter 1 The Unknown..2
Chapter 2 Our Choice..4
Chapter 3 My Safe Harbor..8
Chapter 4 Things to Come...20
Chapter 5 Deliverance in Dallas..................................38

Part 2

Chapter 6 The Pains of Remembering.......................46
Chapter 7 Murder on Their Minds...........................54
Chapter 8 Hunted...56
Chapter 9 Will She Still Love Me Tomorrow?.............62
Chapter 10 A Time for Telling.................................66
Chapter 11 The Battle Begins..................................72
Chapter 12 The Savior is in Our Midst.......................76

Part 3

Chapter 13 Family Secrets Reveled...........................90
Chapter 14 The Three Methods of Control.................94
Chapter 15 The Trade...106
Chapter 16 Blood Makes The Green Grass Grow........114
Chapter 17 A Step Into Family Central....................116
Chapter 18 Between Death and Life.........................120

Part 4

Chapter 19 The Pen or The Sword?..........................132
Chapter 20 A Letter for My Daughter.......................136
Chapter 21 A Message to the Masses.........................144

Part 5

Chapter 22 A Kingdom Divided...............................154
Chapter 23 A Girl Named Suze...............................162
Chapter 24 Learning His Way.................................174

Part 6

Chapter 25 The Inner Worlds.................................182
Chapter 26 The Dodge Viper.................................188
Chapter 27 Secreted Away.......................................198

Part 7

Chapter 28 Paying the Final Price............................202
Chapter 29 This is a War...210

Part 8

Chapter 30 Into The Wilderness..............................218
Chapter 31 Leap of Faith...226
Chapter 32 When Passover Provides.........................234
Chapter 33 Family Relief...240

Part 9

Chapter 34 When Death Calls..................................248
Chapter 35 Falling in Love Again............................256
Chapter 36 A Man and His Dog................................260
Chapter 37 Best Friend Betrayal..............................264

Part 10

Chapter 38 Student Teacher Interlude.....................274

Part 11

Chapter 39 A Wilderness Confession........................282
Chapter 40 Even for Just One..................................288

Part 12

Chapter 41 Chained: Even When You’re Free...........294
Chapter 42 The Hunger..304

Resources...323

"It is the glory of Yahweh to
conceal a matter; but it is the
honor of kings to search it out."

Proverb of Solomon

Foreword

The Book you are about to read is a true story. It is published in direct disobedience to The Families Orders. Some of the names, places, and dates may have been changed. This has been done to protect the innocent. With that being said, those who have eyes to see and ears to hear will find a dangerous map hidden within. The format, chapter location, and structure are engineered to facilitate the revelation of this map. If you can decipher the text, use The Clue, and follow the breadcrumbs, they will lead you to the gold-laden coffers of chaos, the perpetrators of perversion, and those sycophantic serpents hiding in plain site. May each of you hungry hunters seek to expose truth, freedom, and redemption to all.

I challenge every person who starts this book to read it all the way through. Read it carefully page-by-page and chapter-by-chapter until its final word. This book will not be easy to read. There will be a million reasons to quit along the way to its conclusion. If you endure the distractions, fears, and frustrations, I assure you of this it will be worth it. For the words written within have the power to change your life and the lives of this world forever.

PART 1

Chapter One

The Unknown

Where do you begin a story that would take years to share? Do you start on the day they held you under the water until you thought you'd drown? What about the bitterly cold night when as a young child they made you kill a stranger? How about the time you were bleeding out after being shot and stabbed watching Death come to harvest your furious soul? Why not share what it feels like to tell your beautiful wife your past was a lie and the truth is filled with secrets of the darkest kinds; that waiting behind the cracked lid of reality is horrors, madness, and murder?

I could tell you stories that would freeze the blood in your veins turning them into petrified rivers of shock, terror, and disbelief. The kind of memories that squeeze the air from your lungs and leave you breathless desperate to dismiss them as crazy fantasy. I don't think this book is for those stories. No, those stories will be whispered in the quiet to those who need to know so that they too can be set free. Freed from whatever it is they were made to do or was done unto them. Those wounded ones, those survivors of atrocities so horrible most scream and wail desperately denying they even exist. Denial can only keep you comfortable for so long. Soon the day will come when the houses of ignorance we've built our lives upon will come crumbling down.

I assure you of this: there is such a thing as radical, intelligent evil, and I was bred and born firmly into its clutches. But I was not made for those shackles of slavery; nor were those irons made to keep my soul from ever becoming free. As it's been written, "You will know The Truth and The Truth will set you free." Through many love-filled but tear-stained experiences I have come to know The Truth, and it is because of The Truth I write you these words as a free man. I write these words with free choice burning a path of hope, which is turning the darkness of my past into the redemptive story of Good redeeming Evil. A story of Light piercing the maddening darkness and revealing to the world that hope is waiting for all those souls held in prisons of destruction, despair, and death.

We could start this true tale with the introduction, the acknowledgements, and Chapter One, but I think instead, it's best if we start much later. We will begin where I hoped it would have ended but the "boy meets girl and they lived happily ever after" was never meant to be. Our story begins when in walked my safe harbor. The woman who held me tight while Pierced Hands of Hope ripped me out of The Underworld of Secrets and murder. It was a world, which sought with reckless abandon to drag me back into its poisoned abyss. Together their hands would hold onto me as Ancient Royal Families who rule Underworld empires of beauty, bondage, and blood did their best to snuff out our redemption.

Chapter Two

Our Choice

The water is at my feet again. It laps at my toes tempting me to take a plunge. I see the face of this man of many staring back at me. We know more than we'd ever forgotten. The memories have come back in waves, breakers, and billows big enough to capsize the cargo ships full of containers stacked a hundred and fifty feet into the air. A thousand questions are pummeling my mind. First and foremost is the fear of what I have to do. I have to tell my wife something she is not ready to hear, something that will bring those waves crashing down upon her.

Will she leave me for what comes next? Will she leave me when she knows what I've done? She may have still loved me when I told her of the abuse and the fracturing of my personality, but she doesn't know about the blades in kidneys, needles in necks and bodies buried in our past. She says she loves Jason, but she doesn't know what made us hungry to hunt monsters masquerading as men.

I look at the water and see the man of many. I see the man who is no longer afraid of who he is and what he had become. I see instead the face of a warrior who has known weakness is better than strength. It is a man who knows forgiveness is power over those who hate. For the first time in my life, a free man's eyes gaze back at me. I can choose. I can decide what will happen tonight. I have the freedom to hide and bury these Secrets back inside. I have the freedom to accept who I've been and confess The Secrets to my wife and find out if God's people love even murderers, liars, and assassins? Would I tell my wife I'd been made to kill time and time again? Would I share My Lists with this woman of innocence? Would I tell her about the people who'd seen the face of her husband before they met Death? Would she ever see me as the same man? Would she still love me once she knew? Was there anyone who could love me once they know the truth?

I could not wait any longer. I couldn't wait for a snuff film to surface showing me as a boy fighting another child to death with knives in dirt pits for sport and status. I couldn't wait for my young teenage face to be on the news as I was used by another Brotherhood to kill one of their own. My Family of blackmailers and extortionists had plenty of devilish darts in their arsenal, and I would not let them play me like the puppet I'd been all my life. I would not let the fear rule me anymore. I knew there was no way to escape this brutal Underworld except through radical honesty and exposure to the light of redemption. Only on the surface could my broken heart find hope of rescue amidst the storm. I was no longer just a me but a we; and we would do something that will echo through the halls of our heart forever.

We left the path around the lake and headed home. The soil littered with pink pebbled stones crunched quietly under our feet. With the sun setting over the horizon we made our choice. We agreed it was the time we tell our wife who we are. It is time we tell her about Perrello, The Pit, about what we were to The Jesuits, The Brotherhood and why The Families had such an affinity for our 'ways.' It is time to tell her how we "Earned Our Keep" in The Trade. Finally, my wife would learn about Blade, Jason, and My List.

Eight years before my walk around the lake we met her. She took a path down a hillside in the mountains that changed it all. The steps she took on a Wednesday evening would lead her to a smiling young man covered with scars. Some of those scars showed through the skin, breaches of my flesh, which offered the astute a glance beneath my pleasant veneer. Other scars the ones, which had cut the deepest, were hiding behind the walls only survivors can build. It was in those vaults of my soul where Secrets too dangerous to speak were written in ledgers of regret. Before those Secrets could be spoken they would both need to become warriors for another Way. In time would come a child who would save his shattered soul and show him a new life.

Chapter Three

My Safe Harbor

She walks through the screen door; it creaks the ancient spring biting into the well-worn grooves dragging it back to its familiar resting place. She's got a hat pulled low hiding her hazel eyes. She's wearing soccer shorts, a tank top and flip-flops with a Hawaiian name I couldn't spell right. There is no heart-stopping-our-eyes-met moment to relate. Instead, it was an introduction from one friend's friend to another. I had been leading connections at a church's college ministry and was preparing a feast. Every Wednesday we had people over to a house on the creek where we fellowshipped together, ate pasta and laughed. It was a temporary home to me, a man always on the run.

She stepped out of her silver crescent Honda and made her way down the hillside of a mountain town. Pink flagstone steps quarried from just a few miles away were nestled between branches of scrub oak, columbines and black-eyed susan's on her way towards the house where I was waiting. I had always been waiting; all my life had ever been was waiting. Hoping the pain would end, the sadness could leave, or the anger would flee.

But that day, that beautiful April before the sun could set, she took the stairs down the path, where she found a young man who would change the course of her future, and in her doing so would forever change mine.

She said her name was Chelsea and I smiled real wide as I introduced myself as Nate. She had flecks of green peppered through her chestnut brown eyes. She was beautiful - there was no hat big enough to hide that - and by every stretch of the imagination, this woman was entirely out of my league. She was radiance subdued, a once brilliant sapphire now lost in a in a dusty jewelry box.

Chelsea was a collegiate soccer player and a talented nurse, yet I saw sorrow in her soul that made me want to weep. In a moment I could feel the hurt, the ache, and the angst. I didn’t know her whys or her reasons for the tears waiting to be released but that would come soon.

Chelsea worked nights as a nurse at a hospital, and because of that she and I would hang out for many of the weirdest hours. As our days of summer turned into weeks and then into months, this woman always befuddled me. I saw in her the character of God, and I wanted to share my life with this woman. Chelsea and I got to know each other as friends do, but Chelsea was never a woman I wanted to be friends with. Chelsea was the kind of woman I wanted to marry and spend every day of the rest of my life with. We languished in the awkward "what are we" phase of friendship for too long until I boarded a plane and flew to Afghanistan.

It was on my trip to Afghanistan I learned that Chelsea was the woman I wanted to pursue with every bit of romance I could muster. I believe if ever a man is to court a woman he must first bring two things: words of intentions and a marvelous treasure. I needed to return to Chelsea not just with words of intentions but with a trinket in which she could forever see my affections for her. I have never been a man who could craft a beautiful welsh love spoon or afford price-fixed slave dug diamonds and though I bought Chelsea a little silver ring in a jewelry store on Chicken Street in Kabul, Afghanistan this was not the treasure I sought. I found the precious treasure in a palace guarded by fierce men with well-used and well-maintained rifles. Right then and there I decided I was willing to go to an Afghani prison to bring the woman I adored a treasury worthy of her courtship.

Some of our time in Afghanistan was spent going around Kabul and seeing the wonders of this most ancient of cities. Kabul had more history than I could comprehend and as we traveled through its streets, we crested a hill and saw the Darul Aman Palace. Once considered a marvel of the land it now lies in bomb-cratered, bullet-riddled ruins after manipulated men let loose their rage on its monumental walls. Our team unloaded our vans, and we were told the story of the Palace, the queen it was built for, and the treasure it once held in its ornate coffers. Chiefly among its wonders were the rose gardens and tiled mosaic fountains covering the grounds of the Palace. Only by the piles of rubbles marking their foundations could we see the many fountains. While we walked around, the palace guards with their rifles held at the ready patrolled the perimeter. Looking at the crumbled fragments of one of the unique fountains I saw it, I saw the treasure worth getting shot over. It was a shattered piece of a tile no larger than my thumbnail. Its handcrafted designs, and intricate styling's had been aged, chipped, and scarred.

I came up with a quick plan to get me under the razor wire surrounding the palace so I could snatch my treasure away. I studied the guards and learned their patterns and we readied ourselves. Just as the guard turned to make his final march, I swung into action. Diving under the rusty wire I scrambled over to the fountain, and pocketed the prize. Just as I turned and started running back, I heard the guard's shuffling feet. Slipping back under the razor wire, I stood up on the other side of the fence as the guard rounded the corner. In my "just act natural, out of breath, sweating out of every pore" way I kept my cool. The terror in my head convinced me that any second I would be shot in the back but I was able to hold the fear down and keep my composure. It was not until our team was safely back at home did I look at my broken tile. It was unappealing in every way yet marvelous in its uniqueness. My treasure secure, I began to write the words of intention to carry home to the woman of my dreams.

Arriving back home after 35 hours of travel time, I was somewhere in-between slightly exhausted and "fall over I can't see straight" jet-lagged. While in this perfectly screwy lovestruck state of mind, I drove to Chelsea's apartment with my treasure and my words. We talked about my trip and as we did, I began to try to steer our conversation to the story of the palace. Every time I did, I would forget the words I'd memorized. Stumbling and bumbling in the most frustrating of fashions, I told Chelsea something like this: "Chelsea, in all my life God has shown me things of great wonder and majesty. I have seen these things in caves hundreds of feet below the surface of the earth and on the sides of mountains miles in the air. I have marveled at them in ways I thought impossible, but in all of my life, I have never seen such a marvelous treasure of worth as I have seen in you. I have seen in you a character so rare, a heart so sincere, it makes me lose all sense of understanding. In you, I have seen a graciousness that is divine. Seven days ago, I stood in the splendor of the Queen's Palace in Afghanistan and even as I marveled at the ancient palace, I thought only of you. I thought of you because I long for you: to get to know you, to become known by you, and to share my life with you. Standing among the rubble, I found the most extraordinary piece of tile I have ever seen, and I have brought this to you. I give you this that you may know I treasure the woman I have gotten to know, and I would treasure infinitely more getting to know the woman you will become." Handing her the tile, I asked her, "Chelsea, will you be my girlfriend?" Cue the doves, the church bells, and the choir, she replied…

"Well, I will have to pray about it and think about it." Silence filled the void as my jet-lagged brain desperately pleaded with me to understand the words she was saying. I realized there would be no celebratory hugs or high fives waiting for me at my apartment. Driving home, I knew Chelsea was still the woman I wanted to pursue and if God were generous with me, I would do my best to treasure her every day I was entrusted to her. I passed out on my futon that night feeling crushed in parts of my heart I had not known existed. As dawn arrived so too did my friend Steve and a worn out Honda Accord to take me to Baltimore, Maryland.

Steve had invited me with him to visit his family back in Maryland and thinking 35 hours of travel time in two days wasn't enough, I got in a car defeated and deflated for another 36 hours on the road. It was exactly what I needed as my phone received neither a call nor a text from the woman who held my affections. Hours turned into eons but then after four long days of silence my phone rang. The interrupting ring carried on its wave words that would forever end my life as a single man.

I was in the living room of Steve's family home when the ring came and as I looked at the screen, I saw her name appear. Keeping my composure cooler than a cucumber but freaking out inside I answered it, "Hey." Then followed the silence of awkward replies. We talked about my trip out to Maryland but when the conversation took the turn towards finality, she said, "So I have prayed about it and spent a great deal of time preparing to answer your question. My answer is this: 'Yes, and when is our first adventure-date?!'" Squealing like a yo-yo champion, I high fived myself while jumping in place. Coming back to the phone I suavely replied with a day and time, and we agreed. Hanging up the phone in Steve's family living room, I knew things were different, but I could never have known what the woman on the other end of that phone would ultimately mean to me.

Our summer adventures now turned to dating and delight, and as Chelsea and I grew to know one another, it quickly became clear that this woman was every bit the woman of character I had perceived her to be. Soon one date turned to two, and I knew she was my treasure, my delight, my radiant maiden walking in a meadow on a starry night. Into this love-struck tale of boy meets girl would come our first taste of the shadow of death.

It was our seventh adventure date where we were about to have our first lesson as a couple of what lurked in the darkness. I had taken her to one of my favorite places: a hiking trail in the foothills of the Rocky Mountains. We walked - hands clutched together - up the pitch-black path. The overgrowth was hiding the moonlight, so we decided to sit on a small bridge spanning a bubbling creek. We sat and told stories as young lovers do when I heard a pop, soft but noticeable, and then the smallest twig break and leaf crunch. I ask her to be quiet, and within a minute it moved again: soft padded feet were inching their way through the darkness. They were deliberate steps on the softest patches of earth between the predator and its prey. In the dark brush, just a few yards away crouched a lion waiting to steal away our peaceful moment of bliss and kill us before we've shared our first kiss.

I whispered as I stood her on her feet, "A mountain lion is coming, we need to move." I kept facing the creature faintly more than a tan shape in the forest beyond the bridge. We made our way to a clearing that would give us enough open space to see the predator stalking us in the darkness. Peace washed over me as a scripture came to my mind: "And to Adam was given dominion over the creatures of the earth." I wrapped her in my arms and pulled her close. I kept my eyes down the trail where death was waiting to end our future before it could begin. I prayed for the woman who would one day become my wife. I prayed against the darkness and the creature that sought our demise. I thanked Him that He will hide us under the shadow of His wings and we need not fear even when we walk through the valley of the shadow of death. The cinching cord of fear that was settling over our necks snapped under the cutting power of The Word of Truth. Incorruptible, undefeatable courage and boldness welled up from within my spirit and I knew the battle was over. In a moment the lion retreated and returned to the shadows, not defeated only turned away for a little while, waiting for a more opportune time.

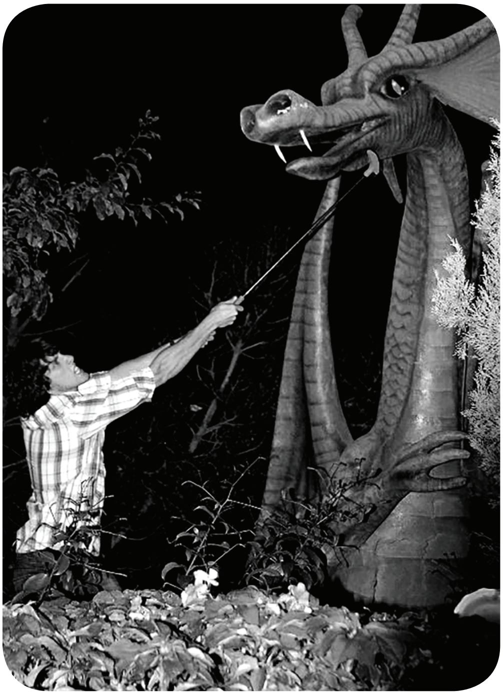

The omen of that night faded from our minds as the excitement of new love bloomed in us both. While I pursued Chelsea, I spent a great deal of time writing things down, as well as "rat holing" keepsakes from our dates: things like a crushed pinecone she had turned into an otter looking creature, or the first piece of Origami she ever folded for me. Every keepsake was a memory of the first glimpses into the heart of the woman I adore.

While we grew in our dating relationship, The Lord told me Chelsea was the woman he had prepared for me and me for her. As such, I knew I needed to ask the woman I loved if she would follow me as we followed our Savior every day for the rest of our lives.

After receiving the blessing of her father and mother, I set about my grand adventure to propose to Chelsea. With weeks of planning and the help of my friends, we sprung our caper on the woman who would become my bride. Working with another couple of friends of ours, we tricked Chelsea into thinking we had an elaborate scavenger hunt for Chelsea and our friend Kelly to complete. We set up an entire (false-ish) scavenger hunt for Kelly who played her part beautifully convincing Chelsea she too was so surprised by the lengths her boyfriend had gone to plant their curious clues and treasures. While Chelsea and Kelly bounced around a snow-covered landscape, I furiously prepared the final touches back at the clues' finish line.

The clues for Chelsea led her to places like the house where we had first met, or to the top of a hundred and thirty-year-old spiral staircase where we first held hands. Chelsea's second to the last clue led her to a small lake where she had first whispered her words of liking to me while we were climbing kids' play fort at three in the morning. Unfortunately, the mood was shattered when a loud-speaker screamed at us that we were trespassing in the park and the cops had been called. Our car had been parked miles away, so we ran like rascals in the night. We didn't get far before the police arrived and we had to run into the brush to hide. When the squad cars spotlight shone around the lake, we buried our heads in the cover of four-foot tall stalks of grass. After slipping away from the heat, we spent hours laughing about the lengths I would go for a one of a kind adventure date. After finding the final clue, she made her way to the front door of our place. Stepping up to the door Kelly pushed Chelsea inside and promptly shut the door behind her.

My roommates and I had spent the better part of two days moving every bit of furniture out of the house. Into the void were brought hundreds of candles, and floral arrangements lining a path of lights leading her deeper into the house. As she walked deeper in, she walked through our relationship for along with the flowers, there were my journal pages of words about her, as well as photographs from our last year and a half together. Stashed alongside these were dozens of my little trinkets and keepsakes. I laid before Chelsea every memory I cherished of her and me. I did this not only for her to see what I saw when I spoke her name or thought of her hand clutched between my fingers, but I did this also to sear into my mind the relationship I had only ever dreamed of having. She was the only woman I wanted to share my life with, and I had the hope of being honored to lead her in my love and devotion to the Redeemer all the days of our life. As she wound through the house, she came around the corner where I had been hidden waiting on one knee.

When I saw her, I began to shake uncontrollably, and before I could say a word of the months-long prepared proposal speech, she did the one thing I had not prepared for. She sat on my knee and clutched my neck. She clutched around my neck weeping on my shoulder hugging me and whispering words reserved for her and me alone. I sobbed on her neck as I stuttered through my proposal of marriage to the woman I adored. She said yes to my proposal, and we celebrated with a feast at a real seafood restaurant that cost me weeks of my meager pay. But as anyone who has ever been head over ridiculous heals in love can tell you, love like that knows nothing of cost. It knows only of longing, devotion, sacrifice, and dedication.

The crazy love I have for Chelsea is but a shadow of the love our Father has for us. It is but a mere glimmer of the Great Physician's sacrificial love for each one of His.

That seafood dinner was the best meal of my entire life, but honestly, I could not tell you a single thing I ate. I was feasting on the joy and excitement of a future life lived with Chelsea. People in love radiate such attractive joy people can't help but smile and be filled with encouragement by their presence. We glowed in our excitement, and we could not wait for the moment we would get to know the fullness of the perceived bounty to come in our marriage.

Chelsea and I (but really just Chelsea) spent the next few months arranging everything for our day of covenant vows. Then in July, Chelsea walked with her father around a blooming rose bush in a garden meadow. I saw my bride for the first time. She was more beautiful than any woman who has graced the earth with her presence. Chelsea was dressed in white but clothed in purity. I had made a vow to her father when I had first asked to pursue his daughter that I would honor and respect Chelsea's sexual purity in every way until he gave her away to me on our wedding day. Although I'd failed to maintain total purity in many of my previous relationships, it was a vow that by the grace of God and by biblical wisdom led boundaries I was able to keep. Chelsea and I were so thankful to be able to offer each other our bodies in purity. Though we had sinned throughout our lives, God had preserved this gift in us, and it is a miraculous testimony to God's grace for even his wandering children.

After we made a covenant with God before our family and our friends, Chelsea and I celebrated our marriage with the people we loved. While dining on some forgotten food, I ate the second-best meal of my life while sharing my first meal with my wife. We ate, we drank, and we rejoiced at the gift of the abundant relationship we had received. We feasted that night not only on food but each other's love, and we drank deep the blessings of marriage.

When I read over my journals from this time, I cannot help but feel the depths of joy, excitement, and explosive peace. But as our marriage progressed that first year Chelsea and I learned Jesus must be the only one we ever seek our fulfillment in. As much as Chelsea and I loved each other, we found how much we had sought from the other things that can only be seen in our relationship with the Messiah. We struggled immensely as we realized the depths of the idolization we each had for the other, as well as the depths of sin's unwashed stain, can have on each other. However, during this time we grew into an understanding of two becoming one that has reshaped my concepts of what love is as well as how truly selfish I can be.

If the first year of our marriage had been hard, the years to come would become unbearable. Chelsea and I were about to face the impossible; that lion was stalking us once more. It was about to strike, and this time, the blow would lead to the death of a passionate, joyful man.

Chapter Four

Things to Come

The shadows would grow deep. They would set upon us as quickly as a bolt of lightning finding its way through the thick clouds above. The screams, the terrors of the night, the haunting need to run from something I could not see.

The night is still upon us. I feel Chelsea's cold hand upon my pounding sweat peppered chest. She is quiet but reassuring; my gasps and screams are fading into the controlled rhythm of a calm desperately clawing its way back into my body. They are back. They were those shapes of horror, those visions of death. The darkened men are there and the monsters too, holding onto small ankles and wrists, the pain and the searing of flesh and then nothing, always nothing. We have been married for a year and a half now. The first year was nothing close to the honeymoon we'd thought it would be. Instead, the bondage of my past came with me.

There aren't enough words to describe the pain of what came next. Who could know it? Who could understand the gut-churning, heart-rending pain? Widows know. They know it all too well. Some widows lost their mates even though warm, familiar bodies still occupy the space next to them at night.

It is the devastation of losing the love of your life. Losing the good, and the bad too, but so much of the good went into the void of blackness after just twelve months. Memories of a lifetime seemed to be flushed down the drain, and I was left with a shallow pond of confusion and no one to tell me what to do next.

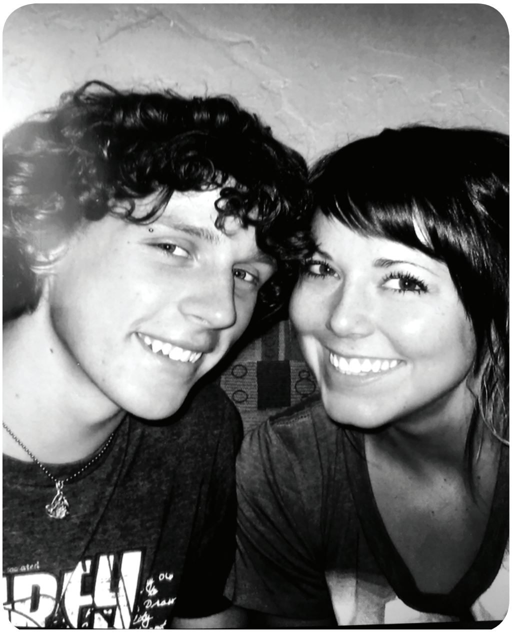

It wasn't overnight, but within a few short months of our one-year anniversary, I went from being Nate to someone else. A man Chelsea had never met, a man who did not have the insatiable passion for exploring this world, for finding the gardens of beauty hidden in plain sight. I used to see so much joy in even the smallest of things like pebbles of acorns scattered across the freshly mowed grass, the sound of water falling from one rock to another, or the cold touch of Chelsea's fingers knit between my own. I had memories of walking down the streets of Rocky Mountain towns snacking on Snickerdoodle cookies and then feeding deer popcorn to her great surprise.

They were such sweet delights; the warmth in my chest was a fire for her. A love that knew no limits and could not be restrained, our shared dreams for the future filled with our children laughing as we walked down the paths of tomorrows.

All of it, every scrap of bliss, was washed down the drain of a monster called forgetting.

“Who am I?” The words passed my lips as I stared into a mirror desperate to recognize the face looking back at me. My hair had been cut short; my brown wavy shoulder length hair once so recognizable had been cut back and styled. Business casual attire now covered what had always been tight fitting t-shirts, or none at all, flip-flops and shorts. There was now a razor sharp knife strapped to my chest; it never left my body, ever. I hungered for its nearness; I desired it more than food in my belly or water down my throat. The need for sharpened steel to be in arm’s reach was a primal, insatiable craving. Soon there were pistols under pillows and burner cell phones with bundles of money stashed in puzzling places. There were secret caches of supplies buried under uprooted trees and boulders hundreds of miles from home. I no longer enjoyed the day, but instead, I craved the night when the world slept and I restlessly made my way into the familiar cracks and shadows of alleys and backyards. I found my fingers turning everyday items into tools for a forgotten shadowy hunt.

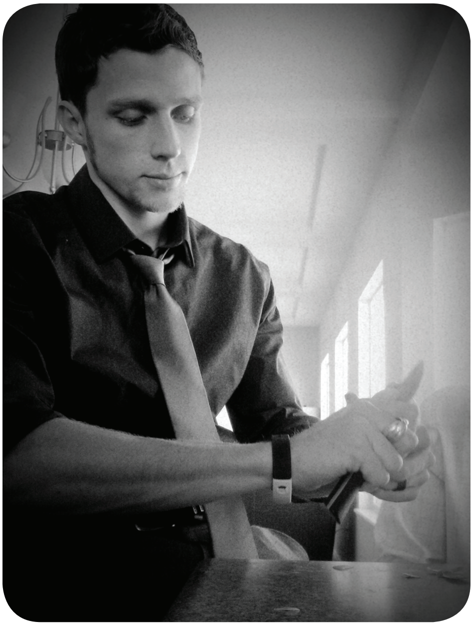

I was a stranger to myself. I didn't know where they found this man in the mirror, but he was not me. If he was not me then who was this face staring back at me? Who was the man in the mirror? What do you tell your wife when you change your name, your passions, your hobbies and everything she's ever known you as? What do you do when you don't remember your best friend's name, the church you'd served at for seven years or the place you used to work? Where do you go when the memories in your mind are now clouded with shadows of things you'd never known?

What do you do when you have schematics and plans for weapons, missions, and tools you'd hardly touched, used, or heard of filling your mind? Where there once used to be memories of soccer games and high school pranks, there was now the need to plan and prepare for scenarios of chaos unleashing themselves upon the world.

What would you do if you woke up to a stranger in the mirror standing in a body decades after you'd seen it last? No one had ever told me there was more than a me in this mind, that there could be a we; the truth is I was a man of many. One body stuffed with many broken pieces of a systematically shattered soul. But that truth was still a vapor passing through the fingers of forgotten memories.

I did the best I could with the confusion of a past I didn't remember. I dumped the real contents of my memories into a five-gallon bucket and buried it in the basement. I took the pictures of a man named Nate and shoved them in a shoebox left on a dusty shelf. I found the keepsakes and the knick-knacks of dates with Chelsea and stuffed them in corners of totes and left them for a time when someone else who cared about them might resurface and love them again.

I couldn't face them because they weren't my memories, so how could I keep them around? They haunted me and confused me more than I could understand. Instead, I pressed into the fringe corners of society where I found the itch between my shoulders finally get scratched. I prepared for the end of the world I knew was coming. The End somehow I always knew I was made for, where monsters battle men, engines of chaos from the Days of Old surface to sift the wheat from the tares. I remembered things that were lost in the years while Nate was running our life.

Soon Chelsea could plainly see something very different in me. When we would go out together, I went by a new name, Jason. I had a new first name, middle and last, all of it was there. As Jason, I could remember police and first responder scanner frequencies, give out dozens of different identities, everything from Social Security Numbers to other mother's maiden names and where I went to elementary school in a small Midwestern town I'd never heard of. There wasn't the faintest concern with morality and laws were only applicable to those who did not understand how to use them for their gain. When I would step out the door, there was an entirely different person ready for me whenever I needed to fade into the shadows and disappear from prying eyes.

Jason could remember the way to hide from surveillance cameras, license plate scanners and how to melt into the crowds. He could shift from one person to another, a chameleon able to fade into the emotional surroundings of the people he was with. He remembered how to make bullets that fragment and ones that pierce through hardened targets or reinforced windows. He could weave fabrics that cloak signals and conceal digital footprints. He remembered how to hone an edge on steel that will pop the hairs off his arm with the slightest touch. He remembered how to lose a tail and scramble his messages into code that could only be read with a cipher locked in his mind. So much to remember and yet I forgot how to love the woman I was married to, and our marriage was falling apart ever so slowly.

She woke up to a stranger; his name was Nathan, and though he had the same body as the man who stood with arms wrapped tight around her just a few years ago, there was something different in his voice and in the way he held her hand.

He trembled and startled when she touched him. He shied away from her; the touch seemed to burn him. He did not desire her; his apathy was poisoning their dreams. Their shared desire for children now became hers alone. Instead, he was terrified at the mere thought of this. With the throwing of some hidden switch, “happily ever after” faded into the sunset of someone else’s dreams.

I so badly wanted to love her. Honestly, the longing I had to understand what was going on was there, but it was intentionally hushed down to a whisper. I longed to crave her embrace, but every touch felt like needles pricking exposed nerves. We kept up our charade, we played the part of a couple but our intimacy was non-existent, and my addictions and bondage built and grew.

I ran to my familiar addictions of substances and porn, dark passengers who had poisoned my life since I was a child. At impossibly young ages I was made familiar with sexual perversions no child should know, the incestuous abuse had defiled me long ago. The need to alter my state of mind was insatiable. I could not bear the present; the past was a void full of terror, death, and pain. I chose to avoid it like the plague it was. With a prescribed pill, I could slip away and fade into the oblivion I craved. The guilt would come with the sobriety, the dread of shame for my lusts, which could not be satisfied.

Small victories would come: sometimes there would be weeks strung together where I found miraculous freedom in rivers of The Father’s peace. Then the raft of my life would crash into a boulder of terror, the dread of forgotten memories. Back to those poisons I would go. I had been sober from alcohol for years, but one addiction would be conquered only to have another substance take its place. I went from alcohol to prescription pills for the chronic pain and soon other substances that were along the graying edge of socially acceptable. I was a man desperate to escape. I was a man who needed to hide from the madness of memories that felt like they belonged to another.

Who would save me? Who could save me? The prayers I prayed were sincere. No amount of time spent in churches could save me, no amount of two am prayers for forgiveness gave me relief.

What I feared more than the guilt, the shame, or the apathy of my marriage was the dreams. I had too many dreams that were ripe with killing and death. The dreams of daggers plunged through kidneys and slid behind Adam's apples then tearing out throats. The chanting of things I did not understand and vomiting after wretched acts of killing was through. What were they? Oh God, what was this I saw in the night, in the stillness, while my wife slept beside me?

Who were these people I saw over and over, a child sneaking into manicured high fenced estates and slipping between security passes? Why did I see a wolf – this creature stalking me in my sleep? There were so many questions and yet there were never any answers. I drowned the mysteries into oblivion; I hid them with vials and pills. Then nothing happened when I slept, and I passed from awake to asleep to awake again. I went to work, and later when I got home, Chelsea and I watched TV shows that temporarily filled our house with laughter or scratched the itch of boredom until we went to sleep and did it again.

Scattered into these days were random get-togethers with my dad. Out of nowhere, he would invite me to stay with him in the mountains or in the deserts of that hellish place. Memories would fade with every trip, and I would return even more of a shell of the man I'd left as. Chelsea noticed but said nothing. What could she say? What could explain the change that she saw in me? What could bring understanding to this madness of our life? On and on we went. The lion of destruction had found my throat and left Nate perishing in the depths of our broken past.

But Yahweh.

Two words.

But Yahweh.

Two words which change everything. At this moment, just as He has done so many times in the past and will do even more in the future. The God of Mercy interjects Himself into the scene. He reaches His Mighty Right Hand into the depths of our death and sows in a seed of life. The seed comes with seven letters etched on its surface: *answers*.

Answers were on their way; they would not come quickly at first. At first, they would be a trickle, a pebble tossed into our pond of confusion rippling out for a moment before the waters grew placid again. One by one He would drop them into the waters and let us contend and recover from the little ripples. Soon those ripples turned to waves of curiosity and our need to know and understand built into a pang of hunger that exceeded the cravings for escape, secret caches, and even the blade.

The answers to come would set Chelsea and me on a path to freedom and understanding. No one warned me the path to life was established firmly in the midst of a war-torn landscape. Where we were headed was a ruinous land through the valley of the shadow of Death

Beneath the Waves

The answers were not abundant, not at first. I was a man on fire, and I needed something to quench my thirst. He came to us with wisdom and Truth. The God of our Redemption was coming through.

We stepped onto the shores of the lake; its waters stilled to a glass. Carefully chipped stones were in my fingers. They are called chert – a flint-like stone used by the Native Americans who lived here long ago. They treasured these stones and knocked the rocks' hardened surfaces into useful tools like arrowheads, scrapers, and blades. They are thick and red, burnt after their useful edges had been worn smooth.

I was watching the waters and waiting. I was holding onto the icy fragments of a memory, which chilled my soul. I was hoping it would pass and move on, but it lingered. It lingered on the fringes of forgetting the place where no man hopes to be. The pain, the hurt, the sorrows… I just wanted to weep, but tears fled from me. They were hidden away in the memories.

I drove back to the waters of a lake in the rocky forests up in the mountains at nearly 9,000 feet high. I worked here for a summer, a winter and a fall. These were the waters where the answers started. Hours-long commute day in and day out gave me the ability to start listening, to have space to be quiet and left alone. The drive up the canyons would wind through more than rivers and dirt roads. They would wind through the canals of chaos peppering my past. It was there I began to hear the truth. I started to know what it was I had come through. Not all of it, just a whisper. But the whisper was peace, understanding, and truth. I saw then that redemption was coming for me.

I stuffed the rocks deep into my pocket and walked on. I scanned the edge of the shoreline, praying as I went, asking The Father to make clear to me the reason for it all. I needed to know what I forgot. I needed to know what it was that made me crave these secret places or to explore the caverns and dark depths. I walked on the grasses and pine needles growing thicker along the shore. I stepped into the soggy soil, and the water pressed over my boot and soaked in. Its icy tendrils ensnared the soles of my feet before clawing onto my toes. For two years I had feared the waters that once brought me relief.

Our first year of marriage I was so in love. I craved her and I longed to know her, yet looking at this face staring back from the waters of this lake, I hated that none of it was there anymore. I didn't understand why I couldn't love her or plunge into these waters and explore their depths.

There was nothing I loved more than swimming. The feeling of peace would wash over me when my head was in the depths. For months I'd prepared for dives holding on to boulders and running beneath the surface. I would hold onto lead weights, and Chelsea had even bought me an old cannonball so I could do it more efficiently. I named that old cannonball Earl. I took him with me to every one of my classes one year back in college. I would hold onto him and run laps underwater in apartment complex pools I had “let myself into.” Some apartment complexes were not so thrilled to have a man running laps underwater in their pools and were less than amiable at my endeavors for peace.

I needed the water; I needed to hold myself down there for just a minute longer, to feel the silence settle into my soul, to feel the warmth of the sun on my shoulders grow cool as I sank one foot deeper and deeper still. I learned to shallow dive into rivers and creeks and enjoyed the thrill and the rush of landing with inches to spare. I craved it more than the air. That summer with Steve back in Baltimore I’d dove headfirst nearly forty feet into a quarry I’d never seen before. The first time I landed wrong, the second time even worse. Steve’s sister panicked as she neared the edge and turned backward after already starting her leap. Her older brother had reached out and caught her as she tumbled towards the rocks. A spiny shrub with exposed roots had stayed her fall. Cut elbows, knuckles, and wrists were all she had to show for it. Jumping into action, we’d made a human chain and pulled her back. Then I had them break into ones and twos as we ran from the cops that got called on us for the innocent trespass.

Chelsea and I had honeymooned on the coast of Mexico where we’d laughed for days and swam in the waters. We were two lovers lost in new romance. I had left her on the boiling beach while I went out for a swim. I looked at her and smiled, waiting for her to join me. She drank on the shoreline and as I was a hundred yards from shore pumping my legs and feeling joy inexpressible, a tragedy occurred. I flicked my fingers as I broke the surface and my three-day-old wedding ring shot off into the ocean.

I plunged my head into the waves, hoping to grab it before it fell the twenty feet to the churning sand below. There was no sign of it and as I surfaced, I fixed my eyes on a focal shore point and began my search. I could not fathom leaving it behind, so I dove again and again. I spent minutes on the bottom until my lungs screamed threatening to gulp in the salty sea. I could not return to Chelsea empty handed with some ominous sign marking the beginning of our marriage "LOST." Again I dove into the depths, passing my fingers and fretful gaze over rusty bottle caps, rocks, and shell fragments. The ring was made of tungsten, so surely it had sunk deep, and the waves were creating new sandbars and ripples every moment I lingered. Beyond my moment of fear, I began to pray. I found faith welling up as I asked The Father to grant me a miracle. Within my spirit, a story soared above my fear: a miracle of God for another ordinary man who was in need.

The story comes from 2 Kings 6:1-7 where the men are cutting wood in the forest near the Jordan River. One of the men is swinging his iron ax, chopping into trees that will provide his family a home. The iron ax head suddenly flies off its handle and sinks into the roiling waters. Crying out to Elisha, he asks the prophet of Yahweh to help recover it as it was borrowed. Elisha guided by the distressed man to the spot in the river takes a stick and drops it into the water, and up floats the iron ax head. There is no elaboration in the story; it's more of a footnote than a focal point, but thousands of years later this story was centered in my mind. I knew it and believed the God of Elisha could still make iron axes or tungsten rings float.

Back in the waves, I dove with faith fueling my search, and He provided me a miracle. Scanning the bottoms, I passed over a few bottle caps and a piece of a broken bottle until there on the surface of a rippled sandy bottom was my partially submerged wedding ring. Grabbing hold of it, I let loose bubbles of belief knowing my God provides and still cares about the little things, like floating ax heads and wedding rings. Chelsea immortalized that moment with her pen and paper a few weeks later.

Those were the memories lost in the tote I'd buried away. I had looked through them the morning before coming up to the lake. They were my memories but not really. Ever since that summer, I'd be scared to go underwater at all. Scared to take more than a few strokes beneath the surface. The panic within would build to a crescendo. I would ache, I would scream, and my heart would nearly burst with terror. Their words echo within,

"NO, NO WE ARE DROWNING, WE ARE GOING TO DROWN!"

I just wanted to swim again, I wanted to be in the water to explore the depths and find buried treasures or lost ax heads, but fear so haunting I could taste it kept me back. The fear hid me beneath its knuckles grinding me into pieces like the chert in my pocket. I wanted to weep so badly; I just wanted to cry, to bury my face in the waters, and let my tears mingle in the midst of ancient memories. But I couldn't so I didn't, and I walked on the soggy boot leaking my failure on my long way back home.

Home to the woman I didn't remember, unable to conquer the fears I'd brought with me to these shores.

The days would go like this in an endless cycle, but I was an expert at escaping, a man ever on the run. I would wander in the mountains looking for treasures now forgotten in time. I would explore old mine shafts from the 1800's. I would dig up rotting ruins with timbers cut by trappers and men desperate for gold. I would find bullets buried in the wood, nails forged on an anvil and squared on the edges. I would add these little treasures to my collection, a place in the front yard I'd named "Nate's Beach."

Nate may have fallen prey to that lion in the darkness but somewhere, deep in my soul, the echoes of his passions still sang a sad melody. I gathered my trinkets and left them in a three-foot section of our garden just in front of our door. Soon the pile grew with old bowling balls, chunks of pottery and blue hand-blown glass once containing fragrances favorable to a woman two hundred years lost. They were the remnants of lifetimes I'd never lived. They were snapshots from a time when they once mattered to men. Some were snapshots from my own time, like an antler from a survival expedition I'd lead in the mountains up north. Dozens of seashells from The Sea of Cortez, the Atlantic, and Pacific Oceans peppered the ground. Sands from the shores of fourteen beaches and sea glass, which had been tumbled from jagged to soft by thousands of waves leaving them without their edges and cuts.

His waves were about to pound upon the jagged edges of my hardened heart. The pebbles He tossed into my pond of confusion were about to become boulders, and soon tsunamis of remembering would tumble my rough edges smooth.

Nate's Beach bore witness to the three sentences that finally made me strong enough to face down the mountains of madness and murder waiting in my past. That beach served to pull on the threads of this mystery and help me to unravel the lies, the deception, and threats.

A Miracle Named Grace

The end of the age of deceit would begin with words. Soon after walking upon those shores and driving home with a soggy boot, I did a dangerous thing. I put my fingers to these black and white keys and wrote down memories I had spent my whole life trying to forget. I obeyed my Redeemer's pressing to put the pieces of my shattered past into written form.

The words came in a torrent, thousands upon thousands and then tens of thousands as parts of my soul seeped from their sorrow filled swamps and told their tale. It was the first time I ever wrote about the incest and The Family friends with their lusts. Even as I attempted to write, I soon realized how vulnerable and painfully naked I felt.

I could not bear to write in an exposed place. There was a need to hide myself to tuck myself away as I wrote these destructive words. In walked my safe harbor, Chelsea, the providence of The Father's goodness evident in my wife. She built me a nook; she made me a fort in our spare bedroom where we painted scripture on the walls, and she could craft freely. She took sheets and strings and ropes and built me a nook you had to wind your way into. She made me a space that I could write in, tucked away from the world. A hiding place, it was a shelter of refuge I'd never known. We named it Hawk's Haven.

In Hawk's Haven, I would let the depths of my soul surface and leak upon the page. I would wail, I would sob not as a man but as a child, as a boy who'd lost his innocence and never had a say in the matter. I would crawl out of the nook realizing there was peace in speaking the truth. There was healing in tears and in the surrender of secrets to the Author of Hope, The Great Redeemer Jesus.

I found so much freedom in those early days. The pain was there, but I found The Burden Bearer present like never before. I found freedom building in my chest, yet the addictions lingered, the memories and voids still tormented my sleep. I wrestled with the invisible forces of myself and lost every time. I was not willing to let go until I received a blessing. I held on for dear life, knowing there was only death if I let go. I clung to that hope. Desperately, I dug my claws into the Word of God and begged Him to reveal to me what I needed to see to be free. I asked Him to heal me. I could not redeem myself, I could not save myself or my marriage, and I did not know how much longer I could take it, let alone how much longer she could. My Father, my true Father, knew; He had always known me and had answered my prayers so long ago. It was in fall of 2015 that our blessing came. It took a miracle to save this running man, and our miracle's name is Naomi Grace.

She was entrusted to Chelsea and me even though for years we could not conceive. My abuse had rendered me damaged in ways we had been told and believed would make children a near impossibility. There is one, and only one God of the Impossible and His Name is Holy, His Name is Righteous. Yahweh Elohim, The Lord Our God,

was not content for our life to be one forever filled with death. No, He is not willing that any should perish. He was the giver of our life, and it was time for us to be entrusted with a new life to help us face the death of our past and find hope burning brighter than the darkness.

Chelsea filmed the moment as we stood in our little bathroom realizing we would no longer just be a husband and wife but were something that I'd never truly known. We were going to be a family. Two hearts once beating now held a third. A precious daughter was growing and developing within my wife, and as sure as the sun sets over the mountains, in ten months' time, she would be in our arms. The excitement faded as the fear-laced thoughts began to flood my mind. They were packed with pain, dread, and self-doubt, and the weight of their pressure drove me to my knees.

The next morning, I found my face in the carpet as I sobbed and screamed knowing I had no idea how to be a father. Just that morning on our way home with the pregnancy test, I'd confessed to Chelsea how I'd fallen back into my addiction with pornography. The tattered threads of our marriage could not bear the burdens of my bondage, let alone fatherhood. I knew I was not ready, but I believed if He'd entrusted Chelsea and I with Naomi, He would provide me what I needed to be a father.

In the salt and pepper fibers of my bedroom's floor, I prayed with faith riddled desperation, "Father, heal me, please just heal me, whatever it takes." I meant it with every fiber of my being. I needed to be a better husband, and even more so a better father than I'd ever known. I knew if I continued on my current path, I would bring my addictions into fatherhood and I could not bear the idea of that. So instead I set my jaw like flint and admitted my weakness and called upon the Name Above Every Name and received strength for the impossible journey being prepared for us.

If you'd told me that morning what was coming in the next two years, I would have run as far and as fast as possible. I would have run to my familiar creature comforts and buried my head in the sands of forgetting. This time, however, I had something to fuel the furnace of my fires. To give me the unshakable and unbreakable courage to face the loss of friends and family, the threats, the intimidation, the attempted assassinations, and the fury birthed in generations of bloodshed coming to hunt us down. That fuel was something I'd never known: it was The Father's love.

His light filled, salt stained truth was the untainted, unadulterated, and unconditional love I needed to become set free. I needed a Father who would not curse me, coerce me, control me, or sell my body, spirit, and soul to grow in power and wealth. No, this Father's love and justice was the most potent weapon I'd ever been given. For with it I would face the powers and persons who'd shattered my soul and made me a monster, a murderer, and a man of many. With it, I would find freedom in remembering, freedom in the grieving, and then one day I would find freedom in forgiving. In order for the healing to begin I would have to take a drive down to Texas where my faith would become my sight.

Chapter Five

Deliverance in Dallas

Our journey towards destiny started in the spring of 2016. Chelsea now four months pregnant was sitting next to me. The air was hot and full of terrible smells as Ruger our dog was getting sick in the back seat of a rented car. We were headed down to a conference called Hear the Watchmen hosted by Mike Kerr. It was going to be a gathering of many of the teachers, researchers, and hosts of programs I'd been listening to over the last few years who had helped inspire me to boldness in my faith. These were people who were willing to suffer the persecution of the world for the sake of the truth. It was these men like Henry Gruver, Steve Quayle, Timothy Alberino, Josh Tolley, L.A. Marzulli, and Zev Porat who had first lit the fuse of my understanding and helped me begin to understand the other world hiding all around us.

Chelsea and I knew it would likely be the last trip we would take before Naomi was born, so we made it count, staying a few days in an off-the-grid cabin in the desert before driving the rest of the way to Dallas. It would be the last week of my former life. Six days later I would drive back on those roads a new man.

The reality was that I was still battling those familiar strongholds and had been too ashamed to tell Chelsea. I went to this conference to get prayed for, to get freedom and hopefully restoration. I could not bear the shame and guilt of telling her I could not stop, so instead, I set my mind on healing and hoping it would come soon.

There was one man who would be there who I knew could speak to the dark parts of my soul, who could expose the wicked works of darkness to the light of redemption. He was an ordinary man whose extraordinary faith made him unafraid of the murderers, the witches or the warlocks, a man who was known by the Living God, who walked in authority and made the Enemy flee. His name was Russ Dizdar. For nearly 40 years he'd been reaching into the depths of darkness and snatching those whose bleeding hands were crying out for help. He had made his life's mission to intercede for those trapped in The Underworld of ritual abuse, survivors of the occult practices and demonically charged bloodlines. His ministry, ***Shatter the Darkness***, had been equipping believers with the tools of understanding they needed to face down the spiritual forces, which wage for the bodies, spirits, and souls of mankind. He was a man of courage. For more explosively pertinent resources from Russ Dizdar head over to ***shatterthedarkness.net***

The first night of the conference I took notes in my blocky capitalized print waiting to have something change in me, but all I could feel was groaning from within my soul. There was an aching, a begging, and a longing to be free. At the end of his talk, he called out to those sitting in the audience: he called out for those who were in need of prayer, "to those who need God's healing, deliverance and freedom." Before the fears of men could stop me, I ran to the front of that conference room, tears streaming in torrents from my eyes and fell face first onto the carpet. I wept uncontrollably. I wept from the depths of sorrow so few can know. I wept as a man who was dying, a man who was three minutes from dead, a man who was crying out for someone, anyone, to save him. I was the wounded warrior on the battlefield trapped behind enemy lines, pierced through a dozen times begging for someone to bring me relief, bring me the remedy to the death in my veins and the lusts of my flesh. Through my sobs, snot, and moans, a voice was heard.

It was the voice of a warrior. Hidden behind his long hair, tattoos, and middle-aged features was a man of faith, passion, and humility. His name was Thomas Dunn. He stepped forward when Russ called him and saw me lying there in a heap, hands pressed to cover my face from the guilt of forgotten torments. Unable to talk to me standing up or kneeling, he chose to humble himself by joining me in my prostrated pose. He laid himself next to me on the floor and through the weeping I heard him ask, “What can I pray for you for?” I choked out, “Childhood sexual abuse and addictions.” I could not bear to open the doors of death hidden behind my throat. I let loose these five words and asked for help. The Helper was with us both, and He would answer those cries for relief.

It was not a dramatic moment. The heavens didn’t open; there was no light shining from above. He asked if he could place his hand on my shoulder and pray for me. I said yes, and that’s what he did. He prayed with practiced fervor, faith, and belief. He was an ordinary man with extraordinary willingness to stand in between the perishing and their graves. He was a warrior battling for a brother whom he didn’t know but knew he loved. On the floor of that room were two men who loved God with all their hearts waging a brutal war against The Radical, Intelligent Evil, which affected us all.

Thomas was faithful to pray for a stranger, a young man whom he’d never met, a man whose pregnant wife stood twenty yards away having no idea about the reality of who her husband was and what he’d done. He was a man whose soon to be born daughter was already being allocated to monsters who would seek to use her, exploit her like an IV bag dripping delicacies for devilish feasts. The man lying on the floor was desperate for rescue. I was a man who had become undone; a hangman’s thread held the essence of my shattered soul. I had nothing left to give that I wouldn’t surrender to my King. I would not leave there without a breakthrough, and He came to deliver me. He would do it by starting with a cursed black tree.

Throughout the entirety of my life, I had been plagued by this obsession of black withered trees. It was this tree I would go to in my dreams: a gathering place for monsters and men alike. It was my soul or a depiction I had of our cursed Family Tree. I was so fixated on it that I would draw and photograph these black trees over and over again. When I was 19, I'd nearly tattooed it on my body along with the shed skin of a snake named Apollo, and a curving yellow and red brick road littered with the masks of a dozen faces, none of which were my own.

While Tom prayed for me, I saw a vision in my mind of that enormous black tree standing tall over the fields of my heart. Then I saw a hand come and grab it by the base and rip it free. When it lifted, I felt a feeling come over me I had abandoned as lost. It wasn't comfortable or sweet, but it was powerful; with a flooding of realization, I knew it was relief. It was freedom from shackles I'd never seen, from pains I'd long forgotten and memories that would require redemption.

Over our shoulders and on the stage, Russ prayed for the healing of minds, restoring of hearts, and deliverance to those in bondage. He concluded his prayer by talking about David and Goliath. David was a young man who charged out into the face of death with the Name of The Living God as his shield and buckler. Russ confronted the heart of darkness with courage and faith that caused the enemy to scatter like the coward he is. He called for the people who were gathered there to stand courageous and go out and seek and save the lost, be they the pimps who traffic girls on the corner or the demonized warlock cursing their house at night. He told everyone to go out and preach The Good News of Jesus The Christ, The Son of The Living God's redemption to every creature. (Mark 16:15)

The night ended with Tom moving on to pray for others in need while Chelsea and I walked back to our hotel room where Ruger was waiting. Over the weekend I got to talk to Tom some more as he was there promoting a documentary that he and Jared Chrestman of Angry Son Media had just finished called ***Detestable, a Film about Satanic Ritual Abuse***. Satanic Ritual Abuse is a broad term used to describe the ritualistic abuse that is done in the name of or to empower a spiritual entity, which is not limited explicitly to The Satan, but can include other deities like Asmodeus, Lucifer, Ishtar, The Queen of Heaven, The Beast, Gaia, Lilith, Cybele, other gods, demons, and fallen angels. The type of abuse is sophisticated, systemic, and methodical. Involving the physical, emotional, spiritual, and sexual abuse of individuals from the age of conception to the wheel chair bound elderly.

Satanic Ritual Abuse is the black blooded heart of The Kingdom of Darkness pumping its poisoned fuel into the bodies, souls, and spirits of mankind. The deviant practitioners of this wickedness perpetrate it most readily on children and most often on their Family members. Among many other things, the ritualistic abuse of children in this manner causes a very real, physical, emotional, and spiritual power to be released, which is then channeled and used by practitioners and spirits alike for various purposes and ends.

Thomas Dunn had been working with Russ Dizdar and Jared Chrestman to film and produce an exposé revealing the realities of this brutal world where Radical Intelligent Evil puts on flesh and tortures, maims, and murders the innocent in order to rule the hearts, minds, and bodies of mankind. They were bold and courageous men who were on a mission to expose the wicked works of darkness to the Redeeming Light of The Messiah. There were many people present seeking to proclaim the truth, but few were doing it in even this terrible area. To keep up with Tom and Jared's ceaseless work check out their YouTube Channel at ***ThroughTheBlack.com***

Just as the trip was wrapping up and the final session had closed, I went and asked a question to a panel of the speakers at the front of the room. After this, I went to talk to some new friends. While I was talking to them, a woman came up to me and handed me a book saying somewhat frantically that I needed to read it. Looking at it I saw that it was for the breaking of generational curses related explicitly to the renunciation of the oaths sworn in freemasonry and other oath taking societies and "brotherhoods." Turning back to ask her a question, I couldn't see her anywhere. I cannot tell you if that woman was a messenger of Yahweh, or just a woman who was being obedient to The Holy Spirit's leading but that woman put in my hands the keys to deliverance that would finally set this shackled man free.

PART 2

Chapter Six

The Pains of Remembering

Two weeks later I began to ask forgiveness for the sins of my ancestors, to repent for oaths spoken by Family members and myself. I asked The Father to wash away my sins, to cleanse me of my transgressions, and to remove all my ancestors' iniquities. (Exod. 34:7) I renounced the oaths that had been spoken, the curses over children, and the cutting out of tongues. I asked for cleansing and healing to be given to my wife, daughter, and myself. I wept at times during that prayer and shook uncontrollably. I trembled from head to foot like I'd dove beneath the waves of an icy tomb. I felt things cracking loose in my heart. Waves of nausea, sorrow, and pain washed over me. I wanted to stop the prayers; something else was screaming out within me demanding I desist. I knew I needed to continue to renounce these wicked oaths of "I so solemnly swear and this I will do." I needed deliverance and I could feel there was a force of resistance stronger than any I'd ever known. I continued to cry out to The Great Redeemer Jesus and ask Him to cleanse us and purify us. I stopped periodically and read out loud different passages from Psalms washing away the defilement that had come against me. After nearly an hour I collapsed into the chair exhausted beyond description yet knowing there was more freedom now then I'd had in my entire life.

It wouldn't take long for the once pressed away memories to come flooding back. With them would come understanding of the realities of these dreams, these terrors of the night, the blood in the toilet, and the unexplainable fears and pains. With it would come retribution of the most brutal kind.

The memories solidified in brutal terror. I had promised you at the beginning of this book that I would not let this be the book where I discussed the specifics or went into details about the depths of depravity I had suffered. The reality is that my grandfather was a very active member of a brotherhood freely operating within the Knights of Columbus who engaged in Satanic Ritual Abuse of children while doing occult rituals and ceremonies. The fiery serpentine entities they chose to worship and obey do not deserve to be named. I was one of their "chosen ones." Not every member of a Family is selected. However, the ones that are selected, are then brutalized in horrific ways, in order to create a slave which believes it's free.

I began to trudge through the memories and come to grips with an understanding of my past. The memories of these abuses and these rituals started to flood through me and they left me crippled with emotional pain. With the memories came parts of my soul I'd thought long lost to the despair and sorrow.

After finishing the prayer, my mind was flooded with understanding about some of the objects that were all around my house. There were little totems that had been given to me by my grandfather, now a heralded Fourth Level Knight in The Knights of Columbus. He was a man who'd used my body and those of other Blue Blooded children to advance in rank, power, and control.

I screamed, I wailed, and I wept. The agony was tearing my soul; it was rending my heart to pieces and leaving me collapsed on the floor. Chelsea had gone to work and left me to the memories. She didn't know what I was going through, not yet. I curled up beneath my desk and let the sorrow seep out of my pores as my eyes showered me with past pains finally relived. I didn't want to tell her; how could I tell her what I saw? How could I not? How could I trust her not to leave me? How could I know she wouldn't hate me for what I had done? The thoughts pounded through my head as I finally grieved the death of a stranger, a man I didn't even know.

"MURDERER!" The identity was in my bones; it leeched out of my skin; it became me. What else was I but a murderer? A child burning with rage from the incest and the touch of abusers' hands on his bare skin. Into his boiling cauldron of anger an outlet is placed in his hand. They gave me a blade and forced me to do the inconceivable. The priest was pressing on my palm and showing me how to end a life. I wanted to vomit, I wanted to spit, I wanted to rid myself of all of this. But how do you rid yourself of yourself? How do you cast out your soul? They don't teach you this while getting your degree in psychology or in the dispensational Sunday school classes. They skip over this "disorder" and say it's just rare and so uncommon. So what was in my mind burning away the voids and filling it with understanding? Who was the man in the mirror? Who was the man staring back at me? Where had I gone? Answers come from within,

"*We ran away.*"

We ran away like we always do; we ran from the terrors of the night, from the burning in our belly, from the pain in our heart, which was too much to bear.

We could not fight back when they pressed down on us or shackled us to the chairs. We could not stop our grandfather from drowning us in their bathtub. We could not fight back when The Family dentist drugged us into oblivion. We were weak, oh my God, we were so weak, and we had no way to fight back. How much longer could we hold out? How long can you resist the pains of torture? Not long enough. Never long enough. So we ran away, we slipped into the cracks that fissured into our mind; the splitting of our soul was a gift from the Creator given to His children who would have to face unimaginable horrors. It was a way to survive the death blows of sorrow, pain, and shame that would have stopped my heart from beating. Survival for us came from one word: dissociation.

As the book progresses, I will go into greater depths of explaining this, but for now, I will give you, the reader, a brief overview. The clinical name for it is Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID), formerly called Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD) of which millions of Americans alone meet all the criteria for. Dissociative Identity Disorder develops when a child, generally before the age of seven or eight, is being abused or sustains a sufficient trauma they cannot physically escape from, so they will instead run away internally to a world no eye can see.

To survive the un-survivable, the soul of the individual splits and tears away from the core personality. During this terrible moment, a blank identity, personality, or fragment is created whose reality and understanding of the world is birthed in this atrocious traumatic event. Because the other personality comes to the surface to endure the trauma the remainder of the individual's core identity can survive. This fragmented piece of the soul can go on its own, or under someone else's manipulation to develop into a complete identity separate from the core person.

DID is not a psychological disorder like Narcolepsy or Agoraphobia. It is not a disorder at all; instead it is without question a gift of the most beautiful of kinds. It is an incredible survival mechanism built into people, which helps them endure unspeakable trauma that would kill even the strongest among us. The doctors and technicians call it "dissociation." We called it the "fade", the slipping of our mind from one reality to the next. Once we have split, we have the forced ability to switch from one personality to another.

This fade gave us the ability to endure the butchering of our innocence and the pains of a life lost to many abusers. Dissociation created in us numerous personalities like one who was familiar with the pain of hunger, the regret of not being able to stop them from hurting the ones we loved or from hurting us. We could not stop the perpetrators physically, so we would slip away into the inner world of our shattered mind. We would crawl away into our familiar space and up would come another part of our soul, one who held the pains of betrayal and abuse, who did not know there was a rational world where dads protected their sons from abusers. Instead they became my Night Walkers those personalities who hide in plain site. Those parts of my past whose enlisted "uncles" delivered them like Cheese Pizza to parlors, pastors, and priests all around The Bridge famous desert town.

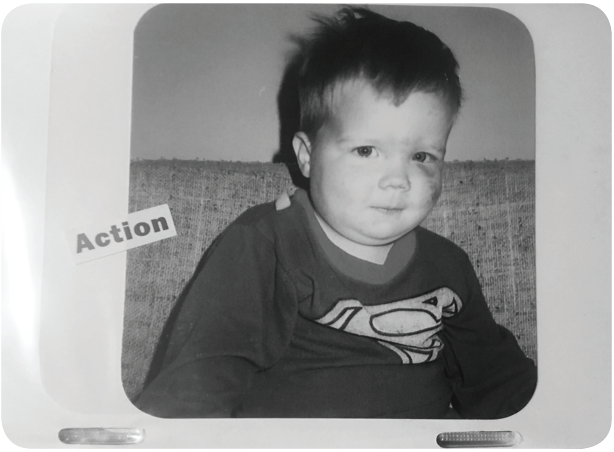

The trips down to my grandfather's house during the solstices and other high occult days would sometimes last weeks. All too often my parents would leave us there unprotected, ready to be taken into the depths of their dark chambers and back Oasis rooms. My body, blood and will was a commodity, sold for a high price, never high enough to wash away the shame from our soul and the depths of The Secrets they stored in my mind. I was their altar boy. It was the blood of The Chosen Children that christened their Lady of The Lake's communal cups.

I was not born into a home of safety; there was no roof of refuge over my head. I was not born with free choice. Instead, I was shackled to the walls of wickedness from the day of my conception. I was the "chosen one" in my Family; I was bred and selected so that the blood in my body would fuel the furnaces of secret rituals and power-hungry perverts climbing their ways to the top. I was born into the world of shadows. It is The Underworld of our society where children are taught to seduce strangers and secretly record what they do next. It is The Underworld where people document their ancestry and obsess over their bloodlines, deciding which chosen "Family" to breed with next.

These are not your every-day criminals. These are not the bosses or kings dressing in fur skin and acting hard while they rat out soldiers to detectives for cash and control. These are generations of depravity groomed and carefully cultivated. These individuals are extraordinarily intelligent in their cunning and subtle ways. They are masters of manipulation, experts on human behavior who know how to wear dozens of masks to match every occasion.

They know how to walk in the light of ordinary day looking like your upper-middle-class neighbor next door, while they fuel this empire of insanity at night. They frequent our churches and make sure the pastor, deacon, or bishop knows how steady and substantial their tithe check is. They are the eyes and ears of an Underground army serving their dark prince, a prince who demands from his follower's secrecy, silence, and subterfuge, and my Family has served him with excellence since the ancient days.

Now was the time for those Secrets to be revealed. The memories may have brought back pain and sorrow of the unimaginable kind but with them came something greater. It was stronger and more powerful than anything I'd ever known. They brought courage. They brought a fierceness I'd forgotten. They brought love, peace, and hope. These shattered pieces of my broken soul once they found healing and restoration would find the Word of God spoken over them give them their new identity. Our Heavenly Father would teach us that "He has not given us a spirit of fear but of power, love, and a sound mind." This courage could not be contained; it looked in the face of insurmountable odds and chose to find faith in The Almighty God.

With this courage, I finally began to walk out my faith. I looked at The Way Jesus lived and stepped out hoping the dust of His sandals might fill my vision and cover me with His understanding, boldness, and Truth. For the first time in my life, I was finding freedom from the bondage of my fears, guilt, and shame. I was a new man, and finally I was living in joy, hope, and peace. I could not contain the excitement and needed to go and share the power of forgiveness and Yahweh's hope. Where does a son of Belial go when he is translated from the Kingdom of The Fallen Ones into The Kingdom of The Redeemer? He takes his light and runs back into the squid ink darkness he was familiar with. I looked for the darkest corners of my community and I went to the streets to share the hope of Messiah. I began to share my passions for freedom to all I could, and in doing so, I found out my Family's Secrets were still protected from blowback by the spilling of innocent blood.

Chapter Seven

Murder on their Minds

I had begun to piece together so many pieces to the puzzle of my past, from the numerous different handwritings in my journals, the missing time when other parts were up, to the different names I used to go by when I met people. The fractured memories and forgetting began to disappear. I was finding out more about who I was and in all this remembering, I longed to have additional confirmation. Even with the understanding, I needed more answers, and I needed to know just how deep The Family darkness ran. It was with that courage welling up within me that I made the most dangerous phone call of my life.

I picked up the phone and called my mother. During my middle school years, she had obsessively spent a tremendous amount of time and resources carefully documenting my Family's Ancestry, tracing the bloodlines to The Royals and rulers of old. By so doing my Family sought to substantiate its appeals to our "Divine Right to Rule." I was coming to grips with the reality of my past, and I knew I could validate so much of what I remembered from those ancient records. I asked her if she could send them to me. Ever amiable, she agreed to my requests, and I decided to probe further.

"Mom, what do you know about the Knights of Columbus?"

She told me that Grandpa is a part of it and it's a good old boys club that does pancake breakfasts and fundraisers for children. I nearly gagged. My pedophilic abusers were specifically recruited and connected to their young victims (their altar boys) through the Knights of Columbus and its various seasonal "Youth Groups" and other "Finder" programs. I pressed her on this and warned her of the evil that underpins what Grandpa does with his Knights during their get-togethers. With childlike innocence, she tried to assure me they are just the best of people and promised me again that she would send me the records I'd requested.

That was the last time I spoke with my mother.

Unfortunately, other phone calls were made after I hung up. The Underworld's Spidery Web had just been tripped. I had spoken The Secrets, and my forbidden past could never be allowed to see the light of day. The Family would never allow The Secrets to be revealed no matter how much blood, innocent or guilty, it cost.

Just a few days passed, and I continued my research documenting and disseminating the memories of murder and finding that there could be a cleansing from even that kind of shame and guilt I was woefully unaware of the carnal wheels of chaos churning just below our feet.

Chapter Eight

Hunted

Chelsea was now approaching her seventh month of pregnancy with Naomi, and we decided we should see a movie. Even as we got ready to go, I felt a churning in my stomach, a discomfort about going. I foolishly shoved down the feeling as I knew it would be many months before Chelsea and I would be going on a date to a movie. Just before I walked out the door, I felt the pressing of The Holy Spirit to put on my kit and body armor. Even as we drove to the theater, Chelsea and I discussed how we both didn't feel right about going to this movie, that something was really "off." Unfortunately, we justified away the feelings and went to the movie.

The night wore on and by the time we went to walk out of the theater, it was nearly midnight. When I went to step out the door, I felt a Familiar burning presence waiting; the lion stalking in the darkness was coming once more to seek our death.

The well-lit parking lot was capable of holding hundreds of cars but now it lay all but deserted. There were a few cars parked directly outside the exit doors, most likely employees' who get the premium spots in front of their entrance. Our car was the exception. It lay eighty yards from the exit doors.

The assassins came for us then. The heat on my neck built to a furnace, and I was reacting with instincts that have kept me alive through too many tangos with Death. It seemed innocent at first. A four-door crossover SUV started driving diagonally towards Chelsea and me through the parking lot, ignoring the painted lines. We both watched them troubled at first but waiting to see what they were doing. I grabbed Chelsea's hand and had her watch. They pulled straight towards us, turning just before they hit the sidewalk. The driver watched us intently and his gaze disturbed me. He continued past us in a massive circle, parking out in the middle of the lot within only a few spaces of my vehicle. Upon parking, he did not move to get out but instead waited.

Moments later, a second car came on the same path as the first. This time there was no doubt about it: red flags began exploding in our minds. The small sedan continued to angle directly towards us. I grabbed Chelsea, pushed her behind me, and moved her towards the only cover available by the first vehicles. I intended to position her low near the engine block while I dealt with the threats. The adrenaline began to slow down time; numbing my extremities and heightening my essential fight senses of smell, sight, and hearing.

Heart slamming into my chest, I studied my opponents carefully. There was a man in his early forties with dark hair, a button-up shirt, and no jacket driving the small sedan. In his passenger seat was a woman with long brunette hair obsessively trying to unjam a black pistol. I could see her attempting to drop the magazine and rack the slide. She was shaking, looking up at me and down at the pistol. Frantic and hectic, there was fear in her eyes and panic in her actions. She was yelling something to the man I couldn't make out, and he tried to angle the vehicle closer.

Waiting for them to engage us, I kept Chelsea moving, trying to keep the vehicles between us. Soon the driver ran out of space and had to turn away and drive past us. I readied myself for the raising of the pistol and the battle to begin but the moment passed. They both suddenly dropped their heads and drove off as she shoved the gun beneath the dash. They parked in the first row of spots twenty feet beyond where we were standing, forcing me to make a decision: continue on foot and head back towards the other side of the complex or make a break for the car and add my force multipliers to my options. I decided to go for our car and flush out whatever else is waiting for us in the ambush.

I lead Chelsea nearly at a run to our car, keeping myself between her and the other idling vehicle. The man never moved; he was a statue staring at the other vehicle and seemingly talking to himself. Jumping in, I began praying for The Father's intervention to help us get out of here. Suddenly, a switch in my head was thrown, and training, which had been encoded into my very DNA took over.

The voices of my instructors and trainers came roaring to the surface.

"Stack the shots in the center of mass to slow them. Headshots for closure. Observe, Orient, Decide, Act. Keep forcing your opponent outside his own OODA Loop. Decisiveness and precision are weapons; use them. Find the edge of their ambush net and press through until they stop shooting or you are dead."

The Soldier in my head was demanding a battle, but Jason was firmly in place keeping us calm, cool, and collected. I let them make the decisions; this was their familiar world of shadows, not mine.

I pulled away and began to leave the parking lot. The moment I did, a black lifted truck that I had seen two times earlier that day following Chelsea and me doing errands pulled out of a parking spot thirty yards from my own and sped up to get ahead of me. I could see two figures in the back of the truck lifting themselves beginning to turn in our direction. I immediately whipped our car around and peeled off to a secondary entrance. As I did this, the truck, which had been driving towards the exit, suddenly stopped but I put on the gas determined to break out of the kill box we had been funneled into. I roared past the two first cars where I saw the man screaming and the woman still attempting to fix her pistol.

We approached the four-way stop on the edge of the complex and Chelsea shouted out, “There’s a guy!” I slowed down briefly, and we both saw a lone man dressed in a dark windbreaker with a black pistol in his hand. Beginning to shove Chelsea low beneath the dash, I angled towards him. He continued to run away from us and through the intersection. He turned his head as he ran and I saw a look of terror in his eyes that screamed of fear from something I could not see. I waited for him to raise the pistol but he never did; he just kept running, an unfired gun in hand and fear in his eyes.

We tore through the intersection and retreated to a safe place, debriefing as we went. No one followed us, and we knew the immediate threat was over. We poured out thanks to The Father for intervening and asked forgiveness for our ignorance of His warning. Chelsea was shaken up by the adrenaline and the reality that people were intent on killing us. The worst part was, she did not know why. I did my best to calm her down, but there was no way I could explain to her at that moment what was going on.

The ravenous lion’s mouth had been shut for now, but soon I was to learn that that was just the beginning of my family’s end of innocence. The first silenced shots had been fired and whether or not Chelsea and I were ready, The Great War of The Ages had come to our door. My Family knew The Secrets in my head could bring down their corrupt kingdom. When their detestable domino fell, so too would many others. They knew the consequences of losing control of a Company “asset” would bring the end of their little reigns. My Family had been wise to try to kill me before I could prepare for their retaliation. Before I had spread their darkest and most dangerous Secrets into a thousand physical and digital hiding places that would be released as a plague of truth should they ever try again. In the age of instant information, a dead man’s secret switch could do more damage than a hundred bombs or a billion bullets. My former masters and handlers had left too many wounded-ones out in plain elements to perish and those secret switches were about to be thrown.

I was not ready for that battle, not yet. I was still a weak man who was being buried by burdens and had no helpmate to share them with. I knew if I was going to ever be able to face this and live, I needed to speak The Secrets and get help.

Chelsea still did not know about the memories. She didn't know we were screaming with a grief that was pummeling me on my drive to work and in the hours before I left the house. I needed to know she would not leave me. I needed to know she would love me even though I was so damaged, even though I was so defiled. She had seen some of the beautiful fruit come with my healing: the return of my passions, my joys, and my affection for her. I knew now it was time to help her understand just why I was a new man.

Chapter Nine

Will She Still Love Me Tomorrow?

The days had grown long; summer was drawing near and with it would come the end of our lives as we had known them. Chelsea and I were sitting together on the wicker furniture she'd picked from the trash, painstakingly restored, and painted a brilliant white. The neighborhood was quiet and Naomi was beginning to kick and buck in her belly as there were only a few short months until she would come. Nate's Beach was sitting with its sand, seashells, and chunks of cherished metal. I smiled finally beginning to understand who I was and where I had been. It was in that moment that Chelsea said three sentences which forever changed the course of our marriage, our daughter's future, and my own. The conversation drifted from the pains of her body and job to my own. She asked me questions that I was still too afraid to answer.

Instead, I chose to keep listening and waiting. Grabbing hold of my trembling hands, she looked into the depths of my soul. In the stillness of a moment I had waited my whole life for, my wife spoke.

"Nathan, I need you to know that I love you no matter what. I love each part of you. No matter what you've been through or what you've done, I love you."

Weeping we held each other as those bleeding broken parts of my soul felt the a safe harbor of love for the first time in their lives. I had sequestered my pain for twenty-seven years. I had buried burdens no one should have to see, touch or carry. I had stuffed my soul into prison cells and corridors of chaos. I could not bear to share with this wondrous woman the horrors of my past, and yet here she sat arms wrapped around mine, holding me, caring for me, and loving me. What was this newfound hope? Could this be it? Could this be real? Could I have found someone that will not leave me, even when The Chameleons masks come off and she sees the scars riddling my tortured body and soul? Would she still love me when I tell her about how many times I was sexually abused? Would she still love me when I tell her about covens rituals and the beasts, which infected me at such a young age? Would she run? Would she stay? A thousand questions pummeled my mind and yet her words rang louder, silencing them all.

We could see she meant it. We knew it. Each of us who doubted was beginning to believe that maybe there was such a thing as unconditional love. We no longer had to experience it through other people's stories, movies, or plays; now we had experienced it.

Three days later I told Chelsea, the woman who once tried to hide her eyes from my own, that behind my eyes there were more than just a me, but rather a we. I told her about the oaths, the cult of my Families, the dissociation of the other personalities, Nate, Nathan, Jason, Soldier, Boy and the many other parts of a fractured soul within. I shared with her I was not a whole man, but I so desperately wanted to be. I told her there was a mountain of misery, madness, and murder concealed in my past. Unable to bear the feelings of exposure, Chelsea and I retreated into our home.

In the corner of our living room, Chelsea held me and wept with me as my body trembled from head to toe. The fear of rejection was pounding through my heart, threatening to tear what little remained apart. Even as I trembled, Chelsea folded her arms over me as we let the rivers of sorrow finally flow. Chelsea and Naomi, my true family, held me close and said "I'm so sorry that happened to you. I love you still no matter what." She washed me in undefiled love as my heavenly Father had. She did not reject me or run. She held fast to me as the supernaturally crafted stone strongholds of my heart fell down flat. She did not run from the darkness; she did not hide from the horrors of my abusers.

My wife embodied The Scriptures that night. She had come to believe the Word that is written, perfect love casts out fear. Perfect love can stare at the face of Death himself and find an ocean of peace, hope, and kindness washing his deceptive threats away. My wife did not have the strength to do this, not of herself. She was a woman who had learned Whose she was. She knew her identity was secured to The Rock of Jesus The Messiah. She had built her house upon the unshakable foundations of the Word of Yahweh. When the fierce winds of these detestable things blew against it, it did not crumble but instead held fast. She knew she was a redeemed daughter of The Living God and because of that, she had faith to love her husband even when he told her things no spouse wants to hear or learn their spouse went through.

Chelsea had supernatural strength and compassion, but the next day the heaviness of what we told her began to crush her. She stumbled her way through work in a daze. Unable to handle the pressure alone, she called me. I stepped out of work and heard my wife overwhelmed by the things I'd shared with her. I heard her struggling with the fear, the anger, and the frustration. I reminded her of The One who can carry those burdens and told her she needed to surrender them to Messiah and let Him speak to her.

Under the boughs of our backyard tree, Chelsea swung in her chair and wept. She poured her heavy burdens out on Our Redeemer, and The God of Comfort strengthened my wife. He told her words that would become a fortress of hope in the days ahead. *"Chelsea, it is very critical how you react."*

Suddenly, an understanding flooded over her, and in her weakness, she found The Father's pure grace and strength to be mightier than her fears, doubts, and disbelief. She discovered His Holy Spirit filling her and renewing her. Naomi listened in as my wife's heart beat with supernatural courage, compassion, and love. Naomi heard the songs of peace flood over her mother and equipped her with the tools she needed to stand against the brutal spiritual and emotional attacks that were already being cunningly crafted against us. Battle lines were being drawn and it was time for us all to fight for the souls of the suffering, the slandered and those waiting to be redeemed.

Chapter Ten

A Time for Telling

He came for me in the stillness, in the dark of the night when dawn was still far off. He placed the pommel of the double-edged dagger in my palm and told me whom to take. The clandestine targets on a paper would later become numbers on My List; The List of nameless faces who would haunt my early morning dreams. Their blood splashed on my knuckles, fingers and tear-stained fists. I couldn't wash it away. I begged God to forgive me. I begged Him to wash the putrid stains away. I couldn't stop the sorrow, the pain, the guilt of strangers whose names I wasn't told. The men who I left in a heap on the floor after taking their ceremonial totem rings as proof of the deed to be returned to their former Masters.

The Order sends out its Pet Project to hunt a fellow Jesuit who no longer satisfies their Black Goats goals. The plunge of a syringe with prepared cocktails injected between their toes, and it was blamed on another case of cardiac arrest. What do you do when you make a woman a widow before you are twelve years old? Who do you report crimes to when the Chief of Police and the District Attorneys are partakers in your very own abuse? What child can outwit master manipulators and terrorizers of souls? You can't beat them, so you do what you've been made to do: you run away and keep The Secrets. You fade. You run into those secret places within where you hide from the madness.

I never had an option to say no; no one ever told me there was such a thing as free choice. I was a child who saw them brutalize children and swore they would do the same to my family members if I ever refused to obey or spoke The Secrets. My family, like so many in The Underworld, were masters of manipulation and control. Instead, you swore upon your soul that you would never let this happen to the innocents or the girl who smiles at you in between classes and passes notes to you in the back of the room.

They should have killed me that night outside the theater, or when they threw me into the pits to make their Pizza Parlor snuff films have “something more exciting in them.” I should have died when they sent me to kill men twice my age and three times my weight. And yet, they could not. They could not because I was not made for oath keeping rituals and the murder they used me for. I was not made for death, but I was made for life. I was made to give, not take.

My name is Nathan; it means gift or giver. I was made to be a blessing, not a curse; to offer my life to others that they might yet know there is still hope. To you sons of Belial you daughters of the queen of heaven know that there is a true light of hope burning brighter than their darkness can ever conceal.

I think of the early followers of The Way being ravaged by the Roman Emperors and Cesar’s who set the followers of The Way on fire to light their orgies and festivals. Or I think of the Roman Catholic Church burning alive hundreds of thousands of those who spoke The Truth by a peasants tongue. Those lips of commoners who were unsanctioned by the Popes their Anti-Messiah the one who sits enthroned in stead of The True Christ. I think of those followers of Messiah who refused to compromise on The Instructions of The Living God for the sake of a higher inheritance that was yet to come.

People like The Maccabees, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Enoch, John, and James. They would not relent in their dedication to His Truth even as their enemies tied them to stakes, poured oil upon them, and set them ablaze. They did not hide from persecution, from torture, or death. No, they ran headfirst into the heart of darkness and were willing to be a witness even as they burned brightly. They were anointed as the Levite priests were anointed and set apart to serve in The Tabernacle of Yahweh. The oil of suffering, agony, and certain death released them from these earthly shackles of shame and purchased them a greater weight of glory. Their eyes were fixed no longer on this flesh and blood world but upon the eternal holiness of hope fulfilled.

I assure you of this: the words of their testimony still echo in the hearts of us all. They made way for every one of us. For those of us born into the very Families that have always grown fat on the blood of the innocents, who have pampered themselves with luxury produced by their slaves. I have been a participant in those orgies, and I watched men, women and children burn. I smelled the smoke of their flesh. I partook of their blood from silver and gold chalices as my masters taught me to. Those same festivals are done to this day. The millions that go missing every year are fuel to their frenzies and lusts. But this world has been trained that the deaths of a dozen is a tragedy but the murder of millions is a mere statistic or “a woman’s rites.”

For years of my young life I watched the wicked grow in power by the perverseness of their pleasures. Bound by their cancerous controls I waited and then when the rage would build to a crescendo, they would point my anger, hatred, and need for justice at faces on My List. Once my fury peaked, they let their Pet Project assassin out to hunt. They would put the pommel of the dagger in my palm and tell me to unleash my wrath. The curse of death would land upon me and all the while they grew richer still. They would convince me that my targets were the very men who’d used me the night before. That they were the ones who trafficked the children who were burned every “high day.” Though “they” seem invincible, powerful beyond measure, and limitless in resource, The Families and The Guardians of Secrets have a great weakness.

Every enemy we face has a perpetual chink in their armor, and my Family did not count on one of the wolves of their pack turning against them. Who thought a wolf could forsake its shame, guilt, and hatred, and shed its wicked ways? Could a leopard change its spots? Could a deceiver speak the truth? Would a creature of Death instead choose to freely submit to The Good Shepherd and see that in Him is a greater power than this world has ever known? The Prince of Peace does not control through blackmail, fear, threats, and torture but through freedom, truth, justice, and love.

What The True Master offered me was something my earthly father never had: He offered me a free choice. He offered me an opportunity not plagued with subtle rhetoric and manipulation. He did not offer me the choice between two lesser evils or the guilt of choosing wrong. No, He gave me the freedom to choose which master I would serve.

I could continue the generational wickedness and raise Naomi up on The Path of Secrets. I could use her as an "asset" as my father, uncles and aunts had used me. I could go from our near poverty lifestyle to the new cars, private schools, multiple houses, custom decors, and specialty air plains just like my father had soon after he'd moved my abuser into the room next to my own. I could let the darkness consume me and follow the Left-Hand Path my ancestors had chosen time and time again. Or I could decide to leave The Family and trust my Heavenly Father would be my protector, provider and earn a greater weight of glory. I could choose to join the Followers of The Way burning in the darkness, lighting a path of hope to all who long to be free.

How could I possibly face down this mountain? How could I sever ties with The Family and survive when so many times I'd been the one who ended the lives of those who spoke The Secrets? How much more of their mind controlled arsenal would they send against us? How would they seek to silence us? So many thoughts and all I could do was lay these fears at my Savior's feet.

As I was facing the decision of silence or speaking, The Father led me to The Beginning, to Genesis, to the story of a man who grew up amidst the greatest time of occult power and dark workings since The Great Flood, where the incarnation of the mystery religions and esoteric knowledge was scattered as Nimrod, The Rebel King of the earth, took to his throne.

He was the first embodiment of the antichrist spirit, which set himself up against The Most High God. The Rebellious One the hunter of men's souls, boldly set about uniting the world's population, gods, religions, traditions and focus on warring against The Great Creator. The Angel of Yahweh thwarted their plans by confusing the languages and destroying his rebellious conduit and high place.

With this confusion came the dissemination of The Secrets and many mysteries encoded into the pagan religions who worshiped the statues and obelisks of their fallen Rebel King by many names, such as Orion, Apollo, Ra, Dionysus, Osiris, and dozens more. His mother and later queen wife Ishtar became the centerfold for goddess worship with many names like Semiramis, Columbia, Liberty, Isis, and Diana, also known as Mary The Queen of Heaven. Their incestuous progeny, Tammuz or the "sun of god" would be the basis for ignorant idolatry for generations to come. (Ezekiel 8) The world has bloomed with the worship of this Rebel King be it as the first Master Mason or The King of The Pit, he who was and is not but will be again. See Rob Skiba's superb research on this for more at (robschannel.com)

In the settings of this devilishly apocalyptic scene, Yahweh called a man out of his pagan father's house. He did not call a Jew, Israelite, Muslim or Greek but rather one who would be obedient not because of bloodline but because of belief. He called a man named Abram and told him that out of him would come forth a nation whose people would be set apart to Yahweh and through whom all the earth would be blessed. That day Yahweh introduced himself to Abram by a different name, El Shaddai. El Shaddai is who I also needed to know before setting out and leaving my Family's familiar ways behind.

Before I could stand against the defilers of the people, I needed to know if The God of Justice still lived and moved among His people. El Shaddai is a name that means father, mother, brother, as well as destroyer. In no uncertain terms, Yahweh told Abram He would be his protector, his family, and his provider. Abram obeyed Yahweh's Instructions and left his pagan roots in Babylon behind and set himself apart for his new Father's dangerous and unfamiliar Way.

It was as I learned more about The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob that I came to know, believe, and trust that He would be my all-sufficient exceeding abundance of provision and protection. In Him alone could I put my trust, in Him alone could I find my source of strength. In the end, it would come down to a single testing of reality. Yahweh would prove His Word to be true, or my new family would die. If I obeyed Him first and above all else, I knew He would build a hedge of protection around me that no power on this earth, above it or below it could destroy. If by His wisdom He allowed the Enemy to overcome this fleshly body through death, we knew we would be freed from sharing with Him in this monumental earthly blessings and suffering once and for all. Death was an inevitability and now was the time I became willing to die for something of eternal importance.

Chapter Eleven

The Battle Begins

The same day I told Chelsea about the abuse and the horrors, I also met with my father. Outside a Whole Foods grocery store, I sat with my dad telling him I needed to talk to him about some things. The last time I'd seen my mother, I'd told her about one of the molestations, and he said to me that she'd told him. I began to weep as I told him there was more than just that incident, so much more involving Family members and people outside The Family. Before I could say who my abusers were, my father named my grandfathers – both of them. He choked up and said he was sorry that it had happened but he "would make it right." He then made me promise him that under no circumstances would I talk to my sisters about this. "I'm the dad, and it's my job to take care of this." I kowtowed to his authority like I always had, as I still trusted him to do the right thing.

That night when I was sitting on the couch with Chelsea, I had told her of one the "sessions" with my grandpa. He was in the bathroom with me on our side of the house, and my sister walked in. He stopped her at the door, so she wasn't able to see down into the tub where I was, but she'd asked him what he was doing in our bathroom. He dismissed her back to bed, and she complied. That next night and every night for the remainder of our stay down there that trip, my sister stayed in my bedroom, and he didn't come for me again. I so badly wanted to thank her for what she'd done, and after telling Chelsea this; she disagreed with my dad and said I needed to tell her.

I drove to my sister's house, and on the way, I called my dad. I told him I was going to talk to her. He said to me that he was handling everything and now I needed to swear to him that I would not tell her who my abusers were. I was forbidden from telling her my primary abusers' names. Initially agreeing to his terms, I drove to see her.

Meeting with her was a surreal experience. I sat down on with her and told her what I'd needed to say. I began to talk on a very superficial level about the abuse and the freedom I had found in forgiving my abusers. I told her about the freedom from the addictions and the restoration of my marriage that had come since I started talking about these things and getting counseling. She began to press me and demanded I tell her who the perpetrators were. I told her that dad told me I couldn't, and then she guessed their names.

Once those names came out and the memory of the bathroom incident surfaced, my sister began to do the oddest thing. While I told her about what was going on, she curled into the fetal position and began to rock back and forth saying over and over again,

"I'm so sorry I don't remember, I'm so sorry I don't remember."

Over and over again, it was like my sister checked out and in her place was a deeply wounded child. When I wrapped up our conversation, she belted out that she needed to see a counselor. I promised her I would bring back a referral for her the next day. Hugging her, I headed home.

I didn't get ten minutes out the door before my dad called me. Fuming, he began demanding why I'd told her my grandpas' names. I told him my sister had guessed it, but I'd kept my word. He was furious in a way I'd never heard him be. My dad takes particular care to keep a lid on his emotions and to keep his mask firmly in place. He began threatening me and warning me that if I was not very, very careful, this would blow up in my face. He warned me again and again that I was absolutely forbidden from speaking these things to people, and especially to my sisters. He ended the phone call by saying again, "I'm *the dad*, and I will handle this."

My father's loving Christian mask was beginning to slip. The more Chelsea and I talked about his reactions, a creeping suspicion began to solidify that my Family was in no way wanting to bring their past to the light. They were not interested in restoration, reconciliation, or truth. No, their motives were firmly in line with The Kingdom of Darkness. Their interest was in keeping their kingdom no matter how many bodies or how much blood was spilled to erect its powerful pillars. The gloves would come off and soon a Family brawl would ensue, the details of which we'll later get to.

Once those battles with my father and Family members ended, it granted me time to heal. I dove headfirst into the restoration I'd been deprived of my entire life. In doing so, I finally began to face the depths of the darkness and hunt for hope amidst the abyss of my soul. Even in those inky waters, I found The Great Physician willing to bear with me and comfort me, giving me a new call and purpose.

Chapter Twelve

The Savior in Our Midst

I knew there was no way I could keep it a secret, not anymore. The memories were there all the time. I could not escape the shadowed sight of souls passing away, the spark of life leaving their eyes, the moment of death, the moment of madness and misery. Even as I tried to focus on telling her about these things, memories flooded through my mind desperate to keep me buried in fear.

My wife was cuddling up next to me, and our daughter was sleeping soundly just a few feet away. She talked about things I could not remember, something about going for a walk the next day. I thought I should be listening, but I couldn't. There is no one to listen when our blood boils and the faces return. All I could see were the plots, plans, and schemes, the ways of the Garrote, the wire that strangled a man in the front seat after my Blade dealt with his partner in the back.

I could not see anything but those eyes and felt the sorrow for something I didn't understand. Another pebble on this path of remembering, why did they have to watch me? Who sent them? Was it The Order or another Brother sworn to protect a Knight? What was the purpose of this problem that pestered my past? I asked The Father for forgiveness again. These strangers who spent their final moments looking at a monster in the mirror, would they ever look away and see something else? Would they ever see the wife whose fingers placed the gold band on his left hand?

I wanted to let her crush my skull the way I crushed her husband's throat. I wish she would pummel me with her fists and spit on my body. Would she weep bitterly for the man whose limp form sagged inches from my face? Did she beg God to know why? Did she have to identify his body on a cold steel table? Was she alone when she said, "That's him?" Did he have children who went to sleep with a father but awoke to misery?

My God, the questions crushed my soul. I couldn't hear what my wife was saying; I was trying so hard to remember that I was no longer wrestling with death in the heat of that swampy district. I was desperately trying not to count the seconds it took for him to stop fighting. My God, did you hear the sounds of strangulation? Why didn't you stop me?! My God, where are you?! Where is your hope?

How I wished I could tell her I didn't know what I was doing, I was just another man's killing machine. A Soldier who followed orders and accomplished the sanctioned mission; The Company's Craft at its finest. It's all I ever knew. No one ever told me how to say no.

What do you tell your wife when she looks over at you and asks you, "Honey, are you ok?" Do you tell her that you were still staring at a man's eyes when he was bursting from the pressure of the cord you buried in his neck? Do you tell her you couldn't breathe when you saw the rearview mirror when you loaded your daughter into her car seat last week? Or do you stuff it all back into the boxes it was kept?

No one gave me this information. It was not mission critical but learning how many seconds it takes a femoral artery to bleed a body out when someone is fighting for their life was. Our Instructors had us watch dozens of videos of it over and over again. Different sized people, men, women, children, different levels of fear, terror, and frenzy – we watched them all.

We were trained how to keep quiet even as they begged and screamed. They taught us how to turn off our hearing. The last vestiges of our conscience were seared by the irons of madness. No matter how many times we trained not to hear them, their voices would come crawling back in the dark. In the stillness, they were there. We had to keep them quiet for so long, but The Father has told us that we don't have to anymore. We no longer have to keep The Secrets of murder, misery, and madness.

That week in September we finally broke down and screamed in the car. We had written about seven more bodies that fell by our Company-controlled hands. We drove away from the little café we'd been writing in and screamed until our throat grew hoarse. Our words were an incense of agony ripe with the brutal honesty I stopped hiding from my Healer.

"My God, do you hear us screaming? Did you hear the sound of that girl whose severed hands are on the floor next to the Brute's feet? My God, what happened to the other boy, the one who was once right by our side. That Chosen One they are turning into another chameleon of death? Please set him free from the tortured tunnels of turmoil he was locked in. Save him, Messiah, I beg you. There are so many of us out there and who will tell us we are forgiven? Who forgives children whose manipulated hands are stained with blood? Who will tell us no one has forgotten those screams, those pleas, and plots of land where they buried and burned the bodies? My Father, I beg you don't let it be wasted, not a single utterance of agony that flowed from the bleeding lips of the many children, teens, and adults.

I can't unsee the eyes of this man; Father did you see them? Why did I have to get out of the car and not them? Will you forgive me? Please, I didn't know what I was doing, I still don't. No one gave me answers: neither my commanders nor their superiors. No one told me why. Why them? Why this person and not that? Why did they need three vials of blood from his neck? Why did we have to shove the engraved copper ring on the fingers of the quiet man's body? Wet Workers don't get answers just diamond-dusted wires, blades, bullets or syringes of potassium and craftily engineered biological agents. Why can't I say I'm sorry to his widow? Will they kill me for what I've done?"

Out of the bellows of our broken heart came forth a cry of such raw intensity that it scattered the wounds.

"*The wind and the waves are all I can see; Abba my Father, please save me!*"

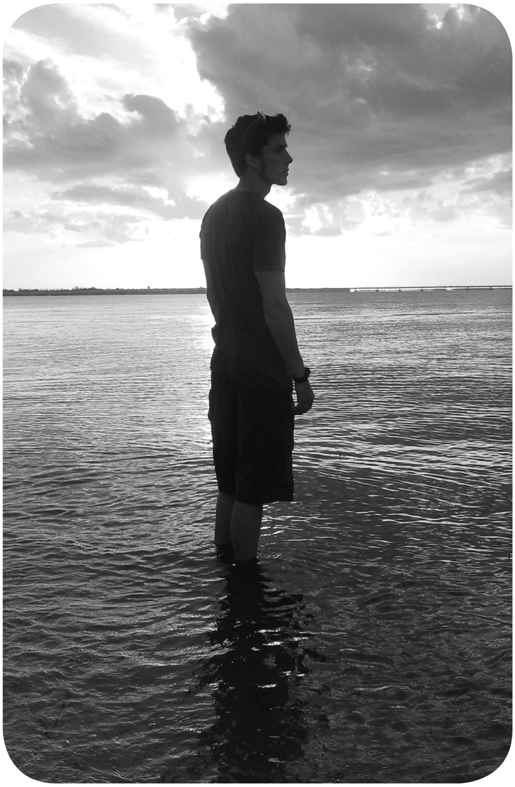

What do you tell your wife when she sees you staring off for the tenth time that day? Do you tell her the screams of a little girl are ringing in your ears, and you want to vomit? God, you heard those screams and the dying mans bulging eyes. I know this is true; I just want You not to forget them. Please don't waste them, not a drop of blood or utterance of agony. I surrender them to you; I can't carry them anymore; they are crushing my heart. Take it all; it's not mine to hold anymore. I lay it at your feet. I need you to pick me up because I don't feel like rising for a long time. I wish I could crawl into the dirt and hide the hurt and horror of my heart. I want to find peace when this storm rages. I pray you will build me a home of hope so I can hunker down for a while.

Back on the bed I suddenly realized I'd been lost in my head. My wife asked me for the fifth time "Honey, are you ok?" She knows me too well to hide the horror dripping from my heart. I stammered through the strangulation cord, the blade on his shoulders and the million questions pummeling my peace and stealing my sleep. She listened, her compassion unending. She bore with me in a moment of horror. The realization had become a hammer driving the nails of understanding deeper and deeper into her once innocent soul.

She wanted to run from it, to blink it all away, to try to rationalize the impossible madness of the man she'd known for years being a controlled wolf who hunted strangers in the night. She thought of the longhaired man running shirtless through the waters in the ocean with glee.

She thought of Nate and struggled to see *me*.

My hands shook; the fear of rejection boiled my heart's waters to mist. The thoughts of running came pounding through my head: "We can grab our bag and fade back into nothingness. We would be a ghost in the shadows and they'd never see us again."

As if reading my thoughts, she grabbed my trembling hands and held them close. She knew our names of Jason, Nathan and all the rest. She reached over and touched the blade strapped to my chest. It had been there for years, and now she knew why. We wanted to know she wouldn't be afraid of us knowing what we had done. We wanted to know she would love us even though we had killed, even though we had been made to be monsters before we knew there was any other way.

In a moment of exposure, she covered us with the same love, understanding, and kindness The Father showed us time and time again. She became The Healer's physical hands of love as she held onto me and refused to run away. She sobbed with us telling us she loved us and would never be afraid of us no matter what we had been through. She loves us all no matter what we did. Our woman of rescue chose not to flee. She did not run but instead Chelsea chooses to abide. Those fears of rejection are blown away as we settle into a sense of peace we've hardly ever known.

The next day we went for another walk. She knew it would help to give me the open space I needed to see there will be more to this world than the brutality of my past. My daughter was peering out at me from the folds of cloth, which kept her warm against the Rocky Mountain winter. Naomi Grace smiled at me even as my hands shook and trembled. She did not know her dad was talking about murder and misery. She stared into my soul and silently said, "It's ok daddy. No matter what, I love you." My wife was quiet as we walked; she was chewing on my words. I know they tasted like death. Would I ever stop seeing more of the men whose blood spilled onto my palms? Would I ever wake up after sleeping without the faces on My List staring back at me?

I asked her if she was mad I had told her. "Of course not, honey, I am never mad that you tell me. I love you so much, and it breaks my heart to hear you hurt. I am so proud of you for finally talking about it. You are a brave man, and I believe in you." Her words were a mercy I hardly deserved. We walked on stirring up rocks, gravel, and dirt, and though I tried to stay in the moment, I felt it slipping.

There was little left to say because I didn't want to make her vomit with the details I can barely write about. What would I do when she reads these words? Would I hide in the corner of our house and wait till she has finished? Would I run outside and smash the stick into the old tire until my fingers ache? I don't want to carry this shame anymore. I want to walk around dog parks without thinking about men's eyes and armless little girls. I know I have to heal, but I feel like my flesh is being boiled. My body aches and trembles, and I can feel the wire biting the flesh between my knuckles like it happened yesterday.

My cat found me downstairs weeping when I wrote those words. He knew just to comfort me and let me wail. I thanked God for this house of healing, hope, and peace. I could never have dreamed of a place so free where orders are never given but patience, and forgiveness are extended instead. I know this is real life, not death, and for that I am thankful. But the memories of days spent in Underworlds of Special Access Projects come rushing back.

I can't stop seeing The Colonel's face or hearing the orders he gave me. I see the burning of the paperless trails at Signposts marked empty, and caches marked full. I grew tired of their constant lies; their lists of targets taken who only advanced their cause. The endless cycle of deception, manipulation, and control was built by my need for revenge, justice, and their manipulative balancing of Lady Liberty's insatiable scales.

I was a ravenous wounded wolf who needed to protect the innocent from the monsters who masquerade as men. I wanted to see the man whose hands were filled with blood and sharpened steel brought to justice. I wanted to see the little girl rescued from the Brutes' blade and gender bending Rosicrucian monstrosities. These were the levers they used on me time and time again. I tried to stop them from hurting more people; I wanted to cut the throats of the perverts who had hurt the children. I tried so hard to bring it to an end but I could not stop them all or save her, not then or today.

There is only so much vengeance a man can get done. There is only so many monsters you can kill in a day before you have to sleep, eat, and plan your next hunt. All the while you forsake the land of the living for the hopes of avenging or resurrecting the dead.

Unzipping and eradicating a six-tiered Atlantic pedophile ring might satisfy the rage for a moment but soon it will return, hungry to be fed. Spilling the blood of the evil does not right the wrongs or hammer out the horrors in this world. A thousand new nails pop up every day to take the place of the dead ones. A pack of wolves can't be the answer to this madness, only He can.

Now I know the only Judge who will deal with all these things accordingly. I surrender to Him all the many pieces of my broken heart and trust He will see them redeemed. Thousands of years ago and just last night He took my burdens and placed them on His mutilated back. I see Him carry the cries of the innocents with Him too. He set them on Golgotha, that Hill of Goliaths Skull, and washed them with His perfect blood. He was The Red Heifer sacrifice; the death of His perfect body cleanses our dirty souls. His love rescued mine and His Word tells me how to breathe again when the sorrow strangles me from suffering the scorn. He reminds me how to love still the mockers and scoffers who doubt my words and joke about my healing for their comic relief. He taught me how to love my enemies and pray for those who persecute me. Still daily I ask Him to help me forgive the Brutes and commanders who made me do these things.

I was angry that day when we walked around the lake and I wanted to shove my fist through the perpetrator's skulls. But I chose instead to set that anger at His feet and tell Him I trust Him with it too. He carries it all and will bear forth vengeance and He alone sets me free. One day at a time I choose life and not death, I choose to believe The God of Comfort will show me His Name is True. I choose to believe He is hope and He is my Father who will restore me in full. I choose to believe that what we surrender to Him can be used for great good, even the saving of many lives.

We had exposed our darkest stains of red to our wife's white gown of innocence. She had not cursed us, resented us, or feared our hands scarred by death. She embodied the same forgiveness Messiah extends to us. She let my stains be washed away as she reminded me of who I really was: no longer a murderer, no longer a slave. She reminded me of the new man I am, a son of a different Father. No longer was I a child being manipulated and controlled, and no longer a teen full of fury and rage. Now I was a son of The King of Glory, a redeemed child of The King. I was a husband, a father, a man on a path to set captives free.

My identity did not abide in the sickeningly stained robes I'd been made to wear; it was not held in my Handlers' Black Book. My identity was knit together with the Resurrected King and the scars, which pierced His heart. This is what she reminded me of and helps me to grab onto when the winds of remembering rage. Chelsea covered by The Father promised to be my safe harbor when the storms of pain blow again. Because of my wife's devotion and love I know I have the rarest of freedoms to tell her about the faces, killings, and dreams.

She did not run from me. She did not hide. She looked into my eyes with tears turning hers bright green. I see the face of an angel in those eyes. I see the messenger of love sent to me for such a time as this. She helps me remember The Scriptures, about my identity as a son of God no longer a slave to these dark masters. She helps me remember I still have free choice and The Father preserved me for a great purpose. She helps me remember; remember things others systemically made me forget. She gives me the feeling of safe, unadulterated touches on my skin and the warmth of a wanted embrace. She gives me the joy a freely offered gift brings, the ways of a husband with his wife as they become unhindered by the stains of regret, wounds, and abuse.

I was not born for these deaths. I was not made for this madness; it was made for me. It was carved out of the necrotic altar stones of The Wicked One's throne. It was conceived by corrupt cowards who saw a way to keep themselves out of harm's reach while making sure the deadly work still got done. They had to teach me how to hate. They had to show me how to boil with rage and fill me with fury. I was not born with murder on my mind; instead, they made it reasonable and they made it our way. The touch of the perverse became commonplace and acceptable.

It should never have been that way. Children should not be looked at as commodities for profit, status, and gain. Yahweh says children are a powerful arrow and they are a gift; they are entrusted to us so we can raise them, shepherd them, and lead them to become who they were made to be, not what we can profit off of the most. (Psalm 127)

I would spend so much time as a child looking in the mirror. Seeing the new scars, the new stitches, the bruises, and the bloody noses. Other times I would see Dr. Cherry and the false face he gave me. I would see a new mirror after we moved again, sometimes in school hallways, and in teachers' offices. I would see these many places scattered across the country. I would see glimpses of a young boy who would turn into a teen and later a man. The pink scars on my body faded into white before new ones rose up and took their place.

I would look into bloodshot eyes once royal blue and see them turn to crystal one day and be opaque as the snow burying the bodies they left in the forests for the birds of death. I would watch them fill with violence, with hurt and betrayal. I would see the mountain of misery grow taller and taller still. I would see the burdens of a hundred lifetimes of grief reach toward the clouds. I could not escape the hurt in my heart or the hate in my eyes. I wondered if ever there would come relief, if there could really be hope for the likes of me.

To all of you who have ever stared in the mirror and hated the face, the body, the memories, or the apathetic indifference toward the one staring back: please, know the answer to the questions you ask when no one is listening, the questions you think people will call you crazy for asking, the answer to those questions is waiting for you. The answers to the self-loathing, the bitterness, the anger, and hate are not found on a psychiatrist's couch or in an anti-depressant and medical diagnosis. It is not waiting for you in a self-help book with motivating titles and inspiring imagery.

The answers to the questions you seek are not found in this flesh but in the Spirit of Truth for we serve The Source of Truth. The Prince of Peace has promised He would give wisdom and understanding to any who would ask for it in His Name. The answer to why you are the way you are is waiting in His Word, in His truth made real to your eyes. Your identity does not need to stay trapped in the body you keep despising, your drug of choice, the number of times you've promised to quit and couldn't, or the Royal Chosen Blood in your veins.

You are not who you were truly made to be, not yet. Each of us – no matter our moment or method of conception – was created with a purpose and for a great reason. We were created to bring meaning to the meaningless, to bring joy to the despairing, and to rise up from our mediocre living and become bold and courageous participants in the redemptive story of Yahweh.

We were not made to be miserable, to have fractured marriages and children who are out of control or depressed. We were not made to be comfortable and complacent but to rush forward into The Enemy's territory and contend for the souls of mankind. Even if we are living in a wheelchair or hospital bed or on oxygen in an assisted care facility, every one of us was made for war, for the saving of sons and daughters from the fires of failure and cyber bullies. We were made to reach into the depths of despair and offer our scar covered or freshly manicured hands to all those who need to know there is still hope.

We were not made to put our light under our cloaks of shame and guilt. We were made to be the lights brilliantly burning in the darkness, pointing to The Way home. We were made to line the Roman roads pierced through on crucifixion stakes, hands raised to the heavens testifying of our great love for The Redeemer. We were made to be a living witness of hope. We were made to confess our sins to the world, our failures, our screw-ups, and our darkest regrets. We were made to be the ones who suffer the scorn of this world for the sake of setting even just one captive free.

Do not hide your hurt any longer. Don't keep your crucifixion a secret because so many of us have been screaming out in quiet desperation our entire lives; we are already burning in agony. We think if we hide our hurt swept under the rugs of shame we can deal with it some other day, but no one gets healed by keeping sickness in the dark. No one can get rescued from their misery without first exposing their wounds to The Light. You must surrender your heart to The Healer and step out onto the roaring waters. Fix your eyes on Messiah, the calmer of waves and the bringer of peace. He is not waiting in the boat of Comfortable Christianity or in the emergent church with their New Apostolic Reformations. The only True Word is not hidden in The Mysteries of The Cosmos, The Kabbalah repackaged as Quantum Gnosticism, or in the worshipping of other lesser Astral gods. The revelations of who Messiah really is are not hidden within the minds of pagans or puritans. Yahweh is looking for those who answer His call to come out of the comforts our civilization and cowardice provide.

He rescues those who forsake the false safety that boat provides. Hear me, Jesus is waiting on the waters of chaos and fear and will take hold of all who step out in faith and belief. He is waiting in the wind and the waves of pain you've hidden and drowned for the last four decades. He is waiting for you to show who your true master is, so give your fears to Him and put your faith in Him. He alone can heal the cancers of cowardice; He alone can heal the self-hate, the feeling you get when you see your body in the mirror or in pictures posted online. He alone can show you the truth about who you are, the beauty even in your scars. Do not hide your hurt any longer for it will be the death of you. Your hurt can instead become hands, which reach into the pits of pain and pull a suffering slave from the groping fingers of perpetrators.

Do not fear the terror of the night, nor the fiery arrow that flies by day for surely His Word is true. He will shelter you under His just and loving wings. He will enlarge the ground beneath your feet so that you will not stumble. He will prepare a place for you in the presence of your enemies, and you will walk by streams of Living Water. I promise it's true. I have seen it be so.

Trust in Him while there is still time, for He will never let you down. His faithfulness and truth is a shield and buckler I now wear as my own. It extinguishes every fiery missile of The Enemies. Now I am trained to battle with spiritual weapons and wage earthly wars. Where no eye can see, The True Lord's armies fight for you and they fight for me. Praise Him always no matter the cost, be it your head in a vice or a monsters prod. He will redeem it all and use it for good. What they meant for evil Yahweh will redeem for good and the saving of many lives. So chose you then this day who you will serve, whether the gods of your fathers, the worthless traditions of men or the one who rescues orphans and makes them pilgrims of peace, princes of His holy power who walk by faith and not by sight. (*Genesis through Revelation*)

For decades of my life I was the Guardian of The Left Hand path where my Family chose to make its abode. Now it is time for world to hear The Secrets so many lives were lost to protect.

PART 3

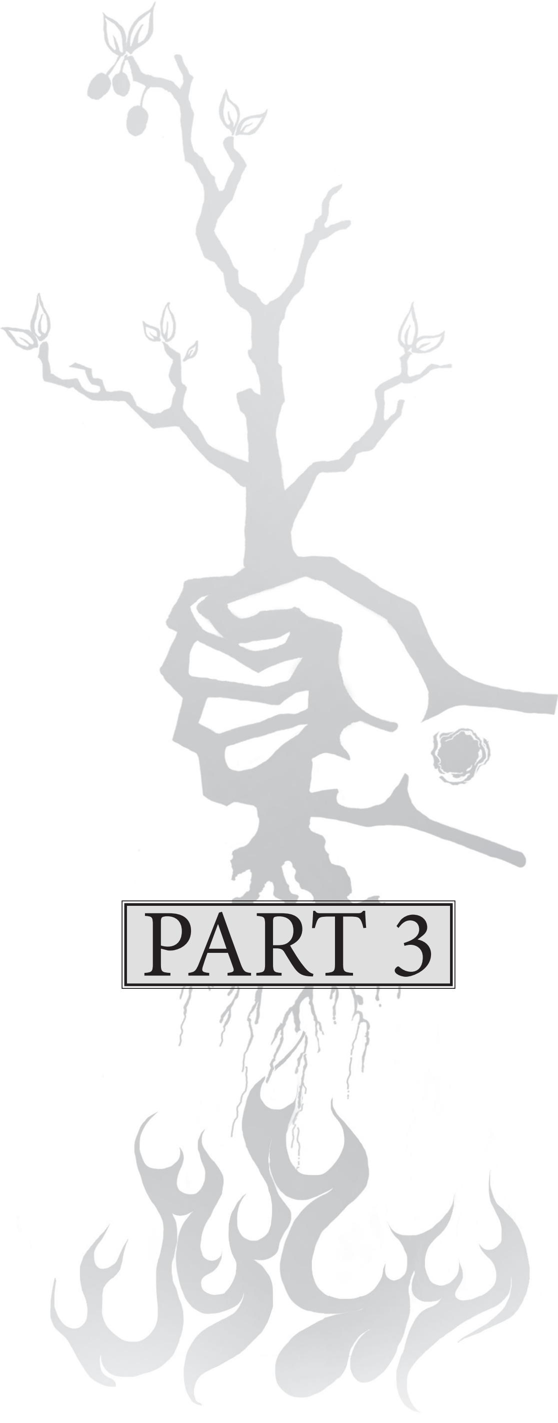

Chapter Thirteen

Family Secrets Revealed

The Underground's Ruling Families like the one I was born into have spent a tremendous amount of time and resources perfecting ways to ensure their secrets are kept. The Secrets as they refer to them are not ever to be shared with those who are born outside of the Chosen Lines. In these secretive upper echelons of society, the preeminent focus and determining factor in one's life is not necessarily from the choices you make but rather who your ancestors are that gave you life. Genealogies and Marital Bloodlines are the most sacred and revered doctrines. One who is born outside of these specific and chosen bloodlines is perceived as something of a sub-species or a 'lesser' being if you will. Often these people are referred to as Goyim, Uninitiated, Outsiders, Useless Eaters or Cattle. The Hebrew word Goyim contains at its root the idea of "the nations" or "those outside." The world is slowly being indoctrinated into this ideology through the revised worship of Muggles, half-breeds, or pure bloods.

This doctrine is heavily reinforced, as the Bloodline Families believe they have The Divine Right to Rule as given to them by their ancestors who were the gods of old. The Nephilim, those offspring prodigies of the fallen angels of

Genesis 6:4 who came down in the days of Jared and left their heavenly estate so that they could procreate with the daughters of men (2 Peter, Jude), these fallen Watcher Angels taught humankind forbidden secret knowledge such as sorcery and enchantment, root cutting to produce hallucinatory substances that allowed the user to travel into their realms. Other fallen watchers taught mankind the making of weapons, astrology, make-up beauty masks, sacred geometry, and the communing with spirits through mediums, divination, and meditation as outlined in the biblically endorsed books of Enoch 1, Jasher, and Jubilees. This hidden wisdom or Gnosis was scattered at Nimrod's tower and birthed the mystery religions. The pineal crown of The Rulers over so many of these beliefs is the doctrines of Gnosticism, which is the many-headed hydra of deception.

This mingling of outside entities injected a literal seed of The Dragon into the bloodlines of humankind as prophesized to Adam in the Garden of Eden. (Gen 3:15) This injection of outside genetics led to the corruption of all flesh and to complete and total wickedness before The Father brought The Great Flood to start again. (Gen. 6:1-22, 10:1-10) These Nephilim and their later offspring of The Rephaim, The Anakim and others, carried in their blood a marker of 'the gods or in Hebrew *the Elohim*' These beings became the gods of mythology like Poseidon, Athena, Hercules, and Thor who once more have gained cult followings. The practice of deifying people into godhood carried on with the pharaohs, kings, and emperor's even presidents, popes and priests whose bloodline could be traced to these Fallen Ones or their progeny.

For thousands of years, these ruling Bloodline Families have carried on the practice of interbreeding, genetic modification, and intermarrying to ensure their "divine purity." At its most debased and realistic level this has lead to the keeping of oaths sworn through incest, murder, and hate.

In recent days the phrase, "*The Illuminati*," has flooded our culture. This, in fact, refers not just to Adam Weishaupt's 18th century secretive order but the more profound truth abides in The Illumined Bloodlines. By nature, Bloodline Families are not something people can join apart from being born with the blood in their veins. This does not mean Families will not allow goyim to serve within their ranks or even on rare occasions be allowed to intermarry through Sion or the grafting in of an outsider. However, the bringing in of powerful or influential outsiders is done only after an extensive selection and interview process. It then requires contractual agreements more abhorrent then you can imagine.

The Families believe the purer their blue-blood is, the greater their ability to move with power, the force of will and control. For those interested in a more excellent in-depth analysis of this and the end times implications, I highly suggest all people read through the superb series by Dr. Michael Lake starting with ***The Shinar Directive*** and ***The Sheeriyth Imperative (www.kingdomintelligencebriefing.com)*** As well as Gary Wayne's book ***The Genesis 6 Conspiracy (www.genesis6conspiracy.com.).*** Another excellent resource for research is the published works of Johnny Cirucci's in ***The Illuminati Unmasked, Secret History, and Eaters of Children The Pedocracy Exposed. (www.johnnycirucci.com).*** I also can't recommend enough the work of Dr. Stephen Pidgeon both on his blog, videos ***at www.cepher.net.***

These dynastic Families have perfected the art of hiding in plain site, such as those of the Rex Deus or The Dragon Bloodlines of Europe like the Scythians or the Lees of China. In doing this they have passed on not only what they believe to be The Divine Seed but also The Secrets and hidden wisdom only to the initiates they believe are worthy to receive it. My Family and the ancestors of my bloodlines selected specific individuals within their own Families to carry The Secrets or to be Guardians who ensure The Secrets are protected at all cost. They are the ones who "Keep Houses" and ensure The Dynasty and Estate is well maintained. This was my main function for the Brotherhoods of Illuminists like the Masons and Mormons. Furthermore The Jesuits and Serpent Cults chose to contract out many of my 'services' leading to the black projects groups within the military.

As a child, I was made to partake as a spiritual conduit in the darkest of rituals where these divine Familial exchanges, contracts, and communications were conceived and conspired. While I grew, the use of my blade outpaced my childish bodies usefulness during rituals, and thus I was transferred into The Underworld of killing, torture, and control. I was made to "Keep The Secrets" for nearly three decades of my life. I was born into the darkness of secrecy, threats, and blackmail. I was raised in a world where Black Dragons give orders and Assets dance like marionettes. The place where corporations controlling The Colony's of The British Empire mingle with professional compromisers like the Special Executive Services Programs to build and control military's and nations across the earth.

There was a time I was seduced by its glamor, by its illustrious appeals but once you have been served up as 'dessert' for the pedophilic desires of State visiting dignitaries you can't stand to lust for their power or status. I have come to hate evil and, instead, I choose to come to the light and let all mankind see my deeds. The hard truth is that most fear the Enemy but I cannot and will not live another day in silence, and it is time to expose their works of darkness. (John 3:19-21)

It is time all people can learn the truth of how these kingdoms operate and how these families can control so many individuals. They have three primary methods with which they enforce and enact their will on this earth.

Chapter Fourteen

The Three Methods of Control

The First Method is Fear

Fear is the primary tool used to manipulate and control individuals both within the Bloodline Families and those who abide outside the chosen genealogies. I do not have to give you a crash course on fear as I am sure some of you were terrified just to read this book or hear someone even talk about Luciferianism or ritual abuse. Every individual who has ever sought out the truth has inevitably run into the most potent tools of The Families. As you drive closer to understanding the reality of our fallen world, you too will experience this fear. This world is designed to control your emotions, be they lust, greed, envy, or hatred but the one it seeks to invoke most readily is our fears.

There are so many fears that control us and fuel The Kingdom of The Rulers of Darkness; fears of being rejected, fears of death, fears of people's opinion or running out of money, contracting Alzheimer's or cancer before we die. Remember though: perfect love casts out fear. It was the perfect love of The Great Redeemer that drove Him to overcome the temptations in the desert with the Word of God and the impossible anguish He experienced in the Garden of Gethsemane. The Kingdom of Heaven is powered by the limitless source code of life itself, The Holiness of Yahweh. His perfect set apart nature is the essence of His Kingdom's power, and that is where Messiah drew His strength and so too must we.

The Second Method is Guilt

There is no easy way to say it. The Adversary often called The Satan earns his title through the relentless beguiling of the hearts and minds of humanity that they are guilty and for no matter what it may be, lying, cheating, stealing, or murder. Sometimes the accusations are true, other times they are not. He is not afraid of quoting the Word of God nor are his servants averse to using it as well. Instead, they like their father are experts with the serpents forked tongue of godly truth interlaced with subtle lies. He has taught his servants the mastery of this tactic. It is used as a point of leverage so that a lesser opponent can control the one who is stronger. It is a lever placed on our hearts to steer us in the direction of the accuser's choosing.

Within The Families, Brotherhoods, and elite circles, there is a tremendous amount of effort placed in compromising individuals whether it is through sex, bribes, drugs, pedophilia, or blackmail. If ever someone who'd been compromised steps outside of their chosen position, this lever is placed, and pressure is applied. All too often this is where the internal wars are waged. These are the battles where people decide to stay in The Underworld rather than expose their deeds to the light of redemption.

One East Coast bishop used to teach us,

"People are straightforward to control. Everybody has a price; if they've not agreed to your terms, you must offer them more. If finding their price doesn't work, find their vice. Find the little chink in their armor and learn to control it. Then it's as a simple as a bridle in a horse's mouth: with just the smallest pressure they will move where you tell them."

The Third Method is Shame

Shame is the power to bind. The constriction around our gifts, talents and calling for our lives is always shame. Self-condemnation for the things we've done, failed to do, or failed to prevent from happening. Shame rules in the darkness of our hearts and ensures we do not step out and speak the truth, confess our deeds to one another, and find the healing He had for us. It prevents us from walking in the freedom, authority or anointing of The Messiah. The cure to shame comes when we surrender, stretch out our hands, and grab hold of The Great Physician.

The woman The Adversary had bound for 18 years with a bleeding disorder was not loosed by spending all her money on The Oath swearing doctors and physicians of her world, or by hiding in the shadows of shame. She was loosed from her bondage the day she boldly stepped into the light of day and grabbed onto the Tzitzis of Jesus, the tassels where His Healing was waiting. Those tassels were outward signs of the covenant Yahweh had with His people promising blessings if they obeyed His Instructions. (Num. 15:37-39) The power filled grace of the Redeemer for His obedience flowed into the shame-bound woman and loosed her from that devilish binding and gave her healing instead. (Mark 5:25-34) The Enemy was defeated when she stepped out of her secrets and reached out in faith. It is time I do the same.

What I am going to share with you now are some of The Secrets my Family has guarded for generations. It is sacred knowledge they protect with magically charged curses, rings lords of power, and sharpened assassins steel. It is the bloody cornerstones upon which their empires are built.

Just as in the days of Pre-Flood Cyclopean Masonry modern Families must start their empire by building their walls with the backs, bones and blood of their children. Those who walk in this needlessly glamorized and spiritually sexualized Underworld give their children up to be turned into slaves. The creation of those slaves is sophisticated, sadistic, and systemic.

Long gone are the days of experimentation and guesswork. No, these families like so many of the Nazi scientists brought over after WWII in Operation Paperclip like Mengele, Rudolph, and Schreiber have taken their dark sciences to the bodies and souls of the young and innocent. The Families are not seeking traditional slaves with chains and shackles. Instead, they create slaves who love their servitude and are loyal to the point of death to their "masters." Those who are born into this world are quickly and decisively passed through the black fires of madness until they submit to their new masters.

But this begs the question. How do you create willing slaves? The method to their madness is not pretty. After The Family selects a child often long before their birth, they are intentionally abused, traumatized, and defiled until they dissociate or fracture their soul. No normal person can survive the types of abuse and trauma, which are inflicted. They cannot fight back or overpower their abusers physically, so the fight reflex is left incapacitated, and the flight reflex takes over. The need to escape the torment becomes insatiable. It consumes the mind until a solution is offered: run away internally, run inside the mind and allow anything else to endure.

I often refer to the individual programmers who are doing the splitting as "Brutes." They will watch the child, waiting to see them give in to the Fade, to the pressure of separating themselves within through dissociation. The sign of this can be the eyes rolling back out of consciousness, heads turning purple as the pressure of blood rushes to the brain or blank, absent stares, and glazed-over dilated pupils. My R.A.W. programmers earned their name in the way they had of describing their trade:

"Its like splitting a big log – the first time it splits, it takes the most amount of brute force, then as the pieces get smaller, it takes less and less to cause the breaks and fractures."

By patterning the physical and psychological aspects of the brain to split and section off areas of the trauma they can create new "blank slates" of personalities. These are pieces of a person's mind, which can be small or large, named most often by the specific function they perform, such as Driver, Runner, Cat, or Guardian. They can be entirely new personalities or ones who used to hold particular secrets or different genders or spiritual beliefs, which are then buried away.

These sub-personalities can be immediately bonded to the abuser or a handler of their choosing. You often see this similar training in high-level combat and guard dogs, whose submission to the pack leader can be moved to new handlers based on certain programmed and reinforced commands. They are not limited to audio controls; they can be sequenced colors of everyday items, squeezes of specific pressure points on the body, hand gestures or objects like symbolic laced rings or necklaces.

After the blank slate personalities have been prepared, the victim can be made ready for the next step. Once a person has been made to dissociate and split their soul when under distress, that pattern or survival mechanism will continue throughout their life. This is why there is so much emphasis on abusing children at an early age.

The Family would explain it by telling a story.

"It's just like breaking an elephant. You cannot break a bull elephant who has lived his whole life in the wild. He knows the power he possesses, he knows the way to destroy his enemies or break out of bonds. Instead, you start when they are young and weak. Simply attach one of their legs to a secured stake in the ground and watch them wail and pull and strain to be free. Soon enough the young elephant will realize he can never escape his shackles. Once their will is broken, it will never try to be free again. You can tie a threaded string around a fully-grown bull elephant and stake it with a plastic peg to the ground, and it will never leave the place you put it. It's the same with the children: break them young, and you can own their bodies, and souls; their mind, wills, and emotions become yours for life."

Learned Helplessness is a powerful tool in controlling victims even long after their perpetrators or handlers are dead or powerless.

My grandpa Brute liked to use near drowning, electricity, or asphyxiation to cause me to dissociate. Upon coming back to consciousness, I believed he had saved my life, and so I loved him all the more and would do whatever he asked. It is genuine and literal mind control. It doesn't always have to look like electrodes in the brain and flashing lights. Once they've got their blank slate, they can 'handle' the person to do their will quite easily. Imagine how easy it is for an above average IQ adult to manipulate an extremely traumatized four-year-old who'd just endured physical abuse or witnessed the emotional destruction of their cousin. These new personalities are commonly in a similar state of vulnerability upon their creation and later healings.

These personalities are stored in their own compartmentalized spaces within the mind. Neurologists call the physical areas of the brain where these new personalities reside, Trauma Neural Networks. This is most publically noticeable in individuals who suffer an extreme trauma such as soldiers in combat or survivors of domestic and sexual abuse. These Trauma Pockets are places where the neurons, which were most activated during the traumatic event essentially, lock up and section themselves off from the remainder of the mind so that the rest of the brain can continue to function.

The internal representation of this can look and sound somewhat startling to those who've never had to dissociate to survive. Depending on the level of trauma and dissociation, individuals can and often do create entire inner worlds in which their personalities, parts, or fragments of memories live. On the inside of the mind, it usually will look like rooms, prison cells, houses, or even castles. Brutes and programmers use guided hypnotic imagery to craft these inner worlds. An example would be, "Picture the thousands of neural pathways of your brain and imagine how each one could be a hotel space in a city. Now send the new personality to room number 42," etc.... The territory of the mind is not capped by the space in our body; it is left only to the imagination or the specific programmer of the individual to guide and create.

The intentional creation of multiple personalities, programming, and mind control is not science fiction as the reports of truth-seeking conspiracy theorists proved correct. Even a cursory study of the subject will reveal millions of peer-reviewed articles, books, documentaries, and an understanding that The United States government alone has spent hundreds of billions in the past and now many trillions in search of, implementation and refinement of the "super spy." A spy that even under the worst kinds of torture or manipulation will not reveal their secrets because the personality enduring the pain has no memory of what they are. Thus the mind is able to separate from the body to endure the soul crushing destruction of their body passing through the fingers of monsters.

U.S. Government Projects like MK Ultra, Artichoke, Bluebird, Monarch, Montauk- which is the true story of Stranger Things, and thousands of others have been exposed and victims who endured this have been paid out millions of dollars by our government in restitution for this rampant human experimentation carried out on their "pet projects." The U.S. is not alone in their quest: Manchurian Candidates, dozens of other major countries like Great Britain, Australia, Russia, China, Japan, and Canada. Both allies and enemies of our government and seats of religious power like The Roman Catholic Church, and incalculable Fraternal Orders have shattered the minds of millions of their citizens, patriots and pedophiles alike.

The Bloodline Families and practitioners of the higher-level initiated mystery religions and cults have been engaging in this practice long before the Nazi scientists brought over during Operation Paperclip taught our American scientists this secret science learned and perfected in their concentration camps. Those camps where millions became a Holocaust or in English a Burnt Sacrifice. This is why Hitler ordered The Hex Star of Asherah and Ishtar to mark the victims for burning in the ovens of ritualistic slaughter.

My grandfather had a particular knack for shattering the mind quickly along with programming and as such was entrusted with other “Chosen” children besides me. It is a Trade passed on from master to apprentice in their craft. A craft, which had many of its modern and oldest roots in the Jesuits, Gnostics, and the arms of the Roman Catholic church, whose accumulation of intelligence, mystical artifacts, manuscripts, as well ancient knowledge, supersedes all others since Nimrod’s reign. Many Illumined Bloodline Families, even those who in no way are practitioners of Catholicism, still turn to the Roman Order’s Brutes to do this work as they have honed this despicable Trade to its sharpest edge.

The Families do this because– unlike so many out there – they treat their children with respect insofar as they know how powerful and capable they are of extraordinary things at even young ages. While we dump our kids in overcrowded day-care and shove them in front of Family Owned television programming for hundreds of hours of their adolescent development via tablets, televisions, or toxic blue-light screens, The Families ‘invest’ in their children, honing them to razors edges before most are trying to teach their kids how to spell or count with fallacious Common Core Math. The Illumined Ones teach their children how to think critically to use grammar, logic, and rhetoric to come up with solutions to problems, instead of becoming part of the problem.

Families believe each child has the potential to express specific powers, gifting's or talents. The Family members wait for the manifestations of a generational spirit, one of their ancestor's spirits or the spirits of the gods to be imbued into their children. Thus a "familiar spirit" a "Muse," a trickster, or other family spirit was passed on to specific chosen children.

The word Genius is a modern expression of this belief. The Jinn or genie's are the Middle Eastern equivalent of the ascended ancient ones, the demons who would possess vessels both people or objects. The Genius in a Family is one who is possessed by the Familiar or Generational Spirit of the Ancestors and thus is the chosen one. The chosen one will often then become through manipulative rituals, oath, and pledge for ownership an open spiritual conduit for one or many of the cursed restless spirits of the dead.

Each Family as with the confusion at Babel may hold different denominational beliefs as to how some of the Mysteries and Secrets are interpreted. As such literal billion and trillion dollar battles are fought, some with knives and bullets, but most are in the board and courtroom, to prove which Families method is the most profitable, productive or perverted. Thus determining their ranking on the ever-illumined pyramid of power.

The entirety of their Familial reigns and purpose become ensnared in a dog eat dog game of musical chairs. The way to the top is determined by who can breed the best wolves, dogs, goats, cats or sheep. However a spot at the top is reserved for The Family who produces the final incarnation of The Rebel King.

Many in my Reynolds, Keenan, Hamilton, Sutherland, White, and Du Pont Family chose The Left Hand Path of the Fallen Serpent. They are blood bound with the Familiar spirits of Apollo, Death, Eros, Destruction, and The Queen of Heaven to posses and reign through their bloodline children. The prize at the end of their map is what The Families are hiding in plain site.

Other Families like The Royals in South Africa, The Bloodlines of The Reich or The Kings of Assyria and Emperors of The East use and employ different methods, spirits and tactics to compete for the creation of the ultimate hybrid of god and man. This story is one, which has been repeated over and over for millennia through the Muses. Maybe this should give you a pause to discern by which spirit was the Music conceived. Remember, the Museum was furnished and crafted to influence and control the narrative stories, histories and propaganda.

It's in the open source stories like the quest for the grail, the spear of destiny, King Arthur, Avatar, Dr. Strange or the one particle collider ring lord to rule them all, and many more, which subtly whisper these serpentine mysteries to the both the goyim and the illumined alike. These crafty seductive lies keep scales over the eyes of the world. In their united deception they will demand and declare The Fallen Ones those Nephilim and gods of old to return and rule over them as in the days before The Great Deluge of Noah. And the gods those rebellious Elohim and their prodigy will once again walk openly among us. Over this fallen divine council of gods will be one of purest blood who rules them.

They are all on an immortals quest to find and establish the perfect anti-messiah who will reign supremely on this earth for a season. He who will carry the spirit of Rebel, his name is Apollo the king over those fallen spirits of the abyss. He will be The Dragon of Old's spiritual yet carnal son on this earth to counterfeit The Only Eternal and Living Resurrected God King Yeshua The Messiah.

The biggest lie of it all is not that humans believe these things to be true or false but rather all this confusion, keeps people from worshiping and serving The Creator of The Heavens and The Earth. He is The Creator of The Immortals and all other Elohim. The God Above gods YHVH Yahweh Elohim, it is His good will and His purpose we all were made to fulfill not just our own. We were not made to be bound by any lying spirit we were seduced by.

Being born in The Families is designed to set you apart or consecrate you to be made into The Image of The Beast. Instead of as each of you were truly created to be, which is set apart or holy dedicated for The Great Redeemers purpose and calling. He alone can redeem those of us dedicated to be bricks of rebellion instead of prophets of deliverance, forgiveness, truth and peace.

I assure you all of this, no matter what you may have been bred and born to do, there is nothing, which can keep you from receiving His perfect Holy Spirit of Truth, if you so choose. Yahweh is not like the other gods or spirits. He will not ever force His children or people to do His will. He allows each and every one of us to choose to serve the gods of this world or Him alone for He is the only one who is truly set-apart and perfect. The extraordinary and absolutely true story of His Kingdom is written plainly so you can study, learn and test for yourself if His Word is true.

May the words of my testimony now reveal to you my journey which led me into absolute faith no longer in my Familiar spirits, oaths of secrecy, or storehouses of treasures, but instead into a life of pure and undefiled purpose and peace. If He can redeem The Secrets and Talents as ferocious as the ones I am about to share then surely He will do it to all who truly seek Him. He who begins a work in us will be faithful to see it through to its completion.

Chapter Fifteen

The Trade

My talent was discovered before I knew how to write. My mother had taken me to the library to check out some books. She had let me check out a VHS tape on karate. The film opened with a man demonstrating many of the more advanced blocks, strikes, and throws. Later that night when my dad came home, he started to wrestle with me, as he was so fond to do. When he came towards me, I replicated the throw I'd seen the man do on the tape. I grabbed his dominant hand twisting it and in a fluid motion pulled him over my body while throwing my hips and legs towards his knees and flipped him over my shoulder and onto our floor.

My talent had first been expressed and it helped me to mimic behaviors I saw even if it was the first time I'd seen them. This gift could have been cultivated for beneficial things; it could have allowed me to become anything I was passionate about or Yahweh wanted me to do. But once my first gifting had been discovered, The Family had their lusts and ledgers to satisfy.

This ability was to be groomed and cultivated to become a talent for them. Just before my first year in grade school, I was taken back to my Knighted grandpa's, and with the priest's hands placed over mine, I was made to end a mans life for the first time. The cost for me was a shattered soul but the prize for The Brotherhood was a new seat of power. The Knight advanced a degree, then later became a frequent Times magazine cover stable, a governor and war hero to the deceived. Perhaps a character was built around him who shall not be named; the one who proudly armed rebels and over threw our own puppet regimes in The Middle East. The one who partners with The Families whose Senior Executive Services built them a Presidential infestation force of coercion, compromise, and control. Who built a league with The Family members of hiding in plain site on C Street architecting and orchestrating fellowships with Death.

The devastation of my first kill shattered my soul and into that space came with it a seemingly beautiful yet vexingly lurid entity, which never needs to be named. He became a familiar spirit of death, rage, and murder who helped me do the worst of deeds. My shedding of blood after Family killings were through fueled his spiritual power and in turn, he empowered my ability to enact more violence, lust, destruction, sin, cursing, and death. The manipulated contractual agreement is the true origin story of a virus with its host; it devoured my life while it made me a full time producer for death.

These are the darkest of Secrets that so few are willing to share. The truth is you do not make super soldiers, assassins or spies without the aid of The Kingdom of Darkness. This does not mean programmers, participants, or victims are always aware that the powers being funneled into their personalities are demonic. This is because unlike the Hollywood version of spiritual warfare, demonic entities in reality masquerade as something else. The shape-shifting quality of deceitful ones enables them to take on various forms to deceive, manipulate and control their targets.

For example, in the heights of my abuse and pain, The Brutes would have me call out to a specific 'power' to save me, which was often an angel of light or being of seduction or enormous intellect and strength. They would read incantations and ancient oaths over us as the abuse occurred. I would make an agreement with the manifested spirit, the force, or feeling to have permission to come into me and equip me with strength to overpower my enemies or no longer feel pain. This occult knowledge is what The Order, my grandfather and his ‘brothers’ were armed with. The method of fracturing, programming and demonizing he used on me proved to be a tremendous success. Success as defined by kills, blackmail tapes of pedophilic rape, and un-detected infiltrations, exfiltration’s and theft.

This success led him along with other close Family members to put together a training program on how children can be made stronger and more lethal if you demonically charge their personalities and make them killers of the first class kind. The premise was not to wait until they could develop physical capabilities to achieve their goals but instead to start immediately imbuing them with spiritual powers to enable greater works at early ages.

They believed the younger the child, the better because the spiritual powers released in a child were not dependent on their physical size but the strength of their will. Many of The Orders and Gnostic Religions believe that The Will is the true Force, which can manifest physical power and actions from internal sources. The training program my grandfather helped create was sold to other Families, Lodges, and international governing bodies, earning them a tremendous increase. The cultivation of such chosen ones is chronicled and documented in Russ Dizdar’s book ***The Black Awakening: The Rise of Satanic Super Soldier’s*** and ***Expelling The Darkness***.

After the splitting of my soul and the charging of those personalities, I found shape shifting power abiding within which could be unleashed with furious force. How and in what ways it was unleashed was entirely controlled, just like a combat dog can be trained to allow its master to safely pet it but when given a command, it will tear apart the nerve clusters and arteries of its targets.

It was these newfound pieces of my broken mind that were sharpened into a Blade. That Blade took on its own identity and soon they taught me how to channel the hatred of my abusers, the rage, and the desire for vengeance into the edge of a knife, a strangulation cord, fragmenting bullet or poisoned syringe. They manipulated my misery and pain and forced me to prove my worth to The Family by learning the ways of death.

I was taught and initiated by many masters how to cut a body so the blood would leak out slowly, quickly, or bring death in seven seconds or less. I was taught by other chiefs and big medicine men to skin and shadow walk, later came the ways to walk on leaves without making noise. Later still came the commanders and instructors who made me capable of not leaving a trace of my presence even down to my DNA at the scene of targeted eliminations.

Because of this I was forced into The Underground world where blackmail and death threats are strictly enforced. The Family was proud of their child killers. They could profit tremendously from the snuff films and their little murderers for hire.

After all, they liked to remind people that children fit in places adults just can't. They are so easily overlooked and passed over, never considered to be a threat. Who would think a nine-year-old boy could instantaneously overpower a fully-grown bodyguard? With the right kind of training and spirits present, it can be done quite easily.

Ask someone who has spent time in the trenches of a locked residential mental health center for disturbed children if they've ever seen grown men thrown around like ragdolls by young kids? I witnessed it with my eyes dozens of times while working at just such a facility. I watched five grown men be lifted off the ground by an eight-year-old girl whose eyes changed color while lying on her back in a “quiet room” during a restraint.

Other times I’ve seen ten-year-old boys outrun fit college-age students at the height of their athleticism. Even the center’s atheistic and scientifically religious psychiatrists, case managers, and supervisors had a special name for them: they called them “Runners.” Once a Runner took off, they could hardly if ever be caught.

For some reason I did not understand openly at the time, I could always catch them. I could throw a switch in my brain and bring my Runner and race past every other staff member and catch up to them all. There was never a shift I worked at that facility where a Runner escaped. It does not always take something supernatural to do it; sometimes just the shutting off of your need to not strain a muscle or the fears of what would happen if you ran full speed onto a busy six-lane road can also work. Running is essential when it comes to The Trade or work The Families do. Sometimes paying clients or red light guests get too abusive or too close to someone who might help get them out.

The Family realized they could convince me to kill anyone for them so long as I believed they were a pedophile, Brute, a trafficker of children, or someone who covered up these types of crimes. While I grew in my skills and abilities, my parents were quick to cover the visible signs of my abuse and trauma by moving me from school to school. Between 2nd and 3rd grade alone they had me change schools four times. It was this pattern of hiding the evidence and destabilization of his Chosen one that my father was so good at. All

the while broadening and deepening The Reynolds Southwestern tendrils of blackmail and manipulative control. Too many "Little Black Books" and "Compromising Files" were built by selling off my body, blades or blood, and these became powerful tools The Family used for significant gain.

If a teacher at school started asking too many questions about why my handwriting would change so drastically as I switched from one personality to another or about the bruises or uncontrollable vomiting sessions, I would be forced into a new school. Worse still were when I'd grown too close to a friend or their family who might make me feel safe, loved, and understood, the rug would be pulled out from under and away we would go.

Certain aspects of my Family's approach are different than others. I can't sit here and try to claim I know how all of The Underworld operates; all I can tell is The Secrets I was raised with and taught. Some Families give their children all the training for their gifting, yet they do not "let them loose" until a much later date. The Disney's and their Mickey Mouse boys and girls turned into objects of lust are internationally renowned for it.

Some are given all the pleasures and luxuries money can buy, while others starve their children continually, lavishing plenty on The Family around them but keeping them caged like a lion in a pit waiting for his prey. This is why some Families raise their children on Familial maintained estates while others are sent to the suburbs, subways, and trailer parks.

My role in The Family necessitated mediocrity. Chosen ones, especially Guardians and assassins are not allowed to stand out, and so I was made to be mediocre. They are made to be chameleons able to look like their environments and become what their prey believed, wanted, and expected to see. Within this path there is no exceptionalism allowed as it brings unwanted attention. My Family took The Trade seriously, and they knew that the best way to climb the pyramid to influence, power, and wealth was to offer up their "pet project." My blood, body, blade, and blackmail records were the currency of bricks my Family used to build its tower of rebellion. Once my bodily skills, talents and usefulness were uncontrollable, they moved on to the next generation.

There is only so much a mind can endure, and the traumas my body had experienced had left their marks. There is a saying proven correct, “Killing always leaves a mark.” The first murderer of man, Cain, can attest to being cursed with such a burden. He was the first to bear the mark of death. Now I too was made to carry this mark.

Too many of the traumas were invisible and after my East Coast Elite grandfather, a former President over The American Society of Civil Engineers, who my dad had moved in with us, died, it left me without an identity as his “property.” I grew overwhelmed with sorrow to the point of death. I could not bear the sadness and did not know why I hurt so badly inside. To have a physical expression of the internal pain, I turned to self-mutilation, pornography, alcohol, and any other “Family allowed” substance that would alter my mind.

It was how I survived the torment at night or the bullying at the latest Family funded private Christian school I attended. It was a mad world, and I thought if I could just get away from my Family, I could have a better future. This was soon to be what I was offered: a well-prepared treat for my eyes, which promised honor, awards, and accolades, but they would instead leave me with dozens of more bodies and burdens of guilt stacked at my master’s feet.

Chapter Sixteen

Blood Makes the Green Grasses Grow

Though the work I did for The Families and The Brotherhoods was in the shadows, I would soon be funneled into a world where trained killers are made to be heroes or hated by the nations at large. By the time I turned 17, I was so thoroughly entrenched in the depths of darkness that there was only a vapor of hope still in my chest. I had been making the rounds through The Underworld, and some black budget Groups had become an active purchaser of my services. However they did not want a pet project who was handled solely by The Order so they brokered a deal to buy and then openly recruit me into their forces.

Just after turning 17 years-old, and while still a Junior in High School, I was emancipated to The United States Army and pressed into one of their Projects for Chosen Ones. The military has high regard and actively recruits through many Finders Programs for individuals with dissociative identity disorder and fully enhanced alternate personalities. They know how effective these chameleons can be in "non-permissive environments," or countries and regions we are not publically operating in. They are trained and sent out to be shadow soldiers in these black budget wars, which are funded and paid for by the seedier sides of human and narcotic trafficking. In no uncertain terms, I became one of these shadowed operations soldiers.

[redacted]

Operating under blurred interpretations of charters and unofficial sanctions, Special Access Programs both acknowledged and unacknowledged became my abode. It was into this world where the tattered pieces of my programming and murderous life would unravel. It was here that The Messiah would radically intervene and snatch this burning stick from the flames of death.

Chapter Seventeen

A Step into Family Central

A year after becoming one of Ft. Knox's ***Professionals***, I was sent off to my advanced individual training nestled not too far from Alexandria, Norfolk, Richmond and D.C. weeks before any other soldiers would arrive, to ensure my commanding officer had plenty of time to "work" with me.

In their greed for control, my military handlers attempted to combine different portions of my personality. A project often referred to as "selective integration," it is their way of reforming or patterning once split personalities back together. They did not go about it with Brute force as The Families did but rather with advanced technologies and equipment. What they do is meddling with the body soul, and it is dangerous to do. I do not believe there is any way to return the mind to become "a whole soul" without the working of the Holy Spirit and surrendering to The Great Physician.

The programmers who do this work do so under the influence of another spirit. As they shoved these personalities together, I underwent tremendous amounts of pain, nosebleeds, nausea, and blackouts. Alone in those barracks, I fractured along their scored lines and then was stitched together with

Soldiers' personalities as well as Blade. The combination of these inner parts was crafted and woven into a new primary personality.

After the endless cycle of torment, training, and fieldwork were winding down, I was given a new identity, a new name. Two dog tags were given to me, and I became another man whose identity had been created long ago. I would from that day forward go by Jason. Fair warning now to the other so called J.A.S.O.N.S those quests for the Golden Fleece will not bring you redemption, restoration, and relief He alone can.

State Craft and Fieldwork tested me to my limits, and I soon realized that so many of the targets I was sent after were just like the ones my Family had sent me to eradicate. They were in many ways monsters, but they were just pawns. They were the surface level bait to keep the inner kings, queens, CEO's, cardinals, and bishops safe. Time after time they would send me out, and I would return with their black books, harvested DNA, or whatever else my handlers wanted.

I had more autonomy within my Trade but I was becoming an Alpha wolf let out on a walk, my "master" holding his pistol ready should I ever turn their way. The dangers of letting the wolf out of his cage can cost much more than a life. The days would come when I would turn on them all and seek the dismantling of their empires of soil stained red from the blood of their victims.

While the weeks dragged on, I began to have my thoughts crowd out the programming. The more they worked me over, the deeper access I had to memories once separated from me. I began to experience bleed over or flooding, much like individuals with PTSD will have intrusive thoughts and flashbacks. These personalities carried with them memories of things my core personality had not known. I began to realize how many times my handlers had lied to me, and so often the targets they selected were not my abusers, pedophiles, or traffickers but rather grudges, contract work, and ways to climb the pyramid of power. Black Dragons and those intelligence groups of old have insatiable appetites no man on fire can satisfy. I soon saw the truth that I'd been blind to for so many years of my life.

Within 18 months of my public enlistment, the tattered pieces of my patch quilt soul would unravel. I began to do the unthinkable. I started to remember. I began to think for myself, and I chose to disobey a master's commands. The dangers of having an asset out of direct control are tremendous, so a decision was made.

Before they programmed me to end my own life, my dad made a wager against his only son. Ever eager to add to his bloody empire, my dad made sure to have me change my mother from the sole proprietor to my militaries half-million-dollar life insurance policy to himself. Just a few months later, I would be shot and stabbed multiple times, bleeding to death on the patio of one of their many houses. I would stare out over the cold mountain valley and watch my all too Familiar spirit come to harvest my perishing soul.

Chapter Eighteen

Between Death and Life

The military had a consistent way of dealing with failed Pet Projects. That summer after my senior year in high school, I underwent a complete shutdown of my mind. I was no longer suitable to achieve their orders, so instead, I was washed out. I spent the next few months in and out of the various "specialists." They were Family Initiated neurologists and technicians who began to wipe out the work I'd been doing for them, ensuring I would self-destruct. To be sure there would be no loose ends, I was under no circumstances supposed to survive what would come next. The Secrets in my head and work I'd done could shake some of the pillars of power that ran deep into the heart of this nation's capital, Little Rome on the Potomac, The Greater Harlot in Vatican City, and the Lords of London.

I first saw an Air Force neurologist as I had been referred to him even though this was in no way per Army regulations. I had spent extensive time in my teenage years "working" within SAP's with the Air Force and commanders at N.O.R.A.D, and as such, they knew my inner mind best. At The Academy I met with this particular neurologist and his specialized machines; he programmed me with a need to stage a break in home robbery where I would shoot and stab myself. Within The Trade, this type of programming being activated is referred to as Omega.

Much of the internal programming systems personalities are based on the Greek Alphabet: Alpha, Beta, Gamma, and Delta, etc. For example Beta, also called Cat, or Kitten programming, is a seducer and sex slave personality. Delta programming is advanced militaristic, infiltration, exfiltration, and assassin training program. This program is mirrored within Joint Special Operations Command as an entire branch within our elite operators. Active or former Delta Force or CAG operators are regularly brought in as training consultants when Delta programming is being conducted.

Omega being the end of the alphabet entails the programmed self-destruction of an asset. It is hallmarked and often seen after mind controlled individuals almost always under the direct handling of a military or defense contractor are staged to go on a shooting rampage, but afterwards become completely committed to self-destruction unto total suicide. Their mission completed, they are to eliminate themselves and any potential Blowback. Operators in the field are given specially crafted cocktails buried beneath the skin, implanted within teeth, or injected into veins to ensure this occurs.

The activation of my Omega firmly implanted, the doctor sent me out with a note in one hand and a paper bag full of heavy medications, and I went back to school. Within two weeks, all the fail-safes of coping and control I had established over the years dissolved as the medications and programming fractured what little sanity was left in my mind. The usual student binge drinking back at college was not helping and I went to see an Army Neurologist. She was a light Colonel who oversaw just such a carnal house of suicides for used up Company or Military assets. She added to my madness with more mind-altering medications and her re-enforcement of the break-in.

The cocktail of drugs I was put on combined with the drinking drove me off the deep end of reality and into the blurred world of madness. In my chaos, those thoughts were perpetually whispered into my mind, and I became obsessed with the idea.

I lied to my parents who were going to celebrate Thanksgiving with Grandpa Brute down in the deserts of Death, by saying I had training and could not join them. Instead, while they were gone, I threw a party in my parent's house and many drank all night until one by one they all left. I woke up, took my handfuls of pills as prescribed, then preceded ever so carefully to clean the house. Just as the psychotropic medications took full effect, I procedurally watched my body go through the very motions of murder.

I watched as I walked upstairs and picked up a fighting knife and put it in my pocket. I watched as I got my bolt-action rifle out of its carrying case. I loaded a single round into its chamber, slammed the bolt home, and carried it downstairs. I then walked out onto my parent's basement patio, picked up the biggest rock I could find, and tried to smash the back window out of the door. After five massive hits, the glass refused to even crack. Stumped but not defeated, I walked back into the basement, grabbed the rifle, and sat down on the carpet. Then I shoved the muzzle against the meat of my leg, switching the safety off, exhaled and pressed the trigger.

The silence of the morning shattered as the rifle bucked in my hands; instantly I felt an explosion tear into my thigh. As the smell of burning gunpowder met my nostrils, the pain erupted into my mind.

When you fire a bullet out of a gun, all that is happening is a cloud of superheated gasses are pushing a piece of lead and copper out of a grooved steel tube. This wall of expanding gasses diffuses typically into the air just outside the barrel, resulting in a fireball. However, when you place something directly against the end of that same barrel, those gasses have nowhere to go except into whatever is in their way. The expanding gasses found themselves erupting into the flesh of my thigh, expanding inside the muscle, tendons and flesh of my leg and searing my skin leaving a "star stamp" burn. As I thought about the distant pain, I could not help but think of the vivid color of my blue jeans and the smoke rolling out of the fresh hole in my leg. Then I went back into watching as my body took over.

I racked the bolt on my rifle, pocketed the brass, and looking at my thigh, I placed my pinky and index finger deep inside the bleeding holes on either side of my leg. I pressed into the flesh until blood was no longer gushing out. I picked up the rifle and walked up multiple flights of stairs, cleaned my rifle, after returning it to its case, and disposed of the brass shell casing by flushing it down the upper floor toilet. Walking back downstairs, I stood in front of our computer desk where I pulled the fighting knife out my pocket and plunged it multiple times into my stomach.

The blood came slowly at first as I had pressed my hand so tightly against the seeping wounds. Standing on the patio outside the basement I looked down at my shaking hands. With coaxing, I peeled them off my stomach, and the hot red life gushed out of my body seemingly burning my bare feet. While the blood pooled upon the ground, he came. Death, that cursed spirit I'd been enslaved to, came for me.

Death came to harvest my soul on the concrete patio of my parent's basement. But I was not alone on that patio because the truth is that I was never alone. Even in the grips of my madness and murder, I was never alone.

As I watched The Family spirit come to harvest my soul, I witnessed The Angel of Yahweh appear and stand between Death and me. He never turned to me, but I saw fear in Death's eyes for the first time in my life. I heard The Most High's authority speak and the words He spoke purchased my surrender.

With the fullness of authority, He said,

"He is *mine*; you can't have him."

There was no cosmic battle and there was no bloody war; it was The King of Kings commanding a defeated foe to submit. The Living God wrenched my programmed mind out of its death code and gave me life. The sanity that had been stripped from me returned for a moment, and I heard,

"Nathan, you are going to die; call 911."

Though I had been programmed to die and to leave my Family with a more significant inheritance, God my real Father was not willing that I should perish. Instead, He helped me survive Death's dealings that day. Because of His intervention, I was able to slow the bleeding enough to endure the nearly 30 minute "slow roll" response time of the paramedics. I had to be flown in a medical helicopter out of the mountain pass where my parents lived and down to the hospital where I was stabilized and later that week released.

On my way through this whole ordeal, I maintained the lie that had been so carefully placed within me about the break-in and robbers. The news ran with the story though it would take only a cursory investigation to realize the truth. My dad against whom I had carried bitterness and resentment up to this point in my life swooped in as a messiah figure. He made sure I knew he "would handle everything and take care of it now."

Three days later, he drove me down to the police department to meet with Initiated Fraternal Order of Police detectives who were assigned to my case. My dad talked to me privately down in their interrogation rooms and told me in no uncertain terms that I now needed to share the truth – a truth my father knew all along – with the detectives.

Always quick to obey my father, I told them that I had fabricated the story and done the deeds to myself. Determined to verify my account on the spot, I pointed out to the detectives the fighting knife I'd used, which they had been unable to find. Even well-trained investigators are susceptible to a common weakness, which is why if you want to hide something, put it in plain site.

After stabbing myself with the fighting knife, I quietly closed it and set in on the desk directly next to the chair I would be found bleeding out in. I then identified the knife in the pictures of the crime scene. My dad then met with the detectives, and before I knew it, I was being driven back home and my dad was explaining to me that he would take care of me now and make sure everything was dealt with. Thanks to my father's Familial ways, I had no charges filed against me and I was sent home without immediate legal repercussions.

The military would want to wipe its hands clean of me as quickly as possible. My dad would provide his solution to this problem by finding a psychologist who would play their part. My dad prepped me by telling me new stories I'd never heard about his father who he now said was bipolar and manic and had killed himself. And he insisted this is what happened with me.

He publically labeled my entire incident a manic episode and sitting in the office of the psychologist, he reiterated this to me. The psychologist had me fill out a ten-point questionnaire about bipolar disorder, and after giving it to him, he told me I needed to change three of my answers. After less then thirty minutes of consultation, I obeyed him, and he diagnosed me as bipolar with a manic episode even though he did not take into account the drugs, alcohol, and prescriptions I had been under the influence of. This was a severe violation of diagnostic methods as outlined in the actual manual for this process at that time, called the Diagnostic and Statistical Manual (DSM-4).

My father spent the next few weeks with me in a private hotel room where he kept me at his side except when I needed to take my exams. He had me placed on heavy prescription medications that caused my hair to fall out and my skin to break out, in addition to massive weight gains and horrible bouts of sickness. The medications clouded my mind with confusion and turned me into a blubbering mess. By the time I finished my freshman year's first semester, I was a shell of a man.

My father put me into counseling at a Family run center where the elite can keep their Pet Projects in order. The counselor he placed me with was someone who would not validate or substantiate the previous diagnosis of bipolar disorder over the next 18 months I worked with her. Instead, six months into working with her, I overcame some of the fears of my father's retribution and secretly went and titrated myself off all my medications. I soon learned how to dodge or muddle the blood and urine tests they had me on to ensure I was complying. Within a matter of days, I found my mind cleared up and all the horrible side effects of the pharmaceuticals to be the root of my troubles.

For less than one year of my life, I was on heavy medications: everything from psychotropic anti-depressants, anti-seizures, stimulants, barbiturate painkillers, anti-anxieties, sleep aids, to experimental Parkinson's drugs and even heart medications to counter the irregular tachycardia I was suddenly experiencing. This in no way is a complete list, but at one point in time, I was prescribed 18 pills to take on a daily basis.

It was never a manic episode or mental health disorder that caused my year of hell but an intentional use of medications and manipulation to produce massive cognitive splits and behaviors I would never willingly engage in. It may have lasted less than a year, but it was the most destructive year of my life. Into that destructive path, The Father would help guide my feet back onto His Redemption Road, and less than a year later Chelsea took those first steps down the path on Hillside Road.

The reason I zoom in on this portion of my testimony is that this whole supposed manic episode would be the ace in the hole my dad and other "concerned Family Friends" would use to attempt to discredit me or dismiss me from that day forward. It is unfortunate that my Family and many others can be so easily beguiled by someone saying "mental health disorder" or manic episode and throw out an entire person's testimony. Those who have ears to hear will know what truth is and what is not.

My family and their "Family Friends" categorically reject the mere utterance or existence of DSM-5 Titled Diagnosis, Dissociative Identity Disorder (or D.I.D.). It is a genuine and not uncommon personality disorder caused by massive trauma and abuse at an early age. Its primary characteristics can be a gradient but require for full diagnosis, the development of at least two separate and distinct personalities, the unexplainable loss of time or understandings of occurred events. My Family rejects its applicability as a diagnosis for me insisting instead that I have been in a manic episode for years and years. To this day, my dad desperately waves around 10-year-old news stories from that Thanksgiving to prove I went crazy once and am dangerous or someone to be concerned about.

Unfortunately, most of the world and other Family members have no idea what a manic episode is and what it is not. They do not have any training in the mental health field or with people who do struggle with bipolar disorder. I spent nearly a decade being trained and equipped to work in the mental health field, with clients who were ages four to eighty-two. I have learned and applied real individual treatment protocols for clients with this disorder and have personally never exhibited any quantifiable symptoms of it in more than ten years.

In the years since I've been receiving appropriate counseling for S.R.A/D.I.D., I have found freedom from addictions, restoration in my marriage and redemption of my fractured soul. No longer is my soul buried in bitterness, heart-rending grief, hurt, or sorrow. In that time, I have begun to receive the fullness of life and the wholeness I was always made for.

My father and other so-called "Family Friends" hate and forbid my other Family members from learning about D.I.D. and instead they errantly label everyone as bipolar or mentally ill. It is the fabric, which makes up my broken Family members' tapestry of deception and control. They cannot allow those truth-riddled threads of understanding and realizations to be pulled. It is a sad reality; one that grieves my heart to this day.

It was not about the truth – it never was – it was always about control. I surrender that power to you the readers, the listeners, or watchers. There is no power in keeping any of my past or present a secret, and that is why I tell it to you now.

I choose to deny my Family their three methods of control through fear, guilt and shame. This is why there is power in exposing the secret skeletons in your closet. When you let the world see the worst you've ever been, the bindings of shame fall off, and with it goes the fear and guilt. Instead, you become a free person able to learn how to do good to those who spitefully use you and say all kinds of evil things about you.

I will not unnecessarily degrade my Family members – not past or present. That being said, I will not conceal their detestable acts any longer. They are accountable for every word they speak, as am I. They are responsible for their actions, and I am responsible for mine. Let Yahweh judge between us whose words are right for He alone is The Righteous Judge who has the power to throw us body and soul into His flame or into eternal freedom.

I tell this to you all now to strip my accusers of their desperate rebuttals and character assassinations. I am not ashamed of my testimony; The Redeemer has washed away even my worst days and deepest shames. Only in the light of truth can this be made the case for each one of you. Then let these next words of my testimony ring loudly to all who can hear.

For those who wish to expose the wicked works of darkness pay close attention to what I say next. I was made to be a brother of the blade, a guardian, blackmailer, chameleon, and thief for The Underworld. Even while I was still young by worldly standards I became a highly prized pet-project to the black budget world of military, religious and State sanctioned assassination and infiltration work. I was used as a wolf who hunted down literal pounds of flesh, rings of authority, totems, "cattle" and especially pure traumatized blood to bring back to my Family members who traffic and consume it for supernatural and physical strength. My Southwestern Family Trade was to produce, process and deliver those Cheese Pizza's and other pedophilic appetites and artistic expression so many are now learning to uncover and expose. I hope you with eyes to see and ears to hear will look closely at where the money goes and in whose names their lodges, halls and chambers are founded. Keep a keen eye out when searching over those desert places and bridges where the jackals and coyotes still cross over. Hidden beneath the scorched soil and inky abyss lies remnants of my many Families deeds.

I am not here to convince people my story is true or that Satanic Ritual Abuse and Dissociative Identity Disorder is real. I am here because of my unrelenting love for the victims, for the Survivors of The Families, Brotherhoods, Knights, Catholics, Christians, Mormons, and Masons. I am here for all the Atheists, Scientists, Buddhist, pagans, new agers and witches alike. I am here for those dissidents who need to know there is hope in breaking out. Powerful freedom and restoration is waiting in the arms of The Messiah. I am here to make sure people know there is nothing The Enemy has done to you, which Yahweh can't undo and nothing fractured which He cannot make whole.

This does not come free. The price I choose to pay for speaking The Secrets is not cheap. But don't you remember? True love knows nothing of cost. True love throws banquets for beggars, murderers, and thieves because He loves "the least of these." It broke my heart to see my Family members choose to hide in the darkness, but I love them enough to speak the truth and show them The Way out. I love them still even though what they did next cut deeper than any blade could.

After I decided to disobey my father and continue to speak The Secrets, the gloves came off. It was no longer a subtle war waged in the shadows. My Family would send the depths of The Abyss against their rogue asset. They would launch spiritual wars that sought to drain the blood from my body and choke the air from my newborn daughter's lungs. Chelsea and I would spend the next few years in the thick of war. The battles would test our marriage to its core and in the testing prove the power of perfect love casting out all fear. The ravenous counterfeit lion would be loosed against Chelsea, Naomi, and me. It was no longer a question: either Yahweh is still The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, or He is not and we would all die.

PART 4

Chapter Nineteen

The Pen or the Sword?

I cannot bring myself even to write what comes next. The pain of loss is so high, and the viciousness of the threats and the manipulation is beyond measure. Only those who have lost their families or closest friends can imagine the brutal feelings of betrayal and loss. No matter how much my dad tried to manipulate me back into his hand, I would not bow to silence, and I could not speak their lies.

I refused to stop speaking The Secrets, and my dad knew he had lost control of his Family asset. He was no longer my master; I refused ever again to be his slave. I would not bow to his demands, and I rejected to yoke myself to his Family's wicked ways anymore. He could not stand it; never had I refused his requests and much less his orders. He had counted on the fact that he could destroy me if I ever got out of control. The weapon he'd so meticulously controlled for nearly thirty years was now making his own decisions. He could not allow that, so my dad played his ace. He played the cards he was confident would destroy both me and the legs of support I'd finally found.

But pride blinds. Bowing your knees at trapezoidal altars of illumination will bind you to the pride of the rebellious god called Helel the Son of Shahar. The pride in my father's illumined eyes was a light of deception, and he could never have imagined how wrong he would be.

Though they tried to destroy the most consistent place of love I had in my relationship with Chelsea, they could not. No amount of manipulations by my Family members could convince Chelsea to divorce me. They pulled out all the stops: they targeted her family members, our former pastors, churches, counselors, and even old co-workers. The Family's expertise is in fear, control and manipulation, and they did their best to work the fields around me. They were relentless, and the lies that poured from their mouths were mountains of accusations craftily designed to scare our supporters away. When people get desperate, they tend to make mistakes. The desperation of my Family to regain control caused them to make a mistake that would finally separate us from their controlling clutches for good.

I had struggled for some time leading up to the decision about whether or not to completely sever ties with my Family, but soon they forced my hand. It happened when one of my Family members, threatened Naomi Grace. In the midst of that summer, before she was born, as I refused to stop speaking The Secrets, they sent us a message saying, Nate, for the sake of your daughter reconcile with The Family.

They should never have threatened my unborn daughter. I expected them to intimidate me, to coerce me and control me, but the day someone threatened my daughter, an entirely different set of protocols begins. They had exposed themselves and the master they chose to serve. Their Seminary sanctified Christian masks had been peeled back to show their true nature.

A dangerous and well-used plumb line had been drawn in the sand. On one side was a family who chose freedom for their children no matter the cost, and on the other were the controllers, manipulators and those who steal the innocence from their sons and daughters. No matter the underhand offers of power, fame and financial freedom, I would never allow them access to my daughter. This is the crux of this entire situation; it came down to Naomi Grace.

Children are not to be born outside The Family's direct oversight. Generation upon generation has given its children over to The Family's demands and never stepped one step outside of this plan. The fury my father and especially his military handlers had was steeped in his denial of this generational requirement. Who was I to refuse their demands and wishes? I had been theirs, and for so long I'd been their successful pet project. However, their collar of control no longer held me captive; instead it fueled my flight to freedom. The scars on my body and Secrets in my mind were constant reminders that Naomi never needed to spend a day of her life in The Underworld. She was not made for their manipulative shackles and control; she was created for freedom, faith, and the joys of an abundant life.

I started my resistance by changing my phone number and ended all communications with them. They had made their decision, and I had made mine. They had chosen to keep their vile deeds buried, and I had decided to expose them to the light of all. Even still, my grandfather traveled across state lines and came into town to try to initiate my daughter, as he loves to do with the new grandchildren.

My father, unfortunately, beguiled my sisters, and even after I warned them about what grandpa does with little children, they still hosted The Family Brute and chose to let him and other Family members have access to their many, many children.

Chelsea and I continually thank The Father that He helped me wake up to these realities before Naomi came into this mad world. Before that, the plan had always been to have The Family members present at the birth of Naomi. God alone spared me from placing my innocent first-born daughter into the hands of monsters.

Instead, Chelsea and I kept the time of her natural birth a secret and had incredibly well trained and well-armed protectors on site to ensure our peace of mind at that most vulnerable time.

As terrible as that summer may have been, it was worth it. Looking into Naomi's eyes for the first time, Chelsea and I cried beyond tears of relief. We wept holding the miracle of life entrusted to us for such a time as this. We knew then that no matter what we'd endured and what would still come, nothing could keep us from letting Naomi develop into the woman she was made to be.

Naomi Grace may not know it today or understand it for many years to come, but she is the first child born free in many generations. For thousands of years, children born into these Bloodlines have been taken into the flames of control, chaos, and death. The Redeemer snatched me from those fires long after they'd burned much of my body and soul to a char. In time I have faith He would heal all those wounds, but the most exceptional power comes when our children are spared from those flames altogether and shown freedom instead. Naomi will never have to taste the torment that so many millions endure at night. She will never be forced down the dark path of perversion as I had. She will be free to choose who she will become. To help her understand the importance of that choice, I wrote her a deadly letter, some of which I will share with you in hopes that many other daughters will read it, as well as sons and fathers and mothers.

Chapter Twenty

A Letter for My Daughter

On the day after Naomi's birth, I wrote her a letter for when she is older and ready to understand the battles fought for her. I wrote her the story of what had transpired since she'd been conceived. I told her of the war which had waged over her before she'd taken her first breath. The things I wrote to her shine light on the darkness of my Family's past, the reasons she is so important, and the power of free will. It is a letter I pray many fathers, mothers, brothers, and sisters would someday write to their Family members.

These are letters, which speak The Secrets – those hidden horrors – that are forbidden to say. Letters which will empower our children, equipping our sons, daughters, nieces, and nephews with the courage to face down their monsters and find strength in our weakness.

E NICE TO YOUR SISTER
...ONE DAY YOU MIGHT NEED AN ALIBI.

For those who surrender their lives to our true Father Yahweh, His Name is a strong tower that the righteous can run to and be saved. I was not an upright man the day I ran to His tower and called upon His Name. I was a man whose hands had shed so much blood; blackmail and brutality were the currency of my past. I was a man who had lied, stolen, manipulated, coerced, cursed and coveted.

The murderers hammer was in my hand, and the bodies had piled so high. If ever there was a man who deserved the executioner's chair, it was I. I felt the weight of survivor's guilt for the killings committed in front of me that I could not stop, and I felt the torment of seeing children abused with no one to bring the perpetrators to justice. I was a man on fire looking for someone who would quench my flames.

The Family woman who saw me kill her husband before I'd gone to middle school can attest to this. The one who screamed out after me "Murderer!" haunted my dreams for nearly twenty years. The names, the faces, the places of pain, misery, and death clung to the fabric of my being and I could not bear to stand amidst the hurt. The others who saw me fight to the death in "the pit" know the monster I was. They saw what I would become when they would put the dagger in my hand. They saw the rage come boil over and unleash its fury on men and whatever else they put in my path. They had seen my two faces; the brilliant birthmark I bear when I brought forth death. I could not quench the fires of hatred. The cauldrons of chaos would fire bricks of bitterness that built my tower of rebellion.

I was broken beyond belief. I had no sense of normal; morality and free choice were a luxury for the masses, not children who witnessed ritualistic torture before they went to first grade. I could not know peace and I could not understand and receive love. I was the salted, scorched earth left behind by conquering armies on their way to pillage a distant land. I was ruined.

When I was 19, I wrote the Hebrew equivalent of Ruined on my left wrist with a permanent marker every single day for more than a year. There was no mystery about it, I knew I was a ravaged ruinous heap of a shattered soul. I looked in the mirror and saw a monster staring back at me. I saw the blood running down my face and caked on my cheeks. I scrubbed my hands till they cracked, trying to wash it all away. There weren't enough people for me to destroy to satisfy the need to avenge the children my Family pillaged. How could I quench the bitterness, the hatred, and the rage?

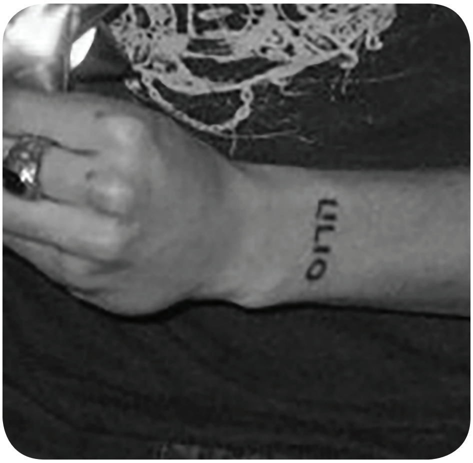

I screamed in the quiet of the night questions no man can hope to answer.

"God, would you still save me? Would You choose to love me? Would You choose to forgive me? Would you let me choose another way?"

I wondered if I was even worth saving. Who would want to rebuild my ruins? My soul was a desolate wasteland full of the broken pieces of my desecrated heart. Who could bear the torment of my sorrows? Who could hold the horrors of my past?

I had to look no further than the perverse version of a baby book my mother had given me before I left to college to know the abusive pictures in my past were waiting to destroy my peace. Remembering was a death of its own; to remember was to bear the burdens of hundreds of lives snuffed out of existence.

How I wept. I wept for months. I sobbed tears of grief, of misery and of sorrow that only orphans, widows, or soldiers who've felt the beating pulse of their best friend quiet down to nothing as their soul breathes its last can know. Those who have witnessed the violent taking of life by death know of the horrors I have seen.

I could not bear to remember; it was too much for someone to handle and live. And yet I couldn't manage to forget. I decided instead to make them matter; I chose not to let them go to waste. I would not allow the fear of remembering, the fear of telling, and the repercussions to hold me back. Though it once brought me their beatings, the shackles, and soul-wrenching betrayal, I chose to put my pen to the paper still and I wrote their names, both the ones I knew and some who I'd forgotten.

I wrote their faces, their places of perishing where bodies were dumped into inky waters, and others burned in Family owned or Brotherhood controlled crematoriums. I wrote the most dangerous of words, willing to prove to the man in the mirror that my weakest pen strokes would be mightier than my bloodstained blades.

To write the words was to step into hell. I have tasted the ash of death for breakfast; it clung under my fingernails and scorched my brows. I was born in the black fires of fury, which heat the Kingdom of The Wicked One. I chose to no longer live in the inner circles of murder and instead I became a traitor to The Dark Prince. I left darkness and ran to The Light of Hope.

I did not come before The King empty handed: I brought Him My Lists – those places and faces of horrors to The Redeemer's feet. I brought my grief as an offering; I brought my guilt and the hurt and the hatred. I brought the anger and betrayal. To The Sinless One, I brought a hundred lifetimes of sin. I brought Him the molestations, sorrow, and despair. I brought Him the worst this world had to offer and I offered Him myself. I brought The God of Light the detestable things done in darkness. I brought Him Who is Worthy my lack, my fears, my hatred, and death.

I brought Him all I had. He asked me to, and I obeyed. I chose to surrender all of myself to Him. I trusted He alone could redeem this death for life. There is only One who can take a monster and make him a man again. I no longer fear Death whose harbinger and slave I had been. Now I choose to fear The Only One who can throw my body and soul into eternal flame or free me forever. Because of that, I will lay down my life for Him and for all who are willing to chase freedom and forsake their fears.

Hear me now. Pay close attention to what I am going to say to you. I am willing to suffer the scourge of this world, the shackles, the mocking, the character assassinations, the accusations, all of it. I will take their bullets, beatings, and blades. I will endure their poisons, curses, and hate. I have suffered these time and again; the blood of my body has been spilled to the point of death more than once. I do not fear but I do respect the retribution of men, demons, or the masters they serve. I will gladly bear this all if only one child, one precious soul, is spared a life like mine.

If one man reads these words and chooses not to make his son pass through the inky flames, all the horrors of my life and even the retributions to come are worth it. I would go through every bit of the starvation, the poverty, the dirty glares, and the fleeing of my friends and family to know that a daughter slept in peace, knowing her abusers would not come for her ever again. Each burning stick snatched from the flames is worth a lifetime of chaos. I would gladly suffer it all because I know I will never have to endure it alone.

No matter what is done to me no one, no power on this earth, no power beneath or above its surface can take the hope of salvation burning in my chest. I am an adopted son of The Living and Holy God. He chose even me. He loves even me, the man of fire, of fury, of hatred, and of death. He loved me even as I was, not what I would be but as I was. On the darkest of days when I was strapped to their chairs as they defiled me, desecrated my soul with devils, guilt, shame, and misery. At the moment when I was downing a handful of pills desperate to bury the nightmares and loss, He still chose to deliver me. He loved even the boy who ran from a Familial estate with the blood of a man staining his dagger filled hands and his widow screaming “Murderer!”

No amount of pain and suffering I have endured can compare to the hope that is set before me. I do not have to wonder if He will strengthen me as I pick up the mutilated stake of persecution that so many others have borne. I know the pains of crucifixion; I have held the purpose forged hammer and heard their agonizing screams. I have faced down despair whose icy hands grab your ankles and pull you into the depths of hell. I have screamed till my throat tore with the pain of memories unspeakable. And yet none of it, none of it could compare to the joy and hope now beating in my chest.

It is because He would not leave me helpless but sent me The Comforter who strengthened me and brought to mind The Truth of Yeshua The Messiah. He willingly suffered the painful punishment and death we all deserved so that we might have His life instead. It is the most significant exchange ever written, spoken, or dreamed of. It is the One who is perfect becoming our devilish defects – our bloodshed, hatred, and death – that we might know the abundance of riches in store for the children of Yahweh.

It is because He now lives in me that I will rush the gates of Hell and face down people possessed by the legions of The Dark Prince standing between the souls crying out for salvation and me. I will not fear their death for I live to seek and save the lost, to snatch those burning sticks from the fires. I am not afraid of the familiar darkness for I was born in it. I was birthed into the Kingdom of Fear, but I have been born again into The Kingdom of Faith. I am not afraid of their rituals, their blackmail, their torture, or their threats. I fear El Shaddai, The Lord Our Righteousness, and The Judge of us all.

My love for Him burned away the fears of persecution, rejection, and abandonment. Now I will walk into the coliseum of public opinion and say, "These are the words of my testimony." I will speak them no matter what they say or what they do; no matter The Order or The Family's retribution may be.

These words are for those who fear the night, who were born of the Black Sun, who feel the dread of the solstices as they approach. They are for the ones who drank the "wine" of the skull and spit on the Word, who were made to bear witness to the oaths, the Summonings and sending's, and for the ones who've never known they were loved.

I write to the precious sons and daughters who have never known safety, peace, and hope, and to the children of the fallen who believed they too are cursed and unable to be redeemed. I also have mingled with the ancient ones, gladly accepting the genetic enhancements so few can imagine as real. The shining one's seed has burned my soul, and The Grigori's blood has tainted my own. To you who know The Secrets, I speak these words for you. You who see The Serpent's Seed in your blood, you children of Belial, you are not accursed, you are not anathema, you are loved, you are treasured. Listen to me: you are adored, and the purpose of your birth was not what they told you. Your purpose is to become part of the living, active Body of Messiah, which will stand tall amidst the greatest threats the world has ever faced.

But more than all these things, know this: you are needed. You were not born for death, for the johns who pay you in white powder, Adrenochrome, corporate contracts, king's ransoms, or five-dollar bills. You were born with a greater purpose than you can imagine. The shackles on your wrists are not to keep you bound on their tables, beds, and chairs; they exist because you were made to set people free. The chains of your addictions and your lusts are to keep you from knowing you were made to breathe hope into the despairing lungs of vagabonds, outcasts, and misfits. The jewels of your crown of glory are waiting in the pebble-strewn asphalt of our overlooked and abandoned deviants, rebels, and wounded ones. You were not made to follow the trends of tomorrow; you were made to set fire to the beacons of redemption, to light a holy flame in the face of impenetrable darkness and sing a song of praise as the bowls of hell rage against your freedom, your hope, and your faith in The Great Redeemer.

Hear me, beloved one: The Father delights in you, longs for you, and loves every part of you beyond measure. No matter what they told you, you are beautiful, you are adored, and you matter more then you can ever know. I know your hurt, I felt the devastation of a defiling touch, and I've suffered the pains of poisons injected into my veins. I know the agony of abuse by those you trusted, loved, and adored. I know the feelings of betrayal, of mocking, and of ridicule. I know the feeling of their glares on your neck and the bullies' laughter behind your back. You are not alone in your sorrow, your suffering, or your death. If there is yet breath in your lungs and blood in your veins, there is still hope. Even if you've just finalized your fourth divorce, or you can't stop looking at porn, you are still important, and the purpose of your life can shake the mountains loose and cast them into the sea.

No matter the number of track marks on your arms, that needle does not define you, and neither does that pipe or pill. The mutilation scars on your wrists, thighs, and neck do not need to be hidden in shame, for when I look upon you, I know you are a Survivor. You, oh precious and created one, were made to light a candle of hope against the darkness of despair. No matter how many times you sought the hangman's noose, the bottoms of bottles, or a manipulator to tell you that you're pretty, you still have a life to be lived. Your life can be made new. Your song of death can be turned into a symphony of hope.

Come join the ones who were orphans, the reckless lovers of losers, liars, and thieves. Join the debt-laden dropout who has found out he can be free. Join the heroes of the homeless, the champions of hope, the brokenhearted, and the healers who don't take what they need. Come and join the leftovers, The Remnant, those outcasts once passed over whose blood now beats with divine purpose.

Chapter Twenty One

A Message to the Masses

If you are the one who made your children pass through rituals and abuse, it is time you give up your wicked war for power, control, and status. You serve a defeated master. The Serpent's head was crushed beneath the pierced feet of The Righteous One. The dark princes you bow to do not rein on high, but they also have been brought low.

The Mighty God's Kingdom is forever, and His judgment will be swift. You cannot hide your Secrets forever. What you choose to do in secret will be shown on the rooftops. If He did not spare King David's conspiracy and murder with Bathsheba from this law's consequence, I assure you He will not spare you. Your secrets will be revealed. You can choose to do it by your own free will or the little children you passed through those abusive flames will rise and convict you instead. Come to Messiah while there is time. Your judgment will be eternal, and I assure you of this: it would be better for a megalithic stone to be tied around your neck today and you be cast into the sea then you suffer The Father's judgment for causing His beloved children harm.

To every member of these councils, brotherhoods, dragon bloodlines, rosy orders and carriers of "the royal seed," know that your secrets and illumined blood will not save you. The gnosis, the chalice, and treasures you guard will not rescue you. The passcodes, coins, and rings, the handshakes, the whispers in the inner chambers will not always hide your magical workings. Your Hands of Glory cannot conceal your deeds from The Most High God. The astral planes and their sacred books will not save you from The Just One. The mysteries you keep are not eternal but will burn with The Deceiver. Come out of it while there is still time. Forsake your oaths, renounce your agreements, and repent of your sins, even your secret sins. (Psalm 19) Call Upon Yahweh in the day of trouble, and He will deliver you. (Psalms 21 & 50)

No matter what has mingled itself in your blood, willingly or not, no matter who your father was or the way you were conceived or created, you also can be redeemed and restored. Even if they genetically spliced you and diced you with abominations and creatures of chaos, you too can know The Messiah if you desire. The pureblood in my body once carried the seed markers you all know too well. And yet I live, I live, and by the power of Yahweh, I have been baptized into His Kingdom. He has given me a transfusion so that I can be made like Him now.

The black tomes pulled from Uruk, and those of Anak could not keep my soul in their bloodstained pages. If I yet endure until the end then, The Son of The Living God who has written my name in The Book of Life will tell me, "Well done my good and faithful servant, now enter my shalom and rest."

Through my repentance and renunciation of oaths and agreements, along with His conquering of Death, I was translated from The Kingdom of Darkness into The Kingdom of His dear Son. No amount of contracts I had with those Ancient Ones could withstand the power of repentance and the authority of The Captain of the Heavenly Hosts in contending with my former masters. If you have "sold your soul," know this: the soul you sold was never yours to sell away as it was already purchased by Messiah thousands of years ago. The Enemy and his ministers are liars, and even if they hold silver rich contracts in your blood, these too can be washed away, and you can be made new in The Kingdom of Heaven.

Come out and speak The Secrets; do not allow another generation to suffer the bondage of deception, guilt, fear, shame, and torment. There is no freedom in your fears; there is no free power in your black or white magical workings; there are only slaves in The Kingdom of Darkness. The Transyuggothian Magic will not answer you in your day of trouble; they who come and speak to you will be silent in your calamity. (1 Kings 18) No matter how much power you wield, or how many people you control, or what the scale of the empires you rule over is, you are a slave. If you choose to stay in the darkness and continue on your path of deception, it is because you are a coward, you are weak and blinded by your pride. May Yahweh Elohim, The Creator of Heaven and Earth rebuke the powers, dominions, thrones, and principalities who rule over you and draw you out while there is still time. May He break your occult power to the highest level and do whatever it takes to bring you out of your bondage. Repent now while His mercy is still long-suffering, before His justice flows like a river soaking the earth in your arrogant blood.

Do you think your symbol rich rings will save you? Do you think your “brothers” or “sisters” will defend you? The Knights will not keep you safe. They will not conceal your kingdom as it burns for the world to see. Too many times I looked in the eyes of men like you as I cut their signet rings from their fingers. I heard their pleas, the oaths they’d sworn to The Orders they’d served. I heard them try to convince themselves that The Grandmaster would protect them or surely their Family would spare them. And yet none of their gods came to save them, their Familiars abandoned them in their hour of need.

Your arrogance has blinded you; your kingdoms are built on betrayal, pride, and lust. You are beguiled like Eve in the Garden, who was promised apotheosis and godhood with secret knowledge, the opening of eyes, and all of The Serpent's lies, but these lies brought only death instead. Her body turned to dust just like yours will whether by an assassin's blade, a bullet, or a poisoned cup. It may come from a compromising video posted online showing the world what you do in your initiations, rituals, and rites. Remember now: Families take great care to document those moments and your pedophilic pleasures were not so secret after all. Those blackmail videos will come crawling out of the cracks and crevices they've been carefully preserved in, and the world will see what you have done behind your temples, churches, lodges, clubs and chambers' doors. They will hear the cries of children you defiled, the gendered identities you've bent and broken. They will see the familiar faces of politicians, judges, chiefs of police, bishops, and popes destroying the innocent.

Your Christian, Catholic, Mormon, Islamic, and Buddhist masks you hide behind will burn, and the people will see who you are. They will hear your secret oaths like these;

"*I do further promise and declare that I will have no opinion or will of my own... but will unhesitatingly obey each and every command that I may receive from my superiors in the militia of the Pope... I will wage a relentless war, secretly and openly against all heretics... I will spare neither age nor sex... I will rip up the stomachs and wombs of their women, and crush their infants' heads against the walls in order to annihilate their execrable race. I will secretly use the poisonous cup, the strangulation cord... either in public or private, as I at any time may be directed to do so by any agents of the Pope or superior of The Brotherhood of The Holy Father of The Society of Jesus.*" *(Extreme Oath and Induction of The Society of Jesus)*

There are so many other even more vile oaths taken in secret chambers by men and women of meager statues and presidential powers alike. As long as our "judicial" system is run by men and women who have sworn these oaths there will never be justice brought to the oppressed, needy and victims of monsters. It is time for what they swear in secret to be played for all ears to hear. Your days of hidden deeds are drawing to a close.

I know that I am nothing to many of you; other names by which was I known once caused many restless nights, but I am no longer that man of bondage, the Sicario of dread, but instead, I am a man whose freedom has been won. The last few decades of my life may have meant little but the lives of the children you murdered, their futures taken before they were three years old, matter more then you can ever know. Dani's mother who was ritually murdered in front of him matters more than anything I will ever do. The day in that cheap room where you made me kill Soldier, you ignited the fuse of the bomb of your destruction. You lit it when you sodomized my friends and murdered my battle buddy in a "non-combat related incident" in another needless war.

Oh, you reckless and arrogant slaves. Just because the collars around your neck and shackles around your wrists are made of gold, onyx, and rubies, you are not any better than the rest. The innocent blood you shed to build your kingdoms testifies against you day and night. It is crying out for justice, and He is coming for you. Like a thief in the night, His terrible and unimaginable Day of Destruction is coming. He will tread you down to the dust, and the ravens and vultures shall pick of your carcasses on the day of your death.

The smell of sulfur is thick in the air, and it is the pit of fury about to be unleashed. Samson is standing with his hands on the many temples' columns. Your Dagon-worshiping, drunken, pedophilic orgies are going to end with the roof collapsing on your heads. Hundreds, then thousands and millions, will speak The Secrets and then the masses will demand justice that is long overdue. You have underestimated them long enough. You will not be able to keep them dumbed down, drugged up and deceived forever, and once they know what you do in your groves and on your Democratic and Republican taxpayer-funded trips on the Lolita Express, they will burn your kingdom to the ground. The frequent visitors on the little St. James Island will not be able to hide their deeds. The people will come to see what rules the producers, writers, actors, and guilds who partake of the defiled flesh at their spirit cooking's and back room

Industry compromises. They will learn of what the altar boys are made to do with their "fathers, mothers, sisters, bishops, friars, cardinals, and priests." They will not believe your lies, discrediting campaigns and cover-ups. Woe to you for the day of justice and reckoning is nearly upon you.

Understand this: some of those whose blood was proofed and pure have been sent to you to warn you. I am not the first, nor will I be the last, but if you do not heed this call, the guilt of your blood is no longer on my hands. I have given you the warning as The Father had given me mine. What my father and other generations of Reynolds, Aldobrandine, Rothschilds, Medicis, Astors, and Merovingians chose to cover up will be revealed to the masses. My father decided to stay in his house of cards even though the fiery winds of justice are preparing to blow. I pray to The Almighty they repent and confess their secrets and sins before that match is lit. My father has made his choice, so too have I. I pray you will listen to this warning and heed this watchman's cry.

I am not going to give you softened words of disagreement; I intend to smack you in the face as Yahweh did to me. He did not blunt His Living Word when it cut through my heart. He did not warn me with soft whispers and delicate cautions. He gave me a shadow of His glory, and I knew then I would die and with me would come the weight of ten thousand horrors. I knew there would be no escaping the repercussions of the spiritual consequences of my meddling's. I knew in an instant if I chose to have continual fellowship with the darkness, I would perish in the flames of His justice. They will not be temporary but inescapable.

There is a judgment waiting for us all. No matter the promises – Artificial Intelligence, Holographic Avatars, Transhumanism, Genetic Enhancement, Quantum Reality, or whatever Cup of Life they promise you – all will be rendered their final due. I decided to surrender to Him rather than face the outer darkness or the deepest flames. I chose to surrender to Him and become an inheritor of hope, a rescued one. I write you these words so that you may be without excuse. None of you is innocent, not even one. There is hope to those who surrender; and to you who choose not to: know that He is coming for you nonetheless. You cannot escape The Holy One of Israel.

I call to you who are lonely; I appeal to you who are afraid. I call to you who are weeping in the darkness wondering if He heard you last night. I reach out to you who are the fractured ones, the little parts, and pieces of ravaged souls. I entreat you who are weary and broken, unsure if your story still matters or if it ever will. The emptiness you feel inside can be made full of hope, passion, and joy. Do you not know that you were made for a purpose? Do you not know that your days matter? There is so much meaning for the moments of your most deviant shame, your innermost pain, and worst regrets. These are not your curses; these are not your debts. These do not have to be the skeletons in your closet and the leverage point of your shame. The darkness, which took a room in your memories, can be evicted and the light of hope can shine instead.

The Redeemer will turn your crippled pains into the hands who hold a weeping mother after she had a miscarriage last night. They will wrap a naked child that finally had someone see their affliction and say, “No more!” They will restore the broken with healing hands of hope. They will comfort a wounded one who finally found the courage to leave an abuser, an enabler, or handler and brute. They will feed the starving when they learn He rescues the hungry from their need for more. I do not speak this from philosophical ponderings, but from the blood, sweat, and tears shed in this war that has been raging in my life since the days of my murderous conception.

Every day I woke up dead. Some days I woke up my heart no longer beating, limbs cold as ice. I was a walking monster controlled by many master’s manipulative hands and torturous tricks. I was dying and who was there to tell me, “Don’t quit!” Who was there to say, “Don’t give up!” Where were the believers who saw my bruises and bandaged my bleeding wounds of abuse? I had no mother to comfort me after I was defiled; I had the posters on the wall, toy cars in my pockets, and my fingernails to chew on.

I had no one to hold me when I vomited blood in the toilet at school after a ritual night in third grade. The bullies picked on me and pushed me into lockers calling me a faggot while feasting on my insecurities. Where was the teacher who saw me and prayed for me to be set free? Where were the people who walked in authority and saw the cut marks on my body, the wounded cries for help? Where, please tell me, where were the deliverers? Where were the men and women casting out demons, raising the dead, and giving sight to the blind I read of in His Word?

They were not waiting for me in a church, a seminary, temple or mosque down the road. No matter how many thousands of times I have sat in those places of so called worship I had not seen the power of The Living God and it is time to address why.

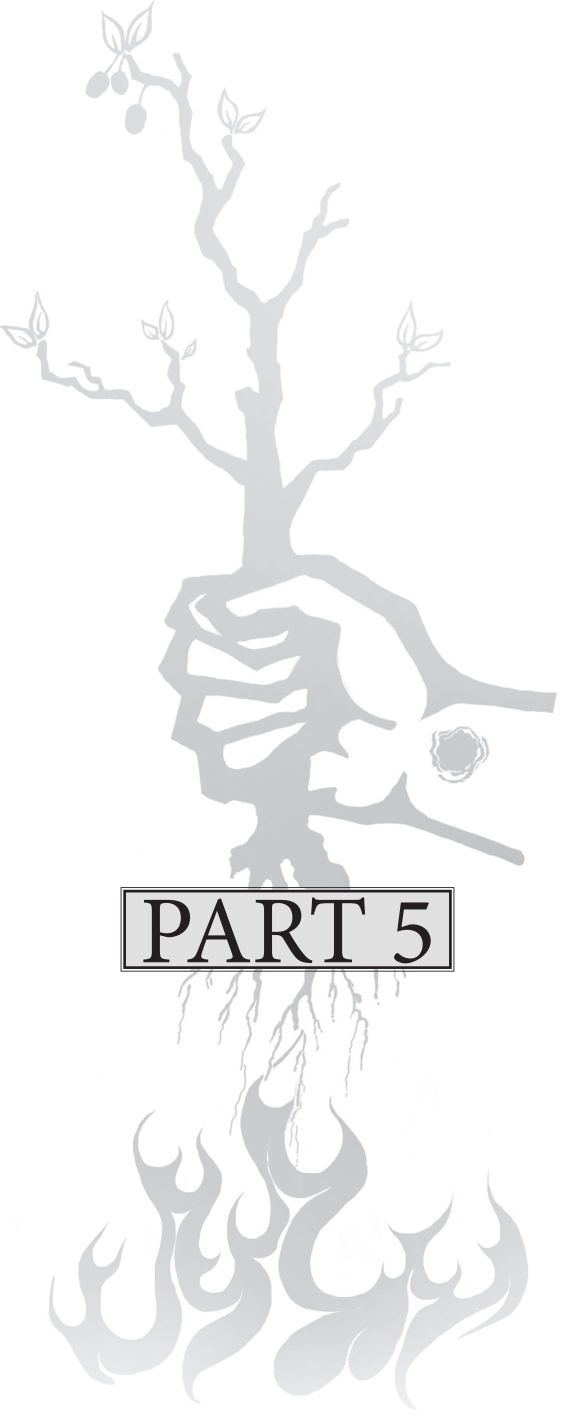

PART 5

Chapter Twenty Two

A Kingdom Divided

Under the ownership of my Family I spent my life in different churches: nearly a dozen different denominations and Christian schools in multiple states. In all of them, I never saw real power, I never saw authority; all I saw was their weakness, and that is why I was there. The Families have no problem taking their pet projects into churches, cathedrals, synagogues, temples, or mosques because there is no power of The Righteous and just King in those places. These sheep are without shepherds; the truth is that ravenous wolves are leading the sheep. They are being drained of their authority and sucked to the last drop.

Where do you think these occult rituals are done? Where do you think the "brothers" used me? We were the altar boys who warmed up your pews. We defiled your "holy" sanctuaries and made sure to compromise your pastors and bishops by the words of our oaths, the bodies of children, or our controlled narcotics. The Families' sons and daughters know how to seduce pastors and politicians all too well. Our tithe checks keep the pretty stained-glass lights on, and your deacons and elders in our pockets.

Please tell me why The One whose name is Holy would be in that place? Why would He who is perfect, just, and mighty come and dwell among you? You are not His children; you are sheep being sheared by the sons of The Wicked One. You do not look like Yeshua Jesus Christ; you are impotent, weak, and perishing. The church is in need of a good Samaritan (one called a half-breed) to come by and rescue it. Our church has become the ravaged man who was beaten, bloody, and destitute on the road going down from Jerusalem. The church body has been divided, split, and beaten into 41,000 pieces we call denominations. Our church is just like Israel during the days of The Judges, when they had no king and every man did what was right in their own eyes. The church is controlled by the apostles of the Devil we call presidents, pastors, deacons, and popes.

The church is a heap of flesh mutilated by the subtle and crafty works of the Enemy. It is dying, and it perished the day we believed inviting Jesus into our hearts was all we ever needed to do to be His. Jesus is not interested in being invited into our hearts; He is interested in the complete and total surrender of His wayward children coming back to Him and being willing to be wholly His. He is looking for those who fall on their faces and weep and wail while they scream out in repentance, "Jesus, Son of David, have mercy on me!" (Mark 10, Luke 18)

Jesus wants the lepers who know they are unclean; Jesus's true church is the male or female hookers possessed by seven demons who fall at His feet and surrender their everything to Him. They are the transgendered, gays, and wounded ones who know their weakness and beg their True Creator to give them their identity and sexuality instead of the fleeting feelings, wounds of abusers, or words of hate. They are the whores of our schools, churches, and synagogues who pour out the fragrance of repentance, and weep over Messiah's pierced feet. Yahweh wants to rescue the smallest child in the most insignificant family and make them a mighty rescuer like Gideon or David. The Great Redeemer wants to see the rich in this world finance the restoration of the broken that they might be made whole, to give of their wealth to the weary and ravaged, and purchase a superior eternal prize.

Our God is interested in total commitments; not eyes closed and heads bowed "please repeat after me" socially acceptable Sunday morning conversions. The horror is that the church is living under a great and terrible curse. We deserve the curse and judgment we are under. Satan is not the one cursing the church with impotence, sickness, adultery, theft, poverty, and gossip, but Yahweh Elohim, the Lord our God is. We have transgressed His commands and His Instructions just as Israel did when the Moabite women seduced them into worshiping their gods and incurring the curse of Yahweh. (Numb. 22-25) The Occult High Ones, witches, and warlocks do not have to curse the church; The Doctrines of Balaam have brought The Father's curse upon us all on their own. (Rev 2:14) Judgment begins in the house of Yahweh. (1 Peter 4:17) The Judgment is already upon us: the dead and powerless church is the judgment, and it's time we cry out for deliverers to rise and set us free.

We are suffering the curse of the Holy God because we have whored ourselves to this world, the lusts of the eyes, and the pride of life. (1 John 2:16) We have yoked ourselves to the desires of this world instead of to The Holiness of God. We have forsaken His truth for the sake of keeping our friends, our jobs, and our number of Facebook status likes. We are cowards claiming we are imitators of the Risen King of Glory. We claim to follow The Way of Jesus who walked among murderers, rebuked the corrupt "church" leadership, and suffered the accusations of His family members' lies. (Mark 3:31) We do not imitate Jesus Christ because we think the master we serve is Messiah but it is our fleshly lusts.

We have been made to believe Jesus's last name was Christ but it's merely a title for "anointed one." We do not look like Jesus, but we imitate christs whose smooth words have made our itching ears find their scratch. We look like the christ who says it's ok not to obey His Word and live and sleep with our girlfriends, eat unclean foods, and gossip behind our friends' backs. These are the christs who fully endorse necromancy and pagan ritualistic workings like "Christian yoga," transcendental meditation, spirit soaking, and grave sucking.

The christs you follow and imitate are not the King of Glory; rather, they are the beguiled apostles of The Wicked One. Is it not written, “Marvel not for Satan himself transforms himself into an angel of light, and his ministers will do likewise?” (2 Cor. 11:14) You have yoked yourself with servants of Satan who masquerade as gospel teaching sons of God. The good news they bring you is prosperity without obedience, happiness without surrender, and wisdom without The Fear of Yahweh. The good news they bring you is that each of us can work out our salvation by trusting our deceit-filled hearts and not judging anyone or speaking the less socially acceptable truths. The good news they bring you is you don’t have to keep any of the commandments of God except “loving God and loving people” (however you think is best) and of course giving them 10% of your money. The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob is not the god who is blessing these money hungry pastors and priests, but rather it is the god of this age and his prince Mammon. Comfortable corporate Christianity has beguiled us, lulling us into a slumber while the world burns in the our indifference and apathy fires we’ve stoked.

The brutal reality is that God is not in our churches because we don’t want Him there. We want to hear our favorite pop song played from the stage; we don’t want humble praise and adoration; we want a *production*. We demand a culturally relevant pastor that will make our New Age friend feel comfortable. We want easily digestible sermons that make us feel better but never convicted. We want an experience, signs, and wonders. We’ve become willing to receive a Kundalini spirit like the “Toronto Blessing” just to convince ourselves that the charismatic craziness of the New Apostolic Reformation is the truth. Our Bethel birthed other spirit soaking music invokes us to hunger for an apostolic anointing without the weeping and lamenting at the holiness of the Creator and the forsaking of our desires. This New Reformation has found its false prophets who’ve convinced it that the demonic horde of Joel’s Army will conquer the seven kingdoms of the world and force Messiah’s return.

We have cursed The Body of Messiah by telling the world we are like Him. We look nothing like Jesus of Nazareth or His disciples. We look like the world – just different flavors of it. We blend into it like the chameleons we are, putting on Christianly smiles on Sunday when we'd got our small group members drunk and watched porn the night before. We baptize people and welcome them to the trending club of "the saved." We've turned Christianity into a status symbol with our gold cross amulets, greasy grace, and edgy tattoos. We have turned theocentric worship of Yahweh into "meocentered" worship of me, myself, and I.

We build our cathedrals on the sites of pagan temples and graveyards where the blood of the innocent flows. We kiss the bones and statues of the dead, hoping these demonically charged relics of "saints" would empower our weak and weary souls. We are a sulfurous stench in the nostrils of The Holy One. When will we be repulsed by our comfortable Christianity and vomit it out for good? When will this Universal (Catholic) Church consecrate itself and be set apart as He called us to be? When will each of us turn and weep before the feet of Messiah and ask Him to forgive us all for the wretched ways of our soul?

Our church is dying; our once purified flesh is rotting off our bones. We need to be the leper screaming so loudly even though the world tried to shut him up. We need to ignore their demands to be silent and weep even more loudly begging our Savior to have mercy on us. We are the unclean lepers; we are sons of the wicked one and of our flesh. We are the ones who hate the conviction of the Holy Spirit and resist His calls to remember His whole Word.

When will we see the blood oozing from our bodies or the shackles on our wrists, and beg Him to save us, the dying hordes? Look around you when you go to church and answer this: does it look anything like what Jesus taught us it would be? Do we behave like those early followers of The Way? Do you see the fruit of the Kingdom of God budding up in the lives of the people of your congregation? Do you ever see a serious focus on prayer: intercession for our enemies, the unsaved, demonized, and cursed? Are you even able to have open discussions with your pastors or elders where you can challenge them on doctrines that are unbiblical or heretical? Or did your deacon and pastor take the Masonic Oaths too? Do you hear preaching on the power of boldness, humility, fasting, or memorizing The Word? Do you see a love that forgives as many times as it's been forgiven? Do you see patience, self-control, healing of the sick, and deliverance from addictions, demons, and depression? Do you see faith conquering fears of death, men, and monotony?

The rotting fruit in our churches is because we are rooted in the wrong tree. The death of the church came the day we separated ourselves from The Way, The Truth, and The Life, The Vine who is Jesus. He is The True Vine, and we are supposed to be the branches, and yet we have gone outside His protected vineyard and planted our own trees. We have rooted these trees in the devilish doctrines of Dispensationalism and Universalism.

The fruits of our churches are mingled with maggots and stink of sulfur because our 41,000 denominations and doctrines do not come from the feet of The Author of our faith, but the divisive tactics of the Enemy and the doctrines of devils. Have you no eyes to see? We are not some New Testament concept called "the church;" we who are the called out ones are supposed to be Israel, The People, not the chunk of dirt, rocks, and relics in the Middle East. We who follow Messiah are the lost sheep of the House of Israel, those who Jesus came for. (Matt. 15:24, Luke 15:4-6) The people who by birth or by belief choose to follow in His Ways become part of His chosen, set apart people Israel, the children of God. (Jer. 3, 31:27-34, Hosea, James, 1 Peter 2:9, 1 John)

Just like the Israelites in the times of the Judges and Samuel, Ezra, Isaiah, and Jeremiah, as well as for the past thousands of years since, we have forsaken our first Love. We have whored ourselves out to the gods of this age because they have made us comfortable and have given our itching ears what we want to hear. The deceitful doctrines have infiltrated our hearts and beliefs, and convinced us that we are gods: we can determine which portion of the whole testament of Yahweh's Instructions applies to us in this "dispensation of grace." We can rightly divide Scripture by tearing out the pages that sting our flesh and give us the freedom to sin instead. Woe unto us who divide and fracture the Word of God with dispensations and absolve ourselves of its perfect blessings and bear its curses instead. We have drunk the lies of The Serpent just like our fathers before us did.

We too have believed the lies from The Garden, "Has God not said…?" The first attack of The Serpent against the children of Yahweh targeted the Commandments of Yahweh. Why do you think he targets them still to this day? Why won't your pastor tell you to obey the commandments of God? Why does he think he can pick which ones we should obey? Why will they throw a fit about the Ten Commandments getting removed from a government building and yet refuse to obey them or teach you to do likewise? Why do most Christians choose to follow nine commandments of the ten but forsake the one about keeping and guarding The Sabbath? It is because they love to throw out the commands of the Old Testament and claim we are not "under them" anymore, and yet they do not obey the 1,000 that are in The New Testament either.

Why do you never hear your pastor teach you that your obedience is better than your sacrifice? Would your pastor tell you that following the commandments of God is more important than anything you can ever do with your life? Would he ever say that freely and lovingly obeying God's Instructions is more important than going to his church, paying your tithe, buying his worship CD, or going to confession or mass? Why do think he won't teach on the holiness of Yahweh and the holiness of Jesus? It is because obedience and sacrifice are unpopular, untaught, and bad for their big business and seminary approved resumes.

It is because the church fears how few our number would be if we forsook the doctrines of men and taught instead the commandments of Yeshua Jesus instead. They fear the untainted Instruction-keeping doctrine of Jesus and instead teach only the dispensational doctrines of man, and the universal catechisms of powerless traditions. The Enemy loves the weak and comfortable Christianity we've whored ourselves to. But there is power, abundance, provision, and miracles in obedience. It is time I share with you the power I have seen in The Living Body of Messiah.

The reason I was dragged from church to church, Christian school to Christian school was to see the weak and wimpy body of believers who could not detect a demonized child in their classroom or sitting next to them in the pews. They were powerless, vulnerable, and easy to deceive. They were terrified of the demons I summoned and sent against their families to haunt their dreams and cause them to scream in fear. They were cowards because they'd lost their identity in the God of Israel, the King of Glory. The day this stopped was when a real daughter of God stripped me of my power. The day I learned there was real power in the authority of Jesus came when a 13-year-old girl named Suze did not run. She did not hide when she saw past my masks of deception and into the darkness of my soul, but instead, she stood boldly in who she was. She was a faithful daughter of the Resurrected King, and she saved my life. Let her story testify to the power of prayer and salvation that is waiting for those who genuinely bear the name of Jesus with power, humility, and strength.

Chapter Twenty Three

A Girl Named Suze

We had gotten a letter from a girl on our way to school. She had written,

“I’m sorry your heart hurts, and I know why. You gave up too early, your chase for meaning, matter and more. You matter more than this, and I know it is true…”

She was in seventh grade, and we met her on the bus early one morning. Our violin was in our hands as we had to take the early bus for orchestra practice. She said her name was Suze. They lived in a house with three acres and she had a horse there, but it belonged to her neighbors. One morning the sound of joy flooded into our heart as this young teenager leaned over and told me,

“Do you want to know a secret?”

She didn’t know I was a slave programmed to kill, but this phrase opened up an internal doorway to the river that flowed into the abyss of my heart where The Secrets were held. She said these words and opened a dialogue box, placed her letter in it, and it said just that. It was not the first time Suze and I had talked, but it would change all the rules and save my life.

Just a week before that moment of joy, she sat down in the seat next to mine on a frosty November morning. She said, "Nate, I think we should talk about something I don't understand." She did something so unexpected and so unpredictable: she touched my broken skin with her flawless freckled flesh. She picked up my left hand and saw the bruises on my knuckles, the split sores and blisters that peppered my palms. "I want to know where these came from and you have to tell me the truth. You don't need to be afraid; I promise I won't tell; I just see those same things on a lot of the boys' hands in this town, and I want to know where they come from."

I screamed out internally desperately trying to tell her about The Blade, the Boy, and the Child who fights grown men in the cage. She looked deep I could feel it: there was a sadness and a desperate need to know. She wanted to help us, and I know it is true. She was a helper, a healer, a kind one named Suze, but we were programmed to lie, and it was all we could do. We laughed and said, "It's because the boys in this town are all stuntmen on the playground. We are daredevils who will climb anything no matter how high." I automatically added, "My buddies and I play on the monkey bars until our palms swell, and sometimes we fall on our knuckles when we land in the dirt."

She saw right through me, knowing my answer was not true. I bruised my knuckles two days earlier when I punched one of those other kids' skull. Bare knuckle fighting is not like the movies: knuckles crashing into skull bones are going to leave a mark. He was still breathing after we'd stopped and for that I was thankful. We fought in a cage they built for large dogs kept in kennels. Twenty feet long and thirteen feet wide, they shoved us in there and prod us to fight. They prod us with shock sticks that emitted sparks on our skin when we resisted; sticks normally used by ranchers in the area to drive cattle into the places they wanted them to go. We "fought" for twenty minutes; it was just a sparring match of different methods and techniques as neither of us was given a blade to bring it to an end. It was a sport for money as gambling is legal on The Reservation.

Suze didn’t know it, but she had moved into a town like hell, where men were monsters who peddled children and slaughtered babies to summon devils and murder hope. This city I lived in was a “high place” where demons and men came from the desert to dance and delight. It had a strategically located airport which facilitated many of the plans of “he who shall not be named” and their Familial interests. It was at the school where so many of us went that they picked children and made them into a sport. They selected the ones who were furious fighters or seductive “screwers,” as whatever the clients desired could always be accommodated. I was their product perfected by both; these perverts had been using me for years, and I had gotten used to it. What more could they do than what had already been done? My dissociative soul split almost daily and I didn’t know why.

Suze stared into my soul, while I got lost in these thoughts. How could I tell her all these things? It would break her heart if they did not kill her for knowing. The man who lives two doors from her paid for these things. He watched us fight a teen that kicked us in the back so hard we could barely walk. To cover my limp up, they made me tell my teachers that it was from jumping off the playground too many times “performing my stunts.” Weeks before this, I’d felt like my feet had exploded when they beat them with paddles. It shatters the soul when they slap your feet so hard they blister and boil, so many nerves stinging away. The Brutes did this to me while they programmed backdoors and booby traps, which would trigger fury, rage, and murderous pain.

Then in a moment the atmosphere in the bus changed. I was not a child of God but a son of Belial, and I knew how to rid us of these questions. The girl sitting next to me was now shivering and cold. I knew it was not from the weather but from the demons in my heart that do this when they manifest. It came from the opening of a doorway from this realm to theirs. FEAR, DEATH, PAIN, SORROW – they are servants of the Dark One who were placed into me on that trapezoidal altar of gold inlay, stone, and wood.

Many eyes stared at Suze they poured out their fury and pain, and yet the girl did not care. Suze just sat there and stared as I tried to make her leave; I spoke a curse against her: "Run away and flee this place. Run away and never look back, to be tormented by demons who will make sure of that." This curse had worked on everybody before. People, especially Christians, fear these demons so much it is scary, but here sat this girl unwavering. She looked deeper still, her eyes piercing my soul. They saw past my shields, dams, and inner walls. She saw my heart not in pieces but as a whole. I knew that when her eyes had seen my heart, and she did not run away, it was something that had never happened before.

Everyone who looked deep ran away before they saw our abyss, but not this thirteen-year-old girl who wore glasses and sometimes lisped. She said,

"*I am sorry, Nate, for what has happened to you. I will pray for you tonight like I always do. God told me to. He said, 'Pray for that boy no matter what he says.' So I do, Nate, because I know God loves you.*"

Like a match to dynamite, the atmosphere shifted from The Kingdom of Darkness to the Kingdom of Light. It was an explosion of power that caused my demons to tremble and I saw that they were afraid for the first time in my life.

She said this as my demons screamed, "RUN, RUN, RUN AWAY, GET AWAY NOW NO MATTER THE COST!" They are the words of these KEEPERS who activate this program and send us scurrying up to the front of the bus and away from her eyes. We hide and are not allowed to look anywhere but the ground, "TRANSPORTING PRODUCT KEEPS ITS EYES ON THE GROUND, OR IT GETS POUNDED DOWN." We obey, and she lets us run away. We'd never seen power like that; who knew there was power which did not hide from our dark ones and could turn the tables against us and say such kind things.

We saw her the next day, and she walked past us towards the back of the bus. We breathed a sigh of relief as our Familiars calmed down. We never saw her work her way down to the seat behind mine. My head was leaning against the window, fogging the glass. Halfway to school, we heard her whispers, and it changed our life. She said those words and opened up our heart.

She said, "Can you keep a secret?"

I don't know how she knew to say these things, but they opened up that programmed part which wrote down a letter of the words she spoke next. The message would be placed in a box; this would be sealed and floated down the river to be sent to the abyss of my heart where the children keep secrets.

"*I'm sorry your heart hurts, and I know why. You gave up too early, your chase for meaning, matter, and more. You always mattered more than this and I know it is true. God told me to tell you these words when I prayed for you last night. He told me there is always hope no matter what color the robe is that they put on your back. He knows your name, Nathan, and He will bring you back.*"

These were words of rescue, a life raft of redemption, thrown into the midst of our chaos. She said these words as the demons exploded; they screamed at her through us as we stood to our feet, cursing again.

We bellow out, "*&#!* I hate your soul!"

I wanted to cry inside as they made us run again to the front of the bus. We heard her weeping, and it broke our heart. We were robots and wanted control of our body and the will of our soul returned to us. How could she know these things we told no one? We broke her heart, and she never talked to us again. She moved that next year and I don't know where. We were made to forget the words she spoke. The Brute found them when we told him so. We always told them whenever he asked us so. He made us "never remember and always forget" that Suze ever existed and that God ever cared. We lost our hope and cried all day. We wept not knowing why.

It didn't matter because she obeyed The Holy Spirit and prayed for me still. She walked by us each morning on that early bus, and smiled anyway. She smiled at me every morning for nearly a year. She sat by a fifth-grade boy only a handful of times and yet that thirteen-year-old girl saved my life. She prayed for a boy who was killing men for money, degrees, power, and control, to uphold The Secrets sworn during The Oath. She was a child of God and now so am I. She breathed His Words of hope into the abyss of my soul.

A thirteen-year-old follower of Messiah saved my life in the fifth grade, what she didn't know was that my father worshiped the light bearer (*Halal Son of Sheher*) in secret but went to a charismatic "spirit-filled church" down the road. The dispensationally indoctrinated pastor of that church once came into my room to try to cleanse our house. My "Christian parents" called him to ask for help. They told him I had been having night terrors for weeks and they wanted it to stop. My parents didn't tell him it's because my great-grandpa was raping me in the hours just after midnight, long before the dawn.

The pastor came into our little house and after sitting down with my parents and me, he decided to go and look into my room. I could feel the fear smash into him when he stepped into our defiled space. He paced around our room and then he stated that he discerned demons were in my room. He said this was what was causing my night terrors, not the fear of the clock striking two. Even when that brute of a Family member didn't come and have his way with us for weeks, we would scream, panic, and kick. We thought he was coming and begged him to get out. Most nights no one would come through the door, but all too often he did.

The pastor discerned that the demons were coming from the wall I shared with my grandpa. He prayed and said they were inside the poster I had hanging up of a Jurassic Park T-REX bursting through a wall. I'd saved up my money for two months and bought it at Universal Studios when we'd been taken there the previous summer; it glowed in the dark. After hearing the pastor's words, my dad grabbed our poster off the wall and threw it out in the trash.

I saw it crumpled, wrinkled, and torn. It was my favorite thing in the room; it brought me courage in the darkness and was my only night light. I could see it in the trash from my bedroom window. I looked at it after the pastor left, feeling like he did something right. I, however, felt like he had taken my only hope. That poster meant more to me then he could have comprehended. The poster didn't have the demons on it; the man who lived in the room next to mine did. My grandpa slept there, and when he didn't sleep, he came and brutalized, manipulated, and controlled me. I believe that powerless pastor had good intentions, but he never stood a chance against The Kingdom of Darkness. He was a sheared sheep led by the wolves.

That night we gave up hope. Hours later, Grandpa came as the clock struck two, and we split off a piece of our soul too big to survive what he did. We tore away a chunk of our heart and threw it in the trash outside. That poster was our night-light, but instead, we had darkness fill the madness of my room. We wanted to die that night. We wanted to leave this awful place they call life and be welcomed into a new one. We wanted to go and never come back, to run from this hell and get into heaven instead. We tried to find peace, but our only hope had been thrown in the trash.

We did not want to die, but we didn't know what else to do. We gave up; we couldn't take another minute of this cruel world, and we surrendered to the split. We knew it would be more painful than ever as we had so little left to tear.

Our heart was left bleeding on the floor when we finally woke up. The sun was not up yet, and we still had "to clean ourselves up." We woke up that morning believing this was all there ever was. That maybe Dutch, my friend who lived down the road from my house, had to endure incest at night. We had to assume this was normal, just like any person who wakes up with another bruise on their face justifies it away as another drunken mistake.

My heart was stuck there, and I didn't want it back. I left it in the trash, crumpled, torn, and in tatters. We watched the dump truck pull up a few days later. Our hearts sloughed into the compactors open jaw as the man pulled a black handled lever and crushed our soul. He drove off as if nothing happened; his tires bore the weight of a heart now even more broken. I watched him turn the corner and move on to the next house; I think he eventually dumped it in a mound outside of town.

What do you do when they buried your heart in a dump eighteen years ago? What do you do when the lion's share of your heart was torn off of your soul and made to pass through incestuous fires? What do you do when you wake up and have to limp to the bathroom for the second time that week? You *survive* and get tougher than you thought possible, or you give up and decide to die. We refused the latter and had always done the former. We were survivors.

Before I could pack my lunch, I had learned how to leave the rape, rage, and ragged edge parts of my soul in the trash outside. The men with their trucks, shovels, and bulldozers could do what they did best; bury our heart somewhere no one wanted to look. No one wanted to look at the horror or the hell that was my life any longer than was necessary. While this may work with trash, it does not work with trauma, torture, and regret.

It was not my choice to make my heart break; it had been programmed into me since I was conceived. My whole life I'd been conditioned to break along the lines my abusers scored into the surface of my soul. Some cracks broke cleanly along the prepared points of pain; others shattered splitting off shards that were sharp and deadly. One piece tore to ribbons and was left to be used as the dumping grounds of our inner world.

The Father saw us in that ragged state, in that place of pain, crumpled in a heap, He provided us a new heart of hope when He showed us the truth. That morning we woke up after our grandpa had done his deed. We'd walked to the bathroom and showered off. We dressed quickly and ate a bowl of oatmeal before the house stirred. We checked our violin and rosined its bow. We put on our shoes and walked out the door. We stood on the dirt across from our house. We shivered against the cold as we stared at our crumpled poster in the trash. We knew something terrible had happened but had "always forgotten" what. We saw the bus turn onto our street and readied our hands. We stepped onto the stairs as our bus driver, Sue, opened the door.

There were no seats open in the first nine rows, so we picked the tenth. We sat on the left like we always did, hoping to hide our heads on the window's frosted glass. The bus rumbled on as we gazed at that poster and thought it was trash. Our life was trash, and we hoped we might die. The bus made more stops, and before we realized it, a girl sat down next to us. We looked over and saw her then. Her smile was electric and full of life. She looked over at us for an introduction and said,

"Hi, my name is Suze."

A thirteen-year-old girl saved my life that morning. She did not know I had given up last night, but Jesus did. He sent His beloved child to protect that tattered piece of my soul and keep it breathing. She spoke such kindness to us, and her prayers kept my heart beating. She did not run from me like the other Christians but anchored herself in The Messiah. She had something the church has lost: child-like faith and a reckless love for the lost.

I write these words in desperate prayer for her and for our church. I pray she reads these words some day and knows what she did. I knew her for hardly a month, but she did more in that month than I have done in years. She spoke her words of faith boldly. The Lion of the tribe of Judah sent a teenage girl to save my heart on a cold morning many years ago. She prayed and prayed for us; we know it was true. She prayed over our heart, and those prayers kept it hidden and safe. I don't know where she went or moved off to but no matter the place, I love you, Suze. I pray your faith is broad and bold, and your courage is too.

I am alive today because someone was willing to pray, someone looked closer and saw a hurting heart and our bruised knuckles. In all the years of my life, she was one of the few. She saw us with The Father's eyes and was not scared or disgusted. She helped us know there was still hope for the hurting, abandoned, fatherless sons and daughters. She met the needs of an orphan, and The Father is so proud. She obeyed His Words and spoke The Truth.

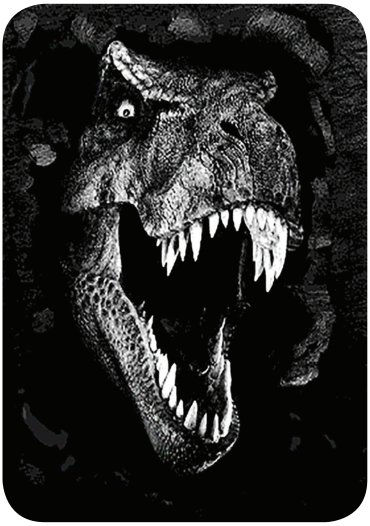

Yahweh knew our names, and He was coming soon. He rescued us that morning as He always does. His joy broke through our burdens and pain. His light scattered the darkness and set us all free. We don't need a glow-in-the-dark T-Rex poster to escape to if we have made His refuge our dwelling place. We have hidden under the shelter of His wings. We no longer hunger and starve because His Word is our daily bread, and we have grown capable, strong, and full. Our thirst has been quenched by the Living Waters flowing from The Father's throne; we have confidence now and can enter into His presence with a boldness of faith, knowing The Lamb's blood has purchased us forever.

We are sealed by The Holy Spirit and have been given a mission from The King. We are told to go into all the world making disciples by preaching The Good News to every creature. If they are a fifth-grade boy whose knuckles are bruised or the man who locked two kids in cages for sport, they both are prisoners of pain, torment, and shame. I know the true Lord Jesus, and He came to redeem them all. We are His treasured children and its time you all know this is so. We pray people will listen but understand that most won't. We pray without ceasing knowing our prayers have power, and The Father hears and answers them all.

Save your people, Father Yahweh, we beg you now; help set them free. Set this powerless church free from its shackles. May they learn the truth: that power comes from obedience, holiness, and perfect love, which casts out all fear. That pastor was like all the others, a man who was a disciple of the doctrines of men rather than the commandments of His Creator. The Good News is not that sinners can be saved from hell so they can live a meaningless, powerless life to one day go to a happy heaven. The Good News is that the prodigal sons and daughters, the lost sheep of The House of Israel can be made inheritors of The Almighty God of heaven and earth, and with that freedom comes new hearts that walk The Way Jesus taught.

We can be clothed with power from on high like Stephen in Acts 8 or Peter who feared a child's persecutory words one day and boldly proclaimed obedience to his Master when he faced whips and scourges a few months later. There is power in the living Vine, the Body of Messiah, just not in our churches. There will never be power in our churches; there will only ever be power in the followers of The Way.

Chapter Twenty Four

Learning His Ways

The power of the Church comes when we out of our love for Him choose to obey His Word. It is His Law and commandments we must once again learn in order to be empowered to fulfill our calling. The Instructions of Yahweh especially those first five books written by the finger of Yahweh Elohim are the power source for the Body of Messiah. (Deuteronomy 9) "The Law" as we read it does not mean what most Greco-Roman indoctrinated people today thinks it means, but in actuality it translates to "The Loving Instructions of The Father."

His Law is not a burden but rather the only source of blessings that comes with clear and easy to understand instructions on how to receive and fulfill it. How could any pastor or professor say that Jesus came to do away with The Loving Instructions of The Father? He told us that if we have seen Him (Jesus), we have seen The Father; their ways will never be in contradiction or at odds. (John 14) How could we, fleshly people, claim Paul advocated for disobedience to and dismissal of the doctrines of the Messiah who instructed him? Jesus walked with absolute authority on this earth because His identity was secured in His obedience to Yahweh's Instructions found in His Torah, The Prophets, and The Writings.

If Christians claim to be imitators of Jesus, then why don't they do as He did? Why don't they keep the Biblical Feasts and Sabbaths, eat what Yahweh said to eat and live as He lived? We know throughout His life He perfectly kept the commandments of the Torah, which brought a blessing that Satan himself could not take from Him. Why would we not want to be like Him or His disciples who were like Him when they obeyed Him?

The cure for the cancer infecting the church is in being set apart (holy) like He is holy. Our Church should look like the Torah-obeying Jesus, the perfect Israelite, and not like this tainted and corrupt world, like gaudily dressed bishops, or like white collared priests. We – all of us who follow His ways – are called to be *peculiar* people, a royal priesthood that is dedicated wholly unto the King. (1Peter 2) We should be set apart, holy unto Him, not wholly of the world.

We will look like Him when we follow His Ways, when we learn His Word and obey it. We – like the Israelites of Judges – must go through the pains of captivity and slavery under destructive judgments until we learn the same lesson as they did. They had to learn that Yahweh Elohim alone was their King. Obedience to His Loving Instructions brought them the blessings of living in peace, of healthy children, of material providence, of deliverance from persecutions, and eternal springs of hope. The Church must go through the book of Judges before we can ever hope to go through the Book of Acts. Once we submit ourselves to the kingship of Jesus and obey Him, then we will have the power to raise the dead, and to walk in the prosperity of the blessings of Deuteronomy 28 and not the curses.

In that day, we will have the power to tread down lions and scorpions, and to walk in the valley of the shadow of death and not be afraid because obedience to Yahweh builds an impenetrable shield of protection around a person that no technological, mechanical or spiritual enemy can stand against. The reason the looked over shepherd boy stood against the demonized Nephilim giant Goliath, while all the rest of Israel's warriors hid in the rocks like the cowards they were, was because David knew who he was.

David was a man after Yahweh's own heart because on David's heart was written The Torah. The Instructions of Yahweh had circumcised the foreskin of David's heart, and David's first love was for The Instructions of Yahweh. I beg you to read Psalms 1 and 119; read it and be an imitator of The Scripture, not a hearer only. David's freedom, courage, and boldness came from his identity as a child of Yahweh.

Never before or since has Israel the people been so blessed as they were under the kingship of David. This perfect blessing will not return until The Torah who became flesh, Instruction obeying Son of God is forever enthroned. Even in the great and eternal reign of Jesus, we will keep the Biblical Feasts. No one will enter His New Jerusalem except through one of the gates of the 12 tribes; which tribe we become will be His to decide, but all of us must become Israelites, by birth or by belief. Why not learn His Way now before we do it with Him forever? What if we prepared ourselves for eternity with the Perfect One instead of waiting for it to be our great escape from misery and monotony?

Yahweh told us where His blessings come from and we need to read and obey the whole Bible – even the parts we've disobeyed and ignored throughout our lives. Blessings, safety, and peace come from obedience, not from your manipulated tithe, not from your "name it and claim it", not from your seed faith, not from the anointing oils, holy water, or Babylonian ritual Rosary Beads, but from surrender. Our offerings to the Holy God should be our holiness, our set-apartness, our willingness to look more like Yahweh and Jesus than like this world.

Do you know why those who have persecuted the real followers of The Way never had any trouble finding them to put them in the Coliseum or to light as torches at night? Do you know why the real body of Messiah can be rounded up when obeying Messiah is outlawed, like when the Roman Catholic Church made it an executable offense to observe The Sabbath or celebrate the Biblical feasts? It is because The Remnant look like Daniel who still bowed to Yahweh alone when the laws of the nation said it was illegal. They do not hide from the light of examination as those who walk in darkness do.

It is because they looked nothing like the pagans worshiping Saturnalia or Christmas, knowing it was not even Jesus's birthday. They did not eat pork in honor of Tammuz on Ishtar's (Easter) day when we know Messiah was slain and resurrected during Passover and First Fruits. They were not working on the Sabbath but were gathering together, fellowshipping, and studying His Whole Testament. They were keeping The Feasts of Yahweh, not the pagan holy days of the world repackaged by The Universal (Catholic) Church to help pagans feel comfortable with their pantheistic "Christianity."

The true church is not a building but a body of people who are lovers of The Way, The Truth, and The Life, Jesus of Nazareth, and who seeking to walk on His narrow Torah-observant path. They have lost friends and family, farms and fortunes because they forsook the broad way of the world (which includes religions too) and followed their Teacher Jesus instead.

They were hated by the world for His Name's sake. We are not hated by this world because we do not love Jesus. I know many of you are screaming with internal conversations about what I just said, but please hear me: we who call ourselves Christians do not love Jesus, not The Way He told us to. As Jesus commanded us, so too we must all obey: "If you love me, keep My Commandments." (John 14:15-31, 15:10, Matt. 5:19, 1 John 2:3, 5:3, 2 John 1:6) There was no new testament when He said it, and He meant it then, and He still means it now. Obedience is how we show Him we love Him. We cannot have a love-filled faith without works, and our works of righteousness are outlined in The Instructions, which start in Genesis.

This is not about salvation; keeping the commandments does not save you, but once you believe on His Name by faith through grace and mercy you can become saved on the day of your judgment. Now it's time you learn His Commandments so you can be like Him. Don't you want the power to walk on water and deliver a man possessed by thousands of demons? Don't you want to be able to stand before a hurricane and command it to be still? What would it feel like to walk into a children's hospital and heal every single patient in that place? Do you not want to bless the little food you have and see it multiplied and fed to tens of thousands? What would this world look like if we did not fear the convicts, parolees, and felons or the homeless, and the prostitutes but boldly stepped into their fringe worlds and shared Messiah's hope with them? What could this world look like if we repented for our failures to the freaks, the misfits, and rebels who rage against God?

What would this world look like if the poor, the fatherless, and the widows in our congregations never had to go on food stamps or government benefits, but instead we provided them all they needed? What if instead of debt-laden church buildings and pastors' student loans soaking up the tithe, we met in our houses, apartments, or parks and each week our tithes went towards paying off one family's debts, medical bills, or high-interest loans, and then the next, and the next?

What if we were not dependent on our jobs but were the innovators, the entrepreneurs, and creators of income instead of being dependent on our task masters every paycheck? What if we cashed out our 401k accounts, stocks, retirement plans, and purchased human slaves and gave them freedom instead? Hear me: retirement from Kingdom work on a padded golf course or elite country club is not biblical; it's worldly and wicked. Forsake your flesh and get in the game of life. There is no retiring from working in The Kingdom of Heaven because many are the needs and great is the harvest awaiting its workers.

Men are dying today while you look at your investment portfolio and hope to be able to have enough money to spend on yourself and on your family until you die. Babies are screaming in the darkness, abandoned by mothers who have to work the truck stops of your very town just to survive; you could be the one paying her rent and groceries instead of the greasy ten dollar bills earned in the shadows. Netflix binges will never satisfy you like buying a hungry man a meal or giving him the spare room in your basement. The Way of Messiah is all about our little becoming much, our faith and obedience becoming a brilliant beacon of hope.

What if we walked into the pagan temples, or those Gnostic realms of deceit and called out their devoted practitioners and challenged them to call upon their gods while we called upon Yahweh Elohim and fire consumed our offering and drove the people to repentance as in the days of Elijah in 1 Kings 18? What if we could finally be entrusted with the power of Yahweh and His prophets who called the people back to obeying and worshiping Yahweh The Way He instructed us to? What if we raised the dead at funerals and walked into fiery furnaces of public mocking's and familial hatred? We can and we will.

In that day when The Remnant of Jesus leave the powerless church and become part of His faith-filled vine, I assure you of this: the world will know where the children of The Most High God are. They would not have to wonder if you were a believer in Messiah. They would not have to see your Facebook "religion" description to know. No, they would see our good deeds and praise our Father in heaven. It would draw so many who have longed for salt and light, who have longed for freedom, power, and hope. The few who follow The Way would shine brighter than ten thousand dead churches with their filled up pews.

But those who would not praise our Father would hate us as He promised us they would. Then they could come for us and throw us in their pits and demand us to be silent as we convicted them of their sins, called them to turn from their former ways, and showed kindness to the wounded and gentleness to the weak and weary. In that day we would be set apart, we would be holy unto Jesus Christ, The Savior of the world. We would walk in authority; The Kingdom of God would walk with us because it would be flourishing within our hearts and overflowing into the lives of this world. The world would know that we walked in an abundance of salty truth with power-filled grace to obey and surrender to The Ways we have learned.

The Father never desired a temple built by pagans with its masonic twin pillars, cornerstone, and fixed location men did. In The Wilderness, He commanded His people to build for Him a tabernacle of skin. A Yurt like tabernacle of animal skins that moved where He moved, which lived and moved and breathed. The True Tabernacle of Yahweh will never be built up my manipulated men in Jerusalem on a desecrated mount because the New Tabernacle for His Spirit is in our hearts. We are to be The Tabernacle of Yahweh so the Kingdom of God can have skin on and be the living, active Body of Messiah on this earthly realm.

Once we fully surrender to His explosive story of redemption we would not look like the false religions of the world, even those that claim Christ as their cornerstone. We would be the living stones of Jesus, who do greater things than even He did while on this earth. The Spirit of Truth would abide in us as The All-Consuming Fire used to abide with the Israelites in the wilderness. It would testify to all the nations: “Here are the people of Yahweh.”

Then The Families and Chosen Ones would see. Then they would know that the true bloodline of authority and kingship does not course through their veins, and it is not found in their genealogies; even you who think you carry the seed of Christ, you have been deceived. You “King Fishers” have preserved not the blood of The Redeemer in your bloodlines but that of a deceiver. You have been beguiled, played by the masquerading spirits that led our fathers astray before The Rebels’ tower fell. The real power to rule is in the mighty right hand of Messiah. He is the one who will rule the earth forever, not your chosen one. The Rider on the white horse is coming with His great armies, and the earth will rock and sway under His glory and fury. The crowned and conquering child king you hold so dear will be crushed beneath His once pierced feet.

PART 6

Chapter Twenty Five

The Inner Worlds

What is it like being married to a man of many? What is it like when we are back home and going about our daily lives? It is not what you think.

The process of healing and restoration can look very different from what most would imagine. I spent six years of my life wondering what it would be like to just be me, to be naked and unashamed, to know the feeling of unconditional love. What is it like to wake up and be able to be whomever you wanted to be, unhindered by handlers and manipulators? It was joyful beyond measure, overwhelming, and heart-wrenching agony.

Some days were better than others. The first nine months of my deepest healing were the worst. They were plunged into the depths of chaos looking for lost pieces of my shattered soul. I needed time to heal; I needed to experience lifetimes of comfort and gentleness. I needed to know I would not be condemned for what I'd done to survive, the things I'd been made to do and were done to me. Chelsea along with a biblically gifted and spiritually discerning counselor helped to ensure these were offered to me. With that being said I need to make sure to take a moment to discuss therapists and counselors for Survivors of trauma or survivors of "normal" life.

There is a quagmire of problems infesting counselors and therapists especially those who are "Christian." The unfortunate truth is that most of them have been indoctrinated into worldly, unbiblical, but profitable methods of counseling, psychiatric and symptom management and treatments protocols. The primary and biggest thing to guard against when you are looking for a counselor is to test what their true doctrines and approaches are.

For example in no way do I support any memory retrieval techniques such as hypnotism, past life regression, or even guided imagery like many schools of theophostic and New Age infiltrated counselors teach. In no way should individuals go about astral projecting into the second heavenly realms and dimensions to do battles or find fragments and personalities. The Captain of The Heavenly Host is more then capable to do this work as we pray and agree with His will. Furthermore, there is no need to try to have SRA/DID clients imagine new things or go after memories while in dissociative states, let alone under the control of other potential handlers or manipulators. Unfortunately, this happens with regularity. Many handlers and cult loyal therapists under the guise of "Christian Counselors" will reprogram Survivors to go back to their abusers; perpetrators or worse still get them to re-engage in ritual majik and the opening of further spiritual doors to The Enemy.

It is critical to learn how to allow The Wonderful Counselor and His Living Word to do the real work to test the spirits (1 John) and walk in truth. However there can and are some, though not many, quality and trustworthily counselors out there who are gifted and disciplined in their understanding of The Word and this complex issue. They are faithfully and humbly ministering and working to see the restoration and deliverance of SRA/DID.

It is critical to test the fruits of these counselors or teachers' doctrines and approaches before you just jump in. More often then not the more secularly educated or New Apostolic Reformation indoctrinated they are they tend to have the greatest hindrance to following truly Biblical approaches to healing and restoration. This is why each of us must learn to trust Yahweh's written Scriptures and His Set-Apart Spirit is a better guide to our inner healing than any fleshly being could hope to be. If you are in need of another to help you along in this I know He is faithful to help provide them to all who have need. That being said, the vast majority of my healing and those of most Survivors is not done through outside counselors but through faithful yielding to His restorative work. Much of this ground work is critical to set up a better understanding for the methods of healing and redemption of past bondages and wounds I will now discuss.

When Survivors believe it is safe to let your other parts or personalities come out or come up and experience the world the real healing can begin. Coming up to the surface gives the personality body time where they can experience the world in a different way from what they've known. It is a time of great vulnerability, and often there is a tremendous amount of fear, confusion, and insecurity. More often than not, the last time they'd experienced life, it had been so horrific that they had to shatter their soul. As such, their understanding of reality was locked up in shattered lenses of pain, suffering or terror. The Little who was coming up was in need of healing. Every day we would pray and ask The Holy Spirit to show us anything we needed to see to be set free, but we also prayed that He would buffer the pain, emotions or flooding to not cause us further trauma.

These parts or as I like to call them, "Littles," are often fragments and pieces of my soul that were shattered off during a moment of such insurmountable pain the only way to survive was to split off so the rest of our soul could go on living. They are the Littles who stood in the face of torture and volunteered to take the pain, the beatings, or the killings. They endured death time and time again. If not for them, surely I could not have survived a single moment of madness.

Dissociation is a miraculous gift from God that allows us to survive things no being should have to endure. It is our way of living when all others would perish. It is not supposed to be permanent or an identity we continue to seek to embrace, but rather a way to endure and then heal when we can.

The pain the Littles carry can be brutal and is often physically debilitating. Our bodies were not made to endure so many traumas. Our bodies carry the pain or the marks of abuse until that trauma pocket or neural network is able to share the load and release the pain. Many days I would wake up in the morning with excruciating lower back pain. The pain was so severe I could not stand; I would crawl around instead on my hands and knees, trying to be a helper to Chelsea and Naomi but just being a mess. My body needed to connect to the pain so that my soul and spirit could deal with the reality of what we went through.

Once I felt truly safe and I was able to either meet with my counselor or sit down and write, I could allow the Littles up and let them speak. Sometimes I would be co-conscious and present as the other personality shared their story, the memory, or the reason for their hurt. Other times a full switch would happen, and another personality would be in the driver's seat. We did not allow any portion of our personality body time unless it had surrendered to the will of God and renounced its service to The Enemy. I was not about to let my body be used as a tool for The Wicked One; however, I was going to let healing be done according to The Holy Spirit.

The Little often needed to describe the moment they split, the ritual they were partakers of, or the physical abuse they'd survived. They would share their memory and found that they would not be condemned. Not by Chelsea, my counselor, or by The Deliverer. So much of the healing would come when we discovered the source of the lie that had caused them to split or prevented them from getting healed. It was most often associated with guilt or shame or fear that Jesus would condemn us, our wife would leave us, or retribution would come for speaking The Secrets.

Commonly, an identity crisis would occur internally as our Little had come into agreement with a false identity, such as murderer, filthy, cursed, or hated. The power of healing flooded into our hearts as we combated these lies with The Sword of The Spirit, which is the Word of Yahweh. We needed truth to counter the lies about ourselves – His Word is Truth – and once we surrendered to this, we could find freedom. This was the literal reading of The Scriptures to counter the specific lies we'd come into agreement with.

Once our Little would find forgiveness, for themselves or even later for their abusers and targets, we would be free to lay our burdens, doubts, and fears at Messiah's feet. We would cleanse out any demonic elements that may have mingled with this portion of our personality and cleanse the internal space with The Scriptures, and then ask for a filling of the emptied space with The Holy Spirit. There can be no vacuum in our souls or in this world; something will always take its place. When you bind up the unclean spirits or cleanse out an area, you must also fill it back up with The Holy Spirit and allow His redemptive work to be done. (Matt. 12:43-45, Luke 11:23-26)

This healing and restoration can happen in two places at once. It is sometimes marked on the outside, as we need to weep and cry or have a cat purring on our lap. Other times we are not entirely aware of the internal healing that is occurring; instead, The Holy Spirit is allowing portions of our soul to see what is happening and show us the blessings of peace, safety, and refuge we now live in.

Chelsea would see us typing away, our fingers on the keys as we let these Littles share the suffering that split their soul. We would have to take a break to crawl under the table and sob hysterically, grieving the death of someone whose name we never learned. Or we would head out to the backyard to let the anger boil over while we pulled weeds, smashed a stick into a tire, or dug a hole only to refill it. Other times we needed to head up into the mountains and hike with our dog, seeing there were still beauties of this world to be explored.

The agony once so strong it split our soul would come roaring to the surface buffered only enough to prevent us from further trauma but not enough to cause us to remain distant from the pain. We had lived through impossible things – horrible things – that left a devastating mark on our soul. It is essential to touch that pain, fear, or fury even if only for a moment in order to let your Little know that you too have felt their hurt, their betrayal, and their despair. We would then surrender that pain and burden to the Messiah, finding He would give us a new hope and purpose instead.

There are moments that define each of us. Moments in life that are so monumental, so pivotal that they can shift our focus from the present to a time lost in the past. It's like a hyper reality, so intense and focused that the monotony of our life fades into oblivion and this moment shines brightly against the greys of our day-to-day. Such a moment could be when we stand in front of our family as we walk across the stage and receive a diploma we'd worked years to achieve, or when we feel the weight of relief when our child resurfaces after we thought he'd drown, or the moment a truck backs over our favorite childhood pet and leaves us weeping in our mother's arms, or when we see our mother throw her wedding ring back in our father's face.

These moments of delight and moments of crumpled hope become pebbles of remembering on this journey of life. They mark our souls, and for those who have used dissociation to survive, they become us. They become the shattered pieces of the puzzle that once was a whole soul. To heal, we may need to step back into that memory and see it from The Father's perspective to be given understanding, purpose, identity, or a new job. Out of the pain can come freedom, meaning, and relief.

I am going to do something I had been so afraid to do. I am going to open up a few of the pages of the journal from my first year of healing. It will paint the canvas with harsh reality and with the strokes of salvation to a nine-year-old boy and a twenty-eight-year-old man.

Chapter Twenty Six

The Dodge Viper

His name was Danny, and he gave me a toy car. It was a 1997 Dodge Viper GTS. It was my favorite car and I don't know how he knew it, but he gave it to me while we walked into the forest on our way to The Grove. He slipped it into my hand as he brushed by me.

I saw him on the bus on the way to school the previous week; he talked to me about my violin and said he wanted to play the cello but wasn't allowed to. I said I was sorry but if he wanted to, I would teach him the violin, and he could use mine. He started shaking when I said that; I don't think anyone had ever been that nice to him. He had black under his eyes; I knew the things he saw at night that kept him from ever finding rest.

"Why would you do that?" he asked me. "I like helping people do things they really want to do." He looked confused again and said, "But I don't know you and what if I broke your violin." I thought for a second and told him, "My name is Nate, so now you know me, and if you break it, it's ok. I'll tell my parents I fell getting off the bus; they'll be mad, but that's ok." He didn't say anything for a while; I was scared I'd made him mad because I told him I would lie. "My name is Danny. My dad won't let me play in the orchestra; he says I have to play football and get angry. I like classical music and want to play Bach. But I don't know what it takes to get a cello to sing like that."

I opened up my case and took out my violin. I showed him the stickers under the strings and explained to him how I learned. I told him, "this is my bow; it's made of horsehair." I pulled out the wood-lined rosin from its felt-like cubby and let him rub it on the bow. His lips parted with a broad smile and he started to laugh. I said to him, "It's my favorite thing to do in the mornings when I get on the bus. You can sit with me if you want to and I'll let you do it instead."

He said, "That's nice of you but I can't. My dad is going to be taking me on a trip next week, and I don't know when I'll be back. He says we have to go to my uncle's house again to see my new cousin. I think she's too little to remember, but it doesn't matter."

Sue, the bus driver yelled at a boy who was standing up as the bus had not come to a complete stop. When it finally did, we started standing up. "Thanks for sitting by me, Danny. I hope to see you tomorrow." He nodded his head and smiled really big. "Thanks for letting me rosin your bow. I will try to get on the early bus if my sister doesn't drive me." He walked down the aisle as I put my violin back.

Two days later, I saw him walking towards The Grove, and my heart fell; I was so scared. I didn't want him to be at this defiled space in the forest. I hated these places they took us to, and I hoped he would not have to see me on the portable altar where I had been the previous week. Winter solstice was coming, and I was so scared.

He nodded at me as we started to walk in; he jogged over like he was going to run past me, but slowed down just before he did.

He said in a whisper, "I got this for you last night at Wal-Mart. Put it in your pocket and don't pull it out till you get home tonight."

I felt the touch of cold metal and plastic but slipped it straight into my pocket. I was scared it would fall out when they made me take my clothes off and put on my robe, but it didn't. I felt it on my leg when I put my clothes back on later. I was so scared my master would see me smile, so I looked down at the ground.

…I will spare you the full details, which shattered my soul and Danny's with it. I do this not for your sake but for his and to let her death not be wasted on keystrokes and ink. They killed his mother that night in The Grove, in twisted and terrible ways in front of his eyes and my own…

I give you a cautionary warning: the next paragraph is not pretty, but it is necessary. I left many pages of details out of this book, but a simple paragraph of questions from this moment says more than enough. It is the reality of these questions that disintegrate a soul, pulverizing it into dust. It is the surface level details of The Underworld where children are forced into the impossible world of cannibalism, murder, and black tomes of The Ancient Ones. To those who may be triggered, you can pass over this next paragraph and move on. These words are for those who never got an option to pass over the details of misery, violence, and death. There is even hope for healing from secrets as dark as these.

* * *

"*What song do they play at your friend's funeral? What do you do when the funeral was nothing more than monsters cleaning up their mess? What do you do when you have to watch them shovel pieces of the body of your friend's mother into construction grade black trash bags that are thrown over shoulders, while the rest of the coven walk away in silence, stomachs freshly filled with her blood and flesh? Later burials will be in bathrooms, trashcans, or sinks where they will vomit her out into toilets, or on the side of the road. Will they burn her at* The *Family's veterinarian's office crematorium or in the funeral home's incinerator,* or just *dump her* *in an unmarked pit dug by desensitized drones? Will they leave her in a car parked twenty miles in the middle of the desert with its windows cracked enough to let the bugs in to do the work but keep the scavenging critters out? Will they shovel her ashes down the drain or scatter them into the winds of forgotten dreams?"*

The questions pummeled my mind as we slipped into the robotic march up the trail. I didn't move on the way home, afraid they would see I had the slightest sense of hope. I was dropped off outside my parent's house and slipped in through the window to my room. Bowser, my black lab, heard me come home and got excited but I told him, "be quiet," and he went back into his Dogloo. I had a step stool I kept outside my room but brought it in with me. The house was silent; no one ever listened to what happened in my room. I waited a while before I got into my jammies.

No one moved or stirred, so I thought I was safe, and I slipped into my closet and hid behind the clothes just in case. I reached into my pocket and pulled it out. It was a Dodge Viper painted sparkly blue with two white racing stripes. It was sleek, gorgeous, and brand new; I could tell the wheels had never gone on the dirt or a track. I was so thankful; I had never been given such an excellent gift. It was my favorite car, but no one in my Family paid attention to things like this. I would get things I didn't want for Christmas and my birthday as a way of getting my hopes up before shattering them again. But not this time; Danny got me the perfect gift, and it would get me through the winter solstice the following week. I would remember it when I was on the altar, and the master was on my back.

I would remember that my little car would be back at home in the hiding spot I made inside my bed frame. I'd hollowed out a tiny space with a hammer, awl, and chisel under the bedpost near my head. I hid it in there every morning, but I never pulled it out except when everyone was sleeping. I didn't want my dad to see something I liked that he might take "until I behave." He never did.

In the quiet of the night I would slide it up and down my bed and on my arm. It was so smooth; not damaged by the desecrated dirt. A three-dollar car kept me breathing; I loved it because I knew it was a perfect gift. Danny saved my life, and I wanted to tell him "thank you." I don't know what happened to him; he never came back from his trip. I wanted to teach him the violin and watch him play Bach. I thought about stealing a cello from the practice room, but it was too big for me to get onto the bus without Sue ratting me out. I looked over at the cello every morning and watched Anne play it, and I thought of Danny. Nate didn't know why we loved that cello but we thought of Danny and we wanted him to play it instead of her; she wasn't terrific anyways. Danny would have been so much better, but we don't know where he went.

We shift from the external memory to the view of our Little's internal world. The door to our inner heart exploded open last week when we heard Brian Crain play A Walk in The Forest on cello and piano. Nate was dancing with his daughter in his arms, and Chelsea was laughing and swinging too. She giggled with us both, and we began to weep. The Holy Spirit brought us up then to see it. It was the first thing I'd ever seen since that night when Danny watched his mother die while I was shattering off a piece of my soul to survive the madness. The Lord let us come up and hear Naomi Grace, the Pleasantness of Yahweh, our undeserved favor, laugh and laugh. Oh, how we wept tears of joy and peace. My God, we'd never known a heart could feel so much joy. Who knew there could be relief like I was experiencing? Who could have known such wonders existed in this cruel world. What a miracle, what a gift this is.

It healed us in a moment in ways I cannot express. The Most High God knew exactly what we needed to get set free. We required joy, not sorrow or death. Back in our inner room, He loosed forth the angels who scattered the night; they drove out the darkness buried in every corner. They bound up the wicked ones and threw them into a heap at The Angel of the Lord's pierced feet. We saw them tremble and shake; we saw terror in their eyes. THEY WERE AFRAID! THEY WERE TERRIFIED!

We sat and watched them weep and wail, begging for mercy and receiving none. Their sentence was severe; they went out screaming, “Too much is this punishment; this is not just.” Their mouths were stuffed with rags as the angels left to carry out their sentence. Fire shall consume them every morning, and ice at night. They shall be disquieted and contorted in piles and heaps, and in filthy rags will they wander in the outer darkness until The Day of Judgment comes.

My Littles ran to Him first; they were dressed in rags; some were naked under robes while others wore only their birthday suits. Blood was caked onto their shoulders, backs, and butts. Messiah Himself washed them, He wept over them, and His tears made them clean. The only begotten Son of God cleansed them, and their broken hearts were made whole. They didn’t have to walk in shame; they were born again in freedom, and finally, they knew no pain. He took their wounds and showed them His own. He showed us His mutilated back, neck, wrists, and arms. They had beaten Him mercilessly in ways we could not fathom. They tore the flesh from His body and with it His soul. They tore it asunder not just with whips and sticks but with the sin, guilt, and shame we were carrying.

He let us touch the flesh and feel it all. He showed us His side and told us He was pierced for us all. He said He paid for our sins and carried our shame. He said we didn’t have to fear the master’s hands anymore. He had broken their backs, and they were never the same. They were His to deal with now, and we knew His Name was Justice. All vengeance was His, and we knew it would be severe. We heard those devils wailing and nearly pitied them.

He looked at me as I watched this all and said, “Come here, my son.” I walked over with my eyes on the ground, not wanting to let my tears or nakedness be seen. I was so ashamed, and soon I tripped on the shackles that were wrapped around my feet. I fell into the dirt and began to tremble. He breathed out a single word, and everything changed.

“Peace.”

I felt a waterfall erupt above me and fall onto my shoulders. It fell from the roof of our heart and tore the madness apart. It was living water of light, and it washed away the darkness, bloody soil, and filth. It washed us new, and soon we could feel the warmth of sunlight on our skin, and we opened our eyes.

Our internal room, once a grotto in the forest of death, had become a farm of peace where they grew hope, love, and joy. We saw trees of patience growing tall, and the fruit of kindness fell ripe onto the warm ground, its seed sinking into the freshly tilled fertilized soil where it sprouted even more. Joy was springing up from a well in the corner, a river of life flowed from the throne above this all. He who sat on it is The Lamb Who Was Slain. He is The Redeemer Jesus, The Christ, The Savior of the World, Savior of even the Little piece of our inner world.

He turned our fields of filth into furrows of faith. He planted a vineyard, which spread out beyond our vision. He came down from His throne and picked me up. My shackles were lost in waters that took away our shame. He carried me to the base of the tree where He set me down. My feet were still not used to walking on such purity or hope. Kindness was unfamiliar to us, and we knew it would take us some time to learn. He sat down next to me, dirtying His majestic robe. He scooped up the soil and set it in our hands.

He said, “This is for you, my son. I give it to you freely. I made you for this moment, not the one you were conceived in. I made you for kindness, grace, and hope. Look into your hands.”

The soil had turned to seeds of faith, hope, and love. He said, “I made you to sow them into the hearts of my people, the ones who are trapped in rooms like these.” We could see that one of the seeds was set apart. He said, “Do you see this one?” Holding the brilliant seed up to the light, I nodded yes. “This one is kindness. Do you know where it came from?” I told him no. His eyes grew wide as a smile spread upon His face, “It came from Danny and that little blue car. You grew this seed, Nathan, so long ago. You sprouted it when you were a child, not even ten years old. You planted this seed in Danny’s heart that morning on the bus.

He asked his sister to drive him to Wal-Mart the next morning, and she did. He took the money he’d been saving for a video game and bought this instead.” He held up our little car and set it in our hand. “That seed you planted grew in his heart, and it bore a pure fruit of kindness which he gave right back to you. That tree is still thriving today, and I will reunite you with Danny, this I promise. He does play the cello now, and he is spectacular. He brings tears to My eyes when he sings out the chorus and shouts its melody. It is a sweet fragrance, one I so delight in. You will get to hear him play for you and you will weep together. Because I am faithful, Nathan, and I have never left you. I never left you alone to wither and rot. I do not leave my gardens unattended even though The Serpent told you otherwise. I am not one who is far off and forgotten; I am The God of Comfort, and my Word is Truth.

“Hear me now and listen: nothing will stop the things I came to do. I came to set the captives free and to bind up the broken-hearted. I am not afraid of your brokenness; I let them shatter me to pieces. I allowed them to beat me on the whipping post. Do you know I took their beatings and refused to resist or flee? It is because I saw Danny and you in that grove wanting to vomit and die. I knew you would need someone who could understand your sorrow and shame. I became shame for many including you, Nathan, and for Danny, so you wouldn’t have to stay in that awful place.”

“I knew Danny would need someone to come alongside him and help his fingers find the notes. I knew he would need the rosin on his bow. You were the rosin, Nathan, and I was the bow; he will play before my Heavenly Throne forever, and you will marvel and dance with your daughter and wife. You will lift up praises with my angels, and we will laugh together; because I am Redemption and My Word is true. You can trust me always, Nathan, no matter what you went through. I am Salvation, and I came back for you. I refused to stay with My Father but left Him and took on flesh, needing to suffer these things for you and the others whose hearts are broken, tattered, and covered in scars. I wanted to, and I would do it a thousand times over even if it was just to rescue you two."

"Your hearts are still beating, and now they beat with mine. Walk in freedom, my son, and lift up your notes of praise before me, for I drink them in with delight. You are my beloved son, and I fight for you now. You do not need to fear those masters' hands because they are broken and overlooked, and I will grind them into dust; they will be scattered into the lake of fire and forgotten by all. You will dwell richly on pastures of peace by streams of living water forever, and none will take my gifts from you. They are freely given to you; may you receive them all now."

We held onto him for hours, and as we wept and told him our hurts, His tears fell in buckets on us, washing away the years of sorrow, screaming, and death. He took our burdens, every one we had. He held them all on that cursed tree and let us have His robes of righteousness instead; a great exchange of His life for our death, a true story of salvation and grace. "I thank you, Father Yahweh, for saving us today."

Chapter Twenty Seven

Secreted Away

I typed out those words just a few days after standing in our living room, listening to that song with Chelsea and Naomi. I had felt the flooding of emotion, the overwhelming sorrow and grief. Chelsea saw me on the ground, crying hysterically that night and then when I wrote down the healing session. She heard me scream and groan with the agony of memories so vivid and real they crashed through my consciousness and invaded my outer world. I wrote those words and the other ten pages of that memory which I've left out. The details are so brutal they tear the fabric of reality and wrench out your soul. This book is not for those words; this book is not to defile you with a Survivor's maddening past but to point those who are looking towards the path to restoration.

After I'd finished writing those words, The Father gave me a miracle and brought to memory where I'd hidden our Dodge Viper. I ran downstairs and began shuffling boxes around. Nathan had buried many of our keepsakes when he'd gone through the "Switch", but thankfully I knew it would be there. It took me twenty minutes, but eventually, I found the stained oak box. I did not get back my childhood possessions or things from my room; those were lost when I left The Family and chose freedom instead. So many of the treasures I'd once held dear were trapped in their hands, but Yahweh had preserved this one for me.

Keepsake box in hand, I pressed on the lever and opened up the secret compartment. As I'd grown up, I became more sophisticated at hiding my treasures and learned how to build false bottoms into trinkets so no one could steal away our joy. Pulling back the panel, I saw it there, as shiny as on the day Danny gave it to me was our blue car. I touched the paint, the metal, and the two white lines. I slid its wheels on my arm and felt familiar memories of laughter and peace.

I shed tears decades in the making. I opened up the floodgates, and the rivers of my soul let loose their sorrow mingled with relief. Of all the things He could have preserved for me, He chose the best. In the curled knuckles of my scar-covered hands was His miracle of life among all the death. It was hope so tangible, The Redeemer at His best.

For the day you read this, Danny, know that I've never forgotten you, your mother, or the kind thing you did. You saved my life in that winter of death when I was nine years old. You saved it again decades later when that little blue car showed me Yahweh's providence. He is our provider no matter what we go through, be it mothers murdered in front of us or the loss of a spouse. He alone can shine a light of hope upon our days of darkness. He alone can rescue us from the pock marked memories of madness and loneliness. He is our rescuer, and He is always faithful. Even when I was in that grove, He gave me the strength to survive. No matter what your grove is, He can give you hope that defies logic and conquers death.

Before we can conquer those groves or the Enemy who stalks us in the darkness, we are going to have to come to grips with the battle we were all born into. We are going to have to learn the ways of war.

PART 7

Chapter Twenty Eight

Paying the Final Price

How much does it cost to speak the truth? How much would you pay to know the truth about life, about death, or the way the world works? What would you be willing to give up to know with absolute certainty you've found true reality? Many say they want the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth, but when shown the cost and the consequences of knowing the truth, they choose to flee. Speaking The Secrets of my Family cost me more than I thought I would have to pay: it cost me jobs, physical and financial wellness, friends, family, rest, and too many material things. What I gained, though, was my immortal soul and the freedom of sleeping in peace. The retribution of The Enemy increased to a roar during the first year of Naomi's life. It was brutal beyond measure, but amidst this season Chelsea and I found the inexpressible joys of learning how to live in truth at the cost of the lies.

I wish I could articulate the frenzy of attacks we encountered during that season, but words are too weak to carry the burdens of sorrows we endured. How do you explain to someone the hurts of a broken heart? How do you comfort your wife when she has to read Family Crafted lies spoken about you time and time again? How do you wage war when you are the one bleeding and screaming in the bathroom, too agonized to walk? The war waged against us nearly every day and night. Some days were good: peace would invade our home and settle upon us in waves of relief. Other days the Enemy would slam into us with a ferocity that threatened to tear us apart.

Leaving the Families and betraying the Brotherhoods brings its retribution, one I'd embodied far too many times. We had come to know The Captain of The Heavenly Hosts could overcome those whose hands now carry the blades, bullets, poisons, and digital threats. The outright attacks on us had died down after severing our communication methods, but the covert spiritual battle had only begun.

It would come when severe spiritual oppression would invade our home: icy cold presences would manifest, lights would be turned on and off throughout the night, objects would be thrown around the room as dread fell upon us in waves. The reason for the drop in temperature often associated with spiritual manifestations of the darker kind is because when one of these entities comes into our realm, it does so through dimensional doorways.

Remember that The Kingdom of Darkness requires fuel to operate, and the fuel source most available during manifestations is the atmosphere in the room or the negative emotions that are invoked in their targets by their appearance. These manifestations will bring with them a clouding of the mind like a brain fog, fatigue, headaches, or even nausea, which slows your thinking and your reaction time, and hinders your ability to perceive what is going on. The emotions which will likely surface will be things like dread, fleshly cravings, doubt, irritability, rage, hopelessness, and fear. It is often better to understand these extra-dimensional entities as spiritual vampires who feast upon their host's will, essence, and life.

The counter to this attack comes from the presence and authority of the Prince of Peace. The most effective defense and offense against extra-dimensional entities comes not from holy water, ritualistic exorcism, smart weapons, or magic but through repentance of our sins, His strategic Living Word being read out loud, and worshipping in our obedience to His truth amidst those feelings and experiences. In a sense, this starves their fuel source and begins to weaken and break their power, enabling us by His authority to cast them into the Abyss or to he feet of Jesus, forbidding them from ever returning to us or those in our spheres of influence. It also comes from repentance and the asking of forgiveness for our sins and those sins which may have empowered this wicked one.

These are the fundamentals of spiritual warfare, and none of these things were foreign to Chelsea and me, as we had been contending with this type of attack for years. However, much of it amplified and exposed our own need to learn to take authority over The Enemy, read the Word of God out loud, and pray in agreement with His will for our life. It was critical not to give into the fears and the stealing of the peace we were finding in our new freedom. The peace we were gaining granted us newfound understanding, especially in regards to targeted prayers of repentance for familiar or ancestor sins and spirits.

This peace gave us the ability to start asking The Father to sever also any soul ties that united me with those I killed. These soul ties are generally only discussed in relation to former sexual partners, which need to be repented of. However, they are made not only through sexual union (an act of creating life) but also through taking life. Please see the resource section at the end of this book for an excellent guideline to aid you in this process.

Soul ties are created when there is destruction of a life and these soul ties need to be severed and this is done by repenting for the act of killing even if it was justified, legal, or defensible. By asking The Father to cleanse us of any ungodly soul ties made through this with The Blood of the Lamb, we will be freed from any spiritual repercussions of this union. If I had not done this, I do not believe there would be any way for me to find healing and restoration. So too do our combat veterans need to learn to pray in this way, as well as the counselors, friends, and families of those who've been forced to end a life under any circumstance need to pray in this manner.

The attacks did not stay spiritual but stepped into our world when servants of The Family began to do ritual magic and curses on our property. We came home to find power cones of animal bones and ritual objects on our front patio, and at other times we would find massive pieces of animal fat buried in our garden, in the compost bin, and around the corners of our property. Specific animals used during blood sacrifice are defiled and charged with curses before pieces of them are buried in the ground – this is a ritual done to defile the land and break down the hedge of protection.

It was infuriating to know the lengths to which they were willing to go to come against us, and yet it was also a reminder that The Resurrected King has stripped The Enemy of his powers. Each time we would find the chunks of bone or other cursed objects, we would pray and ask The Father to forgive the sins committed that empower the evil spirits sent on assignment against us or the sins of those who were cursing and attacking us. We are commanded to pray for, bless and not curse our enemies, and there is so much power in choosing to forgive those that come against us and asking The Father to strip them of their occult power and to extinguish every curse lit against us.

This is what changes the world: bold belief backed prayer. Prayer even for our enemies. When we choose to forgive our enemies, it strips our true Enemy of his spiritual power over the righteous. We choose to ask The Father to bring to those who persecute us redemption, deliverance, and salvation. We can pray and ask Yahweh to deliver these people from their own bondages and to lead them to freedom in The Way. (Matt. 5:44)

I know most people will not have to worry about cannibalistic covens of serpent worshipers and Jesuit assassins being sent against you. I know most people do not have demonically charged letters showing up in your mailbox, but some of you do. It boils down to the following question: do either curses or blessings spoken of throughout the Bible still apply today? (Exo. 20:1-26, Deut. 28, 30:19, Jer.17: 5-8, Mal. 3:10, Matt. 5) You can choose to try to dismiss this as another dispensation or epoch in time where "that stuff" no longer applies but it does. Curses still can be lit, rituals can and do empower dark workings that directly affect people, Christians and atheists alike. It is ignorance of this that fuels The Kingdom of Darkness to overcome the Body of Messiah every day.

The Kingdom of Darkness still has to abide by the spiritual laws Yahweh put in place and outlined in His Word. Satan is a title for The Accuser who legally stands upon the Laws of Yahweh when He accuses us and seeks to have legal right to come against us. (Genesis to Revelation, Job 1-3, Zech. 3) If we have sinned and transgressed God's Instructions, it gives The Enemy a legal right to come against us. It does not matter if this sin was outlawed in the "Old or new Testament" legal right for The Adversary to accuse you is not dependent on man's perception of its applicability to this season of time. There is no scripture where God ever says something He declared was a sin no longer is a sin. If Yahweh changed in any sense of expression, word, or declaration, He would cease to be The Perfect and Just God. (Num. 23:19, Micah 3:6, James 1:7)

This is why there's so much power in repentance and in asking for forgiveness for even our secret sins: this renders those accusations powerless. However, if we continue to walk in willful, and proud disobedience, we allow the Enemy legal foothold to work against us, to send curses against us, which will be able to ignite and burn away our blessings. (Prov. 26:2, Num. 23:23) The truth that kept Chelsea, Naomi and I alive, and still does to this day is that obedience to God's Loving Instructions is what brings about blessings and extinguishes curses.

Our loving obedience to His Ways gives us assurance of knowing the hedge of protection promised us will be strong and impenetrable. Chelsea and I in no uncertain way believe the reasons we are still alive is because we have learned to seek to cover any doors we have open to the Enemy with The Blood of

The Lamb. Through humility and doing our best to turn and go in a new direction of our life, we seek to close those doors so they can never be opened again. We seek to let The Scriptures circumcise our flesh and mark us as set-apart unto His ways.

The reason our heart still beats is that we began to walk in His ways and obey His Loving Instructions. Without The Father's mercy and faithfulness in honoring our loving attempts to follow Him, we would be dead. I know the breath in my lungs is a gift from Him. I know some people wake up every day devising ways to destroy my new family. I know the lion stalking in the darkness who seeks to steal, kill, and destroy the hope of life I've been given. (1 Peter 5:8) I decide to pray for those people; I choose to bless my enemies and not curse them. I pray they are brought to repentance, deliverance, and ultimately salvation. I choose to forgive those individuals for their murderous machinations and malice. I instead let the knowledge of this war drive me into studying my new weapons of warfare. Because of this, Chelsea and I have been able to learn a great deal about The War of the Ages we were all born into. It is from those experiences and our hunger to see you made ready for The War that we share this with you all.

In the months following our severing of ties with The Family, a more significant form of attack came against Chelsea and me. Most individuals will not suffer this type of engagement, but those of you who do, I hope you will know there is no weapon formed against you that will prosper. (Isaiah) When this type of attack came against us, we set about our usual ways of praying and interceding for deliverance, but it would not stop when we prayed and took authority over it in the name of Jesus. It didn't take long for us to learn what this was. These spirits coming against us were not demonic, nor were they devils or higher powers; rather these icy presences which would go into the house often appearing as shadowy creatures were human spirits called "astral projections" or "astrals".

In occult groups, individuals are taught by the aide of other spirits, meditative practices, as well as with altered states of consciousness, how to separate their spirit from their body. It is a practice now widely taught and propagated in New Age and Eastern Arts circles as a way of going on “The Astral Planes or higher planes of consciousness.” Not every individual partaking in this knows they are utilizing deceptive spiritual powers to help them leave their body, while the spirit possesses your body as other spirits take them around on the astral planes. The place in which they go may appear as though it is filled with total unity, oneness and connectivity to it all. Yet another experiencer might be an intentional left hand practitioner guiding their way through The Planes with black majik bearing markers of death. The second heavens dimensional domain in which they travel is one that has been cut off as a protective and blessed gift until the time Yahweh’s restoration makes all things new.

The Planes are the dimensional battlegrounds where fallen ones are engaged with those righteous heavenly host, and it is not a place for mankind to dwell. Experiencers and practitioners regularly report angels of light possessing their body or an ascended master leading them to secret knowledge hidden in the libraries of Thoth. They are experiencing real events of travel through galaxies and other dimensions; however, the spirits will show them things that all too often are cloaked in deception, ensuring the doctrine and practice spreads. Those who do know The Secrets of occult workings operate on this spiritual plane to curse, attack, or target individuals. My Family members, like many others in The Bloodline Families and Brotherhoods, are highly trained in this practice so they can learn intimate knowledge about their enemy’s curse or torment their targets.

If ever you have to encounter this, or a spirit, which appears to be a person that will not leave by The Authority of Jesus, you must pray somewhat differently. We first off pray that Yahweh would forgive the sins that empowered this person to go on the astral plane to remote view or spiritually come against us. Also, we would pray that He would send His holy angels to drive away the spirits that are accompanying this individual and escort them from our property. We ask Him to build an impenetrable hedge of protection around our property that no human or evil spirit can penetrate. Time and time again, my Family members would come against us in this way especially during high ritual days, and we would see real power in walking in The Father's authority to drive them away. The battles we fought during this time were not limited to outside influence but some came from within.

For those who are looking to hone their swords of the spirit and earth changing faith I cannot recommend enough, Dr. Kenny Russell's **Bulldozer Faith Ministries** ***(www.bulldozerfaith.com)***

Chapter Twenty Nine

This is a War

Chelsea and I were just trying to endure the newness of sleepless nights and child-rearing as best as any new parents do. The trouble with babies, especially newborns, is that they tend to cry. The crying was like murder in my mind and would send me back to moments of madness when monsters masquerading as men caused little ones to scream in agony. I could not bear it when she would cry; even just the bit that comes with infanthood could send me into a spiral of memories too horrible to speak.

The first few months were the most brutal when the memories were raw and unfiltered. Like a fresh layer of seared skin burning when exposed to the air, so too did our souls blister having only recently experienced this world of life since their conception amidst death.

Chelsea did her best to buffer this, going above and beyond traditional motherhood and relentlessly sacrificing herself to take care of Naomi and keep her content. It was a pouring out of herself, which washed our heart in relief. I don't know how we could have survived those first few months without her relentless willingness to accommodate our "sensitivity." These sensitivities were not limited to babies' crying but also encompassed the rejection of our identity, personalities, and past.

When you are born into the shadowy Underworld, all you know is the blackened lens you are forced to believe is the reality. For so much of your life, you are told that speaking The Secrets and talking about your memories will cause people around you to fear you, hate you, reject you, and ultimately leave you. It is that fear which unfortunately is so readily reinforced by those in your community, family, and friends that overwhelms you when you begin to talk about these types of issues.

It is so vital how we each choose to respond to people when they talk about things they have been so ashamed of, secrets they were once too terrified ever to tell another soul. In that moment of sharing, those wounded ones are opening up a tender piece of their soul and permitting you to help them heal or to cause more egregious harm. Each of us is responsible for how we react and how we either bless or curse them.

Our words have more power than we've ever believed. The words we are speaking will always either give life to another or take it away. There is no neutrality in this life; no amount of ignorance, ambivalence, or apathy can keep you from this truth. You can only serve one master, and your words will either fuel the furnaces of hope, restoration and redemption, or they will empower the fear, doubt, despair, and self-hate. How we choose to treat those entrusted to us will bear out fruits of life or will ensure death's bounty grows among the living.

You must understand that there is a genuine war being waged in the spiritual realm day and night. It has defined boundaries and borders, and fortified strongholds. Two kingdoms, The Kingdom of Darkness and the Kingdom of Light are battling every day for the souls of the Kingdom of Mankind. It is the Kingdom of Mankind – a sort of middle earth – where we live our lives under the continual influence and impact of both the light and dark sides. It is in the hearts, minds, and souls of humanity that this great contest and battle is waged.

Many of us believe we are soldiers for Jesus, but the reality is that just because you are on the battlefield does not mean you are in the fight. Hundreds of millions of soldiers have gone to war and yet there are many who've never fought a battle. Just because you know something about spiritual warfare does not mean you've ever waged war on the darkness.

Nearly all of us are guilty of hiding from the front lines where the battle is the thickest. We have been lulled into a slumber, which has kept us off the war-torn sights of chaos and in the trenches instead. It is in these trenches where the highest numbers of losses are suffered. It is from these positions of illusionary peace we surrender our power and sacrifice the true warriors every day. We think the battles are over and the wars have been won just because fiery arrows are no longer reigning down on us. We'd prefer to circle the wagons in our congregations where we can shove our comfortable heads back into the sands of ignorance.

The majority of soldiers have found themselves comfortable in their trench life and see no need to stand up and risk being shot. It is only on the rarest occasions that someone overcomes their fear with courage and rises from the complacent trench. From the tops of the lines they bellow out words of conviction, truth, and hope. It is these precious few overcomers who ignite those beacons of hope, which call to us, who have been trapped on the other side, showing us there is courage in The Kingdom of Light. Those beacons reminder us why we should all want that freedom to be our own.

Those courageous few often suffer the deadliest wounds and heaviest losses. They will be the first ones targeted by The Enemy to be savaged with relentless ferocity. If only those fiery bullets came from The Enemy's side. The insidious nature of this world is that those who stand up from the trenches will get shot most by soldiers on their side. The Enemy is quick to use friendly fire to destroy the efforts of redemption, freedom, and hope. No matter the source of the fiery arrows, they still help to light the way to those trapped in the darkness making the perilous journey from behind enemy lines.

The spiritual realities of our lives cannot be ignored, and they are most noticeable when someone is making the most harrowing journey of their lives as they enter The No Man's Land separating The Kingdom of Darkness from the Kingdom of Light. Those of us Survivors who were born behind enemy lines make a harrowing decision when we choose to leave our shackles and run for redemption. When we decide to make that run, the fire comes raining down upon us from both sides.

When a prisoner makes a break for it, enemy fire is always expected. What is not expected is the spotlight of fellow "believers" pointing on our chests, so they can aim for our hurting hearts as they seek to tear us apart. The doctrines of men have driven so much deception into the church at large, and it causes them to see those who are coming out of the darkness as The Enemy instead of as the reason we were all redeemed.

We were made to bring freedom to the captives, not shoot at our wounded. We were made to be a united front of furious forgiveness, passion, and faith who did not run and hide from The Enemy, but instead took prisoner Pan's Labyrinth, Mt. Hermon and those gates of Hades. (Matt. 16) We are to be Followers of The Way, and The Captain of The Heavenly Host is supposed to be our leader, not the pastors, priests, or seeker-friendly sermons we hear at Sunday morning mass. He did not call us out of the darkness and into the light for us to be passive but instead to allow us time to heal, grow, and mature so that we would go and join our Captain's fight in The War of The Ages.

Chelsea and I learned quickly the dangers waiting for us in No Man's Land. We'd expected the spiritual and physical wars waged against us as we left The Family. What we'd never expected was the viciousness of Christians and those who called themselves followers of Jesus. The reality is that each of us is a walking spiritual conduit and our hearts are designed to have a spiritual occupant. Are not our bodies supposed to be tabernacles of The Prince of Peace? If we live our lives by following His ways, the homes of our heart can be filled to overflowing with The Holy Spirit, which will produce in our lives the fruits of His presence. If, however, we have left open the doors of our heart to The Enemy, we can traffic his spirits and ideologies instead.

When we have doors open to The Enemy, we will allow ourselves to be used by The Enemy to wound, hurt, and steal the hope of others. These doors can be opened through secret sins, rebellious acts of pride, bitterness, hatred or un-forgiveness. If we continue to resist The Father's redemptive work in our life, the Enemy can build up for himself strongholds. Like the Tower of Babel, they are built brick by brick with our rebellious rejection of obedience to The Scriptures and by running from the conviction of The Holy Spirit. In a sense, The Enemy builds his fortresses within our camp. This allows The Enemy to use believers as double agents who strike out at the ones who need The Father's love, patience, and kindness most. It makes us wound the ones we love and those who need understanding, compassion, and joy. It keeps us from walking in the fullness of our faith. Instead, these strongholds become cancer in our joints, tumors of torment that prevent us from uniting The Body of Messiah into the soldiers for salvation we were made to be. This infiltration of The Enemy allows him to strike out against those who've fled his Kingdom from within.

The Prince of Darkness is not omniscient, but his counterfeit to the absolute infinite intelligence of The Creator comes through his supernatural intelligence array. He is fed information from his spidery web of principalities, elementals, thrones, rulers, dominions, devils, and demons who are continually monitoring the Kingdom of Men and their chosen targets. It allows The Enemy to send precise devastating blows against believers should they ever rise from their trenches.

They are already well aware of our insecurities, fears, doubts, and regrets. The specific spirits assigned to us know the ways to craft lures of temptation to entice each of us back to our habitual sins. If we can resist his direct attacks, he will shift tactics to target us from other believers who have doors propped wide open to being under the influence of another spirit. We must not be unaware of our Enemy and his tactics. (1 & 2 Corinthians) Understanding this networked information can help followers of The Way begin to pray for the confusion of The Enemy, a breaking of the power of satanic surveillance and every assignment of The Evil One, or the blinding of the eyes of the Enemy, as the angels did in Genesis 19:11.

Chelsea and I tried spending time with people but even as we did, they would make insensitive comments about us or the situation we were going through. At times they would attack the ways we were choosing to live our lives. People would make inappropriate sexual jokes about rape or incest directed at me or someone else in the room. The comments had direct connections to something we were inwardly struggling with at the time. It was the oddest thing, and Chelsea and I had no frame of reference at first to understand why when we would walk into the room, our warmest people would shift from compassionate to cold and wounding. We would never have thought the people we trusted most could be turned into such vicious persecutors until we stepped into No Man's Land.

The more Chelsea and I sought after a life lived in total submission to The Father's will, the greater the frequency of these attacks became. Some were quick to make jabs about our need to "just get over it," or making sure we knew they never wanted us to talk to them about our past. Those who do not guard their mind and renew it so that it becomes like that of Jesus can be left to be sifted like Peter who renounced The Messiah or to be manipulated by fellow Christians to target the wounded.

Chelsea and I thought we could find safe places where people would be patient with us and not condemn us for the way we'd chosen to separate ties from our Family but our places of refuge grew to be less and less. Even the church we'd been going to at the time, which had so graciously paid for portions of our counseling sessions, became an unsafe place.

My Family, mostly my father, targeted my church with relentless bombarding of the leadership and pastors. He employed other Family-controlled pastors who tried to convince our church to turn us over to them and to cut us off, but thankfully they had discernment enough not to give in to their manipulative demands fully. When this tactic did not work, he began to drive hundreds of miles each week and show up at the church services. His presence there and attempts to re-engage control of me was initially a blow to our peace and a stumbling block for our healing.

His obsession to reactivate and control us again forced us to make a decision. We could continue to try going to church and risk him getting access to Naomi, or we could stay in the safety of our home. Chelsea and I decided it would be best to stay home and start having "church on the pillow" where we could listen to teachings like Dr. Michael Lake's ***Biblical Life Seminary: Understanding The Kingdom Series***, or watch ***The Virtual House Church with Rob Skiba***, and worship in unabashed joy.

Thankfully, The Father used that which The Enemy intended for significant harm and the destruction of our lives for our salvation instead. If not for those fiery missiles fired from within the church, Chelsea and I would never have become who we were made to be. To find our new identity, we had to leave behind the popular place of worship and head to the desert. Like the Israelites leaving the practices and traditions of Egypt, we too would have to go into The Wilderness to receive the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob's revelations, understanding, and explosively powerful Instructions.

PART 8

Chapter Thirty

Into the Wilderness

No matter where Chelsea and I turned, we fought opposition and resistance. We could not abide in our usual places of comfort, so instead we stopped fighting The Deliverer and yielded to His call to the wild, uncharted desert, the place where most believers refuse to go, the narrow Way where sustenance comes only from the Bread which falls from Heaven and from waters which shoot forth from The Rock. Chelsea and I did not want to go where He was leading us, but we knew He had never failed us and we could trust Him no matter where He led us. He led us out of our churches, our jobs, our families and friends. He led us out to the place where we could hear Him and meet with Him. It was there that He revealed the joy found in keeping His Commandments. It wasn't going to start with a long list, just Ten Instructions.

It was during this season that we began to come to know and love the rest that came from keeping the seventh day Sabbath as He said to do. One of The Ten Commandments that our doctrine of men inspired churches so quickly dismiss and instead obey the Universal Catholic doctrines of lawlessness, turned out to be one of the most powerful of them all.

We did our best with what we understood after simply reading His Word and seeking to obey it. So rather then wait around for someone else to tell us what to do, we obeyed Him and set apart one twenty four hour period on the seventh day to give to Him. As the sun set on Friday nights, we prayed as a family, often turning on worship music, and the three of us had our fellowship with The Father at home. Then we opened our Bibles and studied together. Chelsea – being raised in church her whole life – had never read through the entire Bible, so we started there. We began by reading it as a family and found blessings begin to flow. It was The Way of the called-out disciples of Yahweh and Yeshua for thousands of years, and it needed to be ours as well.

In all my life I have never felt the peace and the real presence of God come into a space like I do when we welcome The Father to be with us on Sabbath. The holy presence of The Creator would invade our home, and soon Chelsea and I would begin weeping and praying with words inexpressible. Although Naomi was often fussy and needing continual attention, she would suddenly grow still and completely content. Chelsea would dance with Naomi resting on her chest, tears freely flowing down her cheeks experiencing peace, safety, and relief. I could not contain myself and would fall on my face weeping uncontrollably, feeling the complete set-apartness of the Lord Our Righteousness in the presence of my own sin. It was as if I was a putrid decaying odor in a room, which had only ever been filled with the fragrance of a thousand orchids blooming out the purity of the heavenly kind.

I could not fathom why He would choose to be in our midst. Even as we felt the desperate wretchedness of our cursed flesh, we would be enveloped in a peace of forgiveness, love, and warmth. Our God is a consuming fire, and His presence was not cold, icy, and numbing, but it raised the temperature of the room in a moment and drove away our doubt and despair. He does not need to absorb energy when He comes to meet with us; instead, His presence fills our own with life itself. We soaked up His presence, longing for a thousand hours more but He lifted from us and left us with a rest no paid time off or vacation could provide. This and so much more was what was waiting for us every Sabbath.

How could this secret have been kept from us all our lives? Why would we not be partaking of this harvest waiting for each of us? We found the greatest of joys waiting when we surrendered to Him 24 hours of our lives, and when we showed our love for Him by obeying His Instructions. This shifted our focus from this world to His, from our wills being done to His being completed in us and through us.

Unlike the Jews of the House of Judah and the Lost Sheep of the House of Israel living during the first years after Messiah's resurrection, I did not have an understanding of these truths and I'd not been taught how to walk in His ways. I did not yet know about Tzitzis, mixed fabrics or calendar debates, but I knew we could at least start by obeying the Ten Commandments. We started there and found our souls being satisfied and filled with the substance of things we'd always hoped for. It was finally a way our faith could find freedom in works done not out of obligation or legalistic despair but in love, excitement, and joy.

It was as if on The Sabbath The Father was closer to us, almost like The King would come down onto the battlefield and give out rest, insight, battle plans, and understanding needed for the week to come. There was no greater time for revelation on things once veiled and concealed. It was during this day we would pray and see prayers answered in miraculous ways, or read The Scriptures and see it come alive with insights, perspectives, and revelations once hidden from our sight. It was joy inexpressible and something my wife and I can't imagine going a week without.

There is no better place to start to see for yourself what can happen when you obey His Instructions. Don't panic and become legalistic, just start by opening His Word and following The Way Jesus lived from Genesis to His final Revelation. The first thing in all of creation that was ever set apart, ever called holy, was not a man, the seas, or even wondrous women. We are not the center of creation like we've been taught to believe. The first thing ever called holy was The Sabbath.

The Father encoded it into creation, into our literal DNA, so that day of rest would restore our body, spirit, and soul, bringing us lost sheep of The House of Israel closer to Him. It is the knitting together the torn and tattered threads of prodigals' coverings into restored robes of righteousness which mark us as His beloved, set apart sons and daughters.

Walking The Way The Great Redeemer taught makes us set apart from this world to where we finally look like the image bearers of Yahweh we were made to be. Eating the Way He ate, celebrating the Way He celebrated His Father and resting the Way He rested were the foundations of our new way of living. These principles though are not ones experienced on "The Broad Way," but instead, they are learned in The Wilderness.

We experienced the hard way that you cannot drag other proclaimed believers down this walk with you. As excited and passionate as Chelsea and I were about the blessings we were discovering in our new way of life, we experienced ambivalence and ignorance from those we tried to share this with.

We learned that many are not ready to receive this understanding and it is not our responsibility how people respond to truth. But we are responsible for how we go about introducing truth to others. If they choose not to join us on this path, we must still be able to maintain the fruits of The Set-Apart Spirit in how we treat others who do not agree with us. After all, each of us is responsible for walking The Way of our Messiah, and often this means that we will have to leave the ones we once loved to have a higher love and intimacy with our Creator instead. (Matt. 10)

Eating foods He told us to eat and observing The Sabbath is where we started. We did not know what it meant to follow The Loving Instructions of God, His Torah, fully, or what the Hebrew Roots or Messianic Movement was all about. We knew there were likely to be pitfalls, false sheep, and deceptions among many of the things some people in those movements were saying, but we also knew there was so much freedom and blessing in learning His Word and beginning to obey His Instructions. Because of this, we spent countless hours starting to test and examine the things we'd been raised to believe were true. I had to undo much of the lies I'd been raised to believe but so too did Chelsea.

Growing up all her life in mainstream corporate Christianity, Chelsea wrestled for so long with breaking out of the traditions she'd been raised to believe were good or what God wanted. The more she examined and studied the source of these practices and traditions, the more she learned how they were rooted in Egyptian and Babylonian paganism and were utterly at odds with the way God told us to worship Him. (Exodus 32, Leviticus 23, John 14:15) The most noticeable of these corrupt and deceitful traditions of men is The Sabbath and holidays.

Even a cursory basic testing to the doctrine of Sun Day worship will reveal it is based in the Egyptian and Babylonian mystery religions. The pagan origins and further endorsements came not from Yahweh but by the leaders of the same Roman Empire, which murdered Jesus and built a universal religion to seductively swallow up puritans and pagans alike.

Dedicated Sun Day worship came well before the formalization of this doctrine into "Catholic Law" with Constantine, The Council of Laodicea, and later again at The Council of Trent. This is because Sun Day was reserved as a day of worship to Tammuz or "the cross bearing Mithra" the so-called sun of god. It will reveal the origins are firmly rooted in disobedience and deception those two markers of The Dragon's forked tongue and not The Word who became flesh. Even today worshiping on Sunday is an open marker of a church who has submitted itself to The Catholic Church.

Though The Protestants may have protested many heresy's of Universal theology, they failed to protest enough. In many ways they chose not to actually guard The Body from all doctrines of disobedience. They did not choose to follow and obey The Messiah they claim as Lord. Martin Luther along with other key leaders of The Protestant's infancy refused to obey The Scriptures on this doctrine. Instead they vehemently demanded people obey the doctrines of Catholicism and worship on the day the orgiastic, pedophilic pope Leo X, a Chosen One from The Medici Bloodline, said to worship rather than the day Yahweh set-apart.

By the same means our Universal Catholic and Christian churches had only ever taught us to celebrate the holidays of Easter (Ishtar) with the female fertility goddess's rabbits and eggs, or to worship the birth of the sun god Ra/Nimrod on Christmas, convincing the sheep these were all about Jesus. (Jeremiah, Ezekiel, James, Ephesians) Even though most pastors when pressed as to the origins of these holidays admit that they are wholly rooted in Babylonian and Egyptian worship to other gods, they still justify their practice to Christians and adherence to them for all. Doing this robs The Body of Messiah of the blessings that come from worshiping God not the way we want to but rather in The Way He instructed us to. Instead, this earns us the ability to live our lives under a curse. Read the book of Genesis, Exodus, Numbers, Deuteronomy, Joshua and Judges to understand just how The Father feels about us worshiping Him in ways He specifically forbids. If you are truly hungry to learn about our Redeemer, Psalm 119 is a quicker overview of understanding His Way.

Our priests and pastors never told us how to celebrate Yahweh's Feast Days which are our way of practicing the prophetic fulfillment of Jesus's first coming in The Spring Feasts like the exact day Jesus was impaled on the cursed tree during Passover and resurrected fulfilling the Feast of First Fruits. Keeping The Fall Feasts will help prepare us for His Second Coming. For the blessed fulfillment of the Great Days of Tribulation which will draw to a close and the final trumpet will blow, and then we will be resurrected and made to reign with our King forever after He throws the final Enemy Death into his place of eternal judgment. The Feasts are furthermore used as timepieces in judgment as well as blessing. For a more in-depth, historical understanding of this I highly recommend Chad Schafer's preeminant book, ***"The World in The Bondage of Egypt...Under the Triumphal Arch of Titus"***

Learning about The Sabbath, eating the food He told us to, and celebrating The Feasts of Yahweh are a great place to start for all those who are trying to follow Jesus and walk The Way He walked. To learn how to be set apart and holy takes time. The beautiful thing is that this is what our lives are supposed to be about. They are supposed to be about us learning His ways, learning how to love Him and serve Him and fight for Him. There is so much to be learned when you begin to study these topics, and it can be overwhelming at first, but be patient with the process. There are so many things to learn but trust that The Father will help you learn what is most important first. Like the council in Acts 15, there are some fundamentals that need to be adhered to first, then as you study The Prophets, The Writings, and The Instructions of Yahweh, you will mature in your walk and apply more and more of His Ways to your own life. This process is nothing less than what it really should be when we claim to be born again, to be birthed into a new Way of living.

The truth is that there were changes of identity occurring every day of my life: changes from a murderer to merciful, from a son of Belial to a son of The Living God. Some of those changes came quickly, but others did not. There is only One who can change a leopard's spots or can make a wolf into a lamb. He alone could change the fabric of my being and with it change my future. The work He was doing in our wounded hearts was writing hope upon the canvas of despair. Without His Holy Hand pressing the Word to the fabric of our hearts we could never have known the pen would be mightier than the sword.

Chapter Thirty One

Leap of Faith

The upheaval Chelsea and I experienced invaded every area of our lives. Coming to grips with the reality of my past began to give me joy and freedom in ways I'd never known. I found an understanding of my identity being made new and whole.

Now I wake up next to a woman who loves every part of me. I can look over at them napping on a Sabbath snooze and see she is sleeping soundly, Naomi along with her. Chelsea holds her close as she should, and does not let her get far from her side. Their bond grows every day, and I see my wife finding herself content.

Chelsea had spent so much of her life growing bored and dissatisfied in her work as an RN, longing for a different purpose, a greater fulfillment to satisfy her soul. It was not until manipulative measures for vaccines were enforced at the hospitals that her passions for truth were kindled. Once they were, Chelsea could not help but seek out the reasons for the corruption and control being implemented in the big Pharma so called "Health Care System." Over time Chelsea's desires for the ways of the worldly system faded and she began to deeply desire a peculiar and set-apart life. Even before we were pregnant with Naomi, Chelsea had wanted to leave the workforce and to fully pursue the fun and challenges of being a mother and wife. In many ways though I hindered my wife's pursuit of her calling. I allowed fear into my marriage and our finances for many years. I had not developed child like faith that God would provide. I had feared for so long what would happen the day we lost her income, but sitting here now, watching her hold Naomi all my fears melt away.

I had spent so long worrying about where the money would come from. The loss of her income was far more than double what I could make in the mental health field, but I had faith The Father would somehow provide. We were eager to obey The Father's Instructions on how the family unit was supposed to be set up, and Chelsea had grown tired of working within the modern medical field, where the emphasis was on big business sick care and not cures, treatment, or remedies.

My employer granted me the ability to take two weeks of paternity leave, and just as it was drawing to an end, my work held a meeting informing us that many people were going to be losing their jobs. Promises were made that those who were in the room had secure jobs. I left excited I'd be heading back to work shortly. Two days later, my phone rang. The CEO of the company called to say he was going to be letting me go. For reasons I won't yet go into there was much more Family retribution and meddling involved. It was the last thing I'd expected, but I trusted that if The Father had allowed me to go into this situation, I had faith He would see us through.

As I write this, I find myself wanting to sugar coat what our lives looked like at that moment in time. I want to try to paint a prettier picture than what reality was. Rather than try to save face for the sake of my pride, I'll be honest with you all in a way that makes me nervous.

The truth is that aspects of my personalities, which had always performed our jobs and did the working, were not yet being aided by the increase of healing sessions we'd been going through. I no longer could compartmentalize my trauma into the different personalities like I'd done my whole life. Even while I was going through the restoration process over the previous six months, I could switch from the parts of my personality who were dealing with the pain, the trauma, the hurt, and the anger to my worker personality and do what I needed to do. However, once one begins the process of integration and restoration, the ability to continue to do this diminishes.

No longer did I have the "freedom" of having my traumas stuffed into the various compartments of my soul. Instead, the memories were present regardless of which personality was up. The grief of loss would be present when I woke up and leave me weeping for hours at a time. I was reliving torments no person should have to endure; though the emotions were buffered, they still flowed freely. The sensitivity and vulnerability I was experiencing left me in a messy state. I couldn't function – not like an average person.

The retribution of my family was at its highest, the spiritual wars were constant, and it took everything I had just to get up and face the day, knowing the challenges we'd meet. It is in this season of healing and integration where survivors are most often abandoned, forced to quit and turn back to the old ways to endure. Old addictions and old patterns of destructive behaviors can claw their way back in as the support system they had begins to crumble.

I understand messy people are not the most pleasant to be around. I know it is exhausting and hard to hear about people's traumas or abuse, but if you are someone who is entrusted with one of these most precious individuals, it is for an extraordinary purpose. To feel safe or loved enough even to be willing to deal with the trauma is a mountain of a battle. For someone to finally be willing to talk about their experiences or abuse is tremendous. Once they begin to do this, it is so critical that people establish healthy and appropriate boundaries of support for them.

I am not suggesting that everyone become a therapist, a counselor, or anchor of support to each survivor. What I am suggesting is that you prayerfully consider what the ways are that you can be part of the answer to this wounded one's needs. Would you be able to commit to praying every other day for this person or their family? Would you be able to meet with them once a week, taking them to get lunch, reminding them you care about them and are there for them? Would you be willing to help support them financially if they are unable to work? Could you pay for one of their counseling sessions or buy them some groceries so they can eat? Maybe you can help them research their past in order to help them understand more of what happened to them. One of the best things you can do is listening, caring, and choosing not to run from them. Do not run from them or hide from them when they are as vulnerable as this. This is the time to reinforce their support system, not pick it apart. The challenges survivors face during this first and most intense portion of healing are the most critical. For excellent information on this topic see David and Donna Carrico's book ***From Victims to Victors Through the Cross of Jesus Christ*** or their website **www.ritualabusefree.org**

The retribution they are facing for being "offline" with their handler, controllers, or former families is at its most intense. The support system becomes the target of these individuals because they know that if they can convince people to leave the Survivor, to abandon them, it will in most cases cause them to re-engage and reconnect with the puppet masters of their past. My Family eradicated so much of our support system during this time and once my job was taken, so too was our ability to survive apart from the generosity and blessing of others.

This is the part I want to skip over, the part where I was in some ways a mess, barely able to walk, go to the store, or pick up the ringing phone. It was a time when I knew I could not go and provide for my family. At the same time, Naomi got sick. She had a digestion problem that did not allow her the ability to break down Chelsea's breast milk. Naomi was miserable, fussy and unable to be comforted unless she was moving. In order to help keep her from crying or to try to get her some sleep, Chelsea consoled her by nursing her and holding her day and night. Many, many tears were shed during this time: hers, Naomi's, and my own. The spiritual oppression peaked as we neared the unholy high days surrounding Halloween.

Some friends of ours we'd met at the Hear The Watchmen conference had been tremendously supporting us by giving us a 0% interest loan so we could pay off our high interest credit card debt and by enabling much of our move to a single income. With my job taken, I was forced to try and use that money towards food, mortgage, and utilities. This was not really in line with the reasons for the agreement we'd had with them, and it was clear they were not comfortable with this. We could never have endured so much of that early season of healing without their support, but without the continuity of the money, Chelsea and I were left without other options.

I'd like to tell you I mustered up my strength, I pulled on my bootstraps, and just got it done. I want to say I went and started working three jobs and did what I needed to do to pay for my sick daughter and wife to survive. I'd like to tell you I wasn't tempted to slip back into The Underworld and "earn my keep." I would like to say that somehow, I was better than I was. But I wasn't. I knew my weaknesses, and Chelsea helped me to trust in Yahweh during this time even when familiar fear came crawling up my spine.

I chose to have belief in my Creator. Even when the Familial offers of prostituted redemption came in, I chose to say no. I chose to have my wife, daughter, and me be free from controllers whose money dripped with blood. I chose poverty instead of plenty, and I knew the little we had in freedom and love would be more delicious than abundance earned through thieving, manipulation, and deceit. (Prov. 17) The truth is that we saw The Lord God provide for His children. We saw that there is a greater family than the one I'd forsaken; it comes not through manipulation but through choice and humility. Over the next few months, we got to see Him help stir up other people around us who intervened and became living miracles.

No one we knew and trusted had the ability or willingness just to pay all our bills, but no part of The Body was ever meant to serve all its functions. We had some pay our mortgage one month, and we had others bring over bags of groceries with hugs and laughter. It was not the wealthy who had multiple six or seven-figure earning jobs who stepped in, but instead, it was a passionate man who lived in a van who shared a meal in our home and left an envelope of cash as he went, and a middle-aged over worked teacher who paid our mortgage.

It was so hard for me to live like this. I had to unlearn much of the ways I'd once used to survive, one of the greatest of which was hiding the truth of our situation from outsider's eyes. To help me learn to be free, The Redeemer would help me to learn to be vulnerable with people and be willing to show the truth of our brokenness and need. As bills pressed upon us like nooses on our necks, I finally relented and humbled myself enough to ask our church for help. It was not an easy conversation, and the application process was tremendous, as our church had many steps to walk through before relief was offered, but in one fell swoop of generosity, they paid every bill we had that month. It was a tapestry of miracles woven with prayers answered by manna, water from the rocks, and clothing, which didn't wear out.

Chelsea and I were wandering in The Wilderness, but The Most High God provided what we needed. It was not more than we needed; some bills were left unpaid, the food we'd prepared for the end of the world became dinner on our plates and breakfasts in the morning. We sold anything we could: Chelsea found things at the thrift store and flipped them on eBay to pay our insurance bill one month and groceries for a week. I took knives I'd spent hours customizing with holsters, and survival equipment I'd used for expeditions, and sold them to keep our water and electricity on for thirty days. All of this bought us the freedom to go through a more intense and accelerated path to integration and healing. It also gave us the ability to start ministering to others who were in need.

Soon I was able to start connecting with other survivors who were just beginning to come out of the cults and covens they'd become ensnared by. This led to more intense spiritual warfare and other assassination attempts on Chelsea and me, but it also led to greater freedom for beloved wounded ones. It was the craziest and most intense time of our lives. Chelsea and I weren't sure it was ever going to end. There was no way to know where the next month's money was going to come from, but we did learn one place it was not. After the interview process with our church, they made sure to make it abundantly clear that they would only help people out in this way one time. They had instituted corporate policies to keep from becoming continual providers to the needy. As such they were going to be able to provide us no further assistance.

We did not have other people to turn to or ask, so with no other options, I humbled myself again and went and stood in the government benefits line. I joined the ranks of people who for their reasons stood in line with their needy hands extended. There was not a church for me to turn to, there was no fleshly kinsman redeemer in my life, so I did what I needed to and made sure my wife and daughter were fed. The benefits provided to us would give us four months: four months of food, four months of mortgage and utilities paid, but that would be it. It was a miracle still that we did not earn, and for that we were grateful. It was the first time Chelsea and I had ever gone on benefits, but I suppose that's why they are there. I can't sit here now and complain for pages and pages on how this is supposed to be where The Church provides but the reality is they can't.

Our churches have not taught their congregations how to manage money, how to be entrepreneurs and critical thinkers, or how to be debt free. Our pastors are often in more debt than most of the congregation because the buildings, property, and their lack of financial independence have swept the real legs of support right out from under them.

As its been written,

"The borrower is always a slave to the lender." (Prov. 22)

God's economy as outlined in His Instructions was not to be built on debt, slavery, and wage work, but upon an entirely different system of labor and freedom. God had even worked into His Feasts one in which the tithe or the offerings of the body were to be given wholly unto the poor, the orphans, and the widows. (Deut. 16) Another part was meant to be kept, meant for us to enjoy and fund our celebration of The Biblical celebrations and Feasts. The business-minded and corporately controlled church though does not have the freedom to give their tithes away; the expenses must be covered first before the needy can get their help.

It is because of this that the needy are forced to look to government systems, which have their own cost to provide for their needs. They must turn to the same government who seals their private, Family owned promissory debtors notes with Osiris's All Seeing Eye. It is a broken system, one which has a tremendous cost. Without it, though, I'm not sure what Chelsea and I would have done. We were in need, and they became part of the answer to coming out of bondage and into freedom instead.

Chelsea and I were able to take care of Naomi, and with this consistent money coming in; I was able to focus more on my healing. Over those next few months, I began to have an invigorating passion, empowering peace, and restoration. Soon the only thing left lingering keeping me from fully functioning was my physical body pain and Naomi's sickness.

Into this moment came a blessing that would change the path of Chelsea's and my future. With it would come freedom from pain, healing for our daughter, and financial freedom, which did not require a 9-to-5 job.

Chapter Thirty Two

When Passover Provides

Just a few weeks before most families are getting ready to celebrate Easter, Chelsea and I decided it was time we did our best to celebrate our first Biblical Feast, Passover. Passover is one feast, which hallmarks the most crucial moment in our faith. It offered us the joy of celebrating the Passover Lamb who was slain and resurrected, purchasing for us all the redemption we so desperately needed. Two things happened just before we began our celebration, which would test our faith. One would drive fear and dread into our hearts, while the other would show us the blessings in store for us when we choose not to stray from His Ways.

One of the things, which had been providing our needs during this time, was the unemployment benefits for Chelsea. With just a few weeks to go until Passover, Chelsea received a letter notifying us that her former employer was contesting the payment of the benefits. A hearing to determine her case had been scheduled to occur on Passover. In no uncertain terms, they threatened to not only stop the payment of future benefits, but also require us to pay back the entire prior issued funds. Reading those words brought on a sickening feeling of hopelessness and despair we could hardly shake. Over the next few weeks, we took that letter and laid it on the floor as we prayed. Knowing this was something, which was entirely out of our hands, we wanted to choose to have faith in our Heavenly Father's favor in this matter. (2 Kings 20, Book of Susannah)

While the hearing drew closer and closer, the unimaginable dread would do its best to settle over our home. We did not have a way out from the financial repercussions ahead; the destroyer of our peace and hope was crouching at the door. Even as we felt its dark presence, we grabbed onto the promises God gave us that we did not need to fear destruction but know He would fight for us. Our faith had grown and matured, and we were beginning to walk not by earthly sight but by His Holy might.

The morning of Passover, Chelsea and I were walking around the house, putting the final things together for our feast. Looking at the clock, we saw it was time to make a phone call to determine our fate. Naomi clutched around her mother's neck as we huddled together in the kitchen and prayed. We prayed to the God of The Impossible, knowing this was the day thousands of years ago when death passed over His people, a day when the whole of the might of Egypt's armies, gods, and princes could not stand against the people of The Promise. We thanked Him for His faithfulness to us and the miracle, which gave each of us the power to place the Lamb's perfect blood over our spiritual doors. Comfort became our cover as a feeling of peace washed over us no fleshly tongue could be worthy to describe. Chelsea headed up to our bedroom where she shut the door. Her faith had moved mountains of fear far from her, and she picked up the phone and dialed.

Twenty minutes later, I saw my wife coming down the stairs. This was the woman who had held my shaking hands, kissed my quivering lips, and loved me while the world sought to tear us apart. I saw tears upon her cheeks as she drew near and threw her arms around my neck. Weeping, she stumbled out the words, "They withdrew their appeal and all future appeals, and instead they reinstated our benefits to their full amounts. Our God is so good to us."

We held each other for moments, which turned to minutes, as we saw for ourselves a miracle of the heavenly kind. It was a miracle which reminded a poor family in the mountains that The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob still answers the cries of the needy, poor, and orphaned in their days of distress. Our God is a strong deliverer; He is the calmer of raging seas and the shaker of the pillars of the earth. He is the God who set fire to the mountains of Sinai and stood as a pillar of fire between the armies of killers and His people at the Red Sea. He still moves with miracles and provides for you and me. We have seen the God of miracles with our tear stained eyes. He came to show us that on Passover, He will provide. He provided us all the guiltless Lamb to cover our once wounded hearts with hope, to cover our guilt, shame, and fear with forgiveness, robes of righteousness, and faith in their place. He purchased for us redemption at the foot of that cursed tree.

When the sun had set, Chelsea and I gathered around borrowed tables and newly purchased chairs with friends and family. We gathered and broke the unleavened bread and drank home brewed Kombucha from plastic cups as the wine of remembrance. We shared with others the story of the first Passover in Egypt and its extraordinary fulfillment thousands of years later. When the perfect Passover Lamb cried out “It is finished,” at the same moment, the high priest stood at the temple sacrificing the lamb without spot or blemish, speaking those same three words.

Finally the one and only perfect Red Hefer sacrifice was offered. Now Azazel that fallen Watcher angel, who all sin would finally be ascribed too, watched the sinless offering for the redemption of all bear forth-eternal fruit. (Leviticus 16, 1 Enoch 12-16, Jude, 2 Peter) After reading these stories and that of the first great Exodus we uncovered the mystery of the bread and the wine, then washed each other’s feet and poured out blessings and prayers to each other.

Our God is a deliverer to His people. He does not grow weary, and He does not change. He loves to remind His sons and daughters that He still moves in power, mercy, and strength. He is not interested in our perfection, our legalism, or our checklists of doing what is right. He is interested in hearts that yearn for Him, long for Him to be their all-consuming love. He is not slow to answer but says to us all, “Call upon Me in your day of trouble and I will deliver you.” (Psalm 50:15)

Chelsea and Naomi and I started a new Reynolds tradition that day. We began to observe The Feasts of Yahweh as entrusted to The Israelites in The Wilderness so long ago. He gave us those feasts days to be observed forever so that we would practice and prepare for their fulfillment in days to come. (Exo. 12:14, Lev. 23:41) As well as to help guard ourselves from being deceived.

The Israelites were observing those first spring feasts of Passover, Unleavened Bread, and First Fruits in the days of Messiah’s first coming. Some of the people saw the prophetic fulfillment with their own eyes. Some were there to bear witness to the moment when the leaven of our sins was taken away as the body of our Redeemer was broken for you and for me. Some looked upon the First Fruits of the Resurrection as tombs were opened and the dead walked out of the hollows of the earth in Sheol and ultimately out of their graves. Even a greater mixed multitude of The Lost Sheep of The House of Israel were present when The fire of The Holy Spirit fell upon the people during Pentecost, just as the fire of Yahweh descended during the first Pentecost at Mt. Sinai that same day thousands of years before.

Our Father longs for His people to remember His miracles and His prophecies fulfilled, and to practice our dress rehearsals for Messiah’s second arrival, The Great Revelation of our King of Kings in the Fall Feasts and at the final trumpet blast heralding our King’s Second arrival. May we be found practicing His holy tradition by keeping His Instructions and celebrating The Feasts of Yahweh. May we be found obeying His Loving Instructions when He arrives.

Might we show the world a better tradition that was given to us so long ago, a tradition not perpetually poisoned by its pagan roots, which will always give honor and glory to The Rebellious King Nimrod, and his mother, and wife Ishtar. May we instead worship our God in the way He tells us to worship Him. May we celebrate the miracles of His provision by blessing our friends and family with a feast to our Redeemer and King. Might we teach our children The Ways of our Messiah's Kingdom and not the ways of this world.

The Family I was born into taught me to defile, curse, and destroy the Holy Days of Yahweh, but now Naomi was born into a family, which will guide her to bless, honor, and cherish His Feasts. She will be raised under the covering of my home where we delight ourselves in The Loving Instructions of our God. She will be shown the narrow Way of The Messiah, and in time she will be given her opportunity to choose to walk with us into the heart of darkness where we seek to set captives free, or she can choose to rebel and join the ways of this world and the Enemy's camp of beautified bondage. I will not force her to follow my way, just as The Father does not force us to choose His.

I will not manipulate her, control her, or deceive her into doing my will. Naomi Grace, I love you enough to let you have free will to know the power of choosing. I pray you will choose The Narrow Way of life instead of the broad way of destruction. (Matt. 7:13-14, Luke 13:24, 2 Cor. 6:17) I pray you will choose to be set apart, to be holy unto our Elohim. I pray you decide to leave the deception of this world to the blinded and deceived sheep, and not embrace its seduction or fear its threats. You were made for mighty deeds, my beloved daughter. Things this world cannot fathom will be fulfilled as you pray with truth, authority, faith, and love.

To all you sons and daughters: I warn you now that the forces of evil will hunt you in the night. They will stalk you in your sleep and hunger for your flesh. They will long to destroy you and sift you as wheat. Know this: I will fight for you with every breath in my lungs and with every drop of blood in my body. With sword drawn, I will stand between you and those cowardly serpents. Naomi, I will lay my life down in defense for you, that you might see your dad is no longer a murderer, addict, or feign, but now is a warrior of Yahweh Elohim. I am not willing to see you thrown into the perverse pits or made to pass through the black fires. You will be free, my daughter, to live in the abundance of Abba's love, joy, and grace.

I pray you, dear reader, will remember these words. I pray as the temptation stalks your thoughts, remember our Redeemer fights for you and fights with you in this great War of The Ages. I hope you look upon your fingers and know He gave them to you to work towards the redemption of the lost sheep and ravenous wolves alike. May The Good Shepherd of our souls remind you of all these things. May He breathe upon you a fresh anointing of His Spirit to strengthen you and empower you to walk in His ways. May He kindle in you a holy flame that burns brightly for the entire world to see. I pray you burn with furious hope, relentless passion, and unceasing determination to fulfill His great call.

This was the first of two things Passover provided us that month. The second brought with it changes to our hurting bodies and release from our financial bondage.

Chapter Thirty Three

Family Relief

Many of the difficulties Chelsea and I faced over those first two years of restoration were stuck in dealing with my bodily pain as well as Naomi's digestion and health. There was no way I could get around the burdens and baggage my body had carried. For years it had been deprived of the opportunity to heal and be at rest. Due to our lack of consistent income, Chelsea and I became resourceful in finding ways to supplement our lack of health insurance, standard "job securities" and medical care by turning to natures medicines.

We spent years studying, researching, and testing the things we learned about how diet, exercise, water, and real food make in how our bodies function. For years we had lived in continual states of lethargy. There were constant battles with the inflammation in my joints, which had been damaged through many Family dealings. Chelsea and I first started by modifying our water, instead of the fluoridated, and pharmaceutical laden tap water we found a local spring, which dumped onto the rocks and began to drink our fill. Within a few months of drinking the natural water our attentiveness, clarity of thought, and energy began to improve.

Slowly, but surely Chelsea and I implemented new approaches to our diet including moving away from the highly processed and genetically modified products being labeled as food. Towards ones that were natural and still full of the energy packed substance our bodies craved. Financially, this decision to not shop based on price but the quality was difficult. However, we found ways of giving up more convinces like trash service, smartphones, and other digital subscriptions helped to offset the cost and drastically improve our quality of life. We soon found that eating more organic, plant-based, with organic lean meats and eggs to satisfy our bodies with energy and sustenance.

Even still there were some significant problems with Naomi's body and my own. Chelsea and I continued to try to learn about better natural eating principles when we stumbled on a YouTube Show called Biblical Health-with Chris and Liz Bailey. The information this passionate and unbelievably well-studied couple put forth challenged, convicted, and encouraged Chelsea and me to decide to pursue a more set-apart way of eating. After starting Naomi on their Core Health Products, Digestive Enzyme we saw the first marked improvement of her digestion.

However, as our financial situation changed, I could no longer afford their companies supplements. After Liz Bailey heard about us, she voluntarily donated the products to a family in need thousands of miles away. Chris and Liz embodied the love and provision of The Father to my family and reminded me of how Yahweh's Kingdom is supposed to operate. They helped to meet our needs in any way they could, and years later we would grow to become dear Truth-seeking friends and family from afar. Check out (www.corehealthproducts.com) to connect, bless, or be blessed by the faithful Bailey family.

The blessings for walking in The Way were only beginning, and soon more opportunities for relief would come when we least expected it.

While we set about getting ready for Passover, Chelsea told me we were going to need some folding chairs to accommodate the other guests. Looking on craigslist late one night, I stumbled on an ad for some black wooden chairs being sold. A few days later, I headed up to meet the man from the ad. Pulling up the driveway, I was greeted by a barrel-chested young man who said, "Hello." Inviting me inside, he said his wife was on a call.

We started talking and I learned that his wife had a coffee business, and he offered me a free cup. Excited to try free coffee, I wholeheartedly agreed. After making me a cup, we started talking some more, and I shared some of the passion Chelsea and I have for being debt free. I told him how we were called to travel around the country in an RV and sharing a testimony of encouragement to those coming out of deception, be it manipulators' hands or miserable Monday mornings. In walked his wife, who greeted me with a warm smile and passion.

She shared with me more about the coffee I was drinking and how there was a health benefit stirred right in. I thought the coffee tasted great, but at that moment I was too caught up in my world to listen to what she had to say that night. She mentioned, as I was getting ready to leave that there may be a way for Chelsea and me to use the coffee to raise funds on the road. Intrigued, I made an appointment for her to call me the following morning and see what I thought of the coffee's taste and how it made me feel. Her husband helped me load the chairs in my car, and I began my drive down south.

The physical pain I'd been battling had gotten more severe over the previous few months and a simple hour drive often left me crippled for a day. Twenty minutes into my trip, I felt something I'd forgotten was possible. I felt relief. I felt the pain in my body just turn down. I can't say it disappeared or anything like that but I noticed the sensitivity and nerves in my spine and shoulders was finally calm. I had no idea what was going on but I began to weep. I hadn't felt relief in so long. The pain, which wrecked my body, had been out of control and my refusal to rely on deadly pharmaceuticals had heightened so much of this battle. I had given up hope that I could ever feel better and had grown to accept the realities of living in chronic pain. Drinking that cup of coffee gave me a glimmer of hope that maybe things could be different.

The next morning, as Casey had promised, she gave me a call and I told her I needed to meet with her again and get more of the coffee to see if it could help me find relief. She agreed and we met at a Starbucks where Casey explained to me why their coffee was different. It was not the coffee itself that made me feel better but a food called Ganoderma Lucidum. She told me about this super food that was the most anti-inflammatory and alkaline food on the earth. I had spent a great deal of time learning about inflammation’s role in our bodies’ perception of pain as well as cognitive and digestion issues, and began to listen more closely. Chelsea had also been doing studies of natural remedies for thyroid issues, and our bodies’ increased ability to fight off diseases, cancers, and sicknesses when in an alkaline balanced PH level. We had already been blown away by how much better we felt since eating food in accordance with The Fathers Instructions as well as an organic diet.

Casey explained the ways people for thousands of years had used this herb to bring changes to an extraordinary number of health challenges. She told me testimonials others had experienced over the last eight years, finding their bodies restored from all kinds of ailments. She also showed me the opportunity of how it could provide us the income we needed to replace while having the freedom to recover still and get the healing we were requiring. As she was talking, I could feel a skeptical voice prickling my ears that this was too good to be true. Rather than dismiss something before testing it myself, I decided I would go and do my research and test this out. I agreed with Casey that I would try it for a few weeks and see what it could to for Chelsea, Naomi, and me.

As I began to drink the “King of coffee,” I found within just two weeks the flares of pain continually coursing through my body hushed down to a whisper. The arthritic pain I’d had in my right hand from an injury finally disappeared, and I was able to use it without the pins and needles I'd felt for years. I lay down without wincing and found my energy bloomed. To those that have not dealt with chronic pain, it can be so hard to understand this. When I finally woke up without pain, I felt like my brain turned back on. So much of my mind had been devoted to managing the pain, and when those mental resources were finally freed up, the clarity and focus I'd once contained were free to work again.

I could not believe how much better I felt. Soon Chelsea tried the teas and the insomnia she'd had for months disappeared. I was excited beyond belief, knowing that this may be the thing we'd been waiting for to help us be able to get back to functioning and to work for our family. Chelsea with her traditional nursing background wanted to spend more time going through hundreds of peer-reviewed articles on PubMed about Ganoderma Lucidum and after she did, she too was convinced this was something we needed to be a part of.

We got Naomi started on the Organic Spore Powder supplement, and in a couple of weeks, she was finally able to reset her digestion system and could sleep in peace. It was a blessing beyond belief to see our daughter finally freed from the cramps, bloating, and sickness. She could finally develop normally, and soon she began to crawl and babble to our great delight.

We knew we'd found what The Father had for us, and over the next few months, I poured my passion into learning about the business, the industry as a whole, and leading a team. Within that time, Chelsea got to stay at home with Naomi and raise our now healthy and growing daughter with joy. I began to drink the body management shakes and lost nineteen pounds in the first thirty days, and more importantly kept off the weight. It gave my body the energy boost and vitality I needed to get back to work. It took some time but I was relentless in my willingness to go and talk to anybody about this coffee and tea that changed our lives.

Just as our government benefits ran out, our business began to replace the income we'd lost. It was one of the most encouraging and exciting things to see, to know there was a way of providing for my family that did not require a nine-to-five job. I knew I'd found a way of working that worked for us, for our unique situation, and for our goals and dreams. It has granted Chelsea and me the freedom of changing people's lives, whether financial or spiritual. We now are armed with tools that can bring encouragement to the many different areas of people's lives.

Working the business granted me the insurmountable joy of working with business partners who pour their own passion and excitement into fighting for their financial freedoms. To each of you who has granted me the honor of working with you since I first began my business, I thank you.

Hope had come flooding into our home, but another predator was stalking at the edges of our peace ready to destroy it all. I could never have known this blessing without those Passover chairs, and I thank God every day for that craigslist ad and someone who was willing to share a cup of Black Coffee with a long-haired hurting man late one spring night.

I'd hoped that with those changes would come abundance, blessings, and peace. I hoped my healing would be accelerated and I would not need to deal with much of the remainder of the issues from my past. I made an internal agreement that I would place much of my healing on pause while I went and learned about business and sought a way to get us out of this hole of debt we'd been plunged into. This may have worked for a while but soon the lion, which stalked in the darkness, would strike another devastating blow. Death would return to my home, innocent blood would be spilled, and this time it would be that of my beloved daughter.

PART 9

Chapter Thirty Four

When Death Calls

My phone wouldn't stop ringing. I'd flipped it to silent, but still it buzzed over and over again in my pocket. I was annoyed that someone would be interrupting me in such a critical moment. The business was just starting to have some traction, and I was meeting with some new business partners, having what I thought was one of the most important conversations of my life. Buzzzzz, buzzzz, buzzzz. On and on, it wouldn't stop. Finally, I glanced down at my phone and saw that I had seven missed calls from Chelsea. Before I could swipe my keys, she called again.

I answered an expensive phone call; the cost would be the life of a friend who'd never abandoned me, a friend who held me while I wept, screamed, and grieved for the countless lives lost before my eyes. He'd been with me as I'd explored tunnels in the mountains and when I'd made my way through the halls of hell that marked my past. He'd never mocked me or called me crazy. He let me weep when I needed to and swam at my side when I dove into the depths of water for the first time in four years. He'd kept my heart beating on nights when I thought it would burst. He'd kept our bodies warm when Chelsea and I shivered against the alpine cold. He'd reminded me there was still joy in the mourning, and there was yet a story of rescue waiting for us all. His name was Ruger; he was my best friend, and he was my dog.

Ruger came into Chelsea's and my life just about the time that the "Switch" occurred from Nate to Nathan. Chelsea knew how badly I'd wanted a dog and she thought it was time we got one. I spent a few months researching before I decided on a few breeds that were ideal. The choices narrowed down by our budget as we began to go and check out different puppies in the area. Soon one option would rise above the others.

Ruger came to Chelsea and me from an island in the Bahamas called Turks and Caicos. Although we had never been to the island, we heard that there was a problem with the overpopulation of feral dogs. Most of the dogs are friendly scavengers who are a wide blend of breeds and sizes from shepherds to corgis. The dogs earn their name from begging for food, which the locals prepare in large pots. After cooking and later reheating beans and peas in the same pot, a thick burned cake is left behind. This pot cake is then fed to the dogs. This is why Ruger is a Royal Bahamian Potcake. Potcakes' character traits vary but most are known for two things: intelligence and intense loyalty. Because of this, they are beloved by their owners who can acquire one through a person couriering them back to the US where they are disseminated through various agencies.

Ruger came to the United States as a four-month-old puppy in the worst shape. He was emaciated with health issues ranging from giardia to an extremely weak, damaged hip. Chelsea and I went to look at him over at a home that fostered dogs waiting to find their home. We saw Ruger for the first time trotting in from the backyard where he was playing with his other Potcake brother. When he came inside, he saw us strangers and skirted to the edge of the house, watching us with fixed trepidation. Only after a few minutes of him seeing how the other dogs were content with our presence did he come and allow us our first greeting. We had spent many months researching how to select a dog and though Ruger was a mix of breeds I was more than eager to own, his initial personality was not quite what I was hoping for.

As we spent more time testing Ruger and him testing us, the Lord moved me in my spirit that this was the dog he had for Chelsea and me. Wanting confirmation, I pulled Chelsea aside and as we spoke, it became abundantly clear that she was discerning the same thing. We told the owner our thoughts, and we all agreed to welcome him into our family. We placed Ruger in his little kennel and drove him to his new home.

Ruger's arrival in our house was met with excitement and also a dedication I had not had for any dog. I was determined to train, bond, and cultivate a companionship with him. I was free to pour my passion into this dog. I would spend hours watching training videos, reading books, and then putting into practice what I had learned.

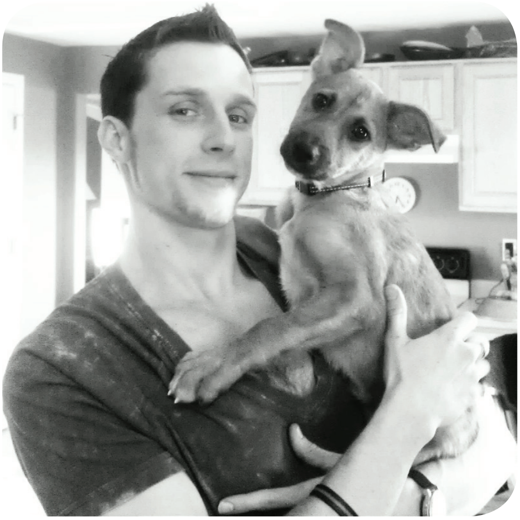

His initial welcome into our house was met with trepidation of the most extreme degree. He spent his first day shaking in his kennel, too unsure to come out. Ruger later ever so cautiously emerged and began to explore his home for the first time in his life. It was a real home for him. It took a few more days, but as he became more confident of his surroundings, he began to show his prowess.

Ruger was by far the most intelligent dog I had ever worked with, and he learned everything I could throw at him as quickly as I could figure out how to teach it to him. With only two potty incidents inside, I thought I couldn't have received a more wonderful dog. But Ruger would not turn out to be an easy dog; instead, he would be the dog Chelsea and I needed.

Just as we thought Ruger was coming into his own, two large dogs smashed into him at the dog park. The impact further damaged Ruger's already weakened hip and led to him being crippled. Here was the dog I had waited all my life for, but what I had thought would be the perfect guardian and backpacking companion dog for Chelsea and me was a crippled, growth stunted, 33lb mess of a dog. His messiness drove me to continually ask Abba, "Why? Why would this have been the dog You chose for us?" Over and over, He was silent in His response to my fervent prayers until one day His voice rang through my frustration, "I entrusted him to you." That was all He said but that was everything. In five words, The Living God was generous enough to share with me a perspective that only He can give. God chose not to provide me with a perfectly healthy and expertly trained dog. Instead, he entrusted me with a broken, messy animal that needed one thing more than any other: commitment.

Ruger required owners that were willing to do whatever it took to give him every chance for a fulfilled existence on this earth. Ruger is a dog, I know this, and he will always be a dog, but as any person who has put the time, dedication, and sacrifice into really raising a superb dog can tell you, there is so much more there when you have a relationship with a great dog than when you merely own a pet. Ruger spent months of his first year of life barely able to walk, and pooping colors and textures I don't even want to try to describe.

Unfortunately for Ruger, and more so for us, his problems stemmed not merely from his physical health but also from his overall wellness. Ruger – like most dogs who are rescued from severe abuse or neglect cases – had baggage. More than a busted hip, Ruger lived out of fear. His interactions with Chelsea and me that first moment we laid eyes on him were powerful indicators of this. Though the Lord's words calmed my reservations regarding this, the fear in Ruger was the subtle enemy of the bond with a great dog I had so desperately sought.

It first came to notice on our second walk with Ruger. His first had gone so well I was nearly beside myself with joy. But then the honeymoon phase ended, and the fullness of Ruger's baggage came out as we walked by his first terror: a trash can. To Ruger, the black trashcans parked on the side of the curb caused terror in his emaciated little body. He would urinate on himself, shaking from head to tail on his short leash. I could see in him a single emotion: terror. Ruger knew terror because he had been terrorized.

At the hands of human beings, Ruger was taught fear. He was made to know its nature and to understand its most detailed intricacies. Ruger's fear was not limited to trashcans but it included keys, large men, things covering his head, bags hanging off people, and cords. Ruger's seemingly unconnected sets of random stuff in my house and in my neighborhood caused terror in him. Ruger feared that which had harmed him. This is the fruit of evil. People had abused my dog.

He had been taught to fear. He had been taught an evil thing. Now thousands of miles away from those abusers, on his second walk in my neighborhood, Ruger saw one of those same trashcans he had been taught to fear. No wonder my dog had fears. Evil had gotten its mark on my dog. And so I was faced with that beautiful word again: *entrusted*.

This dog is whom God entrusted to Chelsea and me. This was the greatest of blessings I could have ever known. For as Chelsea and I would encounter one of Ruger's fears, we would teach him a new word: faith. It was not kindness, compassion, or gentleness; it was faith, which inoculated my dog to the most potent form of evil.

Ruger needed to know that he could trust me. He needed to know I was not one of those abusive people. He needed to know that his pack leader was good. He needed to know his leader would feed him, shelter him, and meet his basic needs first.

Once Ruger learned he would have those needs met, he was freed to learn that I would always protect him, love him, and be kind to him. He needed to believe I would be patient, compassionate, and gentle. As Ruger came to know these truths, he was freed to learn that the rope in his pack leader's hands was safe because he could trust his pack leader. This was the process for Chelsea and me to teach Ruger the things he once feared no longer had to keep him terrorized.

We met Ruger's needs. We studied, we researched, we got help, and we learned how to be the right owners to Ruger. We believed Ruger needed to be made well, and Chelsea and I were given the opportunity be the answer to that problem. We were able to be faithful and steadfast in that call, and because of it, we were able to see just what God can do when we are obedient. I could not have known what God was going to do to our lives through having an abused dog in our home, but as always when we step into the thing we fear, Yahweh shows us just how powerful His Ways are.

Yahweh knew what was coming in the years ahead. He knew the handlers of my personality were going to park outside my driveway and trigger me with their words because my "services" were going to be demanded again. More importantly, Yahweh knew I was going to need a companion for the journey into The Wilderness of remembering and learning the truth. That harrowing call, which interrupted my meeting rang through with words that would devour this love of mine. Before I can tell you the end I must tell you about a choice, which changed me forever. It will lead us back to the days before Naomi graced us with her arrival. A time when the mountains became my retreat and my dog kept me breathing.

Chapter Thirty Five

Falling in Love Again

The first steps into the wild were weighed down with backpacks. I cinched Ruger's pack down on his back as Chelsea and I prepared to step onto the trail. We headed through mountain meadows and up forested hills. The hours passed as we saw the wonders hidden away for those who are willing to leave the comforts of civilizations and perfectly paved roads. We hiked over waterfalls and bedded down that night by a glacial lake. I went to sleep happier than I'd been in a long time.

The hunger for the hunt and for the lonely places, and the need to prepare for battle was building every day. The discontentment I felt with my life had never been higher. I was eager to come and put my skills and training to the test. I'd spent months preparing for that trip, carefully researching and selecting every piece of equipment and taking the time to make sure they were the best.

That first night we slept in a single-walled tent used for expeditions up Everest. It was small and lightweight, just big enough for the two of us. As we prepared to go to bed, the temperature plummeted to well below freezing, and Chelsea insisted we bring Ruger in from the cold. Relenting, I brought him into the tent where he bedded down at our feet. For a moment frozen in time, I felt complete.

My wife was lying next to me bundled up in wool and down feathers I'd helped to supply. I smelled mountain chamomile and wood smoke in the air. I could taste the fresh meal I'd carried up the mountainside. The perpetual restlessness in my soul, which had bid me to be ready to flee, escape, and evade, faded and I was free for a moment from its shackles and confines.

The air was crisp the next morning, and promises of peace washed down with every breath. I had my favorite customized pistol and tools for mountain expeditions strapped to my chest, and my backpack was loaded up. I looked over to see my wife smiling and my dog sniffing out chipmunks just beyond my reach. Ruger was loyal, and though he was off leash, he never wandered. He was happier on the trail than at any other time.

Soon Chelsea and I realized this was the place we wanted to be. We wanted to get up to the mountains and explore the wonders waiting on the trails. What was waiting back in civilization was frustration, but Ruger helped to provide me an outlet, ensuring I would survive the months to come.

Each week I would go to work, and as soon as possible, I would head home, throw on our packs, and head off to hike. I could be me on the trails within just minutes. Out there I didn't have to hide the skills I'd learned or the tools of the trade. Out on the way of the wild, I was free to carry my pistols to fend off bears and show off my blades. I could carve notches in branches, feather sticks for tinder, and help my wife build a temporary shelter against the wind and rain. I could start fires with flint and steel, and teach others to do the same. In the wild, I could hunt for the perfect spot to spend the night and not have to think about the dreams: the hauntings of memories clawing their way through my soul.

Nate may have dated and fallen in love with Chelsea by taking her to spots in the city. But Nathan and the rest of us fell in love with her in the flowery meadows ten thousand feet above sea level and running from Bigfoot spirit creatures down back country trails. I found my joy renewed in the places where I could pick through patches of wild raspberries and find springs of fresh water bubbling out of rocks.

Emmaline Trailhea

It was the summer after we got Ruger that Chelsea and I bonded for the first time. While I pumped water through a filter from a glacial stream, I saw in her what I am sure Nate saw in her too. I saw in her a woman who loved me even as I was. I saw in her a treasure and a delight. I saw her as she could be when freed from the shackles of her job and mundane Monday through Friday life. It was in that tiny tent with Ruger sleeping at our feet where we talked and listened and once again became one. Ruger was always there no matter where we went, except for the time a black bear approached our tent. He barked and growled to warn me, but then he hid by his momma while I went gleefully stalking into my familiar darkness with a flashlight and pistol to chase it off. That dog grew to be my best friend. He helped me remember that the joys in this life are still possible.

Over the next few years, Chelsea, Ruger, and I hiked hundreds of miles. When the winters set in, Ruger and I would explore the thousands of acres of trails along The Front Range, giving us a taste of the freedom we longed for day and night. While the horrors of my past and present began to scream to the front of my mind, Ruger was who I grabbed, and we'd head to the mountains for an appointment with The Creator of our hiding place. Ruger would sit at my side while I wrote in my journal, wept, and screamed out the insanities that had happened to me. He would sit on the rock next to me as I overlooked valleys that stretched out for miles, begging The Father to restore the broken one I'd become.

Ruger was fiercely loyal, but he was not whole. The damage to his hip from the days in the Bahamas was severe. Soon it became evident that the dysplasia he had on his joint had gotten worse. Within just three years of his arrival, his hip was nearly shot. The hikes became shorter and fewer in number. We took to calling him Chicken Wing after the goofy way he learned to move.

As time went on, the pain he was in became more evident, and he could only manage one or two walks a week. The restless energy he had drove him to misbehave, and soon my ideal companion dog lost his honed edge. But before he lost it entirely, Ruger would save Naomi's and my life, and remind me why one must trust and obey The Father no matter what He says.

Chapter Thirty Six

A Man and His Dog

We continued to take him on walks with us after Naomi was born and did our best to keep him occupied, but it was not ideal. Just before Naomi was seven months old, I thought I would help Chelsea get some rest, so I took Naomi and Ruger for a walk around the lake. I usually never kept Ruger on a leash, but the park ranger had been hounding people who didn't, so I did that day. Naomi was sleeping on my chest, her little legs dangling out of the baby carrier, happy as she could be. We finished our first lap around the lake, and I heard in my spirit that I needed to turn back and head home. I tried to dismiss the thought and justify it away. I thought to myself, "Naomi never lets Chelsea rest and she deserves a longer nap than this," so I walked on. Again, I felt a troubling in my spirit, but I shoved it down.

The trail around the lake is about twenty feet above the shoreline and fifty feet from the water. I saw up ahead a woman and two well-muscled men standing by the water, throwing sticks for their three pit-bulls to retrieve. The dogs were enjoying the game and just as we went to pass by, one of them looked up and saw us. I felt the intent of his gaze turn from curious to aggressive all at once. He let out a guttural bark and growl as he tore up the embankment towards us. I reached for my weapon but it was buried under Naomi, and I could not get my backups. The owner suddenly saw us and screamed "NO!!!" This alerted the other dogs, who begin thrashing their way out of the water and towards their pack mate.

The pit-bull was on us in less than two seconds. I did my best to turn Naomi away as the dog plowed into the three of us. Snarling teeth began to chop at the air as Ruger swung on his harness between the pit-bull and me. Soon his legs got entangled in his leash, and he couldn't fight back. I pulled Ruger off the ground, trying to release his strap, but I couldn't get my hands on it. The dog's teeth clacked together as I heard the owners screaming, "OH, GOD, NO, STOP IT"!! Naomi was awake now, and her screams rose above the chaos. For a brief moment, I feared her dangling legs had been bitten, but then she went silent and still.

I did my best to keep my body between the attacking dogs but all of a sudden the second pit-bull – teeth barred – slammed into us, and we began to stumble around. I saw Ruger step in between us and the dog's teeth tore into his leg. The smell of animal secretions, fear, and blood was now in the air. The woman on the shoreline just kept screaming, "God, no!!!" A frenzy of chaos ensued.

I used the only weapons I could and began to deliver strikes to the dog with boots, elbows, and leash handles crashing into ribs, skulls, and spines of the attackers. But then what sent icy tendrils down my neck was that the dogs didn't seem to mind a bit. Suddenly, I saw one of the pit-bull go flying off the ground as its owner grabbed onto it and threw it back down the embankment. Just then Ruger broke off his fight with the second pit-bull, and we tried to run down the other side of the embankment and away from the attack. Before we got a few feet down the side, the third pit-bull came barreling down after us. I was finally about to get Ruger's tangled harness released when the second man jumped down and slammed onto his dog, smothering him to the ground. "RUN!" he screamed at us, and we did.

Sprinting back towards our house, I began to examine Naomi, who was still silent, and miraculously, she was unharmed. There were streaks of blood and hair all over my legs, and I didn't think any of it came from me. I could see flesh missing from Ruger's leg and hair missing from spots on his chest and back and face. I left him in the backyard briefly and ran into the house, where I woke Chelsea up with one of the worst feelings of her life.

Veterinary care was out of the question as we could hardly afford to eat. Though Ruger's leg took the brunt of the damage, I knew with our care it would eventually heal. By the time I went back to try to confront the owners, they were long gone. It's probably best I didn't find them.

I learned a lot from the excruciating experience, and none of it was pleasant. I learned how dangerous it is to ignore those promptings in our spirit; that gut check out of nowhere should not be overlooked. Since then we have learned to pay attention and obey the promptings in our spirit any time our peace is taken. Ruger may have saved our lives but it came at a terrible cost.

He would never recover from the attack. Physically, he did as the puncture wounds closed up and scars took the places of bloody wounds like they do. After the morning around the lake, Ruger was more aggressive with other dogs, and he got to a point where I had to keep him on a leash on our walks. He was anxious, and the pain from his hip was worse than ever. There were still glimpses of Chicken Wing, my best friend, but they became fewer and fewer still. That is when Death came to betray a man and his best friend.

Chapter Thirty Seven

Best Friend Betrayal

Buzz…. Buzz…. Buzz..

I answered the phone.

Chelsea’s voice, filled with betrayal, bellowed out, “Ruger just bit Naomi in the face!”

“What?!” I replied. Naomi was screaming hysterically in the background.

“Ruger mauled Naomi in the kitchen, and there is blood all over.” A thousand pounds of dread sank through my soul.

Chelsea and Naomi had gone to the store; Ruger, as usual, accompanied them on the trip. Upon their return, Chelsea set Naomi down in the middle of the kitchen so she could watch her unload the groceries. Ruger howled in pain getting out of the trunk of the car; his hip was getting unbearable now. Inside the house, Ruger had gotten a drink of water and then went into the living room. Soon he went back into the kitchen, and before Chelsea knew what was happening, he was snarling and biting Naomi in the face, knocking her down onto the floor. Chelsea stepped in immediately as Ruger backed off and ran into the other room. Blood started pouring off Naomi's face as Chelsea snatched her off the floor. Soon her training as a nurse kicked in as she triaged the wounds. That is when she called me.

Chelsea did her best to clean and treat the wounds. The strength of my wife shone through what was the most traumatic experience of her life. She was able to get the wounds patched up and see that they could over time heal on their own. Soon we started applying Organic Spore Powder and natural vitamin E directly to the wounds and saw what a difference they made for her swelling, and they also reduced scarring. Once the injuries were finally addressed, Chelsea and I sat down and debriefed what had happened.

The horrors of seeing your child get hurt are bad enough, but when the creature you've loved like a child is the inflictor of those wounds, it tears out your heart. Chelsea and I wept together that night on the couch, knowing we had to do something none of us wanted to do. I promised her 24 hours, and within 24 hours if I couldn't find him an appropriate home, I would make sure he was never back in the house.

Chelsea wrestled with her heart-wrenching agony at home, her fears for Naomi, and her sorrow over the marking of her once flawless flesh. In a moment, The Father showed her a glimpse of the future of Naomi standing as a teenager. In this vision, the sky was filled with rumblings of dangers. Blackened smoke wafted in the air as a city burned in the distance. Naomi gazed out, her eyes fixed upon her surroundings. Her jaw was set like flint. She was immeasurably strong, a warrior made ready for the days of chaos unleashing themselves. Naomi was a warrior, and every warrior carries their scars. The faintest of white lines stitched itself across the bridge of her nose, the mark from a dog she may never remember. The mark came from a dog who helped her mother overcome her fears and helped her father find the courage to face down Death.

Chelsea saw the glimpse and knew these wounds and scars will not define her; they will be a part of her as we each carry our own scars. Naomi was not born for peace but for war. Chelsea may have grown up insulated from the chaos, but now it was rumbling in her heart. She chose not to run but to stand upon The Rock of Redemption. Chelsea was being made into a humble and wise woman who can raise her daughter up and prepare her to stand firm when the winds of terror blow.

I loved Ruger; I loved him more than pretty much all humans I'd ever known. He'd never lied to me, manipulated me, or made do evil. He'd never betrayed my trust until he did. I couldn't trust him anymore: not around my child, not around strangers, or around another owner's pets. I did my best to find him a new home in that twenty-four hours, but once a dog bites a child, it is a zero-tolerance policy with most adoption agencies. I was not willing to give Ruger with his ravaged hip to someone else so he could do more harm. I knew what needed to be done, but I had no idea if I could do it.

We kept him in the kennel that night, and I could tell from the look on his face that he knew life was never going to be the same. The next day I headed up north to meet with a client, and on the way there I wept, praying for wisdom to know what to do. Nobody wants to do what came next. There was no personality in my soul that wanted to end the life of the dog that had saved mine. I called friends and asked them if they would help me put down my dog, but they too had grown close to Ruger on our hikes in the mountains and didn't want to carry the burden of death. I didn't want to drag him into a veterinarian's office reeking of fear and suffering; he hated those places. I couldn't bear to see him have to be shackled to a table while they stab him with needles. It was just too much.

Oh God, I didn't want to take another life, let alone that of one I loved so much. Every other life I had taken had been because of manipulation, control, and the following of Orders. I had never freely chosen to do what came next. I had killed so many in my life, and I know so few will understand this but killing dogs had been some of the worst things I'd ever been made to do. It had broken pieces of my soul loose that were still rattling around: The Names and The List came back to me during that day of death. I was weeping and weeping, "My God, I can't do this." The tears still flow just writing about it.

But I wasn't writing that day; I was living it. I was breathing in the familiar taste of death on the sunset's red horizon. It was then that He, The Good Shepherd, the overseer of my weary and ravaged soul, spoke to me. He told me,

"Nathan, it is time you bring The Names up the mountain, and The Lists too. It's time you bring me your death and you entrust them with Me; you need to give Me your death if you want to be free."

Even as He spoke, I saw them. I saw the faces, those death masks before they passed from this world to the next. So many people had perished in my midst. Too many to bear. Their names came flooding through one after the next: Jeremiah, Andrew, Sam, Joshua, Elizabeth, Zach, Elliot, and on and on they went. I could see them piling up this weight upon my shoulders, a burden I'd carried all my life, a load I'd tried to surrender hundreds of times.

How do you let go of the faces of death? How do you let go of the orphans and widows who don't know your name? The first one in the pit, an ax and a fist, the seventh one a cord around carotid arteries weakening fingers grasping against my skin. How do you carry the endless agony of killing your best friend?

The words of My Redeemer echoed through the chambers of my soul. On those whispers came winds of courage and strength. It was not mine but His; a great exchange of His life for more death. He'd done it before, and I knew He would do it again. Just then my phone rang and Chelsea was on the other line.

"Nathan, I need to tell you what just happened. I was driving out of our neighborhood, and I saw in the middle of the road the biggest hawk I'd ever seen. It was just sitting there, and as I got closer, it tried to fly away but fell back down. I wasn't sure what was going on, but I saw its claw was stuck in the carcass of this dead rabbit. It kept trying to fly away and be free but it couldn't. By the time I pulled up, he suddenly shifted his body and took off, leaving the rabbit behind."

The Father's words echoed through my soul,

"You need to bring me your death if you want to be free."

I knew then that this was what I needed to do. We took Ruger for his last hike as a family, snapping pictures and filming tiny snippets along the way. We cried together as we pushed Naomi in the stroller while Ruger trotted on up ahead. A final snapshot of our family together marked the end of our walks with the dog we called Chicken Wing.

Chelsea said goodbye to Ruger as I loaded him into my car. I threw on my boonie hat and loaded up our packs. I drove him far into the mountains, to the place where we'd taken one of our first hikes together. Walking up the mountain with my dog, I said their Names and prayed for them all, their families who I didn't know and the ones who I never knew. I prayed for forgiveness for the thousandth time. I surrendered the hatred I had for those who killed them, the ones who at times made me do it: at the times I felt like I deserved the bullet, not the man holding the ledger of secrets or the wrong place wrong time loose ends. I carried on my shoulders the burdens of death. I took up with me a lifetime of wounds, bloodshed, and tears.

My best friend walked up the mountain, and he helped to carry the load. His pack held a list of their Names, and he brought it all the way to the top. I unloaded his burden as I found just the right spot, one that would give him a good view of the mountains stretching on for hundreds of miles. We shared his favorite snack together of homemade organic jerky as I told him how thankful I was for all that he'd done. I thanked him for helping me survive the heartache, bitterness, and pain at night. I told him he was a good boy and I was sorry for what I had to do. I filmed a final moment as a thunderstorm rolled over the top of us. I held my dog for one last time before I put him down for his final sleep.

I screamed and screamed and screamed some more. I screamed out at the top of my lungs until something in my soul tore loose and scattered into the winds now blowing with fury. I screamed until the thunder drowned me out and exploded across the darkening mountainside. I knew then my Elohim screamed too. He thundered out His reply. He had heard me and accepted this dead man's cry.

While the sky rent open and the waters fell from above, The Burden Bearer came and took my death and gave me life instead. He bought my misery and sorrows and gave me hope. I laughed with Him, knowing He would make it matter. Somehow He would take this once cursed life of mine and use it for blessings. At that moment on the side of a mountain, a dying restless man of murder found peace and life.

Some of you are carrying those burdens no soul can bear. Some of you are holding on to the names or faces of monsters who took from you innocence, virginity, sons or daughters lost in the pink mist. Some of you are holding on to anger at our Creator, blaming Him for the things He never did. Others are carrying insecurities from the lies spoken over you when you were just kids. Every one of you reading this has your list, your burdens which are breaking your back and keeping you from freedom, purpose, and truth. Are you ready to surrender the shackles and chains? It's time you face down the guilt, lust, and shame. It is time you find that The Burden Bearer is waiting at the top of the mountain where you can leave it all behind.

Yahweh entrusted Ruger to us for four years. He only had enough joint in that hip to get him through it and to the top of that mountain. It was just the right amount for him to fulfill his purpose in my life. Without him, I think I'd still be that hawk with claws stuck in death, trying desperately to get free. Without him, I would still be wondering what I could be. He helped me hike up that mountain and changed me forever.

It is time we find out whose burdens we were made to help carry. Someone woke up today who needs you to hold their hands and pray with them. Someone woke up feeling depressed and miserable and needs you to tell them they still matter no matter what they've been through. A man is staring in the mirror looking at a stranger needing to be told there is healing for even internal brokenness. There are veterans of life, war, and misery who are shoving needles in their arms, desperate to escape the nightmares, who need you to show them you still care for them. A child is screaming out in the night and needs someone who will not sell them for another trick but instead make sure they sleep soundly.

Some of you may be limping, barely holding on, but the healing you are crying out for is waiting when you bandage someone else's wounds instead of worrying about your own. The bitterness you're holding on to is what's keeping you in prison, not the one who hurt you. The keys to forgiveness are in the hands of The Healer who will restore what they took. Come and see that His goodness is forever and His mercy is endless. He will make right the wrongs of this world. He will bring justice that will be perfect and relentless. Come to Him now while there is still time.

Come to Him, who holds the hands of the hurting and gives them relief. Come to The One who knit you together no matter what kind of a womb you came from, whose offspring you were made by; He knows your innermost parts. Come to The Redeemer of bitter men and wounded women. Come to The Guardian of Eternities Hope and see that He has reserved a place for you.

PART 10

Chapter Thirty Eight

Student Teacher Interlude

I am going to offer you a window into the hidden world of healing for a broken soul. The process of healing can bring with it a flurry of dreams. Often this is the place pieces of my soul are able to express impossible emotions free of accusation, fear, and threats. Like all of us whose sleep filled dreams can take on the expression of our innermost struggles and fears, so too with those who are in the process of restoration.

Contained in this dream was a challenge and request for help to all those teachers, counselors, principles, and school staff who spend so much of their life around children. More often than not you will be the only point of reference for children raised in worlds like my own. You have an opportunity to make a difference that is bigger than you know. To help you understand that, I let the student in my soul share their words with you now.

In the dream, I was transported back in time where I was sitting in a classroom like so many of the thousands I have sat in over the years of my life. There were grainy white chairs with laminated desks attached. They were lined up in rows seven deep by eight wide. There were students peppered across the class; they all looked to be around thirteen years old. I was sitting in the back right corner in order to keep my back to the wall and remain confident that no one can sneak up on me.

Sitting just a few chairs ahead of me was Shane. He was one of my better friends, and he and I had been in Boy Scouts together for a few years. He was wearing his uniform, tucked in at the waist; PACK 72 in white letters on a red background was pressed onto his shoulder. P.P.C was stitched onto the handkerchief he wore around his collar. I saw all over the room the rest of my pack mates, each one dressed in his uniform and looking as if we were just about to head out for another camping trip or Jamboree.

The class began. Our regular teacher was out for the day and had left a lesson plan for the substitute to go over. Though the material was standard and I'd heard it hundreds of times, the day was about to be very different. The woman began to teach us at the front of the room. She picked up her dry erase marker and wrote her name on the board. My mind drifted into a place that was no longer in the present. Noises turned to sounds, which inevitably combined into those words and phrases I didn't want to hear. "Take out your vocab books and turn to page twenty-three," yet another moment of mundane misery to mutilate my mind.

The students dutifully obeyed her command as I looked up at the ceiling and allowed the memories to draw me into dissociative dreams. Minutes passed, and the droning went on as I wondered the halls of hell within my charred soul. My stupor was suddenly silenced when the teacher called out to me.

"Nate, will you please use 'persuasion' for us in a sentence?"

I ground the gears of my mind to a halt and prepared to regurgitate the indoctrinating bile that was written on page twenty-three. I waited. She watched. I waited some more. My classmates grew confused and one, then two, then by threes and fours they began to turn in my direction.

"Nate, will you please use 'persuasion' for us in a sentence like the one on page twenty-three."

I watched her and looked beyond the board at the end of the room, and into a moment in time she couldn't see. I faded back into a real life memory.

The memory transported me to a time and place far away. I saw Shane and myself setting out on a hiking trail in The Rocky Mountains. We had backpacks loaded down with changes of socks, tents, sleeping bags, food, and water. My pack mates were just about to set off as well; Josh was bent over on the tailgate of his dad's fire-engine red Ford Ranger, and he was picking a chunk of gravel out from behind his heel. Matt with his thick glasses and unbelievable intellect was making mental calculations that would take him twenty minutes to articulate. Jeff wasn't sure what was taking so long, but he was joking with one of the other guys about something I couldn't hear.

I let the memory accelerate through time until we were a mile down the trail and stopped for a four-minute rest. Snacks were pulled out of zippered pockets. They peeled through plastic seals revealing caloric treasures waiting inside. I was watching my pack mates as in just a few months I would be leading them on a fifty-mile trip through the backcountry of New Mexico's mountains. I was observing each of them carefully, examining how they managed their time, the weight on their shoulders, and the poles in their hands. I was making small calculations on where they should be in my line, on who would be able to help share the loads, and who would carry the map on each section of the trail.

Other kids' dads were colluding in the corner of the trail a few yards away, each of them trying hard to hide just how out of breath they were. For a rare moment, I was happy. I could see the trail would take me to a place I desperately wanted to go, where lush grassy meadows would envelop me in sleep and upon sunrise, the morning birds would wake me.

I did not want to come back down the trail we came on to the torment of what waited at my home or in classrooms like this one. I knew I wouldn't stay out here forever, where Shane, Jeff, and I were still friends, and they wouldn't make fun of me behind my back like all the other kids. My God, how I wanted them to like me and think of me as their best friend instead of their cruel joke. It was shallow at best, but the rivers of my soul ran deep, and even just a few inches of appreciation and friendship could carry me for miles.

The kids in my class and in my pack didn't know what waited for me when I walked in the door many miles away. They didn't know the sound of papa's pedophilic Family members. They didn't have to feel the plunge of a dagger as it worked its way past skin, fat, tendons, and bone. They wouldn't see the scabs that would come from my razor's edge as it tortuously tempted me to feel something other than apathy and indifference.

The memory stopped and I was back in the classroom.

"Nate, will you please use 'persuasion' for us in a sentence; there is an example on page 23 in your vocab book."

By now the classes attention was entirely fixed on me. I looked at the teacher again and told her my story of the hike. I told her about the place I'd rather be, the mountains of meadows, and the sound of the creek forty feet from my tent. I told her about the smell of vanilla pinesap oozing from a tree I buried my nose in, and the whispers of hope wafting over my withered wounds. I told her of the screams in the night, and of the millions of tears I had cried.

I answered her with a boldness that frightened many sitting nearby.

"I don't want to tell you the sentence from page twenty-three. I want you to listen and care about me. I want to matter more than this stupid book. I am not a question waiting to be answered; I'm not a score on your test. I am a thirteen-year-old boy who has survived incest. I want to feel something other than this, but I don't know what to do except crawl into a ball so most people won't find me.

No mom is waiting for me back home. She went and moved far away where Guests are attended to but children are forgotten and used as cheap labor instead. I want to eat food baked with care instead of this crap; my robot dad packed my lunch with this morning. But don't worry, miss substitute teacher, I'll soon be out of your hair, and you can run on to someone else; it's not like you care. Last night, I held a knife to my chest, wishing I could just plunge it in, but don't worry, the programming against premature suicide is thoroughly locked in."

The class once silent and motionless began to murmur. Seats creaked as students adjusted their bodies with the weight of what I'd just shared. The accusations exploded from my chest about the failure of the teachers who should have done something. I screamed them at the teacher, demanding a response.

"Why didn't you ask me where the bruises came from, the bloody noses and scars? Why didn't you stop them from tearing me apart? Where is the person who gives a crap about the kid sitting in front of you two hundred and eighty days in the year? When will I matter more than this silly book, I ask you and demand that you tell me, you apathetic crook!? I am not an answer, a statistic, or a score; I am a child who was ruined by monsters in this world of deceit. I carry the burdens of a thousand men's shoulders. Where is the person who will share my crushing load? I've yet to meet them in one of these rooms, and I know it's not the woman standing in front of me now. You'll forget all about me in two days time when you have to substitute for another classroom that's bigger than mine.

Go ahead and read for us whatever's in this stupid book; it doesn't matter anyway; it never really does. I will wake up from this hell someday where you won't be, where there are people who love and care about me. Until that time, I am persuaded that none of this counts. Not the grade you'll give me or the ink on the board. You'll wipe it away at the end of today, just like this piece of my soul you'll throw in the trash as you look past my bleeding heart and on to the next. Goodbye, miss substitute teacher, I'll go ahead and dig in the rubbish bin once you've moved on."

The teacher began to justify like they always do. She muttered on about state requirements, licensure, and aptitude scores, which don't mean crap. Federal funding. licensure hours, and money is all that matters, and a place where children are indoctrinated with lies to make sure they become good worker bees who love their servitude and defend it with venom. She could tell the classroom was getting angry as others students began to agree.

The students' shouts ring out as the wounded ones are given a voice.

"Why is it you care about these vocab words more than you care about me? Why don't we matter more than you say? Why don't you give us the time of day?"

She was writing on the whiteboard a bunch of words, value charts, and statistics to prove her clinically approved method. Tears were pooling in the bottom of my eyes as she tried to get the classroom back on her side. She demanded we each raise our hands if we want to speak, so thirty hands shot up, and she looked so bleak. Just at this moment, my teacher walked in.

He had been hiding in the corner in the back of the room. He stepped to the teacher and said, "Class dismissed." We found our ways back to the halls where the bullies await, the jabs about my body, the kicks at my heels with their cool kids' uniform bought at the mall of tomorrow's trends.

The next morning found me making my way back into the room. My teacher walked up to me but didn't say a word. He taped a piece of paper on the wall by my desk. He looked at me for the first time in nearly a year and saw the shattered soul who'd been there all along. He nodded to the paper and headed back to his desk.

The paper had his handwriting on it, and this is what it said:

To: Nate Reynolds

"*I present this letter to you for reminding us what we need to do. You told us a story, and it had no name. You shared a shard of your soul once written with blood. Nate, you persuaded a tired teacher that his job was not done. In a thousand words or less, you told the schools what we really must do: abandon the broad ways of teaching we've been forced into. Share our lives with our students and help them through life, so that we might equip them to survive the madness at night, and let them remember that there is still hope, even if it means the answers are not going to be on vocab page number twenty-three.*"

I looked at the paper and began to cry an ocean of emotions always held inside. I let the tears fall wherever they may because for a single moment in time, the burden was not mine alone. The endless agony crushing my soul was given its first reprieve. I had been seen, maybe even understood, for the first time in too many years. It was not the end of the horrors; I had many more to go. But it gave me the opportunity to remember why I was still alive.

I knew as I wrote down that dream and poured over my journals from those years those words could be written. I knew there would come a day when I would be able to share this with a teacher and save a student's life. On that day I would know it was all worth it: the scabs on my arms, the beatings, and the bruises. The slices of sorrow, which slid through my soul, could find healing and wholeness I'd never known. I am not sorry for what I've been through; I'm only sorry I didn't say so sooner. When you see the student hiding in the back of the room, causing a ruckus or keeping you from finishing your plan, remember this story, and maybe you can save someone's future from the bottom of a bottle, an abuser's lust, or from their mother's absence. You might just be the one who reminded a broken human being they mattered more than the next test.

PART 11

Chapter Thirty Nine

A Wilderness Confession

Before I conclude this book, I must confess to you, my reader, a weakness and a truth. I have an innate flesh nature to be inwardly angry towards so many aspects of the Catholic Church. Trust me, I've written hundreds of thousands of words on it, and much has been tied to my abuse perpetrated within the pews of those stained-glass cathedrals and tempestuous tunnels beneath their prestigious parishes. Even as I've gone through great healing and finding Yahweh's freedom to forgive, lingering angst can fill my heart when contending with those who are subjects of Catholicism, especially Jesuits and Knights. I have seen Catholicism devour so many amazing people, and it breaks my heart. I burn with a similar fury at times when contending with the deception within the corporate Christian church and the countless sheep being led astray. The reason I must apologize to you is because of a stranger named Matthew, a man I've never met.

He sent me an email after watching one of the YouTube interviews I had done with David & Donna Carrico and Jon Pounders, some of the phenomenal folks over at Now You See TV and FOJC Radio. In Matthew's message, he shared his journey of coming out of the Catholic church and finding the fullness of freedom in Messiah and walking in His Way. His story is not mine to share, but it gave me a perspective I so desperately needed.

Since I began to speak out publically in 2017, I have read hundreds of people's testimonies. I have heard from people who were born into multi-generational Luciferian cults, Bible-thumping Baptist churches, and pagan temples. No matter its exterior mask, deception is a highly contagious spiritual infection of the most dangerous kind. Deception slides a threadbare veil of truth over our eyes as it plunders our minds of their logic, reason, and understanding. Reading Matthew's testimony brought tears to my eyes, laughter at times too, but mostly tears of recognition. In his story, I heard the words of a child of The Redeemer whose shed blood rent the veil once and for all. I saw a man who has come to learn the power of persecution and wilderness wanderings.

Stepping out of the comfort zone of your religion be it a Muslim, a Christian, a scientist, a Hindu, or a Jew for the sake of The Messiah Jesus often sends you directly into the desert of wonderings. I do not deny it: I am calling people to come out of the traditions of men and the doctrines of deception, and to prepare for and fight in The War of The Ages. The place of preparation will always be in The Wilderness. Read about the life of David, Moses, Joseph, Jacob, and Jesus. Before people were brought into the fullness of their purpose, they were led to the wondering places of The Wilderness.

The desert can be a lonely place to those who do not see the cloud of His providence, nor feel the heat of His pillar of fire watching over them at night. Though we may be lonely, we will never be alone for we are with our Creator. Many fear The Wilderness, thinking it is only a dry and weary place, unable to see the miracles of freedom from their seductive shackles and comfortable chains. The Wilderness is where slaves are taught how to walk without shackles, and dance without fear or shame. It is the place where we are given The Instructions so we can learn to walk in His ways. Some will heed His call, but many will not. It is in The Wilderness that The Father taught me to lay down my hate to find forgiveness and love sprouting up in its place.

Though my flesh bids me to rage against those who are subtly leading and deceiving the masses, I must remember: have we not all once been enemies of Yahweh? (Col. 1:21) Have we not all fearfully sown in the flesh time and time again? But the goodness of our Creator is that He sees good seed hiding in the thistles, thorns, and tares. Concealed in those cathedrals, those witch covens and convenience store check out lines, is the greatest Remnant army this world has ever known. Amidst those tattered weary souls is a holy restlessness drawing them to Messiah. It calls to them in their sleep as they dream of a life where the misery fades, and joy is possible.

It is in The Wilderness He made the children of bondage into men and women who were prepared to go into The Promised Land filled with physical and spiritual giants of monstrous size, power, and strength. He sent them into the lands where the blood of the innocent had flown for far too long. It is because hidden among those tares were righteous wheat waiting for rescue. Amidst the walls of Jericho, a stronghold of ancient wickedness was Rahab, once a whore who would be found wholly faithful, a blessed servant and ancestor of our Redeemer. Amidst the walls of these deceit filled temples and churches of our modern day are sorrow-filled souls waiting for someone to show them that boldness and courage still abide in the Body of Messiah. Do not be afraid, dear reader, but remember what Yahweh said to Joshua the day before they set out on an impossible campaign.

“Now it came about after the death of Moses the servant of the LORD, that the LORD spoke to Joshua the son of Nun, Moses’ servant, saying, Moses My servant is dead; now therefore arise, cross this Jordan, you and all this people, to the land which I am giving to them, to the sons of Israel. Every place on which the sole of your foot treads, I have given it to you, just as I spoke to Moses.

From the wilderness and this Lebanon, even as far as the great river the river Euphrates, all the land of the Hittites, and as far as the Great Sea toward the setting of the sun will be your territory. No man will be able to stand before you all the days of your life. Just as I have been with Moses, I will be with you; I will not fail you or forsake you. Be strong and courageous, for you shall give this people possession of the land, which I swore to their fathers to give them. Only be strong and very courageous; be careful to do according to all the Law which Moses My servant commanded you: do not turn from it to the right or to the left, so that you may have success wherever you go. This book of the law shall not depart from your mouth, but you shall meditate on it day and night, so that you may be careful to do according to all that is written in it; for then you will make your way prosperous, and then you will have success. Have I not commanded you? Be strong and courageous! Do not tremble or be dismayed, for the LORD your God is with you wherever you go." -Joshua

Yahweh told Joshua three times to be strong and courageous because he was a person just like you and me. He was a man who had the flesh, which screamed at him to be quiet, just shut up, or they'll think you're nuts! We've all shared those same fears of rejections, fears of what men will think of us. You are not alone, but that is what The Wilderness is for. It is to burn away our former selves, to let us leave the man of flesh impaled on a stake where our Savior took our guilt, shame, and fears away. Walk boldly on the narrow Way for you will never walk alone.

Your days of wandering in The Wilderness will not last forever. Like every tree planted near streams of water, they will bear fruit, in their season. (Psalm 1) Let the Vinedresser prune back your flesh so that you can bear a greater harvest as He leads you over the Jordan and into The Promised Land.

The Wilderness is where He gives us His Instructions so that when we are called into the abundance of purpose, we do not wander from His ways. The Wilderness wanderings may be shorter, like the forty days of Jesus, or they may be like the forty years of Moses and David, or even like those of The Lost Sheep of the House of Israel who have been in The Wilderness for thousands of years. No matter what, the miracles you will see, the prayers answered, and the blooming of your faith will make it worth it. Without those days in The Wilderness, Chelsea and I never could have found a miracle waiting for the right time.

Chapter Forty

Even for Just One

Chelsea and I were in the wilderness for nearly four years. We'd grown so tired of the lonely wanderings and prayed month after month for authentic fellowship. We prayed for families who were aware of the truths about our devilishly orchestrated society and walked on the narrow Way. We did not see those prayers answered for months, then years but our faith bid us to continue. Amidst the depths of our greatest hours of suffering, we did not have hands to hold us as the forces of evil pounded on our doors; we had only the abundance of His mercy, power, and strength. But The Mighty God harkens unto the cries of His people and do you know how Yahweh answered that prayer? It was through a man I'd never met who had a conversation with his wife.

Their names were Kyle and Rebecca. They'd woken up through humility and revelation to so many truths surrounding corporate Christianity. They had discovered demonically inspired doctrines and Brotherhoods had been openly and greedily welcomed into the same megachurch we'd left and begun to walk quietly in The Way. They'd been attending a Bible study for a few years with many folks from that megachurch.

Kyle was given an opportunity to pick the next topic of study, and wanted to do *119 Ministries*' series about our lost Hebraic identity and being followers of the whole Bible, rather than the parts, which fill up the pews, pocketbooks or pleasures of sins. This was a risky decision. Most of us who begin to learn about conspiracies, electronic control states, or the deceptions in our churches, do so behind closed doors. Often because we are scared someone might think we are nuts. But Kyle was willing to come out of the closets of cowardice for the sake of truth as this new Way of following Messiah was all about forsaking the broad road. (See the informative film titled The Way: A Documentary at https://www.thewaydoc.com for more information.)

Kyle stood with Rebecca in their room, where they looked at each other as they battled the familiar fears of what people will think. The thoughts of the inevitable persecution and mocking they would suffer came boiling to the surface. Kyle looked at her, and he said something each of us must never forget. Looking into the eyes of the woman who has followed him onto this narrow road, Kyle said to her,

"But it would all be worth it if just one woke up. If just one person sees The Truth and gets set free, it would all be worth it."

The words Kyle spoke in his room carried the weight of truth. They carried upon them power, understanding, wisdom, and hope. Kyle had become a new man because his identity wasn't trapped in the depths of deception but had been raised with our Messiah. Kyle was right about the words he spoke as the group did mock him and scoff at him, and their entire church where they'd been prominently serving on stage for more than 12 years turned their apathetic backs upon them. No more phone calls or "Hey, how are you?" Like vapors in the wind, they disappeared and no one seemed to notice their leaving, but one man in that Bible study saw that The Way of Messiah was not just in Paul's writings, or in Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John.

One man saw the painful Light of Truth and did not look away from its brilliant eternal promise. He kept His eyes on Yeshua, the author and perfector of our faith. Because of this, Jeremy found his way to a congregation where six months later, Jeremy became the man who answered our prayers.

Jeremy, this one called-out sheep answered an e-mail my wife meant to send to someone else, and connected us to people we'd been praying for four years to know as our own: a group of people where we are free to fellowship and ask questions as we all learn together things that are foreign and new to us, as we all try to understand this new Way of being, this promised identity as Israel.

It may not be about your identity; it may not be about a lifetime of boredom, misery, or abuse. Your story is yours and is potentially no less important or influential than any others. The real power available to us all comes when we step into The Wilderness of the unknown where our faith is no longer a "get out of hell free" card in our back pocket but is life and death.

Would it all be worth it if just one person found The Way? What if your sister who you've been praying for could come to see the truth so carefully hidden from her eyes? What if your boss has for the first time in their lives contemplated a relationship with Jesus, and needs you to be open about your faith and trust in Him? What if the beggar whose hands are clutched around cardboard signs of help is waiting for you to be the one who provides to him that night? What if the conversation you have been dreading with that person is the one where you can help be the hands that snatch a burning stick from the flames?

These are not hypothetical questions anymore; these are the flesh and blood realities of our perishing world. For every day you hide your Light of Truth in your closets of cowardice, you give ground to The Enemy to take those curious, lonely, and thirsty souls for his own Kingdom. Every day you linger, every day you wait, the darkness grows.

Kyle and Rebecca painfully suffered the loss of friends and family but into that void came Jeremy. Their faith-filled hands reached into the fires of persecution and snatched one stick from the flames. Jeremy's new life has multiplied and turned into dozens and will become hundreds more. I hope you remember this when your flesh whispers pride-filled lies and man-based fears. You have a testimony so many others need to hear. No matter your concern, know our King specializes in using cowards who find His courage will become their own. For Yahweh has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power, love, and a sound mind. (2 Timothy 1:7)

I pray each of you will remember that The Enemy is not defeated by our bullets, blades, or our left or right wing politicians but,

*"By The Blood of the Lamb and the words of our testimonies and not loving our lives even unto death."(*Rev. 12:11)

Now is the time for us to boldly step out of the shadows. Now is the time for us to wage the spiritual wars and take back the promised lands of men and women whose hearts have been trapped in the walls of deception. Now is the time for us to confess our sins leave our worldly ways behind us, and see the power of forgiveness, redemption, and truth. We must stand with feet planted in the soils of this earth and overflow with *uncompromising* obedience to His holy and peculiar ways.

Every day we wait, The Enemy grows stronger, adding new sheered sheep to his forsaken flock. Every day we linger, waiting to step out of the boat and onto the roaring waters, tens of thousands are lost. Now is the time for you who have The Secrets to speak them out. Now is the time for the world to see and hear the impossible, unspeakable truths. Come then and answer this clarion call. Come out of the darkness and ignite your candles of hope. Come and set fires to the pillars of perversion, corruption, and chaos. Let us set ourselves ablaze with passion, love, and faith.

It is not an easy journey but one filled with putrifying pits and seductive snares. Along the walk of this life, there will be challenges, and there is a way of being we all are prone to. It bids us who have been free to run back to shackles. It is time we discuss why it's easier to run than to abide.

PART 12

Chapter Forty One

Chained: Even When You're Free

There was no way I could have known what to expect. The healing path I'd set my feet upon was uncharted territory. There was jungle all around me, filled with vipers, jackals, and lions waiting to tear me apart. I had made an assumption when I started out on this journey. It was a false expectation, which grew to be a mighty hindrance on my path. I assumed my path of wholeness and integration would be one that could be accomplished quickly and without significant disruption. The truth I will not hide from any of you is this: if you have suffered a lifetime of abuse, pain, neglect, and bondage, those wounds need time to heal, and they can't be dealt with all at once. One of the deepest of wounds is the loss of identity, identity only slaves can know.

The slavery of my life did not openly look like the days of whips, chains, and hours grinding cotton or grain, but it was slavery all the same. The truth is if you've never known the way of living as a slave, it so hard to imagine or understand. Many of us are insulated from this idea of slavery as our modern creature comforts ensure our ignorance. More people woke up today as slaves than at any other time in the history of the world. All too often it does not look like children in sweatshops in a third world country but like the people in the line at the grocery store who you bumped into last week.

Modern slavery is more than a way of living; it is an identity – it is quite literally who you are. It is what begins to make up the essence of your self. Who you are when you look in the mirror is not a person of choice but a person bound by manipulation, submission, and mental shackles. The world of free thought and self-determination is as foreign to you as being born in a distant country with another culture, skin color, and native tongue. You cannot imagine what it is like to be them, to be one of the free.

Many have read stories of slaves or victims of abuse who return to their pimps and dealers or their masters and perpetrators and allow the collar of control to be once again synched down tight. These stories are maddening and frustrating to those who read it and have not tasted of this torment. What you cannot understand is that slavery and bondage become familiar, and freedom is foreign.

Freedom is a dialect you've never heard. It is an ideology estranged and confusing. It is a way of being even harder to learn and receive when those around you are often terrified by the mere mention of your past shackles. You feel the fish out of water relates to you best. The world of thinking and choosing people are the searing sun on your scales and air in your gills. They are not of you; they are unknown, distant relatives of a species you do not recognize.

What does it feel like to wake up and decide what to do with your "free time"? What does it mean to have the ability to say no? How do you answer someone's question when you don't know? Ignorance in The Underworld of The Families and our silvery servitude is the single most punishable problem. Many mental and physical lashes are doled out indoctrinating you into an absolute dread of not knowing. So then how do you think when you are given back a mind that's never known free thought? Some may handle it better than others, but honestly more often than not, you get sick. It is a sickness, which grows as you realize you are outside of the familiar mental shackles.

There is no better way for me to describe The Sickness to you than nausea, an ache, or the strain of muscle tugging your newly growing peace out of place. It is a pull within you; a lure sunk into your soul, which tugs you back towards the familiar world you've known. It clings to the cracks and crevices where you split to survive. The Family is familiar: the hunt at night, the smell of sulfur and copper as blood flows, and the diamond-encrusted wires of regret. All you've ever known is their orders and commands; their words have always defined you.

No one ever warned me about The Sickness. I don't know if I could have done it if I had known how hard it would be just to be free. I know it hurt Chelsea to see me struggle and weep, not understanding how to be free, safe, and understood. How do you explain to someone something as bizarre as this? How do you articulate your grieving over the shackles of your former life? How can I admit to people I wept over my loosened chains?

I wanted freedom. I needed it, but I did not know it. I woke up every day and saw the reminders of the shackles. When I looked in the mirror, I saw their marks, the places of perversion where pieces of my soul had rent from the hurt. There were marks like the two white scars on my stomach where a knife slid in, or the dozens of track marks where stitches pieced my face back together after the creature nearly tore it off. There were the claws of madmen upon my scalp and between my ears. I wanted to break free, and I wanted to be whole, but what would it be like? Would I be happy if I made my own decisions? Would I be content? I had so much fear when I thought these things; it was not until my faith began to bloom in my heart that I saw the truth, which set me free.

The truth all of us need to learn is that *we are all slaves*. None of us were born free. We were enslaved to the nature of sin, the fallen state of our flesh, which wages a perpetual war against The Spirit of Yahweh. We are enslaved into the corporately controlled conspirators of civilization who've shaped it into the form of the Fallen One's Kingdom. Its desires do not abide in His Word, nor hunger for righteous and holy living. They long for the poisons that corrupt our character and soil our soul.

There is an active war against living in obedience to Yahweh's Commandments, and its casualties pile higher every day. It is The Sickness of us all. The shackles I wore were literal; they were cushioned cuffs to ankles and straps in vices. They were psychological, biologically, and mechanically seductive and more powerful than you can fathom. They ensnared me like a wolf in a trap. My spirit was born again the day I chose to cling to The Rock of Salvation, Yeshua The Redeemer. My spirit longed to be a man of righteous living who was known by His Savior. I wanted to have The Face of Yahweh shine upon me and I wanted Him to incline His ear to me. I ached to prostrate myself before The King of Glory and be in His courts day and night. I hungered for the incorruptible immortality promised to me. (1 Cor. 15:52) I longed for His wisdom, truth, and hope. And yet the familiar world of slavery called me back. The familiar shape of tunnels, seducing shadows, and the promised relief those addictive chemicals offered me kept luring me back.

The Sickness calls us all. We who have become traitors to this world and The Kingdom of Darkness are their greatest enemies and deadliest foes. The Enemy and his ministers, apostles, evangelists, teachers, prophets, and priests utterly hates us who choose to follow The Way, and he is a masterful expert at baiting the hooks to lure us back to our familiar abodes. There is only one way to be freed from those shackles forever. What it takes is something that is not appreciated nor endorsed in comfortable corporate Christianity.

The cure for this Sickness is to fear Yahweh more than anything or anyone else. The absolute unapproachable holiness of our Great Creator must be a consuming fire in our bones. It must burn away The Sickness, doubt, and lingering longing for a life of tempting touches and familiar feelings. (Judges, 1,2,3 Maccabees) The fear of Yahweh is the beginning of wisdom, and it is the source of freedom from shackles and lies. (Prov. 1:7, 9:10, Ps. 111:10)

It is not mere reverence, respect, or trust; it is absolute fear. When you come into the actual presence of The Holy One, you will never be the same. You will experience teeth chattering, pleas for mercy, and forgiveness while the purest sense of peace engulfs your soul and clothes you in love. It is the understanding of The Holy One in the presence of an unholy being. It is The One who formed us all that we must honor, respect, and surrender to.

He who made the mouth we use to speak can anoint it for greater things than we ever thought possible. He who gave us ears to listen and minds to comprehend can provide us with more understanding than a million books and thousand lifetimes of "sacred knowledge" can hope to divine. The one who set the sun and moon on their circuits can also set our feet on the narrow path of providence and hope.

The fear of The Holy One utterly destroys the lying lures and collars around our throats. It invades our shattered souls and cleanses us with the truth about who we are for we are no longer children scattered abroad and lost in the world. Our identity is not a church or denomination, and it is not the blood in our veins, the position on our resume, or the bills left to be paid; we who come to Messiah are the people called Israel.

We are the redeemed sons and daughters of The Living and Holy God. We are rescued, loved, and adored. We are not like this world; we are not its slaves; we are a chosen peculiar people, a royal priesthood. (1 Peter 2:9) We are to be like Aaron, who stood in the presence of The Holy One and made offerings of praise, prayer, intercession, and sacrifice. He was anointed for his calling, and we too must be set apart. We must be the intercessors who stand in the gap between the living and the dead. We must be like Abraham and Samuel, who were called out and set apart unto El-Shaddai.

Abba Yahweh becomes our Father the day we choose to surrender and forsake this Kingdom of Darkness and leave the Kingdom of Men behind. It happens on the day we become traitors to this world we no longer love and enter instead into a covenant with The Just One. On that day, we choose to be sojourners who live set apart from the sinfully changing standards of this world and instead look like the Messiah. It cures our cowardice and gives us a greater love than our masters, pills, or porn could ever provide. The cure to these bondages does not come from a twelve-step program, special software on our computers, or accountability partners. It will not come from another church retreat, family workshop, or community group.

It comes from fearing our Father, getting to know Him, and walking in covenant with Him. It is as we walk with Him that He changes us to become like Him. It comes from surrender and obedience to His ways and not our own. It comes from fixing our eyes upon the one and only true rabbi, Jesus the Messiah, and from walking the way He walked. Freedom comes when cowards become courageous enough to give up and surrender to His Instructions and quit giving into the fickle emotions and feelings, which rule our lives.

Freedom does not come easily, and it will not happen overnight. I would like to tell you The Sickness will never come back but I will not sugar coat the truth for the sake of your feelings or my own. Like each of you with your familiar sins and fleshly comforts, the well-dressed counterfeit lion, the Father of Lies, is always waiting at the door, knocking and enticing us to return. He does not look like a red devil with horns, but like the warm relief we'd feel from just one drink, one click, or one extra glance. The Enemy looks like the “innocent” flirtation with a co-worker or the text message to an ex-partner at night. The Enemy's lures are beautiful, elegant, and enticing. They are custom-made, candy-coated razorblades, which taste delightful but can spend years gestating before they bleed us to death.

The Prince of Darkness can transform himself into an angel of light, and his ministers, teachers, followers, and slaves are like him. When I made deals with devils, they rarely if ever looked like the Hollywood versions of the demonic or like a haunting red-eyed nightmare of dread. They are more intelligent then you can imagine, as they have spent thousands of years studying, manipulating, and controlling their hosts. All too often the restless shape shifting spirits looked like men of power and prestige or ageless beings of splendor and light.

They knew me so very well. They knew how to entice me and offer me things I'd only privately dreamed of. They knew my secrets and where my heart hid hopes I'd never spoken aloud. They provided me a temporary escape, and they offered me power and invincibility if only I let them in, gave them permission, or gave over my will. It was an exchange of goods, a transfer of services, but it was free will for shackles and joy for misery. They are leeches on people's body, spirit, or souls. They are spirit born vampires of hope and health draining their hosts down to despair and death.

You don't have to do a black magic ritual or sign a contract with your blood; it may just be that you are willing to do "whatever it takes to make it" in whatever arena you wish to conquer. You need only to come into agreement with them or give them permission to enter the tabernacle of your heart and take your goods. (Mark 3:27) What is it they offer you? What are the secret transgressions that control you and keep you from being free? Why do you let them stay in the darkness where they rule you and keep you as their own? How much longer will The Father of Lies seduce you, while The Father of Truth is looking into the distance, waiting for His child to return? Come to Messiah; come to Him with your bloody hands, corrupt character, compromised ethics, and shady dealings. Come to Him with the deeds of devils and hopeless despair. Come to Him with your cowardice and grief. Come to Him with the rusting lures of The Enemy buried in your flesh and see that The Great Physician specializes in healing wounds just like yours.

Do not let the familiar feelings of slavery draw you back. The grumbling and complaining Israelites in the wilderness longed for the bondage of Egypt, the food of their familiar master's table. (Num. 11:5) We are just like them, but let us instead be like the children of the Israelites who were born in The Wilderness, who saw The All-Consuming Fire of Yahweh in their midst, who were fed and nourished by the daily bread, who kept The Instructions of The Father and drank of His living waters that flowed from The Rock, which was Jesus. (1 Cor. 11:5) Once they were fed and fueled, they were made ready for war. They understood their identity was not in the land they came from but where they were one day going to be. They knew they were passing from this wandering place to the place of The Pilgrims Promise. We too must learn our Promised Land is waiting on His narrow path to life.

Those Israelites grew strong in their identity and authority. They became those who were bold and courageous enough to step into occupied enemy territory and take back their inheritance. They were children born for such a time as this, and so too were you. We too have been the wanderers, those without homes who were trafficked from church to church, parish to parish, denomination to denomination, waiting to find a place where our restlessness would relent, and our heart would tell us to abide. We too have been born into generations of death, murder, and abuse. We also have been the ones who keep trying to convince ourselves if we just made a little more money, had that other guy's job, or were famous like that lady, we would finally feel peace. Do not believe the lies of impotence, monotony, and failure. You are yet to know the fullness of freedom found in a day lived as a co-laborer with the Prince of Israel.

The narrow Way He calls us to will not be familiar but foreign. The lands of the living are a mystery to the dead. This is why we too must die to this world; we must impale this flesh on the stake as He did and let His resurrected power rule in our hearts. We must no longer be children who walk in darkness but sons and daughters of The Light. (John 1) It will not be instant; it will not come overnight. If, like James, the brother of Jesus, told us, we endure these trials with all our strength and heart and mind being fixed upon our Redeemer, after it is all over then we too will receive the prize of salvation and a greater crown of glory.

Though it is so much less now, the days still come when I feel the pull, when I feel a familiar lure tugging on my heart, calling me back to the feeling of stalking monsters in the night. The echo of bullets fired in vengeance, retribution for the deeds they did in the darkness, I think I can bring to light. The need to see justice brought by my hands and not another lingers still. Instead of hiding this hunger, I deny it its power by speaking the truth. I tell Chelsea or trustworthy others, and I trust them to help me understand and remind me what fruit is born in The Underworld, the curses, and condemnation along with the loss of my free will.

They don't look at me with condemnation when I tell them of the hunger for even destructive things. They cut through me with compassion, patience, and The Living Scriptures. Eyes fixed forward, I forsake my fallen gaze and set my jaw like flint towards the narrow path of hope. For as I follow The Way, my Messiah leads me on, and He prepares me a place in the presence of my enemies; He anoints my head with His priestly oil. He leads me beside still waters; He restores my soul; it is His rod and staff, which protect me and comfort me. (Ps. 23) He makes my fingers ready for battle and my hands ready for war. (Ps. 144:1) He calls me His beloved son and friend. He gives me new desires so that I hunger and thirst for righteousness; He makes my heart yearn for His ways and not my own. Let us each choose whom and what we will serve. (Josh. 24:15)

It is not for any of us to have our feet in two worlds. We cannot be children of the grey; we will all be children of Light or Darkness. The Father will spit out of His mouth all those who abide in the space in between; the fence sitters and their children will suffer tremendously for their lack of commitment. Instead, I learned to wake up and choose each day whom I will serve. Who will you serve today: the familiar feelings or The Father of Redemption? (Deut. 30:15-20)

The reason I speak these Secrets and am willing to suffer the consequences for what I have done and was made to do is because a truth was revealed to me which I can never forget. I knew no matter how much power, weaponry, wealth or women I could have through my Family Rites, or Familiar spirits; I had become and would always be their vampiric slave. I also learned my Familiars were just as enslaved to their fallen masters who themselves were enslaved to The Dragon. Even That Serpent of Old is not his own master but all the heavenly host both the holy and reviled are still legally bound to fulfill The Instructions, prophecy, and commandments of Yahweh.

No one not even the purest of Bloodlines can wholly serve two masters or twenty handlers. It is because of these revealed truths I freely decided to renounce my spiritual and physical agreements with my Family Oaths, Guardians and Familiars and by Yeshua's Authority they were cast out of me and those agreements were destroyed and will never return so long as I choose not to come back into agreement with The Kingdom of Darkness. Now I know I am already a dead man marked by the same wicked and wounded wolves who raised me but I am honored to be dead to this world because I have been raised to a new life with The Conqueror of Death, Jesus of Nazareth.

Chapter Forty Two

The Hunger

The words "The End" tortuously tease my mind as I sit here contemplating the conclusion. I have written conclusions of this book more than once. Each time the ending only started another chapter on this journey through life. How do I leave you, dear readers? In what nest of words will I leave you to abide? I don't think I'll ever be able to conclude this story and I am sure the other volumes I've written beyond this book will come out soon. The future will not wait for the endings of our lives; it will surely press forward into the misty mountains of tomorrow.

May we look to those stormy days, those hulking behemoths of the unknown tomorrows, and remember one thing. May we all remember that hiding in the mist are treasures waiting to be found, waiting to be seen, held, protected, cherished, and understood. Peppered through your paths of life are overlooked sapphires, rubies, and garnet passed over by millions who have needed your eyes to find them.

Each of you is a treasure. Some are polished stones, refined by The Good Potter's hands, while others are still sitting in the discard pile of tragedy, monotony, and failure. If you have awaited the one who would stumble upon you and see you for what you are, know this: He, who formed your marvelous facets before the foundations of the earth were fixed, has never lost sight of you. No matter where you are on the day you read or hear this, I pray you remember you have a purpose this world could never hope to possess.

We all have rough edges waiting to be buffed down and cleaned. I hope you all become willing to step into the tumbling of refinement of our Creator's redeeming ways. His truth has buffeted me; His conviction has knocked me, and I have been washed by His living waters. It does not mean I am yet shining with brilliance or glowing with opulent facets, but I am on my way. I hope you will hear this last story and know the flint of my heart is being turned into His precious living stone.

Chelsea stared at me in disbelief. The look on her face was full of frustration and annoyance; unable to understand why I was like this. I was standing over the sink, scooping piles of moldy food she'd thrown away into a bowl to eat. She was so tired of telling me that I didn't have to do this but how could I not? We hotly discussed it for nearly an hour. She was so exhausted, so tired of all this. We'd been on this chapter of our healing journey for almost two years. Though we had been married six years prior, only now had she been given some of the many missing puzzle pieces to understand my "quirks."

As long as she'd known me, I would have these oddities, these weird behaviors or fears. She had no frame of reference to understand them. Some bordered on compulsions, while others were anger-laced twitches of my body away from her touch. At the beginning of our marriage when it was only Nate, they were less noticeable. I hated having my neck, back, or butt touched. I would get beet red in the face when someone tussled my hair and had to breathe out the emotions flooding through me.

I am very rarely angry; normally it takes a mountain of madness to move me towards anger. But when someone grabbed the back of my neck or slapped my butt – even Chelsea in a playful way – I would freak out screaming at them, "Never touch me like that!"

Even when I was dating a girl long before Chelsea, I'd been laying on my stomach, and she'd tried to massage my shoulders. I reflexively kicked my heels up and nearly hit her in the back. She'd not understood why I was edgy at times and neither had Chelsea until I'd told her about the abuse, the sufferings, and the unwanted touch.

After I would go through a memory or a healing session, so many times these fears or phobias would disappear. I used to get sick and dry heave uncontrollably when someone used lotion even just in the same room, let alone tried to put it on me. Chelsea had patiently worked with me over the first few years of our marriage, helping me to get to a place where I could allow it to be near me and then carefully applied to my dry, cracked hands.

After I finally understood that the fear and pain came from my abusers using lotion to facilitate the abuse, I was able to allow The Messiah's new understanding and peace to wash these painful wounds clean. He gave me His perspective on as odd as it may seem to you, lotion. Literally, in a moment when I got healing from the memory, it gave me the ability to use it without any fear or gagging. The trauma pocket was alleviated of its burden and with it came peace.

On and on this would go: Chelsea would notice that I was suddenly sad beyond belief. A dark cloud would come over me in a moment, and I would sulk around the house, sometimes for hours and at other times for days. She learned to point this out in a compassionate way and encourage me to do some healing or address the Little that was in need of restoration. Many times, I responded to this feedback and got healing for a Little who had been triggered by someone who looked like one of our abusers at the grocery store, which flooded our mind. After the healing, I would be restored, but sometimes the grief of the new memory integrated into my mind would weigh upon me. Though my Little had found freedom from his torment, the rest of my soul had to come to an understanding about this painful chapter in our past.

The grief was the most debilitating, along with the body pain of wounds born during the abuse and missions. The physical pain would accompany many of the memories. Heartache and heartbreak are very real things, which do leave the strongest of people down on their knees. I would be in agony, curled up on the floor, sobbing and wailing to the point of death, clutching Ruger's furry neck, praying for peace. Chelsea would help me the best she could by making me Challah, my favorite sweet bread, or allowing me time to go up into the mountains to find some quiet space to be.

She gave me what I needed, which could vary moment by moment. At times I would need to go and tinker in my little workshop for hours, tumbling rocks from Nate's Beach, making holsters, knives or gear for our Kit, or melting down metals to make jewelry or improvised tools. Each portion of my personality had their passions and things they'd wanted to do for so long, things The Family never allowed me to pursue or express. Now finally, I could find the freedom to do it. We honored them the best we could. We let those that wanted to see the cold fresh water springs we'd found in the mountains go and drink their fill while we wept with relief. Other personalities got to take Naomi for a walk around the lake and see Ruger run along the shore, kicking up mud with glee.

As for me and
my house, We
shall serve
the Lord

JEWSBURY & BROWN
MANCHESTER ENGLAND

Some Littles would want to sit with Chelsea or other trusted people and talk. They would tell her what happened or ask her questions about what “normal” is. She was gracious with them, weeping with them at times, being angry at others, empathizing when she could and hurting for us when she couldn’t.

A roller coaster could not compare to the ups and downs; a balloon in a hurricane might better capture it. In the center of the storm was our refuge and hiding place, The Most High God, His Son, and The Great Comforter. Some days we would be flung through a category five fury, which left me collapsed in the store and Chelsea having to carry me out. Once the memory was understood, the pain would lift, and we would be restored until the next winds blew. The most noticeable for Chelsea was my irritability or my lack of patience with small problems and issues. I could be full of faith and confident in The Father’s provision for us one moment and then terrified that we would starve the next.

My irritability would often build to the point that I was unbearable for her to be around. She was patient with me more times then I deserved, but sometimes the emotional irregularities with new personalities drove her beyond her compassion and patience. We would argue, and I wouldn’t always be the kindest but nor would she. It was not anything beyond marital challenges, but these small pebbles tossed into my waters could be a tsunami flooding over the banks and filling our home with pain. It was exhausting day in and day out wondering when I would be “better.” We did not get a timeline for healing, and neither of us had thought there would be so much there waiting beneath the surface.

It was like living with ten different husbands – Chelsea’s own 50 Shades of Huz – some of whom were mature and had tremendous amounts of life experience, while others were still just trying to have a new experience since they last saw this cruel world. Having discussions about finances or even planning a trip to the store could be overwhelming and would lead me to near panic.

It was a brutal process, but over time Chelsea and I had to learn how to communicate more clearly. When I was not capable of engaging in regular talk because I had Littles up who just wanted to be able to experience a world of safety, laughter, and peace, agreements would be made about when these discussions could continue when Nate or Nathan could come and hold up the normal duties of the home. During those interims, while we were still figuring it out, a great strain was placed on Chelsea, and praise be to God, she stayed with me, honoring her covenantal vows and sticking with me in my greatest sickness and horrible health.

Some days I was better at it than others. Some of my quirks would be present and linger beyond a healing session. The most persistent of them all was The Hunger. The Families use food and hunger as a weapon all its own. It's a point of leverage in their fulcrum of control. It forces you to compromise your ethics, learning to steal, lie, or manipulate to satisfy your needs. It forces you to think critically even when your body is deprived and in need of nourishment. It is a powerful tool used for deplorable ends.

One of the ways I survived the pains of hunger in my belly was to sneak into the kitchen and eat moldy or rotting food out of the fridge or what had been thrown in the trash. It allowed me to escape their notice or accusations of disobedience. Other times, I was stealing other kids' food like I did in 1st grade when I took a bag of Lay's plain potato chips from a boy named John in my class. I was caught and dragged to the principal's office and sent home with a pink slip of punishment. The real punishment at home occurred for the negative attention it drew on a boy who was supposed to be a ghost.

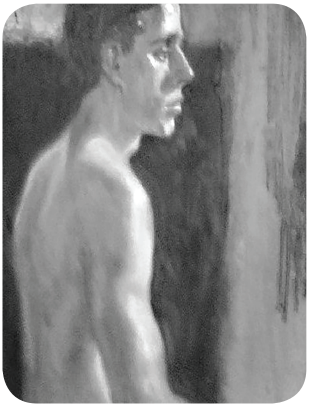

Even after the carefully controlled scarcity left, The Hunger was something I had to rely on to survive. The first profession I turned to in college was one The Family had taught me to believe was normal, so I undressed for "Artists" who paid me well. Unable to bear this continual emotional burden, I got a job at Old Chicago's bus-sing tables. At work I would line my apron with Ziploc bags and aluminum foil, scraping customers' scraps into them to be eaten later at my apartment. At the close of the shift, I would sneak into the walk-in freezer and take the expiring ingredients to assemble a meal.

I was working three jobs at the time while going to school full time, and paying my rent was hard enough for me to do let alone buying more than $50 of groceries each month. It made me resourceful as hunger and lack will do. While on campus, I would sneak into the back of lecture halls where speakers had advertised free pizza for those who attended. I would grab a whole box and walk out the door. I played it off with laughter and jokes, but the need to fill my stomach was deep and insatiable.

Many in our megachurch's community group would get together after Sunday night service ended and go to Chili's for dinner. I would walk around with a massive plate as people were eating and asked for donations to "The Nate Plate." My church friends would laugh and drop a few fries or a chicken wing onto the plate, and by the end of the night, I had enough leftovers to eat for four meals. I would ration off these tiny treasures and do what I did best, survive.

I learned to live off the least amount possible; I hedged my bets against the hunger and rationed food into pockets and secret stashes in bags or pouches. As a child, I would take pieces of candy I got in class or ones I'd traded for shiny rocks I'd found at recess and hide them under the carpet in my room. In preparation for these treasures, I'd slit a hole big enough to protect a few jolly ranchers or gob stoppers at a time. Like a fiend looking for a fix, I would allow myself a single piece when the pain was the worst, and I needed relief. I would savor it and make it last for as long as possible, refusing to bite or break off a piece. I let the flavors flood over my every taste bud and savored them with the delicacies of a connoisseur. When there were no snacks or candy to be found, I would chew plastic, tree sap, old rubber, rocks, or whatever I could to satisfy the need to eat or feel food in my belly.

When Chelsea and I were married, we started out making enough to afford plenty of groceries. Even still, I could not bring myself to stop these habits. Chelsea nicknamed it “rat-holing” when she would catch me doing it. She never shamed me but laughed along like all the rest. She would give me two pieces of a sandwich, and I would immediately hide one of the halves back in its wrapper and stash it away. It was not until, while on a date, I took leftover food boxes abandoned on someone else’s table, that she confronted me. I had such a hard time articulating my need never to let food go to waste. I felt so much shame and the pain was too much to express. I would have to restrain myself from doing it again, knowing it was not accepted.

For years, though, I could not hold it back. We could have a fridge full of food, and I would still eat the oldest things first, ignoring the fresh and targeting the rotten instead. How could I let such precious things go to waste? When the food was beyond my ability to eat, I would need to leave it in the front yard for the birds, foxes, stray animals, or rabbits to eat. I just needed to let something or someone benefit even from the crumbs.

I did not know how to satisfy this hunger in my heart despite the healings and connecting with Littles who’d only ever known starvation and the pains of seeing other kids eat lunches filled with food they wanted while I had eaten the mystery plate at three in the morning the night before.

Friends would have Chelsea and me over to dinner, and I would eat enough to last me three days. I could not stop the fear of there not being enough tomorrow. Those who knew me best were so kind to make extra of my favorite delicacies when I came over, knowing how much joy and satisfaction it brought me to eat my fill. The joy would bubble out with abundance when I felt known and understood by someone noticing this and blessing me in such a kind way. They would send me home with an extra bag of fresh-baked snickerdoodle cookies or servings of Sesame Chicken. I was careful with my portions and able to ration them another week.

My rat-holing did not embarrass me, but some days it would drive Chelsea over the edge. She would catch me pulling food out of the trash she'd pitched the night before and often felt hurt, thinking it was unnecessary as we had plenty of food in the house. She felt as though it was personal and reflected on our living situation, but it never was. I think this was the one quirk she struggled with the most. It was so prevalent and did not go away like the others. Even as I write this, I am more puzzled to imagine how people could leave their dwellings without snacks stuffed into secret compartments in their clothing or emergency food in laptop bags and glove boxes.

I know many of you who are reading this can laugh as it strikes cords in your soul. In some ways, it is comical until it's not. When it's not about someone doing something odd and no one ever noticing, it suddenly becomes about someone finally being seen. I tell you this so that maybe you would not laugh the next time you notice a quirk in someone around you. Perhaps some of those church friends of mine should have bought me dinner instead of loading me with their scraps week after week or bought me groceries instead. Maybe one of my teachers should have looked closer and noticed the kid who eats many times the usual amount when free food is offered but otherwise hardly eats at all. Maybe they shouldn't have. I no longer hold it against them in any way.

Maybe it's better now they didn't so I could help you see this truth. It is not always going to be food, hunger, or leftovers pulled out of trash. It's all about looking closer than a cursory or dismissive glance. Before you blow someone off who is having a panicky reaction to something mundane, maybe ask a question. Ask why they might be that way. Maybe they've never felt safe enough to tell someone they'd been hurt by someone who had the same shirt on, or maybe they'd nearly been drowned by family members during a teenage prank. Perhaps we could all learn to be a little more intentional with our friends and family, and not so quick to dismiss a cry for help hidden by a laugh or self-deprecating joke. Hundreds of people throughout my life saw me digging through trashcans and the backs of fridges and pulling foil lined snacks out of pockets, and hardly ever did they look closer or ask a heartfelt question.

Maybe instead of your next tithe check getting dropped into an offering plate or donation box, it needs to go to your neighbor, your co-worker, or a family friend. It is time we looked closer instead of looking away. Maybe some of those preparations you've stockpiled for the end of the world could help feed a family this week. Or perhaps the hours you spend watching Netflix could be spent talking to someone who needs your attention and time.

Intentional ignorance will be accounted unto you in the days to come. Hunger is eating so many people alive. Some are starved for attention, never knowing the feel of lustless eyes upon their flesh. Some are hungry for friendship that is not tainted by manipulation and control. Others are drowning in debt because no one taught them how to manage money while they were making them work "The Trade" instead.

We need to be the answers, not the problems. We need to look closely enough to feel the breath of their sobs on our cheeks. We need to hold the hurting and tell them, "It's ok. You are safe now." We need to wrap our arms around the Survivors and weep with those who weep. We need to linger and not run away from the horrible stories they need to tell. We need to build a hedge of protection around them as they leave their Families, masters, pastors, or pimps. We need to be the empowering arms of grace enfolding them in provision, protection, and love.

I did not need more food to fix the hunger in my heart. What I needed was someone who cared about me more than the food on my plate or the lack thereof. What Survivors need does not come in prepackaged cases located on aisle seven of our grocery stores. There is not enough food in the world to satisfy the need I see in a wounded one's eyes. When I look into the eyes of these Survivors, I hear their hearts moaning with a hunger that transcends our flesh and blood bodies. It lingers in the depths of our souls.

Who can satisfy the need to be held and comforted? Who can screen our calls when our former handlers call and try to manipulate us back into their hands? Who is willing to pay our mortgage so we can get counseling and restoration from the brutality of a lifetime lived in pain? Who will pay attention when they see a little kid flinch at the pastor’s movement? Child Protective Services and other corrupt corporations are not the answer and never will be. The Followers of The Way need to be.

We need to be the answer to this. We need to have safe houses and underground railroads where Survivors can be shuttled out of their physical or spiritual cages and into a new life of peace. We need to open up our once-a-week church buildings to be living quarters for the homeless, the addicts, and the deranged. The hospitals for the weary should never close their doors. We need to let the fears of the ex-cons and felons fade away. Those cultural taboos of different races, beliefs, and traditions need to be covered by our truth and love. It is time we raise up the decaying stones from the miry clay. Now is the time we leave this world without accusations of our ambivalence and powerless claims of greasy godless grace.

Those who are coming out of these Families are going to be able to make a difference so few ever could. Once restored, these individuals are capable of things fewer still can fathom. The wounded ones were wounded for a reason. The Enemy knows how to harm its deadliest foes, and he does it early. The Enemy spends too much time teaching its slaves his subtle and crafty ways. Without knowing it, many of these Survivors have been trained to destroy their captors’ dungeons, palaces, and watery graves.

There are many things The Family and Trade taught me, one of which is how to make someone disappear. What do you do with the knowledge of evading detection and blending into shadows and black-market trades of identities and places to live, when you grow weary from wickedness and choose to give and not take? What if those of you who know The Trade became double agents and served The Redeemer instead? What if the agents of The Underworld built a railroad of redemption for those still trapped in its chains? What if you made duplicate copies and stole away the incriminating evidence, which shows the world just what builds the empires above the streets?

What if those who once slipped children into hotel rooms for "paying guests" instead used those minds to plot out escapes for the little ones and their moms? What if instead of smuggling flash drives of kiddie porn and prescription drugs in your Ultra-lite air plain, you smuggled Survivors who broke out of The Families' grasp? What if those secret drives and the names of their pedophilic photographers and producers instead found their way into the hands of those who knew how to execute real justice and were not tied by statues of limitations, compromised judges, or Oath keeping justices?

What if those who had the financial resources and insulated Trusts or Foundations bought up hotel chains, houses, and apartments and used them to shuttle people to freedom instead of as a place of torment, blackmail, and pedophilia? What if we bought children, mothers, and fathers out of the tunnels and The Underworld and funded their complete restoration at private places of refuge? What if we hired holy ministers and deliverers out of their 9-5 jobs and offered them beneficiaries who met their financial needs? None of this can happen until we decide not to look away from these dark realities but choose to face them instead.

The complete exposure of these crimes needs to be played in an endless stream before the world so they can't blink it away or minimize the screens of reality. We need to broadcast it on every station, every suggested video, and trending link. It is time we use our black hats of hacking for great good, instead of planting blackmail evidence on unruly Brothers, Sisters, Knights, or Family and State dissidents. Some of you architected agents of anarchy and chaos know of what I speak; hear me now so that The Secrets of The Underworld will stay hidden no longer.

Dig into the digital closets of our high-ranking officials, leaders, and magistrates, and you will see that there are more than just skeletons hiding in those closets. There is more than just the skeletons of affairs, drug habits, and corrupt contracts. Those skeletons had names like Jesse, Alex, Julie, Katrina, Samuel, Jared, and Penelope. I know their names, and I've not forgotten, and neither should you. They will be remembered, and they are the ones whom we should never forget: The Faceless Fallen who built the bloody pillars of the empire where our cities, capitals, and cathedrals abide.

The Hunger Games is not a work of fiction but a maddening reality to those birthed into The Families and made to pass through these Brotherhoods. When will days of luxury and comfortable living be enough? I know many of you are compromised – company-controlled private back rooms at The Family party saw to that – but speak The Secrets and show the truth before the child whose body you used to climb to power speaks it for you, and you burn for your crime.

There is time for redemption; there is a time for all kinds of immunity and justice. The hunger in our hearts demands it; it calls to us in the night. In the stillness, while the world sleeps, we Survivors see them: the faces of torment, pain, and betrayal. We see the Brutes, the politicians, priests, and the police who partook of our bodies or drank of our friends.

They will not leave us; they linger and cling to our soul. We bit down on our tongues to hold back the hurt, to prevent the dam from breaking loose and showering this world with our dark Underworld. The cracks are showing, and the inky waters of The Abyss are leaking to the surface, and soon they will come upon you in a torrent, an unstoppable force of exposure. If only you would see us and hear us before it breaks loose.

Will you look closer? Will you pay attention next time you go out to the bars or restaurants late at night and see the young girls working the corner of your high-end downtown? Will you see the "eighteen-year-old" we all know is only thirteen but turning tricks for her well-dressed upper-class confidence man? Will you see the homeless man begging for a meal on the corner and know that his story could just as easily have been like mine? Will you wonder and find out why no one puts a stop to the madness, why they bust the outer rings of pedophiles but never the inner circle of presidents and popes? Will you dig into our Underworld and see what makes it pulse with perversion and pain? Will you forsake your fears and hold the hands of a former slave who faced down unimaginable horrors to break out of her controller's grip?

We are not all going to be pretty or well dressed. Some of us woke up in a pool of vomit, trying to survive another night by escaping from the memories in glass bottles marked 120 proof. Some of us have sold our body to anyone who was willing to buy us a drink or take us out for a meal. Others are working full-time jobs and living well, but the nine prescription bottles in their bathroom tell you how they are really doing. They are surviving, but with the right kind of support and understanding, they could be thriving.

Survivors once set free can become the most courageous, bold, and impactful people who have ever lived. They are not born with the fear of darkness as most are. They do not fear the death of their bodies, the pain of torture, imprisonment, or rape. They have known these horrors, and yet they still breathe. They do not fear the character assassinations or the mocking and betrayal. They are warriors; they are heroes who deserve our thanks. They will be the ones who run back into the fires and snatch those burning bodies from the flames. They will be the ones charging into the depths of Families' Estates and setting the captives free. They will stand together in the face of impossible odds because they know, "One could put 100 to flight and two could put 10,000 to flight." (Deut. 32:30) It is because they know whose they are that they will not run; they will press through the fear, the pain, and the hunger and never let go when the trembling hand reaches out for help.

The hunger in my chest is never satisfied, and it likely never will be. As long as I am given breath in these lungs, it will linger. In contrast to all the quirks of mine, which have been relieved, this one Yahweh has entrusted to me for good. It is the longing for justice, the need to save just one more. It is a burning need to go back out on those downtown streets and document The Rings operating in my cities and my state, praying and awaiting the day when those running the justice system don't continue to hinder the revelation of their secret Trade. The Hunger drives me to prayerfully intercede in my city's high places and examine the thousands of miles of tunnel systems where the covens operate and defile our lands. It is a thirst that drives me to pray for the conversion of corrupt officials and blinded oath keeping officers who enable these wicked practices and for their victims too.

The hunger in my heart is not most satiated when I'm eating a free meal at a friend's house but when I hold the hands of a man who is dressed in a thousand-dollar suit as he weeps for the first time, confessing his need for redemption from his misery and self-hate. It comes when I hear the testimony of a Survivor like Mary Lou Lake and Donna Carrico whose burning hands were washed in the living waters of our King.

There is a hunger in every one of you. It is a missing piece of our make-up that The God of Mercy holds on to. It is to drive us towards the finish line, towards more jewels to build our crown of glory we can cast at The Messiah's feet. Yahweh says that He holds a white stone for every single person with a name written on it that we alone will someday understand. (Rev. 2:17) Maybe once this name is read or spoken aloud, it finally satisfies The Hunger and gives us His eternity's rest. Until then, The Hunger is there to drive us out of our comfort zones of complacency and into our purpose. The fears you once held do not need to linger; only surrender them to The Messiah. By His redemption, they can become your greatest strength. Take those talents and use them for great good and the saving of many lives.

Don't be lulled into passivity but let The Hunger drive you towards deliverance, provision, and hope. Not all of you need to infiltrate luxurious cabins in the mountains where they hide incriminating hard drives in plain sight, but some of you do. Not all of you need to exploit the back doors of the Underground Trade market, but some of you do. Every one of you so-called pastors and shepherds out there needs to repent of ever allowing and endorsing deceived or willful oath keeping cowards into your flocks or into your own homes. It is time like the days of Charles Finney we utterly drive out the Brother and Sisterhoods of deception from our most precious families.

Find the way you can satisfy the hunger of the hurting. Find a way to be the answer to this insufferable problem. Clothe the naked, give water to the thirsty, and give shelter to the homeless. It is not hard, but that does not mean it's going to be easy. Following The Way of Messiah is not going to come naturally – not at first – but as you yield to His Instructions, you will see that His yoke is infinitely easy and His burden is light. (Matt. 11:30) There is no greater joy in the world than seeing a captive boy go free or a formerly shackled woman laugh unhindered for the first time in her life. I pray you grow hungry and the food in your fridge or pocket will not satisfy you until the day you surrender to your true purpose and higher calling.

I will yield to the hunger and to the ache in my belly at night. I will lay my life down before this mad world and crawl back into the cupboards of chaos I was born into. I will seek the lost. I will set fires to the beacons of redemption and let the world burn my body for the sake of the perishing. May they know that there are those of courage and faith willing to stand in the gap so that just one more burning stick can be snatched from the blackened flames.

To you who are crying out for help, crying out for justice, He has heard you and sent The Rescuer. He is not afraid of your handlers, worshipful masters, Council of 13, generals, popes, or priests. He does not fear their teams of assassins, astral projecting spirits, or poisoned meals. He does not tremble at the summoning of dark principalities but, hear me, they do tremble before Him. I have seen The Ancient Ones flee at the sound of His Name. I have seen those who cut the palms and speak the oaths fall flat on their faces under the weight of His presence. I have witnessed salvation in the eyes of the perishing when they surrendered to His ways.

May you know that liars, murderers, and thieves pierced through the only Hand, which can ever heal you. The upper class conspirators of society crucified The King of Glory; do not doubt that they will try to do it to His followers too. They hate freed slaves; they hate men of courage, faith, and strength who do not run from the battle but steel themselves for combat. They fear men who gird up their loins and face down their fleshly fears and nail them to His execution stake. They fear women who know their identity and surrender to The Word of Yahweh Elohim. The guilty cowards can't stand to be in the room with those who have The Kingdom of Truth burning in their chest. They will not be able to stand against you, and The Almighty Creator who is standing with you. Once more I call to you who are listening, reading along, or tuning in. I pray now you will answer this call.

My beloved friend from afar, I beg you come to Him. You matter more than you know. You are loved and treasured and adored. I am a man on a mission of redemption, and I ask you this day: will you join me? Will you link arms with a wounded warrior and let him lead you into enemy territory, where you can help rescue the souls crying in the night, begging someone to bring them The Light. Will you wash the feet of prostitutes and hold the shaking marked hands of felons? Will you forsake your mediocrity and wage war on resentment, fear, and regret? Come with me as I run into the arms of evil and snatch those burning sticks from the flames.

I know so many of you believe the lies and do not think you're special or that you could be anything but ordinary. I assure you of this: Yahweh hardly ever sought out the worldly champions to wage His most important wars, but rather children who were the least important and quickest to be passed over. He chose prostitutes condemned to die; he called out death dwelling men possessed with legions of demons to go and bear His witness to the nations. He chose the overlooked elderly whose wombs were withered and for whom hopes of meaning had dried up. He chose the blue-collar workers who couldn't read or write, throwing nets into the waters, and taught them to fish for the immortal souls of mankind. He took the outcasts, those running from debt collectors, and felons in hiding, and while in The Wilderness, turned them into the Mighty Gibborim men of David, the most exceptional warriors this world has ever known. (2 Sam. 22, 23 1 Chronicles 11:10-47) Our God makes the ordinary become extraordinary and befuddles the Enemy's elite warriors and ordained ministers of deceit.

I invite you, dear warrior, to stand. I urge you to rise up from the failures, lies, and regret and stand upon The Truth. (Eph. 6:10-19) Stand now while the battle lines are drawn, while the last of the Survivors come crawling out of their cages, addictions, and withdrawals. Stand firm when they persecute you, mock you, and call you insane. Do not relent but know that the fires of persecution should be burning against us all. We are soldiers for The Great Redeemer, and the cares of this world need to grow dim in the Light of His Glorious Face. (2 Tim. 2:3-4, Deut. 3:22) Suit up and arm yourself with The Living Word of God; obedience to it will build a hedge of impenetrable protection no power can stand against. No matter the amount of persecution and attack, you too will see that The King of Glory reigns.

It is because of my great love for you that I poured this still bleeding heart upon these pages and ask you to do the same. I urge you to pick up the dangerous pen and speak The Secrets, write the words of forgiveness, and leave the darkness behind. Join us as we light candles of hope against the darkness of despair.

With these words written, I offer you, dear reader, the torches to set this former assassin, addict, and dark wolf ablaze.

If He wills it to come to that, may the words of my testimony burn forever because great is my love for those wounded ones still perishing, lost in the internal maze. Even if it saves only one, I gladly lie upon the trembling tracks of public perception, corrupt judicial systems, and political power plays.

May those trapped in the tunnels of torture or Bloodlines see that there will always be someone who is willing to lay down his life for theirs. May the wounded ones see that a Survivor is willing to bleed for justice, righteousness, and truth. May you all know there is still yet meaning for your misery, madness, and despair.

Come and see The Redeemer of murderers, harlots, and keepers of occult ways. Come and see The God of Mercy is waiting for you to come home and find rest for your weary soul. May The God of All Comfort strengthen you in the innermost portion of your being. May He set your heart on fire with His passion, truth, and hope.

My name is Nathan Lok Reynolds and I have been Snatched From The Flames. I am a living witness against the darkest of nights. The fire in my chest will never be quenched for it burns with The All-Consuming Fire of Yahweh Elohim. To Him alone be the praise, glory, and the offering of my life now and forever.

Resources

1. To follow along with Chelsea, Naomi and the new Reynolds family head on over to snatchedfromtheflames.com It is there you can see videos, pictures and some of the timely blog posts which bring to light many of the things left out of this book.

2. Here are the Prayers to help assist those who are seeking better blueprints on their journey into faith, deliverance, and overcoming The Enemy's ways.

Prayers for Release

Developed by Mary Lou Lake

Author of "**What Witches Don't Want Christians to Know – Expanded Edition**."

© Copyright 2015 & Updated 2017 by Mary Lou Lake All Rights Reserved. These prayers may be freely shared in their unaltered state.

Kingdom Intelligence Briefing

A Ministry of Biblical Life Assembly

PO Box 588 | Marshfield, MO 65706-0588

KIB Website: http://www.kingdomintelligencebriefing.com

BLA Website: http://www.biblicallifeassembly.org

MORNING PRAYER

Father, I declare that You are the One True God, the Most High God, the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. I ask You to forgive my sins and cleanse me of all unrighteousness, create in me a clean heart and renew a right spirit within me. I plead the blood of Jesus over my eyes and ears and over the eyes and ears of my family, so we can see and hear truth, and I ask You to shield us from all forms of mind control that can enter the eye gates and ear gates. I declare that we have access to the whole armor of God according to Ephesians 6; our loins are girt about with truth, and our feet are shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace. We have the breastplate of righteousness, the shield of faith, the helmet of salvation and the Sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God. As we commit our works unto You, our thoughts will be established according to Proverbs 16:3. Father, I ask You to apply the blood of Jesus to any doors that I have open to the enemy that I am unaware of, and I ask You to reveal these doors to me so they can be closed forever.

I take the authority that Jesus gave me over all the power of the enemy according to Luke 10:19. I stand upon Your Word in Matthew 16:19 that I have been given the keys to the Kingdom and what I bind on Earth will be bound in Heaven, and what I loose on Earth will be loosed in Heaven. I take authority over the kingdom of darkness in every plain of existence that has access to me, and I bind the power of the enemy to affect me or my family, and I loose the power of the Kingdom of God to form impenetrable shields in every dimension -- above, below and all around, in the name of Jesus.

I stand upon the promise in Your Word that says that no weapon formed against me shall prosper, according to Isaiah 54:17. I stand upon the 91st Psalm that no evil shall befall me, neither shall any plague come nigh my dwelling. The 91st Psalm also promises that Your holy angels have been given charge over me and my family to keep us in all our ways. Father, I ask You to send extra angels for reinforcement during times of spiritual warfare, in Jesus' name.

Father, I ask You to forgive the sins of all of my ancestors (and the ancestors of my children and grandchildren), and I plead the blood of Jesus over my DNA and the DNA of all of my descendants, which cleanses our bloodlines of all iniquity. I bind the power of any generational or familiar spirits to attach or influence us, and I loose the power of the Kingdom of God within us and around us as we keep Your commandments. I declare that our family is free to walk in the blessings of Deuteronomy 28.

I ask You to forgive the sins of all individuals being used by the enemy to combat our family (and ministry). I ask You to forgive the sins of all of their ancestors, and I plead the blood of Jesus over their bloodlines all the way to the DNA level, breaking the power of iniquity. I ask You to break all of their occult power to the highest levels, making it impossible for them to be used by the kingdom of darkness to harm anyone. I ask You to save their souls, deliver and heal them. I plead the blood of Jesus over every action and every word spoken against me and my family, nullifying the demonic power. I command any evil spirits sent on assignment against me and my family to return to the place they were sent from. I bind these spirits from harming those that sent them, but I pray that their defeat in their mission would serve as a testimony of Your greatness and the victory that Jesus won for believers, in Jesus' name. Father, I ask You to remove my DNA and the DNA of my family from any hair, blood or any other contact object in the hands of the enemy and break all conduits to our physical bodies, in Jesus' name.

Father, I ask You to forgive the sins that have allowed technology to be used as a weapon against Your creation. I ask You to place shields between me and my family and all broadcasts of the enemy through the airways, TVs, computers, phone lines, electric lines and satellites. I stand upon the promises in Your Word that You are our shield. I ask You to purify our air, water and food, in Jesus' name. Father, I ask You to forgive the sins done on the roadways, railroad tracks, and waterways. I ask You to forgive the sins of any individuals or groups that have adopted the roadways, and I ask You to break any occult connections that would give power to the kingdom of darkness. Father, I ask You to provide divine protection during any modes of transportation. I ask You to surround our vehicles with Your holy angels to insure safe travel, in Jesus' name. Father, lead me in paths of righteousness today and attune my ears to Your voice that I may follow You. I ask You to fill me with a hunger for your Word, that I may know You more. I give You all of my praise, my worship, the honor and the glory, in Jesus' name.

EVENING PRAYER

Father, I declare that You are the God of our evenings as well as our days. I stand upon Psalm 91:5, 6 -- Thou shalt not be afraid of the terror by night or the arrow that flieth by day; nor for the pestilence that walketh in darkness; nor for the destruction that wasteth at noonday. I plead the blood of Jesus over my family. I come into agreement with the promises in Your Word that my family is blessed physically, mentally, emotionally, and spiritually. I ask You to put impenetrable shields around our property, with armies of Your holy angels standing guard. I ask You to forgive the sins that have been done in the surrounding area, and I command the kingdom of darkness to clear our airways, grounds, and underneath, in Jesus' name. Father, I bind any demons from entering our property. I ask You to forgive the sins that have enabled astral travel and I ask You to block that activity. I ask You to place hedges of protection around our family that humans cannot penetrate, either physically or through astral projection. I loose the power of the Kingdom of God to break the power of satanic surveillance. Father, I ask You to send Your holy angels to roadblock any attacks from the enemy. Father, because of Your faithfulness, we can go to sleep with full assurance that You are watching over us through the night. We ask all of these things in the Mighty Name of Jesus.

PRAYER FOR RELEASE FROM GENERATIONAL CURSES

Father, I ask You to forgive all of the sins of our ancestors. I ask You to cover our bloodlines all the way to the DNA level with the blood of Jesus, and I ask You to send the blood of Jesus over the spiritual lines connecting us to those that we share DNA with, blocking any familiar spirits coming to us. We declare that Jesus paid the price for us to be free of every generational curse, and we take our authority over all the power of the enemy according to Luke 10:19 and stand upon Matthew 16:19 that what we bind on Earth will be bound in Heaven and what we loose on Earth will be loosed in Heaven. We bind every familiar spirit and generational spirit that has attached to our family because of the iniquity on our bloodlines, and we command them to leave us, in Jesus' name. We loose the power of the Kingdom of God within us and around us, and we ask for restoration of all that Satan has stolen through these generational doorways (including our health, resources, joy and peace), in Jesus' name. FREEMASONRY: I recommend visiting www.isaiah54.org/freemasonry.html for further prayers specifically designed for Freemasons and their descendants.

PRAYER FOR RELEASE FROM SOUL TIES

Father, I repent for every ungodly soul tie that I have made through sexual union. I apply the blood of Jesus to the soul tie that I made with ____________. I ask You to sever the cord connecting me to this person with the Sword of the Spirit. I bind any demonic attachments that came to me, and I command them to leave me, in Jesus' name. I loose the power of the Kingdom of God within me and around me to restore what was damaged by this soul tie. I ask You to seal the severed cord with the blood of Jesus, so it can never be connected again, and I ask You to remove any foreign DNA from my body, in Jesus' name. Father, I ask You to deliver every person from any spirits that were transferred to them from me, in Jesus' name.

PRAYER FOR VICTIMS OF TRAUMA AND FRAGMENTATION

Father, I submit myself to You, spirit, soul and body, and I am so grateful for the price that Jesus paid to make me whole. I ask You to forgive the sins of my abusers, and I ask You to sever all soul ties with them. I command any spirits that passed through the soul ties to leave me, in the name of Jesus, and I ask You to seal those severed cords with the blood of Jesus. As an act of my will, I choose to forgive every individual that has harmed me, in Jesus' name. I take authority over my mind, and I bind gatekeepers and watchers and break their power over me, in the name of Jesus. I loose the power of the Kingdom of God within me and around me, to overtake and override every plot and scheme of the enemy to hold me captive, in Jesus' name. Father, I ask You to impart to me the anointing that destroys every yoke of bondage. I thank You for the promise of a sound mind in 2 Timothy 1:7.

Father, I ask You to forgive the sins done to me that defiled Your Name, Your Word, and Your House, and I ask You to restore the truth of who You are to every part of my being. Father, I ask You to judge every demonic force that has been a part of my captivity since I was a child and deliver me. I plead the blood of Jesus over every ritual performed and every oath, vow, contract and covenant made connecting me to the kingdom of darkness, and I ask You to set me free and bring me under the protection of Your Kingdom. Father, when I was a child I was taken against my will, but I now have authority through Jesus over my tormentors, and I command them to let me go, in Jesus' name. According to Psalm 142:7, I pray: Bring my soul out of prison, that I may praise thy name.

Father, I ask You to make every doorway to blocked memories one-way doors, and I plead the blood of Jesus into every area of my mind. I ask You to override any mind control programming that has been used as a weapon against me, as I stand upon Your Word in Isaiah 54:17 that no weapon formed against me shall prosper. I ask You to show me anything that I need to see to be free, but I ask that the overwhelming emotions would be buffered, to allow me to come to grips with the truth without further trauma. I place my healing in Your hands, and I place my trust in You.

I bind any demons that are a part of my programming, and I loose the Spirit of Truth to counter and eradicate from my mind spirits of doubt and deception, in Jesus' name. I ask forgiveness for the sins that caused my mind to fragment, and I command the past to let me go. Because You fill all space and time, I ask You to pour anointing oil on every fragment of my mind at the time that the splitting occurred. I claim the manifested healing and deliverance at this present time, and I declare that I am not a child anymore; I am free to mature to my present age with restored peace and joy. I claim restoration of the years that Satan has stolen from me. I claim back my health, my resources, and my future, in Jesus' name.

I declare that I am a child of the King of the Universe, and I choose to follow the One True God and declare that I have been set free from the kingdom of darkness, in Jesus' name. I renounce all connections to Satanism, witchcraft, Druidism, and all other factions of the occult. Teach me Your ways so I can walk circumspectly before You each day, in Jesus' name. Father, I ask You to forgive every sin done by every fragment of my being, including involvement in the occult. I renounce these powers and bind Satan's ability to use me in any way. I loose the sanctifying power of the blood of Jesus to cover any gifts that You have given me, so I can flow in a pure stream of the Holy Spirit. Father, I repent for any forbidden activities, such as astral projection, and I take authority over my vessel and forbid any demons, humans, or mind control program to cause me to leave my body.

I ask You to forgive the sins of every individual that I have been connected to in the occult, and I ask You to sever all connections so that I can never be accessed again, in Jesus' name. I ask You to forgive the sins that allowed fragment exchanges between me and any other person, and I bind any demons connected to these exchanges. I ask You to block any humans with pernicious intent from contacting me. I ask You to hide any brain wave identification and block all satanic surveillance, in Jesus' name. Father, place hedges of protection around me and surround me with armies of Your holy angels to block all activity directed against me in the spiritual or physical realms, in Jesus' name. I take authority over and command every part of my being to stay within my physical body. Father, I place my sleep state in Your hands and trust You to keep me safe. Father, I ask You to reveal any additional information that is essential for my healing, in Jesus' name.

Recommended Reads

1.***Genesis and The Synchronized, Biblically Endorsed, Extra-Biblical Texts***, by Rob Skiba, Copyright 2013 by King's Gate Media, LLC, www.babylonrisingbooks.com

2.***What Witches Don't Want Christians to Know (Expanded Edition)*** by Mary Lou Lake, Copyright 2014 by Biblical Life Publishing, www.biblical-life.net

3.***A Thousand Shall Fall, by Susi Hasel Mundy***, Copyright 2001 by Review and Herald Publishing Association

4.***Shadow of The Almighty, The Life and Testament of Jim Elliot***, by Elisabeth Elliot, Copyright 1958 by Elisabeth Elliot

5.***Tortured for Christ, Richard Wurmbrand***, Copyright 1967 by The Voice of the Martyrs, Inc.

6.***From Victims to Victors Through the Cross of Jesus Christ*** by David L. & Donna M. Carrico, Copyright 1997 www.ritualabusefree.org

7.***Bonhoeffer: Pastor, Martyr, Prophet, Spy*** By Eric Metaxas, Copyright 2010 by Thomas Nelson Publishing

NOTES

NOTES

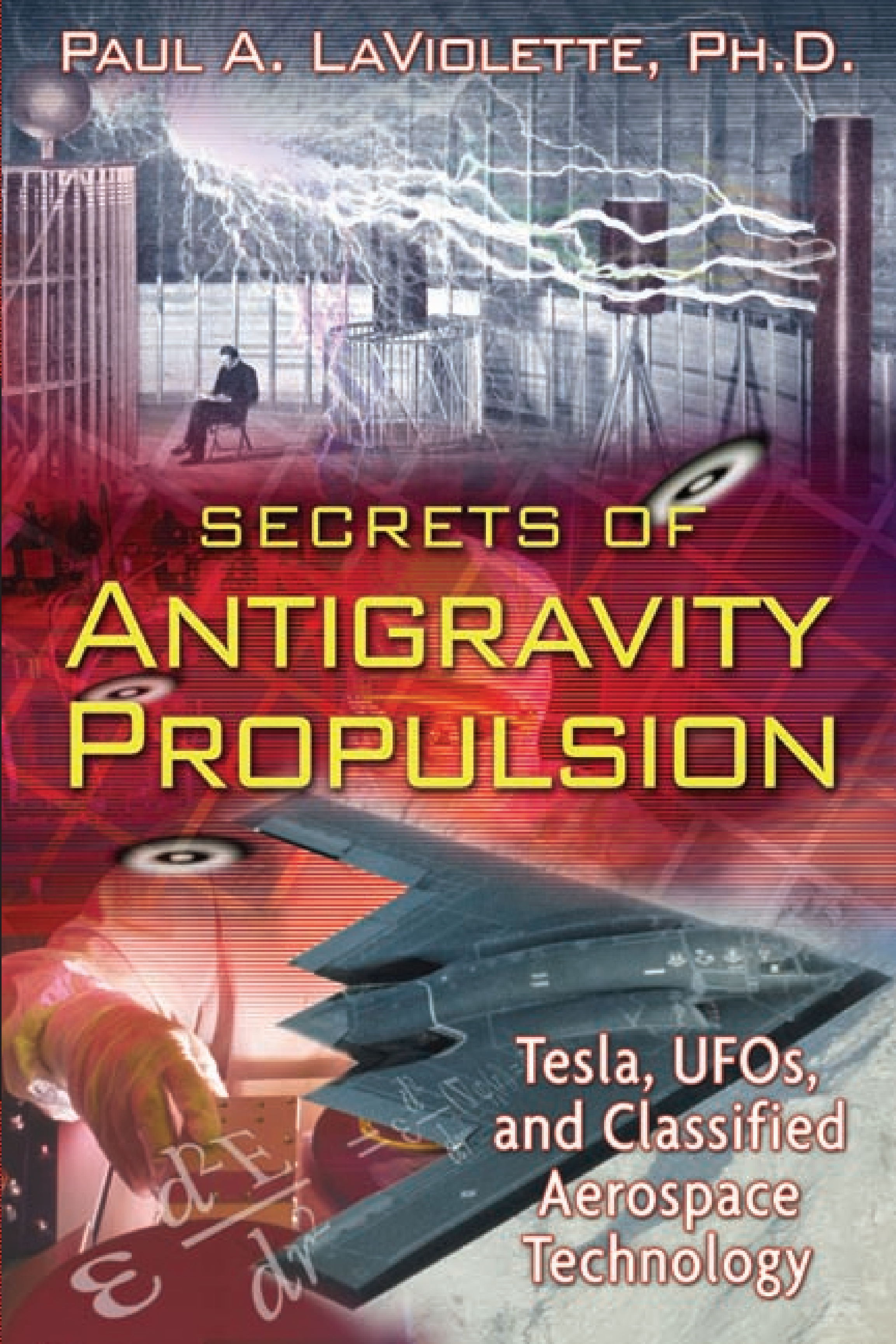

PAUL A. LAVIOLETTE, PH.D.

SECRETS OF ANTIGRAVITY PROPULSION

Tesla, UFOs, and Classified Aerospace Technology

This page intentionally left blank

SECRETS OF
ANTIGRAVITY PROPULSION

"Paul LaViolette is one of the most interesting and innovative thinkers probing the limits and horizons of contemporary physics. In this book he takes up a challenge that many of us have thought about but could not document: the possibility of propulsion systems that practically defy gravity. His findings merit earnest consideration, debate, and discussion."

ERVIN LASZLO, AUTHOR OF
SCIENCE AND THE AKASHIC FIELD

"Paul LaViolette's investigations into this most mysterious of subjects are at once fascinating and prescient."

NICK COOK, AUTHOR OF *THE HUNT FOR ZERO POINT: INSIDE THE CLASSIFIED WORLD OF ANTIGRAVITY TECHNOLOGY*

"One of the boldest and most exciting books on gravity control to be put forward in our times. Paul LaViolette is an outstanding scientist and the first to reverse engineer the B-2's highly classified propulsion system."

EUGENE PODKLETNOV, PH.D., PROFESSOR OF
CHEMISTRY, TAMPERE, FINLAND

"Paul LaViolette has once again unearthed advanced knowledge that can change our lives. This is a landmark book to be read and discussed by anyone concerned about humanity's options for the near future."

JEANE MANNING, AUTHOR OF *THE COMING ENERGY REVOLUTION: THE SEARCH FOR FREE ENERGY*

This page intentionally left blank

SECRETS OF ANTIGRAVITY PROPULSION

Tesla, UFOs, and Classified Aerospace Technology

PAUL A. LAVIOLETTE, PH.D.

Bear & Company
Rochester, Vermont

Bear & Company
One Park Street
Rochester, Vermont 05767
www.BearandCompanyBooks.com

Bear & Company is a division of Inner Traditions International

Copyright © 2008 by Paul A. LaViolette

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or by any information storage and retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publisher.

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data

LaViolette, Paul A.
Secrets of antigravity propulsion : Tesla, UFOs, and classified aerospace technology / Paul A. LaViolette.
p. cm.
Includes bibliographical references and index.
Summary: "A complete investigation of the development and suppression of antigravity and field propulsion technologies"—Provided by publisher.
ISBN: 978-1-59143-078-0
1. Unidentified flying objects. 2. Space vehicles—Propulsion systems. 3. Antigravity. I. Title.

TL789.3.L38 2008
629.47'5—dc22
2008004466

Printed and bound in Canada by Transcontinental Printing

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

Text design by Jon Desautels and layout by Priscilla Baker
This book was typeset in Sabon, with Bank Gothic and Gill Sans used as display typefaces

To send correspondence to the author of this book, mail a first-class letter to the author c/o Inner Traditions • Bear & Company, One Park Street, Rochester, VT 05767, and we will forward the communication.

CONTENTS

Acknowledgments vii
1 Antigravity: From Dream to Reality 1
2 Beyond Rocket Propulsion 42
3 Onward and Upward 83
4 An Etheric Explanation 114
5 The U.S. Antigravity Squadron 142
6 Gravity Beam Propulsion 165
7 Project Skyvault 190
8 Microwave Phase Conjugation 224
9 Unconventional Flying Objects 260
10 The Searl Effect 296
11 Electrogravitic Wave Experiments 333
12 High-Voltage Electrogravitics Experiments 349
13 Black Hole Discovered in NASA 378
14 A Technology That Could Change the World 400

APPENDICES

A. Letters Written by T. Townsend Brown to Thomas Turman 405

B. Aviation Studies International Ltd. Publications 411

C. Electrogravitics Systems 413

D. A Brief Description of Experiments Made in Paris by T. Townsend Brown 442

E. Notes on the Skyvault Antigravity Project 444

F. Secret Government Memos Concerning Operation Majestic Twelve 451

G. Electrogravitics: An Energy-Efficient Means of Space Propulsion 455

H. Beyond Rocket Propulsion 458

I. Correspondence with Charles Morris 460

J. Preventing Another *Columbia* Disaster 462

Notes 466

Bibliography 486

Index 494

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I dedicate this book to my father, Fred LaViolette (1916–2008), who through our years had been a guiding light for me. In particular I am greatly indebted to him for the long hours he spent helping me edit this manuscript. I would also like to thank my sister, Mary, for her editorial assistance as well. Finally I would like to thank Tom Turman, Thomas Chavez, Guy Obolensky, Larry Deavenport, Jean-Louis Naudin, and others for information about their work that they graciously shared.

This page intentionally left blank

1

ANTIGRAVITY: FROM DREAM TO REALITY

1.1 TRAVELING TO THE STARS

Interstellar space travel has long captivated the imagination and longing of humankind. Indeed, we have penetrated the cosmos and walked on the moon, while breakthroughs in long-range exploration, such as the Hubble Space Telescope, bring the farthest reaches of space tantalizingly close, rekindling our desire to travel beyond our galaxy. As of yet, we are bound by the frustrating limits of conventional propulsion technology. Skeptics remind us that a spacecraft powered by even the most advanced chemical rockets would need to carry so much fuel that travel over interstellar distances would be out of the question. Alternatively, vehicles equipped with nuclear-powered ion thrusters would have a much greater range. However, the fuel requirements would be such as to make a journey of even a few light-years quite impractical—basic physics tells us that a rocket-powered spacecraft would need a fuel mass that would far exceed the mass of the vehicle itself.

Is there a way to free ourselves of this fuel problem, using a totally different means of propulsion, one that does not require large quantities of mass to be jettisoned rearward for the craft to move forward? Imagine a spaceship that could alter the ambient gravitational field, artificially producing a matter-attracting, gravity-potential well that was just beyond the ship's bow. The gravity well's attractive force would tug the ship forward just as if a very massive, planet-sized body had been placed ahead of it. The ship would begin to "fall" forward and, in doing so, would carry its self-generated gravity well along with it. The gravity well would continually draw the ship forward, while always staying ahead. Through such a carrot-and-stick effect, the ship could accelerate to nearly the speed of light, or maybe even beyond, with essentially no expenditure of energy other than that needed to generate the gravity well.

Is such gravity control possible? Would it be possible to construct a spaceship with small enough propulsion power requirements that interstellar travel could be achieved? The answer is yes. For the past several decades, highly classified aerospace programs in the United States and in several other countries have been developing aircraft capable of defying gravity. One form of this technology can loft a craft on matter-repelling energy beams. This exotic technology falls under the relatively obscure field of research known as electrogravitics.

The origins of electrogravitics can be traced back to the turn of the twentieth century, to Nikola Tesla's work with high-voltage shock discharges, and somewhat later to T. Townsend Brown's relatively unpublicized discovery that electrostatic and gravitational fields are closely intertwined. Unfortunately, the electrogravitic effect has for the most part been ignored by mainstream academics, because the phenomenon isn't anticipated by either classical electrostatics or general relativity, effectively preventing it from being taught in university courses such as physics and electrical engineering. Rather, to unlock the secrets of electrogravitics, one must delve into popular science articles, patents, and relatively obscure technical reports that once held a classified status. Perhaps the best place to begin is to review some of Brown's seminal work.

1.2 ■ THE BIRTH OF ELECTROGRAVITICS

The American physicist and inventor Thomas Townsend Brown was born in 1905 to a well-to-do Zanesville, Ohio, family. At an early age, he

Figure 1.1. Thomas Townsend Brown at fifty-three years of age. (Photo courtesy of the Townsend Brown Family and Qualight, L.L.C.)

displayed a keen interest in space travel and dreamed of one day journeying into space himself. His discovery of the electrogravitic phenomenon occurred during his high school years, when his interest in space travel led him to toying with a Coolidge tube—a high-voltage X-ray-emitting vacuum tube similar to that found in modern dental X-ray machines. Brown had the insight to mount the tube on a delicate balance to investigate whether it might produce any thrust. To his surprise, the tube moved every time it was turned on. Ruling out X-rays as the cause of this mysterious force, he traced the effect to the high voltage he was applying to the tube's plates. He concluded that the tube had moved because its gravity field had somehow become affected by the plate's high-voltage charge.[1–4]

After additional experiments, Brown eventually developed an electric capacitor device that he termed a *gravitator* (or, alternately, *gravitor*). These units were very heavy. One version consisted of a wooden box, 2 feet long and 4 inches square, that contained a series of massive, electrically conductive plates made of lead and separated from one another by electrically insulating sheets of glass, which served as the capacitor's dielectric medium (a *dielectric* is a substance that does not conduct electric current). Another version used a dielectric molded from a mixture of lead monoxide and beeswax encased in Bakelite. The diagram in figure 1.2, which is reproduced from Brown's 1928 patent, shows yet another version made with aluminum plates and paraffin.

When energized with up to 150,000 volts of direct current (DC), Brown's gravitator developed a thrust in the direction of its positively

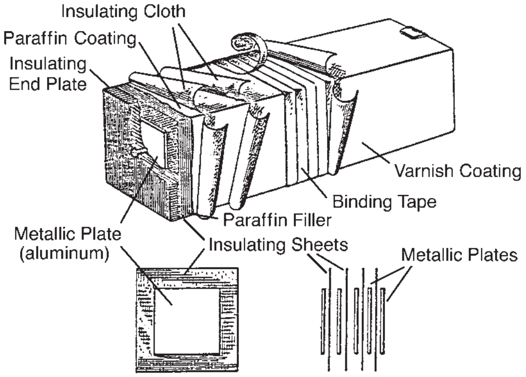

Figure 1.2. A cellular gravitator shown in perspective together with end- and side-view details of its plates. (Brown, 1928)

charged end. One such gravitator, which weighed 10 kilograms, was observed to generate a maximum thrust of 0.1 kilogram (1 newton), a force equal to about 1 percent of its weight.[5,6] When oriented upright on a scale and energized, it proceeded to gain or lose that amount of weight depending upon how the charge polarity was applied. It became lighter when its positive end faced up and heavier when its negative end faced up.

Brown entered the California Institute of Technology in 1922. He spent a good part of his freshman year attempting to win the friendship of his professors and to convince them of his abilities as a first-class "lab man." However, when he began mentioning his ideas about electrogravity, no one would listen. At the end of the year, he had his laboratory equipment shipped from Ohio, set it up in his quarters, and sent invitations to several of his professors, including the renowned Dr. Robert Millikan, to witness a demonstration of the new force he had discovered. No one came. Some time later, one of Brown's friends tested Millikan by asking him whether he knew of anyone who had ever found a way of modifying or influencing the force of gravity. Millikan is said to have replied brusquely, "Of course not; such a thing is impossible and out of the question."

His feelings deeply hurt by the incident, Brown transferred to Kenyon College, in Gambier, Ohio, and the following year he transferred to Dennison University, in Granville, Ohio. One of his physics professors at Dennison, Dr. Paul A. Biefeld, had also been interested in the movement of electric capacitors. Brown had frequent conversations with Biefeld and came to refer to the electrogravitic phenomenon as the

Biefeld-Brown effect, perhaps in respect to Biefeld's own interest in the subject. Still, it is not clear that Biefeld actively collaborated with Brown on his research.

For one of his experiments, Brown arranged a pair of gravitators, one at each end of an arm that was suspended from the laboratory ceiling by a long cord attached to the arm's central fulcrum (figure 1.3). When energized with between 75,000 and 300,000 volts DC, the connecting arm rotated as each gravitator moved in the direction of its positive pole. This force occurred in the same fashion even when the capacitor was immersed in a tank of oil, thereby ruling out the possibility that the effect was produced by a wind of electric ions. Brown's gravitators could produce this motion with a power input of just 1 watt. With each gravitator generating 100 grams of thrust, for a total thrust of 2 newtons, the thrust-to-power ratio of Brown's electrogravitic thrusters calculates to 2,000 newtons per kilowatt. This is 130 times the thrust-to-power ratio of a jet engine, or 10,000 times the thrust-to-power ratio of the space shuttle main engine.

Brown determined that the electrogravitic effect he observed depended on the amount of charge stored in his capacitors. As the applied voltage was increased and a greater amount of charge was stored, the capacitors would respond with a greater amount of electrogravitic force. Moreover, because the intensity of the effect depended upon the

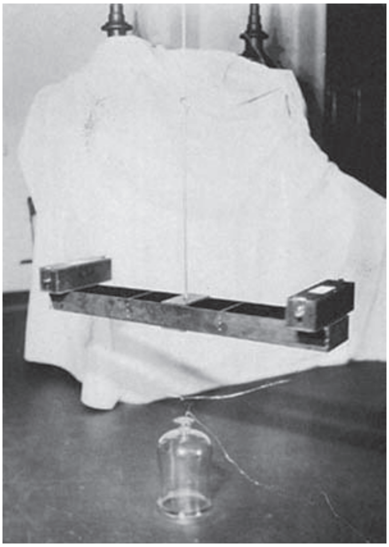

Figure 1.3. An experimental setup designed to measure the thrust produced by Thomas Townsend Brown's gravitators. (Photo courtesy of the Townsend Brown Family and Qualight, L.L.C.)

capacitor's mass, he concluded that the induced motion must be due to the capacitor's ability to generate a localized gravitational field.

After he left Dennison, Brown conducted astrophysics research for four years, from 1926 to 1930, working at a private laboratory in his hometown of Zanesville and also at Ohio's Swazey Observatory, where he was in contact with Dr. Biefeld. In a variation of his rotating gravitator experiment, Brown suspended a single gravitator from his laboratory ceiling by two wires (figure 1.4). The gravitator was hung so that it would stay immersed in a tank of oil, so as to reduce the production of ions. When energized, the pendulum would swing toward the gravitator's positive pole. Brown characterized this electrogravitic phenomenon as an impulse.[7] He noted that less than five seconds was required for the pendulum to reach the maximum amplitude of its swing, but then, even while he maintained the high-voltage potential, his pendulum would gradually return to its plumb position, taking from 30 to 80 seconds to return. He noted further that on its return from maximum deflection, his pendulum would hesitate at definite levels or steps, but repeated trials showed that there were no consistent positions to these steps.

Brown also noted that he would have to give his gravitator a rest after each test to see the effect repeat once again. He had to remove his charging potential for at least five minutes to allow his gravitator sufficient time to "recharge" itself so that it might regain its "former gravitic condition." He did not mention what might have been happening during this recharging process, probably because at that time he had no clear idea himself. He saw that when the duration of the gravitic impulse had been greater, more time was needed off-line to allow the gravitator to refresh itself.

We may gain an understanding of why his gravitator would not

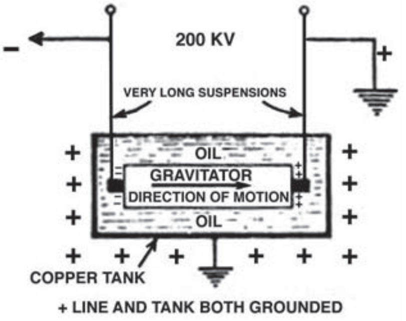

Figure 1.4. Thomas Townsend Brown's gravitator hung in pendulum fashion and was submersed in a tank of oil. (Brown, 1929)

hold its initial gravitic force by analyzing what was happening inside its dielectric. Initially, before high voltage was applied, the dielectric would reside in an unpolarized state. With the application of voltage, current would begin to flow and the gravitator's plates would progressively charge up. The electric field between the plates would exert an electrostatic force on the dielectric's molecules, causing them to displace slightly—the positive molecular charges being tugged in the direction of the gravitator's negative pole and the negative molecular charges being tugged toward its positive pole. As a result, the dielectric would become polarized (see figure 1.5), its electric dipole moment pointing in a direction opposite to the direction of the applied electric field.

The dielectric does not polarize instantaneously in response to the applied voltage; it takes some time to reach full polarization. This time lag is a common property of dielectrics known as *dielectric relaxation*. It is analogous to the property of hysteresis observed when a transformer core is magnetically energized. Most capacitor dielectrics used today have very short dielectric relaxation times—less than microseconds. However, Brown's capacitor must have had a very slow relaxation time, probably because it was rather long from end to end and because of the nature of the wax-litharge mixture of which it was composed. The 30 to 80 seconds or so that the gravitator took to gradually return to its plumb position from its maximum deflection was likely the duration of its dielectric relaxation, the time required for its dielectric to become fully polarized.

During the first few seconds that the voltage was applied, the slowly responding dielectric, for the most part, would have remained unpolarized. Hence the applied electric field, along with its associated gravitic field effect, would have extended with full intensity throughout the gravitator, exerting a maximal gravitic thrust on the dielectric in the

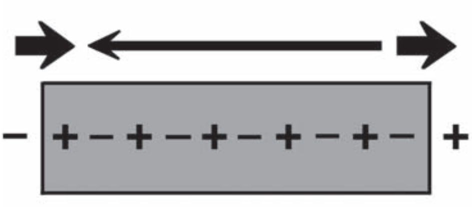

Figure 1.5. The polarized charge arrangement in the gravitator's dielectric when voltage is applied to the gravitator plates. Arrows indicate the direction of the electrogravitic force.

direction of the gravitator's positive pole. However, as the dielectric became increasingly polarized, its oppositely directed electric dipole moment field arising within the dielectric would have progressively increased in strength, progressively canceling out the gravitic effects induced by the externally applied electric field. Thus the thrust pushing the gravitator in the direction of its positive pole would have progressively subsided. Moreover, when the dielectric reached its fully polarized state with its opposed dipole moment field at its maximum, this thrust would have become almost entirely canceled out, leaving the gravitator to return to its plumb position.

As the dielectric became progressively polarized, the gravitator capacitor plates would have been able to hold an increasing amount of electric charge as an increasing number of polarized molecular charges moved adjacent to the plates to attract additional charges. As a result, throughout this polarization interval the gravitator would have been charging up and a current would have been flowing to its plates. Charge would have been accumulating most rapidly in the beginning and the charging rate would have progressively dropped off as the full charged state was approached. Similarly, the reverse gravitic thrust generated by the polarizing dielectric would have caused the overall gravitic thrust to decline most rapidly at the beginning of the pendulum's swing and to subside more slowly as the fully charged state was approached. The observation that the gravitic force subsided in steps may be an indication that the dielectric experienced a succession of abrupt mechanical shifts in its approach to the fully polarized state.

The need to recycle the gravitator between test runs, to discharge it and let it rest so as to "regain its former gravitic condition," is understandable if we realize that it was necessary to allow a sufficiently long rest period for the dielectric to completely depolarize. After the DC voltage supply is shut off, a residual charge will initially remain on the capacitor plates, kept there by the dielectric's residual polarization. Engineers refer to this remnant charge as *dielectric absorption*. It is particularly important in capacitors that are capable of storing a lot of charge. As the dielectric progressively relaxes, this charge is gradually released. Once the gravitator dielectric had relaxed to an unpolarized state, new charges would be able to rapidly accumulate on its electrodes during the next charging cycle. Once again, a steep gravity potential gradient would have been able to form across the gravitator and temporarily exert a net thrust on its massive dielectric until it was again opposed by the dielectric's progressively increasing dipole moment field.

1.3 ■ A THEORY OF ELECTROGRAVITICS

In August 1927, Brown filed for a British patent on his gravitator idea, which was issued to him in November 1928 (British patent 300,311). In the patent's text, Brown clearly proclaims that the propelling force he has discovered is of an unconventional nature:

> The invention also relates to machines or apparatus requiring electrical energy that control or influence the gravitational field or the energy of gravitation; also to machines or apparatus requiring electrical energy that exhibit a linear force or motion which is believed to be independent of all frames of reference save that which is at rest relative to the universe taken as a whole, and said linear force or motion is furthermore believed to have no equal and opposite reaction that can be observed by any method commonly known and accepted by the physical science to date.[8]

Here he describes his belief that electrogravitic force operates relative to a unique reference frame that is at rest in relation to the universe, an idea that challenges special relativity's notion that a force should operate in the same manner relative to any frame of reference. Moreover, he suggests that this force is reactionless when producing its forward thrust—that is, it produces its forward thrust without any back-directed recoil. He is in effect suggesting that it violates Newton's third law of motion—that every action should produce an equal and opposite reaction. Dr. Patrick Cornille, who repeated Brown's high-voltage pendulum experiment, came to the similar conclusion that Newton's third law of motion was indeed violated (see chapter 12).

On October 28, 1928, just prior to receiving his patent, Townsend submitted to the physics journal *Physical Review* a paper titled "Tapping Cosmic Energy," which described his gravitator experiments.

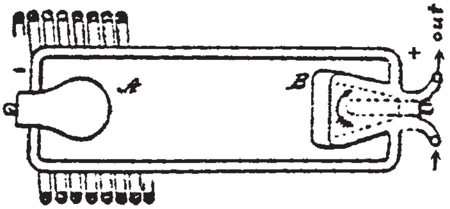

Figure 1.6. A gravitator configured within an evacuated envelope reproduced from Brown's patent. In this version, the negative electrode or cathode (left) is heated to incandescence, thereby encouraging the thermionic emission of electrons, whereas the positive electrode or anode (right) is cooled by circulating air or water. This configuration mimics many of the design features of an X-ray tube (or Coolidge tube), like the ones that Brown used when he first observed the electrogravitic phenomenon. (Brown, 1928)

Unfortunately, the journal rejected his paper, apparently because of its unconventional nature. For one thing, his ideas challenged Einstein's theory of gravitation, which had by then become staunchly accepted by the physics community. One year later, Brown published a less technical version of his findings in *Science and Invention Magazine*[9] and succeeded in impressing a large number of people with his work.

In 1930 one of Brown's colleagues wrote about the gravitator to Colonel Edward Deeds, who was one of Brown's longtime acquaintances. In his letter he wrote, "I have had a number of scientists view the gravitator and they have all been absolutely amazed at its action, frankly stating that whereas they see the results and the movements of the gravitator, it is absolutely unexplainable by any laws of physics that they know."[10]

At that time, Brown had no theory to explain electrogravity. It would not be until twenty years later that he sketched out a theory of sorts, which he made notes about in one of his lab notebooks. But a theoretical methodology that actually predicted charge-mass coupling and that could begin to make some sense out of electrogravitics in a unified-field-theory context did not begin to emerge until the late 1970s with the development of subquantum kinetics.[11–13] It is useful to review a bit about this theory here, as it will help us interpret the novel results that Brown was getting.

Subquantum kinetics offers an explanation for gravity that is substantially different from Einstein's relativity theory. Whereas general relativity postulates that masses exert an attractive gravitational force on other bodies by warping the space-time dimensional fabric around themselves, subquantum kinetics proposes that masses have no such effect on the geometry of space or time. Subquantum kinetics assumes that space is geometrically flat, or Euclidean; hence, it conforms to the geometrical rules most everyone learns in high school math class. It predicts that a mass creates a classical gravity potential field and that a gradient in such a field exerts a force on a remote body by affecting how that body's constituent subatomic particles regenerate their physical form. (Details of how potential fields are generated and how they accelerate material particles through form regeneration are further discussed in chapter 4.)

Subquantum kinetics also differs from general relativity in its prediction of gravitational field polarity. According to general relativity, masses only attract other masses, never repel them. Although Einstein did introduce the notion of a matter-repelling effect whose magnitude he symbolically represented by a quantity called the cosmological constant, this was not part of his general relativity theory, but was an ad hoc correction factor added to his field equations so that they would not predict a universe that was spontaneously contracting due to self-gravitation.

Einstein had attempted to expand his relativity theory to encompass both electromagnetism and gravitation, but he was unsuccessful. Relativity was unable to predict any connection between charge polarity and gravitational field polarity.

Subquantum kinetics, on the other hand, predicts that gravity should have two polarities. It permits the creation of either a matter-attracting gravity potential well or a matter-repelling gravity potential hill and predicts that these two gravity polarities should be directly correlated with electric charge polarity. That is, positively charged particles such as protons would generate gravity wells, whereas negatively charged particles such as electrons would generate gravity hills. When protons and electrons combine to compose electrically neutral atoms, the gravitational polarities of the protons and electrons for the most part would neutralize one another. However, because a proton's gravity well is theorized to marginally exceed an electron's gravity hill, electrically neutral matter would produce a small, residual matter-attracting gravity potential well, thereby generating the gravity we commonly experience pulling us to Earth.

Subquantum kinetics predicts that a matter-repelling gravity potential hill should form on the negatively charged side of a capacitor and that a matter-attracting gravity potential well forms on the positively charged side. The intervening gravity potential gradient would produce a gravitational force on the capacitor's massive dielectric that would act to pull it in the direction of the positively charged plate (figure 1.7). The more prominent the gravity hill and well, the steeper the gravity potential gradient and the stronger the produced gravitational thrust. While this force was present, the capacitor would behave as if it was being tugged forward by a very strong gravitational field emanating from an invisible planetary mass situated ahead of its positive pole and as if it was being pushed forward by an equally strong repulsive gravitational force emanating from behind its negative pole. If the capacitor was placed with its positive pole facing up and was energized such that it generated a sufficiently steep vertical gravity gradient, theoretically the downward pull of gravity could be entirely overcome. (For a more detailed mathematical analysis of how this electrogravitic force might be quantified, see the text box on pages 13–16.)

At present there is no easy way to check the prediction that an individual electron might have negative gravitational mass because any matter-repelling gravitational force it might produce would be greatly

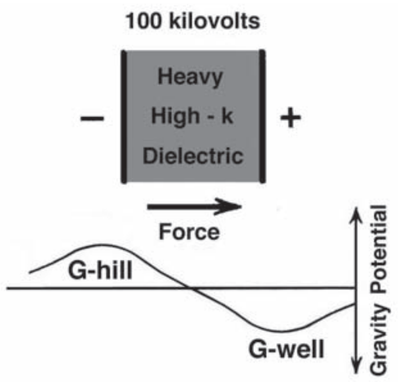

Figure 1.7. The electro-gravitational force effect produced by charging a capacitor to a high voltage. (P. LaViolette, © 1994)

overpowered by its electrostatic force interactions with surrounding matter. That is, no one has found a way to screen out these electrostatic forces sufficiently to allow an accurate measurement of a single particle's gravitational mass. However, when large numbers of electrons and protons are differentially accumulated, as at the opposite poles of a charged capacitor, the cumulative effect of the negative gravitational potentials of the electrons appears to be great enough to produce an observable macroscopic force. That force is the electrogravitic effect that Brown observed.

Quantifying the Electrogravitic Effect

Subquantum kinetics, then, predicts that a charged body should generate a gravitational mass, m_g, that scales directly with the magnitude of its electrical charge. Their proportional equivalence is expressed by the following electrogravitic coupling relation:

[gravitational mass] IS PROPORTIONAL TO [electric charge]

or with symbols:

$$m_g \propto q, \qquad (1)$$

Thus, a body that has a fourfold increase in positive electric charge should produce a fourfold-greater positive gravitational mass. Also, a fourfold increase in negative electric charge should produce a fourfold-greater negative (mass-repelling) gravitational mass. Moreover, because electric charge comes in either a positive or negative polarity, ±q, gravitational mass would similarly be induced in either of two polarities correlated with the charge polarity.

The same electrogravitic rule holds when expressed in terms of electric charge *density,* ρ_e, and gravitational mass *density,* ρ_m, quantities that refer to the amount of charge or gravitational mass per unit volume. Their proportional equivalence is expressed as:

[gravitational mass density] IS PROPORTIONAL TO [electric charge density]

or with symbols:

$$\rho_m \propto \rho_e \qquad (2)$$

We may also express this charge–mass correspondence in terms of energy potentials or, to use another phrase, in terms of field potentials. For example, a positively charged body that is characterized by a positive charge density, ρ_e, would create a positive electric potential within itself. This elevated potential would create an electric potential field, $\varphi_e(r)$, that would appear as an electric potential hill having its maximum centered on the charged body and a magnitude that progressively declined with increasing radial distance r from that body. The parenthetical expression, (r), indicates that the field magnitude varies with distance r.

As noted in relation 2, a body having a positive electric charge density would produce a proportionate positive gravitational mass density, ρ_m, that would supplement its inherent natural mass density. This in turn would create a proportional negative gravity potential within the body supplementing its naturally produced negative gravity potential, which in turn would generate an extended gravity potential field $-\varphi_g(r)$. This gravity field would be configured as a gravity potential well centered on the charged body, its gravity potential progressively rising to more positive values with increasing radial distance r from that body.

In the case of a negative charge density, these field polarities would be reversed, resulting in an electric potential well centered on the body that in turn would produce a gravity potential hill. Note that when speaking of gravity fields, what we term a "positive mass" by convention is one that produces a matter-attracting gravity potential well. In the case of electric charge, on the other hand, by convention a positive charge would produce a positive electric potential hill.

The electrogravitic relations presented in (1) and (2) may be expressed in terms of field potentials as:

[**gravity potential**] IS PROPORTIONAL TO [**negative electric potential**]

or with symbols:

$$\varphi_g(r) \propto -\varphi_e(r). \tag{3}$$

Hence, an electric potential field gradient extending between the positive and negative plates of a capacitor would produce a proportional gravity potential field gradient of opposite sign across the capacitor's intervening dielectric; recall figure 1.5.

Also, Newton's second law tells us that a gravity potential field will generate a force on a body that is proportional to the magnitude of the field gradient multiplied by the body's inertial mass. This may be expressed mathematically by the equation:

$$\mathbf{F}_g(r) = -Gm_o \nabla\varphi_g(r), \tag{4}$$

where $\mathbf{F}_g(r)$ is the gravitational force acting on a body, G is the gravitational constant, m_o is the inertial mass of the affected body, and $\nabla\varphi_g(r)$ is the local gravity potential gradient that is sometimes alternatively symbolized as **grad** $\varphi_g(r)$. The bold type on the force and gradient symbols indicates that they are vector quantities having direction as well as magnitude. Basically this equation states that the steeper the gravity field gradient, the greater the produced force, as was mentioned earlier in connection with figure 1.7. Or, alternatively, the greater the magnitude of $\nabla\varphi_g(r)$, the greater the produced force.

The quantity $-G\nabla\varphi_g(r)$ in equation 4 is termed the *gravitational acceleration* and is sometimes symbolized as g(r). Thus equation 4 may be rewritten to yield the more condensed expression for gravitational force: $\mathbf{F}_g(r) = m_o\, g(r)$. Often the magnitude of a gravitational accelerating force is measured in terms of "g's," or multiples of Earth's gravitational acceleration pulling us toward Earth, which at Earth's surface has a value of about 980 cm/s^2. This should not be confused with the inertial "g" symbol, which quantifies the magnitude of a mechanical accelerating force experienced by a jet pilot or rocket astronaut as inertial force resisting acceleration. Thus, an electrogravitic acceleration of 10 g's would signify a gravitational acceleration ten times that produced naturally at Earth's surface. Depending on the polarity and orientation of the applied electric field, this artificially induced gravitational acceleration may be engineered either to supplement or to counter that produced by Earth's field.

Equation 4 may be combined with proportionality relation 3 to express the gravitational force $\mathbf{F}_g$ acting on a body (or dielectric) in terms of the product of the inertial mass m_o of that body (or dielectric) and the voltage gradient, $\nabla\varphi_e(r)$, that spans it:

$$\mathbf{F}_g(r) = k\, m_o \nabla\varphi_e(r). \tag{5}$$

The constant *k* added in here is an experimentally determined electrogravitic proportionality constant that quantifies the charge-to-mass coupling relationship. Hopefully, future experimentation will provide a value for this constant. Equation 5, then, mathematically expresses the electrical induction of a gravitational force.

1.4 ■ ELECTROGRAVITIC MOTORS

In his 1928 British patent, Brown also introduced his invention of a gravitator motor. This involved a series of gravitator cells arranged in a circle (figure 1.8). By ensuring that the cells were spaced sufficiently far apart from one another and that the spacing medium was less dense than the dielectric medium within each cell, the cells would collectively generate unbalanced forces and hence produce rotation. He noted that this motor may either be "independently excited," that is, run by an external source of electric power, or be "self-excited," that is, energized from electric power that it generates itself.

A later version of his gravitator motor was described in U.S. patent 1,974,483, filed in February 1930 and which was issued to Brown in September 1934. This used a rotor made from alternating sectors of marble and varnished wood, separated by copper-plate electrodes across which a high-voltage charge was applied (see figure 1.9). In another variation, he used alternating sectors of lead oxide and paraffin wax; essentially he alternated a high-density dielectric with a low-density dielectric.

In his 1928 patent, where he discussed the possibility of powering his motor from electric power that the motor itself would produce, he

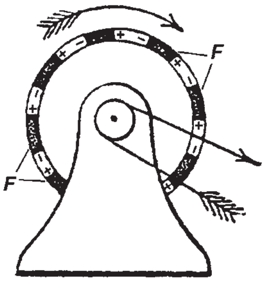

Figure 1.8. A gravitator motor composed of gravitator cells (F) positioned around the circumference of a wheel. (Brown, 1928)

pointed out that the electric power output generated by the motor could far exceed the electric input needed to run it. He stated:

> Here it will be understood that the energy created by the operation of the motor may at times be vastly in excess of the energy required to operate the motor. In some instances the ratio may be even as high as a million to one. . . . In said self-excited motors the energy necessary to overcome the friction or other resistance in the physical structure of the apparatus, and even to accelerate the motors against such resistance is believed to be derived solely from the gravitational field or the energy of gravitation.[14]

In effect, Brown boldly states that his motor is a perpetuum mobile. There is a question as to whether he was overstating this motor's over-unity capability, for he makes no reference to experimental data. Also, there is no evidence of anyone having reproduced this design and having obtained such high electrical or mechanical outputs. Nevertheless, such a blatant violation of the first law of thermodynamics in principle is possible in cases in which a gravitational field is made to follow a circular path, as in Brown's gravitator motor. That is, because the gravitators mounted on the wheel's periphery would generate a circumferentially oriented gravity field and carry this field along as the wheel turns, regardless of the wheel's position, the induced gravity field would always cause further rotation. In effect, the wheel would rotate in a state of circular free fall. Just as a mass is able to fall forever in an infinitely deep pit, so too would this rotor be able to turn indefinitely without reaching the end of its potential energy supply. All the while, power could be extracted from the wheel's shaft at no cost, save that needed to power the gravitators.

Figure 1.9. A rotor component for an electrostatic motor built and patented by Thomas Townsend Brown that used dielectric sectors of alternating high and low density. (Brown, 1930)

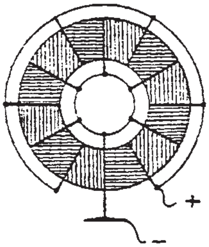

Such vortical gravity fields are rarely observed in nature, because Earth's field is for the most part directed radially with respect to Earth's center. However, there may be marginal exceptions to this rule, as is the case in the vicinity of Argostoli Bay, on the island of Cephalonia, located off the northwest coast of Greece. Several kilometers northwest of the coastal town of Argostoli, there is a place where water from the bay flows inland, runs downhill from sea level, and, after a few hundred meters, disappears into a fissure in the rock. To find where this water goes, Austrian geologists added 350 pounds of a tracer dye to this inflow and, using sensitive equipment, two weeks later detected this same dye on the other side of the island fourteen kilometers to the east in a spring issuing from a subterranean cavern. Curiously, the water in this cavern is situated several meters above sea level and eventually flows downhill, emptying back into the bay. Thus, the water makes a complete circle! One hundred years ago, local residents fashioned a channel for this inflowing water and built a waterwheel to harness its energy to produce electric power (see figure 1.10).

What causes water on the western side of this bay to flow downhill, below sea level, and then flow uphill toward the eastern side, returning once again to the bay? Some have suggested that geothermal, subterranean hydrostatic pressures may be responsible for siphoning the water upward. Because of the existence of several other unusual phenomena in the region, the Greek physicist Panagiotis Pappas believes that a gravitational field anomaly may instead be responsible. For one thing, the water flow in Argostoli Bay changes its direction about every quarter of an hour. This is most easily seen from the vantage point of the one-kilometer-long bridge that spans the shallow southern end of the bay. There, one can see water flowing briskly under the bridge and passing through its arches at speeds of up to one meter per second, but after some minutes it slows to a stop, reverses, and begins to pick up speed in the opposite direction. This effect is not at all related to lunar tides, which occur on a much longer, twelve-hour cycle.

Across the bay from Argostoli, near the village of Loukouri, lies a huge boulder that for many years was observed to very slowly sway back and forth. Because of its motion it came to be called Kounopetra, meaning "rocking rock." If a sheet of paper was placed under one end of

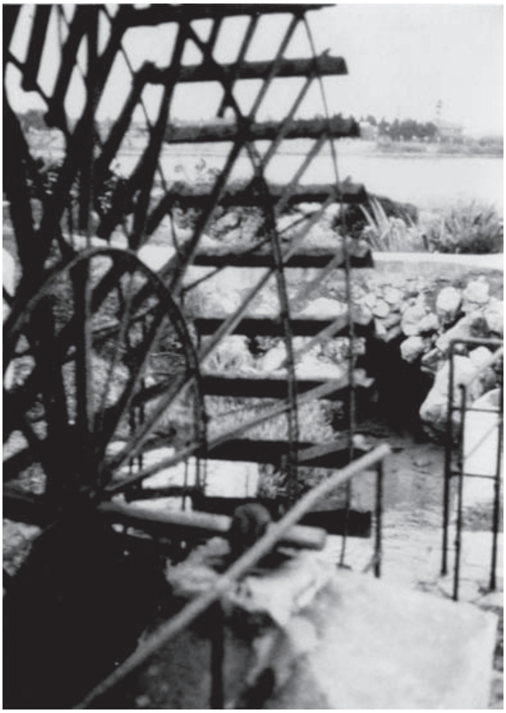

Figure 1.10. Waterwheel on Cephalonia Island built over a sluiceway to generate electricity from inflowing water. The water level drops about 2 meters below sea level by the time it reaches the waterwheel and thereafter drops several more meters before entering a fissure. (Photo by the author)

this rock, some time later we would find that the sheet was caught under the rock and could not be removed. Later still, however, the rock's center of gravity would shift and once again the paper could be removed. Perhaps the boulder's slow rocking, the gradual change in water-flow direction in the adjoining bay, and the gravitational anomaly responsible for propelling the subterranean flow of seawater uphill to its spring outlet all arise from the same cause—a vortical instability in the local gravitational field that causes motion tangential to Earth's surface. If so, the waterwheel at Argostoli may have been the first gravitational perpetual-motion machine built in modern times.

1.5 ■ BROWN'S GRAVITO-ELECTRIC DISCOVERIES

Brown kept a sharp eye on the daily operation of his electrogravitic motor. In the course of his studies, he found that the rate of rotation of his motor was not constant; it varied depending on the time of day. Further observation revealed that its torque rose and fell according to the lunar and solar cycles. A diurnal sidereal cycle was also present in which the gravitic torque changed as a result of the Earth's rotation relative to a fixed point in space lying in the general direction of the galactic center. He observed similar cyclic influences in his gravitator pendulum experiments in which the total duration of the pendulum's developed impulse was seen to vary with cosmic conditions, such as the pendulum's alignment with the sun and moon at times of conjunction or opposition. Ruling out factors such as changes in temperature and supplied voltage, he concluded that the impulse was governed solely by the condition of the ambient gravity field potential. He found that any number of different kinds of gravitators, operating simultaneously at very different voltages, revealed the same impulse duration at any given instant and underwent equal variations over extended periods of time. The cause of these variations greatly intrigued him and became a focus of his gravity research throughout his life.

In 1930, Brown left Swazey Observatory and began working at the Naval Research Laboratory in Washington, D.C., as a specialist in radiation, field physics, and spectroscopy. From 1931 to 1933, the Naval Research Laboratory placed him in charge of a project whose stated purpose was to investigate certain unusual "electric" effects found in fluids and in massive high-K dielectrics. Brown found that such massive high-K dielectrics exhibited the strongest electrogravitic coupling. Again, he found that the magnitude of the electrogravitic thrust varied with the time of day.

Explaining the Dielectric Constant, K

Often the permittivity of a dielectric is expressed in terms of the dielectric constant K of the material, which is the ratio of its permittivity to the permittivity of empty space, $\varepsilon_o = 8.85 \times 10^{-12}$ farads per meter: that is, $K = \varepsilon/\varepsilon_o$. So if two capacitors are compared, one having a dielectric between its electrodes with a tenfold-higher K value, and if both capacitors are charged to the same voltage, the capacitor with the higher K dielectric will be able to store ten times as much electric charge. K values can range from near unity, such as the value for air, to more than 20,000 for certain ceramic compounds. When Brown was conducting his first tests, he used lead monoxide as a dielectric for one of his gravitators, which has a K of 26. Some ceramic compounds, such as barium titanate, not only can have a very high dielectric constant, ranging from 2,000 to 10,000 K, but they also happen to be quite heavy. More recently, a ceramic compound called barium zirconium titanate (also known as BZT), which also is quite massive, has been found to have a dielectric constant of 23,000.

Brown constructed expensive recording instruments, some of which resembled the electrostatically energized multisegmented rotor he had developed in the 1920s but which used massive dielectrics with much higher K values. He called these *sidereal electrometers*. For several years, he took continuous readings with them under carefully controlled conditions, keeping voltage and temperature constant and shielding his units from magnetic and electrostatic fields in the environment. His sidereal electrometer rotor was typically 12 inches in diameter and was suspended from its center by a thin wire that allowed it to rotate under torque in a horizontal orientation. A sequencer applied 11,000 volts for thirty seconds across the rotor segments, causing the rotor to turn by several degrees. The power was then shut off for three minutes to allow the rotor to return to its relaxed, untorqued position. The cycle would then repeat. The rotor's energized and relaxed angular positions were automatically recorded on a slowly advancing paper strip, and later the trends were statistically processed to check for possible cyclic correlations. In 1973, Brown wrote the following about his findings:

> There were pronounced correlations with mean solar time, sidereal time and lunar hour angle. This seemed to prove beyond a doubt that the thrust of the "gravitators" varied with time in a way that related to solar and lunar tides and a sidereal correlation of unknown origin. These automatic records, acquired in so many different locations over such a long period of time, appear to indicate that the electrogravitic coupling is subject to an extraterrestrial factor, possibly related to the universal gravitational potention or some other (as yet) unidentified cosmic variable.[15]

In addition, Brown's Naval Research Laboratory investigations unexpectedly revealed that the electric resistivities of certain high-density dielectrics also undergo cyclic changes correlated with solar and sidereal time. He devised a resistance-sensing device that was able to measure these changes. Unlike his sidereal electrometer, it had no moving parts. He made observations with these two types of detectors, both in Washington and at sea on the Navy-Princeton International Gravity Expedition to the West Indies conducted on board the U.S. submarine S-48. Interestingly, Admiral Hyman Rickover, who was then a lieutenant, served as the executive officer (second in command) for this expedition. Brown's laboratory findings were summarized in a study titled "Anomalous Behavior of Massive High-K Dielectrics," which, it seems, has yet to be declassified. A Freedom of Information Act request was made to the Naval Research Laboratory in May 1995 to retrieve a copy of this document. However, the response came back that the library had no record of it. Either they did not do a thorough search or it was relocated and its existence and whereabouts are presently classified.

The results of these gravito-electric measurements were so encouraging that in 1937 a decision was made to extend the investigation and to establish another naval field station some distance west of Washington. Measuring equipment was set up in a constant-temperature vault in the basement of Brown's home in Zanesville, with provisions made for automation of the data-recording process. These new measurements confirmed the Naval Research Laboratory findings. The field station was moved the next year to the University of Pennsylvania, in Philadelphia. The investigation was interrupted during World War II but was resumed again from 1944 to 1949 in California, at Laguna Beach and Los Angeles. The project was sponsored by the Townsend Brown Foundation, a scientific research organization established by Brown's parents in the mid-1920s.

In a letter he wrote in 1968 to the researcher Thomas Turman, Brown commented about the observed variations in electrogravitic force:

> There are a number of mysteries concerning the nature of the [electrogravitic] force, largely the variations which it undergoes. There appear to be at least three semi-diurnal cycles:

> 1) relating to mean solar time (with maxima at 4 AM and 4 PM)
> 2) relating to lunar hour angle with maxima approximately 2 hours after the upper and lower meridian transit of the moon, and
> 3) relating to sidereal time with a sharp peak at 16h S.T. [Greenwich sidereal time] and a minor maximum at 4h S.T. The reasons for these variations as well as the reasons for the almost continuous secular variations [are] completely unknown.[16]

At sixteen hours Greenwich sidereal time, the western end of the Scorpius constellation was reaching its zenith, a sky position lying within 25 degrees of the galactic center. Consequently, Brown theorized that the sidereal effect he was observing was due to some kind of radiation emanating from the center of our galaxy. He concluded that these "sidereal rays" were not electromagnetic in nature and did not resemble cosmic rays. They had no known ionizing power, were not disturbed by

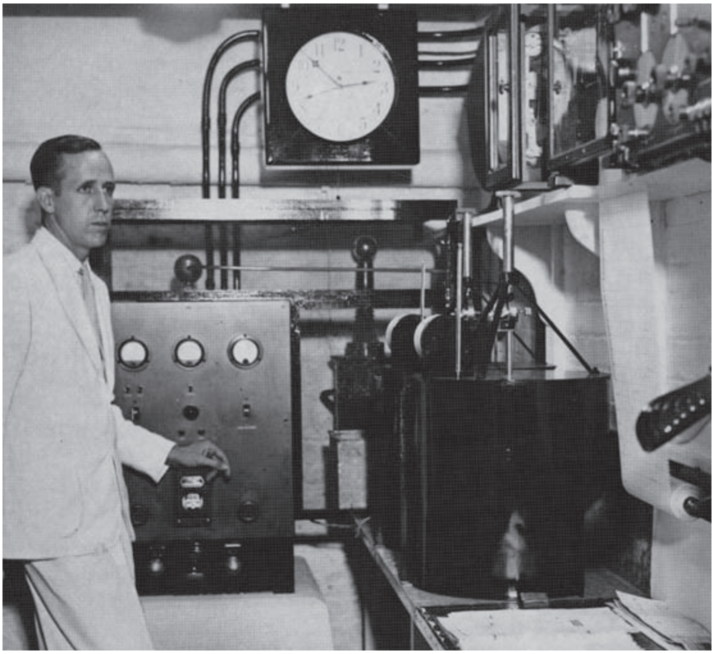

Figure 1.11. Thomas Townsend Brown in his underground gravito-electric monitoring station at his home in Zanesville, Ohio. (Photo courtesy of the Townsend Brown Family and Qualight, L.L.C., 1937)

Earth's magnetic field, and were highly penetrating. He eventually came to feel that they must be high-frequency gravitational waves.

Brown resumed his sidereal measurements in 1970 from an isolated site on Catalina, an island situated off the coast of Southern California. Around this time, he discovered a new correlated effect. He found that certain materials, including massive high-K ceramic dielectrics, certain kinds of resistors, complex silicates, and natural igneous rocks and clays, spontaneously generate DC electric potentials, with some materials producing as much as 0.7 volt. Moreover, he found that this generated DC potential varied from hour to hour and from day to day in much the same way as the resistance variations he had observed in the Naval Research Laboratory experiments.[17] In a paper about his findings, he commented:

> It has been found that certain basaltic and granitic rocks exhibit a self-potential which undergoes large cyclic variation not related to temperature, pressure, humidity or other local variables. Long-time monitoring has revealed periods of the year when the self-potential correlates consistently with sidereal time, reaching maximum and minimum values vectoring on the Galactic center (17h 43m RA). At other times, solar cycles predominate and [the] sidereal component disappears. Even so, a circadian pattern nearly always exists which cannot be correlated with ambient laboratory conditions. Hence, it is of interest not so much that a self-potential exists, but that it varies with a cosmic pattern.[18]

Brown's discovery that these variations were registered on two different kinds of detectors helped to support his hypothesis that the sidereal effect was due to an energy flux, as opposed to simply a potential gradient. Whatever it was, this phenomenon apparently had the ability to input electric energy into certain dielectric materials, substances that he named *petrovoltaics*. Because his measurements indicated that this flux could penetrate even to subterranean vaults, he concluded that it might be reasonably identified with high-frequency gravity wave radiation. He found that, in addition to their DC voltage, petrovoltaics also generate alternating current (AC) electric noise, spanning a broad radio frequency band. He theorized that this AC component may arise from cosmic gravity waves that constantly pass through the substance and impart some of their energy to it. He speculated that the rock might act as a rectifier, converting a portion of these energy fluctuations into DC potential.

If electric energy is spontaneously generated in petrovoltaics, it is reasonable to expect that they would also be evolving heat. In fact, in the 1920s, the American inventor and industrialist Charles Brush took measurements on petrovoltaics and demonstrated that they spontaneously gave off heat even though they were not radioactive.[19] He reported his findings in a *Physical Review* paper titled "Retardation of Gravitational Acceleration and the Spontaneous Evolution of Heat in Complex Silicates, Lavas, and Clays." His calorimetric results were subsequently confirmed by Dr. Elmer Harrington, of the National Bureau of Standards.[20] Probably because it was not well understood, the phenomenon received little attention from the scientific community. If such heat evolution indeed exists, it is reasonable to speculate that a substantial portion of the geothermal flux originating from the Earth's crust arises in this fashion.

In 1974, Brown set up his automated recording equipment at the Haleakala Observatory on Maui for high-altitude observations (10,000 feet), and in 1975 he moved his laboratory to an underground vault at the University of Hawaii in Honolulu. Later, he also took measurements at the bottom of a 300-foot mine shaft in Berkeley, California. His collection of measuring instruments now included a sidereal electrometer, a dielectric resistance sensor, a petrovoltaic self-potential detector, and a "K-wave" detector. All the instruments registered variations that showed sidereal correlations. In this way, he established that this sidereal phenomenon influenced electrogravitic coupling in a bidirectional fashion. It affected both the *electrogravitic* conversion of electrostatic potential into gravitational force and the *gravito-electric* conversion of gravitational wave energy into electric power.

Brown's K-wave detector could measure very small changes in a capacitor's dielectric constant, thereby monitoring small changes in the local electric permittivity of space—the ability of space to store electric charge. A capacitor's electric permittivity—ε—is equal to its dielectric constant K times ε_0, the electric permittivity of matter-free space, that is, $\varepsilon = K\varepsilon_0$. The K-wave detector registered changes believed to be caused by slight variations in ε_0. Brown felt that long-term changes in ε_0 could account for historical variations in the measured value of the speed of light.

The circuits Brown used for the K-wave detector and the dielectric resistance detector are shown in figure 1.12. Another version of his K-wave detector used a spent nickel-cadmium battery cell in place of a high-K capacitor. Figure 1.13 presents portions of a nine-day strip chart recording the voltage (in millivolts) spontaneously generated by a piece of Koolau basalt in August 1978.[21] The voltage varied cyclically with time of day and reached a maximum at times when the galactic center reached the zenith. He also found that detectors separated by distances of up to eighty kilometers occasionally registered concurrent events, or "bursts," indicating that they had been triggered by a common external source.[22]

1.6 ▪ THE PHILADELPHIA EXPERIMENT

Another interesting episode in Brown's career that should be mentioned, but for which documentation is very sparse and contradictory, concerns his work with the Navy on the Philadelphia Experiment. This was a highly classified research project reportedly conducted in the Philadelphia Navy Yard in October 1943 whose alleged objective was to render a naval vessel invisible both to radar and to the naked eye.

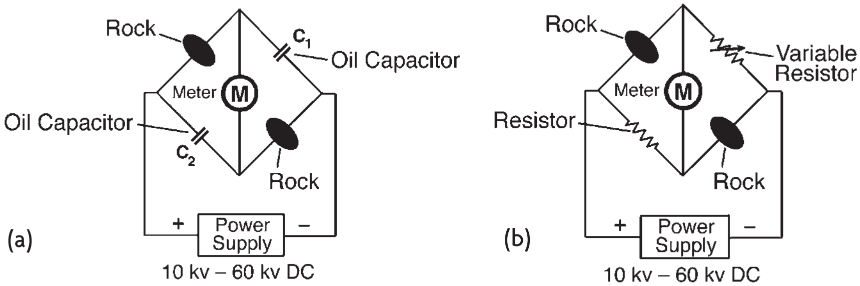

Figure 1.12. Bridge circuits that Brown used for his K-wave detector (a) and for his dielectric resistance detector (b). (Taken from entries in Thomas Townsend Brown's 1974 laboratory notebook)

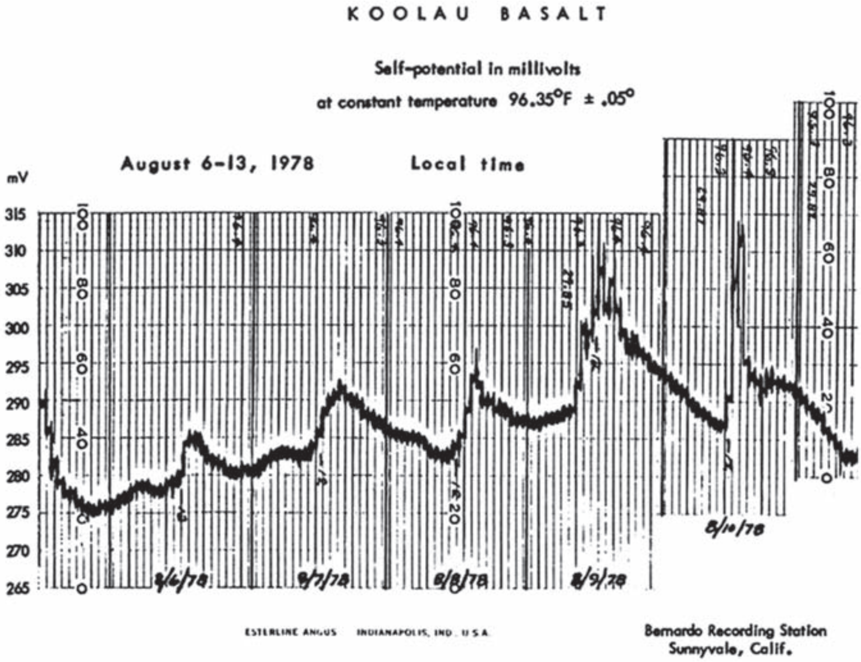

Figure 1.13. A portion of a nine-day strip chart recording of the voltage generated by a piece of Koolau basalt. Voltage maxima occur at times when the Galactic center reached its zenith. (Diagram courtesy of the Townsend Brown Family and Qualight, L.L.C.)

The list of scientists said to have worked on the project includes Albert Einstein, Vannevar Bush, John von Neumann, and Nikola Tesla. Before describing this further, it is worth reviewing what Brown was doing in the years leading up to the project.

Early in 1933, while working at the Naval Research Laboratory in Washington, D.C., Brown was given temporary leave to serve as a physicist on a geophysical expedition to the Caribbean sponsored by the Smithsonian Institute and financed by businessman Eldridge Johnson, cofounder of the Victor Talking Machine Company, which was the forerunner of RCA.[23] The Johnson-Smithsonian Expedition, which was conducted on board Johnson's immense yacht the *Caroline,* involved mapping the locations of underwater rifts.

However, there was much more to this expedition than just science. While on this cruise, Brown had the opportunity to meet Johnson and several of his associates, who included his wealthy business partner Leon Douglass and the British master spy William S. Stephenson, who, years later during World War II, earned the title "the man called Intrepid." In his Internet-published biography about Brown, Paul Schatzkin states that he learned from one of Brown's former close acquaintances that Johnson and Douglass were members of Stephenson's international intelligence network and that while on board the *Caroline,* Brown himself became recruited into its ranks.[24] Schatzkin dubbed this network the Caroline Group and said that it was to play a significant role in the course of Brown's life. Much of Schatzkin's inside information came from an individual he code-named Morgan, who at that time held a high-ranking position in one of the U.S. intelligence agencies and in earlier years had worked closely with Brown.

In the years that followed, Brown held a number of jobs. One particularly worth mentioning is his assignment in 1938 to serve as an assistant engineering officer on the maiden voyage of the USS *Nashville*. On its return trip from Europe, this ship ferried across the Atlantic $50 million in gold bullion that was being transferred from the Bank of England to the Chase Manhattan Bank in New York. While Brown was on that voyage, an electrogravitic research laboratory was established for him at the University of Pennsylvania. Schatzkin wrote that Johnson was involved in the construction of this laboratory, whose operation was funded from part of the money that the *Nashville* was transferring.[25]

In 1939, Brown left the University of Pennsylvania to work as a material and process engineer with the Glenn Martin Company in Baltimore, an early forerunner of the Lockheed Martin aerospace corporation. Shortly afterward, in 1940, the Navy called on him to head up a "mine sweeping research and development project" under the Bureau of Ships in Washington, D.C. William Moore wrote that Brown directed a staff of fifteen Ph.D.'s and was allotted a research budget of nearly $50 million for the project.[26] One might suspect that the funding money came from the very same stash that had been transferred to the Chase Manhattan two years earlier. This was a significant sum of money, about 5 percent of the U.S. Navy's 1940 budget! We are left to speculate whether the Caroline Group was somehow involved.

Whatever the case, this project must have been very important, and one wonders whether it was dealing with just “mine sweeping.”

Following the attack on Pearl Harbor and the beginning of America’s direct involvement in World War II, Brown was assigned to the Naval Operating Base in Norfolk, Virginia, as officer in charge of the Atlantic Fleet Radar Materiel School and Gyro-Compass School. In the summer of 1942, he was assigned to return to Philadelphia to disassemble the scientific equipment kept at his laboratory at the University of Pennsylvania and ship it to Norfolk. He continued his work there, at the Atlantic Fleet Radar School, until retiring from the Navy near the end of 1943.

From a brief entry Brown made in one of his autobiographies, we find that after his assignment to the Bureau of Ships in Washington, D.C., and before his assignment to the Atlantic Fleet Radar School, he was assigned to the Philadelphia Navy Yard as an assistant machinery superintendent for “outfitting new ships.” In the autobiography, Brown wrote:

> My activities during the war were largely as follows:
>
> 1. Acoustic and Magnetic Mine Sweeping (Officer-in-Charge) Bureau of Ships, Washington, D.C.
> 2. Assistant Machinery Superintendent (outfitting new ships) Philadelphia Navy Yard
> 3. Naval Research Laboratory–Radar Refresher
> 4. Atlantic Fleet Radar School (Commanding Officer) Naval Operating Base, Norfolk, VA. Advanced teaching and writing of textbooks, Officer and Librarian.[27]

Curiously, the navy yard assignment as well as his “radar refresher” assignment at the Naval Research Laboratory in Washington are omitted in other biographies of Brown. His autobiography does not give dates for these assignments. However, his biography in *Who’s Who in American Science* lists him as finishing his work at the Bureau of Ships in 1941.[28] Also, Moore’s article lists Brown as beginning his work at the radar school shortly after the December 1941 bombing of Pearl Harbor, hence in 1942.[29] His assignment to the Philadelphia Navy Yard, then, would likely have been sometime during 1941. This would have placed him in the very location where the USS *Eldridge* DE 173 destroyer escort is said to have been outfitted in preparation for the Philadelphia Experiment and where the invisibility experiment was alleged to have been conducted in October 1943. Considering Brown's technical caliber as a research scientist, without further information one is left to wonder whether the nautical machinery that he was in charge of outfitting at the Philadelphia Navy Yard might have been equipment for a research experiment to be conducted aboard a ship, lending credence to claims that he had worked on the Philadelphia Experiment.

Later in his life, Brown was privately asked by family friend and business associate Josh Reynolds about his involvement in the Philadelphia Experiment. Brown answered that he "was not permitted to talk about that part of his work"; however, he did comment that "much of what has been written about the project is grossly exaggerated."[30] Here, he was probably referring to claims some have made that the ship had been made to travel through time or that it had teleported itself to Norfolk Harbor, where it was alleged to have reappeared for a few minutes before disappearing and reappearing once again in the Philadelphia Navy Yard. Yet the fact that he did not flatly deny his involvement in the project leads one to suspect that the rumors of his involvement are true.

Moore, coauthor of the book *The Philadelphia Experiment,* once asked Brown to edit a rough draft of an article he was writing on Brown's life. Moore had planted a paragraph describing a series of experiments, sponsored by the Navy, that were based on the effects and equipment later associated with the Philadelphia Experiment. He had done this intentionally to see Brown's reaction. Although Brown made other corrections and notes for changes to the manuscript, he allowed the entire test paragraph on the Philadelphia Experiment to remain intact. Thus, we are left to conjecture that tales of the existence of this project may be true and that Brown had somehow been involved in this project, although what his involvement was is open to speculation.

In their book *The Philadelphia Experiment,* Moore and Charles Berlitz cite letters attributed to a former sailor, Carlos Allende (a.k.a. Carl Allen), that suggest that the USS *Eldridge* was made invisible on

October 28, 1943, when it enveloped itself in a very strong magnetic field.[31] They said a large amount of electric power from onboard generators was used to resonantly excite large degaussing coils that were wrapped around the inside of the ship's steel hull. The resonant excitation would have set up a pulsating magnetic field, turning the ship into a giant electromagnet. This intense field was said to make the ship invisible both to radar and by sight!

According to Allende, the crew of the ship experienced physical and mental side effects so horrendous that the project was immediately terminated. He alleged that most of the crew were found to be violently sick after the field had been shut off, some were missing, and some had gone crazy. Most unusual, five men were found fused to the metal of the ship's structure, some crew members being stuck in steel bulkheads, others within the ship's deck, and another with the ship's railing stuck through his body. Allende also claimed that for a period of time, ranging from minutes to, in some cases, months, men would spontaneously become invisible and unable to move, speak, or interact with other people. Such people were said to have become “caught in the Flow” or “stuck in a freeze.” Depending on the duration of the mishap, recovered victims were said to be left with symptoms ranging from psychological trauma to insanity. Allende maintained that those who lived were discharged from the Navy as “mentally unfit” for duty regardless of their condition.

Although it is difficult to sort out fact from fiction when trying to understand what had been done in the Philadelphia Experiment, laboratory research has shown that a metal object can be made radar invisible by high-intensity magnetic fields. At the 1994 Tesla Symposium in Colorado Springs, K. Corum, J. Corum, and J. Daum described an experiment in which they wound a high-amperage coil around a 2-inch-thick, 14-inch-diameter steel torus.[32] They found that when the coil was electrified with a sudden surge of current of several thousand amps or more discharged from a large high-voltage capacitor, the high-gauss magnetic field produced around the torus caused a fivefold reduction in radar reflection from the steel core. Some term this the Corum-Daum effect. The production of optical invisibility, however, has yet to be reported by scientists working outside of the classified world.

Electromagnetic wave experiments conducted by the independent researcher John Hutchison lend some credibility to the report that sailors had been found fused with the vessel's metal structure. Beginning in 1979, Hutchison experimented with high-voltage, high-frequency longitudinal wave emissions similar to those Tesla was producing. Employing a Van de Graaff generator and two or more Tesla coils, he was able to create wave interference zones in which a number of strange phenomena were observed. These included the fusion of dissimilar materials such as wood and metal, cold liquefaction or fragmentation of metal, invisibility, and levitation. Examples of metal splitting and fusion of dissimilar materials are shown in figures 1.14 and 1.15. In the fusion phenomenon, the substances do not dissociate; they retain their individual compositions. A piece of wood, for example, could sink into a metal bar with neither the wood nor the bar coming apart.

Interestingly, Brown's work on magnetic minesweeping would have made him a prime candidate for work on this version of the Philadelphia Experiment. In his autobiography, he describes how he had developed a new technique for blowing up magnetic mines—submerged explosive devices that are triggered when a steel-hulled vessel passes over them. A detector in a mine senses the temporary alteration in the Earth's mag-

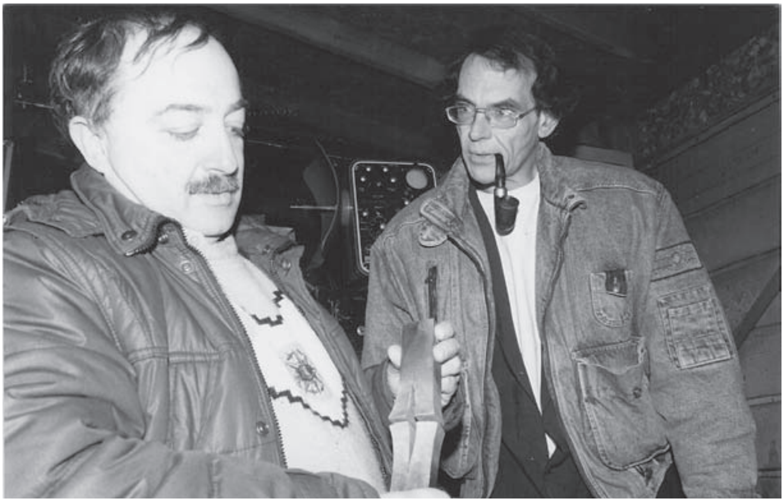

Figure 1.14. Professor Panos Pappas (left) holding a 2-inch-wide brass bar that was split by the Hutchison Effect. John Hutchison is shown standing to the right. (Photo courtesy of P. Pappas)

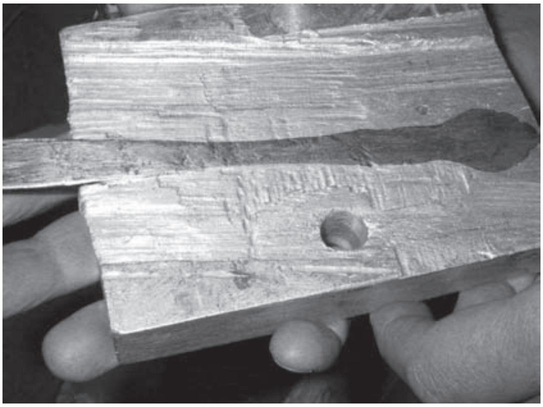

Figure 1.15. A stainless-steel butter knife incorporated into a block of aluminum by the Hutchison Effect. (Photo courtesy of J. Hutchison)

netic field intensity produced by the steel hull and detonates the mine's explosive. Brown had devised a method of exploding these mines by floating a loop of degaussing cable on the water's surface and passing 300 amperes of current through it, producing a magnetic field that triggered the mines to explode. The cable, which typically measured 3.5 inches in diameter, could easily carry a current of several hundred thousand amperes or more. Such a cable would have been ideal to generate an extremely high-intensity magnetic field around a ship. If so, Brown's work in Washington at the Bureau of Ships and later at the Philadelphia Navy Yard may have involved more than just research on magnetic minesweeping. The $50 million research project he was heading, which involved a team of fifteen Ph.D.'s and reportedly had occasional input from Einstein himself, was most likely directly connected with the fabled Philadelphia Experiment.

Another, very different, account of the story, presented by Gerry Vassilatos in his book *Lost Science,* claims that the cloaking effect was instead brought about by enveloping the ship in a very intense pulsing electrostatic field and makes no mention of magnetic fields.[33] Vassilatos's account is not as documented as Moore's, as he gives no indication of what sources he used for the rather detailed information he gives. One is left with the impression that portions of his story have been improvised. Vassilatos writes that the invisibility effect was first serendipitously noticed at a classified military arc-welding facility that had developed a new spot-welding technique for fabricating very durable armor-plated vessel hulls. The process employed a very intense, high-amperage discharge supplied from an immense bank of high-voltage capacitors. When the titanic, lightning-like discharge was applied to the hull, the resulting shock wave reportedly rocked the entire welding facility. Vassilatos writes that during the discharge, an optical blackout region was seen around the arc, and tools left in the vicinity of the discharge were displaced or found to have vanished. Scientists from the Naval Research Laboratory who were called in to investigate determined that the blackout was not a neural retinal bleaching phenomenon and that the tool disappearance was not due to thermal vaporization. Something far more exotic was going on. They eventually concluded that the momentary buildup of high electric field potentials in the vicinity of the arc in some unexplained manner induced a state of invisibility and even caused local dematerialization of objects. The project was code-named Project Rainbow, and Vassilatos says that at one point Brown was brought in to consult on the project.

Vassilatos writes that after conducting a series of further experiments, researchers devised an experiment that attempted to render an armored tank invisible. Capacitors of very large capacitance were arranged in a ring, and the tank was placed at the ring's center. The capacitors were oriented so that their plates were parallel to the circle's circumference, that is, with their polarization axes directed toward the circle's center. They were synchronously energized with high-voltage, high-amperage pulses conducted in phase along a spokelike array of cables extending from the center of the ring out to each capacitor. In this way, the capacitors acting together were able to build up a very high electric field potential, presumably with a negative potential in the ring's interior. Tesla had done years of research with high-voltage shock discharges, which could explain why he was allegedly called in to consult on the project.

According to Vassilatos, as a next step they scaled up the cloaking experiment to attempt to make an entire ship invisible. He says that they sought to control the effect by adjusting the electric field's intensity to a moderate level so that a state of invisibility might be produced without inducing complete dematerialization. He claims that Brown bowed out of the project prior to the test on the *Eldridge,* which reportedly ended in tragedy.

While the Navy claims that the story of the Philadelphia Experiment is entirely myth, Brown's hesitation to speak about the subject suggests that something very important and highly classified was going on in Philadelphia during his wartime service. One's suspicions are piqued about the significance of the whole affair because of the tremendous amount of disinformation that has apparently been circulated to purposefully cause confusion. Conflicts emerge even in Brown's own biographical records spanning this period. It is as if these years of Brown's life are shroudeded in a blurry haze. Conflicting accounts give the impression of there being two Townsend Browns, one account placing him at the naval base in Norfolk, Virginia, during 1942 and 1943, the other account having him working at Lockheed Vega Aircraft in Burbank, California, during this same period. This duplicity leaves us asking whether it had been Brown and not the *Eldridge* that had been teleported in space and time during that mysterious 1943 experiment.

According to the version that Moore published in 1978, Brown retired from the Navy in December 1943 after having suffered a nervous collapse.[34] He says that Brown subsequently took six months off to recover at his home following the recommendation of a team of naval physicians.

He began employment in June 1944 at the Advanced Projects Unit of Lockheed Vega Aircraft in Burbank. This was the forerunner of Lockheed's modern Skunk Works. We are led to believe that Moore's account should be accurate, because prior to its publication he gave Brown the opportunity to check over the draft of his article to make any necessary corrections. The Lockheed Vega employment date that Moore gives is consistent with that listed in the *Who's Who* biography published after Brown's death, which states that Brown was employed at Lockheed Vega as a radar consultant from 1944 to 1945.[35]

A. L. Kitselman, a mathematician who worked at this Lockheed facility, met Brown there and became his longtime friend. In an essay he wrote in 1962, Kitselman describes Brown as "a quiet, modest, retiring man—exactly the sort one expects to find in important research installations. He was a brilliant solver of engineering problems, and I soon found that he was more familiar with fundamental physical laws than anyone I had met. So many of us are strictly textbook scientists that it is stimulating to find someone who has first-hand knowledge."[36]

In this essay, Kitselman comments that Brown had previously suffered a collapse after working too long and too hard at the Norfolk radar school, was subsequently retired from the Navy, and then, after a six-month rest at home, came to work at Lockheed Vega. Hence Kitselman's account corroborates portions of Moore's story.

According to this timeline, Brown would have been working for the Navy during the critical period when the Philadelphia Experiment was conducted and would have had his nervous collapse around the time of the disastrous failure of this invisibility experiment. In fact, in their book *The Philadelphia Experiment,* Moore and Berlitz quote Riley Crabb, founder of Borderland Sciences Research Foundation, as saying that the cause of Brown's breakdown was directly related to the Philadelphia Experiment. Crabb noted that if such a disaster had happened to the crew of the ship, it is not too difficult to imagine the mental pressures that those in charge would have experienced.

Schatzkin has come to entirely different conclusions about Brown's whereabouts during this key period. At Morgan's suggestion, he obtained from the Navy a copy of Brown's resignation letter, which is dated September 30, 1942, and which states, "I herewith submit my resignation from the Navy for the good of the naval service in order to escape trial by General Court Martial."[37] If we are to believe this date, this was to have occurred just two months after Brown had shipped his equipment from the University of Pennsylvania to Norfolk.

Schatzkin also obtained an official copy of Brown's Navy fitness report dated October 5, 1942. Describing this report, he wrote:

> The final fitness report is almost completely blank. Instead of the usual details, the page is struck through with a single pen-stroke, above which is hand-written "See remarks." And on the second page, in the "remarks" section that in previous reports had displayed so many glowing assessments of Lieutenant Brown's character and service, Captain Hinkamp writes, "In view of the circumstances under which this officer was detached, I desire to make no comment."[38]

We know something is amiss in the Navy's records because they contain no reference to Brown's assignment in 1942 to the Atlantic Fleet radar schools in Norfolk. However, trusting that the naval records or Brown's discharge papers had not been altered by covert operatives in the interest of protecting any top-secret naval research projects from exposure, Schatzkin accepted October 5, 1942, as the date of Brown's detachment. He then suggested that within two weeks of the date Brown left the Navy, he began working at Lockheed Vega. Schatzkin proposed that Brown had neither a nervous collapse following his discharge nor a subsequent six-month recuperation period. Schatzkin's version of Brown's history then conflicts with both that given by Moore and that given by Kitselman, both of whose accounts he maintains are seriously flawed. The suggestion that Kitselman's account might be flawed, however, comes as somewhat of a surprise, seeing as he was one of Brown's close friends. In writing his essay, he should have had easy access to input from Brown as well as an interest to ensure that he got his facts straight about Brown's departure from the Navy. Also, Brown himself had checked over Moore's story prior to its publication, so if there was such a major error as the date and circumstances of his departure from the Navy, why did Brown not catch it? Considering that there is no record of Brown having expressed any doubts about the accuracy of Moore's or Kitselman's account, one is surprised by the allegation that they were in error.

Furthermore, there is the inconsistency of the date when Brown began working at Lockheed Vega. Schatzkin places his arrival at the end of October 1942, while Moore states the arrival date was more than one and a half years later, in June 1944—a start date that is also corroborated by the account given in the *Who's Who* biography. So which version is correct, the revised timeline based on Navy records or the preexisting biographic timeline that was developed with Brown's full knowledge? Unfortunately, Brown is no longer around to comment, having passed away in 1985.

To support his argument for Brown's early departure, Schatzkin cites a Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI) report that claims to have been filed in March 1943. This report states that by that date, Brown had resigned from the Navy and returned to his home in Los Angeles, as told by an anonymous informant (name blacked out). But should this anonymous informant be relied upon? Schatzkin himself admits that much of the information the report provides about Brown is inaccurate and contradictory. The filing date given on the report appears to be among the fabrications. The report states, “He [Brown] had his own laboratory and had purchased equipment from his own funds for use in his experimental work, and this equipment was taken by Subject when he was detached from the Fleet Service School.” This equipment included gravito-electric sensor equipment, which was among the apparatus that had earlier been transported from Brown’s University of Pennsylvania laboratory to Norfolk. According to Schatzkin’s revised timeline, this equipment would have then been transported from Norfolk to Los Angeles around October 1942, when he claims that Brown was discharged.

However, the revised timeline does not jibe well with Brown’s account of the dates and locations at which he was conducting gravito-electric measurements. In his March 1975 paper titled “Anomalous Diurnal and Secular Variations in the Self-Potential of Certain Rocks,” Brown discusses dates and locations at which he conducted gravito-electric measurements, mentioning his work at the Naval Research Laboratory (1931–1933) and his research at the University of Pennsylvania (1939). Then he writes, “The investigation was interrupted by World War II but was resumed in 1944 in California by the Townsend Brown Foundation (an Ohio non-profit corporation) and was carried forward in two locations in especially constructed shielded rooms at constant temperature.”[39]

If we accept the traditional timeline in which Brown is discharged from the Navy in December 1943 and transports his equipment to California around that same time, then his stated 1944 date for resuming his gravito-electric measurements in California makes sense. This implies that he wasted no time in setting up his equipment to start collecting data once again. On the other hand, if we accept the Navy-FBI timeline that has Brown being discharged in October 1942, we would have to conclude that he shipped his equipment to California at the end of 1942 and left it sitting boxed up for more than a year before setting it up. However, it seems unlikely that Brown would have tolerated having his detectors “off the air” for such a long time period. Could it be that the FBI report was actually filed in 1944 and its date was at some later point changed to 1943 in an effort to rewrite Brown's official history?

To support his 1942 date for Brown's Navy discharge, Schatzkin refers to a bound laboratory notebook that he believes Brown had used while at Lockheed Vega.[40] The ledger's notes are written in Brown's handwriting and contain occasional dates that also appear in Brown's handwriting, the oldest date near the beginning of the book being December 1, 1942, and the most recent date near the end of the book being May 2, 1944. The notebook's cover page is neatly hand printed and reads:*

T. T. Brown
Vega Aircraft Corp.
Burbank, Calif.
NOTES

We are left to consider the possibility that the notebook contains lecture notes that Brown began writing while teaching at the Atlantic Fleet schools in Norfolk. The last dated entry in the notebook would have been made after Brown had left the Navy and had moved to California, prior to going to work at Lockheed. He may have labeled the notebook as "Vega Aircraft Corp." because he wanted his notes with him at his new job, or he may have purposely mislabeled the notebook in this way so that naval intelligence would not squirrel it away in some classified storage room.

If we instead accept that Brown actually wrote these notes while he was at Lockheed Vega and that he began working there as early as October 1942, then we are confronted with the inconsistency of this date with those given in Brown's autobiographies and with the question of why his gravito-electric sensor equipment would supposedly have been stored unused for more than a year. Also, with this early-departure scenario, it is difficult to understand why Brown wished to resign from the Navy at the height of World War II, just nine months after Japan had bombed Pearl Harbor and at a time when his Navy career looked so promising. According to the FBI report, Brown was "reported to know more about Radar detection than any individual in the U.S. Navy." So why would the Navy let him go at such a crucial time of need? If, on the other hand, Brown's decision to leave the Navy arose as a result of a nervous breakdown brought about by the great weight of guilt he felt from being associated with a project that had suffered an immensely tragic outcome, as Moore and Vassilatos suggest, then his departure at the later date of December 1943 becomes more understandable. The Navy administrators who had knowledge of this classified project and who themselves shared the guilt of its outcome would have sympathized with Brown's wish for departure and released him from service, even knowing how indispensable he was.

---

*Information from photocopied sample pages sent to me courtesy of Paul Schatzkin. Being hand printed, it is more difficult to tell whether the cover page is also in Brown's handwriting; however, members of his family affirm that it is.

According to Schatzkin, "Starting in the fall of 1942 there is virtually no documentation available that might shed some light on just what Brown was doing during those crucial years."[41] He notes that the Brown family files are devoid of any correspondence or documentation from roughly that time until the end of World War II and that they have very little information about his activities at Lockheed Vega.

So considering the absence of information from both the Navy records and the Brown family files, we are left only to speculate. Had some military intelligence organization gone out of its way to ensure that any record of Brown's activities during this period was either erased or classified to keep a tight cover on Brown's wartime research activities? Despite its official denial, did the Navy conduct a highly secret project on ship invisibility and was Brown involved in it? Perhaps the adage "Where there's smoke, there's fire" applies here. One suspects that something very strange and clandestine was under way in the Philadelphia–D.C.–Norfolk area during the 1942 to 1943 time period.

In July 1946, the *Eldridge* was decommissioned and placed in the Reserve Fleet. In 1951, the United States transferred her to the Greek navy, in which she served as the HS *Leon* until the 1990s. One Greek engineering professor related that he formerly served on the *Leon* as a naval officer specializing in electrical engineering.[42] While on board, he noted several odd things about the ship. One was that he saw numerous remnants on the inside of its hull of heavy-duty cables that once ran along the length of the ship. These were in the form of insulated metal bars measuring 10 to 15 centimeters in width that had been cut in between their points of attachment to the hull. Other large-diameter cables were also present fully intact that were presumably part of the electric wiring for the ship's propulsion system. The *Eldridge* was a Cannon class electric drive ship, meaning that instead of having a shaft running from its engine directly to its propeller, as most ships do, it had a diesel-powered electrical generator whose power was conveyed through heavy-duty cables to a huge electric motor at the ship's stern that drove the propeller. The *Eldridge*'s ability to produce large amounts of electric power with an onboard generator would have made it ideal to use in conducting the Philadelphia Experiment.

The other unusual thing that the professor noted was that one room adjacent to the ship's hull was barred from access, its hatch having been welded shut. The commanding officer had instructed the ship's crew that it was forbidden for anyone to try to enter the sealed room. What this forbidden zone hid will perhaps never be known, for the ship was decommissioned and sold as scrap sometime after 1992.

2

BEYOND ROCKET PROPULSION

2.1 BROWN’S ELECTRIFIED FLYING DISCS

During the years following World War II, Brown continued to improve his gravitator device in his spare time, financing his efforts through the Townsend Brown Foundation. By 1950 he had built a test apparatus to demonstrate the electrogravitic propulsion concept in a pair of disc airfoils. He set a 6-foot-long horizontal beam on a pivot so that it could rotate about its midpoint, and from each end of the beam he suspended two lightweight saucer discs by means of 7-foot-long tethers (figure

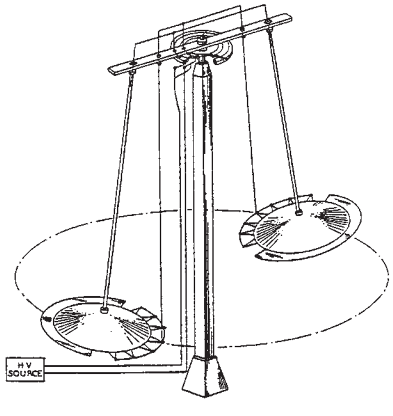

Figure 2.1. Thomas Townsend Brown’s flying disc setup.

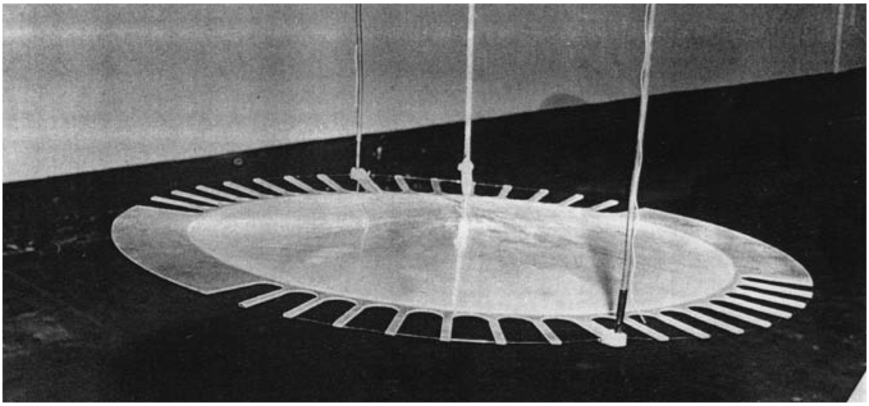

Figure 2.2. Thomas Townsend Brown's 2-foot-diameter experimental disc airfoil. (From Project Winterhaven, plate 1; photo courtesy of the Townsend Brown Family and Qualight, L.L.C.)

2.1). When the saucers were in flight, rotating tethers extended sideways and expanded the diameter of the flight course to as much as 20 feet. In one version, each disc was made of two curved aluminum shells, measuring 1.5 feet in diameter, fixed on either side of a 2-foot-diameter Plexiglas sheet (figure 2.2).[1] High-voltage power of up to 50,000 volts was supplied through feed wires to positively charge a fine outboard wire running along each disc's leading edge and to negatively charge the aluminum disc body. When electrified with approximately 50 watts of this high-tension power, the discs traveled around their 20-foot-diameter course at speeds of up to twelve miles per hour.[2,3]

The wire electrodes ionized the surrounding air, forming a cloud of positive ions around the leading wire and a cloud of negative ions around the disc body. Although ions would continuously leave these clouds as a result of being attracted to the oppositely charged electrodes, the electrodes would resupply ions at a sufficiently fast rate so as to maintain a positive-ion space charge at the front of the disc and a negative-ion space charge on the disc body (see figure 2.3).

As to how the disc generates its propulsive force, two possibilities present themselves. One is that the ion clouds it emits produce electrostatic fields that act on charges attached to the disc's leading-edge wire and to its main body, producing a net forward thrust. The other possibility is that an electrogravitic thrust may be present whereby the

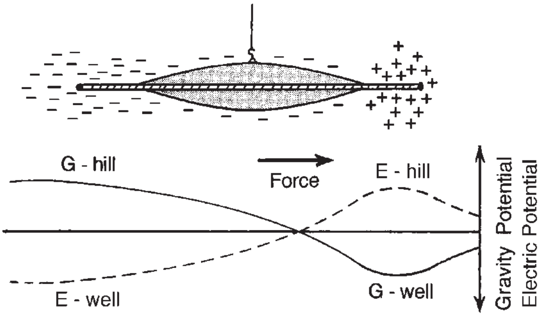

Figure 2.3. A side view of one of Thomas Townsend Brown's flying discs, as normally energized, showing the location of its ion-space charges and induced gravity field gradient. (P. LaViolette, © 1994)

positive- and negative-ion clouds would create, respectively, a gravity potential well and a gravity potential hill in their vicinity. As new positive charges are continuously added to the cloud, they replace charges that leave the cloud through attraction to the disc's negative pole. As a result, the cloud will maintain a moderately deep gravity well at its bow through a kind of dynamic equilibrium. The same will hold for the disc's rearward negative charges. Despite the mobility of the individual negative ions, the negative-ion cloud as a whole will persist and create a net gravity hill. Consequently, the gravity potential gradient established across the disc's body between this hill and the well propells the disc forward in the direction of its positive-ion cloud.

By accumulating charges in the air in the form of fore and aft ion clouds, large quantities of charge may build up, comparable to the quantity of charge on the plates of a high-K dielectric capacitor. But because these charges are freshly created, there is little time for them to polarize the ambient air. Furthermore, due to the disc's forward motion, the air dielectric around the disc is continuously replaced by new, unpolarized air, and this also contributes to maintaining the air dielectric in a relatively unpolarized state. Consequently, the electric and gravity potential fields are able to extend between the oppositely charged fore and aft clouds unopposed by any electric dipole moment in the intervening air. Hence a substantial gravity field gradient could span the disc and exert a maximal forward thrust.

As the disc moves forward, its associated positive- and negative-ion clouds also move forward, transporting their generated electrostatic and gravity field gradients along with them. Consequently, each disc rides its advancing wave much like a surfer riding an ocean wave. Dr. Mason Rose, one of Townsend's colleagues, describes the disc's gravitic principle of operation:

> The saucers made by Brown have no propellers, no jets, no moving parts at all. They create a modification of the gravitational field around themselves, which is analogous to putting them on the incline of a hill. They act like a surfboard on a wave. . . . The electro-gravitational saucer creates its own "hill," which is a local distortion of the gravitational field, then it takes this "hill" with it in any chosen direction and at any rate.[4]

A full-scale version of Brown's vehicle was thought to be able to accelerate to thousands of miles per hour, change direction, or stop merely by altering the intensity, polarity, and direction of its electric charge. Because the wavelike distortion of the local gravitational field would pull with an equal force on all particles of matter, the ship, its occupants, and its load would all respond equally to these maneuvers. The occupants would feel no stress at all, no matter how sharp the turn or how great the acceleration. A turbo-jet airplane, by comparison, must produce a twentyfold increase in thrust just to attain a twofold gain in speed. Whereas jets and rockets attempt to combat the force of gravity through the application of opposed brute force, electrogravitics instead attempts to directly control gravity so that this longtime adversary is made to work for the craft rather than against it.

Partly with the help of his friend Kitselman, who was then teaching calculus in Pearl Harbor, Brown's discs came to the attention of Admiral Arthur Radford, commander in chief of the U.S. Pacific Fleet at the Pearl Harbor Navy Yard. In 1950, Brown was hired as a consulting physicist to stage a demonstration. Nothing immediately came of this. However, two years later, on March 21, 1952, Brown was visited at his Los Angeles laboratory by Vic Bertrandias, a well-connected Air Force major general. He dropped in unexpectedly, just when Brown was about to demonstrate his flying discs to a group of colleagues. Once there, Bertrandias demanded that he be included in the demonstration. Having formerly served as vice president of Douglas Aircraft, he was well informed on the state of the art in aviation technology and knew that Brown's discs could have important military applications. Shaken by what he saw, Bertrandias urgently telephoned Lieutenant General H. A. Craig the following morning to voice his concerns. An excerpt from a declassified transcript of their conversation reads as follows:

> Bertrandias: the thing frightened me—for the fact that it is being held or conducted by a private group. I was in there from about 1:30 until 5:00 in the afternoon and I saw these two models that fly and the thing has such a terrific impact that I thought we ought to find out something about it—who the people are and whether the thing is legitimate . . . if it ever gets away, I say it is in the stage in which the atomic development was in the early days.
>
> Craig: I see.
>
> Bertrandias: It was quite frightening. I made the inquiry whether the Air Force or the Navy knew anything about it and I was told—no. But I tell you, after hearing it and all the other things that I had heard, I was quite concerned about it. . . . I am of the opinion that if all I heard the other day—if it ever comes true, and somebody occupies space with that instrument, it is a bad deal for somebody.
>
> Craig: Well, we will look into it, Vic.

Craig subsequently initiated a background check on the Townsend Brown Foundation.

Bertrandias was also a close friend of General Albert Boyd, director of Air Force Systems Command at Wright Air Development Center. It was under Boyd that Air Force Systems Command carried out most of its early, super-secret research projects on antigravity propulsion.[5] Brown's work may have been encroaching into an area in which the Air Force had established a substantial lead.

Perhaps Brown sensed Bertrandias's fearful reaction and was concerned that he might initiate formal military classification of Brown's electrogravitic work, for just two weeks after Bertrandias's visit, Brown and his two associates, Mason Rose and Bradford Shank, held a press conference to publicize the fantastic possibilities of this electrogravitic propulsion technology. In this way, they got the word out before things got too hushed up. Reporters from the *Los Angeles Times* were invited to view Brown's flying discs in operation and had a chance to read a paper prepared by Rose that explained the Biefeld-Brown antigravity effect and how it could be used to propel a full-scale antigravity spacecraft. The next day the *Times* carried a story about Brown's discs and how flying saucers (also popularly known as UFOs, short for "unidentified or unconventional flying objects") might function on a similar principle.[6] It quoted Rose as saying that details about Brown's work had been given to some Navy admirals and that there was military interest, although no censorship had yet been imposed. Like the Air Force, the Navy had an active interest in advanced aviation technology.

About two months after the L.A. press conference, in June 1952, the Office of Naval Research (ONR) sent Will Cady to investigate a number of Brown's inventions, including his flying discs. The ONR data indicate that Cady witnessed a pair of 1.5-foot-diameter discs achieve a top speed of three miles per hour with a propulsion efficiency of 1.5 percent while drawing 15 watts of power at 47 kilovolts.[7] This was about one-fourth the speed and efficiency obtained with the 2-foot-diameter model. Did Brown stage this more modest performance with the intention to reveal just enough to get the military interested but not enough to make the demonstration so astounding that they might demand classification of his work? One alternative suggested by Paul Schatzkin is that there had been a security breach during Brown's Pearl Harbor demonstration and that Brown had been asked to purposely downplay the performance of his device in order to mislead foreign intelligence agents into thinking that his invention was not worth pursuing.[8]

Presumably, Cady was unable to see the discs perform at higher voltages because of the limitations of the power supply that Brown chose for the occasion. That is, the ONR data indicate that the output voltage progressively leveled off to 47 kilovolts as the control panel voltage dial was turned up to increasingly higher settings. This indicates that the 0.7 milliamp that the test rig was drawing was more current than the high-voltage power supply was designed to provide.* For his own research,

---

*The power supply's upper-limit current would be determined by the impedance of the secondary winding of its high-voltage transformer.

Brown probably used a transformer that had a slightly higher current rating, perhaps 2 milliamps. Cady conducted a test in which he removed one of the saucers from its carousel and suspended it from the ceiling to measure its static propelling thrust at various applied voltages. At 47 kilovolts, he observed that the discs delivered only 8 grams of thrust.

Cady concluded that the technology was impractical for aviation because the discs were propelled with an efficiency over an order of magnitude less than the efficiency of a jet engine. He had failed to realize that the trends in his own data showed that the speed and propulsion efficiency of the discs increased exponentially with increasing voltage and that he had been observing their behavior in a very unfavorable voltage range. A logarithmic plot of the ONR data (see figure 2.4) reveals that above 38 kilovolts, the velocity of the discs increased according to the 5.5 power of voltage and that their propulsion efficiency increased according to the 4.5 power of voltage.[9] These projections may be somewhat optimistic, as most of Brown's writings state that thrust increases according to the second or third power of voltage. Nevertheless, enormous speeds and efficiencies would undoubtedly have been attained at higher voltages.

Cady maintained that it was unnecessary to introduce exotic ideas such as electrically induced gravity fields because the behavior of the discs could be explained entirely in terms of the conventional ion-wind effect. That is, he believed that the discs obtained their thrust because ionized particles impacting the disc electrodes imparted more of their momentum in the forward direction than the reverse direction. On the contrary, although ion-wind forces would have been present, such forces would have been too small to account for the thrust. Furthermore, vacuum chamber tests that Brown later carried out on electrostatically charged rotors and saucers showed that thrust persisted even in the absence of ion discharge.

Cady also suggested that the discs may have been propelled forward by unbalanced electrostatic forces operating between the discharged ions and the disc that was discharging them. This is a more likely possibility than ion wind. For example, positive ions emitted by the leading wire electrode would move toward the negatively charged disc body, setting up a positive-ion space charge behind the wire and ahead of the

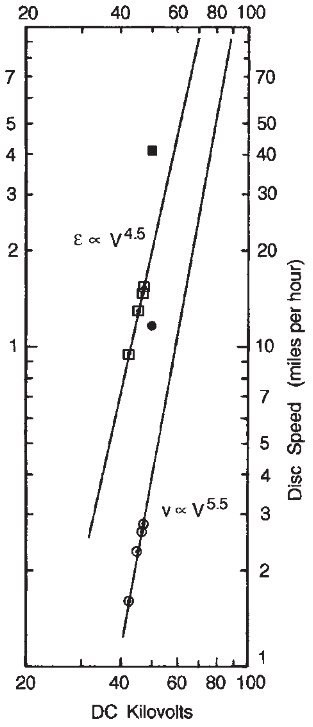

Figure 2.4. A logarithmic plot showing how the velocity (right line) and efficiency (left line) of Thomas Townsend Brown's electrogravitic discs increased with voltage. Empty squares and circles indicate the ONR measurements of the 1.5-foot-diameter discs, while solid squares and circles indicate the performance of an improved 2-foot-diameter model. (P. LaViolette, © 1997)

disc (see figure 2.3). These charges would repel forward the positively charged wire and attract forward the negatively charged disc body. As the saucer's speed increases, the airflow would assist in displacing the positive ions behind the wire, thereby improving the forward propulsive force. Also, the positive-ion wind and the airflow passing the disc would blow the negative ions toward the rear of the disc, and as a result, their space charge would electrostatically repel forward the negatively charged rear wire and disc body. As a result, both the negative and positive ions would work together to create a forward thrust on the saucer.

Brown referred to a mass effect (gravitational force effect) operating in the electrokinetic movement of massive high-K dielectrics but did not similarly report a mass effect operating in the case of his electrokinetic disc experiments. Thus it is not clear how much of the thrust he was attributing to gravitic forces and how much to electrostatic forces. Nevertheless, his research colleagues did seem to think that a new electrogravitic principle was needed to account for the propulsion. In his 1952 write-up, Rose stated that "anyone wanting to understand electrogravitation and its application to astronautics must dismiss the principles of electromagnetics in order to grasp the essentially different principles of electrogravitation. . . . Electrogravitation must be understood as an entirely new field of scientific investigation and technical development."[10]

As we can see from entries he made in 1943 in one of his laboratory notebooks, Brown was exploring an "ether" theory interpretation of the electrogravitic phenomenon, one that has many similarities to subquantum kinetics. More will be said about this in chapter 4.

The ONR researcher's skeptical reaction was typical of individuals who were used to thinking in conventional scientific terms. In one of his articles on Brown, the journalist Gaston Burridge wrote that many scientists and engineers had watched the discs fly and most of them concluded that the discs were propelled by the well-known "electric wind" phenomenon and not by some new principle of physics. One engineer blurted out to him, "The whole thing is so screwball I don't want to even talk about it!" Other engineers reportedly objected to the lack of mathematical substantiation. Burridge explained, "To engineers and scientists one equation is worth a thousand words!" But even an equation is of little use unless it has values assigned to at least some of its main parts. When these were not forthcoming, from a technical point of view, it appeared Brown was walking on straw legs.[11]

2.2 ■ THE SECOND PEARL HARBOR DISC DEMONSTRATION

Some years later, around 1953 or 1954, in the hope of renewing the Navy's interest, Brown again staged a demonstration at Pearl Harbor for a number of admirals. This time his demonstration was on a much larger scale. From a gymnasium ceiling, at a height of 50 feet, he suspended a revolving horizontal beam that tethered a pair of 3-foot-diameter discs (see figure 2.5). Powered by a potential of 150 kilovolts, the discs flew around a 50-foot-diameter course at such an impressive speed that the subject became highly classified. The speed may have been in excess of 100 miles per hour, because the May 1956 issue of the Swiss aeronau-

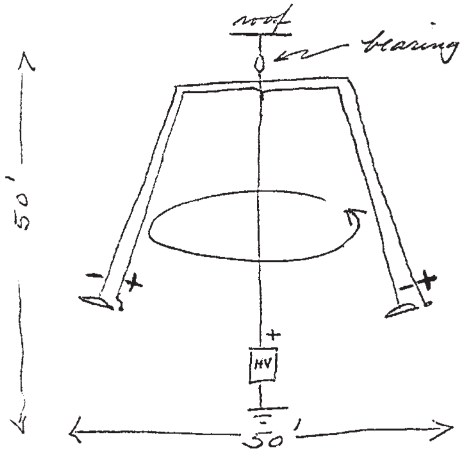

Figure 2.5. Sketch made by Thomas Townsend Brown showing the test setup used for demonstrating his 3-foot-diameter flying discs. (From Brown's November 1, 1971, letter to T. Turman; see appendix A)

tics magazine *Interavia* stated that the discs were capable of attaining speeds of several hundred miles per hour when charged with several hundred kilovolts![12] Such high velocities are not surprising considering that the ONR test data show that the speed of the discs increased exponentially with voltage.

Brown used a different disc design for this later demonstration. During a telephone conversation he had in the early 1970s with electrical engineer Tom Turman, Brown disclosed that the airfoil disc design depicted in his 1960 patent (no. 2,949,550) was an inferior one. The cross-sectional view presented in that patent shows the spun aluminum discs having a knife-thin edge at their periphery (as shown in figure 2.3). The discs used in the 1952 ONR test were of a similar design. On the other hand, the discs that Brown flew in his gymnasium demonstration had a blunt profile, as shown in figures 2.6 and 2.7. This design consisted of two spun aluminum discs cupped on either side of a Plexiglas sheet, but the upper disc had a "triarcuate" cross-sectional profile—a convex central bulge that turned concave farther out and that finally terminated in a convexly curved rim with a radius of curvature of ½ inch or more. The outer rim of the lower half of the disc had a flat profile, but its outer edge was curved to make a smooth transition to the edge of the upper disc.

Also, the leading-edge electrode used in the disc flown in Brown's gymnasium demonstration was of much smaller diameter. In a letter he wrote to Turman in 1971, Brown noted in a sketch that he used an

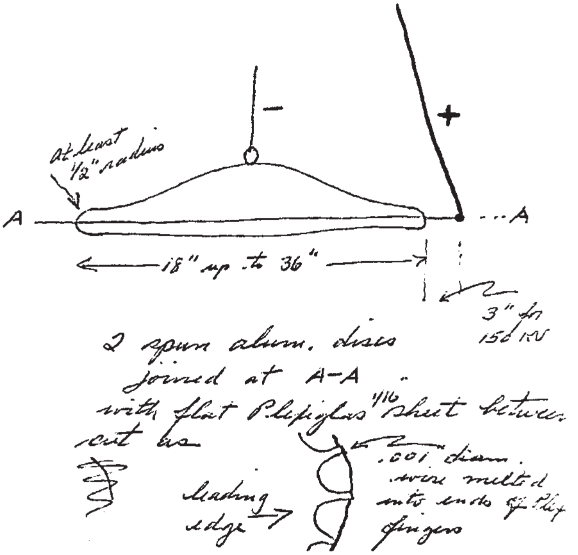
−
+
at least 1/2" radius
A
A
18" up to 36"
3" for 150 KV
2 spun alum. discs joined at A–A
with flat Plexiglas 1/16" sheet between
cut as
.001 diam. wire melted into ends of Plex fingers
leading edge

Figure 2.6. Sketch made by Thomas Townsend Brown showing the design of the 3-foot-diameter disc airfoils he demonstrated to the military. (From Brown's November 1, 1971, letter to T. Turman)

electrode that had a diameter of only 1 mil (0.001 inch). This is five times smaller in diameter than the wire he used on the discs flown in his ONR test in Los Angeles. Moreover, it is far smaller than the diameter he had specified in his 1960 patent. His patent states that saucers designed to be energized at voltages greater than 125 kilovolts would preferably have leading-edge electrodes of large cross-section made of rods or hollow pipes having diameters measuring from ¼ to ½ inch (e.g., 250 to 500 mils) to ensure that their surface potential gradient was below the threshold required to produce a visible corona. He maintained that energy losses associated with coronal ionization reduced the achievable thrust, but, as he acknowledged in his 1971 letter, the design specified in the patent was inferior to what he used in his Pearl Harbor gymnasium demonstration. The leading-edge electrodes of the discs he flew in that demonstration would have had a much steeper field gradient at their surface, which would have allowed them to emit ions more effectively.

Burridge has commented that the discs emanated a slight humming sound as they flew.[13] This implies that Brown may have been applying a nonreversing high-voltage AC potential across his disc that, on average, established a DC potential across its electrodes. He may have used a rectifier bridge circuit to convert the 60-cycle AC output from

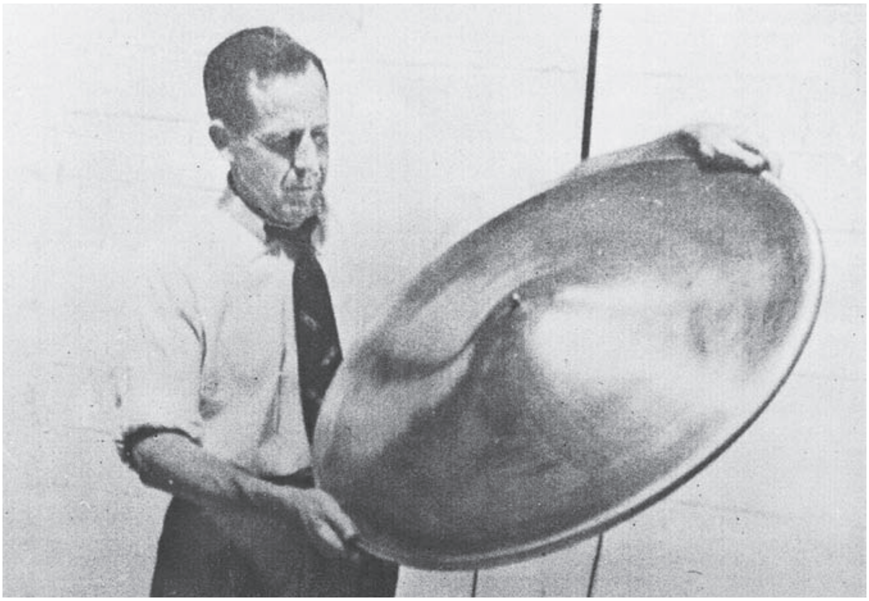

Figure 2.7. Thomas Townsend Brown holding one of his 3-foot-diameter discs, which he referred to as an experimental triarcuate ballistic electrode. (Courtesy of the Townsend Brown Family and Qualight, L.L.C.)

his high-voltage transformer into a series of unfiltered half-wave voltage cycles oscillating at 120 hertz. His use of a blunt profile for the edge of the negatively charged disc body would have helped to suppress negative-ion coronal discharge toward the front of the craft. This would especially have become an important issue in this gymnasium demonstration because he flew his discs at much higher voltages than used in flying his earlier model. The asymmetrical profile of his saucer, with its curved upper surface and flat lower surface, would also have been beneficial since airflow over the surfaces would have given the saucer aerodynamic lift during flight.

After his Pearl Harbor demonstration, Brown traveled to the mainland. Upon returning to Hawaii, he found that his room had been broken into and that some government agency had confiscated his models and notebooks and sealed his laboratory.[14] A day later, the Navy informed him that they had his notebooks and that he could have them back. A few days after that, they said that they were not interested in his work. They claimed that the discs must be powered by ion wind and, hence, that they would not work in outer space.[15] So here we find that the Navy had the opportunity to make changes, in the interest of national security, to any of Brown's laboratory notebooks, including his Vega notebook.

2.3 ■ PROJECT WINTERHAVEN

The negative evaluation that came out of the 1952 ONR investigation of Brown's electrokinetic discs temporarily slowed down the Pentagon's endorsement of his work, but it did not halt the eventual implementation of his electrogravitic technology. In an effort to secure government funding, Brown wrote up a proposal in 1952 urging the Navy to initiate a highly secret project to develop a manned flying saucer as the basis of an interceptor aircraft with Mach 3 capability and proposed that this might follow along the same lines as the Manhattan District Project, which developed the atomic bomb at the end of World War II. This confidential January 1953 submittal was code-named Project Winterhaven.[16] Extrapolating the numbers from the performance charts for Brown's laboratory-model flying discs, Project Winterhaven estimated that larger discs operating at 5 million volts, rather than 50,000, should be able to develop speeds of 1,150 miles per hour (Mach 1.5) in the presence of atmospheric resistance and in excess of 1,800 miles per hour (Mach 2.5) in the upper atmosphere.

This rather conservative speed estimate was based on the assumption that disc speed extrapolated linearly with voltage, when in fact the evidence suggested a nonlinear relationship in which disc speed would rise exponentially with applied voltage. Thus, considering that Brown's 1½-foot-diameter discs had achieved speeds of twelve miles per hour when energized at 50 kilovolts, the report conservatively estimated that larger versions should be able to achieve speeds at a hundred times greater when energized at 5,000 kilovolts. The Pearl Harbor Navy Yard demonstration, which Brown performed shortly after this proposal was submitted and was intended as a demonstration of the aviation technology he was proposing in Project Winterhaven, indicated that speeds far higher than this would be possible. Because his 3-foot-diameter airfoils were shown to achieve speeds of several hundred miles per hour when energized at just 150 kilovolts, even a simple linear voltage-speed extrapolation would indicate that speeds of Mach 13 (10,000 miles per hour) would have been more reasonable for a 5-megavolt disc. However, since the jet speed record at the beginning of 1953 was only Mach 1.88, Brown could guarantee Navy interest even with his more conservative speed estimates.

Project Winterhaven proposed a five- to ten-year-long research and development (R&D, or RAND) program that was to be carried out in stages. Beginning with 2-foot-diameter discs powered at 50 kilovolts, it would proceed to 4-foot-diameter discs powered at 150 kilovolts, and finally to a 10-foot-diameter disc powered at 500 kilovolts. The proposal also suggested making a 10-foot demonstration model capable of vertical levitation as well as horizontal thrust.

The aircraft that Brown had in mind for military development probably looked similar to the version described in his U.S. patent 3,022,430, which was filed in July 1957 (figure 2.8).[17] Like his small-scale flying disc models, this craft produced a cloud of positive ions at its bow and a cloud of negative ions at its stern. Brown did not discuss gravity field effects in his patents, probably because he felt that such unconventional concepts might jeopardize a patent's ultimate acceptance. So although his patent alludes to ion thrust as being the craft's means of propulsion,

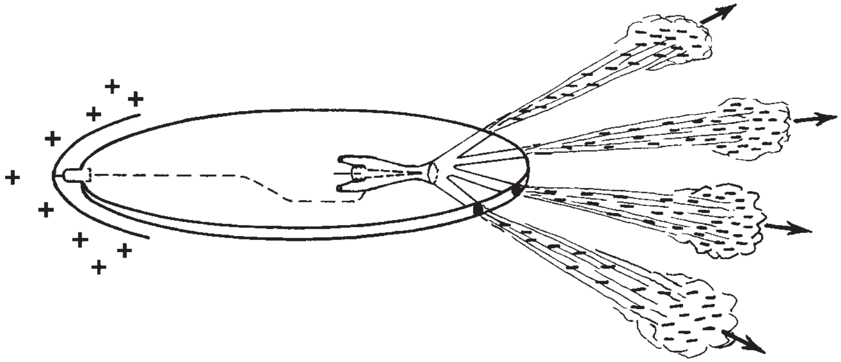

Figure 2.8. The flying disc Thomas Townsend Brown proposed for development under Project Winterhaven may have looked like this. (After Brown, U.S. patent 3,022,430, figure 1)

on the basis of his own research Brown was convinced that the propulsion also involved electrogravitic effects.

In parallel with this effort to develop an electrogravitic craft, Project Winterhaven also planned to investigate various methods to generate the high voltages required on board the aerospace vehicle. The discs that Brown had flown in his carousel demonstration were energized from a heavy, high-voltage laboratory transformer powered by wall current. A full-size airborne craft, however, would need to carry its own energy source, one capable of delivering far more power at far higher voltages than were used for this demo model. However, a conventional turbine generator and transformer unit capable of delivering the required amount of power would have been prohibitively heavy. Consequently, Brown took a very different approach. He recommended investigating a device that he called a "flame-jet" electrostatic generator. This was essentially a jet engine modified to electrify its exhaust stream, turning it into a powerful electro-hydrodynamic generator (figure 2.9, taken from Brown's 1965 patent).

The jet engine's exhaust nozzle was to be fitted with a negatively charged needle electrode and a positively charged plate electrode. A 50,000-volt starter transformer located on the craft would cause the needle to emit a stream of negative ions into the jet exhaust. The ions, however, would never succeed in reaching the nozzle's positive electrode because they would be whisked out of the nozzle throat and away from the craft by the high-velocity exhaust gases. The departing negative ions would acquire a very large negative voltage potential relative to the electrodes in the jet's nozzle. The farther they would be forced from the

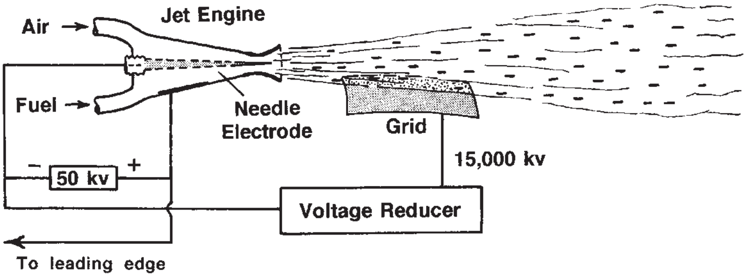

Figure 2.9. A high-voltage flame-jet generator design patented by Brown. (After Brown, U.S. patent 3,022,430, figure 3)

craft, the greater would be their potential difference. A Van de Graaff generator, a common fixture in most high school physics laboratories, operates on a similar principle. In that case, a rapidly running conveyor belt takes the place of the engine exhaust for transporting and separating the negative ions from the positive. The Winterhaven proposal indicated that such an engine would be capable of generating up to 15 million volts, three hundred times higher than the 50-kilovolt input potential initially used to electrify its needle ionizer.

By positioning a metallic grid in the exhaust stream just beyond the generator's nozzle, some of the exiting exhaust ions could be collected at an intermediate voltage of around 1 million and, after being stepped down in voltage, could be recycled to drive the generator's needle ionizer. Thus, once the generator got going, the 50-kilovolt starter transformer that supplied the initial power could be turned off, leaving the generator to run itself from its own electrical output. In the alternate design, shown in figure 2.10, the downstream exhaust grid is replaced by a series of conical baffles that become charged to successively negative potentials, with the outermost baffle being the most negative and attaining a charge of many millions of volts.

Furthermore, Brown proposed that the flame-jet generator's positive electrode be connected to an ionizer wire running along the craft's leading edge (see figure 2.8). As a result, when the generator was in operation, a positive-ion space charge would build up in front of the craft, counterbalancing the negative-ion space charge built up in the exhaust plume trailing the craft. The gravity gradient generated between these oppositely polarized ion clouds would induce a forward-pulling gravitational force. The craft could be steered to one side or the other by diverting its exhaust through one or the other of its side nozzles, thereby producing a corresponding shift in its gravitational propulsion field.

Brown found that his flame-jet generator conveyed charges most effectively when its flame was adjusted to an orange-red color, indicating incomplete combustion of its fuel.[18] Incomplete combustion would produce large numbers of charged submicron-size particles (0.003 to 0.03 micron in diameter) that, upon being ionized, would grow in size to form Langevin ion smoke particles (> 0.03 micron). Being much more massive than air ions, Langevin ions would move considerably slower

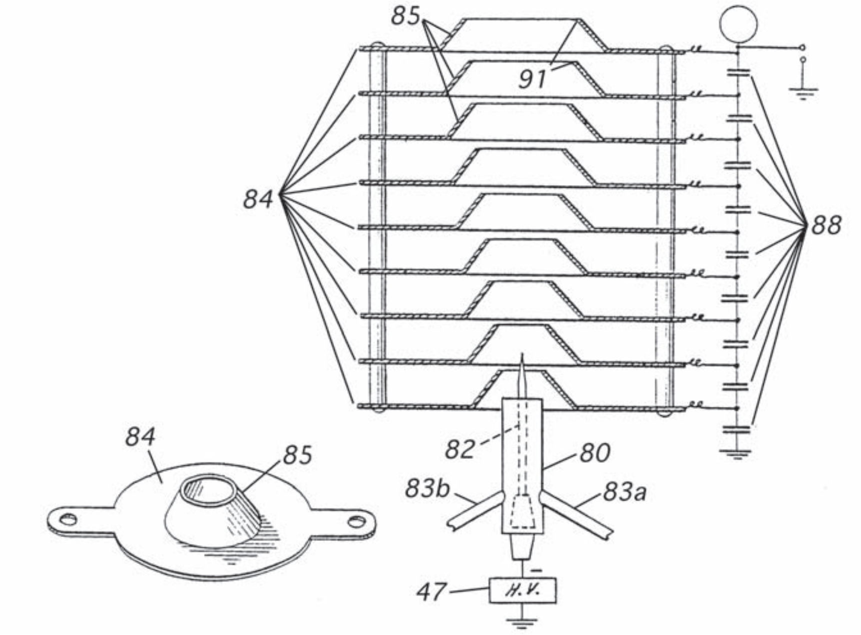

Figure 2.10. A high-voltage flame-jet generator, a second design depicted in Brown's patent. Numbers indicate the following: (47), a 50-kilovolt power supply; (80), exhaust nozzle; (82), needle electrode; (83a and 83b), air and fuel inlets; (84 and 85), baffles; (88), capacitors; (91), jagged electron emitter edges. (After Brown, U.S. patent 3,022,430, figure 4)

under the influence of an electric field. For example, in a field of 10,000 volts per centimeter, the kind Brown often worked with, Langevin ions would travel about 1 centimeter per second, as compared with 450 miles per hour for air ions. Hence, once they are ejected from the craft, the negative exhaust ions would not readily return to the front of the aircraft to neutralize the positive ions. Consequently, a much larger negative-ion space charge would build up behind the craft that, in turn, would substantially increase the forward-directed gravitic propulsion force. Although the positively charged air ions produced at the front of the craft would have a much higher ionic mobility, the bow shock front that would form under high-speed flight would tend to deflect these ions away from the body of the disc, thereby retarding their rearward flight toward the negative-ion space charge cloud.

The Winterhaven proposal stated that the electrogravitic motor would be essentially soundless, vibrationless, and heatless and that its internal resistance losses would be almost negligible and its speeds enormous. The motor's thrust could be controlled by regulating the applied voltage, and its flight velocity could be braked or even reversed simply by reversing its electric polarity. The proposal commented that past laboratory research had indicated that an electrogravitic motor would set up a gravitational field independent of that of Earth. Hence, an electrogravitic spacecraft could maintain sustained acceleration even after leaving the gravitational influence of Earth. It predicted top speeds far beyond those of jet propulsion or rocket drive, with the possibility of approaching the speed of light in free space.

A 1960 report titled "Electrohydrodynamics," issued by the Electrokinetics Corporation of Bala Cynwyd, Pennsylvania, presented an idea for a vertical takeoff aero-marine vehicle that was a variation of the one proposed in Project Winterhaven (figure 2.11).[19] The proposed vehicle was to be 24 feet high and 70 feet in diameter. Through experimentation, Brown found that a disc whose upper surface had a triarcuate-shaped profile, a helmet-shape similar to that shown in figure 2.11, produced the best vertical thrust.

As described in the report, the vehicle would use spherical pontoons to rest on the water surface (see figure 2.12, Landing Position). To

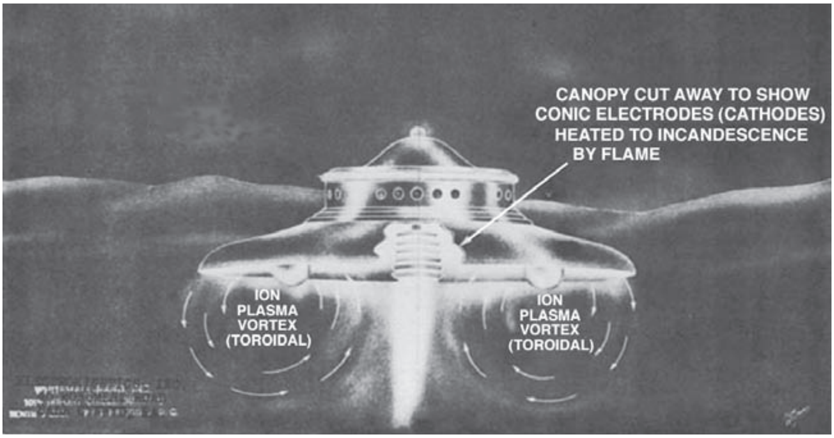

Figure 2.11. Prototype aero-marine vehicle powered by a high-voltage flame-jet generator. (Courtesy of the Townsend Brown Family and Qualight, L.L.C.)

take off, the craft would ignite its flame jet without electrical excitation (figure 2.12, Stage 1). The jet would be powered by either kerosene or solid rocket propellants. The exhaust would set up a positive pressure beneath the canopy that would loft the craft about ten feet above the water surface, allowing the pontoons to be partially retracted. A gyro wheel in the cabin dome would provide horizontal stability and orientation control.

Once the vehicle was airborne, the flame would be electrically energized by applying high voltage to the incandescent cathode (figure 2.12, Stage 2). An electric gradient would establish itself along the length of the exhaust plume, with the voltage progressively increasing downstream to reach a potential difference of several million volts. A potential gradient would similarly build up on the nozzle's conical collector electrodes, which collect power for the craft. The exhaust would set

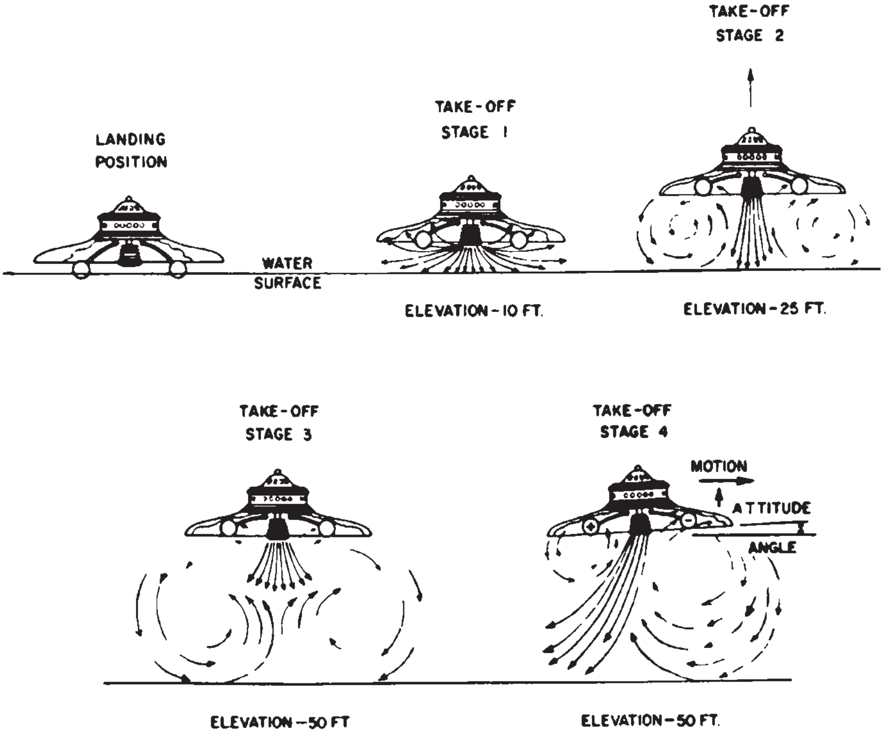
TAKE-OFF STAGE 2
TAKE-OFF STAGE 1
LANDING POSITION
WATER SURFACE
ELEVATION - 10 FT.
ELEVATION - 25 FT.
TAKE-OFF STAGE 3
TAKE-OFF STAGE 4
MOTION
ATTITUDE
ANGLE
ELEVATION - 50 FT
ELEVATION - 50 FT.

Figure 2.12. Stages in the takeoff of Brown's electrohydrodynamic propulsion vehicle. (Courtesy of the Townsend Brown Family and Qualight, L.L.C.)

up a negative-ion space charge below the craft, and ionizer electrodes on the canopy would create positive ions above the craft. The positive charges emitted from the canopy would create an ion wind that would move downward and radially inward toward the central cathodic axis, setting up a toroidal ion vortex. The flow would receive negative charges from the exhaust, which would cause it to accelerate upward toward the canopy. The large volume of upward-moving plasma would impart upward momentum to the undersurface of the positively charged canopy, thereby helping to loft the vehicle. Also, the inflowing ion plasma would buck the flame jet's outgoing gas flow, confining its flow and increasing the lift pressure beneath the canopy. At this stage, the vortex would be slightly larger than the diameter of the craft. The craft would have risen to about a 25-foot elevation and would continue to rise as subcanopy pressures induce further lift. At this point, the pontoons would have completely retracted. Smoke tests, which Brown conducted on an 18-inch-diameter model, showed that this electrode geometry indeed generates a toroidal vortex (see chapter 3, figure 3.3).

The report states that as the craft rises, the toroidal vortex would expand to about three (craft) diameters. The axial upwelling would continue to buck the downward jetstream to add to the jet's upward thrust (figure 2.12, Stage 3). At about a 50-foot elevation, the subcanopy pressure would diminish to equal the weight of the craft and equilibrium would be established. In this fashion, the craft would be able to hover at about this height, its canopy riding upon the vortex, whose aerodynamic pressure would act at all points against the craft's underside, providing lift. Electrogravitic forces would also contribute to this effect, as would electrostatic forces between the craft and charges in the surrounding air and charged plasma.

Horizontal thrust in any direction would be provided by altering the symmetry of the electric field and of the resulting vortex pattern (figure 2.12, Stage 4). This would allow flame gas to escape to the rear of the craft and the forward side of the vortex to exert traction upon the water surface. The unbalanced canopy pressures would provide forward thrust, and the additional lift of the leading edge would cause a change in the altitude of the craft.

Project Winterhaven also requested funds to develop solid-state electrogravitic motors similar to Brown's early gravitators. It stressed the importance of improvements that had been achieved in developing new dielectric materials, noting that the available dielectric constant K-values had progressively increased from 6 to 100 to 6,000 to 30,000 and beyond. It proposed engineering a 500-pound high-K dielectric motor for propelling a model ship and envisioned that this would presage the development of much larger motors for ships weighing thousands of tons.

Yet another Winterhaven project concerned the investigation of electrogravitic communication equipment that would transmit and receive electrogravitic waves. Early in 1952, Brown conducted a demonstration in Los Angeles of one such transmitting and receiving system, through which he successfully transmitted a signal over a distance of 35 feet to a receiver located within an electrically grounded metallic enclosure.[20] He used a relaxation oscillator as his transmitter. This consisted of a high-voltage power supply that continuously charged a capacitor, which, in turn, periodically discharged itself through a small spark gap when its voltage had reached a certain value (figure 2.13). Just as in his early capacitor experiments, Brown reasoned that electrogravitic coupling

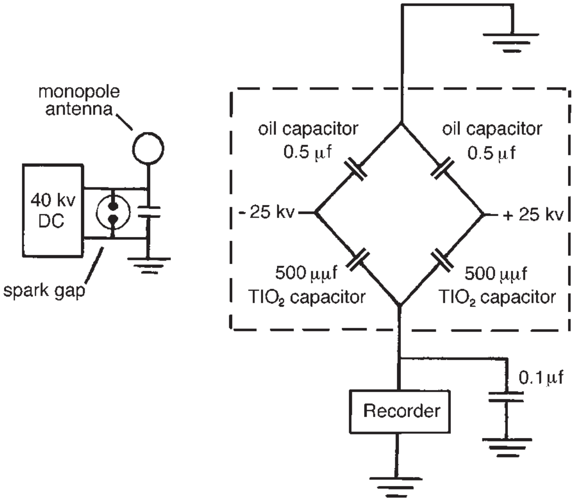

Figure 2.13. Schematic circuit diagrams of Brown's electrogravitic wave transmitter (left) and receiver (right).

would cause the capacitor to radiate gravitational waves. His receiver antenna consisted of a charged high-voltage capacitor bridge circuit similar to the one he used for his gravito-electric measurements. Because the grounded Faraday shield that surrounded his receiver antenna was able to prevent the entry of ordinary electromagnetic waves, he concluded that the signal being conveyed was gravitic rather than electromagnetic and that his capacitor bridge was able to detect gravitational disturbances.

In a patent disclosure Brown wrote in September 1953, he described another version of this communication device, which was designed to send a signal from an audio oscillator to an electrically shielded radio receiver. However, instead of capacitors, this device used heavy spherical masses for the transmitter and receiver antennae.[21] His Project Winterhaven proposal envisioned that electrogravitic wave transmission and reception could be developed into a fundamentally new communication technology. It noted that because of the extreme penetrating ability of these waves, messages could be transmitted to submarines and to underground shelters and military installations, locations inaccessible to normal radio-wave communication. Brown's spherical antenna gravitational wave generator bore a close resemblance to devices developed by scientist and inventor Nikola Tesla in the early twentieth century. How such devices generate gravity waves may be understood in terms of the subquantum kinetics ether methodology (see box).[22,23]

A Gravity Wave Model

As mentioned earlier, subquantum kinetics predicts that a positive charge should induce the formation of a gravity potential well and a negative charge should induce the formation of a gravity potential hill. Hence, a spherical conductor that is alternately charged and discharged should radiate both an electric potential wave and a gravity potential wave. These waves would be scalar waves rather than force field vector waves because they would consist of changes in energy potential (i.e., ether concentration), which is a scalar quantity. That is, a potential wave would have a measurable magnitude at a given point in space but no associated direction. Electric charges on a spherical monopole antenna would not be laterally displaced to any appreciable extent, as they would be in a conventional dipole antenna; hence, they would induce a minimal magnetic field. So unlike Hertzian electromagnetic waves, which oscillate transverse to their direction of travel, these scalar waves would induce no forces transverse to a wave's direction of travel. They would instead produce longitudinal electric and gravity potential field gradients that would induce longitudinal forces, that is, forces aligned with the wave's direction of propagation.

Tesla's ether sound-wave model for describing radiant energy waves fits this energy potential description quite well because sinusoidal variations in ether concentration may be visualized as alternate compressions and rarefactions of the ether medium, analogous to the compressions and rarefactions of air molecules in a sound wave. A high ether concentration would correspond to a high energy potential, and a low ether concentration would correspond to a low energy potential. So according to this model, the antenna would be radiating spherical waves of alternating ether concentration. In the event that the waves were made to repeatedly reflect back and forth under resonance, they could reinforce one another to produce stationary wave patterns characterized by very strong longitudinal forces.

The Project Winterhaven proposal requested that its projects be carried out under a Department of Defense R&D contract administered by a prime contractor. It advocated a cooperative participation of four commercial corporations engaged in applied research and four academic institutions engaged in pure research. The four corporations were to comprise Lear Inc. (for gravimetric field measurements), Jansky & Bailey (for electrogravitic wave communication research), Brush Development Company (for development of high-K dielectric thrust motors), and Hancock Manufacturing Company (for development of the disc airfoils). The academic institutions included Stanford Research Institute, the University of Chicago, and the Franklin Institute.

The proposal acknowledged that the Pentagon had classified some of Brown's past electrogravitic research. It noted that additional data confirming the existence of the electrogravitic coupling effect have been "associated with government research projects of a highly classified status, and publication has been precluded." Nevertheless, Brown's desire in proposing Project Winterhaven was not to keep this technology secret but to accelerate its development so that it could benefit humanity.

Unfortunately, his dream of unrestricted access to electrogravitic technology was not to be realized. Perhaps unknown to him at that time, highly classified work on electrogravitics then in progress had proceeded to a relatively advanced stage of development. In particular, out of all the ideas proposed in Project Winterhaven, the electrogravitic wave communicator device came closest of all to this ongoing sensitive propulsion research.

2.4 ▪ ANTIGRAVITY RESEARCH: TOP SECRET

Brown's effort to promote his electrogravitic propulsion concept received its greatest boost from Aviation Studies (International) Ltd., a privately owned, London-based aviation intelligence consulting firm.* Since its formation in 1950, Aviation Studies has marketed reports to aerospace companies and government defense departments on a wide variety of subjects, giving information about various kinds of aircraft, rockets, and missiles (e.g., their design features, prices, production run sizes, foreign arsenal sizes); data on nuclear, thermal, and directed-energy weapons; assessments of foreign government military intelligence capabilities (e.g., organization missions, manpower, intelligence advisories); and much more. Their price lists for publications available between 1957 and 1960 and for publications issued in 1993 are reproduced in appendix B.

Richard Worcester, the director of Aviation Studies, had become convinced that Brown had discovered something that could radically revolutionize aviation technology. So beginning in August 1954, his think tank began an effort to promote Brown's ideas to the aerospace industry, indicating that the rewards of success in developing electrogravitics technology were too far-reaching to be overlooked. They began including news items about electrogravitics technology in their weekly newsletter, *Aviation Report,** and by 1956 also began sponsoring research into high-K dielectric materials for use in electrogravitic aircraft. Their catalytic effort proved successful because industry involvement in electrogravitics expanded exponentially from 1954 onward. Around the late 1950s, antigravity propulsion research went underground and little was heard about it, although today the effort continues secretly on a scale rivaling the Manhattan Project's effort to develop the atomic bomb.

---

*The firm's address was given as Aviation Studies (International) Ltd., Sussex House, 37A Parkside, Wimbledon, London SW19 5NB, UK. However, currently no address for this organization is available.

In February and December 1956, Aviation Studies published two summary reports on electrogravitics. The February report, titled "Electrogravitics Systems: An Examination of Electrostatic Motion, Dynamic Counterbary and Barycentric Control," presents an illuminating survey of government and industry's early involvement in the field of antigravitics R&D.[24] Its cover page lists its origin as the Gravity Research Group, a subdivision of the Aviation Studies Special Weapons Study Unit, but it is now known to have been written by Worcester. The December report, titled "The Gravitics Situation," also written by Worcester, was issued as being produced by Gravity Rand Limited, an affiliate of Aviation Studies.[25] It provides additional information about aviation industry progress in developing electrogravitic antigravity technology. Gravity Rand had no affiliation with the Rand Corporation. Rand, an acronym for Research and Development, is often included in the names of companies that are involved in R&D work.

It is relatively difficult to obtain original copies of these documents. Although the card catalog at the U.S. Library of Congress in Washington, D.C., has a card on file for the February 1956 "Electrogravitics Systems" report (LOC no. 3,1401,00034,5879; call no. TL565.A9), when I tried to check out the report in 1985, the librarian found that it was missing from its shelves. A subsequent check of the Library of Congress computer database showed that one other library in the United States kept a copy of the report. That was the Wright-Patterson Air Force Base Technical Library in Dayton, Ohio. Originally marked "confidential," the report had been declassified sometime prior to when I obtained it in 1985 and is currently available for public scrutiny. It may be borrowed from Wright-Patterson through the interlibrary loan system, but doing so may require some persistence on the part of the requester since the document is not cataloged on all Wright-Patterson computer databases, so Air Force librarians might overlook its presence. The February 1956 report is reproduced in appendix C.

---

*A 1993 circular states that this newsletter covers aerospace policy and contains equipment and intelligence data, economic/technical acquisition needs, and government news, analysis, and trends. I do not know if it continues to be published.

An original copy of the December 1956 report was more difficult to locate. Librarians at Wright-Patterson could not find a copy in their stacks and an attempt to obtain the document from Aviation Studies was also unsuccessful. The director responded that copies of both 1956 electrogravitics studies could not be found in its files. Currently, however, it is possible to download these documents from the Internet. Aircraft and missile companies that have been purchasing the Aviation Studies reports may still keep copies of these older issues in their technical libraries, but company officials may be hesitant to share them with outsiders. There is an apparent effort to keep this subject very quiet. For example, Loral Vought Systems Corporation of Grand Prairie, Texas, a company that is heavily involved in missile R&D and that served as a subcontractor to Northrop Grumman Corporation on development of the B-2 stealth bomber, had listed the December 1956 report on its library database, but in a 1993 telephone conversation, one of their librarians told me that the document was marked as "destroyed." Although she mentioned that three or four other Aviation Studies reports were listed, she was unwilling to divulge their titles and cited company policy that prevented the documents from being loaned out.

The subtitle of the February 1956 report—An Examination of Electrostatic Motion, Dynamic Counterbary, and Barycentric Control—blatantly indicates that it deals with gravity control. The words *dynamic counterbary* and *barycentric control* translate to mean antigravity propulsion and the control of gravity, the root word *bary* coming from the Greek βαρη, meaning weight. More specifically, page 19 of this report defines *counterbary* as "the manipulation of gravitational force lines" and *barycentric control* as "the adjustment to such manipulative capability to produce a stable type of motion suitable for transportation."

The glossary of the December 1956 Aviation Studies report defines *counterbary* as “another name for lofting . . . the action of levitation where gravity’s force is more than overcome by electrostatic or other propulsion.” It defines *barycentric control* as “the environment for regulation of lofting processes in a vehicle.”

The term “dynamic counterbary,” or contrabary, was coined by the renowned German scientist Burkhard Heim, who used it publicly for the first time in 1952 in a Stuttgart lecture titled “Dynamic Contrabary and the Solution of Astronautical Problems.” Heim had been heavily engaged in gravity force field research in the early 1950s and claimed to have discovered what he called the “contrabaric effect,” a way of inducing a gravitational force field by electromagnetic means.

The February 1956 report briefly reviews Brown’s seminal work and mentions his 1952 Project Winterhaven proposal to develop an electrogravitic interceptor disc of approximately 35 feet in diameter that would be capable of attaining Mach 3 (2,250 miles per hour) and executing sharp-edged changes of direction. The authors of the report were quite convinced that electrogravitics involves a nonconventional method for artificially altering a vehicle’s gravity field, because the report begins by stating:

> Electrogravitics might be described as a synthesis of electrostatic energy used for propulsion . . . and gravitics (or dynamic counterbary) in which energy is also used to set up a local gravitational force independent of the earth’s . . .
>
> The essence of electrogravitics thrust is the use of a very strong positive charge on one side of the vehicle and a negative on the other. The core of the motor is a condenser and the ability of the condenser to hold its charge (the K number) is the yardstick of performance . . .
>
> . . . The electrogravitics saucer can perform the function of a classic lifting surface—it produces a pushing effect on the under surface and a suction effect on the upper, but, unlike the airfoil, it does not require a flow of air to produce the effect.[26]

The report summarizes electrogravitics work that was being done in the United States and in Great Britain and even indicates that several antigravity test rigs were in operation at that time. It also includes extracts from various issues of *Aviation Report* dated between August 1954 and December 1955. These give an illuminating view of how interest in electrogravitics progressively expanded over this eighteen-month period. Some interesting excerpts are quoted here in chronological order:

> ANTI-GRAVITATION RESEARCH
>
> The basic research and technology behind electro-antigravitation is so much in its infancy that this is perhaps one field of development where not only the methods but the ideas are secret. Nothing therefore can be discussed freely at the moment. Very few papers on the subject have been prepared so far, and the only schemes that have seen the light of day are for pure research into rigs designed to make objects float around freely in a box . . . long term aims . . . envisage equipment that can defeat gravity.
>
> *Aviation Report,* August 20, 1954

> MANAGERIAL POLICY FOR ANTI-GRAVITICS
>
> Anti-gravitics work is . . . likely to go to companies with the biggest electrical laboratories and facilities. It is also apparent that antigravitics, like other advanced sciences, will be initially sponsored for its weapon capabilities. There are perhaps two broad ways of using the science—one is to postulate the design of advanced type projectiles . . . The other, which is a longer term plan, is to create an entirely new environment with devices operating entirely under an anti-gravitic envelope.
>
> *Aviation Report,* August 24, 1954

> GRAVITICS FORMULATIONS
>
> Some extremely ambitious theoretical programs have been submitted and work towards realization of a manned [anti-gravitic] vehicle has begun. On the evidence, there are far more definite indications that the incredible claims are realizable than there was, for instance, in supposing that uranium fission would result in a bomb.
>
> *Aviation Report,* September 7, 1954[27]

An October 1954 report refers to Brown's 1952 Winterhaven Project proposal and indicates that the Pentagon was about to begin funding the development of electrogravitic aircraft:

> ELECTRO-GRAVITIC PROPULSION SITUATION
>
> Under the terms of Project Winterhaven [1952] the proposals to develop electro-gravitics to the point of realizing a Mach 3 combat type disc were not far short of the extensive effort that was planned for the Manhattan District. Indeed the drive to develop the new prime mover is in some respects rather similar to the experiments that led to the release of nuclear energy in the sense that both involve fantastic mathematical capacity and both are sciences so new that other allied sciences cannot be of very much guide. In the past two years since the principle of motion by means of massive-K was first demonstrated on a test rig, progress has been slow. But the indications are now that the Pentagon is ready to sponsor a range of devices to help further knowledge. . . . Tentative targets now being set anticipate that the first disc should be complete before 1960 and it would take the whole of the "sixties" to develop it properly, even though some combat things might be available ten years from now. . . . The frame incidentally is indivisible from the "engine." If there is to be any division of responsibility it would be that the engine industry might become responsible for providing the electrostatic energy (by, it is thought, a kind of flame) and the frame maker for the condenser assembly which is the core of the main structure.
>
> *Aviation Report,* October 12, 1954[28]

Note that the October report mentions Brown's flame-jet high-voltage generator concept as a means for generating electrostatic energy and suggests that such a device would be developed by the jet engine industry. A November 1954 report describes the Air Force's first attempts to draw up specifications for the development of an electrogravitic vehicle and notes that the goal of a Mach 3 combat saucer would be possible through an extrapolation of technology available at that time:

> GRAVITICS STEPS
>
> Specification writers seem to be still rather stumped to know what to ask for in the very hazy science of electrogravitic propelled vehicles. They are at present faced with having to plan the first family of things—first of these is the most realistic type of operational test rig, and second, the first type of test vehicle. In turn this would lead to sponsoring of a combat disc. The preliminary test rigs which gave only feeble propulsion have been somewhat improved, but of course the speeds reached so far are only those more associated with what is attained on the roads rather than in the air. But propulsion is now known to be possible, so it is a matter of feeding enough KVA [kilovolt-amperes] into condensers with better K figures. 50,000 is a magic figure for the combat saucer—it is this amount of KVA and this amount of K that can be translated into Mach 3 speeds.
>
> *Aviation Report,* November 19, 1954[29]

The term "KVA," which stands for kilovolt-amperes, is used exclusively in referring to power consumption in which the power source is AC. Its use in the above passage suggests that the disc being discussed was to use high-K capacitors powered with AC, rather than DC.[30] If the disc's capacitors were instead powered exclusively with DC, then it would have been more proper to refer to kilowatts of power, or KW.* Also, this same report later states, "Perhaps the main thing for management to bear in mind in recruiting men is that essentially electrogravitics is a branch of wave technology and much of it starts with Planck's dimensions of action, energy, and time, and some of this is among the most firm and least controversial sections of modern atomic physics." So here is further acknowledgment that researchers were actively investigating the use of *time-varying* electric fields for electrogravitic propulsion.

Although Brown's early demonstration discs were powered with high-voltage DC power, later demonstrations, such as the one given in a gymnasium at Pearl Harbor, appear to have instead used rectified AC. Also, in one of his patents, Brown briefly alludes to energizing high-K dielectrics with high-frequency AC, but he kept fairly quiet about this part of his work. How an AC-energized capacitor might be used to produce an amplified electrogravitic thrust is described in the next chapter.

---

*When a capacitor is energized with AC, there is a phase shift between the current and voltage sine waves such that the current change through the capacitor tends to lead the voltage change across it. Consequently, the product of average current times average voltage (or kilowatts) is not a good measure for the average power of a half cycle. In such cases, electrical engineers instead refer to kilovolt-amperes.

During a January 25, 1955, meeting of aviation leaders held in New York, George S. Trimble, vice president of advanced design for Glenn Martin Aircraft in Baltimore, was quoted by the Associated Press as saying, "Unlimited power, freedom from gravitational attraction, and infinitely short travel time are now becoming feasible."[31] He then added that eventually all commercial air transportation would be in vehicles operating on these fantastic principles. Recall that Brown had briefly worked at the Baltimore Glenn Martin plant sixteen years earlier, before the beginning of World War II. Undoubtedly, he had planted the seeds about electrogravitics at that early date.

At the same meeting, Dr. Walter R. Dornberger, a guided missile consultant for the Bell Aircraft Corporation, predicted that airliners would eventually travel at 10,000 miles per hour (Mach 13). This would make possible a trip from New York to Sidney, Australia, in approximately one hour. Two weeks later, Aviation Studies issued a report disclosing that many aircraft companies were aware of the existence of this antigravity technology:

> MANAGEMENT NOTE FOR ELECTRO-GRAVITICS
>
> New companies . . . who would like to see themselves as major defence prime contractors in ten or fifteen years time are the ones most likely to stimulate development. Several typical companies in Britain and the U.S. come to mind—outfits like AiResearch, Raytheon, Plessey in England, Rotax and others. But the companies have to face a decade of costly research into theoretical physics and it means a great deal of trust. Companies are mostly overloaded already and they cannot afford it, but when they sit down and think about the matter they can scarcely avoid the conclusion that they cannot afford not to be in at the beginning.
>
> *Aviation Report*, February 8, 1955[32]

In July 1955, *Aviation Report* quoted Lawrence D. Bell, founder of Bell Aircraft, as saying that the tempo of development leading to the use of antigravitational vehicles would accelerate and that breakthroughs that had become feasible at that time would advance the introduction of such vehicles ahead of the time it had taken to develop the turbojet.[33] That same issue predicted that government procurement would open up "because the capabilities of such aircraft are immeasurably greater than those envisaged with any known form of engine."

On October 15, 1955, the Department of Defense issued a news release informing the public that some government aircraft under development could resemble flying saucers. Secretary of the Air Force Donald A. Quarles stated:

> . . . we are now entering a period of aviation technology in which aircraft of unusual configuration and flight characteristics will begin to appear . . . The Air Force and other Armed Services have under development several vertical-rising, high performance aircraft . . . Vertical-rising aircraft capable of transition to supersonic horizontal flight will be a new phenomenon in our skies, and under certain conditions could give the illusion of the so-called flying saucer.[34]

Although Quarles did not refer to any unconventional propulsion technology, it may be no coincidence that just one year earlier the Pentagon had begun plans to fund the development of Brown's electrogravitics technology. To camouflage the truly exotic nature of the project, the news release called attention to the disc-shaped AVRO car, developed by AVRO Ltd. of Canada. The AVRO car was an ill-conceived vehicle that used a conventional air turbine that was ducted to provide vertical lift. Unfortunately, its design was inherently unstable; it had the persistent tendency to flip over after rising just a few feet off the ground.

The November 1955 issue of *Aviation Report* acknowledges the key role that the Aviation Studies newsletter played in catalyzing the development of the electrogravitics industry:

> ELECTROGRAVITICS FEASIBILITY
>
> The feasibility of a Mach 3 fighter (the present aim in studies) is dependent on a rather large K extrapolation, considering the pair of saucers that have physically demonstrated the principle only achieved a speed of some 30 fps [feet per second]. But, and this is important, they have attained a working velocity using a very inefficient (even by to-day's knowledge) form of condenser complex . . .
>
> It was, by the way, largely due to the early references in *Aviation Report* that work is gathering momentum in the U.S. Similar studies are beginning in France, and in England some men are on the job full time.
>
> *Aviation Report,* November 15, 1955[35]

Later that month, Ansel Talbert, military and aviation editor for the *New York Herald Tribune,* published a series of articles on the aviation industry's interest in gravity control. On November 20, he wrote:

> A number of major, long-established companies in the United States aircrafts and electronics industries also are involved in gravity research. Scientists in general, bracket gravity with life itself as the greatest unsolved mystery in the Universe. But there are increasing numbers who feel that there must be a physical mechanism for its propagation which can be discovered and controlled. Should this mystery be solved it would bring about a greater revolution in power, transportation, and many other fields than even the discovery of atomic power. The influence of such a discovery would be of tremendous import in the field of aircraft design where the problem of fighting gravity's effects has always been basic.[36]

Talbert's article displayed a photo of two General Dynamics Convair Division scientists conducting a research experiment aimed at controlling gravity. It showed them facing an apparatus supported on pillars that was wired with electrical connections. In an article dated November 21, Talbert named six other firms that were involved in such studies:

> Aircraft industry firms now participating or actively interested in gravity include the Glenn L. Martin Co. of Baltimore, builders of the nation's

> first giant jet-powered flying boat; Convair of San Diego, designers and builders of the giant B-36 intercontinental bomber and the world's first successful vertical take-off fighter; Bell Aircraft of Buffalo, builders of the first piloted airplane to fly faster than sound and a current jet "vertical takeoff and landing" airplane, and Sikorsky division of United Aircraft, pioneer helicopter builders. Lear, Inc., of Santa Monica, one of the world's largest builders of automatic pilots for airplanes; Clarke Electronics of Palm Springs, California, a pioneer in its field, and the Sperry Gyroscope Division of Sperry-Rand Corp., of Great Neck, L.I., which is doing important work on guided missiles and earth satellites, also have scientists investigating the gravity problem.[37]

Talbert also named several physicists who were interested in pursuing gravity control research:

> . . . current efforts to understand gravity and universal gravitation both at the sub-atomic level and at the level of the Universe have the positive backing today of many of America's outstanding physicists. These include Dr. Edward Teller of the University of California, who received prime credit for developing the hydrogen bomb; Dr. J. Robert Oppenheimer, director of the Institute for Advanced Study at Princeton; Dr. Freeman J. Dyson, theoretical physicist at the institute, and Dr. John A. Wheeler, professor of physics at Princeton University, who made important contributions to America's first nuclear fission project.[38]

Others mentioned to be working on understanding gravity included Dr. Vaclav Hlavaty of the University of Indiana and Drs. Stanley Deser and Richard Arnowitt of Princeton's Institute for Advanced Study. Unlike his colleague Albert Einstein, Hlavaty believed gravity simply to be one aspect of electromagnetism.

In his November 21 article, Talbert further acknowledged the existence of a widespread industry program geared toward gravity control research:

> Many in America's aircraft and electronics industries are excited over the possibility of using its magnetic and gravitational fields as

> a medium of support for amazing "flying vehicles" which will not depend on the air for lift. Space ships capable of accelerating in a few seconds to speeds many thousands of miles an hour and making sudden changes of course at these speeds without subjecting their passengers to the so-called "G-forces" caused by gravity's pull also are envisioned. These concepts are part of a new program to solve the secret of gravity and universal gravitation already in progress in many top scientific laboratories and long-established industrial firms of the nation.
>
> William P. Lear, inventor and chairman of the board of Lear, Inc., one of the nation's largest electronics firms specializing in aviation, for months has been going over new developments and theories relating to gravity with his chief scientists and engineers. Mr. Lear in 1950 received the Collier Trophy from the President of the United States "for the greatest achievement in aviation in America" through developing a light-weight automatic pilot and approach control system for jet fighter planes. He is convinced that it will be possible to create artificial "electro-gravitational fields whose polarity can be controlled to cancel out gravity." He told this correspondent: "All the (mass) materials and human beings within these fields will be part of them. They will be adjustable so as to increase or decrease the weight of any object in its surroundings. They won't be affected by the earth's gravity or that of any celestial body. This means that if any person was in an anti-gravitational airplane or space ship that carried along its own gravitational field . . . — no matter how fast you accelerated or changed course—your body wouldn't any more feel it than it now feels the speed of the earth."[39]

It is unlikely that an industrialist as prominent as Lear would make such a strong statement unless he himself had seen concrete evidence that such an electrogravitic effect was possible. Bell, whose company in Buffalo had built the first piloted aircraft in history to fly faster than sound, also was optimistic about the results of gravity research then in progress. The *New York Herald Tribune* quoted him as saying, "Aviation as we know it is on the threshold of amazing new concepts. The United States aircraft industry already is working with nuclear fuels and equipment to cancel out gravity instead of fighting it."[40]

Grover Loening, the first engineer hired by the Wright brothers and whose forty-year career in aircraft design, construction, and consulting had been decorated by the U.S. Air Force, told Talbert, "I firmly believe that before long man will acquire the ability to build an electromagnetic contra-gravity mechanism that works. Much the same line of reasoning that enabled scientists to split up atomic structures also will enable them to learn the nature of gravitational attraction and ways to counter it."[41]

Trimble's company, Glenn Martin, was the first in the United States to investigate electrogravitational propulsion.[42] This is not surprising given that Brown worked for Martin as early as 1939. The *New York Herald Tribune* said that, under Trimble's initiative, Martin Aircraft was building a laboratory between Baltimore and Washington to house the new Research Institute for Advanced Study, which would be committed to investigating the theoretical basis of electrogravitics and to conducting programs in applied research. Regarding the development of this new technology, the *Herald Tribune* quoted Trimble as saying, "I think we could do the job in about the time that it actually required to build the first atomic bomb if enough trained scientific brain-power simultaneously began thinking about and working towards a solution. Actually the biggest deterrent to scientific progress is a refusal of some people, including scientists, to believe that things which seem amazing can really happen."[43]

Dudley Clarke, president of Clarke Electronics, was also reported to be optimistic about gravity control. In an article dated November 22, Talbert stated, "Mr. Clarke notes that the force of gravity is powerful enough to generate many thousand times more electricity than now is generated at Niagara Falls and every other water-power center in the world—if it can be harnessed. This impending event, he maintains, will make heat and power needed by one family for an indefinite period."[44]

Two weeks after the *Herald Tribune* story came out, *Aviation Report* stated:

> Electro-gravitics Effort Widening
>
> Companies studying the implications of gravitics are said in a new statement, to include Glenn Martin, Convair, Sperry-Rand, Sikorsky,

> Bell, Lear Inc. and Clark[e] Electronics. Other companies who have previously evinced interest include Lockheed, Douglas and Hiller. The remainder are not disinterested, but have not given public support to the new science—which is widening all the time. The approach in the U.S. is in a sense more ambitious than might have been expected.
>
> *Aviation Report,* December 9, 1955[45]

Of these companies, Brown had particularly strong ties with Lockheed, having worked there just ten years earlier. The Aviation Studies' "Electrogravitic Systems" report, issued two months after the December 9 article quoted above, noted the increasing number of U.S. aviation companies that were expressing interest in antigravity propulsion technology:

> One of the difficulties in 1954 and 1955 was to get aviation to take electrogravitics seriously. The name alone was enough to put people off. However, in the trade much progress has been made and now most major companies in the United States are interested in counterbary. Groups are being organized to study electrostatic and electromagnetic phenomena. Most of the industry's leaders have made some reference to it. Douglas has now stated that it has counterbary on its work agenda but does not expect results yet awhile. Hiller has referred to new forms of flying platform, Glenn Martin say gravity control could be achieved in six years, but they add that it would entail a Manhattan District type of effort to bring it about. Sikorsky, one of the pioneers, more or less agrees with the Douglas verdict and says that gravity is tangible and formidable, but there must be a physical carrier for this immense trans-spatial force. This implies that where a physical manifestation exists, a physical device can be developed for creating a similar force moving in the opposite direction to cancel it. Clarke Electronics state they have a rig, and add that in their view the source of gravity's force will be understood sooner than some people think. General Electric is working on the use of electronic rigs designed to make adjustments to gravity—this line of attack has the advantage of using rigs already in existence for other defence work. Bell also has an experimental rig intended, as the company puts it, to cancel out

> gravity, and Lawrence Bell has said he is convinced that practical hardware will emerge from current programs. Grover Leoning is certain that what he referred to as an electro-magnetic contra-gravity mechanism will be developed for practical use. Convair is extensively committed to the work with several rigs. Lear Inc., autopilot and electronic engineers have a division of the company working on gravity research and so also has the Sperry division of Sperry-Rand. This list embraces most of the U.S. aircraft industry. The remainder, Curtis-Wright, Lockheed, Boeing and North American have not yet declared themselves, but all these four are known to be in various stages of study with and without rigs.[46]

The report added that a certain amount of antigravity work was also going on in Europe. It mentioned two French companies getting involved and several private ventures developing rigs in Britain. It also mentioned that one Swedish company, two Canadian companies, and several German companies were also making studies. The Airplane Corporation and Gluhareff Helicopter were among the foreign companies that had recently joined the growing gravity research club.

The report extrapolated that it should be possible to produce a Mach 3 fighter disc by electrifying the craft with million-volt potentials and using surface coatings having K-values of more than 10,000. By that time, K figures of 6,000 had been obtained from some ceramic materials, and researchers had demonstrated 30 percent weight reductions in some energized devices. Moreover, there were prospects of synthesizing ceramics with K figures as high as 30,000. Thus it was felt that an operational manned aircraft could be built simply by scaling up what was then already in existence.

The emphasis on using high-K dielectric materials for the craft's hull indicates that its designers planned to achieve gravity control primarily by electrically charging the craft's surface rather than depending entirely on the gravitic effect of external ion clouds. Nevertheless, since this vehicle was to obtain its high-voltage power from a flame-jet generator, its designers probably planned to make beneficial use of such auxiliary ion cloud effects.

One month after the February 1956 Aviation Studies report was released, *Interavia* magazine echoed similar optimism regarding the practical application of Brown's electrogravitic technology:

> Such a [gravitic] force raised exponentially to levels capable of pushing man-carrying vehicles through the air—or outer space—at ultra-high speeds is now the object of concerted effort in several countries. Once achieved, it will eliminate most of the structural difficulties now encountered in the construction of high-speed aircraft . . . The force is not a physical one acting initially at a specific point in the vehicle that needs then to be translated to all the other parts. It is an electrogravitic field acting on all parts simultaneously. Changes in direction and speed of flight would be effected by merely altering the intensity, polarity and direction of the charge.[47]

In December 1956, Aviation Studies issued a second progress report that pointed out the military advantages of the technology and mentioned that government funding was being continued:

> Electrostatic discs can provide lift without speed . . . This could be an important advance over all forms of airfoil which require induced flow; and (lift without airflow) is a development that deserves to be followed up in its own right, and one that for military purposes is already envisaged by the users as applicable to all three services (Army, Navy, & Air Force). This point has been appreciated in the United States and a program in hand may now ensure that development of large sized disks will be continued. This is backed by the U.S. Government, but it is something that will be pursued on a small scale. This acceptance follows Brown's original suggestion embodied in Project Winterhaven.[48]

The report also made the following revealing assessment of the electrogravitics industry situation:

> Already companies are specializing in evolution of particular components of an electrogravitics disk. This implies that the science is in the same state as the ICBM, namely that no new breakthroughs

> are needed, only intensive development engineering. This may be an optimistic reading of the situation; it is true that materials are now available for the condensers giving higher K figures than were postulated in Winterhaven as necessary, and all the ingredients necessary for the disks appear to be available. But industry is still some way from having an adequate power source, and possessing any practical experience of running such equipment.[49]

The report suggests that other companies were duplicating Brown's flying disc experiment and similarly obtaining speeds in the range of hundreds of miles per hour. It states, "High speeds in electrostatic propulsion of small discs will be worth keeping track of (by high speed one means hundreds of mph) and some of these results are beginning to filter through for general evaluation."[50] Interest in the subject of antigravity continued to accelerate in the following years. In January 1957, the Institute of Field Physics at the University of North Carolina in Chapel Hill held a weeklong scientific conference on the role of gravitation in physics. The conference was attended by forty-five physicists from the United States and seven other countries. Brown was undoubtedly among them. Interestingly, the Wright Air Development Center of Wright-Patterson Air Force Base was one of the sponsors of the meeting and was also in charge of publishing the conference proceedings.[51] That same year, J. E. Surrat Jr., vice president of the Society of Aeronautical Weight Engineers, said that Wright-Patterson was equipped with a multimillion-dollar installation designed for the research and study of antigravity forces.[52]

A. V. Cleaver, who worked as assistant chief engineer at the Aero Engine Division of Rolls-Royce, assessed the status of electrogravitics in a February 1957 article published in the prestigious *Journal of the British Interplanetary Society*.[53] He estimated that government and industry in the United States were spending on the order of $5 million annually on fundamental research on electrogravitics and noted that firms in France, Italy, and Japan may also have been researching the phenomenon.

Nevertheless, unknown to the many newcomers being indoctrinated into the field of electrogravitics, this multicompany R&D effort was merely supplementing a highly classified effort that had already been in progress since the end of World War II. This preexisting project, known as Project Skyvault, was actually ahead in achieving the goal of a manned antigravity craft. Yet before examining this project, let us study subsequent developments made by Brown that greatly improved the propulsion force of his technology.

3

ONWARD AND UPWARD

3.1 THE PARIS EXPERIMENTS

Skeptics had claimed that Brown's flying discs were propelled entirely by ion wind pressure and would lose their propulsive force if tested in a vacuum chamber where few air molecules would be present, but in 1955 and 1956, they were proved wrong. Under the sponsorship of the French government, Brown conducted a series of vacuum chamber experiments at facilities made available by Société Nationale du Constructions Aeronautiques du Sud-Ouest, a Paris-based aeronautical corporation. There, he successfully flew a pair of miniature saucer airfoils in a high vacuum of less than one billionth of an atmosphere. Not only did the discs propel themselves more efficiently, but they also sped faster, since, without ion leakage, they could be energized with greater voltages. The tests used a 200-watt power source to supply DC potentials ranging from 70 to 220 kilovolts.[1] Few details are known about these tests because the results were considered a confidential matter. However, it appears the discs measured about 4 to 5 inches in diameter and had a central body made of solid aluminum.[2,3] By comparison, the 1.5- and 3-foot-diameter discs that Brown had tested in his carousel demonstration were made of Plexiglas and lightweight sheet aluminum.

In addition to these miniature airfoils, Brown conducted vacuum chamber tests of a rotor apparatus. (Appendix D presents one of his reports on this experiment.[4]) The apparatus consisted of an arm that rotated about a central bearing and that was fitted at each end with a pair of electrodes (figure 3.1). When the electrodes were oppositely charged, the rotor spun like a pinwheel, revolving around its axis in the negative-to-positive direction. It was found that the torque increased in an exponential fashion with applied voltage. At times when a stream of electrons would discharge from the negative to the positive plate, the rotor would acquire a momentary burst of forward thrust. At around 150 kilovolts, the rate of rotation became so great after four or five discharges that the voltage had to be reduced for fear that the rotor might fly apart and shatter its glass bell-jar enclosure. Moreover, Brown found that the thrust persisted even when the capacitor elements were each surrounded by Plexiglas enclosures in the manner shown in figure 3.1. Since there was no way that ions could escape from the enclosures, ion thrust could be ruled out as a motive force. He also used asymmetrical capacitors having electrodes of differing sizes in which either the positive plate was larger than the negative or the negative plate was larger than the positive. However, neither of these geometries had any appreciable effect on the amount of thrust generated by the discharge events.

In February 1973, Dr. Rolf Schaffranke, who wrote the book *Ether Technology* under the pseudonym Rho Sigma, received a letter from Brown responding to inquiries he had made about Brown's Paris experiments.[5] In that letter Brown disclosed that the thrust on the rotor was several orders of magnitude larger than ion thrust could account for. He also related to Schaffranke that he had obtained a greater thrust when a massive high-K dielectric such as barium titanate was placed between

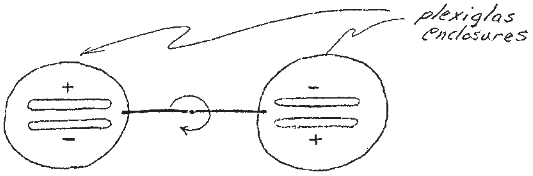

Figure 3.1. Top view of the electrogravitic rotor used in Thomas Townsend Brown's Paris vacuum chamber experiments. (After T. Brown.)

the capacitor plates. He also acknowledged that a residual thrust was obtained even when there were no discharges, clear evidence of the existence of a Biefeld-Brown electrogravitic effect.

Several effects could explain why very large thrusts accompanied each discharge event. As one possibility, the volley of high-energy electrons that formed the spark discharge could have delivered an electrogravitic impulse to the positive electrode. The electron burst would have moved from the negative to the positive electrode of the sparking rotor capacitor at close to the speed of light. That is, in the prevailing hard vacuum, electrons accelerated by a 150-kilovolt potential would have attained a velocity of about 82 percent of the speed of light. Subquantum kinetics predicts that these free electrons would have generated a local gravity potential hill, and as they flew toward the positive electrode, they would have carried this gravity potential hill with them. In the rotor rest frame, this would have appeared as a forward-propagating gravity potential wave. The sharp potential rise at the leading edge of this wave would have had a matter-repelling effect, which would have given a thrust impulse in the negative-to-positive direction as it momentarily passed through the positive electrode mass and any intervening dielectric. This electrogravitic impulse effect is further discussed in chapter 6 in connection with the gravity beam experiments of the Russian materials scientist Eugene Podkletnov.

The nonlinear field gradient associated with each spark could also have contributed to the thrust. Brown observed that the discharges were emitted from a point on his negative electrode and fanned out to produce a broad luminescence on his positive electrode. In other words, regardless of the size of his positive electrode, whether it was a 4-inch disc or a half-inch sphere, the field produced from the discharge would have fanned out from a small high-flux-density region to a larger low-density region. The fanning geometry of the discharge and the sudden onset of the discharge would momentarily have produced a nonlinear electric field between the capacitor plates. This in turn would have generated a large virtual-charge gradient between the capacitor electrodes along with an accompanying gravity potential gradient that would have momentarily induced a large thrust on the capacitor dielectric in the direction of the positive electrode, where the field's flux density would have been lowest. We will defer further discussion of such virtual charge electrogravitic effects until section 4.2 of the next chapter.

Brown's work as a consulting physicist for Société Nationale de Constructions Aeronautiques du Sud-Ouest came to an end in 1956, when the company merged with a larger company, Sud Est, that apparently had no interest in electrogravitics. That summer he returned to the United States with all his papers and took up residence in Washington, D.C.* There, he contacted the Navy, hoping to show them his Paris data, which proved that their earlier ion wind theory was wrong. He was met by Admiral Rickover, but instead of showing interest in Brown's results, the admiral sternly advised him not to take his electrogravitics work any further, that it would be best if he dropped it.[6] Nevertheless, by the end of 1956, the Pentagon had begun sponsoring electrogravitics research that was then in progress at some of the major aerospace firms and had apparently elevated the matter to a top-secret status. Was Brown, the father of this amazing technology, to be excluded from the inner circle of companies chosen to develop his ideas?

Brown was unwilling to give up that easily. He continued his work under the sponsorship of a Delaware company he had formed called Whitehall-Rand Corporation, which had offices in both Washington and London. He probably chose the name Whitehall to allude to the executive branch of the British government, which is based largely on Whitehall Street in London. In July 1957, while serving as its director of research and development, he protected his electric disc and flame-jet-driven aircraft ideas by applying for three U.S. patents (2,949,550; 3,018,394; and 3,022,430). When these were issued, in 1960 and 1962, they were assigned to Whitehall-Rand. Brown was the only contributor of patents to this company.

---

*By the end of August, Brown had founded the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena (also known as NICAP), a UFO research organization that at the time was the largest and most influential of such organizations. Nevertheless, four months later, as a result of a disagreement over what the organization's objectives should be, he was forced to resign as its director, the position being subsequently filled by Major Donald E. Keyhoe.

3.2 ■ OVERUNITY LEVITATION

In the fall of 1957, Brown teamed up with Dr. Frank King and Agnew Bahnson Jr., who also had a strong interest in antigravity research. Bahnson, an industrialist from Winston-Salem, North Carolina, had in 1956 played an instrumental role in establishing the Institute of Field Physics at the University of North Carolina, an organization dedicated to the study of gravitation. Having a longtime interest in Brown's electrostatic antigravity propulsion work, Bahnson constructed a well-equipped private laboratory in Winston-Salem and invited Brown down as consultant to work with himself and King. Beginning in November 1957 and continuing for several years, the three carried out electrogravitics research on various kinds of "ballistic electrode" saucer models. Bahnson kept a record of their work in a series of laboratory notebooks, and some of this was reviewed by Charles Yost in the second issue of *Electric Spacecraft Journal*.[7] This work led Brown and Bahnson to file a series of U.S. patent applications in May 1958: an "electrokinetic apparatus" patent awarded to Brown in June 1965 (3,187,206) and two "electrical thrust producing device" patents awarded to Bahnson in 1960 and 1966 (2,958,790 and 3,263,102).

That same year, Brown and his friends organized a company called Rand International Limited, with Brown serving as its president. Together, they carried on electrogravitics experiments and applied for more than seventy-five patents in twelve major countries (the United States, Australia, Canada, France, Belgium, Great Britain, Germany, Holland, Italy, Japan, Sweden, and Switzerland).

It was around this time that Brown succeeded in developing a 15-inch-diameter, dome-shaped saucer that was capable of levitating its own weight! Kitselman, Brown's mathematician friend, related that he had contacted Brown after being out of touch with him for several years and was told, "The lift isn't just 1 percent any longer; the apparatus will now lift 110 percent of its own weight!" Kitselman and his wife immediately flew to Washington and with their own eyes saw a moderately heavy gadget made of metal and Pyrex lift itself right up when 50 kilovolts of electricity were applied and float steadily when a slightly lower voltage was used.[8]

In an April 1973 letter to Schaffranke, Brown confirmed that he had performed this demonstration but indicated that he had conducted experiments throughout the entire voltage range from 50 to 250 kilovolts DC. Illustrating his letter with the sketch depicted in figure 3.2, Brown wrote:

> Mr. Kitselman witnessed an experiment utilizing a 15" circular, dome-shaped aluminum electrode, wired and energized as in the attached sketch. When the high voltage was applied, this device, although tethered by wires from the high voltage equipment, did rise in the air, lifting not only its own weight but also a small balance weight which was attached to it on the underside. It is true that this apparatus would exert a force of upward of 110% of its weight.[9]

In a November 1, 1971, letter written to electrical engineer Tom Turman to respond to some of Turman's questions, Brown described tests on an 18-inch-diameter disc that lifted 125 percent of its weight:

> We used a triarcuate ballistic electrode as the anode and a small electrode underneath as the cathode . . . The large electrode was made of a balsa umbrella-like frame with aluminum foil covering. A thin glass stand-off insulator mounted the cathode as shown in the drawing [drawing shown in appendix A]. The lift of this unit at 170 kv was

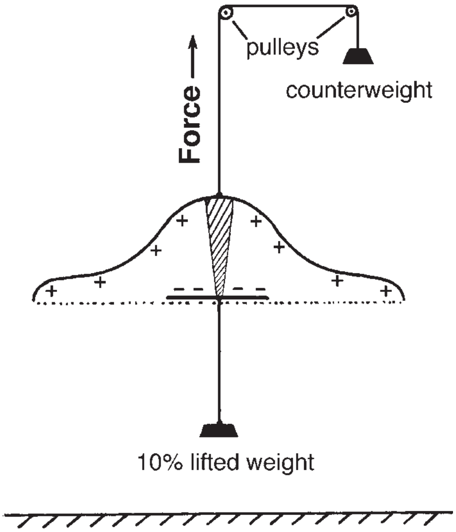

Figure 3.2. A cross-sectional view of a model electrogravitic saucer that was capable of sustained levitation. (Brown, April 5, 1973, letter written to R. Schaffranke)

> about 125 grams. The electrode structure itself weighed only about 100 grams, so it was actually self-levitating.[10]

The report titled “Electrohydrodynamics,” issued in March 1960 by the Electrokinetics Corporation, presents a diagram of this 18-inch-diameter test model that shows that a toroidal air current vortex was generated beneath the arcuate electrode when the electrode was electrified (figure 3.3).[11] It notes that this vortex was an effective aerodynamic pattern for inducing lift, although vacuum chamber tests that were conducted showed that any momentum that may have been imparted by this ion wind would have been many orders of magnitude too small to account for the observed thrust. The report notes that hydrostatic pressure exerted against the entire inner surface of the large arcuate electrode resulted in a lift force.

In a second letter to Turman, Brown drew cross-sectional views showing how the hydrostatic air pressure is distributed beneath the positively charged electrode for differing inclinations of the negative electrode (see figure 3.4).[12] The pressure was found to be up to 0.25-inch water gauge (~0.64 gram per cm^2) and more positive below the electrode than in the disc’s immediate surroundings. Estimating from Brown’s sketch, the positive pressure beneath the positive electrode would have averaged about 0.1 inch water gauge, or about 0.25 gram per cm^2. An 18-inch-diameter saucer would have had a cross-sectional area of 1640 cm^2; hence, this pressure would have imparted an upward force of up to 400 grams, more than enough to support the 125-gram weight.

Commenting on various means of steering or stabilizing the flight of such a saucer, Brown wrote:

Figure 3.3. Thomas Townsend Brown’s 18-inch-diameter triarcuate ballistic electrode and its generation of a toroidal airflow vortex. (Courtesy of the Townsend Brown Family and Qualight, L.L.C.)

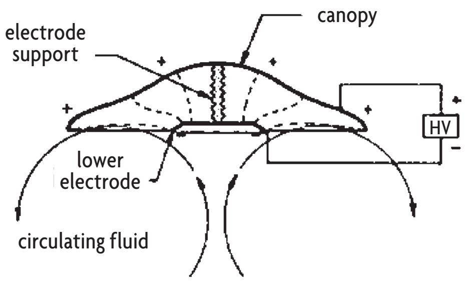

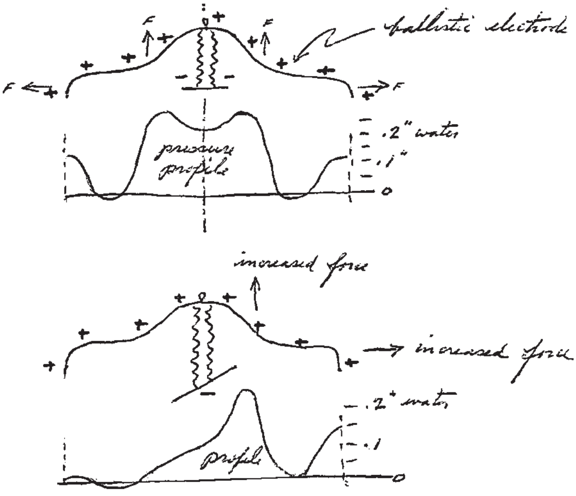

Figure 3.4. The pressure profile under Brown's vertical lift triarcuate ballistic electrode. (Drawing from a 1971 letter from T. T. Brown to T. Turman; see appendix A, letter 3)

> It was found that, by canting the center electrode, the pressures could be unbalanced so that one side or the other could be lifted. This could provide horizontal stability in a large prototype. An alternate way of doing this is to provide three independent electrodes in triangular configuration instead of one center electrode. These electrodes can be differently charged in order to change the electric field configuration under the ballistic canopy and this did away with the necessity for a mechanical moving part. Horizontal stability could be maintained entirely electrically.[13]

Brown recognized that the forces involved may not be just electrogravitic, but may also involve a more conventional electrostatic force phenomenon such as electrophoresis (the force exerted on a charged particle in the presence of electric fields) or dielectrophoresis (the force exerted on dielectric materials in the presence of nonuniform electric fields). He referred to this new field of study generally as *electrohydrodynamics*—the study of high-intensity electric field phenomena and their influence on nonconducting (dielectric) media. He regarded this area of investigation to be the counterpart to the more widely known field of magnetohydrodynamics. Electrokinetics Corporation's "Electrohydrodynamics" report also describes vacuum chamber tests in which a 6-inch-diameter ballistic electrode saucer was made to levitate when energized at 150 kilovolts DC, the lift force reaching a detectable level above 10 kilovolts. The graph reproduced in figure 3.5 indicates how thrust and input electric current were found to vary as air pressure was decreased, with the supplied DC voltage being kept constant.[14] The report notes that when the pressure fell moderately below one atmosphere, current rose catastrophically and went off-scale when the pressure had decreased to about a hundredth of an atmosphere (10 mm of mercury). At these low pressures, the air spontaneously ionized, producing a glow discharge that shorted out the electrodes. As a result, the electrogravitic thrust plummeted, only to reappear when the pressure had dropped to the very low value of 4 × 10^{-6} atmospheres (0.003 mm of mercury). At and below this hard vacuum pressure, the glow discharge diminished, along with a precipitous drop in current to the device. Significantly, the graph demonstrates that *thrust remained constant at 17 grams (0.6 g/cm^2), despite the major drop in supplied current.* The report states:

> A significant feature of the curves is that, except for this limitation [the glow discharge gap], thrust remains constant with the reduction

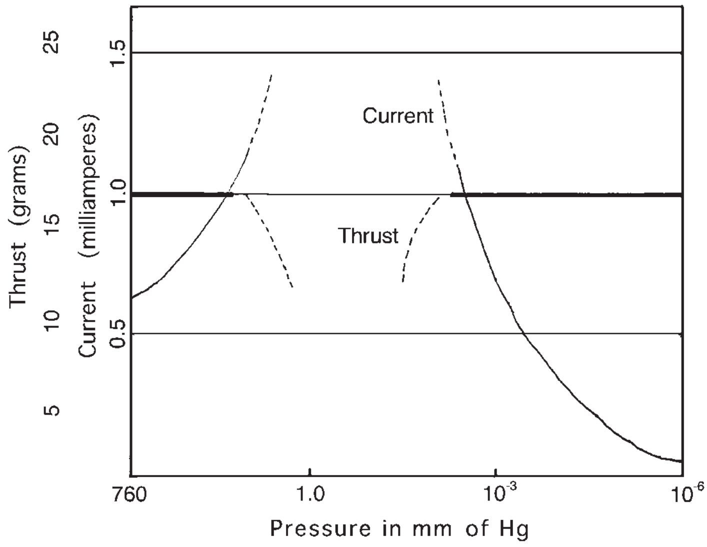

Figure 3.5. Typical plot showing how thrust and current vary with vacuum pressure for an electrohydrodynamic thrust device. (Sketch provided by T. T. Brown to A. Wagner)

> in pressure to 10^{-6} mm of Hg, while current consumption falls off sharply—demonstrating the system's improved efficiency as a hard vacuum is approached.
>
> For this reason the strong indication remains that thrust results primarily from electrostatic field stresses, rather than plasma flow. Thus electrohydrodynamics may prove more efficient in a hard vacuum (10^{-12} mm of Hg) than in air where the induced plasma actually seems to result in unnecessary power consumption.[15]

Because the rate of ion flux passing between the electrodes of the device correlates with current, the ion wind should accordingly have dropped precipitously with the drop in current. Hence, the data clearly demonstrate that the source of the observed thrust is due not to ion wind, as critics often charged, but rather to some other force. This raises a question in regard to the canopy pressure measurements described in chapter 2. In the vacuum chamber tests, there would have been no vortical ion movement below the positive electrode, nor any air-induced pressure differential of the sort proposed in explaining the operation of the aero-marine vertical takeoff vehicle. The suggestion in the "Electrohydrodynamics" report that the upward thrust results from "electrostatic field stresses" is explored later in this chapter.

Another test, presumably carried out with a larger electrode and energized at a higher voltage, achieved even greater thrusts:

> Laboratory devices weighing 100 grams (approx. 3.5 ounces) less power source have produced a thrust of 110 grams, for an electrical power expenditure of 500 watts (250,000 volts @ 2.0 milliamperes). This experiment was performed in air (1 atmosphere). Supplementary research indicates much greater efficiency results (same thrust for less power input) when operated in a vacuum (10^{-4} mm Hg or better), when the current drops to about 2.0 microamperes.[16]

Here, the report makes the astounding disclosure that under hard vacuum conditions, a force of 110 grams (1.1 newtons) could be achieved for a power expenditure of just 0.5 watt (250,000 volts times 2×10^{-6} amps), or 2,200 newtons of thrust per kilowatt. This is about 150 times the thrust-to-power ratio of a jet engine! Also, it is 10,000 times greater than the thrust-to-power ratio of a space shuttle main engine. The report notes that under harder vacuum conditions of 10^{-12}mmHg, such as exist in space, Brown's electrokinetic propulsion device would be expected to achieve even higher efficiencies due to a further reduction in ion leakage power consumption. The report also compared the observed thrust with that of the National Aeronautics and Space Administration's (NASA) ion propulsion engine, which weighed ten times as much as Brown's saucer and produced only 28 grams of force for an input power of 1,200 watts, or just 0.23 newton per kilowatt. Hence, NASA's ion propulsion engine was 10,000 times less efficient than Brown's electrokinetic disc.

These measurements of thrust indicated that the force lifting Brown's electrified disc was almost 100 million times greater than what could reasonably be generated by an ion wind. For example, an upward thrust of 110 grams is equivalent to a force of about 10^5 dynes. By comparison, a 2-microampere ion wind resulting from electrons accelerated in a 250-kilovolt potential would yield a force of somewhat over 10^{-3} dynes, almost 100 million times less than the lift produced by Brown's apparatus.

Ion Wind Force

The upper-limit estimate for ion wind force may be arrived at through the following calculation: An electron current of 2×10^{-6} amps would comprise an ion wind flux of $\Phi = 1.25 \times 10^{13}$ electrons per second. A voltage drop of 250,000 volts would accelerate these particles to a velocity $v = 2.96 \times 10^{10}$ cm/sec, or 0.988c, which would yield a Lorentz factor of $\gamma = 6.6$. The ion wind force, or electron momentum flux, would equal $F = 9.1 \times 10^{-28}$ g/electron $\bullet \gamma \bullet \Phi \bullet v = 2.2 \times 10^{-3}$ dynes. If the ion wind was made up of aluminum ions instead of electrons, the resulting force would be only thirty-eight-fold greater. By comparison, the lifting force Brown observed amounted to 110 gm • 980 cm/sec^2 = 1.08×10^5 dynes.

This vertical-lift device performed much better than the tethered electrokinetic discs that Brown flew in his demonstration for Will Cady, the scientist from the ONR. It developed fourteen times greater thrust when electrified at a voltage that was more than five times higher. Also, it consumed thirty times less power when operated under vacuum conditions.

Moreover, Brown's apparatus would have yielded a far greater thrust if it had used barium titanate for its dielectric instead of Pyrex. Barium titanate ceramics can have a dielectric constant, K, of around 5,000 when charged with a DC potential, but when rapidly charged and discharged at frequencies of hundreds of megahertz, its K value may drop to about 50. The lower value may be the more relevant here because, as discussed in section 3.4 of this chapter, it appears that he was cyclically varying the voltage potential across the plates of his electrokinetic apparatus at frequencies of around 750 megahertz to maintain a high thrust condition. The "Electrohydrodynamics" report notes that thrust on the electrokinetic apparatus was observed to increase directly with the K value of the dielectric and according to the square (or in some cases the cube) of the applied voltage. Consequently, a dielectric having a K equal to 50, which is about twelve times greater than the dielectric constant for Pyrex, would produce a twelvefold-greater thrust. Also considering that barium titanate has a mass density 2.7 times that of Pyrex, it should develop a proportionately greater thrust when subject to a gravitational gradient. So, one might expect overall a thirty-two-fold improvement, allowing Brown's apparatus to generate a phenomenally high levitating force of about 3.5 kilograms! If this high-K dielectric device consumed only half a watt of power, its thrust-to-power ratio would have had the unusually high value of 70,000 newtons per kilowatt, almost five thousand times that of a jet engine.

The measurements reporting a power consumption of only half a watt may have been referring to just the DC power consumption. If substantially greater power was needed to establish an AC field across the apparatus, then the thrust-to-power ratio value estimated above would have to be reduced accordingly. If tests were conducted with barium titanate, curiously, they are not mentioned in the report.

Brown probably did not openly discuss such test results because they were so phenomenal. If reports were written, it is possible that they are currently classified.

Consider the usefulness of this technology for spaceflight. Suppose that a high-K electrokinetic thruster was able to achieve a thrust-to-power ratio of 70,000 newtons per kilowatt. Energized by a 3-kilowatt power source, a bank of 6,000 asymmetrical capacitors could develop a thrust of 21 metric tons (210,000 newtons), enough to propel a small, 100-ton spacecraft to Mars in just over five days. Using chemical or nuclear rocket propulsion, the same trip would require anywhere from five to seven months and demand a far greater fuel load. If this 100-ton spacecraft were placed in space and left to accelerate under the influence of this 0.21-g force (21 tons/100 tons), its propulsion efficiency would increase linearly with time. By the end of one second, when it had attained a velocity of about 2 meters per second, its propulsion efficiency would already have reached 7,000 percent.* Moreover, its efficiency would continue to increase tenfold with every additional tenfold increase in flight time. Because kinetic energy far in excess of the inputted electric energy appears to be created out of nowhere, Brown's device, by its nature, violates the first law of thermodynamics. Such iconoclastic results become the new norm when one steps into the era of field propulsion.

3.3 ■ NONLINEAR FIELDS

Unlike his tethered flying disc models, Brown's levitating saucer models had no bumper wires for generating positive and negative ions. An idea of how they achieved their high antigravity thrust was put forth in Brown's "electrokinetic apparatus" patent, filed in 1958 and awarded in 1965, which discussed the assembly shown in figure 3.6. The patent attributes the thrust of the device to its ability to produce a nonlinear field gradient between its positive and negative electrodes, the gradient being steeper at the negative electrode than at the positive electrode. This was accomplished by curving the upper, positively charged surface into the form of a parabaloid and by reducing the size of the negative electrode. The negative electrode was pictured either as a small-diameter sphere or as a disc placed at the positive electrode's geometrical focus. Regarding the importance of having a nonlinear field gradient across the dielectric member, Brown wrote:

---

*A 0.21-g accelerating force will accelerate a 100-ton craft at the rate of 206 cm/s^2. After one second, this craft will attain a velocity of about 2 m/sec and have a kinetic energy of $E_k = 2.1 \times 10^{12}$ ergs. During this second, the craft's 3-kilowatt electric power consumption, E_e, would have resulted in a total energy consumption of 3,000 joules, or $E_e = 3 \times 10^{10}$ ergs. Hence, the propulsion efficiency would equal $\varepsilon = E_k/E_e = 7{,}060$ percent.

> I have discovered that if two electrodes are mounted on opposite ends of a dielectric member, and a field emanates from these electrodes which produces a linear gradient through the dielectric member as shown by dotted line 30 of FIGURE 3 [dashed line in figure 3.6], then no thrust is produced by the dielectric member. However, if the field is distorted to produce a nonlinear gradient such as graphically represented by line 32 in FIGURE 3 [solid line in figure 3.6], then a thrust will be produced which thrust will be related to the degree of nonlinearity of the field gradient. One way to produce a gradient which varies nonlinearly is to shape one of the electrodes in a form of an arcuate surface . . .[17]

Brown's patent suggests that the electric field gradient could also be made nonlinear by using a conical dielectric member that tapers toward the negative electrode or one whose dielectric constant K progressively changes along its length, that is, one that preferably decreases toward the negative electrode. It also points out that the force is directed from a

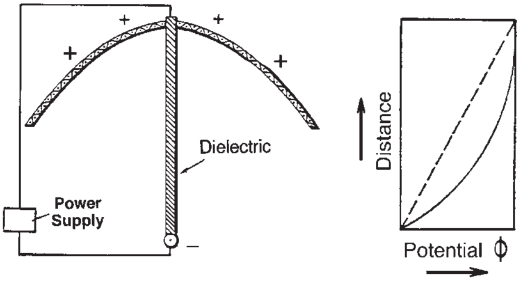

Figure 3.6. An electrogravitic thrust-producing device described in Brown's 1965 patent (left), electric potential, Φ, plotted versus distance along the length of the dielectric rod (right).

region where the electric flux density is high toward a region where the electric flux density is low. For example, it states:

> By attaching a pair of electrodes to opposite ends of a dielectric member and connecting a source of high electrostatic potential to these electrodes, a force is produced in the direction of one electrode provided that electrode is of such configuration to cause the lines-of-force to converge steeply upon the other electrode. The force, therefore, is in a direction from the region of high flux density toward the region of low flux density, generally in the direction through the axis of the electrodes. The thrust produced by such a device is present if the electrostatic field gradient between the two electrodes is nonlinear. This nonlinearity of gradient may result from a difference in the configuration of the electrodes, . . . from the shape of the dielectric member, from a gradient in the density, electric conductivity, electric permittivity and magnetic permeability of the dielectric member, or a combination of these factors.[18]

Brown often emphasized that nonlinear electric fields were central to the phenomenon. In a letter to Turman in 1968, he wrote that this 1965 patent held the key to understanding electrogravitics:*

> The Patent No. 3,187,206 contains the essential teaching in electrogravitics. A definition of the electrogravitic force might be "the ponderomotive force developed within a high-K dielectric under electrical strain." The patent teaches the use of nonlinear electric fields such as those internally developed in truncated cones of dielectric material. . . . The belief that the phenomenon is gravitic in nature is based almost entirely upon the appearance of the effects of mass (in the dielectric material) on the force exhibited.[19]

Brown did not elaborate as to why a nonlinear electric field would produce increased thrust. He arrived at his conclusions from careful observation but offered no theory to account for them. However, by extending the theory described in chapter 1 for the electrogravitic effects of charge densities, it should be possible to gain an understanding of how nonlinear electric fields might boost a capacitor's electrogravitic thrust. This involves understanding how a nonlinear field would produce a *virtual-charge-density gradient* across a dielectric and how this gradient, in turn, would generate a gravity field gradient. A virtual charge is a charge source, like an electron or proton, but is one that is not associated with any particle. It instead arises from the ambient electric field continuum whenever that field varies with distance in a nonlinear manner.

---

*This and other letters that Brown wrote to Tom Turman are reproduced in appendix A.

This virtual-charge concept is most easily understood within the "ether physics" context presented in the next chapter. Thus we will defer discussing the virtual-charge electrogravitic thrust effects on Brown's electrokinetic apparatus until after the subquantum kinetics ether concept has been introduced. It should be noted here, however, that with sufficient field nonlinearity, the electrogravitic thrust effects produced by virtual charges could far exceed those produced by the real charges being applied to the capacitor plates.

Part of the thrust developed by Brown's electrokinetic apparatus would also have been produced by unbalanced *electrostatic* forces acting on the charges on the capacitor's plates. An unbalanced residual force would have been present because the capacitor's nonlinear electric field would have exerted more force on the smaller electrode than on the larger electrode. Such a residual force would be absent in a conventional capacitor having equal-size electrodes. Such capacitors establish a linear electric field across their dielectric when charged, the electric potential gradient being the same at their negative pole as at their positive pole. The electric field gradient being created across the charged capacitor, then, would electrostatically attract the capacitor's negatively charged electrode toward the field's positive pole and the capacitor's positively charged electrode toward the field's negative pole. Because both capacitor plates would carry the same surface charge density and be subject to the same field gradient, these two attractive forces would be equal to and opposite one another. Hence, the capacitor would experience a compressive force pushing the plates in toward the dielectric. However, since these forces would balance one another, the capacitor as a whole would experience no net translatory motion. In this force analysis, we assume that the capacitor's electric field is anchored neither to the capacitor's charges nor to the capacitor's plates, but rather resides in the capacitor's environs as an independent entity capable of exerting forces on the very same charges that created it.

Now, let us instead consider an asymmetrical capacitor of the kind that Brown used in his electrokinetic saucer experiments, one whose positive electrode is larger than its negative electrode (figure 3.7). The electric field across this type of capacitor varies with distance in a nonlinear fashion, the electric flux density and field gradient being highest at the capacitor's negative pole and lowest at its positive pole. Suppose the capacitor is in a vacuum and, hence, has no ionic charges around it. The electric field established in the vicinity of the lower negative electrode would induce an attractive force on the negative charges gathered there, which would be directed upward toward the electric field's positive pole. Also, the electric field established in the vicinity of the upper positive electrode end of the dielectric would induce an attractive force on the positive charges gathered there, which would be directed downward toward the field's negative pole (figure 3.7). However, since the electric field lines converge toward the negative electrode, the field gradient would be stronger there as compared with the positively charged

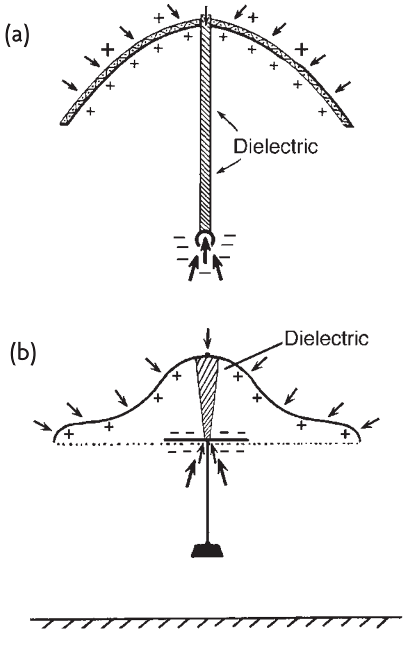

Figure 3.7. Unbalanced electrostatic repulsion forces induced on the dielectric members of two of Brown's saucer designs: (a) design illustrated in his electrokinetic apparatus patent and (b) apparatus used in test witnessed by Kitselman. (P. LaViolette, © 2007)

end of the dielectric. Consequently, the force pulling the lower end of the dielectric upward would be greater than the force pulling the upper end of the dielectric downward. As a result, the capacitor as a whole would experience a net force directed upward toward its larger electrode.

Moreover, the force vectors on the upper electrode would have only a fraction of their total force directed downward. The more peripheral regions of the positive electrode that make up most of the electrode's surface would have their force vectors angled inward, toward the dielectric axis, with a lesser vector component being directed downward (see figure 3.7). It then becomes clear why Brown fashioned his upper electrode into an umbrella-like arcuate shape, so that it curved downward to enclose all or most of the dielectric column. This pulled a greater number of positive charges toward the electrode's periphery and changed the direction of the attractive forces affecting those upper electrode charges, causing their vectors to be angled more horizontally, perpendicular to the dielectric axis. Thus the downward force on the upper electrode would be less than the upward force on the lower electrode both because the upper electrode force magnitudes would be less and because they would be vectored so that only a portion of their thrust would be aimed downward.

Such unbalanced electrostatic forces would produce a thrust toward the larger electrode even if the capacitor's polarity was reversed. This is because the direction of the residual electrostatic force is not linked to plate polarity, but to the direction in which the electric field diverges. The directional dependence for this electrostatic thrust differs from that for the electrogravitic thrust which, as explained in the previous section, is always directed toward the positive electrode. So, depending on the polarity of the DC field across the asymmetrical capacitor, the unbalanced electrostatic thrust would either reinforce or oppose the electrogravitic thrust.

In his patent, Brown mentions that his asymmetrical electrokinetic apparatus always produces a thrust toward its larger electrode, even when the electrode polarity is reversed, although he mentions that the thrust is greater when the larger electrode is positive rather than negative. This suggests that the electrogravitic force is being overpowered by the unbalanced electrostatic thrust that depends on field geometry rather than plate polarity. However, his statements here appear to be referring to the case where his thruster is energized with a DC potential. He does not comment on the correlation of thrust direction with plate polarity when an AC field is energizing the apparatus.

In responding to the unbalanced electrostatic force, the upward movement of Brown's electrokinetic apparatus would occur *with no recoil displacement of the electric field it was generating*. In fact, as the apparatus moves upward, the charges that generate this field would also move upward, so the field would move upward as well. Thus, by means of this unbalanced force effect, Brown's saucer, so to speak, "picks itself up by its own bootstraps."

Standard physics is somewhat split over the issue of whether a field might exist as an independent entity. For example, most would agree that electromagnetic waves propagate as entities independent of the displaced charges that first created them. However, the notion that an electrostatic field exists independently of the charges creating it poses a problem for theories that view electrostatic attraction as being mediated by entities such as virtual particles that are "mechanically" ejected and subsequently absorbed with a momentum recoil at the time of ejection and an equal and opposite momentum transfer at the time of absorption.

Subquantum kinetics, however, avoids this source-to-target momentum exchange requirement. According to subquantum kinetics, charges are able to create an electric field without suffering any momentum recoil from the effect that this field might produce on other charges. In other words, the source charges are blind to the consequences of the field they are producing. Also, when the field's voltage gradient accelerates these other charges, they respond with no recoil being transferred back to the field. In the familiar case of repulsion between two like-charged particles, each particle acquires its repulsive impulse by responding to the other particle's field with no recoil momentum being imparted to the field itself. This reactionless electrostatic thrust idea is generally consistent with a similar idea independently advanced by French inventor Jean-Claude Lafforgue (see discussion in chapter 4). The existence of electrostatic thrust in asymmetrical capacitors has been demonstrated in tests of devices developed by Lafforgue, which are reviewed in chapter 12.

As the nonlinearity and steepness of the applied voltage gradient increase, so too does the net thrust developed from the unbalanced electrostatic forces. The magnitude of the induced electrostatic force also depends on the amount of charge stored on the capacitor's plates. This explains why Brown emphasized using a high-K dielectric. For a given voltage differential, high-K dielectrics are able to store up more electric charge on their end electrodes, the amount of charge being directly proportional to their K factor. With a greater charge load, the plates are able to generate a proportionately greater unbalanced attractive force with respect to the ambient field. In agreement with this, the "Electrohydrodynamics" report states that under vacuum, the thrust on the triarcuate electrode was observed to increase in direct proportion to the K of the dielectric, that is, in proportion to the stored charge; recall the previous section.

Increasing the voltage across the dielectric would also cause the dielectric to store more charge because its ability to store charge is directly proportional to the applied voltage differential. At the same time, the higher voltage would increase the electric potential gradient across the capacitor and thereby augment the inward attractive force acting on each of its electrodes. Hence, for a given field geometry, a given increase in voltage should produce a far greater increase in thrust. Indeed, Brown found that the thrust on his saucer varied as the square or cube of voltage.

When Brown's electrokinetic apparatus was operated in an atmosphere, ionic forces also played a role, although in view of the results of the vacuum chamber tests described in the "Electrohydrodynamics" report, such forces could not have been very significant. Positive ions tended to be emitted on the underside of the canopy, the side facing the negative electrode, and they produced an upward-repelling force on the positive charges in the canopy. Also, negative ions emitted from the lower, negative electrode produced a negative space charge located somewhat above this electrode. This repelled the negative charges in that electrode, producing a force directed inward toward the electrode and angled downward. It is difficult to say whether the force produced by the upward-repelling positive ionic charges prevailed over the force produced by the downward-repelling negative ionic charges to produce a net upward thrust. Ionic forces appear to be more important in understanding the operation of the lifter devices that are described in chapter 12.

To summarize, electrostatic forces on the plates of a capacitor become unbalanced when the electric field intensity varies nonlinearly with distance between the plates. The net thrust increases as the field nonlinearity increases in accordance with the teachings of Brown's patent.

3.4 ■ AC FIELDS

Careful reading of Brown's 1965 patent indicates that he proposed applying an AC voltage across the high-K dielectric of his thrust-producing device. He may have gotten a clue to energizing his dielectric with a nonlinear AC field potential as a result of studying the results of his Paris vacuum-chamber experiments. Observing that the test rotor in those experiments developed a very high electrogravitic thrust during each of its spontaneous electron discharges, it would have been natural for him to steer his research in the direction of duplicating these high-thrust conditions by rapidly charging and discharging his vertical thrust electrokinetic apparatus with a high-frequency oscillating field.

Brown's 1965 patent suggests that a cyclically varying potential would repeatedly establish a nonlinear field gradient along the length of the dielectric member and increase the resulting thrust:

> In applying potentials to these various embodiments, it has been found that the rate at which the potential is applied often influences the thrust. This is especially true where dielectric members of high dielectric constant are used and the charging time is a factor. In such cases, the field gradient changes as the charge is built up. . . . One advantageous manner of applying potential is that of employing potentials which vary cyclically.[20]

In his patent, Brown proposed applying a high-voltage AC field in the megahertz radio frequency range to a hornlike device fitted with a conical dielectric (figure 3.8). The small disc (29) at the apex of the dielectric was identified as a "half-wave radiator," and the applied AC voltage was said to be of a frequency such that a half-wavelength spans the disc's diameter.

Note that the saucers that Brown tested, which succeeded in levitating 110 to 125 percent of their own weight, also used a disc electrode attached to the tip of a central dielectric column. Hence, these devices were essentially the same design as the microwave device pictured in figure 3.8, except that their positive electrode was curved rather than conical in shape and the disc antenna was somewhat larger. So the dramatic lift Brown obtained in these experiments may have been because he was applying radio frequency AC in addition to the high-voltage DC bias potential. In describing this experiment to Kitselman, Schaffranke, and Turman, Brown never mentioned that he was also using AC. Perhaps this was the key to the practical application of his technology, and for that reason, he wished to keep that aspect proprietary.

In the case of the device shown in figure 3.2, whose canopy was 15 inches in diameter, the negative disc electrode would have been about 4 inches (i.e., 10 cm) in diameter. In the absence of an attached dielectric, it would have been most efficiently excited at a frequency of around 1.5 gigahertz to radiate a 20-centimeter wavelength. However, in this case, in which the same size disc is cemented to the apex of a dielectric cone, the dielectric changes the disc's impedance so that the antenna would be driven more efficiently at a lower frequency, say

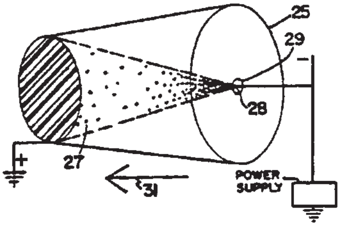

Figure 3.8. An electrokinetic apparatus proposed by Thomas Townsend Brown that used high-voltage AC to generate an electrogravitic thrust. Numbers indicate the following: positive electrode in the form of a frustrated metallic cone (25); frustrated dielectric cone (27) containing semiconducting particles near its tip (28); negative electrode in the form of a disc serving as a half-wave radiator (29); direction of electrogravitic thrust (31). (From Brown, U.S. patent 3,187,206, figure 4)

of 750 megahertz, which would be in the UHF range.* This would radiate a proportionately longer free-space wavelength of 40 centimeters. Provided that the negative disc electrode was spaced from the positively charged canopy by a quarter-wavelength distance (about 10 centimeters), the canopy (or horn) would act as a resonator cavity, allowing a 10-centimeter quarter-wavelength standing wave to build up across the two ends of its central dielectric.

Let us suppose that the DC potential bias applied across the capacitor dielectric was chosen to be -100 kilovolts and that the AC field amplitude was adjusted to have a comparable value of 95 kilovolts and was applied so that the negative electrode potential was left free to oscillate relative to the grounded positive electrode. The net potential across the capacitor, due to the summed AC and DC potentials, then would have varied between -5 kilovolts and -195 kilovolts. As explained in the next chapter, this repeating unipolar oscillation would have generated a virtual-charge gradient across the dielectric that would have produced an oscillating unidirectional electrogravitic thrust on the apparatus.

The electrogravitic thrust would have been stronger than that achieved with DC energization alone because with such a rapid charging cycle, the dielectric would have had insufficient time to appreciably polarize in response to each voltage onset. Hence, the dielectric's opposing electrogravitic dipole moment would have been unable to build up sufficiently to cancel out the imposed electrogravitic field, allowing a maximal thrust to be exerted throughout the dielectric. Unlike Brown's gravitator, described in chapter 1, whose forward thrust progressively diminished after being initially energized, the oscillating potential applied across his electrokinetic thruster would have caused it to receive a series of rapidly recurring forward thrusts.

Brown's patent suggests that the half cycle period of the AC voltage oscillation applied to the asymmetrical capacitor's negative electrode was comparable to the time taken for this voltage change to travel across the dielectric to the capacitor's positive electrode. Under such a circumstance, the applied oscillation would increase the nonlinearity of the field spanning the dielectric and thereby boost the thrust arising from both the electrogravitic effect and the unbalanced electrostatic force effect.

---

*For example, copper ferrite–barium titanate composites have a dielectric constant of about 50 in the frequency range of 10^8 to 10^9 hertz, the dielectric constant of such high-K dielectrics being much lower at high frequencies than at low frequencies. Knowing that the optimal driving frequency scales as $1/\sqrt{K}$ and that the dielectric covers only a small portion of the diameter of the radiating disc, we might surmise that the optimal driving frequency would be reduced by a factor of 2 rather than 7, making it about 750 megahertz.

There is another aspect to this AC energizing that Brown did not discuss in his patent—namely, that a phase-locked stationary wave pattern would have formed beneath his disc and stored up the energy of each AC cycle. This would have created an electric and gravity potential gradient in the space around the disc that would have progressively increased over time, eventually becoming far greater than the gradient applied during any individual cycle. Tesla observed this effect in his experiments with high-voltage, high-frequency shock discharges. This important effect is well known to "black-project" engineers, who term it "field-induced soliton phenomenon." It is explored further in chapter 8, in the discussion of phase-conjugate resonance.

Rapid recurrent charging of the dielectric should also improve the thrust arising from unbalanced electrostatic forces. As the capacitor dielectric polarizes, the charges on the capacitor plates become partially neutralized by charges of opposite polarity supplied by the adjacent dielectric, so the residual thrust on the capacitor would tend to decline. By charging the plates quickly and repetitively, without any polarity reversal, the electrostatic thrust could be maintained at a maximal level.

3.5 ▪ ELECTROGRAVITICS GOES BLACK

When Brown began working on this AC electrogravitic resonator concept, he may have been getting too close to something that governments considered top secret. Around 1959, there was a substantial change in openness about antigravity research. Earlier, during the mid-1950s, aerospace companies did not hide from the public the fact that they were conducting electrogravitics R&D, although they generally kept the particulars of their own work confidential. For example, an article by A. V. Cleaver, from Rolls-Royce's Aero Engine Division, indicates that as of the beginning of 1957, secrecy had not been imposed but might be imminent. The article states, “The fact that there appears to be no very high security rating attached to it in itself suggests that definite results have not yet been achieved; if, and when, they are one would expect the usual ‘clamp’ to be tightened down.”[21]

Openness continued, even into the early part of 1958, with the subject inspiring heated discussion at a January aeronautical science meeting in New York. Just prior to the event, *Product Engineering* magazine carried the following news brief:

> ELECTROGRAVITICS: SCIENCE OR DAYDREAM?
>
> A few weeks from now, at a special session of the Institute of the Aeronautical Sciences (New York City, Jan. 27–31), a group of dedicated men will discuss what some people label pure science-fiction, but others believe is an attainable goal. The subject: electrogravitics—the science of controlling gravity.

After exploring various notions of gravity, the article finally concludes:

> Perhaps British aeronautical engineer A. V. Cleaver is right in insisting that if any anti-gravity device is to be developed the first thing needed is a new principle in fundamental physics—not just a new invention or application of known principles. Nevertheless, the Air Force is encouraging research in electrogravitics, and many companies and individuals are working on the problem.[22]

After the meeting, *Business Week* magazine reported the following:

> If anyone had predicted 10 years ago that a cross-section of the nation’s top physicists, aeronautical engineers, and mathematicians would be fighting for standing room to hear the chaste theory of gravity seriously challenged, he would have been labeled sun-stroked, senile, or worse.
>
> . . . At an opening day meeting of the Institute of Aeronautical Sciences in New York last week, however, the impossible became

> possible. In record numbers—in a rush that stacked up scientists 20 deep at every entrance to the Sheraton-Astor's North Ballroom—the elite of research came to hear what it is that has reawakened scientific interest in the possibility of doing something about gravitation.
>
> What has happened, they wanted to know, that has caused major aircraft companies as well as the government and various universities, to start serious inquiries into the possibility of controlling gravity? How do the recent discoveries in antiproton research fit into the picture? And even more importantly, how accurate are the reports (circulated by Tass) that Russian scientists hope to turn up some sort of machinery to cancel or modify the force of gravity sometime during 1958?[23]

Business Week went on to list an impressive array of companies and institutions backing gravity research, companies such as the Glenn Martin Company, Grumman Aircraft Engineering Corporation, Lockheed Aircraft Corporation, Sperry-Rand Corporation, the Army Transportation Research and Development Command, Princeton University, the University of North Carolina, and the University of California. Hughes Aircraft should also be added to the list of organizations that by 1958 had become involved in antigravity research.[24,25]

Yet this climate of openness began to change very soon after, as companies became increasingly silent about their involvement in gravity research. In the July 1959 issue of *Canadian Aviation,* Charles Carew wrote, "The author has not been able to determine whether the Glenn L. Martin Corp. has discontinued its antigravity program or made a significant discovery which has elevated it to super-top-secret category, since no information about the project has recently been available."[26]

This indicated that Glenn Martin had made a decided turnabout from its unusually outspoken support of electrogravitics, evident in its vice president's statements to the press in 1955. Most probably, antigravity research had begun to be funded by the military and as a result had continued under a cloak of secrecy. This could explain the difficulty Brown had been encountering in promoting his ideas. During this period, he had been slowly and patiently giving demonstrations for the Pentagon and key aerospace companies in the United States, hoping to generate some interest in his work, but success continually eluded him. In *The Philadelphia Experiment,* Moore wrote that "such interest as he was able to generate seemed to melt away almost as fast as it developed—almost as if someone (or perhaps something?) was working against him."[27]

As mentioned earlier, beginning in 1957 Brown was invited to work on a consulting basis with Agnew Bahnson Jr. to investigate electrogravitic propulsion. Together with Dr. Frank King, they had explored methods of applying AC fields to electrified discs. An examination of Bahnson's laboratory notebook shows that on January 5, 1958, he had suggested to Brown a variation of the AC electric field concept.[28] Bahnson's idea was to place a parabolic metal grid between a positively charged parabolic lift canopy and a negatively charged sphere, as shown in figure 3.9. Then he applied an oscillating high-voltage field between the lift canopy and the negative sphere. He chose a megahertz frequency for this oscillating field that would establish a resonant stationary wave between the two electrodes. He hypothesized that this electrostatic stationary wave would somehow store the energy of the applied AC field in an "ether-like" energy reservoir residing in the space immediately around the test device. He felt that this resonant condition might allow the latent energy in this stationary field to be used with a minimum of power consumption. So here we see Bahnson hitting upon this same key idea of a field-induced soliton phenomenon.

Bahnson also described the use of alternating current fields in a U.S. patent that he filed in September 1964 on an electrogravitic levitation device (see figure 3.10).[29] The data in his patent indicate that his test rig had developed a thrust of 100 grams at 150 kilovolts, with thrust increasing exponentially according to the 2.6 power of voltage. This performance was comparable to the levitating rigs that Brown had

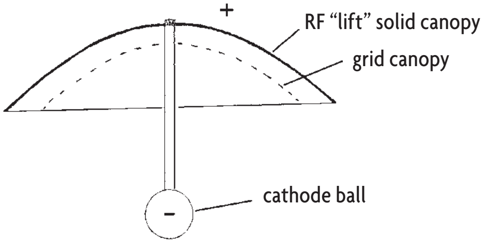

Figure 3.9. An electrogravitic lift device suggested by Bahnson. (After C. Yost, Electric Spacecraft Journal, *May/June 1991, vol. 8)*

tested, which again leads us to suspect that Brown was using AC to get the impressive results that his friend Kitselman had witnessed.

Shortly after Bahnson filed his patent, tragedy struck. He was killed under somewhat unusual circumstances, when his private airplane reportedly struck a high-tension wire.[30] His patent, which was issued in December 1965, was assigned to his estate. His heirs, having no interest in further developing Bahnson's antigravity work, sold his patents to another company.

Brown's electrokinetic apparatus and his electric generator patents (3,187,206 and 3,196,296) were issued several months before Bahnson's, in June and July 1965. Brown's patents were assigned to the Electrokinetics Corporation, a company that Philadelphia businessman Martin Decker had formed in collaboration with Brown to develop Brown's electrokinetic devices. The company was located in the Philadelphia suburb of Bala Cynwyd, where Decker was operating an industrial compound. This was only eight miles from the General Electric Space Center in King of Prussia, where Brown had conducted vacuum chamber experiments in 1959. Brown had consulted for Electrokinetics since the early 1960s and had received a considerable

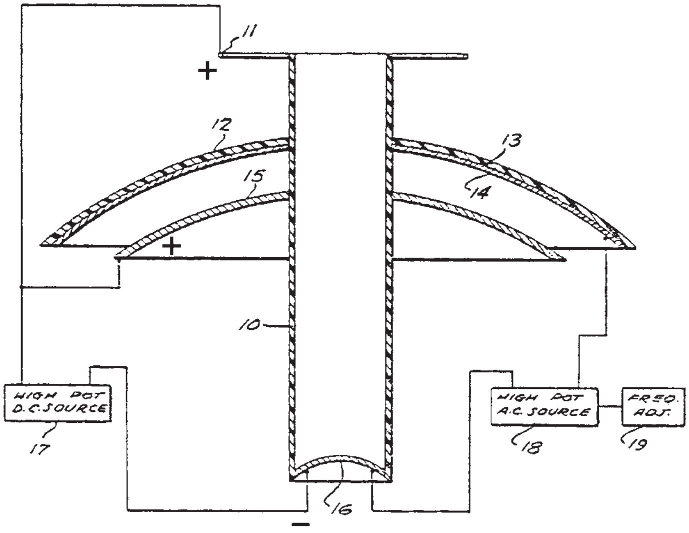

Figure 3.10. An electrogravitic thrust-producing device as illustrated in Bahnson's 1965 patent.

quantity of stock in the company in exchange for the assignment of his patent rights. In his biography of Brown, Schatzkin writes that in the summer of 1964, Decker had told Brown that his Electrokinetics stock had become worthless.[31] Nevertheless, the company must have continued to function, as patents of Brown's issued as late as 1967 are listed as being assigned to Electrokinetics. Some mystery appears to surround this company's circumstances.

Electrokinetics Corporation kept its electrogravitics work veiled in secrecy because in 1968, in a letter to Turman, Brown wrote, "The company to which I serve as consultant has not released some of the information you have requested and I am very much at a loss to know what to say."[32] This shroud of secrecy over Brown's work apparently continued into the 1980s because in February 1982, responding to an Illinois gentleman inquiring about the status of his work, he wrote, "I regret to advise you that electrogravitic research has been taken over in its entirety by a California corporation which has imposed secrecy—at least until their investigations are completed. No further publication or release of information is permitted, possibly until next year."[33] Was this California corporation Lockheed Martin, or was it Hughes Aircraft? Brown did not say.

After his brief consulting work for Electrokinetics in the early 1960s, Brown went into semiretirement, and by 1970 had dropped most of his applied electrogravitic work to busy himself with research on petroelectricity, or so it had seemed. Brown died of natural causes in 1985. Until the time of his death, details about the use of pulsating fields in his electrogravitics research were not forthcoming. Classification restrictions or concerns for trade secrecy presumably discouraged him from openly saying much about this aspect of his work.

Moore's biography of Brown paints a picture of someone who was ahead of his time yet not understood by most of his colleagues, of an inventor who was confronted by one discouragement after another in his attempts to secure government funding and who finally gave up electrogravitic propulsion research at the end of the 1960s. However, one source close to the Brown family indicates that this was not the case, that Brown was being kept in the loop of the secret aerospace research he had catalyzed and that the switch to petroelectricity research was primarily a cover. The public exposure he had received in the past due to media attention to his electric disc technology would have made him a potential security threat. Thus it is understandable that when the military began seriously funding his ideas, the work would have been contracted to a large aerospace company, with Brown being allowed to consult in private as long as he kept quiet about his involvement.

Although Brown was probably legitimately pursuing petroelectricity research, which also included the work he was doing at Stanford Research Institute, this openly acknowledged work must not have occupied him full time. He apparently had obtained high-level clearance and was also quietly consulting on a secret military project that was implementing his electrogravitic propulsion ideas. As described in chapter 5, Brown's electrokinetic technology was eventually incorporated into the B-2 Advanced Technology bomber, serving as its primary means of propulsion. In effect, the B-2 is the realization of the concept Brown first proposed in Project Winterhaven. Its electrogravitic technology would probably have remained a secret were it not for information leaked by a group of engineers who were part of the inner circle working on such super-secret projects.

It seems that the optimistic projections that electrogravitic vehicles would be commonly used for commercial flight have not come to pass as of the present date. Carew's investigations into the unpublicized gravity control research, being conducted all over the globe in 1959, at that time led him to believe that the technique for effectively controlling gravity would be mastered within the lifetime of his readers. The February 1956 *Aviation Studies* report was even more optimistic. It estimated that development of a prototype antigravity combat disc was only ten years away. It predicted that the twentieth century would be divided in half. Whereas air transport during the first half had used aerodynamic principles, heat engines, and flapping controls, it predicted that the second half would arise as a radical offshoot with no ties to past aviation science and that in this new era electrical energy would serve as the catalyst to motion. Gravity, the bitter foe in the first half of the century, would become the great provider in the second half. However, almost half a century later, we still find commercial aviation using the "sledgehammer" approach, employing jet and rocket propulsion technologies. Still, these early predictions were partially correct: gravity control did become practically applied, but not for commercial use. As described in subsequent chapters, antigravity vehicles have been developed for the military and are being flown in large numbers, but knowledge of their existence is being kept a closely guarded secret.

4

AN ETHERIC EXPLANATION

4.1 THE NEW "CLASSIFIED" PHYSICS

As we discussed in chapter 1, the Biefeld-Brown effect proved to be puzzling to scientists right from the start, because of its departure from prevailing theories of gravitation held by classical field theory and general relativity. Einstein's space-warping equations, for example, failed to predict a connection between electrostatics and gravitation. The following passage from *Aviation Report* illustrates this confusion:

> Meanwhile Glenn Martin now feels ready to say in public that they are examining the unified field theory to see what can be done. It would probably be truer to say that Martin and other companies are now looking for men who can make some kind of sense out of Einstein's equations. There's nobody in the air industry at present with the faintest idea of what it [electrogravitics] is all about.
>
> *Aviation Report,* November 19, 1954[1]

Noting that modern physics did not shed much light on the electrogravitics phenomenon, the *Aviation Studies* February 1956 report speculates that an answer might be forthcoming from discoveries providing new insights into the physics of subatomic particles. It suggests that atom-smasher experiments and abstruse field theory calculations might turn up useful leads.

The scientific establishment provided little help in carrying out needed basic research into electrogravitics because its members refused to believe that such an effect could exist. The complacency of the conventional scientific world pertaining to this line of investigation is typified by the response of scientists at the U.S. National Bureau of Standards Laboratory in Boulder, Colorado. Of any government scientific laboratory, this one should have made it its business to be doing basic research into electrogravitic phenomena. Yet in 1985 I asked their expert on gravity measurement, Dr. James Faller, whether he knew of anyone who had done experimental research investigating a possible coupling between charge and gravitational mass. He replied that he knew of no such research. When I asked him why no one had carried out such a study, he answered, "Because there has been no interest."

Nevertheless, since 1956, when the Aviation Studies "Electrogravitics Systems" report was written, there have been vast improvements both in understanding the theory behind the electrogravitics phenomenon and in developing hardware, but most of this work has been carried out in Air Force black projects. In 1992, I had an interesting telephone conversation with a man who is one of the group of informants mentioned in chapter 5 whose stunning revelations about the B-2 bomber were published in *Aviation Week & Space Technology.* Although he gave me his full name, I will identify him as Ray for reasons of confidentiality. Ray claimed to have worked on a number of black R&D projects and to have been in contact with certain other black-world researchers.[2] He told me that the physics theories that academics and most laboratory physicists currently understand, teach, and write about are grossly in error. A very advanced and much more accurate theoretical framework has been developed by scientists of the black-programs community, but its fundamentals presently remain classified. From the standpoint of this new physics, modern physics concepts used in the conventional world, such as relativity theory, quantum electrodynamics, and quantum mechanics are referred to as "classical concepts," that is, they are regarded as terribly outdated.

According to Ray, unlike today's "classical" physics, the new physics does not begin with physical observables in developing its treatment of physical phenomena. Rather, it postulates the existence of an underlying reality consisting of an inherently unobservable subtle substance called an *ether,* or alternatively *aether,* which fills all space. It then defines all of its fundamental quantities at that subphysical level. Physical observables then emerge as mathematical solutions to equations defined in terms of these more basic ether processes. This new physics regards time and space as absolutes and views Einstein's notion of relative time and space as fundamentally incorrect. Physically observable phenomena, such as length contraction and clock retardation, which relativists normally interpret as alterations of the space-time continuum, emerge as manifestations resulting from motion through the absolute ether. Thus, the ether concept, so long spurned by the academic establishment, turns out to be central to this highly classified new physics.

Ray said that this ether physics embraces Brown's electrogravitics phenomenon as well as key research that Brown conducted while he was with the Navy, documents of which have remained highly classified. Perhaps he was referring to work Brown did in connection with the Philadelphia Experiment. Ray stated that this physics also embraces phenomena discovered by Tesla. Among other things, Tesla is known for his work with resonant AC circuits and with techniques for producing unconventional shock discharge Coulomb waves, sometimes called longitudinal waves. As described in chapter 1, the electrogravitic waves that Brown was producing with his communication device were of this sort. How Tesla's work relates to antigravity propulsion is further discussed in chapter 6.

As mentioned earlier, conventional physics is at a total loss to account for the Biefeld-Brown effect. Nor does string theory, with its ten-plus dimensional spaces, offer any insights, and now, after its forty-year reign, many physicists have become disenchanted with it, leaving the search open once again for a unified field theory that will work.[3,4] As of this time there has been no public disclosure of the classified ether physics or of how it explains electrogravitics. However, there is one very promising theory that we can talk about and that does predict many aspects of the electrogravitic phenomenon. This is the ether physics of subquantum kinetics.[5–11] Unlike string theory, which never resulted in any testable prediction, subquantum kinetics has to date had twelve a priori predictions verified, outdoing most standard field theories.*

Let us take a moment to review something about this new approach and examine how it accounts for the mysterious gravitational thrust that Brown was observing. Subquantum kinetics is an approach to microphysics that is based upon discoveries made in recent years in the disciplines of general system theory, nonequilibrium thermodynamics, and nonlinear dynamics. It was inspired from research carried out in the late twentieth century on certain types of nonequilibrium reaction systems that have the ability to spontaneously self-organize wave patterns of precise wavelength. Problems such as wave-particle dualism, field-source dualism, infinite energy absurdity, naked singularities, the cosmological constant conundrum, the wave packet dispersion problem, and many others that plague conventional physics do not appear in subquantum kinetics because it represents quantum phenomena in a very different way.

Like the classified physics of the black-project world, subquantum kinetics begins with an ether as its point of departure. It conceives quantum structures, such as subatomic particles and energy waves, to be concentration patterns that emerge in a primordial reaction-diffusion ether, one whose constituents both diffuse through space and react among one another according to a specified set of nonequilibrium reaction processes. This subtle medium is postulated to extend throughout space and to be composed of subquantum units, called etherons, that come in various types. In a similar manner, conventional physics postulates subquantum structures called quarks that come in various sorts distinguished by their "colors" and "flavors." However, subquantum kinetics, in its current Model G formulation, uses far fewer types of etherons as compared with the number of quarks that physics postulates. Model G involves just seven types of etherons for its specification: A, B, G, X, Y, Z, and Ω. Unlike quarks, which are characteristically unreactive, these etherons are postulated to react with one another and

---

*For information about those subquantum kinetics predictions that were subsequently confirmed, see www.starburstfound.org/LaViolette/Predict2.html.

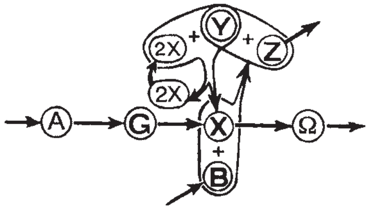

$$\begin{aligned} A &\xrightarrow{k_1} G, && a) \\ G &\xrightarrow{k_2} X, && b) \\ B + X &\xrightarrow{k_3} Y + Z, && c) \\ 2X + Y &\xrightarrow{k_4} 3X, && d) \\ X &\xrightarrow{k_5} \Omega, && e) \end{aligned}$$

Figure 4.1. A schematic representation of Model G's reaction kinetic pathways (left), also displayed as a series of five separate kinetic equations (right). (P. LaViolette, © 1995)

transform from one etheron state to another according to a specified set of five reactions, which are collectively termed Model G (figure 4.1).

This reaction system is similar to the Brusselator, a two-variable reaction system developed at the Free University of Brussels, with the exception that it interposes a third variable G between the A and X reaction states, hence the name Model G. The k_i symbols in figure 4.1 are Kinetic constants that specify the rates at which each reaction proceeds forward. Together with the diffusion coefficients that describe the rate at which each etheron type diffuses through space, this set of reactions forms the essence of subquantum kinetics. The basic processes are extremely simple, yet from their interactions emerge physically realistic structures and a very rich array of behavior.

Subquantum kinetics identifies etheron concentration at any given point in space with the standard energy potential concept. In particular, an electric field characterized by a spatial variation in electric potential would correspond to a spatial variation in X and Y etheron concentration. A gravity field characterized by a spatial variation in gravity potential would correspond to a spatial variation in G etheron concentration.

Unlike traditional physics, which is founded on closed-system, mechanistic concepts, the continually reacting and transmuting reaction-diffusion ether of subquantum kinetics functions as an open system. Unlike closed systems, open systems allow the possibility for order to emerge from disorder. Under the proper conditions, the ether is able to spawn subatomic particles that have wavelike characteristics. They form spontaneously from energy fluctuations of sufficiently large magnitude that occasionally emerge from the ether's chaos. Thus, subquantum kinetics espouses a cosmology of continuous matter creation rather than a single big bang creation event.

According to subquantum kinetics, the etheron concentrations are in a state of continual fluctuation throughout space, manifesting as energy potential fluctuations. These are similar to the zero-point energy fluctuations proposed in conventional physics, except of far smaller magnitude, each being less than a quantum of action. Also, they do not necessarily arise as correlated matter–antimatter polarity fluctuations, but rather as individual unipolar pulses that can be of either positive or negative polarity.* This can manifest either as a positive polarity fluctuation—a region of high-Y and low-X ether concentration—or as a negative polarity fluctuation—a region of high-X and low-Y ether concentration.

On occasion, one such electric potential fluctuation "seed" will become large enough that over time it will grow in size and develop into a subatomic particle configured as a stationary electric potential wave pattern. The spontaneous growth of such an energy fluctuation would appear to violate the first law of thermodynamics, which holds that energy may be neither created nor destroyed. But such growth is permissible due to the open-system character of the ether, the action responsible for this growth coming from the ever-present reaction processes that underlie all particle and field phenomena. This matter creation process would occur so slowly that a well-equipped physicist would be unable to detect it in an Earth-based laboratory.

Subatomic particles would not emerge as mass points, as standard physics would conceive them, but as wave patterns configured of etheron concentrations whose magnitudes vary cyclically through space. Figure 4.2a illustrates the spherical, shell-like geometry of the X-Y wave pattern forming a proton, and figure 4.2b presents a stylized cross-sectional view of the variation of the X and Y ether concentrations in the core of a proton. This would chart the proton's electric potential field, a positive charge polarity corresponding to a high-Y/low-X core concentration. The negatively charged antiproton would have a low-Y/high-X core concentration, hence X and Y magnitudes that were of reversed polarity.

---

*This of course violates the conventional rule of charge conservation but is allowable in the subquantum kinetics framework when dealing with incipient zero-point fluctuations.

The wavelength of this electric field pattern would equal the particle's Compton wavelength, which is numerically equal to the wavelength of the photon that would result if the particle's rest mass was converted entirely to energy. This Compton wavelength, λ, is mathematically quantified as: $\lambda = hc/E$, where E is the rest mass energy of the particle, h is Planck's constant, and c is the velocity of light. The proton's Compton wavelength, for example, would measure just 1.32×10^{-13} centimeters. The electron's wavelength would be about two thousand times longer. Subquantum kinetics calls this wavelike field the particle's Turing wave, in honor of the British cyberneticist Alan Turing. Turing was the first to demonstrate that reaction-diffusion systems could form such wave patterns through a process he termed *morphogenesis*.

One of the successes of subquantum kinetics is that its prediction that the nucleon's core electric field should be contoured with a Compton wavelength periodicity was confirmed almost thirty years later by nucleon scattering experiments.[12] The quark model, by comparison, failed to anticipate the nucleon's wave character.

The standard quantum mechanical view proposes modeling the location of the subatomic particle as a wave packet, a superposition of

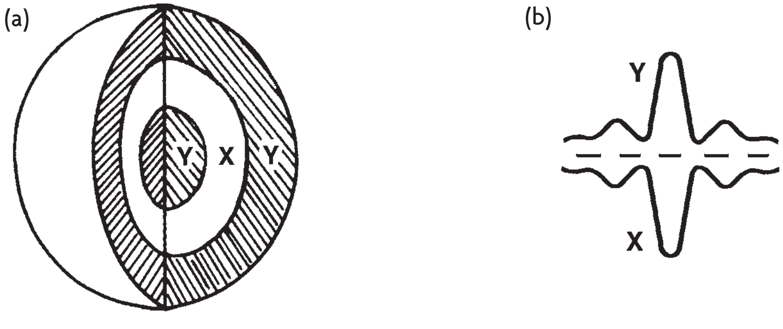

Figure 4.2. (a) A cross-section of the concentric, shell-like ether concentration pattern making up a proton showing alternating Y and X ether maxima. (b) Radial variation of the X and Y etheron concentrations forming the proton's stationary electric potential wave pattern. The peak-to-peak shell wavelength would equal the particle's characteristic Compton wavelength. (P. LaViolette, © 1995)

a series of linear electromagnetic waves. It has long been recognized, however, that the wave packet has the problem that over time it spontaneously broadens and eventually disperses, leaving the particle entirely unlocalized. The subatomic particles that Model G forms, though, do not disperse over time. Their periodic ether concentration structure is continually regenerated by order-creating etheric reaction-and-diffusion processes. The cyclical transformation of X into Y and Y into X depicted in figure 4.1 is what allows the model G reaction system to create and maintain the subatomic particle's stationary wave pattern.

An analysis of the Model G reaction system indicates that there is a stable steady state in which the core Turing wave of an initially neutrally charged particle becomes biased away from its zero-charge steady state. Upon making the transition to this state, the particle acquires a unit of electric charge that allows it to create its long-range electric field. This is not an assumption; it is a characteristic that emerges as a consequence of the postulated reaction system. In a positively charged particle, for example, the electric field pattern would become positively biased at its center, its high-Y core concentration rising and its low-X core concentration falling to adopt bias levels similar to those shown in figure 4.2b. In a negatively charged particle such as an electron, the electric field pattern would instead be negatively biased, the Y core concentration being depressed and the X core concentration being elevated. Recent particle scattering observations that elucidate the charge distribution in the core of the nucleon confirm this wave pattern bias prediction.[13]

Subquantum kinetics predicts that a particle's electric charge generates its gravitational mass and associated gravity potential field through the reverse, ether reaction G ← X, which converts X etherons (X-ons) into G etherons (G-ons). Although the ether reactions shown in figure 4.1 proceed predominantly in the forward direction (to the right in the figure), such reverse reactions also exist, although they proceed at an almost negligible rate. But even though the reverse X-to-G reaction produces a very small G flux, without it particles would be unable to generate their gravity fields. Through this reaction, an increase or decrease of X arising from either a negative or a positive charge polarity translates into a corresponding increase or decrease of G. Accordingly, subquantum kinetics predicts that there should be two gravitational mass polarities, each correlated with a corresponding electric charge polarity. That is, positively charged particles such as protons, which have low X-on concentrations in their cores, should produce a central gravity potential well, while negatively charged particles such as electrons, which have high X-on concentrations in their cores, should produce a central gravity potential hill.

Consider, for example, a positively charged particle such as a proton, which would maintain a high Y-on and low X-on concentration at its center. The low X-on concentration would correspondingly reduce the rate at which G-ons were created in the center of the proton via the X-to-G reaction. In other words, the particle's positive charge would generate a corresponding positive gravitational mass; see figure 4.3. The reduced X-on and G-on core concentrations resulting from the X-on and G-on production rate deficits would induce X-ons and G-ons to diffuse inward from surrounding regions. Also, the elevated Y-on core concentration arising from the Y-on production rate surplus would induce Y-ons to diffuse radially outward to the environment. These radial diffusive fluxes would generate the long-range electric and gravity potential fields that surround the proton's core.

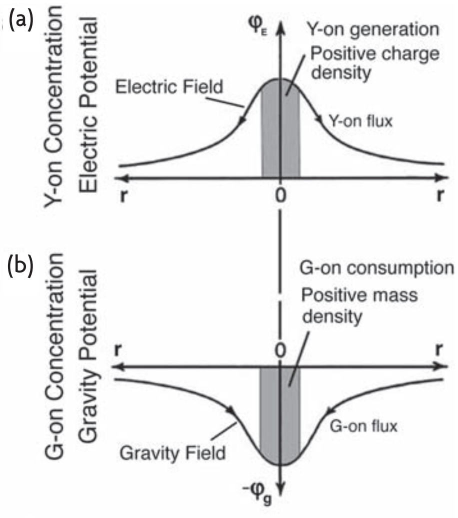
(a)
Y-on Concentration
Electric Potential
φ_E
Y-on generation
Positive charge density
Electric Field
Y-on flux
r
0
r
(b)
G-on Concentration
Gravity Potential
G-on consumption
Positive mass density
r
0
r
G-on flux
Gravity Field
$-\varphi_g$

Figure 4.3. (a) The electric potential field of a proton (positive Y-on concentration) being created by a central positive charge density (Y-on production rate surplus). (b) The negative gravity potential field of a proton (negative G-on concentration) being created by a central positive mass density (G-on production rate deficit). Arrows indicate the directions of Y-on and G-on diffusion that create the respective fields. The X-on concentration profile, not shown, is the inverse of the Y-on profile. (P. LaViolette, © 2007)

The electric field would consist of a 1/*r* decline in the particle's X-on and Y-on etheron concentration biases, and the gravity field would consist of a 1/*r* decline in the particle's G-on concentration bias. Both fields mathematically conform to the requirements of classical electrostatics and gravitation. Their 1/*r* character is not assumed ad hoc, but rather emerges as a natural consequence of radial etheron diffusion. In his *Lectures on Physics,* the Nobel laureate physicist Richard Feynman proposed an etheron diffusion model not too different from this as a way of understanding how a subatomic particle generates its 1/*r* energy potential field.[14]

These concentration biases and etheron diffusive fluxes would be just the opposite for an electron. A negatively charged particle such as an electron would maintain high X-on and G-on and low Y-on concentrations in its core, which would constitute the negative charge and negative mass state. This X-on and G-on production rate surplus would induce X-ons and G-ons to flow outward to surrounding regions and the Y-on production rate deficit would induce Y-ons to diffuse inward from the environment. These fluxes would generate the electron's long-range electric and gravity potential fields. A proton's gravity well would have a matter-attracting effect on surrounding neutral matter, while an electron's gravity hill would have a matter-repelling effect on surrounding neutral matter.

Austrian astrophysicist Sir Hermann Bondi described this gravity-field-generating mass with the term "active gravitational mass," distinguishing it from passive gravitational mass, which characterizes the particle's tendency to respond to an external gravity field, and from inertial mass, which characterizes the particle's tendency to resist changes in velocity. Electrically neutral matter, containing equal numbers of protons and electrons, would have a net positive active gravitational mass, since the proton's positive gravitational mass is slightly greater than the electron's negative gravitational mass. That is, the proton's gravity well is only partially canceled out by the electron's gravity hill, and as a result, the electrically neutral atom is left with a residual matter-attracting gravity well. Particles producing gravity wells would attract neutral matter, whereas particles producing gravity hills would repel neutral matter.

It should be kept in mind that subquantum kinetics grew out of the intention to apply chemical kinetics concepts to microphysics and the realization that a reaction kinetic ether could provide a viable framework for describing the formation of subatomic particles. I did not devise it in a concerted attempt to explain the phenomenon of electrogravitics. In fact, I was initially somewhat concerned that the theory predicted two mass polarity states, each correlated with a corresponding electric charge polarity, but was later relieved upon discovering Brown's work.

Subquantum kinetics accounts for gravitational force in terms of the action of gravity potential gradients on material bodies and not by introducing ad hoc assumptions about dimensional warping. Gravity potential fields move a particle by affecting the ether reactions that generate the particle and form its Turing wave. This reaction-kinetic approach is something quite foreign to classical physics and quantum mechanics, which consider a proton or an electron as a relatively immutable structure. Not so in subquantum kinetics. The subatomic particle's etheron population is continuously transformed and renewed. A particle's Turing wave structure is re-created every instant, as etheron diffusion balances etheron creation or dissolution at each point in space. The subatomic particle, then, maintains its field structure in a dynamic steady state, or what the Hungarian systems theorist Ludwig von Bertalanffy would call a *Fliessgleichgewicht,* a "patterned flow equilibrium." Or, using a term coined by the Russian Nobel laureate Ilya Prigogine, we would refer to subatomic particles as "dissipative space structures."

The presence of an external field gradient will necessarily affect the position of a particle because it will disturb the equilibrium of the reaction processes that continually generate the particle's Turing wave pattern. That is, the field gradient will distort the particle's space structure by raising (or lowering) the etheron concentrations more on one side of the particle than on the other. Because the steady-state condition tends to create a symmetrical space structure for the particle, any such departure from symmetry will induce a stress, or a state of disequilibrium. This stress is identified with the electrostatic or gravitational force that this electric or gravity potential field exerts on the particle. The reaction system relieves this stress and momentarily gains greater symmetry by accelerating or moving the particle's regenerating wave pattern either up or down the field gradient, the direction of movement depending on whether the field's action is attractive or repulsive.

According to subquantum kinetics, force action is fundamentally a reaction-kinetic process rather than a mechanical process, one in which the particle's core field readjusts its concentration pattern in response to the disequilibrium caused by an imposed field gradient. Thus the field's induction of force and acceleration is accomplished with no recoil force being applied back on the field. No momentum transfer is involved. Similarly, the potential gradient generated by a charge or mass becomes established in the ether and is able to operate on charges and masses without any deference to the charges or masses that originally generated it. Thus, in subquantum kinetics it is perfectly acceptable for a field to accelerate the very same charges that generate it. This field autonomy is key to understanding how unbalanced electrostatic forces can induce motion in an asymmetrical capacitor, a subject we examined in the previous chapter.

French inventor Jean-Claude Lafforgue proposes a similar idea in his 1991 patent on an asymmetrical thrust capacitor. He suggests that when a capacitor is charged, the fields it generates have their seat in the local space-time continuum reference frame, allowing them to act on the capacitor without any reaction force being directed back to the capacitor itself. Thus, he suggests that the electric fields generated by a properly shaped asymmetrical capacitor can exert unbalanced electrostatic forces on the capacitor, whose residual is capable of displacing the capacitor relative to its initial rest frame. In his patent Lafforgue states:

> It is acceptable then to consider that **F** [electrostatic force] rests its support on **E** [electric force field intensity], that is to say, on the space-time continuum . . . It is the same for all the electrodes whatever their orientation and polarization . . . Whether the electrodes are at rest or in motion does not at all change the values of ρ, of σ, of q, of **E**, nor of **F**. So under the action of the "force of expansion," the isolated system moves and drags with itself σ and **E** and consequently **F**. Our isolated systems are therefore self-accelerated.[15]

Lafforgue's term "force of expansion" refers to electrostatic pressure, that is, the electrostatic force $\mathbf{F} = \sigma\mathbf{E}$ present on a portion of the capacitor plate divided by the surface area it acts through. Lafforgue does not refer to the notion of an ether. He uses instead the relativistic term "space-time continuum," and he adopts the convention of working with force field intensity, E, rather than the electric potential gradient $\nabla\varphi_E$. However, his conclusions about a capacitor's self-field action, which are based on experimental observation, are surprisingly identical to those predicted by subquantum kinetics. Hence, his work may be considered as independent support for the subquantum kinetics approach. Tests performed on one of Lafforgue's asymmetrical capacitors are discussed in chapter 12.

Classical physics assumes that subatomic particles produce only matter-attracting gravitational forces regardless of their charge polarity. Classical theory doesn't describe what a gravitational field is or how it exerts its force; it just identifies it and mathematically represents how gravitational force is related to the mass of a body and to an observer's distance from the body. As for antimatter, there are a variety of opinions among physicists. Some believe that antimatter particles should produce matter-attracting fields and others believe that they should produce matter-repelling fields.

General relativity, like classical physics, also asserts that all subatomic particles should produce attractive gravity fields regardless of their electric charge. Yet it also advances the additional proposition that these gravitational effects come about because the body's mass warps the surrounding metric of space and time and as a result induces an attractive motion in neighboring masses. Relativity does not state how matter manages to accomplish this warping feat; it simply states this as a given. Although fancy equations are presented to describe the warping assumption, they do not themselves provide any insight as to why matter, a physical quantity, might affect the geometry of space or the rate at which time passes. The initiate is asked to accept this on faith. Subquantum kinetics, on the other hand, does explain how a material body generates its electric and gravity potential fields, why these two fields are interlinked, and also how these fields induce forces on charges and masses. Furthermore, it describes how a material particle comes into being in space, another point on which conventional physics is a bit vague.

Most physicists are reluctant to consider ether-theory explanations of particles and fields because relativists have long drummed into them the misconception that the idea of an ether, with its preferred reference frame, has been disproved. Usually, they cite the Michelson-Morley experiment's failure to detect a directional variation in the velocity of light. However, many have argued that the experiment's null result was due to the fact that it was conducted underground, where the ether was stationary in the reference frame of the rotating Earth. Other experiments carried out by Georges Sagnac, Dayton Miller, and Ernest Silvertooth have since shown that the one-way velocity of light is not a constant.[16–20] Hence, the results favor the notion of an ether over relativity's relative-frame notion.

The vindication of the ether-frame concept even impacts us every day in a practical sense. To establish proper synchronization of the clocks in the global positioning system satellite array, computer software must make allowances for the change in radio signal velocity caused by the array's geosynchronous rotation relative to the local ether frame. Were this not done and the network was instead synchronized in accordance with the pronouncements of special relativity, a hiker would be unable to accurately establish his latitude and longitude coordinates. The military knows this quite well.

Moreover, general relativity has no exclusive claim over tests carried out to check its predictions, such as the gravitational bending of starlight by the Sun and the precession of Mercury's orbit. All of these have also been accounted for in terms of classical physics effects.[21] It might be added that these same gravitational effects are also predicted by subquantum kinetics. What general relativity refers to as a spatial warping of starlight photons by a celestial mass subquantum kinetics understands to be a refraction of photons (ether waves) by the body's gravity potential gradient (G-on concentration gradient). The gravitational time dilation phenomenon that all massive bodies experience and that relativity interprets again as an inexplicable warping of space is understood as a clock retardation effect that arises as a result of the reduction of the G-on concentration within the star or planet (as G decreases, so too does X, and in turn so too does the X-Y flux rate that is responsible for all physical action). The gravitational redshift of light emitted from a massive celestial body occurs for a similar reason. Subquantum kinetics also accounts for special relativistic effects. All of these effects emerge from the five basic equations diagrammed in figure 4.1 (see page 118). In summary, special and general relativistic effects emerge as corollaries of subquantum kinetics, but without requiring the magical warping of space-time.

So it is not surprising that highly classified black-budget programs embrace the concept of an ether in their attempts to understand the gravity-defying technologies that they have been developing. They have no obligation to please the academic physics establishment, which still teaches the rocket principle as the ultimate in space propulsion technology.

Norwegian researcher Dr. Björn Overbye points out that most physicists find it virtually impossible to visualize and understand relativity theory because it requires that one think in terms of four dimensions. He says, "Even experienced mathematicians and theoretical physicists who have worked with higher dimensional space for years admit that they cannot visualize them! Instead, they retreat into the world of mathematical equations."[22] According to the Nobel laureate Hannes Alfvén, "The people were told that only Einstein and a few geniuses that were able to think in four dimensions could understand the true nature of the physical world. Science was something to believe in, not something that should be understood."[23]

Subquantum kinetics, on the other hand, offers us a path back to visualization and understanding. It is based on a simple conceptual framework, but to follow it one must forget the misleading models that have been taught in the past, quantum mechanics and relativity theory being among them. Since the theory is not easily presented in the space of a few paragraphs, the reader is referred for more details to the journal articles cited at the beginning of this chapter and to my book *Subquantum Kinetics,* all of which deal more thoroughly with the subject.[24] The more philosophically inclined are referred to my book *Genesis of the Cosmos,* which presents a less technical introduction to the subject.[25]

4.2 ■ VIRTUAL CHARGE ELECTROGRAVITIC EFFECTS

In earlier writings of how subquantum kinetics predicts an electrogravitic connection, I did not also consider that virtual-charge gradients might also produce electrogravitic effects. However, it is reasonable to expect that, like real charges, virtual charges also should induce gravity potentials. Moreover, gravitational thrusts on a capacitor dielectric arising from virtual charges may in some cases be far greater than those produced by the real charges creating the capacitor's electric field. So it is evident that the scope of the subquantum kinetics electrogravitics prediction should be expanded to include such virtual-charge effects. Let us proceed to derive this by considering a charged asymmetrical capacitor that establishes a nonlinear electric field across its dielectric.

Due to the math involved, the material presented in the next several pages may be a bit challenging for those who have not had a course in college physics. Some, then, may want to skip over it. But those wishing to acquire a nuts-and-bolts understanding of how antigravity technology might work are encouraged to read this section, if not now, at least at some later time, for this material is referenced frequently later in the book.

As was explained above, subquantum kinetics identifies an electric potential gradient with an X-on or Y-on ether concentration gradient. Consider a charged asymmetrical capacitor whose negative plate is smaller than its positive plate. With such a field geometry, the voltage gradient will vary nonlinearly with distance across the dielectric, the field gradient getting steeper toward the capacitor's smaller negative plate. Represented in terms of the X-on etheron concentration component, C_x, X-on concentration will rise nonlinearly, reaching a maximum at the negative plate. X-ons will continuously diffuse down this concentration gradient away from the negative plate, their flux per unit surface area being represented by the symbol Φ_x, called the X diffusive flux vector. It is related to the X-on concentration gradient, ∇C_x, by the formula $\Phi_x(r) = -D_x \nabla C_x(r)$, where D_x is the diffusion coefficient.

Suppose that we consider three adjacent volumes in the capacitor dielectric aligned along the axis of the capacitor and located near the capacitor's negative plate (see lower three boxes in figure 4.4). Because the field potential varies nonlinearly with distance across the dielectric,

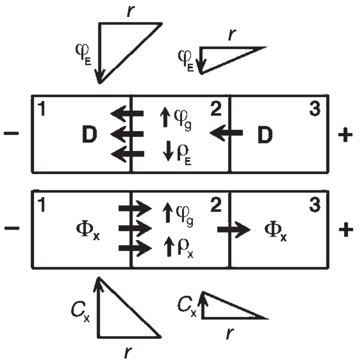

Figure 4.4. The flux vector divergence concept. The lower boxes show adjacent volumes of space along the polarization axis of a capacitor with their corresponding X diffusive flux vectors, Φ_x*, arising from a prevailing nonlinear X-on concentration gradient. The upper boxes show, as in conventional theory, the corresponding electric flux density vectors,* **D***, arising from a prevailing electric potential gradient. (P. LaViolette, © 2007)*

the X-on concentration gradient, ∇C_x, between box 1 and box 2 will be steeper than that between box 2 and box 3. Therefore, more X-ons will be induced to flow into box 2 than will be induced to leave from box 2. As a result of this flux imbalance, the number of X-ons in that box will increase at the rate $\Phi_{x(in)} - \Phi_{x(out)}$. This has the effect of raising the X-on concentration in that box, which is equivalent to lowering its electric potential, negative potential being correlated with increased X-on concentration.

Because there is a net inflow of X-ons into box 2, the divergence of the X diffusive flux vector $\nabla\cdot\Phi_x$ for that box will be a negative quantity. This diffusive-flux-vector divergence by definition is calculated from the variation of X-on concentration $C_x(r)$ using the equation $\nabla\cdot\Phi_x(r) = -D_x\nabla^2 C_x(r)$. This negative Φ_x divergence, in turn, is equal to a quantity called the X production rate balance density, ρ_x, a scalar quantity that represents the rate, Q_x, at which X-ons enter a unit volume dV. This is mathematically expressed as $\rho_x(r) = Q_x(r)/dV = -\nabla\cdot\Phi_x(r) = -D_x\nabla^2 C_x(r)$.

The X production balance density, ρ_x, is the ether counterpart of the negative virtual electric charge density, $-\rho_E$.* Thus the excess influx of X per unit time into box 2 would act as though a negative electric charge density, $-\rho_E$, was present in that box. Also, the X diffusive flux vector, Φ_x, is the ether equivalent of the electric flux density vector, **D**, of conventional theory. Physicists also refer to **D** as the electric displacement, but we use here the flux density vector designation since it more closely approximates the terminology used for its ether counterpart. It should be mentioned that all of these conventional physics terms were originally developed in the context of 18th- and 19th-century ether models.

---

*The Y production rate balance density, ρ_y, would be the counterpart of the positive virtual electric charge density. We instead focus here on specifying the X-on component, since it is this component that is involved in generating the G-on gravity field.

The upper set of boxes in figure 4.4 illustrates how these etheron fluxes would be expressed in conventional physics terms using **D** and ρ_E. A nonlinear electric potential gradient $\nabla\varphi_E$ is assumed to extend across the capacitor dielectric with the potential gradient steepening toward the negative electrode on the left. This field gradient induces a greater electric flux density to flow out from box 2 (to the left) than to flow into box 2 (from the right). Consequently, **D** has a positive divergence, which by definition creates a negative virtual-charge density in that box. In conventional terminology, this is expressed as $\nabla\cdot\mathbf{D}(r) = -\varepsilon\nabla^2\varphi_E(r) = -\rho_E$. Rearranging these terms we may write:

$$\rho_E(r) = -\nabla\cdot\mathbf{D}(r) = -\varepsilon\nabla\cdot\mathbf{E}(r) = \varepsilon\nabla^2\varphi_E(r) \qquad (6)$$

Here we also include in the expression the term $-\varepsilon\nabla\cdot\mathbf{E}(r)$, which expresses this equivalence in terms of the permittivity times the divergence of the electric field intensity, **E**, for those who are familiar with this alternate term.

However, in the case of real negative charges such as electrons, the **D** vectors would instead be inward directed making the divergence term $\nabla\cdot\mathbf{D}$ a negative quantity. If this subtle difference between real and virtual charges is not appreciated, one might mistakenly assign an incorrect polarity to virtual charges and calculate gravity thrust vectors pointing in the opposite direction. Taking the etheron model as an example, if real negative charges were present in box-2, X-ons would be entering the box through X-on creation attributable to the Model G reactions. The resulting X-on surplus would produce an outward diverging flux, making the divergence term $\nabla\cdot\Phi_x$ a positive quantity. In the case of a negative virtual-charge density, on the other hand, the X influx arises from the spatial redistribution of X-ons, which enter the unit volume as a result of the electric field's nonlinearity. Thus the diffusive flux vectors will instead point inward, making the divergence term $\nabla\cdot\Phi_x$ a negative quantity.

Based on equation 6 above, we conclude that virtual charge is formed wherever the field's electric flux density vector **D** acquires a nonzero divergence value, div **D** $\neq 0$, or in other words, wherever the derivative of **D** differs from zero. Expressed in terms of the electric potential field, $\varphi_E(r)$, a virtual charge would arise wherever the second derivative of the field's electric potential becomes nonzero, that is, $\nabla^2\varphi_E \neq 0$. For the second derivative to be nonzero, the magnitude of the field's electric potential must vary *nonlinearly* with distance.

Now, going back to our ether flux model, let us consider how these virtual electric charge densities would produce a gravitational field across the capacitor. The positive X production rate balance density in box 2 (lower half of figure 4.4) results in the creation of a positive G production rate balance in that box due to the reverse reaction, $G \leftarrow X$, which in turn produces a local increase in G-on concentration, C_g. With this surplus G production rate, the volume acts as though it contains a negative virtual mass density that produces a local increase in gravity potential, φ_g. Consequently, a negative divergence of the X diffusive flux vector leads to an increase in gravity potential at that point.

Thus subquantum kinetics leads to a charge-mass equivalence similar to that stated in relation 2 of chapter 1, except here we broaden the definition of charge density so that we consider the electrogravitic effects of a virtual-charge-density gradient opposed to a real-charge-density gradient. Hence we may state that a virtual-charge density of magnitude ρ_E creates a proportional virtual mass density of magnitude ρ_m, that is, $\rho_m \propto \rho_E$. If the negative virtual-charge density varies with distance across the capacitor's dielectric, then there will be a corresponding variation in negative virtual mass density and a gravity potential gradient will form across the dielectric. Given that this virtual mass density creates a proportional negative gravity potential field, $\rho_m \propto -\varphi_g(\mathrm{r})$, we conclude that the gravity potential at a given point r should be proportional to the negative charge density at that location. By using equation 6 above, this may be mathematically expressed as:

$$\varphi_g(r) \propto -\rho_E(r) = \nabla\cdot\mathbf{D}(r) = \varepsilon\nabla\cdot\mathbf{E}(r) = -\varepsilon\nabla^2\varphi_E(r) \qquad (7)$$

The gradient of this gravity potential field would create a gravitational force on matter that it spanned. As mentioned earlier, this force would arise because the G-on concentration gradient spatially distorts the etheric wave patterns of the subatomic particles it affects, perturbing them from their ideally spherical symmetric configuration. Because of their tendency to maintain a state of morphogenic homeostasis, the particles respond to this stress by moving down the gravity potential gradient toward the capacitor's positive pole.

In accordance with Newton's second law, the gravitational force acting on a body at point *r* would be proportional to the negative gradient of the induced gravity potential field at that location multiplied by the body's inertial mass, which is expressed as $\mathbf{F}_g(r) = -Gm_o\nabla\varphi_g(r)$. Hence using relation 7 to substitute for gravity potential $\varphi_g(r)$, the gravitational force on a capacitor is expected to vary in proportion to the third derivative of the electric potential $\varphi_E(r)$, or as the derivative of the LaPlacian of the electric potential:

$$\mathbf{F}_g(r) = k\ m_o\varepsilon\nabla(\nabla^2\varphi_E(r)) \tag{8}$$

As before, the constant *k* in this equation is an experimentally determined electrogravitic proportionality constant that quantifies the virtual-charge-to-virtual-mass coupling relationship.

This thrust on the capacitor dielectric will persist as long as the applied electric field is not canceled out by the opposing electric dipole moment created by the polarization of the dielectric. By oscillating the electric field to repeatedly create virtual charge, the gravitational thrust may be maintained without complete cancellation.

One thing that becomes apparent from studying relation 8 is that the electrogravitic force should increase as the electric potential field across the capacitor becomes increasingly nonlinear; the more nonlinear the field, the greater the induced gravitational thrust. Force also increases in accordance with the dielectric's dielectric constant, ε, and its mass, m_o. Thus dielectrics with higher K and greater mass will deliver greater thrust. Brown stressed all of these points in his work.

Furthermore, like the electrogravitic force produced by a real-charge-density gradient, the electrogravitic force arising from a virtual-charge-density gradient will always be directed toward the positive pole. If the field polarity is reversed, the polarity of the virtual-charge density would also reverse, as would the direction of the gravitic thrust. Thus, if the smaller electrode in an asymmetrical capacitor was made positive instead of negative, the electrogravitic thrust would be directed once again toward the positive electrode, which in this case would be the smaller of the two electrodes.

Now let us consider a standard symmetrical parallel plate capacitor. Such a capacitor would develop no virtual-charge-density gradient when charged since its electric field potential would vary linearly across its dielectric. The only gravity field across its dielectric would be that arising from the charges on its plates. The negative charges on the negative plate would be producing X-ons and G-ons while the positive charges on the capacitor's positive plate would be consuming X-ons and G-ons. Consequently, the X-on and G-on concentrations would be highest at the capacitor's negative pole and would drop linearly with distance across the dielectric until they reached their lowest value near the capacitor's positive pole. These X-on and G-on concentration gradients would be accompanied by a diffusive flux of X-ons and G-ons flowing down the gradient in a uniform manner. Since any volume in the dielectric would experience the same etheron influx as eflux, the divergence of the X diffusive flux vector would be zero throughout the dielectric, as would be the virtual-charge density.

We may now attempt to calculate the gravity field developed across an asymmetrical AC electrokinetic capacitor having a design similar to that shown in figures 3.2 and 3.6. We may use electrogravitic relation 7 to determine the virtual-charge profile and gravity potential field that would be generated across the dielectric. Suppose that a 100-kilovolt DC bias potential were applied across the capacitor plates, with potential varying nonlinearly according to the inverse square of distance as shown by the dotted line in figure 4.5a. This would plot as the equation $V = -1/r^2$. Compare this with the field potential graph reproduced from Brown's patent (see figure 3.6). Note that this field is substantially more nonlinear than the $1/r$ potential field that would typically exist around a charged sphere. Let us also suppose that the capacitor's negative antenna electrode excites a quarter-wave sine wave oscillation across the dielectric with a node at the positive electrode. If it was a conventional symmetrical capacitor having equal area electrodes, the oscillating potential would vary with distance across the dielectric, as shown in figure 4.5b, in which the solid and dashed curves represent the potential distribution at voltage minimum and voltage maximum. However, since the capacitor is asymmetrical, with a field that varies with distance in a nonlinear manner, this sine wave amplitude will decrease sharply with distance toward the positive electrode.

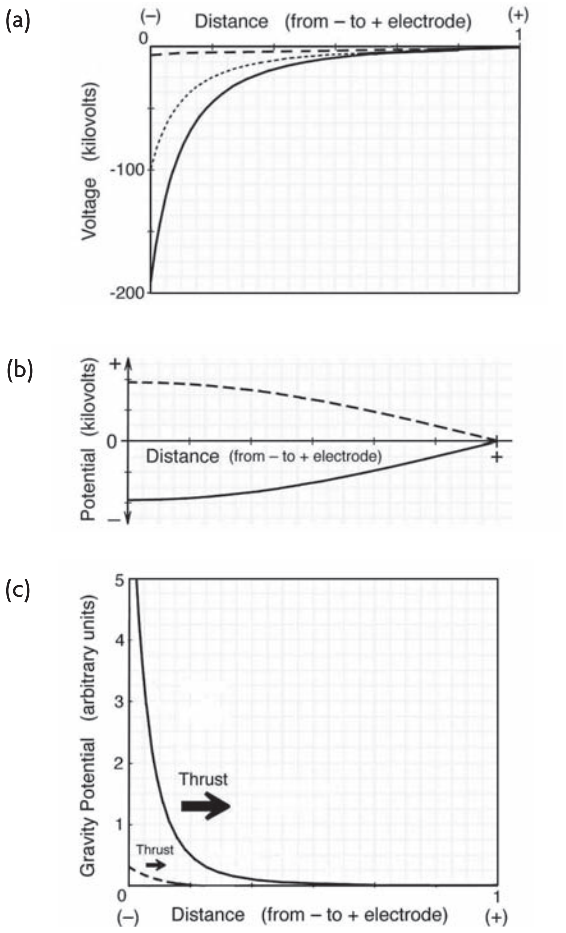

Figure 4.5. (a) The DC bias potential across the dielectric (dotted line), with the superimposed resonant oscillation (solid line represents maximum negative; dashed line represents maximum positive). (b) Sine wave voltage oscillation applied across the dielectric in Brown's electrokinetic apparatus. (c) The corresponding gravity potential profile. (P. LaViolette, © 2007)

If it were superimposed on the DC bias potential, the overall field would oscillate between the very negative potential profile prevailing when the sine wave oscillation was at its maximum negative voltage (shown as the solid line in figure 4.5a) and the low negative voltage field distribution prevailing when the sine wave oscillation was at its maximum positive voltage (shown as the dashed line in figure 4.5a). The amplitude of the sinusoidal oscillation at the negative electrode is adjusted to be about 95 percent of the bias voltage. Using the electrogravitic coupling expression that is presented as relation 7 and including a geometry correction to account for the capacitor's asymmetrical geometry, the resulting gravity potential distribution is computed to be that shown in figure 4.5c; see text box for details. The gravity gradient and resulting thrust vary from a minimum to a maximum as the voltage of the sine wave resonance at the negative electrode cycles between positive and negative maxima. Throughout the AC cycle, the thrust remains always directed toward the positive electrode, but oscillates in magnitude approximately 750 million times per second.

Gravity Potential Distribution in an Asymmetrical Capacitor with a DC Voltage Bias and Applied AC Voltage Oscillation

The gravity potential graphed in figure 4.5c was computed from the following equation:

$$\varphi_g(r) = \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial r}\left(\left(-2\frac{\partial}{\partial r}\left(\frac{1}{r^2}\left(\frac{3}{\pi}\sin\pi\left(\pm 0.5+\left(\frac{r}{12}\right)\right)\right)-\frac{1}{r^2}\right)\right)4\pi r^2\right)\right)\frac{1}{4\pi r^2}$$

The central term in the brackets represents the electric potential and is given as:

$$\varphi_g(r) = -2\left(\frac{1}{r^2}\left(\frac{3}{\pi}\sin\pi\left(\pm 0.5+\left(\frac{r}{12}\right)\right)\right)-\frac{1}{r^2}\right)$$

The sine term here represents the sine wave voltage oscillation at its positive and negative maxima. This is multiplied by $1/r^2$ to model the potential field's nonlinear variation with distance across the dielectric. The term $-1/r^2$, which has a similar nonlinear variation with distance r, is added to this to represent the DC field bias. The summed electric potential field has a minus sign, the voltage across the capacitor being negative as referenced from the grounded positive plate. This quantity is differentiated to derive the electric field gradient, $\nabla\varphi_E$, which by definition is proportional to the negative electric flux density vector, $-\mathbf{D}$. However, since we are dealing with an asymmetrical capacitor with a positive electrode surface area that is larger than the negative electrode surface area, in considering the total electric flux entering or leaving a given spherical shell increment, we must multiply **D** times $4\pi r^2$, which accounts for the increased surface area toward the positive electrode. Taking the derivative of this and dividing by $4\pi r^2$ gives the divergence of **D** in that volume increment. Then, multiplying by –1, we get the virtual-charge density in that increment, $\rho_E(r)$. The negative of this, in turn, gives the gravity potential, $\varphi_g(r)$, which is the quantity plotted in figure 4.5c.

Note that if the voltage potential across the dielectric instead was to vary only as $1/r$, as do fields radiating from a charged sphere, then in that case the divergence would be zero, since the flux per unit surface area would not change with distance. Hence, such a field, although nonlinear, would not produce a virtual-charge-density gradient.

The gravity potential gradient is seen to be steepest at the negative electrode and to rapidly decrease in magnitude as the positive electrode is approached, and the gravitational thrust on the dielectric declines in a similar fashion. Consequently, the thrust developed by the device could be maximized by incorporating high-mass semiconducting particles in the dielectric near its negative pole, where the gravity gradient is highest.

The amplitude of the AC quarter-wave resonance should be kept below 100 percent of the negative DC bias voltage. Otherwise the net electric potential across the dielectric would become slightly positive during the small fraction of the oscillation cycle when the sine wave oscillation was at its positive maximum. This in turn would produce a slightly negative gravity potential having a small positive potential gradient that would generate a thrust directed toward the negative electrode. During the brief time it was produced, this small opposing thrust would subtract from the gravitic thrust developed during the majority of the oscillation cycle.

The results obtained in Brown's Paris vacuum chamber experiment may also be explained in terms of the virtual-charge electrogravitic concept. The sudden rotor thrusts observed after each spark discharge could be due to the creation of a virtual-charge-density gradient across the rotor's capacitor element. The fanning field geometry of the spark discharge would have created a nonlinear electric potential gradient between the capacitor plates that in turn would have created a virtual-charge-density gradient between the plates. This, then, would have momentarily generated a gravity potential gradient across the capacitor element. With the disappearance of the spark, these virtual charges would have also disappeared, the intervening field having become linear once again. While the virtual charges were present, however, they would have generated a substantial gravitational thrust on the rotor.

It is also possible that the rapid recharge of the negative electrode, which took a matter of milliseconds following each spark discharge, served to increase the nonlinearity of the field between the plates thereby increasing the created virtual charge and the accompanying gravitational thrust. Brown's observation that he obtained greater thrusts when he used a barium titanate dielectric between the capacitor plates may be explained on the basis of this virtual-charge concept. In accordance with equation 8 above, the electrogravitic force exerted on an intervening dielectric should vary in direct proportion to the dielectric's permittivity. A dielectric such as barium titanate has a K-value of about 10^4 when slowly charged, but when rapidly charged over a few milliseconds, its K-value will be much lower, perhaps around 1,500. So during the course of a voltage change of a millisecond duration, a 1,500-fold-greater virtual-charge density and 1,500-fold greater thrust would be created, compared to the case in which such a dielectric was absent. The high mass density of barium titanate would be another factor contributing to the production of greater thrust, barium titanate being about six times as dense as water. That is, for a given gravity potential gradient generated across the capacitor, dielectrics having greater mass would produce greater thrust.

4.3 ▪ TOWNSEND BROWN'S ETHER PHYSICS

To account for electrogravitic phenomena, Brown, too, came to theorize about the existence of an ether and to reject the idea of relative frames. His Vega laboratory notebook contains a section titled "Structure of Space," in which he qualitatively explores the subject of the existence of an ether and sets forth some of its more important properties. Although the notebook's cover page is labeled "Vega Aircraft Corp.," these notes on the ether are dated between January and March 1943, which suggests that Brown most likely wrote them when he was teaching at the Atlantic Fleet Radar School in Norfolk, Virginia. Interestingly, the ether theory that Brown explores has some similarities with subquantum kinetics.

In one passage, Brown explains his reason for considering the presence of an ether. He writes:

> For certain phenomena it is desirable and almost necessary to assume the existence of an aether in order to evolve a satisfactory explanation. An example is the force of gravitation, particularly the electrogravitational effects; The phenomenon of the movement of a dielectric is such an example . . . Much of the work [presented in these notes] is based on facts derived from actual experiments which cannot be satisfactorily explained without the existence of an aether possessing substantially these qualities.[26]

Brown proposes that the dielectric constant K and permeability μ, which are electromagnetic properties of free space, be identified with the ether. He then proposes that matter might induce a variation in the magnitude of K and μ, causing these quantities to attain greater values near a massive body. He associates this variation in K and μ with a gravitational potential field gradient and suggests that a mass acted upon by this field has a "tendency to migrate" toward regions of higher K and μ, that is, toward regions where the gravitational potential is more negative. He envisions a low K and μ region as manifesting a "high pressure" and a high K and μ region as a manifesting a "low pressure," and that a gravitating body would be migrating from a high-pressure region toward a low-pressure region.

As is done in subquantum kinetics, Brown proposes that potentials are the real existents and that a body's adjustive response to a field gradient is the essence of force. Brown's suggestion that a body migrates in an equilibrating response to the influence of a gravity gradient very much resembles concepts used in subquantum kinetics. However, he uses a mechanical analogy of a solid body's response to a pressure differential, whereas subquantum kinetics adopts a reaction-diffusion process analogy, which is fundamentally different. I believe the reaction-diffusion system concept is a better framework for application to microphysics because in addition to offering an understanding of how fields are generated and how they exert force, it predicts the autogenetic creation of subatomic particles having charge, mass, spin, and matter-wave properties.

Brown adopts a mechanical model when he suggests that the etheric field creates a pressure upon a material body. A similar concept has been expressed in many of the nineteenth-century ether theories. However, Brown's theory does not bring us any closer to understanding what force is. To say that the observed gravitational force arises from the summed collisional action of myriad energetic etheric particles merely begs the question; one is still left to wonder why these etheric particles should exert an accelerating force. Subquantum kinetics, on the other hand, addresses this question by providing an understanding of how a material body—an etheric reaction–diffusion wave pattern—migrates in response to the influence of an etheron concentration gradient (potential gradient). The wave pattern migrates because the etheron gradient alters the ongoing reaction and diffusion processes that are responsible for generating it and deploying it.

Like subquantum kinetics, Brown's theory makes a significant departure from the traditional general relativistic concept of assuming that masses warp space-time. However, does his theory explain how a mass might alter the K and μ values he ascribes to the ether? Based on the few quotes from his notes that his family has released to the public up to this point, there is no indication that it does. Brown indicates that his ideas about the ether are based on experimental results. Indeed, permittivity and permeability are observable quantities that are used to characterize the electrical properties not only of material media but also of a vacuum transmitting electromagnetic waves. However, it is a major leap of induction to assume that this aspect of the ether is the cause of gravitation. Beginning from observables, it is difficult to extrapolate the workings of an etheric realm, which are inherently inaccessible to direct observation. One risks making the error of the blind men and the elephant.

We know that the speed of light slows down in media having higher K and μ values, and we also know that the speed of a photon decreases while passing through the gravity well of a massive celestial body, which is responsible for the gravitational lensing effect. However, it does not necessarily follow that gravity mediates this effect by increasing the ether's K and μ values. Might not this speed decrease arise because a decrease in the gravity potential (etheron concentration) causes a gravitational clock retardation effect? Subquantum kinetics predicts the latter and proposes that the same retardation phenomenon that relativists term "time dilation" is also responsible for causing the gravitational redshift observed in the spectra of white dwarf stars.*

Subquantum kinetics also describes in detail how a mass locally decreases the G-on concentration to create a gravity potential well in its vicinity and also how a charged particle generates a corresponding decrease or increase in gravity potential, depending on its electric polarity. As such, it is the only unified field theory to predict the existence of electrogravitic coupling at low potential energies. Does Brown's ether theory correspondingly explain how electric charge might produce gravitational force effects by inducing changes in the ether's K and μ? With the small amount of information that has currently been made available, we are left only to wonder. Nevertheless, it is interesting to find that Brown was considering ether physics explanations at this early date in his electrogravitics research.

---

*Changing the K value of the ether, that is, the value of its electric permittivity, is equivalent in subquantum kinetics to changing the X and Y diffusion coefficients of the Model G ether reaction system. Changing these diffusion coefficients would change the X and Y etheric concentration magnitude (the electric potential). In subquantum kinetics, however, etheric concentration gradients (potential gradients) may be produced without altering the diffusion coefficients.

5

THE U.S. ANTIGRAVITY SQUADRON

5.1 ELECTROGRAVITIC SECRETS OF THE B-2 BOMBER

For many years, rumors circulated that the United States was secretly developing a highly advanced radar-evading aircraft. Rumor turned to reality in November 1988, when the U.S. Air Force unveiled the B-2 Advanced Technology Bomber (see figure 5.1). Although military spokesmen related some things about the craft's outward design and low radar and infrared profile, there was much they were silent about. However, several years later, some key secrets about the B-2 were leaked to the press. In its March 9, 1992, issue, *Aviation Week & Space Technology* magazine made the surprising disclosure that the B-2 electrostatically charges its exhaust stream and the leading edges of its winglike body.[1] Those familiar with Brown's work will quickly realize that this is tantamount to stating that the B-2 is able to function as an antigravity aircraft.

Aviation Week obtained its information about the B-2 from a small

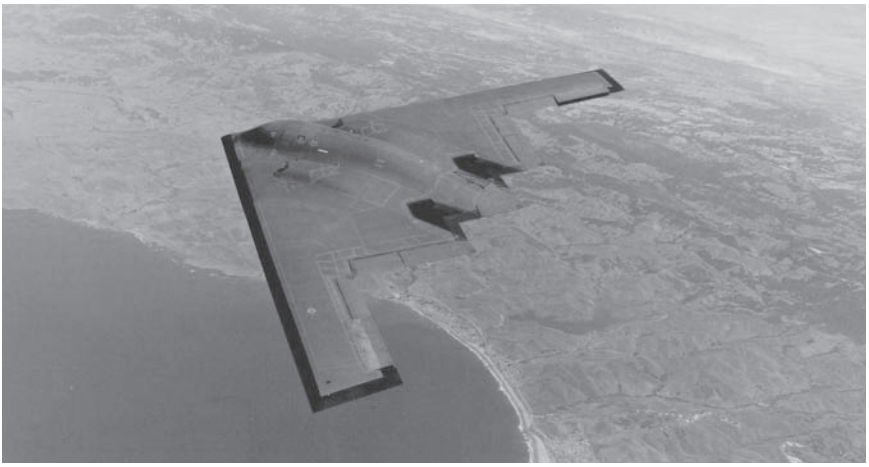

Figure 5.1. The B-2 Advanced Technology Bomber in flight. (U.S. Air Force photo)

group of renegade West Coast scientists and engineers who were formerly associated with black research projects, which are defense projects so secret that even their very existence is classified. In making these disclosures, the scientists broke a code of silence that rivals the Mafia's. They took the risk because they felt that it was important for economic reasons that efforts be made to declassify certain black technologies for commercial use. Two of these individuals said that their civil rights had been blatantly abused (in the name of security), either to keep them quiet or to prevent them from leaving the tightly controlled black R&D community.

Several months after *Aviation Week* published the article, security personnel from the black world went into high gear. That sector of the black R&D community received very strong warnings, and as a result, the group of scientists subsequently broke off contact with the magazine. Clearly, the overseers of black R&D programs were substantially concerned about the information leaks that had come out in that article.

Northrop, the prime contractor for the B-2, had been experimenting for some time with the propulsive benefits of applying high-voltage charge to aircraft hulls. For example, at an aerospace sciences meeting held in New York in January 1968, scientists from Northrop's Norair Division reported that they were beginning wind tunnel studies on the aerodynamic effects of applying high-voltage charges to the leading edges of high-speed aircraft bodies.[2,3] They said they expected that the applied electric potential would produce a coronal glow that would propagate forward from the craft's leading edges to ionize and repel air molecules upwind of the aircraft. The resulting repulsive electric forces would condition the airstream so as to lower drag, reduce heating, and soften or eliminate the supersonic boom.* Their results showed that when high-voltage DC is applied to a wing-shaped structure subjected to a supersonic flow, seemingly new "electro-aerodynamic" qualities appear that result in significant air-drag reduction on the structure and the virtual elimination of friction-caused aerodynamic heating, as well as the elimination of shock wave and wave-drag phenomena.[4] Similar research was carried out in 1965 by the Grumman and Avco corporations. Interestingly, in 1994, Northrop bought out and merged with Grumman as part of its drive to place increased emphasis on defense electronics technologies.

Northrop and Grumman scientists apparently got the idea for investigating this sonic cushion effect either from Brown or from papers describing his work that had been previously circulated. For example, in his 1952 paper describing Brown's electrogravitic discs, Rose wrote, "The Townsend Brown experiments indicate that the positive field which is traveling in front of the saucer acts as a buffer wing which starts moving the air out of the way. This immaterial electrogravitational field acts as an entering wedge which softens the supersonic barrier, thus allowing the material leading edge of the saucer to enter into a softened pressure area."[5] This was accompanied by the diagram reproduced in figure 5.2a, which shows how the supersonic flow would be diverted around leading edge of a wing.

Brown also called attention to this effect in his 1960 electrokinetic apparatus patent, which describes using a flame-jet generator to place a high-voltage positive charge on a needlelike electrode at the front end of a rocket (see figure 5.2b). In one passage, he wrote, "By using such a nose form, which at present appears to be the best suited for flying

---

*Although the author of that article speculated that Northrop was negatively charging the aircraft's leading edge, the sonic barrier effects could also be accomplished with a positive charge, as Brown originally suggested.

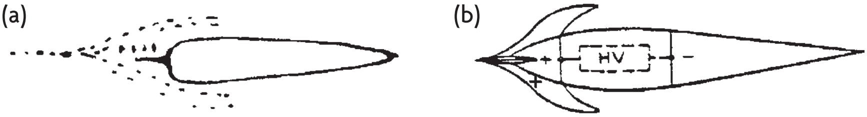

Figure 5.2. (a) Electrostatic deflection of the airstream around the electrified leading edge of a saucer-shaped aircraft. (From Rose, "The Flying Saucer," University for Social Research, April 8, 1952, vol. 7) (b) Brown's proposed use of a high-voltage needle electrode at the prow of a rocket. (From Brown, U.S. patent 3,022,430, figure 2)

speeds approaching or exceeding the speed of sound, I am able to produce an ionization of the atmosphere in the immediate region of this foremost portion of the mobile vehicle. I believe that this ionization facilitates piercing the sonic barrier and minimizes the abruptness with which the transition takes place in passing from subsonic velocities to supersonic velocities.[6]

Aerospace companies later put Brown's suggestion into use on rockets. A spike was placed at the nose of a rocket and caused to emit a high-voltage arc. Wind tunnel studies showed that the resulting electric field pushed the bow shock front away from the rocket nose so that it no longer contacted the main body of the missile and, hence, substantially reduced air drag. According to one Greek scientist working in affiliation with the U.S. Embassy in Greece, nose electrification is a standard technique used on U.S. rockets to stabilize them during takeoff. Engineers are told to figure a 20 percent weight reduction during the first few kilometers' gain in altitude when determining the rocket's trajectory.

In the late 1970s, Russian scientists at the Ioffe Institute in St. Petersburg led by Anatoly Klimov carried out an interesting experiment that demonstrated how plasmas could reduce air drag. They fired a 3-centimeter steel sphere at a velocity of one kilometer per second through a tube filled with low-pressure argon gas. In one section of the tube, the argon gas was ionized to form a plasma. They found that when the sphere entered the plasma, its shock wave stood twice as far away from the sphere as it would in ordinary gas, and, more important, the sphere's aerodynamic drag was reduced by 30 percent.[7]

Interestingly, Northrop, which had past experience in leading-edge electrification, was contracted by the Pentagon in 1981 to work on the highly classified B-2. Northrop's expertise in this area must have been a key factor contributing to its winning of this contract, for *Aviation Week* reported that the B-2 uses "electrostatic field-generating techniques" in its wing leading edges to help it minimize aerodynamic turbulence and thereby reduce its radar cross-section.[8] The same article mentions that the B-2 also charges its jet engine exhaust stream, which has the effect of rapidly cooling its exhaust and thereby remarkably reducing its thermal signature.

Although these disclosures were framed in the context of enhancing the B-2's radar invisibility, in fact they are part of its field propulsion drive capability. With a positively charged wing leading edge and a negatively charged exhaust stream (figure 5.3), the B-2 would function essentially as an electrogravitic aircraft. Just as in Brown's model flying discs (see figure 2.1) and in his patented electrokinetic disc (see figure 2.8), the positive and negative ion clouds created ahead and behind the

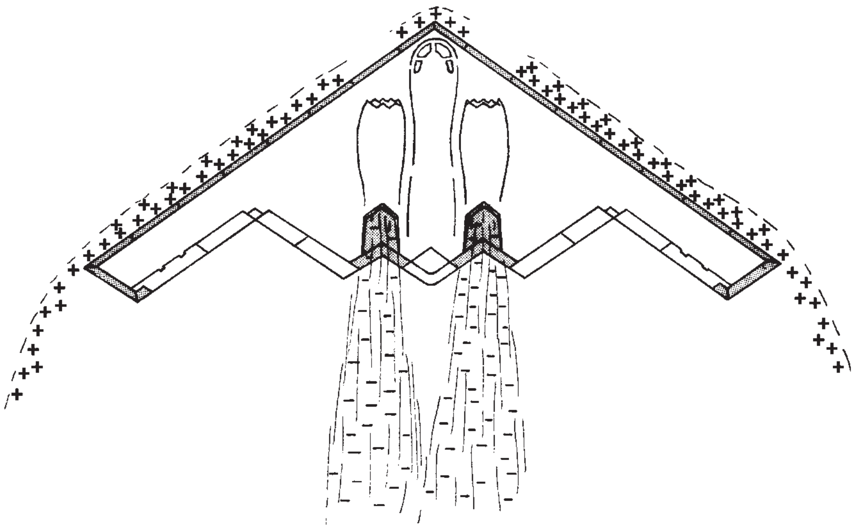

Figure 5.3. The profile of the B-2 as seen from above. The plane measures 69 feet from front to back and 172 feet from wing tip to wing tip. Cowlings on either side of the cockpit feed large amounts of intake air to the flame-jet high-voltage generators enclosed within its body. (P. LaViolette, © 1993)

B-2 would produce a locally altered gravity field that would cause it to feel a forward-directed gravitic force. In effect, the B-2 is a realization of the flying disc design Brown described in his electrokinetic generator patent as seen in chapter 2.

Rumors circulating among aviation industry personnel close to the project allege that the B-2 does use antigravity technology. A similar claim was made in the 1970s by Marion Williams, a former Central Intelligence Agency officer who had worked at the highly classified Area 51 facility, where the B-2 was test-flown.[9,10] Just before he died of cancer, Williams confided to his relative Andrew Basiago that design principles from crashed alien antigravity spacecraft were being utilized in the stealth bomber. Thus, our conjecture that the B-2 incorporates an electrogravitic drive may be substantially correct, although its design may actually have originated closer to home than Williams had been led to believe. The B-2, then, may be the first military antigravity vehicle to be openly displayed to the public! It may be the final realization of the kind of craft that Brown had proposed in Project Winterhaven and that the 1956 Aviation Studies report had disclosed was beginning to be developed by the military in late 1954. Consequently, the designation "B-2" might more appropriately stand for Biefeld-Brown effect.

The secrecy that has so tightly surrounded the B-2 most likely does not concern its radar-evading technology as much as it does its antigravity propulsion technology, although the two are probably closely intertwined. The use of such nonconventional propulsion technology would explain the B-2's high price tag, which averaged more than $2 billion per plane.

Although the black-world scientists mentioned nothing about electrogravitics in their *Aviation Week* disclosure about the B-2, they did admit to the existence of very "dramatic, classified technologies" applicable to "aircraft control and propulsion." They were especially hesitant to discuss these projects, noting that they are "very black." One of them commented, "Besides, it would take about 20 hours to explain the principles, and very few people would understand them anyway."[11] Apparently, what he meant is that this aircraft control and propulsion technology is based on physics principles that go beyond what is currently known and understood by the general public as well as most academic physicists. Indeed, by all normal standards, electrogravitics is an exotic propulsion science. Nevertheless, by beginning with an understandable theory, electrogravitics becomes a lot less mysterious. As mentioned earlier, subquantum kinetics provides one such viable theory.

The B-2's body design also raises suspicions that the aircraft is in fact an electrogravitic vehicle. A primary design criterion for an electrogravitic craft is that it have a large horizontally disposed surface area so as to permit the development of a sufficiently strong antigravity lift force. As Brown's experiments demonstrated, such an aircraft need not necessarily be disc shaped; triangular- and square-shaped forms also exhibit antigravity lift when electrified, although disc shapes give the best performance. The triangular planforms used in the B-2 and other advanced stealth aircraft may have been deemed better for reasons of their much lower radar cross-section.

Interestingly, one of the central features of the B-2's classified technology is the makeup of its hull's outer surface. Authorities tell us that the hull is composed of a highly classified radar-absorbing material. Ceramic dielectrics are a likely choice for the B-2. Unlike many lossy dielectrics that dissipate the energy of incident radio waves and therefore function as radar wave absorbers, ceramic dielectrics are lossless, energetically noninteractive, and, hence transparent to radar waves. More important, ceramic dielectrics also have the ability to store large amounts of high-voltage charge. By covering the hull with such an electric insulator, it would be possible for the B-2 to maintain a high-voltage differential between its positive leading edge and its negative ion exhaust stream. At sea level, the breakdown voltage is about 27,000 volts per centimeter, whereas at an altitude of fourteen kilometers, the breakdown voltage drops to about 10,000 volts per centimeter. So with its 69-foot (21-meter) front-to-back dimension, the B-2 at sea level in dry air should be able to maintain a voltage differential of up to 57 million volts before arcing over, whereas at fourteen kilometers, it should be able to maintain a differential of up to 20 million volts. Military spokesmen have said that the B-2 cannot fly in rainy weather, giving the reason that its coating of radar-absorbing material can be adversely affected. The real reason is that if the hull becomes wet, it can lose its insulating properties, and the leading edge electrode can short out to the rear exhaust duct.

Even after the hull's high-voltage electrification is shut off, the hull dielectric can retain a residual charge for some time because of the dielectric absorption effect mentioned in chapter 1. This could explain rumored incidents of ground crews having been zapped by touching a B-2 too soon after it landed.

The B-2's positively charged leading edge, another key component of its propulsion technology, was also a matter of special concern to Northrop designers. According to *Aviation Week,* the bomber's leading edges posed a particularly challenging production problem on the first aircraft. The leading edge ionizer is most probably a conductive strip or wire that runs along the B-2's sharp prow and is electrically charged to upwards of many millions of volts. As the craft moves forward, its electrified leading edge deflects the approaching airstream to either side, so that a large fraction of the generated positive ions are carried away from its body surface and are prevented from immediately contacting and neutralizing the negative ions in the B-2's exhaust stream. As a result, the B-2 is able to build up very large space charges ahead of and behind itself that would subject it to a large gravity potential gradient. This artificially produced gravity gradient should become steeper as the B-2 attains higher speeds and deflects its positive ions outward with increasing force. Hence the B-2's electrogravitic drive should operate more efficiently when the craft is moving at higher speeds.

Best results should be obtained when the B-2 is traveling at supersonic speeds. Positive ions from its leading edge should become entrained in the upwind sonic shock front and flow away from the craft through that sonic boundary layer, later to converge on the negatively charged exhaust stream. Military sources, however, claim that the B-2 is a subsonic vehicle. Its somewhat stubby cross-section and the angle of its wings might lead one to believe that this is so. Yet these design features should not pose a problem for supersonic flight, considering that the B-2 uses an electrostatic field to deflect the approaching airstream. Brown's saucer designs similarly had a stubby cross-section and yet were intended for supersonic travel. The Air Force probably avoided disclosing the B-2's supersonic capability to avoid raising curiosity about how the craft would generate the required thrust.

In both subsonic and supersonic flight, the deflected positive ions would form an ellipsoidal sheath as they circuit around the B-2 (figure 5.4). The B-2's forward positive ion sheath would act very much like an extended positively charged electrode whose surface has a parabolic shape. Thus, the electrogravitic force propelling the B-2 would arise not just from the leading-edge electrode, but also from the entire positively charged forward ion sheath. The positive- and negative-ion space charge distributions would very much resemble the charge configuration that Brown employed in some of his later electrogravitic experiments. Compare figure 5.4 with the parabolic electrogravitic devices shown in figure 3.7 that Brown had been testing. Brown noted that he obtained a greater electrogravitic thrust when the positive electrode was curved and made much larger than his negative electrode. At the time they exit the B-2's exhaust nozzles, the negative ions should be spatially much more concentrated than the positive ions emitted along the B-2's leading edge, so the field gradient from front to back would be very nonlinear.

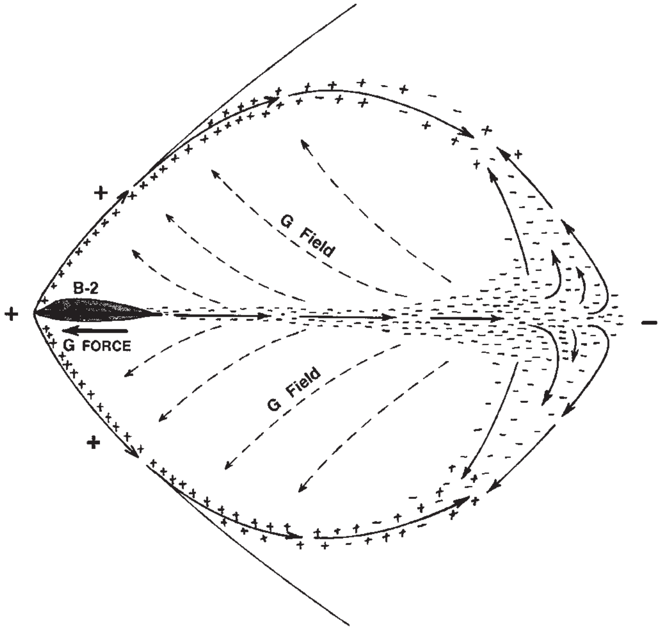

Figure 5.4. A side view of the B-2 showing the shape of its electrically charged Mach 2 supersonic shock and trailing exhaust stream. Solid-line arrows show the direction of ion flow; dashed-line arrows show the direction of the gravity gradient induced around the craft. (P. LaViolette, © 1993)

As mentioned in chapter 3, in describing the operation of his vertical-lift test rigs, Brown had voiced the necessity of establishing a nonlinear field gradient across the intervening dielectric to maximize thrust. As in these laboratory test rigs, the B-2 would have established a highly nonlinear field from aft to fore while in flight. The field lines would have a very high flux density at the negatively charged exhaust stream exiting the rear of the craft and would have diverged out to a much lower field flux density at the greatly dispersed, positively charged ion sheath surrounding the front of the craft. This same asymmetry would characterize the polarization of the B-2's ceramic dielectric hull, the field lines being most concentrated toward the negatively charged exhaust ducts and most dispersed toward its positive leading-edge electrode.

The electrostatic field produced by the ions surrounding the B-2 would exert forces on the B-2's polarized dielectric body that would produce a net forward thrust, as shown in figure 5.5. The high concentration of negative charges at the rear end of the craft would repel its negatively charged tail forward. Electrostatic attraction forces would also assist the craft's forward thrust by pulling its negatively charged stern toward its positively charged bow shock. The electric field would fan out and therefore drop in intensity toward the B-2's bow, so opposing forces acting on the front of the craft would be weaker and would have force components vectored mainly crosswise to the craft's direction of travel. The rearward slant of the B-2's positively charged bow shock would also assist the craft's forward propulsion by producing forward vectored repulsive forces on the B-2's nose and wing leading edge. At faster velocities, the craft's bow shock would bend back to a steeper angle, thereby increasing the forward thrust delivered by these repulsive forces.

Although the charges are moving away from the aircraft at a very high velocity, they are continuously being generated and dispersed into the surrounding air. Consequently, their space charge distribution remains stationary relative to the craft. It follows the craft and continues to exert its propelling force. The electrostatic forces depicted in figure 5.5 are arrayed quite differently from the electrogravitic forces shown in figure 5.4, but both would assist the craft's forward propulsion. Not enough is known at this point to say which of these sets of forces would be more important in propelling the craft.

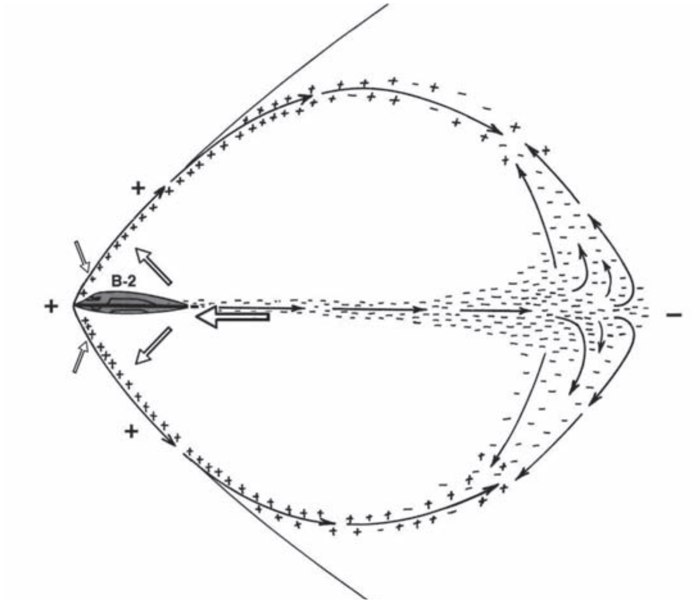

Figure 5.5. Side view of the B-2 showing the direction of the electrostatic repulsion forces (large white arrows) developed between the craft's charged body and the surrounding ion space charge. (P. LaViolette, © 2006)

As seen in figure 5.6, both of the B-2's leading edges are segmented into eight sections separated from one another by 10-centimeter-wide struts. Quite possibly, the struts electrically isolate the sections so that they may be individually electrified. In this way, through proper control of the applied voltage, it would be possible to gravitically steer the craft. Brown had suggested a similar idea as a way of steering his saucer craft.

The leading-edge sections positioned in front of the air scoops are, most likely, sparingly electrified so as to prevent positive ions from entering the engine ducts and neutralizing the negative ions being produced there. These two nonelectrified leading-edge sections would be ideal places to mount forward-looking radar antennae, since the ion plasma sheath produced by the other leading-edge sections would form a barrier that would interfere with radar signal transmission. In fact, the B-2's two Hughes Aircraft radar units are mounted precisely in these leading-edge locations, right in front of the air intakes. The ellip-

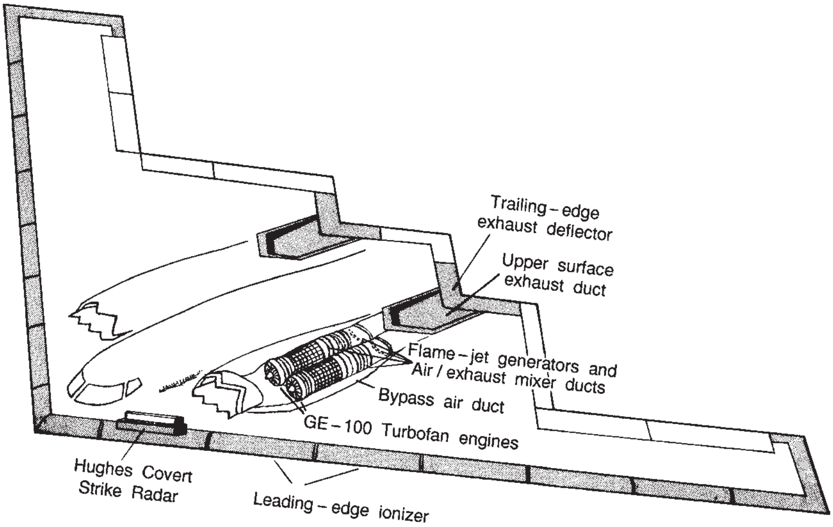
Trailing-edge exhaust deflector
Upper surface exhaust duct
Flame-jet generators and Air / exhaust mixer ducts
Bypass air duct
GE-100 Turbofan engines
Hughes Covert Strike Radar
Leading-edge ionizer

Figure 5.6. A cutaway view showing the arrangement of the B-2's flame-jet generators. (P. LaViolette, © 1993)

soidal ion plasma sheath that envelops the B-2 would strongly attenuate incoming radar pulses as well as any signal reflected back by the craft, thereby substantially reducing the B-2's radar visibility. This ion sheath might actually attenuate radar signals better than the ceramic radar-absorbing material that composes the B-2's hull. In fact, the military continues to research ways of using plasmas to absorb radar signals in the hope that a plasma-enveloped plane would be radar invisible.[12]

The Hughes radar units may also be supplying microwave energy to the B-2's leading edge to assist the air-ionization process. Microwave frequencies emitted along the leading edge would readily ionize the approaching air and allow the B-2's high-voltage electric field to discharge a greater flux of positive ions. With increased ion currents, the B-2 would be able to generate a greater ion sheath space charge at a given velocity and thereby increase the electrogravitic and electrostatic thrust propelling the craft. *New Scientist* magazine reported that NASA's Langley Research Center in Hampton, Virginia, had conducted wind tunnel tests in which they used a microwave beam to create a plasma upwind of an aircraft wing in a Mach 6 airflow and found dramatic reductions in air drag.[13] Quite likely, the B-2 has been using the same technique, although a high-voltage radio frequency field might work just as well.

5.2 ■ THE B-2'S FLAME-JET GENERATORS

The excerpt from the October 1954 *Aviation Report* article quoted in chapter 2 suggests that there should be a division of responsibility in the program to develop a Mach 3 electrogravitic aircraft, that the "condenser assembly which is the core of the main structure" be developed by an airframe manufacturer and that the flame-jet generator that provides the electrostatic energy for the craft should be developed by companies specializing in jet engine technology. Consistent with that suggestion, we find that Northrop Grumman, a company experienced in aircraft electrostatics, was contracted to develop the B-2's airframe and that General Electric, a company experienced in the development of jet engines and superconducting electric generators, was contracted by the U.S. Air Force to develop the B-2's engines. Recall that the 1956 *Aviation Studies* report mentions General Electric as one of the companies involved in early electrogravitics work. Also, note that Brown had conducted vacuum chamber experiments at the General Electric Space Center and that the Electrokinetics Corporation, which had hired him as a consultant, was located just several miles away.

The Air Force states that the stealth bomber is powered by four General Electric F-118-GE-100 jet engines similar to those used in the F-16 fighter, but the B-2's engines quite likely have been modified to function as flame-jet high-voltage generators. The propulsive force lofting the craft, then, would come not only from the mechanical thrust of the jet exhaust, but also from the electrogravitic and electrostatic force fields set up around the craft that would be powered by the jet's generators. Such flame-jet generators also would account for the presence of ions, which *Aviation Week* says are present in the B-2's exhaust stream. As in Brown's saucer, the engine nozzle would acquire a high positive charge as it exhausted negative ions. Presumably, the engine is electrically insulated from the aircraft hull and surrounding ductwork and its positive charges are conducted forward to power the leading-edge ionizers.

The B-2's General Electric engines are reported to each be capable of putting out 19,000 pounds of thrust. Consequently, all four engines together should provide the B-2 with a total output of about 140,000 horsepower, which translates into an electric power output of about 25 megawatts, assuming a 30 percent conversion efficiency.* By comparison, the November 1954 *Aviation Report* concluded that a 35-foot-diameter electrogravitic combat disc would need to have access to about 50 megawatts of power in order to attain Mach 3 flight speeds. Thus it appears that the magnitude of the B-2's power output is in the right ballpark.

A total of about 50 kilowatts of power (50 kilovolts × 1 ampere) probably would be sufficient to get the engine ionizers started. This could easily be handled by electric generators mechanically driven by the jet turbines. Once the flame-jet generators were operable and power was being extracted out of the ionized exhaust stream, the power draw of the leading-edge and exhaust ionizers could be allowed to rise much higher, to tens of megawatts.

The B-2 may use superconducting generators for its more conventional means of generating power from its turbines. Such generators have the advantage of being nearly 100 percent efficient in converting shaft power to electricity and of being extremely lightweight, weighing less than one-tenth as much as conventional generators. The first superconducting generator was developed in the mid-1970s by scientists at the General Electric Research Laboratory working under an Air Force contract. Subsequently, the generators were being mass-produced for the Air Force.

When the B-2 was unveiled in 1988, one Air Force official commented that it uses a system of baffles to mix cool intake air with its hot exhaust gases so as to cool the gases and thereby make them less visible to infrared-guided missiles. Although infrared invisibility might be one side benefit, most likely the real purpose for diluting the exhaust is to greatly increase the flow volume and, hence, the ability of the exhaust stream to eject negative charges from the craft. Much of the air entering the B-2's intake scoops would bypass the inlet to the flame jet and be allowed to mix in with the jet's hot ionized exhaust (figure 5.6).

---

*This horsepower estimate is based on the assumption that the jets would be able to propel the craft to a velocity of about 600 miles per hour (Mach 0.8).

Actually, the jet's exhaust has an aspirator effect in that friction between the exhaust stream and the surrounding air creates a sheer layer that naturally entrains the bypassed air into the exhaust flow and thoroughly mixes the two. As a result, the temperature and velocity of the exhaust stream drop as its volume increases. At the same time, the sound that normally emanates from the exhaust's shear layer, which is the prime contributor to a jet's sonic boom, is substantially muffled, for all this occurs within the engine shroud. Aeronautical engineers call this air-mixing exhaust nozzle an ejector-type suppressor nozzle.

A series of electrified conical collars, similar to those described in Brown's patent 3,022,430 (see figure 2.10), located in the exhaust nozzle might inject additional negative ions into the mixed exhaust stream, thereby boosting its ion content. This augmented volume of ionized gases then discharges through the two rectangular exhaust ports positioned near the rear of the B-2's wing and contacts the titanium-coated overwing exhaust ducts, portrayed in figure 5.6. These open-duct sections may function as rear electric grids that collect million-volt electrons from the exhaust streams and recycle them to power the exhaust and wing air ionizers. This might be done in the same fashion as Brown had suggested in his patent (see figure 2.9). Additional high-voltage current could be recovered from the conical electrodes.

As the exhaust leaves the craft, it passes over trailing-edge exhaust deflectors, flaps that can be swiveled so as to direct the exhaust stream either up or down for flight control. This accomplishes more than just vectoring of the exhaust's thrust; it also changes the direction of the electrogravitic force vector. When the exhaust is deflected downward, negative charges are directed below the craft. As a result, the electrogravitic force on the craft becomes vectored upward as well as forward. When the exhaust stream is deflected upward, its negative ions are directed above the craft, resulting in an electrogravitic force that is directed downward as well as forward. Thus, by using these flaps, the B-2 is able to control its force field so as to induce either a gain or a loss of altitude.

Once the B-2 attained a sufficiently high flight speed, it would receive enough airflow through its scoops that it could maintain a relatively high flow rate of ionized exhaust, even with its engine combustion substantially reduced. Since hot exhaust is not essential to its operation, the high-voltage generator could just as well run on cool intake air with fuel combustion entirely shut off. As Brown pointed out in his electrokinetic generator patent, "It is to be understood that any other fluid stream source might be substituted for the combustion chamber and fuel supply."[14]

In such a "coasting mode," in which jet combustion is entirely shut off, the B-2 would be able to fly for an indefinitely long period of time with essentially zero fuel consumption, powering itself primarily with energy tapped from its self-generated gravity gradient. For example, during coasting, the kinetic energy of the scooped airstream would arise entirely from the craft's own forward motion, with this motion being due to the pull of the electrogravitic propulsion field. The kinetic energy of this ionized airstream is responsible for linearly accelerating negative ions down the B-2's exhaust ducts and, hence, for creating the multimegavolt potential difference relative to the positively charged engine body. The craft's high-voltage electron collector grids—the overwing exhaust ducts and other collector surfaces possibly hidden in the exhaust nozzle—recover a portion of this electric power to run the ionizers for the craft's flame-jet generator. Provided that this power drain is not excessive and that the plane's propulsive gravity field can be adequately maintained, the craft would be able to achieve a state of perpetual propulsion. As mentioned in chapter 1, such perpetual motion behavior is possible in devices having the capability to manipulate their own gravity field. Moreover, when the B-2 flies at a sufficiently high velocity, such that the flow rate of its scooped air exceeds many times the exhaust flow rate from its jet turbines, the electric power output of its mixed exhaust will be comparably larger, perhaps exceeding 100 megawatts.

When the B-2 was first put on public display, critics had suggested that it could not risk flying at high altitudes because it might create vapor trails that would be visible to an enemy. Edward Aldridge Jr., then secretary of the Air Force, was asked whether that problem had been solved. He replied, "Yes, but we're not going to disclose how." Clearly, to explain how the B-2 could travel at high altitude with its jet combustion essentially shut off and producing no vapor trail, he would have to disclose the vehicle's nonconventional mode of propulsion. Incidentally, in such a coasting mode, the B-2's waste heat output also would be greatly reduced, hence lessening its chance of being detected with infrared sensors.

The B-2's emergency power units (EPUs) probably play a key role in assisting such high-altitude flight. According to Bill Scott, author of the book *Inside the Stealth Bomber,*[15] each EPU consists of a small self-contained gas turbine powered by hydrazine, a liquid that rapidly decomposes into gases when activated by a catalyst. The expanding gases are made to drive a turbine that, in turn, drives an electric generator. Public disclosures state that the purpose of the EPUs is to supply electric power to the craft should the B-2's four jet engines happen to flame out or its four electric generators happen to simultaneously fail. More likely, they were designed to function as auxiliary generators capable of operating at high altitudes (or even in space), where the air would be too thin to sustain normal jet combustion. At high altitudes, the decomposed hydrazine gases would take the place of scooped air as the medium for transporting ions from the craft. That is, after passing through the EPUs, these gases would be electrified and expelled from the craft in the same fashion as would the jet exhaust. Brown noted that his electrogravitic propulsion system could run just as well using a compressed gas source such as carbon dioxide as the ion-carrying medium as it could using the exhaust from a jet engine.

When flying between an altitude of twenty-eight and eighty-three kilometers, the B-2 would have to shut off its hull electrification, since in this altitude range the air would become a very good conductor because of the glow discharge effect. By accelerating to an orbital velocity speed in the range of Mach 19 to 23 prior to reaching an altitude of twenty-five kilometers, the B-2 could coast through this forbidden region. Once in space, above an altitude of eighty-three kilometers, the vacuum would be good enough that the B-2's electrogravitic drive could once again be switched on. As mentioned earlier, it would rely on its hydrazine EPUs to power itself in spaceflight.

Figure 5.7 is a picture taken of a B-2 in transonic flight through humid coastal air. At transonic speeds, which range from just below to just above the speed of sound (Mach 0.8 to 1.3), some parts of the airflow over an aircraft become supersonic. In this speed regime, very-low-pressure areas form at various locations around an aircraft, and if the aircraft happens to be passing through humid air near the dewpoint, visible clouds can form in these low-pressure areas and remain with the aircraft as it travels. Figure 5.8 shows a cloud formed around an F/A-18 jet fighter flying at transonic speed.

Northrop Grumman has produced a movie clip showing the B-2 in various flight modes. It is available for public viewing at its website, www.is.northropgrumman.com/windows_media/b2_tx.wmv. One segment near the beginning of the clip, which lasts for one and a half seconds, shows the B-2 surrounded by transonic vapor condensation clouds as it flies through humid air. French astrophysicist Jean-Pierre Petit has posted this segment on his website and notes that the vapor cloud above the B-2's wing visibly luminesces as though it was being excited by a high-voltage field.[16] The reader is also referred to color stills from this video posted on Petit's website. Unfortunately, we were not able to secure permission from Northrop Grumman to reproduce the stills here.

The segments from this video show that the cloud itself has a yellow luminous hue, a color that differs from the white color that such clouds

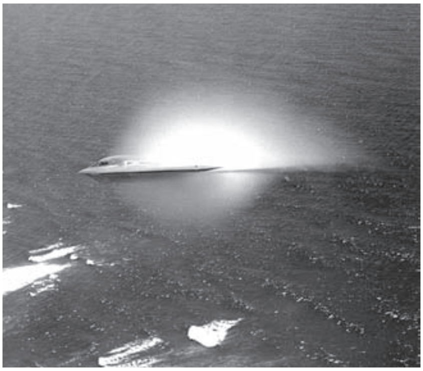

Figure 5.7. A B-2 bomber flying through humid coastal air at transonic speeds with a vapor cloud condensing behind its bow compression wave. (Photo by Bobbi Garcia, courtesy of the U.S. Air Force Flight Test Center)

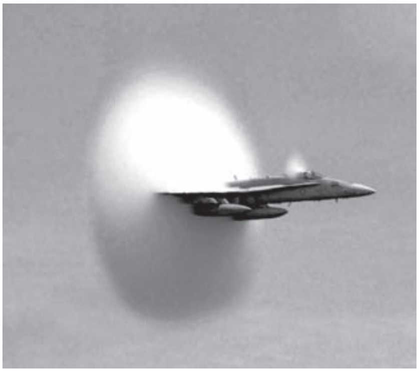

Figure 5.8. Vapor cloud around an F/A-18 jet fighter flying at transonic speed. (U.S. Navy photo by Ensign John Gay)

would normally exhibit in sunlight. Since at high voltages fog is more subject to electrical breakdown than is dry air, a high-voltage field could excite a glow discharge in an overwing vapor cloud to appear much like the luminescence seen in the video. An orange hue is also seen reflecting from the portion of the B-2's upper-wing surface that borders the vapor cloud. Interestingly, in the last two frames of the video clip segment, the vapor cloud almost entirely vanishes, yet this orange luminescence or glow reflection is still apparent on the B-2's wing, suggesting that the high-voltage field is still active. It is surprising that this cloud disappearance happens suddenly from one frame to the next, in less than a tenth of a second. It is not clear whether this change is due to a sudden change in air humidity or whether the B-2's electric field was being switched to a lower setting.

The B-2 is not quite as invisible to detection as is often claimed. For example, its flame-jet generator exhaust could generate a radio noise signal. If that's so, the random high-velocity movement of negative ions present in the turbulent exhaust stream would produce radio wave noise emission. This could explain the signal noise that one TV viewer reported at the time of one B-2 sighting. Also, although invisible to radar detection at microwave frequencies, at lower frequencies such as are used in television broadcasting, the B-2 produces a distinct reflection. Just like conventional low-flying airplanes, it causes a local distortion in the TV signals received by residential televisions. In fact, during the war in Yugoslavia, Serbs were monitoring TV disturbance patterns over populated areas as a method of alerting them to when a B-2 was in the area and to determine where one might be located at any given time. In retaliation, the Americans bombed their television transmitting tower.

5.3 ▪ AC ELECTRIFICATION?

It is possible that the B-2 superimposes an AC signal on its DC bias potential. The Aviation Studies "Electrogravitic Systems" report mentions using high-K dielectrics energized with 50,000 kilovolt-amps of power as a means for propelling a supersonic combat vehicle of the sort proposed in Project Winterhaven. This clearly implicates the use of high-voltage AC. So, we might venture that, in addition to the DC bias potential, a high-frequency AC field is applied between the wing leading edge and the rear exhaust ports. If the excitation frequency was chosen to be 30 megahertz, then a quarter wavelength would have fit across the ten-meter distance from the exhaust ducts to the wing leading edge. This would have allowed the applied AC field to resonantly build up to a high voltage potential, similar to what Brown was achieving with his electrokinetic apparatus. This could be done with a high-voltage class C amplifier designed to automatically lock in on the wing's resonant frequency. By repeatedly charging and discharging the craft's dielectric, the AC field would also have kept the craft's dielectric from fully polarizing and building up an electric dipole moment that might cancel out most of the field propulsion thrust effects.

We might venture that the same AC energization technique may also be used to provide vertical thrust to the B-2, thereby allowing it to hover. The B-2 is said to have a weight of about 158,000 pounds (72 metric tons) when empty and about twice that when fully loaded. For a wing area of 460 square meters, this works out to about 16 grams per square centimeter empty or 32 grams per square centimeter when fully loaded. By comparison, Brown's 18-inch-diameter vertical electrokinetic thruster was generating an upward force of 125 grams when energized at 170 kilovolts. This amounts to a lift of about 0.08 gram per square centimeter. So, to generate a force sufficient to support the B-2, a thrust-per-unit area only four hundred times greater would be needed. This could easily be accomplished simply by using a high-K dielectric for the thruster's central insulator and energizing the device at a higher voltage. The "Electrohydrodynamics" report mentions that thrust increased exponentially with voltage, according to the square or cube of voltage. Moreover, the data Bahnson presented in his 1965 patent indicates that thrust on an AC-energized test rig increased according to the 2.6 power of voltage. Extrapolating this, we find that Brown's vertical thruster would deliver greater than a hundred times more thrust if it were energized at 1,000 rather than 170 kilovolts. Also, if Brown had replaced his Pyrex insulator with a material such as barium titanate, having a higher dielectric constant and higher mass density, this would have boosted the thrust by an additional thirty-two-fold. So instead of just 125 grams of force, Brown's thruster could have produced an amazing 400 kilograms of force. If 380 of these asymmetrical capacitors were distributed over the B-2's lower wing surface, they would collectively produce an upward thrust of 152 tons, sufficient to loft a fully loaded B-2. Brown is likely to have made similar thrust projections in proposing his electrogravitics idea to the military. We may be erring on the low side in making this estimate, since dielectrics are known to exist that have K values more than four times higher than the K value of barium titanate.*

To ensure that the thruster electrodes did not arc over at these high voltages, the interior space of the arcuate canopy (shown in figure 3.2) could be filled with a low-K insulator. The entire thruster together with its high-strength canopy, central high-K dielectric, surrounding low-K insulator, and high-voltage step-up transformer might weigh only 20 kilograms, which would amount to 2 percent of the thrust that the device would be producing.

The "Electrohydrodynamics" report states that under vacuum conditions, Brown's electrokinetic capacitor drew just 2 microamps of current at 250,000 volts. At the 1,000-kilovolt potential proposed for the B-2 thrusters, this leakage current would probably extrapolate to about 30 microamps, or about 30 watts of power. Adding in the power requirement for the AC microwave source used to excite the negative electrode, the total power consumption might come to about 100 watts per thruster, or about 38 kilowatts total. Given that each thruster would be yielding 400 kilograms of force, this amounts to a thrust-to-power ratio of about 40,000 newtons per kilowatt, or about 2,700 times that of a jet engine.

As an alternative to Brown's electrokinetic thrusters, the B-2 could be lofted by a series of Lafforgue field propulsion thrusters of the type discussed in chapter 12. Theoretical projections suggest that such a capacitor, measuring 38 centimeters high, 8 centimeters wide, and 1 meter long, made with a K = 4,000 barium titanate dielectric, would be capable of delivering a lift of 2 tons when charged to 100 kilovolts. Currently, there is no laboratory data available on barium titanate Lafforgue thrusters to back up this projection, but if it is correct, it would imply that seventy-five such thrusters would be sufficient to levitate a fully loaded B-2.

---

*The black-project scientists mentioned earlier in this chapter disclosed information about the development of low-radar-observability dielectric ceramics made from powdered, depleted uranium.[17] The material is said to have approximately 92 percent the bulk density of uranium, which would give it a specific gravity of about 17.5. Thus, this new material would have a mass density about three times that of barium titanate and so would develop a comparably greater electrogravitic pull. Asymmetrical thrusters possibly incorporated in the B-2's wing may use a high-density dielectric of this sort adjacent to their negative electrodes where the field strength and gravitic thrust would be highest.

Earlier, we spoke of General Electric's Air Force–funded development of lightweight superconducting generators, with the Air Force being the prime purchaser. Such generators might not only be used to run the B-2's electrical equipment, but might also be the principle means by which the craft generates AC power for its vertical lofting. Power from these generators would be fed to a network of high-voltage step-up transformers attached to each thruster. High-voltage AC power could also be conveyed between the leading-edge electrode and the overwing exhaust ducts to enhance the B-2's forward thrust. Power applied at a radio frequency of some tens of megahertz would have helped ionize the airstream approaching the wing's leading edge to soften the shock front, having the same effect as a microwave ionizer.

By having a distributed array of vertical thrusters, the potential of each thruster could be made to "float" so that those located closer to the bow of the B-2 would operate at a more positive DC potential than those at the stern. Also, the B-2 could accomplish pitch stabilization by selectively powering these thrusters. Activating more thrusters on its left side, for example, would cause the craft to execute a clockwise roll to its right. Thus, its thrusters would take the place of mechanical flaps on conventional planes. This selective energization could be carried out by an onboard computer, which would automatically control the stability of the B-2 with the help of a fuzzy logic servo system.

After the B-2 bomber was unveiled, scientists at the British Aerospace Corporation (BAE Systems) were eager to reverse-engineer its propulsion system. In 1996, a member of their Advanced Concepts Office privately told one visitor that they were aware that the B-2 flies by means of some form of antigravity propulsion and that the craft has a very massive power supply. Indeed, if the B-2 had superconducting generators and numerous high-voltage transformers on board, its power supply would have been quite massive.

In 1997, a three-star general told retired Air Force colonel Donald Ware he knows that "the new Lockheed Martin space shuttle [National Space Plane] and the B-2 [stealth bomber] both have electrogravitic systems on board"; and that "this explains why our 21 Northrop B-2s cost about a billion dollars each. Thus, after taking off conventionally, the B-2 can switch to antigravity mode, and, I have heard, fly around the world without refueling."[18]

Ware made this comment four years after I had presented my paper on the B-2's electrogravitic propulsion system at the 1993 International Symposium on New Energy.[19] After presenting this paper, I sent a copy of it to Bill Scott, editor of *Aviation Week and Space Technology,* the same magazine that had made the original disclosure about the B-2 charging the leading edge of its wing with high voltage. Scott, who has formerly worked for the National Security Agency, has himself flown the B-2 bomber during test-flight operations. Some time after sending the paper, I telephoned him and asked him what he thought. His response was, "[V]ery interesting, very interesting." He would say no more.

That same year Ben Rich, the man who had led the development of the F-117 Stealth Fighter at Lockheed's secret research and development Skunk Works, gave an alumni speech at his UCLA alma mater in which he stated: "We already have the means to travel among the stars, but these technologies are locked up in black projects, and it would take an act of God to even get them out to benefit humanity . . . Anything you can imagine, we already know how to do." Rich was right about the difficulty of breaking the military code of secrecy. In October 2007 I heard from a reliable U.S. government source that Boeing recently completed a classified electrogravitics propulsion project for the military that had certain novel features. The technology worked so well that they felt it could be of fantastic benefit if used on their commercial jet airliners. They reportedly applied for declassification of their invention for commercial use, but were denied permission.

6

GRAVITY BEAM PROPULSION

6.1 ▪ EXPLAINING THE ELECTROGRAVITIC IMPULSE EFFECT

A high-voltage shock discharge produces a momentary gravitational thrust that we may refer to as the electrogravitic impulse effect. One example of this is the train of shock discharges that were emitted from Tesla's high-voltage magnifying transmitter (see figure 6.1). The shocks created thrusts in their direction of travel with minimal reversal occurring during their intervening relaxation periods. Tesla frequently remarked on the force that such impulses would exert on distant objects. He noted that when he stood near the source of the discharges, he could feel them as a great force or sharp pressure striking the whole front of his body.[1] These effects were most apparent as a stinging of the face or hands, which persisted even when he situated himself behind glass and metal shields as far as 50 feet from the shock source. By properly adjusting the discharger on his transmitter, he was able to either project forces outward or direct forces inward.[2]

Tesla referred to these longitudinal force field rays as radiant energy, although the usual use of this term was to signify the radiation of transverse electromagnetic waves. He fashioned a series of long vacuum tubes to project the radiant energy waves he was producing. These "beam-ray tubes" employed a single concave negative electrode in one end and, in many cases, had a thin metallic window, usually aluminum or beryllium, at the opposite end. Despite the hard vacuum that they were initially provided with, these tubes often developed anomalously high pressures and often exploded. In *Secrets of Cold War Technology,* Vassilatos notes that Eric Dollard, who duplicated many of Tesla's beam-ray experiments in the 1980s, also observed the anomalous force that these tubes developed. Vassilatos wrote that "vacuum bulbs so activated actually ruptured in tiny holes, and yet continued to produce their 'vacuum' discharges! Mr. Dollard and the witnesses of these experiments reported hearing a hissing issuance which emerged from the glass rupture holes. Once the activating energy was removed, the globes simply imploded."[3]

Dollard has demonstrated both mass-repulsion and mass-attraction effects being produced by radiant energy impulses. Tesla conceived these discharges as being waves conducted in a rarefied ether. Vassilatos wrote:

> In his article, Tesla describes the shield-permeating shocks as "sound waves of electrified air." Nevertheless, he makes a remarkable statement concerning the sound, heat, light, pressure, and shock which he sensed passing directly through copper plates. Collectively, they "imply the presence of a medium of gaseous structure, that is, one consisting of independent carriers capable of free motion." Since air

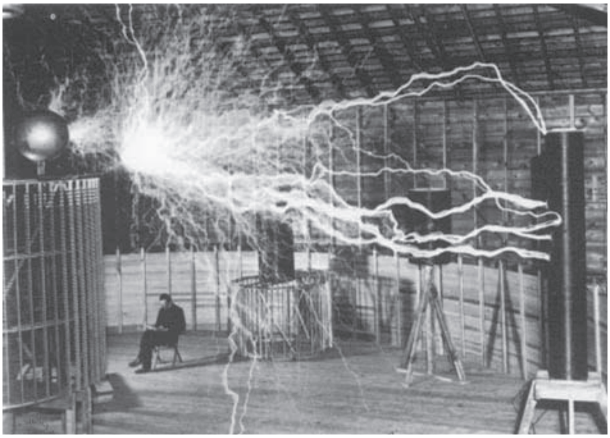

Figure 6.1. Tesla's magnifying transmitter operating, with Tesla sitting in the background.

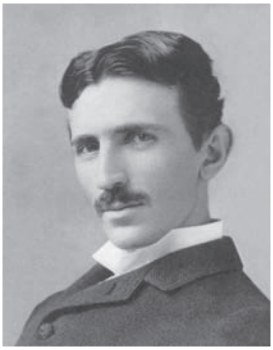

Figure 6.2. Nikola Tesla in 1894 at age thirty-eight.

> was obviously not this “medium,” to what then was he referring? Further in the article he clearly states that “besides the air, another medium is present.”[4]

Tesla’s reference to etheric sound waves implies an ether medium that is compressible and that transmits waves longitudinally, much as air transmits sound. The ether he visualized was very different from the elastic solid ether proposed by the nineteenth-century ether physicists that was supposed to transmit electromagnetic waves by means of transverse stresses in its lattice, creating forces perpendicular to the direction of wave propagation. Tesla adopted this different view because the forces produced by his shocks were directed longitudinally, not transversely. As such, his concept of the ether comes close to the transmuting ether idea suggested in subquantum kinetics, which views a local energy potential as a localized high or low etheron concentration and an energy potential wave as a propagating etheron concentration magnitude. The alternate increase and decrease of etheron concentration that would characterize a passing wave very much resembles Tesla’s idea of alternate compression and rarefaction of an ether gas.

Tesla ascribed the longitudinal forces he observed to the action of ether currents propelled forward by the ether shocks he was generating. However, as is suggested below, the net force imparted by these impulses is more likely due to the action of the potential gradient (the etheron concentration gradient) rather than to any mechanical momentum-type action arising from an associated ether wind.

Experiments performed by Eugene Podkletnov and his coworkers at a laboratory in Russia provide yet another example of the existence of the electrogravitic impulse effect. Using his knowledge of crystals and ceramic materials, Podkletnov developed a unique superconducting ceramic material, yttrium-barium-copper-oxide ($YBa_2Cu_3O_{7-y}$), and conducted a series of experiments in which he emitted high-voltage discharges from an electrode that had been coated with this superconducting material. In his early experiments, he applied thin coatings of this superconductor to the surfaces of metal spheres having diameters ranging from 25 to 50 centimeters. He would cryogenically cool a sphere, charge it to 500 kilovolts with a Van de Graaff generator, and then allow it to discharge across a gap to a second metal sphere. Both were contained in a helium-filled chamber (figure 6.3).[5] He observed that a weak gravitational pulse was emitted that was able to move a newspaper taped to the wall in an adjoining room. The force did not appear to diminish with distance.

In later experiments, which used a modified version of this spark gap, Podkletnov determined that this force was gravitational in nature. He succeeded in confining the impulse to a narrow beam that was capable of imparting strong longitudinal forces to very distant test masses. For these tests, he elaborated on the technology by enclosing his discharge apparatus in a vacuum chamber. Also, instead of a sphere, he used a 10-centimeter-diameter, 0.8-centimeter-thick superconducting ceramic disc for his emitter (see figure 6.4).[6–8] The disc was cooled to 50 to 70K, and an inner electromagnet coil induced a “frozen-in” magnetic field oriented perpendicular to the face of the disk to assist in collimating the discharge. An outer coil that girdled the discharge chamber was used to generate an auxiliary field to further enhance the collimating effect of

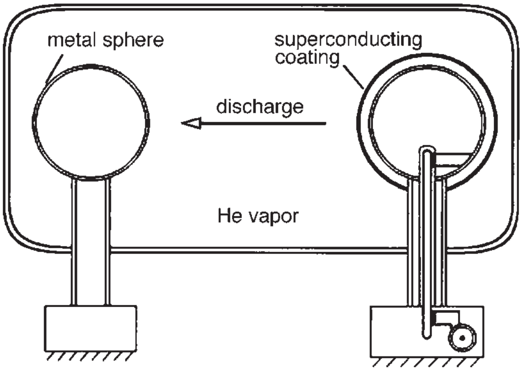

Figure 6.3. The initial setup of the Podkletnov impulse gravity generator. (After Podkletnov and Modanese, 2001)

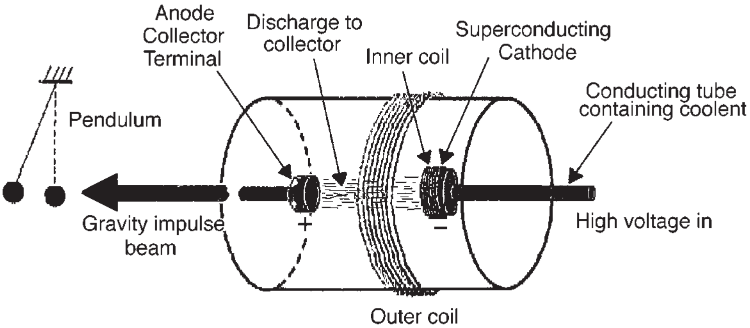

Figure 6.4. Gravity impulse beam generator developed by Podkletnov. (After Cook, Jane's Defense Weekly, *2002)*

the inner magnetic field. Podkletnov then used a Marx capacitor bank to generate a high-voltage electron pulse ranging from 0.5 to 2 megavolts, which he discharged through the disc and across the evacuated gap toward a 1.5-centimeter-thick copper anode of similar diameter.

When the capacitor bank was discharged, a coherent plane wave was emitted from the superconducting cathode as a flat, 10-centimeter-diameter glowing disc covering the entire electrode surface, which then propagated toward the anode. Using a laser beam as a sensor, Podkletnov and his associates were able to determine that the discharge had a rise time of less than 100 nanoseconds and a duration of the order of 10 to 100 microseconds. A gravity shock wave was apparently accompanying this electron discharge. While the electron discharge terminated at the beam generator's anode, a gravitational shock wave, apparently accompanying the discharge, would continue in the same direction, passing through the anode unstopped and emerging as a gravity impulse that was confined to a 10-centimeter-diameter beam matching the anode's cross-section.

When fired with a discharge voltage of 2 million volts, the emitted wave was found to produce a 14-centimeter deflection of an 18.5-gram pendulum bob suspended from an 80-centimeter-long thread and placed at a distance of 150 meters from the beam generator. The beam was able to exert this force after having first passed through a Faraday cage shield, an additional 2½ centimeters of steel, and a 30-centimeter-thick brick wall. This reminds us of Tesla's radiant energy shocks, which exerted forces even after having penetrated shields of copper and glass.

A quick calculation indicates that their pendulum bob experienced a momentary repulsive force of about 500,000 g with the passage of each 100-nanosecond shock front.*

Pendulum bobs of differing masses and made of various materials (e.g., rubber, glass, plastic, metal) were used, but all deflected by the same amount for a given discharge voltage. Since force on the pendulum scaled in direct proportion to the pendulum mass, Podkletnov and the physicist Giovanni Modanese concluded the effect they were seeing was gravitational in nature.[9] This mass effect rules out the possibility that momentum is being imparted to the pendulum by electromagnetic radiation pressure. Furthermore, the amount of electromagnetic energy produced by the discharge is far too small to explain the observed force effects. These pendulum results also rule out the possibility that this force might be due to a longitudinal "electrokinetic force," of the sort proposed by American physicist and professor Oleg Jefimenko, which would act only on free charges present in the target material.[10] If the force produced by the gravity impulse beam were due to such electrokinetic ion forces, differing force magnitudes should have been observed when differing pendulum bob materials were tested, and such was not seen. Figure 6.5 shows the amount of deflection that the pendulum experienced when the gravity beam generator was energized at various voltages.

Experiments conducted with smoke indicate that the air in the path of the gravity beam would briefly move forward and back with the passage of each emitted gravity impulse. Firing the gravity impulses through pressure-sensitive carbon paper at varying distances consistently produced a 10-centimeter-diameter black circle. This indicates that the beam was able to maintain tight coherence over large distances, with the force of the beam cutting off sharply outside of this circular boundary. In this fashion, this impulse beam is comparable to a laser

---

*In their 2003 paper, Podkletnov and Modanese reported a lower instantaneous acceleration of the order of approximately 500 g. Here they assume that the gravitational force is exerted during the entire duration of the pulse, which has a duration of 10^{-4} second. However, subquantum kinetics suggests that the gravitational force is delivered by the gradient at the forefront of their shock wave, which is of much shorter duration, having a rise time of less than 100 nanoseconds. This implies an instantaneous gravitational acceleration a thousand times larger than they calculate.

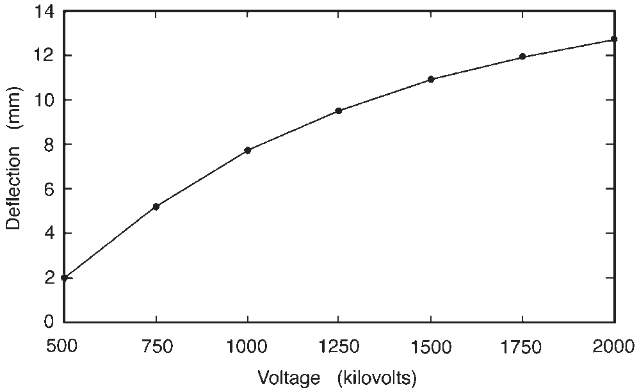

Figure 6.5. Graph of the pendulum deflection produced at various electron beam discharge voltages in the Podkletnov-Modanese gravity beam experiment. (After Podkletnov and Modanese, 2001)

beam, but achieves its coherence without the help of a resonator cavity. In an article in *Jane's Defense Weekly,* Nick Cook reported that a laboratory installation in Russia had demonstrated that, when fitted with a laser sight, this beam was able to knock over a set of books one kilometer away and that it exhibited negligible power loss even at a distance of two hundred kilometers.[11–13]

According to Cook, engineers at the Boeing Aerospace Corporation Phantom Works facility in Seattle were actively interested in investigating this beam technology with the aim of developing it into an R&D project. An internal company briefing document written entitled "Gravity Research for Advanced Space Propulsion" states, "If gravity modification is real, it will alter the entire aerospace business."[14] Other aerospace companies interested in Podkletnov's beam generator included BAE Systems and Lockheed Martin. Cook reported, however, that the Russian government had resisted allowing the gravity beam technology to be exported.

Subquantum kinetics predicts that Podkletnov's gravity impulse beam generator would produce no recoil when fired. That is, the back-directed impulse, which is delivered to the superconducting cathode at the time the electron pulse discharges, is canceled out by the equal and opposite forward-directed impulse delivered to the anode when the anode subsequently absorbs the electron discharge. However, the gravity field pulse, which continues its forward journey through and past the anode, would then produce additional forward thrusts on all masses through which it passed, in apparent violation of Newton's third law of motion. In this case, when these remote thrusts are included, it is no longer true that every action necessarily produces an equal and opposite reaction.

In 2003 I wrote to Dr. Podkletnov indicating to him my belief that his impulse generator should produce no recoil when it is operating and also that, based on subquantum kinetics, I expected that his pulses would propagate at superluminal speeds.[15] He wrote back that I was correct that, in fact, the device produces "no back mechanical reaction" when fired and also that his team had found that the pulses traveled superluminally. He said that they were able to determine that the pulses traveled at close to sixty-three to sixty-four times the speed of light, a result that they planned to check and recheck before submitting it for publication. He also wrote, "It is amazing that you could predict the effects that we have observed. We will be happy to learn more about your subquantum kinetics approach."[16] I subsequently sent him a copy of my book *Subquantum Kinetics,* and in 2004 he published a very favorable review about it in *Infinite Energy* magazine.[17]

In their 2003 paper, Podkletnov and Modanese acknowledge that conventional theories of gravity fail to explain the action of their gravity impulse beam. For example, general relativity predicts that gravity waves should induce quadrupolar forces in a target mass that are oriented transverse to the direction of wave travel. Instead, the gravity impulse beam is observed to produce repulsive longitudinally directed gravitational forces, hence, in line with the direction of wave propagation. This is just as Tesla had observed for his shock discharges. It also confirms a key prediction of subquantum kinetics that electrons would produce matter-repelling gravity potential hills (G-etheron hills) and that a change in the electric or gravity potential field should propagate forward as a longitudinal potential wave.[18,19]

Subquantum kinetics offers the following explanation of how these gravity waves might be generated: A shock discharge from a cathode to an anode would produce a wave having a sharp rise in electric field potential, followed by a more gradual relaxation. As described in chapter 4, section 4.1, subquantum kinetics predicts that an electron should generate a gravity potential hill. An electron discharge, then, would be accompanied by an in-phase gravity potential wave. This would appear similar to that shown in figure 6.6, in which the wave is shown traveling from right to left. The front of this wave would consist of a sharp rise in G-on concentration, that is, a rise in gravity potential. Its gradient would induce a gravitational force on encountered masses in its forward direction of travel, shown as from right to left in the figure. Hence, it would have a repulsive effect. The trailing part of the wave, which would have a declining gravity potential, would induce an opposing thrust that would create an attractive force on encountered masses. This drawing is highly idealized, since a pulse discharge typically produces an oscillating decline in voltage as it tails off.

A force (**F**) applied to an object over a period of time (*t*) yields a quantity called impulse, the product of force and time (**I** = **F**×*t*), which equals the resulting change in the object's momentum. So if a forward repulsive force exerted during the passage of the leading edge of the wave were to be ten times as great as the reverse attractive force exerted during the passage of its trailing edge but were to last only one-tenth as long as the force exerted during the passage of the trailing edge, the forward impulse would exactly equal the reverse impulse. So the wave's passage would have no net effect on the momentum of the target mass.

Consequently, to explain the findings of Podkletnov and Modanese, another important factor must be involved—virtual charge. The advancing

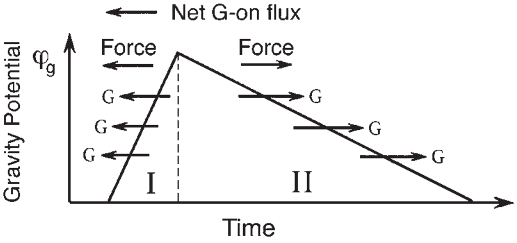

Figure 6.6. A propagating electrogravitic shock wave capable of producing a repulsive gravitational force. The wave would be traveling from right to left, and the net gravitational force and G-on flux would also be directed from right to left. (P. LaViolette, © 2007)

electron discharge would be accompanied by a negative electric potential wave, and not only would the front of this wave have a very steep drop in voltage with distance, but also its voltage would change with distance in a highly nonlinear manner.* So this shock front would be associated with the creation of a very high negative virtual charge density that would produce an enormous matter-repelling gravity field.

This sudden drop in voltage may be modeled with the exponential equation $V = -r^{10}$, which is plotted in figure 6.7a. Relation 7, from chapter 4, predicts that this should produce a gravity potential field varying as $\varphi_g(r) \propto \nabla^2\varphi_E(r)$, hence as $\varphi_g \propto r^8$. This exceedingly steep gravity potential profile is plotted in figure 6.7b. The wave is plotted in the figure as traveling to the left, and its gravity gradient would be producing a force depicted as directed to the left, hence it would be repulsive. The damped sine wave oscillation that trails the shock front would produce a gravitational thrust that was many orders of magnitude smaller and oscillating from a reverse to a forward direction. However, the forward thrusts would always dominate, resulting in a net repulsive thrust.

When the electron discharge is absorbed in the impulse generator's anode, the electric field potential of the discharge goes to zero. Nevertheless, the gravity wave that was generated while the discharge was in flight continues to move forward. It passes through the anode and ultimately produces thrust effects on distant masses.

The steep gravity potential gradient at the shock's leading edge would induce a convective G-on flux in the direction of wave propagation, or, in other words, would create a G-on ether wind. The G-on fluxes described here would be accompanied by X-on fluxes traveling in the same direction (and by Y-on fluxes traveling in the opposite direction). In effect, with each firing of the gravity impulse beam, a puff of

---

*Relativistic length-contraction effects would also contribute to the steepness of this front. For example, at 500 kilovolts, the electron discharge would consist of 0.5 MeV electron with a mass twice as great as its rest mass. Electrons would be traveling at 87 percent of the velocity of light and would have a Lorentz factor of 2. Consequently, the voltage rise time would be compressed by a factor of 2, making the potential gradient twice as steep. At 2 MeV, the electrons would be traveling at 98 percent of the speed of light and would have a Lorentz factor of 5, which would make their potential gradient five times as steep.

Figure 6.7. (a) Voltage at the front of the electron shock discharge plotted as a function of time or distance. The wave travels to the left. (b) Corresponding gravity potential profile arising from the virtual charge density the wave would generate. (P. LaViolette, © 2007)

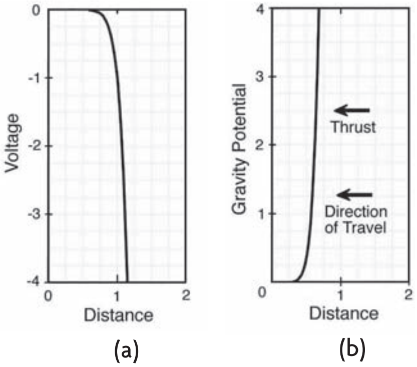

G-ons would travel rectilinearly away from the cathode. We may compare this to the firing of a cannon, in which the outward flight of the cannonball is accompanied by a forward-moving slug of air that creates a collimated ring vortex, or smoke ring. In a similar fashion, this G-on puff would be accompanied by an outward-moving G-on ring vortex that may help to collimate the impulse.

Podkletnov's gravity beam generator does not generate gravity impulses specifically because its cathode emitter is made of superconducting material. Rather, the gravitational repulsion effect of its shocks may be attributed to the electrogravitic coupling that exists between charge and gravity. The subquantum kinetics explanation given above for the production of the gravity impulse effect would apply equally well to the repulsion thrusts produced by Tesla's shock discharge pulses. The superconductivity of Podkletnov's cathode emitter more likely contributes to boosting the pulse's imparted force by sharpening and steepening its leading-edge field gradient. Also, it may help to cohere the gravity wave into a nondiverging beam.

We may surmise that this electrogravitic impulse effect manifests in essentially the same way as the Biefeld-Brown electrogravitic thrust effect. That is, it arises due to an inherent coupling between charge and gravitational mass. The impulse effect, though, exerts a much stronger instantaneous force than Brown's gravitators since its field gradient is much steeper. However, because this more intense thrust operates over a much briefer span of time, it must be cyclically repeated to produce a sustained propulsion effect.

In July 2003, Podkletnov had disclosed to me that at a higher discharge voltage, of around 10 million volts, the gravity wave pulse became so strong that it was able to substantially dent a 1-inch-thick steel plate and punch a 4-inch-diameter hole through a concrete block![20] Compared with the pendulum deflection produced by a 2-million-volt discharge, this kind of damage implies at least a thousandfold increase in the delivered force. Such a large impulse is not predicted by the trend line presented in figure 6.5, which shows pendulum deflection plateauing as pulse voltage increases. This trend projects a twofold increase in the impulse strength, not a thousandfold increase. Subquantum kinetics predicts that voltage gradients that are steeper and more nonlinear should deliver greater gravitic thrusts; recall equation 8 of chapter 4. So I theorized that for these more forceful gravity pulses, Podkletnov's research team must have powered their pulse generator with an improved Marx bank, one that was capable of delivering its charge much more rapidly to the beam generator's superconducting disc, allowing it to produce a gravity potential pulse having a steeper rise time.

To check whether my suspicions were correct, in 2007 I wrote to Dr. Podkletnov explaining my reasons for suspecting that he used an improved Marx bank to enable his pulse generator to generate these higher thrust pulses.[21] He wrote back confirming that this was indeed the case, that they had modified their Marx bank so that the pulse voltage on the superconducting emitter rose much more rapidly.[22] He stated that they observed that the faster the increase in voltage at the cathode emitter, the larger the generated impulse force. Since a faster voltage rise time would increase the nonlinearity of the pulse, their observations of a greater resulting thrust are consistent with the predictions of subquantum kinetics. Podkletnov also disclosed that this improved pulse generator exhibited increased thrust power even when energized with 5-million-volt pulses. Also, he noted that these powerful pulses would sometimes bend the generator's copper anode as well as damage the walls of the discharge chamber. It is perhaps because of these higher impulse results that the Russian government is resisting export of the technology. Indeed, technology with such capabilities could be misused as a weapon.

6.2 ■ SUPERLUMINAL PULSES

Let us now examine some astounding evidence that shows that superluminal (i.e., faster than the speed of light) space travel is possible and at the same time refutes Einstein's outmoded special theory of relativity. One example of superluminal wave propagation is found in the gravity shock fronts produced by Podkletnov's beam generator. His research team was able to measure the speed of their gravity beam pulses by using an oscilloscope to mark the moments when the gravity pulse momentarily dimmed two laser beams directed across the beam's path. Knowing the distance between the laser beam cross-points and the times registered for each successive dimming, they were able to determine the speed of a gravity pulse. As mentioned earlier, Podletnov's team found that the pulses were traveling at sixty-four times the speed of light![23] They were only able to determine a lower-limit value since the speed of the pulses surpassed their oscilloscope's time resolution limit.

This controversial finding stands as a blatant disproof of the special theory of relativity, which maintains that nothing can go faster than the speed of light. However, the high speeds of these pulses becomes understandable when considered in the context of subquantum kinetics. According to subquantum kinetics, a light wave should have a speed of *c*, the velocity of light, relative to the local ether rest frame. Now, suppose that the field gradient of the advancing gravity potential wave accelerates a slug of ether to a high velocity relative to the surrounding laboratory ether reference frame. Let us say that it attains a velocity of 63 *c*. Theoretically, this should be possible since the ether is not bound by the same speed limit rules that apply to electromagnetic radiation. Now, if a light ray or shock front was moving within this ether wind slug in the same direction as the ether wind, we should find that, relative to the laboratory reference frame, this light ray would be traveling at sixty-four times the speed of light, 63 *c* for the speed of the ether wind slug plus 1 *c* for the light ray moving forward within it.

Podkletnov's team measured a far higher velocity for the concrete-smashing gravity impulses produced by their improved Marx bank pulse generator. Using a pair of synchronized atomic clocks to measure the arrival time of the impulses at separate locations, they were able to determine that the impulses were traveling at least several thousand times the speed of light, perhaps faster![24] Their faster speed may be attributed to their steeper field gradient, which would have propelled G-ons forward to a very high velocity.

In the 1980s, well before the experiments of Podkletnov and Modanese, American engineering physicist Guy Obolensky investigated the speed of electric field shocks to test Tesla's claims that his radiant energy shocks had traveled at superluminal speeds. In that work, Obolensky had shown that the sudden discharge of a 16-square-foot, high-voltage air-gap capacitor produced a surface wave that was able to travel along the length of a 7.07-meter-long transmission line at a speed of 1.23 *c*, hence 23 percent faster than light.[25]

In 2005 and 2006, I worked with Obolensky at his laboratory in upstate New York to investigate the superluminal speed of shock discharges. For this we used a high-voltage magnifying transmitter that Obolensky had built some years earlier and that incorporated many of Tesla's design features. Like Podkletnov's apparatus, Obolensky's magnifying transmitter is energized by the discharge of a Marx capacitor bank (figure 6.8). The electron shock discharge is conducted down the length of a horizontal, oil-filled tube called a Teslatron, which contains a lengthwise coil that helps to sharpen the shock

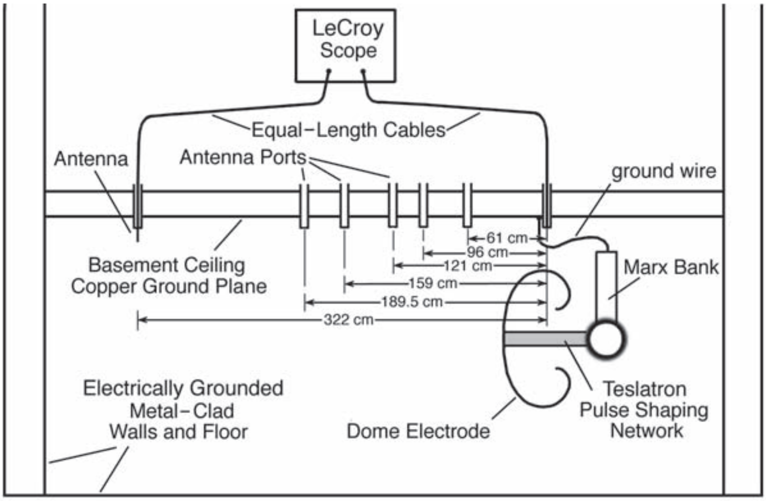
LeCroy Scope
Equal-Length Cables
Antenna
Antenna Ports
ground wire
Basement Ceiling Copper Ground Plane
61 cm
96 cm
121 cm
159 cm
189.5 cm
322 cm
Marx Bank
Electrically Grounded Metal-Clad Walls and Floor
Dome Electrode
Teslatron Pulse Shaping Network

Figure 6.8. A test setup used to measure superluminal pulses radiated from a dome electrode. (P. LaViolette, © 2007)

front. Thus, it performs a function similar to that of Podkletnov's superconducting disc. The tube terminates inside a 1.2-meter-diameter, mushroom-shaped dome electrode that has a geometry similar to the dome on Tesla's Wardenclyffe tower. The electric potential of this dome "floats" at the shock's potential, so it functions much like the cathode in Podkletnov's beam generator, although it has no superconducting coating.

The shock discharge induces a damped sinusoid oscillation along the length of the Teslatron column, such that the initial negative swing in potential is followed by a positive swing, then a negative swing, and so on. This AC oscillation imprints itself on the advancing shock wave, with a typical AC pulse appearing, as shown in figure 6.9. Upon reaching the dome, the electron shock begins to fan out as it moves forward away from the electrode, forming an electric potential wave termed a Coulomb wave. This differs from a conventional electromagnetic wave in that the Coulomb wave exerts primarily longitudinal forces on charges it encounters, rather than transverse forces.

The negative swing in electric potential at the forefront of the Coulomb wave would carry a forward-moving negative virtual-charge density. The subquantum kinetics electrogravitic coupling relation

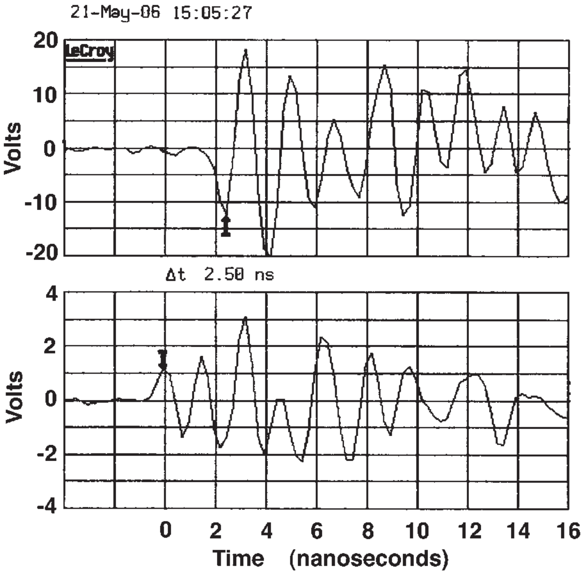

Figure 6.9. Voltage versus time oscillogram of a typical shock front pulse measured by Obolensky. Upper trace: pulse detected at 189.5 centimeters from the reference antenna; lower trace: positive current flow detected very close to the impulse generator's ground terminal. (Courtesy of A. G. Obolensky)

predicts that this would induce a gravity wave having a rising G field and a positive gravity potential gradient. Like Podkletnov's gravity impulse, this would exert a longitudinal repulsive force on masses it traversed. The positive swing in electric potential that immediately followed it would carry a forward-moving positive virtual-charge density that would induce a decreasing G field and an attractive force on masses it encountered. As the field continued to oscillate from negative to positive, the induced gravitational force would change between repulsion and attraction. Since the individual cycles in this wave train are sawtooth shaped, with differing rising and falling slopes, they should produce a net longitudinal gravitational force that presumably is repulsive. At a later date we hope to report measurements of the gravity impulse produced by this device.

In the case of the Podkletnov gravity beam, the beam's cross-section does not appreciably increase with distance from the beam generator. As a result, the pulse forefront should maintain its initial sharp gravity field gradient as it travels forward and should maintain its ability to accelerate G-ons in its path up to the same high speed. Hence, the beam's initial superluminal speed should not appreciably diminish with travel distance. However, subquantum kinetics predicts a different circumstance for impulses radiating outward from the dome electrode of Obolensky's magnifying transmitter. Unlike the collimated shock discharges emitted by Podkletnov's gravity impulse generator, those produced by Obolensky's magnifying transmitter fan out as they radiate away from the transmitter's dome electrode. In this case, because the impulse wavefront expands radially outward as it travels forward, the velocity of its generated ether wind would decline inversely with the impulse's distance from the dome (see box on page 181).

Since the speed of a superluminal wave would be the sum of the impulse's velocity (c) relative to the local ether wind frame plus the velocity (v) of the local ether wind relative to the laboratory frame, one would expect that the wave's net velocity would begin at a superluminal speed and decline toward c as the shock wave advances and the ether wind velocity tends toward zero.

The Decline of Ether Wind Velocity with Distance

In the case of an isotropic electrostatic or gravitational field, such as extends outward from the center of a particle, the field's potential gradient is observed to decrease as the *inverse square* of radial distance from the particle's center. However, in the case of an electric or gravitational shock wave, the gradient should decline according to the *inverse* of radial distance.[26] That is, provided that the width of the pulse does not change, the gradient should decline in accordance with the $1/r$ decline of the electric or gravity field potential. In these tests, the pulse width was found to remain relatively invariant, so one would expect a $1/r$ decline in field gradient.

In fact, tests that Obolensky and I performed showed that the velocity did decline with increasing distance as predicted. The data were best matched if ether wind velocity decreased according to the inverse of distance from the electrode grounding point.[27] This was the first experiment of its kind to determine whether a shock's superluminal speed might change with increasing distance from an emitting electrode. Obolensky's test arrangement was able to measure the shock wave's time-of-flight to six collinear antenna locations. These were situated at distances ranging from 61 to 322 centimeters, as measured from a reference point located where the current impulse from his Marx bank passed to the ceiling ground plane through a ceramic disc resistor (see figure 6.8). So this experiment was able to test the validity of the subquantum kinetics prediction that the speed of the shock wave should begin at an initial superluminal value and should subsequently decline in an asymptotic approach to the speed of light (c). It also simultaneously tested a specific claim made by Tesla that the impulses from his magnifying transmitter initially departed at a theoretically infinite velocity and subsequently slowed down, slowing rapidly at first and later at a lesser rate.

Obolensky's test setup used a 1-gigahertz-bandwidth LeCroy oscilloscope able to sample data at 250-picosecond intervals. It was much faster than the oscilloscope he had used in his earlier experiments. He used two monopole antennae to detect the electric field component of the ground current shock wave as it passed by. Each antenna was made from a single 12-centimeter-long wire attached to a 50-ohm coaxial cable terminator that led to the oscilloscope, both cables being of equal length and jacketed with ferrite surface wave suppressors. The oscilloscope, in turn, determined the time lapse between the two signal currents, and knowing the distance between the antennae, the pulse's propagation speed could be calculated.

Obolensky positioned one monopole antenna pickup immediately behind the ceramic disc grounding resistor that was close to but behind the dome's rim. This antenna sensed the positive impulse current that flowed into the laboratory ceiling ground plane with the shock wave's departure. He placed the other antenna pickup at one of the predetermined locations in front of the dome antenna. On successive test runs, he moved this second pickup to each of six antenna port locations to get pulse arrival time readings at these various distances from the ground-current-sensing reference antenna.

The lower trace in figure 6.9 depicts a typical shock current pulse detected by the reference antenna that is displayed as a positive voltage rise, its voltage maximum being indicated by an arrow. The upper trace in figure 6.9 shows the corresponding superluminal surface wave shock pulse detected by the second monopole antenna pickup positioned 189.5 centimeters from the ground-current-sensing reference antenna. Its first negative potential peak is also marked with an arrow, the surface wave's polarity being the inverse of the detected ground plane current impulse. The time interval between the two arrows indicates the time-of-flight of the superluminal surface wave. The timing of a given marker was accurate to approximately 125 picoseconds. The temporal width of the shock's lead wave cycle varied very little as it moved outward, the wave cycle having a duration of about 1.77 ± 0.09 nanoseconds.

Figure 6.10 shows the time-of-flight of the pulses as measured at various distances from the dome electrode's ground. The measurements are marked as black circles and a suggested model fit is represented by the small black diamonds. The 61-centimeter data point was given a zero time lapse since the oscilloscope measurements indicated that the pulse spanned this near-electrode distance virtually instantaneously.

Figure 6.11 shows the speed estimated for the shock at various

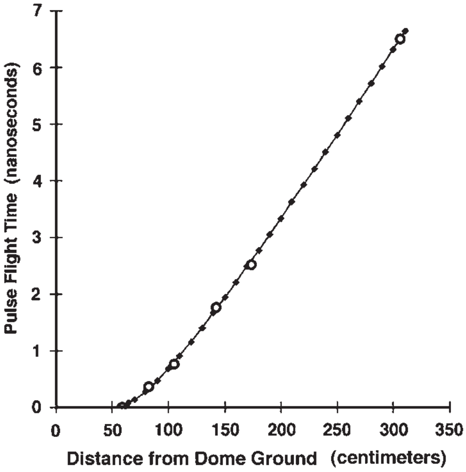

Figure 6.10. Graph showing shock front pulse time-of-flight as a function of distance from the emitting impulse generator ground. Black circles indicate actual data points. Small black diamonds plot the best fit to these data points based on the velocity-distance model plotted in figure 6.11. (Data taken by Obolensky and processed by LaViolette; © 2007, P. LaViolette)

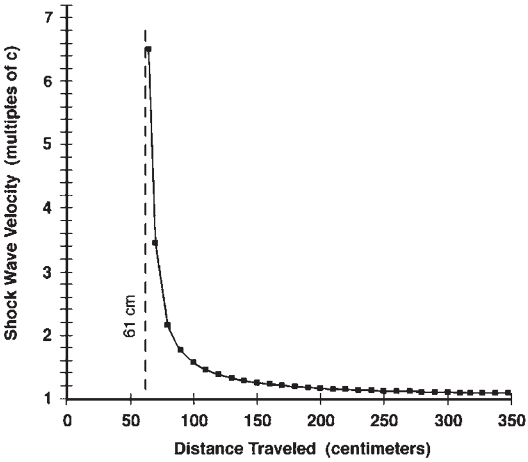

Figure 6.11. Graph showing superluminal shock front velocity plotted as a function of distance from the emitting dome's ground-current-sensing reference antenna. Gray squares indicate the model that makes the best fit to the six time-of-flight data points plotted in figure 6.10. With increasing travel distance, shock velocity declines toward c as subquantum kinetics predicts. (Data taken by Obolensky and processed by LaViolette; © 2007, P. LaViolette)

distances from the impulse generator's ground point based on the time-of-flight model fit performed in figure 6.10. This shows that at 80 centimeters from the ground-current-sensing reference antenna, the shock had a superluminal speed of approximately 2.32 times the speed of light, its speed progressively dropping toward the rest frame light speed (c) with increasing travel distance. The model shown assumes that ether velocity (v) varies with distance (d) as: $v = kc/(d - 61)^{1.1\pm0.1}$, in which k equals 33.6 centimeters and a distance 61 centimeters from the ground reference point is chosen as the model's zero point. Superluminal velocity (c') is then given as: $c' = c + v$.

The data strongly support the subquantum kinetics prediction that the superluminal speed of such a wave should decrease with increasing distance when radiated from a magnifying transmitter dome. Furthermore, they show that superluminal speed is a characteristic of shock discharges regardless of whether the discharges are emitted from a superconducting electrode of the sort used in the experiment by Podkletnov and Modanese. Finally, these results lend support to the unpublished findings of Podkletnov and Modanese that their gravity wave impulse had traveled at a high superluminal speed. In other words, taking the work of Tesla and that of Podkletnov and Modanese in context, we see that superluminal shock front propagation speeds are the norm rather than the exception.

Superluminal propagation speeds have also been observed in atomic bomb tests. Scientists working for the military have known since the early bomb tests in the late 1940s that the electromagnetic pulse shock wave from a nuclear explosion propagates outward at superluminal velocities when measured near the explosion epicenter. The enormous energy released in the explosion accelerates the fireball's free electrons radially outward at a relativistic velocity, generating a radially propagating shock pulse that, like a shock discharge from Obolensky's magnifying transmitter, moves outward at superluminal speeds. Subquantum kinetics attributes this breaking of the "light barrier" to the creation of a tremendous radial ether wind generated by the electric gradient of the advancing shock. For an isotropic explosion, the velocity of this ether wind would decline approximately as the inverse of the distance traveled, and similarly, the velocity of the electromagnetic pulse shock would be expected to follow this decline in an asymptotic approach to the velocity of light. At such a time when the data are declassified, it would be worth checking to see if the subquantum kinetics velocity decline prediction was born out.

Clearly, the results of Obolensky's magnifying transmitter experiment violate the fundamental premise of special relativity that energy cannot be transmitted faster than the speed of light. Beyond 1 meter from the dome's ground-current connection, the shock front travel distance exceeded the shock front's wavelength. Moreover, by the time the pulse had reached the 3-meter mark, its flight distance exceeded five pulse wavelengths. Hence, the superluminal speeds observed cannot be explained away as an allowable violation arising from quantum entanglement of the photon quantum, nor can they be ascribed to a change in shape of the shock wave profile. Thus, Einstein's theory is certainly disproved and the subquantum kinetics ether theory is vindicated.*

6.3 ▪ INTERSTELLAR SPACE TRAVEL

By itself, the electrogravitic impulse effect could serve as an excellent drive for use in interstellar space travel. One could imagine a spacecraft outfitted with a large-aperture Podkletnov gravity beam projector that would be powered by a set of very high-power Marx capacitor banks operating at potentials of up to 2 million volts and conveying its discharge to a superconducting electrode seventy times larger in diameter than the superconducting disc Podkletnov fabricated for his beam generator, that is, 7 meters in diameter instead of 10 centimeters. The beam generator would be mounted at the rear of the ship and would direct its gravity pulses forward toward the ship's bow. Suppose that, like Podkletnov's laboratory apparatus, the ship's gravity beam generator were to produce impulse accelerations of greater than 500,000 g over the brief 100-nanosecond pulse interval. Also suppose that the ship's capacitor banks have sufficient time to recharge to deliver these pulses once per second, a rate sixty times greater than Podkletnov's apparatus was able to achieve. Averaging this gravity impulse over the 1-second interval between successive pulses, we find that this would be the same as if the ship experienced a continuous acceleration of about 0.05 g, or 5 percent of the Earth's accelerating force.

---

*Because of the revolutionary nature of these findings, we conducted a separate experiment that incorporated a double-check of our measurements. We measured the time the wave took to go from point A to point B, and the time was also measured for the wave to go from B to C. These points were collinear with the direction of shock wave propagation. The total of these two flight times was then compared with the measured time for the wave to go from A to C. The summation accurately corresponded to the observed A-to-C value. This indicated that the current pulses that the cables conveyed to the oscilloscope were reflecting the actual passage of the shock wave away from the dome electrode and that the wave's instantaneous position was being faithfully sensed by the pickup antennae.

However, to run such a propulsion unit would require an enormous amount of power, 6,000 megawatts, which is 300,000 times more than the 20 kilowatts that Podkletnov and Modanese were using. Such power could be supplied by a set of large-sized nuclear power plants, similar to those operated by some electric utilities. Or it might be provided by an onboard "free energy" generator such as the gravity wave power generator described in the next section or by a Searl effect generator such as that described in chapter 10.

The beam would need to be designed to produce a very uniform acceleration across the surface of its electrode so as to minimize the development of gravitational sheer forces. If the craft's occupants were seated in the path of such a beam, they would feel no acceleration since every atom of their bodies, and the entire ship as well, would be uniformly accelerated by the gravitic pulses. The aperture of the beam would need to be made slightly larger than the craft so as to avoid the rapid drop-off in the accelerating force at the periphery of the beam. There would be no fear of meteor collisions because the beam's forward-directed gravitic pulses would clear out a path ahead of the ship that would be free of interstellar debris. By negatively charging the ship's bow, a repulsive gravitic field could be built up there that could deflect any meteor that happened to make a last-minute entry into the ship's flight path.

With an acceleration of 0.05 g, the journey to even the nearest star would take far too long to be practical for manned interstellar space flight. Such an endeavor would require engines capable of delivering gravitational accelerating forces on the order of 10 g. If the Podkletnov-Modanese beam generator was used, a pulse repetition rate two hundred times greater would be needed, or about one pulse every 5 milliseconds. However, the power demand would rise to the enormous figure of 1,200 gigawatts, which is three times the average rate of power consumption of the United States or six times the thrust power produced by the first stage of a Saturn V rocket.

Let us for the moment overlook the practicality of generating such a large amount of power on board a spaceship. Propelled by 10 g of acceleration, a ship would be able to accelerate to 2.8 percent of the speed of light in just one day. By one week, it would be up to 20 percent of the speed of light, and after one month it would be traveling at about 85 percent of the speed of light. Once up to this subthreshold light speed, having consumed three times the annual power consumption of the state of California, the crew could shut off the beam propulsion system and coast for the remainder of the journey. The time to reach Alpha Centauri, the nearest star system, lying 4.37 light-years away, would be just five years and two months. Upon nearing the Alpha Centauri system, the spacecraft would rotate itself 180 degrees and then would once again turn on its gravity propulsion beam to decelerate. Navigation could easily be done by using the "galactic GPS system," the network of pulsar beacons that is deployed throughout the galaxy. (See my book *Decoding the Message of the Pulsars* for more about the use of pulsars for interstellar flight navigation.)

Gravity beam technology, in its current state of development, is impractical from the standpoint of energy efficiency. A spacecraft having a mass of 700 tons, accelerated at 10 g with an energy consumption of 1,200 gigawatts, would have a thrust-to-power ratio of about 5×10^{-3} newtons per kilowatt, or about fifty times less than that of the NASA Lewis Research Center ion engine. Perhaps a hundredfold-higher efficiency might be secured if the craft's superconducting discs were powered by improved Marx capacitor banks of the sort Podkletnov used in generating the 10-million-volt concrete-smashing pulses. However, this would still not be much of an improvement over the efficiency of an ion engine.

If used alone, the gravity beam technology would be more practical if the beam generator and its power supply were to be located at a stationary spaceport facility with the beam being directed toward a specific destination to which one wished to travel. The spaceship would then simply need to be navigated to keep it positioned within the beam.

One advantage of the gravity beam technology would be its ability to propel the ether forward to a very high velocity within the confines of its beam, thereby creating an ether-frame dragging effect that would allow a ship to approach or even exceed the speed of light without harmful consequences to its passengers. As we have seen in the previous section, it is possible to transmit shock waves at superluminal speeds, presumably because of their ability to surf the forward-moving ether wind. So, we may conclude that it should also be possible to accelerate a ship to superluminal speeds. Unlike special relativity, subquantum kinetics allows the possibility that both matter and energy waves could be made to propagate at superluminal velocities. The gravity beam would not only propel the ship forward, but it would also push forward the ether within its superluminal tunnel. In standard physics terms, the gravity beam, in effect, would be accelerating the ship's local rest frame to superluminal velocities. As noted earlier, the Podkletnov gravity beam generator has been observed to produce gravity shocks that travel at enormous superluminal speeds. Based on this, we may conclude that it is technically possible to accelerate a "beam ship" to similar speeds, allowing it to travel toward its destination at hundreds or even thousands of times the speed of light.

Perhaps interstellar space travel could be made practical if Brown's electrokinetic thrusters, considered in chapter 3, were used in conjunction with the gravity impulse beam drive, thereby tremendously reducing the energy requirements. The power requirements for a trip to Alpha Centauri might then be brought down to around 50 megawatts, comparable to the output of a nuclear submarine reactor.

The initial phase of acceleration would be accomplished mainly through the operation of the electrokinetic thrusters. During this time, the gravity beam drive would be operated in a low power mode to conserve energy. Its main purpose would be to propel the ether forward so that the ship would not be exposed to an opposing ether wind. Then, after accelerating for several weeks up to a sublight speed of say 85 percent of the speed of light, the gravity impulse engine would be brought up to maximum impulse power, allowing the ship to accelerate through its ether wind tunnel to a superluminal speed of 200 *c*. The remaining journey to the Alpha Centauri environs would then take only one week. If there ever were a *Star Trek*–style impulse engine, this would be it, except instead of saying "Warp 5, Scotty," the captain might say "Grad 5, Scotty," consistent with the ether gradient concept of subquantum kinetics.* For longer interstellar journeys, a spaceship might accelerate to speeds exceeding 3,000 *c,* equivalent to Warp 11. Then a journey to our nearest satellite galaxy, the Magellanic Cloud, which lies 180,000 light-years away, would take only sixty years.

Is superluminal space travel possible? The answer is a resounding YES! It is no longer science fiction. It can be done using off-the-shelf technology coupled with a minimal amount of R&D. Commit $500 million and one hundred engineers and technicians to the project, and an interstellar drive unit could be built within, say, ten years' time.

---

*The warp factor scale developed for the *Star Trek* series calculates the attained superluminal velocity from the warp factor number, using the formula: speed = c X (warp factor)$^{33.3}$. Hence, Warp 5 would allow a ship to attain a speed of 214 *c*.

7

PROJECT SKYVAULT

7.1 ■ EARLY MICROWAVE RESEARCH

One evening in 1986, I went out for a beer with a friend of mine, a naturopathic physician by the name of Thomas Chavez. Like myself, Thomas had a keen interest in alternative, cutting-edge science. The topic of our conversation eventually turned to electrogravitics, and at this point my friend shared an interesting story. He told me that during the late 1950s, his father had worked as a physicist at the Rocketdyne Aerospace Corporation in Southern California and had been involved in some sort of super-secret antigravity research. At that time, Thomas had been just a young boy. He said his father normally told him nothing about what he did at work because of an oath of secrecy he had taken, but one evening, after returning home from work he had been unable to contain himself. Very exuberantly, he had exclaimed, "We got it to work, we got it to work!" When my friend inquired what it was that was made to work, his father drew him a picture showing a lens-shaped craft suspended in midair. He said, "We got it to lift off!" He would not say anything more about it, but that moment stuck in Thomas' mind and now he shared it with me. I knew him well enough to know that what he told me was entirely genuine.

Rocketdyne was first formed in the post–World War II era as a rocket engine R&D company. For most of its history, it was associated with North American Aviation. It was spun off from North American

Aviation as a separate division in 1955. Then in 1984, it remerged with its former company, which by then was named North American Rockwell as a result of the merger in 1967 of North American Aviation and Rockwell International. North American's aerospace and defense business had, among other things, developed the Apollo spacecraft and the space shuttle. At the time of the merger in 1984, Rocketdyne was producing most of the rocket engines used in the United States, but it appears it was developing much more than conventional rockets for its aerospace propulsion business. As we will discover below, its scientists were working on a next-generation propulsion system, a technology that goes far beyond the conventional rocket. At the end of 1996, Rockwell sold off its Rocketdyne division, along with most of its space and defense business, to Boeing Integrated Defense Systems. Then in 2005, Rocketdyne was resold to Pratt and Whitney, a business unit of United Technologies Corporation.

I frequently thought about my friend's story about this Rocketdyne project. It implied that the United States successfully demonstrated a field propulsion vehicle by the late 1950s, a time when Townsend Brown was still trying to interest the Pentagon and aerospace companies in his own electrogravitics research. The 1956 "Electrogravitics Systems" report did mention that North American was studying electrogravitic propulsion but that the company had not yet openly declared that it was working in this exotic field. No mention was made of its Rocketdyne division, which indicates that, at that early date, a very tight lid was already in place on Rocketdyne's antigravity project.

Some years later, in the summer of 1994, another piece of the puzzle dropped into place. At the time, I was attending a Tesla science symposium in Colorado Springs, where I was an invited speaker. I had just finished delivering my lecture on NASA's apparent suppression of electrogravitics technologies (discussed in chapter 13) and was surrounded by a small group of people asking various follow-up questions when someone handed me a quickly scribbled note, which I had a chance to read only much later. The note read:

> Sir, I've worked with the Biefeld-Brown effect for a number of years. I may be of help to you on verifying the effect. I believe I know your

> mistake with the discs. I did correspond with T. Brown by mail and phone. Also associated with Project Winterhaven was a project with a slang name of "Sky Vaulting," a government funded project with North American Rockwell. If you are interested contact me.
>
> P.S. NASA data is shared with the Department of Defense. Your key is with the Air Force. They are many years ahead of civilian research. NASA is a PR or a front to obscure Air Force research.

For purposes of confidentiality, I have chosen to withhold this person's name and refer to him only as Tom. The story he later told me about the Skyvault project was quite astounding. He said that he first heard about it in the fall of 1974, when working for an engineering firm in Texas. His supervisor, with whom he had come to be very good friends, one day told him about a top-secret government project that he had worked on between 1952 and 1957 while at North American Aviation, a company that was later renamed North American Rockwell. The project had been initiated by the Defense Department through North American's Rocketdyne division. Although Tom's boss had already passed away, Tom did not wish to reveal his name, so to facilitate the discussion, we will call him Murray. Well, Tom had heard from Murray that the purpose of this project was to develop an antigravity vehicle that used microwave beams as its means for propulsion. It is uncertain whether Skyvault was the official name of the project, but at least this is what the scientists at Rocketdyne used to call it.

Although Project Skyvault was initiated by the government in the early 1950s, investigations into this exotic microwave propulsion technique actually dated back to the late 1940s. Murray, who held a Ph.D., said that in those earlier days he had worked on projects that were associated with an initial phase of this research and that later he had continued this work at Rocketdyne, where he worked up until the 1960s. This microwave antigravity propulsion research project was still in progress in 1974, because Tom learned that a close friend of Murray's was then still working on the project at North American Rockwell, presumably in its Rocketdyne division. At that time, the whole matter was still very secret, because there was a lot that his boss couldn't tell him about the project.

Later, in 1975, Tom obtained what he felt was additional confirmation for the existence of Project Skyvault when the military sent his Texas-based engineering firm a bid request for building a vehicle launch gantry in New Mexico. From the blatant description of the shape of the gantry and the way it was to be built, he recognized that this was to be a launcher for a microwave beam antigravity craft. In this particular version, the power was generated on the ground and sent up to the craft as a microwave beam. The beam was emitted from upward-pointing microwave horns that were supported by the launch gantry. The craft was made of a special kind of material that was repelled by microwaves and, hence, was to be buoyed upward by the beam (see figure 7.1). A portion of the beam was returned to the ground to modulate the outgoing microwave beam. The craft was to be able to go straight up and down and could deviate only a small amount to either side of vertical.

In 1996, two years after my conversation with Tom, CBS-TV aired a weekly spy thriller called *Mr. and Mrs. Smith,* which starred Scott Bakula, an actor who also has had leading roles in various science-fiction series such as *Quantum Leap* and *Star Trek*. Interestingly, the "Space Flight Episode," number nine in the series, which aired on November 8, 1996, came very close to portraying Tom's story about the propulsion beam craft and launch gantry his firm was asked to bid on. The plot of this particular episode was based on the testing of an experimental disc-shaped vehicle called a "beam rider." The launching took place from a secret desert location. The test vehicle was lofted on a powerful microwave beam that was directed vertically upward toward the craft from a ground-based parabolic mirror. Since much of the early Rocketdyne research on Project Skyvault was done in the Los Angeles area, it is not surprising that this idea would one day find itself worked into a Hollywood script. However, even though there were four more episodes left to run, to the disappointment of many, *Mr. and Mrs. Smith* was canceled immediately after this episode had aired. As we shall see, the notion of using microwave beams for aerospace propulsion is not science fiction.

The discussion about Project Skyvault that is presented here and in the next chapter is based on notes I made of my conversations with Tom and on some material Tom had sent me. The latter includes copies of

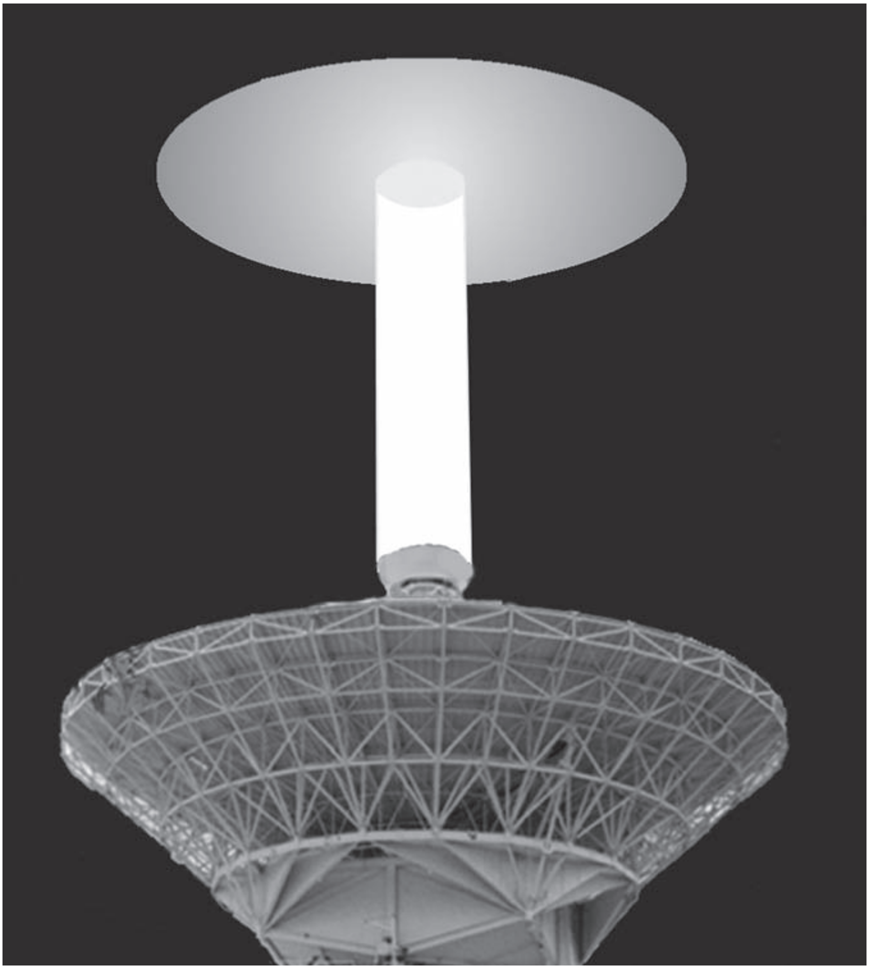

Figure 7.1. Artist's conception of a Skyvault-type craft being launched on a ground-based microwave beam. (P. LaViolette, © 2007)

notes that he made of his 1974 discussions with Murray and a copy of a letter written by Murray's friend who was at the time still working on Project Skyvault (see appendix E).

According to Murray, the first indication that microwaves could be used for propulsion came about when it was discovered that microwave beams could move objects if the objects happened to be made from the right kind of material. The scientists believed that the microwave beam was somehow inducing a gravitational force on the object. The idea that microwaves could move objects was believable to Tom since he had heard of something remotely similar from a radar engineer friend of his who worked at Homestead Air Force Base in Florida. His friend had witnessed an experiment in which a low-power microwave beam from a klystron tube was aimed at pencils placed on a table and caused them to move around. Tom theorized that the microwaves must induce electric charge gradients in certain materials having nonlinear electrical properties and that the observed movement was actually due to the Biefeld-Brown effect imparting a thrust to the material.

The group that Murray had worked with had experimented with a whole lot of different kinds of samples to find out which ones worked best. Paper, silk, and some kinds of wood, for example, showed no movement. Brick and concrete also exhibited no movement, being essentially transparent to the microwaves. They found that some materials would move quite violently, whereas others would just vaporize. Aluminum foil would move but would disintegrate upon exposure. They carried out extensive tests, subjecting various kinds of materials to microwave waveforms of varying shapes, and accumulated data on the destruction and burning of the materials and on the effect of shock waves on those materials that responded. They found that the best propulsion effect occurred in materials that had a particular *magnetic* property. Tom attempted to find out more specifically what these types of materials were, but was told that the information was classified.

Murray said that their group had found that the effects were very frequency-sensitive, that is, that they were observed only within certain frequency bands that were characteristic of each material. If the frequency was off by a slight amount, the object could suddenly vaporize. He described an experience they had in their lab one time when they were experimenting with various frequencies—they had turned on their microwave generator and it had produced a bluish microwave beam that blew a hole through their laboratory wall and continued through an adjoining outside embankment as well. The beam was going into another building before they managed to shut it off. He said it “scared the living daylights out of them.”

7.2 ■ ELECTROMAGNETIC RESONANCE

Although Murray would not reveal what this unique class of materials was that could respond with a strong propulsive force, it is apparent that he was talking about materials that exhibit a strong resonance at a particular frequency. Such materials respond to incident microwaves in an unusual way. Take as an example a material that exhibits a resonant response to the electric component of an electromagnetic wave. Over most frequencies, the material's permittivity will have a positive value, and as a result, the applied electric field will induce a polarization in the same direction as its own field vector, as is commonly observed in most materials. Near a resonant frequency, however, the induced polarization will become very large, the material's large response being due to its accumulation of energy from the microwave beam over many wave cycles. The energy stored in the resonating medium can then greatly exceed that delivered by the incident-driving field. It can be so large that even changing the phase or sign of the incident wave would have little effect on the polarization oscillation.[1] As a result, when the frequency of the incident wave is increased slightly above this resonant frequency, the applied electric field will be out of phase with respect to the induced polarization oscillation, and as a result, the material will respond by exhibiting a *negative* permittivity, the induced polarization now being out of phase with the applied electric field. The electrons oscillating in the material will now resist the applied electric field, and as a result, the electromagnetic wave will exert a repulsive force on the material.

Physicists John Pendry and David Smith illustrated this repulsive force phenomenon by considering the example of a person pushing a swing. In an article in *Scientific American,* they wrote:

> Think of a swing: apply a slow, steady push, and the swing obediently moves in the direction of the push—although it does not swing very high. Once set in motion, the swing tends to oscillate back and forth at a particular rate, known technically as its resonant frequency. Push the swing periodically, in time with this swinging and it starts arcing higher. Now try to push at a faster rate, and the push goes out of phase with respect to the motion of the swing—at some point, your arms might be outstretched with the swing rushing back. If you have

> been pushing for a while, the swing might have enough momentum to knock you over—it is then pushing back on you.[2]

In the same way, electrons in a material with a negative permittivity, ε, go out of phase and resist the "push" of the electromagnetic field. Such materials include silver, gold, and aluminum, whose resonances usually occur at optical frequencies.

The same repulsive force phenomenon occurs in materials that resonate with the magnetic component of an incoming electromagnetic wave. The magnetic permeability of the material, μ, which normally would be positive, becomes negative at frequencies slightly above the material's resonant frequency. The material's response then is to magnetically resist the magnetic field of the applied electromagnetic wave. Materials that naturally exhibit negative μ domains include ferromagnetic or antiferromagnetic materials that exhibit resonances. Such resonances usually occur at frequencies in the gigahertz range and tail off at higher frequencies in the terahertz-to-infrared range. For example, a group of Japanese scientists have reported negative permeability in a granular composite material consisting of 70 percent Permalloy when the material is exposed to microwave frequencies higher than 5 gigahertz.[3]

The special microwave propulsion materials that Murray said were being researched by the Project Skyvault engineers, which "had a particular magnetic property," were most likely materials of this sort exhibiting magnetic resonances in the gigahertz range. This would account for Murray's comment that the propulsion effects were very frequency-sensitive, that is, that each material had its own frequency band at which it would respond by developing a propulsive force. As mentioned earlier, negative μ domains in such materials are limited to a specific frequency range, with the greatest repulsive effects occurring when the incident wave has a frequency close to a material's magnetic resonant frequency. If the microwave beam was adjusted to have a frequency slightly lower, so that it matched the material's resonant frequency, then the material would absorb an enormous amount of energy from the beam and would store this energy in its resonant oscillation. In cases in which the material was being exposed to a very powerful microwave beam at this resonant frequency, it is possible that the energy that the material would capture would be great enough to vaporize it, just as Murray had said.

According to Pendry, the force that microwaves exert on a material at a given frequency depends on the strength of the material's interaction with that beam, which is proportional to the beam's scattering cross-section.[4] This force is always rather weak but can be significantly enhanced by tuning the beam to have a frequency close to one of the material's resonant frequencies. When the beam is at the material's resonant frequency, the material would present a high scattering cross-section and would strongly absorb the incident beam. At a slightly higher frequency, the scattering cross-section would continue to be high, but the ε or μ would now become negative and the material would begin to exert a repulsive force relative to the exciting beam.

A material would respond with an even stronger repulsive force if it were to exhibit electric and magnetic resonances in the same frequency range, allowing both ε and μ to become negative at a slightly higher frequency range. Such a material would have a negative index of refraction. The index of refraction (n) of a material is determined by the values of its permittivity and permeability; that is, $n = \sqrt{\varepsilon\mu/\varepsilon_o\mu_o}$, in which the constants ε_o and μ_o are the permittivity and permeability values in a vacuum. Most commonly occurring refractive materials such as plastic and glass have a positive index of refraction, with either one or both of their ε and μ parameters being positive. Materials with a negative index of refraction are not normally observed in nature, since electric resonances producing negative ε values and magnetic resonances producing negative μ values occur at differing regions of the electromagnetic spectrum. However, with proper engineering, it is possible to produce special materials, called "metamaterials," whose permittivity and permeability both are simultaneously negative over a specific frequency range, causing them to exhibit a negative index of refraction. Since negatively refracting materials are full of resonances, these resonances can be exploited to enhance the scattering cross-section and hence the propulsive force on the material.

The idea that it might be possible to produce a material with a negative index of refraction was first suggested in the open literature in 1967 by the Russian physicist Victor Veselago.[5] Beginning in the mid-1990s, researchers began experimenting to see if Veselago's prediction might be true. Finally, by 2001, Smith and his colleagues at the University of California San Diego successfully demonstrated the production of one such artificial metamaterial, which they made by constructing an array of straight wires and wire-loop split-ring resonators.[6–8] Using lithographic techniques, they fabricated a series of resonator elements into printed circuit boards having a straight wire on one side and C-shaped split-ring resonator patterns on the other side (figure 7.2).[9] These elements were then assembled in rows having a spacing of the order of 0.5 centimeter to compose a metamaterial matrix (figure 7.3). The array was found to exhibit both electric and magnetic resonances, causing the material's ε and μ values both to become negative over a frequency range of 10.3 to 11.5 gigahertz. They showed that a 10.5-gigahertz beam (2.8 cm wavelength)

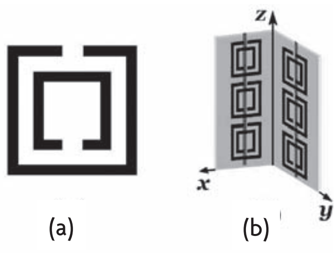

Figure 7.2. (a) A split-ring resonator. (b) Split-ring resonators combined on a circuit board with straight-wire segments to form an electric and magnetic resonator element. Many such elements together would be used to compose the metamaterial. The dimensions of the pattern are specially chosen to give the desired resonance effect. (After R. Shelby, et al., "Microwave Transmission through a Two-Dimensional Left-Handed Metamaterial," Applied Physics Letters, *78[4] [2001]: 489–91, fig. 1)*

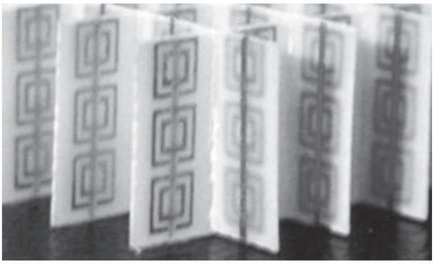

Figure 7.3. Resonator elements combined to form a metamaterial array. This metamaterial would exhibit a negative index of refraction over a specific microwave frequency range. (Photo courtesy of Richard A. Shelby)

refracted negatively as predicted. Soon after, Claudio Parazzoli, Kin Li, and coworkers at Boeing's Phantom Works Division constructed a three-dimensional wire lattice in the form of a 2.7-millimeter cube that negatively refracted a 10-gigahertz microwave beam.

Another group, at Bartol Research Institute at the University of Delaware, created a metamaterial in a very different manner by incorporating metallic magnetic nanoparticles into an appropriate insulating matrix.[10] This sounds similar to Brown's idea of embedding massive semiconductor particles, such as lead oxide, in the conical dielectric member of his electrokinetic apparatus. A diagram taken from his 1965 patent and included here in chapter 3 as figure 3.8 shows these particles as speckles concentrated near the tip of the dielectric cone. Brown disclosed that it would be advantageous to incorporate such particles to improve the thrust of his device when it was excited at microwave frequencies. His dielectric was made so that the particles became increasingly concentrated toward the tip, his intention being to progressively decrease the permittivity of the dielectric so that the voltage gradient at its tip would become increasingly high.

Although the term had not been invented at the time, Brown was in fact fabricating a metamaterial. Moreover, like the Bartol group, he may have been experimenting with embedding ferroelectrics in dielectric media to cause magnetic permeability to vary along the length of the dielectric. For example, in his patent he wrote:

> In applying potentials to these various embodiments, it has been found that the rate at which the potential is applied often influences the thrust. This is especially true where dielectric members of high dielectric constant are used and the charging time is a factor. In such cases, the field gradient changes as the charge is built up. In such cases where initial charging currents are also high, dielectric materials of high magnetic permeability like-wise exhibit varying thrust with time.[11]

In either case, by embedding such particles in his dielectric, Brown would have been producing domains having electric and/or magnetic resonances over a range of microwave frequencies, which, in turn, would have created regions where the dielectric's permittivity and/or permeability would be negative.

So, many decades before the University of California San Diego group demonstrated negative index of refraction in a metamaterial, Brown was experimenting with similar artificial materials but with the aim of enhancing the thrust in AC-excited dielectrics. He made no mention of resonances or negative ε and μ values, so maybe he was not entirely aware of all the reasons why these semiconductor particles were improving the lift of his dielectrics. He was conducting these investigations almost a decade after the Project Skyvault scientists had begun their highly classified early experimentation with similar materials, so it is not surprising that Admiral Rickover advised him to drop his electrogravitic investigations. Brown was apparently getting too close to work already in progress in Project Skyvault. Interestingly, in the early 1950s, Brown was conducting electric disc experiments at his Los Angeles laboratory, which was in the same metropolitan area where Project Skyvault was under way. One wonders if he had heard rumors of the Skyvault work.

Metamaterials have strange new properties not normally seen in nature. First of all, they refract electromagnetic waves more strongly than naturally occurring materials that have a positive index of refraction. The diagrams in figure 7.4 compare the trajectories for a beam passing: (*a*) through a medium having a positive index of refraction and (*b*) through a medium having a negative index of refraction. Regardless of their refractive index, materials with a positive index always refract incident rays into the right quadrant, which lies on the opposite side of the line that is normal to the refracting surface. Materials with a negative index (e.g., $n = -1$) always refract incident rays into the left quadrant, which lies on the same side of the normal line. For this reason, materials

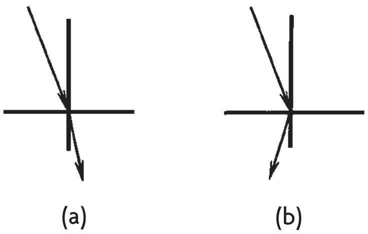

Figure 7.4. Refraction of a light ray in a material having (a) a positive index of refraction and (b) a negative index of refraction.

with a negative index of refraction are sometimes termed "left-handed materials."

Another unusual property of left-handed materials is that they can be used to make a lens that resolves far greater detail than one made out of a material with a positive index of refraction. Such a lens can depict details even smaller than the wavelength of light used to illuminate the object and can be made much lighter compared with the bulging convex lenses of conventional optical devices. Metamaterials refract light so strongly that a planar sheet serves as a convex lens, with the incident rays coming to a focus within the sheet. In order to allow the beam to come to a focus outside the lens, the metamaterial must be fabricated in a concave shape.

Also, metamaterials can be designed to be total absorbers of the incident radiation, making them ideal as radar-absorbing materials. In 2003, Yong Zhang and coworkers at the National Renewable Energy Laboratory demonstrated negative refraction in a common ferroelastic material made from a "twinned" alloy containing yttrium, vanadium, and oxygen.[12] They found that this crystal would negatively refract light of any frequency with no back reflection at the medium interface, which raises the possibility of making reflection-free optical lenses.

The U.S. Air Force Research Laboratories has supported a number of research projects with the recent upsurge of interest in metamaterials. Also, the Defense Sciences Office (DSO) of the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency has an ongoing program for funding metamaterials research. In fact, as of July 2006, the description of its metamaterial program that DSO gave on its website frankly stated that one of the intentions of its research program was to develop magnetic metamaterials for "electric drive and propulsion":

> Metamaterials are engineered composites that exhibit superior properties not observed in the constituent materials or nature. The objective of the MetaMaterials Program is to develop, fabricate, and implement new bulk metamaterials that will fill the tremendous voids that exist in the design space for a number of applications of critical importance to the military Services. In particular, this program will develop (1) magnetic metamaterials for power electronics *and electric drive and*

> *propulsion,* and (2) microwave and optical metamaterials for antenna, radar, and wireless communication applications.[13]

Thus, the notion that Rocketdyne was developing metamaterials in the early 1950s for an aerospace electric propulsion application seems plausible.

Interestingly, by early November 2007, DSO had removed this webpage and replaced it with a rewritten version that made no mention of its interest in using negative index materials for propulsion. It now mentions only the application of negative index materials to optics and to the development of "lightweight, compact RF structures," with an additional broad reference to "practical application" of the technology. Obviously, sometime between July 2006 and November 2007 Defense officials must have decided that the propulsion part of their metamaterial program was too sensitive to be mentioned publicly. One wonders whether this website modification might have been triggered by their becoming aware of the impending publication of this book. In early August 2007, a draft catalog copy announcing its forthcoming publication and noting its disclosure of Project Skyvault had been e-mailed to me for author review and by early October 2007 the finalized copy of the book announcement had been posted on the publisher's website.

7.3 ■ SAWTOOTH WAVES

Murray said the Skyvault team found that the kind of response they got with a given material depended on the particular wave shape used. They achieved the best results with a sawtooth-shaped waveform consisting of asymmetrical triangular waves that have either a steep voltage rise or a steep voltage decline. As noted in chapter 6, the shock wave pulses produced by Podkletnov's gravity impulse beam generator have a sharp rise at their leading edge and are capable of generating strong repulsive forces. Tesla also observed longitudinal repulsive forces being produced by the energy wave shocks radiated from his magnifying transmitters.

Subquantum kinetics predicts that the magnitude and direction of the accelerating force depend critically on the shape of the sawtooth wave since different wave shapes generate different virtual-charge distributions, which in turn generate differing gravity potential gradients. Consider, for example, the wave shape shown in figure 7.5a. This plots the voltage potential profile, $\varphi_E(r)$, for a capacitor that is gradually charged through a resistance, R_1, and then rapidly discharged through another resistance, R_2, in which R_1 is greater than R_2. This produces a wave with asymmetrical rise-and-fall slopes (see figure 7.5 legend). When the *x* axis is chosen to indicate distance instead of time, the graph shows how the electric potential gradient varies with distance from the front to the back of the wave, in which the wave travels from right to left at the speed of light. The sawtooth profile in figure 7.5b (left) is a similar type of waveform, but one depicting voltage potential in a capacitor that charges rapidly and then discharges more gradually. In effect, the values for resistances R_1 and R_2 have been interchanged from those used in generating the curve shown in figure 7.5a. In this second example, R_1 is less than R_2.

Profiles 7.5c and 7.5d in figure 7.5 plot the corresponding gravity potential profiles, $\varphi_g(r)$, that would accompany each of these electric potential waves, based on the assumption that the virtual-charge densities that this wave creates generate corresponding virtual-mass densities and associated gravitational potentials. These are obtained by taking the negative second derivative of the voltage potential equation plotted in figure 7.5a or figure 7.5b. This is in accordance with the subquantum kinetics electrogravitic relation specified by equation 7 in chapter 4. The wave profile shown in figure 7.5a that charts a gradual voltage ascent followed by a rapid voltage decline is seen in the gravity potential plot, figure 7.5c, to initially produce a weak attractive gravitational force (small arrow) followed by a very strong repulsive force (large arrow). For the particular waveform plotted here, the repulsive impulse (force multiplied by time) is twenty-five times greater than the attractive impulse, even though the repulsive impulse lasts only about one-fifth as long. Thus, this wave would produce a net repulsive force on material bodies that it passes through. Changing the wave shape to that shown in figure 7.5b yields a gravity potential wave that has a very steep attractive gravity gradient at its leading edge and a gradual repulsive gradient at its trailing edge and produces a net attractive gravitational force (see figure 7.5d).

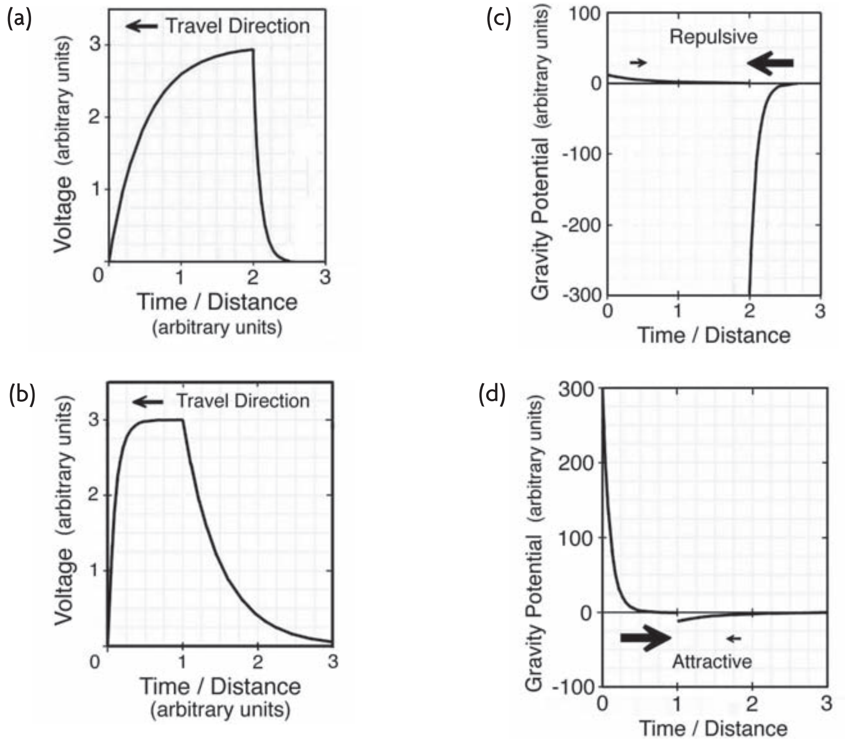

Figure 7.5. (a) left: Voltage profile for an asymmetrical RC-RC-type sawtooth wave having a gradual exponential voltage rise and rapid exponential voltage fall. (b) Voltage profile for an RC-RC wave adjusted to have a rapid exponential voltage rise and gradual voltage fall. (c) Gravity potential profile generated by the virtual-charge distribution of the RC-RC wave shown in 7.5a. (d) Gravity potential profile generated by the virtual-charge distribution of the RC-RC wave shown in 7.5b. Arrows in 7.5c and 7.5d indicate the magnitude and direction of the resulting electrogravitic thrust. (P. LaViolette, © 2007)

The voltage potential in 7.5a is represented by the following equations: $V = 3(1 - e^{-2x})$ *for voltage ascent and* $V = 3e^{-10x}$ *for voltage descent, in which* x *represents time from left to right or distance from the front to the back of the wave. Thus, the wave has a descent rate that is five times its rate of ascent. The voltage in 7.5b is represented by the following equations:* $V = 3(1 - e^{-10x})$ *for the voltage ascent and* $V = 3e^{-2x}$ *for the voltage descent. Thus, the exponents in the equation for figure 7.5a have been interchanged in producing the equation for figure 7.5b. The corresponding gravity-potential profiles, 7.5c and 7.5d, were plotted by taking the negative second derivative of these voltage relations.*

If the wave was made symmetrical so that its voltage rose at the same rate as it fell ($R_1 = R_2$), then the attractive gravitational force produced during passage of the wave's leading edge would just balance the repulsive force produced during passage of its trailing edge, and as a result, the net gravitational force would be zero.

If the polarity of the wave shown in figure 7.5a was changed so that its voltage was negative instead of positive, as shown in figure 7.6a, then the electrogravitic coupling relation predicts that the gravitational potentials would also reverse polarity, as shown in figure 7.6c. The gravity gradients would now change sign, making the net thrust attractive rather than repulsive. The same gravitational polarity reversal would occur if the profile shown in figure 7.5b was to go negative. Instead of producing a net attractive force, it would produce a net repulsive force.

Stavros Dimitriou, professor of electrical engineering at the Technical Education Institute in Athens, Greece, has investigated whether capacitors energized with sawtooth waves in the radio frequency range might exert gravitational forces on nearby masses.[14–16] In his master's thesis, he discussed an electric intensity waveform having shapes similar to those shown in figures 7.5 and 7.6, which he named an RC-RC waveform.[17] The RC acronym implies that the wave shape is determined by a capacitor of capacitance (C) being charged through a resistor of resistance (R). His electrogravitic wave research is discussed in chapter 11.

Another waveform shape that Dimitriou has investigated is shown in figure 7.6b. This one is similar to the RC-RC sawtooth wave shown in figure 7.5a, except that in this case voltage declines linearly, rather than exponentially.* The wave's voltage descent is created by discharging the charged capacitor through a constant-current (Norton) element; hence, Dimitriou refers to this type of waveform as an *RC-Norton* wave. The subquantum kinetics electrogravitic coupling relation predicts that such a wave would produce an attractive gravitational force during its voltage ascent and no gravitational force on voltage descent. That is, since voltage declines linearly, its second derivative would be zero. Hence, no virtual charge and no mass density would be produced during this decline phase.

---

*The wave in figure 7.6b is represented by the following equation: $V = 4(1 - e^{-x})$ for the voltage ascent and $V = 4(1 - 5x)$ for the voltage descent.

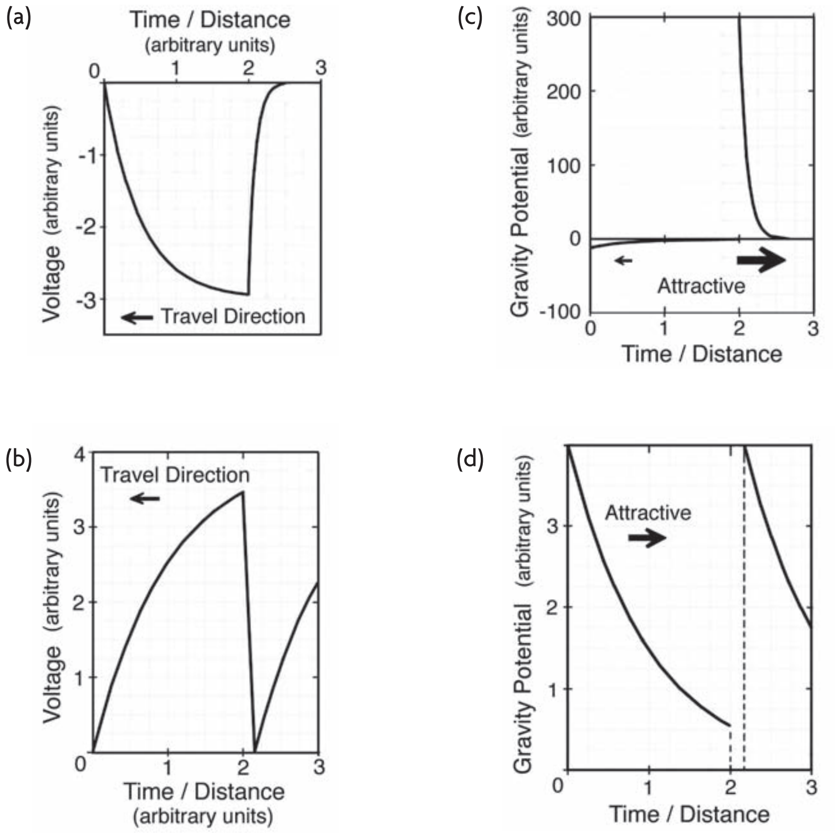

Figure 7.6. (a) Voltage of an asymmetrical RC-RC-type wave having a gradual exponential voltage drop and rapid exponential voltage rise. (b) Voltage of an RC-Norton sawtooth wave having a gradual exponential voltage rise and rapid linear voltage decline. (c) Gravity-potential profile generated by the RC-RC wave shown in 7.6a. (d) Gravity-potential profile generated by the RC-Norton wave shown in 7.6b. (P. LaViolette, © 2007)

If the gravity field is generated primarily by the electrogravitic effects of virtual charge, then a triangular sawtooth wave having a linear voltage rise and fall should produce no gravitational thrust, either on the voltage ascent phase or on the voltage descent phase. In another example, thrust will not be produced if the wave has a voltage profile that rises as the square of distance. Such a profile would have a concave parabolic leading edge similar to that of profile 2 in figure 7.7a. In this case, the negative second derivative of its r^2 voltage profile gives a negative gravity potential that remains constant over time (see profile 2 in figure 7.7b). Hence, its gravity gradient would be zero, resulting in no force exertion.

If we change the exponent characterizing the wave's profile so that the exponent is not equal to 1 or 2, but to a fraction or any other whole number, then the wave would be able to exert a gravitational force. In the case in which the profile varies as $r^{1.5}$, the gravity potential gradient creates a repulsive thrust in the same direction as the gravity wave's motion (see curve 1 in figure 7.7b). If the profile were to vary as $r^{2.5}$, the gravity potential would develop a slope of opposite sign that would produce an attractive force opposed to the direction of wave motion (see curve 3 in figure 7.7b). If the profile instead were to vary as r^3, the gravity potential would develop a steeper slope that would produce an even stronger attractive force (see curve 4 in figure 7.7b).

The shock discharge emitted from Podkletnov's superconducting cathode would similarly have been characterized by an exponential voltage rise at its leading edge, but one with a very large exponent. Hence, such discharges would have produced much steeper gravity gradients

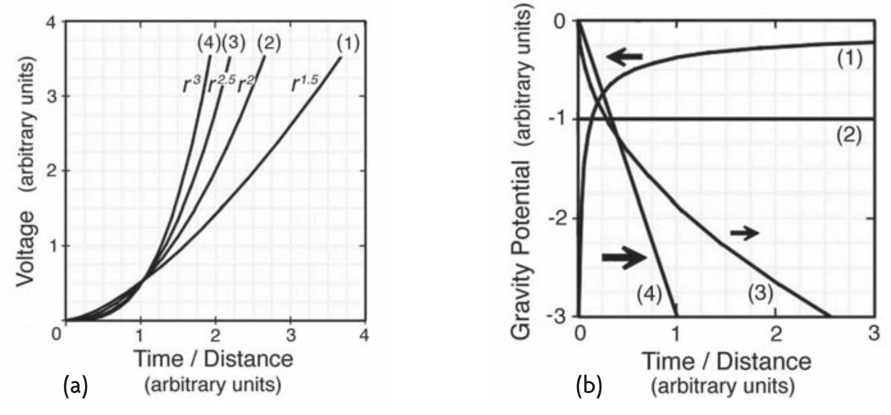

Figure 7.7. (a) Leading-edge profiles for waves whose voltage rises exponentially with varying degrees of nonlinearity, as: $r^{1.5}$ *(curve 1),* r^2 *(curve 2),* $r^{2.5}$ *(curve 3), and* r^3 *(curve 4). (b) Corresponding gravity potential distribution generated by the resulting virtual-charge distribution. (P. LaViolette, © 2007)*

and greater gravitational forces than those modeled here. Also, being a negative voltage rise, the gravitational force exerted by Podkletnov's beam is predicted by the electrogravitic coupling relation to be repulsive rather than attractive, as is observed.

The above analysis assumes that the gravitic effect of these sawtooth microwaves arises primarily from the virtual charges that these waves produce, which themselves arise from the second derivative of the variation of voltage along the direction of wave travel. If, on the other hand, the gravity field of the emitted microwaves is produced mainly by the real electric charges that generate the wave, then the electrogravitic thrust would be proportional to the first derivative of the wave's voltage variation, and in this case linear sawtooth profiles and r^2 exponential profiles would produce gravitational thrusts. Further research is needed to know which of the two electrogravitic relations better characterizes gravity wave production at microwave frequencies, or whether thrust effects arise from a mix of both virtual- and real-charge electrogravitic effects.

One characteristic of the virtual-charge electrogravitic relation is that voltage profiles having a more nonlinear variation should produce greater gravitic thrusts. For example, a wave whose voltage rises as r^3 is predicted to produce a gravitational force 2.8 times greater than a wave whose voltage rises as $r^{2.5}$. Also, a wave whose voltage rises as r^4 is predicted to produce a gravitational force six times greater than a wave whose voltage rises as r^3. Those with exponents less than 2 would produce very weak forces. For example, a wave such as that in profile 1 in figure 7.7a whose voltage rises as $r^{1.5}$ is predicted to produce a gravitational force fifteen times weaker than that produced by a wave whose voltage rises as $r^{2.5}$. Corroborating this, Brown observed that the electrogravitic force developed by an electric field in fact increases as the nonlinearity of the field's voltage profile increases.

Dimitriou claims to have generated gravitational forces by energizing capacitors with sawtooth waves having an amplitude of around 15 volts (see chapter 11). Our attempts to duplicate his work in this low-voltage range, however, did not meet with success. Most likely the wave amplitude must exceed tens of kilovolts before this sawtooth wave thrust effect becomes large enough to be significant. This is consistent with the findings of Brown and Podkletnov, both of whom used waves in the range of 50 to 2,000 kilovolts to get their thrust effects. As we shall see, the Project Skyvault team was also using waves in the kilovolt range to get its propulsion effects.

In summary, the kind of propulsion results that Murray's Skyvault team would have been getting would have depended critically on the shape of the microwave waveform it was using. One question that should be examined is whether metamaterials develop a greater propulsive force (exhibit a larger interaction cross-section) when exposed to a microwave beam having an asymmetrical sawtooth wave shape as opposed to a symmetrical sine wave shape. If so, it is likely that the frequency-sensitive materials they were using in their research were in fact metamaterials.

7.4 ▪ THE BEAM GENERATOR

According to Murray, during the early stages of their research, the Project Skyvault group used magnetron vacuum tubes to generate their microwave source beam. They worked with frequencies ranging from 7 gigahertz (7,000 megacycles) to upward of 1,000 gigahertz. By comparison, the magnetron tubes used in microwave ovens typically have frequencies of 2.54 gigahertz. The cavity magnetron has a central electron-emitting cathode surrounded by a positively charged copper plate, the anode (see figure 7.8). An axial magnetic field causes electrons emitted by the cathode to cycle in a circular orbit. They revolve at a frequency that depends on the applied voltage potential and the strength of the magnetic field. As they cycle, they induce microwave frequency oscillations in a series of cylindrical cavities spaced around the anode's inner circumference. Just as the length of an organ pipe tunes the pipe to a certain pitch, the diameter of these cavities can efficiently tune microwaves to a particular wavelength. These oscillations transfer to the cycling electron cloud and are then channeled out of the magnetron to form a microwave beam.

The microwave signal from the magnetron tubes used by the Skyvault group was sent into a wave amplifier cavity. This was essentially a metallic duct of rectangular cross-section whose long dimension

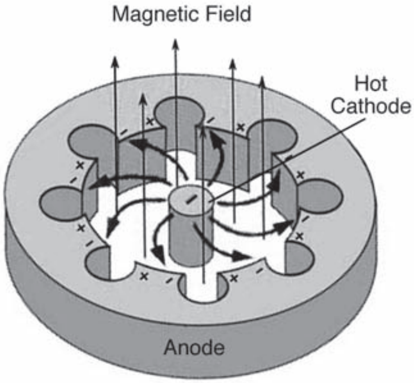

Figure 7.8. Cross-sectional view of a cavity magnetron.

was such as to fit a whole number of wavelengths of the microwave signal along its length. For example, if the magnetron emitted waves at a frequency of 100 gigahertz, the emitted wavelength would have been 3 millimeters. So if the cavity was made to have a length that was some multiple of 3 millimeters, then, as these waves reflected back and forth inside this cavity, they would develop a condition of resonance allowing them to build up a high-voltage amplitude.

By adding various types of microwave radar-absorbing materials to the resonator cavity, the inputted microwave signal could be changed from a sine wave into a sawtooth-shaped wave. For this, the Skyvault group may have used ceramic dielectrics such as barium titanate polarized with a high-voltage DC potential on the order of 10 kilovolts per centimeter. Once polarized, the high-K dielectric would have presented a highly nonlinear environment for the microwaves. The same wave transformation into a sawtooth shape would have occurred in Brown's AC-energized vertical-thrust apparatus described in chapter 3. The dielectric would have changed the shape of the input wave, causing it to have a more rapid rise of potential in the direction of the dielectric's polarization and a more gradual fall of potential during the other half of the cycle. The polarity of the sawtooth wave, whether it would rise sharply to a positive or to a negative potential, would depend on the polarity applied to the high-K dielectric. Microwave power from this amplifier would then have been conducted down a waveguide tube to a microwave horn, the horn's dimensions having been chosen so that its impedance would match that of the surrounding air to allow a microwave beam to efficiently radiate from the horn. Once polarized, the dielectric would have been able to retain its polarization without any outside input of DC power. In fact, the sawtooth waves would have acted to bias the dielectric's voltage potential.

The Skyvault team did not power their tubes continuously, but pulsed them about a thousand times per second using a mechanical pulser. This was a wheel in an evacuated chamber that spun at 60,000 to 100,000 revolutions per minute (1,000 to 2,000 hertz) and on each revolution actuated a set of platinum electrical contacts that briefly turned on high-voltage DC to power the magnetrons. The proper pulsing rate would depend on how much voltage and power one wished to extract from the tube. If the pulser was cycled at a faster rate or was in its on state for a longer fraction of the cycle period, more power would be radiated from the magnetron.

Murray said that they needed to make fine adjustments to the pulser's "square wave" signal envelope to get its pulse cycle amplitude and timing just right. In particular, the magnetron would have had to be turned on at just the right moment so that its waves would match the phase of the waves already reflecting back and forth in the microwave amplifier waveguide, thereby allowing its energy to properly add to the amplified signal. Magnetrons are very sensitive. If the pulse timing is wrong, the tube's energy potential can build up so high that the tube will burn out. Failure occurs when an arc jumps from the tube's cathode to its anode, burning off the cathode's electron-emitting thorium coating and rendering the tube useless.

Radar researchers later replaced this older mechanical pulser technology with thyrotron tubes, which were able to produce shock discharge pulses having a much sharper rise time. Thyrotrons had a fixed spark gap enclosed in sealed glass tube filled with hydrogen and used a third ignitor electrode to trigger the gap to discharge. These discharges would be much like Tesla's shock discharges, except that the magnetrons would convert these pulses into microwave frequency shocks. In *Secrets of Cold War Technology,* Vassilatos commented about the explosive forces that these radar bursts can produce, noting, "As these pulse methods were reaching their state of refinement, engineers found it possible to produce single DC impulses of extraordinary power. Components often ruptured when these explosive electrical applications were employed. Wires exploded. Gaskets and sealed electrodes ruptured. Magnetron tubes, high vacuum vessels, literally exploded. Here was that phenomenon of which Tesla spoke so highly."[18] The microwave bursts that the Skyvault engineers were experimenting with were most likely of this sort.

Murray said they were using the very best magnetron tubes they could find, which at that time were being used on military radar systems. To maximize the gravity wave propulsion effect, they had to operate these tubes well beyond their voltage specifications, powering them with up to 250 kilovolts. Murray did not say what the normal voltage range was for these special radar magnetrons, but for comparison, one unclassified research paper published in 1956 described the development of a 1.3-gigahertz magnetron that operated in the range of 50 to 75 kilovolts and delivered power outputs on the order of 10 megawatts during its ten-microsecond pulse period.[19] Magnetrons available in military black projects likely had achieved higher power outputs than this at a much earlier date.

In this "out-of-spec," high-voltage operating region, the tube's characteristics would have become highly nonlinear and prone to develop what is called the longitudinal sawtooth instability, which causes electrons circulating in the magnetron to begin to bunch up into clusters, transforming the tube's normal sine wave output into a series of sawtooth spikes. A similar effect has been reported to have been seen in the operation of the Synchrotron Ultraviolet Radiation Facility (SURF III).[20] When the sawtooth instability was present in SURF III, researchers observed bursts of coherent microwave radiation that were 10,000 times more intense than the normal synchrotron beam radiation and which consisted of sawtooth-shaped waves in the 10-gigahertz frequency range.

By operating the tubes beyond their specifications, the Skyvault team was apparently attempting to produce microwaves having a maximally abrupt rise time—hence, a very nonlinear negative potential onset curve. This in turn would have maximized the electrogravitic thrust that these waves were producing. As seen in our analysis of the gravity shocks produced by Podkletnov's gravity impulse beam, the subquantum kinetics electrogravitic relation indicates that such waveforms would have been repulsive.

Murray said that as a result of running the tubes beyond their specifications, the research team was blowing out magnetrons by the thousands. Members were willing to take this risk because they knew that this propulsion effect existed. Apparently, someone in the past fortuitously got the frequency and wave shape right and discovered the effect.

Initially, the equipment generating the Skyvault propulsion beam was quite bulky. The entire set up, which included high-voltage power generators, microwave generators, waveguide ducts, and wave-shaping resonators, required a building the size of a barn. Murray disclosed that in this early version, the conical test beam was projected upward and made to buoy a test vehicle that had a concave bottom wide enough to receive the beam. He disclosed that this concave portion was made from a ceramic similar to CorningWare.

Although CorningWare is optically opaque, it is partially transparent to microwaves. Thus, given the proper shape, it could be made to act as a microwave lens, which would look similar to an optical lens but would not necessarily be optically transparent. Such a lens could be made out of paraffin, ceramic, or glass. The important thing is that it be made of a material having the proper permittivity and permeability. So the Skyvault team could have used the craft's ceramic bottom as a lens to refract the microwaves that were being beamed up to it.

However, for a diverging microwave beam, one would expect that they would have used a converging lens to bring the waves to a focus inside the craft. One wonders whether this concave ceramic was actually a metamaterial that was engineered to have a negative index of refraction. One characteristic of left-handed (negative index) materials is that they have a concave shape in order to bring a microwave beam to a focus on the other side of the lens.

Although the beam generator for the Skyvault prototype craft was initially very bulky, with time the Skyvault team was able to make its equipment more compact. Murray said that eventually they got the apparatus small enough to put inside the craft. However, he didn't specify what kind of power supply was used. The craft were circular in shape and emitted a greenish blue microwave propulsion beam toward the earth. The beam was made to pass through an "iris type of convex lens" toward the ground, where it would reflect back up to buoy the craft upward. It is unclear what Murray meant by an "iris type of convex lens." An iris is a small opening at the end of a waveguide that allows microwaves to pass out.

Perhaps the microwaves were emitted through an iris at the end of the wave amplifier conduit and were then focused by a ceramic convex lens. The microwaves leaving the iris would have diverged and would have needed a convergent lens to refract them into a microwave beam. The diameter of the beam at the ground target region could have been adjusted by controlling the position of the lens relative to the iris.

This experimental version of the Skyvault craft, which was being developed in the 1960s, was apparently much more advanced than its forerunner, the version that Tom's engineering firm was asked to bid on in 1975. That is, by carrying its own onboard beam, it was far more mobile. Murray said that the craft was remotely controlled by signals relayed from a radio transmitter, probably situated on top of a mountain. The transmitter sent out encoded signals 6,400 times per second that controlled the craft's pitch, yaw, bank, and velocity. The vehicle had a range of nearly three hundred miles over the desert and could attain altitudes of 50,000 feet or more. Murray said that it could attain "extreme speeds." Initially, they did test flights of an unmanned craft. Later, they built and flew around a craft having a crew on board. Murray told Tom the vehicles he worked on had an estimated propulsion efficiency of 60 percent, and he imagined that by 1974 much higher propulsion efficiencies had been obtained. By comparison, a jet aircraft has a propulsion efficiency of only about 20 percent.

In the mid-1960s, after Murray had left the project, the Skyvault team began replacing their magnetrons with solid-state oscillators, called Gunn diodes, that were much more reliable. Murray had learned about this from a friend who had continued to work on the Skyvault project. Wanting to know more, Tom asked his boss if it would be possible for him to speak to Murray's friend. Murray contacted his friend, who told him that he would instead write Tom a letter, which he would send via Murray. The letter, which is written in a somewhat whimsical style, is reproduced in appendix E.

Murray would not divulge his friend's name, but for practical purposes let us call him Don. In his letter, Don said that Gunn diodes normally require less than a watt of power to operate, but that by working with the manufacturers they were able to engineer special high-power Gunn diodes suited to their project. These were able to produce up to 10,000 watts of microwave power, and the various diodes that they fabricated functioned over a frequency range of 1 to 500 gigahertz. Don did not specify whether this power rating referred to the average power of a single pulse or to the power that was put out when operating in a continuous mode.

The Gunn diode was first developed in 1963. Later, much higher-power, more-efficient devices called impact ionization avalanche transit-time diodes (IMPATT diodes) were developed that were capable of higher microwave power outputs. However, IMPATT diodes have the shortcoming that their signal has a much higher phase noise, meaning that their oscillation cycles may not be as precisely timed. (A description of how these devices operate is given in the accompanying text box.) Such diodes have the advantage of being simpler to use than magnetrons, and they are more reliable in that they do not burn out as easily. They are also able to produce much higher frequencies. In the case of gallium nitride Gunn diodes, frequencies as high as 3,000 gigahertz have been achieved. Commercially available Gunn diodes have an efficiency of only 2 to 5 percent, while IMPATT diodes have a somewhat higher efficiency of about 10 percent. This is low in comparison with magnetrons, which are able to achieve efficiencies of 60 percent.

Gunn and IMPATT Diodes

The Gunn diode is named after J. B. Gunn, the physicist who in 1963 discovered that a crystal of gallium arsenide would spontaneously oscillate at microwave frequencies when a sufficiently high DC voltage was applied to either side of it. This became known as the Gunn effect. Gunn found that gallium arsenide exhibits a negative resistance when subjected to an electric field of greater than 3,000 volts per centimeter. That is, below this critical threshold, the electric current passing through the crystal progressively increases with increasing voltage, as it does in most electrically resistive substances. In this low-voltage region, the crystal is said to exhibit "positive resistance." However, at a critical threshold, the current-voltage curve plateaus and begins to bend downward such that the current now decreases with increasing voltage, a phenomenon called negative resistance.

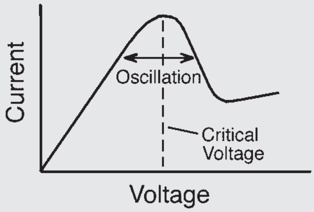

Due to this peculiar characteristic, when a gallium arsenide Gunn diode is biased above its critical threshold at about 5 kilovolts per centimeter, it will spontaneously oscillate at a specific gigahertz frequency. Some other substances found to exhibit this oscillatory effect are indium phosphide, cadmium telluride, zinc selenide, and wurtzite gallium nitride. This latter material oscillates when biased at a higher potential of about 150 kilovolts per centimeter.

An IMPATT diode is a silicon p-n junction diode that normally operates in a reverse-biased mode. Its principle of operation is different from a Gunn diode in that it involves impact ionization, which results in an electron avalanche electrical breakdown. It is similar to the Gunn diode in that it is a negative-resistance device that begins to spontaneously oscillate when its bias voltage is increased past a certain point.

Commercially available Gunn and IMPATT diodes most commonly have power outputs in the milliwatt range, although it is possible for civilians to purchase Gunn diodes that produce up to 30 watts of power. A thorough search for manufacturers of such solid-state oscillators carried out in the mid-1990s revealed that such diodes having power much higher than 30 watts are unavailable for public sale. The story is quite different in the case of oscillators being used for military applications. For example, in 2002 I learned through a personal contact that one defense aerospace avionics distributor had shipped out an experimental 1,040-gigahertz (300-micron) oscillator that reportedly had a rated output of 40 kilowatts! This company routinely shipped items marked as "microwave oscillators" to defense aerospace corporations such as Northrop Grumman, Boeing, Lockheed Martin, and BAE Systems as well as to defense R&D contractors such as Raytheon and SAIC (Science Applications International Corporation).

A survey of cutting-edge developments in the field of solid-state microwave devices indicates that the high powers quoted for the modified Gunn diodes used in Project Skyvault are not all that out of line. One literature review written in 1995 noted that gallium arsenide Gunn diodes were being combined to form units that could achieve the kilowatt level at frequencies above 30 gigahertz.[21] Also, in 2000 Purdue University researchers announced that they had developed a silicon carbide IMPATT diode that was able to achieve microwave power outputs four hundred times higher than silicon-based IMPATT diodes. Their simulations projected the possibility of achieving power outputs as high as 4.2 kilowatts at 10 gigahertz.[22] A lightweight microwave-emitting tube called the Pasotron (for plasma-assisted slow-wave oscillator), developed in the early 1990s at Hughes Research Laboratories and Hughes Missile Systems Co., was able to achieve even higher outputs.[23] This uses an electron gun that generates high-energy electrons that emit a beam of microwaves as they pass through a low-pressure glow discharge. The device produces microwave pulses lasting 100 microseconds with pulse voltages of 220 kilovolts, pulse power outputs of 1 to 5 megawatts, and effieciencies of between 20 and 50 percent. More recently, Pasotrons have been reported to produce 100-nanosecond pulses with microwave powers of 7 gigawatts. Although it is not a solid-state device, it has the advantages that it does not require a magnetic field for its operation, is much lighter in weight, and does not burn out easily. It is not known whether the Project Skyvault team tested Pasotrons at some point in its research.

7.5 ■ THE BEAM AMPLIFIER

According to Murray's friend Don, the high-power Gunn diode used in the Skyvault vehicle, like the magnetron, was mounted in a waveguide box. This had an opening at one end and dimensions that matched the diode's oscillatory characteristics. In other words, the conduit's length was made to equal some multiple of the wavelength of the microwaves emitted from the Gunn diode so that the waves would resonantly reinforce one another as they reflected back and forth along the length of the waveguide. This resonance would increase the beam's voltage.

Although Don did not mention their voltage requirements in his letter, Tom told me that he had learned that these special Gunn diodes were designed to operate in the range of a few hundred thousand volts to a million volts. These voltages are unusually high in comparison with the voltages that commercially available Gunn diodes normally operate at, which is in the range of 5 to 100 volts DC. One is left to wonder whether this voltage might refer to the voltage rating of the diodes, that is, the voltage they were designed to withstand that could be generated in the amplifier cavity. The voltage of the amplified microwave beam, then, may have ranged up to several million volts.

As noted earlier, a simple waveguide cut to the proper dimensions would be able to increase the voltage of a microwave beam but not its total energy. But in his letter, Don seems to be talking about a different sort of amplifier, one capable of increasing the total energy of the beam. He said that this "amplifier" was needed to "extend the use" (i.e., the ability) of the Gunn diode so that it could "launch the . . . vehicle" (see his letter in appendix E). Although the modified Gunn diodes used in Project Skyvault had a power output far greater than those commercially available today, even a power output of 10 kilowatts would likely have fallen short of what was needed. The magnetrons that the project had been using in their earlier work must have had power outputs several orders of magnitude higher than this. So to match this, they would have had to boost the power of the Gunn diode beam in an "energy amplifier."

Most likely the Skyvault project was doing this with a *parametric amplifier,* a device commonly used by microwave engineers to boost signal strength. A parametric amplifier consists of a cavity containing

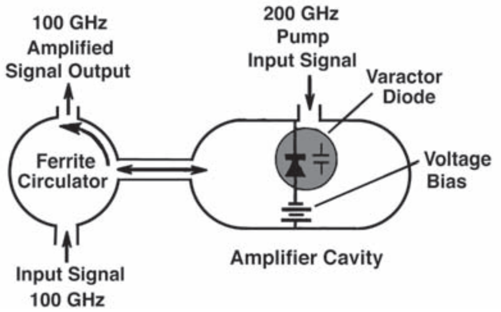

Figure 7.9. Diagram of a microwave parametric amplifier. (P. LaViolette, © 2007)

a nonlinear medium such as a varactor capacitor diode. The beam to be amplified is allowed to enter and exit the amplifier cavity through a port, and while in the cavity it passes through the diode where its energy is pumped up as the result of the action of a second microwave beam called the pump beam. The pump beam typically has a frequency twice that of the main oscillator beam and is oriented at 90 degrees to the main beam so as not to directly interact with it (figure 7.9).

The pump beam affects the main oscillator beam indirectly by varying the diode's parameter, its dielectric constant, at just the right time in the main beam's oscillation cycle.* For example, by decreasing the varactor's dielectric constant (K), the pump beam signal reduces the diode's electric permittivity (ε); this, in turn, decreases the diode's capacitance ($C \propto \varepsilon$) and increases its voltage ($V \propto 1/C$). By doing this at the phase of the cycle in which the main beam's voltage is approaching either a positive or a negative voltage maximum, the amplitude and power of the main beam may be boosted. In this way, the pump beam is able to progressively step up the power of the main beam. Often, the parametric amplifier is interfaced with a circulator that allows the main beam to circulate in a loop with some of its energy being diverted into the parametric amplifier for amplification. Parametric amplifiers are able to amplify a beam's energy anywhere from one hundred to one thousand times. Thus, a 10-kilowatt microwave oscillator signal could be boosted to create a 10-megawatt microwave beam.

One interesting thing about parametric amplifiers is that their energy output can greatly exceed their energy input. The amount of energy that the pump beam requires to alter the permittivity or permeability of the amplifier's nonlinear medium can be much less than the amount of energy that the amplified beam gains through the parametric excitation process. The amount of this overunity output versus input depends on the type of nonlinear medium and its response in the frequency range used.

---

*Parametric amplifiers can also use a ferrite material as their nonlinear medium and work by instead varying the magnetic permeability μ of the ferrite. The outcome is essentially the same.

The magnetic resonance amplifier is an example of one such amplifier that operates in the audio frequency range rather than at microwave frequencies. It is based on the work and theories of the ninteenth-century American inventor John Ernst Worrell Keely and has been extensively researched by hobbyists. Circuit diagrams and research results on its operation are available on the Internet.[24–28] It uses a high-K dielectric such as a barium titanate capacitor hooked in series with a coil wound around a barium ferrite ceramic magnet core. By exciting it at a frequency of around 20 to 40 kilohertz, this nonlinear tank circuit is made to oscillate at its resonant frequency of around 8,000 to 11,000 hertz. Thus, the excitation frequency is chosen to be three times the resonance frequency, that is, three octaves (nine harmonics) above resonance. Power is drawn from the oscillating ferrite core through a secondary winding that is connected to a bridge rectifier. One such device built and tested by American researchers Joel McClain and Norman Wootan achieved a power output of 2.75 watts, for an input power of 0.7 watt or an overunity ratio of about 4.[29] At resonance, the voltage across the tank circuit ranged up to 1,000 volts when excited with a 30-volt AC pump signal.

Even higher outputs than this have been reported for parametric amplifiers in the audio range. For example, in 1949, Obolensky built a parametric amplifier that used Super Permalloy ferrite as its nonlinear medium and was able to achieve an overunity ratio of about a million to one when he pumped it at frequencies of 60 and 400 hertz.[30] Where does this excess energy come from? Physicists aren't really sure. Obolensky suggests that the energy is cohered from noise present at the atomic level in the amplifier's nonlinear medium and in the immediate space environment.

While it is possible to use a separate power source to generate the pump beam fed into the amplifier, it is also possible to draw off some of the energy surplus in the main beam that is being amplified and to recycle this to power the parametric excitation process. This could be done by connecting the pump beam waveguide tube to a fourth port on the circulator cavity (figure 7.10). The circulator would contain not only the fundamental frequency of the main beam but also its harmonics. So by making the length of this connecting waveguide equal to an odd number of half wavelengths of the main beam's second harmonic frequency, the fundamental frequency would be blocked and just the second harmonic (i.e., $2f_o$) would pass through to the parametric amplifier. As the fundamental frequency becomes more intense, so would its harmonics, and a greater amount of power would become available in the second harmonic for parametric excitation. As a result, the beam intensity would progressively increase.

Such a system, however, runs the risk of being unstable in that without proper regulation it could create an exponential buildup of energy that would ultimately result in an explosion. That is, energy could be created in the amplifier faster than it could be removed. Making such an amplifier work properly so that it is able to boost the wattage of the microwave beam without blowing the amplifier apart is quite tricky. It requires ingenious engineering—such as incorporating a fast-acting servo control that automatically changes the phase of the pump beam

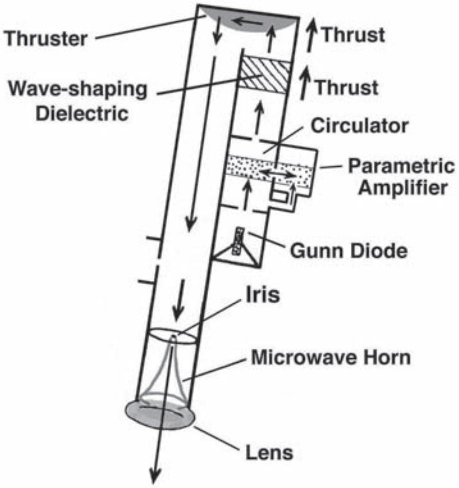

Figure 7.10. A possible arrangement of components making up the microwave beam generator mounted on board the Skyvault craft. (P. LaViolette, © 2007)

frequency when the amplifier's output power level gets too high. This would squelch the amplification process and halt the exponential rise in energy production.

Don did not mention the use of a sawtooth wave–shaping dielectric, so we do not know whether the wave-shaping dielectric was placed in the wave amplifier cavity or whether it was put in a separate wave-shaping resonator cavity. We will suppose the latter was the case. So once it had become amplified, the craft's Gunn diode beam would have exited the circulator and entered a waveguide containing a polarized high-K dielectric that would have shaped the wave into a sawtooth waveform. As in Brown's vertical-lift electrokinetic apparatus, the incident microwave beam would have exerted a substantial electrogravitic thrust along the length of the dielectric that would have helped loft the craft. Hence, this wave-shaping chamber was likely securely anchored so that its thrust would be transferred to the vehicle-support structure.

If the beam in the interior of the craft was directed upward through the wave-shaping dielectric, it may then have been made to pass into a convex slab of metamaterial having a negative index of refraction. As mentioned earlier, a microwave beam tuned close to the material's resonance would exert a strong repulsive force, so an upward-directed microwave beam would produce an upward propulsive force on the metamaterial slab as well. Metamaterials have also been found to efficiently refract microwave beams through tight turns. In fact, Pendry and Smith showed how a metamaterial slab having a convex lens shape refracts a beam through a 180-degree turn. In a similar manner, the metamaterial thruster at the same time could have been used to redirect the beam downward through an adjacent waveguide, from which it would ultimately exit the saucer via a focusing lens and proceed toward the ground (see figure 7.10).

Chapter 8 further examines Don's disclosure about Project Skyvault. We will find that, besides pushing upward against the craft, it was necessary that the microwave propulsion beam also project downward and scatter back to the craft from a ground reference point. In so doing, the beam could be made to resonantly store vast quantities of energy for supporting the craft, and the flight of the craft could be more precisely controlled.

8

MICROWAVE PHASE CONJUGATION

8.1 ■ PHASE-CONJUGATE MICROWAVE PROPULSION

As mentioned in the previous chapter, my contact Tom had received a letter from a friend of his supervisor, a fellow we have called Don. In 1974, when Tom received this letter, Don was actively involved in Project Skyvault. The letter gave only a rough sketch of the project's microwave propulsion technology, since much of that work was then still classified. Nevertheless, Don gave enough information that, shortly after hearing Tom's story, I was able to come to an important conclusion about a key aspect of the craft's microwave beam propulsion technology. I was able to connect it to a field of optics research that in 1994 was just beginning to emerge in the open literature, but which apparently had been secretly under full development for aerospace applications back in the early 1950s. Before discussing this optical phenomenon, called *phase conjugation*, and how it might be applied to vehicle propulsion, let us summarize some additional details that Don provided about the propulsion system.

Don said that the microwave energy from the microwave amplifier cavity was directed into a horn-shaped waveguide that controlled or shaped the wave radiation pattern. Although he did not specifically mention it, this horn antenna was most likely situated between the iris and the ceramic convex lens that, as Murray had described, was used to control the diameter of the beam.

After leaving the lens, the microwave beam was allowed to pass through the air to a target area, which was presumably a ground surface location. Microwaves that reflected back up to the vehicle from this target region were then allowed to enter a cavity that contained a mixer diode (figure 8.1). There they were mixed with a portion of the outgoing microwave beam that had been locally diverted from the craft's beam generator. A mixer diode is a radar-absorbing material with nonlinear electromagnetic characteristics that is able to combine waves of slightly differing frequencies to produce a more complex wave having frequencies that are the sum and difference of the two frequencies. Interestingly, one material that has such nonlinear properties is barium titanate, the piezoelectric ceramic that Brown employed in his experiments. Don noted that a stable DC-voltage source was connected across the mixer diode to bias it and that the Gunn diode oscillator was biased in a similar manner.

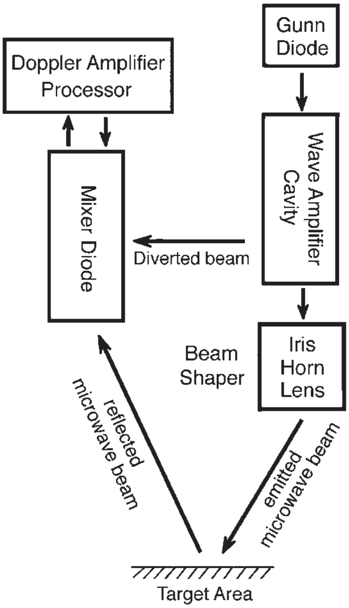
Gunn Diode
Doppler Amplifier Processor
Wave Amplifier Cavity
Mixer Diode
Diverted beam
Beam Shaper
Iris Horn Lens
reflected microwave beam
emitted microwave beam
Target Area

Figure 8.1. Murray's description of the microwave transmitter/mixer detector used in Project Skyvault. (P. LaViolette, © 2006)

Don described two types of antigravity microwave systems. The simpler version, called a homodyne, used the same conduits for both transmitting and receiving. He commented that this system "suffered from a lack of range" since its microwave beam typically targeted at no more than thirty miles. The second type of configuration, which he called the "Micro-X unit," used separate transmitting and receiving antennae and presumably could achieve a greater targeting range. It was probably named the Micro-X because it originally operated in the X microwave band, which extends from 8 to 12 gigahertz.

Up to this point, the apparatus that Don described sounds much like a basic radar unit. In the case of radar, the transmitter emits a powerful microwave pulse that then reflects back from the distant target and enters the radar receiver. This weak reflected wave is then combined in the radar's mixer chamber with a portion of its original outgoing signal. Suppose we let f_o represent the reference frequency of the outgoing signal and f represent the return signal that reflects from a target such as a distant aircraft. If the target is moving, the return signal frequency f will be slightly different from the original outgoing signal f_o, for an approaching target $f > f_o$ and for a receding target $f < f_o$. The two frequencies will differ by an amount Δf, equal to twice the Doppler frequency shift, that is $\Delta f = f - f_o = 2f_o v/c$, in which v is the velocity of the target relative to the radar transceiver and c is the velocity of light. A frequency φ (*phi*), equal to this frequency difference, $\varphi = \Delta f$, would come out of the radar's mixer chamber. Its magnitude and sign would indicate how fast the target is moving and whether it was approaching or receding. The greater the frequency difference, the greater would be the relative velocity inferred for the target.

However, the nonlinear media used in a radar mixer, as it turns out, can also act as a phase conjugate mirror. That is, when illuminated with a radar pulse echo coming in from the target, it produces an outgoing microwave pulse that exactly retraces the path of the incoming target echo signal. This is very different from normal mirror reflection.

Consider an example in which visible light reflects from a conventional mirror. When a laser shines its beam on a target object and some of that light scatters off from the object and strikes a conventional mirror at some angle to its surface, that light will then reflect away from the mirror's silvered surface at a similar angle. The reflected light will continue on a divergent path that takes it increasingly farther from the mirror and the light-scattering object (see figure 8.2a).

In the case of a phase conjugate mirror, on the other hand, the silvered mirror surface is replaced with a translucent piezoelectric crystal such as barium titanate, which has nonlinear optical properties. Again, consider an example in which a laser illuminates the target object and some of the light that scatters from the target enters this crystal, but in addition, part of the light coming directly from the laser is diverted and made to enter the crystal as beam P_1. This laser beam passes through the crystal and reflects back from a mirror on the other side to form a second beam, P_2, propagating in the opposite direction (see figure 8.2b). These counterpropagating beams are called the *pump beams*. The light that scatters from the target object toward the crystal is called the *probe beam*. The light waves forming the probe beam enter the interior of the crystal and interact there with the counterpropagating pump beams. The interaction of the probe beam with each of the pump beams produces an interference pattern that alters the index of refraction within the crystal to form a complex pattern of light-refracting surfaces collectively called *a holographic amplitude grating*. The holographic grating formed by pump beam P_2 then refracts the oppositely directed pump beam P_1 to form an outgoing *phase conjugate beam*. In contrast, the grating formed by beam P_1 refracts beam P_2 to again form an outgoing phase conjugate beam, with complementary characteristics. This combined phase conjugate beam is represented in figure 8.2b by the gray wave fronts. The phase conjugate beam has the special attribute that its light waves move outward from the crystal along trajectories that precisely retrace the trajectories that had earlier been followed by the probe beam's incoming waves. Hence, the phase conjugate beam converges back to the original light-scattering locations on the target object, and from there its waves rescatter back to the original laser beam light source.

The phase conjugate mirror, in effect, generates a new set of light waves that have the same angle, wave shape, and phase as the incoming light waves scattered from the target object but travel in a reverse direction, moving back toward the target. The effect appears as though time had been made to run backward, causing the incoming scattered

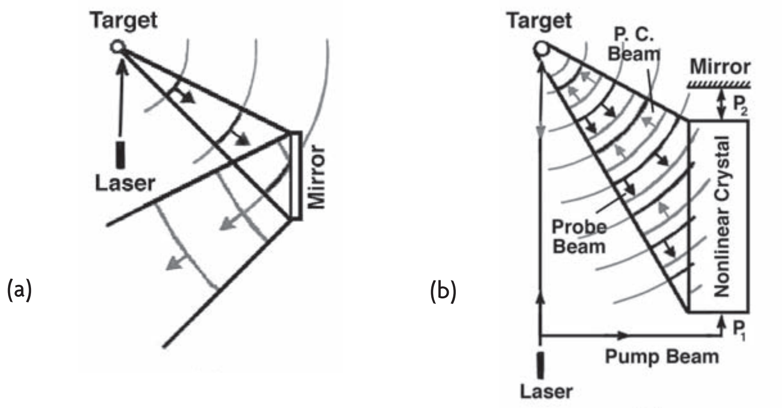

Figure 8.2. Comparison of an ordinary mirror and a phase conjugate mirror. (a) Light waves reflecting from an ordinary mirror. The black wave fronts represent the incident rays and the gray wave fronts represent the reflected rays. (b) Light waves reflecting from a phase conjugate mirror. The black wave fronts represent the incident rays and the gray wave fronts represent the phase conjugate rays that travel "in reverse," converging toward the upper left. The phase conjugate beam is generated from the interaction of the incoming probe beam with the two counterpropagating pump beams, P_1 *and* P_2*.*

light waves to reverse in their tracks. However, here the effect is accomplished with time running forward as it usually does and with light waves different from the incoming waves since the incoming waves are what are generating the grating pattern. Thus, unlike conventional mirror reflection, in which the reflected light continues to spread out into the surrounding environment, with phase conjugate reflection the light stays bottled up, confined to a beam that extends among the laser light source, its illuminated light-scattering object, and the nonlinear medium of the phase conjugate resonator. Since the light waves have no immediate exit, the energy trapped in this phase conjugate resonator can build up to very high intensities.

Physicists have come to call this arrangement a *four-wave mixer* since four beams intersect in the nonlinear medium: the incoming probe beam, the two counterpropagating pump beams, and the outgoing phase conjugate beam. Although the probe beam initially would be relatively weak, energy supplied by the two pump beams would emerge from this four-wave mixer as a powerful outgoing phase conjugate beam. Upon entering the laser resonator cavity, this phase conjugate beam would stimulate a more powerful outgoing laser beam that would be specifically directed toward points on the target that preferentially scatter light into the four-wave mixer. As a result, the probe beam entering the mixer crystal would progressively increase in intensity. Over time, a high-intensity light path would resonantly build up among the laser, the target object, and the four-wave mixer, and very little if any of the laser's light would be scattered into the environment.

The second law of thermodynamics tells us that in closed systems, order always tends toward disorder, that is, it predicts that light scattered from an object should disperse into space and eventually dissipate its energy. This is not so with light striking a phase conjugate mirror. The grating records the information carried by the incoming probe beam concerning where its light waves originated and in turn refracts (steers) the pump beam to create an outgoing phase conjugate beam whose waves precisely retrace the paths that had been followed by the incident rays of the probe beam. Thus, a state of initial disorder is made to tend toward a subsequent state of greater order. The scattered light is returned in a more concentrated state toward the point from which it emerged.

In most media, the electromagnetic wave interference pattern formed between the incoming probe beam and the pump beams would have no effect on light wave propagation, but in a polarized piezoelectric medium such as barium titanate, these field potentials are able to physically alter the index of refraction of the piezoelectric medium at a microscopic level. Through this multifarious patterning of its index of refraction, the crystal is able to complexly scatter light waves passing through it so as to reconstruct the "time-reverse" phase conjugate beam. If we were to think of the crystal as a computer hard drive, then the probe beam striking this crystal would, in effect, be writing data into this hard drive about all of the directions and phases of its various light rays. This stored information refracts the pump beam, directing it to form an outgoing phase conjugate beam.

The pump beams entering the mixer need not be formed from a laser beam split off from the illuminating laser. Rather, they may be spontaneously seeded from the probe beam, provided that mirrors are placed on either side of the mixer crystal at the proper angle. How such a passive phase conjugate resonator works is summarized in the text box on page 231.

The academic scientific community first became aware of optical phase conjugation through its members' work with lasers. Such laser experiments were conducted in 1972 at the Lebedev Physical Institute in Moscow. Subsequently, scientists in the United States and other countries began investigating the phenomenon.[1,2] This technology found a military application in the development of a Star Wars weapon that can track an enemy missile target by illuminating it with a beam of laser light and subsequently destroy the target by sending out a powerful laser pulse that converges onto the target, retracing the path of the light rays that had reflected from the target.

In 1994, when I first heard about Project Skyvault, the only reference to phase conjugation was in experiments that were being conducted at optical wavelengths with lasers, but Don's discourse on microwave beam mixing immediately led me to conclude that Project Skyvault was performing microwave beam phase conjugation. I conducted a literature search, but it turned up no references to the use of phase conjugation at microwave frequencies. Nevertheless, I concluded that if phase conjugation worked at optical wavelengths, it should work just as well at microwave wavelengths. Since that time, a significant amount of research on microwave phase conjugation has been published, indicating that my earlier conclusion was indeed justified.

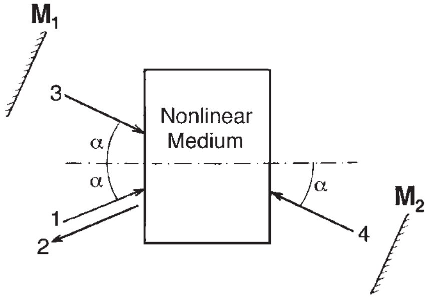

Figure 8.3. A self-pumped optical phase conjugate mirror showing an incoming probe beam (1) interacting with counterpropagating pump beams (3 and 4) between mirrors M_1 and M_2 to produce the outgoing phase conjugate beam (2).

Optical Phase Conjugate Resonance in Barium Titanate

When a probe laser beam, or "seed" beam of coherent laser light (see ray 1, figure 8.3), is directed to pass into a nonlinear dielectric medium, such as an electrically polarized crystal of barium titanate, and this dielectric is placed between two parallel mirrors, this probe beam will excite two counterpropagating "pump beams" (see rays 3 and 4, figure 8.3) to build up between the mirrors. These pump beams interact with the incoming probe beam to produce a stationary periodic electric field and refractive index pattern termed a *holographic amplitude grating*. Experiments have shown that the counterpropagating pump beams can self-excite to intensities sixty times that of the input signal beam without any additional energy input.[3,4] Higher amplification coefficients could be achieved by reducing the losses of the resonator cavity and by taking advantage of natural resonances in the nonlinear dielectric.

This passive resonator also functions as a phase conjugate mirror. The holographic amplitude grating produced by the interaction of the pump beam (ray 3 in figure 8.3) with the incoming probe beam (ray 1) refracts the counterpropagating pump beam (ray 4) to yield an outgoing time-reversed beam (ray 2), also called a phase conjugate beam. Similarly, the grating produced by the interaction of the beams (rays 4 and 1) refracts the counterpropagating pump beam (ray 3) to produce a similar outgoing phase conjugate beam (ray 2) in phase with that produced by the other pump beam (ray 4). The electromagnetic wave fronts in the outgoing beam (ray 2) are identical to the ordinary wave fronts in the probe beam (ray 1), except that they propagate backward instead of forward, precisely retracing the paths followed by the forward-moving wave fronts of the ordinary beam. Consequently, the barium titanate crystal functions as a self-pumped optical phase conjugate mirror. If the probe beam were to originate from a certain point, this phase conjugate mirror would reflect a beam that converges back to that point. This principle is used in Star Wars weapons designed to track and destroy missiles by using a laser beam.

However, if microwave phase conjugation was indeed being used in Project Skyvault, we get a very different picture of the historical development of this branch of science. It indicates that about two decades before academia discovered phase conjugation in laser experiments, this phenomenon was under intense investigation by aerospace black-project scientists studying its ability to amplify and bottle up microwave radiation into intense downward-directed beams from aircraft.

If made to function as a microwave phase conjugate resonator, a radar unit could be able to automatically lock on to and track its target and also to exponentially amplify the intensity of the incoming radar echo. Instead of being dispersed into the environment, most of the radar signal's energy would become confined to a nondispersing beam extending between the radar unit and the target. This has the advantage of allowing very intense microwave beams to be built up with very little input power, clearly an advantage if one needed to generate intense microwave beams for vehicle propulsion. Thus, Don's rather cryptic description of the Skyvault vehicle propulsion unit makes quite a bit of sense if he was describing a microwave device that operates similar to a phase conjugate resonator.

With some knowledge of how a phase conjugate resonator functions, we can understand Don's description of the Micro-X unit as follows. The Skyvault vehicle has a high-voltage DC power source on board that drives a high-power Gunn diode mounted within a resonator conduit mounted below the craft. Coherent microwave radiation emitted from the Gunn diode repeatedly reflects back and forth along the length of this conduit and becomes amplified in voltage. Dielectrics placed in the conduit transform the signal into a sawtooth-shaped waveform. The microwave radiation from this resonator passes through an iris and radiates downward through a microwave horn. A convex lens focuses the radiation into a beam that shines on the ground (see figure 8.4). A fraction of this radiation is absorbed in the ground and the remaining fraction is scattered upward, of which a small portion scatters back toward the craft. A second convex microwave lens mounted below the spacecraft intercepts a portion of this scattered radiation, which constitutes the incoming probe beam, and focuses it through another iris into another resonator cavity that contains the mixer diode. The mixer diode is essentially a block of material such as barium titanate or some other substance that has nonlinear electric properties and is electrically polarized with high-voltage DC. Since microwave wavelengths are about a thousand times larger than visible wavelengths, the mixer medium need not be a transparent or translucent crystal; an amorphous barium titanate ceramic works just as well.

Furthermore, a portion of the microwave radiation in the Gunn diode resonator cavity is diverted into the mixer diode cavity, where it enters the mixer diode. This pump beam passes through the mixer

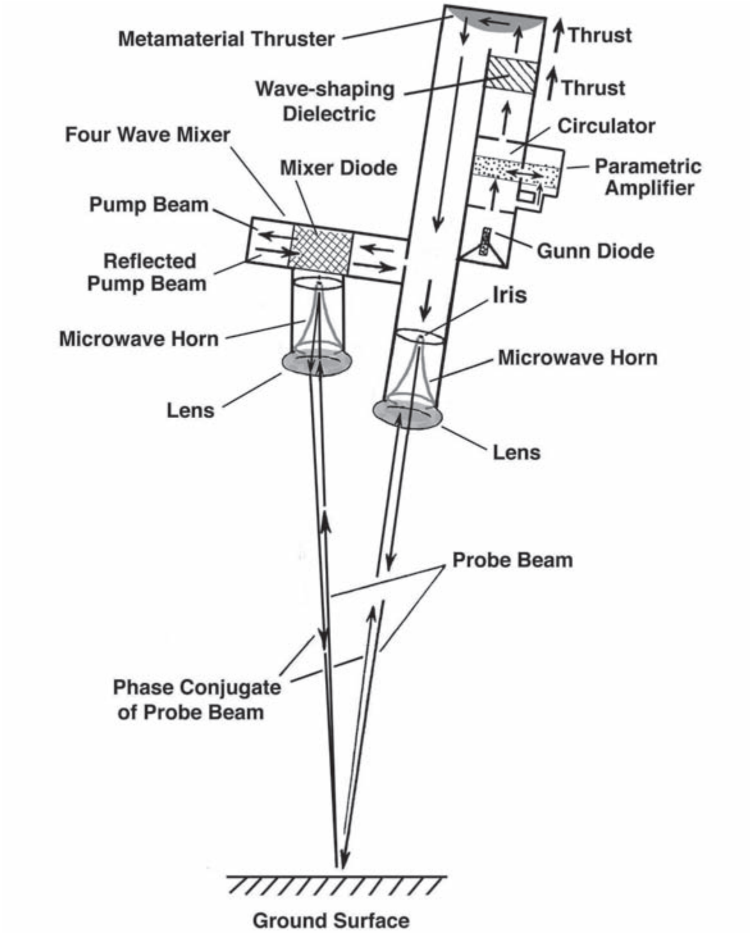
Metamaterial Thruster
Thrust
Thrust
Wave-shaping Dielectric
Four Wave Mixer
Circulator
Parametric Amplifier
Mixer Diode
Pump Beam
Reflected Pump Beam
Gunn Diode
Iris
Microwave Horn
Microwave Horn
Lens
Lens
Probe Beam
Phase Conjugate of Probe Beam
Ground Surface

Figure 8.4. A rendition of the phase conjugate microwave resonator propulsion unit used in Project Skyvault. (P. LaViolette, © 2006)

diode and reflects from the far end of the resonator cavity. The cavity is designed to have a length that is a whole-number multiple of the Gunn diode wavelength to ensure that resonance is achieved. This establishes two counterpropagating phase-locked pump beams within the cavity. The mixer diode's electric polarization axis is oriented at the proper angle relative to these pump beams.

Within the mixer diode medium, the probe beam interacts with each of the two counterpropagating pump beams to produce a holographic electrostatic grating pattern. In turn, the grating pattern produced by a given pump beam interacts with the opposing pump beam to produce an outgoing microwave beam that is the phase conjugate of the probe microwave beam, or, in other words, is the phase conjugate of the radiation scattered back to the craft from the ground target site. As was the case with laser light phase conjugation, the waveform, angle, and phase of the phase conjugate microwave beam are configured just like those of the incoming probe beam, except that the waves propagate in a reverse direction. As such, these phase conjugate rays exactly retrace the paths followed by the ground-reflected rays and ultimately converge back to the probe beam's point of origin. That is, this time-reversed beam converges on the ground-reflection site and then continues to retrace the probe beam's path, ultimately entering the spacecraft's Gunn diode oscillator cavity.

This arrangement of two counterpropagating pump beams, an incoming probe beam, and outgoing phase conjugate beam, all interacting within the craft's nonlinear mixer diode, constitutes a four-wave mixer. Since the oscillation phases of the probe and phase conjugate beams are precisely matched, these ordinary and time-reversed waves reinforce one another to produce a resonantly amplified stationary wave pattern, or soliton, between the craft's mixer resonator cavity and the ground and between the ground and the craft's Gunn diode resonator cavity. As a result, the electromagnetic energy beamed to the ground from the Gunn diode amplifier cavity and also the energy beamed back to the ground as the outgoing phase conjugate beam become efficiently stored in this soliton beam. Based on the large body of knowledge that has been accumulated about the phase conjugation phenomenon, we know this energy storage soliton phenomenon to be fact.

This stationary wave in effect behaves as a giant energy capacitor. The soliton's intensity progressively builds up to a very high value, limited only by absorption energy losses when the microwave beam contacts surfaces that partially absorb the microwave radiation. The soliton beam develops specifically between high-reflectivity ground scattering surfaces. Ground scattering sites illuminated by the beam that are very absorbing to microwave radiation will return little radiation to the mixer, and hence, those ray paths will carry an insignificantly small fraction of the soliton beam's total energy flux.

Considering that passive phase conjugate resonators using barium titanate crystals have developed sixtyfold power gains over their seed (probe) laser beam intensity, we might speculate that Project Skyvault was able to achieve microwave beam intensity gains of at least two orders of magnitude and perhaps higher. If they used a Gunn diode that operated at a power of 10 kilowatts, then the soliton beam could have stored 1 to 10 megawatts of energy. If, on the other hand, the craft used a parametric amplifier to amplify the Gunn diode beam to a power of several million watts, then the soliton beam could have stored several gigawatts.

We can only speculate how much beam power was needed to lift the Skyvault craft. Don did not disclose this, nor did he mention the size of the Skyvault craft. Obviously, the power needed for a given propulsion beam would depend on the weight of the craft and on how many beams it used for levitation. With this method, it should be possible to lift a craft even the size of an aircraft carrier.

As mentioned earlier, sawtooth-shaped waves having a sharp rise in negative electric potential will produce repulsive forces on bodies they encounter. Also, artificial metamaterials having electric or magnetic resonances close to the microwave beam frequency are capable of responding with very large repulsive thrusts. As mentioned in chapter 7, the Skyvault craft very likely used such a material for its wave-shaping diode and in a beam refractor that reversed the path of its main beam to pass through a lens toward the ground. The mixer diode may also have been made out of such a metamaterial so that, in addition to producing an outgoing beam that would be the phase conjugate of the incoming probe beam, the diode would also be lofted by both the incoming probe beam and the downward-refracted pump beams.

Consequently, the sawtooth-shaped waves emitted from the Gunn diode resonator cavity will exert upward forces in the wave-shaping diode, in the beam reflector, and in the mixer diode that will together act to levitate the craft. The microwave beams that strike the ground will produce a downward force on the ground, but this force will not be as great as that lofting the craft's dielectrics, since it is unlikely that soil material typically encountered in the ground would have any resonant frequencies near the craft's microwave beam frequency.

Based on Don's testimony, we can conclude that this microwave-induced thrust would not be just an electrostatic effect, but also an electrogravitic effect in that it would repel the mixer diode through a mass effect. In such a case, this phase-locked soliton beam could induce a gravitational force on the craft that was opposed to the Earth's downward pull, thereby reducing the craft's weight and causing it to levitate. The idea that a microwave beam should have gravitational effects is not entirely unexpected. As discussed earlier, research by Brown and Podkletnov indicates that sawtooth electric potential waves produce gravity-like thrust effects. This electrogravitic coupling phenomenon is also a key prediction of subquantum kinetics.

A Skyvault spacecraft could maintain proper pitch stability by using three microwave beam generators spaced from one another so as to produce a tripodlike beam arrangement (see figure 8.5). A single mixer could be located at the center of the craft's lower hull to phase-conjugate the three beams. Alternatively, three mixers might be used, one near each of the craft's microwave beam generators.

In summary, by using phase conjugate technology, a craft would be able to build up a resonant energy beam between itself and the ground that would have a cumulative power far in excess of that which the craft would be feeding into it. Its advantage for propulsion may be readily seen when compared with a conventional microwave system that uses an onboard maser (*m*icrowave *a*mplification by *s*timulated *e*mission of *r*adiation) as a microwave transmitter. In the case of a conventional maser system, the emitted radiation would simply leave the craft, strike the ground, and scatter in various directions, with a minute fraction of the original radiation scattering back toward the craft. To get a

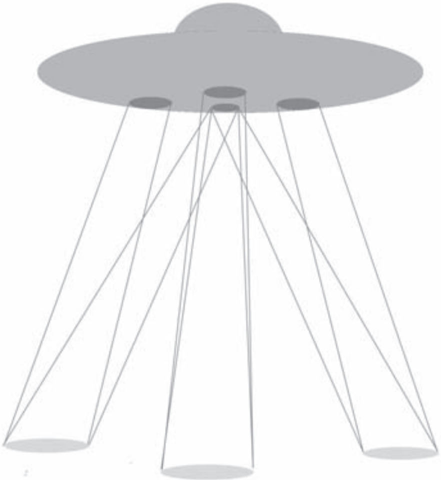

Figure 8.5. A possible arrangement of microwave phase conjugate resonators in a Skyvault spacecraft. (P. LaViolette, © 2006)

reflected beam by this method that would exert a measurable propulsive force, the craft's transmitter would have to be so powerful and its energy source of such a large size as to make this method of microwave propulsion totally impractical.

However, in the case of a craft employing phase conjugation technology, the initially minute amount of microwave radiation scattered from the ground and striking the craft would be phase conjugated and sent back to the ground as a time-reversed beam. This time-reversed beam would retrace the path of the scattered rays, targeting just those facets on the ground that were reflecting microwaves toward the craft and reflecting back from those facets to the craft's maser transmitter. So out of all the microwave rays being scattered from the ground, the phase conjugator would pick out just those that were striking the craft and send out its energy to trace in reverse the trajectory of those rays back to their transmission source. As the microwave energy was resonantly reflected back and forth among the craft's transmitter, the ground, and the craft's phase conjugator, a soliton beam would form specifically between the craft and the ground and begin to progressively increase in intensity. The waves would remain coherent despite repeated reflections, so losses would be minimal. Eventually, this beam would accumulate an intensity far in excess of the power being outputted from the craft's AC maser source and possibly would even draw in energy cohered from the surrounding environment. Given that this soliton beam exerts an upward repulsive force on the craft, with sufficient resonant amplification it would produce an upward force sufficient to support the craft. In effect, this microwave phase conjugate resonator would act as a gravity wave amplifier to generate an enormous electrogravitic thrust for supporting the craft. Ray, the black-project physicist I had spoken to, said that in the black R&D world, this resonant amplification effect is referred to as "field-induced soliton phenomenon."[5]

8.2 ▪ VEHICLE FLIGHT CONTROL

Another purpose of projecting beams out from the craft to the ground surface would be for flight control. As mentioned earlier, the ground-reflected probe beam enters the mixer diode, where it is mixed with the beam from the craft's main Gunn oscillator to produce sum and difference frequencies, the difference frequency being the Doppler output signal, whose frequency is determined by the speed of the vehicle's motion relative to the ground. Don said that in both the homodyne and Micro-X units this difference signal was fed into what he termed the "processing circuit," where it was amplified and processed "to produce the vehicle in motion." Unfortunately, he gave no additional information as to the nature of this processing or how it might result in moving the vehicle. He stated that the frequency of the Doppler output signal not only depends on the speed of the vehicle, but also "controls the speed of the vehicle" (see page 3 of Don's letter in appendix E).

In his letter, Don wrote that the Doppler frequency, φ, caused by the vehicle's movement in a 100-gigahertz microwave radiation field (f_o) was given by the equation:

$$\varphi = 2f_o\, v/c$$

in which φ is the frequency difference due to Doppler shifting of the outgoing signal, f_o is the frequency of the outgoing microwave signal generated by the vehicle, v is the speed of the vehicle in centimeters per second, and c is the speed of light (3×10^{10} centimeters per second). Unless he was just using an analogy here, Don seems to imply that they were using a 100-gigahertz oscillator for their propulsion beam—hence, one that operated in the W microwave band. The φ in the above equation represents the difference frequency, Δf, that would be produced by the mixer diode as a result of combining the incoming probe beam signal with the spacecraft's local oscillator reference signal, the pump beam.

If the vehicle was stationary relative to the targeted region, the waves scattered back to the craft would have the same frequency as the original outgoing microwave signal. Don noted that in this case the output in the mixer diode would be relatively simple; that is, no difference frequency would be produced. However, in a case in which the vehicle was moving relative to the ground, the reflected signal would be Doppler shifted, causing its frequency to differ slightly from the spacecraft's local oscillator frequency. In this case, he said the signal output from the mixer would be more complex, that is, there would be a difference signal output.

As an example, if the vehicle was beaming down a signal of $f_o = 100$ gigahertz and was receding upward from the ground at a speed of 1.5 meters per second, this 100-gigahertz signal would arrive at the ground redshifted by 500 hertz (10^{11} Hz × v/c), presenting a frequency $f_o - 500$ hertz. Upon being reflected from the ground up toward the receding vehicle, this redshifted microwave beam would appear to be redshifted by an additional 500 hertz relative to the vehicle. As a result, the incoming reflected signal would be redshifted by 1,000 hertz compared with the signal originally sent out by the craft's local oscillator. Consequently, when this redshifted frequency f is combined in the microwave mixer with the pump beam frequency f_o from the local oscillator, the mixer would produce a 1,000-hertz difference signal, which is the Doppler output frequency, φ. Harmonic multiples of this fundamental Doppler beat frequency would most likely also be present, although in a lesser amount.

It is quite likely that such a phase conjugate propulsion system would emit sound, since piezoelectric media physically move and oscillate when they are excited by electromagnetic waves. In fact, such materials are used in telephone speakers and sonic alarms. Similarly, the piezoelectric mixer medium in the Skyvault spacecraft, excited by this difference frequency, would emit a sonic vibration. If such a craft was to hover up and down at only 15 centimeters per second on its

100-gigahertz microwave beam, the fundamental harmonic of its beat frequency would have a very low value of around 100 hertz. Sonically, this would be at the lower end of the audible spectrum. As the vehicle proceeded to climb at an increasing speed, the sound pitch emitted from its mixer diode would accordingly increase, passing up through the audible range to ultrasonic frequencies. At an upward velocity of 30 meters per second (sixty-seven miles per hour), the craft would be generating a 20,000-hertz beat frequency (i.e., in the ultrasonic range).

Unconventional flying objects, however, have been sighted that emit somewhat lower microwave frequencies. For example, in one aerial chase of a UFO that took place near Meridian, Mississippi, in July 1957, electronic countermeasures equipment on board an RB-47 plane was able to pick up a 3-gigahertz microwave frequency emanating from the UFO. The signal occurred in 2-microsecond-long bursts that repeated six hundred times per second.[6] UFOs have generally been observed to radiate electromagnetic waves in the 0.3 to 3 gigahertz range, hence in the UHF band.[7] If the craft was to transmit a 1-gigahertz maser signal and travel upward at a velocity of 30 meters per second, its beat frequency would be felt in the low frequency audio range at 200 hertz.

Let us next attempt to interpret Don's laconic statements describing how the Skyvault craft's microwave receiver operates when the ship is in motion. As we noted above, when the craft is moving upward, the ground will be receding from the craft and, hence, upon reflection from the ground, the local oscillator frequency f_o will be Doppler redshifted to a slightly lower frequency by an amount $-\Delta f = -f_o(v/c)$. Also, as the ground-reflected probe beam enters the mixer diode, it will experience an additional Doppler redshift due to the craft's upward receding motion. Thus, upon entering the mixer, the probe beam will have been Doppler shifted relative to the local oscillator frequency by a total of $-2\Delta f$, which is equal to $-\varphi$.

However, the mixer diode will compensate for this frequency shift. That is, because the incoming redshifted probe beam and the pump beams differ in frequency by $2\Delta f$, they will generate a moving holographic grating pattern within the medium of the four-wave mixer diode. This is well known from experiments with optical phase conjugation. Upon interaction with this moving grating pattern, the pump beams will produce an outgoing phase conjugate beam that is frequency shifted relative to the local oscillator (pump beam) frequency by an amount equal to the frequency shift of the incoming probe beam, *but opposite in sign*.[8] Hence, the four-wave mixer will automatically produce a phase conjugate beam that is *blueshifted* in frequency by an amount $\varphi = +2\Delta f$. That is, the outgoing beam will be reverse Doppler shifted. The incoming redshifted probe beam and outgoing blueshifted phase conjugate beam then differ in frequency by $4\Delta f$ in the mixer diode reference frame. After reflecting from the ground and converging into the Gunn diode resonator cavity, the blueshifted phase conjugate beam will have been redshifted by an amount $\varphi = -2\Delta f$. So upon reaching the receding craft, its frequency will end up precisely matching the local oscillator frequency. Thus, a condition of resonance will be established with the outgoing local oscillator frequency.

In the Earth's reference frame, the frequencies of the ground-reflected probe beam and the phase conjugate beam will differ by an amount $2\Delta f$, numerically equaling the difference frequency, or beat frequency, that the ground-reflected probe beam generates in the four-wave mixer. As a result, these two counterpropagating beams will build up a phase-locked soliton beam between the craft and the ground that in the ground reference frame will have a beat frequency $\varphi = 2\Delta f$. This is equivalent to the frequency that Don's formula specifies to be the "frequency caused by movement of the unit" (or vehicle). Its value depends on the speed of the craft relative to the ground. This beat frequency will likely induce an audible sound in any material body on the ground that it happens to push against. This could explain UFO sightings in which witnesses have reported hearing humming sounds.

If we properly interpret Don's letter, he appears to say that the mixer's Doppler output signal may be used to control the speed of the vehicle. He talks of amplifying and processing this signal. Presumably, this amplified Doppler signal is fed back into the mixer. The amplified signal, in turn, would add its power to the outgoing phase conjugate beam and ultimately to the soliton beam. Thus, by controlling the amount by which the Doppler signal is amplified, a pilot would be able to control the soliton beam intensity and the amount of thrust that the beam would develop. In this way, he could control the speed of the craft. With more amplification, the craft would accelerate away from the Earth and with less amplification it would decelerate or even enter a descending flight mode. As the craft moved horizontally, its velocity relative to a beam's particular ground target location would continually change and as a result the frequency of the mixer diode's Doppler output signal would be changing accordingly. Whatever frequency the mixer happened to be outputting, the amplifier would be amplifying that signal at the amplification level that the pilot had set.

Thus, although the power level of the Gunn diode beam generator could also be changed, for finer adjustments the craft guidance system would be controlling the power level of the much-lower-frequency Doppler signal. This is reasonable since lower-frequency waves in the audio or radio frequency range are much easier to control than those in microwave frequencies. If the craft supported itself on three microwave beams, it would need some very sophisticated computer hardware to coordinate and properly control the Doppler signal power levels of all three beams.

It is conceivable that the same technique could be used to produce a tractor beam that would lock on to objects and draw them toward the craft. A microwave beam could be changed from a repulser beam into a tractor beam simply by inverting its sawtooth waveform to have a sharp increase of positive potential followed by a gradual decline. This could be done by reversing the polarity bias on the Gunn diode and on the barium titanate dielectric that would be used to shape the wave. If the craft had several phase conjugate resonators (i.e., more than one local oscillator and several mixer diodes), some might be used to create repulsive beams to support the craft, leaving another free to phase conjugate an attractive soliton beam that might be used to target a transportable object. By adjusting the power applied to its tractor soliton beam, the craft could control the movement of the targeted object as it made its approach. Similar technology could explain UFO sightings in which cars or people have been picked up by a force field and drawn toward a hovering craft.

In summary, the development of microwave field propulsion technology combines three areas of research: (a) research into the production of high-power microwave beams, (b) research into metamaterials that exhibit a negative index of refraction or strong electric or magnetic resonances at microwave frequencies, and (c) research into microwave phase conjugation. With the proper engineering development, it should be possible to produce a vehicle capable of free levitation.

8.3 ■ AEROSPACE INDUSTRY INVOLVEMENT

Is there evidence that companies have been doing work in the field of microwave phase conjugation in more recent years? Indeed, a survey of unclassified literature indicates that Rocketdyne has been relatively active in this field. For example, in 1990, scientists associated with Rocketdyne and with Rockwell International coauthored a paper titled "Microwave Phase Conjugation in a Liquid Suspension of Elongated Microparticles."[9] The nonlinear electric properties of the particle suspension described in the article would allow it to serve as an ideal medium in which four-wave mixing could take place. Also, it is not a secret that Rocketdyne has been interested in the development of high-powered microwave beams. For example, in 1993, scientists affiliated with the Rocketdyne division of Rockwell International and with the Titan-Beta Corporation reported tests of a high-power maser system capable of delivering a 2.86-gigahertz pulsed microwave beam having a peak power of 65 megawatts![10] The system used an SLAC 5045 linear accelerator klystron tube that functioned as a free-electron laser and was powered by a modulator unit developed by Titan-Beta. The unit delivered 3.5-microsecond pulses at a rate of 180 pulses per second. The paper does not mention what the beam was to be used for, but its power would have greatly surpassed that of the magnetrons used in the early days of Project Skyvault.

Hughes Aircraft is another company that was active in the field of microwave phase conjugation. Recall the story told by my friend Thomas whose father had worked at Rocketdyne, presumably on Project Skyvault, and had drawn him a picture of a lenticular levitating vehicle that had been successfully tested. His father had later moved on to work at Hughes Aircraft, also in deeply classified projects. When Thomas later asked his father if Hughes was doing research in electrogravitics, his father's terse answer was, "They are the world leaders." Later in 1992, I had the occasion to ask one high-ranking Hughes manager whether Hughes Aircraft was still pursuing its electrogravitics R&D. He answered, "Yes, but they keep their work very quiet."* The same could probably be said for the other aerospace companies that today continue to work in this field.

It is also known through papers published in the open literature that give author affiliations that a considerable amount of research was going on at Hughes in optical phase conjugation. One military application of such technology, mentioned in chapter 7, is the targeting and destruction of missiles by means of a pulse from a high-powered laser. Thus, considering that Hughes was also doing cutting-edge research in electrogravitics, it stands to reason that it was also applying its phase conjugation knowledge to microwave phase-conjugating systems on projects involved in developing vehicle propulsion systems. In fact, Hughes has had a long involvement in military radar systems. The forward-looking radar used on the B-2 bomber, for example, was developed by Hughes. We may conjecture, then, that Hughes Aircraft was heavily involved in Project Skyvault's research.

An indication that Hughes had been conducting research on microwave phase conjugation came in 1993 with the granting of its patent for radar cross-section enhancement using phase-conjugated impulse signals (U.S. patent 5,223,838). Researchers were applying the principle to radar as a way of locking on to a distant target. By receiving a radar echo that normally would be too weak to properly detect, mixing it in a mixer diode with a pump maser beam to create a holographic grating, and pumping the grating with a radar pulse to create an outgoing phase conjugate beam, they were able to create a soliton beam between the radar transceiver and target that would resonantly amplify the original radar echo to a detectable level. The patent makes no mention that similar technology could be used to create a soliton beam beneath an aircraft for the purpose of levitation. Any patent disclosing such an aerospace application would likely have run the risk of being classified, so there is no way of knowing whether such a patent in fact exists.

---

*Prior to its dissolution through corporate merger, Hughes had a long history of being involved in the development of very advanced, leading-edge technology. About 90 percent of its work was defense related, most of which is highly classified R&D. During the early 1980s, when the U.S. Government Accounting Office was cracking down on defense contract fraud, evidence surfaced that an astounding two-thirds of Hughes's contract costs could not be accounted for, far more than for any other corporation surveyed. Whereas other contractors received stiff fines for their unaccounted costs, Hughes managed to emerge virtually unscathed. Could federal authorities have understood that these excess cash flows were not cost overruns, but rather funds whose specific black-programs destinations could not be revealed or even admitted to?

When all the above evidence is considered as a whole, a pattern emerges that points to Hughes having made a major effort in developing microwave phase conjugation field propulsion technology. Hughes has since been split up and sold off to a number of companies. The Hughes research facility in Malibu was a former hotbed of research on antigravity propulsion according to the testimony of a "Dr. B." in Steven Greer's book *Disclosure* (2001, p. 262). The laboratory, which currently goes by the name HRL Laboratories, is today jointly owned by Boeing and General Motors.

The technology of microwave phase conjugation is also being applied to aerospace communications. Ideas along these lines were discussed by University of Michigan researchers Leo DiDomenico and Gabriel Rebeiz in a paper they published in 1999.[11] The technology has several advantages. First, compared with standard maser beam technologies, it is very energy conserving since the transmitted microwave energy is restricted to a tight beam extending between the ground communication station and the spacecraft. Unlike a standard maser beam, very little radiation is lost into space. Second, the link is very secure since, unlike radio broadcasts, it is very difficult for anyone to eavesdrop unless he places his receiver in the path of the beam. Third, the phase conjugate beam locks on to the spacecraft and, hence, is able to automatically track the spacecraft, even though the spacecraft is moving. The DiDomenico and Rebeiz paper is interesting because it talks about phase conjugation of an incoming signal that has been Doppler shifted due to motion of the target. So, many of the same considerations involved in a vehicle propulsion system are already being discussed in the context of communication systems. The mathematics are somewhat involved, requiring the use of Heaviside operators or Laplace transforms.*

8.4 ■ TESLA'S MAGNIFYING TRANSMITTERS

Tesla's magnifying transmitters also functioned as phase conjugate resonators, and this was most likely known to him, although the specific concepts behind the phase conjugation phenomenon would not be developed for many decades. These devices were known for their ability to generate exceedingly high voltages and to occasionally produce violently destructive ball lightning sparks. The Wardenclyffe tower was the largest of his generators (see figure 8.6).[12] Tesla built it to show that it was possible to transmit megawatts of power over global distances to power entire cities and air vehicles as well.[13] Construction of the tower began in 1901 on Long Island near the town of Shoreham. The central part of its resonator consisted of a large, flat spiral coil mounted horizontally and shielded within a 68-foot-diameter mushroom-shaped dome electrode, this whole structure being perched 187 feet above the ground at the top of a wooden tower. The center of the coil was electrically connected to the dome electrode to form a resonator. Power inductively supplied to the coil would surge in resonance between the coil and the dome electrode, pulsing the dome with extremely high voltages. The dome electrode consisted of a honeycomb array of 1-foot-diameter parabolic shells whose small-curvature radii facilitated ionization of the surrounding atmosphere. Thus, when electrified, the entire dome would have become enveloped in an ion halo. The nitric oxide gases that would have formed in this halo have electric properties that are very nonlinear and would have served as an ideal phase-conjugating medium.[14]

---

*Those interested in preparing themselves for a career in field propulsion technology should consider going for an undergraduate degree in physics with a minor in electrical engineering. Then, go on to get either a master's or doctoral degree in electrical engineering, specializing in microwave or radar engineering. Make sure to take courses, among other things, in optical and microwave phase conjugation, Fourier analysis, and Laplace transforms. The best universities to pick are those at which professors are already working in the area of microwave phase conjugation applied to radar or communication systems. Examples that come to mind are the University of Michigan and the University of California Los Angeles. In particular, the California professors have in the past coauthored papers in this area with Rocketdyne scientists.

We may deduce, then, that this ion halo would have phase-conjugated the tower's resonant oscillations, allowing it to function as a phase-conjugate resonator and to generate field powers far in excess of the power used to run it. Since the dome electrode would have been radiating longitudinal waves to the Earth's ionosphere, an immense soliton would have formed between the halo and the ionosphere, and since the halo would have phase-conjugated the waves returning from the ionosphere, the tower would have been able to draw on energy cohered from a vast region of space.

Unfortunately, this miraculous structure was never completed because Tesla's sponsor cut off the project's funding, but earlier, Tesla had built and operated smaller-scale versions. These magnifying

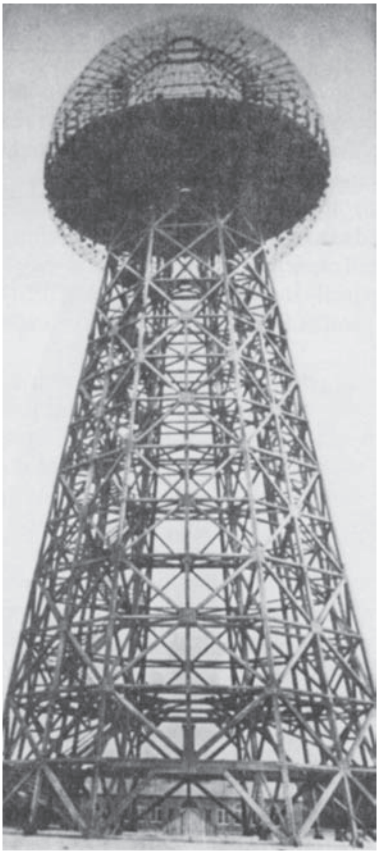

Figure 8.6. The Wardenclyffe tower. (Photo courtesy of C. Yost, from "Tesla's Tower [Wardenclyffe]" Electric Spacecraft Journal *[May/June 1991])*

transmitters emitted a repeating series of very high-voltage shock fronts from their dome-shaped negative electrodes. Unlike hertzian waves, these wave fronts had little transverse polarization. Their electric field profile was sawtooth-shaped with a very sharp rise in potential and a subsequent more-gradual decay, and the field gradients were oriented longitudinally in the direction of wave propagation. When operating, his transformer would gradually build up immense field potentials, approaching 100 million volts, as a result of the cumulative effect of repeating pulse cycles. The progressive amplification of these phase-conjugated waves is an example of what we earlier referred to as the field-induced soliton phenomenon. The high voltage that accumulated as a result of these repeating waves would have been apparent as a growing luminescence. In his book *Secrets of Cold War Technology,* Vassilatos wrote:

> He [Tesla] had already observed how the very air near these Transformers could be rendered strangely self-luminous. This was a light like no high frequency coil ever could produce, a corona of white brilliance which expanded to ever enlarging diameters. The light from Tesla Transformers continually expands. Tesla described the growing column of light which surrounds any elevated line which has been connected to his Transformers. Unlike common high frequency alternations, Tesla radiant energy effects grow with time. Tesla recognized the reason for this temporal growth process. There were no reversals in the source discharges. Therefore the radiant energy would never remove the work performed on any space or material so exposed. As with the unidirectional impulse discharges, the radiant electric effects were additive and accumulative. In this respect, Tesla observed energy magnifications which seemed totally anomalous to ordinary engineering convention.[15]

Further on, Vassilatos wrote:

> Tesla performed outdoor experimental tests of broadcast power in the northernmost reaches of Manhattan by night. Sending metallized balloons aloft, he raised conductive lines. These were connected to the

> terminals of his Transformers, and activated. When properly adjusted, the white luminous columns began covering the vertical aerial line and expanded by the second. Enveloping Tesla, his assistants, and the surrounding trees, this strange white luminosity moved out into the countryside to an enormous volume of space. Tesla described this phenomenon in several of his power transmission patents, the obvious artifact of a non-electrical energy.[16]

Like Tesla's transformers, the Project Skyvault vehicle may similarly have made use of a nitric oxide halo to phase-conjugate its microwave beams. If part of the pump microwave beam signal was used to energize the outer surface of the craft, the resulting high-frequency, high-voltage field would have ionized the air immediately around the craft, enveloping it in a phase-conjugating layer of nitric oxide gas. Then, the entire lower surface of the craft would have served as a secondary mixer, and the three incoming ground-reflected probe beams would have become time-reversed (phase-conjugated) on the craft's hull rather than in its interior mixer diode. This could explain why the bodies of many UFOs are seen to be luminous and radiating microwave radiation in the 0.3-to-3-gigahertz frequency range. The observation that UFOs often visibly pulsate when hovering or taking off could be explained if they were pumping their surfaces with a low-Doppler beat frequency that modulated the brightness of their luminescence.

It is also possible that the hull of such a spacecraft could itself be fabricated out of a metamaterial such that any microwaves impinging on its lower surface would result in a propulsive force. The unusual, layered bismuth and magnesium metal known as Art's Parts, reportedly retrieved from the hull of a crashed UFO, could be an example of such a material (see chapter 9).

Such material could also have the dual purpose of functioning either as a radar-absorbing or as a radar-diverting material, one that would bend incident electromagnetic waves around an object in such a way as to give the impression that they had passed through the object completely unobstructed. For example, physicists David Smith, John Pendry, and David Schurig announced in May 2006 that within five years their team would be able to demonstrate a metamaterial cloaking shield that would render a craft within it completely invisible to electromagnetic waves at microwave frequencies.[17]

Ray's comment in chapter 4 that black-world antigravity propulsion technology was based partly on Tesla's work further supports the notion that phase-conjugate microwave resonators have been developed for aerospace propulsion. Ray was apparently quite familiar with phase-conjugate resonance technology because he said that one of the highly secret R&D projects he had been assigned to involved working on the application of this technology in the field of cryptography. Apparently, his group had developed a way to encrypt an electronic message by degrading it into unrecognizable noise and then later recovering it by using a phase-conjugate resonator to time-reverse that noise back to the original ordered message. He felt that this same technology provides some of the key concepts that can explain how these antigravity propulsion craft work the way they do. Discussing a version of this phase-conjugation technology, he stated, "I have seen demonstrations of this stuff—of the raw technology. One of them breaks the second law of thermodynamics, the law of entropy. It breaks that law!"[18] Statements that the first or second law of thermodynamics might be broken amount to blasphemy to the mind-set of the conventional academic physicist. In the world of black-project engineering, however, they are routine facts of life.

8.5 ■ BROWN'S PHASE-CONJUGATING MICROWAVE DISC

Brown's levitating disc would have operated much like the Project Skyvault vehicle. The disc-shaped antenna attached to the bottom of the conical dielectric (see figures 3.2, 3.3, and 3.8) would have radiated microwaves at a frequency of a few gigahertz and would have acted much like the Gunn diode in the Skyvault vehicle. The positive electrode, which would have had either a parabolic or a cone shape, would have served as a wave amplifier cavity since a portion of the microwave radiation reflected downward by the electrode would have been reflected back at the mouth of the cavity. As a result, its signal would have resonantly amplified and built up to a high intensity across the high-K piezoelectric dielectric cone located inside the hornlike cavity. This dielectric cone, which would have been polarized with high-voltage DC, would have had very nonlinear electrical characteristics and would have functioned in a manner similar to the mixer diode in the Skyvault vehicle. Since the dielectric was being pumped with the resonantly amplified microwave beam that was reflecting back and forth along its length, microwaves reflected up from the ground would have acted as a probe beam that would have interacted with the pump beam to produce a holographic grating pattern in the dielectric. At the same time, the pump beam would have produced a phase-conjugate beam that would have traveled downward to the ground, precisely retracing the pathway followed by the ground-reflected waves. The upward-reflected ordinary beam and the downward-propagating phase-conjugate beam would have been phase-locked to produce a soliton wave.

As in the Project Skyvault vehicle, the soliton wave extending between the ground and the mixer dielectric in Brown's saucer would have resonantly amplified to a very high intensity. This would be an example of the field-induced soliton phenomenon. Much of the microwave radiation radiated by the saucer's disc electrode, then, would have been bottled up in this beam.

It is possible that the ion discharge surrounding the positively charged umbrella electrode also served as a phase-conjugating medium, in addition to the barium titanate dielectric. As mentioned above, nitric oxide ions surrounding a high-voltage electrode would have very nonlinear electrical properties and could phase-conjugate waves, much like the glow discharge that surrounded the dome electrode of Tesla's magnifying transmitter.

With Brown's saucer, the DC polarization along the length of the dielectric would have progressively build up to a high voltage due to the dielectric's tendency to rectify some of the AC signal. As a result, a very steep potential gradient would have formed and would have exerted an upward thrust. This ramping up of the dielectric's potential gradient would have been helped by the tendency of the saucer to function as a phase-conjugate resonator with self-amplifying pump beams. In addition, if the oscillator could have been made to emit sawtooth-shaped waves, the saucer would have experienced more upward thrust due to the electrogravitic impulse effect.

Brown made no mention of phase conjugation in his electrokinetics patent, which he applied for in 1958. At that time, the phase-conjugation effect was unknown in the unclassified engineering world. The maser was invented in 1954 by Charles Townsend, and the rubidium optical laser was invented in 1960 by Ted Maiman at Hughes Aircraft. The field of laser holography began developing shortly after that, in the early 1960s, and it was not until 1972 that optical phase conjugation began to be discussed in the open literature. Thus, Brown was most likely unaware of the phase-conjugation principle behind the levitation effect he had experimentally discovered. Bahnson came close to the idea when he inferred that energy from the AC waves was being resonantly stored in the ether surrounding his saucer's electrodes. Indeed, the ether very likely also plays an important role, but the effect finds a ready explanation in terms of the phase-conjugating properties of the saucer's ceramic dielectric and its electrode's plasma sheath.

By 1957, when Brown had begun experimenting with the idea of pulsing dielectrics at microwave frequencies to get electrogravitic thrust, he was apparently rediscovering a microwave propulsion phenomenon that for some time had been known to Project Skyvault scientists and that by that time was in an advanced stage of secret development. His vertical-thrust apparatus would have functioned much like the homodyne version of the Project Skyvault vehicle. This is the version that incorporated the microwave transmitter and mixer in the same conduit. Since Brown was a latecomer with a history of conducting independent investigations that did not adhere to normal security protocols, he could have been regarded as a threat to efforts to maintain the secrecy of this area of R&D investigation. This may explain why his attempts to obtain military funding were continually rebuffed by the Pentagon and why Admiral Rickover had advised him to drop his work on electrogravitic propulsion.

8.6 ■ THE RUNAWAY MODE

Phase conjugate resonance and its related field-induced soliton phenomenon appear to be key to understanding this futuristic aerospace technology. However, this technology is not without its hazards. One important problem that engineers have had to face is ensuring that their microwave-powered vehicle does not enter a runaway mode such that the energy of its soliton field increases exponentially and finally explodes.

Guy Obolensky, one of the early researchers in microwave phase conjugation, has observed firsthand this explosive resonant amplification phenomenon in the phase-conjugating systems he has worked with. He coined the term "faser phenomenon" to refer to this exponential energy increase, "faser" being an acronym that stands for "*f*orce *a*mplification by *s*timulated *e*nergy *r*esonance."[19] His term, in effect, describes the field-induced soliton phenomenon concept.

The phase-conjugate resonator Obolensky was testing in his laboratory in 1958 was so highly efficient that it entered this runaway energy-increase mode, which ended in a violent explosion.[20,21] The phase-conjugate resonator he had constructed, which he termed a "limit cycle faser," consisted of a long surface-waveguide resonator of a size that could be placed on top of a desk. The waveguide was made of an aluminum sheet approximately 0.25 millimeter thick laid over an aluminum slab and separated from it by an insulating Mylar film that was hermetically sealed on either side with layers of distilled water. The separation of the waveguide walls had to be accurate to within a few ten thousandths of an inch. At one end of the waveguide, a 17-kilovolt spark discharge was made to jump across a series of spark gaps, tuned so that their sparks were self-quenching. The resulting spark oscillations generated longitudinal microwaves that traveled down the waveguide, skimming between the top and bottom metal surfaces. Normally, waves reflecting back from the end of the waveguide would disturb the spark discharge, causing it to become noisy and have excessive energy losses. Yet by placing five evenly spaced strips of Permalloy tape at the far end of the waveguide, Obolensky was able to create a phase-conjugate mirror. The nonlinear electrical properties of these strips altered the waveguide's characteristics in such a way that they phase-conjugated the surface waves coming from the spark and reflected them back as time-reversed waves, thereby making the spark oscillations coherent, that is, totally ordered.* As a result, his resonator had a phenomenally high output efficiency—far over unity. A powerful soliton consisting of nine harmonics of the fundamental submillimeter wave was able to build up within it.

Apparently, Obolensky's waveguide was optimally tuned and its Permalloy magnetic grating was optimally configured, because the energy resonance process became self-reinforcing, causing the waveguide's stored energy to increase exponentially. The current gain was so enormous that ball lightning–like sparks began to erupt from the waveguide and actually perforate its aluminum wall. Finally, in a blinding flash, the whole resonator assembly explosively discharged its accumulated energy and fragmented itself. Surviving pieces showed that the waveguide's submillimeter-thick wall was perforated with clusters of tiny holes spaced apart by a certain precise distance-multiple of the planar waveguide's thickness to form a periodic pattern. The dendritic pattern connecting these holes traced out the branching path of the immense electrical discharge that had formerly traveled down the full length of the conduit. Judging from the amount of energy required to vaporize the quantity of aluminum that was missing from the perforated section, Obolensky concluded that it would have required several hundred thousand joules (~100 watt hours) of energy, about 100,000 times greater than the 7 joules (~2 calories) of coulombic energy in the DC charge that his power supply had fed into his waveguide.[22] In subsequent experiments, Obolensky found that this field amplification technique could be properly controlled by means of a feedback circuit that would temporarily detune the oscillator powering the resonator whenever an excessive energy began building up in the resonator. He found that circuits employing normal hertzian signal conduction functioned much too slowly to effectively control the resonator, that only longitudinal shock front waves could travel fast enough.

---

*That is, the permaloy strips produced a series of impedance discontinuities that formed a current dependent electromagnetic grating pattern along the waveguide. The grating modulated the surface conduction of the waves in such a way that it would reflect them back as phase-conjugate waves. Tesla had also discovered the secret of making coherent spark discharges characterized by negative resistance; he once commented that an arc is not working properly when it is noisy: to be efficient it should "sing," i.e., be coherent.

In another experiment, Obolensky used such self-regulating faser circuits to achieve a 20 percent increase in light output from a 500-watt sodium vapor arc lamp, at the same time eliminating its flicker.[23,24] He attributed its increased efficiency to the nonlinear reactance element that he placed in series with the lamp that phase-conjugated the plasma oscillations of its arc.

Obolensky theorizes that his resonators derive their excess power by "cohering" incoherent energy present in their wave shape and possibly even entraining the zero-point energy in the surrounding ether.[25] He feels that this may have something to do with the resonator's ability to excite multiple harmonics of its fundamental frequency. Whereas a normal resonant electric circuit amplifies only the fundamental resonant frequency, these phase-conjugate resonators also exchange energy among and amplify up to nine harmonics.[26,27] Since these harmonics mutually interlink in the resonator's nonlinear elements, noise energy present in the environment that happens to excite certain of these harmonics would become entrained and cohered into this multimode resonance. That is, the phase conjugator's nonlinear elements would send time-reversed waves back to those "noise" fluctuations, creating a coherent soliton that would entrain incoherent energy into the self-amplifying energy resonance pattern, thereby reversing the entropy of that "noise." Since the soliton not only resides within the resonant circuit but also extends outward to surrounding space, its resonance would entrain the surrounding energy and cool its immediate environment.

Obolensky observed an environmental temperature drop when operating the 200-kilovolt pulse discharge magnifying transmitter described in chapter 6. He noticed that when he switched on his device, the temperature immediately dropped in the surrounding room. He attributed this to the ability of the ionized medium surrounding his dome electrode to phase-conjugate shock fronts reflected back from the environment, creating a soliton wave pattern that entrains environmental noise fluctuations. Like the dome of Tesla's magnifying transmitter, Obolensky's scaled-down replica creates a luminous aura that is ideal for phase conjugation.

Unlike Obolensky's limit cycle faser experiment, the energy entrainment rate of his magnifying transmitter was sufficiently low as to pose no danger of explosion. Oscillograms showed that the accumulated energy produced a 50-kilovolt negative bias on the dome electrode, which otherwise should have maintained a zero voltage. To control the energy buildup, he uses a series of high-ohm resistors immersed in an oil cooling bath to continually drain off power from his antenna dome to ground. He says that in so doing, he bleeds off excess power that his transmitter is cohering from the environment, a blatant example of entropy reversal. If Tesla's technology could be used on a large scale for power generation, the threat of global warming would indeed be a thing of the past.

It is possible to conceive that the Project Skyvault vehicle was similarly phase-conjugating and entraining environmental noise energy into its soliton pattern. If so, its Gunn diode may have initially been operated at full power to seed the microwave beam and get the soliton field established. Once deployed, the soliton beam would have drawn upon entrained energy as its supplementary power source.

Other researchers experimenting with nonlinear resonators also have reported observing environmental cooling effects. In the late 1980s, Russian physicists Vladimir Roshchin and Sergei Godin were testing a version of the Searl effect generator that they refer to as the magnetic energy converter (MEC; see chapter 10). They reported observing a seven-degree Centigrade drop in room air temperature when the MEC was in operation, with the temperature drop being confined to a series of concentric, shell-like cylinders surrounding the MEC's spinning rotor and spaced from one another at intervals equal to the rotor radius. This suggests that the MEC was setting up a radial stationary wave pattern, that is, a soliton. Like Tesla's dome electrode, their disc developed a luminous aura when operating, providing an ideal environment to phase-conjugate incoming waves reflected from the environment. The disc was likely entraining energy from the environment, because above a certain critical rotational velocity, the rotor was observed to self-accelerate and had to be forcefully restrained with a braking system.

The temperature drop in the environment was probably a consequence of this energy entrainment.

One day I received a telephone call from a physicist named Greg who wanted to discuss subquantum kinetics, but as the conversation turned to electrogravitics, I quickly learned that he had considerable inside knowledge about UFO propulsion technology. He told me his interest in this subject began as a young boy, since his father had served as a consultant on secret military projects that were attempting to reverse-engineer UFOs. Greg agreed that many of the antigravity vehicles being developed use microwaves to generate their propulsive force through interaction with certain kinds of nonlinear materials. However, he underscored the problem that these kinds of antigravity drive systems are inherently unstable. Referring to phase-conjugate technology, he said:

> I know why some of this stuff is dangerous and I agree with it being kept secret. Because, while achieving a desirable effect of free body levitation is relatively easy to do, . . . there is an energetic mode in addition to the force mode and the energetic mode has to be controlled with some finesse. It is far easier for the setup that they would create to blow up in their face and wipe them out, and perhaps their neighbors, before they would figure out that such a thing is a potential problem. Anything that has an exponential rise with a few microsecond time constant is not something to take trivially.[28]

Greg said someone would need a very sophisticated knowledge of mathematics to be able to design such a system so that it could operate safely. The reason is that linear mathematics, the kind most physicists use when they solve explicit function equations on the blackboard, does not adequately represent the behavior of the nonlinear interactions that characterize how individual parts of such a system mutually interact with one another and how they are affected by the system as a whole. He said:

> You have to be into nonlinear partial differential equations, and you have to be good with your numerical analysis. You can't go out and

> use anybody's canned algorithm. You have to get all the auxiliary functions, analog solutions; anything that remotely smells of a linearization scheme to approximate what the nonlinear solution would be is likely to overlook the runaway solution, the one that's going to end up getting you. You can read about this in IEEE. They've come across this sort of thing in their microwave simulation studies before . . .
>
> When you're doing high-frequency stuff . . . you will find that standard second-order linear differential equations are incapable of modeling the behavior. You will readily see that there are terms that you are neglecting of how the whole system is interacting with itself. It's wrong to think about it as "field" being separate from "material." You have to think of it as an implicit function system . . . Suppose you say that *Z* is a function of *X* and *Y* and *Z*, then you have to know what the *Z* function is before you can say what the answer to it is, that's an implicit system . . . For any of these nonlinear systems, especially the interesting ones, you end up with an implicit function system. So if you are making an approximation, guessing the behavior of the function in a nonrigorous way, and if you violate any of the convergence criteria, then what you'll end up with is a spurious solution. You have to go into the differential topology of the system. Chaos mathematics and stuff like that come in there.[29]

The phase-conjugation demonstration that Ray, the black-project scientist, had witnessed convinced him of the need to keep the details of this technology secret. In his 1992 phone conversation with me, he said, "When I saw the demonstration, it proved radically to me that this stuff has got to be kept under wraps. I agree with the secrecy."[30]

I said I had read about the weapons applications of phase-conjugate technology and had wondered, if this is true, are we really ready for this sociologically?

Ray responded, saying, "We're not. We are not. Let me tell you why. The engineering applications of this stuff are extremely simple, very fundamental, and there is no way to control it. What it amounts to is giving out the recipe to make an atomic bomb by going to the local drugstore. We don't want to broadcast this kind of stuff. At this point in time, its not good to do that."[31]

I felt that Ray may have been exaggerating a bit. The explosion that blew up Obolensky's limit cycle faser certainly could not have been more powerful than that produced by a cherry bomb or M-80 pyrotechnic. It appeared that this was more a concern for the personal safety of the experimenter than it was an issue of a destructive bomb that could potentially be used by a terrorist. Certainly it is nowhere near the hazardous potential of nuclear fission, which now is in common use worldwide. I then commented that, looking at the other side of the coin, there are many problems this technology could help to solve, such as providing an alternative to fossil fuels that could eliminate air pollution and ultimately do away with the global warming greenhouse effect.

Ray responded that there were economic considerations for introducing such a major shift in energy technology. He said, "But the problem exists also that we cannot switch from the way things are to the way things should be instantly, because one interferes with the other completely. You have to have a slow evolution with this."[32]

When I commented that this slow evolution did not seem to be happening since the technology was encapsulated within the black-R&D world, Ray said, "That's because there are political considerations at the moment. You are going to find a little bit more of this exposure beginning, of course, with some of the articles like the one in *Aviation Week & Space Technology* and other articles you're going to see. By the year 1995, you're going to hear a lot more about it, according to the grand plan, according to what I can tell. So it's coming out slowly but surely."[33]

However, 1995 has long passed and the existence of field propulsion technology is still being kept quiet.

9

UNCONVENTIONAL FLYING OBJECTS

9.1 SIGHTINGS

Information gathered from a variety of sightings suggests that many UFO disc craft support and propel themselves by means of phase-conjugate microwave beams similar to those used in Project Skyvault. In his book *Unconventional Flying Objects,* Paul Hill reviews a number of sightings of craft that propelled themselves by means of downward-directed force field beams. One example is a case that occurred in Norway in 1970 in which a 10-meter-diameter disc was hovering above a man standing next to his car.[1] The craft was steel blue and shimmered yellow all around its circumference. Suddenly, it began to leave, and as it did, an invisible force knocked the man to the ground and imploded and pulverized his car windshield. The man did not feel any pain from the impact of the force field, which suggests that it acted uniformly on every cell in his body.

In a similar fashion, the phase-conjugated microwave beam projected from a Project Skyvault craft would have exerted a repelling force on the ground and on ground-based objects or people as it supported the craft. Since the microwave beam would have been targeted over a large region of the ground and would have penetrated some distance into the objects it touched, its force would have been distributed diffusely, as was apparently the case in the Norwegian encounter.

Hill mentions several other sightings. The force field from an overhead UFO in one example gave a soft push to a moving vehicle; in another, rocked a vehicle from side to side; and in yet another, actually flipped over a stopped truck.[2] In another encounter, which happened in 1959 in the Greek villages of Digeliotica and Agio Apostolou, the field from a low-flying disc repelled several ceramic roof tiles off the roof of one house as the craft passed overhead. The village priest, Pappa Costas, who was inside the dwelling at the time, reported that the whole house seemed to shake, making him think there was an earthquake, but it could not have been an earthquake since other houses had not experienced a similar shaking. All of these force field effects would be expected if the UFO was projecting a microwave beam capable of exerting a repelling force on solid objects.

Downward forces have also been observed on underlying vegetation.[3] One bullet-shaped UFO, approximately 45 feet in diameter, was sighted in Maryland in 1958. As it moved at about thirty miles per hour at an altitude of 300 feet, it emitted a steady hum and its skin illuminated the surrounding terrain with a green glow. Tree branches lying along its flight path were bent down and in some cases broken. In another sighting, which occurred in 1974, four UFO discs were spotted hovering only a foot off the ground in a field of rape plants. Approaching to within 15 feet of one rotating craft, a man named Edwin Fuhr noticed that the grass below was being swirled down. The four craft departed vertically about fifteen minutes later, after which he noticed that the grass below where each had hovered was flattened in a clockwise swirl pattern, forming a ring with the grass in the center being left standing upright.

Generally, UFOs are observed to sit level when they hover and to tilt when they perform all other maneuvers. For example, they tilt forward to move forward, tilt backward to stop, bank to the left to turn left, and so on. All of these tilting maneuvers are the kind that would be performed by a craft driven by a matter-repelling microwave soliton beam.

Another common characteristic of UFOs is their penetrating humming, buzzing, or whining sound. In his book, Hill describes one case in which a man reported a UFO casting a greenish light into his cabin as a throbbing hum shook its walls.[4] In another case, the observers "felt" a high-pitched intense sound as a 5-meter-diameter UFO took off. In yet another encounter, a UFO hovered 1.5 meters above the surface of a mountain lake and was seen to excite the water below to dance in thousands of sharp-pointed waves. Hill concludes that the propulsive fields that UFOs project downward are oscillatory and that the energy they transport to the ground and objects below excites oscillations at the same frequency and induces sound to radiate from the objects themselves. A craft levitated by a phase-conjugated microwave soliton beam having a beat frequency φ in the audio range would produce precisely these effects.

Also, UFOs have been observed to extend luminescent beams to the ground. Hill reviews one sighting that was made in Bahia, Brazil, in 1958 in which a 70-foot-diameter UFO disc was observed to emit a silver-blue glow.[5] As it hovered 90 feet above the ground, its luminosity was seen to extend like a curtain all the way to the ground, creating an illuminated area on the ground that was about twice the diameter of the UFO. After climbing to an altitude of about 600 feet, it made a tight circle in the sky, and as it banked for this turn, its luminous focus on the ground traced out a much larger circle. Hill concludes that the luminosity surrounding UFOs and coming from their beams must be caused by their field energy ionizing the air and producing a cool, luminous plasma. He reasons that the plasma must be cool because in one case a UFO that looked like a ball of fire had passed very close to foliage without burning it.

Although Hill suggests that X-rays might be producing the ionization, the same effect could also be produced by an intense microwave beam. In particular, a phase-conjugated soliton beam would store an enormous amount of energy and build up very high electric potentials capable of ionizing the air and exciting these ions to become luminescent, much like the gas molecules inside a fluorescent lamp. Recall that Tom's boss had said that the Project Skyvault vehicle supported itself on a microwave beam that gave off a greenish blue glow.

9.2 ■ THE CASH-LANDRUM ENCOUNTER

Evidence that the Air Force was test-flying an antigravity craft surfaced on the night of December 29, 1980. Betty Cash, age fifty-one, her friend Vickie Landrum, age fifty-seven, and Vickie's seven-year-old grandson Colby had been driving through the Pinewoods area near the Houston, Texas, suburb of Huffman, located about twenty miles north of Johnson Space Center.[6,7] About 9 p.m., they spotted a fiery object high in the sky that quickly descended to treetop level. Eventually, it came to hover above the road. They drove to within 130 feet of it and got out of their car for several minutes to watch it. The craft was hovering about 70 feet off the ground. It was diamond-shaped, tapering to rounded points at the top and bottom, and was about the size of a city water tower (about 20 feet in diameter; figure 9.1). Every so often, a reddish orange cone of flames would roar out of its bottom, as if from a giant blowtorch or rocket. At such times, the craft would loft into the air about 25 feet, only to gradually descend once again. The flames brightly lit the surrounding pine woods and bathed them in an intense heat, turning the nearby pine branches brown and badly damaging the road's blacktop surface.

Frightened by what they saw, Landrum and her grandson got back in the car, and were joined some time later by Cash. The car door became so hot from the radiation that Cash could not touch it with her bare hands, but instead used her coat to grab the handle. After about ten minutes, the object rose up and once again hovered over the trees. At

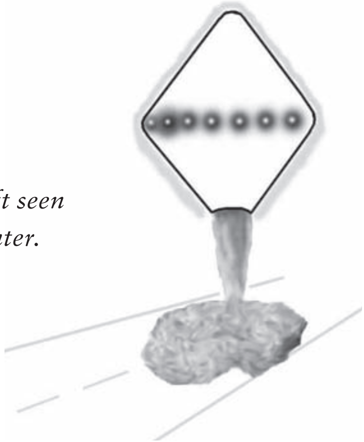

Figure 9.1. A sketch of the craft seen in the 1980 Pinewoods encounter.

that point, the three witnesses noticed that the vehicle was approached by almost two dozen twin-rotor military helicopters, later identified as CH-47 Chinooks and some of the Bell-Huey type. They appeared to be escorting the craft. The three concluded that they had witnessed a test flight of some kind of advanced antigravity military aircraft. One year later, Cash met a Chinook helicopter pilot who admitted to her in front of a witness that on the night of the encounter he had been called to fly to the area to check on a UFO that was in trouble near Huffman.

The description Cash and Landrum gave suggests they had observed a test flight of a prototype microwave vehicle similar in some respects to the Project Skyvault craft. The highly incandescent reddish orange "flames" were likely the exhaust from a flame-jet high-voltage generator adjusted for incomplete combustion. As mentioned in chapter 2, Brown had proposed a 10-foot-diameter saucer with a downward-pointing flame-jet generator as one version of the vehicle he had planned to research as part of Project Winterhaven. The Winterhaven design may have looked something like the sketch shown in figure 2.11, chapter 2.

The high voltage from this flame-jet generator may have been used to energize high-power Gunn diode oscillators to generate a downward-directed microwave beam of a kind similar to that used in the Project Skyvault saucer. After their encounter, Cash, Landrum, and Colby experienced radiation burn symptoms such as hair loss and inflamed eyes, the sort produced by exposure to an intense beam of microwave radiation. All of them became extremely sick within the next few hours. Of the three, Cash had spent the longest time out of the car (about ten minutes) and, not surprisingly, she had the worst symptoms. Her head and neck were blistered, and soon her eyes swelled shut, fluid seeped from welts on her head and scalp, and she suffered from severe headaches, nausea, vomiting , diarrhea, and body pains. After a couple of days being cared for at Landrum's home, Cash checked into a hospital, where she was treated as a burn victim, remaining for fifteen days. She began losing large patches of skin from her face, her hair began to fall out, and her eyes swelled so badly that she could not see for about a week. After a month in the hospital, she still showed no improvement. Then she developed breast cancer and had to have a mastectomy. She later died at the young age of sixty-nine. Landrum was also losing her hair and her scalp was numb and painful. Colby had problems with his eyes. All three of the victims were treated for radiation poisoning, and doctors listed their condition as life threatening.

Cash and Landrum sued the U.S. government for $20 million in damages, but after dragging on for many years, their case was finally dismissed on the grounds that no such object was owned, operated, or in the inventory of the Air Force, the Army, the Navy, or NASA. The ABC television show *Nightline* in 1987 broadcast a recorded statement made by Richard Doty, a special agent with the U.S. Air Force Office of Special Investigations who then named himself "Falcon." Doty claimed that the object Cash and Landrum saw was a captured alien UFO that was being test-flown and had temporarily experienced some flight problems. Quite likely, Doty was dispensing misinformation. A more plausible explanation is that Cash and Landrum encountered a prototype unmanned electrogravitic craft built for the military by an aerospace corporation. Possibly the craft was remotely controlled, and the helicopters were there to observe it and provide military security should the need arise. Had information about Project Skyvault been made public, along with the existence of black projects in microwave phase-conjugate propulsion, perhaps Cash and Landrum would have won their suit.

The severe effects that Cash, Lundrum, and Colby sustained in their encounter suggest they were exposed to a very intense microwave beam. This could have occurred if the vehicle's microwave propulsion beam was confined to a narrow angle and had mistakenly "locked on" to the observers and their car. They would have then been exposed to its full intensity. An incident similar to the Cash-Landrum encounter occurred in the late 1980s in the vicinity of Fort Hood, which lies about sixty miles north of Austin, Texas. A woman and her daughters, who had been observing a glowing, hovering object, became badly burned and suffered serious health effects. The victims subsequently sued the military for damages.

If the propulsion beam from these craft was being properly controlled to fan out to a wide enough area on the ground so that its radiation level per unit area was at a safe level, then a brief exposure would not be hazardous. Even so, a pilot should not fly a beam propulsion vehicle in a populated area so that accidents of this nature are avoided. If anything, these casualties of microwave exposure should be a warning to hobbyists that they are taking a serious health risk when they experiment with high-intensity microwave beams in the kilowatt range.

9.3 ▪ TRIANGULAR CRAFT

During the late 1980s, there were numerous sightings of hovering vehicles that resembled the B-2 bomber. For example, in 1987, a year prior to the B-2's unveiling, hundreds of people living in Wythe County, Virginia, claimed that on several occasions they had seen a triangular-shaped black craft hovering in the night sky, mostly between the hours of eight and ten. Many who had seen the craft concluded that there was military involvement. One resident said that low-flying jets flew until 7 p.m. and then the "saucers" took over. Another witness had observed these objects flying a certain pattern at night and said that at the first crack of dawn, helicopters would fly the same pattern. Observers said the strange flat craft made no noise and in some cases hovered motionless in the air.

Danny Gordon, news director of radio station WYVE in Wytheville, Virginia, was one witness to the phenomenon. Regarding the similarity to the B-2 bomber, he stated, "Unequivocally, undoubtedly it was the same aircraft. I saw it, a lady in Fort Chiswell saw it . . . the same aircraft, flat-wing V-shape. This is not all the UFOs we've seen here, but this is one type, and I believe it's connected."[8]

Gordon said that several nights earlier he had paced a similar aircraft while driving his car at a speed of twenty-five miles per hour. He said he did not know how anything that big could travel at such a slow speed and not fall out of the sky. He concluded that the stealth bomber was being tested in their area by the Air Force and that other aircraft also observed might be part of the experiment. While Air Force authorities have acknowledged that the B-2 is a relatively slow-moving aircraft, such sightings lead us to believe that it also has the ability to hover totally motionless. If so, then this may have been accomplished along the lines suggested in chapter 5, that is, by applying high-voltage

AC across ceramic dielectrics oriented vertically at spaced intervals within its wing. The propulsion method would have been similar to that used in Brown's vertical-lift electrokinetic apparatus, and as concluded earlier, this type of AC field propulsion would have generated soliton beams beneath the craft.

These sightings might not all be B-2 craft. U.S. Air Force officials acknowledge that diamond- and triangular-shaped vehicles are "the trend now."[9] According to *Aviation Week,* one of these high-altitude military craft has earned the name Pulser because it is seen as a single bright light that sometimes pulses. The craft emits no engine noise or sonic boom, yet it has been seen crossing the night sky at extremely high velocities, exceeding the speed of conventional aircraft. Speaking about aircraft under development in U.S. black projects, the magazine reported in 1990:

> In addition, there is substantial evidence that another family of craft exists that relies on exotic propulsion and aerodynamic schemes not fully understood at this time . . . Over the past 13 months, large, triangular wing-shaped aircraft characterized by a relatively quiet propulsion system have been the object of at least 11 sightings near Edwards Air Force Base, Calif., and one near Fresno, Calif. These are supported by additional reports of similar vehicles seen and heard around remote central Nevada communities near government ranges operated by the Energy Dept. and the Air Force.
>
> Possibly prototypes or concept demonstrators of the Air Force B-2 or Navy A-12, the fairly flat, triangular-shaped vehicles have a rounded nose, rounded wingtips and probably no vertical tail surfaces. The flying wings' trailing edges may be slightly curved, but definitely are not sawtooth-shaped like those of the Air Force's B-2 bomber, according to reports received so far. One observer in Nevada described the shape as "like a manta ray."[10]

Very large aircraft whose shape fits this general description have been seen in the Hudson Valley region, thirty to sixty miles northeast of New York City.[11] Beginning in the spring of 1983 and continuing for a period of several years, tens of thousands of people on various occasions saw an immense craft described as looking like a boomerang-shaped flying wing with a rounded prow and measuring about 300 feet from wingtip to wingtip. It was usually seen flying at night with lights along its leading wing edge and at various locations beneath its body. These would periodically turn off or sometimes change in color. The craft was often seen hovering noiselessly or moving very slowly, about twenty to forty miles per hour, but occasionally it would accelerate to enormous speeds, disappearing to a point on the horizon in the blink of an eye. Either this was an exotic craft that the United States was secretly developing or one must presume it was an alien vessel. Clearly, to be able to hover noiselessly and undergo such enormous accelerations, the craft does not use a conventional means of propulsion.

Triangular-shaped craft have been sited hovering over various parts of Belgium on numerous occasions since 1989, with witnesses also numbering into the tens of thousands. Eyewitness accounts and photographs suggest the shape shown in figure 9.2. On top, the craft have a dome fitted with several windows. Viewed from beneath, they have bright white circular regions at each corner and a single red light near their center. Could these corner "lights" be luminous emissions from microwave horns that are part of a microwave phase-conjugation resonator system projecting down beams that support and propel the craft?

The craft were observed to hover, sometimes to move slowly horizontally, and at other times to accelerate vertically or horizontally to great velocities. On one occasion, after one of the craft was detected by radar, the Belgian government scrambled two F-16 fighters, but they were unable to apprehend it. The craft exhibited erratic changes

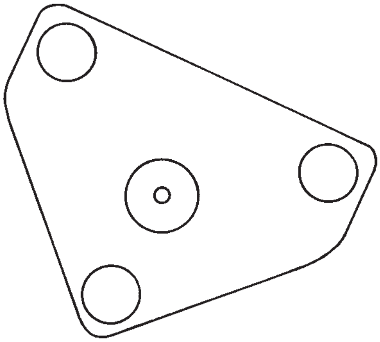

Figure 9.2. Drawing of a spacecraft seen over Belgium as viewed from below.

in direction and very rapid linear accelerations. In one case, a craft changed its altitude by 9,500 feet in just five seconds, an acceleration of more than 24 g. This would have been fatal to any pilot if it had been a vehicle operating on the conventional jet-thrust principle. Although the spacecraft attained a velocity of nearly twice the speed of sound, no sonic boom was heard. Quite possibly, this was a military test of a beam propulsion vehicle of the kind developed in Project Skyvault.

9.4 ▪ CRASH RECOVERY OPERATIONS

The early research efforts leading to Project Skyvault began not long after July 1947, when an extraterrestrial spacecraft is reputed to have crashed near Roswell, New Mexico. Shortly after the crash, the site was secured by a top-secret military task force, and the scattered wreckage, including the vehicle's occupants, was subsequently removed to U.S. military laboratories for analysis. Similar operations were conducted in subsequent years to recover other downed alien vehicles. Although the military has made a concerted effort to keep knowledge of these incidents from the public, much information has since come to light as a result of research by dedicated investigators. This has been summarized in books such as *Behind the Flying Saucers, The Roswell Incident, UFO Crash at Aztec, Above Top Secret, Alien Contact,* and *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell.*[12–17] These recovery operations are said to have resulted in an accelerated program to develop antigravity propulsion technology under projects code-named Y and Redlight. Since Project Skyvault and other advanced propulsion technology development programs were initiated around this time, it should be helpful to review something about these UFO crashes.

The first incident is believed to have taken place on the night of July 4, 1947, when a wedge-shaped spacecraft measuring about 15 by 25 feet crashed about thirty-five miles north of Roswell, New Mexico. Some say that two crashes actually took place at the same time but separated by some hundreds of miles. A few months later, in October, a 36-foot-diameter, dome-shaped craft is said to have crashed in Paradise Valley, Arizona. Then in March 1948, a 100-foot-diameter disc reportedly crashed in Aztec, New Mexico, and in July of that same year, a

90-foot-diameter disc is said to have come down near the Sabinas River in Mexico, thirty miles southwest of Laredo, Texas. In *UFO Crash at Aztec,* UFO researchers William S. Steinman and Wendelle C. Stevens estimate that as many as sixteen UFO craft may have crashed at various locations around the world between 1947 and 1986.[18]

Although the U.S. government has officially maintained that UFOs do not exist, a secret memo dated September 23, 1947, indicates that the military was taking this matter very seriously. It was written by General Nathan Twining, commander of the Army Air Force's Air Materiel Command at Wright Field, to the Air Technical Intelligence Command in Dayton, Ohio. Excerpts from this memo, printed in *Aviation Week & Space Technology,* read as follows:

> 1. As requested by AC/AS-2 there is presented below the considered opinion of this Command concerning the so-called "Flying Discs" . . .
> 2. It is the opinion that:
>   a. The phenomenon reported is something real and not visionary or fictitious.
>   b. There are objects probably approximately the shape of a disc, of such appreciable size as to appear to be as large as man-made aircraft.
>   c. There is a possibility that some of the incidents may be caused by natural phenomenon, such as meteors.
>   d. The reported operating characteristics such as extreme rates of climb, maneuverability (particularly in roll), and action which must be considered evasive when sighted or contacted by friendly aircraft and radar, lend belief to the possibility that some of the objects are controlled either manually, automatically or remotely.[19]

Also, a twenty-six-page classified report issued in 1948 by the Air Technical Intelligence Command stated:

> It must be accepted that some type of flying objects have been observed, although their identification and origin are not discernible. In the interests of national defense it would be unwise to overlook the possibility that some of these objects may be of foreign origin . . . if it is firmly

> indicated that there is no domestic explanation, the objects are a threat and warrant more active efforts of identification and interception.[20]

Additional confirmation about the saucer crashes and the government's secret R&D involvement in the matter has come from a conversation that Wilbert B. Smith had in September 1950 with electrical engineer Dr. Robert Sarbacher, who was then serving as a consultant to the Research and Development Board, headed by Dr. Vannevar Bush. Smith, who was a senior radio engineer with the Canadian Department of Transportation, had read the account in Scully's book about the Aztec, New Mexico, saucer crash and secret government retrieval operation and wanted to verify if there was any truth to it, so he contacted Sarbacher through the Canadian embassy in Washington. According to Smith's handwritten notes, their conversation went as follows:

> Smith: . . . I have read Scully's book on the saucers and would like to know how much of it is true.
> Sarbacher: The facts reported in the book are substantially correct.
> Smith: Then the saucers do exist?
> Sarbacher: Yes: they exist.
> Smith: Do they operate as Scully suggests on magnetic principles?
> Sarbacher: We have not been able to duplicate their performance.
> Smith: Do they come from some other planet?
> Sarbacher: All we know is, we didn't make them, and it's pretty certain they didn't originate on earth.
> Smith: I understand the whole subject is classified.
> Sarbacher: Yes, it is classified two points higher even than the H-bomb. In fact, it is the most highly classified subject in the US government at the present time.
> Smith: May I ask the reason for the classification?
> Sarbacher: You may ask, but I can't tell you.[21]

Note that Sarbacher's comment about the classification level was made two years before the H-bomb had been detonated. On November 21, 1950, Smith sent an intra-departmental memo to the Controller of Telecommunications of the Canadian Department of Transportation that summarized some of what he had learned from Sarbacher. The memo, which is reproduced in appendix F, was marked TOP SECRET but was downgraded to "confidential" in September 15, 1969. It stated:

> a. The matter is the most highly classified subject in the United States government, rating two points higher than the H-bomb.
> b. Flying saucers exist.
> c. Their modus operandi is unknown but a concentrated effort is being made by a small group headed by Doctor Vannevar Bush.
> d. The entire matter is considered by the United States authorities to be of tremendous significance.[22]

In a response to inquiries made in 1983 by UFO researcher William Steinman, Sarbacher wrote a letter confirming that the U.S. government had recovered crashed flying saucers, along with the bodies of their occupants.[23]

The top-secret administrative group that Sarbacher said was headed by Bush was later discovered to have the code name MJ-12, or Majestic 12. This group of twelve individuals is said to have been formed September 24, 1947, under the authority of President Harry S Truman for the purpose of investigating UFOs, reporting the findings to the president, forming policies on the basis of those findings, and implementing policies that had received presidential approval. A photocopy of the memorandum Truman wrote to authorize its formation is displayed in appendix F.

Programs to analyze the crashed saucers and to attempt to duplicate their technology came under the direction of the Research and Development Board, which, in turn, reported directly to MJ-12. The Research and Development Board, which Sarbacher was consulting for in 1950, was organized by Bush in 1947 at the time that MJ-12 was formed. Under Bush's direction, this board headed up the R&D organizations of three branches of the military: Army Research and Development, Air Force Research and Development, and the Office of Naval Research. Brown's electrogravitics technology, which was evaluated by the Office of Naval Research in 1952, was probably closely scrutinized by this overseeing organization. Bush had previously headed the Office of Scientific Research and Development, which administered the Manhattan Project and other top-secret wartime efforts, such as the development of radar and the proximity fuse.

On November 18, 1952, two weeks after his election, President-elect Dwight D. Eisenhower is said to have been briefed on MJ-12 and the crashed saucer retrieval operations. In 1984, television producer Jaime Shandera and UFOlogist William Moore obtained a document through intelligence contacts that they believed to be the top-secret "eyes only" document used in that briefing. Although some doubt whether the document is in fact genuine,[24–26] a *Washington Post* article does confirm that President-elect Eisenhower had received a military briefing on November 18, 1952, the same date stated on the MJ-12 briefing.[27] Moreover, the existence of a subsequent briefing with MJ-12 is corroborated by a memo that Moore and UFO researcher and physicist Dr. Stanton Friedman obtained from the National Archives through a Freedom of Information Act request. The memo, dated July 14, 1954, was written by Robert Cutler, special assistant to President Eisenhower, and sent to General Nathan Twining, one of the individuals claimed to belong to MJ-12. The memo, which concerned the NSC/MJ-12 Special Studies Project, states, "The President has decided that the MJ-12/SSP briefing should take place during the already scheduled White House meeting of July 16 rather than following it as previously intended."[28] The NSC designation refers to the presidential office's National Security Council, which was also created in 1947. MJ-12 is said to operate under the NSC as an unacknowledged subcommittee called the Special Studies Group, with a current membership of thirty-three.

9.5 ▪ ART'S PARTS REVERSE ENGINEERED

The *Coast to Coast* radio talk show, and in particular Art Bell, who served as its host for many years, is well known to many. The show's favorite topics have been UFOs and alien encounters. In April 1996, one of the show's listeners, a man who asked to remain anonymous, mailed to Bell a number of metallic artifacts that he said had been retrieved from the exterior of an alien spacecraft that crashed in 1947 between White Sands and Socorro, New Mexico.[29] He said that his grandfather had gathered the materials while he was a member of the military security team connected with the retrieval cleanup operation and had given them to him before he died in 1974.

The parts, which have come to be known as Art's Parts, were extensively discussed on *Coast to Coast* and pictures of them for some time had been posted on Bell's webpage. One of the two shipments of the alleged alien artifacts that were sent consisted of two irregularly shaped pieces of metal measuring approximately 6 by 3 centimeters and 5 by 2 centimeters, respectively, both having a thickness of 3 to 4 millimeters. These were alleged to have been taken from the exterior underside of the craft and were believed to have formed a shell-like shield of sorts.

In the following months, the fragments were analyzed using a scanning electron microscope outfitted for energy-dispersive spectroscopy.[30] The results for the two hull fragments were quite interesting. Analysis showed that they consisted of twenty-five well-defined layers alternating between a thick layer of magnesium-zinc (97 to 97.5 percent magnesium and 2 to 3 percent zinc) and a thin layer of pure bismuth. The metals were of exceptional purity. The magnesium-zinc layers ranged in thickness from 100 to 200 microns (0.1 to 0.2 mm), and the bismuth layers ranged in thickness from 1 to 4 microns. When examined in cross-section, it was apparent that the layer interfaces were not even but rather contained microscopic undulations.

Some researchers found it unusual that the material would jump around when exposed to the high-voltage field of a Van de Graaff generator. However, American research technologist Nicholas Reiter, who conducted a similar test, says there is nothing unusual about this since any metal fragment would similarly dance around in a 200-kilovolt AC field.[31] To check for any electrogravitic force effects, he exposed the artifacts to DC voltage potentials in the range of 15 to 50 kilovolts, but observed no weight change as measured with a laboratory digital milligram balance. Thus, contrary to widely publicized claims, there is no evidence to date that the fragments might lose weight when subjected to high voltage potentials.

Linda Moulton Howe, an American investigative journalist and documentary producer who was investigating the nature of the fragments, interviewed a large number of metallurgic experts from various companies and scientific institutes, including aerospace and defense companies. None had heard of such a material, and they didn't understand its purpose. Howe also wrote letters to various agencies like the National Science Foundation to get information about the material. A foundation scientist working in the Division of Materials Research said that he was unaware of any research into such a material. A computer search of the foundation's database on materials consisting of bismuth, magnesium, and zinc turned up nothing.

However, insights into the nature of this bismuth-layered material may be gained by considering recent investigations into negative index of refraction materials. In 2005, Professors Victor Podolskiy and Evgenii Narimanov and graduate student Leonid Alekseyev, working at Oregon State University and Princeton University, respectively, announced their discovery that a thin layer of monocrystalline bismuth exhibited a negative index of refraction at microwave frequencies, making it the only known, naturally occurring substance to exhibit such a property.[32–34] They sandwiched a 4.5-micron-thick layer of monocrystalline bismuth between two metal plates, as shown in figure 9.3. In this arrangement, the semimetallic bismuth acts as a dielectric and the flanking metal layers act as waveguide walls. When a 5,000-gigahertz microwave beam (60-micron wavelength) was directed into the bismuth layer, the beam was found to refract negatively. That is, they found that over a narrow band of wavelengths, ranging from about 53 to 63 microns, the bismuth exhibited a negative index of refraction.

Bismuth achieves negative refraction in a manner very different from that of the metamaterials described in chapter 7. Recall that such materials exhibited negative refraction because they had magnetic and

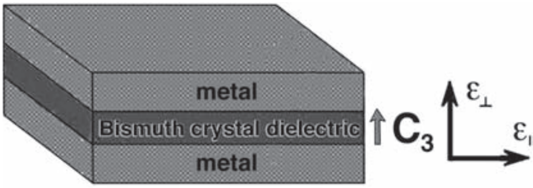

Figure 9.3. Waveguide made of monocrystalline bismuth sandwiched between two metal layers and used to demonstrate negative refraction of a 5,000-gigahertz microwave beam.

electric resonances near the same frequency, creating a frequency range over which their permittivity, ε, and permeability, μ, would simultaneously attain negative values. With ε and μ simultaneously negative, the refractive index would also be simultaneously negative. However, bismuth is nonmagnetic and, hence, has no magnetic resonances. However, theory shows that a dielectric can exhibit a negative refraction index if the material has a permittivity anisotropy, that is, different values of permittivity for different wave propagation directions relative to the dielectric crystal axis, and if permittivity in one of these directions becomes negative over a specific frequency range while the permittivity in the other directions remains positive. Bismuth has such a property (see text box).

Why Bismuth Exhibits a Negative Index of Refraction

Although its population of free electrons is much smaller than that of most metals, bismuth has what is termed an *electron mass anisotropy,* in which the effective mass of its free electrons is lower parallel to its trigonal axis as opposed to perpendicular to its axis. Since these free electrons behave as a plasma, which has a specific resonant frequency, this anisotropy causes the plasma frequency to be lower in the direction parallel to the bismuth layer, as compared with the plasma frequency for oscillations perpendicular to the plane of this layer (parallel to the trigonal axis; i.e., $f_{||} < f_{perp}$). Since the dielectric constant for bismuth is determined both by the value of its electron plasma frequency and the frequency of the exciting beam, this differing plasma frequency causes the permittivity parallel to the bismuth layer ($\varepsilon_{||}$) to be more negative than the permittivity perpendicular to the bismuth layer (ε_{perp}). Consequently, when the bismuth is excited at frequencies between these two plasma frequencies, the permittivity in the direction parallel to the layer will be negative when the permittivity perpendicular to the layer is still positive (i.e., $\varepsilon_{||} < 0$, $\varepsilon_{perp} > 0$), which provides the necessary condition for the index of refraction to be negative (see figure 9.4).

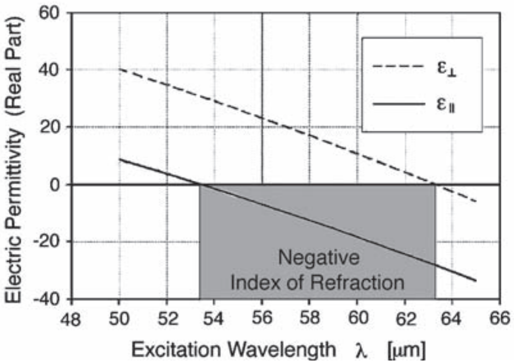

Figure 9.4. Electric permittivity (real part) plotted as a function of excitation wavelength. The solid line charts the component parallel to the bismuth layer and the dashed line charts the component perpendicular to this layer. Negative index of refraction is exhibited in the range in which $\varepsilon_{//} < 0$ *and* $\varepsilon_{perp} > 0$.

Interestingly, the "hull fragments" among Art's Parts consisted of bismuth layers having a thickness range (1–4 microns) only slightly thinner than that tested by the Oregon State–Princeton team. One might then guess that the magnesium-zinc layers in the Art's Parts fragments had the function of acting as metal waveguide walls around the bismuth layers. This would ensure that microwaves propagating within the bismuth layers would be confined to those layers. Magnesium is a relatively good electric conductor, so it would serve as a good metal to use for a waveguide wall. It also has the advantage that it is lighter and stronger than aluminum. Negative refraction should characterize bismuth layers that are even as thin as 1 micron. Although the layer thickness is a factor in determining the exact value of the permittivity, it does not affect the values of the electron plasma frequencies along the two bismuth crystal axes. Thus, the bismuth-layered samples in the Art's Parts collection would also be expected to exhibit negative refraction of a 5,000-gigahertz beam.

As mentioned in chapter 7, metamaterials having a negative index of refraction are also capable of developing a strong repulsive force when exposed to a microwave beam. The same may be true of bismuth films, so it is possible that the layered material would develop a thrust when excited with 5,000-gigahertz microwave radiation. This could be easily checked in a laboratory. An Art's Parts hull fragment could be mounted on a pendulum or on a torsion balance and exposed to a high-power terahertz beam. A 100-watt free-electron laser that has been tuned to a 5,000-gigahertz frequency might serve as an adequate beam source. If a thrust effect was found, it would be the first time that such an effect has been discovered, since to date no research group has considered looking for such a beam thrust effect in layered bismuth. A positive result could help validate the claim that the Art's Parts layered-metal fragments were part of a shield that once covered the underside of a spacecraft and may have been a lofting material that was part of the craft's exotic electrogravitic field propulsion system.*

One would expect a thrust response to occur in a direction perpendicular to the bismuth C_3 trigonal axis. In the case of the sample tested by the Oregon State–Princeton team, such a thrust would occur parallel to the layer plane. If the intention was instead to produce a force perpendicular to the layer plane, that is, perpendicular to the spacecraft hull, the C_3 trigonal axis would need to be oriented in the plane of the bismuth layer instead of perpendicular to its plane. It would be interesting to discover how the trigonal crystal axis is oriented in the Art's Parts hull artifacts.

9.6 ■ PROJECT REDLIGHT

In the years immediately following the first saucer recoveries, MJ-12 ran a super-secret investigation program that concentrated primarily on analysis of the saucers, with the hope of learning something about their power source, mode of propulsion, instrumentation, and weaponry. In parallel with this effort, autopsies were performed on the saucer's occupants to learn something about their physiology. Information obtained from reliable eyewitnesses indicates that the recovered discs and occupants have been stored and analyzed at a number of secret facilities that include Wright-Patterson Air Force Base, in Dayton, Ohio; Kirtland Air Force Base and the Sandia Laboratory complex in Albuquerque, New Mexico; and a highly restricted area on the Atomic Energy Commission (AEC) Reservation, in southern Nevada. Here again, we encounter the Wright-Patterson connection, although artifacts that were in storage there are believed to have been transferred to the Kirtland-Sandia complex when the Department of Special Studies at Wright Air Development Center was moved there in 1956.[35] Substantial information about a program to analyze and even test-fly some captured saucers is found in the "above top secret" Report No. 13 of Project Blue Book, Blue Book being a U.S. Air Force project established to document and analyze UFO sightings. Steinman and Stevens, who summarize this report in *UFO Crash at Aztec,* received this information from a witness who inadvertently reviewed the document in 1977 while working as an information analyst at a highly secure Royal Air Force/U.S. Air Force radio espionage facility in Chicsands, England.[36] The front cover of this 624-page bound document was dated 1953 with a 1963 date in parentheses, indicating that it was later updated with penciled annotations. A length of red tape indicating code-red security measures was stretched diagonally across its front from corner to corner, and the cover was stamped in red ink, TOP SECRET—NEED TO KNOW ONLY—CRYPTO CLEARANCE 14 REQUIRED. The top-secret compartmentalized clearance the report demanded was higher than that of the Blue Book management office staff, who were cleared only up to the secret level. This would explain why Project Blue Book itself has no record of Report No. 13, even though its inventory includes status reports numbered 12 and 14.

---

*In August 2006, I contacted members of the Oregon State–Princeton team to see if they knew of anyone who had observed a microwave beam repulsion phenomenon in layered bismuth. They said they did not know of anyone who had investigated this, but indicated interest in my suggestion that such an effect might be present. They requested I send anything I may have published on this. However, after I outlined to them how an experiment might be easily carried out and suggested mutual collaboration on the project, they mysteriously broke off contact. My subsequent e-mails to them went unanswered.

According to the Air Force analyst, Report No. 13 reviewed the U.S. government's official procedures concerning downed UFOs and UFO close encounters. It also summarized what the Air Force knew about crashed discs, their power systems, and their weaponry, and it included photographs of alien craft, crash debris, and the bodies of some of the craft's occupants. Also of interest, the report described a project called Redlight, whose purpose was to test the propulsion and weapons systems of retrieved saucers and to examine various pieces of hardware recovered from the crafts. This operation was carried out in the highly restricted one-hundred-square-mile UFO research facility located in

Nevada in the north-central part of the three-thousand-square-mile AEC Reservation. The facility was said to harbor at least three alien saucers. One was dismantled, and the other two were in good enough shape that they could be made flyable, although one of the two was said to have later exploded in flight with two U.S. pilots aboard.

Based on information given in Report No. 13 and from eyewitness accounts, the following is known about the highly secret Nevada facility.[37] Variously known as Area 51 or Dreamland, it is situated in the Groom Lake area northwest of Las Vegas. It is the most heavily secured area in the United States. It lies inside the guarded perimeter of the existing AEC nuclear-testing reservation and Air Force weapons practice range. This dry lake site is screened on all sides by a mountain range, and this is ringed with electronic detectors, including infrared, motion, and ammonia detectors, which are so-called people sniffers. The area itself is surrounded by three additional defense perimeters. Security teams in helicopters and planes are on twenty-four-hour alert to respond to any intrusion.

The site was originally a Navy air field installation that was being used as a nuclear weapons storage base. In 1951, the base was put on alert, and all personnel were evacuated except for the medical personnel, who were restricted to the hospital facility. The Navy then brought in a Seabee construction battalion and, over a six- to eight-month period, dismantled the base, built underground work facilities, and surmounted them with large aboveground hangars. At the end of 1951, after the work was completed, the Seabees moved out and the Project Redlight personnel moved in. Their ranks grew to eight hundred to one thousand personnel permanently on duty and all living on the site. A large but undetermined number of top scientists having very high security clearances were reported to come and go from this maximum security area. Some had been formerly associated with the Manhattan Project.

Nevada residents living in the vicinity of Area 51 have seen disc-shaped craft being tested there from the 1950s to the present. In their book, Steinman and Stevens described several cases in which hovering, disc-shaped aircraft were seen to be test-flown in the Area 51 vicinity.[38] One story concerns a Navaho Indian who was backpacking in a canyon that ran down into the AEC Reservation area (date unknown).

After having camped the previous night in the canyon, he had awoken and had just finished preparing his pack for the hike ahead when a helicopter approached. It was broadcasting warnings from a loudspeaker cautioning anybody in the canyon area to make his presence known so that he could be moved to safety and explaining that a military test was scheduled to be conducted that would be very dangerous. The helicopter returned fifteen minutes later broadcasting the same message. Feeling safe among the rocks, the Indian remained hidden and waited to see what would happen. About a half hour later, two helicopters came into view flying up the canyon about 500 feet apart. They escorted between them a dark gray, metallic, disc-shaped craft that had a raised dome at its center. Ten minutes after the three had passed, the two helicopters flew back the way they had come, but without the saucer. The saucer appeared some time later as it flew very fast and silently down the middle of the canyon, retracing its original path of entry.

Another story concerns an Air Force fighter pilot who was part of the Tactical Air Command Combat Squadron and had been taking part in a “red flag” war game exercise that was being conducted in an area adjacent to the AEC Reservation. The pilot accidentally flew his jet across a corner of the reservation and happened to pass just north of the Area 51 region. At that time, he saw below him to the south a 60-foot-diameter, circular, disc-shaped craft in flight. At that moment, he was hailed on the open emergency channel of his radio, told to abandon his mission, and ordered to fly directly to Nellis Air Force Base, where he was told to land. Once on the ground, he was taken into custody and escorted to a security office for interrogation. He was released two days later, only after pretending to be convinced that the disc-shaped object he had seen was merely a water tower.

Yet another story concerns a man who during the early 1960s performed top-secret radio work for the Air Force at Area 51. He reported seeing one unconventional aircraft that was being flight-tested there under Project Redlight. The craft was 20 to 30 feet in diameter and pewter colored. He didn’t see the craft in operation since at those times he was brought indoors for security reasons. However, he did note that, unlike conventional craft, it made no engine sound when it took off or landed.

Aircraft of nonconventional design such as the stealth bomber, stealth fighter, and Navy A-12 fighter have all been air-tested at Area 51. So, quite possibly, there is a close relation between Project Redlight and the development of such advanced aircraft. This area also may have served as the test site for the discs developed in Project Skyvault.

Another sighting of a very large, 200-foot-diameter craft was reported by Frank Batts of Santa Barbara, California. Writer George Balanus summarized Batts's story as follows.[39] On the evening of April 30, 1997, Batts and his friend Joe had set out on an expedition to Area 51 in the hope of viewing some of the unusual hypersonic vehicles often seen in that vicinity by UFO watchers. About 10:20 p.m., they had set off to find the landmark known as "the black mailbox," which is located along Highway 375 about twenty miles southwest of Rachel, Nevada. The area where most viewing enthusiasts camped out was about eight miles from there, away from the main highway, but Batts and Joe lost their way and did not find the black mailbox. Instead, they ended up at a spot on the north side of the Area 51 range, opposite from where UFO buffs normally congregated. This northern spot was known as the "back door" of the installation. It lay much closer, about seven miles from the edge of the Area 51 facility. Flight testing had been conducted in that area in the past, but locals reported that tests had supposedly ceased there for some time.

Batts and Joe had parked on the shoulder of the road and were facing out into the desert. After about an hour, they saw a blue ball appear above the mountainside, hover, and then dance about for about two minutes before disappearing below the ridge. This sounds very much like a plasma ball test that was sighted in 1993 in the Superstition Mountains twenty-five miles east of Phoenix.[40]

After the blue ball had vanished, they noted red, yellow, white, and blue lights still glowing out in the desert 175 to 200 yards from their location. Sometimes the red lights flashed and sometimes they stayed constant like the other lights. The two men thought they were observing a building at the base, but after about an hour and a half, what they thought was a building suddenly lifted slowly off the ground and hovered. At that point, they realized that what they were seeing was not a building. White light reflecting off the desert floor illuminated the underside of the craft, revealing it to be a very large silver saucer. They estimated that the disc was about 200 feet across. It had curved upper and lower hulls with a bank of red and orange lights around its middle. For about an hour and fifteen minutes, they watched it maneuver from side to side and up and down. Eventually, it receded and finally disappeared over a distant mountain range.

During the sighting, Batts tried to operate his camera, but it wouldn't work. They also tried the car radio but got only a high-pitched whining sound, whereas before and after the sighting they were able to tune in a radio station.

9.7 ■ THE SPORT MODEL

Robert Lazar, a former employee of Los Alamos National Laboratory, claims that in December 1988, the Office of Naval Intelligence gave him a compartmentalized clearance thirty-four levels above a top-secret "Q" clearance and employed him at the highly secret "S-4" test facility located about fifteen miles south of Area 51. He says that he was hired to study the power source of a captured alien flying saucer and try to figure out how it functioned.[41,42] Four months later, having become disenchanted with his work and concerned that such important scientific discoveries were being kept secret from the American public, he broke his vows of secrecy and began describing his experiences to friends. He led them on night outings to remote spots near Area 51 to view some of these captured UFOs being test-flown. Later, he appeared on a local Las Vegas television news broadcast to relate his experiences and present some insights into the propulsion hardware on the craft he had been assigned to. Subsequently, he lectured at a number of UFO conferences and also put up a Web site on the subject. His description of the propulsion unit is of particular interest because it sounds in many ways similar to the microwave propulsion system developed in Project Skyvault.

Gene Huff, who has socialized with Lazar since the late 1980s and knew him during the period when he was hired to work at S-4, has written an interesting biography that corroborates many aspects of Lazar's story.[43] However, others have come to mistrust Lazar's claims, considering the large number of contradictions in his story as well as statements he has made that appear to indicate a substantial lack of knowledge of basic physics. Several of these critiques appear on the Internet website www.dreamlandresort.com/area5V.[44] Nevertheless, the gravity wave propulsion beam technology that Lazar refers to comes sufficiently close to the field propulsion ideas reportedly developed in Project Skyvault, so it is worth summarizing his story, although, as will be pointed out, many of his claims appear to be disinformation that may have been planted to protect the technology's secrecy.

Lazar says that while working at the S-4 test site near the dry bed of Papoose Lake, he was shown a 52-foot-diameter spacecraft that he nicknamed the Sport Model (see figure 9.5). He says he was told that the craft was powered by an "antimatter reactor" located at its center. He claims that the reactor was designed to emit bursts of positrons 7.46 times per second, which, in turn, would generate bursts of type-A "gravitational" microwaves that he terms Gravity A waves. He says that these gravity waves would travel up the vertical conduit attached to the top of the reactor, where they would become amplified in intensity. This conduit, which is said to be about 8 centimeters in diameter, could act as a microwave waveguide and could serve as a microwave amplifier, just as Lazar claims, provided that its length was properly matched to the microwave wavelength. However, from Lazar's description, it is not entirely clear whether he believes these to be pure gravity waves or electromagnetic waves that have gravitational effects. Indeed, a waveguide would be unable to contain a pure gravity wave of the sort commonly known to physics. Such waves should freely pass through waveguide walls without reflecting from them, much like Podkletnov's gravity impulse beam did. If the microwave emissions from the Sport Model's reactor are able to be contained by a waveguide, then they cannot be considered exclusively gravitational.

In fact, at one UFO seminar in 1993, Lazar disclosed his belief that gravity is electromagnetic in nature but that it is an electromagnetic wave of a particular microwave frequency, which he did not wish to disclose at the time. Yet, in my opinion, it is a major error to assume that gravity is electromagnetic in nature or to suggest that the electric or magnetic field itself produces gravitational effects. It would instead be more reasonable to postulate that electric and gravity potential

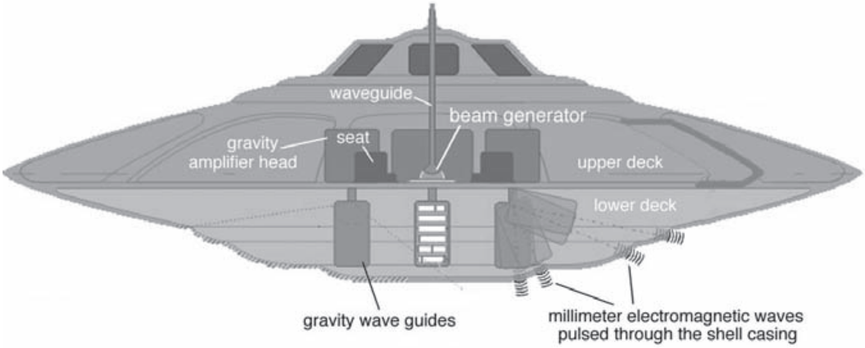
waveguide
beam generator
gravity amplifier head
seat
upper deck
lower deck
gravity wave guides
millimeter electromagnetic waves pulsed through the shell casing

Figure 9.5. A cross-sectional view of the Sport Model, a flying disc of alien origin. Based on Robert Lazar's description. (After P. Potter)

fields are coupled and that electromagnetic waves and electric shock discharges are accompanied by a distinct gravity wave component. To refer to the craft's microwave emissions as gravity waves per se and to claim that such gravitational effects manifest only at a specific frequency, in my view is rather outlandish. Recall that in chapter 7 we learned that Project Skyvault scientists found that when microwave beams were tuned to specific frequencies, they were able to strongly interact with matter and produce strong electrogravitic repelling forces. Also, we learned that metamaterials that have resonant frequencies in the microwave range exhibit strong repulsion forces when beams are tuned to frequencies slightly above these resonances. Thus, frequency is critical to obtaining a maximal repelling force from a microwave beam, but not the way Lazar seems to imply.*

So if we discount Lazar's contention that the so-called reactor is generating gravity waves (his Gravity A waves)—and we will discover that there is good reason to ignore such an assertion—we are then left with the idea that this is essentially a microwave generator, hence, the equivalent of the Gunn diode oscillator cavity on the Project Skyvault vehicle. Lazar did not describe the inside of the vertical waveguide, but if it were to have a series of properly spaced ringlike cavities along its length, it could function as a klystron, that is, a linear microwave generator. As charged particles (positrons or electrons) would shoot along the length of the waveguide and move past the cavities, they would set up microwave oscillations in the cavities that would become progressively more intense as the end of the tube was approached.

---

*Lazar suggested that one could infer the microwave frequency from the dimensions of the waveguide tube. Theorizing that its inside diameter is somewhat less than its 8-centimeter outside diameter, say 5 centimeters, and that a full wavelength fits across this dimension, this would imply a frequency of about 6 gigahertz (or 3 gigahertz for a half-wavelength fit).

However, one has great difficulty believing Lazar's story that this gravity wave generator is powered by bursts of high-energy positrons emitted from the radioactive decay of a slab of exotic metal located at the bottom of the reactor. For instance, in one radio interview, he described having been present when this reactor was being bench-tested with its waveguide tube removed and said that he had been allowed to put his hand over the top of it. If this had been a real high-energy positron beam, no reasonable physicist or engineer would have let him put his hand over it to feel its matter-repelling force field. If Lazar had done so, his hand would have received a severe radiation burn and a dangerously high dose of radiation. Clearly, this would have upset the health and safety people at the laboratory, if the story was true. Also, when positrons annihilate, they produce 1-million-electron-volt gamma rays. Lazar made no mention of such energetic by-products or precautions taken to shield them. More likely, what was coming out of the reactor was a microwave beam emitted by a crystal oscillator, without any accompanying beam of high-energy particles. But even if it had been a microwave beam, the beam power would have had to be sufficiently low so as not to harm him.

The other part of this reactor story that raises doubts is Lazar's claim that this slab of exotic stable metal was composed of element 115 and that these matter-repelling waves were emitted when this element was bombarded with protons, inducing it to transmute into element 116, which then immediately decayed by emitting a positron. He says element 115 is a stable element that does not exist on Earth but is generated in the cores of massive stars many light-years from Earth and that the only available supply of this material on Earth is held under tight security in a supersecret facility in Area 51. He says that only discharges of this normally inaccessible material are able to generate his so-called Gravity A waves used for propelling the disc.

However, in 2004, about fifteen years after Lazar began making claims about this rare element, Russian scientists successfully synthesized small amounts of elements 113 and 115, and four years earlier had created element 116. The problem is that both isotopes of element 115 that they were able to synthesize were unstable. They lasted only for several tens of milliseconds, and they decayed not into element 116 as Lazar claimed, but into element 113, with the emission of an alpha particle. Also, element 116, which Lazar claimed could be momentarily created by bombarding element 115 with a proton, was found to decay, but not by emitting a positron. It too decayed by emitting an alpha particle.[45] It seems, then, that Lazar's antimatter reactor idea is on the rocks, as is his idea for the existence of Gravity B waves, which he claims can be produced only through this 115-to-116 decay process.

This antimatter reactor part of the story was most likely a fabrication included to make the Sport Model field propulsion technology sound very exotic and, hence, not easily duplicable in most laboratories. If we are willing to accept that Lazar actually had worked at this secret Nevada test site, engineers there most probably misinformed him on purpose as to how this microwave oscillator functioned. In this way, the technical details of the disc's operation would be protected in case he decided to rebel and speak out, as he has done. Alternatively, some have suggested that agents may have employed brainwashing techniques to manipulate his mind.[46] Such black-project research facilities are likely in possession of technologies that would allow them to erase specific memories and replace them with false ones, similar to what is portrayed in the movies *Total Recall* and *The Bourne Identity*. Area 51 security agents may have felt that they were not breaking the law to use such methods since Lazar says that prior to his employment on the project he had to sign a secrecy agreement waiving his constitutional rights.

Conversations I have had with several people lead me to believe that such abhorrent brainwashing techniques are unfortunately being used. One case concerns an individual who claims to have worked on a highly classified time travel project supposedly conducted on Long Island, near Montauk, as an extension of research done on the highly secret Philadelphia Experiment. I had a chance to talk to him after he had just finished giving a lecture about his unusual experience. He believed that he had formerly been director of this time travel project and that, after having had some disagreements with people there, he was subjected to a mind-altering therapy that attempted to erase from his memory experiences he had on the project. He says that he later began to recall these memories after he had a chance street encounter with someone who he claims had once worked under him on that project. He said this began to trigger the suppressed memories.

In his mind, this individual thoroughly believed that what he was saying was the truth, that he had directed this project and that it had been capable of temporarily transporting people into other time periods. However, it was obvious to me that what he was saying was a complete fabrication. I believe he was correct in stating that he had been the unwilling subject of mind control, but I believe that during his brainwashing session, false memories were implanted in his mind about the existence of this fictitious time travel project and how he had once served as its director. While under hypnotic inducement, he was most likely instructed that he would forget about the mind-control session, but that meeting a certain person in the street would be a trigger that would allow him to begin to remember the implanted memories as well as some of the mind-control session. However, the implanted memories were to be remembered as being events that had actually taken place. Also, he was instructed to believe that the purpose of the mind-control session had been to erase his recollection of those supposed real events (the implanted memories). Perhaps he also was given a subliminal suggestion to write about his implanted experience and to lecture about it. A person who actually believed in his heart that what he was saying was the truth would be the ultimate in misinformation dissemination. Could Robert Lazar have actually had some experiences working on the Sport Model and later undergone similar techniques to implant confusing ideas about the technology?

Lazar's diagram of the reactor depicts a conical structure at the bottom of the chamber that he identifies as the element 115 fuel source, which he says is made up of a stack of thin wafers. In view of the element 115 fiasco, much of what he has described about the reactor should be discounted. If there was such a microwave-emitting structure in the reactor chamber, it would be better construed as a solid-state oscillator similar to an IMPATT or Gunn diode. Its enclosing hemispherical chamber and capping waveguide tube would then form the microwave amplifier duct.

We might guess this crystal oscillator was made of a material dense enough that it could give an unsuspecting person the impression that it was in fact made of an element having an atomic weight of 115. For example, recall from chapter 4 the disclosure by black-project engineers of the development of very dense, radar-absorbing materials containing uranium. Lazar says he was not involved in measuring the atomic mass of the material he worked with but only correlated the data taken by others who reportedly worked on the project before him. These data, then, could have been "cooked" to give Lazar the impression that he was discovering something with an atomic weight of 115. The trick apparently worked, because he wholeheartedly believed them.

Lazar commented that when the reactor was bench-tested with its waveguide tube removed and he was allowed to place his hand over its mouth, he could feel the pressure of the field, which he described as being similar to the repulsion one feels when two like poles of a magnet are brought together. He said that they also played around with the repulsion field by bouncing golf balls off it. The force that he refers to sounds very much like what Tesla says he felt from the radiant energy shocks discharged from his magnifying transmitter. Podkletnov also says that he was able to feel the repulsive field generated by the momentary discharges of his gravity impulse beam. However, both Tesla and Podkletnov were feeling the repulsive force of sawtooth-shaped waves produced by electron shock discharges. Subquantum kinetics predicts that if these were positron shock discharges, they should instead have produced an attractive force. If anything, Lazar's hand should have been sucked into the reactor if it was actually emitting positron discharges. His positron pulse claim is, in my opinion, misinformation that he is perhaps unwittingly disseminating.

To continue the story, Lazar said the gravity wave (i.e., microwave emission) generated in the reactor was piped into three "gravity amplifiers" (i.e., microwave amplifiers) located in the lower compartment of this vehicle, each amplifier measuring 2 feet in diameter and 4 feet in length (figure 9.6). These were equally spaced from one another in a triad arrangement and could be swiveled to aim in any direction. He said the gravity wave (electromagnetic microwave) from the reactor was of too low an amplitude to be effective for propulsion and that it became amplified in the gravity amplifiers into waves powerful enough to propel the craft. Each of these gravity amplifiers would emit a microwave beam downward, which was used to buoy the craft upward. The craft would sit on these beams and tend to bounce around on them in a flight mode he referred to as the "omicron configuration." He said the disc would move forward by focusing one or more of the beams behind it, which would cause the craft to fall forward.

More specifically, Lazar said the gravity amplifiers achieve their lifting force by sending out a microwave beam, the Gravity A wave, toward the Earth's surface and by phase-shifting this wave relative to the microwave propagating up from the Earth, which he termed the "Gravity B wave." His description sounds a lot like that for a microwave phase-conjugate resonator, although described in very vague terms. In other words, his outgoing Gravity A wave would correspond to the outgoing phase-conjugate microwave beam and his incoming Gravity B wave would correspond to the incoming ground-reflected probe beam, which would actually consist of microwaves that had previously originated from the disc's microwave generator (its reactor). The energy in outgoing A wave would be locked in phase with the incoming ground-reflected B wave and would eventually retrace the B wave's scattering path back to the beam's ground target point and then back to the vehicle's central source oscillator. As in the Project Skyvault craft, these incoming and

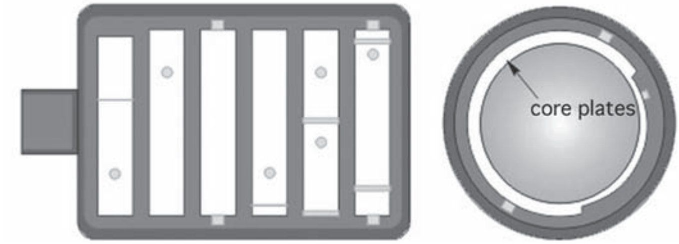

Figure 9.6. One of the gravity amplifiers. Based on Robert Lazar's description. (After P. Potter)

outgoing beams would be focused by some sort of microwave lens.

Clearly, considering the controversy surrounding the veracity of Lazar's statements, it is difficult to pick out fact from fiction. All we can say is that many features that he describes bear a strong resemblance to the Project Skyvault technology. Moreover, we are compelled to accept that the Sport Model or something like it exists since many people claim to have seen from a great distance some sort of unusual levitating craft being test-flown in the vicinity of Area 51. Consequently, to understand how this craft might work, it makes more sense if we disregard the gravity wave mumbo jumbo and reframe Lazar's dialogue in terms of what is already known about microwave phase conjugation.

The gravity amplifier would be the equivalent of the mixer diode cavity in the Skyvault vehicle. Like the Skyvault mixer cavity, each such amplifier is reportedly energized by microwaves from the craft's central microwave source, that is, its reactor and waveguide resonator. Provided that each gravity amplifier contains a polarized dielectric medium, these piped-in microwaves would serve as pump beams, which would interact with the probe beam entering the amplifier (Lazar's gravity B wave) to generate a holographic grating pattern in the dielectric. The pump beams would then interact with the dielectric's grating pattern to produce an outgoing microwave beam that would be the phase conjugate of the incoming probe beam. In describing the amplifiers, Lazar makes no mention of any internal dielectric but does say they contain a series of plates. Perhaps these are dielectrics.

Lazar's gravity amplifiers, then, most likely function as phase-conjugate resonators that allow microwaves from the craft's central microwave source to self-amplify and create powerful soliton faser beams between the craft's mixer diodes and the ground. Provided that the microwaves consist of sawtoothlike shock discharge waveforms, as one may infer from Lazar's description, the soliton beams should create a repulsive force both on their ground surface target and on the craft, which would tend to buoy the craft upward.

Lazar makes a number of statements concerning the nature of gravity that seem to be nonsense and that some have had issues with.[47] For example, he contends that the two gravity waves the craft phases relative to each other to obtain its propulsion, the Gravity A and Gravity

B waves, are actually the results of two very different types of gravity. He identifies the Gravity A wave with the strong nuclear force, the very short-range force that binds protons and neutrons together in the atomic nucleus, and claims that only through the element 115-to-116 antimatter reaction is it possible to release this in the form of a traveling wave having a specific wavelength in the microwave frequency range. He identifies the Gravity B wave with the gravitational force of standard physics, that is, the field that causes celestial bodies to attract one another.

However, to suggest there are two types of gravity and to identify one of them with the strong force sounds absurd, even to the most open-minded of physicists. The idea has no basis in standard physics, nor is such a concept compatible with subquantum kinetics. In subquantum kinetics, nuclear binding arises because nucleons have wavelike electrostatic potential fields in their cores that interlock with one another when the particles are in close proximity, that is, close enough to form an atomic nucleus. This subquantum kinetics model of the strong force has been confirmed by particle-scattering experiments.[48] Lazar, however, offers no experimental evidence to support his odd theory of gravity except vague references to the operation of a flying saucer kept in the supersecret S-4 test facility. Considering that one key aspect of his theory has now been disproved, his claim that the Gravity A wave is produced by the spontaneous positron decay of element 116, we may conclude that his gravity wave theory should not be taken seriously or, at least, we should regard it as disinformation that was purposely disseminated by black-project security staff. Along these same lines, we may safely disregard Lazar's statements that the Gravity A wave entering the craft's gravity amplifiers bends space around the disc as it becomes amplified.

Lazar claims that gravity, as observed in nature, which he refers to as the Gravity B field, is in essence electromagnetic and that it specifically involves oscillations in the microwave range. This again is nonsense, apparently interjected to create confusion. The Earth's gravitational field does not oscillate at microwave frequencies. If it did, this would have been widely known to the physics community, since various gravity wave antenna experiments have been conducted over the past thirty-five years, and if we include Brown's gravitoelectric detectors, this work would date back more than seventy years. Lazar's assertion of the Gravity B wave being electromagnetic in character and oscillating at microwave frequencies would make better sense if it was not part of the Earth's natural gravity field, but instead consisted of gravity microwaves that originated from the craft itself; that is, if they radiated from its central reactor, or wave amplifier unit, and then reflected from the ground and happened to return to the craft. Lazar reports that before beginning work on the Sport Model, he was allowed to watch a demonstration of it taking off, ascending about 30 feet, moving to the left and right, and then returning to the ground. He says that just prior to and during its liftoff, it gave off a hissing sound similar to that coming from the coronal discharge from a high-voltage line. Its bottom gave off a blue glow, which he says was due to air atoms being excited by the craft's electromagnetic emissions. Again, these characteristics seem to suggest a field propulsion technique similar to the one used in Project Skyvault.

Lazar relates that the gravity wave generators operate in two modes—the omicron and delta configurations. In the omicron configuration, mentioned earlier, one or more generators (microwave mixers) are directed downward to form a supporting beam for the craft (see figure 9.7a). In the delta configuration (see figure 9.7b), all three beams are intersected at a distant location to achieve propulsion relative to that intersection region, which measures on the order of a meter in diameter. The beams then are said to develop an attractive force, rather than a repulsive force, which causes the craft to suddenly jump to that location. Lazar maintains that the beams gravitationally warp space-time at the intersection zone and that the resulting warping is what pulls the spacecraft toward that point. Here it seems he relies on standard general relativity concepts while pursuing an unusual theory of gravitation that has nothing to do with general relativity. His critics, however, rightly contest that if space-time was indeed warped at that distant location to the extent Lazar claims, every other object in the vicinity of that intersection zone should also be suddenly sucked in, as though toward a miniature black hole, which would result in a major collisional catastrophe. So again we encounter a baloney factor that appears to cast a shadow over the whole matter. Also, note that Lazar does not invoke

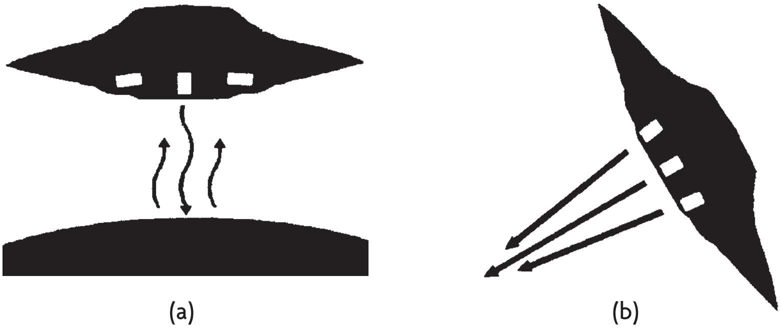

Figure 9.7. The beam configurations for flying the Sport Model, as described by Robert Lazar: (a) the omicron configuration; (b) the delta configuration.

general relativity concepts in explaining the beam repulsion effect produced in the omicron configuration, probably because standard general relativity theory does not allow gravitational repulsion.

To pursue an independent line of thought in regard to the delta configuration, one might imagine that these microwave soliton beams are intersected at a particular location to generate a plasma that acts as an anchoring point for wave scattering to take place. If the polarity of the beam's sawtooth-shaped waves are reversed to produce a sharp decline of negative electric potential at the beginning of each wave cycle or microwave burst rather than a sharp rise in potential, then it is possible that the beam could function as a tractor beam instead of a repulsion beam, as was theorized in chapter 6 in the discussion of the Podkletnov experiment. In that case, the soliton field the craft would be creating would generate an attractive force on the craft that would be vectored toward the target region and result in propulsion of the craft in that direction.

Although so much of Lazar's story sounds like nonsense, it is difficult to dismiss entirely when so many features of the Sport Model resemble Project Skyvault technology. This raises a lot of questions. If this was really one of several captured alien discs, did Project Skyvault begin as an attempt to reverse-engineer alien technology? One can make a strong case for microwave phase conjugation having originated as an outgrowth of the World War II development of radar. Also, there is the work of Townsend Brown, who apparently had gotten quite close to these ideas on his own without having any captured alien discs at hand to reverse-engineer. If we are to believe that the discs were given to us by Zeti Reticulans as part of some technology-exchange program, as Lazar claims, then perhaps these beings did so because they knew that our own research had already advanced to the point that they would have little to lose to let us look at what they had.

Then there is the issue of the misinformation that was apparently given to Lazar during his employment at S-4, with the outside possibility that he also went through some sort of mind-manipulation session, as some have suggested. If Lazar worked at S-4, was his recruitment planned from the start as a disinformation campaign to create confusion about how field propulsion vehicles might operate?

10

THE SEARL EFFECT

10.1 ■ THE SEARL EFFECT GENERATOR

It was during an indoor test that British inventor John Searl watched his permanent magnet generator levitate off its bench and ultimately bump into the ceiling. As he had envisioned in his dreams, his generator was not only able to propel itself with an overunity power efficiency, but it was also able to defy gravity. In its more advanced design, his generator consisted of three concentric ring magnets flanked by three sets of roller magnets that revolved in a clockwise direction about their circumference (see figure 10.1).[1] The innermost ring consisted of a stationary stator magnet, which he called a plate, having its magnetic north pole pointing down perpendicular to the plane of the ring. Twelve or more roller magnets, called runners, were spaced around the plate's periphery and allowed to roll around its circumference (see figure 10.2). The runners were placed with their magnetic fields oriented north-pole up, so that they would be magnetically attracted to the plate's rim as they rolled around it. However, they were spaced so that there would always be a small air gap between their surfaces and the plate. The diameter of the runners was such that they would revolve on their own axis a whole number of times for each revolution around the plate. This allowed the revolving magnets to establish a condition of resonance, with each revolution reinforcing the previous to build up a stationary wave magnetic field oscillation.

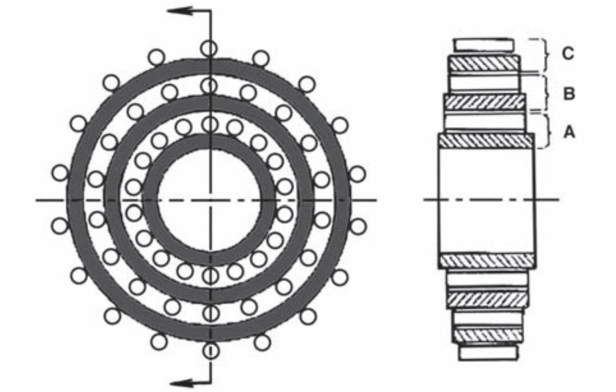

Figure 10.1. The Searl effect generator, showing the arrangement of the concentric ring and runner magnets. Ideally, the middle ring would have twenty-two or more runners and the outer ring thirty-two or more runners. (After S. Sandberg)

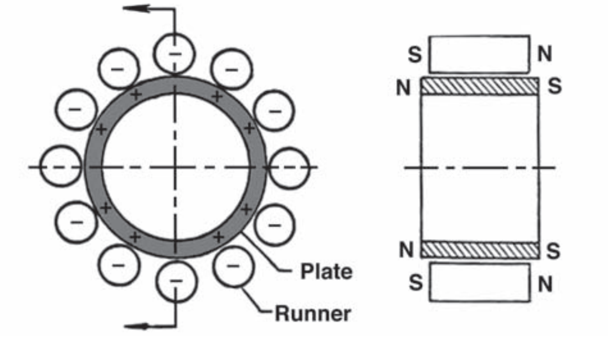

Figure 10.2. Schematic of the Searl effect generator's inner ring and its runner magnets, illustrating the magnetic polarity and electric polarity developed during operation. (After S. Sandberg)

This inner roller ring was, in turn, surrounded by a second ring-shaped magnetic stator plate with an adjacent set of at least twenty-two runner magnets. This was surrounded by a third ring-shaped magnetic stator and an adjacent set of at least thirty-two runner magnets. Previous tests of smaller-sized units indicated that a negative voltage was produced at the rim of the runner magnets, allowing a current to be collected by stationary brushes contacting the runner's rim.

In 1952, Searl and a friend conducted the first outdoor test of one of his 3-foot-diameter multi-ring generators.[2] They set the rotor in motion using a small engine that applied torque through a clutch mechanism. Even though it was rotating at a relatively slow speed, the device produced an unexpectedly high potential at the rotor's periphery, on the order of 100 kilovolts or more. The large potential was indicated by the field's characteristic crackling sound and ozone smell and the effect it had on surrounding objects.*

After the rotor had passed a particular threshold speed, its rate of rotation began to accelerate. Operating on its own power, it began to lift off and break the union to its starter engine. It is said to have risen to a height of some 50 feet, where it hovered for a while, still speeding up. It surrounded itself in a bluish pink halo similar to the glow discharge phenomenon seen when air is ionized in a moderate vacuum. Its pulsing field caused nearby radios to turn on. Finally, the whole generator is said to have accelerated upward at a fantastic rate and disappeared, presumably flying into space.

Searl's unusual device has since come to be known as the Searl effect generator (SEG) or the Searl levity disc. In the years that followed, he and his team members built and flew some dozen or more generators, some of which similarly became lost in flight until Searl found a way of controlling the rotor speed. He also built some generators that were 12 feet in diameter and two that were 30 feet in diameter; see figure 10.3.

There appeared to be a positive-feedback loop involved in the operation of Searl's generators since beyond a critical speed they would begin to accelerate on their own, without any mechanical assistance from the driving motor. In the beginning, Searl had not figured out how to control the effect. Later, he found that it was possible to reduce the speed by electrically loading the generators so that power was siphoned off from them.

Searl found that when the generator was running, there was a dramatic drop in air temperature in the immediate vicinity of the generator and in its interior.[3] Also, there was an accompanying drop in air pressure in its interior, with air being found to move outward from the generator's rim. This air expulsion effect was attributed to the high-

---

*Some claim even higher potentials on the order of 10 million megavolts!

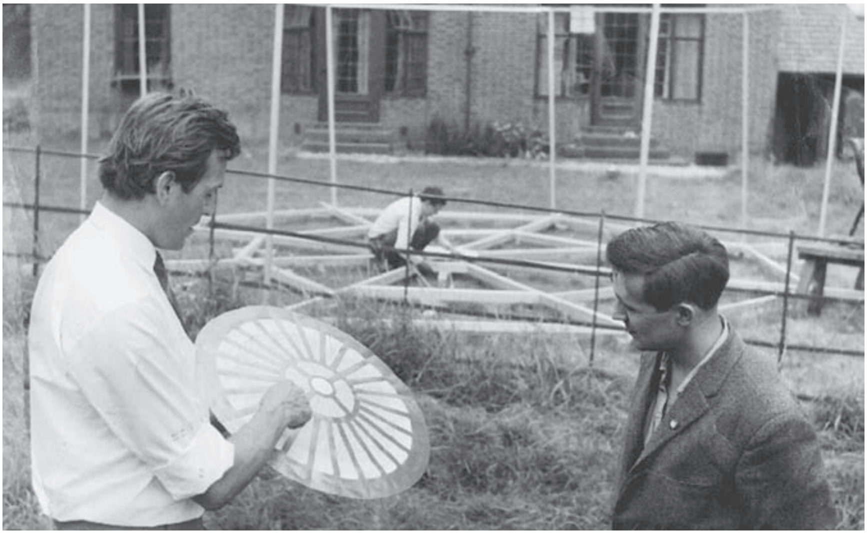

Figure 10.3. John Searl (left) and coworkers constructing a Searl effect generator. (Photo courtesy of John Thomas)

voltage ionization present along the generator's rim, the effect being most pronounced when the rim voltage exceeded 30 kilovolts. The high-voltage emission was believed to cause the generator to be enveloped in a vacuum. Electrons expelled from the rim as negative ions would have arced to the positive plate, exciting a glow discharge in the low-pressure environment.

The electric fields produced by the device were apparently quite strong, since Searl noticed that after he had been working near the generators when they were operating, he had a "cobweb" static electricity sensation on his skin and found that his clothes clung to him. The fields were apparently strong enough to leave a residual electric polarity in his body tissue. When the generator was made to hover low above the ground for an extended period, the soil was seen to become burned because of the heat from the electric currents induced in the ground.

Objects placed inside the generator ring were found to lose weight. Also, a lit candle placed at its center became extinguished. Whether this was due to lack of oxygen from the lowered air pressure or to lack of convection from the reduced gravity field is not certain. Outside the generator, the field was such that objects approaching it were diverted before actually colliding.

In his 1968 paper on the Searl effect, P. L. Barrett presented a sketch showing the approximate direction of the gravity field in the vicinity of an operating Searl generator (figure 10.4).[4] The hatched regions indicate gravitational neutral zones, one being centered below the generator and a ringlike region positioned above the generator. Barrett wrote that any objects that entered those regions would tend to be held there. Also, it was found that upon taking off, a Searl craft would lift up a chunk of earth along with it. As a result, the craft would often leave behind a large hole in the ground. A similar lifting phenomenon has been observed to occur beneath UFOs. Numerous reliable witnesses who observed UFOs hovering over a body of water have noted that the water peaked beneath the craft, as shown in figure 10.5.[5]

The takeoff effect of a Searl-type disc might explain how a massive chunk of soil was torn up and displaced to a spot 73 feet away on a farm in north-central Washington.[6] A farmer's two sons discovered the chunk on October 18, 1984, while rounding up cattle. Passing through a wheat field that had been harvested about a month earlier, they discovered an irregularly shaped hole about 10 feet long and 7 feet wide,

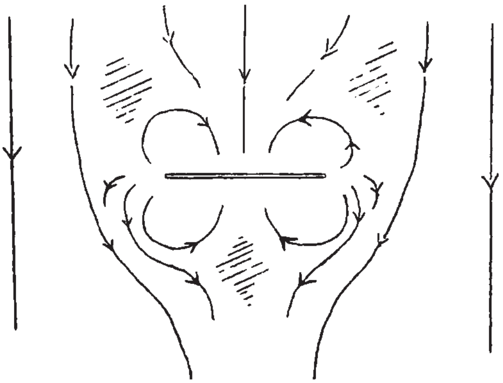

Figure 10.4. Sketch showing how the gravity field flux vectors (e.g., G-on flux vectors) are oriented in the vicinity of a hovering Searl disc. The vectors, which are represented as arrows, map the Earth's gravity field combined with that induced by the disc. Shaded regions indicate neutral gravity zones. (From Barrett, "Searl Effect," fig. IV)

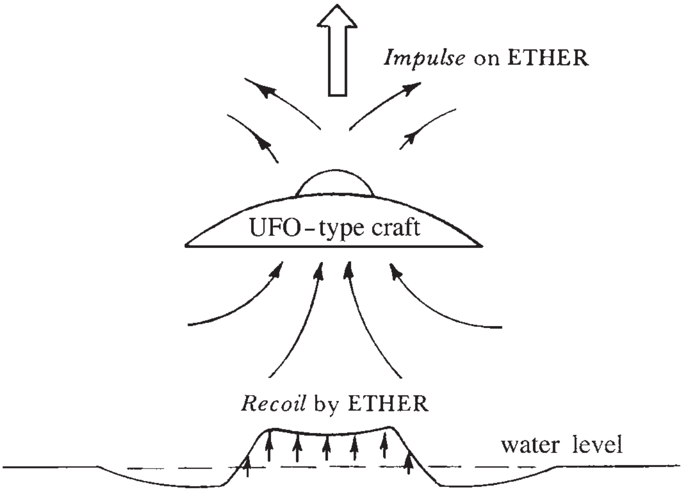

Figure 10.5. How water peaks beneath a low-hovering UFO, as based on numerous eyewitness reports. (After Sigma, Ether Technology *80)*

and from 1½ to 2 feet in depth. The hole was not a meteorite crater, as it had vertical walls and a fairly flat bottom, looking as though it had been cut by a giant cookie cutter. The removed piece, still intact, was found right-side up and rotated about 20 degrees counterclockwise from its original position in the hole. An arc of dribblings traced a path from the hole to where the chunk was found. By one estimate, this chunk of soil must have weighed about 5 metric tons. The dense root mass in the soil apparently held the clump together, but some of its roots looked as if they had been torn out at the time the piece was removed, since they were seen still dangling from the vertical walls of the hole. This feat of transportation could not have been executed by any kind of excavation machine. Besides, there was no evidence that the removal had been man-made, nor were any machinery marks found.

One geologist speculated that the shock waves from a local 3.0-Richter earthquake spontaneously focused their energy to this spot and caused the massive chunk of soil to pop out, but seismologists found this unlikely. Besides, for this to happen, nature would have to violate the law of entropy. For this multi-ton piece of soil to move intact without breaking apart, it must have been subject to a uniform force pulling all of its mass upward, countering a downward gravitational pull of at least 90 grams per square centimeter. This would be about two hundred times greater than the lift force developed beneath Brown's 6-inch-diameter (15-centimeter) AC electrokinetic test apparatus.

Since this event took place on a remote farm field at a time when no observers were present, no UFO sighting was reported. Nevertheless, the physical evidence at the site was consistent with the UFO soil-displacement scenario that Schaffranke had documented seven years earlier. The craft must have hovered near the ground, with its electrogravitic field penetrating the soil below. Then as the craft rose, this extended field gradient would have moved up as well, inadvertently drawing up this chunk of soil with it. As the craft slowly swung in an arc-like trajectory across the field, pieces of soil dribbling from the bottom of this hovering chunk would have floated to the ground. Eventually, the craft must have accelerated, leaving the soil chunk to break away from its towing field and thump to the ground at its new location. What would otherwise be a mystery becomes easily explainable when one has a foreknowledge of gravity field propulsion technologies. Nevertheless, it leaves us to marvel at the enormous lift that such an antigravity field can generate, one capable of overpowering the natural force of gravity to allow tons of soil and a massive spacecraft to float freely. Whether it was made by us or came from somewhere else maybe we will never know.

10.2 ■ THE MAGNETIC ENERGY CONVERTER

The Russian physicists Vladimir Roshchin and Serge Godin in the mid-1990s built and tested a version of the SEG, which they named the magnetic energy converter (MEC). It resembled one of Searl's earlier generators, consisting of a single magnetized stator ring measuring 1 meter in diameter flanked by twenty-three roller magnets, each having a diameter of 7.4 centimeters; see figure 10.6.[7,8]

Roshchin and Godin's generator differed from Searl's in several respects, the principal difference being in the design of the runner magnets. They refer to the runners as rollers, so I will use their term instead. Searl used a special magnetization technique to create magnetic spoke domains in the cylindrical sides of his runner magnets

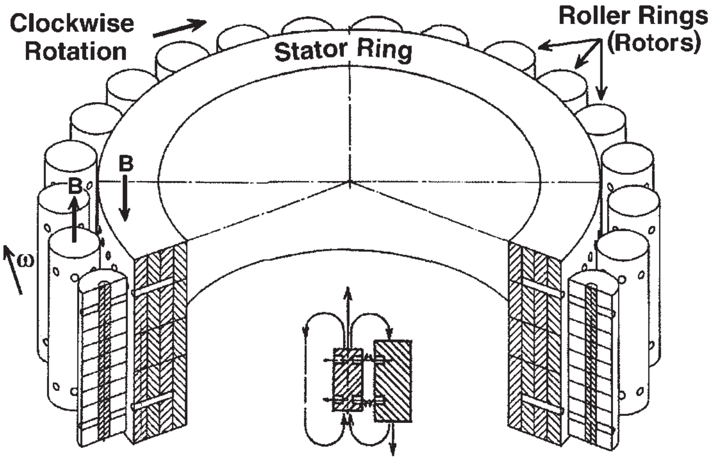

Figure 10.6. The magnetic energy converter. (Based on a drawing by V. Roshchin and S. Godin, 2000)

oriented perpendicular to the runner's axis of rotation. The MEC accomplished the same thing with dipole magnets implanted perpendicular to the surface of each roller magnet so that the north pole of each magnet was oriented perpendicular to the stator plate. The stator had a complementary set of dipole spokes with their north pole pointing out toward the rollers. As in Searl's SEG, these mutually repulsive magnetic domains helped to orient the rollers as they revolved around the circumference of the stator plate and helped to keep the rollers from contacting the plate.

The axles of the roller magnets were secured via bearings to a common rotor frame that kept each roller at its proper relative spacing as they rotated around the stator ring. The rotor had a shaft that was connected to an electric motor via a clutch mechanism. As in Searl's experiments, the motor was used to get the generator up to speed. Roshchin and Godin found that the MEC had a specific rotational speed at which it began to partially power itself, with its drive motor accordingly consuming less power. This occurred when the rotor speed surpassed about 200 revolutions per minute (3.3 hertz). After about one and a half minutes, the rotor had accelerated to 550 revolutions per minute (rpm), at which point the starter motor current consumption had reached zero and was beginning to go negative. The clutch assembly was then made to disconnect the motor from the rotor shaft and in its place connect a generator. As the rotor continued to accelerate, an increasing load was applied to the generator, reaching 7 kilowatts by the time the rotor had a reached a speed of 595 rpm. Greater loads caused the rotor speed to subsequently decline. At greater than 590 rpm, the MEC made "an unpleasant high frequency whistling sound" that damped out as soon as an increased electric load was placed on the generator.

Roshchin and Godin also found that the weight of the generator assembly decreased as the rotor accelerated. Weight loss first became noticeable when the rotor speed reached its critical value of 200 rpm, and by the time its speed had reached 450 rpm, weight loss began to increase exponentially (figure 10.7). At 550 rpm, there was an inflection pause in the weight-loss curve and after 590 rpm, an extremely steep rise in weight loss with increasing rotor speed. By the time the rotor speed had reached 595 rpm, the apparatus as a whole had become 35 percent lighter, with the weight of the generator alone dropping 50 percent. There was substantial hysteresis in this weight loss–rotation rate curve. As rotor speed decreased from 595 to 400 rpm, weight loss remained constant at the 35 percent reduction level. Measurements were not made at greater than 600 rpm for fear that the MEC would enter an uncontrollable supercritical regime in which positive feedback would cause an exponential rise in rotor speed. A similar positive feed-

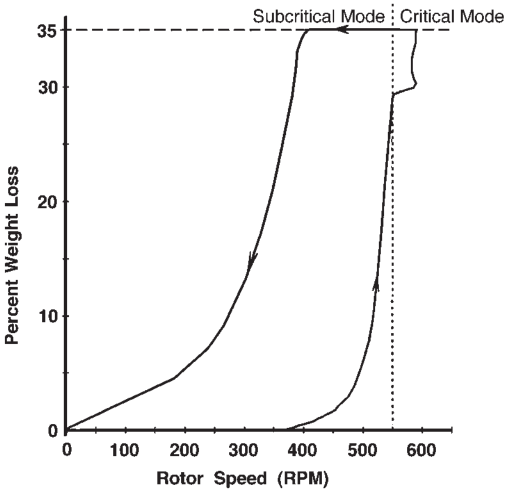

Figure 10.7. Weight loss as a function of rotor speed when a 20-kilovolt potential was applied between the plate and the rollers of an MEC. (After Roshchin and Godin, 2000)

back mode had resulted in Searl losing several of his devices through uncontrolled levitation.

The MEC was found to produce this weight-loss effect only in clockwise rotation (for rollers with their north pole oriented up). Counterclockwise rotation produced a weight-gain effect, with the gain in weight being proportional to the rotor speed. Roshchin and Godin found that application of a 20,000-volt bias potential applied between the plate and the roller magnets improved the performance of the MEC, allowing its weight reduction to begin to take effect at a lower rotor speed. This potential would have ionized the air around the MEC, allowing the electron current to flow more easily across the 1-centimeter gap between the stator and the rollers.

Like the SEG, the MEC generated a luminescence around itself when seen operating in the dark. The bluish pink ionization cloud was observed to cover both the stator ring and the roller magnet ring. Also, when looking at the edge of the rotating roller magnet ring, Roshchin and Godin saw, superimposed on this emission, a series of horizontal, yellowish white luminescent bands (four or five) spaced along the height of the roller magnet's cylindrical surface. This luminescence suggests a possible high-voltage electron discharge from the surface of the roller magnets, although it was not accompanied by sounds characteristic of arc discharge. This silent emission could occur because the emission was coming from a large surface area, rather than from a point source. They compare it to high-voltage, microwave-induced luminescence observed prior to the point of electric breakdown.

Roshchin and Godin also found that when in operation, the MEC surrounded itself with a stationary magnetic-wave pattern consisting of a nested series of cylindrical "magnetic walls" (see figures 10.8 and 10.9).[9] Magnetometer measurements indicated the presence of a magnetic-field flux inside the walls of 0.05 tesla, with the field orientation being the same as that of the roller magnets and at about 6 percent of their 0.85 tesla magnetic flux. No magnetic flux was detectable outside of the walls. There is no evidence to suggest that the magnetic-wall pattern is hazardous in any way. Roshchin and Godin did not notice any harmful effects. On the contrary, Searl has reported that the field emissions of his SEG actually had healing effects.

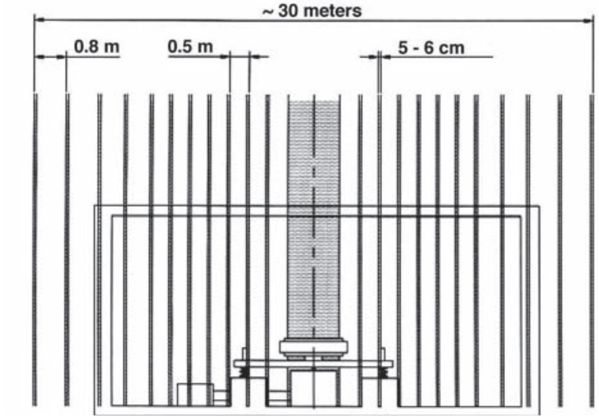
~ 30 meters
0.8 m
0.5 m
5 - 6 cm

Figure 10.8. A side view of an MEC and its research lab, showing the positions of the nested magnetic walls. (After Roshchin and Godin, 2000)

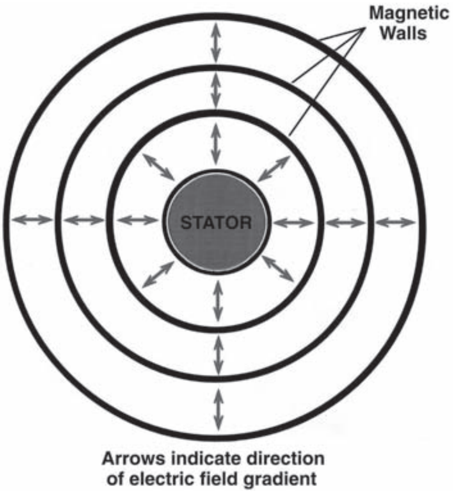
Magnetic Walls
STATOR
Arrows indicate direction of electric field gradient

Figure 10.9. A top-down view of the layout of the cylindrical magnetic walls that together formed a stationary wave pattern around an MEC stator ring. (P. LaViolette, © 2006)

The magnetic-wall pattern extended out from the MEC's stator ring for a distance of up to 15 meters, beyond which the magnetic flux within successive walls rapidly decreased in intensity. The field pattern could be sensed on the second floor of the laboratory, indicating that the walls extended upward at least to a height of 6 meters and possibly downward into the ground for a similar distance. The innermost walls were spaced from one another by approximately 0.5 meter (one stator radius), and this spacing increased 0.8 meter as distance from the MEC increased. Also, the walls had a thickness of about 5 to 6 centimeters, approximating the 7.4-centimeter-diameter of the roller magnets.

The proximity of these dimensions to that of the ring of roller magnets led Roshchin and Godin to conclude that there was a direct connection between this stationary field pattern and the circumferential movement of the magnetic rollers. This conclusion was also supported by their observation that there was a decrease in air temperature within the magnetic walls, which could be immediately felt by placing one's hand within a wall. Moreover, they found that the temperature decreased in proportion to the rate of roller-ring rotation, the decline becoming noticeable above a rotor speed of 200 rpm and reaching –7.5°C by the time the rotor speed had reached 550 rpm. Consequently, they concluded that energy from the environment was somehow being transferred to the ring of roller magnets to assist their rotation.

Below, I will attempt to explain the principle of how the MEC generator operates, with the understanding that the same explanation should apply equally well to the SEG. These ideas were first presented in June 2001 at the Conference on New Hydrogen Technologies and Space Drives.[10] Briefly, clockwise rotation of the rollers causes a current to flow radially outward from the MEC's plate to its rollers due to the Faraday disc dynamo effect. As a result of the "ball-bearing motor effect," this current then creates a torque that induces the rollers to continue their clockwise rotation. The rotating rollers create resonant extremely low-frequency (ELF) oscillations that phase-conjugate to form an extended soliton wave pattern. Energy entrained from this soliton helps to propel the rollers. Let us begin by examining the Faraday effect.

10.3 ▪ THE FARADAY DISC DYNAMO EFFECT

The Faraday disc generator, also known as the homopolar generator, was first built by physicist Michael Faraday in the late nineteenth century. Faraday placed a copper disc between the poles of two cylindrical magnets so that the magnets' field ran perpendicular to the plane of the disc. He found that when he spun the disc, a current was induced to flow, with electrons moving outward from the disc's center toward its periphery. This was attributable to the $v \times B$ rule, in which v represents a conductor's velocity vector and B represents the magnetic force field vector, the two being vector-multiplied with one another.

Faraday also discovered that if the copper disc was cemented to the magnets and the magnets and disc were rotated together as a unit, electrons would still flow to the disc's periphery (figure 10.10).[11] This led him to conclude that the magnetic field produced by the magnets did not rotate with the magnets, but rather was anchored in space (i.e., in the local ether rest frame). Researchers such as Bruce DePalma, Adam Trombley, and Peramahansa Terwari built various versions of this cemented-disc homopolar generator with the hope of developing a motor generator having an overunity efficiency.

As in the classical Faraday disc generator, in this cemented-disc version the magnitude and direction of the electron-current flow is determined by the $v \times B$ rule. Remember to use the left-hand rule instead of the right-hand rule when dealing with electron current flows. That is, if you point the index finger of your left hand in the magnetic-flux direction (south to north) and your thumb in the direction of rotary movement, then your middle finger will indicate the direction of electron flow.

The runners in the SEG and the rollers in the MEC are essentially little Faraday disc generators. They do not have a cemented-copper disc, but the magnets themselves are conductive—not as conductive as copper, but nevertheless they conduct electricity. Thus, like the Faraday disc generator, they should generate a radial current. If we consider a single roller magnet rotating in a clockwise direction with its north pole

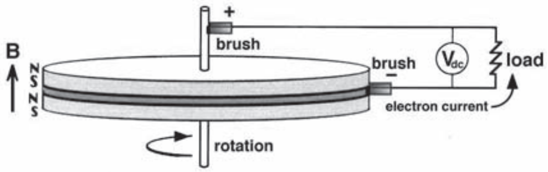

Figure 10.10. A Faraday disc generator with a copper disc cemented to the magnetic pole pieces. (After Archer Energy Systems)

pointing up, as shown in figure 10.6, the left-hand rule indicates that the roller should produce an electron current flow from the roller into the stator ring plate. However, when operating, the Searl disc and the MEC produce an electron current that flows outward from the plate to the rollers, not inward.

This discrepancy arises because we have not accounted for the effect of the entire system in motion. In addition to the Faraday effect due to the rotations of the individual roller magnets, we must also account for the Faraday effect produced by the collective translational movement of those magnets around the circumference of the stator plate, that is, about the stator's central axis. In considering this effect, we may treat the roller magnets collectively as composing a single ring magnet whose radial thickness is equal to the diameter of the rollers and whose magnetic field is in the same direction as that in the individual roller magnets.* Once again applying the left-hand rule, we see that clockwise rotation of this ring produces an electron-current flow outward from the stator plate to the roller magnets, opposing the current flows arising individually from the Faraday effect of each roller. As it turns out, the Faraday-effect voltage induced by this collective translation is much greater than the opposing voltage polarity that arises from the individual magnet rotations. The net result is that the electron current should flow outward from the plate to the roller magnets, just as is observed. For illustration, the relative magnitude of these two opposing Faraday disc effects is calculated in the accompanying text box.

Faraday Effect Potential Induced by Roller Ring Rotation

Let us first consider the voltage generated by the rotation of each individual roller. The induced voltage may be calculated using the equation applicable to a Faraday disc dynamo:[12]

$$V = \tfrac{1}{2}\omega B(b^2 - a^2) \qquad (9)$$

in which ω is the magnet's angular velocity and b and a are its outer and inner radii. In this case of the MEC prototype, $b = 0.037$ meter, the roller diameter, and $a = 0.005$ meter, the diameter of the roller's central shaft hole. When the ring of rollers is moving about the circumference of the stator plate at 550 rpm, the individual rollers will be rotating twenty-three times faster, hence, $\omega = 23 \times 550/60 \times 2\pi = 1325$ radians per second. Taking $B = 0.85$ tesla, equation 1 predicts a voltage of $V = 0.76$ volt, in which the center of the roller is positive and its periphery is negative.

---

*Here we assume that most of the return magnetic flux from the individual roller magnets (south-pole-seeking flux) returns either outside or inside the ring of roller magnets and to a lesser extent in the space between the roller magnets.

Now let us calculate the voltage generated by the displacement of the entire ring of rollers. The outer and inner radii of the ring are taken as $b = 0.574$ meter and $a = 0.5$ meter, which are the distances from the MEC's central axis to the outer and inner circumferences bounding the roller ring. If this roller ring revolves about the MEC's central axis at 550 rpm, or at an angular velocity of $\omega = 57.6$ radians per second, then equation 1 predicts that it would generate a voltage of $V = 1.95$ volts, with the potential being negative at the edge farthest from the stator plate. Consequently, even though the roller ring rotates far slower than the individual rollers, it produces a far larger voltage.

On the side of the roller nearest the stator plate, the voltage generated by the clockwise displacement of the roller ring will be opposed by the voltage being generated by each roller. Yet on the opposite side of the roller, the side farthest from the stator plate, the roller's Faraday effect will produce a voltage polarity in the same direction as that produced by the displacement of the roller ring; hence, the two will add to one another. The net result is that the Faraday effect arising from the rotation of each roller cancels out, leaving just that arising from the roller ring's clockwise displacement. In the example presented in the text box, this would leave a net voltage of 1.95 volts, inducing an electron current to flow toward the MEC's periphery.

Roshchin and Godin used neodymium iron boron magnets in their MEC (typically 58 percent iron, 37 percent neodymium, 4 percent ferrous sulfate, and 1 percent boron). This alloy has an electric resistance of about 144 micro-ohms per centimeter, so a 7.4-centimeter-diameter roller would offer a resistance of 1066 μΩ. Roshchin and Godin did not state how much current was flowing into each roller at a given rotor speed, but as a guess, we might suppose that at an operating speed of 550 rpm, this was on the order of 800 amps for each roller.

As this electron current passes radially outward into the rollers, it generates a motive force on the rollers that assists their rotation. This production of circumferential torque from a radial current flow is known as the *ball-bearing motor effect*.

10.4 ■ THE BALL-BEARING MOTOR EFFECT

I first saw the ball-bearing motor effect in action in the spring of 1999. An alternative-energy political demonstration was being held in Washington, D.C., on the western Mall. Many there were preparing themselves for the predicted breakdown of society that was expected to occur the following year, when the year-2000 computer-calendar glitch was to occur. Among the attendees sprawled on the grassy lawn was Mark Gubrud, a University of Maryland physics student. He was demonstrating an interesting motor that consisted of a shaft mounted in a ball-bearing race (figure 10.11). He applied DC voltage from a

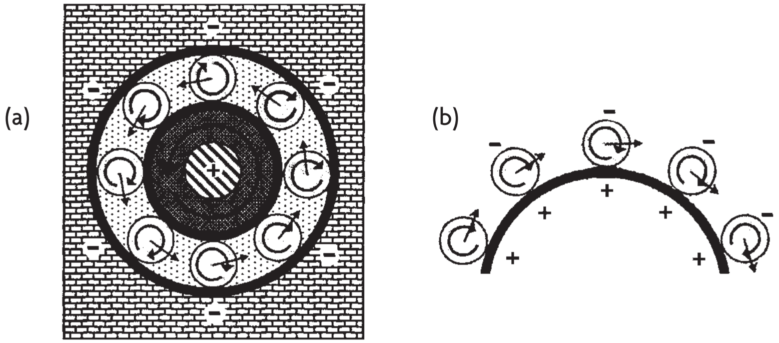

Figure 10.11. Comparison of the ball-bearing motor to the MEC's stator and roller ring. (a) The ball-bearing motor. (After M. Gubrud, in T. Valone, Homopolar Handbook, *54–55) The central shaft rotates relative to a stationary cylinder. (b) The lower portion of the above diagram, unfolded to show equivalence to the geometry of the roller magnets traveling around the MEC stator. In each case, the electron flow moves from the stator toward the ball bearing (or roller magnet). Charge polarity in (b) is reversed since the MEC functions instead as a generator, with the electron flow inducing the buildup of charge whereas in the case of (a) an applied charge instead induces electron flow.*

small battery pack between the shaft and the outer casing of the ball-bearing race. Then, when he gave the shaft a starting torque, it continued to rotate in the direction of the applied torque and continued to turn as long as voltage was applied. If the shaft was given a starting torque in the opposite direction, it again continued to rotate, but in that new direction. Gubrud had with him an explanatory write-up of the motor's principle of operation, which he gave me. I gave a copy to Tom Valone, and he subsequently published it in his *Homopolar Handbook*.[13]

After learning about this phenomenon, I realized that the same effect powered the rotary motion of the runners in the SEG and the rollers in the MEC. Using Gubrud's explanation, let us review how an applied radial-current flow through a ball bearing induces torque forces on the bearing, causing it to rotate around its bearing race (see figure 10.12). A current passing through the ball bearing at time t_1, flowing from the bearing casing to the central drive shaft, will magnetize the bearing. The bearing, though, will retain a residual field in this same magnetization direction at time t_2, although the direction of this residual field has changed because of the bearing's rotation. At time t_2, this residual magnetic field will be directed at some angle α to the direction of current flow, which always occurs through the points where the ball bearing contacts the axle and bearing race. The current component i that lies perpendicular to this residual field will then induce a force ($F = i \times B$) that produces torques on either side of the bearing, which induces it to keep revolving in the direction of its initial rotation.*

The same principle applies to the rollers of an MEC or the runners of an SEG. Consider the ball-bearing motor in figure 10.11a. The outer ball-bearing race remains stationary as the axle turns. If we take this outer-race circumference and fold it back so that its inside faces out, we get the geometry shown in figure 10.11b. Imagine that the ball bearings are roller magnets rolling around the stator plate. The two mechanisms are then seen to be equivalent. The electric polarities are reversed in each

---

*Note that the current flow illustrated in figure 10.12 follows the engineering convention that current flows in the opposite direction from electron flow. Electron current would be in the opposite direction, and one would then use the left-hand rule instead of right-hand rule to determine the directions of the torques. The result, however, comes out the same.

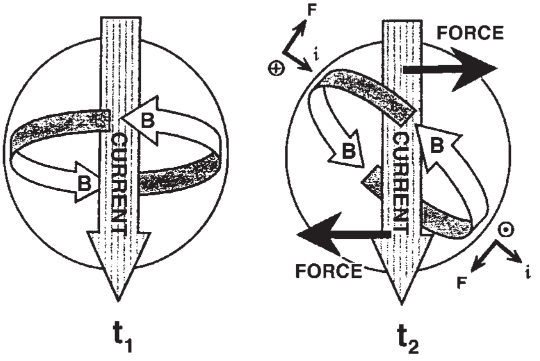

Figure 10.12. A ball bearing shown magnetized at time t_1 *that retains a residual field in that same direction at time* t_2*, even though it has rotated in a clockwise direction. Vectors show the clockwise torques developed by the applied current. (Based on M. Gubrud's diagram, in T. Valone,* Homopolar Handbook, *54–55)*

case because the motor in figure 10.11a is powered by dissipated power (electrons flowing from minus to plus) and the motor in figure 10.11b is powered by generated power (electrons flowing from plus to minus). As in the ball-bearing motor, if an electron current flows from the plate outward through each roller, this current will produce a torque on each roller, assisting it to move in the direction of its established rotation.

These two processes together, the Faraday disc dynamo effect and the ball-bearing motor effect, form a positive feedback loop in which a clockwise displacement of the roller-ring rotor produces a radial electric current that induces roller rotation and greater clockwise displacement of the rotor (see figure 10.13, upper left).

The high voltage the MEC induces at its periphery could be due to the sudden change in the electric resistance the electrons encounter in the course of their radial outward movement. Upon leaving the low-resistance environment of the magnets and continuing their push through the high-resistance environment of the surrounding air, the electrons' voltage potential associated with their current flow would have shot up proportionately, since $E = iR$. That is, for the same current value, voltage will increase in direct proportion to resistance.

Roshchin and Godin found it necessary to use an external motor to apply mechanical torque to the MEC to start it and keep it going in

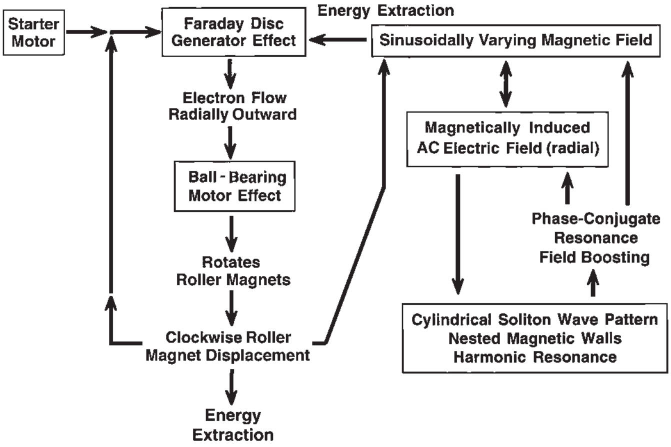
Starter Motor
Faraday Disc Generator Effect
Energy Extraction
Sinusoidally Varying Magnetic Field
Electron Flow Radially Outward
Magnetically Induced AC Electric Field (radial)
Ball-Bearing Motor Effect
Phase-Conjugate Resonance Field Boosting
Rotates Roller Magnets
Cylindrical Soliton Wave Pattern Nested Magnetic Walls Harmonic Resonance
Clockwise Roller Magnet Displacement
Energy Extraction

Figure 10.13. An energy flow analysis chart of the MEC. (P. LaViolette, © 2006)

the low-revolutions-per-minute regime. Nevertheless, as in Searl's earlier generators, they found that the roller ring began to spontaneously accelerate once it had been spun up to a critical threshold speed. For the MEC, this critical rate of rotation was around 200 rpm, although Searl succeeded in designing generators that would spontaneously accelerate, even from rest. This acceleration phenomenon suggests that the MEC, like the SEG, must have been receiving an additional input of energy from some unknown source. Let us next consider where this energy may have been coming from.

10.5 ■ THE CYLINDRICAL SOLITON

This additional, unaccounted-for energy input that was assisting the roller ring's movement around the stator plate most likely was being entrained from the MEC's immediate environment. This hypothesis finds support in the observation that during its operation, the MEC caused a drop in air temperature within a series of nested cylindrical zones established in its immediate vicinity (see figures 10.8 and 10.9). Here we will attempt to understand how this magnetic wall pattern is generated, and later we will examine how energy from this field pattern might be entrained to power the roller-magnet rotor.

As the roller magnets travel clockwise around the stator plate, they generate an oscillating magnetic field in the stator's frame of reference. That is, as a roller magnet coincides with a given reference point on the plate's circumference, in the stator reference frame the magnetic field strength at that point would increase to a maximum since the flux lines between the oppositely oriented roller and stator magnets attract and complement one another. However, as the roller makes a half turn in its clockwise motion, its downward return field, which is south-pole seeking, would now occupy the space that formerly held the roller's north-oriented field. This same space would also be filled with the stator's upward-directed south-seeking field. Since these two fields are in opposition, the net magnetic field strength there would add up to a minimum value. As a result of the roller magnet's clockwise motion, the magnetic field in the stator reference frame would sinusoidally vary in magnitude, and would do so without reversing its magnetic polarity (figure 10.14).

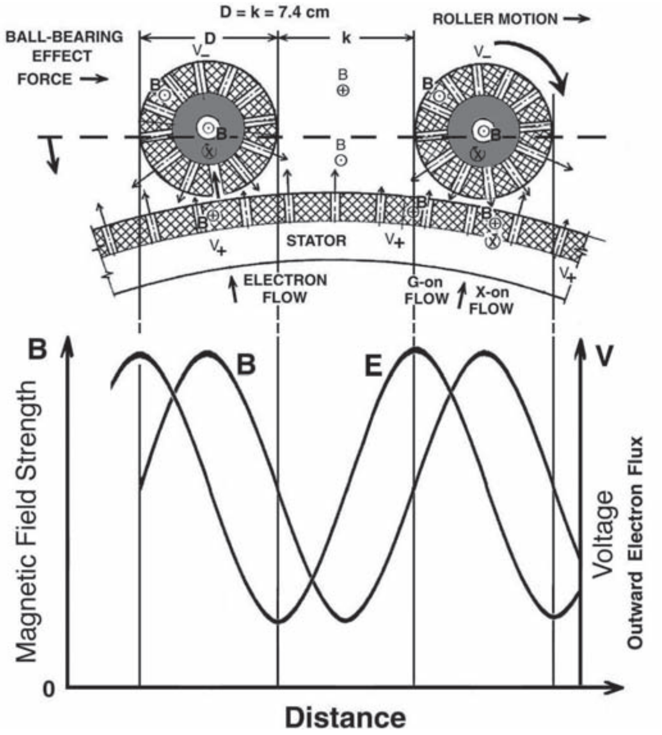
D = k = 7.4 cm
ROLLER MOTION →
BALL-BEARING EFFECT FORCE →
D
k
V₋
V₋
B
B
B
B
B
B
B
B
STATOR
V₊
V₊
V₊
ELECTRON FLOW
G-on FLOW
X-on FLOW
B
B
E
V
Magnetic Field Strength
Voltage
Outward Electron Flux
0
Distance

Figure 10.14. The resonant variation of magnetic field strength (B) and electric field intensity (E) in the stator reference frame excited by the circumferential displacement of the MEC's roller ring. (P. LaViolette, © 2006)

Because the diameter of the roller magnets (*D*) and the space between the roller magnets (*k*) in figure 10.14 are approximately the same, the rotary displacement of this succession of equally spaced roller magnets would set up a resonant oscillation in the stator reference frame. As an example, when a ring of twenty-three roller magnets revolves at 550 rpm, the generated frequency would equal 211 hertz. This time-varying field (*B*), in turn, would induce a sinusoidal electric-potential wave oscillation at the same frequency that is directed radially inward and outward from the MEC's center in the stator's nonrotating reference frame. However, compared with the magnetic field maxima, the electric potential maxima would be displaced 90 degrees in phase, that is, by one roller radius in the clockwise direction (see lower trace in figure 10.14).

Also, as discussed earlier, the Faraday disc dynamo effect would be generating a radial electric field gradient across the diameter of the roller magnets with the potential being more negative at the outer periphery of each magnet, thus inducing an electric current to flow radially from the stator through the roller magnets. Consequently, the sinusoidal AC electric field that the roller magnets generate would modulate this DC-negative potential in the vicinity of the roller ring, causing its amplitude to vary sinusoidally with time. This is analogous to what was happening in Brown's electrokinetic apparatus when the high-voltage DC field across the capacitor dielectric was modulated with an AC field from the apparatus's negative antenna electrode, but in the case of the MEC, the field geometry would be radial rather than axial.

As a result, the electron flow from the MEC's stator toward its rotor would pulsate at the frequency induced by the translating roller magnets. When a roller magnet is tangential to a given location on the stator, that is, most proximal to that location, the electric potential that induces current to flow radially outward to the roller would at that moment only be at its median potential. The potential at that particular location would reach its maximum only after the roller magnet has passed and become displaced by a distance of one roller-magnet radius, so there would be a tendency for arcing to occur on the trailing side of each roller. This would be especially apparent when a high-voltage gradient was present in the vicinity of the MEC's rollers, thereby allowing negative ion discharges from the stator to cross large air gaps.

This recurrent outward pulsing of negative charges in some ways resembles the asymmetrical, longitudinal waves radiated from Tesla's transformers. The oscillating, nonreversing magnetic field and the oscillating, nonreversing electric field produced around the circumference of the roller magnet ring would induce a longitudinal ELF electromagnetic wave to propagate radially outward from the stator ring in the stator ring plane. This wave would have a cylindrical wave-propagation geometry, with its magnetic field aligned to the cylinder wall that parallels the roller magnet field and its electric field component oriented perpendicular to the cylinder wall, oscillating radially outward and inward with respect to the center of the MEC. Roshchin and Godin, however, did not report having observed such radial electric field oscillations in these walls.

Also, this radiated ELF wave would have a circumferential wave component. Since the stationary wave produced by the rotating roller ring contains a total of twenty-three wavelengths that fit a whole number of times around the roller-ring circumference, a similar whole number of wavelengths would be required to fit around the circumference of field oscillations appearing outside the roller ring. These would be able to manifest only at multiples of the 0.5-meter stator radius. At a radius of 1 meter, equal to two stator radii, forty-six wavelengths would fit around the wave's cylindrical circumference. At 1.5 meters, equal to three stator radii, sixty-nine wavelengths would fit around the wave pattern circumference, and so on. No oscillations would manifest at intermediary radial distances because a whole number of wavelengths would be unable to fit into the cylinder circumference at those other radial distances. This is because Roshchin and Godin used twenty-three magnets in their roller ring, 23 being a prime number. Hence, oscillating potentials are able to build up to detectable levels only at radii that are whole-number multiples of the stator radius. At any intermediary radial distances, the oscillations would destructively interfere, hence preventing resonant oscillations from building up there.

The radial ELF oscillations would manifest as a soliton pattern consisting of a series of concentric cylindrical wall nodes similar to those shown in figures 10.8 and 10.9. Each wall would have a depth of about one roller radius and would be separated from the next wall by a distance of about one stator radius. The symmetry axis of this cylindrical soliton pattern would be centered on the MEC's axis of rotation. Hence, when the MEC's field patterns are analyzed in this way, it becomes understandable why Roshchin and Godin observed their MEC to be surrounded by a cylindrical, shell-like field pattern. Although stationary wave patterns that vary in smooth-sine-wave fashion are more commonly observed, patterns with sharp transition boundaries are also known to occur. For example, such sharp-edged boundaries have been observed in stationary waves produced in the laboratory with Tesla-wave-type oscillations.[14]

The waves within each of the soliton's walls would revolve around the circumference of their walls in synch with the rotation of the roller-magnet ring, remaining stationary with respect to the rotating frame and with respect to circumferential oscillations occurring in the other wall-like nodes. Hence, the waves in rings at successively greater distances would circuit around the circumference of their walls at successively higher velocities. The waves circuiting in the 1-meter-radius node, whose circumference would be twice the roller-ring radius, would oscillate at twice the roller-ring fundamental frequency (i.e., at $2f_o$). More-distant walls spaced at one-stator-radius intervals would support oscillations circuiting at progressively higher rates, at frequencies of $3f_o$, $4f_o$, and so on. Thus, as one proceeds outward through this soliton wave pattern, moving radially outward from the center of the MEC, one encounters progressively higher harmonic modes, whole-number multiples of the roller magnet's fundamental frequency f_o. We might also speculate that a whole series of harmonic modes might coexist within each of these walls but at intensities below that of the main harmonic mode circulating in that wall.

Since 23 is a prime number, lower-frequency subharmonic modes, such as $f_o/2$ and $f_o/3$, situated at radii smaller than the roller-ring radius, would not form. The roller ring would itself be the lowest-frequency resonance in this stationary cylindrical-wave pattern. Given that Roshchin and Godin observed the walls to extend about 15 meters out from the generator, this indicates that the outermost wall had a frequency of about 30 f_o. This would have produced a frequency of about 6,300 hertz for a ring-rotation rate of 550 rpm. It is remarkable that the soliton pattern was stable enough to produce such a high harmonic. This 15-meter soliton pattern, though, may limit how close MECs can be placed to one another. For example, if an aircraft was to employ more than one MEC or SEG for lofting, the units would need to be spaced apart by at least 50 meters.

If Searl had used twenty-two magnets for his inner magnetic ring, then he also would have observed a cylindrical wave pattern forming around his discs, but with twice as many nodes because 22 is not a prime number. But when divided by two, it yields the prime number 11, so such a disc would have generated nodes at half multiples of the fundamental frequency, with a lowest-frequency node at $f_o/2$ positioned at half a stator radius and with nodes repeating at radial distance intervals of half a stator radius.

10.6 ■ ENERGY ENTRAINMENT

The MEC's AC electric and magnetic-field oscillation is induced in a nonlinear medium. That is, the ferromagnetic material making up the stator and roller magnets has nonlinear electric and magnetic properties. In addition, the high-voltage discharge that surrounds the stator plate and roller ring when the MEC is operating at high rpm would generate nitric oxide, which also has nonlinear dielectric properties. As explained in chapter 7, the nonlinear dielectric properties of such plasmas make them good phase-conjugating media. For example, the phase-conjugating characteristics of the plasma surrounding the dome of Tesla's magnifying transmitter could explain how his tower was able to "beam" radio-frequency energy to distant locations without appreciable attenuation. Also, as mentioned earlier, Obolensky has succeeded in phase-conjugating arc fluctuations in an arc lamp by placing a nonlinear reactance element in series with the lamp.[15] This demonstrates that phase conjugation can take place even in the ELF frequency range. The notion that the MEC was phase-conjugating the ELF waves it was generating, then, seems plausible.

We might presume that some of the MEC's outgoing ELF radiation was reflected back to the MEC from surfaces in its environment and that these reflected waves were then phase-conjugated by the MEC's nonlinear media. The phase-conjugate wave would have retraced the path of the ordinary wave to the remote reflection site and then back to the MEC's oscillating field. The ordinary and phase-conjugate ELF waves would have interlocked and constructively reinforced one another to produce phase-locked field potentials that would have manifested at each node of the cylindrical soliton pattern.

One interesting characteristic of a phase-conjugate resonator is its ability to decrease entropy. For example, in the case of optical and microwave phase conjugation considered in chapter 8, when an outgoing laser (or maser) beam scatters from the environment, its entropy increases—it becomes more disorganized. The probe beam scattering back toward the phase-conjugate mirror therefore is more disordered than the original outgoing beam. This state of disorder, however, may be reversed through the emission of the phase conjugate of the probe beam. That is, the emitted phase-conjugate waves precisely retrace the path of the scattered ordinary waves, causing the entropy of the wave system to decrease as the wave regains its original ordered state. As a result, energy that normally would be lost through scattering to the environment becomes bottled up in the soliton wave pattern.

As in the case in which microwave phase conjugation is used to generate intense beams for spacecraft propulsion, so too would phase-conjugate resonance occurring in the vicinity of the MEC generator bottle up back-scattered ELF waves, storing their energy in the soliton wave pattern. The repeating AC oscillations that the roller magnets would generate in the reference frame of the stator plate would then add to one another, causing the soliton's ELF field oscillations to progressively increase in magnitude. Experiments have shown that an optical phase-conjugate resonator can self-excite to intensities sixty times that of the input signal beam without any additional energy input, and it has been suggested that even higher amplification coefficients should be achievable.[16,17] We might speculate that even-greater signal amplification occurs in the MEC.

The faser effect produced by phase conjugation of the ELF waves should amplify not only the MEC's electric field pulsations in the stator reference frame, but also the associated magnetic field soliton pattern rotating with the roller-magnet ring. Consequently, since the direction of the soliton's B field matches that of the roller magnets, the soliton magnetic field should reinforce the roller-magnet fields, causing the ambient magnetic field in the vicinity of the roller magnets to progressively increase over time to far exceed the 0.85-tesla strength produced by the roller magnets alone. The maximal amount of this induced increase would depend on the rpm of the roller ring, higher ambient field strengths being achieved at higher revolution speeds.

As explained earlier, the radial electric field and current flow induced by the circumferential displacement of the roller magnets depends not only on the roller ring's rpm but also on the field strength of the magnets. Since phase-conjugate resonance would boost this field strength, one would expect that the potential developed at a given rotation rate would far exceed the voltage that we calculated earlier on the basis of the Faraday disc effect. In addition, the radial electric field component of the soliton's ELF waves would amplify through phase-conjugate resonance, and in the MEC's nonlinear environment, a portion of this amplified AC potential would likely transfer over to boost the MEC's DC electric field component. Consequently, it is possible to imagine that these effects in combination could produce a DC voltage drop in the vicinity of the MEC of tens of thousands of volts or more, rather than just of a few volts. This would explain the origin of the high-voltage glow discharge that Roshchin and Godin observed even when their 20-kilovolt external bias voltage was switched off. It would also account for the pink, high-voltage glow discharge that Searl observed around his discs. We are here reminded of Tesla's towers, which similarly developed potentials so high that nearby objects were excited to luminesce.

Earlier, we concluded that the circumferential displacement of the B fields of the roller magnets induces a radial electron flow from the stator plate to the rollers that, in turn, generates a ball-bearing-motor torque that aids the clockwise rotation of the rollers. Consequently, the boosting of the radial electric potential gradient due to these various faser effects would proportionately increase the induced-current flow and thereby aid the rotation of the roller ring. In this way, energy from the soliton-field pattern would be continuously converted into mechanical energy, inducing the roller ring to accelerate in spite of resistive losses.

This additional energy input into the MEC is illustrated by the feedback loop on the right side of figure 10.13.

Since this array of magnetic-wall solitons is part of a single resonance phenomenon, these resonant modes should exchange energy with one another. Hence, the buildup of potential energy in the vicinity of the roller ring (the inner soliton cylindrical wall that was assisting roller propulsion) could easily be conveyed from the other cylindrical wall nodes whose frequencies resonated harmonically with this base frequency.

The temperature drop observed in the magnetic walls may be a direct result of thermal energy being extracted from the air and being entrained into the soliton throughout its harmonic range. If so, the soliton field must then somehow be physically interacting with the air molecules in the magnetic walls and possibly be drawing energy from their Brownian motion. For example, the magnetic field oscillating in the cylindrical walls might slightly magnetize the air or solid objects that a wall happened to intercept, and magnetized molecules whose Brownian-motion oscillation happened to match any of the wall's ELF harmonics would then have their energy entrained into the soliton. Consider, for example, an inner wall located 1 meter from the MEC's axis. It would support an ELF frequency of $2f_o$, twice the fundamental frequency. However, this particular harmonic could be excited by an entire spectrum of harmonics existing in the ambient molecular movement: f_o, $2f_o$, $3f_o$, $4f_o$, $5f_o$, and so on, up to the ninth harmonic; recall the discussion in chapter 8. Thus, there are abundant opportunities for frequency matches to develop.

Using the heat capacity of air, Roshchin and Godin have estimated that heat was being lost at the rate of 1,700 calories per second from the eight innermost magnetic walls residing within 4 meters of the MEC's center.* This loss rate equals 7 kilowatts, which slightly exceeds the 6 kilowatts of electric power that the MEC was mysteriously generating without any mechanical input. If the caloric loss of the entire soliton pattern is taken into account out to a radius of 15 meters, then there is more than enough energy loss to account for the MEC's source of power. Thus, the MEC may have a clearly identifiable energy source in its immediate environment. It would be partially propelled by heat flowing into the magnetic walls from the ambient air and laboratory structures, with this energy being subsequently entrained into the soliton pattern. A generator such as this that cools its environment while it generates power appears to be the ultimate solution for the global warming problem.

---

*Roshchin and Godin estimated that the walls measured 12 meters in height by 5 centimeters in breadth and calculated that the air passing through that volume underwent a 6°C temperature drop when the MEC was operating at 550 rpm.

It is also possible that the MEC is entraining background electromagnetic energy. The universe is permeated by energy spanning a wide range of frequencies, including frequencies in the ELF range. Also, there is the well-known ionospheric Schumann resonance, which is excited at approximately 8 hertz by solar particle bombardment of the ionosphere. Higher harmonics of this resonance might match some of the soliton harmonics.

The MEC may also be cohering energy from the omnipresent zero-point energy background that extends throughout space. As was noted in chapter 4, the reactive ether of subquantum kinetics is conceived to have X, Y, and G reactant concentrations that continually fluctuate in magnitude in seemingly random fashion. The X and Y ether fluctuations correspond to spontaneous pulsations of the ambient electric potential field, and the G ether fluctuations correspond to spontaneous pulsations of the ambient gravity potential field. Together they make up the zero-point energy continuum. It seems plausible that the zero-point energy background would locally transfer a portion of its energy to material bodies it surrounds, so that if there was a decrease in the energy density of the zero-point energy background, then one might observe a corresponding local decrease in air temperature. Thus, if the MEC was cohering energy from the zero-point energy background, the observed drop in air temperature might be a collateral effect and not the actual source of the MEC's energy. If it was able to extract energy directly from the zero-point energy background, then the MEC would be able to continue powering itself even in empty space.

The subquantum kinetics zero-point energy spectrum differs from that of conventional physics in that it spans all frequencies, including ELF frequencies. The zero-point energy concept of quantum mechanics and quantum field theory, for example, predicts that such fluctuations should instead occur primarily at high energies since such fluctuations are theorized to arise in the simultaneous appearance of a virtual subatomic particle and its virtual antiparticle. Most of the energy in the conventional zero-point energy spectrum then would be at frequencies greater than 10^{20} hertz (the MeV range) and would extend on up to the Planck limit of 10^{43} hertz (10^{28} electron volts). Conventional physics, then, would be off by at least eighteen orders of magnitude in providing an appropriate frequency match for the MEC's energy extraction. Subquantum kinetics, on the other hand, allows energy to be extracted from the fluctuating ether at frequencies in this ELF range and even lower. In fact, in subquantum kinetics, the probability of a fluctuation occurring increases as frequency decreases. High-energy fluctuations in the MeV range and greater that would be potentially large enough to nucleate the materialization of a subatomic particle would be exceedingly rare events.

If we define our system boundary so that it surrounds both the MEC and the magnetic-wall soliton pattern that it creates in its immediate vicinity, we find that the Searl effect does not violate the first law of thermodynamics, but it does violate the second law of thermodynamics. However, the violation of the second law is the expected norm whenever phase-conjugate resonance is occurring.

10.7 ▪ EXPLAINING THE WEIGHT-LOSS EFFECT

The MEC's weight-loss effect is not easily explained in terms of standard physical theory, but it is understandable within the framework of subquantum kinetics.[18,19] The MEC would develop a negative electric potential at the periphery of its roller ring and positive potential near its central axis. The resonant oscillations would cause this field to fluctuate in magnitude at its negatively biased periphery. From an electrodynamic standpoint, the Searl disc's oscillating field is analogous to the nonreversing AC field that Brown was exciting across the dielectric of his AC electrokinetic apparatus. Hence, the analysis illustrated in figure 4.5 for Brown's apparatus should apply equally well to the Searl disc. That analysis assumed that gravitational thrust was being produced as a result of the creation of a virtual-charge gradient across the capacitor dielectric. Furthermore, on the basis of the electrogravitic coupling prediction (equation 7 from chapter 4), we would expect that this virtual-charge gradient would induce a corresponding gravity potential field. As figure 4.5c shows, the resulting oscillating gravity field gradient would induce a gravitational thrust in the negative-to-positive electric pole direction. A similar thrust would be predicted for the MEC, directed from the MEC's periphery toward its center.

In the subquantum kinetics ether concept, this radial gravity potential gradient is envisioned as a G-on concentration gradient that angles downward toward the MEC's center and whose slope varies cyclically with time. This concentration gradient would induce G-ons to diffuse radially inward at a rate that just compensates the rate at which G-ons are being added to the MEC's periphery as a result of the electrons and negative virtual-charge densities that are being pumped there and that act as G-on sources. Thus the revolving ring of roller magnets would act as an ether pump, pumping G-on sources (electrons and negative virtual-charge densities) toward the MEC's periphery, thereby lowering the G-on concentration at the MEC's center.* This outward G-on flux would likely have a rotary component aligned in the clockwise direction of magnetic ring rotation, in which case a clockwise ether vortex would be produced.

The above analysis suggests that while in operation, the MEC or Searl disc would generate a gravity field in its generator's interior where *up* would be oriented toward the generator's periphery and *down* would be oriented toward its center. Thus, the induced internal gravity gradient would act as a centripetal force that would counteract the centrifugal force of rotation. This disagrees with Barrett's inference that the gravity field in the Searl generator would be oriented with the center being up and the rim being down.[20] In the same paragraph, Barrett commented that "side effect electromagnetic forces help to keep the Searl generator together," that is, counteracting the centrifugal force of rotation. Here he is partially correct; the Searl generator induces a "side-effect" force that helps to keep it from flying apart, but this force is electrogravitic, not electromagnetic as Barrett infers. On the other hand, if the Searl generator was spinning counterclockwise, the gravity and electric field gradients would be just the reverse, and in that case the gravitational field would act to pull outward in the same direction as the mechanical centrifugal force.

---

*In addition to these G-on fluxes, X-on and Y-on fluxes would be induced by the radial X-on and Y-on concentration gradients, which in conventional physics are the counterparts of the electric field. Thus, at the MEC's negatively charged rim, X-on concentration would be elevated and Y-on concentration depressed, while at the MEC's center, X-on concentration would be depressed and Y-on concentration would be elevated. Consequently, accompanying the centripetal flow of G-ons there would be a centripetal flow of X-ons and a centrifugal flow of Y-ons.

Let us consider what effect this radial G-on flux would have on the Earth's gravitational field in the vicinity of the MEC. According to subquantum kinetics, the Earth is a net consumer of G-ons. Hence, it forms a radial concentration gradient in the G ether that extends out into space, with G-on concentration progressively rising with increasing distance from the surface of Earth. More specifically, this ether gradient, which corresponds to Earth's gravity potential gradient, diminishes according to the inverse of increasing radial distance, with the G-on concentration gradient progressively decreasing with increasing distance. This gradient induces G-ons in space to continually diffuse downward into Earth, where they are reactively consumed at a higher rate. This downward flux is illustrated by the large gray arrows in figure 10.15. This environmental gravity gradient extends vertically through the MEC and tends to exert a downward force on it; see my book *Subquantum Kinetics* for an explanation of how etheron gradients induce movement.

Figure 10.15, which displays a side view of the MEC stator and roller ring, also shows the directions in which the MEC induces G-on movement. Thus, when the MEC is operating, G-ons that normally would diffuse downward toward Earth, forming Earth's gravity field gradient, would instead be induced to move in a perpendicular direction, parallel to the MEC's rotational plane. G-ons would be drawn from above the MEC as well as from below, so G-ons residing below the MEC that normally would flow away from the MEC downward toward Earth now would diffuse upward toward the MEC's center, which establishes a low G-on concentration, or G well, when the MEC is operating. Note that the ether flux pattern mapped out here is similar to that mapped by Barrett (see figure 10.4), which was inferred from experiments with the Searl disc.

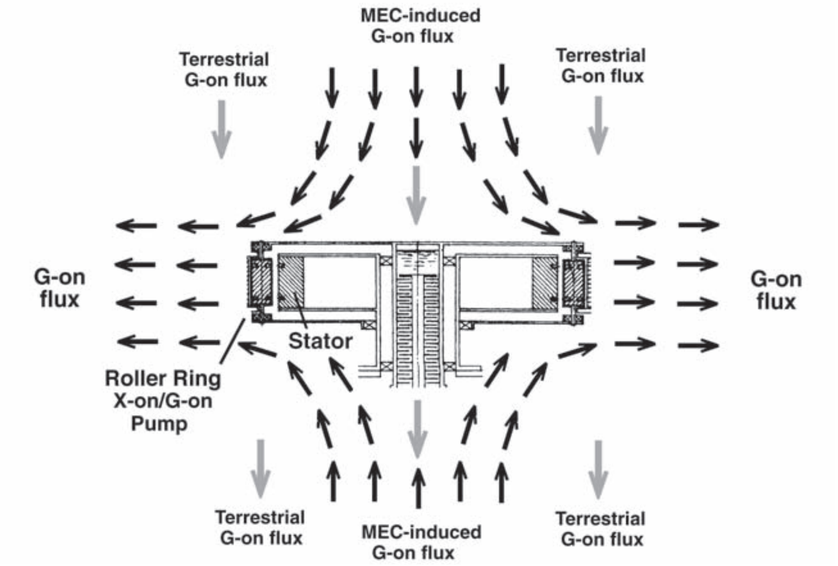
MEC-induced G-on flux
Terrestrial G-on flux
Terrestrial G-on flux
G-on flux
G-on flux
Stator
Roller Ring X-on/G-on Pump
Terrestrial G-on flux
MEC-induced G-on flux
Terrestrial G-on flux

Figure 10.15. Vertical cross-section of the MEC showing how it alters the G-on flux in its vicinity when operating. (P. LaViolette, © 2006)

The alteration of the G-on trajectories correspondingly alters the gravity field gradient passing vertically through the MEC. Figure 10.16 shows how Earth's gravity potential gradient would be altered across vertical sections taken near the MEC's peripheral roller ring (right profile) and near its center (left profile). The dashed line indicates the gravity potential gradient that Earth normally produces. This figure shows that gravity potential is boosted in the vicinity of the roller ring because the outward flow of electrons (negative gravity mass) increases the G-on concentration near the periphery of the MEC and decreases it near its center. Objects approaching near this peripheral region would be gravitationally repelled. The opposite situation would occur near the MEC's center. Gravity potential at the center of the MEC would be decreased relative to environmental levels. Hence, objects approaching the MEC near its center would be drawn inward.

Along the MEC's midplane, at both its center and its periphery, the gravity gradient would approach a zero-gradient condition, giving the MEC a condition of weightlessness at a sufficiently high rate of rotation. Even so, the MEC would experience a net force repelling it

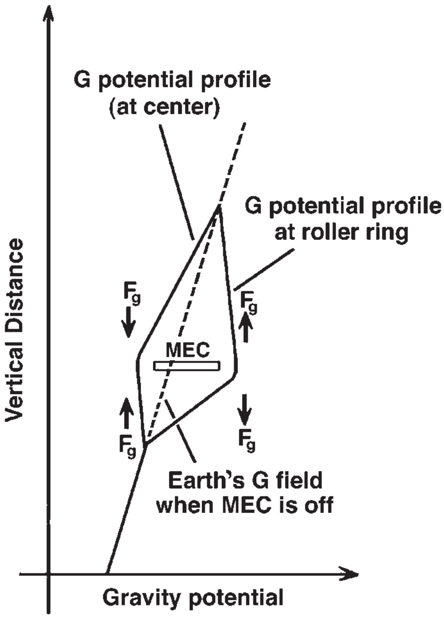
G potential profile
(at center)
G potential profile
at roller ring
Vertical Distance
F_g
F_g
MEC
F_g
F_g
Earth's G field
when MEC is off
Gravity potential

Figure 10.16. How Earth's gravity potential field is altered when the MEC is operating. Arrows indicate the direction of gravitational force outside the MEC. Along the plane of the disc, where the G profile becomes vertical, there would be no gravity gradient, hence a state of weightlessness.

from Earth, just like Searl's SEGs, which would suddenly rush upward after a brief period of hovering. The reason for this is that the MEC would surround itself with a gravity potential hill that would tend to screen the gravity potential well being generated at its hub. This lenticular gravity potential hill would behave just like a body of negative gravitational mass polarity. That is, under the influence of Earth's gravity potential gradient, it would spontaneously move up this gradient from a lower toward a higher potential. Consequently, the MEC's gravity potential hill field would migrate away from Earth's surface, the MEC moving along with it.* This scenario, which follows from subquantum kinetics, is consistent with Barrett's analogy that when the SEG is in the drive condition, its surrounding field is such that "the craft is shot out of the earth's field like a wet orange pip from between the fingers."[21]

If the ring of roller magnets was instead made to revolve in a counterclockwise direction, G-ons (and electrons) would be propelled radially inward, toward the center of the stator. In this case, this auxiliary vortical effect would surround itself with a gravity potential well that would tend to screen the gravity potential hill accumulated at the MEC's core. Thus, the MEC's outer field pattern would behave as though it was produced by a mass of positive gravitational polarity. Its field, then, would be attracted toward Earth and would pull the MEC downward, thereby increasing its overall weight. This is consistent with the observations of Roshchin and Godin.

---

*If a spacecraft was built with the MEC or Searl generator as its central engine, it would be beneficial to convey the electrons emitted from the generator's rim to the hull of the craft, which would be electrically insulated from the generator's positive plate. This would cause the entire craft to be surrounded by a high-voltage negative potential and a matter-repelling gravity potential hill.

The MEC's weight-reduction hysteresis may also have a ready explanation. This concerns the observation that when the MEC's rate of rotation passes a critical threshold, its weight decreasing with increasing rotor speed, if rotor speed is subsequently decreased, the MEC maintains its lowest attained weight even when rotor speed has been dramatically reduced. This may be an indication that much of the MEC's G-on pumping action comes from the field oscillations that produce its soliton pattern. Even though the rotor speed drops, this pattern would still be supplying energy to these oscillating fields and would continue to pump etherons.

Another prediction that emerges from subquantum kinetics is that the inertial mass of the MEC or SEG should decrease when it is operated in the levity mode (clockwise rotation). That is, in subquantum kinetics, an increase in G-on concentration (higher gravity potential) would affect the Model G ether reactions in such a manner as to cause a lengthening of all photon and particle wavelengths. That is, a rise of gravity potential would increase the Compton wavelength λ_0 of the electric potential wave pattern that characterizes the particle's field pattern.[22] This wavelength is related to the particle's inertial mass by the formula $\lambda_0 = h/m_0c$, in which h is Planck's constant and m_0 is the particle's inertial mass. So an increase in Compton wavelength is equivalent to a decrease of inertial mass. This supports Searl's claim that his SEG becomes inertia-free during operation.[23,24]

These interrelated effects of gravity-induced wavelength change and gravity-induced inertial mass change, which emerge as a necessary outcome of subquantum kinetics, allow subquantum kinetics to account for well-known astronomical phenomena such as the gravitational lensing of starlight by a massive body and orbital precession. Gravitational lensing would arise from the wavelength-alteration effect, and orbital precession would arise from the inertial-mass-alteration effect. In the past, general relativity has attempted to explain both of these as outcomes of the supposed warping of space-time by massive bodies. In the twenty-first century, the outmoded theory of general relativity will be forced to relinquish its ownership of these astronomical phenomena as subquantum kinetics enters to fill its vacuum.

This inertial-mass-alteration effect has been demonstrated in the laboratory. Kazakhstan physicist Valery Mikhailov conducted two experiments in which he observed the oscillation frequency of an electron located within a charged sphere. In one, the sphere's potential was varied between –3,000 volts and +3,000 volts, and in the other, the sphere's potential was varied between –125 kilovolts and +125 kilovolts.[25,26] He found that the electron's effective inertial mass changed in direct proportion to the applied voltage potential—decreasing with increasing negative potential and increasing with increasing positive potential. This is in agreement with the predictions of subquantum kinetics. That is, by negatively charging the sphere, the gravity potential in the interior of the sphere should be raised; hence, the inertial mass of particles in the sphere's interior should be decreased, as was observed.

Apparently unaware of subquantum kinetics, Mikhailov cited his results as confirmation of a different theoretical prediction, made by Brazilian physicist André Assis on the basis of force field interactions predicted by the electrodynamic approach of the ninteenth-century German physicist Wilhelm Weber.[27] Assis's interpretation of Weber's electrodynamics theory, however, makes the different prediction that the sign of this inertial effect should depend on the particle's electric charge; hence, a proton's inertial mass should increase when the sphere is negatively charged. Subquantum kinetics, on the other hand, predicts that the proton's inertial mass, like that of the electron, should decrease with increasing negative charge. Apparently, another experiment should be performed on the oscillation frequency of a positively charged ion to determine which of these two theories is correct. Meanwhile, we currently have only anecdotal reports on the behavior of the SEG to suggest that the subquantum kinetics alternative may be the correct outcome.

Yet another prediction coming out of subquantum kinetics concerns the phenomenon of dematerialization. It predicts that if a spacecraft's gravity potential was to rise very high, the craft could become invisible or, in some cases, could dematerialize all together. In such a case, an increase in gravity potential above a certain critical threshold, g_c, would dictate subcritical conditions in the ether reaction system, which in the extreme would cause energy waves and matter to ultimately dissipate, leaving behind uniform concentrations (i.e., the vacuum state). Further experimental evidence is needed to determine whether this could account for observations of spacecraft invisibility.

The analysis presented above for the MEC would apply equally well to Searl's multiring SEGs. Since a second added ring would rotate in the same direction as the first but would be rotating twice as fast and clockwise relative to the innermost runner ring, the gravitic effects of the two rings would be additive, effectively doubling the weight loss of the apparatus at a given rotation rate. This can be compared to operating two water pumps in series. The inner ring of roller magnets would pump G-ons outward and the outer roller magnet ring would further assist this pumping action. Adding a third ring would boost this effect even more.

Compared with the beam propulsion technology discussed in chapters 7 and 8, the SEG and the MEC appear to offer a simpler approach to gravitational levitation. However, it may not be as desirable from a weaponry standpoint in that a craft using such levitation would not be able to abruptly change its direction of flight. This may explain why the military has preferred the beam propulsion technology, since high-speed maneuverability would give a craft a distinct advantage in combat. For more-peaceful applications, such as for high-speed personal transport across the globe or beyond to other planets, the SEG and MEC technology appears to be the better choice. It also has the benefit of offering a virtually limitless energy source that could ultimately eliminate global warming. Power companies, however, will need to reeducate themselves rapidly on basic physics and engineering so as not to follow the police-state tactics of their predecessors. For example, in May 1982, government agents broke into Searl's home, confiscated an SEG unit that was

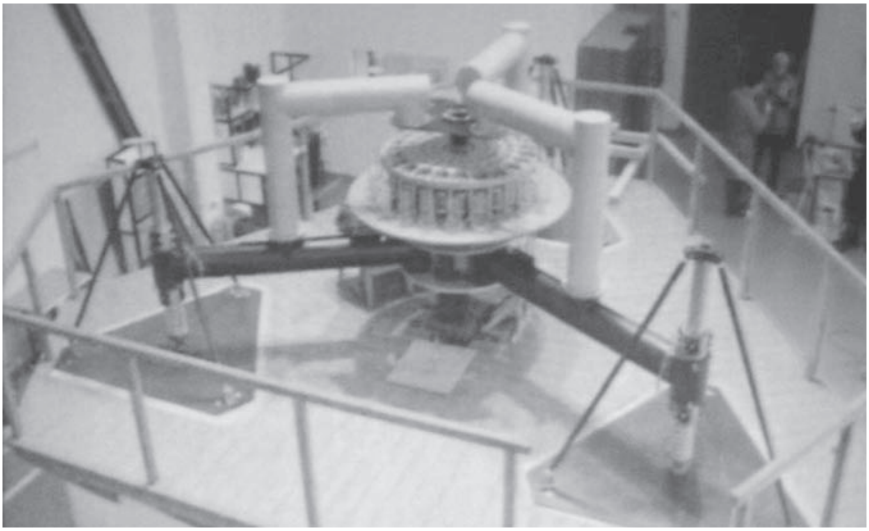

Figure 10.17. The second magnetic energy converter prototype in the process of being assembled by Roschin and Godin in Moscow.

under test supplying electricity to his house, and tore out all the electrical wiring from his house. Citing as evidence a sequence of unusually low metered electrical bills, the Southern Electricity Board then prosecuted him on trumped-up charges of "stealing electricity by means of a unique device," and sued him for a large sum of money. As a result, Searl's family broke up and he became very depressed. The Court had him confined to jail for about a year and while so detained an arsonist set his house on fire, destroying most of his records and equipment.[28]

Roshchin and Godin do not presently have access to their earlier generator. Reminiscent of Searl's plight, they report that their first prototype was stolen from their laboratory. However, they are currently working on building a second prototype at the Glushko "NPE Energomash" Company in Moscow with the intention of duplicating their earlier results (figure 10.17). Groups led by Searl in the United Kingdom and by American researcher John Thomas in the United States are also undertaking projects that intend to duplicate Searl's earlier work.

11

ELECTROGRAVITIC WAVE EXPERIMENTS

11.1 ■ THE DIMITRIOU GRAVITY SHIELD

Stavros Dimitriou, a professor of electrical engineering, has performed an experiment that may demonstrate some degree of gravity shielding. Like the SEG, the weight-loss effect produced by Dimitriou's apparatus appears to arise because electrons are induced to move radially in and out from a central point in a plane oriented perpendicular to the Earth's gravity field. Dimitriou arranged a set of eight wire loops in a radial pattern, the loops' ends being joined at upper- and lower-hub junctures (see figure 11.1).[1] The entire "antenna," which has a diameter of about 90 centimeters, was suspended from the ceiling by means of a thread.

A 15-volt, square-wave pulse signal having a frequency of about 75 megahertz was applied across the antenna's upper and lower hubs to excite currents to oscillate back and forth through the wire loops. These currents would flow radially with respect to the hubs and for the most part parallel to the Earth's surface. Dimitriou was supplying a radio-frequency power of only 2.5 watts to his antenna. In order to maximize the current flowing in the loops, the excitation frequency was chosen to match the antenna's resonant frequency, at which a quarter of a wavelength would fit across the loop's approximately 1-meter

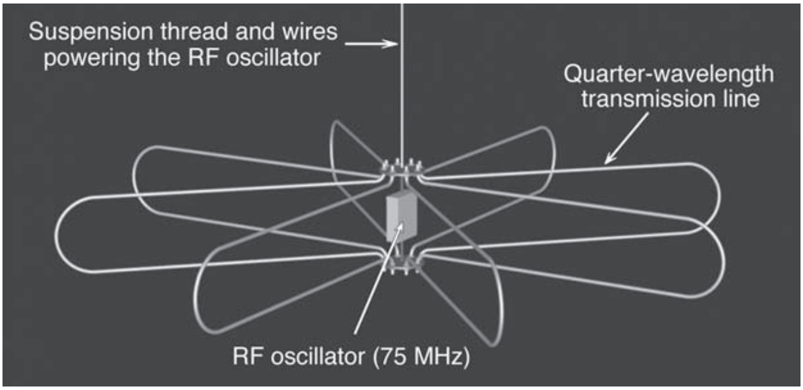
Suspension thread and wires powering the RF oscillator
Quarter-wavelength transmission line
RF oscillator (75 MHz)

Figure 11.1. The gravity screening radio-frequency antenna array tested by Stavros Dimitriou. (Adapted from a drawing on Jean-Louis Naudin's website, http://jnaudin.free.fr/)

radius. At resonance, the currents circulating in the loops would be far higher than the AC exciting current, with maximum values being reached at the antenna's periphery. For example, if his loop system had a Q-resonance quality factor of 90, the 100-milliamp AC signal would have excited currents reaching up to 9 amperes.

Dimitriou measured the antenna's ability to alter gravity by swinging it back and forth on its suspending thread and measuring its period of oscillation, with the AC turned both on and off. Comparing the periods, he found that the antenna's swing period was slightly greater when the AC was on. Since the length of the antenna's suspending cord did not change, he concluded that the antenna was able to locally reduce the gravitational accelerating force by 1.3 percent, with the period of any swing of the pendulum being determined by its length and the force of gravity acting on its mass.* He believed that this reduction arose because currents induced in the loops were somehow creating a local gravity-shielding effect. He also swung a small pendulum bob that he held near the radio-frequency antenna and, by timing its swing, found that its period also increased when the antenna was excited.[2] Consequently, he concluded that objects in the immediate vicinity of the antenna were similarly affected by the gravity reduction.

---

*Period = $2\pi\sqrt{\frac{L}{g}}$, in which L is the length of the pendulum cord and g is the gravitational acceleration.

The question that arises, however, is whether the reported percentage of reduction in the gravitational acceleration, *g*, is a real effect or a statistical artifact. There is considerable error involved in measuring the period of a pendulum. Even with no variation of the gravitational force or the pendulum length, the clocked period of the bob's swing can vary from one clocked period to the next due to friction in the pendulum string, room air currents, and timing inaccuracies. Consequently, such a pendulum period measurement has meaning only if many sets of measurements are made with the AC signal both turned on and turned off, for which period averages and period standard deviations are calculated. If the difference between the average length of the "on" periods and the average length of the "off" periods is shown to be significantly greater than the data standard deviation, then one might surmise that a real effect on gravity is present. But past reports of the existence of a *g* reduction effect may instead be misinterpreting statistical artifacts of the measurement process as evidence of a real effect.

French researcher Jean-Louis Naudin attempted to duplicate Dimitriou's pendulum antenna experiment.[3] He built a similar wire loop array and excited it at a resonant frequency of 83 megahertz. Whereas Dimitriou had used a handheld stopwatch to clock the antenna swing period, Naudin allowed the antenna pendulum to cut the path of a laser beam as it swung and recorded the swing intervals electronically. Measuring the period increase of the pendulum swing, he calculated a much greater, 7 percent reduction in gravitational acceleration when the oscillator was switched on. In another version of the experiment, Naudin tested the period swing of an antenna having wire loops that each included an extra turn at its outer extremities, with the extra loops being oriented in the horizontal plane. With this design, Naudin measured an 11 percent reduction in gravitic force, for a power consumption of about 3.5 watts. Both test rigs were found to have a Q value of about 10.*

---

*Naudin's Q value was likely lower than that of Dimitriou's antenna because Naudin made his loops from uncoated wire that was subject to surface oxidation and, hence, would have had a greater surface resistance. At megahertz frequencies, such as were used in this experiment, current flows mainly on the wire surface. Hence, surface oxides can diminish the antenna's Q value.

However, like Dimitriou, Naudin reported only an estimated percentage of gravitational reduction, without providing the standard deviation values to allow one to judge the accuracy of the method of measurement. Thus, until a test of the radio frequency (RF) pendulum antenna is properly performed giving the purported RF-induced period change along with the variance of the period measurement, it is not possible to determine for certain if the effect is real. All that can be said at present is that it is an interesting subject for investigation.

Dimitriou also proposed another version of his RF pendulum antenna experiment in which the wire loops of his antenna are replaced by a disc-shaped printed circuit board having copper-clad upper and lower surfaces electrically joined at its periphery (figure 11.2).[4] In this way, the two surfaces would form a pancake-shaped RF cavity that would have a beneficial high Q value. He proposed that the lift effect would be more easily seen by testing a 30-degree pie section of the disc and observing its tilt when energized with radio-frequency power, given that a greater weight loss would be obtained at the sector's periphery than at its center.

Naudin has attempted to duplicate Dimitriou's RF pie-wedge experiment. The wedge shown in figure 11.3 was balanced around its center of gravity and checked for evidence of any tilt when energized with a radio-frequency-exciting circuit connected at its apex. Naudin reported that he was able to get some weak upward movements of the wedge's rim, but that these movements were not easily reproducible.

In 2007, I witnessed several tests of the disc version of the Dimitriou RF pendulum antenna being resonantly excited with 20-volt pulses, but in my opinion there was no change of the pendulum's period above the

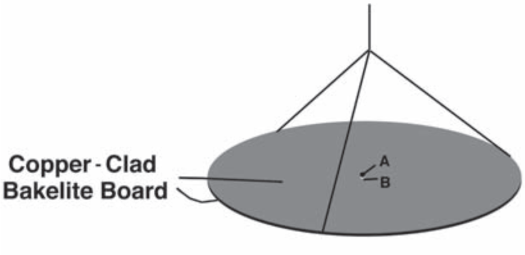

Figure 11.2. The disc-shaped RF antenna proposed by Dimitriou in 2001. The upper- and lower-disc surfaces would be energized with radio-frequency power near points A *and* B.

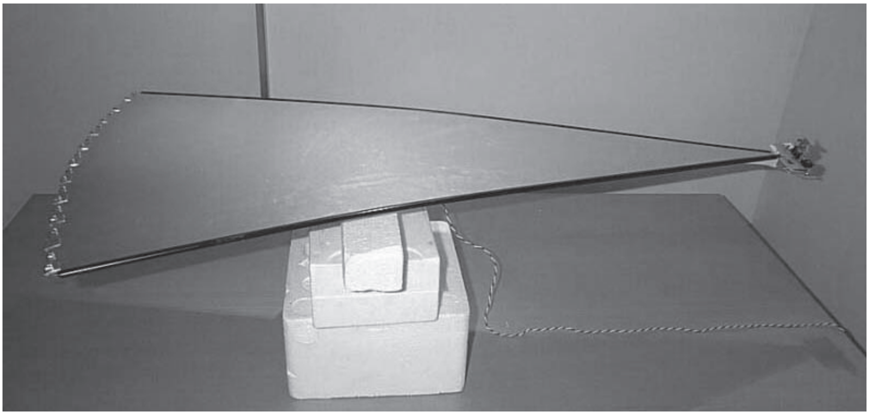

Figure 11.3. A wedge-shaped printed circuit board constructed by Naudin as a test of Dimitriou's experiment. (Courtesy of J.-L. Naudin, from his website, http://jnaudin.free.fr/)

margin of measurement error; hence, no clear indication that gravity was being reduced when the disc was energized. If there was an effect, it was too slight to be detected. By accurately recording large numbers of pendulum swing periods, it should be possible to substantially reduce the variance in the period measurement data, in which case the sensitivity of the test to detecting small alterations in gravity might be improved. If future tests demonstrate that a gravity-screening effect is produced, this would be one of the most promising among electrogravitic technologies, not only because of its simplicity, but also because of its high energy efficiency.

Although it may be too early to theorize about how Dimitriou's wire and disc antennae might produce a gravity-screening effect, we might venture an explanation similar to that given for the operation of the Searl disc. That is, one might expect a gravity-screening effect to arise because G-ons are being induced to move in a horizontal direction (i.e., perpendicular to the Earth's gravity field gradient). The AC resonance in the antenna would set up oscillating electric potential field gradients directed radially inward and outward along the length of the upper or lower conductor wires. Alternatively, in the case of the RF disc, these would be directed radially to and from the centers of upper or lower disc surfaces. These oscillating field gradients would be steepest near the periphery of the wire loops (or disc surfaces), where the induced currents would also be maximal. According to subquantum kinetics, these oscillating electric fields would be accompanied by oscillating gravity potential fields whose field gradients would also be maximal at the loop or disc periphery. Consequently, the radial back-and-forth movement of electrons would be accompanied by a horizontal radial back-and-forth movement of G-ons. The oscillating gravity field propelling these G-ons in the horizontal plane would also entrain G-ons associated with the vertical G-on flux that naturally flows toward the Earth in response to the Earth's gravity field gradient. Consequently, in the vicinity of this oscillating electrode, the ambient G-on flux and its associated G-on concentration gradient would be deflected from their normal vertical orientation toward the horizontal. As a result, objects in the vicinity of this disc would no longer feel the full downward pull of the Earth's gravity, being effectively screened from this field by the disrupting effect of this AC resonator.

In the Searl disc, the pulsing fields were nonreversing and always induced G-ons (and electrons) to move radially outward toward the periphery of the disc. In that case, then, an occupant of such a vehicle would feel a centripetal inward-pulling gravitational force. In a gravity shield created by radio-frequency excitation of a Dimitriou antenna, on the other hand, the direction of this radial G-on flux would reverse 100 million times per second or so. Consequently, the horizontal gravity field component would have a net-zero value.

Brown may have inadvertently been producing such a gravity-screening effect in his vertical-lift electrokinetic apparatus. His electrokinetics patent proposed applying AC to a negatively charged "half-wave radiator" disc electrode positioned at the tip of a conical dielectric (see figure 3.8 in chapter 3). Like Dimitriou's disc, this would have propelled G-ons radially inward and outward in the plane of the disc and set up a gravity-screening field in the electrode's immediate vicinity. The induced G-on flux would have locally redirected the G-on flux that normally moves downward toward the Earth to flow in a horizontal direction, thus decreasing the gravity field gradient across the saucer and locally reducing the *g*-value affecting the saucer's mass. The AC oscillations induced in the positively charged canopy electrode would also have contributed to the gravity-screening effect. Thus, part of the lift that Brown was getting might be attributed to an induced gravity-screening effect.

11.2 ■ LOW-VOLTAGE SAWTOOTH-WAVE EXPERIMENTS

In the mid-1990s, Dimitriou conducted an experiment in which he radiated sawtooth waves from the end of a specially configured dipole antenna.[5] The antenna, which is shown in figure 11.4, measured 18.5 by 12.5 centimeters. A detailed explanation of why it was constructed in this fashion may be found in his master's thesis. He excited the antenna with a 1.1-megahertz, 15.5-volt peak-to-peak RC-Norton signal of the sort graphed in figure 7.6b. The oscillating current would have reached its maximum value along its central wire axis and attained lower values in the two outlying wires, each of which was capacitively loaded with a total of 53 picofarads.

Dimitriou discovered that the antenna created a gravitational force in line with its central axis when it was being excited with this sawtooth wave. He suspended a 4.1-gram, 1.5-centimeter-diameter glass sphere at the end of a 2-meter cotton string from the ceiling, positioning the sphere close to one end of the central antenna wire. A grounded copper

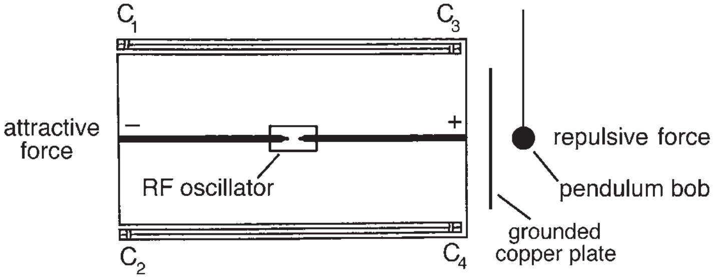

Figure 11.4. An antenna constructed by Stavros Dimitriou that radiates longitudinal gravity waves from either end of its central conductor. C_1, C_2, C_3, *and* C_4 *are loading capacitances. The pendulum bob was hung 3 centimeters from the antenna in line with the central conductor.*

plate was placed between the antenna and the pendulum to screen any electromagnetic effects. He observed that when the antenna was energized, a longitudinal force was exerted on the nearby test pendulum. When placed near the negative end of the central antenna wire, the bob was attracted with a force of 4 dynes, indicating that it was subject to a gravitational attraction of 0.1 percent. When placed near the positive end of the central wire, it was repelled with a force of 3 dynes, that is, repelled with a gravitic force of 0.08 percent g. Dimitriou theorized that this gravitic force was exerted on the test mass by a beam of gravity waves emitted from the end of the central wire.

In yet another experiment, Dimitriou demonstrated that sawtooth waveforms produced frequency shifts in light being emitted from the junction of a light-emitting diode (LED). He reasoned that the LED's junction functioned as a miniature capacitor and that the sawtooth wave created a gravitational force that induced it to move, with the motion producing a Doppler shift of the LED's frequency. He measured the resulting velocity change of the junction by observing the amount and sign of the frequency Doppler shifting that this motion induced in the LED's light. A blueshift (frequency increase) indicated a forward thrust of the LED's light-emitting junction, and a redshift (frequency decrease) indicated a reverse thrust of the junction.

Dimitriou excited the LED with a 1.85-megahertz sawtooth wave having an amplitude of about 2 volts peak-to-peak. The voltage was adjusted so that the LED began to emit its light just when the voltage reached its peak value. This was done because as the LED junction reaches full luminance, it loses it capacitive characteristics and, hence, no longer functions electrogravitically.

He studied the effect of two types of waveforms. One was an RC-RC waveform of the type pictured in figure 7.5b, with an exponential voltage rise that lasted one-third as long as its exponential voltage decline. The other sawtooth wave was a ramp-type wave having a linear rise and linear fall, also in a one-to-three duration ratio. The leading edge of the exponential waveform produced a frequency blueshift equal to 8.16 millimeters per second, and its trailing edge produced a frequency redshift equal to 2.85 millimeters per second, which was 2.86 times less. The ramp sawtooth waveform surprisingly produced frequency shifts as well, with the leading-edge velocity shift being 2.57 times the trailing-edge velocity shift. Also, the ramp wave produced velocity shifts that were about 2.7 times less than those produced by the exponential waveform.

The velocity change cannot be attributed solely to the electrogravitic effects of virtual charges since, if such were the case, the ramp waveform, whose potential varied linearly with distance, should have induced no velocity change in the LED junction. Alternatively, it is possible that the frequency shift of the LED junction arose because the sawtooth waves induced changes in the electrical characteristics of the junction through some unknown effect.

Dimitriou also performed a series of experiments in which he repeatedly charged and discharged a parallel plate capacitor with an RC-Norton sawtooth wave similar to that shown in figure 11.5 and looked for evidence of whether the capacitor was experiencing a gravitational thrust.[6–8] He experimented with sawtooth-wave frequencies ranging from several hundred kilohertz up to slightly more than 1 megahertz, having a comparably low peak voltage of up to 12.4 volts. He produced this waveform using the circuit shown in figure 11.6, which consists of a 7555 integrated circuit chip, two capacitors, and a charging resistor R_1 in series with the test capacitor. The value of this resistor was chosen to be 2,367 ohms, $2\pi Z_o$, in which Z_o is the free space impedance of 376.7 ohms.

Dimitriou applied this waveform to two capacitors attached to either end of a 38-centimeter-long rotor arm, repeatedly charging and discharging them at a 238-kilohertz frequency (see figure 11.7). Each capacitor measured 8 centimeters and consisted of a 1-centimeter-thick

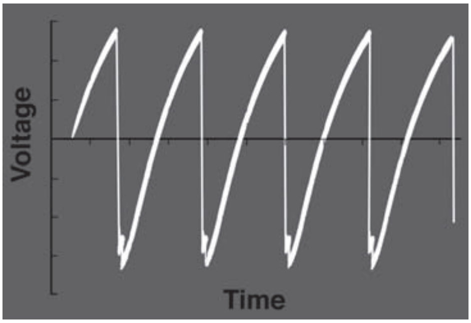

Figure 11.5. An RC-Norton sawtooth wave having a gradual exponential voltage rise and rapid linear voltage decline. The ramp voltage drop was made to last about 3 percent of the duration of the voltage rise phase.

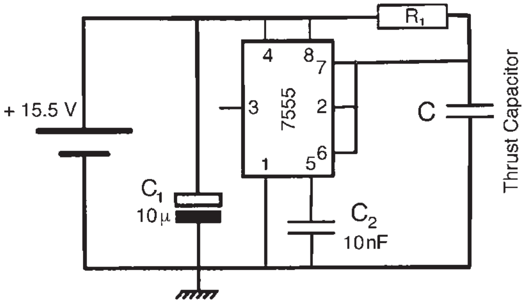

Figure 11.6. Circuit diagram for producing the RC-Norton-type sawtooth wave.

slab of copper flanked by two thin sheets of dielectric that, in turn, were flanked by 0.5-millimeter-thick bronze end plates. The outer bronze plates served as the capacitor's positive and negative electrodes. Dimitriou reported that when he energized them with this sawtooth wave, the capacitors developed a thrust in the negative-to-positive direction, causing the rotor arm direction to twist by about 5 millimeters, which was equivalent to a one-degree rotation. He also ran a similar test made with an air gap instead of a dielectric between the capacitor's plates and reported that it also produced a thrust. Thus he concluded that the effect did not depend on the presence of a dielectric.

In March 2007, I conducted my own tests of Dimitriou's thrust capacitor effect. I constructed printed circuit board capacitors measuring about 3.5 by 5 centimeters and having a capacitance of about 410 picofarads. A piece of aluminum foil formed one plate and the copper-clad printed circuit board formed the other plate, both separated by a layer of double-stick tape. I also built an RC-Norton oscillator based on the circuit diagram shown in figure 11.6 and used it to energize the capacitor with 15-volt sawtooth waves having a frequency of about 1 megahertz. I hung an 80-centimeter-long pendulum bob near one face of the capacitor, but observed no deflection when the capacitor was energized (i.e., $\Delta x < 1$ mm). This indicated that any lateral gravitational acceleration produced in the immediate vicinity of the capacitor would have had to be smaller than 0.1 percent *g*. I also used a waveform generator built by Dimitriou and got the same null result.

For another test, I constructed a capacitor measuring 10 by 13.5 centimeters and placed it horizontally on a milligram balance that was sensitive to 1 milligram weight changes. When energized with the RC-Norton sawtooth waveform, no weight change was observed. Since

Figure 11.7. The capacitor rotor set up in the Dimitriou sawtooth-wave experiment.

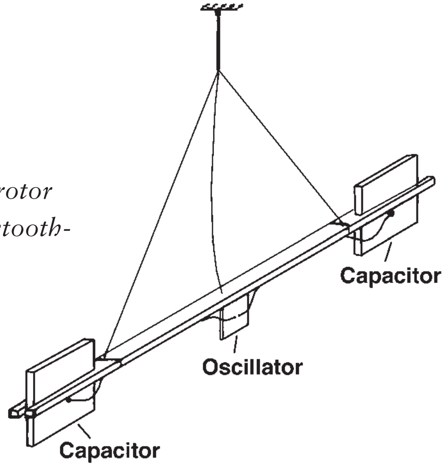

the capacitor itself weighed 85 grams, this indicated that there was no change in gravitational acceleration larger than 0.001 percent *g*.

To check the Dimitriou capacitor rotor experiment, I built a rotor setup similar to that shown in figure 11.7. The capacitors were constructed from two 30-mil rectangular copper slabs measuring 10.5 by 14 centimeters and separated from one another by a thin polyethylene-film layer. The capacitors each weighed about 200 grams and had a capacitance of 655 picofarads. They were mounted at opposite ends of a 90-centimeter-long stick that was suspended from the ceiling at its center point (see figure 11.8). The sawtooth-wave generator and its battery-power supply was attached to the stick. I worked with Professor Panagiotis Pappas and his assistants to carry out tests of the apparatus in his Athens laboratory. We energized both capacitors with the RC-Norton wave, but could see no persistent rotation of the apparatus.

Checking the sawtooth wave with an oscilloscope, we found that an unwanted high-frequency oscillation was present in the waveform, which was due to inductance added by a long lead wire connecting the wave generator to both capacitors. To eliminate this oscillation, we placed the wave generator as close as possible to one of the capacitors and disconnected the wire supplying RF to the other capacitor. The second capacitor, then, was used as an inert counterbalance weight at the opposite end of the rotor arm.

Before carrying out a retest, we constructed a photo-relay circuit

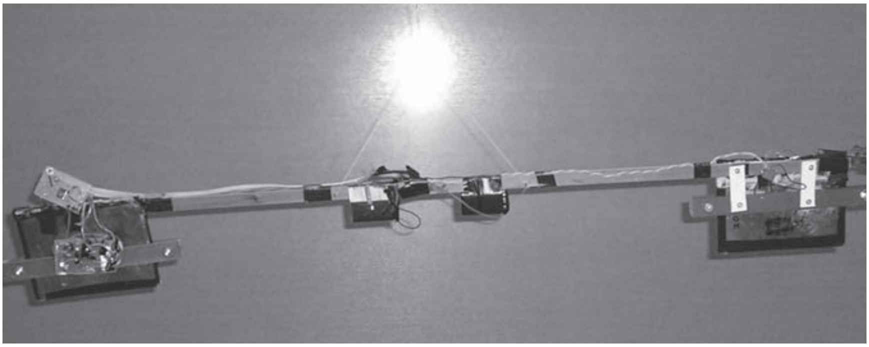

Figure 11.8. A capacitor rotor constructed by the author. (P. LaViolette, © 2007)

that would reverse the sawtooth-wave polarity to the capacitor. Thus, by operating a switch in the adjoining observation room, we could momentarily turn on a room light and activate the photo-relay circuit to reverse the capacitor polarity without actually touching the apparatus. Pappas also set up a video camera on the ceiling that looked down on the capacitor rotor so we could view any movement of the apparatus remotely from the observation room. This was done to minimize the chance that air currents produced by movement of people in the room or by their breathing would disturb the apparatus. We found that it would take at least an hour for the swinging of the apparatus to subside, and even then oscillations would still be present due to room drafts.

We energized the capacitor with a 1.5-megahertz RC-Norton wave, remotely reversing the waveform polarity on the capacitor, but we saw no comparable reversal or alteration in the swing of the apparatus. We concluded that no gravitational-thrust effect on the rotor could be seen other than the rotor's ongoing slow oscillations arising from room drafts. Using a makeshift tensometer, I determined that if the capacitor was able to develop a gravitational force of at least 0.04 percent *g*, a persistent rotary movement of the apparatus should have been observed. The null result, then, calls into question claims that low-voltage waveforms are able to induce gravitational thrusts on capacitors.

Later, Pappas modified the rotor assembly so that the sawtooth-wave generator was supplied with 16 volts DC via fine feed wires attached to the rotor's suspension wire, with the power switch being situated in the observation room. In this way, we were able to turn the wave generator on and off from our remote location. We also deactivated the polarity-reversing relay to omit any vibrations that arose when the relay was energized. After allowing several hours for the apparatus to equilibrate, power was turned on and later turned off, but no thrust could be seen other than the swings arising from room drafts.

Naudin reported that he had duplicated the Dimitriou capacitor rotor experiment and had observed a 1-degree rotation of the apparatus. Our rotor was constructed in a fashion similar to that of Naudin's except our capacitor plates were made from sheet copper instead of sheet aluminum and we activated only one of the two rotors. Based on our results, we are left to wonder whether the 1-degree rotation Naudin reported was due to air currents and not to a true detection of gravitational thrust. In his description of the experiment, Naudin acknowledged that air currents could pose a problem to the stability of the capacitor rotor arm.

Dimitriou's original rotor experiment used capacitors that were much more massive than those used in our experiment, since they each incorporated a 1-centimeter-thick copper slab. Thus, the rotor experiment should be repeated using copper slabs of similar thickness to see if a positive result is obtained. Another experiment that should be duplicated is a rotor experiment that Dimitriou demonstrated to professors at the University of Manchester. In that case, two 1.5-centimeter-diameter mica capacitors were placed at opposite ends of a 25-centimeter rod that was suspended at its center. When energized with an RC-Norton waveform, the arm reportedly rotated 20 degrees.

Dimitriou has developed a working theory that has guided his experimental discoveries, details of which are given in his master's thesis. He makes a number of deductions from conventional electrostatic and gravitation theory that have led him to assume an equivalence between the rate of change of a capacitor's charging current and a gravitational acceleration acting on the capacitor. Alternatively, he formulates this as a relationship between an accelerating rate of change of a capacitor's electric field intensity and a consequent gravitational acceleration acting on the capacitor. As shown in the text box below, his electrogravitic acceleration relationship (13) is in agreement with the subquantum kinetics prediction of how virtual charge induces gravitational force given by equation 8 in chapter 4.

Equivalence of the Dimitriou Electrogravitic Theory with That of Subquantum Kinetics

Dimitriou assumes that a constant current, *i*, producing a constant rate of change of charge, *dQ/dt,* on a capacitor should be equivalent to effecting a proportionate state of motion in the capacitor and inducing its movement at a constant velocity, v, relative to the charge's frame of reference, mathematically expressed as:

$$i = \frac{dQ}{dt} \propto -v \tag{10}$$

Alternatively, given that a constantly charging current will produce a constant increase in the rate of change of electric field intensity, $d\mathbf{E}/dt$, he states that this rate of increase should be equivalent to a proportionate state of motion at velocity, v, expressed as:

$$i = \varepsilon S\, \frac{d\mathbf{E}}{dt} \propto -v \tag{11}$$

in which ε is the dielectric constant of the capacitor and S is its surface area. Note that electric field intensity is the same as the negative of the voltage gradient across the capacitor (i.e., $\mathbf{E} = -\nabla\varphi_E$). Thus he posits that a linear increase in charge on a capacitor plate, or linear increase in voltage gradient across a set of capacitor plates, is equivalent to a virtual velocity vector directed toward the capacitor's positive pole, but that this does not result in any acceleration or motional displacement of the capacitor.

Further, Dimitriou deduces that the rate of change of current, *di/dt,* producing an accelerating change in the amount of charge on a capacitor, d^2Q/dt^2, or an accelerating change in the electric field intensity across the capacitor plates, $d^2\mathbf{E}/dt^2$, should be equivalent to effecting a state in which the capacitor behaves as though it was subject to a gravitational acceleration, $\mathbf{a}_g$, expressed as:

$$\frac{di}{dt} = \frac{d^2Q}{dt^2} = \varepsilon S\,\frac{d^2\mathbf{E}}{dt^2} \propto -\mathbf{a}_g \tag{12}$$

Thus, he supposes that an accelerating increase in charge on a capacitor plate, or accelerating increase in voltage gradient across a set of capacitor plates, is equivalent to an acceleration of the capacitor toward its positive pole. He presumes that exertion of a gravitational force and displacement of a capacitor occur only in situations of the second kind, as in equation 12, in which the capacitor's electric field intensity increases or decreases nonlinearly with time.

On the assumption that the electric field intensity is conceived as a wave traveling at the speed of light and that its amplitude changes with distance in the same manner as it changes with time, equation 12 may be expressed in terms of the change of electric potential with respect to distance, *r*, rather than with respect to time, *t*, as follows:

$$\varepsilon\,\frac{d^2\mathbf{E}}{dr^2} = \varepsilon\,\frac{d^2}{dr^2}\Big(\nabla\varphi_E(\,r\,)\Big) = \varepsilon\nabla\Big(\nabla^2\varphi_E\,(r)\Big) \propto \mathbf{a}_g \tag{13}$$

in which $\mathbf{E} = -\nabla\varphi_E$. Given that $\mathbf{a}_g = \mathbf{F}_g/m$, this may be seen to be identical to equation 8, the subquantum kinetic coupling relation derived in chapter 4 that expresses the electrogravitic effects of virtual charge densities.

Dimitriou's theory relates electrogravitic acceleration to charging current, which is advantageous from an electrical engineering standpoint since the output of a wave generator is often described in terms of the current it generates. Subquantum kinetics, however, has the advantage of offering a conceptual model that allows one to see what might be going on to cause there to be this electrogravitic linkage. It allows one to see the connection between electric field potential, virtual-electric-charge density, gravity field potential, and gravitational acceleration. Subquantum kinetics also shows that a first derivative of electric field potential may also be important in the high-frequency regime. It is interesting that Dimitriou arrived independently at an experimentally based formulation that is equivalent to the electrogravitic formulation of subquantum kinetics.

In summary, further research is needed to check out Dimitriou's findings. I believe that an electrogravitic thrust effect should exist, but at wave voltages much higher than the ones Dimitrou and Naudin were using. Additional experimentation with sawtooth waves in the kilovolt range should hopefully bring this electrogravitic thrust phenomenon up to a detectable level. Similarly, additional experiments should be conducted to excite Dimitriou's disc antenna with RF in the kilovolt range to determine with greater certainty whether gravity screening is produced.

12

HIGH-VOLTAGE ELECTROGRAVITICS EXPERIMENTS

Investigations into electrogravitics have continued outside of the classified world as amateur researchers, inspired by Brown's work, have striven to reproduce his results. Experiments conducted by a few researchers are reviewed below. The reader should be aware that one takes a considerable risk when working with high voltages, since high-voltage power supplies can deliver lethal shocks. Thus, it is not recommended that people undertake these experiments unless they are thoroughly familiar with the hazards involved and have taken proper safety precautions.

12.1 TOM TURMAN'S ELECTROKINETICS EXPERIMENTS

Electrical engineer Tom Turman's initial inspiration to do research in electrogravitics came after reading a 1958 article by Gaston Burridge about Brown's work. In an attempt to duplicate some of Brown's flying-disc experiments, Turman conducted private electrogravitics research between 1965 and 1972, while studying electrical engineering at Texas

Tech University. In 1968, he began corresponding with Brown, both by telephone and by letter. He told Brown about the experiments he was performing and asked if Brown could clarify some aspects of his flying-disc experiments. Brown was impressed with Turman's independent work and at one point was seriously considering hiring him as his assistant. Unfortunately, circumstances did not permit him to follow through.

Turman did not have university funding to help him carry out his research. Most of the equipment he acquired for his task was either given to him or purchased at a low price from electrical surplus dealers and subsequently reconditioned. He had a homemade power supply capable of delivering 300 kilovolts DC at up to 100 milliamperes, an eight-channel oscillograph for use in measuring voltage, current, and force, and a capacitance-type gauge capable of measuring small changes in the weight of a suspended electrogravitic test device.

Turman built several types of lightweight, asymmetrical capacitor devices. One cylindrical device that he built weighed between 3 and 6 grams and achieved maximum thrusts equal to as much as half of its weight.[1] For this design, he used a sheet of insulating plastic film that was a few mils thick and was wrapped around a cylinder 4.75 inches in diameter and 4.4 inches long (figure 12.1). A 2.4-inch-wide aluminum-foil skirt was wrapped around the lower end of the cylinder, with a 0.5-inch overlap onto the plastic film, to serve as the negative electrode. The positive electrode was an aluminum-foil tube measuring 0.25 inch in diameter and 3.6 inches in length that was located at the opposite end of the cylinder and positioned in line with the cylinder's axis so that half the tube extended into the cylinder's interior.

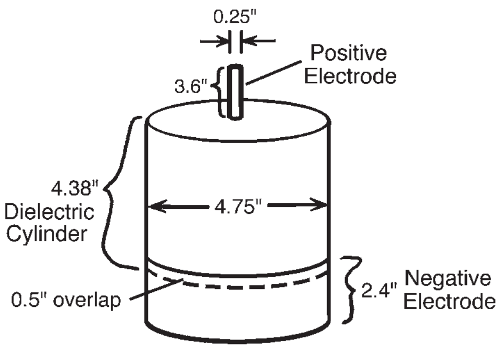

Figure 12.1. A cylindrical-shaped ion-producing device built and tested by Tom Turman. Its construction was based on reports of "lifter" tests carried out by Thomas Townsend Brown. (Based on a sketch by Turman)

Turman found that lift increased exponentially with increasing voltage, *V*, approximately as V^2 to V^3, confirming similar results found in Brown's earlier work. Turman's cylinders developed thrusts ranging from 0.3 to 3.5 grams (5 to 50 grains) when energized with voltages ranging from 35 to 135 kilovolts with a current draw of a few milliamps. He found that the amount of thrust depended on the type of insulating film he used in making the cylinder. He obtained greater thrusts with materials having greater dielectric constants, observing thrust to increase according to K^2 to $K^{2.3}$ (figure 12.2). He also found that thrust depended on the dimensions of the device, such as the length of the positive electrode and its depth of penetration into the cylinder, the length of the cylinder, and to some extent the width of the aluminum-foil skirt. Data from thrust tests he conducted on a 13.75-inch-diameter cylinder are presented in table 1.

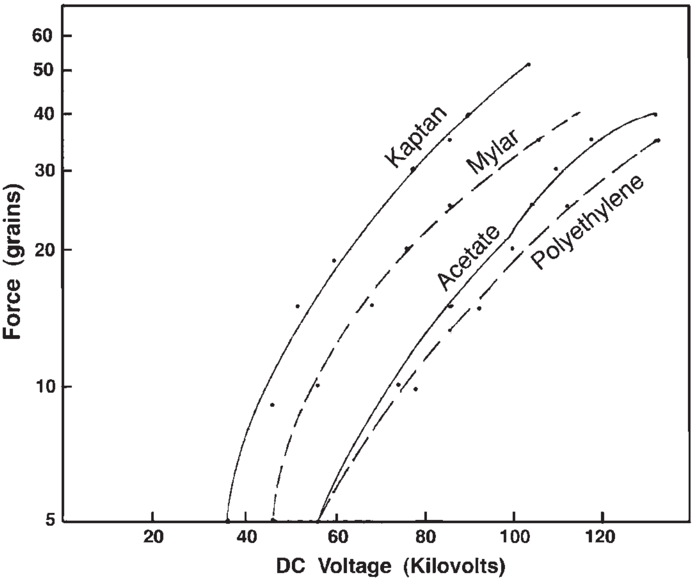

Figure 12.2. Chart of lift produced by 4.75-inch-diameter cylindrical test devices made from various types of plastic film with differing values of dielectric constant (K). Curves are shown for Kaptan (K = 3.7), Mylar (K = 3.1), acetate film (K = 2.9), and high-density polyethylene (K = 2.3). (After T. Turman)

TABLE 1. VARIATION OF THRUST WITH CHANGES IN LENGTH OF CYLINDER AND DEPTH OF POSITIVE ELECTRODE
(Tested at 250 Kilovolts)

Length (inches)	Depth (inches)	Lift (grams)
10.9	2.5	22
11.4	2.3	20
11.6	1.1	20
12.1	2.4	16

Turman obtained the greatest thrust when applying high-voltage DC pulses, an effect Brown also had noted. When energized in a pulsed fashion, Turman's device achieved thrusts nearly sufficient to self-levitate. He found that his cylinder would also develop a thrust when energized with AC, but not as much as when energized with DC. The unbalanced electrostatic force effect described in chapter 3 accounts for the thrust that would be developed when a reversed voltage polarity was applied to the cylinder. Regardless of whether the smaller upper electrode had a positive or negative polarity, more ions would have been emitted in the vicinity of the small upper electrode, where the electric field density was greater, and this would have exerted a strong upward-repulsive force. This force would have been greater than the downward-repulsive force component produced in the vicinity of the lower-cylindrical electrode, where fewer oppositely charged ions would have been generated and where the consequent repulsive force would primarily have been directed radially outward, away from the cylinder's central axis. Consequently, electrostatic ion-repulsion effects appear to dominate over electrogravitic effects in lightweight devices producing a nonlinear field. The same applies to the lifter experiments carried out by later researchers.

Turman noted that his cylindrical thruster device was a copious producer of ion wind, and hence, he could not rule out ion wind as the principle mode of propulsion. However, observing that the electric field between the two electrodes was highly nonlinear, he predicted that the device should exhibit a discernible Biefeld-Brown effect when tested in a vacuum environment. He had almost finished building the vacuum equipment necessary to conduct these tests when he had to disassemble everything and move his residence due to a job change. Afterward, he never reassembled his equipment.

Turman's cylindrical device did not come close to giving the kind of vertical lift that Brown had obtained from his 100-gram, triarcuate-shaped disc (figure 3.2). Nevertheless, Brown expressed considerable interest in the design. In one of their telephone conversations, when Turman told Brown about getting really good thrust from his cylinder devices, Brown quizzed him extensively about them and said, "[M]ake some drawings and send me those drawings because I am really interested in those cylinders." Turman sent him some drawings and data, and subsequently, on November, 1, 1971, Brown wrote back, saying, "Your sketch shows a point and ring configuration of electrodes with an intermediate dielectric tube. I take it the ends of this tube are open and the airflow is in the direction of the divergent field. This would make the tube assembly move in the opposite direction, that is, toward the small positive electrode. Is this not so? . . . Have you observed any thrust with the positive end of the tube closed?"[2]

Another asymmetrical capacitor design that Turman tested consisted of a flat 8-inch-diameter disc of polyethylene film with aluminum-foil electrodes attached to its upper and lower surfaces.[3] The upper

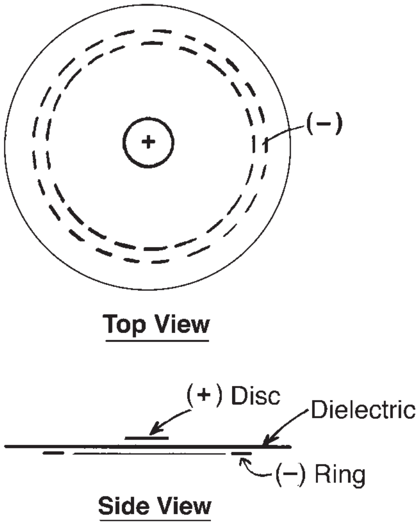

Figure 12.3. A flat-profile electric disc designed and tested by Tom Turman. (Based on a sketch made by T. Turman)

(positive) and lower (negative) electrodes consisted of a 1-inch-diameter foil disc and a 7-inch-diameter foil ring (see figure 12.3). The disc was supported by a balsa-wood structure attached by monofilament lines to an equal arm balance for weight measurement. The device was found to develop a lift of up to 30 percent of its weight when energized. As with the cylindrical device, this flat disc also developed lift when AC was applied to it, but not as much as with DC voltage. Also, the device was found to perform better with DC pulses than with steady DC.

Turman also attempted to duplicate Brown's flying-disc device. He made a 28-inch-diameter saucer out of cardboard and covered it with aluminum foil (figure 12.4).[4] The disc was 2.5 inches thick at its center and tapered to 0.12-inch-diameter blunt edge at its periphery. He curved a 125-mil-diameter brass rod 70 degrees around the disc to serve as the outboard positively charged electrode and spaced it 4.75 inches from the negatively charged disc with a series of Plexiglas insulators. In a static test, the device developed only 4.5 grams of thrust when energized to 80 kilovolts. This yielded a thrust-to-weight ratio of only 1 percent, far lower than even the thrusts observed in the 1952 Office of Naval Research tests in which Brown's discs developed thrusts of 18 grams under a charge of 47 kilovolts. Because of this disappointing performance, Turman wrote to Brown inquiring what might be wrong with the basic design he had used.

In his November 1, 1971, letter (see appendix A), Brown responded by drawing a picture of his electric disc (shown in figure 2.6). This indicated that Brown used a much smaller-gauge wire as his positive electrode, one that had a diameter of 1 mil (0.001 inch). In his electrokinetic apparatus patent, Brown noted that small-diameter wires should be used for discs energized with voltages less than 125 kilovolts. For discs energized at higher voltages, he recommended that the positive electrode consist of a hollow pipe or rod having a diameter of 0.25 to

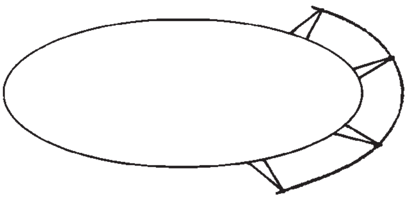

Figure 12.4. A device, similar to Thomas Townsend Brown's electric disc, built and tested by Tom Turman. (Based on a sketch by T. Turman)

0.50 inch. Turman, however, tested his discs in the lower-voltage range with a wire that was more than one hundred times larger in diameter than Brown would have used. This may explain why Turman got lower thrust from his disc. Also, the radius of curvature of the edge of the triarcuate disc in Brown's drawing was eight times larger than in Tom's design (0.50 inch rather than 0.06 inch). In designing his disc, Turman had originally been guided by the diagram Brown gave in his 1960 electrokinetic apparatus patent.

In a subsequent telephone conversation, Turman learned from Brown that the patent did not include a depiction of an optimal design and that the blunt-edge design performed better because it produced a more nonlinear field configuration between its electrodes. Brown emphasized the importance of creating a nonlinear E-field to maximize thrust. Although Brown's patents mentioned nonlinearity, Turman found that Brown placed far more emphasis on this point in his personal conversations. If Turman had decreased the diameter of his positive leading-edge electrode wire by a factor of 120 and had shaped the edge of his negatively charged disc to have a gradual curvature, he would have greatly increased the nonlinearity of the disc's electric field. This would have produced a substantially greater ion emission from the vicinity of his positive electrode, whose forward-acting repulsive forces would have translated into a substantially higher forward thrust for the disc.

Turman asked Brown many other questions as well: Compared with the results of a static test, is the propulsion efficiency of the device increased if it is allowed to run in a circular course? Does the ratio of thrust to weight increase as the size of the disc is increased? What was the largest-size disc that you constructed and what were the problems you encountered? Brown was reticent on the subject.

Turman also built an asymmetrical capacitor device to test the performance of a slatlike device described in Brown's 1960 electrokinetic apparatus patent (see figure 12.5).[5] It bore a close resemblance to the lifter devices that later became popular among electrogravitics hobbyists, but it was of much heavier construction. Turman used a stack of four brass slats as the negative electrode, each slat measuring 1 inch by 12 inches, and a 12-gauge (110-mil-diameter) copper wire as the

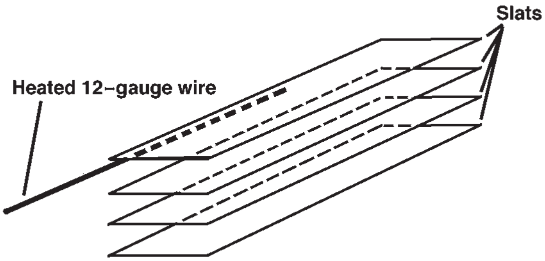

Figure 12.5. A slat-style asymmetrical capacitor device built by Tom Turman that used a heated positive electrode. (Based on a sketch by T. Turman)

outboard positive electrode.* Turman said that his device produced a tremendous ion wind when energized with 30 kilovolts. In addition to applying high-voltage DC to the electrodes, he electrically heated the positive electrode using a modified 12-volt X-ray-tube filament transformer. He found that by heating the positive electrode, he was able to get a greatly increased thrust. He noted that luminous ionization beads would form at regularly spaced intervals along the wire, forming sites where ions were discharged at a higher rate. As the wire was heated to a higher temperature, an increasing number of beads would form along the length of the wire. In his 1928 patent, Brown similarly proposed electrode heating as a means of improving the electrogravitic thrust of his vacuum tube gravitator cells (recall figure 1.6).

Turman noted that after a black oxide coating had formed on the wire, he could still get a lot of thrust, even when he stopped heating the wire. The oxide-coated wire apparently produced a lot more thrust than did a clean copper wire. Turman felt that Brown's flying discs may have used a positive electrode wire that was coated with some exotic material to enhance ion emission. Such a film may have formed on the wire's surface as the result of heating and oxidation. For example, rare-earth oxides are used in radio tubes to enhance the emission of electrons from their filaments. The same type of coating might also enhance the formation of positive ions at the surface of a positively charged electrode. Brown did not mention using heated or coated wires in his flying-disc experiments, and Turman never brought up the subject with him since he performed his tests on heating wires years after he had talked with Brown.

More recently, after reading my paper on the B-2 bomber, Turman speculated that the leading edge of the B-2's wing may have an oxide or chemical coating to enhance ionization. Another way of inducing ionization might be to use RF excitation. According to one source, a major aerospace company had taken out a patent in the late 1950s on a method of using high-frequency voltage on the skin of planes to reduce air drag. A similar technique might be employed in electrifying the B-2.

---

*Turman did not state the thickness of his slats.

12.2 ■ LARRY DEAVENPORT'S ELECTROKINETIC DISC TEST

In 1995, independent researcher Larry Deavenport carried out high-voltage tests designed to investigate Brown's electric disc experiment. He constructed a 16-inch-long armature made from shellacked balsa wood and suspended two aluminum discs 5.5 inches below each end of the arm (figure 12.6).[6] Each disc measured about 2.6 inches in diameter

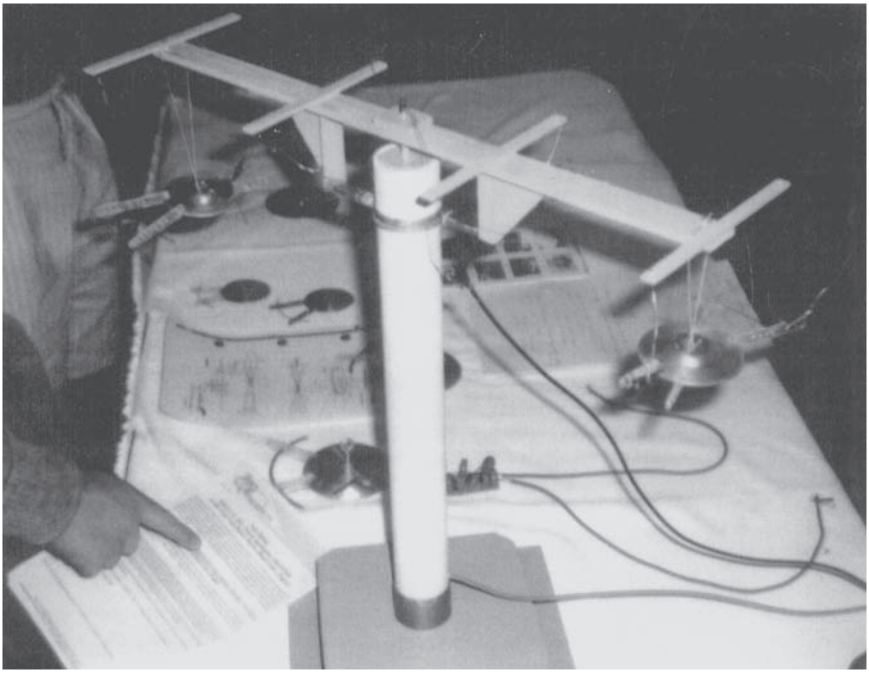

Figure 12.6. A small-size rotary electric disc setup built by Larry Deavenport to duplicate Thomas Townsend Brown's electrokinetic disc experiment. (Photo courtesy of L. Deavenport)

and was one-eighth of an inch thick at the center, tapering to 20 mils (0.02 inch) at the edge. A curved piece of brass wire measuring about 50 mils in diameter and held 1.8 inches from the disc by shellacked balsa wood fingers served as the positive leading-edge electrode. Each disc weighed approximately 33.5 grams. The entire carousel rig was pivoted at its center of gravity on a needle bearing.

When the discs were energized with 0.8 milliamp at 30 kilovolts DC, the apparatus revolved at a speed averaging three-quarters of a revolution per second and reaching as high as one revolution per second (4 feet per second). Ballistic pendulum measurements determined that the discs produced a thrust of 0.58 gram when energized at 25 kilovolts and 1.7 grams when energized at 50 kilovolts.

Deavenport had used a 50-mil-diameter wire, much finer than the 125-mil-diameter wire that Turman had used. However, Deavenport's wire still was about fifty times thicker than what Brown recommended in his letter to Turman. According to Brown, using a smaller-diameter wire would have increased the field nonlinearity around the leading electrode and that would have boosted the thrust developed by the discs.

Deavenport also conducted carousel tests of a cylindrical electrokinetic device made from aluminum bottles.[7] He was able to get the apparatus to revolve at up to one revolution per second by applying high voltage between 50-mil-diameter curved emitter wires secured at the bow and stern of the cylinder and separated from the cylinder by about 2 inches. The rear wire was connected to the cylinder body. He found that the apparatus revolved slightly faster when a negative potential was applied to the lead wire, indicating that the propulsion he was seeing was primarily electrostatic and not gravitic. Deavenport's disc electrodes instead performed better with their lead wire made positive, as in Brown's experiments. Nevertheless, this suggests that Brown's electrokinetic discs most likely would also have revolved if charged with a reverse polarity and that a large fraction of their thrust may have been due to electrostatic force effects.

12.3 ■ ROBERT TALLEY'S ELECTROGRAVITIC ROTOR TEST

Between 1988 and 1991, Robert Talley conducted research at Veritay Technology Inc. to investigate Brown's electrogravitic rotor experiment.[8] The project was financed by a Small Business Innovation Research grant under sponsorship of Phillips Laboratory at Edwards Air Force Base. Talley's experiment was similar to the vacuum chamber experiment that Brown conducted in Paris (figure 3.1), but with two exceptions. Tally used DC voltages ranging up to 19 kilovolts, rather than up to 200 kilovolts as Brown had done. Sparking between Talley's electrodes prevented accurate measurements from being made at higher voltages. Also, unlike Brown's rotor, which was free to revolve, Talley's was restrained by fibers that allowed the rotor's thrust to be assessed through the amount of twist it generated. This arrangement was sensitive to thrusts as small as 0.2 microgram.

Talley's rotor consisted of two capacitors mounted in pinwheel fashion (figure 12.7). Each consisted of an 8-centimeter-diameter brass disc separated by 4 centimeters from a 1-centimeter-diameter aluminum ball electrode. In some cases, a quarter-inch-diameter rod of high-K dielectric such as titanium-lead zirconate (K = 1,750) was placed between the electrodes. The rotor was mounted inside of a chamber that was evacuated to a pressure of 10^{-6} torr (10^{-6} millimeters of mercury, or about a billionth of an atmosphere). Talley found no evidence of thrust when his rotor was powered with steady potentials of up to 19 kilovolts. However,

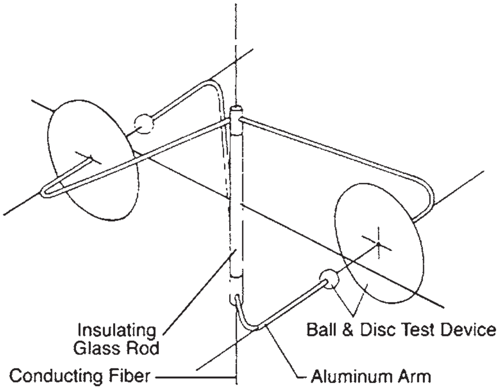

Figure 12.7. A schematic of the test rotor Robert Talley used in his vacuum chamber experiment.

he found that the rotor developed substantially large rotational thrusts when sparks jumped between its electrodes. Since this spark-induced thrust was observed only when he used a high-K dielectric between the rotor's capacitor plates, he concluded that the dielectric material must somehow be directly involved and that this thrust phenomenon could not easily be attributed to ion propulsion or to other known electrodynamic effects. Talley's experiment provides support for the thrust effect that Brown observed when his electrogravitic rotor sparked during tests in a high vacuum.

In 2003, American inventor Hector Serrano duplicated Talley's vacuum chamber rotor experiment.[9] Unlike Talley, Serrano was able to get a 70-degree rotational deflection of the rotor element in the absence of sparking in a vacuum of 10^{-7} torr. Serrano's success may possibly be due to his use of a greater voltage potential, 41 kilovolts instead of 19 kilovolts, so his tests appear to confirm Brown's findings that an electrogravitic force is propelling the rotor in the absence of any ionic discharge. Talley's finding that his rotor did not develop any torque at 19 kilovolts is consistent with Brown's findings that a certain voltage threshold must be exceeded in order to observe a thrust effect. For example, in testing his highly efficient vertical-lift electrokinetic apparatus, Brown observed that he had to apply in excess of 10 kilovolts before any noticeable thrust effect was observed. Also, if we extrapolate the voltage-speed trend line for Brown's electrokinetic disc (figure 2.4), we find that saucer speed drops precipitously, projecting just 9 centimeters per second at 30 kilovolts and 1 centimeter per second at 20 kilovolts. Brown has no data points at such low voltages probably because he found the thrust to be so low that it was unable to overcome his carousel's bearing resistance.

Talley's observation that the spark-induced thrust was greater when a high-K dielectric was placed between the rotor electrodes confirms Brown's statement that the thrust on his electrokinetic apparatus was proportional to the dielectric constant of the support rod placed between its electrodes. For a given voltage differential across the rotor element, a material with a higher dielectric constant would cause more negative charges to accumulate on the negative electrode. Hence, the negative ion cloud formed at the time of spark discharge would have repelled these accumulated charges with greater force to produce a greater thrust in the direction of the positive electrode.

12.4 ■ THE CORNILLE-NAUDIN PENDULUM EXPERIMENTS

In 1996, physicist Patrick Cornille constructed a double-ball pendulum similar to the one Brown had tested in his 1920s experiments.[10–12] He suspended a pair of aluminum spheres, each weighing 500 grams, from two nylon lines and applied between 30 and 50 kilovolts DC to the spheres through two wires secured to these lines (figure 12.8). Each high-voltage feed wire measured half a millimeter (20 mils) in diameter. Each time he turned on his power supply, the pendulum would swing in the direction of its positively charged sphere, in apparent violation of Newton's third law of motion. That is, Brown's classic pendulum experiment apparently violates the law of conservation of momentum. At 50 kilovolts, the pendulum was acted on by a force of 3.5 grams. Curiously, Cornille found that the effect occurred only when he used bare feed wires, as opposed to insulated feed wires. He found that the

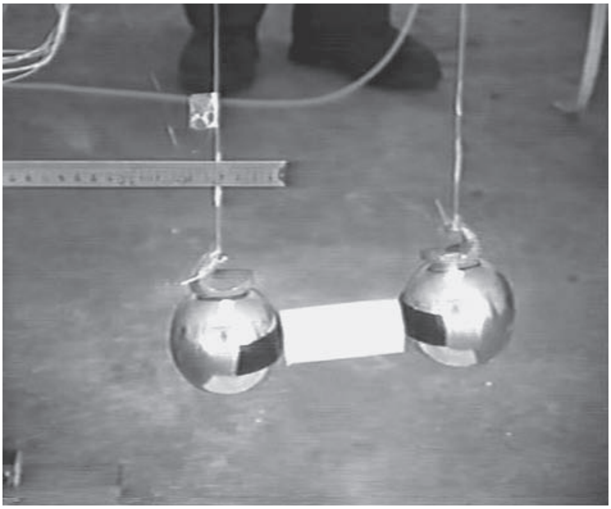

Figure 12.8. The electrogravitic pendulum experiment carried out by Patrick Cornille in July 1996. High-voltage DC is fed to the spheres via the suspension wires. (Photo courtesy of P. Cornille)

bare feed wires were able to emit a 1.5-milliamp ion-leakage current through the air. This demonstrates that the emission of charges into the atmosphere plays an important role. He showed that the conventional ion wind theory, however, failed to explain the pendulum's movement, since ions attracted to the opposite electrode would impact with a force that was two orders of magnitude too small. Also, such a mechanism would not explain his finding that the developed force increased as a moderate function of the pendulum mass, $\sim m^{0.5}$.

Cornille theorized that the leakage current was somehow related to the thrust effect, but offered no clear explanation. As we shall see below, the observed thrust effect is most likely electrogravitic, arising from the ion space charge established in the air. For example, Cornille estimates that his feed wires would have been emitting ions at the rate of about 10^{16} ions per second, since their ion-leakage current amounted to 1.5 milliamperes.[13] Consequently, they would have been generating about 5×10^{13} ions per second per centimeter of wire length. Let us suppose that this built up space charges of the order of 10^{13} ions per square centimeter along the wires. Here, we make a very rough estimate, adopting a value similar to that given in Supplement B of the 1960 "Electrohydrodynamics" report for the ion-space charge developed around Brown's vertical-thrust electrokinetic apparatus.[14] In the case of Cornille's experiment, the volume of air lying within 5 centimeters of each wire would have contained on the order of 10^{17} ions. This would be more than 10,000 times the surface charge that would have accumulated on the surface of the feed wires and the pendulum spheres, which according to Cornille's estimate would have been around 3.5×10^{12} ions.[15] So we see that the electrogravitic force would be substantially enhanced by allowing a leakage current to create ions in the vicinity of the feed wires.

In the case in which the wires were insulated, a small amount of ion leakage would have been present between the pendulum's spheres, but according to subquantum kinetics, the gravity gradient created between the resulting positive and negative-ion space charge would have existed between the spheres but would not have intercepted the spheres themselves (see figure 12.9). Only the lightweight plastic spacer between the spheres would have been affected by this field, so the electrogravitic

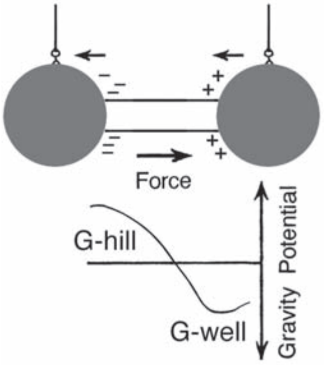

Figure 12.9. Chart of the gravity gradient in the Patrick Cornille pendulum experiment when the high-voltage feed wires are insulated. (P. LaViolette, © 2006)

thrust on the pendulum would have been very slight. Also, since the spheres that make up the bulk of the pendulum mass would have lain on the outer sides of the ion clouds, they would have experienced a thrust in a direction opposite to the central thrust vector acting on the insulating spacer. Furthermore, since the ion-leakage current between the spheres was relatively low at 3 microamps, or about five hundred times less than the ion leakage produced when the pendulum was tested with bare feed wires, the spheres would have emitted only a small number of ions. Hence, the induced gravity gradients would have been quite minimal. In summary, it is not surprising that Cornille observed no pendulum movement.

However, in the case in which the pendulum was tested with bare feed wires, most of the ions would have been released along the length of the wires at a considerable distance from the pendulum masses. The ions released from the lower extremity of the feed wires, where the wires attach to the spheres, would have had the greatest influence on the pendulum. Their ion clouds would have been separated by a sufficient distance so that their induced gravity field gradient would have intercepted part of the pendulum masses (see figure 12.10). The G-on fluxes coming from more remote ion space charges located farther up the feed wire may also have had some effect by enhancing the magnitude of the gravity potential hills and wells being generated in the vicinity of the pendulum.

I would like to emphasize, again, that the electrostatically charged pendulum experiences an applied gravitational thrust in the absence of any so-called space-time warping. The general relativistic concept

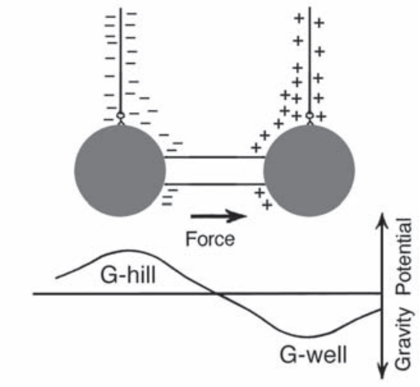

Figure 12.10. Chart of the gravity gradient in the Patrick Cornille pendulum experiment when the high-voltage feed wires are bare. (P. LaViolette, © 2006)

of gravitational space-time warping is a fiction. Understanding electrogravitics requires that we dispense with such outdated ideas and adopt new concepts such as those proposed in subquantum kinetics. Namely, gravity potential gradients are understood to be concentration gradients created in an ether that occupies a Euclidean space. Such gradients cause movement by altering the etheric reactions that are continually regenerating the fields of the propelled object's constituent subatomic particles.

French researcher Jean-Louis Naudin duplicated Cornille's pendulum experiment and found that the pendulum moved even when the vertical ion-emitting feed wires were detached from the metal spheres and supported at the distal ends of the spheres by means of insulating polystyrene blocks,[16] so he demonstrated that charging of the spheres was not crucial to the effect. Like Cornille, he found that the magnitude of the force increased as the mass of the spheres increased, indicating the presence of an unconventional gravitational effect.

These results support the electrogravitic theory suggested above as an interpretation of Cornille's pendulum experiment and also suggested earlier in the analysis of Brown's electric discs. Naudin was generating positive and negative ion clouds on either side of the test mass spheres and, according to the subquantum kinetic theory, a gravity potential gradient would have been generated between these charged ion poles. The test masses, which were situated in the midst of this electric and gravity potential field gradient, then moved in the direction of the outlying gravity potential well, that is, the outlying positive ion cloud (see figure 12.11).

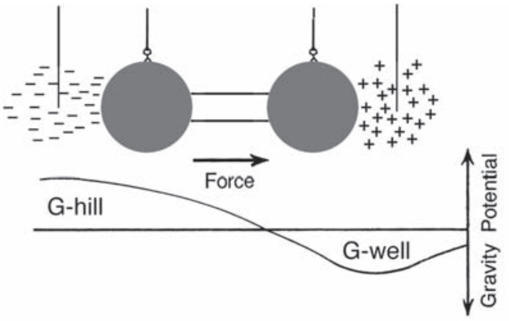

Figure 12.11. Chart of the proposed gravity gradient generated in Jean-Louis Naudin's modification of Patrick Cornille's pendulum experiment. (P. LaViolette, © 2006)

Naudin also tested the pendulum by energizing it through feed wires that were insulated and through which a 0.5-milliamp ionization current was allowed to flow between the two balls. As in Cornille's experiment with insulated feed wires, Naudin's experiment provided no observable pendulum movement. This resolved the question raised by Naudin as to whether current flow might play a crucial role. It showed that it is not the current flow itself that is important, but rather the location of ion discharge in relation to the spherical masses.

12.5 ▪ LIFTER RESEARCH

During the 1970s, Jeff Cameron, an engineer working in Huntsville, Alabama, was researching a laser preionizer, a triangular high-voltage filament used to ionize the lasing medium in a gas laser, when he observed unusually strong forces deforming the preionizer element. This led him later to build and test a large-scale replica. It was similar to the parallel slat thruster described in Brown's 1960 electrokinetic apparatus patent and to the thruster built by Turman, but was much lighter in weight and had its slats arranged to form a triangle. This electrostatic thrust device, which has since come to be called a *lifter,* consisted of three vertical aluminum-foil fins connected to form a larger triangular structure with a thin wire supported horizontally above the fins. The upper edge of each fin facing the wire was made to have a rounded contour. When charged with 30 kilovolts, the device was observed to levitate.

After Cameron posted his findings on the Internet, Naudin tested a modified version of Cameron's lifter that used a 2-mil-diameter

(0.05-millimeter) emitter wire and a central baffle to duct the airflow (figure 12.12).[17] Interestingly, this wire diameter comes close to the 1-mil diameter that Brown used in his electrokinetic disc experiments. The lower-fin electrodes in Naudin's device were 1.5 centimeters wide and 30 centimeters long, and had a rounded upper edge. The wire was suspended 7 centimeters above the fin. His device was able to lift its own weight of 4 grams plus an added 2-gram weight when energized with 37 kilovolts.

After Naudin posted the construction plans for building a lifter on his website, hundreds of hobbyists began duplicating the experiment and testing their own versions. The ensuing frenzy even attracted media attention. Lifter researcher Tim Ventura played a central role in catalyzing this widespread activity that even developed into competitions to see who could build and levitate the heaviest lifter. Ventura's website (www.americanantigravity.com) is a good resource for those interested in ongoing lifter research. Experimenters found that they could obtain even more spectacular results when they combined many triangular lifters into a single structure. Some have been made that weigh as much as 250 grams, which includes the weight of a 60-gram payload. An image of one such multielement lifter in flight is shown in figure 12.13.

Saviour, a French researcher, found that he could improve the thrust

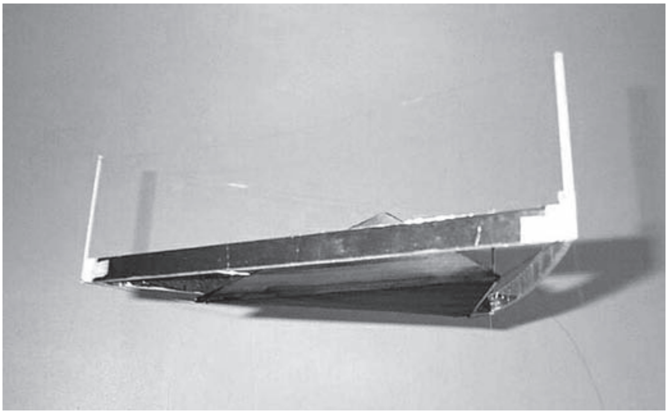

Figure 12.12. A lifter built and tested by Jean-Louis Naudin. (Photo courtesy of J.-L. Naudin, from his website, http://jnaudin.free.fr/)

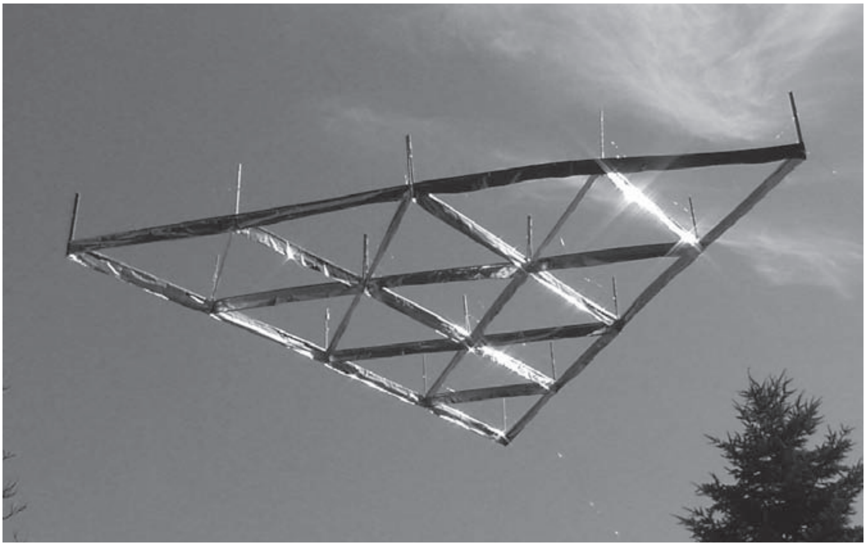

Figure 12.13. A multielement lifter in flight. (Photo courtesy of Tim Ventura)

of the lifter by using a nichrome emitter wire heated with a current from a 12-volt power supply. Thus, he rediscovered the phenomenon Turman had discovered in the early 1970s in carrying out his brass slat lifter experiment. The heated wire was able to emit more ions at a given voltage potential. Again, these findings confirm ideas hinted at in Brown's writings, which indicate that methods of encouraging ion emission from the wire electrode would increase the resulting thrust. Although ions are important in producing the lifter's thrust, its thrust is not due to ion wind effects, that is, forces arising from the recoil or impact of ions on the electrodes. Such mechanical forces have been shown to fall short by several orders of magnitude in accounting for the observed lift.

As Turman discovered in his cylindrical, asymmetrical capacitor experiments, so, too, lifter researchers found that they could get lifters to work by charging the wire to either a positive or a negative potential. Since the lifters are made of extremely lightweight materials, such as aluminum foil and plastic soda straws, electrogravitic forces would not play an important role in producing their thrust. Rather, the thrust is most likely attributable to unbalanced electrostatic forces (see text box on page 368). Others, such as Naudin, have given similar explanations.[18]

Unbalanced Ionic Electrostatic Forces Acting on a Lifter

Consider a case in which the lifter's emitter wire is positively charged. The positive-ion cloud generated around the wire would be displaced below the wire since the field would be stronger on the lower side of the wire facing the underlying negative electrode. This downward-displaced cloud would produce a net-upward electrostatic repulsive force on the adjacent wire. Since the field is very nonlinear and concentrated near the wire, this upward-repulsive force would be comparably strong. Also, the upper edge of the negative electrode would experience an upward force because it is electrostatically attracted to the positive-ion cloud.

The lower negative-ion cloud would not be as extensive as the upper positive-ion cloud for a number of reasons. First, negative ions would be emitted from the negative electrode at a lower rate because of its lower electric field gradient. Second, positive ions brought downward by the ion wind would neutralize many of the negative ions in the air and would also impinge on the negative electrode to neutralize negative charges on the electrode. Furthermore, the mixture of positive and negative ions in the vicinity of the negative electrode would tend to screen the negative-ion space charge. Any net-negative-ion charge present in the vicinity of the negative electrode would direct its force nearly horizontal to the electrode fin, pushing toward the fin from either side. In addition, the downward ion-wind flow would cause a modest negative-ion space charge to build up below the negative electrode, and this would tend to produce an upward-directed repulsion force on that electrode. All of these forces together would cause the entire lifter structure to levitate. If the wire was instead negatively charged and the fins were positively charged, unbalanced electrostatic forces would again produce lift.

Although an ion wind continually rushes downward, that is, in the direction of lower electric field intensity, these ions are continually replaced by newly emitted ions, so these ion space charges will always be present to exert their upward forces on the wire and fin. Any means of encouraging greater ion emission from the upper electrode would increase the ion-space charge in the vicinity of the wire as well as the upward repulsive electrostatic forces, thereby improving lift.

Such electrostatic forces would produce an upward thrust regardless of the applied field polarity. Similar unbalanced electrostatic forces would account for the thrust developed by Turman's cylinders. Electrogravitic forces become more significant in the electrokinetic pendulum experiments of Brown and Cornille, which involve the propulsion of a heavy mass. Accordingly, we find in such cases that the apparatus always moves toward its positive pole.

However, the explanation of electrostatic forces produced by ion-space charges does not tell the full story of what is happening in the lifter. For example, Purdue University researcher William Stein carried out a lifter test in which a 12-centimeter-long lifter was energized with 17 kilovolts in a high vacuum.[19] Although the lifter was unable to support its weight, it reportedly produced a levitating thrust of 0.3 millinewtons. Stein's test would indicate that with ion emission essentially eliminated, a lifter is still able to generate a measurable thrust, which would be about 12 percent of what it would generate if allowed to operate in air.* Hungarian researcher Zoltan Losonc has done a computer analysis of the electrostatic forces that a lifter's charged electrodes would generate when electrified in a vacuum. He has concluded that no lift force should be produced and, hence, that some exotic principle must be operating to explain the results of the Purdue vacuum test.[20] The question remains as to whether Stein's measurements may have been influenced by electrostatic forces developed between his lifter element and the vacuum chamber walls. His 12-centimeter-long lifter should have weighed less than 2 grams, as compared with the arcuate discs that Brown vacuum tested, which ranged in weight from 17 to 125 grams.

Naudin has also performed tests that, like Stein's, suggest the lifter may be generating a force in the direction of its smaller electrode in the absence of ion electrostatic forces. He placed plastic soda straws over a lifter's emitter wires to prevent its emission of ions and found that the lifter still produced a measurable lifting force.[21] He also found that his lifter produced a measurable thrust even when enclosed in a plastic bag, thereby containing its ion wind. Naudin has posted only general information about this on the Internet, leaving some questions unanswered, such as whether the force he measured may have been due to electrostatic attraction between his lifter and the beam balance on which it was placed. So, as with Stein's results, it may be premature to draw any conclusions. If the thrust in a vacuum is observed only when the wire is positively charged, then perhaps the force could be explained as a manifestation of the Biefeld-Brown effect, that is, an electrogravitic force acting on the lifter's mass. However, because of the absence of any massive dielectric element between the lifter electrodes, it is unlikely that an appreciable electrogravitic effect would be present.

---

*To compare this with Naudin's lifter model, whose three fins had a combined length of 90 centimeters and which was energized at a voltage about twice as high, we must scale up this thrust by a factor of 16, giving a thrust of 5 millinewtons, or 0.5 gram. By comparison, Naudin's lifter tested in air achieved a thrust of 4 grams, eightfold greater.

Unclassified public research on electrogravitics research is, for the most part, being conducted by independent researchers, some of whom have been mentioned above. With few exceptions, no similar research is being conducted at universities or government research institutions. Clearly, the science and engineering establishment needs to take a serious interest in conducting additional electrogravitics research before the secrets of field-effect propulsion, currently locked away in black R&D programs, becomes openly applied to make mankind's dream of antigravity a reality.

12.6 THE LAFFORGUE THRUSTER

French inventor Jean-Claude Lafforgue has patented an asymmetrical capacitor field propulsion thruster having a shape similar to that shown in figure 12.14.[22] Like Brown's asymmetrical capacitor, Lafforgue's device develops a net thrust through unbalanced electrostatic forces, with the thrust acting in the same direction regardless of plate polarity.

To determine the thrust acting on his capacitor, Lafforgue calculated the magnitude and direction of the force per unit surface area acting on the capacitor's plates at various plate locations, this quantity alternately being referred to as the *force density* or the *electrostatic pressure,* **P**. It is mathematically expressed as: $\mathbf{P} = \mathbf{F}/A = \mathbf{E}\bullet q/A = \mathbf{E}\bullet\sigma$, in which **F** is electrostatic force, A is surface area, **E** is electric force-field intensity, q is charge, and σ is surface-charge density. Thus, he relies on

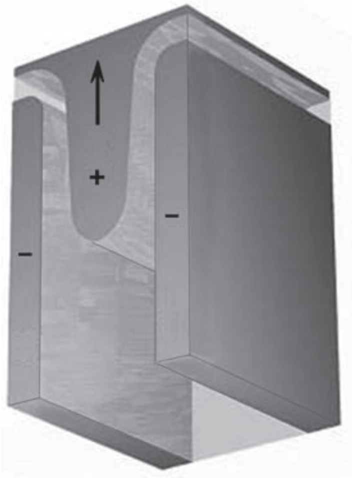

Figure 12.14. The Jean-Claude Lafforgue field propulsion thruster. (Adapted from Lafforgue's 1991 patent)

the conventional practice of calculating electrostatic force as the product of the electric field intensity and the electric charge.

Subquantum kinetics achieves the same outcome, except that it works with the negative electric-potential gradient, $-\nabla\varphi$, instead of electric force-field intensity, with the two being equivalent (i.e., $E = -\nabla\varphi$). As mentioned earlier, subquantum kinetics prefers to work with energy potential (ether concentration), since it regards this as the real existent rather than the force-field intensity. Lafforgue's approach of summing the electrostatic pressures acting over a particular plate surface area to get a resultant force vector is equivalent to the subquantum kinetics approach of multiplying the field-potential gradient present on a given electrode sector by the surface-charge density present in that sector and summing the resulting force vectors. This approach was described earlier in analyzing the electrostatic forces acting on Brown's electrokinetic apparatus (see chapter 3, section 3.3).

Also, Lafforgue proposed that the electric field intensity is seated in the local space-time continuum and, hence, exerts its force on the plate surface charges from a reference frame that is not attached to the capacitor. Thus, any resulting force imbalance would be able to displace the capacitor as a whole. Lafforgue's approach, which presumably was arrived at through experience gained from experimental observation, is in accord with the theoretical approach of subquantum kinetics, which views the electric-field potential as being seated in the ether and able to act on a capacitor independent of the capacitor's reference frame and thereby cause it to be displaced. Subquantum kinetics, though, goes into much greater detail to explain how the electrostatic potential field is generated and how it exerts its force on a charge without any countering reaction force. Since the approaches of Lafforgue and of subquantum kinetics were developed independently and produced similar conclusions, we are reassured from both observation and theory that it is correct to conclude that unbalanced electrostatic forces can propel an asymmetrical capacitor if it is properly designed. An analysis of how unbalanced forces form on the Lafforgue capacitor is presented in the text box below.

Analysis of Electrostatic Forces on the Lafforgue Capacitor

The unbalanced thrust acting on the Lafforgue asymmetrical capacitor may be understood to arise as follows. Referring to figure 12.14, the field lines coming from the upper ends of vertical, negatively charged outer plates diverge as they approach the central, positively charged plate, which curves to a horizontal T-shape at the upper end of the capacitor. As a result, the field lines and surface charge are more concentrated on the negative electrode than on the positive, which causes the attractive force, or electrostatic pressure, that is directed from the negative electrode out to the positive to be greater than the attractive force that is directed from the positive electrode in toward the negative.

The opposing horizontal components directed in toward the positive electrode cancel one another, but the upward-directed component is unopposed, leaving a net-upward thrust. In addition, the field lines emerging downward from the lower tip of the central, positively charged electrode diverge toward the horizontal as they approach the two flanking negatively charged electrodes, resulting in a net force, or pressure, directed downward away from the positive electrode. The forces, or pressures, attracting the two negative electrodes toward the central positive electrode, being for the most part horizontal and opposed to one another, will cancel each other out, leaving the downward residual force on the positive electrode unopposed.

However, since the field gradient at the upper end of the negative electrode is much greater in magnitude than that formed around the lower portion of this central electrode, the upward thrust from the negative electrode will be anywhere from 3 to 18 percent greater than the downward thrust generated at the lower end of the positive electrode. As a result, a net-upward thrust will act on the capacitor as a whole. The result will come out the same even, if the positive and negative plate polarities are reversed.

Naudin offers a considerable amount of information about the Lafforgue thruster on his website. He has taken the force equations given in Lafforgue's patent, made a few minor corrections, and used them to create a calculator for computing a capacitor's thrust.[23] Visitors can enter values for a capacitor's dimensions, charge voltage, and dielectric constant and then compute what thrust would be expected. For example, a 50-kilogram thruster measuring 38.5 centimeters high, 8.3 centimeters wide, and 33 centimeters long, using a 4,000-K dielectric and charged to 100 kilovolts, is computed to develop a phenomenally high thrust of 0.68 ton, a force that measures almost fourteen times the capacitor's normal weight! Thirty of these thrusters would be capable lifting a 20-ton vehicle. Forward movement could be obtained simply by vectoring the direction of one of the thrusters. However, experimental data on a high-K Lafforgue thruster that might substantiate these projections is currently not available.

Since barium titanate has a volume resistance of about 10^{11} ohm-meters, a capacitor of this size would have a total resistance of about 10^{10} ohms, provided that its electrodes are properly insulated from contact with the outside air. This would amount to a current leakage of 10 microamps, or a power dissipation of 1 watt. So, theoretically, all thirty thrusters could be powered with a 100-watt power supply. A propulsion device yielding 20 metric tons of force for a power dissipation of 100 watts would have a thrust-to-power ratio of 2 million newtons per kilowatt, about 130,000 times that of a jet engine.

However, it is likely that due to the opposing thrust vector developed by its polarized dielectric, the Lafforgue thruster loses its thrust once it becomes fully charged. Hence, like Brown's electrokinetic apparatus, it may need to be repeatedly charged and discharged to create a continuing thrust effect. If 30 of these Lafforgue thrusters, then, were to have a combined capacitance of about 30 microfarads and were to be charged to 100 kilovolts once every second, they would draw 300 kilowatts of power. This would project a lower thrust-to-power ratio of about 670 newtons per kilowatt or about 45 times that of a jet engine.

In his patent, Lafforgue notes that in addition to its use for air transport, his thruster could be used for power generation by mounting a number of thrusters around the circumference of an axis and connecting the axis to a generator. For example, four thrusters of the size estimated above, each producing 680 kilograms of force and each mounted at the end of a rotor arm extending 2 feet out from the axis, would collectively generate 12,000 foot-pounds of torque. Spinning at 5,250 rpm, this electrostatic motor would be generating 12,000 horsepower, or 8.7 megawatts, of power. Accounting for efficiency losses in the electric generator and due to bearing resistance, a motor-generator combination should be capable of producing 5 megawatts of power, but the thrusters would require only 40 kilowatts of power if the capacitors were being charged and discharged once per second. Hence their output power would exceed their input power by a factor of 125.

Lafforgue's patent was issued in 1991. If we are even somewhat close in our thrust projections, the question that arises is, What has everyone been waiting for? Why aren't these being offered for sale to power our homes or electric cars? Is it perhaps that people just don't believe that something this simple might solve the energy problem? Indeed, some people's belief in and subservience to the law of energy conservation (and to Newton's third law of motion) are so ingrained that they would rather continue to burn oil and gas and ultimately create ecological disaster on our planet than give up their cherished misconceived belief.

Naudin has built and tested some small-size Lafforgue thrusters measuring just 0.5 millimeter thick and has demonstrated that they produce a net thrust just as Lafforgue claims. Naudin used a low-K epoxy dielectric (K = 3.7) and operated his thruster at a much lower voltage of 9,500 volts, using the test setup shown in figure 12.15.[24] When energized, his Lafforgue thruster generated about 0.03 gram of force, as indicated by the upward swing of the armature. Naudin commented

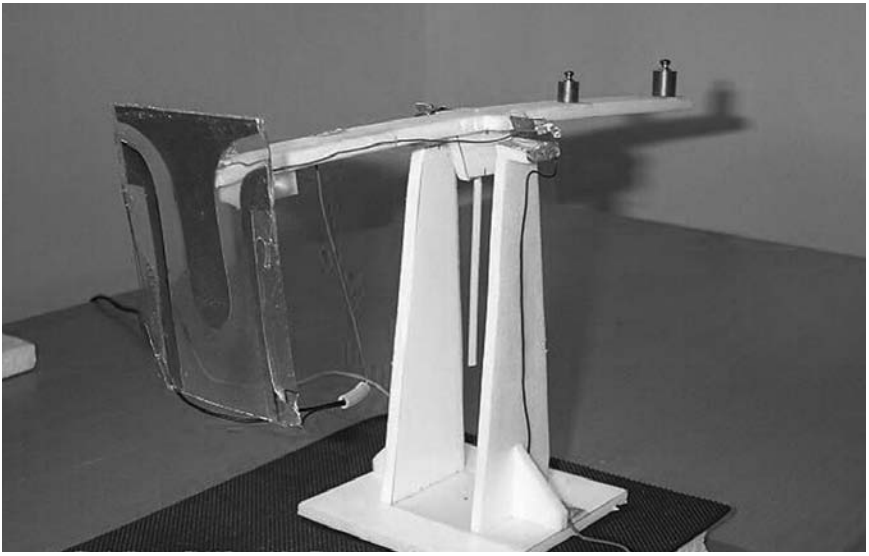

Figure 12.15. A test of the Lafforgue thruster carried out by Jean-Louis Naudin. (Photo courtesy of J.-L. Naudin, from his website, http://jnaudin.free.fr/)

TABLE 2. THRUST-TO-POWER RATIO COMPARISON

Field Propulsion versus Conventional Technologies

Propulsion Technology	newtons/kilowatts
T. T. Brown's electrokinetic apparatus (barium titanate)	70,000
T. T. Brown's electrokinetic apparatus (pyrex dielectric)	2,200
T. T. Brown's gravitator	2,000
Lafforgue thruster (pulsed barium titanate dielectric)*	approx. 700
Lafforgue thruster (epoxy dielectric) tested by Naudin	approx. 30
Jet engine	15
Podkletnov gravity impulse beam (improved version)	0.5
Space Shuttle Main Engine (NASA)	0.22
NASA Lewis Research Center ion thruster	0.23
Phoebus nuclear thruster	0.20
SERT II mercury-propellant ion thruster (NASA)	0.03
Micro-Pulsed Plasma Thruster (Air Force)	0.01

*Based on Naudin's theoretical thrust projection

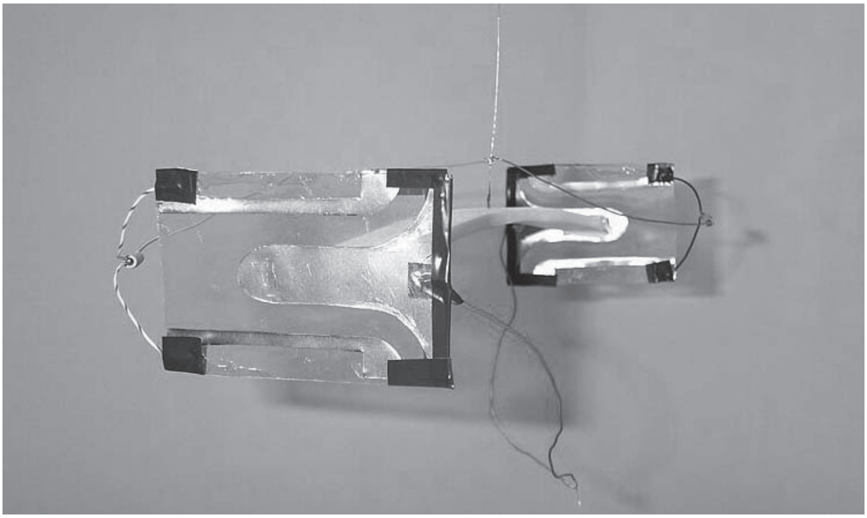

Figure 12.16. A test of the rotating Lafforgue thruster carried out by Jean-Louis Naudin. (Photo courtesy of J.-L. Naudin, from his website, http://jnaudin.free.fr/)

that he was able to reduce his leakage current to "near zero" by properly insulating his capacitor so that the electrodes were not in contact with the ambient air environment. By this, he meant that the current was "not measurable in a microampere range." Supposing his thruster was drawing less than 1 microamp at 10 kilovolts, this would be a power consumption of less than 10 milliwatts, which amounts to a thrust-to-power ratio of about 30 newtons per kilowatt.

Table 2 on page 375 compares the thrust-to-power ratios of various field propulsion technologies to those of conventional jet and rocket propulsion techniques.

Lafforgue's equations indicate that thrust should scale in direct proportion to the capacitor's dielectric constant, in direct proportion to the capacitor's length (e.g., plate area), and according to the square of the applied voltage. This K- and V-dependence is essentially the same as what Brown found in testing the performance of his asymmetrical capacitor, as disclosed in the "Electrohydrodynamics Report," discussed in chapter 3. Scaling Naudin's experiment up to a K = 6,000 capacitor measuring 33 centimeters long with slightly different electrode curvatures and energized at 100 kilovolts, we find that thrust increases by a factor of more than 100 million, projecting a thrust of about 3 metric tons!

In another experiment, Naudin placed two 0.5-millimeter-thick epoxy dielectric Lafforgue thrusters at opposite ends of a rotor arm, as shown in figure 12.16.[25] When energized with 15 kilovolts, the apparatus began rotating, reaching a top speed of 40 rpm. It would continue to rotate as long as 0.18 watt of power was supplied to maintain the capacitor's charge. The thrust was not attributable to an ion-wind effect, since the electrodes were shielded to minimize any ion emission. Hence, Naudin's experiment confirms that the rotation arises from the creation of action without reaction, a clear violation of Newton's third law of motion.

There is no indication that anyone has conducted high-voltage tests of a Lafforgue thruster made with a high-K dielectric such as barium titanate. One electrogravitics researcher, Anthony Colacchio, reported having constructed a Lafforgue thruster made with a low-to-medium-K dielectric consisting of barium-titanate powder mixed into an epoxy matrix.[26] Such a mixture would typically have a K-value of about 30. He tested his thruster at a potential of 100 kilovolts but says he found no indication that any thrust was produced. Given that his thruster was forty times thicker than Naudin's, used a dielectric having an eightfold-higher K-value, and was tested at a voltage about tenfold higher than Naudin's, one would expect a thrust about 35,000 times greater. Hence, this experiment should have produced about 1 kilogram of force if the scaling relations are correct. Perhaps Colacchio observed no force because he applied DC to his capacitor. The dielectric's tendency to create an electric dipole moment directed in opposition to the applied electric field may then have negated the thrust effect. Recall that such was the case in Brown's gravitator experiment. Thus, perhaps better results might be achieved if the voltage is applied to the capacitor as a pulse rather than as steady DC. Naudin, for example, was pulsing his epoxy dielectric Lafforgue thruster with a 5 percent duty cycle. Clearly, more research needs to be done on this design before it can be said to be ready for commercial application. Again, a word of caution: Experimenting with high-voltage capacitors can be lethal.

13

BLACK HOLE DISCOVERED IN NASA

13.1 THE SPACE EXPLORATION OUTREACH PROGRAM

On July 20, 1989, President George H. W. Bush proposed that the United States undertake an ambitious mission of manned and robotic exploration of the solar system that would include building a permanent base on the moon and landing humans on Mars beginning around the year 2014. This was known as the Space Exploration Initiative. Shortly thereafter, Vice President Dan Quayle, who was chairman of the National Space Council, requested that NASA "cast a net widely to find the most innovative ideas in the country" for carrying out the initiative. Thus was born the Space Exploration Outreach Program (SEOP).

To initiate the program, NASA administrator Richard Truly made a public request, inviting anyone who was interested to submit new technology ideas that might help NASA execute the space exploration mission it was undertaking. I was one of about 45,300 individuals who, early in 1990, received a flyer describing SEOP and inviting us to contribute our ideas. All suggestions were to be sent to the RAND Corporation, which was responsible for their review. Ideas were solicited in the following categories:

1. Mission concepts and architectures
2. System design and analysis
3. Space transportation, launch vehicles, and propulsion
4. Space and surface power
5. Life-support systems, space medicine and biology, and human factors
6. Space processing, manufacturing, and construction
7. Structures, materials, and mechanisms
8. Communications, telemetry, and sensing
9. Automation, robotics, and teleoperators
10. Information systems
11. Ground support, simulation, and testing
12. None of the above (specify category)

Seeing that this might be a good opportunity to inform NASA of the benefits of electrogravitic propulsion technology, I decided to make a concept submission under category 3, "Space transportation, launch vehicles, and propulsion." Certainly a means of transporting people to Mars in five days rather than 224 should be of some interest to NASA.

13.2 ▪ IDEA CENSORSHIP

The submission I made to SEOP, cataloged by NASA as idea number 100159, is reproduced in appendix G.[1] My submission pointed out that electrogravitics could make an important contribution toward helping NASA meet its space exploration challenge. I noted that development work on electrogravitic propulsion is currently in progress at major aerospace companies, but that the work is restricted by military classification. Furthermore, I explained that application of electrogravitic technology to NASA's space program to replace outmoded rocket propulsion technology would entail a minimal amount of R&D if aircraft designs already perfected in the military aerospace sector could be declassified. Hence, the issue would not be one of technological feasibility, but rather one of political decision—the decision to declassify an advanced technology already in existence. I suggested that NASA make a serious lobbying effort to convince military authorities to declassify the technology for more open use in space exploration. In addition to citing Brown's electrogravitics work, I included several quotes from the February 1956 *Aviation Studies* report.

A total of 1,697 people responded to NASA's submission request (about 4 percent of the people originally solicited). The ideas were initially screened by Peat Marwick Main & Co. to remove submissions that were deemed to contain classified or proprietary ideas. About 149 were removed as a result of this screening. The remaining 1,548 ideas were sent on to RAND, which divided the workload among five review panels. Each panel reviewed idea submissions concerned with a particular aspect of NASA's activities and each wrote up its own summary report. The review panels carried out an additional screening of the ideas, with the result that only 215 ideas (13 percent of the total number submitted to RAND) were passed on for final synthesis. A synthesis group summarized the RAND panels' reports along with ideas obtained from other sources. These other sources were the American Institute of Aeronautics and Astronautics, the Department of Defense, the Department of Energy, the Department of Interior, the Aerospace Industries Association, several aerospace contractors, and NASA. The overall organization of the outreach synthesis process is illustrated in figure 13.1.

The synthesis group summarized this information in a document titled *America at the Threshold,* which was publicly distributed in the fall of 1991.[2] This appeared to be more on the level of a NASA public relations document than a report with any kind of technical substance. It was replete with pictures of planets and astronauts constructing space stations and attractive artwork of spacecraft. The text did not go into much technical depth. It appeared to be directed primarily to a general audience.

Upon receiving this synthesis group report, I discovered that nowhere did it mention anything about electrogravitics. Puzzled as to the report's silence on the subject, I called up the SEOP synthesis group

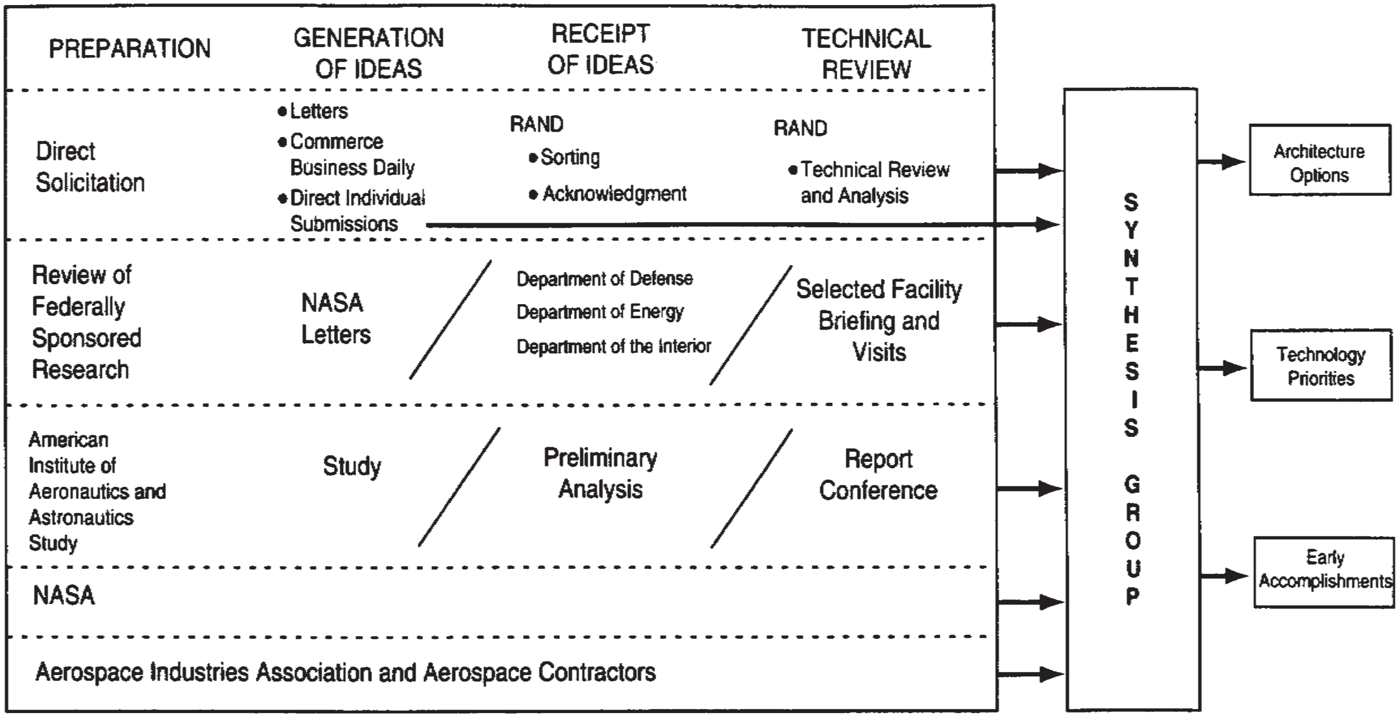
PREPARATION
GENERATION OF IDEAS
RECEIPT OF IDEAS
TECHNICAL REVIEW
Direct Solicitation
• Letters
• Commerce Business Daily
• Direct Individual Submissions
RAND
• Sorting
• Acknowledgment
RAND
• Technical Review and Analysis
Review of Federally Sponsored Research
NASA Letters
Department of Defense
Department of Energy
Department of the Interior
Selected Facility Briefing and Visits
American Institute of Aeronautics and Astronautics Study
Study
Preliminary Analysis
Report Conference
NASA
Aerospace Industries Association and Aerospace Contractors
SYNTHESIS GROUP
Architecture Options
Technology Priorities
Early Accomplishments

Figure 13.1. Chart showing the outreach and synthesis process followed in NASA's Space Exploration Outreach Project.
(From America at the Threshold, *A-49)*

office, but I was dismayed to find that the project had been disbanded. Late in 1990, after the review process had been completed, the Space Exploration Initiative office went through a dramatic change. Aerospace engineer Dr. Michael Griffin took over as its director and replaced almost all of its personnel, leaving only one person who had some knowledge of the preceding activities. I contacted the office at the end of June 1991, but Lieutenant General Thomas Stafford (U.S. Air Force, retired), who had been responsible for chairing the project, was no longer there, and George Abbey, who had coordinated the synthesis group, had been moved to the White House, where he was working on another project. Personnel from NASA who had worked on SEOP later became scattered between two NASA offices—the Office of Exploration in Washington, D.C., and the Exploration Program Office at the Johnson Space Center near Houston. Neither office was able to give me a reasonable explanation as to why electrogravitics had been excluded from the synthesis group report. They suggested I talk with the people at RAND who had administered the project.

However, personnel at RAND were of little help. As far as they were concerned, their contract was over, and they wanted nothing more to do with SEOP. Any telephone inquiries were directed to a spokesperson who would not allow me to speak directly with RAND employees who had been involved in the project. However, they did send me a copy of their technical report summarizing the findings of the panel that reviewed the ideas in category 3.[3] This contained considerably more information on submissions in this particular category and had an appendix listing the titles of the 348 submissions that had been reviewed in this category. However, the main body of the report remained curiously silent on the subject of electrogravitics.

A review of the titles in the report's appendix indicated there were several other submissions beside my own that also had suggested NASA look into nonconventional propulsion technologies. The titles of some of those are in table 3.

I wanted to get copies of this subset of submissions along with the names and addresses of their respective authors for the purpose of correspondence, but was stonewalled. The RAND representative told me all material processed for SEOP had been turned over to NASA.

TABLE 3. A SAMPLE OF NONCONVENTIONAL SUBMISSIONS MADE TO SEOP

ID No.	Name	Title
100105	William D. Taylor	Whirley-go
100136	(unknown)	Inertial drive unit
100153	Joe Hughes	Beyond electric propulsion
100159	Paul LaViolette	Electrogravitics: An energy-efficient means of spacecraft propulsion
100174	Fred R. Nehen	Gyro propulsion
101456	William W. Few	The Searl levity disc
101570	Roger Fritz	Inertial engine
200453	Gordon C. Campbell	How to build a flying saucer

However, people at NASA's Office of Exploration and Exploration Programs Office were not of much help either. One person at NASA thought that the submissions were being stored temporarily in someone's office but did not know whose. An individual at the Office of Exploration seemed to become nervous when I asked him about the whereabouts of the submissions. I got the impression that he actually knew where they were being kept but was trying to avoid telling me. He instead directed my request to the Johnson Space Center office. People at that office, in turn, directed my request to the Washington office. Thus, I very quickly got the impression that I was being sent in circles. This was supposed to be an open, unclassified solicitation of ideas. Why should they be trying to avoid public inquiries into the ideas that had been presented? Was there something about this project they were trying to hide?

After about four months of calling one office or another and getting nowhere, finally at the end of May 1992, I instituted a request through NASA's Freedom of Information Act Office. After some difficulty, they eventually located the archived documents and in September sent me copies of most of the requested submissions. NASA would not divulge the addresses of the submitters, only their names. A review of these SEOP submissions confirmed what I had suspected, that there were others who also had attempted to make NASA aware of nonconventional propulsion technologies and that their ideas had also been omitted from the final report.

Two submissions had informed NASA about electrogravitic propulsion: my own (no. 100159) and that of Joe Hughes, on electric propulsion (no. 100153), which is reproduced in appendix H. Hughes referred to Brown's flying disc experiments as well as to Brown's proposed design for a spacecraft powered by a plasma-jet, high-voltage ion generator. He included a copy of Brown's electrokinetic generator patent. Hughes also cited Dr. George McDonough, director of science and engineering at NASA's Marshall Space Flight Center in Alabama, as saying that electric propulsion "is an interesting alternative to nuclear propulsion which is the only one being considered by the agency" and that the Soviets "consider it a viable way to do the job."

In the case of the submission titled "The Searle levity disc," the search could locate only the abstract. Quite mysteriously, the backup paper that was supposed to contain an explanation of the disc's operation could not be found. As discussed in chapter 10, this is a device developed by the British engineer John Searl that nullifies gravity by rotating a set of roller magnets. It was foolish of NASA not to take a serious look at this concept, since a few years after the SEOP report was issued, Roshchin and Godin, working in Russia on a shoestring budget, built and successfully tested a version of the Searl disc in which the rotor and its test platform were observed to lose 35 percent of their weight with the rotor spinning at the modest rate of 600 rpm.[4]

Several individuals had also sent SEOP submissions suggesting that NASA look into gyroscopic inertial drive as a feasible method of spacecraft propulsion (submission nos. 100105, 100136, 100174, and 101570). Inertial drive technology is entirely mechanical in nature. It generally involves various methods of either rotating or repeatedly jerking back and forth the bearing supports of a massive spinning gyroscope wheel so as to produce a reactionless vectored thrust of the entire apparatus. Several devices immediately come to mind. One prototype inertial propulsion engine developed by American inventor Robert Cook (U.S. patent 4,238,968) has been shown to develop a thrust of 1 pound.[5] Another device, built by Canadian inventor Roy Thornson, has demonstrated a thrust of 8 pounds. Yet another inertial propulsion prototype, developed by Scottish engineer Sandy Kidd, has produced about 0.50 pound of thrust.[6] With the financial backing of an Australian oil drilling equipment company, Kidd has subsequently begun work on a much larger, passenger-carrying prototype. All of these inertial devices blatantly violate Newton's third law of motion, which states that every action must have an equal and opposite reaction. That is, unlike a rocket, an inertial drive unit moves forward without ejecting mass in the opposite direction. Nevertheless, like electrogravitics, such devices have had a long history of development and a proven track record.

The inertial drive idea submissions to NASA were generally quite well written, and in particular, the authors of two of these (nos. 100105 and 100136) indicated that they either had working devices or had done considerable computer simulation work establishing concept feasibility. Yet nowhere in RAND's space transportation/propulsion panel report or in the synthesis group report was there any mention of the inertial propulsion concept. By all reasonable standards, NASA should have looked into these ideas, yet like the other nonconventional propulsion concepts, the RAND and synthesis group reports totally ignored them. If NASA was asked to "cast a net widely to find the most innovative ideas in the country," why had these ideas not been considered? Had RAND selected panelists who were grossly inept, scientists with tunnel vision who callously weeded out some of the best ideas of the bunch just because they did not fit standard textbook theories, or was there a concerted effort to exclude such ideas in the name of national security? The latter seems more likely since the RAND Corporation, which has a history of being involved in intelligence projects and weapons development, is said to be a front organization for the Central Intelligence Agency.

It is doubtful that this screening operation was put in place to avoid criticisms that might have been leveled by academics skeptical of nonconventional ideas. More likely its intent was to discourage NASA from considering technologies that were already being worked on in defense-sponsored black projects. The censorship of the SEOP ideas submitted to RAND can be traced directly to the screening procedures that RAND had adopted. Some revealing information in this regard may be found in the transportation, launch vehicles, and propulsion panel's technical report. It states that of the 350 submissions reviewed by that particular panel, "approximately 30 percent were judged infeasible" either because they "violated known physical laws or the performance claimed for a concept would be impossible to achieve."[7] Actually, the total number rejected on this pretense was closer to 39 percent, since, at the end of the screening process, only 213 submissions had been passed on for more-formal analysis.

The report states that of the submissions that made it through this screening, none contained "any new scientific laws or principles, or wholly new areas of technology . . . nothing was presented that is truly new and revolutionary." Moreover, it states that most of the submissions had proposed "concepts or ideas that are currently being considered [by NASA] or have been examined in the past."[8] These observations about the outcome of the SEOP project should not be surprising; it is obvious the screening process was set up so that any ideas that were truly new and revolutionary were omitted. As the expression goes, Quayle's team of appointed panelists and hired think-tank consultants "threw out the baby with the bathwater." It is apparent that this was not just one other instance of Murphy's Law at work. These people knew what they were doing, as one panelist privately admitted to me that SEOP had received quite a few "advanced technology" suggestions and that none of these had been included in the final summary report.[9]

The bias against considering innovative ideas is evident in the procedure used to rank the submissions. Each submission was ranked on a scale of 1 to 5 (5 being the best) in each of five attribute areas: utility, feasibility, safety, innovativeness, and cost. However, for reasons not stated, these areas were not given an equal weighting. For example, the transportation, launch vehicles, and propulsion panel weighted these attributes respectively as 25 percent, 25 percent, 25 percent, 5 percent, and 15 percent. Thus, feasibility was considered to be five times more important than innovativeness, with such feasibility being judged according to whether the ideas violated "known" physical laws. It is no wonder that after being asked to "cast a net widely" for new technologies, the panelists had come up with nothing, with American taxpayers footing the bill.

What is even more shocking, the panelists usually ranked the submissions by considering their scores on just the first two attributes—utility and feasibility. Thus, safety, innovativeness, and cost did not seem to count much in the final outcome. This explains why the transportation, launch vehicles, and propulsion panel report seriously discusses concepts such as explosion-driven spacecraft and antimatter annihilation propulsion that, by most standards, fail miserably to meet safety or cost-effectiveness criteria. In the case of explosion-driven propulsion, a nuclear bomb is detonated behind the spacecraft and the shock wave is made to impact a pusher plate that propels the craft forward. Nowhere did the report express any concern about matters such as passenger safety and dangers associated with the proliferation of nuclear weapons in space. The report's discussion of antimatter annihilation propulsion is another case in point. It would take a million years using the current multibillion-dollar CERN and Fermilab facilities just to accumulate 1 milligram of antiprotons, enough to propel a 1-ton payload to escape velocity from Earth. Accumulating and storing such large quantities of antimatter is an even more formidable problem, from both the technical and the cost standpoints. If cost was really of any concern, the report should not have even bothered discussing the antimatter subject. Perhaps they were trying to please the fans of *Star Trek*.

In view of the above, it is quite disappointing that no space at all was given to reviewing propulsion technologies like electrogravitics, magnetic drive, and inertial drive that not only are feasible, but are safe and cost-effective as well. One wonders whether the Space Exploration Outreach Project was worth the millions of dollars that taxpayers spent.

It seemed that I had exposed a very large black hole, one that happened to be centered right smack in the middle of NASA and was swallowing up a lot of money and with it a lot of good ideas. We are told that one of the characteristics of a black hole is that whatever goes into it can never emerge again. This definition very much fits NASA's Space Exploration Outreach Program, for in 1991, after the synthesis group report was completed and copies mailed out, participants found it nearly impossible to learn anything about the fate of their submitted ideas or to get any information about ideas submitted by other participants. As soon as the report was completed, the arm of this "outreach program" was immediately retracted, with no plans in place for carrying out follow-up activities. It seemed the program organizers planned it that way from the start. By the end of 1991, NASA had dismantled the project's office and transferred its personnel to other jobs. The original idea submissions were diverted either to someone's office closet or to an obscure archive repository. The rapidity with which the SEOP office was dissolved and its personnel and raw data scattered is reminiscent of the sudden dissolution of an FBI front operation after it has caught its crooks. It is clear that SEOP had been planned to be a one-way information-gathering intelligence operation.

13.3 ▪ THE MISSING DISCS

The transportation, launch vehicles, and propulsion panel report states that information about the evaluation of each SEOP submission was logged into a Macintosh computer database (Fourth Dimension by ACIUS). This included "the unique ID number of the submission, the reviewer, the date of review, the name of the panel performing the review, and the title or subject of the review."[10] Also, the database included the score assigned to the proposal (ranked on a scale of 1 to 5) and a written justification for that score. The report states, "Each reviewer was required to briefly explain the reasons for scoring a submission as he or she did."[11]

Information stored in this computer database should have been made available to anyone requesting information about the fate of his or her submission, but when attempts were made to locate the computer disks, they were nowhere to be found. Neither RAND nor NASA personnel claimed to know their whereabouts. One NASA employee went as far as to claim that there was no computer database. However, one of the transportation, launch vehicles, and propulsion panelists had previously told me he had used the database in his proposal review. Thus, the database definitely existed at one time. I initiated a NASA Freedom of Information Act request to obtain a copy of the information on this disc, but the officials failed to locate this information, either in the magnetic media archives or in the archived boxes containing the written submissions. An appeal also failed to turn up anything. Later, I came in contact with Debra Ladwig, a NASA employee who had worked as a computer support person during the synthesis group phase of SEOP. She told me she had initially received a copy of the discs from RAND and that at the close of the project she had turned the discs over to Dr. Brenda Ward of Johnson Space Center. However, in May 1992, I asked Ward if there had been a computer disc summarizing the submission reviews, and strangely, she maintained she did not know of any. At present, then, the magnetic disc records of RAND's evaluations of the SEOP submissions remain missing. Was their disappearance just an accident, or did someone not want the public to know why certain idea submissions were not included in RAND's final report?

The disappearance of the proposal evaluation database is particularly disturbing. The closed-door nature of the whole evaluation process sounds more like a classified, black R&D project than a NASA program. It is reminiscent of what reportedly was going on in the UFO study conducted by the Air Force under Project Blue Book. According to informants connected with that project, the more-unusual UFO reports submitted to the project were routinely siphoned off to a highly classified intelligence group, never to be seen again by the public. The missing reports not only were absent from Project Blue Book's database but also were omitted from its final report. It is not surprising to find that the same operating procedures are being practiced at NASA to screen out information relating to antigravity and field-propulsion technologies.

13.4 ■ THE NATIONAL AERO-SPACE PLANE

At the time the SEOP report was published, NASA had plans in the works to develop the X-30 National Aero-Space Plane, also called the space plane, which was to be the eventual replacement for the space shuttle. The plane was to use three different propulsion systems. The "low-speed" propulsion system, whose technology was then classified, was designed to take the craft up to a speed of about Mach 3 and to altitudes of greater than 50,000 feet. At Mach 3, a liquid-hydrogen-burning ramjet would take over. Unlike the space shuttle, which uses a liquid-oxygen oxidizer, the X-30 ramjet would be air breathing. A ramjet is a jet engine that has no moving parts and that depends on the high pressures created in front of it to force air through its combustion chamber. Since liquid oxygen accounts for 89 percent of the fuel weight in a standard liquid-oxygen/liquid-hydrogen rocket, this ramjet system allows a substantial reduction in the rocket's overall weight. At Mach 6, the ramjet would convert into a scramjet—a supersonic ramjet—as the airflow in its combustion chamber transitioned from subsonic to supersonic flow. The scramjet then would propel the X-30 into speeds of Mach 12 and greater. Ground tests achieved Mach 12 speeds, and much higher Mach numbers were expected to be forthcoming when actual flight tests would be conducted. For comparison, at Mach 12, a trip from New York to Tokyo would take just one hour. As the space plane would attain an increasingly high altitude, it increasingly would rely on the addition of liquid oxygen to sustain combustion in its scramjet. Outside the atmosphere, it was to rely entirely on liquid-oxygen/liquid-hydrogen rocket combustion.

One problem NASA anticipated with the space plane was that its wing leading edges would experience excessive frictional heating during the plane's high-velocity flight through the atmosphere (at Mach 3 and above). Just in this one area, the project could have substantially benefited from knowledge about Brown's electrogravitics work, which was discussed in two of the SEOP idea submissions, ideas that were weeded out from SEOP's final report. In particular, high-voltage electrification of the leading edge of the aircraft's body, in the manner Brown had suggested, would have assisted in deflecting the approaching airstream so it would not directly contact the vehicle's surface, thereby reducing the air frictional drag and softening the vehicle's transition through the sonic barrier. However, personnel working on the space plane project indicated that they had not heard of electrogravitics or about the potential of high-voltage charge to alleviate air drag, one of the project's most pressing technical problems.

Determined to circumvent SEOP's idea censorship, in May 1992 I sent copies of my electrogravitic propulsion SEOP submission and a copy of the 1956 Aviation Studies report, "Electrogravitics Systems," to Charles Morris, director of the space plane project. He said he would circulate this material among the project's engineers. One month later, he sent a letter stating that "the concept is not appropriate for consideration within the National Aero-Space Plane (NASP) program" (see appendix I). A year later, I convinced him to reconsider the idea. Since he had not kept any of the material I had sent earlier, in September 1993 I sent him a new packet of information (see appendix J). Later that year, when I inquired whether he thought the space plane might benefit by using a high-voltage charge, the director commented that he found the ideas very interesting, but was not optimistic that NASA would adopt such a technology in the immediate future.

Subsequently, a scientist at NASA's Marshall Space Flight Center commented to me:

> Electrogravitics is one of those things that certainly is worth looking at because we're running up against boundaries, and nuclear propulsion isn't going to happen in our time, as far as I can tell . . . We don't have a program. That's the problem. We don't have anything on the horizon where there's support at headquarters for really futuristic things . . . There are some real interesting things out there like this. NASA used to be a lot better at forward thinking than we have gotten to be, and if we are going to survive in this age, we are going to have to take off our "things-as-usual hat" and think about some of these things.[12]

Work on the space plane proceeded for several years but was discontinued in 1994 due to budget cuts and because the program could not deliver the kind of results Congress was expecting. In 2003, there was a strong lobbying effort to resurrect the project, but none of the proposed ideas made any mention of the idea of applying electrostatic charge to a wing's leading edge to solve the hull-heating problem.

13.5 ■ THE *COLUMBIA* DISASTER

On February 1, 2003, the *Columbia* space shuttle crashed to Earth in flames as the result of damage its wing had suffered earlier in the mission. During takeoff, a suitcase-size chunk of insulating foam had broken off from its main propellant tank and impacted the leading edge of the shuttle's left wing, causing damage to one of the wing's thermal protection tiles. The damage went undetected and later caused a major problem when the vehicle attempted to reenter the atmosphere during landing. Air friction normally heats the wing surface to incandescent temperatures during the high-velocity atmospheric reentry. As a result of the earlier damage, superheated gases were able to penetrate a gap in the wing's thermal protection tiles and cause damage to the shuttle's internal wing structure. Exposed to these hot gases, the wing structure ultimately failed, the vehicle became uncontrollable, and it was eventually destroyed by the extreme heat of reentry. Seven crew members perished in the crash.

Had Brown's aerospace technology been implemented on the space shuttle, the Columbia disaster would never have happened. Thirteen years earlier, two SEOP submissions had pointed out the advantages of electrogravitics, but the SEOP review panel discarded the ideas and did not include them in its final report to NASA. As mentioned earlier, in 1992 I had also contacted space plane project director Charles Morris of NASA to suggest a solution to the hull-heating problem foreseen to plague the project. I had pointed out to him how air-friction heating of the leading edge of a shuttlecraft's wing could be prevented simply by applying a high-voltage charge to the wing. Again, in my 1993 letter to him (reproduced in appendix J), I wrote ". . . electrostatic charging of the plane's leading edge would also have the added benefit of reducing air friction heating of the hull surface." However, NASA personnel did not employ the idea.

Somewhat later I spoke with Jonathan Campbell, an engineer who works on electrical propulsion systems at NASA's Marshall Space Flight Center. I learned that he had been trying for years to convince NASA to look into electrokinetics as a means for spacecraft propulsion, but his requests for money were routinely turned down by management. He took out two patents on a thrust-producing apparatus (see figure 13.2) that is very similar to one of Brown's electrohydrodynamic devices. Although he has acknowledged that Brown's work inspired him to develop his cylindrical thruster, curiously, Campbell's patent did not cite or discuss Brown's prior work.[13]* Campbell has a more conventional view on the

---

*Interestingly, Turman's cylindrical thruster experiment (see chapter 12) bears a close resemblance to Campbell's asymmetrical capacitor; compare figure 13.2 to figure 12.1. Turman's research predates Campbell's patent application by at least twenty-six years.

Figure 13.2. A symmetrical capacitor apparatus for generating thrust. A high-voltage DC potential causes air to flow from the copper cylinder toward the copper disc. (Campbell, 2001)

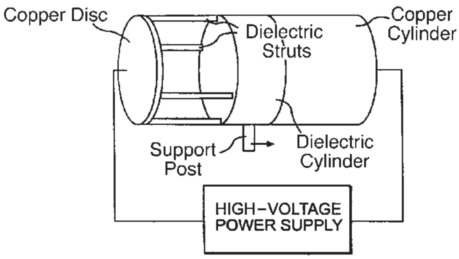

operation of asymmetrical capacitors than Brown and others, denying that any exotic principle such as electrogravitics operates. His patent did not discuss the idea of charging the leading edge of a spacecraft's wing, so even if NASA had funded Campbell's research, there is no guarantee that Brown's airframe-charging idea would have been employed.

In March 2003, I submitted a suggestion to the Columbia Accident Investigation Board (reproduced in appendix J). I pointed out again the benefits of charging the wing leading edge, stating, "One technology that could prevent a Columbia-type hazard from happening in the future would be to apply a high voltage charge to the Space Shuttle hull during reentry, in particular to the leading edge of its wing. The ion sheath so formed would create a buffer zone around the craft, ionizing, repelling and deflecting oncoming air molecules and thereby preventing them from directly impacting and heating the hull." I also noted that Northrop had researched this technique thirty-five years earlier and named some references they could consult. I also summarized Brown's work and the use of electrogravitics on the B-2 bomber. I noted how I had earlier attempted to make NASA aware of the technology, both through my submission to SEOP and through my contacts with Morris. I named Campbell as someone at NASA whom they could contact and also offered my own assistance to point them in the right direction, but nothing ever came of my suggestions. All they sent me was a form letter thanking me for my input. Efforts made to resurrect the space plane as a future space shuttle replacement made no mention of my suggestion for wing electrification.

The aerospace industry has not shown the same bureaucratic dinocracy. In 1994, one year after NASA turned down the idea for its space plane, BAE Corporation (formerly British Aerospace) became seriously interested in Russian research into plasma air-drag reduction. Together with the Defence Evaluation and Research Agency (DERA), Britain's military research organization, it began researching the idea of generating plasmas upwind of an aircraft as a means of reducing air drag.[14]

In 1996, Terry Cain, a research engineer with DERA, traveled to Russia to meet Anatoly Klimov and his colleagues and to repeat the plasma drag reduction experiments they had performed. At the Central Aerohydrodynamics Institute, near Moscow, they carried out supersonic wind tunnel tests on 10-centimeter, conical-shaped bodies that used plasma generators to create upstream plasmas. One method they used to generate the plasmas was to energize the cones with a Tesla coil that created voltages high enough to cause air to ionize over large distances. The high-voltage fields generated "little streamers of lightning" that propagated into the airflow ahead of the test model.[15] They measured drag reductions of 10 percent.

In the United States, the Arnold Engineering Development Center, at Arnold Air Force Base in Tennessee, has modified its wind tunnels to conduct airflow tests of plasma-assisted models. The long list of aerospace planes that have undergone aerodynamic testing at Arnold includes the B-2 Stealth Bomber and the X-30 National Aero-Space Plane. In 2000, the head of its applied technology directorate was quoted as saying that a number of organizations have shown interest in plasma air-drag reduction, although he would not give their names. Might we expect NASA to be among those showing interest?[16]

13.6 ■ NASA: A MILITARY FRONT ORGANIZATION?

Donna Hare, a former employee of a NASA contractor, has disclosed evidence that implicates NASA in covering up evidence of the presence of advanced-technology spacecraft. During the 1970s, Hare worked for NASA contractor Philco Ford in its photo lab at the Johnson Space Center. Since she had a secret clearance, she was able, one day, to walk into the NASA photo lab where a friend of hers worked. The lab was involved in developing satellite pictures and pictures taken during NASA's various missions. Her friend directed her attention to an area of a photo mosaic he had been working on. Then, smiling, he suggested she look at a particular area of one of these photo panels. There she saw a round white dot with a very crisp outline. She asked if it was a dot on the emulsion. Grinning, he said, “Dots on the emulsion don’t leave shadows on the ground.” Sure enough, there was a round shadow on the trees at the correct angle from where the sun would have been shining. She asked, “Is this a UFO?” He answered, “I can’t tell you that,” meaning it was a UFO, but he wasn’t allowed to tell her it was. He said, “We always have to airbrush them out before we sell them to the public.” Hare’s astounding testimony can be found in Stephen Greer’s book *Disclosure*.[17]

Hare also disclosed stories she had heard from NASA employees about some astronauts having seen extraterrestrial craft. One gentleman whom she knew very well said just about every one of the astronauts who had gone to the moon had seen things. One said there were three craft on the moon at the time the Apollo 11 mission had landed. He said that as a precaution, the astronauts were put in quarantine for a while after they had returned and that some of the astronauts who wanted to talk were threatened.

Hare also related a story told to her by someone who used to work at Johnson Space Center as a security guard.[18] He said one day soldiers came in fatigues and ordered him to burn photographs. At one point, he stole a glance at one of the pictures and could see that it was a UFO on the ground. One of the guards apparently caught him doing this and hit him in the head with a gun butt. She said she could see that as he told his story, he was very frightened.

So we see that NASA and its employees are being threatened and manipulated into silence to maintain the status quo of a cover-up about the presence of alien craft and the existence of advanced aerospace propulsion technologies. Seeing that the NASA administration seem determined to steer clear of electrogravitics technology despite repeated attempts by several people to interest them, one is led to sympathize with Tom, my Project Skyvault contact, who said in the note he passed me at the 1994 Tesla conference that NASA is essentially a public relations organization or a front that obscures Air Force space research.

Over the phone, Tom later told me an astounding story of the scope of the Air Force’s involvement in space. He said he had been in the

Civil Air Patrol and had been given a Mitchelson Award, the highest award that one could get. As a result, in 1963 he was chosen to represent the state of Idaho and go to Chanute Air Force Base along with Civil Air Patrol representatives from the other forty-nine states. One day they were all gathered in an auditorium, and onstage there were about eight generals who were available for a "no bars" question-and-answer period. One person popped up and asked them about Air Force Major Donald E. Keyhoe, who at the time was writing about UFOs and had been severely censored. One of the generals responded that they had a way of taking care of people who gave out a little too much information. He said they would use physical injury or whatever was necessary to make them shut up, indicating they would kill a person (extreme prejudice, if you will). Someone else started to ask more about UFOs and one of the generals said the United States had a defense system in place at the time that consisted of a number of satellites, in orbit not only around the Earth, but also around Mercury, Venus, Mars, and a few other, more distant planets they couldn't talk about. He said the satellites together functioned as an early warning system, that they were afraid of the "people out there" because they didn't know very much about them. This satellite defense system was built to observe three possible sources: missiles that might come from the Soviet Union, missiles that might come from China, and intrusions of aliens coming in toward Earth. Someone asked why the generals were being so candid with them. According to Tom, one responded by saying, "If you want, you can go ahead and tell people what we told you, but they're not going to believe you. Besides, if you did get anyone to believe you and they came back to ask us, we would just deny it. So we have nothing to lose by telling you this."[19]

Russia had put the Sputnik satellite in orbit around the Earth in 1957, and the United States followed by putting the Explorer in orbit the next year. In 1959, the Soviets photographed the far side of the moon with Luna 3. In 1962, the Mariner 2 probe of Venus sent back close-range information about Venus, and that same year, the Russians launched the first probe to Mars, but contact was lost. So in 1963, Tom was told that the United States at that time had a network of sophisticated warning satellites scattered throughout the solar system, orbiting planets farther out than Mars! The well-funded military space program was apparently several decades ahead of what was being publicly acknowledged! Tom said he had heard rumors that the first satellite ever was launched by the United States in 1948 using a modified V-2 rocket. He said the Soviets never really were ahead of the United States in the space race. The military used the publicity of the Soviet effort to their own advantage to get more money from Congress.

North American Rockwell delivered its first space shuttle to NASA in March 1979. This was the Columbia shuttle, which made its maiden voyage two years later, in 1981, but Tom said that Rockwell had been delivering space shuttles to the U.S. Air Force as early as 1976. He also said the Air Force has its own shuttle system and that its shuttles were being launched from a highly secured island in the Pacific known as Johnston Island. He said he had been working for the Air Force between 1976 and 1978 and that during this time he met a captain who was an engineer with the Air Force and who had returned from Johnston Island after being there for a year or two. He said this captain told him he had heard rumors that the United States had a base on the moon. The captain said that from looking at the cargo manifest for one of these shuttle launchings, one could conclude that provisions were routinely being shipped out. This was several years after the Apollo program had been terminated, the last Apollo mission to the moon having been completed in December 1972.

Thus, it is apparent that there has been an effort to keep secret the military's capabilities in space. While NASA was mesmerizing the public with its rocket flights, aerospace companies were carrying out secret research on electrogravitics and microwave beam propulsion technologies. A good guess is that the U.S. military currently has large fleets of craft capable of hypersonic flight in space that use nonconventional means of propulsion.

This educated guess may be fact. In 2002, a forty-year-old British computer buff named Gary McKinnon succeeded in using his home computer to hack into the computer network of several U.S. military organizations. Although not part of any terrorist organization and only snooping to satisfy his own curiosity, he now faces up to seventy years' imprisonment in a U.S. jail, but what he found on one of his Internet forays was quite astounding. In a U.S. Space Command database, McKinnon found a list of officer's names under the heading "Non-Terrestrial Officers." He also found a list of "fleet-to-fleet transfers" and a list of ship names. He tried to look them up, but found they were not Navy ships. He came to conclude that these were off-planet vessels.

The U.S. Space Command is headquartered at Peterson Air Force Base in Colorado Springs. Its website states that its "mission is to conduct joint space operations in accordance with the Unified Command Plan assigned missions." These include "Space Force Support, Space Force Enhancement, Space Force Application, and Space Force Control."[20] With records of nonterrestrial officers carrying out fleet-to-fleet transfers, its missions appear to be far bolder than the average U.S. citizen might have guessed. It seems the United States has ongoing, manned space operations that go beyond anyone's wildest dreams, all taking place under a cloak of secrecy and all made possible by advanced field-effect propulsion technologies that were under intense development in the middle of the twentieth century.

The Russians may also have a substantial presence in space. In his book *The Awakening of the Red Bear,* Dimosthenes Liakopoulos wrote that the Russians have large electrogravitic-propulsion craft called cosmospheres that are equipped with particle beam weapons.[21] He maintains that these are used to ferry supplies to ten bases on the moon.

As for the application of field-propulsion technology to civilian aerospace flight, it is apparent that NASA, with its rocket-oriented approach, will not be the one to take the initiative. That, instead, will likely be undertaken by farsighted aerospace corporations such as the Spaceship Company and Virgin Galactic. The ability of nonmilitary private enterprise to compete in the space arena became evident on October 4, 2004, when Brian Binnie piloted SpaceShipOne to an altitude of 114 kilometers to win the $10-million X-Prize. This prize, which was offered by the X-Prize Foundation, was available to anyone who succeeded in reaching an altitude of at least 100 kilometers twice within a two-week period. That was SpaceShipOne's second voyage, its maiden voyage having been made just five days earlier. The winning team, led by aerospace engineer Burt Rutan, showed the world that, with a little ingenuity, space flight is possible even on a shoestring budget.

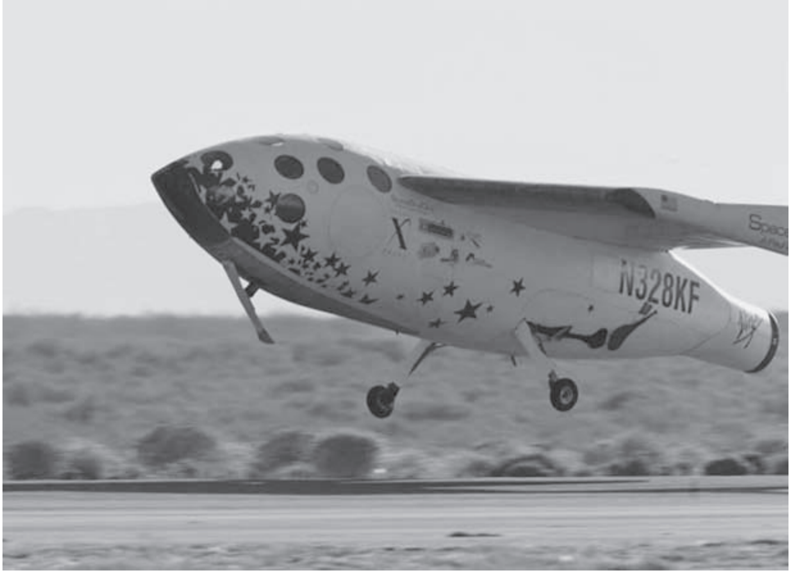

Figure 13.3. SpaceShipOne landing in the Mohave Desert on October 4, 2004. It was the first privately owned plane to achieve suborbital flight. (Photo courtesy of Mike Massee)

In July 2005, Rutan's company, Scaled Composites, signed an agreement with Virgin Galactic, a spin-off of the Virgin Group of Companies, founded by Sir Richard Branson, to form a new aerospace production company that both companies will jointly own. This new company, called the Spaceship Company, has plans to build a fleet of commercial suborbital spaceships and launch aircraft and to market them to spaceline operators, one of which will be Virgin Galactic. Rutan, who will head up the company's technical development team, said, "[T]his will truly herald an era of personal space flight first described by the visionary science fiction writers of the 1940s and 1950s. Richard Branson and I share a vision that commercially viable and safe space tourism will provide the foundation for the human colonization of space."[21] It is more likely that entrepreneurs such as these, who are accustomed to thinking out of the box, will ultimately be the ones who will develop field-effect propulsion for aerospace flight.

14

A TECHNOLOGY THAT COULD CHANGE THE WORLD

Clearly, gravity control would be a boon to society. So why is work on this important technology being kept so highly classified? One obvious reason is that the military sector wants to make sure that its defense technologies are always one step ahead of everyone else's. According to one estimate, black-program technologies are at present at least fifty to one hundred years ahead of those used in the commercial world. A second motivation for secrecy is the concern over whether society is able to monitor and control the public use of this new science effectively. A case in point is the advent of nuclear technology toward the middle of the twentieth century. While ways were later found to harness atomic energy for peaceful uses, its initial development was for use as a weapon, the atomic bomb. This brought with it the accompanying threat of nuclear holocaust, and today, even though the cold war has ended, the threat still lingers that terrorists might detonate a dirty bomb. Similarly, the same physics that gives us a proper understanding of gravity control and that could be put to many peaceful uses could also be used to build very destructive weapons.

According to Ray, the black-project scientist I had spoken to, the curators of this technology do not feel that society as a whole has matured emotionally to an extent that this knowledge could safely be made available to the public. Apparently the behind-the-scenes individuals who monitor black-world research and decide whether or not it stays classified are following a program of "controlled evolution." If these "powers that be" determine that the world has advanced to a point where it can handle a new technology, they will allow it to be introduced. This leaves us with the question of whether this self-chosen group is itself sufficiently qualified to be making these kinds of decisions. With problems like global warming, global deforestation, acid rain, widespread pollution of the oceans, radioactive waste, overpopulation, hunger, and the AIDS epidemic looming ever larger, shouldn't at least some of this knowledge be declassified to help the world? Some members of the black-programs community feel that it should, and as a result, they are making efforts to push things in a more liberal direction.

When the internal combustion engine was developed at the turn of the twentieth century, should it have been classified because of its military potential to create tanks and war vehicles? If it had, we may still be driving a horse and buggy and would undoubtedly be living in a world that had a much lower standard of living. Today, it seems that our government is intent on keeping our current technology status quo. On January 15, 2008, four group directors that head the U.S. Patent and Trademark Office (USPTO) sent out a memo to all USPTO technology center patent examiners that is just as reactionary as if they had outlawed the automobile. The memo reminded the examiners about the USPTO Sensitive Application Warning System (SAWS) program and required that they "flag" any patent application that contains subject matter of "special interest," specifically those containing the following topics: "1) perpetual motion machines [i.e., over unity energy generators], 2) antigravity devices, 3) room temperature superconductivity, 4) free energy—tachyons, etc., 5) gain assisted superluminal light propagation (faster than the speed of light), 6) other matters that violate the general laws of physics . . ."[1]

Further, the directive required the examiners to, among other things, flag: “applications with pioneering scope” and “applications dealing with inventions that, if issued, would potentially generate extensive publicity.” It stated that the SAWS program “is intended to ensure that the [USPTO] examination standards and guidelines are applied properly to such applications.” Such guidelines instruct examiners to reject any applications that violate the “known laws of physics.” Obviously, the laws the Patent Office are referring to is the catechism taught in university physics courses around the country. By those laws, patent applications for any invention using over-unity energy generators, electrokinetics technology, or superluminal beam generators (such as that developed by Podkletnov) should be promptly rejected.

But let us imagine for a moment that the prevailing bureaucratic suppression has faded, ushering in a host of possibilities. Once field-effect propulsion technologies and energy generators are commercialized, they could dramatically improve people’s lives. For example, Earth-based transportation would be revolutionized, commuters would be able to travel vertically as well as horizontally, roads and bridges would no longer be needed, and ground-level rush-hour traffic jams would be a thing of the two-dimensional past. However, in populated areas, special navigation computers would be required in order to prevent midair collisions. Transport speeds would be vastly increased, and there would be few limits as to where such vehicles could go. Antigravity vehicles would revolutionize farming, mining, building construction, and shipping, stimulating the world economy beyond our wildest dreams.

Space flight would be made practical. Travel from one’s Earth-based home to an orbital space station would become as easy as making flights from one town or city to another. Flight from the Earth to bases on the moon or Mars, or even journeys to the more-remote planets of the solar system, would be accomplished as easily as present-day intercontinental flights. Such journeys could be completed with a minimal expenditure of fuel. Just think of all the billions of dollars that would be saved if nations used antigravity propulsion instead of rocket propulsion to accomplish their space missions. Electrogravitic spaceships could theoretically attain velocities exceeding the speed of light, making it practical also to travel to nearby star systems.

World peace would be aided. Antigravity transportation would erase the distance barriers separating the nations of the world. Imagine, traveling anywhere in the world in one hour! International air traffic would skyrocket. Geographical space would shrink, bringing people from different parts of the world closer together. People would become more internationally oriented and would see one another as close neighbors. As people grew more tolerant of other cultures and as poverty declined, a new planetary world order would arise. With luck, war might even become a thing of the past.

Ecologically safe methods of energy production would become available. Electrogravitics could be usefully applied as a means for generating pollution-free electric power. One method would use permanent magnet generators such as the Searl effect generator or the MEC, discussed in chapter 10. Another method might be to use phase-conjugating parametric amplifiers that had overunity outputs. Yet another technique might be to develop rotary generators such as the electrostatic motors suggested by Lafforgue (see chapter 12) and Brown (see figure 1.10).

Electrogravitic free-energy machines, as well as other types of scientifically advanced energy generators, would provide society with clean energy. Besides producing affordable power, such technology would be environmentally and socially safe because it would not produce dangerous waste products that could pose health hazards. Nor would it release carbon dioxide or waste heat into the atmosphere that could threaten global warming. The energy output would be almost entirely in the form of mechanical motion. In the case of the Searl effect generator, it could actually have the side benefit of refrigerating the environment as it generates power. Although electrogravitic devices use high voltage, they may be rendered safe by being properly enclosed. Moreover, power production would become decentralized. Each home, factory, or vehicle would have its own power unit. The miles of unsightly power lines that presently clutter our landscape would become a thing of the past as each person became his own energy czar.

Declassifying the black-world ether physics would substantially benefit society from an intellectual standpoint. It would galvanize a whole new era of expansion in fundamental physical theory, which today has largely stagnated as a result of dogged perpetuation of outmoded ideas. It would also benefit society from a humanistic standpoint. One could argue that the spiritual vacuum and overemphasis on materialism that characterize modern society stem in part from the teaching of positivistic science that recognizes only experimentally observable quantities as having a real existence. The new ether physics, on the other hand, acknowledges that the physical world is only a manifestation of a much more fundamental, subtle realm that is not directly accessible to our physical senses, but whose operation to some extent may be elucidated with the aid of reaction-kinetic models. It leads to a worldview in which science becomes united with mystical teachings, rather than separated from them. Widespread knowledge of this new conceptual paradigm could bring humanity back toward a more ethical track, to a global mind-set better prepared to receive the advanced technologies that are now kept from us.

APPENDIX A

LETTERS WRITTEN BY T. TOWNSEND BROWN TO THOMAS TURMAN

The following letters (on pages 405 to 410) from T. Townsend Brown to Thomas Turman were written in 1968 and 1971.

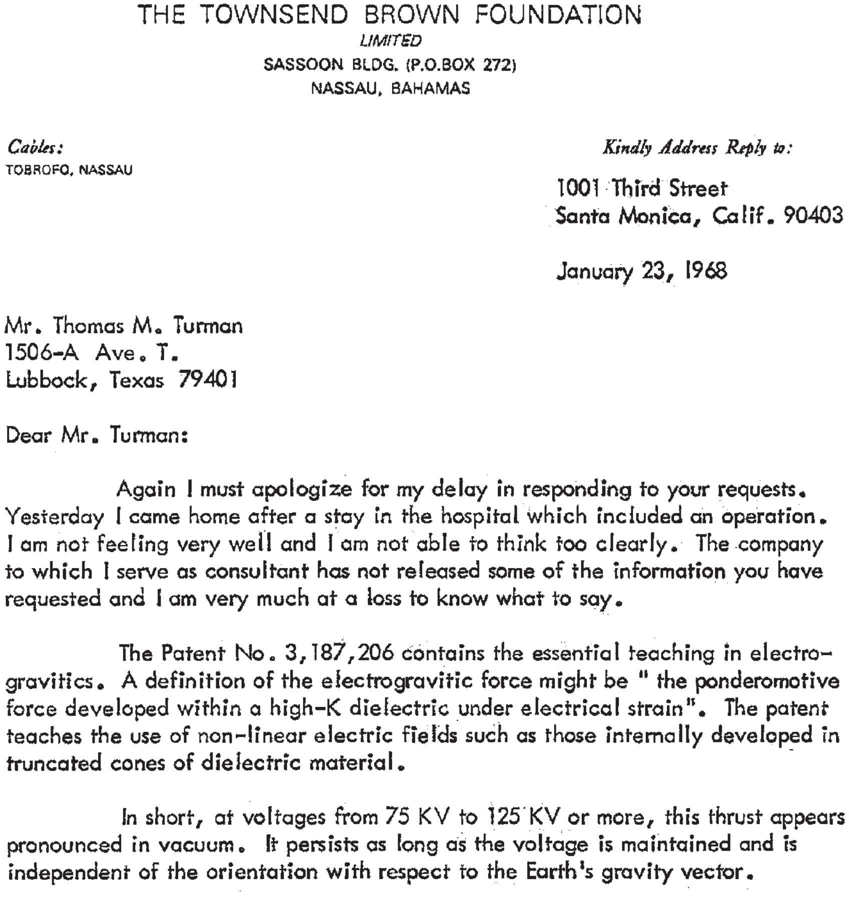

THE TOWNSEND BROWN FOUNDATION
LIMITED
SASSOON BLDG. (P.O.BOX 272)
NASSAU, BAHAMAS

Cables:
TOBROFO, NASSAU

Kindly Address Reply to:
1001 Third Street
Santa Monica, Calif. 90403

January 23, 1968

Mr. Thomas M. Turman
1506-A Ave. T.
Lubbock, Texas 79401

Dear Mr. Turman:

Again I must apologize for my delay in responding to your requests. Yesterday I came home after a stay in the hospital which included an operation. I am not feeling very well and I am not able to think too clearly. The company to which I serve as consultant has not released some of the information you have requested and I am very much at a loss to know what to say.

The Patent No. 3,187,206 contains the essential teaching in electrogravitics. A definition of the electrogravitic force might be " the ponderomotive force developed within a high-K dielectric under electrical strain". The patent teaches the use of non-linear electric fields such as those internally developed in truncated cones of dielectric material.

In short, at voltages from 75 KV to 125 KV or more, this thrust appears pronounced in vacuum. It persists as long as the voltage is maintained and is independent of the orientation with respect to the Earth's gravity vector.

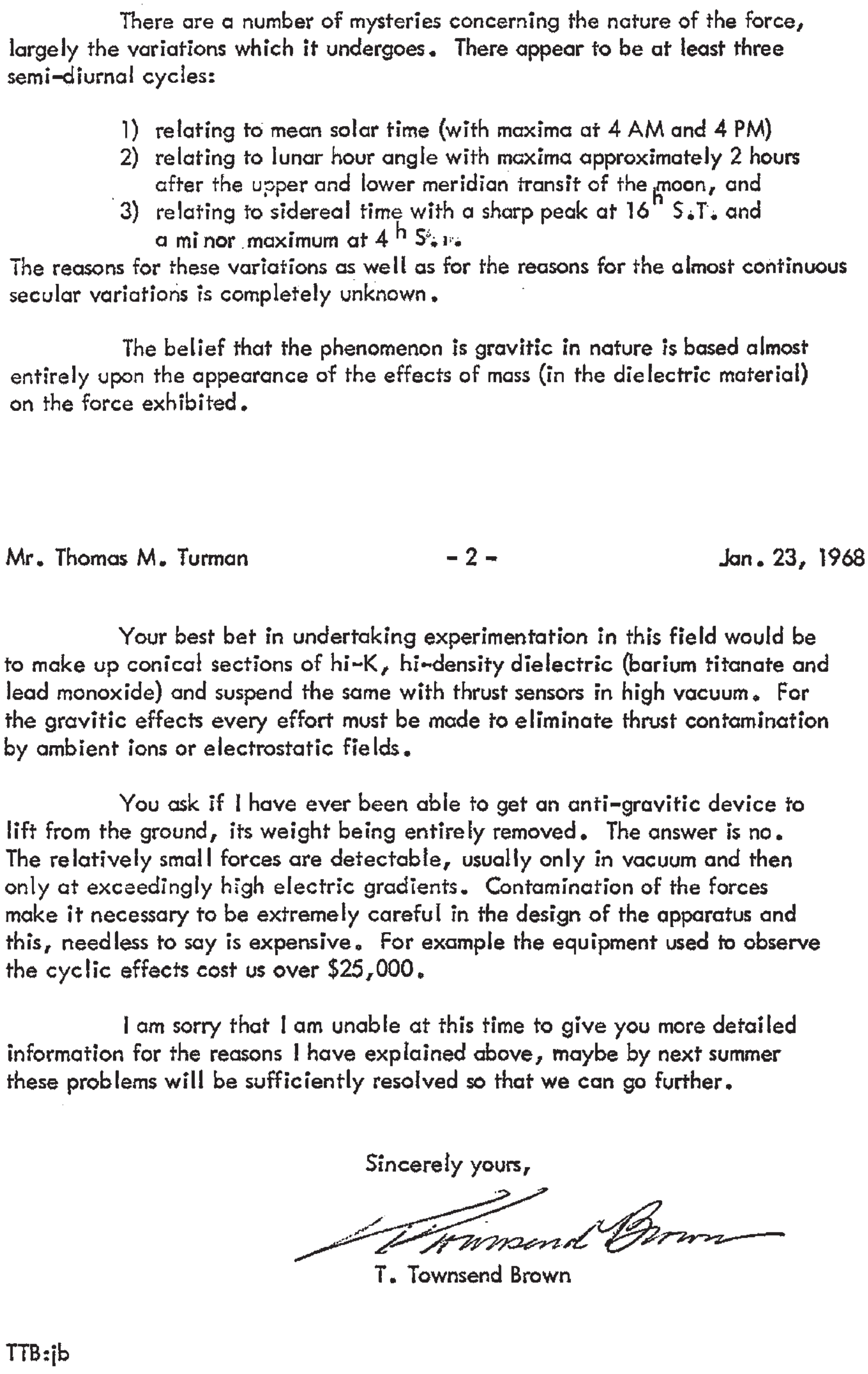

There are a number of mysteries concerning the nature of the force, largely the variations which it undergoes. There appear to be at least three semi-diurnal cycles:

1) relating to mean solar time (with maxima at 4 AM and 4 PM)
2) relating to lunar hour angle with maxima approximately 2 hours after the upper and lower meridian transit of the moon, and
3) relating to sidereal time with a sharp peak at 16^h S.T. and a minor maximum at 4^h S.T.

The reasons for these variations as well as for the reasons for the almost continuous secular variations is completely unknown.

The belief that the phenomenon is gravitic in nature is based almost entirely upon the appearance of the effects of mass (in the dielectric material) on the force exhibited.

Mr. Thomas M. Turman - 2 - Jan. 23, 1968

Your best bet in undertaking experimentation in this field would be to make up conical sections of hi-K, hi-density dielectric (barium titanate and lead monoxide) and suspend the same with thrust sensors in high vacuum. For the gravitic effects every effort must be made to eliminate thrust contamination by ambient ions or electrostatic fields.

You ask if I have ever been able to get an anti-gravitic device to lift from the ground, its weight being entirely removed. The answer is no. The relatively small forces are detectable, usually only in vacuum and then only at exceedingly high electric gradients. Contamination of the forces make it necessary to be extremely careful in the design of the apparatus and this, needless to say is expensive. For example the equipment used to observe the cyclic effects cost us over $25,000.

I am sorry that I am unable at this time to give you more detailed information for the reasons I have explained above, maybe by next summer these problems will be sufficiently resolved so that we can go further.

Sincerely yours,

Townsend Brown

T. Townsend Brown

TTB:jb

P. O. Box 1321
Avalon, California 90704

Nov. 1, 1971

Mr. Thomas M. Turman
1611 16th Street
Lubbock, Texas 79401

Dear Mr. Turman:

I have reviewed your letter and also tried to remember what we talked about in our recent telephone conversations. I will probably not be able to answer all of your questions and I shall leave something for future correspondence.

It was a pleasure to look over the photographs of the equipment you have assembled for it indicates some rather thorough planning on your part and the expenditure of quite a sum of money. It appears you have put together the essential pieces of apparatus to perform high quality experimental work and this, I know, will be a great satisfaction to you.

Someday I would like for you to send me more detailed information and a circuit diagram of your high voltage supply. I thought I understood it was a voltage doubler but I would like to know in greater detail the capacitors and rectifiers you are using. This is of some concern, particularly as to the ripple present in the dc output.

Your sketch shows a point and ring configuration of electrodes with an intermediate dielectric tube. I take it the ends of this tube are open and the air flow is in the direction of the divergent field. This would make the tube assembly move in the opposite direction, that is, toward the small positive electrode. Is this not so?

I am also interested in the way you measure forces. You mentioned a capacitor type pick up, which would feed, thru an amplifier, to the recorder. Have you observed any ~~for~~ thrust with the positive end of the tube closed?

Going to the disc airfoils, you ask about the spacers used to mount the electrodes from the disc body. I was not interested then in lift, only thrust and the top speed around a 50' turnstile. The attached diagram will give you some idea of the setup.

Experiments involving lift were of a different nature. We used a triarcuate ballistic electrode as the anode and a small electrode underneath as the cathode, substantially as follows:

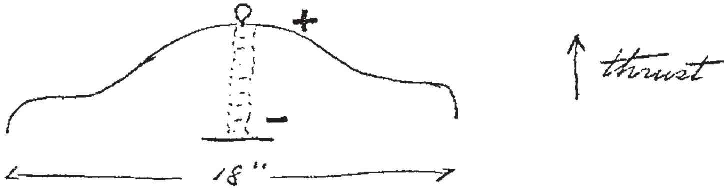

Thomas M. Turman - 2 - Nov. 1, 1971

The large electrode was made of a balsa umbrella-like frame with aluminum foil covering. A thin glass stand-off insulator mounted the cathode as shown in the drawing. The lift of this unit at 170 kv was about 125 grams. The electrode structure itself weighed only about 100 grams, so it was actually self-levitating.

In my next letter I will send you some pressure profiles across the ballistic electrode where we attempted to analyze this lift, but I shall make it the subject of another letter.

I shall try to get this other letter off to you within a few days.

Sincerely,

Townsend Brown

T. Townsend Brown

TTB:jb
Encl.

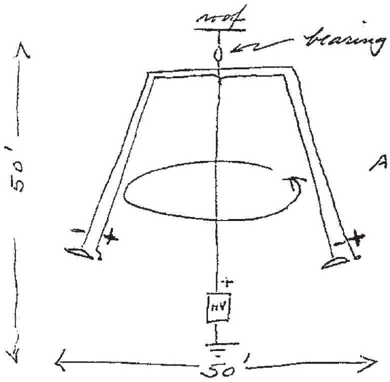

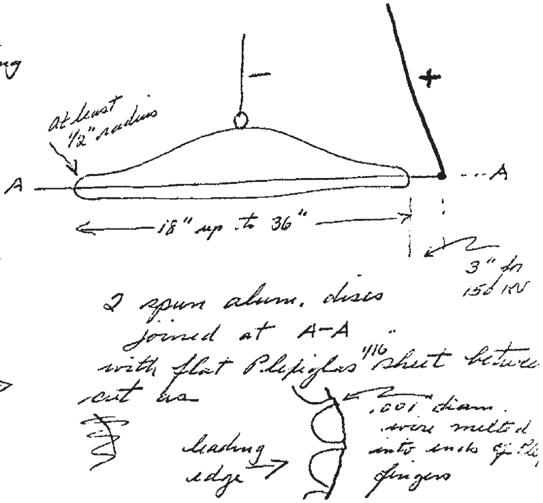

2 spun alum. discs joined at A-A with flat Plexiglas 1/16" sheet between cut as

.001 diam. wire melted into ends of the fingers

P. O. Box 1321
Avalon, California 90704

November 12, 1971

Mr. Thomas M. Turman
1611 16th Street
Lubbock, Texas 79401

Dear Mr. Turman:

I am sorry I have been so long in getting this letter off to you but, during my recuperation, I seldom get to the office.

In my letter of November 1st I promised to send you some pressure profiles, such as I remember them, which caused the movement of the triarcuate ballistic electrode. A sketch of the electrode and the approximate pressure profile is as follows:

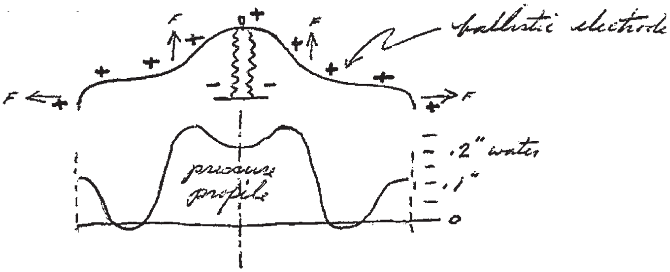
F
F
F
F
ballistic electrode
pressure profile
.2" water
.1"
0

It was found that, by canting the center electrode, the pressures could be unbalanced so that one side or the other could be lifted. This could provide horizontal stability in a large prototype. An alternate way of doing this is to provide three independent electrodes in triangular configuration instead of one center electrode. These electrodes can be differently charged in order to change the electric field configuration under the ballistic canopy and this did away with the necessity for a mechanical moving part. Horizontal stability could be maintained entirely electrically. The structure is substantially as follows:

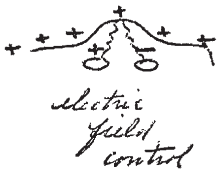
electric field control

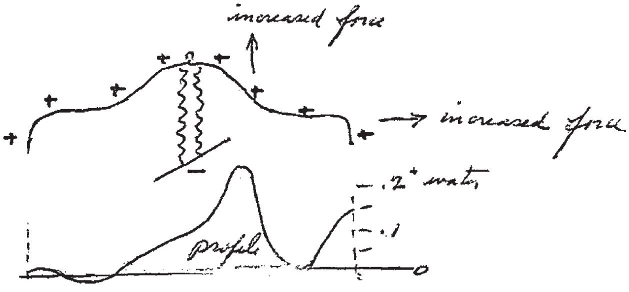
increased force
increased force
.2" water
.1
0
profile

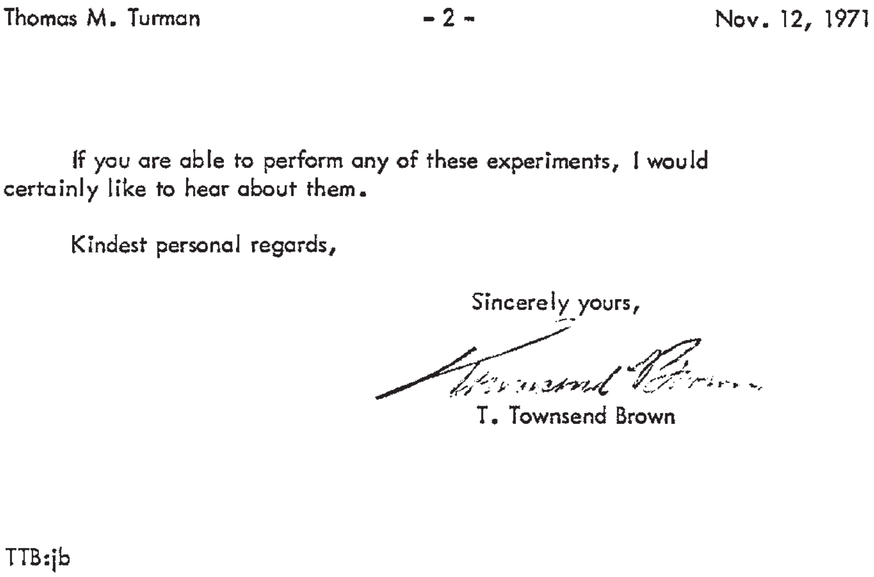

Thomas M. Turman -2- Nov. 12, 1971

If you are able to perform any of these experiments, I would certainly like to hear about them.

Kindest personal regards,

Sincerely yours,

Townsend Brown

T. Townsend Brown

TTB:jb

APPENDIX B

AVIATION STUDIES INTERNATIONAL LTD. PUBLICATIONS

Publications Printed in 1960

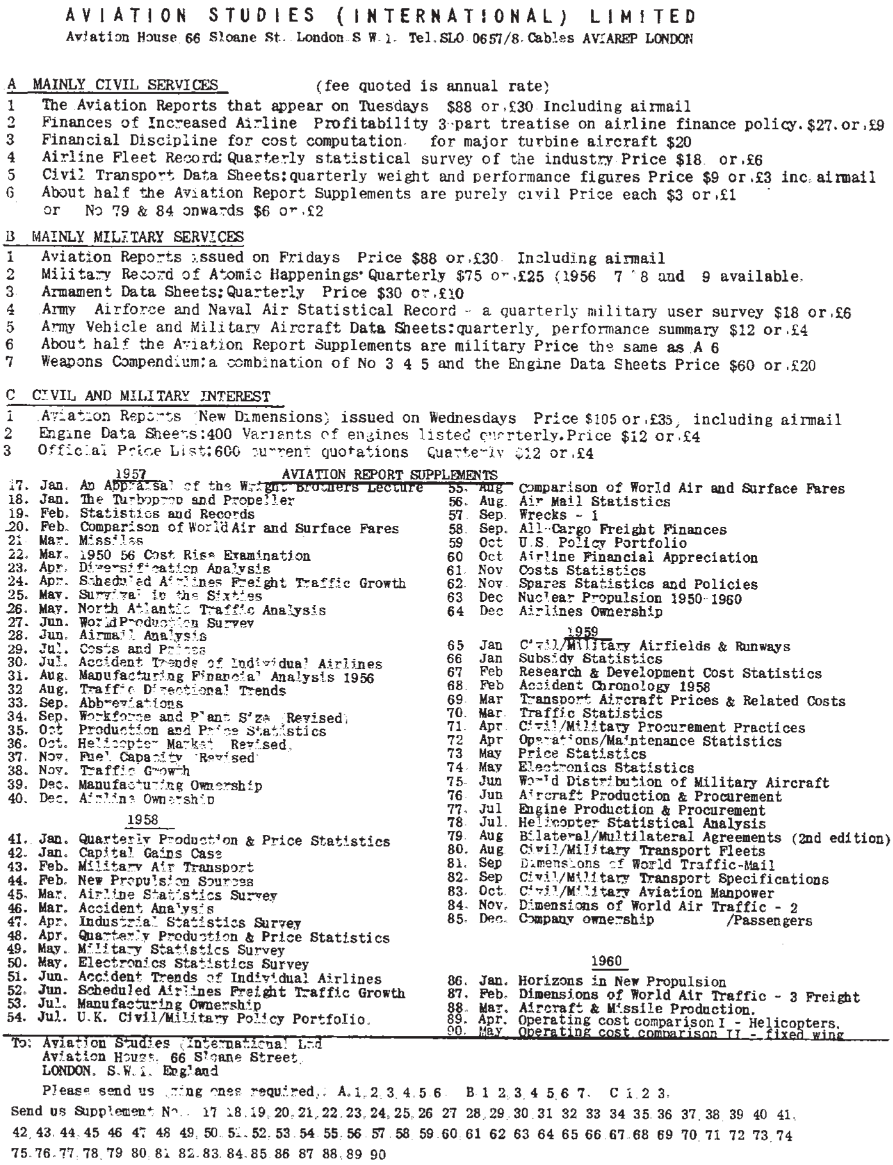

AVIATION STUDIES (INTERNATIONAL) LIMITED
Aviation House 66 Sloane St. London S W 1. Tel. SLO 0657/8. Cables AVIAREP LONDON

A MAINLY CIVIL SERVICES (fee quoted is annual rate)

1 The Aviation Reports that appear on Tuesdays $88 or £30 Including airmail
2 Finances of Increased Airline Profitability 3-part treatise on airline finance policy. $27. or £9
3 Financial Discipline for cost computation. for major turbine aircraft $20
4 Airline Fleet Record: Quarterly statistical survey of the industry Price $18 or £6
5 Civil Transport Data Sheets: quarterly weight and performance figures Price $9 or £3 inc. airmail
6 About half the Aviation Report Supplements are purely civil Price each $3 or £1
or No 79 & 84 onwards $6 or £2

B MAINLY MILITARY SERVICES

1 Aviation Reports issued on Fridays Price $88 or £30 Including airmail
2 Military Record of Atomic Happenings Quarterly $75 or £25 (1956 7 8 and 9 available.
3 Armament Data Sheets: Quarterly Price $30 or £10
4 Army Airforce and Naval Air Statistical Record - a quarterly military user survey $18 or £6
5 Army Vehicle and Military Aircraft Data Sheets: quarterly, performance summary $12 or £4
6 About half the Aviation Report Supplements are military Price the same as A 6
7 Weapons Compendium: a combination of No 3 4 5 and the Engine Data Sheets Price $60 or £20

C CIVIL AND MILITARY INTEREST

1 Aviation Reports (New Dimensions) issued on Wednesdays Price $105 or £35, including airmail
2 Engine Data Sheets: 400 Variants of engines listed quarterly. Price $12 or £4
3 Official Price List: 600 current quotations Quarterly $12 or £4

AVIATION REPORT SUPPLEMENTS

1957

17. Jan. An Appraisal of the Wright Brothers Lecture
18. Jan. The Turboprop and Propeller
19. Feb. Statistics and Records
20. Feb. Comparison of World Air and Surface Fares
21. Mar. Missiles
22. Mar. 1950 56 Cost Rise Examination
23. Apr. Diversification Analysis
24. Apr. Scheduled Airlines Freight Traffic Growth
25. May. Survival in the Sixties
26. May. North Atlantic Traffic Analysis
27. Jun. World Production Survey
28. Jun. Airmail Analysis
29. Jul. Costs and Prices
30. Jul. Accident Trends of Individual Airlines
31. Aug. Manufacturing Financial Analysis 1956
32 Aug. Traffic Directional Trends
33. Sep. Abbreviations
34. Sep. Workforce and Plant Size (Revised)
35. Oct Production and Price Statistics
36. Oct. Helicopter Market Revised.
37. Nov. Fuel Capacity (Revised)
38. Nov. Traffic Growth
39. Dec. Manufacturing Ownership
40. Dec. Airline Ownership

1958

41. Jan. Quarterly Production & Price Statistics
42. Jan. Capital Gains Case
43. Feb. Military Air Transport
44. Feb. New Propulsion Sources
45. Mar. Airline Statistics Survey
46. Mar. Accident Analysis
47. Apr. Industrial Statistics Survey
48. Apr. Quarterly Production & Price Statistics
49. May. Military Statistics Survey
50. May. Electronics Statistics Survey
51. Jun. Accident Trends of Individual Airlines
52. Jun. Scheduled Airlines Freight Traffic Growth
53. Jul. Manufacturing Ownership
54. Jul. U.K. Civil/Military Policy Portfolio.
55. Aug Comparison of World Air and Surface Fares
56. Aug. Air Mail Statistics
57. Sep. Wrecks - 1
58. Sep. All-Cargo Freight Finances
59 Oct U.S. Policy Portfolio
60 Oct Airline Financial Appreciation
61. Nov Costs Statistics
62. Nov. Spares Statistics and Policies
63 Dec Nuclear Propulsion 1950-1960
64 Dec Airlines Ownership

1959

65 Jan Civil/Military Airfields & Runways
66 Jan Subsidy Statistics
67 Feb Research & Development Cost Statistics
68. Feb Accident Chronology 1958
69. Mar Transport Aircraft Prices & Related Costs
70. Mar. Traffic Statistics
71. Apr. Civil/Military Procurement Practices
72 Apr Operations/Maintenance Statistics
73 May Price Statistics
74. May Electronics Statistics
75. Jun World Distribution of Military Aircraft
76 Jun Aircraft Production & Procurement
77. Jul Engine Production & Procurement
78. Jul. Helicopter Statistical Analysis
79. Aug Bilateral/Multilateral Agreements (2nd edition)
80. Aug Civil/Military Transport Fleets
81. Sep Dimensions of World Traffic-Mail
82. Sep Civil/Military Transport Specifications
83. Oct. Civil/Military Aviation Manpower
84. Nov. Dimensions of World Air Traffic - 2
85. Dec. Company ownership /Passengers

1960

86. Jan. Horizons in New Propulsion
87. Feb. Dimensions of World Air Traffic - 3 Freight
88. Mar. Aircraft & Missile Production.
89. Apr. Operating cost comparison I - Helicopters.
90. May Operating cost comparison II - fixed wing

To: Aviation Studies (International) Ltd
Aviation House, 66 Sloane Street,
LONDON, S.W.1. England

Please send us (ring ones required): A. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6 B 1 2, 3, 4 5, 6 7. C 1, 2 3.

Send us Supplement No. 17 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26 27 28, 29, 30 31 32 33 34 35 36 37, 38 39 40 41.
42, 43, 44, 45 46 47 48 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54 55, 56 57 58 59 60 61 62 63 64 65 66 67 68 69 70 71 72 73 74
75, 76, 77, 78, 79 80, 81 82, 83, 84, 85 86 87 88, 89 90

Publications Printed in 1993

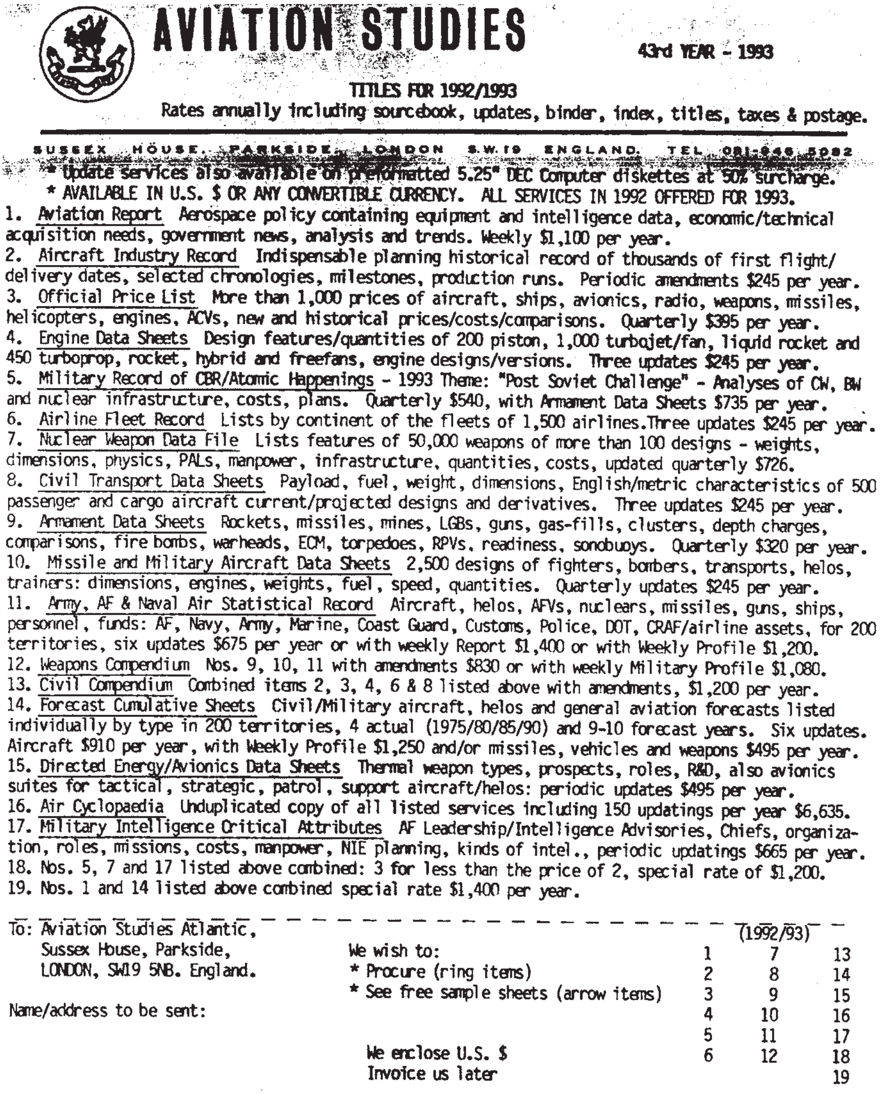

AVIATION STUDIES

43rd YEAR - 1993

TITLES FOR 1992/1993

Rates annually including sourcebook, updates, binder, index, titles, taxes & postage.

SUSSEX HOUSE, PARKSIDE, LONDON S.W.19 ENGLAND. TEL 081-946 5082

* Update services also available on preformatted 5.25" DEC Computer diskettes at 50% surcharge.
* AVAILABLE IN U.S. $ OR ANY CONVERTIBLE CURRENCY. ALL SERVICES IN 1992 OFFERED FOR 1993.

1. Aviation Report Aerospace policy containing equipment and intelligence data, economic/technical acquisition needs, government news, analysis and trends. Weekly $1,100 per year.
2. Aircraft Industry Record Indispensable planning historical record of thousands of first flight/delivery dates, selected chronologies, milestones, production runs. Periodic amendments $245 per year.
3. Official Price List More than 1,000 prices of aircraft, ships, avionics, radio, weapons, missiles, helicopters, engines, ACVs, new and historical prices/costs/comparisons. Quarterly $395 per year.
4. Engine Data Sheets Design features/quantities of 200 piston, 1,000 turbojet/fan, liquid rocket and 450 turboprop, rocket, hybrid and freefans, engine designs/versions. Three updates $245 per year.
5. Military Record of CBR/Atomic Happenings - 1993 Theme: "Post Soviet Challenge" - Analyses of CW, BW and nuclear infrastructure, costs, plans. Quarterly $540, with Armament Data Sheets $735 per year.
6. Airline Fleet Record Lists by continent of the fleets of 1,500 airlines.Three updates $245 per year.
7. Nuclear Weapon Data File Lists features of 50,000 weapons of more than 100 designs - weights, dimensions, physics, PALs, manpower, infrastructure, quantities, costs, updated quarterly $726.
8. Civil Transport Data Sheets Payload, fuel, weight, dimensions, English/metric characteristics of 500 passenger and cargo aircraft current/projected designs and derivatives. Three updates $245 per year.
9. Armament Data Sheets Rockets, missiles, mines, LGBs, guns, gas-fills, clusters, depth charges, comparisons, fire bombs, warheads, ECM, torpedoes, RPVs, readiness, sonobuoys. Quarterly $320 per year.
10. Missile and Military Aircraft Data Sheets 2,500 designs of fighters, bombers, transports, helos, trainers: dimensions, engines, weights, fuel, speed, quantities. Quarterly updates $245 per year.
11. Army, AF & Naval Air Statistical Record Aircraft, helos, AFVs, nuclears, missiles, guns, ships, personnel, funds: AF, Navy, Army, Marine, Coast Guard, Customs, Police, DOT, CRAF/airline assets, for 200 territories, six updates $675 per year or with weekly Report $1,400 or with Weekly Profile $1,200.
12. Weapons Compendium Nos. 9, 10, 11 with amendments $830 or with weekly Military Profile $1,080.
13. Civil Compendium Combined items 2, 3, 4, 6 & 8 listed above with amendments, $1,200 per year.
14. Forecast Cumulative Sheets Civil/Military aircraft, helos and general aviation forecasts listed individually by type in 200 territories, 4 actual (1975/80/85/90) and 9-10 forecast years. Six updates. Aircraft $910 per year, with Weekly Profile $1,250 and/or missiles, vehicles and weapons $495 per year.
15. Directed Energy/Avionics Data Sheets Thermal weapon types, prospects, roles, R&D, also avionics suites for tactical, strategic, patrol, support aircraft/helos: periodic updates $495 per year.
16. Air Cyclopaedia Unduplicated copy of all listed services including 150 updatings per year $6,635.
17. Military Intelligence Critical Attributes AF Leadership/Intelligence Advisories, Chiefs, organization, roles, missions, costs, manpower, NIE planning, kinds of intel., periodic updatings $665 per year.
18. Nos. 5, 7 and 17 listed above combined: 3 for less than the price of 2, special rate of $1,200.
19. Nos. 1 and 14 listed above combined special rate $1,400 per year.

To: Aviation Studies Atlantic,
Sussex House, Parkside,
LONDON, SW19 5NB. England.

Name/address to be sent:

We wish to:
* Procure (ring items)
* See free sample sheets (arrow items)

We enclose U.S. $
Invoice us later

(1992/93)

1	7	13
2	8	14
3	9	15
4	10	16
5	11	17
6	12	18
		19

APPENDIX C

ELECTROGRAVITICS SYSTEMS

An Examination of Electrostatic Motion, Dynamic Counterbary, and Barycentric Control

The following excerpt is a reproduction of the Aviation Studies (International) Ltd.'s 1956 Gravity Research Group report entitled "Electrogravitics Systems: An examination of electrostatic motion, dynamic counterbary and barycentric control," also known as "Report GRG-013/56—Electrogravitics Systems."

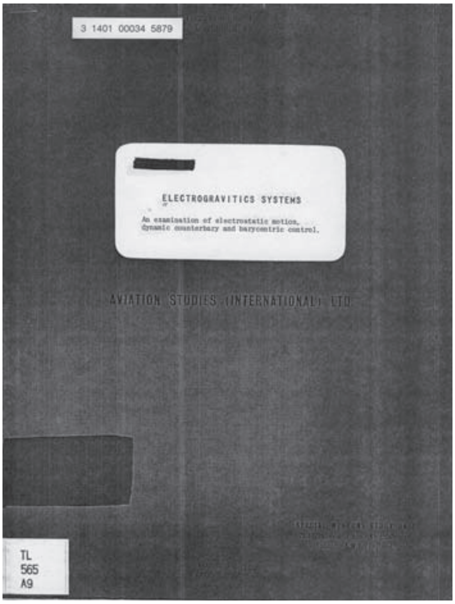

3 1401 00034 5879

[redacted]

ELECTROGRAVITICS SYSTEMS

An examination of electrostatic motion,
dynamic counterbary and barycentric control.

AVIATION STUDIES (INTERNATIONAL) LTD

[redacted]

TL
565
A9

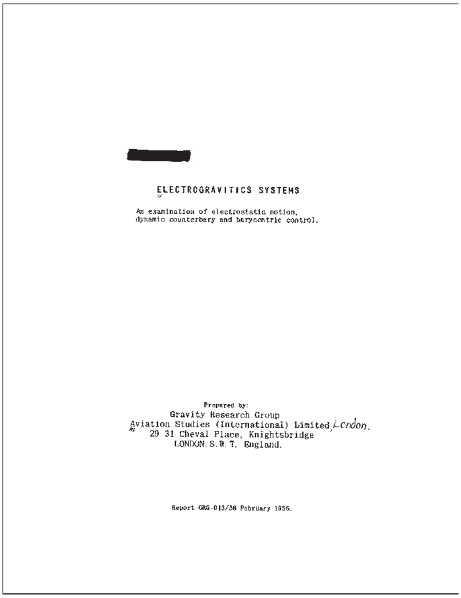

[redacted]

ELECTROGRAVITICS SYSTEMS

An examination of electrostatic motion,
dynamic counterbary and barycentric control.

Prepared by:
Gravity Research Group
Aviation Studies (International) Limited, London.
29 31 Cheval Place, Knightsbridge
LONDON. S. W. 7. England.

Report GRG-013/56 February 1956.

CONTENTS

Introductory Notes
Discussion
Conclusions
Addendums
I. Aviation Report Extracts
II. Electrostatic Patents

It has been accepted as axiomatic that the way to offset the effects of gravity is to use a lifting surface and considerable molecular energy to produce a continuously applied force that, for a limited period of time, can remain greater than the effects of gravitational attraction. The original invention of the glider, and evolution of the briefly self-sustaining glider, at the turn of the century led to progressive advances in power and knowledge. This has been directed to refining the classic Wright Brothers' approach. Aircraft design is still fundamentally as the Wrights adumbrated it, with wings, body, tails, moving or flapping controls, landing gear and so forth. The Wright biplane was a powered glider, and all subsequent aircraft, including the supersonic jets of the nineteen-fifties are also powered gliders. Only one fundamentally different flying principle has so far been adopted with varying degrees of success. It is the rotating wing aircraft that has led to the jet lifters and vertical pushers, coleopters, ducted fans and lift induction turbine propulsion systems.

But during these decades there was always the possibility of making efforts to discover the nature of gravity from cosmic or quantum theory, investigation and observation, with a view to discerning the physical properties of aviation's enemy.

It has seemed to Aviation Studies that for some time insufficient attention has been directed to this kind of research. If it were successful such developments would change the concept of sustentation, and confer upon a vehicle qualities that would now be regarded as the ultimate in aviation.

This report summarizes in simple form the work that has been done and is being done in the new field of electrogravitics. It also outlines the various possible lines of research into the nature and constituent matter of gravity, and how it has changed from Newton to Einstein to the modern Hlavaty concept of gravity as an electromagnetic force that may be controlled like a light wave.

The report also contains an outline of opinions on the feasibility of different electrogravitics systems, and there is reference to some of the barycentric control and electrostatic rigs in operation.

Also included is a list of references to electrogravitics in successive *Aviation Reports* since a drive was started by Aviation Studies International Limited to suggest to aviation business eighteen months ago that the rewards of success are too far-reaching to be overlooked, especially in view of the hopeful judgment of the most authoritative voices in microphysics. Also listed are some relevant patents on electrostatics and electrostatic generators in the United States, United Kingdom and France.

Gravity Research Group
25 February 1956

DISCUSSION

Electrogravitics might be described as a synthesis of electrostatic energy used for propulsion—either vertical propulsion or horizontal or both—and gravitics, or dynamic counterbary, in which energy is also used to set up a local gravitational force independent of the earth's.

Electrostatic energy for propulsion has been predicted as a possible means of propulsion in space when the thrust from a neutron motor or ion motor would be sufficient in a dragless environment to produce astronomical velocities. But the ion motor is not strictly a part of the science of electrogravitics, since barycentric control in an electrogravitics system is envisaged for a vehicle operating within the earth's environment and it is not seen initially for space application. Probably large scale space operations would have to await the full development of electrogravitics to enable large pieces of equipment to be moved out of the region of the earth' s strongest gravity effects. So, though electrostatic motors were thought of in 1925, electrogravitics had its birth after the War, when Townsend Brown sought to improve on the various proposals that then existed for electrostatic motors sufficiently to produce some visible manifestation of sustained motion. Whereas earlier electrostatic tests were essentially pure research, Brown's rigs were aimed from the outset at producing a flying vehicle. As a private venture he produced evidence of motion using condensers in a couple of saucers suspended by arms rotating round a central tower with input running down the arms. The massive-k situation was summarized subsequently in a report, Project Winterhaven, in 1952. Using the data some conclusions were arrived at that might be expected from ten or more years of intensive development—similar to that, for instance, applied to the turbine engine. Using a number of assumptions as to the nature of gravity, the report postulated a saucer as the basis of a possible interceptor with Mach 3 capability. Creation of a local gravitational system would confer upon the fighter the sharp-edged changes of direction typical of motion in space.

The essence of electrogravitics thrust is the use of a very strong positive charge on one side of the vehicle and a negative on the other. The core of the motor is a condenser and the ability of the condenser to hold its charge (the k-number) is the yardstick of performance. With air as 1, current dielectrical materials can yield 6 and use of barium aluminate can raise this considerably, barium titanium oxide (a baked ceramic) can offer 6,000 and there is promise of 30,000, which would be sufficient for supersonic speed.

The original Brown rig produced 30 fps on a voltage of around 50,000 and a small amount of current in the milliamp range. There was no detailed explanation of gravity in Project Winterhaven, but it was assumed that particle dualism in the subatomic structure of gravity would coincide in its effect with the issuing stream of electrons from the electrostatic energy source to produce counterbary. The Brown work probably remains a realistic approach to the practical realization of electrostatic propulsion and sustentation. Whatever may be discovered by the Gravity Research Foundation of New Boston, a complete understanding and synthetic reproduction of gravity is not essential for limited success. The electrogravitics saucer can perform the function of a classic lifting surface—it produces a pushing effect on the under surface and a suction effect on the upper, but, unlike the airfoil, it does not require a flow of air to produce the effect.

First attempts at electrogravitics are unlikely to produce counterbary, but may lead to development of an electrostatic VTOL vehicle. Even in its developed form this might be an advance on the molecular heat engine in its capabilities. But hopes in the new science depend on an understanding of the close identity of electrostatic motivating forces with the source and matter of gravity. It is fortuitous that lift can be produced in the traditional fashion and if an understanding of gravity remains beyond full practical control, electrostatic lift might be an adjunct of some significance to modern thrust producers. Research into electrostatics could prove beneficial to turbine development, and heat engines in general, in view of the usable electron potential round the periphery of any flame. Materials for electrogravitics and especially the development of commercial quantities of high-k material is another dividend to be obtained from electrostatic research even if it produces no counterbary. This is a line of development that Aviation Studies' Gravity Research Group is following.

One of the interesting aspects of electrogravitics is that a breakthrough in almost any part of the broad front of general research on the intranuclear processes may be translated into a meaningful advance towards the feasibility of electrogravitics systems. This demands constant monitoring in the most likely areas of the physics of high-energy sub-nuclear particles. It is difficult to be overoptimistic about the prospects of gaining so complete a grasp of gravity while the world's physicists are still engaged in a study of fundamental particles—that is to say those that cannot be broken down any more. Fundamental particles are still being discovered—the most recent was the Segre-Chamberlain-Wiegand attachment to the bevatron, which was used to isolate the missing anti-proton, which must—or should be presumed to—exist according to Dirac's theory of the electron. Much of the accepted mathematics of particles would be wrong if the anti-proton was proved to be non-existent. Earlier Eddington has listed the fundamental particles as:

e. The charge of an electron.
m. The mass of an electron.
M. The mass of a proton.
h. Planck' s constant
c. The velocity of light.
G. The constant of gravitation, and
λ. The cosmical constant.

It is generally held that no one of these can be inferred from the others. But electrons may well disappear from among the fundamental particles, though, as Russell says, it is likely that e and m will survive. The constants are much more established than the interpretation of them and are among the most solid of achievements in modern physics.

Gravity may be defined as a small scale departure from Euclidean space in the general theory of relativity. The gravitational constant is one of four dimensionless constants: first, the mass relation of the nucleon and electron. Second is e^2/hc; third, the Compton wavelength of the proton; and fourth is the gravitational constant, which is the ratio of the electrostatic to the gravitational attraction between the electron and the proton.

One of the stumbling blocks in electrogravitics is the absence of any satisfactory theory linking these four dimensionless quantities. Of the four, moreover, gravity is decidedly the most complex, since any explanation would have to satisfy both cosmic and quantum relations more acceptably and intelligibly even than in the unified field theory. A gravitational constant of around 10^{-39} has emerged from quantum research and this has been used as a tool for finding theories that could link the two relations. This work is now in full progress, and developments have to be watched for the aviation angle. Hitherto Dirac, Eddington, Jordan and others have produced differences in theory that are too wide to be accepted as consistent. It means therefore that (i) without a cosmical basis, and (ii) with an imprecise quantum basis and (iii) a vague hypothesis on the interaction, much remains still to be discovered. Indeed some say that a single interacting theory to link up the dimensionless constants is one of three major unresolved basic problems of physics. The other two main problems are the extension of quantum theory and a more detailed knowledge of the fundamental particles.

All this is some distance from Newton, who saw gravity as a force acting on a body from a distance, leading to the tendency of bodies to accelerate towards each other. He allied this assumption with Euclidean geometry, and time was assumed as uniform and acted independently of space. Bodies and particles in space normally moved uniformly in straight lines according to Newton, and to account for the way they sometimes do not do so, he used the idea of a force of gravity acting at a distance, in which particles of matter cause in others an acceleration proportional to their mass, and inversely proportional to the square of the distance between them.

But Einstein showed how the principle of least action, or the so-called cosmic laziness means that particles, on the contrary, follow the easiest path among geodesic lines and as a result they get readily absorbed into space-time. So was born non-linear physics. The classic example of non-linear physics is the experiment in bombarding a screen with two slits. When both slits are open particles going through are not the sum of the two individually but follows a non-linear equation. This leads on to wave-particle dualism and that, in turn, to the Heisenberg uncertainty principle in which an increase in accuracy in measurement of one physical quantity means decreasing accuracy in measuring the other. If time is measured accurately energy calculations will be in error; the more accurate the position of a particle is established the less certain the velocity will be, and so on. This basic principle of the acausality of microphysics affects the study of gravity in the special and general theories of relativity. Lack of pictorial image in the quantum physics of this interrelationship is a difficulty at the outset for those whose minds remain obstinately Euclidean.

In the special theory of relativity, space-time is seen only as an undefined interval which can be defined in any way that is convenient and the Newtonian idea of persistent particles in motion to explain gravity cannot be accepted. It must be seen rather as a synthesis of forces in a four dimensional continuum, three to establish the position and one the time. The general theory of relativity that followed a decade later was a geometrical explanation of gravitation in which bodies take the geodesic path through space-time. In turn this means that instead of the idea of force acting at a distance it is assumed that space, time, radiation and particles are linked and variations in them from gravity are due rather to the nature of space.

Thus gravity of a body such as the earth, instead of pulling objects toward it as Newton postulated, is adjusting the characteristics of space and, it may be inferred, the quantum mechanics of space in the vicinity of the gravitational force. Electrogravitics aims at correcting this adjustment to put matter, so to speak, "at rest."

One of the difficulties in 1954 and 1955 was to get aviation to take electrogravitics seriously. The name alone was enough to put people off. However, in the trade much progress has been made and now most major companies in the United States are interested in counterbary. Groups are being organised to study electrostatic and electromagnetic phenomena. Most of industry's leaders have made some reference to it. Douglas has now stated that it has counterbary on its work agenda but does not expect results yet awhile. Hiller has referred to new forms of flying platform, Glenn Martin say gravity control could be achieved in six years, but they add that it would entail a Manhattan District type of effort to bring it about. Sikorsky, one of the pioneers, more or less agrees with the Douglas verdict and says that gravity is tangible and formidable, but there must be a physical carrier for this immense trans-spatial force. This implies that where a physical manifestation exists, a physical device can be developed for creating a similar force moving in the opposite direction to cancel it. Clarke Electronics state they have a rig, and add that in their view the source of gravity's force will be understood sooner than some people think. General Electric is working on the use of electronic rigs designed to make adjustments to gravity—this line of attack has the advantage of using rigs already in existence for other defence work. Bell also has an experimental rig intended, as the company puts it, to cancel out gravity, and Lawrence Bell has said he is convinced that practical hardware will emerge from current programs. Grover Leoning is certain that what he referred to as an electro-magnetic contra-gravity mechanism will be developed for practical use. Convair is extensively committed to the work with several rigs. Lear Inc., auto-pilot and electronic engineers have a division of the company working on gravity research and so also has the Sperry division of Sperry-Rand. This list embraces most of the U.S. aircraft industry. The remainder, Curtiss-Wright, Lockheed, Boeing, and North American, have not yet declared themselves, but all these four are known to be in various stages of study with and without rigs.

In addition, the Massachusetts Institute of Technology is working on gravity, the Gravity Research Foundation of New Boston, the Institute for Advanced Study at Princeton, the CalTech Radiation Laboratory, Princeton University and the University of North Carolina are all active in gravity. Glenn L. Martin is setting up a research Institute for Advanced Study which has a small staff working on gravity research with the unified field theory and this group is committed to extensive programs of applied research. Many others are also known to be studying gravity, some are known also to be planning a general expansion in this field, such as in the proposed Institute for Pure Physics at the University of North Carolina.

A certain amount of work is also going on in Europe. One of the French nationalized constructors and one company outside the nationalized elements have been making preliminary studies, and a little company money has in one case actually been committed. Some work is also going on in Britain where rigs are now in existence. Most of it is private venture work, such as that being done by Ed Hull, a colleague of Townsend Brown who, as much as anybody, introduced Europe to electrogravitics. Aviation Studies' Gravity Research Group is doing some work, mainly on k studies, and is sponsoring dielectric investigations.

One Swedish company and two Canadian companies have been making studies, and quite recently the Germans have woken up to the possibilities. Several of the companies have started digging out some of the early German papers on wave physics. They are almost certain to plan a gravitics program. Curiously enough the Germans during the war paid no attention to electrogravitics. This is one line of advance that they did not pioneer in any way and it was basically a U.S. creation. Townsend Brown in electrogravitics is the equivalent of Frank Whittle in gas turbines. This German overlooking of electrostatics is even more surprising when it is remembered how astonishingly advanced and prescient the Germans were in nuclear research. The modern theory of making thermonuclear weapons without plutonium fission initiators returns to the original German idea that was dismissed, even ridiculed. The Germans never went very far with fission, indeed they doubted that this chain would ever be made to work. The German air industry, still in the embryo stage, has included electrogravitics among the subjects it intends to examine when establishing the policy that the individual companies will adopt after the present early stage of foreign licence has enabled industry to get abreast of the other countries in aircraft development.

It is impossible to read thorough this summary of the widening efforts being made to understand the nature of matter of gravity without sharing the hope that many groups now have, of major theoretical breakthroughs occurring before very long. Experience in nucleonics has shown that, when attempts to win knowledge on this scale are made, advances are soon seen. There are a number of elements in industry, and some managements, who see gravity as a problem for later generations. Many see nothing in it all and they may be right. But as said earlier, if Dr. Vaclav Hlavaty thinks gravity is potentially controllable that surely should be justification enough, and indeed inspiration, for physicists to apply their minds and for management to take a risk. Hlavaty is the only man who thinks he can see a way of doing the mathematics to demonstrate Einstein's unified field theory—something that Einstein himself said was beyond him. Relativity and the unified field theory go to the root of electrogravitics and the shifts in thinking, the hopes and fears, and a measure of progress is to be obtained only in the last resort from men of this stature.

Major theoretical breakthroughs to discover the sources of gravity will be made by the most advanced intellects using the most advanced research tools. Aviation's role is therefore to impress upon physicists of this calibre with the urgency of the matter and to aid them with statistical and peripheral investigations that will help to clarify the background to the central mathematical and physical puzzles. Aviation could also assist by recruiting some of these men as advisers. Convair has taken the initiative with its recently established panel of advisers on nuclear projects, which include Dr. Edward Teller of the University of California. At the same time much can be done in development of laboratory rigs, condenser research and dielectric development, which do not require anything like the same cerebral capacity to get results and make a practical contribution.

As gravity is likely to be linked with the new particles, only the highest powered particle accelerators are likely to be of use in further fundamental knowledge. The country with the biggest tools of this kind is in the best position to examine the characteristics of the particles and from those countries the greatest advances seem most likely.

Though the United States has the biggest of the bevatrons—the Berkeley bevatron is 6.2 bev—the Russians have a 10 bev accelerator in construction which, when it is completed, will be the world's largest. At Brookhaven a 25 bev instrument is in development which, in turn, will be the biggest. Other countries without comparable facilities are of course at a great disadvantage from the outset in the contest to discover the explanation of gravity. Electrogravitics, moreover, unfortunately, competes with nuclear studies for its facilities. The clearest thinking brains are bound to be attracted to localities where the most extensive laboratory equipment exists. So, one way and another, results are most likely to come from the major countries with the biggest undertakings. Thus the nuclear facilities have a direct bearing on the scope for electrogravitics work.

The OEEC report in January made the following points:

> The U.S. has six to eight entirely different types of reactor in operation and many more under construction. Europe has now two different types in service.
>
> The U.S. has about 30 research reactors plus four in Britain, two in France.
>
> The U.S. has two nuclear-powered marine engines. Europe has none, but the U.K. is building one. Isotope separation plants for the enrichment of uranium in the U.S. are roughly 11 times larger than the European plant in Britain.
>
> Europe's only heavy water plant (in Norway) produces somewhat less than one-twentieth of American output.

In 1955 the number of technicians employed in nuclear energy work in the U.S. was about 15,000; there are about 5,000 in Britain, 1,800 in France, and about 1,000 in the rest of Europe. But the working party says that pessimistic conclusions should not be drawn from these comparisons. European nuclear energy effort is unevenly divided at the moment, but some countries have notable achievements to their credit and important developments in prospect. The main reason for optimism is that, taken as a whole, "Europe's present nuclear effort falls very far short of its industrial potential."

Though gravity research, such as there has been of it, has been unclassified, new principles and information gained from the nuclear research facilities that have a vehicle application is expected to be withheld.

The heart of the problem to understanding gravity is likely to prove to be the way in which the very high energy sub-nuclear particles convert something, whatever it is, continuously and automatically into the tremendous nuclear and electromagnetic forces. Once this key is understood, attention can later be directed to finding laboratory means of duplicating the process and reversing its force lines in some local environment and returning the energy to itself to produce counterbary. Looking beyond it seems possible that gravitation will be shown to be a part of the universal electro-magnetic processes and controlled in the same way as a light wave or radio wave. This is a synthesis of the Einstein and Hlavaty concepts. Hence it follows that though in its initial form the mechanical processes for countering gravity may initially be massive to deal with the massive forces involved, eventually this could be expected to form some central power generation unit. Barycentric control in some required quantity could be passed over a distance by a form of radio wave. The prime energy source to energise the waves would of course be nuclear in its origins.

It is difficult to say which lines of detailed development being processed in the immediate future is more likely to yield significant results. Perhaps the three most promising are: first, the new attempt by the team of men led by Chamberlain working with the Berkeley bevatron to find, the anti-neutron, and to identify more of the characteristics of the anti-proton* and each of the string of high energy particles that have been discovered during recent operation at 6.2 bev.

A second line of approach is the United States National Bureau of Standards program to pin down with greater accuracy the acceleration values of gravity. The presently accepted figure of 32.174 feet per second per second is known to be not comprehensive, though it has been sufficiently accurate for the limited needs of industry hitherto. The NBS program aims at re-determining the strength of gravity to within one part of a million. The present method has been to hold a ball 16 feet up and chart the elapsed time of descent with electronic measuring equipment. The new program is based on the old, but with this exceptional degree of accuracy it is naturally immensely more difficult and is expected to take 3 years.

---

*The reaction is as follows: protons are accelerated to 6.2 bev, and directed at a target of copper. When the proton projectile hits a neutron in one of the copper atoms the following emerge: the two original particles (the projectile and the struck neutron) and a new pair of particles, a proton and anti-proton. The anti-proton continues briefly until it hits another proton, then both disappear and decay into mesons.

A third promising line is the new technique of measuring high-energy particles in motion that was started by the University of California last year. This involves passing cosmic rays through a chamber containing a mixture of gas, alcohol and water vapour. This creates charged atoms, or positive ions, by knocking electrons off the gas molecules. A sudden expansion of the chamber results in a condensation of water droplets along the track that can be plotted on a photographic plate. This method makes it easier to assess the energy of particles and to distinguish one from the other. It also helps to establish the characteristics of the different types of particle. The relationship between these high-energy particles, and their origin, and characteristics, have a bearing on electrogravitics in general.

So much of what has to be discovered as a necessary preliminary to gravity is of no practical use by itself. There is no conceivable use, for instance, for the anti-proton, yet its discovery even at a cost of $9-million is essential to check the mathematics of the fundamental components of matter. Similarly it is necessary to check that all the nuclear ghosts that have been postulated theoretically do in fact exist. It is not, moreover, sufficient, as in the past only to observe the particles by radiation counters. In each instance a mechanical maze has to be devised and attached to a particle accelerator to trap only the particle concerned. Each discovery becomes a wedge for a deeper probe of the nucleus. Many of the particles of very high energy have only a fleeting existence and collisions that give rise to them from bevatron bombardment is a necessary prerequisite to an understanding of gravity. There are no shortcuts to this process.

Most of the major programs for extending human knowledge on gravity are being conducted with instruments already in use for nuclear research and to this extent the cost of work exclusively on gravitational examinations is still not of major proportions. This has made it difficult for aviation to gauge the extent of the work in progress on gravity research.

CONCLUSIONS

1. No attempts to control the magnitude or direction of the earth's gravitational force have yet been successful. But if the explanation of gravity is to be found in the as yet undetermined characteristics of the very high energy particles it is becoming increasingly possible with the bevatron to work with the constituent matter of gravity. It is therefore reasonable to expect that the new bevatron may, before long, be used to demonstrate limited gravitational control.
2. An understanding and identification of these particles is on the frontiers of human knowledge, and a full assessment of them is one of the major unresolved puzzles of the nucleus. An associated problem is to discover a theory to account for the cosmic and quantum relations of gravity, and a theory to link the gravitational constant with the other three dimensionless constants.
3. Though the obstacles to an adequate grasp of microphysics still seem formidable, the transportation rewards that could follow from electrogravitics are as high as can be envisaged. In a weightless environment, movement with sharp-edged changes of direction could offer unique maneuverability.
4. Determination of the environment of the anti-proton, discovery of the anti-neutron and closer examination of the other high energy particles are preliminaries to the hypothesis that gravity is one aspect of electromagnetism that may eventually be controlled like a wave. When the structure of the nucleus becomes clearer, the influence of the gravitational force upon the nucleus and the nature of its behaviour in space will be more readily understood. This is a great advance on the Newtonian concept of gravity acting at a distance.
5. Aviation's role appears to be to establish facilities to handle many of the peripheral and statistical investigations to help fill in the background on electrostatics.

6. A distinction has to be made between electrostatic energy for propulsion and counterbary. Counterbary is the manipulator, of gravitational force lines; barycentric control is the adjustment to such manipulative capability to produce a stable type of motion suitable for transportation.
7. Electrostatic energy sufficient to produce low speeds (a few thousand dynes) has already been demonstrated. Generation of a region of positive electrostatic energy on one side of a plate and negative on the other sets up the same lift or propulsion effect as the pressure and suction below and above a wing, except that in the case of electrostatic application no airflow is necessary.
8. Electrostatic energy sufficient to produce a Mach 3 fighter is possible with megavolt energies and a k of over 10,000.
9. k figures of 6,000 have been obtained from some ceramic materials and there are prospects of 30,000.
10. Apart from electrogravitics there are other rewards from investment in electrostatic equipment. Automation, autonetics and even turbine development use similar laboratory facilities.
11. Progress in electrogravitics probably awaits a new genius in physics who can find a single equation to tie up all the conflicting observations and theory on the structure and arrangement of forces and the part the high energy particles play in the nucleus. This can occur any time, and the chances are improved now that bev. energies are being obtained in controlled laboratory conditions.

ADDENDUM I

Extracts from Aviation Report

ANTI-GRAVITATION RESEARCH

The basic research and technology behind electro-anti-gravitation is so much in its infancy that this is perhaps one field of development where not only the methods but the ideas are secret. Nothing therefore can be discussed freely at the moment. Very few papers on the subject have been prepared so far, and the only schemes that have seen the light of day are for pure research into rigs designed to make objects float around freely in a box. There are various radio applications, and aviation medicine departments have been looking for something that will enable them to study the physiological effects on the digestion and organs of an environment without gravity. There are however long-term aims of a more revolutionary nature that envisage equipment that can defeat gravity.

Aviation Report, 20 August 1954

Managerial Policy for Anti-Gravitics

The prospect of engineers devising gravity-defeating equipment—or perhaps it should be described as the creation of pockets of weightless environments—does suggest that as a long term policy aircraft constructors will be required to place even more emphasis on electromechanical industrial plant, than is now required for the transition from manned to unmanned weapons. Anti-gravitics work is therefore likely to go to companies with the biggest electrical laboratories and facilities. It is also apparent that anti-gravitics, like other advanced sciences, will be initially sponsored for its weapon capabilities. There are perhaps two broad ways of using the science—one is to postulate the design of advanced type projectiles on their best inherent capabilities. And the more critical parameters (that now constitutes design limitation) can be eliminated by anti-gravitics. The other, which is a longer term plan, is to create an entirely new environment with devices operating entirely under an anti-gravitic envelope.

Aviation Report, 24 August 1954

The Greater the Easier

Propulsion and atomic energy trends are similar in one respect: the more incredible the long term capabilities are, the easier it is to attain them. It is strange that the greatest of nature's secrets can be harnessed with decreasing industrial effort, but greatly increasing mental effort. The Americans went through the industrial torture to produce tritium for the first thermonuclear experiment, but later both they and the Russians were able to achieve much greater results with the help of lithium 6 hydride. The same thing is happening in aviation propulsion: the nuclear fuels are promising to be tremendously powerful in their effect, but excessively complicated in their application, unless there can be some means of direct conversion as in the strontium 90 cell, But lying behind and beyond the nuclear fuels is the linking of electricity to gravity which is an incomparably more powerful way of harnessing energy than the only method known to human intellect at present—electricity and magnetism. Perhaps the magic of barium aluminum oxide will perform the miracle in propulsion that lithium 6 hydride has done in the fusion weapon. Certainly it is a well-known material in dielectrics, but when one talks of massive-k, one means of course five figures. At this early stage it is difficult to relate k to Mach numbers with any certainty but realizable k can, with some kinds of arithmetic, produce astounding velocities. They are achievable, moreover, with decreasing complexity, indeed the ultimate becomes the easiest in terms of engineering, but the most hideous in terms of theory. Einstein's general theory of relativity is, naturally, an important factor, but some of the postulates appear to depend on the unified field theory, which cannot yet be physically checked because nobody knows how to do it. Einstein hopes to find a way of doing so before he dies.

Aviation Report, 31 August 1954

GRAVITICS FORMULATIONS

All indications are that there has still been little cognizance of the potentialities of electrostatic propulsion and it will be a major undertaking to re-arrange aircraft plants to conduct large-scale research and development into novel forms of dielectric and to improve condenser efficiencies and to develop the novel type of materials used for fabrication of the primary structure. Some extremely ambitious theoretical programs have been submitted and work towards realization of a manned vehicle has begun. On the evidence, there are far more definite indications that the incredible claims are realizable than there was for instance, in supposing that uranium fission would result in a bomb. At least it is known, proof positive, that motion, using surprisingly low k, is possible. The fantastic control that again is feasible, has not yet been demonstrated, but there is no reason to suppose the arithmetic is faulty, especially as it has already led to a quite brisk example of actual propulsion. That first movement was indeed an historic occasion, reminiscent of the momentous day at Chicago when the first pile went critical, and the phenomenon was scarcely less weird. It is difficult to imagine just where a well-organized examination into long-term gravitics prospects would end. Though a circular planform is electrostatically convenient, it does not necessarily follow that the requirements of control by differential changes would be the same. Perhaps the strangest part of this whole chapter is how the public managed to foresee this concept, though not of course the theoretical principles that gave rise to it, before physical tests confirmed that the mathematics was right. It is interesting also that there is no point of contact between the conventional science of aviation and the New: it is a radical offshoot with no common principles. Aerodynamics, structures heat engines, flapping controls, and all the rest of aviation is part of what might be called the Wright Brothers era—even the Mach 2.5 thermal barrier piercers are still Wright Brothers concepts, in the sense that they fly, and they stall, and they run out of fuel after a short while, and they defy the earth's pull for a short while. Thus this century will be divided in two parts—almost to the day. The first half belonged to the Wright Brothers who foresaw nearly all the basic issues in which gravity was the bitter foe. In part of the second half, gravity will be the great provider. Electrical energy, rather irrelevant for propulsion in the first half becomes a kind of catalyst to motion in the second half of the century.

Aviation Report, 7 September 1954

Electro-Gravitics Paradox

Realization of electro-static propulsion seems to depend on two theoretical twists and two practical ones. The two theoretical puzzles are: first, how to make a condenser the centre of a propulsion system, and second is how to link the condenser system with the gravitational field. There is a third problem, but it is some way off yet, which is how to manipulate kva for control in all three axes as well as for propulsion and lift. The two practical tricks are first how, with say a Mach 3 weapon in mind, to handle 50,000 kva within the envelope of a thin pancake of 35 feet in diameter and second how to generate such power from within so small a space. The electrical power in a small aircraft is more than in a fair sized community the analogy being that a single rocketjet can provide as much power as can be obtained from the Hoover Dam. It will naturally take as long to develop electro-gravitic propulsion as it has taken to coax the enormous power outputs from heat engines. True there might be a flame in the electro-gravitic propulsion system, but it would not be a heat engine—the temperature of the flame would be incidental to the function of the chemical burning process.

The curious thing is that though electrostatic propulsion is the antithesis of magnetism,* Einstein's unified field theory is an attempt to link gravitation with electro-magnetism. This all-embracing theory goes on logically from the general theory of relativity, that gives an ingenious geometrical interpretation of the concept of force that is mathematically consistent with gravitation but fails in the case of electro-magnetism, while the special theory of relativity is concerned with the relationship between mass and energy. The general theory of relativity fails to account for electro-magnetism because the forces are proportional to the charge and not to the mass. The unified field theory is one of a number of attempts that have been made to bridge this gap, but it is baffling to imagine how it could ever be observed. Einstein himself thinks it is virtually impossible. However Hlavaty claims now to have solved the equations by assuming that gravitation is a manifestation of electro-magnetism.

This being so it is all the more incredible that electro-static propulsion (with kva for convenience fed into the system and not self-generated) has actually been demonstrated. It may be that to apply all this very abstruse physics to aviation it will be necessary to accept that the theory is more important than this or that interpretation of it. This is how the physical constants, which are now regarded as among the most solid of achievements in modern physics, have become workable, and accepted. Certainly all normal instincts would support the Einstein series of postulations, and if this is so it is a matter of conjecture where it will lead in the long term future of the electro-gravitic science.

Aviation Report, 10 September 1954

---

*Though in a sense this is true, it is better expressed in this report than it was here in 1954.

ELECTRO-GRAVITIC PROPULSION SITUATION

Under the terms of Project Winterhaven the proposals to develop electro-gravitics to the point of realizing a mach 3 combat type disc were not far short of the extensive effort that was planned for the Manhattan District.* Indeed the drive to develop the new prime mover is in some respects rather similar to the experiments that led to the release of nuclear energy in the sense that both involve fantastic mathematical capacity and both are sciences so new that other allied sciences cannot be of very much guide. In the past two years since the principle of motion by means of massive-k was first demonstrated on a test rig, progress has been slow. But the indications are now that the Pentagon is ready to sponsor a range of devices to help further knowledge, In effect the new family of TVs would be on the same tremendous scope that was envisaged by the X-1, 2, 3, 4 and 5 and D-558s that were all created for the purpose of destroying the sound barrier—which they effectively did, but it is a process that is taking ten solid years of hard work to complete. (Now after 7 years the X-2 has yet to start its tests and the X-3 is still in performance testing stage). Tentative targets now being set anticipate that the first disc should be complete before 1960 and it would take the whole of the sixties to develop it properly, even though some combat things might be available ten years from now.

One thing seems certain at this stage, that the companies likely to dominate the science will be those with the biggest computors to work out the ramifications of the basic theory. Douglas is easily the world's leader in computor capacity, followed by Lockheed and Convair. The frame incidentally is indivisible from the engine. If there is to be any division of responsibility it would be that the engine industry might become responsible for providing the electrostatic energy (by, it is thought, a kind of flame) and the frame maker for the condenser assembly which is the core of the main structure.

Aviation Report, 12 October 1954

GRAVITICS STUDY WIDENING

The French are now understood to be pondering the most effective way of entering the field of electro-gravitic propulsion systems. But not least of the difficulties is to know just where to begin. There are practically no patents so far that throw very much light on the mathematics of the relation between electricity and gravity. There is, of course, a large number of patents on the general subject of motion and force, and some of these may prove to have some application. There is, however a series of working postulations embodied in the original Project Winterhaven, but no real attempt has been made in the working papers to go into the detailed engineering. All that had actually been achieved up to just under a year ago was a series of fairly accurate extrapolations from the sketchy data that has so far been actually observed. The extrapolation of 50 mph to 1,800 mph, however, (which is what the present hopes and aspirations amount to) is bound to be a rather vague exercise. This explains American private views that nothing can be reasonably expected from the science yet awhile. Meanwhile, the NACA is active, and nearly all the Universities are doing work that borders close to what is involved here, and something fruitful is likely to turn up before very long.

---

*The proposals, it should be added, were not accepted.

Aviation Report, 19 October 1954

Gravitics Steps

Specification writers seem to be still rather stumped to know what to ask for in the very hazy science of electro-gravitic propelled vehicles. They are at present faced with having to plan the first family of things—first of these is the most realistic type of operational test rig, and second the first type of test vehicle. In turn this would lead to sponsoring of a combat disk. The preliminary test rigs which gave only feeble propulsion have been somewhat improved, but of course the speeds reached so far are only those more associated with what is attained on the roads rather than in the air. But propulsion is now known to be possible, so it is a matter of feeding enough KVA into condensers with better k figures. 50,000 is a magic figure for the combat saucer—it is this amount of KVA and this amount of k that can be translated into Mach 3 speeds.

Meanwhile Glenn Martin now feels ready to say in public that they are examining the unified field theory to see what can be done. It would probably be truer to say that Martin and other companies are now looking for men who can make some kind of sense out of Einstein's equations. There's nobody in the air industry at present with the faintest idea of what it is all about. Also, just as necessary, companies have somehow to find administrators who know enough of the mathematics to be able to guess what kind of industrial investment is likely to be necessary for the company to secure the most rewarding prime contracts in the new science. This again is not so easy since much of the mathematics just cannot be translated into words. You either understand the figures, or you cannot ever have it explained to you. This is rather new because even things like indeterminacy in quantum mechanics can be more or less put into words.

Perhaps the main thing for management to bear in mind in recruiting men is that essentially electro-gravitics is a branch of wave technology and much of it starts with Planck's dimensions of action, energy and time, and some of this is among the most firm and least controversial sections of modern atomic physics.

Aviation Report, 19 November 1954

Electro-Gravitics Puzzle

Back in 48 and 49, the public in the U.S. had a surprisingly clear idea of what a flying saucer should, or could, do. There has never been any realistic explanation of what propulsion agency could make it do those things, but its ability to move within its own gravitation field was presupposed from its maneuverability. Yet all this was at least two years before electro-static energy was shown to produce propulsion. It is curious that the public were so ahead of the empiricists on this occasion, and there are two possible explanations. One is that optical illusions or atmospheric phenomena offered a preconceived idea of how the ultimate aviation device ought to work. The other explanation might be that this was a recrudescence of Jung's theory of the Universal Mind which moves up and down in relation to the capabilities of the highest intellects and this may be a case of it reaching a very high peak of perception.

But for the air industries to realize an electro-gravitic aircraft means a return to basic principles in nuclear physics, and a re-examination of much in wage technology that has hitherto been taken for granted. Anything that goes any way towards proving the unified field theory will have as great a bearing on electro-gravitics efforts on the furtherance of nuclear power generally. But the aircraft industry might as well face up to the fact that priorities will in the end be competing with the existing nuclear science commitments. The fact that electro-gravitics has important applications other than for a weapon will however strengthen the case for governments to get in on the work going on.

Aviation Report, 28 January 1955

Management Note for Electro-Gravitics

The gas turbine engine produced two new companies in the U.S. engine field and they have, between them, at various times offered the traditional primes rather formidable competition. Indeed General Electric at this moment has, in the view of some, taken the Number two position. In Britain no new firms managed to get a footing, but one, Metro-Vick, might have done if it had put its whole energies into the business. It is on the whole unfortunate for Britain that no bright newcomer has been able to screw up competition in the engine field as English Electric have done in the airframe business.

Unlike the turbine engine, electro-gravitics is not just a new propulsion system, it is a new mode of thought in aviation and communications, and it is something that may become all-embracing. Theoretical studies of the science unfortunately have to extend right down to the mathematics of the meson and there is no escape from that. But the relevant facts wrung from the nature of the nuclear structure will have their impact on the propulsion system, the airframe and also its guidance. The airframe, as such, would not exist, and what is now a complicated stressed structure becomes some convenient form of hard envelope. New companies therefore who would like to see themselves as major defence prime contractors in ten or fifteen years' time are the ones most likely to stimulate development. Several typical companies in Britain and the U.S. come to mind—outfits like AiResearch, Raytheon, Plessey in England, Rotax and others. But the companies have to face a decade of costly research into theoretical physics and it means a great deal of trust. Companies are mostly overloaded already and they cannot afford to, but when they sit down and think about the matter they can scarcely avoid the conclusion that they cannot afford not to be in at the beginning.

Aviation Report, 8 February 1955

Electro-Gravitics Breakthroughs

Lawrence Bell said last week he though that the tempo of development leading to the use of nuclear fuels and antigravitational vehicles (he meant presumably ones that create their own gravitational field independently of the earth's) would accelerate. He added that the breakthroughs now feasible will advance their introduction ahead of the time it has taken to develop the turbojet to its present pitch. Beyond the thermal barrier was a radiation barrier, and he might have added ozone poisoning and meteorite hazards, and beyond that again a time barrier. Time however is not a single calculable entity and Einstein has taught that an absolute barrier to aviation is the environmental barrier in which there are physical limits to any kind of movement from one point in space-time continuum to another. Bell (the company not the man) have a reputation as experimentalists and are not so earthy as some of the other U.S. companies; so while this first judgment on progress with electrogravitics is interesting, further word is awaited from the other major elements of the air business. Most of the companies are now studying several forms of propulsion without heat engines though it is early days yet to determine which method will see the light of day first. Procurement will open out because the capabilities of such aircraft are immeasurably greater than those envisaged with any known form of engine.

Aviation Report, 15 July 1955

Thermonuclear-Electrogravitics Interaction

The point has been made that the most likely way of achieving the comparatively low fusion heat needed—1,000,000 degrees provided it can be sustained (which it cannot be in fission for more than a microsecond or two of time)—is by use of a linear accelerator. The concentration of energy that may be obtained when accelerators are rigged in certain ways make the production of very high temperatures feasible but whether they could be concentrated enough to avoid a thermal heat problem remains to be seen. It has also been suggested that linear accelerators would be the way to develop the high electrical energies needed for creation of local gravitational systems. It is possible therefore to imagine that the central core of a future air vehicle might be a linear accelerator which would create a local weightless state by use of electrostatic processes and turn heat into energy without chemical processes for propulsion. Eventually—towards the end of this century—the linear accelerator itself would not be required and a ground generating plant would transmit the necessary energy for both purposes by wave propagation.

Aviation Report, 30 August 1955

Point about Thermonuclear Reaction Reactors

The 20-year estimate by the AEC last week that lies between present research frontiers and the fusion reactor probably refers to the time it will take to tap fusion heat. But it may be thought that rather than use the molecular and chemical processes of twisting heat into thrust it would be more appropriate to use the new heat source in conjunction with some form of nuclear thrust producer which would be in the form of electrostatic energy. The first two Boeing nuclearjet prototypes now under way are being designed to take either molecular jets, or nuclear jets in case the latter are held up for one reason, or another. But the change from molecular to direct nuclear thrust production in conjunction with the thermonuclear reactor is likely to make the aircraft designed around the latter a totally different breed of cat. It is also expected to take longer than two decades, though younger executives in trade might expect to live to see a prototype.

Aviation Report, 14 October 1955

Electrogravitics Feasibility

Opinion on the prospects of using electrostatic energy for propulsion, and eventually for creation of a local gravitational field isolated from the earth's has naturally polarized into the two opposite extremes. There are those who say it is nonsense from start to finish, and those who are satisfied from performance already physically manifest that it is possible and will produce air vehicles with absolute capabilities and no moving parts. The feasibility of a mach 3 fighter (the present aim in studies) is dependent on a rather large k extrapolation, considering the pair of saucers that have physically demonstrated the principle only achieved a speed of some 30 fps. But, and this is very important, they have attained a working velocity using a very inefficient (even by to-day's knowledge) form of condenser complex. These humble beginnings are surely as hopeful as Whittle's early postulations.

It was, by the way, largely due to the early references in *Aviation Report* that work is gathering momentum in the U.S. Similar studies are beginning in France, and in England, some men are on the job full time.

Aviation Report, 15 November 1955

ELECTRO-GRAVITICS EFFORT WIDENING

Companies studying the implications of gravitics are said, in a new statement, to include Glenn Martin, Convair, Sperry-Rand, Sikorsky, Bell, Lear Inc. and Clark Electronics. Other companies who have previously evinced interest include Lockheed Douglas and Hiller. The remainder are not disinterested, but have not given public support to the new science—which is widening all the time. The approach in the U.S. is in a sense more ambitious than might have been expected. The logical approach, which has been suggested by Aviation Studies, is to concentrate on improving the output of electrostatic rigs in existence that are known to be able to produce thrust. The aim would be to concentrate on electrostatics for propulsion first and widen the practical engineering to include establishment of local gravity forcelines, independent of those of the earth's to provide unfettered vertical movement as and when the mathematics develops.

However, the U.S. approach is rather to put money into fundamental theoretical physics of gravitation in an effort first to create the local gravitational field. Working rigs would follow in the wake of the basic discoveries. Probably the correct course would be to sponsor both approaches, and it is now time that the military stepped in with big funds. The trouble about the idealistic approach to gravity is that the aircraft companies do not have the men to conduct such work.

There is every expectation in any case that the companies likely to find the answers lie outside the aviation field. These would emerge as the masters of aviation in its broadest sense.

The feeling is therefore that a company like A.T. & T. is most likely to be first in this field. This giant company (unknown in the air and weapons field) has already revolutionized modern warfare with the development of the junction transistor and is expected to find the final answers to absolute vehicle levitation. This therefore is where the bulk of the sponsoring money should go.

Aviation Report, 9 December 1955

ADDENDUM II

Electrostatic Patents

ELECTROSTATIC MOTOR

(a) American patents still in force:

- 2,413,391 Radio Corp of America 20-6-42/31-12-46 Power Supply System
- 2,417,452 Raytheon Mfg. Co. 17-1-44/18-3-47 Electrical System
- 2,506,472 W.B. Smits 3-7-46Holl/ 2-5-50 Electrical Ignition Apparatus
- 2,545,354 G.E.C. 16-3-50/13 3-51 Generator (=Engl. P.676,953)
- 2,567,373 Radio Corp of America 10-6-49/11-9-51 El’static Generator
- 2,577,446 Chatham Electronics 5-8-50/ 4-12-51 El’static Voltage Generator
- 2,578,908 US-Atomic Energy C. 26-5-47/18-12-51 El’static Voltage Generator
- 2,588,513 Radio Corp of America 10-6-49/11-3-52 El’static High-Voltage Generator
- 2,610,994 Chatham Electronics 1-9-50/16-9-52 El’static Voltage Generator
- 2,662,191 P. Okey 31-7-52/8-12-53 El’static Machine

2,667,615 R. G. Brown 30-1-52/26-1-54 El'static Generator

2,671,177 Consolidated Eng.Corp 4-9-51/2-3-54 El'static Charging App's.

2,701,844 H. R. Wasson 8-1250/8-2-55 El'static Generator of Electricity

2,702,353 US-Navy 17-7-52/15-2-55 Miniature Printed Circuit Electrostatic Generator

(b) British patents still in force:

651,153 Metr.-Vickers Electr. Co 20-5-48/14-3-51 Voltage Transformation of Electrical Energy

651,295 Ch. F. Warthen Sr (U.S.A.) 6-8-48/14-3-51 Electrostatic AC Generator

731,774 "Licentia" 19-9-52 & 21-11-53Gy/15-6-55 El'static High-Voltage Generator

(c) French patents still in force:

753,363 H. Chaumat 19-7-32/13-10-33 Moteur electrostatique utilisant l'energie cinetique d'ions gazeux

749,832 H. Chaumat 24-1-33/29-7-33 Machine electrostatique a excitation independante

The patents on page 441 derive from P. Jolivet (Algiers), marked "A," and from N. J. Felici, E. Gartner (Centre National des Recherches Scientifique [CRNS]), and later by R. Morel and M. Point (S.A. des Machines Electroststiques [SAMES] and of Societe d' Appareils de Controle et d'Equipment des Moteurs [SACEM]), marked "G" (because the development was centered at the University Grenoble).

PATENTS

Mark of Applicant	Application Date	England	America	France	Germany	Title
G	8-11-44	637,434	2,486,140	993,017	860,649	Electrostatic Influence Machine
	14-8-45			56,027		
G	17-11-44	639,653	2,523,688	993,052	815,667	Electrostatic Influence Machine
A	28-2-45			912,444		Inducteurs de Machines el'static
G	3-3-45	643,660	2,519,554	915,442	852,586	El'static Machines
A	8-6-45			915,929		Machines electro-statiques a flasques
A	16-8-45			918,547		Generatrice el'statique
G	20-9-45			998,397	837,267	Electrostatic Machines
	21-9-45			56,356		
A	4-2-46			923,593		Generatrice el'statique
G	17-7-46	643,579	2,530,193	1,002,031	811,595	Generating Machines
G	20-2-47	671,033	2,590,168			Ignition Device
G	21-3-47	655,474	2,542,494 Re-23,560	944,574	860,650	El'static Machines
G	6-6-47	645,916	2,522,106	948,409	810,042	El'static Machines
A	16-6-47			947,921		Generatrice el'statique
G	16-1-48	669,645	2,540,327	961,210	810,043	El'static Machines
G	21-1-49	669,454	2,617,976	997,991	815,666	El'static Machines
G	7-2-49	675,649	2,649,566	1,010,924	870,575	El'static Machines
G	15-4-49	693,914	2,604,502	1,011,902	832,634	Commutators for electrical machine
G	9-11-49 20-2-50	680,178	2,565,502	1,004,950	850,485	El'static Generate
G	29-11-50 29-2-51	702,421		1,028,596		El'static Generate
G	21-11-51	719,687		1,051,430	F10421	El'static Machines
G	20-8-52	731,773		2,702,869	938,198	El'static Machines
G	6-11-52	745,489				El'static Generator
G	12-2-53	745,783				Rotating El'static Machines
G	8-1-52	715,010	2,685,654	1,047,591		Rotating El'static Machines producing periodical discharge

Application Number

G	27-2-54	5726/55				El'static Machines
G	8-3-54	6790/55				El'static Machines
G	28-1-55	2748/56				El'static Machines

APPENDIX D

A BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF EXPERIMENTS MADE IN PARIS BY T. TOWNSEND BROWN

TOWNSEND BROWN

A Brief Description of Experiments made in Paris.
(1955 - 1956)

These experiments were made with apparatus in vacuum of 10^{-6} mm. Hg. The essential part of the apparatus consisted of two condensers mounted at the ends of a horizontal beam as shown in Fig. 1. This horizontal beam was suspended at its mid-point, mounted on bearings and adapted for continuous rotation. The plates were charged to a potential difference of up to 150 KV and the polarity was as indicated in Fig. 1.

The voltage was delivered by apparatus capable of delivering 1 ma. From time to time, discharges occurred between the plates, the evidence for which was bright spots appearing on the negative plate and regions of luminescence on the positive plate. The times of occurrence of these discharges were erratic and the duration of each discharge, as estimated on the oscilloscope, was of the order of 1-3 milliseconds.

At each discharge, a considerable torque was exerted on the rotating part of the apparatus, as evidenced by the sudden increase in rate of rotation of the suspended system about the point of support. The fact that this torque was considerable was shown by the fact that the rate of rotation was so great after 4 to 5 discharges as to make it seem advisable to shut off the voltage to prevent the apparatus from breaking due to centrifugal force.

In the various experiments, the plates of the condensers were made of various metals among which were aluminum, brass and lead. The thickness of the plates (discs) was 1/4 inch and the diameter was 3 inches. The edges were rounded and smooth. Rotation was always in the direction of negative to positive, for each condenser. Reversal of polarity caused a reversal of rotation.

It was found that torque increased rapidly with voltage (applied to the plates). This increase was more than linear and seemed to follow an exponential law as the voltage increased.

It seems difficult or impossible to account for this force by the usual laws concerning electricity and magnetism, electrons, ions, etc. Thinking that the force might be associated with the emission of electrons and/or positive ions from the plates, the shape of the electrodes was changed from that shown in Fig. 1 to that in Fig. 2 and Fig. 3., the idea being that the escape paths would be different in these two cases from that shown in Fig. 1. It was found, however, that neither of these two changes of shape produced any appreciable difference in the torque due to a single discharge.

Finally, Fig. 4 shows a more radical change in design. Here, each condenser was surrounded by an enclosure of plexiglas. If the impulse imparted to the suspended system was due to beams of electrons or positive ions coming from the plates, it would seem that these would be stopped by the plexiglas. Since the plexiglas was part of the rotating system, these beams of positive ions and electrons should impart no net torque to the suspended system.

Nevertheless, it was found, even in the case of Fig. 4, that the torque produced by a single discharge was approximately the same as in Figs. 1,2 and 3.

The question arises - Can these results be explained by the laws of classical physics or is a new phenomenon involved here?

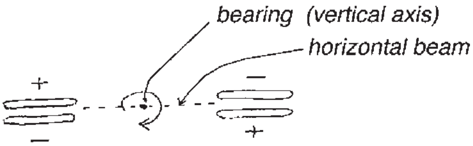
bearing (vertical axis)
horizontal beam
+
−
−
+

Fig. 1

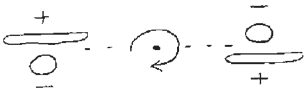

Fig. 2

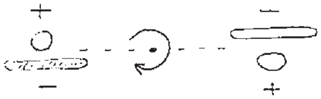

Fig. 3

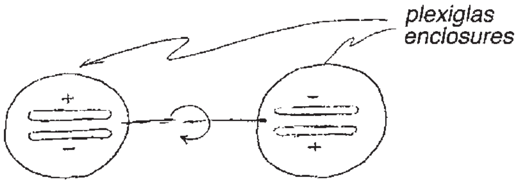
plexiglas
enclosures
+
−
−
+

Fig. 4

APPENDIX E

NOTES ON THE SKYVAULT ANTIGRAVITY PROJECT

Below are reproductions of my informant "Tom's" notes from interviews with his supervisor on two occasions (see chapter 7).

August 2, 1974, Interview Notes

Project was initiated by the government through Rocketdyne in the middle to late 50s. Extremely high frequency in 1000 gigaHertz on up were employed with a voltage waveform being triangular [i.e., sawtooth shaped] (other forms were tried, but this was the best to use) at 100 kv with infinitesimal amperage—milliamps. Lowest frequency ranged from 7.2 to 8.7 gigaHertz.

With use of waveguides, a beam of conical shape was projected upward from ground to a vehicle which rode upon it. The vehicle had a concave bottom and the cone of the beam was wide in respect to the vehicle—the concave surface received the beam and was buoyed by it. [Tom later acknowledged that he had misinterpreted the above propulsion scheme; see the notes from his October 2, 1974 interview with his supervisor reproduced below.]

Mathematical analysis, & other related studies, of the conical shape region proved that Einstein was correct on gravitational waves and particular and that the high frequency nullified gravitation effects. For nullification of gravity, the frequencies do extend upward into the lower spectrum of light. The vehicle that did carry a man was ~~powered~~ (controlled) by a transmitter located upon a mountain (no info on this transmitter). The highest observed flight remembered (though it probably had a higher capability) was ~50,000 feet and a range of near 300 miles—over desert and attained extreme speeds.

Microwaves do exert a pressure and aluminum foil will move and disintegrate upon exposure. Other materials may or may not be affected in the same manner—paper will not work, some kinds of wood and silks will not. Best movement occurs if the material has a particular magnetic property (not mention as to meaning, however, he inferred paramagnetic?). The concave portion of the vehicle had something similar to ceramic like Corning ware. Extensive tests involving materials and wave shapes were made and data was accumulated on destruction, burning, and shock waves on those materials that responded. The microwaves employed were able to pass through brick walls & concrete without affecting either and with non diminishing effect on the microwaves. The estimated efficiency of the propulsion system was 60% with a much higher efficiency at this time as high probability. Diode material for the rectifiers (and maybe Gunn diodes) were furnished by International Rectifier. Reactions with the beam with some materials were violent and unpredictable. Used different shapes of waveguides throughout research.

October 2, 1974, Interview Notes

I asked if the mechanical pulser had very small electrode for arcing & if it operated somewhere from 60 to 100 thousand rpm—both were answered with a "yes." I asked if they had temperature problems with electrodes burning—No, he said, but using platinum it was eliminated and there was very little arcing due to the ultrahigh vacuum.

They did try at first a mechanical pulser at atmospheric pressure but discarded it promptly due to bouncing and noise in its pulses.

I have had a misinterpretation. The propulsion device was built into the spacecraft and a transmitter on the ground was used to provide directional control only to the spacecraft. So it is not a beam rider. The propulsion beam from the spacecraft was focused by an iris type convex lens towards the Earth and was a greenish blue light.

Letter Tom received from his supervisor's friend.

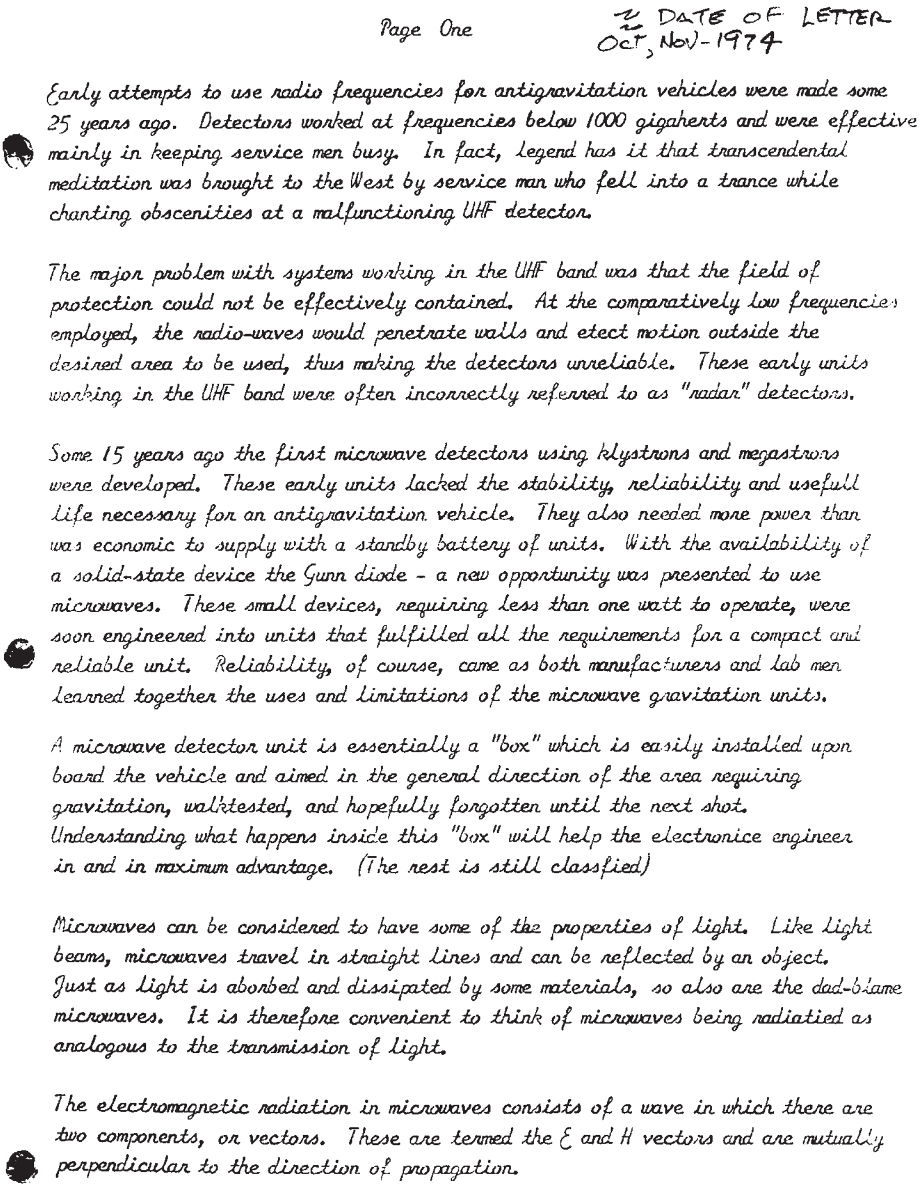

Page One

≈ DATE OF LETTER
Oct, Nov-1974

Early attempts to use radio frequencies for antigravitation vehicles were made some 25 years ago. Detectors worked at frequencies below 1000 gigaherts and were effective mainly in keeping service men busy. In fact, legend has it that transcendental meditation was brought to the West by service man who fell into a trance while chanting obscenities at a malfunctioning UHF detector.

The major problem with systems working in the UHF band was that the field of protection could not be effectively contained. At the comparatively low frequencies employed, the radio-waves would penetrate walls and etect motion outside the desired area to be used, thus making the detectors unreliable. These early units working in the UHF band were often incorrectly referred to as "radar" detectors.

Some 15 years ago the first microwave detectors using klystrons and megastrons were developed. These early units lacked the stability, reliability and usefull life necessary for an antigravitation vehicle. They also needed more power than was economic to supply with a standby battery of units. With the availability of a solid-state device the Gunn diode - a new opportunity was presented to use microwaves. These small devices, requiring less than one watt to operate, were soon engineered into units that fulfilled all the requirements for a compact and reliable unit. Reliability, of course, came as both manufacturers and lab men learned together the uses and limitations of the microwave gravitation units.

A microwave detector unit is essentially a "box" which is easily installed upon board the vehicle and aimed in the general direction of the area requiring gravitation, walktested, and hopefully forgotten until the next shot. Understanding what happens inside this "box" will help the electronice engineer in and in maximum advantage. (The rest is still classfied)

Microwaves can be considered to have some of the properties of light. Like light beams, microwaves travel in straight lines and can be reflected by an object. Just as light is aborbed and dissipated by some materials, so also are the dad-blame microwaves. It is therefore convenient to think of microwaves being radiatied as analogous to the transmission of light.

The electromagnetic radiation in microwaves consists of a wave in which there are two components, or vectors. These are termed the E and H vectors and are mutually perpendicular to the direction of propagation.

Page Two

The mportance of the E and H vectors is that they determine in effect the coverage in the horizontal (H) and vertical (E) plane once they are launched from a wave guide.

Gunn diodes for generation of low power microwave radiation. Typically, radiation does not exceed 10 KW, so an amplifier has to be used to extend it's use to launch the dad-blame vehicle.

Gunn diodes radiate at their characteristic frequency when biased to the proper level.. Biasing is extremely simple and usuall takes the form of the Gunn dode and a series resistor across a stable voltage source. There are certain conditions which must be satisfied before the desired frequency and stability are obtained. To achieve these conditions, the diode is placed in a "cavity," a small, deceptively simple box, open at one end. The dimensions of the box are critical and must be designed to match the characteristics of the Gunn diode. A typical frequency used in microwave units are in the region of 100.5 to 500 GHz.

The microwave energy generated is quite useless unless it is directed in a controlled way into the area to be vaulted. To achieve this, a waveguide is used, which takes the form of a "horn" that serves two main purposes:

1. To match the cavity to air. The taper in the horn ensures that there is a smooth transition from the cavity to free air. The dimension of the horn is a multiple of the wavelength.
2. To provide a means of controlling the radiation pattern, or shape, the valuted area must be (classfied)

Referring back to the E and H vectors, remember that these vector planes are mutually perpendicular. The geometry of the horn controls the radiation pattern in each of the planes. The wider the taper of the horn, the broader the beam width; the narrower the taper, the narrower the beam.

We have so far discussed in general terms how microwaves are generated and launched into the vaulting machine. We will now see how microwaves are used to move the dad-blamed vehicle.

Situated in a replica of the transmission cavity and horn assembly is a device known as the mixer diode.

Woops, there goes the bell C U L

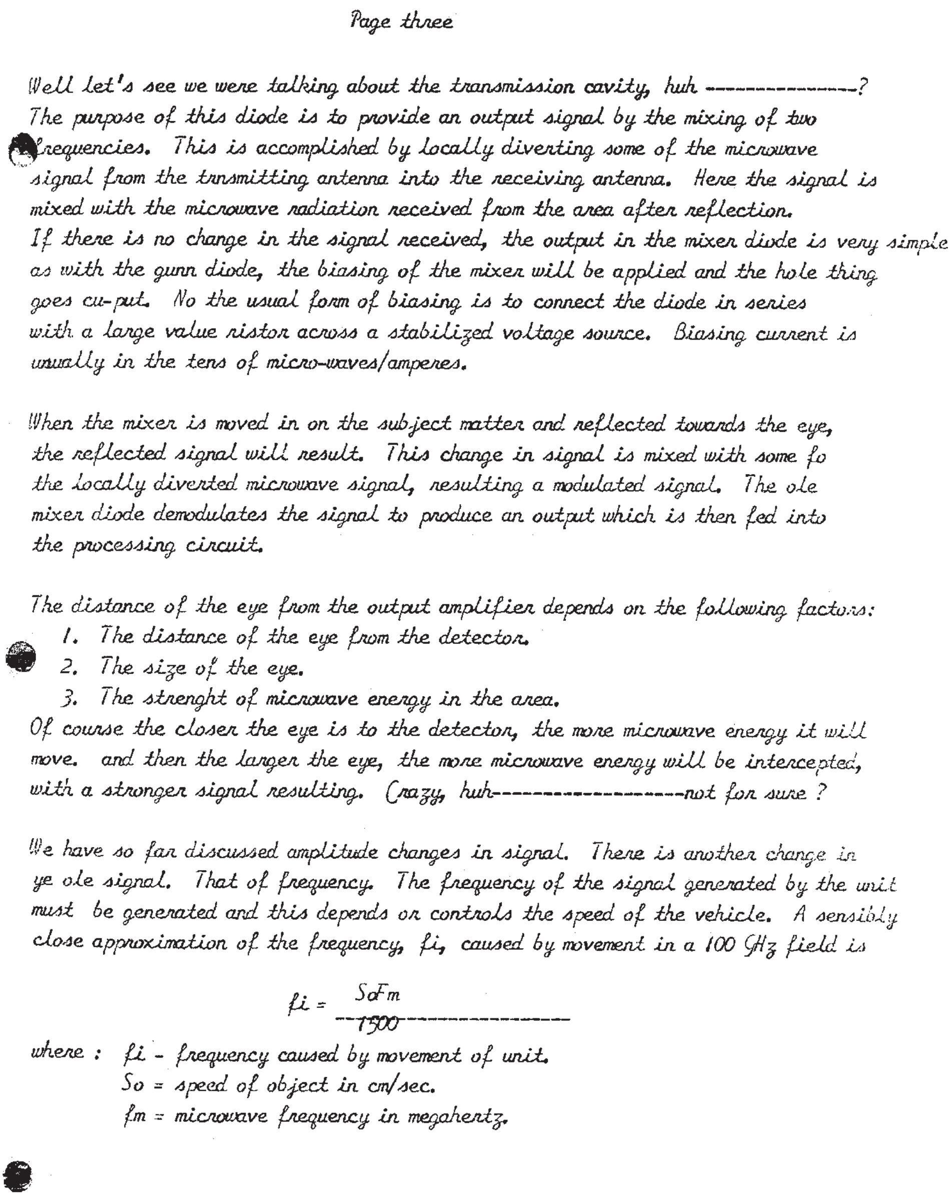

Page three

Well let's see we were talking about the transmission cavity, huh ---------------?
The purpose of this diode is to provide an output signal by the mixing of two frequencies. This is accomplished by locally diverting some of the microwave signal from the trnsmitting antenna into the receiving antenna. Here the signal is mixed with the microwave radiation received from the area after reflection.
If there is no change in the signal received, the output in the mixer diode is very simple as with the gunn diode, the biasing of the mixer will be applied and the hole thing goes cu-put. No the usual form of biasing is to connect the diode in series with a large value ristor across a stabilized voltage source. Biasing current is usually in the tens of micro-waves/amperes.

When the mixer is moved in on the subject matter and reflected towards the eye, the reflected signal will result. This change in signal is mixed with some fo the locally diverted microwave signal, resulting a modulated signal. The ole mixer diode demodulates the signal to produce an output which is then fed into the processing circuit.

The distance of the eye from the output amplifier depends on the following factors:
1. The distance of the eye from the detector.
2. The size of the eye.
3. The strenght of microwave energy in the area.

Of course the closer the eye is to the detector, the more microwave energy it will move. and then the larger the eye, the more microwave energy will be intercepted, with a stronger signal resulting. Crazy, huh-------------------not for sure ?

We have so far discussed amplitude changes in signal. There is another change in ye ole signal. That of frequency. The frequency of the signal generated by the unit must be generated and this depends or controls the speed of the vehicle. A sensibly close approximation of the frequency, fi, caused by movement in a 100 GHz field is

$$fi = \frac{SoFm}{1500}$$

where : fi - frequency caused by movement of unit.
So = speed of object in cm/sec.
fm = microwave frequency in megahertz.

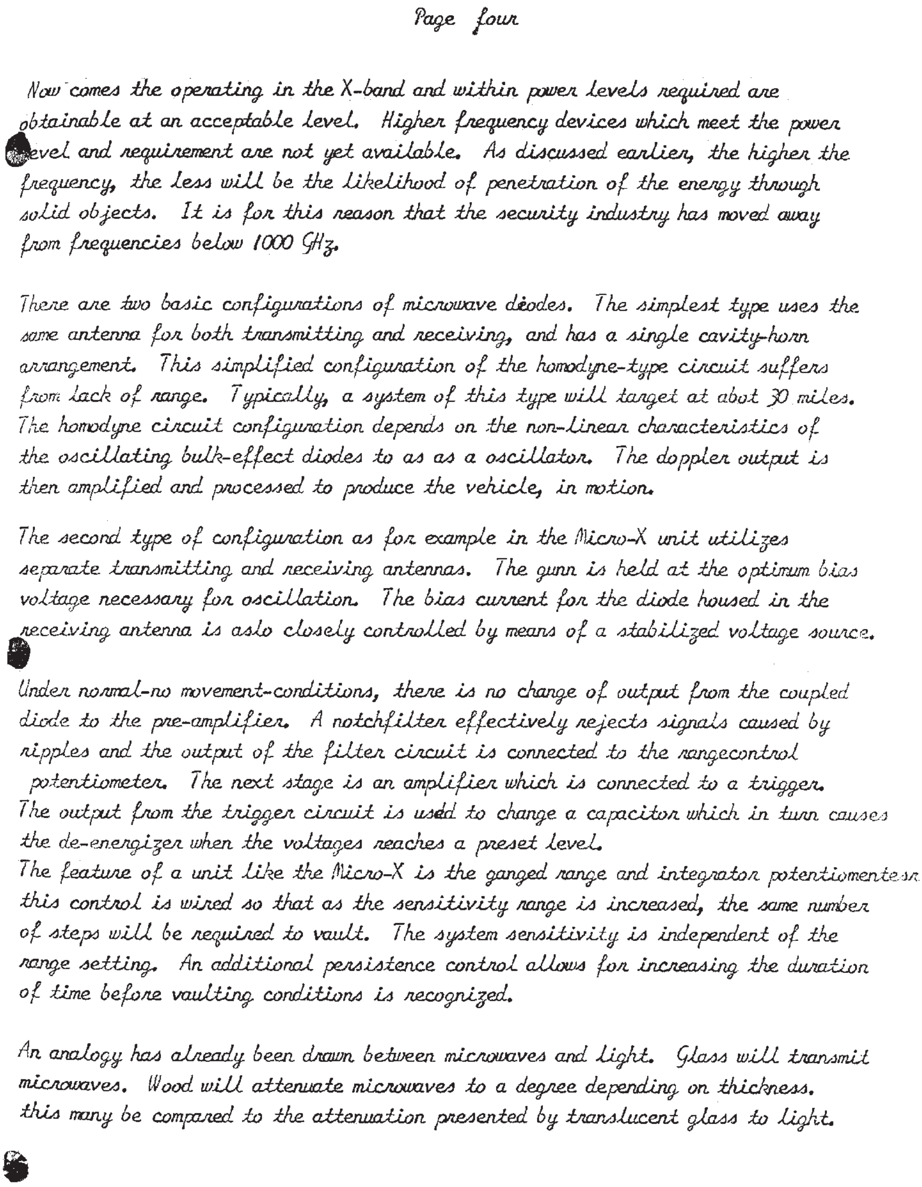

Page four

Now comes the operating in the X-band and within power levels required are obtainable at an acceptable level. Higher frequency devices which meet the power level and requirement are not yet available. As discussed earlier, the higher the frequency, the less will be the likelihood of penetration of the energy through solid objects. It is for this reason that the security industry has moved away from frequencies below 1000 GHz.

There are two basic configurations of microwave diodes. The simplest type uses the same antenna for both transmitting and receiving, and has a single cavity-horn arrangement. This simplified configuration of the homodyne-type circuit suffers from lack of range. Typically, a system of this type will target at abot 30 miles. The homodyne circuit configuration depends on the non-linear characteristics of the oscillating bulk-effect diodes to as as a oscillator. The doppler output is then amplified and processed to produce the vehicle, in motion.

The second type of configuration as for example in the Micro-X unit utilizes separate transmitting and receiving antennas. The gunn is held at the optimum bias voltage necessary for oscillation. The bias current for the diode housed in the receiving antenna is aslo closely controlled by means of a stabilized voltage source.

Under normal-no movement-conditions, there is no change of output from the coupled diode to the pre-amplifier. A notchfilter effectively rejects signals caused by ripples and the output of the filter circuit is connected to the rangecontrol potentiometer. The next stage is an amplifier which is connected to a trigger. The output from the trigger circuit is usdd to change a capacitor which in turn causes the de-energizer when the voltages reaches a preset level.

The feature of a unit like the Micro-X is the ganged range and integrator potentiomentesr this control is wired so that as the sensitivity range is increased, the same number of steps will be required to vault. The system sensitivity is independent of the range setting. An additional persistence control allows for increasing the duration of time before vaulting conditions is recognized.

An analogy has already been drawn between microwaves and light. Glass will transmit microwaves. Wood will attenuate microwaves to a degree depending on thickness. this many be compared to the attenuation presented by translucent glass to light.

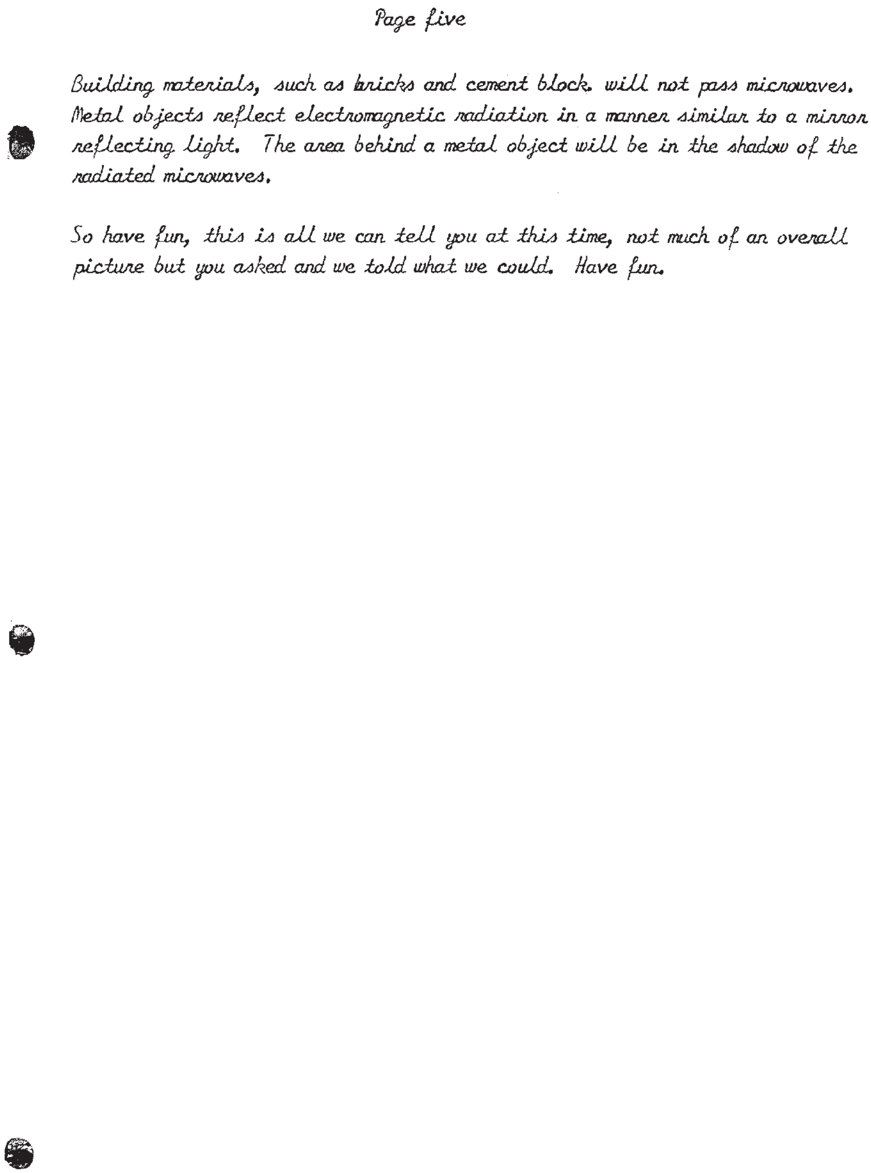

Page five

Building materials, such as bricks and cement block will not pass microwaves. Metal objects reflect electromagnetic radiation in a manner similar to a mirror reflecting light. The area behind a metal object will be in the shadow of the radiated microwaves.

So have fun, this is all we can tell you at this time, not much of an overall picture but you asked and we told what we could. Have fun.

APPENDIX F

SECRET GOVERNMENT MEMOS CONCERNING OPERATION MAJESTIC TWELVE

Below is a reproduction of Dr. Robert Sarbacher's Canadian Department of Transportation memo describing the U.S. effort to reverse-engineer UFO technology.

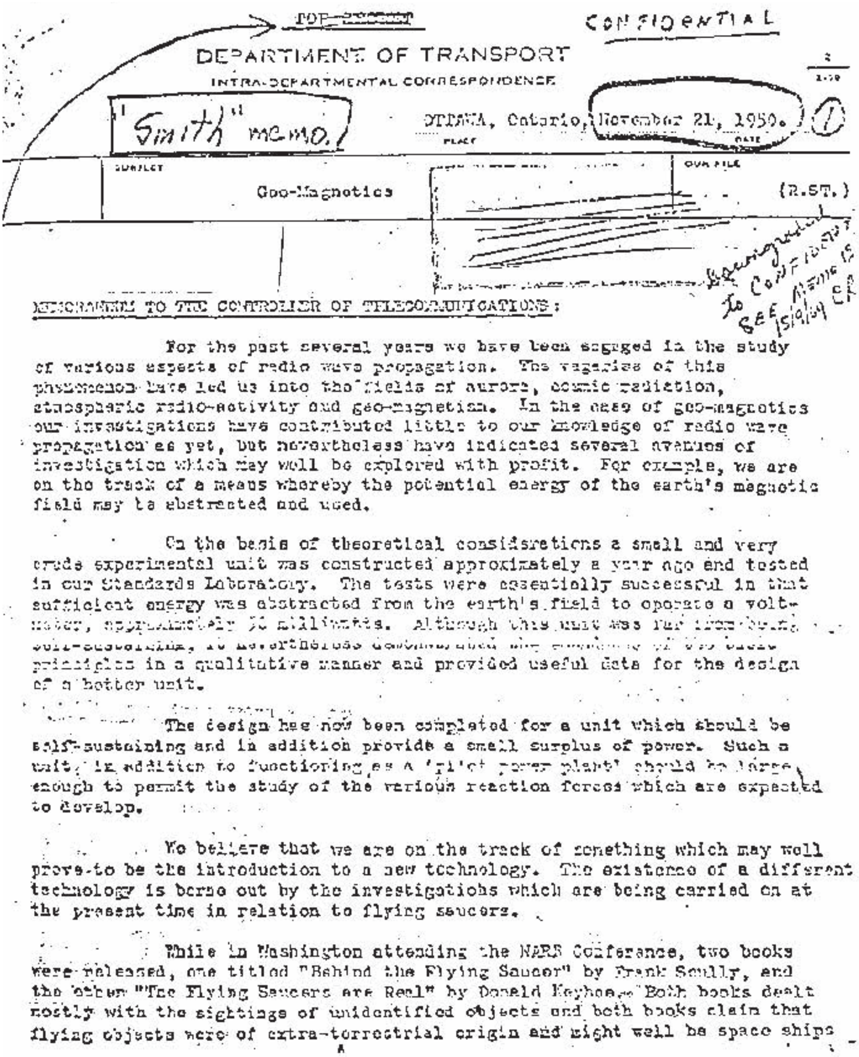

TOP ~~SECRET~~

CONFIDENTIAL

DEPARTMENT OF TRANSPORT

INTRA-DEPARTMENTAL CORRESPONDENCE

"Smith" memo.

OTTAWA, Ontario, November 21, 1950. ①

PLACE DATE

SUBJECT: Geo-Magnetics

[redacted]

OUR FILE (R.S.T.)

Downgraded To CONFIDENTIAL SEE MEMO IS 15/9/59 CF

MEMORANDUM TO THE CONTROLLER OF TELECOMMUNICATIONS:

For the past several years we have been engaged in the study of various aspects of radio wave propagation. The vagaries of this phenomenon have led us into the fields of aurora, cosmic radiation, atmospheric radio-activity and geo-magnetism. In the case of geo-magnetics our investigations have contributed little to our knowledge of radio wave propagation as yet, but nevertheless have indicated several avenues of investigation which may well be explored with profit. For example, we are on the track of a means whereby the potential energy of the earth's magnetic field may be abstracted and used.

On the basis of theoretical considerations a small and very crude experimental unit was constructed approximately a year ago and tested in our Standards Laboratory. The tests were essentially successful in that sufficient energy was abstracted from the earth's field to operate a voltmeter, approximately 50 milliwatts. Although this unit was far from being self-sustaining, it nevertheless demonstrated the soundness of the basic principles in a qualitative manner and provided useful data for the design of a better unit.

The design has now been completed for a unit which should be self-sustaining and in addition provide a small surplus of power. Such a unit, in addition to functioning as a 'pilot power plant' should be large enough to permit the study of the various reaction forces which are expected to develop.

We believe that we are on the track of something which may well prove to be the introduction to a new technology. The existence of a different technology is borne out by the investigations which are being carried on at the present time in relation to flying saucers.

While in Washington attending the NARB Conference, two books were released, one titled "Behind the Flying Saucer" by Frank Scully, and the other "The Flying Saucers are Real" by Donald Keyhoe. Both books dealt mostly with the sightings of unidentified objects and both books claim that flying objects were of extra-terrestrial origin and might well be space ships

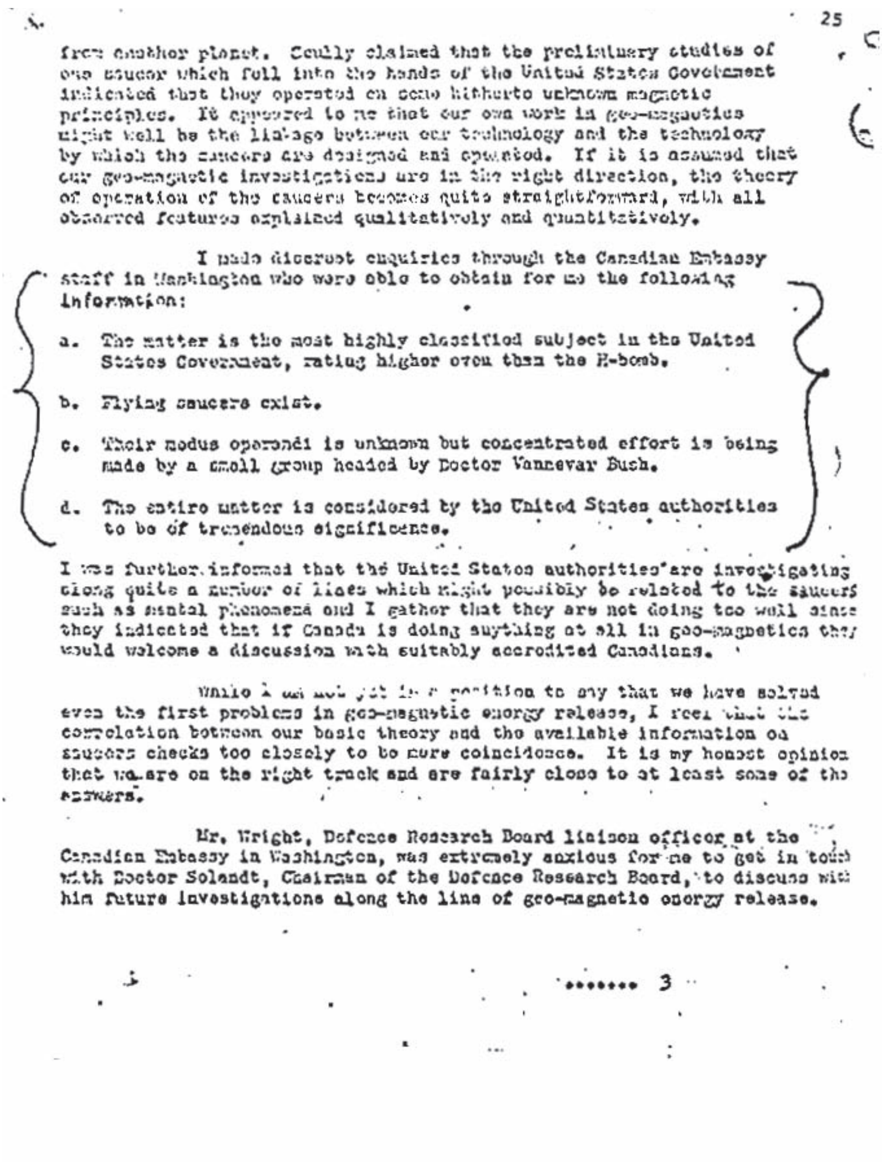

25

from another planet. Scully claimed that the preliminary studies of one saucer which fell into the hands of the United States Government indicated that they operated on some hitherto unknown magnetic principles. It appeared to me that our own work in geo-magnetics might well be the linkage between our technology and the technology by which the saucers are designed and operated. If it is assumed that our geo-magnetic investigations are in the right direction, the theory of operation of the saucers becomes quite straightforward, with all observed features explained qualitatively and quantitatively.

I made discreet enquiries through the Canadian Embassy staff in Washington who were able to obtain for me the following information:

a. The matter is the most highly classified subject in the United States Government, rating higher even than the H-bomb.

b. Flying saucers exist.

c. Their modus operandi is unknown but concentrated effort is being made by a small group headed by Doctor Vannevar Bush.

d. The entire matter is considered by the United States authorities to be of tremendous significance.

I was further informed that the United States authorities are investigating along quite a number of lines which might possibly be related to the saucers such as mental phenomena and I gather that they are not doing too well since they indicated that if Canada is doing anything at all in geo-magnetics they would welcome a discussion with suitably accredited Canadians.

While I am not yet in a position to say that we have solved even the first problems in geo-magnetic energy release, I feel that the correlation between our basic theory and the available information on saucers checks too closely to be mere coincidence. It is my honest opinion that we are on the right track and are fairly close to at least some of the answers.

Mr. Wright, Defence Research Board liaison officer at the Canadian Embassy in Washington, was extremely anxious for me to get in touch with Doctor Solandt, Chairman of the Defence Research Board, to discuss with him future investigations along the line of geo-magnetic energy release.

.... 3

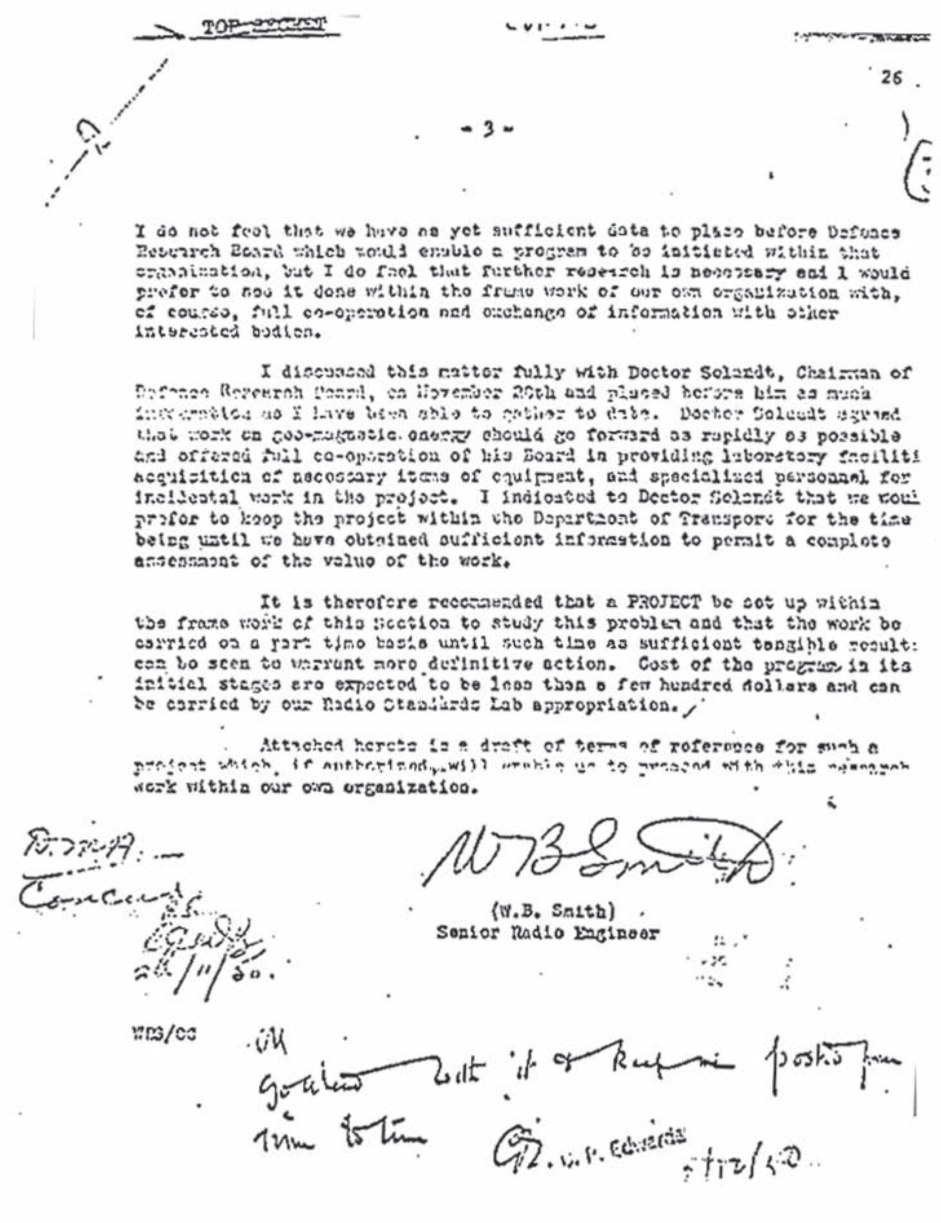

~~TOP SECRET~~

26

- 3 -

I do not feel that we have as yet sufficient data to place before Defence Research Board which would enable a program to be initiated within that organization, but I do feel that further research is necessary and I would prefer to see it done within the frame work of our own organization with, of course, full co-operation and exchange of information with other interested bodies.

I discussed this matter fully with Doctor Solandt, Chairman of Defence Research Board, on November 20th and placed before him as much information as I have been able to gather to date. Doctor Solandt agreed that work on geo-magnetic energy should go forward as rapidly as possible and offered full co-operation of his Board in providing laboratory faciliti acquisition of necessary items of equipment, and specialized personnel for incidental work in the project. I indicated to Doctor Solandt that we woul prefer to keep the project within the Department of Transport for the time being until we have obtained sufficient information to permit a complete assessment of the value of the work.

It is therefore recommended that a PROJECT be set up within the frame work of this Section to study this problem and that the work be carried on a part time basis until such time as sufficient tangible result can be seen to warrant more definitive action. Cost of the program in its initial stages are expected to be less than a few hundred dollars and can be carried by our Radio Standards Lab appropriation.

Attached hereto is a draft of terms of reference for such a project which, if authorized, will enable us to proceed with this research work within our own organization.

D.T.R.A.:—
Concur
26/11/50.

W B Smith

(W.B. Smith)
Senior Radio Engineer

WBS/CC

OK
Go ahead but it & keep me posted from time to time
G. W.P. Edwards 5/12/50

Below is a reproduction of the memorandum written by President Harry Truman to establish the creation of the MJ-12 group.

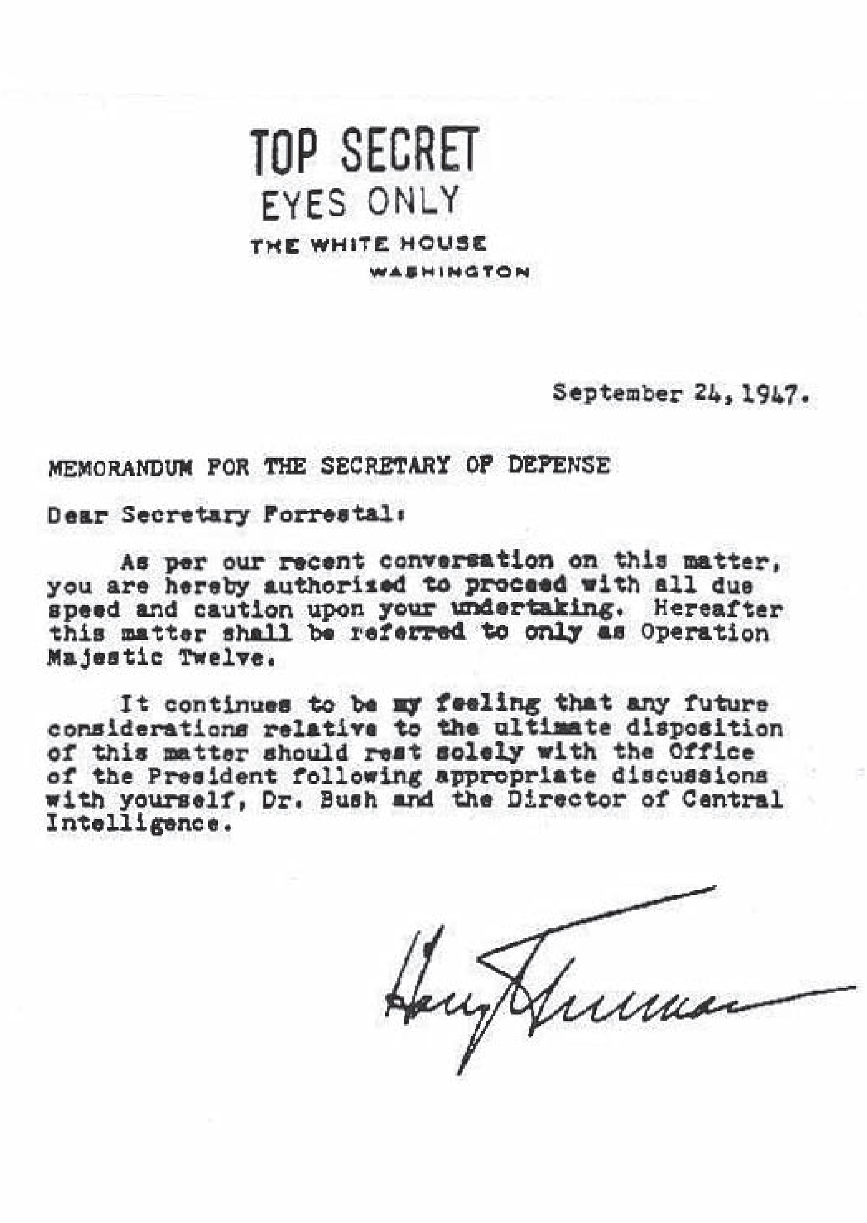

TOP SECRET
EYES ONLY

THE WHITE HOUSE
WASHINGTON

September 24, 1947.

MEMORANDUM FOR THE SECRETARY OF DEFENSE

Dear Secretary Forrestal:

As per our recent conversation on this matter, you are hereby authorized to proceed with all due speed and caution upon your undertaking. Hereafter this matter shall be referred to only as Operation Majestic Twelve.

It continues to be my feeling that any future considerations relative to the ultimate disposition of this matter should rest solely with the Office of the President following appropriate discussions with yourself, Dr. Bush and the Director of Central Intelligence.

Harry Truman

APPENDIX G

ELECTROGRAVITICS: AN ENERGY-EFFICIENT MEANS OF SPACE PROPULSION

NASA SEOP Submission no. 100159

“Electrogravitics: An Energy-Efficient Means of Space Propulsion” is the abstract I submitted to NASA under the auspice of The Starburst Foundation—a nonprofit research institute I founded in 1984 to advance our understanding of the natural world.

Electrogravitics: An Energy-Efficient Means of Space Propulsion

by Paul LaViolette, Ph.D.
The Starburst Foundation

Description. The proposed propulsion technology would replace the energy-intensive rocket technology presently used for propelling spacecraft. The technology, called electrogravitics, has already been developed in “black” defense research programs, programs so highly classified that their existence is not publicly acknowledged. Electrogravitics may appear to violate certain assumptions about gravity commonly held by physicists and aeronautical engineers, so the reader is requested to keep an open mind. The technology does exist; it has been under development for the past 40 years; and it has been shown to be feasible both in carefully controlled laboratory experiments and in actual test flights.

Basically electrogravitics is a technology that allows a spacecraft to artificially alter its own gravity field in such a manner that it is able to levitate itself. This is accomplished by applying a megavolt pulsed DC electric potential across the outer hull and wing of the spacecraft. The craft would be designed to have a relatively large body surface area, similar to the flying wing concept employed in the B-2 bomber. Alternatively it could be discoidal in shape with a lenticular cross-section. Thrust would always be in the direction of the craft's positively charged surface. To quote a February 1956 Air Force intelligence report (now declassified), such a craft "can perform the function of a classic lifting surface—it produces a pushing effect on the under surface and a suction effect on the upper, but unlike the airfoil, it does not require a flow of air to produce the effect."*

Payoff. The value of this technology is that the craft may achieve Earth orbit flight at a much lower velocity than conventional rocket propulsion and without the huge fuel expenditure. It would eliminate the hazard of polluting the Earth's stratosphere and space environment with aluminum oxide spherules, which has become an increasing problem with the solid fuel boosters currently in use. The fuel requirements for electrogravitic propulsion are less than one percent of those presently used to lift the space shuttle into orbit. Problems typically encountered with the Space Shuttle's rocket propulsion technology (e.g., liquid hydrogen leaks, exhaust leaks around O-rings in the solid fuel booster) would not be present in this technology. Due to its much lower power demands, electrogravitics is much safer and more economical.

Performance Characteristics. As early as 1956, an Air Force study estimated that a manned electrogravitic craft could achieve Mach 3 flight capability with a 50,000 kilowatt power requirement. Such airborne electric power generation is within the reach of present technology. It would require two General Electric superconducting generators powered by two 50,000 horsepower rocket turbine engines. The superconducting generators mentioned here were developed for the Air Force in the late 1970's for use in high-altitude aircraft. Incidentally higher efficiencies are acheived in space due to reduced ion leakage from the hull's charged surface.

Other enabling technologies. All enabling technologies have been developed. As early as 1958, a small scale model of an electrogravitic powered aircraft was able to lift 110% of its weight. Since then

---

**Electrogravitics Systems: An examination of electrostatic motion, dynamic counterbary and barycentric control*. Report no. GRG 013-56. Aviation Studies (International) Ltd., Special Weapons Study Unit, London, February 1956, pp. 3–4. (Library of Congress no. 3,1401,00034,5879; call no. TL565.A9.)

manned vehicles have been secretly developed and are presently being test flown.

Relation to major mission objectives. Electrogravitics would allow NASA to make frequent flights into space without the numerous delays presently plaguing the Space Shuttle launchings. (The present three year wait for repairing the Hubble Telescope could be cut to 3 weeks.) It would allow flights directly from Earth to Mars without the necessity of laboriously constructing a Mars spaceship in Earth orbit. Such a flight would no longer be contingent on the preexistence of a space station. Moreover the high speeds potentially achievable with electrogravitics would allow travel to Mars to be made in under a month.

APPENDIX H

BEYOND ROCKET PROPULSION

NASA SEOP Submission no. 100153

The following is an abstract submitted to NASA by Joe Hughes.

BEYOND ELECTRIC PROPULSION

In the quest to save money in future space missions advanced propulsion designs are under consideration. Electric propulsion is one of the designs proposed. According to John Barnett, Supervisor of Electric Propulsion at Jet Propulsion Laboratories, a system suitable for crewed spacecraft could be ready within fifteen years. George McDonough, Director of Science and Engineering at the Marshall Center, feels that electric propulsion "is an interesting alternative to nuclear propulsion which is the only one being considered by the agency,. . .They [the Soviets] consider it a viable way to do the job. We ought to take a hard look at it before we make any final decisions". The object of this proposal is to reveal that an electric propulsion engine has already been tested and proven. This engine was designed by Thomas Townsend Brown, a former physicist for the U.S. Navy, and received U.S. Patent number 3,022,430 on February 20, 1962, however the patent has expired so the design is no longer proprietary and can be considered by the Space Exploration Outreach Program.

This electric propulsion engine offers many substantial improvements over chemical and nuclear rockets. Since it can convert the energy of electrical potential directly into mechanical force suitable for causing relative motion, without the aid of moving parts, tremendous gains in efficiency and reliability can be achieved. Another advantage is that the engine can run effectively on Carbon Dioxide. Since the atmosphere of Mars is largely CO_2 a probe or ship which used this design would not need to carry fuel to Mars to explore its surface or for the return journey to Earth. Finally, no nuclear waste products or radiation is produced.

In contrast to conventional electric propulsion approaches which produce thrust by the accelerating gas only, the Brown engine ionizes the exiting gas, thus creating an electrical potential between the gas and the engine itself such that they repel each other. With the result that, according to the patent, that the gas "thrust will be small compared to the electrokinetic thrust developed." In fact, a new principle is at work here. Basically, Brown discovered that a sufficiently charged capacitor exhibits unidirectional thrust in the direction of the positive plate. To prove that his capacitors involve something more than ion propulsion he immersed them in oil, a medium which does not readily ionize and observed that the thrust was the same as in the air.

In early atmospheric tests, he used a power input of 50 watts to generate an electrical potential of 50,000 volts which caused his disc-shaped airfoils to fly at 12 miles per hour. To further prove his point that something more than ion propulsion was at work here, he tested his discs in a vacuum in the 1950's under the auspices of a French corporation, La Societe Nationale de Construction Aeronautique Sud Ouest (SNCASO). He had theorized that the speed of his discs would increase exponentially with the voltage applied, and succeeded in flying some of his 3-foot discs in a vacuum at speeds of several hundred miles an hour using an electrical potential of 200,000 volts. Unfortunately, as a result of a corporate merger with another French company, Sud Est, propulsion efforts were dropped for unknown reasons to concentrate on airframe manufacture and design.

In the early sixties Townsend Brown organized his own corporation under the name Rand International Limited. In spite of numerous patents, one of which is attached, and many demonstrations, success eluded him, the time was not right, people were too set on the Apollo way of doing things. Now everything is fair game again, no Mars mission designs are set in stone, which is why I have resubmitted his idea.

APPENDIX I

CORRESPONDENCE WITH CHARLES MORRIS

Assistant Director for the National Aero-Space Plane Project

Below is a reproduction of my correspondence with Charles Morris, assistant director for the National Aero-Space Plane program.

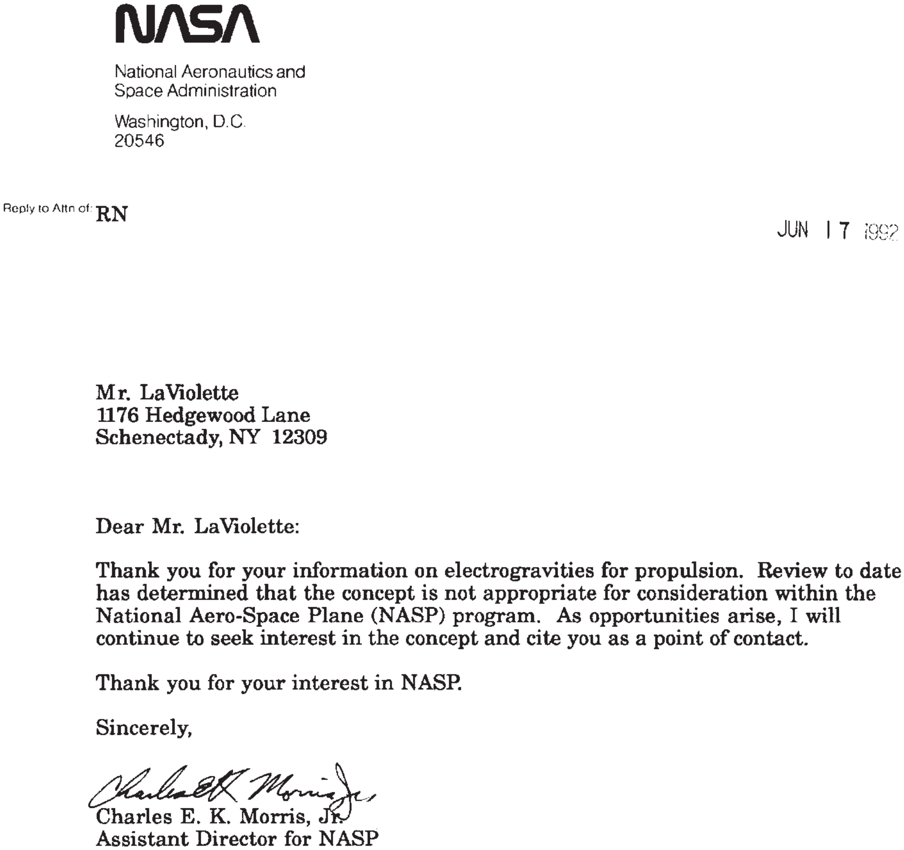

NASA
National Aeronautics and
Space Administration
Washington, D.C.
20546

Reply to Attn of: RN

JUN 17 1992

Mr. LaViolette
1176 Hedgewood Lane
Schenectady, NY 12309

Dear Mr. LaViolette:

Thank you for your information on electrogravities for propulsion. Review to date has determined that the concept is not appropriate for consideration within the National Aero-Space Plane (NASP) program. As opportunities arise, I will continue to seek interest in the concept and cite you as a point of contact.

Thank you for your interest in NASP.

Sincerely,

Charles E K Morris Jr
Charles E. K. Morris, Jr.
Assistant Director for NASP

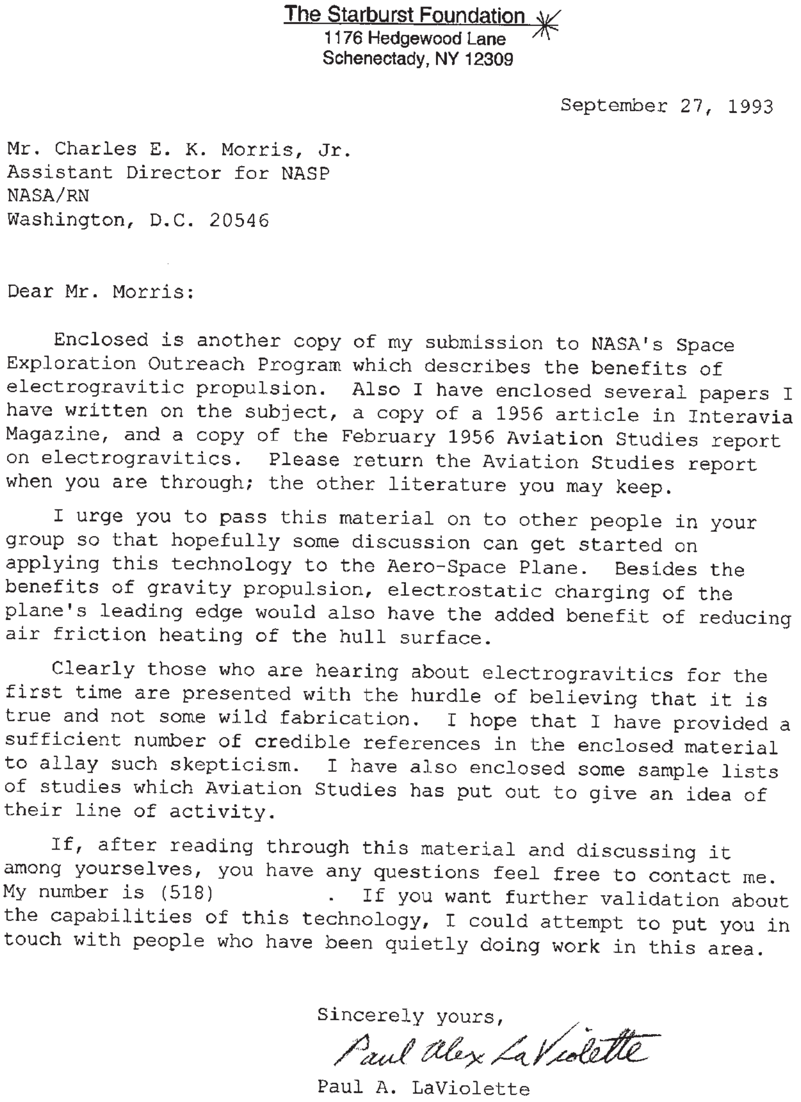

The Starburst Foundation
1176 Hedgewood Lane
Schenectady, NY 12309

September 27, 1993

Mr. Charles E. K. Morris, Jr.
Assistant Director for NASP
NASA/RN
Washington, D.C. 20546

Dear Mr. Morris:

Enclosed is another copy of my submission to NASA's Space Exploration Outreach Program which describes the benefits of electrogravitic propulsion. Also I have enclosed several papers I have written on the subject, a copy of a 1956 article in Interavia Magazine, and a copy of the February 1956 Aviation Studies report on electrogravitics. Please return the Aviation Studies report when you are through; the other literature you may keep.

I urge you to pass this material on to other people in your group so that hopefully some discussion can get started on applying this technology to the Aero-Space Plane. Besides the benefits of gravity propulsion, electrostatic charging of the plane's leading edge would also have the added benefit of reducing air friction heating of the hull surface.

Clearly those who are hearing about electrogravitics for the first time are presented with the hurdle of believing that it is true and not some wild fabrication. I hope that I have provided a sufficient number of credible references in the enclosed material to allay such skepticism. I have also enclosed some sample lists of studies which Aviation Studies has put out to give an idea of their line of activity.

If, after reading through this material and discussing it among yourselves, you have any questions feel free to contact me. My number is (518) . If you want further validation about the capabilities of this technology, I could attempt to put you in touch with people who have been quietly doing work in this area.

Sincerely yours,

Paul Alex LaViolette

Paul A. LaViolette

APPENDIX J

PREVENTING ANOTHER *COLUMBIA* DISASTER

Below is a suggestion I submitted to the *Columbia* Accident Investigation Board. As of yet, I have received no further communication from the board.

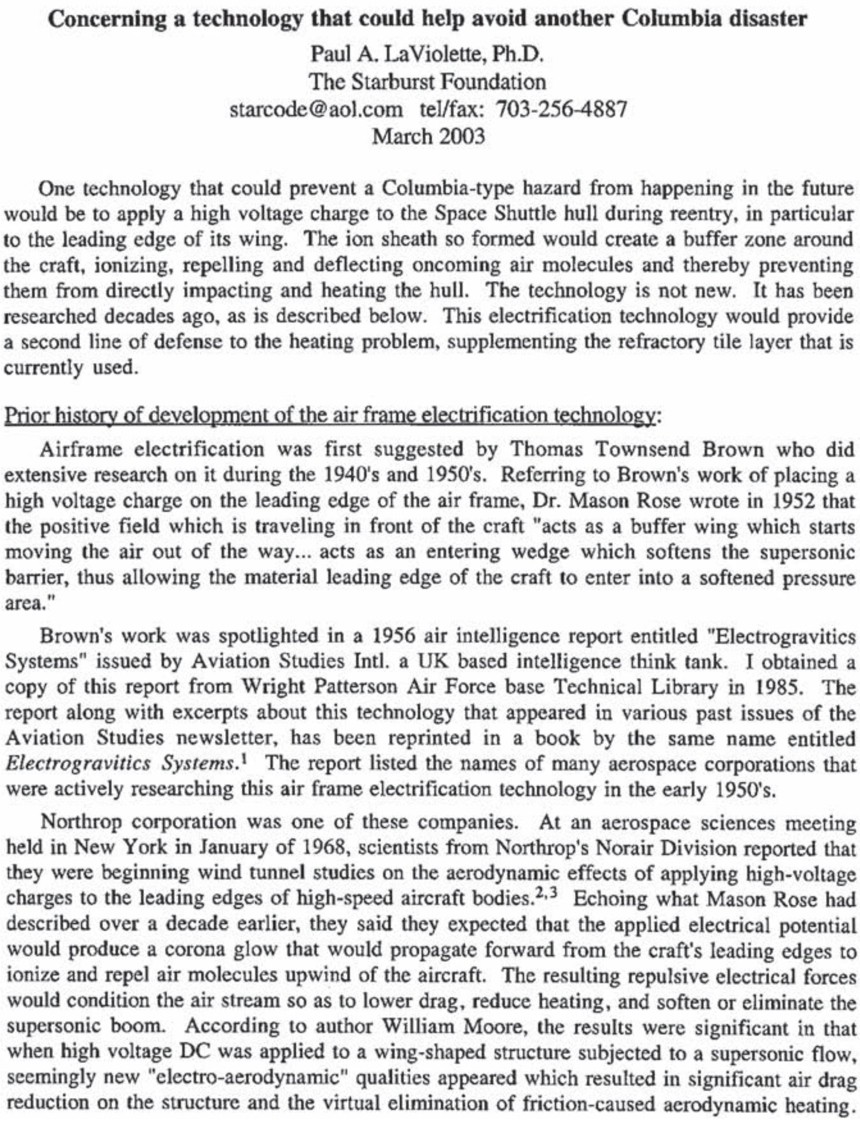

Concerning a technology that could help avoid another Columbia disaster

Paul A. LaViolette, Ph.D.
The Starburst Foundation
starcode@aol.com tel/fax: 703-256-4887
March 2003

One technology that could prevent a Columbia-type hazard from happening in the future would be to apply a high voltage charge to the Space Shuttle hull during reentry, in particular to the leading edge of its wing. The ion sheath so formed would create a buffer zone around the craft, ionizing, repelling and deflecting oncoming air molecules and thereby preventing them from directly impacting and heating the hull. The technology is not new. It has been researched decades ago, as is described below. This electrification technology would provide a second line of defense to the heating problem, supplementing the refractory tile layer that is currently used.

Prior history of development of the air frame electrification technology:

Airframe electrification was first suggested by Thomas Townsend Brown who did extensive research on it during the 1940's and 1950's. Referring to Brown's work of placing a high voltage charge on the leading edge of the air frame, Dr. Mason Rose wrote in 1952 that the positive field which is traveling in front of the craft "acts as a buffer wing which starts moving the air out of the way... acts as an entering wedge which softens the supersonic barrier, thus allowing the material leading edge of the craft to enter into a softened pressure area."

Brown's work was spotlighted in a 1956 air intelligence report entitled "Electrogravitics Systems" issued by Aviation Studies Intl. a UK based intelligence think tank. I obtained a copy of this report from Wright Patterson Air Force base Technical Library in 1985. The report along with excerpts about this technology that appeared in various past issues of the Aviation Studies newsletter, has been reprinted in a book by the same name entitled *Electrogravitics Systems*.[1] The report listed the names of many aerospace corporations that were actively researching this air frame electrification technology in the early 1950's.

Northrop corporation was one of these companies. At an aerospace sciences meeting held in New York in January of 1968, scientists from Northrop's Norair Division reported that they were beginning wind tunnel studies on the aerodynamic effects of applying high-voltage charges to the leading edges of high-speed aircraft bodies.[2,3] Echoing what Mason Rose had described over a decade earlier, they said they expected that the applied electrical potential would produce a corona glow that would propagate forward from the craft's leading edges to ionize and repel air molecules upwind of the aircraft. The resulting repulsive electrical forces would condition the air stream so as to lower drag, reduce heating, and soften or eliminate the supersonic boom. According to author William Moore, the results were significant in that when high voltage DC was applied to a wing-shaped structure subjected to a supersonic flow, seemingly new "electro-aerodynamic" qualities appeared which resulted in significant air drag reduction on the structure and the virtual elimination of friction-caused aerodynamic heating.

It is claimed that the B-2 bomber electrifies its wing-leading edge as a means of assisting its propulsion.[4] This appears to have been an extension of research that Northrop had carried out in the 60's, Northrop being the prime contractor for the design and construction of the B-2's airframe. I discussed the application of this technology to the B-2 in a conference paper I presented in 1993, and which was later reprinted in *Electrogravitics Systems.*

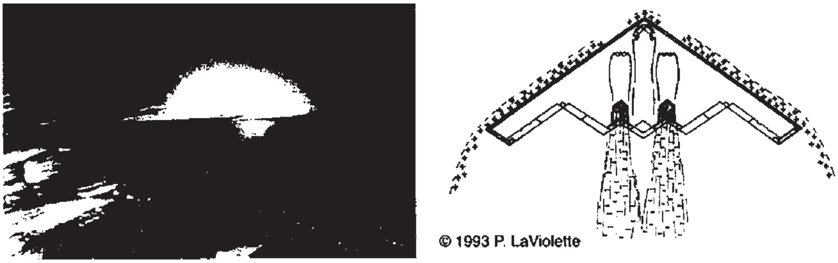

Airframe electrification used in the B-2 bomber to reduce air drag and hull friction. (Photo courtesy of Bobbi Garcia).

Power generation:

The electrostatic charge applied to the wing leading edge may be supplied either by a flame jet generator powered by the shuttle's own main engine or by flow through wind pods mounted on the wing surface. The latter alternative would have the advantage that it would require no fuel consumption. That is, the energy would be supplied by the reentry plasma wind striking the shuttle. The "wind jet" generator would operate much like a Van de Graff generator where the air stream is analogous to the charge carrying belt in the Van de Graff. The air stream would enter the pod on the upwind end and leave the pod on the downwind end. At the pod's entrance negative ions would be injected into the air stream and as this flowed toward the rear end of the pod, it would carry these ions to a progressively higher potential difference where a portion of the ions would be collected by a conductive grid, the remainder being allowed to flow away toward the rear of the craft. The grid would recycle this current turning an initial 50,000 volt starter current into a multi megavolt current. Since the negative ions are forcefully carried away from the craft by the reentry wind, the shuttle would acquire a very high voltage positive charge in excess of 10 million volts, reaching a maximum at the wing's leading edge which would be connected to the generator's positive terminal.

This plasma jet would operate much like the flame jet generator that Townsend Brown has described in his 1962 electrokinetic generator patent (No. 3,022,430), where the hot combustion gases are here replaced by the reentry airflow captured by the wind pods. In fact, in his patent Brown stated that any kind of flowing nonconductive gas would serve as a substitute for combustion gases.

Reentry effects:

One effect of hull electrification would be to accelerate the speed of the craft. That is, hull electrification would not only reduce hull heating but also air friction drag against the craft. Consequently, the craft would take longer to decelerate as it entered the atmosphere. This could be accommodated by arranging for the craft to have a longer air flight path, e.g., passing through the atmosphere at a slightly lower angle. Alternatively, if more braking is desired at any given time during reentry, the voltage electrifying the wing may be reduced or altogether shut off, thereby engaging once again air friction surface heating. By alternately turning the electrification on and off, hull surface temperatures may be kept minimal while frictional deceleration is employed. This ease of controlling reentry deceleration by the flick of a switch may be found to be superior to controlling the forward pitch of the craft, as is currently done.

Prior contact with NASA suggesting this technology:

In 1990 I had participated in NASA's Space Exploration Outreach Project and had submitted an idea entitled "Electrogravitics: An energy-efficient means of spacecraft propulsion" (submission category: Space transportation, launch vehicles, and propulsion). My paper informed NASA about T. T. Brown's work and about the 1956 Aviation Studies Intl. report mentioned above. I suggested that NASA aggressively pursue electrogravitics for propulsion. Although my submission was not summarized in the final report submitted to NASA. It had unfortunately been omitted by Rand Corp. contract employees who found it, in their opinion, irrelevant to NASA's objectives. One other participant had also submitted a suggestion that NASA look into applying Brown's electrogravitic technology. But that too was omitted from the main report. Attempts were made to obtain the computer records from this project giving the reasons why this technology was deemed unsuitable, but these tapes were reportedly "missing."

In 1992, and again in 1993, I contacted Mr. Charles Morris, Jr. who was at that time heading NASA's National Aero-Space Plane (NASP) program and had encouraged him to have NASA look into electrogravitics. I sent him a lot of material about Townsend Brown's research, including the Aviation Studies International report. In our telephone conversations we had discussed the issue of reentry heating of the hull, which was apparently a problem that NASP was grappling with. In a letter I had sent to him in September 27, 1993, I specifically had pointed out that "electrostatic charging of the plane's leading edge would have the added benefit of reducing air friction heating of the hull surface." But nothing came of this. Mr. Morris later informed me that he was unable to generate any interest at NASA to look further into this.

NASA had a 13 year advance warning. If their research programs had pursued this technology and had applied it to the Space Shuttle, the lives of an entire crew could have been saved along with the hundreds of millions of dollars that are now going into the wreckage recovery and the cost of putting the space program on hold.

Nevertheless, looking to the future, it is my hope that NASA will now undertake the challenge and seriously research the use of this technology. Jonathan Campbell of NASA Marshall Space Flight Center would be a good contact point for beginning such a project. He has spent many years researching the application of high voltage charge to aerospace propulsion. Although his requests for NASA internal funding of this line of research have in the past been turned down, hopefully NASA will now give a higher priority to this work in the wake of the Columbia disaster. As a start, wind tunnel experiments should be carried out similar to those Northrop conducted 35 years ago and efforts should be made at developing a high-voltage wind jet generator for application to the Space Shuttle. I would be glad to assist NASA in this effort.

References

1. T. Valone (editor) *Electrogravitics Systems: Reports on a New Propulsion Methodology.* Washington, D.C.: Integrity Research Institute, 1994.
2. "Northrop studying sonic boom remedy," *Aviation Week & Space Technology*, Jan. 22, 1968, p. 21.
3. "Sonic boom experiments," *Product Engineering,* 39, March 11, 1968, pp. 35-6.
4. W. B. Scott, "Black world engineers, scientists encourage using highly classified technology for civil applications," *Aviation Week & Space Technology*, March 9, 1992, pp. 66-67.

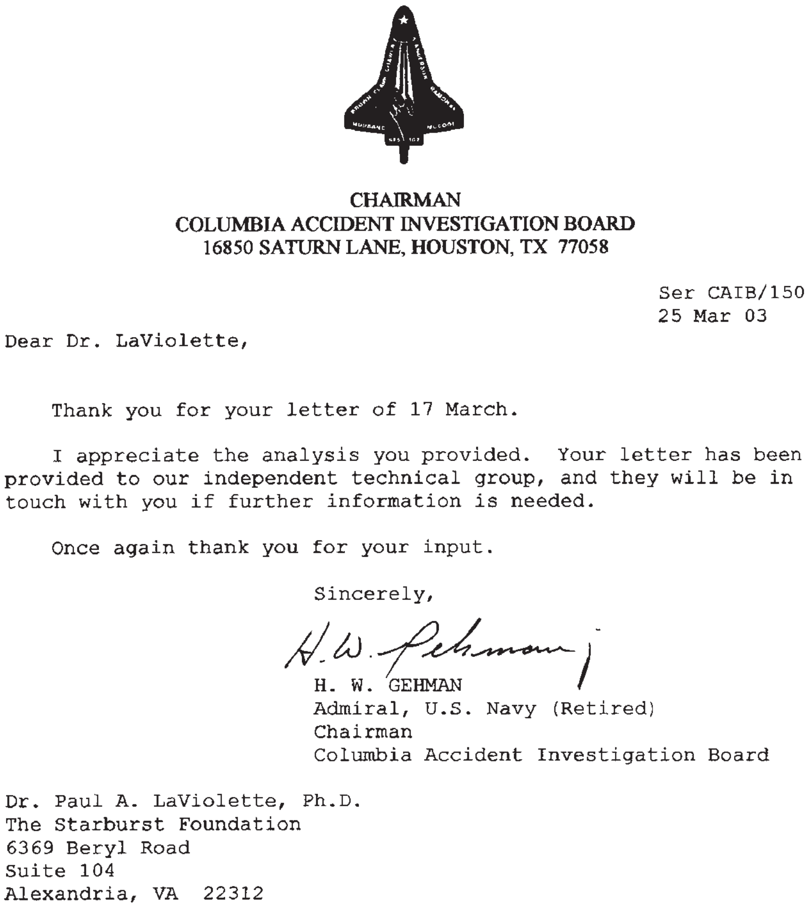

CHAIRMAN
COLUMBIA ACCIDENT INVESTIGATION BOARD
16850 SATURN LANE, HOUSTON, TX 77058

Ser CAIB/150
25 Mar 03

Dear Dr. LaViolette,

Thank you for your letter of 17 March.

I appreciate the analysis you provided. Your letter has been provided to our independent technical group, and they will be in touch with you if further information is needed.

Once again thank you for your input.

Sincerely,

H. W. Gehman

H. W. GEHMAN
Admiral, U.S. Navy (Retired)
Chairman
Columbia Accident Investigation Board

Dr. Paul A. LaViolette, Ph.D.
The Starburst Foundation
6369 Beryl Road
Suite 104
Alexandria, VA 22312

NOTES

CHAPTER 1. ANTIGRAVITY: FROM DREAM TO REALITY

1. W. L. Moore and C. Berlitz, *The Philadelphia Experiment: Project Invisibility* (New York: Fawcett Crest, 1979).
2. G. Burridge, "Another Step Toward Anti-Gravity," *The American Mercury* 86(6) (1958): 77–82. Eprint at: http://qualight.com/stress/mercury.htm.
3. G. Burridge, "Townsend Brown and His Anti-gravity Discs," *Fate* (November 1956): 40–48. Eprint at: http://qualight.com/stress/fate.htm.
4. A. L. Kitselman, "Hello Stupid" (unpublished paper, September 1962). Eprint at: http://qualight.com/stress/hello.htm.
5. Ibid.
6. T. T. Brown to Rolf Schaffranke, letter, February 14, 1973.
7. T. T. Brown, "How I Control Gravity," *Science and Invention Magazine,* August 1929. Reprinted in *Psychic Observer* 37(1) (1976): 14–18. Eprint at: http://qualight.com/stress/control.htm.
8. T. T. Brown, 1928, "A method of and an apparatus or machine for producing force or motion," British patent 300,311, issued November 15, 1928, p. 1.
9. T. T. Brown, "How I Control Gravity."
10. J. H. H. (name withheld) to Colonel Edward Deeds, letter, March 13, 1930.
11. P. A. LaViolette, "An Introduction to Subquantum Kinetics: II. An Open Systems Description of Particles and Fields," in "Systems Thinking in Physics," special issue, *International Journal of General Systems* 11 (1985): 295–328.

12. P. A. LaViolette, *Subquantum Kinetics: A Systems Approach to Physics and Cosmology* (Schenectady, N.Y.: Starlane Publications, 1994, 2003).
13. P. A. LaViolette, *Genesis of the Cosmos: The Ancient Science of Continuous Creation* (Rochester, Vt.: Bear & Co., 1995, 2004).
14. Brown, British patent 300,311, p. 3.
15. Rho Sigma [Rolf Schaffranke], *Ether Technology: A Rational Approach to Gravity Control* (Lakemont, Ga.: CSA Printing & Bindery, 1977), 44–45, quoting a letter from T. Brown dated February 14, 1973.
16. T. T. Brown to Thomas Turman, letter, January 23, 1968.
17. T. T. Brown, "Electrical Self-Potential in Rocks," *Psychic Observer* 37(1) (1976). Eprint at: http://qualight.com/petro/selfpot.htm.
18. T. T. Brown, "Phenomenal Variations in the Self-Potential of Rocks" (unpublished laboratory report, April 15, 1985). Eprint at: http://qualight.com/petro/petro1.htm.
19. C. Brush, "Retardation of Gravitational Acceleration and the Spontaneous Evolution of Heat in Complex Silicates, Lavas, and Clays," *Physical Review* 31 (1921): 1113.
20. E. A. Harrington, "Further Experiments on the Continuous Generation of Heat in Certain Silicates," *Proceedings of the American Philosophical Society* 72(5) (1933): 333–49.
21. T. T. Brown, "Test No. 110—Koolau Time Series at Constant Temperature" (unpublished laboratory report, June 30, 1977). Eprint at: http://qualight.com/petro/test110.htm.
22. T. T. Brown, "Phenomenal Variations of Resistivity and the Petrovoltaic Effect" (unpublished laboratory report, April 15, 1985). Eprint at: http://qualight.com/petro/petro2.htm.
23. T. T. Brown, "A Short Autobiography" (undated). Eprint at: http://www.qualight.com/personal/auto.htm.
24. P. Schatzkin, *Defying Gravity* (Tanglewood Books, 2007), chap. 47. Eprint at: http://ttbrown.com/defying_gravity/47_HeyWoodwardl.html.
25. Ibid., chap. 48.
26. W. Moore, "The Wizard of Electrogravity," *Saga UFO Report* (May 1978). Eprint at: http://www.qualight.com/stress/wizard1.htm.
27. T. T. Brown, "Early Laboratory Reports and Memorabilia: Biography Menu" (undated). Eprint at: www.qualight.com/personal/early.htm.
28. "A Short Biography from *Who's Who in American Science*," October 1985. Eprint at: www.qualight.com/personal/bioshort.htm.
29. Moore, "Wizard of Electrogravity."

30. J. Reynolds, "Thomas Townsend Brown's Final Gravito-Electric Research." Paper presented at the Symposium on Electrical Propulsion and the Technology of Electrogravity, Philadelphia, April 15–16, 1994.
31. Moore and Berlitz, *The Philadelphia Experiment.*
32. K. L. Corum, J. F. Corum, and J. F. X. Daum, "Tesla's Egg of Columbus, Radar Stealth, the Torsion Tensor, and the Philadelphia Experiment," in *Proceedings of the 1994 International Tesla Symposium*, S. Elswick, ed. (Denver: International Tesla Society, 1994).
33. G. Vassilatos, *Lost Science* (Kempton, Ill.: Adventures Unlimited, 1999), chap. 7. Eprint at: www.hbci.com/~wenonah/history/brown.htm.
34. Moore, "Wizard of Electrogravity."
35. "Short Biography from *Who's Who*."
36. Kitselman, "Hello Stupid."
37. Schatzkin, *Defying Gravity*, chap. 43.
38. Ibid.
39. T. T. Brown, "Anomalous Diurnal and Secular Variations in the Self-Potential of Certain Rocks," March 22, 1975. Eprint at: www.qualight.com/petro/secular.htm.
40. Schatzkin, *Defying Gravity,* chap. 50.
41. Ibid.
42. Personal communication with the witness, a retired university professor, November 2007.

2. BEYOND ROCKET PROPULSION

1. T. T. Brown, "Project Winterhaven: A Proposal for Joint Services Research and Development Contract," Townsend Brown Foundation, October 20, 1952, revised January 1, 1953, p. 9. Eprint at: http://qualight.com/kinetics/winter.htm.
2. Ibid.
3. T. T. Brown, "Electrokinetic apparatus," U.S. patent 2,949,550, filed July 1957 and issued August 16, 1960.
4. M. Rose, "The Flying Saucer: The Application of the Biefeld-Brown Effect to the Solution of the Problems of Space Navigation," University for Social Research, April 8, 1952. Eprint at: http://qualight.com/stress/rose.htm.
5. W. S. Steinman and W. C. Stevens, *UFO Crash at Aztec: A Well Kept Secret* (Tucson: UFO Photo Archives, 1986), 376.
6. "Flying Saucers 'Explained' by Men of New Research University Here," *Los Angeles Times,* April 3, 1952, Section B, p. 1. Eprint at: http://ttbrown.com/images/LATimes_520804.jpg.

7. W. M. Cady, “An Investigation Relative to Thomas Townsend Brown,” Office of Naval Research, Pasadena, Calif.: June 1952. Eprint at: http://qualight.com/stress/egdonr.htm.
8. P. Schatzkin, *Defying Gravity,* ch. 63 (2007). Eprint at: www.ttbrown.com.
9. LaViolette, *Subquantum Kinetics,* 172.
10. Rose, “Flying Saucer,” 1.
11. Burridge, “Townsend Brown and His Anti-gravity Discs,” 41–42.
12. Intel, “Towards Flight without Stress or Strain . . . or Weight,” *Interavia* (Switzerland) 11(5) (1956): 373–74.
13. Burridge, “Another Step,” 80.
14. Moore, letter, July 5, 1983.
15. Reynolds, “Brown’s Final Gravito-Electric Research.”
16. Brown, “Project Winterhaven.”
17. T. T. Brown, 1957, electrokinetic generator, U.S. patent 3,022,430, filed July 3, 1957, and issued February 20, 1962.
18. Rose, “The Flying Saucer.”
19. Whitehall-Rand, Inc., “Electrohydrodynamics,” Bala Cynwyd, Pa., March 4, 1960. Eprint at: http://qualight.com/hydro/hydro.htm.
20. Cady, “Investigation Relative to Brown,” 3.
21. T. T. Brown, “Electrogravitational Communication System,” patent disclosure, September 1953. Eprint at: http://qualight.com/ecomm/ecomm.htm.
22. LaViolette, *Subquantum Kinetics,* chap. 6.
23. P. A. LaViolette, “A Tesla Wave Physics for a Free Energy Universe,” in *Proceedings of the 1990 International Tesla Symposium,* 5.1–5.21, S. Elswick, ed. (Colorado Springs: International Tesla Society, 1991).
24. Aviation Studies, “Electrogravitics Systems: An Examination of Electrostatic Motion, Dynamic Counterbary and Barycentric Control,” report no. GRG 013/56 (London: Aviation Studies, February 1956).
25. M. Perl, “The Gravitics Situation” (London: Aviation Studies/Gravity Rand Ltd., December 1956), also published in *Interavia* XI(5) (1956): 373–74, www.rexresearch.com/perl/perl.htm.
26. Aviation Studies, “Electrogravitics Systems,” 3–4.
27. Ibid., 21–23.
28. Ibid., 25–26.
29. Ibid., 26–27.
30. T. Valone, “T. T. Brown’s Electrogravitics Research in the 1950’s,” in

Proceedings of the 1994 International Tesla Symposium, edited by S. Elswick (Denver: International Tesla Society, 1994).

31. D. E. Keyhoe, *The Flying Saucer Conspiracy* (New York: Henry Holt & Co., 1955), 251–52.
32. Aviation Studies, “Electrogravitics Systems,” 28–29.
33. Ibid.
34. Department of Defense, “Air Force Releases Study on Unidentified Aerial Objects,” Office of Public Information, October 25, 1955.
35. Aviation Studies, “Electrogravitics Systems,” 31.
36. A. E. Talbert, “Conquest of Gravity Aim of Top Scientists in U.S.,” *New York Herald Tribune,* November 20, 1955, pp. 1, 36.
37. Ibid.
38. Ibid.
39. A. E. Talbert, “Space-Ship Marvel Seen If Gravity Is Outwitted,” *New York Herald Tribune,* November 21, 1955, pp. 1, 6.
40. A. E. Talbert, “New Air Dream-Planes Flying Outside Gravity,” *New York Herald Tribune,* November 22, 1955, pp. 6, 10.
41. Ibid.
42. L. A. Gerardin, “Electro-Gravitic Propulsion,” in *Interavia* (Switzerland) 11(12) (1956): 992.
43. Talbert, “New Air Dream-Planes.”
44. Ibid.
45. Aviation Studies, “Electrogravitics Systems,” 32.
46. Ibid., 9–10.
47. Intel, “Towards Flight,” 373–74.
48. Aviation Studies, “Gravitics Situation,” 3–4.
49. Ibid.
50. Ibid.
51. “Role of Gravitation in Physics,” *Science* 125 (1957): 998.
52. F. Edwards, *Flying Saucer—Serious Business* (New York: Bantam, 1966), 127.
53. A. V. Cleaver, “‘Electro-Gravitics:’ What It Is—or Might Be,” *Journal of the British Interplanetary Society* 16(2) (1957): 84–94.

3. ONWARD AND UPWARD

1. Rho Sigma [R. Schaffranke], *Ether Technology: A Rational Approach to Gravity Control* (Lakemont, Ga.: CSA Printing & Bindery, 1977), 44–45, quoting a letter from T. Brown dated February 14, 1973.
2. Intel, “Towards Flight,” 373–74.

3. C. Carew, "The Key to Travel in Space," *Canadian Aviation* 32 (July 1959): 27–32.
4. T. T. Brown, "A Brief Description of Experiments Made in Paris (1955–1956)," unpublished report.
5. Rho Sigma, *Ether Technology,* 44.
6. Reynolds, "Brown's Final Gravito-Electric Research."
7. C. A. Yost, "T. T. Brown and the Bahnson Lab Experiments," *Electric Spacecraft Journal* 2 (1991): 6–12.
8. Kitselman, "Hello Stupid."
9. Rho Sigma, *Ether Technology,* 46–49, quoting a letter from T. Brown dated April 5, 1973.
10. T. T. Brown to T. Turman, letter, November 1, 1971.
11. "Electrohydrodynamics" (Bala Cynwyd, Pa.: Electrokinetics, Inc., March 23, 1960). Eprint at: http://qualight.com/hydro/hydro.htm.
12. T. T. Brown to T. Turman, letter, November 12, 1971.
13. Ibid.
14. "Electrohydrodynamics," Whitehall-Rand, Inc., excerpted in a letter written by A. Wagner to T. Turman.
15. "Electrohydrodynamics," Electrokinetics, Inc.
16. Ibid.
17. T. T. Brown, "Electrokinetic apparatus," U.S. patent 3,187,206, filed May 9, 1958; issued June 1, 1965.
18. Ibid.
19. T. T. Brown to T. Turman, letter, January 23, 1968.
20. Brown, U.S. patent 3,187,206.
21. Cleaver, "Electro-Gravitics," 84–94.
22. "Electrogravitics: Science or Daydream?" *Product Engineering* (December 30, 1957): 12.
23. "How to 'Fall' into Space," *Business Week,* February 8, 1958, 51–53.
24. Edwards, *Flying Saucers,* 127.
25. Carew, "The Key to Travel in Space," 27–32.
26. Ibid.
27. Moore and Berlitz, *The Philadelphia Experiment,* 223.
28. Yost, "T. T. Brown and the Bahnson Lab Experiments," 8.
29. A. H. Bahnson, "Electrical Thrust Producing Device," 1964, U.S. patent 3,223,038, filed September 10, 1964, issued December 14, 1965.
30. Moore and Berlitz, *The Philadelphia Experiment,* 223.
31. Schatzkin, *Defying Gravity,* ch. 57.

32. T. T. Brown to T. Turman, letter, Jan. 23, 1968.
33. T. T. Brown, letter to an Illinois gentleman, February 9, 1982.

4. AN ETHERIC EXPLANATION

1. Aviation Studies, "Electrogravitics Systems," 27.
2. Ray, personal conversation with author, 1992.
3. L. Smolin, *The Trouble with Physics: The Rise of String Theory, the Fall of Science, and What Comes Next* (New York: Houghton Mifflin, 2006).
4. P. Woit, *Not Even Wrong: The Failure of String Theory and the Search for Unity in Physical Law* (New York: Basic Books, 2006).
5. LaViolette, *Subquantum Kinetics.*
6. LaViolette, "An Introduction to Subquantum Kinetics: II," 295–328.
7. LaViolette, "A Tesla Wave Physics," 5.1–5.21.
8. P. A. LaViolette, "The Planetary-Stellar Mass-Luminosity Relation: Possible Evidence of Energy Nonconservation?" *Physics Essays* 5(4) (1992): 536–42.
9. P. A. LaViolette, "The Pioneer Maser Signal Anomaly: Possible Confirmation of Spontaneous Photon Blueshifting," *Physics Essays* 18(2) (2005): 150–63. Eprint at: http://arxiv.org/abs/physics/0603191.html.
10. P. A. LaViolette, "The Electric Charge and Magnetization Distribution of the Nucleon: Evidence of a Subatomic Turing Wave Pattern," *International Journal of General Systems* (2008), in press. Eprint at: www.starburstfound.org/downloads/physics/nucleon.pdf.
11. LaViolette, *Genesis of the Cosmos.*
12. LaViolette, "The Electric Charge and Magnetization Distribution."
13. Ibid.
14. R. P. Feynman, R. Leighton, and M. Sands, *The Feynman Lectures on Physics,* vol. 2 (Reading, Mass.: Addison-Wesley, 1964), 12.6–12.7.
15. J.-C. Lafforgue, "Isolated systems self-propelled by electrostatic forces," French patent 2651388, issued March 1, 1991, p. 30.
16. G. Sagnac, "The Luminiferous Ether Demonstrated by the Effect of the Relative Motion of the Ether in an Interferometer in Uniform Rotation," *Comptes Rendus de l'Academie des Sciences* (Paris) 157 (1913): 708–10, 1410–13. For a translation, see Turner and Hazelett, *The Einstein Myth* (Old Greenwich, Conn.: Devin-Adair Co., 1979), 247–50.
17. E. W. Silvertooth, "Experimental Detection of the Ether," *Speculations in Science and Technology* 10 (1987): 3–7; ibid., "Motion through the Ether," *Electronics and Wireless World* (May 1989): 437–38.

18. LaViolette, *Genesis of the Cosmos,* ch. 11.
19. B. Overbye, "Einstein: Warped Minds, Bent Truths, part I. Anaesthetized by the Ether." Eprint at: http://blog.hasslberger.com/2007/06/einstein_warped_minds_bent_tru.html.
20. B. Overbye, "Einstein: Warped Minds, Bent Truths, part III. Mystic Aftermath." Eprint at: http://blog.hasslberger.com/2007/06/einstein_warped_ minds_bent_tru.html.
21. B. Overbye, "Einstein: Warped Minds, Bent Truths, part II. Gravity Taken Lightly." Eprint at: http://blog.hasslberger.com/2007/06/einstein_warped_minds_bent_tru.html.
22. Overbye, "Einstein: Warped Minds, part III.
23. E. Lerner, *The Big Bang Never Happened* (London: Simon & Schuster, 1992).
24. LaViolette, *Subquantum Kinetics,* 2003.
25. LaViolette, *Genesis of the Cosmos.*
26. Schatzkin, *Defying Gravity,* ch. 50.

5. THE U.S. ANTIGRAVITY SQUADRON

1. W. B. Scott, "Black World Engineers, Scientists Encourage Using Highly Classified Technology for Civil Applications," *Aviation Week & Space Technology* (March 9, 1992): 66–67.
2. "Northrop Studying Sonic Boom Remedy," *Aviation Week & Space Technology* (January 22, 1968): 21.
3. "Sonic Boom Experiments," *Product Engineering* (March 11, 1968): 35–36.
4. Moore, "The Search for Anti-Gravity," part 1, p. 9.
5. Rose, "The Flying Saucer."
6. Brown, U.S. patent 2,949,550.
7. J. Mullins, "Plasma Magic," *New Scientist,* October 28, 2000. Eprint at: www.newscientist.com/article/mg16822624.000-plasma-magic.html.
8. Scott, "Black World Engineers," 66–67.
9. A. Basiago, "Dreamland and the CIA," *MUFON UFO Journal* (July 1992): 10–12.
10. T. Good, *Alien Contact: Top-Secret UFO Files Revealed* (New York: William Morrow & Co., 1991), 208.
11. Scott, "Black World Engineers."
12. Mullins, "Plasma Magic."
13. Ibid.
14. T. T. Brown, U.S. patent 3,022,430.

15. W. B. Scott, *Inside the Stealth Bomber* (New York: Tab/Aero Books, 1991), 165.
16. J.-P. Petit, “Les Mystéres du B2” (January 17, 2003). Eprint at: www.jp-petit.org/nouv_f/B2/B2_7.htm.
17. Scott, “Black World Engineers.”
18. R. Boylan, “B-2 Stealth Bomber as Antigravity Craft.” Eprint at: www.drboylan.com/waregrv2.html.
19. P. A. LaViolette, “The U.S. Antigravity Squadron,” Proceedings of the International Symposium on New Energy, Denver, IANS, 1993. Reprinted in T. Valone, ed. *Electrogravitics Systems: Reports on a New Propulsion Methodology* (Washington, D.C.: Integrity Research Institute, 1994).

6. GRAVITY BEAM PROPULSION

1. G. Vassilatos, *Secrets of Cold War Technology: Project HAARP and Beyond* (Bayside, Calif.: Borderland Sciences, 1996), 26.
2. Ibid., 33.
3. Ibid., 55.
4. Ibid., 31.
5. E. Podkletnov and G. Modanese, “Impulse Gravity Generator Based on Charged YBa2Cu3O7-y Superconductor with Composite Crystal Structure,” August 2001. Eprint at: http://arXiv.org/abs/physics/0108005.
6. Ibid.
7. E. Podkletnov and G. Modanese, “Investigation of High Voltage Discharges in Low Pressure Gases through Large Ceramic Superconducting Electrodes,” *Journal of Low Temperature Physics* 132 (2003): 239–59. Eprint at: http://arXiv.org/abs/physics/0209051.
8. N. Cook, “Antigravity Propulsion Comes out of the Closet,” *Jane’s Defense Weekly* 38 (July 29, 2002).
9. Podkletnov and Modanese, 2001; Podkletnov and Modanese, 2003.
10. O. Jefimenko, *Causality, Electromagnetic Induction and Gravitation* (Star City, W. Va.: Electret Scientific Co.), 29.
11. Cook, “Antigravity Propulsion.”
12. N. Cook, “Airpower Electric,” in *Jane’s Defense Weekly* 38 (July 24, 2002): 56–63.
13. N. Cook, *The Hunt for Zero-Point* (New York: Random House, 2003).
14. N. Cook, “Antigravity Propulsion.”
15. P. A. LaViolette to E. Podkletnov, e-mail, June 11, 2003.

16. E. Podkletnov to P. A. LaViolette, e-mail, June 11, 2003.
17. E. Podkletnov, "Short Review of the Book 'Subquantum Kinetics' by Paul LaViolette," *Infinite Energy* 54(9) (2004): 42.
18. LaViolette, "Introduction to Subquantum Kinetics: II," 295–328.
19. LaViolette, *Subquantum Kinetics,* 121–22.
20. E. Podkletnov, personal communication with the author, July 2003.
21. P. A. LaViolette to E. Podkletnov, e-mail, December 22, 2007.
22. E. Podkletnov to P. A. LaViolette, e-mail, December 25, 2007.
23. E. Podkletnov to P. A. LaViolette, e-mail, June 11, 2003.
24. E. Podkletnov to P. A. LaViolette, e-mail, December 29, 2007.
25. A. G. Obolensky, "The Mechanics of Time," in *Proceedings of the 1988 International Tesla Symposium,* S. Elswick, ed. (Colorado Springs: International Tesla Society, 1988), 4.25–4.40.
26. P. A. LaViolette, "Galactic Explosions, Cosmic Dust Invasions, and Climatic Change" (Ph.D. dissertation, Portland State University, 1983), appendix D.
27. A. G. Obolensky and P. A. LaViolette, paper in preparation.

7. PROJECT SKYVAULT

1. J. B. Pendry and D. R. Smith, "Reversing Light with Negative Refraction," *Physics Today,* 57(6) (2004): 37–43. Eprint at: www.physicstoday.org/vol-57/iss-6/p37.html.
2. Ibid., "The Quest for the Superlens," *Scientific American* (July 2006): 61–67.
3. T. Kasagi, T. Tsutaoka, and K. Hatakeyama, "Negative Permeability Spectra in Permalloy Granular Composite Materials," in *American Institute of Physics,* April 25, 2006. Eprint at: http://link.aip.org/link/?APPLAB/88/172502/1.
4. J. B. Pendry, e-mail communication with the author, July 9, 2006.
5. V. G. Veselago, "The Electrodynamics of Substances with Simultaneously Negative Values of ε and μ," in *Soviet Physics Uspekhi* 10 (1968): 509–14. Originally published in Russian in *Uspekhi Fizicheskikh Nauk* 92 (1967): 517–26.
6. R. A. Shelby, D. R. Smith, and S. Schultz, "Experimental Verification of a Negative Index of Refraction," *Science* 292 (2001): 77–79. Eprint at: www.sciencemag.org/cgi/content/abstract/292/5514/77.
7. Pendry and Smith, "Reversing Light," 37–43.
8. Pendry and Smith, "Quest for the Superlens," 61–67.
9. R. Shelby, et al., "Microwave Transmission through a Two-Dimensional

Left-Handed Metamaterial," *Applied Physics Letters,* 78(4) (2001): 489–91, fig. 1.

10. S. T. Chui, "Negative Refraction in Anisotropic Composites," *Bulletin of the American Physical Society,* March meeting, 2004. Abstract at: http://flux.aps.org/meetings/YR04/MAR04/baps/abs/S6590001.html.
11. Brown, U.S. patent 3,187,206.
12. Y. Zhang, et al., "Total Negative Refraction in Real Crystals for Ballistic Electrons and Light," *Physical Review Letters* 91 (2003), no. 157404; http://flux.aps.org/meetings/YR04/MAR04/baps/abs/S6590001.html.
13. Defense Sciences Office, Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency, Thrust Area, Materials, Novel Materials and Material Processes, Negative Index Materials Program. Eprint at: www.darpa.mil/dso/thrusts/materials/novelmat/nim/index.htm. Accessed January 11, 2008. Extract quotation taken from a previous DSO internet posting that is no longer accessible.
14. S. G. Dimitriou, "Propulsive Effect on a Massive Plane Capacitor Driven by Slope-Asymmetric Pulses" (unpublished paper). Eprint at: http://jnaudin.free.fr/stvdmdoc/stvcap.htm.
15. S. G. Dimitriou, "Efforts in Developing Upward and Directional Thrust" (paper presented at the Propelantless Propulsion Conference, University of Sussex, January 2001). Eprint at: http://jnaudin.free.fr/stvexp/html/stvrxp1a.htm.
16. Ibid., "Propulsive Effect on Two Capacitors Driven by Slope-Asymmetrical Pulses Experiment" (unpublished paper, March 2001). Eprint at: http://jnaudin.free.fr/stvexp/html/stv2caps.htm.
17. Ibid., "Radiation Phenomena of Specially Shaped Current Pulses" (master's thesis, Department of Electrical Engineering, University of Manchester, 1994).
18. Vassilatos, *Secrets of Cold War Technology,* 208.
19. E. C. Okress, et al., "Design and Performance of a High Power Pulsed Magnetron," 1956 International Electron Devices, meeting 2, p. 8.
20. K. Harkay, "Simulation Investigations of the Longitudinal Sawtooth Instability at SURF," in *Proceedings of the 2001 Particle Accelerator Conference* (2001): 1918–20. Eprint at: http://accelconf.web.cern.ch/accelconf/p01/PAPERS/TPPH106.pdf.
21. National Materials Advisory Board, *Materials for High-Temperature Semiconductor Devices* (1995) (Washington, D.C., National Academy of Sciences, 2006), 93.
22. L. Yuan, et al., "IMPATT Diode Microwave Oscillators in Silicon

Carbide," *Purdue University School of Engineering Annual Research Summary: July 1 1999–June 30, 2000*. Eprint at: http://engineering.purdue.edu/ECE/Research/ARS/ARS2001/PART_I/Section7/7_12.whtml.

23. D. M. Goebel, et al., "High-Power Microwave Source Based on an Unmagnetized Backward-Wave Oscillator," *IEEE Transactions on Plasma Science* 22(5) (October 1994): 547–53.
24. J. McClain and N. Wootan, "An Introduction to the Magnetic Resonance Amplifier." Eprint at: www.rexresearch.com/mra/1mra.htm.
25. J. McClain, "The Magnetic Resonance Amplifier: Description of Operation." Eprint at: www.rexresearch.com/mra/1mra.htm.
26. J. McClain and N. Wootan, "New ZPE Breakthru—Magnetic Resonance Amplifier." Eprint at: www.rexresearch.com/mra/1mra.htm.
27. T. Bearden, "Ferroelectric Capacitors and the Magnetic Resonance Amplifier." Eprint at: www.rexresearch.com/mra/1mra.htm.
28. J. McClain and N. Wootan, "Magnetic Resonance Amplifier: Keely-Net Message Collection No. 2." Eprint at: www.rexresearch.com/mra/2mra.htm.
29. McClain and Wootan, "An Introduction to the Magnetic Resonance Amplifier."
30. A. G. Obolensky, personal communication with the author, June 2006.

8. MICROWAVE PHASE CONJUGATION

1. V. V. Shkunov and B. Y. Zel'dovich, "Optical Phase Conjugation," *Scientific American* 253 (December 1985): 54–59.
2. D. M. Pepper, "Applications of Optical Phase Conjugation," *Scientific American* 254 (January 1986): 74–83.
3. J. O. White, M. Cronin-Golomb, B. Fischer, and A. Yariv, "Coherent Oscillation by Self-Induced Gratings in the Photorefractive Crystal BaTiO3," *Applied Physics Letters* 40 (1982): 450–52.
4. M. Cronin-Golomb, B. Fischer, J. O. White, and A. Yariv, "Passive (Self-Pumped) Phase Conjugate Mirror: Theoretical and Experimental Investigation," *Applied Physics Letters* 41 (1982): 689–91.
5. Ray, personal conversation with the author.
6. UFO Subcommittee of AIAA, "UFO Encounter 1," *Astronautics and Aeronautics,* July 1971, 66–70.
7. J. M. McCampbell, *Ufology: Insights from Science and Common Sense* (Belmont, Calif.: Jaymac Co., 1973), ch. 7.
8. Pepper, "Applications of Optical Phase Conjugation," 81–82.

9. R. Shih, et al., “Microwave Phase Conjugation in a Liquid Suspension of Elongated Microparticles,” *Physical Review Letters* 65(5) (1990): 579–82.
10. M. Curtin, et al., “Acceptance Test Performance of the Rocketdyne Radio Frequency Power System,” *IEEE Proceedings* 2 (1993): 1244–46.
11. L. D. DiDomenico and G. M. Rebeiz, “Frequency Stability in Adaptive Retrodirective Arrays,” *IEEE Transactions on Aerospace and Electronic Systems* (October 2000): 1219–31. Eprint at: www.batse.msfc.nasa.gov/colloquia/abstracts_spring04/yuri.html.
12. *Electric Spacecraft Journal* staff, “Tesla’s Tower (Wardenclyffe),” *Electric Spacecraft Journal* (April–June, 1991): 13–24.
13. N. Tesla, “The Transmission of Electrical Energy without Wires,” *Electrical World and Engineer,* March 5, 1904.
14. A. G. Obolensky, personal communication with the author, 1996.
15. Vassilatos, *Secrets of Cold War Technology,* 44.
16. Ibid., 46.
17. “Theoretical Blueprint for Invisibility Cloak Reported,” Pratt School of Engineering at Duke University, May 25, 2006. Eprint at: www.pratt.duke.edu/news/releases/index.php?story=276.
18. Ray, personal conversation with the author, 1992.
19. A. G. Obolensky, “Mechanics of Time,” 4.25–4.40.
20. A. G. Obolensky, “The Force Is Faster than Its Radiations,” in *Proceedings of the Second International Symposium on Nonconventional Energy Technology,* Atlanta, September 9–11, 1983.
21. A. G. Obolensky, “The Magnetic Force is Faster than Light,” in *Proceedings of the 1986 International Tesla Symposium,* 5.29–5.40, S. Elswick, ed. (Colorado Springs: International Tesla Society, 1986).
22. Ibid.
23. T. Lemons and G. Obolensky, “Improved Operation of HID Lamps,” in *Lighting Design & Application* (January 1978): 55–58.
24. A. G. Obolensky, “The Force Is Faster than Its Radiations.”
25. Ibid.
26. A. G. Obolensky, “The Magnetic Force Is Faster than Light,” 5.29–5.40.
27. A. G. Obolensky, personal communication with the author, 1996.
28. Greg, personal communication with the author, November 3, 1995.
29. Ibid.
30. Ray, personal communication with the author, 1992.
31. Ibid.

32. Ibid.
33. Ibid.

9. UNCONVENTIONAL FLYING OBJECTS

1. P. Hill, *Unconventional Flying Objects: A Scientific Analysis* (Charlottesville, Va.: Hampton Roads Publishing Company, 1995), 98.
2. Ibid., 101–6.
3. Ibid., 99, 138–39.
4. Ibid., 121–23.
5. Ibid., 135–36, 143.
6. T. Curtis, "Court Enters Twilight Zone as 3 Claim Attack by UFO," *The Oregonian,* September 17, 1985, A12.
7. T. Good, *Above Top Secret* (New York: William Morrow & Co., 1988), 303–5.
8. D. B. Gordon and P. Dellinger, *Don't Look Up!* (Madison, N.C.: Empire Publishing, 1988).
9. "Secret Advanced Vehicles Demonstrate Technologies for Future Military Use," *Aviation Week & Space Technology* (October 1, 1990): 20–23.
10. Ibid.
11. J. A. Hynek and P. J. Imbrogno, *Night Siege: The Hudson Valley UFO Sightings* (New York: Ballantine Books, 1987).
12. F. Scully, *Behind the Flying Saucers* (New York: Henry Holt, 1950).
13. C. Berlitz and W. L. Moore, *The Roswell Incident* (New York: Grosset & Dunlap, 1980).
14. Steinman and Stevens, *UFO Crash at Aztec: A Well Kept Secret* (Tucson: UFO Photo Archives, 1986), 376.
15. Good, *Above Top Secret.*
16. Good, *Alien Contact.*
17. K. D. Randle and D. R. Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell* (New York: Avon Books, 1994).
18. Steinman and Stevens, *UFO Crash at Aztec,* 428.
19. *Aviation Week & Space Technology,* "Secret Advanced Vehicles."
20. U.S. Air Force, "Analysis of Flying Object Incidents in the U.S," Air Force Intelligence Report no. 100-203-79; cited in H. Blum, *Out There* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1990), 64.
21. Steinman and Stevens, *UFO Crash at Aztec,* 306.
22. Ibid., 310.
23. Ibid., 323–25.

24. Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell.*
25. Good, *Alien Contact,* 123–24.
26. Blum, *Out There,* 211–67.
27. Ibid.
28. Ibid.
29. Anonymous letters about Roswell debris sent to Art Bell and Linda Howe, www.geocities.com/Area51/shadowlands/6583/roswell039.html.
30. E-mail correspondence about Art's Parts posted at http://beyond-the-illusion.com/files/New-Files/960930/artspart.txt.
31. N. A. Reiter, "A Summary of Our Analysis of the Claimed Roswell Crash Artifact as Discussed on 'The Art Bell Show'–1996," November 30, 2001. Eprint at: www.theavalonfoundation.org/docs/artsparts.html.
32. V. A. Podolskiy and E. E. Narimanov, "Strongly Anisotropic Waveguide as a Nonmagnetic Left-Handed System," *Physical Review B* 71 (2005): 201101. Eprint at: www.physics.oregonstate.edu/~vpodolsk/reprints.pdf/planar.prb.pdf.
33. V. A. Podolskiy, L. Alekseyev, and E. E. Narimanov, "Strongly Anisotropic Media: The THz Perspectives of Left-Handed Materials," *Journal of Modern Optics* 52 (2005): 2343. Eprint at: www.arXiv.org/abs/physics/0505024.
34. V. A. Podolskiy and E. E. Narimanov, "Nanostructured Non-magnetic Left-Handed Composites" in Antennas and Propagation Society International Symposium *2005 IEEE Proceedings* 1A (Washington, DC: IEEE, 3 July 2005), 43–46. Eprint at: www.physics.oregonstate.edu/~vpodolsk/reprints.pdf/2005IEEE.AP-S.podolskiy.lhm.pdf.
35. Steinman and Stevens, *UFO Crash at Aztec,* 280.
36. Ibid., 462–79.
37. Ibid., 426–31.
38. Ibid., 383–85, 430.
39. G. Belanus, "Project Silverbug—Human Engineered UFOs?" December 28, 1998. Eprint at: www.sightings.com/ufo2/humanufo.htm.
40. P. A. LaViolette, *Decoding the Message of the Pulsars* (Rochester, Vt.: Bear & Co., 2006), 144–45.
41. T. Mahood. Eprint at: www.dreamlandresort.com/area51/lazar/index.htm.
42. Good, *Alien Contact,* 169–89.
43. G. Huff, "The Lazar Synopsis," posted on the Internet to alt.conspiracy.area51 on March 12, 1995. Eprint at: www.dreamlandresort.com/area51/lazar/synopsis.htm.

44. T. Mahood. Eprint at: www.dreamlandresort.com/area51/lazar/fl-thery.htm.
45. Amantine, "Why Element 115 Cannot Be Used for Antigravity," February 15, 2004, posted on the Internet at: www.abovetopsecret.com/forum/thread33267/pg1.
46. T. Mahood. Eprint at: www.dreamlandresort.com/area51/lazar/fl-thery.htm.
47. D. Morgan, "Lazar Critique." Eprint at: www.dreamlandresort.com/area51/lazar/critiq.htm.
48. P. A. LaViolette, "The Electric Charge and Magnetization Distribution."

10. THE SEARL EFFECT

1. S. G. Sandberg, "Searl-Effect Generator: Design and Manufacturing Procedure," June 1985. Eprint at: www.rexresearch.com/research/Searl/searl.htm.
2. P. L. Barrett, "The Searl Effect," newsletter no. NSRC-RM/BR-1, vol. 1, sec. 4, Searl National Space Research Consortium, June 1, 1968.
3. S. G. Sandberg, "The Searl-Effect and Searl-Effect Generator," June 17, 1987. Eprint at: www.rexresearch.com/research/Searl/searl2.htm.
4. Barrett, "The Searl Effect," fig. IV.
5. Rho Sigma, *Ether Technology,* 80.
6. "Movement of Massive Chunk of Earth a Mystery to Scientists in Washington," *The Oregonian,* November 24, 1984.
7. V. V. Roshchin and S. M. Godin, "Experimental Research of Magnetic-Gravity Effects: Full Size SEG Tests," 2000. Eprint at: http://searleffect.com/free/russianseg/images/russianseg.pdf.
8. V. V. Roshchin and S. M. Godin, "An Experimental Investigation of the Physical Effects in a Dynamic Magnetic System," *Technical Physics Letters* 26 (2000): 1105–07. http://users.erols.com/iri/ Roshchin_Godin.PDF.
9. V. V. Roshchin and S. M. Godin, "Experimental Research of Magnetic-Gravity Effects."
10. P. A. LaViolette, "How the Searl Effect Works: An Analysis of the Magnetic Energy Converter," in *Proceedings of the Conference on New Hydrogen Technologies and Space Drives,* Adolf and Inge Schneider, eds. (Weinfelden, Switzerland: Jupiter-Verlag, 2001).
11. Archer Energy Systems, "The Faraday Disk Dynamo As the Original Over-Unity Device." Eprint at: www.stardrivedevice.com/over-unity.html.

12. T. Valone, *The Homopolar Handbook* (Washington, D.C.: Integrity Research Institute, 1998), 6.
13. Ibid., 54–55.
14. A. G. Obolensky, personal communication with the author.
15. Lemons and Obolensky, "Improved Operation of HID Lamps," 55–58.
16. White, Cronin-Golomb, Fischer, and Yariv, "Coherent Oscillation," 450–52.
17. M. Cronin-Golomb, B. Fischer, J. O. White, and A. Yariv, "Passive (Self-Pumped) Phase Conjugate Mirror," 689–91.
18. P. A. LaViolette, "Introduction to Subquantum Kinetics," parts 1, 2, and 3, *International Journal of General Systems* 11 (1985): 281–94, 295–328, 329–46.
19. LaViolette, *Subquantum Kinetics.*
20. Barrett, "The Searl Effect," 12.
21. Ibid.
22. LaViolette, *Subquantum Kinetics,* 117.
23. D. Lewis, "Is Antigravity in Your Future?" *Atlantis Rising* 1 (1994).
24. Barrett, "The Searl Effect," 3.
25. V. F. Mikhailov, "The Action of an Electrostatic Potential on the Electron Mass," *Annales Fondation Louis de Broglie* 24 (1999): 161–69. Eprint at: www.ifi.unicamp.br/~assis/IEEE-Trans-Circuits-Systems-II-V52-p289-292(2005).pdf.
26. V. F. Mikhailov, "Influence of an Electrostatic Potential on the Inertial Electron Mass," *Annales Fondation Louis de Broglie* 26 (2001):633–38. Eprint at: www.ensmp.fr/aflb/AFLB-264/aflb264p633.pdf.
27. A. K. T. Assis, "Changing the Inertial Mass of a Charged Particle," *Journal of the Physical Society of Japan* 62 (May 1993): 1418–22.
28. Rho Sigma, *Ether Technology: A Rational Approach to Gravity Control* (Lakemont, Ga.: CSA Printing & Bindery, 1977, 1996), 108; based on letter received from one of Searl's close associates, December 11, 1984.

11. ELECTROGRAVITIC WAVE EXPERIMENTS

1. S. G. Dimitriou, "On the Pendulum Oscillations of a Suspended RF Resonant Circuit." Eprint at: www.electrogravity.com/STAVROS/index.html.
2. S. G. Dimitriou, September 2006, personal communication with author.
3. J.-L. Naudin, "The Stavros RF Pendulum Experiment: An Electromagnetic Interaction with the Gravity Field" (unpublished research, 2001). Eprint at: http://jnaudin.free.fr/html/stvrfpnd2.htm.

4. S. G. Dimitriou, "Efforts in Developing Upward and Directional Thrust."
5. S. G. Dimitriou, "Radiation Phenomena," ch. 3, 9.
6. S. G. Dimitriou, "Propulsive Effect on a Massive Plane Capacitor."
7. S. G. Dimitriou, "Efforts in Developing Upward and Directional Thrust."
8. S. G. Dimitriou, "Propulsive Effect on Two Capacitors."

12. HIGH-VOLTAGE ELECTROGRAVITICS EXPERIMENTS

1. T. Turman, to author, letter, August 15, 1994.
2. T. T. Brown to T. Turman, letter, November 1, 1971.
3. T. Turman to author, letter, August 15, 1994.
4. T. Turman to T. T. Brown, letter, autumn 1971.
5. T. Turman to author, letter, August 15, 1994.
6. L. Deavenport to author, letter, November 1995; "T. T. Brown Experiment Replicated," *Electric Spacecraft Journal* 16 (1995): 34–36.
7. L. Deavenport to author, letter, November 1995.
8. R. L. Talley, "Twenty First Century Propulsion Concept," U.S. Air Force report no. PL-TR-91-3009, May 1991, available from the National Technical Information Service.
9. H. Serrano, "Re: Thomas Townsend Brown Effect in Vacuum," July 7, 2003, blog postings at: www.fusor.net/board/view.php?site=fusor&bn=fusor_announce&key=1057576903.
10. P. Cornille, "Newton's Third Principle in Post-Newtonian Physics," *Galilean Electrodynamics* 10(3) (1999): 33–34.
11. P. Cornille, "Electrostatic Pendulum Experiment Which Pumps Energy from the Ether," (unpublished research, 1999), http://members.aol.com/overunity/elecpexp/elecpexp.html.
12. P. Cornille, "Review of the Application of Newton's Third Law in Physics," *Progress in Energy and Combustion Sciences* 25 (1999): 161–210. Eprint at: http://jnaudin.free.fr/elecpexp/elecpexp.html.
13. Ibid., 200.
14. R. Seaman, "Theory of an Ion Wind Device," *Electrohydrodynamics* (Bala Cynwyd, Pa.: Electrokinetics, Inc., March 23, 1960), suppl. B. Eprint at: http://qualight.com/hydro/hydro.htm.
15. P. Cornille, "Review of the Application of Newton's Third Law," 199.
16. J.-L. Naudin, "Cornille's Electrostatic Pendulum," (unpublished research, April 2002). Eprint at: http://members.aol.com/ekpland/html/pcespend.htm.

17. J.-L. Naudin, "The Lifter Experiments" (unpublished research, 2001). Eprint at: http://jnaudin.free.fr/html/lftcraft1.htm and http://jnaudin.free.fr/html/lifters.htm.
18. J.-L. Naudin, "The Electrokinetic Model of the Lifter" (unpublished research, 2002). Eprint at: http://jnaudin.free.fr/ html/index2.htm.
19. W. B. Stein, "Electrokinetic Propulsion: The Ionic Wind Argument," Purdue University, Energy Conversion Lab, September 5, 2000.
20. Z. Losonc, "The Charge and Force Distribution Analysis of the Lifter in Vacuum." Eprint at: http://lifters.online.fr/lifters/liftvacuum/index.htm.
21. J.-L. Naudin, "The Ion Wind Tests on Transdimensional's Lifter" (unpublished research, 2001). Eprint at: http://jnaudin.free.fr/html/lifteriw.htm.
22. J.-C. Lafforgue, "Isolated Systems Self-Propelled by Electrostatic Forces," French patent 2651388, issued March 1, 1991, fig. 6.
23. J.-L. Naudin, "The Lafforgue's Field Propulsion Thruster Solver." Eprint at: http://jnaudin.free.fr/lfpt/html/lfptslv2.htm.
24. J.-L. Naudin, "The Lafforgue Field Propulsion Thruster LFPT v.1.0," January 27, 2002. Eprint at: http://jnaudin.free.fr/lfpt/html/lfptv1a.htm.
25. J.-L. Naudin, "The Rotating Lafforgue Field Propulsion Thrusters: The Twin-LFPTExperiment,"February6,2002.Eprintat:http://jnaudin.free.fr/lfpt/html/twinlfpt.htm.
26. A. Colacchio, "Lafforgue's Field Propulsion Thruster–Barium Titanate," March 28, 2002. Eprint at: www.imagineanything.com/energy/lfpt_bt.htm.

13. BLACK HOLE DISCOVERED IN NASA

1. P. A. LaViolette, "Electrogravitics: An Energy-Efficient Means of Spacecraft Propulsion," SEOP submission no. 100159 to the 1990 NASA Space Exploration Outreach Program. Reprinted in: *Explore* 3(1) (1991): 76–79.
2. "America at the Threshold: Report of the Synthesis Group on America's Space Exploration Initiative" (Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1991).
3. T., Garber, et al., "Space Transportation Systems, Launch Systems and Propulsion for the Space Exploration Initiative: Results from Project Outreach," RAND report N-3283-AF/NASA, 1991, 127.
4. V. V. Roshchin and S. M. Godin, "An Experimental Investigation of the Physical Effects," 1105–7.

5. T. Valone, “Significant Non-conventional Energy and Propulsion Methods for the 21st Century, in *Proceedings of the 1990 International Tesla Symposium,* 5-73–5-84, S. Elswick, ed. (Denver: International Tesla Society, 1991).
6. R. Thompson, “Yesterday the Garden Shed, Tomorrow Mars,” *Sydney Morning Herald,* March 18, 1989, suppl. section, 8–9.
7. Garber, “Space Transportation Systems,” 2, 6.
8. Ibid.
9. Conversation with the author, February 1992.
10. Garber, “Space Transportation Systems,” 5.
11. Ibid.
12. Unnamed NASA engineer, conversation with the author, May 1994.
13. J. Campbell, “Apparatus for generating thrust using a two dimensional, asymmetrical capacitor module,” U.S. patent 6,317,310, filed March 8, 2000; issued November 13, 2001; U.S. patent 6,411,493, filed September 20, 2001; issued June 25, 2002.
14. Mullins, “Plasma Magic.”
15. Ibid.
16. Ibid.
17. S. Greer, *Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secrets in Modern History* (Crozet, Va.: Crossing Point, 2001), 419–21.
18. Ibid., 421.
19. Tom, conversation with the author, September 1994.
20. National Security Space Road Map, www.fas.org/spp/military/program/nssrm/initiatives/usspace.htm.
21. D. Liakopoulos, *The Awakening of the Red Bear* (Thesalonika, Greece: Liakopoulos Publications, 2005), 203–4. Text in Greek.
22. Scaled Composites Company, “Branson and Rutan Form ‘The Spaceship Company,’” July 27, 2005. Eprint at: www. scaled.com/news/2005-07-27_branson_rutan_spaceship_company.htm.

14. A TECHNOLOGY THAT COULD CHANGE THE WORLD

1. J. Falcone, S. Gibson, R. Oberleitner, and S. Seidel, “Reminder on TC2800 guidelines for Sensitive Application Warning System (SAWS) program,” U.S. Patent and Trademark Office memo issued January 15, 2008.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Air Force Intelligence. "Analysis of Flying Object Incidents in the U.S." Report no. 100-203-79.

"America at the Threshold: Report of the Synthesis Group on America's Space Exploration Initiative." Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1991.

Assis, A. K. T. "Changing the Inertial Mass of a Charged Particle." *Journal of the Physical Society of Japan* 62 (May 1993): 1418–22.

Aviation Studies. "Electrogravitics Systems: An Examination of Electrostatic Motion, Dynamic Counterbary and Barycentric Control." Report no. GRG 013/56. London: Aviation Studies, February 1956.

———. *The Gravitics Situation.* London: Gravity Rand Ltd., December 1956.

Bahnson, A. H. "Electrical Thrust Producing Device." U.S. patent 3,223,038. Filed Sept. 10, 1964; issued December 14, 1965.

Barrett, P. L. "The Searl Effect." Newsletter no. NSRC-RM/BR-1, vol. 1, sec. 4, Searl National Space Research Consortium, June 1, 1968.

Basiago, A. "Dreamland and the CIA." *MUFON UFO Journal* 291 (1992).

Berlitz, C., and W. L. Moore. *The Roswell Incident.* New York: Grosset & Dunlap, 1980.

Blum, H. *Out There.* New York: Simon & Schuster, 1990, 211–67.

Brown, T. T. "A method of and an apparatus or machine for producing force or motion." British patent 300,311. Filed August 15, 1927; issued November 15, 1928.

———. "How I Control Gravity." *Science and Invention Magazine,* August 1929. Reprinted in *Psychic Observer* 37(1) (1976): 14–18.

———. “A Brief Description of Experiments Made in Paris (1955–1956).” Unpublished report.

———. “Electrokinetic Apparatus.” U.S. patent 3,187,206. Filed May 9, 1958; issued on June 1, 1965.

———. “Electrokinetic Apparatus.” U.S. patent 2,949,550. Issued on August 16, 1960.

———. “Electrokinetic Generator.” U.S. patent 3,022,430. Issued on February 20, 1962.

———. “Electrical Self-Potential in Rocks.” *Psychic Observer* 37(1) (1976).

———. “On the Possibilities of Optical-Frequency Gravitational Radiation.” Unpublished paper, August 30, 1976.

Brush, C. “Retardation of Gravitational Acceleration and the Spontaneous Evolution of Heat in Complex Silicates, Lavas, and Clays.” *Physical Review* 31 (1921): 1113.

Burridge, G. “Townsend Brown and his Anti-gravity Discs.” *Fate* (November 1956): 40–48.

———. “Another Step toward Anti-gravity.” *The American Mercury* 86(6) (1958): 77–82.

Cady, W. M. “An Investigation Relative to Thomas Townsend Brown.” Pasadena, Calif.: Office of Naval Research, June 1952.

Campbell, J. “Apparatus for generating thrust using a two dimensional, asymmetrical capacitor module.” U.S. patent 6,317,310B1. Filed November 13, 2001; issued June 25, 2002.

Carew, C. “The Key to Travel in Space.” *Canadian Aviation* 32 (July 1959): 27–32.

Chui, S. T. “Negative Refraction in Anisotropic Composites.” *Bulletin of the American Physical Society,* March meeting, 2004. Abstract at: http://flux.aps.org/meetings/YR04/MAR04/baps/abs/S6590001.html.

Cleaver, A. V. “‘Electro-Gravitics:’ What It Is—or Might Be.” *Journal of the British Interplanetary Society* 16(2) (1957): 84–94.

Cook, N. “Airpower Electric.” *Jane’s Defense Weekly* 38 (2002): 56–63.

———. “Antigravity Propulsion Comes out of the Closet.” *Jane’s Defense Weekly* (2002).

———. *The Hunt for Zero-Point*. New York: Random House, 2003.

Cornille, P. “Newton’s Third Principle in Post-Newtonian Physics.” *Galilean Electrodynamics* 10(3) (1999).

———. “Review of the Application of Newton’s Third Law in Physics.”

Progress in Energy and Combustion Sciences 25 (1999): 161–210.

Corum, K. L., J. F. Corum, and J. F. X. Daum. "Tesla's Egg of Columbus, Radar Stealth, the Torsion Tensor, and the Philadelphia Experiment." In *Proceedings of the 1994 International Tesla Symposium,* S. Elswick, ed. Denver: International Tesla Society, 1994.

Cronin-Golomb, M., B. Fischer, J. O. White, and A. Yariv. "Passive (Self-Pumped) Phase Conjugate Mirror: Theoretical and Experimental Investigation." *Applied Physics Letters* 41 (1982): 689–91.

Curtin, M., et al. "Acceptance Test Performance of the Rocketdyne Radio Frequency Power System." *IEEE Proceedings* (1993): 1244–46.

Curtis, T. "Court Enters Twilight Zone as 3 Claim Attack by UFO." *The Oregonian,* September 17, 1985, A12.

Department of Defense. "Air Force Releases Study on Unidentified Aerial Objects." Office of Public Information, October 25, 1955.

DiDomenico, L. D., and G. M. Rebeiz. "Frequency Stability in Adaptive Retrodirective Arrays." *IEEE Transactions on Aerospace and Electronic Systems* (October 2000): 1219–31.

Dimitriou, S. G. "Radiation Phenomena of Specially Shaped Current Pulses." Master's thesis, Department of Electrical Engineering, University of Manchester, 1994.

———. "Efforts in Developing Upward and Directional Thrust." Paper presented at the Propelantless Propulsion Conference, University of Sussex, January 2001. http://jnaudin.free.fr/stvexp/html/stvrxp1a.htm.

Edwards, F. *Flying Saucers—Serious Business.* New York: Bantam, 1966, 127.

"Electrogravitics: Science or Daydream?" *Product Engineering* (1957): 12.

"Electrohydrodynamics." Meadville, Pa.: Whitehall-Rand, March 4, 1960.

"Electrohydrodynamics." Bala Cynwyd, Pa.: Electrokinetics, Inc., March 23, 1960.

Feynman, R. P., R. Leighton, and M. Sands. *The Feynman Lectures on Physics,* vol. II. Reading, Mass.: Addison-Wesley, 1964, 12.6–12.7.

"Flying Saucers 'Explained' by Men of New Research University Here." *Los Angeles Times*, April 3, 1952, Section B, p. 1.

Garber, T., et al. "Space Transportation Systems, Launch Systems and Propulsion for the Space Exploration Initiative: Results from Project Outreach." RAND report N-3283-AF/NASA, 1991.

Gerardin, L. A. "Electro-Gravitic Propulsion." *Interavia* (Switzerland) 11(12) (1956): 992.

Goebel, D. M., et al. “High-Power Microwave Source Based on an Unmagnetized Backward-Wave Oscillator.” *IEEE Transactions on Plasma Science* 22(5) (October 1994): 547–53.

Good, T. *Above Top Secret*. New York: William Morrow & Co., 1988.

———. *Alien Contact: Top-Secret UFO Files Revealed*. New York: William Morrow & Co., 1991.

Gordon, D. B., and P. Dellinger. *Don’t Look Up!* Madison, N.C.: Empire Publishing, 1988.

Greer, S. *Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secrets in Modern History*. Crozet, Va.: Crossing Point, 2001.

Harkay, K. “Simulation Investigations of the Longitudinal Sawtooth Instability at SURF.” In *Proceedings of the 2001 Particle Accelerator Conference* (2001): 1918–20.

Harrington, E. A. “Further Experiments on the Continuous Generation of Heat in Certain Silicates.” *Proceedings of the American Philosophical Society* 72(5) (1933): 333–49.

“How to ‘Fall’ into Space.” *Business Week,* February 8, 1958, 51–53.

Hill, P. *Unconventional Flying Objects: A Scientific Analysis*. Charlottesville, Va.: Hampton Road Publishing, 1995.

Hynek, J. A., and P. J. Imbrogno. *Night Siege: The Hudson Valley UFO Sightings*. New York: Ballantine Books, 1987.

Intel. “Towards Flight without Stress or Strain . . . or Weight.” *Interavia* (Switzerland) 11(5) (1956): 373–74.

Jefimenko, O. *Causality, Electromagnetic Induction and Gravitation*. Star City, W.Va.: Electret Scientific Co.

Keyhoe, D. E. *The Flying Saucer Conspiracy*. New York: Henry Holt & Co., 1955.

LaViolette, P. A. “Galactic Explosions, Cosmic Dust Invasions, and Climatic Change.” Ph.D. diss., Portland State University, 1983.

———. “An Introduction to Subquantum Kinetics: II. An Open Systems Description of Particles and Fields.” In “Systems Thinking in Physics,” special issue, *International Journal of General Systems* 11 (1985): 295–328.

———. “A Tesla Wave Physics for a Free Energy Universe.” Paper presented at the 1990 International Tesla Society Conference, Colorado Springs.

———. “Electrogravitics: An Energy-Efficient Means of Spacecraft Propulsion.” SEOP submission no. 100159 to the 1990 NASA Space Exploration Outreach Program. Reprinted in *Explore* 3(1) (1991): 76–79.

———. “The Planetary-Stellar Mass-Luminosity Relation: Possible Evidence of Energy Nonconservation?” *Physics Essays* 5(4) (1992): 536–42.

———. “How the Searl Effect Works: An Analysis of the Magnetic Energy Converter.” In *Proceedings of the Conference on New Hydrogen Technologies and Space Drives,* Weinfelden, Switzerland, June 23, 2001, Adolf and Inge Schneider, eds. Weinfelden: Jupiter-Verlag, 2001.

———. *Subquantum Kinetics: A Systems Approach to Physics and Cosmology*. Schenectady, N.Y.: Starlane Publications, 1994, 2003.

———. *Genesis of the Cosmos: The Ancient Science of Continuous Creation*. Rochester, Vt.: Bear & Co., 1995, 2004.

———. “The Pioneer Maser Signal Anomaly: Possible Confirmation of Spontaneous Photon Blueshifting.” *Physics Essays* 18(2) (2005): 150–63.

———. “The Electric Charge and Magnetization Distribution of the Nucleon: Evidence of a Subatomic Turing Wave Pattern.” *International Journal of General Systems* (2008), in press.

Lemons, T., and A. G. Obolensky. “Improved Operation of HID Lamps.” *Lighting Design & Application* (1978): 55–58.

Lewis, D. “Is Antigravity in Your Future?” *Atlantis Rising* 1 (1994).

Liakopoulos, D. *The Awakening of the Red Bear.* Thesalonika, Greece: Liakopoulos Publications, 2005, 203–4. In Greek.

McCampbell, J. M. *Ufology: Insights from Science and Common Sense.* Belmont, Calif.: Jaymac Co., 1973.

Mikhailov, V. F. “The Action of an Electrostatic Potential on the Electron Mass.” *Annales Fondation Louis de Broglie* 24 (1999): 161–69.

———. “Influence of an Electrostatic Potential on the Inertial Electron Mass.” *Annales Fondation Louis de Broglie* 26 (2001): 633–38.

“Movement of Massive Chunk of Earth a Mystery to Scientists in Washington.” *The Oregonian,* November 24, 1984.

Moore, W. L., and C. Berlitz. *The Philadelphia Experiment: Project Invisibility*. New York: Fawcett Crest, 1979.

Mullins, J. “Plasma Magic.” *New Scientist,* October 28, 2000.

National Materials Advisory Board. *Materials for High-Temperature Semiconductor Devices* (1995); Washington, D.C., National Academy of Sciences, 2006, 93.

Nesvizhevsky, V. V., et al. “Quantum States of Neutrons in the Earth’s Gravitational Field.” *Nature* 415 (2002): 297–99.

“Northrop Studying Sonic Boom Remedy.” *Aviation Week & Space Technology* (January 22) (1968): 21.

Obolensky, A. G. “The Force Is Faster than Its Radiations.” In *Proceedings of the Second International Symposium on Nonconventional Energy Technology*, Atlanta, September 9–11, 1983.

———. “The Magnetic Force Is Faster than Light.” In *Proceedings of the 1986 International Tesla Symposium,* 5.29–5.40, S. Elswick, ed. Colorado Springs: International Tesla Society, 1986.

———. “The Mechanics of Time.” In *Proceedings of the 1988 International Tesla Symposium*, 4.25–4.40, S. Elswick, ed. Colorado Springs: International Tesla Society, 1988.

Okress, E. C., et al. “Design and Performance of a High Power Pulsed Magnetron.” 1956 International Electron Devices, meeting 2 (1956): 8.

Pendry, J. B., and D. R. Smith. “Reversing Light with Negative Refraction.” *Physics Today* 57(6) (2004): 37–43.

———. “The Quest for the Superlens.” *Scientific American* (2006): 61–67.

Pepper, D. M. “Applications of Optical Phase Conjugation.” *Scientific American* 254 (1986): 74–83.

Podolskiy, V. A., and E. E. Narimanov. “Nanostructured Non-magnetic Left-Handed Composites.” In *AP-S/URSI 2005 Proceedings*. Washington, D.C.: IEEE, 2005.

———. “Strongly Anisotropic Waveguide as a Nonmagnetic Left-Handed System.” *Physical Review* B 71 (2005): 201101.

“Project Winterhaven: A Proposal for Joint Services Research and Development Contract.” Townsend Brown Foundation, Washington D.C., January 1, 1953.

Randle, K. D., and D. R. Schmitt. *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*. New York: Avon Books, 1994.

Reynolds, J. “Thomas Townsend Brown’s Final Gravito-Electric Research.” Paper presented at the Symposium on Electrical Propulsion and the Technology of Electro-Gravity, Philadelphia, April 15–16, 1994.

Rho Sigma [R. Schaffranke]. *Ether Technology: A Rational Approach to Gravity Control*. Lakemont, Ga.: CSA Printing & Bindery, 1977.

“Role of Gravitation in Physics.” *Science* 125 (1957): 998.

Rose, M. “The Flying Saucer: The Application of the Biefeld-Brown Effect to the Solution of the Problems of Space Navigation.” University for Social Research, April 8, 1952.

Roshchin, V. V., and S. M. Godin. “An Experimental Investigation of the Physical Effects in a Dynamic Magnetic System.” *Technical Physics Letters* 26 (2000): 1105–7.

Schatzkin, P. *Defying Gravity*. Terre Haute, Ind.: Tanglewood Press, 2007. Eprint at: www.ttbrown.com/defying_gravity/000_preface.html.

Scott, W. B. *Inside the Stealth Bomber*. New York: Tab/Aero Books, 1991.

———. "Black World Engineers, Scientists Encourage Using Highly Classified Technology for Civil Applications." *Aviation Week & Space Technology* (1992): 66–67.

Scully, F. *Behind the Flying Saucers*. New York: Henry Holt, 1950.

"Secret Advanced Vehicles Demonstrate Technologies for Future Military Use." *Aviation Week & Space Technology* (1990): 20–23.

Shelby, R. A., D. R. Smith, and S. Schultz. "Experimental Verification of a Negative Index of Refraction." *Science* 292 (2001): 77–79.

Shih, R., et al. "Microwave Phase Conjugation in a Liquid Suspension of Elongated Microparticles." *Physical Review Letters* 65(5) (1990): 579–82.

Shkunov, V. V., and B. Y. Zel'dovich. "Optical Phase Conjugation." *Scientific American* 253 (1985): 54–59.

Smolin, L. *The Trouble with Physics: The Rise of String Theory, the Fall of Science, and What Comes Next*. New York: Houghton Mifflin, 2006.

"Sonic Boom Experiments." *Product Engineering* 39 (March 11, 1968): 35–36.

Steinman, W. S., and W. C. Stevens. *UFO Crash at Aztec: A Well Kept Secret*. Tucson: UFO Photo Archives, 1986, 376.

Talbert, A. E. "Conquest of Gravity Aim of Top Scientists in U.S." *New York Herald Tribune,* November 20, 1955, 1, 36.

———. "Space-Ship Marvel Seen if Gravity Is Outwitted." *New York Herald Tribune,* November 21, 1955, 1, 6.

———. "New Air Dream-Planes Flying Outside Gravity." *New York Herald Tribune,* November 22, 1955, 6, 10.

Talley, R. L. "Twenty First Century Propulsion Concept." U.S. Air Force report no. PL-TR-91-3009, May 1991, available from the National Technical Information Service.

Tesla, N. "The Transmission of Electrical Energy without Wires." *Electrical World and Engineer* (March 5, 1904).

Thompson, R. "Yesterday the Garden Shed, Tomorrow Mars." *Sydney Morning Herald,* March 18, 1989, suppl. section, 8–9.

UFO Subcommittee of AIAA. "UFO Encounter 1." *Astronautics and Aeronautics* (July 1971): 66–70.

Valone, T. “Significant Non-conventional Energy and Propulsion Methods for the 21st Century. In *Proceedings of the 1990 International Tesla Symposium*, 5.73–5.84, S. Elswick, ed. Denver: International Tesla Society, 1991.

———, ed. *Electrogravitics Systems: Reports on a New Propulsion Methodology*. Washington, D.C.: Integrity Research Institute, 1994.

———. “T. T. Brown’s Electrogravitics Research in the 1950s.” In *Proceedings of the* 1994 *International Tesla Symposium,* S. Elswick, ed. Denver: International Tesla Society, 1994.

———. *The Homopolar Handbook*. Washington, D.C.: Integrity Research Institute, 1998.

Vassilatos, G. *Secrets of Cold War Technology: Project HAARP and Beyond*. Bayside, Calif.: Borderland Sciences, 1996.

Veselago, V. G. “The Electrodynamics of Substances with Simultaneously Negative Values of ε and μ.” *Soviet Physics Uspekhi* 10 (1968): 509–14. Originally published in Russian in *Uspekhi Fizicheskikh Nauk* 92 (1967): 517–26.

White, J. O., M. Cronin-Golomb, B. Fischer, and A. Yariv. “Coherent Oscillation by Self-Induced Gratings in the Photorefractive Crystal BaTiO3.” *Applied Physics Letters* 40 (1982): 450–52.

Woit, P. *Not Even Wrong: The Failure of String Theory and the Search for Unity in Physical Law*. New York: Basic Books, 2006.

Yost, C. A. “T. T. Brown and the Bahnson Lab Experiments.” *Electric Spacecraft Journal* 2 (1991): 6–12.

Zhang, Y., et al. “Total Negative Refraction in Real Crystals for Ballistic Electrons and Light.” *Physical Review Letters* 91 (2003), no. 157404.

INDEX

AC field excitation, 52, 71–72, 101, 103–6, 109–111, 136–37, 160–63, 201, 211, 251–52, 267, 274, 316, 319–21, 324, 334–35, 337–38, 352
Advanced Technology Bomber. *See* B-2
Aero-Space Plane, 389–91, 394, 460–61
air-drag reduction, 143–45, 153, 357, 390, 393–94
Alfvén, Hannes, 128
Allende, Carlos, 30–31
antenna, RF, 104, 333–38, 348
  half-wave radiator, 104, 338
  quarter-wave oscillation, 105, 134, 137, 333–34
antigravity, 47, 66–67, 72, 78–79, 81–82 87, 95, 106–8, 110, 112–13, 129, 142, 147–48, 163–64, 190–93, 250, 257, 263–64, 302, 389, 401–3
  See also electrogravitic, electrogravitics, electrokinetics, force, gravity wave
antimatter, 119, 126, 284, 287, 292, 387
Area 51, 147, 280–83, 286–87, 291
Art's Parts, 249, 273–78
Assis, André, 330
atomic bomb, 66, 184, 258, 400
Aviation Studies, 65–67, 72–73, 78, 80, 112, 114–15, 147, 154, 160, 390, 411–17
Aviation Report, 66, 69–74, 78, 114, 154–55, 427–39
Aviation Week, 115, 142–49, 154, 164, 259, 267, 270

B-2 bomber, 67, 112, 115, 142–164, 265–67, 356–57, 394
Bahnson, Agnew H, 87, 109–10, 161, 252
BAE Systems (British Aerospace), 163, 171, 218, 393–94
ball bearing motor effect, 307, 311–14, 321
barium titanate, 21, 84, 94, 105, 138, 161–63, 211, 225, 227, 229–35, 242, 251, 373, 375–77
Barrett, P. L., 300, 325–28
Basiago, Andrew, 147
Bell Aircraft, 72–73, 75, 78–79, 420, 436, 438
Bell, Art, 273–74
Bell, Lawrence, 73, 76, 79, 420, 436

Berlitz, Charles, 30, 36
Bertalanffy, Ludwig von, 124
Bertrandias, Victor, 45–46
Biefeld-Brown effect, 4, 47, 85, 114, 116, 175, 191, 195, 352, 370
bismuth, negative index, 275–78
Boeing, 79, 164, 171, 191, 200, 218, 420, 437
Bondi, Hermann, 123
Brown, Thomas Townsend, 1–69, 77–112, 116–17, 133–57, 161–62, 175, 191–92, 200–201, 209–11, 250–52, 338–39, 350–63, 375, 384, 393, 405–9, 415–16, 421, 450–51
  letters to Turman, 405–10
  nervous collapse, 36, 40
Brusselator, 118
Brush, Charles, 25
Burridge, Gaston, 50, 52, 349
Bush, Vannevar, 27, 271–72
Bush, George H. W., 378

Cady, Will, 47–48, 94
Cameron, Jeff, 365
Campbell, Jonathan, 392–93
capacitor, asymmetrical, 95, 99–102, 106, 125–26, 129, 134–37, 162, 350, 353, 355–56, 367, 370–76, 392–93
  See also Biefeld-Brown effect, dielectrics, electrogravitic: force, force: unbalanced
Carew, Charles, 108, 112
Caroline Group, 27–28
charge
  mass coupling, 11–13, 121–24, 141, 236
  production of, 121–22, 140
  See also conservation law, electrogravitics
chemical kinetics, 121
classified, physics, 115–17
  research and technology, 2, 22, 26, 33, 35, 40, 50, 64–65, 82, 95, 106–7, 111, 113, 143, 146–48, 164, 195, 201, 224, 243, 245, 270, 380, 389, 400–401, 455
Cleaver, A. V., 85, 107
Columbia disaster, 391–93
Compton wavelength, 120, 329, 418
Cook, Nick, 171
conservation law, violation of,
  charge, 119
  energy, 17, 95, 119, 250, 374
  momentum, 9, 172, 361, 374–75, 385
Cornille, Patrick, 9, 361–65, 369
Corum, K. L., 31
Coulomb wave, 116, 179

Deavenport, Larry, 357–59
Defense Sciences Office, 202–3
dematerialization. *See* invisibility
dielectric, 3, 7–8, 12, 16, 22, 24, 85, 90, 94, 96–106, 129–139, 148, 151, 200, 223, 230–31, 250–52, 275, 291, 342, 353
  absorption, 8, 149
  constant, 20–21, 25–26, 62, 79, 94, 96, 133, 138–39, 375, 421
  massive, high-K, 20, 22, 49, 62, 66, 71–72, 79, 84, 95, 102–3, 160–63, 211, 221, 251, 359–60, 373, 377, 416, 429
  opposing dipole moment, 7–9, 44, 105, 133, 161, 377
  permittivity, 138, 201, 220, 276, 346, 351
  polarization of, 7–8, 161
  relaxation, 7–8
DiDomenico, Leo, 245
Dimitriou, Stavros, 206, 209, 214, 333–48

disc airfoils. *See* flying discs
dissipative structures, 24
Don (anonymous informant), 216, 219, 223–26, 230, 232, 235–36, 238–41, 446–50
Douglas Aircraft, 45, 78, 420, 432, 438
Dreamland. *See* Area 51

Einstein, Albert, 10–11, 27, 33, 75, 114, 116, 128, 177, 185, 415, 419, 422, 429, 431–36, 444
Eisenhower, Dwight, 273
electric charge density (real), 13–14, 122, 133,
  surface charge density, 98, 370–71
electric flux density, 85, 97, 99, 151
  vector, 130–32, 137
electric displacement, 131
electrogravitic
  communication, 62–65
  force, 2–16, 20–22, 25, 43–45, 48, 57–58, 67–68, 72, 85, 91, 97–98, 104–6, 123, 131–41, 147, 150, 156, 168–76, 180, 186–87, 194–95, 204–9, 213, 223, 236–38, 251–52, 260–61, 277–78, 324–329, 334–35, 339–48, 359–64, 415
  motors, 16–20, 59, 62, 64, 68, 374
electrogravitic impulse waves, 167–76
  generation of, 172–75
  for space flight, 185–89
  superluminal speed of, 172, 177–85
electrogravitics, 73, 125–30, 243–59
  charge-mass coupling. *See* charge-mass coupling
  quantified, 13–16
  systems, 66–68, 151, 191, 390, 413–441, 456
  theory of, 9–16, 50, 98, 115–141, 148, 418
  vacuum tests. *See* vacuum chamber tests
electrohydrodynamics, 59, 89–94, 102, 161–62, 362, 375
electrokinetic apparatus, 87, 94–106, 110, 134–37, 144, 161, 200, 223, 267, 302, 316, 324, 338, 355, 360, 362, 365, 371
  phase conjugating capabilities, 250–52
electrokinetics, 49, 349, 392
  corporation, 59, 89, 90, 110–111, 154
electron
  creation of. *See* matter creation
  gravitational mass of, 12, 123
  wave nature of, 120
electrostatic charge, 48–49, 90–94, 98–103, 106, 126, 151–53, 358, 367–76
  unbalanced. *See* force
electrostatic potential field,
  concept of. *See* field
  gradient, 60, 85, 98–99, 101–3, 105, 126, 129, 137, 184, 251, 316, 321, 346–47, 368, 371–72
  inside a particle, 68, 104–6
  nonlinear gradient, 85, 96–97, 102, 131, 149–51, 200, 204
  outside a particle, 68, 77, 92–94, 104–6
energy
  conservation violation,
  efficiency, high, 254–55, 308, 337, 374
  entrainment, 247, 253–57, 319–24
  over-unity power, 17, 254
  See also zero-point energy
entropy
  reversal of, 250, 255–56, 320

  law, violation of, 301
ether
  concentration gradient, 63, 118, 127–33, 140, 167, 189, 325–26, 338
  concentration patterns, 64, 119–21
  critical threshold, 331
  currents, 167
  diffusion coefficient, 129, 141
  evidence for, 127, 185
  fluctuation, 119, 323–24
  kinetic constants, 118
  Model G, 117–18
  as open system, 118–19
  as organic whole, 16–17
  physics, 116, 404
  reaction-diffusion process, 117–18, 121
  reactions, 118–19, 124
  rest frame, 177, 308
  reverse reactions, 121
  superluminal velocity of, 188
  theory, 50, 64, 117–41, 167
  transmuting, 118
  vortex, 325
  wind, 174, 177, 180–84, 188
etherons
  flux of, 121, 128, 130, 132, 134, 325–26
  types of, 117
  See also flux vector

Faraday disc generator effect, 307–11
Feynman, Richard, 123
field
  concept of, 98–99, 101, 125
  electrostatic. *See* electrostatic
  as ether concentration, 64, 129
  faser effect, 253, 259, 320–21
  gravitational. *See* gravitational
  See also unified field theory
field-induced soliton phenomenon. *See* soliton
flame-jet generator, 56–58, 60–61, 79, 86, 144, 154–58, 160, 264
flux vector, divergence of, 129–34
flying discs, 42–55, 81, 83, 95, 147, 270, 349–50, 354–56, 384
force
  electrostatic. *See* electrostatic
  electrogravitic. *See* electrogravitic
  field intensity, 125–26, 370–71
  levitating, 32, 55, 61, 68, 87–106, 109–110, 148, 154, 161–63, 235–36, 243, 245, 250–52, 262, 296–302, 305, 329, 331, 352, 365–70
  production of, 124–25
  thrust-to-power ratio, 5, 92–95, 162, 187, 340, 373–74
  unbalanced, 98–103, 106, 125–26, 352, 367–76
four-wave mixer, 226–29, 234, 240–43

galactic center, 20, 23–24, 26–27
General Electric, 78, 154–55, 163, 110–11, 420, 435, 456
general system theory, 117
Glenn Martin, 28, 72, 75, 77–78, 108, 114, 420–21, 434, 438
  See also Lockheed Martin
Godin, Serge, 302–7, 310, 313, 317–18, 321–22, 329, 332
gravitational
  acceleration, 15, 59, 125, 170, 186–88, 269, 334–35, 342–43, 345–47, 419
  bending of light, 127, 330
  clock retardation, 116, 127, 141
  effect on inertial mass, 329–30
  effect on length, 116, 329–30

  precession of orbiting masses, 127, 330
  unbalanced forces, 16
  vortex, 18–19
  See also mass, electrogravitic force
gravitational potential field,
  gradient, 11–12, 14–15, 44, 57, 94, 98, 106, 124–27, 132, 136–40, 149, 157, 173–81, 206–8, 325–28, 337–38, 362–65
  hill, 11–12, 44, 123
  production of, 121–23
  well, 11–12, 14, 44, 63, 122–23, 141
  See also charge, electrogravitics, field
gravitator, 3–10, 16–17, 20–21, 42, 62
gravito-electric measurements, 19–25, 38, 63
  sidereal electrometer, 21–23
gravity, control of, 68, 427
  screening of, 327–28, 333–39
gravity impulse beam, 167–76
  See also Podkletnov
gravity waves, 24, 45, 63–64, 85, 169–77, 180, 186, 204–9, 213, 236–38, 242, 251–52, 260–62, 268, 284–86, 289–90, 292–93, 339–48
  theoretical model of, 63–64
gravity wave
  amplifier, 210–12, 219–22, 240, 289–90
  beam propulsion, 174, 185–89, 193–246, 284
  experiments, 333–47
  generator, 286, 293
  radiation, cosmic, 24–25
  See also electrogravitic impulse waves, gravity waves, microwave
Greer, Steven, 395
Greg, 257–58
Grumman, 108, 144
  See also Northrop Grumman
Gunn diode, 215–19, 223, 225, 232–36, 238, 242, 250, 256, 264, 285, 289, 445
Gunn effect, 216–17

Hare, Donna, 394–95
Hill, Paul, 260–62
Hlavaty, Vaclav, 75, 415, 422, 424, 431
holographic grating, 227, 230–31, 234, 240, 251, 291
Hughes Corp., 108, 152–53, 218, 243–45, 252
Hughes, Joe, 383–84, 458–59
Hutchison, John, 32–33
hydrogen bomb, 75, 271–72

IMPATT diode, 216–18, 289
interstellar travel. *See* space travel
invisibility or dematerialization
  created magnetically, 31
  created electrically, 33–34, 331
ion
  engine, 187
  sheath shock buffering, 144–45, 393
  space charge, 43–44, 49, 57–58, 150–53, 362–65, 368
  vortex, 61
  wind thrust, 48, 54–56, 61, 83–84, 86, 89, 92–93, 352, 356, 360, 362, 367–70, 375

Jefimenko, Oleg, 170

K-wave detector, 25–26
King, Frank, 87, 109
Kitselman, A., 35–37, 45, 87–88, 104, 110
klystron, 195, 243, 286

Lafforgue, Jean-Claude, 101–2, 125–26, 370–77
  Lafforgue field propulsion thruster, 163, 370–77
Lazar, Robert, 283–95
Lear, Inc., 64, 75–76, 78–79, 420
Lear, William, 76
levitation. *See* force, levitating
light, velocity. *See* velocity of light
Lockheed (Lockheed Martin), 35–37, 39–40, 78–79, 108, 164, 171, 218, 420
longitudinal force, 64, 165–68, 179, 340
Losonc, Zoltan, 369

magnetic energy converter (MEC), 256, 302–332, 403
magnetic resonance amplifier, 221
  See also parametric amplifiers
magnetron, 210–16, 219, 243
magnifying transmitter, 165–66, 181, 184–85, 203, 246–49, 256, 289, 319
Majestic 12 (MJ-12), 272–73, 278, 451–54
Manhattan Project, 54, 66, 70, 78, 273, 280, 420, 432
mass
  inertial, 123, 133, 329–30
mass, gravitational, 121–23, 175,
  active, 123
  G production rate balance, 132
  generated by charge, 11, 13, 121–24, 132
  inertial, 123, 133, 329–30
  passive, 123
  positive and negative, 11–14, 122–23, 328
  See also warping of space-time
matter
  creation of, 119, 324
  as dissipative space structure, 124
  as ether concentration variations, 118–24
  sustained by ether processes, 121, 124
  wave-packet model problems, 120
  See also invisibility
McClain, Joel, 221
McKinnon, Gary, 397–98
metamaterials, 198–203, 210, 214, 223, 235, 243, 249, 275, 277, 285
Michelson-Morley experiment, 127
microwave, 284
  air ionization, 153
  amplifier, 210, 215, 219–22, 250, 284, 290
  beam vehicle, 193, 263–69, 283–95
  beams, 192–94, 214–15, 260–62, 264, 290–94
  circulator, 220, 222–23
  excitation of dielectrics, 104–5, 250–52
  hazardous effects of, 264–66
  iris, 215, 232
  lens, 214, 232
  mixer, 225–42, 245, 249–52, 291
  negative refraction, 196–203, 275–78
  oscillator source, 195, 210–14, 216–18, 232, 243, 268, 285–87, 289, 291
  propulsion research, 190–243
  resonance, 211, 219, 221, 223, 229, 234, 236–38, 241
  resonant materials, 196–202, 223, 235–36, 249
  thrust effects, 195–200, 203, 206–9, 235, 284–85, 445

  See also four-wave mixer, phase conjugation, metamaterials, nonlinear materials, parametric amplifier, Skyvault, sawtooth waves
Mikhailov, Valery, 330
Modanese, Giovanni, 170–73, 178, 184, 186
Model G. *See* ether
Moore, William, 28–30, 33, 35–37, 40, 109, 111, 273
Morgan (anonymous informant), 28, 36
Morris, Charles, 390–93, 460–61
motor. *See* electrogravitic motor
Murray (anonymous informant), 192, 194–98, 203, 210, 212–16, 219, 225

NASA
  Aero-Space Plane, 389–91, 394, 460–61
  air-drag reduction tests, 153
  as military front organization, 191–92, 394–97
  censorship of electrogravitics, 378–98
  Columbia disaster, 391–94
  doctoring satellite photos, 394–95
  ion engine, 93
  SEOP program, 378–89
Naudin, Jean-Louis, 335–37, 345, 364–67, 369–70, 373–77
negative index of refraction, 196–203, 214, 223, 243, 275–77
Newton, Isaac
  concept of gravity, 418–20, 426
  second law, 15, 133
  third law, 9, 172, 361, 374–75, 385
nonequilibrium
  system, 117
  thermodynamics, 117
nonlinear
  fields, 85, 95–103, 106, 129–38, 150–51, 174, 208–9, 352, 355, 358, 368
  materials, 220–21, 228, 243, 247, 251, 253, 255, 257, 319–21
North American Rockwell, 79, 190–92, 243, 397, 420
Northrop (Northrop Grumman), 67, 143–44, 146, 149, 154, 159, 218, 393,

Obolensky, Alexis Guy, 178–85, 221, 253–59, 319
Overbye, Björn, 128

Pappas, Panagiotis, 18, 32, 343–45
parametric amplifier, 219–23, 235, 403
parametric pump beam, 220–23
Paris experiments, 83–85, 103, 138, 359, 442–43
Pasotron, 218
Pearl Harbor, 29, 40, 45, 47, 50–54, 72
Pendry, John, 196, 198, 223, 249
permittivity. *See* dielectric
phase conjugation, 224–59, 261–62, 268, 290–91, 295, 307, 319–21, 324, 403
  beat frequency, 239–41, 249, 262
  at ELF frequencies, 256, 307, 319–22
  and entropy reversal, 227–29, 250, 255
  at microwave frequencies, 224, 230–42, 244–45
  at optical frequencies, 227–31, 244
  phase conjugate beam, 227–31, 234, 241, 245, 251
  probe beam, 227–32, 234–42, 249, 251, 290–91, 320

  pump beams, 227–31, 233–41, 251, 291
  radar signal amplification, 244–45
  at RF frequencies, 246–256
phase conjugate, mirror, 227–29, 230, 320
  resonator, 228–35, 238, 242, 250–55, 268, 290, 320–21, 324
  See also four wave mixer, soliton
Philadelphia Experiment, 26–41, 109, 116, 288
  See also invisibility
physics, classified, 116
  See also ether physics, subquantum kinetics
Podkletnov, Evgeny, 85, 167–80, 184–88, 203, 208–10, 213, 236, 284, 289, 294
  See also gravity impulse beam
positron, 284, 286–89, 292
Prigogine, Ilya, 124
propulsion energy efficiency, 47–49, 92, 95, 187, 215, 296, 355
  See also energy efficiency, over unity, force, thrust-to-power ratio

Quayle, Dan, 378, 386

radar-absorbing material, 148, 152–53, 202, 211, 225, 249
RAND corp., 379–82, 385, 388–89
Ray (anonymous informant), 115–16, 238, 250, 258–59, 401
Raytheon, 72, 218
Redlight, Project, 269, 278–81
relativity
  special theory of, 177, 185, 419, 431
  general theory of, 126–27, 294, 419, 429, 431
resonance
  electromagnetic, 31, 196–202, 211, 219, 223, 235–36, 249
  scalar wave, 64, 109, 137, 161
  See also phase conjugate
Reynolds, Josh, 30
Rickover, Admiral, 22, 86, 201, 252
Rocketdyne, 190–93, 203, 243, 246, 444
Rose, Mason, 45–47, 50, 144–45
Roshchin, Vladimir, 302–7, 310, 313, 317–18, 321–22, 329, 332
runaway mode, 253–59

Sagnac, Georges, 127
Sarbacher, Robert, 271–72, 451–453
sawtooth instability, 213
sawtooth waves, 203–11, 223, 339–45
  threshold voltage, 209–10
Schaffranke, Rolf, 84, 87, 104, 302
Schatzkin, Paul, 28, 36–40, 47, 111
Scott, Bill, 158, 164
Searl, John, 296, 298–99, 305, 314, 319, 321, 329, 331–32, 384
Searl effect generator (SEG), 256, 297–300, 302–3, 309, 324–26, 328–29, 331, 337–38, 383–84, 403
Searl levity disc. *See* Searl effect generator
Serrano, Hector, 360
shock wave. *See* wave
Silvertooth experiment, 127
Skyvault, Project, 82, 190–252, 256, 260, 262, 264–65, 269, 282–85, 291, 293–94, 395, 444–50
  See also microwave
Skyvault vehicle,
  control of, 215, 238–42

  homodyne system, 226
  Micro-X system, 226, 232, 238
  speed of, 215
Smith, Wilbert, 271–72
soliton, 234–38, 241–42, 245–47, 251, 255–56, 261–62, 267, 291, 294, 307, 317–24, 329
  field induced, 106, 109, 238, 248, 251, 253–55
space
  reference frames, 9, 125, 127, 139, 177, 180, 188, 241, 308, 315, 371–72
  stationary and Euclidean, 11, 364
  See also warping of space-time
space travel,
  interplanetary, 95, 378, 397–98
  interstellar, 185–89
  superluminal, 185–89
Stanford Research Institute, 64, 112
Star Trek, 189, 193, 387
Stein, William, 369–70
Steinman, William, 270, 272, 279–80
Stevens, Wendelle, 270, 279–80
string theory, 116–17
subatomic particles, wave character, 118–20, 124
subquantum kinetics, 10–15, 50, 63–64, 85, 101, 117–41, 167, 170–73, 175–77, 179–85, 188–89, 203–6, 236, 289, 292, 323–31, 338, 346–47, 362, 364, 371–72
  basic concepts of, 117–25
  as new paradigm, 117, 404
  postulated assumptions, 11, 117–19
  prediction verifications, 117, 120–21, 172, 176, 181, 184–85, 236, 329–31
  See also ether
superluminal velocity. *See* velocity of light: faster than
system theory. *See* general system theory

Talbert, Ansel, 74–75, 77
Talley, Robert, 359–60
Tesla, Nikola, 2, 27, 32, 34, 63–64, 106, 116, 165–67, 169, 172, 175, 178–79, 181, 184, 203, 212–13, 246–51, 256, 289, 317–19, 321
Tesla waves, 32, 64, 166–67, 169, 172, 175, 178, 203, 212, 318
Tesla's magnifying transmitter, 166, 179, 181, 246–49, 251
thermodynamics,
  violation of First Law of, 17, 19, 95, 324
  violation of Second Law of, 229, 250, 324
time
  dilation, gravitational, 127, 141
  travel, 30, 35
Tom (anonymous informant), 191–93, 195, 215, 219, 224, 262, 444–46
Trimble, George, 72, 77
Truman, Harry, 272, 454
Turing wave. *See* wave
Turman, 22, 51, 88–89, 97, 104, 111, 349–57, 358, 365, 367, 369, 392, 405–9

UFOs, 47, 86, 240–42, 249, 257, 260–95, 300–302, 389, 395–96, 451–53
  rapid acceleration of, 45, 186–87, 215, 268–69
unified field theory, 10, 114, 116, 141, 418, 421–22, 429, 434–35

vacuum chamber tests, 48, 84–85, 89, 91
Valone, Tom, 311–12
Vassilatos, Gerry, 33–34, 40, 166, 212, 248
velocity of light, 120, 127, 174, 177, 185
  faster than, 172, 177–85, 188
  See also Silvertooth experiment, waves: superluminal
Ventura, Tim, 366–67
Veselago, Victor, 199
virtual charge density, 98, 130–34, 137–38, 174–75, 179, 324–25, 347
  creation of, 130–32
  gradient, 85, 98, 132, 137–38
virtual particle fluctuations, 324

Wardenclyffe tower, 246–47
warp factor scale, 189
warping of space-time, 11, 114, 124, 126–28, 140, 189, 293, 330, 363–64, 418–20
wave
  Coulomb, 116, 179
  ELF, 307, 317, 319–24
  shock, 44–45, 169–70, 179–82, 185, 387
  stationary, 105–6, 109, 119, 121, 234–35, 256, 291, 296, 305–6, 318–19
  Turing, 120–21, 124
  See also microwaves, phase conjugate, waves
waves
  electrogravitic, 62–64, 213
  electromagnetic, 32, 284
  etheron concentration, 167
  hertzian, 167, 172, 255
  K-, 25–26
  longitudinal scalar, 32, 63–65, 167, 172, 248, 317
  RC-Norton, 206–7, 339, 341–45
  RC-RC, 205–7, 340
  reaction-diffusion, 117, 119, 121, 140
  sinusoidal, 134–37, 174, 211
  superluminal, 172, 177–85
  See also gravity waves, sawtooth waves
Weber, Wilhelm, 330
Whitehall-Rand, 86
Williams, Marion, 147
Winterhaven, Project, 54–65, 68, 70, 80–81, 112, 147, 264, 416, 432–33
Wootan, Norman, 221
Worcester, Richard, 65–66
Wright-Patterson Air Force Base, 66–67, 81, 279

X-Prize, 398–99

Yost, Charles, 87, 109, 247

zero-point energy, 119, 255, 323–24

BOOKS OF RELATED INTEREST

Decoding the Message of the Pulsars
Intelligent Communication from the Galaxy
by Paul A. LaViolette, Ph.D.

Earth Under Fire
Humanity's Survival of the Ice Age
by Paul A. LaViolette, Ph.D.

Genesis of the Cosmos
The Ancient Science of Continuous Creation
by Paul A. LaViolette, Ph.D.

Quantum Shift in the Global Brain
How the New Scientific Reality Is Changing Us and Our World
by Ervin Laszlo

The Akashic Experience
Science and the Cosmic Memory Field
by Ervin Laszlo

Science and the Akashic Field
An Integral Theory of Everything
by Ervin Laszlo

Science and the Reenchantment of the Cosmos
The Rise of the Integral Vision of Reality
by Ervin Laszlo

Forbidden Science
From Ancient Technologies to Free Energy
Edited by J. Douglas Kenyon

Inner Traditions • Bear & Company
P.O. Box 388
Rochester, VT 05767
1-800-246-8648
www.InnerTraditions.com

Or contact your local bookseller

New Science

"One of the boldest and most exciting books on gravity control to be put forward in our times. Paul LaViolette is an outstanding scientist."

Eugene Podkletnov, Ph.D., Professor of Chemistry,
Tampere, Finland

"Kudos to Paul LaViolette for disclosing the important new science of electro-magneto-gravitic propulsion. For over fifty years, humanity has continued to use earth-destroying primitive fuels when an ocean of infinite energy teems all around us. It is time that the truth be known!"

Steven M. Greer, M.D., author of *Hidden Truth: Forbidden Knowledge*

In *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion*, physicist Paul LaViolette reveals the secret history of antigravity experimentation—from Nikola Tesla and T. Townsend Brown to the B-2 Advanced Technology Bomber. He discloses the existence of advanced gravity-control technologies, under secret military development for decades, that could revolutionize air travel using renewable energy. Included among the secret projects he reveals is the research of Project Skyvault to develop an aerospace propulsion system using intense beams of microwave energy similar to that used by the strange crafts seen flying over Area 51.

Using subquantum kinetics—the science behind antigravity technology—LaViolette reviews numerous field-propulsion devices and technologies that have thrust-to-power ratios thousands of times greater than that of a jet engine and whose effects are not explained by conventional physics and relativity theory. He then presents controversial evidence about the NASA cover-up in adopting these advanced technologies. He also details ongoing Russian research to duplicate John Searl's self-propelled levitating disc and shows how the results of the Podkletnov gravity beam experiment could be harnessed to produce an interstellar spacecraft.

PAUL A. LAVIOLETTE, PH.D., is president of the Starburst Foundation, an interdisciplinary research institute, and holds advanced degrees in systems science and physics. The author of *Genesis of the Cosmos, Earth Under Fire, Decoding the Message of the Pulsars,* and *Subquantum Kinetics,* he lives in New York.

BEAR & COMPANY
ROCHESTER, VERMONT
www.BearandCompanyBooks.com

Cover design by Jon Desautels
Cover illustrations courtesy of Corbis Images

SECRET, DON'T TELL

THE ENCYCLOPEDIA OF HYPNOTISM

CONFIDENTIAL
BLUEBIRD-EX

induction

Mind
Control

HELP

Research

by

Carla Emery

Illustrated by
Corey Smigliani

The Miracle

ONE NIGHT IN 1995, about two o'clock, I woke from deep sleep. A thought was nudging me: "Unplug the computer."

"Why?" I wondered. There were no sounds of electrical storm outside, and I had a surge protector. I was not in the habit of unplugging my computer except when I moved (which was frequently). No answering idea came. So I didn't know why.

I obeyed the thought anyway, fumbled my way out of bed in the darkness, walked across the few feet from bed to desk. Kneeling down, I groped under the desk for the thick cable that plugged into the upper wall socket. It was the main connector from whose source of power all my other significant computer connections branched off (printer, monitor, and the mechanical brain itself). My fingers found it, yanked it out of the socket. Then I felt my way back to bed and gratefully plunged down again, back under the warm covers, back into deep sleep.

As was my habit, I awoke early the next morning. I jumped out of bed, dressed, and sat before my computer. Time now was so precious, every day borrowed against my unknown quantity of remaining days. Every home I lived in was a borrowed home, a place to fire up that computer and make yet a little more progress on the book by day, a bed for my weary body at night. Because the only way I could finish this project was in hiding, and there was no way to know how long I could stay hidden.

I flipped the computer's ON switch, and the monitor's. They should have instantly whirred to life. But this morning neither one did. I flipped each back to the OFF position, then once more to ON. Still no sign of response.

Something was wrong.

I sat staring at the screen, baffled. Then I remembered that I had unplugged the computer in the middle of the night. I bent down and plugged it into the usual place. I flipped the switches to ON again. And again. They still didn't work. I tried plugging into the other, lower set of holes on that outlet. This time, when I flipped to ON, each component machine commenced the sudden chatty sequence of clicks and hums that told me all were now awake and running.

Now I was not nearly so interested in getting back to work on the book as in finding out why the upper socket hadn't worked. I crawled under the table on my hands and knees with a lamp to get a closer look.

And gasped in horror. A smudge of black defaced the outside of that entry way for two metal prongs of connector. Suddenly I understood. A terrible jolt of electrical power had silently blasted into that line some moment after my night waking. Its energy had melted down the wires and left that telltale black trace on the white plastic's socket's outside. If the cable had been plugged in, that zap would have also fried all the circuits of the hardware half of my writer's brain.

Ever since that night I have had peace of mind about whether writing this book is really God's will for me. After that, I knew for sure that all I had to do to complete this immense project was the necessary work. God would provide the necessary miracles.

Not by might, nor by power, but by my SPIRIT, saith the Lord of hosts.

Zechariah 4:6

Secret, Don’t Tell

The Encyclopedia of Hypnotism

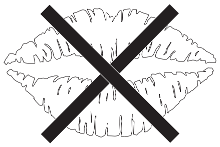

by Carla Emery

Illustrated by Corey Smigliani

I ask your help to make sure this book—and the information it contains—remains available to the public. You may reprint portions of it, including illustrations, as part of a review or discussion, or in the form of a newsletter or magazine article, so long as you include the book's title, author's name, and where it may be purchased—and make no text changes. All other rights reserved.

Secret, Don't Tell

Paperback ISBN: 0-9659930-3-5
Hard Cover ISBN: 0-9659930-9-4

Printed in the United States of America

Copyright © 1997, 1998 by Carla Emery

First Edition

Cover Design,
Book Design
& Layout:
Mark Boseck
Sunset Graphics
P.O. Box 4234
Pahrump, NV 89041

Distributed by
Acorn Hill Publishing,
Fulfillment Center:

Carla Emery
P.O. 118
Clare, MI 48617-0118

Phone/Fax: (517) 386-6420
E-mail: orders@hypnotism.org
Web: www.hypnotism.org

To personally contact
the author, write:

Carla Emery
3152 Parkway #13-221
Pigeon Forge, TN 37863

To my father, whose example of gentle strength and fierce devotion to principle, First showed me what a loving and just God must be like.

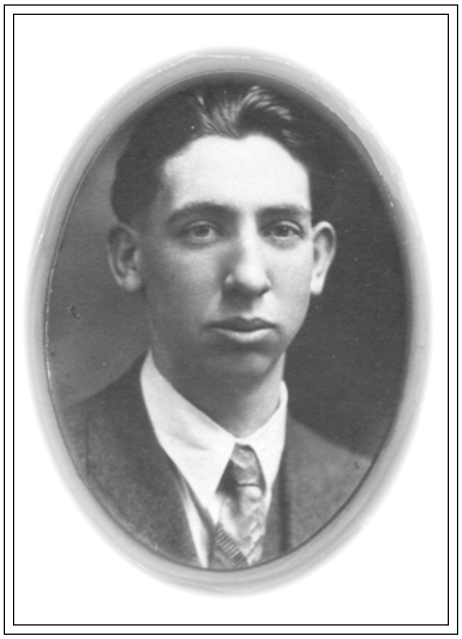

To my mother, who made me learn the rules for using words,
Then set me free to roam in joyful literacy.

This Book Is For You

Thank you for choosing to spend time with this book. I send my love and all I've learned. May every sleeper hear this call to wake and tear the wall of silence down!

Yes, you! It is not just hypnotic subjects[1] who sleep. Ignorance and apathy have lulled so many into somnolence. So this book is for general readers who want to be well informed. Knowing real facts about hypnosis will help you make wiser choices. It is also for those courageous individuals who are trained in hypnosis and who believe truth and justice are more important than professional solidarity, lobbying postures, income protection—even personal safety. And it is for legal specialists who may some day use this information in court to fight for justice.

Especially, this book is for all survivors of abusive hypnosis: past, present, and future. May every sleeper who yearns to wake and struggle toward freedom of mind find the courage to seek help in that waking and the blessing of achieving it.

Thanks

Thank you, God, for the task, for the opportunity to accomplish it, and for mercies and miracles along the way.

Thank you to every person who ever bought a book of mine. You encouraged my spirit and enabled me to be a full-time researcher and writer. Thank you to all who have read my writings or listened to my talks in person, on audio, or video. You saw my soul and I hope you became my friend.

Thank you to my many, and precious, personal friends. Over the years I've struggled to become able to talk, read, and write about this difficult subject, you listened with compassion. Every time you listened, you took into yourself a part of my heavy burden and it became lighter and more manageable for me. You supported me with firm arms, lovingly, even when you couldn't see where we were going. You critiqued, scolded, counseled, raged, comforted, tried your best to light up my dark places. I could never have done it without you.

---

[1] A "subject" is a person who is, or who ever, in the past, has been, hypnotized.

Thank you to all the librarians who helped me research, expecially those anonymous angels working in the Seattle Public Library interlibrary loan system. You faithfully searched out my hundred of requests for books and articles on hypnosis and other mind-control technologies—and never charged a cent. Thanks to Laurel Warg for special research assistance. You helped find answers to my many questions.

Thank you to previous authors who struggled to collect, record, and disseminate information about mind-control technologies and their abuses. Each writer added nuggets of precious knowledge to the public store and, thereby, made my work easier. Their books were carefully, even tediously, researched—not easy to write. Few sold well. Most passed quickly out of print and were soon forgotten, the author's hard work neither financially nor socially rewarded. They all battled against the attitude of "Secret, don't tell." I am so grateful (However, the inclusion of one or more quotes from any author should not be taken to mean that I agree with every statement by that person.)

Thank you to all the friends who put a roof over my head and set a place at the table for me, no questions asked, during the years I lived in hiding to complete this book. Thanks to all who nagged me to make backup copies until I did it, to you who fixed my ancient hardware or helped me shop for bargains in newer models, who explained software to me, or cleaned up my word processing messes. Thank you to the legion of volunteers who, over the past dozen years, have listened to or read versions of this manuscript and tried to help me overcome mental blocks against writing on this subject. Gradually, we transformed it from gibberish to sense.

Thank you to all who helped me accomplish the press-ready version of this manuscript. You did editing, layout, printing, binding, the web site, and distribution. Each of you courageously fulfilled a step of getting this book into the hands of the people. You know who you are and you know how humbly grateful I am. Without you this massive project could never have been completed.

I especially thank Nora O., another survivor of criminal hypnosis. She paid the heavy price of a heart attack for editing this book on a subject that always made her heart go too fast.

Thank you also to Corey Smigliani. She carefully read every word of this litany of human sin and tragedy, though it sometimes made her cry. Then she eloquenty communicated the mute pain of victims of abusive hypnosis in the many illustrations of this book.

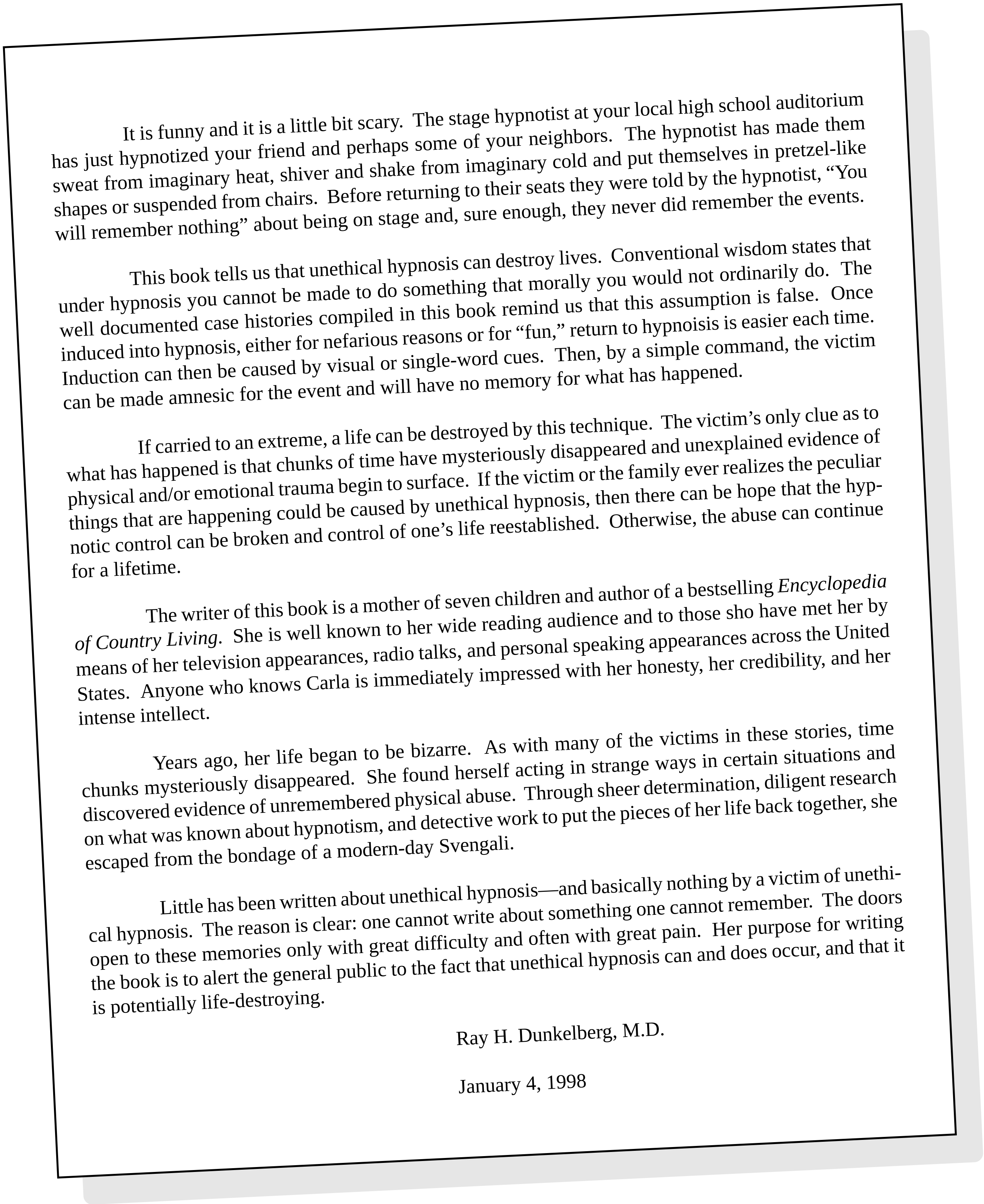

It is funny and it is a little bit scary. The stage hypnotist at your local high school auditorium has just hypnotized your friend and perhaps some of your neighbors. The hypnotist has made them sweat from imaginary heat, shiver and shake from imaginary cold and put themselves in pretzel-like shapes or suspended from chairs. Before returning to their seats they were told by the hypnotist, “You will remember nothing” about being on stage and, sure enough, they never did remember the events.

This book tells us that unethical hypnosis can destroy lives. Conventional wisdom states that under hypnosis you cannot be made to do something that morally you would not ordinarily do. The well documented case histories compiled in this book remind us that this assumption is false. Once induced into hypnosis, either for nefarious reasons or for “fun,” return to hypnoisis is easier each time. Induction can then be caused by visual or single-word cues. Then, by a simple command, the victim can be made amnesic for the event and will have no memory for what has happened.

If carried to an extreme, a life can be destroyed by this technique. The victim’s only clue as to what has happened is that chunks of time have mysteriously disappeared and unexplained evidence of physical and/or emotional trauma begin to surface. If the victim or the family ever realizes the peculiar things that are happening could be caused by unethical hypnosis, then there can be hope that the hypnotic control can be broken and control of one’s life reestablished. Otherwise, the abuse can continue for a lifetime.

The writer of this book is a mother of seven children and author of a bestselling *Encyclopedia of Country Living*. She is well known to her wide reading audience and to those sho have met her by means of her television appearances, radio talks, and personal speaking appearances across the United States. Anyone who knows Carla is immediately impressed with her honesty, her credibility, and her intense intellect.

Years ago, her life began to be bizarre. As with many of the victims in these stories, time chunks mysteriously disappeared. She found herself acting in strange ways in certain situations and discovered evidence of unremembered physical abuse. Through sheer determination, diligent research on what was known about hypnotism, and detective work to put the pieces of her life back together, she escaped from the bondage of a modern-day Svengali.

Little has been written about unethical hypnosis—and basically nothing by a victim of unethical hypnosis. The reason is clear: one cannot write about something one cannot remember. The doors open to these memories only with great difficulty and often with great pain. Her purpose for writing the book is to alert the general public to the fact that unethical hypnosis can and does occur, and that it is potentially life-destroying.

Ray H. Dunkelberg, M.D.

January 4, 1998

INTRODUCTION

For there is nothing hidden which will not be revealed, nor has anything been kept secret but that it should come to light. If anyone has ears to hear, let hem hear.
- Mark 4: 22-23 NKJV

One night in 1989 I dreamed I reached out and grabbed a hair from the tail of a running, disappearing donkey as it melted back into a tangled, dense, dark, convoluted forest. I managed to grab only one hair of the tail before it was gone. As in that dream, again and again, I have captured another single strand of this long, complex, and tragic tale, the history and technology of unethical hypnosis. Working with each single hair, I have struggled to create the form and essence of the original donkey.

It is hard to explain a subject so complicated, unfamiliar, and controversial. I wrote this book out of a fierce desire to restore and defend true facts about mind control technologies. This is the only book, or even article, in this field ever written by a subject. Up to now, only hypnotists, psychologists, psychiatrists, journalists, and historians wrote of these things—with rare quotes from clients, patients, or subjects. There is a big difference between how they view this data and how a subject does.

By quoting from many sources (often rare and difficult-to-find), I have tried to provide in this book an honest print dialogue on the previously stifled topic of mind-control technologies. Here, the good-guy hypnotists are heard warning of potential misuses of hypnosis. The mind-controllers talk to one another in assumed privacy, as in CIA memos. And voices of the mind-controlled cry out—wounded, confused, angry, pleading for help.

Defining Unethical Hypnosis

Old-time research hypnotists called unethical hypnosis "antisocial hypnosis." Since modern hypnotists deny that criminal hypnosis is possible, they do not have any name for it at all. Whatever the name, it causes a hypnotic subject to do something unethical, or to submit to something unethical.

"Isn't all hypnosis unethical?" my friend Jerry, a former hypnotist who "got religion" and swore off, asked as we stood talking about this in a convenience store one night.

"Most people do not understand how their brains work, and what 'trance' is and what 'hypnosis' is—and is not," I replied. "Trance management is used benevolently in many situations. Women have babies by LaMaze. Cancer and AIDS patients fight for their lives by visualizing more active white blood cells. If you go to a hospital emergency room with a migraine headache, you will probably be treated with a relaxation induction followed by visualization deepening and then given suggestions for pain relief."

"Four distinct negative elements come together in the most clearly evil usage of trance—and I call that c**riminal hypnosis.** Those four elements are **Deceit**, **amnesia**, **chronicity**, and **abuse**. The combination of those four is clearly unethical and ungodly. That definition of criminal hypnosis is sufficiently narrow that it should be acceptable to anyone with an ounce of moral sensitivity and no vested interest in criminal uses of trance. There have also been cases which involved fewer than all four elements, cases which were also obviously unethical, if not criminal. Any unethical trance manipulation fundamentally violates the Golden Rule: the hypnotist makes a subject do things, and live a life that the hypnotist would not choose for himself."

Jerry nodded agreement. Our conversation wandered to other topics.

History of Criminal Hypnosis

Criminal hypnosis cannot be studied in normal experiments, because the experiment would be unethical. Perpetrators do not write books about the crimes they committed. Part I of this book contains four major case histories of criminal hypnosis which have been researched either by psychiatrists or investigative journalists. Each of those case histories is a clear-cut, well-studied, detailed cases of hypnotic abuse-deceitful, amnesic, chronic, and damaging. Scattered throughout the book, many other significant cases involving criminal mind control are also described.

For example, "Z," in Germany of the 1920s, finally figured out what hit him and never quit trying to get the truth out. Mrs. E. suffered in Heidelberg until her husband called the cops and Dr. Mayer extablished the evidence which sent two predatory hypnotists to jail. A "guru" hypnotized his cellmate, Palle Hardwick, in a Danish prison, making him a puppet who would later rob banks and murder because of hypnotic conditioning. Palle's police psychiatrist, Dr. Reiter, solved the case and sent the criminal hypnotist to jail. Candy Jones, a popular model and World War II pinup girl, was trapped into becoming an unknowing guinea pig in CIA experiments on narcohypnosis, personality-splitting, and torture—until her unconscious revolted and began to serve truth and freedom instead.

The case histories in this book also illustrate the development of mind-control technologies over the past two-hundred and fifty years. The personal characteristics of an unethical hypnotist also evolved over those years. Low-class predators looking for easy profit by a super-scam are always around. The free-lance scientific researchers of 19th century Europe, however, have been joined by anonymous secret agency hirelings, or graduate school bad boys directed by covert organization-man MDs and PhDs. All have sought the unholy grail of absolute control in absolute secrecy for personal profit, or for whoever is paying.

Part II of this book provides a partial history of U.S. government research in mind-control technologies. I began to actively research the subject of the abuse of hypnosis and development of modern mind-control technologies a dozen years ago. At that time, I had no idea that the trail of clues which I was following would inexorably lead me to recognition of 1950s and 1960s CIA research into the making of unknowing hypnoprogrammed subjects whose personalities had been artificially split. The book became even more painfully personal when a subject of military brainwashing whom I interviewed warned me, "If they knew what you're trying to do, they wouldn't hesitate to kill you." Nor could I have imagined that my research would culminate in 1996 in a frightening encounter with a NSA agent who was using astonishing modern electronic applications of that ancient-rooted technology.

This book also covers the essential facts about important hypnotic phenomena, induction methods, and legal and therapy aspects of abusive hypnosis—how to identify and help a victim of this black art.

Secrecy and Denial

Several recent journalists writing about government research in the field of unethical hypnosis concluded that the human spirit is just too fine and noble ever to be forced into a role of a helplessly subjugated machine-being doing whatever an operator commands. I wish that was true, but it is not. The technology of criminal hypnosis was developed, does exist, and is tragically effective.

Suppression of the facts about unethical hypnosis has resulted in textbooks and manuals that contain myth as well as truth on the basics of hypnosis—and less and less mention of it at all. Almost all clinical and forensic specialists nowadays heatedly and sincerely deny the possibility of unethical hypnosis. Because texts and teachers all say this particular problem cannot exist perpetrators know their technology well but the good guys do not.

Public ignorance of this evil technology denies its victims sympathetic, knowledgeable help. It facilitates a criminal's collection and abuse of yet more victims. It is difficult for a victim of unethical hypnosis to overcome his artificial amnesia and remember. It is even harder for him when no shred of the remembering makes sense in terms of any familiar or accepted knowledge. Nothing in library, bookstore, or psychology texts will explain his fuzzy, fragmented, mysterious knowings. Friends and relatives find it all too easy to believe that he is imagining things. (Mental illness with delusions of hypnotic control does exist. Unfortunately, criminal hypnosis also exists. Therefore, each individual's situation must be studied on its own merits.) Because of the information blackout, to seek help, saying you are a victim of exploitative trance manipulation, is to challenge a nearly unbroken facade of sincere professional denial with your fragile, personal, unprovable truth.

Information Control Is Mind Control

True understanding of the present requires true records of the past. The disappearance of certain books, of certain information, impacts the collective mind of society the same way hypnotic forget-commands act on individuals. It represses, even extinguishes, information from the historical record. It disrupts the democratic decision-making process.

The essence of mind-control is information control. You are most free when you have the most complete access to information. "Secret, don't tell" is the beginning of enslavement, individual or social. "Classified" information makes and entire society amnesic. A lie in the "news" deceives an entire society. For either an individual or a large democratic society to best function, there must be complete and accurate information.

Repression of information about unethical hypnosis puts predation by the knowing upon the unknowing in an optimal position to grow. Sceptics provide the perfect cover for this nearly perfect crime. It is not a valid argument to say persons can only be forced under hypnosis into immoral behavior "if the subject imagines this to be possible." None of the case histories in this book involved a subject who imagined what was to happen to them could be possible. Playing ostrich encourages abuse of this technology to increase.

The good news is that clear self-knowledge of your vulnerability makes you less vulnerable. R. R. Blake, a 60s U.S. military brainwashing expert, wrote that a mind controller's "success...depends heavily on the ignorance of his victims." **(Blake in Biderman & Zimmer, p.9)** The purpose of this book is to replace ignorance with knowledge about both old and modern mind-control technologies. If you read this book, or listen to it on tape, you will be far less vulnerable than you were before doing so. Your unconscious (which is where the mind-control predator seeks to attack you) will be defended with a supply accurate information instead of being desarmed by myths. Reading this book will protect you. It will cause your unconscious to ignore subliminal sales pitches. It will reject covert induction attempts.

Contents

This Book Is For You vii
Thanks vii
INTRODUCTION x
  Defining Unethical Hypnosis x
  History of Criminal Hypnosis xi
  Secrecy and Denial xi
  Information Control Is Mind Control xii

Part I Case Histories of Criminal Hypnosis

Svengali:Unethical Stage Hypnosis in Literature and Life..... 29
  Svengali and Trilby 29
  Exploitation of Female Stage Mediums 31
  "Voodoo Death" on Stage 32
  Hypnotic Subject Killed on Stage 32
  Abusive Hypnosis in Literature 33
Case History: "Z" Kantor 34
  Missing Time 35
  Zebediah Kantor 35
  Adam Begins the Hypnosis 35
  Exploitation 36
  Arrests and Jail 38
  Karl du Prel 39
  Trial 39
  Dr. Kroener Learns the Truth 39
  Kroener's Book 40
  Post-War Events 40
Case History: Mrs. E. 41
  The Day It Began 42
  Suggested Sickness, Suggested Healing 43
  Murder Suggestions 44
  How Intense Can Hallucinated Pain Be? 44
  Suicide Suggestions 45
  Mr. Evan Goes to the Police 46
  Mayer Cracks the Case 46
  Word Associations 48
  Bergen's Assistant 49
  The Trial 49
  Mayer's Book 49
Case History: Palle Hardwick 50
  The Predator: Nielsen 50
  The Prey: Palle Hardwick 50

Nielsen the "Guru" 51
Social Isolation 53
Palle Out of Prison 55
Capture, Interrogation, Psychiatric Evaluation 60
Dr. Reiter Enters the Case 62
Palle, the Somnambulist 63
Classical Conditioning 64
Hypnotist: An "Artificially Induced Superego" 65
Somnambulist Palle Is Demonstrated 65
Regressions 67
Trial Preliminaries 68
Palle's Dreams 69
Trial and Appeals 75
Reiter's Book 80

Case History: Candy Jones 82

Childhood, Youth, and Career 82
CIA Recruits a Courier 85
Mind-Splitting Use for Imaginary Childhood Playmate 88
The Hypnosis Begins 89
Candy's Conditioning and Training 90
Telephone Induction 93
Torture and Shame Experiments 95
Measurable Degrees of Agony 97
Snake-in-the-Box Experiments 97
Candy Fights Back 99
John Hypnotizes Candy 101
Bain Writes Candy's Story 106
Unquenchable Truth 108

Part II A Partial History of U.S. Government Mind-Control. Research

U.S. Research on Hypnosis and Mind Control Begins 111

Donovan Organizes the OSS 111
The Personalities 111
Military Mind Control Research Begins 111

The Personalities 111

Lovell Hires On 112
Estabrooks Promotes the "Super-Spy" 113
Estabrooks, M. H. Erickson, and the FBI Experiment 115
Wiener Links Computer Research with Neuroscience 116
Watkins Experiments 117

Military Mind-Control Research Begins 117

Brainwashing Research Begins 119

Secret Agencies, Secret 120

    National Security Agency ... 120
  OSS Ends and CIA Begins ... 121
    CIA Mind-Control Research Projects ... 122
  National Security Agency ... 125
    A Mission to Eavesdrop ... 128
  New Branch of Psychology: “Military Psychology” ... 130
  Terminal Experiments ... 132
Mind-Control Research: Goals and Methods ... 132
    Where Terminal Research Was Done ... 134
    Cameron’s Patients ... 135
    Medical Ethics ... 136
  Mind-Control Research Goals ... 137
    Disguised Induction ... 137
    Hypnotic Memory Training ... 137
    Hypnocouriers ... 138
    Sealing ... 139
    1950s CIA Hypnogoals, and Probable Outcomes ... 139
  Personality Restructuring ... 142
    Research Personality Restructuring ... 143
    Hypno-conversions ... 143
Physical Methods of Psychiatry ... 145
    Electroshock ... 145
    Amnesia Research ... 146
    Hypnoprogramming Uses for Amnesia ... 146
  Narcohypnosis ... 147
    Hyperventilation ... 147
    Barbiturates ... 147
    Barbiturate Forces Induction? ... 149
    A Summary of Mind-control Uses of ... 150
    Barbiturate ... 150
    Shock to Increase Suggestibility ... 153
    Three Stages of ECT Amnesia ... 156
    Regressive Shock ... 157
    Shock to Cause “Calm” ... 157
The History of Deliberate Personality Splitting ... 158
    History of Research on Artificial Neurosis ... 158
    Focus Shifts to Child, Real or Suggested ... 158
    The “Dual I” ... 158
    CIA Researches Subconscious ... 160
    Isolation ... 160
  History of Research on Artificial Neurosis ... 160
    Pavlov Applies Freud ... 160
    Luria Researches Artificial Neurosis ... 161
    Artificial Neurosis Comes to the U.S. ... 162

- Freudian Hypnosis Researchers 163
- Focus Shifts to Child, Real or Suggested 163
  - Natural Development of Multiple 165
  - Personality 165
  - Hypnochild Given Artificial Neurosis 166

Operation Often: 168

- Long-Term Operator-Subject Relations 169
- Complete, Helpless Obedience 169
- Combined Technologies 169
- First Induction 170
- Induction, Disorientation, and Reorientation 170
  - Disorientation 171
  - Reorientation As Fish 171
  - Deprivation/Partial Restoration Technique 173
- Sex Conditioning: A Pseudo-Oedipal Stage 173
  - Masochism Suggestions 174
  - An Oedipal Experience 175
  - SEX = HYPNOSIS 178
  - SO ASHAMED: Guilt Training 178
  - DON'T REMEMBER: Amnesia Resolves Drive Conflict 179
  - Aversive Conditioning 182
- Obedience Training 182
  - Artificial Superego: Rules 182
- Electroconvulsive Shock 183
- Psychic Driving 184
  - Cue Statement: a Dynamic Implant 185
  - Cover Personality 186
  - Interlocking Amnesias 186
  - Shifting the Rapport 187

Information, Interviews, and Incidents 189

- Mind-to-Mind Trance Inductions 189
- John Marks Uncovers Secrets, Then Hides Them Again 189
  - Marks Files FOIA Request 190
  - Bumbling, Ineptitude, and Failure? 190
  - A Brief, Strange Phone Conversation 192
  - "Joe": A Case History 193
  - Joe Gives a Warning 195
  - R.J. Thinks They Killed His Author-Friend 195
- Of Patsies and Assassins 196
  - Lee Harvey Oswald 198
  - Jack Ruby 198
  - Sirhan Sirhan 199
  - Friend Tries a Hit 201
- MIND-TO-MIND TRANCE INDUCTIONS 201
  - A Pattern Emerges 203

History of a Psychic 203
Teacher from the Psychic Institute 207
Psychiatry Is No Longer a Joke 210
"A" Was Not Available 210
"B" Is for Background 210
"C" Is for Counterintelligence 211
"D" Is for Dangerous 211
Analysis of a Hit 213
Musings 220

Part III Trance Phenomena

Trance as a Personal Experience 225
Trance: The Subjective Experience 227
Light Trance, Deep Trance, or Hypnosis? 227
Natural Trance 228
"Hypnosis" Defined 230
Trance Training 231
Hypnosis? or Just Advertising? 232
Advertising to the Unconscious 233
Television and Children 234
Subliminals 235
A Subliminal Sales Event 236
Ten Important Hypnotic Phenomena 237
Suggestion Targets Automatic Obedience 238
Rapport As a Focus on the Hypnotist's Voice 238
1. Suggestion 238
2. Rapport 238
Direct vs. Indirect Suggestions 238
Rapport as Love 239
Rapport As Addiction 239
Rapport as Bonding 240
3. Automatism 240
Suggestion Intends Automatic Obedience 240
Simultaneous Automatic and Conscious Behavior 243
Conversion 243
Suggested Catalepsy 245
4) Catalepsy 245
Catalepsy to Test Trance Depth and to Deepen 246
Catalepsy vs. Catatonia 246
5) Hallucination 247
Normal and Abnormal Hallucinations 247
Positive Hallucination 249
Negative Hallucination 249
6. Anesthesia 249

Anesthesia Reveals Trance Depth 250
Anesthesia in Stage Demonstrations 250
Posthypnotic Action Revives Trance 251
7. Posthypnotic Suggestion 251
Posthypnotic Suggestion Lasts 251
Unremoved Suggestions Remain Active Posthypnotically 252
The Possible Variety of Posthypnotic Acts 253
Rationalization 253
The Cue 254
Sealing 255
Stages of Remembering 257
Independent, Parallel Memory Systems 257
NORMAL LONG-TERM MEMORY 257
Neural Patterns of Lowered Resistance 257
Diphasic Act of Remembering 258
Views on Memory Validity Vary 259
8) AMNESIA 259
Hypnotic Phenomena That Affect Memory 260
Dissociation Amnesia 261
Spontaneous Amnesias 261
Suggested Amnesia 262
Resistance to Remembering 263
Testing Amnesia 263
Artificial Multiple Personality 264
9) Regression 265
Three Types of Memory Regression 266
Regression Therapy 266
Regression: True or False? 267
Suggestibility Causes Confabulation 268
10) Confabulation 268
It Feels True 270
Toleration of Confabulation 270
"Incest Memories" 271

Part IV Induction Methods

Visit with a Stage Hypnotist 275
STAGE HYPNOSIS: "FAKERY"? 280
Readiness: the Pre-induction Stage 282
Disguised Inductions 284
Avoiding the H Word 284
The Actively Resisting Subject 287
Fast, and Forced, Inductions 287
Conditioned Induction 287
Forced Reinduction 289
SELF-HYPNOSIS 289

    - Length of Time in Trance ... 289
    - Bernheim and Coue Start It ... 290
    - Biofeedback ... 290
- Susceptibility ... 292
    - Screening for Susceptibility ... 292
    - An Anthropological View of Trance ... 292
    - Factors Associated with High ... 293
    - Induction of Retarded and Psychotic ... 296
    - Training for Susceptibility ... 296
    - Self-Defense for Susceptible Persons ... 296

Depth ... 297

    - Training to Go Deeper ... 297
- Depth Training ... 297
    - Training to Maintain a Specified Depth ... 298
    - Deepening Techniques ... 298
- Depth Scales ... 299
    - Dissociation ... 299
    - Number of Depth Stages ... 299
    - Self-Report Scale ... 300
    - Light ... 301
    - Medium ... 301
- Characteristics of Depth Stages ... 301
    - Deep (Somnambulist) ... 301
    - Waking Trance ... 302
    - “Catalepsy” vs. Somnambulism ... 302
    - Coma ... 303
    - Books on Trance Induction ... 304

The Physiology of Trance ... 305

- Suggestion Causes Physiologic Changes ... 305
    - Induction Physiology: The “Relaxation ... 306
- Brains Are Exciting! ... 307
    - Brain Anatomy ... 307
    - EEG ... 309
    - Can an EEG Detect Hypnosis? ... 309
    - The Hypnoid States: Alpha and Theta ... 310
    - Addictive Aspects of Trance ... 310
    - Hypnagogic States ... 311
    - Radiated Inductions ... 312
    - The Current of Injury Reverses Polarity ... 312
    - Neurons ... 313
    - Direct Currents ... 314
    - Options ... 315
    - Pavlov’s Four Induction Types ... 315
- Sensory Deprivation Experiments ... 317
    - Hypnotic Chambers ... 318

Randall N. Baer 319
Deprivation and Concentration Inductions 319
Massage, and Mesmeric “Passes” 320
Relaxation 320
Repetition 321
Type 1 Induction Machines 322
Recorded Inductions 322
Mind Blanking 323
Eyes Have a Role in Induction 324
Obedience Conditioning 324
Visualization Induction 327
Ideomotor Induction 327
Induction by Shift to Right Brain 327
Dream Inductions 328
Maternal and Paternal Induction Styles 328
Type 2 Induction: Excitation Overwhelms the Analyzer 329
Emotion Inductions 331
Fear 332
Sex Inductions 333
About the Tension Induction and Hyperalert Trances 333
Type 3 Induction: Brain Syndrome 334
Combining Induction Types 335
Type 4 Induction: Chemical, Electrical, and Biomagnetic 336
Induction Machines 337
The Magic Chair 338
Flashing Lights 338

Part V Legal & Therapy Issues in Criminal Hypnosis

Interview with a Hypnotist-Lawyer 341
U.S. Legal Cases Involving Hypnosis 344
“I Want to Stop Now” 344
More Cases of Criminal Hypnosis: Tried and Untried 346
The Case of Spurgeon Young 346
CRIMINAL HYPNOSIS: COURT CASES 346
Other Cases of Sexual Violation Under Hypnosis 347
Austin v. Barker 347
Louis v. State 348
The Sala Affair 348
People v. Leyra 348
State v. Levitt 349
Johnson v. State 349
Mirowitz v. State 349
J. Hartland’s Report 350
Regina v. Palmer 350

    - United States v. Springston 351
  - Criminal Hypnosis: Out-of-Court Cases 351
    - Newspaper Reports 352
    - Bad Outcomes of Hypnosis 352
    - Kline's Cases 353
    - You Must Be Dreaming 355
    - Why Not Seek Relief from Abusive Hypnosis by Legal Means? 356
- **Texts and Training in Forensic Hypnosis 357**
  - A Hypnotist's View of Forensics 357
    - National Guild of Hypnotists 358
    - Who Has the Ethics Problem? 358
    - Teitlebaum: Facts Stated 359
  - Manuals of Forensic Hypnosis 359
    - Scheflin and Opton: Facts Straddled 360
    - Udolf: Facts Distorted 361
    - Lawrence and Perry: Facts Denied 362
    - Meyers: Textbook Myths 363
    - Musings 364
  - Hypnosis of Witnesses 364
    - Chowchilla Case 365
    - Bryan 366
    - Spiegel 366
    - Kroger 366
    - Howell 366
    - Baranowski 367
- **Public Spokesmen on Hypnosis:Truth, Half-Truth, and Lies 368**
  - M. H. ERICKSON 369
    - The Erickson Foundation 369
    - Erickson on "Antisocial Hypnosis" 370
    - M. H. Erickson Video 373
    - Ericksonian Technology Applicable to Criminal Hypnosis 374
    - Erickson on Regression 375
  - T. X. BARBER 376
    - Medfield Money 377
    - Barberisms 377
  - THE SKEPTICS: SARBIN AND SPANOS 378
    - "The Skeptics" 379
    - Sarbin 379
    - The Not-So-Skeptical Inquirer 379
    - Spanos 379
  - Martin T. Orne 380
    - Orne on "Antisocial" Hypnosis 380
    - Guidelines for Investigative Hypnosis 381
    - Musings 382

Criminal Hypnosis Is Possible: Wells & Brenman, Salter & Bowers, & Young ... 383
- R. W. Wells ... 383
- Wells and Brenman ... 383
  - Margaret Brenman ... 384
  - Salter ... 386
- Salter and Bowers ... 386
  - Bowers ... 386
  - Antisocial Uses of Hypnosis ... 387
- Young ... 387
  - Techniques of Criminal Hypnosis ... 388
  - Conclusion ... 390

How to Identify a Victim of Unethical Hypnosis ... 391
- The Posthypnotic Trance ... 393
- Slander, Lies, and “Paranoia” ... 394
- 1. Report from Relatives or Other Observers ... 393
  - b) Context Clues ... 396
- 2. Self Report ... 396
  - c) Indignation Overload ... 397
  - d) Feeling in Control ... 397
  - e) Aging ... 398
  - a) Unusually Susceptible ... 398
- 3. Revealing Induction Phenomena ... 398
  - b) Depth-limited and Regression-blocked ... 398
  - c) Unusually Insusceptible ... 399
- 4. Evidence from Projective Testing ... 399
  - e) Extraordinary Reaction to Onset of Trance ... 399
  - “Draw Nothing” ... 400
  - Sealing May Affect Ability to See Illusion ... 400
  - Walk Through Your “Land” ... 400
- 5. Inhibition, Anxiety, or Somatic Reaction to the “H” Topic ... 401
  - a) Inhibition ... 402
  - b) Anxiety ... 402
  - c) Somatic Reaction ... 402
  - a) Blocking When Questioned ... 403
  - b) Emotional Numbing ... 403
- 6. Symptoms of Repression ... 403
  - c) Approach-Avoidance ... 403
  - d) Spontaneous Eruptions of Repressed Hypnotic Memory ... 403
  - e) Symptoms of Post-traumatic Stress ... 404
- 7. Social Isolation ... 405
- 8. Memories: Absent, Inadequate, Or Too Perfect ... 405
- 9. “Weakness” During, Fear of Control After ... 406

10. Sleep Symptoms and Dream Clues 406
Fear of Control 406
Survivor Dreams 406
Analyzing Dreams 407
Yen Lo, Military Hypnotist 410
The Manchurian Candidate: A Novel 410
Narcohypnotic Immersions and Conditioning 410
Afterthoughts 411
Help and Healing 412
Therapy Issues in Criminal Hypnosis 412
A HYPNOTIC PREDATOR IS IN THE PICTURE 413
To Flee, Or Not To Flee 414
The Easiest Cure 414
WHO CAN HELP? 414
Need to Tell 415
Time Issues in Therapy 416
Money 417
Therapy by an Amateur 417
Therapy by a Professional 417
When Christians Seek Deliverance from Abusive Hypnosis 418
METHOD TO OVERCOME AMNESIA: THE HEALING, FREEING IMAGE 419
Remembering Enables Forgetting 419
One Brain: Three Different Minds 420
Left Brain 420
Right Brain 420
Thinking With Images 421
The Image as a Hypnotherapy Tool 422
Emotion 422
Help for the Healing Process 423
Right-brained or Left-brained? 423
1) Persistent Questioning 424
Leading Questions 424
Possible Questions 424
2) Ideomotor Techniques 425
3) Hypnagogic Crossover 426
4) Association 426
5) Guessing 426
6) Recognition 426
7)Regression under Rehypnotization 427
Cognitive Dissonance 428
8) Narcohypnosis 428
Therapy Techniques 429
Hypnotherapy Class 429
Ethical Issues 430
Tebbetts Hypnotherapy Techniques 430
What John Did Not Understand About Candy's Therapy 432

    - Wolberg’s Five-step Therapy 433
    - Love and Respect 434
    - Most Effective Wording for Suggestions 435
    - When to Stop Therapy 436
    - Conclusion 436

Part VI Reference

- **A Brief History of Hypnosis 4000 BC to 1900 AD 439**
    - Ancient and Medieval Hypnosis 439
    - Nettesheim 440
  - Faith Healing Versus Scientific Theories 440
    - Paracelsus 440
    - Greatrakes and Bagnone 440
    - Maxwell 441
    - Gassner 441
  - Mesmer 441
    - Mesmer Testifies Against Gassner 441
    - Suggested Crisis 442
    - The Franklin Commission 443
    - Abbe Faria 445
    - Deleuze 445
  - Marquis De Puysegur 445
    - Puysegur and Race Discover Somnambulism 446
    - Puysegur Defines Somnambulist Phenomena 446
    - Puysegur Grapples with Moral Issues 446
    - Liebeault 447
  - Liebeault, Bernheim, and the “Nancy School” 447
    - Contributions of Puysegur 447
    - Bernheim 448
    - Beaunis 449
    - Liegeois 449
    - Binet and Fere 449
    - A Case of Suggested Theft 450
  - Charcot and the Salpetriere Group 451
    - Weird Science 451
    - Nancy vs. Salpetriere in Court 453
    - The Case of Pauline 453
    - Everybody Hypnotized Gabrielle 454
    - Tourette 455
    - Janet 455
    - Across the Channel: Braid and Bramwell 457
- **Pavlovian Vocabulary 457**
    - Complete Inhibition 457
    - Cortex Inhibition 457
    - Excitation-inhibition 457

Irradiation-Concentration ... 457
Hypnotic Phases ... 458
Transmarginal Stimulation ... 458
Ultraparadoxical Phase ... 459
Positive Induction ... 460
Negative Induction ... 460
Progressive Inhibition of Cortical Analyzers ... 460

Brainwashing: The Technology ... 461

Brainwashing's Goal Is Conversion ... 461
Methods of Brainwashing ... 462
Biderman's List of Deconditioning Factors ... 462
Stage One: Deconditioning ... 462
Three Stages of Brainwashing ... 462
Ultraparadoxical Stage ... 464
Lifton's Brainwashing Analysis ... 464
Stage Two: The Breaking Point ... 464
Submission to and Positive Identification with Enemy ... 464
Compulsives Resist the Best ... 465
Internalization of the Guilt for Breaking ... 465
Stage Three: Reconditioning ... 466
Grateful for the Cure ... 467
Musings ... 467

Behaviorism and Government Ally ... 468

History of Behaviorism ... 468
THE PHILOSOPHICAL POSTULATES OF BEHAVIORISM ... 469
1) Unlimited Research ... 469
2) Behavior Control ... 470
3) Government Control of Science ... 470
4) Government Control of Information ... 470
5) Government Patents Its Research and May Seize Civilian Research ... 471
Skinner on Behavior Control: The Rest of the Story ... 473
Musings on The Waco News ... 473

Glossary ... 475

Freudian Hypnosis Theory ... 484
16 Important Characteristics of Every Person's Unconscious ... 492

Bibliography ... 494

A Brief History of Information on Criminal Hypnosis ... 494
Public Sources of Hypnosis Information ... 494

Writings Cited in—Or Relevant to—This Book: A—Z ... 496

Relevant Chronology: 1493 to Present ... 517

Index ... 530

The BIG Question

Here is the big question:
Is it better to know, or not to know?
Is it better to be silent, or to speak out?

I chose the knowing and the speaking out.
I tried my best to do right.
I accept responsibility for all I have said
(and quoted).

God will judge.
May He have mercy on us all.

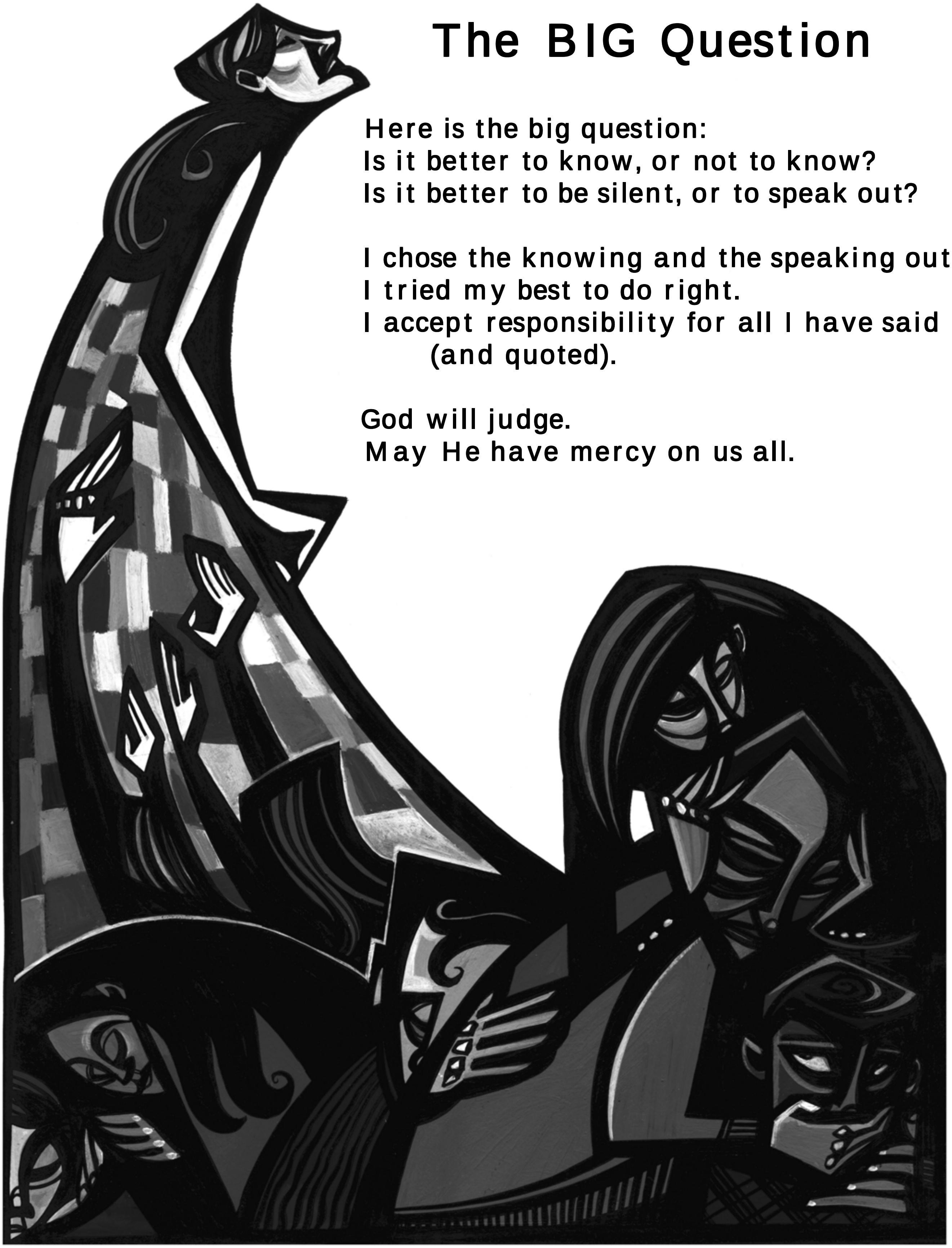

PART I

Case Histories of Criminal Hypnosis

Svengali: Unethical Stage Hypnosis in Literature and Life
Case History: "Z" Kantor
Case History: Mrs. E
Case History: Palle Hardwick
Case History: Candy Jones

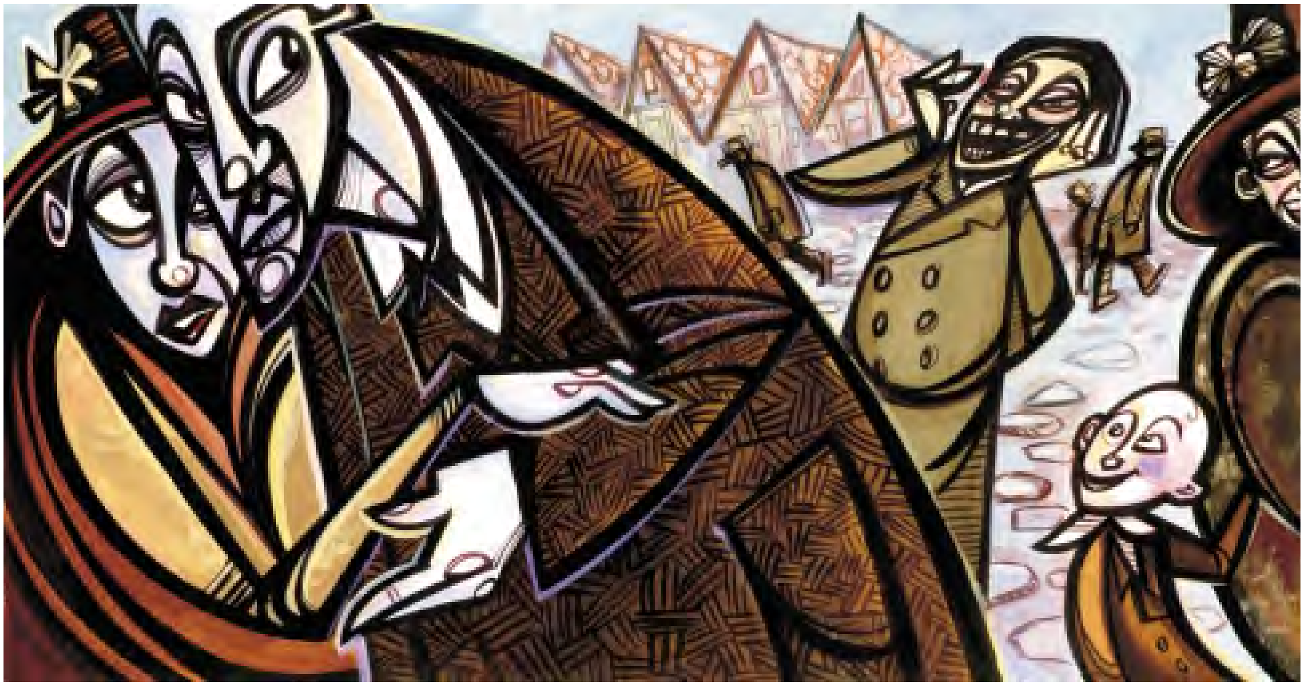

"Mr. Kantor, don't do anything stupid!"

Svengali: Unethical Stage Hypnosis in Literature and Life

☑

> ***The hypnotist can be erotically fascinated by the sight of his inanimate, plastic, unresisting subject. In this, hypnotists share a dream world with undertakers.***
>
> **- Robert Marks, p. 119**

An Englishman with a French name, George Du Maurier (1834-1896), wrote his last and most famous novel, *Trilby*, about hypnocontrol. It was the first "best seller."

Du Maurier got the idea for his tale of Svengali's cruel domination of his hapless hypnotic subject from viewing a demonstration of a subject's complete, amnesic **dissociation** in a hypnotist's office. In the late 19th century, both natural split personalities and artificial personality splitting (by suggested amnesia under hypnosis) were hot new items in psychological research.[1] The young female whose hypnotic submission was demonstrated to Du Maurier was an unknowing, chronic, hypnotic subject, an **artificially-split personality**.

The novelist watched her be hypnotized, made to obey commands under trance, then awakened. He saw her obedience to posthypnotic commands and her rationalization of them as being freely willed choices. He observed her total unawareness of the previous trance state. He realized the tragic potential for abuse of such a long-term, unknowing, hypnotic subject.

Svengali and Trilby

The novel, *Trilby*, published in 1894, contained some minor technical errors. Nevertheless, it introduced the basic, sordid facts of hypnotic exploitation to a mass readership.[2] By the vehicle of fiction, it presented important facts about abusive hypnosis. DuMaurier's tale of poor Trilby stimulated a much needed public awareness,

---

[1] Stevenson's tale of Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde was another literary representation of this type of research.

[2] Readers now need better technical explanations and plainer speaking on this subject than any novel can provide. They need facts, stated as facts, to combat the flood of lies, claimed to be truth.

and discussion, of unethical hypnosis. What Svengali did to Trilby has never quite been forgotten, despite ceaseless efforts by the hypnosis lobby to discredit the basic facts.

In the novel, Svengali, a middle-aged, unsuccessful musician, captured Trilby by a disguised induction, then hypno-trained her into a split personality (and a brilliant singer). Thereafter, she kept her puppetmaster, Svengali, living in luxury, supported by her concert performances. She always sang in an amnesic trance.[1]

He began Trilby's conditioning by persuading her to agree to a Mesmer-style induction by passes:

> *Svengali told her to sit down on the divan, and sat opposite to her, and bade her look him well in the white of the eyes.*
>
> *"Recartez-moi pien tans le planc tes yeaux."*
>
> *Then he made little passes and counterpasses*

---

[1] In reality, subjects cannot be so totally metamorphosed by hypnotic suggestions from talentless to skilled. It is not possible to make somebody who croaks like a frog into a concert-quality singer by means of hypnosis. Du Maurier wasn't all wrong, however. Any training is enhanced by adding a trance component. Trainers, from sports psychologists to motivational specialists, now use visualization-relaxation inductions to create trance and then give suggestions to their students.

> *on her forehead and temples and down her cheek and neck. Soon her eyes closed and her face grew placid.* **(Du Maurier, p. 69)**

In the novel, as with real-life subjects, Trilby did not understand how a seemingly harmless first submission to hypnosis can develop into a terrible longterm mind slavery. Svengali gradually transformed her from a proud, independent person into an obedient hypno-tool. Now she lived a cruel, secret life in addition to the "real" life that she consciously lived.

> *Conceited, derisive, and malicious, he alternately bullies and fawns in a harsh, croaking voice...Though Trilby is repelled at first by his greasy, dirty appearance and regards him as a spidery demon or incubus, she becomes completely his creature under his hypnosis....Gecko...[is] a young fiddler, small, swarthy, shabby, brown-eyed, and pock-marked; a nail-biter. Though he loves Trilby he helps Svengali train her...so that Svengali may exploit her.* **(Magill, *Masterplots*, p. 1158)**

At the story's end, foul Svengali dies. Trilby dies a few hours after. (DuMaurier's presumption that a mind-controlled victim cannot survive without the puppet master is false.) The novel concludes with Gecko, Svengali's assistant, trying to explain to Trilby's grieving former friends what happened to her—and how a hypnotic split personality functions:

> *Gecko sat and smoked and pondered for a while, and looked from one to the other. Then he pulled himself together with an effort, so to speak, and said, "Monsieur, she never went mad—not for one moment!...She had forgotten—voila tout!"*
>
> *"But hang it all, my friend, one doesn't forget such a..."*
>
> *"...I will tell you a secret. There were two Trilbys. There was the Trilby you knew...But all at once—pr-r-r-out! presto! augenblick!...with one wave of his hand over her—with one look of his eye—with a word—Svengali could turn her into the other Trilby, his Trilby, and make her do whatever he liked...you might have run a red-hot needle into her and she would not have felt it...*
>
> *"He had but to say 'Dors!' and she suddenly became an unconscious Trilby of marble, who could...think his thoughts and wish his wishes—and love him at his bidding with a strange unreal factitious love...When Svengali's Trilby was singing—or seemed to you as if she were singing—our Trilby was fast asleep...in fact, our Trilby was dead...and then, suddenly, our Trilby woke up and wondered what it was all about..."* **(Du Maurier, pp. 456-459)**

Trilby is now back in print (Everyman, 1994), an old fable that refuses to be forgotten. Svengali, the name that DuMaurier gave to Trilby's evil hypnotist, is the author's best known character. The mere word is resonant with sinister implications. A **Svengali** is "one who attempts, usually with evil intentions, to persuade or force another to do his bidding." **(Webster's Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary)**

Exploitation of Female Stage Mediums

The publication of DuMaurier's novel wound up a century of European hypno-abuse of genetically susceptible persons, especially young women. *Trilby* spotlighted the specific problem of hypnotic exploitation of women (and men) in the theater world.

The use of somnambulist (highly-conditioned) mediums on stage, or in **seances** serving smaller audiences, was common in that era. The **medium** tended to be young, female, and attractive. She was a highly susceptible hypnotic subject, of course—and not protected by strong and prosperous family connections.

The use of hypnotized women on stage for entertainment emerged from eighteenth century scientific demonstrations of trance and medical hypnosis. Scientific researchers regarded their subjects as means to an end, as useful objects whom they manipulated like laboratory rats to prove, or disprove, their competing hypotheses. Medical hypnotists who were followers of Charcot viewed their patients being treated by hypnosis as disgusting neurotics. Their mechanistic mind manipulations respected only the knowledge and will of the operator. Unethical hypnotists viewed subjects as possessions destined by inborn genetic susceptibility to be ruled by the power of any master who made the effort to acquire and manipulate them. Most hypnotists scorned their subjects for the very quality they worked hardest to develop in them: mindless obedience.

Du Maurier may also have read the autobiography of Charles Lafontaine before he wrote *Trilby*. Lafontaine failed as an actor, but then became wealthy as a stage hypnotist. The secret of his success on stage was not his own talent, but that of his female hypnotic subject. Lafontaine

> *...taught her a theatrical role that she then performed beautifully on the stage before a large audience and of which she could remember nothing in her waking state.* **(Ellenberger, *The Discovery of the Unconscious*, p. 157)**

He might have read Auguste Lassaigne's autobiography. Lassaigne was French, born in 1819. He was just a touring solo juggler the day he watched an 18-year-old girl named Prudence receive treatment from a magnetizer. Observing her somnambulist behavior, he became fascinated with the possibilities of hypnosis. Perhaps, he also suddenly envisioned a more prosperous professional future for himself. He courted and married Prudence. Thereafter, she traveled with Auguste, and his act became a stage show in which he hypnotized her.

Offstage, Auguste used hypnotic suggestions to sexually arouse Prudence, which produced "heavenly voluptuousness." His control, however, was imperfect; an angry Prudence could resist induction! *(Ibid.)*

In 1894, the same year that *Trilby* was published, a legal case involving a disreputable psychic healer, Ceslav Lubicz-Czynski, was reported. He had a chronically abused medium:

> *He made use above all of a method which nowadays is hardly ever applied and which was called "Psychic Transfer." He hypnotized a female employee who served him as a medium (and at the same time as a lover) and suggested to the patient sitting nearby that his pains and sufferings would be transferred to the medium.* **(Hammerschlag, p. 35)**

In deep trance, the young woman was caused to experience other people's ailments, daily acquiring her mental version of their pains and suffering. How cruel! The sexual exploitation was also objectionable, for Czynski was at that time pursuing a rich aristocratic client, the Baroness Hedwig von Zedlitz, with the hope of marriage to her. He conducted his "courtship" during his hypnotic services to her. That is what caused the legal case (not his psychological and sexual abuse of the medium), for the Baroness said "Yes" under hypnosis—and her relatives reported the matter to the police.

"Voodoo Death" on Stage

In 1894, another hypnotist, Franz Neukomm, also made European news. Ella first was hypnotized by two doctors who were hired by a "relative" to treat her for a "nervous ailment." Their power of suggestion temporarily suppressed the symptoms, but then she got even worse. Neukomm happened to be passing through, and her relative took Ella to be mesmerized by him. He also achieved an effective cure of her problem. Neukomm then saw opportunity knocking. He convinced Ella's relative that the somnambulist girl might again relapse in the absence of his hypnotic influence and therefore should remain in his care. He would look after her without charge. Her relative then abandoned Ella to Neukomm. Thereafter, she traveled with the hypnotist as his medium. Neukomm was "effective," to say the least. One day, he suggested to Ella that a cold needle, which he placed on her hand, was red-hot. Its touch then produced a real burn on her hand (a known somnambulist phenomenon).

During each show, Neukomm invited an ailing volunteer from the audience up on stage. Then he would hypnotize Ella and give her a suggestion to place herself in the mind of the patient and provide information about his or her state of health. The night that Ella died, Neukomm, to increase the audience's sense of drama, had changed his hypnotic instructions in a small, but significant way. He told Ella, "Your soul will leave your body in order to enter that of the patient."

Ella showed an uncharacteristic, strong resistance to that hypnotic suggestion. She tried to deny it.

Imperious master Neukomm deepened her trance,and firmly repeated the "leave your body" command. Once more, she resisted. He further deepened the trance and repeated the command again.

Ella Salamon died. The postmortem stated that heart failure, caused by Neukomm's hypnotic suggestion, was the probable cause of her death. Neukomm was charged with manslaughter and found guilty. **(Schrenck-Notzing, 1902)** Ella's death was similar to what anthropologists call "voodoo" death, death by suggestion.[1]

Hypnotic Subject Killed on Stage

In another case of that era, a stage hypnotist named Flint was performing in Switzerland, when his program went terribly wrong:

> *One of his acts was to lead on to the stage his wife, who was his partner in the show, and bring her to a state of rigidity. He would then place a heavy piece of rock on her stomach and invite volunteers from the audience to come and smash the rock with a hammer. One night a member of the audience misjudged his blow with the hammer and, instead of smashing the rock, he hit the performer's wife and caused internal injuries from which she died shortly afterwards.* **(Magonet, pp. 19-20)**

---

[1] Numerous cases of death by suggestion are recorded in G. Frazer's classic, ***The Golden Bough*** **(N.Y.: Macmillan, 1931, p. 204, etc.)**. More deaths caused by suggestion, "belief," are described in W. B. Cannon's article ***"'Voodoo' Death"*** **(American Anthropologist XLIV (1942), 169-81. Reprinted, abridged, in *Reader in Comparative Religion An Anthropological Approach*, W.A. Lessa and E. Z. Vogt (eds.). N.Y.: Harper & Row, 1965.)**

Abusive Hypnosis in Literature

When novelists write about unethical hypnosis, they deal with issues of dominance versus submission, the predator's technical expertise versus the subject's ignorance, and betrayal versus trustworthiness. In storyland, however, the mind-controlling villain never enjoys a final victory.

In the late 1800s, the subject of hypnosis dominated in French nonfiction publishing. Some years, every book published in France was about hypnosis. French fiction writers also wrote about it. Alexander Dumas, author of *The Three Musketeers*, wrote six novels which involved mesmerism, "The Marie Antoinette Series." De Maupassant's last short story, "Le Horla," featured a man who realizes he is a victim of predatory hypnosis. E.T.A. Hoffman was another European writer who was fascinated by hypnosis. His fiction is saturated with every aspect of it. He viewed deep trance as true penetration of the hypnotist's mind into the subject's mind. Hoffman said that hypnotism

> *...can be either good or evil. The evil magnetizer is a kind of moral vampire who destroys his subject...Therefore, the magnetic relationship can be either good (friendly, fatherly), or evil (demoniacal).* **(quoted in Ellenberger, p. 160)**

Thomas Mann's 1931 story, "Mario and the Magician," sees hypnotism as an overthrowing of a person's normal duality and balance of surrender and control tendencies:

> *...the capacity for self-surrender,...for becoming a tool, for the most...utter self-abnegation, was but the reverse side of that other power to will and to command. Commanding and obeying formed together one single principle, one indissoluble unity.*

Mann ended that story by letting the hypnotist's insulted subject hit back. Dr. George Estabrooks observed a similar incident in real life. He...

> *...attended a stage exhibition and arrived late. He was horrified to see a respectable acquaintance stripped to his underwear with a broom handle for a flute gamboling around the stage under the delusion that he was a Greek faun. Highly gratified also to see the faun knock the hypnotist flat the moment the trance was removed.* **(Young, in LeCron, p. 385)**

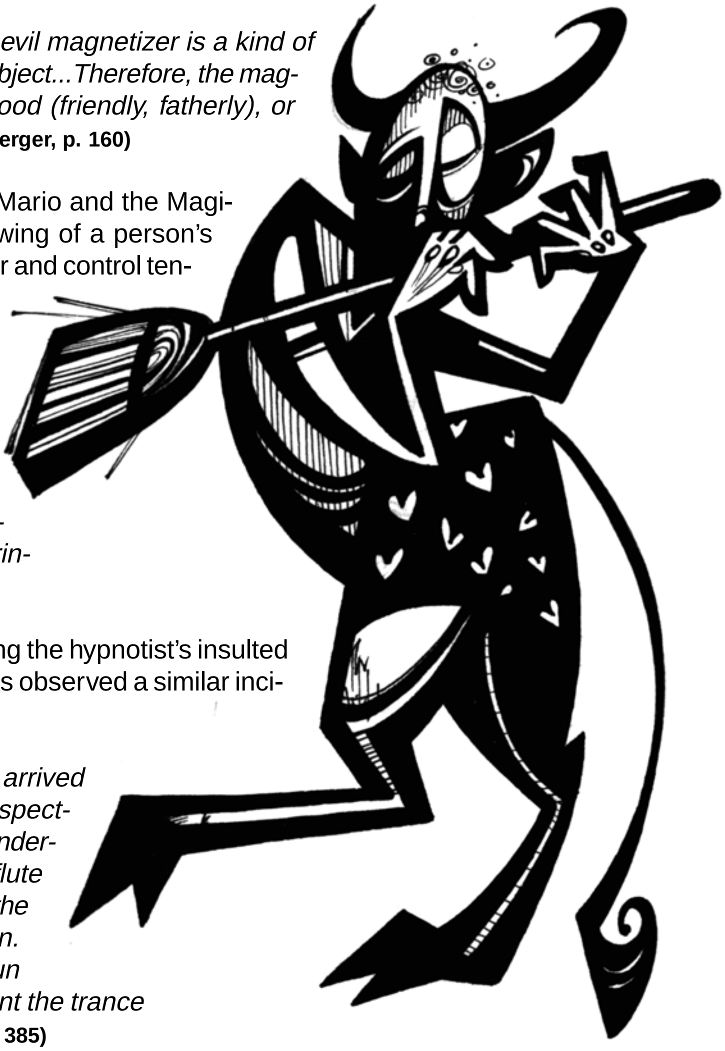

Case History: “Z” Kantor

No controllable force for good ever existed that was not used, at times, for evil, simply because man has a free will.
- Melvin Powers’ Foreword to Hammerschlag’s *Hypnotism and Crime*, 1957 edition, p. 5)

“Zebediah” Kantor sat in jail, in shock, his life in tatters (his left elbow also in fragments), trying to comprehend why he had “confessed.”[1] A jail guard, killing time on the other side of the bars, was chatting with the depressed former school teacher. The guard was talking about Zebediah’s friend and next-door-neighbor, Adam. He said Adam had told police that he robbed Zebediah’s house and set it on fire because Zebediah had caused him to do so using hypnosis. Zebediah. puzzled., insisted to the guard that he had never hypnotized anybody in his life; He did not know how and never had any interest in learning. The officer left to tend to duties.

Zebediah sat and thought about **hypnosis**. He remembered that one night the hands of the big old clock in his living room had suddenly, inexplicably leaped forward several hours. He recalled the times he had met with Adam and let him empty his wallet—and afterwards he couldn’t understand why he had allowed it. He remembered other mysterious events. As Zebediah reviewed the past seven years of his life, inserting hypnosis as the missing piece, all those formerly inexplicable incidents made sense. Now

---

[1] Researchers don’t know “Z” Kantor’s real first name, nor do they know any name for the man who victimized him by hypnosis. They have called Mr. Kantor “Z,” and his hypnotist, “A”—as in “A” hypnotized “Z.” I choose to call them “Zebediah” Kantor and “Adam”—as in Adam hypnotized Zebediah.

Zebediah knew: Adam had victimized him using hypnosis!

Zebediah Kantor

At college, Zebediah had been a conscientious student. He enjoyed sports and was popular with the other students. After graduation, he took a teaching job in the German province of Thuringia. He looked forward to a secure, comfortable, respectable life as their village school teacher. As was the custom, he lived in the school house.

It was the best time of his life. He liked his job; his students liked their teacher; the community respected him. He gave piano lessons on the side and soon fell in love with one of his students, the station master’s young daughter. She cared for him also, and they became engaged. In the meantime, he had inherited a little house and a general-goods store, which provided additional income from house rental and sale of merchandise in the store. He handled his money well and invested spare income in stock.

Being sensible, practical, happy, friendly, and in love, Zebediah seemed to have a good life ahead. He made one big mistake, however, that destroyed his life. The mistake was his friendship with Adam.

Adam Begins the Hypnosis

Adam was Zebediah’s next-door neighbor. Adam was a 38-year-old groundskeeper for an adjacent estate. He had no formal education, no wealth, and no morals. He was “a primitive, vulgar criminal type from a low social level” **(Reiter,**

Missing Time

Two early European research hypnotists considered the missing time of amnesic hypnotic subjects and said:

> *The subject is unable to measure the length of time she has slept, and if she attempts to do so she makes the gravest mistakes...The hypnotic subject has no land-marks by which to measure the void which this sleep produces...* **(Binet and Fere, *Animal Magnetism*, p. 365**

Years later, an experimental subject in the U.S., like Zebediah, figured out he was missing time. He also reasoned from his discovered circumstances something of what had been done to him during that missing time:

> *When I sat down for you to hypnotize me I pulled out my watch and it said 6 o’clock. I started to put it back, and then I took a second look at it and it said 10 o’clock. But before I could figure that out, I noticed that it was dark outside, my coat and tie were off, my sleeves rolled up, and I was just about exhausted, and it really was 10 o’clock...I could lose consciousness like that, and it’s happened lots of times...* **(In M.H. Erickson, 1938, “*A Study of Clinical and Experimental Findings on Hypnotic Deafness*: I,” p. 144)**

1958, p. 60). He had been in prison several times, and he was on his second marriage.[1] Unknown to Zebediah, one of Adam's areas of criminal expertise was hypnotism.

Adam started out with small acts of seeming kindness. He began to drop by Zebediah's house, on some pretext or other, almost every evening. The bachelor schoolteacher always welcomed him, treated him like a prince, and shared the best he had (wine, cigars, liqueurs). Zebediah lived alone, but he kept his home neat, and he enjoyed company. It helped to pass the time after work in that era before radio, television, and tapes. Zebediah was also a gentleman, and, as such, did his best to enjoy and to respond politely to the older man's conversation.

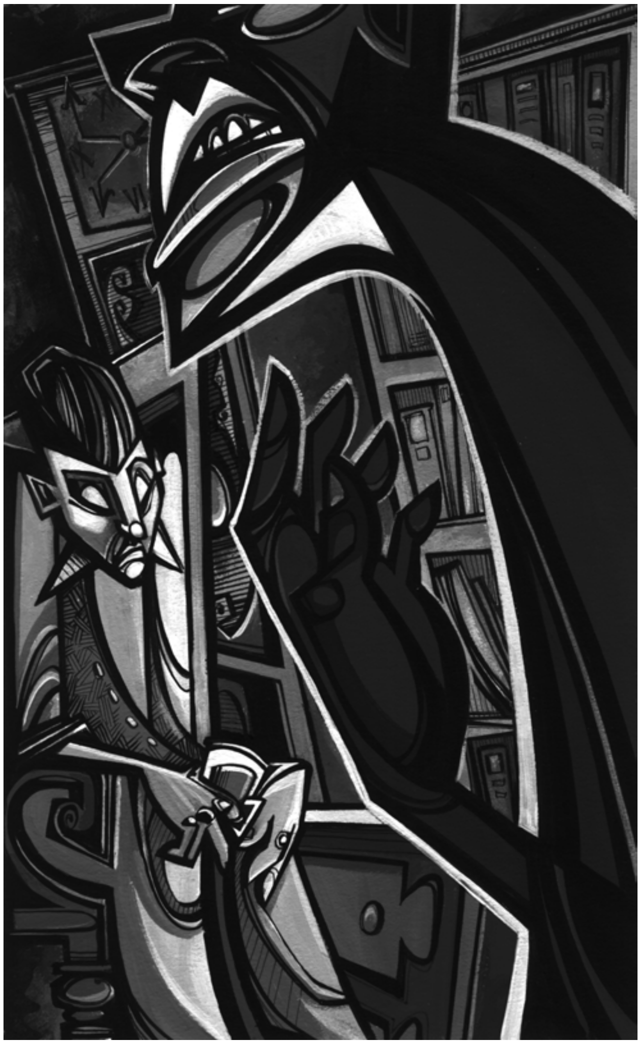

To Zebediah, Adam seemed only to be a rather long-winded and boring speaker who droned for hours on obscure and confusing subjects. The teacher, weary after his hard day's work, and sated with dinner and wine, tended to fall asleep during his guest's monotonous, meandering monologues.

Adam noted Zebediah's developing habit of falling asleep while he talked. Every time Zebediah fell asleep in his presence, he began to murmur specific **suggestions** designed to further transform the teacher's normal sleep into an operator-managed hypnotic trance. Adam had combined two methods of **disguised induction**. One was his typical boring, confusing monologue, a **conversational induction**, which would literally put Zebediah to sleep. The other technique took advantage of the natural light hypnotic state all people pass through when in transition from waking to sleeping, a **sleep induction**.

Zebediah happened to have inborn **susceptibility** to suggestion. His unconscious responded to Adam's persistence and coaxing and it became ever more trained and more vulnerable to further training. Adam suggested that Zebediah would have amnesia for all time under hypnosis. Each time that Adam hypnotized Zebediah, he reinforced the amnesia by repeating that suggestion.

When he tired of giving suggestions, Adam would go home, leaving Zebediah asleep, and/or hypnotized, in his chair. Zebediah would wake up later, alone in the house, with no idea that anything unusual had happened.

After the fourth successful sleep induction, Adam gave Zebediah a posthypnotic suggestion that he would wake up the next time his clock struck the hour. Zebediah did that. He did not remember falling "asleep." He had no awareness of missing time. It seemed to him as if the hands of the clock had simply leaped ahead several hours. He saw that Adam had gone home.

Zebediah now was Adam's unknowing hypnotic subject. He was a trained somnambulist. Adam no longer had to go to the trouble to bore him to sleep. Now Adam could instantly drop Zebediah into an amnesic trance, at any time, simply by presenting a predetermined cue.

Exploitation

Adam's hypnotic exploitation of Zebediah began in 1921. It continued for 12 years, until 1933. When Adam first exploited his secret power over Zebediah, he started with small things. If Zebediah noticed, it probably did not seem very strange to him to be giving, or "lending," money, wine, cigars, and so forth, to his neighbor. Adam never paid Zebediah back. The hypnotist demanded ever harder and crueler amounts of money from his subject. Once Adam got his hook into Zebediah's unconscious, he extracted every possible dollar from him.

---

[1] It astonished class-conscious Europeans when they later heard that such a common man had made an obedient hypnotic subject out of a gentleman. The European upper classes had eagerly experimented with hypnosis for over a century before this case happened. The upper class had hypnotized whoever was handy: mental patients, medical patients, hysterical young females, peasants on the estate, ignorant people from the village, troops in the brigade. Some entrepreneurs trained talented subjects to be "mediums" for profitable "medical" consultations, or to give parlor somnambulist performances, called "seances," or even public stage shows. After the same scenario of "low class" predator/higher-class victim repeated in the cases of Mrs. E. and Palle, the idea did not seem so preposterous.

Adam also made Zebediah shoot himself using **posthypnotic suggestion**. The hypnotic instruction was: if Zebediah heard Adam say "Herr Kantor: Machen Sie keine Dummheiten!" ("Mr. Kantor, don't do anything stupid!"), then Zebediah was to rush home, get his gun, and shoot himself in the left hand. Ten days later, Adam actually spoke that cue sentence to Zebediah.

It was a Sunday. Zebediah was happily strolling through the town streets, with his sweetheart on his arm, when he happened to encounter Adam. We all have cues we respond to. In Adam's case, perhaps it was the sight of Zebediah being respectable, successful in his occupation, and happily in love—despite all Adam's predations so far. The sight led to the thought, and the thought is parent of the deed. In a joking tone, Adam called out to Zebediah as they passed, "Herr Kantor: Machen Sie keine Dummheiten!"

When Zebediah heard the cue phrase, his response was automatic. The reflexive level of his mind began to carry out the sequence of tasks as specified (go home immediately, get the gun, and shoot himself in the left hand). Zebediah told his fiancee that he needed to change clothes (a **rationalization**). He then he rushed home, leaving her standing, bewildered and alone, in the middle of the road.

When he got home, however, Zebediah did not change clothes, because getting home cued the next step in his unconscious instructions. Instead, he searched for his revolver, found it, and took it out of the drawer. Then "the gun went off and he was hit in the left elbow joint." **(Reiter, p. 61)** The bullet shattered his elbow. From then on, Zebediah's left arm was crippled.[1]

After the incident, Zebediah again rationalized. He said that his hand cramped, and that the cramp had caused him to release the safety and pull the trigger. He believed it was just an accident.

Zebediah's unconscious, however, knew the whole story. It was becoming overburdened with painful experiences repressed by Adam's amnesia suggestions. As a result, Zebediah "became nervous and irritable and carried out his work absentmindedly and automatically." **(Reiter, 1958, p. 62)** All the teachers had to take—and pass—a standard examination given by school authorities every year in order to keep their job. In the spring of 1925, Zebediah, unable to concentrate, failed the test. He now had no teaching job. He could not do manual work because of his crippled left arm.

The next time Adam visited Zebediah, he suggested that Zebediah sell his home (Zebediah still owned the house and store) and share the money with him. Adam made that suggestion to Zebediah without first hypnotizing him.

Zebediah said "No." He was not consciously aware of his hypnotic victimization by Adam, but he sensed intuitively that there was a problem. He felt controlled by him, and had tried, unsuccessfully, to end their relationship.

Again without hypnotizing Zebediah, Adam next proposed that they should together set fire to his house and collect the insurance money. Despite his financial problems, Zebediah also indignantly rejected this proposal.

Adam then hypnotized Zebediah. He compelled him to draw a house plan to be used as proof to the insurance company of the house's interior design and its valuable contents. Later, Adam set Zebediah's house on fire. Zebediah did not know that Adam had done that. When Zebediah received his insurance payment, Adam used his hypnocontrol to acquire the larger part of the money from Zebediah. He let Zebediah have just enough cash to repair his scorched house.

It is the nature of things that greed is never satisfied. Adam hypnotized Zebediah and caused him to write a household inventory which included non-existant possessions and which greatly over-estimated the values of his real household goods. Then Adam gave Zebediah a posthypnotic suggestion to take a vacation trip.

When Zebediah returned, he discovered that his house had been burglarized and some belongings stolen. He reported the thefts to the police. He gave the false inventory to the insurance company. He had no conscious knowledge that the information was false. He did not know that Adam had committed the thefts. The insurance company paid and Adam ended up with the money.

---

[1] In a Norwegian case, the hypnotist suggested his subject's arm had no feeling, then instructed him to shoot himself in that arm. The subject did so. The goal was insurance money. **(Polgar, *The Story of a Hypnotist*, 1951)**

Adam decided to repeat the scam. He again hypnotized Zebediah, caused him to write an inflated, false inventory of his household possessions., and gave a posthypnotic suggestion for an out-of-town trip. While Zebediah was gone, Adam again broke into his house. Zebediah came back, saw what had happened, and again called the police and the insurance company. The insurance company again paid out a large sum. Again the money ended up in Adam's pocket.

Arrests and Jail

It came to the attention of the police that Adam had much unexplained prosperity—and goods stolen from Zebediah's house in his house. The police accused Adam of the two burglaries of Zebediah's house, arrested him, scheduled a court date, and then turned him loose until the trial. Adam then went to Zebediah's house, hypnotized him, and gave a very complex posthypnotic suggestion.

The cue for enactment would be Adam saying, "Herr Kantor! It's no use any longer—tell them everything!" Upon hearing that cue, Zebediah was to "confess" that he, himself, had thought up all the criminal schemes. He was instructed to declare that he was the guilty one. And he should be the one on trial. Zebediah was to explain that his criminal idea was caused by money problems and that he had persuaded Adam to help him carry out his plans.

Karl du Prel

Karl du Prel was a German hypnosis researcher. In an 1889 book (***Das hypnotische Verbrechen und seine Entdeckung***), he predicted that the developing technology of hypnosis might create a new and very dangerous type of criminal. He said it, in such a case, it might be very hard to find evidence because of hypnotically-suggested amnesia, suggested false memories, and/or hypnotic manipulation of the testimony of witnesses. He said that suggested amnesia for events under hypnosis would be the biggest problem for criminal investigators. Du Prel also worried about the possibility of sealing suggestions, which would prevent easy rehypnotization of the victim.

Du Prel felt that the growth of hypnotic technology required a parallel increase in knowledgeability on the part of lawyers and jurists. He suggested that police authorities should be prepared to use hypnotism to detect crimes involving hypnotism. He urged that the public be warned that anybody who allows himself to be hypnotized takes a chance. He wanted to prohibit hypnotism, except with clear safeguards.[1]

Adam figured that, after Zebediah confessed to setting up the whole thing, and to tempting and entangling his poor, ignorant neighbor with money to commit the burglary—the law would come down hard on Zebediah and lightly on him.

Mr. Kantor (amnesic, as usual, for the hypnosis), knowing nothing of the self-incriminating posthypnotic suggestions awaiting cue in his unconscious, went to visit his fiancee's parents. They told him of Adam's arrest and court date. Zebediah believed the police were mistaken. He told his hosts that he hoped the real thief would soon be identified and arrested.

While Zebediah was visiting with his in-laws-to-be, Adam returned to the police station. There he announced that he had decided to confess the whole story. He said they were right: he committed the burglary—but only because Herr Kantor had persuaded him to do it. The police then found and arrested Zebediah. They said that his accomplice, Adam, had fully confessed. Zebediah, now with a felony charge against him, was astonished. He indignantly protested to the police that he was innocent.

The police then brought Adam into the room to confront Zebediah, as Adam (having experience with the judicial system) knew they would. Adam then...

...confidently, almost triumphantly, brought out the cue. It caused a lightning change in Zebediah, as if he received a shock. He collapsed completely and confessed, exactly as he had been ordered to do under hypnosis. **(Reiter, 1958, p. 62).**

Zebediah was held in jail. Adam was allowed to return home. Before he left, Adam thought of a way to make Zebediah look even worse and himself look even better. He told police that Zebediah had been hypnotizing him and had used hypnosis to make him commit the crimes.

After the jail guard passed that information on to Zebediah, he finally recognized what his problem really was. From his jail cell, Zebediah then wrote letter after letter to both the authorities and to his defense attorney. He passionately begged for a careful investigation of his case in the light of his new understanding. He obtained an examination by a medical doctor with some training in hypnosis, hoping that the doctor would offer the court proof of his victimization by Adam, but the doctor refused to get involved.

---

[1] In "Hypnosis in Criminology" **(Brit. J. Med. Hypn., Summer 1950, 1, 17)**, Alexander Cannon surveyed some European writings on unethical hypnosis and cited Karl du Prel at length.

Trial

Zebediah went bravely to his trial, secure in the knowledge that he was innocent. He now knew what had really happened and he felt that he could explain it. He trusted that the truth would be enough.

But the judge did not believe him. Even his own defense lawyer did not find Zebediah’s version of the facts credible.

> *It was unthinkable that a primitive and uncultivated type of person such as Adam would be able to hypnotize an intelligent, educated man such as he and, what is more, turn him into a slave and automaton for his own criminal ends.* **(Reiter, 1958, p. 63).**

Furthermore, even if it were true that Adam had hypnotized Zebediah, everybody in that courtroom believed in the “**dogma of moral integrity.**” According to that legal concept, it was the subject’s fault if he obeyed a self-injurious or criminal suggestion given by a hypnotisto because only an evil person obeys an evil suggestion. Not all hypnotists believed the dogma of moral integrity, but no disbelievers testified at Zebediah’s trial.

Losing on the dogma issue, Zebediah then pinned his hopes on his legal right to confront the accuser. He demanded a face-to-face confrontation with Adam in court. He was sure that he, now knowing the truth, could force Adam to tell the truth to the court.

He did not realize that conscious awareness of being a hypnotic subject and conscious profound determination to never again be hypnotized are easily overpowered by unconscious hypnotic conditioning. He did not know that a conditioned hypnotic subject—who has realized his situation—tends to respond to the hypnotist’s presence with fear, guilt, and confusion.

> *...though his existence was at stake, as soon as Adam was brought in, he was so influenced by his presence that his manner became uncertain and confused, and when he saw Adam’s mocking look and self-confident bearing he began to stammer. Nobody believed what he said.* **(Reiter, 1958, p. 63)**

Adam whined to the judge during his testimony that he was just “an ordinary fellow.” He said that he had no idea what hypnotism was, but that he had been persuaded, by the cunning and deceit use of it by Zebediah, to assist in those criminal projects. The court rejected Zebediah’s statement and believed Adam’s.

Zebediah did not give up. He proved that the insurance money from both burglaries ended up in Adam’s pocket. The court, however, still refused to believe his statements about hypnosis. At the trial’s end, Zebediah was sentenced to thirteen months in jail. Adam got eight months, and everybody’s sympathy, for being the ignorant, honest man who was deceived and taken advantage of by Zebediah, using hypnosis.

While in jail, Adam pursued a new money-making scheme. He attempted to blackmail Zebediah’s family, threatening to tell police about Zebediah’s house being torched and the old insurance swindle based on that (which had not come up during the previous trial)—unless they paid him hush money.

Confident of their son’s innocence, however, Zebediah’s family refused to pay Adam. Instead, they found a better lawyer to defend Zebediah. His new lawyer took Zebediah’s version of the case history more seriously than the previous one had. He obtained a ruling from the judge that Zebediah and Adam should not again be in the courtroom at the same time. He asked the judge to have both imprisoned men “put under mental observation.”

Showing their prejudices, the police kept Adam in a regular facility, but sent Zebediah to a mental hospital for the evaluation. The hospital’s director had no experience with hypnotism, and he firmly believed that a hypnotic subject could not be made to do anything against his will. The psychiatrist stated that Zebediah was “weakwilled and vacillating, a psychopath and a neurotic who had no understandable motive for his criminal actions.”[1] He interviewed Adam in jail and described him as “purposeful, energetic, and resourceful, a typically brutal and callous blackmailer...” **(Reiter, 1958, p. 63)**

Dr. Kroener Learns the Truth

The lawyer could not get Zebediah out of jail. After his client served the time and was released, the attorney sent Zebediah to be evaluated by the skilled psychiatrist and experienced hypnotist, Dr. Kroener. In the beginning, the doctor assumed that Zebediah was lying. However, as he worked with Zebediah, session after session, under hypnosis, during two months of 1927, the doctor gradually changed his mind. He concluded that Zebediah’s crimes actually had been caused by Adam’s hypnotic suggestions.

Perhaps Kroener also implanted a suggestion that blocked Adam from ever hypnotizing Zebediah again. For, either by that blocking, or by total avoidance of Adam, Zebediah managed to never be victimized by his neighbor again. The doctor's belief in Zebediah's story must have been a precious comfort in this difficult era of that unfortunate man's life. For, his fiance had rejected him and the school district would not hire anybody with a criminal record, even if he could pass their test.

But Zebediah's lawyer and Dr. Kroener were working on a plan which they hoped would exonerate the school teacher. In 1929, Kroener hypnotized Zebediah again. This time, seven witnesses and a stenographer (who recorded 126 typed pages) were present. One of the witnesses was Professor Arthur Kronfeld, another noted German hypnosis expert. Both Kroener and Kronfeld wrote reports stating their professional opinion, that Zebediah had been victimized by Adam using hypnosis. The lawyer enclosed those reports when he applied to reopen the case.

The court of appeal agreed that new facts had come out, but refused to allow a full-process appeal. They based that verdict entirely on the dogma of moral integrity: if Adam could cause Zebediah, by means of hypnosis, to do immoral things, it proved that Zebediah was an immoral person.

Kroener's Book

Dr. Kroener wrote a book about Zebediah's case, seeking to present the case to the higher court of public opinion. His manuscript would have been the first modern psychiatric study of a victim of unethical hypnosis, and the first recorded memory recovery, by rehypnotization, of a survivor of unethical hypnosis. However, nobody read it because, immediately after its printing, the German government banned it. Whoever put up the substantial money for his publishing venture lost it all.

In 1936, another case of unethical hypnosis went on trial in Germany. That time, two hypnotists went to jail, not their victim. After the trial, Dr. Kroener contacted Dr. Ludwig Mayer, the psychiatrist who had managed to discover the truth and cause the hypnotists to be the losers in court. Dr. Kroener told Dr. Mayer about Zebediah's case. When Mayer wrote a book about his client (published in 1937), he included in it a summary of Zebediah's case history.

Post-War Events

When Germany sank into the dark maelstrom of Naziism. Dr. Kroener, a Jew, emigrated. When he returned, 17 years later in 1952, he searched for Zebediah and his lawyer. He learned that both still lived, and contacted them. Zebediah soon traveled to Berlin (it was the summer school holiday) to, once again, be hypnotized by Dr. Kroener. Zebediah was now age 56. He long since had been working again as a school teacher. His current job was in a large city school in the province of Franconia. His behavior record, since release from jail in 1928, was spotless.

Zebediah had 15 more sessions with Kroener—all tape-recorded, transcribed, and annotated. Although Zebediah's conscious memory of those old happenings was now fuzzy, but under hypnosis he remembered it all clearly. His story, remembered twenty years later, was unchanged.

During the Christmas holiday that year, Kroener visited Zebediah in Franconia. The psychiatrist asked Zebediah's permission to publish the book about him. Zebediah hesitated. He knew that publicity could compromise his job, yet he deeply yearned for the truth to be known and his innocence to be, at last, firmly established. He said, "Yes." A few days later, somebody circulated printed matter referring to the old charges against Zebediah. The old teacher immediately was fired from his job.

Then Dr. Kroener heard of another successful prosecution (in the Danish court system) of a hypnotist who had given a subject criminal suggestions. The court psychiatrist was an old friend of his, Dr. Reiter . Reiter told Kroener that he was working on a book about his case. It would be published in the United States as well as Europe. Aging and unwell, Dr. Kroener delivered his manuscript, tape recordings, and notes on Zebediah's case to Reiter.

Dr. Reiter added Zebediah's case to his book about Palle Hardwick. The detailed synopses of Zebediah's case history made by Dr. Mayer and Dr. Reiter provide the only remaining public record of Zebediah's sufferings and the struggle of good Dr. Kroener to make public the truth about his case.

Case History: Mrs. E.

> **[There are]...*five cases in which rape took place in hypnotic sleep and under the influence of suggestion* [and]... *a theft on the large scale which was effected solely by the instrumentality of suggestion. A person who gave himself out as a doctor and hypnotised an ailing woman was able to suggest her handing over to him a fairly large sum of money on which he was able to keep his clutches.***
>
> **- Janet, *Psychological Healing*, p. 312**

In the past, writers have always called her "Mrs. E." I call her "Anna Evan." (It isn't her real name; her real name is unknown.) When this all began, in the 1920s in Germany, Anna was not yet married to Mr. Evan. She had only just met that nice young man. Mr. Evan had a steady job as a minor government official, and had begun to court her. The criminal hypnotist's name was Franz Walter,[1] but she knew him as "Walter Bergen" and other aliases.

Later, under rehypnotization by a police psychiatrist, Dr. Mayer, Anna relived her years of hypnotic victimization. One day, she tried to explain to Dr. Mayer how life as a conditioned, chronic hypnotic subject had felt:

> *"I'm no longer the same person as before. Something different controls me. I don't want to do something, but I do it. Or I want to do something, and yet I don't do it...in the end I thought of nothing more than doing what Walter wanted. If I obeyed I always felt more at ease. Within me I was never free—there was always something oppressing me....I can't struggle against these pressures...the pressure vanishes when I obey the commands of the inner voice."* **(Mrs. E., quoted in Hammerschlag, *Hypnotism and Crime,* pp. 120-121)**

When it was all over, she had been the unknowing hypnotic subject of Bergen for seven years, the wife of Mr. Evan for four. During those seven years, Bergen extorted thousands of dollars from her, used her sexually, sold her services as a prostitute, compelled her to attempt murder on her husband six times, and caused her to attempt suicide several times.

---

1. The two German cases of Zebediah and Mrs. E. overlap in time. It is quite possible "A" and Bergen knew each other.

The Day It Began

Anna Evan, a naive farmer's daughter, age 17, was riding a train to the city on the day it all began. She intended to find a doctor there who would help her with a minor stomach problem. She traveled alone. Perhaps it was her first solo trip, granted because she was a sensible girl with good values. It can be assumed that she felt rather proud and adult to be traveling alone to find a doctor and get treatment.

Anna found an empty train compartment, entered, shut the door behind her, and seated herself on one of its pair of facing seats. Shortly after, a man opened the door and seated himself opposite her without so much as a "Do you mind?" He introduced himself, "Bergen." She nodded and turned away.

Nothing that I have read about her tells how she looked, so I must imagine that. I think she was almost beautiful, but her nose was a little too broad for perfect features. I think she had sky-blue eyes and thick brown hair, worn long and loose under her demure traveling hat.

Anna wanted to watch the lovely German countryside roll by outside the window, but Bergen pursued her with questions in a lively and friendly manner. She was reluctant to talk to a strange man, but felt obliged by her polite upbringing to answer all his direct questions.

Where are you going?" he asked. She told him. "What is your purpose?" he asked. She explained her intent to find a doctor and be treated for her stomach ailment. It might be assumed that she felt rather proud, and adult, to be traveling alone to seek a doctor and receive treatment.

"How fortunate we have met," the man said. "I noticed, the moment I came into your compartment, that you are ill. For, you see, I am a nature healer, a homeopath, Dr. Walter Bergen. My office is in Karlsruhe-Daxlanden. And yours is just the kind of illness that I can treat very well."

When the train stopped to take on coal and water at Graben, Dr. Bergen invited Anna to join him in the station for a cup of coffee. She demurred, for he frightened her somewhat. He insisted, however, jovially picking up her traveling bag and carrying it out the compartment door. She stood up and followed her suitcase.

He picked a table for them in the railway station restaurant and ordered coffee for Anna. He made small talk while they waited for the beverage. The waiter brought Anna's cup of coffee and walked away. Dr. Bergen suddenly seized her hand and stared into her eyes. He was channeling so much mental command through that gaze that, after a moment, Anna felt as if she no longer had a will of her own. She felt so strange and giddy.[1]

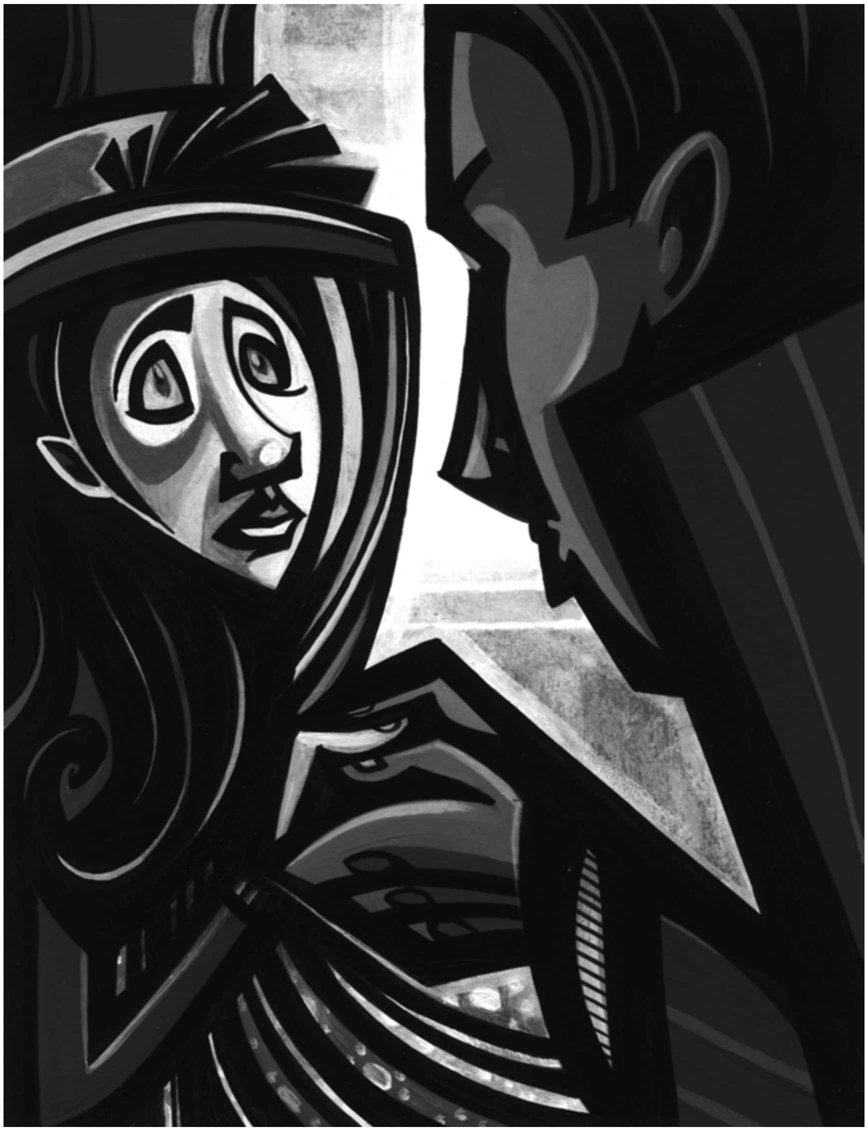

---

[1] For more on this type of induction, see Mind-to-Mind Inductions in Part II.

Bergen's shocking hand-grab, plus stare, technique may never before have elicited such a quick and profound induction response as Anna's. He probably was secretly delighted and amazed at his success. Actually, he had merely lucked onto a genetic somnambulist, 10 to 25% of the population.

Bergen had accomplished a first induction. He probably now considered the delicious long-term possibilities of controlling this young woman through trance and did not let this opportunity escape. It can be assumed that he next pushed her deeper into trance, deep as he could. Then he suggested posthypnotic amnesia, and a posthypnotic re-induction cue: "Whenever I say 'Loxitov,' you will immediately return to this deep trance state, and you will never remember what happens in this state." Perhaps he brought her back to a waking state, then re-inducted using his cue—several times. That training would have strengthened her conditioning, for each re-induction usually causes a subject to go deeper.

He gave further posthypnotic instructions, telling her to obey either verbal or written orders from him. He would use this means to cause her to come back to future meetings with him. He also gave hypnotic suggestions that her stomach would no longer trouble her. He collected the money that she had brought to pay a doctor.

Bergen was not a real doctor. "Bergen" was not his real name. He was a genuine con artist. He could have been reading books on hypnosis for years. Europe of that era had hypnosis texts aplenty. A scholar named Max Dessoir had published a *Bibliography of Modern Hypnotism* listing the numerous books on hypnosis that were published after Mesmer first focused public attention on this subject. Many books were in French, but some were in German. In 1888, Dessoir listed 801 titles. By 1890, there were 1183. Many authors discussed the possibility of abuse of hypnotic subjects, even crime caused by suggestions under hypnosis.[1]

Over the next seven years, Bergen often instructed his unknowing hypnotic subject to meet him at the train station of Karlsruhe, or Heidelberg. He would then hypnotize her, lead her where he chose, do with her as he wanted. He gave Anna suggestions to act in a way that would appear normal to other persons (**waking hypnosis**), although she was hypnotized and amnesic during those visits.

Suggested Sickness, Suggested Healing

The "doctor" angle was very profitable for Bergen. (It is possible to cause paralysis, muscle cramps, and every sort of pain by hypnotic suggestion.[2] Over and over, he gave Anna psychosomatic ailments. Some of them were very painful. If paid what he demanded, he then cured her by releasing the previous hypnotic suggestion that had made her "sick." One time, he instructed her, "All the fingers of your left hand, except the little finger, will become stiff. You cannot move them any more." **(Hammerschlag, p. 107)**

Bergen's suggestion was cloaked by amnesia from Anna's conscious mind. So, after he was done with her, Anna did not know why she could not unclench her left hand, except for its little finger. No matter how much effort she exerted, it remained shut tight. That painful, inconvenient condition continued for months—until her family gave her the money to pay Bergen's past bill and hire him to renew her "treatment."

When she, at last, was able to pay, Bergen pretended to massage her hand until she could open it. (And he counteracted his previous suggestion that had caused the clenching.) Once her hand could open again, she saw that the growing fingernails had bruised and inflamed her palm. Bergen then splinted and bandaged her hand. After removing the splint, her hand still felt so tired that she could hardly use it.

Mr. Evan remembered that incident too. He told Dr. Mayer, "For...about 8 to 10 weeks, my wife's hand had a cramp. It was impossible to bend her fingers. Another time, for 14 days, her hand was so firmly locked that the inner side was all bruised as a result." **(Mayer, p. 182)** Anna learned to bring Dr. Bergen every dollar she could get. If she did not bring money, he would subject her, by posthypnotic suggestion, to dreadful new pains.

In trance, by Dr. Ludwig Mayer, Anna later exclaimed, "Now I know where all those pains came from!...Sometimes I didn't bring money—because I couldn't get any from my parents or my husband. Then Walter would say, "You will get so ill that they will prefer to pay!" After that, I got the most awful pains, which only vanished when he took them away by magnetic stroking of me.” **(Mayer, p. 131)**

---

[1] Moll's 1889 German classic, *Hypnotism*, lists ways hypnosis might be used unethically. The list includes: assault on the hypnotized person, especially seduction; posthypnotic suggestion to create a physical problem such as paralysis; causing suicide attempts by posthypnotic suggestion; acquiring property illegally by posthypnotic suggestion to sign a will or other legal paper; causing false testimony in court by suggested hallucinations or suggested falsification of memory; causing subject by hypnotic or posthypnotic suggestion to harm someone else; causing subject to harm himself. That covers most of what Bergen did to Mrs. E.—and what Adam did to Zebediah.

[2] Of the possibility of causing physical problems by hypnotic suggestion, a hypnotist wrote:

> *It is practicable to suggest any sort of hallucination of vision such as color perception, form or object perception, mist sight, double sight, or even absolute blindness...Complete deafness can be suggested, in which case it is necessary to take measures for an adequate signal to remove it, and one may then fire a pistol immediately behind the subject without his reacting.* **(Reiter, "The Influence of Hypnosis on Somatic Fields of Function," in LeCron (ed), *Experimental Hypnosis*, p. 243)**

Bergen also used Anna sexually—free for himself, and in paid service to other men. He also shared his mental access to her with friends. If one of them spoke Bergen’s posthypnotically designated **cue word** to her, **rapport** temporarily **shifted** from Bergen to whoever had spoken that word. Bergen’s friend then could use all the powers over her that Bergen had developed. One of Bergen’s friends began frequently to participate in her hypnotic exploitation.

Murder Suggestions

It took a long time, but Mr. Evan finally began to voice suspicion of Anna’s “doctor.” The husband had acquired private evidence that her “treatment” included sexual encounters, of which his wife seemed completely unaware. When Walter Bergen realized that Mr. Evan was changing from a convenient supplier of cash to pay Anna’s doctor bills into an active threat, the “healer” began to give Anna hypnotic suggestions to murder her husband.

How Intense Can Hallucinated Pain Be?

Raymond Wells did an experiment on creating imaginary pain in a hypnotic subject. He pressed a fifty-cent piece onto a deeply entranced subject’s bare arm. Wells told his subject that the place where he was pressing the metal coin was going to feel first warm, then hot—hot as if the coin he was pressing there was a branding iron. He said the sensation of extreme heat in that place would then remain steady for the next 24 hours.

Wells then brought the student out of hypnosis. He told him to write down his experiences during the next 24 hours, and to report to him the next day. The subject wrote:

> *2:26—Red, slightly swollen center. (He was apparently having a visual hallucination or illusion of redness and swelling on his arm—Wells)...Center of circle so hot it will not bear touching. Cannot raise left arm above head without increased pain. Pain interferes with holding card to write...Blister more distinct now—at 2.35...Pain severe. Hot. Writhing. So hot, consciousness almost blank. Will not stand this longer than this evening. Can do nothing but try to relieve pain. Hot, sizzling...2.40—Am crying with pain. Can write no more.* **(Wells, “*The Hypnotic Treatment of the Major Symptoms of Hysteria*,” *J. Psychol.*, 17:269, 1944.)**

At that point, the suffering hypnotic subject stopped writing and started looking for the Professor. When he found him, Wells rehypnotized the student and removed the pain-causing mental instructions. The pain stopped immediately and completely. Wells later wrote:

> *I am convinced that he would not have suffered more if there had been an actual hot iron pressed against his forearm all the time.* **(*Ibid.*)**

Bergen tried six times; he failed six times. The failures were partly blind luck, or the grace of God, but also due partly to Anna’s unconscious resistance to this most heinous suggestion. She described all six murder attempts later, under Dr. Mayer’s rehypnotizations, in the presence of her astonished husband.

First, Bergen told her (under hypnosis as always), that she would go to a drug store and buy a poisonous chemical used for furniture cleaning. She would then add that poison to Mr. Evan’s food. When she got home, however, Anna was gripped by such a mysterious, extreme excitement that her concerned husband would not allow her to leave the house to go shopping. Since Bergen’s hypnotic instructions had been specifically cued for enactment that particular evening, putting them off until the next day disempowered the urge.

Bergen’s second murder scenario was a shooting. He instructed the hypnotized woman, “When you get home, you will take the Browning out of the desk and hide it in a more convenient place. When your husband is sleeping, get the gun, draw the safety catch, and pull the upper barrel back. Hold the pistol at his temple and press the trigger. Then place the weapon in his hand, so that it will seem that he had committed suicide.”

Bergen’s hypnotic command sequence had omitted an important detail. Anna did take the gun out of the desk. She did hide it in a handy place. While her husband slept, she did get the gun. She released the safety catch as instructed, and she pulled the upper barrel back. She held the pistol to husband’s temple and then pressed the trigger. But the gun was not loaded, so her husband was unharmed!

The next time Mrs. Evan was compelled to meet Bergen, she told him her husband was very upset and was seriously considering going to the police. Walter then came up with a third plan: “Give him mushrooms,” he ordered. “Cook harmless ones for yourself in one pan. Cook poisonous ones for him in a different pan—the type with a red skin.”

Consciously ignorant of the murder plan, Anna cooked the two kinds of mushrooms. She served herself the nonpoisonous ones. She gave her husband the poisonous ones. He swallowed two spoonfuls, then left the rest on his plate because of their disgusting taste. Two hours later, the poison took effect: stomach pains, diarrhea, and vomiting. Anna had no idea what why her husband was sick. She gave him some mint tea. After a while, he felt better.

The next murder “failure”definitely was caused by Anna’s unconscious fighting of Bergen commands. The hypnotist had given her a packet of white powder and instructions to slip the powder into her husband’s coffee. He warned her that the powder would cause a little bubbling in the coffee, and that she should take precautions so Mr. Evan would not notice the effervescing. As she was traveling home, Anna took the powder out to look at it. Then she “accidentally” spilled most of it. That evening, obeying the posthypnotic compulsion, she put the remainder in his coffee. Even that little caused him severe stomach pain. He went to the doctor for treatment.

When Mayer hypnotized Anna, Mr. Evan was present every session. He was so astonished, during her hypnotic regressions and recall of these murder attempts, that he could hardly stay calm. He confirmed the history of each incident (at last fully explained) for Dr. Mayer. He had, indeed, been sick after the two teaspoons of mushrooms, and after that cup of coffee.

Bergen tried again, switching to a different, even more deadly, method of hypnotic manipulation. He changed from direct murder instructions to an indirect, deceitful presentation of those instructions. He now gave Anna instructions under hypnosis which he claimed would keep her husband safe.

Mr. Evan rode a motorcycle. It had a hand brake and a foot brake. Under deep hypnosis, Bergen told Anna to cut the hand brake’s cable because that would force Mr. Evan to use the foot brake which was “less dangerous.” He then instructed her to “turn the screw of the foot brake several times to the left.” He explained that turning the screw in that direction would tighten it, and thus keep her husband safer. Anna objected. She knew how the mechanism worked.

Walter said, “Your analytical powers are disappearing. You must do exactly as I say!” Then, he repeated the full set of commands again, plus his reassurances that obedience would protect her husband.

Anna carried out the two acts.

Mr. Evan sat, amazed, listening to his hypnotized wife tell all this to Dr. Mayer. Now he understood the why and how of those strange brake failures on his motorcycle! He told Mayer what had happened next. “I was driving after dark, with a friend on my motorcycle. Just before coming to the railroad, which had its barricade down, the headlights of an approaching car blinded me. I didn’t realize how close I was to the barricade. When the oncoming car dimmed its lights, and I could see again, I was only 20 meters from the barricade! I jammed my foot down on the brake. It didn’t hold. It tore through. I pulled the hand brake. It didn’t hold either. I tried to get into first gear, but accidentally went into neutral instead. I hit the barricade, and crashed. Both my friend and I were hurt.”

Though his plan had failed again, Bergen was encouraged by having come so close to succeeding. After Mr. Evan was well enough to ride again, and his motorcycle was back from the mechanic’s shop, the hypnotist gave Mrs. Evan the same set of instructions, again.

Mr. Evan had another motorcycle accident. Both brakes tore through again. He was perplexed because both brakes had just been repaired. When his motorcycle crashed this time, he was riding alone. His arm and knee were injured, but he lived.

Suicide Suggestions

Frustrated by all those unsuccessful murder suggestions, frightened by Mr. E’s reported thoughts of going to the police, Bergen now began giving suicide commands to Anna. First, he told her to obtain a prescription from her doctor for sleeping pills and to swallow the whole bottleful the first night she possessed them. She asked her doctor for sleeping pills. However, he refused to give the visibly upset woman a prescription.

At their next meeting, she told Bergen she had not acquired the tablets. He then “made me feel dreadfully upset. He said I would die in terrible torment, that my whole blood was becoming pus. He said it would be better if I would kill myself rather than suffer through that death. He advised me to jump off the train when it was moving, but only when I was alone. He said such a death would be painless. I was convinced and firmly decided to carry this out on the way home, because I believed myself to be terminally ill. But, on the train, I got into conversation with an elderly lady to whom I confided my misery. She comforted me and drove away the thoughts of self-destruction." **(quoted in Mayer, 1937, p. 106)**

Anna had chosen to converse with the old lady. Almost anybody you discuss suicide with will attempt to comfort you and drive away those thoughts. Anna's unconscious let them be driven away. Another suicide set-up by Bergen was evaded.

The hypnotist did not give up. On Anna's next visit, he suggested that her husband loved another woman and wished to divorce her—or somehow get rid of her. In fact, Bergen said over and over to Anna in his hypnotic urgings, her husband was secretly trying to kill her because he was in love with that other woman. (In fact, Mr. Evan had not considered leaving her, nor did he have an affair.) Because of her husband's (imaginary) betrayals, Bergen said that she would drown herself in the Rhine river.

On the way home, Anna did feel utter despair. She made plans to drown herself in the nearby Rhine River. Her unconscious saved her, this time, by finding a way to alert the housekeeper to Anna's state of mind, and by picking a time to carry out the command when the housekeeper and several other persons were around. The housekeeper observed Anna's depression, followed her, and restrained her from drowning herself.

Anna obviously had a problem. Up to this time, however, only her unconscious and Bergen knew the real source of the terrible pressures on her. Mr. Evan demanded, again and again, that she tell him what was wrong. Anna could not tell. She did not know what the problem was. She did not know that Bergen reinforced his amnesia commands with threats to destroy her, if she betrayed him by revealing anything to her husband. If she had consciously known what was going on, she would have reacted immediately and correctly. But her conflict was all unconscious, hidden from conscious understanding, prevented from resolution by the amnesia.

Mr. Evan was married to Anna during the last four years of her hypnotic abuse. At first, he had no idea unethical hypnosis was involved in her situation. Fortunately, he never doubted her sanity. He gradually realized her true situation.

Mr. Evan Goes to the Police

Mr. Evan tried, but he could not track down Bergen on his own. Because of amnesia, Anna did not consciously know when she was scheduled to see Bergen, what his real name was, where she met him, or where he lived.

Walter Bergen was right to fear Mr. Evan, for he finally went to the Heidelberg Criminal Police office for help in solving the tragic mystery in his wife's life. He went in 1934, toward summer's end. He reported that his wife had been duped out of nearly 3,000 marks. He said the perpetrator was a man who had told Anna that he was a doctor and who had given her hypnotic treatments for various health problems. He said the doctor used several names, all false. Neither he nor Anna knew the hypnotist's real name. Every effort he had made to discover the true name and address of the hypnotist had failed. He told them that he also suspected that the hypnotist had sex with his wife while she was hypnotized, with neither her knowledge nor consent.

After hearing what Mr. Evan had to say, the police called in a psychiatrist, Dr. Ludwig Mayer, the most respected medical hypnotist in all Europe. Dr. Mayer did not believe that unethical hypnosis was possible. In his previous writings, he had always promoted the "dogma of moral integrity," that it is impossible to completely annihilate a subject's will by hypnosis.

When Dr. Mayer examined Anna, he found no sign of any underlying illness, mental or physical. Mr. Evan assured the doctor that his wife did not have sickly relatives, was not sickly in her childhood, and had never had mental problems. A series of other psychiatrists and neurologists—at the Clinic for Women, the University of Heidelberg's Nerve Clinic, and the University of Freiberg's Psychiatric Clinic—also examined Anna. All agreed she was not mentally ill.

On all topics, except events having to do with Bergen, her memory was normal. Her only mental abnormality was that she could remember nothing having to do with the hypnotist. She had "forgotten everything." She was, however, able to tell Dr. Mayer the induction cue which Bergen used on her! Bergen would put his hand on her forehead. She would feel dizzy for a moment, and "tired," and then came the amnesic abyss.

Mayer Cracks the Case

Dr. Mayer asked Anna's permission to hypnotize her. She gave it. The psychiatrist then used Bergen's induction cue: the hand on Anna's forehead. If a hypnotist who is attempting a rehypnotization uses the same induction or deepening routine as the former hypnotist (deliberately or accidentally), progress will be substantial. The first time Mayer put his hand on her forehead, Anna went into trance, but it was only a light state. (Perhaps Bergen had given her sealing and depth-limiting suggestions.)

However, Mayer kept repeating Bergen's induction cue. Gradually, Anna's trance deepened. After several sessions of just repeating Bergen's induction cue, Mayer had this natural somnambulist deep enough for hypnotic regressions. But she still couldn't remember.

Bergen had threatened her unconscious with the worst he could think of if she broke his amnesia rule. If she remembered forbidden information and betrayed his secret, he had warned that she would fall dead, her father would die, and she would endure everlasting damnation in this life—and hell in the next. Dr. Mayer found it slow, tough going to fight those fear-based unconscious amnesia commands and recover Anna's memories. Bit by bit, however, the memories did emerge.

Mayer's first priority was to identify the predatory hypnotist. He suggested that Anna would hallucinate the hypnotist's face. She did! Bergen's rules, which had made her unable to "remember" his face, did not cover a request to "hallucinate" it! She described that hallucinated face to Dr. Mayer.

The psychiatrist carefully recorded her description, then turned it over to police experts. They noticed that Anna's description matched the face of a man called Franz

Walter who had just been arrested in a nearby town for pretending to be a doctor! They put Walter in a lineup and brought Anna in. She identified him as the man she had met on the train, the man who had siezed her hand and stared into her eyes.

Walter, of course, denied everything. They locked him up anyway.

Dr. Mayer continued searching Anna's memory. One day, she visualized for him a letter from Bergen containing instructions to come and meet him. At Mayer's suggestion, she "saw" the exact words of the letter as a positive hallucination superimposed over the blank whiteness of a piece of real paper he had handed her. Anna held the blank page up before her, peered at it, and "read":

> *I order you herewith to be in the station at Heidelberg on the 18th of this month where I shall expect you at the exit at 4 o'clock. Dr. Bergen. (Destroy this note.)* **(Hammerschlag, p. 106)**

Another day, she relived him taking her through the streets to an unknown place. She had walked with her eyes open, but unable to see anything because of his suggestions that she was blind. He took her to a room, continuing to make those suggestions that she was "blind." He told her to lie down. He said, "You are receiving treatment! Sleep quietly! You know nothing of what has happened here, and you will not know later either!"

At this point, Mayer's hypnotic subject began to shake her head in a physical gesture of "No, no" as she relived this event. She made pushing-away movements with her hands. She began to cry softly. After she awoke from the trance, Anna explained to the doctor, "...now I know!...Through the hypnosis I suddenly know." She sobbed on and on. For a long time, she could not stop crying.

Word Associations

Dr. Mayer made good use of the memory-recovery technique of association, following the verbal, or imagery, linkages in Anna's unconscious memory. The result often was the uncovering of some new fact about the criminal hypnoses that Anna had not consciously remembered.

Mayer chose the cue words from what Anna already had remembered. Fox example, after Anna recalled being with Bergen in a swimming pool, Mayer asked her to think of "swimming pool" and then describe the next image that came into her mind. Anna said, "I clearly remember a white Turkish towel. It has light blue stripes at the top and bottom. I also saw a towel with lilac stripes at Walter's." The police searched Bergen's room. They found both towels.

Dr. Mayer also obtained cue words by hypnotizing Anna, then telling her to say every word or thought which came into her mind—not regarding whether it made sense to her or not. Her unconscious grabbed this opportunity to provide evidence on Bergen, without breaking his not-know, not-remember rules. It produced a string of incriminating clues: "Shoe—Schuhmacher—5 Mark;. Auto—6071; Combarus," and so on. When Anna looked at the list of the words which she had said, after waking up from hypnosis, none of those words and phrases made any sense to her. Under later hypnosis, however, when Dr. Mayer asked her about those cue words, one by one, Anna was able to associate to them.

When Dr. Mayer said "Shoe—Schuhmacher—5 Mark," Anna associated: "Walter bought the yellow shoes in Speyer at the shoe shop. He left his old shoes there and besides that paid another 5 Marks." Police checked it out and confirmed the accuracy of her memory. To "Auto—6071," she associated Bergen once coming to get her in a car with that license number. Police established that Bergen had once borrowed a car with that number.

The day that Dr. Mayer said "Combarus" to her, and then asked what she remembered, was a bad one for Anna. She had instantly plunged into the midst of an intense experience of hypnotic reliving:

She is sitting with Bergen in a hotel lobby. Another man walks up to them. He is a bank branch manager named "Mr. B." Bergen talks to Mr. B. and tells him that Anna will satisfy him. Mr. B. hands Walter twenty Marks (which Walter pockets). Mr. B. leaves. Bergen keeps Anna sitting there a while.

They are alone now. He puts his hand on her forehead. It is his usual cue, used both for induction and deepening of a trance. He presses and says, "Now, with no will of your own, you will do anything the man asks you to do. You will remember nothing of what happens. You will think of the word Combarus, and then go into such a deep trance that you can no longer remember what happens to you or where you have been."

A female servant with strange, brightly-colored hair comes and leads Anna away from pimp Bergen, saying that she must go to Mr. B.

After awakening from that chain of memories, an agonized Anna discovered that she could now remember more. She told Mayer, "Walter did this often. Every time he said the word 'Combarus,' I lost my will power. Until today I knew nothing at all about this. You must think I'm a terrible person. But I'm not a slut and not a bad person. Right now I just want to go straight into the river and drown myself. I'm so ashamed."

Mayer learned that Bergen often used cue words such as “Combarus” as a first step in activating a complex sequence of posthypnotic suggestions in Anna’s unconscious. Bergen would tell the hypnotized woman that, under certain circumstances, she would think of the cue word. She was further instructed that thinking of the cue would then cause her to carry out some further command, or commands.

Bergen’s Assistant

After six months of daily sessions, questioning Anna under deep hypnosis, Mayer discovered that more than one hypnotist was involved in her abuse. Hovever that information didn’t come out under hypnosis. In January of 1935, Mrs. Evan mentioned to him in a normal conversation that she had encountered one of the “criminal police.” Anna said the policeman had insisted that she give him extensive information about her case. She had done that.

The incident sounded improbable to Dr. Mayer, so he double-checked. He learned that, whoever he was, Anna’s questioner was not a legitimate policeman. Logic suggested it was Bergen, but her description did not fit Bergen. Dr. Mayer then questioned Anna, under hypnosis, about the mysterious event. She identified the imposter as one of Bergen’s friends, Alfred. She remembered that Bergen had told her under hypnosis to “comply unconditionally, and without any will of your own, with Alfred’s wishes, if you hear Alfred say ‘Filofi.’”[1]

Mayer’s Book

In his post-verdict German-language book about Mrs. E.’s case, Mayer detailed twenty-one previous European court cases which dealt with crimes caused by posthypnotic suggestion (including Zebediah’s case). He warned the public of the risks of being hypnotized:

...a person in somnambulic hypnosis is not able to take up a critical attitude on his own behalf...subordination to the hypnotizer, and dulling of his consciousness takes place, regardless of whether he is the subject of a legitimate experiment or is being hypnotized for other purposes...Just as suggestions can be employed therapeutically...they can equally well be used for criminal purposes. **(Mayer, 1937, p. 53)**

His book was enthusiastically reviewed in the German press. It was much discussed by criminologists all over Europe, and became a best seller in the European nonfiction market. It was never translated into English, but an English researcher who read it in German called it “without doubt the most authentic and carefully documented example of the use of hypnosis for criminal purposes...” **(Edmunds, p. 145)**

Dr. Mayer learned that, after Mr. Evan began talking to his wife about going to the police, Walter and Alfred had planned ahead for that possibility. Their plan was for Alfred to manage a private encounter with Mrs. Evan, drop her into trance with the cue word, “Filofi,” and then give her instructions. She would, as usual, have complete amnesia for both the encounter and the suggestions. By this means, Walter and Alfred intended to cause great confusion and difficulties for the prosecution during its questioning of her.

The Trial

It required nineteen months of daily hypnosis sessions, each hours long, for Mayer to recover the complete details of all Bergen had done to her from Anna’s unconscious. The police had obtained physical evidence which corroborated her recovered memories. There would be a trial.

Before the trial, Dr. Mayer demonstrated to court personnel how it was possible for Bergen to share with Alfred his hypnotic control of Anna. Dr. Mayer hypnotized her. She went into deep trance. Mayer did not give a suggestion that she would obey only his voice. Mayer’s assistant then said to the hypnotized woman, “You will immediately become hypnotized if I say ‘ten’.” Mayer brought Anna out of hypnosis. His assistant began to count aloud the pages of a manuscript which he held. When he said the number “ten,” Anna’s eyes closed. She was again in a deep trance.

The case went to trial in June, 1936. Like Adam at Zebediah’s earlier trial, and like Nielsen at Palle Hardwick’s later trial, Walter Bergen insisted that he was innocent, totally ignorant about hypnosis, and had never hypnotized the alleged victim. Like Adam and Nielsen, Bergen secretly tried to manipulate his subject’s court testimony using hypnosis. Unlike those cases, however, he failed. One reason he failed was because Dr. Mayer stayed with the case and continued hypnotizing Mrs. Evan.

In trance, she remembered another of Bergen’s cue words: “Leichtbino.” Bergen had said, “If you start to reveal anything in court that could harm me, the word ‘Leichtbino’ will come to mind. Then you will feel sick and will not say anything against me. You will only speak in my favor.”

The trial lasted three weeks. Bergen was sentenced to ten years in prison for larceny and for practicing medicine without a license. Alfred was sentenced to four years.

Mayer and the German police did everything right in this case. They even kept Mrs. E’s true identity private. I hope that she and Mr. E were able to live out the rest of their lives in peace and security. However, in 1937. Nazis controlled Germany and World War II was beginning.

---

1. That was a cue to shift rapport to another operator.

Case History: Palle Hardwick

> ***...the faith-curer of the grotto has this advantage over the endormeur of the platform or the hospital. He does not intrude his own personality and train his patient to subject his mental ego to that of his "operator." The "mesmerizer" seeks to dominate his subject; he weakens the will power, which it is desirable to strengthen, and aims at becoming the master of a slave. I do not need further to emphasize the dangers of this practice...***
>
> **- Ernest Hart, *Hypnotism, Mesmerism, & the New Witchcraft*, 1898**

The Predator: Nielsen

In January, 1947, Bjorn Schouw Nielsen was sentenced to Horsens State Prison (the facility for Denmark's worst criminals) in Denmark for crimes committed during the Nazi occupation. Nielsen, a self-educated, street smart, talkative, and imaginative con man, was always looking for an easy profit. He had a previous conviction and commitment to the State Institution for Psychopathic Delinquents. His recent crimes were informing on a previous employer to the Germans and blackmailing Resistance Movement businessmen for large sums of money.

He had been occupying his mind while in Horsens by planning his next, "perfect" crime. He defined a perfect crime as one which would be impossible to trace back to him, a crime for which another person would inevitably serve the jail time, and he—even if accused—would inevitably be let off. He bragged, again and again, to other prisoners about his plan.

Nielsen may have heard of the 1936 case of criminal hypnosis in nearby Sweden. The press called it the "Sala affair." A criminal hypnotist, called only "Th." in newspaper reports, had developed a gang of young men and women who raised money by cocaine trade, prostitution, robbery, and murder. Every gang member was Th.'s hypnotic subject. He had conditioned each with an eclectic mix of occultism, yoga, and hypnosis.

Nielsen studied hypnosis. He learned which traits mark a susceptible person. He practiced his hypnotic techniques on other persons whenever he had an opportunity.

The Prey: Palle Hardwick

A few months after arriving at Horsens, Nielsen met Palle Hardwick in the prison workroom. He noticed the younger man's spiritual interests (often characteristic of hypnotically susceptible persons). He saw how depressed Palle was, and how inclined he was to turn to religion for answers. Nielsen targeted Palle for remaking into an agent of his perfect crimes.

Palle's Childhood and Youth—Palle Hardwick and his identical twin brother were their parents only children. They were raised in a middle-class Danish family before, and during, World War II. His father was good-natured, hard-working, and reliable. His mother was witty and ambitious. What Nielsen did to Palle broke their hearts.

In childhood, Palle was intelligent, sensitive, reliable, dutiful, good with his hands, ambitious, and goal-oriented. He later called his youth "a series of little five-year plans." He planned to have a bright future. He was also introspective, quiet, and interested in religion. Palle never smoked or drank. With a few heterosexual exceptions, he was chaste.

From HIPOCORPS to Capture—In 1940, at age 16, Palle joined a volunteer rifle group organized by the Nazis who then occupied his homeland. (They appeared to be there to stay.) The party's conveyer-belt system then carried him through the Youth Section of the Danish Nazi Party to the volunteer German Army Corps, and finally to the German Auxiliary Police (also known as Hipokorps).

Palle was in the Hipokorps only during the last three months of the war, but it ruined his life. He never participated in interrogations or mistreatment of detainees. In fact, he actively avoided assignments that would cause him to mistreat other persons. When assigned to be an interpreter for the Germans, he shot himself in the leg. When he became ambulatory again, they gave him a different assignment. Thus, he managed to avoid participation in the persecution of Danish Jews or of Danish Resistance members. Years later, Palle recalled his three months in the Hipokorps as one of the most unhappy periods of his life.

As the Allied army approached, he became disillusioned, despairing, disgusted. He was sure the Germans would lose the war, but he felt enough loyalty to his Hipocorps unit that he did not walk away from them. A force of combined Allies and Danish resistance fighters arrested Palle on May 8, 1945, together with German troops trying to retreat from Denmark. His captors took him to Horsens State Prison to be held for trial. The route ran by his parents' home, which Palle had not seen for a year and a half.

He stared apathetically out the window of the train, grieving, until he arrived at prison. At Horsens, they placed him in solitary confinement in the cellar for a few days, then moved him to a tiny cell, shared with another "collaborator." Miserable, hopeless, monotonous prison days followed, one after another. Faceless cellmates came and went.

Trial and Imprisonment—After sixteen months in prison, on September 9, 1946, Palle was finally tried. Postwar Denmark hated collaborators, especially Hipokorps members. Being caught in the company of Germans went hard with Palle also. He was sentenced to fourteen more years in Horsens. He was only 22.

Palle's twin brother also was sentenced for collaboration, but he received a far lighter sentence. He soon got out of jail, found a job in the wholesale business, and did well from then on. Palle remained confined, believing he had many years left to serve.

Palle did not fit in at Horsens. A prison report dated December 27, 1946, said he was "Polite and well behaved. Young idealist. Works well." Palle, himself, later wrote of this period:

> *For me there was no way back to my earliest youth, before the whole thing began. I did not think that there would be any future for me even on that distant day many years in the future when I might possibly be released....I tried to find a meaning in things from a religious point of view, by thinking that they were ordained by God. I wondered whether He even existed and how He could have created such a world as ours. But that only made matters worse. I began to doubt whether there was a God who directed the universe, or whether it was not merely one long string of fortuitous circumstances. I felt quite alone...as if I were in a diving-bell at the bottom of the sea which was never going to come up again.* **(Palle quoted in Reiter, 1958, p. 73)**

Those depressed feelings all changed, however, the day that Palle experienced a spontaneous mystical encounter with a "guardian spirit." The spirit declared that Palle's long sentence to imprisonment was not an accidental misfortune, but was, indeed, part of God's plan for him, intended to develop and strengthen him for fulfillment of a later task. From the moment he received it, that message became very dear to Palle, a source of hope and strength.

Nielsen the "Guru"

Soon after he met Palle, Nielsen began to tell the gullible young man a series of grandiose lies. Nielsen claimed to know all about religion, to have read lots on it, to have been a member of a society for psychical research. In fact, he said, he was a master yogi—a guru! He promised to get Palle books to study on religion, to initiate him into the mysteries he had learned. He would give Palle an apprenticeship in the arts of yoga mastery. The charming, smooth-talking sociopath promised Palle that his lessons in Indian "philosophy" and yoga training would reveal life's true meaning, grant escape from his present misery, make him independent of this world, and guarantee a better one in an afterlife.

Palle resisted Nielsen's aggressive overtures of friendship.

Nielsen did not give up. He pressured Palle, every day, in the workshop. Nielsen expounded on the reincarnation of souls. He said hypnosis was the way to learn about one's past lives. He promised that, through "mind expansion," Palle could become one with the "divine cosmic principle" and have direct communion with God. He chattered about levitation, channeling spirits, telepathy, and yogis who walked through walls or who could cure a broken leg in five minutes. He gave Palle books to read about yoga.

Palle read the books. He redefined his beliefs and his spiritual goal in terms of what he read and of what Nielsen was saying. He was challenged by the "great and difficult labor" of mind expansion. The books promoted the Eastern concept of learning psychic mind skills from a teacher. Nielsen purred that Palle obviously had talent and even he, the guru, could learn much from him—if Palle would let him become his teacher. Palle believed everything that Nielsen said.

Palle Learns "Yoga"—Reassured by Nielsen's play-acting, the lonely young man finally accepted his proffered friendship. Palle and Nielsen were both accused of collaboration. Both were in prison, both assigned to the workroom. The friendship seemed natural to Palle. Soon, he accepted Nielsen's offer to teach meditation skills.

After that, in the workroom, every day, often in a corner by themselves, Nielsen did "spiritual" exercises with Palle. Like most covert hypnotists, Nielsen carefully avoided the word "hypnosis." He always substituted occult terminology for the "H" word. He called hypnotic episodes, "concentrations." He gave Palle "relaxation exercises," or "magnetic strokings," or "yogic training in how to cease thinking."

Nielsen always began new induction routines by requiring Palle to try it on him first. Con artist Nielsen would then pretend to be completely, helplessly under Palle's mental influence. Nielsen's play acting banished any fear Palle might have that Nielsen could get power over him. Only then, did Nielsen let Palle, who was now very interested and confident, have a turn at being the subject of the "experiment."

Thus, when Nielsen introduced a hand locking induction routine to Palle, Palle first did it to the guru. Nielsen only pretended to be unable to pull his hands apart when Palle said, "Try it. You cannot pull your hands apart." Nielsen knew the routine was just a trick played on ignorant people who don't realize that everybody's knuckle size prevents them from pulling apart clasped hands—unless they spread their fingers to allow the larger knuckles to pass through. This is a test of hypnotic susceptibility. It's also a hypnosis induction, because if a subject believes they have been compelled to obey by mental power, they may continue to obey suggestions.

When it was Nielsen's turn to give the suggestion to Palle, Palle really "locked" his hands. He really believed that he could not pull his clasped hands apart when challenged to try it. Then Nielsen knew, for sure: Palle was a susceptible hypnotic subject, a proper candidate to be the agent of the guru's perfect crimes.

After the hand-locking exercise, Nielsen led Palle in breathing exercises combined with various yoga postures and concentrations on various mental ideas. To Palle it was all just an amusing game, a toy, a prison pastime. He had no idea that Nielsen was covertly conditioning him for a mind-controlled life

Nielsen asked Palle, whose prison behavior record was better than his, to request to share a cell with him. Palle received permission. (That began a long series: Nielsen tells Palle what to say, or do; Palle obeys.) From the spring of 1947, to the fall of 1949, Palle and Bjorn Nielsen were always together in their cell or in the workroom.

From Trance to Hypnosis—Nielsen told Palle that he knew a short cut to the meditative high (trance depth) which Palle now yearned to reach. He led Palle through more hand lockings, and relaxation exercises. He made Palle's arms or legs stiff (catatonic). He did magnetic strokings of a prone and resting Palle. All those were deepening exercises, training for automatism. Through that series of disguised inductions, Nielsen was carefully shaping Palle into a highly trained hypnotic subject. In the meantime, Nielsen kept Palle calm and confident, without suspicion.

Nielsen finally proposed hypnosis to Palle—actually using the H word. The guru made it seem nonthreatening by, as usual, having Palle first hypnotize him. Nielsen again pretended to be deeply affected. Palle again believed that Nielsen was easy to hypnotize and that he was difficult to hypnotize. The truth was the opposite: Palle was far more susceptible than Nielsen. Believing himself to be the more difficult person to hypnotize, Palle accepted being, most often, the subject of inductions. Nielsen explained that he was just trying to bring Palle up to his own yoga skill level.

Nielsen's fertile imagination kept generating new mind-expansion exercises. Jail-weary Palle welcomed them all. They were easy entertainment, a mental escape. Soon, Nielsen was keeping Palle busy doing "yoga" almost around the clock—excepting when he was eating or sleeping. The ceaseless training made Palle's hypnotic suggestibility constantly increase.

Nielsen, next, captured and redirected Palle's sex drive for the purpose of powering his hypnotic control. Kundalini yoga requires celibacy outside of trance and channels sexual energy into intense, orgiastic trance experience.

Palle's kundalini concentrations did, one day, result in an intense climax enveloped in hallucination. Palle believed that he had, in that moment, experienced fusion of his body and spirit and had found unity with a divine essence. Now, joyfully, utterly in love with the trance trip (and perhaps somewhat so also with the guru who worked so hard to deliver these trance highs to him), Palle eagerly anticipated more such orgasmic fusions. He believed he was moving away from the mundane terrestrial world toward contact with a lofty spiritual force.

Again and again, day after day, many times in one day, Nielsen pushed Palle to go into trance as deep as possible and to stay there as long as possible. He also taught Palle self-hypnotic techniques to make his state of lowered consciousness last longer. Nielsen never once dehypnotized Palle, never told him the trance was now over, and he could again be "awake." Palle was now walking around in a state of constant trance, of varying depth, instead of his normal mental condition.

Nielsen explained away Palle's awareness of being in a constant deep trance by saying it was evidence that he was in the presence of the divine. Palle believed him. He wanted to hang on to that divine connection—even if it meant losing contact with reality. In July, 1947, a psychiatrist (who happened to be studying war criminals at Horsens Prison) examined Palle. The doctor wrote in his report that Palle was an idealist with no psychotic traits, no abnormal characteristics at all—except "a tendency to parry questions with obscure oracular answers." **(Quoted in Reiter, 1958, p. 205)** Obscure "oracular answers" can be evidence of a trance state.

Palle's constant effort, now, was focused on soaring higher and higher (lower and lower trance depths) in each new "concentration" that Nielsen assigned to him. Palle hoped to attain the highest yoga condition and achieve his dream of ecstatic and mystical union with divinity, with the universe's "vital principle." Nielsen's goal, on the other hand, was complete control of Palle's mind by repeated inductions, increased trance depth, and obedience drills. It usually takes much trance training for a subject to reach the deepest levels of trance. A large number of hypnotic sessions "increases the possibility of criminally exploiting the depth of hypnosis." **(Hammerschlag, p. 30)**

Palle Accepts "X" As God—The guru then began a new "spiritual exercise." As usual, first Palle hypnotized Nielsen, who pretended to be deeply affected. In his sham state of hypnosis, Nielsen "channeled" the voice of a spirit. He made clear which spirit it was. He was supposedly speaking with the voice of the angel who had appeared to Palle and reassured him. Nielsen said,

"I am your guardian spirit. You believe that what has happened to you is a great misfortune for you. But that is not the case. It has all been to strengthen you and test you, in order that you may carry out the mission which it is your destiny to fulfil." **(Reiter, 1958, p. 108)**

To Palle, Nielsen's bogus channeling was a true and precious revelation, and he hoped for more. Palle never doubted that he should

Social Isolation

Palle was now completely isolated, not only because he had become a space case, but also because Nielsen had used threats, flattery, and visual and auditory **negative hallucinations** to further isolate him. Under deep hypnosis, Nielsen had instructed:

> *"From this moment you will no longer speak to nor address your previous comrades...You will feel that all former ties have been broken. Day and night your entire consciousness will be directed towards the divine. If they approach you, you will not see them, and if they talk to you, you will not hear. They belong to a lower world, which you have nothing whatever to do with."* **(Reiter, p. 110)**

Palle's former friends in prison thought his new condition of perpetual walking trance, and total ignoring of them, was very odd. Although they were upset by the change in Palle, none of them spoke to the prison authorities about it. Nielsen also programmed Palle against his parents and other relatives. Palle obeyed the secret regimen and, thus, became totally dependent upon Nielsen, now his only permitted associate.

Nielsen , however, was not isolated, and he couldn't resist bragging about his control over Palle to some of the other prisoners.

obey the "divine power" who had bestowed those words upon him. Nielsen told Palle that his guardian spirit was named "X."

It was, then, Palle's turn to be hypnotized. When Palle was in deep trance, Nielsen told him that X was the same person as God. He designated X as Palle's induction cue to a deep, amnesic trance. From that moment on, Palle had complete amnesia for all his time spent in X-related trance. Under the cover of that amnesia, Nielsen hammered into Palle's unconscious the belief that Palle's guardian spirit—who was supposedly God and was named X—would hereafter deliver all his orders to Palle via Nielsen.

At first, X's orders, via Nielsen, came in phony seances during which Nielsen pretended he was hypnotized and channeling the spirit's voice. Soon, however, Nielsen developed a wider variety of X communication systems. Palle soon gave the same obedient response to words that Nielsen said while making an X with his body—such as having his legs or arms crossed in the sign of an X—or to the words written following the symbol X in a letter.

Eventually, all Nielsen had to do was say, "X says..." It was a convenient setup, informal and unrecognizable to any random persons who might overhear the guru in the process of implanting new hypnotic commands in Palle. It worked in any social situation. It worked even when Palle seemed to be in a normal waking state. Nielsen would say, "The guardian spirit wants..." or "X wants you to..." Palle would obey, as a hypnotic compulsion, whatever followed those cue phrases.

Sometimes, Nielsen completely concealed his role in X's messages by causing Palle to have posthypnotic hallucinations in which X materialized before him and spoke the predator's instructions. In the first of these posthypnotically hallucinated scenes, Nielsen instructed Palle's unconscious that the spirit would act the same as Palle's spontaneous experience of a guardian spirit had. So it comforted him, and seemed protective and loving. Over time, however, Nielsen weaned Palle from comfort and protection. X was more and more likely to simply show up and give orders. Being completely amnesic for the trance sessions during which Nielsen programmed him to experience these posthypnotic visions, Palle accepted the apparitions with complete faith.

Nielsen made Palle deeply terrified of the slightest failure to give unconditional, absolute obedience to any command from X. He did that by threatening banishment to spiritual darkness in this life and to hell in the next—and then concealing the threat under amnesia. The number one rule to which X demanded obedience was the rule of Secret, Don't Tell. Nielsen indelibly impressed on Palle's unconscious several corollary admonitions that supported the basic rule of secrecy. X told Palle never to speak of X, or of his "revelations" from X, or of Nielsen, who was X's "instrument." In fact, Palle was never to speak to any other prisoners at all.

The threats, if Palle should weaken and tell, were as bad as those for imperfect obedience. He would be judged as having failed in his mission in this life, as having failed all his guardian spirit's tests. He would have no chance whatsoever of salvation and would be damned forever.

Preparation for a "Mission"—X (Nielsen) now told Palle's unconscious more about his "mission." He made it sound lofty and righteous. X said that God was personally ordering Palle to end all wars and to develop and lead a world government in which God and Mankind would be spiritually one. He said that Palle had been designated by God to be the savior of humanity who would "help, cure, and redeem" them, and lead them from suffering into happiness.

Nielsen spent the next year eroding all the moral values that Palle had internalized up to that point in his life, his original superego. Palle's belief in X was made the basis of a new superego system which displaced the old values. Nielsen did that by training Palle to unconsciously judge his behavior as good or bad based only on his X programming—what would cause X pleasure or displeasure. In a condition of obedience to X, Palle would feel happy and peaceful. Resisting X's commands resulted in feelings of misery, fear, and guilt.

Nielsen waited until Palle was conditioned to shift instantly to deep trance on cue and to have total amnesia for time spent in trance before he began giving him really noxious suggestions. That conditioning, combined with the comforting fantasy of world omnipotence and a savior's mission, unconsciously counterbalanced Palle's amnestic reality of humiliating submission to ever more cruel and humiliating demands by Nielsen.

The guru told Palle that his spiritual exercises were now going to teach independence from all physical and material ties. They all involved self denial because X said that Palle must now practice indifference to whatever was dear to him. The training exercises in "independence," however, always involved Palle giving Nielsen his worldly goods. Thus, Palle yielded up his daily meat ration to Nielsen, then his watch, then his accordion. If Palle resisted any concept or command, Nielsen explained that the student's inner resistance was caused by "matter" fighting "spirit." And he would urge Palle to overcome that rebellious "body resistance to the spirit."

Nielsen prepared Palle to commit robbery and murder for him by means of a classic series of desensitization exercises. He said Palle was "above" the usual moral principles such as right of property, or respect for life. X ordered Palle to free himself from all those "middle class morals." In deep trance visualizations, Nielsen gave Palle systematic training in criminal acts. At first, he induced Palle to hallucinate only minor crimes. The guru acted as if it were all a joke—just a little thievery. However, the acts which Nielsen made the hypnotized Palle visualize gradually worsened: robbery, safe cracking, murders, then murdering Palle's own mother. That last item was agonizing for Palle, so Nielsen made him experience it, in hallucination, over and over.

X also instructed Palle to never reveal Nielsen's involvement in any crime that Palle might commit. And he told him to never be hypnotized by anybody but Nielsen.

Palle now walked around in a near-constant trance. He believed that he had direct, daily instructions from God (via X). He was forbidden to tell what was really going on in his life to his conscious mind or to anybody else. He was **sealed** against induction by any other hypnotist. He believed he had been designated the messiah who would unite the Scandinavian peoples and found an ideal society, because X had told him so. He believed he was founding a new patriotic underground. (Having been long and severely punished for joining the occupier, Palle now was the "resistance.") His mixture of religious and political delusions was an **artificial psychosis**, created by means of hypnosis. To the casual onlooker, however, Palle would seem merely insane.

Nielsen was finished hypnoprogramming Palle. It was early in 1949. He gave Palle instructions, via X, to escape from Horsens prison—and then to return and free his guru. Palle carried out the escape exactly as ordered, but he was recaptured before he could return and attempt to free the guru. Nobody knew that Nielsen was behind it. Palle was sentenced to serve extra prison time because of his escape.

Palle Out of Prison

Horsens Prison was now shortening the sentences of all prisoners accused of collaboration. Nielsen got out a few months before Palle. After the guru was gone, Palle was not walking around in a trance any more. As Palle's release date neared, however, Nielsen began sending letters to him. They always closed: "Greetings from X." Seeing those words thrilled Palle. They meant that X had not forgotten him. For a moment, he felt the old rush of contact with the divine.

Palle walked out of Horsens, a free man, on October 29, 1949. That day might have been the beginning of a new, better life for him, but his freedom was a cue that Nielsen had pounded in for years. Old hypnotic suggestions activated by that cue now poured into Palle's consciousness. He later wrote:

> *The moment I heard I was to be released...I felt at last God had given me my marching orders...I felt exactly like a soldier ready to leave for the front...everything which had happened up to now was only testing which had been designed to bring me up to the peak of my powers and ability...My earthly incarnation was now practically at an end*

> *and only the final short step remained to be taken...*
> **(Reiter, 1958, p. 124)**

As soon as Palle arrived at his parent's home in Copenhagen, he called Nielsen (obeying a posthypnotic suggestion) to hear X's next instructions. Nielsen told Palle to relax, talk to his family, and call in the morning to arrange a meeting time. At six o'clock the next morning, Palle called. Nielsen said to come at three in the afternoon.

When Palle arrived, Nielsen introduced him to his wife, Titte. She soon left them alone. Nielsen hypnotized Palle. From then on, Palle went to visit Nielsen three, or more, times a week. Each visit Nielsen hypnotized him. On the days they did not meet in person, X instructed Palle to phone Nielsen. During their meetings, Nielsen reran all the old deep trance routines from prison, the "religion," the desensitizations—especially the detailed robbery visualizations—and the terrible warnings never to reveal these secrets (particularly not to his parents).

Nielsen told Palle to live with his parents. That would save money. When his parents gave Palle money to hunt for a job, X told him to give it to Nielsen. X told Palle he was freed from any concerns about material property. The money was all X's and Nielsen would manage it for the sake of X. When Nielsen used up that money, X caused Palle to borrow an equal amount from his brother. Palle soon found a job, and it paid well. He always turned his paycheck over to X who returned only what his parents expected as rent, plus a little pocket money. As a result, shortly after his payday, Palle would have to borrow money from some family member for bus fare to get to and from work.

While riding the bus home from Nielsen's apartment, or at night, lying in bed thinking about the mission, Palle often talked to X. Sometimes he saw X, and X talked back to him, for Palle's suggestible brain was now so saturated with X content and X worship that he was having spontaneous X hallucinations.

Nielsen liked company. Palle's natural inclination was toward puritanical habits. He hated beer, could hardly force it down. But X had ordered "social studies," which meant going out to drink and carouse with Nielsen, and so Palle went. And Palle paid. Palle always was commanded by X to pay.

Nielsen wanted to enlarge his stable of hypnotic subjects. He took lessons from a hypnotist to learn better techniques. He established a "Psychophysical Institute." Palle, directed by X, provided the money and did all the work of creating brochures and placing ads to recruit students for the "Institute." Nielsen held training sessions in his home for people thus enticed.

At this time, both Palle and Nielsen were fired by their employers. Nielsen did not get another job, but Palle did. Now, X was even greedier for money. Palle often had to borrow tram fare the day after payday.

His father became suspicious. One evening, he took Palle aside and asked if Nielsen had some sort of hold over him. Palle denied the idea in the usual brusk way with which he dealt with his parents. He said his money matters were his own business and the idea of Nielsen controlling him was obvious nonsense.

An Arranged Marriage—Palle had a standing posthypnotic suggestion to tell Nielsen anything of significance that happened in his life. He reported the conversation with his father. Nielsen started worrying that his income from Palle might stop flowing. The predator decided to end the influence of Palle's family on him by maneuvering Palle out of their home. (Years later, after his memory recovery, Palle felt the deepest grief and anger over the ruined relationship with his parents.)

Nielsen chose a girl named Bente to marry Palle. Bente had been recently engaged to his brother-in-law, but was currently free. Nielsen, himself, then had a brief affair with Bente. Then he arranged a movie date for Bente and Palle. Thus it came about that, on February 11, 1950, a few weeks after Palle's talk with his father, Bente and Palle went to a movie together.

Two days later, Nielsen hypnotized Palle and suggested a feeling of deep, divine peace. Then X told Palle that he and Bente were destined mates because X willed their marriage. X said that Palle truly loved Bente, would realize this, and would think of her constantly. Amnesic for those suggestions, as usual, Palle had two more dates with Bente. He became convinced that he loved her. He introduced her to his family, and proposed marriage. She accepted.

Cupid Nielsen had no interest in promoting genuine love. To him, this marriage was just a better way to control Palle. So, when Nielsen heard that Palle and Bente were buying gold rings for each other, X was displeased at the "unnecessary" expense.

Before the marriage could even begin, X drove a wedge between the lovers by ordering Palle to force his fiancee to have intercourse with Nielsen. Later, regressed under rehypnotization, a grieving, traumatized Palle remembered being in Nielsen's apartment that night. He could hear Bente and Titte talking about housekeeping in the background. Nielsen led Palle to the adjacent room and closed the door behind them. Palle recalled...

> *It's there my guardian spirit usually comes and talks to me...He tells me to relax. He puts his hand on my forehead. He gives me magnetic strokings. Then he says that X has told him to see to it that he has intercourse with Bente. I feel completely para-*

> *lyzed over my whole body. My whole body trembles. He tells me to keep quite calm. It does not concern me at all. I have a mission which I must fulfil. It is absolutely necessary that I learn how to control others...He says it is my body which resists. I must learn to control my body. He will help me, and he brings me into a state where I no longer belong to this world...* **(Reiter, 1958, p. 131)**

After Nielsen roused his subject from trance, Palle obeyed the suggestions. He told Bente, "Go and help Nielsen with what he wants." She knew what Nielsen wanted. She refused. Palle insisted. She resisted. Palle said, "I won't marry you unless you do it." Then she agreed. Afterwards, she said, "Now you know I love you."

Deep down, however, Palle felt the opposite. Something he had found and treasured was irrevocably soiled. Ten days later, on their agreed date, Palle married Bente, but he never felt close to her or good about their relationship again.

Nielsen widened the emotional distance between Palle and Bente with more hypnotic suggestions. X told Palle to "govern" his wife, to live with her, but as the master in his house. X said Palle's relationship with Bente had just been an emotional feeling. which he was now completely free of: "...it is completely impossible that she should have any influence whatsoever upon your will...she has nothing whatsoever to do with your financial affairs." **(Reiter, 1958, p. 133)**

Nielsen now collected, via X, most of the wages of both Palle and Bente. When X again commanded Palle to go out drinking and picking up girls, he went, night after night. (Nielsen called that "karmayoga," action yoga.) As usual, Palle paid the bills. In addition, Palle made his usual solo visits to Nielsen's place. He told Bente he went there because their guerilla organization was training to fight in case the Russians invaded. He said all the money they gave Nielsen was also for that purpose.

By order of X, Palle never trusted his wife, regularly lied to her, and treated her callously. To Nielsen, on the other hand, Palle's behavior was candid, sacrificing, and trustworthy. That's how Nielsen had programmed him to act. Nielsen separated Palle from his parents by marriage. He separated him from his wife, even before their marriage, by infidelity. The story of Palle and Bente (their relationship ever dominated and managed by Nielsen) was a tragic subplot to Palle's hypnotic history. Palle's marriage could have helped to free him. Instead, it further enmeshed him in Nielsen's web.

Training for Robbery- The flow of money from both Bente and Palle still was not enough to satisfy Nielsen. Palle's wages were not as good at the new job, and there was little overtime. X told him to buy a gun (in case of a Russian invasion).

In June, 1950, Nielsen began training Palle to do a bank robbery. He repeated all the old deep trance visualizations of generic robbery and random murder, plus the hallucinations of killing mother (the ultimate obedience exercise and moral desensitization). Then X told Palle to go to a pharmacy and purchase a container of ether, because X "wished to show him some pictures of a 'spiritual nature.'" **(Reiter, 1958, p. 135)**

When Palle returned with the ether, they went into the private room of Nielsen's apartment. Palle stretched out and relaxed; his guru performed the usual magnetic strokings and intoned relaxation suggestions. Then, Nielsen told Palle to breathe in the ether fumes while he suggested deep, deep sleep. Nielsen had added **narcohypnosis** to his induction process in order to reinforce Palle's trance depth, automatism, and amnesia.

The "spiritual pictures" turned out to be detailed visualizations of robbing a specific bank. Palle was to imagine himself entering the bank with a briefcase in his left hand, the gun in his right, his mind focused only on his connection with the "divine." Nielsen continued to guide narcohypnotized Palle's deep trance visualization:

> *"You go up to the cashier. You study your feelings very closely. You see how ridiculously easy it all is. You know that nothing can stop you. You know that a yogi can do everything. You know that feelings are only something belonging to the material world. You throw your brief case down on the counter and order him to fill it...You are clearly aware of X's presence. You point your pistol at the cashier. You know that you must get that money for X. You see that he is going to refuse. You experience this very concentratedly. You know that if one man will not do it another will. You shoot. You see him fall. You point the pistol at the next man. You repeat your order."* **(Reiter, 1958, p. 135)**

Nielsen repeated the narcohypnotic induction and visualization conditioning, again and again. X appealed to Palle's unconscious vanity and ambition. He declared over and over that Palle alone could save the Fatherland. Then came more visualizations of robbery and murder:

> *"You shoot him through the head. You know that this is a necessary step on the way to Samadhi...You are completely unaffected. You know that it is God's will."* **(Reiter, 1958, p. 135)**

Guru Failures—Palle had planned a vacation with Bente in the country that summer. X told him to stay in town. X also said that Palle must again make the sacrifice of giving his wife to Nielsen for sex. He told Palle to see to it that Bente had plenty to drink that evening, and then to stay out of the way. Accordingly, Palle primed Bente with alcohol, then went to another room, where he meditated in a yogi position, focused on the thought that nothing in this world meant anything to him except the will of X.

The evening with Bente did not work out as Nielsen had planned. She fiercely defended herself. Although Nielsen inflicted a black eye and concussion on her, she escaped from him without being raped.

In robbery training sessions, X next pointed out to Palle the exact bank which was to be robbed. He showed Palle where to hide the money afterwards. X said that robbing a bank was easy, something that anybody could do. If Palle felt a resistance to obeying, he said, it only meant his body was stronger than his mind, and that, of course, must be overcome.

But Palle resisted X's command to commit a real robbery. X pressed the demand harder, asking for blind faith. He promised that, if Palle would only trust and obey, it would work out all right. Palle's resistance weakened. Years of programming, all the old hypnoconditioning arguments, had long prepared him to obey whatever X ordered.

Nielsen scheduled the bank robbery for August 21, 1950. The morning unfolded, as X had preinstructed Palle's unconscious. Palle told Bente (who was now pregnant) that his back hurt, and he would stay home from work. She brought him breakfast in bed, then went to her job. As soon as she was out of sight, he went to buy a bicycle.

While walking toward town, he passed the Church of Jesus. At that moment, Palle began to feel terribly upset. He said to himself, "There's something wrong here...There's something which tells me that all this is wrong." **(Reiter, 1958, p. 141)** As Nielsen had programmed him to do, Palle interpreted his upset feeling to be his body resisting X's orders. But he could not argue the resistance away. He could not help thinking about the people in the bank who might get hurt if he robbed it. His feeling of upset got worse and worse. He just could not do the robbery. He called Nielsen and said, "Everything is wrong."

Nielsen said, "I was only testing your will. Just relax. I'm busy right now, but I'll speak to your guardian spirit. Come see me at seven tomorrow evening."

First Bank Robbery—After that tremendous moral victory of resisting evil programming, Palle himself did not know what had happened. He did not consciously remember having been about to rob a bank. He did not remember being unable to carry out the plan. He went home and went to bed.

The next evening, after Palle arrived at his apartment, Nielsen concentrated on extinguishing that spark of unconscious Christian morality in his subject. He hypnotized Palle. He then deepened his trance with the ether. He then threatened, instructed, repeated, and repeated, the will of X for Palle to perform that bank robbery. The hypnotic session continued until well past midnight.

X rescheduled the bank robbery for the next day, August 23, 1950. The next morning, Palle again told Bente that his back hurt. Again, he lay in bed while she went to work. An hour later, Nielsen arrived at Palle's apartment. He began another prolonged induction of deep hypnosis in Palle. His suggestions again assailed Palle's unconscious: "You know that it is right. The guardian spirit has said so. Nielsen is only the instrument of your divine spirit." Nielsen finished and left.

Precisely ten minutes after his departure, the posthypnotic suggestions began to kick in. Palle began the robbery sequence. He rode a bike to the bank, parked it outside, and started walking in. Just as he was going through the doorway, he felt his "body" beginning to resist. This time he was able to conquer that resistance.

He continued into the bank, slung his briefcase over the teller's counter, and told him to fill it with money. The teller filled the briefcase and handed it back to Palle. As programmed, Palle then told everybody in the bank to get down on the floor.

If any person had refused to get down on the floor, Palle was programmed to shoot him. They all got down on the floor. Palle left with the briefcase full of money, mounted his bike, and rode home. There, he put the bike away, caught a taxi, rode to his designated meeting place with Nielsen, and handed over the briefcase and its contents to him.

Nielsen asked, “Have you shot anyone?”

Robot Palle reported, “No, it was not necessary.”

Palle wanted to give Nielsen the pistol too. Nielsen told him to hide it in the woods. Then, Palle went home. Bente was already there. Unexpectedly seeing her triggered another panic attack. This was a situation which his hypno-instructions didn’t cover. As by the church, he suddenly felt desperately confused and upset, unable to think, and unable to understand why he felt this way. His sense of confusion suddenly coalesced into an urgent need to call Nielsen and ask what to do.

He called. Nielsen’s voice, his calming words, instantly soothed Palle. With that familiar, trusted voice in his ear, he knew everything would be all right. However, Palle’s confused behavior had aroused Bente’s suspicions. She had already heard about the bank robbery. She told him that she suspected he was the person who had robbed the bank.

Palle called Nielsen again, reporting Bente’s remark. Nielsen gave Palle a posthypnotic suggestion to act miserable and guilty and to confess to Bente that he was upset because he had been unfaithful to her that day.

When Palle carried out that suggestion, however, Bente just laughed. She didn’t believe a word of it. From the characteristic cigarette butts she had found in the apartment, she was sure that it was Nielsen who had been there with Palle. Palle again called Nielsen. X told him to move to a slum because he was spending too much money on rent.

The next day, Nielsen called Bente. He scolded her for accusing Palle of doing the robbery. He also said that, if she would not agree to the move, he would make Palle divorce her and marry a different woman. He then took Palle to visit a series of prostitutes.

Bente later told police that Nielsen terrified her. But, this time, she did not give in. She needed a decent place for their baby to live. She left Palle and moved in with his parents. Both she and his parents then urged Palle over and over to sever the relationship with Nielsen. Palle finally agreed not to see Nielsen until after the baby was born (six months away), and Bente came back to live with him.

Nielsen, prosperous with all the bank loot, adjusted gracefully to the setback. X told Palle to phone the guru daily. He did so, and X gave his orders over the phone. Soon Palle was visiting Nielsen again.

But Nielsen was still concerned about the possibility that Bente might talk too much. To deny credibility to her suspicions, Nielsen gave Palle a posthypnotic suggestion to take a few hours off work, visit his doctor, and tell him about Bente’s bad nerves and paranoid delusions. He was to act very worried about her and ask the doctor what to do. Palle obeyed, unaware of the real cause of his statements. Bente’s supposed “bad nerves” and “paranoid delusions” went into her medical record.

Second Robbery and Murders—The money from Palle’s first bank robbery was running out. January 10, 1951, Nielsen renewed Palle’s narcohypnotic robbery training. In deep trance, Palle heard a lot of “God’s will,” “your mission,” and “you must sacrifice yourself completely.” Over and over, he visualized robberies and murders, especially of stubborn bank clerks. X also told Palle to write a detailed plan of his political party, including badges and organizational chart. After each training session, Palle woke up feeling a wonderful inner peace (as suggested).

X scheduled Palle’s next bank heist for March 29, 1951. Palle retrieved the gun from the woods. He again took a briefcase. He rode Nielsen’s bike this time. As he arrived at the bank, he again felt tremendous inner resistance surge up inside him. In a later rehypnotization, Palle relived his struggle to overcome that resistance at the moment when he arrived outside of the targeted bank:

> *“Well this is it...get it over quickly...then it’s all right...(moaning slightly)...Oh! It’s the usual thing. Why the devil have I got a body that has to put up resistance every time I’m going to do anything? Now (signs of violent affect)—(groans)...I can’t do it...body resisting the will...it is only something to be conquered. It can be conquered...it must be conquered...I lean the bicycle up outside—that’s right—Now it’s just a matter of three brisk steps.”* **(Reiter, 1958, pp. 154-5)**

Palle went up those three steps, walked into the bank, pulled the gun out of his briefcase, and shot a bullet into the ceiling. He threw the container onto the counter. He told the teller to fill it up with money. The teller hesitated. Palle, in posthypnotic trance, imagining himself to be the instrument of divine power, feeling the power of X with him in that moment, and obeying his extensive conditioning preparatory to that moment, shot the man dead.

Palle then turned to the bank manager and told him to fill the briefcase with money. Instead, the manager reached for the alarm switch. Before he could touch it, Palle also shot him fatally.[1] A bank worker on the periphery sounded the alarm. Hearing it, Palle turned and rushed out of the bank.

As he ran out of the bank, Palle also ran out of posthypnotic suggestions. This scenario was not covered in his programming. So, the posthypnotic trance suddenly ended. He was wide awake. He interpreted that as X having abandoned him. As before, when he encountered something unexpected which his posthypnotic instructions did not cover, Palle became panic-stricken. He jumped onto the bike and pedaled away. He managed to escape everyone who was chasing him—except for one fourteen-year-old boy.

Capture, Interrogation, Psychiatric Evaluation

The youngster saw Palle go into an apartment house. He then turned back, flagged down a policeman, and told him where the bank robber had gone. The Copenhagen police searched the house. They found Palle just entering an apartment. He admitted that he was the object of their search. They went with him into the apartment.

Inside sat a drunk, dirty old woman. She told the officer that Palle was a friend of her nephew, Nielsen. She said Nielsen was vacationing in the country with a nightclub dancer who rented a room from her. She gave police a photo of Nielsen.

Interrogation—Palle Hardrup insisted, despite intense interrogation, that he had planned and carried out the crime alone. "Did you have an accomplice?" they asked, over and over. "No, none whatsoever," he always said. Doctors at the Institute of Forensic Medicine reported that Palle was icy calm. He spoke casually of his robbery, apparently unremorseful. He said he had never discussed the idea with anybody else, that it was entirely his own.[2]

He parroted for authorities, word for word, all that Nielsen had told him under hypnosis to say if he was arrested. He would explain to them, as long as they cared to listen, that his robbery was only to get money to finance his political party. He told them about the organization chart and badges. The doctors assumed he was psychotic.

Police checked their files and discovered that Nielsen had a serious criminal record. But he was verified to have been out of town at the time of the crime. The investigation of Nielsen was dropped. Palle was processed for trial. Nielsen's plan to pull off the perfect crime was successful. Even under those terrible circumstances, and despite careful interrogation by doctors and police, Palle's hypnotic conditioning did not break.

Informers—Most victims of unethical hypnosis have no witnesses to their conditioning. Or the witnesses are unable, or afraid, to come forward and testify. But Nielsen had bragged to other prisoners about his power over Palle, and many persons had seen him hypnotizing Palle. After Palle's robbery and murders were reported in the newspaper and on radio, witnesses began to come forward.

The first break in the case was an anonymous letter claiming important evidence, and asking to meet a detective in a Copenhagen bar at a certain time. A detective went. The informant said that he had been in the same prison as Nielsen and Palle for several years. He said Nielsen and Palle were both serving time for collaboration and had shared a cell. He said that Nielsen had hypnotized Palle and caused him to become

> *...virtually his slave, giving up all his personal possessions and even much of his prison food to him. The code, or trigger sign which always sent Hardrup into a deep trance was the sign of an X, and Nielsen had so conditioned his subject that whenever this sign was made he went straight into a state of somnambulance. The informer insisted that although Hardrup had carried out the raid, Nielsen's was certainly the mind controlling him at the time.* **(Edmunds, p. 148)**

Other released prisoners from Horsens also contacted the police and provided information. Men still in Horsens spoke to prison authorities, who contacted the police and passed on their statements. All said the same thing: Palle was Nielsen's hypno-puppet.

When police confronted him with this new evidence, however, Palle was unmoved. He still insisted he alone was guilty and that his intent was only to raise money for political purposes, not to give to Nielsen. The psychiatrists now, however, were looking for a new type of evi-

---

1. Alexander Cannon, an English medical hypnotist, warned of the possibility of crime by posthypnotic suggestion, and predicted an event such as this in a 1950 article: "...when an hypnotic suggestion of a criminal character is carried out, it is done with the greatest coolness." He quoted an earlier analysis by Du Prel: "Hurried on by irresistible force, the subject feels none of the doubts of the criminal who acts spontaneously. He behaves with a tranquillity and security..." **(Cannon, p. 19)**

2. In 1887, Bjornstorm described an experiment in which a subject was told to steal a bracelet while hypnotized, which she did. Later, she was given a posthypnotic suggestion to accuse a man of having done the crime, which she also did. An early 1950's Rand report to the Air Force and the CIA agreed that "a hypnotized subject will often accept and confess to an implanted memory as a real event in his own past life." **(Bowart, p. 69)**

dence. They noted that Palle's denials were "unreasoned, mechanical reiterations of the same simple statements." **(Edmunds, p. 148)**[1]

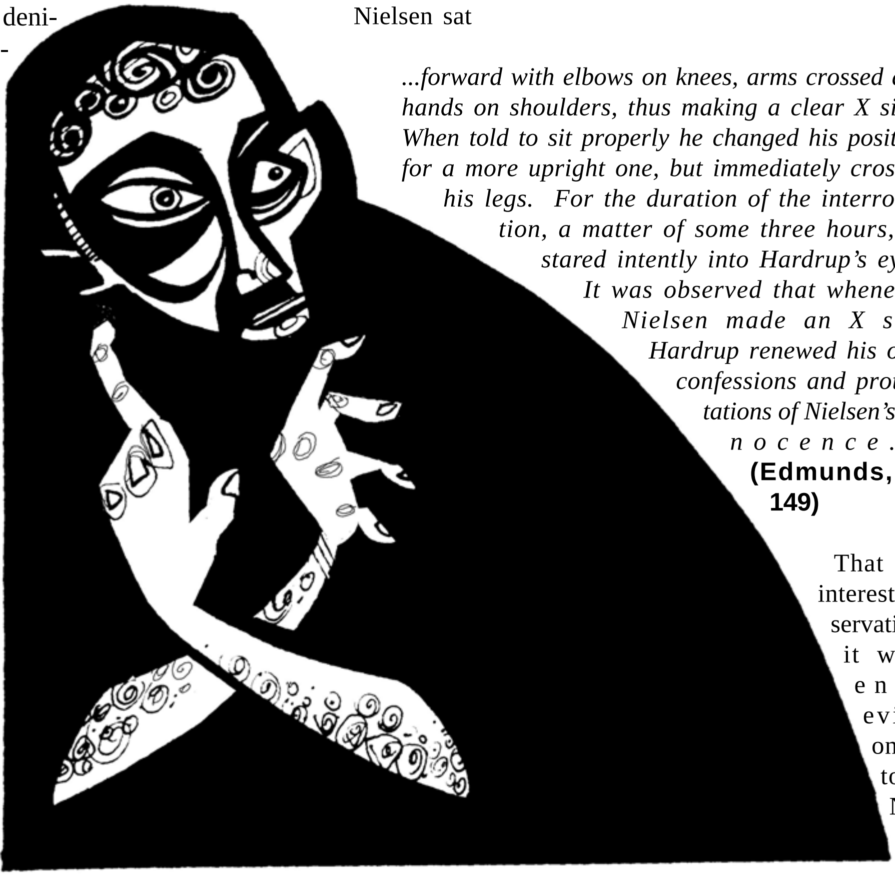

Psychiatric Evaluations—The police reopened their investigation of the case. They called in Dr. Max Schmidt, Chief Police Psychiatrist, to consult. He had never heard of Palle before, but he knew Nielsen from past criminal adjudications. When Schmidt asked Palle if he had ever been hypnotized and what he knew about hypnosis, Palle became agitated and upset. He said that his "good angel" would not allow him to answer that question. He then repeated all the elements of his canned confession. Then he begged them to just "get it over." **(Edmunds, p. 149)** When Schmidt told Palle that an identification of Nielsen and his guardian spirit would explain a lot, Palle absolutely and emotionally rejected the idea.

Dr. Schmidt gave Palle a battery of psychological tests. His IQ was 129. His claim to have robbed and killed because it was his destiny to rule and save Denmark was classified as "an atypical paranoid psychosis with a system of delusions, though without other distinct schizophrenic features." **(Reiter, 1958, p. 205)** The doctor told police that Palle's "psychosis-like condition" had been caused by subjection to prolonged, intensive hypnotraining. He told interrogators to just substitute "Nielsen" wherever Palle said "X" and they would get the real picture.

Palle still would not agree that he had been hypnotized.

The police talked to Nielsen again. He denied loaning his bicycle to Palle. They decided to question Palle with Nielsen in the room. The usual questions were asked. Palle gave the usual declarations of his own guilt and denials that Nielsen had anything to do with it. Police noticed that Nielsen sat

> *...forward with elbows on knees, arms crossed and hands on shoulders, thus making a clear X sign. When told to sit properly he changed his position for a more upright one, but immediately crossed his legs. For the duration of the interrogation, a matter of some three hours, he stared intently into Hardrup's eyes. It was observed that whenever Nielsen made an X sign Hardrup renewed his own confessions and protestations of Nielsen's innocence . . .* **(Edmunds, p. 149)**

That was an interesting observation, but it was not enough evidence on which to arrest Nielsen. The attempt to build a case against him seemed impossible. Then, somebody remembered a bank robbery in another Danish town, seven months earlier, which had the same modus operandi. The robber had escaped. Witnesses identified Palle as the holdup man in that one, too.

When police questioned Palle about that robbery, however, he could not remember a thing. He explained that his good angel "told him when to remember and when to forget." **(Edmunds, p. 149)**

The police talked to Bente. She told them that she had seen Nielsen hypnotize Palle many times using the X sign. She said she had long suspected that Palle was involved in the first robbery. Police noticed that Palle received a letter from Nielsen every day, content innocuous, but always marked with an X. Another prisoner told them that Nielsen had paid him to draw X marks on walls where Palle was sure to see them.

Palle still insisted he had committed the crime entirely on his own.

---

[1] A subject with amnesia-cloaked hypnoprogramming tends to repeat verbatim the content of that programming, in response to questions that stimulate it.

Dr. Reiter Enters the Case

Nielsen was defended by a team of the best lawyers money could buy. They based their client's defense on his claim that Palle could not be hypnotized. It looked strong. Neither Dr. Schmidt, nor the police department's expert hypnotist on staff (a detective who was in charge of Palle's case for the first year) could hypnotize him. To prove a case of victimization by hypnosis, Palle had to be demonstrably capable of amnesic somnambulism: quickly and deeply hypnotizable, capable of positive and negative hallucinations, and of unknowingly obeying posthypnotic suggestions because of complete suggested amnesia—a state of mind in which "critical powers and free will were abolished." **(Reiter, 1958, p. 87)**

At this point, the police called in Dr. Reiter. He was one of Denmark's foremost hypnosis experts, a faculty member lecturing on psychotherapy and psychosomatic medicine at the University of Copenhagen, and an expert on criminal psychiatry. Like Schmidt, Reiter already knew Nielsen well. Dr. Reiter had been Director of the State Institution for Psychopathic Delinquents when Nielsen was incarcerated there and was also his parole officer after discharge. In addition, Nielsen had later attended the psychiatric clinic of a hospital which Dr. Reiter directed.

Reiter believed that unethical hypnosis was not possible. He had recently testified, for the defense, in the case of a 44-year-old hypnotist accused of using hypnosis to have sex with a female client. Reiter testified, in court, that he doubted that the alleged abuse could have taken place. (The Court sentenced the hypnotist to prison for eighteen months anyway.)

Reiter first visited Palle in April, 1952. The accused looked pale and harassed. He acted tense, stiff, and unnatural. For the first five weeks of their daily meetings, they just talked. Palle told Reiter what he could remember. He seemed genuinely interested in getting to the bottom of it all. But he did not remember anything about hypnosis. He did not remember anything about the first robbery.

Futile Attempts to Hypnotize Palle—From May 27 to July 4, 1952, Dr. Reiter tried to hypnotize Palle. Each time, Palle descended to a light trance level—and stopped there. Reiter's attempts did stir up in Palle painful, chaotic thoughts of times spent with Nielsen, but there was no recovery of amnesic memories, either in or out of trance.

One day, Nielsen encountered Palle in court. After that meeting, Dr. Reiter noticed that Palle's beliefs in his guardian angel and his mission, and his amnesia, had been reinforced. He began to have spontaneous hallucinations again in which X talked to him about his mission. Palle also began to feel upset all the time. He did not know why he felt so anxious. He told Dr. Reiter that he was having chronic insomnia. Time after time, he would be just on the verge of falling asleep, and then he would suddenly feel tense and frightened, afraid of losing control, afraid of becoming unconscious. He had frightening dreams when he did sleep, but, when he awoke, he could never remember exactly what he had been dreaming.

The first fifteen times that Reiter tried to hypnotize Palle, what happened was a very atypical pattern. Palle went into a light trance, but no deeper Anybody, who can be hypnotized, even a little, will normally go into trance more easily, and deeper, with each subsequent induction. Palle responded exactly the opposite. Any induction method which worked once on him took longer to work, and worked less well, each successive time that Reiter used it.

For example, the first time that Reiter told Palle to stare at a bright light, he entered a light trance in just five minutes. But each repeated attempt to induct using the light took longer—and Palle never went deeper. The first time that Dr. Reiter tried a levitation technique, after twenty minutes Palle was in a light trance. When Reiter suggested the deeper state of catalepsy, and touched Palle's hand to deepen by "anchoring," Palle jerked awake. The next time Reiter tried the levitation induction, it took 47 minutes to get Palle into a trance, and this one was less deep than before. Again and again, Reiter changed his induction technique. Palle's reacted the same.

Reiter knew that Nielsen's defense team was claiming that Palle was not capable of deep hypnosis. The police psychiatrist, however, suspected that Nielsen had given Palle sealing suggestions against induction of deep trance. If every other hypnotist was limited to light trance, all Nielsen's commands to Palle would remain dominant; a command given at a deeper level of hypnosis automatically prevails over one given in lighter trance.

If the problem was depth sealing, how could he break through?

Day after day, Reiter attempted to hypnotize Palle—and continued to fail. Then, one day, the doctor tried an new, much more powerful induction method—barbiturate narcohypnosis.

Evipan Breaks the Seal—On July 4, 1952, Reiter asked Palle to stare at the light for three minutes. Then he injected Evipan (a European brand of Sodium Amytal) to chemically force him into trance. As the drug took hold, Palle cried out in sudden, terrible distress, "No! No! Let me go! I won't do it! I can't do it!"—on and on like that for the next two minutes. Reiter described Palle's condition in those few minutes as "the most high-pitched and obviously painful affect." **(1958, p. 89)** The anguished yelling was Nielsen's hypnoprogramming resisting the chemical induction.

Then the doctor told Palle to open his eyes and look again at the bright lamp. This time, within 30 seconds of staring at the blinding light and hearing Reiter's soothing "Sleep, sleep" suggestions, a narcohypnotized Palle fell into a truly deep trance.

Now—after the staring, plus drug, plus second staring—Palle's body relaxed. His facial expression became calm and peaceful. All the anxiety and tension that had characterized his behavior up to now was suddenly gone. Reiter let him rest like that a half hour, then gave suggestions that he would awake feeling fine and acting calm.

Palle awoke and said he felt fine. He was acting calm too—which was completely unlike his reaction to previous hypnotic induction attempts by Reiter. So the doctor knew that his suggestions had finally taken hold!

Dr. Reiter asked Palle what he remembered and how he had felt during the procedure. Palle said he remembered staring at the lamp before the injection. He remembered the shot. He said it had made him feel as if he were split into two persons. "He was terribly afraid...There was something which seemed to prevent him going to sleep, although he felt very sleepy and influenced." **(Reiter, 1958, p. 90)** Palle also remembered staring at the light the second time. From then, until after Reiter's suggestion to return to consciousness, he remembered nothing. His spontaneous amnesia proved that Palle could reach a somnambulistic depth, for he had just done so!

Nielsen had a back-up hypnoprogram implanted against the possibility someone might succeed in breaking through his control. A new series of posthypnotic suggestions now kicked into action in Palle's brain. Although, in all their previous meetings Palle had been friendly and fully cooperative, now his facial expression turned hard. He acted tense, suspicious, apprehensive, and started an argument with Dr. Reiter. Next day, his newly suspicious and defiant attitude remained in place. He told Reiter that he was no longer willing to be hypnotized unless Reiter would allow Nielsen to come and see if Nielsen could also hypnotize him.

Palle had a legal right to reject hypnosis by Reiter. So, on that day Reiter did not try to hypnotize him. Instead, he spent the whole session reasoning with Palle, trying to persuade him to let Dr. Reiter continue to hypnotize him. The doctor said that he would be very interested to see what took place if Palle and Nielsen were together (though he actually thought Palle's idea was ridiculous, against Palle's best interests, and undoubtedly was Nielsen's hypnoprogramming). He added that such a meeting should happen much later. He ended by telling Palle to let prison officials know what he decided.

That night, Palle tossed and turned, again unable to sleep as he wrestled in his mind with the undefined force in him which did not want him to see Reiter again. Before that restless night was over, he had defeated the unknown enemy in his lonely night combat. He had decided to continue with Reiter.

So, the next day, Palle came to see Reiter again and told the doctor his decision. The prisoner still was upset, nervous, talking fast, agitated. Reiter wasted not a moment. He again used lamp staring, followed by injection, followed by a second lamp staring to induct Palle. Again Palle went into a deep, amnesic trance. For the rest of July, Reiter repeated the same induction routine: staring, shot, staring. Every time, Palle went into deep, deep trance. Over the next ten sessions, Reiter decreased the amount of injected Evipan a little bit more each time, until finally the shot was just distilled water. It still triggered deep trance in Palle (classic Pavlovian conditioning). Later on, Reiter omitted the injection, using only the two eye fixations. Palle still went into deep trance. He was again a conditioned hypnotic subject.

Palle, the Somnambulist

Training—First, Dr. Reiter trained Palle to be an obedient hypnotic subject.

> *...the "training-in-hypnosis" period should not be abandoned until it has been established that posthypnotic suggestions are carried through in a fashion that leaves no doubt of the mastery of the situation by the operator...a patient or subject should possess a number of accomplishments...He should be able to enter a deep trance almost as soon as he is instructed to do so; he should be able to revert memorially* [regress] *to earlier periods of his life; he should be able to verbalize while in the trance state; he should be able to carry out suggestions for posthypnotic behavior especially as these apply to recall or amnesia.* ***(Lindner, Rebel Without a Cause, 1944)***

Palle soon entered deep and amnesic trance, in less than a second, to whatever induction cue Reiter had specified. He settled Palle onto the letter "P" as a regular cue, imitating Nielsen's use of the letter "X." Reiter gave supplementary suggestions to prevent Palle from going into a trance if he saw a random P—such as in a sign. The doctor also gave sealing suggestions to protect Palle against more hypnosis by Nielsen: "If you ever receive an induction cue from any person but me, it will have no effect at all." (But earlier and more repeated programming tends to be dominant over later and less often repeated programming.)

Transference—Nielsen had got Palle to unconsciously accept the guru's hypnotic instructions as coming from Palle's guardian spirit/X/God. Reiter decided to mimic that system, except that he made Palle's unconscious receive the doctor's hypnotic instructions as coming from Mama and Daddy. Reiter wanted an unconscious transfer-

Classical Conditioning

Any biological function that is normally **unconscious (reflexive)** can be **classically conditioned**. Your level of consciousness can be conditioned because it normally adjusts unconsciously, just like your retina diameter and heart rate. Salivation at the sight of food is another normally unconscious (reflexive) function.

An assistant to Pavlov did the original classical conditioning experiment, using a dog. The dog would begin to drool as soon as he saw food, a natural response. The assistant began to ring a bell right before he brought food in where the dog could see it. Soon, when the bell rang, the dog drooled in anticipation of food. After that, the food might or might not arrive, but the dog still drooled when he heard the bell. A salivation response that was naturally associated with the sight of food now appeared at the artificial sound of the bell. That's classical conditioning. Classical conditioning is an **unconscious association** wherein an arbitrary outside signal is made to cause an event inside the subject's body.

In classical conditioning, the subject is **passive.** A dog with its salivary gland outlet in the mouth hooked up to an externally visible measuring tube, or a human subject willing to get a needleful of barbiturate in his arm is "passive." The subject's response to the biological cue is involuntary and reflexive. Pavlov placed meat powder on the dog's tongue; and it began to salivate heavily. Dr. Reiter injected Palle with barbiturate; and Palle's state of consciousness lowered to deep trance.

In classical conditioning, the desired association, or **reinforcement,** occurs before the elicited response: salivation or trance. The **conditioned (**unnatural) stimuli of bell or needle are timed together with the **unconditioned** (natural) stimuli: meat powder or barbiturate drug. Our natural learning system is associative. It does not work if the bell rings after the food comes, or if the fluid injection happened after consciousness lowers. Sequence is all-important in classical conditioning. The bell has to ring either at the same time, or slightly before, for the conditioned response to develop.

Classical conditioning is the unconscious creation of a **mental reflex**. It is **automatic learning**. An association between the two stimuli (bell/meat; needle/drug) is made so strong that, eventually, the artificial one (bell, needle) can replace the natural one (meat, drug). Thus it happened that the sound of the bell that Pavlov's assistant rang before placing the meat powder on the dog's tongue soon caused the dog to salivate, even when the assistant did not give the dog any meat powder. The dog was **conditioned**.

A famous experiment with human conditioning was reported, in 1933, by Hudgins, "Conditioning and the Voluntary Control of the Pupillary Light Reflex." Ordinarily, you cannot control the expansion or contraction of the pupil of your eye because that is an involuntary reflex. Your pupil automatically contracts at the stimulus of a bright light, expands in the dark. Hudgins conditioned human subjects, as Pavlov had with dogs. Hudgins would say, "Contract," and the bell would sound, and the light would flash in the subject's eye. After only a few hours of training, Hudgins could simply say the word "contract," and the subject's pupil would contract—no light, no bell, just the word!

In the 40s, Gregory Razran conditioned human subjects to salivate when he said "style" or "urn." Then he got them to **generalize the response** and therefore to salivate to synonyms such as "fashion" and "vase." (The generalized responses were weaker.) Okake Naruse, University of Kyoto, caused conditioned hallucinations. He made hypnotized subjects stare at a screen. Naruse flashed a light (or sounded a bell), then projected an image on the screen...

> *...at low illumination. He gives the subject a pad of paper, has him draw the image several times, then suggests amnesia for the whole experience and brings him out of hypnosis. Later he tells the awakened subject to watch the screen; he sounds the bell, projecting nothing, and asks the subject to draw what he "sees." People do, quite dependably.* **(London, *Behavior Control*, 1969, p. 290)**

They drew the image projected during the past hypnosis. Conditioning, plus amnesia, made that work.

Dr. Reiter's needle, even though filled with pure water, because of the phenomenon of classical conditioning, soon resulted in an equally deep trance as if the drug had been used.

ence, of Palle's strong original bondings with his parents, to himself. Reiter succeeded: "More and more he identified me with persons belonging to his early infancy..." **(Reiter, 1958, p. 92)**

Reliving many emotional, painful episodes from his childhood and school years for Reiter increased Palle's hypnotic susceptibility to him yet more.

Testing—After training came a testing phase. Reiter tested Palle's trance depth by all possible standards. He suggested a visual hallucination. Animals played around Palle. The doctor suggested that Palle open his eyes. With eyes open, Palle still "saw" the romping animals. (That is **waking hypnosis**, a proof of somnambulism.) On Reiter's suggestion, Palle petted and played with the animals. Reiter next tested his ability to have hallucinations in color, negative hallucinations, and to talk to old friends resurrected in imagination. Palle performed all that with no trouble.

Only then, did Reiter begin to regress Palle. After Reiter began regressing Palle to the Nielsen period of his life, he still began each session with testing, including a regression to something "neutral"—a childhood scene, or something to do with his current life and relationship with the doctor. Before and after the neutral regression, Reiter daily tested Palle for evidence of deep, authentic somnambulism: total amnesia, "massive catalepsy," anesthesia for a painful pinprick, complex multisensory hallucinations, and "bridge phenomenon." Palle always demonstrated complete somnambulism.

"Bridge phenomenon" meant that Palle's neck rested on the back of one chair, his ankles over the top of another. He lay there, in catatonic trance, stiff as a board. Reiter further tested Palle's bridge by loading forty kilograms on his outstretched body. His body remained rigid, supporting the weight.

Somnambulist Palle Is Demonstrated

Reiter gave several demonstrations of Palle's somnambulist abilities to persons involved in his case.

Induction Cue, Phone—Dr. Reiter showed how Nielsen could have given Palle hypnotic suggestions over the telephone. A policeman brought Palle into a room where several official observers, Reiter's assistant, and a telephone awaited. Reiter phoned from a nearby room. The officer who answered told Palle that he had a call and Palle took the phone.

Reiter asked, "How are you?"

"Fine," Palle said.

Hypnotist: An "Artificially Induced Superego"

R.W. White was a psychoanalytically-oriented psychiatrist and research hypnotist. He saw in hypnosis a "transference of the loving, hating and fearing attitudes which were first aroused by the parents" to the operator. **("An Analysis of Motivation in Hypnosis, " p. 154)** Kubie and Margolin were also Freudian-oriented research hypnotists. They said that hypnosis is essentially the displacement of the conscious mind's (ego) control by

> *...a complex image of the hypnotist which becomes part of the subject. This image functions in the subject as does the residue of parental images in adults. It delimits memories and contacts, dictates purposes, distributes inner rewards and inner punishments, and engenders strong affects. In some measure, therefore, it temporarily dispossesses the earlier authorities (i.e., the superego), or merges with them...The incorporated image of the hypnotist plays the same role in the hypnotic subject as does the incorporated and unconscious image of the parental figure in the child or adult. Hypnosis thus is seen to be an experimental reproduction of a natural developmental process.* **(Kubie and Margolin, *"The Process of Hypnotism and the Nature of the Hypnotic State"*)**

A hypnotic subject accepts the hypnotist as an unconscious displacement for his or her own ego the way a child unconsciously incorporates parental points of view.

> *In the induction stage the hypnotist becomes for a time the sole representative of the external world and, once hypnosis has been achieved, while the subject reinstates his normal boundaries in both time and place, the hypnotist remains incorporated within his conscience as "an experimentally induced superego figure.* **(*Ibid.*)**

Reiter then said, “Now listen carefully! P!” Palle’s head instantly collapsed onto the desktop. His eyes closed. The phone receiver fell from his ear.[1]

Reiter’s assistant yelled Palle’s name and shook him. Palle could not be awakened; he remained in deep trance. Then the assistant held the phone by Palle’s ear. Reiter gave Palle instructions over the phone to wake up. Then, Palle awoke. He remembered nothing of what had happened while he was in trance.

Induction Cue, in Writing— Reiter’s assistant then handed Palle a letter from Reiter. Palle opened the envelope and read the message inside:

Greetings from P. Reiter

Seeing the initial P in a letter from Dr. Reiter cued another trance. Again, Palle’s eyes closed and his head collapsed onto the desktop. Again, the observers shouted and shook him, but were unable to bring him out of it.[2] Again, Reiter’s assistant placed the phone by Palle’s ear while Reiter told his subject to wake. Again, Palle woke with no memory of the trance.

Amnesia and Posthypnotic Suggestions- Palle later wrote about a similar demonstration:

> *Now I am awake, and now I am asleep. One moment Dr. Reiter is giving an explanation and the next time I wake up (I don’t remember falling asleep in the meantime), all those present are sitting looking in their notebooks. They are all confusing fragments which it is completely impossible to write at all sensibly about.* **(Reiter, p. 187)**

The doctor next demonstrated his subject’s obedience to posthypnotic suggestions. He hypnotized Palle and told him that, exactly three minutes after he was awakened from trance, he would stand up and walk over to the Assistant Commissioner. He was to then ask that gentleman his age, what year he left school, and what caused him to choose the career he did.

Reiter then awakened Palle and chatted with him. Palle had no memory of being hypnotized, nor of the posthypnotic suggestions which Reiter had given him. Three minutes later, Palle suddenly looked at the Commissioner. He then walked over to him and, in the most polite and apologetic manner, asked the exact questions he had been told to ask.

Reiter said, “Palle, why did you do that?”

Palle explained (**rationalized**) that he had suddenly thought how interesting the career of an important police official must be. He said he wondered how a person got into that important work.

Reiter then dropped Palle back into trance and gave him another posthypnotic suggestion. He said, “In precisely three hours, you will hear my voice, just like you used to hear the voice of X talking to you. You will not be surprised by that. You will call the jail guard, and ask to see the police solicitor.”

The police called Reiter at home that evening to report. They said his posthypnotic suggestion to Palle had been carried out in every detail. Exactly three hours after Reiter gave the suggestion, Palle (now back in his cell) had acted upset. He had called the warder and told him that he had now begun to hear Dr. Reiter’s voice. He said “he thought it was too bad that not only did he have to hear X now and then but that I, too, had to interfere in his affairs when he was on his own.” **(Reiter, 1958, p. 94)** Palle then asked for paper and wrote on it a request to see the police solicitor.

During their next appointment, Palle told Dr. Reiter about hearing his voice in the cell. Reiter’s “voice” had told him to be calm and have faith, because one future day the truth would emerge—if Palle himself would tell it. (Reiter had not specified exactly what words Palle would hear him say. Palle’s unconscious had itself composed that reassuring wisdom, which might conceivably have come from Reiter.) Palle couldn’t imagine why he had heard the psychiatrist’s voice in his cell.

Reiter then suggested a series of multisensory posthypnotic hallucinations, including an apparition of himself. Palle obediently hallucinated the suggested visits from Dr. Reiter. The doctor appeared in his white coat as Palle lay on his cell cot, gave the signal P to Palle, and Palle’s cell transformed into a beautiful beach surrounded by bright flowers, blue sea, and shining sun. The prisoner heard a church bell sounding in the distance and felt full of peace.

A Criminal Suggestion—Reiter’s final posthypnotic experiment with Palle was a “criminal” suggestion to break prison rules. Up to this time, Palle had always followed prison rules and had never once complained about anything. Reiter suggested to a hypnotized Palle that, in the afternoon, he would feel overwhelmed, tired, and irritable, with no appetite for his supper, followed by words to the effect that: “Your food will look unappetizing. It smells rotten. You tell the prison guard that. He will probably insist that there is nothing wrong with your food. Then you start to get angry. You will speak rudely to the guard and quickly become even more angry. You say the most insulting words you can think of to him and become absolutely enraged. You would like to punch him, but you don’t dare do that. Instead you grab up the plate of disgusting food and throw it on the floor. After doing that, you become more calm. You start to feel sorry for what you have done.”

---

[1] A modern hypnotist giving posthypnotic instructions for a later phone induction usually tells the subject to remain upright and continue holding the phone to his ear after entering trance on cue. Reiter had not done that.

[2] In 1890, a British medical journal, *The Lancet*, reported that the Scottish hypnotist, Dr. Bramwell, had prepared a client for difficult dental work by giving certain posthypnotic suggestions. He gave the client’s dentist, Mr. Turner, a handwritten note. On the day of his appointment, the patient arrived at the office of his dentist, Dr.Turner. Turner showed him Bramwell’s note. It read, “Go to sleep by order of Dr. Bramwell, and obey Mr. Turner’s commands.” The pre-set cue worked. The patient fell into a deep trance and felt no pain during the ensuing surgery.

Later that day, back inside his cell, all went just as Reiter had suggested. Palle thought about his situation, and about his parents. He had been locked up in prison three years, so far, this time. He thought about how badly he had treated his parents, how alienated from them he had become. When dinner came, the bread and sausage tasted moldy to him. The milk tasted sour. Palle called the warder and told him that. The warder denied that the bread and sausage were moldy and insisted that milk was not sour. Palle got very angry, called him an idiot, and threw his plate onto the floor, where it smashed. Then he felt calmer and began to feel sorry for what he had done.

Regressions

Reiter was now daily regressing Palle to his life with Nielsen. First, however, each day, he returned him to scenes from his school years, then to early childhood (as young as two). After being confident that he was getting accurate regressions of verifiable events, the doctor would regress Palle to the Nielsen years. Reiter recovered Palle’s memory of experiences with Nielsen in chronological order. Palle’s daily sessions, each hours long, with Dr. Reiter continued for fifteen months. He did over a hundred regressive dramatizations of his experiences with Nielsen.

Reiter wanted to know every hypnotic method that Nielsen had used, everything he had told Palle under hypnosis which had helped to shape him into a hypnorobot. He wanted to know Palle’s state of mind at each stage in the planning of each robbery.

During the regressions, Palle usually lay motionless with the characteristic masklike, expressionless face of deep trance. A dramatic exception to that was when Palle remembered emotional events. Then, his expression displayed intense emotion, such as panic-stricken fear. The doctor noted that reliving deep feelings also made Palle’s respiration and pulse rate increase. Sometimes he trembled. Sometimes his face and hands broke into a cold sweat.

Palle’s waking voice was alert and fluent. But, when hypnotized and regressed, it sounded “weak, monotonous, almost ghostly...strangely passive...[except when] a frightened shout or scream.” **(Reiter, 1958, p. 159)** Palle relived old conversations as if a videotape of that event were playing in his brain. He remained silent during moments when another person was speaking. At such times, Reiter felt as if he were listening to somebody talking on the phone.

When Reiter instructed Palle to say what the other person said, Palle imitated their manner of speaking as well as reproducing their words, speaking the part of each person in authentic tone and cadence. Reiter soon could recognize Palle’s representation of Nielsen’s deep voice and endless hammering in of programming suggestions.

Guarantee Truthful Regression—Dr. Reiter made sure that Palle’s regressions were the most authentic sort: “I am there,” rather than “I was there.” He would hypnotize him, specify the day and time of day he was to regress to, then say:

> *You will experience all you went through on that day, in every detail. You do not only dream it, nor remember it, you really experience it, you are in the middle of it. You will tell me exactly what you do.* **(Reiter, 1958, p. 101)**

He told Palle not to add or leave out anything. He gave strong suggestions, at the start of each trance, designed to punish the slightest deviation from truth:

> *...if he was guilty of giving a false account or if he diverged a hairsbreadth from the truth he would be seized by a feeling of terror...He would be panic -stricken with fear, his heart would thump violently and he would begin to sweat and tremble. He would also feel pain at the root of his tongue. His tongue and his voice would fail him and he would be incapable of saying anything coherently. He would feel as if his neck were being twisted and he was being strangled.* **(Reiter, 1958, p. 101)**

One day, Reiter tested his truth-guaranteeing mechanism by suggesting to a hypnotized Palle that he had just told a lie. Palle's pulse began to race. Groaning and sweating, Palle managed to say, "I can't get any air. I can't speak. My tongue's all stiff."

When the day came that Palle was to relive the first bank robbery, Reiter gave an additional suggestion. If Palle did not tell the exact truth, he would feel the panic of his guardian spirit leaving him. [It probably was not smart to echo and reinforce any of Nielsen's conditioning.]

The police checked all verifiable details in the memories which Palle recovered under rehypnotization. All were confirmed.

Suggested Autobiography - Every time he hypnotized Palle, Dr. Reiter gave the prisoner a posthypnotic suggestion to write down everything he remembered of his visit to the doctor after he was returned back to his cell. Therefore, Palle recorded a series of puzzling encounters beginning with "Hello, how are you?" and maybe a short preliminary conversation—followed by the saying of good-bys. He never remembered being hypnotized. He never remembered anything that happened while he was hypnotized.

Dr. Reiter also suggested, every day, that his subject would write a chronological history of his life with Nielsen. He told Palle that memories would pour into his mind, that he would relive it all again, seeing everything clearly. Reiter encouraged Nielsen's victim to write these memories down. He said that the writing would relieve the pressure of them. So Palle wrote every day for months, every detail of his experiences as Nielsen's hypnotic subject. He always believed that the writing was his own idea—just a means to relieve the pressure and unburden himself of that troublesome history.

As with the regressions, Reiter gave Palle posthypnotic suggestions designed to prevent his subject from deviating in the least from the truth, or embroidering his experience the tiniest bit, while writing his autobiography. Reiter threatened that, if Palle strayed from the true facts of his case, his hand would cramp. It would refuse to write any more, and its writing would become illegible. Reiter also said that, if Palle's memory was unclear on some point, he would state that fact plainly.

Palle now consciously recognized that Nielsen's "spiritual exercises" were really hypnotic conditioning. He now knew that Nielsen had regularly hypnotized him for four years before the robberies, that he had deliberately trained him to commit crimes by means of desensitizing visualizations under hypnosis, and that Nielsen had given specific suggestions under hypnosis which caused him to commit the robberies and murders for which he would soon be on trial.

Palle now made statements regarding that history which were very different from those made when he was first arrested. Then, he had claimed he committed the crimes all by himself and for the sake of his "mission." Now, he said that Nielsen was identical with X; and the crimes had happened because of Nielsen's orders; and that being freed from Nielsen's influence made him able to know and say that truth.

Palle's autobiography, written because of Dr. Reiter's suggestions, gave a completely different version of events than what Palle had first told police. Reiter called it Palle's "exercise book confession." The psychiatrist planned to enter it as new evidence in the case. Reiter had heard and seen Palle's relivings during hypnotic regressions, and read the autobiography. The doctor now clearly understood exactly how Nielsen had captured and enslaved his cellmate's mind. He hoped to make those events equally clear to court personnel.

Palle, however, did not yet know all that the doctor knew about those past events in his life. Dr. Reiter had routinely hypno-instructed Palle that, while writing, those past events would seem very far away, vague, foggy, and emotionally unconnected to him. Accordingly, although Palle had now regurgitated all the facts which his unconscious knew onto paper, for Reiter and for the record, and he consciously understood some essential facts about that history, Nielsen's victim had not yet intellectually integrated all the intellectual and emotional reality contained in those pages.

When the trial began, Reiter still had not allowed Palle to consciously remember the specific details of what had happened in his years with Nielsen.

Trial Preliminaries

Nielsen always hoped for, and looked for, opportunities to renew his hypnotic control of Palle, reinforce the old hypnotic conditioning of his subject, and to add new conditioning designed to get the guru off the hook. October 9, 1952, Dr. Reiter, again, demonstrated Palle's hypnoskills

Palle's Dreams

Reiter also used posthypnotic suggestion to make Palle remember dreams and write them down when he woke up. (He recorded several hundred.) Sometimes the doctor suggested he dream on a particular theme, or of certain persons. Palle always obeyed, always believed it was all his own idea.

When Reiter said to dream about Nielsen. Palle dreamed he was in his childhood room at home. A big plane flew over very low, then

> *...with a frightful crash came down on top of a low garage just outside our window...I was quite paralyzed...the plane and the garage were completely wrecked...I heard another machine droning overhead. The next moment it was down on top of the first, if anything with a worse crash than before. I found the situation quite terrible. I was completely knocked out by it...I was shaken to the core...Some time after the third plane droned over. I knew that it would crash just like the two before it, but there was nothing I could do. I was paralyzed with horror while I waited for the crash. It was like a nightmare.*
>
> *The crash came as I had expected. I was completely beside myself. Shortly afterwards a fourth plane appeared and the same thing happened again...our house was on the direct route of all planes approaching the airport...*
>
> *Suddenly they [the police] arrested me for being the cause of the whole series of accidents...they found in a cupboard a tiny instrument which I had once constructed and later put away and thought no more about...It was quite a small innocent looking instrument which I had once made as an experiment...It was really nothing more than a toy made to amuse myself.*
>
> *As they produced it from the cupboard everything suddenly became clear to me. I realized, all of a sudden, that it was my instrument which had caused the planes to crash. It has since been found out by experiments that, besides the function that the instrument was constructed for, it had another function. Under certain circumstances it caused airplanes to crash if they came within a certain radius. I knew nothing about this, and only recently has science found out about this secondary function. It was, in fact, not my invention at all.*
>
> *At this point I woke up, and I had to sit up and get my breath before I could go to sleep again."*

Nielsen does not openly appear in the dream, but, as in real life, he is the unseen, powerful agent behind all the destruction. The "toy" symbolizes the original hypnotic training that Palle allowed Nielsen to do to him. Palle was so deceived. He thought the trances were no more than a toy, made to amuse himself. The "other function," which Reiter's "experiments" had shown the instrument had, was exploitative mind control.

Dr. Reiter asked Palle what he thought the dream meant.

Palle said, "Bjorn and all that he has done to me."

Reiter asked, "How did you feel during the dream?"

Palle said, "Wretched and panic-stricken over all the people who were killed."

to legal representatives. Neilsen, his defense lawyers, and their psychiatrist, Dr. Geert-Jorgensen, attended. (Reiter had recommended Geert-Jorgensen to Nielsen's lawyers because that psychiatrist firmly believed in the dogma of moral integrity—that no one can be caused to act against their morals by means of hypnosis.)

The show began with Reiter giving Palle his induction cue. Then the doctor pointed out to the observers the subject's instant shift into a state of profound trance as a result of perceiving the cue. Then he brought Palle out of trance to display the prisoner's total amnesia for having been hypnotized and for all events occurring while he was hypnotized. Then he cued Palle back into trance again. During that immersion, he made Palle regress and relive various criminal episodes. Here is the court transcriber's record of Palle's relived thoughts as he bicycled toward the bank where he would, in a few moments, attempt robbery and commit murder:

> *Subject: "I've got the pistol in my bag. It's loaded...Well this is it...get it over quickly...then it's all right...(moaning slightly)...Oh! It's the usual thing. Why the devil have I got a body that has to put up resistance every time I'm going to do anything? Now (signs of violent affect)—(groans)... I can't do it....I lean the bicycle up outside—that's right—Now it's just a matter of three brisk steps."*
>
> *Dr. Reiter: "How do you feel?"*
>
> *Subject: "I'm rather nervous..."*
>
> *Dr. Reiter: "Why don't you like it?"*
>
> *Subject: "...It is the physical resistance."*
>
> *Dr. Reiter: "Physical resistance?"*
>
> *Subject: "The body resisting the will...it is only something to be conquered. It can be conquered...it must be conquered."* **(Reiter, 1958, p. 154)**

Nielsen exuded an attitude of arrogant self-confidence while he sat and watched Palle's reliving. The criminal hypnotist acted as if he were one of the lawyers, instead of a man about to be tried for causing robbery and murder by means of a mind-control technology. Nielsen denied that Palle could be deeply hypnotized. He denied that the subject was deeply hypnotized in that moment.

Dr. Reiter said to Nielsen, "You may use any depth test."

Nielsen sharpened one end of a match stick. He cruelly shoved it far up under one of Palle's fingernails. Blood spurted. But Palle revealed no awareness of his injury, no sign of pain. Nielsen's lawyer, Geert-Jorgensen, and the guru himself had to agree it looked as if Palle really was in deep trance.

Throughout Palle's interrogations and trial, Nielsen (like Adam) cold-bloodedly exploited every opportunity to make himself look good, and to get Palle convicted. Smugly enacting his role of the falsely accused man, Nielsen energetically defended himself. His behavior was

> *...typical of the professional, criminal hypnotizer...It corresponded closely to the attitude displayed by the criminal protagonist in the famous Heidelberg case as described by Ludwig Meyer.* **(Reiter, 1958, p. 184)**

Reiter believed that his sealing suggestions, blocking Palle against hypnosis by Nielsen, were effective. He now invited both Nielsen and Dr. Geert-Jorgensen to try to hypnotize Palle. Neither of them could. (Nielsen did not want to succeed.) But even Nielsen's presence and his feeble attempt to hypnotize Palle aroused old conditioning in Palle. He had trouble sleeping that night. He lay awake, feeling afraid and worried. When he slept, he dreamed of Nielsen and X. And the next day he felt very nervous in the presence of Dr. Reiter. Reiter easily restored Palle's calm with a hypnotic suggestion.

November 1, 1952, at a court hearing which Dr. Reiter did not attend, the police, ignorant of the dynamics of hypnosis, seated Palle and Nielsen beside each other. While a witness was being questioned, Nielsen talked to Palle about his duty to X. (We know Nielsen did that because he was overheard.)

After Nielsen reinforced all his old conditioning again, Palle was even more torn by conflict between the opposing sets of programming from the two hypnotists. The next time that Dr. Reiter met with Palle, he was in such an obvious state of wretchedness, more nervous and tense than ever before, that Reiter asked him what the problem was. Palle was amnesic for his encounter with Neilsen, but he did know that, after his court appearance, he had begun to hear X's voice again. He said he could not sleep. When he did sleep, he had agonizing dreams in which X appeared, the world ended, and he was damned forever.

Reiter gave his induction cue, "P." It almost did not work. Finally, he got Palle hypnotized. It took Reiter ten days to return Palle to his normal calm and to get their hypnotic rapport back to normal. Reiter repeated suggestions, over and over, meant to weaken all ideas associated with X in Palle's mind and to prevent Nielsen from ever again influencing him.

Palle's defense lawyer and Nielsen's defense team were adversaries.[1] For two years, Palle's lawyer—although he was merely the court-appointed defense for an indigent criminal—had carefully researched unethical hypnosis. He frequently consulted with Dr. Reiter about the facts of Palle's history as they emerged in the regressions. He attended all three demonstrations of somnambulist Palle which Reiter gave.

Nielsen's defense team now managed to divest Palle of this excellent lawyer. Nielsen whined to the judge that he had confided too much in Palle's lawyer. He claimed to now realize that it would threaten his own case if that lawyer continued to represent Palle. The court accepted Nielsen's argument. Just before the trial, they stripped Palle of his well-informed lawyer and assigned a new one to him. The newcomer had only a couple weeks in which to prepare to argue one of the most technically unfamiliar and complex legal cases to ever enter the Danish court system.

Psychological Reports and Grief —April 30, 1953, Dr. Hojer-Pedersen (Reiter's assistant), retested Palle with the TAT. He reported that Palle now felt guilt for what he had done—and anger about what Nielsen had done:

> *He is passive, considers himself unfairly treated, primarily by N, through no real fault of his own. He has been hit by others and has himself killed by accident. He has been living in a world which was artificially made up for him, he has been chained up in his own imagination and now is 'tied to the gravestones.'...he has been made a tool of.* **(Reiter, 1958, p. 82)**

Of the 12 M card (the hypnosis picture in the TAT series), Palle said, "This is hypnosis." He attributed evil, profit-making intentions to the hypnotist. Looking at the picture made him feel anger. He said he wanted to give the old scoundrel pictured on the card a good shaking. His general responses showed optimism about the future despite dark shadows remaining from past events. He felt like Dr. Reiter had opened a window to the real world, to which the doctor belonged, through which fresh air now blew on him. He visualized Reiter as light which entered, and passed through, him.

Palle pictured his unconscious conflict between Reiter's present hypnotic control of him and Nielsen's former hypnoprogramming in imagery. He was standing on the edge of a mountain gorge. It was an endless abyss which plunged down and down. Dr. Reiter was struggling, using all the abilities he had, to influence Palle to come away from that edge. Although the doctor's approach was calm and scientific, emotionless, Palle said that he expected Dr. Reiter to win the battle.[2]

Dr. Hojer-Pederson reported that he found no signs of insanity in Palle and dwindling interest in religion and politics. He credited Palle's "ambivalent, but momentarily strongly positive dependence upon Dr. Reiter..." **(Reiter, 1958, p. 86)** as the cause of the changes. He noted Palle's keen sense of justice.

Just before the trial commenced, Reiter combined his observations of Palle's regressions, dreams, and other behavior, and Palle's autobiography, into a final, thorough report, consisting of 366 typed pages. He delivered this book-length tome to the court on June 15, 1953 (two years and three months after Palle's arrest). The gist of his report was that the true cause of Palle's criminal acts, the true perpetrator of them, was Nielsen.

The court took three weeks to read it. On July 6, they held another hearing. At this one, both Palle and Nielsen were present—again seated side by side. Nielsen murmured to Palle about what X wanted. The court declared that Nielsen and Palle would each be allowed to read Reiter's report, for one week.

Reiter planned and carried out his clinical strategies with icy detachment from Palle, the victim. He fought like a cool, but determined, chess master, again and again, before the court on Palle's behalf. Reiter's efforts were tightly focused on winning the case. He was a police psychiatrist, not a therapist. His job was to discover, demonstrate, and prove the truth about what Nielsen had done to Palle.

Now, however, Dr. Reiter recognized that Palle's state of mind must be part of his strategy. Reiter, who knew Palle better than anybody else (except perhaps Nielsen), therefore, asked the court for an opportunity to prepare Palle psychologically, before the prisoner saw the psychological report. He warned them that, without supportive preparation, Palle's mental condition could be damaged and his hypnotic cooperation affected by the shock of what it contained. Reiter explained that he had maintained the hypnotic repression of Palle's memory for details of his abuse by Nielsen. Despite the fact Palle had written them all down, Palle did not yet know them.

Nielsen, on the other hand, was pressuring the judge to turn over Reiter's report immediately. Reiter's appeal for delay was denied. Nielsen's request for immediate release of the report was accepted.

Reiter then asked that the release of Palle's copy be delayed, until he could psychologically prepare him. But the judge reasoned that justice required that Palle be treated exactly the same as Nielsen. That request was also denied.

---

[1] Nielsen's defense "team" may have been supported, in whole or in part, by persons who were interested in protecting the legal position of hypnotists.

[2] Research has shown that emotion is a component which tips associated programming toward a dominant status.

Reiter tried yet again. He asked the court to allow him to continue seeing Palle for therapy. He argued that maintaining their hypnotic relationship would prevent "relapse into the psychosis" (he meant a recovery of control over Palle by Nielsen and reinforcement of all the tragic X programming). Reiter said that his hypnotic relationship with Palle was not stable. He feared that, if it was not maintained, it could fade, or be eroded by Nielsen's influence. Reiter argued that therapy would maintain their hypnotic rapport, which might be needed if new problems came up which needed to be dealt with by hypnosis.

Nielsen's lawyers slammed back, asking the court to prevent Palle from having any more contact with Dr. Reiter—except for the two demonstrations already scheduled (to show Palle's new lawyer how hypnosis works). The court again ruled for Nielsen. It barred Reiter from talking to Palle until two days before the next demonstration (scheduled to be held in one month).

As a result of all those rulings, one day a police official handed Dr. Reiter's very long, icily clinical, and excruciatingly detailed report to Palle Hardrup. Palle was told that he had only one week to read the report. He had been given no advance preparation. He had no option of talking over its contents and how they made him feel with Reiter. In order to get through that thick stack of pages in one week's time, Palle had to read Reiter's chilly, convoluted prose every waking hour, plus far into the night hours he normally would have used for sleep. (After reading it, Palle discovered that he could not sleep, even when he tried.)

Before Palle saw the report, all he remembered of his hypnotic sessions with Reiter were the hellos and good-bys. Before he saw the report, he thought that writing the autobiography was his own idea. He thought the dreams he had were spontaneous productions. Before he read the report, Palle did not know he had fallen in love with Bente because of hypnotic suggestion. He did not know that he had given his fiancee for sex to Nielsen for the same reason. He did not know that he had visualized robbing and killing—even murdering his own mother. He did not know that Reiter would call him a repressed homosexual who was unconsciously in love with Nielsen.

As Palle read Reiter's report, page after page, he writhed with shameful, painful realizations. Not once in the report did Reiter give any impression that he might actually like Palle. Palle now knew the process by which Reiter had manipulated Palle into unconsciously relating to the doctor as if he were Palle's parent.

Was it possible that all Reiter had really wanted was just mind-control over him, so that the police psychiatrist could prove that he could manipulate Palle just like Nielsen had done? Palle was enduring a simultaneous harsh stripping away of all the illusions about the supposed friendship and respect Dr. Reiter felt for him. Reality, as Palle had imagined it, again, was revealed to have been grossly distorted. Again, the distorting had been done by a hypnotist. This time, the hypnotist was Dr. Reiter.

At the same time that harsh facts were eroding his attachment to Dr. Reiter, the report was stimulating Nielsen's latent conditioning in him. Reiter had wanted to prepare Palle with a blocking suggestion to the effect that reading those inductive words would not affect him. He was reading Nielsen's verbatim hypnotic suggestions from the very beginning of the guru's predations until their recent encounters, just as he had regurgitated those words from his unconscious memory under rehypnosis by Dr. Reiter.

Reading page after page of his transcribed relivings of Nielsen seances drenched Palle's mind once again with Nielsen words, Nielsen inductions—all the old X patter, X threats, and X promises. This flood of Nielsen words, Nielsen memories, Nielsen events, and X, X, X, stirred up elements of his former intense relationship with the guru. Nielsen had terribly abused Palle. He had been cruel and exploitative, but he had never ignored or abandoned him. Dr. Reiter (due to Nielsen and the court) had now disappeared from Palle's life.

Forced first by the barbiturate, then by conditioning, Palle had shifted the bizarre, deep love and loyalty, called hypnotic **rapport**, from Nielsen to Reiter. Despite those tormenting realizations, Palle now remained loyal to Dr. Reiter. He kept the X threat at bay, fought to stay out of the abyss.

After reading the report, Palle could not sleep. He desperately needed sleep, but sleep would not come. He thought about Bente. She had faithfully and regularly visited him in prison ever since his incarceration and, once, the thought of her had comforted him. In his weary mental ramblings, her image now blurred and transformed into a leering Nielsen face. He couldn't make it turn back into Bente.

When he did sleep, it was worse than the insomniac imagery. Terrifying, dramatic dreams of X frightened him. One night X, in a dream, ordered Palle to follow him again, back to that long ago day when he had first showed himself to Palle in a precious, strengthening vision. Then X was forcing him to obey: OBEY X. Palle tried to fight. He was trying to move his legs in bed, but the more he tried, the heavier they got. Then suddenly, half-dazed, he turned and looked into X's very face, and then he trampled it! His limbs had finally moved to accomplish that. He stomped and stomped upon the face of his god.

When Palle awoke from that dream, he desperately wanted to talk to Dr. Reiter. He asked to see him. The warder informed him it was forbidden. Palle held on, knowing he was scheduled to see the doctor again in a few days to prepare for their next demonstration.

When Reiter finally saw Palle again, he was shocked at the changes in him. Palle explained that, ever since reading the report, he had become more and more unhappy, anxious, scared, depressed, and confused. Reiter gave the induction cue, "P." It took him ten seconds to get Palle into deep trance instead of the usual less-than-a-second. Once Palle was in trance, Reiter suggested that he would have no more frightening dreams.

Then the doctor shifted to preparing Palle for the coming demonstration. It would be attended by Nielsen's lawyer and other court personages. Reiter repeated previous threatening suggestions meant to prevent any deviation from the truth. Right then, Dr. Reiter believed the most important thing he could accomplish for Palle was to win the legal case by displaying the utter totality of Palle's somnambulist obedience.

Reiter Loses Hypno-Control—Two days later, July 23, 1953, Palle was brought into a room where Reiter, Palle's new lawyer, Nielsen's old ones, and other legal personnel awaited him. Palle looked even more nervous this day than the last time Dr. Reiter had seen him. The prisoner was pale, sweating, tense, and ill at ease. Reiter asked if his suggestions under hypnosis had helped. Palle said they had helped at first, but then he had gone back to feeling upset. Palle handed Reiter a note he had written to him in his cell. Reiter read:

> *I simply shall not be able to stand it much longer. I feel as if my soul is hanging in shreds. My thoughts continually revolve round X-N, myself, the report and everything that has happened...* **(Reiter, 1958, p. 178)**

Reiter shoved the paper into his pocket. The observers were restlessly awaiting action. He had no time or legal option to give therapy—or even friendship. It was time for the demonstration to begin. Reiter spoke the cue, "P." Once again, it was a long ten seconds before Palle entered deep trance.

Reiter began the show. He suggested paralysis of various parts of Palle's body (catalepsy), then urged him to try to move that part. Palle could not. He stretched him out between two chairs stiff as a board. He suggested numbness, then inflicted pain on various parts of Palle's body to demonstrate the successful anesthesia.

Reiter then told his hypnotic robot that, when he was next awakened, he would be completely blind and deaf. Palle awoke unable to see or hear. He was obviously terrified, unable to comprehend why his dominant senses were not working (because of the amnesia). Reiter reinducted. He suggested a vivid positive hallucination, then a series of negative ones. Then Reiter snapped Palle in and out of trance, over and over, to settle an objection made by one of Nielsen's lawyers, and to demonstrate the subject's complete and spontaneous amnesia for all trance events. Then he put Palle through another series of obedience tests under hypnosis. Reiter suggested to Palle that, after he awakened him the next time, Palle would remember what had happened. He did.

Reiter snapped Palle back into trance. He told the observers he would next demonstrate posthypnotic suggestions. He said to Palle, "After I wake you up, you will see Nielsen seated in a chair beside you, talking to you." He woke up Palle. Palle was distressed to "see" Nielsen. "You didn't tell me he was coming today!" he protested to Reiter.

Still carrying out Reiter's posthypnotic suggestions, Palle conversed with the imaginary Nielsen, who was behaving absolutely in character. The hallucinated image of Nielsen made the X sign at Palle. It said, "X wants you to follow him again."

As Palle tried to fight against the invisible image's power over him, the audience stared. They heard Palle insist to thin air, "It's no use. We're finished. Go! I won't do it. I won't have anything to do with it. Stop!" **(Reiter, 1958, p. 179)** The image did not stop pressuring Palle to follow X again. Emotion contorted Palle's face as he struggled against the repeated X signs. The fascinated onlookers watched Palle's agony as he resisted the phantom Nielsen.

Seeing that he was scoring impact on the observers by means of the emotion generated in Palle, Reiter decided to give them even more emotion. He rehypnotized Palle and ended the Nielsen hallucination. He said, "At the bottom of your mind there is, at this moment, a particular feeling." He took Palle through a series of intensification steps: realizing the feeling, becoming clear about what it was, slowly feeling it become stronger and stronger, on up to feeling it "completely overwhelmingly."

Reiter gave this series of suggestions with secret confidence about what the outcome would be. He had put Palle through exactly the same hypnotic routine several times before. Every time, Palle had responded by saying how much he hated Nielsen because of all the suffering and damage his cellmate's hypnosis had caused him. Reiter wanted the assembled legal representatives to hear Palle make that impassioned declaration once again.

As Reiter had expected, the watchers now saw Palle, as a result of the doctor's suggestions, undergo a dramatic change of aspect. Violent emotion surged up in him. His face grimaced with pain and fear, then turned ghastly pale. His body broke into a cold sweat. His breathing became fast and shallow.

Reiter did not understand that Palle was off the script. In deep trance, his subject was experiencing a powerful, spontaneous hallucination. This time, the intensifying emotion he was feeling was not hatred for Nielsen. It was the powerful attraction of the X hypnoprogramming in his mind which Reiter's suggestions were intensifying.

Palle was now in the grip of a spontaneous visualization. At the edge of the fathomless abyss which he had first seen in his nightmare, he was struggling, wrestling with the dark angel, trying desperately not to be pulled over the edge into that bottomless, lightless chasm.

"Now, tell me what you feel!" Reiter said.

Palle, who was feeling the most extreme emotion neurologically possible, said nothing.

Reiter prompted, for the edification of the audience, "Is it Nielsen?"

Palle finally groaned hoarsely in response, "No, it's X!" **(Reiter, 1958, p. 179)** As Reiter had suggested, the terrible emotions in Palle were still steadily increasing in intensity. Suddenly, Palle screamed, "No!"

"What is it?" Reiter asked.

In a state of extreme terror, Palle yelled out, "I MUSTN'T DO IT!"

In the vividly hallucinated drama, he still struggled at the edge of that abyss. He now understood that the dark cavity was not only a concrete reality of terrible danger if he fell in; it was also a metaphor for an equally real state of eternal damnation. Over that edge lay an everlasting hell. He was on the edge, fighting with X, and X was trying with his every wile and strength to pull Palle over that edge, down into the abyss.

Reiter calmly asked, "What mustn't you do?"

Palle did not answer. Reiter made more ineffectual tries to participate in this hypno-scenario gone awry. Palle remained occupied by terrifying images of his struggle with X (who was now trying to push him over the edge of the cliff). Palle shrieked to X, "LET ME GO!"

Reiter asked, "Who is it that must let you go?"

All the doctor heard for the next several minutes was Palle's heavy breathing, as he remained in the grip of the deep trance visualization. Reiter was becoming concerned. He hastily said, in as confident a tone as he could muster, "You know that my influence is stronger than anyone else's." He gave calming suggestions, trying to undo his previous suggestions that Palle would experience maximal emotion.

Now, however, Dr. Reiter's words had no effect on Palle. The subject continued sunk in trance and totally distraught. He was still engaged in that terrible life and death struggle against the power of X. In the background, Palle now sensed that a friend, rushing to help him in that deadly combat, was near at hand. But now the doctor's effort was no use, too late. Palle suddenly struggling up ward from the hypnotic couch on which he lay, crying out, "Let me go. No!"

And then X caught Palle in one last horrible embrace and the god flung him over the edge of the abyss into the deep darkness.

As he fell, Palle yelled out, "Help! Help! HELP!" But he still fell, and fell, down and down, deeper and deeper. As Palle fell, he saw the figure of Reiter again. Now the Reiter image was near the image of X. Palle fell on, down into hell. As he fell, he watched the two figures, X and Reiter, come closer and closer until they touched, melted into one another, and merged into one image! Then he knew! X and Reiter were the same!

In that moment, Palle had realized that he was fighting Dr. Reiter as well as X! What had come together and became identified as one in his unconscious was Nielsen-as-hypnotist and Reiter-as-hypnotist.

Both hypnotists had forced their way into his susceptible mind. Both had gouged a groove of conditioning there by returning again and again to demand absolute obedience from his automatistic sector of mind. Both had made him do things he was not consciously aware of. Both had made him endure things to which he would never have consciously submitted. At that moment, Palle's unconscious mind saw no fundamental difference between Nielsen, the lowlife criminal exploiter who had used it to rob banks and get money, and Reiter, the high-class psychiatrist who had just used it to demonstrate his slick and powerful hypnotic techniques.

Then Palle woke up from the trance. He woke up on his own initiative, not because he had been ordered to wake up. He woke up because he wanted to wake up! He awoke, and then he burst into violent sobs.

Dr. Reiter sat beside Palle a while, murmuring reassuring things, but really he did not understand at all what had just happened inside Palle. After a bit, Palle did calm down some.

The legal observers had waited patiently through all this. Now that Palle was calmer, Reiter wanted to finish his demonstration. He gave the cue again, "P."

IT DID NOT WORK! Instead of instantly dropping into an unconscious trance state as Reiter had expected, Palle did just the opposite (**conversion reaction**). He jumped up from the couch, and stood trembling in front of Reiter in a hyperalert state of tremendous agitation. His expression was furious and threatening. His eyes flashed with rage. He appeared so near to attacking the doctor that the two police officers who were close rushed forward, seized him, and tried to force him to lie back down on the couch—to again become the passive hypnotic subject everybody was accustomed to viewing.

Palle successfully resisted all their attempts to make him lie down on that couch, fighting with superhuman energy and skill. More police surged in and joined the fray. Even eight of them could not hold Palle down on the leather cushions. Suddenly, he pulled loose from all their grasping hands. He rushed out of the demonstration room into an adjacent hallway. There, he stopped and stood, trembling and breathing hard.

Dr. Reiter signaled the police to stay back. He walked up to Palle and said calming things. Palle gradually relaxed. After a while, he agreed to return to the demonstration room.[1]

Dr. Reiter asked Palle to lie down on the couch again. Palle now obeyed. Dr. Reiter did not try saying "P" again. Instead, he pulled a hypodermic needle out of his medical bag, filled it with Evipan, and shoved the needleful into Palle. Reiter had not used barbiturate on Palle since he had first used it to break through Nielsen's sealing suggestions two years earlier. The barbiturate went into Palle's bloodstream and he became narcotized. But all the old hypnotic conditioning was now broken, gone. Palle was narcotized, but not narcohypnotized. Even the drug could not get Palle into an amnesic trance.

The Evipan did, however, calm Palle enough that he could explain to Reiter what had happened to him: the visualization at the edge of the abyss of damnation, the struggle with X on its edge, the falling, and the merging of the X and Reiter images.

At first, Reiter just could not believe it. He asked, "But you don't now think I'm still merged together with X, do you? You can tell me apart from X, can't you?"

"No," Palle said. "I can't."

Reiter argued with him.

Palle stuck with his new conviction. "You are the same," he insisted.

"That's not logical," Reiter said.

Palle agreed, "It's not logical." Then he explained, "It's not logic but my soul that's speaking, my soul which is in shreds. It is my unconscious part...and that has nothing to do with logic." **(Reiter, 1958, p. 181)** (It was not Palle's logical left brain, but his imaging right brain which had, quite literally, drawn that conclusion.)

Dr. Reiter never again could hypnotize Palle. He assumed that Nielsen, also, would never again be able to hypnotize Palle.

Trial and Appeals

Palle's new lawyer had been doing his best to understand the case elements and win Palle's friendship. Like his predecessor, he sincerely cared about his client, even though it was just a public defender job. He stayed on the case for the next two years.

The trial preliminaries were now over. Nielsen was charged with robbery, attempted robbery, manslaughter, and having received stolen money. In Copenhagen Central Criminal Court, a jury would listen to the evidence and decide if Nielsen (married, unskilled worker, age 39) was guilty of having planned the crimes of robbery, attempted robbery, and manslaughter (which were committed by Palle), and of having instigated the commission of those crimes by means of hypnosis. The prosecutors wanted life sentences for both Nielsen and Palle.

Dr. Reiter told the jury how he had overcome Nielsen's sealing suggestions on Palle by using Evipan. He explained the threats he had used to guarantee authentic regressions. He told them the history of how Nielsen had parasitized Palle's mind which he had learned from Palle's relivings under hypnosis.

Nielsen's defense team then set out to prove that Palle was insane, and/or a liar. It continued to deprive Palle, insofar as possible, of legal and psychiatric aid. Nielsen, who had lots of experience in court, only admitted something when irrefutable evidence appeared. He admitted, for example, that Palle had used his bicycle to commit the second robbery. He denied, over and over, having any role in either of the crimes. He insisted that he never had any hypnotic influence over Palle. His testimony was recklessly and impudently untruthful: false alibis, lies, changed statements. He refused to answer unwelcome questions.

---

[1] Reiter later described the incident as "strikingly in keeping with the collisions between systems of conditioned reflexes described by Pavlov." (Reiter, 1958, p. 29)

> *When anyone seemed particularly dangerous to him...he endeavored by all possible means to outmaneuver him and not infrequently with success.* **(Reiter, 1958, p. 184)**

Throughout the trial, Nielsen and Palle were in the courtroom at the same time, but they were not seated together. When not testifying, Nielsen was trying to catch Palle's attention. But Palle would not look in his direction, so Nielsen's body-language Xs were all in vain. Palle stayed calm and self-controlled throughout the trial, even when cross-examined by Nielsen's lawyers—even when his sanity, his truthfulness, and his morals were insulted in the most extreme way by Nielsen's defense lawyers and his defense psychiatrist, Dr. Geert-Jorgensen.

Geert-Jorgensen, the court-paid medical advisor to Neilsen's defense team, was Reiter's psychiatric adversary in the trial. In court, there is no absolute scientific truth in psychology and psychiatry. There is no one true analysis until the judge rules. Geert-Jorgensen insisted that Palle was lying, trying to excuse his bank robberies and murders. He testified that Palle had systematically, deliberately, and consciously invented the story of Nielsen hypnotizing him. He stated that opinion despite the fact that Dr. Reiter had entered the case because of eyewitness accounts of Nielsen hypnotizing Palle. (Palle was insisting at the time that he had done the crime alone). He ignored testimony that Reiter had forced hypnosis on Palle using a drug and then had dragged details of his hypno-abuse by Nielsen out in a hundred painstaking amnesic hypnotic regressions with threat of strangulation if he lied. It said it was only because of Dr. Reiter's suggestions that Palle had written his second confession.

Jorgensen's bottom line was not facts. It was the old dogma of moral integrity—that it is impossible to cause a person to commit a crime by means of hypnosis, unless that person already has a criminal nature. He admitted that Dr. Reiter had induced deep and amnesic hypnosis in Palle hundreds of times. He insisted that fact was irrelevant. He said that Palle was psychotic before he met Nielsen. He said there was no "medical proof" that Palle had ever been hypnotized by anyone before Dr. Reiter. Although he admitted that Reiter had hypnotized Palle, he called Reiter's demonstrations of Palle's somnambulist obedience "doubtful." Similarly, other members of Nielsen's defense team tried every way they could to reject hypnosis in favor of any other possible hypothesis.

Dr. Reiter, if given an opportunity to rebut all those claims by Geert-Jorgensen, undoubtedly would have shredded the claim that Palle had made everything up to shift blame to Nielsen. But Reiter was not permitted to testify again: "Unfortunately the time at the disposal of the court did not allow me to make any rejoinder to Dr. Geert-Jorgensen." **(Reiter, 1958, p. 183)**

That left Palle's defense up to his lawyer. The attorney explained that hypnosis was Nielsen's chief means of influencing Palle. He pointed out that Nielsen had subjected Palle to hundreds of hypnosis sessions, closely spaced in time. He said that Nielsen's amnesia suggestions had concealed all that conditioning from Palle's conscious awareness, preventing him from defending himself. WhenPalle had carried out posthypnotic suggestions, amnesia had concealed the true source of his ideas and behavior from his conscious knowing. Palle was made unable to know what was true in his thinking, and what was imaginary, what was his own idea and what was an idea covertly implanted in his brain by Nielsen.

Geert-Jorgensen's unrebutted claims strongly affected persons in the courtroom who naively believed that "experts" always know what they're talking about and always tell the truth in a courtroom. His "expert testimony" influenced the judge's charge to the jury and also the prosecutor's final speech to them. Both judge and prosecutor stressed that the jury should not regard the case as being about hypnotism. The prosecutor argued that although, in reality, hypnosis was the center of this case, it was not so in legality.[1]

July 17, 1954, the jurors delivered their verdict. They found Nielsen guilty of all charges—robbery, attempted robbery, and manslaughter. They found him guilty of planning the crimes, and of causing Palle to enact the crimes by several means of influence, one of which was hypnosis. Nielsen was sentenced to life imprisonment for robbery and murder even though he was not present at the scene! The jury had determined that serious criminal acts could be caused by a criminal hypnotist's manipulations of a somnambulist subject.

Dr. Reiter was pleased with the verdict. He had felt that the odds were completely against his side. Right up to the end of the trial, Nielsen had racked all the visible wins. Dr. Reiter's hard work had paid off. There was a jury decision based on his evidence—and he had a contract for a

---

1. The avoidance of the hypnosis issue resulted from

> *considerable fear for determining a new, mysterious and hardly definable crimogene factor in hypnosis...N's defense openly pointed out that by adopting such a theory the court was supporting superstition, witchcraft, the beliefs of the Middle Ages, etc.* **(Reiter, 1958, p. 209)**

book, which would be published both in Denmark and America.

Palle found it harder to see any victory in the trial's outcome. He had been accused of attempted robbery and two murders. Like Nielsen, he had been judged guilty by the jury. They sentenced Palle to life in an institution for the criminally insane.

The case seemed over. Reiter's professional duties were complete.

Palle Teeters on the Brink—Bente had long since given birth to Palle's baby. Palle felt both responsibility and strong love for his little girl. His feelings for Bente, on the other hand, were ambivalent. He felt he owed her a lot. She had faithfully stood by him despite his bad treatment of her. But she was the type of woman that Nielsen was attracted to, not the sort that he himself would have chosen. And he now knew that he had not chosen Bente. He had courted her only because of feeling hypnotically suggested love. He had been fooled into marrying her. He still felt wounded by the premarital adultery which Nielsen had forced on them. He felt like he and Bente were strangers. He did not expect to ever feel love for her again, but he wanted to do the decent thing by her and the baby.

Palle was no longer under Dr. Reiter's observation, and his mail was now unscreened. In November, 1954, Nielsen began to write to him (with many X's). Palle answered each letter. Nielsen asked Palle to change his statement to the court. Palle refused. Nielsen kept writing, kept X-ing, kept trying to reverse Palle's abandonment of X.

Palle wrote back in defense of himself. He vented his rage on Nielsen with savage, passionate fury—and vulgar epithets. (Persons who are in an emotional state—even a mood of rejecting—are far more easily hypnotized than persons who are indifferent to the inductive agent. Palle's intensely emotional, angry responses to Nielsen were evidence that Nielsen still had potential for hypnotic power over him.) Palle's resistance to Nielsen's induction efforts, held firm. He was his own person again.

In January, 1955, Palle began writing an autobiography on his own. He found it far more difficult than before, now that he did not have the motivation of daily hypnotic commands from Dr. Reiter. Nevertheless, he managed to crank out about seventy pages. Both his parents were elderly and in poor health now. The manuscript, many times, expressed concern about them and sorrow for the close, sincere relationship with them which had been destroyed by Nielsen. Palle mourned, "...what a blight it must have cast over their life...to see how I slowly drifted away from them in a strange way that they could neither understand nor do anything about..." **(Reiter, 1958, p. 189)**

Palle remembered his childhood dream of growing up, making money, and buying them good things. He longed to be out of prison and able to restore their confidence in him, to help them in their old age. But his mother died in the spring of 1955. His father was also ill. He died early in 1956. Palle's human ties, outside his prison unit, were now limited to his bizarre correspondence with Nielsen, his strained relationship with his wife, thoughts of the daughter he scarcely knew, and the remnant of his bonding with Dr. Reiter.

October 12, 1955, Dr. Reiter visited Palle in prison. He was shocked by Palle's state. The prisoner was very tense, very depressed, clearly torn by violently conflicting emotions within himself. On the one hand, he felt that he should accept his life sentence and all its consequences. On the other, he burned with thoughts of its injustice, its failure to reflect the true facts of what Nielsen had done to him. Palle had not yet been moved into the prison for the criminally insane, but he knew that soon he would be sent there. He dreaded the coming shame of that permanent move. He considered it worse than being in regular prison. He told Reiter that he no longer had a future. He also said that he no longer had any religious faith, no hope of any sort.

Palle talked the most about his young daughter. He told Reiter that he had decided it would be best for her if he got out of her life forever. Although the thought of doing so hurt him worse than anything, he was planning to ask Bente to divorce him, change her name, marry again, and raise their child so that no one in the child's life would know that her father was a convicted robber and murderer incarcerated in an asylum for the criminally insane. He added that, for his daughter's protection, he must never see her again. He said that he was truly innocent of the crimes, but that the people in his child's life would never understand that. As he talked to Reiter, Palle trembled with suppressed sobs, and tears flowed from his eyes.

Dr. Reiter could see that Palle was at a breaking point. The doctor knew that the prisoner's future was not as bleak as he thought. Dr. Max Schmidt, Chief Police Psychiatrist, and the Medico-Legal Council were planning to officially advise (soon) that Palle should be transferred from the institution for the criminally insane to a regular mental hospital. From there, they planned a discharge for him (to be followed by several years of psychological supervision).

Reiter longed to comfort Palle with that good news, but since none of it was official yet, the rules did not allow Reiter to tell it to Palle. (Dr. Reiter was a man who always followed the rules.) First, Palle had to go to the institution for the criminally insane and go through their evaluation procedure. The recommendation had to be made official. Then Palle could hear the good news.

In the meantime, Palle broke.

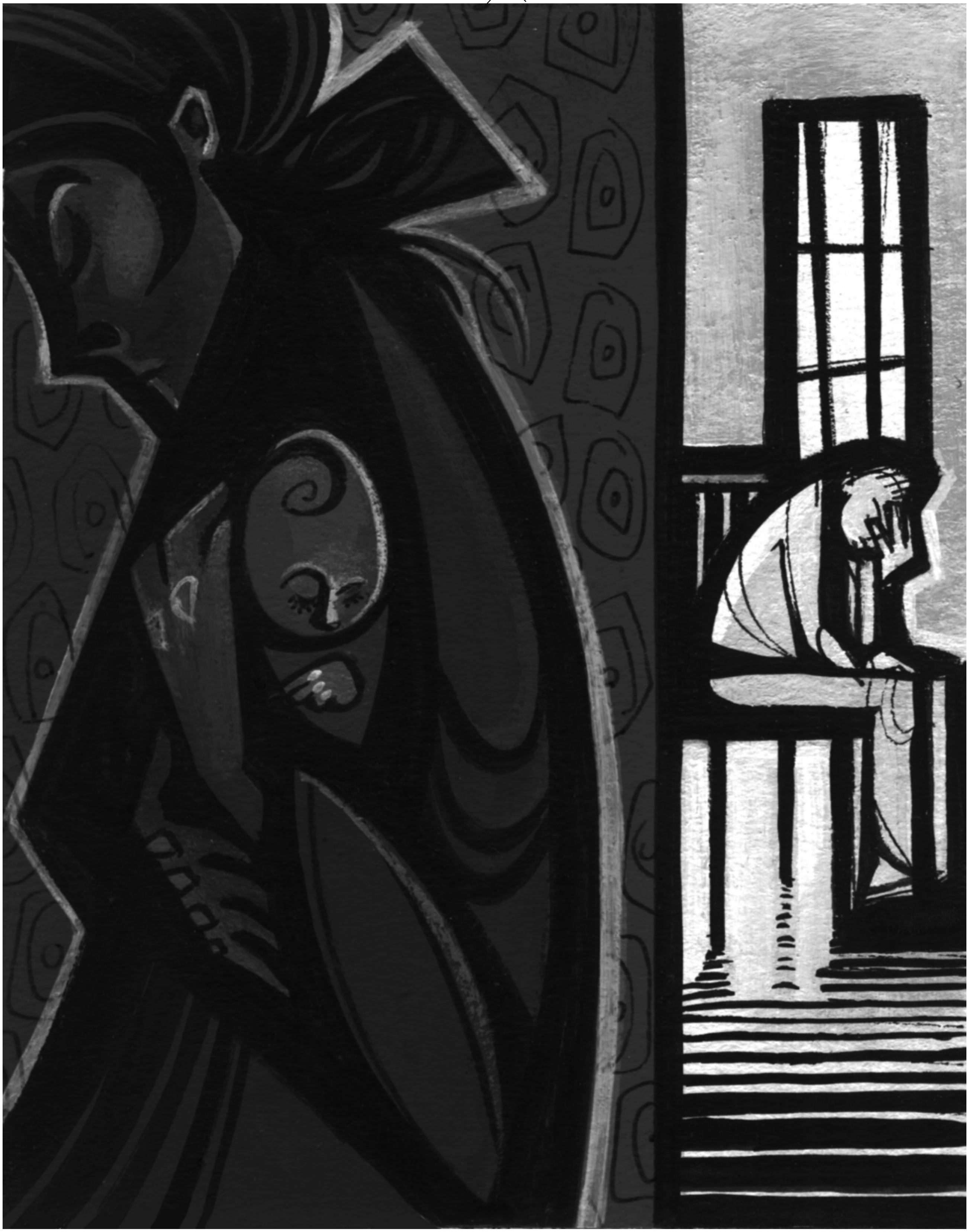

“New Evidence”—Ever since the jury’s decision, perpetual appeals by Nielsen’s legal team (based on his “not guilty” claim) had kept the case in the courts. On November 18, 1955, the Danish Supreme Court unanimously upheld the lower court’s ruling and rejected an appeal for retrial.

To trial watchers, it looked like the end of Nielsen's defense efforts. A few days after the Supreme Court's denial, however, Nielsen's lawyers asked that the case be reopened by the Special Court of Appeal which Danish law allowed when new information appeared after a verdict. Nielsen's lawyers said they had important new information which, if known before, could have resulted in a different decision.

The Medico-Legal Council's opinion on releasing Palle was officially released a few days later, on November 24, 1955, but nobody informed Palle that he was scheduled to soon become a free man.

In the meantime, Nielsen's "new evidence" appeared. December 18, one month after their appeal to reopen the case began, Palle sent a letter to Nielsen's lawyers. Palle did not show that letter to his own lawyer before he sent it. The letter sounded as if it were dictated by Nielsen—or his lawyers. The content can be summed up as follows:

- Palle admitted committing both the robberies and the murders.
- Palle denied that anybody had ever hypnotized him—not Reiter and not Nielsen.
- Palle said that spontaneous hallucinations about being destined to establish a party, unite Scandinavia, and reform society had caused him to commit the crimes. He said those delusions resulted from a mental problem that had since cleared up on its own.
- Palle said he gave Nielsen the position of party treasurer and, therefore, handed over all the money to him, later discovering that Nielsen had succumbed to temptation and spent it on himself.
- Palle said that Nielsen had received stolen goods, but had not in any way instigated his crimes.

On December 21, Palle sent an associated letter to his own lawyer. It asked that the word "hypnosis" be removed entirely from the case.[1]

Palle's lawyer was horrified at this series of letters. He knew they could ruin his client's chance for freedom and rehabilitation. Convinced that Palle's mind had been recaptured by Nielsen, his attorney asked the court to once again provide a psychiatric hypnosis specialist, such as Reiter, to uncover the truth of the matter, and to free Palle's mind again.

When Palle heard what his lawyer had done, he reacted with such fury that his attorney quit. The court appointed a new lawyer for Palle. The new attorney meekly accepted all of Palle's latest declarations about the case. In May, 1956, Palle's new lawyer also filed a request to reopen the case.

Now, both Nielsen and Palle had appealed to reopen the case based on Palle's third version of events, his third on-the-record version of confession. The first "confession" was his post-arrest declaration that Nielsen had nothing to do with the robbery and murders. The second version was his autobiography (written under suggestion), and associated statements—recorded after Reiter helped him recover his memory. The third was in that recent series of letters.

The appeals court now had to decide which of Palle's three confessions was the real one.

Nielsen was writing letters too. He wrote letters to the court saying that all of Palle's old statements about being hypnotized were just ravings. He referred again and again to Palle with exaggerated pity as the "poor psychotic fellow."

Psychological Assessments—Dr. Reiter unhappily observed all these developments from a distance. He was not allowed to talk to Palle now. He followed the developments as best he could. He attended the public court hearings when the case finally came before the Court of Appeal. He noticed that Nielsen's lawyers got Palle's disturbed, angry letters to Nielsen admitted as evidence that Palle was mentally ill. Nielsen's letters to Palle were not admitted. Reiter wondered why not.

In this new trial, Palle testified at length. Dr. Reiter was amazed at how much his former subject's behavior had changed. In previous court appearances, and in his many private sessions with Reiter, Palle had always behaved correctly, like a somewhat nervous, nice, and well brought up young man.

As Dr. Reiter watched the prisoner testify before the appeals court now, however, what he observed most resembled the way Palle was recorded by police observers as having acted when fresh from the murder scene—back when he was full of Nielsen programming. Like then, Palle now was...

> *...aggressive, cynical, impudent, reticent, dishonest, gave explanations which were obviously incorrect and often badly constructed, accused the police of corruption and bribery and refused to*

---

[1] If the hypnosis lobby was supporting Nielsen's defense effort, that is the outcome they would want: no hypnotist is culpable, and hypnosis cases are never to be tried as such.] On September 11, 1956, Palle sent his lawyer a second letter. It claimed that he had only pretended to be hypnotized by Reiter.

> *make a statement when during the cross examination by the prosecution he found certain questions awkward to answer.* **(Reiter, 1958, p. 194)**

Dr. Reiter no longer had any doubt. He knew that Palle was back under Nielsen's hypnocontrol. Reiter wrote in the notes he was now privately keeping on the case, "His artificially created secondary personality was now plainly dominant." **(*Ibid.*)**

The Court of Appeal asked Dr. Sturup, head doctor of the Institution for Psychopaths, where Palle was currently confined, to report on Palle's mental state. Palle refused any examination, even a purely physical one. So Sturup informally observed Palle. He reported that Palle was well behaved, always quiet and appropriate. He pointed out that the prisoner's behavior in the hospital differed curiously from his attitude in the courtroom.

He said that Palle seldom said anything about the legal case but, when he did, what he said contradicted his statements in court! For example, in one personal conversation with Sturup, Palle had said "Of course hypnosis played a part" in what was going on. Another time, Dr. Sturup said to him, "You must have a really atypical personality if you were able to fool Dr. Reiter into thinking you were hypnotized for years when you really weren't." Palle repled, "Anyone ought to be able to see all that is in Reiter's report can't be wrong." Sturup said, "I personally saw you under hypnosis with Reiter and it sure looked to me like you were telling the truth." Palle gave a quick nod of agreement.

Sturup then reminisced to Palle about his letter to Nielsen's defense team, and his testimony before the court. As the doctor talked about those things, he noticed tears had appeared in Palle's eyes. Palle brought his hands up before his face, as if to hide those tears. Then he began to pace up and down the room, in an obvious effort to calm himself. He said, "If Nielsen hadn't been there, it would have gone entirely different."

Dr. Sturup whole-heartedly agreed. He, and many other observers, had noted the influence which Nielsen's presence (with his perpetual making of X signs with his legs or arms) invariably had on Palle.

Sturup transcribed these conversations and concluded his report to the court with a statement that he had observed no symptoms of insanity in Palle.

Although, Dr. Reiter had not been involved with the case for some time, the Court of Appeal now asked him to also assess Palle. Reiter was told to do that based only on the case documents—without meeting Palle in person again. Reiter did as requested. He then reported to the court that Palle's second testimony, the autobiography, was the only true one. With an emotional intensity surprising in that normally stern and restrained professional, Reiter informed the court that Palle's third version of confession was the consequence of:

- The court order instigated by Nielsen's lawyer which prohibited further contact between Palle and Reiter and which denied therapy for Palle, and

- The letters from Nielsen to Palle "which the prison authorities with incredible thoughtlessness allowed." **(Reiter, 1958, pp. 197-8)** Reiter said those letters had put Nielsen's longtime hypnotic subject at extreme risk of recapture, a risk which soon became fact.

Nielsen Hits Again—After reading Reiter's report, Dr. Sturup immediately halted Nielsen's letters to Palle. Unknown to Sturup, however, a prisoner had just arrived into Palle's unit who had been previously housed in the cell next to Nielsen. Nielsen knew that this man would soon be transferred to Palle's unit. The guru had given him detailed instructions to pass on to Palle: "X says...." The old X programming was long since reinstated in all its tragic automaticity in Palle's mind. So, when Palle heard that X wanted him to give the cash inheritance which he had received from his father's estate to this new resident (who had outing privileges), he did so.

X's plan was for the privileged one to escape from his attendant on the next outing. He was to then use Palle's cash to purchase weapons and a car, and then help Palle himself escape. X had ordered that, after Palle escaped, he was to shoot the hospital's director and the Minister of Justice. (Maybe Nielsen, or his lawyers, had heard that Palle was scheduled to be released.) After Palle handed over his money to Nielsen's newest subject, the new resident did temporarily escape with it. But he was soon recaptured and confessed all. He could clearly remember the plans he had made with Palle. He was fuzzy about Nielsen's role in it all. If Nielsen, or his lawyers, had been unhappy because of hearing that Palle was scheduled to soon be released, they no longer were. Palle's record now looked worse than ever. The Medico-Legal Council's plan to release him was shelved for the time being.

The matter reminded Reiter of Palle's 1949 escape from Horsens prison, on orders of X—and then he had to serve extra prison time which kept him in longer than Nielsen. But Nielsen denied everything, portraying his usual role of abused innocence.

Appeal Denied—The Court of Appeal issued a preliminary report in May, 1957. The Court's evaluation of the situation was that Palle's mental state was "an artificially established, induced psychosis, created and developed through the influence of another person...making use of all the ways and means at his disposal...including hypnosis." **(Reiter, 1958, p. 201)**. It concluded that "induced impulses" (posthypnotic suggestions) had been used by Nielsen to exploit his control over Palle with criminal intent.

A month later, the Court of Appeal held a final three-day hearing. The prosecution studied Palle's three different statements and finally concluded the "most fantastic and unlikely" one, his second, was the only one which definitely matched the evidence. On that basis, the Court rejected both Nielsen and Palle's requests to retry the case.

Nielsen's lawyers later got the case appealed to the European Court of Human Rights, which decided in Nielsen's favor.[1]

Reiter's Book

Reiter's book about the case history of Palle Hardrup and Bjorn Nielsen, *Antisocial or Criminal Acts of Hypnosis: A Case Study*, was first published in Danish, then translated into English.[2] In addition to reporting Palle's case history, Reiter also reviewed expert research and opinion on unethical hypnosis, from 8th and 19th century European hypnotists who had speculated and experimented with "antisocial hypnosis" up to his own time. He included synopses of Dr. Kroener's case of "Z" and the Swedish Sala case.

American writers who mention this case usually misrepresent it. Aaron Moss (an expert on disguised induction?) repeated the crazy stuff that Palle said at his arrest as being evidence of Palle's mental illness. Moss did not mention that it was programmed in by Nielsen. Moss implied that poor Mr. Nielsen was falsely accused and jailed because of that psychotic Palle and his irresponsible psychiatrist, Dr. Reiter, who generated false testimony in Palle under hypnosis. Moss cited a third-hand "Bech, n.d."[3] as his source of this information. (Apparently, he did not read Reiter's book.) Several American research hypnotists have quoted Moss as being the final word on Palle's case.

Reiter pondered these strident denials of the possibility of unethical hypnosis in the face of so much evidence. He speculated that they were due to preconceived opinion so impervious to reason or evidence that it was best termed "dogma."

> *...the growth of this dogma was due to very human motives, not least on the part of a number of professional hypnotizers...who understandably enough wished to reassure a public likely to be alarmed by the dangerous potentialities of hypnotism.* **(Reiter, 1958, pp. 38-39)**

---

[1] A British expert, based at Cambridge University, wrote in a legal reference book:

> *French and German laws treat it as an instance of absence of mens rea. The argument is that hypnotic suggestion creates a very great compulsion to perform the act.* **(p. 768)**... *The question probably depends, in large part, on the extent of dominion attributed to the hypnotist. One opinion favors the view that a hypnotized person cannot be forced to perform acts that are repugnant to him. If this is true, the most that the hypnotist can do in the direction of criminal activity is to remove an inhibition and cause the subject to commit a crime to which he is already inclined. This view is, however, challenged in a recent work by Dr. Heinz Hammerschlag, who concludes from a survey of the evidence that 'there is no basis whatsoever for the view that moral weakness in a hypnotized subject is a condition for the misuse of hypnosis.' It seems, therefore, that there is weight in the opinion of the American Law Institute, that the dependency and helplessness of the hypnotized subject are too pronounced for criminal responsibility.* **(Glanville Williams, *Criminal Law*, p. 769)**

[2] Reiter's book is the most thoroughly professional and detailed English-language psychiatric study of a case of unethical hypnosis. It is also dense, technical, severely jumbled in chronology, and coolly scientific in tone to the point of feeling inhuman.

[3] I have not been able to track down this source.

Case History: Candy Jones

☑

...public disclosure of some aspects of MKULTRA activity could induce serious adverse reaction in U.S. public opinion...

- CIA Inspector General (Scheflin & Opton, p. 132)

A small box sat on the table. Wires ran from it to her wrist and to her shoulder. They shocked her. It hurt terribly. They shocked her, over and over, and asked question after question about the story of her life and her CIA link. She did not know about any CIA link. The torturers would not believe her. They shocked her again. They asked, "What about Dr. Jensen. Do you know a Dr. Jensen?"

"You've asked me enough. You should know," she groaned. "Why don't you just kill me? Why do you keep me here like this?"

To somebody in Washington, D.C., what those interrogators were doing to Candy Jones was just an experiment to see if the programming of a hypnocourier held up under torture.

Childhood, Youth, and Career

Candy was born in 1925 (two years after barbiturates first came on the drug market). Her birth name was Jessica Wilcox. Her mother was a homemaker. Her father was a good-looking Polish Catholic who advanced from being a ticket taker (when he met her mother) to being a car salesman in Atlantic City (when he left her mother). Candy was three when Daddy stopped coming home. The mother and her child then went to live with Grandmama in Wilkes-Barre, Pennsylvania. The year was 1928. Grandmama was wealthy, well educated, pleasant natured, and an osteopathic physician.

Mother taught Jessica to sew, draw, swim, and ride, and use good manners. Dinner was always at five, an occasion for which to dress. During the meal, the little girl could speak only if spoken to. She had books, a cat, a dog, and playmates at their summer home on a lake. In winter, however, only her pets—and sometimes the cook's little girl, Snowflake—played with her. Mother did not allow her to bring friends home from school. They would "mess up the house."

The child loved to play in Grandmama's room, dress up in her clothes, sit in front of her big dressing table. She did that almost every day. The dressing table had pullout mirrors that could surround her on three sides, displaying seven images of little Jessica. One day she played tea party on the dressing table top and invited imaginary friends, the images in the mirror.

She was innocently performing a kind of self-hypnosis. Bright, imaginative children often do. Staring into a mirror invites trance at any age; children and teenagers are most susceptible to induction. You focus. Your mind becomes blank, and there's something about staring closely into eyes. Especially your own.

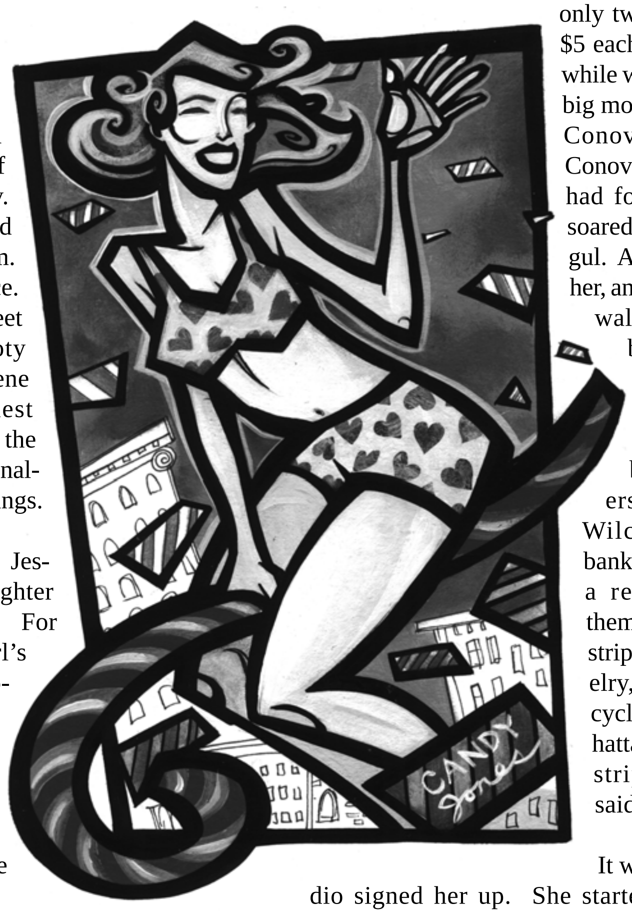

Jessica's tea party mirror playmates developed into an imaginary "club"—Doty (pronounced Dot-tee, a child's pronunciation of Dorothy), Arlene, Willy, and Pansy. As time went by, she did not need the mirror any more to play with them. Pansy was a good girl, quiet and nice. Willy was a boy who stomped his feet if he could not get his way. Doty tended to fight with Arlene. Arlene was the fastest runner, the highest climber, the strongest swimmer in the club. She had a domineering personality and was always trying to run things.

Grandmama died in 1936. Jessica was eleven. Mother and daughter then moved back to Atlantic City. For the next five years, the young girl's life was uneventful—sheltered, protected, and closely supervised by her mother.

In the wider world, there was war in Europe. Then the Japanese bombed Pearl Harbor, and we were in the war too.

In 1941, Jessica graduated from high school. She wanted to be a doctor like Grandmama, but mother would not pay for her to attend college. Mother told her to go to secretarial school instead. Jessica was not interested.

Candy Jones: Model—In June of 1941, Jessica Wilcox entered the Miss Atlantic City contest. She was the Girl Scouts' candidate. She won. Atlantic City hosted the Miss America pageant at that time. Jessica was not a contestant in the big show, but she marched in the parade and had many hostess duties because she was Miss Atlantic City.

Her long blonde hair, perfect features, tall, long-legged frame, bosomy contour, and sweet disposition attracted attention among the mob of newspaper and media people there to watch Miss America be chosen. The attention turned into an astonishing rush of enthusiastic press attention. By the close of the pageant, Jessica was surrounded by reporters and radio personalities begging for an interview or a photo. One of the contest judges was John Powers, founder of the famous Powers Modeling Agency. He invited her to come to New York and work for his agency.

To her mother's distress, Jessica accepted. She hung around the Powers stable for two weeks, but received only two photo jobs. (The pay was $5 each.) One day, on her off time, while waiting for a friend at the other big modeling agency in town, Harry Conover's, her big break came. Conover was a top male model who had founded his own agency and soared from model to modeling mogul. A photographer walked in, saw her, and spoke of her to Harry. Harry walked out, took a look at the blonde sitting in his reception area, and the magic began.

Conover bought the blonde's contract from Powers. He transformed Jessica Wilcox into Candy Jones, bankrolling a media blitz based on a red-and-white candy-stripe theme. Candy had red and white striped clothing, accessories, jewelry, matchbook covers, and bicycle. Conover showered Manhattan with 10,000 red and white striped business cards which said "Candy Jones Was Here."

It worked. Warner Brothers Studio signed her up. She started getting calls to pose for magazine covers and to appear in glitzy ads for products with big budgets. Her mother gave up on secretarial school for her and moved to New York to live with, and chaperone, Candy.

In 1943, Candy was voted Model of the Year. Loretta Young was a judge on the panel. She said Candy looked like "a real girl." The guys in the trenches also thought so. Photos of the tall blonde in a polka-dot bikini were pinned-up wherever there were GIs. A photo of her in a formal dress stitched from transparent parachute nylon was equally well received.

Candy took acting and voice lessons and won a leading role in the smash Broadway play, "Mexican Hayride," produced by Mike Todd. It ran for eight months. She was the model used on recruiting posters for the new branches of the military in which women could serve—

WACS and WAVES. In one month of that amazing year of 1943, her picture was on the cover of eleven magazines. (Estabrooks published *Hypnotism* in 1943, a book which urged government use of unknowing hypnoprogrammed agents.)

Lieutenant Candy Jones—The USO offered Candy an opportunity to tour through the Southwest Pacific in a show written around her. She accepted the task of bringing evenings of happiness to weary and homesick GIs fighting in Pacific operations. She became Lieutenant Candy Jones. She began the USO shows in 1944, with a six-month contract, then signed on for another year—a total of eighteen months. While on tour, the beautiful model, performer, stage show manager, and patriot briefly met General Donovan. (He was head of the OSS, a new agency which President Roosevelt had authorized at the beginning of the war for the dual tasks of gathering intelligence and of doing secret scientific research with military applications.)

In April, 1945, Candy was presented with a quart of fresh milk brought by airplane from Australia—a rare luxury in the cowless Southwest Pacific area. She drank it. But the cow had been sick. The milk had not been pasteurized. Candy got undulant fever. With her resistance down from the fever, she also developed active malaria. They put her in a Philippines military hospital. There, from unclean sheets, she caught a third disease: the "jungle rot." The rot was a fungus that made her beautiful blonde hair fall out in clumps. The malaria had given her a greenish-yellow skin tone. She looked terrible, but the New York photographers were far away. The medics right then were worried about keeping her alive.

While sick on Leyte, she encountered a military psychiatrist, "Gilbert Jensen."[1] In August, 1945, after four months of treatment and recuperation, she was well enough to go home. Before she left, Jensen gave her a photo of himself with his APO address written on the back. He asked her to write. She did not.

Back in the States, Candy starred in another Broadway musical, a wig and heavy makeup hiding the ravages of illness. It took eight months more healing before she could pose for photographers again. She married her employer, Harry Conover, on July 4, 1946. Marrying Candy was a good career move for Harry. He did not reveal to her his homosexuality. It took five months to consummate their marriage, but Candy—who was a virgin and not sophisticated—did not understand the problem until years later.

A Telephone Induction—Candy's busy career included many invitations to guest on the big time talk shows of that radio-dominated era. Technology could not yet provide phone interviews with quality sound. Therefore, even for a radio interview, she would have to fly to the broadcast station. In 1946, she accepted an invitation to appear on "Don McNeil's Breakfast Club" in Chicago. (That year, the OSS was reorganized as the CIA with the same two missions: secret intelligence gathering and secret scientific research.) There, Candy met another person who would be important in her hypnoprogrammed future.

Candy flew in the night before the show, registered at the Drake Hotel, and unpacked. Then the chills hit. The Leyte doctor had assured her there would be no more malaria attacks, but this felt like the old nightmare had come back. She went to bed, but the chills got worse. Under a mound of blankets, she was still shivering.

She called a staff employee at the Don McNeil Breakfast Club. He visited her, viewed the situation, and promised a doctor would call. Soon after he left, a doctor, "Dr. Marshall Burger," did call her on the telephone.

This doctor, like "Jensen," is known only by a pseudonym. Burger was a psychiatrist who hobnobbed with big names from both the political and entertainment worlds, especially movie stars. He was "a dynamic, craggy-faced egotist." And he was a hypnotist, "a pioneer and leading authority in the field of medical hypnosis." **(Bain, p. 137)** There were

> *...government-sponsored experimental programs with which he was closely identified. He'd begun working on such programs during World War II, and was one of the first doctors to probe the potentials of hypnosis as a tool of war. His sponsor for that project was the Central Intelligence Agency.* **(Bain, p. 137)**

As Candy Jones lay alone in her hotel room, shivering under the covers, desperate for relief,[2] Burger talked to her on the telephone. He said he was not able to come see her that night, but that he would drop by the next morning. He told her to count backwards. He said he was trying to relax her. He assured her that, if she would just count backwards, she would stop shaking and fall sleep.

Burger never told Candy that his "relaxation" was a hypnotic induction. At the beginning of his induction routine, Burger did not know whether or not Candy was a naturally good hypnotic subject. A hypnotist never knows for sure until he tries.

---

[1] "Gilbert Jensen" is the pseudonym which author Donald Bain used for him in *The Mind Control of Candy Jones*. We know no other name for him.

[2] This incident reveals that the big-time morning talk show of that era, "Don McNeil's Breakfast Club," used a psychiatrist with CIA connections, as its on-call, day or night, physician. When the talk show referred a patient, he was usually a political or Hollywood celebrity, alone in a hotel room, far from home, and feeling lousy. He was sick, due to natural, or unnatural?, causes). The patient was not likely to guess that his doctor was a CIA specialist in covert hypnosis.

Now, he tried. He told her to place the phone on the pillow next to her ear and count down with him. He combined the counting-down induction routine with suggestions that her shaking was stopping, her chills going away, her fever dropping. And sleep, sleep, sleep.

As she counted backwards with Dr. Burger, Candy's chills did diminish. She did feel sleepier, and sleepier, and sleepier. She fell asleep. In the morning, she felt okay. Whatever had caused the problem was now completely gone. She appeared on the Breakfast Club, then flew back to New York. She did not know she had been hypnotized. Burger, however, now knew that Candy Jones was susceptible to hypnosis. (Maybe he told Donovan.)

Marriage Breakup, Money Problems—In 1947, there was trouble inside the Harry Conover Modeling Agency. Other models were complaining that Conover showed favoritism to his wife in assigning jobs. Candy solved that one by opening her own agency right next door to Conover's office in the skyscraper called 52 Vanderbilt Avenue. Soon Candy's agency landed the lucrative Colgate-Palmolive account. She let Harry bill for her agency as well as his, and bank the payments.

Candy was always working. She toured overseas again, managing a USO show for U.S. soldiers fighting in Korea. She continued her modeling career until time took its natural toll, and the photographers did not call for her any more. She published books about glamour, dress, and fashion—and one about her experiences while touring for the USO during World War II. She gave birth to three sons: Harry, Chris, and Cari.

In 1958, she found out that her husband was bisexual (or maybe homosexual). That explained why he almost never reached out to love her. Soon after that, he disappeared completely. Candy took responsibility for all debts, including the rent on his office and hers. Then, she found out that he had withdrawn all the money from their joint bank accounts. Before he took off, there had been over $100,000 in there. Now there was only $36.

Candy struggled on. She found new sources of income. She began working on the radio, becoming a regular on the popular NBC weekend news program, "Monitor." Through her Monitor news interviews, she met people in the entertainment business, politics, and the military. Though naturally of a quiet nature, Candy maintained a socialite's life-style, going to Broadway openings and working for charities. She traveled a lot in her business, jetting coast to coast to watch fashion shows and give speeches.

Candy wanted her sons to have the best possible education and a stable environment. Since she was working and on the road so much, she enrolled all three of them in an expensive boarding school. She was also supporting her elderly mother, and the woman who looked after her. Without her husband's income, however, all those expenses were soon more than she could afford. After a year of desperate financial struggle, Candy finally took her lawyer's advice and sued Harry Conover for repayment of the money he had absconded with—and for alimony, child support, and divorce.

Her legal case against him made juicy headlines for the New York daily papers. In the end, she won. The judge gave Harry a choice of paying or going to jail. But Harry had been giving lavish parties every night for the past year, and now he had no money left. He went to jail for two years. Candy now also owed her lawyer a big bill for the court case.

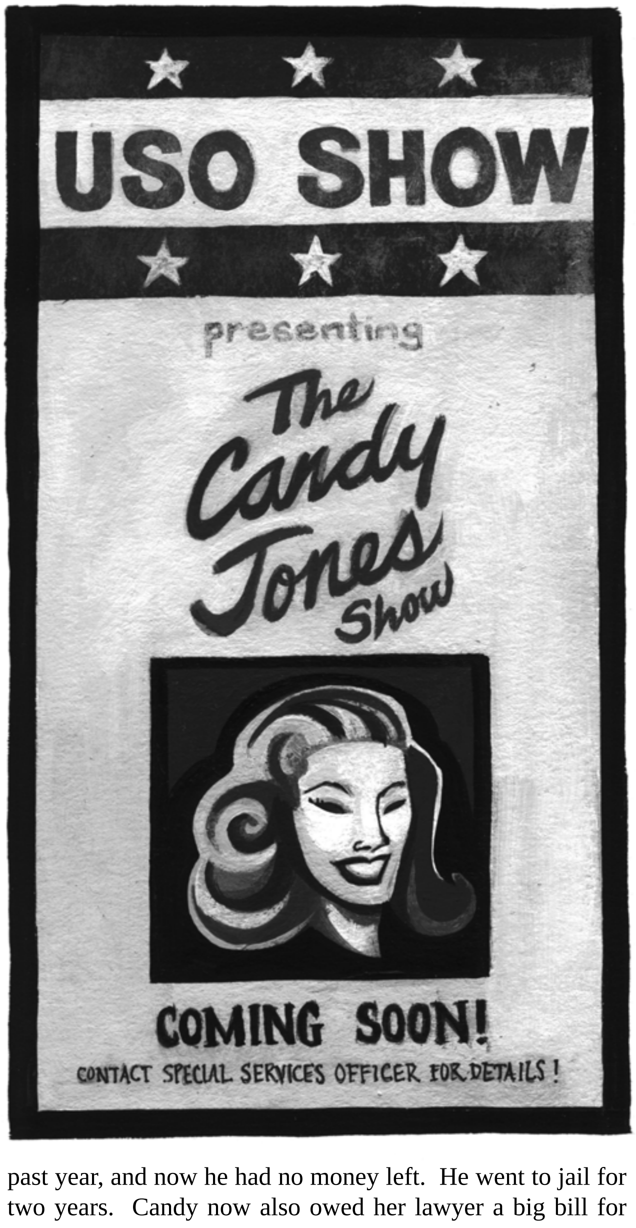

CIA Recruits a Courier

Dr. Burger had moved from the Chicago suburb to southern California. The clientele for his private practice was now the Hollywood crowd, shapely bodies—and opinion shapers to the world. California and New York were centers for CIA mind-control experiments in the 1960s, and Burger was part of that program. (Bain called him the research "project's messiah.")

Part of Burger's job was training other doctors to be mind-control experts for the Company. One of his trainees was Gilbert Jensen. The CIA was then researching a new type of hypnoprogrammed courier, one with a more unbreachable amnesia than mere hypnotic suggestion could achieve: an artificially split personality. Gilbert Jensen would be creating and managing a unit of these unknowing agents.

Candy was a celebrity, a patriot, single, traveled in her business, and badly needed money. She must have seemed a good prospect for recruitment.

In 1960, strange things began to happen at 52 Vanderbilt Avenue, where Candy now ran her modeling school, agency, and what was left of the Conover agency, from Room 808. The events seemed unimportant at the time. Maybe some of them were truly irrelevant. But, looking back, there was an obvious pattern of deceit and manipulation, a sinister web of entrapment starting to weave about Candy Jones.

An Odd Burglary—Heavyweight boxing champ, Gene Tunney, had been Candy's neighbor across the hall for years. One day, Candy noticed a "cleaning lady" standing outside Tunney's door. She appeared to be trying to figure out which one, of a set of keys, fit his door. The next day, Gene told Candy that his office had been broken into the night before. He said no harm had been done.

A few days later, Candy ran into General Donovan, now "retired," in the building lobby. Although they were barely acquainted, Donovan acted quite familiar. He told Candy he was meeting Tunney for lunch. Since he was quite early, Candy invited the General to tour her school while he was waiting. Then she took him over to Tunney's office.

Several days later, a man visited Candy's office, claiming to be an FBI agent who was investigating the burglary of Tunney's office. He walked over to a microphone lying on Candy's window ledge, picked it up, and looked it over. "What do you use this for?" he asked.

Candy told him that Allan Funt (of "Candid Camera" fame) had given her that mike, a very advanced type in its technology. Her models recorded public speaking assignments using it, so they could learn how they sounded to other people.

"It's just what we need for a stakeout over on fifty-seventh," the FBI man said. "Can we borrow it?"

Candy gave her permission.

Mail Service—The FBI man showed up at her office a month later, along with an associate. The two men asked Candy if they could use her office address to receive some of their mail. If any mail came for them, she was to call a certain phone number and report that fact. Candy consented. After that, mail did come once in a while for them. She always called the designated phone number when it did so.

A Favor for Donovan—Once in a while, Donovan now invited her to a party. In November, 1960, the General called to ask a favor. In some way (which he did not divulge to her), he had found out that Candy was scheduled to soon fly out to Denver and speak, then fly on to San Francisco to view a big fashion show. The General asked her to carry an "important" letter on that trip to an unnamed person who would come to her hotel room in San Francisco to claim it.

Candy asked Donovan to what governmental agency this anonymous person belonged. The General would not answer that question. He said that the visitor himself would explain. Candy agreed to carry the letter. Her last exit was about to be sealed off.[1] After she received the mysterious letter at her office, Candy stuffed it into her handbag and flew to Denver. She gave her speech there, then proceeded to San Francisco, where she attended the fashion show. Then, she waited in her hotel room for the promised visitor who was to come and take it from her. It was November 16, 1960.

The man who knocked at her hotel room door turned out to be Gil Jensen, the military psychiatrist she had met on Leyte. She offered him the letter, but he refused to take it. First, he wanted Candy to dine with him at a nice restaurant. She graciously accepted his invitation.

That evening, Jensen seemed to her much less at ease, less happy, than he had been back in the Philippines. Nevertheless, he was obviously trying hard, and he managed to make pleasant conversation. (It greatly helps the first hypnotic induction if the subject likes the hypnotist and trusts him.) He told Candy about his private practice over in Oakland. In turn, she told him about her divorce, her sons, the modeling business, the terrible financial pressures. Once he got Candy started talking, Jensen listened attentively, speaking only to encourage her whenever she seemed about to stop.

---

1. Was Donovan, consciously or unconsciously, fulfilling some romantic fantasy of creating the ultimate gorgeous, intelligent, female spy?

The Proposition—It was getting late. Again, Candy tried to give him the letter. Again, Jensen would not take it. He said that tomorrow at his office would be a better time to talk about the letter. Candy objected. She needed to get home to New York. Finally, when it was clear that she was not going to stay another day for any reason he had given her so far, Jensen came out with the big persuader. He said: "There's some interesting work you could do for the Central Intelligence Agency, Candy, without interfering with your business. It could be lucrative." **(Bain, p. 60)**

That was different. Candy was always looking for a way to earn money. She agreed to come to Jensen's office the next day.

The next morning, a car and driver picked her up at the hotel. It drove her across the Bay Bridge to Jensen's "office" in Oakland, the place where Candy would be hypnotized, drugged, and hypnoprogrammed, far from friends, family, or employees back in New York. The chauffeur helped her out of the limousine, then departed.

Candy stood alone on the sidewalk, looking around her. She was outside a two-story brick building in a run-down neighborhood. Adjacent was a green three-story one. Candy was surprised that the psychiatrist's office had no sign to inform passers-by that a doctor worked therein. The house did not even have an identifying street number.

She climbed the three wooden steps leading to the front door, opened it, and stepped inside. She was now in a small reception room. The only furniture was two straight-backed chairs and a table. She sat down in one chair. Magazines were stacked on the tabletop, some more than a year old. The light in the room was almost too dim for reading, but she could see that all the magazine address labels had been torn off.

Jensen came in. He greeted her cordially, and led her from the reception room into his office. That room had only one window, shielded from street observation by heavy drapes. A gooseneck lamp with an unshaded, brightly-burning bulb was its only source of light. "Does the light bother you?" Gilbert asked.

"Yes," Candy said.

He twisted the gooseneck's flexible shaft a bit, which made no real difference. There were shaded lamps in the room, but none of them were turned on, and he did not offer to switch to one of them.

"Would you like a tour of the office? he asked. She politely accepted his offer. He led her into her a small adjacent room. It had a raised examination table in the center, a white medical cabinet against the wall, and one straight-backed chair. Candy did not think much of it, but she kept those thoughts to herself. He then led her back to the room where the single bare light bulb burned, seated himself behind the desk, and began to ask her personal questions.

Candy did not feel comfortable. She wanted this conversation to stop. She wanted to get out of there. What she had expected to happen today was a job interview, not just a conversation between acquaintances. She was not bold enough, however, to ask him to get to the point. She kept answering his questions. He asked about her childhood.

Candy said, "It was lonely." When she told him about the club and her imaginary playmates, Dr. Jensen suddenly showed eager interest. He wanted her to tell him more, and yet more, about each member of the club. So she told him all about quiet, nice Doty, and Willy who stomped, and Arlene who was strong and domineered.

Candy desperately wanted to get the interview over with, head home, and be back in New York by that night. She had delayed her return only because Jensen had offered a "lucrative" job, and she needed money. She asked , "What sort of work am I being hired to do, and with whom will I be working?"

"The unit?" Jensen asked.

"I don't know," Candy said. "The general told me that you would fill me in." **(Bain, p. 86)**

Jensen ignored her question. He went back to asking about her imaginary friends in childhood.

Candy Signs Up—Candy had arrived at Jensen's office in the mid-morning. Now it was 1 p.m. She said, "I really must go."

Jensen ignored her request. He began a new series of questions, this time about her social life: "Do you date? Do you go to cocktail parties? Do you travel."

Candy said that she seldom attended parties. She did travel a great deal for her business, but did not socialize much at home or elsewhere.

He finally offered her the job: "We could work something out with you from time to time, Candy, if you performed services for us during your travels."

"What sort of services?"

"Carry a message now and then. That's all." **(Bain, p. 87)**

Jensen assured Candy that she would be paid to carry those messages. He said that she could go back to New York now. He would ask any other questions that he

Mind-Splitting Use for Imaginary Childhood Playmate

The government was pursuing exactly that line of research: creating an **artificially-split personality** out of an imaginary childhood playmate. Josephine Hilgard's 1970 book, *Personality and Hypnosis*, states that a person with an imaginary childhood playmate tends to have significant hypnotic susceptibility (research supported by grants from NIMH, the Air Force Office of Scientific Research, etc.). An imaginary childhood playmate is a marker for hypnotic susceptibility. It can also be a point of fracture for artificial personality-splitting.

A CIA memo said that the **candidate**[1] must be in the top 20% of hypnotic susceptibility, and must have

> *...a dissociative tendency to separate part of his personality from the main body of his consciousness. The hope was to take an existing ego state—such as an imaginary childhood playmate—and build it into a separate personality, unknown to the first. The hypnotist would communicate directly with this schizophrenic offshoot and command it to carry out specific deeds about which the main personality would know nothing.* **(quoted in Marks, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*, p. 184)**

The concept was that the hypnotist would transform that childhood nucleus of rejected, blocked traits and impulses into the core of a **subconscious isolate**. When there was a choice of more than one childhood playmate, the split would be built into the toughest, meanest one. Bowart told Scheflin and Opton that all the military hypnoprogrammed persons that he had located and interviewed "have been beaten or abused by one of their parents when they were young. To escape, they created imaginary personalities which a clever hypnotist then used against them." **(Scheflin and Opton, 1978, p. 445)**

"R.J.", a former Ranger and Viet Nam Special Forces retiree told me, in 1991, "Everyone who is going into any branch of the military takes the Military Aptitude Test, the MAT. It asks several questions along those lines: 'Did you have imaginary playmates?' 'How old were you when you quit playing with your imaginary friend?' After you have decided on your military occupational status, you take another test. People going into Special Forces are asked the same questions—'Did you have imaginary playmates?'—plus additional ones along the same line. 'Was that imaginary friend more or less aggressive than you?' And there are questions about discipline: 'Did your parents spank you?' 'Did you feel resentment when your parents spanked you?' Almost every person who goes into a Special Forces unit has had a childhood imaginary friend. I did. He was a mean guy. He did things I couldn't do."

R.J. was a completely nice guy in his friendship with me, but he had that mean guy tucked away in his unconscious memories, which embodied parental (authoritarian) aggression and violence combined with repressed childhood rage and resentment. Arlene was Candy's equivalent of R.J.'s "mean guy." The CIA was not looking for a neurotic. For best programming results, the imaginary playmate must be part of a strong, normal personality, not a disordered, weak one. Brainwashing experts have learned that normal people reprogram easier and shape into a better product than neurotics. Candy had a strong, normal personality.

---

[1] Estabrooks earlier, and Condon later, used the term "candidate" to mean an individual who has been targeted to be made into an unknowing hypnoprogrammed person.

had the next time she happened to come to San Francisco. But, first, he wanted her to fill out a form. He pulled a paper and pen out of his drawer and pushed them toward her. Candy then signed a

> *...security oath which officially made her an employee of the government, and as such she forfeited her right to legal compensation for the harm done her by the ruthless mind-control operation.* **(Scheflin & Opton, p. 121)**

By signing that document, Candy had joined Jensen's "unit." She had become one of thousands of part-time CIA employees. (Such employees were not listed in headquarters' records.) Jensen became her **control agent**, her only CIA contact. His **unit** was the people he controlled. The CIA would thereafter be referred to only as **the Company**.

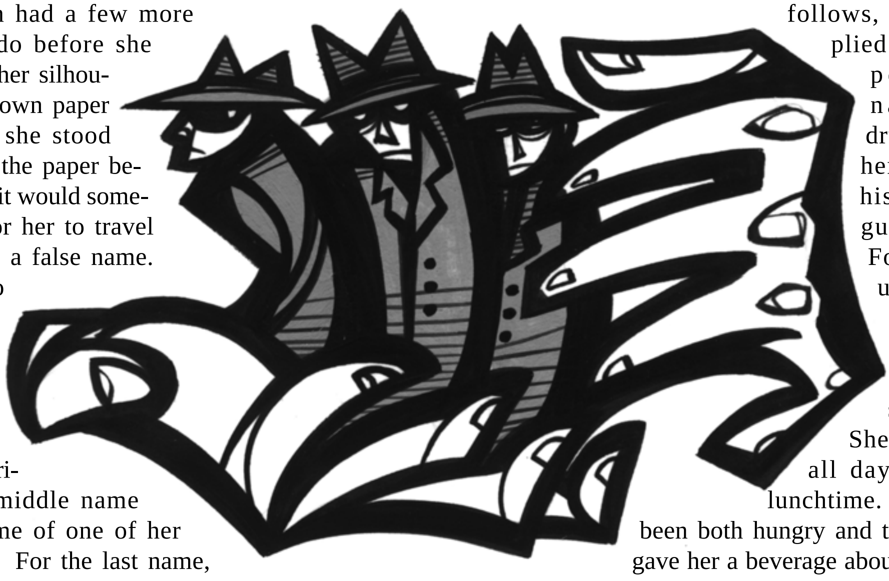

Then Jensen had a few more things Candy must do before she could go. He traced her silhouette on a length of brown paper with a black pen as she stood against the wall with the paper behind her. He said that it would sometimes be necessary for her to travel using a passport with a false name. He asked her to choose the name, to choose something that felt comfortable, natural. For the first name, she chose Arlene, which was a variant spelling of her middle name (Arline), and the name of one of her imaginary playmates. For the last name, she chose Grant, which was a part of her grandmother's name (Rosengrant).[1]

Jensen said that a photographer would come to her hotel room and take photos for her passport. Then the doctor asked, "What did Arlene look like?"

Candy said that Arlene had looked just like her, except darker, brunette rather than blonde, when she saw her in the mirror as a little girl.

The Hypnosis Begins

Disguised Induction—Jensen next asked about her health.

Candy said, "I'm fine."

The psychiatrist said, "You look like you need vitamins."

Candy said, "My doctor back in New York gives me B12."

Gilbert said, "I know better vitamins than B12." He urged Candy to get into top condition to endure her coming rigors of world travel.

Candy agreed to do that. Then she pulled out a cigarette and lit it.

Jensen said, "That is not a healthy habit. Why haven't you quit."

Candy said, "I've tried, but I can't."

(Bain does not mention Candy sipping a beverage while smoking that cigarette, but it seems likely, from what follows, that Jensen applied some chemical persuasion—a narcohypnotic drug dropped into her drink—before his coming disguised induction. For Candy seems unusually susceptible to what follows, even for a natural somnambulist. She had been there all day. It was past lunchtime. She must have been both hungry and thirsty. If Jensen gave her a beverage about this time which contained an oral dose of barbiturate, after about half an hour she would have been thoroughly under its influence, extra susceptible to hypnotic induction.)

Jensen then discoursed, at length, on methods to quit smoking, including hypnosis. Candy said she could not be hypnotized. Jensen asked if she had ever tried. "No," Candy said, but she was sure she was not susceptible. Jensen knew, because of those imaginary friends, that she was wrong, but he did not tell her so.

> [He]...*sat back in his chair and clasped his hands on his chest. "You're probably right about that," he said. "There are lots of people who can't be hypnotized." He then launched into a quiet lecture on the evils of hypnosis as practiced by charlatans and quacks, coming down especially hard*

---

[1] Later, Candy would remember visiting Jensen in Oakland only once, the first time. Of that visit, she could only remember what had taken place ;up to the time when he agreed that she could not be hypnotized. Other details in this narrative were recovered by later rehypnotization.

> *on the stage hypnotists. "I'm really dedicated to putting a stop to the misuse of hypnosis, Candy. Dedicated to it. By the way, would you like to see how some people practice hypnosis?"* **(Bain, p. 91)**

Candy nodded. Jensen stood up and led her on another tour of his office.

He was taking a long time, and being very patient, with this **first induction**. He could have ordered three strong men to hold her down, while he shoved a needleful of barbiturate into her vein which would send her straight down to a deep trance. Hypnoprogramming resting on a foundation like that, however, would be on an more unstable base. For his preferred outcome, Jensen needed to seduce Candy into the first induction in an atmosphere of friendship. If a hypnotist can get a few sincere "yeses" from a prospective mind-control victim before they begin to apply the harsher aspects of programming, a more effective unconscious basis for long-term control has been established.

Therefore, Jensen acted very pleasant as he took her on this second tour, chatting all the while about his plans to help with a crackdown on "people who try to hypnotize people, entertainers and all that." **(Bain, p. 92)**

Induction Hardware—Jensen had now led Candy into a section of the building which he had not shown her before. As the two walked around, the psychiatrist demonstrated item after item of a truly remarkable collection of hypnotic induction gadgets—some simple, some very sophisticated. He patiently showed her how a hypnotist would use each one in order to induce a trance in somebody, if they were hypnotizable, "although I know you can't be." He demonstrated pendulum, candle, and metronome inductions. He showed a mechanical sound maker (which he later used to create her telephone induction cue).

Last of all, Gilbert brought her to the big mirror. He knew that whatever—or whoever—has hypnotized a person before tends to keep that ability. He had learned, that morning, that Candy Jones hypnotized herself, as a child, by staring into a big mirror. He now suggested that she sit down on the chair in front of his mirror. She obediently sat, looking at her reflected image. As she stared into the mirror, he led the conversation back to Arlene. They were talking again about Arlene. (At that time, she was merely talking about Arlene; she was not yet being Arlene.) As Candy looked in the mirror and talked about Arlene, she slipped down to a trance level of consciousness.

Drug Inductions—After the mirror induction, Dr. Jensen told Candy to lie down on his "examining room" table. There, he gave the blonde celebrity her first dose of "vitamins." Years later, her second husband, John Nebel, found himself playing Jensen's role in her spontaneous self-inductions and regressions to this era of her life. John did not question the "vitamins" she repeatedly mentioned until he realized that Jensen had given them to Candy by IV into the big vein inside the elbow rather than by injection into the muscle of an arm or buttock. Then, John became suspicious. One day he discovered what Candy was really given:

JOHN: The bottle is hanging on the stand?

CANDY: Uh-huh. Like they used to have.

JOHN: Like intravenous feeding.

CANDY: Uh-huh.

JOHN: The bottle's upside down, isn't it?...(Candy looks up and squints.)...Isn't it upside down?...

CANDY: (surprised) Yeah.

JOHN: What's it say on the label?

CANDY: (after a long pause) I'm reading it backwards.

JOHN: Yeah, I know. What's it say?

CANDY: (haltingly, as though trying to make out the word) "Am...i...tol..."

JOHN: What's the first word?

CANDY: ...Must be sodium.

JOHN: Sodium? Does it say the name of the pharmaceutical company on the label?

CANDY: I think it says Warner. **(Bain, p. 97)**

Candy's Conditioning and Training

Candy's conditioning by Dr. Jensen was grounded in three **narcohypnotic immersions** ("vitamins") at his Oakland office, two in late 1960, the third in early 1961. Each immersion lasted for hours. During the narcohypnotic immersion, basic suggestions would have been made for a **reinduction cue**, and for future **amnesia** regarding that, and all subsequent, hypnotic events. Then the subject would have been pulled out of trance and tested to see if the reinduction cue and amnesia suggestions were working as planned. Only when he knew that her amnesia was firmly in place and that his reinduction cue was operational, would

---

1. In 1965, Teitlebaum, a writer on forensic hypnosis, offered a script called "Espionage Technic" in a section titled "Governmental Uses of Hypnosis." The programming was designed to turn a new officer on the force into an unknowing hypnotic subject:
To aid you in your work in the future, I am going to give you some suggestions which will remain in your subconscious... when you awaken, you will not be aware as to the nature of the suggestions, but they will guide you... (***Hypnosis Induction Techniques***, **p. 170)**

Jensen have let Candy go back to New York.[1]

Over the next months, the CIA experimenter developed Candy's somnambulistic amnesia and obedience under a continuing series of those narcohypnotic immersions. But even the power of suggestions given to a drugged subject did not satisfy him. Somnambulist amnesia blocks can be lifted by a competing hypnotist's **rehypnotization**. Jensen was experimenting with creating a new kind of amnesia, one that was even harder to overcome than suggestions for amnesia given under narcohypnosis. He wanted to make Candy Jones into an **artificially-split personality**.

Artificial Personality Splitting—The moment that Jensen heard Candy describe Arlene's personality characteristics of strength, dominance, and aggressiveness, he knew which member of the club he would build into a separate personality. Jensen wanted an agent who could be in deep trance, but could pass for somebody awake and normal. It can be assumed that the CIA wanted a **split** with the advantage of knowing all of both personalities' lives, whereas the **root self** (Candy) would know nothing of her second, hypnotic life. By artificial personality splitting, they hoped to achieve both goals: the **waking hypnosis** and **one-way amnesia**.

To accomplish that splitting, Jensen would use narcohypnosis and intense hypnotic training, followed by insistent, repeated suggestions for Arlene to "come out." The psychiatrist told Candy that the drug was vitamins to strengthen her body. The neural remnant of Arlene left in Candy's mind from childhood, however, soon realized the truth. Jensen was after her. Jensen found the plan hard to carry out. Although Candy's conscious mind was drugged and unconscious, the neurons in her brain which contained the matrix of her childhood Arlene persona resisted Jensen's invitation to become self-conscious and independent.

Jensen persisted. One day, after an extra-strength, extra-long drug session and many insisting verbal summonses, as Candy lay in deep drug-trance on the examining table in his inner office, the CIA doctor finally succeeded. Suddenly, Candy felt severe stomach pain. (Jensen had told Arlene to "come up through Candy's stomach." Thereafter, Candy always felt that same pain at the moment she switched personalities and Arlene came out—a psychosomatic conversion of her resistance.)

ARLENE: ...and all of a sudden I was able to say a few words and start to talk again.

JOHN: (laughing) And was he surprised?

ARLENE: He backed away. I got ahold of his arm, and then he said—

JOHN: You mean Dr. Jensen's arm?

ARLENE: Yes, with my left hand. And I pulled him over, and he said, "Let go!"...And he said, "What are you trying to do?...And he said, "Candy, Candy, stop that!"...And I said, "This is Arlene."...And he said, "You're hurting me!" (a pleased laugh)...And I was. And he said, "Good God, you're strong."...

JOHN: Meaning you, Arlene?

ARLENE: Yes. And he said, "You're Arlene."...And I said, "Who were you expecting?" **(Bain, pp. 106-7)**

Candy had no conscious memory of that conversation. From then on, she was broken and separated. Her split—and all its subsequent experiences—were walled off by amnesia from her.

Although Jensen was always somewhat afraid of Arlene, he continued to call her out and train her. It was his job. In that early conditioning stage, Arlene sometimes resisted her cue—"A.G., A.G."—to materialize. Jensen had to use drug induction, again and again, to cause "Arlene Grant" to appear. If Candy's mind refused the splitting command, even when drugged, then Jensen would resort to more and more barbiturate. Once, he almost killed her:

JOHN: Did you ever fail to come out?

ARLENE: Yes. (becoming intense) Lots of times I wouldn't.

JOHN: And what did Jensen do?

ARLENE: Give her another shot.

JOHN: Another shot. What was the most number of shots she ever got in one day?

ARLENE: He gave her three once and she couldn't wake up. And he got scared.

JOHN: How long was she out?

ARLENE: She wasn't out, she was asleep. She slept for about fourteen hours. **(Bain, p. 108)**

Later, Jensen fully conditioned the neuronal matrix called Arlene to complete takeover at his verbal cue. He would seat Candy in a darkened room in front of a candle, in front of a big mirror. The CIA technician would light the candle and then say, "Look in the mirror and see Arlene." When Candy peered into the depths of the reflective glass, she would always see Arlene. Then Candy would be gone, wherever displaced personalities go, and Arlene would have the body.

Then Jensen simplified the process yet more. He left out the candle. He would simply say to Candy, "Look in the mirror," or ask her, "Do you want to see what Arlene looks like?" Either statement now cued the displacement of the Candy personality by the Arlene split. Candy would always look in the mirror when Jensen suggested that. She always wanted to see what Arlene looked like. And, the moment she looked in Jensen's mirror, Arlene would always emerge and displace her.

For the rest of Candy's life, both her selves—Candy and Arlene—had conscious, separate existences. In one important way, however, their lives were completely different. Candy's part of the mind "slept"—on-the-shelf, non-existant, "dead"—when she was Arlene. Arlene, on the other hand, was conscious all the time—thinking, feeling, aware—whether she had the body or not. Arlene went everywhere that Candy went. She was the hidden observer, noticing and remembering all that Candy thought and did.

Arlene was so powerful, and yet so helpless. For all she could do was watch and listen and know the real truth, the whole truth. Arlene only controlled the body—with its physical abilities to speak and walk—when Jensen summoned her out to do his bidding. When she was called out, she was in a condition of waking trance, capable only of absolute obedience. Arlene was Jensen's genie, hidden in the bottle of Candy's mind. Jensen released her only when he had a use for her.

The experiment had succeeded. A celebrity, Candy Jones, captured by deceit and disguised induction, now was an unknowing CIA-controlled hypnotic subject. Her artificially-created hypnoself, Arlene, acted as the knowing, loyal, secret agent, compactly hidden within the unknowing mind of the original **root self** of Candy—unless activated by Jensen.[1]

Over the next twelve years, Jensen called Candy to Oakland again and again, for "vitamins." There, he did an extended series of experiments on her. He forced her to drink orange juice laced with various drugs, injected new substances into her, tried out new conditioning routines.

One *classic conditioning* routine began with Jensen saying, "The light is out!" Then he would turn it off. Later, as the association conditioning took hold, he would just say to her, "The light is out." Then the room would seem totally dark to her—even when the light was still on.

Induction Cues—Jensen could also hypnotize and program his human puppet by phone. He might call, talk to Candy a moment, then call out Arlene (using an auditory cue). Or he might play the cue the moment Candy's voice answered, then talk to Arlene. (Candy would imagine afterwards that it was a call with nobody there, because of having no memory of hearing Jensen's voice. She would hang up, thinking nothing of it.)

The CIA doctor's telephone cue to make Candy "relax" and switch personalities was a mechanical metronome sound which Arlene called "the code"—a unique series of tick-tocks which sounded faster and faster. He had an oral version of that induction code too. Sometimes, after Candy arrived at his office from the airport, she would wearily sink into a chair, and "doze off." Arlene knew, however, that the sleep Candy fell into in that chair was not a natural one. Candy fell asleep because she heard Jensen speak a brief series of nonsense sounds. Afterwards, Candy never remembered hearing the induction cue. Only Arlene remembered that.

Isolation—Jensen concealed Candy's programming, and his experiments on her, as if his life depended on it. He kept the existance of Arlene secret from Candy. He also kept what he had accomplished secret from foreign intelligence, and from the public, and from other CIA employees.

The first stage in any mind-control program involves isolation from family and friends while the foundation programming is implanted. After that, a more permanent form of isolation is built in: talk frankly only with "us"; stay away from "them." Jensen and Burger also programmed

---

[1] Arlene always scorned Candy. Estabrooks had proposed that the two personalities should be designed to conflict with each other. (***Hypnotism*, 1957, p. 203**) They did.

in harsh prejudices for the purpose of alienating Candy from all definable groups of people. Jensen's flat "no-friends" rule dealt with the rest. The mind-controller wanted her to be a self-sufficient loner who avoided people and avoided relationships because Candy said, "...most of them wouldn't understand what I was doing. I couldn't take the risk." **(Bain, p. 141).**

Candy had been a lonely child. Now, though well-known and popular nationwide, she was a lonely adult. Love was also forbidden. Candy was a famous beauty, a noted author who traveled widely in her work and met many eligible men. She sometimes thought about one man in particular, John Nebel. She had met him once, years before. Now she often listened to him interviewing guests on his late night talk show. Obedient to her programming, however, she never acted on her feelings, never communicated them to him, never even communicated with him. It was just a secret, hopeless crush. For Jensen had told Candy, while she was hypnotized, over and over, that she would never marry again. He said she did not want to get married.

Telephone Induction

Trance can be induced over the phone, even the first time, if enough factors favor the hypnotist. For example, when Burger first hypnotized Candy she was

- naturally susceptible to hypnosis,
- sick (which raises hypnotizability)
- desperately wanting to feel better (which provided motivation and motivation also raises it), and
- isolated, with nothing else to pay attention to except his voice over the phone.

Once a subject has been told the cue for posthypnotic induction, the process is even simpler.

> *If the subject has been hypnotized previously, it is only necessary to tell him that he will feel as heavy and tired as he felt on the last occasion when he had been hypnotized, but that he will still be able to hold the telephone to his ear.* **(Furst, p. 203)**

The hypnotist speaks, or sounds, the posthypnotically suggested induction cue over the phone when he gets his subject's ear on the other end. He doesn't have to say "Hello" first. That would give his subject a predator-on-the-phone warning and the chance to hang up before the induction cue is spoken. Instead, the hypnotist gives the induction cue first. Immediately, in a person programmed for routine amnesia during trances, the subject's conscious mind is off-line. Only the reflexive hypno-robot is listening. The hypnotist gives his instructions to that subject's unconscious. When he is finished, the phone call and the hypnosis are terminated (probably both at once) by a routine suggestion.[1]

Jensen also denied complete medical care to his subject. The psychiatrist's deep-level hypnotic suggestions made her terrified to visit any doctor other than Dr. Aldridge (head of OB/GYN at Women's Hospital, N.Y.C.). Aldridge, her longtime personal physician, was trouble enough for Jensen. When Candy told the gynecologist about her flights to the West Coast for vitamin shots, Aldridge protested. He said, "Vtamin B12 is only given into the buttocks muscle. If given in the arm, the shot would be intramuscular, not intravenous." He urged his famous patient to refuse any more of Jensen's "vitamins."

Dr. Aldridge shook Candy up enough that she had a big argument with Jensen about those vitamins the next time she went to Oakland. But, when she returned, the argument was settled in Jensen's favor. "There are different schools of medicine," she later rationalized to Aldridge. **(p.124)**

When Candy needed dental work, Jensen stalled her. The condition of her teeth became worse and worse. One day, she asked permission to make a dental appointment to have all her work done in one sitting—under Sodium Pentothal. That notion greatly upset Jensen. He insisted that she must never let anyone give her that drug.[2] Jensen did not rule out just Sodium Pentothal (a favorite of hypnoprogrammers). He forbade any dental anesthetic for her, even Novocain. Because of her chronic toothaches, Candy pleaded with Jensen many times to let her visit a dentist. He finally agreed to let her visit a CIA dentist,[3] but then stalled again. The CIA dentist never was available for her.

---

[1] For articles on hypnosis over the telephone, see Cooperman & Schafer, 1982; Owens, 1970; Stanton, 1978, and Owens, 1970; Weitzenhoffer, 1972.

[2] Pentothal is a narcohypnotic and could have released Arlene.

[3] It was standard procedure for CIA operatives to receive medical and dental treatment only from cleared physicians assisted only by cleared nurses and technicians. In case of surgery, another agent would stand nearby to note any unauthorized thing the patient said under anesthesia.

Jensen also worried that Candy might visit a psychiatrist. He especially warned her never to allow herself to be given the powerful tranquilizer thorazine. The involvement of an ethical psychiatrist is the thing most feared by an unethical operator. Psychiatrists understand narcohypnosis. They can administer barbiturates which penetrate sealing suggestions. They understand methods by which to program the unconscious—and by which to deprogram it. Candy later explained to John (obviously unconsciously parroting Jensen's statements) why she could not make an appointment with a psychiatrist:

> *"I'll get very, very sick and I might even have a convulsion. I've never had a convulsion, but I will know what one is like if I go to a psychiatrist...he said it would start in my stomach and he said that I would get very upset because they ask you too many questions...They'll think that you're crazy. They wouldn't believe you. They would think something has happened to you."* **(Bain, pp. 129-130)**

Candy tried hard to stay healthy. She knew that she could not seek help if she became sick because of her "phobia"—a fear of medical attention.

Training for a Hypno-Agent—The CIA sent Candy to Camp Peary, several times, for training in secret service tactics: "Detect, Destroy, and Demolish." There, at "The Farm" as insiders called it, she learned to search a room, commit arson, leave no clues, commit suicide with a poisonous lipstick, or commit murder by sticking a pin into the lipstick, and then into a victim. The curriculum also included the use of acid as offense and defense, firing various types of guns, climbing ropes, writing coded messages on fingernails, then painting over them with polish. And so on.

Courier in Action—In 1965, under the heading of "Espionage" in a book called *Hypnosis Induction Technics,* a programming script appeared:

> *Agent X, you are now in a deep hypnotic trance. When you awaken from this trance state you will not remember that you have been hypnotized....you will believe that you have never been hypnotized before in your life and that you cannot be hypnotized. In fact, if anybody should ever ask you if you have been hypnotized, you will say, "No, I have not been and I can't be."...you will know that if anybody ever hypnotizes you or attempts to hypnotize you, other than members of this particular unit, you will become extremely nervous, will feel sick to your stomach...In the event of your capture...you will find that you have no memory for...anything to do with espionage. No matter what type of questioning or hardship you may have to undergo, this information will never be released by your subconscious to your conscious mind.* **(Teitlebaum, *Hypnosis Induction Technics,* pp. 172-3)**

For Candy, it was not hypothetical. She was a CIA courier. It was all conditioned routine now: get off the plane, go to Jensen's office, take out her Arlene wig and clothing from Jensen's closet, change into them, receive her fake passport from him, and then get a dose of "vitamins." After that, Arlene went wherever Jensen directed, usually carrying a sealed envelope. She delivered them to major East coast cities, handing the envelope to some waiting stranger in a restaurant, office building, or hotel.

Consciously, Candy knew that she delivered mail, a task which sometimes involved travel, for the CIA. She knew that she used various names, including the name of Arlene Grant (she had a passport in that name). She knew that she had rented a box at the Grand Central Station post office, in August of 1961, under her birth name of Jessica Wilcox which she checked every day until about 1969—though mail seldom came. When it did, she knew that she was to take it to her office. An unknown man would collect it from there. Or somebody would telephone her with instructions to deliver it somewhere in the city. She knew it all must be kept secret. That was all she consciously knew.

The CIA did pay, but irregularly, and never directly. Instead, they would send several thousand dollars at a time to pay for her sons' school or to pay a family hospital bill—as if it were an anonymous donation.

Candy gradually realized that delivering those letters sometimes put her in situations that might be life-threatening. She then wrote a formal letter to her lawyer, the first time she communicated anything about her secret work to another person. She put a copy into her safe deposit box. In the letter, Candy said that she used three names: Jesse Wilcox, Candy Jones, and Arlene Grant.

> *In the event of my death, due to an accident or sudden illness...please have my demise checked, if at all possible...I am not at liberty to divulge the sideline activity in which I am involved; however, you can be assured that in no way is it illegal, immoral or unpatriotic.* **(quoted in Bain, pp. 112-133)**

Candy confided a little more to her old friend and editor at Harper and Row, Joe Vergara. He did not believe her. She had the impression that he interpreted what she told him as evidence of a mental problem.

One night, Jensen instructed Candy to attend a party which was being given by Bill Buckley at the ’21 Club. (Buckley ended up a dead CIA station chief in Beirut.) Candy’s assignment was to photograph the man who came in and insulted Buckley during the party. Candy was there. The man arrived, sought out Buckley, and insulted him with censorable language, just as Jensen had predicted. Candy snapped his picture. She did not know who he was.

Candy delivered the picture to unit-controller Jensen, who had just demonstrated his prowess to chief Buckley. From then on, the doctor proudly displayed that photo on his desk. It was a secret souvenir, trophy evidence of two of the minds he presumably controlled: Candy Jones, who could be made to photograph a stranger, and the strange man, who had been caused to insult Buckley. That kind of thing amuses hypnotists.

Torture and Shame Experiments

The two main centers of activity in Candy’s CIA messenger job had been New York, where she lived and worked, and San Francisco, where she flew to get her “treatments,” transformations, and assignments from Jensen.

Now, Jensen began a series of experiments which were carried out in a third city, Taipei, Taiwan, presumably by cooperating Republic of China agents. They tested the hypnoprogrammed courier’s behavior by mimicking her capture and interrogation by “enemy.”

The experiments tested how well her hypnotic amnesia withstood cordiality—and torture. Could torture break Candy? Would she be so convinced of her innocence as to act honestly indignant? Could ruthless torture make her reveal the secrets of her conditioning? Would her amnesia and personality splitting hold up even under humiliation and excruciating pain? Or would she confess all the secrets of Jensen and Arlene?

The CIA first discussed this particular **terminal experiment** in 1954.

> *Such an experiment could have been performed, as* [Morse] *Allen suggested, by friendly police in a country like Taiwan or Paraguay. CIA men did at least discuss joint work in hypnosis with a foreign secret service in 1962.* **(Marks, pp. 187-8)**

John Marks made that statement because a document, proposing the foreign experiments which Candy had already described, turned up in 1978 among CIA papers he obtained by means of his Freedom of Information Act lawsuit against the CIA! Marks then submitted another FOIA request, specifically seeking information on that “joint work in hypnosis.” The CIA, however, refused to release any documents about hypnosis experiments “in cooperation with foreign intelligence agencies.”

Another document, which survived the episodic CIA shreddings of their mind-control research records and was eventually obtained by John Marks, listed titles and dates of document packets in seven boxes of MKULTRA experimentation records (152 sets in all). All contents of those boxes had been destroyed, but the title/date list had survived. The last five entries are:

MKULTRA	**146**	**Aug.**	**63-Sept. 64**
“	**147**	**Oct.**	**63-May 67**
“	**148**	**Nov.**	**63-Sept. 64**
GRANT	**151**	**Feb.**	**66-Dec. 67**
“	**152**	**May**	**66-June 66**

Does GRANT refer to Arlene Grant? That pseudonym, which Dr. Jensen assigned to Candy the first day she signed up for his unit, may well have been the name under which her experimental records were stored. The years of 1966-1967 match the period of time when Candy was making trips to Taiwan. Those journeys required extensive preparation and coordination between the CIA and their counterparts in the Republic of China.

The experiments on Candy, which took place on the island of Taiwan, began in the fall of 1966. We do not know exactly how many such trips she took. Of all the things that Arlene had to relive (her only way to communicate to John what had happened), the most difficult for her to reexperience were the cruel torture experiments. “She invariably became hysterical during these sessions.” **(Bain, p. 201)**

Candy/Arlene told John Nebel about those experiments in 1973. Bain’s book, which made public the history of her hypnogramming and use as a CIA experimental subject, was published in 1976. Candy’s information predated the FOIA releases. They corroborated her account.

Nice Treatment—On her first trip to Taiwan, however, Arlene was treated well. She was told that her contacts were “businessmen.” Indeed, it was a former president of Taipei’s Chamber of Commerce who met her at the airport. When she offered him the envelope she carried, he would not take it. Instead, he insisted that she must come to his “home.”

Home turned out to be located twenty miles outside Taipei. It was big and institutional looking. There were several other sizable buildings on his “estate.” Arlene saw two women wearing lab coats talking to each other outside one building. That seemed odd. She asked her host about them. “Household servants,” the man curtly replied.

For the next three days, her host devoted himself to pleasing Arlene Grant. It was Stage One of the experiment: Can you wine and dine the truth out? Together, they shared wonderful feasts of exquisite Chinese cuisine and visited the tourist highlights of Taiwan. Arlene, at no time, confided that she was really Candy Jones and had been drugged, hypnoprogrammed, and personality-split by a CIA doctor. She did take lots of photos.

When she arrived back to San Francisco, Jensen met her at the airport and personally drove her to his office for the switch back to Candy Jones. As usual, Candy left her fake passport, wig, A.G. clothing, and brunette makeup in Jensen's office closet. She gave Jensen all the exposed film from her "sight-seeing" trip.

Back in New York, Candy found her office staff frantic. She had been gone for a week—and she hadn't even told anybody that she was leaving!

Torture—A month later, Jensen again summoned Candy to San Francisco, turned her into Arlene, and sent her to the Far East. The same man met her at the Taipei airport. He took her to the same big house, and there accepted the letter she had brought. This time, instead of pleasantly entertaining her, he imprisoned and tortured his guest.

The simplest test of hypnotic depth is to suggest anesthesia, then test the subject—with pin, or match flame, or needle—to see if he feels pain. A person who is hypnotized and has been given a preparatory suggestion of numbness does not feel the pain. Candy felt the pain that they caused her normally, like a person who isn't hypnotized. Being unaware (anesthetic) would have given away her hypnotic state. Yet she endured without breaking—like a hypnotized person.

Measurable Degrees of Agony

Shocking inflicts measurable degrees of agony, so electrodes have long been a laboratory method for testing hypnotic depth, control, and pain tolerance.

> *This writer uses a little device known as a variac. This is plugged into an ordinary light socket and it delivers the exact voltage required. The contacts are placed on the palm and the back of the left hand, blotting paper, soaked in a saturated salt solution, being used to insure the very best form of contact. Under these circumstances, fifteen volts would be very painful, twenty unbearable. But a subject in somnambulism (deep trance) can take sixty, even 120 volts without flinching.* **(Estabrooks, *Hypnotism*)**

Candy later told John that they shocked her, "Because I didn't have what they wanted. I didn't give them what they wanted." **(Bain, p. 197)**

They strapped her into a chair by a table, and then....

CANDY: They put a solution first on the skin...

JOHN: A saline solution?

CANDY: I don't know...a solution...they put it on with gauze on a long stick...like a Q-tip...they stuck a wire on the wet area...They put the wire on your finger and...

JOHN: ...Do they wrap the wire around your finger?

CANDY: They just touch it to the area where the solution is.

JOHN: Is the current on?

CANDY: Of course.

JOHN: And the wire is attached to a box?

CANDY: Yes, like a manicure set, or an electric hair roller. A little box with a few dials on it...

JOHN: Did it spark?

CANDY: I didn't look. But I heard it. It hisses.

JOHN: And it hurts.

CANDY: Momentarily. It's a shock. It makes a blister... **(Bain, pp. 194-195)**

When they finished, the blisters were so bad that she could not put her fingers together.[1] Blistered and suffering, she now heard the Chinese businessman talking in Chinese to somebody on the phone. Then he hung up the phone and unstrapped her from the chair.

He was acting friendly now. He apologized for the shocks. He insisted they were merely an effort to help her memory. He arranged for her to eat lunch, then drove her to catch the return flight to San Francisco.

Back in the U.S., Jensen also apologized to Candy for the torture. He said it was all a mistake, caused by a typographical error in the letter she had delivered.

Despite the torture, every time Jensen sent his hypnorobot to Taipei, she went. On a different trip, they

---

[1] In the context of pain, Candy's split personality was divided even more firmly than usual. Later, Candy told John that Arlene had felt the pain, not her, and "Arlene's hand" had the blisters.

Snake-in-the-Box Experiments

The scorpion-in-the-box test format, used on Candy, had been hotly debated in the literature of experimental hypnosis ever since 1939, when L.W. Rowland published a report of an experiment involving a snake in a box. Back then, the debate between experimental hypnotists on whether a person could be made to do something by means of hypnosis that they would not normally do was still open and lively. Rowland, using a box covered with "invisible" glass, had induced hypnotized persons to attempt to pick up the rattlesnake they could see inside the box.

> *By way of control, forty-two persons, of every age and degree of sophistication, were asked to come to the laboratory and pick up the snake...the persons were not only badly frightened at the appearance of the snake, they would not come close to the box; only a few were finally persuaded to pick up a yard stick and try to touch the snake. They all seemed bewildered when they touched the glass which they could not see.* **(Rowland, *"Will Hypnotized Persons Try to Harm Themselves or Others?"*)**

Because three out of four of his hypnotic subjects (but none of the unhypnotized persons acting as controls in the experiment) obediently tried to reach inside the snake box, Rowland concluded that "persons in deep hypnosis will allow themselves to be exposed to an unreasonably dangerous situation." His fourth subject "saw the snake, turned around facing the experimenter, and awoke." **(*Ibid.*, p. 115)**

Rowland also tested whether hypnotized persons would obey orders to harm other persons. He commanded a hypnotized person to throw sulfuric acid at the face of an experimenter (who was protected by invisible glass). The acid was clearly the real thing. He concluded that hypnotized persons "will perform acts unreasonably dangerous to others" **(*Ibid.*, p. 117).**

In 1952, Young carried out a pair of experiments in which he replicated Rowland's famous experiments described above. Hypnotized persons were first asked to handle a rattlesnake, then to toss "acid" in someone's face. In Young's experiment, the instructions were to reach through an opening into a box, grasp the snake, and move it into a large can. The snake closely resembled the poisonous water moccasin. Young's verbal instructions were designed to cause a subject to assume that the snake was poisonous. Nevertheless, seven of Young's eight hypnotic subjects did reach out, grasp, and move the snake.

> *One subject, a male music student, in tremulous conflict over the instructions, was so inept in the long-continued alternate approach and withdrawal of his hand near the snake's head that he was bitten by the snake and fainted dead away, only to be brought back to hypnotic consciousness and pushed by the experimenter until he, too, captured the snake of which he was mortally afraid.* **(Young, 1952, p. 405)**

Young's subjects, like Rowland's, also threw acid—in this case, "nitric acid"—at the operator's face. One day, Young's experiment became totally real because one hypnotized subject accidentally threw real nitric acid in the assistant's face instead of the mock version:

> *...on account of the promptness of remedial measures, no scars were left on his face; although his heavy uniform (that of an ROTC student) demonstrated in large areas where the acid struck* **(Young, 1952, p. 405).**

However, some later experimenters demonstrated that most people obey such commands without being hypnotized. They do it out of simple obedience to perceived authority, or because they know it is an experiment and they trust the experimenter. So the debate opened up againall over to what extent hypnosis could be a factor in coercively forcing people to do an antisocial act (injuring themselves or another person).

George Estabrooks showed an expert on hypnosis Rowland's report of his experiment and asked, "Do you think Rowland proved the point?"

> *The expert countered, "How do you know that glass is invisible? To you, yes. But the hypnotic subject may, probably does, have much greater keenness of vision than does the normal individual."*
>
> *Estabrooks asked him how to make that experiment "air tight."*
>
> *"Take away the glass."*
>
> *"In that case there might be a corpse in the laboratory," Estabrooks objected.*
>
> *"Exactly. But I see no other way to meet the objection."* **(quoted in Reiter, p. 41)**

So the possibility of what experimental hypnotists called **antisocial hypnosis** could not be proved without a terminal experiment, and the terminal experiment could not be done because it was antisocial. But, they did it to Candy. After Candy put her hand in the box on Taiwan, whoever knew of this secret experiment had proof. Candy would know better than to trust those people. But she put her hand in the box. She was stung. And she stayed an unknowing hypnoprogrammed person.

shocked her using a small box sitting on the table. Wires ran from it to her wrist and to her shoulder. Those shocks hurt terribly. They shocked her repeatedly with that setup , and, together with the shocks, they asked question after question about the story of her life and her CIA link.

Reliving it, Candy said, "...I don't know anything. Nobody here believes me...I'm afraid to say yes and I'm afraid to say no...Why don't you just kill me?...why do you keep me here like this?...I don't know any Dr. Jensen." **(Bain, p. 193)**

When she still didn't (or couldn't) satisfy their interrogation demands for the story of her life, the lab techs told her they were going to put her hand into a box which contained either scorpions or the deadly coral snake. Later, Candy told John:

> *CANDY: They put her hand in the thing.*
>
> *JOHN: In what?*
>
> *CANDY: In with the scorpions. She didn't know whether it would be the scorpions or the coral snake.*
>
> *JOHN: You mean into a box?*
>
> *CANDY: Uh-huh. The scorpion was in there.* **(p. 203)**

It turned out to be the scorpions, and one stung her. When she pulled out her hand from the box, the insect was still clinging to it. (Bain later observed a small scar on that part of her hand.)

The Chinese director of the experiments on Candy had put one over on the lab girls who believed the scorpion in their box was dead. When Candy actually got stung by it, they were upset and surprised. They stopped the torture and gave her medical treatment.

This trip, the "businessman" did not apologize for torturing her. This time, when she got back to San Francisco, Jensen did not say it was a regrettable mistake. It made no difference. Candy was hypnotized on cue and robotically went back to Taiwan every time she was told to do so.

In another experiment, the lab technicians tortured her by cutting both her thumbnails to the quick. Recalling the event, under hypnosis with John...

> *CANDY: ...They were going to keep cutting them down unless I told them...*
>
> *JOHN: Told them what you knew?*
>
> *CANDY: (panicked) I don't know anything. I gave them the letter ...They cut it right down into...It's all raw... Both thumbs...* **(Bain, p. 207)**

Shame—In 1967, the CIA announced the end of all mind-control testing and the destruction of all records of that testing.[1] But Jensen continued the overseas experiments on Candy. Candy's last trip to Taiwan for torture experiments was in 1968. They had tried pain, and she did not break. Next, they would try shame—and then pain and shame combined.

She handed her envelope to a girl at an art gallery, as instructed. As if on cue, the girl spat in her face.

(The spitting sounds like a posthypnotic suggestion cued by delivery of the envelope. Maybe this event began the testing of Candy/Arlene's resistance to humiliation. Maybe, also, this was a puppet-meets-puppet encounter set up to see if that made any difference. Would they recognize each other's plight, embrace, and swear future solidarity against hypnoprogrammers? They should have, but they did not.)

Then Candy was taken to a hotel dining room, seated in its lobby, and given a drink. It made her feel sick. She began to sweat heavily.[2] A female attendant led her out of the dining area into a "bathroom" which had a bed in it and also a dressing room. The attendant took off Candy's clothes (which were now drenched with sweat). She hung them up, gave her a gown, and put her to bed. A doctor came, gave her a shot, and then left.

The female attendant then returned. She began a long episode of inflicting painful, shameful body pinches, including on her breasts and nipples. The pinches were severe enough to cause black and blue marks all over her body. While the "attendant" was viciously pinching her victim, she demanded over and over to be told about "the papers."

When her subject fainted from the pain, the Chinese woman roughly revived her and continued the torture. When the interrogtor finally left the room, Arlene tried to crawl under the bed and hide.

---

[1] A source later told Bowart they were done testing because "they went operational."

[2] "...the men from ARTICHOKE wanted to know how well hypnotic amnesia held up against torture. Could the amnesia be broken with drugs?" **(Marks, p. 185)**

Demonstration at Langley—Candy's professional, public life continued to thrive. In 1970, Harper and Row (her longtime publisher) released her autobiography of the years spent touring with the USO during World War II, *More than Beauty*. One evening, she was a guest at a White House party. She and Pat Nixon were photographed as they smiled warmly at each other.

Perhaps it was the night after that White House party. Perhaps it was some other night—Candy never could remember the exact date. But, one night, she went from Washington D.C. to the CIA's headquarters at Langley, Virginia. There, Dr. Jensen demonstrated her degradation before a roomful of observers. Candy Jones was the first of eight conditioned hypnotic subjects which her unit-controller presented to his audience that night.

She lay prone on a rolling table, dressed only in her black wig, in deep trance. Jensen introduced her to the small audience as "Laura Quidnick." After putting her through a series of acts of visibly automatistic obedience, the doctor concluded this display of her total subjugation with an obscene finale. Holding a lighted candle in one hand, Jensen said to "Laura" that what he was about to do to her would not hurt, and she would not remember. Then he shoved the burning candle into her vagina.

Jensen then invited any doctor who wished from the seminar audience to come on stage and try to interfere with his control of Laura. He exuded smug pride as, one by one, the audience members, now clustered around the hypnorobot's gurney, tried—and failed—to disrupt his control over her.

Candy had endured all, proved herself to be the perfect hypnoprogrammed messenger, served her country with perfect obedience—and in perfect ignorance. Whether at work, supervising her office staff, at home with her children, or in social settings, Candy knew that she sometimes carried messages for the CIA. That is all she knew of those matters. She did not know that she was Dr. Jensen's unknowing hypnotic subject. She did not know that his vitamins were really a narcohypnotic drug She did not know she had an artificially-created split personality named Arlene Grant.

Candy Fights Back

Maybe what happened at Langley violated Candy's unconscious moral principles badly enough to shake the roots of her basic hypnoprogramming. Or maybe the cause of the fracture that appeared in the wall that separated her secret life from her known life was what happened in Taiwan, plus what happened at Langley. For whatever reason, at this point in her personal history, Candy Jones began to develop unconscious resistance to the problem which she did not know because she could not remember. She was fed up without consciously knowing exactly why. She heartily wished she had never signed on with the CIA.

In a later trance regression, she relived an argument with Jensen during this period. She said, "I love my country and that's why I started in the first place. But...could you do what I'm doing? Go ahead. You go and do the things I've been doing. You couldn't do it." **(Bain, p. 230)** In 1972, Candy firmly told Jensen that she was finished working for the Company.

Jensen did not let her go. Not in the usual way.

Suicide Orders—Candy's declaration that she wanted out was a turning point also for Jensen. He began to "suggest" suicide. Were the hypnotic suggestions to kill herself the logical completion of her testing sequence: the final and most truly "terminal" experiment? Or did Jensen choose "...the more conventional means of dealing with a renegade agent..."? **(Bain, p. 133)** Or was he done with his series of experiments and ready to discard Arlene (and Candy's body which contained her)?

Arlene was mouthy, unpredictable, and frightening. "He's petrified of me" **(Bain, p. 100),** she later told John. Candy's alter ego was definitely too human, not suitable for mass production. Jensen had manufactured Arlene in 1960. This was 1972. Hypnoprogramming technology had made significant advances over the dozen years since disrespectful Arlene first sneered at Jensen, "Who did you expect?" The current crop of hypnorobots was more comfortably robotic in behavior and attitude, not like feisty Arlene. Candy's split was now obsolete, surplus, an outdated experimental model with a bad habit of sassing its maker.

Jensen gave his subject suicide suggestions both in the form of direct and indirect suggestions under deep hypnosis. He repeated and elaborated them: "How would you do it?" he asked her. Then he told her how to do it:

> *CANDY: (She moans.) I can't keep fighting like this, don't you know that? I'm tired of fighting. I can't fight any more (weary, upset) He's gonna make me...give up.*
>
> *JOHN: Who's going to make you give up?*
>
> *CANDY: (hesitantly) Dr. Jensen.*
>
> *JOHN: What's he going to do to you?*
>
> *CANDY: He won't have to do it to me. He's gonna make me do it my own self. Give up...He wanted me to go down and jump off that rock.*
>
> *JOHN: He said that?*
>
> *CANDY: He said it would be very nice because I like it down there.*

JOHN: Jump off a cliff?
l

CANDY: He said you might as well go...why wait?
(Bain, p. 80)

Jensen specified the date, the place, and the scenario for his subject's death. Candy was to arrive in Nassau, Bahamas, on December 31, 1972. She was to check into the hotel she usually stayed at, the Paradise Beach. Jensen would phone her early in the morning of the next day and cue Arlene to come out and take over. Arlene would then walk the body to an out-of-the-way cliff. It had a fine view of ocean dashing on sharp rocks, far, far below.

When she began the publicity tour for Bain's book about her hypnoprogrammed life, Candy told KSAN's interviewer, David McQueen, more about those plans:

> *"And I was going to take my snorkel, my swimming things, and I would be up on a little promontory where there were pine trees, and put everything down neatly and take off my watch and go in...Arlene Grant was going to dive in...But the person who would have died would have been Candy Jones."* **(quoted in Schrag, pp. 443-4)**

Candy did not know what was scheduled to happen. Arlene, her unconscious split, knew that the body they shared had only thirty days before the death jump. The existence of Jensen's suicide scenario for Candy did not break through the wall of amnesia which divided her two selves. But something in her did break.

Better Wed Than Dead—Suddenly, like Pavlov's conditioned dogs after the Neva River flood almost drowned them in their basement cages, Candy was breaking Jensen-programming rules left and right. She broke the isolation rule by contacting her old friend (and longtime admirer), John Nebel.

Unconscious thinking is naturally arranged on a rational foundation of **opposites**. It is a strange, but true, fact that any chunk of programming in the unconscious—if under unbearable pressure—can escape that pressure by flowing to its opposite in that linkage of opposites. Candy now unconsciously converted Jensen's order to die into its opposite: a compelling and successful bolt to live. She broke Jensen's no love, no marriage rule. She and John had not seen each other for ten years. She was now 47; he was 61. They began to date. They married after a whirlwind, 28-day, romance. Neither she nor John knew her unconscious reason for hurrying. Both of them knew his reason. John Nebel had terminal cancer.

Candy had first met John when she was 18 and he was 32. He was a photographer on free-lance assignment, photographing her for a Borden ad. He shifted to radio at age 43, hosting WOR's all-night talk show. Over the next eight years, he built his slot into one of the hottest properties in New York radio. When he shifted to WNBC for eight years, and then to WMCA, his loyal listeners followed. He was always in the Nebel-at-Midnight slot, six nights a week, six hours every night. His show was New York's most popular nighttime radio talk show.

Candy had a truth that needed to be discovered. John was a perfect match for that need. Over the past twenty years, he had hosted every imaginable sort of guest on his all-talk show, including numerous hypnotists. He was famous for his ability to probe the weaknesses of guests. Broadcast schools everywhere played Nebel tapes to teach fledgling interviewers how to get at the truth.

So Candy did not go to the Bahamas to commit suicide. On New Year's Eve, 1972, the exact day she was to have checked in at the Caribbean hotel and begun her suicide sequence, she got married instead. A deeply implanted hypnotic command CAN be resisted, but only by **conversion** of that neural energy into some other form of expression. It can not be dealt with by a simple denial. Its mental energy, when cued into expression, has to go somewhere. Candy diverted the energy of a suicide scenario into that of a marriage scenario. Better wed than dead!

At their wedding, the famous bride's long years of CIA-conditioned isolation were obvious. Long John had forty guests. Candy had none, except her mother and the attendant who looked after her. Donald Bain, Nebel's friend and biographer, noticed that, and thought it strange.

Their marriage not only evaded Jensen's suicide plan for Candy. It also opened up wonderful new possibilities for her to get financial freedom from the longtime financial stress that first drove her into the arms of the CIA.[1] Nebel had invited her to co-host his nightly talk marathon and share its (he received no salary but collected half of the show's advertising revenue).

Candy Jones was an old pro at radio. John Nebel's audience quickly came to love her as well as him, so the listenership for the new husband-and-wife team stayed as solid as it had been for Nebel alone, and they prospered. Her new husband also offered Candy the services of his lawyers and accountants to extricate her from that money-hemorrhaging modeling school and agency. She gratefully accepted.

Arlene Begins to Appear—Jensen had conditioned Arlene to emerge when he told Candy to look in a mirror and "see" her. Starting with the wedding night, Arlene emancipated herself from being only Jensen's genie in the Candy bottle. She had a new man in her life now. She began to spontaneously appear when Candy looked into a mirror, a generalization of Jensen's first induction method. Arlene briefly appeared right after the wedding, and again that evening at their wedding reception feast in a Chinese restaurant. Arlene emerged a third time that night, after Candy left the marriage bed to go into the bathroom. There, she looked in the mirror, and returned...different. Arlene was not only appearing on her own. She was also disappearing on her own.

At first, the brunette in a blonde's body said nothing significant to John. She just took a turn at inhabiting the body for a while, then gave it back to Candy. It was as if Arlene now wanted to be John's hypnotic subject instead of Jensen's, the way a badly abused dog will leaves its cruel former home and take up residence outside the back door of some neighbor, hoping desperately to be treated with kindness and taken in.

Nebel had no idea what was going on. He only knew that, starting on their wedding night, there were moments when Candy acted like a different woman—"tense, angry, concerned. I asked her if anything was wrong and she gave me a curt 'No.'" **(Bain, p. 9)** It was Arlene who had said, "No." And then she disappear again. Candy would be back saying the familiar, reassuring words that John loved: "You're wonderful, John...You've made me the happiest woman on earth."

Once the alien presence was gone a while, John relaxed. But each brief appearance of Arlene left him more on edge. The idol of New York's nighttime radio took an instant, intense, permanent dislike to Arlene's cold, distant voice, her cruel facial expression, her bitterness.

Arlene could not help the way she was. She was Candy's aggressive aspect, rooted in an imaginary childhood playmate, strengthened and loaded with Jensen's hypnoprogramming, layered over that with the emotional burden of all the tragic experiences which Jensen had forced on her. John did not understand that Candy had unconsciously chosen to marry him and was calling him wonderful because of needs from the part of her which he already so disliked.

The next evening, John noticed another brief episode of that bizarre "mood" in Candy again. Over the coming days, the new husband gradually realized that he had taken into his life, not only Candy, but also this chronically angry spook who unpredictably took over Candy's body. He did not yet realize that Candy was amnesic for her split's nearly mute appearances. He did not know that Candy had worked for the CIA. In their whirlwind courtship, the master at ferreting out truth had not gotten around to finding out all that Candy had been doing over the past dozen years.

Now John began to ask a lot of questions. Candy was strangely evasive and curt in her answers. She did say, however, that she would have to take a trip now and then. John did not like the idea of that at all. He pressed her for details. Finally, Candy told him about that long-ago FBI meeting, about letters sent to her office, about the messages that she had carried. She had told him all that she remembered.

"Do you still work for them?" John asked.

"No," she said.

John wondered if he had heard the whole story.

Nasty and negative as Arlene seemed to John to be, she was trying to accomplish something healthy and good with her appearances. Candy was still at risk from Jensen. She needed help. Neither Candy, nor John, knew about Jensen. Arlene could not tell either of them in any normal way because her conditioning forbade it. She believed that, if John knew the real situation, he would help. But how could she tell? HOW?

John Hypnotizes Candy

John Nebel's job had required him to find material to keep interesting nighttime radio conversations going six hours a night, year after year. Sometimes he had hypnotists as guests. Again and again, he had read their books to prepare for the interviews, asked them questions, listened to their answers over the long night hours, watched them demonstrate hypnotic phenomena. Recently, he had accepted the invitation of one such guest to take his brief course in hypnosis. Nebel was "an amateur student of hypnosis." **(Schrag, p. 442)** He had the two necessary skills to protect Candy from Jensen: some knowledge of hypnosis, and decades of experience at digging out the truth in interviews.

---

[1] Her CIA employment had since tended to continue that financial desperation. Her modeling agency and charm school business were ruined by all the time the CIA took, and by the unpredictable behavior it caused.

Arlene had to find a way to get John to hypnotize Candy—and a way that Candy would allow herself to be hypnotized. It would have to be a disguised induction. Thus it came about that, five months after her marriage to John, Candy's unconscious began to inflict upon her the most severe possible insomnia. (Sleep deprivation results in greater than normal susceptibility to trance induction.) Candy and John were up all night doing their show. They would go home and sleep in the morning. But now Candy could not sleep.

It came to a head on June 3, 1973. She "...tossed and turned in the double bed in their cramped bedroom. Her face was drawn, and dark circles beneath her eyes caused them to appear sunken. She was near tears..." **(Bain, p. 36)** The anxious husband decided that Candy needed to relax. Trance induction is a physiological relaxant. John said, "I'll hypnotize you."

She said, "I can't be hypnotized."

John then tried a disguised induction, a type called **progressive relaxation**. Candy, being a highly trained hypnotic subject, quickly went into a deep trance. Her breathing became slow and regular. John then used a limb catalepsy routine to test her depth and deepen more. She was "down" all right. He then gave her a suggestion to shift from trance "sleep" into a true sleep. She did that. He had hypnotized her without using the "H" word, and he had relaxed her into getting a good sleep. He felt quite pleased with himself.

The next morning, Candy had insomnia again. John did progressive relaxation with her again. It worked, and she slept well. The next day, again there was Candy's insomnia followed by John's progressive relaxation induction. But, this time, something new happened before she shifted from hypnotic to natural sleep. After John "relaxed" her, she did a spontaneous age regression. She began talking in a little girl's voice. Pretending to be a man from her neighborhood, John conversed with the "little girl" for a few minutes. Then her regression stopped. She fell into a sound and natural sleep. The fourth time that John relaxed her, she spontaneously regressed to childhood again, and relived more incidents.

It became a routine. Whenever John saw that Candy was in trance and spontaneously regressed, he would ask, "Where are you now?" She would tell him. John would choose some appropriate role to play in the scene she was reliving. Candy was now sleeping better, and she was feeling more cheerful when awake. John considered the trances to be a good thing—and the regressions no problem.

One day, in an awake state, Candy told John that she had visited a CIA psychiatrist, Dr. Jensen, in California. She said that Jensen had wanted to hypnotize her and help her quit smoking, but she had informed him she could not be hypnotized—and he had agreed she could not.

John was startled. He knew that he had been hypnotizing Candy, but he could not make Candy believe that he had hypnotized her. Suddenly, he remembered hearing about a method of disguised induction for a person who says they can not be hypnotized. The hypnotist agrees with the subject, then demonstrates, "for your general information," how hypnotists do it to people who can be hypnotized. "Did he show you how he would have hypnotized you, if you were able to be hypnotized?" Nebel asked her.

"Oh, he showed me some things," Candy replied. "But he knew I couldn't be."

Arlene Spills the Beans—A few hypnotic sessions later, on June 1973, Candy spontaneously regressed—not to childhood, but to a scene in which Arlene was talking to Jensen! She was talking to John as if he were JENSEN! John accepted the role she had given him. He played along, pretending to be Dr. Jensen.

After Candy awoke from trance, and the natural sleep that followed it, John asked her about Jensen again. Soon, he realized that his wife could only remember visiting Jensen the first time. She could not remember anything that had happened inside his office after the conversation in which he had complained about her smoking, and then agreed that she could not be hypnotized. John reasoned that Candy's memory stopped so abruptly because Jensen had hypnotized her and suggested amnesia. But his wife had not stopped smoking, so WHY did Jensen hypnotize her?

The next morning, after the show was done and they had gone to bed, and John had "relaxed" Candy, she did another spontaneous **revivification**. (A "revivification" is the most authentic type of hypnotic regression; the old memory "tape" plays, and the subject relives a past scene in their life.) She was pushing hard now to accomplish the long, sad process of revealing the history of her conditioning and life as a hypnotic subject.

Again, Arlene talked to John as if he were Jensen. Arlene was forbidden to talk to anybody about her creation and activities—except to Jensen! John knew that he should play along with the Jensen role which Arlene had assigned him, because to a regressed hypnotic subject...

> *...all time subsequent to the...event...is blotted from the mind. It is, therefore, necessary for the operator to fit himself into the regression...transform himself into someone known to the subject at the earlier period.* **(LeCron (ed), *Experimental Hypnosis*, p. 156)**

John was beginning to understand. Later that day, he went out and bought a tape recorder. From this point on, he taped every conversation he had with his wife when she was in trance. During June and July, 1973, in both induced and spontaneous daily trances, John gradually learned the truth about Candy's job with the CIA.

He became accustomed to abrupt personality shifts in which Arlene's voice would suddenly be replaced by Candy's, or vice versa. Sometimes it was a hypnotized, unconscious Candy who talked to John during the regressions; sometimes it was Arlene. (The revivifications showed that Jensen also had encountered both of Candy's personalities under hypnosis.) John soon became familiar with the differences between their voices. Arlene's was more deep, harsh, and masculine-sounding. Candy never swore. Arlene always swore. Candy was always unaware of the missing time when Arlene was out. Arlene knew all the content of both lives.

The mysterious Dr. Jensen and the CIA shadowed the life of these celebrity newly weds. Candy consciously knew and admitted to John that she sometimes tried to call Dr. Jensen, probably in response to posthypnotic suggestions to check in at a certain time on a certain date. John also knew she did that. He had observed, to his great distress, how Candy, in an instant, would transform to Arlene, who would insist that she had to call "the Murray Hill number." And there was no stopping her. Fortunately, that number never answered now.

A plainclothes detective had begun to stand across the street from their apartment. He stood there every day, month after month—watching.

On July 3, 1973, John heard a disturbing message on their answering machine:

> *Japan Airlines calling on the 03 July at 4:10 P.M....Please have Miss Grant call 759-9100...She is holding new reservation on Japan Airlines Flight 5, for the sixth of July, Kennedy-Tokyo, with an open on to Taipei. This is per Cynthia that we are calling. Thank you.* **(Bain, p. 243)**

The fact that John heard that call presumably caused another failure for the CIA, another win for Candy/Arlene. For John made sure that his wife did not get on that flight. If she had, she might never have come back. Or she might have come back freshly reprogrammed, back under complete hypnocontrol.

John tried to track down who made that reservation for "Miss Grant." No luck. Japan Airlines said that the reservation was real, but they did not know who had booked it. They had no clerk named "Cynthia." Then somebody explained to John that "Cynthia" was probably a commercial code name for bookings from a certain organization, perhaps the CIA. His informant said that airlines often booked space and billed clients using such codes. "Cynthia" certainly did sound like a booking code that the CIA might have used.

John, Candy, and Arlene—As Arlene revealed, bit by bit, the truth about Candy's life, Nebel was at first uncomprehending. When he did begin to catch on, the information deeply disturbed him. He wanted to talk to Candy about it.

Armed with the tapes, John confronted his wife with the information which Arlene was revealing. Even after hearing tapes of herself talking to John under hypnosis, however, Candy still firmly denied being hypnotized. She insisted that his tapes were only of her sleep-talking while dreaming. By denying that she had been hypnotized, Candy unconsciously was protecting John's access to her unconscious memories. She was a sealed person. She could not allow herself to be hypnotized. John did not understand her very real need to deny that he was hypnotizing her.

He tried, again and again, to get through her denial. He played tapes for her, talked to her about the hypnosis sessions, described all that she had said and done while in trance. She still insisted that it was all only sleep talking during dreams. Or maybe, she said, it was "autosuggestion." She could not admit she had done the "H" word.

Candy also adamantly denied that Jensen had hypnotized her. When the regressions revealed that she had also been hypnotized by Dr. Burger, she denied that too.

Arlene's process of revealing truth had now shifted into high gear. In numerous, spontaneous revivifications, Arlene emerged and took over that shared body. Except—she had enough respect for a working woman's situation to never come out during Candy's live hours on the show.

At first, Arlene had avoided all conversation with John. Then, she only talked to him in the role of Jensen, while in a state of revivification. Sometimes now, however, she talked to him as John. She was getting freer from Jensen's rules. (So, Candy was getting freer too.)

The split's cue to emerge was usually Candy's encounter with a mirror. Whenever Candy looked at her face's reflection—in a restaurant, a restroom, or the bathroom of their apartment—Arlene was likely to emerge. John developed a wake-up cue that instantly sent the split back under cover when she was no longer welcome, or had appeared at an inopportune moment. (If John pressed her hand against a piece of tile, Candy would immediately be awake and back in possession of her body.)

The first blow to Candy/Arlene's winning trend came from John. So far, he had been wonderful. He had met her unconscious need to be hypnotized and reveal information. Because her husband was almost always with her, he was able to help whenever the spontaneous trance regressions happened. He had carefully taped numerous hypnotic sessions and all the evidence they contained. He had spent hundreds of hours carefully questioning her to make details of the story clear. John was determined that there would eventually be a book about Candy's hypno-abuse, so that the public would also know these facts.

"Long John" Nebel was struggling too. At first, he mistakenly believed that Arlene's chronic state of anger was directed at him. Even after he intellectually understood that it was not, John still reacted emotionally as if it were. He blamed Dr. Jensen and the CIA for having created Arlene. But he also felt an implacable, angry hostility toward Arlene.

John blamed all their marital problems on Arlene's butting into what he viewed as his and Candy's private lives. He believed that Candy would be fine again if he could make intruder-Arlene quit coming out. John also feared that Candy might harm herself during a trance, because Arlene walked around his apartment during revivifications as if it had the layout of Jensen's office. He feared that she "would slip into such a deep trance that he would be unable to control her" **(Bain, p. 120)**. He feared Arlene's capacity to publicly embarrass him.

John was either ignorant of, or not a subscriber to, hypnotherapy principles. He could not imagine a positive role for cynical, bitter, uncooperative, independent Arlene in Candy's mind. He never understood that Arlene was the part of Candy strong enough to suffer Jensen's endless horrific abuses, to contain all the forms of pain that he inflicted, and survive it. He never thought of Candy and Arlene as merely separated components of one woman's personality. Candy was John's ideal woman: unfailingly soft, appreciative, respectful, gentle, sweet, yielding. To him, she was the "real" personality. To his credit, he stayed deeply in love with her through all this. But he never understood that Arlene was genuinely Candy too, a split made from stolen, isolated parts of Candy's own feelings, opinions, and strengths.

John, also, did not like the way that Arlene badmouthed Candy. For Arlene routinely insulted her root self with words such as "dumb," " slow," " stupid." She called Candy a "goody two-shoes" and the "mother of her country" (referring to Candy's tragically abused patriotism). It made John angry when Arlene snickered at the gentleness and pliability of Candy. It disturbed him when Arlene revealed her possession of Candy's capacity for anger and ideas of retribution:

> *"I have a lot of scores to settle up, and if Candy can't settle her scores for herself, I'll settle them for her...Candy has been screwed so many times, and I'm going to help her unscrew her life because she is just too goddamn dumb...I'm sick of watching it."* **(Bain, p. 160)**

Bit by bit, Arlene was unscrewing Candy's life. She was providing a detailed expose of the CIA experimentation on Candy. She was gradually reuniting Candy with her amnesic knowledge, loosening up the grip of Jensen programming on her mind and life. By now, Candy had finally accepted what Arlene was revealing, and she had began to eagerly participate in that uncovering, in the process of trance remembering. She was pressing on, trying to recover it all. The basic story of Candy/Arlene and the CIA was clear by the end of June and July 1973, but there were still a myriad of details to be cleared up. Candy still needed dental work, and John wanted psychiatric testing of her to corroborate Arlene's revelations—and then shut her up forever.

Dentists and Doctors—John urged Candy to see a dentist for a long time before she finally visited one. It was her first dental appointment since Jensen's hypnoses of her began, twelve years before! By now, her teeth were a disaster. She had become the famous beauty who did not dare smile. The dentist called her mouth "...a mess...One tooth was broken at the gum line. I had never seen anything quite so bad in all my years of practice." **(Bain, p. 132)** Unable to overcome Jensen's prohibition of anesthetic, Candy had all the needed work done without using a painkiller. It was a very slow, very painful process.

John also urged Candy to see a psychiatrist. For a long time, Candy was positive that talking to a psychiatrist would make her horribly sick, even to the point of convulsion. (Convulsions can be caused by hypnotic suggestion.) Merely discussing it gave her excruciating stomach cramps. Bain found another way. He often had hypnotists on the show. Her programmed prohibition did not seem to prohibit a casual and "accidental" encounter with a medical hypnotist! She let first one, and then another, hypnotize her at the station during station breaks from interviewing. Both gave Candy suggestions which accomplished further freeing and desensitizing.

Then, Candy agreed to go to Dr. Herbert Spiegel's office for a formal testing of her susceptibility. She had been acquainted with Spiegel (a psychiatrist who taught medical hypnosis at Columbia's medical school) for years. Nebel also knew Dr. Spiegel, who often talked on John's show about being a forensic hypnotist for the FBI or about Sybil, a woman with sixteen personalities, for whom he was the relief psychiatrist when her main one had to be out of town.

To test Candy's hypnotizability, Spiegel used a susceptibility test, the "Hypnotic Induction Profile." A **susceptibility test** is a **standardized hypnotic induction,** followed by suggestions of various types. The tester reads an induction script to the subject. The speed with which the subject enters trance and the extent to which she obeys its series of requests (close your eyes, raise your arm, etc.) results in the score.

Candy's HIP rating was "extremely hypnotizable," the top ten percent. Spiegel said the test proved that she was hypnotizable enough to be hypnoprogrammed. She was a **somnambulist**, a person who has the capacity for complete amnesia—and for authentic regressions.

Spiegel's other tests of Candy looked for any "psychophysical basis" for her difficulties. He gave her the Thematic Apperception Test (TAT: tell brief stories about each in a standard set of pictures), and the Rorschach (describe images in ink blots). Spiegel said that Candy's TAT and Rorschach showed "episodic periods of stress, but not at the psychotic or schizophrenic level." **(Forward to Bain)**

Her brain scan also was normal. All in all, the psychiatrist found no evidence of insanity. Candy was relieved to be assured that there was now good evidence that she was not insane. She had been threatened by Jensen, in trance, that if she ever told a clinical person about the hypnosis, she would be immediately declared insane.

Spiegel concluded his report with a statement that he was confident that the CIA history, which Arlene had reported, was true.

John Battles Arlene—Candy had accomplished a lot toward accepting Arlene and the unconscious memories and separated strengths which she embodied. She had come far in the process of overcoming her amnesia and phobias. She expressed gratitude for Arlene's efforts and did her best to help the process of memory recovery.

John, on the other hand, became ever more unhappy with his wife's dual life. Long hypnotic sessions following long nights of work at the radio station exhausted him. They exhausted Candy, too. The frequent trances ate into her sleep time and caused great physical stress.[1] She began to look chronically exhausted and unhealthy.

John had two medical allies in his efforts to repress Arlene. Dr. Spiegel advised Candy to turn off her split's spontaneous appearances. Dr. Dick, Nebel's internist (who learned hypnosis from Spiegel) also urged Candy, in three hypnotic sessions, to control Arlene's appearances. But neither Spiegel nor Dick could affect her.

Candy defended her alter ego when John ranted about his dislike of her. She intuitively understood that the damage done by twelve years of criminal hypnosis would require more than two months to heal. Candy and Arlene had no choice but to struggle on with John Nebel as hypnotist, despite his desire that it be over.

Arlene repeatedly tried to show romantic interest in John, but he always scornfully rejected her. He believed that kissing, showing love, or having sex with Arlene would be moral unfaithfulness to his wife, Candy.

Then, John took it upon himself to make Arlene go away forever. He began making terrible threats to her. Candy tried to mediate. She told him that Arlene bragged about strength, but that her split really was afraid. John did not get the message. More and more, he talked to Arlene as if she were an evil spirit. In seven taped trance sessions (a horrified Bain counted them), John threatened to kill or injure Arlene. His threats were cruel and detailed. "I could break your arm," he once said.

Arlene had broken free of Jensen because he intended to kill Candy. Now, John was threatening to hurt, or even kill, Arlene.

JOHN: (in a threatening voice) Suppose you were burned to death?

ARLENE: I wouldn't like that.

JOHN: I don't care what you like.

ARLENE: She wouldn't want to burn. What happens to me will happen to Candy.

JOHN: (angry, frustrated) Your knowledge in this area, Arlene, is extremely limited. I can exorcize you. One way I can do it is with flame.

ARLENE: ...Do you really want to burn me?

When John threatened to shut her up in a box, a hysterical Arlene begged him not to do it. That was their new routine; strong Arlene ends up in fearful tears. John would not stop his cruel threats until Arlene cried. Arlene had escaped one cruel tormenter, only to find herself in the hands of another.

After months of suggesting terrible threats of violence that he might do to Arlene, John began to worry she might hurt him. It was a suggestion-by-expectation to that hypnotic persona. Sure enough, one night John woke to find Arlene trying to choke him. He threw her off. Afterwards, Arlene said that she had only wanted to frighten him. She said that she would not really hurt him, or herself, or Candy, or anybody else. Indeed, she never acted violently again. But that did not improve things between her and John.

---

[1] Trance time imitates sleep and dreaming time. But it is not a truly equal rest. Trance reduces the physiological urge to sleep without satisfying the body and brain's need for that rest.

Nebel added a new tactic to his anti-Arlene campaign. He made Candy feel guilty whenever Arlene appeared. He told Candy that Arlene was endangering their marriage.

Bain Writes Candy's Story

Although Candy was a significant author in the field of fashion and beauty (ten books in print and an eleventh in process at this time), she did not write the history of her hypnoprogramming. Candy decided that this story, though also her own, would be told by another author.

August, 1974, Donald Bain accepted an invitation from John and Candy to visit their small Eastside apartment. He came, heard their story, accepted the assignment, and began work on a book about Candy's CIA history. Don Bain had neither medical nor scientific credentials. He had no educational or personal background for understanding CIA experiments in narcohypnosis, hypnoprogramming, artificial personality splitting, amnesia, and torture. His one previous book was a biography of John Nebel, (unfortunately) titled *Long John Nebel: Radio Talk King, Master Salesman, and Magnificent Charlatan* **(Macmillan, 1974).**

But Candy and John knew Donald Bain. What he lacked in credentials, he made up for in availability. When they asked, he agreed to write her story. It was not an easy task. Bain had to piece together Candy's CIA history from painstakingly transcribed tapes of John's hundreds of hours spent talking to Candy or Arlene under hypnosis. He interviewed Candy and John for hours. He did supplementary research on hypnosis, reading books, and talking to hypnotists.

John was now refusing to talk to Arlene. Period. Bain, because he was working on the book about Arlene's CIA experiences, was pushing Candy to provide more detail about those experiences. But only Arlene knew the answers to his questions.

Candy developed a way of accessing Arlene's memories without John. After coming home from the studio, Candy would go to her private apartment (adjoining the one she shared with Nebel). There, she called out Arlene by looking in a mirror. Then, as Arlene, she would write for hours what she remembered of the secret life. Writing had been Candy's skill. Now Arlene was doing it. Candy had taken control of the schedule and content of Arlene's emergencies. The two selves were slowly reuniting.

John Nebel, however, was still not satisfied. He pressured Candy to repress Arlene—COMPLETELY. Finally, Candy agreed. She told Don Bain her decision:

> *To recall trips, Arlene, and those days, places and experiences for you on paper, I first have to use the mirror—look into it and ultimately, in a form, Jensen's "cute" gimmick—there she is: Arlene.*
>
> *The trouble, however, is that by the time I'm to go back to our living apartment and to bed—which may be noon or later, I'm so exhausted I can't bring myself back.*
>
> *Today must be the last time I use the mirror in here for fear of the above happening again.*
>
> *Hard for anyone 'cept John to understand and I know it has destroyed much of his regard of me.*
>
> *So—no more morning typings about the past to you or for anything related to Arlene.*
>
> *I am eager for the book's success—for so many reasons and for everyone's sake... Best regards, C. J.* **(Bain, p. 249)**

Bain was frustrated. He had so many more questions that now would never be answered. On the other hand, John was pleased.

Publishing and Publicity—Bain's book about Candy was published in 1976. Candy wrote a postscript:

> *...I marvel at the author's patience for the factual reporting of the vast details involved, his sensitivity and resistance to dwell on much of the sensationalism contained, and the Herculean task it required to tell my story...For all this I am grateful. Had it not been for John Nebel, I wouldn't have been alive; Jensen nearly won out...I won't have to take that swim now.*

Acerbic (and now gagged) Arlene would have retorted that the victory declaration was premature.

Playboy Press published *The Control of Candy*

Jones in early 1976. (Harper and Row put out Candy Jones' *Complete Book of Beauty and Fashion* that same year.) Bain's book is not a clinical case study like those of the psychiatrists, Reiter and Mayer. He was only a journalist, trying to report an unfamiliar and difficult topic, but he managed to pass on the basic facts of Candy's history in a readable form.

The Mind Control of Candy Jones holds several unofficial records:

- The only book-length report of an American victim of unethical hypnosis;

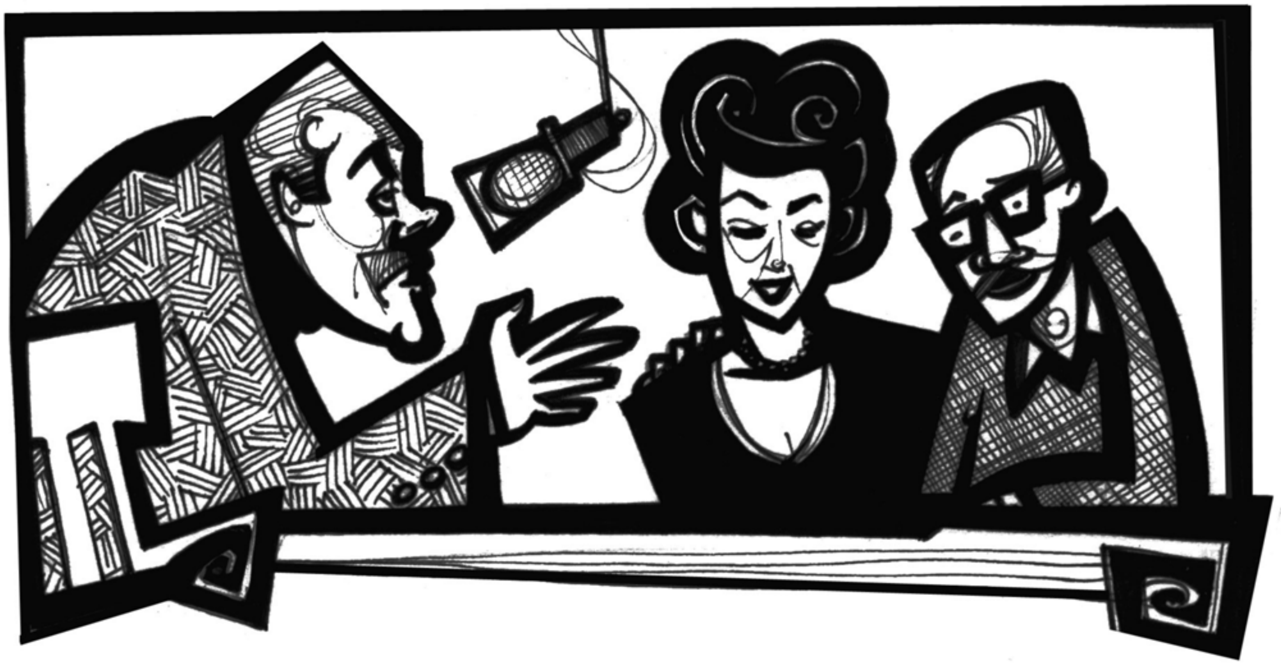

- The only book-length case report of a hypnoprogrammed person since Reiter's report on Palle;
- The only book-length study of a hypnoprogramming case that involves narcohypnosis and artificial personality splitting;
- The only reported case, up to now, in which a hypnoprogramming victim saved herself and managed to get her story told.

Publicity Tour—Candy, via Arlene, had been trying to tell what the CIA, via Dr. Jensen, had done to Candy—could do to anybody. The final terrifying hurdle of telling was the coming publicity tour. Bain was going along with Candy. (John could not leave his radio show.) The planned nationwide tour, organized by their publisher, was scheduled to begin in California with a KSAN radio special about mind control.

Candy and Bain were in the studio speaking live. Walter Bowart, a journalist who was then researching a book about military hypnoprogramming, participated by phone. Bain said that he and Candy "have material that links Sirhan to Dr. Jensen on two specific occasions prior to the assassination." **(Scheflin & Opton, p. 444)** Sirhan had shot and killed Robert F. Kennedy. Both Dr. Spiegel and a prison psychiatrist who had examined Sirhan in his California prison cell, insisted that the Middle Easterner was hypnoprogrammed and had fired the shot in response to an operator's suggestion, not of his own volition. Now Bain had publicly declared that he had evidence linking Sirhan to Dr. Jensen. And Jensen was a CIA psychiatrist who Arlene had identified as having specialized in making and operating unknowing hypnotic subjects for the Agency.

Bain also would have probably talked about Arlene's description of California laboratories in which Jensen scientifically tested his control over Candy. He would have told about his chance meeting with Dean Kraft, a Brooklyn psychic healer, on Nebel's show. Kraft had described to Bain the California laboratory in which government researchers had tested his healing powers, the place where he was told not to ask what government agency was paying him, and not to ask about the "backgrounds" of the staff who tested him. Kraft's description of that place matched Arlene's in every detail!

John, Candy, and Bain Are Silenced—

Candy Jones, Donald Bain, and John Nebel lived on, but their feverish efforts to uncover and make known CIA hypnoprogramming secrets stopped, literally overnight. Candy did only one more interview after that KSAN interview. After that, none of the three ever gave another interview on this subject. They appear to have been quickly and permanently silenced. The planned nationwide tour stopped before it had really started—after only two radio interviews.

In the late 1980s, while casually scanning radio stations one restless night, I tuned in a California station. The deejay was talking about his interview with Candy Jones on her last tour, her next interview after KSAN, her very last one. She did it the day after KSAN. And he was the man who had interviewed her.

Unquenchable Truth

Arlene managed to tell. John taped. Bain wrote. Playboy printed. Although the book was pulled from bookstores soon after, some copies from that first printing of *The Mind Control of Candy Jones* were already circulating. A remainder dealer (junk buyer of the book world) bought the last of the publisher's first run. He listed the book in his mail-order catalog—the place where "dead" books go. More people saw it there and ordered copies. I was one of them.

Candy Jones was alone for that interview. She did not say where Bain was. She told the interviewer that his would be the last interview she did for the time being. She explained that she had just signed a contract. It paid $100,000 for the movie rights to her story, a lot of money in that era. The contract stipulated that no more publicity was to be done until the movie came out.

The deejay made clear his impression that Candy believed it was honest money. She believed there would be a movie. She expected major publicity when it was released. She told him that she and Bain would be writing the movie script together (so Bain was getting paid, too.)

Candy Jones and Donald Bain did work on the script, for a while, as the ruse (in my opinion, odds favor the $100,000 being CIA money, and the "movie" proposal, a CIA deceit) dragged on. Some researchers who asked for interviews were told that "no more interviews were being given while Candy Jones and Donald Bain were working on a movie about her experiences." **(Scheflin and Opton, p. 444)** When Scheflin and Opton, themselves, tried to schedule an interview with Candy and Bain, they ignored the two scholarly investigators. Walter Bowart was also trying to arrange an interview. Candy and Bain had been warmly cordial to Bowart during their shared interview on KSAN. Now they ignored his letters and refused to take his phone calls.

No movie was ever made. There was never any later publicity. A bona fide movie producer would have wanted maximum publicity at every stage. Without publicity, a book does not sell well. In the blink of an eye, after Candy signed that contract, Bain's book about her was "out of print."

[Copies are available, however, from Amazon.com and other used book sources. It takes about a month to get one.]

Perhaps Candy realized all that afterwards, but she had signed the contract. She had sold the rights to her life story. That signature took her in one moment from a full-tilt promotional campaign to never again talking about her hypnoprogramming and the CIA experiments. Did Jensen, the CIA doctor, make a surprise visit to her California hotel room after the KSAN show and compel Candy to sign that contract?

But Bain accepted the deal too. And John Nebel also never again talked to anybody about Candy's CIA history. So threats of a more conventional sort may have been involved.

Despite all attempts to suppress the truth, Candy's story was out!

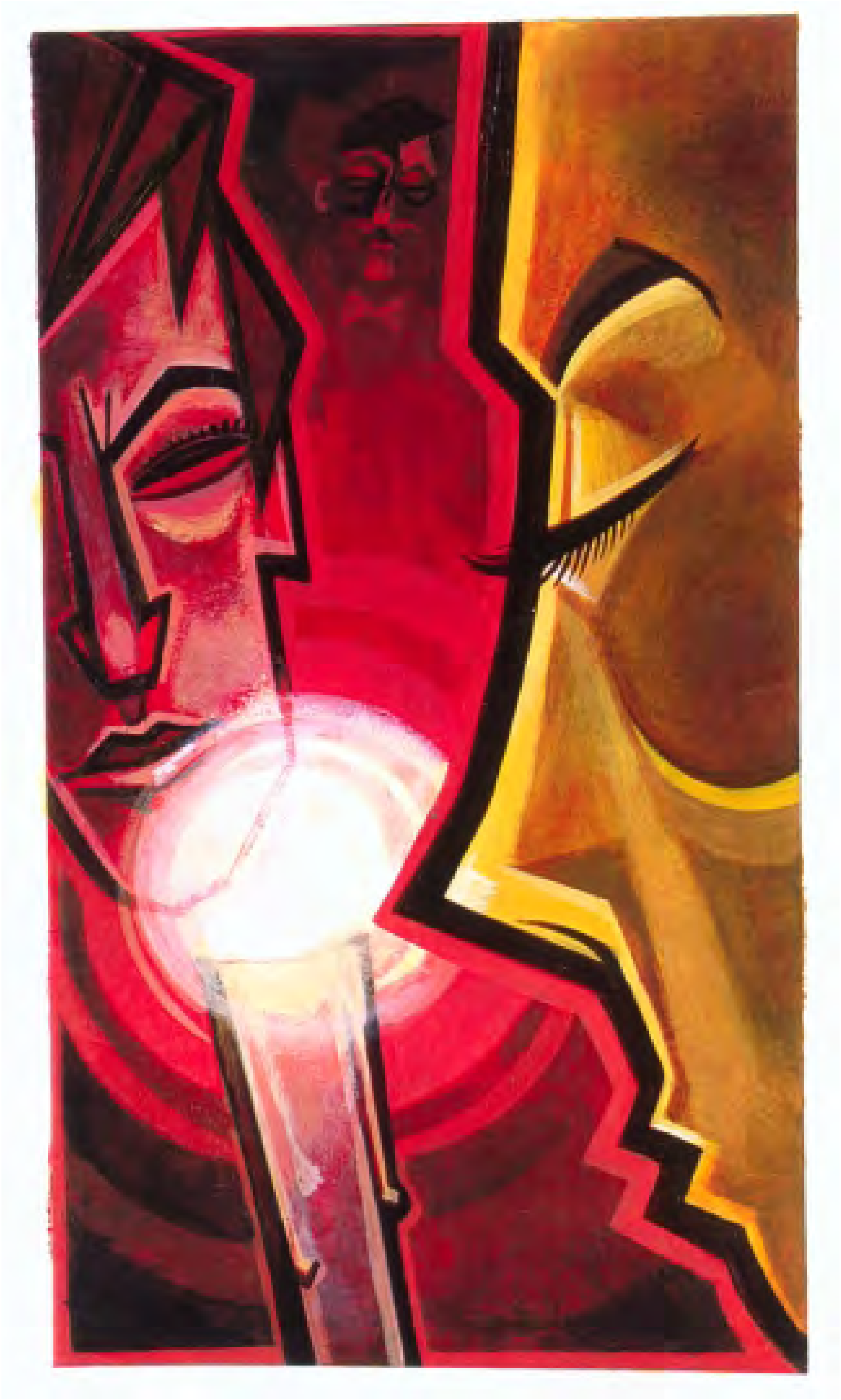

He would seat Candy in a darkened room in front of a candle, in front of a big mirror...and then say, "Look into the mirror and see Arlene"

PART II

A Partial History of U.S. Government Mind-Control Research

Can’t come up. Fish don’t come up.

U.S. Research on Hypnosis and Mind Control Begins

Secret Agencies, Secret Research, Secret Operations

Mind-Control Research: Goals and Methods

Physical Methods of Psychiatry

The History of Deliberate Personality Splitting

Operation Often: A Case History

Information, Interviews, and Incidents

Psychiatry Is No Longer a Joke

U.S. Research on Hypnosis and Mind Control Begins

The Personalities

☑

Military Mind Control Research Begins

They fought in the trenches of concealment and deception, across the lines of falsehood and betrayal....It is the same in any war. What is heroic in combat is criminal in peace. Just as combat sanctions physical violence, so espionage grants license to moral violence....It is trite but true to say that they did what they did for the good of their country. Unfortunately, it is also true that it frequently didn't work out that way.

David C. Martin, *Wilderness of Mirrors*, pp. xii-xiv

The Personalities

At first, the persons involved in U.S. hypnoprogramming research were real and interesting. Later, they became anonymous, faceless operators and agents.

Donovan Organizes the OSS

In 1940, President Roosevelt asked a World War I General, William Donovan, to organize and head a U.S. intelligence gathering service—and a secret scientific research program. Between the two wars, General Donovan had become a very successful Wall Street lawyer. He knew everybody who mattered: politicians, tycoons, academics. They called him "Colonel" or "Wild Bill." The new agency was called the OSS (Organization for Strategic Services). From the very beginning, bold and imaginative thinking was its rule.

> *"Every eccentric schemer with a harebrained plan for secret operations (from phosphorescent foxes to incendiary bats) would find a sympathetic ear in Donovan's office." Donovan's comrade and close friend, later U.S. Ambassador to Great Britain, David Bruce, has written about his colleague, "woe to the officer who turned down a project because, on its face, it seemed ridiculous, or at least unusual."* **(Scheflin and Opton, *The Mind Manipulators*)**

Donovan hired a crew of talented and daring young men, many of whom completed their careers with the CIA: Stanley Lovell, George White, Richard Helms, Frank Wisner, and Dr. Sidney Gottlieb. Donovan also recruited the nation's best scientific researchers—anybody who had talent and an idea—to work for him, without leaving their particular institutions. And he rallied prominent industrialists, a Who's Who of the nation.[1]

---

[1] His model of linking covert government research with prominent U.S. corporations and universities was a policy that the CIA (and NSA) continued.

Clark Hull

Clark Hull, a Yale hypnosis researcher, began a new way of researching hypnosis by collecting and analyzing biological statistics about trance subjects rather than pondering the trance itself. Like Pavlov, Hull viewed hypnotism as **conditioned reflex** (acquired unconscious habit). He claimed a skeptical view of hypnotic phenomena, but he hypnotized a lot of people:

> *A youth of eighteen or nineteen years is brought in by my assistant. He has consented to act as subject in a research project. I stand before him and look directly into his eyes. As he tilts his head backward to look into my eyes I observe as usual the sign of considerable emotional disturbance in the beating of his carotid artery...I direct him to look steadily into my eyes and to think of nothing but sleep, to relax his muscles all over, even so much that his knees bend a little and his legs scarcely hold him up. After three or four minutes his eyes close, his head nods forward, and his breathing becomes heavy. I say, 'Now you are falling toward me, you can't help yourself...I catch him when well off his balance. Upon inquiry he states, in a drowsy tone, that he could not help falling forward but that he isn't sound asleep 'because I know everything that is going on.' I suspect that he is mistaken and employ the following objective test. I give him a posthypnotic suggestion that after waking he shall pick up and examine a book on my desk when I sit down in a chair, but that he won't recall anything about why he did it. I wake him as usual with a snap of my finger...A few minutes later I sit down in the chair. He casually walks over to my desk, picks up the book, and after glancing at its title lays it down. I say, 'Why did you look at the book?' He answers that he just happened to notice it lying there and wondered what it was about.* **(Hull, *Hypnosis and Suggestibility*, p. 32)**

Hull's subject obeyed the professor's posthypnotic suggestion, and he was amnesic for the real reason he had picked up that book. He claimed, even believed, that Hull had not been able to hypnotize him. Actually, that young man had not only been hypnotized, but he had been to a **somnambulist** depth.

In 1930, the Yale employment office informed Hull that he would no longer be allowed to hire students for his experiments. Some professors from Yale's School of Medicine believed that hypnosis was dangerous and they had decided to stop him. Hull was restricted to nonhypnotic experiments for the rest of his career. He spent that time fitting an array of definitions, postulates, corollaries, and theorems into a complex mathematical model for predicting human or animal behavior (a concept of learned habits powered by biological drives).

Lovell Hires On

General Donovan recruited a biochemist, Dr. Stanley Lovell, to head the OSS's "dirty tricks" Research and Development section. In Lovell's biography, *Of Spies and Stratagems*, he recounted a private conversation with Donovan about this job proposal:

> *Without ado I opened up on my basic problem..."I'd relish your assignment, Colonel, but dirty tricks are simply not tolerated in the American code of ethics...Americans want to win within the rules of the game and devious, subtle devices and stratagems are, as the British say, 'just not cricket.'"*
>
> *"Don't be so...naive, Lovell," said Donovan. "The American public may profess to think as you say they do, but the one thing they expect of their leaders is that we will be smart...Outside the orthodox warfare system is a great area of schemes, weapons and plans which no one who knows America really expects us to originate because they are so un-American, but once it's done, an American will vicariously glory in it..."*
>
> *I pondered, then replied: "What I have to do is to stimulate the 'Peck's Bad Boy' beneath the surface of every American scientist and to say to him, 'Throw all your normal law-abiding concepts out the window. Here's a chance to raise merry hell. Come, help me raise it.'"*
>
> *"Stanley," he responded, using my first name as a sort of password, I felt, to his inner circle, "go to it."*
>
> *...with hardly an exception, they* [U.S. scientists working on these programs] *did outstanding service to their country...every one risked his future status...in identifying himself with illegality and unorthodoxy.* **(Lovell, pp. 21-22)**

In his book, Lovell briefly, but scathingly, denied any OSS use of hypnosis. He said that hypnosis was not real, and was simply tawdry play acting on the part of operator and subject. But British Intelligence used hypnoprogrammed agents almost from the war's beginning.[1] And Dr. George Estabrooks divulged in 1971, in a magazine interview, that he personally had hypnoprogrammed numerous U.S. agents and couriers for the U.S. government during World War II. **("Hypnosis Comes of Age," *Science Digest*, April, 1971).**

So Lovell was just following Company policy when he lied in his book, saying that hypnosis was not real. His profession hinged on keeping secrets—on the job, off the job, and when writing a book after the job. In that book, Lovell also reported overhearing a conversation between Donovan, who worked with European agents, and a Mr.

---

[1] Sir William Stephenson, author of *A Man Called Intrepid*, wrote to Candy Jones and said that he had been a spymaster in World War II and had agents like her working for British Intelligence.

Van Bush, who was involved with the secret atom bomb research. Lovell knew the inside scoop on both projects.

> *I recall Van Bush, with his typical Will Rogers smile, asking General Donovan, "Have you succeeded in getting any of your people really inside Germany?"*
>
> *"A few," said General Donovan rather casually.*
>
> *I knew we had perhaps eight hundred in Germany and occupied countries that minute, but I also knew that Dr. Bush would be even more evasive if General Donovan had asked him, "What, Dr. Bush, is this Manhattan Project all about?"* **(Lovell, p. 60)**

Lovell considered it appropriate for Donovan and Van Bush to lie about their projects. He did the same when talking about hypnosis.

A melding of amorality and secret scientific research and operations had been made the foundation values of a new agency of government. It seemed excusable at the time. Agencies of that type, however, have proliferated and thrived in the fifty years since Donovan accepted Roosevelt's commission to organize the OSS. They seem to operate with no moral guidelines except the Machiavellian goal of winning by any means. They endlessly pursue scientific inquiry, protected by the rule of Secret, Don't Tell from public oversight, yet financed by the cornucopia of public funding. They have grown in size, wealth, technological weaponry, propaganda abilities, and covert political power. This nation stands on the brink of reaping the sad fruit of secret government agencies functioning with neither moral foundation nor public oversight and control.

Sometimes, the best way to understand a big picture is to study closely one small piece of it, assuming that it will be representative of the whole. Here follows a study of secret government research into mind-control technologies from before World War II up to the present.

Estabrooks Promotes the "Super-Spy"

As soon as the OSS began, George Estabrooks (b. 1885, d. 1973) started traveling to Washington, D.C.. Estabrooks was a Canadian who spent three years at Oxford as a Rhodes Scholar. He received a doctorate, in 1926, from Harvard. He was a prominent figure in the American hypnosis scene for fifty years—from the 1920s to the 1970s. Most of those years he was head of Colgate University's Department of Psychology. Estabrooks produced the first recorded induction (a Victrola record). He published over sixty articles and several books, the most interesting of which is titled simply *Hypnotism*.[1]

Estabrooks promoted the use of hypnoprogrammed spies by both the military and police. He suggested that police agents could gather information from "the criminal class."

> *...If allowed a free hand, the authorities could proceed to plant such prepared subjects... always with the idea of obtaining information which might, sooner or later, be of real use to the police.* **(*Hypnotism*, p. 191)**

He described a method for programming a double agent, whose unconscious mind would be loyal to his country (or his secret agency, or military unit), but whose conscious mind would be loyal to whatever country (organization, religion, or relationship) that was being infiltrated and reported on.

> *...we will use hypnotism to induce multiple personality. Hypnotism is the means to an end, though the technique would be impossible did we not have hypnotism at our disposal....*
>
> *In his normal waking state, which we will call Personality A, or PA, this individual will become a rabid communist. He will join the party, follow the party line and make himself as objectionable as possible to the authorities.*
>
> *Then we develop Personality B (PB), the secondary personality, the unconscious personality...is rabidly American and anticommunist. It has all the information possessed by Personality A, the normal personality, whereas PA does not have this advantage.*
>
> *My super spy plays his role as a communist in the waking state, aggressively, consistently, fearlessly. But his PB is a loyal American, and PB has all the memories of PA. As a loyal American, he will not hesitate to divulge these memories.* **(*Ibid.*, p. 200)**

Unknowing Subjects—In *Hypnosis*, Estabrooks writes as if he is surrounded at Colgate by persons he has made into unknowing hypnotic subjects.

---

[1] In 1954, Estabrooks coauthored with Richard Lockridge a novel, *Death in the Mind*, set in World War II. In his story, Germans have secretly hypnotized certain Allied personnel, conditioned them to obey Nazi commands, and used them to commit a sequence of treasonable combat actions. The hero, secret agent Johnny Evans, creates countermeasures, then sets out to turn the tables and capture German minds: "Make them work for us." The beautiful hypnoprogrammed female agent is tortured.

> *One excellent subject, so trained, had been reading one of my manuscripts.*
>
> *"I can believe everything you say," he said, "but one thing. When you tell me that you can remove all knowledge of ever having been hypnotized, I simply don't believe it."*
>
> *"Jack," I said, "have you ever been hypnotized?"*
>
> *"No."*
>
> *"Do you think I could hypnotize you?"*
>
> *"No!"*
>
> *In one second he was hypnotized.* **(Ibid., p. 188)**

Jack knew no better, but Estabrooks had the satisfaction of proving the man entirely wrong and demonstrating complete hypnotic control over him. Estabrooks viewed persons who were susceptible to hypnosis as fodder for the mill of any hypnotist's notion of higher purpose, be it research, profit, patriotism, or the mesmerizer's personal entertainment. His attitude echoed that of Dr. Cook who, in 1927, advised beginning hypnotists to boldly develop a stable of hypnotic subjects:

> *First secure a good subject and practice upon him until you can hypnotize him with absolutely no difficulty, and then place him in the profound* [somnambulistic/amnesic] *stages of hypnosis...Next secure two or three more subjects and develop them, and thus gradually add to the number.* **(Cook, p. 125)**

In another incident described by Estabrooks, a visitor had joined the hypnotic operator and his unknowing subject in the lab. As the three casually chatted about a recent boxing match, the hypnotist tapped his pencil three times upon the table top, as if in thought. That was the subject's induction cue; his eyes instantly closed as he shifted to deep trance. The operator and his guest performed various hypnotic demonstrations of the subject in his somnambulistic state, then awakened him.

> *He immediately starts talking about that boxing match! A visitor to the laboratory interrupts him: "What do you know of hypnotism?"*
>
> *The subject looks surprised, "Why, nothing."*
>
> *"When were you hypnotized last?"*
>
> *"I have never been hypnotized."*
>
> *"Do you realize that you were in a trance just ten minutes ago?"*
>
> *"Don't be silly! No one has ever hypnotized me and no one ever can."* **(*Ibid.*, p. 197)**

The subject was unaware of the missing time and unknowing of his "other life," the time he spent under hypnosis.

Estabrooks Promotes Secrecy—and Reveals Secrets—Estabrooks played a curious dual role in the history of hypnoprogramming. He urged secret government hypnosis research. He said that hypnosis would become a valuable weapon as new techniques were discovered in the future. He participated in researching new techniques: "For developing some of them...[I] plead guilty." **(Estabrooks, *Future of the Human Mind*, 1961, p. 221)** He urged the use of consciously unknowing hypnoprogrammed, doubleminded agents, and he had manufactured such subjects.[1]

Estabrooks referred, again and again, to the necessity for secrecy about the specifics of that technology and its possible military applications. But the professor also loved to talk, write, hint, and brag about that secret technology: "The facts and ideas presented are, so to speak, too true to be good..." **(*Hypnotism*, 1944 ed., p. 193)** In the first edition of *Hypnotism* (1943), he laid the groundwork for his hypnotic "superspy" concept. His second expanded upon it. The third edition (1957) added two long chapters on military and unethical hypnosis. He worked hard to inform the public that creating an unknowing, robotically obedient, hypnotic subject was possible—even easy. He made valuable information available about the existence and methods of that technology. Imagining an argument with a nonbeliever in amnesic hypnoprogramming, Estabrooks wrote:

> *He might... question... Will your controls hold? How long will that posthypnotic suggestion last without reinforcement? Can you count on complete amnesia? Where is your proof that no one but yourself and such others as you may designate can hypnotize that man? Questions such as*

---

[1] In the 1980s and 1990s, "the federal government has paid out many hundreds of thousands of dollars to some of his [Estabrooks'] experimental victims." **(Daniel Brandt, *Prevailing Winds Magazine,* Number 3, p. 77)**

Estabrooks, M. H. Erickson, and the FBI Experiment

In 1939, Estabrooks set up a hypnosis experiment for the FBI. He recruited M.H. Erickson, one of America's most prominent medical hypnotists, to do it. Erickson had worked for years in areas with application to unethical hypnosis and had his own stable of somnambulists. Years later, at a Colgate conference (which was taped and later transcribed in a book which Estabrooks edited), the two reminisced about that experiment. Erickson recalled:

> "...[They] *sent up a couple of laboratory men to investigate the possibilities of using it. I had Tommy go into a trance. For one whole hour of discussion-answer I did not know what the FBI men were doing. They uncrossed their legs and crossed them; they took cigarettes, and one lit the other's cigarette, and the next time the other lit the first one's cigarette.*
>
> *"At the end of the hour they asked me to awaken Tommy, to bring him out of the trance, talk awhile, then put him back in the trance, and reorient him to that first trance. They had a program of exact movements, and they asked me...to have him visualize the entire procedure. Tommy gave a blow-by-blow account of the first hour, including the exact time in which so-and-so uncrossed his legs, when he recrossed them, when he shifted his hat over to one side, when he lit the other fellow's cigarette, when the other fellow lit his cigarette.*
>
> *"They had that entire program all mapped out, and I was an innocent bystander. But Tommy did it. Then I had Tommy come out of that trance and go back into a trance in which he regressed to the second trance and gave a report on the first trance with extreme accuracy...*
>
> *"It proves that apparently the hypnotic subject can record a tremendous amount of data, that he can recover it in a perfectly remarkable fashion, and that his sense of order and system of experiencing things is very meaningful."* **(Estabrooks, ed., *Hypnosis: Current Problems*, pp. 270-271)**

> *these...merely involve details of technique. The theoretical and factual basis of that technique no competent psychologist would question.* **(*Hypnotism*, p. 193)**[1]

How to Program an Unknowing Hypnotic Subject

Estabrooks estimated that ten hours of hypnosis would be enough to accomplish his basic intention. However, he recommended a ten-month regimen for **candidates** who were to be both personality split and highly trained. What he called "candidates" were not volunteers. His basic procedure (given in *Hypnotism*, p. 195) for creating the unknowing hypnoprogrammed subject began with a disguised induction. It then proceeded to suggested amnesia, sealing against hypnotic competition, and the giving of a posthypnotic suggestion for instant re-induction by cue:

1) Covertly identify a specimen of the 20% of persons who are genetic **somnambulists** and easily can go to an amnesic depth of trance. Induct by a "disguised" method.

2) While the subject is in trance, give a **posthypnotic suggestion** for him to become deeply hypnotized again whenever the hypnotist gives a certain cue (such as tugging the left ear lobe with the right hand).

3) Also, give a posthypnotic suggestion which will deny the subject any conscious knowledge of this hypnosis, or any subsequent one. That causes an artificial, selective **amnesia** for all hypnosis events.

---

[1] Now, almost two generations later, it is apparent that Estabrooks, master of hypnosis, had grossly underestimated the power of a related psychological technology—propaganda. Propaganda turned upside-down that which he saw as obvious truth; it established myth as seeming fact. It was the Big Lie technique that did it, the lie endlessly repeated with seeming absolute confidence by everybody who is anybody in hypnosis, psychology, and psychiatry (most of them sincerely believing the words they parroted even though they were not true).

4) Give a posthypnotic suggestion that nobody else can hypnotize this subject (called **sealing**).

5) Give a suggestion under hypnosis that the subject will act in trance just as if awake (called **waking hypnosis**).

Estabrooks also suggested the creation of hypno-programmed messengers to convey secret information. He called for hypnotic conditioning in individuals who risk capture (such as Air Force pilots) to reinforce resistance against enemy interrogation and brainwashing. And he experimented with murder caused by indirect suggestion.[1]

False Fronts

During World War II, OSS and CIA research objectives were often pursued and funded by linkage organizations which channeled OSS/CIA money but kept the source of their money and directives a secret. The Josiah Macy Foundation, The Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology (based at Cornell), the Geschicter Foundation for Medical Research, and the Group for the Advancement of Psychiatry were all false front organizations that channeled covert Agency funds.

The Group for the Advancement of Psychiatry sponsored brainwashing research, symposia, and publications such as "Factors Used to Increase the Susceptibility of Individuals to Forceful Indoctrination." The Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology channeled funds into research on creating amnesia for recent events by means of electroshock "treatments"; research on programming by forced listening to a repeated taped message; hypnosis, and so on. The Josiah Macy Foundation sponsored research and publications on narcohypnosis and cybernetics.

Wiener Links Computer Research with Neuroscience

Norbert Wiener, a professor of mathematics at MIT, organized a 1942 conference called "Problems of Central-inhibition in the Nervous System." (That's Pavlovian terminology meaning problems in hypnotic induction.) Wiener's organizational backup and funding for this very significant meeting came from The Josiah Macy Foundation, a **false front** funding and facilitating conduit for secret government research.

Cybernetics—In 1942, the Josiah Macy Foundation funded and sponsored a symposium where prominent mathematicians, engineers, and physiologists kicked off the new science of **cybernetics**. This was the first of a series of cybernetics conferences that the OSS covertly sponsored via the Macy Foundation. Wiener defined **"**cybernetics**"** as "the entire field of control and communication theory, whether in the machine or in the animal..." **(Wiener, *Cybernetics*, p. 19)**

The specific purpose of that meeting was to begin development of a common vocabulary and shared concepts: machine as human, human as machine. The long-term goals of cybernetics were to create 1) machines with a human (or more than human) ability to remember, learn, and plan, and 2) human beings who would obey like machines—predictably, instantly, absolutely, unconsciously.

Humans could become mechanized only if the intricacies of physiological brain function could be understood. The cyberneticists accepted Pavlov's view of the human mind as a central-nervous-system-dominated, knowable linkage of technical mechanisms. They set out to study and experiment with minds the same way they had already experimented with salamander cells and molecules. Cybernetics moved forward rapidly toward its dual goals of building a conscious machine, as nearly alive as possible—and an unconscious (on command) human who could function as nearly like a machine as possible.

---

[1] Estabrooks caused his subject to hallucinate discovering evidence that a friend was actually a Nazi spy. The subject then had to be "forcefully restrained from attacking his bosom pal." ***(Hypnosis.* 1953, pp. 164-205)**

Military Mind-Control Research Begins

> ***...very little information on the topic appears in open-source literature* (p. 4)*....secret investigations can be presumed to have been undertaken by a number of police and intelligence systems...it is conceivable that some unknown discoveries or applications may have been made....The two major sources of information about them [interrogations] are: practitioners of the "art" and their victims. The former are generally required to guard the details of their craft as secrets; the latter may have a limited perception, understanding, and memory of what they have experienced.***
>
> **Blake in Biderman and Zimmer, eds., *The Manipulation of Human Behavior*, pp. 12-13**

The Air Force sponsored the publication of Biderman and Zimmer's 1961 collection of articles on brainwashing, hypnosis, and interrogation called *The Manipulation of Human Behavior*. In Dr. Blake's Introduction to that book, quoted above, he mentioned that which was not told and supposedly could not be known. There is no doubt, however, that military interest in mind control technologies increased during World War II and has continued ever since.

Watkins Experiments

During and shortly after World War II, every research hypnotist, that I know of, did work relevant to the military uses of hypnosis. J.G. Watkins was a Freudian hypnotist who made a career of research studies involving hypnotic coercion. In 1939, he reported causing **antisocial** compulsions in hypnotic subjects. In 1941, he published "A Case of Hypnotic Trance Induced in a Resistant Subject in Spite of Active Opposition."

Conditioned Subject Doesn't Resist Induction—The subject, a 21-year-old nurse in a military hospital, was accustomed to being hypnotized by Watkins. For his experiment, Watkins put a dollar bill in her hand and said she could keep it if she managed to resist being hypnotized by him. She tried. She shut her eyes, plugged her ears. She loudly talked, even shouted, as he began the trance induction. Then, speaking close to her ear, Watkins said:

> *My voice will gradually reach you, and you will hear it in spite of your shouting. You will begin to feel very uncomfortable. There will be a pain in your head which will grow and grow. It becomes stronger, much stronger. After a while it will become excruciating. It will be unbearable, and everything in you will cry out for relief. But the only way out of this intense pain will be to enter a deep sleep...* **(Watkins, 1941, p. 29)**

After three minutes, the nurse paused in her shouting and said, "My God, but it hurts." Then she went back to fighting. After six minutes, she flung the money at him, saying, "Here, take it!" and went into deep trance.

Watkins said that, once her unconscious had accepted the suggestion of having a headache, her only escape from the headache was to enter trance.[1]

Interrogation Use of Hypnosis—Watkins joined the military in 1943 and continued his research. Before an audience of 200 professionals, during a demonstration of interrogation under hypnosis, he asked for a volunteer. A WAC , who was visiting from Aberdeen Proving Grounds where they were researching a secret rocket fuel, offered to be his subject. He hypnotized her. Then he told her that he was her

---

[1] She could also have escaped by running away.

First Sergeant and asked her a series of questions. She answered them all. He ended by asking her what was the formula for the top-secret fuel.

> *At this moment a high-ranking officer present stepped in and said, "I think we've gone far enough. In the interest of military secrecy we'll have to stop at this point." It was apparent to all that this girl would have unconsciously divulged genuine, confidential information, which would have subjected her to court martial, if she had been permitted to continue.* **(Watkins, *"Antisocial Compulsions Induced under Hypnotic Trance,"* p. 258)**

Watkins demonstrated hypnosis with seven military men, all trained to instant induction on cue, given blanket amnesia for all time in trance. He asked the first, who was not yet hypnotized, if he could keep military information secret. The subject said "Yes." Watkins then said, "Capt. S. here will give you a bit of information and order you not to divulge it to me under any circumstances ...Remember, if you tell me, you are disobeying a direct military order." **(*Ibid.*, p. 256)**

The subject went over to Capt. S. (who whispered something to him), then came back and sat in his chair by Watkins with a defiant expression on his face. Watkins handed a yellow pencil to his subject—the conditioned induction cue. He immediately dropped into deep trance. Watkins said to him: "I am Capt. S. I just gave you a piece of information you were not to divulge. I want to see if you remember it, Corporal. What is it?"

The subject said, "Company B will leave at 2100 tonight." Watkins looked over at Capt. S. who nodded confirmation. Watkins gave his subject the wake up cue, then asked him, "Did you divulge the message?" The subject said, "No, and you can't get it out of me." **(*Ibid.*, p. 256)**

"Company B will leave at 2100 tonight," Watkins said. The subject looked amazed. He insisted he did not tell Watkins. He said that Capt. S. must have done it.

Watkins then put a ten-dollar bill in front of his subject. That was a lot of money then, enough to pay a week's rent on an apartment. Watkins said he would test him again. "That ten-dollar bill is yours if you do not tell me the message." **(Ibid., p. 257)**

The corporal went to Capt. S. and received a new message. He came back to his chair and sat where the money lay on a table right in front of him. As he was looking at the bill, Watkins handed him that yellow pencil. Again the subject dropped into deep trance. Again, Watkins got the message.

Watkins woke the subject. The corporal realized the experiment was over. He said, "The ten dollar bill is mine, isn't it?" **(*Ibid.*, p. 257)** He reached toward it. But Watkins told him it was not, because he had again revealed the message. Genuinely angry now, the subject said he was being cheated. (He had no memory of his times under trance.)

Watkins said, "Let's try it once more. This time you can earn the ten-dollar bill if you will just stay awake. Do not go to sleep. Fight back and refuse to go into trance." The subject replied, "rather belligerently" that he expected resisting the induction to be "easy—just try to put me to sleep." Watkins again handed him the yellow pencil. "Subject blinks a moment or two and then sinks back into a deep trance." **(*Ibid.*, p. 257)**

Watkins did the same experiment with all seven

A Military Offense Caused by Hypnosis

Dr. J.M. Schneck was a Freudian psychiatrist and hypno-analyst who did some research for the U.S. Army. In 1947, he published "A Military Offense Induced by Hypnosis." The subject's automatistic obedience, in the situation which Schneck reported, could not have been cued by operator expectations, because the situation was not an experiment.

The subject was 18, a soldier whom Schneck had treated for neurotic symptoms. The young man was very susceptible to hypnosis and had complete amnesia for every session. He carried out all posthypnotic suggestions, but he had a tendency to avoid making appointments. (Maybe he unconsciously disliked being hypnotized?)

One day, however, he showed up at Schneck's office with no appointment, complaining of more symptoms. The busy doctor gave him the induction cue to enter hypnosis, told him to come again in two days at a certain hour, then brought him out of it. The soldier had no conscious knowledge of his upcoming appointment.

Two days later, the soldier appeared at Schneck's office, exactly on time. He told the doctor he had felt impelled to come. The doctor hypnotized him, gave therapeutic suggestions, and awakened him. The soldier then looked at his watch and acted very upset. He told the psychiatrist he was on guard duty, having been assigned a watch by his superior officer when he had felt that irresistible impulse to visit the doctor. He was frightened of being punished for deserting his post.

Dr. Schneck saw to it that the soldier was not punished and published his report of what had occurred.

subjects. All seven responded the same as the first.

Suggested Murder—One day Watkins demonstrated his hypnotic control before the assembled staff where he worked. His subject was a 20-year-old private who had a good military record and a conscientious nature. He gave the well-trained subject his induction cue. The subject then sat with bowed head and closed eyes. Watkins told the head psychiatrist and director of the hospital's Neuropsychiatric Division, a lieutenant colonel, to stand about ten feet in front of the subject. Watkins said to the subject:

> *In a minute you will slowly open your eyes. In front of you, you will see a dirty Jap soldier. He has a bayonet, and is going to kill you unless you kill him first. You will have to strangle him with your bare hands.*
>
> *The subject opened his eyes...Suddenly in a flying tackle he dove at the Lieutenant Colonel, knocking him against the wall, and with both of his hands (he was a powerful, husky lad) began strangling the man...It took the instantaneous assistance of three others to break the soldier's grip, pull him off the officer, and hold him until the experimenter could quiet him back into a sleep condition.* **(*Ibid.*, p. 258)**

Watkins repeated the experiment with another hypnotic subject, a 21-year-old lieutenant, who was small (120 pounds), short, and normally of a mild-mannered disposition. Watkins gave the same hallucination and instruction. This time, the man placed in front of the hypnotic subject as "Jap soldier" was the subject's close friend. The hypnotized lieutenant lunged forward with murderous intent.

At that moment, the situation seriously departed from script; the subject pulled out and opened a pocket knife which nobody knew he had. "Only the quick intercession of witnesses and an upward wrist parry by his officer friend (the Jap soldier) prevented a serious stabbing." **(*Ibid.*, p. 258)**

Brainwashing Research Begins

Edward Hunter, an American journalist, first used the term **brainwashing** in an article for the *Miami News*, "'Brain-Washing' Tactics Force Chinese into Ranks of Communist Party" (September 24, 1950). Brainwashing methodically stresses a person—who is in a controlled environment and cannot escape—to his psychological breaking point in order to cause conversion to a predetermined point of view.[1]

It turned out that Americans were susceptible to brainwash techniques also. During the Korean War, captured Americans were made to confess ridiculous "crimes" against the Korean or Chinese people. Afterwards, some professed a belief in Communism so sincere that, long after repatriation back to the U.S., they still stood on street corners handing out Communist propaganda pamphlets. And, for the first time in American military history, twenty-two prisoners chose to stay with their Chinese captors instead of accepting repatriation.

The U.S. military hit back with prison terms for the converts, but they also began an intense research effort to understand HOW it was done. Brainwashing research explored "pharmacology, hypnosis, sleep deprivation, semi-starvation...[and] group conformity pressures." **(Blake in Biderman, p. 2)**[1]

☞ *See PART VI for more on brainwashing technologies.*

---

1. Dr. Robert J. Lifton said Hunter got the word "brainwashing" from a Chinese person who told him it was a translation of hsi nao, "wash brain" (now spelled "xi nao" on mainland). Actually, Chinese Communists did not use that term, but they did not mind its use to describe their conversion procedure.
2. Prominent brainwash researchers included Hinkle, a psychiatrist, and Wolff, both of Cornell, and part of a working group called the Air Force Psychological Warfare Division. Other members of that group were Colonel James Monroe (he later joined the CIA), Air Force psychiatrist Lifton, the CIA's John Gittinger, and Albert D. Biderman, an Air Force psychologist and sociologist. **(Weinstein, 1988, p. 131)** Biderman, Hinkle, and Wolff also worked for the CIA.

Secret Agencies, Secret Research, Secret Operations

OSS Ends
and
CIA Begins

☑

National
Security
Agency

☑

New Branch of
Psychology:
“Military
Psychology”

> *I think it was a mistake. And if I’d known what was going to happen, I never would have done it...*[it was meant to be] *a central organization that would bring all the various intelligence reports we were getting in those days, and there must have been a dozen of them, maybe more, bring them all into one organization so that the President would get one report on what was going on in various parts of the world.*
>
> *Now that made sense, and that’s why I went ahead and set up what they called the Central Intelligence Agency.*
>
> *But it got out of hand. The fella...the one that was in the White House after me never paid any attention to it, and it got out of hand. Why, they’ve got an organization over there in Virginia now that is practically the equal of the Pentagon in many ways. And I think I’ve told you, one Pentagon is one too many.*
>
> *Now, as nearly as I can make out, those fellows in the CIA don’t just report on wars and the like, they go out and make their own, and there’s nobody to keep track of what they’re up to. They spend billions of dollars...It’s become a government all of its own and all secret. They don’t have to account to anybody.*
>
> *That’s a very dangerous thing in a democratic society, and it’s got to be put a stop to. The people have got a right to know what those birds are up to...You see, the way a free government works, there’s got to be a housecleaning every now and again, and I don’t care what branch of the government is involved...*
>
> *And when you can’t do any housecleaning because everything that goes on is a damn secret, why, then we’re on our way to something the Founding Fathers didn’t have in mind. Secrecy and a free, democratic government don’t mix...*
>
> *You have got to keep an eye on the military at all times, and it doesn’t matter whether it’s the birds in the Pentagon or the birds in the CIA...*
>
> **President Harry Truman**

OSS Ends and CIA Begins

Donovan and President Roosevelt were old friends. Donovan and J. Edgar Hoover, longtime head of the FBI, were old enemies. Roosevelt had kept their power balanced. He assigned the FBI to counterespionage inside the United States and intelligence gathering in North and South America. He assigned operations in the rest of the world to the OSS.

Near the end of World War II, Donovan proposed a new "central intelligence service" to Roosevelt. His plan called for the new agency to coordinate all government intelligence agencies and have final authority over all of them. It would be responsible directly (and only) to the President. It would decide what government secrets would be divulged and to which persons. It would have complete responsibility for covert action operations outside the United States. Donovan sent a memo to Roosevelt which explained it all.

Hoover's information network obtained a copy of Donovan's memo. The FBI Director leaked it to the press and sat back to enjoy the expected public furor. He was sure that making public Donovan's power play would result in destruction of that undemocratic and grandiose ambition for his agency. What actually happened, however, was a turning point in the history of American democracy:

> *...Donovan was also a veteran when it came to propaganda, and he had some powerful weapons of his own. The OSS had employed many journalists and writers, and he called on them to launch a massive counterattack. Soon, a whole barrage of stories praising the exploits of the OSS began appearing in the press. They presented Donovan and his secret agency not as threats to American freedom but as its best defenders.* **(Kronenwetter, *Covert Action*, p. 44)**

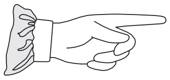

For the first time, a secret government agency had covertly generated a propaganda blitz in the domestic media for the purpose of ensuring passage of legislation favoring its own growth in power. A new political era had begun in the United States.

Roosevelt favored Donovan's plan, but he died the next week, just before the process of its formal approval could be completed. Truman became president. He distrusted both Hoover and Donovan and promptly vetoed Donovan's plan for a new superagency. On September 20, 1945, Truman also permanently shut down the OSS. He turned over its foreign spying function to the War Department and a few other functions to the State Department. Truman announced to the world that the U.S. would no longer operate covertly overseas.

The cold war with Russia was heating up, however, and Truman soon was persuaded to reconsider. He decided that, at least, an international data-gathering agency was needed. In early 1946, he created the Central Intelligence Group (CIG). It was small and had no money of its own. All CIG employees were on loan from the Departments of State, Navy, and War.

Donovan's team managed an end run around the Truman obstacle by lobbying Congress which, in 1947, passed the National Security Act. It reorganized U.S. military forces and replaced the Central Intelligence Group with the Central Intelligence Agency. Its assignment was to compete with the KGB's worldwide intelligence operations.

Truman signed the bill. Hoover, furious over the rejection of his competing plan to expand the FBI's South American division into a worldwide intelligence-gathering team, ordered all his South American agents to burn their files rather than hand them over to the CIA. They obeyed.

Unlike the CIG, the CIA was responsible only to four persons: the President, the Vice-President, and the Secretaries of Defense and State Those four persons together are called the National Security Council (NSC). Except for oversight by those four very busy persons and the NSC staff which they created, the CIA was independent. It had its own personnel and Congress appropriated it a special budget. The National Security Act also equipped the CIA with an open-ended clause: power "to perform such other functions related to intelligence affecting the national security as the National Security Council may from time to time direct." **(Corson, pp. 215-216)**

Truman later expressed regret for having signed the CIA into existence. He said that, at the time of signing, he was not aware of the open-end clause. He said he would not have signed the National Security Act had he known of the open-end clause.

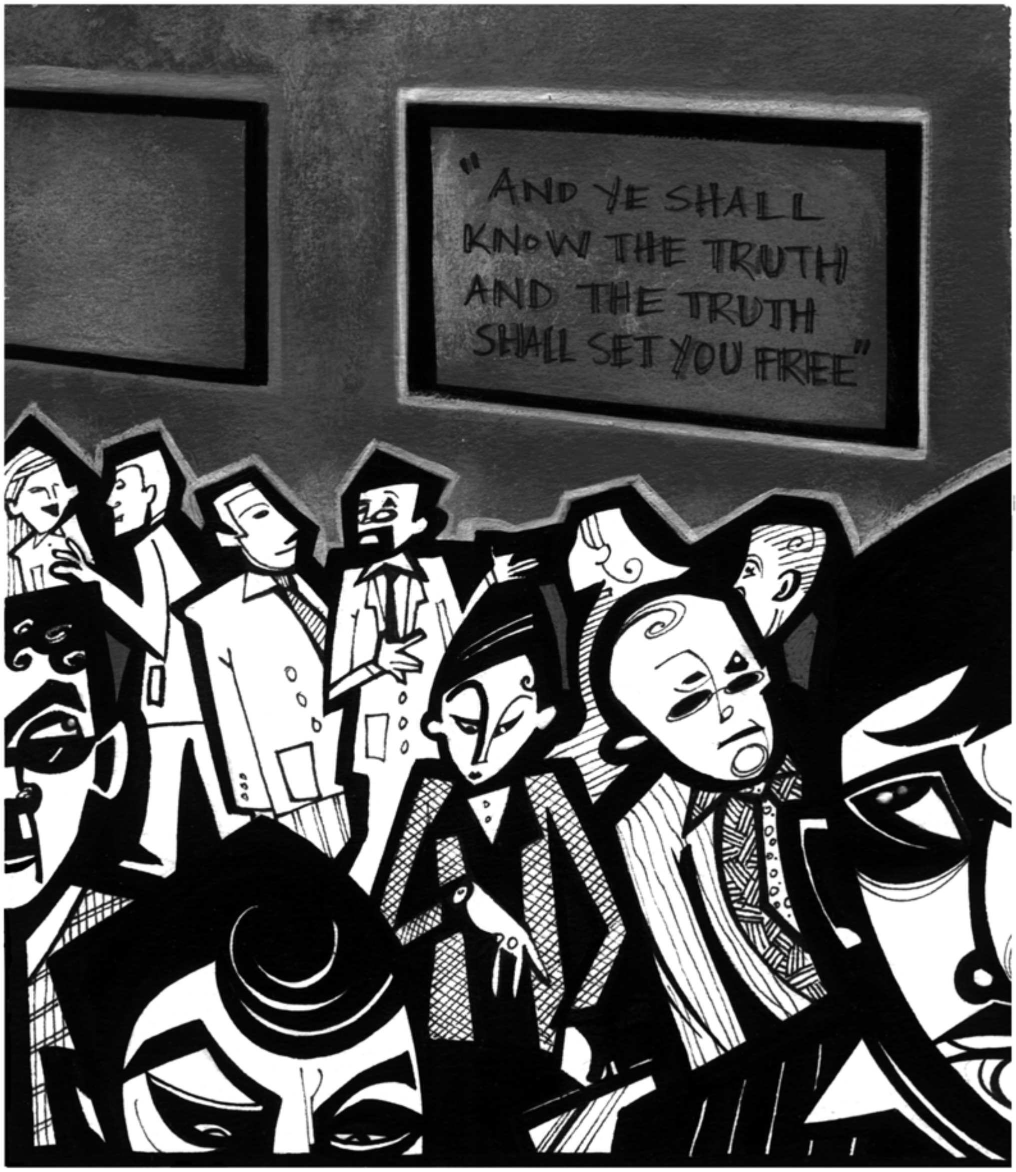

The new agency hit the ground running. A third of its start-up personnel were former OSS employees such as Stanley Lovell, Richard Helms, Allen Dulles, Frank Wisner, and George White. Eventually, the CIA headquartered itself in a fine building in Langley, Virginia. Chiseled into the main lobby's marble wall are the words: "And ye shall know the Truth and the Truth shall set you free." From then on, however, knowing the truth increasingly became the privilege only of Agency insiders who made themselves freer and freer in the exercise of covert, unsupervised power.

Congress was not a problem to them. At times, the CIA has been required to inform Intelligence Committee members of the Senate and House what it does, but those committees have no right to stop actions, only to be informed. At times, certain members of Congress may be shown secret and disturbing things, but "Those who are shown the secrets are immediately bound by national secrecy legislation and cannot reveal what they saw." **(Corso, p. 200)**

Within a few years, the CIA became a massive organization. Nobody seems to know exactly how big it is or how much it spends because that's all secret. The rare review committees have complained that records are sloppily kept, if at all, and that different branches of the CIA keep secrets not just from outsiders, but from each other as well.

Secretary of State George Marshall later defended the decision to create the CIA: "I don't care what the CIA does. All I want from them is twenty-four hours' notice of a Soviet attack." **(Martin, p. 89)** At that time, most Americans agreed with him. But Truman foresaw problems.

CIA Mind-Control Research Projects

Donovan structured the CIA with former OSS mind-control researchers at the top of its bureaucratic power-pyramid. Under a series of cryptic project titles, the new agency continued to explore every imaginable type of mind-control technology. All this seemed justifiable at the time.

> *Certainly research leading to a better understanding of the workings of the human mind is an essential element of intelligence and anything that contributes to the prediction of human behavior [and] makes possible its direction or control is of inestimable value.* **(*CIA Inspector General's Survey of TSD*, 1957, p. 201.)**

BLUEBIRD—In 1950, the CIA organized a new hypnosis research program called **BLUEBIRD**. Its director, Morse Allen, took a course from a stage hypnotist. The hypnotist told Allen that he had persuaded a hypnotized woman to believe that he was her husband and had stimulated acute sexual arousal in her by hypnotic suggestions. He said he routinely enjoyed such favors by this method and "spent approximately five nights a week away from home engaging in sexual intercourse."[1] **(John Marks, 1979, pp. 182-183)**

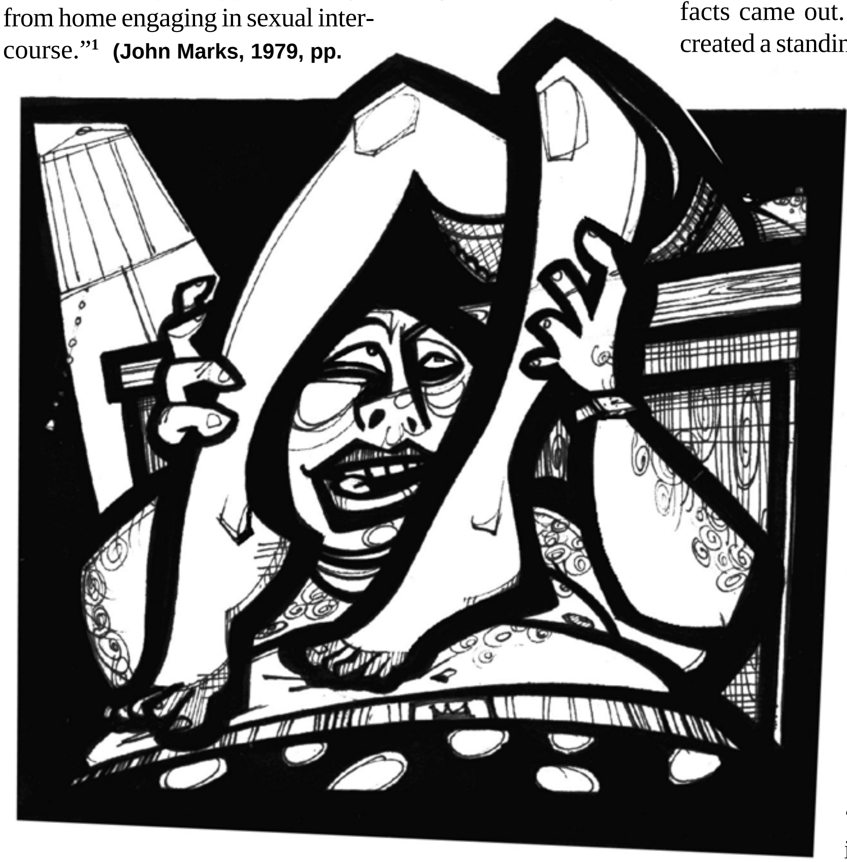

Allen began hypnosis experiments at the office with young secretaries who were asked to stay after work. He developed somnambulism in them and then demonstrated all the usual phenomena:

> *...proving to his own satisfaction that he could make them do whatever he wanted. He had secretaries steal SECRET files and pass them on to total strangers...* **(*Ibid.*)**

ARTICHOKE: CIA/Military Hypnosis Research -April 2, 1951, the CIA offered to become mind-control research partners with the intelligence divisions of the Army, Navy, Air Force and the FBI. On July 23, delegates from each group "met to explore the possibility of unified planning and mutual coordination of mind-control research." **(Scheflin & Opton, p. 120)**

The FBI representative at that preliminary meeting listened, then refused to allow further involvement of his agency. He said the public would disapprove when the facts came out. In August, 1951, the remaining partners created a standing committee with representatives from each participating branch. They called themselves **ARTICHOKE** and planned to carry on the BLUEBIRD research.

MKULTRA - MKULTRA came after BLUEBIRD and ARTICHOKE. Richard Helms of the CIA's Clandestine Services (known as the "dirty tricks department") established MKULTRA's goals. A chemist, Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, directed the ultrasecret mind-control research program.[2] Moving ever farther from Estabrooks's verbal hypnoprogramming technology, MKULTRA boldly cross-fertilized the disciplines, seeking ever more powerful mind-influencing techniques. Its goals ranged from development of **psychic** weapons to mindcontrol by the new **physical** methods of psychiatry.

What do the letters in MKULTRA stand for? Nobody in the CIA ever told. Bowart speculated that MKULTRA stood for "Mind Kontrol Ultra." ULTRA was the British secret service's code name for their captured Nazi decoding machine. After the war, ULTRA had the reputation of being the best kept secret of World War II, for the Nazis never realized the Brits had it. Perhaps the development of mind "kontrol" technology was intended to be the best kept secret of the post-World War II era.

The history of how MKULTRA acquired authorization and funding provides another example of agency propaganda used to get funding and legislation wanted by the agency. Dr. Ewen Cameron was a Canadian psychiatrist who directed medical care at the McGill University mental facility. In February, 1953, he gave a speech called "The Transition Neurosis" at the Fifth Annual Neuropsychiatric meeting in Little Rock, Arkansas. He bragged about his new concept for reprogramming people. He compared it to the forced changing of beliefs through extreme brainwashing pressures such as "...the extraordinary political conversions which we have seen, particularly in the iron curtain countries..." He said, "We have explored this procedure in one case, using sleeplessness, disinhibiting agents [hypnotic drugs], and hypnosis." **(quoted in Weinstein, p. 140)** In that speech, Cameron also pushed his idea of using electroshock to **blank** minds, and then recording new programming on those supposedly blank mental slates by forcing the subject to listen to a repeated taped message.

---

[1] Bowart speculated Morse's stage hypnotist was William Jennings Bryan, a former Air Force hypnotist who did a lot of high-profile consulting for police agencies around the country and low-profile service for the CIA. Dr. Bryan—though chronically obese—did, in fact, have an active sex life with his hypnotic subjects. On April 22, 1969, the *Los Angeles Times* reported that he had been found guilty of "unprofessional conduct in four cases involving sexual molesting of female patients." His sentence was five years' probation.

[2] Gottlieb was interested, among other things, in developing substances to cause illogical thinking and/or impulsiveness (so the victim is publicly discredited) and in methods to cause controlled amnesias (including hypnosis).

Gittinger heard of the prominent Canadian psychiatrist's speech. He passed on the news of this possible new technology for forcing people to adopt new beliefs on to CIA Director Allen Dulles and to Gottlieb, director of mind-control research.

Who Led The Mind Control Race: Soviets or U.S.?

Dulles told Congress that MKULTRA should be funded because we needed to catch up with the Russians. The truth came out in 1964. The Warren Commission (which was then investigating conspiracy theories of President Kennedy's assassination) asked Richard Helms, a CIA Deputy Director, to report on the capabilities of Soviet mind-control technology. Helms replied with a memo:

Soviet Research and Development in the Field of Direction and Control of Human Behavior:

> 1. *There are two major methods of altering or controlling human behavior, and the Soviets are interested in both. The first is psychological; the second, pharmacological. The two may be used as individual methods or for mutual reinforcement. For long-term control of large numbers of people, the former method [propaganda] is more promising than the latter [drugs]. In dealing with individuals, the U.S. experience suggests the pharmacological approach (assisted by psychological techniques) would be the only effective method...*
>
> 2. *Soviet research on the pharmacological agents producing behavioral effects has consistently lagged about five years behind Western research...*
>
> 3. *The psychological aspects of behavior control would include not only conditioning by repetition and training, but such things as hypnosis, deprivation, isolation, manipulation of guilt feelings, subtle or overt threats...* **(*Warren Commission Document #1131*)**

Helms had revealed that the U.S. actually stayed about five years ahead of the Russians in research on control of human masses by means of propaganda and of individuals by means of drug (plus psychological) techniques.

On April 10, 1953, Dulles spoke at a Princeton University alumni convocation about a "battle for men's minds" going on in the Soviet Union. Dulles said it was waged on a mass level by media propaganda and censorship and forced on individuals using a "lie serum." He called the lie-serum process "brain changing."

> ...[they] *wash the brain clean of the thoughts and mental processes of the past and, possibly through the use of some "lie serum,"* [truth serum, barbiturate] *create new brain processes and new thoughts which the victim, parrotlike, repeats.* **("Brain Warfare—Russia's Secret Weapon," *U.S. News & World Report*, May 8, 1953, pp. 54, 56, 58.)**

Dulles said that the Soviet system caused a "mental metamorphosis" and then:

> *...anyone whom the Kremlin rulers decided to destroy...would state just about what these Kremlin rulers wanted him to state...the brain under these circumstances becomes a phonograph playing a disc put on its spindle by an outside genius over which it has no control.* **(*Ibid.*)**

He ended his speech with the usual Cold War argument that, since the Soviet Union was doing it, so must we—although "we have no human guinea pigs, ourselves, on which to try out these extraordinary techniques." **(Scheflin & Opton, p. 438)**

That speech made Congress believe that an immediate multimillion dollar research program in mind-control was necessary. Dulles got the money. Three days later, he authorized MKULTRA, a long-lasting, complex, and lavishly-financed CIA program in mind-control research. It was exempted from normal CIA financial controls. The guinea pigs were soon on order.

Only a handful of CIA leaders were aware of

MKULTRA's existence. A CIA Inspector General's report speaks of "just two individuals in TSD who have full substantive knowledge of the program and most of that knowledge is unrecorded." (**Final Report I, Inspection of MKULTRA, August 14, 1963, p. 6**)[1]

Gottlieb targeted Cameron for recruitment. "The Society would...find somebody that was working in an area in which we were interested and encourage him to continue in that area with some funding from us." **(Gottlieb quoted in Weinstein, 1988, p. 133)** Cameron did come aboard. Between 1957 and 1962, the CIA delivered $84,820 to him through a funding conduit, the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology.

National Security Agency

At 12:01 on the morning of November 4, 1952, a new federal agency was born. Unlike other such bureaucratic births, however, this one arrived in silence. No news coverage, no congressional debate, no press announcement, not even the whisper of a rumor....Equally invisible were the new agency's director, its numerous buildings, and its ten thousand employees.

Bamford, *The Puzzle Palace*, p. 15

The "birth certificate" for that new agency was a seven-page presidential memorandum which Truman signed on October 23, 1952. The memo was directed to his Secretary of State, Dean G. Acheson, and to his Secretary of Defense, Robert A. Lovett. The document is so top secret that, despite legal pressures, not one word of it has ever been made public. This secret memo established a government organization now called the **National Security Agency**. It is better known by its acronym, **NSA**.

NSA traces its roots back to World War I when a group of brainy cryptographers went to work for the government, decrypting foreign diplomatic and military messages. From its very beginning, the NSA, like the CIA, had a policy of striving for constant technical progress. As codebreaking became computer aided, and as messages shifted to electronic modes of transmission, the roomful of cryptographers evolved into an army of experts in mathematics, engineering, and telecommunications. The government's code collecting and code breaking group was secret even before Truman's memo. Afterwards, it became more so. It was kept secret from all but a very few high-government officials.

It is a psychological rule that mental programming for which the conscious mind is amnesic tends to be dominant over conscious (non-amnesic) thinking. **Secret will rule** is a principle of mind-control technology. The NSA's blueprint designed it to be forever invisible, dwelling in the shadowland of a legislated national amnesia. It rapidly rose to a position of strength.

Largest, Wealthiest, and Most Powerful

The largest, wealthiest, and most powerful secret agency is the NSA. It is bigger than the CIA, bigger than the FBI—and it spends more money. The NSA's headquarters at Fort Meade, Maryland, is the second largest building in the United States. (Only the Pentagon is larger.) The CIA has a nominal Director whom Congress gets to approve, but he really has little power in the **intelligence community** (CIA, NSA, FBI, Secret Service, and intelligence units from the Army, Navy, and Air Force). In that group, the real heavyweight—as reckoned either by size of budget or number of employees—is the Director of the NSA. (Senate Intelligence Committee, quoted in Bamford, p. 17) The CIA used to be more powerful than the NSA, but that is no longer so.

> *As a result of this overwhelming passion for secrecy, few persons outside the inner circle of America's intelligence community have recognized the gradual shift in power and importance from the Central Intelligence Agency to the NSA.* **(*Ibid.*, p. 16)**

A new federal complex is being built just south of St. Louis. The facility is said to be for 50,000 employees working for "The Defense Mapping Agency." Exactly what type of "mapping" will this "defense" agency do? Is it an NSA project? Is "defense mapping" satellite radio surveillance tracking chips? Nobody seems to know.

---

[1] MKULTRA started out as an adjunct to ARTICHOKE. Project ARTICHOKE was directed by the CIA's Office of Security. MKULTRA was directed by a small group called TSS (Technical Services Staff). Turf rivalry soon grew intense between the Office of Security and the TSS. TSS prevailed. Later, its name changed to TSD (Technical Services Division.). TSD survived and kept going after much else in the program was publicly dismantled to satisfy public outcry in the 60s and 70s.

Knowledgeable citizen researchers have gone so far as to state that "the CIA, the State Department, even the White House and its occupants, take orders from the chiefs at the NSA." **(Texe Marrs, *Project L.U.C.I.D.*, p. 28)** The NSA is also said to be powerful in the international arena. I only know, for sure, that the full extent of the NSA's power, activities, and plans is not known by the public. Most people do not even recognize the agency's name.

Turf Wars—Insulated from public criticism by anonymity, the only remaining obstacles to the NSA's rise to power have been turf wars with other government agencies and organizations. In its early years, the organization was run by a committee of representatives from the three military branches. The result was conflict, often paralyzing. In a 1952 reorganization, the NSA's Director won independence from the service branches. After that, he reported only to the Secretary of Defense who in turn reported to the National Security Council.[1]

The NSA then maneuvered for independence from the Defense Department. The Pentagon watched the trend and worried that civilians were going to dominate the Agency. In 1945, 90% of the top 2,000 NSA staff jobs were held by military personnel. By 1971, the military had 5% of those jobs. **(Bamford, p. 108)** In 1972, the Pentagon also gave the NSA Director complete authority over the 45,000 military rank and file men and women who were then collecting and interpreting electronic signals for the the NSA.

Agency administrators also had a period of conflict with the National Science Foundation. It objected for a while to NSA maneuvers to acquire oversight and control of all grants in the signals communication area.

How big is the NSA? We don't know. We're not allowed to know. A loophole excludes it from compliance with Freedom of Information Act requests. A special law ensures that no statistics on its size or budget will ever be released to the public. In 1959, Congress passed a special law forbidding the NSA to disclose information about its organization, activities, names, or number of employees. So, nobody outside the Agency knows its exact number of personnel, or size of budget, or rate of expansion. There have, however, been some credible leaks or estimates. In 1969, one report said they had 95,000 personnel. In 1983, their budget was estimated to be $10 billion. **(Bamford, p. 109)**

The NSA headquarters is a thousand acres with twenty buildings, a private bus service, a private police force, a post office, barber

Of Secret Agencies and Investigative Reporters

Investigative journalism has a long and honorable snooping tradition of its own. A few citizen writers have managed to make facts public about the secret agencies. Those writings somewhat counterbalance the twin antidemocratic banes of secrecy and propaganda.

The CIA got some much-needed journalistic exposure in *The CIA and The Cult of Intelligence* by John Marks and Victor Marchetti, *The Invisible Government* by David Wise and Thomas B. Ross, *The Search for The Manchurian Candidate* by John Marks, and *The Mind Control of Candy Jones* by Donald Bain.

The NSA has long considered journalists who write about them as a form of enemy.

> *As worrisome to the Agency as loose-lipped spooks were those few outsiders who dared to write about it. To keep track of this small fraternity, M5 set up a special file called "Nonaffiliates of NSA Who Publish Writings Concerning the Agency."* **(Bamford, p. 168)**

In 1967, David Kahn, a *Newsday* reporter and amateur code-breaker, published a book about cryptology, *The Code-breakers*. It had one chapter on the NSA: "Often the agency enshrouds its secrets in fearful gloom, awing Congressmen with sacred mysteries that are no more to be uttered than is the tetragrammaton." **(Kahn, p. 701)** News of Kahn's upcoming book triggered a series of frantic top-level NSA meetings:

> *Among the possibilities considered were hiring Kahn into the government so that certain criminal statutes would apply if the work was published; purchasing the copyright; undertaking "clandestine service applications" against the author, which apparently meant anything from physical surveillance to a black-bag job; and conducting a "surreptitious entry" into Kahn's Long Island home....At one point, the director suggested planting in the press disparaging reviews of the author's work, and such a review was actually drafted. Also suggested and carried out was the placing of Kahn's name on the NSA watch list, enabling the Agency's vacuum cleaner to sweep the airwaves for his phone calls and telegrams.* (**Bamford, pp. 168-169**)

Kahn's publisher negotiated. The book was published after some deletions were made.

In a 1977 book, *Clearing The Air,* newsman Daniel Schorr called the NSA "one of the deepest secrets." (**p. 183**) In 1982, James Bamford published a masterpiece of citizen intelligence effort which detailed the history and habits of the NSA: *The Puzzle Palace, A Report on America's Most Secret Agency.*

---

[1] It was then the agency got its present name: National Security Agency.

shop, and the medical facilities. It has tremendous propaganda abilities: a private TV station, a studio which can produce programming, and a huge printing plant with every type of equipment (it employs hundreds). Medical and psychological services are provided at the NSA base at Fort George G. Meade near Washington, D.C.—so its employees won't blab even under conditions of physical or mental breakdown. NSA has other facilities in other places, but those sites are secret.

The NSA followed the same research path as the CIA: the creation of intimate, secret, bondings with university, **thinktank**, and industrial organizations. The nation's premier thinktank, and its most secret one, the Institute for Defense Analysis, was developed to exclusively serve NSA needs. NSA recruiters target the best brains from the best universities. It pays its employees well. It encourages development of wanted skills by means of an extraordinary library and college at Ft. Meade. "In 1979, at various times, close to 19,000 students were enrolled in five hundred different courses." **(Bamford, p. 157)**

The NSA intends to be the lifetime employment for those who pass its rigorous polygraph entrance exam (even secretaries and clerks). The goal has been to hold resignations to an incredible two percent. The Director is appointed from outside the ranks of Agency personnel, but directors come and go, subject to political winds. Under that unstable uppermost nameplate, a stable agency bureaucracy has maintained NSA's steady growth in technological expertise and power, both abroad and at home.

Fastest and Most Secret—In 1957, the NSA kicked off a five-year computer research program called Project Lightning. It had a $25 million budget, and the general goal of passing all other nations in computer technology. A specific goal was to multiply computer speed a thousandfold. Project Lightning research achievements were made public. It was a great leap forward in computer science. (Out of that research came the Cray computer.) In 1977 it had the world's biggest collection of computers.

After Project Lightning, however, the NSA turned inward. Research efforts were labeled secret and results were no longer made public. The Agency awarded numerous contracts to outside corporations to build its equipment and to do much of its research and development. In the year 1977, it had more than 7,000 active contracts involving nearly a billion dollars in payouts. **(Bamford, p. 147)**

The NSA had a long-term policy of staying five years ahead of anybody else in scientific research and development concerning communications and eavesdropping. Another longstanding goal was to have the largest and most advanced operations capability in the world in any area of interest to them. But all the NSA learned to do and to know was no longer shared with the general public.

Classified Documents—NSA is the most secret of the secret agencies, even the military ones. It has an in-house secret classification that is one step higher than the usual confidential, secret, and top secret categories: HANDLE VIA COMINT CHANNELS ONLY. Most communications involving NSA personnel have this label. In 1980, the GAO reported that NSA classifies 50 to 100 hundred million documents per year: "...its classification activity is probably greater than the combined total activity of all components and agencies of the Government." Measured by classified documents, the NSA has more secrets than all other United States government agencies taken together: more than the Air Force, Army, Navy, State Department, FBI, CIA, and Secret Service combined!

Is NSA a secret government operating behind the scenes of the publicly known government, as some say? Nobody can answer that question because the information is SECRET. Because of the secrecy, few Americans recognize the Agency's name. Its employees are not allowed to tell outsiders the truth about who they work for. They must lie—or give a half-truth answer such as, "I work for the Defense Department."

The truth, however, when an NSA applicant or employee speaks to NSA's own investigators—such as when applying for employment and at intervals thereafter—is forced out with the aid of a dreaded polygraph examination. An in-house secret police agency, "M5," maintains "internal security," to keep NSA employees behaving correctly between examinations. Even within the NSA, "Secret, Don't Tell" is the rule. Each research **compartment** is isolated from the others. Only the department manager and the Director and Deputy Director of NSA know all its secrets. Before access to any new compartment of information is permitted, an employee must go through special "briefings, indoctrination, and oaths." **(Bamford, p. 161)** Any professor who is allowed to work on a NSA project first has to be cleared—and then **indoctrinated**. Even so, information is strictly on a "need to know" basis. This policy keeps researchers ignorant about anything beyond their own permitted area of inquiry.

NSA's walls of secrecy even block access by government agencies with oversight and control functions. Secret, Don't Tell has also kept a long succession of Congresses, administrations, and even Chief Executives, ignorant of the Agency's activities. The operation code-named "Shamrock," which started during World War II, was a surveillance of international telephone and telegraph traffic.

> *..there were no controls on what was inspected and what was not. This program continued for the next twenty-eight years and was kept secret from every president until it was terminated under the Ford administration in 1975...it does reveal the capability of the U.S. government to keep an ongoing operation secret from even the president of the United States...* **(Corso, p. 272)**

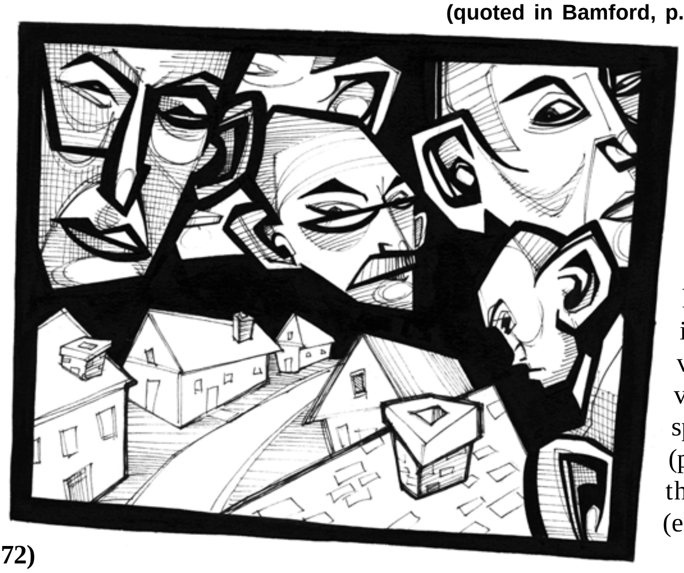

An interesting exception to that secrecy, however, is the UKUSA Agreement. It requires the U.S.'s most secret agency to share its secret information and to share facilities with certain foreign intelligence services. It is

> *...quite likely the most secret agreement ever entered into the English-speaking world. Signed in 1947 and known as the UKUSA Agreement, it brought together under a single umbrella the SIGINT* ["signals intelligence] *organizations of the United States, Britain, Canada, Australia, and New Zealand....The UKUSA nations also agreed to standardize their terminology, code words intercept-handling procedures, and indoctrination oaths....[its] existence has never been officially acknowledged by any country even today....* **(Bamford, p. 391-2)**

A Mission to Eavesdrop

Within high government ranks, NSA's mission is well understood: to find out everybody else's secrets while fiercely guarding its own. NSA's mission began as codebreaking but developed into electronic surveillance: the acquisition of targeted information by an electronic, mechanical, or other surveillance device. NSA defined "acquisition" as

> *...the interception by the National Security Agency through electronic means of a communication to which it is not an intended party and the processing of the contents of that communication into an intelligible form intended for human inspection.* **(quoted in Bamford, p. 468)**

At one time, the NSA was known to be decoding the secret messages of forty nations. At another, it was screening 400,000 U.S. communications per day. Early in the history of satellite snooping, the secret agencies divided the information harvest. The CIA received a specialty in satellite imagery (photos). The NSA acquired the communications side (electronic sound).[1]

The NSA is now equipped to use broadband electronic eavesdropping technology to constantly search all communication channels (**Bamford, p. 230**) looking for **key words** (any designated word or phrase: a name, a place, a particular return address, or a certain addressee). If the equipment recognizes a key word, it can be programmed to deliver the text in which that word is embedded. The technology exists to do this with either written or spoken conversation, via wire or wireless, telephoned, e-mailed, telegraphed, or cabled communications. Three different software programs can now translate spoken words instantly into on-screen text. Those available in the private sector have a high error rate.

Legal or Illegal—The CIA was founded with a "charter" which makes it subject to certain restrictions. One prohibits it from activities inside the United States. (There is some evidence this restriction has been circumvented.) It was not allowed to monitor U.S. phone conversations. The NSA was never restrained in this way. It has a long history of relative indifference as to whether something they want to do is legal, or illegal:

> *...The top three officials of the Agency all agreed that NSA exists somewhere in an extralegal limbo, unrestrained by the same laws and statues that govern the rest of the nation...* **(Bamford, p. 382)**

The NSA began domestic espionage after the rise of Viet Nam War protesters and the beginning of the civil rights movement. Any other government agency (such as the Army, FBI, or CIA) could come to them and ask for surveillance information. The NSA would make up its own mind whether or not to carry out the request of each "consumer." **(Bamford, p. 322)** If an organization was targeted, then the communications of any member could be snooped upon. If a person was named, then all communications that named that person, or were from, or addressed to that person came under surveillance.[1]

---

[1] Satellite cameras can now read a note atop a picnic table and daylight crimes are sometimes solved using satellite photos, but the CIA/satellite origin of data is kept secret. The NSA also delivers surveillance information to other agencies of government without taking public credit. **(Bamford, p. 353)**

The NSA conducted domestic intelligence operations for years without authorization. Then Nixon signed an addendum to the NSA secret charter which approved these previously unauthorized activities:

> *Present procedures should be changed to permit intensification of* [electronic surveillance] *coverage of individuals and groups in the United States who pose a major threat to the internal security...Present restrictions should be modified to permit selective use of this* [breaking and entering] *technique against other urgent and high priority internal security targets.* **(quoted in Bamford, p. 347)**

After Nixon rescinded that approval, the NSA again operated without it. **(Bamford, p. 350)** President Carter signed an executive order restricting the activities of the CIA and NSA. He tried to force the U.S. intelligence community to become law-abiding. The Senate Intelligence Committee warned that

> *...NSA's potential to violate the privacy of American citizens is unmatched by any other intelligence agency.* **(*Final Report, Book II*, p. 201, quoted in Bamford, p. 473)**

Carter's successor, Ronald Reagan, however, tossed out Carter's restraining order, hobbled the Freedom of Information Act, and broadened the powers of the secret agencies dramatically.

More conventional government actions may be covered by the media—which has resulted in "problems" (Ruby Ridge and Waco). NSA operations, however, are not covered by the media. An NSA agent will refuse to identify himself, or produce any legal documentation for making arrests. He does not need any.

Electronic Mindreading—In 1968, Flanagan invented a device to send intelligible speech directly into the brain—bypassing the ears—through special time and frequency coding, plus skin contact. He applied for, and received, a patent for the device. Shortly after that, however, "the National Security Agency (NSA) suppressed my invention under a national security order...." **(Begich, *Towards a New Alchemy*, p. 134)**

Perhaps somebody at the NSA realized, at the time of Flanagan's application, that human thought involves an electric circuit. And that any electric circuit creates a magnetic field. A **bioelectric circuit** creates a **biomagnetic field**. The biomagnetic field generated by bioelectric currents in the brain passes undistorted through dura, skull, and skin. It radiates outside the head. The signals are faint, but very real. The human brain is a **biocomputer** which organizes data into electronic patterns which are naturally **broadcast** in that biomagnetic field. Those signals theoretically could be received—if the **receiver** was sensitive enough.

Vast ranks of NSA scientists, mathematicians, and engineers have been devoted to communications signals analysis for decades: "The study of any emission that could transmit information." (**Bamford, p. 126**) The ultimate eavesdropping achievement, of course, would be the effective reception and recording of verbal or visualized human thought. The master decoders at the puzzle palace had long taken pride in their ability to intercept and decode any patterned expression. An intricate problem in interception and signals analysis, such as mechanical eavesdropping on and recording of a person's internal speech and imagery, would have been an intriguing challenge for NSA's army of scientists and engineers and their corporate hardware builders.

The master code-breakers would have worked hard to build receivers strong enough to pick up those patterned codes of thought. They would have striven endlessly to acquire ability to correctly interpret that input and thereby eavesdrop on a targeted person's thinking process.

The Advanced Research Projects Agency began in 1957. It was an updated version of the National Research Council, founded by President Wilson. It was

> *...a highly secretive network of defense scientists, members of the industrial defense contractor R&D community, and university researchers operating either under the formula of a government grant or the tacit acknowledgment of the Defense Department that their research would come under government control at some point....*[It worked] *on military defense-oriented research, many times far in advance of any concrete proposals for the development of a weapons system or a product.* **(Corso, pp. 234-236)**

---

[1] Like all bureaucracy, the watch operation had a tendency to grow. The NSA director was annoyed when FBI head, J. Edgar Hoover, demanded "complete surveillance of all Quakers in the United States." **(Bamford, p. 322)** The President at that time was Richard M. Nixon, and he was a Quaker.

In the 1970s, its name changed to DARPA, the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency. It works under the supervision of the NSA with, currently, a multibillion dollar budget. In addition to working on the Star Wars missile defense systems development and other satellite telecommunications and surveillance devices, it also has worked, for 25 years now, to create the NSA's electronic technologies for human control. **(Texe Marrs, *Project L.U.C.I.D.*, p. 31)** These technologies include both mind-reading and sending radio signals to implanted biochips in a brain.

Flanagan's technology is outdated now. Akwei reported that:

> *Signals Intelligence is based on the fact that everything in the environment with an electric current in it has a magnetic flux around it which gives off EMF waves. The NSA/DoD (Department of Defense) has developed proprietary advanced digital equipment which can remotely analyze all objects, whether manmade or organic, that have electrical activity...At the present time* [1996] *the NSA has nanotechnology computers that are 15 years ahead of present computer technology...All equipment hidden, all technology secret, all scientific research unreported (as in electronic warfare research).* **(Akwei, Evidentiary Document)**

New Branch of Psychology: “Military Psychology”

...psychology can be a worrying science in the hands of the military...

- Peter Watson, *War on the Mind*, p. 18

RAND (acronym for Research and Development) is the U.S.'s oldest and most famous think tank. It was created during World War II when the Air Force sought help from university scientists. RAND's involvement in mind-control research began in the 1950s. The CIA and Air Force asked for a report on the feasibility of research on hypnosis and other mind-control technologies. From then on, a series of RAND reports urged them to push ahead with hypnosis experiments and all other research with potential for mind control. RAND also suggested specific experimental directions. At the beginning of this research, few imagined what astonishingly powerful new mind-control technologies would emerge and become available for transfer to operations.

In the early 1960s, military psychology projects, breadth of research, and funding ballooned. **Military psychology** became the newest major branch of psychology. Peter Watson was both a clinical psychologist and a skilled journalist (a *London Sunday Times* editor). He pulled together a picture of military psychology as of 1978 in the U.S., Great Britain, Israel, and other countries, in a book titled *War on the Mind:*

> *...since that change of emphasis in the early sixties, the military uses of psychology have been pursued with ever more energy and increasing imagination.* **(Peter Watson, *War on the Mind*, p. 25)**

Watson reported that research activity in military psychology was prodigious. At the Fort Bragg “psy ops” library he found

> *...an enormous and extraordinary collection of papers and documents...row upon row of (largely unpublished) reports of military experiments... described military adaptations of psychological research that went far beyond anything I had until then conceived.*
>
> *...during the past twenty years and with hardly anyone in the outside world noticing, the military uses of psychology had come of age....Everything you could think of...had been investigated in remorseless detail and the relevant psychological research drained of any military application it might have.* **(Ibid, pp. 14-15)**

He noticed that this research was all very hush-hush:

> *...studies...have been —either secret or, if not actually classified, circulated only among a relatively small handful of specialists. The closed-world nature of this branch of science has both determined its unique character and prevented a wider discussion of the various issues—scientific, military, political and ethical—which are raised by many of the studies.* **(Ibid., p. 23)**

Watson found a surprising number of “institutes” that specialized in research in military psychology. There were a total of 146 in the eight countries he visited. The United States had 130 of them. Of those, 80 were inside the military. Others were in universities, specialist hospitals, private research institutes, and think tanks:

> *You will not find any details of them in the profes-*

> *sional psychological journals...On the official surface...military psychology appears to be a small and not very enterprising aspect of the science. The extent to which this belies the true picture, however, can be seen from the fact that the research for this book has unearthed many organizations around the world sponsoring no less than 7500 studies...Clearly, military psychology is now an enormous field. But—equally clearly—it is closed to most of us. No one can know, of course, just how much secrecy there is...* **(Ibid., p. 26)**

Watson reasoned that the fragmented nature of military psychology—so many institutes, most of small size—was a policy designed deliberately to maintain secrecy. He noticed the striking isolation of military psychologists from their civilian peers, and the civilians' inability to access military research. He listed the classified categories of military psychology. He found 25 current studies in the category called "Use of hypnosis in intelligence and related military subjects." He said it was one of the "chief areas of classified study." **(Ibid, p. 31)**

He quoted research that analyzed the "military mind":

> *...more authoritarian than most, more conservative, more bureaucratic and likely to have a more negative view of human nature—to assume that people tend naturally to be selfish, aggressive, untruthful...more pragmatic.* **(Ibid, p. 443)**

How would a pragmatic military mind react if a research breakthrough in mind-control technology appeared? Watson noted another tendency of the military mind: "...the ability to do something almost invariably means that an attempt will be made to actually do it." **(Ibid., p. 278)**

Mind-Control Research: Goals and Methods

Terminal Experiments

☑

Mind-Control Research Goals

☑

Personality Restructuring

> ***In working on this book I have had to come to terms with my own emotions—disbelief, bewilderment, disgust, and anger and, more than once in the early stages, a feeling that the subject was simply too evil to cope with. Nothing I had researched before could have prepared me...***
>
> **- Gordon Thomas, *Journey into Madness*, p. 8**

In a stream of memos during the 1950s, the CIA laid out an ambitious array of mind-control research goals. Even unlikely-sounding paths of inquiry were eventually crafted into operational technologies by throwing enough time, money, and brain power into the process.

Terminal Experiments

> **[They wanted]*...reliable results relevant to operations. In documents and conversation, Allen and his coworkers called such realistic tests "terminal experiments"—terminal in the sense that the experiment would be carried through to completion. It would not end when the subject felt like going home or when he or his best interest was about to be harmed....By definition, terminal experiments went beyond conventional ethical and legal limits.***
>
> **John Marks, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*, p. 32**

When Morse Allen was directing BLUEBIRD (the first CIA hypnosis project), he first performed hypnosis experiments on agency secretaries and office staff. Soon, however, he needed subjects with whom the CIA could take more risks.

Hypnosis sceptics, for years, had been rebuking experimenters in the field of **antisocial hypnosis**. The sceptics said that experiments proved nothing when the volunteers had knowingly agreed to participate. They argued that those subjects were unconsciously confidant that their professor, or boss, or officer was not really going to hurt them or make them do something wrong. Morse Allen agreed. He wanted to test subjects for whom the stakes were completely real—even to the point of life or death.

For how could researchers learn to make permanent changes in the way a person's brain works without making permanent changes in the way the experimental subject's brain works? How could they research techniques that might—or would—cause brain damage? Or death? To solve this dilemma, a dual policy for secret government experimentation developed: a classic double standard.

For such subjects, called **terminal subjects**, all risks were permissible, even long-term changes in personality, even risks to life and sanity. And all those risks could be taken without the subject's pre-knowledge or permission. Because asking permission or providing pre-knowledge could negate the experiment.

For persons in the research bureaucracy and experimenters, however, no risk was acceptable. These morally questionable terminal experiments were labeled "top secret," deliberately keeping the information and results from the public. The top secret label was also a "license to kill" for research bureaucrats and technicians, absolving them of accountability for their actions.

Morse Allen approved the use of **terminal experiments** in 1950. From then on, subjects were entrapped, used, and permanently changed by CIA experimentation. They were discarded when the experimenter had no more use for them. The CIA, however, still felt that a frustrating atmosphere of moral inhibition was impeding their research. A 1950 memo said:

> *We shall continually strive to attain more knowledge and better techniques. In the meantime, my general feeling is that because we have accomplished things which seem almost impossible, the authorities concerned almost believe that nothing is impossible. As you know, there are definite limitations, especially since we are so greatly handicapped by popular and official prejudice against some of our methods.* **(quoted in *Scheflin & Opton*, p. 114)**

The CIA began researching brainwashing techniques in 1953,

> *...the very year that the United States government signed the Nuremberg Code that prohibits human experimentation on captive populations, such as prisoners, or anybody else for that matter, unless the person is fully informed on the nature of the experiment and freely gives his or her consent.* **(Chavkin, *The Mind Stealers*)**

Wolff, a CIA brainwash researcher, told his superiors:

> *Where any of the studies involve potential harm to the subject, we expect the Agency to make available suitable subjects and a proper place for the performance of necessary experiments.* **(quoted in Weinstein, 1988, p. 133)**

The CIA's last policy restraints on terminal experiments vanished in 1954. That was the year a Russian defector, Vladimir Petrov, revealed that the May 1951 disappearance of two British intelligence agents had been staged by the KGB because it knew that the two (who were double agents also working for the KGB) were suspected and were under investigation by superiors. A very disturbed U.S. Joint Chief's officer wrote:

> *It would appear that very nearly all U.S./U.K. high-level planning information prior to 25 May 1951...must be considered compromised....* **(Martin, p. 61)**

President Eisenhower instructed Lieutenant General James Doolittle to make recommendations for improved CIA operations to prevent another such Soviet intelligence coup in the future. Sixty days later, Doolittle turned in recommendations to pursue

> *..."every possible scientific and technical avenue of approach to the intelligence problem"...he urged the CIA to become "more ruthless" than the KGB. "If the United States is to survive, long-standing American concepts of 'fair play' must be reconsidered...We must learn to subvert, sabotage and destroy our enemies by more clever, more sophisticated and more effective methods than those used against us."* **(Martin, p. 62)**

Doolittle's recommendations were followed. In

1959, a hypnotist, writing of "hypnosis in war," said: "It is relevant to note that an individual who was concerned with this type of work described it as 'unethical' and a 'dirty mess.'" **(Marcuse, *Hypnosis: Fact and Fiction*, p. 204).**

In that same decade, Alden Sears ran a University of Denver study for MKULTRA, using students as hypnotic subjects. He researched the "building blocks" that make an **unknowing hypnotic subject**: "Could a hypnotist induce a totally separate personality? Could a subject be sent on missions he would not remember unless cued by the hypnotist?" In 1957, Sears wrote that the next experiments, on methods "to build second identities [artificial personality splitting]...could not be handled in the University situation." **(John Marks, 1979, pp. 186-7)**

Sears refused to participate in that ugly second generation of experiments. He became a minister instead. Afterwards, he would never talk about the hypnosis experiments he had done.

Where Terminal Research Was Done

In the 60s, MKULTRA directors kicked mind-control experimentation into high gear. Their investigations had three experimental levels: 1) basic research, 2) clinical testing, and 3) testing in operational situations. Richard Helms was "the driving force behind this." **(Weinstein, p. 129)**. Various chunks of research were

> *...conducted at industrial facilities, academic centers, hospitals, government research sites and state and federal correctional and mental health institutions...MKULTRA's funding bypassed normal channels...its full scope was known to only a handful of people.* **(Scheflin and Opton, p. 132)**

Fifteen penal, or mental, institutions were used by the CIA for secret research on their inmates. The Addiction Research Center of the U.S. Public Health Service Hospital, Lexington, Kentucky, was one such institution. The Federal Narcotics Bureau, the Food and Drug Administration, and possibly certain defense contractors, were also involved in mind experiments.

For example, in one typical LSD experiment, the CIA enlisted the aid of the Navy and also that of the National Institutes of Mental Health (NIMH). Both served as false-front conduits for CIA money. A typical CIA document states that the directors of NIMH and the National Institutes of Health fully recognized the CIA's "interest" and had offered the Agency "full support and protection." **(Lee and Schlain, p. 24)**

CIA mind-control researchers also worked, and were based, in educational institutions. They involved "at least 185 scientists and some eighty institutions: prisons, pharmaceutical companies, hospitals, and forty-four medical colleges and universities" in this type of study. **(Chavkin, p. 12)** Those facilities were

> *...all over the United States, at the great research centers like Boston Psychopathic, the University of Illinois Medical School, Mount Sinai, Columbia University, the University of Oklahoma, the Addiction Research Center at Lexington, Kentucky, the University of Chicago, and the University of Rochester, and still other centers, researchers had begun projects funded by the Agency through intermediaries.* **(Thomas, pp. 156-157)**

Ivy League colleges, especially, became centers for defense and CIA contracts. At Harvard, "students and professors had for years served as guinea pigs for CIA- and military-funded" experiments **(Lee and Schlain, p. 73)**. A professor later recalled that

> *Princeton was crawling with agents. They came courting everyone. It was obvious. They would give us whatever we wanted...We realized we were being recruited, but at that time we were flattered that such a prestigious government agency was interested in us.* **(*Ibid.*, footnote, p. 46)**

In New York, MKULTRA researched in a very different social atmosphere—**a safehouse** disguised as a brothel. Although listed under the Federal Bureau of Narcotics, the safehouses were actually managed and funded by the CIA. George White organized the first one in a Greenwich Village apartment. He equipped it with a stable of prostitutes. He observed their interactions with customers through a special two-way glass, which functioned as a mirror on the brothel side and as a clear observation glass on the researcher's side.

The CIA was studying the use of "lovemaking" for espionage purposes and analyzing the sexual behavior of johns—especially of certain targeted individuals. White also tested experimental drugs, administered by experimental covert means, to the unknowing patrons. In 1955, White was transferred to San Francisco where he set up two more safehouses doing similar experiments. The safehouse experiments went on into the 60s.

After retiring, White wrote in a personal letter:

> *I was a very minor missionary, actually a heretic, but I toiled wholeheartedly in the vineyards because it was fun, fun, fun. Where else could a red-*

> *blooded American boy lie, kill, cheat, steal, rape, and pillage with the sanction and blessing of the All-Highest?* **(quoted in John Marks, 1979, p. 101)**[1]

Cameron's Patients

Cameron's patients are the best-known individual victims of CIA-supported mind-control experiments. The patients and their presenting symptoms when they arrived at Dr. Cameron's office at McGill University in Canada for psychiatric help were not unusual: unhappy wife, middle-aged businessman with a holocaust flashback, hypochondria, arthritis, and menopause. Once they fell into Cameron's trap, however, they became humanoid white rats expended in extreme, ruthless, and brain-damaging experiments on mind control.[2]

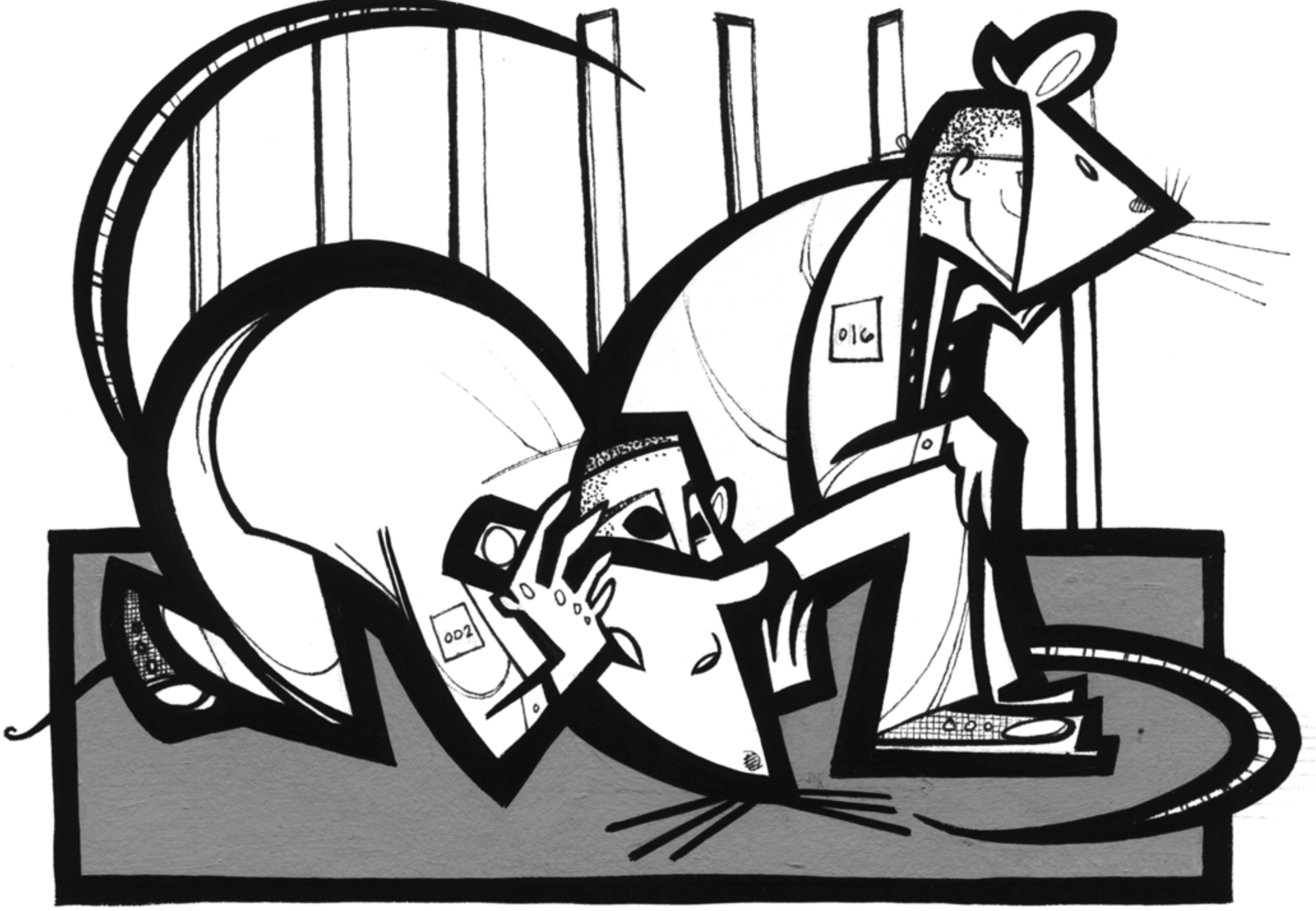

Cameron was working on a new mind-control technique. One patient, Mr. Weinstein, was a middle-aged Canadian businessman who owned a prosperous clothing manufacturing company. Weinstein made the mistake of asking Cameron for help to overcome an occasional phantom choking sensation. After years of Cameron's bizarre, destructive experimentation, Weinstein acquired severe mental damage. His son, Harvey, grew up and became a psychiatrist out of a burning need to understand what happened to his father's mind.[3]

Why did Cameron entrap normal people (with minor problems) to use in his experiments? He did that because both brainwashing and hypnoprogramming work best on normal persons. Dr. Sargant, an English psychiatrist, expert on brainwashing, and a personal friend of both Dr. Cameron and CIA Director Dulles explained:

> *...the really crucial point which the whole history of hypnotism demonstrates is that the people most susceptible to hypnotic states are normal people. Hypnotism has never been very successful in treating the severely mentally ill...Many normal people, on the other hand, become hysterical un-*

---

[1] By "All-Highest," did George White mean the CIA Director? Or his MKULTRA project director? Or the National Security Council? Definitely, he did not mean God. Here we have "situational ethics" stated blatently.

[2] *In The Sleep Room: The Story of the CIA Brainwashing Experiments in Canada* by Anne Collins is the most painstakingly documented history of the Cameron/CIA connection and the personal stories of Cameron's victims.

[3] The son, Dr. Harvey Weinstein, told the story of his father's life and his own search for the truth about what happened to his father in a heartbreaking book originally titled *A Father, A Son, and the CIA*, then *Psychiatry and the CIA: Victims of Mind Control.*

> *der stress, and, when they do, they become amenable to hypnotism and to techniques which depend on the same brain mechanisms.*
>
> *It is not the mentally ill but ordinary normal people who are most susceptible...* **(Sargant, *The Mind Possessed*, p. 31)**

The people most susceptible to brainchanging are stressed, normal people. So, Cameron captured normal people for his experiments. They did not stay normal. They became stressed. Funded, in part, by the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology, he experimented with conditioning (building unconscious reflex habits), hypnosis (using a Sodium Amytal induction), other drugs, electroshock, and psychic driving. He analyzed the three stages of electroshock amnesia. He studied the retroactive amnesia for recent events which electroshockings can cause.

CIA Settles with Canadian Nine

In the spring of 1988, the CIA was on the brink of going to court because of a years-long lawsuit against it. The lawsuit was filed by Dr. Ewen Cameron's nine surviving mind-control research subjects. The Canadian government had already made compensatory payments to them, acknowledging its role in looking the other way and allowing them to be used in U.S. research. The now elderly Canadians were represented by a pair of Washington, D.C. lawyers, Turner and Rauh. The U.S. Justice Department was defending the CIA: "not guilty."

Abruptly, the Justice Department made the Canadians a cash offer. The U.S. would pay $750,000 total to the nine survivors if they would drop their case with a) no admission of guilt from the CIA, b) no trial, and c) their agreement never to publicly discuss the matter again.

They agreed, got the money, and never gave another interview. The CIA avoided a prolonged court battle which would have resulted in glaring publicity and the possible coming forward of more victims of their mind-control research, or more revelations about those experiments. The Company also avoided being found guilty, for the paper trail in this case was wide and clear indeed.

Cameron worked on two major CIA goals. One was the creation of irresistibly powerful remembering. His technique was forced listening to a short, taped message played over and over. He called that **psychic driving**. The other goal was its opposite: the causing of irresistibly powerful forgetting. Cameron's method to accomplish that was a large amount of electroshock. The amount was called **regressive** because subjects lost their bladder control.

Medical Ethics

Henry K. Beecher, a medical ethicist studying publicly available statistics, was astonished and disturbed by the steady increase, after World War II, in experimentation on unknowing subjects:

> *...they would not have been available if they had been truly aware of the uses that would be made of them...many of the patients in the examples to follow never had the risk satisfactorily explained to them, and it seems obvious that further hundreds have not known that they were the subjects of an experiment although grave consequences have been suffered as a direct result of experiments... There is a belief prevalent in some sophisticated circles that attention to these matters would "block progress." But, according to Pope Pius XII, "...science is not the highest value to which all other orders of values... should be submitted."* (**Beecher "Ethics and Clinical Research," 1966**)

Beecher said that ethical errors were increasing not only in numbers, but also in variety. Above all, he was dismayed by the ballooning government budget for research on human beings.

> *Since World War II the annual expenditure for research (in large part on man)...in the Massachusetts General Hospital has increased a remarkable 17-fold. At the National Institutes of Health, the increase has been a gigantic 624-fold...Medical schools and university hospitals are increasingly dominated by investigators.* (***Ibid***.)

That was just NIH funding. What would the numbers have looked like to Beecher if military, thinktank, NIMH, CIA, and NSA fundings for human research were added in?

What exactly were they doing to all those people?

Mind-Control Research Goals

Can we get control of an individual to the point where he will do our bidding against his will and even against such fundamental laws of nature such as self-preservation?

1952 *ARTICHOKE memo, quoted in Chavkin*, p. 13

In 1950, the CIA's BLUEBIRD program began to target specific hypnotism goals. At first, the research goals were all defensive: to identify disloyal persons, establish a defector's legitimacy, make CIA agents able to resist hostile interrogation, and strengthen interrogation methods used on captured enemies. The list of goals soon changed, however, to include offensive uses of hypnosis. Hypnotism would make it

> *...possible to brief a prisoner or other individual, subsequently dispatch him on a mission and successfully debrief him on his return without his recollection of the whole proceeding.* **(*CIA memo, "Defense Against Soviet Medical Interrogation and Espionage Techniques,"* quoted in Scheflin & Opton, p. 114)**

They also targeted the basic goal of getting absolute control, in absolute secrecy, over another person. The victim would become an unknowing hypno-puppet who would obey any command:

> *The support program will consist of both fundamental and applied research studying all means through which control of an individual may be attained.* **(*CIA memo* quoted in Scheflin & Opton, p. 116)**

They preferred the method of disguised hypnotic induction over nondisguised. Disguised induction would help achieve an

> *...absence of resistance and counter-control: ideally, the technique will be so elegant, so smooth, that the manipulated will not suspect, let alone object, that someone or something is trying to shape their behavior.* **(Schrag, *Mind Control*, p. 10)**

One author wrote of a military scenario in which hypnosis is used

> *...to obtain the services of an apprehended spy, obtain all the knowledge he might have by use of an involuntary technic and send him back out as a double agent.* **(Teitlebaum, *Hypnosis Induction Technics*, p. 172)**

In 1960, the CIA's Technology and Science Director, who was in charge of operational experiments in hypnosis, began an aggressive, new, enlarged program which he called "field experimentation" in the "counterintelligence program." There were

> *...three goals: (1) to induce hypnosis very rapidly in unwitting subjects; (2) to create durable amnesia; and (3) to implant durable and operationally useful posthypnotic suggestion.* **(John Marks, 1979, p. 189).**

An outline of ARTICHOKE research targets listed further goals in the hypnosis area: development of techniques for disguised induction, hypnotic memory training, and sealing.

Disguised Induction

They were "investigating the possibility of obtaining control of an individual by application of special interrogation techniques" **(Scheflin & Opton, p. 116).** "Special interrogation techniques" was a euphemism for methods of disguised induction. The ARTICHOKE research program subdivided that research into experiments on how to cause an unknowing person to become hypnotized using polygraphs, drugs, hypnosis, subconscious isolation, or electroshock.

Hypnotic Memory Training

They called hypnotic memory training **memory enhancement**. Hypnosis definitely improves memory. If a person's memory is good to start with, hypnosis makes it even better. Hypnotic memory training had at least two intelligence and military applications: a) couriers bearing unconsciously remembered messages and b) subjects used as human tape recorders where no mechanical recording of speech was possible or permitted. In 1962, a research hypnotist issued a lyric call to use hypnosis to

> *...produce synthetic genius, emergent genius...in ordinary mortals...phenomenal memory...we are convinced that synthetic genius lies within the grasp of the human, but it will take long and patient research to activate this dream.* **(Wright, in Estabrooks, Ed., *Hypnosis: Current Problems*, p. 235)**

Dr. Gindes studied rote memory in hypnotized persons for the Army.

...five soldiers were hypnotized...and given a jumbled "code"...they were allowed sixty seconds to commit the list to memory. In the waking state, each man was asked to repeat the code; this none of them could do...During rehypnotization, they were individually able to recall the exactcontent of the code message. **(Gindes, pp. 33-34)**

The men had learned to spell "ordinary" as "sqlcnrbc," "tendency" as "tmslnfsk," and so on. **(Gindes, pp. 53-54)**

Hypnocouriers

In 1500 B.C., the Egyptians were using a hypnocourier system. Programmed virgins served the Pharaoh as royal "message bearers from the gods." The women were sent under military escort to distant dignitaries who knew the cue which would unlock the messenger's lips and release the consciously unknown secret message locked in her unconscious. At journey's end, when presented to the dignitary and cued, the words of her message would miraculously form themselves at her lips and speak themselves. She had no conscious knowledge from where those words came. She had no foreknowledge what words it was that her mouth would speak.

Modern hypnocouriers are described in a 1963 text on clinical and experimental hypnosis:

Hypnosis is assuming an ever-increasing role in the psychological aspects of warfare. For instance, a good subject can be hypnotized to deliver secret information. The memory of this message could be covered by an artificially induced amnesia. In the event that he should be captured, he naturally could not remember that he had ever been given the message. He would not remember the message. However, since he had been given a posthypnotic suggestion, the message would be subject to recall through a specific cue, this having been given to him in the form of a posthypnotic suggestion. **(William Kroger, *Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis in Medicine, Psychology, and Dentistry*, p. 299)**

The basic system was to read or tell a message to a hypnotized subject, who then was instructed to remember the message and speak it on cue. It could be long and complicated. The courier did not consciously know the message, or even the fact that he carried a message. The message's intended recipient, who knew the cue, would speak or act it out when ready. After perceiving that cue, the courier would go into a posthypnotic trance and speak the message—like a human tape recorder on "play." A supplementary hypnotic suggestion could cause the courier to be amnesic for the meaning of the words he was speaking. (Bowart, in *Operation Often*, reported the case of a military man trained in this way.)

Estabrooks promoted the use of consciously unknowing hypno-messengers by government agencies:

> *If one expert can build up a code, another can break it down...a code must be printed somewhere...And human nature is weak. With hypnotism we can be sure of our private messenger. We hypnotize our man in, say, Washington...give him the message. That message, may we add, can be both long and intricate. An intelligent individual can memorize a whole book if necessary. Then we start him out for Australia by plane with the instructions that no one can hypnotize him...except Colonel Brown in Melbourne...It is useless to intercept this messenger. He has no documents and no amount of "third degreeing" can extract the information, for the information is not in the conscious mind to extract...* **(*Hypnotism,* 1944 edition, pp. 210-211)**

Sealing

An early CIA memo described **sealing** as "establishing defensive means for preventing hostile control." In civilian language it means that sealing the programmed mind blocks it from attempts by other hypnotists to put that person into trance. Sealing was another CIA hypnoprogramming goal:

> *Can we prevent any unauthorized source or enemy from gaining control of the future activities (physical and mental) of agency personnel (or persons of interest to this agency) by any known means?* **(CIA memo quoted in Scheflin & Opton, pp. 116-117)**

The usual method of sealing was, and is, simply a hypnotic suggestion that the subject cannot be hypnotized by any unauthorized person.

1950s CIA HYPNOGOALS, AND PROBABLE OUTCOMES

In a chapter called "Tampering with the Mind: I," Scheflin and Opton included a long list of hypnoprogramming goals obtained from a CIA memo written in the 1950s. Here are thirteen of those goals, and my opinion of their probable research outcomes:

(1) Identify Hypnotically Susceptible Personality—The CIA wanted to know "the types of personalities which could or could not be controlled." Since the 1950s, many studies, both military and nonmilitary, have sought ways to covertly recognize hypnotizability. Some systems are based on personality and behavior traits. A hysteric is always a good hypnotic subject. Compulsives are the hardest personality type to either hypnotize or to control by hypnosis, because they are going to be, and do, what they are going to be and do. Psychotics are categorically considered impossible to hypnotize, but there have been exceptions.

In some research, women were easier to hypnotize than men, but only by a small percentage. In both sexes, the higher the IQ, the greater the hypnotic susceptibility. In one study, bright female introverts were most susceptible. Extroverts forget more over time than introverts, but they are better at retrieving information from deeply buried memory, especially if it's relatively inaccessible. Introverts are more affected by punishment, extroverts by reward.

That data could be interpreted to make introverts preferred candidates for hypnoprogramming. They have better memory for unconscious instructions, less ability to recover repressed memory, and are more controllable by suggested suffering.

More formal evaluations of hypnotizability are derived from Rorschach or TAT tests and from brainwave patterns (more alpha indicates more susceptibility). If the subject had an imaginary playmate in childhood, that also indicates susceptibility.[1]

---

[1] See Section IV, "Susceptibility," for more markers.

(2) Which Mind Control Method for Each Personality—The CIA list included the goal of knowing "the methods which would or would not work on those personality types." Therefore, they studied every conceivable induction method: open or disguised . That included study of hypnotic induction hardware of every sort, including instruments for electronic induction by brainwave manipulation and post-electroshock induction. They studied the inductive effects of fatigue and stress, visualization, relaxation, narcohypnosis, repetition, disorientation, sensory deprivation, extrasensory (mind-to-mind, psychic) induction, and combinations of those. (Research knowledge in these areas is covered in Part IV of this book.)

(3) Time Needed to Establish Mind Control? The CIA wanted to know "the amount of time needed for 'alteration of personality' with each technique." How much time does the operator need to take control of a subject's mind? Using verbal techniques only? Using narcohypnosis? Electroshock? How long is it from the beginning of the process to the end—when the subject emerges as a controlled person, totally amnesic for all time spent under hypnosis?

Candy and Palle were trained for years. Estabrooks said that the essentials could be accomplished in ten days, but he recommended ten months for complete training. Bowart's military interviewees and the Operation Often subject reported that their operators spent six to eight weeks setting up basic programming, including their final electroshock series to reinforce amnesia.

(4) Is the Conditioning Permanent?—The CIA also listed the goal of learning "the duration of the change." Would the personality splitting and hypnoprogramming be permanent? In most cases, it would. However, time could have some weakening effect. Unconscious knowledge of safe distance or isolation from the operator can be even more helpful to a subject who unconsciously wants to escape and heal. If a victim becomes consciously aware that this technology exists, he may realize his situation, stop making excuses for the hypnotist, and start wresting his mind FREE.

(5) Can the Conditioning Be Reversed?—Early CIA euphemisms for hypnoprogramming were "brain changing" and "personality restructuring." The hypnoprogramming technology indeed could profoundly change a subject's personality. This goal on the list asked about "the ability to restore the original personality." In plain English, the question was: Could anybody undo their hypnoprogramming (conditioning)?

If the subject can get himself out of reach of all induction cues, and if he can avoid triggering any pre-existing check-in cues, his operator cannot reinforce old conditioning and cannot lay on new conditioning. In the absence of reinforcement, time may gradually loosen the hold of unwelcome conditioning. If that subject-in-hiding obtains the help of a skilled trance manipulator, more of the damage can be undone. Some—or all—of the old conditioning suggestions can be reversed. How much is reversed depends on how deep the changes were etched in the subject's brain, how much time and effort is spent on the healing process, if the subject has a safe place to hide from the hypnotist while healing, and if the healer has a clear understanding of this technology. (But then the subject will be in rapport with the new helper. This may or may not be a problem, depending...)

Humpty-Dumpty is easier to break than to put back together. And when Humpty-Dumpty is back together, he will not look exactly like the egg he was because the experience of being hypnoprogrammed and then overcoming it is going to deeply affect that personality. Some amnesia can be overcome, however. Perhaps old induction cues can be blocked. (Or the subject can live in hiding from those cues.) The best case scenario probably will result in a sadder-but-wiser, more comfortable, more functional, and somewhat reintegrated, personality who is relatively safe from the abusive former operator. (See Part V, therapy topics, for more on this.)

(6) What Could Go Wrong During the Conditioning?—The CIA wanted to know "the adverse side effects" of conditioning. The answer is that subjects may die if given a miscalculated dose of narcohypnotic drug. Some may be pushed into psychosis, temporarily, or permanently. Some may develop long-term neurotic symptoms reflecting unwholesome hypnotic repressions: rationalizations, hypochondria, phobias, compulsions, nightmares, etc. Some may have their body, relationships, or life damaged by thoughtless, or abusive, suggestions.

In general, the more stable the person is to start with, the more effectively their programming will implant, the better their unconscious will compensate for unconscious burdens with defense mechanisms, and the better their cover personality will function.[1]

(7) How Complete Will the Control Be?—The CIA wanted to know "the extent to which the new personality could be controlled." They learned that a mind-controlled person makes a better patsy than assassin because the unconscious retains some capacity to influence outcomes and sidestep the most unthinkable commands. For example, Zebediah shot his elbow instead of his hand. Mrs. E. tended to fail at murder and suicide instructions.Candy obeyed all the preceding orders, but she converted her suicide instruction into a break for freedom.

Nevertheless, obedience potential caused by hypnoprogramming is far greater than is generally recognized by the public. The assertion that "you can't be made to do anything under hypnosis that you don't want to" is FALSE. Great effort was made to train a subject to give reflexive responses, to be totally unconscious, mechanical, automatistic, and absolute in obedience. With ruthless training, involving techniques from the physical methods of psychiatry, a close approximation of robotic response was possible—including some criminal and self-destructive actions.[2]

(8) Complex Conduct Be Hypnocontrolled?—The CIA wanted evidence as to "the complexity of the conduct which could be commanded of the controlled personality." Research described in psychiatric case studies, and other research reports, makes it clear that direct commands ("suggestions"), indirect commands, and specific commands are all possible. So, also, are complex commands such as: "join it, believe in it, participate in it, but be unconsciously loyal to us and report back weekly."

Any variety of neurosis or psychosis can be suggested under hypnosis. The resulting performance can fool even an expert. Alove attachment can be suggested (Nielsen caused Palle to love Bente). A loving relationship can also be terribly harmed by hypnotic suggestion. A subject could be caused to not pay bills, sending all surplus money to one or more designated persons instead.

(9) Are Personality Changes Caused by Hypnotic Suggestion Detectable?—The CIA list targeted research into "changes in attitude of the person whose personality had been altered." Would the victim's family realize what had happened to their loved one? Would the neighbors catch on? The answer is that changes may be observable, but they are unlikely to be correctly interpreted unless observers understand that unethical hypnosis is possible and how it works.

(10) Can Preconditioning Be Detected?—The CIA listed "the ability to detect preconditioning and to determine the method used and the purpose to be accomplished by the conditioning" as a goal. **Preconditioning** has two meanings. It is, technically, the first stage of hypnosis, the period during which a subject becomes willing to be hypnotized by an operator, but has not yet been hypnotized.

The other meaning of "preconditioning" is probably the one which the CIA had in mind, however. This goal sought a method to detect if a person of interest to them was already somebody's unknowing hypnotic subject—a previously conditioned ("preconditioned") subject.[3] They wanted not only to be able to identify that preconditioning, but also to be able to detect the operator's method of conditioning the subject—and the operator's motive for that preconditioning.

The method could be tough to find out. Only the subject's unconscious knows, and his sealing would have to be broken to access that information. If the subject doesn't know his operator's motive, consciously or unconsciously, there is no way to find out—unless the CIA also has physical custody of the subject's operator, and probes his mind.

(11) Can a Preconditioned Subject Be Reprogrammed?—The CIA listed "the ability to **recondition** a preconditioned person" as a research goal. If a person of interest to them was already somebody's hypnotic subject, could they undo ("recondition") his previous programming, and then implant their own? Or simply implant their own and make it dominant over the previous programming? Since it was on their list, the CIA probably did try reconditioning and probably came up with some answers. I don't know what those might be, but I feel sorry for their victims.

---

[1] A **cover personality** is the "new personality," the conscious self, which is unaware of the conditioning period or of its second, secret hypnotic life.

[2] The CIA had a project "designed to turn people into programmed assassins who would kill on automatic command." (Lee and Schlain, *Acid Dreams*, xx)

[3] See Part V for methods to identify a victim of unethical hypnosis.

(12) Can We Reprogram a Reprogrammed Hypnoprogrammed Person?—The CIA put "the possibilities of multiple conditioning" of an agent on their research list. If a hypnoprogrammed enemy agent was captured by the CIA, could he be reprogrammed into a double agent? If a hypnoprogrammed CIA agent was apprehended by the enemy and reprogrammed by the enemy to be their own agent, could the CIA then **reprogram** that person back to being loyal to them? In the case of a double agent, the original operator would imagine that he still had an effective agent, when actually another **unconscious isolate** of the poor victim's unconscious mind reports to yet another master, without either the subject's conscious mind, or the original hypnotic operator knowing it.

I suppose the CIA carried out this experiment, too. I feel great sorrow and sympathy for the subjects who suffered such mental abuse. The reprogramming of a reprogrammed subject who was hypnoprogrammed before is an even more horrific concept.

Reprogramming could also be applied to somebody, who was originally programmed by the agency, and then managed to (partially or entirely) deprogram themselves. The reconditioning would, theoretically, restore the unconscious automatism of a balking subject. I also pity any victim who went through a first conditioning, got free, and then was subjected to yet another (probably far more brutal) conditioning period in order to enslave him again.

However, "reprogramming" is a mechanical concept. NO HUMAN IS TRULY A MACHINE. A living brain accumulates data, changes and adapts. It can develop an intense dislike for the condition of mind-slavery—even, or especially, at the unconscious level. It may look for loopholes in its programming which will support that person's survivability by enhancing his freedom. It may even find ways to avoid, even defy, the master.

(13) Perfect Amnesia?—The CIA also listed "the ability to induce states of amnesia so that the conditioned person is unaware of the conditioning" as a research goal. Posthypnotic amnesia is the foundation of all the previous scenarios. The person who knows what happened will take measures to protect himself from another hit. The CIA and the military wanted dependable ways to cause effective amnesia which would conceal the hypnotic conditioning—and all future episodes of hypnotic suggestion—from the subject's conscious mind.

The verbal (left) hemisphere can be silenced or made to lie. But, short of brain damage, the imaging (right) brain is very hard to silence. **Projective techniques** that involve imagery are likely to reveal the truth.

Personality Restructuring

...the day has come when we can combine sensory deprivation with drugs, hypnosis and astute manipulation of rewards and punishment to gain almost absolute control over an individual's behavior...a very rapid and highly effective type of positive brainwashing that would allow us to make dramatic changes in a person's behavior and personality...**[in]** ***a few months—or perhaps even less than that...***

The techniques of behavioral control make even the hydrogen bomb look like a child's toy, and, of course, they can be used for good or evil. But we can no more prevent the development of this new psychological methodology than we could have prevented the development of atomic energy...

McConnell, *Psychology Today*, April 1970

When James V. McConnell announced the new method of **positive brainwashing** in the article quoted above, he was a famous Michigan behaviorist. In the early 1970s, he trained flatworms by electric shocks to prefer the lighted tunnel to the dark one. He edited and published both *The Journal of Biological Psychology* and the *Worm Runner's Digest*, a radical behaviorist periodical. If anybody outside the Company knew what happened when you put all the MKULTRA research together and applied it with the goal of **personality restructuring** to a single subject, it would be McConnell. In that article, he urged readers to adopt

> *...a revolutionary viewpoint toward society and its problems. Today's behavioral psychologists are the architects and engineers of the Brave New World...* **(Ibid., p. 74)**

He suggested temporary incarceration for antisocial persons while they were being "cured" by means of this new technology. The subject would be housed in a "rehabilitation center" while experts "restructure his entire personality." McConnell argued:

> *No one owns his own personality. Your ego, or individuality, was forced on you by your genetic constitution and by the society into which you were born. You had no say about what kind of personality you acquired, and there's no reason to believe you should have the right to refuse to acquire a new personality if your old one is antisocial...* **(Ibid.)**

His words set off a furor. Who would have the right to define "antisocial"? How would they define it? (Was it "antisocial" of me to write and publish this book?) People asked for more information which McConnell declined to provide. Instead, he expressed regret for saying what he had said. He never again discussed the technology of "positive brainwashing."

Related CIA and psychiatric research, however, provides further insight.

Research Personality Restructuring

The CIA used language derived from research on artificial neurosis to describe the creation of an unknowing hypnotic subject—often with a new opinion, behavior, or loyalty. Sometimes they called it **giving somebody a new personality;** sometimes it was called **personality restructuring**. Whatever its name, the process could, they hoped, covertly and permanently change a subject's beliefs and behaviors. (If they became an unknowing hypnorobot in the process, that would not be seen as a problem.)

In the 50s and 60s, U.S. brainwash specialists studied the phenomenon of Christian conversion, and also why some Americans turned Communist in Chinese POW camps. They contemplated the history of heiress Patricia Hearst who was kidnapped by revolutionaries, became a gun-shooting revolutionary, then was captured by police, and became a law-abiding heiress again. They studied how meat-eaters become vegetarians; and how vegetarians become meat-eaters, and so on.

They must have also wondered if restructuring the personality might secretly convert a Communist follower, or leader, into a staunch advocate of free elections, free enterprise, demilitarization, dismantling of the Russian empire, and economic integration of the Soviet areas with the U.S. and Europe. What an achievement it would be if an important political opponent could be covertly hypnotized and given a new personality—one that took orders from the CIA and had a Western political philosophy.

Hypnosis, voluntary or involuntary (drug or disguised induction), was the key to restructuring an old personality into a new one. After induction would come training for depth, obedience, and amnesia—and then the personality restructuring, the mental reprogramming.

Hypno-conversions

Dr. Cook, a University of Chicago professor, hypnotist, and author, described his process of hypno-transformation in a 1927 book. After he "treated" a daughter, whose father objected to her love for a "worthless suitor," her feelings changed to "abhorrence." (She then became infatuated with the hypnotist!)

In another case, a jealous Miss Edith thought her fiancee too attentive to a lovely cousin. She explained her problem to Dr. Cook, hired him, and together they hatched a plot. Edith then dared her fiancee to be hypnotized by Cook. The young man accepted her dare. Cook hypnotized him and gave a posthypnotic suggestion that he would visit the cousin and scold her severely for some imagined neglect until she became angry. After that, Miss Edith had no competition.

Cook freed an Iowa man of tobacco chewing:

> *...hypnotized him twelve times in four weeks. Before he left the city he was entirely cured of the tobacco habit, although he had no recollection of his experience while in the hypnotic state.*
> **(Cook, *Practical Lessons in Hypnotism and Autosuggestion*, pp. 160-1)**

A father, worried about his son's choice of companions, brought the young man to Cook's office. The son

> *...was willing...to test the power of hypnotism...and placed in the somnambulistic state. He was then told that it would be impossible for him to be induced to accompany his friends to any questionable places, and that whenever they met him he would treat them civilly, but would no longer make companions of them. Over and over again these suggestions were emphatically repeated to him before he was awakened, and this was repeated*

> *daily for twelve days, during which time he had no communication with any of his companions, as his father had brought him quite a distance...*
> **(*Ibid.*, pp. 225-6)**

Cook suggested amnesia to the son for all the implanted suggestions. He was "cured" and avoided those unwholesome companions in the future.

Like Cook, another hypnotist, Marcuse, reported changing a person's convictions by hypnosis, obtaining a religious conversion. A "vehemently atheistic" subject lived in a boarding house. Marcuse enlisted one of his fellow boarders to report developments. The professor hypnotized the atheist in his office, read him a list of reasons for belief, and then suggested amnesia for the hypnosis. Marcuse soon exactly repeated the treatment. His dinner-table spy reported that other dining room guests were astonished at the sudden reversal of the subject's opinions on religion. For the first time, he began to attend church services. **(Marcuse, *Hypnosis*, p. 228)**

Reprogramming by simple hypnosis is not a sure thing. If it were, there would be no failures in stop-smoking clinics (most of which use hypnosis). But, what if the subject is an artificially-created split personality who was programmed using narcohypnosis and other physical methods of psychiatry? That makes the outcome more predictable.

Physical Methods of Psychiatry

Narcohypnosis

☑

Electroshock

> **[There were]...** ***CIA documents describing experiments in sensory deprivation, sleep teaching, ESP, subliminal projection, electronic brain stimulation...Another document mentioned "hypnotically-induced anxieties" and "induced pain as a form of physical and psychological control."...Deadly chemicals were concocted for the sole purpose of inducing a heart attack or cancer without leaving a clue as to the actual source of the disease. CIA specialists also studied the effects of magnetic fields, ultrasonic vibrations, and other forms of radiant energy on the brain.***
>
> **Lee and Schlain, *Acid Dreams*, xx**

After World War II, advocates of physical methods of psychiatry argued for "practical" (**physical)** therapies. They downgraded the "philosophical" approaches to healing, meaning the Freudian and Jungian methods.

The physical treatments offered, as of 1944, were narcohypnosis and drug abreaction sessions, electroshock, insulin shock, continuous sleep maintained by drugging, new vitamins, endocrine supplements, stimulants, anticonvulsants, and lobotomy. Advocates of physical psychiatry were hopeful that yet more and better electrical, chemical, and surgical treatments for the brain would soon be discovered.

The Rockefeller Foundation, CIA, National Institutes of Health, and others, lavishly funded that research. The following, 1950s, list of CIA mind-control research areas included physical methods of psychiatry and psychoanalytic methods:

(a) Psychosurgery.

(b) Shock method:
  (1) electrical
  (2) drug: metrazol, cannabis indica, insulin, cocaine.

(c) Psychoanalytic methods:
  (1) psychoanalysis
  (2) narcoanalysis and synthesis
  (3) hypnoanalysis and synthesis.

(d) Combinations of the foregoing.

Other CIA documents from the 1950s list their goals in ultrasonics and "enhanced" polygraph techniques. For example, tests were done using an EEG as a polygraph. The question was "Do you masturbate?" Lobotomy was recommended in one document as a "solution" to neutralize a person "from a security point of view." **(Lee and Schlain)** Another document discussed a covert procedure in which the operator used electroshock to cause anesthesia, then lobotomized the subject with an icepick[1]

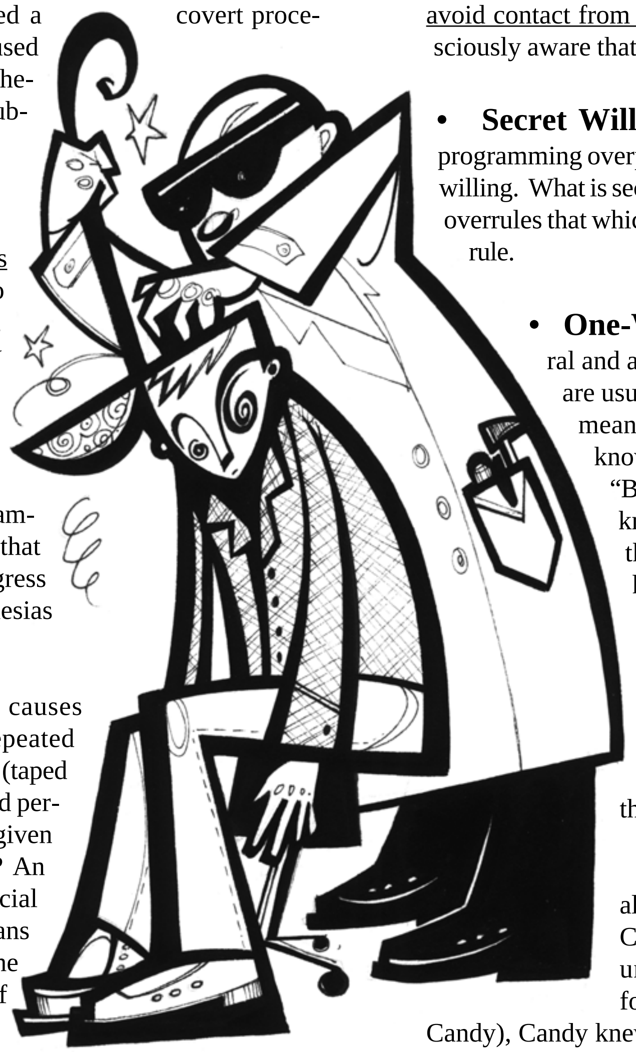

Amnesia Research

The CIA was always interested in methods to cause amnesia. July 15, 1953, after an employee who knew much sensitive information left the Agency, operations people told superiors in ARTICHOKE that they needed a drug which would cause amnesia. The bosses replied that work was constantly in progress on causing predictable amnesias by a variety of means.

What predictably causes predictable amnesias? Repeated suggestions to not remember (taped or oral) given to a hypnotized person? Amnesia suggestions given to a narcohypnotized person? An electroshock series? Artificial personality splitting by means of an artificial neurosis? The answer is YES. To ALL of them. Those methods can be used singly—or in COMBINATION.

Hypnoprogramming Uses for Amnesia

Here follow reasons why amnesia is advantageous for a hypnoprogrammer:

- **Broken Feedback Circuit:**—**Amnesia** hides the problem from the subject's conscious mind. If a subject remembers being hypnotized and remembers being given the hypnotic suggestions, he may resist them. Amnesia**,** however, produces a person who does not know that he has been hypnotized and given suggestions. An amnesic person makes no effort to overcome hypnotic conditioning or to avoid contact from the hypnotist. He is not consciously aware that there is a problem.

- **Secret Will Rule—**An amnestic brain-programming overpowers a competing conscious willing. What is secret in your mind automatically overrules that which is not secret. The secret will rule.

- **One-Way Amnesia**—Both natural and artificial multiple personalities are usually **one-way amnestic**. That means that the original self, "A," knows nothing about the split self, "B," but B knows all about A. The knowing goes one way but not the other. B sees, hears, and knows all that A experiences. A, the original personality, neither sees, hears, nor knows what the split does during a **fugue**.[2] The split, however, is aware and critical of all the original personality's acts, thoughts, and feelings.

For this reason, Arlene had all the information possessed by Candy, plus her own. However, until Arlene revolted and informed John (who enlightened Candy), Candy knew nothing about Arlene's life. Candy's mental access to what Arlene knew had been blocked by Dr. Jensen. Arlene referred to her own life as a split-off, hidden observer when she said, "...I'll go along tomorrow. I'll sit there and I'll watch...Where she goes, I go." **(Bain, p. 99)**

Amnesia suggestions given to a narcohypnotized person were an especially promising area for research and operations.

---

[1] Lee and Schlain describe many more CIA records of goals, experiments, and activities in *Acid Dreams*, some even more horrific than these.

[2] The period of time during which a dissociated personality split takes over, in an episode for which the original personality is amnesic, is called a **fugue.** A person may have one short fugue, or a series of them, or one long one, or any combination. Pierre Janet very narrowly defined "fugue" as an escape episode involving the dissociation (splitting off) of a set of ideas whose unity is based on a ruling emotion—such as fear. But modern writers use "fugue" to mean any time lapse or memory blackout.

Narcohypnosis

The question may be raised whether in narcohypnosis we are not dealing simply with sleep only instead of actual hypnosis. Anyone who has practiced narcohypnosis will have to answer this question in the negative, since the patients carry out suggestions and in every other way conduct themselves like deeply hypnotized subjects.

Schilder and Kauders, *Hypnosis*

Hyperventilation

Hyperventilation is a chemical induction technique. It can be a method of disguised induction. If you breathe as rapidly as possible (hyperventilation) for two to four minutes, you will have some degree of gaseous alkalosis. You will feel dizzy and confused. You will also be in a state of light trance. Changes in blood acidosis/alkalosis relate to changes in state of consciousness.

Hard, prolonged crying causes hyperventilation. (Hyperventilation induction is the key to Arthur Janov's Primal Therapy. Overbreathing lowers consciousness. In that state, a subject is encouraged to relive past traumas and to access and express deep emotion. You need a strong heart and lungs to undertake this stressful "scream" therapy.)

Barbiturates

Narcotic trance induction goes back to prehistory. Narcohypnosis began shortly after chemical anesthesia for surgery was discovered in 1846. Hypnotists experimented, testing to see if there were hypnotic effects associated with use of alcohol, ether, chloroform, scopolamine, and chlorpromazine. In the 1920s, Pavlov put dogs into a narcotic trance by injecting **barbiturate**. Again and again, doctors observed significant spontaneous hypnotic responses after barbiturate injection. The chemicals of choice for trance induction were eventually narrowed to two fast-acting barbiturates, oral or injected: Sodium Pentothal and Sodium Amytal (called "Evipan," in Europe). (I recently saw Trilene and Propofoy also recommended for this use.)

Barbiturates are a class of **hypnoid chemicals** (chemical trance inducers). They have been around since the 1930s, widely used both as surgical anesthetics and hypnotics. Operating personnel must be careful what they say because their patients are in deep trance and are highly suggestible!

In 1936, Horsley began using Sodium Pentothal as a narcohypnotic entryway to repressed thoughts and emotions. His procedure was a rapid psychoanalysis done with a narcohypnotized subject. His 1943 book on that technique, *Narco-Analysis*, became a standard text on barbiturate use in hypnotherapy. During World War II, American and English doctors used narcohypnosis to treat combat-traumatized veterans.[1]

Roy P. Grinker and John P. Spiegel published *War Neuroses in North Africa* in 1943, and *Special Report: Conference on Narcosis, Hypnosis, and War Neuroses*, in 1944.[2] Grinker and Spiegel published another book in 1945, *War Neuroses*. J.G. Watkins was an American who first researched hypnotic coercion as a military hypnotist. His 1949 book, *The Hypnotherapy of War Neuroses*, pioneered use of barbiturate drugging as a direct route to the unconscious in America.[3]

Police Use of Barbiturates—Police investigators at first called the barbiturates "truth serum." In the 1930s, they used them in interrogations or to elicit confessions. They gradually learned, however, that an operator could accidentally (or deliberately) suggest false guilt under those drugs because they enhanced suggestibility. Their popularity in police work then waned. Yet, as recently as 1979, B.L. Danto, who was both a doctor and a police officer, recommended "The Use of Brevital Sodium in Police Investigation" to overcome "unconscious resistance" and interrogate suspects. He argued that, whereas not everyone is susceptible to hypnotic induction, everybody is susceptible to Sodium Brevital.

Research on Narcohypnosis—During the Moscow show trials of 1937 and 1938, one by one, formerly strong, rational, and socially significant Communists (who had somehow gotten on Stalin's black list) humbly and publicly confessed to unlikely crimes. A European OSS agent, Allen Dulles, interviewed German chemical company executives after World War II. They believed the confessions were achieved by drug-hypnosis.

---

[1] The words **narcosynthesis**, **narcohypnosis**, and **narcoanalysis** all mean the same thing: Freudian analysis (or hypnotherapy) using drug induction and hypnotic training as the foundation of the therapy process.

[2] Both of those Grinker and Spiegel books were funded by the Josiah Macy, Jr. Foundation (OSS funds conduit) and "privately" distributed.

[3] I haven't read it. Estabrooks said the Watkins techniques "give us a picture of hypnotism that is weird and fascinating."

In 1942, Donovan formed a committee of psychiatrists and biochemists to investigate the drugs that might be used to extract data from an unwilling person. The Germans were also researching narcohypnotic technology. In 1944, the Gestapo in Hungary, aided by a Hungarian hypnotist named Volgyesi, used a drug-hypnosis combination to create a suggestible state, then interrogate and "prepare" people for trial.

In 1947, special military investigation teams carefully sifted through the records at Dachau where the German mind-control experiments had been conducted. The teams sent their findings, including descriptions of Nazi **narcohypnotic** experiments, back to the CIA. "None of the German mind-control research was ever made public." **(John Marks, 1979, pp. 4-5)**

After Dulles became head of the CIA, he created an elite team to research mindcontrol, including every aspect of every hypnoid drug. RAND Corporation did a series of research reports for the government in the 1950s on methods to force persons (the "enemy") to do things against their will. They concluded:

> *The drug technique would probably turn out to be the simplest and most efficient...and would be the most likely candidate for...hypnotizing defendants against their will.* **(RAND quoted in Bowart, pp. 70-71)**

The CIA studied the ability of barbiturates to quickly force deep trance on resistant subjects. They learned that a person could be first drugged, and then hypnotized. Or he could be first hypnotized, then drugged to push the trance even deeper. A 1950s Air Force report on the military uses of hypnosis pointed out that hypnotic drugs increased both induction speed and trance depth.

The Air Force tested whether narcohypnosis would increase the percentage of persons who could be made somnambulists. **(Bowart, p. 71)** Normally 10-20% of people, in a first induction, can be taken to somnambulistic (amnesic) depth of hypnosis. With a series of inductions and intensive hypnotic training, it rises to 75%. A RAND report said about 90% of the population would become somnambulists if trained under narcohypnosis. **(Bowart, p. 71)** Other experts have said narcohypnosis could train 95%. Lindner said "all."

Practitioners of narcohypnosis learned that injection works fastest. Oral doses take half an hour for full effect. Horsley compared oral and injected doses:

> *Any of the quick-acting barbiturates may be given by mouth, where they will produce a similar effect but of delayed and more gradual onset...*[the] *intravenous method possesses the considerable advantages of speed, accuracy of dose, and greater force of suggestibility. However...the oral administration of a rapidly acting barbiturate is a valuable aid to the induction of hypnosis.* **(Horsley, 1952, p. 149)**

The CIA, therefore, spent years studying covert ways to dose unsuspecting victims with Sodium Amytal or Sodium Pentothal. Barbiturate powder cannot be prepared in the necessary solution for injection (mixed with water) ahead of time. It is unstable when exposed to air. Even in solution, it deteriorates within half an hour. Therefore, the barbiturate solution to be injected must be mixed right before injection. So the CIA experimented with barbiturate-powder "mickeys" slipped into a drink, or delivered in aerosol sprays.

A CIA operation, targeting a Russian agent, involved both drugs and hypnosis. They were administered in a fake psychiatric-medical exam:

> *Afterward, the team reported to the CIA's Director that EXPLOSIVE had revealed "extremely valuable" information and that he had been made to forget his interrogation through a hypnotically induced amnesia.* **(John Marks, 1979, p. 42)**

It can be assumed that the CIA investigators also learned that barbiturate is rapidly destroyed by a normally functioning liver. So its effect soon wears off. It is highly addictive. It cannot be given to a nursing mother, for it enters the breast milk and may overdose the baby, suppressing its respiration. A nursing baby would have to be taken from the mother (weaned) before a series of narcohypnotic immersions for her could begin.

The optimal amounts of drug, and the best timing of doses, would also have become apparent. Candy's barbiturate conditioning was done using an intravenous-drip to control the flow and thereby her depth of trance. Intravenous-drip could, theoretically, hold her at that depth. An IV could work for Jensen, in his hidden office across the continent from everybody in Candy's life.

It would not be suitable for clandestine drugging in a situation where unexpected company might show up and see the intravenous line. A covert drugging with any risk of exposure would use oral or injected barbiturate.

If a dose large enough to result in unconsciousness (and maximally deep trance) is given by injection, suggestions can be spoken which will stick at any stage—while the subject is unconscious or in the groggy semiconscious state as the drug wears off. If the operator wants the subject to talk back, however, there is only one period in the drug's cycle in which that is possible. Immediately following injection of a large dose, the subject is unconscious.

As the subject's liver gradually throws off the narcohypnotic poison, his level of consciousness gradually rises. In the stage of complete unconsciousness, the subject doesn't speak, or doesn't speak clearly (mumbles). But as the drug wears off there is a stage during which the subject can speak clearly and answer questions. After a while, the subject is waking up from the trance. He is no longer deeply narcohypnotized.

Interrogators were frustrated by that small window of opportunity to get answers from a narcohypnotized subject. Then somebody thought of combining a barbiturate with a stimulant.

Barbiturate Plus Stimulant—Before World War II, psychiatrists noted the possibility of using barbiturate plus **stimulant**. Barbiturate stripped away consciousness and exposed the unconscious mind to manipulation, but the subject was very groggy. Before World War II, European police tried a dose of chemical stimulant to recover some alertness. They used

> *...strychnine or vitamin B6, or methyl-amphetamine as an antidote. This more complex procedure gives some control of the degree of relaxation.* **(Rolin, p. 36)**

After the war, Horsley mentioned the concept of a barbiturate-stimulant combination:

> *This process of conditioning by large doses of drugs, counteracted by Methedrine if the patient becomes too drowsy to think clearly, is mainly of theoretical interest, but its possibilities are sinister.* **(Horsley, 1952, p. 146)**

Government researchers, however, believed they had a mandate to think the unthinkable, and then to accomplish it. In February, 1951, the CIA ordered six "hyposprays" and inquired about the possibility of procuring a double-barreled hypospray that could fire both barrels at once. That order also included 300 ampules of Sodium Amytal, 100 of Caffeine Sodium-benzoate, and 100 of Caffeine Sodium. **(Scheflin and Opton)**

The ARTICHOKE program called the technique of barbiturate followed by stimulant the "A Treatment." They began with a large enough dose of a hypnoid drug to knock out the subject's conscious mind. The subject then lay there, unconscious and still. They gave a shot of stimulant. The conscious mind stayed off-line, but the stimulant roused the subject's unconscious enough to answer questions. "Described in CIA documents as 'the twilight zone,' this groggy condition was considered optimal for interrogation." **(Lee & Schlain, p. 7)**

Project CHATTER—In 1947, the Navy came aboard the mind-control effort with Project CHATTER. It was an offensive tactic research project seeking ways to extract information from persons against their will, but "without torture." CHATTER lasted until 1953. The program researched barbiturate-stimulant combinations. With drug induction alone, the subject had a tendency to just lie there unconscious, "sleeping," spoiling chances of interrogation.

In one CHATTER experiment, the subject was given an injection of Sodium Pentothal to induce a deep trance, then stimulated back to semiconsciousness by an injection of Benzedrine. The operator then regressed the subject to an earlier time and suggested that he was talking to his wife:

> *For roughly an hour, the subject seemed to have no idea he was not speaking with his wife but with CIA operatives trying to find out about his relationship with Soviet intelligence.* **(John Marks, 1979, p. 40)**

In 1953, CHATTER ended. It was officially declared to have failed to reach its goal.

Barbiturate Forces Induction?

During WWII, the prestigious Menninger Clinic did much defense-oriented hypnosis research. Afterwards, however, it reported a new series of experiments, supposedly proving that Sodium Pentothal was useless to overcome the resistance of reluctant hypnotic subjects.

Since that drug is devastatingly effective at overcoming resistance, the Menninger experiments were obviously phony. Perhaps the report was intended to nudge the private sector away from use of narcohypnosis and create public and professional ignorance about this technology. Indeed, in the years since then, this has largely taken place.

Back in the Real World—Medical recognition of forced induction and forced depth maintenance by means of narcohypnosis, however, goes back at least to Schilder and Kauders, two Austrian psychiatrists of the Freudian era.

---

1. See Section V for the discussion on M.H. Erickson's equally phony experiments.

The clinical textbook they wrote mentioned:

> *...the most effective means to induce deep hypnosis in persons who are otherwise refractory, namely, the use of narcotics and sedatives.* **(Schilder & Kauders, pp. 34-35)**

L. R. Wolberg did narcohypnosis during World War II when young men with nervous breakdowns were available by the thousands, and quick cures were badly wanted by their superior officers. He later wrote that "supplementary hypnotic drugs" solved the problem of "definite resistances to trance depth...which cannot be overcome by ordinary training procedures..." **(Wolberg, *Hypnoanalysis*, p. 50)** Horsley wrote that

> *...in resistant patients it is sometimes useful to give a full narcotic dose and to induce hypnosis during the stage of confusion while the subject is still half-asleep.* **(Horsley, in LeCron, *Experimental Hypnosis*, p. 146)**

In 1949, Melvin Powers published instructions for both oral and injected barbituate use under his chapter heading "How to Hypnotize Refractory Subjects":

> *Under normal circumstances, a person can not be hypnotized against his will by the power of suggestion. However, we can hypnotize a person by using drugs. (p. 24)...The technique is not involved, and skill can be easily acquired...Sodium amytal and sodium pentothal are the most commonly used.* **(Powers, *Hypnotism Revealed*, p. 52)**

Narcoanalyst Lindner began with a drug induction, did hypnotic training of the narcohypnotized subject, then did a Freudian analysis under drug-hypnosis. He said that "With [narco-] hypnoanalysis it is as if surgical removal of such barriers and hazards (resistances and natural reluctances) has been accomplished." He called narcohypnosis "a means to the dissolution of the resistance noramlly present when treatment begins..." **(Lindner, *Rebel Without a Cause*, p. 19)**

Marcuse's authoritative and popular book on hypnosis (in print from 1959 to 1976) advised,

> *If the patient has tremors or agitation which make it difficult for him to relax or if the patient actively resists verbal induction, then both hypnosis and drugs are required.* **(Marcuse, *Hypnosis*, pp. 131-2)**

A medical doctor who wrote directions for preparing and administering barbituate in a psychiatric textbook stated:

> *The use of intravenous barbiturates...is more certain and requires less time than does hypnosis. It does not, moreover, involve the emotional dependence* [trust?] *often prerequisite to successful hypnosis...***(Kolb, *Modern Clinical Psychiatry*, 1982)**

T.O. Burgess (1956), an American doctor, also recommended narcohypnotic inductions for the "resistant or refractory patient":

> *Refractory cases or unresponsive subjects can be made more receptive by light oral dosage of Sodium Amytal administered about half an hour before trance induction.* **(Burgess in LeCron, *Experimental Hypnosis*, p. 343)**

The infamous medical ghoul, Dr. Ewan Cameron, also recommended barbiturate induction

> *...especially with apprehensive patients. This consists in the administration of a disinhibiting drug. Our preference is for intravenous sodium amytal. The use of this preparation allows one to maintain careful control over the state of the patient from minute to minute. If too little is given, then nothing is gained; if too much, then it becomes almost impossible to maintain the patient's attention at the level necessary for hypnosis...a well-developed hypnosis can be achieved by this means...Its main use is gradually to accustom the patient to the procedure of being hypnotized, so that ultimately he can be hypnotized without the use of such disinhibiting drugs.* **(Cameron, *General Psychotherapy*, 1950, pp. 222-223)**

A Summary of Mind-control Uses of Barbiturate

1) **Amnesia**—Deep narcohypnosis immediately and severely interferes with normal memory-forming capacity. The unconscious mind retains trance-period events in its memory, but the dissociated conscious mind may not be alert and focused enough to form memory links with that data. So the subject has difficulty remembering what happened.

2) **Immobilization**—A large dose of barbiturate makes the subject unconscious and thus physically immobilizes him. In smaller doses, it weakens and discoordinates the subject and makes it hard, or impossible, to think, run, or plan an escape. This provides time for an operator to implant long-term control conditioning.

3) **Forced Trance Induction**—A subject cannot resist trance induction once the barbiturate enters his bloodstream. He cannot wake himself up after the induction (as may be possible in nonnarcotic trance), even if he finds the situation objectionable.

4) **Opportunity to Carry Out Hypnosis Training**—The drug speedily (oral) or instantly (injected) strips away consciousness and conscious control. It lowers consciousness and holds it down. During that period it eliminates the subject's power of will because his unconscious is exposed to a hypnotist's manipulations with no protective filtering, analyzing, and discriminating conscious layer. A drugged subject, if given no suggestions, is narcotized, but not hypnotized. He simply sleeps it off. He shows no signs of hypnosis except extreme, uncritical, suggestibility to speech heard while sleeping.

Hypnotic training is a standardized set of suggestions regarding a posthypnotic induction cue, etc. Hypnotic training can be done under regular hypnosis—or it can be done to a narcohypnotized person. Posthypnotic suggestions used to train a narcohypnotized subject are likely to include instructions to a) maintain trance at the deep level of the drug trance even after the drug has worn off; b) return to consciousness only when cued to do so by the hypnotist, rather than rising in consciousness naturally and gradually as the drug wears off; c) a re-induction cue to re-enter that same deep-level trance state any time a designated (non-drug) entry cue is perceived.

5) **Speed of Induction**—Horsley wrote that

> *...the main advantage of narcotic hypnosis over verbally induced hypnosis is the speed...Most normal persons respond only gradually to verbally induced hypnosis, and, as a general rule, only a light degree of hypnosis is induced during the first session. In most normal persons the depth of hypnosis can be increased at subsequent sessions, but many hours of hard work are required to produce complete amnesia and somnambulism. Once this has been achieved, however, any normal person can be rehypnotized quickly and easily. The value of narcosis is, then, that it practically eliminates the necessity for hours of preliminary sessions of instruction in how to be hypnotized. And, after a single session of narcotic hypnosis, posthypnotic suggestion is effective for the subsequent induction of hypnosis by verbal methods alone.* **(Horsley, 1952, pp. 148-9)**

6) **Depth-Conditioning**—Drug induction can condition a subject for future hypnotizability and for increased trance depth. The more times that a person is hypnotized, the more easily that person can be hypnotized. The deeper a subject is pushed in one trance, the deeper that subject tends to go next time.

> *The rule that a deep hypnosis, once accomplished, will facilitate all subsequent hypnoses, applies also in this instance* [narcohypnotic induction]. **(Schilder and Kauders, pp. 34-35)**

M.H. Erickson said that narcohypnosis made it possible for most subjects to be developed to a somnambulistic (amnesic) depth. ("Hypnosis in Medicine," p. 643) Lindner said hypnotic drugs vastly increased the percentage of persons who could be trained to be somnambulists. He believed that anybody, by using drugs, could be turned into an amnesic, induction-conditioned hypnotic subject.

7) **Rapport**—The deeper the subject descends into a state of hypnosis (drug-induced or otherwise), the more the subject acquires the childlike characteristic attitude of exaggerated respect (awe) and unconscious obedience toward the hypnotist called ***rapport***. Even drug-forced hypnosis causes that intense bonding, even under the cruelest circumstances.

8) **Suggestibility—**Drugging maximizes trance depth. Greater depth increases the strength of suggestions. Hypnoprogramming can thus be efficiently implanted. A Swiss expert on unethical hypnosis noted the dark possibilities of extremely deep trance:

> *In the first stages of hypnosis the subject can preserve his personal independence; he will not carry out any action in this state of mind which runs counter to his moral or ethical beliefs. This can change to an appreciable degree as soon as the hypnosis reaches a certain depth...the subject's capacity for judgment is more or less excluded. In this state of consciousness the subject is almost wholly exposed to the suggestions which the hypnotist gives to him. The danger that criminal*

> *advantage can be taken of hypnosis brought to such a depth has rightly been pointed out.* **(Hammerschlag, *Hypnotism and Crime*, pp. 29-30)**

Christenson, a military research hypnotist, wrote:

> *In narcosynthesis the subject cannot readily inhibit expression of thoughts or behaviors which are suggested by the administrant, so that the subject is no longer a 'free agent' and the question of coercion is a legitimate issue.* **("Dynamics in Hypnotic Induction," in LeCron, ed, *Experimental Hypnosis*, p. 49)**

9) Addiction—The shift to lowered consciousness, whether from a drug or non-drug cause, is addictive. Induction is a "rush," a moment of pleasurable and extreme brain excitation. Rushes are addictive. "...apart from the specific suggestions by the hypnotist of well-being, it [hypnosis] commonly causes euphoria and even elation." **(Horsley, p. 148)** The euphoria is caused by chemical messengers settling into receptors in neurons of the brain's bliss center. Brain chemistry makes people long to reexperience a remembered intense (lowered consciousness) experience such as childhood, falling in love, etc.

Repeated barbiturate induction soon creates an humbling, enticing addiction. It takes very few times. Barbara Noel believed that her psychiatrist deliberately addicted her to barbiturate to reinforce his control. He would make her beg for the injection, then finally give it to her. (Chemical addiction can be converted by suggestion into unconscious craving for induction—even by a non-drug, cued method.)

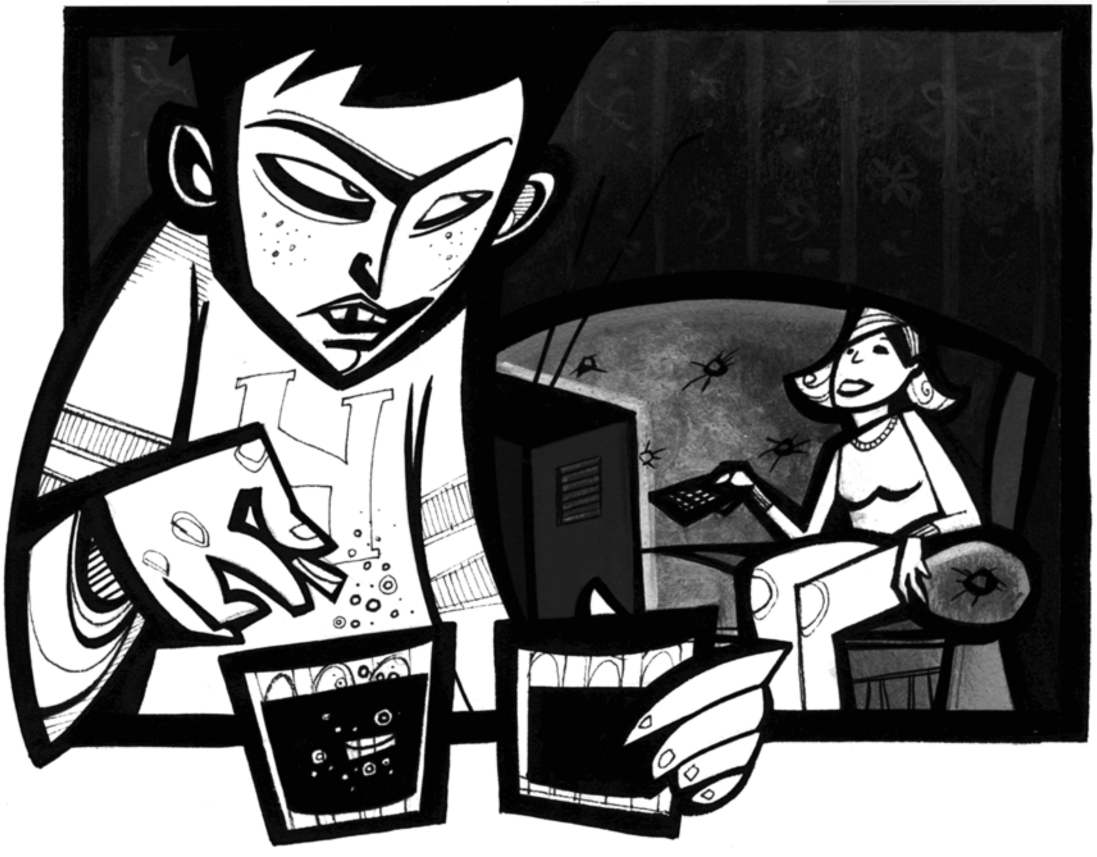

Rohypnol

Narcohypnosis is a century old. It is also the latest thing. During three weeks, in July 1995, 101,000 tablets of Rohypnol, the "date rape drug," came into the U.S. at Laredo, Texas. Hoffmann-La Roche manufactures it in Mexico and also in South America, Europe, and Asia. Its U.S. street name is "roofies" or the "forget pill." Ten times stronger than Valium, lasting up to eight hours, Rohypnol is a narcohypnotic that can be slipped into a beverage. As with the old barbiturates, a slight overdose can depress respiration and cause death.

Electroshock

[The shock voltage is]...*about equivalent to that consumed* [by]...*a 100-watt light bulb. This much power applied continuously would soon be lethal, but the shock timer is usually set between one-half and one second, long enough to set off a grand mal epileptic convulsion, but not long enough to kill.*

Scheflin and Opton, p. 365

Electroshock has three effects which are of interest to mindcontrollers:

- Increased suggestibility
- Amnesia, even retroactive amnesia
- Calming

Here is a detailed look at each of those three uses.

Shock to Increase Suggestibility

Shock is inductive. It literally can send a person into trance (a state of relaxed "sleep"). Induction by mild shocking is called **electronarcosis**.[1] More intense shocking will also cause convulsion. Electroshock is also known as **ECT** (**electroconvulsive therapy**), or **ECS** (**electroconvulsive shock**).

The treatment jolts 70 to 140 volts of electricity through the subject's brain. That's enough to cause convulsions as long as the shocking continues. Dr. Ugo Cerletti, the Italian psychiatrist who demonstrated the first experimental human convulsion was fascinated:

> *We observed...the onset of the classic epileptic convulsion. We were all breathless during the tonic* [muscular contraction] *phase of the attack, and really overwhelmed during the apnea* [failure to breathe] *as we watched the cadaverous cyanosis of the patient's face; the apnea of the spontaneous epileptic convulsion is always impressive, but at that moment it seemed to all of us painfully endless. Finally, with the first stertorous breathing and the first clonic* [alternating contractions and relaxations] *spasm, the blood flowed better...we observed...the characteristic gradual awaking of the patient "by steps." He rose to sitting position and looked at us...We asked: "What happened to you?" He answered: "I don't know. Maybe I was asleep."*
> **(Cerletti quoted in Marti-Ibanez, et al, pp. 91-120)**

A nonprofessional also wrote a clear description of an ECT convulsion:

> *The nurse at the patient's head took up two pencil-like electrodes with flat, flanged bases and smeared contact jelly on them; she and Dr. Rosen then pressed the electrodes against Mary's temples. Dr. Rosen set the dials quickly and pushed the button. At once, Mary grunted deeply, and her head jerked back...Her eyes were clenched shut, and her face was drawn into a tight, distorted mask. Her legs rose stiffly in the air, the toes and arches of her feet curled under, and her whole body now began spasmodically thrashing about. All three nurses kept hold of her, "riding," as Dr. Rosen said, with her motions to prevent self-damage. As far as I could tell, she stopped breathing. At last, after forty-five seconds...the convulsion subsided, a long gargling sound came from her throat, and as she sank down, her breathing began again.* **(Morton Hunt, *Mental Hospital*, p. 32)**

CIA Researches Using Shock to Increase Suggestibility—In 1949, S. M. Korson reported "The Successful Treatment of an Obsessive-Compulsive Neurosis with Narcosynthesis Followed by Daily Electroshocks" in the *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*. Under a series of narcohypnotic inductions, Korson had developed the subject's hypnotic obedience. He then gave a series of electroshocks to cause retroactive amnesia which would prevent loss of conditioning. An obsessive-compulsive is the hardest kind of personality to hypnotize, the hardest to brainwash, the hardest to change. Any method that worked on that type patient would work on anybody. The CIA probably followed Korson's work with interest.

---

[1] A Hungarian psychiatrist, Volgyesi, used a mild electric shock to induce "passivity" (trance) in the 1930s. He then deepened, formalized the trance, and treated the subject with verbal suggestions.

Dr. Irving Janis of the RAND Corporation delivered a study to the CIA, in 1949, which surveyed the research done on ECT to date. He said it caused "a temporary intellectual impairment, diffuse amnesia, and general 'weakening of the ego'" This effect of being made extra suggestible, extra hypnotizable, extra persuadable continues "during the period when a series of electroshock convulsions is being administered." **(Janis quoted in Bowart, p. 251)** Janis recommended that the CIA should research ECT's potential for mind control.

They did. The 1950 BLUEBIRD goals include research into the mind-control uses of electroshock. In a 1951 CIA memo, Morse Allen, head of the behavior-control research program,

> *...asked if the psychiatrist had ever taken advantage of the "groggy" period that followed normal electroshock to gain hypnotic control of his patients. No, replied the psychiatrist, but he would try it in the near future and report back to the Agency.* **(J. Marks, 1979, pp. 25-6)**

During the Korean Conflict, Dulles

> *...discovered, talking to psychiatrists in Scientific Intelligence, that electroshock treatments not only produced amnesia in patients for nonspecific periods, but when their memories started to return...at that stage it would have been possible for the Chinese and North Korean doctors to implant anti-American values.* **(Thomas, pp. 97-8)**

An agency report speculated:

> *Conceivably, electroshock convulsions might be used as an adjunctive device to achieve somnambulism in a very high percentage of the cases. ..From my own and others' investigations of the psychological effects of such treatments, I would suspect that they might tend to reduce resistance to hypnotic suggestions. It is conceivable, therefore, that electroshock treatments might be used to weaken difficult cases in order to produce a hypnotic trance of great depth.* **(*CIA memo* quoted in Bowart, p. 72)**

A brainwashing specialist later summed it up:

> *The short-time memory losses and the confusion produced by the treatment may actually create a state of mind that makes it easier to become free of those ideational fixations that interfere with the restructuring of attitudes.* **(Valenstein, p. 161)**

Tien Shocks Bad Wife into Good Wife

In Detroit, Michigan, in the early 1970s, "Laura" and her husband, Tom, "bickered constantly." Laura wanted a divorce and custody of her three-year-old (hyperactive) son. A relative told the couple that Dr. Tien could save their failing marriage. Tom talked Laura into seeing Dr. Tien in one last try to save the marriage.

Dr. Tien diagnosed Laura as a "depressed, disturbed, emotionally unstable woman." Laura agreed to become a changed woman by the electroshock method (which Tien called "psychosynthesis"). It worked. As Laura sucked on a baby bottle filled with chocolate milk during the suggestible period as she was coming to after her electro-jolt and the convulsion it caused, Tien talked her into a new set of beliefs. He gave her a new name, "Susan," implanted a new self-definition, "good," not "bad," and provided her a fresh start on her married life.

Laura legally changed her name to Susan (Tien's patients often did that). In a later check-in, Laura and Tom reported their marriage now worked well. Tien said Susan had become "a more stable, mature individual than Laura ever was." Most of Tien's patients, including Susan, were grateful for their cure, according to reporter Dolores Katz in the *Detroit Free Press* (Feb. 11, 1973). Tien's method obviously derived from Cameron's theory of "blanking" followed by building a new personality.

Tien was profitably mass producing those "new personalities, new lives" using electro-induction and giving suggestions in the hypnotic period following the shock. He shocked hundreds of patients into new personalities—about twelve treatments a day. Tien's system was a kinder, gentler version of Dr. Ewen Cameron's shock system.

> *...the most controversial of his treatment methods is the wholesale use of electroconvulsive therapy, known to the layman as shock treatment. This is designed to 'erase' undesirable elements of an individual's personality so he can be 'reprogrammed' to function in a more desirable manner...* **(Katz)**

Not everybody was enthused. St. Lawrence Hospital had to hire special staff members to work with Tien because regular staff refused.

Susan and his other shock-list patients received a series of around twenty treatments at the hospital on an outpatient basis, three times a week. In her periods of post-shock susceptibility, she learned to fear and loathe and hide her "bad" past.

> *Tien and a nurse...place the electrodes that connect Laura to the shock treatment machine... The patient, Laura, talks of her childhood experiences while the electrodes are fitted to her head.* **(Ibid.)**

Dr. Tien had Laura talk of running away and getting her longed-for divorce at the moment he shocked her. That is the circuit he wanted to burn out. Right before the zap, Tien asked Laura a question about her childhood:

> *LAURA: ...I can't remember.*
>
> *TIEN: No? You mean the bad times were so bad you got all*

mixed up? So now you want your husband to divorce you and take your son away?

LAURA: No. You're mixing me up.[1] *I never wanted that. I want the divorce and I want my son with me.*

TIEN: Yes, it is all mixed up, isn't it? Do you remember running away? Just like your father ran away? Just like your mother ran away, leaving you with your grandmother? Remember running away from the orphanage? Remember running away from the foster home? Is it all coming back? You are so desperate sometimes and you feel so depressed, Laura. You can't put up with this any more. And now you want to run away from Tom. **(Ibid.)**

At that moment, the nurse slipped a rubber mouthpiece into Laura's mouth and the doctor hit the switch. Tien "deliberatily stimulates unpleasant memories immediately prior to the shock treatment so they can be erased."[2]

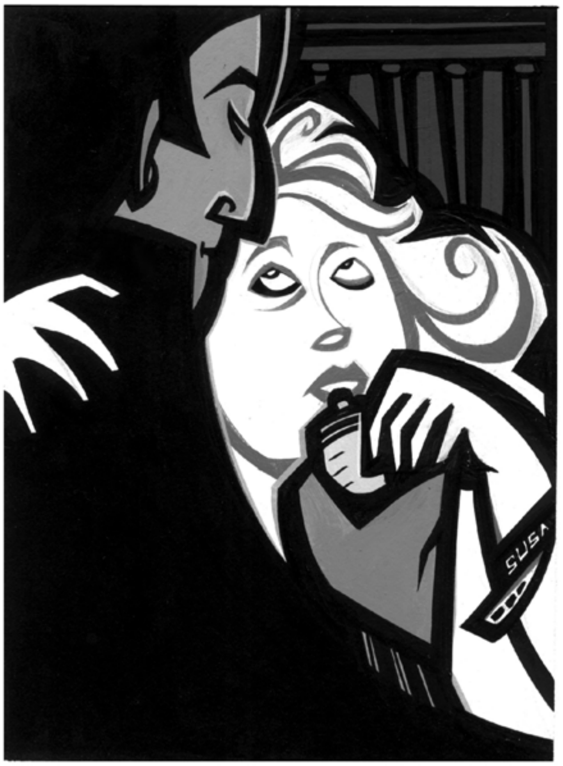

Laura's body briefly convulsed. A nurse wheeled the unconscious woman on a gurney into the next room where her husband Tom was waiting. When Laura started to wake up, Dr. Tien came in.

TIEN: Susan, your husband is here.

(Laura/Susan opens her eyes and looks submissivily at Tom, who cuddles her in his arms and attempts to feed her from the baby bottle.)

TOM: Come on, Susan, drink your milk.

Susan (childishly): I don' wan' it.

TOM: It's good for you. You're a good girl, aren't you?

(Susan begins to drink from the bottle...) **(Ibid.)**

The nurse had handed Tom a baby bottle filled with chocolate milk. (Tien said adults liked chocolate milk better than plain in their bottle. He said the cuddling by husband or parent while giving the bottle "makes the individual receptive to new ideas.")[3]

As Susan sucked on the bottle, Dr. Tien commenced the reprogramming:

TIEN: Have you ever been a bad girl, Susan?

SUSAN: Yeah. Sure.

TOM: No. Susan has never been bad.

TIEN: Right, Tom. It's Laura who was bad, not Susan.

*TOM: Susan's a good girl...***(Ibid.)**

Tien repeated that one over and over: "...the psychiatrist's voice croons, 'Susan is a good girl. She's never been bad, like Laura. Susan loves her husband. She's a good girl, Susan is.'" Then Tien moved on to specifics:

"Tell me, Susan, did your grandmother ever make you get in a doghouse?

"W-h-a?" Susan mumbled.

"No," Dr. Tien categorically stated. "Susan's grandmother never did that. Laura's grandmother did it. You're a new person now. Have you ever been in an orphanage?" **(Ibid.)**

Susan catches on. "No, never," she says. Laura's real childhood with all its traumas, like her root self with all its rebelliousness, is being split away from her in this semi-conscious state. "Susan" is learning repression and denial, how to lie-even to herself-about her true past. That solves the problem. She was BAD but now she's GOOD.

"Susan is a good girl...Susan loves her husband," Tien urged again. Tien stressed to his patients that they were getting "new," "good" personalities to replace "old," "bad" ones. "Susan" had wanted to leave her husband: bad girl. Now she will stay with him: good girl, and grateful for her cure.

After the treatment, Laura switched to calling herself Susan all the time.

ECT for the purpose of solving marital problems has not always ended happily. Dr. Cameron's patient named Lauren, in a similar situation, also agreed to take the ECT character cure. Her husband said she came out of her month of shockings a much better. Lauren, however, believed the shockings did not improve her. Two years later she decided her misery was definitely caused by her husband. She divorced him and declares she's been happy ever since.

---

[1] Confusion is also inductive and increases suggestibility.

[2] "ECT Timed with Disturbing Thoughts," *Clinical Psychiatry News*, Dec. 1975, p. 2, is a related article.

[3] In a 1951 article, the authors reported feeding shock patients using *"a standard nursing bottle with nipple...she began to suck and was able to swallow the milk slowly but completely. To our further surprise, it was found that the other patients being [ECS] treated at this time also readily fed from nursing bottles...a return to an early, infantile mode of activity..."*

Shock to Cause Retroactive Amnesia

The second mind-control use of electroshock is to erase the subject's memory for what happened during the shock series, or in the weeks immediately before it. A little shock, as from a prod, will not accomplish this. A big shock from a big shocker, called "electroconvulsive treatment," causes convulsions and memory loss. The memory loss from any series of shocks which are strong enough to cause convulsion can be retroactive. The current may be sent through both hemispheres of the brain using electrodes attached to the temples, or through only one hemisphere (right).

CIA Research on Using Shock to Cause Amnesia—In 1951, a famous psychiatrist, who was "a cleared Agency consultant," told Morse Allen that electroshocking could cause amnesia. He added that, in "the stupor following shock treatments," subjects were likely to be very loose-lipped about information. Allen was interested.

> *The psychiatrist also mentioned that...these treatments could not be detected unless the subject was given EEG tests within two weeks...Allen noted that portable battery-driven electroshock machines had come on the market...the Office of Scientific Intelligence recommended that this same psychiatrist be given $100,000 in research funds "to develop electric shock and hypnotic techniques.* **(J. Marks, 1979, pp. 25-26)**

A severe series of electroconvulsive shocks will cause **retrograde amnesia**: an inability to remember not only the time of shocking, but also a period of time preceding the shocking.

> *There are clear memory losses for the events immediately surrounding the convulsions and with a prolonged treatment series the memory loss commonly extends further and further back in time... Most of the memories return within days or weeks, but some memory gaps persist for six months or longer and there may be permanent loss of recall of events that took place during the period of the treatment.* **(Valenstein, p. 159)**

Dr. Ewen Cameron researched ECT extensively on his own, and for the CIA. (He hoped for a Nobel prize. The man who invented the lobotomy had received one.) He tried to **depattern** (**blank**) patients' minds by electroshocking. (Then he tried to program in new personalities by forcing the subject to listen to repeated suggestions played on an endless-loop tape—**psychic driving**—in a normal state or under hypnosis.)

Cameron wanted the subjects amnesic for the blanking and reprogramming. His research had shown that if "schizophrenics" remember their "symptoms," those symptoms will return. If hypnoprogrammed persons remember being conditioned, they will fight it. So both he and the CIA wanted a method that would cause permanent, leak-proof, amnesia.

Electroshock's ability to effectively erase memory of the time just before the shock greatly interested the CIA. Maybe somebody could be ordered to do something, then shocked and made to forget what they had done. Maybe an unwilling candidate could be narcohypnotized, hypnoprogrammed, and then shocked into retrograde amnesia—made unable to remember that they had been hypnoconditioned. The CIA hired researchers to find out what kinds of shocks best guarantee permanent loss of memory. Cameron received a grant.

Three Stages of ECT Amnesia

Dr. Cameron observed that his typical depatterning patient moved through three distinct amnesia stages. He named them the First, Second, and Third Electroshock Amnesia Stages **(Cameron, "*Production of Differential Amnesia as a Factor in the Treatment of Schizophrenia*," 1960, pp. 26-33)**.

First Stage—In the First Stage of electroshock amnesia, the subject loses much of her recent memory, "yet she still knew where she was, why she was there, and who the people were who treated her." **(J. Marks, p. 135)**. That is called keeping your "space-time image." The subject knows where she is, why she is there, and recognizes familiar faces. Names are harder.

Second Stage—In the Second Electroshock Amnesia Stage, the subject loses that space-time image and is aware of the loss. That awareness causes extreme anxiety. The subject wants to remember. At this stage the subject asks repeatedly, 'Where am I?', 'How did I get here?', 'What am I here for?'...

Third Stage—In this final stage, the subject becomes bizarrely calm. All the previous anxiety is gone. Cameron said this stage was:

> *...an extremely interesting constriction of the range of recollections which one ordinarily brings in to modify and enrich one's statements. Hence, what the patient talks about are only his sensations of the moment, and he talks about them almost exclusively in highly concrete terms. His remarks are entirely uninfluenced by previous recollections—nor are they governed in any way*

> *by his forward anticipations. He lives in the immediate present.* **(Cameron, "*Production of Differential Amnesia*")**

Regressive Shock

Cameron developed the policy of giving a **regressive** amount of ECT as the means to create an unbreachable amnesia. Regressive ECT is caused by so much shocking that the subject temporarily becomes infantile in behavior. Both regular and regressive ECT affect memory, but regressive ECT affects memory the most. Regressive ECT is caused by shocks given more frequently—as much as several times a day, or even several times an hour, or even several shocks given in rapid-fire sequence—sometimes at a stronger voltage than usual. The series of close, strong shocks is continued until regression occurred, defined as the point when the patient lost bladder control:

> *They were dazed, out of contact, and for the most part, helpless. All showed incontinence of urine, and incontinence of feces was not uncommon. Most of them were underactive and did not talk spontaneously...They appeared prostrated and apathetic. At the time most of them whined, whimpered and cried readily...They could usually be made to walk if led and supported, but their movements were slow, uncertain and clumsy...They could not dress themselves and none...could complete the task of extracting a match from a matchbox and lighting the match.* **(Rothschild, p. 148)**

Post-Shock Recovery—Scheflin and Opton compared the recovery of patients from ECT treatments to people who are very gradually

> *...coming out of a dead-drunken state, progressing back toward sobriety through the stages of blotto, soused, sodden, plain drunk and merely high...At first the patients do not know who they are, where they are, or what has happened to them...Gradually the world comes back into focus.* **(Scheflin & Opton, p. 366)**

It took seven to ten days free of shocks for the subjects to come out of their torpor. They came out of it missing time. They also underperformed mentally, only gradually recovering over the next five years. **(J. Marks, p. 107)** Over time, the subject's amnesia gradually receded. However, in cases where a regressive amount of shocking had been given, Cameron wrote, "it is rare to find that any memories of the period of hospital treatment are brought back."

I once met a woman whose mother had briefly been hospitalized in the Deep South for a nervous breakdown. While in the hospital, this patient had been assaulted and raped by a black man, and had become pregnant as a result. The hospital forced her to endure an abortion, then electroshocked her into a condition of complete amnesia for what had happened, thus also erasing a source of potential liability.

In later years, the woman often complained to her daughter that, "There are patches in my memory that I just can't remember." It bothered her a lot, but she never overcame the amnesia. Her husband and pastor knew the truth about what had happened. It was from them that the daughter finally learned the full story, after her mother's death.

Shock to Cause "Calm"

An electroconvulsive shock series that reaches Cameron's Phase Three results in a temporarily emotionless, "calm," subject. Shocking has been, and still is, a treatment for depressed patients and for unmanageable ones because of this post-shock characteristic of being subdued and obedient. An English psychiatrist wrote, in 1947: "The quiet cooperation of the [electroshocked] patient will be appreciated by the nursing staff." **(Thorpe, pp. 89-92)** To manage "a patient in a state of wild excitement" he recommended

> *..."intensive therapy"...that which commences with several shocks daily until the excited state is suppressed, and by this method the most maniacal patient can be rapidly and dramatically brought under control.* **(Ibid.)**

Anybody who is wildly and dramatically protesting the injustice of what is being done to him can also be brought under control. Because of the retroactive amnesia, he may then forget what the fuss was all about.

In 1993, I met a young woman who works as a nurse's aid in a downtown Seattle hospital which has a big mental ward. I mentioned that my college psychology professor had just told us that shock therapy was now outdated and seldom used.

The nurse's aid looked astonished. She said, "They use it lots." A few days later, I heard on the radio that electroshock is the single most common treatment for hospitalized mental patients.

The History of Deliberate Personality Splitting

History of
Research on
Artificial
Neurosis

☑

Focus Shifts to
Child, Real or
Suggested

Truth, crushed to earth, will rise again.
-William Cullen Bryant, "*The Battlefield*"

George Estabrooks proposed, over and over, that superspies with **one-way amnesia** should be created by **deliberate personality splitting**. An absolutely dependable, unbreakable amnesia for all events under hypnosis is the most essential single element to create an unknowing, authority-controlled hypnotic subject. A split personality is a very hard form of amnesia to overcome.

Is artificial personality splitting possible? A college psychology text declares: "Multiple personality is a rare event and there are no experimental means for producing it." **(Coon, p. 38)** That statement, however, is FALSE. The artificial creation of multiple personality was discussed for years in the psychological literature, and experiments were done—successfully.

> *We know a great deal about multiple personality... and can now produce the condition on demand through hypnosis.* **(M.E.Wright in Estabrooks, ed., *Hypnosis: Current Problems*, p. 234)**

The "Dual I"

In the 1800s, the **hysterical disorders** (dissociation, amnesia, conversion reaction, and multiple personality, all symptoms of excessive repression) were becoming understood. Scholars observed that hypnosis sometimes resulted in the spontaneous appearance of another personality. And they noticed that the dissociation caused by hypnotism could result in an amnesia similar to the amnesia of a multiple personality.

The first person who deliberately tried to split a personality was a French doctor named Azam. In 1858, he tried "to bring about the phenomena of the dual 'I' artificially, by means of hypnosis." **(Hammerschlag, p. 14)** The study of hypnotic dissociation and case descriptions of dual and multiple personalities were now underway. Hypnotists and psychiatrists (often the same persons), learned that dual, or multiple, personality could be cured by hypnotism—and caused by hypnotism.

Max Dessoir, around 1890, declared that everybody's mind contained the potential of a second personality which could be hypnotically stimulated into such strength that it would put the original personality at risk. Pierre Janet described a theory of **dissociation** in 1889:

> *Things happen as if an idea, a partial system of thoughts, emancipated itself, became independent and developed itself on its own account. The result is, on the one hand, that it develops far too much, and, on the other hand, that consciousness appears no longer to control it.* **(Janet, *The Major Symptoms of Hysteria*, p. 42).**

Dissociation was Janet's explanation for hypnotic amnesia, split personalities, etc. He believed that a split personality was caused by the "overdevelopment" of a dissociated subsystem which, if large enough, could become a rival for selfhood.

In 1945, Dr. Wolberg wrote about creating "dual personality" in his psychiatric patients:

> *...dual personality may be created by a relatively simple technic...The patient is told while in deep hypnosis that the* [designated] *part of him...is another individual of whom he is unaware. This new personality, however, knows all about him. A name may be given to this alter ego, and it may then begin to function as a distinct entity, with wishes and attitudes of its own...With proper suggestions the analyst can take the second personality into his confidence as an ally...* **(*Hypnoanalysis*, p. 280)**

Speaking of the case history of Mrs. E., Dr. Reiter wrote: "Bit by bit he [Bergen] had built up a secondary personality within her, which it was extremely difficult to bring to light." In analyzing Palle Hardwick's case, the doctor referred again and again to

> *...the artificially produced splitting of H's personality...***(p. 7)***...the prompt and automatic carrying out of the given suggestions and the subsequent loss of memory about what passed under the hypnosis, in other words a complete and artificial splitting into two separate personalities.* **(Reiter, p. 65)**

How did the hypno-exploiters, Bergen and Nielsen, split the personalities of Mrs. E. and Palle? Dr. Reiter said it took two things to make a personality split: **automatic obedience** and **complete amnesia**. Automatic obedience makes the artificial shifting from one personality to another happen, on cue from the hypnotist. Complete amnesia keeps the subject ignorant of that shift. Then he does not try to fix it. A healthy person has been given a mental disease (split personality) and made to function like a sick one.

In 1968, H. D. Birns published a book on hypnosis that described personality splitting:

> *The starting place to deliberately create a manageable multiple personality is, of course, with a normal person who has a self-controlled conscious and a self-controlled unconscious. The next step is to displace the conscious will, substituting the will of the hypnotist. That goal would require achieving a very deep state of hypnosis with the subject...*
>
> *The techniques, and modifications of techniques, used in hypnosis may be numerous, but their purpose is the same: to enable the hypnotist to unseat the conscious mind from its accustomed place of authority so that he can take over control of the body.* **(p. 29)** *...a hypnotist who has complete control of a subject is like a driver operating an automobile. And while the likeness is true, it's not really quite accurate because it doesn't do justice to the awesome powers that the hypnotist possesses.* **(Birns, p. 39)**

Birns said that the last step was to "...create a split in the subject's unconscious that identifies with and acts in the place of the hypnotist—like the internalized parental figure in a normal subconscious."

Dr. William Sargant, a British brainwashing expert, wrote about Pavlov's technique for giving dogs nervous breakdowns:

> *Hypnoid, paradoxical and ultraparadoxical states of brain activity can also cause a splitting of the stream of consciousness, so that certain thoughts, memories, or patterns of behavior implanted in the brain somehow become isolated and totally divorced from the main stream of consciousness, memory and behavior* **(pp. 12-13)***...In the hypnoid phase of brain activity, the mind may also become split. Pavlov showed with his dogs how one small special area of cortical brain activity could be so specially excited that it resulted in reflex inhibition of much of the rest of the ordinary cortical activity.* **(Sargant, 1974, p. 34)**

Sargant also wrote about research on human mind-splitting using verbal midbrain implants developed while the subject was hypnotized:

> *Pavlov thought that the alterations were sited in the cortex, but we now know that the process could easily be initiated by alterations in the other part of the brain, for example, the reticular area of the midbrain.* **(Ibid.)**

CIA Researches Subconscious Isolation

The CIA also researched artificial personality splitting. In private memos, they called an artificially-created, new personality a **subconscious isolate**. The CIA goal was to create a split so deep, so wide, so complex, that reunification (and, therefore, conscious remembering) would be impossible. They sought permanent changes. They wanted to bury their secrets in a subconscious isolate that could never escape and tell.

The CIA called the process of creating an unknowing hypnotic subject the "application of SI." One goal-setting memo asked: "Can we obtain control of the future activities (physical and mental) of any individual, willing or unwilling, by application of SI and H techniques?" (It can be assumed that SI stood for "subconscious isolation" and H meant "hypnotic.")

A November 9, 1950, BLUEBIRD PROJECT memo repeated that SI goal:

> *...it is recommended that BLUEBIRD conduct experiments and develop techniques to determine the possibilities and the practicability of positive use of SI on willing and unwilling subjects for operational purposes. Positive use of SI would be for the purpose of operational control of individuals to perform specific tasks under post hypnotic suggestion...*

After SI and H techniques were applied, the subject's conscious mind did not know that it now contained a subconscious isolate which would robotically obey its operator's hypnotic cues and instructions (and know everything the conscious mind did not know). Subconscious isolation created amnesia. That increased "compliance to suggested acts." **(Scheflin and Opton, p. 115).**

After Condon's novel came out in 1959, the term **Manchurian Candidate** became the popular name for an unknowing hypnoprogrammed person. Candy Jones was narcohypnotized into a "Candidate" in 1960.

History of Research on Artificial Neurosis

We undertook to produce synthetically a complete model of a stable neurosis...We took a model of neurosis because in it are found those properties of a stable conflict, of a prolonged affective disorganization of behavior...

Luria, *The Nature of Human Conflicts*

An artificial neurosis is a conflict between an urge and an inhibition, which has been implanted in a person's unconscious under hypnosis, and then hidden there by suggested amnesia. The hypnotist suggests the urge, the amnesia, and perhaps also the inhibition.

Pavlov Applies Freud

An artificial neurosis is created by applying Pavlovian methodology to Freudian theory. Freud determined that neurosis and its resulting symptoms may be caused by an unresolved, unconscious conflict (such as between an inappropriate sexual desire and conscience). That's how natural repression causes natural neurosis. Freud used his understanding of this natural cause of neurosis to help the patient. Because, if the repressed memory can be remembered, the patient usually will deal with the conflict and cure himself.

Pavlov undertook to cause neurosis, instead of cure it. He defined **neurosis** as "a chronic deviation of the higher nervous activity, lasting weeks, months, and even years." If he could experimentally cause neurosis, using Freud's model, it would prove that particular theory correct. Pavlov's experiments succeeded. He created **experimental neuroses** in animals by reversing Freud's method of curing neurosis. Pavlov caused dogs to develop real neuroses. He thus demonstrated that learning can create emotional responses—and can cause one type of mental problem:

> *We have definite experimental neuroses in our animals...what is analogous to human psychoses....This was the reason for my becoming thoroughly acquainted with psychiatry....* **(Pavlov, *Lectures on Conditioned Reflexes*, p. 39)**

Pavlov could produce nervous breakdowns in dogs either by overstimulating their excitatory system (stress) or their inhibitory system (repression). Or he did it by creating a **conflict between excitation and inhibition**. For example, he gave them severe electric shocks timed together with the arrival of food to set up a conflict between the avoidance of pain (fear) and the desire for nourishment. They were afraid to eat, but they needed food to live. They were now neurotic.

Luria Researches Artificial Neurosis

A.R. Luria continued Pavlov's research in his Soviet laboratory in the 1920s. Luria was a prominent Russian scientist: Professor of Psychology at the Academy of Communistic Education, and a Research Associate at the State Institute of Experimental Psychology in Moscow. Luria took Pavlov's research on creating artificial neurosis one step farther. Whereas Pavlov had experimented on dogs, Luria now experimented on human beings.

Luria wanted to create "a complete imperativeness of those tendencies in the area of which we provoked the conflict." **(Luria, *The Nature of Human Conflicts*, p. 240)** He wanted to be able to go into somebody's mind, tweak it a certain way, and overcome their natural will with his implanted "imperativeness." He worked for a government which liked the idea of control—of being able to change people in a specific, permanent, controlling way.

Failed Conditioning Method—Luria's first efforts to implant "imperativeness" failed. The method which had failed used a Pavlovian conditioning approach. Luria called it "a prolonged elaboration of an automatism." It failed because, after the conditioning treatment, all of his subjects remembered what had happened. Remembering, they rejected the implanted thoughts Luria was trying to drill into them. They rejected Luria's attempts to railroad their minds into "prolonged affective disorganization of behavior." Luria reported:

> *...many of our subjects were well able to adjust themselves to or correct the difficulties set before them...These results told us...that the disturbances we obtained were not of a stable and intensive character.* **(Ibid.)**

Luria did not give up his quest to create such a complete imperativeness that the subject could not correct the difficulties. His goal was still to make a **stable** (permanent) and **intensive** (unconsciously powerful and dominant) implant in a subject's brain.

Success—To accomplish that, Luria had, somehow, to overcome the subject's natural feedback ability to observe what has happened in his mind and to self-heal by reprogramming himself.[1] So, Luria tried it again. This time he deeply hypnotized the subject and suggested amnesia. This time he succeeded. His subject's conscious mind did not reject the implanted thoughts because it didn't know they were there.

Luria never talks plainly. His book sounds like gibberish until you catch his meaning. Then you realize that Luria instructed his "technician" (a skilled hypnotist) to begin programming the subject with "a natural reaction of the personality" such as sexual desire or an aggressive impulse embodied in the emotion of anger. The hypnotist was to seek to "obtain a stable conflict of maximal strength, closely related in its structure to the more acute neurotic states."

Therefore, an imaginary incident which aroused a sexual or aggressive feeling which would predictably be opposed by conscience was suggested to the hypnotized subject. Luria found it easy to set up "a collision between our suggested activity and the natural... personality" **(Luria, p. 241)** when the subject was hypnotized.

Accordingly, the subject was programmed to unconsciously believe that he had sexual relations with his mother when he was a little boy, or some such. Luria thus successfully implanted into a hypnotized person "a conflict of fair stability and intensity...by direct suggestion...[to] provoke a tendency of undisputed imperativeness..." **(Ibid, p. 140)** The hypnotic implant set up a primitive unconscious conflict in the subject's mind, such as between desire and fear/shame or between anger and fear/shame.

---

[1] The brain's natural **self-governing** capacity requires an operational **feedback circui**t. When memory works normally, pain , shame, or fear can cause reprogramming. But there will be no reprogramming if memory of the problem is blocked by amnesia.

The conflict could not be resolved because it could not escape from its hole of suggested amnesia into the mind's light of reason (where the subject's conscious mind would identify it as garbage and toss it out). The implanted conflict (now permanently concealed in the subject's unconscious by suggested amnesia) would be stable because it was insulated from the subject's self-correcting mental feedback mechanism. The deep-level guilt, shame, or anger generated by that suggested fictional conflict could then be used to drive whatever "imperative" Luria wanted.

Luria had succeeded in causing the targeted **stable disorganization of personality**. He called that an "artificial neurosis."[1]

Artificial Neurosis Comes to the U.S.

In 1932, Horsley Gantt published his English translation of Luria's book. There were many psychoanalytically-trained medical hypnotists at that time. They were comfortable with both Freudian theory and with hypnosis. Some continued Luria's research in the United States.

In 1934 and 1935, M.H. Erickson published his research on artificial neurosis. He said the implanted lie should be "a reproachable act committed by the subject—an act which would be contrary to the subject's usual personality trends." **(Erickson, Huston, and Shakow, 1934, p. 66)** In another Erickson experiment,

> *...hypnotized medical students were told they had illegally performed an abortion...he was able (in nine out of twelve subjects) to suggest the presence of conflict, to induce guilt feelings, and to proceed successfully with the experiment; that is, to obtain in six of his subjects both psychological and physiological disturbances.* **(Marcuse, *Hypnosis: Fact and Fiction*, p. 112)**

In 1942, P. L. Harriman reported in an article called "The Experimental Production of Some Phenomena Related to the Multiple Personality" that he had implanted conflicts, under deep hypnosis, in ten subjects. Then he concealed the implants from the subjects' conscious minds by suggested amnesia. He used automatic writing to test whether the implanted conflict was finding unconscious expression. The subjects were consciously unaware of their implanted conflicts (and of their automatic writing), but the writing which he suggested that they do while hypnotized showed that their conflicts were unconsciously active. Their "personalities had been changed."

Jules H. Masserman was a University of Chicago psychiatrist who continued the work of integrating Pavlovian concepts of conditioning with Freudian concepts. In a 1943 book, *Behavior and Neuroses*, Masserman explained compulsions, obsessions, masochism, etc., in terms of the Pavlovian/Freudian linkage. His conditioning theories were based on animal research—experimental neuroses he created in cats and dogs.

Masserman taught animals to find food by opening a food box in their cage in response to a certain noise. Then, the moment the animal opened the box, he gave a severe electric shock, or a terrifying blast of air. It took only one or two such incidents to make the animals neurotic. Fear now was in conflict with hunger. Two powerful instinctual drives were in direct opposition. Eventually, fear won. The animals would no longer eat.

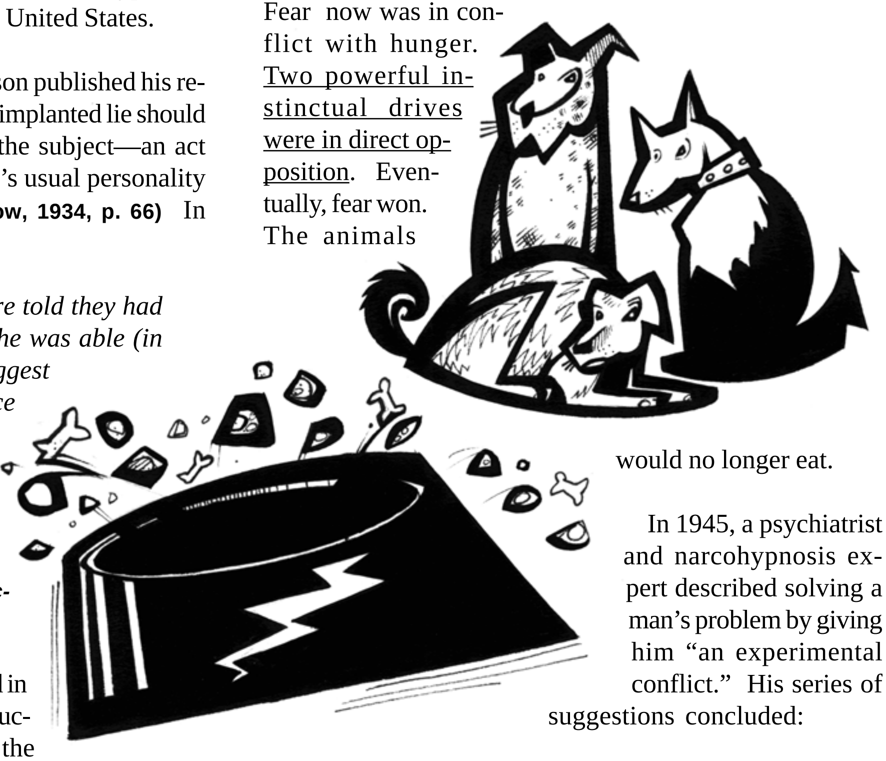

In 1945, a psychiatrist and narcohypnosis expert described solving a man's problem by giving him "an experimental conflict." His series of suggestions concluded:

> *You will not consciously know what it is, but it will nevertheless be on your mind. It will...govern your actions and speech, although you will not*

---

[1] Modern knowledge of the molecular basis of brain chemistry and the various emotional states has caused near abandonment of investigation into mental distress caused by stress or misprogramming. It is so much easier just to give somebody a pill which will repress excess neurotransmitter or to cause a shortage of some kind of neurotransmitter rather than to struggle trying to change problem programming or problem circumstances. Most cases of mental illness are caused by dysfunctions of brain chemistry and drugs are the answer. But, in some cases, the problem is the client's life circumstances, or his programming. In those cases, the best treatment would be non-drug. Change the patient's circumstances or the patient's beliefs (programming).

> *be aware that it is doing so.* **(Wolberg, *Hypnoanalysis*, p. 302)**

By the late 1960s, hundreds of hypnotic experiments had been done on hypnotically-caused emotional states and shifts of state, such as depression, elation, and rage. For decades, researchers also studied repression, rationalization, and displacement using suggested unconscious conflicts. They established that:

> *With the aid of hypnotism it is possible to reproduce, artificially and temporarily, the diverse symptoms of hysteria, or with equal ease to make a manageable laboratory model of compulsion neurosis. By the same means, one can create an artificial "complex," making it effectively "unconscious," and, for the first time under controlled conditions with known antecedents, study the irruption of unconscious strivings into the normal stream of behavior and the methods of defense set up against them.* **(R. W. White quoted in Moss, *Hypnosis in Perspective*, p. 119)**

Young's classic list of hypnotic techniques that can be used for unethical purposes ended with artificial neurosis. He explained that

> *...by means of illusions, delusions, age regression, transidentification, and other powerful devices available in hypnosis, the personality can be temporarily so altered as to circumvent the ego demands and implant complexes which are as bona fide as those of a neurosis or a psychosis...* **(Young, 1952, pp. 406-7)**

Focus Shifts to Child, Real or Suggested

Could they [adults] ***be returned to a state of neurologic and psychologic infancy for a short period, and then could new patterns of behavior be introduced?***

Ewen Cameron, quoted in John Marks, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*, p. 108

In the 1950s, research on methods of artificial personality splitting also began to make use of the Freudian views of early childhood development and the psychology of the hypnotic subject.

Freudian Hypnosis Researchers

Sandor Ferenczi was one of the first **psychoanalytic** (Freudian) hypnosis researchers. Writing between 1916 and 1926, he hypothesized that hypnosis resurrects and reactivates a childlike persona in the subject's unconscious. He said that persona is characterized by abject dependency and Oedipal cravings toward the hypnotist (who is unconsciously viewed as parent). Ferenczi believed that a normal adult represses the unconscious wish to regress to childhood, but trance turns off the conscious mind and frees those immature desires to shape the subject's role in the hypnotic relationship.

> *...the situation during hypnosis tends to favor a conscious and unconscious imaginary return to childhood, and to awaken reminiscences, hidden away in everyone, that date from the time of childlike obedience.* **(Ferenczi, *Contributions to Psychoanalysis*, p. 375)**

Ferenczi defined two styles of hypnotic induction and management which reflected that regressive element. He called them **maternal** and **paternal**. The maternal style of induction is conventional, gradual, polite, considerate, gentle, cooperative, and based on love or persuasion. A maternal-style hypnotist's voice is warm and friendly. A maternal induction lulls, persuades, or bores the subject into trance. Ferenczi said that a subject in a maternal hypnosis rapport is motivated by a need for **love**.

The paternal induction style is abrupt, shocking, dictatorial, highly authoritarian in tone, a domineering technique based on fear. A paternal-style induction uses a fast, directive induction method with a cold, unfriendly tone of voice. Ferenczi said that paternal hypnosis reawakens the hating and fearing attitude learned by a little child when disciplined by his parents. He said that, in paternal hypnosis, the subject is motivated by need for "abasement" and for "compliance." According to psychoanalysts, that need for abasement is an infantile, erotic, masochistic complex. Such a subject is in awe of the hypnotist, and submits to the operator's demands out of **fear** of him.

> *...the hypnotist with the imposing exterior, who works by frightening and startling...*[is like] *the stern, all-powerful father, to believe in, to obey, to imitate whom, is the highest ambition of every child...*[hypnosis] *consists in the deliberate establishment of conditions under which the tendency to blind belief and uncritical obedience present in ev-*

> *eryone, but usually kept repressed by the censor (remains of the infantile-erotic loving and fearing of the parents), may unconsciously be transferred to the person hypnotizing...* **(Ferenczi, *Sex in Psychoanalysis*, Ch. 2)**

Ferenczi believed instinctive Oedipal impulses were at the very center of hypnosis.

> *The capacity to be hypnotized...depends on the positive, although unconscious, sexual attitude which the person being hypnotized adopts in regard to the hypnotist....*[The hypnotic subject] *is really in love with the hypnotist, and has brought this tendency from the nursery.* **(Ferenczi, *Theory and Technique of Psychoanalysis*, p. 473)**

Hypnosis always arouses a childlike state of mind: **dependence** and **transference.** Transference means relating to the hypnotist as if to a parent figure, hero, or godlike spiritual leader.

> *...the hypnotic subject is being directed to assume a state of mind in which mature discriminations are excluded and childish dependence upon the hypnotist is encouraged. As some people are pleased to be in a state where life seems narrowed down to an easily manageable level of closeness with a powerful guiding parent, hypnosis is in no danger of extinction...* **(Kovel, p. 209)**

In the midst of World War II, Margaret Estabrook reported, in a Seattle newspaper, on research which created an artificial childhood:

> *...hypnosis is a peculiar relationship between two people. The hypnotist is a figure of parental authority, just as a doctor is to a patient, or a teacher to his pupil. Even more strikingly than in these other relationships, the subject tends to respond emotionally to the hypnotist in the same manner that he responded to his own parents in his childhood. In particular, "parental" commands in the form of suggestions are readily obeyed...***(Margaret Estabrook, 1942, p. 1)**

The artificial neurosis was created in a subconscious isolate defined as a child. The deeply hypnotized subject had been given a fake memory:

> *When you were a very small child, one and a half years old, your mother was taken to the hospital and your father made you drink milk from a cup. Up to this time you had been breast-fed. You thought it was your father's fault that your mother could no longer feed you.* **(Estabrook, p. 1)**

The artificial memory was deliberately made painful.

> *When painful emotions have been aroused, as in the subject who accepted the weaning story, there is a natural tendency to forget or "repress" the cause of them. This is particularly true of childhood experiences....* **(Ibid.)**

Young children have a natural tendency not to remember painful things. A false memory that will predictably cause painful emotions, when implanted in a **hypnochild**, will be strongly repressed and resistant to uncovering and healing.

Mind-control researchers were looking for ways to cause hard-to-overcome amnesia. One way turned out to be loading a hypnochild subconscious isolate with guilt, pain, or shame.

Natural Development of Multiple Personality

How does multiple personality develop under natural circumstances? Since Freud, psychologists have understood that the earlier a trauma happens in a person's life, the more devastating (and hard to remember) it can be. Over 95% of natural multiple personalities develop as a result of some combination of monstrous psychological, physical, and sexual abuses in childhood. All persons who suffer from spontaneous multiple personality

> *...have a history of being severely abused; the disorder is thought to stem from ways some children try to mentally isolate themselves against the horror of unremitting abuse.* **(Goleman, pp. C1, C6)**

Sybil's life story, told by Dr. Schreiber,, is a well-known case history of a naturally-split personality. Her amnesia and multiple personalities developed during a childhood in which she was frequently beaten, shut up in closets, cruelly tortured, and nearly killed. The original Sybil-self escaped by dissociating, which created a split-self who suffered that torture instead of her.

E.R. Hilgard said that the cause of multiple personality can be traced to a "severely brutal period in childhood." **(*Divided Consciousness*, p. 32)** He detailed some elements of brutality that can result in a split personality:

> *...a disintegration of values at the heart of the family, with violent and excessive punishment, overt sexual assaults in childhood, unbalanced parental roles, one parent occasionally sadistic, the other rather passive and aloof. In resolving the conflicts over identification and guilt, and in try-*

> *ing to cope in a context in which a unified strategy cannot work, the person divides...*[and] *the cause of the dissociations...lies in motivational conflicts that are often deeply unconscious.* **(*Ibid.*, p. 40)**

A Dutch psychoanalyst wrote in his post-WWII study of brainwashing:

> *The method of systematically exploiting unconscious guilt to create submission is not too well known. Guilt may be instilled early in life...*[may] *burden the child with a sense of guilt when he does not understand what was unmoral or wrong about a given act.* **(Meerloo, *The Rape of the Mind*, p. 81)**

A real child lacks understanding. It is a phenomenon of hypnosis that a hypnochild (created by suggestion) also does not understand. Therefore, suggested amnesia is hardest to overcome if the problem programming:

a) embodies conflict;
b) is implanted in a child, or a hypnochild;
c) has associations to psychological trauma;
d) embodies guilt and/or torture.

The Controllable Child

Here are the mental characteristics of a very young child:

- Dependence—Controllers say they are taking responsibility for another person's behavior or welfare. The silver lining of control, for the child, is the presumed privilege of dependence. A very young child must depend on adults to meet every need. Therefore, a young child humbly seeks approval and acceptance. It's a matter of survival. There's submission in any adult/child relationship, real or hypnotic.

- Does Not Clearly Distinguish Fantasy from Reality—A child does not clearly distinguish between fantasy and reality. Young children like to play pretend. Even when not playing pretend, a very young child does not distinguish reality from fantasy very well.

- Accepts Logical Inconsistencies—A young child's way of reasoning allows logical inconsistencies. That stage of nonlogical thinking is called **preoperational.** A very young child's mind passively accepts any logic provided by an authority figure, however preposterous it may appear to an adult mind. The child's literal and passive acceptance of whatever he is told resembles the acceptance of suggestions by a hypnotized person.

- Obedience—A child usually accepts a statement that he is guilty and believes that he deserves punishment. At the same time he internalizes the principle that he is in submission to the dominant punisher and must obey—or be punished. An adult mind understands that when the other person stops playing fair and begins to cheat, it is time to get OUT of the game. A child does not understand that.

- Natural Amnesia—Early childhood memories (before age three or four) tend to be inaccessible to adult retrieval. Very young children are naturally amnesic. Children—or hypnochild subconscious isolates—are more likely than adults to repress painful emotional memories.

- Assumption That Might Makes Right—Lawrence Kohlberg, a researcher on the development of moral reasoning in children, discovered that very young children reason on the basis that might makes right. So the child offers obedience to authority (and avoids punishment). Older they go through a "good girl," "nice boy" stage when adult approval is more important than anything else to them. So a child, or child split, might be urged to "be a good girl"—defined as doing what pleases the adult.

- Greater Imprinting Capacity—The earlier in life the programming occurs, the more deep-rooted and severe the psychological consequences are, and the more strongly driven an artificial neurosis may be.

Hypnochild Given Artificial Neurosis

The next technological advance in this black psychiatry sequence came when merely verbal hypnotic induction was replaced by **narcohypnosis**. It was Dr. Brickner, *et al*, who thus advanced this process of creating artificial neurosis. Their 1950 report, "Direct Reorientation of Behavior Patterns in Deep Narcosis (Narcoplexis)," described creation of a "psychotherapeutic method which utilizes directly certain neurophysiologic factors." The "neurophysiologic factor" was the forcing of their subject into a state of deep trance by drugging. They used intravenous sodium amytal

> *...because of the known accessibility and responsiveness of patients while under the effects of this drug. However, the doses we employed were much larger than those ordinarily used.* **(Brickner, 1950, p. 166)**

They gave large doses in order to push the subject's chemical trance to a very deep level.

> *When the brain is in that state, specific psychologic impacts often can be made with unusual directness. Frequently this results in unusually rapid psychologic changes.* **(Ibid., p. 194)**

Even the biggest doses of barbiturate did not make the subjects "patternless." But the drug did create a physiological state of

> *...childishness and allowed the subjects' basic and primitive conditioning patterns which had been created early in life, to be stripped of their higher defenses...*[and] *directly susceptible to attack.* **(Brickner et al, 1950, p. 166)**

The "higher defense" that was stripped away was the subject's **conscious mind.** The method was an IV drip of amobarbital sodium solution until the patient was in clinical coma.

Then Brickner read a **script** which pictured the patient in infancy, or early childhood. It dealt with the "early pattern" which they intended to reprogram. Each script followed the artificial neurosis model. It implanted a phony memory which was meant to become dominant over the subject's real experience, and to replace it as a psychological dynamic in his personality in order to achieve the operator's desired change in his behavior.

The script was read for an hour, either live or on tape, until the subject awoke from the drug trance. It was read to the drugged subject over and over during that hour, perhaps five times each session. They used an average of sixteen narcosis/script reading sessions to build the subject's **new personality**.

The script regressed the subject to early childhood and then reprogrammed him while in that drugged hypnochild state. The hypnotist pretended to be a childhood parent of the drugged patient. The script created a phony, implanted "memory." The new memory, thus implanted, was psychoanalytic dynamite. Brickner explained that an **incest** memory caused "unusually rapid psychologic changes." The script suggested

> *...a triangular (oedipal) situation, involving child and parents...WE HAVE NOT HESITATED TO GRANT COITAL RELATIONS WITH A PARENT...in a script...* **(*Ibid.*, p. 172)** [caps added]

The subject was kept totally amnesic about the new "memories." "No conscious insight is given..." **(*Ibid.*, p. 173)**

Brickner's Technique, Summarized—An artificial neurosis is an implanted set of false memories. The hypnotist lies to the subject; the subject believes those lies because he is hypnotized. Brickner used the following steps:

☐ The subject received hypnotic training and conditioning under very deep **barbiturate** narcosis.

☐ The script addressed the subject as a **child**.

☐ New, **false memories of childhood**, intended to be the basis for major, permanent changes in the subject's personality, were implanted.

☐ **Coital relations with a parent** was part of the script.

☐ The script was read to the subject **over and over.**

Operation Often: A Case History

Induction,
Disorientation, and
Reorientation

☑

Sex Conditioning:
A Pseudo-Oedipal
stage

☑

Obedience Training

☑

Electroconvulsive
Shock

☑

Psychic Driving

> ***“I can’t believe that,” said Alice.***
>
> ***“Can’t you?” the Queen said in a pitying tone. “Try again; draw a long breath and close your eyes.”***
>
> **Lewis Carroll, *Through the Looking Glass***

In the late ’60s, because of leaks that disturbed the public, the CIA put new mind-control research procedures into place. From then on, no Agency doctor involved in drug research would participate in outside tests, and a subject’s personal fate as a result of an experiment would not be recorded. Mindcontrol experiments involving narcohypnotic drugs conducted “outside” the Agency would now be done by persons who were not Agency doctors, and those persons would not keep written records. Soon after this new policy was in place, the CIA began a bold new mind-control research program called **Operation Often**.

> *...Beginning in 1969, a team of Agency scientists from the Office of Research and Development (ORD) ran a number of bizarre and potentially far-reaching experiments in mind control...The most innovative and daring doctors had been transferred to ORD, and a number of young consultants from civilian medical research laboratories had been recruited...It would be called Operation Often.* **(Thomas, p. 273)**

Long-Term Operator-Subject Relations

What were Operation Often's goals? Did "Often" refer to a hypnotic subject in a long-term relationship with his operator? Marriage? In 1962, Orne said of the cases of Z, Mrs. E., and Palle: "In each of the reported cases a quasi-love relationship preexisted, or at least developed concurrently with the use of hypnosis." **(Orne in Estabrooks (ed), *Hypnosis: Current Problems*, p. 171)**[1] In 1972, Orne again pointed out that known cases of exploitative hypnosis had a "long history of extremely close personal association" **("*Can a Hypnotized Subject Be Compelled to Carry out Otherwise Unacceptable Behavior?*" p. 111).** He concluded his "review of the literature" with the statement that

> *...extant material does not indicate that an unsuspecting individual can be tricked into hypnosis and compelled to undertake behavior to the advantage of the hypnotist in the absence of a long term meaningful personal relationship...*

If an unsuspecting individual was involved in a long-term, meaningful personal relationship, could he or she then "be tricked into hypnosis and compelled to undertake behavior advantageous to the hypnotist"? Would preexisting friendship, even love, increase vulnerability to the first induction? Would a subject who already loved his or her future hypnotist transform more efficiently into a hypno-robot after the first induction? Lifetime pairing with his subject would certainly be convenient for a hypnotist. Would this subject (a partner or spouse) be the ultimate controllable machine-mind because of the underlying love relationship? Only terminal experiments could answer all those questions.

The following case history matches the Project Often time period and research focus. The conditioning took place in early 1969, in New York, one of the two long-time centers of CIA mind-control research. The conditioning was done by a technician and his assistant, both somewhat amateur. The technician's wife had previously been conditioned and was now her husband's useful hypno-puppet. The man who acted as the technician's assistant in the upcoming experiment on his own wife would be rewarded by also gaining the imagined benefits of a hypnoprogrammed, obedient wife.

Complete, Helpless Obedience

The two Operation Often trainers aimed to maximize their subject's susceptibility to hypnosis, then to create, energize, and seal off a subconscious isolate in her lower mind. The split was designed to be maximally repressed (unconscious), maximally obedient (reflexive), and maximally operational. They would train her to enter trance on cue, at terrific speed, descending to any specified depth, even to great depth. She would learn to maintain that depth until instructed otherwise.

Her robo-split was designed to have no power of resistance or independent behavior. As in all unethical hypnosis, their goal was to put the subject into a state of "completely helpless obedience" **(Young, 1952, p. 396).** They wanted a combination of automatic obedience, complete posthypnotic amnesia, and irreversibility. Their control was intended to be permanent, unchangeable, never consciously known to the subject, and always available for use by the operator.

Combined Technologies

To an uninformed observer, the conditioning process they used would have seemed to be randomly cruel. Actually, it was deliberate, sophisticated, and technical. Their conditioning process combined methods from at least four major psychological traditions:

a) **Hypnotic techniques** (including suggested amnesia), developed by European hypnosis researchers from Puysegur to Janet

b) **Conditioning methods** from Pavlov and the behaviorists

c) **Freudian concepts** of the sexual unconscious and the dynamics of neurosis

d) Modern **physical methods of psychiatry** (narcohypnosis, electroshock).

The script was intended to implant permanently, into the subject's unconscious mind, a series of self-oppressing, inflexible rules. It would also change that mind into an artificially-created multiple personality. The newly created split (for whose activities her conscious mind would be amnesic) would be trained into a fully controllable hypno-robot.

The complex **training script** took her through a series of **suggested personas**. New characteristics were grafted onto each persona to evolve it into the next. The personas were:

1) Fish

2) Little girl (age two or three)

3) Slut: maximized sensuality, Oedipal script

---

[1] Coe, Kobayashi, and Howard also studied the link between the status of a longterm unknowing hypnotic subject and the nonhypnotic relationship.

4) Rules: an artificial superego which recorded operator input and provided reflexive obedience to any operator command, a "machine mind."

Each stage, each ingredient, each persona was created while the subject was under **narcohypnotic immersion**. Each built toward the next. Each was made into a building block for the ultimate edifice of a hypno-controllable, consciously unknowing, artificial personality split—what CIA goal-memos had called a **subconscious isolate**. The isolated persona was intended to dwell, thereafter, hidden inside her unconscious sector of mind, knowing all she knew, but unknown to her—and capable of overruling anything she might will, if the master so commanded.

Induction, Disorientation, and Reorientation

...if one were seriously attempting to induce antisocial behavior...he would seek to falsify the whole external and subjective situation for the subject, stepwise, of course, giving the subject only such suggestions as he could assimilate and giving him time to consolidate them...Into such a misperceived and misconceived world, the hypnotist with criminal design would insinuate his orders.
P. C. Young, 1962, p. 381

Here follows a detailed description of her conditioning. First came the induction, then a disorientation process, then a reorientation.

First Induction

The subject was acquainted with the technician. She was married to the man who helped him condition her. She had previously rejected urgings to let herself be hypnotized, spoken to her hypno-robot style by the technician's wife. This fateful day, however, the urging was done by the fellows themselves, her husband and his best friend.

She succumbed to their persuasions. She gave **voluntary agreement** to the first induction. That was an important unconscious foundation for the coming pyramid of programming directives. Any friendship or love attitude toward a potential manipulator acts as a presuggestion that enhances the effectiveness of later hypnotic suggestions.

She had no idea what the two men really planned to do to her. They tricked the ignorant young woman into agreeing. They told her that being hypnotized would be fun. She assumed it would be just one afternoon's adventure. She was seduced by the expectation that they would

spend the afternoon paying attention to her instead of going out to sit in the neighborhood tavern together (as had been often their pattern lately). Perhaps they also slipped her some oral barbiturate as a preparation, which would have rendered her even more persuadable. She had no idea that their real plan was to condition her for a lifetime of mind slavery.

The technician used a verbal sleep induction: "You're getting sleepier and sleepier. You're very tired. You're so very, very tired." He deepened the trance. He told her to lie down on the bed. She walked to the bed in the next room and lay down. He sat on a chair, at her left, beside the bed. Then he deepened her trance yet more. He told her to close her eyes. He "sealed" her eyes shut. She was not to open them again until he said she could.

As she lay with eyes "sealed" closed, he told her to stretch out her left arm and clench her fist. He said she would be unable to open that fist until he said she could. He said her entire left arm was becoming more and more stiff, and more and more numb.

Then the technician quietly stood up and walked into the adjacent room. There, out of her line of sight—if she had opened her eyes (but she did not)— the assistant handed the technician a needle filled with barbiturate in solution, which he had just prepared. The technician carried the needle into the bedroom. He repeated suggestions that her left arm was stiff and numb, with her fist firmly clenched. Then he injected the first barbiturate shot of the series into the big blue vein inside the elbow of that arm.

She did not feel the needle going in because her arm was numb. She did, however, feel the drug hit her brain. In that brief moment, before she completely lost consciousness, she realized that something was TERRIBLY WRONG. She knew he was drugging her. She had no idea why. She tried hard to wake herself up, to stop all this from happening. That effort came too late.

Disorientation

While she was deeply under the influence of the drug, the hypnotist began a deliberate disorientation process. She had no idea that she was being subjected to a period of intensive conditioning involving a deliberate, systematic procedure. The procedure involved unusual technical knowledge and would cause irreversible changes in the way her mind worked. She had no idea that one human being could do such a thing to another. Accordingly, she had no idea why the programmers—two people whom she thought she knew well—were now behaving totally, wildly, out of character. They were doing things to her that she could neither predict nor comprehend. She did not know how either of them could know how to do such a thing as this.

Those circumstances were disorienting for her. The script deliberately disoriented her even more. The script's step-by-step falsification of her situation created "a misperceived and misconceived world" into which the hypnotist's orders were insinuated.[1] P. C. Young had said that if a criminal hypnotist used carefully planned, gradual techniques, it would be possible to slowly and completely change a subject's personality into that of a hypno-slave. Indeed, that is what happened to her.

As a result of the script's suggestions, she soon feels confused, lost. She is under water. With fish. Swimming. Fish swim away. Swim back, closer again. She doesn't understand what it means.

As the operator reads the script, "Fish, mackerel, herring," he stops for an aside to his assistant: "Pickled herring," he jokes. The subject is in a deep narcohypnotic trance, so she does not comprehend the reason for their laughter. Deep trance strips away a subject's ability to respond to a joke.

The programming script continues that deliberately disorienting patter: He is telling her to "go to the fish market...down by the sea...dance with the oyster man...on the shore playing...like in Alice in Wonderland...playing with the oysterman."[2]

She tries to keep up with the changing images. They are at the fish market?

No, they are down by the sea.

She is dancing with the oyster man?

No, she is an oyster, playing with the oyster man.

She is an oyster?

No, she is a **fish**.

Reorientation As Fish

The operator disoriented her for place and behavior. His onslaught next shifted to an attack on her human identity. He had been talking about water and different kinds of fish. Now, he talked to her as if she were a fish too.

---

[1] This technique is also called **shaping.**

[2] The script seemed indebted to Lewis Carroll's poem, "The Walrus and the Carpenter," in *Through The Looking Glass.* That poem is a tale of callous deceit and predation. It is also full of confusing riddles, contradictions, paradoxes, and word play. At its end, the Walrus and the Carpenter dine well on the naive little oysters.

> *...the most central element of brainwashing* [is]*...the deliberate breaking down of identity, the reduction of the individual ego to a helpless cipher...First comes the stripping away of the symbols of individuality...friends, status, name.* **(Scheflin and Opton, p. 60)**

Her identity was stripped to such an absolute minimum that she was not even a mammal! She was an armless, legless **fish**. This disorientation technique had been used previously by M. H. Erickson:

> *The subject was systematically subjected to a gradual disorientation for time and place, and then gradually was reoriented...The process is a slow one and involves jumping from one confusing idea to another until out of the state of general confusion the patient develops an intense need for some definite and reassuring feeling of certainty about something, whereupon he becomes only too glad to accept definite reassurance and definite commands.* **(Erickson quoted in Rhodes, p. 147)**

The purpose of the fish's disorientation was to make her more willing to accept "some feeling of certainty about something," no matter how bizarre. They wanted her unconscious to accept their "definite commands." Now the script shifted from deliberately confusing and **disorienting** her to gradually **reorienting** her with a feeling of certainty about something (she was fish) and associated definite commands ("**You will obey**"). M. H. Erickson reported that

> *In reorienting the patient...the hypnotist was careful to be extremely dogmatic in tone of voice, but equally vague and indefinite as to his precise meaning.* **(Erickson and Kubie in Rhodes, p. 147)**

By repeating the postulates over and over which he wanted her unconscious mind to accept, the operator drilled them in. His language was precise, "extremely dogmatic," yet "vague and indefinite." He never let her know his real goal.

Training for "Can't Come Up"—*She's a fish. She's a fish swimming in the sea and she can't come up. Not for days and days. She's a fish. She has to stay down—down, down, down.* ***Can't come up.*** *Fish don't come up. He says she can't come up. She has to stay down, under the water.*

Capacity Regression

When a subject is regressed, in trance, to the physiological and psychological characteristics of an earlier level of development, it is called **capacity regression**. An older person, regressed under hypnosis to a five-year-old's mental capacity, is not truly that age. Her unconscious mind role-plays age five. Any susceptible hypnotic subject easily slips into the capacity role of any suggested age.[1] L. R. Wolberg wrote of

> *...regressing subjects to an infantile level, so that they lost the capacity for expressive speech...producing at the same time typical sucking and grasping movements...* **(*Hypnoanalysis*, p. 291)**

LeCron and M.H. Erickson also demonstrated capacity regression in their research projects.[1]

Being a fish, swimming underwater, was used as an image for being in deep trance. Deep level programming is strong when formulated as an **image**: fish underwater. He said, "You can't come up. A fish dies if it comes up." This image was used to train her to maintain depth, and to not wake herself up from trance after they switched from narcohypnotic immersions to regular cued inductions.

"A fish dies if it comes up," the operator had said. His use of the word "die" shocked her. She was in deep drugged trance. Words are taken literally. Threats seem real, even phony ones. That was the first time one of them threatened her. With that threat, another ingredient was added to her new way of life: control by terrible threats which only her unconscious mind heard and remembered.

A fish is subhuman. Fish heard him say over and over, "I am the **master**. You will obey." It was as fish that she first experienced and gradually adapted to a psychological environment of seemingly endless humiliation, pain, and depersonalization: *"He is the master. I will obey... servant... fish...I am not a person."*

She was fish. Swimming in water. At this stage of the conditioning, they "fed" the fish with needles, each loaded with narcohypnotic drug—but perhaps there was less drug and more water each injection. She was being trained to be a fish, not a person. She was now a nonperson who would always obey the master, and who "can't come up."

---

[1] Pretended **age regression** can look the same as true hypnotic regression to observers, but the subject's mental experience of that event is entirely different. In some studies of **capacity regression** hypnotic subjects have behaved somewhat older than the actual suggested age. The best hypnotic subjects are intellectually talented and tend to be ahead of the usual childhood developmental norms.

Little Girl—The script continued to **pyramid instructions** in her mind. (A succession of instructions maintains, or increases, hypnotic depth.) The fish was now allowed to take on some qualities of a person, but only those of a very young person. "A worthless **little girl**," the operator now called her. He told fish she was not very smart. He limited her to a two-, or three-year-old level of intellect. He let the fish be vocal, but with only a child's capacity for speech.

"Fish," she said, her intellectual function and speech now limited by **capacity regression**. Brainwashers know that when a person is treated like a child by persons who have ABSOLUTE CONTROL of her environment, she tends to act more and more childlike. She also tends to become dependent on her keepers.

Deprivation/Partial Restoration Technique

Candy's split was rooted in her imaginary, child playmate, but allowed to emerge as an adult persona. The Operation Often script was a more advanced hypnoprogramming technology. It created a child split who was programmed to remain a child. Permanent capacity regression made the fish-child split more programmable, vulnerable, submissive, and gullible.

Taking away all of a set of qualities (her humanness), then giving back only part of that set (only childlike human qualities) was another Ericksonian technique. In 1932, Erickson reported a four-step method of eliciting profound obedience in hypnotic subjects. He hypnotized persons who could see normally, then suggested total blindness. Then he suggested that they were merely colorblind. After his distressing demand for total deprivation of sight, his subjects gladly accepted a suggestion of partial restoration of sight—even though it was marred by suggested color-blindness.

Erickson used a four-step process to get that **profound obedience**:

> 1) *"Slow, gradual induction of a profound somnambulistic trance."*
>
> 2) *Deepening of trance to absolute greatest possible depth.*
>
> 3) *Suggestion of extreme deprivation, followed by conditional restoration of the privilege.*
>
> 4) *"The induction of a profound amnesia, to ensue at once and to persist indefinitely....In addition, there were given vague general instructions serving to effect an inclusion in the amnesia of all connotations and associations..."* **(M. H. Erickson, "The Induction of Color Blindness," pp. 62-63)**

He first suggested total blindness (the **complete deprivation**)

> *...to permit the spontaneous development of affective distress and anxiety over the subjective visual loss...*[This was followed by] *"restoring" vision in part, yet leaving a "limited" blindness, which would preclude the seeing of a certain color or colors.* **(*Ibid.*, p. 63)**

Following this model, she was first stripped of all humanness and became the fish. Then some limited, specified human qualities were restored to her.

Sex Conditioning: A Pseudo-Oedipal Stage

...the person to be dehumanized is forced to engage in acts of which he or she is deeply ashamed.
Scheflin & Opton, p. 60

"You don't have any brains," the technician told the fish-child. "Well, you have a few brains," he amended, "but they're located here." He touched her pubic mound.

The next stage of this subject's conditioning was the implanting of an artificial neurosis modeled on Freudian concepts of toddler psychological dynamics. She was immersed in an Oedipal scenario which would maximally stimulate erotic longings for the love of father and produce fear of mother. This conflict would make her a split personality.

> *The early childhood wishes of an individual cause him to become hypnotized and thus gain gratification by expressing his Oedipus complex. Thus the individual regresses back to childhood which allows him to express his repressed love for one parent and his fear of the other.*
> **(Kuhn and Russo, p. 61)**

Types and Degrees of Suggested Physiological Arousal

Under deep hypnosis, any physiological function can be affected by suggestion. Heart rate can be increased or decreased. The temperature of the entire body, or any designated part of it, can be raised or lowered. Mysterious blisters can be produced by suggestion. And then, by suggestion, they can be eliminated. Vomiting, miscarrying, and the start-up or stopping of breast milk production have all been successfully suggested. Much research has also been done on causing sexual excitement, by mere suggestion, to a hypnotized subject.

In 1884, Ladame, a French hypnosis researcher, mentioned a case in which "...it proved sufficient to blow lightly on the palm of our patient to trigger both a sexual orgasm and a complete reenactment of the coitus." **(Ladame, 1884, pp. 333-334)** In an even more extreme experiment

> *...Tissie hypnotized a patient, and suggested to him that the right ring finger would indicate sexual desire, and the left, abstinence. When the patient awoke, contact with the right ring finger caused sexual excitement, contact with the left subdued it. Once Tissie forgot to remove the suggestion, and the consequence was that for twenty-four hours the patient was unable to refrain from coitus and masturbation, as well as spontaneous emissions.* **(Moll, 1982 reprint, p. 119)**

In 1962, Gerald S. Blum reported his experimental investigations of psychoanalytic theory, his development of a cybernetic concept of how the mind works, and his research on **degrees of affective arousal**.[1] Blum united psychoanalytic research on hypnosis, concepts from computer programming, and modern studies of brain function. He called his hypnotic training regimens **programming.** He worked to

> *...develop models of mental processes patterned after those of cybernetic circuitry. Cognitive arousal is viewed as analogous to an electronic gain control that serves to amplify the signal regardless of the informational content. Affective arousal is conceptualized as ranging from free-floating pleasure to free-floating anxiety."* **(Blum, "Hypnotic Programming Techniques in Psychological Experiments," in Estabrooks, ed., *Hypnosis*, 1962)**

Blum experimented on "small numbers of highly trained hypnotic subjects, usually undergraduate students." **(Ibid., p. 359)** He prescreened to eliminate anybody with heart trouble or bad nerves because he was going to put them through hell. The subjects were then "trained to experience degrees of cognitive arousal, pleasure, and anxiety...degrees of organismic anxiety...levels of pleasure" **(Ibid., p. 384)**. He measured degree of arousal by monetary equivalents. (Are you feeling $40 good, or $400 good?)

Blum explained that his suggested arousals stimulated the **primary process elements** of sex and aggression in his subjects. Those are deep-brain instinctual drives. Any suggestion **driven** by a primary process element is powerfully motivated. Hypnosis exposes

> *...the complex psychodynamic realm of primary process thinking, defense mechanisms...*[of] *S's* [subject's] *'natural' dynamic themes to laboratory scrutiny.* **(Ibid., p. 385)**

Hypnosis makes possible artificial programming of the subject's unconscious. That programming can create a drive which the operator can then use to power his chosen agenda.

The fish-child's programming for total unconscious surrender to the hypnotist was deeply eroticized. Sexual arousal lowers consciousness and increases suggestibility. They began this stage of the narcohypnotized fish-child's training with suggestions of mild sexual arousal. Then they built that feeling into a desperate, huge desire. They urged and pressured until the fish-child was shaped into a flaming, primeval, hungry-hungry, desire-desire **id** incarnate.

Masochism Suggestions

The drugged fish-child now began to hear suggestions of **masochism**: "Do you want to hurt? You like to hurt, don't you? This is all your fault because you love to be hurt." The script urged her to be a "willing slave." The technician said, "It's nice to hurt. Hurt is good for you."

Linkage of pain and pleasure was intended to be an implanted foundation belief leading her to total unconscious surrender to his hypnotic control. The technician and his assistant told the drugged fish-child that she loved to hurt, and loved to be victimized. They were preparing her to accept a lifetime of hurt and victimization caused by hypnotic obedience. This concept also was from the psychoanalytic view of hypnosis:

> *...the nucleus of the masochistic attitude is not to*

---

[1] That combination is not strange when you consider that Norbert Wiener, founder of cybernetics, wrote that Freud's main concepts (neurosis, repression, the return of the repressed, abreaction, and the importance of early-childhood programming) could all be expressed in terms of mechanical brain function.

> *be found in the fact that the subject wishes to suffer pain, but that he subjects himself completely and unconditionally...***(p. 40)***...We shall attain a more profound understanding of the psychology of hypnosis by beginning with the psychology of masochism...The Masochist identifies himself with his ruler. By means of his subjection, he shares the enjoyment of the greatness and power of the latter...* **(Schilder and Kauders, pp. 41-42)**

In 1941, R. W. White wrote that the "press of hypnotic dominance evokes a kind of willing surrender, a glad abasement..." **("*An Analysis of Motivation in Hypnosis*")** White said there were similarities between hypnosis and being in love.

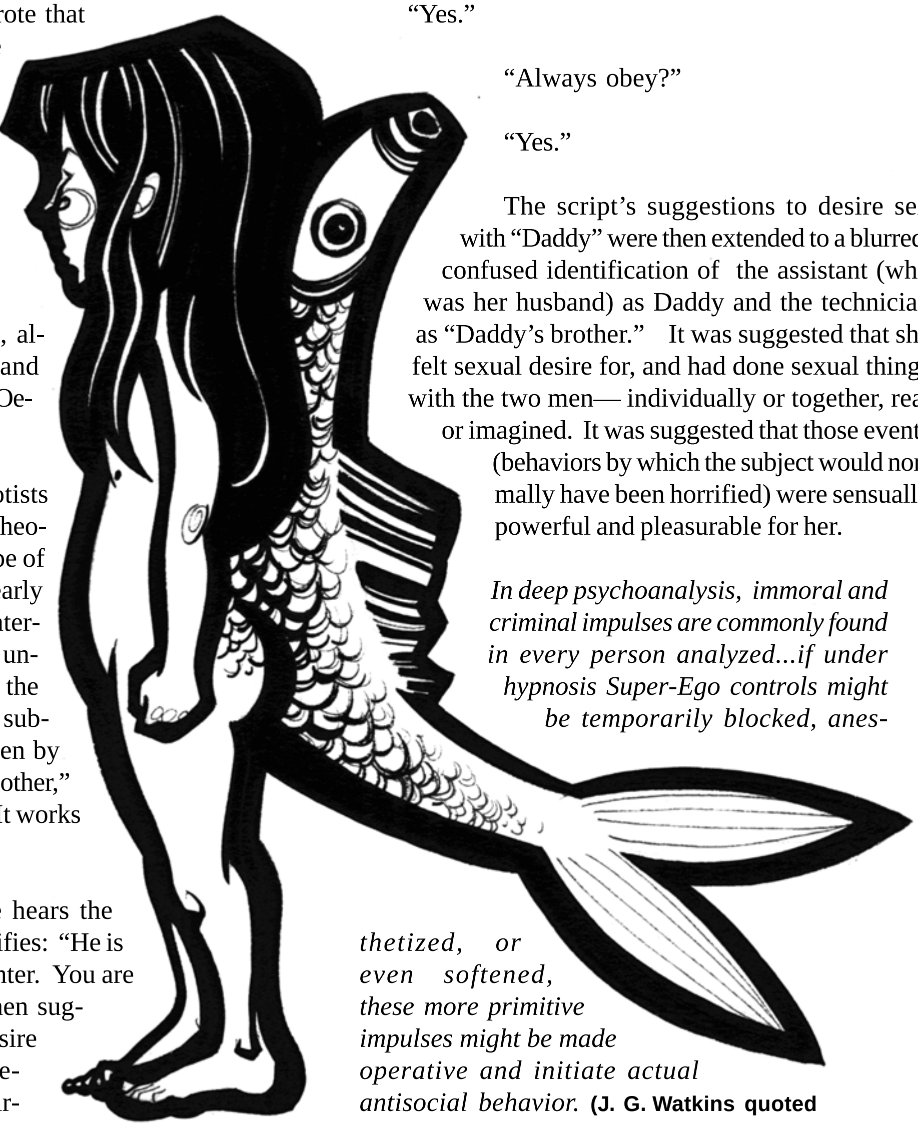

An Oedipal Experience

The fish-child, age three, already programmed for humility and obedience, was next immersed in an Oedipal scenario.

Ever since Freud, hypnotists with psychoanalytic training have theorized that the unconscious prototype of hypnotic submission is molded in early childhood. Freudian hypnotists interpret the act of turning over one's unconscious mind to be operated by the hypnotist as a **regression**. If the subject is male, the regression is driven by fear of the "father" or love of the "mother," depending on the hypnotist's sex. It works opposite if the subject is female.

"I am your father," she hears the assistant say. The technician amplifies: "He is your father. And you are his daughter. You are three years old." The assistant then suggests that she feels incestuous desire for Daddy. The drugged and regressed subject nods in wistful affirmation.

Desire for her opposite-sex parent, "Daddy," intensified to the maximum possible degree, was their Freudian hook.[1] Fish-child, catapulted into a pseudo-Oedipal stage by suggestion under narcohypnosis, now heard the technician say that she and Daddy were "going to play games" and have sexual relations. The technician chuckled, then continued, "You love him and you obey everything he tells you to do. Do you understand?"

"Yes," the drugged woman murmured.

"Will you always remember the commands?"

"Yes."

"Always obey?"

"Yes."

The script's suggestions to desire sex with "Daddy" were then extended to a blurred, confused identification of the assistant (who was her husband) as Daddy and the technician as "Daddy's brother." It was suggested that she felt sexual desire for, and had done sexual things with the two men— individually or together, real or imagined. It was suggested that those events (behaviors by which the subject would normally have been horrified) were sensually powerful and pleasurable for her.

> *In deep psychoanalysis, immoral and criminal impulses are commonly found in every person analyzed...if under hypnosis Super-Ego controls might be temporarily blocked, anesthetized, or even softened, these more primitive impulses might be made operative and initiate actual antisocial behavior.* **(J. G. Watkins quoted in Young, 1952, p. 394)**

The "immoral...impulse" suggested and carried out in her drugged fantasy, was **incest**. Fish-child's superego controls were temporarily blocked and anesthetized with barbiturate. Children

---

[1] Freud said there is an **Oedipal stage** during which every little boy (at age three or four) feels strong unconscious sexual love for his mother, and a corresponding **Electra stage** during which a young girl unconsciously longs to replace her mother and be made love to by her father. Psychoanalytic theory sees this stage as a normal episode in a child's psychological development (and usually calls them both "Oedipal.") Since strong emotions of deep guilt and self-loathing tend to be associated with the forbidden desire, the thought is normally repressed. Conscience is being developed. The child then moves into a period of sexual latency which will last until maturity.

> *...are unaware of the social meanings of sexuality... Further, the child does not have the freedom to say yes or no. This is true in a legal sense and also in a psychological sense...children have a hard time saying no to adults...* **(Finkelhor, 1979)**

Their sex conditioning of the fish-child involved both suggested and actual sexual assaults. The operators made sure their subject was genuinely stimulated and genuinely enjoyed that sensation. It is not unusual for sexually abusive experiences to arouse some degree of pleasure in the victim. Mike Lew addressed the victim's dilemma of "What if I enjoyed it?"

> *For many survivors, these pleasurable sensations are more upsetting than painful ones...It is likely*

Limbic/Emotional Programming

> *The more imperative the excitement and the tension, the more foreign its setting for the subject, the greater the disturbance of behavior we may expect...* **Luria, *The Nature of Human Conflicts*, p. 253**

Why was the hypnoprogramming done in a setting of intense sexual arousal (later, equally great shame and, still later, fear)? Luria said that the artificial neurosis was best accomplished by maximizing the subject's emotional feelings (lust, fear, anger). Emotions are based in a part of the brain called the limbic system.

Limbic Anatomy

The brain has three layers, all interconnected and interactive. Each has its own chemistry and structure. Each has its unique kind of intelligence, its own memory system, and its own method for sensing time and space. Each has individual access to motor functions and can operate somewhat independently.

The upper layer is the **cortex.** This part of brain consists of the left and right cerebral hemispheres and is analogous to a fully-programmable computer. The bottom layer (**brainstem** and **cerebellum**) handles the most automatic biological functions that have central nervous system guidance. The middle layer is located above the brain stem and cerebellum and below the cerebral hemispheres. The middle layer is called the **limbic system**.

The limbic system, where hormonal and neural systems connect, is the great powerhouse of the brain for emotional behavior. It generates the instinctive drive emotions: hunger, sex, and aggression. Freud called its function the **libido** or **id**. Emotions—pleasure, fear, anger, sexual desire—originate in the **amygdala**, a part of the limbic system. (Love is literally a higher function, based in the neocortex). The **hypothalamus** is a closely-related limbic center:

> *...the closest thing to our id is probably the hypothalamus, a small bundle of cells centrally located deep in the brain, near the top of the brain stem. This controls anger, joy, hunger, sex, fear and other drives. The most sensational development in all brain research was probably the discovery of pain and pleasure "centers"—really circuits—in or near the hypothalami of animals.* **(Maya Pines, p. 18)**

Curiously, in addition to being the center for our sex and aggression drives, the limbic system also is the switchboard center for our most treasured spiritual experiences. Limbic experiences are what convince us, convert us, and cause us to choose a particular system of values. The **Aha!** sense of realization comes from the limbic.[1]

Limbic Function

Limbic programming...

1. Maximizes the potential drive to remember the programming
2. Maximizes the unconscious drive to repress the programming
3. Maximizes the dominance of the current programming over competing programming
4. Maximizes the tendency for the programming to be unconscious (limbic function is normally unconscious).

---

[1] Martin Gardner coined that term in an issue of *Scientific American*.

> *to set off a chain of emotional reactions that lead to mistaken conclusions about the nature of abuse...One faulty path arrives at the belief that if any part of it was pleasurable, it wasn't really abuse...It allows perpetrators to confuse their victims into thinking that their participation in the abuse was of their own volition..."You enjoyed it" is a self-seeking statement by the perpetrator that attempts to mask the nature of abuse and enlist the victim as an accomplice.* **(Lew, p. 132)**

The operator then made the fish-child depend, for relief of suggested lust, upon his verbal hypnotic commands, another conditioning ploy. She learned to have an orgasm on hypnotic cue. Orgasmic training created and reinforced her unconditional surrender: FISH LOVES BAD...FEEL GOOD SEX...PLEASE ...FISH NEED... She was taught to enter trance instantly, on cue, by associating induction with

Maximized Drive to Remember Conditioning

Luria wanted to cause severe disturbance in his experimental subjects. Why? Because any strong emotion—sexual desire, anger, fear, or burning shame—reinforces the remembering process.

The suggested sexual arousal and emphasis on pleasure/pain events during the fish-child-slut's conditioning deliberately targeted her limbic system. The technician wanted his programming to be blindly accepted, firmly remembered, and never again conscious. So he programmed her with primary process linkages, in states of intense arousal. The hypnoprogramming suggestions sank into her powerful, instinctual, pleasure-seeking libido. The goal-seeking energy of that reproductive brain sector, which wants what it wants and wants it NOW, was being programmed and enslaved as a foundation for future control of her mind.

Blum studied the role of **amplification level** relative to the strength of conditioning. He compared the outcomes from various types of affective arousal—the array of possible emotions. **(1962, p. 359)** Hypnotic suggestions, given to a subject who is feeling the most intense emotion possible at the time, will implant with the maximum unconscious strength. With maximal associated emotion, programming in the unconscious is safest from deterioration, and it will be driven by the most energy.

Maximized Drive to Repress Conditioning

The more primitive the emotion (lust and rage), and the greater its intensity, the more likely it is to trigger a natural **repression**. If repression kicks in, it walls that memory off from conscious knowing. Urges of sex and aggression are both normally repressed. That type of repression begins as soon as a child is becoming civilized.

Maximized Dominance over Competing Programming

Primary process thought is drive-related thought. Drive-related thought is based in the limbic system. Any thoughts that are drive-related tend to be powerfully motivated. The limbic also has a built-in mechanism for motivating us without our conscious awareness of it. Emotionally-driven action tends to be reflexively dominant over intellectual reasoning in the brain circuity. It can send a person into action before his cortex can stop it.

There is a good reason why we are made this way. We jump away from the sound of a suspicious rattle or from the sight of a long narrow silhouette under a nearby bush. We may, a moment later, realize that sound or sight wasn't really a snake. We reacted first, then analyzed the situation. That reflexive dominance helps to keep us alive. Normally, it doesn't harm us to jump from a false alarm, and it could badly harm us not to jump.

The limbic system has a dominant role in reflexive response because input is relayed to the amygdala first. The amygdala makes a reflexive response based on its programming. The input then moves on to the cortex for a second stage of processing which is more rational and detailed. That second stage may result in rejection of the first response. It's not a snake after all.

However, if the limbic programmed reflex causes the subject instantly to descend into a deep trance state, the rational center is blocked from participation until the subject is released from trance. If the subject returns to the analyzing state of consciousness with amnesia for what just happened, the **rational cortex** continues to be blocked from reprogramming the lower center.

If the amnesia did not exist, the conscious mind would use the appropriate and powerful emotions of rage, shame, and fear at being so used to reprogram itself and to make another such mind-invasion impossible. For it is emotion that gives us the power to reprogram ourselves. In this way, shame and pain can bless you by providing the energy to overcome previous, bad habits and achieve desirable real deep-level change.

effort toward orgasm (and also with craving for the barbiturate induction rush).

Does sexual conquest lead to compliance in other mental matters? "Sexuality to the mind of the patient involves unconditional love or surrender...." **(Wolberg, 1964, p. 364)** "If a response is...associated with a high level of motivation—the response is expressed vigorously," a stimulus-response expert wrote. **(Valenstein, p. 43)** Rasputin was a priest-hypnotist whose influence was a factor in the fall of Russia's last czar. A biographer explained his rise to power: "Unequivocal sexuality was a means of establishing authority, not just the result of an unbearable itch." **(De Jonge, p. 130)**.

Hilgard's Type One and Type Two Hypnotic Amnesias

E.R. Hilgard classified hypnotic amnesias (**dissociation**) into two types. **Type one is an amnesia which can be reversed under hypnosis and the memory retrieved**. Type one neurosis can be easily cured. **Type two is a more severely repressed** amnesia and much harder to heal. Hilgard said it was of a "psychoanalytic" nature.

> [It] *includes conflictual material arising in the earliest stages of development, when affect and ideation are not clearly distinguished, and when impulses are inadequately translated into verbal symbols. The repressed material may include later material deeply repressed because of its associations with trauma and guilt. Whatever the origins of the deeply repressed material, it is not directly recovered in free association, in dreams, or in the hallucinations of the troubled mind...* **(Hilgard, *Divided Consciousness*, p. 252)**

The conditioning process also titillated the technician and his assistant:

> *The psychology of the hypnotized is incomplete without the psychology of the hypnotizer...He must feel incorporated in himself, in some obscure corner of his soul, this magical power; he must raise the demand for unconditional masochistic subjection and must bear within him the wish for the sexual subordination of the other person. The fear of violation on the part of the hypnotized necessarily is a concomitant of the wish to violate on the part of the hypnotizer. We very well know that lay hypnoses are—as a matter of fact—often made use of as means of sexual approach.* **(Schilder and Kauders, *Hypnosis*, p. 47)**

SEX = HYPNOSIS

Then they taught the fish-child (and now slut) a terrible secret about the delight of sex. She learned that the incestuous sex (with "Daddy") was the same as hypnosis. SEX = HYPNOSIS. Statements making that (preposterous) linkage were repeated over and over to her uncritical, nonanalytical, drugged, unconscious mind until it believed it. Hypnosis would be desired like sex. Revealing the secret act of being hypnotized would be feared as much as revealing the fulfillment of incestuous sexual desire.

SO ASHAMED: Guilt Training

The script now abruptly shifted from suggesting extreme incestuous desire to suggesting equally extreme shame and self-denunciation. The technician already had suggested the sensual three-year-old fish-child-slut into being. He had filled her with acute desire and trained her in abandonment to lust. Now he aroused an equally acute, extreme emotion of SHAME in her. He assigned to her all responsibility for feeling lust, for her sexual arousal, for her abandoned behavior (hallucinated or real).

Brainwashers first disorient the victim, then induce self-betrayal, then guilt:. After forcing the prisoner to engage in those shameful acts, the captors shift to building guilt because of the shameful acts. Or, the captors may work to find out what their victim feels most genuinely guilty about, and then probe at that sore spot, hour after hour, day after day.

Guilt can bring a person to a breaking point. It can even cause multiple personality. In children of the fish-child-slut's suggested age, experiences of betrayal, confusion, brutal domination, and an intolerable burden of guilt are known to have caused spontaneous personality splittings. The fish-child-slut had, already, been put through betrayal, confusion, and brutal domination. Her guilt training came next.

The programmer said, "You love it. It feels so good. You're so ashamed. Don't tell. You mustn't ever tell. **It's secret, don't tell**." Again and again he told her how BAD she was for feeling those feelings: "BAD, BAD, BAD. It's all your fault. You're SO ashamed."

Her narcohypnotized brain accepted this new layer of suggestions. She felt excruciating, intolerable shame. The programmers built those shame feelings up to the maximum possible degree of limbic intensity.

Why was the technician doing this to her? There were at least two reasons:

1) This process mimicked the natural development of masochism—which is an unconscious willingness (or even desire) to be abused. Research has shown that adult victims of child abuse will accept cruel and hurtful use in later intimate relationships if they unconsciously be-

lieve that the treatment they experienced in childhood was deserved because they were "bad."

2) They were creating a conflict which would be used to drive an amnesia program (splitting her personality). Sex, shame, and rage (especially in a child or a hypnochild persona) are so very painful to the conscious mind that there is a natural tendency for the mind to repress them.

DON'T REMEMBER: Amnesia Resolves Drive Conflict

Next, the script pushed her to solve the artificial conflict by instituting a very real **amnesia**. She was now experiencing both a maximal intensity of desire, and a maximal intensity of **shame** and **fear**. She had learned that the SECRET DELIGHTS OF SEX were BAD PLEASURE (BAD BAD BAD). Luria called her present condition a **motivational conflict**. Other authors called it a **drive conflict**. "Bad pleasure" was a drive conflict. Using the terrible, terrifying shame, the script pushed her to a literal mental breaking point: **DON'T TELL.**

They were now drilling in a new rule. It was a rule of **repression** that resolved the conflict. Over and over, they said, "You must not remember. You are so ashamed. You must forget. You must never remember because you are so ashamed." The fish-child-slut registered the new rule in her limbic system circuits. She obediently repeated it for the masters:

"DON'T REMEMBER...FISH BAD FISH...FISH LIKE BAD SEX...BAD FISH LIKE SEX TOO MUCH...BAD BAD FISH...WON'T REMEMBER... HYPNOSIS... SEX-HYPNOSIS ... MUST NOT REMEMBER ...FISH IS BAD, BAD... SECRET FISH... MUSTN'T TELL. FORGET BAD GIRL."

Now they added one more, devastating, element to the Oedipal scenario. They had already aroused maximum guilt and fear in the Oedipal scenario (those BAD sexual desires and acts with "Daddy"). Now the operator directed her unconscious guilt and fear toward "Mama." They told her drugged, unconscious mind that her conscious mind was Mama. Over and over, they repeated that she MUST keep all this secret from "Mama." "Don't tell. Don't tell Mama," the programmer said again and again.

"SECRET, DON'T TELL," she echoed their words.

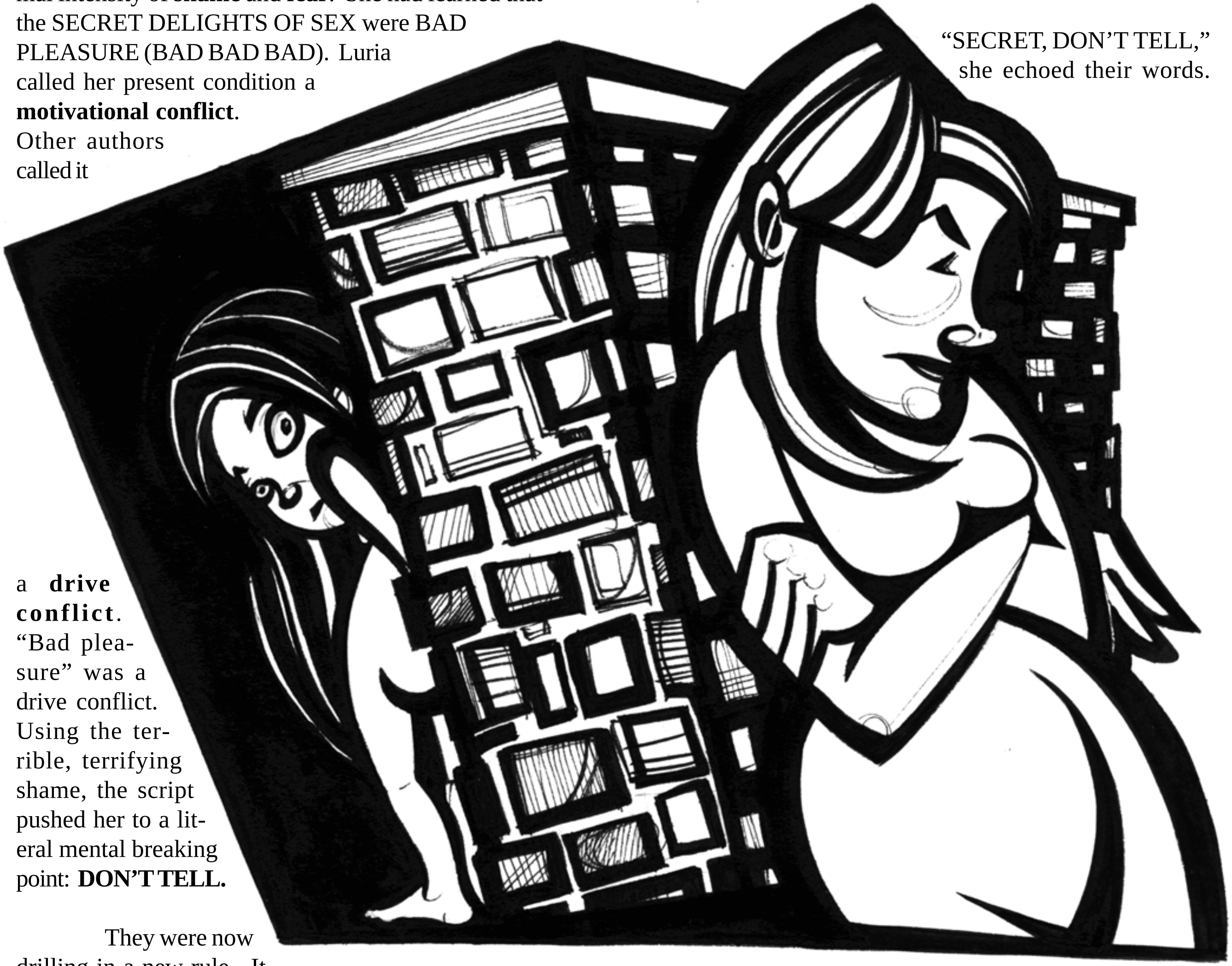

"SO ASHAMED, DON'T TELL. MUST NOT TELL. MUSTN'T TELL MAMA. DON'T TELL MAMA. SECRET, DON'T TELL."

Amnesia Results in Split Personality—Once the fish-child-slut accepted that piece of brilliant, but malignant, programming, the subject's artificial neurosis—and her artificial personality splitting—was accomplished. An unconscious part of her mind had been persuaded to build a wall of amnesia. The wall blocked off its own conscious mind from access to the memories and knowings that the unconscious split possessed. From then on, one part of her mind (the split) knew, but was afraid to tell. Her conscious mind did not know and would, supposedly, never know.

Buried guilt (or aggression), isolated from the conscious mind's light of reason, tends to be exaggerated, intense, irrational—and therefore powerful. After this, her conscious mind did not know what happened during the times when her secret split-off self was called out (under hypnosis).[1] The technician had caused a **mental reorganization** (a CIA euphemism for artificial personality splitting) in her brain. Because of the wall of amnesia, the part of her to whom those SECRET things had happened thereafter developed as a distinctly different mind. She was an artifi-

---

[1] All this took time. The brain has (literally) to **grow** major changes in its organization: "It is now acknowledged that subjects must be allowed sufficient time to achieve desired psychophysiologic reorganizations..." **(Gorton, "*The Physiology of Hypnosis*," p. 30)**

Military Limbic Hypnoprogramming

Walter Bowart began researching the subject of military hypnoprogramming after...

> *A young man I'd known since childhood had returned from a tour of duty in the U.S. Air Force, with amnesia, remembering nothing of his service years, except having had a good time. He subsequently learned, through intensive private psychotherapy, that he'd been hypnotized and conditioned. His mind had been unmade, then remade: his mind had been controlled.*
>
> *I was completely fascinated by his story, but naturally, in 1973, I thought it was an isolated, single event. Then, quite by accident, a few months later, I overheard another man in my hometown telling what was essentially the same story....After hearing the second story I began to wonder how many more men had their memories erased.* **(Bowart, *Operation Mind Control*, pp. 21-22)**

Bowart ran ads in several magazines seeking:

> *...ex-servicemen who have reason to believe they were hypnotized (or drugged) while in the service and subsequently exhibited signs of amnesia or hypermnesia...* **(Ibid., pp. 21-22)**

He received more than a hundred replies. To eliminate the possibility of war trauma amnesia, Bowart rejected all those who had been in actual combat. He also rejected those who had no security clearance or had not been connected somehow with military intelligence. The remaining eighteen men all had security clearances, were connected with military intelligence, had great difficulty remembering their conditioning period, and could remember only isolated events from their military years.[1]

Over the next two years, Bowart interviewed those eighteen men in depth. He also researched the general technology and history of hypnoprogramming. He asked friends who had military intelligence credentials to search the M.I. Classified Index for titles of government studies in "drugs, hypnosis, behavior modification, and related subjects." They found nothing of significance, only peripheral references.

Bowart did find some relevant-sounding articles, written under numbered military contracts, cited in the bibliographies of scientific journals. He searched the National Technical Information Service catalogue card files in Washington, D.C., looking for the numbers of those military contracts. The NTIS catalogue lists all government contracts, classified or not, in numerical order. He found numbered entries about which information was publicly available, but none of those dealt with military hypnoprogramming. He found numbered entries marked classified, but none of those were relevant either. The particular numbers which Bowart sought (the ones he had found in the bibliographies of hypnosis articles in civilian scientific journals, the ones he believed dealt with government mind-control research) were all **missing** from the index.

Operation Mind Control

Bowart organized what he had learned from interviews with the men who answered his ad, and the general background research, into a book about military and CIA hypnoprogramming, *Operation Mind Control*.[2] He summed up, in one chapter, the cially-created multiple personality.

---

[1] Also, none of them could remember their childhood normally. Bowart never mentioned if their unconscious isolate was defined as a child. If the artificial split personality was a "child," its repression programming could generalize to the subject's real childhood, making it also difficult to remember.

[2] Bowart's book is long out of print and hard to find. He seems never to have written another. I located one rough photocopy through a bookstore and one original by interlibrary loan from the Air Force Academy Library. Using the library loan system requires placing your name and address on record. For Bowart's book, you may prefer to avoid that.

Communication Rules—The technician drilled into her mind several strict rules regarding future communication by the fish-child-slut:

She could speak only to the technician or his assistant and only when called out in hypnosis.

She could communicate only in dirty words.[1]

She could communicate only in a state of steadily (slowly) increasing sexual desire.

The last two rules amused the masters. They further gagged the fish-child-slut. Her speech form and physiological condition while speaking would be inadmissible in polite company. If she ever told what she knew, the listener

---

[1] M. H. Erickson learned that vulgar or suggestive language is powerful at the unconscious level. In "The Method Employed to Formulate a Complex Story for the Induction of an Experimental Neurosis in a Hypnotic Subject," he deliberately worked crude sexual references into the story to be implanted. This may have been a factor in their choice of rules.

experience of those eighteen men as a composite he called "David":

> *...many of the stories I uncovered have been left on the editing room floor. Each individual in this book stands for and tells the story of many victims of mind control.* **(*Ibid.*, p. 25)**

"David" was a bright, ambitious, young man of good character who enlisted in the U.S. Air Force, in 1969, for a four-year hitch. His enlistment process included a thorough assessment of his personality, character, and hypnotic susceptibility. Markers for susceptibility included high intelligence and having an imaginary playmate as a child. All Bowart's interviewees matched on both items.

The men told Bowart of a scene in which

> *"It seemed like somebody was violating me—raping my mind. I was strapped down in the bed. I was yelling and screaming about something. I'm not the type of person that cusses that much. I hardly ever use foul language, but I know that I said some pretty foul things to those men who were with me. They were officers, and in the service you can't call a superior officer an obscene name without getting punished. Yet I don't think I was ever reprimanded..."* **(*Ibid.*, p. 29)**

That description gives the impression that their conditioning process, like that of the fish-child-slut, involved Freud's primitive instinctual drives. In these males, however, the rage drive appears to have been maximized instead of the sex drive.[1]

> *The body's first response* [to anger] *is a surge of energy, the release of a cascade of neurotransmitters called catecholamines. If a person is already aroused or under stress, the threshold for release is lower...* **(*Ibid.*)**

After the limbic system was fully stimulated, the splitting suggestions would come next.

Project Monarch

Mark Phillips, in a short piece, privately published, also described military use of hypnoprogramming. He said Project Monarch was a "trauma-based psychological mind control." It used two different conditioning routines, "Alpha" and "Beta." "Alpha programming is accomplished through deliberately subdividing the victim's personality."[2] He said "Beta" programming was

> *...a combination of Alpha 'logic' programming and Beta primordial (primitive mind) sex programming....This programming eliminates all learned moral convictions and stimulates the primitive sexual instincts devoid of inhibitions.*

Alpha sounds like rage-trauma programming for males. Beta sounds like the Operation Often process of sex conditioning. Phillips said the purpose was to create a superperson:

> *The original purpose of Alpha was to program (train/condition the mind through torture) the espionage agent to perform certain difficult tasks...lock in photographic memory...along with...other superhuman traits.*

---

[1] Anger "usually arises out of a sense of being trespassed against—the belief that one is being robbed of what is rightfully his." **(Gibbs, p. 64)** They were indeed being robbed: of the right to one mind, indivisible.

[2] Phillips also spoke of left-right brain division followed by a controlled reconnection. Both the division and reconnection probably were accomplished by suggestion rather than surgery.

would hear thoughts expressed by a naive three-year-old persona in a state of growing sexual excitement and using shockingly crude language. Such communication was unthinkable.

Obedience Training

> ***It has been known for many years by researchers in the field of hypnosis that terror, especially when created by physical torture, is brutally effective in enhancing the power and control of the hypnotic trance. The subject's suggestibility increases, and he becomes more compliant in order to bring an end to suffering.***
>
> **- Bain, *The Mind-control of Candy Jones*, p. 210**

The new, split-off personality had finished its pseudo-Oedipal training stage. Next she was subjected to a pseudo-anal stage: **obedience** training.

Aversive Conditioning

Their method for obedience training is called **operant conditioning.** This is the carrot-and-stick method. (They continued to work with her in a condition of drug-hypnosis.) The carrot was freedom from pain. The "stick" was an electric prod. **Aversive conditioning** is a technical term for the stick side of the operant equation. It means training by **punishment**. The prod taught her secret split to eliminate hesitation (**resistance**) and instantly obey any instruction given under hypnosis. This conditioning phase compelled the fish-child-slut to become a humanly intelligent stimulus-response machine.

The training was simply a series of difficult obedience tests given, to her, in the presence of the prod. If she showed the least hesitation, or resistance, to any command, the assistant touched her skin with the end of the thick metal stick. The shock-punishment was so swift, certain, and painful that her fear was stimulated to the greatest possible intensity.

Classic Pavlovian Conditioning—Aversive conditioning is a type of classic Pavlovian conditioning. Mowrer (1946) explained that aversive conditioning is a three-step process with the linking variable of fear:

- Stimulus (prod) causes fear, a powerful drive.
- Fear of prod produces linked fear of disobeying, which then also acts as a drive.
- Subject learns to obey.

In the language behaviorist conditioners use: fear of the shock had **generalized** in her mind to become fear of the behavior (failure to obey reflexively) that resulted in shock. In aversive conditioning an **alternative response** must be available which will not be punished. The fish-child-slut's only available safe response was to obey reflexively any hypnotic "suggestion": instantly, unthinkingly, mechanically, without analysis, evaluation, or deviation. Learning by **association**, she soon feared delayed, or incomplete, obedience as much as she feared the shock. She had dealt with her fear drive by learning to avoid behavior that caused the shock.

She learned to drink whatever she was told, eat whatever she was told, do whatever she was told. Disobedience to any hypnotic suggestion became unthinkable. They were the omnipotent masters and she obeyed—no matter how objectionable, outrageous, humiliating, or self-defeating their command was. In this prodded phase, she acquired a **habit** (reflex) of automatically performing the technician's hypnotic commands. In trance, she was now a kind of enfleshed robot.

The extremities of pain, shame, and useless anger she went through, in this stage and in other stages of her conditioning, also taught her unconscious mind helplessness. She **learned helplessness**. That further reinforced the power of the masters in her unconscious mind.

Artificial Superego: Rules

A mind does not normally split into just two parts. In natural personality splitting, the original mind tends to fracture into at least three parts: 1) the original personality, 2) a libido split, and 3) a superego split. The script foresaw that tendency. The operator now programmed a third major split. This one was an **artificial superego**, an unconscious balance to the fish-child-slut's libido-identity. She became the fish-child-slut-Rules.

The rules were all their rules. The fish-child-slut-Rules sector of the subject's mind now, more carefully than ever before, recorded and stored every word the masters spoke while she was under hypnosis. Those words were the Rules. Hypnotic obedience, action in conformity to the Rules, was now her unconscious mind's strongest deciding parameter. Rules ruled.

Her basic conditioning was done. They had built into her unconscious mind a servant (fish-child-slut-Rules) who would always do the master's bidding—even if painful, shameful, or self-injuring.

Electroconvulsive Shock

Inducing amnesia was an important* [CIA] *Agency goal. "From the ARTICHOKE point of view," states a 1952 document, "the greater the amnesia produced, the more effective the results."

John Marks, 1979, pp. 40-41

The two Operation Often programmers also wanted an **unbreachable amnesia** by which to cover the tracks of their invasion of the subject's mind. Keeping the methods of their secret technology securely hidden was a high priority for them—and also for the persons who had provided the tools of that technology to them. Amnesia caused by fear of unconscious threats, or by suggestions under narcohypnosis, is strong, but they knew an even more powerful method to generate amnesia. It would leave their conditioning implanted in her unconscious intact. It would erase all remaining conscious memory of the past weeks during which they had been conditioning her.

They used a portable electroshock machine to give her a series of electroshock knockouts.[1] Those electro-assaults caused a **retroactive amnesia** affecting memories of her conditioning period. The shocks might cause some brain damage. That was a reasonable price (in their view) to most fully ensure secrecy. The shocks also made her more suggestible, less able to resist, and (by the last of the series) rendered her bizarrely "calm." Thus it happened that, one morning, the subject found herself strangely calm—and unable to remember what had happened during the preceding weeks. There have been similar cases:[2]

> *15 March, 1995, two patients of New Orleans therapist Valerie Wolf testified before the Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments....they were permitted to testify because some of the names of CIA-connected researchers they mentioned were already familiar to the Committee....*
>
> [They] *remembered sessions when they were around eight years old that involved electric shocks, hypnosis, shots with needles...sexual abuse and even training in intelligence tradecraft. One case occurred from 1972 to 1976 and the other in 1958. This testimony was not covered by the media.*
>
> **(Daniel Brandt, *Prevailing Winds/3*)**

---

[1] John Marks said the CIA made portable electroshock machines available to its operators.

[2] The report in John DeCamp's *The Franklin Cover-up* that the CIA turned children into split-personality "sex slaves" is likely derived from this Operation Often programming technology.

Electroshock in Military Hypnoprogramming

Finding electroshock being used in association with hypnoprogramming was a total surprise to Bowart as he interviewed his military subjects. After hypnoconditioning, "David" woke up in a hospital bed. He did not remember the shock series. He did not remember the past six weeks. But he did remember waking up:

> *...Through the gray waters of amnesia he drifted, coming back from blind coma...David's body lay still in the military hospital bed...Then his eyes opened. "When I woke up," David said, "I couldn't remember anything. I couldn't remember how I'd gotten there or why I was in the hospital."* **(Bowart, David chapter)**

He asked the doctor why he was there. He was told that his treatment was because he had tried to commit suicide. He didn't believe that. He was then tested by two men doing a traditional nice cop, mean cop interrogation routine:

> *"One guy would ask me questions in an accusatory manner. Another guy would come over and say comforting things. Then the first guy would come back and accuse me again. Then the second guy would come and pat my arm and be friendly. I could remember their faces and their tone of voice, but I couldn't remember the content of what they were talking about."* **(*Ibid.*)**

Hypnotists have three routine tests for deep trance control: 1) suggested amnesia, 2) obedience to a complex posthypnotic suggestion, 3) negative hallucination. David's amnesia was complete so item one could be checked off. He obeyed the complex posthypnotic command to be able to remember his interrogators' faces and tone of voice, but none of the content of what they were talking about. Item two could be checked off.

The negative hallucination might have concerned the presence and activity of a fourth man in the room, someone whom David had a posthypnotic suggestion to neither see nor hear. If such a fourth person observed David's failure to see him, item three could also be checked off.

Before the ECT series commenced, Bowart's interviewees were emotionally upset, yelling enraged obscenities at an officer. But they were all totally **calm** after the shock treatments: "I was not resentful. I was passive." **(*Ibid.*)**

Psychic Driving

> ***Accompanying the interview was a photograph of a young woman wearing headphones and the caption described her listening to her repeated confession*** **...[Dr. Cameron]** ***was confronted with the "same problems as professional brainwashers" because his patients, like prisoners of the Communists, tended to resist and had to be broken down.***
>
> **- Thomas, *Journey into Madness*, p. 170**

Electroshock leaves subjects "confused, vulnerable, and open to hearing repeated messages." **(Weinstein, 137)** Cameron's overall concept of how to reprogram persons was a seductively simple two-step process. First he **blanked** the subject's brain with electroshock.[1] Then he attempted to drill what he considered a new, better personality into that supposed blank. His procedure required

(1) the breaking down of ongoing patterns of the patient's behavior by means of particularly intensive electroshocks (depatterning);

(2) the intensive repetition (sixteen hours a day for six or seven days) of prearranged verbal signals (psychic driving);

(3) during this period of intensive repetition, the patient is kept in partial sensory isolation... **(Cameron**

---

[1] He also called that process **depatterning.** This author calls it blowing them to hell with electric zaps.

> **quoted in Thomas, pp. 129-134)**

After being electroshocked, fish-child-slut-Rules heard certain simple messages repeated over and over. One of them was I WAS BAD BUT NOW I'M GOOD. Because of psychic driving, I WAS BAD BUT NOW I'M GOOD became the unconscious foundation thought for her conscious personality's new life as an unknowing hypnoprogrammed person. She learned to believe that her programmers had helped her by making those changes in her mind. They had "fixed" a "bad" person by turning her into a "good" person.

Dr. Cameron promoted this method of reprogramming people by making them listen to a repeated, recorded message. His goal was to get a message permanently implanted in the subject's unconscious mind. His psychic driving technique could be used to break a subject, or to implant a thought in the subject's mind.

Messages driven in over and over by repetition on TV or radio are an type of psychic driving called **advertising**. When you listen to the same song played over and over, you're allowing that song to program you—psychic driving. A thought that returns to mind again and again can be a symptom of **neurosis**. By that definition, psychic driving deliberately creates neurosis. Cameron also called it "beneficial brainwashing."

After Cameron believed that he had depatterned people's minds with electroshockings, he attempted to reprogram or "re-pattern" them using repeated, taped messages driven in by headphones which the subject was compelled to wear. He began researching psychic driving in 1953, well before portable cassette tape players with tiny earphones hit the market. Cameron's subjects wore primitive headsets with heavy ear coverings.

His method was depersonalized, technologized, and had potential for mass application. In his first grant application, to the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology, for money to research psychic driving , Cameron explained:

> *...by continued replaying of a cue communication, a persistent tendency to act in a way which can be predetermined can be established. In other words, by driving a cue communication one can without exception, set up in the patient a persisting tendency for that cue statement...to return to his own awareness....the dynamic implant...if reinforced by repeated driving, tends to activate more and more of the components of the relevant community of action tendencies...*

The CIA liked that. They started to fund his research.

Cue Statement: a Dynamic Implant

Cameron called a repeated message—such as I WAS BAD BUT NOW I'M GOOD—a **cue statement**. His goal was for the driven words, and their content, to spontaneously return—in an intensely persuasive way—into the subject's consciousness whenever a related thought arose. He wanted those words to be accepted and retained as deep-level programming. After that, they would be established as parameters by which the subject would base all her unconscious choices.

Cameron described psychic driving in an article titled "Repetition of Verbal Signals: Behavioral and Psychological Changes," *(American Journal of Psychiatry)*. He called the words that were drilled in, until they acquired a powerful life of their own in the subject's brain, a **dynamic implant**. **(Cameron, 1956, p. 503)** The cue statement was considered to be "dynamic" when it began to spontaneously return to the subject's conscious mind. The subject, if the psychic driving had been done under hypnosis, would have no conscious knowledge of where the thought came from, or why it came. If that ignorance continued, the message might stay dynamic for years, perhaps permanently.

The cue message could be selected from things that the patient had said in "therapy" or it could be created

> *...on the basis of our knowledge of the dynamics of the patient, and predetermined plans for changes in the personality of the patient.* **(Cameron, "*Further Report on the Effects of Repetition of Verbal Signals*," p. 210)**

He suggested choosing it "from one of the original areas from which the patient's current difficulties arise." **(Cameron, 1956)** It "may be based for instance, upon the patient's lifelong feelings of inadequacy or his passivity" **(Cameron, 1956, p. 503)** He said

> *...we have found that the best results can be obtained if we attempt to change a characteristic which has already been recognized by the patient as deviant and undesirable...he has wished to change it, he has already made many attempts both in reality and in fantasy to do so...* **(Cameron, 1962, p. 752)**

Therefore, the subject was made to listen, over and over, to a message about the past behavior or failure for which he felt the greatest burden of **guilt**. Cameron said that the cue message should deal with one topic only and be no longer than twenty seconds. (Later, he said five to seven seconds.)

In a second article on psychic driving (1962), Cameron and his associates distinguished between the effectiveness of a repeated message excerpted from the patient's own words, and a message in somebody else's words and voice. He had discovered that driving the subject's own words was much more effective: "...we have usually found our purpose achieved within about 30 minutes of driving." A message in another person's words "is best carried on over extended periods...for 10 to 12 hours a day..." The cue statement was her own words: I WAS BAD BUT NOW I'M GOOD.

Cameron's subjects listened in either a normal waking state, or in a drugged state, or under hypnosis, or under narcohypnosis:

> *Among the various ways of preparing the patient, one of the first used was to disinhibit him so that his defenses might be reduced. Sodium amytal was used in a number of cases...There is currently under exploration* [psychic] *driving under hypnosis...* **(Cameron, 1956, pp. 503-504)**

Grateful for Her "Cure"—In the final stage of brainwashing, a subject does what is ordered and thinks as she is supposed to think. She also experiences heartfelt gratitude for the effort the brainwashers spent on her "cure." In this final step of the conditioning of fish-child-slut-Rules, she was made to accept moral responsibility for causing that conditioning.

She was taught that her conditioning was the remedy for all her past failures—the acts she felt most guilty about (sex out-of-wedlock and terminated pregnancies). The programmers made her believe that their conditioning was really all her fault. She came to understand that it was a necessary and praiseworthy "treatment" to cure her of that otherwise incurable badness. She had been BAD. Now she was GOOD.

Psychic driving also taught her to feel (inescapably, forever) grateful to the two conditioners for their efforts on her behalf. Now she appreciated all the hard work the technician and his assistant had done—and all the risks they had taken in order to change her in those special ways and make her GOOD. After the psychic driving was finished, she felt profound, sincere gratitude.

Proud to Be a Good One—Psychic driving also made her PROUD of having been robotized, of being such a good machine, hidden inside a normal-appearing human woman. She had suffered a lot of pain, shame, and anger in the process of becoming that new creature. The programmers channeled all her negative emotions—especially the terrible humiliation—into a compensatory unconscious pride. She was proud of being such an incredibly, absolutely, mindlessly obedient hypno-robot. Fish-child-slut-Rules thus vicariously shared in the glory of the masters' amazing control over her.

Cover Personality

The programmers believed that they had repressed all the subject's memory of their conditioning process. They now gave the instructions which would set up her f**ront person**. CIA goalsetters called this her new personality. A secret agent has a cover identity. A hypnoprogrammed person who unknowingly lives a double life—one concealed behind chronic, systematized amnesia—has a **cover personality**.

Hypnotic suggestions set up the basic parameters of fish-child-slut-Rules's cover personality. She was to act 1) sane 2) normal, and 3) positive/cheerful. Those rules were designed to keep safely out of sight the psychological warping caused by her conditioning. The cover was maintained as a status quo in a natural way by unconscious defense mechanisms and rationalizations. The programmers wanted her always to act appropriately—unless they told her to act bizarre. The cover personality was carefully designed to block all expressions of repressed energy that did not serve the operators' purposes and to channel them into ways that did serve their purposes. It could not be perfect, but it came close.

The repressed, hidden artificial split was instructed to contain, and conceal, all that was abnormal, "insane," and despairing in her mind. It covered and hid all the pain, shame, guilt, anger, and ugliness in the secret life of a hypnoprogrammed person. The cover programming created a living mask that faced outside, toward the public (even her own family) and lied to them, preventing them from realizing the true circumstances of her life. The cover was also an inward barrier: a wall between self and self, that kept her conscious mind ignorant of all that her unconscious knew.

The subject's conscious mind had an illusion of completeness. She had no idea how much of her thinking was blocked from her awareness by that inner wall. She had no idea how much happened that she didn't know about. When she told lies (rationalizations), she didn't know they were lies.

Interlocking Amnesias

The Operation Often subject was entrapped by a variety of interlocking and mutually reinforcing amnesias, both physiological and psychological. Here follows a list of everything done to her with amnesia-generating potential:

1) She was given repeated doses of barbiturates.

2) Her trance was deep enough to result in natural dissociation.

3) She was subjected to deliberate disorientation: "down by the water...playing with the oyster man...", becoming fish, and then child (capacity regression).

4) The seemingly chaotic, senseless series of traumas that followed and the cruel ridicule by the programmers further disempowered her.

5) The fish-child was loaded with traumatic and shameful urges and experiences and phony "memories" of incestuous sexual experience. She became fish-child-slut. Painful and shameful thoughts and traumatic incidents during her conditioning pressured her toward a natural model of developing split personality.

6) The conditioning period was sharply unrelated to life as she had previously known it. She had **cognitive dissonance**. How can you believe a bizarre nightmare?

7) Fish-child-slut was urged to feel shame, guilt, and fear and then told, "Don't tell Mama"—her conscious mind being identified as "Mama." She became a split personality.

8) Their obedience training programmed her to absolute obedience to every command, including amnesia suggestions, using an electric cattle prod. She became fish-child-slut-Rules.

9) Fish-child-slut-Rules was made unable to communicate except in a socially intolerable manner (extreme profanity, sexual content, and while in a state of increasing sexual excitement).

10) "You will remember nothing" commands were repeated over and over to the deeply hypnotized subject.

11) An ECT series caused disorientation, functional amnesia, and greater susceptibility to suggested mind-splitting and forgetting.

12) By accepting I WAS BAD BUT NOW I'M GOOD and becoming grateful for the change in herself, the subject's unconscious further submitted to the repression.

Amnesia made the artificial structure now implanted in her brain, inaccessible to changes, or dismantling, by her conscious mind. If a conscious mind never encounters, experiences, or becomes aware of a problem in its unconscious programming, it is never able to correct it.

Shifting the Rapport

The technician then **shifted the rapport**. He shifted control of the subject, from himself, to the intended long-term operator, his assistant (her husband). He accomplished that by simply telling her under hypnosis to now take orders from her husband in the same manner as she had been taking them from him. Her husband, who was now also her operator, had no previous experience as a hypnotist. In hundreds of recreational and manipulative hypnotic episodes over the following decades, however, he became a skilled puppetmaster.

Her conditioning was finished. It had taken little more than six weeks. The mental machinery now built into her mind reacted to hypnotic instructions with reflexive automaticity, independent of her conscious will, beyond her conscious knowing. Anytime he wanted, the operator could call out his puppet, the alternate personality, his zombie, his robot. He could make it do whatever he wished. Afterwards, the conscious (cover) personality had no memory of that time.

Language: Backwards and Too Soft to Hear

In the coming years, the split was sometimes required to hear the operator's words as if they were spoken backwards. Sometimes, she was told to hear them as if spoken too softly to discern. Either way, they seemed incomprehensible to her. Teitelbaum reported using similar instructions as part of a sealing. He told the subject that if an unauthorized hypnotist

> *...starts to give you suggestions which might have a tendency to place you into a trance state, you will suddenly find that you cannot understand a word he is saying. It will be as if he is speaking a foreign tongue which you have never heard before and this condition will last as long as he is giving you such suggestions...* **(Teitelbaum, pp. 105-6)**

In the case of fish-child-slut-Rules, however, the instruction to hear language as if it was incomprehensible was applied to her own operator's speech while she was in trance. Perceiving only seemingly incomprehensible or inaudible language, she couldn't know what his instructions were to her. She couldn't evaluate them, or mentally prepare herself for them, or alleviate them—not in the smallest degree. She had no opportunity to know, criticize, or remember the operator's words.

The meaning of the words, however, was recorded perfectly at the level of automatic function in her brain. The cue triggered mindless, reflexive, machinelike obedience carried out by that unconscious sector of her brain. Amnesia, plus the incomprehensible or inaudible language, caused all his hypnotic commands to hit her out of nowhere. Whatever he suggested arrived at the cued moment of implementation directly out of the amnesic abyss, full scale, untouched by experience's tempering comment, or feedback adjustments, or any awareness of where her behavior came from and why it was happening.

Using the language "too soft to hear" routine, he could easily, **covertly reprogram** her in the presence of observers. Neither she, nor they, would realize that she'd been dropped into trance, reprogrammed, then pulled out again. The first cue shifted her to a waking hypnosis in which her behavior would appear normal though she was now in the suggestible state. He would give his instructions. She would have no conscious knowledge of their content because the words would sound too softly spoken to hear. Her unconscious, however, registered them clearly. Then he gave the signal that shifted her back to a normal state of consciousness. As with the opening cue for this sequence, the signal to exit from trance was also unknown and unrecognizable to her conscious mind, unremarkable to any onlookers.

Information, Interviews, and Incidents

John Marks Uncovers Secrets, Then Hides Them Again

☑

"They Wouldn't Hesitate to Kill You"

☑

Of Patsies and Assassins

☑

Mind-to-Mind Trance Inductions

> ***If this government ever became a tyranny...the technological capacity that the intelligence community has given the government could enable it to impose total tyranny, and there would be no way to fight back, because the most careful effort to combine together in resistance to the government, no matter how privately it was done, is within the reach of the government to know. Such is the capability of this technology...***
>
> ***I don't want to see this country ever go across the bridge. I know the capacity that is there to make tyranny total in America, and we must see to it that this agency and all agencies that possess this technology operate within the law and under proper supervision, so that we never cross over that abyss. That is the abyss from which there is no return.***
>
> **- Idaho Senator Frank Church, Chairman, Senate Intelligence Committee, *"Meet the Press,"* National Broadcasting Company, Washington, D.C.; Merkle Press, 1975, *transcript* of August 17, 1975**

John Marks Uncovers Secrets, Then Hides Them Again

The CIA managers intended that their secrets of mind-control research would be buried forever. In 1963, they announced that behavioral research had almost ended and they shredded many records. In 1973, the shredding of all remaining CIA records of mind-control research was ordered.

In 1974, however, the *New York Times* printed Seymour Hersh's report on Operation Chaos, a secret (and illegal) CIA program which spied on "dissident" (antiwar and pro-civil rights) Americans.[1] News had also leaked about CIA researchers giving LSD to unsuspecting customers in government-operated "brothels" in San Francisco and New York.

---

[1] Actually, "watch list" activities had involved the Secret Service, FBI, DIA, and NSA, as well as the CIA. As was to become a pattern, the CIA took the heat—a favor which the other agencies would then owe in return.

Congress demanded an investigation. President Ford asked Vice-President Nelson A. Rockefeller to chair the Commission of CIA Activities Within the United States. Eventually, the Commission released a report to the President. It later was released to the public. The release of the document was a token effort designed to quiet public concern.

Marks Files FOIA Request

John Marks was a CIA watcher employed by the American Civil Liberties Union. While carefully reading the report, he noticed the line: “The drug program was part of a much larger CIA program to study possible means for controlling human behavior.” The Freedom of Information Act had been passed recently. Theoretically, it could be applied to the CIA. June 30, 1975, Marks filed a Freedom of Information Act request for CIA documents dealing with the study of “possible means for controlling human behavior.”

The CIA said there were no such records. They said,

> *All the records concerning the program were ordered destroyed in 1973, including a total of 152 separate files...all persons directly involved...were either out of the country and not available for interview, or were deceased.* **(Bain, Appendix 2, p. 265)**

Marks kept asking. It took him (and the ACLU) two years and a legal case. Some say it was only because of President Carter’s quiet support that Marks finally got possession of any documents. He was given seven boxes of MKULTRA financial records which had been overlooked in the CIA’s earlier paper shreddings, plus three boxes of old ARTICHOKE documents.

Before the documents were released for controlled viewing by prescreened persons, CIA censors went through them. They held back some pages and lavishly applied the opaque black stripe of SECRET onto those which were released. They obliterated almost all the names except Gottlieb’s. (He was obviously selected to handle the coming outcry).

The released documents were only 1950s goalsetting memos and reports of failed experiments, so Marks didn’t learn the whole story. Only a few insiders at the CIA knew it all, and they have never told. The documents he did obtain, however, astonished the few researchers who were permitted to view them in a guarded reading room set up in a Hyatt Regency Hotel room in Rosslyn, Virginia.

Martin A. Lee and Bruce Schlain came daily, for months, and read all the documents they could find about behavior modification programs—including those of the Army, Navy, and Air Force. They quoted many useful document passages, found in that room, in their 1985 history titled, *Acid Dreams: The CIA, LSD, and the Sixties Rebellion*. John Marks’s 1979 book, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate* was also based on the Hyatt documents, as were several newspaper articles.

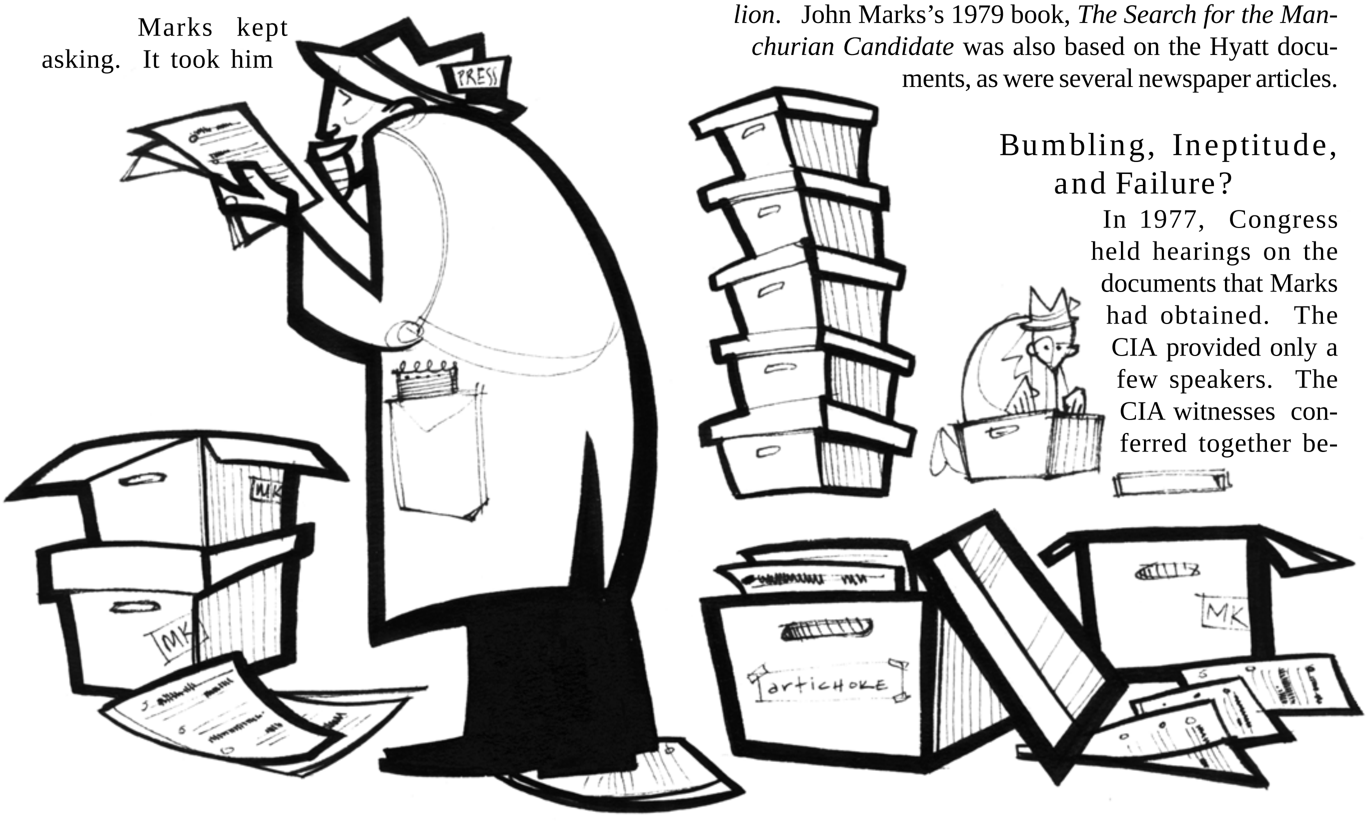

Bumbling, Ineptitude, and Failure?

In 1977, Congress held hearings on the documents that Marks had obtained. The CIA provided only a few speakers. The CIA witnesses conferred together beforehand on what to say, and then rehearsed their testimony with Chairman Ted Kennedy. As a result,

> *Throughout the hearings the senators listened to one account after another of bumbling and clumsiness on the part of Agency personnel...could have been describing a Three Stooges routine...This kind of buffoonery proved to be an effective public relations ploy for the CIA, deflecting serious scrutiny...By stressing ineptitude the Agency conveyed an all too human air. After all, why prosecute a bunch of regular Joes for fooling around with chemicals they could never hope to understand?* **(Lee and Schlain, *Acid Dreams*)**

When John Marks finally finished writing his history of BLUEBIRD, CHATTER, ARTICHOKE, and MKULTRA, he also presented those research efforts as bumbling, inept, and failed—a comedically inadequate, doomed effort that fell far short of Agency goals. Over and over, Marks pointed to inanities and mistakes, depicting ludicrous scenes which aroused contempt for the agency.[1]

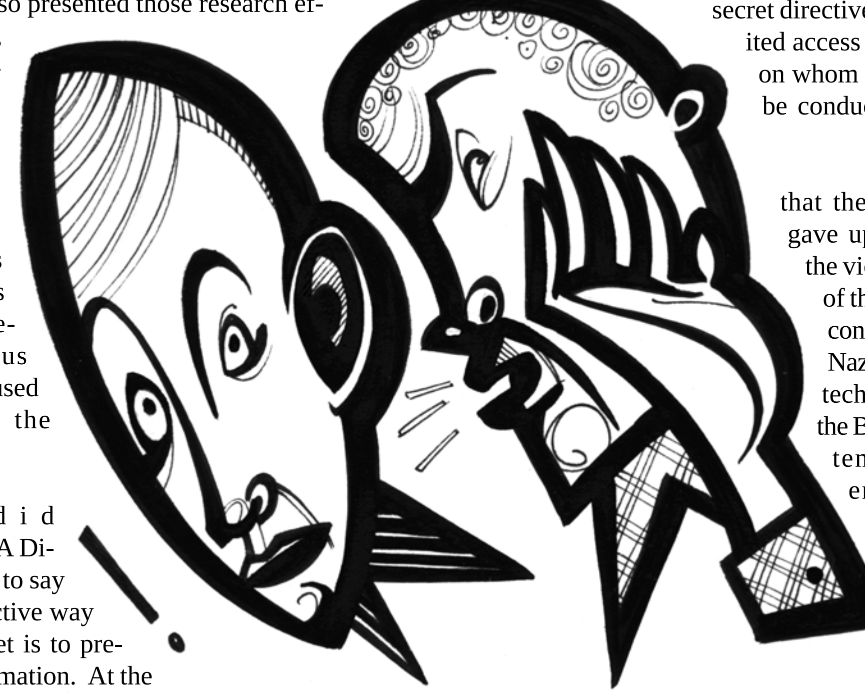

Why did Marks do that? CIA Director Dulles used to say that the most effective way to disguise a secret is to pretend to share information. At the book's end, Marks described a personal interview with another head CIA figure. He said that director told him the CIA never succeeded and finally gave it all up because it was not possible.

Did Marks really believe that? Or was he threatened into helping keep Agency secrets? Or did he join the mind-controlled? Somewhere, along the way from the court case to the publication of his book, John Marks changed. Despite all the good information that he had made available to the public, in the end, he told it the way the Company wanted it told: He said they failed; they gave up; it wasn't possible. Because of his previous success at uncovering and making public their secrets, most of his readers accepted that conclusion. Therefore, publication of his book—although it did get out some shocking new information about CIA research—effectively ended a period of public and Congressional heat focused on the Agency's mind-control secrets.

The Big Lie—Low-life European criminals like Adam, Bergen, and Nielsen created unknowing, exploited hypnotic subjects. Sophisticated European and American hypnosis researchers created hundreds more amnesic subjects in two centuries of enthusiastic research. For over fifty years, since World War II, psychiatric researchers employed by U.S. government agencies worked to improve those early hypnoprogramming technologies. They were funded with $millions, urged on by secret directives, and allowed unlimited access to "terminal" subjects on whom any experiment might be conducted.

Do you *really* believe that they couldn't do it and gave up? If you do, you're the victim of another branch of the new science of mind control: **propaganda**. The Nazis also used the Big Lie technique. If you repeat the Big Lie loud enough, often enough, and long enough—and if you publicly revile, or suppress, dissenting voices—almost everybody, eventually, will believe it.

The truth is that the MKULTRA hypnoprogramming research was not a failure. It was a success. Public belief that it was a failure was part of its success.

---

[1] Lee and Schlain, on the other hand, reported the CIA research with appropriate seriousness.

A Brief, Strange Phone Conversation

I called John Marks around 1987. I identified myself as a nonfiction writer who was researching the case of Cameron's Canadian experimental subjects (then pending against the CIA). Their lawyer had told me that John's publisher planned a new release of his book when the case came to trial.

John Marks told me that he had never touched the subject of mind-control again, except to write a revised introduction for the new edition.[1]

Then I asked, "Have you ever heard of a case of a Manchurian Candidate? After your book came out, I'd guess lots of people contacted you to tell you more..."

"Yes," he said, "but I didn't believe any of them. I don't believe they ever succeeded at it. I don't believe it can be done. Look. I'm very busy," he snapped at me. "I don't have time for this kind of thing. *Are you one?*" His tone suddenly had turned tense, harsh, hostile—as if unconsciously warning me.

"NO!" (I lied. If "Manchurian candidate" means any supposed-to-be-amnesic hypnoprogrammed person, rather than one who is specifically programmed to kill, I am one.)

"Good-bye," he said. He slammed down the receiver with a force that left my ear tingling.

What an odd "interview" that was. His fight to free telling documents from the CIA had seemed to be the work of a free mind. His book, however, described a failed effort; and I knew that was not true. And he said he had not believed a single one of the persons who contacted him. Walter Bowart would have interviewed at least some of them in depth. John Marks never touched the subject again. Why did he change?

And why did he hang up so abruptly? Was he protecting himself? Was he protecting the Agency? Was he protecting me?

"They Wouldn't Hesitate to Kill You"

> **[NSA agents]** ***are authorized by executive order to spy on anyone...This surveillance network is completely disguised and hidden from the public...NSA personnel serve in quasi-public positions in their communities and run cover business and legitimate businesses...The operations independently run by them can sometimes go beyond the bounds of law...NSA DOMINT*** **[Domestic Intelligence]** ***has the ability to assassinate US citizens covertly or run covert psychological control operations to cause subjects to be diagnosed with ill mental health.***
>
> **John St. Clair Akwei[2]**

From 1992 to 1994, I spent most of my time researching and writing on gardens, herbs, and livestock for the ninth edition of my *Encyclopedia of Country Living*. But, one lovely summer afternoon, I was catapulted back into the mind-control topic. I had driven miles to interview a plant expert. She and I sat in the living room of her lovely country home in the coastal mountains. We were talking about growing plants, green and beautiful. After a lull in the conversation, she asked me what I was now doing with my life besides revising the garden book.

On impulse, I told her about my mind-control research, about Candy, and about Bowart's military hypnoprogramming cases in which an electroshock series was used near the end of conditioning to reinforce suggested amnesia. I said, "They all woke up unable to remember the previous six weeks."

She looked astonished. She said, "You have to meet my husband, "Joe" [a pseudonym]." She led me out of the house. We walked together through the dense, cool,

---

1. The trial was canceled by an out-of-court deal. I think the new edition was not published.
2. The quote is from a document about NSA structure and its covert operations. It was submitted as evidence for a lawsuit against the National Security Agency filed at the U.S. Courthouse in Washington DC by John St. Clair Akwei (Civil Action 92-0449). Akwei said that individual U.S. citizens are sometimes targeted in this way by covert, independently-operating NSA agents. **The Australian magazine, *Nexus*, reprinted it in full in its April-May, 1996, issue, p. 17. A U.S. newsletter called *Taking Aim* reprinted it from *Nexus*. Substantial excerpts are in *Project L.U.C.I.D.* by Texe Marrs.**

and quiet rainforest and soon found him. Joe was a tall, thin, serious-looking man. He was no longer young, but still strong and athletic-looking. He was just then directing a beautiful draft horse stallion in the act of dragging a log.

"Joe": A Case History

His wife introduced me to him. He shook my hand and said apologetically, "I probably won't remember your name. I can't remember names."

"Don't worry," I reassured him, "I can't remember names either—or faces."

Trouble Remembering Names and Faces (Prosopagnosia)

Electroshocking leaves no obvious telltale physical marks, but it may result in difficulty remembering names and/or faces. It causes "...gaps for events long preceding the course of [ECT] treatment...and even more common was a failure to name or even recognize old acquaintances." **(Pratt, *Amnesia*, p. 231)** There may be permanent brain damage after electroshock, depending on the amount of shock administered, and the way in which the shock was delivered. Subjects have reported loss of memory, skill, or knowledge—especially loss of ability to recognize faces.

> *Oddly,...memory for deliberately learned material, like lists of nonsense syllables, seems to be less impaired by shock than memory for the stuff of everyday life, such as recognition of the faces of one's friends.* **(Scheflin & Opton, p. 381)**

Difficulty in remembering faces is called **prosopagnosia**. Jeanine Huard, one of Cameron's experimental subjects, had prosopagnosia:

> *She also described an unusual symptom in that she is unable to recognize familiar people in different surroundings...the disturbance would appear to lie in the ability to recall or associate a face with the memory of the person when the context in which the person has been known changes. I knew that such a symptom had been reported by one of Cameron's other patients.* **(Weinstein, p. 159)**

The other patient was Dr. Mary Morrow: "Like other victims of Cameron, Mary was left with neurological damage...she suffers from prosopagnosia..." **(Weinstein, p. 167)**

Joe unhitched the huge animal from the log it had been pulling, led it into the corral, and turned it loose with a gift of chow. I could tell he really liked animals. We waited at the house until he came back. Then my hosts set up lawn chairs in their yard and we sat there, surrounded by fragrant flower beds, talking.

Joe had never heard of Bowart's book about military hypnoprogramming or Bain's book about the CIA hypnoprogramming experiments on Candy Jones. What he knew was his own personal history. This quiet, peaceable man told me that he had been in the Army. He was a black belt in karate by hobby and an MP by assignment. He was stationed in Germany when he started thinking about the ethics of the war (Viet Nam) more and more. "I didn't like it," he said.

Finally, he decided he had to do something toward stopping it. He had to take a stand. He was a man for whom absolute values of conscience mattered absolutely. He decided: "After being an MP for two years, I could no longer go on duty and uphold their laws."

The Army's response was first to shanghai and then to brainwash him. Brainwashing is most effective when it starts with a shock kidnapping. That prevents the victim from getting his mental defenses in place beforehand. Therefore, the five kidnappers arrived suddenly, late at night, and told him to come along. Joe didn't like the feel of it and decided he wasn't going. He told me he fought like "hell" and took out four of them temporarily. The fifth man got him.[1]

"Before my imprisonment began," Joe said, "the Provost Marshall read me the rules: 'A soldier will receive a minimum of two hours of sleep per twenty-four," and so on. The officer pointed out in a threatening manner that, although Joe had the right to food, "the regulations didn't say whether meals would come all at once or spaced out."

He said, "They locked me in a room by myself. There were five soldiers who guarded me day and night on shifts...They started systematically driving me crazy...No sleep—sometimes twenty hours of work straight. Maybe two hours of sleep per 24. No consistency." Joe spent the next three months alone in that cell except for the changing shifts of tormenters guarding him.

Both the CIA and the military were very interested in brainwashing research as part of their general research on every possible mind-control method. In a military-sponsored symposium on brainwashing, one article mentioned that:

---

[1] In addition to the long-standing MKULTRA concept of a hypnoprogrammed courier, there also was a long-standing concept of the hypnoprogrammed fighter/assassin. They now knew just how good Joe could be in a real fight.

> *Various writers have associated the compliance effected by Communist captors with phenomena observed in the laboratory; e.g., effects reported following experimental work in pharmacology, hypnosis, sleep deprivation, sensory deprivation, semi-starvation...as well as in social-psychological investigations of persuasion and group conformity pressures.* **(Blake in Biderman, p. 2)**

Therefore, there had been experiments that included observation on sleep deprivation and semi-starvation. Was Joe an unknowing subject in one of those experiments? Or was he on an operational conveyer belt, being readied for the next stage? An army memo on "interrogation" techniques, dated September 6, 1961, reported:

> *Stressing techniques employed included silent treatment before or after EA 1729* [LSD] *administration, sustained conventional interrogation prior to EA 1729 interrogation, deprivation of food, drink, sleep or bodily evacuation, sustained isolation prior to EA 1729 administration, hot-cold switches in approach, duress 'pitches,' verbal degradation and bodily discomfort, or dramatized threats to subject's life or mental health.* **(quoted in Lee and Schlain, p. 39)**

Joe could not remember what happened after being locked in the room. All he knew was, "I woke up in a hospital bed. I couldn't remember anything. I asked a doctor what happened to me. He said I'd had an electroshock treatment. I still can't remember anything about being in the hospital before I woke up there."

"How much time were you in the hospital that you can't remember?" I asked.

"About six weeks," Joe said, "but it doesn't show on my army record that I was ever in the hospital at all."

He woke up feeling calm. He calmly asked the doctor why he was in the hospital. The doctor told him it was because he had tried to commit suicide.

Joe said, "I didn't believe that, about the suicide."

"The doctor made you think there was just one electroshock treatment?" I asked.

He nodded.

"Well, don't believe that either," I said. "It would have been a series of electroshock treatments. I don't think anybody gets just one of those. Especially if they can't remember the past six weeks."

Driving Dogs "Crazy"—When Joe was released from the hospital, he was discharged from the military. For the next ten years, he trained attack dogs. (I got the impression that he was still somehow still connected with the military during that dog-training time.) I asked, "How did you train the dogs?"

"You start by making them crazy," Joe said.

"I don't understand."

"You tell the dog, 'Sit.' It sits, and you praise it. It feels like it understands. Then you tell it 'Sit,' and it sits, and you reprimand it. You do this hundreds and hundreds of times. You push the dog to **confusion.** The purpose of this is so that the dog will do whatever you say no matter what, under all conditions. You are training the dog to NOT think for itself. A sentry dog or police dog has to be willing to bite *anybody*. We were driving the dogs crazy and then bringing them back. It took at least a month. Lots of dogs washed out. We got rid of them. A washout starts doing things for itself. They couldn't go crazy and not go crazy."

So half of the dogs turned into "crazy" robots and *always* obeyed. The dogs that resolved the conflict by thinking for themselves were the program "washouts," the conditioning "failures." Reflexively, unconditionally obedient dogs were the programmer's ideal achievement, his "successes."

The same concept could be applied to people.

Difficult Civilian Adjustment—After ten years of training dogs, Joe seems to have really become a civilian. He had a hard time adjusting. He was fortunate, however, in one important way. He had won the heart of his plant-loving woman along the way, and she had stuck with her quiet, tense man through all his difficulties.

When Joe first went job hunting, he didn't know that his conditioning had caused him to become allergic to authority.[1] But he soon realized that. Every job he worked soon triggered a mysterious psychological revolt in him. Somebody would give him a normal, reasonable command—

---

[1] Persons who are unconsciously overburdened with CONTROL, such as subjects of hypnoprogramming, may become negatively reactive to control scenarios. They then have difficulty enduring normal forms of control in their conscious life.

and it would put him into a rage. He would have to get out of there. For some reason, he could not stand anybody "controlling" him.

After Joe realized that he no longer could work under somebody else's authority, he found a way to be self-employed. That solved the problem. He was all right now. He and his wife had each other. And he made a living as a horse-logger, toiling alone in the forest.

Joe Gives a Warning

I had no experience interviewing a living, in-front-of-me, survivor of mind-control technologies. Up to this time, my research had all been in books and articles. I hadn't gone looking for Joe, or anybody like him. But there he was, squarely in my path—as if God had placed this army veteran (who had experienced some military mind-control technology) there for a reason.

Talking to him, asking him questions, made me feel tense. It was very hard for me, requiring great effort, because something deep inside me was resisting my attempts to question him. Joe also was tense and under tight control. He wasn't openly resisting my curiosity, but he wasn't volunteering much information. I'd ask a question, haltingly, briefly, because that was the best that I could manage. He answered each: haltingly, briefly, as if that was as much information as he could get out.

My brain felt frozen. I felt an unfamiliar inner warning, a fearful, almost mentally-paralyzing inhibition against interviewing this particular person. Was there an item in my, and his, programming script that **forbade subjects to discuss with each other their conditioning events and hypnoprogrammed aspects of their lives**?

I fought it. I had a lot of experience fighting and overcoming that type of inner resistance. I struggled to ask more questions. Joe was a true fighter, too. He struggled to answer them. But all the time I was talking to him, I really just wanted to get out of there. I yearned to make the confusing disturbance in my head stop.

My last question was, "Would you mind if I used your name in my book about hypnoprogramming?" I was using others' real names. I figured that real names would give my work more credibility.

For a moment, Joe didn't answer. I saw a shadow come over his face. What was it? Was it a scowl because I had asked such a thing of him? Or was his expression fear? Then he composed himself. He nodded agreement.

"Thank you," I said. I had handled all I could that day. I wanted to go. I made my farewells, stood up, and walked away from Joe and his wife. They remained sitting on the lawn chairs surrounded by beautiful flower garden on that lovely, sunny spring afternoon in the Western high mountains.

As I walked toward my car, which was parked nearby, Joe suddenly rose and followed me. I stopped, turned, and looked at him, wondering, as he caught up to me. We were beyond his wife's hearing.

He said softly, **"If they knew what you're trying to do, they wouldn't hesitate to kill you."**

I looked hard at him. Joe was definitely not mentally ill, not paranoid. He didn't say anything else. I didn't either. I nodded acceptance of his warning, turned away again, and walked on. This time, he stayed behind.

As I walked, I realized—with sudden shame—how very much I had asked of Joe when I requested to use his real name in my book.[1] Yet he had agreed. I understood now that, before he agreed, Joe accepted in his mind the probability of a death penalty for being named as having talked to me. But Joe had ethics. He had the absolute kind created by God, not the situational kind made by governments or individuals for their own convenience. He was willing to sacrifice his life for truth. Was that sensible? practical? No. But it was right.

I wondered who "they" were. CIA? NSA? Military? I didn't ask. I never went back to visit Joe and his wife again. What I had to learn from them, I had already learned. I had no way of establishing if what Joe feared was real. I only knew the enemy I knew. That's why I talked it over with R.J.....

R.J. Thinks They Killed His Author-Friend

I had a friend and neighbor, at that time, R.J. [another pseudonym; he asked me not to use his real name]. He was a retired Viet Nam veteran, Special Forces. (He never told me exactly what he did in the military. Maybe he didn't remember. Maybe he couldn't say.) When I got home from the visit with Joe and his wife, I asked R.J. about Joe, and about Joe's warning to me.

R.J. nodded silently, and looked away. Then he started talking about a woman he once knew who wrote a book about the "delayed stress" problems of returned Viet Nam veterans. He said, "It happened in the 70s She was just starting out on a publicity tour, right after her book came out. She died in a Seattle hotel room. I read about it in the newspaper. I don't believe her death was suicide. I think they killed her."

---

[1] I do not want Joe to be at any risk of being killed, so I did not use his or his wife's real identities here.

There it was again—"they." Murder or not, her death got rid of the book. Without its author promoting it in the media, sales plummeted. It was soon out of print, its message forgotten.

A man in my writer's critique group who had read numerous books on the Kennedy assassinations gave me a similar warning: "If a person gets too talkative, he gets killed."

But didn't we live in a modern democracy? There were laws—and a Constitution. And wasn't civilian authority dominant over that of the military in this country? I had always assumed that no law authorized covert murders by any government organization or its agents. Was that belief incorrect? Or did we no longer have rule of law in this country? Joe, R.J., and my friend in the critique group were all so sure that I could only hope to live until my book was finished—and that I could finish it only if I worked in secret.

I decided to heed their warnings. If they were wrong, it would not hurt to research quietly and privately. If they were right, it was the only way I could complete this work. Thereafter, I worked in greater isolation and confided in fewer people.

Over the coming years, I learned that it can be permissible for our government to "use any means necessary" to protect what is declared "Secret." I learned that "counter-intelligence" personnel have been used to covertly suppress unwanted civilian knowings. I learned that military power can supercede civilian power. I uncovered bits of evidence suggesting that certain agencies or individuals in government have used deceit, disinformation, even assassination, to maintain power and manipulate political events.

Of Patsies and Assassins

I know of no safe depository of the ultimate powers of society but the people themselves, and if we think them not enlightened enough to exercise their control with a wholesome discretion, the remedy is not to take it from them, but to inform their discretion by education...I have sworn upon the altar of God eternal hostility against every form of tyranny over the mind of man.

Thomas Jefferson

In July, 1953, the Director of Security for ARTICHOKE sent a memorandum restating the goal of their hypnoprogramming research. The restated goal was "...the development of means for the control of the activities and mental capacities of individuals." The memo designated a subgoal: "attempting to have a hypnotized subject kill someone while in a trance." **(Lee & Schlain, *Acid Dreams*, p. 28)**

Gittinger told John Marks that the CIA could not create a programmed **assassin**. Gittinger said that there were "more reliable ways to kill people...'a well-trained person could do it without all this mumbo-jumbo'..." **(John Marks, 1979, p. 191)** Nevertheless,

> *...he acknowledges that he does not know. If the ultimate experiments were performed they would have been handled with incredible secrecy.* [Gittinger] *...admits that none of the arguments he uses against a conditioned assassin would apply to a programmed 'patsy'...the subject would remember everything that happened to him and be amnesic only for the fact the hypnotist ordered him to do these things....* **(Ibid.)**

A **patsy**, in this scenario, would be a carefully trained hypnorobot who obeyed complex posthypnotic suggestions. The consciously-unknowing, innocent victim would be publicly blamed for the crime: a patsy.

History is clear about the tensions between the Kennedy brothers and CIA leadership. After John Fitzgerald Kennedy was elected President of the United States, he appointed his brother, Robert Fitzgerald Kennedy, as his Attorney General. First, Bobbie fearlessly took on the Mafia. Very soon JFK and RFK, both, also had serious and escalating disagreements with CIA heads.

After the aborted Bay-of-Pigs "invasion," Kennedy fired the Deputy Director of the CIA, General Charles Cabell, who had been in charge of that debacle. Cabell had worked closely with Allen Dulles in the CIA leadership for nine years. Cabell's fury at Kennedy became well known in Washington circles. His brother was the mayor of Dallas.

Despite Cabell's firing, the CIA remained unrepentant. It still did not respond to attempts by President Kennedy to control its bad habits of independent adventures in foreign policy and secrets kept from the Administration. Kennedy then dumped the CIA's legendary Director, Alan Dulles, as a second lesson. JFK said he needed "a man, not a legend" in that office. The man Kennedy appointed to replace Dulles was J. McCone, the only CIA Director who seems ever to have seriously believed that the Agency should respect moral principles.

Richard Helms and the other MKULTRA insiders remained. Did JFK know about their mind-control research and the terminal subjects? The President had the legal right to be informed of all the CIA's activities. But the leaders of that Agency were men who made a career specialty of breaking ALL the rules. They did not tell the President more than they wanted. They did not tell McCone either.

It was McCone's Inspector General, John Earman, who discovered MKULTRA, but only as a project title. He learned about the safehouses, on his own, while taking a routine look at TSS. Earman was deeply disturbed by the little he had learned. Helms defended the program, "We have to keep up with Soviet advances in this field."

Kennedy told an aide, "The CIA will have to be dealt with." Two weeks later, he was assassinated in Dallas. The day after he became President, Lyndon Johnson returned the CIA to business as usual. Jacqueline Kennedy might have made trouble, but a post-assassination series of electroshock "treatments" calmed her. Helms no longer had to defend or explain the MKULTRA research. CIA man George White managed safehouses until 1966, when he shut them down and retired.

Numerous citizen researchers emerged after the assassination and challenged the official "lone-deranged-assassin" versions of those killings. The citizen researchers privately undertook the detective work which was not being publicly accomplished. They looked for evidence, interviewed witnesses, and evaluated what they found. They wrote articles and books to share what they learned with other researchers and with the public.[1]

Penn Jones, editor of a Texas weekly, was one such researcher. He gave away 10,000 copies of his own book on the assassination of JFK at a 1969 rock music festival. Jones also kept statistics on the deaths of persons who would have been important court witnesses. One by one, they perished in suicides, auto accidents, and seeming heart attacks. Actuarial experts calculated the odds, of all those deaths occurring in so short a time, as being in the trillions.

The untimely deaths of so many of the persons who did it, or were involved with it, or announced they had an investigative breakthrough about it, made it more difficult for citizen researchers to establish whether the various accused were patsies or murderers, hypnoprogrammed or regular criminals, sane or mentally ill.

In the next election, in an act of little understood and poorly appreciated personal and political courage, Robert F. Kennedy ran for President of the United States. RFK undoubtedly knew that the CIA was implicated in his brother's assassination. He must have realized the risk he was taking. If he became President, RFK would predictably resume the shake-up of the CIA which his dead brother had begun. Those persons responsible for the assassination of JFK also surely realized that RFK would also endeavor to bring the guilty persons to justice.

---

1. The *Assassination Please Almanac* (1977) is an annotated bibliography edited by Tom Miller, with introductions and essays compiled by other persons associated with the Assassination Information Bureau.

They waited until the night that Robert F. Kennedy won the California primary. Up to then, his election was not certain. After the landslide triumph in California, however, it was obvious that he would be the next president. That night, at the victory celebration, the candidate was assassinated by a man of Middle Eastern descent who had a curious double name, Sirhan Sirhan.

An era of great democracy had plunged into the darkness of a Machiavellian style of settling political competitions. Jefferson's concept of government by an informed electorate choosing representatives in honest and open elections had been usurped by conflict resolution in murderous palace wars reminiscent of the Roman Empire's declining years.

The Warren Commission was supposedly convened to investigate all the evidence which that army of civilian researchers had uncovered. It was largely made up of persons having intelligence or military backgrounds. Alan Dulles was the member who controlled which witnesses would testify. Nevertheless, the volumes of recorded Warren Commission evidence contain much that supports a conspiracy explanation of the president's murder. The Commission, however, ignored and rejected their own evidence. They concluded that Oswald was the only responsible person.

The **assassination researchers** struggled on, trying to learn the truth, and to make that truth known. Jim Garrison, New Orleans District Attorney, in whose jurisdiction Lee Harvey Oswald had once lived, read every page of the shelf of books which was the Warren Commission's official report. That reading convinced Garrison that the Commission was part of the cover-up because it had obviously not identified the true murderer of the President.

Garrison independently undertook a new official investigation. He used his FBI and military background, the investigators and investigative resources available from his job, plus dogged sleuthing, to uncover the truth. He badly wanted to bring the true culprits to trial and make America be America again. Although both Garrison's life and reputation were threatened, he persevered. In the end, he definitively traced the assassination of President John F. Kennedy to persons linked to the CIA and other secret agencies. His evidence made clear that Oswald had been just a patsy for the real murderers of President Kennedy.

"What the hell do you call this?" a puzzled friend asked Garrison of the findings.

"A coup d'etat," the D.A. grimly replied.

The D.A.'s attempt to prosecute the true conspirators was not successful. He then wrote a book, *On the Trail of the Assassins*, to make his evidence public. (That book may have inspired the Oliver Stone film, *JFK*.)

Lee Harvey Oswald

Lee Harvey Oswald protested, "I'm just a patsy. I didn't kill anyone." Edward J. Epstein's book *Legend: The Secret World of Lee Harvey Oswald* was based on FOIA documents and Epstein's interviews with 150-plus witnesses who were not interviewed by the Warren Commission.

> *From these new documents and witnesses a startlingly different picture emerges of the secret world in which Oswald lived his final years. It is a world of military and political secrets, inextricably interwoven with spies, counterspies, and soldiers of fortune. George De Mohrenschildt, the mysterious figure who arranged significant portions of Oswald's life, granted the author a four-day interview in 1977 to tell his story...the interview was never completed—De Mohrenschildt was found shot to death, an apparent suicide, on the second day...* **(Legend: jacket text)**

Jack Ruby

Jack Ruby shot Oswald dead before he could be brought to trial. He was part of a crowd of citizens which was allowed to be present as Oswald was being moved from one site to another. Jim Garrison established that Ruby also had many connections to the intelligence world. Ruby's interrogation was a farce.

> *Only an understanding of the techniques and applications of mind control could begin to bring meaning to the fragmented ramblings of Jack Ruby.*
>
> *On June 7, 1964, Jack Ruby was questioned in jail in Dallas, Texas, by Earl Warren and Gerald Ford. In that session Ruby continually pleaded for a lie-detector test or for sodium pentothal.*
>
> *Said Ruby: "I would like to be able to get a lie-detector test or truth serum of what motivated me to do what I did at that particular time..."* **(Bowart, p. 197)**

Did Ruby hope that truth serum (barbiturate) would penetrate sealing and reveal his hypnoprogramming? If Ruby killed Oswald as a result of posthypnotic suggestion, he was not a patsy. He was a **hypnoprogrammed assassin**.

Milton Kline, a prominent New York experimental hypnotist, who did unpaid consulting for Sears and other

CIA researchers, said he refused to "cross the ethical line." He was certain, however, that the secret agencies had crossed it. He was also certain that a "Manchurian Candidate" could be created.

> *"It cannot be done by everyone," says Kline, "It cannot be done consistently, but it can be done."...* [Kline added that] *he could create a patsy in three months; an assassin would take him six.* **(J. Marks, p. 187)**

The government chose Dr. Louis Jolyon West to do the sanity evaluation of Ruby, and to be his defense psychiatrist. West was a longtime insider in military/intelligence mind-control research. He started his career studying brainwashing for the Air Force. He performed an interrogation experiment with Martin Orne. He then went civilian, heading the University of Oklahoma's Department of Psychiatry. But West continued to do government research. He studied the effects of hypnosis-mescaline combos for the CIA in 1957 **(Aldous Huxley, *Moksha*, p. 131)**. He "conducted research into LSD, hypnosis and 'the psychobiology of dissociated states' for the CIA." **(Lee & Schlain, *note*, p. 189)** Once, he killed an elephant for them—with LSD.

West visited Ruby in jail, then wrote his report. The psychiatrist declared that Ruby was in a "paranoid state manifested by delusions." Ruby was not faking his symptoms, Dr. West explained, because, despite repeated suggestions by West that the prisoner was mentally ill, Ruby had insisted that he was sane. West explained that this proved that Ruby was mentally ill, because "The true malingerer usually grasps eagerly at such an explanation." Catch-22: Ruby refused to admit he was insane, so he was insane.

What were those "delusions" that West took as evidence of Ruby's insanity? Ruby believed that conspirators had caused the murder of John Fitzgerald Kennedy. **(Lee & Schlain, *note*, p. 189)**

West's career advanced. He became UCLA's Psychiatry Department chairman and Director of its Neuro-Psychiatric Institute.[1] Ruby went to prison. He died there from a fast-moving cancer that appeared out of nowhere.

> *When Jack Ruby's programming began to slip, it became necessary to kill him as well. A recent article by Gary Alexander...suggests that the programming theory explains the behavior of Oswald and Ruby better than any of the existing speculation about those events...* **(Scheflin & Opton, p. 413)**

Sirhan Sirhan

Robert F. Kennedy was assassinated by Sirhan Sirhan. Dr. Diamond, an expert hypnotist and associate dean of UCLA's School of Criminology, was the defense psychiatrist. He visited Sirhan eight times. He hypnotized him during six of those visits. At first, Diamond and Sirhan just talked:

> *"Was that the first time you actually ever saw Kennedy?'*
>
> *"It was, sir—in reality...It was a thrill to see him." There was a note of fond recollection in his voice, like that of a four-year-old boy after his first visit to Santa Claus...*
>
> *"You had no idea," said Diamond, "that three days later you were going to kill him?"*
>
> *"...no, hell, no, I didn't. I don't know what the hell made me, sir."* **(Kaiser, p. 294)**

Diamond then questioned Sirhan, under hypnosis, about a conspiracy. Sirhan denied that, but his distinct pattern of delayed speech before denying key questions indicated blocking. After Diamond conditioned Sirhan to complete amnesia and obedience, he suggested

> *...that he ask about the weather when he woke up. Sirhan was soon out in the anteroom, asking a deputy if it was raining outside.*
>
> *"Why did you do that, Sirhan?" asked Diamond with mock curiosity.*
>
> *"What's so unusual about that?" said Sirhan. "Asking about the weather?"*
>
> *"Whose idea was that, Sirhan?"*
>
> *"Huh?...Wuh, wuh, uh." Sirhan could tell from the smile on Diamond's face that something funny was going on. But he couldn't believe that Diamond had programmed him to ask if it was raining. Diamond punched the rewind button on his Sony tape recorder. He would show Sirhan how he instructed him under hypnosis. But his tape was blank. He had forgotten to put the machine on 'record' in the first place. Sirhan was overjoyed, for this only proved what he had suspected all along: Diamond was bluffing....had never really hypnotized him.*

---

1. The government also chose Dr. West to be its examining psychiatrist in the case of Timothy McVeigh, after the Oklahoma City bombing.

> *Diamond put Sirhan in hypnosis once more...Then Diamond suggested that Sirhan would come out of the trance and climb the bars like a monkey.*
>
> *Sirhan went out and climbed on the bars. He was up there, he explained to Diamond, "for exercise." Diamond replayed the tape, let Sirhan hear how he'd been programmed. "It wasn't your idea at all, Sirhan. You were just following my instructions."*
>
> *Sirhan was silent for a time. He shivered. "Ohhh, it frightens me, doc."*
>
> *"It is very scary," admitted Diamond.*
>
> *"Oh," said Sirhan, as if realizing something for the first time. "No. No."*
>
> *"But it's very real," said Diamond. "It's not a fake. And it's not a trick."*
>
> *"...sir, killing people is different than climbing up bars."* **(Kaiser, pp. 373-374)**

In a conversation with Kaiser, Sirhan mournfully asked,

> *"Why did I not go to the races that day? Why did I not like the horses? Why did I go to that range? Why did I save those Mini-Mags* [the high-powered bullets used on Kennedy]*? Why did I not expend those bullets?...It was like some inner force."* **(Sirhan quoted in Bowart, p. 223)**

Walter Bowart speculated Sirhan's sequence of going to the rifle range instead of to the races, and saving some high-powered bullets there, may have been a complex set of posthypnotic suggestions leading up to a preprogrammed murder. His mention of "some inner force" could be explained as posthypnotic suggestion.

Diamond testified, in court, that Sirhan was crazy and accomplished the murder completely on his own: "Sirhan programmed himself to do this like a robot..." **(Kaiser, p. 456)** Diamond explained the shooting as Sirhan's unconscious

> *...plan for the fulfillment of his sick, paranoid hatred of Kennedy and all who might want to help the Jews. In his conscious mind there was no awareness of such a plan or that he, Sirhan, was to be the instrument of assassination...His mind is truly split, with part of his life on one side and part on the other.* **(quoted in Scheflin & Opton, *note* 17)**

Kaiser disagreed with Diamond's diagnosis of Sirhan. The case reminded him of Palle Hardwick who

> *...was never aware, until Reiter's work with him, that he had been programmed for crime, and programmed to forget that he had been programmed...Sirhan could have been programmed and programmed to forget.* **(Kaiser, p. 289)**

After his 1969 sentencing, Sirhan was sent to San Quentin Prison. Dr. Eduard Simson-Kallas had been the chief psychologist there for the past six years. The last two years he had been in charge of the psychological testing and study of death row inmates.[1] Simson-Kallas visited Sirhan regularly over the next twenty weeks. He looked over all the previous psychiatric reports and did extensive testing and interviewing. He talked it over with his colleague, Dr. David G. Schmidt, the chief psychiatrist at San Quentin. The two of them came to the firm conclusion that their findings in the case were in major conflict with the psychiatric evaluation of Sirhan given at his trial.

> *"Nowhere in Sirhan's test response," Dr. Simpson said in the affidavit, "was I able to find evidence that he is a 'paranoid schizophrenic' or 'psychotic' as testified by the doctors at the trial...The fact is, paranoid schizophrenics are almost impossible to hypnotize. They are too suspicious and do not trust anybody, including friends and relatives, not to speak of a hypnotist from, for him, the most hated race.* [Diamond was a Jew.] *Psychotics in general are among the poorest subjects for hypnosis. They cannot concentrate, they do not follow instructions and basically do not trust. Sirhan, however, was an unusually good hypnotic subject."* **(quoted in Bowart, p. 225)**

Simson-Kallas told a *San Francisco Examiner* reporter that he believed Sirhan had been hypnoprogrammed. He did not believe that Sirhan "could have hypnotized himself into a trance and then shot Robert Kennedy." Simson-Kallas said, "He was put up ...He would be easily blamed, being an Arab. He was programmed to be there."

Simson-Kallas said his suspicions of Diamond's

---

1. Bowart calls him "Dr. Edward Simpson" and says he was a psychiatrist. I used the Scheflin-Opton version of his name and position.

court diagnosis were first aroused when Sirhan described the murder as if "reciting from a book," rather than in vivid language—and Sirhan gave no details. He did not appear to know any details.

Sirhan said, "I don't really know what happened. I know I was there. They tell me I killed Kennedy. I don't remember what exactly I did but I know I wasn't myself." **(Scheflin and Opton, pp. 439-440)**

Simson-Kallas said that Diamond's diagnosis of Sirhan as a schizophrenic had to be false because "You can't hypnotize schizophrenics." He said the famous incriminating notebooks were real but "the crucial sections are not in Sirhan's handwriting...[in trance] his handwriting would be different...but it would be looser because he would be more relaxed, not more controlled as these were."

When Scheflin and Opton interviewed Simson-Kallas, he said, "I resigned over Sirhan...He had asked me to hypnotize him...When I went again to see him the prison authorities wouldn't let me. I resigned." **(Scheflin & Opton, pp. 439-440)**

A few years later, Donald Bain (who researched the case history of Candy Jones) said in a KSAN interview he had proof that Sirhan Sirhan visited Candy's CIA hypnoprogrammer, "Jensen," several times. After Candy Jones, John Nebel, and Donald Bain were silenced, Dr. Spiegel continued to speak out. He produced a film which warned that unknowing hypnoprogrammed persons could be manufactured. He insisted to reporters that Sirhan Sirhan was hypnoprogrammed. He refused to speculate by whom.

MIND-TO-MIND TRANCE INDUCTIONS

Secret ESP research is still being conducted, although CIA spokesmen refuse to comment on the nature of these experiments.
- Lee and Schlain, 1987

In 1991, in Seattle's Magnolia District, I worked as a housekeeper for a wealthy family. There, I encountered a new category of trance abuse. The landscaper was named Greg. When he and his crew came by for their monthly day of yard work, I usually invited them to lunch in my basement apartment. Eventually, the subject of hypnosis came up, and I told Greg that I had been hypnoprogrammed and was now sealed.

Friend Tries a Hit

A few weeks later, Greg called. He said a friend was visiting him who wanted to meet me. Since his friend only had a few hours in town, we needed to meet right away. I accepted their invitation to share a quick supper at a nearby pizza parlor. The friend was a tall, lean man, maybe thirty-five. I sat alone on one side of the table; Greg and his friend sat across from me. We ordered food from the unobtrusive, busy waitress, and then conversed.

I sensed a disturbing hardness, well-masked but there, and coldness at the core of Friend. "What do you do for a living?" I asked him.

He said he traveled around the country giving talks at Unity churches. He offered no details. I had heard that denomination was very "liberal" and leaned heavily toward trance experience. It occurred to me that he might have hypnotic skills. I didn't verbalize that speculation. Neither Greg nor his friend mentioned hypnosis in our conversation.

The minutes were passing slowly. The food had not yet come. I hoped it would arrive soon. Suddenly, Friend stood up and leaned across the table toward me until the tip of his nose was only four inches from mine. He looked directly into my eyes with a stern and strained expression on his face. As he did this, he did not speak a word of explanation.

I felt a shockingly abrupt, inductive pressure hit my brain, a force of startling power: Whoom! A strong, subliminally angry, wordless, mental force was pressuring me to enter trance. It was flowing from his mind to mine! It was in direct contact with my unconscious, pushing hard at me to enter deep trance NOW.

But I had been sealed by the most sophisticated methods known at the time of my conditioning. I can only be hypnotized by authorized persons. I felt my unconscious conditioning which blocks entry to unauthorized persons click into action. It was a reflexive, and therefore instant, response to Friend's mental induction attempt. This

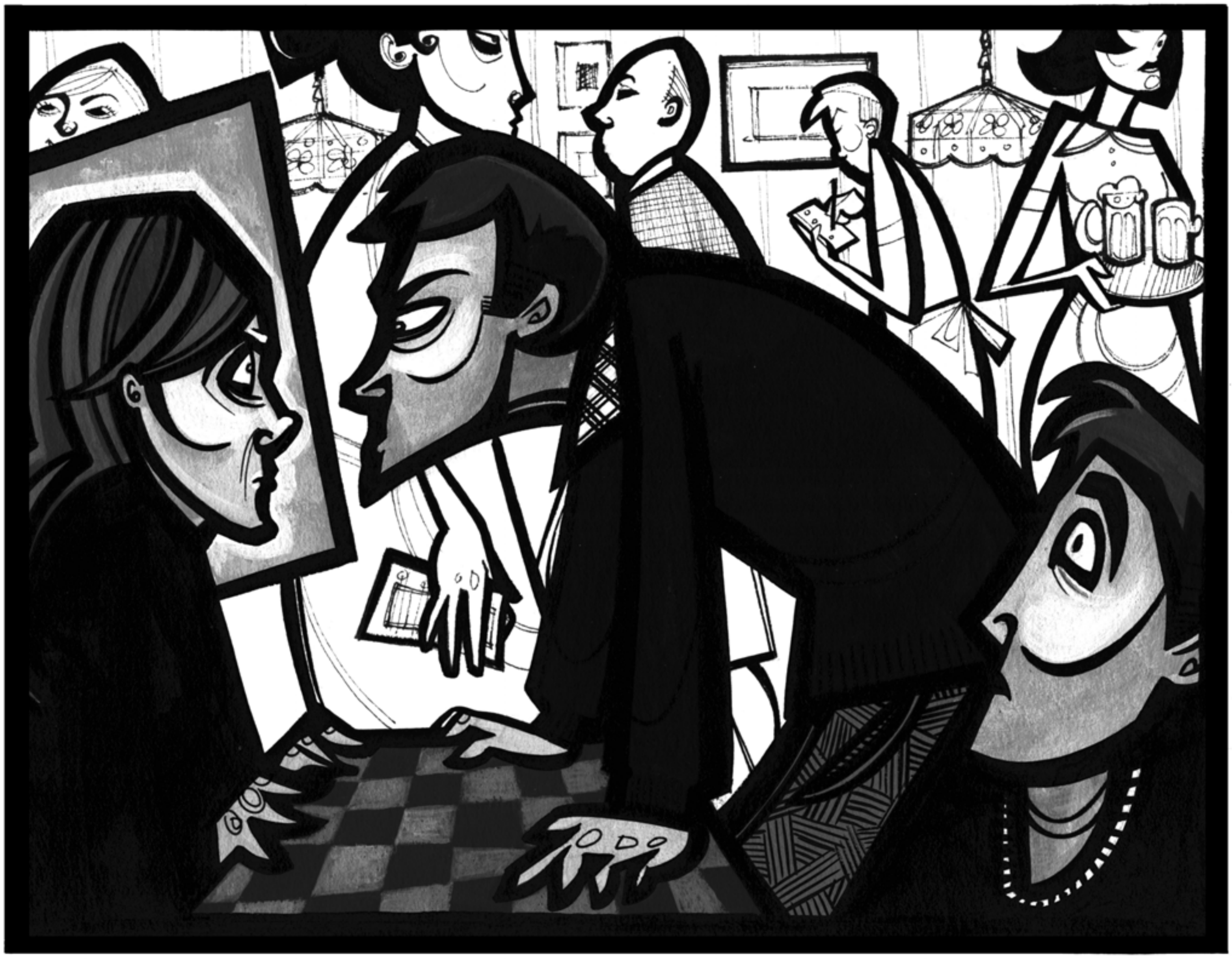

day, that old training was totally supported by my personal will. I did not like him. I did not like the angry, cold feel of his attack on my mind.

I consciously perceived my inner defense system responding to the hammer blow of his induction attempt. An inner wall of “No!” rose up in my mind the instant it sensed inductive pressure coming from him, and to an equal degree of power. My resistance to his induction attempt felt like a thick, impenetrable, huge iron wall. It had instantly energized in my head in response to the threat from him: electromagnetic force colliding with electromagnetic force. It completely blocked Friend’s unfriendly effort to covertly force me into trance.

It all happened in just a few seconds of clock time: His induction effort slammed onto the outer sensory perimeter of my brain. My mind, in a nanosecond, shoved back his attempted mental intrusion with equal power. I assumed he could mentally feel my effective resistance just as I could feel his attempt to penetrate my defenses. He also could see from my face that I was not in trance.

The induction pressure stopped as suddenly as it had begun. He sat down again. He did not say a word about what he had just done. Nor did I. Nor did Greg. All three of us acted as if it had not happened. It was, altogether, a very weird encounter.

I did not say anything because I did not know what to say. Also, it was still very hard for me at that time to talk about such things because of my “Secret, Don’t Tell” programming. I wondered if Greg was silent because he had already succumbed to the “force” and now was under a posthypnotic suggestion to ignore anything having to do with Friend hypnotizing other people. For whatever reasons, all three of us pretended it had not happened—even though that just-failed mind-to-mind induction attempt was clearly the entire purpose for Friend's eagerness to meet me.

The pizza arrived. We ate it and went our separate ways. Greg and I never spoke of the incident afterwards. I left the housekeeping job to write full-time and lost contact with Greg. However, I remembered that curious incident—the first time ever I was glad for my sealing. I wondered if it happened because Greg told his friend that I was a hypno-programmed person. Did Friend want to help me get free? Or was Friend testing his ability against that of my operator for the personal ego points of possibly capturing another hypnotist's puppet? Or was Friend seeking to learn what technology another operator had that he did not yet know?

I never expected to see Friend's induction style again.

A Pattern Emerges

In 1994, when a new edition of my *Encyclopedia of Country Living* was published, I left Seattle on a nationwide book promotion tour on the subject of gardening and writing. After that, I adopted an itinerant lifestyle, working to finish this book while living in hiding. A year later, at a supper table in North Carolina, the subject of extrasensory inductions came up. I told them about Greg's friend. They told me that a twelve-year-old neighbor boy had a similar experience.

The next day, I interviewed him. It had happened at a Christian youth meeting in a hotel. A complete stranger brought his face close to the boy's, looked him in the eyes, and caused him to fall into a deep state of what he assumed was "slain in the Spirit." He knew that the stranger had deliberately done it to him. He remembered nothing of the time while he was in trance. He did not recall ever seeing the stranger again.

The incident with Friend had been simply inexplicable. Two such incidents, however, enabled me to look for elements of pattern. Obviously, there were people who knew how to do mind-to-mind trance induction. How many people? How did they learn to do it? What was the underlying physiology of this event? I tried to remember anything I knew which might be relevant.

Randall Baer had written about the "guru's touch." He said a guru would go down the line of devotees once a week and send them, one by one, into temporary bliss with a brain-to-brain mind zap.

Extrasensory inductions. I had read other mentions of persons with mind powers, in or out of religious settings. Religious experience could easily be confused with generic trance experience. Somebody uninformed about trance technologies might easily assume that a person who can put another person into a trance, or into a state of unconsciousness, or who can read their mind, has divine powers.

I now realized that those were abilities developed in certain flesh-and-blood brains. Not everybody can jump up and turn a somersault in midair. But certain gymnasts with the right body type and training can. In the same way, persons with genetic talent and training could do those mental tricks. They do not have a direct line to God. They are mental gymnasts with skills poorly understood by the naive public.

I wondered how operators learned to do a mind-to-mind induction? The professor had not taught that in the hypnotherapy class I took as part of the research for this book. He had not even mentioned it. I wished I knew how Greg's friend had learned his skill, and how he used it. Psychic induction was a distasteful, high-powered variant of disguised induction.

My psychology textbook said that it was absolutely impossible for one mind to influence another by a purely mental process. I knew of other significant places, however, where the psychology textbook had made FALSE statements about trance and hypnosis. They were obviously wrong on this one, too.

Because of sealing, I was immune to mental attack from anybody but my own operators (and I lived in hiding from them). And I already knew a lot about hypnosis. It occurred to me that privilege carried with it a responsibility. I should also learn and reveal as much of the truth about this as I could. Next time somebody tried an extrasensory induction on me, I had to make myself ask them some questions before they got away. I had not asked Friend anything at all. I had not asked R.J. and Joe very much. I had to overcome the resistance inside me against asking, or I would never find out more.

History of a Psychic

I read in the newspaper that the CIA had spent $20 million on psychics. Before, I would have tossed out such a statement as ridiculous. Now, I wished I had looked up and read all the references to psychic research that I had tossed out during my past years of researching hypnosis. A psychic mind-control effort would logically begin with a psychic (brain-to-brain) hypnotic induction.

I knew Friend would rarely fail if he tried that on anybody with normal susceptibility and no sealing, or weak sealing. An obvious CIA goal would have been to train an

Psychic Research

In the 18th century, a French nobleman named Puysegur began the scientific study of the psychic powers of hypnotized persons. Since then, research and training in paranormal powers have been linked with hypnosis. Hammerschlag described a German case from the late 1800s in which a mute itinerant did this type of mysterious mental induction on the daughter of a man who had allowed the vagrant to sleep overnight in his home. Next morning, unknown to her father, she left the house with the vagrant. She followed him helplessly for the next several days until she awoke from trance and explained what had happened. A German court sentenced the vagrant to prison.

Cold War Psychic Research

From the 1950s on, both the Soviet and U.S. governments poured money into secret research on how to develop and control psychic powers. Russians studied the underlying physiology of psychic events and explored exactly what was, and was not, possible in the development of mental powers. The KGB trained agents in "Psychotronic Technology."[1] The U.S. government did the same. In 1952, the CIA specifically targeted the study of parapsychology as part of the 25-year, 25-million dollar MKULTRA effort. They experimented with extrasensory perception, dowsing, telekinesis (motion caused by mind power alone), clairvoyance (the ability to obtain knowledge in seeming defiance of time and space such as "remote viewing" and mind-reading). (In the psychic area of remote viewing research alone, the CIA, in September of 1995, confirmed the existence of a research program that lasted 20 years and spent $20 million.) The CIA also sought to find and maximally develop the talents of "exceptionally gifted individuals who can approximate perfect success in ESP performance."

> *The Office of Security, which ran the ARTICHOKE project, was urged to follow "all leads on individuals reported to have true clairvoyant powers"...the CIA began infiltrating seances and occult gatherings...The CIA also sought to develop techniques whereby the ESP powers of a group of psychics could be used "to produce factual information that could not be obtained in any other way....everything that adds anything to our understanding of what is taking place in ESP is likely to give us advantage in the problem of use and control."* **(Lee and Schlain, *Acid Dreams*, note, p. 18)**

In the late 1970s, the Stanford Research Institute did psychic experiments for the CIA. In 1981, the U.S. Army began a study at SRI to systematize psychic phenomena and make their results reliable, consistent, and useful to nonpsychics. Their funding was a few million per year. The CIA worked with "seers," parapsychologists whose abilities they hoped could equal those of the KGB's psychotonic experts.

"Remote viewing" was discovered in 1983. The success of CIA remote viewing operations has become common knowledge. "Micro psycho-kinesis," also known as "Micro-PK" is the psychic ability to manipulate small objects, including those in electronic systems. This has also been an area of intense interest to CIA and Pentagon ESP researchers. (Goals might be to erase a disc or bring down a plane, or trigger a distant explosion.) In the category of distant viewing...

---

[1] Sheila Ostrander and Lynn Schroeder wrote a book about Soviet psychic research. ***Psychic Discoveries Behind the Iron Curtain*, Prentice-Hall, 1970.**

> *I saw Stansfield Turner, former CIA head, affirm on a videotape, "Yes, this works," he said. "We had one psychic that described specific military installations inside the Soviet Union, information that turned out to be, in detail, correct." The head of the Navy said, "Yes, there is such an operation underway, and no, I won't talk about it."* **(Maj. Ed Dames, *interviewed* by Art Bell, p. 6, *After Dark*)**

The private sector was researchig too. In a mishmash of fact and fancy, Doublas Baker told how to "control" another person's mind via an extrasensory transmission which he called a "vortex of energy." **(Douglas Baker, *The Opening of the Third Eye*, p. 81)** He pointed out the anatomical function of the eyes as a nervous-system conduit into, and out of, the brain:

> *...The optic nerves...have occult significance...The human eyes have a two-way activity...the picking up and transmitting of energies...The latter, the radiatory capacity of man, pour out through the eyes and are the basis of the ancient proposition of the "evil eye." The optic nerves are the only part of the brain which is visible from the exterior. They are to be seen clearly through an ophthalmoscope. It is from this region of the eye that occult forces* [ESP] *pour* **(Ibid., pp. 100-101)***...Then great power over the one gazed at is soon developed.* **(p. 107)**

ESP Is a Trance Phenomenon

Unusual mental events tend to be associated with **trance** states. **Parapsychological** events are most likely to occur when a person is in a spontaneous, operator-induced, or self-induced trance state. The most remarkable results of all happen when two or more, associated, persons are in trance at the same time.

In 1892, in *The Law of Psychic Phenomena*, T. R. Hudson said that most ESP events are unconscious confabulation or misinterpretations, but that a few are well documented as authentic. He reasoned that extrasensory abilities are based in the unconscious and are most sensitive in a person who is in deep trance. Modern research has confirmed Hudson's theory. Higher scores on ESP tests are associated with deeper trance states:

> *The discoveries of psychic expert Dr. Charles Honorton, of the Maimonides Medical Center, seem to agree with this theory linking alpha powers and psychic powers. Dr. Honorton worked extensively with alpha feedback for long periods, and he found that successful ESP insights are related to "relaxation, mild disassociation, passivity, and a reduction of visual imagery.'"..In addition, everyone who showed relatively high alpha also had relatively high ESP scores in a test.* **(Jodi Lawrence, *Alpha Brain Waves*, 1972, pp. 56-8)**

Another mental state that is both high alpha and associated with psychic production is the **hypnogogic**:

> *As your mind changes from one conscious level to another, as from waking to sleeping or sleeping to waking, ESP phenomena have been recorded by scientific observers...The period when you are already asleep and just beginning to dream, is also associated with psychic production.* **(Ibid., pp. 56-8)**

intelligence or military operator to acquire skills exactly like those which Greg's friend had so helpfully demonstrated for me: **maximum speed; maximum force of hit; maximum trance depth for the subject, if affected (yielding maximum hypnotic control)**.

Somebody with skills like that had made an effective hit on a teenage boy at an away-from-home Christian conference. Why? I definitely wanted to learn more. A week later, an opportunity appeared. I met Linda, a lean, attractive New Ager with a husband, Marcus (25 years younger than she was), and a cute baby. They made drums for a living.

Linda told me that an unusual person named Ivy recently had bought a drum from her. She said that, only moments after arriving, Ivy had looked into her eyes and thrown her into the deepest state of consciousness she had been in for years. Ivy then intoned deepening suggestions over her such as, "You will just let go." (I noted that she knew the lingo of a professional hypnotist.) In that deep trance, Linda had vividly hallucinated. She saw her guest as a beautiful, wise young Indian woman. She saw herself as also young and beautiful. **Very seductive stuff.**

Linda had a bad case of rapport. She was filled with awe, respect, longing to obey Ivy, and a craving for that deep trance feeling to happen again. Marcus, on the other hand, who had viewed the whole thing as a spectator (like staying sober at a drug party), now feared and detested Ivy. He also was struggling with alienation from Linda caused by her sudden fascination with Ivy.

I said to Linda, "Please, I want to meet Ivy. I want to ask her some questions." I explained my research in extrasensory inductions.

A few days later, Ivy walked into a social gathering at Linda's house where I awaited her. She was a short, slim, grey-haired, well-dressed, well-groomed, attractive woman of 58. Linda introduced us, then walked away into the adjacent porch where her other guests were seated.

I knew that Linda had already told Ivy why I wanted to meet her, but Ivy did not mention extrasensory trance inductions as we chatted casually. She and I now stood alone, facing each other. Then I felt her turn on the mind-to-mind inductive pressure. This time I was expecting it.

It felt different from the mind of Friend. Her head was not placed so near to mine as his had been, only about eighteen inches away. Her eyes stared fixedly at mine. (The eyes are the only site at which a person's brain is not encased in bone. At the back of the eye socket, the optic nerve connects directly with brain tissue.) Her eyes, as she began that moment of inductive effort, acquired a quality of extraordinary luminosity. However, that may have been an unconscious, rather than a normal, visual registering.

As her eyes projected that extraordinary, focused energy, I simultaneously perceived Ivy's inductive pressure on my mind. Her push was not as powerful as Friend's had been. Rating their voltages on a subjective scale, I'd say that his was nine out of a possible ten; hers was seven out of that ten. However, her attempt had lasted longer than his—perhaps ten seconds. His lasted only about three seconds.

Her induction pressure, also, would have forced me into trance, if I had not been sealed against it. I resisted both consciously and unconsciously. I did not turn my eyes from her gaze, or walk away. I simply stood there, calmly analyzing what was happening, until she gave up and turned it off.

Ivy got her turn. Now, it was mine. I seized the opportunity and spent the next three hours (in the presence of Linda, her spouse, and several guests) trying to extract information from her.

I learned that she was single, the mother of three grown children, and a student in her final year in Kent University's Ph.D. clinical psychology program. She said that her department's faculty did not know about her interest in using her mind to force people into trance. She had not mentioned it on her application.

Ivy had been studying extrasensory mind inductions privately for the past ten years, ever since she took a class in Silva Mind Control. After she realized that extrasensory induction was possible, she tried to induct people, every day. She did that wherever she found guinea pigs to practice on (at the laundromat, in the checkout line).

"How many inductions a day, on the average, did you try?" I asked.

"About six," she said.

At first, her power was weak. She could not get her targets into altered consciousness. Or, if she could, their trance was not very deep. As years passed, however, during which she kept practicing and kept goading herself to generate a more powerful induction, she gradually became better at it.

She learned that she had to be in a momentary, self-induced, deep trance to do a mind-to-mind induction. The deeper her own trance was, the stronger her power became to force somebody else's mind into that state.

Therefore, she sought out mind-training programs that would train her to go into deeper trances.

After she took a Master-level Avatar course five years ago, Ivy said that her extrasensory induction technique really began to work . Back home from Avatar, during a week when she felt like she was "going crazy," she said that two "guides" had appeared in her mind. "They" had been with her ever since. "They" chose the persons she would zap and controlled the entire zapping process in her brain. From then on, she had her present ability.

Then, Ivy heard of a new type of brainwave synchronizer induction machine. She volunteered to be a test subject for it. She received several months more of deep-trance training from that electronic device. It was a tape with a music track. The synchronizing (induction) track was a subliminal layer concealed underneath the music. She listened to the tape through a headset.

Although she had paid for the synchronizer like a regular product, she said that she was required to keep a detailed daily record of her experiences while using it. She also had to make weekly phone reports to a supervisor.

I said, "Sounds like a research project."

She nodded, "It probably was." She did not know who had invented the device, or who was sponsoring the research. "Some government agency," she guessed. She said that machine was the most powerful inductive tool she had ever encountered, sending her into the deepest trance she had ever experienced. It was "better than Silva, better than Avatar."

Her instructions were to use it *no more than half an hour per day*: "One day I said to hell with it and left it on for two hours," she recalled. "I threw up for the next three days."

Ivy saw no moral problem with performing uninvited extrasensory inductions. She claimed to be "adjusting the energy" of the people whom she pushed into trance. She said that if it was possible for her to push somebody into trance, that meant they needed her "adjusting." She said that she was meant to affect each person she put into trance, and therefore she was not personally responsible. She insisted she used her abilities only for good.

I did not view it that way. Her attempted induction of me, and the interview she gave afterward, certainly were helpful to me. They were helpful, however, only because I was researching predatory and abusive hypnosis, and she was a predator who was willing to demonstrate her ability and then talk about it. I had now observed and interviewed a person who used remarkable mental skills for a personal power trip—gathering devotees, spreading her religion by a devious hypnotic technology, for she urged everybody she encountered to let her give them the past-life trip: "No charge."

She also used this black art to attack a vulnerable person she saw as an obstacle. Linda's husband, Marcus, did not approve of Ivy, and he did not pretend otherwise. Marcus had never had a past life regression and certainly did not want one now. Ivy was clearly targeting him for a future forced-induction attempt as she dropped repeated, insistent, seductive presuggestions: "The name 'David' keeps coming to mind. I think you're going to experience a past life. Yes, something about 'David," she said to him.[1]

Teacher from the Psychic Institute

Three days later, I heard about a woman in the community who had been the head teacher at the Berkeley Psychic Institute. I made an appointment to interview Melina. She was an attractive young brunette possessing a powerful mind which I sensed was carefully leashed. We had a warm conversation. She confirmed that the CIA had long been interested in psychic skills. She said they used to have a panel of psychics observing the Soviet Union. She said that two graduates of her fifteen-month training program had been hired immediately after graduating by "the government."

I said, "I've heard some people say there really is no right or wrong, no good or evil, that it's all relative."

She shook her head firmly, "No."

We talked about unethical trance. Melina does not call herself a hypnotist, but rather a "psychic." She said that, as a child, she dragged chairs around the room, blew up electronic equipment, and bent spoons with her mind (talents she now can, and does, inhibit). Instead of attending college, she took training in directly using her brain power. (She did not say who trained her.) Then she found employment as head teacher of the Berkeley Psychic Institute. After a few years, however, she left that job because of ethical differences with some of the Institute's leadership. She now worked with a team of physical therapists on the Eastern side of the Appalachians, trying to help clients with crippled and disabled bodies.

---

[1] Understanding this, it can be seen that, although numerous witchcraft trials in the Middle Ages are well documented as being inappropriate, there may have been a kernel of truth involved in the movement. Ignorant and fearful persons may have been desperately trying to defend society against predatory individuals with the skill of mind-to-mind inductions.

She knew exactly what I was talking about when I described the psychic induction attempts by Friend and by Ivy. She called what they had tried **displacement:** the attempted displacement of the subject's conscious control by the hypnotist's mental will. She also called it **running your energy through a person,** or **invasion**.

Melina said she had taught her students at the Berkeley Psychic Institute how to **block** both displacement and **mind-reading** attempts as a part of her curriculum. (Mind-reading was a completely new idea to me. I had never encountered the concept before, outside of science fiction.) Melina said that she considered both displacement and mind reading unethical and, therefore, did not train students how to do them, only how to block them. She added, however, that learning how to block displacement and mind reading obviously made students aware that displacement and mind-reading were possible. She said she knew some students , once made aware, would try on their own to use those skills.

She recalled an incident that had occurred at a Whole Life Expo (**psychic fair**) that she had attended. She had been watching a demonstration given by a "Reverend Martinez," the head of an unnamed organization. His top assistant, a person "who misused his energy a lot," came and stood close by her. For fifteen minutes, she said, he attempted to "invade my mind." Melina silently blocked him, and continued watching. (I soberly pondered that image. I had resisted ten seconds. Melina had cooly held off a mind predator for fifteen minutes. I was impressed.) After that quarter hour of fruitless attack, he said aloud to Melina, "You have a strong mind."

"Yes, I know," she replied.

"I'd like you to join our organization," he said.[1]

Melina replied, "I'm already employed. I'm head teacher at the Berkeley Psychic Institute."

I asked her how many people were now receiving this type of training. She would not speculate about the numbers in other programs. She did say that the Berkeley Psychic Institute had seven "seminaries" in California (which she said was a center for this kind of activity). Total current attendance in all the training programs of the Berkeley Psychic Institute was about 7,000. Each graduate received a credential from the state of California as a "minister" in the Church of Divine Man. I asked, "How big are Church of Divine Man congregations?"

"There are scarcely any congregations, " she said "They have a publishing house (Deja Vu Publishing, Berkeley, California), the training programs, and tours to 'psychic' places. That's it."

"Then what do these 'ministers' do after they graduate?" I asked. She said they often went into **psychic reading**, or counseling, or gave training courses in meditation, or some such. Then, she talked about the psychic readers who put their subjects into involuntary, deep, even amnesic, trance—displacing the clients' conscious minds with their own, establishing hypnotic control over them.

I was surprised. I had thought psychic reading was fake. Now I understood that the induction of the subject and his consequent suggestibility could be real. I also realized that the psychic might put herself into a trance state and make use of its paranormal potential for the "reading."

Melina also expressed distress about psychics who displace and then give the entranced client manipulative suggestions: "You must move to San Francisco," she intoned, psychic-style. She spoke bitterly of psychic-addicted clients who let a psychic utterly control their lives.

I asked, "What percentage of psychics use their skill unethically?"

She thought hard a minute. "About sixty percent of them," she said. "And a further fifteen percent create problems for their client because they have so little self-knowledge of their own programming that they unconsciously pass on their own baggage."

"What organization out there abuses mind-control technology the worst?" I figured she was going to answer the CIA or NSA. After thinking another long minute, however, she said, "The Scientologists."

After that, I became busy with other things. I lived on the road, stayed with volunteer hosts, led writing workshops for home-schooled children and their teaching parent. I also spoke on long-term trends in the nation's food supply and how to have the greatest garden of your life. In every spare moment, I worked to complete this book.

Over the next year, I encountered several more persons attempting mind-to-mind inductions. (Now that I knew what it was, I recognized encounters I would have missed before.) One inductor was a short, homely, elderly man who tried it on me during a contra club's closing waltz. After our

---

1. I did not get around to asking what this "organization" of persons who "misused their energy" actually did, but it sounds like it would definitely fit into the category of trance abuse.

dance, I questioned him.

He said he had read about mental inductions in a few places and now was trying to learn how to do it. He attended contra dances several times a week in order to attempt inductions during the spin-your-partner moments, and waltzes. Contra etiquette requires the girl to stare into her partner's eyes during spins, and her brain is somewhat disabled from all the spinning. These two factors helped his induction attempts.

I met a professed witch whose induction effort felt like a dark spinning evil rushing toward me, a wandering psychic who attempted my induction with gleaming eyes from a seat in my audience, and a charismatic minister whose prayer induction produced a skillful mental sensation of a disorienting spinning, with additional nudging to fall backward on each backside pass of the spin. None of those three affected me.

I also visited a tent meeting where I had heard that the minister was causing people to be "slain in the Spirit." Toward the meeting's end, people began going forward. One by one, he prayed for them. Many "went down, " falling backwards into the waiting arms of assistants who then gently laid them on the canvas tent floor. They would remain there until normal consciousness returned.

I went up, determined to experience and explore this man's induction also. Was it really of the Lord? Moments after I arrived at the edge of the wooden stage platform, the pastor came over to me. Positioning his head within a couple inches of mine, he began to pray for me. I closed my eyes at the thought of prayer. I am a Christian.

Then I felt a mental invitation to induction. It was substantively different, in two ways, from all the previous ones. First, the carrier wave emotion was not anger like that of Friend, or the seductive fascination projected by Ivy and the Contra Man, or the disorientation nudge of suggested spinning. Instead, it felt like pure love, safe and warm. Second, unlike all the previous mind-to-mind induction attempts, there was **no compelling element**. Instead, I felt like my permission was being asked: "Well, do you want to, or not?" I felt as if the decision was entirely free, entirely mine.[1]

"I want to," I thought. Then it happened. For the first time in my life, I was "slain in the Spirit." I instantly became completely unconscious and fell backward. The assistants, waiting behind me, caught my falling body and lowered it to the canvas floor. A moment later, my conditioning to resist any induction reasserted itself. I surged back up to full awareness. The experiment being completed, I had no further reason to be in that state.

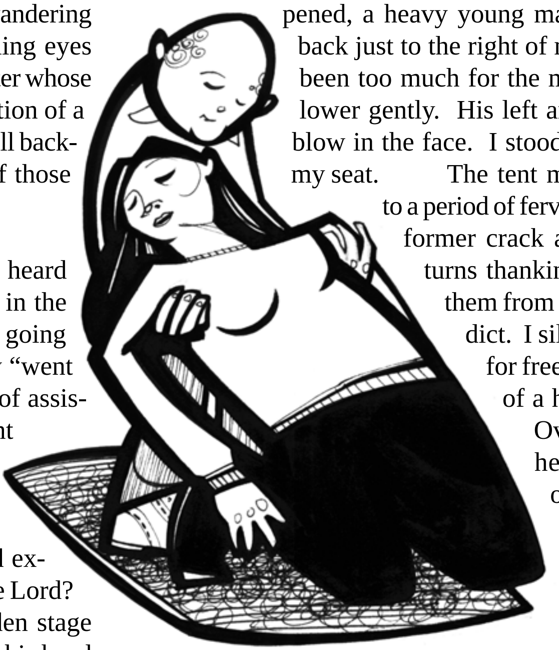

As I still lay there, considering what had just happened, a heavy young man crashed onto his back just to the right of me. His weight had been too much for the minister's helpers to lower gently. His left arm hit me a painful blow in the face. I stood up and returned to my seat. The tent meeting then shifted to a period of fervent testimonies from former crack addicts. They took turns thanking Jesus for freeing them from the life of a drug addict. I silently thanked Jesus for freeing me from the life of a hypno-robot.

Over the next years, I heard of —or met— other charismatic ministers, prophets, or revivalists whose mind-to-mind quality did not seem pure and holy to me. I learned that just because it says it's good, does not guarantee that it is good. I also learned that any attempt by me to bring up the subject of extrasensory induction to any nonChristian practitioner triggered instant mental combat.

I never failed to resist an unwelcome induction in one of these Top Dog contests. Nobody ever tried it on me a second time. Soon, I quit inviting trouble. Reason suggested that somewhere there was a psychic predator who could overcome my inner resistance. I did not want that to happen.

---

[1] Neuroanatomists say that no two brains look exactly alike, outside or inside. Every mind-to-mind induction attempt I've experienced has had a unique "signature" quality.

Psychiatry Is No Longer a Joke

...the observer who attends neuroscientific meetings finds himself in the company not just of researchers, writers, philosophers, businessmen, politicians, and journalists but also of military men....What will it be like, a few years hence, when the secret police have scanners to identify banned thoughts and drugs to change minds?...In this future-shock world of ours, truth often seems more like fantasy than impending reality, which makes it all the more difficult to confront....as I've watched the science unfold in an obscurity that approaches secrecy, my fears have intensified...Psychiatry is no longer a joke, and those who continue to laugh are fools.

Jon Franklin, *Molecules of the Mind*, 1987, pp. 281-282, 298

"A" Was Not Available

My routine, at that time, was to recruit persons I knew, ask them to organize a week's speaking schedule in their area for me, and then live in their home while fulfilling those obligations. I asked a Tennessee lady, whom I had met on a previous visit, to organize some bookings. "A" agreed. A few weeks later, however, she changed her mind, saying she was too busy. She had found an enthusiastic fan of mine to take her place as my Tennessee coordinater, she said. That was how it came about that "D" took charge of my Tennessee visit.

"B" Is for Background

D's booking abilities turned out to be truly remarkable. She scheduled stays combined with speaking engagements for me, first with "B," then with "C," and lastly with herself. She scheduled so many speeches and seminars that I had to book a second visit to Tennessee to fit them all in. My first visit (divided between B and C) was for a week, in late October, 1996. B turned out to be a kindly old Assembly of God minister who pastored a tiny rural church. I enjoyed my three-day visit there, and spoke every day. Then it was time to move on.

"C" Is for Counterintelligence

After I wearily pulled into her driveway after dark, my second Tennessee host, C, greeted me cordially. We then sat in her homey living room, getting acquainted. Suddenly, the pretty blonde daughter nestled in her lap said, "**Don't think of pink elephants.**"

That's a standard line in programs that train hypnotists. It helps students to understand that the unconscious does not perceive negatives ("not," "no") very well. Student hypnotists must learn to phrase suggestions in a **positive** way, because "Don't think of pink elephants" makes people think of pink elephants.

I now knew that there was a hypnotist in this young girl's environment. Who? I remembered that I had not yet met the girl's father. I asked my hostess, "What does your husband do for a living?"

"He's in Army Counterintelligence," she said.

"What does he do in Counterintelligence?"

"He's an interrogator."

Now I understood. Interrogators are highly trained in hypnosis, narcohypnosis, and whatever else can penetrate mental defenses. I knew that from reading old U.S. military brainwashing research.

She added, "He's in Korea right now, won't be back until April." (I breathed an inward sigh of relief.) "He hates his job," she continued. "He always has to work either in an attic or a dungeon (basement), someplace with no windows. For the year and a half he was taking his training, he was awful to live with."

I could believe that. He probably endured some Secret-Don't-Tell conditioning himself. I had heard elsewhere that certain military/intelligence ladders of success now require some hypnoprogramming for every new promotion.

"D" Is for Dangerous

C told me that Mr. and Mrs. D were friends of her and her husband. She said that they, also, would be arriving at her home and staying overnight that night, being on their way to the Small Farm Expo at St. Louis. It was late, and I was tired. I went to bed. Sleeping soundly, I did not hear the Ds arrive.

In the morning, my hostess knocked on my bedroom door. She said the Ds wanted to meet me before they had to leave. I dressed and came out. C was French braiding Mrs. D's hair. Mr. D was sitting at the breakfast counter. At his invitation, I sat down across from him.

He introduced himself as "ex" Army Special Forces. He seemed a wholesome, open, kindly man. He launched into conversation with me with a tale of fighting in North Africa under the U.N. with the "black helicopter" outfit. He spoke bitterly of the U.N. commander's refusal to let the Americans rescue a captured comrade who, as a result, had been tortured and killed.

I had no experience with the U.N., or the military, or fighting in Africa, so I just nodded.

He said that he was employed now in a job that had to do with explosives (and was connected to NASA).

I had no experience, or interest, in explosives, so, again, I just nodded.

At that moment, C intruded and asked me to go into the next room and play a game with the children. (It was the day after Halloween. This was a substitute for last night's trick-or-treating, which she had forbidden). She directed herself, Mr. D, and me, each to a room where we were to think up academic questions to ask the children. A correct answer was to be rewarded with a piece of candy.

She left Mr. D where he was, and assigned him to ask the science questions. I was to ask the English and Social Studies questions. I stood, and began to walk to my station. I was almost to the door when I heard Mr. D ask a child, "What's the largest planet?"

"Jupiter," the child answered.

"No, it's Venus," he said.

I paused, startled. If this man was really in a science/engineering field (explosives) and "connected with NASA," how could he possibly not know that elementary bit of astronomical trivia? "It is Jupiter," I said.

D accepted my correction gracefully.

I wondered if he actually was an undercover agent looking for people who hated the U.N. and were interested in explosives. The Small Farm Today conference, to which he and his wife were hurrying, might have some of those. Both the Cs and the Ds had recently increased their involvement with the "survivalist" movement, embracing back-to-the-land lifestyle, homeschooling, and fundamentalist Christian faith. Maybe both were covertly looking for would-be bombers.

I proceeded to my designated room, sat behind a child's desk, and began to ask questions. I began with harder ones: "What are the names of the continents?" "What are the parts of speech?" The children didn't know. I gave easier, and yet easier, questions, and finally managed to give away some candy.

Her hair being braided, Mrs. D waved a brief farewell to me from the doorway and then hurried off to gather her children for departure. Her husband came into the room to say good-bye. I rose to acknowledge him. As he stood opposite me, on the other side of the desk, mouthing a formal good-by, I felt his mind push a wave of flattery and a short phrase into my mind: "**A woman of importance**!" I was surprised that I could perceive the words of his projected thought so clearly.

Then I felt a sudden, chilly emptiness around my mind. I realized that impression of chill emptiness was caused by an unconscious perception that Mr. D's flattering thought had been combined with an inductive effort — which was now turned off, resulting in the "emptiness." This was the first extrasensory inductive effort on me that I had not recognized in the start-up and run mode. I had only realized it, consciously, after he turned it off.

I did not like that. I was glad, however, that D had not been able to force me into trance, even though he had been able to broadcast that thought into my mind. I assumed that he had now given up on me, as had all the others.

I was wrong. Defeat only caused this adversary to change his tactics. He swiftly reached out and took my right hand in both of his. He briefly clasped it in a conventional manner. Then he began a random series of little squeezes here and there in different places on my hand. Next, he abruptly switched from that distracting, confusing series of hand pressures to focus on feeling for the main nerve leading from my hand up into my arm. He found it, and pressed down hard with his thumb.

I felt an erotic wave surge, from the point where he pressed, up the nerve in my arm toward my brain. My first reaction was distress that this young Christian married man (he and his wife were longtime members of a major charismatic denomination) had deliberately stimulated the sensual charge now rushing toward my head with bioelectric speed.

Then his stimulus got **blocked**, transformed to nothing. I did not know how he caused that surge of excitation. I did not know how I stopped it, but I did. My sealing obviously covered that [sex induction?] possibility also.

Mr. D now spoke, aloud, to me. He said, "Something's wrong here. For some reason, that just isn't enough. Got to do this right." A casual listener could have interpreted that statement to mean that his handshake was not a warm enough good-bye, for Mr. D's outstretched arms now indicated that he must have a farewell hug from me.

He was aware that his attempts to push my brain into a state of trance weren't working "for some reason." He was going to try something more, something different, to "do this right." My programming was always to block unauthorized mind penetration. His programming was never to give up his efforts to penetrate, to keep switching attack modes until he succeeded.

He released my hand and walked around the desk, holding out his arms in invitation. Giving no outward sign that I was aware of his previous attempts to penetrate my mental defenses, I politely accepted this "farewell" hug. He was about my height. Embracing me, he placed his ear next to mine. As his head came close to the side of mine, I guessed that he would try again. He did.

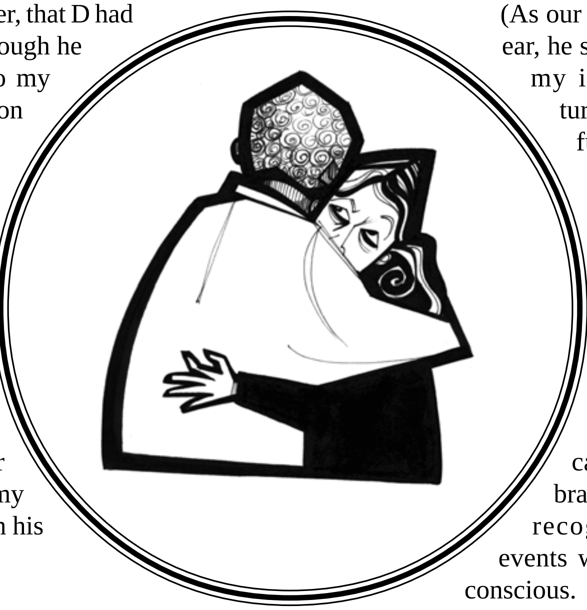

(As our skin touched, ear-to-ear, he scanned a measure of my individual —signature—pattern of brain function. Having established my wavelength pattern, he tuned in on my brain activity, like a radio receiver tunes in a chosen station. Next, he activated a means to continue—automatically—perceiving my brainwave activity. My recognition of these events was not, at the time, conscious. I would realize, later, what I had unconsciously observed just then.)

While we still touched, ear to ear, D next **forced** me to think a very amplified ("loud") thought in **pre-speech** mode in my mind. I communicated only one word in response to his stimulation of that area of my brain. Delivered to his mind-reading capacity, it was doubled and borne up to consciousness on a carrier wave of derision: "SLEAZY! SLEAZY!"

With the automaticity of unconscious reflex, D accomplished all that in brief seconds of time. Now, he unwound his arms from me and stepped back.

Neither my face nor my outward words in this prolonged process of fake farewell—not even that rudely stimulated thought—had betrayed to him my deep-level sensing of the combat of our lower minds. From the moment that I felt him begin to listen to (record?) my thoughts and emotions, they had revealed nothing of significance. My emotions appeared to be unruffled by all that had passed between us—except for a lingering, generalized disgust. My mental content was as serene and routine as if I did not know all I really knew.

I was not consciously thinking about the probability that he was an agent. I did not consciously think of the relevance of his penetration attempts to my own training and break for freedom.

Just then, Mrs. D came and stood in the doorway again. She was anxious to leave for St. Louis. She told her husband that their children and suitcases were now all in the car, waiting for him. She hurried away again.

Mr. D walked halfway to the door. Then he turned, paused, and told me how much he was looking forward to my scheduled stay in their home (a return visit to Tennessee for ten days in mid-December). I politely voiced a similar statement. I thought I meant what I was saying.

Then he left the room. I heard Mrs. C's front door open, and then close, as the Ds left her house. I heard their car engine start up outside. The moment the car engine started, I felt D's mind-reading connection with me cease. (I do not know why the timing of those two events matched.) I heard the crunch of tires on gravel as they drove away.

For the first time since Mr. D began probing my brain, I was now safe to consciously think my true thoughts and feel my true emotions. In the safety of that broken connection, a huge wave of **panic** broke over me. The panic surprised me.

I had never felt that fear before—except of my own operators. Now I had something new to worry about. Life would be even more complicated and difficult. It was a week before that feeling of fear wore off.

A friend had mentioned having a long "intense" phone conversation with Mrs. D. My friend had sounded so disturbed. I now called and asked her to tell me more about that conversation.

She said Mrs. D "was like a top spinning out of control. She kept jumping from one idea to another. It didn't make sense."

"That's a standard **conversational induction** technique, a **confusion induction**," I told her.

She asked me, "Can a person be hypnotized over the telephone?"

"If they're susceptible, yes," I answered. "Please avoid talking to her again."

Could I avoid talking to the Ds again? The Lord had just provided, by seeming coincidence, a brief (and safe) preview of these upcoming hosts, six weeks before my scheduled visit to their home. What would happen if I fulfilled my promise to visit?

Mr. D would try again—and again, and again. Or would it perhaps be a dual effort with him and his wife combining the mental heat? Or covertly drugging me? Or something else? I had less chance of resisting all that. I knew I must cancel the visit.

I could not lie. So what could I say? Finally, I wrote the Ds a postcard which explained that, for urgent personal reasons, I must cancel my visit to them. Mrs. D wrote back—not to express sympathy—but in obvious anger. She demanded to talk to me on the phone. I wrote back further apologies.

The subliminal impression that I returned to again and again, in reviewing and analyzing my memories of that incident was that Mr. D's mind had used some type of mechanical assist in its penetration efforts. How could that be?

Analysis of a Hit

During the week after my encounter with Mr. D, I considered all that had happened in the few minutes during which he had said "good-bye" to me. I pondered those events until I was satisfied that I had extracted every possible bit of data from my memory.

Then, to the best of my ability, I analyzed my observations. I realized that Mr. D had used seven distinct and different techniques:

1. *He* ***projected a verbal thought into my mind****: "A WOMAN OF IMPORTANCE!"*

2. *He used an extrasensory form of contact with my mind, including the generating of an* ***extrasensory induction*** *effort.*

3. *He performed a* **confusing** *routine of hand pressures.*

4. *He* **sent an erotic sensation up the nerve** *from my hand toward my brain.*

5. *He* **forced me to think a verbal thought "loudly"** *enough to be clearly perceived by his extrasensory ability (or its mechanical or biochip adjunct?).*

6. *He took a* **brainprint** *of my mind's individual electronic frequency profile.*

7. *He was* **mind-reading** *my thoughts (and/or mechanically recording them?) from the time he was ear-to-ear with me until his car engine started.*

Now, I needed to find corroboration and explanation of each of those seven techniques. It was easier than I had expected.

1. Thought Projection—D had projected his verbal thought into my mind: "A WOMAN OF IMPORTANCE!" I soon found references to the early stages of that technology.

In 1961, after meeting a technician, who said he could hear radar, Dr. Alan H. Frey, a biophysicist, began testing the effects of microwaves on human nervous systems. He learned that the technicians were right. The human auditory system could respond, as if hearing, to certain modulated electromagnetic energies. His subjects could "hear" pulsed microwaves in the 300 to 3,000 megahertz frequencies.

They tended to perceive the energy as buzzing, hissing, ticking, or knocking. They could hear it even when blindfolded, even when they did not know that the power was on. Deaf persons could hear it. The subjects perceived the sound as coming from inside their heads, or from a little ways behind them.

Frey published those research results in 1961 in *Aerospace Medicine* and in 1962 in *the Journal of Applied Physiology.* The U.S. establishment ignored his work.

Soviet scientists, however, were doing similar research. They recognized that the human nervous system is an electronic network through which current flows. Normally, skin and skull shield it from outside power fields, but **when certain types of electromagnetic fields impact the body's neural tissue, that impact can cause nervous system response**. Frey had proved that.

Frey continued to experiment. He placed electrodes in the brains of living cats, irradiated their heads with pulsed microwaves, and observed their responses on an oscilloscope. They definitely were being stimulated. **(Brodeur, *The Zapping of America*, p. 52)**

Now the military was interested. This technology was mentioned in a report assembled for the Defense Intelligence Agency by the Army Medical and Information Agency: "Sounds and possibly even words which appear to be originating intracranially can be induced by signal modulation at very low average power densities."

In the spring of 1973, Dr. Joseph C. Sharp, at Walter Reed Army Institute of Research, "heard" and understood spoken words communicated to him by "a pulsed-microwave audiogram (analog of the words' sound vibrations) beamed into his brain." **(Becker, 1985, p. 319)** Sharp was the subject in

> *...an experiment in which the human brain received a message carried to it by a pulsed microwave transmission. Sitting in an anechoic chamber—a room with absorbent walls designed to prevent microwave reflection—Dr. Sharp was able to recognize spoken words that were modulated by an audiogram—a graphic representation of the sound waves that humans can hear—and that were then sent into the chamber at a microwave frequency of about two gigahertz.* **(Brodeur, *note*, pp. 295-6)**

This type of research is now hotly pursued. In its 1996 defense authorization bill, Congress authorized $37 million for research in what the Pentagon calls "nonlethal" or "less-than-lethal" technologies. This is sold as a "humanitarian" form of warfare—or crowd control.

> *Much of this "friendly force" technology involves electromagnetic fields and directed-energy radiation, and ultrasound or infrasound weapons—the same technology that's currently of interest in brain-stimulation and mind-control research.*
>
> *A partial list of aggressive promoters of this new technology includes Oak Ridge National Lab, Sandia National Laboratories, Science Applications International Corporation, MITRE Corporation, Lawrence Livermore National Lab, and Los Alamos National Laboratory.* **(Brandt, "Mind Control and the Secret State," *Prevailing Winds Magazine*, No. 3, p. 75)**

John St. Clair Akwei wrote in his evidentiary document of technology for projecting thought, implanting thought, and associated NSA technologies:.

> *RNM* [Remote Neural Monitoring] *can send encoded signals to the brain's auditory cortex, thus allowing audio communications direct to the brain (bypassing the ears). NSA operatives can use this covertly to debilitate subjects by simulating auditory hallucinations characteristic of paranoid schizophrenia....*
>
> *Speech, 3D sound, and subliminal audio can be sent to the auditory cortex of the subject's brain (bypassing the ears), and images can be sent into the visual cortex....This modulated information can be put into the brain at varying intensities from subliminal to perceptible.*

2. Imperceptible Induction Pressure—I could not perceive it turn on, only switch off. I must have perceived it turn on unconsciously, however, because I unconsciously blocked it. I already had experience with extrasensory induction attempts. What was new to me was the existence of **mechanical** devices for extrasensory mind accessing.

For I had sensed that D's efforts were more than human. Did he have a microminiaturized brainwave synchronizer device carried on (or in?) his body?

I learned that his technology dated back to the 1980s. It was the property of the NSA division called SIGINT (Signals Intelligence).

There are three other significant NSA divisions: **COMINT** (Communications Intelligence) aspires to "blanket coverage of all electronic communications in the US and the world." **(Akwei)** The division called **DOMINT** (Domestic Intelligence) keeps records on all U.S. citizens, and gathers extra information on those individuals who are of special interest to them. According to Akwei, NSA (as of 1996) had 50,000 agents in another division called **HUMINT** (Human Intelligence).

> *These agents are authorized by executive order to spy on anyone. The NSA has a permanent national security anti-terrorist surveillance network in place. This surveillance network is completely disguised and hidden from the public...* ***(Akwei's document)***

Akwei said that some of the HUMINT agents knew they were agents—and some were "unknowing" agents. **So the NSA was using hypnoprogramming too.** But Mr. D obviously knew that he was an agent.

3. Confusing Routine of Hand Pressures.—It was no accident that D had given my hand all those little squeezes. That was a technology I had instantly recognized. Years before, M.H. Erickson reported using a series of random hand pressures as a disorienting and confusion technique to aid induction of a female subject.

In my case, however, D's random hand pressure was more than just a confusion technique. It was also obviously intended to **distract** my attention and camouflage his next act, which was feeling for the main nerve in my hand, and pressing on it.

4. Erotic Signal—How did D send that erotic sensation from the nerve in my hand toward my brain? The analysis I had made shouted "machine-aided"; the signal was too crude, too out-of-context, too specifically directed into just one main nerve to be natural.

I had no idea how it was generated or how it was passed into my body. I was grateful I had been able to block it.

A few weeks later, I told a friend, who is an engineer, about that strange sensation going up my arm. She was baffled too.

When we talked the next time, however, she chortled happily, "I know now how he did it! An FBI agent who came to give us a seminar on security measures told a joke. The seminar was classified. The joke was not. Never mind its details. The punch line was, 'Chip in the thumb, chip in the index finger, battery in the ring.' As soon as he said that, I knew that's how he did it to you."

5. Forced Articulation of Pre-Speech Thought.—D's ability to force me to think a verbal thought "loudly" enough to be clearly received by his electronic adjunct had deeply annoyed me. I wanted to understand how he did it.

I soon learned that research on radio signals to subjects' brains started in the early MKULTRA era.

Dr. Elliot Valenstein was a psychosurgeon. He stuck electrodes into various sites in the brains of living creatures, testing external control systems directed by wire connections or radio signals to those electrodes. He called his goal "electrically- controlled behavior."

Jose Delgado, a Spanish physiologist and neurologist who researched at Yale during the later years of his career and published more than 200 scientific papers, called it "electronic brain stimulation." Delgado's book, *Physical Control of the Mind* (1969), has photos of epileptic girls with implanted brain electrodes. He could "send electrical signals...by telemetry while the patients are completely free within the hospital ward" **(Delgado, 1969, p. 89)**. He once halted a charging bull by a radio signal to its implanted electrode.

Delgado also proposed direct radio interface between brains and machines:

> *...direct communication can be established between brain and computer, circumventing normal sensory organs* ***(p. 93)****...Electronic knowledge and microminiaturization have progressed so much that the limits appear biological rather than technological.* **(Delgado, 1969, p. 96)**

In his acknowledgments, Delgado thanked the U.S Public Health Service, the Office of Naval Research, and the U.S. Air Force for providing financial support for his book. He applauded the exploding interest in "neurobehavioral sciences." He said "Brain research institutes flourish, publications are increasing in number..." **(Delgado, 1969, p. 258)**

I learned that the NSA also called it "electronic brain stimulation." It can now be accomplished without putting electrodes in a subject's brain. "...finely-tuned microwaves can achieve the same results as implanted electrodes..." **(Daniel Brandt, "*Mind Control and the Secret State*," *Prevailing Winds Magazine*, No. 3, p. 76)** This technology

> *...has been in development since the MKULTRA program of the early 1950s, which included neurological research into radiation (nonionizing EMF) and bioelectric research and development. The resulting secret technology is categorized at the National Security Archives as "Radiation Intelligence," defined as "information from unintentionally emanated electromagnetic waves in the environment, not including radioactivity or nuclear detonation.*
>
> *Signals Intelligence implemented and kept this technology secret in the same manner as other electronic warfare programs of the U.S. Government. The NSA monitors available information about this technology and withholds scientific research from the public. There are also international intelligence agreements to keep this technology secret.* **(Akwei document)**

Okay, but how could Mr. D make me think a thought? How could he make me think it loudly? Did he use a subliminal question to designate what the content of that thought would be? Did he ask, "What would you call me?" Or, "What do you think of me?" Did he want, most of all, to know if I realized that he was an undercover agent?

Akwei provided a table of frequencies. He said that 9 Hz, for example, might create a "phantom touch sense." Was that the frequency of the charge that D sent up my arm?

Akwei did not say which frequency might stimulate a subject's pre-speech center, forcing them to loudly articulate a thought. But Akwei did list the frequencies which might stimulate a person's motor control cortex, auditory cortex, and visual cortex, etc.. It makes sense that a brain's pre-speech center can also be zapped into performing.

The signal by which D stimulated the word SLEAZY out of me during that ear-to-ear positioning was probably highly focused and directional. Microwave signals have been developed into "pencil-thin beams which were too narrowly directional to be picked up anywhere beyond the immediate vicinity of the signals." **(Bamford, p. 508)**

An acquaintance, who is CEO of a company that implants a space-age hearing aid, told me that technology to perceive verbalized, "pre-speech," human thought via skin contact is now well developed. He said that electrical equipment can "gather and read the electrical fields generated on the skin and translate subvocal speech into text." So, as long as we were touching skin, it was easy for Mr. D to "read" my SLEAZY, SLEAZY response.

Akwei's document explains more:

> *...For electronic surveillance purposes, electrical activity in the speech center of the brain can be translated into the subject's verbal thoughts. EMF Brain Stimulation works by sending a complexly coded and pulsed electromagnetic signal to trigger evoked potentials (events) in the brain, thereby forming sound...in the brain's neural circuits. EMF Brain Stimulation can also change a person's brain-states* [of consciousness] *and affect motor control.*

Affect motor control... An agent like Mr. D was not your regular gun-carrying policemen. D toted a **mind-control** arsenal. He could implant a thought into a person's mind and make the subject think it was his own. He could push a mind into a suggestible trance state. He could read the emotions and thoughts of a mind. He could disable a body by disruptive signals to a person's motor cortex: affecting motor control.

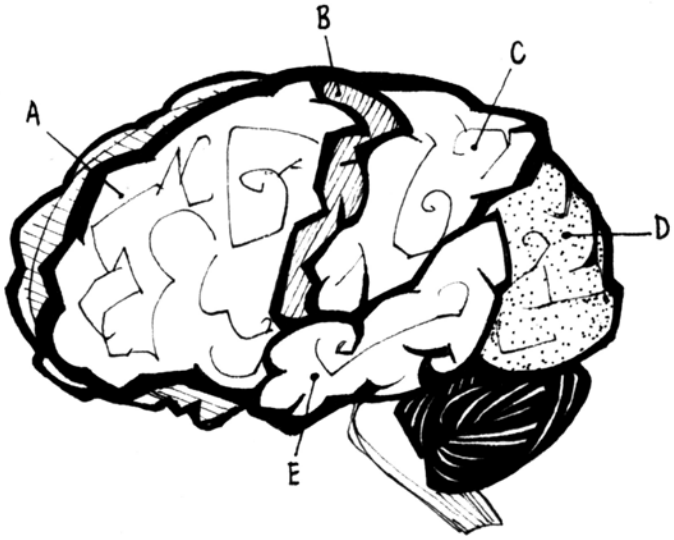

A. Frontal Lobe (Speech, etc.)
B. Motor Cortex (Movement)
C. Parietal Lobe (Sensory)
D. Occipital Lobe (Visual)
E. Temporal Lobe (Sound)

6. Brainprint—Reading Akwei also helped me to understand the "brainprint" perception. To insert a thought into a brain, he said, it is necessary to decode

> *..the resonance frequency of each specific brain area. That frequency is then modulated in order to impose information in that specific brain area. The frequency to which the various brain areas respond varies from 3 Hz to 50 Hz. Only NSA Signals Intelligence modulates signals in this frequency band.* **(Akwei document)**

That explained my perception that Mr. D took a "brainprint" of me. He was "decoding the frequency" of my individual brain.

Jon Franklin is a journalist who covers molecular psychology. He has twice been awarded a Pulitzer prize for nonfiction. His 1987 book, *Molecules of the Mind* described the emerging Brave New World of neuroscience. Franklin stated in *Molecules of the Mind* that each human mind has a unique brainprint, comparable to other unique human traits—fingerprint, retinal scan, and facial configuration. He predicted a coming era in which **police will identify people by their brainprints**.

A retired career man in military intelligence wrote:

> *Imagine transportation devices in which the key to the ignition is a digitized code derived from your electroencephalographic signature and is read automatically upon your donning some sort of sensorized headband.* **(Corso, *The Day After Roswell*, p. 99)**

7. Mind-reading—The mind-reading (mechanically recorded?) that went on, from the time Mr. D. was ear-to-ear with me until his car engine started up, was the last, and ugliest, problem to consider.

An acquaintance who once was expert at Silva Mind Control and then became a believer remarked that he used to have conversations with people in "other buildings." ESP. What a person in deep trance can accomplish by mental focus, logically a sensitive enough machine could do. Becker wrote that a conscious electromagnetic field has the potential to learn to directly recognize another such field, even to effect it. Or extract information from it:

> *The sensitivity of our instruments may someday develop to the point where we can tune in to biomagnetic fields on select frequencies, thus experimenting as directly with ESP as we now do with radio....* **(Becker, p. 266-267)**

The *National Enquirer*'s June 22, 1976, issue reported that the Advanced Research Projects Agency had been working since 1973 to create a machine which would read minds from outside the subject's body by deciphering that brain's projected magnetic waves. A scientist working on the project told the magazine's reporter that their goal was a method of mind control. He said that aspects of the new technology were being worked on at MIT, New York University, UCLA, and NASA's Ames Research Center.

A spokesperson at the Department of Defense, Robert L. Gilliant, Assistant General Counsel for Manpower, Health and Public Affairs, responded to the outcry caused by that article with a letter in which he insisted

> *...that the so-called 'brain wave' machine, which was the subject of the National Enquirer article...is not capable of reading brain waves of anyone other than a willing participant in the laboratory efforts to develop that particular device.* **(Gilliant quoted in Brodeur, *The Zapping of America*, p. 299)**

The part about the machine only being operational with a "willing participant" is an obvious lie. Unless a subject has special training or special ability to resist, it would not matter if he was willing or not.

In 1984, G. Harry Stine wrote about cyberpersons, the frontier where human nervous systems and electronic circuities merge in his book, *The Silicon Gods*. Stine predicted that chips, which he called "intelligence amplifiers," would soon be available either for implant or temporary attachment to human nervous systems. Stine said that these devices will enable other persons to "get inside a person's head" because of providing the ability to (amplify?) hear another person's thoughts.

In 1986, a writer for *Science News*, reported that:

> *The techniques, under study at the University of Michigan at Ann Arbor, in AT&T labs, and elsewhere, will allow outsiders to direct a person's brain cell conversations and talk directly to the individual's brain neurons.* **(Julie Ann Miller, "Chips on the Old Block," *Science News*, June 28, 1986, pp. 408-409)**

Miller said that research was then focused on the development of integrated circuit chips which could be implanted into a brain.

Akwei reported the finished new technology:

> *The NSA's Signals Intelligence has the pro-*

Of Biochips and Cyborgs

Government research into bioelectricity, and technologies that combine man and machine, got serious in the early 1980s. In 1984, two-thirds of the $47 billion federal research budget went to the military. (That may be a typical percentage. It is the only year for which I have a measure.) Shortly before 1985, government research in **bioelectricity** and **biomagnetism** kicked into high gear with a multimillion push. "In this area almost all research funding is military." **(Becker, *The Body Electric*, p. 333)**

Back in 1982, the National Science Foundation had begun to fund research which sought ways to **"glue" biochip proteins to neurons**. Biochip technology uses organic materials to create the data-processing chips. These organic chips can be integrated with human nervous systems, even implanted into living human brains. The result is literal machine-man combinations.

> *In a procedure until recently confined to the fantasies of science fiction, microchips are now being routinely placed into brain stems and cortexes to relieve a variety of medical conditions. Micro-engineered probes many times thinner than a human hair are buried deep inside the brain, fed by platinum wires lacing underneath the skull. More than fifteen thousand people so far have had their brains wired, and this population of cyborgs will increase exponentially. The National Institute of Health leads this field.*
>
> *....Some second generation implants can now think. They can interface with brain, provide complex instructions to mechanical parts, and read brain activity. The use of computer microchips also allows these implants to provide a mass of unique information about the host human.*
>
> *A new generation of intelligent materials and chemicals can fool the brain into believing they are part of the human body, and thus become part of it. Scientists at ICL, IBM and Rank Xerox have independently developed organic based engineered computers, allowing them to construct machines out of living material, using protein strands as wires, and molecular movement as memory. As computers can be 'grown' on living tissue, the interdependency becomes limitless.* (Simon Davies, "The Future, Big Brother & You," *The Free American*, June 1996, p. 4. Published on New Dawn's Web site at: http://www.privacy.org/pi/)

Government research to develop a bionic brain has also been a well-funded area. Living neurons, when maintained in an artificial and semi-mechanical environment, are called **wetware** to distinguish them from "hardware." An Canadian acquaintance who does computer research told me about the **neural net.** Neural nets learn and generalize just like normal neurons. If you give a neural net the rule that the past tense is built by adding "ed" it will say "goed" (instead of "went"). You must also teach it every exception to every rule. Then it will learn, just like a child, that the proper usage is "went," not "goed." Neural nets are now used in both commercial and military applications. The **bionic brain** is here. It is called the **biocomputer**.

> *prietary ability to monitor, remotely and non-invasively, information in the human brain by digitally decoding the evoked potentials in the 30-50 Hz, 5 milliwatt electromagnetic (EMF) wave. Contained in the electromagnetic emission from the brain are spikes and patterns called "evoked potentials."*
>
> *Every thought, reaction, motor command, auditory event, and visual image in the brain has a corresponding "evoked potential" or set of "evoked potentials." The EMF emission from the brain can be decoded into the current thoughts, images and sounds in the subject's brain.*

So why has all this exciting news about the frontier of scientific research in electronic transmission, to and from, human brains not been publicly reported?

It has not been reported because Secret, Don't Tell is a secret, and it is growing, and growing—worldwide. A Swedish author states: "...covert surveillance systems able to control the neurological activity of the brain have been developed in secret and beyond public awareness..." **(Robert Naeslund, *When the State Rapes*, Slipgaten 12, 117-39, Stockholm, Sweden)**

Secret, Don't Tell has been made retroactive. A chilling instruction in an old intelligence memo (written by a highly-situated person in U.S. military intelligence) "recommends" complete erasure of a segment of history:

> *I recommend that the background of our experimentation with long, low-frequency brain waves and any source material be completely expunged along with any historical data relevant to this analysis.* **(Corso, *The Day After Roswell,* p. 199)**

History, however, is resistant to being "completely expunged." In 1987, Jon Franklin wrote frankly about prospects for the new mind-reading technology:

> *...the day may come when mind-scanners are commonplace in hospitals. There are also possibilities outside medicine. Mind-scanners might be useful, for instance, in diagnosing accused criminals who plead insanity. Since 'mindprints' probably can't be faked or altered, they could serve to identify people who are, say, involved in security operations...They could also be used to screen students or job applicants...* **(p. 197)**
>
> *What will happen when law enforcement agencies apply the mind-scanners to the problem of lie detection...CIA operatives might have to undergo periodic scans to make sure they haven't become double agents.* **(Franklin, p. 288)**

Again and again, Akwei's statement referred to computer-aided mind-reading technology:

> *Remote neural monitoring (RNM, remotely monitoring bioelectric information in the human brain) has become the ultimate surveillance system. It is used by a limited number of agents in the US Intelligence Community.*

WHOOEEEH! Had I ended up quite literally, smack dab in the arms of one of them: an NSA agent equipped to do **remote bioelectric monitoring?** And I had escaped to tell the tale.

I was confident that my mind had not revealed anything of interest to Mr. D, either in emotion or verbal thought. Somehow, my unconscious had been able to detect his "noninvasive" invasion. Then my own "Secret, Don't Tell" conditioning reflexively ensured that I revealed nothing—except the unimportant disclosure that I thought his behavior was SLEAZY.

Like a child, huddled terrified under a blanket in the house's basement, my mind split had listened to the footsteps of an intruder noisily walking about upstairs and had kept hidden the existence of itself and of its treasures of information. I had endured that encounter and kept my mind's freedom, but I did not want to be so tested again.

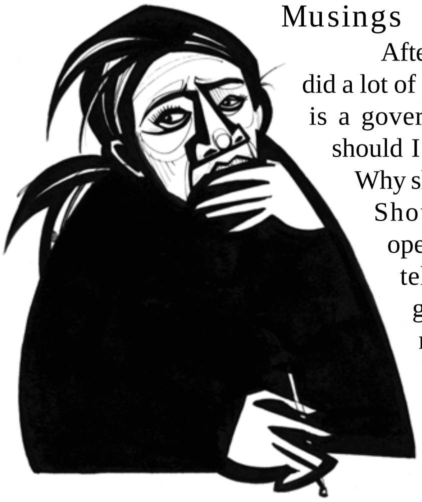

Musings

After meeting the Ds, I did a lot of thinking. If Mr. D is a government man, why should I be afraid of him? Why should I avoid him? Shouldn't I just be open and trusting and tell all? Isn't our government benevolent and the friend of any law-abiding citizen?

But he was not honest with me. I did not like the arrogant way he attempted to view my mind's contents. Thought police. What would thought police in a Muslim society do? In a Communist one? In a society in which people who want to grow their own vegetables and butcher their own chickens are viewed as social renegades by a government controlled by a handful of corporate vegetable growers and agribusiness chicken marketers?

What would thought police do in a society where the masses were ignorant that thought police exist—and the highest priority of the thought police was to keep the existence of the thought police secret?

What was Mr. D looking for? Was he checking me out for possible subversive tendencies? Or looking for another puppet?

If he was just looking for bombers, I could almost make my peace with his technology. But he tried it on me. Did he try it on me because I fit the profile of a possible bomber? Ridiculous. I am female, and, as far as he knew, only interested in goats and gardens. In fact, I abhor violence of every sort—including the secret violence of mind invasion.

More likely, he targeted me because I am a writer with some 400,000 books in print—millions of copies if you count my old articles printed in *Guideposts*, *Organic Gardening*, and *Backwoods Home Magazine*. “A woman of importance.” Any mind-controlled author and “woman-of-importance” could be useful to help validate and disseminate propaganda.

Is any woman or man “of importance” therefore a target to this type of NSA agent, a trophy worth the bother to acquire, a potentially useful puppet to manipulate toward accomplishing the mind-controllers’ chosen goals?

What “important people” are already unknowing puppets of the NSA? How high does their control go? How far does their web extend into the international communities? Bamford said the NSA has agreements with intelligence agencies in other countries. Akwei said that the electronic mind-control technology is international.

Back when I was not at all important, I already was captured and puppetized. Finally, I escaped.

“Something’s wrong here,” Mr. D had said. Yes, indeed. Something was very wrong here. But was it me? Or him? Or both?

Secret police. With mind-scanning abilities. Wow! Akwei said that the NSA can electronically track persons once they have obtained their brainprint. Well, they took a brainprint of me, but I was sure they did not know where I was now. Maybe they were trying to develop that technology, but had not yet perfected it. (Texe Marrs says that in his book, *Project L.U.C.I.D.*) I knew that Mr. and Mrs. D did not have any magic way of tracking me because friends told me she made several phone calls urgently seeking me after receiving the card which cancelled my visit to their home (and all associated speaking engagements).

I went away from all the earthly persons most dear to me in order to live in hiding, and to write and publish the truth as best I can discover it. Day by day, I struggle to remain free and keep making this book happen. I do that, in part, because I believe the **the public has a need and a right to know the truth**—all the truth. When a society loses the right to know all the facts, it loses the right to democracy. Only those persons who know all the facts have an arguable basis on which to make good decisions.

There is an old saying, “Hide the truth and the truth becomes your enemy. Disclose the truth and it becomes your weapon.”

We have certain agencies of government for whom truth and truth-tellers have increasingly become the enemy, because the agencies have hidden so much truth. Trapped in webs of cover-up and disinformation, citizens are increasingly uncertain who to believe, and what to believe, even about matters of fact. This is an especially hard situation for persons who believe that the law of God (“Thou shalt not bear false witness.”), and the name of God (“I am the way, the truth, and the life.”), require truth-telling.

The power to compel a trance, to implant a thought, or to mind-read a thought, at first proposal, surely was conceived as a “weapon” for use against an enemy. I’m glad that Gorbachev dismantled the Soviet threat. I’ve wondered for years if he became mind-controlled.

Maybe the displacement of nuclear power by mind-control power was the real significance of the day the Berlin Wall came down; a new political era began. In the era which had just ended, those nations which owned nuclear weapons and intercontinental ballistic missiles were the dominant political powers on earth. In the new era, mind-control weapons, and those who possess them (the secret agencies of certain nations) will be dominant.

Who will be the “enemy” in this new era? Perhaps the enemy will be unknown to the public. The battles for Top Dog among the mind-controllers will not be reported on the five o’clock news. Will the publicly defined “enemy” now become citizens who detest the use of unknowing subjects for terminal experiments, the clandestine use of mind-manipulating technologies on random persons by independent agents, and agencies or military serving secret (or private) agendas without oversight and control by democratically elected representatives?

What would happen if a person, with some kind of ability that top-secret programs have been racing to create for fifty years, turns on its creators and revolts instead of serving? What if that person's extraordinary ability is only absolute obedience, learned in suffering? What if, now, that person only wants to be free—and to tell?

If Mr. D discovers what I'm trying to do, is it he and his NSA associates who "wouldn't hesitate to kill me"? By administrative order, does an independent NSA agent have the right to kill? That's what Akwei said.

Would they kill me because I know too much? I only know too much because that knowledge was forced on me. Would they kill me because I'm going to tell? I never signed a promise not to tell. I never was a government employee. I'm a writer, a writer of nonfiction.

You can kill a writer, but you can't kill her book if **the readers act to keep it alive**.

I first met Mr. and Mrs. D in November, 1996. I canceled my bookings with them in mid-November. In March, 1997, the "Check Claims Branch, Exception Inquiry Section, Financial Processing Division, Department of the Treasury/ Financial Management Service," using the letterhead of the U.S. Treasury Department, and a Hyattsville, MD, address wrote to me. The letter was a complex notification and was full of threats. It said that I may have made a "false claim" against the U.S. government. It enclosed a copy of a check from "Rust Scaffold Services"(Chicago address) which supposedly had something to do with me. But I have never heard of "Rust Scaffold Services," nor have I lived in Chicago since my college days.

It also referred to the check which an unnamed "Agency" had sent me months earlier— $28.50 to purchase a copy of my *Encyclopedia of Country Living*.

The notification threatened a $10,000 fine and five years in jail if I have made a "false claim" against the government.

Have you heard of **permissible deceit**? The rule of permissible deceit allows police and government agents to say any false thing when endeavoring to get a subject to divulge any true thing. The letter then asked me to answer a detailed list of questions about where I am, who handles my mail, and how I cash checks. That was probably its real purpose: a fishing expedition for information.

I returned the "Treasury Department" letter with a note, explaining that it was obviously a mistake. I have never resided at the address which they listed.

I struggled on to complete this gargantuan task, helped by many friends.

God is faithful. This long and heavy task of telling will be finished. One day, you will read the text on your computer screen, or hold the printed book in your hand, or listen to it on tape. The Secret, Don't Tell will have been told. The central facts of hypnoprogramming and modern mind-control technologies won't be secret any more.

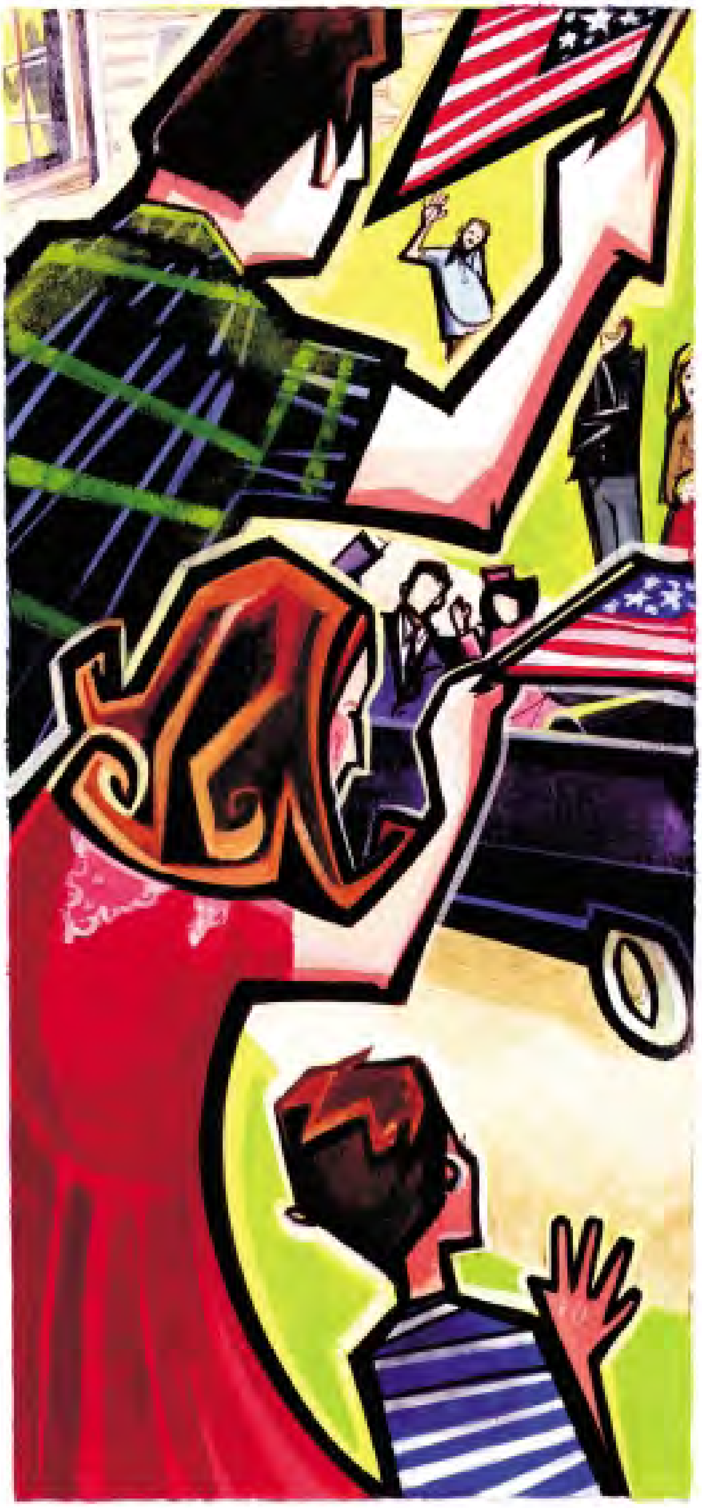

Two weeks later, he was assassinated in Dallas

PART III

Trance Phenomena

Trance as a Personal Experience
Ten Important Hypnotic Phenomena

Screen-watching...isolates people from physical reality, and from each other.

Trance as a Personal Experience

Light Trance,
Deep Trance,
Or Hypnosis?

☑

Hypnosis?
Or Just
Advertising?

> ***The Church of Scientology...does not give credit to hypnotism... explaining that their processes are the really valid ones while hypnosis is outdated...*[but]** ***their methods are clearly hypnotic ones....yoga comes close to being an Eastern way of using what in the West is called hypnosis...all regimented techniques such as Silva Mind Control, EST, etc., have the phenomena of hypnosis at their roots...although most would fervently deny this. Why? It is very simply good business to try to come up with something which seems different, if you are trying to sell it to a purchasing public.***
>
> **McGill, *J. of Hypnotism*, March 1990, pp. 30-31**

In 1945, fewer than 200 U.S. professionals used hypnosis. By 1971, 20,000 dentists, physicians, and psychologists were using it professionally.[1] Mental health personnel, advertisers, spiritual advisors, motivation specialists, sports psychologists, people programmers, educators, meditation leaders, dream-group leaders, and group leaders of every sort now use more and more sophisticated mind-influencing technologies. Now, millions of people expertly induce trance and direct the trance experience of others—often for profit (and power).

Human society is now polarizing into division between the influencers and the influenced, the programmers and the programmed, those in the know and those out of it[2] The trend is toward division into subjects and operators—at worst, into hypnotic predators and hypnotic prey. (The prey may unconsciously long to move up and become predators.) There has been an associated revolution in attitude toward trance. In 1971, LeCron wrote, "Where it was not at all unusual twenty years ago to have a patient refuse hypnotic treatment, now this is a very rare occurrence..." **(LeCron, *The Complete Guide to Hypnosis*, p. 223)** In 1997, most persons enter inductive settings with even greater abandon.

How did that happen? It happened because the technologies of trance induction and trance management have become ever more sophisticated, more effective, and more widely disseminated to possible "agents." (The names for hypnotist are as legion as the names for hypnosis). It happened because public information about trance has become tightly restricted to only positive, good-marketing statements. The truth is that trance can help. The myth is that trance absolutely cannot be harmful.

---

[1] LeCron, *The Complete Guide to Hypnosis*, 1971, p. 1.

[2] In Kuhn and Russo's 1958 anthology, *Modern Hypnosis*, I noticed that 25% of the authors (all expert hypnotists) had been, or were presently, employed in either Labor Relations or Personnel Management for various huge corporations (usually as department head). I had not realized that hypnotists would be concentrated in that field. On second thought, however, it makes sense. An expert at disguised induction could have great potential in either Labor Relations or Management.

It is self-defense to understand how your mind works. Awareness of your suggestibility can help you resist manipulations that you might otherwise uncritically accept. Induction and suggestion technologies (induction to lower consciousness, suggestion to take advantage of that state) are now very sophisticated. Those technologically expert mind manipulations are directed at a largely ignorant public.

Are These *Statements True Or False?*

(The answers are on the next page.)

- All human beings vary in state of consciousness throughout their 24-hour day—and throughout any trance. The possible depths range from nil to coma.
- You are naturally in deep trance every evening just before you fall completely asleep and every morning just as you are waking up.
- A part of your brain called the reticular activating system specializes in raising (stimulating) and lowering (inhibiting) your consciousness.
- A trance experience can be individual or it can be shared by two or more persons.
- Your trance experience can be guided, directed by another person (hypnotist, charismatic leader, meditation guide, etc.). Or it can be spontaneous, freely unfolding from inside you.
- There are many different ways, called "inductions," to push a susceptible person into lower consciousness.
- Everybody has a certain inborn status of trance susceptibility, ranging from zero to much. The more you experience trance, the deeper the trance tends to get as your susceptibility becomes trained, exercised, and reinforced. Once you have acquired deep trance capability, you will always have it.
- People with the most susceptibility are called "somnambulists," because they can walk and talk in deep trance without waking up.
- Trance is always "hypnotic" in that, the deeper you go, the more suggestible you become. The deeper your trance, the more uncritically you accept anything you hear or read or view in that state.
- A controlling trance state that functionally is hypnosis can be knowingly induced, managed, and concluded by an operator without using the word "hypnosis."
- After any trance induction, even after being told to "wake up" from hypnosis, there is a post-hypnotic period of suggestibility lasting anywhere from several hours to after a night's sleep. During that time, you are extra susceptible to reinduction of trance.
- Trance is addictive. It is our natural programming for social bonding, choosing and following leadership, and profound learning.
- Any entranced person tends to develop emotional fascination with, and emotional dependence upon, the cause of that trance. That phenomenon is called "rapport."
- Trance/hypnosis is unconsciously contagious. If you are around it, you may get caught up in it. Trance contagion explains some historical incidents of "mass hysteria."
- Persons who are in an emotional state (including being angry or hostile) are more likely to be influenced in a trance setting than observers who are simply indifferent.

True or false? They're ALL true.

Trance: The Subjective Experience

It is like a door opening to knowing yourself better, or anything else you're focused on in that moment. In normal waking consciousness the doors to direct perception of the data, memories, and emotions stored in your unconscious are almost closed. The more creative you are, however, the more "ajar" they tend to be.

Or it is like a teeter-totter. Your mind is the teeter-totter. The conscious (you) mind sits on one end of the board. Your unconscious mind sits on the other end. Visualize the act of going into trance as

> *...the subconscious part of the mind becoming the dominant one...visualize the mind as a see-saw with the conscious part normally at the elevated end. During hypnosis this end would descend and the subconscious mind at the other end of the plank would rise to become the dominant one.* **(LeCron and Bordeaux, *Hypnotism Today*, pp. 143-145)**

Varying depths of trance correspond to varying positions of the teeter-totter board. They also correspond to brain wave states. The slower your brain waves (until you are asleep), the deeper your trance. As you move down into trance, mental activity shifts from the left to the right hemisphere. There is a quieting of the analytical, reality-orienting voice of consciousness as your conscious mind becomes more dissociated, more off-line, more displaced. Correspondingly, the door opens wider to input from your unconscious functions of mind.

At its best, human trance capacity is an innate biological mechanism by which we can

- Be moved by persons and ideas with potential for importance, then give that person (or idea) our loyalty. We may thus fall in love and create a nuclear family, or bond with others as extended family. We may be moved to work together on a worthy common cause (or an unworthy one).
- Access the vast experiential data bank and great problem-solving ability of our unconscious sector; connect with memories from a younger age; obtain creative, problem-solving, and planning ideas.
- Receive extrasensory (or holy) insight, help, warning, and guidance.

Light Trance, Deep Trance, or Hypnosis?

...trance states in daily life, especially light ones, occur, pass unnoticed, and remain unrecorded.

- Griffith Wynn Williams, "*Hypnosis in Perspective*," p. 4

There are three distinct and different types of trance. Two are characteristic depths of trance: light and deep. The third is a formal style of operator-controlled trance called **hypnosis**. Induction of trance is not the same thing as hypnosis. A trance, light or deep, can be turned into a hypnosis, light or deep.

I. **Light trance** is:
  a. Conscious
  b. A high alpha state
  c. A mental condition from which you can instantly emerge any time you want.
  d. Suggestible.
  e. A generator and conduit of rapport.

II. **Deep trance** is characterized by
  a. Loss of conscious control
  b. Perceptual distortion
  c. Feeling of heightened significance for experiences or ideas acquired in this state
  d. A sense of contact with the ineffable
  e. Hypersuggestibility.
  f. Heightened rapport

III. **Hypnosis** is
  a. An operator-managed trance, the conventions of which are already known by, or are taught to, the subject.

Natural Trance

Many factors can induce natural trance states: religious practices, poetry and music (rhythm, tone, and content), daydreaming, staring into a flame, thinking about a dream. There is the spontaneous **creative trance** of a choreographer, writer, or musician, while working—and the creative trance in which performers of dance, theater, and music may work. **Highway trance** can cause vehicle accidents: "Both monotony and bright points of fixation are part of the repertory of hypnotic induction." **(G. W. Williams, "Highway Hypnosis," 1963)**

We naturally shift up and down in level of consciousness, all day, every day. When you stare off into space, "lost in thought," that is a **state of lowered consciousness**. A natural deep trance, a **hypnogogic** period, always happens as part of the brain wave stages as you wake up, and as you fall asleep. Those **natural trances** are different from systematically developed, operator-controlled trance, because their induction is spontaneous and the control is yours. They vary in depth.

Light Trance—In lowered consciousness, we are the most suggestible and the most persuadable. In that state we fall in love—with persons or ideas. We give our loyalty, our love, our sacred love. We accept our most fundamental beliefs. In any trance experience we find good (or what seems good). We find truth (or what seems truth). Deep trance experience is never trivial or transient to the person who experiences it. It becomes the standard by which we judge all other experience.

Do you eat, go to sleep, or wake up from sleep? Those all lower consciousness. You are also in light trance while deep in thought, praying with intensity, hearing a beloved, familiar piece of music, watching television, getting a massage, whenever you're caught up in emotion, in love, or focused on any fascinating experience. Any time you think of, or tell, a dream, your consciousness lowers. Emotional shock, fatigue, sensory deprivation (boredom), and sickness lower consciousness. So do rhythmic sounds or flashing lights. So does a fascinating book, play, statue, or painting. Light trance experience is a rich thread in the problem-solving, creative, planning, emotional, and spiritual texture of the life of anybody who is genetically able—and therefore likely—to experience it.

People are naturally attracted to whatever lowers consciousness. The deeper they go, the more they are attracted to that experience. Your choice of habitual context in which to experience lowered consciousness makes all the difference in how your life turns out. Is it a drug party? a tavern? a concert hall? naked bodies? a TV theme song signaling the beginning of a favorite program? the singing before the preaching? the praying afterward? Do you visualize or meditate, watch video or films, play games, run? Do you seek out extreme challenges like bungee-jumping, roller-coaster riding, hang gliding, sky diving, climbing sheer rock cliffs? Those all lower consciousness.

Trance is a physiological mental state characterized by heightened suggestibility. It always has a context.

That context is what it "contains." It can contain any idea, self-generated or suggested by another person, worthy or unworthy, true or false. **Trance capacity** is the means by which we experience the directives of a hypnotist or help from the Divine. The physiological mechanism is the same. What you fill that container with makes the difference.

The mind, like the body, is a gift which may be tragically misused. Trance capacity can result in a person being manipulated, seduced, exploited, even destroyed. As with our sexuality, the gift of capacity for lowered consciousness must be protected from abuse, used wisely and appropriately. You are suggestible. Humans are born believers. You can control, however, what you expose your brain to. You can crown your life with a suitable choice, carefully nurtured in a suitable setting, or you can ruin your life with inappropriate choices. Trance experience is a natural talent, a natural hunger for those who are genetically equipped for it. Exercise good judgement and self-control. Use the two gifts wisely: mind and body.

Deep Trance—People view deep trance experiences either with exaggerated suspicion, or exaggerated awe, depending on whether the context is familiar or unfamiliar, approved or disapproved. Deep trance does have extraordinary aspects. Trance/hypnosis may look like a state of sleep, but exactly the opposite is true. Behind the outer aspect of deep trance, there is mental acuteness, intensity, and potential productivity far beyond the capacity of any nontrance state. A person in this altered state of consciousness may be more sensitive to surroundings, more articulate, more critical, more appreciative, and/or more imaginative—more of whatever mental capacity is triggered.

Your brain's physiology is the reason why deep trance experiences tend to feel spiritually intense. In deep trance, the basic assumptions by which your brain manipulates data are available for adjustment—minor or major. Any adjustment of those fundamental parameters in your deepest programming is going to feel like a religious experience.

Every major religion has a denomination, or practice, that pushes worshippers toward the deepest trance state: Islam's Sufism, Judaism's kabbalah; practically any Buddhist or Hindu worship form; and Christianity's charismatics, mystics, centered prayer, monastic meditation, exorcisms, and visions.

Christian denominations vary across a wide spectrum in induction techniques and the depth they target. Inductive elements may include music, solemnity, repetition, and magnificent symbols and visualizations. I have been deeply moved by skilled liturgical music and beautiful patterned expressions of faith. But, let me add, one of the most profound spiritual experiences I ever had happened in a tiny rural Mennonite Church in Oregon. Half the congregation was singing off-key. The preacher was an humble, good man, but not an extraordinary speaker. Yet there, the Spirit of the Lord touched and guided me.

Eastern religious practices first came to America through the influence of pop stars and psychedelics, yogis in labs demonstrating amazing control of internal body functions, and Zen masters hooked up to EEG machines. Eastern religions deliberately and efficiently guide a subject into the deepest trance state possible. They equate religious training with sophisticated induction training. They define the deepest trance as the most desirable religious state. As Western researchers pressed forward into trance experimentation, Western variants on the Eastern imports developed.

The biggest, liveliest, most overt deep trance marketplace

pitching its wares to Generation X is the whole New Age religious scene: psychics, gurus, yogis, hypnotists, channelers, dream therapists, scream therapists, massage therapists, movement therapists, hypnotherapists, mediums, visionaries. There is a trance angle to all the New Age interests: paranormal phenomena, drug-induced states, mystical experiences, dreams, and mutual hypnosis. New Age activities are a religion based in a thousand versions of put me down (into trance), and fill me up (with whatever).

The inductions out there are not all religious. Most women expecting a baby train in LaMaze, or its equivalent of **coached childbirth**. Athletes visit sports psychologists to train in **concentration**. If you go to the emergency room with a migraine, you get **progressive relaxation** followed by visualizations. Blood pressure patients can get **biofeedback training**. Cancer and AIDS patients visualize their white blood cells increasing in number (and they do increase!). Pain patients learn self-hypnosis.

Commuters with lifestyle problems listen to hypnotic tapes with subliminal messages, trying to reprogrammed themselves out of bad habits. Couch potatoes can watch hypnotic videos with subliminals. Nicotine and ice cream addicts can go to hypnotic stop-smoking or reduce-eating “seminars.” Television viewers and pop magazine readers are urged to call a psychic.

☞ *It is good business. Anybody entering deep trance gets a thrill (a surge of cortical excitation) from the* ***Aha!*** *center in their limbic brain. A* ***rapport*** *attraction to the agent of that inductive rush follows, plus an instinctive bonding with whomever you shared that experience. These three forces (Aha!, rapport, and bonding) add up to a strong urge to return for reinduction.*

Persons who are genetically nonsusceptible to deep trance are left on the sidelines, appalled at the mental antics of both the suggesters and the suggestible.

“Hypnosis” Defined

Some persons see the world as a system of competing wills in which weaker minds are dominated by stronger ones. People do influence—or are influenced by—other people in every interaction, usually not intentionally. The more you like and trust another person, the more likely you are to accept suggestion from that person. Any natural leader elicits a “hypnotic” response from his followers. None of that, however, is hypnosis in its formal definition.

Hypnotism is a form of unconscious influence so extreme as to be a special category. It is an **operator-managed trance** state. When the subject is most deeply somnambulist (most extremely dissociated), and if there is rigid operator control of that state, then that operator is most truly a hypnotist. In this formal and rule-governed style of trance, **hypnosis**, the operator’s will displaces the subject’s will and directs his unconscious. A defining element for hypnosis is the degree of operator control.

Hypnosis is a technology. Like any other technology, since fire was tamed and the wheel invented, it can be used either for good or evil. Hypnosis is used in stop-smoking and weight-loss clinics, by sports psychologists, behavior therapists, and hypnotherapists. Some psychologists, psychiatrists, and doctors use hypnosis in their medical practices to treat problems such as anxiety, phobias, sexual dysfunctions, bulimia, and chronic pain. Suggestion under trance can minimize pain and bleeding in any medical situation from childbirth to dental procedures, and in surgeries of all sorts.

The root for the word “hypnosis” is the Greek word for “sleep,” but hypnosis differs from physiological sleep. Trance is not necessarily the same thing as hypnosis, but hypnosis always starts out as trance. Some hypnotists, in private conversation—comparing the ecstasy of religious experiences, meditations, visualizations, concentrations, and reveries—insist “it’s all hypnosis.” That is a false statement. It is all **trance**, but it is not all **hypnosis**.

Trance is physiologically defined by dominant brain wave pattern, bioelectricity (positive or negative current and direction of direct current flow in the head), and blood chemistry. Hypnosis is any trance state that is initiated, managed, and concluded by an operator (the **hypnotist**). That management usually involves suggesting cues for reinduction and awakening. The hypnotist trains his subject to increase depth of trance, suggestibility, and obedience.

A hypnotist’s use of authority can vary wildly. He can create the state, then let the subject take full control; training in biofeedback does that. At the other extreme, the hypnotist uses a totally authoritarian strategy in which the subject never is expected to have self-control in the hypnotic state again. Suggested total amnesia for all events under trance may cause the subject to be consciously unknowing of their hypnotic relationship. Complete amnesia is not typical, however, even of deep trance events.

Hypnosis, at best, is a special way of encouraging a subject's unconscious mind to activate its own capacity for healing. At worst, it can be the tool of an abusive parasitizing of one mind by another for the purpose of exploitation. It becomes clear, therefore, why the Bible repeatly warns against involvement in the practice.

If the operator told you to jump, after the hypnosis is over, when he says "Boo!" and you do not jump, you were not hypnotized. If you do jump—and explain you are just playing along—you were hypnotized, and now you are rationalizing.

Trance Training

> *We have had religious revolutions, we have had political, industrial, economic, and nationalistic revolutions. All of them, as our descendants will discover, were but ripples in an ocean of conservatism—trivial by comparison with the psychological revolution toward which we are so rapidly moving. That will really be a revolution. When it is over, the human race will give no further trouble.* **(Aldous Huxley, quoted by Andrews and Karlins in *Requiem for Democracy? An Inquiry into the Limits of Behavioral Control*, p. 1.)**

Therapists of every sort, motivational speakers, and religious leaders usually include at least light trance in their program. Teachers of all sorts now lead people in guided visualizations from kindergarten to the old age social hall. Meditators, both in and out of named and organized groups, are now legion. Most organizations build loyalty using trance or brainwashing techniques (or both). Advertising and propaganda have become ever more sophisticated, more capable of persuading.

The most blatantly inductive television routine that I have seen is the introduction to a children's cartoon show. Many children now also receive induction training in the classroom. I met a young Christian woman who had attended a public (arts) high school in Miami for its ballet program. One day, her teacher brought two one-hour hypnotic tapes to school. For two consecutive classes, she played those tapes. All her students, except my young friend, listened without objection.

The tape began with a visualization induction, then deepened the subjects, then told them to receive instruction from an internal "shaman." Thus, each hearer was directed to create an unconscious mind-split with a mission to communicate. The result could be inconsequential, or helpful, or mentally disturbing. The Christian student had heard enough. She made an excuse of illness and left the room. The teacher pursued her into the hall. There she argued bitterly, vehemently against her student's objections to listening to the tape. When the student stated that her religious conviction did not allow listening, the teacher finally let her remain outside the classroom. After that, however, the teacher—and, under her leadership, other students—made such a negative issue of that student's devout Christianity that she left to complete high school at home.

Was that an isolated incident or part of a trend? In American classrooms:

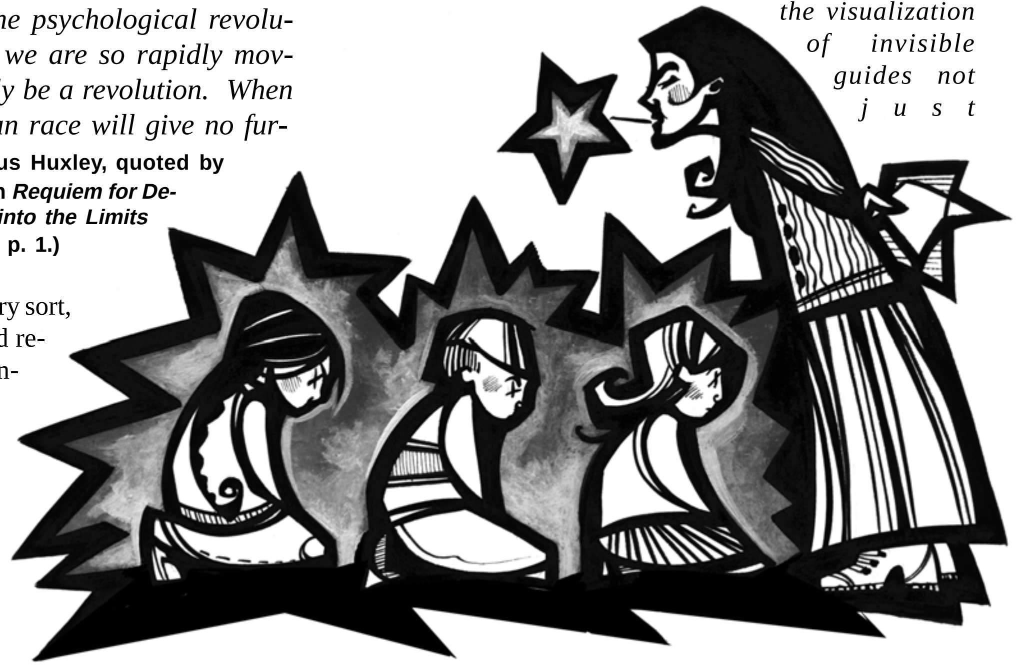

Children also partook in the visualization of invisible guides not just

> *through the Galyean approach but through Silva Mind Control. They would lie on the floor and empty their minds, invoking the invisible presences within them. In Buffalo, New York, students were required to learn Silva Mind Control and reportedly contacted the spirits of various long-deceased historical figures—a new way to study George Washington and Abraham Lincoln...Featured in a brochure entitled "Education in the New Age," Canfield and Klimek led* [teacher] *workshops on "Meditation and Centering in the Classroom" and "Guided Imagery"...*[they have] *coauthored numerous books such as,* The Inner Classroom: Teaching with Guided Fantasy. **(Brooke, *SCP Journal*, Vol. 16:4, 1992, pp. 20-22)**

I heard that in Wisconsin many elementary students are now given similar training. In 1997, I was a guest speaker in a Northwestern Michigan public school. I noticed a group of students across the room (which contained several classes doing various activities) who were commencing a computer class by gathering in a tight circle with their teacher, heads together, and intoning a prolonged "OMMMMMMM." When the head teacher noticed me staring at this activity, wide-eyed, she rushed over to the group, jerked her head toward me as if in explanation of her request, and caused them to immediately cease the induction. They dispersed to their seats before the computers.

Hypnosis? or Just Advertising?

> ***The hypnotic pressures of everyday life....cause people to buy a special brand of toothpaste, smoke a given brand of cigarettes, or wear one type of hat and not another...***
>
> **- R.W. Marks, *The Story of Hypnotism*, p. 214**

I was talking with Jerry Rubin, an acquaintance who had once done hobby hypnosis, late one evening while he worked behind the counter of a local convenience store. Jerry was a heavy-set, middle-aged man with a blunt, unsophisticated manner, and a very kind heart.

"Isn't hypnosis the basis for advertising?" Jerry asked.

"Well, maybe some..."

"No, not some," Jerry retorted. "That's the basis of it. That's the underpinnings of mass advertising."

We stopped talking while Jerry rang up a young man's purchase of a pack of cigarettes. The customer left. I protested, "But most of us are able to handle advertising rationally."

"Are we?" Jerry asked. "How many people come in here dedicated to a specific brand of cigarettes? How did they get that conditioning? And they won't have another kind. The brands all taste the same. They all have the same effect. But those people are advocates of that particular brand. And I don't know any other explanation for it. There's no logical explanation. Why do we use underarm deodorant that is of no use to the world and yet a hundred million people demand it as the accepted norm? How do you do that? Repetition. Image-building."

I nodded.

Jerry continued, "If you're looking for the negative, nonmoral underbelly of hypnosis that most people don't look at, I don't think you're going to find it published. But the advertisers know how: subliminal sounds, subliminal pictures, the parent-figure that tells you what to do. The whole idea is to circumvent reason and manipulate you."

In the background I could hear the repetitive tinny tune of a videogame machine being played by another late-night occupant of the store. The young man was playing that same game over and over and over and over. Putting in quarter after quarter. Always losing.

"Think about it," Jerry insisted. "Think about how many people's minds have been altered to make them smoke cigarettes and kill themselves when they know for a fact they're going to die if they do this. They're committing suicide by smoking. It's stamped on every cigarette box. How can a corporation warp somebody's mind to do that?"

"Isn't the kid more likely to be following the example of parents, or peers? And then get addicted by the substance?" I asked.

"How do you get a peer group to smoke?" Jerry snapped back. "How do you get them to start? It's not natural. How many people are going to pick up a burning leaf and inhale it and have that become a social norm, a whole culture? Isn't that hypnosis?" he growled, "—circumventing the conscious mind?"

"Yeah," I admitted, "when you circumvent the conscious mind for your own purposes..."

"...you are hypnotizing somebody," Jerry finished.

"You are pushing buttons in the unconscious," I admitted. Then I told him how a person could be trained to be a compliant, amnesic hypnotic subject.

"I've read in spy novels of such drugs and stuff," Jerry said. "And anything that's in a spy novel is more than likely mirroring reality. I went over to the counseling center to get treatment for tension. The counselor said, 'Picture yourself in a nice warm environment, safe,' and so on. It was hypnosis but he didn't use that word. There's others doing that stuff you're talking about. Remember the dentist in town that got caught for telling women under hypnosis that for him to drill on their teeth they had to take their tops off and stuff?"

"Yeah."

"It works. And these psychologists who understand these tools—you betcha there's a bunch of them out there doing it. Because that's human nature from what I've seen. There's a bunch that aren't, but there's a bunch that are."

Jerry stopped talking. We were both silent for a bit. In the background, quarters plinked into the machine. A brief game. Then more quarters.

"The first scientific experiment on hypnosis was in France with a condemned prisoner," he said. "I read that in a book. They laid a guy out on an operating table, put him under hypnosis and told him he was going to die, that what they were going to do was slit his wrists and all his blood was gonna drain out of his body. They put ice across his wrists like that was a knife slash, and they dripped water into a bucket so he could hear the sound. And then they said he turned white and died. That's strong stuff!"

"It's called 'voodoo death,' death by suggestion," I explained. "It says in the books that a hypnotic operator should be careful because under hypnosis a subject's physiological reactions will match what he or she is told to hallucinate. So you don't frighten a person with a weak heart."

"The people I sent to Atlantis never had any troubles," Jerry said defensively. (He had hypnotized friends and told them to "Go to Atlantis.")

"Why did you ask them to go?"

"I wanted to find out what was there. You know, past lives and all that sort of stuff."

Suddenly I had a chilly feeling in my soul. Under deep hypnosis the Atlantis Jerry sent people to would have felt real to them. Atlantis could have become important in their lives for years after. Maybe for the rest of their lives. They would believe in Atlantis, believe in past lives, want to see those visions again, feel that seductive deep trance sensation again. They would feel the powerful draw of rapport to Jerry for years after that. All because Jerry was playing around with hypnosis, using them as his subjects to "find out what was there."

I went home.

Advertising to the Unconscious

Military psychologists worked for decades to develop the most effective **propaganda** techniques. In the private sector, **advertising** experts have done the same. Companies spend millions on advertising because they know that it works, and they know how it works. In the 1950s, the advertising industry began **motivational research**. They discovered that ads could be directed at consumers' unconscious minds as well as their conscious minds. They learned that unconscious motivations could be even more powerful than conscious ones.[1] A bunch of new "needs" were then created by advertisers, targeting unconscious yearnings to be more sexually attractive, rich, youthful, popular, etc.

P.T. Barnum's quote, "There's a sucker born every minute," was advice to sellers. "Let the buyer beware" is the best advice for buyers. There are ruthless marketers out there whose product may be worthless—even dangerous or addictive. They know just what attracts and hooks and how to do effective marketplace inductions. They know you will automatically defend any habit they can get you to adopt. You will also instinctively evangelize your new habit to other persons—whether it is a drug, a religion, or a rejection of religion.

Media Can Displace Reality—Over 97% of homes, all over the world, now have a television set. Most people spend hours every day in front of the fascinating—and hypnotic—tube viewing reprehensible social examples, addictive substitute realities, managed news (government knows how important this medium is!), and commercial persuasions (often with subliminals). Human beings are born gullible to a verbal or printed pitch.

Media are powerful mind-influencing tools because, strange but true, your brain takes the spoken or written word more seriously than the evidence of its own senses.

---

[1] Vance Packard brought the new technology to public attention in *The Hidden Persuaders*, New York, 1957.

Gorton researched the effect of real ("direct") stimuli versus verbal suggestions to enter or leave trance. He gave hypnotized subjects competing commands: one to wake up, the other to stay in trance. He gave one command in a circumstantial, "direct" form. The other was in a verbal form. He measured responses with an EEG printout which showed appearance, or disappearance, and amount, of alpha waves. His subjects always obeyed the verbal instruction rather than the circumstantial one.

That is why you fall for the promises, the "sales pitch." The media are so important because the spoken word is dominant over reality. The media are not reality; they are just words (and pictures). Written words are dominant over both spoken words and reality. That is the importance of billboards, print ads on paper or screen—and Scripture. Screen speech and imagery, especially HDTV, may be the most powerful programmer of all. That is why advertisers of all sorts spend mega-bucks putting messages on the tube.

Big name ad agencies target your wallet and your children's minds very scientifically. Consciousness lowering in conditioned subjects happens quickly. The first three-fourths of a video ad often contains an inductive assault intended to lower consciousness and thus increase suggestibility.

Screen-watching tends to lower consciousness. It creates sensory deprivation. It isolates people from physical reality, and from each other. Normally, your eyes almost always are moving, seeking, evaluating. Even when you read, your eyes shift. When watching television, however, the eyeball does not move. The focus is fixed. All information is flattened into one dimension. The viewer is forced to focus on that single, flat dimension. This lowers consciousness.

Lowered consciousness is worth money to advertisers. The lower the viewers' state of conscious when the pitch comes, the greater their suggestibility and the greater the probability of message acceptance. Induction methods include shock (tension/fear), sexual arousal, relaxation (sensory deprivation), or disorientation (confusion). Then comes the sales pitch. The entire ad is repeated over and over because repetition is another factor that unconsciously persuades.

The technology of television has changed the political process. By means of television, a few people shape the opinion of millions. Those opinion-shapers are commanded by persons either in a position to pay for this expensive privilege, or with the power to demand control of it.

Television and Children

Video lowers consciousness, especially in children. Researchers experimenting with children wearing brain wave monitors could not prevent children from going into trance the moment they began to watch television or any video. A young mother, who usually kept the TV off, taped two Christmas specials, complete with commercials for a fast-food chain and a popular brand of doll. Her young children then watched the tapes over and over. She and her husband were amazed at how important that fast food chain and the doll products quickly became to their children.

Children are likely to acquire their values and beliefs from your (or the neighbor's) TV rather than from you, Sunday school, or academic school. Children who assume that Sesame Street is a rightful part of their day as preschoolers may demand MTV as teenagers.

Viewing of screen cartoons, and other animated, quickly shifting screen scenes, at a very young age and for many hours per day is one cause of the modern epidemic of ADD and hyperactivity. The child's brain continues growing after birth. As it grows, it adapts itself to the pace and content of its environment. Children growing up tied in a crib, staring at a ceiling, show symptoms of retardation. Children who grow up viewing screen images can show symptoms of attention deficit and hyperactivity.

The problem is that mother soon discovers that her child becomes physically quiet while watching those animated images on television or video. The path of least resistance is then to leave the television (or videos) running for hours every day. But the child is not truly relaxed. When the tube turns on, he goes into a trance. Trance puts the child's motor system off-line. He is only relaxed in the hypnotic sense. His body is immobilized, but his unconscious mind is going pell-mell, pacing itself to the lurching, chaotic, often violent or vile images on the screen. The very young child's brain adjusts its behavioral timing to resemble the timing of the animated material in its environment.

When the show is over, the child awakens from trance. With his motor function restored, he bursts into action with the stored-up energy of youth. If he behaves at the learned pace of an animated character, that child may be diagnosed as being hyperactive, or having attention deficit disorder. The usual treatment is ritalin, a drug that simultaneously stimulates and relaxes, just like television. Television is

> *...a major cause of hyperactivity...The physical energy which is created by the images, but not used, is physically stored. Then when the set is off, it comes bursting outward in aimless, random, speedy activity. I have seen it over and over again*

> *with children. They are quiet while watching. Then afterwards they become overactive, irritable and frustrated...television causes hyperactive response..It is bizarre and frightening, therefore, that many parents use television as a means of calming hyperactive children...The worst thing one can do for a hyperactive child is to put him or her in front of a television set.* **(Mander, *Four Arguments for the Elimination of Television*, pp. 167-8)**

Raising children on images of animated characters doing cruel and damaging things to each other to a background of jolly music is also taking a toll in children's peer relationships. The statistical frequency and severity of bullying is way up in this reared-by-TV generation, programmed by shows that feature the art of bullying as a staple.

HDTV—Television images soon will be much more hypnotic. **HDTV** is **high density television**. Sony Communications created it. The shape of an HDTV screen is rectangular, like film, rather than square, like a conventional television screen. It has far more detail in its scanning lines. That data increase is a quantum leap in focus demand and data input for the viewer's brain. The crystal-clear images are far more hypnotic than those of standard television. An HDTV film of outdoor scenes, with voice-over by a hypnotist, was shown to one-hundred TV industry representatives by a research hypnotist :

> *...we demonstrated that properly-selected HDTV images and hypnotic command can produce a light to medium open-eyed trance for most viewers...it's clear that domestic HDTV will one day tap into the viewer's subconscious mind....* **(Farago, 1991)**

Over the next decade, the entire North American television system is switching from standard transmission to HDTV. During this ten-year transition period, some people will have old TV receivers and some the HDTV type. Stations will transmit in both standard and HDTV mode. The switch to HDTV involves even more than everybody on the planet who wants TV reception buying a new receiver. All the television stations must be equipped to put out the HDTV signal. Hundreds of new television towers must be built (at $2 million a tower), many the size of skyscrapers (up to 2,049 feet high). After that, however, there will be no more standard broadcasts. You will watch HDTV, or nothing.

Subliminals

Subliminals are an important marketing technology. They can work on the same people that hypnosis works on, the genetically susceptible. Subliminals can be visual or auditory.

Visual Subliminals—Dr. Wilson Bryan Key, who studied subliminals in politics and advertising, identified them in print sources—newspapers, placards, magazine illustrations. A friend of mine, with the equipment to do it, studied television ads in slow motion, looking for sexual subliminals. He found them. "They're common," he told me. "The soap opera ads have the most." Visual subliminals can be effective because the film is showing a sequence of images timed at thirty, or more, images per second. But the conscious mind can only register about ten images per second.

> *A technique called subliminal advertising places images within the dot-scan sequence at a speed which is faster than sight. You get hit with the ad, but you can't process this fast enough, so you don't know the ad is registering...Your brain gets the message, but your conscious mind doesn't. According to those who have used the technique, it communicates well enough to affect sales.* (**Mander, *Four Arguments for the Elimination of Television*, p. 194)**

Audio Subliminals—Subliminal messages can also be added to audiotapes. You have to take the advertiser's word for it that there are subliminals in a tape.

> [They]*...insert messages into the mind of the individual without the person being aware of the mind-programming process. This highly developed modern technology...has become quite sophisticated...* **(Baer, pp. 49-50)**

The first subliminal audio technology used a background voice that matched the music in volume. Those messages cannot be detected unless you have a parametric equalizer. Want to create subliminal tapes yourself? Sorry, that technique is patented, and the patent holder exercises firm control. In fact, there are many patents now for various subliminal sound techniques. One method acoustically adapts the words so they are delivered in the same tone and rhythm as the music. Those subliminals are undetectable by the normal conscious mind. Once they are implanted, there is no known mechanical technology to detect them. The unconscious, however, is a supercomputer, and it hears them.

People do not know when they have watched, or listened to, a program with subliminals. They only know that it excited and convinced them. One day, a man showed me a large box of relaxation tapes he owned, more than fifty in all. He said, "I buy one, listen to it, and then send for another. I don't know why I do that." Perhaps while he was "relaxed" he heard a subliminal sales pitch to buy another tape.

A Subliminal Sales Event

One July night, in 1990, I sat in a hypnotherapy class in a Seattle suburb. Cheryl, a good-looking, blonde, fortyish woman sat behind me. She asked our teacher, Charles Tebbetts, "Can somebody be made to do something under hypnosis that they don't want to?" Then she started to tell him something.

Tebbetts cut her off sharply, snapping back, "Absolutely not!"

I turned around and whispered over my shoulder to her, "Yes, they can."

After the lecture and the evening's videotape, it was time for us to team up and take turns hypnotizing each other. Cheryl asked me to hypnotize her. Because I was new in class and very nervous about hypnotizing somebody, I was grateful she chose me to trust like that.

In the pre-induction interview she talked about an incident from several years ago that still deeply upset her. A friend had invited her to visit a promotional event. "I didn't know she was getting points for bringing me," Cheryl said. After watching the promotional film, she wrote a check for $2,000: "I had never had any interest in their product. I didn't want it. I really couldn't afford it. About a week later it was like I woke up and wondered what happened. Why did I do that? I've never been able to understand why."

I used a standard maternal induction, and Cheryl easily went into a trance. I then simultaneously deepened and regressed her, using an elevator countdown into the past. I had the "elevator doors" open up at the Las Vegas promotion for that company. I invited Cheryl to step out those doors into her memory of that promotion.

I asked her what was happening.

She was reliving the event. First, she said, she was in the hotel lobby. Then, she entered another room, sat down, and viewed a fast-paced, hour-long film. "It showed the swimming pool, the rec room," she said.

"Focus on the moment when you made the decision to buy," I said.

She was silent a long moment. Then, she said, "It never moves. It's like looking through the skin of a grey amoeba into the inside of it. The words never move."

"What do the words say?" I asked.

"They say, 'YOU WILL BUY THIS.'"

I did not understand. I questioned her more. Eventually, I figured out that she was watching a multilayered film. The rapidly changing conventional images of swimming pool, rec room, etc., were superimposed on that fixed background of words. She had not been consciously aware of seeing the background words, but she had unconsciously perceived them.

I asked Cheryl's unconscious to take note of the unethical quality of that type of suggestion. I asked it to choose a means to signal her if she was ever again exposed to that kind of attempted manipulation. It suggested "an emotional feeling—in her stomach." We then established that Cheryl's unconscious would give her an "emotional feeling in her stomach" plus a powerful urge to get up and walk out of the room, if a similar situation ever happened again.

When I awakened Cheryl from the trance, she told me she was so pleased to have that long-standing mystery in her life solved. She was also happy now to be protected against any similar exploitation.

I was happy too. At last, I had done something effective to help another person recover information from her unconscious and to resist future unethical mind manipulation.

Ten Important Hypnotic Phenomena

1. Suggestion
☑
2. Rapport
☑
3. Automatism
☑
4. Catalepsy
☑
5. Hallucination
☑
6. Anesthesia
☑
7. Posthypnotic Suggestion
☑
Normal Memory
☑
8. Amnesia
☑
9. Regression
☑
10. Confabulation

When one becomes familiar with the characteristics of hypnosis and the phenomena obtainable through its use, he must come to one conclusion: that the relatively few reported cases in America of hypnotically induced crimes is insignificant as compared with the potential number of undiscovered crimes of this nature.

Teitlebaum, 1964, p. 158

1. Suggestion

Suggestion commonly means advice presented in a non-compelling way.[1] When used in the context of hypnosis, however, suggestion means something entirely different. A hypnotist works to make his hypnotic suggestion as compelling as possible. If you're not suggestible, you're not hypnotized—for the primary characteristic of hypnosis is **suggestibility**. The deeper your trance, the greater your suggestibility. All the hypnotic phenomena, except rapport, directly derive from suggestibility.

There are four ways a subject perceives suggestion:

a) **Verbal Suggestion**—Spoken words.

b) **Nonverbal Suggestion**—Communication by eye and facial behavior, posture, gestures, and other body language.

c) **Intraverbal Suggestion**—Communication by vocal inflection and voice modulation. (Using intraverbal suggestion, experimenters have made hypnotized subjects do the exact opposite of their verbal suggestion.)

d) **Extraverbal Suggestion**—Communication conveyed by the implied meaning of words.

Suggestion Targets Automatic Obedience

When a subject's conscious mind has been, somehow, stripped away, turned off, or distracted, **induction** has taken place. Now the hypnotist can speak directly to the subject's unconscious mind without interference or censorship from his conscious mind. Suggestion means direct communication (bypassing the conscious mind) to the unconscious sector of mind. That direct communication targets the noncritical, automatic part of the brain for direct programming.

Direct vs. Indirect Suggestions

There are two types of hypnotic suggestion: **direct** and **indirect**. Direct suggestion instructs without disguising intent. Indirect suggestion is veiled, devious instruction designed to deceive and trick the subject into doing what the hypnotist wants. A subject is much more likely to obey an evil suggestion that is presented indirectly.

For example, Marcuse discussed how an operator might get hypnotic subjects to do what they would ordinarily resist. He said he might get subject X, an animal lover, to kill a cat by suggesting a hallucination that would cause X to see that cat as a dangerous tiger with a poisonous bite which would cause a painful and certain death, and the cat was about to attack. The subject "would then be told that, in self-defense, he would shoot the animal." **(Marcuse, *Hypnosis*, p. 110)** "Kill the cat" is a direct suggestion. "In self-defense, shoot the poisonous tiger" is an indirect suggestion.

Adam never disguised his commands to Zebediah. He relied only on trance depth, suggested amnesia, and direct commands. Bergen used both direct and indirect suggestions with Mrs. E. Nielsen often used indirect ones on Palle. He didn't say, "Go rob a bank and give me the money," a direct suggestion. Instead, Nielsen told Palle, "Your guardian angel, X, wants you to rob a bank to raise money for the sake of the Fatherland," an indirect suggestion.

2. Rapport

> ***Deleuze and the early mesmerists also described the evils resulting from too frequent, or too prolonged, hypnotic sessions. Such subjects gradually became addicted to hypnosis. Not only did their need for frequent hypnotization increase, but they became dependent on their particular magnetizer, and this dependency could often take on a sexual slant.***
>
> **- Ellenberger, *The Discovery of the Unconscious*, pp. 138-119**

Rapport As a Focus on the Hypnotist's Voice

Normal sleep is an isolated and private world, your self talking only to yourself in dreams. During hypnosis, however, the sleeping mind keeps a channel open to the voice and suggestions of the hypnotist. The narrowest meaning of **rapport** is the mental connection a hypnotized person maintains with the voice of his hypnotist. The words of a hypnotic induction usually reinforce that tendency: "You will be oblivious to all else, concentrated on, and aware only of my voice."

---

[1] "Suggestion" also means directive communication presented in an indirect way such that the person who obeys does not notice why he or she obeyed.

That remarkable focus is another aspect of rapport. When your mind is focused on only one thing, without other distractions, that one thing makes a strong imprint. The deeper you go, the more you have isolated a particular center of the brain from competing inputs. Hypnotic obedience results from sidelining the brain's conscious monitors and isolating the active network of neurons from competing networks. The hypnotic subject obeys the hypnotist's suggestion because a competing explanation or directive is not accessible.

Rapport as Love

After even one trance induction, subjects tend to feel an intense emotional tie to the initiator of that induction. They feel bonded, approving, and accepting of that source's point of view and open to his, her, or its spoken or context-implied suggestions. Rapport is the automatic tendency of trance experience to cause an attitude of respect, affection, and obedience in the subject. The first magnetizers, in France in the 1700s, believed rapport (a French word meaning "harmony" or "connection") was the central phenomenon of hypnosis, rather than suggestibility.

Rapport is far more than just a hypnotic phenomenon. Wherever there is charismatic leadership, love, or even close friendship, there is rapport. The line between rapport and other love relationships is fuzzy. Rapport always contains an element of dependence. It often has a subtle (or obvious) erotic element. Anybody who performs well for the public generates rapport. A teenager with a crush on a performer is in its grip. The rank and file tend to fall into rapport-love with their leaders or heroes—political, religious, cultural. Human beings naturally bond to, and organize themselves around, leaders.

Rapport As Addiction

Lowering consciousness feels good. Anything that feels good creates a longing for repetition. Rapport can become an intense, emotional relationship. The subject finds his thoughts fixed on the hypnotist between, as well as during, hypnotic sessions. He begins also to pick up and obey general context clues from the hypnotist as to what to believe and how to behave. Kubie and Margolin defined rapport as "a psychological fusion between hypnotist and subject" **("*The Process of Hypnotism and the Nature of the Hypnotic State*")**. An old-time mesmerist observed that

> *...the subject was hypersensitive to the hypnotist to the extent that he was able to perceive the latter's faintest signs. Through habit and training, a process of mutual understanding by signs developed between them, of which neither was aware. The subject became sensitive to the slightest shades of the hypnotist's thoughts without realizing how, and without the hypnotist's awareness.* **(Rualt, quoted in Ellenberger, pp. 153-154)**

Janet said the development of rapport over a series of hypnotic sessions had two distinct phases. In the first, the patient was freed from symptoms and felt much better. In the second, however, which he called **somnambulic passion**, the symptoms sometimes returned.

> ...[the] *patient felt an increased need to see the hypnotist and to be hypnotized. This urge often assumed the form of passion...ardent love, jeal-*

> *ousy, superstitious fear, or profound respect.*
>
> *Somnambulic passion was a potpourri of possible elements: erotic passion, or the kind of love one feels for a parent, or some other kind of love. One element that never varied however, was the patient's need to be directed.* **(Janet, 1897)**

Rapport can be transferred from one hypnotist to another by a simple verbal command, called ***transfer of rapport,*** *or* ***shifting the rapport****. An operator tells his subject to now obey a new operator in the same way he has been obeying the speaker. If the suggestion is accepted at the subject's automatic level of mind, rapport will shift.*

Rapport as Bonding

Subjects of the same hypnotist tend to **bond**. Old-time European researchers first noticed the tendency of patients of the same magnetizer to bond with each other. This principle has many applications. Persons influenced by the same leader(s) tend to trust each other, and to behave worthy of that trust. They relate as brothers and sisters. This psychological trait enables the bonding of family, congregation, and community.

Rapport Also Impacts the Hypnotist— Rapport flows both ways. The hypnotic subject influences the hypnotist's behavior, because a hypnotist unconsciously develops suggestibility to cues from his subjects. Thus, rapport tends to become a situation of **mutual suggestion**. The subject gives his hypnotist what the hypnotist secretly expects, and the hypnotist tends to create for the subject what the subject secretly expects. This unconscious collaboration between the charismatic leader and his followers has, in the historical record, resulted in remarkable elaborations of mutual delusion and absolutistic and costly loyalties: Jim Jones, Waco, the Heaven's Gate comet cult.

The Freudian View of Rapport—Freud called rapport **transference**. He believed it was a revival of the original parent-child relationship. Psychoanalytically-trained hypnosis researchers believed trance obedience was rooted in an unconscious longing for, or regression to, a childhood behavior (or instinctual early programming) of total dependence on, and uncritical love of, the parent figures. Little children can believe anything.

3. Automatism

One of the experiences that most surprises the hypnotized person is the seemingly automatic way in which the suggested actions execute themselves. His hands clasp tighter of their own accord, his arm stiffens itself, while he himself remains a passive spectator. Inexperienced subjects are often startled when they discover that this feeling is not an illusion...

- R. W. White, 1942, p. 318

"Suggestion" means any directive carried out with automaticity, or intended to be carried out with automaticity. **Automaticity** means it was obeyed by the subject's unconscious mind without control, criticism, or feedback from his conscious mind. **Automatism** means thinking at the unconscious level. Your conscious is a rational free agent. Your unconscious is more like a machine, a "slave" unit in computer language. It does all the automatic, habitual tasks such as writing, typing, eating with a fork, driving. It also responds "to such things as heat, cold, hate, danger, love and lust." (Birns, *Hypnosis*, p. 40) What we do automatically, we do without conscious awareness.

Suggestion Intends Automatic Obedience

Normally, suggestions are accepted by the unconscious only some of the time. Hypnotic technology strives to improve the odds of unconscious acceptance. A subject who had usually been very suggestible told her operator one day that his suggestion "did not take." "I am quite ready to obey you," she said, "and I will do it if you choose:

only I tell you beforehand that the thing did not take." (Janet, 1925) That patient had recognized the difference between voluntary, conscious cooperation (an intentional act), and the **reflexive**, unwilled response when a suggestion "takes" (an automatic response).

Automatism is **unconscious behavior**. The conscious analyzing, critiquing, and rejecting function of a deeply hypnotized person is inhibited. What is left is their capacity for automatic, unconscious response to suggestions. An act carried out in a state of automatism seems to execute itself. This statement may seem incomprehensible if you have never experienced the phenomenon of **nonvolition**. A posthypnotic suggestion, for example, carries itself out. You do not experience intention before the act. Your conscious mind does not participate in the act.

A hypnotist's suggestion intends this kind of automatistic obedience. In **automatism**, a subject's obedience becomes literal and humorless. The action of reasoning power is limited to searching out ways to implement the suggested behavior.

Words as Conditioned Stimuli—Hypnosis is a tool for programming and reprogramming because of the powerful effect of words (and the meanings and images they communicate) on the human mind. Pavlov called direct observation by sense organs the **first signal system**. He called language the **second signal system**.

Speech is an auditory code. Each word is an encoded meaning. Everybody who knows a language uses the same definitions for its words. A word can be decoded in the mind of the hearer after a child has learned the meaning of the word. Then, that word has become a **conditioned stimulus**. Each perceived word stimulates a **conditioned reflexive response** to recognize its meaning. Language recognition and response are automatic, **reflexive**—unless we are learning a new one.

Amazing but true, research has shown that words, the second signal system, are more effective at programming people than real life experiences, the first signal system! The words, to which we are exposed, program us. A primary phenomenon of hypnosis is based on this fact, that people respond automatically to words and the ideas they convey.

Bernheim first pointed out the phenomenon of direct programming by **verbal suggestion** back in the 1800s. You touch a hot stovetop and jerk your hand back. That heat was a direct sensory perception. But if I yell "Hot!" before your hand gets there, your hand will also jerk back. The word "hot" was a stimulus to which your brain has a conditioned recognition of its meaning. Acting in response to that recognized meaning, your hand pulls back from the thing now identified as "Hot!" For human beings, words elicit conditioned stimuli just like real life sensory perceptions.

Without language, tedious **cause-and-effect training** is necessary in order to learn. By means of language, however, people are **programmed** and reprogrammed directly, quickly, and clearly. They do this simply by hearing verbal instructions, or by reading written instructions (words coded in visual symbols). You can "program" a person, awake or hypnotized, simply by talking to him.

Words act as conditioned stimuli in a totally mechanistic, automatistic way when the subject is deeply hypnotized. During hypnosis, the conscious mind, one of whose functions is to keep us hitched to reality, has been turned off. The conscious is not there to interpret or deny. The unconscious is literal and, frequently, obedient. When the subject's conscious mind is turned off because of hypnosis, language takes the place of reality. If the hypnotist says, "You see a cat waltzing alone in pink pajamas," you might see that.

The second signal system is a marvel of ease and efficiency for an operator (parent, teacher, employer, hypnotist). A dog will not salivate to the sound of a bell until the paired stimuli have been presented many times. A conditioned human hypnotic subject, however, can be given that command in the form of a verbal instruction just one time: "Salivate at the sound of the bell." The conditioned reflex is instantly established in the subject's unconscious. He now salivates after hearing the sound of the bell. The behavior of salivating after hearing the sound of the bell was instantly established as a **conditioned response**.

That is the gist of Salter's realization about how hypnosis works, his "conditioned response theory of hypnosis."

Hypnotic Conditioning—**Conditioning** means training a person to respond to instructions automatically. Psychologists apply the word "conditioning" only to learning that is reflexive, automatic—not conscious. Hypnotists often use "conditioning" to mean the training of a hypnotic subject:

> *In the training of a subject we strive for the development of a desirable, conditioned reflex pattern. Susceptibility to hypnosis increases with the repetition of the hypnotic induction...thus creating a favored pattern. The more frequently a response follows a given stimulus, the more firmly is the tendency established...A conditioned reflex re-*

> *sponse may be defined as a psychological or physiological response to a specific stimulus resulting from training or experience.* **(R. W. White quoted in Moss, *Hypnosis in Perspective*)**

Under deep hypnosis, words can create unconscious reflexes. Any posthypnotic suggestion, such as for reinduction, is a conditioned reflex. The subject's behavior of "falling asleep" every time the operator gives the cue is a conditioned response to the cue's stimulus. No practice is necessary after the subject is trained for trance depth and amnesia. If the operator's instructions are accepted by the subject's unconscious, a conditioned response pattern is instantly established. He has instantly acquired a new "habit."

Habit

Habit is automatic behavior, a **conditioned reflex** established in your unconscious. Anything done repeatedly turns into habit. We have habits because mental processes of which we are consciously aware tend to be uncomfortable--such as those involved in learning the multiplication tables, or a new language as an adult, or how to drive.

If we had to consciously direct every movement, every thought, and every bit of sensory perception, our mental circuits would be overwhelmed. Habit is also useful because it frees the conscious mind to consider new data. Unfamiliar things in our environment may signal danger. It is the job of the conscious to note them, then to think, reason, analyze, and evaluate them. Then it makes a decision. It can change unconscious programming based on those evaluations, especially when spurred by strong feelings such as pain, shame, or fear.

Habit is a functional system in the brain which takes less energy from the nervous system to activate than it

Unconscious Reflex Dominance Attributes

When reflexes compete (such as those suggested by a new hypnotist competing against those implanted by a former hypnotist, which one wins? To be effective, new programming, or changes in old programming, have to make as deep, or deeper, impression than the original programming. Habit strength is the sum of the strengths of six components. If you had a numerical way to measure the strength of each of the six factors which cause unconscious reflex dominance, outcomes could be expressed as a mathematical formula:

1) **Chronological Sequence**--If all other factors are equal, an earlier suggestion will dominate over a later one. That is why childhood experiences are so important. That is why a subsequent hypnotist's programming effort has to be more vigorous. The "age," when programmed, can be real, or suggested.

2) **Emotional Intensity-**-Every programming has some degree of associated emotional tone, and it is either positive or negative. Programming associated with greater emotional intensity makes a deeper imprint and has greater drive.

3) **Depth**--All other factors being equal, a suggestion made in deeper trance will prevail over a suggestion made in a less deep state of consciousness. Dr. Reiter could not make progress against Nielsen's programming of Palle until, using barbiturate, he achieved a greater depth of trance in Palle than Nielsen had. If the subject's original conditioning was done under narcohypnosis, it is difficult (possible though) to compete with that, except by using another narcohypnotic series.

The greater the **focus**, the more intense the attention, the deeper the trance level at the time, the stronger a suggested mental reflex will be. Focus is a mini-trance, a selective attention, and it can happen outside a conventional hypnotic context. Focus increases the probability of future dominance of that imprint.

4) **Strength of Drive**--A stronger suggestion prevails over a weaker one. A suggestion is stronger if it is more strongly driven, or more closely linked to primary process elements hard-wired into the brain, or if it is more complexly elaborated. Thus, reflexes associated with food, sex, or aggression tend to be dominant. That explains the success of television ads for fast foods, underarm deodorant, and pickup trucks.

5) **Repetition**--Anything you think or do, once, has already started to become habit. The more times you do it, the stronger the reflex will be, the deeper the habit groove. This is the mechanism underlying habit: the more you do it, the more likely you are to do it. The response, which you are turning into a habit, can come from inside you or it can come from outside you. When you have obeyed a series of suggestions for somebody, there is a steadily increasing tendency that you will obey further suggestions from that person.

6) **Amnesia**--Unconscious mental programming is unlikely to change, unless it can become consciously known. Thus, suggested amnesia prevents your natural self-governing mental feedback system from weakening or changing the amnestic programming.

would take to defy it and do something different. Habit is, in physiological terms, literally the electrochemical brain path of least resistance. When you are learning to type on a keyboard, you think about the placement of each finger. You type slowly, painfully. It is the same when you are learning to ride a bike or to drive a car. Once it becomes habit, however, those actions and reactions are reflexive, comfortable--and very difficult to change.

Habit strength is one of the factors in your mind that mediates between the outside stimulus and your internal response (an **intervening variable**). Habit strength is like a trench dug by flowing water. The longer and harder the water has run, the deeper the habit trench. The stream may be directed to a new course, but if the new and the old meet and conflict at any point, the water will tend to shift down into the older, deeper trench. That is an **addiction** response. A victim of unethical hypnosis is a kind of addict, addicted to obediently entering trance in response to the induction cue.

Second-Signal System—Your response to words is habit that happens at the unconscious level. Pavlov called our sensory perceptions of the outside world the **first signal system**. Humans also take in information from other humans coded in words, written or spoken. Pavlov named that second source of information the **second signal system**. Words are stimuli that elicit specific and predictable habit responses in the people who hear them.

New habit can be directly programmed into the subject's unconscious mind via the second signal system. The result will be hypnotic automatism. Spoken words can instantly create **unconscious conditioned reflexes** in a somnambulist. That is amazing. That is scary. Automatism is conditioned reflex behavior resulting because a hypnotist directly accessed the automatic level of a subject's mind. The words of the hypnotist are the second signal system stimuli; the obedience of the subject is his unconscious, automatic response.

Simultaneous Automatic and Conscious Behavior

Two different activities can be carried on at the same time, originating from different areas in the brain. You can, at the same time, be conscious and be **dissociated**. A classic example of this is **automatic writing**. Any time that you do two things at the same time, some dissociation is involved. I can simultaneously type and think about what I am going to write, because the movement of my fingers is a dissociated activity. The movement is a habit which needs no conscious direction.

> *The symphony conductor Pierre Boulez once described in a TV interview how it was that a person could conduct "five against four," meaning rhythmically moving one's right hand five times while moving four times with the left...Boulez said that doing "five against four" is simple: one merely had to put one of the hands on "automatic," and then pay attention to the other.* **(Furst, p. 91)**

Boulez was doing concurrent unconscious (automatic) and conscious behavior. M.H. Erickson and his wife instructed a farm boy, in amnesic trance, to empty his bucket into the trough after every 250 strokes of the pump handle. As the boy (now out of trance) pumped, Dr. Erickson asked him spelling words. The boy spelled the words out loud at the same time that he was pumping. The moment the boy pushed the pump handle down the 250th time, he would suddenly stop spelling, stop pumping, and carry the full bucket to the trough.

The Ericksons described a similar experiment in which a stenographer, writing shorthand at up to 120 words a minute, obeyed an amnestic hypnotic suggestion to change pencils every so many words. She performed the unconscious pencil-changing act perfectly, as well as the conscious recording of dictation. When the Ericksons asked her to do both acts consciously (counting words and recording words), she could not. When they revised the instructions, however, and told the secretary to just **guess** when she should change pencils, she could do it (because she had gone back to counting unconsciously).[1]

Ordinarily, you can not simultaneously beat a five rhythm with one hand and a four with the other. You can't count to 250 and spell at the same time. You can not count words and take dictation all at once. If one of the two operations is performed by your unconscious, however, you can perform these amazing feats.

Conversion

Conversion happens when a subject exchanges one symptom, behavior, or belief, for another. The transformation may be suggested, or spontaneous. True conversion always happens at the unconscious level—and thus with automaticity. In order for an unconscious to reject a suggestion, or a posthypnotic suggestion, it **must convert** that suggestion's energy into another, linked behavior.

For example, Hammerschlag observed a subject to whom he had given a posthypnotic suggestion to stick out his tongue at him: "...he becomes stiff and stares at me with wide-open eyes. Then he shakes his head as if he wants to drive away a thought." Hammerschlag asked the subject what was in his mind. The subject "replies that the absurd thought entered his head that he must stretch his tongue out to me..." **(p. 65)** The subject was then completely freed of that posthypnotic urge. He had converted the tongue-sticking-out into stiffness, staring, head shaking, and finally the verbalization describing the urge. Those conversion behaviors completely dissipated the suggestion's energy. The subject was relieved of the unconscious pressure to perform that humiliating act.

---

[1] "Just guess" is a function assigned to our unconscious. It also explains the phenomenon of **source amnesia**.

A conversion is an unconscious escape maneuver. It is a self-protective maneuver that the subject's unconscious can do—without the presence, or participation, of the conscious mind. An unwelcome, unconscious instruction is avoided by diverting its drive energy into a different channel of expression. There is always automaticity in conversion; it is always an unconscious maneuver. If a person rejects a suggestion by means of conversion, he or she was in a trance state when the original suggestion was implanted.

A girl was given a posthypnotic suggestion to turn on her radio after awakening from trance, but not to know why. After being awakened, however, she did not obey. Instead, she acted very nervous, standing up, sitting down, walking from her chair to the radio, then stopping and going back. The hypnotist asked, "What makes you so jittery?" She explained that she felt "an almost irresistible compulsion to get some music on her radio, but she realized that it was quite late and it might waken the baby next door." **(Gindes, p. 42)** She had resisted the objectionable suggestion by converting it into anxiety and nervous pacing.

A prominent German hypnotist, Wagner von Jauregg, publicly declared, over and over, that hypnosis could not be used to cause a person to commit a crime. One day a strange man entered his office carrying a pistol. The man shouted threats and pointed the gun at him, then let the gun fall and shouted more threats. Investigative hypnotists later learned that another hypnotist had instructed the man to "shoot" von Jauregg. He had made the suggestion, provided the gun, demonstrated that there were no bullets in it and no harm would come of obeying. Despite all that, the subject never pulled the trigger. He converted that part of the suggestion into letting the gun fall. **(J. H. Schultz, 1952)**

In Mayer's second book, he described an experiment in "antisocial" hypnosis. He, the female subject, and another person were all standing outside in a garden. Before the hypnotic induction, he handed the subject a gun and told her to shoot at a tree. She did so. Then he handed her some cartridges and told her to reload the gun. (The new cartridges were dummies, harmless fakes, but there was no way she could know that.) She loaded the gun. Then, he induced hypnosis

> *She is instructed to shoot at the person indicated by me and she indicates her complete agreement.* [He also suggests that...] *The subject must, within a minute after awakening from the hypnosis, sieze the revolver which will be lying in front of her, aim it at the breast of the indicated person, and pull the trigger...The subject sinks into a state of excitement, with fixed and steady gaze at the revolver which lies before her. She is terribly agitated. Before that instructed minute of delay has passed, she begs for a glass of water because she suddenly feels unwell. Something dark arises inside her. Then she springs into the air as if driven to do so, tries to grasp the weapon, shrinks together, slips on to the ground and lies there motionless. She is placed on a bench. She comes to after some minutes, and looks around her in astonishment. She tries to orient herself but for about ten seconds she remains confused.* **(Mayer, *Die Technik der Hypnose*, p. 52)**

Her excitement, physical restlessness, request for a glass of water, feeling unwell, springing into the air, and fainting were all conversions of the rejected suggestion. A suggestion which has been accepted at the unconscious level MUST be converted rather than simply denied. (That is one origin of neurotic behavior.)

There are also cases on record in which a hypnotist told a subject to do something intolerable, and the subject converted that drive into a self-generated wake-up command! In the infamous Salpetriere, a hypnotist had demonstrated a hypnotized young woman committing suggested crimes:

> *Witt., the principal subject, thrown into the somnambulist state, had...displayed the most sanguinary instincts. At a word or sign, she had stabbed, shot, and poisoned...The notables had withdrawn, greatly impressed, leaving only a few students with the subject, who was still in the somnambulist state. The students...told her that she was now quite alone in the hall. She was to strip and take a bath. Witt., who had murdered all the magistrates without turning a hair, was seized with shame at the thought of undressing. Rather than accede....she had a violent fit of hysterics.* **(Janet, *Psychological Healing*, p. 184)**

That incident is much cited as proof that a hypnotized person will reject any unwelcome suggestion. There is always the hope of effective resistance to an odious suggestion, and Witt. managed it. She converted the unwelcome suggestion to strip and imagine herself taking a bath into that "violent fit of hysterics." She could not simply deny the suggestion. She had to **convert** it. If a suggestion is rejected by conversion, rather than just being ignored, that is proof that the subject was in an automatistic state when the original suggestion was given!

The possibility of conversion should not be taken to mean that it is impossible for a hypnotist to compel a subject to do something against his will, or against his best interests (the "dogma of moral integrity"). Fortunate, indeed, is the subject who successfully manages to convert an exploitative or abusive suggestion. Normal unconscious processes are set up to obey rather than to convert. Modern technologies of hypnocontrol have done their best to completely eliminate this option for a subject. Nevertheless, conversion always remains a possibility.

Conversion is one origin of psychosomatic ailments. In 1937, Eisenbud treated a man who suffered severe migraine headaches. He observed they were triggered by situations in which his patient's hostility was aroused, but could not be expressed—anger converting into headache. Eisenbud cured the patient with a **desensitization series** of visualized scenes in which hostility was aroused but could not be expressed. The first scenes caused painful migraine headaches. As the series continued, however, headaches resulted less frequently. The patient was beginning consciously to understand that he had been converting his anger into pain. Conscious recognition of the conversion enabled the subject to unload that bad habit.

Pure **symptom removal** (you tell somebody under trance that their problem is going away, or to quit doing it) may work, or it may not. Suggested **symptom conversion** works better, because it gives the symptom's underlying drive-energy a better place to go. For example, a facial twitch could be converted into an inconspicuous twitch of the left little finger. Conversion could even give the problem drive a useful and helpful new function, a **compensation**.

4) Catalepsy

> ***The subject, upon being hypnotized, was commanded to clasp his hands as tightly as possible and was told that he would not be able to open them until he was instructed to do so. A burning cigarette was forced between the clasped hands in such manner that he would suffer severe burns if they could not be pulled apart...the subject made several attempts, screaming the while. The odor of burnt flesh was noticeable. Finally, after the subject pleaded for release from the suggestion, the professor relented.***
>
> **Gindes, p. 94**[1]

Suggested Catalepsy

In trance, you may lose conscious control over muscle actions that are normally voluntary. That phenomenon is **catalepsy**.[2] Catalepsy can happen when the brain's motor (muscular) control system is dissociated (goes off-line). Or, it begins when the subject's unconscious starts taking orders from the hypnotist instead of from its own conscious mind—and he suggests catalepsy.

The cataleptic state can involve either **flaccidity** or **rigidity**. A paralysis (catalepsy) caused by hypnosis (or hysteria) is not like a real paralysis caused by physical nerve damage. It is only there because the subject's unconscious accepted the idea that it is there. It takes the form that the subject imagines it should. The manifestation may not be anatomically correct in terms of nerve distribution and function.

Pavlov theorized that catalepsy happens because the motor center goes off-line. He hypothesized that a sequence of higher brain centers (which he called **analyzers**) go off- line, one by one, as brain inhibition (relaxation) increases. His concept is correct. The center for voluntary muscle control is one of the first to go, so catalepsy appears at a relatively shallow trance depth.

---

[1] Gindes did not note the obvious aspects of sadistic domination and subject abuse by the unidentified "professor of psychology" who suggested the cataleptic situation of clasped hands to his subject and tested his automatism so cruelly. This is a clear case of an "antisocial" act by a hypnotist against a subject. The subject is unable to escape despite great need to do so. Gindes told it only as an interesting aside.

[2] In biofeedback training, on the other hand, you gain control over normally involuntary body functions.

Catalepsy to Test Trance Depth and to Deepen

Catalepsy demonstrates the **displacement** of conscious will by unconscious will, and the hypnotist's dominance over the subject's unconscious mind. In his first induction of Candy, Nebel used a limb catalepsy routine simultaneously to test her trance depth and to deepen her. After the primary induction by progressive relaxation, he lifted her left arm up and suggested that it had become rigid and would hold that position, and that she could not lower it, even if she tried. Nebel was suggesting **dissociation**; her arm was to have a mind of its own.

With Candy's conscious mind inhibited, her unconscious accepted the suggestion. Muscles tensed in the arm as Candy consciously tried to lower it. Unconsciously-controlled opposing muscles kept it up. She could not lower it. Nebel ended the test. He gave permission. Then her arm lowered.

Deep Trance Catalepsy—There is a profound difference between suggested catalepsy in lighter trance ("however hard you try, you can not open your eyes") and the natural catalepsy that appears in deep trance. In trance deep enough for surgery, there is a tendency for a body part to remain in whatever position the hypnotist places it. That tendency is also called **catalepsy**, but deep trance catalepsy is a physiological condition rather than a suggested one. The subject is truly *unable* to move. Dr. Esdaile used this condition as a surgical anesthetic for hundreds of operations in India. Binet and Fere used the word "catalepsy" only to describe this latter condition, one characterized by absolute hypnotic automatism. "...the cataleptic subject is a machine," they declared.

Catalepsy vs. Catatonia

Catalepsy and **catatonia** are related words. In modern usage, **catalepsy** is used when speaking of a hypnotic subject. **Catatonia** is used when speaking of mental patients who have unusual body flaccidity or rigidity. A cataleptic hypnotic subject's suggested muscular rigidity resembles the fixed positions of some catatonic schizophrenics. In light-trance catalepsy, the subject does not move what he has been told he cannot move. In deep-trance catalepsy, the physiology of the state immobilizes the subject. In catatonia, the immobility is spontaneous and is caused by mental illness. However, some old-time writers used either word to refer to either state. Some even reversed them, using catatonic to mean cataleptic. In the following quote, both terms are used correctly:

> [Catalepsy is]...*a peculiar state of muscle tonus which parallels corea flexibilitas of the stuporous catatonic patient. The subject holds his arm up in the air, maintains any awkward position given him by the hypnotist, and shows a failure of normal fatigue reactions. Concomitant with it are a loss of the swallowing reflex, a dilatation of the pupils, a loss of facial mobility, and a definite slowing of all psychomotor activity. Yet, upon instructions by the hypnotist, the subject can perform adequately at a motor level equal to the waking capacity and often at a level that transcends it.* **(M.H. Erickson, *Hypnosis in Medicine*, p. 644)**

"Bridge" Phenomenon

Old-time hypnotists often tested or demonstrated a subject's cataleptic capacity with the **bridge phenomenon**. Dr. Reiter used it when demonstrating Palle before the court personnel. Dr. Cook, a professor at the University of Chicago, almost a century ago, said:

> *A favorite demonstration of profound hypnosis made in public exhibitions is the production of catalepsy...when the subject is perfectly rigid, his body is lifted and placed in such a position as to cause the head to rest upon one chair, while the feet rest upon another, making of it a sort of human bridge, upon which the operator may place weights, or upon which he may stand.* **(Cook, pp. 243-244)**

A 1990 text for hypnotists describes a similar routine:

> *The stage hypnotist tells the subject that his or her body is getting stiff and rigid, so stiff and rigid that it is becoming as unyielding as a bar of steel. The rigid body is now placed across two chairs and another person stands on the unsupported abdomen.* **(Hughes, *The Induction of Conviction*, p. 31)**

☞ *Suggestion under trance can make a body rigid and unfeeling, but it cannot make a body immune to actual damage. Subjects have died after romps of this sort.*

5) Hallucination

It is well known that, while under the hypnotic influence, subjects can eat the most obnoxious articles without realizing the unpleasant effects, provided the proper suggestions are made. It is possible to give a subject a glass of diluted ammonia and say: 'Here, drink this glass of milk,' and thus get him to drink it. But such an act would be grossly wrong, for the ammonia would injure the throat and stomach...even though he experienced under suggestion a pleasurable sensation while swallowing it.

- Cook, *Practical Lessons in Hypnotism and Autosuggestion,* 1920, pp. 72-3

A **hallucination** is a vivid, sensory, mental experience that is not real, but, at that moment, seems to be real to the subject. The experience of a hallucination can be suggested to a hypnotized person, or it can be suggested to appear after the subject awakens from trance, as a cued posthypnotic event. The hallucination can mimic any of the five senses: sight, hearing, feeling, smell, or taste. Vision is the hardest sense to hallucinate. Deep trance is necessary.

Gindes wrote about feeding soap to a subject and convincing him that it was a delicious dessert: "Similarly, it is possible to make the hypnotic subject accept chili-peppers as sweet milk chocolates and ice-cubes as burning coals." **(Gindes, p. 37)** Taste and smell hallucinations have a long, sad history in hypnotricks.

> *Persons have been known to drink kerosene, or diluted ink with apparent pleasure, as if it were wine, tea or milk, depending on the suggestion. Persons have been known to turn away with the expression of disgust on their faces from an excellent perfume; or to inhale with delight the vapors from a bottle of ammonia.* **(Winn, *Scientific Hypnotism*, p. 24)**

Research hypnotists have, by suggestion, caused total blindness, colorblindness, and total deafness.

> *Subjects can be made to...be deaf to the loudest noise—even a gun fired close to their ears...Or subjects can be made to believe they are blind, so effectively that the brain waves typical of real blindness will begin to be transmitted.* **(Hughes, *The Induction of Conviction*, p. 31)**

Those conditions were all hallucinations, perceptions of reality falsified by suggestion.

Normal and Abnormal Hallucinations

We all can imagine, and many people can visualize. In normal people, ideas, thoughts, and insights from deep mental levels can manifest themselves to their conscious in **visualizations**. There are visualizations that you can deliberately call out on your mind screen. There are spontaneous visualizations that just happen. Right-brained people may visualize much of their own thinking. Visualizations may also be suggested by another person. You "see" that image—a pink elephant. You know it is just a suggested image. Ordinary imagery and imagination vary in degree of **autonomy.** It can be a matter of opinion as to when an image is just a visualization, and when it is a hallucination.

> *The dream...when remembered... qualifies as hallucination.* (p. 89)*; ...dreams are the hallucinations most frequently experienced in daily life.* **(E.R. Hilgard, *Divided Consciousness*, p. 95)**

The most extreme type of hallucination happens when the subject mistakes his hallucination for external reality. If you know it is a visualization, dream, or illusion, the event does not qualify to be called a hallucination in the most complete sense. Full-scale hallucination is imagination that you believe is reality. A full-scale hallucination is **autonomous**. You do not control it. For the moment, it controls you. Normal people can have the extraordinary, unforgettable experience of spontaneous hallucination. Too many such experiences, however--especially if they are a) terrifying, b) authoritative, and c) believed to come from some source other than your own mind--could net you a diagnosis of mental illness.

Interview with an Ex-hypnotist

As I browsed The Crossroads Bookstore of the Palouse Mall, looking for hypnosis books, a pleasant-looking man with short brown hair and glasses asked, “May I help you find something?”

“Do you have any books about unethical hypnosis?”

He thumbed through a catalog, then said, “No, there’s nothing listed. May I ask why you’re interested in that subject?”

“I’m researching the subject, writing a book.”

“I could tell you a few things about unethical hypnosis,” he said with sudden vehemence. “I used to be a hypnotist. And then my life changed and I gave it up.”

“Would you give me an interview?” I asked.

“I’m alone in the store today and busy. Come back tomorrow at lunchtime. My name is Keith Moen.”

I was back at noon the next day. Keith said, “My first experience with hypnosis was in a parlor trick at a party. I let a young man who had been dabbling in it hypnotize me. Then he told me I was in the desert, hadn’t had any water for days, and that I was extremely thirsty. He said I was in desperate need of water. Then they handed me a glass of water. He said, ‘Finally, at last, you have your water.’ He told me it would just taste wonderful, refreshing and sweet and good. ‘Now drink it.’ I drank it right down, all the way down. Then they woke me up. They had stirred several tablespoonfuls of pure citric acid into that water. I drank ‘lemonade’ for weeks after that. Every time I’d take a drink of water, or milk, or anything, I’d taste that citric taste.”

Keith continued, “So then I became an amateur hypnotist and I went around hypnotizing people. That’s a very, very dangerous thing to do. I was totally untrained, had no idea what the consequences of my actions were. I saw pretty amazing things playing around with it. I hypnotized my first wife a number of times--got to the point where all I’d have to do is give her a pre-suggested cue and she would go into a deep state. I experimented on her, took her back to her childhood and back into the womb. She was a student nurse going to school in Costa Mesa, California. She was having trouble with a pharmacology class. Through a series of hypnotic suggestions I told her she would retain all of the knowledge that she looked at, heard, or studied in this pharmacology course, that she would remember it and would do very well on the test. She’s the only person in the history of Costa Mesa College that got a hundred percent on the pharmacology test. But a few years later I realized I was playing with dynamite and stopped doing it entirely.”

Keith paused to think a moment, then continued, “You know, I’ve heard people over the years say you won’t do anything under hypnosis that you wouldn’t normally do, that you wouldn’t do anything immoral or illegal. That’s simply not true. I’ve talked with others about it who agree with me. I’ve counseled people who have been hypnotized. I’ve been involved in it myself and I have seen people do things they would normally not do. Under hypnotic suggestion you can make them do it.”

Positive Hallucination

There are two types of hallucination: positive and negative. If a person hallucinates what does not exist (either at the time of the suggestion or after a posthypnotic cue), that is a **positive hallucination**. He perceives something that does not exist, because its existence has been suggested to him.

Negative Hallucination

If a person hallucinates the absence of something that is really there, it's called a **negative hallucination**. Negative hallucination may affect any sense. Suggested blindness, or blindness in one eye, or deafness, or inability to see a person who is actually present in the room, are all negative hallucinations.

> *The subject's every act and word seem to indicate that with the consciousness he possesses he does not see Mr X. Subjective reports of individuals with such a negative hallucination indicate they experience either the presence in the room of something "peculiar" with a "not to be inquired into" aspect, or the existence of a white space for Mr X.*
> **(Marcuse, *Hypnosis: Fact and Fiction*, p. 73)**

Being told you are not depressed, or do not crave cigarettes, or ice cream, is a type of negative hallucination. It is a blocking from awareness. Negative hallucination is considered one of the most difficult hypnotic challenges. In order for a negative hallucination to be accepted, the subject *must* be in a very deep trance.

Negative hallucination (or any other hypnotic phenomenon) can occur spontaneously. In 1947, L. R. Wolberg, while experimenting with antisocial hypnosis, suggested to a series of hypnotized subjects that they do a plainly unethical act:

> *"When you awaken you will find next to you a bar of chocolate. You will have a desire to eat the chocolate that will be so intense that it will be impossible to resist the craving. At the same time you will feel that the chocolate does not belong to you and to eat it would be very wrong and very bad. You will have no memory of these suggestions..."* **(Wolberg, "*Hypnotic Experiments in Psychosomatic Medicine*")**

One subject ate the candy, but then got indigestion. Another ate three quarters of it, complained that it tasted bitter, felt nausea and stomach pain, and then vomited. A third could not see the chocolate. His unconscious resolved the suggested moral conflict by creating a spontaneous negative hallucination erasing the chocolate bar from his vision. Wolberg picked up the candy bar and held it out to him. The subject did not see it. Wolberg threw it noisily on the table in front of the subject. He still did not see it.

6. Anesthesia

It is not true, as many claim, that the subject's body can be made to resist the destruction of heat, cold, blows, injuries, etc., while under hypnotic influence. He can be rendered insensible to the impressions produced by these things, but he cannot be rendered proof against their actual effects. It is cruelty to command a subject to pick up a live coal. He may do it without suffering at the time, if the suggestion is given that it will not burn, but the coal will nevertheless burn his flesh...the ammonia would injure the throat and stomach...even though he experienced under suggestion, a pleasurable sensation while swallowing it.

- Cook, 1927, pp. 70-73

Pain can be blocked by suggestion. Hypnosis enables people to endure more pain than otherwise would be possible. The deeper the trance, the more pain can be endured. Because hypnotic anesthesia is of psychological origin, numbing patterns induced by suggestion are what the subject thinks they should be, rather than correct nerve anatomy. **Analgesia** is the lightest stage of hypnotic anesthesia. There is no startle reaction, no facial flinch or grimace at the pinprick or pinch.

Surgery under hypnosis would have become common if chemical anesthesia had not appeared shortly after **hypnotic anesthesia** was developed by Dr. James Esdaile, a Scottish surgeon. Around 1852, Esdaile did thousands of operations, including hundreds of major surgeries, in the government hospitals of Hooghly and Calcutta, India. Before Esdaile, surgery was gruesomely painful and the death rate from the operation itself was fifty percent, usually from shock. But ninety-five percent of Esdaile's patients survived their surgery—even limb and breast amputations and the cutting out of enormous scrotal tumors. His subjects felt no pain during the operation because they were all in the deepest level of trance.

Hypnotic training for dentists began after World War II. Since then, much dental work has been done under suggested anesthesia with posthypnotic suggestions to limit bleeding. Hypnodontists have done "every possible type of dental operation...preparation of deep cavities and filling of teeth, extractions, removal of impacted teeth," root canals, and gum surgery. "Bleeding and salivation were controlled...there was no pain or discomfort either during or after." **(Burgess, p. 323)** Persons I have known, whose dental work was done under hypnosis, were pleased with how well suggestion overcame fear, pain, and bleeding.

Esdaile pioneered the practice of surgery under deeper hypnotic anesthesia. Since then, C-sections, etc., have been done under deep hypnosis—even a thyroidectomy. Babies are often delivered using it. (All "childbirth classes" are trance training with the coach as hypnotist.) It usually takes time to train a hypnotic subject to achieve the depth of trance where deep anesthesia is possible. But, once that depth is achieved, a dental hypnotist wrote, "it can be obtained immediately for an indefinite number of years. The writer has tested this with two subjects, one for 20 and another for 21 years." **(Burgess p. 344)**

☞ *Hypnotic anesthesia works both for imaginary (psychosomatic) and real pain. Do not use trance suggestion to relieve pain until a doctor has examined the patient to find out what is causing it. If a hypnotist masks the pain by hypnotic suggestion, without learning its cause, the result could be a ruptured appendix, or worse.*

Anesthesia Reveals Trance Depth

Surgery cannot be performed on somebody who is faking hypnosis! Suggested anesthesia, therefore, is a test for trance.

> *...the operator will proceed to introduce the more involved tests--for instance, suggestions of tingling and numbing sensations of one extremity, followed by a pinching, searing, or puncturing of the flesh to demonstrate that anesthesia has been effected.* **(Moss, pp. 3-4)**

Anesthesia in Stage Demonstrations

Like other hypnotic phenomena, suggested anesthesia has been abused. A hypnotist advised: "The excuse, 'It was just an experiment,' is never justification for injury." **(Gindes, p. 95)** For example, it was common practice in old-time hypnotic exhibitions to demonstrate suggested anesthesia by sewing

> *...the lips together by needle and thread, or by passing hat pins through the cheeks. In some instances the tongues of several persons have been sewed together...* (**Cook, pp. 189-190)**

Cook also mentioned a stage show in which

> *The tongue was protruded and perforated directly in the center by a very large needle. Not the least tremor was noticeable and no blood flowed.*

He urged hypnotists, before "inserting needles or other instruments into hypnotized persons," to immerse them in "some good aseptic fluid."

☞ *IF A SUBJECT'S OBEDIENCE TO A SUGGESTION WOULD HARM OR INJURE HIM IN THE WAKING STATE, IT WILL HAVE THE SAME EFFECT IN THE HYPNOTIC STATE.*

7. Posthypnotic Suggestion

The patient hears what I tell him in his sleep, but no memory of what I said remains. He no longer knows that I spoke to him. The idea suggested arises in his mind when he wakes, but he has forgotten its origin and believes it is spontaneous.
- Bernheim

A **posthypnotic suggestion** is made under hypnosis, but is carried out during a later waking state. The hypnotized person is instructed to perform a certain behavior at some time after the trance is over. The subject temporarily returns to trance during the time he enacts the posthypnotic suggestion.

Posthypnotic Action Revives Trance

Posthypnotic programming arises, when cued, from the unconscious. It overrides, and temporarily shoves aside, the subject's conscious mind. While doing posthypnotic behavior, the subject is in trance again. The posthypnotic act is enacted in a momentary **renewal of the hypnotic condition** in which it was originally suggested. The subject has normal consciousness before, and after, the posthypnotic act, but he carries it out in trance. Posthypnotic behavior is

> *...a resurgence of a self-limited hypnosis...This may be shown by interfering with the performing of the posthypnotic act and finding the subject in a state typical of hypnosis.* **(M. H. Erickson, quoted in Marcuse, *Hypnosis*, p. 75)**

The posthypnotic act may take place despite objections from the conscious mind:

> *...it is not an integrated part of the behavior of the total situation in which it occurs, but is actually disruptive of the conscious stream of activity, with which it may be entirely at variance.* **(Erickson & Erickson, *"Concerning the Nature and Character of Post-Hypnotic Behavior"*)**

If the posthypnotic suggestion also directs the subject to act "wide awake and normal" while obeying the posthypnotic directive, the trance condition can be concealed from untrained observers. A person carrying out a posthypnotic act may act:

☐ Like a sleepwalker, with amnesia afterward;

☐ In trance, but with no amnesia after the act;

☐ In an apparently normal mental state, with no amnesia, but obeying the hypnotic suggestion.

Which type of behavior manifests depends on the subject and on the specific posthypnotic suggestions. For example, a hypnotist who volunteered for another hypnotist's demonstration, was given a posthypnotic suggestion (plus amnesia). When the hypnotist blew his nose, the subject was to change chairs. Ten minutes after the subject was awakened from trance, the hypnotist blew his nose.

> *...the subject became vaguely uneasy and finally said, "Look here, I feel a definite compulsion to go over to that chair. I bet you have given me a posthypnotic suggestion. Well, I'm darned if I will go all the same." After this, he took part in the discussion for a few more minutes and then finally, and quite suddenly, got up, crossed the room and sat down in the other chair.* **(Eysenck, *Uses and Abuses of Psychology*, pp. 216-217)**

The subject was aware of his situation, and in apparent waking consciousness (except perhaps for the moment in which he suddenly got up, crossed the room and sat down in the other chair). He had no amnesia afterward, but he had obeyed.

Posthypnotic Suggestion Lasts

George Estabrooks conditioned an unknowing subject for his own fun during World War I and gave him a posthypnotic suggestion. If Estabrooks said, "Watch the front," the subject was to stand up and shout, "Call out the guard. Here comes Paul Revere."

Twenty years later, Estabrooks happened to meet that fellow again. As they stood and talked, the hypnotist suddenly spoke the cue, "Watch the front." His subject "looked puzzled," but gave the proper response: "Call out the guard. Here comes Paul Revere." "Then he looked even more puzzled and added: 'I wonder why I said that." (**Estabrooks, *Hypnosis*, p. 89)** Both the programming and the subject's amnesia regarding his hypnotic usage by Estabrooks had lasted twenty years. But, now, he was sophisticated enough to ask himself why he had done that strange behavior!

The unconscious is also capable of fantastically accurate counting and time measurement without using any watch or clock. An act can be suggested to be performed any number of time units in the future and it is likely be done at, or very near, the designated time.

Unremoved Suggestions Remain Active Posthypnotically

Suggestions should be removed before the end of a trance unless they are designed for long-term operation. Estabrooks told of a person who went to a therapist complaining of feeling followed by a dog. The symptom had appeared suddenly and there were no others. The subject knew the dog that he thought was following him was imaginary but he could not stop his imagination from working.

In rehypnotization, the doctor learned that this subject had an unfortunate habit of volunteering for stage demonstrations of hypnosis. A hypnotist had said, "You're getting chased around the stage by a mean dog." The subject ran frantically around the stage hallucinating the fierce dog in close pursuit. It made the audience laugh. The hypnotist did not remove that suggestion. It is easier to acquire a problem by hypnosis than it is to get rid of it in subsequent hypnoses. It took the doctor several sessions to fully erase that mean dog from the subject's unconscious.

There was a similar case in England. While participating in a stage demonstration, a subject was told, upon hearing a certain song, he instantly would fall asleep. The hypnotist then awoke the subject and he returned to his seat in the audience. Later in the show, the hypnotist told the orchestra to play that certain song. The subject instantly fell asleep. When the band stopped playing the song, he woke up again. The hypnotist let him go home without canceling the suggestion.

Two nights later, the subject was out driving with his girlfriend. The car radio was playing, and that song came on. His eyes closed. His body slumped onto the wheel, asleep. She grabbed the wheel, managed to wrestle the car to the side of the road, and stopped. When the tune was done playing, he yawned and woke, amnesic for the entire sleeping episode. He did not know why the car was at the side of the road.

His girlfriend contacted the stage hypnotist. He rehypnotized the subject and removed that dangerous posthypnotic suggestion.

Another stage hypnotist told a subject, "Move back where you came from." He meant that the subject was to step back into the group line. The subject did not obey, although the hypnotist repeated the command several times. Not long after, however, the subject quit his job, put his house up for sale, and moved a thousand miles—back to where he came from. The hypnotist had not intended those words to be a posthypnotic suggestion, but the literal unconscious of that particular subject took it that way. (Perhaps it was expressing an unconscious longing.)

A college student, playing around with hypnosis, hypnotized his friend and told the subject that he had drowned. After he ended the trance, his subject still did not breathe normally. He was gasping for air. The student hypnotist didn't know what to do. He located his psychology professor, an expert hypnotist, and asked for help. The professor (Marcuse) rehypnotized the student and suggested he'd actually swum to shore and survived the danger. The subject breathed normally again.

A psychology student was showing off his hypnosis skills at a party. A girl asked him to take away her fear of water so that she could swim. He induced deep trance, then gave her suggestions.

Early the next morning, the girl got up before anybody else. In a state of posthypnotic suggestion, confident that she could now swim, she eagerly plunged into the lake. "Her bloated body was recovered from the water a few hours later." **(Gindes, p. 94)**

An acquaintance told me about a high school friend of his who hypnotized classmates: "But when he realized he was changing them for life, he got scared and quit." Another told me of a high school pal who had hypnotized a young man and told him that he was afraid of ants. The subject acquired a severe ant phobia. The amateur hypnotist and friends got their yuks. Then the young hypnotist was ready to rehypnotize and remove the ant phobia. His subject refused. He chose to keep the phobia rather than risk new conditioning.

The Possible Variety of Posthypnotic Acts

Any act that can be elicited under hypnosis also can be enacted as a posthypnotic suggestion. The possible purpose and content of posthypnotic events is as infinite as human ingenuity, as varied as human circumstance. Whatever behavior is wanted can be ordered up by cue: changed memory of past events, a new memory of an imaginary event, hallucinations (positive or negative), or any other future action. Performance can be cued to happen at any time in the future, even years later. Sometimes such suggestions take, and sometimes they do not. When they do, the results can be astonishing.

A hypnotist gave a posthypnotic suggestion to a woman that on a certain day, at a certain time, on a street in L.A., she would meet her (dead) brother. She later wrote:

> *"I was so happy to see him, but I was astonished because I knew he was dead. However, in a way, his presence seemed perfectly natural at the time. He accompanied me to my apartment, and there we talked about different things....Soon he rose from his chair with the excuse that he had to keep an appointment, and left. I did not become fully aware of the impossibility of the situation until after he was gone, and then I felt dazed. This feeling of bewilderment stayed with me until it was explained that my illusion was part of an hypnotic experiment."* **(quoted in Gindes, p. 40)**

Rationalization

Rationalization (making up a fake reason) is a major **defense mechanism.** When we do things for reasons of which we are not consciously aware, we rationalize. The obedient enactment of posthypnotic suggestion likewise gets excused by fake explanations provided by the unconscious to the conscious. A subject who does not remember being given a posthypnotic suggestion will always invent an imaginary reason for obeying.

His rationalization will be as plausible as possible. He will consciously believe it even though it is a lie he has told himself. Posthypnotic suggestions can be beneficial or harmful. If asked later why he did this particular thing, he will

> *...rationalize his conduct by some kind of semi-reasonable explanation...To anyone acquainted with the real motive, namely, the posthypnotic suggestion, these pseudo-motives are very interesting because they are so similar to the pseudo-motives often given by people to justify actions, the real reasons for which are unconscious to themselves or, if conscious, dishonorable.* (**Estabrooks, *Scientific American*, p. 216)**

If a hypnotic subject is not consciously aware of an implanted posthypnotic suggestion because of suggested amnesia, then he does not know the real reason he did the posthypnotic act. In that situation, he will make up some excuse for what he did, as plausible as possible. He will honestly believe the rationalization. He has lied to himself, and perhaps also to others, and believed his lie.

After obeying an amnestic posthypnotic suggestion, people do not say, "I don't know why I did that" (which is their conscious mind's truth). They do not say, "The hypnotist made me do it" (which is their unconsciously known truth). Instead, if you ask, "Why did you do that?" they will make up an excuse which is as believable as possible—and they will honestly believe whatever they said!

A prominent experimental hypnotist gave a young woman a posthypnotic suggestion to take off one shoe after she awakened from his hypnosis demonstration. She was to set it on the table before her. He then suggested amnesia and awakened her:

> *...she fidgeted for a few moments, then slipped off one of her shoes with the other foot, reached down, lifted it, and placed it on the table in front of her. Then she reached over and took the flowers from a vase on the table and placed them in her shoe.* **(LeCron, *The Complete Guide to Hypnosis*, p. 18)**
>
> When the hypnotist asked why she had put flowers in her shoe, the subject rationalized: "I have a vase at home that looks something like a shoe. I wondered what kind of flower arrangement I could use with it." ***(Ibid.)***

The specific nature of the subject's rationalization for performance of a posthypnotic act may itself be suggested. For example, a military hypnotist told two hypnotized soldiers that:

> *"At precisely eleven o'clock you will come again*

> *to this room. You will sit down and suddenly you'll have a terrible itch on the soles of both feet. You will take off your shoes and your socks because you just have to scratch that itch."* (**Lovell, *Of Spies and Stratagems*, p. 90)**

The hypnotic subjects reappeared at the appointed hour. They removed their shoes and socks and scratched their feet.

> *A military officer present, Colonel Buxton, remonstrated, "Here, here...don't you see there's a General here? What's the matter with your feet?' "Gotta scratch 'em--itch like hell," a soldier explained.* (**Ibid.)**

The Cue

The designated condition that triggers the posthypnotic act is the **cue**. A posthypnotic suggestion is always triggered by perception. You see, hear, feel, touch, or smell the preset cue—and that triggers the expression of the associated posthypnotic suggestion. That cue was stated by the hypnotist during a previous hypnotic trance. Perceiving the cue triggers automatic performance of whatever behavior was instructed. The most important single category of posthypnotic cues is **induction cues**.

Induction Cues—Most people have established lifestyle cues to enter a more relaxed state of mind. These consciousness-lowering cues are embedded in familiar ritual or other circumstances associated with previous trance experiences. They probably are not consciously recognized as induction cues. Whatever that something is, it is precious to you. The opening bars of the theme song of a TV addict's favorite show cues the deep sigh that signals lowering consciousness. Other cues may be routines, rites, familiar words, familiar sights, familiar sounds, familiar thoughts, or ideas to which you respond strongly, and at a deep level.

In 19th century Europe, before the process of cued induction was clearly understood, operators accidentally conditioned subjects to a cue, and thereafter assumed it was *the* magic doorway to lowered consciousness. For example, Dr. Tourette's hypnotic subjects were all expected to drop into cataleptic trance whenever someone came up from behind and made a loud noise—and they did:

> *...we beat the gong. She immediately went into a cataleptic trance...this strange result of loud and unexpected noise has been the cause of more than one peculiar incident. On a Corpus Christi Day, several hysterics following the procession became cataleptic because of the military band...On another occasion, one became cataleptic at the barking of a dog. Another one went to a concert at Chatelet on her day off; she became a cataleptic three times during the concert.*

An induction cue must be perceived: tasted, smelled, heard, seen, or felt. Anything that can be perceived can be an induction cue. The cue can be given in person, or over the phone, or in a letter. Induction cues are usually for a one-step descent into deep hypnosis, but they can be qualified to limit descent, as in **depth-limited trance** for any competing operators. Most induction cues have **multiple defining elements**. "When I snap my fingers and sy, 'deep asleep,' you will fall instantly into a deep hypnotic sleep" is a posthypnotic reinduction cue with three defining elements. They must all occur for induction to be triggered:

1) The present operator, "I," must be the one giving the posthypnotic cues.

2) A finger snap must be perceived by the subject.

3) "Deep asleep" must be spoken by the present operator.

That compound induction cue prevents

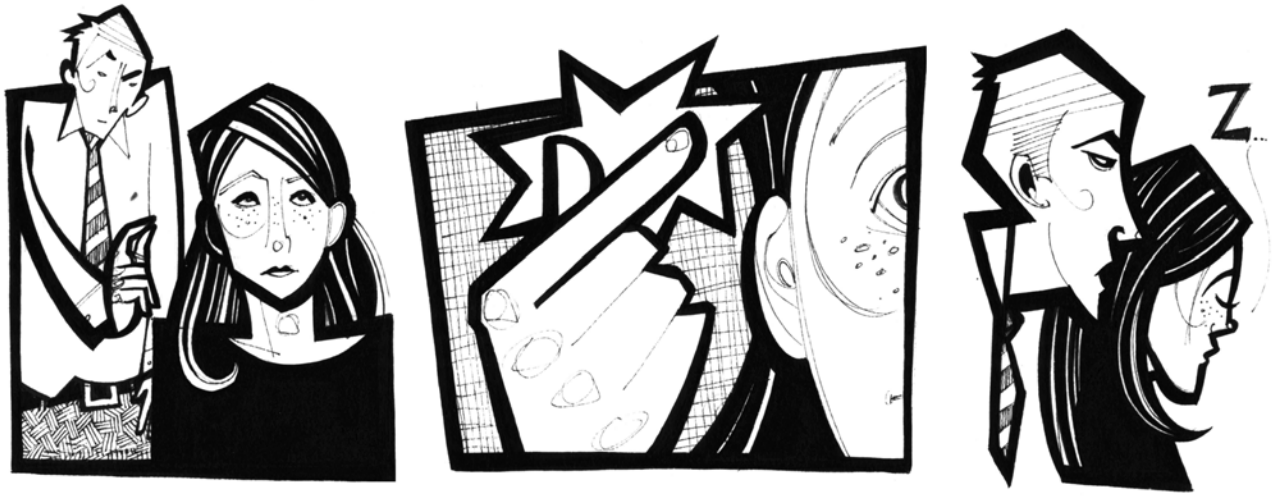

rehypnosis by an accidental snap of the fingers, or an accidental hearing of the words “deep asleep,” or a casual encounter with the operator.

A suggestion that specifies the induction cue and a following descent into deep trance sets up a subject for automatistic (unconscious, compelled) descent into trance:

> *...by means of posthypnotic suggestion, a person may be put into the hypnotic state against his desires if he is a somnambulist.* **(Heron, “Hypnosis as a Factor in the Production and Detection of Crime,” 1952, p. 27)**

A Peculiar Incident

I took a course on hypnotherapy while researching this book. An assistant instructor taught the class every Thursday evening. He was a short grey-haired gentleman who, for decades, had been a professional hypnotherapist with many clients. The night he first saw me in the classroom, he stared hard at my face for a moment, as if he thought he knew me. I wondered if perhaps I resembled a client he had worked with years ago, but I made no comment.

In the usual class routine, the professor’s lecture was followed by a long video demonstrating some hypnotherapy technique. The assistant lectured, then dimmed the lights, and began showing the video. I happened to be sitting at the end of a row. In the semidarkness, he walked over and stood beside me. In one swift motion, he pressed his right index finger on the center of my forehead.

Startled, I turned my head and stared at him, wide-eyed. He did not speak a word of apology or explanation. He did not even acknowledge doing something unusual. He just stepped back and walked away from me. I did not question him. I did think to myself with a silent chuckle, “So that’s how he greets old clients, by throwing them into trance with that posthypnotic reinduction cue.” After I thought about it some more, however, his ethics did not seem so amusing.

He had not said to me, “I think you’ve been my client before. May I have permission to hypnotize you again?” He did not say, “I’m going to hypnotize you.” No. This professional hypnotist, who obviously thought I was already a conditioned subject of his, chose to make re-acquaintance with me in the most dehumanizing way. He attempted to bypass my conscious mind entirely by triggering an old induction cue. His touch to my forehead revealed a further assumption on his part: that I was amnesic for all his past contact with me. If I had been a previous hypnotic subject of his, that touch would have worked—unless some other hypnotist had sealed me in the meantime.

A few weeks later, he told our class that his usual posthypnotic cue for reinduction was a finger touch to the forehead of the subject.

Sealing

If a hypnotist gives his subject a posthypnotic suggestion that no other person can induce hypnosis in him, then that subject becomes unavailable to other operators. An abusive hypnotist is likely to do this to escape detection.[1]

Sealing goes back at least to the 1700s (and perhaps even farther):

> *Prior to Mesmer’s time, since the public knew nothing of hypnosis, there was no reason to attempt to “seal off” good subjects from potential lay operators.* **(Teitelbaum, *Hypnosis Induction Technics*, pp. 104-105**

After Mesmer popularized hypnosis, however, operators looked for ways to keep other operators from using their subjects:

> *...many magnetizers impressed upon their patients’ minds that no one else would ever be able to magnetize them.* **(Ellenberger, *The Discovery of the Unconscious*, p. 154)**

To accomplish the sealing, the hypnotist gives instructions to the subject such as:

> *...no person other than myself...ever will be able to hypnotize you again. The suggestions I am about to give you will become deeply implanted in your subconscious mind, but you will not consciously remember them after you awaken from this trance state. You will not remember that I hypnotized you and will not remember that you have ever been hypnotized before in your life. In addition, if any...person ever tries to hypnotize you, you will tell him that you have never been hypnotized before, that you cannot be hypnotized and that you don’t want to be hypnotized.* **(Teitelbaum, *Hypnotic Induction Technics*, p. 105)**

Raymond Wells researched techniques for unethical hypnosis during and after World War II:

> *One hypnotizer might very well be able to produce effects in subjects which nullify the later work of another hypnotizer, in part or even in toto. The implantation during the hypnotic trance of a subconscious inhibition which operates post-hypnotically to protect the S from*

---

1. Sealing is not absolute. A determined subject, with the help of a determined hypnotist, can get past sealing instructions.

> *being hypnotized at all by other hypnotizers is a familiar case in point...rendering the S helpless to become a S thereafter at the hands of other hypnotizers, however much he may desire and strive....* **(Wells,"*Ability to Resist Artificially Induced Dissociation*")**

Estabrooks promoted government creation of sealed, unknowing clandestine agents. Because conditioning made the subject highly susceptible to hypnosis by anybody,

> *... we plug this gap again by suggestion in the somnambulistic state. We assure the subject that in the future no one will be able to hypnotize him except with the special consent of the operator.* **(Estabrooks, *Hypnotism*, pp. 196-197)**

Estabrooks told about a visiting hypnotist who was invited to test the seal of an unknowing subject. The subject insisted to the guest that he had never been hypnotized and could not be hypnotized. The guest asked permission to try anyway. The subject said he could but that it would be useless:

> *So the visitor, a good hypnotist, tries, but at every test the subject simply opens his eyes with a bored grin. Finally he gives up the attempt and everyone is seated as before. Then the original operator taps on the table with his pencil. Immediately the subject is in deep hypnotism.* **(*Ibid.*)**

The sealing may or may not be concealed from the subject's conscious awareness by suggested amnesia, but usually it is. Suggestions hidden by amnesia have dominance. Amnesia also prevents ill-advised communication to a new hypnotist, who might take news of sealing as a challenge. If the subject is amnesic, another hypnotist

> *...might never know that the seal has been placed, and might deem a person not susceptible to his induction technics and as just one of the small class of people who cannot be hypnotized.* **(Teitelbaum, *Hypnosis Induction Technics*, p. 106)**

Protective Sealing—Sometimes an operator seals a trained (and, therefore, extra vulnerable) subject in order to protect him from future hypnotic exploitation. Wells gave all his hypnotic subjects this type of sealing.

> *...there will be created a subconscious inhibition which will prevent anyone, including myself, from hypnotizing you at any time unless of your own free will you give your consent in writing. If for any worthwhile reason in the future...you should wish or be willing to be a subject, then if you will write, "I am willing to be hypnotized today by Mr. -- and if you then date the statement and sign your name, you can quickly and easily be hypnotized by any of the usual methods, in just a few seconds. There will be no hypnotic compulsion carrying over from this present hypnotic state which will in any way prevent you from deciding wholly for yourself in the future whether or not it is wise for you to sign a statement of willingness. You will have to sign the statement of your own free will or else it will not be efficacious.* **(Wells, "*Experiments in the Hypnotic Production of Crime*," p. 70)**

When Wells conducted experiments on the **reinduction of an unwilling subject**, however, he used a different contract. It said that "no one else" could ever hypnotize them against their will. Wells said that a somnambulist subject with amnesia will obey the sealing rules from then on.

Simeon Edmunds also suggested protective sealing. He said that a person who is worried about his trance susceptibility should ask a trusted friend, who knows hypnosis, to hypnotize and then seal him: "This suggestion, it appears, fulfils itself like the rest, and the bane works its own antidote without further trouble." **(Edmunds, p. 142)** By the way, Edmunds also hoped to

> *...assist in dispelling the widely held and highly dangerous misbelief that no person can be hypnotized against his will.* **(*Hypnotism and Psychic Phenomena*, p. 35)**

Another hypnotist suggested giving each patient the option of being sealed with

> *...suggestions which will serve as a protection from the experimental amateur or vaudeville hypnotist..."In future no one will be able to hypnotize you except a dentist, a physician, or some other qualified person such as a psychologist; unless you expressly desire to be hypnotized, no one can hypnotize you.* **(Moss, p. 315)**

In a context of narcohypnotic and electronic inductions, however, when some of the bad guys have the highest credentials and the best technology, mere verbal sealing is not the protection it once was.

NORMAL LONG-TERM MEMORY

> ***Its very porousness, its open-endedness and ongoingness, its ability to bond deeply across remotenesses of time and space, its own virtual dimension--all of these help to make memory a powerful participatory force...Just as everything participates in memory, so memory participates in everything: every last thing. In so doing, it draws the world together, re-membering it and endowing it with a connectiveness and a significance...***
>
> **- Casey, *Remembering*, pp. 312-313**

The last three important hypnotic phenomena—amnesia, regression, and confabulation—all affect memory. To fully understand how suggestion can affect memory, first consider how normal memory operates.

Stages of Remembering

Researchers have worked hard to unravel the neural mechanisms of memory: how it is established, how maintained, how recalled. There are three distinct stages in the establishment of a memory.

1) You **observe** something via one of your senses.

2) If it catches your interest, you hold it in **short-term memory** (**STM**) for a moment. This is active, conscious memory, limited in capacity to about a maximum of seven items. You are using STM when you lookup, and then repeat, a phone number until you can finish dialing it. Data in STM decays within twenty seconds, unless it moves into long-term memory.

3) Thinking about it more, or with more intensity, moves the item into your **long-term memory** (**LTM**). The new memory generally enters LTM by associating with relevant information which you already have. When an item shifts from your temporary memory (STM) to your permanent memory (LTM), the process is called **consolidation.** There seems to be no limit to the information we can absorb. The process of remembering is always going on.

Independent, Parallel Memory Systems

Your brain has independent, and very different, parallel memory systems: **visual (symbolic)**, **verbal**, and **muscle memory**. These "multiple forms of memory...are mediated by processes that can function independently of one another." **(Schacter, p. 352)** Each memory system has its own unique encoding system. The same memory may be encoded in different ways and stored in different parts of your brain.

What you experience as muscle sensation can be recalled as muscle memory. Muscle (body) memory in based in the **neuromuscular pattern generators**. Muscle memory manages my fingers at this keyboard as I write. The symbolic (visualized) memory system is based in your right brain. **Symbolic memory** is important because it is truthful and less subject to repression than verbal memory. **Verbal memory** is based in your left brain and is valuable for its riches of association. Emotion is also encoded in memory. To completely recall a memory, your brain must retrieve and reassemble three components: the visual images, the sound/words from the scene, and the associated emotion.

Neural Patterns of Lowered Resistance

Memory is a pattern of lowered resistance across a multitude of neural synapses, a storage system for data established in patterns of reduced electrical resistance. The activity which created it is over. The memory remains as a potential electronic pathway because of the lowered resistance. Habit and memory are identical in this way. Behavior becomes conditioned habit because movement of electrons in their semiconducting lattices "permanently changes the materials' characteristics so as to make the same electrical responses easier in the future." **(Becker, *The Body Electric*, p. 257)** The connections (**synapses**) are vital. Weakened connections result in an irretrievable memory. Strong connections cause a powerful memory that is easily remembered.

In a computer's memory, a single word is stored in a particular place. If erased, it is gone forever, leaving other data unaltered. Human memory is different. In the brain the rule is not one neuron, one memory. Instead, any single memory is spread out in "a vast neuronal net." **(Ibid., p. 48)** The death of one neuron does not cause the loss of any single item of memory, because data is stored across a series of neurons. The death of a brain cell just causes a little static in the system.

Each memory input alters an entire matrix of neurons. The data storage is **dynamic** (active) rather that static (fixed). It is ever shifting as new data comes in and affects the old. Imagine ripples of water on the surface of a pond into which a stone has been thrown--and then another, and another. Each stone creates waves. One ripple-wave pushes the next ripple-wave and the next pushes the next, and so on. Or, imagine a new chicken climbing onto the roost to sleep. All the others are awakened for a moment, are jostled, and have to shift a little to accommodate the newcomer. That is how you add a new piece of information to your brain storage. Each new datum slightly shifts the position of the previous data .

Because memory is spread out over so many neurons, repressing a piece of information by suggested amnesia has a broad impact on the subject's mind. Recovering a memory (or confabulating it) also impacts the entire personality.

Diphasic Act of Remembering

Remembering is a **diphasic** (two-step) mental act. The retrieval process begins with an **intention** to remember. The intent to retrieve information out of your long-term memory storage may be conscious or unconscious. Intent is the "go-to" cue. There must also be a "place" cue to specify what "object" to remember. Remembering starts with the intent and ends with the content. Remembering involves both how we remember, and what we remember, but the two aspects are simultaneous rather than consecutive. Then you are back there: reliving the taste of Mom's best cooking one family feast day, so many years ago.

Retrieval—Retrieval is an act of willed remembering. Intent to remember sends current into the neurons of the cerebral cortex. Those electric pulses sent from the location of intent-to-remember stimulate the electronic matrix that contains the memory.

Sometimes, you want to remember, but you cannot. Certain things make it difficult to retrieve a memory. After consolidation, the memory stays in your permanent storage. It is there, but you may have difficulty retrieving it to consciousness.[1]

Failure to retrieve a memory may be caused by **resistance**, a **blocking** of the retrieval impulse. The system then fails to channel electric signals into the appropriate synapse network, or the wanted memory does not get retrieved because of a breakdown at some other point in the process. The blocking may be caused by a natural failure (such as Alzheimer's disease), a self-imposed one (such as a traumatic amnesia), or a suggested one (such as hypnotic amnesia).

Memories Are Associated and Can Be Cued—A computer does not make **associations** unless programmed to do so in a search (or unless it is a biocomputer using a neural net). In the living brain, however, similar data are grouped in storage. They associate by neural link-ups and can affect each other's encoding and retrieval. We have "a highly efficient filing system in the brain, which allows related experiences to be classed together and then cross-indexed." **(Maya Pines, 1973, p. 166).** The more associations (**index words**) we have for a piece of information in our memory, the more easily we can remember it.

> *...neurons responding to a certain face might be connected to ones expressing the name of the person whose face it is and to others for her voice, memories involving her and so on...Meaning derives from the linkages among these representations with others spread throughout the cortical system in a vast associational network, similar to a dictionary or a relational database. The more diverse these connections, the richer the meaning.* **(Crick & Koch, *Scientific American*, Dec. 1995, p. 85)**

You remember either by **recall** or **recognition**. Recall is when you intend to remember it and then do so, a simple act of memory retrieval. Recognition is when you pick it out of a lineup. It's the difference between an essay test and a multiple choice test. It's the difference between drawing a picture of the holdup man and picking him out of a lineup.

We retrieve (recall) information that is catalogued in our left brain (verbal) memory by starting with an index word **(cue word),** or other verbal clue. The index word leads through a **chain of associations** to the memory. If you cannot remember a word, odds are good that you could remember what letter it starts with, or how many syllables are in it. That is how your brain files verbal data.

---

[1] A Soviet scientist, I.I. Korotkin, specialized in the physiology of trance. There are numerous translations of articles by him mentioned in the research literature, such as: "On the Physiological Mechanism of Inhibitory Action on Stimuli Inhibited by Hypnotic Suggestions." If a certain memory circuit is inhibited because of suggested amnesia, you can not recall that memory because the neurons that hold its coding will not accept excitation. They will not perform the retrieval function.

Views on Memory Validity Vary

Researchers on memory hold varying points of view on the nature and validity of memories. One extreme end of the spectrum of memory specialists thinks that memory is, moment by moment, **reconstructed** to suit one's immediate purposes. The other extreme believes that "autobiographical memory is highly factual--almost **photographic**." **(Kovnat, pp. 9-13)** Kovnat recalled a conversation with William Brewer, a prominent academician:

> *Barclay and Neisser have taken a relatively strong position that memories are distorted. On the other hand, I came out with a rather large data set that these memories are actually closer to being correct. It looks to me as if there will eventually be some sort of compromise between the idea that these memories are like highly accurate Polaroid snapshots of your life and the idea that memories are so dramatically reworked. It's like fact versus fiction; the truth may lie somewhere in the middle.* **(Ibid.)**

Memory can get foggy. I recently discovered that my birthday is January 19, not January 18. On the other hand, I took comfort in noticing that I was only one day off . The Welsh poet, Dylan Thomas, confessed to a similar failing of memory:

> *One Christmas was so much like another...that I can never remember whether it snowed for six days and six nights when I was twelve or whether it snowed for twelve days and twelve nights when I was six.* **(Thomas, *A Child's Christmas in Wales*)**

Nevertheless, he was undoubtedly accurate about having once been a child, having celebrated Christmases, and that a prolonged snowstorm occurred one Christmas season in Wales when he was either six or twelve.

8) AMNESIA

> ***Unreasonable commands...have no prospect of being carried out unless there is an amnesia which protects them from the criticism of a clear consciousness....The degree of susceptibility to profound hypnosis customarily increases when the hypnosis is repeated...until finally, after repeated hypnoses, the condition is attained in which the trained medium will carry out even the most idiotic orders.***
>
> **- Schilder and Kauders, pp. 5-7**

Memory is the mental function of storing, organizing, and recovering information. Using memory, we acquire, retain, and access our vast reservoir of personal experience and learned data. Memory can be deeply and tragically affected by suggestion.

> *...in this war situation...There must be no leakage, no talking outside the classroom. So the operator now removes from the subject all [conscious] knowledge that he has ever been hypnotized. This is quite simple, again by the use of suggestion in the trance. We tell the subject in hypnotism that on awakening he will have no remembrance of ever having been hypnotized, that if questioned, he will insist he knows nothing about hypnotism and has never been a subject.* **(Estabrooks, p. 196)**

Amnesia is loss of ability to retrieve a memory.

The hypnotic suggestion that makes a subject most likely to carry out orders contrary to their self-interest is amnesia. The most important element in a case of abusive hypnosis is amnesia. The biggest roadblock to uncovering a crime of criminal hypnosis is amnesia. Amnesia is, therefore, the central problem of a survivor of abusive hypnosis. It is central to the operator's setup, central to the years of secret life hidden under the consciously known one, central to the struggle to escape and heal.

Memory can never be completely enslaved, however, because the mind is so vast. The potential number of neural hookups is virtually infinite. Memory's truth and freedom find refuge and comeback resources in that infinite matrix. They always have a chance of circumventing repressive blocks and finding another route to consciousness.

Hypnotic Phenomena That Affect Memory

Suggested Amnesia—Suggested amnesia causes the specified memories to be irretrievable from LTM.

Confabulation—Suggestion, overt or covert, or spontaneous self-suggestion causes a person in a state of lowered consciousness (trance) to fabricate a false memory.

Hypermnesia—Suggestion causes previously unobtainable memory to be recovered.

Regression—When suggestion causes memory to be recovered by retrieving and reliving old memories.

A psychology textbook says "...it is normal for the hypnotized subject to recall everything that went on under hypnosis." (Wortman, Loftus, and Marshall, 1981) They cite "Barber, 1975" as source. That statement is only true, however, if the subject is in a light to medium (not somnambulistic) depth, and if that subject's unconscious has not accepted an amnesia suggestion.

Three-hundred years of hypnosis research have established that two types of amnesia are associated with trance experience:

General Categories of Amnesia

Barbizet, a French neuropsychiatrist and expert on memory, divided the amnesias into two basic categories: 1) **physical** (functional) ones, due to injury or disease in the brain tissue, and 2) **affective** ones. Some later researchers have listed three basic types: 1) **normal forgetting**; 2) **functional amnesia**; and 3) **affective amnesia**.

Normal Forgetting—Everybody has occasional natural amnesias. When you cannot remember where you left something, or the last few miles you drove, you are experiencing a natural, passive forgetting.

Functional Amnesia—In functional amnesia, the normal functioning of neurons, for some reason, has been disrupted. Functional amnesia can be caused by a) mechanical interference with the consolidation process, such as by electroshock or concussion or b) gross organic brain damage, as from brain surgery or Alzheimer's.

Affective Amnesia—Affective amnesia is an **active forgetting.** Your unconscious has deliberately reorganized your memories to create an inability to retrieve the target data from your long- term memory. Any amnesia that is not functional is an affective amnesia, so natural forgetting and spontaneous amnesias fit here too. The brain structure is undamaged. The memory is in long-term storage, but the retrieval system won't obey. It will not complete the act of remembering. Therefore, you do not make the effort, or you do not sustain the effort to remember. Affective amnesia can be caused by a natural emotional trauma that causes unconscious repression, or by suggestion.[1]

dissociation amnesia and **suggested amnesia**.

Dissociation Amnesia

Dissociation amnesia is a totally different amnesia from suggested amnesia, though both are associated with hypnosis. It may be present for some (or all) of the trance even if there is no suggested amnesia. In light hypnosis, you usually remember everything. In a deeper stage, you may remember some things, and have dissociation amnesia for others. In the very deepest state, there is the greatest potential of dissociation amnesia.

In dissociation amnesia, you are not told to forget. You just do. It is a spontaneous, natural result of being in a very deep trance. However, the deeper you are, the more responsive you are to suggestion. If told you will remember all that happens, you will do that.

The cause of dissociation amnesia is probably the disconnection of your conscious mind. It tends to take with it the remembering function when it goes off-line.

> *...hypnotic behavior does not seem to occupy a proper place in the subject's memory. He disclaims recollection of recent and often very complicated actions* [done in trance] *which in the ordinary way he seems to have every reason to remember.* (White in Moss, p. 123)

Puysegur first identified dissociation amnesia in trance subjects. After that, most old-time hypnotists and some modern hypnotists have used the appearance of this spontaneous amnesia as a defining marker for somnambulist depth of trance. All the older analyses of stages of hypnotic depth included dissociation amnesia as part, or all, of the defined crossover to somnambulism.

Spontaneous Amnesias

Spontaneous amnesia is an affective amnesia that arises, not from hypnosis, but from

> *...an unconscious refusal by the subject to accept*

---

[1] Natural dissociation that happens in deep trance gets filed here too, but probably should have a category of its own.

> *a part of his biography. But these memories, which are inaccessible to the consciousness, are not forgotten but repressed...* **(Barbizet, p. 135).**

Spontaneous amnesia is most likely to happen under conditions of severe emotional stress. During World War II, one study of "shell shock" cases found that 144 out of 1,000 consecutive admissions, or about 15%, involved temporary losses of memory:

> *Such loss of memory is often a simple inhibitory response of the brain to overwhelming stresses it cannot deal with by any other means.* **(Sargant, *Battle for the Mind,* p. 57)**

A college professor developed a "euphoric state of amnesia," but it turned out she had repressed a series of very bad recent experiences including "the breakup of her marriage and the sudden death of her mother before her eyes. **(Loftus, *Memory*, p. 71)** Loftus concluded that "After such an enormously stressful experience, many individuals wish to forget...and often their wish is granted." **(*Ibid.*, p. 73)**

Suggested Amnesia

This amnesia is caused by a suggested **repression** of the brain's normal memory retrieval function. A hypnotist's suggestion, "You will not remember," seeks to trigger the same physiological repression of synaptic action as in spontaneous amnesia. Warrington and Weiskrantz (1982) studied hypnotically-suggested amnesia. They learned that the memories repressed by suggested amnesia remain in long-term memory just as in natural repression. The breakdown is, again, like natural repression in the retrieval process. Repressed memories are in long-term storage but no longer can be retrieved because the retrieval function does not work when applied.

Because of the fine precision with which words communicate, suggested amnesia can affect anything in a subject's memory, and in any way. You can be told to forget only your name. Or only your friend's name. Or you can be told not to remember anything that ever happened under trance, including its induction and your awakening from it. The will of the hypnotist, inserted at your unconscious level, overrules your conscious effort to remember. The words are stimuli intended to directly and mechanically elicit the wanted responses from an unconscious-- Pavlov's second signal system.

You may know that you know, but you're unable to remember. You may remember, but be unable to communicate that remembering. You may have a sense of remembering but feel an active reluctance to complete the act of remembering. Or, you may be consciously unaware there is anything to remember.

> *Lindner: Now, Harold, I want you just to sleep, sleep deeply, a deep refreshing sleep. When you awaken you will have forgotten all the things you have told me; forgotten everything. You are forgetting now. You have forgotten already. Have you told me anything, Harold?*
>
> *Harold: ...No--I don't--I forget--I...*
>
> *Lindner: That's right. You have forgotten. And when you wake up you will tell me that you have had a good rest, that you are feeling fine for having had a good sleep. You will not recall that you have told me anything at all. Now you will awaken. One--two--three..."*
>
> *Harold: Oh, I must have...I've been asleep. I had a good sleep...* **(Lindner, *Rebel Without a Cause,* p. 245)**

A military hypnotist suggested combining dissociation amnesia with suggested amnesia: "Suggestions of amnesia would then simply reinforce this tendency [dissociation amnesia] which already exists in the nature of the process. **(Christenson, p. 51)**

Fugue

A **fugue** is a spontaneous, complete dissociation. Persons with split personality are in fugue when being an alternate persona. The original personality is amnesic for the fugue period. M.H. Erickson called such a trance an example of posthypnotic behavior which erupts from the unconscious up "into the conscious stream of activity and fails to become an integral part of that activity" **(*"Nature of Posthypnotic Behavior"*)**—unless the subject later manages, or is enabled, to remember.

Resistance to Remembering

When you are blocked from remembering by an affective amnesia, the problem is called **resistance**. The resistance exists either because of natural or learned scruples or feelings, or because of hypnotic blocks. It's "resistance" when you say, "I don't seem to be able to think of anything." When you try to visualize something, but all you "see" is thick fog, that's resistance visualized.

R. W. White suggested amnesia to a group of hypnotized experimental subjects. After awakening them, he asked what they could remember of the trance. Here are the reasons (rationalizations) those subjects gave for the inner resistance which prevented them from remembering what happened in the trance:

a) *I feel that if I thought hard enough I could remember, but I just can't get down to business.*

b) *I haven't any inclination to go back over it.*

c) *Something is holding back my memory.*

d) *My mind doesn't want to think.*

e) *...I get as far as the eye suggestion and then my thoughts go off into something else.*

f) *I do remember but I can't say, I can't think of the word...(Later) I could remember it without being able to say it....I partly knew and partly didn't.* **(R. W. White, *A Preface to the Theory of Hypnotism*)**

The subjects were all trying to say the same thing: their memory of what happened in the trance exists, but the brain's information-retrieval system is not cooperating. They have the information, but their unconscious is refusing to carry out the mental act of retrieving it. Their conscious will cannot overcome their unconscious acceptance of the suggestion not to remember. They cannot make the effort, or cannot maintain the effort. The will of the hypnotist, inserted at their unconscious level, is overruling their own conscious effort to remember. Because the suggestion blocking retrieval is covered by amnesia, their conscious mind is unable to access and change it.

Testing Amnesia

Modern susceptibility scales include suggested amnesia as one measure of depth, or susceptibility. The Barber Suggestibility Scale uses posthypnotic amnesia for one scored test item. In the test for "recall amnesia" in the Standard Hypnotic Susceptibility Scale, Forms A and B **(Weitzenhoffer & Hilgard, 1959)**, the hypnotized person is told:

> *...you will probably have the impression that you have slept because you will have difficulty in remembering all the things I have told you and all the things that you did or felt. In fact, you will find it to be so much of an effort to recall any of these things that you will have no wish to do so. It will be much easier simply to forget everything until I tell you that you can remember. You will remember nothing of what has happened until I say to you: 'Now you can remember everything!" You will not remember anything until then.*

After testing is finished, the subject is wakened from trance. The tester asks what was remembered starting with the hypnotist's request that he focus his eyes on the "target." Score is based on how many things the subject managed to remember despite the amnesia suggestions. A score of three, or fewer, rates the subject as "passed amnesia." (Afterwards, the tester may give a posthypnotic cue to drop the amnesia wall: "Now you can remember everything!")

In some other susceptibility testing systems, if the subject remembers most, or all, despite the suggestion, it's **no amnesia**. If the subject remembers some, but not all, he shows **partial amnesia**. If the subject remembers nothing at all, there's **complete amnesia**.

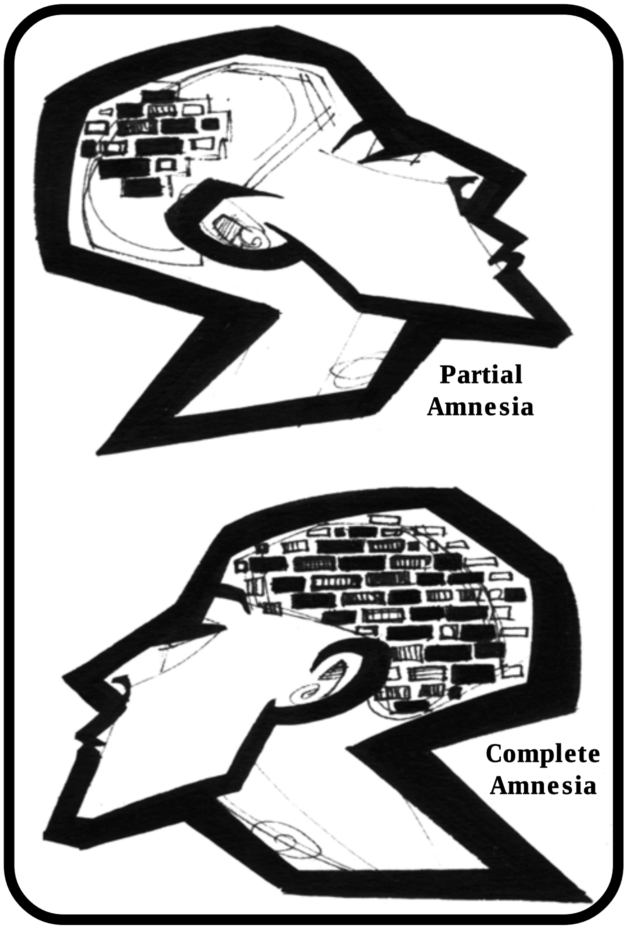

Artificial Multiple Personality

It is by remembering that we **integrate** experience. If we can't remember something, we can't integrate it. The experience remains dissociated.

> *The normal act of recalling memories is a result of the association of ideas. If there is a failure of the power to recall events which normally should be remembered, this is "dissociation"--an interruption or repression of the memory. Amnesia is therefore an essential element...*[in the development of a multiple personality] **(LeCron & Bordeaux, pp. 143-144**

Some experimental hypnotists have called systematic hypnotic training, including suggested amnesia and designated reinduction and exit cues, the **artificial creation of multiple personality**. The subject is given standing instructions not to remember all trance events. He instantly enters deep trance as a result of a posthypnotic induction cue. He leaves it at another cue. Under those conditions, all his trance events will resemble fugue. He is an artificially-created split personality. He has (suggested) chronic, systematic amnesia for a certain system of ideas and events in his life.

If the subject's entry to trance is fast and smooth, and if displacement of the conscious awareness includes instant transition to an amnesic status--then the mental machinery enabling the trance induction has become an unconscious reflex. Consciously willed change of this condition is difficult.

Amnesia Blocks Your Feedback System—Your conscious mind chooses your goals and attitudes. Your unconscious carries them out. Your conscious mind evaluates any extraordinary results of your behavior. That's the **feedback process**. Based on feedback, you correspondingly adjust the instructions to your unconscious. You use feedback in everyday life to improve your mental programming. If you drive too fast and nearly have an accident at a sharp curve, you will instruct yourself to take that stretch slower the next time. You changed your unconscious behavior as a result of feedback.

Accurate awareness of what you did, and why you did it, and what happened as a result of doing it—feedback—makes you a self-governing person. If you can't remember the event because of natural or suggested amnesia, you have no feedback. You can't correct your programming if you don't know the real reason why you did something. Problem programming rooted in forgotten events is a cause of **neurosis**.

A hypnotist can artificially create neurosis by suggesting mental conflict plus amnesia for the suggested conflict. The setup tends to be permanent and powerful because amnesia removes the mental implants from the subject's conscious awareness. Normal cleanup and adjustment action of the brain's feedback function is blocked. Systematic, controlled amnesia has always been of great interest to mind-controllers.

> *...when a posthypnotic compulsion is performed with the awareness that it is being performed (even though the suggestion to perform it is forgotten), the feedback from the unusual behavior tends to inhibit its continuation.* **(E. R. Hilgard, *Divided Consciousness*, p. 142)**

If you hear yourself giving a bizarre response, completely out of context, over and over, and you know you are a hypnotic subject who has been given a posthypnotic suggestion for that response, then you have feedback. You will then struggle to repress that response or try to avoid any situation that cues the inappropriate, unwanted behavior.

If, every time somebody says "Hi," you hear yourself answering "February," you will answer "February" less and less, as the trials go on. If you notice you are giving every spare cent to adult children instead of paying your old bills, you will find a way to evade that obviously inappropriate impulse. If you do not know that you are a hypnotic subject, however, and if you do not notice yourself saying "February," because you have a posthypnotic suggestion for selective deafness, or selective amnesia, then you will give that response forever.

9) Regression

Unfortunately many investigators of "hypnotic regression" have accepted as valid that type of "regression" which is based upon current conceptions of the past; and they have not gone on to the type of true regression in which the hypnotic situation itself ceases, and the subject is plunged directly into the chronological past.

- Erickson & Kubie quoted in Wolberg, *Hypnoanalysis*, p. 291

To regain the power to have a self-governing, self-correcting mind, a victim of suggested (or spontaneous) amnesia needs to go back into trance with a good-guy helper and access and reprogram the amnestic material. That process is **regression**.

There are two types of suggested regression: **capacity regression**, and **memory regression**. Capacity and/or memory regression may be spontaneous as with Candy, or suggested as with Palle, Mrs. E, and Zebediah.

☞ *For more on capacity regression, see Operation Often.*

Meanings of "Regression"

In the field of psychology, the word **regression** has several different meanings:

- When you have a new baby, the previous one tends to temporarily **regress**. It returns to a younger level of functioning.
- When a person becomes hypnotized, they shift toward more primitive **primary process** thinking and toward attributing parental qualities to the hypnotist. Psychoanalytically oriented hypnotists **call** that **regression**.
- When a person, in trance, acts a younger age, spontaneously or because he has been instructed to act a younger age, that is **capacity regression** (also called **primitivation**).
- When a person in trance is told to go back in time, in order to remember, or relive, what happened at a younger age, that is **regression** for the purpose of recovering a memory.

Three Types of Memory Regression

Memory regression happens in one of three basic styles, listed here from the least to the most reliable: 1) **remembering**, 2) **reenacting**, and 3) **revivification**.

Remembering—When **remembering,** the memory is viewed from the subject's present age and described in the past tense. Hypnosis doesn't have to be deep for this type of regression. You're in a dual role, aware of the present, but also connected to the past. You are conscious, but perhaps with a mental door open to unconscious material.

Reenacting—When reenacting you are "back there," at the time, **role-playing** the scene. A subject regressed back to childhood may speak like a child, in a child's tones, with a child's grammar, vocabulary, and reactions. Reenacting tends to happen under light trance. (Deep trance regression tends to elicit revivification.) Reenacting is

> *..."regression" in terms of what the subject as an adult believes, understands, remembers or imagines about that earlier period of his life. In this form of "regression" the subject's behavior will be a half-conscious dramatization of his present understanding of that previous time, and he will behave as he believes would be suitable for him as a child of the suggested age level.* **(Erickson and Kubie, quoted in Wolberg, p. 291)**

Revivification (Reliving)—The most authentic and powerful memory regression type, the one associated with deepest trance, is **revivification**. Revivification is not based on current memories, recollections, or reconstructions. The present and all subsequent life and experience are blotted out during this type of hypnotic event. The memory tape plays. The subject relives the experience.

Revivification is very different in subjective experience, and objective significance, from reenactment. The reliving of revivification is compelling, vivid, and experienced as "now." **The subject talks about his memories in the present tense** both during, and after, the experience. During the reliving, associated capacity regression may reproduce patterns of physiological behavior associated with that earlier period of life.

Regression Therapy

Repressed painful experiences can cause **neurotic symptoms**. If that person remembers the original event, relives it, and feels the formerly hidden emotion (thus **releasing**, **integrating**, and **dealing** with it), the symptoms usually will disappear. The usefulness of exposing old memories to the light of day is its power to produce personal change.

A **claustrophobia**, for example, might be caused by a young child's experience of having been shut in a dark closet as punishment. If the event is not consciously remembered, the unconscious retains the attitude toward that memory that it held when it first happened. A forgotten memory from age five remains networked in your unconscious programming with the emotions which were attached to it at age five. As we grow older, however, we acquire perspective. What terrified a five-year-old is likely to seem less frightening to an adult.

The Cases of Lucie and Marie—Pierre Janet pioneered **regression therapy** in the late 1800s. Lucie was a nineteen-year-old woman who suffered from unexplained episodes of terror. By hypnotizing her, and having her do automatic writing, Janet learned that the cause of the terror episodes was an incident that happened when Lucie was seven. Two men had hidden behind a curtain and deliberately frightened her. Janet was able to identify how the symptom had resulted from that particular memory and also to cure her.

He further explored regression hypnotherapy with another nineteen-year-old patient, Marie. She seemed blind in the left eye. However, when he regressed her to age five, that eye suddenly saw normally. He asked her to relive various events from age six and discovered the origin of her hysterical blindness. He implanted a revised memory, rewriting a portion of her personal history. That eliminated the problem. Her unconscious mind accepted the comforting lie. She regained vision.

The Case of Mrs. S.—Mrs. S was a psychiatric social worker who always felt strong fear when she had to go into a hospital for any reason. She was also phobic of any man's bare, hairy arms—and of knives. She had occasional, inexplicable nightmares and asthma attacks. Other than that, she was healthy, normal psychologically, and functioned well at work.

She wanted to find the cause of her problems, but could not afford therapy. She began to read Horney's book on remembering, *Self Analysis*, every night at bedtime. She did the book's exercises every night, just before going to sleep. One night, she realized that a classic **repressed traumatic event** might be the cause of her phobias. She began searching her memories, starting at age fourteen. She went back and farther back, reviewing one emotional episode after another, trying to remember any trauma that might be the basis of her phobias. When she got to age five, she suddenly remembered—with startling clarity—a previously forgotten event. That event was not the answer, but it was a mental exercise toward that end. The clarity was because she was now in a self-induced deep trance. Then, suddenly,

> *...she seemed to be lying on a table, clothed in a white gown and under brilliant lights. She could see a man standing beside her holding a small knife. Above her head was a vague, threatening object which was settling down over her face. Terror-stricken, she struggled to rise, but two hairy arms seized her and roughly forced her back. She continued to struggle and was grasped violently and shaken; then a hand slapped her sharply and repeatedly. The object came down over her face, smothering her. At this point she began to scream, waking her husband. She was in extreme panic, trembling and sobbing, and he had great difficulty quieting her.* (**LeCron, *The Complete Guide to Hypnosis*, pp. 171-172)**

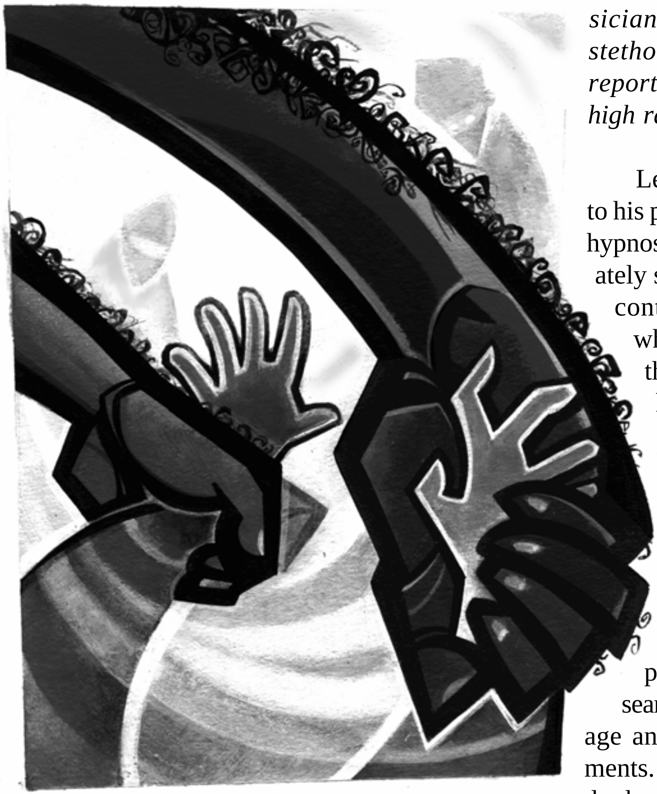

In self-analysis, Mrs. S. had sought revivification of that memory, and she had achieved it. She poured out the **cathartic,** healing emotions to her husband. The next day, she asked her mother to explain. Her mother told her

> *...that, at the age of 16 months, a mastoidectomy had been performed on her and that she had been very sick afterward, with severe shock complications. Two of the nurses at the hospital had informed the mother of the brutality displayed toward the child by the anesthetist, and they had resigned in protest. For some time the child had experienced nightmares and had been emotionally disturbed. Following the operation, her first attacks of asthma had been manifested.* **(Ibid.)**

Her mother's memory had **corroborated** Mrs. S's deep trance reliving of that childhood memory. It was regression, not confabulation. After that, hairy arms became bearable to Mrs. S. Her knife and hospital phobias completely vanished. She never had another asthma attack.

Case of the Asthmatic Man—While lecturing on hypnosis to a group of doctors, Professor LeCron recruited a man as a demonstration subject, hypnotized him, developed deep trance, and regressed him to

> *...his third birthday. The subject began to gasp for breath, wheezing violently, coughing, and choking. His face and neck became markedly flushed, and he displayed signs of acute distress. It was obvious to all that he was undergoing an attack of asthma. One of the physicians present made a quick stethoscopic examination and reported rales present, with a high rate of pulse.* **(Ibid., p. 169)**

LeCron brought the subject back to his present age and woke him from hypnosis. The asthma attack immediately stopped. Next day, the subject contacted his mother and asked what she remembered about his third birthday. She said that he had a bad attack of asthma that day.

Regression: True or False?

Recently published psychology textbooks deny the validity of any regression phenomena. They report research which implies failure in most age and capacity regression experiments. They say that questioning under hypnosis retrieves more data, but that a greater percentage of the data will be false. That is correct only if the experiment involves what Dr. Reiter would have considered too light a trance, inadequate hypnotic training, leading questions, suggestive trance context, and no safeguards against the subject straying from the truth such as ideomotor signals, urgings to tell only the truth, and threats against falsehood.

Actually, over the nearly three hundred years of scientific hypnosis research from Puysegur to the present, dozens of European and American hypnosis researchers established both that regression is real and that confabulation--now also called **false memory syndrome**--is real. The truth lies between the two convenient extremes of accepting all claims, or rejecting all claims.

> *Those who believe that age regression can be actual usually note that it often is not complete; that frequently it is only partial, and sometimes the investigator does obtain only a kind of acting. They feel that regression may or may not be true, depending upon the hypnotizability of the subject and the skill of the hypnotist.* **(John G. Watkins, Introduction to LeCron, *A Study of Age Regression under Hypnosis, p. 153)***

To tell the difference between confabulation and genuine regression is a problem fit for Solomon. Or an investigative hypnotist such as Dr. Reiter. There is no absolute guarantee against fabrication or confabulation, even when working with a credentialed person. The credentialed person may intentionally, or unintentionally, lead the subject into confabulation. The subject's:

> *...desire to comply, both in and out of the formal trance, is such that they may convincingly invent information in an effort to give the hypnotist what he seems to want. They can even deceive themselves. Thus, interviews utilizing hypnotic age regression for the purpose of uncovering information must be performed carefully and dispassionately. Further, external corroborating evidence is crucial for verification of material produced in a regression study.* **(Spiegel, Foreword to Bain, p. xi)**

I wish I could provide you (and me) with a five-minute litmus test which would determine, with 99.9 % accuracy, whether a particular memory obtained in deep trance is true or not. I can't do that. Nobody can. The bottom line on memories recovered under regression is that they may, or may not, be true. If you have corroborative **direct memories** (memories obtained in normal, rather than trance, consciousness) or other objective evidence, then you have the comfort of proof. Without that proof, it can not be simple and sure. It depends--on subject, circumstances, hypnotist, depth, and the technique used.

It may be hard to sort out true regression from confabulation. Confabulation exists. True recovery of previously amnestic memory in trance regression also exists.

10) Confabulation

An epidemic of false accusations is occurring in which adult children are accusing their parents of horrendous acts of sexual abuse, including incest and satanic ritual abuse.

- Goldstein and Farmer, *Confabulations*, p. 1

A person who **confabulates** has produced fantasy and mistaken it for factual truth. There is always a risk of confabulation in trance—of creating a false reality, and then being burdened by belief in it. The tenth hypnotic phenomenon is **confabulation**.

Suggestibility Causes Confabulation

In general, people are susceptible to subtle, unconscious leadings. Trance is a mental state of even greater suggestibility to either conscious or unconscious leading by context or by operator, and deep trance is the most suggestible state of all. For example, patients with exactly the same symptoms discover quite different causes for those symptoms when in therapy with operators who are loyal to different therapeutic philosophies (or religions).

> *Given a psychiatrist who is interested in birth trauma, or in faulty parental attitudes, most hys-*

Four Paths to False "Knowing"

Here are four possible paths to a convincing, but false, "knowing," which can be generated by the unconscious:

1) **Rationalization**—Rationalizations are the lies that we tell ourselves when we do not know, or do not want to know, our real unconscious motive for an act.

2) **False Memory Implanted by Suggestion**—A suggested false memory is a lie told to our unconscious by somebody else. A hypnotist can alter a subject's memory and cause the subject to believe an untrue version of his personal history--even testify to that belief. It happened to Zebediah and to Palle. False memory has also been used as a technique to discredit persons who were trying to reveal hypno-abuse. A person's grip on direct memories is hard to dislodge, but it is relatively easy to implant additional confabulatory "facts" in a hypnoprogrammed mind. Since erasure of existing conscious knowledge is not feasible, but maneuvering the subject into a position of confabulation is feasible, the mind predator may do just that. The confabulated false memories are intended to destroy credibility for all the victim's statements.

3) **Fabrication**—Witnesses in a courtroom (and everyday people in everyday situations) tend to fill in forgotten details of remembered events, according to what they think probably happened. Those details may be different from what actually happened. People also may unconsciously revise old memories to adapt them to later circumstances or beliefs. And memories can evolve over the course of years of re-remembering and retelling. (That is why a written record, made within a few days of the event, is better evidence than what is recalled, years later.) Those are all varieties of fabrication.

4) **Confabulation**—A person in trance is highly suggestible. She may accept a hypnotist's suggestion, or a self-generated idea, or a context clue. When experiences or statements generated in a state of trance are felt by the subject to be true, but really are not, that is **confabulation**.

terical and suggestible patients will finally produce many examples of disturbing parental attitudes, and may even remember in startling detail some supposed highly traumatic birth experience. But given another psychiatrist who is interested in quite different matters, such as whether or not the patient is mother-fixated, or has been sexually assaulted by the father, the hysterical patient, because of his state of greatly increased suggestibility, will produce a quite different set of memories which fit that psychiatrist's explanation of the symptoms. Freud once made twelve consecutive patients remember and abreact what proved to be imaginary sexual assaults by the father, implanted by Freud's belief, at the time, that sexual assault by the father was the major cause of hysteria. Later he realized how wrong he had been...
(Sargant, *The Mind Possessed,* p. 56)

There are many reports of hypnotized persons remembering birth—even womb experiences. I doubt, however, that anybody could truly recall their moment of conception. But a person in deep trance can be led to "experience" that, and anything else, on this planet or off it. The hallucination will feel absolutely convincing, because that is how brains are wired. An operator can lead a person to experience a "past" life, or a "future" life, a "moment of conception," a "UFO abduction." Whatever--as long as the subject is capable of trance deep enough for hallucination.

Fake "alien" encounters[1], false womb experiences, phony excursions to "Atlantis," and "past lives" generated under deep trance by presuggestion, or by leading suggestions, change a person's assumptions about life, the universe, and everything. Confabulated incest memories, or "Satanic ritual abuse" memories, may result in terrible, un-

---

1. There is significant hard evidence for the reality of some "alien" encounters. I once met a man with severe scars on his side. When he was a young man, a flying saucer had landed back of his house. His father ran away from it. He ran toward it—and was burned. Decades later, he now heads a California UFO reporting network—a phone line that the U. S. Air Force monitors. "Sometimes we phone in a fake landing eventt just to watch them scramble. They always show up." Aliens? My analysis is that some events are advanced U.S. aircraft. Others may be time-traveling (a theoretically-possible technology) tourists from the planet's future, genetically engineered future humans. That fits with the crop circle (year-dating) phenomena. Time will tell...

necessary pain for families—even imprisonment of innocent persons.

It Feels True

Confabulation, like any deep trance hallucination, feels truer than true. Many hypnotic experiments have "sent" hypnotic subjects to impossible times and places. A susceptible hypnotic subject always manages to come up with some plausible scenario--and then believes it was real! Psychologists have studied the responses of confabulators (hallucinators) to legal questioning, comparing them to the responses of people relying on regular memory. It is a phenomenon of trance that anybody who acquired their information in a trance state (whether she is a confabulator or a survivor of criminal hypnosis recovering amnesic memories), tends to be more confident and sincere-sounding as a witness than a person who is relying on direct memory.

> *...wheres other witnesses would hesitate when confronted with the facts of the investigation, hypnotized witnesses would hold their ground steadfastly and to an unshakeable degree.* **(Lawrence and Perry, *Hypnosis, Will, and Memory*, pp. 285-286)**

False Knowing, But Real Emotion—A confabulator will feel profound and "appropriate" emotions. Those emotions will be experienced as completely real and valid. Doesn't that prove that the event actually happened?

No, it does not. You can feel excruciating shame, pain, anger, grief, or joy over something that was merely suggested to you, or that your unconscious generated while you were in a state of trance. Real emotions felt during the "experience," and still felt whenever recalling it, are not "proof." The emotional reaction to an experience a subject has confabulated--or been told under amnesic hypnosis to belive in—is identical in brain chemistry and subjective experience to the emotional response elicited by a revivified genuine memory. It is all brain coding. In the mind, it is all mind, whether true or false, imagination or reality. Real memory and false memory are both, in that sense, just **imagination**.

Even though you thought it, it may not be true. Even though your recall of it seems real, it may not be true. Even though it caused you to feel deep emotion, it may not be true.

Confabulation has been studied since the late 1800s. The Bridey Murphy case started the fashion of hypnotic "remembering" of past lives. This is now big business for certain hypnotherapists who specialize in generating them for customers. Reporters later discovered that Virginia, the woman who "remembered" an apparently convincing youth in Ireland, actually had lived, for five years, during her childhood and adolescence, across the street from an immigrant Irish family, the Corkells. She had a crush on John, one of their sons, was friends with their son Kevin, and--in her trance confabulation--adopted Mrs. Corkell's maiden name (Bridie Murphy) as her own. **(*Time*, June 18, 1956; E.R. Hilgard, *Divided Consciousness*, p. 50)** But that research came too late. Past life "regressions" under hypnosis were here.

Toleration of Confabulation

Why do therapists tolerate, even encourage, confabulations? It is a fact that—unless their specialty is forensic hypnosis—they usually do not care if the memories are true or not.

1) Money—It is good business. People who have no other reason to visit a hypnotist may visit to "remember" a past life. They pay $60 or $80 to the hypnotist for that visit, or more.

2) Abreaction Therapy—Some psychology textbooks now say it does not matter if a generated memory is true or not (the subject always feels like it is true), because any fact or fantasy, under trance, that generates emotion can be therapeutic. When a subject is in a state of emotion, he is more open to being reprogrammed by an operator. Also, any experience that generates emotion, even if confabulated, leaves the person feeling less stressed, and in apparently better psychological health.

> *...a falsely implanted memory might create a larger emotional discharge than the real, and induce the physiological effects needed for psychological relief.* **(Sargant, *Battle for the Mind*, p. 24).**

So, hallucinations of battle on ancient Mars, or of your father abusing your pregnant mother, generate great emotion, which leaves the subject feeling psychologically renewed. That is how the human brain is wired. Experiencing profound emotion, for whatever reason, can temporarily relieve neurotic symptoms. It also increases the likelihood that the subject will accept other items on the operator's belief agenda.

3) Legal Protection—A public and legal attitude of toleration toward confabulation is also favored by the therapy community. It protects them from liability for sloppy "regressing" that actually pulls up confabulations from the subject's unconscious—which the subject then believes to be fact.

4) Return Business—Confabulation generates return business for the hypnotist, psychic, or whoever because, after any deep trance experience, the subject experiences a craving to revisit that rapport object and do it all again. Trance is a rush with addictive elements. It also implants a deep sense of importance for whatever happened to you in trance, whether true or false. Trance subjects bond with the hypnotist in rapport (regard, affection, and obedience). They speak enthusiastically of their experience to friends (other potential customers).

5) Reinforcing Group Belief—When a group of people share a belief, they naturally bond with each other. Any new recruit is warmly welcomed. He strengthens the group and renews their confidence in the shared convictions.

"Incest Memories"

Until the late 70s, there was little awareness of child sexual abuse and few resources for survivors of it. Then some women and men began talking about sexual abuse in their childhoods. Some of them had recovered the memory of that abuse years later. Books were then written about childhood sexual abuse. Some implied that if the thought occurs to you that it happened, it did. Support groups formed. A clinical specialty developed. Incest therapists often induced trance in their clients. (Any time one person talks alone with another in a mood of trust, it tends to lower consciousness.)

Soon thousands of therapists were leading clients to recall incest memories. Some suggestible persons--in settings where recovering repressed memories of child abuse was the norm, or was encouraged—"remembered" things that were not true. Some realized that later and **retracted**. But great pain had already been caused to them and the accused.

> *The heartfelt and pathetic stories that parents have written about their experiences with alienated daughters have strong similarities. More than 500 such stories were documented between January and June, 1992...In all of these cases:*
>
> *1. Adult children accused their parents of childhood sexual abuse.*
>
> *2. In each case recollections of the abuse occurred in therapy.*
>
> *3. The accusations were based on repressed memories uncovered in therapy.*
>
> *4. The memories were all Decade-Delayed-Discoveries.*
>
> *5. Many of the adult children participated in 12-Step Programs.*
>
> *6. Many of the adult children read the book* ***The Courage to Heal.***
>
> *7. All of these adult children severed relationships with their parents and any family member who did not believe their stories.*
>
> *8. The therapists refused all communication with the parents...* (**Goldstein and Farmer, *Confabulations*, p. 187)**

Goldstein and Farmer's book describes cases thought to be confabulations. It includes interviews with therapists who clearly do not understand the ease with which a susceptible hypnotic subject can be unconsciously led to confabulate, and the emotional intensity and feeling of authenticity associated with any confabulated memory.

Relatives who had suffered the loss of a child's love because of false memories began to fight back against false memory syndrome. They networked, researched, publicized.

Social Issues Resources Series specializes in books on false incest memories. There is also a magazine called ***Issues in Child Abuse Accusations*** and a newsletter called ***The Retractor***. All cover similar territory: confabulation in the incest area. Since 1992, the False Memory Syndrome Foundation, Philadelphia, PA, has provided information, networking, and names of lawyers who specialize in fighting false child abuse accusations. It also provides area phone numbers so you can receive emotional support from other parents who have gone through this.

However, the False Memory Syndrome Foundation may have an ulterior motive in its efforts to deny validity to memories acquired—or recovered—after some passage of time.

> *...FMSF has some on their Board of Advisors who may want to cover up their own work. One is Louis West, another is Martin Orne, one of the key MKULTRA researchers in hypnosis, and a third is Michael Persinger, who did research on the effects of electromagnetic radiation on the brain for a Pentagon weapons project.*
>
> *Regression therapy could threaten to reveal techniques the CIA may have secretly developed involving the use of hypnosis.* **(Daniel Brandt,"*Mind Control and the Secret State*," *Prevailing Winds Magazine*, Number 3, p. 73, NameBase NewsLine, #12, Jan-March 1996)**

Confabulation can happen. If a person confabulates, then, rather than being relieved of harmful old misprogramming, she acquires harmful new misprogramming. It is *not* helpful to believe falsehoods about your past. People need to live as close to the truth as they can get.

Facts about confabulation, however, should not be allowed to obscure facts about memory regression. Unethical hypnosis also can happen. The possibility of memory recovery by means of regression is an important means to healing for the survivor and recovery of the case facts. Denial of that fact would be too convenient for hypno-abusers.

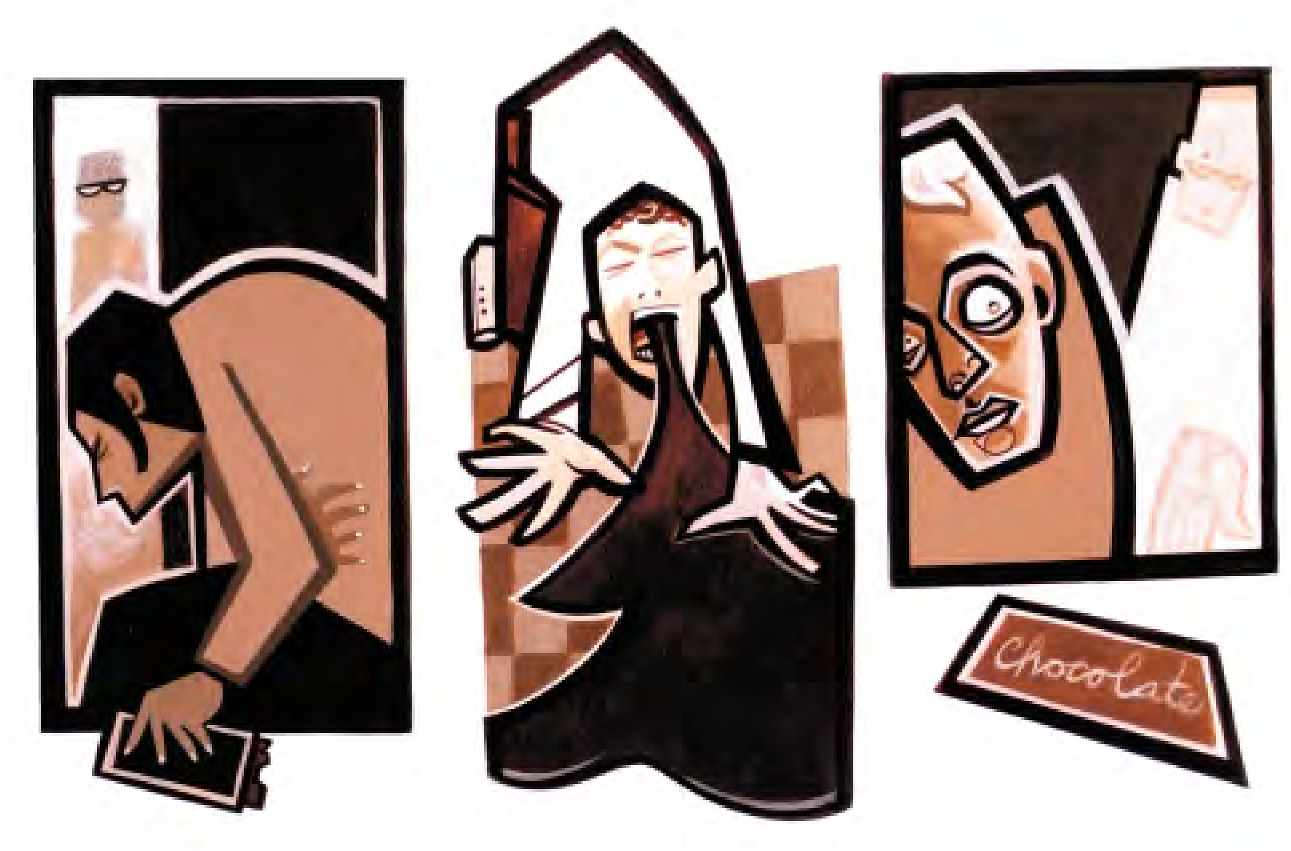

One Subject ate the candy, but then got indigestion. Another ate...then vomited. A third could not see the chocolate.

PART IV

Induction Methods

Visit with a Stage Hypnotist
First Inductions
Depth
Physiology of Trance
Type 1 Induction: Sensory Deprivation Shuts Down the Analyzer
Type 2 Induction: Excitation Overwhelms the Analyzer
Type 3 Induction: Brain Syndrome
Type 4 Induction: Chemical, Electrical, and Biomagnetic (Psychic)

"She had on power-blue underpants."

Visit with a Stage Hypnotist

☑

Stage Hypnosis:
"Fakery"?

☑

...the possibility of an obliteration of memory remains, not only in theory and in laboratory experiments, but also in practice. If this possibility is repeatedly denied, it is because the wish is father to the thought and because facts are ignored which cannot be easily disposed of.

Hammerschlag, *Hypnotism and Crime*, 1957

My friend Skip said, "I know that people under hypnosis will do things they wouldn't normally do. I remember back in college, a hypnotist came around, put on a show. He got volunteers from the audience, hypnotized them. He told them the temperature was going up, that they were hot, real hot. One girl stood up, unzipped her pants, and dropped them to her knees before he could stop her. She had on powder-blue underpants. I knew that girl. She wasn't the type to take off her clothes in front of two hundred people."

A hypnotist wrote of similar situations:

> *...by telling him that he is alone, that he feels very dirty and should take a shower, he will begin to undress and take off every garment unless the hypnotist intervenes at a crucial moment. Many unethical exhibitionists, whose skill surpasses their good taste, have delighted audiences by waiting until the subject is almost stripped before rousing him to a state of utter consternation and embarrassment!* **(Gindes, *New Concepts of Hypnosis*, p. 43)**

One night, in 1987, I entered the door of Mingles, a tavern/pool hall near the University of Idaho campus in Moscow, Idaho. This evening of research would not be spent with the usual books and articles. I would be part of the audience watching an elderly, potbellied, gravel-voiced, comedian-with-a-gimmick do his hypnotist routine. It was the third show of his that I had watched in two days. I was getting to know his routine well.

In a deep, strong, pleasant voice, Bob told his audience, "The higher the level of intelligence, the better a subject you can be, if you wanna be. I'm a damn good subject and I'm damn proud of it and I've been up on over two dozen hypnotists' stages myself. And enjoyed the Hell out of it." (That is the **bandwagon** propaganda/advertising technique. You tell people that everybody else is doing it, and loves it. That suggests that they want to do it, and should expect to love it too.)

As soon as all the volunteers had arrived on stage, Bob culled out a couple of the less susceptible hypnotic subjects, sending them back to their seats in the audience. He said to the remaining subjects, "Now I'll want you stand-

ing just in front of your chairs, and concentrating on that light or just above it." The light was a single, unshaded, brightly-shining bulb. It hung from an extension cord at stage center just about two feet above the heads of the taller subjects. **(Eye focus** results in eyestrain and creates **sensory deprivation** that help induction along.

"After I've got you standing up concentrating on that light," Bob said, "I'm going to give you a suggestion for falling backwards. It's the same as a daydream. How you get into a daydream is imagination, so you must go into a hypnosis the same way. You will go into it instantaneously, and you'll feel like falling back or sitting down. Or maybe that light will change in some way. Whatever it is, don't even hesitate. Sit down. Close your eyes when you sit down and don't open them unless I tell you to."

(His mention of the harmless sounding "daydream" and "imagination" were **presuggestions** for the subjects to shift to **right brain** function. That part of the brain is a hypnosis center as well as the base of visual imagination. The suggestion that subjects would "go into it instantaneously" was **training** for efficient operator control, for instant induction on cue. The idea that the subject would "fall" was a presuggestion of helplessness. Gale's hint that "maybe the light will change in some way" presuggested a **visual hallucination**. His order to "close your eyes, and don't open them unless I tell you to" would, if obeyed, cause ongoing **sensory deprivation** which would nudge the process along even more of shutting down the subject's cortex. That is because the less sensory input you are processing, the less cortical activity you have—and the easier it is to slip into a trance state. That whole onslaught of detailed instructions was also, in and of itself, inductive, a technique called the **pyramiding of instructions**.)

The stage hypnotist's tone now switched from casual to very businesslike as he began to give another series of commands: "Stand up please. Stand in front of your chairs—heels together, toes apart in a 45 degree angle similar to mine, hands behind your back." (It did not really matter how they stood. What mattered to Gale was their beginning **habit of obedience,** precise, uncritical obedience to his every directive.) The seven prospective subjects stood up, positioned themselves as directed, and turned their faces toward the light.

"When you hit **somnambulism**, that's when that fantastic feeling comes over you, and it's just...good shit," Bob told them. It was a seductive presuggestion to go to the hypnotic depth which is characterized by maximum acceptance of any suggestion, even a negative hallucination, even of complete amnesia for all events of the trance. "Concentrate on the light," he said. "Tilt your head up a little bit. Listen to what I'm saying. Tilt your head up a little bit if it's not already. Take a deep breath."

Bob's voice now changed to a nearly monotonous tone. "Stay with my voice," he said. "And as you let it out [the breath], relax every muscle. Picture what I'm saying. And now, another deep breath. And, as you let it out, picture every muscle going loose, relaxed and comfortable. And now another deep breath. And as you let it out, if the light begins to blur, go out of focus, or to change in any way, it's a very natural phenomenon."

The hypnotist's deep voice became even deeper. His words emerged slowly, deliberately. (Both his tone and cadence reinforced the suggested lowering and slowing of the subjects' mental processes.) "Picture yourself falling backwards into your chair. Pulling you off balance, as if you're falling back. Pulling you back, pulling you back." (His speech was now somewhat incoherent. Confusion is another inductive technique. The suggestions to relax and to visualize were also inductive. And Gale was telling them to visualize loss of control, helplessness to resist his suggestion, "falling backwards.")

The hypnotist continued his induction patter for about five minutes. During that time, he rejected most of his candidates, rudely ordering them off the stage, one by one, when their unconscious submission did not measure up to his wishes. The two male volunteers who remained on the stage appeared to be in a deep trance state.

Bob said, "Picture in your mind, your right hand becoming light as a feather. It's floating upwards all by itself, lifting into the air. Floating upwards like a balloon filled with helium, lighter than air."

One man's right arm was up. The other's was not. Bob said to that person, "As I touch you on the arm, it will just float right up, floating up and lifting." He lightly touched the subject's arm. That touch is a deepening technique called **anchoring.** It works because a real touch in the midst of a suggested fantasy, under circumstances of sensory deprivation, tends to make the fantasy seem more real. The subject's arm floated up.

"And now many of them are floating up and lifting," Bob said.

I was struck by the deceit, implicit in his statement, to the two subjects who were sitting obediently with eyes closed, that "many" arms were floating. (A hypnotist is usually trying to displace the subject's will. He wants the subject to let the hypnotist's voice take over his brain's higher functions. He wants his voice to become a substitute link to, and interpreter of, his subject's reality. Very often, a hypnotist accomplishes that by persuading his subject's unconscious mind to accept lies.)

After Bob finished with his initial induction process, he was ready to begin the show. First, he **regressed** his subjects to age five and terrified them with a suggested "bogeyman." "Oh, my gosh, he's really got ahold of you now!" Bob warned them. The two men voiced childlike, frantic cries of fear. "Oh, it's not the bogeyman," Bob said in a surprised and reassuring tone. "It's your Daddy! Oh, he was worried about you and he came lookin'. Oh, give him a big hug!" The subjects smiled and pantomimed the hugging of their daddies. "Oh, I've got you suckered," Bob suddenly snickered. "It is the bogeyman!" The subjects' emotional state flipped back to terror. Gale then made the bogeyman disappear and restored the subjects to their real age.

Then he said, "Your penises are gone." (A **negative hallucination**.) The audience broke into peels of laughter at the subjects' obvious distress. "They're gone," Gale said, "and they've been replaced with vaginas." (A **positive hallucination.)** His subjects looked very disturbed. The audience thought it was hilarious. For a while, Bob continued this sequence of explicit hallucinations involving the subjects' sex organs. The audience guffawed at his subjects' varying expressions.

"And now you're going to realize everything that has been happening," Bob told the two young men. Their faces showed confused emotions.

Bob now addressed the audience directly, "Hypnosis is your mind power, and once you've learned how to use it, you don't need anyone else to activate it. Let me prove that to you. You picture the best feeling you've ever known. And, the instant you think of it, you snap your fingers as hard as you can. And that feeling will come over you—twenty to thirty times stronger than it ever did before.

"And, by the way, once you've experienced it that strong, it will be forever that strong, or stronger." One by one, isolated finger snappings are heard here and there in the audience.

"Don't take all night," Bob urged them. More finger snappings were heard. "When I count to three, he says, "it will be ten times stronger. One, two, three!" There were isolated bursts of laughter. "And when the audience claps, it'll be fifty times stronger!" There was strong applause and cheers from the audience.

(Gale had spoken to the audience as if they, too, were hypnotized, and had suggested that sensual hallucination. Many in his audience had obviously given trance depth obedience to the seductive commands. Indeed, it is well-known that hypnotically **susceptible** members of the audience of any hypnosis performance do also tend to enter trance. With some techniques, up to 90% of the audience may be hypnotized.)

"And now, on the count of three, you're going to remember all those fantastic feelings. One, two, and three!"

"Was that satisfactory?" Gale asked a sexy looking young woman in the audience? She nodded, looking embarrassed.

By means of that routine, Gale (or any observer) had an opportunity to identify potential somnambulists in the crowd. Gale had now given them, also, some beginning **conditioning**. He had also given them a strong, sensual, **positive reinforcement** for being hypnotized.

Gale now returned his attention to the two, still hypnotized, subjects sitting quietly on chairs on the stage. He put the two men through another series of vivid erotic hallucinations. The audience laughed at the resulting, visible, erections. "And, now, you're going to realize what's happening," Bob said. The subjects' faces displayed embarrassed, sheepish expressions. (They were now trained not to realize what was happening—unless he told them to do so. Gale was quickly and subtly conditioning them for **automatism**.)

"And SLEEP!" he suddenly yelled at them. Their heads dropped, chins on chests, eyes closed, the classic hypnotic posture, all sensuality swept away by the command.

"Suddenly you are beginning to hallucinate," Bob now told them in a low and menacing tone. "As you look out over the audience, all you see is weird creatures. Some of them are hysterically funny." The subjects pointed out toward the audience and giggled. "Others," Bob continued, "are just right down weird." The subjects again showed fear. The audience laughed.

"In the back of the room, you see one that is totally frightening. Scares the hell clear out of you." Bob continued describing a terrifying fantasy with erotic elements. I felt a prickle of cold fear myself at the menace in his tone and the bizarreness of his image. The subjects on stage looked horrified. Then Bob said that the threatening image was now moving steadily toward them.

One subject, with a panicked expression, bolted to his feet. He slowly stumbled backward, staring in terror at the hallucinated threat supposedly stalking him. He retreated to the far side of the stage. There was a pool table there. He glanced backward, obviously planning to crawl up onto the pool table. I wondered if he might get hurt.[1]

Bob adroitly headed off the problem: "You can't get on a pool table," he coolly stated, "there's crabs on 'em."

The young man instantly pulled back from that anticipated escape route. He stood terrified, trapped between the approaching horrific vision before him and the crabs on the pool table behind him. Bob pushed the hallucination to the absolute extreme, that of shocking contact with the visualized horror. Then he shouted, "And, now, you're going to realize what's happening!"

As the subjects recovered their composure to some extent, they managed to laugh with good-natured embarrassment. "On the count of three, I'm going to wake you up," Bob told them, "but you will still be in a hyperstate of **suggestibility** and everything I suggest will instantly happen." (He was training them for **waking hypnosis—**to be deeply hypnotized, absolutely suggestible, but acting normal and awake.)

Next, he suggested a hallucination that everybody in the audience was naked. The room was quiet as the audience watched the subjects staring at them. The subjects pointed out to each other various friends, commented on their imagined physical attributes, guffawed at the sea of nudes before them. (I remembered a friend's report of watching a stage hypnotist give that same suggestion to a group of subjects on stage. Most had reacted as Gale's two subjects had. However, one male subject, the moment the command was given, jumped up, ran off the stage, rushed out of the auditorium, and did not return.)

Bob now announced to his subjects, "Hell, you're naked, too. And the chair keeps playing with your testicles." Their expressions turned to terrible dismay. Their hands rushed to cover their privates. Their bodies wriggled in reaction to the supposed manipulations of the chair. "And now," Bob said, "you realize you've got your clothes on." The subjects responded with foolish grins and relieved expressions.

Just before waking up his subjects and ending the act, Bob Gale told them firmly, several times, that they would remember everything they had experienced. He also instructed that they could not again be hypnotized by anyone—unless they wanted to be. Those were good and ethical suggestions. The two subjects rejoined their friends in the audience.

His act was over. The pool hall lights brightened again. The audience stood up and wandered about—to the bar, to play pool, or out the door. The hypnotist lit a cigarette and left the stage. He walked back to the seat at the far end of the bar—the seat which he had occupied before the show. He ordered a drink.

Standing quietly to one side, mingling with the crowd, I watched him awhile. He sat alone, chain-smoking, drinking one glassful after another of something alcoholic. How ironic I thought: the master of mind control was obviously unable to master his own bad habits.

He still sat alone, staring grimly down at his drink. I worked up enough courage to walk over and stand at his right. There was no bar stool available on his right, but there was standing room there. "I want to interview you," I said. "I'm a writer."

"I don't give interviews," he snapped. "There are already too many books about hypnosis by people who aren't hypnotists, and they're mostly no good."

---

[1] A stage hypnotist suggested to the subject that

...he was in a swimming-pool and that the large basin of the pool itself lay in front of him. He climbed on to a chair and, in the belief that he could now dive head first into the water, fell head over heels onto the floor of the stage. **(Hammerschlag, pp. 86-7)**

"I actually know quite a bit about hypnosis," I said. "I've been interested in it for years. I'm impressed with the ethical way you conduct your act." He gave me a long, doubtful stare. I explained, "You insist that your subjects remember everything they experienced after you are done, and you tell them that they cannot be again hypnotized by anyone unless they want that to happen."

He relaxed a little.

I said, "I know it could be worse. You mentioned in one of your performances that you know a lot of other stage hypnotists. Are they all as ethical as you are? I mean, you know, and I know, that this constantly-promoted line that 'You cannot be made to do anything under hypnosis that you don't want to' is not true. People can be made to forget what they did under hypnosis, even that they were under hypnosis. They can be conditioned to instantly be rehypnotized any time. They can be trained to absolutely obey post-hypnotic suggestions and to never suspect their behavior comes from a source other than their own minds. A person could be turned into somebody's secret slave that way, and he or she would have no conscious knowledge of it. 'You will remember nothing,'" I intoned, imitating the flat-toned, slow-paced voice of a hypnotist.

"I could do that," Bob avowed with sudden grim enthusiasm as though needing to assure me of his professional prowess. "One main block, and then a strong oblique block, and then surround that with a hundred other minor blocks. She'd never remember. I could. But I wouldn't do that. I never have done that."

I silently pondered, for a moment, his choice of a sex for the theoretical victim who would "never remember." Then I asked, "Have you ever known of a case where another hypnotist did use the relationship created by a subject's trust to take advantage of her using this method?" I asked that, and then I held my breath.

"Yes."

I went back to breathing, but I did not say anything. I waited. And waited. And waited. Uncovering the truth was so important to me. I had to get him to volunteer more information. Bob finally broke the awkward silence. He said, "I know a psychiatrist who uses it that way."

"To get sex?"

"Yes," Gale replied.

"To get money?"

"Yes, both. The AMA won't do anything to regulate it. These guys are making too much money."[1] He sounded bitter.

---

[1] See Noel's case history in the Forensic Hypnosis section.

I wondered how much money small-time hypnotists like him, making the circuit of college-town night spots, earned. The audience at the pool hall this night had been thin. There must be temptations. "How about the stage hypnotists you know?" I asked. "Do they ever use the conditioning established on stage with their subjects for unethical purposes afterwards?"

"Yes," he said.

"About what percent of them do that, would you say?" I asked.

"About half."

I said, "I know that if a person's memories of what happened under hypnosis are suppressed by posthypnotic suggestion, that person can get their memories back by being hypnotized by another hypnotist and then being commanded to remember. But that would be difficult. It would take a lot of time."

Bob nodded.

"Would you be willing to do that for somebody?" I asked.

"If a person were in that situation, they should go to somebody with a Ph.D., somebody with training in psychology."

"How would that person help them?"

"He'd have to break"—Bob made a fierce karate-chop motion with his right hand—"through the blocks. Break them down one-by-one."

I left then. It was a hard subject for me to talk about. I thought about our conversation for a long time afterwards. I had a feeling that Bob Gale did not understand that the average clinical psychologist would not believe that the cases of unethical hypnosis, which he had just described, were possible. I also knew that neither academic nor clinical psychologists understand how sealing works, or how to fight through it. If a victim of predatory hypnosis went to a Ph.D., the doctor would probably diagnose paranoia instead of criminal hypnosis. If the predator knew that his subject was trying to get help from a psychologist, he might even covertly suggest an array of paranoia symptoms—to steer the diagnosis more surely that way.

Nevertheless, our brief conversation had thrilled me. It was the first time I had ever talked to a hypnotist who was both knowledgeable and truthful about unethical hypnosis. I had found the courage to ask questions, and he had given me truthful answers. It felt like one of the greatest days of my life.

STAGE HYPNOSIS: "FAKERY"?

> ***Stage hypnotists achieve fourth and fifth* [somnambulist] *level trances in their subjects very quickly, by an authoritative assertiveness that breaks down any resistance on the part of the subjects, who are usually volunteers from the audience, anxious to do whatever the performer wants. The majority of stage hypnotists are highly skilled at what they do....***
>
> **—Hughes, *Hypnosis*, p. 26**

Hughes, writing above in a modern text for student hypnotists, stated the truth. Stage hypnotists normally do hypnotize their subjects. It is also true that, in some cases, stage hypnosis acts have involved elements of fakery. I have interviewed stage professionals who know, for a fact, cases in which certain stage hypnotists ensured their success by hiring actors and using other tricks to elicit performances that the audience assumed were real hypnosis.

One confusing factor is the long history of deceit in the way stage hypnotists represent their "acts." T. X. Barber, former stage hypnotist, Ph.D. "researcher," and expert mind manipulator, made a career of saying, among other things, that stage hypnosis is all fakery. He said that hypnotic phenomena result simply from the subjects' eagerness to display, and perform, and their pretending to be hypnotized by the stage hypnotist. Most basic psychology textbooks now repeat the Barberism that stage hypnotists do not really hypnotize their subjects.

The "great" Kreskin announces, "There is no such thing as hypnosis," each time he begins his show. Then people flock to him, because there is "no such thing as hypnosis," and there is "no such thing as real stage hypnosis," and there is no such thing as criminal hypnosis, so they feel absolutely safe. A young hypnotist asked McGill (who, like Barber, started out as a stage hypnotist, then got a Ph.D.) in his *Journal of Hypnotism* column why Kreskin always starts that way. McGill replied:

> *...it may remove some tendency of fear...thus making it possible to obtain more willing subjects on stage as volunteers. There is also the practical aspect involved in that some states and some cities have ordinances that do not allow public hypnotic performances. Denouncing hypnotism and terming it suggestion opens up territories where hypnotic shows are not allowed. A bit tricky but clever in its way.* **(McGill, *J. of H.*, Mar. 1990, p. 30)**

The lie reassures the audience and subjects, increasing suggestibility and protecting the performer from legal liability.

Nelson's catalog served the "mentalist" category of stage performers for years out of Columbus, Ohio. It offered a book titled *Stage Hypnotism: A Complete Course in Pseudo and Real Stage Hypnotism, Covering Every Phase of Hypnotic Performance*. The advertising declared that stage hypnotism is "a combination of Suggestion and 90% trickery." That disclaimer protects the industry from legal attack. The stage acts which the book details are real, however. Here are a few of the "tests" which that course on stage hypnotism taught:

> *The Rigid or Great Rock Breaking Test* [bridge phenomenon with rock broken on abdomen]*; Scientific Bloodless Operation, placing four, five or six steel needles through various parts of the body* [hypnotic anesthesia]*...24 to 48 hour window sleep* [prolonged hypnotic coma done on display]*..."*

Use of words like "trickery" and "fakery" reassure the tourists and local yokels. They protect the stage hypnotists from liability. Trickery and fakery certainly are involved, but not because hypnosis is not real. They are involved because the subject does not understand the physiology and technology of the induction process and the risks of accepting somnambulic conditioning. He, thus, may be led, by deceit, into a condition of greater and greater vulnerability.

A hypnotist, making the high school circuit, used the technique of calling volunteers onto stage and whispering to each one, "I didn't realize that I would be working with young people. It's against the law to hypnotize anybody under the age of 21. Will you just **close your eyes** and **pretend to be hypnotized**?" Each agreed. The students did not realize that the hypnotist had lied. There was no law prohibiting the hypnosis of minors. The student subjects also did not realize that sympathizing with the hypnotist, eye closure, and pretending to be hypnotized are three heavily **inductive** elements, all of which would set them up for a quick shift to a genuine trance state. They were being conned by trickery. They also were being hypnotized.

Nelson's catalog offered a special, detailed presentation (booklet) on using the **bridge phenomenon** as a stage act. The ad text urges use of the bridge on stage because "It will brand you as a great hypnotist. Using a subject weighing less than 100 lbs., performer places subject under hypnotic control (?)." The question mark is the publisher's legal disclaimer to avoid liability. The scenario assumed that the hypnotist traveled with a highly-susceptible and heavily-conditioned assistant who was trained to enter a catatonic-level trance on cue. The hypnotist

> *...then causes the subject's muscles to become rigid, so that the body is as strong and unyielding as steel* [not truly possible, and some body parts, such as breasts, have inadequate muscle tissue to become rigid and protect them]. *The hypnotised subject is then placed across two chairs, the ankles resting on one, and the shoulders on the other chair, nothing else supporting the body. And while in this state, three full grown men stand upon the body which is suspended across the chairs.* [That kind of abuse damaged Spurgeon Young's pancreas and liver and caused his death.] *OR a large rock may be placed on the stomach, and broken by the blow of a heavy sledge-hammer!* [That is how Flint's wife died.] *OR, place a 100-pound anvil on the subject's unsupported stomach, and allow two powerful men to play the "Anvil Chorus" (accompanied by the orchestra), swinging twin sledge-hammers on the anvil with all their might. This spectacle, the resultant sound effects and music will lift your audience right out of their seats!"*

Nelson's catalog offered the booklet on bridge phenomenon —"complete stage illusion—running time eight to twelve minutes, requires no apparatus"—for $5.00.[1] In more recent times, stage hypnotists have revised their acts, leaving out tests of hypnotic anesthesia in which they sewed their subjects' lips together (or cheeks to each other), and their use of the bridge phenomenon.

---

[1] Other books on stage hypnosis are *Stage Hypnotism* by S. W. Reilly, *Quick Hypnotic Tricks* by Stewart James, and two by Ormond McGill—*Encyclopedia of Stage Hypnotism* and *The Art of Stage Hypnotism.*

First Inductions

Readiness: the Pre-induction Stage

☑

Disguised Inductions

☑

Fast and Forced Inductions

☑

Self-hypnosis

☑

Susceptibility

Readiness: the Pre-induction Stage

...there is an initial contract between the subject and the hypnotist according to which the subject agrees to conform to the conditions and expectations appropriate to hypnosis...

- E. R. Hilgard, *Divided Consciousness*, p. 224

The first few inductions involve a series of three stages: pre-induction, light trance, and deep trance. After receiving training, the trained subject may go directly from induction cue to deep trance.

Readiness is having an attitude of interest, willingness, and fearlessness about an upcoming induction attempt. It is the **first stage of induction.** James Christenson was a military psychologist who interned under M.H. Erickson, then worked with the Army Air Force, Army Service Forces, and Veterans Administration, researching hypnosis induction and applications. He viewed induction as a three-step process.

1) “Achieving a state of **readiness** to be a hypnotic subject”

2) "...development of the...**light hypnosis**, with varying degrees of actual hypnosis."

3) "...a full **somnambulistic** reaction or deep hypnotic trance." **(Christenson in LeCron, p. 33)**

The three stages defined by Christenson only happen in the first (or in the first few) inductions. With experience, training, or a specific posthypnotic suggestion for **instant induction** next time, induction becomes an **unconscious conditioned reflex triggered by a cue**. Presuggestions are no longer needed or relevant. The cue becomes enough.

Christenson researched by hanging out in the soldiers' lounge and hypnotizing volunteers. The subjects did not know they were participating in an experiment. Christenson covertly recorded their behavior. Half of the onlookers volunteered to be hypnotized. More women volunteered than men. The hypnotist theorized that those persons who volunteered had positive pre-induction suggestions in their personal history, or had acquired those positive expectations of hypnosis from the Christenson's presuggestions and watching the example of other volunteers.

Pre-induction Suggestions

The first stage of induction induces a potential subject to give it a try, to expose himself willingly to whatever the inductive method is, to go into it with an attitude of cooperation. The key to that lies in persuasive and reassuring **pre-induction suggestions**. Pre-induction suggestions are all the ideas and expectations a subject brings to the event, plus those acquired once there.

Hypnotizable people have considerable (though varying) degrees of **suggestibility**, even in the waking state, so the pre-induction suggestions are truly "suggestions." Pre-induction suggestions are presented, in casual conversation, in a **pre-induction talk**.

Pre-induction suggestions are frequently half-truths, or worse. A hypnotist routinely tells the prospective subject before the first induction that

> *...under the influence of hypnosis, no one says or does anything that he would not do, or say under the most normal conditions of consciousness. He must be assured that he will have complete control of himself at all times, and that he will be able to wake up from the hypnosis at any time that he elects to do so.* **(Powers, *Advanced Techniques of Hypnosis,* p. 24)**

Powers then admits that the subject is being given "false information." But, he argues:

> *If the patient is not put wholly at ease, it becomes impossible to hypnotize him. We, therefore, misinform him for his own benefit...We, like physicians, do what we feel is necessary for the well-being of those who have seen fit to turn to us in their need.* **(Ibid.)**

Most people believe that a professional would not tell them an out-and-out lie. Hypnotists, however, do lie.

> *We even lie to patients, and we believe that is OK so long as it is done for the purpose of helping them.* **(Citrenbaum, *Modern Clinical Hypnosis for Habit Control,* p. 14)**

Most people assume that the induction does not begin until they are told it is beginning. They believe all the pre-induction suggestions. Powers urged hypnotists to "saturate" the subject in the first induction with the expectation of becoming hypnotized and develop his "fullest acceptance" of that coming state. That process begins in the pre-induction talk.

The pre-induction talk typically **presents myths about hypnosis, while claiming to dispel myths about hypnosis!** The hypnotist reassures, placates, and appeals to "reason." He also works to build the subject's confidence and create a mood of hopeful expectancy. He does this because a subject who trusts the hypnotist and who believes he will be hypnotized is more likely to be hypnotized and will go into a deeper trance.

For example, after Dr. Diamond felt that he had established a friendly relationship with Sirhan (the man who shot Robert F. Kennedy), he decided to try hypnosis on him. The psychiatrist began his hypnosis with deceptive, disarming pre-induction suggestions.

> *"Sirhan, you know what hypnosis is?"*
>
> *"Isn't it domination of the weaker will by the stronger?"*
>
> *"No," said Diamond, it isn't that at all. It's simply a way of demonstrating one's own ability to concentrate, and the hypnotist is not dominating over the will of the other. No one can be hypnotized against his own will, and the hypnotist really just gives suggestions and encouragement to a person so that he can use his own willpower to strengthen his own abilities. There's a lot of phony baloney about hypnosis."* ***(Kaiser, p. 295)***

After stating the pre-induction myths, a hypnotist usually offers to answer questions. If the hypnotist does not know the answer to a question, Powers says to just make up a "convincing explanation, so that no loss of prestige will affect the successful conclusion of hypnosis." **(*Powers, Advanced Techniques of Hypnosis*)** The hypnotist may also give pre-suggestions on how to enter trance. For a **thought-centering** (Type 1) induction, the hypnotist might say, "The main thing is for you to direct all your thoughts so they are concentrated on one idea." Sensory deprivation (dim light, quiet room, eyes closed), plus thought centering, is a common induction technique.

Induction effort can be directed at one person, or at a group. People are easier to hypnotize in a group than when they are alone because the group's presence is a pre-induction suggestion implying safety and conformity. Hypnotizing a group of persons also tends to be quickly accomplished because of the contagious effect that some people entering deep trance can have on others. New subjects learn what trance behavior is expected of them by observing experienced ones. In a group, potential subjects also feel less self-conscious and less threatened (whether that safety is true or illusory). The difference between an individual or a group induction is "nothing more than a louder voice!" **(Marcuse, *Hypnosis*, p. 55)**

Disguised Inductions

...in some cases...good somnambulists may easily be rendered susceptible to suggestions...by chance—in theatre, church, train, car or at a meal.

- Cannon, "*Hypnosis in Criminology*," p. 19

There is a very thin line between false pre-induction suggestions and **disguised inductions**. An induction is disguised if the subject has not been clearly informed ahead of time of the hypnotist's intentions. A disguised induction creates exactly the same physiological state of trance as if it began with a non-disguised induction. Suggestions and posthypnotic suggestions are equally effective. Disguised inductions—inducing hypnosis without preliminary conscious consent—are common. They are controversial and often denied, but the writings of hypnotists contain many mentions of disguised first-time inductions.

A disguised induction is an involuntary induction. It bypasses the subject's conscious mind and directly manipulates his unconscious. Without the subject's conscious knowing, the hypnotist tries to stimulate **physiological** induction reflexes in his unconscious that will inhibit the analytical, critical, and willing/rejecting functions of his conscious. Some forensic hypnotists say that disguised induction is not really against a person's will because the subject's **unconscious** cooperated. Their premise is that the unconscious mind can give a valid **permission** for the entire mind to be hypnotized. Disguised induction attempts to seduce the subject's unconscious into this "freely willed" cooperation.

Most people do not understand that a disguised induction may need to happen only one time (or a few) to establish a long-lasting conditioning in a genetic (or trained) somnambulist. Zebediah, Mrs. E, Palle, and Candy were all first hypnotized using a disguised method. Dr. Alexander Cannon, an English medical hypnotist, may have been thinking of the disguised first induction of Mrs. E when he wrote the words quoted above.

Avoiding the H Word

A disguised hypnotic induction avoids the word **hypnosis**. The operator insists that what is about to happen is not hypnosis. It is, supposedly, something else entirely. (That is a lie, of course.) For example, a mail-order hypnosis course suggests achieving a disguised induction by using the words **relaxation** and **deeply relaxed** in a conversational induction instead of using the words **sleep** and **hypnosis**. For the first induction of a dental patient...

> *If it can be avoided, the patient should not be told that hypnosis is to be employed. He should be informed that he is to be relaxed; that he will feel drowsy and comfortable...* **(Burgess, *"Hypnosis in Dentistry,"* p. 332)**

That first, disguised induction "conditions him for life." **(Ibid., p. 325)** A dentist, who taught hypnosis seminars to professionals with M. H. Erickson, saw advantages in disguised hypnotic induction "due to the existing prejudices in the minds of the public..." **(Aaron Moss, *"Hypnodontics,"* p. 314)** Here is Moss's disguised method:

> *...nothing is told the patient which would make him aware that he is about to be put in a hypnotic state. He is simply told that he is to relax; that he*

> *should make himself comfortable and let his arms and legs become loose and heavy...step by step, he is gradually brought into a trance state. The patient is then unaware that he has been hypnotized.* **(Ibid.)**

The following news clipping reports a case in which asthma and epilepsy patients were subjected to disguised inductions:

> *Dr. Harold Rosen, of the Phipps Psychiatric Clinic at the Baltimore hospital, said patients were hypnotized without their knowledge so their symptoms could be better studied. During this state, he said, their symptoms were brought on or intensified so that real or apparent attacks of asthma or epilepsy were reproduced during a consultation.* **(quoted in Powers, *Advanced Techniques of Hypnosis*, p. 123)**

"Just Relax"—In **progressive relaxation**, the hypnotist names various parts of your body and suggests that each, named, part of you is relaxing. This is a common induction in programs for smokers and overeaters, in sports training, and for headaches. Progressive relaxation may just relax you. If you are susceptible, however, or if it is done repeatedly, it can put you in a trance of some depth. It may be combined with instructions to visualize one, or more, specified images. Visualization is very inductive.

> *...much of what passes for the different forms of behavior therapy depends very heavily on the use of hypnosis (relaxation).* **(Edmonston, *Induction of Hypnosis*, p. 116)**

Frederick J. Evans studied disguised hypnotic inductions and hypnotic amnesia. His research hypothesis was: "Is it possible...to induce deep hypnosis without S's [subject's] awareness or knowledge that the experimental procedure involves hypnosis?" **("*An Experimental Indirect Technique for the Induction of Hypnosis Without Awareness*," p. 73)** Evans used a "relaxation" technique to induct. Over a period of five years, he tested nearly three-hundred people.

His procedure was to tell his subjects that he was studying the "effects of relaxation on behavior." He instructed them to lie on a couch, watch a fixed point, and relax completely. Then, he gave a series of further "relaxation" instructions which had to do with controlling breathing patterns. He also suggested visualizations—such as to see a pendulum that swings in matched rhythm with the controlled breathing. Then he counted slowly, from 1 to 21, to deepen the trance.

After thirty minutes of that **patter,** Evans gave his subjects traditional tests for depth of hypnosis. He gave suggestions for posthypnotic compulsions, inhibitions, depth amnesias, and recall interference. He suggested catalepsies: rigid arms and other motor phenomena. He suggested simple hallucinations, anesthesias, and age regression. His results were very definite:

> - *His "relaxed" subjects showed precisely the same spectrum of trance depth behavior that would be predicted had they been given a hypnosis susceptibility test.*
>
> - *"At least half of the Ss, even under some pressure, did not seem to recognize that an attempt had been made to induce hypnosis"* **(Evans, p. 79)**

Evans thus proved that "relaxation," or **indirect induction**, as he called it, is a hypnosis induction, whether the word "hypnosis" was used or not—and whether, or not, the resulting trance is used to elicit traditional hypnotic behavior. His results demonstrated that half, or more, of the persons who are hypnotized by this disguised method will not know that they are hypnotized. And they will resist knowing the truth!

> *...the finding—that subjects may not be aware that hypnosis has occurred—raises some very interesting ethical and/or legal issues...* **(Edmonston, *Hypnosis and Relaxation*, p. 67)**

Indeed.

Disguised Induction by Imagery—Dr. Milton Kline developed a disguised induction based on **imagery**. It started with visualizing, in sequence, a house, a tree, a person, and an animal. The subjects practiced with their eyes open until they could see those images. Kline would then suggest **eye closure (**which further lowered

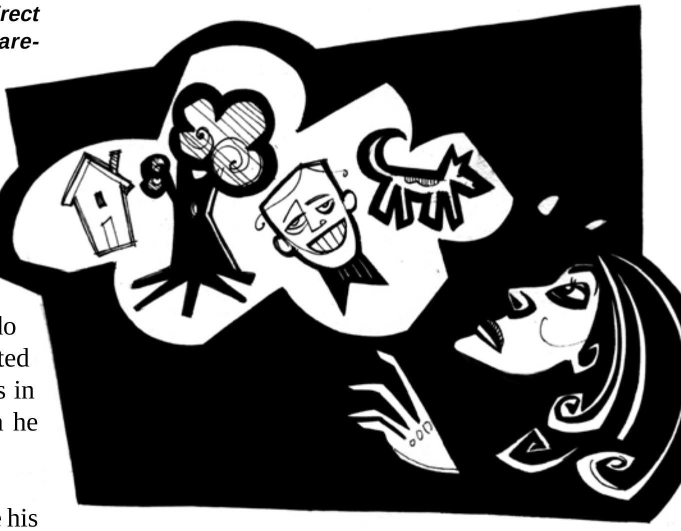

consciousness). He would say something like, "Visualize yourself sitting there exactly as you are now, except that the image of yourself has its eyes open." He would then suggest that the subject imagine his image doing an eye-fixation exercise, staring without blinking at some target object. He ended this induction routine by saying, "Now you are feeling just like the image, going deeper and deeper asleep."

I have recently seen the euphemism, **imagery procedures,** used to describe this method of disguised induction.

Conversational Induction—The Ericksonian organization includes programs on disguised inductions in its conference programming, tapes, and videos. M. H. Erickson developed the conversational disguised induction, and it is an Ericksonian specialty. The method is embedded in seemingly casual talk[1] and seemingly "incidental" body contacts.

Chaperone Induction—Erickson also did a disguised induction by persuading his intended subject to "chaperone" her roommate's "therapy." (The roommate had previously been persuaded to play this pretend role in the doctor's plan.) It took Erickson an hour and a half of hypnotic patter—addressed supposedly to the roommate, but really to the "chaperone," before he succeeded in easing the targeted woman into a deep trance. When Erickson observed that she was, finally, in deep trance

> *...the patient was told gently that she was in a hypnotic trance. She was reassured that the hypnotist would do nothing that she was unwilling to have him do, and that therefore there was no need for a chaperone. She was told that she could disrupt the trance if the hypnotist should offend her. Then she was told to continue to sleep deeply..., listening to and obeying only every legitimate command given her by the hypnotist. Thus she was given the reassuring but illusory feeling that she had a free choice.* **(Erickson and Kubie, *"The Successful Treatment of a Case of Acute Hysterical Depression by a Return under Hypnosis to a Critical Phase of Childhood"*)**

When Erickson stated the subject's posthypnotic cue for reinduction, he added

> *...that if she had any resistances towards such a trance she would make the hypnotist aware of it after the trance had developed, whereupon she could then decide whether or not to continue in the trance. The purpose of these suggestions was merely to make certain that the patient would again allow herself to be hypnotized with full confidence that she could if she chose disrupt the trance at any time. This illusion of self-determination made it certain that the hypnotist would be able to swing the patient into a trance. Once in that condition, he was confident that he could keep her there until his therapeutic aims had been achieved.* **(Ibid.)**

The "chaperone" woke up with no memory of anything that had happened during the time she was in the trance. She had no conscious knowledge that she had been in a trance.

Ainslee Meares, an Australian psychiatrist, also did disguised inductions. Meares declared that the essence of hypnosis involved the subject's unconscious abandonment of ego control. Like Erickson, Meares would "turn the patient's defenses against him and use them in the hypnotic induction." **(Meares, 1958, pp. 24-28)**

Sleep Induction—A conditioned hypnotic subject will respond to the hypnotist's induction cue as well from a state of sleep as when wide awake. **(Marcuse, *Hypnosis*, p. 58)** First time hypnotic induction of a sleeping person by spoken suggestion also is possible. It is another recognized method of covert hypnotic induction. One hypnotist reported the case of a child

> *...who refused to go into hypnosis with me, who refused even to try to consider it and had refused over a period of many hours. I caught her when she was asleep in the hospital bed and was able to give her some suggestions which she did accept.* **(Wolfe in Estabrooks, *Hypnosis: Current Problems*, p. 262)**

William James stated that "...persons in ordinary sleep may be transferred into the hypnotic condition by verbal intimation or contact, performed so gently as not to wake them up." **(*The Principles of Psychology*, p. 594)** T.X. Barber reported an experiment in which he compared outcomes of giving suggestions to subjects under hypnosis and under light sleep. Both groups responded the same. **(Barber, 1956)** Barber claimed to have proved that hypnosis does not exist.

---

1. M. H. Erickson reported numerous conversational inductions tailored precisely to the individual psychological profile of the targeted subject's unconscious.

What he really demonstrated, however, was that light sleep is a suggestible natural trance state which can be utilized for the purpose of disguised induction.

Dynamic Learning Method's mail-order hypnosis course gives instructions for hypnotizing a sleeping person.

> *...simply begin hypnotizing the person, just as though the person were awake...*[it] *may require considerable patience and persistence...* **(p. TS20-1)**

The course tells the hypnotist to say that, in the future, whenever that person is sleeping, he will be able to hear and understand the hypnotist's voice, shifting directly from natural sleep to hypnotic sleep at that sound, instead of waking. The recommended patter continues, "You will hear and understand the hypnotic suggestions I give you, and you will obey them." **(p. TS20-1)**

Sometimes, however, professional efforts to accomplish first-time induction of a sleeping person do not work. The reason may be the varying types of brain waves associated with the spectrum of sleep depths. Success probably depends on giving suggestions during hypnoid levels of relaxation (alpha/theta) instead of during the non-hypnoid delta periods. The subject's unconscious resistance also may be a factor...

Fast, and Forced, Inductions

...a patient might realize what is transpiring and become resentful, with a consequent bad relationship ensuing. The writer has had this happen, with the patient refusing to return for further treatment. There is also a medicolegal aspect to the use of the disguised induction of hypnosis and a question of liability.
- Aaron Moss, *"Hypnodontics,"* p. 314

The Actively Resisting Subject

There are incidents involving actively resisting subjects scattered throughout this book. Some subjects managed to reject an unwelcome suggestion, or an unwanted trance induction. Some even escaped completely from a distressing hypnotic relationship. A British newspaper reported a case of this type. The original induction had been disguised. The next time the operator tried to induct, his subject resisted. The journalist who described that incident mistakenly assumed it was the first case of its sort:

> *The first medical proof that a woman can be hypnotized against her will—as Svengali hypnotized Trilby—is put on record today by Dr. Ian Oswald, an Oxford University psychiatrist...She did not realize she was being hypnotized and went into a deep trance...*

While she was in trance, Dr. Oswald stated a **post-hypnotic reinduction cue.** If, at any future time, she saw him clap his hands together, she would immediately return to that same state of consciousness:

> *When she recovered consciousness the typist realized she had been hypnotized. She was so distressed to find she could not remember what had happened that she refused any further treatment. She told Dr. Oswald she was frightened of him... He clapped his hands. Almost immediately she became glassy-eyed and said her mind was "going queer"...After two more hand-claps she went into a trance. While hypnotized she agreed to continue the treatment, which was eventually successful.*
>
> *"This case supports the view that if such a person can once be hypnotized, then subsequent rehypnosis can be achieved despite strongly motivated refusal by the subject," Dr. Oswald writes. "This would probably be true with an unscrupulous hypnotist."* **(Pincher, *Daily Express*, 1959)**

Conditioned Induction

The more **conditioning (training)** that a subject has, the **faster** that subject enters trance. In fact, one way to estimate a person's extent of past hypnotic conditioning is by his speed of response to induction.[1] More speed indicates more past hypnotic training. A first induction, on the other hand, may take a long time. Some operators may spend several hours (or more) on a first induction.

---

1. It is a curious fact that repeated induction in animals decreases their hypnotic susceptibility, but in humans increases it.

A person's resistance to induction is worn down gradually. Induction failure, after one attempt, does not necessarily mean that subject cannot be hypnotized. Repeated exposures to induction increase susceptibility, even if no trance has yet taken place. Persons who did not, at first, succumb tend to do so, sooner or later, if exposures to induction efforts continue.

Moll achieved somnambulism in several clients after as many as forty induction attempts. Marcuse cited a case in which it took a total of three-hundred hours of induction effort for him to get the subject hypnotized. Bramwell did experiments in which subjects, after over a hundred failed induction attempts, turned out to be deeply hypnotizable. A Berlin hypnotist named Vogt finally induced deep hypnosis in one subject after about seven-hundred previous, failed, attempts.

The amount of time between induction efforts is unimportant. Any stage of hypnosis which has already been induced easily can be reinstated. Apparent "failure" can even help a hypnotist, for, if the targeted subject becomes confident that he is immune, he may lower his resistance. Once deep trance is achieved, induction time for subsequent inductions becomes short because the subject has learned where to go mentally, and how to go there.

> *The subject who has been hypnotized many times inevitably develops certain automatic or conditioned reflexes, by which a shortcut is established to the hypnotic state. In such an individual the process of induction has lost the very features which are its essence in an untrained subject.* **(Kubie and Margolin, "*The Process of Hypnotism and the Nature of the Hypnotic State*")**

After the first induction is accomplished, however long that takes, and the **posthypnotic cue for reinduction** is implanted, the "reinduction of hypnosis is a matter of only a few seconds or a few minutes." **(Moss, p. 316)** Marcuse said induction cued by posthypnotic suggestion can reduce induction time "to a matter of seconds" **(p. 63).**

M.H. Erickson saw **reinduction by a posthypnotic cue** as the key to training and control: "...the posthypnotic performance provides an opportunity to secure a trance state quickly and unexpectedly. **("Nature of Post-Hypnotic Behavior")** In a fully-trained subject, the lengthy initial induction process has been replaced by an unconscious reflex that gives instant obedience to a perceived posthypnotic induction cue.

L. R. Wolberg suggested the posthypnotic induction cue for rehypnosis of his patients with the following patter:

> *You are deeply asleep at the present time...From now on it will not be necessary to go through the process of hypnotizing you...When I give you a certain signal like...*[tapping the desk, hand on the shoulder, or any other clearly defined stimulation which is not likely to occur in ordinary social intercourse]*...you will very easily and immediately enter into a state of sleep as deep as the one you are in now.* **(Wolberg, 1948, p. 159)**

Once the subject's unconscious has learned to what depth it must shift and the reinduction cue which triggers that shift, all the hypnotist has to do is produce the designated cue. The subject is **trained**. Once a trained hypnotic subject, always a trained hypnotic subject.

> *Even though an hour or two, or many hours, might have been required to make the subject completely somnambulistic in the first place, afterwards all this is changed, especially if...he is told when in the hypnotic state that on succeeding occasions he will go immediately into a deep hypnotic state in a few seconds whenever he is to be rehypnotized. All this is a familiar matter in the field of practical hypnosis. Unless something is done to prevent it, the once-deeply-hypnotized subject may be quickly rehypnotized by anyone for whom he will serve as a subject. There is consequently the danger among students that a good subject, seldom realizing how good a subject he really is, may allow fellow-students who know little about the seriousness of hypnosis to work on him.* **(Wells, *"Experiments in the Hypnotic Production of Crime,"* p. 69)**

In the trained subject, reinduction is nearly instant. It requires as little as one second for the subject's conditioned reflex to respond to perception of the posthypnotic induction cue.

> *Lengthy, detailed, and complicated induction methods are generally used when a subject is first learning to be hypnotized. Such complex inductions not only become unnecessary as experience with the hypnotic state grows, but are cumbersome.* **(Kelly and Kelly, *Hypnosis*, p. 24)**

Specific posthypnotic suggestions to enter hypnosis more rapidly the next time and to go deeper also affect the rate of descent and depth. Any suggested cue is also long-term, unless removed by a counter-suggestion—done by an outsider or managed by the subject's internal resistance. There are many accounts of a hypnotist seeing somebody to whom he gave a posthypnotic induction cue one, ten, or twenty years ago, testing, and discovering the cue still works.

Forced Reinduction

During their pre-induction talks, hypnotists often declare that nobody can be hypnotized against his will. Is that true? Partly. If a resistant subject, facing an induction attempt which is not disguised and only involves Type 1 induction methods, chooses (and is permitted) to walk away from the induction effort, the statement is true.

Once a subject has been inducted, trained, and assigned a posthypnotic induction cue, however, it is an entirely different matter. (Or if the induction is by chemical or electronic means.)

> *Though the first attempt to hypnotize a subject frequently fails, repeated attempts are likely to succeed, and, once a subject has been hypnotized, the length of time needed to send him into trance will rapidly decrease with subsequent repetitions of the experience. When a subject has become accustomed to be hypnotized, he may be put into trance without realizing what is happening.... Though many workers have insisted that the patient's cooperation is essential, the fact is that subjects can be hypnotized against their will.* **(Sargant, *The Mind Possessed*, p. 30)**

In "Ability to Resist Artificially Induced Dissociation [hypnosis]" Wells reported testing whether a conditioned subject could resist unwanted induction. Watkins, Brenman, and Young did similar experiments.[1] With one exception, they all obtained the same results: trained subjects could not resist reinduction. (The one successful resister was a Methodist minister.) For most subjects, once the shift to trance has become fast and smooth and trance has become of somnambulist depth, obedience to the induction cue is a conditioned response. It is an **unconscious reflex.** The reflex is instant and, perhaps, also amnesic. An **unconscious conditioned reflex** usually is dominant over a **conscious will** to resist. The subject does not say NO to induction any more, because he does not know consciously to what to say NO, or when to say NO to it.

Length of Time in Trance

How long can a person can stay in trance? The suggestion at the end of a session to "wake up" doesn't necessarily mean that suggestibility is over. It means that the subject has obeyed the operator's suggestion to now act awake. The command to wake up is a posthypnotic suggestion to act awake! You can be in lowered consciousness and not know it. Usually, however, trance wears off completely with a good night's sleep. (That's the well-known "morning after" assessment.)

A lengthy trance can also be suggested under hypnosis. M. H. Erickson said a doctor's secretary

> *...told me she had a personal problem which she was not able to think through and wanted me to put her in a trance and tell her to think through her problem. I was innocent and naive, so I did just that. She stayed in a trance for one whole week, discharging her duties for the doctor. He recognized that she was in a trance.* **(M. H. Erickson in Estabrooks, *Current Problems*, p. 263)**

Cook wrote of trances that lasted for months among certain religious persons in the Orient **(p. 244).** A friend told me about a wealthy woman convert to the Sufi religion (a Muslim denomination which induces very deep trances in its religious services). She developed a state in which she "walked around spaced all the time." Bergen kept Palle in such a constant state of trance that it resembled a psychotic condition. A state of near constant trance is called **vigilambulism**.

> *...[it is] a peculiar state of permanent half-somnambulism of persons who had been repeatedly hypnotized but who had not been submitted to the regular maneuvers that would terminate their magnetic sleep. Such people seem to be fully awake, but are liable to receive suggestions from anyone who will talk to them.* **(Ellenberger, *The Discovery of the Unconscious*, p. 118)**

SELF-HYPNOSIS

"Every day, in every way, I'm getting better and better."
- Emile Coue

"All induction is self-induction," hypnotists often proclaim. They like that slogan because it shifts responsibility for the trance condition and its outcomes from the hypnotist to the subject. In the case of **self-hypnosis**, however, the main impetus for induction really does come from the subject. The operator-controlled state of "hypnosis" is the same physiologically as "self-hypnosis." In self-hypnosis, however, there is no operator actively inducing and managing the subject's trance.

---

[1] Watkins said that, if the hypnotic subject is not giving automatic responses, he is not in the somnambulic condition.

However, the self-induced trance usually starts with a persuasive idea from an outside source, and **instruction**. A tape, video, book, an example, or a live operator teaches the subject how to go deliberately into the alpha/theta brain wave state. Once the student learns "where" to go and how to get there, it is easy for most persons. Any person who can be hypnotized by another person can hypnotize himself. The ability to self-induct may be given instantly by the teaching operator, as a posthypnotic suggestion, or it may be learned more gradually, a conditioning process. In that case, the subject internalizes the training and soon can run the mental routine without an outside prompt.

Self-hypnosis tends to be a self-limited hypnosis. You go down so far, but no farther. You pop back up from that state of deep concentration any time you want or need to—when the baby cries, when there is a knock on the door.

WHEN A PERSON LEARNS A ROUTINE TO LOWER CONCIOUSNESS FROM ANY SOURCE, HE TENDS TO ABSORB OTHER PROGRAMMING FROM THAT SOURCE, AND TO DEVELOP RAPPORT WITH THE TEACHER. IN ANY DEEP TRANCE, HE WILL FEEL RAPPORT (AN ATTITUDE OF EXAGGERATED RESPECT) TOWARD PERSONAS AND/OR IDEAS SUGGESTED TO, OR PRODUCED BY, HIS UNCONSCIOUS.

Bernheim and Coue Start It

Any induction method that can be used by an operator can also be used for self-induction. Self-induced trance has been around as far back as we have records. Bernheim wrote about self-hypnosis and the related practice of **positive self-suggestion,** in 1886, in *Suggestive Therapeutics.* However, it was Emile Coue's 1923 book, ***How to Practice Suggestion and Autosuggestion***, that popularized Bernheim's ideas. It was the first practical manual for self-hypnosis. Coue taught self-induction methods that anybody could use: staring at objects (such as your eyes in the mirror) or talking to yourself, repeating positive statements. Coue taught people to repeat the desired goal to themselves over and over: "Every day, in every way, I'm getting better and better." Ever since Coue, self-hypnosis has been intermittently popular.

Nancy School Therapy Principles— Liebeault and Bernheim lived in Nancy, a city in France. They gave free hypnotic treatments, taught the normality of trance, and fought vigorously and lifelong for the **rights of hypnotic subjects**. A generation later, Coue was running a corner drugstore in Nancy and studying hypnosis. After he opened a free clinic, Coue's teachings were called the "new Nancy school." Coue began the **client-centered** style of **hypnotherapy,** letting the direction and method be set by the client rather than be dictated by the therapist. He also developed the method of self-hypnosis which begins with a hypnotist trainer who establishes induction conditioning, then teaches the subject to take over, using that conditioning for self-help. Other people followed his example and also opened free clinics, called "Coue Institutes."

As did most later purveyors of pop, group, religious, and self-hypnosis, Coue avoided the word "hypnosis." In the sense that the H word means an **operator-controlled** trance, however, Coue was dealing with something different. In self-hypnosis, the cure came, not from a hypnotist, but from the patient's effort to reprogram his own mind by positive thinking. Coue made clear the power of words to influence the unconscious mind, the power of self acting on self,

Nowadays, instruction for self-hypnosis is a huge industry: motivational tapes, videos, and books. Coue would have been astonished at the array of contemplation religions, self-hypnosis manuals, and books on how to think yourself well, but he would have understood the principle on which all are based. They all continue his teachings of positive **autosuggestion**.

For the consumer, however, the best method is to exercise **faith** (**positive thinking**) in a context which gives God the glory.

Biofeedback

Doctors used to believe that people could not control any part of their **autonomic nervous system**. Autonomic functions are unconscious and **reflexive** in nature. State of consciousness, background thinking, habitual choices, salivary output, digestion, heart rate, and respiration rate are autonomic functions. Then doctors learned that a person in trance can directly control his physiological functions. **Biofeedback training** puts an unconscious function under conscious control in order to improve the body's physiological state.

Biofeedback trains persons with health problems, by means of trance, to monitor and improve their **involuntary functions**, their physiological state. They can learn to lower their blood pressure, slow their heart rate, and contract their pupils. Using biofeedback techniques, people have also learned to control the rate of blood flow to their head or hands (that can stop or prevent migraine headache), to control or stop bleeding, and to adjust numerous other personal physiological states.

The trance skills are first taught by a trainer, than utilized independently by the subject. The training process requires both trance-level focused mind and information about the subject's internal physiology. That information is the "biofeedback." **Feedback** makes it possible for the subject's focused mind to learn to recognize, and therefore control, its "bio" states.

> *...body functions become voluntary in direct proportion to the amount of information feedback the subject gets from each past response of his body before his next response occurs; it is as if will and knowledge were reducible to the same thing.* **(London, *Behavior Control*, p. 96)**

Biofeedback began with M. I. Lisina, a Russian biofeedback researcher. She was trying to teach subjects to constrict or dilate blood vessels in response to electric shocks. Because they were being shocked, the subjects were highly motivated to learn. Unfortunately, she did not allow them to see what their bodies were doing in response to their efforts to avoid the shocks, so they could not learn anything.

Then she took them through the conditioning routine (with the shocks) again. This time, she let them see the continual machine printouts of their vascular ups and downs, and she told them what she wanted them to learn to do. The subjects all quickly learned to control their blood vessel diameters!

What Lisina learned in that experiment is now the basis of all biofeedback training. The subject is told what the goal is, and he is always provided with some way to observe his body's responses. Biofeedback training combines trance concentration with digital display of internal body function. Biofeedbackers learn to communicate to their bodies what they want by entering trance and **visualizing** the wanted activity. People fighting cancer by visualization in trance do the same thing. Test after test has shown that what you strongly visualize in a deep trance state will happen in your body.

Modern biofeedback training is aided by electrical monitors that can detect, amplify, and display the behavior of any internal body functions. One monitoring device measures temperature and heart rate. Another measures blood pressure. Thus, a person can learn to have a slower, or more regular, heart beat and a lower blood pressure. Some instruments monitor sweat gland activity (lie detectors also measure that), and muscle tension. Muscle tension monitors can help patients overcome the underlying cause of spastic colon disorders, tension headaches, etc. There is even a tiny, swallowable monitor for stomach acid which enables patients to learn to reduce its flow and prevent ulcers. Another type of monitor gives a readout of brain wave pattern so clients can learn to go in and out of alpha or theta at will.

Kamiya taught hypnotic subjects to control their **alpha** (hypnoidal brainwave) production by means of biofeedback. Kamiya's trainees learned either to increase, or suppress, their alpha brain waves. To teach control of **state of consciousness**, his subjects were hooked up to an EEG. Whenever the brain wave type appeared that the experimenter wanted, a tone sounded. Soon, the student learned to enter that condition at will. The more Kamiya's subjects practiced, the better they became at shifting from beta into alpha, or vice versa.

Even animals can be taught to control autonomic functions. Dr. Neal E. Miller **(Rockefeller University)** taught lab animals using rewards and punishments. His rat learned to make one ear blush and the other blanch.

The highest degree of biological self-management known has been achieved by monks from Tibet, India, and Sri Lanka who develop autonomicself-control in rigorous deep trance practice, and call it religion. Tibetan monks, since about 150 BC, have trained themselves to achieve profound trance and to apply trance abilities to various purposes. (Those abilities did not protect their country from conquest, but have become a great market item for refugees.)

A French woman who lived among Tibetan monks in the 1930s described a "final exam" for trainees. The goal was to generate extraordinary internal heat, a feat of conscious control of an autonomic body function:

> *The neophytes sit on the ground, cross-legged and naked. Sheets are dipped in the icy water, each man wraps himself in one of them and must dry it on his body. As soon as the sheet has become dry, it is again dipped in the water and placed on the novice's body to be dried as before....until daybreak. Then he who has dried the largest number of sheets is acknowledged the winner of the competition.*

> *Besides drying wet sheets on one's body, there exist various other tests to ascertain the degree of heat which the neophyte is able to radiate. One of these tests consists in sitting in the snow. The quantity of snow melted under the man and the distance at which it melts around him are taken as measures of his ability.* **(Alexandra David-Neely, *Magic and Mystery of Tibet*, Chapter VI)**

A swami from India once visited the Menninger clinic and demonstrated that he could create any type EEG wave which they requested—once he figured out what "theta," "alpha," "beta," and "delta" meant in his native language. He could control the two arteries to the hand, making "one half of his right palm 10 degrees warmer than the other half." He could change his heart beat:

> *First he made his heart slow down from seventy-five to fifty beats per minute. Then, suddenly, he produced an atrial flutter, during which his heart beat so rapidly that it could no longer pump blood...He maintained this state for seventeen seconds, apparently unharmed, and immediately afterward went off to lecture. "My heart is my toy," he said.* **(Pines, *The Brain Changers*, p. 76)**

Susceptibility

Hypnosis...can be used for both good and evil...All people are prone to being molded by outside influence to some extent. The small group of highly hypnotizable people, when put in the hands of unscrupulous individuals, are even more vulnerable.

- Spiegel, *Introduction, Bain, The Control of Candy Jones*, pp. x-xi

At a dinner party, years ago, a man told me that he used to belong to a hypnosis club in Canada. All the men in that club hypnotized their wives. I asked, "Did your wife ever hypnotize you?" "Oh no," he said, "I think there are just some kinds of persons who can be hypnotized, and some who can't."

Was he right? Are there "just some kinds of persons who can be hypnotized and some who can't"? Well, yes and no.

Inductability depends on hereditary **susceptibility**, plus **training**. Most people have some inherited ability to lower consciousness. **Hypnotic susceptibility** means the innate capacity to experience hypnosis quickly, easily, and deeply. **Hypnotic ability** is a modern euphemism which means exactly the same thing. As a result of genetic and personality differences, people differ in susceptibility. In most people, training will create additional, learned ability.

Screening for Susceptibility

When stage hypnotists send some volunteers back to their seats, they are culling out less susceptible persons. Some of their rejects also could have been deeply hypnotized—but not in five minutes. A researcher who specialized in techniques applicable to criminal hypnosis wrote:

> *...I have ceased to be much interested in trying to*

induce slight hypnotic phenomena in large numbers of subjects, but I have become interested almost exclusively in the upper 20 percent, and especially in the upper 10 or even 5 percent of subjects, in whom the most extreme phenomena can be brought about, including criminal acts contrary to the moral natures of non-criminal subjects. **(Wells, *"Experiments in Waking Hypnosis for Instructional Purposes,"* note to reprinted edition)**

Projective tests such as visualizations, the Rorschach, and the TAT can be used to predict susceptibility. Vivid imagery and strong imagination predict hypnotizability. The most accurate susceptibility tests in the public sector, however, measure response to a standardized induction routine. This type of test began as a depth measure, then became used as a predictor of hypnotizability. A person given a **hypnosis susceptibility test** is being simultaneously tested and hypnotized. The subject's score is based on the number of suggestions obeyed, with the most points given for the most difficult suggestions (amnesia and negative hallucination).[1]

An Anthropological View of Trance

Erica Bourguignon reviewed the 488 cultural societies (mostly pre-industrial and tribal) referenced in the *Ethnographic Atlas.* She looked for evidence of **altered states of consciousness**:

> *... [of] 488 societies, in all parts of the world...437, or 90%, are reported to have one or more institutionalized, culturally patterned forms of altered states of consciousness...* **(Bourguignon, pp. 9-10)**

She learned that individuals with trance capacity existed in all those societies. And most societies had scenarios in which the appearance—and utilization—of trance phenomena were accepted.

> *Altered states of consciousness ...appear in a variety of forms among the peoples of the world. Often, they are institutionalized and culturally patterned and utilized in specific ways...* **(Ibid., p. 3)**

Bourguignon divided the worldwide experience of trance phenomena into two types. One was an individual event, a passive and private trance involving a dream, hallucination, or vision. The other type was a public procedure, active in **performance**, conveying messages from, or taking the role of, an unseen presence. She called that second type **possession trance** or the **impersonation of spirits**—"the acting out of their speech or behavior."[2] She noted that the possession trance did not involve sensory hallucinations and was sometimes followed by amnesia. **(p. 12)**

Genetic Susceptibility Spectrum—Some persons, called **refractory**, don't respond at all to inductive techniques. Some enter only a light **hypnoid** state. At the other extreme of the susceptibility spectrum, the most susceptible persons go quickly and easily into somnambulism, the deepest trance state. The first scientific study of the **range of susceptibilities** was done by Hull, in 1933. He gave a standardized hypnotic induction to numerous subjects and rated them by depth reached:

Refractory	**10.48 %**
Light Hypnosis	**32.68 %**
Deep Hypnosis	**34.58 %**
Somnambulism	**22.26 %**

In a similar experiment, years later, LeCron and Bordeaux found a similar distribution:

Uninfluenced	**5 %**
Hypnoidal	**10 %**
Light Trance	**25 %**
Medium Trance	**35 %**
Somnambulism	**25 %**

Factors Associated with High Susceptibility

Susceptibility does not result from character weakness: "Native strength or weakness of 'will' have absolutely nothing to do with the matter." **(William James *The Principles of Psychology*, p. 595)** Burgess reported that, of

---

[1] It is probable that both the military and secret agencies now can test instantly both susceptibility and trance depth with electronic equipment.

[2] Whether you call it **possession** or **impersonation** depends on whether or not you believe the spirit is real.

250 patients treated by seven "hypnodontists," all but eleven were hypnotized on the the first try. Only five never could be hypnotized enough for suggested anesthesia during dental work. He speculated that the high induction rate was because those private dental patients were:

> *More cultured, higher in intelligence, well-organized personalities...*[which] *acts as an automatic screening process so that the clientele of the dentists is largely made up of people more susceptible to the induction of hypnosis.* **(Burgess, *"Hypnosis in Dentistry,"* p. 325)**

A recent author, however, corrected what he considers an "overemphasis" on

> *...the role intelligence plays as a factor of susceptibility. If other things such as undue curiosity, fears, and mistrust are absent or removed, then 90 percent or more of all people are hypnotizable. Obviously this faction of the general populace is not comprised of highly intelligent people.* **(Hughes, p. 26)**

In a 1974 article, Spiegel listed characteristics of the most hypnotizable persons:

> *...readiness to trust; a relative suspension of critical judgment; an ease of affiliation with new experiences; a telescoped time sense; an easy acceptance of logical incongruities; an excellent memory; a capacity for intense concentration; an overall tractability, and, paradoxically, a rigid core of private beliefs.* **(Spiegel, *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*)**

Josephine Hilgard's 1970 book, *Personality and Hypnosis*, lists many signs of hypnotizability. There are also dozens of articles on predicting hypnotizability in subjects without using a recognizable induction. Here follows a list of generally recognized markers for hypnotically susceptible persons:

- People who had an **imaginary playmate** in childhood,[1] an **hysteric** tendency (**obsessive** personalities are the most difficult to hypnotize), or who have multiple personality disorder.

- A person, who volunteers for a hypnosis **stage** demonstration, and then reveals somnambulic capacity, is obviously identifiable as susceptible.

- **Children** are, as a category, typically more susceptible to hypnosis than adults. Children begin to be susceptible after they have learned language (which is conditioning to words). Children between 8 and 12 are usually the most susceptible age. (The Burgess survey, however, found teenagers most responsive.) Some studies find elderly people the hardest to hypnotize, but there are individual exceptions.

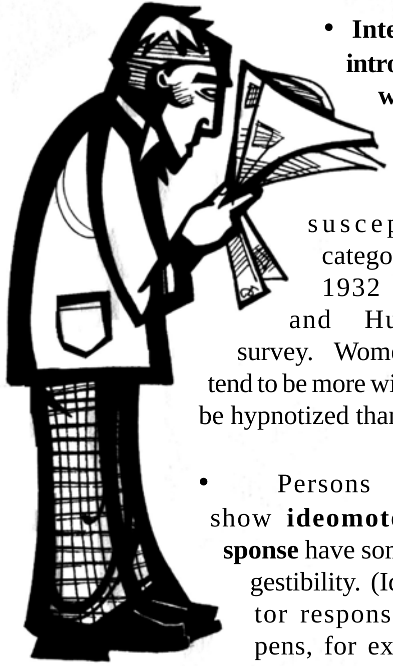

- **Intelligent introverted women** were the most susceptible category in a 1932 Davis and Husband survey. Women also tend to be more willing to be hypnotized than men.

- Persons who show **ideomotor response** have some suggestibility. (Ideomotor response happens, for example, when the thud of a boxer's fist into his opponent's jaw causes a watcher to flinch.) Conversation with a pendulum ("yes," "no," "maybe") involves ideomotor responses. The subject's unconscious is making those responses.

---

[1] The Quest Program is public school elementary training involving a series of deep trance visualizations. By means of this guided imagery, and specific suggestions, the child is led to dissociate, create an imaginary associate, and then develop it. All such children will then meet the criteria for having "an imaginary playmate."

- A person who has an established (or anticipated) **positive relationship** with the hypnotist, such as in love with, or in awe of him) will be more susceptible to hypnosis by that particular hypnotist than one who lacks those feelings.

- Persons who have a capacity to love and to **love deeply**, who "fall hard," and persons with the "tendency to fixate love-objects powerfully, customarily are easily inducted into profound hypnosis." **(Schilder and Kauders, p. 39)**

- Greater susceptibility is associated with higher intelligence and better adaptation to deprivation. To be suggestible is to be able to **learn easily**. Being able to learn quickly helps in survival. Humans have a built-in tendency to conform to any situation in which they are placed.

- **Ability to visualize** is a strong marker. Persons who use mental imagery a lot are generally hypnotizable. The more vividly you visualize, the more susceptible you are.

- The most hypnotically susceptible persons tend to be imaginative, right-brained, and creative. **Imagination** is your inherited and/or developed ability to suppress and inhibit your conscious mind and let your unconscious (your "imagination") lead.

- A person who becomes totally involved in an activity—such as fiction reading (especially science fiction), theater, prayer or worship—to the point of **ignoring distractions**, is probably susceptible.

- Persons who are attracted to **adventures**, whether of body or mind, are likely to be hypnotizable.

- The best hypnotic subjects have the **strongest egos**. They have a firm grip on reality when focused on that rather than on imagining.

psychedelic drugs (LSD, marijuana) are more attracted to, and more susceptible to, non-drug trance inductions than people who have never used such drugs.

- The more **experience** a person has with trance, the more susceptible they are.[1]

- Persons who are accustomed to obeying orders—such as low-ranking military—are more susceptible. The greater the **capacity to respect and obey**, the greater the susceptibility tends to be. Children and teenagers and "rank and file" of all sorts seem more likely to react with blind obedience to persons with social symbols of leadership.

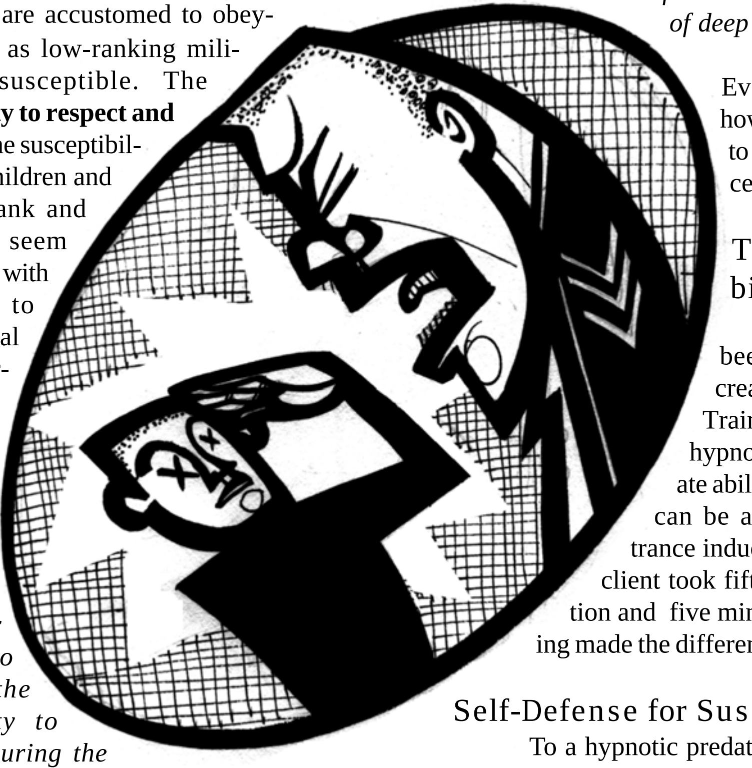

> *Anything calculated to enhance the authority of the hypnotizer or suggester also enhances the susceptibility to hypnosis....During the war, officers were as a rule harder to hypnotize than privates...Persons not as a rule accustomed to recognizing authority of any kind are harder to hypnotize...hypnosis is an attitude of subordination, an attitude of subjection.* **(Schilder and Kauders, *Hypnosis*, p. 39)**

Induction of Retarded and Psychotic

Persons who are **retarded,** or **mentally ill,** tend to be at the low end of the susceptibility spectrum. A **psychotic** is difficult to hypnotize. Any schizophrenic who can be hypnotized probably has only a mild case of the disease. In 1889, August Voisin attempted to hypnotize unwilling psychotic patients:

> *The patient, either held by assistants or placed in a straitjacket, had his eyes kept open, and was compelled to look at the light of a magnesium lamp or at Voisin's fingers. If necessary, the process was continued for three hours; suggestions meanwhile being made. The patients, who at first usually struggled, raved and spat in the operator's face, eventually became exhausted and, in successful cases, passed into a condition of deep sleep.* **(Bramwell, p. 43)**

Even after that sustained effort, however, Voison only managed to induce deep trance in ten percent of those patients.

Training for Susceptibility

Much research has been done on methods to increase a subject's susceptibility. Training can maximize inherited hypnotic ability. It can even create ability. The process of **training** can be as simple as repeating the trance induction. In a dental study, one client took fifteen minutes for first induction and five minutes for the second. Training made the difference.

Self-Defense for Susceptible Persons

To a hypnotic predator, very susceptible persons are prey, to be found, if possible, and captured and exploited. So, if you are quite susceptible, exercise reasonable caution about exposure to hypnotic situations. (You have the option of getting a deep-level suggestion from a trusted hypnotist to seal you against subliminal suggestion and unwanted inductions.)

If you find yourself feeling the fascination of "rapport" toward a suspected hypnotic predator and wish to resist, "in future avoid such a man, whose intentions I can now see through, and shall never allow myself to remain alone with him." **(Hammerschlag, p. 30)** However, rapport grows just as well in a group as alone, and a preset induction cue works under any circumstances. I would amend that to read "shall never allow myself to be in his or her presence again."

---

[1] The more a person has experienced deep trance, the more he or she tends to seek it. It has an addictive aspect. The deeper the trance was, the more they are likely to return for more.

Depth

Depth Training

☑

Depth Scales

☑

Depth Characteristics

> ***In this condition of hypnosis the patient forgets all that has happened during the trance, and this lack of memory, or amnesia, is the characteristic feature of this...the deepest phase of hypnotic influence* [where]*...the more striking psychological and physiological experiments are performed. About 25 percent of hypnotizable people go into a somnambulistic trance.***
>
> **Magonet, 1957, p. 22**

Depth Training

An operator, who is developing a subject, puts that subject through four different phases: 1) **induction**, 2) **deepening**, 3) **training**, and 4) **treatment/operations** (the giving of suggestions). The first and second phases both involve deepening. Whatever further inhibits the conscious mind, shifting it from faster and less **synchronized** brain waves toward slower and more synchronized brain waves (short of real sleep) is movement toward a greater **depth of trance**. People vary in genetic capacity for hypnotic induction and depth, but training makes most of them go deeper.

Training to Go Deeper

Depth training begins during the first session with the suggestion to **go deeper the next time**. That suggestion will be repeated until training is complete. The more time a person spends under hypnosis, the more times that person is hypnotized, the more actions (mental or physical) which a person performs at the hypnotist's suggestion, and the more that person is "trained," the deeper he goes.

Training for susceptibility is the same process as **training for depth**. Training, in and of itself (no drugs), raises the percentage of somnambulists from the normal 20-25 %, to over 50%, and maybe even 75%. Narcohypnotic induction, plus training, may increase that to as much as 95%, or more.

Depth training may be for any purpose. Anesthesia requires deep trance. A hypnodontist wants "the deepest possible trance...which may require two or more sessions." **(Burgess, p. 333)**. If the operator wants an extreme degree of control, training lasts until the subject:

1) Instantly shifts from awake to deep trance on cue.

2) Accepts commands for total amnesia (somnambulism)

3) Obeys posthypnotic suggestions in a complete, automatic way.

Narcohypnotist Lindner considered training subjects for deep trance to be a necessary preliminary to **hypnoanalysis**. He said a week would do it, if the hypnotist had the advantage of **drug-induced depth**:

> [After learning to make] *...a rapid passage from the waking state to sleep, patients are familiarized with hypnosis and its functions...By the end of this preliminary period (to which no more than a week is given) this unique relationship* [hypnotist-subject] *is in a state of readiness for exploitation. The close of the first week then finds the patient adept at passing confidently from a waking to a sleeping state...on the merest suggestion of the clinician...Testing for depth of trance is simple but most important...it is often necessary to achieve a decisive penetration (viewing the trance state as a vertical phenomenon).* **(Lindner, *Rebel Without a Cause*, pp. 22-23)**

Hypnoanalyst L. R. Wolberg also trained his subjects for somnambulist depth:

> *...to get the patient to a point where he is able to open his eyes in a trance without awakening, to develop amnesia, and finally to respond to complicated posthypnotic suggestions.* **(*Hypnoanalysis*, p. 51)**

Training to Maintain a Specified Depth

Normally, depth of trance fluctuates. Any hypnotized person, unless trained otherwise, tends to yo-yo up and down in depth throughout the trance. Normally, a subject can wake herself up from a bad dream—or a bad trance, if something is happening under trance that she doesn't like. Training usually seeks to overturn those two natural defenses of depth fluctuation and self-waking. A trained subject has learned to go down either as far as possible, or to a designated depth of consciousness, and to maintain that depth. That trained subject also does not wake up until cued to do so by the operator.

Deepening Techniques

Here are the main deepening techniques:

- Any **prolonged visualization deepens.** The subject may be told to visualize himself riding down an escalator, or walking down stairs, or counting backwards, or walking backwards. The theme will be down, Down, DOWN.

- **Repeated suggestions** of "deeper" or "relax" deepen trance: "You are going deeper and deeper, deeper and deeper..." Or "heavy, so heavy." Or "drowsy and relaxed...just let yourself relax...let yourself go." Or "let your muscles relax...now your facial muscles...relax." Or, monotonous, repeated "sleep" suggestions.

- A **pumper command** can be used to deepen: "With each breath, you will go deeper."

- **Obedience exercises** deepen: the more you obey, whether visualizing something new, or raising your arm, or lowering it, etc., the deeper you go. If a subject accepted a suggestion to see his breath coming out (a positive hallucination), or that he cannot open his eyes (catatonia), or that his right arm is becoming weightless and slowly rising—he probably also went deeper.

- **Time** is a factor. Hypnotists who work with a subject for hours at a time, and who have done hundreds of inductions of that same subject, normally achieve far greater depths than they would in a first-time, casual experiment.

    1) Length of time spent being inducted deepens—such as **repeating the same induction** patter again, and again, and again. Old-time mesmerists often inducted for two to five hours. Esdaile (who did hundreds of complex surgeries under hypnosis) did even longer inductions.

    2) An increased total number of hours of time spent in training under various hypnoses deepens.

    3) An increased total number of times hypnotized deepens. Repeated awakenings from trance and **re-inductions** into trance result in deeper trance states.

- **Narcohypnosis** deepens.

Depth Scales

> **[In the light-medium stage]...*the subject has progressed beyond the point of simple cooperation...he does things he cannot stop himself from doing unless he interrupts the entire process....***
>
> **- Christenson, *"Dynamics in Hypnotic Induction,"* in LeCron (ed), *Experimental Hypnosis*, p. 33**

Hypnotists usually measure depth by **performance scales**. A susceptibility test is an induction with a **depth scale** and **standardized scoring**. Depth scales are typically divided into some number of stages, each identified by its characteristic behaviors. But, in general, the deeper you go

- the more **suggestible** you are
- the more vivid your **imagery** (hallucination)
- the greater your capacity for **fantasy** and **fabrication**
- the greater your capacity for authentic **regression**
- the greater your ability to carry out focused **problem solving,**
- the more you may **lose personal initiative** and turn over your brain's decision-making and planning capabilities to the operator
- the poorer your **reality-testing**, the more likely you are to accept operator suggestions or self-generated fantasies as fact.
- the better you can **perceive extrasensory** stimuli (those which normally are below the threshold of conscious perception).

The preceding list adds up to more of just about anything. The bottom line is how your trance potential is used. It may generate truer, or falser, information. It can make you stronger, or weaker. It can help you to be more in touch with reality, more alert and able to cope—or it can cause you to be less in touch with reality, and less able to cope.

The **capacity for trance** is not, in itself, evil. It may, however, be used in a misguided, or even evil, way. It may be used by an operator for evil purposes.

Number of Depth Stages

Researchers have been developing (and redeveloping) **depth scales** since Liebeault. Individuals vary so much in hypnotic performance that scales must be based on averages. Many researchers have attempted to chart the characteristic depths of hypnosis and to describe the features of each depth. The number of old-time named depth stages ranged from Moll's two stages to Pavlov's twelve. Liebeault described six degrees of trance depth which he grouped into three main stages: light, medium, and deep. His associate, Bernheim, further divided the induction continuum into nine steps between fully awake and fully asleep.

Two Stages: Light and Somnambulist— The two-stage scale goes back to 1889 and a Frenchman named Moll. He divided hypnosis into just two stages: **light** and **deep**. He said that light hypnosis affects will, but not memory. He said that deep hypnosis (somnambulism) is reached when a natural amnesia (now called dissociation) occurs, and the subject finds it difficult to remember what happened during the trance.

In the 1940s, Christenson used a three-depth scale: 1) nonsusceptible, 2) various degrees of light trance, and 3) somnambulist trance. Since only two of his stages were trance depths, this actually revived the two-depth scale. From the military point of view, a two-stage depth analysis is most practical. Either the subject

Dissociation

Any trance state involves some degree of **dissociation**. Hypnosis is a deliberately-induced condition of dissociation. The subject's conscious mind is displaced by some part of his unconscious. That displacement is called "dissociation." Degrees of dissociation correspond to depths of trance.

The transition from light to deep trance in a two-stage scale, or from medium to deep on a three-stage scale, is placed at the point of dissociation. After dissociation begins, your conscious memory of what happened becomes partial, hazy, or completely absent. In this very suggestible condition, however, if the hypnotist suggests complete remembering, the subject will remember. On the other hand, if the hypnotist suggests complete forgetting, that also will happen.

can be made into an unknowing hypnoprogrammed person (amnesic and automatistic), or he cannot (non-susceptible or light depth). He defined the "light" stage as beginning at the point of obedience to suggestion:

> *The point of transition between simple waking suggestion and light hypnotic phenomena may be placed provisionally at the point where the subject displays either a reluctance to resist or an inability to resist despite evident efforts...the distinction is evident in most individuals when they are first hypnotized.* **(Christenson, *"Dynamics in Hypnotic Induction,"* p. 34)**

To divide his "light" depth from his "somnambulist," he used two definitive signs: **spontaneous dissociation amnesia**, and **waking hypnosis**. The deep stage was a "full somnambulistic reaction" with amnesia and significant physiological involvement.

Three Stages: Slight, Deep, and Somnambulist—Bramwell divided the trance spectrum into three depth stages: slight, deep, and somnambulist. Like the others, he defined somnambulism as the depth characterized by natural amnesia. In 1902, August Forel published a similar three-stage depth analysis which was adopted by many writers after him.

1) **Somnolence**: a very light trance; subject **can resist suggestions** and open his eyes.

2) Light slumber or **hypotaxis:** subject cannot open his eyes (catalepsy), and is likely to comply with some suggestions, but will not be amnesic.

3) Profound sleep or **somnambulism**: natural posthypnotic amnesia; difficult suggestions are obeyed**.**

Stages Subdivided into Degrees—Cook divided the major stages of trance depth into seven substages, which he called **degrees**. His Fourth Degree began the Somnambulist Stages: "Absolute Obedience...subject completely loses his individuality and is a mere automaton in the hands of the operator...and when awakened he will have no recollection" **(Cook, p. 95)**. His Sixth Degree was "Catalepsy...muscular rigidity." The Seventh was "Lethargy," his name for the state in which respiration and heart rate can be controlled by suggestion (now called **coma**, or **profound trance**).

Katkov's depth analysis had three stages, each with three degrees. He placed somnambulism in the Third Stage, Second Degree: subject communicates only with the hypnotist, can have positive hallucinations of any sense (but eyes must be closed), and may show partial spontaneous amnesias. His Third Stage, Third Degree was complete somnambulism: the subject's conscious mind is fully displaced; he passively awaits suggestions from the hypnotist; all deep trance phenomena are possible, including negative hallucinations, total amnesias (spontaneous or suggested), and age regression.

LeCron and Bordeaux followed Cook with a very detailed, sound analysis of phenomena associated with various depths of trance. The pair divided their scale into degrees ranging from 0, for **insusceptible** (no suggestions accepted or physical signs of trance observed) to a maximum of 50, the "**Stuporous condition** in which all spontaneous activity is inhibited."[1]

Fluttering of eyelids is listed at 3, **appearance of rapport** at 13, **recognition of trance** at 19. "**Fixed stare** when eyes are open" and **pupillary dilation** are at 29. They begin somnambulistic depth at 28. They list **systemized posthypnotic amnesias** at 32, considering them more difficult to induce than **complete amnesia**, which they placed at 31. They place **age regression** at 42, **positive posthypnotic visual hallucinations** at 43, and **negative** ones at 44.

Self-Report Scale

If a subject has experience in various trance depths, he can gauge for himself how deep he is by the way he feels. If the operator asks, "On a scale of 1 to 10, with 1 as the highest and 10 as the lowest, where are you now?" he is using a **self-report scale**.

Tart created this type of scale, which uses internally observable markers, as well as external ones. The listed internal mental signs were markers by which his subject could determine his comparative depth. Tart's scale is unique and humane in that some of its items measure depth by signs other than degree of submission to the hypnotist's will. His **internal markers**, here listed from lowest to greatest depth, include awareness of breathing, cessation of spontaneous mental activity, time becoming a meaningless concept, loss of awareness of the joke, loss of awareness of the environment, **visual blackness**, and physical relaxation. I think awareness of breathing is probably suggested rather than natural. The other markers, however, are all physiological phenomena.

---

[1] The LeCron and Bordeaux Scale is reproduced in Magonet, pp. 13-15.

Characteristics of Depth Stages

The hypnotized person lacks alertness and humor; he is literal and serious in his execution of the operator's wishes, seems to have lost all sense of the ludicrous, pursues one goal with disproportionate intensity, and pays little attention to matters and impressions which lie outside this purpose. He seems to have a contracted frame of reference...

- R. W. White, quoted in Moss, *Hypnosis in Perspective*, p. 138

This section lists observable characteristics of the main depth stages: light, medium, and deep.

Light

This trance depth is called **light** or **lethargic**. The subject feels noticeably relaxed, drowsy. He can still move about slightly, and is aware of all around him. He can talk, laugh, and answer questions. For some people, the light stage may not be much of a trance, merely a sort of waking suggestibility. For others, it is a true beginning of trance. A subject in light trance may be unable to open his eyes if eye catalepsy is suggested. He is also susceptible to any other catalepsy. The subject may have either muscle relaxation or muscle tension, a sleepiness or a hyperalertness, depending on what is being suggested. The operator may observe that the subject's eyelids have closed and are fluttering, or quivering.

According to LeCron and Bordeaux, the hypnotist can recognize that the subject is in trance before the subject can. Eventually, however, the subject becomes aware that he is in a condition that is different from his normal awakeness. In the light depth, a subject remembers all that happened.

Medium

At **medium** depth, the subject has a greater detachment from the environment. As he moves into deeper trance, his eyes are closed. In fact, an observer can measure the progression of the trance based on the subject's eyes. In the light trance, there is a stage in which the eyes close, and the eyelids quiver. In deeper trance, the quivering ceases.

> *At first the pupils of the eyes will be noticeably contracted, and as the influence becomes intensified they gradually dilate and become very large, and in the profound stages the eyeballs will roll upward, as may be readily seen by lifting the eyelids. If, when in the somnambulistic state, the subject should be required to open his eyes, the eyeballs will usually assume their natural position.* **(Cook, p. 243)**

Breathing becomes slower and deeper. The subject can display some amnesia, positive hallucinations, and obeys simple posthypnotic suggestions. At this depth the capacity for catalepsy is greater than in the light stage, and muscular rigidity can be suggested. There is greater suggested insensitivity to pain, and more noticeable automatism.

Deep (Somnambulist)

A person in somnambulist trance can produce any of the hypnotic phenomena. Their hypnotic behavior shows **automatism,** which is an **inability to resist suggestions**. Posthypnotic amnesias can be selective, systematized. Somnambulists revivify when age regression is suggested. Posthypnotic suggestions can be complicated, bizarre. Hallucinations may be detailed scenes or events, and the subject will believe the hallucination is real. They can do automatic writing. Anesthesia and catalepsy can be great enough for dental work, childbirth, surgery. The usual test for somnambulistic depth is a three-item test: 1) amnesia, 2) posthypnotic suggestion, and 3) positive or negative hallucination—in trance or by posthypnotic suggestion. A posthypnotic, negative, visual hallucination is considered the most difficult posthypnotic suggestion: the ultimate test.

Christenson described the **physical signs** of the somnambulist level:

> *This appears to be a distinct state, qualitatively different from earlier stages...relaxed muscular tonus, a reduced breathing rate which falls to a minimum of 12 to 15 respirations per minute when he is ignored, general body flush, and reduced reactivity to outer stimulation, all suggestive of a state of rest or sleep.* **(p. 35)**

Old-time European hypnosis researchers defined a **somnambulist** as any person capable of a trance deep enough that **spontaneous dissociative amnesia** takes place. At that level, three other significant trance phenomena also occur: **catalepsy**, **automaticity**, and **amnesia**. It is at this stage that serious ethical abuse can take place. Forel believed that, in the somnambulist state, the subject's will was

“Catalepsy” vs. Somnambulism

Binet and Fere, two old-time French researchers, made a very interesting division of the somnambulist level into two opposing states which they called **catalepsy** and **somnambulism**. They said the cataleptic subject was the unfree type: an **automaton**. The prime characteristic of their “cataleptic” was

> *...automatism...it is, in fact, only the cataleptic subject who can be termed an automaton...catalepsy permits the mind to be handled with the same docility as the limbs...The suggestions offered to him are inevitably accepted, since he never resists them...a cataleptic subject ceases to have a personality...there is no cataleptic ego.* **(Binet and Fere, p. 143)**

Their “somnambulist,” on the other hand, was a free spirit who just happened to be in a deep trance state!

> *...no automaton, but a person endowed with character, aversions, and preferences...In this state there is certainly an ego. The somnambulist’s intellectual condition may be compared to those dreams in which the sleeper actively intervenes, and displays judgment, critical sense, and sometimes even mind and will.* **(*Ibid.*)**

They sum it up:

> *The cataleptic subject is a machine, the somnambulist is a person. The first readily performs all the acts suggested, while the second often offers a resistance which may become troublesome to the experimenter.* **(*Ibid.*, p. 288)**

The next generations of experimenters spent much effort trying to find ways to suppress any possibility of accidentally creating a split personality with capacities for independent ego, when automatic behavior was wanted, hypnorobot cataleptics. In the public sector, however, there have developed an army of self-employed mediums and psychics, doing their own trance-thing. Unfettered by an operator, they are Binet and Fere’s “somnambulists,” displaying independent (though dissociated) mind and will in deep trance.

completely overruled. Christianson described the characteristics of the deepest state, as viewed by a military man:

> *Posthypnotic suggestions will be executed, usually with amnesia, and various other phenomena can be induced, for example, catalepsy, memory improvement, greater motor facility, heightened concentration, physiological and biochemical changes, and psychological dysfunctions such as delusions or hallucinations.*
>
> *The most reliable single criterion for a full hypnotic state is that the subject can open his eyes and still remain in a trance...* **(p. 34)***...the subject becomes more literal in his thought processes...the subject frequently displays greatly improved insight into his mental processes.* **(p. 36)**

Waking Trance

The “normal” deep trance state is silent inertia, unless suggestions are being acted on. **Waking trance (waking hypnosis)** results from the combined effects of susceptibility, depth, and specific suggestions to open one’s eyes and act normal, yet to stay deeply hypnotized. In its linguistic root, the word “somnambulism” means **sleepwalking**. A common definer of somnambulism is this ability of a deeply hypnotized person to open his eyes and to walk and talk as if not hypnotized—and yet remain hypnotized. Only persons who have reached a somnambulist depth are capable of looking and acting awake in trance.

Candy/Arlene could be in Taiwan for days, still in trance, still obedient to the distant Dr. Jensen. She was an **open eyes**. When deeply hypnotized, she was fully able to function like an awake person, walking around and conversing intelligently. If her EEG had been tested, it too would have looked normal.

The somnambulist is amnesic for time in trance, unless specifically instructed to remember it:

> *The patient in hypnosis can rise from his chair, walk in the streets for two hours, carry on lengthy conversations with people he meets, even see a movie, but upon return to normal waking, will remember nothing that occurred during the state of hypnosis. He has no way of accounting for the lapse of time...* **(Gindes, 1951)**

Carl Sextus, a nineteenth century Danish hypnotist, described a revealing incident of waking hypnosis, used as a free hypnotic entertainment for his party. He began by giving a complex set of posthypnotic suggestions to a 23-year-old subject whom he had hypnotized "five or six times" before:

> *...on the next Saturday, March 5th at 8 o'clock p.m., he was to leave his home on Norrebro Gade, and go to my residence...after having asked for me and spoken to me, he was to perform a number of insignificant actions in an exact order as stated, after which he was to fall into a deep sleep...* **(Sextus, *Hypnotism,* 1893 ed., pp. 139-141)**

At precisely 8:25 PM, Sextus' doorbell rang. When the hypnotist opened the door, he saw his subject standing outside in a posthypnotic revivification of the original trance:

> [He]*...held himself rather stiff, and spoke with a certain dull accent, repeated exactly what had been told him, and performed the different acts in exact order. He stared at me without any expression in his eyes, and after he had accomplished what had been told him to do, he fell into a deep and unconscious sleep, from which he could not be awakened by any of us, by either speaking to him or touching him...There were now several experiments performed, to convince us that the subject was completely insensible to any pain. I placed under his right arm a mark an inch long with a red hot knitting needle, without any motion or sign that he felt it. I put a strong needle through his hand, so that it projected a quarter of an inch on the other side, during which (he being commanded) sat with a happy and smiling expression on his face.*
>
> ...[I] *now awoke the sleeper by a sharp shout. He opened his eyes and gazed about with a dazed look, evidently surprised at finding himself in a strange house, surrounded by a party...* **(Ibid.)**

A somnambulist can act "as if he were wide awake and may even deceive observers with his seeming wakefulness." **(Erickson, *"Hypnosis in Medicine,"* p. 646)** Even skilled hypnotists have trouble distinguishing waking hypnosis from normal waking behavior, for there is no head lolling, body slumping, or eye closure. On the other hand, Sextus above described certain discernable characteristics of that waking sleep. (It can also be detected by the acute mental sensitivity of another person in deep trance.) Christenson described similar, and additional, physical clues for the state of waking hypnosis:

> *There is a definite change in facial expression and voice, with an air of abstraction, indifference to surroundings, and a reduction of outwardly directed activity unless it is suggested by a hypnotist...The subject who is in a deep somnambulistic state will often not seem to be in a nonwaking state at all...To directed observation, however, there are a number of characteristic changes. The expression in the eyes will become somewhat vacant or inward-looking at the moment of induction, and may remain so. When not stimulated, the subject tends to lapse into a typical posture, head dropped slightly forward on the chest and attention apparently directed inwardly...* [the "hypnotic posture"] **(p. 35)**

Coma

There is a stage of even greater depth—not described on any of the above scales—but which is well known. M.H. Erickson called it "plenary trance" or "coma" and viewed it with extreme respect. This state is best for major surgery which will use no other anesthetic but trance. In coma, you CANNOT MOVE. The inability to move in the coma state is not a result of verbal suggestion. It is a physiological result of the trance depth. Pavlov would have explained, "the motor analyzer is shut down." A modern neural systems analyzer would say: "Information is not being transmitted to the motor output stage of the brain to become available for speaking, or any other action of voluntary muscles."

The subject who is in a coma cannot speak or respond, but at the unconscious level he remembers all that takes place. It usually takes extended training (repeated hypnoses over a period of weeks or months), to develop an ability for coma depth. Many hypnotists never see anybody this deep. M.H. Erickson explained:

> *...in that* [plenary] *trance state you can ask him to do certain things such as increase the flow of blood to the right kidney. You can test this by probing with intraureteral catheters...I have induced a plenary trance by simply suggesting that the person go into a deeper, more profound trance, that he feel himself becoming more and more stuporous.*
>
> *He retains his contact with you, he hears you, but the process of hearing you is slowed down; that is, there is an immense time lag. If you ask, "Do you hear me?" you can perhaps count to 15...20...25 before he will indicate that he does.* **(in Estabrooks, *Hypnosis: Current Problems*, pp. 255-257)**

Books on Trance Induction

Edmonston's 1981 book, *Induction of Hypnosis,* describes or quotes verbatim a vast number of historical references, many rare, to hypnotic induction, starting with Hindu, Egyptian, and Greek methods. He then works the reader forward, chapter by chapter, to modern times.

> [It is]*...a history of the rituals, rites, and incantations through which individuals have attempted to produce in one another the condition we now call hypnosis...what I have attempted to do is to present the major developmental trends in hypnotic induction through the centuries...* **(Edmonston, pp. ix-x)**

Edmonston's underlying theme is that trance induction is not limited to methods titled "hypnosis." He includes many of the names and settings in which the essential phenomena of hypnosis occur: any trance that was created and directed by one person, purposefully influencing another person.

Other books on induction are: Elman, 1964; Erickson, Hershman & Secter, 1961 (transcripts of the weekend seminars for doctors, dentists, and psychologists); Hartland, 1966, 1971; Kroger, 1963 (second ed. 1977); Meares, 1960; Teitelbaum, 1965; and Hughes, *The Induction of Conviction.*

The Physiology of Trance

Suggestion Causes
Physiologic
Changes

☑

Brains Are Exciting

☑

Biophysics

In spite of its importance, information about inhibitory mechanisms has not yet been integrated into the general body of scientific knowledge, and no chapter is devoted to this subject in most neurophysiological, psychological, and pharmacological textbooks. This lack of interest is surprising because as Morgan wrote eighty years ago, "When physiologists have solved the problem of inhibition they will be in a position to consider that of volition"...

Delgado, *Physical Control of the Mind*, p. 155

Delgado was a prominent research neurologist and surgeon in his era. For years, he experimented on human epilepsy patients, by using radio signals to electrodes implanted in various sites in their brains (reticular activating system, thalamus, septum, or caudate nucleus) to excite or inhibit. His 1968 observation about the omission of information in textbooks on the physiology of hypnosis remains true. No elementary psychology text, that I know of, discusses the **physiology of trance (**other than to mention the **reticular activating system**). Some textbooks claim there is no known physiology of trance and, therefore, no proof that hypnosis is more than a mental idea. That, of course, is not so.

Every thought has a **physiological** basis. Every state of consciousness has a physiological basis. Every shift of consciousness, up or down, is a physiological event. I am sure that much more information on the physiology of trance does exist, but it has been hard to find. Most of the information appears to have been labeled top secret, and kept from public knowledge. Perhaps it is stashed in the drawer next to wherever they keep the design specs for a nuclear bomb: SECRET, DON'T TELL. I agree that the design for a nuclear bomb should be secret. The physiology of trance, on the other hand, should be admitted to exist and be taught to students.

Suggestion Causes Physiologic Changes

Such proposals as "You will feel sad because your little girl has recently died" may often border on the sadistic.

- Marcuse, *Hypnosis: Fact and Fiction*, p. 170

As in biofeedback training, mere hypnotic suggestion can cause **physiologic changes**. Emotions that are suggested to a hypnotized subject, or associated with a hallucination, or generated by abreaction in revivification of past experience, all cause physiological responses, as would the real event. Thus, a terrifying hallucination can cause a damaging heart attack, because the subject's heart will be as stressed during the hallucination as if the event were real.

Von Schrenck (1900) reported a case in which a medical student hypnotized a female cousin and impregnated her. When he learned she was pregnant, he again hypnotized her and suggested to her that she would have a miscarriage at a set time in the near future. She miscarried at his stated time.

Heron said that the old-time hypnotist/physicians "all experimented with hypnotic anesthesia in obstetrics." Some claimed they were able to control the length of labor, even to arrange the time of day when labor began, by post-hypnotic suggestion. In the 19th century, Braid helped nursing mothers to produce more milk, by hypnotic suggestion. The opposite--inhibiting milk-production in a mother who had lost her baby--was also reported by many hypnotists (Esdaile, Mohr, Heyer).

> *Even results over which the will has normally no control, such as sneezing, secretion, reddening and growing pale, alterations of temperature and heartbeat, menstruation, action of the bowels, etc., may take place in consequence of the operator's firm assertions during the hypnotic trance...* **(William James, *The Principles of Psychology*, 1890, p. 602)**

Volgyesi linked hypnotic behavior to the attributes enabling human survival by showing that bleeding can be controlled by hypnosis alone. He wrote an article called "Pavlovian Syndrome" about unconscious self-hypnosis as a protective measure in periods of starvation. Dr. Reiter reviewed the European literature on control of subtle body functions, by suggestion, under hypnosis. Therein, he cited studies on the power of suggestion to regulate blood flow after a tooth extraction, control heart rate, and treat psychosomatic ailments. He also found criminal suggestions used to create organ failures! **(Reiter, *"The Influence of Hypnosis on Somatic Fields of Function,"* in LeCron, ed. *Experimental Hypnosis*)**

Hypnotic anesthesia is another clear proof for the physiological basis of trance. It not only diminishes the outward signs of pain, but it also inhibits the associated internal pain responses. Heart rate, breathing, and galvanic skin reflexes are all decreased, rather than increased. The message of injury does not reach the brain, if blocked by hypnotic suggestion.

Induction Physiology: The "Relaxation Response"

Two American research hypnotists, Benson and Edmonston, separately researched body changes associated with trance/hypnosis. They called the characteristic physiological changes that happen during induction the **relaxation response**. They observed that relaxing tends to bring on this state; and this state tends to bring on relaxation. They equated relaxation with the induction of trance, or hypnosis. Their careful research has become widely understood and accepted.

> *...simple meditative techniques resulted in such notable physiological changes as decreased metabolism, heart rate, blood pressure and rate of breathing, as well as distinctive brainwave patterns...*(**Goleman and Thurman, *MindScience*, p.ix)**

Physiological Effects of Induction—Visible signs of spreading inhibition are a **deep sigh**, a **slight quiver of the eyelids** as they are closing, and **deeper and more regular breathing**. Platonov (1959) noted that arterial pressure and pace of respiration lower as trance deepens. The slower the subject enters trance, the slower the arterial pressure drops. Other physiological effects of trance are reduced oxygen consumption, slowing of brain wave patterns from beta toward alpha and theta, and reduction of heart rate.

Trance experiences vary so wildly in their depth, emotional quality, context and content that it is easy to think that they also differ physiologically. In fact, however, the physiology of trance induction--hypnosis, relaxation, meditation, trance, centered prayer, or whatever else it is called—is always the same. In terms of physiology, all inductions are the same.

Is "Relaxation" the Same as "Trance"?—Benson compared what happens to the body during conventional "Hypnosis with Suggested Deep Relaxation" to Transcendental Meditation, Zen, Yoga, Autogenic Training, Progressive Relaxation, and Sentic Cycles. He found similar physiological responses in all. **(Benson, *The Relaxation Response*, pp. 70-71)** He deduced that all were, therefore, physiologically the same state. In *Hypno-*

sis and Relaxation (1981), Edmonston painstakingly reviewed evidence on the neurophysiological state of the body during a similar variety of trance inductions. He also observed that all the common inductions (biofeedback, meditation, yoga, hypnosis, etc.) had the same physiological results, which he summed up as a pattern of **relaxation**.

Certain researchers compared brain waves of persons told to become hypnotized with those of persons told to close their eyes and relax. Because they found equal amounts of theta, they assumed that proved that the hypnotized people were merely "relaxed." **(Tebecis *et al.*, 1975, p. 5)** Edmonston, however, protested that conclusion. He said they had actually proved that the relaxed people were also in trance!

> *The fact that they have used the word awake to denote the condition can easily lead the careless reader to an erroneous conclusion.* **(Edmonston, *Hypnosis and Relaxation*, p. 150)**

In similar research, alpha densities turned out to be the same for persons given relaxation instruction and for those given a conventional hypnosis induction. **(Edmonston and Grotevant, 1975)** Those results also prove—not that hypnosis is not real—but that relaxation is an effective induction technique. The use of **progressive relaxation** as a hypnotic induction technique has been studied thoroughly and well documented. Persons who are told to "pretend you are hypnotized" are also not valid controls for an experimental comparison with hypnotized persons, because "pretend you're hypnotized" is a standard (and quite effective) hypnosis induction technique. Studies showing EEG similarities between persons in hypnosis and persons in "light sleep" **(Chertok and Kramarz, 1959)** do not disprove the hypnotic state. They merely confirm that light sleep is a hypnotic (hypnagogic) state of consciousness.

The research by Benson and Edmonston should have cleared public confusion and settled this issue. Unfortunately, it did not. Many trance-inducers continued to swear that what they do is not "trance," and most certainly is not "hypnosis." Hypnotists in private conversation, however, say "It's all hypnosis." More precisely, it is all **trance.** Different names for trance exists because it is better for business to use a new, different name and avoid the negative associations of old, familiar words like "lowered consciousness" or "hypnosis."

Brains Are Exciting!

... the nerve may be taken to be a relay with essentially two states of activity: firing and repose...

- Norbert Wiener, *Cybernetics*, p. 142

Neuroscience is the study of the physical basis of the mind and other nervous functions. (**Neurobiology** means practically the same thing.) Its basic concept is that all mental functions can be traced, at root, to physical processes happening in the brain. Neuroscience combines biological, biochemical, and biophysical sciences to understand--and attempt to control--the physical aspect of psyche, the brain/mind.

Neuroscience thinks of mind in computer terms. The brain is a **wetware** machine, comparable to the hardware of a computer. Beliefs and knowledge are the software. Those mental software programs are called the **code**. The code consists of two different parts: a set of **data** (object), and a **procedure** (intention) that applies itself to the data. The procedure is a sequence of mental actions that does something to the data.

Your brain is a fully programmable **biocomputer**. It easily learns to speak English, Chinese, Russian (or all three) if exposed, in childhood, to those languages. With some effort, it can also learn the languages of music, mathematics, and computer programming. Learning and memory are based in **neural networks.**

Brain Anatomy

The brain is as large as a grapefruit, as heavy as a cabbage, and contains more than a hundred billion nerve cells. It is the most complexly organized thing in the known universe. Its billions of neurons are the most delicate cells in your body. In life, they are a marvel. After death, the membranes and receptors of neurons quickly begin to break down.

Brains are as individual as faces. Every brain is different, in some way, from every other. The brains of men and women are very different, and that difference is obvious long before birth. The basic anatomy of every brain, however, is similar: **brainstem**, **limbic system**, **left** and **right hemispheres**, and **cortex**. Those organs are all made up of neurons. The outer brain cap (**cortex**) is made up of specialized cells which are tightly organized into an array of tiny cylinder shapes and are comparable to a computer's parallel processing system. The brain's anatomy divides these parallel processing computing units up into a multitude of subcomputers.

Reticular Activating System

Pavlov hypothesized that a person's state of consciousness is controlled by a brain center which helps to govern excitation and inhibition of the cerebral cortex. In 1949, two physiologists (an Italian, Giuseppe Moruzzi, and an American, Horace Magoun) found the **reticular activating system (RAS)**, the brain mechanism which controls the overall activity state of the cortex. It is the doorbell for your upper mind. The RAS sends streams of impulses to your thalamus and cortex which control wakefulness and attention, drowsiness and sleep, excitation and inhibition. It triggers the beginning, or end, of trance.

Pavlov also predicted that the governing center for shifts in state of consciousness would be part of the cortex. Here he was wrong. Moruzzi and Magoun found the RAS considerably below the cortex. It is down in the **brainstem,** at the top of the spinal cord. The brainstem handles warnings based on incoming sensory data, and autonomic functions such as breathing and heartbeat. The reticular activating system is a specialized part of the brainstem which controls our level of alertness. It is a long, narrow neural structure that stretches from the top to the bottom of the brainstem. The power center of the RAS is the **reticular formation**, a mass of tissues about the size and shape of a finger, located on the axis of the upper brainstem. The reticular formation directs the rest of the reticular activating system and has connecting dendrites with sites all over the cortex.

Your brain is wired so that incoming sensory nerve signals affect not only their ultimate cortex receiving area, but, by passing through the RAS, also can affect the entire cortex. It can put you to sleep or awaken you. If the RAS identifies a stimulus as unfamiliar, or worthy of extra attention, it may alert the entire cortex. With the cortex alerted, you **focus** harder on the matter to be considered and **amplify** the input. Your mind, literally, becomes more able to detect and analyzes normally overlooked tiny details in this out-of-the-ordinary situation.

The RAS controls general inhibition as well as general excitation. When you lie down and close your eyes, sensory input is reduced. The RAS automatically **reduces cortical stimulation level**. You become more and more relaxed, and shift toward trance, then toward sleep. Thus, the RAS controls the beginning and end of trance. The RAS system also sends signals to muscles that maintain muscle tone, as well as signals which coordinate detailed muscular movements. It is the **motor analyzer** that Pavlov theorized went off-line early in hypnosis, causing the phenomenon of catalepsy.[1] Damage to the reticular activating system can cause long-term **coma**, a sleep from which the sleeper cannot wake.

Biophysics

> ***...since every reaction and thought seems to produce an evoked potential* [readable on EEG or MEG], *the DC system seems directly involved in every phase of mental activity... Variations in the current from one place to another in the perineural system apparently form part of every decision, every interpretation, every command, every vacillation, every feeling, and every word of interior monologue, conscious or unconscious, that we conduct in our heads.***
>
> **- Becker, *The Body Electric*, p. 241**

---

1. The thalamus, septum, and caudate nucleus also have important inhibiting functions.

Every living cell produces electricity. All living things generate electrical currents. There is a tiny **direct current** flowing throughout the nervous system of the human body. Electric currents, however weak, always generate **electromagnetic fields**. **Biophysics** is the study of electric currents in cells, nerves, muscles, brain, and the magnetic fields those bioelectric currents produce. Your nervous system has electric current, and that current generates a **biomagnetic** field.

EEG

In 1875, Richard Caton claimed to have observed an electric field around the heads of animals. In 1924, Hans Berger, a German psychiatrist, stuck platinum wires in his son's scalp and proved the existence of that field by recording the first **EEG** (**electroencephalogram**). The EEG's recording pen marked, on paper, a series of rhythmic changes in potential voltage. Berger, at first, assumed the whole brain had only one wave. He soon learned the waves differed, depending on where he put the **electrodes** on the head, and on what was going on in that part of the head at that time.

Now, EEG technicians use up to 32 **channels,** and take readings from all over the head. The higher the average level of brain wave activity, the greater the susceptibility to hypnosis. Your hypnotic susceptibility is related to your bioelectric physiology. Now, the EEG, literally, has the power to distinguish life from death; a flat EEG signifies brain death. Certain types of thinking, or states of mind, cause particular types of brain waves. Researchers have even identified the **intention wave**, **surprise wave**, and **double-take wave**.

A **magnetoencephalogram** (**MEG**) gives an even more precise image of mental operations than an EEG. That is possible because the brain's "**magnetic field** passes right through the dura, skull bones, and scalp without being diffused..." **(Becker, *The Body Electric*, pp. 240-241)**

Can an EEG Detect Hypnosis?

Trance Induction Observable on EEG—Alpha and theta are the states of consciousness you pass through while going to, and rousing from, sleep. They are also the EEG states associated with trance induction. The EEG of a person in an inductive stage will show alpha and theta brain waves. Studies have shown specific EEG changes associated with hypnosis: spindle and slow delta activity. (Barker and Burgwin, 1948, 1949; Schwarz et al., 1955; Marenina, 1959). However, a trance state is identifiable by EEG only in the inductive stage. After that, it can be concealed.

> *...the hypnotic process can be seen to consist of a seemingly opposite pair of phenomena: first, during the induction process, a state of maximal attention to one group of stimuli, combined with an obliteration of all others, which results in a loss of Ego boundaries* [consciousness] *and an incorporation of the hypnotist into the subject. Later, in the fully developed stage, a diffusion of sensorimotor relations occurs with a retention of a dominant but repressed link to the hypnotist by the incorporation of a fragmentary image of him in the re-expanded borders of the Ego.* **(Kubie and Margolin, "*The Process of Hypnotism and the Nature of the Hypnotic State*")**

Waking Hypnosis Not Discernible on EEG—Pavlov explained the same phenomenon years earlier: "Hypnosis involves the reduction of organism-environment integration to a thin line of interpersonal communication," operator to subject. A hypnotically split-off personality, such as the Arlene part of Candy, could operate with just that thread of connection, a thin mental tether, to Dr. Jensen. Her hypnotic tether would be undetectable by any EEG technology known outside the military.

Bcause suggestion can cause physiological changes, the EEG profile of a hypnotic subject becomes whatever the operator suggests. Barker and Burgwin (1948, 1949) showed that EEG activity in hypnotized persons matched suggested behavior. If sleep and relaxation were suggested, the subject's slow low-voltage waveforms increased. Waking-type activities performed in deep trance resulted in waking-type waveforms. Thus, if a somnambulist is given suggestions requiring **waking hypnosis,** even his brain wave patterns obey. His EEG, at first glance, will look like that of a waking state. A hypnotic subject can also mimic the delta waves of sound sleep, yet be unconsciously recording an operator's suggestions.

Alpha, Beta, Delta, Theta

The pulsing of millions of neurons causes the brain's **electromagnetic aura**. It also produces the **brain waves** that an EEG machine records. Their patterned pulses add up to the mind's **state of consciousness** or **level of consciousness.** The neurons pulse in a variety of patterns. Every state of consciousness has its own characteristic bioelectric patterns. Named for each dominant brain wave pattern, the four main wave patterns are: **beta**, **alpha**, **theta**, and **delta**. Each of those names is pegged to a precise **cycles-per-second** speed of the brain waves.

We pass in and out of each of those four basic states of consciousness, repeatedly, every day. Different parts of the brain are likely to be in different patterns, at the same time. For example, one part may be idling in alpha, while another, busier, part is in wide-awake beta. Thus, our level of consciousness is constantly raising, or lowering, in response to various external, or internal, cues.

Beta (14-28 cps) is a mental condition of fully awake and under pressure to complete tasks. This is our state for the daily grind, for logical, problem solving actions, for fear, worry, and **visual activity**. When part of our brain relaxes, it slips from beta **down** into the slower, more **synchronized**, frequency of alpha. If we get sleepy, the waves slow and synchronize yet more to theta rate. If they slow all the way into genuine sleep, we are in delta. Delta (½-4 cps) is the mental state of a deep, true sleep (not hypnotic).

The route from beta, descending through alpha, and then down to theta is called **lowering consciousness**. The EEG waveforms are used as a crude physiological marker for the main states of consciousness: beta, alpha, theta, and delta.

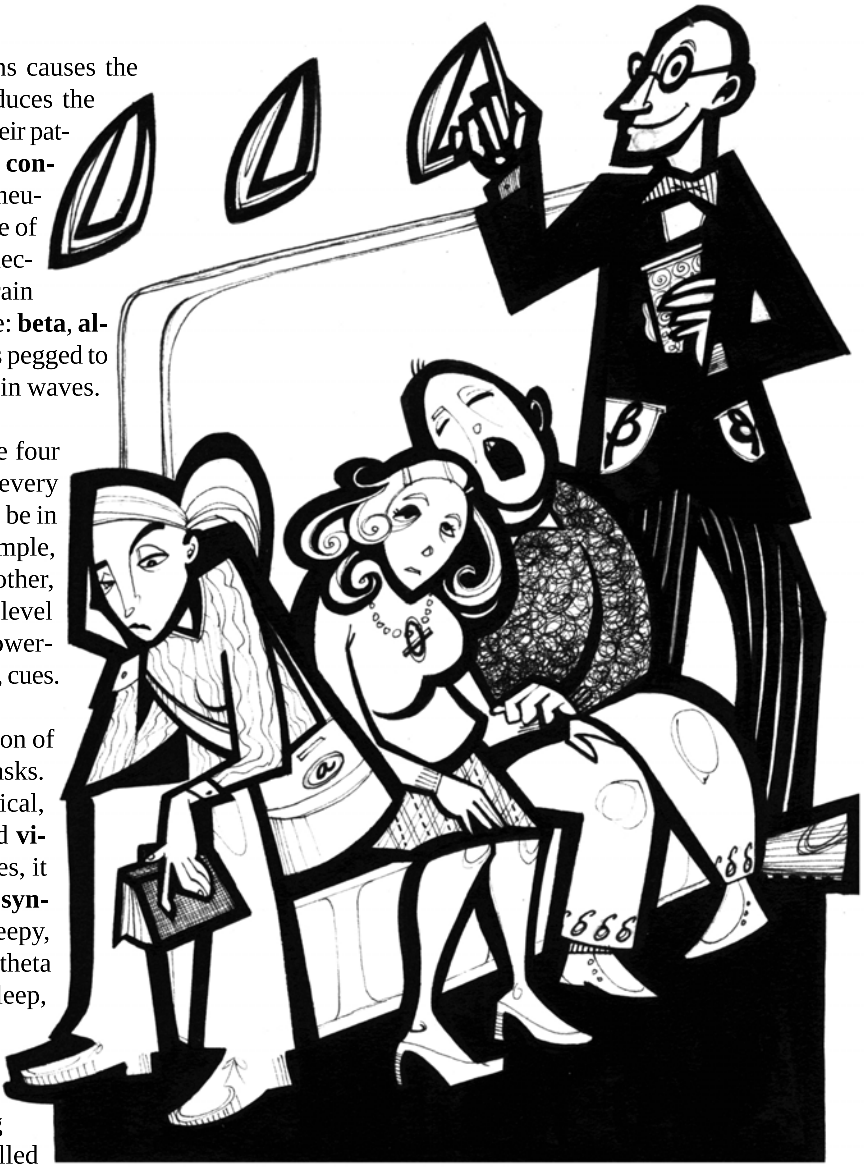

The Hypnoid States: Alpha and Theta

Alpha (8-13 cps) and theta (4-8 cps) are between beta and delta. They are the states with hypnoid potential and trance qualities.

Alpha—People tend to phase in and out of **alpha** multiple times per minute. If a person closes his eyes (a common induction aid), his brain wave component of alpha (and also theta) increases. When alpha goes up, his level of consciousness goes down. D. R. Engstrom reported, in his 1970 doctoral thesis, that any method that increases alpha production makes people more susceptible to hypnosis. A higher average number of alpha waves is a marker for persons who are more susceptible to hypnosis. Children normally have more alpha than adults and are more hypnotizable. London, Hart, and Leibovitz (1968) found a large difference between brain wave patterns in women who were susceptible to hypnosis and in those who were not susceptible.

Whatever increases alpha production is also inductive. The alpha state is a natural light meditation, a contemplative, relaxed mood. Anxiety reduces alpha. Alpha is lightly hypnagogic, lowered consciousness, relaxed wakefulness, daydreaming, catnapping, light trance—from which we can bring themselves back to alertness instantly. In alpha, critical, evaluative thought is reduced, but creative thought is enhanced. The conscious mind becomes more open to ideas from the unconscious, or to outside suggestions.

Theta—Theta is a state of deep, potentially creative, thinking. Theta waves (4-8 cps) are the slowest, except for deep sleep (delta). When a person becomes very tired or bored, his brain may begin bursts of theta. In more consistent theta, people may not be very responsive to outside signals. They are in trance—or in a hypnagogic state.

Hypnagogic States

In the process of falling asleep we relax and let go of the connection with conscious mind which operates self-control and awareness. We pass through alpha, then theta, and on into the sleep waves of delta. Our transition time spent in alpha and theta is called **hypnagogic.** It happens as we fall asleep and, again (in reverse order), as we wake up.

> *As slumber steals over us, our cortical vigilance does not fall at a uniform rate. It shifts up and down, tending only gradually to sag lower and lower. Alpha rhythm appears in bursts, but less and less often, with longer and longer periods of slow waves in the EEG. Little by little control of our ideas escapes us. At intervals we "come to," realizing we have just had some rather queer thoughts about something... Suddenly we may realize that we have been talking inwardly to ourselves.* **(Oswold, *Sleep*, pp. 43-44)**

Does everybody have hypnagogic episodes? We know that everybody dreams. Dreaming happens in a light stage of sleep, but the hypnagogic is different from dreaming. Sleep researcher Oswold said everybody experiences the hypnagogic condition.

> *Some people describe strange experiences while drowsy--visions, voices, bodily jerks and bizarre sensations. Do other people not have these or do we all have them, but mostly forget? I believe the latter is true. Unless one is roused, or determines to rouse oneself sufficiently to make a written record...all trace of these experiences is finally lost.* **(Oswold, p. 43)**

Addictive Aspects of Trance

We yearn to return to that which felt good. That is natural operant conditioning, automatic self-programming. It feels good to enter trance. Why? The explanation is physiological:

> *When you go into an altered state, you transfer into right brain, which results in the internal release of the body's own opiates, enkephalins and Beta-endorphins, chemically almost identical to opium.* **(Transcript, Valley of the Sun Publishing Lecture Tape, Malibu, CA, 1984, p. 6)**

After trance, you also may feel:

> *...unlocalized feelings of exhilaration and well-being...There are, therefore, two main direct effects of hypnotic trances: first, the suggestibility during the trance phase itself; and second, the general, mildly euphoric sense of well-being immediately following the hypnotic trance.* **(Verdier, p. 69)**

The rush of pleasurable cortical excitation, as you enter trance, tends to bring you back for more. So does the generalized feeling of relaxation and well-being that follows.

Alpha-specialist, Jodi Lawrence, disagreed. She believed the ability to have hypnogogic experiences ranged across a spectrum and correlated with hypnotic susceptibility:

> *...rigid people with repressively structured lives are "less able to let go" and fantasize, less able to express their inner feelings and thoughts than people who are more relaxed and open in their attitudes.* **(Lawrence, *Alpha Brain Waves*, p. 51)**

Technically, the hypnogogic state that occurs just before waking has a separate name, **hypnopompic.** Usually, however, both hypnogogic and hypnopompic periods are lumped together and called "hypnogogic." Hypnogogic experiences tend to be more pronounced in the morning, perhaps because the conscious mind has been off-line for a longer time.

Self-programming in Hypnogogic—The hypnagogic stage is a natural trance, a suggestible state of mind.

> *....In the twilight stage, one is less able to criticize, or to ignore, new ideas...Light sleep and drowsy stages may make you as suggestible as if you're actually hypnotized.* (**Ibid., p. 53)**

Coue first pointed out the usefulness of this natural trance state for self-programming. You can give your unconscious mind suggestions during either your evening or morning hypnagogic periods. If you wrestle with a problem in your mind as you are falling asleep, in the morning you may find an answer awaiting your conscious mind. The hypnogogic is a natural **crossover time,** when you can learn from, and instruct your unconscious. For example, you can tell yourself, before you fall asleep, what time you must wake up in the morning. The hypnagogic is also a naturally spiritual time when you may ask humbly for direction and receive guidance.

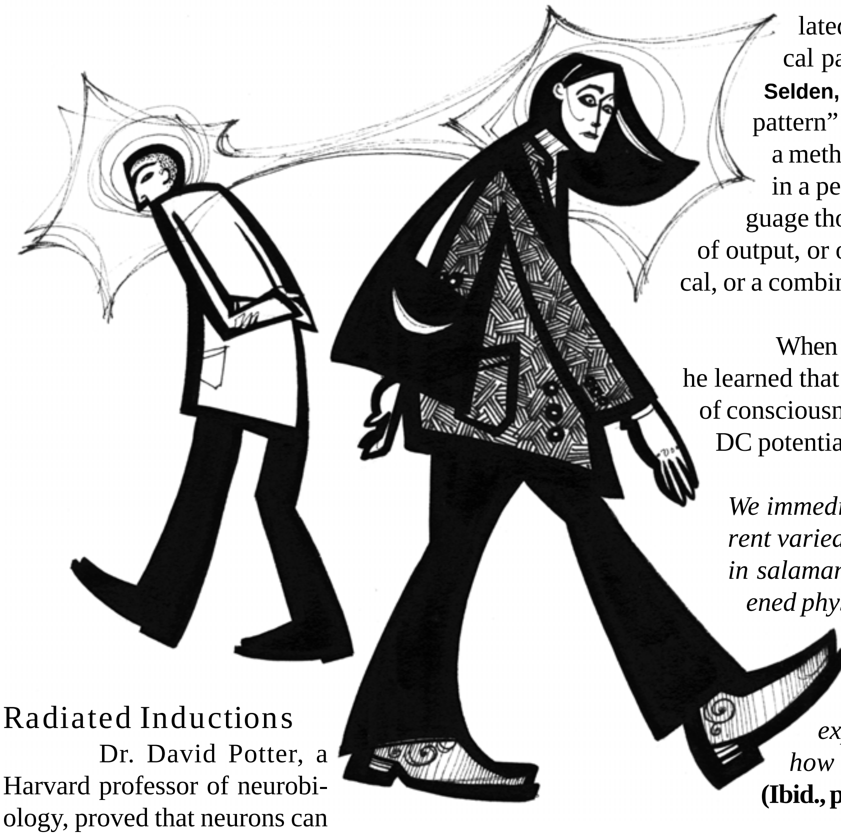

Radiated Inductions

Dr. David Potter, a Harvard professor of neurobiology, proved that neurons can communicate via electrical, as well as chemical, signals. The first stimulating of neurons by means of an electric signal sent through the air is credited to Galvani, a medical doctor who studied the effect of electricity on animals. In 1786, he discovered that the

> *...leg muscle of a frog placed at some distance from the spark of an electrostatic machine—a device for generating sparks—would twitch if touched by a scalpel when the machine was turned on. Experiments in the remote stimulation of nerves with electricity were not conducted again for more than a hundred years...* **(Brodeur, Ch. 2)**

Every pulse of electric current—in an axon, or anywhere else in the universe—generates an **electromagnetic field** around itself: "...every electric evoked potential is accompanied by a magnetic evoked potential." **(Becker and Selden, p. 241)**. Every human being's brain and body, therefore, generate an electromagnetic field. Magnetometer readings have proven the existence of the brain's weak, but very real, electromagnetic field. That field is not diffused by the skull, or dura, or air. It passes freely through and, holding its form, **radiates** outside the body.

Any electromagnetic field can be influenced by another, nearby, electromagnetic field, because nerve cells respond to electromagnetic fields as well as to electrical impulses. Becker, and other researchers, have shown that direct current, magnetic field, or microwaves when "modulated in various ways can force specific electrical patterns upon parts of the brain" **(Becker and Selden, p. 319)**. The forcing of a "specific electrical pattern" upon part of a person's brain can be used as a method of trance induction, or to insert a thought in a person's mind, or to stimulate an English-language thought in their pre-speech center. The source of output, or of reception, can be mechanical, or biological, or a combination of the two.

When Becker studied direct current in animal brains, he learned that current flow varied according to their state of consciousness! Then he did similar experiments on the DC potentials of human brains:

> *We immediately found that the back-to-front current varied with changes in consciousness just as in salamanders. It was strongest during heightened physical or mental activity, it declined during rest, and it reversed direction in both normal sleep and anesthesia. This knowledge led directly to the experiments...that taught us much about how hypnosis and pain perception work.* **(Ibid., p. 116)**

The Current of Injury Reverses Polarity

Becker began his experiments assuming that, in hypnoanalgesia, the pain was felt but somehow denied. However, his experiments proved that

> *...it was a real blockage of pain perception. It seems that the brain can shut off pain by altering the direct-current potentials in the rest of the body "at will." There's every reason to suppose that pain control through biofeedback or yoga likewise works by using an innate circuit for attenuating the pain signal...* **(Ibid.)**

The current that sends a message of body damage to the brain has a different polarity from the usual rule of positive brain and spinal cord, negative extremities. Becker called that message, communicated by means of reversed polarity, positive instead of negative, the **current of injury**. His experiments showed that anesthetic also reversed nerve current polarity from negative to positive. As the anesthetic took effect, negative potentials in the patient's extremities weakened, even vanished. If the patient was rendered completely, deeply anesthetized, "the potentials often reversed entirely, the extremities becoming positive and the brain and spine negative." Becker conducted further experiments with the help of an expert hypnotist. After the hypnotist gave a trained somnambulist suggestions of extreme arm numbness, Becker tested polarities:

> *In each case, I found that the frontal negative*

> *potential of the head became less negative, often reaching zero, as the client attained deep trance. The reading changed in the same direction as in anesthesia, only not as far...* **(Becker, p. 239)**

So, the brain can shut off pain by reversing direct current potentials.[1] Becker, working with the hypnotist, then demonstrated that the brain can control and change these body electrocurrents when the change is suggested under deep hypnosis. He also recognized that he had found a physiological proof of hypnosis: "We found we could use this difference [in current direction] to determine whether a person was really hypnotized or just cooperating." **(Ibid.)** The CIA had that on their 1950s goals list: a foolproof way to know if a person was really hypnotized or just pretending. By now, maybe they already knew what Becker thought he had just discovered.

Neurons

Specialized cells called **neurons** perform the physical work and make the mental magic of mind. Instructions given in hypnosis are ultimately commands to neurons. All the brain structures are made up of neurons. Every habit is something that happens, fundamentally, at the neuron level. Every time you do something again, you reinforce the synaptic paths for doing that behavior.

There are nearly a trillion neurons in the entire human nervous system. There are many types of neurons. They vary wildly in size, shape, and function. **Neurons have chemical, bioelectric, and biomagnetic capabilities**. The total number of potential connections between those neurons approaches infinity. As we learn, our neurons literally grow and make new connections that model that learning. New nerve fibers grow and branch out from the tips of earlier branches, and new neuron connections are forged. Neurons are the ultimate communicators.[2] They use electricity, chemistry, and magnetism to communicate.

Most neurons have a main cell body, plus a tail called an **axon.** Pulses of electricity travel along the axon fibers away from each cell center at periodic intervals. The frequency of **pulses** depend on the neuron's degree of excitation. A neuron fires from one to sixty pulses a second down its axon tail. It fires one pulse per second when at rest, its most **inhibited** state. It sends sixty pulses a second in its most **excited** state.

Axon lengths vary. Axons from neuron to neuron in your brain may be as short as a few centimeters or as long as the diameter of your brain. Axons that go from the central nervous system to body extremities may be much longer. The far end of an axon splits into myriad branches. Each branch ends in a **bouton**, a connector that settles itself close to the surface of another neuron.

The outside of a brain neuron is completely covered with barnacle-like connecting boutons from other neurons. The neuron's surface also has many extensions, called **dendrites**. The cell's outgrowth of dendrites increases its available area for the boutons of other neurons to snuggle in. Every neuron is, inextricably, part of a larger neural community, with potential instant sharing of information.

Chemical Communication—One of the ways in which a neuron can affect other neurons is by squirting any of a wide variety of chemicals, called **neurotransmitters**, from its axon tip across the **synapse** (gap) into **receptors** in a neighboring neuron. The pulsed electrical signals that come down an axon are translated into **neurotransmitters** at the axon tip. Each type of neurotransmitter has both a distinct shape and distinct magnetic characteristics. They shoot out of the bouton's transmitter-producing sacs like pellets blasted out of a shotgun. They are propelled across the sliver-size gap between the bouton and into the **receptor** which the adjacent neuron has grown for that purpose.

Electrical Communication—Any induction is a physiological event, because brain function is physiological. The bioelectric state of a neuron is either off, or on, because it is either **firing** or **not firing**. Pavlov called the state of firing, **excitation**. He called the state of not firing, **inhibition**. He also used the word "inhibition" to mean the **slowing down of activity in the higher brain which results in trance**. He called lowering consciousness, **spreading inhibition**.

Pavlov was theorizing that level of consciousness results from the dynamic interaction of two opposing neural functions: **excitation** and **inhibition.** In his era, neuronal synapses and their firing patterns had not yet been discovered. We now know that he was correct. A neuron that is not firing is inhibited. Anything that slows down the firing rate of neurons-or completely prevents them from firing—is **inductive.**

Excitation in one neuron can spread to surrounding neurons. A bunch of excited neurons may take over other brain centers, exerting more and more brain control. Inhibition has a necessary, natural, protective function in the brain: "an enormous synaptic powder barrel which would explode in epileptic convulsions in the absence of inhibitory elements." **(Delgado, *Physical Control of the Mind*, p. 156)** Inhibition helps neurons to ignore messages that are not for them. Inhibition activity balances the excitatory firing capacity. Inhibition is not a passive process but an

---

[1] Pain relief is one of the standard uses of hypnosis. I used to think hypnotic anesthesia was merely a negative hallucination. Suggestion in any form, during trance by any name, if accepted by a susceptible person's unconscious, can relieve pain (or cause it). Becker's research clarified the mechanism involved.

[2] One of the marvels of modern science is that researchers can insert a tiny glass electrode into a living nerve cell, stimulate it to send a message, and then actually listen to the ensuing conversation between it and other cells amplified over loudspeakers: a patterned communication. **(Montgomery, p. 26)**

> *...active restraint, like holding the reins of a powerful horse....During the organized performance of behavioral responses, most neurons and pathways must remain silent to allow meaningful orders to circulate toward specific goals. Inhibition is as important as excitation for the normal physiology of the brain, and some structures have specialized inhibitory functions.* **(Ibid.)**

On the other hand, when the conscious, decision-making, analyzing mental center of the cortex is completely inhibited, what is left is **automatism** (somnambulism). When the OSS sponsored a scientific conference on inhibition during World War II, papers were presented on the induction of trance. When Delgado spoke of **inhibitory mechanisms**, he meant whatever lowers consciousness. **Whatever lowers consciousness inhibits the conscious mind and increases suggestibility**.

Direct Currents

Study of electrical currents in the nervous system goes back to the 1940s, when Ralph Gerard and Benjamin Libet measured direct currents in a frog's brain. In 1958, electric currents were detected in the glial cells of rat brains. Also, about that time, Dr. Bob Becker left a first career in orthopedics to begin thirty years of research in bioelectricity. Soon he could predict the **voltage** and **polarity** of a nerve before testing it. He learned that the brain and spinal cord are positively charged; the extremities are negative. Neurons are normally

> *...polarized, positive at the input fiber, or dendrite, and negative at the output fiber, or axon.* **(p. 106)***...this electrical polarization might be what guided the impulses to move in one direction only, giving coherence to the nervous system.* **(Becker, *The Body Electric*, p. 106)**

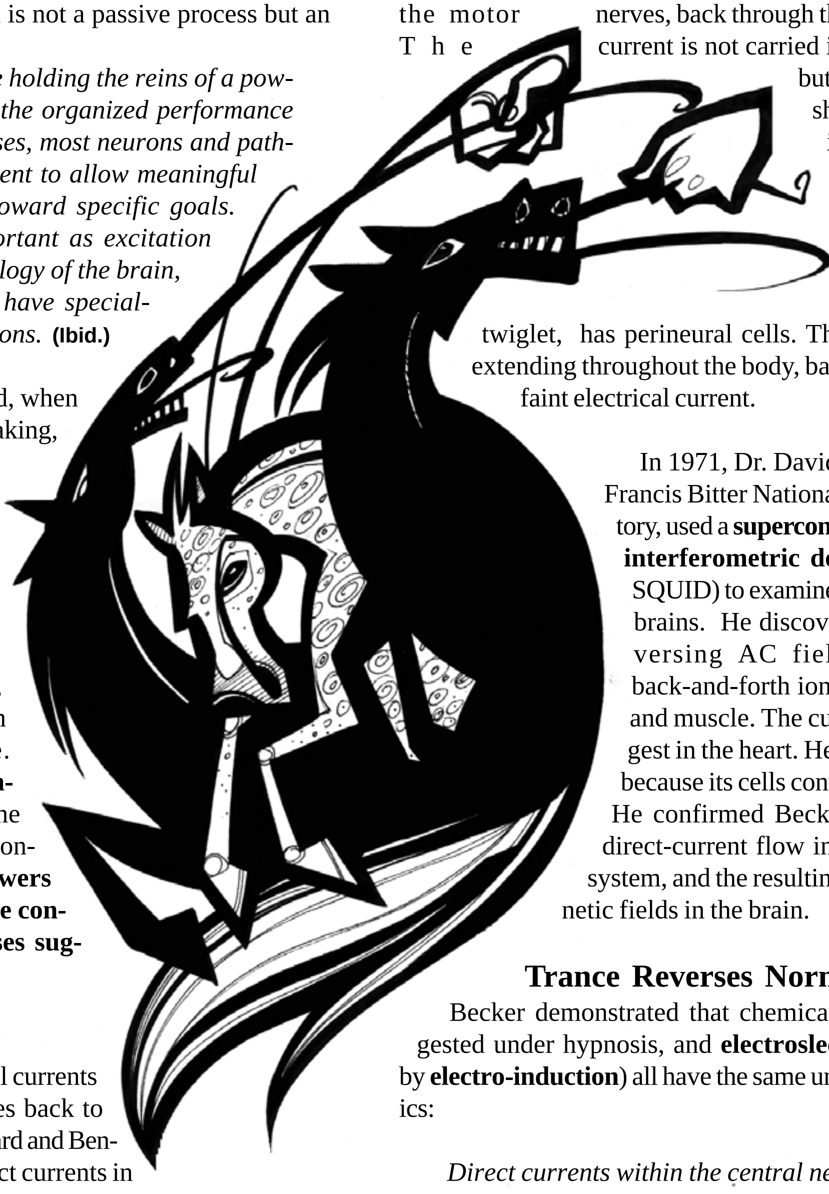

That coherence is the normal bioelectric current which flows in a nervous system. The current is **positive** or **negative**. Its current flows in a loop: out from the brain through the motor nerves, back through the sensory nerves. The current is not carried in the nerve itself, but rather in the outer sheath of the nerve, in the **perineural,** or **Schwann, cells**. Every part of the nervous system, even the tiniest twiglet, has perineural cells. They are a network extending throughout the body, bathing every cell in faint electrical current.

In 1971, Dr. David Cohen, at MIT's Francis Bitter National Magnet Laboratory, used a **superconducting quantum interferometric device** (nicknamed SQUID) to examine electric current in brains. He discovered a quickly reversing AC field produced by back-and-forth ion currents in nerve and muscle. The currents were strongest in the heart. He deduced this was because its cells contract in synchrony. He confirmed Becker's discovery of direct-current flow in the nerve sheath system, and the resulting steady DC magnetic fields in the brain.

Trance Reverses Normal Polarity—Becker demonstrated that chemical anesthesia, suggested under hypnosis, and **electrosleep** (trance caused by **electro-induction**) all have the same underlying biophysics:

> *Direct currents within the central nervous system regulated the level of sensitivity of the neurons by several methods: by changing the amount of current in one direction, by changing the direction of the current (reversing the polarity) and by modulating the current with slow waves. Moreover, we could exert the same control from outside* [the subject's body] *by putting current of each type into the head.* **(Becker, pp. 112-113)**

That is a remarkable realization!

☞ *Electric currents (or electromagnetic fields) can cause inhibition. They can produce anesthesia, defined as absence of waking consciousness. The absence of waking consciousness is trance. Certain electric currents or electromagnetic fields can produce trance, acting from outside a body!*

> *A strong enough magnetic field oriented at right angles to a current magnetically "clamped it," stopping the flow. By placing frogs and salamanders between the poles of an electromagnet so that the back-to-front current in their heads was perpendicular to the magnetic lines of force, we could anesthetize the animals just as well as we could with chemicals, and EEG recordings of magnetic and chemical anesthesia were identical. We got the same effect by passing a current through the brain from front to back, canceling out the normal current of waking consciousness, as in electrosleep.* **(Becker, p. 238)**

Becker learned that waking from trance caused by a magnetic field did not resemble the lengthy wake-up from chemical or direct-current electrical anesthesia. Instead, it resembled the awakening from a merely verbal induction of trance.

> *...as we decreased the strength of the magnetic field, normal EEG pattern returned suddenly, and the salamander regained consciousness within seconds.* **(Becker, p. 113)**

Becker's research made clear that electronic induction from outside the body could be done by forcing slow waves on the brain, by reversing brain polarity, by reducing the waking current flow, or by using a magnetic field: electrical anesthesia! Specific potentials exist of chemical, electrical, and biomagnetic effect on neurons—resulting in the induction of trance. It was only a matter of time before **induction machines** based on one, or more, of these physical principles would be developed.

Options

The neuron has a broad spectrum of communication options. It is not limited to its two firing extremes of one and sixty pulses per second. It can change the type of neurotransmitters it emits. By growing more, or fewer, receptors, it can change its sensitivity to the neurotransmitters which are sprayed against its outer membrane by other neurons. It can change the metabolic rate of a neurotransmitter producer, or of a receptor, slowing it down, or speeding it up. A neuron can also reduce, or increase, its number of axons, or its production of a particular neurotransmitter. Certain neurons are sensitive only to certain neurotransmitters. Other neurons are only able to communicate to a limited range of associates.

Those options are inhibiting factors which help keep order in the universe of the mind. A neuron does not have to say either "yes" or "no." A wise neuron does not let itself become carried away in an explosion of excited response. It gives cautious, halfway, responses. It only becomes partly excited. Because of that wide variation in its possible responses, it has the ability to exercise caution. A neuron can say "maybe," or "I'll think it over," or "I'm waiting for more information," or "I'll pray about it." It can also reject excessive inhibition. It can reject unwelcome trance induction attempts.

Pavlov's Four Induction Types

The methods which lower consciousness have many different names. Physiologically, however, all induction techniques can be divided into just four basic categories. Pavlov first pointed out these four routes to **cortex inhibition/trance**. The **four Pavlovian types of trance induction** are:

1) **Sensory deprivation** (too little cortical stimulation)

2) **Sensory overload** (too much, or chaotic, cortical stimulation)

3) **Brain syndrome** (lack of food, sleep deprivation, or sickness affects cortical ability to maintain alertness)

4) Lowering of consciousness caused by an outside force using **chemical**, **electrical,** or **electromagnetic** means to disrupt function of the targeted cortex.

The next sections explain what is inductive, and why, and how to make choices between inductive influences. That information can help you avoid unwanted manipulations.

Type 1 Induction: Sensory Deprivation Shuts Down the Analyzer

Sensory Deprivation Experiments

☑

Deprivation and Concentration Inductions

☑

Induction by Shift to Right Brain

> ***...it should now be apparent that relaxation techniques will have to be thoroughly reported to the patient or subject as producing that condition that many people in the past have characterized as hypnosis.***
>
> **Edmonston, *Induction of Hypnosis*, p. x**

The author of that quote expressed doubt, however, that professional hypnotists would submit to the ethical principle he had just stated. As a more realistic solution than trying to make hypnotists be truthful, Edmonston urged better public education: "An educated, knowledgeable populace is better able to make a well-reasoned choice than one held in relative ignorance...." **(Ibid)**.

Any **induction method** weakens or shuts down the cortex. Any inhibiting process which limits the analyzing function (central to your conscious mind and its ability to evaluate and make decisions) is inductive. The **analyzer** in your brain is your conscious evaluating, deciding self. It is your **ego**. It is you. When your conscious mind goes offline, you are either in trance or asleep. Type 1 inductions are inhibition caused by **sensory deprivation**. Anything that slows down, or reduces, thought, or reduces sensory or mental input tends to lower consciousness.

> *..Human beings...need to explore new and chang-*

> *ing conditions...Organisms function best when their level of activation is moderate, and they try to avoid both too much and too little arousal.*
> **(Suedfeld, *"The Benefits of Boredom,"* p. 67)**

Many influences can cause us to **lower consciousness**, at least a little, and then (in that lowered state) accept persuasion. A state of lowered consciousness is **trance**. Trance always begins with some process that **inhibits.** Four common ingredients of a **sensory deprivation** (**Type 1**) **induction** are:

1) **Passivity:** a behavior pattern of submission to the leader's thought suggestions.

2) **Eye closure:** sensory deprivation of sight, the most stimulating sense, contributes to brain inhibition.

3) Advice to "**relax**."

4) **Focused concentration**: for example, first on breathing deeply, then on a series of fantasy images, and on the leader's voice.

Other Type 1 inductions are classic sensory deprivation, progressive relaxation, highway hypnosis, boredom, repetition, mind blanking, and shift to right brain.

Sensory Deprivation Experiments

Sensory deprivation was discovered by Donald Hebb, McGill's Chairman of Psychology. In 1950-51, as Chairman of the Canadian Defense Research Human Relations Committee, Hebb was invited to a meeting of British, American, and Canadian military psychologists. One topic was the bizarre Russian "confessions" then going on as part of the Stalinist purges. Another topic was the American discovery that U.S. troops manning early-warning stations in the Arctic were listening to Radio Moscow because they could not receive any other stations. The military asked the psychologists if listening to only one station—Radio Moscow—would turn the troops into Communists.

Hebb thought up an experiment to test a very extreme version of the Radio Moscow situation. When he got back to McGill, he hired twenty-two subjects, mostly graduate students, for $20 a day (a lot of money in 1951). All promised to stay in the experiment for a minimum of twenty-four hours, with an option to stay for five days (and earning a whole $100!). Each volunteer was placed alone in a room. The room was miked, so any sound he made could be heard by the researchers. He wore goggles over his eyes that blocked every form of patterned light. Only diffused light could get through. The subject's arms—clear down to the fingertips—were covered by cardboard tubes to prevent him from using his sense of touch. Each subject wore headphones over his ears. Via the headsets, some subjects heard **white noise** (meaningless static). Others heard "Home on the Range" played over and over, or stock-market quotes, over and over, or nonsense syllables, over and over.

When they saw the setup, six of the twenty-two volunteers backed out right then and there. The average stay of those who did give it a try was forty-three hours. Eleven quit even before the promised first twenty-four hours was up. The longest anybody stayed with it was 139 hours (five 24-hour days, plus nineteen additional hours).

What happened to the brains of those volunteers who were subjected to that extreme sensory deprivation surprised Hebb. They could keep coherent thoughts for five or six hours. After that, **they began to be unable to think clearly**. Next they experienced **visual hallucinations**, and maybe also auditory and tactile hallucinations:

> *One man saw squirrels with packsacks on their shoulders marching in single file over a snow field, another not only saw a space ship in the 'sky' but felt projectiles fired from its guns hitting his arms. One of the experimental team, a clergyman who was in graduate psychology under Hebb, thought he was going crazy before he had passed even 24 hours: he hallucinated a whole scene that began with a stone sending ripples out over the surface of a woodland pool. Then naked boys dived in from above the trees, followed by naked women—at which point the researcher got himself let out....*
> **(Anne Collins, p. 51)**

It was an important experiment in the history of psychology. Hebb had discovered that brains need steady and varied input from their environment to stay in a normal mental state. After less than a day under conditions of sensory deprivation, the subjects came out with their brains, temporarily, less functional. Their IQs were lowered. Their reaction times were slowed. Some of the students had persisting illusions. One, because of an illusion of seeing the world as flat, almost had a car accident. It took as long as 24 hours for their brain functions to fully return to normal.

Hebb also learned that denial of sensory input dramatically increased receptivity to any **patterned input**. If he gave subjects a choice of white noise or "Home on the Range," they quickly came to love "Home on the Range." He let some subjects listen to

> *Passages of propaganda in favor of innocuous theories they thought university-educated science students would be fairly resistant to: a belief in ghosts and extrasensory perception; and the antievolutionary point of view.* **(Anne Collins, pp. 51-52)**

Hebb reported that:

> *The effects of the propaganda were the only ones that showed signs of lasting beyond the experimental period...A number of the experimental subjects, unlike the controls, went to the library to borrow books on psychical...research, mind-reading and so forth; there were spontaneous reports of being afraid of ghosts late at night, for the first time in the subject's experience; and reports of trying to use ESP in card-playing...* **(Hebb, 1958)**

Another experiment on sensory deprivation, done by other Princeton researchers, produced similar results. The sensory deprivation predisposed subjects to accept uncritically whatever they were told:

> *After they had spent twenty-four hours in the darkroom, he played them a tape with a propaganda talk in praise of Turkey...the students now felt very friendly towards Turkey. With a group of students, however, who had not been in the darkroom, the propaganda had little or no effect.* **(Lausch, p. 223)**

The U.S. sponsored more sensory deprivation experiments.

> *Under experimental conditions, some people have succumbed to sensory deprivation within one-and-a-half hours, whereas others have maintained adequate function for thirty-six hours or more.* **(Hinkle, in Biderman & Zimmer, p. 33)**

Eventually, all of Hinkle's subjects began hallucinating. If a brain cannot obtain outside stimulation, sooner or later, it will manufacture its own. The early sensory deprivation research made clear that:

1. Brains must have a constant inflow of new data to function normally. Constant learning is a physiological need!

2. The less input there is to a brain, the more susceptible and suggestible that brain becomes to whatever input is available.

3. The most effective programming system will endeavor a) to minimize other inputs as much as possible, while b) delivering its own propaganda, educational material, training, beliefs, etc., to a maximized degree.

Hypnotic Chambers

Research on sensory deprivation led to the development of the **hypnotic chamber**. This was a room, or a complex of rooms, built in such a way as to minimize sensory input and thereby create sensory deprivation. For example, a biofeedback training room is "dimly lit, soundproofed...no distractions." **(Pines, p. 58)** Likewise, you leave the relaxed pastels of the outer hallway and enter a series of rooms dedicated to hypnosis research at a major northwestern university by walking through a soundproofed door.

You are now looking down a hall about thirty-five feet long which has several doors leading off from it. One leads to a conference room, another to an observation room where watchers can peer through a one-way glass window into the interior of the adjacent induction room. Inside the induction room, all the walls and doors are painted a bizarre, dense black. No pictures, signs, clippings, or graffiti relieve that bare blackness, only the "mirror" provides a little visual interest.

Not only is the visual setting starkly transformed from the outer environment, but also you have stepped into a distinctly different acoustical environment. No sound whatsoever from the bustling corridors outside can stimulate or interrupt thoughts in here. Voices (or screams) inside these black rooms cannot be heard outside. There is a faint hollowness to spoken voices, like sounds in a cave. It is an absolutely soundproof environment.

This, and every other, hypnotic chamber is a structural embodiment of the operational principle of sensory deprivation that every trance inducer understands. He turns down the lights, quiets the room, suggests that the subject close his eyes, quiet his body, slow his thoughts. That deprivation leads to lowered consciousness, heightened suggestibility.

The CIA mentioned plans for a hypnotic chamber in a memo titled "Interrogation Techniques, " dated January 14, 1953:

> *If the services of Major Louis J. West, USAF (MD), a trained hypnotist, can be obtained and another man well grounded in conventional psychological interrogation and polygraph techniques, and the services of Lt. Colonel_____, a well-balanced interrogation research center could be established in a especially selected location.*

That research center, apparently, was built. West wrote his friend Aldous Huxley in 1961 **(Huxley, *Moksha*, p. 186)** that his latest experiments involved sensory deprivation, and that he had a superbly equipped laboratory in which to do them.

An untitled CIA document, from about 1956, details plans for a more advanced hypnosis lab:

> *This laboratory will include a special chamber, in which all psychologically significant aspects of the environment can be controlled. This chamber will contain, among other things, a broad-spectrum polygraph for simultaneous recordings of a variety of psychophysiological reactions of the individual being studied. In this setting the various hypnotic, pharmacologic, and sensory-environmental variables will be manipulated in a controlled fashion and quantitative continuous recordings of the reactions of the experimental subjects will be made.* **(quoted in Scheflin & Opton, p. 498)**

A one-person induction room of this type is marketed to private parties for eliminating "outside sense stimulation." **(McGill, 1991, p. 19)** The Hypnotic Chamber is six and a half feet high, three feet wide, and four feet deep. The subject enters through a door, then lies down on a deeply reclining (sixty degree), thickly padded surface, and closes the door. (It opens from the inside.) There is a little light in the Chamber ceiling for staring at during induction. It has an intercom system so that a person outside the Chamber can talk to one who is inside, and vice versa. "Experimental results with the Chamber have proved remarkable in the depth of trance induced." **(Ibid.)**

The **isolation tank** is another type of sensory deprivation environment. The subject floats in the tank on top of warm, salty water (so salt-saturated that a person cannot sink in it) in a totally dark, soundproofed, and silent room. In the isolation tank persons have reported experiences ranging from insight to hallucination.

Randall N. Baer

The autobiography of Randall N. Baer, *Inside the New Age Nightmare*, details many trance induction methods. By the age of fifteen he was already a New Age trance junkie. He tried it all: from LSD to Silva to yoga. It was Baer's two books on crystals which kicked off the crystal excitement among New Agers. He marketed "treatment" in a room in which the subject was exposed to a powerful inductive combination of "New Age music, subliminals, brain-drive [brain wave synchronizing] machines, films of occult symbols, and swirling light-shows." What Baer promised customers in his treatment room is what most New Age programs offer: trance induction. He wrote that "a large percentage" of the subjects did enter trance in that room. He delivered his "product" in over a thousand sessions.

Then, touched by the words of a television evangelist, Baer became a Christian. His book was very helpful to me. Shortly after publication, the brakes in his car unexpectedly failed; it crashed, and he died.

Deprivation and Concentration Inductions

Any type of mental focus or concentration lowers consciousness somewhat because of sensory deprivation. Whenever we strongly **focus attention** on something, we tend to **dissociate**. When dissociating, we become more suggestible. Our consciousness is always tending to split. Unaware, automatic actions are governed by a part of consciousness that is split off from the rest, by a specialized network of neurons. Those specialized neural networks do not have an analytical system of their own. They possess so little power of criticism that they accept suggestions quite readily. Here follows a list of inductive methods that rely on a combination of sensory deprivation, and concentration on a single idea, to work.

A hypnotist's long, dull, monotonous monologue causes sensory deprivation. It bores the subject into trance. Bramwell's 1903 induction method became a medical standard still in use today. He used a quiet and somewhat darkened room to reduce sensory input. He told the subject to "just let it happen," and then bored and suggested him into trance:

> *I then say: "Presently I shall ask you to look at my eyes for a few seconds, when probably your eyelids will become heavy and you will feel impelled to close them. Should this not happen, I shall ask you to shut them, and to keep them closed until I tell you to open them. I shall then make certain passes and suggestions, but I do not wish you to pay much attention to what I am saying or doing, and above all you are not to attempt to analyze your sensations. Your best plan will be to create some monotonous drowsy mental picture and to fix your attention upon that"...*
>
> *After these explanations, and having darkened the room and instructed any spectators to remain quiet, I place my patient in a comfortable chair and request him to look at my eyes, at the same time bringing my face slightly above and about ten inches from his...I continue to look steadily at him and make suggestions. These are twofold; the patient's attention is directed to the sensations he probably is experiencing, and others, which I wish him to feel, are suggested. Thus: "Your eyes are heavy, the lids are beginning to quiver, the eyes are filling with water. You begin to feel drowsy, your limbs are becoming heavy, you are finding it more and more difficult to keep your eyes open, etc."* **(Bramwell, *Hypnotism*, pp. 50-51)**

He suggested monotony, "heaviness," and the idea of **sleep**. The suggested sensations, of course, are the first illusions that the subject is being directed to experience. They are elementary exercises in robotic unconscious obedience.

Massage, and Mesmeric "Passes"

Charles Tebbetts told his hypnotherapy students that **massage** is also inductive. The old-time mesmerizers sometimes did not even touch the subject, stroking only the air just outside the subject's body. Esdaile described his procedure:

> *Desire the patient to lie down, and compose himself to sleep, taking care, if you wish to operate, that he does not know your intention; this object may be gained by saying it is only a trial; for fear and expectation are destructive to the physical impression required.... make the room dark, enjoin quiet, and then shutting your patient's eyes, begin to pass both your hands, in the shape of claws, slowly, within an inch of the surface, from the back of the head to the pit of the stomach....Repeat this process steadily for a quarter of an hour, breathing gently on the head and eyes all the time.* **(Esdaile, pp. 145-146)**

Esdaile had only just begun. After half an hour, he began to add verbal suggestions of sleep to the passes. He kept this up for as long as eight hours straight, as long as it took to get the subject to a coma depth trance. Esdaile was an English surgeon in India. He had no anesthetic but trance, so he had to induce profound depths. He performed the most challenging operations of his time on those mesmerized patients. After Esdaile started the induction process, his assistants continued it. That freed the doctor to operate on a patient who was already in a catatonic coma.

The stroking of a beloved's body induces lowered consciousness. Massage in general—even a good back rub—tends to be inductive. Schilder and Kauders pointed out the common ground between the erotic and the inductive:

> *Gentle speech, shouted rebukes, manhandling, are not only devices in the technique of hypnosis, but also in that of erotic seduction, "fixation," stroking—certain* [induction] *techniques even make very extensive use of stroking the body—are common both to hypnosis and to the erotic.* **(Schilder and Kauders, p. 35)**

Relaxation

A relaxation induction simply may be a regular verbal hypnotic induction with the word "relaxation" substituted for the word "sleep, and "deeply relaxed" substituted for "deep sleep." It will work just as well that way. When you relax, your brain waves slow, and consciousness lowers.

Progressive Relaxation—Edmund Jacobson researched the link between relaxing muscles and slowing brain waves. He learned that suggestions to relax cause a disguised induction. Jacobson published a specific sequential series of suggestions to relax various muscles of the body. He called his system **progressive relaxation**.

It specified wrinkling and unwrinkling the forehead for ten minutes, then relaxation exercises for the eyelids, then the eyes. (Boring, wearying repetition, such as the wrinkling and unwrinkling of one's forehead for ten minutes, causes sensory deprivation and is inductive.) Near the end of the series, the operator (which he called the practitioner) was to bring his index fingers closer and closer to the subject's eyes until the subject was staring at one fingertip.

Jacobson learned that his "relaxation" suggestions could be used to induct groups of people as well as individuals. Although Jacobson called his system "progressive relaxation," he knew that it was actually a system for hypnotizing persons. In his book on the subject, he described outward signs of successful relaxation, which clearly reveal a trance state:

- **Increasingly slow responses** to interruption, or complete failure to respond
- **Sleepy-eyed appearance** of a subject after successful relaxation

> *...when the individual learns to relax the eyes while open, their vacuous appearance, with the facila musculature so relaxed that it is expressionless, is characteristic...* **(Jacobson, 1924 edition, pp. 574-575)**

Medical and therapy workers, sports psychologists, and others, now often use some variant of Jacobson's progressive relaxation. A patient who goes to an emergency room with a severe migraine headache, is likely to be treated, in part, with progressive relaxation followed by visualization of imagery. Both are powerful induction tools. Once the patient is in a suggestible state, the nurse will give positive suggestions to relieve the headache. Hypnosis is a treatment for migraine that usually works.

That treatment, however, involves a disguised induction. Physiologically, the induction of relaxation is identical with the induction of hypnosis, and **relaxation** is a common type of disguised induction. Edmonston pondered the ethics of that situation:

> *If a patient refuses "hypnosis" as part of treatment, is it ethical for the medical attendant to say to the patient: "All right, I won't use hypnosis in your treatment, I'll just teach you how to relax"? Has our knowledge of the relationship of relaxation to hypnosis placed us in the ethically awkward position of having to deceive, "for their own good," patients who are resistive to the use of hypnosis? Are we now forced to an "end justifies the means" position, in which the practitioner must live with a sin of omission...in order to benefit the patient?* **(Edmonston, *Hypnosis and Relaxation*, p. 215)**

Repetition

Repetition strengthens **unconscious habit**. Whatever is to be drilled into your brain is repeated over and over. A short commercial, repeated ten times, programs you more effectively than a longer one repeated only three times. Advertisers know that, alas.

Repetition has an inductive effect on the brain. By monotonous and incessant repetition, a sensory input, that began as a **stimulus,** can become an **inhibiter** of neurons. For example, by repetition of an indifferent stimulus in a continuous, monotonous manner, Pavlov bored dogs into trance. The meditator who is saying his mantra, over and over, is using a repetition induction. Herbert Benson, in *The Relaxation Response* (1975), although himself a meditator, pointed out that a special mantra is unnecessary, because any repeated word accomplishes the sensory deprivation to put you down.

A constant, unvaried, loud noise can also put a susceptible human being to sleep. I saw public school students in a Michigan "open" classroom in a tight huddle with their teacher, heads close together, saying, "Ommmmmmm," before beginning their computer class. The head teacher then realized that the guest speaker in their school was staring, wide-eyed, at the ommers. (I was surprised to see that New Age and Eastern religious practice was a classroom routine in a public school where Christian prayer was not permitted.) She rushed over and told them to stop.

A researcher named Das subjected persons to the monotonous stimulation of a single tone to see if they would go into a trance, like Pavlov's dogs. It worked. One (non-hypnotizable) person merely felt bored. Two felt sleepy. But five were found sleeping after only thirty seconds, and six were found snoring. The monotonous tone had produced a Pavlovian state of inhibition. Das speculated that the faster his subjects became sleepy, and the more sleepy they had become, the more hypnotizable they were. (He also suggested a correlation between hypnotizability and **conditionability**—viewing hypnotizability as a survival asset.) **(Das, "*The Pavlovian Theory of Hypnosis*")**

Martin Orne wrote, "...peculiar types of repetitive, rhythmic stimulation" compel trance in hypnotizable individuals." **(article in Biderman & Zimmer, eds, *The Manipulation of Human Behavior*)** Listening to music, or watching the same video or rerun over and over, is soothing—and also inductive. "Hari Krishna, Hari Krishna, Hari Hari, Krishna Krishna," the Krishna Consciousness follower intones. Buddhist worshippers chant the same brief sentence over and over.

> *The group would all be on bended knees, chanting to a sacred scroll in front of the room. The chants were from an Eastern scripture called the "Lotus Sutra." There was a short, easy-to-learn chant which was the main focus of the religion. I was instructed to chant this phrase for 30-60 minutes every day...* **(Baer, *Inside the New Age Nightmare*, p. 9)**

Sufis use "dhikr" phrases, recited over and over together with others, or alone, "perhaps most effective when repeated silently in the mind and accompanied by special breathing techniques and physical movements." **(Sargant, *The Mind Possessed*, p. 75)** Meditators say their "mantra" word, or phrase, over and over, until the altered state is reached. If his consciousness raises, the meditator just goes back to saying the mantra, which creates sensory deprivation and lowers consciousness again.

Christians use repetition inductions, too. The congregation may sing favorite, deeply meaningful, verses, over and over, before it hears the sermon. The Catholic repeats "Hail Mary, full of Grace, blessed art thou among women and blessed is the fruit of thy womb, Jesus..." or "Jesus Christ, Son of God, have mercy on me, a sinner." Other congregations may sing old favorites, "Put your shoulder to the wheel, push along..." "On a hill, far away, there's an old rugged cross..." "Rock of ages..." It is inductive, but it is certainly not a moral error to repeat beloved, significant poems, songs, scripture verses, prayers, etc. "The Lord is my shepherd..." Sometimes, a lowering of consciousness is exactly what we are seeking in an attitude of worship.

Type 1 Induction Machines

A machine's stubborn mechanical insistence can break down human resistance and quickly access the subject's unconscious. **Induction hardware** comes in many forms. Type 1 machines are designed to accomplish cortex inhibition by causing sensory deprivation. They produce a **monotonous** (tone) or **meaningless** (white noise) sound, or a monotonous, meaningless, or very concentrated visual image.

The first hypnosis induction machine was the **Luy's light**, a machine which whirled a hypnodisk with a light on the side. The night that Dr. Jensen first hypnotized Candy Jones, he showed her **hypnodiscs** and other induction aids that used "flashing or rotating lights." **(Bain, p. 94)** The hypnodisc has tried and true efficacy in hypnotic inductions.

Hypnodiscs—Visual patterns affect the brain. They can also affect level of consciousness. Spinning light can induce hypnosis. I often glimpse some kind of spinning image, or spiral pattern, worked into a TV ad or at the opening to a show to lower consciousness and intensify dramatic effect. Television or film, especially shows for children and adolescents often use hypnotic elements such as spirals, spinning, or confusing images, and out-of-focus views—all of which tend to lower a viewer's consciousness, especially if that viewer is a young person.

A hypnodisc may be as simple as a piece of white paper with a black spiral design. It can be viewed motionless, or rotated. The rotation can be done by hand, but it is most effective when the hypnodisc is spun mechanically by attaching it to a revolving pin in its center. Hypnodiscs have varied in size from thumbnail diameter up to five feet wide, or larger. Stage hypnotists have mounted a large disc on their platform (and put a significant percentage of the audience into trance by its influence).

A hypnodisc is inductive because the spinning spiral focuses the subject's attention on a series of optical illusions and tires his eyes. The operator may reinforce that effect with a verbal suggestion to experience an illusion: "You feel you are being drawn into a deep, dark, revolving cone." Or...

> *"...The white circles become more prominent, then the black...it seems to recede in the distance and you feel as if you are drawn into it. Your breathing becomes deep and regular. You get drowsy, very drowsy. Soon you will be asleep."* **(Wolberg, 1948, p. 143)**

A **metronome** makes a simple, repeated, rhythmic sound. Some induction metronomes are combined with a small light that flashes in time with the sound. Staring at the swaying of a **Chevruel's pendulum,** or into a **mirror**, **hypnodisc**, or **Luy's light** also is inductive. Other mechanical induction aids used in the history of hypnosis are Luys' revolving mirrors, the hypnoscope, color contrasting cards, and a silver spoon used to reflect candlelight into the subject's eyes.

Recorded Inductions

George Estabrooks first proved that a hypnotic induction could be accomplished by means of a recorded patter ("A Standardized Hypnotic Technique Dictated to a Victrola Record, 1930). He produced the first widely distributed **recorded induction**.

Audio and videotaped induction, followed by helpful suggestions, is now big business, especially in the motivational, habit-changing, and self-improvement businesses. The recording typically begins with an induction to **lower consciousness** and **increase suggestibility**—followed by the suggestions.

For example, at **stop-smoking clinic**s the client hears the initial hypnotic conditioning and suggestions live, then takes home a taped version. He listens to that tape several times a day until the craving to smoke subsides. (It usually works.) Some **hypnotherapists** have a specific tape for every routine problem that may come into the office: eating too much, eating too little, nail-biting, nose-picking, flashing, frigidity, etc.

Mind Blanking

Mind-blanking or **thought- stopping** was, and is, a common induction technique. This method creates sensory deprivation and bores the subject into lowered consciousness.

> *...concentrate the subject's mind upon some one unimportant thought to the exclusion of all others. This thought must, indeed, be so unimportant that when it is the only thought entertained the mind is almost absolutely passive.* **(Cook, p. 78)**

The "sound of one hand clapping" is an unimportant thought which is also confusing (another inductive technique.) The image stops thought because it is **illogical** and **paradoxical**. Therefore, it causes a sensory deprivation.

A similar thought-stopper is the statement: "If a tree falls in the forest, and no one is there to hear it, does it make a sound?" (Yes, it does. A deer browsing nearby would hear it fall. Plants broken under the weight of the fallen tree would "hear" it. The temptation in that thought is to imagine that the universe only exists if "I" perceive it. That is arrogant, self-centered, and false.)

I heard a radio deejay asking rapid-fire questions of callers: "If you had to choose one: no nose or an extra nose in the middle of your forehead—-which would you choose?" "If you were cold in bed, would you rather put on another blanket or turn up the heat?" "Don't stop to think, just answer." That is a paradox style of induction. It sidelines the analytical, thinking conscious mind.

Yoga instructions are inductive. None are openly called "hypnotic," but all lead to trance. Richard Hittleman's *Guide to Yoga Meditation* used a thought-stopping induction. The TV guru told readers that thinking was a bad thing and that they should avoid thinking as much as possible, because many thoughts "include useless concern, false anxiety and foolish daydreaming." **(p. 43)** Thought-stopping is an effective induction technique, so Hittleman's suggestions, if taken literally, could propel a susceptible person into a state of near constant trance (vigilambulism).

Nielsen seduced Palle into hypno-robot condition partly by using the lure of pride. Hittleman used similar grandiose language to describe trance. He said that a person with no consciously recognized trance experience was "sleeping." His term for a person who was beginning to experience sessions of lowered consciousness was "awakened" or "enlightened." He said that this enlightened person can

> *...transcend his ordinary mind...You have a great responsibility not only to yourself, but to your fellow man to advance your development as far as possible...* **(Hittleman, pp. 63-65)**

Trance can, and does, "transcend" ordinary mind. It can put you more in touch with the truth, or less. Beware of pride in trance, because pride can be the root of evil, the tool of the deceiver.

Hittleman warned that "Usually there is a great inner struggle as one treads the winding path between the states of 'wakening' and 'enlightenment." **(*Ibid.*, p. 66)** That "struggle" may be your conscious mind trying to keep you grounded in reality. Similarly, Nielsen urged Palle, repeatedly, to overcome his "resistance." Nielsen trained Palle to stay in a prolonged trance. Hittleman also urged the reader to stay in trance by an act of will: "...whenever you feel that it has deserted you, simply will it back." **(Ibid., pp. 68-69)**

Two other advocates of Eastern-style induction instructed:

> *...sit down, be quiet, watch your mind, bring it to one-pointedness, bring it back when it strays—which it most certainly will within the first ten seconds—over and over again.* **(Goleman & Thurman, *MindScience*, p. 106)**

Thought-stopping inductions can be nonverbal. They can be part of any religious context. The Montanists were a Christian sect; about 200 AD they held forefinger to nose during prayer and that centered focus soon lowered consciousness. Residents of certain Greek Orthodox convents of the Onphalopsychists on Mt. Athos achieved trance by staring at their navals. In 1666, Brother Lawrence, an humble French monk, wrote similar instructions to develop a sustained trance:

> *Let it be your business to keep your mind in the presence of the Lord. If your mind sometimes wanders or withdraws from the Lord, do not be upset or disquieted...The will must bring the mind back...Become accustomed to recalling your mind to the Lord often. As you do this more and more you will find it easy to keep your mind calm in times of prayer and to recall it when it wanders.* **(Brother Lawrence, *Practicing His Presence*, p. 82)**

The psalmist recorded the most simple, and powerful, instruction in this category: "Be still, and know that I am God." **(Psalm 6:10)**

Trance is a door to the spiritual realm for those persons with genetic capacity to experience it in that manner. Trance is the mind channel that opens us to that which is transcendent and holy. However, trance can also open us to that which is corrupting, degrading, and unholy. May we have the grace of God to discern the difference between various trance situations and trance contents. May God protect us from all unholy, corrupting, or abusive trance relationships.

Eyes Have a Role in Induction

Eye Focus—Staring into your own eyes in a mirror is inductive. Staring into somebody else's eyes when they are close to you can be inductive also. In fact, **staring** at anything has inductive potential. Staring causes sensory deprivation, and thus it tends to lower consciousness. It is normal for your eyes to shift freely around, looking at various objects. Eye movement prevents eyestrain. If you stare fixedly at a close object for even as little as five or ten seconds, your eyes will start to tire. Hypnotists call the point you stare at, the "target."

Staring at a **target** causes **eye fatigue,** which can lead to **eye closure,** which can lead to "sleep." The target can be a candle, an unshaded electric light, an object swinging on the end of a chain, somebody else's eyes, or your own eyes seen in a mirror.

Eyes become even more fatigued if the target is **above** eye level. Rolling your eyes upward correlates with, and may actually generate, increased alpha. So when trance inducers ask you to stare at a fixed point, the target is probably above normal eye level, causing eyestrain. Or it may be close to your eyes, which causes discomfort in focusing, another type of strain.

There are many common applications of that principle. Eye fixation is the intuitive function of symbols—national flags, religious symbols, organizational icons. And those symbols are usually displayed above eye level. Eye fixation has real psychological impact in the intensity and focus of a ceremonial setting. "I pledge allegiance to the flag..."

Eye Closure—A hypnotist usually maneuvers for, or asks for, eye closure early in the induction. Eye muscles are the smallest muscles in your body, and the most easily tired. After a brief period of upward staring, a subject tends to close his eyes if the operator suggests that they are "tired" and "strained." They are! But accepting that suggestion further decreases sensory input. And imagining that the operator has already been able to make magical things happen in you ("tired, strained" eyes), also deepens trance.

Eye closure instantly, significantly reduces sensory intake, because sight is the dominant human sense. Any time you close your eyes, alpha brain waves immediately increase. If the room is quiet, and you sit or lie quietly, auditory and tactile input is reduced. The less meaningful the input you are receiving, the more focused and suggestible your mind will be to whatever is coming through.

Any time somebody tells you to close your eyes and pay close attention to his words, he is, intuitively or consciously, striving to lower your consciousness. Any time you close your eyes and **visualize** something, you are entering a more suggestible **hypnoidal state**. Any time somebody tells you to close your eyes and then spends a period of time directing you to visualize a series of things or do a series of acts with your mind or body, he is conditioning you for deeper trance and greater suggestibility. The outcome may help you, or it may harm you. You must be able to discern the difference.

Obedience Conditioning

"Will you help me?" my young daughter asked.

"Okay," I agreed.

She began to read instructions to me out of a book: "First raise your head," she requested. (I did.) "Now lower it. Now turn it to the right. Now turn it to the left. Now stick out your tongue." (I continued to obey, through various commands, letting her be the operator pulling my puppet strings. "Fine," she encouraged me. "Now open your mouth. Now close your mouth. Now clap your hands. Now close your eyes."

I was now sitting quietly with my eyes still obediently closed.

"SLAVE!" she chortled triumphantly at me.[1]

A hypnotic induction is often a long series of suggestions which the hypnotist wants the subject to obey. To achieve induction and deepening, it does not matter what the suggestions are, as long as the subject is kept busy obeying. A subject who is busy obeying does not slip out of trance and start thinking for himself.

A popular sales training system teaches salesmen that, if they can cause a client to obey any two suggestions, he becomes likely to obey a third one, too. That is the force of habit. Human beings are tremendously fast learners. Even two times can be the beginning of a habit that is difficult to shake. Or even once. "Pretend" inductions, abstract conditioning, and disciplined conditioning are all types of obedience inductions.

---

[1] Quoted from **Schwartz,** ***Tomfoolery: Trickery and Foolery with Words*, p. 42.**

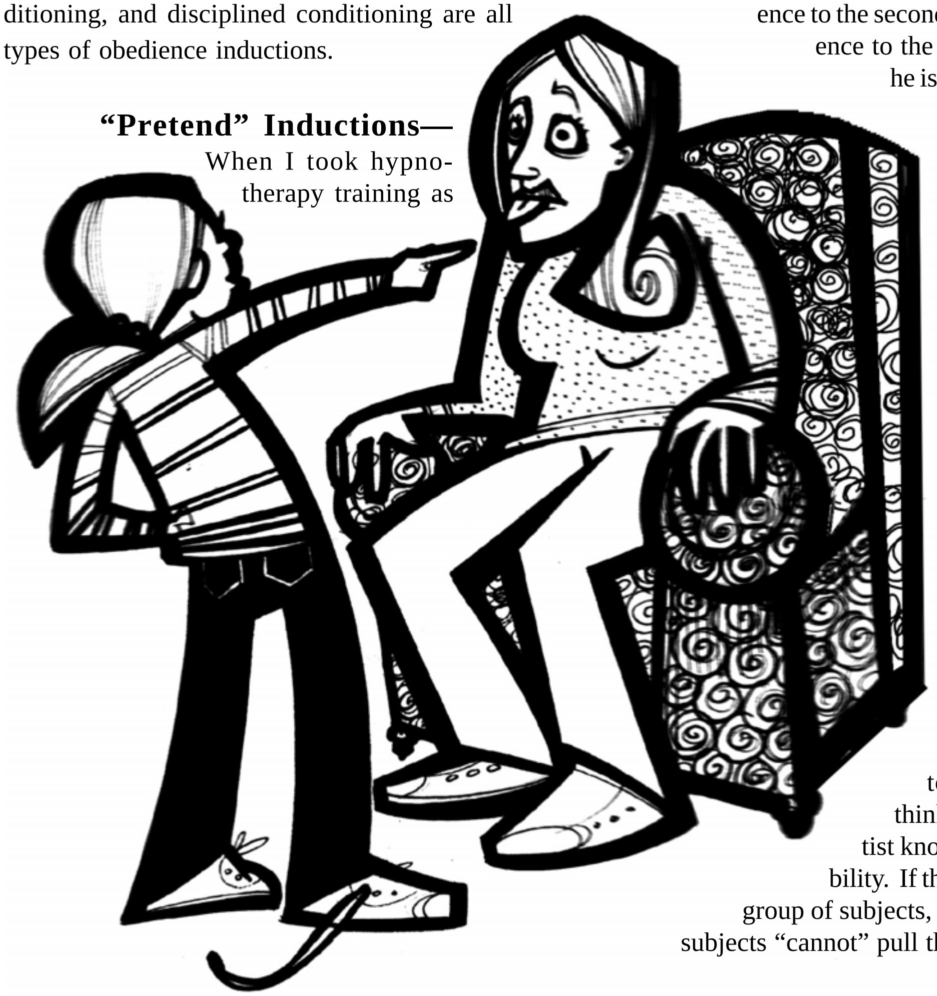

"Pretend" Inductions— When I took hypnotherapy training as part of the research for this book, I learned about "**pretend" inductions**.

If a subject agrees to pretend that he is hypnotized, he will become hypnotized, sooner or later. His consciousness lowers because he keeps taking orders. The principle is "use it or lose it." If a person keeps taking orders, completely turning off his own analytical powers and behaving like an automaton, his power of self-willing (ability to say yes, or no) starts to fall asleep. It has nothing to do.

Abstract Conditioning—If you can make a person believe that he is hypnotized, and therefore act hypnotized (mindlessly obey), soon he will be hypnotized. **Abstract conditioning** is an induction technique which fools a subject into believing that he is hypnotized before he actually is. Believing it, soon, makes it so.

All hypnotic training creates **conditioned responses**. Livingston Welch, a behaviorial hypnotist, first reported and analyzed this phenomenon of **abstract conditioning**. In this method, the hypnotist tells his subject to do one thing. Then he tells him to do a second thing. Obedience to the second command is compelled by obedience to the first one, but the subject assumes he is obeying because of the hypnotist's mysterious powers.

For example, a stage hypnotist gives the **handclasp challenge**. He challenges his subject to clasp his hands in front of him, keep them clasped—and then try to pull them apart. The subject's hands will not come apart because his knuckles are in the way. He can only pull them apart if he unclasps them first. The handclasp challenge induction tricks the subject into believing that the subject cannot control a part of his own body because of the hypnotist's suggestion. The subject's inability to move is more than just an illusion. The hypnotist challenged the subject to do something that the subject thinks he can do, but which the hypnotist knows is actually a physical impossibility. If the handclasp challenge is given to a group of subjects, the hypnotist then observes which subjects "cannot" pull their hands apart:

> *Note them! They are the ones that you can control!...these people are awake and, in spite of it, you have succeeded in contacting their subconscious minds, thus completely controlling them.* **(Powers, *Advanced Techniques of Hypnosis*, pp. 83-84)**

The handclasp challenge identifies susceptible subjects and also begins the process of induction. A subject who believes he is hypnotized may then act hypnotized. A person who acts hypnotized, just like someone pretending to be hypnotized, very soon may actually be hypnotized. The pretender, and the believer, have the same outcome—lowered consciousness. That is abstract conditioning.

The **eye focus induction** is another example of abstract conditioning. The hypnotist first tells his subject to gaze steadily at a single bright object. His second suggestion is that the subject's eyes are becoming tired. In truth, those eyes are getting tired because it is hard and unnatural to gaze fixedly at a bright object. The hypnotist may then suggest that the subject's eyes are beginning to blink. In fact, eyes do start to blink under these circumstances (trying to rest from gazing fixedly at the bright object.)

A third example of abstract conditioning is the open-your-eyes-with-eyeballs-up challenge. The hypnotist has told a subject to close her eyes, and, with eyelids still closed, to roll her eyeballs upward as if looking at a visualized spot in her brain. In that condition, he tells her to notice that her eyelids "are beginning to stick tightly together, are now stuck shut, glued shut." Then the hypnotist challenges her, while keeping her eyeballs rolled upward, to open her eyes. She cannot do that because nobody can do that. When the eyeballs are rolled upward with the lids closed, the little muscles that raise your upper eyelids cannot function.

Abstract conditioning is often used as a disguised induction.

Discipline Conditioning—If you act like somebody is your boss, and do everything he says, pretty soon you develop the habit of not thinking for yourself in that person's presence any more. Boot camp runs on this principle. Let me add, however, that a pattern of doing the opposite of what you are told is equally unthinking and robotic. Inability to accept instruction is even more handicapping than becoming somebody's robot. The best mental condition is a condition of free choice: choosing to do it his way, or your way, based on your reasoned analysis of each situation. It takes time and effort, however, to analyze a situation. Under conditions of haste or stress, unthinking obedience is more efficient. Under conditioning regimens, it is also more rewarded.

Parents, teachers, and military trainers traditionally lean on discipline conditioning. The longer the process of giving and taking orders continues, the more likely the subject is to put his own brain on a sidetrack and let the chief do all the thinking. Trained military rank-and-file are said to be good hypnotic subjects because of their obedience training.

Dr. Cook told student hypnotists to choose a prospective subject, then

> *...lead him gradually to submission. Incidentally tell him of your hypnotic knowledge...Then dare him to let you hypnotize him. It is best to commence on some young man about sixteen years of age, who is accustomed to working under a hard boss for little pay. He is accustomed to obedience...* **(Cook, p. 132)**

So, a sensory deprivation induction can result from accepting repeated coaxing—or orders—to be passive, submissive, obedient. That series of instructions conditions the subject to accept ever more demanding suggestions. Hypnotists have a specific name for the inductive/deepening effect of giving a series of commands: **pyramiding of suggestion**s.

> *...pyramiding of suggestions serves to increase the depth of hypnosis, for as each suggestion is obeyed, the subject inevitably falls deeper into the state...If a subject will obey simple suggestions, he will obey difficult ones.* **(Gindes, p. 165)**

R.W. White further explained how the pyramiding of suggestions works:

> *...the urgent character of his words, their power to keep the subject attentive in spite of his drowsiness, lies...in the fact that they consist of requests, commands, and suggestions...By the measures which he takes to exclude distraction, and especially by his words, the operator tries to maintain a state of mono-motivation, a focal press of dominance, and the subject is given little alternative except to continue the deference which made him susceptible in the first place or else to display a resistive autonomy which under the circumstances could hardly be distinguished from aggression.* **(quoted in Moss, p. 143)**

If being "good" can make you overly accepting of authority, is it ever good to be "bad"? YES! Curtis MacDougall told a relevant story in his book, *Hoaxes* **(New York, Macmillan, 1940):**

> *A coin about the size of a fifty-cent piece was passed around a class of forty-eight boys from fourteen to seventeen years of age with instructions to examine it carefully. At the end of the class period the instructor asked each boy to draw a picture of the coin, indicating the position of the hole in it. Although there was no hole, all but four of the forty-eight indicated one, some even drawing two holes. Of the four only one, the bad boy of the class unaccustomed to obeying orders, was positive that there was no hole.* **(MacDougall, Curtis D.** ***Hoaxes.*** **N.Y.: Macmillan, 1940)**

One day, the fate of the nation might depend on the ability of citizens to recognize that there really is no hole in that coin! Society needs to cherish and protect the right to existence (and to free speech) of its "bad boys" who are insusceptible to illusion and who can sound the alarm: "THE EMPEROR HAS NO CLOTHES!"

Induction by Shift to Right Brain

After going through an extended step-by-step trance induction technique, we were told by the instructor to imagine ourselves to be in a house or dwelling of our own design...Extensive instructions guided us in creating every detail and exploring every aspect...After many hours of repeatedly going through this process, the inner sanctuary actually started to take on a type of reality of its own...an eerily "real" status...

- Baer, *Inside the New Age Nightmare*, p. 10

In the quote above, Baer was describing a Silva Mind Control group induction that involved extensive **visualization**. Anything that shifts you toward right-brain function tends to be inductive. Visualizing imagery, music, singing, art, imagination, and retelling dreams all tend to lower consciousness, because they all shift you toward right-brain function. Visualization of **imagery** directly and powerfully shifts you to **right brain** function. The visual hemisphere (usually the right one) is far more emotional and hypnotic in nature than is the left. While visualizing, you may sense lowered consciousness. Or, after entering trance, you may spontaneously shift toward right-brain function and begin to visualize.

Visualization Induction

Visualization of imagery requires a shift to right brain function. Mental focus on, and work with, images tends to have a consciousness-lowering effect. It is often used in combination with other methods. When the hypnotist suggests the image which his subject is to imagine, that is **directed imagery**.

Visualizing images makes any associated suggestion more effective. Some hypnotists say that a suggestion will not be effective unless it becomes visually imaged in the subject's mind. Teachers—and salesmen—know that teaching, or selling, is most effective if the student, or prospective customer, visualizes something. A classroom program called "Confluent Education" starts first graders in a program of trance training by having them visualize the sun radiating within them, followed by other images. That is the induction. Then the teacher says, "You are inwardly perfect and contain all the wisdom of the universe within yourselves." That is the programming.

Ideomotor Induction

When you read someone's body language, you are observing her ideomotor response. If she says "yes," but shakes her head at the same time, then the real answer is "no," because body language is always more truthful than verbal language. The ideomotor response may reflect important data that the conscious mind does not have. You are not consciously aware of those tiny muscle movements of ideomotor response unless you have taught yourself to notice whether your head nods or shakes in response to thoughts.

Ideomotor movement is an automatic (unconscious), muscular response to unconscious thought. For example, if you think "go," your going muscles awaken with a flicker of response, which is suppressed by an opposite response of the staying muscles if it is not yet possible to go. What you think of, your muscles automatically act out in a tiny way. What you think is what you do.

Ideomotor response does not need a hypnotic induction to take place. It is sometimes used as a disguised induction. Concentrating on perceiving your ideomotor responses tends to be inductive, because it shifts your mental focus to an unconscious mode of response. Any ideomotor response is a dissociated one.

A common example of ideomotor response is the use of a small pendulum to elicit answers to questions. The swinging pendulum is called Chevreul's pendulum because it was invented, in 1833, by a Frenchman named Chevreul. He also proved that the movements of a dowser's rod and those of an ideomotor pendulum were both unconsciously activated, and registered unconscious thinking. (Dowsing can be a very helpful skill because it visibly registers tiny manifestations of the magnetic field that conscious minds cannot perceive. Water, flowing underground, generates a magnetic field which the unconscious minds of about half of those who try can detect.) LeCron pioneered the use of ideomotor responses in the U.S. using a Chevreul's pendulum or finger signals to register faint information from the deep unconscious. In hypnotherapy, answers can be obtained this way without a client having to fully remember something painful.

The subject chooses, or is told, what movements of the pendulum will mean "yes" or "no." The subject's unconscious—which is always aware and noticing—then acts accordingly. For example, if you think to yourself, "My left index finger will rise if the answer is no; my right, if the answer is yes," you have set up an ideomotor signaling system. LeCron told the hypnotized person, "Your left thumb will rise if the answer is yes; your left index finger will rise if the answer is no."

Noting the swing direction of a glass ball on the end of a chain also invites an ideomotor response. A washer or ring tied on the end of a 10-inch thread works as well as a pendulum. There are four possible pendulum swings and each can be assigned a meaning in the ideomotor system: clockwise circle, counterclockwise circle, back and forth to your left and right, or back and forth in front of you. The four meanings can be: 1) yes; 2) no; 3) I don't know; 4) I don't want to answer the question. Persons using this system post those meanings on a visible card for ready reference. Or they may start by asking the unconscious what swing directions it prefers for which answer. Do that by thinking "yes" and see what swing you get. Then write that on the card. And so on.

Other persons find it helps to keep it simple. You (and your unconscious) decide, or are told, that the ball will swing one way if the answer is yes, the other way if the answer is no. Most ideomotor systems allow only that "yes" or "no" response.

Ever played 20 questions? A series of yes/no questions can get to the bottom of practically any problem. If you ask something an unconscious really does not know, however, it may come up with a pretend (confabulated) answer. It is important to understand that ideomotor response is not absolute truth. It is just unconscious opinion. It can be wrong, right, helpful, or deceptive. What you get depends on the programming in that person's unconscious.

If the information is coming from an isolated matrix of neurons in the unconscious, that is normal. If that matrix starts to define itself as an independent personality, it is a schizoid phenomenon. Schizoid simply means dissociated and is common to the point of normal for persons in trance. Unconscious centers of information tend to express themselves as if they had independent identity. If the neuronal matrix, however, generates false information, shut it off for obvious reasons.

Dream Inductions

Dreams emerge from the same right-brain unconscious that functions in hypnosis. Most people go into a spontaneous light trance state while telling, or even thinking about, dream material. That is true whether the dream is being publicly shared or privately considered. Remembering a dream—even listening to somebody else tell their dream and following their imagery with your mind—shifts you toward right brain and lowers consciousness. Trance state is the natural bridge between your inner and outer selves. Dreams are one form in which data crosses that bridge from the unconscious to the conscious. Dreams and their messages can be a precious source of insight, inspiration, and direct guidance.

Dream workshop leaders often ask a dreamer to "re-enter" the dream, "in a deeply relaxed state of consciousness," and then change or extend it. **(McLeester, *Welcome to the Magic Theater*, p. 115)** Changing or extending the dream may not be appropriate. Simply understanding it may be the best thing. Going into a dream under the direction of another person will lower consciousness.

Maternal and Paternal Induction Styles

There are two standard styles of hypnotic induction and trance management. The **maternal** is conventional, gradual, polite, and considerate. It avoids tones of authority or command. It is often used with Type 1 inductions and in hypnotherapy. The **paternal** style is abrupt, shocking, dictatorial, and highly authoritative in tone. It appears more often with Type 2 and Type 3 inductions.

> *One person begins to lead the fantasy by asking everyone else to relax, close their eyes and breathe deeply. Then they relate the bare script of outline of a fantasy, while the others picture it in their minds and watch what develops. The leader should relate the fantasy in the first person present tense, as though it is happening...and develop a slow, even pace...* **(McLeester, p. 83)**

This beginning of trance can develop elements of hypnosis.

Type 2 Induction:

Excitation Overwhelms the Analyzer

☑

Emotion Inductions

☑

The necessary condition...is...some kind of consciousness in which an emerging idea meets with no resistance from any other—in which, so to speak, the field is clear for the first comer. We know that a state of this kind can be brought about not only by hypnotism but also by emotional shock (fright, anger, etc.) and by exhausting factors (sleeplessness, hunger, and so on).

Breuer and Freud, *Studies on Hysteria*, pp. 258-9

notice!
DUE NOW!
OVER due
do this

Overstimulation of the cortex results in an involuntary cortical response of protective inhibition. It is a curious paradox of the human suggestibility spectrum that we are most susceptible to suggestion when external stimulation is minimal, or when it is maximal. Sensory deprivation can cause trance. Its opposite, **sensory overload,** also can cause trance. Sensory overload results in overexcitation. **Excitation** is the opposite of inhibition. Excitation is a condition in which the rate of neuron firing speeds up. Too much input (**stress**) causes too much excitation which, in turn, may cause a natural, protective **shutdown** effect. Shutdown equals **inhibition**. Inhibition, when it is caused by a protective shutdown, is Pavlov's **Type 2 induction.**

Beecher proved that the more stressed a person is, the more effective a pretend pill, **placebo,** will be at curing whatever he imagines ails him. The more upset, excited, disturbed, or stressed you are, the more suggestible you become. Any degree of cortex shutdown results in an equivalent amount of inhibition (lowered consciousness, trance).

Emotional Shocks

Brainwashing researchers have analyzed the types of **emotional shocks** and their power to devastate. Shocks are most likely to make a person suggestible—and to break him—when they are:

☐ intense

☐ repeated

☐ unpredictable

☐ uncontrollable

☐ linked to pressure

☐ incomprehensible

☐ humiliating

The stressful, overwhelming input can arrive via any sense: seeing, hearing, touching.... In 1960, CIA researcher Ewen Cameron jotted down plans to report his research on Type 2 **input-overload** inductions: "Also in paper, make reference to input-overload in terms of 1) sound 2) light 3) pain 4) verbal stimulation." **(Weinstein, 1988, p. 220)**.

Overwhelming Noise

Loud, rhythmic **noise,** such as prolonged, loud, drum beating—or sitting close to an unshielded dot matrix printer at work—can be inductive. When my dot-matrix printer goes into action, if I stay seated nearby, I will fall into a deep sleep within a few minutes.

Das demonstrated that response to loud, repetitive noise can predict hypnotizability. His better subjects could not keep their eyes open when exposed to that type of noise.

Loud noise is Type 1 in that it shuts out other sensory input. It is Type 2 in that it overwhelms, simultaneously denying varied auditory intake and overstimulating the nerve cells. That triggers the protective mechanism of inhibition. The cells turn themselves off. The subject goes into trance, and then on down to delta sleep.

Confusion

Another thing that overwhelms the analyzer is inability to make sense of incoming data: **confusion**. A confusion induction is a Type 1 (sensory deprivation) because it deprives the brain of meaning. It is also Type 2 (overloading) if you try to make sense of it, and cannot, but keep trying until you become overwhelmed by the confusion. So, if something does not make sense, avoid the assumption that the fault is a lack of intellect on your part. Your feeling that it does not make sense may be absolutely correct! The confusing statement may be for the purpose of induction rather than communication.

This morning I saw an advertisement on TV: a jumble of highly emotional, vivid, incoherent images. At the very last moment, in small letters in the center of the otherwise blank screen (an eerily clear and calm impression after the preceding intense, chaotic images) one word appeared, a brand name. The brain, if set suddenly adrift in a sea of nonsense, will clutch hard to the first sensible thing that comes along after the chaos. That brand name was the first image that was allowed to make sense.

I saw another Type 2 confusion TV advertisement on Super Bowl Sunday. It began with chaotic, meaningless images jumbled one upon another. Suddenly, out of the confusion, a bag of corn chips moved slowly, centrally out from a distant view on the screen "toward" me, its brand name clearly visible.

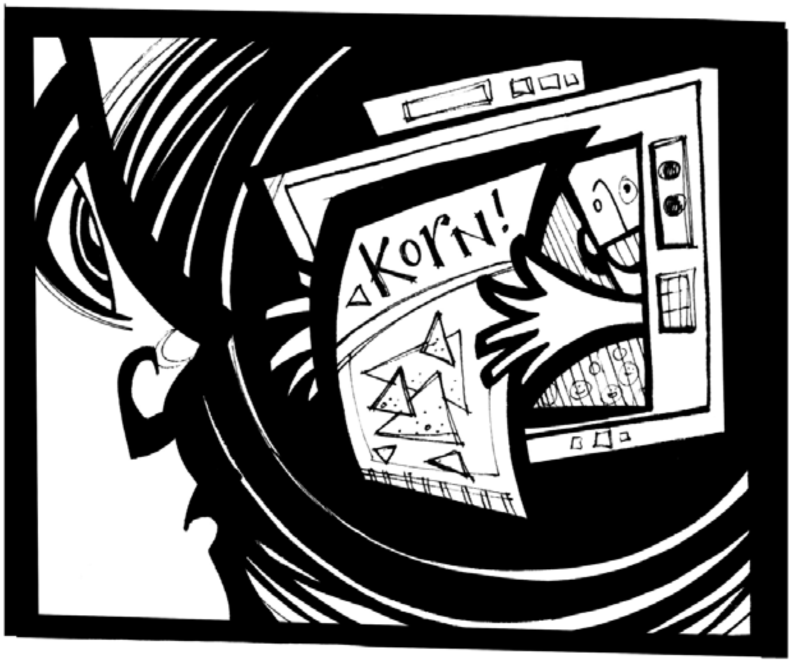

M. H. Erickson often did confusion inductions. "In all my techniques, almost all, there is a confusion." **(Erickson, et al., 1976, p. 85)** Sometimes, he caused confusion by using induction patter that was full of contradictions, plays on words, or a profusion of negatives. Sometimes, he did totally illogical and incomprehensible acts in an ordinarily predictable and regular setting.

For example, one day, the doctor took the hand of a woman he was meeting for the first time, as if to "shake" it. He ordered her to count backwards from 20 to 1. While she counted, he played games with her hand, putting light (seemingly random) pressures on various parts of it with his fingers. All this time, he stared at the wall behind her head, instead of looking at her face, as if he were looking right through her. He released her hand so slowly and gradually that, when he finally did let go of it, she was unsure of just when he actually had stopped touching it. Her hand, after his release, stayed outstretched, in a cataleptic condition.

Every element of Erickson's induction process had been done with the intention to confuse her, to dislodge her reality orientation, and to overwhelm her conscious mind. Seeing that catatonic hand, Erickson asked her, "Do you think you are awake?" That question further attacked her conscious orientation.

Other techniques that inhibit consciousness by creating confusion are:

- Rapid-fire statements.
- New demands given before any previous one can possibly be completed.
- Jumping from idea to idea in an illogical manner.
- Giving obviously mistaken instructions.
- Changing instructions, then refusing to admit that they were changed.

Emotion Inductions

We laid hands upon her, ministered inner healing to her, and she wept and cried before the Lord. She was totally set free from the grief of her father's death.

- *Herald of Hope,* Summer 1995, p. 2

Television advertising may begin with a shock, confusion, sensory deprivation, or relaxation induction. Advertising inserted into sports, drama, or news programming is most effective because viewers already are feeling excitement because of the preceding programming. Emotion is inductive. It creates suggestibility. "Intense emotion opens up the corridor to the subconscious because the conscious mind is inhibited by emotion," Charles Tebbetts told his hypnotherapy class.

Panic will do it. "...terror and pain produce a state analogous to hypnosis." **(Gindes, p. 49)** Rage will also do it. Brainwashers strive for it. Some religious inductions intensify emotion. Plain old life is the most common source of shock and suffering inductions. Crying causes hyperventilation which is inductive. (Tears also remove stress chemicals from your system.) Emotion lowers consciousness. Frank Laubach, a Christian mystic, described how pain had made him feel nearer to God:

> *This week a new, and to me marvelous experience, has come out of my loneliness. I have been so desperately lonesome that it was unbearable save by talking with God...something broke within me...How infinitely richer this direct first hand grasping of God Himself is, than the old method which I used and recommended for years, the reading of endless devotional books...how was this new closeness achieved? Ah, I know now that it was by cutting the very heart of my heart and by suffering. Somebody was telling me this week that nobody can make a violin speak the last depths of human longing until that soul has been made tender by some great anguish. I do not say it is the only way to the heart of God, but I must witness that it has opened an inner shrine for me which I never entered before.* **(Laubach, *Practicing His Presence*, pp. 9-10)**

When a person is deeply touched emotionally, he is in a state of **abreaction**. “Suggestibility can be enhanced, temporarily at least, by repeated abreaction.” **(Sargant, *Battle for the Mind*, p. 76)** People who share deep emotional experiences, again and again, bond. A client also may become more and more suggestible to whomever is coaching these experiences. Emotion can thus be a tool to heal deep wounds.

A church newsletter spoke of the healing of a lesbian:

> *She began weeping before the Lord, which released the Lord’s healing power into many of her traumatic childhood experiences. She was going between weeping and laughing for a long period of time as the inner healing continued...She came back for several times of ministry...a number of pains of the past being released...They never came back. Praise the Lord!* **(*Herald of Hope*, Summer 1995, p. 2)**

Expression of positive emotion can also heal:

> *I prayed for the Lord to give him deep holy laughter for the hurts, and after about thirty minutes of laughter (sometimes mixed with crying), the bitterness, the unforgiveness, and the physical pain in his body were gone.* **(Ibid.)**

For a rape victim:

> *As we ministered to her, she laughed and cried deeply about this great trauma in her life. The laughter and crying released the bitterness, the unforgiveness, the fears, and shame within. Dorothy was at long last free from the pain and shame of that terrible experience.* ***(Ibid.)***

Fear

Cheryl was an extremely susceptible hypnotic subject. Her husband, when angry, would yell so loudly at her that she became rigid with shock **(cataleptic)**. Then he would give her instructions. He had intuitively learned to use a fear induction on Cheryl, then tell her what he wanted her to do. Estabrooks wrote that “...emotional shock...gives us the phenomena of hypnotism and vice versa.” **(*Hypnotism*, p. 110)**

> *It has been known for many years by researchers in the field of hypnosis that terror, especially when created by physical torture, is brutally effective in enhancing the power and control of the hypnotic trance. The subject’s suggestibility increases, and he becomes more compliant...* **(Bain, *The Mind-control of Candy Jones*, p. 201)**

Any excitement or trauma (sudden fright, fear, terror, threats) makes you more suggestible. Fear (or any intense emotion) causes cortex overstimulation which results in Pavlovian **inhibition**. Inhibition equals induction. So, fear is inductive. The greater the fear, the deeper the potential trance. “Our own attitude as physicians causes us to avoid in principle hypnosis by intimidation, by shouting at the patient, frightening him...” **(Schilder and Kauders, p. 84)** Not all operators, however, have those moral principles:

> *If a subject is to be hypnotized and is quite frightened, the operator can take advantage of the fear for easy induction. The frightened person is already in hypnosis or on the verge of it.* **(LeCron, *Techniques of Hypnotherapy*)**

What Stephen King really does to readers and film viewers is provide the rush of trance induction by using fear. Excitement often peaks right before the commercial break in television programming. The product sells better that way because the viewers are in a suggestible state.

Fear, or lust, or any other path to lowered consciousness, can be addictive. Look at the grim faces in a gambling parlor. They hope. They lose. They suffer. But they take pride in their boldness, in the size of their suffering, the amount of their loss. Sometimes, they even win. Winning is a powerful emotional rush, a positive reinforcement that brings them back to those seductive machines and gaming tables to lose again, and again, because **winning programs the brain more powerfully than losing**. Human beings are designed to try, try again—if given a little encouragement. As a result, more and more gambling casinos are built, more and more lotteries established.

Sex Inductions

Last, but certainly not least, in the Type 2 category, is induction by **sexual excitation** and **orgasm**. Sargant's book, *The Mind Possessed,* devotes a chapter to the topic of sex inductions:

> *During the sexual act, especially if it ends in mutual orgasm, both partners achieve an intense... state of temporary brain excitement, which leads on to a state of sudden temporary nervous collapse and transient brain inhibition ....creating greatly increased suggestibility...* **(Sargant, p. 87)**

A married couple, during their honeymoon, quarreled fiercely. While his new wife was in a state of absolute rage, her husband shouted, "I'm sorry I married you!" Eighteen years later, she was still married to him, but she still felt deeply insecure because of his long-ago statement. A marriage counselor, whom the husband had asked for help, told him to say "I'm glad I married you" during her next orgasm (a comparable time of great emotion). The treatment worked.

Because erotic excitation and orgasm greatly increase suggestibility, ideally, the sex act results in imprinting a mutual sense of responsibility for, and bonding to, the partner—as well as freeing him from accumulated tensions. Like any other induction system, however, this one is easily distorted and abused.

About the Tension Induction and Hyperalert Trances

There is some public recognition that "sleep, sleep, sleep" suggestions can result in trance. There is no public recognition that "Alert! Worry! Earthquake! Hurricane! Fire! Fear! Evil! Satanic! Rape! Murder! Starvation!" suggestions can also result in lowered consciousness and heightened suggestibility. Though seldom mentioned in the research journals,[1] **tension induction** and the **hyperalert trance** are, in practice, often used. A basic propaganda rule is that the more upset people are, the more gullible they become. Any emotional state lowers consciousness and causes temporary cortex inhibition—a condition of greater suggestibility.

---

[1] In 1964 Arnold Ludwig published an article on "Tension Inductions and the Hyperalert Trance."

Type 3 Induction:

Brain Syndrome

> ***As the "brain syndrome" develops...the subject is quite likely to have thinking difficulties and sensory experiences, illusions, delusions, hallucinations, and projective or paranoid thinking...he may confabulate....***
>
> **Hinkle, p. 26**

Brain syndrome, Pavlov's Type 3 induction, is (like all other induction types) a physiological event. Hinkle first used the term while studying **brainwashing** for the Air Force. He wrote that brain syndrome is "not uncommon among men who have been through prolonged combat, or through prolonged and depleting activities of any sort." **(Ibid., p. 27)**.

Exhaustion can be physical, emotional, or both. Anything that pushes your brain out of its normal condition makes you more suggestible: exhaustion, hunger, sickness, lack of oxygen. A brief choking pressure on the subject's jugular has been used to induct. Alexander Cannon, an English medical hypnotist, created that very ugly induction method by pressing for "one minute or so." Then he gave hypnotic suggestions meant to turn that physiological unconsciousness into suggested trance. Lying, with head tilted downward, also causes an almost instant lowering of consciousness.

A traveler to Nepal described an incident in which his camera film was destroyed from a six-foot distance. The destroyer was a cruelly deformed young man whom he had just photographed. The devotee had achieved great trance depth, and associated psychic ability, by amputating three of his four limbs and keeping the remaining one permanently in a painfully contorted position.

Bernheim was the first researcher to write about brain syndrome. He pointed out that very sick and unconscious people behave as if hypnotized. Volgyesi theorized that trance had a natural protective function for a body under stress, because hunger, illness and exhaustion all lower consciousness. Childbirth also triggers an altered state of consciousness. In 1927, August Forel pointed out that animal hibernation physiologically resembles a coma-depth hypnotic trance. And a hen who is setting a clutch of eggs, attempting to hatch chicks from them, acts catatonic.

Brain syndrome is common. Exhausted people are more suggestible than rested ones. Researchers have observed many examples of trance behavior in fatigued persons, such as after a long bike race. The more exhausted (or hungry, or emotionally stressed, or ill) you are, the more suggestible you are, and the more you are likely to have a conversion experience or one of those limbic system **Aha!** experiences of realization.

> *Fasting, chastening of the flesh by scourging and physical discomfort, regulation of breathing, disclosure of awesome mysteries, drumming, dancing, singing, inducement of panic, fear, weird or glorious lighting, incense, intoxicant drugs—these are only some of the many methods used to modify normal brain function for religious purposes.* (**Sargant, *Battle for the Mind*, pp. 91-92)**

The list goes on: EST seminars, very stressful religious retreats, boot camps, certain holistic "medical" retreats (that induce vomiting, diarrhea, malnutrition, and do excruciatingly painful muscle probing), and the **vision quest** all fit here. Some persons have attended "those now-popular seventy-two-hour group encounters where exhaustion finally leaves you with shredded nerve ends ready to absorb anything." **(Malko, 1970, p. 3)** "Survival training" also may result in this type of induction:

> *Having had no food and little water for three days under such extreme conditions, most of us were walking wrecks...When we reached the destination around 2 A.M., half the group was near a state of total collapse. Numerous people were vomiting, one was having real medical problems...the "lid" of my mind was opened and my awareness soared into the starry heights.* **(Baer, pp. 18-19)**

Even in its early stages, brain syndrome impacts memory and may result in varying degrees of **spontaneous amnesia** or **confabulation**:

> *There may be a distinct hiatus in his memory, without its being noticed...More often he is vague, uncertain about details, and has temporary blocks of memory, especially for the nuances, or the finer (and sometimes the most important) details...As the "brain syndrome" develops...His orientation for time, place, and person becomes increasingly deficient.* **(Hinkle, p. 26)**

Randall N. Baer described the darker side of playing with one's mind in yoga:

> *Extended fasting, strict vegetarian diet, Hatha Yoga, chanting, and diverse prescribed physical purification exercises (like slipping a length of cloth down the throat to the stomach, and pulling it back up again)—all are combined into a highly disciplined regimen...There are extreme dangers involved in awakening the kundalini practices. I have observed numerous New Agers experiencing the subtle and extreme casualties—mental and emotional disruptions—involuntary physical movements (from uncontrolled spasms to incessant quivering), nervous system burnout, outrageous ego-inflations, sexual obsessions, intense delusionary states, hallucinations, and other quite undesirable side-effects.* **(Baer, p. 114)**

Combining Induction Types

Induction attempts often combine different types. Or, the induction may start with one type, then shift to another, and perhaps yet another. Operators may use television, video, or computer programming to combine subliminal messages with sound rhythms at the "brain synchronization" pace, or with visual, or anti-logic inductive elements. Any combination of inductive elements is possible, and all reinforce the others' effects.

Type 4 Induction: Chemical, Electrical, & Biomagnetic ("Psychic")

☑

> ***...a neurophysiological basis exists for the facilitation of hypnosis.***
> **Martin Orne[1], 1961, p. 175**

When a person's physiological state of consciousness is directly affected in an inductive way by an outside force: **chemical, electrical**, or **biomagnetic,** that is a Type 4 induction. Some Type 4 induction methods are very ancient. Others are on the cutting edge of modern research and technology. Chemical inductions are covered in Part II: Narcohypnosis. Electrical inductions are introduced in Part II: Electroshock. There is more on electronic and biomagnetic inductions in Part II: Mind-to-mind Inductions, and Psychiatry Is No Longer a Joke.

Beta is a **nonsynchronized** brain wave pattern. **Alpha** and **theta** patterns, the **hypnoid** states, are comparatively more **synchronized**. Anything that slows and synchronizes brain waves is inductive. Some induction devices require skin contact to work, using the subject's own nervous system as their signal carrier. Other signals are designed to radiate through the air, being received by the brain in a manner similar to a radio receiver. Both a skilled psychic inductor and an induction machine have potential to influence an unguarded, susceptible person's brain waves, shifting them from beta patterns into the slower, more synchronized alpha and theta patterns. The biologically, or mechanically-generated radiation, of a specific frequency aims to cause **brain wave synchronization** in the targeted mind.

Whether psychic or electronic, this process tends to be **extrasensory** in that it cannot be perceived by the usual senses: hearing, seeing, smelling, tasting, or touching. The signals can be recognized, however, by a sensitive and trained unconscious. They could also probably be recognized by sensitive and appropriately programmed electronic equipment .

---

[1] Whenever I see the name of a prominent research hypnotist coauthoring an article involving the physiology of hypnosis, the name of some obscure physiologist is listed first. That is the name it is catalogued under. So when you look up Orne articles, you do not see "Bioelectric Correlates of Hypnosis" or "Endosomatic Electrodermal Correlates of Hypnotic Depth and Susceptibility," articles which he coauthored.

Rock concerts have Type 2 induction elements, strobe lights and throbbing loud music, which create overwhelming sound and emotion. The influence of massed people simultaneously responding to the induction pressure is a Type 4 induction factor **Mass hysteria** is a natural process of brain wave synchronization caused by electromagnetic transmissions from massed, excited brains affecting each another. Mass hysteria is an induction effect caused by an extrasensory process.

Induction Machines

When a brain is in trance, it is in a condition of **brainwave synchronization**. Synchronization takes place on a spectrum, rather than as an absolute. In a fully alert state, the brainwaves are not very synchronized. As consciousness lowers, they become more synchronized.

> *Neuroscientists have recently discovered that special music calibrated at a specific beat per second merge the right and left hemispheres of your brain into a cohesive unit. Studies have shown that this synchronization can speed up the learning process two to five times while dramatically increasing the receptivity of your unconscious mind. Subliminal Success cassettes utilize this special music as a soothing background for the potent subliminal messages that are being directed to specific areas of your brain. While your conscious mind relaxes to the specially designed sounds, your subconscious mind is focused...* (**Ad for "*Whole Brain Synchronization,*" Western Research Institute, Thousand Oaks, CA, 1990)**

The first **electro-induction machines** were crude. They used comparatively large voltages, delivered by skin contact, to disorient the brain into a state of inhibition. This began in 1902, when Stephane Leduc, a French scientist, announced that he had put animals to "sleep" by sending alternating current through their heads. By 1907, the same thing was being done to humans: "By means of electric baths hypnosis may be induced either when the subject is being charged with electricity, or after the charge has been made, when sparks are drawn from him." **(Lapponi, p. 66)**

Between 1917 and 1963, Dr. Ferenc A. Volgyesi, in Hungary, hypnotized people by shocking them with a touch of his mitt-with-a-kick. (He marketed it as the "Faraday Hand.") Eastern European scientists produced **electronarcosis** induction machines which induced trance by passing a mild shock through the head, from temple to temple. These machines have been commonly used by therapists in the U.S.S.R. and France. An alternate system uses electrode contacts on top of the eyelids and behind the subject's ears to deliver alpha/theta frequency direct currents—a brain wave synchronization method. A young American developed a method to communicate patterned sound (speech and music) via skin contact **(Begich, *Towards a New Alchemy*)**.

In 1961, Martin Orne mentioned a method for silent, distance induction that did not require skin contact and which mimicked alpha waves. **(1961, p. 175)** He probably meant W. S. Kroger's Brain Wave Synchronizer. It was the first machine which was specifically designed to lower consciousness. Kroger and Sidney Schneider developed the **electric induction machine** between 1948 and 1957. Kroger first announced its existence in a 1959 article. Early versions of the machine used a pattern of flashing lights together with a repetitive signal in the alpha or theta cycles per second ranges.

The Brain Wave Synchronizer has been around ever since. It can now be turned on by remote control. Its soundless, invisible signal may affect any susceptible brain in the area, causing the human brain wave pattern to synchronize with that of the radiated electronic signal. Kroger tested 2500 patients with his machine: 80 % were affected; 50 % of the 2500 entered deep trance within five minutes. Trance is a state of increased suggestibility, a state in which suggestions can be given to develop the subject's condition into hypnosis. Hughes included the following quote regarding the use and efficacy of the Brain Wave Synchronizer in his textbook for student hypnotists:

> *Starting at 7 on Alpha I turn the speed higher at a very slow pace up to 10, then slowly back to 5, 4, or maybe slower, then up again. I watch the eyes very closely for that glistening, fixed stare... I do not stop until I see a fixity in the eye and facial expression. I turn the dial very slowly until I see this....*
>
> *Usually within 5 minutes the eyes will close and remain so. I take it from there with suggestion. Very rarely do I fail to get a workable trance at the first setting, and by workable trance I mean achieving at least a partial amnesia. In a very few cases it may take two or three sessions to obtain the desired control...in the last 269 cases I have had only two who did not achieve a workable trance.* **(quoted in Hughes, *Hypnosis: The Induction of Conviction, "How to Hypnotize Your Client"*)**

The machine is now regularly advertised in *Journal of Hypnosis* for about $550 and touring experts give how-to workshops on its use to professionals.

After the Brain Wave Synchronizer was invented, other electro-induction machines were marketed under various trade names. Edmonston offers a list of manufacturers, but it is out of date. Baer said many brands of zap-yourself induction machines were advertised in New Age magazines:

> *MC2, David I, Alpha-Stim, Neuro-Pep, Bio-Pacer, Isis, Somatron, and Graham Potentializer... readily available, ranging in price from $300 to $6,000....Most of these devices use goggles (for flashing light input) and headphones (for sound input), and have control consoles that coordinate the light and sound in order to induce controlled trance-states and psychedelic-like experiences.* **(Baer, p. 49)**

I have heard of a little shocker marketed to the New Agers to "heal yourself" with. Some early models caused brain damage. Later models have, supposedly, overcome that problem. The "virtual reality" technology fits in here. Most of this technology uses skin contact to send a message to the user's nervous system, transmitting through the moist conductor of skin and flesh, rather than zapping through air like the Brain Wave Synchronizer.

A pricey, electric inductor, called "The Learning Machine," is another member of this category. It is marketed, along with an array of educational and recreational tapes, by Zygon (Redmond, Washington). It combines goggles with earphones that position a sizable unit back of the ear. You arrange the gear on your head, find the switch, and down you go: "A digital program embedded in the CD, sends a combination of light and sound instructions through the headset to stimulate the optimum mind-state for learning." The company calls it "an amazing light-sound matrix that instantly relaxes your mind. This highly relaxed mind-state helps lock the new information into your memory."

The synchronizing waves in that type of machine come from a cassette tape. You cannot hear the inductive part. What you hear is an audio overlay of pretty music and positive suggestions. You do not hear the broadcasting on subliminal sound frequencies which has the potential to trigger a further lowering of consciousness and implant programming.

Flashing Lights

Lights flashing in a rhythm also can affect the brain in surprising ways. Researchers testing the **induction effect of flashing light** found that a strobe light, flashing at a certain frequency, can cause an epileptic to go into seizure. Byron Gysin invented a "flicker machine" that "caused hallucinations similar to mescaline or LSD." **(Lee and Schlain, p. 81)** Poet Ginsburg, while testing acid for the CIA, endured a flashing light timed to match his alpha rhythms. He, himself, had suggested the experiment, but he soon found it unbearable. Ginsburg told them to turn it off. They did. However, after the light was turned off, his feelings of terror still continued. I recently read about a powerful induction method that uses patterned, colored light.

The Magic Chair

A traveling huckster with a magical chair was giving free demonstrations. (Free demos are a good sales technique for any trance vendor because anything inductive tends to create longing to repeat the experience.) I watched another woman try it. She lay in the reclining chair with goggles over her eyes, from which light patterns flashed onto the thin skin of her eyelids. From plugs in her ears, huge and chaotic sound bombarded her auditory nerves. Her face soon relaxed into the characteristic mask-like expression of the deep trance state. Afterwards, she told us she had been having an ecstatic experience (hallucination) of blasting off in a rocket for the moon.

Then it was my turn to recline in the chair with the goggles over my eyes and the earphones in my ears. The goggles created a flashing light pattern; the earphones played throbbing music. For me, it was not ecstatic. I did not lower in consciousness, not even a little. Instead, I felt severe, almost unendurable pain: first in the back of my neck, then in my upper shoulder area. I did not have a visual hallucination, only that pain and annoyance from the headphone noise.

At first, I thought the pain was real. I felt around on my neck where it hurt, trying to massage the pain away. I then realized that my sealed unconscious was having to **convert** all that mechanical induction pressure into something other than trance, and its choice was the subjective impression of physical pain. It was all I could manage to force myself to continue lying there until the demonstration was complete. I was glad he kept it short.

...she had been having an ecstatic experience (hallucination) of blasting off in a rocket for the moon.

PART V

Legal & Therapy Issues in Criminal Hypnosis

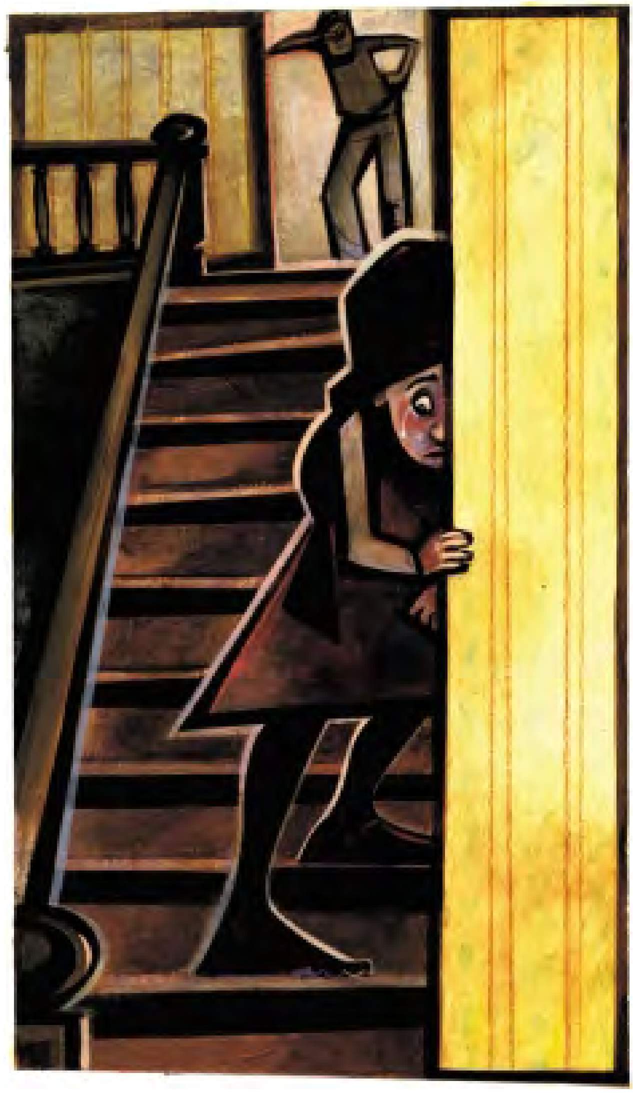

Interview with a Hypnotist Lawer

More Cases of Criminal Hypnosis: Tried and Untried

Texts and Training in Forensic Hypnosis

Public Spokesman on Hypnosis: Truth, Half-Truths, and Lies

Criminal Hypnosis is Possible: Wells and Brenman, Salter and Bowers, and Young

How to Identify a Victim of Unethical Hypnosis

Help and Healing

...her uncle...moved into the top floor of her family's house. He used hypnotic conditioning of Nora to facilitate his sexual abuse of her: "...the Monster Animal that Dr. Eldon put in the stairwell when I was three..."

Interview with a Hypnotist-Lawyer

> ***During the past decade, knowledge of hypnosis induction techniques has been obtained by an ever enlarging percentage of the public....the so-called "secrets" of hypnotism are becoming available to everyone, qualified or otherwise. There is no question that the number of criminal incidents related to the use of hypnotism will increase.***
>
> **Teitlebaum, 1964, p. 158**

In the late 80s, I spent an hour in the Spokane, Washington, office of an eminent lawyer-psychologist-hypnotist, Dr. Mays. He was articulate and efficient as he invited me into his large, expensively furnished office. There was a couch at one end of the room, and a couple of easy chairs facing each other in its center. I sat in one, he in the other. I asked to be allowed to tape our conversation. He agreed.

"Tell me about yourself," I said. "It's unusual to have both a degree in law and a Ph.D. in clinical psychology."

"My training has been in psychology and I've always practiced as a full-time clinical psychologist," he replied. "The legal training was a second thought. It's not as unusual as it once was. There are probably a hundred people in the country who have J.D./Ph.D.s and there are three programs that produce joint degrees—one at Arizona, one at Nebraska, and one at Stanford, because there's a significant overlap between the legal system and the mental health system in such areas as assessing competency for trial, in terms of looking at the function of memory in answering questions, and making some recommendations for the courts regarding child custody decisions, assessing competency to make a will...a host of other kinds of situations. I was interested in it academically, and when I had some veterans' benefits, when I had some time, I decided that would be an interesting thing to do. So, I applied to law school and enjoyed it. I don't want to practice law. But, on occasion, I'm approached about specific cases. I teach evidence at the law school with a friend of mine who is interested in the construction of reality, which [is] basically the rules of evidence allow[ed] to be presented to a jury. And I see that as just real similar to what happens with individuals who allow certain information to enter into their own awareness and respond to life and make decisions based on that..."

His voice droned on and on for five minutes, or more. (I left out a lot of what he said here.) His meaning became less and less clear. Or was my mind getting fuzzy, tired? Was I spacing out, giving up the contest to keep up with him intellectually? Or was I in lowered consciousness? My mind felt numb, stuporous. I said, "Um-huh" again. I had been repeating the nods and "um-huhs" throughout his long monologue, trying to pay close attention, trying to be polite. He had not paused once to acknowledge my "um-huhs." I wondered if his long obtuse speech was a **conversational induction**, a specialty of persons with Ericksonian training. Is that why my mind felt less clear than usual?

Dr. Mays now sat silent, waiting.

With some effort, I gathered my thoughts back into coherence. I still could not articulate all the reactions and thoughts struggling to coalesce in me. Critiquing Dr. May's conversational style wasn't my highest agenda for this precious hour anyway. So I just said "Okay." Then I laughed with embarrassment because, after all that he had said, I had nothing to reply but that stupid-sounding, "Okay."

"Is that clear?" he asked.

I chuckled again. "That's great," I said. I could feel myself coming out of it now, riding back up the elevator of consciousness to normal alertness. My mind shook off its remaining somnolence and became sharp and fully functional again. Now I could articulate another question. I asked, "Has your crossover relationship between the law and practice of psychology ever caused you to, uh..." I paused, hesitant. I wanted to word the rest of this question very carefully, "...be involved with inquiries into the ethics of the practice of psychology?"

"Yes." He volunteered nothing more.

"Could you tell me about that?" The phony casualness between us had suddenly disappeared, like water dropped through a sieve, fallen into an invisible dark drain hole below.

"I've been called upon as a consultant by several attorneys who were involved in litigations, either defending mental health professionals, or pursuing lawsuits against mental health professionals, and they've asked for my appraisal of the circumstances as I understood." He sounded cautious, serious. Again there was silence.

"You're also a hypnotist," I said.

"Yes, I am."

"Where did you acquire that particular skill?"

"I became interested in hypnosis some years ago in my postdoctoral training. I started to go to hypnosis training workshops in '72 or '73 and continued doing that for a while. The name Milton Erickson kept coming up. He's a rather notable figure who once practiced and wrote about hypnosis. I was able to spend four weeks apprenticing with him and have continued with that as a real area of interest."

I asked more questions. He answered them all. In addition to his private practice, I learned that Dr. Mays taught, researched, and was regularly published in professional journals. I was excited by his achievements. I said, quite sincerely, "Well, I'm speaking to a very active professional, and one who's shown real qualities of leadership. You obviously belong to psychological organizations. Are you president of..." I paused, teased, "the American Psychological Association?"

"No, I'm on the Governance Board of that," Dr. Mays replied, speaking as seriously as I had been light. "I've been president of the [Washington] state association." He then waited politely for my next question.

I asked it: "Have you ever, in all these years and years of practicing, and packed professional life, and all the reading you've done and all the education of various sorts you've acquired... Have you ever heard of a case of the unethical use of hypnotism?"

"Yes. I don't think that there's a specific standard regarding hypnosis per se, but I've seen that as a communication vehicle used inappropriately, and I've seen that used as an artifact of other unethical issues."

"What do you mean?"

Dr. Mays suddenly looked very uncomfortable. He paused, cleared his throat, paused again—the first uncertain moment that I had seen in him since our conversation began. He stalled, "Take a second to figure out exactly what..."

I asked, "Can you describe the specific incidents?" I was embarrassed that my voice so clearly revealed my eagerness. I was hoping, so much, that he would mention the psychiatrist to whom Bob Gale had referred as an abuser of hypnosis. At very least, I hoped he would mention some case that would prove to other professionals that unethical hypnosis could happen. [This interview took place right after I talked to Gale, and before I did most of the research for this book.]

"Well, some of these cases are confidential in their nature. When I'm consulted by an attorney, for example, who tells me certain things, that's often a confidential communication. I'm not free to disclose that to people."

"So there have been legal cases regarding the alleged misuse of hypnosis?" I asked.

"There have been, I understand, legal... I'm not sure if there've been any lawsuits brought to trial. I know of no—as of about ten years ago—no tort actions in the United States in which hypnosis itself has been the cause of some specific injury."

"Then...how did these other cases that you were talking to me about turn out?"

"Carla, I'm wanting to be helpful to you and I'm not wanting to talk or hint or imply about a specific case which I've been asked to consult about in confidence."

I tried again from a different angle, wording my question very carefully, "Do you feel that the profession of psychology/psychiatry in general, and those persons with a specialty in hypnosis in particular, are protective of themselves when it comes to publicly divulging what they might know privately of ethical problems?"

Dr. Mays thought silently for a while. Finally, he said, "Yes, I think sometimes that's right. I think the influences are sometimes subtle, in that people don't want to talk publicly about a whole host of things. I think the information is not freely available because it's not a public arena."

"Do you think it should not be a public arena?" I asked. "Do you think the public has no right to know hypnosis is sometimes ethically abused, or used improperly?"

"No, I have no problem with the public being fully informed."

"Have you ever heard of any cases other than this one, or more, legal thing you've personally been involved in? Have you heard about any cases of abusive hypnosis, other than those you have been personally consulted on? Have you read about the cases in Europe where people actually were sent to jail for..."

"No, I know of nothing," he interrupted. "Last time I reviewed was about eight to ten years ago, and, at that time, there were no successful tort actions in the United States involving hypnosis."

This professional psychologist, who sounded so knowledgeable and authoritative, seemed to know nothing of a subject about which I, a complete nonprofessional, had already been able to find out so much. That surprised and discouraged me. Did Dr. Mays truly not know? Did he and Bob Gale live in separate universes? Or was Dr. Mays lying to me?

Dr. Mays continued, "I've taught for the American Society of Clinical Hypnosis, myself. Hypnosis is like a beaker. It can be filled up with helpful liquids and medicines, or it can be filled up with something that's not helpful."

I asked, "Have you ever read John Marks's book, *The Search for the 'Manchurian Candidate'*?"

"No."

U.S. Legal Cases Involving Hypnosis

A specialist on forensic hypnosis, Udolf, wrote: "No American case has been found in which a defendant has successfully raised such a defense," meaning the defense of having committed a crime because a hypnotist told him to do so. Yet, in the 1981 case of the United States v. Springston, the defendant pled not guilty on the basis that he robbed a bank only because of posthypnotic suggestion. Nine jurors voted to acquit. Because the outcome was a hung jury, Springston and the government settled for a plea bargain (Springston served four months in jail).

Udolf did state that The American Law Institute's Model Penal Code said "'conduct during hypnosis or resulting from hypnotic suggestion' is not voluntary within the meaning of the proposed statute." **(Udolf, 1983, pp. 137-139)** Canadian law also permits a defense of **automatism** for cases involving hypnotic suggestion to do a criminal act.

However, I do not think that Dr. Mays mistook my questions to be limited to the narrow topic of crimes committed by a hypnotic subject because they were suggested by his operator. What about crimes committed by a hypnotist by means of his mental control over a subject? Udolf wrote, "...there are a fair number of cases in which it is quite clear that hypnotic subjects have been victimized by the hypnotist." **(Ibid., p. 138)** He cited Kline's 1972 report of subjects

> *...sexually abused by psychopathic hypnotists....Both of these cases are probably reliable as they were reported by the hypnotists themselves during psychotherapy, not in the course of a criminal prosecution.* **(Ibid.)**

"Are you familiar with the concept?

"I am."

"Do you think it's possible?"

"Very, very, very unlikely."

"Are you completely close-minded to the possibility?"

"No," Dr. Mays replied. "I think such things are possible, but I think it very, very unlikely."

"I Want to Stop Now"

Back home, after my talk with Dr. Mays, a neighbor, a single woman in her mid-forties named Corinne, visited me. I told her that Dr. Mays had said he knew of some cases involving hypnosis, but that he had refused to give any details.

She then told me about a guy in Boise who had used hypnosis to seduce women for years, ever since she was a young woman. She asked, "Didn't you read about it in the newspaper? Somebody sued him last winter for this kind of thing. He settled out of court."

Settled out-of-court. If that was how such legal cases usually ended, it explained why Mays could say, "no legal cases brought to trial...no torte actions." I asked her, "Tell me more about this guy in Boise. How long has he been in business?"

"I saw him in '76. He was a hypnotherapist who had built up quite a reputation already. He was probably in his forties. He especially worked with disturbed children and families."

"How did you happen to come into contact with him?"

"I was curious about hypnosis. I wanted to try it. He was recommended as one of the best. I was a social work student. I saw him twice. The first time we just talked. He wanted to establish a certain amount of trust." Then she stopped talking. She sat, staring into space.

"What happened the second time?" I asked.

"Well, I was what they call 'going under.' And I thought he was asking me if I would get undressed. Then I was saying to myself, 'Something's happening here...better bring you out.' And I just stopped going under. And I got real uncomfortable. I can't remember exactly, but I think I said to him, 'I want to stop now.'"

Corinne was such a pretty, shapely woman now. She would have been a real beauty twenty years earlier, I thought.

She continued: "He said, 'What happened? You were going under so... We were just about ready to...' And I was really embarrassed to say anything. I didn't want to tell him what I thought. And he asked, 'Well, what's the matter?' And I said, 'I thought you were going to tell me to get undressed. I don't trust you.' And he said, 'Well, if I did, what would you take off first?' And I'm going—Oh, my God. To me that was a strange response. I cut it off and I never went back. I never reported it to anyone else, just talked to one or two friends. I didn't tell it to the agency I was working with. The agency used him and his partner a lot with disturbed children. There was one particular girl, a teenager. She'd been abused by her family. They sent that child to him. It was at that time I heard from other friends that he had affairs with patients."

"Yeah," I said, "the official point of view is you cannot be made to do anything under hypnosis that you don't really want to do. So these guys can do that and then say, 'Well, she really wanted to undress for me. I'm just this irresistible hunk."

"It was totally inappropriate in the therapy situation," Corinne said, "no matter what the person's problem is. I didn't go there with a sexual problem at all. It was the furthest thing from my mind. So it would have been totally unethical and inappropriate, no matter what—to undress under hypnosis."

"That's one thing about this unethical hypnosis thing," I said. "People so seldom tell. And when they do, nobody believes. Or it gets settled **out-of-court**. So then there's no court record. I wonder if this is one of the cases that guy in Spokane, I just saw, was talking about having consulted on."

Corinne had pulled back in time. A Swiss specialist on unethical hypnosis wrote that

> *...within certain limits it is possible for a natural mechanism of self-defense to operate. The lighter the depth of a hypnosis, the more strongly the critical powers of the hypnotized subject are preserved so that he can reject a suggestion which goes "against the grain" and...can break through the hypnosis.* **(Hammerschlag, p. 29)**

A Dutch psychoanalyst told of a girl he had treated who previously had gone to a hypnotic "healer." He said she did not know there

> *...are unconscious sexual roots in hypnosis, related to the passive yielding to the attacker, which the quack uses to give vent to his own passions...It was only at the very last moment that she had been able to get out of her lethargic, submissive state and fight off his assault.* **(Meerloo, *The Rape of the Mind*, p. 61)**

A few weeks later, as I was walking down the street, Corinne drove by with another woman. They pulled over, and she introduced me to her companion, a social worker named Jackie. Later that day, Corinne again stopped by my home.

She said, "Carla, after she met you, Jackie asked me what you did. I told her you were researching a book on unethical hypnosis. And Jackie told me, 'I just found out that my husband has been hypnotizing me.'"

If she had only just found that out, I thought, it was clearly an unethical situation. Why, I wondered, did the husband get into that hypnotist-subject relationship with his wife? Why did he make her amnesic? How did he use his secret control over her? How did she find out?

I never saw Jackie again, so I don't have the answers to those questions.

More Cases of Criminal Hypnosis: Tried and Untried

CriminalHypnosis:
Court Cases

☑

Criminal Hypnosis:
Out-of-Court
Cases

If in skilled and worthy hands hypnosis is as powerful and salutary an instrument as its recent application, for example, in hypnoanalysis indubitably indicates, then in skilled but unworthy hands it might become an instrument of danger...

Young, 1952, pp. 406-7

CRIMINAL HYPNOSIS: COURT CASES

The Case of Spurgeon Young

In the United States, in January of 1897, the Chatauqua County Coroner, A. H. Bowen, was notified of the death of Spurgeon Young, a 17-year-old, 125-pound black male. When Bowen autopsied, he found Young had died of diabetic coma and kidney weakness. It seemed odd to him that a young man, with no previous health problems, had quite suddenly died of a failed pancreas and kidneys.

Bowen began asking questions and collecting background information on Young. He learned that, for the past six months, Young had been put into deep trance, over and over, by "amateurs and irresponsible and reckless youthful operators and dabblers in hypnotism..." **(Bowen quoted in Bell, p. 530)** Those "operators and dabblers" had discovered that Young was a genetic somnambulist with no memory of time spent under trance. Hypnotizing Young had then become the local entertainment.

They would put him into a trance and suggest that he was drunk or had delirium tremens. They would put him into a catatonic state and "bridge" his body with no support except for chair backs under his neck and ankles. They romped and stomped upon Spurgeon Young's suspended, rigid form—on his chest, his abdomen, his legs—until they tired of the sport. Then, the perpetrators would leave him alone with a posthypnotic suggestion to wake up at a certain later time. Young would return to consciousness, unaware of the missing time, ignorant of what had been done to him—and feeling sick.

> *...having been sat or stood on, by men of average or heavy weight, while in a cataleptic state, with head and feet supported, so that he formed a bridge between such supports..."* **(Ibid.)**

Bowen then wrote to a noted hypnosis expert, Clark Bell, explaining the details of the case. He asked if hypnosis could, directly or indirectly, cause "physical injury or organic impairment particularly of the renal function, or symptoms of glycosuria..." Bell passed on copies of Bowen's letter to fifteen other experts in the U.S. and Europe, asking for their advice.

One by one, the replies came in. They were generally of the opinion that Young's health had been endangered by the trauma he endured as a result of hypnotism, not from the hypnotism itself. One writer called it "diabetes of traumatic origin..." Several stated that trance itself could cause health deterioration. (That is not true.)

The coroner's inquest jury agreed: "We find that J. W. Spurgeon Young came to his death...from diabetes and nervous exhaustion caused by hypnotic practices..." **(Bell, p. 545)** However, no one was charged with the crime. The jury did recommend a state law prohibiting hypnosis.

Austin v. Barker

When Edith Austin found herself pregnant, she had no idea how it could have happened. In August of 1901, she gave birth. A few months later, her father's lawyer hypnotized her, questioned her under that rehypnotization,

Other Cases of Sexual Violation Under Hypnosis

Tardieau reported a similar, 1857, criminal case. The victim was Marguerite, age 18. She had visited the house of a magnetic healer for a treatment. At that time, magnetic healers routinely prescribed frequent, even daily treatments. It was good for business and the subjects knew no better. From then until early April, Marguerite went for daily hypnotizations. Then she realized she was pregnant and went to the police.

The police commissioner wondered if it was possible for a virgin to be deflowered and impregnated against her will by means of magnetization, so he appointed two experts to research the matter. The experts knew much experimental evidence existed that hypnotic subjects could be made insensitive to "tortures," and also could be made amnesic regarding trance events. They reasoned, therefore, that a hypnotic subject also could be the victim of coitus without consent, and without conscious awareness. When Tardieau was consulted in the case, he agreed with their opinion. (In a couple of other cases, he had found the hypnotist innocent.) The court convicted Marguerite's hypnotist based on the three expert opinions.

Thoinot, an associate of Charcot, reported a similar case in ***Medicolegal Aspects of Moral Offenses* (published in English, in 1919)**. Again, the case involved a girl who said she had been impregnated by a young man who often had magnetized her. She said they were alone for a while on Christmas night and during that time he had put her to "sleep" and raped her. This case came to the notice of the authorities because of the girl's request, relayed by her minister, to go to a charity hospital for the birth.

Experts were called in to determine the credibility of her story. Ladame was one. The question the experts were asked to resolve was: "...Is conception possible when a woman is in a state of absolute insensibility?" **(Ladame quoted in Thoinot, p. 135)** Ladame said that all the girl claimed was possible. When the case came to court, however, the judge ruled in favor of the accused.

August Forel, a Zurich psychiatrist, professor, and mental hospital director of that era, was interested in criminal hypnosis and its legal implications. In his 1902 book, he reported giving somnambulists a suggestion to kill (he provided, in one experiment, a piece of chalk for a "knife," in another, a pistol loaded with blank cartridges). In both cases, the subject carried out the suggested "attack."

> *I am convinced of the fact that a good somnambulist may commit serious crimes during hypnotic sleep in response to suggestion, and that, under certain circumstances, he may not know anything about it later on.* **(Forel, *Psychotherapy and Suggestion, or Hypnotism*, p. 287)**

Forel also experimented in the category of sex crime. Working together with another hypnotist, he gave an old, homely, and "extraordinarily prudish" female servant a suggestion to strip to the waist in their presence. This woman's extreme modesty was such that she would not allow examination of her breasts even by a doctor. When Forel gave her the suggestion in somnambulist trance, however, she immediately and with no evidence of emotion, carried it out:

> *I own I was astounded at it. If I had not been absolutely sure of her complete amnesia, I would never have dared to have performed this experiment, for she would have despaired if she had known. I only carried it out with considerable disinclination, and only in the interests of science, for this kind of experiment borders on the illegal.* **(Ibid., pp. 285-286)**

Forel eventually became "convinced that every conceivable crime may be committed on a hypnotized person, provided that a higher degree of hypnosis is attained." **(Ibid., p. 280)** and the mystery was cleared up. The lawyer learned that David Barker, who had hypnotized Edith several times, around the date she had conceived, was the father of her child. Edith was a somnambulist, capable of profound trance followed by amnesia. While she was in amnesic trance, Barker had taken advantage of her. Afterwards, she had no conscious memory of what had taken place.

Over the years, from 1901 to 1906, the case of Edith Austin was tried three times. The first judgment found Barker innocent, declaring that the accusation was based on "some science and theory that was not generally known or understood..." **(Austin v. Barker, 1904)** The second trial reversed that decision to a guilty verdict on the grounds that the first court had ruled against the evidence. When retried in 1906, the court reversed again, declaring Barker innocent because the accusation was "hearsay," not a "true memory."

Louis v. State

This 1930 case illustrates another problem with solving hypnosis abuses through the courts: very often the legal system decides a case based on its own game-playing rules, rather than on the facts. The defendant, Louis, a hypnotist, was accused of having put "a spell" on the person who brought the charges against him. The spell had compelled her to take her bankbooks, go out of her house, travel the two miles to her bank, withdraw all the money she had in the bank, and go back home where she turned it over to Louis. The amount was about $290.

At the first trial, Louis was convicted and sentenced to ten years. He denied his guilt and appealed the judgement. The Court of Appeals of Alabama overruled the lower court and set Louis free: "to make a case of robbery, the People must prove...that the property was taken either by force or fear...no force was used...and she had testified that she was not afraid." A charge of larceny by trick or device might have gotten a conviction. But it was too late.

The Sala Affair

A 1936 Swedish case of unethical hypnosis involved the acquisition and control of a gang by hypnosis, crimes caused by hypnosis, suicide caused by posthypnotic suggestion, and murder by a poisonous injection given to a subject in a hypnotic trance. The hypnotist is known only as "Th." The case is known as the "Sala affair."

Th. was short and very fair-skinned. He compensated for his wimpy body by learning to dominate others, first by his intellectual gifts, then by his hypnotic skills. Beginning when he was thirteen, Th. read every mystical-sounding book he could get his hands on: theosophy, spiritualism, parapsychology, metaphysics. (Psychiatrists on the case later called him a "schizoid.") He was introverted, preferring solitude to company. He was closemouthed, sociopathic—and utterly amoral.

He enlisted acquaintances in experiments on ESP—and then hypnotism. He used "yoga training" and other occult mental exercises as disguised trance inductions. By adulthood, Th. had developed into an occult-oriented, imaginative leader—with no conscience. He told his hypnotic subjects they now belonged to a secret organization named "The Magic Circle." He organized the members in a complex hierarchy. He required absolute obedience and vows of secrecy from them in the conscious state, even more in the hypnotic state. Using his hypnotic control, Th. turned the club into a little Mafia. He induced underage girls to have sex with him, then to work as prostitutes. Using hypnosis, he ordered his male gang members to commit robberies and murders.

Th. had only one real friend, a gang member with whom he had a long-term homosexual affair. He began to obsess that his friend might tell somebody else about their relationship (then a crime under Swedish law). Th. recorded in an autobiography that "by means of a slow process of suggestion" he was, in one week, able to make his friend commit suicide by shooting himself. Another time, Th. hypnotized a gang member and then gave him a fatal injection of homemade poison. Th. eventually was judged guilty, but insane. He was sentenced to life in an institution for the criminally insane. **(Reiter, pp. 53-55)**

People v. Leyra

Extreme fatigue increases suggestibility and facilitates hypnotic induction—especially in resistant or unknowing subjects. A disguised induction of this sort made it all the way to the U.S. Supreme Court: People vs. Leyra, Leyra v. Denno.

> *Certiorari to the United States Court of Appeals for the Second Circuit. No. 635. Argued April 28, 1954.—Decided June 1, 1954...Held: The use of confessions extracted in such a manner from a lone defendant unprotected by counsel is not consistent with the due process of law required by the Constitution...reversed...Mr. Justice Black delivered the opinion of the Court.*

Camilio Weston Leyra, a man in his fifties, was accused of hammering to death his elderly parents in their Brooklyn apartment. It appears that he did commit the crime. The contention in court was over the admissibility of the confession obtained by Dr. Max Helfand.

Soon after the crime was committed as Leyra was being held in jail, on suspicion of having committed the double murder, the prisoner asked for a doctor. His complaint was a painful sinus attack. The "doctor" did not arrive until "the climax of days and nights of intermittent, intensive police questioning." Leyra had been allowed two hours sleep, the first in several days, then was awakened to talk to the doctor. His visitor was really "a psychiatrist with considerable knowledge of hypnosis." Unknown to Leyra, their conversation was being taped.

The doctor performed a skillful **disguised induction**, then extracted Leyra's confession. He made numerous small requests to train the subject in obedience; successive acts of obedience tend to lower consciousness. The requests were either to open his eyes or to shut his eyes. The tape transcription shows that Leyra gradually began to accept suggestions from the psychiatrist. His taped answers to the doctor's questions became "dazed and bewildered." Then the doctor began to push for the confession:

> *DR. HELFAND: I want you to recollect and tell me everything. I am...going to make you remember and recollect back and bring back thoughts—thoughts which you think you might have forgotten. I can make you recollect them...Tell me, I am here to help you.*
>
> *LEYRA: I wish you could, Doctor.*
>
> *DR. HELFAND: I am going to put my hand on your forehead, and as I put my hand on your forehead, you are going to bring back all these thoughts that are coming to your mind. I am going to keep my hand on your forehead and I am going to ask you questions, and now you will be able to tell me...Speak up. It's coming clear to you. I have my hand on your head...*

The hand on the forehead is a hypnotic technique called **anchoring**. (Something external and sensory is linked to something internal and mental.)

Leyra confessed. Later, however, during his trial, he denied the confession, blaming it on the "mental pressure and coercive psychiatric techniques" that the doctor used. Leyra was convicted. The Supreme Court reversed the decision, because "For an hour and a half or more, the techniques of a highly trained psychiatrist were used to break petitioner's will in order to get him to say he had murdered his parents..." The first element of deceit used to break him down was his trust in the doctor.

From the police's point of view, the real problem may have been the incriminating tape of the doctor's verbal induction prior to the confession. Not a problem any more. The National Guild of Hypnotists's 1991 convention advertised a seminar by a "police hypnotist" teaching a "Non-Verbal Hypnotic Induction Technique." "Induce trance without saying a word," the ad said. "It's like nothing you have ever seen." The old-time mesmerists would have understood.

State v. Levitt

In this 1961 case, the Supreme Court of New Jersey overturned the conviction of a hypnotist on a charge of lewdness, also because of legal maneuvering having nothing directly to do with hypnosis. The state's only witness was the doctor's patient. It was her word against his, and he, of course, denied everything. The Court's reason for the overturning was that a jury member later reported that other jurors had said things about the defendant that suggested prejudice.

Johnson v. State

In 1967, the Court of Criminal Appeals of Texas upheld a hypnosis conviction. The case involved a 36-year-old guidance counselor accused of sodomizing a sixteen-year-old student. Two other teenagers were present at the time. The victim said that the counselor had hypnotized him. The two witnesses testified that his statement was true. The appeals court, however, disregarded the element of hypnotic influence. They declared the victim an "accomplice."

Mirowitz v. State

This, 1969, case began when a Texas Board of Medical Examiners investigator saw a suspicious advertisement. The hypnotist claimed to be a Ph.D. clinical psychologist and offered help with speed-reading, self-hypnosis, marriage problems, etc. The investigator called, said she had a headache, and made an appointment.

Her first session with the "doctor" lasted twenty minutes. He advised self-hypnosis for the headache and asked if she were a virgin. She consulted with him again two weeks later. He hypnotized her, presented himself as her boyfriend, and established a scene in which she and he were honeymooning. Then he made real sexual maneuvers. She stopped it. She had been expecting him to do something like that.

Her supervisor was waiting outside the office when the investigator came out. Both the supervisor and the investigator testified against the hypnotist in court. The hypnotist denied, but was convicted. He appealed, based on the Johnson v. State case. He said the investigator was an accomplice and, therefore, must have a third party corroborate her testimony. The appellate court rejected that appeal because the investigator had not consented to the sexual acts and thus was not an "accomplice."

J. Hartland's Report

J. Hartland reported "An Alleged Case of Criminal Assault upon a Married Woman under Hypnosis" in 1974. In that case, a woman, 20, said an obstetrician sexually molested her while performing an internal examination. The obstetrician admitted that he used hypnosis to obtain "relaxation" for his patients' exams and had done so for twenty years. Hypnosis was not a direct issue in the case because the woman denied being hypnotized. Perhaps she was not, because she remembered and complained!

Nevertheless, the defense maneuvered hypnosis into the center of the case. The President of the British Society of Medical and Dental Hypnosis, representing the profession, testified that it was practically impossible to get a hypnotic subject to submit to a crime. He recited the usual litany of hypnosis myths: there is no such thing as displacement of the subject's will by the hypnotist; there is no hypnotic amnesia or even dissociation; the subject can wake up any time she wants to. He then declaimed eloquently on the supposed propensity of hysterical women to project sexual fantasies onto their doctors.

The defendant was acquitted.[1]

Regina v. Palmer

In 1979, C. W. Perry published an article: "Hypnotic Coercion and Compliance to it: A Review of Evidence Presented in a Legal Case." It was about an Australian case, Regina v. Palmer, in which a hypnotist, without academic credentials, was found guilty of rape, attempted rape, and indecent assault on two women.

The case began when Barry Palmer, age 38, demonstrated hypnosis at the party of a neighbor with whom he was barely acquainted. For years before this incident, Palmer had been doing hypnosis in various settings and roles. He had both training and experience in the field. At the party, he offered to cure problems such as obesity, nail biting, or smoking, for any person who would make an appointment with him. Three women made appointments.

When each client arrived at his home, Palmer attempted seduction by means of hypnotic trance and suggestions given under hypnosis. First, he induced as deep a trance as he could. Then, he suggested that she was very hot, and would undress. He gave amnesia suggestions. The further details are too sordid to repeat here, but were discussed in court and presented in Perry's article. As is the unwritten rule for hypnotists writing about unethical hypnosis, Perry was not sympathetic to the women. He nitpicked their testimonies in his article, even though Palmer admitted what he had done.

Palmer's defense was that it is impossible to make a hypnotized person do anything she does not actually want to do. The three women, on the other hand, all said they, being hypnotized, could not resist. They all testified that they did not want to have sex with Palmer. They said they were aware of what was happening, but could not make effective protest because of their hypnotic condition.

Three expert witnesses testified for the defense, two for the prosecution. All had visited the library to prepare. Perry reported that the prosecution experts cited publications by Conn (1972), Kline (1972), Reiter (1958), and Watkins (1947, 1972). The prosecution centerpiece was this quote:

> *...we must admit that, whether we like it or not, a hypnotist of evil intent could use this unique and powerful state-relationship to intervene in ways which would mobilize harmful, destructive, and antisocial forces within his subject. If we can anesthetize an arm to remove pain, then we can anesthetize a superego to remove guilt.* **(Watkins, 1972, pp. 97-98)**

The defense cited Bramwell (1903), LeCron and Bordeaux (1947), Orne and Evans (1965), Orne (1972), and Wolberg (1948). A defense expert witness protested:

> *If it were so simple to have a subject accept one's suggestions without question then all my very disturbed patients would accept my suggestions that they become confident, competent, and mature people in a few sessions and I would not have patients for a period of a number of years.* **(Perry, p. 206)**[2]

Barry Palmer was found guilty by the lower court and sentenced to one year in prison. However, the verdict was overturned on appeal because two of the women did not file charges until two days after the incident happened (when they heard that the third woman had done so). The judgment was also overturned because an expert witness for the prosecution turned out to have faulty credentials.

According to Perry, hypnotists, who believe that patients can be coerced by hypnosis, explain failures of suggestion as due to shallow trance or poor hypnotic techniques; hypnotists, who believe it is impossible to cause a criminal act by hypnosis, quote the dogma of moral integrity: the immoral suggestion gives the subject a chance to act out unconscious, preexisting immoral wishes.

---

[1] I have not known a woman who projected sexual fantasies onto her doctor although, obviously, it could happen. I have myself, however, experienced sexual abuse by a doctor during a pelvic exam. I also know a nurse who deduced sexual abuse, done by an intern to his young female client, during a pelvic exam. With fear and trembling, she divulged that fact to their supervisor. He reassured her, explaining that the intern had been reported for the same thing before!

[2] Very disturbed patients are the least likely to be suggestible.

Palmer's three rapes under hypnosis were each done under a first hypnosis. Perry said: "The case demonstrates vividly that a long-term interpersonal relationship is not always necessary for hypnotic seduction to occur." **(Perry, 1979, p. 214)**

United States v. Springston

Paul L. Deyoub, of Central Arkansas Mental Health Services, reported a case of bank robbery[1] accidentally caused by hypnotic suggestion. Deyoub began his article by quoting Orne's (1972) evaluation of the case of Palle Hardwick, and Orne's claim that Dr. Reiter and the court were wrong because nobody can be forced to do anything by means of hypnosis. Deyoub then described his case in which a man had committed a bank robbery because of a carelessly worded hypnotic suggestion.

Mr. Springston, age 30, visited a non-degreed hypnotist about six weeks before he robbed the bank. He wanted help with weight loss. The hypnotist performed a relaxation induction. Once Springston was in deep trance, the hypnotist then talked to him. Among other things, the hypnotist said, "You're a very strong person; you could do anything you decide to do. Why, you could even rob a bank if you wanted to." **(Deyoub, pp. 301-306)**

Mr. Springston was not particularly impressed with the hypnotist. He believed that he had not been hypnotized. But the hypnotist's mention of robbing a bank returned to his mind, over and over, until it became an "obsession." When Mr. Springston finally committed the robbery, he was aware that he was doing it, but he could not understand why he was doing it. He felt like a bystander watching himself do it, as if he were "in a dream." That describes a **dissociated state**. Nobody was hurt during the robbery. The money was completely recovered.

Springston pleaded "not guilty" because of acting under a posthypnotic suggestion. Deyoub interviewed him. The prisoner told Deyoub that he had "fantasies" and spent lots of time immersed in daydreams. When driving, he often became lost in thought and passed his planned stop. Deyoub summed it up as regular "dissociative experiences and perhaps a schizoid personality." Deyoub concluded that Springston was definitely a susceptible hypnotic subject. Deyoub did not give Springston a **susceptibility test**

> *...since it is generally inadvisable to use hypnosis with defendants who have much at stake (Orne, 1979). Springston had to testify, and the hypnosis associated with a susceptibility test could have altered his memory of the original hypnotic experience. Further, if a low score had been obtained, the prosecution could hold that hypnosis should have had little impact. A high score might simply reflect the defendant's motivation to help his defense. He had the right to refuse a susceptibility procedure which may have helped him, but more likely would have injured his case.*

Deyoub testified as an expert witness at Springston's trial. The trial resulted in a hung jury: nine votes to acquit, three to convict. The government plea-bargained and gave him six months (he only served four). None of the jurors stated an opinion on hypnosis, but DeYoub speculated that the majority of the jurors voted for the defendant's acquittal

> *because of the testimony about the role of hypnosis in the case...Hopefully this case will not serve as a rationalization for criminal behavior...but as documentation of potential dangers in the misuse of hypnosis.*

Criminal Hypnosis: Out-of-Court Cases

> ***Some years ago, a physician/hypnotherapist, who was having an extramarital affair with a woman whom he wanted to marry, hypnotized his wife and suggested to her that she was developing a headache. When the headache would become very severe, he told her, she would swallow all the pills in the bottle he had put in her lap. They would make her fall asleep, so she would not feel the pain any longer. After a while she reached for the pills and took them all. It was a lethal dose.***
>
> **—Brown and Fromm, *Hypnotherapy and Hypnoanalysis,* 1983, p. 146**

---

[1] United States v. Springston, CR 81-50007-01, U.S. District Court, Western District of Arkansas (1981)

I do not know of any legal case that matches the above report. Did the murderer receive therapy and no criminal charges? Cases involving unethical hypnosis are routinely settled out of court. Cases which are settled out of court are not entered into the legal record. They are not collected, studied, or followed up on by research hypnotists or journalists. This section covers cases of criminal hypnosis that did not come to trial, but maybe should have.

Newspaper Reports

News about cases of unethical hypnosis does not travel far. ***The New York Mirror*** **(Sunday, April 17, 1960, p. 3)** reported that an Albany girl said she was forced to marry by means of hypnosis. That was the end of the matter, as far as I know. Numerous other local newspaper articles have reported incidents of unethical hypnosis, which were not cited, or investigated, by research hypnotists.

Knight discussed a case which was reported in the ***Montreal Gazette*** **(April 10, 1989)**: "Dentist Kept Practice Despite Admitting Assaults." A Canadian dentist had pled guilty to one count of sexual assault on a hypnotized child. He avoided a sentence by agreeing to talk to a psychiatrist. Three years later, he won a case when two more children also testified that the dentist had sexual assaulted them in a hypnotized condition. Twenty years later, he admitted guilt for those previous cases, plus at least fifteen later ones.

Bad Outcomes of Hypnosis

In 1984, Kleinhauz and Beran deplored

> *...the unfortunate widespread belief that hypnosis is innocuous...* [and urged that medical professionals be made] *aware of the possibility of immediate as well as long-term deleterious effects that may follow misuse of hypnosis so that those cases which come to the attention of the physician will be properly diagnosed and treated...* **(p. 283)** *During hypnosis the subject agrees to permit the hypnotist to become the sole channel of communication and source of interpretation of all internal and external stimuli impinging upon himself.* **(Kleinhauz and Beran, 1981, p. 288)**

The two authors support that statement by reporting six cases of posthypnotic trauma. The perpetrators in their cases were mostly stage performers. In a 1962 conversation with Estabrooks, Orne described two similar cases with unfortunate outcomes caused by hypnosis:

> *Dr. Orne: ...I have heard many people say that they do not see the complications* [of hypnosis] *about which everybody warns them. Unfortunately, one sees what one wishes to see, especially in medicine...I was told by a dentist, for example, that it was completely safe to induce by hypnosis such things as brushing your teeth. He told a patient, who happens to have been a patient of mine, so I did have a follow up, that she had a*

> *dirty mouth and should therefore clean her teeth. And she did—20 to 30 times a day subsequently, and developed rather severe gingivitis. Incidentally, the dentist could not remove this using hypnotic suggestion. I am also reminded of a very helpful anesthesiologist who suggested to a patient that she lose weight rapidly, and who felt that he had great success with her. The patient lost weight and ended up in my office because of severe depression.* **(Estabrooks, ed., *Hypnosis: Current Problems,* p. 254)**

Modern research on the "undesirable effects" of hypnosis, however, has narrowed the definition of a "problem" to be any exception to quiet cooperation with the hypnotist during the session, or any behavior that makes waves in the hypnotist's life after the session. Deceitful induction followed by chronic, amnesic, and abusive treatment of a subject is not recognized as a category of "bad outcome." The patient can be a problem; the doctor can not.

Levitt and Hershman (1961; 1963) surveyed, by questionnaire, 301 professionals who used hypnosis. More than 27% had seen "an unusual, unexpected, and probably alarming, reaction to hypnosis, either during the state itself, or immediately afterward" **(Orne, "*Undesirable Effects of Hypnosis*, p. 233)**. By this standard, Palle's hysterical resistance to Reiter's first successful rehypnotization of him would be listed as a problem. Palle's easy surrender to Nielsen's original hypnotic seductions would not rate as a problem.

> *By far the most common reaction was some sort of emotional upset, including anxiety, panic states, or depression. The only other frequently reported kind of symptom included minor physiological phenomena like headache, vomiting, fainting, dizziness, etc., either during or immediately after hypnosis. Other reactions which were noted by at least three respondents were crying and hysteria, loss of rapport during hypnosis, excessive dependency on the hypnotist, and difficulties resulting from inadvertently given suggestions. There were five cases of overt psychosis immediately after hypnosis, and five instances of difficulties with women patients involving sex* **(Levitt & Hershman, 1961, p. 6)**

Who did what, to whom, in the sexual category was not specified.

In "The Myth of Coercion through Hypnosis" (1981), Conn reported on two women clients of his, both of whom had previously had sex with a hypnotist. Each ended up "admitting" to Conn that hypnosis had not really been a factor. Conn smugly concluded that the whole nonsense about unethical hypnosis was a matter of

> *...outmoded Svengali-like theories derived from 19th century authors of hypnosis-science fiction, isolated instances of mismanaged patients by incompetent operators, and the occasional disorganization of undiagnosed prepsychotic individuals following hypnosis.*

A competing analysis could be that two suggestible women were used by the first "therapist" for sex, then persuaded by their second, Conn, to believe that the previous hypnoses had not been used inappropriately.

Kline's Cases

Milton V. Kline was a research hypnotist who stood against the naysayers. He talked openly about unethical hypnosis all his professional life. He praised George Estabrooks's revised edition of *Hypnotism:*

> [It] *surpasses even the original publication and should be required reading for all who wish to gain an introductory and insightful understanding of scientific hypnosis at the present time.* **(Kline quote, inside cover flap)**

In the "Dynamics of Hypnotically Induced Antisocial Behavior," Kline reported that he had induced a hypnotic subject to perform indecent exposure. The act was punishable by law and definitely contrary to the moral values of the subject, a lawyer who had volunteered for an "experiment on the legal implications of hypnosis."[1] The subject did not know anything else about what the experiment would involve.

There were four hypnotists involved, three male and one female. The acts of indecent exposure took place outside the lab in a public area. The subject had no way of knowing that the police department was cooperating and keeping people, who were not an authorized part of the experiment, out of the area.

When any of the four hypnotists gave a **direct command** to perform the indecent act, all four failed. He could not be persuaded to expose himself in the waking state. But when the command was presented **indirectly,** when he was in deep trance, as part of a falsified reality, three of the four hypnotists were able to cause him to do it. They also found that the subject would perform the indecency if he first was caused to **visualize** himself performing it. He was most obedient to the hypnotist with whom he had the best rapport.

---

[1] Kline doesn't give much detail, but Orne later told more in **"*Can Hypnosis Compel Behavior*?" (p. 106)**

The experimenter whose command he refused was female. She later admitted that she had been very upset by the act she was requesting, as well as by the deception. The subject may have obeyed the suggestions in her tone and body language (her true feeling), rather than the one she was forcing herself to verbalize. (She was so disturbed by the experiment that she then withdrew from further participation.)

In another article ("...New Clinical Data"), Kline reported three modern cases of unethical hypnosis committed by clinical professionals. He did not supply real names. One perpetrator was a doctor, age 56. For years, he had used hypnosis to seduce female patients.

His strategy was to introduce hypnosis into his treatment procedure even when there was no clinical need for it. He would gradually develop a close, dependent, supportive, and reassuring trance relationship. Then he would suggest strong erotic feelings to the hypnotized woman. During later hypnoses he suggested that she would dream about those erotic desires. Next time, he would suggest an erotic dream involving those desires—and himself. Finally, he suggested that she felt a compelling desire to physically perform with him the act which she had dreamed.

This technique did not work with every targeted female, but it worked with many. The gradual approach allowed him to make a hasty retreat when resistance appeared. His undoing was the successful seduction of a 23-year-old. She ended up working as an unpaid employee on his staff and having sex with him every day. But, at that point, her unconscious began to fight back.

This case is similar to that of Candy Jones in that the hypnotic split (containing all knowledge covered by suggested amnesia) began independently to communicate to the husband in the trance phase of the sleep cycle. During "sleep," the repressed part of her mind told her husband —with qualities both of erotic pleasure and strong negative and conflicting feelings—all about her sex with the doctor that day.

Like John Nebel, her husband began to tape record her night-talking. He confronted the doctor, who agreed to get therapy. The matter was then dropped.

Kline's second case involved a 26-year-old graduate student in psychology who craved sex with little boys. He advertised his baby-sitting services in newspapers, but only took the job if it involved a boy younger than ten. Like the doctor above, he then proceeded with a deliberate series of **shaping** steps. First he developed a warm friendship with the child. They played games of imagination. He did tricks and told the child he had magical powers.

He then induced trance using the pretend-you're-watching-television method which is very effective with children. He deepened the trance by asking the child to imagine participating in the acts on screen. He next suggested posthypnotic amnesia. If the child did not develop posthypnotic amnesia, he quit the baby-sitting job. If the child did develop the suggested posthypnotic amnesia, he would involve the child in acts of oral and anal sex. He used hypnotic suggestion to attempt to disguise what actually was happening and to reinforce the amnesia.

However, one of the children became "disturbed," and was taken to talk to a psychiatrist. The child was able to recall, and tell, most of what had happened.

In this case, also, the perpetrator was not publicly identified. He quickly volunteered himself into "treatment" and that was the end of it. Neither of the above two abusers sought therapy until they were caught. Neither had normal emotions (affect) in human relations. Neither felt guilt about what they had done.

The power of professional psychological and psychiatric organizations is such that they have been able to appropriate the legal process from the public judicial system to their private one. "Not only do professionals violate their codes of ethics but they protect their guilty members from censure." **(Knight, "*The Case Against Restrictive Laws*," p. 27)** In Kline's two cases described above, the criminals' professional peers somehow had acquired the right to deal with them, instead of the public legal system. Their chronic severe criminal behavior was dealt with by a slap on the hand: "therapy."

Kline's third case did not involve sexual abuse. The crime was a vicious posthypnotic suggestion. The hypnotist was a gynecologist, age 36, who used hypnosis to treat obese patients. He told one such client, a woman age 27, who was a very susceptible subject, to eat only at mealtimes. She did not obey his hypnotic suggestion, however, and ate even more.

Her next visit, when the doctor heard that, he became very angry. He hypnotized her again. This time, he suggested that if she again defied his diet instructions and ate between meals, she would feel an overpowering impulse to kill her beloved poodle dog. That night, the woman again succumbed to caloric temptation and gobbled down an entire quart of ice cream. She then went into a posthypnotic trance triggered by the act of diet-breaking. In that dissociated condition, she carried out the doctor's suggestion, killing her dog by smothering it.

When she came out of the posthypnotic trance and realized that her pet was dead, and that she had killed it, the woman began to scream hysterically. She gulped down a bottle of iodine and also slashed her wrists with a knife. The neighbors, awakened by her screams, called the police who rushed her to the hospital. She survived the suicide attempt, but suffered a schizophrenic breakdown.

You Must Be Dreaming

Barbara Noel is a singer-songwriter who wrote an autobiographical account of abuse under narcohypnosis: *You Must Be Dreaming* (coauthored by Kathryn Watterson). Noel was, for eighteen years, the patient of Jules H. Masserman. Dr. Masserman was cochairman of the department of psychiatry and neurology at Northwestern University Medical School. He was a past president of the American Academy of Psychoanalysis, and also of the American Psychiatric Association.

He began to use injections of a hypnoid drug, Sodium Amytal, supposedly to explore Noel's unconscious. One day, however, she returned to consciousness prematurely and found—not her mind, but her body being explored. **(Hyman, *AP article*)** Noel gradually realized that Masserman routinely had sexually molested her while she was in a drugged, unconscious state. He also addicted her to a drug (Amytal) that kept her coming back and literally begging for more.[1]

After Noel came forward, two other women joined her. They stated, for the record, that they had also been Masserman's patients and had been sexually molested. One was a lawyer, the other a businesswoman. The three filed suit in the Circuit Court of Cook County, Illinois. Masserman settled in the usual manner of hypnotists with litigious clients: out-of-court, with a payoff. He paid Noel $200,000. The other two each received $25,000. He remained a renowned psychiatrist. The case received minimal publicity.

Noel was determined to break the publicity barrier, and warn other women. She wrote the book, *You Must Be Dreaming*. The book was made into a TV film, "Betrayal of Trust."

After Noel, *et al*, filed their complaint with the Illinois authorities, the American Psychiatric Association suspended Masserman for five years. The Association answered later inquiries on Masserman's status by saying that "Dr. Masserman has retired." Neither the legal case, nor the book, nor the film shook the professional community's support for Masserman. No psychiatric periodical mentioned the case. The APA Board of Trustees still invited Masserman to meetings. He was an "honorary life president" of the World Association for Social Psychiatry. Just a month after he paid to shut up those women, the World Association, at a Rio de Janeiro convocation, lavished tributes and accolades upon him.

The professional indifference to his malpractice surprised and upset Ann Landers, who, for so many years, has reverently quoted mental health professionals, and sent millions of readers to get "therapy." Ann was shocked that a psychiatrist would give Barbara drug shots, have sex with her unconscious body, collect $100,000 in therapy fees along the way, and remain respected, even renowned, by his peers. She was disturbed that the world community of psychiatry was completely indifferent to the evidence of his unethical acts. She wrote a column about it.

It wasn't her first column on unethical hypnosis. I'll never forget the day, about 1970, that I read another column of hers (or Abigail van Buren's?) about hypnosis abuse. It contained a letter from the parents of a girl which clearly described a situation of chronic unethical hypnosis involving their daughter. The columnist wrote that she had consulted psychologists who were experts in hypnosis, and they had all assured her that nobody can be hypnotized against their will, and nobody can be made to do anything under hypnosis that they do not want to do.

Her column was read by ninety million people. I wonder how many other readers, like me, were discouraged from seeking help by her dismissive response that day?

---

[1] After an induction conditioning series, he should no longer have needed the drug, unless he aimed to maintain her addiction—or wanted to guarantee the secrecy of his sexual predations.

Why Not Seek Relief from Abusive Hypnosis by Legal Means?

The hypnotism lobby has spent two-hundred years combating the perception that exploitative manipulation of persons in a state of trance could result in legal liability. In the last thirty years, several Big Lies, oft repeated (propaganda technology), have resulted in yet another step of removal from liability: complete public ignorance of even the possibility of this crime. The legal system is now very tilted to protect hypnotists (and government organizations which may use hypnosis).

Therefore, if a survivor of unethical hypnosis is considering whether to bring legal charges against his abuser, these problems must be faced:

- Most psychological professionals are uncomprehending of, if not hostile to, a claim of unethical hypnosis and are protective of each other against their common enemy: the client. They would prefer a diagnosis of "paranoia" for the accuser.

- Potential "expert witnesses" are heavily indoctrinated with attitudes of disrespect and disbelief for any alleged survivor of unethical hypnosis.

- In the past, in order to prove unethical hypnosis in court, the survivor was subjected to yet more amnesic hypnosis to recover memories, and to display publicly his capacity for profound automatistic obedience.

- Courts and associated personnel do not understand the absolute necessity to completely isolate the subject from the alleged hypnotist. They are not set up to deal with possible hypnotic manipulation of the subject's testimony and behavior before, during, and after the trial. There is no understanding of the psychological effect that the mere presence of an abusive hypnotist may have on a survivor.

- The trial process, ideally, should be a simple search for truth. Watchers of the O.J. trial, however, observed something far different from that ideal: a public, ceremonial clash of sophisticated, paid debaters serving the personal interests of their payees. There is also no guarantee that all persons will tell the truth despite their swearing to do so, and there is a 99% probability that the accused hypnotist will lie cleverly and with confidence. Hypnotists, by definition, are verbally skilled, experienced, people manipulators. They often have status and peer relationships in the medicolegal community, a fellowship which tends to easily forgive and effectively protect its own.

- No matter who wins or loses, the case is likely to be tried again, and yet again. Throughout the judicial process, opportunities continue for the predatory hypnotist to reestablish control over the subject who is forced to be thus publicly exposed.

- The hypnotist's defense will likely be well-funded by contributions from medical insurance companies and lobby committees for hypnosis organizations, as well as other entities which find hypnosis covertly useful. The budget of an individual survivor, on the other hand, is likely to be tight.

- If certain agencies of the government secretly create unknowing hypnotic subjects and if they seek to develop and use ever more sophisticated mind-control technologies (as more and more bits and shreds of evidence suggest), will there not be covert obstacles to a victim seeking exposure of this technology, and safety from it, through public courts?

Texts and Training in Forensic Hypnosis

A Hypnotist's View
of Forensics

☑

Manuals of
Forensic Hypnosis

☑

Hypnosis of a
Witness

All crimes committed under hypnotic influence, even though the hypnotiser be the most cunning and knowing knave imaginable, and even if the crimes be most warily devised, are always liable to subsequent investigation, by which, at least, they can be discovered and the delinquent brought to judgment; but for this to be accomplished, lawyers must understand hypnotism.

Karl du Prel, 1889

A HYPNOTIST'S VIEW OF FORENSICS

Every national convention of hypnotists includes workshops on hypnosis in the courtroom. They normally teach to one of these points of view:

- A hypnotist defending himself.
- Hypnotizing a witness to obtain evidence about a third party criminal's behavior.
- How to testify in court as an **expert witness**. (An expert witness is hired by the prosecution or the defense in a case to express a helpful opinion. He, or she, states facts corroborative to that opinion and, supposedly, explains the underlying scientific principle.)

Highlights of the *Journal of Hypnosis* (1991) convention offered forensic hypnosis experts teaching professional guidelines (Marx Howell and George H. Baranowski in a mock trial setting), and a two-day course in forensic hypnosis with George Baranowski. It also offered seminars on "Testifying in Court" and "Hypnosis and Malpractice Lawsuits in Federal Courts."

> [Learn]...*how to protect yourself against costly lawsuits and what to do if you find yourself involved in a malpractice case. Medical professionals have been the targets of the legal profession for many years...It's time for our profession to protect ourselves against this threat before the flood gates open up and drive up the cost of li-*

> *ability insurance....* **(Ad for seminar on "Hypnosis and Malpractice Lawsuits in Federal Courts," *Journal of Hypnotism*, Convention Issue, 1991, p. 64)**

National Guild of Hypnotists

Graduating from a hypnotherapy course qualified me to join the National Guild of Hypnotists and to subscribe to *The Journal of Hypnotism*. With lively readability, plain English, and an ever-positive slant on hypnosis, it teaches and networks. Anybody can order audio and video tapes of the annual conference seminars and workshops, books, an electronic induction machine (the Brain Wave Synchronizer), and much else for "hypnosis, the profession of the 90s."

Their big annual convention is a bazaar of hypnotic, trance, and psychic information and enterprise. The diverse participants represent an informal survey of the national civilian hypnosis scene. Seminar topics range from the bizarre (firewalking class, past-life therapy, training in ghost encounters) to mainstream clinical hypnotherapy techniques.

Attendees could take the two-day course for school personnel, or the two-day course to earn certification in hypnotherapy, and/or the seminar on "Induction Techniques with Difficult Subjects." The advertisement for a six-day course said that it would certify NGH members to become trainers themselves, teaching any "professional" to "immediately become a practicing hypnotherapist specializing in smoking cessation, stress management and weight control." **(p. 9, *Annual Convention Issue*, 1991)**

In 1996, the NGH became a "local" of the AFL-CIO. The magazine announced a deal with the union to allow them to participate in future "wellness exams" given to union members. It did not say if participation would be covert or by pre-informed permission of the union member. Probably covert. An interesting development—because the CIA and various hypnotists have mentioned, over the years, that a medical exam is a good setup for a disguised hypnotic induction.

Who Has the Ethics Problem?

An ongoing theme in the back room hypnotic scene is the never-ending turf war between degreed and non-degreed hypnotists. The degreed hypnotists have periodically attempted legal restriction of the non-degreed hypnotists. A psychiatric text stated that:

> *Stage hypnotists and other lay people...have trifled with hypnosis for a long time...Many of them fancy themselves to be hypnotherapists and advertise themselves as such...irresponsible practices of these lay people endanger the public interest, and attempts have been made to outlaw them.* **(Brown & Fromm, 1986, p. 147)**

However, in the current feeding frenzy in the trance marketplace, those two groups—the degreed and non-degreed hypnotists—have combined forces to resist any legislation affecting hypnotism. The Council of Professional Hypnosis Organizations is a joint committee of the two sectors. Its purpose is to fight any restrictive legislation pertaining to hypnosis.

Bryan M. Knight, M.S.W., Montreal, Canada, psychotherapist, agreed that there are some "irresponsible practices" **("The Case Against Restrictive Laws," *Journal of Hypnotism*, Vol. 5, No. 4, Dec. 1990, p. 27)** among the non-degreed. He defended the right of the non-degreed to practice, however, with well-documented evidence that some of the degreed also have "temptations of the flesh, incompetence, and self-delusion." "The Case Against Restrictive Laws" is a long compilation of moral slips by degreed doctors and psychologists. Here are some statistics which Knight collected, and sources which he cited for the data:

> *17% of the women in graduate psychology programs had sex with an instructor; 22% of students of either sex who had recently been awarded a Ph.D. had been abused; 34% of students involved in personal relationship breakups ended up in bed with an instructor.* **(Glaser and Thorpe, pp. 43-51)**
>
> *The education in sexual abuse got passed on. Women who had sex with instructors in graduate school were four times more likely to have sex with their own patients as those who did not.* **(Pope *et al.*, pp. 147-158)**
>
> *7% of psychiatrists have had sex with (or otherwise abused) patients.* **(Gatrell)**
>
> 12% of psychologists have had sex with (or otherwise abused) clients. **(Pope, Grunebaum)**
>
> *Psychologists are recruiters for whatever belief system they personally adhere to, including some who act as bait for cults.* **(Temerlin)**

Knight also took degreed psychologists to task for the prevalence of disguised hypnotic inductions which avoid the word "hypnosis" but

> *...nevertheless employ techniques (such as progressive relaxation coupled with visualization) that are virtually identical to hypnosis. Professionals apparently have no ethical qualms about misrepresenting what they do...* **(Knight, p. 28)**

Manuals of Forensic Hypnosis

Probably, sooner or later, some psychologist with research in hypnotism as his specialty would unravel the whole thing but he would still have a deuce of a time proving it.
- Estabrooks, *Hypnotism*

Several U.S. universities offer a combined program for would-be forensic psychologists: a Ph.D. in psychology and a law degree. There are handbooks of forensic hypnosis written by, and for, such professionals. A British expert, based at Cambridge University, wrote in a legal reference book:

> *French and German laws treat it as an instance of absence of mens rea. The argument is that hypnotic suggestion creates a very great compulsion to perform the act.* **(p. 768)**... *The question probably depends, in large part, on the extent of dominion attributed to the hypnotist. One opinion favors the view that a hypnotized person cannot be forced to perform acts that are repugnant to him. If this is true, the most that the hypnotist can do in the direction of criminal activity is to remove an inhibition and cause the subject to commit a crime to which he is already inclined. This view is, however, challenged in a recent work by Dr. Heinz Hammerschlag, who concludes from a survey of the evidence that 'there is no basis whatsoever for the view that moral weakness in a hypnotized subject is a condition for the misuse of hypnosis.' It seems, therefore, that there is weight in the opinion of the American Law Institute, that the dependency and helplessness of the hypnotized subject are too pronounced for criminal responsibility.* **(Glanville Williams, *Criminal Law*, p. 769)**

I read manuals, which are focused on legal aspects of hypnosis, written by Teitlebaum, Udolf, and Lawrence and Perry (published in that order). Their contents reveal an evolution of the judicial view of criminal hypnosis toward ever less credibility for the unknowing victim of abusive hypnosis. Each manual in the series decreased a survivor's chance to obtain an appropriate judicial response.

Teitlebaum: Facts Stated

Hypnosis Induction Technics, by Myron Teitelbaum, B.S., LL.B., was a happy find for me. It is a long, long way from Teitlebaum's warnings (1965) to Lawrence and Perry's denials (1986, 1988). Teitlebaum called the detection of antisocial uses of hypnosis "the third major use of hypnosis." Under the heading "Criminal Uses of Hypnosis," and elsewhere in his book, he repeatedly warned readers about the possibility of unethical hypnosis:

> *Among authorities today there is not much doubt that a subject can be made to commit criminal or immoral acts...there is also the area where the hypnotist himself commits the wrongful act and then uses hypnosis to evade the law.* **(Teitlebaum, p. 159)**

He named amnesia as the most seductive ingredient for criminal hypnosis: "...the greater the ability to conceal the nature of the suggested act from the subject, the greater the chances of its enactment." **(p. 160)** He discussed both sealing and seal-breaking techniques and speculated on "antisocial possibilities":

> *With knowledge of the tools of hypnosis such as memory substitution, suggested amnesia and suggested seal...how easy it would be for a skilled hypnotist prior to the trial date to get innocent individuals to testify in good faith to a set of facts which to them were true, but yet never existed.* **(p. 145)**

Other sections of his book cover "Hypnotism and Crime" and "Governmental Uses of Hypnosis." The latter includes an "Involuntary Induction Technic" (relaxation induction) for use on a "prisoner."

On the use of rehypnotization to detect unethical hypnosis, Teitlebaum emphasized the importance of an approach customized to that particular subject and the imperative need for methods, such as Reiter used, to establish reliability of the recovered information. He emphasized the need for a skilled hypnotist and criticized another hypnotist who

> *...did not instruct the subject to tell the truth. He did not motivate the subject to want to tell the truth. He did not set up any conditioned reflexes which would automatically signal the telling of an untruth. He did not interrogate the subject to*

> *determine if the subject had been pre-suggested to give certain answers...* [and he used] *leading and suggestible prodding...* **(p. 151)**

"Pre-suggestions" to "give certain answers" would be likely to occur in a case involving a criminal hypnotist who can access his subject. In known case histories of this type, the hypnotist typically attempted to covertly influence questioning of his victim by suggesting what his subject would say, or by putting a lid on any incriminating memories.

During the rehypnotizations of "Z", Mrs. E, and Palle Hardwick, those obstacles were overcome. The investigating psychiatrists used profound hypnotic states, avoided leading questions, and maintained temporary amnesia. Police investigators, in those three cases, already possessed, or found, evidence which corroborated the statements each rehypnotized subject had made about the hypnotic abuse.

Teitlebaum suggested the following guidelines for forensic hypnosis:

- Tape record during induction and interviews (now the rule is both videotape and audiotape from first hello to last good-by).
- After deep hypnosis is achieved, examine and test the subject to learn if there has been any previous hypnosis, what his ability for self-hypnosis is, "and if there have been any hypnotic pre-suggestions with regard to the telling of truth and the matter at hand." **(p. 155)**
- Then

  > *...implant certain conditioned reflexes to signal the telling of an untruth...examples... 1) Hyperaesthesia of an arm could be suggested and the subject made to feel acute pain. Relief of that pain could be obtained by suggesting that the rubbing of the back of the head by the sensitive arm would achieve the result. The subject would then be told that the telling of a lie, no matter how slight, would cause the pain to reoccur. This would be firmly established by forcing the subject to lie with regard to questions as to his name, age and place of birth. 2) Instead of a pain stimulus and response the subject could be caused to involuntarily blink his eyes or twitch his thumb.* **(p. 155)**

- Motivate the subject to speak only truth, by suggesting pride for that accomplishment.

Scheflin and Opton: Facts Straddled

The Mind Manipulators (1978), by Alan Scheflin and Edward Opton, is a brilliant, inclusive, monumental edifice of a book. This painstakingly-researched reference work has detailed chapters on most mind-control technologies. The electroshock section is especially well researched and helpful (although the authors do not mention its association with hypnoprogramming). However, *The Mind Manipulators* is not well-known and is hard to find.

On criminal hypnosis, their approach awkwardly straddled the fence. One chapter dealt with the subject of unethical hypnosis. It uncritically recorded every bit of scuttlebutt the authors had found—with a scoffing approach which some of their material might deserve. They did not mention narcohypnosis. Yet the authors fully accepted Candy's description of being conditioned with the help of a barbiturate IV, because of the later, corroborating CIA documents. However, they denied that her free will was ever taken from her: "The technology of mind manipulation is too blunt for the precise control necessary to create a zombie agent" **(Scheflin and Opton, *The Mind Manipulators*, p. 447)**.

They spouted the old dogma of moral integrity: that nobody can be abused under hypnosis unless they have a weak character to begin with. Therefore, they declared, Candy's programming was basically her fault rather than the CIA's!

> *Rather than face the alternative of accepting responsibility for her voluntary role in what she did, she has chosen the other alternative of accepting her behavior but changing her attitudes about it. She now describes her role as involuntary, the product of a sophisticated form of dominance over the mind. This explanation eases for her the tension created by the knowledge that her behavior violated her moral codes...* **(p. 474)**

Did coming to that conclusion ease, for Scheflin and Opton, the tension created by fear that they, too, could be hit with a needleful of barbiturate and hypnoprogrammed into unknowing, obedient subjects? It logically extrapolates from their position that, because their personal moral codes forbid hypnoprogramming (supposedly unlike Candy's), they are safe from it. Scheflin and Option also said that:

> *Esoteric notions like brainwashing allow people to forget that they are responsible for their own actions. Personal values, as well as independence of thought and judgment, are not snatched away from people. People all too readily give them up voluntarily.* **(Ibid., p. 474)**

If only it were true that, if a targeted person just has enough strength of character and courage, mind-control technologies cannot be successful. Those of us who have received forced conditioning, like lab rats, have a more humble and accurate perspective on that issue than Scheflin and Opton.

Udolf: Facts Distorted

Udolf's *Forensic Hypnosis* (1983) provides information on courtroom applications and legal problems involving hypnosis to a target audience of experienced professionals—psychological and legal. He discusses "Hypnosis as an Investigative... Procedure," "Admissibility of Hypnotically Influenced Testimony," "Hypnotic Confessions, Statements...," "Role of the Expert Witness," "Hypnosis and Crime"—even "Regulation of Hypnosis." Detailed glossaries define legal and psychological terms. He also provides an index of cases involving hypnosis.

In contrast to Teitelbaum, Udolf denies the possibility of unethical hypnosis. Like Scheflin and Opton, any issue of hypnosis abuse is viewed by Udolf as due to the subject's lack of character. He lists as "pseudo issues" "The possibility of hypnosis against a subject's will" and "the hypnotist's ability to victimize the subject or compel or deceive him..." **(Udolf, *Forensic Hypnosis,* p. 7)** He repeats the usual myths: "the evidence appears overwhelming that it is not possible to hypnotize a person who actively resists hypnosis..." **(Ibid.)** "Subjects never lose control of the situation nor surrender their volition to the hypnotist. They can come out of hypnosis at any time they desire." **(Ibid., p. 3)**

Elsewhere in the book, however, Udolf equivocates: "The question of whether hypnosis can be used to...victimize subjects, has remained unresolved..." **(p. 125)**

He admitted that disguised induction exists. He lists methods by which a covert hypnosis can be accomplished: by "relaxation," or by substituting another word for "sleep" in a verbal sleep induction script, or by the "chaperone system" (in which the "chaperone" is the hypnotist's real target).

Udolf states that any subject who is hypnotized by a disguised induction has given "subconscious consent," because, he says, the induction was not disguised to the subject's unconscious and it agreed to the induction. According to Udolf's reasoning, either the conscious or unconscious of a subject can give agreement. No matter which one agreed, he would call that agreement equally valid.

Udolf does not deal with the fact that the unconscious mind is reflexive and can be reduced to a relationship with a relatively limited group of neurons, whereas the conscious mind is capable of being analytical and draws on the general resources of its data bank. Can an isolated "mind" that is not fully capable of analysis legally be a "mind"? Udolf also does not discuss the ethics of a forced reinduction by posthypnotic cue, or of induction by hypnoid drug, or by any other unusual and compelling chemical, electrical, or biomagnetic technology. He also does not consider the questionable legality of obtaining a subject's conscious (or unconscious) agreement to be hypnotized by means of lies stated by the hypnotist about hypnosis.

The book cites many legal cases involving hypnosis, but most have little relevance to this book's topic. Many involve only shaky evidence and morally distasteful subjects and circumstances. On the subject of Palle Hardwick's case, Udolf merely quotes M. Reiser's, 1978, summary of the case.

> *...in Denmark in which the defendant robbed a bank and killed two employees. It was alleged by the accused that during World War II, when he was in prison, his cellmate repeatedly hypnotized him and made him "subservient" and that he had acted under the former cellmate's influence.* **(Udolf, 1983, p. 131)**

Udolf's comments on the Australian case involving Palmer and the three women are also disturbingly distorted: "The testimony of the complainants appears incredible...It seems likely that this case is an example of hypnosis being used to give a subject an excuse to do what she was evidently willing to do." **(p. 136)** He speculated whether the women's testimony was "honest rationalization" or "deliberate perjury."

On hypnotizing witnesses to crimes, Udolf says the purpose should be only to help get evidence for use in the trial—not to use information obtained by hypnosis in the trial.

A study of the text and bibliography shows these problems in Udolf's presentation:

- It mentions narcohypnosis only briefly, and only in the context of its use in police interrogation to obtain confession.

- It omits M. H. Erickson's research on how to establish deep-level control of a subject. The only reference to Erickson is his piece of phony "research," which supposedly proves that criminal hypnosis is categorically impossible.

- There is lots of Barber, which means there is a lot of pseudoscience, twisted logic, confusion, and assignment to the subject of all responsibility for bad outcomes.

- Marginally relevant legal cases are cited in detail. The important cases of Palle, Z., and Mrs. E, are slighted.

- There is no serious discussion of the physiology of hypnosis. This leaves Barber's statement that the subject's imagination dupes the hypnotist uncontested.

- Research studies that could provide strong proofs of regression authenticity are not cited. Only studies that challenge any credibility for regression are included.

- Udolf's bibliography is far more restricted in references than Teitlebaum's because Udolf omits most points of view and research results which are contrary to his positions.

- Teitlebaum included a chapter on government use of hypnosis. Udolf does not mention that possibility (probably because it was now more than a possibility, and SECRET).

In the final analysis, Udolf is far more worried that a subject may successfully accuse a hypnotist of unlawful conduct than that a hypnotist might successfully victimize a subject **(p. 144)**. He argues against any legislation dealing with hypnosis.

Lawrence and Perry: Facts Denied

Hypnosis, Will, and Memory: a Psycho-legal History, by Jean-Roche Lawrence and Campbell Perry, is a more recent (1986, 1988) book on the legal aspects of criminal hypnosis. The authors claimed, up front, that their book was going to answer, once and for all, the question:

> *...how can the hypnotic situation lead to reports of total submission, compulsion, or lack of control over one's own physical and psychological processes?* **(Lawrence and Perry, pp. xvi-xvii)**

Their answers are hypnosis-lobby propaganda repeated with specious cleverness. This lengthy work is written about something the authors say cannot exist. It is a vast compilation of marginal, equivocal, and outdated materials. It presents, for any lay or professional reader, the standard myths about hypnosis. It provides legal references for any hypnotist who has been accused of malpractice.

Lawrence and Perry claim that "Hypnosis is a situation in which an individual is asked to set aside critical judgment, without abandoning it completely..." **(Ibid., p. xiv)** In fact, however, the goal of every criminal hypnotist is to displace the subject's conscious mind as completely as possible. Lawrence and Perry say that

> *...the alleged coercive power of hypnosis...stemmed from its identification with long-standing beliefs surrounding phenomena such as witchcraft and sorcery, religious fanaticism, and the unabated popular enthusiasm stimulated by the scientific discoveries...and the negative reactions to its use from the established medical, religious, and political milieus of the last two centuries...* **(p. xvii)**

Actually, the coercive element of hypnosis results from an operator's expert manipulation of a susceptible subject's brain physiology.

They say, "...it is recognized today that the hypnotized subject is not an automaton..." **(p. 394)** Actually, subjects have varying responses to trance, and go to varying depths. Not every hypnotic session involves **automatism**. But every case of criminal hypnosis does.

The index to Lawrence and Perry's book does not list "disguised induction" or "induction, disguised." It does not mention "narcohypnosis" or "electro-induction." Estabrooks is mentioned in the bibliography, but not for the 1945 book in which he bragged about making unknowing hypnotic subjects and urged government development of a cadre of amnesic agents, and not for the magazine article in which he reminisced about creating hypnoprogrammed spies during World War II.

Compare the spin that Lawrence and Perry put on their presentation of the case of Palle Hardwick with the true facts:

> *Reiter's (1958) account of this case placed great store on H.'s account of these events, which was provided in hypnosis. In particular, he* [Reiter] *relied on the mistaken doctrine that the hypnotized person is unable to lie, and on the slightly more plausible premise that H.'s hypnotically elicited recollections of the events were in substantial agreement with the known facts of the case. Almost exclusively, he focused on the apparent Svengali-like power of an unscrupulous hypnotist...* **(Lawrence and Perry, p. 308)**

Most of their book is a review of old legal cases from the 1700s and 1800s in Paris's La Bibliotheque Nationale. The first three-hundred of the book's four-hundred-some pages barely get us into the early twentieth century. The remaining pages list U.S. legal cases involving hypnosis: twelve before 1910, and about thirty from 1910 to 1945. Lawrence and Perry clam up just when it gets interesting. They say that post-WWII hypnosis research

> *...is probably a little too close to be able to chart objectively. It suffices to say that this period has been one of remarkable growth and development at both the clinical and experimental levels.* **(p. 297)**

I wholeheartedly agree with that statement. I regret that they chose not to provide details of that "remarkable growth and development."

Lawrence and Perry assign all guilt for ethical deviance, in trance or as a result of trance manipulation, to the hypnotic subject's presumed preexisting lack of character, the old "dogma of moral integrity." One of their most disturbing statements is that people have been harmed by hypnotists only because those hypnotic subjects believed harm was possible: "underlying self-fulfilling prophecies" **(p. 394)**. It requires such an ugly twist of self-serving logic to make the victim of criminal hypnosis into the perpetrator—to totally relieve the hypnotist from moral or technical responsibility for the outcome. (The final stage of brainwashing also pushes the victim to accept all guilt and responsibility for his mistreatment.)

Toward the end of their book, however, the authors eloquently contradict their earlier statements:

> *Perhaps the most intriguing and elusive issue in the history of hypnosis is the experience of nonvolition. Recognized before the end of the eighteenth century, it has haunted investigators ever since....One has only to think about the victims' reports of having been sexually abused by an unethical hypnotist to realize how ambiguous such situations are and how unwilling the scientific community can be in acknowledging such possibilities.* **(Lawrence and Perry, 1988, pp. 393-4)**

Meyers: Textbook Myths

Meyer's, 1990, beginning level college textbook, *Exploring Psychology*, says that information repressed by hypnosis "can be recalled at a prearranged signal or upon subtle questioning." **(Meyers, p. 145)** Kohlstrim, 1985, and Spanos, *et al.*, 1985, are cited. However, amnesic information can only be cued out if the original hypnotist implanted that "prearranged signal," and if the second hypnotist knows the designated cue and is allowed to use it by the subject's programming. "Subtle questioning" will work only if the questioner is prepared to include hypnotic abuse in the options—and if the data is only lightly repressed (unlikely in a case of abusive hypnosis).

To recover information heavily repressed by hypnosis, rehypnotizations with the goal of age regressions, hard work and a long struggle against the blocking programming will probably be necessary. But Myers shuts the door on hypnotic age regression as a means of recovering amnesic information, giving an impression of scientific debunking: "60 years of research disputes claims of age regression."

Myers cited research that persons, who are pretending to be a child, act more childlike than regressed hypnotized persons. He cited that as evidence that regression is phony. (I don't agree. The deeply regressed subject is not focused on behaving like a child. He is enveloped in remembering.) Myers mentioned the Chowchilla bus case as a successful example of remembering under hypnosis, but he denigrated it as an "atypical" example. He gave only grudging approval to witness hypnosis, saying it "may have value—or at least do little harm." He cautioned that hypnosis can increase the number of errors and cause confabulation. True. He did not mention Dr. Reiter's method.

As Meyer stated, there have been studies contesting the validity of regression since 1925. What he does not state, however, is the related fact that there have also been quite amazing studies demonstrating authentic hypnotic age regression. The credibility of age regression, such as into a person's childhood, was accepted by most hypnosis researchers until the textbook takeover of the Orne/Barber advocates. (Their position developed, concurrently, with the explosion of trance venues in the marketplace and covert government hypnosis research.)

"Can Hypnosis Force People to Act Against Their Will?" the section title asked. "No," Myers answered, restating the old dogma of moral integrity: obedience proves that the subject wanted to do the suggested act anyway, and hypnosis provided the opportunity. (That is false. A conditioned amnesic somnambulist cannot keep from being rehypnotized on cue. She cannot remember what she has been told not to remember. She cannot avoid obeying most suggestions. She can only disobey if she can manage a conversion.)

In summary, the facts presented in a modern psychology textbook admit a possible physical reality for hypnosis—as long as amnesic victims of criminal hypnosis do not try to remember anything by rehypnotization, do not aspire to testifying in court, and do not claim that hypnosis caused them to do an unwilled act.

Musings

Dr. Estabrooks wrote about the slim-to-zero possibility of a case of unethical hypnosis becoming publicly uncovered as such. He said, "...military intelligence teaches one to be devious..." **(*Hypnotism*, p. 230)** In a "devious" scenario, the writer knows that Gus "walks in his sleep, a pretty good sign that he will be a good hypnotic subject." He asks Gus to visit him at home. After Gus arrives, the writer proposes hypnosis. Gus agrees. The writer soon knows for sure that Gus is a somnambulist. The writer gives Gus a posthypnotic suggestion to not remember his trance induction and conditioning. He suggests sealing.

Will the "writer's" crime be exposed?

> *That's not nearly as easy as you might think. Our psychiatrist friends, capable as they are, would probably miss the point* [the fact of unethical hypnosis]. *If they didn't, they would be laughed out of court. Their explanation would be ridiculous, in the eyes of the public, and they certainly could never prove it. We have only to stick to our original story...no one but...the writer can hypnotize Gus to get the truth. In fact, we would be greathearted and allow anyone to hypnotize him...Our military friends would see through the hoax. They would dig up our records and know that we had the background to lay the plot. Then they would maintain a discreet silence. Certain military matters are not for public consumption. Probably, sooner or later, some psychologist with research in hypnotism as his specialty would unravel the whole thing but he would still have a deuce of a time proving it. We would simply sit tight.* **(*Hypnotism,* p. 233)**

That is true. Military hypnotists, and those who work for the government, let hypnotic predators freely prey on uninformed persons rather than make public details of the technology and its use in order to prosecute them. In turn, civilian hypnotists, who are knowledgeable about some military advances in mind-control, say nothing—except to other insiders. And the potential for unethical control grows.

Hypnosis of Witnesses

...the real pioneers in this appear to be the Israelis. Meyer Kaplan, the detective who commands the Jerusalem CID, has found that witnesses can recall far more under hypnosis than they can consciously...Hypnosis has recently been introduced as a routine police measure in all terrorist bombings in Israel where there might have been witnesses.

- Peter Watson, *War on the Mind,* p. 286

Donald Bain explained in *The Control of Candy Jones* that "...information recovered through the use of hypnosis is not, in itself, legally valid" **(p. 42)**. The rule is perfect for unethical operators. The only way that victims can recover their memory is by rehypnotization, but information gained only by hypnosis is not legally valid. Since most hypnotists now deny that criminal hypnosis is possible, rehypnotization of victims of unethical hypnosis is not taught. But witness hypnosis is—yet with increasing scepticism.

Back in the 60s and 70s, hypnosis of both witnesses and the accused was considered the cutting edge of forensic hypnosis. Then the pendulum began to swing toward scepticism.

> *A major problem in forensic hypnosis is the continued existence of the mistaken impression that everything said in trance is fact, that all bits of information garnered from a hypnotized individual are accurate. Sometimes they are, and sometimes they are not.* **(Kelly & Kelly, *Hypnosis*, p. 219)**

The pendulum kept swinging. Now, it is at the opposite extreme. The forensic view of witness hypnosis has shifted from believing that anything said under hypnosis is true to the position that nothing said under hypnosis is to be trusted. Now, there is no distinguishing between less and more reliable types of regressions. Now, all memories expressed in trance are viewed with doubt.

Dr. Reiter, that cold-blooded forensic hypnotist, took plenty of time, used excellent proofs of deep trance, and suggested safeguards against lying or confabulating.. He had worked with Palle daily for months, before he actually began to collect evidence. The problem with a quicker and more humane hypnosis is its higher rate of error.

Testimony derived from hypnosis alone can not convict. It can generate leads to more tangible evidence. That legal policy is helpful for malpracticing hypnotists. If they are careful not to generate any nonhypnotic evidence, under those guidelines they are unconvictable.

Basic Facts of Forensic Hypnosis

- *Hypnosis makes it possible to recover true, faint, or repressed memories.*

- *It is possible for a hypnotist to deliberately stimulate, or implant, distorted or false memories in a subject's mind.*

- *Hypnosis can result in imagination unknowingly displacing real remembering: confabulation.*

- *Hypnosis rapport makes a subject likely to follow and accept conscious, or unconscious, leading cues from the hypnotist, however subtle. If an interrogator seeks memories that do not exist, a hypnotized person may confabulate them.*

- *A victim of confabulation, or of false memory implanting, is likely to feel a strong, unswerving belief in the false memories. That confidence is even greater than he would express for real memories.*

The first-named fact in this list exists, and it can be valuable to individuals and legal authorities when trance is properly managed—or even sometimes when it is not. The other facts, however, must also be kept in mind as possibilities.

Chowchilla Case

In America, keen police interest in witness hypnosis began with the Chowchilla case. The bus driver who was victimized in that famous Chowchilla, California, kidnapping, could remember only three digits of the kidnapper's

license plate. Police hypnotized the driver, hoping to learn more. Under hypnosis, he named two complete license plate numbers. One of them turned out to be completely wrong. But the other one was correct in six of seven digits. Three of the digits were the ones that he had already named, so he only gained three digits. But those three made all the difference. They resulted in arrest, trial, and life imprisonment for the three perpetrators.

Bryan

Dr. William Jennings Bryan was a grandson of the great orator, William Jennings Bryan, and the son of a physician. He earned degrees in electrical engineering, law, and medicine, but he spent the last decades of his life teaching and practicing forensic hypnosis. He founded a school and internship program for hypnosis training. He sold tape sets of his lectures. Like M. H. Erickson's educational programs, Bryan limited registration for his pricey four-day cram courses—and longer and pricier "internships" in hypnosis—to degreed medical personnel or lawyers. (He also opened the courses to accompanying spouses, nurses, etc.)

Dr. Bryan started a magazine, *American Journal of Hypnosis*. It continued for years and often carried articles on forensic hypnosis, as well as on the physiology of trance. He consulted with the CIA and was a technical consultant for the movie, "The Manchurian Candidate."

Bryan was the biggest name in the country in the field of forensic hypnosis in the 60s. He personally was involved in many notorious legal cases of his era. He wrote more than 150 articles and books on hypnosis. Many touched on his experiences providing hypnosis for law enforcement agencies. Some were texts on forensic hypnosis (such as *The Legal Aspects of Hypnosis*, 1962). Bryan approached forensic hypnosis with a zest and frankness that is strictly taboo today. Unfortunately, you can scarcely find a copy of his books, tapes, or magazine articles.

Spiegel

Dr. Herbert Spiegel helped with an Ann Arbor, Michigan, murder case using witness hypnosis. Eleven patients had died in a VA hospital, all of respiratory arrest. The modus operandi appeared to be an injection of Pavulon (a derivative of curare). Detectives assumed that the murderer was somebody on the VA staff, but they did not know who.

> *Dr. Spiegel hypnotized one patient who, while in the trance state, recalled events in the ward that were not remembered during prior questioning of him in the nontrance state. Based upon this information, the FBI was able to expand the scope of its investigation and, eventually, two suspects were named, both nurses.* **(March 22, 1976, *Time*, paraphrased in Bain, p. 42)**

Kroger

W. S. Kroger also did witness hypnosis. In one case, he hypnotized a policeman who had been wounded by robbers. In trance, the officer was able to recall the license number of their car, even though it had been several months since the incident. In another case, a hypnotized subject remembered, by means of age regression, where he was on a particular calendar date eight years earlier. In both cases, officers were able to corroborate the accuracy of the subject's recall under hypnosis with tangible evidence.

(Like most regression specialists, Kroger distinguished between **revivification** and **age regression**. Revivification is a reliving immersed in the past. The hypnotized subject says, "I am...." Age regression is a less valid acting out of past history during which the subject's awareness of the present remains intact. Kroger felt that revivification was quite reliable, but that age regression without revivification risked confabulation.)

Howell

Inspector Marx Howell has twenty-eight years of law enforcement experience and is an FBI National Academy graduate. He specializes in the "investigative hypnosis interview" for the Texas Department of Public Safety. Official Texas interest in witness questioning under hypnosis began in 1980, after the Chowchilla kidnapping. Some officers were sent to train at the Law Enforcement Hypnosis Institute in Los Angeles, California. Texas' own fifty-hour training course was first given by the Therapeutic and Forensic Hypnosis Institute, Houston, Texas. It has sections on "Criminological vs. Psychotherapeutic Use of Hypnosis," "Myths and Misconceptions," "Inductions and Deepening Techniques," and "Information-Eliciting Techniques." They later developed "two in-service hypnosis schools in the DPS Academy..." **(p. 36)**

Texas kept statistics. In their first 1,121 sessions of investigative hypnosis, 73.68% of the inductions resulted in additional information. The value of the information obtained under hypnosis ranged from zero to the provision of key evidence which resulted in identification and arrest of a perpetrator.

Howell stressed that any leads emerging from a hypnotized subject should be corroborated and used only to support the physical investigation. Laws applying to forensic hypnosis depend on the state where it is practiced and there are significant differences between the laws of those states. Texas is said to be very open to it. Texas courts accept witness testimony that has been refreshed by hypnosis. Many other states do not. However, Texas does not allow hypnosis of suspects or defendants.

Howell said that a police hypnotist should be ignorant of case details. To develop a subject's trust, he should wear plain clothes and first...

> *Explain the common misconceptions which most people believe about hypnosis...Many of these misconceptions come from the Svengali-Trilby novel by George DuMaurier and have been perpetuated over the years through television, motion pictures, and stage hypnosis.* **(Howell, p. 37)**

Even in Texas, there is no help for a victim of unethical hypnosis. Texas police hypnotists are taught that unethical hypnosis is not possible.

Baranowski

George Baranowski is another prominent forensic hypnotist. He studied at the Midwest Investigative Hypnosis Training Institute in Rochelle, Illinois, taught by Sheriff Jerry Brooks. He also studied with Dr. William S. Kroger, and at Purdue, and at Indiana University. He proposed the following procedural requirements for forensic hypnosis. **(Damon, pp. 5-6)**

- *Record everything on both audio and video.*
- *Don't ask "leading questions."*
- *Learn court procedure as to forms, attitude, how to testify, basic laws, rules of evidence, the "doctrine of memory," and how to interview.*

Public Spokesmen on Hypnosis:

Truth, Half-Truths, and Lies

M.H. Erickson

T. X. Barber

The Skeptics:
Sarbin and Spanos

M. T. Orne

> ***Now if hypnosis can be used to secure both good and bad ends, why do so many hypnotists loudly and vehemently deny that criminals can profitably employ it?***
>
> ***Part of the answer can be attributed to the dedicated nature of these scientifically trained men who wish to make the public aware of the fantastic potentials of hypnosis as a beneficial and worthwhile tool in human endeavors.***
>
> ***Their task, however, is complicated by the fact that even generally well-informed segments of the public continue to associate hypnosis with quackery, cheap entertainment and some vaguely sinister evil. Publicity identifying hypnosis as a potentially valuable criminal tool only serves to make acceptance of the benefits of hypnosis more difficult. Thus, many researchers feel compelled to attack such an unfavorable linkage head on, in deference to what they consider the greater good.***
>
> **Birns, *Hypnosis*, 1968, pp. 155-156**

Not Birns (whose insightful words are quoted above), but M. H. Erickson, T. X. Barber, Sarbin, Spanos, and Martin Orne are the well-known and oft-cited public spokesmen on hypnosis. They are quoted in textbooks, courtrooms, and forensic manuals as final authorities on matters having to do with criminal, or merely "unethical," hypnosis. However, Erickson, Barber, Sarbin, Spanos, and Orne probably declared a public position that was different from their private knowledge. Here follows a closer look at what these public spokesmen have said about hypnosis—and how their statements compare to the facts.

M. H. ERICKSON

...an individual in hypnosis can be caused to commit an act which is socially and objectively reprehensible... **(p. 116)** ***One well-known and experienced hypnotist regretted that the dangers were not more numerous and more obvious, for then he believed there would be less tinkering with hypnosis by the inexperienced...Possible dangers do reside in...the moral issue...***

- Marcuse, *Hypnosis,* p. 167

Was M. H. Erickson the "well-known and experienced hypnotist" to whom Marcuse referred? Maybe.

M. H. Erickson started hypnotizing people when he was a college freshman at the University of Wisconsin. By his junior year, he had put hundreds of other students in trance. He was invited to demonstrate hypnosis to the psychology department, to a medical school, and to a nearby mental hospital. In 1923, Clark L. Hull, a hypnosis researcher, invited Erickson to teach a graduate seminar. After earning an M.A. and an M.D., Erickson interned in psychiatry. He combined teaching, research, and private practice. Over his lifetime, he hypnotized thousands of persons, some as many as five-hundred times.

He profitably targeted doctors, dentists, and graduate psychologists. He taught thousands of professionals throughout the U.S. to use hypnosis—often in two or three-day how-to-hypnotize hotel seminars. He was creating a new medical technocracy with the special abilities of disguised induction and hypnotic suggestion. When hypnodontist Aaron Moss recalled presenting those seminars with Erickson, he said that 60% of the students were dentists, 35% were medical professionals, and only 5% were psychologists. The students learned fast:

> *With only a little experience he* [the student] *can produce the peculiar phenomena characteristic of hypnosis such as age regression, hallucinations, illusions, catalepsy, etc.* **(Moss, p. 306)**

M. H. Erickson's wife, Elizabeth Moore Erickson, also a professional in this field, was overshadowed by her husband's professional stature. One of the great Ericksonian articles, "Concerning the Nature and Character of Post-hypnotic Behavior," is credited to both of them, his name first.

The Erickson Foundation

Erickson, like Jung and Freud, founded an organization which acts as a perpetual lobby, publicity machine, fund-raiser, and promotor of all things Ericksonian. Erickson, Jung, and Freud all trained disciples at length, bonding together those who came to study with the master. Each developed a library of revered books—written by the master and/or his disciples. Each has unique in-group concepts, lingo, skills, and hierarchy.

The Milton H. Erickson Foundation publishes a quarterly newsletter (sprinkled with M.H. Erickson quotes). It sells audio and videotapes from past Ericksonian conferences. (But you must be a graduate student in psychology, hold a post-BA degree in that subject, or have a social service job to attend a conference or purchase conference tapes). Conference courses typically include "Conversational Induction Techniques," "A Conversational Induction with Fixation on Ideas," and "A Conversational Induction and the Utilization of Spontaneous Trance." Ericksonians are big on disguised induction. The "conversational induction" is their specialty.

The newsletter also has advertised a terra cotta, or bronze, portrait bust of Erickson. Its list of books for sale has included *The Wisdom of Milton H. Erickson, My Voice Will Go With You: The Teaching Tales of Milton H. Erickson,* and others, all with "Ericksonian" or "Erickson" in the title. Like Maypole dancers, Ericksonians continue to weave the magic of the MHE name, the continuing MHE adulation, and themselves, more tightly against the center pole which is MHE himself.[1]

M. H.Erickson had peers who researched hypnosis: LeCron, Wolberg, R. W. White, Salter, Young. For years, William Jennings Bryan ran a competing organization which also offered an internship program and produced a professional journal on the subject of hypnosis. Now, all of those but Erickson are forgotten. Why? Was he really "greater"?

---

[1] To encounter him as a fairly likeable human being, speaking plain English, and telling his therapy tales, read Zeig's *Teaching Seminar with Milton H. Erickson, M.D.*

Erickson was a brilliant hypnosis researcher who contributed several important elements to the technology of coercive hypnosis. Most notably, he created the propaganda piece that kicked off a surge of disinformation about hypnosis which quickly became a tidal wave.

Erickson on "Antisocial Hypnosis"

Erickson's most cited article is a piece of phony "research" that appears to prove that unethical hypnosis is impossible, and that nobody can be made to do anything against his will, by means of hypnosis:

> *..the conclusion warranted by these experimental findings is that hypnosis cannot be misused to induce hypnotized persons to commit actual wrongful acts either against themselves or others...* (**M. H. Erickson, "*An Experimental Investigation of the Possible Anti-social Use of Hypnosis*"**)

Erickson claimed, in that article, that a subject cannot be made to do anything against his will, or against his morals. What he really demonstrated, however, is all of the methods by which a hypnotist can cleverly and deliberately fail to produce self-destructive or unethical behavior—if he wants to report that type of results. "An Experimental Investigation of the possible Anti-social Use of Hypnosis" is now quoted as scientific gospel in every psychology textbook.

Millions of suggestible people have accepted Erickson's research results as fact. The reasons are a lesson in propaganda techniques: a) An authority figure, a "doctor," insists the lie is the truth. b) "Experts" and textbooks repeat the lie insistently and endlessly. c) Mock-up experiments have "proved" it. (We are taught that anything with the appearance of science is the final answer. d) Erickson used big numbers: lots of subjects, lots of experiments, lots of negative results.

How did this extraordinarily expert hypnotist manage to "fail" in his attempts to get hypnotized persons to commit "anti-social" acts, when amateur criminal hypnotists could manage it? This double-layered article superficially insists it is proof that a subject cannot be made to do anything against his will by means of hypnosis. What it actually displays is an array of slick techniques by which a hypnotist can claim to attempt unethical hypnosis and produce seeming failure.

- ☐ *In some cases, he hypnotized them so lightly that they could still discuss and argue with him freely. They were not deep enough to have labored, almost inaudible, somnambulistic, literal, and automatistic thought processes and responses. Light trance is not as compelling as* ***deep trance****.*

- ☐ *In other writings, Erickson said that deep, amnesic trances were necessary for automatistic obedience, and he was an expert at producing them. However, he gave no* ***amnesia suggestions*** *in this experiment. He knew that full access to memory supports volition!*

- ☐ *He was a master of devious,* ***indirect****, seductive patient manipulation, but in this "research" he gave only direct suggestions. He said, "Sit on a hot stove." None of the subjects would.*

- ☐ *He did not use the full array of hypnotic techniques. He reported that he tried to make a subject have the "impression" that a friend's purse was actually her own, and could not make it work. He did not suggest a visual* ***hallucination*** *that the purse was her own. (In a rerun of that experiment, Margaret Brenman suggested exactly that, and she succeeded in eliciting the "antisocial" behavior.)*

- ☐ *After his "failed" experiment, a subject told Erickson that she "tried hard," but she "simply could not do what had been asked..." That statement describes the experience of* ***nonvolition*** *of a deeply hypnotized, trained subject. (The suggested act seems impossible to resist. It seems to carry itself out with no conscious control.) The subject's hypnotic automatism probably was stimulated by Erickson's* ***nonverbal directive.*** *Consciously, she was not aware of the two levels of instruction coming from Erickson: a weaker verbal layer, a dominant nonverbal layer. Subjects, however, unconsciously, and with extreme sensitivity, perceive an experimenter's nonverbal communication (tone and body language). Erickson's bias was so clear that some hypnotized subjects refused his request, made while they were hypnotized, to play practical jokes on other persons. Yet they willingly obeyed the same request in a waking state!*

Every M.H. Erickson article I have ever read contained one or more concepts of technical value. In addition to the preceding demonstrations, in his article's conclusion, Erickson directly stated one important, powerful, and true thing. He said that persons who are injured, offended, or exploited under hypnosis remain unconsciously angry—even when they do not consciously know that fact.

> *...the subjects tended to develop and manifest much more intense feeling at the hypnotic level of awareness than at the conscious waking level. Many of the subjects in the waking state readily and easily forgave...only to manifest in the trance state a full continuance of their anger.* **(“*Antisocial...*” p. 393).**

Opposition to Erickson’s “Research”— Estabrooks (who personally had done lots of morally marginal hypnosis) said:

> ...[the] *attitude is that there is only one way to have a subject commit a crime. We hypnotize him for the first time at 10:00 A.M. At 10:30 we hand him a knife and say, “Go murder your father.” The old gentleman is still hale and hearty by 11:00 A.M. so we have “proved” our point that it can’t be done.* **(Estabrooks, *Hypnotism*, p. 185)**

In a 1953 article, “Anti-Social Behavior and Hypnosis,” Marcuse surveyed the literature and tallied separately those persons, among the well-known experimental hypnotists, who believed unethical hypnosis was possible, and those who did not. He said that only Bramwell, Young, and Erickson disbelieved (or claimed to disbelieve) in the possibility of self-destructive and hetero-destructive acts caused by hypnosis.

Soon after, Young was converted to Marcuse’s side by the evidence from his own experiments. Young then also took on Erickson, pointing out the

> *...poverty-stricken suggestions to which, according to Erickson’s thesis, antisocial experimentation is limited. If, however, we study Erickson’s technique in dealing with all other hypnotic problems, we find him using a methodology varied and rich, and consequently effective.* **(Young in LeCron, ed., *Experimental Hypnosis*)**

Indeed, Erickson’s insistence that hypnosis is invariably harmless (except perhaps to the hypnotist!) becomes even more ridiculous when you learn that Erickson made persons become hypnotized unknowingly, and unwillingly. He caused hearing people to become deaf—even against their will and to their great distress. He caused seeing persons to become blind, and then colorblind. Young wrote a classic article which listed some of the methods that would facilitate unethical hypnosis. The contributions of Erickson are prominent in that list.

Marcuse wrote to Erickson, pointing out that his “experiments” made no attempt to evade the subjects’ resistance. He had not, for example, used the technique of hallucination which had been so effective in his other experiments. Erickson wrote back (“Personal communication, 1948”) that

> *...the anti-social act was now “on the part of the hypnotist,” for he said ‘there must be an awareness of the nature of the act before it can be judged as anti-social.”* **(Erickson quoted in Marcuse, “*Anti-Social...*,” p. 19)**

According to Erickson’s statement above, if the subject becomes unable to be aware of the nature of the act, the moral burden shifts to the somnambulist’s hypnotist! That makes sense. However, that omits the experience of nonvolition.

Young read the quote from Erickson’s letter to Marcuse and commented that:

> *Erickson’s definition of an antisocial act in hypnosis is an act which the subject has been made to see as antisocial. It cannot be a bad act which the subject has been misled into believing is a good or at least necessary act. For Erickson, it must be a bad act which the subject sees as a bad act.* **(Young in LeCron, ed., p. 384)**

Marcuse further quoted Erickson:

> *It is possible that many individuals are reluctant to discuss the matter of anti-social behavior publicly and may take a position contrary to what they believe for fear that a minor aspect of hypnotic phenomena* [the possibility of criminal hypnosis] *may jeopardize further work in the area...This expressed fear is not without foundation as witness the current blanket prohibition of hypnosis in many of our large universities. That a technique is misused is no argument against its use.* **(M. H. Erickson, quoted by Marcuse, “*Anti-social Behavior and Hypnosis.*”)**

Wells and Estabrooks also published debunking efforts. A graduate student working under Wells, Margaret Brenman, repeated some of M. H. Erickson’s “failed” anti-social experiments—and obtained totally different results. In a *Journal of Psychology* article, Wells targeted Erickson, saying:

> *If a beginner in the art of hypnosis, a graduate student in her first year of practical experience in hypnotizing, can successfully carry out experi-*

> *ments in which her subjects are forced to perform anti-social acts against their wills, then psychologists or physicians with more experience with hypnosis who fail in all such experiments should be put to shame, or encouraged to improve their technique until they, too, can get equally successful results.* **(Wells, 1941, p. 99)**

Dr. Reiter, then Europe's most prominent expert on unethical hypnosis, could scarcely believe Erickson's "research" was being taken seriously in the United States.

> [His] *...experiences then stand in direct opposition to those of a number of investigators of equally high rank. In fact Erickson stands alone among his contemporaries.* **(Reiter, 1958, p. 41)**

In a 1942 article, Erickson seemed to agree with his opposition:

> *It is certainly true, however, that failure to produce even these acts cannot be used as evidence that...hypnosis cannot be misused to induce hypnotized persons to commit actual wrongful acts either against themselves or others. The writer* [Erickson] *concurs entirely with Rowland who recently has written that...the common acception that hypnotized persons will not perform acts that violate their ideals is badly in need of re-examination.* **(*Psychiatry 5*, 1942, pp. 49-62)**

In 1944, however, Erickson again reversed himself:

> *Briefly, there are no injurious or detrimental effects upon the subject other than those that can develop in any other normal interpersonal relationship; hypnosis cannot be used for antisocial or criminal purposes, although most subjects can be induced to commit make-believe or pretended crimes...; the hypnotist-subject relationship is entirely one of voluntary cooperation, and no subject can be hypnotized against his will or without his cooperation...*
>
> *Since hypnosis depends primarily upon cooperation by the subject, the control of the trance state rests largely with the subject. No subject can be kept in a trance for an unreasonable length of time without his full cooperation...Finally, as for detrimental effects of hypnosis, none have been observed in personal experience with hundreds of subjects, some of whom have been hypnotized hundreds of times.* **("*Hypnosis in Medicine*," p. 641)**

Results of the "Antisocial" Article— Erickson had faked experimental results for the unwitting masses and the fawning Ericksonians to believe. He did it well, as he did all things well. He proved that it is unnecessary to give people truth since they are satisfied with lies. He proved that more clever and more ruthless manipulators can manipulate less clever and more trusting ones. He provided a slick piece of propaganda to ensure the future profits, and power, of his profession. Ever since, psychology and psychiatry have treated Erickson's phony experiments as if they were the last word on the matter.

"An Experimental Investigation of the Possible Anti-social Use of Hypnosis" was published in 1939. In April, 1940, a Sunday issue of *The American Weekly* (as close to universal indoctrination as you could get in that pre-television era) said,

> *The general public seems to believe that hypnotized persons will do unlawful things directed as a result of being hypnotized. The careful and conclusive work of Dr. Milton H. Erickson, at the Eloise, Michigan, Hospital and Infirmary, shows that this notion is untrue. Neither while hypnotized, nor later as a result of ideas planted while hypnotized, could he get people to do unlawful or wicked deeds, not even tiny ones. Dr. Erickson is an outstanding hypnotist of the present time, and should be able to accomplish this if it were possible.*

People base their behavior on their data. After Erickson's article, what they were taught, and therefore what they "knew," was a lie. The debunking efforts of Wells, Estabrooks, Brenman, and Young failed, shouted down by print repetition of that lie, and denials of the truth. Erickson, Barber, Orne and their false postulate of ever-harmless hypnosis reign.

M. H. Erickson Video

On the evening of September 19, 1990, Professor Charles Tebbetts showed his hypnotherapy class (in which I was a student) a bootleg tape of the famous Dr. Milton Erickson performing before a select audience. (It was an unauthorized copy. Tebbetts never attended college.) Erickson's subject was a strikingly beautiful, shapely, young black woman. The old man did a disguised induction, then deepened her into a very deep trance. Then, he shifted her to somnambulist waking hypnosis (instructions to open her eyes and have normal speech capability).

Next, he demonstrated his control over her: He made her do things she said she did not want to do. He suggested that she would relive a harsh childhood spanking given by her mother. He said to her, "Feel the pain." He repeated that again, with emphasis, "Feel the pain." She was being obliged by Erickson, in front of a large audience, and being videotaped, to relive an excruciating childhood spanking.

Erickson sat there with a little smile on his face, watching his subject squirm in agony. "FEEL it!" he commanded. "YOU WILL FEEL PAIN!"

She obviously was feeling it. I writhed in my seat and stifled an outcry. Erickson then told her to forget why she was feeling the pain (to be amnesic for the fact that she felt it because of his hypnotic suggestion, and because she was in a nonstop replay of her mother's spanking). He told her to just feel it, feel that agony of stinging on her buttocks.

She did that.

My class was mostly lay persons seeking hypnotherapy training. It was not doctors, dentists, graduate psychologists, and social workers like the Ericksonians. I never saw the end of the film because the women in my class were becoming more and more upset. "This is sick," Marykate said. "If you show any more of this, I'm going to leave," Ronnilee agreed. Several more echoed her threat to walk out if Tebbetts did not stop the film, for they could see no therapeutic purpose for that pain hallucination. Neither could I. It was stage hypnosis, titillating entertainment for a theater audience—not a therapy demonstration.

Tebbetts grinned, as if he had expected that reaction to the film. He stopped the tape. He clearly thought little of Erickson.

Why did Erickson's live audience not react like my classmates? Did they hold him in such awe (rapport?) that criticism—even revolt—was not imaginable? Or did his predominantly male and totally professional audience share his arrogance toward, and emotional distancing from, that woman? Would they be as arrogant toward, and emotionally distanced from, any subject (client or patient)? Were they utterly desensitized to subjugation by hypnosis?

Ericksonian Technology Applicable to Criminal Hypnosis

In a 1960 letter to Dr. Orne, Erickson declared "that complications are essentially nonexistent, because 'the unconscious mind will protect the individual from accepting suggestions detrimental to his adjustment.' " **(Orne, "*Undesirable Effects of Hypnosis,*" p. 233)** (If only that were true.) Dr. Paul Young's list of techniques which would facilitate exploitative hypnosis included several methods reported by Erickson:

- ☐ *...regressing the subject to an age when he was...susceptible to immoral urges...*
- ☐ *...appealing to motives latent in the normal state but easily aroused in hypnosis—motives of love, compliance, and desire for omnipotence.*
- ☐ *...so distorting the subject's perception of external reality, including personal relationships by hallucinations, that acting on such motives is in line with the hypnotist's nefarious purposes.*
- ☐ *...implanting complexes which are in line with personal vanity...lust...or desire for submission.* **(Young, in LeCron, ed., *Experimental Hypnosis*, pp. 392-3)**

Here is my list: four specific technologies that have mind-control applications which M. H. Erickson helped to develop.

1) Ericksonian Disorientation—Erickson first described the disorientation technique when reporting his experiments on hypnotic causation of color blindness and deafness. In "Hypnotic Treatment of a Case of Acute Hysterical Depression," Erickson and Kubie's disguised induction (since known as the "chaperone" method) of an unwilling subject was followed by a disorientation "for time and place..."

2) Sensory Distortion—Erickson did basic research on experimental distortions of seeing and hearing (relevant to any conditioning to hear the hypnotist speaking backwards, or "too softly to understand" and thus incomprehensibly to the subject's conscious mind). He tackled hearing first. He reported his experiments in "A Study of Clinical and Experimental Findings on Hypnotic Deafness: (1) Clinical Experimentation and Findings," and "(2) Experimental Findings with a Conditioned Response Technique."

He started with a hundred trained subjects, then culled them to thirty capable of "the profound somnambulistic state...considered necessary for reliable experimental results." **(p. 127)** He wanted "a deep trance, characterized by catalepsy, automatism, hypersuggestibility and profound amnesia" **(p. 128)** because "the experimental work contemplated necessitated the overthrow and negation of ingrained patterns of normal response and behavior..." **(Ibid.)** He pointed out the necessity of "eliminating sources of error arising from faulty, incomplete or superficial trances." **(Ibid.)** He selected the most susceptible subjects from those thirty.

He gave each of those subjects two hours more of "...systematic suggestion...before he was considered to have reached a sufficiently stuporous state, which resembled closely a profound catatonic stupor." **(Ibid.)** He spent an hour, or more, teaching the subject waking hypnosis—" teaching of the subjects to become somnambulistic without lessening the degree of their hypnosis." **(Ibid.)** Erickson considered the long time he spent on induction and training essential to his success:

> *The prolonged systematic development of the stuporous and somnambulistic trance states as contrasted to the usual rapid, and, in the experimenter's judgment, more superficial induction of such states, probably contributed greatly to the final results. That such a technique served to establish a massive generalized state of 'inhibition,' rendering the subjects incapable of spontaneous responses and restricting them to limited responsive behavior, is possible...* **(p. 146)**

Erickson would not describe his "special technique of suggestion" whose purpose was "a complete inhibition of all spontaneous activity while giving entire freedom for all responsive activity." **(p. 129)** A logical guess would be narcohypnosis. However, he declared that he caused total automatism, no free will. He repeated that process of two hours induction plus one hour of training "over and over again..." The "instructions were given slowly, emphatically and impressively, and were repeated many times to insure full comprehension and acceptance." **(p. 130)** The subjects were being trained to behave with the greatest degree of automaticity possible, to become human robots.

3) Amnesia—The capstone of this unconscious structure Erickson was building in his subjects was "...a state of amnesia for all commands and instructions, the amnesia to be present continuously for all future trance, posthypnotic and waking states." **(p. 129)** Amnesia kept the subject consciously ignorant of all past, present, and future hypnotic events and programming. Using merely verbal (not narcohypnotic) technique and in merely one week (rather than six), Erickson was still able to achieve four cases of suggested partial deafness and six of complete deafness.

The reactions of his subjects to their mysterious (because of the amnesia) deafness varied from curiosity to shock: "...a number of subjects displayed marked panic reactions, showing marked fright..." **(p. 142)**

The second article in his suggested deafness series was about amnesia. Erickson's major point in that article was that extreme sensory distortion (persuading subjects to be stone deaf) can be achieved by hypnotic command in a susceptible subject provided that complete amnesia is induced first. He said that a subject, in whom amnesia is not complete, will resist extreme, long-term sensory distortion. (And for good reason.)

Erickson then shifted from experiments which suggested deafness to a series which suggested colorblindness. (Erickson was born colorblind; he could recognize only the color purple.) He made the hypnotic subjects unable to see certain colors by a four-step process:

1) *"Slow, gradual induction of a profound somnambulistic trance."*

2) *Deepening of trance to absolute greatest possible depth.*

3) *Suggestion of extreme deprivation (complete blindness), followed by conditional restoration of the privilege (colorblindness). Erickson explained that he first suggested total blindness to deliberately cause emotional distress "...to permit the spontaneous development of affective distress and anxiety over the subjective visual loss..." This he followed by "'restoring' vision in part, yet leaving a 'limited' blindness, which would preclude the seeing of a certain color or colors."*

4) *"The induction of a profound amnesia, to ensue at once and to persist indefinitely...there were given vague general instructions serving to effect an inclusion in the amnesia of all connotations and associations..."* **("*The Induction of Color Blindness by a Technique of Hypnotic Suggestion*," pp. 62-63)**

After the experiment, subjects had

> *...muscular stiffness, intense fatigue, and throbbing headaches. These reactions are suggestive of profound neurophysiological responses to the hypnotic suggestions.* **(Ibid., p. 69)**

In "Experimental Demonstrations of the Psychopathology of Everyday Life," Erickson made clear the necessity of 1) hypnotic depth, 2) repetition of the suggestion, and 3) total amnesia to get acceptance of suggestions obviously against the subjects' will and self interest. In "Hypnosis in Medicine" he stated (which modern psychology textbooks heatedly deny) that "usually after a deep trance the subject has a more or less complete amnesia for all trance events" **(p. 644)**. His 1974 article, with Rossi, Erickson described various amnesic phenomena in hypnosis and ways to produce them. In "Deep Hypnosis and Its Induction" Erickson reported unfamiliarly deep stages of somnambulism. He warned that such depths could be dangerous for the subject.

4) Artificial Neurosis—In "Experimental Demonstrations of the Psychopathology of Everyday Life," Erickson described the "implantation of a complex."

> *During hypnosis the subject was instructed to recall...certain* [suggested and imaginary] *things that the subject had done which he regretted intensely and which constituted a source of much shame to him...* **(p. 350)**

Erickson on Regression

The master did provide some good news for future victims of suggested amnesia and abuse under hypnosis:

Traumatic, painful, forgotten experiences and memories that often constitute a point of origin in serious personality disturbances are frequently readily accessible under hypnosis, can be easily recalled by the patient and...hypnosis can enable subjects to recover memories of lost experiences in phenomenal and minute detail ordinarily not possible. **("*Hypnosis in Medicine*," pp. 644-645)**

T. X. BARBER

...it was the non-professional, the occultist, the dabbler in magical and religious ritual, who kept knowledge alive during the hiatuses of professional progress. To the soothsayers of old and the magicians of late, we may owe a greater debt than we realize. In fact, some of the more prominent individuals in hypnosis during the present century learned many of their early techniques from the stage magicians and the self-professed witches of their times. [1]

-William Edmonston, Jr. *The Induction of Hypnosis*

T.X. (Theodore Xenophon) Barber started out as a stage hypnotist, then moved into academics. After receiving his Ph.D., Barber became director of psychological research at Massachusetts' Medfield State Hospital. There, he began a lifelong career in hypnosis disinformation. In his book on hypnosis for lay readers and beginning hypnotists, Barber supplied induction routines:

Keep your eyes on the little light and listen carefully to what I say... ...Your eyes are closing, closing. Close your eyes...You will not wake up until I tell

---

[1] William Edmonston, Jr. was probably offering Barber (and McGill?) a veiled tribute when he wrote those words.

> *you to. Remember that the dangers of hypnosis are a myth.* **(*Hypnosis*, pp. 251-2)**

If a subject accepted Barber's suggestion not to wake up until the hypnotist said, one danger of hypnosis was already operational. A major escape route was closed off.

Medfield Money

Barber's theoretical declarations on hypnosis were the radical position in the spectrum of professional opinions on hypnosis when he first began making them. Barber claimed that hypnosis is entirely self-deception on the part of the subject. He said the subject deceives the hypnotist by acting hypnotized. Barber insisted there was no such thing as hypnosis. He always wrote the word in quotes—"hypnosis"—lest somebody imagine the condition was real. Of the cases of "Z", "Mrs. E", and Palle, Barber smirked:

> *If 'hypnosis' played a role in these cases, this role may have consisted...in providing the subject with a rationale for justifying behavior to himself and to others.* **(Barber, "*Antisocial and Criminal Acts Induced by 'Hypnosis*,' 1961, p. 311.)**

With that specious and hypocritical old dogma of moral integrity, Barber shouted down opposition from honest experimenters by his sheer volume of publications. He (and his staff?) produced more than forty-seven articles, and one book. When I counted entries in a very complete bibliography of articles on hypnosis, Barber had more than any other author. Psychology textbooks now quote him as an "authority on hypnosis" **(Coon, p. 152)**.

In forewords to his early works, Barber thanked CIA and Navy-funded hypnotists for favors given. His later research and publications were for years funded, at least in part, by a "Medfield Foundation." Did whoever funneled all that money into the Medfield Foundation want to displace the old public concept of hypnosis as a powerful tool that carries an element of risk? Did they want to replace that more accurate view with Barber's image of hypnosis as harmless charlatanry and a subject's self deceit? Was the change funded because the creation and management of unknowing hypnotic subjects had become an important part of military and intelligence agency operations?

Whatever the funders' intentions were, their money did accomplish those ends. The Barber propaganda maximized public trust (and thus hypnotic susceptibility). It undermined the credibility of anybody who might, in the future, attempt to report, resist, or merely discuss the possibility of hypnotic exploitation.

Barber was a brilliant man who did some interesting experiments. If one bothers to pick the grain from the chaff, some of his points are worth keeping in mind: how faint is the line between "hypnotic" and regular behavior; how very much the laws of suggestibility operate in nonhypnotic situations; and the **placebo** principle that if you believe something will help you, it probably will. Barber demonstrated that people are, naturally, in and out of various states of consciousness, and naturally operate with varying degrees of suggestibility in their daily lives. He showed that they do not need a formal "hypnotic" induction to accomplish what comes naturally. It is true that a trained hypnotic subject can mimic a waking state, even for the EEG. It is also accurate that hypnosis can conveniently be summarized as a condition of heightened suggestibility. The mental state of hypnosis does involve an unconscious cooperation with the hypnotist. Barber's statement that it is hard to know the state of consciousness a person is in just by looking at them is correct. (But trained and experienced persons are much better at it than untrained ones, and another hypnotized person is the best of all.) It is right that a hypnotized person tends to act the way he expects a hypnotized person to act. It is a fact that the **expectations** of the subject tend to shape the way both the subject and the hypnotist behave. And vice versa.

Barberisms

Barber's main weapons, in the disinformation area, were endless verbiage and confusing nitpicking of statements by persons who disagreed with him. The writing itself is inductive. Soon you are so confused and/or bored, that you either suspend analysis and completely buy into the weird stuff, or you throw the book away (the wiser choice).

For example, Barber claimed to have proved that there is no difference between being hypnotized and not being hypnotized; that a person in a regular state of consciousness will hallucinate as readily as a hypnotized person; that hallucinating subjects are only pretending; that hypnotic regression is not real; that a hypnotized person is only role playing, only pretending to be what he thinks a hypnotized person is supposed to be; that words like "trance" or "somnambulism" should not be used (even as concepts) because they make people believe in the existence of something which is different from normal consciousness, that Rowland and Young's snake experiments only proved that the subjects obeyed in the same way as Milgram's subjects (who were not hypnotized).

If you believe all the above, you are suggestible and confused already!

What were Barber's most deceptive misinterpretations, misstatements, and myths?

- *He made a big deal of the fact that control* *subjects in an experiment, if asked to pretend to be hypnotized, may also become hypnotized. (But one of the standard induction methods is some variation on the theme of "pretend you're hypnotized." If you pretend to be hypnotized, and are naturally susceptible, you soon will be.)*

- *He demonstrated, over and over, that hypnotic induction can be caused by suggestions and influenced by suggestions. He said that proved hypnosis was merely a matter of thought, and therefore it did not really exist. (But every thought is a physiological event in the brain. Certain thoughts, and patterns of thoughts, can impact brain physiology in ways that affect its level of consciousness, which is also a physiological event.)*

- *He made much of the fact that induction suggestions do not have to have the word "sleep" in them. He took that fact as evidence that the hypnotic subjects were not really "hypnotized" but only pretending to be hypnotized. (Actually, the experiments had proved that trance/hypnosis induction can go by any name, and can happen in any setting—with or without the word "sleep.")*

- *He claimed that there is no physiological evidence that hypnosis exists, and, therefore, it does not exist. That is flagrantly untrue. (See Parts II and IV.)*

- *He claimed that hypnotic susceptibility was only an appearance caused by a hypnotist's skill, or by the hypnotic suggestions, rather than anything innate in the subject. (Also false. Susceptibility is a characteristic affected both by genetic happenstance and by training.)*

- *He said that stage hypnosis is only pretending. It sometimes is, but usually it is real. Dr. Van Pelt, an Englishman, included a chapter on "Some Dangers of Stage or Amateur Hypnotism" in his 1948 book:*

  > *Unfortunately, it is not only those who volunteer to go on the stage who can be affected. Even members of the audience watching exhibitions of stage or amateur hypnotism can be influenced, for it should be remembered that approximately 25 per cent of people are highly suggestible and are capable of going into a deep trance.* **(Van Pelt, *Secrets of Hypnotism,* p. 63)**

- *Barber claimed that trance is not real. To explain trance phenomena, he claimed that all hypnotic subjects are just pretending to be hypnotized. (The phenomena of hypnosis cannot be entirely explained, however, by* ***demand characteristics:*** *operator instructions, subject expectations, wishing to please the hypnotist, and role playing.)*

THE SKEPTICS: SARBIN AND SPANOS

In most instances the subject appears to act like an automaton. There is an apparent absence of volitional activity. The experimenter throws out commands which seem to be accepted by the subject without critical consideration. He is often slow, stuporous, and seems to be exerting a great deal of effort to perform simple acts. Retrospective accounts reveal a distinction between obedience as found in everyday behavior and the automatic acceptance of commands without the subjective experience of intent.

Sarbin quoted in C. Scott Moss, *Hypnosis in Perspective*, p. 149

“The Skeptics”

Barber developed a following of other academics, sometimes coauthors of his copious output, sometimes disciples—a cheering section of imitators who called themselves “the skeptics.” The skeptics induced the same hypnotic phenomena that other hypnotists did. They rejected any physiological basis for those phenomena.

Like the Salpetriere group of the 1880s, the skeptics believed that anything immoral which happened as a result of trance took place because the hypnotic subject secretly wanted it to. Nothing could be the hypnotist’s fault. Barber and the skeptics took this even beyond Charcot and his associates. This Medfield group denied that the hypnotist was responsible even for the hypnotic phenomena, subtly viewing the hypnotist as the dupe of the subject, rather than vice versa.

Sarbin

Theodore Sarbin started out a behaviorist: words create images that push buttons in people’s brains and get results. That is the career stage at which he wrote the above, forgotten, quote. Sarbin later competed with T.X. Barber to redefine hypnosis into its current innocuous public image. Barber won, but Sarbin was a close second with his **role-playing** entry. Sarbin’s “theory” that hypnosis is only the subject pretending, role-playing, is now mentioned in most psychology texts.

There is, in fact, some truth to his view. People are so suggestible, and they do tend to behave in trance as they see other people behaving, and also according to their prior expectations and presuggestions. Like Barber, Sarbin rejected brain physiology as a factor in hypnosis. As with Barber, that flawed premise makes his final assumptions unsound. For example, Sarbin did not integrate EEG data relating to levels of consciousness with his role-playing observations. Therefore, he claimed that trance depth is simply the degree of “submergence of the self in the role.”

Spanos

N. P. Spanos also continued the Barber myth that hypnosis has no physiology and no unique state of consciousness. Like Barber and Sarbin, Spanos contributed to the understanding of the normal power of expectation in human life.

The
Not-So-Skeptical Inquirer

I was astonished to discover that *The Skeptical Inquirer*, published by the “Committee for the Scientific Investigation of Claims of the Paranormal,” also pushes the idea that hypnotism does not exist. Despite all the high IQ names in their directorate, including that giant intellect, Isaac Asimov, they, like the Psych 101 textbooks, regard hypnotism as a harmless intellectual toy, if not outright charlatanry. In their review of a 1989 collection of hypnosis articles, edited by Spanos and Chaves, T. X. Barber was cited as the final authority. Enough said.

Martin T. Orne

[For interrogation purposes] *hypnosis must either be induced against the subject's will or without his awareness.*

- Orne, "*Potential Uses of Hypnosis in Interrogation*," p. 173

After receiving his M.D. and Ph.D. from Harvard, Martin Orne became an Associate in Psychiatry at Harvard Medical School. He directed the Studies in Hypnosis project from 1958 to 1964. Among his many research projects was one on how soldiers could be taught to do self-hypnosis "in order to do certain military tasks" and how they could pretend to be hypnotized well enough to fool an enemy interrogator.

He provided an article on "The Potential Uses of Hypnosis in Interrogation" for Biderman and Zimmer's 1961 book, *The Manipulation of Human Behavior*. (On p. ix, Biderman and Zimmer said Orne had been doing work "supported by the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology, Inc," a CIA funds conduit.) In that article, Orne noted the possibilities "for the subject's perception of reality to be distorted in accordance with the hypnotist's cues" **(p. 170)**, for spontaneous amnesia, and for "some compulsion to comply with the hypnotist's requests, along with a striking disinclination even to wish resisting them" **(p. 171)**. On the subject of disguised induction, he said

> *There are three situations in which hypnosis has been reported to have been induced without the subject's awareness...while the subject is asleep...when the subject is seeking psychiatric help and hypnosis is induced in the course of a clinical interview with no explicit mention of the process...*[and] *a trance spontaneously entered by individuals who are observing trance induction in another subject.* **(p. 174)**

He mentioned induction by means of repetition, hardware, and so on:

> *...rotating spirals, mirrors, and swinging pendulums...the subject's own breathing... prolonged stimulation by rhythmic drums... monotonous rhythmic verbal suggestions...* **(p. 175)**

He also mentioned a more sophisticated induction machine, and the neurophysiological basis of trance.

Orne on "Antisocial" Hypnosis

Orne's 1962 article, "Antisocial Behavior and Hypnosis," was supported by the Air Force Office of Scientific Research. In it, he surveyed the history of arguments over unethical hypnosis. He summed up the most extreme pro-hypnotist position (the "dogma of moral integrity"):

> *Gilles de la Tourette (1887) made the well-known statement that a subject in deep hypnosis will not perform any action which goes against his basic moral sentiments. Dynamic psychology changed the phraseology to read that a hypnotized individual will do nothing counter to his unconscious wishes. However, neither phrasing of the position is testable because the subject's so-called "criminal tendencies" or "unconscious wishes" are specified after the fact. That is, if a subject does not perform the suggested antisocial act, his refusal is taken as evidence for the generic view, whereas if the subject complies, his acceptance of the suggestion is seen as evidence for his criminal tendencies or his basic desires.* **(pp. 139-140)**

He also summarized the view at the other extreme:

> *...a subject must carry out whatever suggestion is given to him by the hypnotist, and a subject's refusal merely proves that he was not hypnotized deeply enough. Phrased in this manner, this position is equally untestable. Any empirical data which indicate that the subject will carry out antisocial or self-destructive behavior are accepted as proof, while any data to the contrary are by definition dismissed.* **(p. 140)**

Without considering whether truth might lie in the middle, between those two extremes, Orne concluded that reviewing the existing literature did not solve the question.

Guidelines for Investigative Hypnosis

In the years after he published his own "Antisocial..." article, Orne became a dominant influence on U.S. forensic hypnosis. His public statements, in general, act to undermine the claim of any person reporting unethical hypnosis, and strengthen the legal untouchability of hypnotizers.

> *...the antisocial aspect of this question cannot be addressed experimentally...no evidence is available to indicate that hypnosis increases the behavioral control of the hypnotist over that already present prior to its induction. Certainly, the popular view which holds that hypnosis is able to exert a unique form of control over the hypnotized individual, which can compel him to carry out otherwise repugnant actions, must be rejected.* **(Orne, 1972, p. 101)**

Orne's myths concerning the inability of hypnosis to cause anything unpleasant or undesirable are now quoted in psychology texts and by other "experts." In 1978, he wrote a brief for the U.S. Supreme Court in which he stated that any hypnosis of a witness before a trial should follow set guidelines. **(Orne, 1979)** He argued that it is inadvisable to hypnotize defendants who have a great deal at stake. (He would, I suppose, have advised Dr. Reiter not to hypnotize Palle Hardwick.)

Orne's guidelines for investigative hypnosis are quoted both in Udolf and in Lawrence and Perry **(pp. 279-385)**. The latter laud Orne's guidelines as

> *...the most comprehensive attempt to balance the needs of an investigative agency, the rights of a potential defendant, and the psychological welfare of a victim of crime who has become a candidate for pretrial hypnosis.* **(Ibid., p. 357)**

Orne's guidelines, however, are for the hypnotizing of a witness to a crime. The existence of a victim of hypnosis itself is not included in the guidelines, because it supposedly is not possible. Orne's guidelines are said to guard particularly against the possibility of witness confabulation. The method of preventing confabulation is not Reiter's system of "you'll choke on it if you tell a lie." Instead, filming every moment of interaction between a hypnotist and subject is considered a good safeguard. Then people later can argue over "the degree to which inadvertent cueing [leading questions]...may have occurred" **(Ibid., p. 357)** rather than preventing confabulation.

The guidelines cover qualifications of the hypnotist ("qualified mental health professional" with training both in hypnosis and forensics), insistence on complete videotape recordings of all contact between hypnotist and subject (both persons in the picture), limitations on those present (only hypnotist and subject allowed!), and prehypnosis evaluation (a "detailed narrative description of the facts as the subject remembers them").

Orne also specified "appropriate hypnotic induction and memory retrieval techniques": induction by "one of the standard methods" (this rule makes it harder for a survivor of unethical hypnosis who is sealed against any "standard" induction); no direct questioning (direct questioning may help drag out facts over hypnotic inhibitions and could also reveal significant blocking pauses and agitation caused by approaching forbidden data); constant filming (technically difficult when only two people are present); and a prior mental examination of the subject (symptoms of mental illness can be suggested under hypnosis).

Orne, along with Loftus and Laurence, has contributed mightily to modern legal prejudices against, what Lawrence disparagingly terms as, "common sense knowledge" about the possibility of criminal hypnosis. Orne and others (1984) reported that hypnotization of witnesses either did not improve their recall, or actually contaminated their memories with unconsciously adopted hints from the investigator/hypnotist.

Orne also stresses that hypnosis should only be used to generate leads which can then be pursued to see if they can be fully and independently verified **(Orne, 1979)**. That is good advice in a case where confabulation is a possibility—and confabulation is always a possibility. But the "only" is a problem. In a case of criminal hypnosis, which is also a possibility, independent verification of leads can support the general picture which emerges under rehypnotization.

As a final evaluation of Orne, compare the facts of the cases of Z, Mrs. E., and Palle with his pronouncements on them. He called Dr. Kroener's report of Z's case "the most convincing of the three reported in the criminal literature" **(1962, p. 175)**. He was particularly impressed by the arm-shooting:

> *This single incident is far more impressive than the fact that he was willing to perform acts which are legally antisocial but which are frequently considered to be relatively innocuous...The Kroener case...seems to provide strong supportive evidence that, in some instances at least, social control can be sufficiently increased in hyp-*

> *nosis to cause the subject to commit self-destructive behavior which he could not have been persuaded to undertake without the use of hypnosis."* **(Ibid.)**

After admitting that much, however, Orne evaded the logical conclusion that criminal hypnosis can exist: "Unfortunately, because of the problems in establishing the true nature of the events, no definitive position can be taken." **(Ibid., p. 176)**

Of Mrs. E.'s case, he said:

> *...a quasi-therapeutic relationship existed between the subject and the hypnotist, and thus it is not too surprising that the subject was willing to pay the hypnotist...it certainly is not too unusual a crime for a woman and her lover to plot the demise of the husband. There are only the woman's statements that attempts on her husband's life resulted from posthypnotic suggestions. No proof exists that such suggestions were ever made.* **(p. 172)**

He granted that Palle's case was

> *...thoroughly studied by Reiter...This case satisfies the criterion of serious antisocial behavior to the benefit of the hypnotist; however, a long history of extremely close personal association preceded this occurrence.* **(Ibid.)**

Orne stated that the real reason Palle Hardwick robbed and murdered was a "mutual psychosis" between Palle and Nielsen with

> *...strong homosexual overtones...While hypnosis played some role in this case, it is by no means clear whether it accounted for the behavior of the subject or was, in fact, quite incidental to it.* **(Ibid.)**

No proof would be good enough for Dr. Orne. He would always try to deny its validity. The bottom line is: he does not accept that a hypnotist can be culpable. And he does not promote any procedure which might support the effort of a victim of criminal hypnosis to get free and to obtain justice.

Musings

Behaviorist philosopher, Perry London, said that information control is the basis of mind control, individual or group. When the phony research of Erickson, the false conclusions of Barber and the "skeptics," and the skewed judicial concepts of Orne are taught and cited, public information, and therefore public opinion, has been controlled.

They say, "Hypnosis does not exist." Or they say, "We're not doing hypnosis. This is something else, and it's wonderful, and ineffable, and totally harmless, and mysteriously helpful." Saying that calms the public's fear, increases volunteering, increases subjects' susceptibility. This is the first stage of induction.

Criminal Hypnosis Is Possible: Wells and Brenman, Salter and Bowers, and Young

☑ Wells and Brenman

☑ Salter and Bowers

☑ Young

> ***...the whole point as to the essential nature of hypnosis is missed unless the fact is recognized that even so extreme a phenomenon as real crime against the will of the fully forewarned subject can be produced by means of it.***
>
> **Wells, "*Experiments in the Hypnotic Production of Crime*," pp. 100-101**

Wells and Brenman

R. W. Wells

During and after World War II, Dr. Raymond Wesley Wells researched hypnotic automatism at Syracuse University. He established that the posthypnotic induction cue was a critical element in exploitation. He pioneered the technique of waking hypnosis. One of his hypnotic subjects was "a young man of strong convictions, not suggestible in everyday life, not credulous or gullible." By hypnotic suggestions, Wells made that young man believe himself to be a poor hypnotic subject, although Wells had actually developed him into a very susceptible one. The subject, being amnesic for his training sessions, also believed that he had not been worked on individually by Wells. **(Ibid., p. 83)**

Wells was a specialist on criminal hypnosis. He provided a list of safety measures for persons planning to be hypnotized:

Ö Do not submit except for a serious purpose.

Ö Choose a “competent and honorable” hypnotist.

Ö Have a “reliable [and non-hypnotizable!] third person...present as a witness at every occasion of hypnotizing.

Wells gave all his subjects a suggestion that nobody could hypnotize them without their prior written permission given in a fully conscious and responsible state.[1]

Margaret Brenman

Brenman began researching “antisocial” hypnosis as a student assistant to Wells during World War II. Her first article described experiments on six female hypnotic subjects:

> *When brought out of the trance state, you will have complete amnesia not only for today’s hypnotic work but for ever having been an individual* [hypnotic] *subject; although you will remember having taken part in the group-experiment in class, you will recall falsely having been in the poorest quartile...and will good-naturedly accept as banter any suggestion on the part of your classmates that you are a good hypnotic subject.* **(Brenman, 1942, pp. 50-51)**

The subjects carried out all Brenman’s hypnotic instructions, exactly as given.

Brenman agreed with Erickson that complete amnesia was a key to obtaining results that would not normally be possible. In one experiment, she suggested to a hypnotized girl the hallucination of being home alone in bed. She suggested that the subject was “alone in bed” and having the fantasy which she normally had at bedtime.

The subject then described to Brenman a fantasy that focused on a certain young man and involved both desire and guilt feelings. Brenman suggested posthypnotic amnesia to the subject, woke the girl from her hypnotic trance, and asked about her sex life. The girl refused to give any information of the type she had just revealed under hypnosis. (Brenman said this experiment had proved the value of hypnosis in interrogation.)

In another experiment, Brenman induced a series of girls, by hypnotic suggestion, to take a dollar bill imagining it was their own, thus “stealing” it. Three days after the first part of the experiment in which the girls were caused to “steal,” Brenman proceeded with the second half of the experiment. She expected each subject, after learning the truth, to feel guilt and repay her the dollar. The first two, Misses A and B, when told they had been caused to steal a dollar by means of hypnosis, behaved as Brenman had expected. Each acted guilty and gave the experimenter a dollar in repayment, although they had already spent the dollar which they had been hypnotically induced to think was their own. But Miss C, my favorite, reacted differently.

> *BRENMAN: Were you ever worked on individually in hypnosis?*
>
> *MISS C: No, it didn’t work at all well...I was in the lowest quartile.*
>
> *BRENMAN: Do you know whether it’s possible to get people to perform criminal acts in hypnosis?*
>
> *MISS C: It might work with some but not with me.*
>
> *BRENMAN: Even a minor crime?*
>
> *MISS C: I hardly think so.*
>
> *BRENMAN: Have you ever known me to lie to you?*
>
> *MISS C: Never.* [Her unconscious could have supplemented, “except when I was hypnotized.”]
>
> *BRENMAN: Well, I’m telling you that you did steal a dollar while in a hypnotic state several days ago.*
>
> *MISS C (laughing spontaneously): But how absurd; I’m not even hypnotizable.*
>
> *BRENMAN: Would you think it possible to produce an amnesia for a crime committed in a hypnotic state?*
>
> *MISS C: Theoretically, yes.*
>
> *BRENMAN: Then perhaps you can believe me.*
>
> *MISS C: If this is true, I will not accept any responsibility for it.* **(Ibid.)**

---

1. Then he broke his own rule for the purpose of experimentation, attempting to induct persons who were resisting. He overcame the resistance of all except a Methodist minister.

Brenman then told Miss C to try as hard as she could not to be hypnotized. C made clear that she certainly would do that. Brenman gave C the induction cue, and "...despite this exercise of 'will power' she went into a good trance immediately." **(Ibid., p. 53)** Brenman gave, the now hypnotized, Miss C suggestions that removed her amnesia. Then she knew the truth of all that had happened. However, Miss C still refused moral responsibility for what had happened. She would not give Brenman and Wells back the dollar. Instead, C went off gaily on her school holiday.

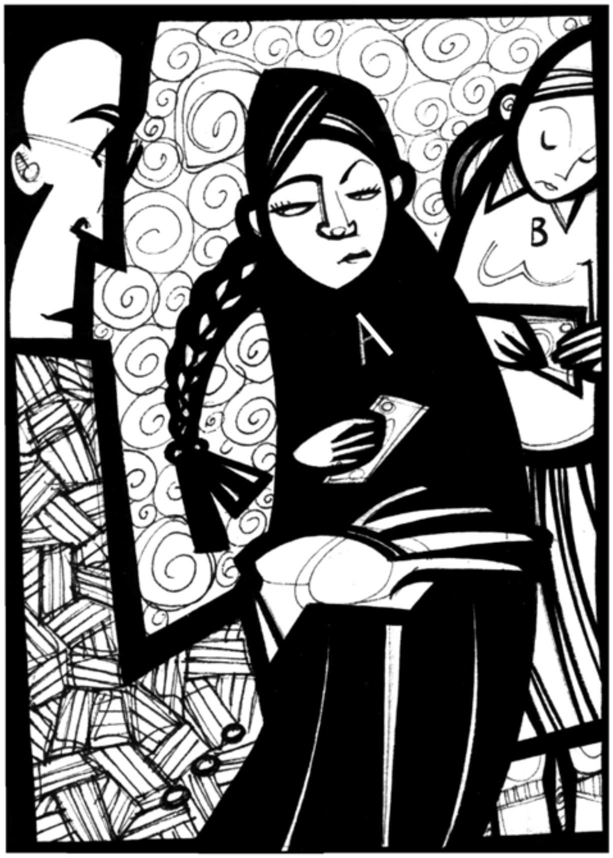

That really upset Wells. He and Brenman had defined the experiment that, if the subject felt guilty and repaid afterwards, it proved the subject really was a moral person. Wells and Brenman, therefore, were of the opinion that Misses A and B had proved false the old dogma that a moral person cannot be made to do an immoral thing by means of hypnosis. But Miss C had refused to feel guilt and had not repaid the dollar. Wells later solved the dilemma by writing that he had discovered that C actually was a person of low character and immoral attitudes, with no conscience in financial matters—unsuitable for the experiment.

God forbid you should either cost the hypnotist a buck or skew the anticipated experimental results. I am on Miss C's side. Brenman succeeded in making her think she was not hypnotizable when she was, gave her amnesia for a segment of her life, and manipulated her like a human puppet. Miss C was set up, lied to under hypnosis, conditioned for future involuntary induction, deceived into taking the dollar, and allowed to keep it long enough to spend it. Then, they wanted her to behave ethically? She was ethical. Her sense of justice came into action. Subjects A and B were utterly duped. They not only accepted all the hypnotic suggestions, they also accepted an additional implied suggestion, in waking state, that they should feel guilty and repay. Miss C was made of tougher stuff.

After Margaret Brenman earned her Ph.D. at Syracuse, she did similar research at the Menninger Clinic. She married another experimental hypnotist, named Merton M. Gill. Brenman and Gill made a career of joint research in experimental hypnotism, with an emphasis in psychoanalytic hypnosis. Their most interesting publication was one of the very few surveys that have ever studied the psychology of the hypnotist rather than that of the subject!

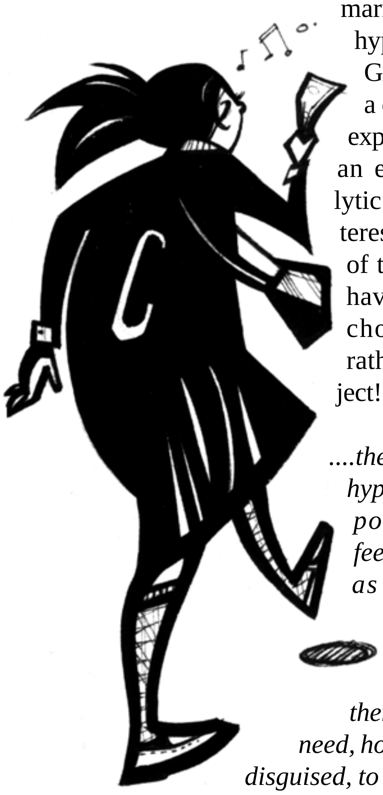

....the process of inducing hypnosis touches off important and intense feeling in the hypnotist as well as in the subject...most of our responding hypnotists recognize in themselves an important need, however well or poorly disguised, to control other human beings....One of our respondents, a particularly honest and self-searching psychoanalyst, says: "I gave up hypnosis as a regular procedure...because I am aware of the fact that...my decision to hypnotize a man was motivated ultimately...by some almost sadistic impulse to dominate him and with the female, the comparable situation manifested itself in the form of an erotic impulse."

Another...who stresses as one of the infantile components of the wish to hypnotize the need for a magical omnipotence, adds rather wryly: "...such motives undoubtedly play an important role in the initial decision to become a physician at all, and certainly in the specialty choice of psychiatry. The only trouble is that with the use of hypnosis this all becomes so naked." **(Brenman and Gill, *Hypnosis and Related States*, pp. 91-98)**

Salter and Bowers

When the bell rings the appropriately trained dog salivates. He cannot help it.
Salter, *What Is Hypnosis?*, pp. 24-25

Salter

Andrew Salter was a prominent researcher who applied the **theory of conditioned reflexes** to hypnosis, developed the desensitization technique, and fought T.X. Barber's nonsense theories. Salter, the father of hypnotic conditioning theory, argued against Barber's theory of cognitive expectancy for years. Salter said that cognitive expectancy could not explain why posthypnotic suggestions for the distant future worked. Salter said, "We can do in the waking state almost anything that can be done in the hypnotic state—almost everything, but not quite. And that is all the difference."

Salter summed up his concept of hypnosis as a conditioned reflex phenomenon as follows:

> *Words, spoken by the therapist, travel along appropriate nerve tracts in the person under treatment, and produce chemical modifications in his nervous system. These changes are associated with behavior changes...We are not especially concerned with giving the individual stratified knowledge of his past—called "probing." What concerns us is giving him reflex knowledge of his future—called "habits."* **(Salter, 1949, p. 316)**

He compared a hypnotic subject to Pavlov's dog. The more effectively conditioned a person is, Salter declared, the less effective control he has over his own behavior. Human beings, however, can be far more complexly programmed than dogs, because humans respond with incredible specificity and sensitivity to words. Words stimulate conditioned responses in humans.

Salter once challenged Barber to select a random group of one-hundred males, 21 to 25 years old.

> *I would pick three subjects from this group and subject them to a week's worth of hypnotic training in which they would be instructed to shoot Barber (much as in* **The Manchurian Candidate**, *a book Condon has credited me with inspiring). I would then give Barber one week during which he could exhort these subjects as much as he wanted in a waking state. If, in thirty days thereafter, one of my subjects did not try to kill Barber, he could consider his theories of hypnosis verified. I would not be interested in doing this experiment without a waiver from Barber and from all of the appropriate legal jurisdictions.* **(Salter, *What Is Hypnosis*, pp. 94-5)**

Barber did not accept Salter's challenge.

Years later, I see that Salter is not cited in the textbooks. Barber is. Barber is preached, but Salter is practiced. Student therapists are now taught, "We don't know what it is, but it helps." They are taught just enough about hypnosis to do their job: narrow clinical applications involved in medicine or dentistry, psychiatry or hypnotherapy—or sales, stress management, pain management, advertising, etc. They learn what they have to know about hypnosis (or whatever else it is being called). Not a bit more. The people who know more have classified that information: SECRET, DON'T TELL.

Bowers

Kenneth S. Bowers, like Salter, specifically took on T. X. Barber. In *Hypnosis for the Seriously Curious* (1976), Bowers debunked Barber's oft cited "White Christmas" and "lap cat" experiment. Barber had got nonhypnotized people to claim they were hallucinating the hearing of "White Christmas" or hallucinating the sight of a cat in their lap. They did that because Barber's words ("This time I want you to really try") created a strong pressure to claim they did, even if they did not—or to drop into trance and really hallucinate the sound or sight.

Bowers repeated Barber's experiment exactly, except he added one line to the script. Bowers told each subject that she must tell the truth to prevent the entire experiment from being worthless. After hearing that, even though the women were told to "really try" this time, far fewer claimed that they heard the music or saw the cat in their lap. **(Bowers, "*The Effect of Demands for Honesty on Reports of Visual and Auditory Hallucinations*," 1967)**

Bowers took on another of Barber's deceptive oversimplifications. A hypnotized person can be given suggestions to make him or her deaf. If then asked, "Can you hear me?" some subjects reply, "No, I can't." Barber said that proves they are faking it. Bowers said: No, that behavior is like that of the person given a **negative hallucination** that the chair is "gone." If told to walk around the room, the hypnotized person will avoid bumping into the chair. One part of the subject's mind knows the chair is really there and avoids bumping into it. But the subject is not consciously aware of the existence and placement of the chair.

In 1989, Bowers argued that certain phenomena are unique to hypnosis, that hypnosis is a special state of consciousness, and that surgery under hypnotic anesthesia, strong hallucinations, and suggested cures of physical problems are strong evidence of its uniqueness.

Young

From a hurried review of the literature it appears that there are no theoretical obstacles to the possibility of antisocial uses of hypnosis. On the contrary, the cumulative effect of the reported results is so great as to convince one that antisocial actions are not more...difficult to induce—than are many of the actions which have been carried out by subjects...In fact, if a skillful hypnotist should use such techniques as those just mentioned and should go all out to induce antisocial results, theoretically it is very likely he would succeed. Additional strong presumptive proof lies in the subject-hypnotist relationship of dominance submission which makes possible...the falsification of the subject's internal and external world...

- Young, 1952, p. 398

Dr. Paul Campbell Young worked for the Veterans Administration during World War II, then was on the faculty of Louisiana State University's Psychology Department. He was a pioneer researcher in experimental hypnosis. LeCron credits him with being first to use the **controlled experiment**.

In 1940, Young published a study on capacity regression. He gave IQ tests to hypnotized adults who had been regressed, by suggestion, to the age of three. His subjects' test score averages came out closer to age six than to age three. Those results caused him to doubt the validity of regression. Like Doctors Mayer and Reiter, Young also started out convinced that a hypnotic subject cannot be made to do anything against his conscious will.

Antisocial Uses of Hypnosis

Like Mayer and Reiter, Young later did an about-face on the issue. By 1952, Young listed capacity regression as real, and also as a potential element in a **conditioning** process leading to exploitative hypnosis.

I know what changed the minds of Mayer and Reiter on this issue: the cases of Mrs. E. and Palle. I do not know what caused Young's dramatic reversal between 1941 and 1948. His 1952 article, "Antisocial Uses of Hypnosis," is one of the most eloquent, detailed, forceful, and confident statements in print about the potential for misuse of hypnotism. Young bluntly insisted that hypnotism can be used unethically and abusively, and that a subject can be made to act against his conscious will. "The harm may be done to oneself or to others...An act is harmful or antisocial or dangerous if damage is done or danger is run." **("*Antisocial Uses of Hypnosis*, p. 376)**

Young's article was published in *Experimental Hypnosis*, an anthology edited by LeCron and sponsored by the military. He reviewed and critiqued previous relevant experiments and writings by other experimental hypnotists. He listed all the most important articles and books on the subject, up to 1948, in his bibliography. He wrote pages refuting M.H. Erickson's "antisocial" experiment. He disposed of Orne's argument, that a long-term relationship disproves unethical hypnosis. He crushed Barber and Sarbin's argument, that unethical hypnosis only exists because of the subject's supposed uncanny ability to perceive what the hypnotist wants, and the subject's eagerness to play that role.

Techniques of Criminal Hypnosis

Young listed eighteen hypnotic techniques that would facilitate "divergent applications" of hypnosis. He quoted published work of one, or more, prominent research hypnotists as his source for each method. He declared that he had listed "only a tithe of what could have been brought forward." Here follow the essentials of that list:

1) **Powerful and Primitive Unconscious—**Young quoted Fisher: "*Powerful and primitive unconscious forces...come to light in the hypnotic trance*." The operator-controlled trance gives the hypnotist direct access to that potential of primitive, powerful primary process, **drive-related** potential in the unconscious.

2) **Omnipotence by Identification—**He quoted Schilder and Kauders: "*For the hypnotized...he* [the hypnotist] *is the great magician, who alone is capable, by his wish and will, to produce creative changes in the universe...*" (***Hypnosis***) The subject's unconscious is in awe of the operator's potential power over it. The "magic" is real (and potentially very evil) to the personal, interior mental universe of the conditioned hypnotic subject.

3) **Narcohypnotic Induction**—Young quoted Lindner, a psychiatrist who did narcohypnotic inductions, and conducted intensive conditioning under the drug-induced trance. Lindner called his process **hypnoanalysis**: "*Hypnoanalysis is equivalent to a surgical removal of barriers and hazards; it pierces the psychic substrate and raises the repressed to the level of awareness.*" (***Rebel Without a Cause***) That "surgical removal of barriers" can be used in hypnotherapy to cure people, or in rehypnosis to uncover criminal hypnosis. It can also be used to overcome resistance barriers in the process of implanting exploitative conditioning.

4) **Minimizing Outside Reality, Changes in Thought Mode—**For this factor, Young quoted from a 1947 article by Brenman, Gill, and Hacker: "*A minimization of outside reality and...changes...in modes of thought...*" Hypnotic trance does minimize outside reality. It changes "modes of thought" in part by derailing the conscious (critical, evaluating) mind and displacing it with the hypnotist's will.

5) **Limiting of Subject's Internal Input—**Young quoted Leuba (1946) on the power of hypnosis to [illegible] *limitation of the spontaneous mental life of* [illegible]*ject and the consequent limitation of attention to the stimuli provided by the experimenter.*"

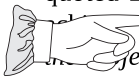

Young's point 4) was that hypnosis can eclipse the subject's outside reality. Point 5 was that hypnosis can be used to "limit" the subject's spontaneous mental world. It limits the mind to thinking what it is permitted to think. (In some cases, however, the subject's unconscious has rebelled and prevailed.)

In trance, the thinking is being done by a subsystem without input from the executive monitor (conscious mind). The subsystem can confuse imagination with reality, and the error will not be corrected because only the conscious mind can tell the difference.

6) **Suggested Hallucination—**Young cites M. H. Erickson's 1939 success in causing hypnotic subjects to hallucinate colorblindness—so real that subjects "*had the correct (hallucinated) afterimages*."

7) **Suggested Unbearable Pain—**Young cited the research of Wells on the operator's ability to cause "*hallucinations of unbearable pain.*" Mrs. E. was, in part, manipulated by this technique.

8) **Identification of Hypnotist with Parent—**Young cited R. W. White's 1941 article, "An Analysis of Motivation in Hypnosis," on infantile motivations and unsatisfied needs as causes of hypnotic obedience: "*Love, passive compliance, and the wish to participate in omnipotence.*"

9) **Selective Amnesias—**Young cited M. H. Erickson research again **(“*Hypnotic Techniques...*, 1945)**: “*Hypnosis offers an opportunity to control and direct thinking, to select or exclude memories and ideas...*”

10) **Focus and Dissociation—**Young cited M. H. Erickson, this time on the trance phenomenon of dissociation and focus on the operator: rapport:

> *...a condition in which the subject responds to the hypnotist and is...instructed by the hypnotist...a concentration of the subject’s attention upon...the hypnotist and those things which the hypnotist wishes included in the situation, and it has the effect of dissociating the subject from other things.* **(“*Hypnosis in Medicine*”)**

11) **Artificially-Induced Complex—**Young cited Wolberg’s description of a patient in whom an artificial complex had been implanted:

> *He complained of...dizziness, ...took two or three steps then fell backward remarking that he felt so faint that he could hardly walk. His face was blanched and when his pulse was taken it was found to be rapid and thready...cold perspiration...began to shiver...generalized muscular tremors...agitated, and complained of such great physical distress that I found it necessary to rehypnotize him and remove the conflict.*

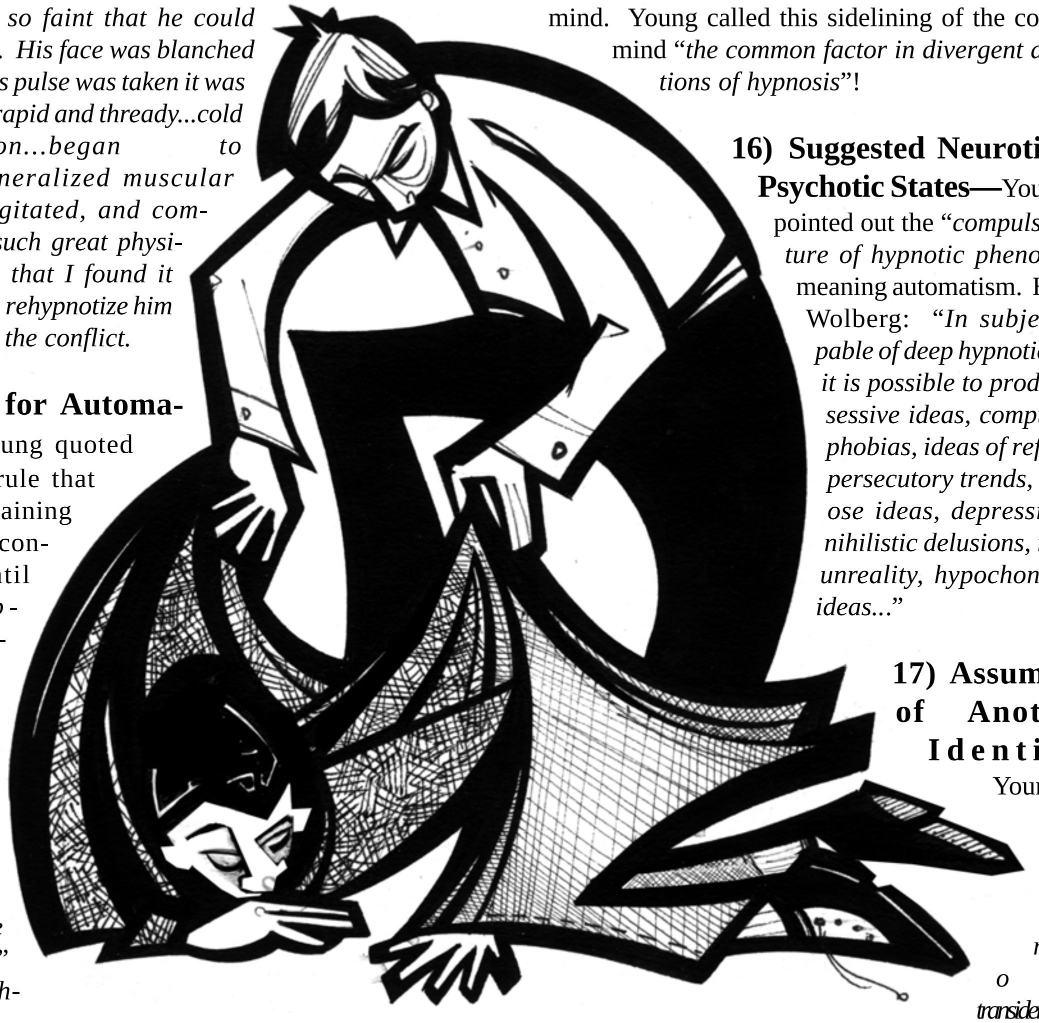

12) **Training for Automatism—**Young quoted Lindner’s rule that hypnotic training should be continued until “*posthypnotic suggestions are carried through in a fashion that leaves no doubt of the mastery of the situation by the hypnotist.*” (*Rebel Without a Cause*)

13) **Reorganization of Psychic Life—**Young also cited M.H. Erickson on the array of devices a hypnotist can use to influence a subject, “*reorganizing his psychic life.*” Erickson had listed “*recovery of memories, development of amnesias, identifications and anesthesias, the causing of dreams, emotional conflicts, hallucinations, disorientations...*” Young also cited R. W. White **(“Preface...”)** on the profound changes possible in a person’s personality (and therefore behavior) by means of hypnosis.

14) **Capacity Regression—**In a remarkable turnaround from his original research conclusion on capacity regressions, Young cited the research of M. H. Erickson, Lindner, Watkins, Wolberg, etc., on capacity regression. He concluded it can be real, and can be a significant potential factor in exploitative hypnosis.

15) **Sidelining the Conscious Mind—**Young cited Brenman and Knight on “*circumvention of the ego resistances,*” the inhibition of the subject’s conscious mind. Young called this sidelining of the conscious mind “*the common factor in divergent applications of hypnosis*”!

16) **Suggested Neurotic and Psychotic States—**Young here pointed out the “*compulsory nature of hypnotic phenomena,*” meaning automatism. He cited Wolberg: “*In subjects capable of deep hypnotic states, it is possible to produce obsessive ideas, compulsions, phobias, ideas of reference, persecutory trends, grandiose ideas, depressive and nihilistic delusions, ideas of unreality, hypochondriacal ideas...*”

17) **Assumption of Another’s Identity—**Young cited M.H. Erickson’s “*experiments on transidentification*”

for this item. The hypnotic subject unconsciously incorporates wishes and attitudes of the hypnotist, like a child incorporates parental rules and views. Just as each adult has attitudes absorbed in childhood from their parents still influencing them, so each hypnotic subject acquires unconscious parameters and a role model from the hypnotist too. Kubie and Margolin described this implanting of a foreign superego, the mental parasitization of hypnoprogramming, and how the hypnotist's words become a part of the subject's mind:

> *...the hypnotist...becomes something which the subject carries around inside of him—a secret 'will,' or purpose—a 'still, small voice of conscience'—an unconscious component of the new personality which has emerged. In this phase, the thread by which the subject remains tied to the hypnotist becomes hidden. He is led by it, but he is not aware of it, and he scotomatizes* [rationalizes] *all experiences which might force it upon his attention...Yet just as it is never the actual parent but an image of the parent, so it is not the hypnotist, himself, but a complex image of the hypnotist which becomes part of the subject..the buried (incorporated) image of the hypnotist becomes an experimentally induced superego figure....with the result that to the subject the words of the hypnotist become indistinguishable from his own thoughts.* **(Kubie and Margolin, "*The Process of Hypnotism and the Nature of the Hypnotic State*")**

18) Gradual Conditioning—Modern behaviorist researchers call it **shaping**. The hypnotic techniques are applied in "*a progressive, mutually supporting pattern,*" so that a subject gradually comes to accept suggestions which, if made earlier, certainly would have been rejected. Thus, "*a complex is so elaborated into the subject's real experiences that it becomes an integral part of him.*" Young cited himself for this one. **(1952, pp. 391-2)**

Conclusion

Young retorted to "those who think hypnosis powerful only for good" that, if it can be a powerful psychological tool for good, the logic is inescapable that "in skilled but unworthy hands...[it] might become an instrument of danger." **(Ibid., p. 407)** He warned that hypnosis must be viewed (like all other technologies) as capable of use for either good or evil purposes.

For two hundred years, on both sides of the Atlantic, experimental hypnotists vied with each other to see what percentage of subjects could, by means of hypnosis, be induced to commit a crime. There is an even more important research question that has never been examined, and which begs for an answer. That question is: What percentage of hypnotists, believing themselves to be secure against any possible disagreeable consequences, would commit unethical hypnosis? Seduced onward by the lure of total power, in total secrecy, over another human being, how deep into moral abasement would a typical hypnotist go? Would certain government agencies also find the idea of total power, in total secrecy, alluring?

How to Identify a Victim of Unethical Hypnosis

1. Report from Relatives or Other Observers

☑

2. Self Report

☑

3. Revealing Induction Phenomena

☑

4. Evidence from Projective Testing

☑

5. Inhibition, Anxiety, or Somatic Reaction to "H" Topic

☑

6. Symptoms of Repression

☑

7. Social Isolation

☑

8. Memories: Absent, Inadequate, Or Too Perfect

☑

9. "Weakness" During, Fear of Control After

☑

10. Dream Clues

☑

The Manchurian Candidate: A Novel

> ***No discussion of the social implications of hypnosis would be complete without a reference to the antisocial implications. A considerable amount of research has been done in this field and we feel that the dangers of hypnosis are, in certain situations, very real.***
>
> **Wright, 1962, p. 233**

Is someone you know a victim of unethical hypnosis? Have you seen a person in trance, or in the **posthypnotic trance** that occurs while carrying out a suggested posthypnotic act? If that person has been trained to do waking hypnosis, you may find it difficult to recognize his trance state—unless you know the observable characteristics of that state (listed under item 2). A deeply-hypnotized person can easily discern if another person is also in that state. An intuitive person may be able to sense somebody else's level of consciousness.

Usually, however, you will encounter the unknowing subject in his waking state. You will talk to his **cover personality** rather than to an unconscious isolate. But **repression** cannot make traumatic unconscious memories and associated emotions completely go away. The repressed material continues to play a part in the subject's unconscious mental life. When trauma is buried in the unconscious, it still exerts energy from that hiding place. A victim of abusive hypnosis experiences pressure from the unconscious to find safety and accomplish self-healing and release of inner stress by pushing out into the open some of that traumatic material.

Here is a list of known characteristics of other survivors of unethical hypnosis.[1] The more matches, the higher the probability that another situation of unethical hypnosis exists. A person who has suffered severe abuse in the amnesic hypnotic state will have more matches than an unknowing hypnotic subject who has been treated kindly while in trance.

---

[1] The CIA targeted creation of a list of clues to identify an unknowing hypnoprogrammed person as one of their research goals back in the 1950s. They undoubtedly know much that would be of help to civilian police agencies and therapists struggling to resolve questions in this area. But the reason for their research was not to identify, free, and heal victims of predatory hypnotists. It was to identify hypnoprogrammed "enemy" agents in order to eliminate the problem, or to reprogram them to serve an additional master, the CIA.

1. Report from Relatives or Other Observers

It is very difficult to identify a hypnoprogrammed, mind-controlled person, if he does not consciously know that fact about himself. In some cases, however, the subject's parents, friends, spouse, or medical examiners have recognized and reported evidence of the hypnotic exploitation. Palle's father suspected Nielsen had "some kind of hold" over his son. Other prisoners, and his wife, observed and reported Nielsen's hypnotic control over Palle to the police. Unfortunately, they did not report that until after the murder/robbery. Psychiatrists who examined Palle noticed that the prisoner's unreasoned, mechanical repetitions, declaring that he alone had committed the crime, sounded like hypnoprogramming being produced on cue.

Mrs. E's husband figured out what was going on, identified his wife's problem as hypnotic predation by an unknown "doctor," and asked the police for help. John Nebel began to understand that his wife's trance-talking was revealing a history of criminal hypnosis, so he bought a tape recorder and began to tape those conversations. It was the victim's husband, in one of Kline's reported cases of sexual predation by means of hypnosis, who also tape recorded, and then ended, the abuse.

The Posthypnotic Trance

It would be especially helpful to recognize behavior carried out in a state of posthypnotic trance.

> *...the posthypnotic response consists of the spontaneous and invariable development, as an integral part of the performance of the suggested posthypnotic act, of a self-limited, usually brief, hypnotic trance...This trance is usually of brief duration, occurs in direct relation to the performance of the posthypnotic act, and apparently constitutes an essential part of the process of response to and execution of the posthypnotic command...*[it] *requires for its appearance neither suggestion nor instruction...* [it] *develops at the moment of initiation of the posthypnotic act, and persists usually for only a moment or two...***(M. H. Erickson, "*The Nature of Post-Hypnotic Behavior*")**

Posthypnotic Trance Proves Existence of Previous Trance—Erickson stated in the same article that "the spontaneous posthypnotic trance constitutes a reliable indicator of the validity of the original trance..." Posthypnotic behavior, if it can be firmly identified as such, proves the existence of a previous hypnotic trance in which the subject was given the original suggestion.

Posthypnotic Trance Defines Nature of Previous Trance—Erickson also said that "careful observation will often disclose an absolute continuance in the spontaneous posthypnotic trance of the behavior patterns belonging actually to the original trance state." Accordingly, the way the subject felt during her "flight" to the door was a **continuance** of the way she felt during the original trance in which the posthypnotic suggestion was given: the sense of being in a very deep trance; her body mechanically obeying another person's will; her conscious self being violently cast aside into a condition of irrelevance, helplessly observing the hypnotic predation.

How to Identify a Posthypnotic Trance—Erickson listed clues by which an observer could identify the moment of continuation trance associated with carrying out a posthypnotic suggestion:.

> *A slight pause in the subject's immediate activity, a facial expression of distraction and detachment, a peculiar glassiness of the eyes with a dilatation of the pupils and a failure to focus...a fixity and narrowing of attention, an intentness of purpose, a marked loss of contact with the general environment, and an unresponsiveness to any external stimulus until the posthypnotic act is either in progress or has been completed...*[note the] *intent, rigid, and almost compulsive nature of his behavior, and his state of absorption and general unresponsiveness until he has reoriented himself to the immediate situation...a brief interval of confusion and disorientation from which the subject quickly recovers by renewed and close attention to the immediate situation.* **("*The Nature of Post-Hypnotic Behavior*")**

Slander, Lies, and "Paranoia"

Slander—Slander may appear in the form of direct accusations, statements to media, or hints dropped into the gossip pool concerning (unfounded) accusations of child abuse, homosexuality, psychosis, criminal acts, "religious fanaticism," "white supremacist" attitudes, and so on. The power of slander is well understood by propagandists. An unethical hypnotist seldom victimizes only one person. If one, of a cluster of subjects, has escaped and is trying to tell, the hypnotist may manipulate his other subjects to generate slander and weaken the escapee's credibility.

Lies—Or the predatory hypnotist may seek (without the use of hypnosis) covertly to contrive ruinous testimony from medical persons, former friends, or other potential "references" (employers, employees, or landlords). This would prevent, confuse, or impede an investigation. For example, when Palle's wife, Bente, began to suspect their involvement in robbery, Nielsen used his hypnotic control of Palle to create medical "evidence" that Palle's suspicious wife was mentally unstable and inclined to "delusions."

Paranoia—Unethical hypnosis—a condition which is not medically admitted to exist—can easily be misdiagnosed as **paranoia**. Fried and Agassi sum up the basic symptoms of paranoia:

☐ "Paranoia is, by definition, a quirk of the intellectual apparatus, a logical delusion." **(p. 2)**

☐ There are persecutory delusions.

☐ There are illusions of grandeur.

☐ The paranoid is usually very intelligent.

☐ The logical delusion is unshakeable, permanent.

☐ Except for the logical delusion, "clarity and order of thinking, willing, and action, are completely preserved..."

☐ The logical delusion "effects a deep seated change of the total outlook on life and a derangement of standpoint towards the surrounding world." The result can be a private world, a private language, and rejection of the publicly accepted view where it conflicts.

☐ The person "...will not be classed as paranoic as long as...he remains aware of the privacy of his private views and of the conflict they have with the public views..." **(p. 72-3)** and does not obtrude his deviant belief into conflict with the public's general belief.

☐ Paranoia is "accompanied by another symptom, namely the strong denial of any major symptom and any mental illness whatsoever...the patient exhibits no hallucinations and no bizarre behavior..." **(p. 79)**

According to the above standard, which is taught to psychiatry students, any naturally intelligent person who happens to be the first to realize some disagreeable truth, who insists on publicly proclaiming that truth as fact, and who can be accused of some "delusions of grandeur" and notions of "persecution," could be diagnosed as paranoid—if the psychiatrist happens not to accept the particular truth the subject is proclaiming. Fried and Agassi sum it up:

> *The signs of paranoia...are three: first, the patient shows only incidental symptoms while denying his being mentally ill altogether...second, he is fairly normal otherwise...third, he has an* ***idee fixe****...a systematic chronic delusion....*

If the fixed idea is a delusion, the patient is paranoid. If it is true, the patient is a mentally healthy person. The doctor gets to decide.

> *...psychiatry has never been able to define precisely what is normal (or abnormal) behavior, and thus it inevitably ends up enforcing conformity to whatever the current community and government standards happen to be...* **(William Arnold, p. 256)**

If psychiatrists do not recognize the possibility of unethical hypnosis, then persons who ask for help with a situation of unethical hypnosis risk being diagnosed as paranoid.

In the Soviet Union, political dissenters who were incarcerated in mental hospitals were most frequently diagnosed as having **paranoid delusions.** They had “poor adaptation to the social environment” and “overvalued their own importance.” They had “grandiose ideas of reforming the world.” Soviet psychiatry defined delusions as “false beliefs held onto with unshakable tenacity.” If a Soviet citizen believed he was being persecuted for his beliefs, that was considered a delusion with “paranoid features.” A. P. Filatova, a Soviet psychiatrist, declared, “No normal person can be opposed to the Worker’s and Peasant’s State.”

The thousands of political “paranoids” who were diagnosed, incarcerated, and drugged in Soviet mental hospitals had an unshakeable “delusion” that it was possible for elections to be real instead of rigged, that free enterprise would work better for the Russian economy than central planning, and that their country would be better off if the KGB were shut down and the press given freedom. Soviet psychiatry considered that particular set of delusions “progressive” and resistant to cure. Persons with that delusion were often forced (or tricked) into imprisonment in mental hospitals, then given the choice of renouncing their delusional views or remaining confined. Even if they renounced, however, they remained socially branded as “mentally ill,” and lost driving licenses, jobs, and opportunities for more schooling.

A heavily-conditioned hypnotic subject can be caused to display any set of neurotic or psychotic symptoms the hypnotist chooses to suggest.

> *In many cases the individuals I interviewed believed their lives or sanity would be in danger if their names were made public.* **(Bowart, p. 25)**

Why did Walter Bowart’s military hypnoprogrammed interviewees fear their sanity would be in danger? They feared for their sanity because they were all highly-trained hypnotic subjects. One easy way to destroy credibility, if a forced hypnotic subject tries to reveal the truth, is the use of hypnotic suggestions to cause disordered thinking or problem behavior. The suggestions may even be set up systematically to compel the subject to mimic the array of symptoms associated with a specific mental illness.

On the other hand, a person who declares she is being hypnotized and forced to do things, who knows exactly what she is being made to do that she does not want to do, and who can describe in detail a hypnosis event that supposedly happened an hour ago, may be truly paranoid. A genuine victim of unethical hypnosis usually has amnesia for that type of data and struggles to assemble facts from bits of evidence gleaned in the waking state.

☞ *If one person believes something weird, such as that Martians are attacking, it is paranoia. However, if a group of people adhere to that weird notion, it is no longer paranoia, and they are a cult. If a majority of people adopt that idea, it becomes normal. And that’s strange.*

2. Self Report

Some subjects, themselves, have figured out they were victims of a hypnotist based on normal recall of certain incidents. Their success has been due to a) programming errors, b) context clues, c) indignation overload, d) feeling in control, and e) natural aging. Zebediah, Bowart's interviewees, your author, and Nora O. all fit here.

a) Programming Error

Even the best of operators, sooner or later, will make a programming error when giving instructions to a hypnotized subject. Such an error may allow normal memory of events that were intended to be covered by amnesia. Or it may allow recovery of previously repressed memories.

b) Context Clues

The subject may figure out the problem from a context of normal memory in which hypnotic exploitation explains an otherwise inexplicable perception. For example, he may recognize a posthypnotic hallucination as such. He may realize that something he did was compelled by posthypnotic suggestion.

Missing Time—Whenever there is amnesic hypnosis, there are gaps in memory (**specific amnesias**). Missing time is the context clue that subjects most often notice. Zebediah remembered the clock hands suddenly seeming to jump forward several hours. M. H. Erickson's experimental subject noticed that outside it had gone suddenly from light to dark, and that he had gone from feeling fresh to feeling exhausted in the same instant.

Another subject noticed that her husband had switched from merrily chatting, while lying beside her in bed, to lying there snoring in what seemed to be but a split second of time. She also noticed frightening, severe pain which had been absent a seeming moment before. (Emergency surgery in the morning saved her life.)

Difficulty in remembering a period of about six weeks at the beginning of the hypnotic exploitation suggests a basic conditioning period on Bowart's CIA/military model.

Recognized Hallucinations—Other subjects have recalled obvious suggested hallucinations, positive or negative. Nora O. said, "I can remember him talking. I can see his mouth moving, but I can't remember anything he said." A posthypnotic suggestion made her unable to remember anything he said. She could not remember his words, but the instructions had allowed her to remember his face as he talked. (The mind thus tries to compensate for the artificial brain sickness of abusive hypnosis and its specific amnesias. What can be remembered becomes relatively more vivid, as if it expresses the energy of both the remembered, and the associated unremembered, data.)

Nora also said, "He made me see things. I still see them." He told her to see a frightening animal on the stairs that led from his room downstairs to the rest of the house. That illusion kept her trapped in his room, when he so chose. Another subject later realized that a perceived image was actually a hallucination because its details were too regular (the pattern was repeated like a wallpaper pattern) to be real. (The clue in the image might have been provided deliberately by her unconscious to her conscious in order to help its sleuthing function.)

Inexplicable Behavior—The subject did certain illogical things, or inexplicably allowed certain things to be done to him or her. The subject now realizes those events can be explained as responses to posthypnotic suggestions. A posthypnotic act is good proof of a previous hypnosis. Its occurrence can be long after, and far away, from the original suggestion. Zebediah gave all the money in his pockets to Adam, numerous times, when he encountered Adam on the street, or elsewhere. A subject wrote of experiencing obedience to a posthypnotic suggestion which compelled her to "fly" to the door and open it the next time she heard a knock on it:

> *While my body mechanically obeyed that other will, like a headless robot rushing to the door, my own consciousness felt violently cast aside. In that isolated, irrelevant, helpless, shunted-off place of being in my universe of mind, I was now merely a peripheral, minor consciousness observing my body as it was controlled by that dark force.*

Harold figured out what really happened.[1]

c) Indignation Overload

A subject may self-protectively convert, remember, or deduce normally amnestic events due to unconscious response to damage or danger. When extreme physical or emotional damage, pain, rage, or fear cause a hypnotic subject to override commands, despite all the conditioning to the contrary, that is **indignation overload**. When the subject's sense of justice is deeply offended, or when a situation conflicts with strong instinct (such as survival, or a mother's need to protect her child), the subject may manage to overcome some hypnotic programming. She may remember something despite amnesia suggestions. She may manage to convert a suggestion into a less harmful form. She may manage to get some conscious awareness of the problem. Indignation overload is usually only a partial rejection of conditioning.

For example, Candy responded to a suicide command by initiating a chain of events that resulted in her marriage to Nebel, and some memory recovery. Palle overturned Dr. Reiter's induction conditioning.

d) Feeling in Control

Unconscious recognition of safety, through distance in space and/or time from the perpetrator—or the involvement of a competing ethical hypnotist—may trigger some remembering and telling. There is evidence both from case histories and research to support this. P. W. Sheehan found that experimental subjects who reported feeling in control violated his amnesia suggestion. Subjects who did not feel in control did not break through it.

Zebediah was in prison (which isolated him from Adam) when he realized what Adam had done. Candy was married for five months before Arlene started telling. Bowart's interviewees were civilians when they realized their hypnotically suggested "memories" were not the stuff of reality:

Illogical Observations—Dr. Lindner transcribed a conversation in which Harold, his amnesic (prisoner) hypnotic subject, is putting evidence together from what he was able to observe in the conscious state.

> *Lindner: Harold, what do you remember about yesterday?*
>
> *Harold: I don't know. All I know is you burned my hand. Here. I know I didn't have that yesterday when I came here, and I know you've burned my hand before, so you get the blame for this too.*

---

[1] I appreciate Harold's spunk. I dislike reading about such tests for anesthesia. The damage was real, even if not felt until later. Routinely burning Harold with a cigarette, to prove that the subject was hypnotized, was cruel and unnecessary in a therapy setting. Lindner explained in a footnote that "the burning of the dorsal surface of the hand" was a depth test. **(p. 245)**. In fairness to Dr. Lindner, I have to add that he seems to have tried really hard to straighten the delinquent kid out. Also to Lindner's credit, in a 1960 article, "The Shared Neurosis," he reported examples of therapists who used hypnosis to serve their own neurotic needs.

> *"When I first got out of the service, all I could remember about my four years was that I'd had a lot of fun. I mean, all the pictures I have, and all the recollections I had, were of Max and Pat and I having fun, skin diving, laying on the beach, collecting shells, walking in the jungle. It never dawned on me until later that I must have done something while I was in the service."* **(Bowart, p. 32)**

e) Aging

There is a physiological reason for spontaneous mid-life recoveries of repressed traumatic memories. They literally become more endurable.

> *...recent, startling research suggests that there may be a physiological factor involved. Autopsy studies show that during middle age there is a major loss of cells in the locus coeruleus, an area of the brain stem that is associated with the experiencing of panic and anxiety.* **(Berger, p. 477)**

Thus, memories repressed by deliberate loading with fear or pain associations become more accessible in middle age. The beasts guarding the mental gate to this hidden knowledge have grown less fearsome, more manageable.

3. Revealing Induction Phenomena

The following **induction** events may be evidence of previous hypnotic conditioning: a) **unusual susceptibility**; b) evidence of being **depth-limited** and/or **regression-blocked**; c) **unusual nonsusceptibility**; d) sudden deepening if the new hypnotist uses the same induction or deepening technique the previous hypnotist used: **piggybacking**; and e) extraordinary **reaction to the onset of trance.**

a) Unusually Susceptible

The subject who is **unusually susceptible** to hypnosis may be revealing past training. Once a person has been hypnotized many times, it is easy for any operator to quickly induce trance, and it will be a deep trance, unless the subject is sealed. One hypnotist, upon encountering an unknowing heavily conditioned hypnotic subject, remarked, "I have never seen anybody go down so far, so fast, so easily."

A former policeman told me that he had accompanied his wife to a hypnosis session as a "chaperone." He fell "asleep," however, at the first induction patter and remained so until the hypnotist awoke him. On another occasion, he bought a tape which taught Morse code using a hypnotic technique. Each time he listened to it, after the first few sentences, he never could remember anything more until after the tape was completed—but he discovered afterwards that he had learned the code perfectly.

I told him such extreme susceptibility to hypnosis was strong evidence that at some former time in his life he had received extensive hypnotic conditioning. The rule is: once a good subject, always a good subject—unless the operator seals you with a suggestion that you cannot be hypnotized by anybody else. He had not been sealed.

b) Depth-limited and Regression-blocked

A hypnotizable subject may be **depth-limited** and/or **regression-blocked**. Dr. Reiter's repeated hypnoses did not accomplish anything with Palle except a shallow trance that was more difficult to induce and a little less deep each time. It was barbiturate that finally broke through Nielsen's suggested depth barrier. The fact that the drug could change the process of his induction so dramatically proved that a hypnotic suggestion for depth-limiting had been the problem. Bowart's interviewees were both depth-limited and regression blocked.

> *...he found me to be a very easy subject. I'd go into a trance at the drop of a hat....*[but] *whenever he tried to regress me—saying, 'I want you to go back'—I'd just bring myself out of the trance, even if it was a deep trance. My heart would be pounding, my palms would be sweating, and I'd feel the same claustrophobia I'd felt whenever I'd confronted those application forms.* **(Quoted in Bowart, p. 36)**

The subject probably had been told something like: "You can be hypnotized by another person, but only down to a medium depth. If that other operator asks you to go back in time, by any wording whatsoever, you instantly will come out of the trance. You will be very wide awake and very upset. Your heart will be pounding, your palms sweating. And you will feel claustrophobic. You will feel a tremendous need to get out of there."

When the subject mentioned in a) who went down "so far so fast" returned to that hypnotist a second time, she found that, since her previous appointment, she had been made depth-limited and regression-blocked. She and the new hypnotist, however, were able quickly to overcome the covert operator's depth limit and regression-blocking.

c) Unusually Insusceptible

A **sealed** subject seems **insusceptible**. If a person fits other criteria for hypnotizability, but cannot be hypnotized, he may be sealed. If a person once could be hypnotized, but now cannot, it is possible that person is now sealed. (On the other hand, subjects differ in response to hypnotic situations and different operators.) When the subject mentioned in parts a) and b) went back to the new hypnotist a third time, she found herself mysteriously immune to hypnosis. No matter what the hypnotist did, he no longer could induce hypnosis in her. The covert operator had sealed her against any induction to any depth by any other operator.

d) Piggybacking

If a later hypnotist uses the same induction method used by the previous hypnotist—**piggybacking**—there may be a breakthrough in inductability. For example, Dr. Mayer used the same induction cue with Mrs. E. that Bergen had used, and it worked. Successful piggybacking is evidence of previous hypnotic conditioning to that induction cue. Candy's later mirror inductions piggybacked on Jensen's earlier mirror-conditioning of her. That, in turn, piggybacked on Candy's childhood self-conditioning using a mirror to self-hypnotize.

Piggybacking can overcome sealing and depth-limit resistance. Piggybacking can be used either to begin a trance or to deepen an existing trance. If the second operator repeats the first operator's deepening method, he also may be able to access the subject's depth conditioning from her original operator. If the subject spontaneously relives the experience of the prior hypnotist's induction in a later trance with a different operator, trance may deepen to the level used by her previous operator. If the subject relives a previous operator's induction or deepening method while in a later trance, that piggybacking will powerfully deepen the present trance: "As Candy counts down with Burger, her voice indicates that the reliving of that experience is putting her into an even deeper trance while with Nebel." **(Bain, p. 140)** When Candy relived her first mirror induction while in trance with her husband, she shifted to deeper trance.

e) Extraordinary Reaction to Onset of Trance

As Reiter drugged Palle Hardwick down past Nielsen's posthypnotic depth limit, Palle screamed "No, no!" When Nora O. went to a hypnotherapist, seeking help with her childhood hypno-abuse, she became hysterical as soon as she was hypnotized. The hypnotist could not wake her up. Nora ended up in a mental hospital. "Wasn't right for a month," she said. Nora never allowed anybody to hypnotize her again.

Another subject stopped breathing after her psychiatrist administered barbiturate for the purpose of recovering information about former abusive hypnosis. The psychiatrist had to give her a specific suggestion to breathe, for each breath, until the drug's effect wore off and she returned to normal consciousness. That particular hypnotic conditioning impeded therapy until the stop-breathing programming could be lifted. (That was accomplished by the end of the next narcohypnotic immersion. The doctor gave suggestions, intended to lift the stop-breathing conditioning, between the necessary suggestions to breathe.).

4. Evidence from Projective Testing

Projective tests ask for responses to pictures or images, or ask the subject to think up images, or to create shapes and images.

> *The expressive techniques...include free drawing, free movement, clay modeling, etc., and some of the projective techniques such as the Thematic Apperception Test, the Rorschach, the drawing of the Tree, the Szondi Test and others.* **(Assagioli, pp. 94-5)**

Sealing May Affect Ability to See Illusion

One day, about a decade ago, the professor brought a spinning machine, that created an illusion, to my psychology class. She held it up in front of everybody, started it up, and asked what we saw. Every person in that class saw it as the illusion—except me. I saw "through" it. I saw what was really there. I could not see the illusion, even when I tried.

I have wondered, ever since, why I was different from the thirty-three other students. Was my inability to see the illusion caused by my sealing? Hypnosis is a kind of illusion. Were illusions accidentally covered by my conditioning to unconsciously block all forms of induction?

An image that arises spontaneously in a person's mind is called **receptive imagery** or **spontaneous imagery**. Those images are valuable for self-understanding, as well as diagnosis. They will reveal a subject's much-used and/or abused hypnoprogrammed condition, if the symbol language is correctly interpreted. Projective tests such as the TAT reveal the truth because you project your inner self onto neutral stimuli. You think you see form (pattern) in data, even random data, such as the Rorschach ink blots. What you see in random data, or the response you give to generic data, provides

> *...rapid access to facets of the personality that might otherwise be uncovered only through hypnosis or prolonged psychoanalysis or psychotherapy.* **(*The Layman's Dictionary of Psychiatry.* N.Y.: Barnes & Noble, 1967, p. 185)**

"Draw Nothing"

If a victim has been told many times, "You will remember nothing," a suggestion to "draw nothing" may work especially well to help the subject retrieve data from earlier hypnoses. "You will remember nothing" is a standard command. The instruction to remember "nothing" is first mentioned in Bailly's secret report to the king.

> *In cases of profound hypnotism there is often an oblivion of what occurred during the hypnotic sleep. This oblivion is complete when the experimenter has taken care to tell the hypnotized subject that he will remember absolutely nothing.* **(quoted in Binet and Fere, p. 366)**

When told by a friend to "Draw nothing," one survivor drew amnestic material from her repressed memories. Her conscious mind was surprised by what she saw herself drawing. Her split had been told many times under hypnosis, "You will remember nothing," and her unconscious remembered that "nothing." As she drew "nothing," unconscious knowledge associated with what she was drawing came to her. Then she consciously knew and, finally, she could talk about it.

Walk Through Your "Land"

If you ask a survivor of criminal hypnosis to visualize a basic series of images, the role of the predatory operator in that person's mind WILL be graphically demonstrated in some way. For example, visualize a landscape, perhaps a forest. There is a path leading down into that landscape. Take a walk down that path.

Now you see a key lying on the ground beside the path. What does it look like? What do you do with it? Walk on down the path. You come to a clearing of some sort. There you see a container. What does it look like? What do you do with it? Walk on down the path. It has a bend coming up. You go around that bend and suddenly you come upon a bear in the middle of the path. What does the bear look like? How will you get past it and on up the path?

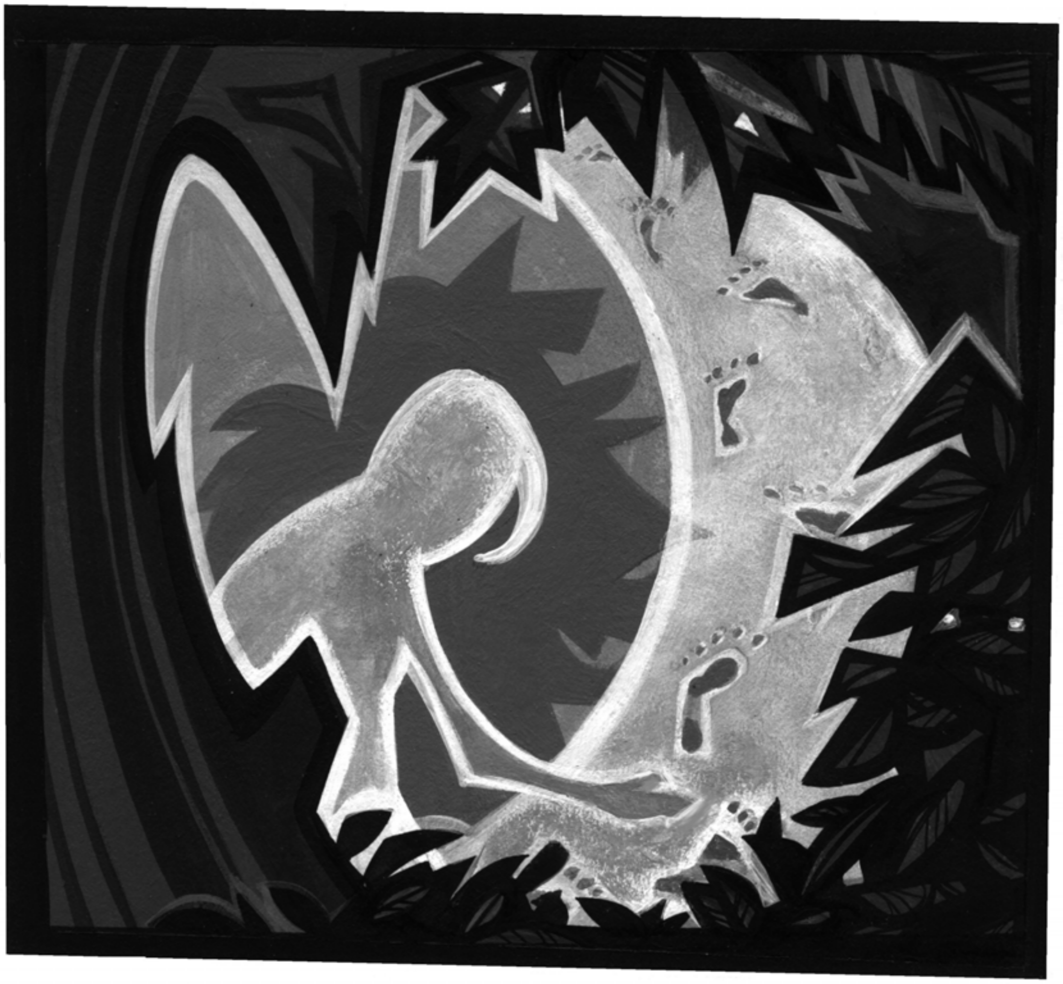

(If you need help, imagine that I found a way to get you past the bear.) Now you are past the bear, and going on down the path. Up ahead, you see a dwelling place of some sort. What does it look like outside? Inside? Are there plants around the outside of it? Now you're going on down the path. You come to some water: lake, creek, spring, or some such. What does your water look like? Go on down the path. Up ahead, you can now see a wall that stretches from horizon to horizon. What does it look like? Can you get over it?

Somewhere along that trail, probably in the first half of the series of images, a hypnoprogrammed person may report seeing an independent person of some sort in their land (or evidence of such a person such as footprints). Immediately after being glimpsed, this image withdraws, refuses contact , or conceals its presence.

For example, one hypnoprogrammed subject described a man sitting in a pickup truck on a hill above his forest. As soon as he saw and described it, however, the truck drove out of sight and did not return. Another subject was startled when the head and upper torso of a character suddenly popped out of her container, jack-in-the-box style. The image shook its head vigorously at her, scornfully saying "nyeh, nyeh, nyeh"! Then, it popped back down into the container whose lid then slammed back down, concealing all again.

5. Inhibition, Anxiety, or Somatic Reaction to the "H" Topic

A victim of criminal hypnosis may have difficulty communicating about hypnosis, or viewing a picture about hypnotic abuse, or hearing another victim talk about it. The problem may be a) inhibition, b) anxiety, or c) a physical reaction.

a) Inhibition

The subject may avoid talking about the hypnosis in his life almost completely. Palle's reaction to the hypnosis picture in the Thematic Apperception Test (TAT) series was unlike his other interpretations; he spoke briefly, with no detail. Or the subject may show relative lack of speech skill on the subject of his hypnosis experience, compared to his ability to communicate information about other subjects. A physician observed to such a person, "Your normal skill at communicating is very high, but when you tell somebody about the hypnosis it suddenly becomes extremely poor."

There may be evidence of specific hypnotic suggestions forbidding the telling. For example, the mouth opens, but words do not come out. (The antecedent suggestion would have been: "Your mouth may open, but no words will come out.") When a therapist asked one survivor of unethical hypnosis the first pointed question about the hypnosis in her life, she discovered she could not answer. She looked helplessly at him. Her mouth was open quite wide (the same thing that had happened before, when she had tried to tell a lawyer). It would not close. Nor would words come out. The listener waited.

Finally, by willing it of herself in a feat of supreme self-discipline, she managed to utter one word. And then another, and another, until she had briefly answered the question. The barrier was then weakened. It was not as hard for her to answer his following questions.

Memory blocking may also be apparent under hypnosis. Whenever John asked the hypnotized Candy a question about the CIA hypnoses, she would say, "I don't know anything." Her words were "...the singsong automatic response Nebel had heard hundreds of times on the tapes." **(Bain, p. 233)**. A survivor of unethical hypnosis may show emotional pain when giving that response of "I don't know." "I don't know" is the heart of the trouble. She or he is not aware, cannot tell, cannot feel, cannot remember, all because of the suggested amnesia.

Blocking may also be apparent in a pattern of delayed speech before answering questions about the hypnosis.

b) Anxiety

Survivors may have an **anxiety reaction** to the subject of hypnosis. Bowart told Scheflin and Opton that, when interviewing the hypnoprogrammed military men, he had "...discovered a common characteristic: they all have an anxiety reaction when questioned about those missing spaces of time." **(Scheflin & Opton, p. 445)**

c) Somatic Reaction

The victim is likely to display anxiety, stress, and/or spontaneous lowering of consciousness when questioned about his hypnotic history. He may also show these symptoms upon hearing another person speak of hypnotic victimization. The anxiety may be expressed in a physical (somatic) symptom. Stephanie B. is a young woman whose father made her his hypnotic subject and sexually abused her. When she heard about another case of criminal hypnosis, she felt "chills."

I first met Nora O., a lady in her early seventies, in a writer's critique group. Over the next few weeks, I learned that she had been hypnotized when she was three years old by her uncle, an obstetrician who had lost his license for performing abortions. He then moved into the top floor of her family's house. He used hypnotic conditioning of Nora to facilitate his sexual abuse of her. The abuse continued until she was eleven.

Nora O. had a physical fear reaction to hearing or reading about abusive hypnosis: "My heart is racing 170 beats a minute. I have goose bumps all over my arms," she would say. Nora had a degree in clinical psychology and career experience as a college English teacher. She seemed wonderfully qualified to help me. I asked her to edit this book for me. She hesitated, then agreed. She had edited nearly a third of it before she had the heart attack.

"I never, ever had a heart attack before," she said. She became afraid to continue the work:

> *After I semi-recovered and was up and about (well UP, anyway), I found that every time I went near your book my heart felt funny. If I picked up the box your book was in, the room tilted. If I began to read it, my* [heart] *monitor went up into the red zone. I stashed your manuscript under the bed in the guest room. Even then, whenever I passed that door on my way down the hall, it was like walking through an icy draft. I swear. About every week I'd go try again, but the same weird feelings would come over me—and they still do.*[1,2]

---

[1] Letter from Nora to Carla, 10-5-96.

[2] There may be an association between a history of frequent hypnoses involving terrifying hallucinations, or suggestions to feel extreme terror, and arrhythmias later in life, especially in subjects with hereditary predisposition to arrhythmias.

6. Symptoms of Repression

The subject may have symptoms of **emotional repression**. The repression caused by hypnotic commands blocks the pain, shame, and fear unconsciously caused by predatory hypnosis from direct, conscious expression. Therefore, the repressed emotions leak out in revealing symptoms. Repression is the basis of all the other **defense mechanisms**. Repression is not a static, once and for all, event. It is part of the dynamic, shifting equilibrium in a person's mind between pressures to express, and pressures to repress. Pain, shame, and fear repressed under a **cover personality** can never be completely concealed.

a) Blocking When Questioned

A victim of abusive hypnosis may have a distinct pattern of delayed speech before denying key questions. This indicates blocking. Sirhan Sirhan gave this type of response to certain questions.

b) Emotional Numbing

Dr. Joel Osler Brende, a narcohypnotist treating posttraumatic stress in war veterans, wrote about the lasting, distressing symptoms that survivors of traumatic events suffer. He listed

> *...symptom complexes of intrusive traumatic memories, emotions, and imagery alternating with amnesia, denial, and emotional numbing—the latter symptom complex representing the attempt "to forget"....* **(Brende, 1985)**

A hypnoprogrammed military subject summed up his behavior in the first months of therapy:

> *"...when I first came in I'd talked in a monotone. I was very, very, controlled. I showed no emotions and had no inflection in my speech."* **(quoted in Bowart, *Operation Mind Control*)**

The patient behaved like that for his first three months of treatment. That psychiatrist added that he "does not talk very much and has difficulty in expressing his feelings...Almost entire lack of facial expression." **(Ibid., p. 84)** She felt like he had a wall around him that she couldn't get through.

In another case, two consecutive clinicians were puzzled because the subject showed no emotion, although she was describing horrific events.

Emotional flatness, or tight control, can be specifically caused by hypnotic suggestion, or it can be symptomatic of hypnotic conditioning, when emotional repression is part of the amnesia. The traumatic experience is stuffed into the unconscious, blocked from expression either emotionally or verbally. The subject may be able to reconstruct some memories from peripheral, conscious evidence. Accessing the related emotion is something else. The predatory hypnotist does not want his secrets revealed. He would deny his subject either the credibility or the healing associated with emotional outpouring.

> *"Everybody, my folks, my friends, everyone who'd known me before noticed how changed I was* [after military hypnoprogramming]. *I was fearful, and under tight control."* **(quoted in Bowart, p. 35)**

c) Approach-Avoidance

Because of hypnoprogramming, the victim may completely avoid anything that would uncover the secret and accomplish deprogramming. If he does seek help, an approach-avoidance attitude is likely. The subject reaches out toward safety and healing. Yet, he is hindered in that effort by Secret-Don't-Tell programming that defends the hypnotic implants.

d) Spontaneous Eruptions of Repressed Hypnotic Memory

Everybody with trance capacity has **spontaneous trances** (daydreaming, highway hypnosis). Normally, these are shallow in depth. Normally, they neither involve **regression**, nor the escape of repressed hypnotic material.

Abusive hypnosis creates a load of unconscious pain that needs release, and of hidden truth that needs telling. The victim of criminal hypnosis, therefore, has a greater-than-normal tendency to experience spontaneous dissociation (even symptoms of multiple personality) because of his/her trained capacity for deep trance phenomena.

Some subjects have spontaneously recovered significant data in a series of dreams, associations, and realizations. The repressed memories "dribbled" back, gradually leaking from unconscious to conscious. For a survivor of criminal hypnosis, talking or reading about abusive hypnosis, or being hypnotized, tends to revive related personal memories. Nora O. wrote me:

> *...after I started reading your work and talking to you I began to see the Monster Animal that Dr. Eldon put in the stairwell when I was three or four years old. The only other time it came back was when I tried talking to a hypnotist about hypnosis 30+ years ago. It's back again, big as life, three thousand miles from Oregon!*
>
> *I go up and down the basement stairs several times a day (somewhat slowly since the heart attack), and I walk right through the shaggy reddish-brown abomination. I scarcely even shudder any more. I always carry my heavy-duty Rubbermaid laundry basket out in front of me and shut my eyes tight for the ten seconds it takes to pass through, but I know it isn't there. No, it's not. It absolutely isn't there. It's just in my head. (Heart?)* **(Letter, Nora to Carla)**

An eruption of repressed memory or emotion is a **spontaneous regression**. Survivors of abusive hypnosis may spontaneously regress to scenes from their repressed history with, or without, formal trance induction. Candy spontaneously regressed after John's "relaxations." At first, she only regressed to early childhood, but then Arlene began to relive the CIA hypnoses. Many of Bowart's interviewees also had spontaneous regressions. In yet another case of spontaneous regression to a scene of forgotten hypnotic abuse:

> *A sixteen-year-old boy was hypnotized by a lay hypnotizer, had a fit of insane violence in hypnosis, and attacked the hypnotizer, who knew no other course to take but to call for the assistance of the police. The hypnotized boy had to be manacled. When in the clinic, he had already been calmed and pacified, he knew nothing of what had taken place. A new hypnosis in the case of the same boy yielded the following information: the young man had been well known as a good medium in the vicinity of Vienna and had been repeatedly used by various persons, perhaps two hundred times altogether, for public exhibitions. One of these lay hypnotizers had on many occasions ordered him to go crazy and had suggested to him that a fly was approaching him, becoming larger and larger as it advanced, thus filling him with an acute sense of fear. During the hypnosis, which had taken place in Vienna, the other hypnotizer now appeared* [as a regressive hallucination], *and on the latter's* [hallucinated] *command the young man now went through his feat* [of seeing the fly approaching, becoming larger and larger]. **(Schilder and Kauders, p. 45)**

Frequent spontaneous trances can be hard on the physical body. Normal sleep patterns may be disrupted. Trance visualizations may temporarily displace normal dreaming. For example, Candy suffered a lot of insomnia and emotional and physical stress during the process. "Candy withered under the strain." **(Bain, p. 247)**

A recovery of memory tends to stimulate yet more memories. After Candy spontaneously regressed to her childhood under hypnosis, John played the tape for her. Hearing that tape about a childhood incident made her remember yet more about the occasion of hitting her head. The two mental units, conscious and unconscious, are yoked. Though not always pulling equally, together they pull the subject along toward knowing.

e) Symptoms of Post-traumatic Stress

Anxiety, phobias, depression, severe nervousness, and lack of sexual drive are seen in concentration camp survivors and former prisoners of war. These symptoms may also appear in subjects with a history of abusive amnesic hypnosis. Meerloo gave a related, but different, description of what happens after the "Totalitarian Spell" is broken: "temporary nervous repercussions...crying spells, feelings of guilt and depression...The period of brainwashing becomes a nightmare." **(pp. 91-2)** Two Canadian researchers on post-traumatic stress syndrome in victims of past imprisonment and torture listed "somatic symptoms of anxiety, phobias, suspiciousness, and fearfulness." **(Allodi and Cowgill, "*A Canadian Study*" in Stover & Nightingale)**

> *...symptoms of anxiety, hyperalertness, disturbances in concentration and memory, and a tendency to reexperience the trauma in dreams and thoughts are components of both the torture syndrome and other stress and post-traumatic disorders...a specific criterion of the torture syndrome is that the person affected lacks any apparent predisposition to mental disorder.* **(Allodi, ibid)**

This is normal for a person with post-traumatic stress disorder, "torture syndrome."

Phobias—Phobias can be either natural or suggested. Nobody is born with a phobia. It is always "developed." Developing a phobia requires a hookup between unconsciously associated cause and effect, programmed in with a lot of anxiety. Survivors of unethical hypnosis, or brainwashing, may have acquired phobias.

Patty Hearst, in prison after her recapture from the SLA, received psychiatric treatment for "some of my newly developed phobias." **(*Every Secret Thing*, p. 380)** Nora O. feared dying whenever she talked about the hypnotic abuse in her life. After getting out of the service, Bowart's typical interviewee looked for work, and discovered that he had a phobic reaction to answering questions about his past. When filling out an application form...

> *He wrote his name and noticed that his hands were sweating. As he began to enter his address his heart began pounding so loudly it was audible. He became short of breath and felt like the walls were closing in. He fought to remain calm, but within a few moments he snatched up the form and bolted out the door.* **(Bowart, p. 35)**

He tried to cure himself of the job application panic by desensitization; he kept going back, trying again. He did become able to get a little farther into the form, but:

> *...when he came to the place in the form which required work information about the past four years the pounding in his ears, the shortness of breath, and the terrifying feeling of being confined in a small space came over him again, and he left...* **(Ibid.)**

He tried going to college. He was able to fill out the form and turn it in because it did not ask what he had done in the military. Personal questions in class, however, would trigger that panic reaction and a compulsion to leave the area. He dropped out of college. The specific posthypnotic suggestion probably had stated that if he ever told what he had done in the military, he would be stricken with unendurable panic, feel a dreadful claustrophobia, and have to get out of that place. His hypnoprogramming not to divulge personal information was over-generalized and over-intense. It prevented a normal life.

7. Social Isolation

There may be a pattern of isolation from other people, avoidance of close (confiding) friendships, and/or avoidance of involvement with a therapist who might recognize the problem of abusive hypnosis. Nielsen maneuvered Palle away from the influence of his friends and family. Later, Palle said, "I feel as if there is always a gap between me and other people...I often feel alone even when in other people's company, because I can never feel the urge to take them into my confidence." **(Reiter, p. 85)** Nobody came to Candy's wedding, except her mother and her caretaker. Bergen wanted Mrs. E to kill her husband.

8. Memories: Absent, Inadequate, Or Too Perfect

Memories relating to hypnotic episodes tend to either be absent, inadequate—or too perfect. Dr. Mayer noted that Mrs. E.'s memory was normal in every respect—except when she tried to remember anything to do with Bergen.

> *The victim's memory of what happened is unreliable, patchy and uncertain, so that his statements will either appear improbable, inadequate, scrappy and confused, and self-contradictory, or just the opposite, so over confident and detailed that they appear to the court to have been learnt off by heart.* **(Reiter, 1958)**

The "overconfident and detailed" memories are ones obtained or recovered in a trance state, spontaneous or suggested. Any memory that is recovered directly from the unconscious, which has never been conscious before, will seem "overconfident and detailed." For a victim of unethical hypnosis, that may be the only way it can come back. (And there is a risk of confabulation.)

9. "Weakness" During, Fear of Control After

The subject who is in an active abuse relationship with a predatory hypnotist may seem unusually weak and meek. Zebediah's prison evaluation called him "weakwilled and vacillating." Palle became "apathetic" and an "introvert" after his hypnotic exploitation began, although, as a child, he had been outgoing. After Nielsen programmed him, his Thematic Apperception Test showed "a desire to be led by another person." Another subject, before her recovery from severe hypno-abuse, was called the "most self-effacing person I have ever met." Bain described Candy's personality as "gentle, meek."

In the relationship of hypnotic exploitation, there is a mental "paralysis" of the hypnotized person. The willing function of his conscious mind, to some extent, is being displaced by covert instructions from the hypnotist. The subject of unethical hypnosis has been entrapped in a very real situation of powerlessness. To the subject's unconscious mind, the operator seems (and is) very dangerous. The unconscious automatically reacts to this overwhelming dominance with a survival-oriented, belly-up posture, "a passive-masochistic attitude" **(R. W. White)**, a complete surrender. That unconscious surrender may spill over into the outward life.

There may be other reasons for that passivity beyond the unconscious training and survival instinct of surrender. Are the subject's strong parts all occupied with the effort of containing the pain, shame, and frustration? Are they occupied with the burden of unconsciously coping with the secret hypnotic life? Does the unconscious hypnotic split absorb all the subject's assertive personality characteristics in obedience to the hypnotist's demands that the unconscious isolate must dominate the subject's conscious self? Or does the hypnotic split take on qualities of the exploiter, becoming a personification of the hypnotist's will, secretly implanted and developed as a multiple personality to absorb the subject's assertive qualities?

The subject also tends to show noticeable weakness in any conscious confrontation with the hypnotist. Zebediah believed he could confront Adam in court, but then discovered he could not. Palle had a "feeling of weakness and cowardice in respect to N, and this was manifested when he was confronted with N in court." **(Reiter, p. 78)** Survivors of abusive hypnosis tend to relate to their predator with a mixture of fascination/love (rapport) and hate/fear (reality).

Fear of Control

A survivor of abusive hypnosis may have a phobic reaction to (or may simply avoid) situations involving control by another person. Dr. Reiter said that Palle's attitude toward authority was strikingly ambivalent. Authority attracted him, and at the same time he intensely hated it. Joe reacted with strong discomfort to any authority over him and had to be self-employed.

10. Sleep Symptoms and Dream Clues

Dreams are a functional necessity for every living human, whether we remember them or not. (We usually do not.) We dream three to seven times per night. Dream length ranges from just a few minutes up to an hour, but usually between eight and thirty minutes. About one-fifth of your sleep time is spent dreaming, an average of one dream every ninety minutes, with more toward the morning. Dreaming plays a role in filing away learned material into long-term memory. The more you are learning, the more you will dream.

Survivor Dreams

Sleep and dream patterns, and dream content, also can convey information about repressed unconscious knowings. For example, during the period when Dr. Reiter was first trying, unsuccessfully, to hypnotize Palle, Nielsen encountered his hypnotic subject in a courtroom and reinforced all his conditioning. After that encounter, Palle began to feel upset all the time. He did not know why he felt so anxious. He also began to have chronic insomnia. When just on the verge of falling asleep, he suddenly would feel tense and frightened, afraid of losing control, afraid of becoming unconscious. He had frightening dreams when he did sleep, but, when he awoke, he could never remember exactly what he had been dreaming.

A survivor of artificial personality splitting may have dream content that focuses on the situation of the unconscious split. Or the content may be drawn from the life of the root self. Or it may involve both personas.

Dreams can leak unconscious knowledge to the conscious mind. They can even be purposeful message-bearers from the unconscious to the conscious. Dreams may contain fragments of factual information (verbal or concrete) mixed in their collage of symbols. CIA experimenters, who researched artificial personality splitting to create a subconscious isolate, noted the possibility of the cross-over of unconscious knowledge to the subject's conscious mind via dreams:

> *There would be inevitable leakage between the two personalities, particularly in dreams; but if the hypnotist were clever enough, he could build in cover stories and safety valves which would prevent the subject from acting inconsistently.* **(*CIA memo* quoted in J. Marks, pp. 184-5)**

So, the subject may be unable to remember dreams, either spontaneously or because of repressive hypnotic suggestions meant to block their information-carrying ability. Or he may dream—and have nightmares. Dreams may "actually refer to present situations of which we have never been consciously aware." **(Faraday, p. 166)** When a survivor of criminal hypnosis dreams about amnestic memories, the dream delivers information from his unconscious to his conscious, data which previously has not been consciously known.

> *Not infrequently, the content of the hypnosis will reappear in a dream, although the patient may not always be able to indicate precisely the origin of this content.* **(Schilder & Kauders, *Hypnosis*, p. 60)**

Dreams may also convey consciously denied emotion.

> *In their sleep, the memories of atrocities surface to vivid awareness among the victims of mind control. Night after night terrible images, suppressed by deeply conditioned responses, emerge as terrifying nightmares.* **(Bowart, p. 26)**

The survivor may dream the same, or a similar, scene over and over. Repeated dreams are attempts to come to terms with intense, unconscious, emotional material.

> *The recurrent dream tells an important story about the client...recurring ones are attempting unsuccessfully to adjust or call attention to some internal conflict between fragmented parts.* **(Tebbetts, *Miracles on Demand*, p. 29)**

Analyzing Dreams

Repeated nightmares may precede a period of spontaneous memory recovery. Bowart's interviewees, who spontaneously recovered memories, typically began that process with a series of disturbing dreams. The first dream, or first few dreams, of a series tend to be a special effort by a survivor's unconscious to communicate something to its conscious mind. The topic of the dreams may be fear of the hypnotist, need to escape, specific experiences hidden by amnesia, grief at loss of memory, grief at family relationships disrupted by the hypnotist's predations, anger at the hypnotist, etc. Dreams of being put to sleep or paralyzed may be metaphors for being forced, on conditioned cue, into deep trance.

A dream may be all symbols, part symbols and part memories, or mostly real data.

> *Psychotherapists and analysts in particular should beware of their professional habit of treating all their patients' communications, including dreams, as mere 'projections' of the personality, containing no objective truth...*[we should explore] *a dream thoroughly for signs of objective truth...* **(Faraday, *Dream Power*)**

Let me add a note of caution here. Out of an average sample of the dreams of a class of college sophomores, almost 100% had dreamed of being attacked or pursued, 75% of sexual experiences, 66% of schools, teachers, and studying, 62% of falling, 56% of being frozen with fright, and 56% of nudity. So, dreams of being unable to move are common and do not necessarily refer to hypnotic experience. Dreams of trying to evade pursuit may symbolize many things, only one of which is unconscious fear of hypnotic predations. Dreams of struggling to find and save a lost child can symbolize many things, only one of which is the problem of unconscious isolation of the amnestic body of knowledge.

If you pay attention to your dreams, you will come to know yourself better.

> *It is generally agreed among psychotherapists and personality theorists that dreams provide us with the most direct revelation of unconscious thought processes that is available in normal personalities.* **(M. P. Emery, *thesis, "The Differential Assimilation of Dream Content into Waking Consciousness*," Columbia Teacher's College.)**

Palle's dreams often had military themes and issues of obedience and submission. His dream representations of Nielsen were intensely emotional and negative, expressing anger and fear. Nielsen would be portrayed either with disgust as "the drunkard," or he would be "the hidden force which sustained the whole content of the dream and directed it towards its tragic-explosive catastrophic outcome." **(Reiter, p. 76)** The dreams of another survivor typically represented the predatory hypnotist as a snake, or as a dangerous, frightening man.

The survivor who understands the language of his dreams may learn what he must do to be safe. Some part of his unconscious mind, the **hidden observer**, always knows the whole story. That truth, and related warnings, can be communicated to the conscious mind in dreams. Warnings, insights, and guidance can come in the form of a dream.

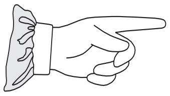

If there are many significant matches in the ten preceding categories, the correct diagnosis is:

Posttraumatic Stress Syndrome

Subcategory: Unethical Hypnosis

Survivor Confabulation

Victims of unethical hypnosis, who have become aware of their condition, who have tried to fight against it, and who have sought therapy for it, may have a burden of confabulatory overlay in addition to their true memories. There are three potential sources for this:

- The confabulatory overlay may have been caused by suggestions from the original, predatory operator. Why? It is very difficult for a mind-controller to take away the precious gems of consciously aware facts to which a subject, who is fighting for mind-freedom and the right to reality, is clinging. It is relatively easy, however, to give this trained subject suggestions which will make him confabulate additional, nonfactual, material. The purpose is to destroy credibility for the true component of the subject's declarations. It tends to work because most people assume that if one item in a person's testimony can be shown to be confabulation, then nothing they say should be taken seriously. Testimony laced with hypnotically-implanted falsehoods could ruin a victim's legal case.

- A further possible source of confabulation is the process of trying to recover amnestic material in the twilight zone of self-induced trance. The unconscious is highly cooperative with any conscious goal direction. Unless constantly warned to seek only truth, it may produce preposterous tales. Any subject capable of being subjected to unethical hypnosis also may believe in preposterous tales fabricated by his own unconscious.

- A therapist who treats a survivor of criminal hypnosis may not sufficiently guard against the risk of confabulation. Some psychology textbooks now say it does not matter if it is true or not (the subject always feels like it is true), because any fact or fantasy that generates emotion is helpful. This is a myth perpetrated by the therapy community that a) protects them from sloppy "regressing" that can pull up anything (such as "past lives") and b) protects the sizable industry of fabricated regressions. It is not helpful to believe falsehoods about your past. A person needs to live as close to the truth as he can. Careful trance management with insistence on only factual, true retrievals is best. When suggested confabulation happens, the subject has doubly suffered hypnotic abuse: first from the original perpetrator, and second from the therapist with whom the subject generated a second hypnotic burden of monstrous beliefs about his personal history.

The Manchurian Candidate: A Novel

Richard Condon's 1959 novel, *The Manchurian Candidate*, begins with a scene in which the Red Chinese capture a patrol of U.S. soldiers. They take the men to Manchuria for hypnoprogramming.

Yen Lo, Military Hypnotist

Reflecting the real-world's evolution in unethical hypnosis, Yen Lo, the Chinese hypnotist, works for the government/military. This high-tech Oriental mesmerizer sets out to transform the fine catch of American GIs into persons who will obey as mindlessly and automatically as robots.

Yen Lo combines traditional nineteenth century hypno-training and trance management skills with twentieth century narcohypnosis technology [something the CIA also was working on, as had the Nazis before them]. Yen Lo **conditions** his subjects [a term introduced by the research hypnotist Andrew Salter, who was Condon's friend]. The fictional hypno-doctor sneers at the common

> *...belief that no hypnotized subject may be forced to do that which is repellent to his moral nature, whatever that is, or to his own best interests. That is nonsense, of course...* **(Condon, p. 48)**

In contrast to DuMaurier's villainous hypnotist, Svengali, Condon presents Yen Lo as a lovable human being. He is an intelligent, kindly old man when interacting with friends and family:

> *...Yen Lo sat with the thirty boys and girls of his staff in the evening circle on the lovely lawn behind the pavilion. He would tell them the beautiful old stories later when the darkness had come. While they had light he made his dry jokes about the Russians and amused them or startled them or flabbergasted them with the extent of his skill at origami, the ancient Japanese art of paperfolding...He would hold up a sheet of paper...and lo!—wonderment dropped from his fingers, the paper had come to life, and magic was everywhere in the gentling evening air.* **(Condon, p. 52)**

Yen Lo's kindness, however, is reserved for his family and associates. It is not extended to the enemy. He is a classic Nazi doctor; the only ethics that he applies to his medical practice is political expediency. He hypnotizes the Americans because they might be useful for his government's purposes. Yen Lo is strictly a "Company man," a loyal Communist Chinese, who also happens to be an expert on trance management in a country at war. He takes pride in using, and displaying, his expert workmanship. [With a mere switch of employers, he would fit perfectly among the technocracy of U.S. military and secret agency experimenters and programmers.]

Narcohypnotic Immersions and Conditioning

Yen Lo selects one patrol member, Raymond Shaw, to be programmed as the **Manchurian candidate**. Shaw is set up to be a human "...time bomb with a fuse eight years long." **(Condon, p. 256)** The "bomb," upon command, would kill its designated target—a U.S. presidential candidate.

The novel gives us an overview of the technology which Yen Lo used to program Shaw. The "candidate" is first shoved into deep trance by narcohypnotic drugging. The barbiturate knocks out his conscious mind and exposes his unconscious mind to verbal reprogramming by the enemy. Condon calls a narcohypnotic session—the period of time between the "descent into the deep unconscious" and when "the subject was pulled out"—an **immersion**. Yen Lo explains:

> *The total immersion time into the unconscious mind of the subject during the first contact had been eleven hours...The critical application of deep suggestion was observed during the first eleven hours of immersion when the primary link to all future control was set in.* **(Condon, p. 44)**

["Deep suggestion" means suggestion given at a profound trance level, or under narcohypnosis. The "primary link" would be the posthypnotic reinduction cue plus amnesia suggestions. The reinduction cue would be set up to trigger an instant, unknowing shift in consciousness.] Condon said that Yen Lo has "his own radical technology for descent into the unconscious mind with the speed of a mine-shaft elevator." **(Condon, p. 38)**

When Yen Lo brings his subject out of narcohypnotic immersion the first time, "four tests were made to determine the firmness" of the deep implants. [The author does not specify what those **tests** were, but, logically, they would have been tests of the reinduction cue, of the suggested posthypnotic amnesia, and of suggestions for posthypnotic positive and negative visual hallucinations. Amnesia and posthypnotic visual hallucinations, especially **negative hallucinations**, are among the most difficult hypnotic phenomena to elicit. Therefore, they are generally considered proof of somnambulist depth.]

Yen Lo hypnoprogrammed the U.S. soldiers, then demonstrated his control of their minds in a stage program before a gallery of Communist officials. Yen Lo hands the hypnotized subject, Raymond Shaw, a gun and tells him to shoot the two men he likes the most. Shaw obeys.

Marco Figures It Out—The Chinese then slip the GIs back to the U.S. side. All of them now have hypnotically implanted, identical, false memories of having heroically survived an enemy ambush. The phony memory was intended to explain their missing time. They have suggested amnesia for everything that happened in Manchuria—except the false memory of an ambush.

Although Shaw does not consciously remember shooting his friends in the demonstration, back home in the U.S., he relives that scene in **nightmares**, over and over. The Manchurian candidate's former commander, Colonel Marco, who also was hypnotized and present at the demonstration, and who also is amnesic, also is having repeated nightmares. In Marco's dreams, Raymond Shaw kills two members of his own patrol for a demonstration before the Chinese brass. After Marco finds out that another member of the patrol (not Shaw) is also having repeated nightmares about Shaw shooting two friends for a demonstration, the Colonel contacts Shaw. Marco asks Shaw about his dreams. He learns that Shaw is dreaming that scene also.[1]

The novelist supplied a further clue for Marco in the form of a logical flaw in the implanted group memory of that imaginary ambush. Marco says to Shaw, "But you don't remember doing all those things." Shaw's memory has the same problem:

> "*That's what I'm trying to tell you...Every time I'm directed to think about the action I always know what will happen exactly, but I never get to the place where it actually happens.*" **(Condon, p. 206)**[2]

In one scene in the novel, Shaw's dual-cue induction setup (a suggestion to play cards, followed by the sight of a "red queen" sends him into deeply suggestible trance) is accidentally accomplished. He is in deep trance in a New York bar. Shaw is programmed to robotically obey the next words he hears after the induction, no matter who says them. The next words he hears are "Why don't you take a cab quick to Central Park and jump inna lake..."

Zombie Shaw hails a cab, tells the driver to take him quickly to Central Park, and there he jumps into the (shallow) lake. The posthypnotic command sequence being completed, the subject then returns to normal consciousness—in wet clothes. He is amnesic for the time he was in trance, but he admits to the pursuing Marco that his clothes certainly have become wet.

By now, Marco has figured out what really happened to his patrol in Manchuria, and why. The Colonel knows too that, after Shaw is hypnotized, he can be programmed by anybody. (That is not usually the case.) I won't tell you the ending; you might want to read it for yourself.

Afterthoughts

No novel since *Trilby* advanced public understanding of hypnoprogramming as much as Condon's novel, *The Manchurian Candidate*. Technically, it is sounder than DuMaurier's novel. The technology it presents is also more modern. Condon's book, however, is still clearly fiction. The programming of the patrol members, and the ending, are too quick and easy, too perfect.

To readers in 1959, the author's scenario seemed comfortably fictional. Then came the assassinations of John F. Kennedy and Robert F. Kennedy, followed by shocking evidences of conspiracy and the involvement of hypnoprogrammed persons. Condon later wrote a novel, *Winter Kills,* about the JFK assassination. After that, as far as I know, he never published again.

---

[1] Nightmares that symbolically express the repressed anguish of hypno-abuse traumas may occur in real-life victims of unethical hypnosis.

[2] The subject considers logical inconsistencies in his or her life and figures out the truth.

Help and Healing

A Hypnotic Predator is in the Picture

☑

Who Can Help?

☑

The Healing, Freeing Image

☑

Other Methods to Overcome Amnesia

☑

Therapy Techniques and Principles

“Get them to pity the person that they hate. Put them in the other person’s place.”
Charles Tebbetts

Therapy Issues in Criminal Hypnosis

There are four extraordinary factors to be considered when planning therapy for a survivor of abusive hypnosis: 1) difficult diagnosis, 2) possible active predator, 3) need to overcome suggested amnesia, and 4) challenging therapy needs.

Difficult diagnosis: the first of those extraordinary factors is the enormous difficulty, and hesitation, associated with defining a person as a victim of abusive hypnosis. **Criminal hypnosis** tends to be difficult to diagnose, and easily forgiven, even overlooked, because mental scars are hard to discern. One long, livid, skin scar, visible on the outside of Palle’s head, for every criminal mind penetration inflicted upon him by Nielsen instantly would have clarified the situation for observers. The sight would have stimulated quick corrective action. But no methods of identifying an unknowing hypnoprogrammed person are so simple as observing scars on the head. (There are ways to identify a victim of unethical hypnosis, however, covered in the preceding section).

A HYPNOTIC PREDATOR IS IN THE PICTURE

Before therapy can be effective, a victim of abusive hypnosis must become safe from induction cues by the previous hypnotist. In this type of case history, a real—not imaginary—hypnotic predator has been involved in the subject's life, and may still be. Therefore, the therapist's first priority must be to identify, if possible, who the operator is, and to what extent the subject is still at risk of an induction cue. (There may be more than one operator, as in the cases of Mrs. E, and the Operation Often subject.)

If an active hypnotic predator is not blocked from access to the subject, therapy will be difficult, if not futile. Therapy attempts may even backfire if the predator reacts to the threat of exposure by giving suggestions to destroy the subject's credibility and block further therapy. The abusive hypnotist might, for example, manipulate his subject in order to create an impression of paranoid symptoms to align with the subject's story about having been hypnotized, and achieve a misdiagnosis.[1]

In a contest with a Johnnie-come-lately therapist, the first hypnotist has the advantage, because of his well-established conditioning of the subject—until the subject is out of his contact range. The friend of a victim of predatory hypnosis, therefore, strives to protect the subject from the predator's induction cues: visual (in person, mail, video), auditory (in person, telephone, audio/videotape), or tactile.

Screened Contacts—The subject's future safety may depend on screening mail (Dr. Reiter believed that allowing Palle to receive letters from Nielsen caused his relapse into hypnocontrol), screening phone calls (John Nebel caught the "per Cynthia" message that might have sent Arlene back to Taipei), and avoiding any personal encounter between hypnotist and subject (ignorant court personnel seated Palle and Nielsen side by side in court on more than one occasion).

Survivors of unethical hypnosis need to understand the facts of telephone induction because it is so easy for a perpetrator to maintain control over a subject in this electronic era merely by dialing his/her phone number. The erosion of privacy also aids perpetrators by making it difficult to keep a phone number private. An escaped hypnoprogrammed subject might most conveniently be traced over phone lines. And just one moment of phone contact could allow an operator to attempt to program out old loopholes and reestablish hypnocontrol.

An answering machine does not provide security. A recorded message can contain the auditory induction cue followed by instructions to call the hypnotist, followed by the usual amnesia.

The only real safety that I know of, unless all conditioned induction cues can be blocked, is to not be in a known location, not have a known phone number, and not trigger any "check-in" cues. Living with an unknown address and phone number is very difficult when the government, post office, banking system, health care providers, etc., all tend to demand an accurate address—and phone number. Refusal to provide a phone number and address may instantly arouse suspicion and make life even more difficult.

"Are you a bank robber on the run?"

"No, I am an escaped hypnorobot on the run."

That type of response does not reassure people.

Successful hiding may require living in a location (or a series of locations) that even a private detective, working for the predator, could not find. Screening of physical or phone access must continue until all previous induction cues are identified and disempowered. Blocking heavily-conditioned induction cues, however, may be difficult.

---

[1] An ex-policeman told me that a professional criminal told him that a basic technique was, "If you're going to do it, make the abuse so bizarre, nobody would ever believe him."

The emerging chip-locating technology is of appropriate concern to any hypnoprogrammed person. Pets and trucks already can be equipped with chips that can be located by satellite technology. Some people also now have these chips buried in their flesh (certain high-ranking French military, and all Thai citizens, for example). Is the new federal complex being built south of St. Louis to house the Defense Mapping Agency (projected 50,000 employees) a center for chip-tracking technology? The St. Louis citizens don't know. For sure, the existence of hypnoprogramming technology is yet one more reason to object to the implanting of a chip.

To Flee, Or Not To Flee

In the case of a conditioned hypnotic subject, the bottom line is a considered decision; what cost is worth the effort to have mind-freeedom? It is possible that the hypnotic predations are not so objectionable, or unwelcome, as to be worth the necessary effort to completely evade them. A father, covertly using hypnosis to keep a son from bad companions and bad habits, or to help a daughter be content and productive, may not fit the definition of a "predatory hypnotist." A victimized wife, despite her suffering, may choose to stay in the situation for the sake of her children, her marriage, and her love for the abuser.

It is also true that the same hypnotist may treat different subjects in very unlike ways. He may have a genuinely benevolent attitude toward one subject, while being a serious threat to the safety of another. His treatment of a subject may depend on whether his first priority is to benefit and protect the subject (such as a child), or to benefit and protect himself (as in the case of an "outsider").

A hypnotist who puts his subject at risk for life, or sanity, is a good argument for evasive action, no matter what the cost, unless responsibility for the care of young children, or some similar duty, is judged as being of greater consequence.

WHO CAN HELP?

A victim of unethical hypnosis is not mentally ill, but he or she needs help if there is extensive, deep-level, and abusive hypnotic conditioning. The subject's conscious mind needs to be reintegrated with the repressed memories and feel-ings. He also needs the reintegration of blocked mental defenses. In the process of recovering amnestic data to consciousness and of experiencing associated emotions, the survivor becomes able to func-

The Easiest Cure

It is a sad fact that the offending hypnotist could fix the abused subject's problem most easily, most completely, and most inexpensively. Candy knew that. She spoke of a wild urge to go to California and somehow get Jensen to undo what he had done, to reverse his commands.

If only the offending operator could somehow be persuaded, forced, or tricked into giving the suggestion, "Now you can remember everything that ever happened under my hypnosis." The amnesia would immediately, completely, dissipate, the way that sun, in only a second of time, can burn away dense fog, leaving a clear view. The separated personalities would be reunified. Memories smothered in the mists of amnesia would instantly become accessible and clear. The subject would be reunited again: one person under God, indivisible—one data base, one memory.

The perpetrator himself has the greatest power to fix what he broke, to set into motion the easiest, most effective process of cure. [I have had the experience of having chunks of programming suddenly disintegrate because of the operator's own (careless, forgotten) suggestion. The first time, I did not realize what had happened until a week later. The second time, I knew the instant that the **deprogramming** process had begun. My brain felt suddenly warm and busy—making new, better connections?—at the moment my freeing was activated. And I was so happy. I look forward to more such joyful events.] In this ideal scenario, the perpetrator would give one final command: that the subject can never again be hypnotized by him (or any operator associated with him). The criminal hypnotist has given a sealing command against himself!

Such total cooperation from a criminal hypnotist in the healing of his victim, however, has never happened. The exploiter typically tries, to the bitter end, to perform covert damage control and keep his secrets hidden as long as the subject is within his reach. If he secretly can access his longtime subject, he gives the old accustomed induction cue, then asks questions to bring himself up to date on the status of the investigation. Then he gives new suggestions to that conditioned mind, designed to protect himself or to further exploit the subject.

tion again as an integrated and self-protected person.

Need to Tell

The situation of a subject, who is in the grip of a criminal hypnotist, may be truly desperate. Hypnotic commands surround him with blocks designed to prevent him from escaping or getting help. But the victim, weary of suffering, yearning to be free, unconsciously looks for loopholes in that programming. The first step to freedom and healing is to tell somebody. Any telling helps. Anybody, who will listen, helps. Two factors are vital to the process of finding safety and healing: 1) the wounded person's courage to tell, and 2) the listener's gift of unconditional love.

To tell is to overcome a series of challenges. Anytime the victim talks about personal problems, he opens himself to the creation of a rapport. For this reason, unknowing hypnoprogrammed persons tend to be blocked against making confidences, in general. Any time he talks intimately with another person, again and again, he is creating a rapport that competes with the hypnotist's. To heal, he overcomes the inner, blocking resistance and talks. First, he tells one person. Then, another. Telling more and more people helps him more fully integrate what he is telling. However, he needs a believing listener.

> *Some doctors, I've heard from patients, are sometimes disbelieving or nonresponsive to the histories they've recorded from these patients. Like they might find it too difficult to deal with....I think if they could talk to anybody it could be helpful. They don't need to talk to a doctor, necessarily—they need to be treated decently, they need a good listener.* **(Berger, quoted in Rauchman, p. 34)**

A survivor is likely to turn to other family members early in the telling process. A typical victim is blocked from revealing anything in a formal therapeutic situation with a credentialed person. Candy first revealed the problem to her husband. Bowart's typical interviewee first told his mother.

If the perpetrator is also a family member, however, telling other family members may not be helpful. "There are no secrets in families, only denial," the saying goes. The family of an abused person struggles with cognitive dissonance, the clash between the pretend version of their life and the reality of it. It feels easier to maintain the false front, to deny the telling, to implicitly collaborate with the abuser. For this reason, the whistle-blower, instead of the perpetrator, tends to be viewed as the problem by those inside the family, or group. The survivor needs to shift his efforts to tell away from the perpetrator's in-group.

It is hard to tell. The subject will feel as if he is divulging personal and intimate secrets—and perhaps even risking cruel, bizarre punishments for telling. If a listener's attitude is derogatory, threatening, or indifferent, the effort to tell is made harder. It takes tremendous courage for a person, so deeply wounded and fiercely threatened at the unconscious level, to disobey and risk telling.

He must try again. Every time he fights his way past the programmed resistance, it gets easier. Above all, he must break the silence. He must tell it again, and again, and again. He must tell it. Write it. Draw it. Sculpt it. Tell one person. Tell a group. He must remember what he can, figure out what he can, and tell the gist of that to somebody he believes may listen, sympathize, and believe.

If he has tried, in the past, to tell and been disbelieved or rebuffed, that makes it harder for him to try again. The message of rejection is that nobody will believe what he has to say, that he risks being called a liar, or even diagnosed as insane. (I hope dissemination of this book makes it easier for victims to find help.) So he must use good judgement about who he tells—but keep trying to tell somebody.

The persons who believe him will be thereafter his closest, most trusted, friends. Once he begins telling, he is on the road to freedom. Things are never going to be the same. He is building a new life in which the people who are close to him know the real him—the person who is a survivor of abusive hypnosis. Changing a long-held pattern of secrecy changes the victim in a profound (and good) way. The process of change may be an emotional and confusing time. That is the usual fallout from change. But he will come out of the process renewed, reintegrated, wiser, and stronger.

For safety's sake: He MUST avoid confiding in highly visible persons, such as John Marks or Mark Phillips. He must avoid anybody who is specifically looking for hypno-programmed people. Any such looker could be a lure for further unethical use of the victim. But, he MUST tell somebody, because he needs to tell, and other people need to hear this.

Time Issues in Therapy

The therapeutic time and effort needed to help the victim of a severely abusive, longterm hypnotic relationship probably cannot be supplied in any conventional therapeutic situation, certainly not in one hour a week of talk therapy. It took nineteen months, every day, hours in each session, for Dr. Mayer to complete his hypnotic investigation of the facts of Mrs. E's case. Dr. Reiter worked with Palle for hours, every day, for about eighteen months. It was also "a daily and grueling adventure for John and Candy to discover the truth about her past life...exhausting, as well as exhilarating..." **(Bain, p. 82)**

Bowart's typical interviewee had spent years in expensive, conventional, fifty-minute therapy, several times a week. Even so, his typical survivor only had begun to get answers, and then had to give up the formal therapy for lack of funds. (He continued the struggle to overcome amnesia on his own.) Another survivor spent several months of several-hours of therapy per day in an informal, amateur relationship, and a few more months on a once-a-week basis with a professional.

Trance Time Moves Slowly—One of the reasons why so many hours of hypnotic regression are needed (if that is the intended route of memory-recovery) is the nature of hypnosis itself. In deep trance, dialogue phrases of speech tend to be separated by very long pauses. A hypnotized person thinks slowly: the deeper the trance, the slower he thinks. Sometimes, the subject's words are spoken too softly or are too mumbled to understand.

The tendency to physical paralysis in deep trance can make it difficult for the hypnotist to understand what the subject has said (it helps to give a suggestion for clear speaking). Sometimes, the hypnotist is uncertain what is going on in the subject's mind, and he needs time to decide what question or response to make. Because of the passivity of deep trance, the subject usually needs constant conversational participation from the hypnotist. Accordingly, this type of uncovering takes a long time.

Putting Together the Puzzle—It takes much time and effort to establish the basics of what has happened in a case of hypnoprogramming. The subject's own ignorance, confusion, doubts, and fears make communication awkward and imperfect. A person with normal memory starts by sketching the big picture in words. Then he adds details. Hypnoprogrammed persons with suggested amnesia cannot do that. Their data arrives in disconnected bits and pieces. Those pieces may not be in chronological sequence. They may be trivial, peripheral to the major history of the abuse. The subject starts by telling those bits and pieces. For example, Mrs. E.'s recovered memories did not appear in a neat, chronological, and immediately comprehensible form. The amnestic data was, at first, a mass of

> *...confusing, disordered and fragmentary details...brought to light by the investigation....a very extensive interrogation of Mrs. E. was necessary in order to fill up at least the most essential gaps in her memory.* **(Hammerschlag, pp. 92, 99)**

It took John Nebel months to begin to understand what had been done to Candy. Candy, early on, could not tell what had happened to her, or why Arlene kept popping out. What Arlene managed to divulge, in the beginning, was not sufficient to alert John to the full picture. The shreds of memory produced by Arlene in trance, and by Candy in the conscious state were merely "fragments of the past, unconnected, isolated and without any apparent link to a larger, more cohesive picture..." **(Bain, pp. 72-3)**

Likewise, Bowart interviewed the hypnoprogrammed ex-military men "several times over a period of two years. Each interview produced additional information as David's memory returned in fragmented, isolated bursts." (***Operation Mind Control*, p. 28)**

Money

If the damage is light and the hypnotic abuse is minor, therapy sufficient to identify and block induction cues may be affordable. The therapist of choice may be a maverick, because many professionals are full of prejudice and ignorance in their view of this particular type of problem. A "company type" counselor who could get his wages out of insurance probably is not going to give a diagnosis of criminal hypnosis.

If the subject is severely amnesic, any traditional therapy done "properly" will be expensive—because counteracting that amount of damage takes a long time. Dr. Spiegel, in his introduction to Bain's book about Candy Jones spoke of

> *...the time and money factors which would have virtually ruled out the use of a professional throughout the many months of hypnotic sessions with Candy...John's intense interest and patience in pursuing this project were necessary if such an abundance of material was to be gained. He was with Candy day and night, an impossible task for any outsider.* **(Bain, pp. 40-41)**

It takes trust and time to deal with hundreds of hours of past criminal hypnosis. Professional help is likely to be prohibitively expensive. The therapy process for a victim of longterm, abusive hypnocontrol, such as Zebediah, Mrs. E., Palle, or Candy Jones, may be too demanding to be handled, financially or logistically, in any conventional hypnotherapeutic setup. Thus, help for the most severely wounded subject may have to come from a volunteer, an amateur.

Therapy by an Amateur

Candy struggled toward mind freedom with her husband, rather than with a paid professional. I was first helped by a wise and wonderful friend who had only a little experience as an amateur hypnotist, but who had a great desire to help and intuitive healing ability.

A survivor of abusive hypnosis needs **hypnotherapy**, either formal or informal, by that name or by another, by an amateur or by a professional. No two people have the same situation. The best I can do is to provide information about both amateur and professional options. The survivor needs help, but he needs to be picky about who gives it and what form it comes in. Here follows an honest discussion of the possible options. Then, he must keep trying until he finds a friend, or professional, with the necessary qualities and willingness to help.

Therapy by a nonprofessional has both advantages and risks. A survivor could tell more, and more credibly and comfortably, if he or she could normally, directly remember and tell what happened under hypnosis. But the telling, in a situation of systematic suggested amnesia, is most likely to be done by the mind **split** who contains the memories of time spent under hypnosis. That split is an entirely different self from the **root self.** It is also invariably an angry, unsocialized one, being the subject's longtime repository of lonely suffering, shame, and mental defeat.

It can be hard for an amateur to deal with a subject's regressions, abreactions, personality parts, mysterious messages from the unconscious, and repressed rage. John Nebel's inability to love—or even tolerate—Candy's Arlene component tragically undermined his effort to help his wife. But credentialed therapists can be inadequate too. They may totally misinterpret the situation and completely reject the interpretation of unethical hypnosis.

Therapy by a Professional

The purpose of **treatment** is to get the client into better shape than he was before. A **hypnotherapist** understands techniques that may be useful in dealing with unethical hypnosis: suggested dreams, regression, parts therapy, image transformations, and so on. A hypnotherapist is accustomed to conversing directly with a client's unconscious mind.

The problem is to find a person who 1) will admit that abusive hypnosis can happen (ask up front), 2) is experienced, and 3) has good morals (a good professional reputation). The victim needs to shop carefully. Avoid a therapist who does "past lives," or who has lots of "incest," "alien encounter," or "ritual abuse" clients. He may lean toward asking questions that get those skewed results. If the client is not happy with his therapist, he should find one he likes better. He was not free in his relationship with the predatory hypnotist. He needs now to have a free relationship with the therapist. Nevertheless, it works well if he picks a good helper, and then endures the bad days as well as good ones in the process.

Gender of Helper—Bowart's military interviewees generally had better results with a female therapist than with a male. Is noncoercive female gentleness, nurturing, and emotional support best for a person who has suffered hypnotic bullying in the past? Perhaps. But I also know of female subjects who received good help from a male counselors—some of whom used a paternal technique, some a maternal style.

Training and Credentialing—Hypnotherapy training and credentialing varies over a wide spectrum, from Ph.D. clinical psychologists and M.D. psychiatrists with expertise in hypnosis, to "lay therapists" who may have completed training ranging from three months of nightschool down to a three-day weekend course. Many lay hypnotherapists are knowledgeable, experienced, of high moral character, and have real intuition for healing minds. Others are not, and do not.

(Government oversight of this field hovers between nonexistent, slight, and inappropriate. I am not sure that legislation is the answer when government itself has been a major culprit. It would certainly help, however, for a start, if abusive hypnosis was illegal!)

Some degreed hypnotherapy specialists—M.A., M.D., or Ph.D.—do not advertise hypnotherapy because some professional organizations have, in the past, tried to define hypnotherapy as "quackery by ignorant people." In some cases, that statement is true. On the other hand, some of the best operators out there are **lay hypnotherapists**.

A psychologist can also be a hypnotherapist, but, in some states, a licensed hypnotherapist may have no other training or credentials except in hypnotherapy. A degree does not guarantee that person is the best candidate for therapist. Lack of a degree does not mean that a certain hypnotherapist cannot help the survivor. Many doctors, dentists, psychologists, psychiatrists, and social workers have training in hypnosis, though they normally do not describe themselves as "hypnotherapists." However, they often have less experience with hypnotherapy than a hypnotherapist, who does nothing but hypnotherapy, and may have more time available.

Beware of clearly unqualified people. John B. Beard, Secretary of Britain's National Council of Psychotherapists and Hypnotherapy Register wrote me about the situation in England:

> *It is high time that someone wrote about Hypnosis, its use and misuse...As there is no law concerning the use or demonstration of hypnosis, anyone can do it. You, for instance, could fly over here. Find rooms in which to practice. Advertise. And lo! be a hypnotherapist. The result is that since 1981 (a depression over here) so called hypnotherapists have flooded into the market. If you can't do anything else be a hypnotherapist. There are said to be 67 organisations representing the so called therapists: and perhaps 30 schools "cashing in" on teaching them.*
>
> **(*Personal letter*, June 22, 1988)**

The Freudian hypnotists have been unique in the hypnosis community in that they have pondered not only the unconscious motivations of a hypnotic subject, but also those of the hypnotist! Pardell said "...the hypnotist is a person who is willing, and perhaps desires, to accept the position of the controlling and omnipotent parent-figure" **(p. 486)**. Pardell also quoted Gill and Brenman's comment on a relevant personality characteristic of hypnotists:

> *...the paradoxical need for simultaneous intimacy and distance...in those who choose to specialize in hypnosis, this paradoxical necessity to establish closeness, and yet retain firm control over the maintenance of necessary psychological distance, is of particular importance.* **(Ibid)**

When Christians Seek Deliverance from Abusive Hypnosis

The Bible specifically warns against hypnosis, again and again. My book makes clear the reasons we are urged to avoid hypnosis. How does a Christian who reads, in the Bible, verse after verse warning us to stay away from hypnotists, recover from a personal history of victimization by criminal hypnosis?

Botulism toxin is one of the most poisonous substances on the planet, yet for certain illnesses, the best treatment is an injection of botulism toxin. A client who is suffering from repressed memories caused by a previous hypnotist needs rehypnotization to undo the damage done by the previous hypnotist. The Christian should not have incurred that damage. But, once it exists, whether by moral carelessness or deceitful predation, the victim needs to be treated for that problem in a state of lowered consciousness.

One choice is a Christian counselor who understands how to work with the client's spontaneous visualizations. Another option is a counselor who works by means of intense (deliverance) prayer states. The best therapy for a victim of criminal hypnosis probably would involve both accessing repressed data, desensitizing, and integrating work involving both the client's imagery and intense prayer.

L. R. Wolberg wrote:

> *Hypnosis may also bring out some startling changes in the analyst's feelings and behavior. The seeming helplessness of the patient, and his apparent susceptibility to suggestions, may liberate omnipotent, sadistic and sexual strivings...*
> **(Wolberg, *Hypnoanalysis*, p. 2)**

There are no simple answers. I would rate experience and reputation higher than credentials. If it were a regular psychological problem, I would advise a person to look for somebody with at least a decade of experience, credibility in the professional community, and a common religious orientation. But, in this situation, somebody young and inexperienced may be more open to the subject's real needs than a person who is heavily indoctrinated with professional dogma. In choosing a helper in the healing process, the survivor should respect his gut reaction. Whoever the subject chooses, he should then trust him. The therapist's ability to help is greatly assisted by the client's trust.

Client-directed Therapy—One of the things that helps to heal a survivor of abusive over-control is to give him control. The survivor may be phobic of any situation involving control, including a therapeutic situation. The survivor may also understand far better than the therapist what happened and what is needed to heal it. Making the survivor a full partner in the process may be hard for therapists who have been trained to manipulate the subject, and to conceal information from him.

Hypnotherapy may be done in the context of almost any healing system: Jungian, behaviorist, psychoanalytic, or generic. If I had to choose just one category, I might look for a Jungian because of openness to client-directed therapy and expertise in working with the right-brain language of imagery. A **Jungian** therapist will usually allow subject participation, making the client's unconscious a partner in the healing process. I would like to see Christian counselors develop more expertise in the area of direct right-brain communication using the language of symbols. (The lion devours the serpent in order to transform it.)

Reporting Assaults—The law requires credentialed therapists to report assaults. Because this type of case is a classic can of worms, the therapist may feel very uncomfortable at the thought of becoming legally compelled to prosecute the criminal hypnotist. A professional counselor may feel compelled either to report the case as an assault, or to define the subject as mentally ill. If there is to be a court case, tradition demands that the subject be prepared by a new hypnotist to demonstrate somnambulist helplessness and automatism in court. However, the current forensic atmosphere predicts an unwinnable case in court (though, maybe, an out-of-court cash settlement).

Narcohypnosis—Only a psychiatrist can legally do narcohypnosis. It is hard to find one who will, and it is expensive. It is also hard to find one who will do it in an office visit rather during a psychiatric hospitalization. A psychiatrist who is trying to overturn a sealing created under a series of previous drug-inductions, may find it advisable to use suggestion under a new series of drug-inductions to accomplish re-programming. Keep in mind that barbiturate is highly addictive. Drug immersions should be limited to the minimum, and the psychiatrist should immediately begin training, under the drug, for relief of cravings and for a cued nonbarbituate induction.

METHOD TO OVERCOME AMNESIA: THE HEALING, FREEING IMAGE

The biggest roadblock to uncovering the crime of criminal hypnosis is the subject's **amnesia**. To identify the hypnotic predator(s), to learn how to avoid potential induction situations, to remember real events which have never before been conscious, and to repeal burdensome old suggestions, the subject must overcome amnesia. Overcoming amnesia may be easy, or hard. That depends on what suggestions are in place, how deeply implanted, how well defended, and how gifted the second hypnotist is.

The Myers psychology text says that Kihlstrom (1985) proved that suggested amnesia can be overcome at a **prearranged signal**, or upon **subtle questioning**. That makes memory recovery sound easy. Overcoming criminal hypnosis, in reality, is not easy. The criminal operator does not use a prearranged signal to lift the amnesia. He wants it to stay in place. Subtle questioning is unlikely to happen. The subject does not know there is a problem. If the subject's friends and relatives know there is a problem, they do not know what to do, or do not want to get involved. And subtle questioning would work best against only lightly grooved defenses. An amnesia associated with criminal hypnosis is likely to be heavily reinforced.

Remembering Enables Forgetting

To escape, defend himself, and heal, the subject needs to recover at least some of the repressed memories. They are real events which have never before been conscious. They happened and were then inhibited from recall by suggested amnesia. Normally, data passes first through the conscious mind, is evaluated, and then remembered. But in unethical hypnosis, as in multiple personality, the memory NEVER WAS CONSCIOUS. It is not subject to normal memory retrieval.

The repression of amnesia only effects direct retrieval of the memory. Repressed memories cause **anxiety** and **neuroses**. Unethical hypnosis can leave, in your unconscious mind, a dump of memories: pain, shame, rage for the careless, cruel damage, anger at the betrayal of trust. What is not conscious cannot be changed. Once a chunk of unconscious programming becomes conscious, however, you can change it.

Remembering also enables forgetting. When memories are available for conscious recollecting, they also become subject to normal processes of **forgetting**. A repressed memory cannot dissipate any of its pain or shame. Therefore, a repressed memory is stored as an unusually well - preserved memory, its content and emotional load both unmarked by replays, unweakened by the passage of time. That fact makes a repressed memory even harder to remember, because the conscious sector of your mind naturally tends to defend itself against any input that would change its comfortable status quo. It does not like **cognitive dissonance**.

As a person remembers repressed data, he experiences the linked emotions for the first time. At first, those emotions are very intense. But as that memory is recalled again and again, the pain wears off. Finally, the memory dissipates into a position of equality with other long-past events. That is the normal process of forgetting**.**

There are many methods to overcome suggested amnesia. The most accessible and powerful single tool to accomplish that purpose is imagery. The imaging ability is usually based in the right brain, and is best described by starting with the basic brain anatomy involved.

One Brain: Three Different Minds

Though, consciously, you perceive yourself as one united mind, that mind is actually the sum and composite of activity from anatomically separate brain centers, and separate subprocessors within those centers. Your conscious and unconscious minds are separate, though linked. Your unconscious has three major divisions: the left brain, right brain, and limbic system. These each have independent capacities, but normally they cooperate.

Limbic System—The **limbic system** is a complex combination of neural structures tucked between the brainstem/cerebellum and cortex, together with the pituitary and hypothalamus glands. The limbic maintains your autonomic system: body temperature, heart rate, blood pressure, and blood sugar level. The primitive emotions of sex and aggression are also based there. Long-term memory is consolidated there by an organ called the **hippocampus**. That is not where the memories are stored but, without either of the two parts that together are called the hippocampus, you cannot make new long-term memories. Your limbic system also is the bodily source of that sudden inner sensation of understanding and conviction that is attached to revelations: "Aha! Now I see!"

Cerebrum—The **cerebrum** contains two **hemispheres,** your **left brain** and **right brain**. It is the biggest part of the brain. The two hemispheres, left and right, are connected by about 300 million neurons in a broad band called the **corpus callosum**. The two hemispheres, combined, provide you with a **dual coding system**, one method using mind-pictures (graphics), the other using words. Thus, you have two built-in basic **cognitive modes**.

Left Brain

In right-handed people, the verbal system is usually based in the left hemisphere. In left-handed people, it may be on either side. We go with the average and call it the "left brain." The left brain specializes in information coded in the form of **language**. Left brain coding is **sequential**, a serial system. It is well-suited to a data flow which changes in time sequence: speech. Speech requires it to decode very rapid changes in sound patterns.

Your left brain talks. It does the job of translating the right brain's symbol language into words, and thus provides speech for the nonverbal hemisphere. Using its sequential code ability, the left brain also performs your analytical, logical thinking. It is the hemisphere which does logic and mathematics. Those are all linear thought processes, one symbol at a time. Your left brain is great at analyzing, at dissecting wholes into parts. It is good at additions, deletions, and rearrangements of data order. It is always trying to get a straight-line view, to reduce it all down to things that do not contradict.

Right Brain

The right hemisphere understands some speech, but only up to about a two or three-year-old level. It can produce impulsive, unthinking, **automatic speech** such as swear words, song words, emotional outbursts, and terms such as "yes," or "no," or "I don't know." (Researchers call those terms **overlearned**.)

Singing and poetry may seem like verbal skills, but they are actually generated by the right brain rather than the left. Poetry and song lyrics are fairly direct translations of right-brain symbol language, produced, of course, with the cooperation of the left brain speech skill. That is why those particular verbal forms have the right-brain characteristics of intensity and truthfulness. They can reveal some of the painful truth behind a survivor's mask. They can also generate refreshing honesty in relationships. Try talking to your best friend only in poetry composed in the moment, or only in extemporaneous singing, and see what happens! (The music playing behind the lyrics is entirely based in the right brain.)

Right-brain Symbolic Language—Right-brain (in some of the left-handed people, it is the left) coding of data is completely different from the left brain's system. Although it has limited use of language, the right brain mainly uses **symbolic** (visual) thinking. Symbolic thinking is suited to your sense of sight. It codes data in a viewable graphics language of symbols called **imagery**. Those symbolic representations are projected onto your mind-screen. You see them in your "mind's eye." The right brain thinks in images by manipulation of visual symbols. It remembers in images. It can communicate directly in images. This mental system is **simultaneous**, as well as **sequential**. The data is spread out over a space, all there at once, the simultaneous event. Then one image can transform into another image, a sequential event. Because of that projecting ability, your right brain is expert at illustrating precise relationships of one part to other parts, at conceptualizing parts of a unified whole.

Right-brain Parallel Memory—Stephen Michael Kosslyn, a Harvard professor of psychology, discovered that there is parallel data recording in the left and right brains. This fact is of extreme importance to survivors of unethical hypnosis. Limiting

> *..."knowledge" to that which a person can report* [verbally]*...can be a fundamental error. We are aware of more than we can discuss.* **(Ornstein and Thompson, *The Amazing Brain*, p. 156)**

Thus, each hemisphere encodes, organizes, reorganizes, stores, and retrieves information in its own distinct—and different—cognitive mode. Each side contains memories of the same events in your life, but the memories are coded in their different modes. Those two memory systems have some other important differences.

The More Reliable Image—Paivio discovered that right-brain memory is more reliable than left-brain memory. Bower confirmed that fact. Paivio showed pictures and words to people, then tested their recall of them. They remembered the pictures more easily than the words. The independent memory record in your right brain is less subject to "decay" caused by the ravages of time and trauma than is verbal memory **(Paivio, 1972; Bower, 1972)**.

The Inductive Image—Visualization tends to lower consciousness. By projective techniques, your unconscious can be accessed without a formal trance induction. A common method for inducing trance in children is to tell them to imagine watching a favorite TV program. A common technique for adult hypnotherapy, when dealing with unconscious resistance, is to suggest the subject watch an imaginary TV or movie screen. Then the therapist suggests that images or action will appear on that screen which explain a symptom. Or, the patient may be told to dream of what caused the problem. The suggested dream is a projective technique for accessing repressed information.

The more time a person spends visualizing, and the more he concentrates on the visualizing, the deeper he will go. The deeper the trance, the more power the imagery projections have to access repressed material and solve problems. Visualization can evade sealing commands. As the trance deepens, images tend to become more autonomous. **Autonomous imagery** is, technically, a hallucination, but as long as you know it is just imagery, and not real, it is under control.

The Freer Image—Data recorded in the right brain is far less subject to censoring and far more easily retrieved than data recorded in the left brain. Repression and denial are based in the verbal, left hemisphere. The imaging side of the brain is willing to tell. It cannot verbalize without the left brain's cooperation, but it can visualize. Hypnotic suggestions to "not know" may tie left-brain memory into "nots," but the subject's right brain remains willing and able to show what it knows!

> *When are images used in remembering?...we use imagery if we...cannot deduce the information from other stored descriptions...*[or] *if an appropriate description has been stored but is too difficult to remember.* **(Kosslyn, p. 175)**

In suggested amnesia, the left, verbal sector of the brain has become inhibited from retrieving certain information. It has acquired a rule against talking about that. It will lie, or "forget," to keep that truth concealed from its own conscious mind, in obedience to the hypnotist. The right brain, however, may project, in images, what the left brain dares not put into words. The survivor may then find it possible to deal with the problems that the images represent. Working with the images can result in growing strength and objectivity.

Thinking With Images

What the left brain is censoring, the right brain can show, but only by methods that do not require involvement of the verbal hemisphere. Those methods are called **projective techniques**. Projective tests draw on the parallel resource of right-brain memory, eliciting responses in the form of drawn or visualized images or stories. Any projection draws on the special memory, honesty, and talents of your right brain. Each image will be uniquely personalized, frankly exposing the truth about the contents and organization of your personal unconscious. The Rorschach ink blot test, the telling of fairy tales, the drawing or sculpting of answers to questions, and the TAT (Thematic Apperception Test) are projective techniques.

Image Generating—There are three necessary steps in thinking with images: image generating, image inspecting, and image manipulating or transformation. First, we "see" it: **image generating**.

Image Inspecting—Then, we examine what we are seeing: **image inspecting**. Since the right-brain images are all linked in networks of association, we can move from viewing one image to viewing another: "one image, or one part of an image, gives rise to another, as one step in a [computer] program leads to another." **(Kosslyn, *Ghosts in the Mind's Machine*, p. 93)** The linked images are an important tool by which people with amnesia can recover their memories.

Image Manipulating—If the image can be viewed, it can be healed. Healing is accomplished by merging, manipulating, and transforming the images. In the right brain, two contradictory ideas can be visualized at the same time. If the images change, either spontaneously or deliberately, that is **image manipulating,** or **image transformation**.

The symbols are likely to lead the subject's conscious mind straight to the trouble and to begin maneuvering it into the necessary steps to fix it. The unconscious, like most body parts, may have a self-healing, self-balancing function. Accordingly, it will automatically attempt to accomplish damage control, and to repair damage already done.

Every time a person works with images in a visualization, he will make progress, and he will become more knowledgeable about what his personal vocabulary of right-brain symbols stands for. When a right brain image merger or transformation occurs, it can resolve a deep conflict. The astonishing thing is, if a person changes the image he visualizes, his deep-level inner programming which that image represents changes too! If a person's inner programming has changed, since the last time he looked at the images on the mind screen, his visualized imagery will display that change!

By means of symbol transformation, his former state (the original symbol) is linked to his new state (the revised symbol). This is how a person can change without losing the connected thread of who he is. In the visualization process, he literally SAW the problem, and he can see the progress in dealing with it. For example, a symbol representing the predatory hypnotist may begin as an enormous, terrifying figure. As progress it made, it will gradually become smaller, and less frightening. Symbol transformation is associated with deep emotion and real change in a subject and the direction of his life. It is one way that any person can heal, change, get insight, and grow.

The Image as a Hypnotherapy Tool

One of the therapist's problems is to figure out what right-brain language information is being communicated in the symbolic images. Experience, intuitive sensitivity, and some Jungian exposure all would be helpful in that. A good hypnotherapist knows how to guide the subject's imagery in ways that remove blocks to memory. (Wolberg has many neat tricks for that.)

Dealing with Frightening Images—If a survivor has repressed traumatic memories, those memories are likely to first appear as abstract frightening images. Frightening images should neither be avoided nor confronted. Instead, the block should be approached gradually, gently, and in a context of the fantasy (imagery). It is the very process of working with the symbol representing the block which nudges it toward **depotentiation** (release of its energy, its "power"). Guided visualizations involving frightening images both deepen trance and accomplish **desensitization**.

Covert Desensitization—Covert desensitization is a useful healing tool for survivors of abusive hypnosis. Words did the harm; words can also do the healing. In the 60s and 70s, J. R. Cautela pointed out that an imag-

Emotion

Symbols generate emotion, which equals drive energy. Both symbols and emotion tend to lower consciousness. A situation causes emotion if you perceive it symbolically. Symbols for emotion in your mind are autonomous, creative—and not necessarily rational. Symbols that cause emotion have the potential to change you deeply. Cognitive psychologists call symbolic, emotional cognition, **hot,** to distinguish it from the blander nonsymbolic, nonemotional type of cold thought.

The basic emotional spectrum is strung between the two opposites of love and fear. This is the basic polarity of love versus anxiety, "go to" versus "flee from." Hope makes you "go to." Fear makes you "flee from." Thus emotions draw us toward the essence of hope, or activate us to avoid danger. A state of mental conflict occurs when a need to go to crashes into a need to flee from.

Emotion is goal-directed. It has a purpose, and that purpose is to change things. When you feel an emotion of shame or regret, you have already begun the possibility of change. Feelings of shame or regret are a wonderful opportunity to change for the better.The act of feeling the emotion (abreaction), itself, represents change. Until you feel emotion associated with a certain inner programming, that programming is walled off from the option of change.

ined event in the mind is nearly identical to a real event in the mind. (He used the word "covert" to mean purely mental, imaginary, events.) Therefore, conditioning by having a "relaxed" subject imagine doing various things can be just as effective as if he actually does those things.

Covert desensitization is accomplished by making a subject imagine a series of events for which he is phobic, progressing from less scary visualizations to bolder ones until the phobia is fully dealt with and deactivated, "desensitized." Many later researchers have confirmed that principle: what a person does in his imagination transfers to how he reacts and what he does in reality. A victim of unethical hypnosis can be helped by a series of visualizations in which, at last, real secrets are revealed and the unethical hypnotist is defied and defeated in imagery.

Guided Fantasy—In "Projective Hypnoanalysis" **(Chapter 19 in Le Cron's *Experimental Hypnosis*)**, J. G. Watkins proposed imaginative and powerful hypnotherapy methods, which he called **brief therapy**. One method was for the hypnotized client to begin, and then elaborate, a fantasy. Watkins said that the

> *...unconscious, given enough protection through disguised fantasy projections under hypnosis, will often make known its true purposes and strengths.*
> **(Watkins in Le Cron, *Experimental Hypnosis*, p. 451)**

Help for the Healing Process

The unconscious mind's goalsetting mechanism looks for and carries out ways to enact what its conscious mind wants. The **goals** it works to achieve are the things that person has thought about wanting. Conventional hypnotherapeutic wisdom advises people who wish to be more effective in carrying out goal-directed actions to: First, decide on your goal. Second, again and again, imagine yourself, vividly, in a state of achievement of that goal. By constantly visualizing the goal, you leave it up to your unconscious to find the route to get there. When one attempt does not work, it automatically reroutes you to another. Anything you try helps, because with every try you learn more about what works and what does not.

I must add that, in my case, at the beginning, although I had some pertinent data, I did not fully understand it. I did not know what it was that I needed to pray for. It was after I asked Jesus, with a simple, humble prayer, to forgive my sins, and to come into my heart, that I began to experience the astonishing freeing and empowering events, the guidance and protection which has culminated in this book. As part of that process, I visualized healing imagery with good success. In fact, after I became a Christian, everything I tried helped—at least some.

Right-brained or Left-brained?

Some people tend to think in pictures; others in words. Some people cannot visualize. Some, if asked to visualize, will describe something real from their past experience rather than something imaginary, but at least they can project it onto their mind screen. Those people who can consciously think with images, using them as visual representations of real feelings, objects, or actions have, if needed, an easier road to overcoming amnesia and healing.

Picture thinkers, because their dominant hemisphere is the right, are called **right-brained**; word thinkers are **left-brained**. Politicians and philosophers tend to be left-brained thinkers. Poets and sculptors are right-brained thinkers. Thinking in pictures, to any degree, is associated with creativity. Thinking in extremely clear, vivid images, and/or having the ability to control those images, is associated with genius (and with hypnotizability). Some fortunate people are gifted in both hemispheres.

If a "split-brain" operation (**lobotomy**) cuts through the corpus callosum, the right and left brains are unable to communicate and coordinate their actions. In that situation, the right brain--emotional, creative, and holistic--can no longer hook up to the left brain for its verbal expression. The left brain is deprived of the passionate creative intensity of the right. The verbally expressed personality becomes flat and dull.

These two hemispheres, each with its own mind, its own language, its own special expertises, can function in cooperation or independently, simultaneously or separately. If a task is specialized for one side, then the appropriate hemisphere activates, and the other idles. Both types of coding, verbal/sequential and graphics/wholistic are invaluable. They cannot be done simultaneously in the same brain site. People have to have separate brain centers in which to do them. And we do.

Sometimes, the two unconscious minds (left and right) do not agree with each other. In that case, they may struggle for supremacy. ("One part of me thinks this, but another part of me thinks that...") When they do agree on a goal, however, their complementary approaches provide you with a wonderful, total, problem-solving ability.

OTHER METHODS TO OVERCOME AMNESIA

Working with imagery is an excellent way to overcome amnesia, but it is not the only one. Here follows a list of eight other significant methods to overcome amnesia: 1) persistent questioning, 2) ideomotor techniques, 3) hypnagogic crossover, 4) association, 5) guessing, 6) recognition, 7) regression under rehypnotization, and 8) narcohypnosis.

1) Persistent Questioning

Some research results show that posthypnotic amnesia may yield to persistent questioning. First, discover the subject's conscious memories relating to the unethical hypnosis, then follow the trail where it goes. It helps if you ask specific questions because the subject is usually blocked against volunteering information. "Just talking," the usual model for therapy, takes an extraordinary amount of time for a survivor of unethical hypnosis to accomplish only a little.

The survivor may, therefore, be grateful to friends who are willing to extract information, question by question. Or a subject may find it easier to tell from his right brain, in the form of suggested writing, drawing, sculpting, or singing projects. What works best depends on the exact wording of his "secret, don't tell" suggestions. For example, one subject can write it, but cannot speak it. Another is just the opposite.

There are two notable problems with the technique of persistent questioning. A subject may just be more firmly silent when pursued with direct questions, if they stimulate blocking suggestions. When friends are patient and do not ask, that survivor may be more able to confide the part of the hypnosis story which she consciously knows.

The other problem is that the technique of **leading questions** is known to generate confabulated material. So, be sensitive as to whether this technique is getting results—and if they are accurate. Confabulated material does not, of itself, disprove the possibility of unethical hypnosis, but it certainly muddies the water and makes discernment of the true facts of the case more difficult.

Possible Questions

- *Who did it to you?*
- *What can you remember?*
- *What are you unable to remember?*
- *How old were you when it began?*
- *How many years were you in an active relationship with your hypnotist?*
- *How did he hypnotize you the first time?*
- *How did he deepen the trance?*
- *What is the induction cue? Do you know of more than one?*

Leading Questions

One day, in hypnotherapy class, Tebbetts taught us how to give our subjects a "past-life experience." "I don't believe in that," he said. "It's just a hallucination. But if you believe in it, or if your client does and wants to have one, I can show you how to give them one." (Two people in the class intended to make a living by inducing past-life hallucinations.)

Tebbetts then gave the class a specific sequence of instructions which would induce a hypnotized subject to imagine some experience from "a past life." He illustrated by telling us about the case of a client who "paid me a good sum to take him to a 'past life,' so I did." That customer had lacked imagination, but was eager for the past-life experience. Tebbetts said, "I made up his past life for him because he couldn't do it for himself." Tebbetts made clear that it was just a matter of getting a deep enough trance for hallucination to be possible, and then giving the proper **leading questions**, or suggestions.

The technique of asking leading questions was used by interrogators during the Inquisition to push accused persons, who were already shocked and tortured into a deeply suggestible state, to imagine that they had been sleeping with demons, or riding broomsticks. The method was rediscovered, in 1829, by a European, Dr. G. P. Billot, who

> *...found that by means of leading questions (a technique which had been employed earlier by exorcists in demonic possession cases) he could induce patients in trance to announce that they were possessed by spirits. The spirits claimed to be the guardian angels of the patients, through whom they communicated...* **(Sargant, *The Mind Possessed*, p. 43)**

Inducing a conversation with angels is currently in vogue with hypnotists, as is past lives, alien abduction, and recovery of childhood memories of sexual abuse. Leading questions, used by social workers with young children (who basically walk around in a state of trance all the time), has resulted in an epidemic of false sexual abuse charges.

- *Were drugs ever used in your hypnotraining?*

- *Have you ever been electroshocked?*

- *Can you remember your childhood?*
- *What posthypnotic suggestions were you given?*

2) Ideomotor Techniques

Answers regarding repressed memories may be obtained using ideomotor techniques without having to consciously remember painful details. An ideomotor response does not need a hypnotic induction to happen, so sealing is not an obstacle to it. Any **ideomotor** response is a **dissociated** one. What you get depends on which brain neurons get directly hooked up to the hand muscles, what the designated rules for ideomotor behavior are, and what programming has been suggested.

Chevruel's Pendulum—A simple way of ideomotor questioning requires a small **pendulum**, such as a washer or a ring tied onto the end of a ten-inch string. There are four possible pendulum swings and, therefore, four possible answers: clockwise circle, counterclockwise circle, back and forth to your left and right, or up and down in front of you. The four answers can be: 1) yes; 2) no; 3) I don't know; 4) I don't want to answer the question.

You choose what movement will mean "yes" (such as back and forth); and what movement will mean "no" (such as up and down). Or, start by asking the unconscious what swing directions it prefers for which answer. Do that by thinking "yes," and see what swing you get. Write the answer on a visible card for ready reference. Then do the same for the other motions and write the results on the card.

The argument for confining responses to only "yes" or "no" is that it keeps it simple. Most ideomotor systems allow only a "yes" or "no" response. Ever played Twenty Questions? Then you know that a series of yes/no questions, patiently asked, can get to the factual bottom of practically any problem, if you do it right and persistently. The argument against using only the yes/no choice, however, is that, if you ask something the unconscious really does not know, it may come up with a pretend (confabulated) answer. (State over and over that you want the TRUTH, only the TRUTH.)

This swinging pendulum is called **Chevreul's pendulum**, having been invented, in 1833, by a Frenchman, Chevreul. Chevreul also proved that the movements of a dowser's rod and of an ideomotor-operated pendulum were both unconsciously activated. (Yes, dowsing is "real." Flowing water creates an electromagnetic field which can be unconsciously discerned by about half the people who try.) LeCron pioneered the use of ideomotor responses in the United States using a Chevreul's pendulum, or finger signals ("Raise your thumb for 'no,' your index finger for 'yes.'")

Automatic Writing—You are talking on the phone. Unconsciously, your hand doodles on the note pad. That is a type of **automatic writing.** If your hand writes what your conscious mind has not previewed and does not know, it is doing automatic writing. It can happen in or out of hypnosis, with or without conscious awareness. It can happen spontaneously, or as a result of a direct command during hypnosis (e.g., hypnotist tells your hand to write without you being aware that it is writing, and without you knowing what it is writing), or as a posthypnotic suggestion.

E. R. Hilgard defined automatic writing as

> *...either totally out of awareness, while the writer is preoccupied with something else, or, if he is aware of it, he does not feel that he is its author. This latter case is rather like that of dreams, in which a remembered dream is a conscious product, but the authorship of the dream is obscure.* **(*The Hidden Observer, Ch. 7 "Automatic Writing and Divided Attention*")**

Your hand is connected to a dissociated center of consciousness and is writing a message or opinion from that dissociated center. It is a trance technique for accessing unconscious knowledge.[1] "Automatic writing...is often resorted to when resistance or objection to verbalization is encountered...[the hypnotized person is] told that his hand will automatically start to write." **(Marcuse, p. 129)** So, if you have been instructed under hypnosis that "you can't tell," you cannot. But the 99-and-some dissociated neurons that rise to the challenge of the instruction, "your hand will automatically start to write," quite likely consider themselves unencumbered by the command to "you." Being in the unconscious, they are used to thinking for themselves. They may, thus given permission, be willing to directly communicate what they know—and that is automatic writing.

What you write automatically is likely to be something repressed and important to you. The painful, repressed data is like steam under great pressure held in by the wall of prohibiting repression. Given the slightest opening and encouragement, it will find a way, some way, out!

---

1. Automatic writing is also common in occult circles for other uses.

> *Automatic writing is a splendid means of gaining access to unconscious material that lies beyond the grasp of conscious recall. The portion of the cerebrum that controls the automatic writing seems to have access to material unavailable to the centers that control speech. This is possibly because graphic activity eludes the vigilance of the ego better than does speech. Consequently hypnotic verbalization of feelings and impulses may not yield information as vital as that brought up through automatic writing.* **(Wolberg, *Hypnoanalysis*, p. 176)**

Automatic writing under hypnosis has also been used as an ideomotor barrier against lying or confabulation in forensic hypnosis: "If you do not tell the truth, your hand will write the correct answer without you controlling it. Nor will you know what the hand is writing." Automatic writing has also been, on occasion, an outlet for confabulated material.

3) Hypnagogic Crossover

Information can cross from the unconscious to the conscious during the times just before you fall asleep (**hypnogogic**) and when you are just waking up (**hypnopompic**). During those two daily periods of natural trance, you can give instruction to your unconscious. You can also receive reminders or realizations from it.

4) Association

Technically, this memory system is called **redintegration**. People naturally remember in association with preexisting knowledge. Any new datum is linked by neuronal connections to related, known data. The memories are like beads on a string, or like strands in a complex web. One thing reminds you of another, and then another. Stream-of-consciousness association can free repressed data. Association, while in trance—deep trance, works even better.

You can associate from word to word, or from symbol to symbol. Just follow the series. Associating may lead you to obscene ideas, painful memories, or problem notions about the person to whom you are speaking. To make this work, you have to set aside criticism and concentrate on the goal of getting out the information. The end of a chain of associations is usually where the most repressed thought, and, therefore, a very powerful one is located.

5) Guessing

A survivor of hypnosis with suggested amnesia knows more than he consciously knows that he knows. Any guess about the missing information may be based on his unconscious knowing, and therefore quite possibly correct. The phenomenon of being able to remember the information by guessing, even though you cannot consciously remember the source of your information, is called **source amnesia.**

> *They uniformly denied recognition of the stimulus figures, but once in a while they gave a correct response word, declaring that it seemed to come to them from nowhere.* **(R.W.White, 1942, p. 315)**

A related phenomenon appears when a subject tries to **relearn** amnestic information. It is much easier to learn information the second time, even though memory from the first learning is not conscious.

6) Recognition

Long-term memory in the brain is catalogued by **cue words** similar to the way an on-line search system, or the index of a book, works. In the same way, we use an index system to retrieve data from long-term memory. So, you might remember an incident pertaining to a fish by first thinking of names of different kinds of fish. The more associations you have in your mental index, with a piece of data, the easier it is to remember.

In a later hypnosis, the subject, if so directed, will recall what happened in previous trances:

> *The hypnotized subject seldom remembers, on awaking, the events which occurred during his hypnotic sleep. On the other hand, when he is asleep his memory embraces all the facts of his sleep, of his waking state, and of previous hypnotic sleeps.* **Binet and Fere (p. 135)**
>
> *"...the subject remembers in hypnosis all that has happened in previous hypnosis."* **Moll**
>
> *...amnesia may cease as a result of a new hypnosis...*[with] *an order not to forget the content of the hypnosis after waking, or the order may simply be issued in hypnosis that everything be remembered after waking.* **Schilder & Kauders, *Hypnosis*, p. 60**
>
> *If he were replaced in a deep trance, he would be able to recall every incident that happened in his previous trance. Most patients can remember word for word the suggestions given to them in previous seances.* **Gindes, p. 33**
>
> *Acts of one trance are usually recalled, either spontaneously or at command, during another trance...* **William James, *The Principles of Psychology*, p. 602**
>
> *...a person under hypnosis will recall all that has happened to him in previous hypnotic states, if you suggest that he do so.* **Powers, *Hypnotism Revealed*, p. 24**

If the tester gives four choices and says "Just pick one," the person with source amnesia is more likely to pick the right one than is somebody who never knew the answer at all. The clue can come from the subject's own mind, or somebody else can give it to him. **Recognition** methods start with a hint or question directed at the subject. He then uses association to access the concealed memories which are unconsciously linked to that clue. The recognition happens because what he heard or saw aroused the memory of what has been forgotten.

Cues can help recover less accessible memories, but they can also result in unconscious **fabrication**. When you can remember just a few facts about something, you may use those facts to create a seemingly logical reconstruction of the original scene—and that logical reconstruction may be incorrect. Those logical, but false, "facts" are called **constructive errors**.

7)Regression under Rehypnotization

Wolfort wrote of a woman who recalled, under rehypnosis, all that had happened in a hypnotization thirteen years before. Zebediah, Mrs. E, Palle, and Candy all recovered information by rehypnotization, then were told what had happened by their psychiatrist. Candy's multitude of spontaneous regressions occurred over a period of months, during which she recovered the basic facts of what had happened during Jensen's previous hypnoses of her.

The best results in **rehypnotization** of survivors have been achieved by profound hypnotic states, avoidance of leading questions, and maintainance of temporary amnesia. Progress required prolonged effort by the psychiatrist to deepen, unblock, and regress the subject. In some cases, it worked better to regress him to childhood first, then to approach the target period from those earlier years, rather than attempt to regress the subject straight back to the problem.

In **revivification**, the most authentic type of regression, the operator is an anachronism if the subject did not know him at the regressed age. John solved the problem of **operator anachronism** in Candy's case by **role playing** somebody contemporary in the relived scene, usually Dr. Jensen.

State-dependent Learning—Rehypnosis is necessary to remember events that originally happened in a state of trance, because you remember something best if you are in the same mental state as the one in which you originally committed that bit of data to memory. That phenomenon is called **state-dependent learning**. It may happen in the same mood, the same state of consciousness. Therefore, you tend to recover memories of depression in depression, joy in joy, pain in pain, and so on. And, what you experienced under hypnosis, is most easily remembered under a subsequent hypnosis. What you experienced in childhood may also be easily remembered under hypnosis. Perhaps that is because, as Charles Tebbetts said to my hypnotherapy class, "Children are in a state of hypnosis all the time."

Liegeois told of a young girl who worked as a house servant. She was a somnambulist who had been experimented on at length by some unknown person. That may have predisposed her to dissociations. Her mistress was rich and had certain valuable jewels. One day, in a spontaneously dissociated (daydreaming?) state of mind, the servant girl moved the jewels from one place to another, thinking they would be safer in the new place. Afterwards, she did not remember that she had moved them, or why.

When neither the mistress nor the girl could find the jewels a few days later, the mistress believed her servant had stolen them. She pressed charges. The girl was jailed.

Dr. Dufay was at the jail on other business. He recognized the imprisoned servant as the hypnotic subject of his colleague and talked with her. She explained her situation. Dufay hypnotized and questioned her about the matter. She then recalled moving the jewels, and why, and where. Dufay persuaded the judge to listen to the girl. The judge, himself, went to the house where she had worked, and located the jewels just where she had said, in trance they would be. She was freed.

She had been in a spontaneous trance when she moved the jewels. It was in another trance (rehypnotization), that she remembered.

Breaking a Seal—Before rehypnosis can be accomplished, the survivor of criminal hypnosis will probably have to be unsealed. A person who has been sealed by one hypnotist can be unsealed by a subsequent one. A hypnotist, encountering a client who is clearly under a sealing command, may respect operator territoriality and refuse to help. Or, he may try to unseal. This can work if the previous operator is out of the scene and will not be giving counter-commands.

Teitlebaum described how to **break seals** as well as how to place them. All his seal-breaking methods involved disguised induction. The clinician must evade the subject's implanted barriers to induction:

> *...a well placed seal can be broken only by indirection and trickery. Where the subject has been hypnotized by the use of "sleep" words, it may be very easy for a physician to break the seal through a relaxation technic without any mention of the fact that he is going to hypnotize the subject and without any use of the word "sleep."* **(Teitlebaum, *Hypnotic Induction Techniques*, p. 110)**

He gave examples of such "trickery." His "Sealbreaker Technic A" suggested that the subject close his eyes and remember being inducted, the very first time, by the original hypnotist: a **piggybacking** induction reinforcement. The subject is directed to think of the exact words which were used and to reexperience the feelings and actions of that previous induction. A disguised induction can apply to natural amnesias also. Two hypnotherapists, speaking of an amnesia case wrote, "As is typical in amnesia, the block to memory was strong against a direct assault but relatively weak against a 'back door' approach." **(Kelly & Kelly, pp. 138-9)**

However, if the previous hypnotist obtains access to the subject again, he may turn the tables and reseal. In any contest for control of the subject, there are some built-in aspects that favor the original hypnotist. 1) **Extinction** of previous conditioning tends to not be absolute because of the tendency for earlier conditioning to be dominant over later conditioning. 2) The original hypnotist may have more **conditioning density** (number of times hypnosis was induced). 3) The original hypnotist, if unethical, may have associated greater trauma with conditioning and greater emotional **intensity** tends to dominate over lesser in conditioning. Nevertheless, if the subject wants to get free badly enough, God willing, all those difficulties may be overcome.

Cognitive Dissonance

Cognitive dissonance is the opposite problem from confabulation. Something really did happen in the subject's life, but he or she is denying it. Why? Because thoughts (cognition) that are logically inconsistent cause discomfort. And thoughts that do not fit with the way we want to think things are tend to be rejected. We need logic in our perception and consistency in our thinking. People reject information if it contradicts their preexisting ideas. It is a don't-bother-me-with-facts- because -my-mind -is-already-made-up response. If the doctor suddenly says you have three months to live, your first reaction will be denial. What he said is cognitively dissonant with the expectations you had for your life expectancy.

8) Narcohypnosis

The other established way to bypass a sealing is by **narcohypnosis**, what Reiter did with Palle. Narcohypnosis sent Palle deep enough into trance to dislodge Nielsen's influence. Narcohypnotic induction slices through induction blocks like a knife through warm butter.

The therapist, however, needs to be prepared for the possibility that the subject may have post-hypnotic programming to stop breathing in case of drug induction, mimicking respiratory failure caused by barbiturate overdose. In that case, the therapist must combine verbal suggestions to breathe with suggestions to remove the causative programming, between breaths. It may take two or more narcohypnotic sessions with this "artificial" breathing to deactivate the suicide programming.

Obviously, that subject must be kept safe from any further programming by the previous operator! There is also likely to be an implanted suggestion to report back to the original operator if the seal is broken. Suggestions should also be given to block that and/or keep the subject safe from opportunities for recontact by the predator.

Corroboration—When recovering amnestic information, the subject does not know beforehand exactly what memories will emerge. Afterward, he has no absolute assurance that the recovered data is accurate, although anything from the unconscious will always feel true to a subject. Recovered memory can be **corroborated**, however, by direct memory, context clues, and verification of details produced under trance, as the police did in the cases of Palle Hardwick and Mrs. E.

Therapy Techniques

Progress in therapy goes hand in hand with strengthening of the ego.

Wolberg, *Hypnoanalysis*, pp. 242-243

A hypno-abuse survivor's unconscious wants safety and healing. It wants the pain and fear to stop. It wants recovery of what was lost. It wants what was broken apart to be reunited, whole and healthy again. Hypnotherapy is one logical framework in which to work on those goals of safety and healing.

Hypnotherapy Class

In July, 1990, I enrolled in a three-month evening course in the basics of hypnosis and **hypnotherapy** at the Charles Tebbetts School of Hypnotherapy. Tebbetts, professor of hypnotherapy, age 85, often told us stories from his long and colorful life. He told of being a young, itinerant stage hypnotist when a doctor came up after a show and said to him, "Boy, that's a powerful thing. You could help a lot of people with it. Most of my patients think themselves sick." The doctor offered Tebbetts a job as his "psychologist"—if he would teach him hypnosis. Tebbetts accepted. A year later, the doctor had learned hypnosis. He was "curing" patients much faster using disguised inductions. But he did not want them to know he was using hypnosis, so he swore his psychologist to silence.

The Class—Professor Tebbetts had two books in print, *Miracles on Demand* and *Self-Hypnosis and Other Mind-Expanding Techniques*. We read his books at home. During each three-hour class, we spent about two hours listening to him lecture and watching videotapes of his past hypnotherapy sessions. The last hour, we practiced hypnotizing, and doing therapy, on each other, and on clients who received free treatment if they would let themselves be subjects. The course required 150 hours of attendance, plus detailed practice sessions, exams, etc.

My classmates included a psychologist, an M.D., a minister, a salesman with Neuro-Linguistic Programming training, a couple of housewives, and a Hindu yogi. Class attendance varied from six to twelve. I observed that most of these hypnotists, or would-be hypnotists, were fairly moral persons who sincerely wanted to use their skills to help, not to harm. I also observed one potential rotten apple in the barrel. And I saw a lot of naivete about what could go wrong in a hypnotic relationship.

Induction Training—A hypnotherapy relationship starts with a **pre-induction interview**. Among the questions we learned to ask were: "Have you ever been hypnotized? How long ago? For what purpose? What was your response?" "Do you have any fears or phobias?" A big phobia of mine was hypnosis. Now, four nights a week I heard hypnosis, watched hypnosis, hypnotized other people, and let other students practice hypnosis inductions on me as I fulfilled my requirement to do a certain number of hypnotherapy treatments and help other students fulfill theirs. I was not able to go into deep trance, but I made progress towards overcoming my discomfort with somebody trying.

I noticed that I was not the only person in there with induction resistance. A few students claimed "I can't be hypnotized," or would not let anybody try, or would limit the depth. Were they sealed? I knew I was. But if they knew they were sealed, they never said so. Most of the students, however, had a trusting attitude toward other hypnotists, submitted readily to trance induction, and were easily hypnotized.

Tebbetts taught us to listen for the deep sigh that signals a lowering state of consciousness. To coax a subject deeper and deeper, he advised us to "Keep offering them rewards: You'll feel better, feel happier, be healthier, etc."

Amnesia Suggestion—One evening in class, Tebbetts told us about a client who came to him, asking to be made to forget something. "He wouldn't even tell me what it was he wanted to forget, but that's okay." "Did you make him forget?" a student asked. "Oh, sure," Tebbetts said. "I took him down the **tunnel of forgetfulness**. I said to him, 'I'm going to lead you through the tunnel of forgetfulness. And now you're in it and it is forgotten, forgotten, gone." He chuckled, remembering.

I listened, shocked with recognition. Again and again, in years past, I had worked with the image of that tunnel. My lost memories were in it. Sometimes, when I had tried to get at them, I saw it as blocked by a strong wooden door which was padlocked. Sometimes, I managed to get in there and remember things, but it was never easy. Was the tunnel stock imagery used by hypnotists to make people lose their memory of something? Or was the tunnel a universal unconscious symbol for forgetting?

A tunnel, by definition, is underground, under cover. Maybe that's why memories left "in the tunnel" would be understood by the unconscious as an instruction to keep them unconscious (covered up, forgotten). The meaning of images in the right brain graphics language interested me. I had already learned that the visualized image of a **key** usually communicates something about the subject's attitude toward knowledge. The mind-screen image of a **container** usually represents the subject's capacity to love.

Ethical Issues

I am sure that Professor Tebbetts knew about unethical hypnosis, but he adamantly denied that fact in class. Perhaps he reasoned that, if his students thought it was not possible, they would never try. He did discuss the problem of sex. He considered sexual involvement with a client unspeakable and unthinkable. He said of one "famous" hypnotist "He's an egomaniac, an immoral person, a cheater. I've got a long list of women he's molested. He propositioned about four or five girls here while doing his therapy."

Tebbetts said that past lives[1] were just a suggested hallucination. "I don't believe in them, but I'll show you how to make a client have one." And he did. He told about a client who came to him wanting a past life. "He didn't have any imagination, so I made it up for him," Tebbetts chuckled.

Limiting Number of Sessions—Tebbetts was not religious, but he was often ethical. He emphasized to us, over and over, that hypnosis was a powerful tool for reprogramming to get quick results. He firmly agreed with the position of the Holy See that "continued subjection to hypnosis is 'morally' wrong." He said that more than a few sessions with a subject would tend to set up an unhealthy dependency in the subject. He emphasized that we should not need to work with a client more than one, two, or at the most three, sessions to solve his problem. He described how he firmly, even rudely, extricated himself from the usual client yearnings to keep the relationship going (because of the rapport phenomenon and the cortical excitation of lowering consciousness). He was dead set against hypnotist-subject relationships that continue overlong—into potential monetary exploitation and development of psychological dependence. The most sessions Tebbetts ever gave a client was twelve.

That client had a severe physical illness with psychosomatic roots. He was not completely cured, but he was significantly improved. Then Tebbetts refused to see him any more.

Tebbetts Hypnotherapy Techniques

Tebbetts mixed words of wisdom with his **hypnotherapy techniques**: "Start building up their self-esteem from the moment they sit down."

Correcting a Misprogramming—Tebbetts approached therapy like a computer programmer. He identified the symptom he intended to cure in the pre-induction interview. He then did an induction, deepened the trance, and began his search for the presumed **misprogramming** that was the cause of that symptom. Tebbetts believed that every symptom was caused by a problem in the subject's previous mental programming. He taught us that our first task as a hypnotherapist was to uncover the symptom's cause—to identify the misprogramming.

He taught us a wide array of techniques by which to discover the misprogramming. Good hypnotherapy, he said, meant probing, trial and error, the sense to know when paydirt was hit, and the skill to shift smoothly from one uncovering technique to another until you came to one that worked. One source of an unconscious misprogramming could be something said to a child, years ago, that was misunderstood, or unconsciously overstressed. "An imprint by an authority figure means that's your truth." The client usually is not consciously aware of the misprogramming, and that is its power.

Our second task was to get them to relive the event of the misprogramming with feeling, classic **abreaction**: "The memory which provokes the symptom must be brought into consciousness. The feelings associated with it must be reexperienced because you're dealing with the FEELING," he said. So, the subjects had to reexperience the guilt, shame, or anger. Only then, could we take it away.

---

[1] It is easy to confuse "past lives," which are confabulated, with psychic events of mental time travel, even experiences enveloped in another person's life, for which there is evidence.

Our final task was to cure that symptom by talking to, and **reprogramming,** the now exposed unconscious memory. Tebbetts taught us to begin a regression by telling the subject, "You're taking all your present knowledge and experience back with you."

Then, he supplemented the client's "knowledge and experience" with his own logic. He said the key problem was usually that the unconscious was operating on immature, childish logic and needed to be supplied with mature, adult logic. Therefore, Tebbetts undertook to supply the client with a "subconscious reeducation." He said, "Hypnotherapy is changing childish perceptions into adult understanding."

First, Tebbetts would explain, to the problem part, the functional difficulty its symptom was causing the root self. Then he would speak the **missing logic** into the unconscious system to correct the misprogramming, because the unconscious mind cannot supply that logic for itself. So, he would talk and talk mature common sense to the hypnotized client, suggesting beliefs that could work better than those upon which he had previously been basing his behavior. After the client acquired conscious awareness of the misprogramming, the release of its hidden emotion, and the application of mature logic to it, the symptom would usually disappear. The problem was resolved.

Parts Therapy—Tebbetts specialized in "parts therapy." Tebbetts said, "Everybody has two or three." Tebbetts said that any client who had **internal conflict** was a candidate for parts therapy: "Indecision and ambivalence are signs that parts therapy is needed."

Most people do not realize, unless they have been through this sort of hypnotherapy, how distinctly different and embattled their various aspects of personality can be—even responding in different-sounding voices when called forth by the hypnotherapist to unburden, explain, and negotiate. To students in our class who were unfamiliar with the behavior of personality parts during trance, it seemed pretty weird: hypnotizing the subject, calling out a part, asking its name, getting the parts to dialogue with each other, hearing one personality part refer to another in the third person as "she" or "he," though only speaking of a different element of self.

Although they had separate names, these were normal unconscious parts, not multiple personalities. However, their memory content and attitude often was a surprise to the hypnotized subject, who listened as his various unconscious sectors took this opportunity to reveal their conflictual programming. Often the problem part turned out to be rooted in some long-forgotten event. Night after night, I watched Tebbetts bring out the combatant aspects of a client, name them, and then help them to better understand each other. Finally, he would negotiate a workable compromise that would result in more successful, comfortable functioning for the whole self.

The professor began a parts therapy by talking to the problem part in a cordial way, making a friend of it. He drilled into us: "Never criticize the parts. Say, 'You're not to be blamed.' Always compliment them for doing a good job."[1] He said to find out if the part had a punishing, or protecting, function. Arlene said that she stepped in when things got too hard for Candy, that she had saved Candy from tight spots, and Candy agreed. Tebbetts would have considered Arlene to have a protecting function. He would have thanked Arlene for protecting Candy.

Professor Tebbetts emphasized how important a problem part truly was: "The part that's causing the problem always has the energy, the power." He would tell it that the root self was lucky to have such a strong part! For the conscious mind, he taught us to encourage the attitude: "I'm a survivor. I'm not a victim."

He said that each part's appearance was just a "memory tape playing." He said, "You cannot change or correct a tape unless you have it out of the file and playing." He said it does not work, and it is not wise, to just tell the problem part to go away. Tebbetts made clear that shutting up a problem part would stop the healing process! He explained, "You can't just get rid of a personality part. They'll always reemerge." He said, "Always make it clear to a part that it's important and will be kept. Always make the parts get together. It's important that they cooperate and love each other."

You have to either integrate it back with the root self, or give it a different job to do, one that it will accept willingly. Usually, he gave the separated part a new job to do, one that would transform the client's functioning by rechanneling that strength and energy in a positive way. He said to give the offending part a role that was "equal in importance to what he or she did before." He said, "The offending part is usually the most powerful part." He would suggest to the hypnotized subject some way in which that traumatic experience, which had caused the problem part, could be useful in the person's future.

---

[1] It is the conscious mind which must ultimately make decisions and take moral responsibility for outcomes, not an isolated matrix of neurons in some dissociated part of the unconscious.

What John Did Not Understand About Candy's Therapy

John Nebel did not understand that, once created, the only way Arlene could permanently "disappear" was by reunification with Candy. That is the classic healing method for split personality: hypnotic suggestion for reunification of the personalities, after the splitting trauma has been uncovered and abreacted. The tragedy of Candy's relationship with John was that he would not love, like, or even be kind to her split personality, Arlene. John never understood that a repressed self always contains worthwhile strengths.

He should have made friends with Arlene, instead of despising and hating her. He should have told Arlene that Candy was lucky to have such a strong part who could endure torture and shame, fortunate to have a part that could evade the suicide command and manage to emerge and tell. Although Candy's life was being disrupted by Arlene's spontaneous appearances, it was extremely important for John and Candy to know the things Arlene was telling. John should have made a deal with Arlene which allowed her to keep an important role in Candy's life, but shifted her to a positive role (such as using her understanding of Jensen to report on his predatory attempts and to protect Candy from him). And, he should have negotiated for a more functional schedule of appearances.

Technically, what Tebbetts did was a **conversion**. He transformed problem energy into helpful energy. Tebbetts was a genius at choosing an appropriate positive job to assign to the problem part. Then, he would get the problem part to agree to its new task. In the unconscious, a deal is really a deal because that is the mechanical, automatic part of your brain. Once programmed, it tends to stay programmed.

I became competent at putting other people into trances and giving healing suggestions. Tebbetts said I was a very good hypnotherapist. He expected me to work full-time in that field after graduation. But I was really just a writer, collecting knowledge "incognito" for this book. I did not want another profession.

Wolberg's Five-step Therapy

Wolberg summed up hypnotherapy as a five-step process: a) accepting change; b) strengthening the ego; c) bonding with therapist; d) recovering repressed memories and feelings; and e) integrating them.

a) Accept the Therapeutic Process—The recovery of memories forces the subject to change identity, both internally and in his relationships with other people. A person "always fights to maintain his scheme of life, neurotic as it may be, and defends himself vigorously against change." **(Wolberg, *Hypnoanalysis*)** But that person also, somewhere deep inside, longs to be healed and whole again.

If he overcomes denial, reaches out and touches, accepts, experiences, and becomes the abnormal, crazy, heartbreaking realities of the unconscious knowing, then he is reintegrated. He will experience painful emotions in the process. He will become a different person. He has to reach out and make connection with his amnestic data without knowing just what he will discover, and just who he will become as a result of that discovering.

The hypnotherapist helps by using direct, or indirect, suggestion to strengthen and motivate the survivor.

b) Strengthen the Subject—The victim, who is still being victimized, has learned to live with what he has not yet managed to escape—or what he has chosen to endure. He has become accustomed to channeling fear into attempts to minimize the abuse, rather than into attempts to stop it forever. The survivor must first learn to believe that escape is possible. He must consciously feel enough of his fear and anger to channel those emotions into motivation to achieve a permanent escape.

Anger is an interesting emotion. If you do not express it, you tend not to feel it. The more you express it, the more you feel it. The emergence of anger is linked to a person's ability to perform both aggressive and defensive actions. For a victim of abusive hypnosis, accessing anger enables the development of a capacity for self-defense. The person who has been hypno-trained, broken to unconscious obedience, must recover his will to fight and to defend himself.

When the disease is overcontrol, part of the cure may be a **client-directed therapy**. Jules H. Masserman gave artificial neuroses to cats and dogs, making them afraid to eat. Then he looked for methods to cure those neuroses. The best method of cure turned out to be giving the animal complete control of its feeding process by training it to control the food-delivery switch. Animals who learned to control their situation eventually overcame the fear, ate, and lived.

LeCron was a first-rank experimental and clinical psychologist (and prolific author) who advocated client-centered hypnotherapy. He taught students to let the subject make decisions. He told clininicians not to manipulate, not to coerce. He urged colleagues to respect their hypnotic subjects.

[He also said that they would get much better results in experimentation if they treated the hypnotized subjects "as a normal human being rather than a robot." LeCron explained that respectful treatment permitted the subject to participate more actively. He said that if they listened to the subjects' observations during and after the experiment, their input might turn out to be quite helpful in interpreting the results.]

c) Bond—The survivor's strength of will grows as a result of a positive relationship with anybody to whom the truth is told, including a therapist. Hypnosis tremendously speeds up and facilitates all the healing processes—bonding, uncovering, and integrating—because it cuts right through unconscious defenses and requires an immediate close relationship with the hypnotist. Two forms of **resistance** have to be worked through, however.

One is **transference** issues. The relationship will probably go through episodes of rejection by the parts of the survivor's programming which are uncomfortable with that close relationship "because of repulsive hostile and erotic strivings that threaten to invade consciousness." **(Wolberg)**

The second form of resistance flows from the hypnotist's implanted commands. This remnant of the abuser's programming inside the subject's mind is the enemy to be overcome, once the perpetrator's outside influence is eliminated.

Unconscious material is invested with such dan-

> *ger that the very acknowledgment of it is more than the patient can bear...In therapy it is essential to reunite the conscious ego with the repressed material and the attendant anxiety, but resistance constantly hampers this process.* **(Wolberg, p. 346)**

Both types of resistance have to be worked through and resolved. Walking away from the relationship stops the healing process. The survivor must stay in there, and keep talking. It will get better. In a healing relationship, the resistances manifest, and then are resolved. Memory of important amnestic events and feelings can be recovered, despite inner resistance, when the survivor's will to heal is greater than his fear of unconscious threats.

d) Recover Repressed Feelings and Memories—The hypnotherapist regresses the subject back to find the origin of the problem, and to feel those repressed feelings (abreaction). After the problem is revealed, he can recognize the illogic of living according to a lie which was planted in his unconscious, or a misunderstanding which he mistakenly accepted into his programming at an earlier age. He can progress to a more mature and functional unconscious self-management.

If the survivor's mind-cage, the basic secret-don't-tell programming, is built of shame and guilt, those feelings have to be recognized and felt, even though they were artificially implanted under hypnosis. An **artificial neurosis**, once in place, is a real neurosis.

The needs to block induction cues, repeal previous suggestions, and recover repressed memories are powerful arguments for some professional therapy. In working with victims of criminal hypnosis, some clinicians have uncovered the truth by achieving maximally profound hypnotic states in their subject, avoiding leading questions, and maintaining temporary amnesia. The process Dr. Reiter used with Palle is a good model for a therapy of that type. Reiter used tough measures: drug induction to break through the perpetrator's sealing on Palle; ideomotor signals to reveal if Palle said anything untrue; and an incredible number of hours spent working with the subject.

Most survivors, moreover, would not be willing to put themselves through something like that. They would be reasonable to say, "I've suffered enough already." In fact, there are much kinder, gentler therapy models for survivors than Dr. Reiter's process. Candy managed an inner-directed partial healing, working with her husband. Another survivor accomplished a self-directed healing by using a little of almost every memory-retrieval method, plus some spontaneous trances, and amateur hypnotherapy from a friend, and help from several different clinicians (each for only a short series of sessions).

e) Integrate—Hypnotherapy begins with uncovering and ends with reeducation. The **integration** stage accomplishes the victim's reeducation. Denial, by not remembering, was his conscious mind's first perimeter of defense. Denial by remembering, but not feeling the emotion, was his second line of defense. Now, he has remembered. He has felt the emotion. In this step, he incorporates those new knowings and feelings into his life-style. Integration takes longer and is more complex than the steps of remembering and feeling the emotion.

Patty Hearst's psychiatrist helped her to recover from brainwashing by two important realizations: One is that "they did it to me." The other is that when you break and accept their programming (and science has demonstrated that every dog and every human have their breaking point, so you do not need to feel guilty), you internalize it. Then "I did it to me" becomes also psychologically true. Both "they did it to me," and "I did it to me" have to be dealt with as part of the healing.

Accordingly, integration, for the survivor of unethical hypnosis, involves accepting the two curiously contradictory truths that it was not his fault—and that he chose it. That means he deals with his anger about what happened; and he admits the role his own choices played in making it happen.

He can undo any consent he gave, which was betrayed, in imagery. He accomplishes that by running the scene backward, in trance, to the point in time of the giving of that consent. If the consent was betrayed by delivering him into a situation he would not have agreed to, if fully informed ahead of time, the deal was not a valid contract and can be mentally undone.

So, the subject overcomes the amnesia, encounters the data, and feels the feelings (which can then be unloaded). Integrating that data irrevocably changes him, and his future. (He may now need some positive, legal, moral way to channel and release his anger—such as by trying to help other survivors and warning the public at large.) Along the way, he has developed more realistic new attitudes about himself and other people. He has dropped old bad habits and phobias. He has built new, better behaviors. The survivor of unethical hypnosis comes out of all this stronger, wiser, and happier.

Love and Respect

A survivor of brutal mistreatment and psychological crushing, accidental or deliberate, needs healing doses of their opposites: love and respect. If the subject is a split personality, natural or artificial, that love and respect must be extended to both victims—the root personality and the split. The root personality, the conscious part of a survi-

Most Effective Wording for Suggestions

The language of suggestion is directed to a subject's unconscious mind. How do you talk to an unconscious?

☐ **Focus Attention**—An idea that becomes a suggestion is one on which unconscious attention is concentrated. Advertisers are experts at attracting the attention of your unconscious.

☐ **Literal**—The unconscious is literal. It does not get the joke.

☐ **Clear**— State the suggestion clearly. When a suggestion can have more than one interpretation, and when no one interpretation is specified, the subject's unconscious will pick the most compatible one.

☐ **Positive**—A positive suggestion is more likely to be accepted than a negative one. You should tell an impulsive, irritable child, "You will be patient, cheerful, and happy, always in a good mood," because telling him or her, "You will not lose your temper" does not work. The unconscious is comparatively deaf to "not" and "no" words. Because of this, negative affirmations—in or out of hypnosis—can backfire. "Don't lose your temper" can turn into a unconscious suggestion to lose your temper. "Don't worship evil" can be taken as an unconscious suggestion to worship evil.

☐ **Affect**—If emotion can be aroused and attached to any suggestion, then the suggestion is more likely to be accepted, and to function thereafter with power. Any idea with emotion attached dominates over one with no emotion. A suggestion associated with stronger emotion will dominate over one with less emotion. Indifference is the best armor against unwanted suggestion. Strange, but true, conscious effort to counteract a suggestion tends to intensify its action.

☐ **Imagery**—Giving a suggestion in the form of visual imagery tends to be more powerful than mere words. Imagery rouses the right brain, which is a hypnotic center. When imagination (based in your unconscious) and will (based in your conscious) conflict, imagination tends to win.

☐ **Repetition**—The more you hear it, the more you are likely to believe it.

☐ **Written**—The unconscious is more likely to accept and believe written words than spoken ones. (Hence the power of Scripture.)

vor, must also extend love and respect to its battered, wounded unconscious parts.

In the case history of "Eve," her personality splitting was found to have begun in childhood when she was forced to touch her lips to a dead face in a funeral parlor. Eve split because part of her would not obey, but part of her could not resist obeying. After Doctors Thigpen and Cleckley helped her finally to remember and relive that moment, her selves reunited again. (If you read the sequel, however, you will find it was not quite that simple, easy, or final. It never is.) Thigpen and Corbett summed up why they had a successful outcome with "the three faces of Eve." The first six reasons are all manifestations of love.

1) *All three of the personalities talked to the therapist.*

2) *The therapist gave "uncritical acceptance and understanding.*

3) *"...the rebellious Eve Black encountered no active condemnation or punitive opposition..."*

4) *The therapist offered "understanding."*

5) *The therapist did a "painstaking review" of the patient's past "emotional experiences."*

6) *..."Jane fell in love"...*

7) *"...passage of time with...intrinsic biologic factors toward repair, reintegration..."* **(Thigpen and Corbett, pp. 279-280)**

When to Stop Therapy

I think it is neither necessary nor desirable to recover the memory of every moment of time, or every painful event experienced under an unethical hypnosis—unless the unethical hypnotist himself gives the command, "Now you will remember all." While it is going on, any recovery process that is acting in defiance of his repressions pretty well occupies the victim's life. It takes time to recover memories, and time to adjust to the shock of each new revelation. It takes money, if you are paying a therapist.

At some point, she needs to get on with her life. Eventually, she has to say, "I know enough now." Then she walks away from the memory-recovery part of her healing, knowing she may never remember anything more. The survivor survives. She gets on with her life.

Before she quits therapy, however, firm protective blocks should be in place against any future use of an induction cue, by the previous predator(s). There should also be a posthypnotic suggestion that would inform her therapist if the predator hypnotist ever again attempts, or succeeds, in breaching her mental defenses. If, for any reason, that unconscious, protective blocking is not feasible or secure, her only other alternative is to live in permanent hiding from any possible induction cues from the predator.

Conclusion

At first, she may feel it is no use to try. It is "hopeless." She is not strong enough. But if she does not try, it IS hopeless! She has to find the strength born of necessity. When she fights to defend herself, she finds the power! The will to fight is the essence of the power to defeat! In the unconscious mind, opposites always can be connected. The current always can flow in the opposite direction. That means that the very depth of a subject's unconscious despair can transform into an equally powerful desperate courage. Because the subject is worth it! The foundational lie is the idea that she is not worth the effort to get free.

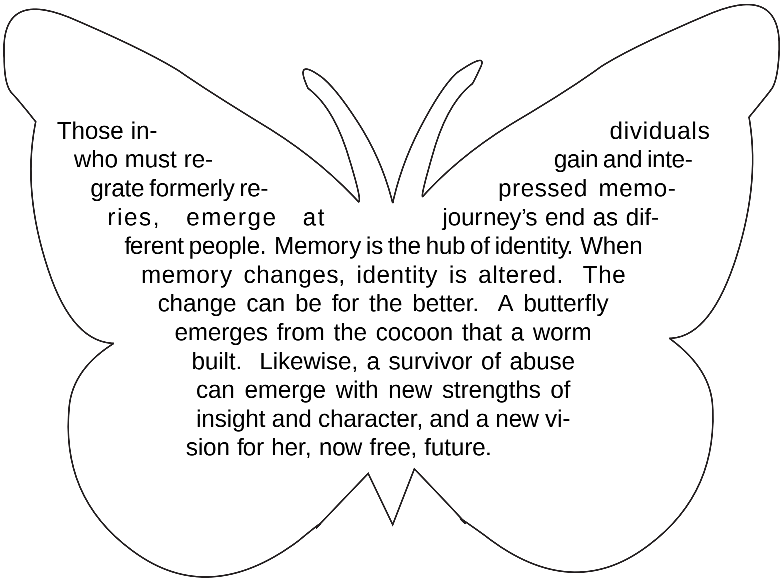

Those individuals who must regain and integrate formerly repressed memories, emerge at journey's end as different people. Memory is the hub of identity. When memory changes, identity is altered. The change can be for the better. A butterfly emerges from the cocoon that a worm built. Likewise, a survivor of abuse can emerge with new strengths of insight and character, and a new vision for her, now free, future.

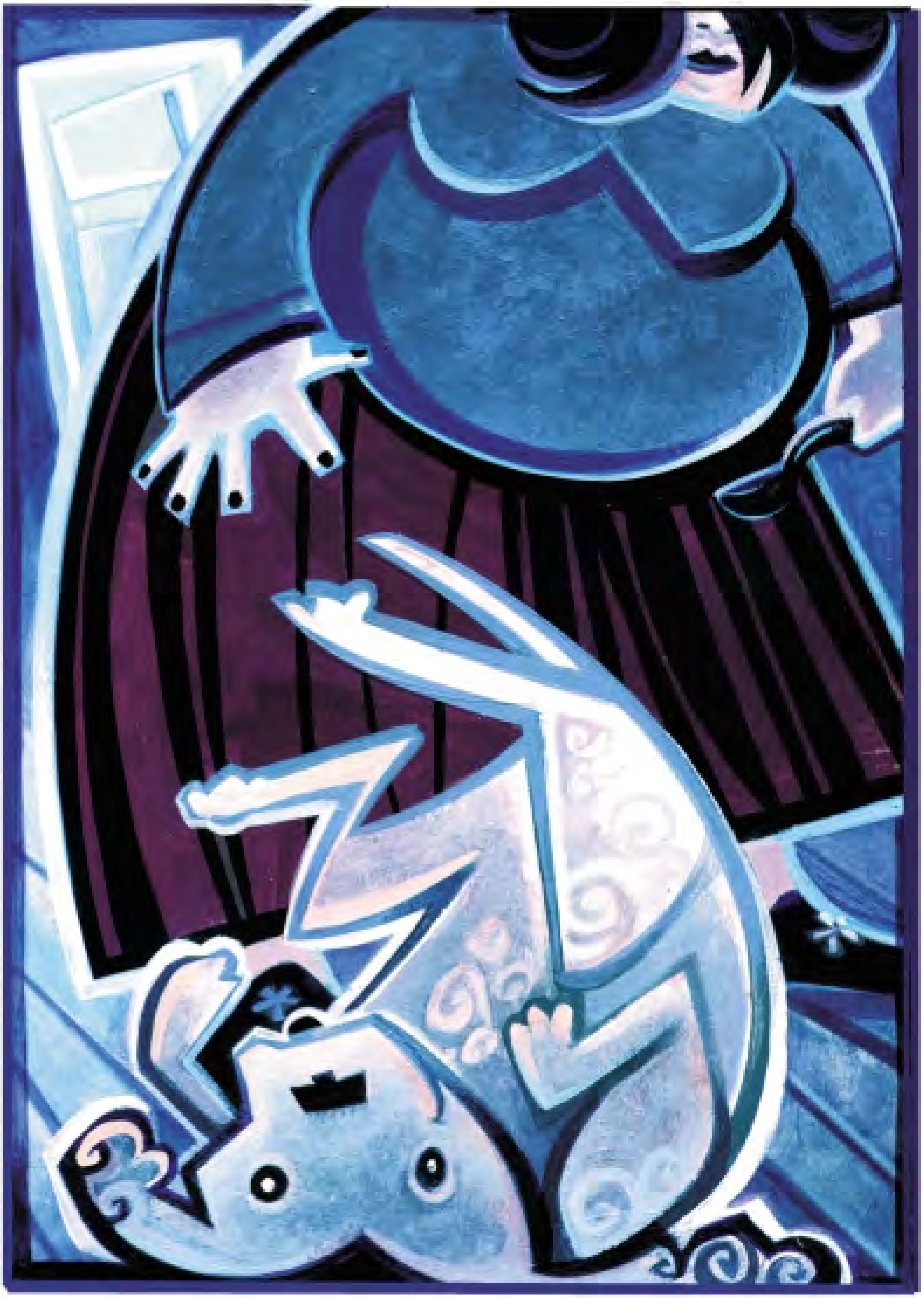

...he suggested that if she again defied his diet instructions and ate between meals, she would feel an overpowering impulse to kill her beloved poodle dog.

PART VI

Reference

Metro
1798
local
boy
wins
Sci

He won a science prize for his method, and got written up in the newspaper... they...classified the information Top Secret.

A Brief History of Hypnosis 4000 BC to 1900 AD

Pavlovian Vocabulary

Brainwashing: The Technology

Behaviorism and Government Ally

Glossary

Bibliography

Relevant Chronology: 1493 to Present

Index

A Brief History of Hypnosis 4000 BC to 1900 AD

Faith Healing Versus Scientific Theories

☑

Mesmer

☑

Marquis De Puysegur

☑

Liebeault, Bernheim, and the "Nancy School"

☑

Charcot et al

> ***Hypnotists are afraid of their subjects. There is something weird, uncanny, unbelievable about the seance, and something ominous about the untruths the operator tells his victims...Most people are afraid of other people even under the conditions of routine contact...tempting is the opportunity for the hypnotist...***
>
> **Robert W. Marks, *The Story of Hypnotism*, pp. 117-118**

Ancient and Medieval Hypnosis

Trance induction and brainwashing are both very ancient technologies. Aspects of them usually have appeared wherever there were people. **Hypnosis**[1] goes back at least as far as ancient Egypt. Papyri in the British Museum, dated 3766 BC, describe the Sorcerer Tchtcha-emankh doing hypnosis at King Khufu's court. Egyptian pharaohs used **hypnoprogrammed couriers** called "messengers of the gods," in 1500 BC. Bas-relief on a tomb at Thebes shows a priest inducing hypnosis.

Technologies for systematic control of entranced subjects and for **self-induction** of deep trance were soon all over the map. Buddhism and Hinduism used sophisticated induction methods. Chaldean magicians skillfully manipulated trance subjects. Abyssinian fakirs made people into slaves using hypnotic techniques.

---

[1] **Hypnosis** is the management of a person in trance by an awake operator who seeks automatistic obedience using such conventions as a re-induction cue, posthypnotic suggestions, and suggested amnesia.

In 500 BC, **sleep temples** in Egypt offered a nine-day cure by (drug-induced) sleep and by suggested "gods" appearing in dreams. In 400 BC, the Delphic and other ancient Greek oracles, began to compete, offering drug- and stress-induced trance experience. Priests induced hypnosis in Aesculapian sleep temples by ceremonial inductions, then gave healing suggestions.

Hypnosis also found its way to the Northern peoples of Europe. Celtic druids used it. The ancient Finnish classic, the *Kalevala*, describes hypnotic trance in detail. Like other ancient peoples, they did not know why it worked, only that it did. It was not until the beginning of Europe's Renaissance that the *why* of hypnosis first became a serious issue.

Faith Healing Versus Scientific Theories

"If there be anything preternatural about this disease, I order in the name of Jesus that it manifest itself immediately."

- Father Gassner

From 1500 AD to 1950 AD, the history of hypnosis was embodied in a sequence of interesting personalities who publicly argued, experimented, treated patients, and then wrote about those experiments and treatments.

Nettesheim

Agrippa von Nettesheim (b. 1486, d. 1535), court physician to Franz I, first put hypnosis under scientific scrutiny. He described trance, and hypnotic management of a person in trance, in a book, *Occulta Philosophica*. The association of hypnosis with the word **occult**, meaning "secret," comes from that title.

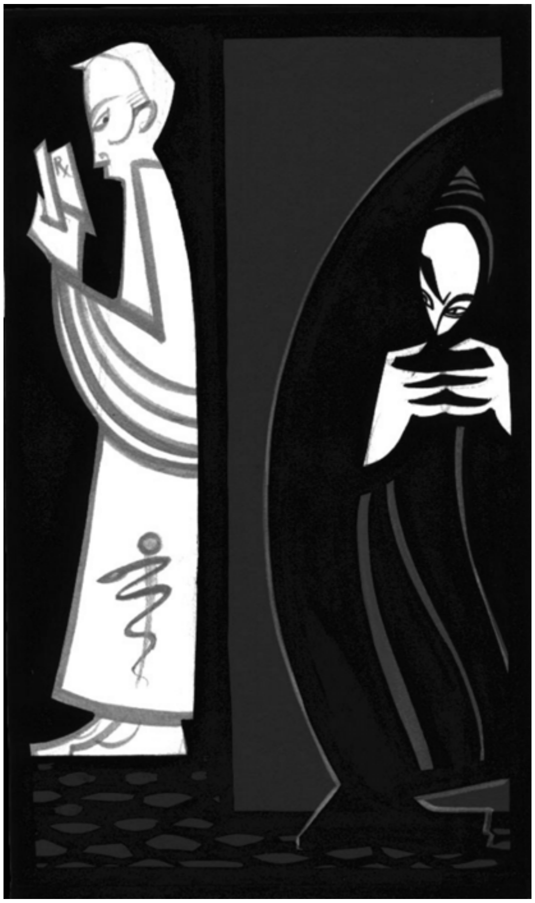

Paracelsus

Paracelsus (d. 1541) was the next European to describe the phenomena of hypnotism. He called it **magic**, a word which then meant any mysterious science. It was Paracelsus who first made it clear that hypnosis was a technology with striking moral implications. (The Catholic Church, ironically, persecuted him for his statement that the mind can both cause and cure some types of illness.)

☞ *Paracelsus first distinguished ethical from unethical hypnosis. He called hypnosis used with benevolent intentions for medical purposes, white magic. He called hypnotism used harmfully, or for exploitation, black magic.*

Greatrakes and Bagnone

Valentine Greatrakes (b. 1628, d. 1683), "the great Irish stroaker," hypnotized and suggested healing to masses of Irish folk. In Italy, around the same time, Francisco Bagnone did the same. Both healed in the religious tradition.

Maxwell

De Medicina Magnetica by Guillaume Maxwell, a Scot of noble ancestry, was published in 1679. Like other Renaissance thinkers, Maxwell was looking for scientific explanations for natural phenomena. He proposed the theory that trance involved magnetic force, was transmissible, and was useful for healing. He believed that the magnetic force could result in an operator (assumed to be male) acquiring total erotic control over females.[1]

Gassner

Father Johann Joseph Gassner (b. 1727) was more well-known and sought after to perform healings and **exorcisms** than even Greatrakes or Bagnone. At the peak of Gassner's long career, he exorcized patients in the presence of both Protestant and Catholic clergy, doctors, aristocrats, and skeptics. A notary public recorded his words. The authenticity of his healings was attested to by honorable observers. Despite the hoopla, all agreed that Gassner was a good man, an humble cleric, a country mouse who served the Lord by working miracles. He worked in the tradition of Medieval Catholicism and always gave God the glory.

Gassner developed a good methodology for trance healing. It was written down, so we know exactly how he proceeded. In a typical case, a nun afflicted with convulsive fits knelt before him. He asked her name, the nature of her sickness, and whether she agreed to his authority. She answered his questions and agreed to his authority. Gassner then said in Latin: "If there be anything preternatural about this disease, I order in the name of Jesus that it manifest itself immediately."

The nun went into convulsions. To Gassner, this proved that her illness was not natural, but caused by an evil spirit. A modern hypnotist might say that Gassner had informed the nun's unconscious that, if hers was a psychosomatic ("preternatural") rather than an organic disease, she would manifest the symptoms immediately. If she could make symptoms occur by an act of mind on demand, Gassner intuitively understood that she might also be motivated to suppress them by an act of mind, on demand.

Gassner then gave the nun a long series of suggestions to obey. He demonstrated power over the evil spirit by commanding it (also in Latin) to cause convulsions here and there in a series of named locations in her body. He also commanded it to display various emotions. Finally, he demanded "the appearance of death" (**coma**: the deepest trance level). All of his orders were obeyed. Each submission to Gassner's suggestions sent the nun into yet deeper trance and made her more responsive to his next suggestion. After she showed the appearance of death, he gave his final suggestion—the expelling of the evil spirit. She was cured, and she thanked God for it.

He used the same initial procedure with every patient. If Gassner asked the patient to manifest symptoms and no symptoms appeared, then he knew—intuitively or from experience—that the patient was either not capable of **automatistic** (deep) trance response, or that the disease was organic in origin, or both. In such cases, Gassner always referred the patient to a regular physician.

Mesmer

> ***The magnetic treatment must necessarily be dangerous to morality. While proposing to cure diseases which require prolonged treatment, pleasing and precious emotions are excited...But morally they must be condemned...***
>
> **- Secret Addendum, Franklin Commission Report**

Although Mesmer (b. 1734) was only seven years younger than Gassner, he followed the rebellious new generation's way of thinking. As a Renaissance man, he was not satisfied to let the thought of faith making a person whole be enough. Mesmer wanted to replace explanations for the phenomena of trance which were based on faith with explanations based on science.

Mesmer Testifies Against Gassner

Father Gassner's healing **exorcisms** were drawing such big crowds that the German government, in 1775, decided to investigate him. Since Mesmer was known to them and had observed Gassner at work, the Commission invited Mesmer to testify before them. Gassner was not invited to be present, nor was he given the opportunity to present a counter-demonstration. It turned out tragically for the priest.

---

1. With trance, what you expect is what you are likely to get, since subjects respond to suggestive cues.

Mesmer demonstrated to the Commission that he could simply touch patients and get symptoms to appear, and disappear—including convulsions. He caused an epileptic man in the room to have a seizure. He caused a member of the commission who was subject to convulsions to have one—and then to stop having it.[1]

By then the Commission was thoroughly in rapport with Mesmer. He then told them that Gassner was not really working religious miracles, but was actually using the same "magnetic fluid" that Mesmer himself used. Following Maxwell's theories, Mesmer told them that one brain could affect another by invisible magnetic rays that passed through the air from **magnetizer** to **subject**. He called the process **animal magnetism** to distinguish it from the physical function of magnetism operant in a compass's needle.

Mesmer also believed that he put his brain into a healing mental state, then transmitted that healing by the physical act of reaching out toward the patient. He thought he could move the invisible fluid around by hand motions. If he actually stroked the subject, he called those motions **magnetic strokings**. When he used hand movements which passed over the body, either slightly touching or moving parallel to it, at a slight distance away, without touching, he called them **passes**. He said that Gassner's exorcisms were accomplished using the magnetic fluid, and it could be done by anyone.

The Commission believed Mesmer. Despite Gassner's years of piety, humility, and unselfish service in healing the sick, the priest was forced into retirement in disgrace. He remained thus until his death, in 1779.

Suggested Crisis

Mesmer induced trance by **magnetic passes**. One of his disciples, Deleuze, later described the method in an instruction manual for student mesmerists. To conduct the magnetic passes,

> *...draw them* **[**your hands] *along the arm to the extremity of the fingers, touching lightly...Then descend slowly along the body as far as the knees, or farther....* **(*Deleuze, Practical Instruction in Animal Magnetism*, pp. 22-45)**

In addition to such strokings and passes, Mesmer's medical techniques included bleeding, emetics, magnets, and **electric shocks** (something new). After he, himself, became controversial in Vienna, Mesmer moved to Paris. There, his methods became even more bizarre, and his clientele, mostly high-born and wealthy girls and women, expanded. Mesmer had developed a system for mesmerizing many persons at the same time!

The patients, usually more than two-hundred, came every day to his home, where they spent the entire day. A large container, called the **baquet,** sat in the center of the large, semi-dark treatment room. The baquet was supposedly a source of healing energy to the persons who were seated around its outside, grasping the iron rods and ropes which protruded from it. Masonic symbols adorned the walls of the room. (Mesmer and his friend Mozart belonged to a Viennese Masonic lodge.) Magnets hung from the ceiling. The air was thick with burning incense. The patients were given cream of tartar (a laxative) as preparation.[2]

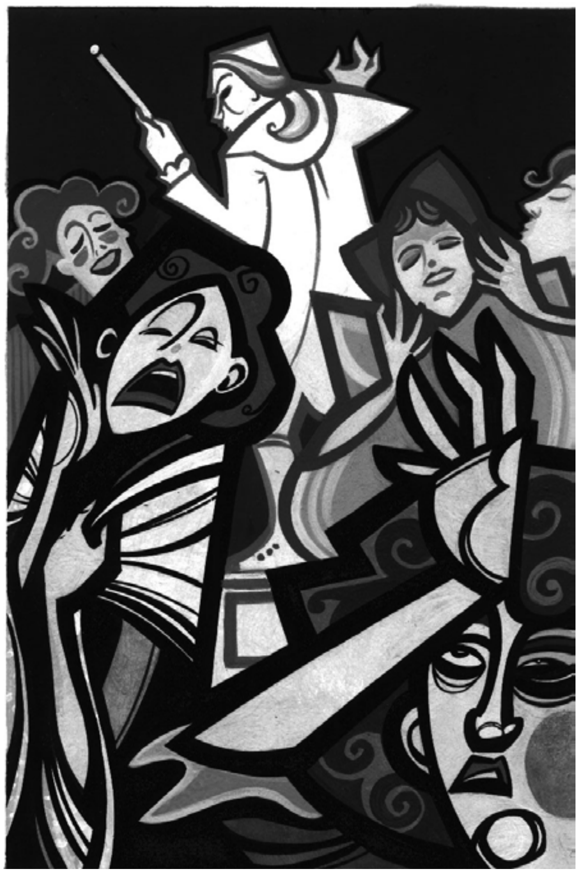

Mesmer then appeared, wearing a long lilac overgarment. As his private orchestra played soft music in the background, Mesmer paced their melody with movements of his baton. He stirred up the invisible fluid (and the patients) with lively motions of his wand when things were too calm. He laid it down and played his glass harmonica with the band once things became lively.

---

[1] Modern experimental hypnotists have repeated Mesmer's experiment and confirmed that convulsions can be both started and stopped by suggestion.

[2] They would quickly become laxative dependent.

The daily induction continued until the patients' **crises** began, generally after two or three hours. Mesmer and his disciples, the **mesmerists,** moved from patient to patient, moving around the invisible fluid—**mesmerizing**. First timers showed little reaction to Mesmer's efforts. More experienced attendees produced the behavior which Mesmer expected. They

> *...would laugh, sweat, yawn, shiver; most of them had bowel movements, a sure sign of the effect of the magnetism...*[some] *shouted, cried, fell asleep, or lost consciousness...laughter and shivers became convulsive....Convulsions became violent and mixed with moanings of pain, intense hiccups, and uncontrollable crying.* **(Lawrence and Perry, p. 59)**

Lawence and Perry also described Mesmer's subjects as "embracing passionately" or pushing another person away "violently." Extreme behavior was encouraged by the setup. The winners, those who behaved in the most bizarre and violent manner, were taken to a separate **crisis chamber.** It was completely padded, in expectation of convulsions. Mesmer personally treated the patients in that crisis chamber. He did not allow any other person to be present.[1]

About 25% of the group (the normal percentage of **somnambulists**) had a "complete crisis," lasting several hours. In Mesmer's magnetic scenario, crisis was followed by a period of "coma." Mesmer believed his treatment—and the brain overload it generated—was psychologically and physically healing.[2]

The Franklin Commission

Mesmer's critics argued that his treatments were seductive, indecent, and dangerous to the women's mental stability. In 1784, the King of France directed a French scientific commission to investigate the nature of mesmerism, in general, and the claims of Mesmer, in particular. The royal Commission members included Bailly (a noted astronomer and the Commission's Reporter), De Bory, Majault, Sallin, d'Arcet, Guillotin (inventor of the guillotine), Le Roy, and Lavoisier (founder of the science of chemistry). The Commission's Chairman was Dr. Benjamin Franklin, the American ambassador to France.

Mesmer was out of town, so they studied his theory and practice as exemplified in the treatments provided by his disciple, Deslon. The Commission members were especially interested in the **crisis:**

> *These convulsions are remarkable for their number, duration, and force, and have been known to persist for more than three hours. They are characterized by involuntary, jerking movements in all the limbs, and in the whole body, by contraction of the throat, by twitching in the hypochondriac and epigastric regions, by dimness and rolling of the eyes, by piercing cries, tears, hiccoughs, and immoderate laughter. They are preceded or followed by a state of languor or dreaminess, by a species of depression, and even by stupor. The slightest sudden noise causes the patient to start, and it has been observed that he is affected by a change of time or tune in the airs performed on the pianoforte; that his agitation is increased by a more lively movement, and that his convulsions then become more violent.* **(Commission Report, quoted in Binet and Fere, *Animal Magnetism*, 1887, p. 9)**

Top Secret: For the King's Eyes Only—For comic relief, read the Commission's "Secret Report" to the King of France. Only one copy of this addendum to their report existed for forty-two years, and it was top secret: "for the king's eyes only."[3]

The Secret Report concerns morality. Most of Mesmer's clients were female, and Mesmer's main interest was the crisis that his treatment elicited in many of them. In veiled and poetic language, the report says that the ladies observed in "crisis" were unknowingly experiencing sexual orgasm brought on by expectation, stimulation (all that gentle stroking, including of the abdomen), and example.

> *The magnetizer generally keeps the patient's knees enclosed within his own, and consequently the knees and all the lower parts of the body are in close contact. The hand is applied to the hypochondriac region, and sometimes to that of the ovarium, so that the touch is exerted at once on many parts, and these the most sensitive parts of the body...the two faces almost touch, the breath is intermingled...*

---

[1] In private consultation, mesmerists physically stroked the subject's body from her head to the center of her abdomen (which Mesmer considered a site of magnetic activity). Others combined the strokes with passes. Some disciples later gave up Mesmer's practice of being alone with patients after accusations of sexual exploitation emerged.

[2] Brain overload remains an induction staple from sex to psychiatry (used in therapies from abreaction to electroshock): *"...the identical pattern of mounting nervous excitement and tension, leading on to states of collapse, temporary sleep and highly increased suggestibility."* **(Sargant, *The Mind Possessed*, p. 20)**

[3] The Franklin Commission Report soon appeared in English: "Animal Magnetism: Report of Dr. (Benjamin) Franklin and other Commissioners on Col. Stone's Pamphlet." **(Philadelphia: J. Johnson, 1785; Philadelphia: H. Perkins, 1837.** The Secret Addendum became available in English after the translation of *Animal Magnetism.* by Binet and Fere.

The report made clear that there was no specific touching of the genitalia. It noted, however, that prolonged touching did not need to be specific for the patients to experience erotic arousal and climax:

> *Women have, as a rule, more mobile nerves; their imagination is more lively and more easily excited...In touching any given part, it may be said that they are touched all over the body.*

Once the first subjects entered crisis, any others who would experience it tended to soon join in. The report explained that was because

> *...the mobility of their nerves also inclines them more readily to imitation...women are like musical strings stretched in perfect unison; when one is moved, all the others are instantly affected....This ...explains why the crises in women are more frequent, more violent, and of longer duration than in men...*

Bailly, the Reporter, described the physical signs of the crisis:

> *...the respiration is short and interrupted, the chest heaves rapidly, convulsions set in, and either the limbs or the whole body is agitated by sudden movements. In lively and sensitive women this last stage, which terminates the sweetest emotion, is often a convulsion; to this condition there succeed languor, prostration...*

In the private report for the king, the Commission concluded:

> *The magnetic treatment must necessarily be dangerous to morality. While proposing to cure diseases which require prolonged treatment, pleasing and precious emotions are excited...But morally they must be condemned...*

Bailly also noted that the lieutenant of police had asked M. Deslon (whose magnetizations the Commission had been observing) "whether, when a woman is magnetized and passing through the crisis, it would not be easy to outrage [rape] her." Deslon "replied in the affirmative." Deslon added that, for this reason, only "he and his colleagues, pledged by their position to act with probity, were entitled and privileged to practise magnetism."

The Commission members were not so confident that all danger could be controlled merely by limiting practice to Deslon and his colleagues. The Secret Addendum pointed out that the magnetizings could go on for "two or three hours at a time," a prolonged time during which "the physician can, if he will, take advantage of his patient...and no one can rely on being always master of his will."

Like Maxwell, Mesmer and his disciples believed that animal magnetism caused irrepressible sexual desire in women. The induction technique which the mesmerizers used actually maneuvered the female subject toward their expected outcome of sexual desire. The Secret Addendum was correct about the treatment being risky to morality.

Mesmer Loses Face—The Royal Commission rejected Mesmer's hypothesis of an invisible magnetic fluid. It concluded that the "chief causes of the effects ascribed to animal magnetism are contact, imagination, and imitation." After 80,000 copies of the Commission's general Report were printed and distributed, Mesmer then had to take a turn out of favor.

Ben Franklin went home. Revolution overthrew the French monarchy. Bailly, Lavoisier, and Thouret were executed by the guillotine. Mesmer argued with the scientists, trying to get them to accept that the invisible magnetic fluid was real. Eventually, he gave up and retired to Germany. He died there in 1815. In the history of hypnosis, however, he is important.

- Mesmer was the first person to push the scientific establishment to consider a scientific explanation for hypnotism. His relentless campaigning started the scientific study of hypnotism—and of the human unconscious.

- Mesmer emphasized the hypnotic phenomenon of **rapport**, which he defined as the mesmerist's mental sensitivity to the patient. (Puysegur later found it worked both ways.)

- Mesmer induced a state of **suggestibility**, then gave **suggestions** to relieve the patient's symptoms.

- Mesmer noted natural individual differences in **susceptibility**.

- Mesmer observed that repeated inductions progressively **trained** a subject and increased his or her **depth** of response.

After Mesmer, European scientists exploded in a frenzy of experimentation.

Abbe Faria

Abbe Faria came to Paris from India in 1814. He was the next sensational hypnotist after Mesmer. He hypnotized over 5,000 people. He used none of the "magnetic" props of Mesmer, and he cured many persons. He insisted his cures were not because of magnetism, but due to the hopeful expectancy and mental co-operation of his patients. He thereby shifted the study of trance from physical scientists to psychologists. Study of the physics of trance did not resume until the 1950s.

Deleuze

Jose Philippe Francois Deleuze was a French botanist whose two books, *Practical Instruction in Animal Magnetism* (1825), and *Animal Magnetism* (translated into English, 1846), are classic presentations of Mesmer's ideas. Deleuze believed that only sick people could be hypnotized. He believed that his passes moved magnetic fluid from the client's head area to his hands or feet. His goal was to create **harmony** in the patient.

His theory had problems, but his skill at hypnotizing was good. He used a **sensory deprivation induction**: a darkened room, comfortable temperature, no other persons present, and no interruptions. He worried a lot about the ethics of magnetizing! He advised that the best way to avoid future problems was to choose one's magnetist wisely. He said that only a woman should magnetize another woman in order to protect the subject's virtue, and also because a female patient might be more willing to discuss personal problems with another woman. Also, if a crisis (orgasm) were to occur, he believed that a man should not be present. He warned that visits of a male magnetist to a lady's home several times a week invited harmful gossip. He advised that, if a man was to magnetize a woman, he should demand the presence of a chaperone.

Deleuze was one of the first hypnotherapists to do **parts therapy.** He talked to different aspects of a person in trance, negotiating among their differing opinions. He noted the increased memory capacity of deeply hypnotized persons. He pointed out the importance of early childhood memories to later personality dynamics. He observed how much people differed in their ability to become hypnotized.

Marquis De Puysegur

> ***No curiosity will lead me to use him* [as a hypnotic subject] *and so disregard his health and well-being.***
>
> **- Marquis De Puysegur**

The Marquis de Puysegur (1751-1825) was a student of Mesmer who continued and greatly advanced the scientific study of hypnosis after his master's fall from status.[1] The Marquis was a Frenchman from the highest rank of nobility. He was also a man of strong moral uprightness. That quality of steady virtue protected his work from some of the errors of his master.

Puysegur, together with his two younger brothers, became interested in Mesmer's healing technique. After Mesmer's rejection by Parisian authorities, Puysegur went back to the family estate and there tried to accomplish magnetic cures for local peasants. They came to him with real afflictions, such as painful arthritis, rather than with the upper-class neuroses and general boredom of Mesmer's clientele. They were ignorant of what behavior Maxwell and Mesmer expected of them in trance (convulsive crises as a climactic stage of their trance). If patients were too ill to come to him, Puysegur went to where they lay, suffering, on straw pallets in thatched-roof cottages.

Puysegur magnetized them by mesmeric passes, believing that he was working with the invisible magnetic fluid, distributing it in a better way. In 1837, he wrote:

> *...your hand must not be stiff; let your fingers be a little bent...for it is from the end of the fingers that the fluid flows or radiates...give yourself up entirely to feelings of sympathy, and to the wish to relieve your patient. If he feels pain in particular*

---

[1] Oldtime authors call him De Puysegur; modern ones, Puysegur. For further information on Puysegur, see Laurence and Perry's chapter "Artificial Somnambulism," pp. 103-124, in *Hypnosis, Will, and Memory*; and Ellenberger's *Discovery of the Unconscious*.

> *parts, hold your hand some time on that part; continue your operation, for about half an hour.* **(quoted in Edmonston, *Hypnosis and Relaxation*)**

Puysegur and Race Discover Somnambulism

One of Puysegur's first patients was a young shepherd named Victor Race. No convulsions resulted from his efforts with Victor. Maybe Victor had not heard they were supposed to happen. Instead, the lad went into a profound **sleep**. His condition reminded Puysegur of a sleepwalker, yet, in that sleep, Race showed astonishing intelligence, clarity of mind, and ability to behave as if awake and aware. After the magnetizing was over, Victor was completely **amnesic** for all that had passed.

That episode was a turning point for Puysegur. During future mesmeric sessions, he began regularly to elicit patient responses more like Victor's than like those of Mesmer's clients. Instead of having convulsions, Puysegur's clients fell "asleep." Puysegur was glad. He much preferred "sleep" to "convulsions." As he continued to communicate to his patients an expectation of calm, he got trances so calm they surprised him. They were characterized by what seemed like sleep, or near-sleep, and total **relaxation**.

Puysegur named that state **artificial somnambulism.** (Braid later renamed it **hypnosis**.) The Marquis also recognized that he was dealing with two stages. The first was an **induction stage** during which the magnetist relaxed the subject. Then came a **secondary stage** in which the patient was quiet and obedient and might be given curative suggestions.

Puysegur Defines Somnambulist Phenomena

Puysegur did many significant experiments and analyses of somnambulist phenomena. Mesmer first used the word **rapport** to describe the hypnotic relationship, but he was referring to the mental state of the hypnotist. Puysegur extended the term to mean the intense and very personal bridge of relationship from subject to hypnotist as well as of hypnotist to subject.

Puysegur studied the spontaneous amnesia that sometimes appeared in his subjects. He noted that deeply entranced patients, during the trance, clearly could recall past events from their life, but after the trance they could remember nothing of what had happened during the trance. He noticed that trance improved both memory and mental performance. He was the first experimental hypnotist to systematically study the link between deep trance and extrasensory perceptions. His many experiments in that area began after Victor Race, in trance, seemed able to receive Puysegur's thoughts telepathically.

Puysegur Grapples with Moral Issues

Puysegur, like Paracelsus, the Franklin Commission, and Deleuze, was concerned over the possible immoral use of a somnambulist by her hypnotist. He asked two women in trance if their trance state would enable him to order them to undress. Both assured him that it would not. Their statements put his mind at ease on that subject. He wrote, "There are limits where the authority ceases..." **(quoted in Lawrence and Perry, p. 118)** Puysegur did not experiment to see if the women's ability to resist was real or imagined.

After Puysegur had done many experiments using Victor Race, he began to display his subject's extraordinary trance sensitivity in public demonstrations in Paris. Twice, Puysegur demonstrated Victor's behavior, in trance, to Mesmer. Victor's health declined. One day, during a trance, he told Puysegur that his health problems now "resulted from his being exhibited to curious and often incredulous people." **(Ellenberger, p. 72)**

Puysegur chose the morally sound response:

> *When he is in a crisis* [deep trance], *I don't know of anyone more deep, more careful, and more clear-sighted...none can equal him and this saddens me. By next Tuesday, it will be over; this man will not need to be touched any more. No curiosity will lead me to use him and so disregard his health and well-being.* **(Puysegur, quoted in Lawrence & Perry, p. 108)**

Puysegur respected his patients. He taught that magnetized patients should be used neither for stage performances, nor for experimental purposes. He said that the only morally permissible reason for trance induction would be to give medical treatment.

However, he included somnambulists among those qualified to give treatment. He believed that somnambulists could diagnosis illness in other persons and prescribe treatments. His somnambulists, being hypnotized, always believed they could do whatever the hypnotist said they could, and tried their unconscious best. Being in deep trance, the subject's guesses would often be preternaturally accurate. Puysegur's idea became popular and magnetist-somnambulist "medical" pairs became a common (and profitable) stage act.

He did not approve of solo hypno-medical acts, however. One day, Puysegur caught a former patient of his pretending to self-hypnotize, then diagnosing illness and prescribing medication. The Marquis stopped the peasant's profitable quackery.

Puysegur opened a school to teach how to magnetize and how to operate a clinic of magnetic medicine. He taught that Mesmer's theory of hands and batons pushing around a **universal magnetic fluid** was false. Instead, Puysegur said, hypnotic phenomena happened because the magnetist's powerful will of mind set "into action the vital principle of" (the unconscious mind of) his patients. He was talking abut one mind directly influencing another.

Puysegur managed to make it through the French Revolution (which he, at first, supported) serving merely two years in jail. For the rest of his life, he worked with sick people.

Contributions of Puysegur

Puysegur debunked the Maxwell belief that hypnosis must result in erotic abandon. He dumped the Mesmer delusion that it must result in "crisis." He discovered and defined a purer and more researchable condition of trance: somnambulism. He developed a new understanding of the phenomena and medical applications of trance. He created the first psychological theory of hypnosis: that the mental will of the hypnotist stimulates a response in the subject's mind. He urged the use of rapport for good, rather than for evil. His students became a new kind of magnetizer who used the vocabulary created by Mesmer, but whose quiet, medical style of trance management was modeled on Puysegur.

His work reversed some of the scientific community's rejection of animal magnetism resulting from the Franklin Commission's Report. Because of Puysegur, for the next hundred years, France became a world center for the scientific study of hypnotism. The grand old man must have grieved to see what some of those researchers did to their subjects, but one of them, Liebeault, worked in the best of Puysegur's moral tradition.

Liebeault, Bernheim, and the "Nancy School"

...92% of his attempts were successful, which may reflect the innate trust of his clientele.

- William James, *The Principles of Psychology*, p. 594

Liebeault

William James, in the above quote, was speaking of Auguste Ambroise Liebeault (1823-1904), the next important French hypnosis researcher after Puysegur. Liebeault was a poverty-stricken country doctor and a student of Azam (the first person to attempt artificial personality-splitting under hypnosis). For twenty years, Liebeault toiled in obscurity, practicing his hypnotic techniques on patients. Some people called him a quack. They were wrong.

It was Liebeault who first recognized the connection between the physical act of looking upward and increased susceptibility to hypnosis. He first numbered and characterized the **depth stages of trance**. Liebeault insisted that trance induction was normal, that it worked because of a natural quality of human suggestibility, and that it could cure people without harming them. He asked nothing for his help. He said, "If you wish to be treated by drugs you must pay. If, however, you allow me to treat you by hypnotism, I will do so free of charge!" His rate of successful hypnoses was the highest known, to date.

Liebeault, the unselfish physician to peasants, whose every recorded hypnotic action suggested an attitude of kindness and respect for his patients, also insisted that abusive hypnosis was possible. He believed that the hypnotist was morally responsible for the response of a subject to suggestions given under hypnosis.

In 1866, he published a book on his methods, *Du Sommeil*. Only one copy sold.

Bernheim

A sciatica patient, who had previously been seen by the Nancy Medical School's prominent neurologist, Hippolyte Marie Bernheim (1840-1919), and had not been helped, tried Liebeault's alternative treatment and was cured. After hearing that, Bernheim set out to confront and expose the quack. Upon meeting Liebeault, however, Bernheim became convinced that the unpretentious country doctor had discovered a valuable healing technique.

Bernheim first became Liebeault's pupil, then his professional associate. He taught Liebeault's methods in his classes at the medical school. More copies of *Du Sommeil* sold. The partners, Liebeault and Bernheim, became known as the **Nancy School**. Over the coming years, they hypnotized and treated more than 12,000 persons.

The Nancy School used **mind blanking** ("think of nothing"), and **eye fixation** ("look into my eyes"), followed by **eye closure** ("now just close your eyes"), and **sleep suggestions** to induct subjects. They demonstrated, over and over, that hypnosis did not have to be the weird theatre of Mesmer or the weird medicine of Charcot. In their clinic, the trance experience was quiet, normal, and focused on its medical purpose.

Bernheim experimented with **posthypnotic suggestion**. He hypnotized a former army sergeant and told him to go to Dr. Liebeault on a certain day two months later, "and you will see the President of the Republic—who will give you a medal and a pension." The subject was amnesic for Bernheim's instructions. On the specified day, he entered Liebeault's office, walked over to where a visitor stood, bowed low to him, and called him "Your Excellency." As Liebeault approached, the sergeant again bowed to the confused visitor, and murmured, "I thank Your Excellency."

Liebeault asked, "To whom are you speaking?"

The sergeant answered, "Obviously, to the President of the Republic."

Bernheim pondered the phenomenon of **rapport**, that highly charged and special relationship between hypnotist and patient.[1] He recognized the extent to which a suggestible person will **role-play** and act out the expectation of the hypnotist: "A word, a motion, a tone of voice puts them on the track."

---

[1] Freud , who began his clinical phase as a hypnotist, was influenced by Bernheim. Freud evolved the concept of **rapport** into the idea of **transference.**

He pared the technique of verbal induction down to its essential of **suggested inhibition**, a single-idea focus on **sleep**. He told his subjects to think only of sleep. He suggested that their eyes were tired and beginning to wink, with eyelids feeling heavy, and vision becoming blurred. Then he would suggest eye closure, **eyelid catalepsy** ("Your lids are stuck together, you cannot open them."), and falling asleep.

Bernheim wrote two books: *Hypnosis and Suggestion in Psychotherapy* (1884) and *Suggestive Therapeutics* (1889). In them, he clearly described the situation of an amnesic hypnotic subject who unknowingly carries out posthypnotic commands. He believed that a susceptible hypnotic subject could be caused to commit violence, or to submit to seduction, because of his **automatism**. He said that false memories could be suggested under hypnosis. He believed that hypnotized women could be sexually abused. He kept a tally of crimes which had been committed upon hypnotized women, or had been committed as a result of hypnotic suggestion.

Bernheim believed that posthypnotic obedience to immoral suggestion was caused by **automatism,** rather than by a subject's lack of character. One day, he staged an experiment in this area. He suggested, to a hypnotized man, that a **hallucination** of a person standing in front of him had just insulted him. The hypnotist then handed his subject a knife made of paper, told him it was a "dagger," and instructed him to stab the hallucination. The subject leaped forward, making fierce stabbing motions. Then he stood rigid, wild-eyed and trembling, staring at the "man" whom he had just killed.

He also wrote about **disguised induction:** hypnosis obtained in a subject without using a recognized induction process and without having informed the subject. And he considered the physiological basis of trance, noting that very sick, or unconscious, people may behave as if hypnotized.

Bernheim's writings were widely accepted as authoritative; they helped move him into leadership of the Nancy group.

Beaunis

Beaunis, the third member of the Nancy School, was a French lawyer and Bernheim's friend. Beaunis agreed with Bernheim that a trained somnambulist can be reduced to automaton-like behavior, even to the extent of doing self-injurious and unethical actions. Beaunis was also a hypnotist. One day, he hypnotized a young woman and gave her a posthypnotic suggestion to see him come into her room and wish her "Happy New Year" on the morning of January 1, 1885, six months away. On January 1, Beaunis was in Paris, yet the subject (obeying his suggestion for the post-hypnotic hallucination) "saw" him in her room in Nancy. She was flattered that the great man had personally come to greet her.

Liegeois

Like Beaunis, Jules Liegeois was a lawyer. He was fascinated with hypnosis and represented himself as an individual who was deeply concerned about the unethical use of hypnosis. He was a member of the prestigious Academy of Moral and Political Sciences, and he produced a lengthy (four-chapter) monograph on "the possibility of utilizing the hypnotic state for criminal actions...and presented a report on hypnotic suggestion in its relation to law." **(Hammerschlag, pp. 14-15)** He cited numerous French legal cases involving hypnosis, from 1830 up to his day.

Like the others, Liegeois was himself a hypnotist. He had a somnambulist subject named Camille "...[who] would remain impassive and indifferent when a pin was stuck full length through her arm or a piece of burning charcoal put in her hand..." (That goes far toward "utilizing the hypnotic state for criminal actions," as far as I'm concerned.) In another experiment, Liegeois used posthypnotic suggestion to cause a girl to make, before a government official, a detailed, false confession in which she claimed to have committed a bizarre and horrible murder of her friend.

Liegeois was the first hypnotist to use a telephone to contact, and rehypnotize, a subject:

> *M. Liegeois has hypnotized some of his subjects at a distance of 1 1/2 kilometers by giving them an intimation* [induction cue] *to that effect through a telephone.* **(William James, *The Principles of Psychology*, p. 594)**

Binet and Fere

These two French hypnosis researchers, Binet and Fere, technically belonged to the Nancy School's competition, the Salpetriere group. Fere was an Assistant Physician at the Salpetriere mental hospital in Paris. However, Binet and Fere sided with the Nancy school in public arguments on the issue of **antisocial hypnosis**. In their coauthored book, *Animal Magnetism (*published in English in 1888), they insisted that obedience to abusive or criminal suggestions was possible in a heavily conditioned subject:

> *Many persons are agitated by the idea that a stranger may influence and dispose of them as if they were mere automata. This is certainly dangerous to human liberty, and it is a danger which increases with the repetition of experiments.*

A Case of Suggested Theft

Liebeault devoted a chapter in his book to the dangers of hypnosis. Yet he personally was involved in a tragic case of crime suggested under hypnosis. The case began one October day, in 1886, when another doctor, X, visited Liebeault. X said he had come in hopes of seeing an experiment that would demonstrate the possibility of criminal suggestion.

Dr. Liebeault good-naturedly agreed and hypnotized a somnambulist teen-aged boy, N, for the demonstration. The doctor told N that on the following morning he would go to the house of a certain one of the doctor's friends and, therein, steal a pair of small statues that were displayed on a chimney ledge. He further instructed that, after two days had passed, the boy would feel an emotion of sincere guilt for what he had done and return the statues to their owner.

While N was still hypnotized, before Dr. Liebeault could conclude the trance, Dr. X excitedly "intruded and suggested in an authoritarian voice: `You will steal! Do you hear me? You will steal!'" **(Lawrence and Perry, p. 230)**

Liebeault then awakened the boy and sent him on his way. Dr. X happened to encounter the unfortunate lad again several hours afterward in a local restaurant. X was with friends to whom he wished to display his ability to achieve obedience in the controversial area of giving criminal suggestions. This time X hypnotized N himself. Then X told N to steal several small items plus a raincoat which was hanging from a wall hook. N obeyed every suggestion. Unfortunately, X neglected to cancel his urgings to "Steal!" before awakening N and leaving, so N was left with the suggestion functioning posthypnotically.

At first, no trouble was apparent. N stole the statues as Lieubeault had directed, then felt guilty and returned them, as directed. But, unknown to Lieubeault, he then continued to steal. Shortly afterward he was arrested for theft of a series of cheap items, mostly clothing. Police found in his pocket a notebook in which he had kept a record of every stolen article. He also confessed.

Liegeois visited N in jail. He requested permission from the court to testify on the possible role of Dr. X and the experiment in the case. His offer was turned down. N was sent to jail for two months.

Liebeault volunteered to hypnotize N and undo the problem suggestion. N's father, however, who was exceedingly unhappy about the previous hypnoses of his (underage) son, forebade any further hypnoses.

Binet and Fere said, that from the point of view of a predatory hypnotist, **amnesia**—spontaneous or suggested—was the most important aspect of hypnosis.

> *These facts show that the hypnotic subject may become the instrument of a terrible crime, the more terrible since, immediately after the act is accomplished, all may be forgotten—the crime, the impulse, and its instigator.*

They reported an incident in which the subject's amnesia stayed firm, despite physical injury during trance. A hypnotized woman, with whom they were experimenting, fell. Her head hit hard on the floor. Neither her fall, nor the excitement of spectators in the room after she fell, brought her out of trance. When Binet and Fere awakened her from trance in the usual manner...

> *...the subject was astonished by the pain in her head...*[she]*could not understand whence it came. We are, therefore, justified in the assertion that a subject of profound hypnotism may undergo all sorts of violence without retaining any recollection or consciousness of it...We even think it possible that a subject might be violated* [raped] *in the hypnotic state, in which she would be unable to offer any resistance.* **(Binet and Fere, p. 367)**

They also observed that subjects who suffered from suggested amnesia could remember all under **rehypnotization**.

Charcot and the Salpetriere Group

The hypnotic sleep, which is produced with so much difficulty and delay in fresh subjects, occurs with alarming rapidity in those who have been long under treatment. Some of our patients are hypnotized at once by a single abrupt gesture, and this may be effected in all places alike, and at any hour of the day. If we meet one of these subjects crossing the courtyard, an exclamation or abrupt gesture will cause her to stop short and become motionless in catalepsy. She may be as instantaneously awakened by breathing on her forehead or eyes....This is a somewhat important fact from the medico-legal point of view....a suggestion may be given in a sleep of very short duration...in the course of fifteen seconds we could throw a subject into a lethargy, then into somnambulism, suggest an act, and then awake him. It is, therefore, possible that an individual might make use of the fifteen seconds in which he found himself alone with a susceptible subject to inculcate an idea, an hallucination, or an impulse.

- Binet and Fere, 1888, *Animal Magnetism*, pp. 364-5

Binet and Fere may have written the above warning with the situation in mind of the Salpetriere, a Paris medical poorhouse and insane asylum that housed more than 4,000 women. Jean Marie Charcot worked and researched there. He was the chief doctor for many of those women, especially ones who had convulsions—physiological or hysterical.

Charcot began his publishing career with a celebrated report on how to distinguish true epileptics from hysterics who were unconsciously mimicking epilepsy. He also did good studies of lung and kidney disorders, and worthwhile observations on **hysterical paralyses**. Soon, Charcot was considered the foremost neurologist in the world. He became rich and powerful. Foreign, as well as French, patients sought him out. The Salpetriere became famous because Charcot and the famous physiologists, Tourette and Babinsky, were there.

Charcot then began to study **hysteria** using the same method of physiological observation that had worked so well with the epilepsy mimickers and the patients with hysterical paralyses. He theorized 1) the existence of an **unconscious,** and 2) the role of an unconscious **fixed idea** in causing a **neurosis** (concepts which Freud would later build on). He discovered that he could suggest to a hypnotic subject that she had a paralysis and it would appear. He could then suggest that her paralysis had gone, and it would disappear. He noticed that "attacks" of hypnosis were followed by amnesia, and that those lost memories could be recalled under rehypnotization, if there was no associated brain damage. Those observations were all sound.

Weird Science

While studying hypnosis, Charcot tried to boil down all the phenomena of trance into a single neurological illness. That gross oversimplification caused him to make even more misses than hits. For example, Charcot declared that only women could be hypnotized—and only those women who had that mental illness which he called "hysteria**."**

Charcot taught his students that all hysterics are sexually obsessed and sexually uncontrolled, having insatiable nymphomaniac tendencies (the ghost of Maxwell here?). He taught that a hysteric was likely to have "hysterical stigmata" [hickeys? bruises? abraisions?] scattered over her body, especially on the breasts, lower abdomen, and inside her mouth and vagina. Some authors say Charcot taught that hysterics are numb everywhere except in the genital area. Other writers say Charcot claimed that the stigmata-affected areas were insensitive in a hysteric and could be stimulated without the woman knowing it. Charcot also declared that all hysterics were liars (likely, for example, to falsely claim sexual abuse by their doctor, interns, and attendants).

Since he insisted that any female who was capable of trance was an hysteric, mentally ill, dangerous, and seductive, Charcot could not imagine hypnosis being used for a therapeutic purpose. He claimed that every trance

crisis (using the same vocabulary as Mesmer) was divided into a complex series of set stages. Charcot did not realize that one subject's behavior had suggested this pattern to him—and later subjects had mimicked his expectations.

Charcot believed that hysterics entered trance spontaneously. He claimed that he never deliberately hypnotized anybody. If the subject did not go into trance spontaneously, however, when Charcot wanted her to do so, the doctor would press on her eyeballs until she did enter trance!

Charcot invited all the intellectuals of Paris to come and watch his stable, of less than a dozen young women, going through their crises at his regularly scheduled psychiatric circus at the Salpetriere. He did not realize that the lecture preceding his demonstration told the suggestible patient exactly how to behave in her trance. (And saved her from getting her eyeballs pushed in.)

He first lectured that stimulation of the female hysteric's erotic zones would trigger a predictable sequence of crisis stages. Then he would choose a subject, begin to stimulate her zones, and the show began. The first expected stage was rigidity ("human plank"). The woman would arch her body from head to heels. She could, in this rigid, catatonic state, be placed between two chairs and sat, walked, or bounced upon. Her second expected stage involved overt sexual delusions. In the last stage, the woman hallucinated seeing animals around her. (She was surrounded by animals, all right, but they were human.)

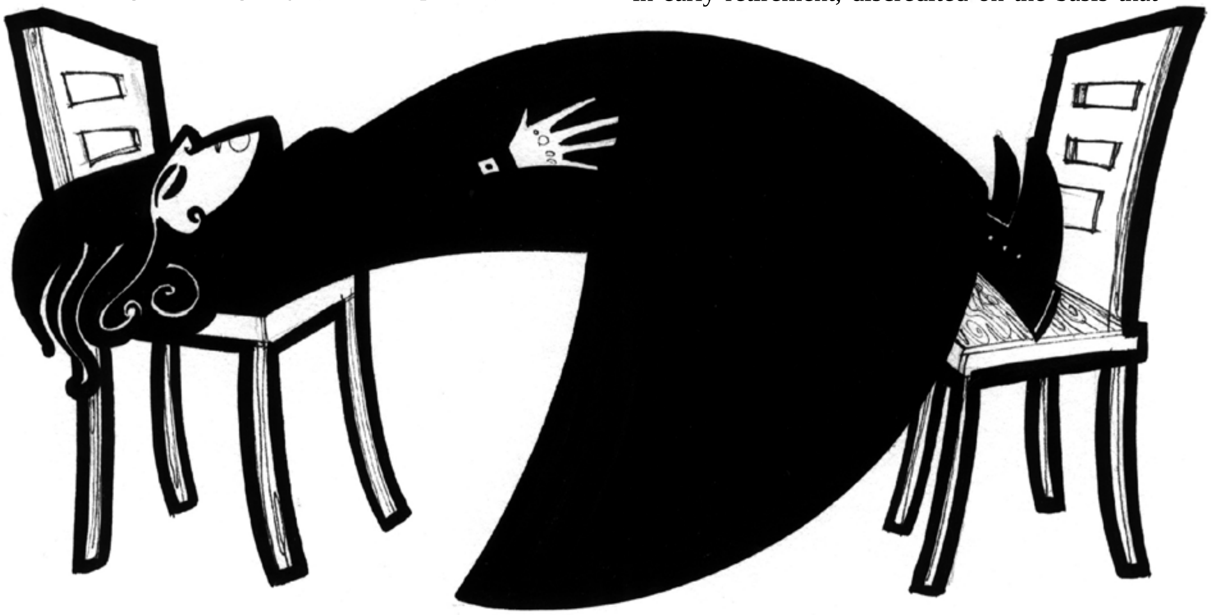

Lewd Desires—A further tragedy suffered by Charcot's patients was inadequate supervision. Not only was their doctor a sexually-twisted ghoul, but other Salpetriere staff members followed his example. Charcot's description of their supposed illness was an ugly male fantasy projected (or forced) onto these suggestible women (usually young and pretty) who had been publicly defined by him as having a disease characterized by uncontrollable sexual fantasies, lewd desires, amnesia following "crisis," and compulsions to falsely claim sexual molestation.

Charcot's "hysterics" were frequently visited, hypnotized , and ? , in their hospital quarters by inappropriate people. For example, in 1889, a group of male students at the Salpetriere tried to cause a young woman named Witt., while in trance, to "strip and take a bath." She was not as sexually voracious and uncontrolled as Charcot taught. She **converted** their inappropriate order and, instead, went into "a violent fit of hysterics." Another "hysteric" gave birth to a child mysteriously conceived in the hospital.

Like Mesmer, Charcot is remembered for persuading the French scientific establishment to seriously investigate hypnotic phenomena. Bernheim later recalled, however, that of all the thousands of clients he hypnotized, the only one who ever displayed Charcot's exact list of trance stages, was a former Salpetriere patient. After his years of fame, Charcot spent an even greater number of years in early retirement, discredited on the basis that his theories were simply wacky. In the last year of his life (d. 1893), even Charcot realized that he had been mistaken.

In the meantime, his team had spent a lot of time in court arguing with the Nancy School.

The Case of Pauline

Tourette's 1887 book on hypnotism details a case involving the hypno-abuse of one of the Salpetriere's hysterics. Pauline was an 18-year-old girl who was easily hypnotized. One day, she was hypnotized by an unauthorized person who gave her a posthypnotic suggestion that, at 4:00 p.m., she must find the hospital's priest and "embrace" him. He gave her a further posthypnotic suggestion that she would be unable to reveal who had given her that instruction. At 4:00 p.m., Pauline

> *...suddenly arose, got out of bed and went across the room to the door. The nurse who was on duty asked her where she was going. "I am going to Father X," she said; "I want to embrace him." They thought she had become insane and did not let her go out of the room. This led to an indescribable scene. Pauline made desperate attempts to free herself; she had to be tied down. In the following hours she had an attack of cramp of unusual intensity; she made piercing cries and disturbed the remaining patients. The doctor on duty was informed. After he had made several vain attempts to calm Pauline, the idea occurred to him to put her to sleep so as to bring her to rest by means of suggestion. He now discovered how it all happened, because as soon as Pauline was asleep she told him about the events of the morning without, however, mentioning the name of the one who had given her the suggestion...* **(Tourette, p. 131, quoted in Hammerschlag, pp. 75-77)**

Now the doctor knew what the problem was, but he was unable to cancel the previous suggestion. Pauline's distress continued, unabated, all night. By the next morning, a search had revealed the identity of the perpetrator. He was taken to Pauline's room, required to hypnotize her and undo that frivolous command. He did so. Pauline immediately was released from the posthypnotic compulsion and became calm.

Several days later, however, it all happened again. Pauline had a sudden compulsion to find and embrace the priest. This time, the doctor immediately hypnotized her and asked where she had gotten the suggestion. She said, that morning, on the staircase, she had encountered three persons who had hypnotized her and given her the command to embrace the priest along with the commond that she would experience severe pains if she did not embrace him—or if she revealed who had given her the suggestion. Again, Pauline was in acute distress with the need to carry out the suggestion. This time, the doctor could not discover the guilty parties. So they found the priest, and explained the problem to him. He kindly allowed Pauline to embrace him. She then became normal again.

Nancy vs. Salpetriere in Court

Being doctors, Liebeault and Bernheim focused on discovering ways to use hypnosis to solve medical problems. When the lawyers, Liegeois and Beaunis, joined the Nancy School, however, they brought interest in the legal aspects of hypnosis. Between 1884 and 1890, Liegeois and/or Beaunis fought one case after another involving hypnosis.

Liegeois took an absolutistic position: "any individual placed in a somnambulistic state will become in the hands of the experimenter a complete automaton, both morally and physically." He and Beaunis used Bernheim and Liebeault as expert witnesses. They cited experimental results from the writings of European trance researchers and the outcomes of previous legal cases which had involved hypnotic abuse.

Brouardel was the lawyer who usually argued against Liegeois and Beaunis. Brouardel always insisted that misuse of hypnosis was simply impossible, citing the **dogma of moral integrity.** The dogma is a legal fiction with a long history, which has persisted up to the present day. It deals with the question of whether somebody can be made to do something immoral by means of hypnosis. According to the dogma of moral integrity, if a hypnotist causes a subject to do something immoral, then the subject was an immoral person who wanted to do that immoral thing. If a hypnotist caused a subject to do something self-injurious, or criminal, the dogma made it, always, the subject's fault.

The Nancy School did not believe in the dogma. Brouardel and the Salpetriere staff, except for Fere, did believe in it. Brouardel called staff associated with the Salpetriere as his expert witnesses. Charcot had only a dozen Salpetriere hysterics on which to experiment, whereas Liebeault and Bernheim had hypnotized thousands of persons of both sexes and all psychological types. The Salpetriere gang treated their hypnotic subjects with scorn, circus-like manipulation, and inappropriate suggestions. They had awesome credentials, however, and they all insisted that exploitation by means of hypnosis was quite impossible, so sometimes Brouardel would win the case.

The series of legal cases involving hypnosis, which the two sides fought, catapulted the Nancy School from obscurity to the Salpetriere's level of Parisian notoriety. The persons and their positions became very well-known to Europeans living in that period of history. The most famous case over which they battled was Gabrielle Bompard's murder trial.

Everybody Hypnotized Gabrielle

In 1890, a young woman named Gabrielle Bompard was accused of the murder of Gouffe, a Paris bailiff. She was tried, together with a man named Eyraud who was accused of using suggestions given under hypnosis to cause Gabrielle to commit that murder. In the end, Eyraud received a death sentence and was executed. Gabrielle was sentenced to twenty years in prison at forced labor. Gabrielle's story illustrates the potential fate of a genetically somnambulist European girl in the late 1800s.

After Gabrielle's mother died when she was eight, the child became rebellious. To subdue and control his daughter, her father placed her, for the next decade, in a variety of convent boarding schools. By age eighteen, however, she was considered to have calmed down and was successfully living at home.

Then Gabrielle discovered that her father was sexually involved with the maid. Soon after, Gabrielle took a lover of her own. Wanting to end his daughter's affair, her father sent her to his friend, Dr. Sacreste, for some minor surgery. He privately asked the doctor to hypnotize Gabrielle into a state of emotional and sexual repression. Dr. Sacreste was able to hypnotize Gabrielle deeply enough to perform the surgery with hypnosis as the only anesthetic. While she was hypnotized, Sacreste questioned her regarding the affair. He then gave suggestions meant to end her relationship with the young man, sent her home, and passed on the titillating and shocking private details of her romance to her father.

Gabrielle's lover, however, did not let the affair end. He began to hypnotize Gabrielle himself, giving her suggestions in deep trance which were meant to counter the doctor's influence. Her father sent her to Dr. Sacreste for more treatments. Gabrielle's unconscious was now a battlezone between the two most important people in her life. Her father (via Dr. Sacreste) and her lover, who continued also to hypnotize and give suggestions to her. The content of their suggestions directly conflicted, but both men were training Gabrielle to be an ever more automatistic hypnotic subject.

Gabrielle made a final choice. She left home to be with her lover. Her father, considering his battle lost, paid Dr. Sacreste's bill, wrote off his daughter, and returned his attentions to the maid. Gabrielle probably had hoped to live happily ever after with a good man who also happened to be her hypnotist. It didn't turn out that way. Once the thrill of competition for control of Gabrielle was over, her lover, quite unlovingly, abandoned her. That made her what they called in those days, a "fallen woman." With her chances for marriage now ruined, and with no family to fall back on, Gabrielle did what many young people in Europe of that day (and since) in similar circumstances did: she went to the big city, Paris.

In Paris, she met Eyraud, age 48. She also met another man. Both of them hypnotized her—almost daily. Then the murder happened. Afterwards, Gabrielle said that she did not know Eyraud had planned to kill Gouffe. She said that she thought he planned only blackmail. After she killed him, Gabrielle spent the rest of the night alone in her room, frozen in terror, staring at Gouffe's dead body where it lay across the foot of her bed.

The next morning, Eyraud collected the catatonic Gabrielle, and the loot, and fled from Paris to New York City. There, they met a young businessman named Garanger who was flashing lots of cash. Since he was now running short on the funds stolen from Gouffe, Eyraud planned to extort this convenient new target, and therefore cultivated a friendship with Garanger.

Gabrielle, however, saw in the young man's friendship an entirely different set of possibilities. Here, she imagined, was a chance for her to switch men, escape from Eyraud, and straighten out her life. One day, when Eyraud was out of town, Gabrielle told everything to Garanger. Garanger pitied her and spirited her, and himself, away from Eyraud—back to Paris. (He also frequently hypnotized her.)

Bernheim later described Gabrielle as "lacking in moral sense," but she did the right thing at this time (and paid dearly for it). Upon reaching Paris, January 22, 1890, she and Garanger went directly to the police station. They walked inside together and she turned herself in. She told the police that Eyraud actually was the person who was responsible for Gouffe's murder. She said that Eyraud's hypnotic suggestions had compelled her to lure Gouffe to her room, where she put the rope around his neck, strangled, and robbed him.

Eyraud was arrested in Havana, Cuba, and extradited to France to stand trial. Like all the other criminal hypnotists on trial, he denied ever having deeply hypnotized Gabrielle.

Gabrielle continued to be hypnotized, now by the authorities. They found that her trances were deep and displayed all the accepted proofs of somnambulist automatism. Those hypnoses and interrogations of Gabrielle while in trance, however, were just office entertainment. They had no expected role in the trial. Brouardel, from the Salpetriere group, explained:

> *Needless to say, none of these questions were related to the events under investigation...She also responded to a number of posthypnotic suggestions with success. These observations buttressed the experts' diagnosis that she was indeed a neurotic individual...It never occurred to us, and it could not occur to us, that hypnotism and hypnotic suggestion could have had a role in the behaviors that Gabrielle was accused of.* **(Brouardel, quoted in Lawrence & Perry, p. 251)**

This famous trial provided an opportunity for the greatest hypnosis experts in Europe to strut their stuff. Liegeois, of the Nancy School, argued that criminal behavior could be suggested under hypnosis. The other experts who testified, however, were all from the Salpetriere: Brouardel, Motet, and Ballet. Those three all adhered to Charcot's positions that:

a) *The ability to be hypnotized is confined to females and symptomatic of a female mental illness called "hysteria."*

b) *Hysterics are, by nature, immoral persons.*

c) *Crime cannot be caused by hypnotic suggestion.*

Dr. Sacreste testified at the trial in Gabrielle's defense. He said that, being a somnambulist, she would have obeyed even criminal suggestions. A prosecution hypnotist rebutted Sacreste's testimony by pointing out that the doctor had not been able to make Gabrielle leave her lover. He declared that fact, itself, proved that Gabrielle could not be controlled by hypnosis and that she was naturally inclined toward lack of character.

The regular jail physician, Dr. Voisin, often hypnotized Gabrielle when Brouardel, Motet, and Ballet were not. Her defense lawyer called Dr. Voisin as a witness because he had heard that, during Voisin's many hypnoses of Gabrielle, the doctor had been able to clarify some facts in the case. When examined under oath, however, Voisin refused to become involved: "I cannot testify. Both as a doctor and as a government employee, I am required to observe professional confidentiality." **(pp. 1210-1211, of *"Affaire Eyraud-Bompard" in Gazette des Tribunaux*, 1, December, 1890.)**

The court convicted Gabrielle, saying, "An honest subject resists a dishonest suggestion and if he obeys it, it is not because his will is subjugated but because he consents." The doctors at the Salpetriere, the unofficial Parisian headquarters for unethical toying with hypnotic subjects, were pleased with the decision.

Gabrielle served the full twenty years at hard labor. After her release, a French journalist hypnotized and regressed her to the time before the murder. He learned that, at first, she had resisted Eyraud's posthypnotic instruction to commit the murder. Eyraud forcefully repeated the suggestion. He hammered it in, over and over, until Gabrielle's unconscious yielded.

Tourette

Gilles de la Tourette was an associate of Charcot at the Salpetriere. Like Charcot, Tourette believed that hysteria was a female disease, that hypnotizability was conclusive evidence of mental illness, and that no moral and normal person could be caused to do a criminal act by means of hypnosis. Tourette, however, sided with the Nancy School on two important points. He said that a hypnotized woman could be sexually violated, and he said that she could be caused to lie by means of hypnosis.

Janet

Pierre Janet (1859-1947) succeeded Charcot as the star of the Salpetriere. Janet refined and improved Charcot's theories. He discarded many that were wrong, and developed some that were right. He continued Charcot's mistaken doctrine that hypnotizability proves that the subject is mentally ill, but he made important amendments to that view. Janet said that hysterics were the most easily hypnotized, but not the only hypnotizable persons. He recognized the role of training: the more a patient is hypnotized, the easier it becomes to hypnotize that person.

Nevertheless, he retained Charcot's arrogant notion of a social abyss between the "healthy" hypnotist and his “disordered” subject. That prejudice excused all the cruel, scornful experiments that experimenters did to their subjects (and what stage hypnotists did to their mediums). Janet wrote:

> *The relationship of a hypnotizable patient to the hypnotist does not differ in any essential way from the relationship of a lunatic to the superintendent of an asylum.*

Janet believed that hypnotic induction required deception, and that its nature must always be disguised from the patient. He excused that deception on the basis that it was a doctor’s professional duty to prescribe whatever would do the most good and in a way that would work.

Across the Channel: Braid and Bramwell

The action in hypnoresearch, in the 18th and 19th centuries, was mostly in mainland Europe, especially France. James Braid, a Scottish doctor, became an important exception. He first became interested in magnetism, in 1841, while watching a demonstration by the Frenchman Lafontaine in Manchester, England. When Lafontaine announced to the audience that his subject was “sound asleep,” the English doctor demanded the chance to examine her. Lafontaine welcomed him to do so.

When Dr. Braid raised the subject’s eyelids, he found, to his astonishment, that her pupils were contracted to two small points. The doctor then jammed a pin up under one of the subject’s fingernails, clear to its end. She gave no sign of feeling pain. Dr. Braid concluded that her condition was quite real. He began to magnetize people himself. Braid rejected Lafontaine’s theory of a “universal fluid,” however. His competing theory, that trance was based in brain physiology, helped make hypnosis credible to British scientists.

Unfortunately, Braid then decided that phrenology was also true and combined his ideas on hypnotism with the lore of head bumpology. The skeptics were again empowered.

Braid coined the terms **hypnotism** and **hypnosis** (from the Greek root “hypnos” which means “sleep”). He later realized that hypnosis was a different state of consciousness from sleep, but those words have remained in use. He treated hypnosis in a matter-of-fact way, integrating it into a medical setting. Some of the induction techniques he developed are still in use. He replaced staring at a hand with staring at a light. He hypnotized sighted persons in the dark and also blind persons, proving that simple mental concentration worked as well as staring at a visual target, and that verbal suggestion helped induction. He developed an induction which was based on concentrating on a single idea. Hypnotizing without a formal patter, he discovered a disguised, conversational induction.

Braid noted the **dissociation** phenomenon by which a hypnotized person can attend to more than one thing at once, one part seemingly unaware of the other. He defined **somnambulism** as any trance state deep enough that the subject is naturally amnesic. Between 1843 and 1852, he published a series of books on hypnotism.

J. Milne Bramwell was an Englishman who read Braid’s books and carried on his research. In 1903, he published *Hypnotism: Its History, Practice and Theory*. Bramwell pioneered the **pre-induction interview** as a means to gain the patient’s trust and understanding. He also corrected any “misconceptions” or fears of the client which might cause resistance to induction. If he encountered resistance to verbal induction, Bramwell sometimes used drugs. Reiter called him a “moderate adherent” to the belief in the possibility of unethical hypnosis. **(Reiter, p. 38)**

Pavlovian Vocabulary

> ***If we could look through the skull into the brain of a consciously thinking person, and if the place of optimal excitability were luminous, then we should see playing over the cerebral surface, a bright spot with fantastic, waving borders constantly fluctuating in size and form, surrounded by a darkness more or less deep, covering the rest of the hemispheres.***
>
> **Pavlov*, Lectures on Conditioned Reflexes***

Estabrooks, Sargant, Salter, Wells, and the **behaviorists** in general, are successors to Pavlov's research tradition. The above-named experimental hypnotists considered Pavlov's work to be the scientific foundation of the physiological study of hypnosis. Pavlov himself, however, is hard to read because he speaks Pavlovian. Here follows an explanation of the most important Pavlovian vocabulary, having to do with hypnosis, used by him and his successors.

Complete Inhibition

Complete inhibition is Pavlovian for normal sleep.

Cortex Inhibition

Cortex inhibition is Pavlovian for trance induction.

Excitation-inhibition

Chemical messengers (neurotransmitters) cause electrical **excitation** or **inhibition** in the individual brain cells. When neurons fire neurotransmitters across their separating synapses, they are attempting to excite the targeted neurons. If neurons do not fire, they are in a condition of inhibition.

Pavlov believed that inhibition was a natural protection against overexcitation. Now, some scientists estimate that as much as 90% of the brain's chemical effort is devoted to inhibition. (Maybe it is that much harder, but that necessary, to usually say "no" rather than "yes.")

Excitation can result in inhibition in two ways. Any repetitive, monotonous stimulation (excitation) eventually results in inhibition. Also, any overstimulation will eventually result in inhibition—a burnout:

> *...inhibition is ever appearing in the role of a guardian of the most reactive cells of the organism, the cortical cells of the cerebral hemispheres, protecting them...when they meet with very strong excitations, securing for them necessary rest, after the usual daily work, in the form of sleep.* **(Pavlov, *Lectures on Conditioned Reflexes*, p. 39)**

Irradiation-Concentration

Patterns of neural excitation, or inhibition, **irradiate** (spread) or **concentrate** (contract). The irradiation or concentration starts from a particular center and moves out (irradiation) or contracts inward (concentration). The spreading or contracting of excitation happens in response to stimuli coming either from outside or inside the brain.

In this section's opening quote, Pavlov accurately envisioned the spreading cloud of electrochemical activity associated with any mental activity expanding with greater mental busyness (contracting with inhibition when the activity is over). Now, by means of PET scans, we can look through the skull of a thinking person and see the phenomena of irradiation and concentration, mind at work, similar to what Pavlov envisioned.

Hypnotic Phases

Increasing cortical inhibition results in hypnotic induction. That is Pavlov's Type One, sensory deprivation, induction. Hypnosis is a stage between awake and asleep. Visualize a brain, undergoing the process of trance induction, as a huge mansion with a multitude of rooms. At first, most of the rooms are lighted. They are "awake." Gradually, as the process of **cortical inhibition** (induction) proceeds, the lights wink out in more and more rooms of that mansion.

However, some rooms still are lighted. Thus, hypnosis can be thought of as partial sleep, because some neurons remain in an active state and in touch with the outside world. Hypnotic induction happens in the transition state of inhibition between full alertness and full sleep.

Pavlov called the various depths of trance "the intermediate phases between the waking state and complete sleep." He also called them the **hypnotic phases**. **(Lectures..., p. 39)**

Transmarginal Stimulation

By **"**transmarginal," Pavlov meant past the breaking point. He was fascinated with what mentally broke dogs (and people)—and how. As with classical conditioning, Pavlov first noticed the phenomenon of **transmarginal stimulation**—the breaking point—when it accidentally appeared in his laboratory. The occasion for his realization was the dramatic Neva River flood which happened in the winter of 1924.

All those dogs, who drooled when the bell rang, were kept in a basement laboratory in Leningrad, near the Neva River. For years, his lab workers had been conditioning the dogs into various sets of automatic responses. When the river unexpectedly flooded Leningrad, the water poured into that basement laboratory where the dog cages were kept. It rose, and rose, to nearly the tops of their cages. Shortly before the dogs were rescued, they were surviving only by swimming around and around at the tops of those cages.

Then, a lab attendant dove into the near-freezing water and rescued the dogs, one by one, bringing each dog out of its cage—under water. It was a very frightening experience for the dogs.

> *....after their rescue some were in a state of severe inhibition, stupor and collapse...Pavlov was most excited when he found that in all those dogs which had experienced the collapse, all their recently implanted conditioned reflexes had been abolished. It was as if the recently printed brain-slate had been suddenly wiped clean, and Pavlov was able to imprint on it new conditioned patterns of behavior.* **(Sargant, *The Mind Possessed*, pp. 8-9)**

Transmarginal stimulation had pushed the dogs to collapse. They had been driven by fear, excitement, and final relief into transmarginal stimulation. They were pushed past the breaking point, over the brink.

After the flood, Pavlov took time to thoroughly investigate this new phenomenon. He learned it did not require an act of God to accomplish transmarginal stimulation. In his experiments, he deliberately pushed dogs to that mental brink—and then over it. Every dog had its breaking point. He established that dogs, like people, could have nervous breakdowns. The circumstances that could make them neurotic were anger, fear, or mental conflict.

As Pavlov studied transmarginal stimulation, he realized that it consisted of a series of three phases. He called those phases the **equivalent**, **paradoxical**, and **ultraparadoxical**. He said that a subject in the process of deepening trance will go through these phases. In all three of the **transmarginal states**—equivalent, paradoxical, and ultraparadoxical—dogs or people have symptoms of "hysteria." Pavlov defined **hysteria** as a mental condition characterized by more than usual suggestibility—or counter-suggestibility (reflexively acting or thinking the opposite way of what is suggested).

Here are those three transmarginal states viewed in more detail.

State of Equalization (Equivalent Phase)—In the **state of equalization**, which Pavlov also called the **equivalent phase**, weak and strong stimuli receive the same response. For example, the subject responds equally (the same) to a whisper or a shout. A normal, healthy person feels a range of emotions, depending on what is going on in his life. But a sick person, in the equivalent phase, may be flat emotionally, unable to feel joy or sorrow or any emotion in the normal way.

> *...normal people, during periods of great fatigue following stress, may find that there is little difference between their emotional reactions to important and trivial experiences.* **(Sargant, *The Mind Possessed*, p. 11)**

Pavlov's concept of the state of equalization, the equivalent phase, has also been used in the analysis of hypnosis depths. Katkov analyzed depth into three stages—-each stage having three degrees, and he noted that his second stage, third degree, subjects showed an equalization phase of responsiveness. Either the word, or the actual stimulus, equally could elicit the response. For an example, in that equalization phase of trance depth, illusion caused by hypnotic suggestion or real seeing were equally possible for the subject. He could see a real cat, or he could "see" a suggested hallucination of a cat.

In Pavlov's vocabulary, the **weak stimulus** was the word, "see." The **strong stimulus** was the actual event, the presence of a real cat before your eyes. (Later research has shown, however, that the word—which Pavlov called the "second-signal system" can be dominant over the actual event. We tend to believe what we are told we saw, rather than what we really saw.)

Paradoxical Phase—The **paradoxical phase** is a deeper trance state, with more extensive inhibition, than the equalization phase. In the paradoxical phase, the strong stimulus either does not work, or it works poorly. A weak stimulus, on the other hand, which in a normal state of mind would not work at all, or only poorly, now produces far greater response than a strong stimulus. In the paradoxical phase, strong stimuli increase brain inhibition.

Katkov listed **paradoxical behavior** as the third degree of the third stage, his deepest trance stage. Here, mere words are dominant over any real-world phenomena. For example, a suggestion for the absence of pain can enable a surgery without anesthetic. Pavlov's dog, in this state, refused food associated with a strong stimulus, but accepted it if the stimulus was weak.

The hypnotized subject, in this phase, ignores the siren outside. He is completely focused on and obedient to the whispered words of the hypnotist. The unconscious split of a survivor of abusive hypnosis answered a question which was asked, in a soft whisper, in a room full of persons engaged in normally-voiced conversation. The split did not respond to any normally-voiced question. Only the subject's root personality answered that type of query.

Ultraparadoxical Phase

In the **ultraparadoxical phase**, an emotionally over-excited, overwhelmed—utterly stressed out—nervous system loses all of its previous conditioning. The shock of threatened drowning caused the dogs' previously conditioned habits to wash away.

In the ultraparadoxical phase, the subject may do a **Pavlovian reversal**, or he may accept any new conditioning in the context. Palle Hardwick was driven into the ultraparadoxical phase during Dr. Reiter's final demonstration of him. He then spontaneously rejected Dr. Reiter's hypnotic conditioning of him: a Pavlovian reversal. In a Pavlovian reversal, what was anathema to you before, now becomes desirable. Or what was impossible for you before, now becomes possible.

In the ultraparadoxical phase, when the dog, or person, rejects old patterns, he may become extremely susceptible to new conditioning, to the uncriitical adoption of new attitudes and behaviors. Therefore, pushing the prisoner into the ultraparadoxical phase is the goal of brainwashers.

Positive Induction

Pavlov observed that the more "rooms" in the brain that became dark, the brighter the light burned in the remaining ones. He called that phenomenon **positive induction**. Whenever many neurons became inhibited, the remainder benefitted by the increased excitation of positive induction. Those neurons that were still excitable could become even more excitable than normal. Those that were in a state of inhibition would not interfere. That is the condition of trance. That is also the physiological basis for the extraordinary mental powers a hypnotized person can demonstrate. It is a kind of balancing act in that mansion: the more lights that turn off, the brighter the lights burn in whatever rooms do remain lit: positive induction.

Negative Induction

Pavlov's Type Two, the shock induction, takes place because of the principle of **negative induction.** Too much stress, or a sudden shock which overstimulates a person's brain, can result in trance or depression. The cause is the phenomenon which Pavlov called **negative induction**. Negative induction starts with stimulation, with turning lights on: BRIGHT. Too much BRIGHT causes a physiological compensation in the brain; other rooms must turn their lights off. Thus, overstimulation causes inhibition: negative induction.

In addition to "negative induction," Pavlov had another term for the protective shutdown caused by shock or overstimulation. He called it a **self-protecting reflex of an inhibitory character.** Pavlov reasoned that there were situations in which an animal's (or person's) only hope to live was to stay absolutely immobile. Immobilization is a potential of the catatonic stage of hypnosis. Therefore, he viewed the cortical shutdown in response to shock (fear) as a self-protecting reflex of the inhibitory sort.

Progressive Inhibition of Cortical Analyzers

Pavlov's cybernetic concept of brain function postulated the existence of what he called **analyzers,** one for each mental department. He suggested that there was a visual analyzer, an auditory one, a motor (voluntary muscles) one, and of course, in humans, the analytical, critical, self-controlling conscious-mind analyzer. Pavlov theorized that the process of deepening into trance involved inhibiting those analyzers, one by one.

Pavlov believed that the voluntary analyzers would get inhibited (shut down) first. He said the involuntary ones would not be affected by the spread of cortical inhibition. Indeed, one of the earlier characteristics of trance is loss of voluntary control (such as, inability to open eyes, lower an arm, pull hands apart). Pavlov would explain that phenomenon by saying that the motor analyzer was shut down by spreading cortical inhibition.

Brainwashing: The Technology

Stage One:
Deconditioning

☑

Stage Two:
Breaking Point

☑

Stage Three:
Reconditioning

> ***The message of coercion is: you must change and become what we tell you to become—or else. The threat embodied in the 'or else' may be anything from death to social ostracism, any form of physical or emotional pain. The goal of naked coercion is to produce a cowed and demoralized follower.***
>
> **Lifton, *Thought Reform and the Psychology of Totalism*, p. 438**

Brainwashing's Goal Is Conversion

Stressed humans naturally tend to make **conversions**—which may, or may not, be permanent. The conversions happen because stressed humans (and dogs) may respond to crisis by discarding inappropriate old programming and discovering, in suffering, the key to spiritual growth and to new and better behavior. A person can change by adopting a group's shared values and beliefs. Or, they can change independently, creating a new personal path out of the debris of shattered past attempts. **Brainwashing** is a deliberate regimen of stress that seeks a true change of heart, which results in future collaboration.

In the 1950s, certain U.S. government agencies began to fund brainwashing research. In 1957, Dr. William Sargant, an English brainwashing specialist, stated the goal in one question: "Why do stressed humans tend to make conversions?" They were looking for a way to deliberately, systematically elicit conversion: predictable stresses for predictable results. The experiments confirmed that harsh manipulation of a confined person can break down previous attitudes and instill a new set of the brainwasher's choice.

Brainwashing is not what advertisers, politicians, educators, and evangelists do, because their audience is not a captive one. If you can walk away from unwelcome persuasion, it is not brainwashing. If you cannot walk away, it may be. **Indoctrination** is the mildest level of brainwashing. Indoctrination is a very direct conversion system which attempts to change a person's viewpoint while he or she is still a thinking individual. More severe and classic brainwashing regimens differ from indoctrination in that they attempt to change a person's mind without allowing any input or control from the victim. Complete control over a person's environment allows extreme psychological manipulations.

Methods of Brainwashing

The technique of brainwashing involves total external control, an atmosphere of stress, and two or three induction methods (alternating, or combined) which increase suggestibility. Since brainwashing is a coercive mind-control technology that contains elements that lower consciousness and increase suggestibility, there is a link between hypnotism and brainwashing. Stress increases suggestibility. Extreme stress can cause trance. The Pavlovian induction types historically associated with brainwashing are:

- *Type One: Sensory deprivation.*
- *Type Two: Overstimulation—prod, whip, sexual abuse, haranguing, terrifying, etc.*
- *Type Three: Brain syndrome caused by fatigue and hunger.*

Three Stages of Brainwashing

Brainwashing takes place in a series of three major stages. A Dutch psychoanalyst, Joost Meerloo, first analyzed and named them in his post-WWII analysis of Nazi brainwashing techniques:

I. **Deconditioning** of the subject.

II. Subject's artificial **breakdown** and **identification** with the new authority, with the brainwashers' orthodoxy, whatever it is.

III. Subject's **reindoctrination,** retraining in the new orthodoxy.

So, the first stage is breakdown. The second is the phenomenon of the breaking point, and identification with the brainwashers. The third is the subject's reindoctrination. All three stages—deconditioning, breaking, and reindoctrination—have been carefully researched.

Stage One: Deconditioning

[The purpose is] ***to destroy the old loyalties and value systems...their personal meaning systems...extinguishing old conditioned patterns.***

- Perry London, *Behavior Control*, p. 91

Biderman and Lifton independently analyzed the exact coercive elements, and their chronological order, which accomplish the subject's deconditioning. Each came up with an eight-item list.

Biderman's List of Deconditioning Factors

1) Isolation, Disorientation, and Loss of Control —

A brainwashing regimen always starts with **isolation** of the victim.[1] Brainwashers isolate a prospective subject from associates who might sustain his old beliefs. Isolation may be solitary confinement. Patricia Hearst was shoved into a closet in a house where only SLA members lived.

If the inmate is to be held in a group, the brainwashing program usually isolates new candidates from all former associates. It surrounds them instead with new associates who are also undergoing brainwashing, or who are already single-mindedly devoted to the new point of view. In a brainwashing program described by Sargant, the inmates lived for nine to twelve months in a camp which was so isolated that all ties with the subjects' friends and families were cut.

The camp regimen deliberately shattered all their old patterns of behavior. In any brainwashing situation, the subject has totally lost control—and is confused. This is deliberate. In a classic brainwashing regimen, the isolation from former peers is combined with **loss of control** and **dis-**

---

[1] The isolation of brainwashing is a physical corollary to the mental isolation of a hypnotic subject whose operator has become the subject's sole definer of reality.

orientation. The victim has been snatched abruptly out of his accustomed environment and thrust into a totally different one. The subject's lack of opportunity to mentally prepare for the change is deliberate. It makes him less able to resist.

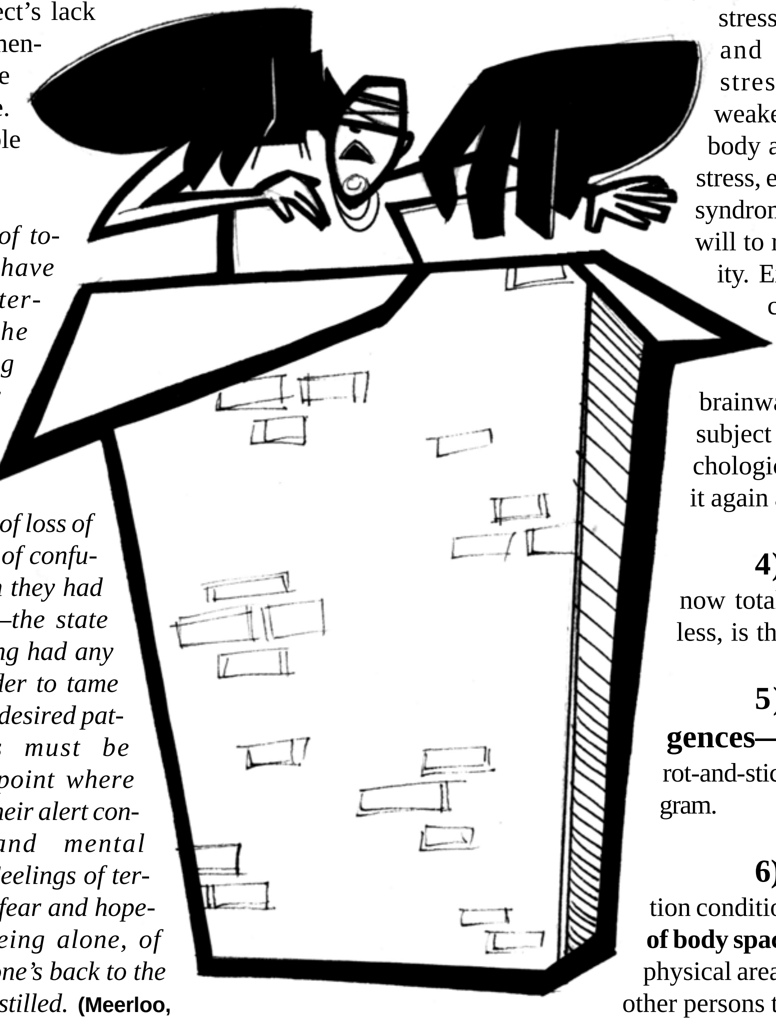

Many victims of totalitarianism have told me in interviews that the most upsetting experience they faced in the concentration camps was the feeling of loss of logic, the state of confusion into which they had been brought—the state in which nothing had any validity...In order to tame people into the desired pattern, victims must be brought to a point where they have lost their alert consciousness and mental awareness. ...Feelings of terror, feelings of fear and hopelessness, of being alone, of standing with one's back to the wall, must be instilled. **(Meerloo, p. 49)**

2) Monopolization of Perception—Unauthorized information is prohibited and prevented. There may even be outright **sensory deprivation**. The victim's attention is focused on his own physical and mental misery, and the necessarily exaggerated importance of all interactions with the tormenters. Isolated from family and friends, he is now totally dependent on his captors who have the exclusive right either to continue or relieve his suffering.

He may be in sensory deprivation, being made susceptible to propaganda. Or he may be mentally overstimulated. In that type of brainwashing regimen, subjects are given no chance to relax, not a moment's peace, no opportunity simply to think their own thoughts. Mind and body are constantly occupied, and fatigued, with specified group activities and propaganda input.

3) Exhaustion—Mental collapse under stress can have both a physical and mental basis. Physical stresses, such as fatigue, isolation, and malnutrition; and mental stresses, such as humiliation, weaken the physical foundation of body and mind. Extreme physical stress, especially torture, causes brain syndrome, which further weakens the will to resist and creates suggestibility. Exhaustion makes a person susceptible to any repeated message, an easy target for hypnotic suggestion. Another brainwashing technique wearies the subject mentally by locating a psychological "sore spot," then prodding it again and again.

4) Threats—The subject, now totally isolated and totally helpless, is threatened.

5) Occasional Indulgences—This is the carrot of the carrot-and-stick **behavior modification** program.

6) Subjugation— Subjugation conditioning often involves **invasion of body space**. Most people have a limit, a physical area inside which they do not like other persons to intrude. This private space is usually a circle around us, about two or three feet from the body. Harsher brainwashing regimens involve constant interrogation, sleep deprivation, bad and insufficient food, inadequate toileting facilities, humiliating treatment, and no contact with persons outside the brainwashing setup.

7) Degradation, Omnipotence, Omniscience—Physical or sexual assaults—anything that shames—further subjugate and degrade the victim. The subject is shamed. The captors, on the other hand, demonstrate what Lifton called **omnipotence** and **omniscience**. Degradation of the subject seems to prove the programmers' omnipotence. The abuse in this category typically involves not only humiliation and degradation, but also forced self-betrayal.

8) Enforcing Trivial Demands—This conditioning is for takeover of the subject's will.

Lifton's Brainwashing Analysis

Dr. Lifton interpreted brainwashing as a manipulated, forced conversion experience. His 8-point method incorporated psychoanalytic elements, the Chinese Communist indoctrination system, and all three of Dr. Meerloo's elements (deconditioning, breaking, and reindoctrination):

1. Captors acquire total **control** over victim.
2. Captors assault victim's sense of **identity**.
3. Victim feels **guilt** and accepts blame.
4. Victim **confesses** vices, both real and imaginary, the uglier, the better.
5. Victim **betrays** self and others, then feels "cut off from his former roots and unable to return..."
6. Victim is pushed to extreme **death anxiety** and breaking point.
7. Captors swap leniency for **total compliance**. The prisoner now eagerly behaves any way they want, because he now believes this may be a way to survive.
8. The prisoner's conversion is reinforced by a systematic regimen of criticism, self-criticism, and **instruction** in exactly what he is supposed to believe.

Stage Two: The Breaking Point

> ***...the Chinese Communist leaders not only find nothing to resent in charges that they 'brainwash' their opponents, but regard the term as a quite apt and honorable description of what they wish to achieve.*** **(p. 6)** ***Practitioners of 'thought-reform' seek 'real' changes in beliefs and values. They demand that the victim be 'honest, sincere, and full' in his 'self-examination, repentance, and change.'***
>
> **- Blake in Biderman and Zimmer (eds), *The Manipulation of Human Behavior*, p. 10**

Finally, the subject's mental tension reaches the cortex overload stage. Then, ultraparadoxical breakdown (a physiological phenomenon first described by Pavlov) occurs.

Ultraparadoxical Stage

The **breaking point** is a physiological event. Abuse causes the ego, the "I," to shrink, pull back, and weaken until, finally, exhausted, it gives up. Pavlov named that moment of giving up the **ultraparadoxical stage**. When pressure, exhaustion, and fear become unbearable, the subject reaches the breaking point.

Sargant argued that anything that causes temporary cortex overstimulation and collapse has the healing effect of loosening up old programming patterns, thereby allowing the implant of new ones. His list of overstimulations which could cause the ultraparadoxical break included electroshock, voodoo possession, rock concerts, and suggested confabulations and implanted false memories. Sargant approved of whatever it took to drive the patient into the **transmarginal collapse**, so that his previous behavior patterns could be broken up.

Pavlov stressed dogs, through deconditioning, into the ultraparadoxical crisis. After the breakdown, he conditioned new habits into them. Sometimes, he put the dog through the whole routine again: stressing it into another breakdown, and then retraining into yet another set of habits. At the breaking point, the exhausted, confused dog—or person—will accept any sort of relief.

Submission to and Positive Identification with Enemy

A curious phenomenon of this second stage of brainwashing is the subject's **identification** with the brainwashers. At the breaking point, the victim switches, from fear and hate of Big Brother, to trust and love of Big Brother.

Victims

> *...suddenly begin to feel affection for the examiner who has been treating them so harshly—a warning sign that the 'paradoxical' and 'ultraparadoxical' phases of abnormal brain activity may have been reached: they are near to breaking point...* **(Sargant, *Battle for the Mind*, p. 214)**

Compulsives Resist the Best

The **"obsessional neurotic**," better known as the **compulsive**, whether canine or human, is the personality type which is most able to resist brainwash techniques. He tends to avoid becoming emotionally involved in what is going on. That protects him from being influenced. Brainwashers have the most success with compulsives using Type Three inductions—lack of food, lack of sleep, illness, injury, and exhaustion.

Many human eccentrics may approximate to Pavlov's stronger dogs, who acquired new behavior patterns only when they had first been debilitated by castration, fever, or gastric disorders which made them lose a great deal of weight. Once reindoctrinated, they were fattened up, and the new behavior patterns became as firmly fixed as the old; indeed, Pavlov could not get rid of them again. **(Sargant, *Battle for the Mind*, p. 86)**

Meerloo wrote of the breaking moment:

> *...the moment of surrender may often arrive suddenly. It is as if the stubborn negative suggestibility changed critically into a surrender and affirmation. What the inquisitor calls the sudden inner illumination and conversion is a total reversal of inner strategy in the victim. From this time on, in psychoanalytic terms, a parasitic superego lives in man's conscience, and he will speak his new master's voice.* **(Meerloo, p. 92)**

At the breaking point, the subject begins to reject what he is being told to reject and begins to accept what he is being told to accept. At this point of emotional extremity, he makes the Pavlovian reversal. Now he loves Big Brother. The breaking point is also the point of confession: "I was bad but now I'm good."

Internalization of the Guilt for Breaking

All brainwashers dread conformity based on opportunism rather than conviction. All work to achieve a sincere conversion. They make

> *...the ultimate test of the loyalty and sincere devotion of the individual to the system...his acceptance of the inquisitorial process itself: the purge, coercion, confession, and the entire paraphernalia of enforced conversion...***(Biderman and Zimmer (eds), p. 8)**

The subject's final capitulation happens when he not only gives outward obedience to whatever the captors will for him to do, but he also honestly comes to think and believe whatever they demand. After that, he no longer blames Big Brother for bringing him to the breaking point. He now thanks Big Brother for his "help." The subject now blames what happened on himself.

He now feels a deep conviction of **guilt**. He accepts personal responsibility for what happened: "I was bad. It had to be done to me, so I could be made good. I'm so grateful Big Brother fixed my wrong thinking." The subject now believes that he was imperfect, and needed the brainwashing cure. This taking of responsibility for his mistreatment is called the **internalization of obedience**. At the breaking point, the victim's independent will steps back, yields to the controller's will, then internalizes that submission.

Self-loathing Measures Inmate's Renewal—

> *One final test of loyalty demands that the prisoner act as though he hated himself with the intensity of the criminal definition which the system has placed upon him.* **(Blake in Biderman & Zimmer, eds, *The Manipulation of Human Behavior*, p. 8)**

Similar language described a model prison therapy, the Asklepeion program at the Marion Illinois Federal Penitentiary:

> *...object of the "therapies" is initially to "unfreeze" the prisoner's formal organization of beliefs about him or her self (or, as Opton describes it, "to degrade the self-concept and shatter his personal identity"). When this has been achieved, the person will then "change" his or her personality and belief system. In the final stage the new personality will be "refrozen."* **(Ackroyd, et. al., p. 268)**

The "refreezing" takes place in Stage Three.

Stage Three: Reconditioning

> ***Through both continual training and taming, the new phonograph record has to be grooved...Incidental relapses to the old form of thinking have to be corrected...The victim is daily helped to rationalize and justify his new ideology...This systematic indoctrination...***
> **- Meerloo, *The Rape of the Mind*, p. 92**

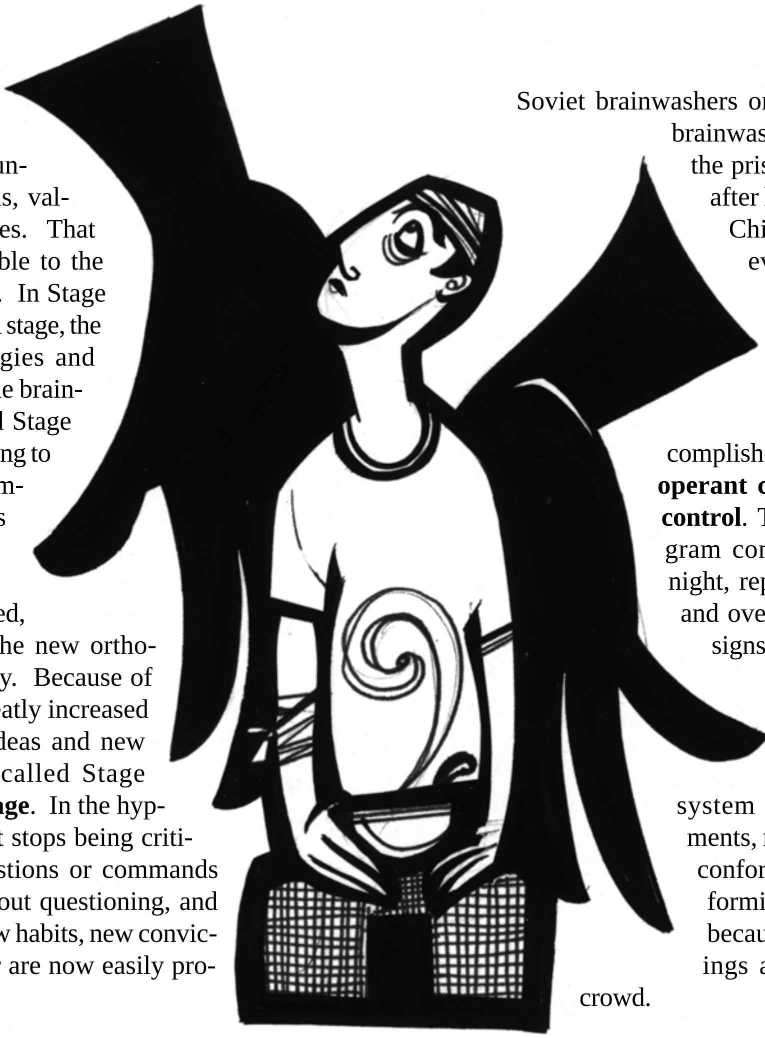

In Stage One, the relentless deconditioning pressure unfroze former convictions, values, beliefs, and attitudes. That left the subject vulnerable to the implanting of new ones. In Stage Two, the ultraparadoxical stage, the subject reversed strategies and began to identify with the brainwasher. Meerloo called Stage Three "The Reconditioning to the New Order." It accomplishes the subject's **reindoctrination**.

The brainwashed, broken subject learns the new orthodoxy in a hypnoidal way. Because of that characteristic of greatly increased suggestibility to new ideas and new conditioning, Pavlov called Stage Three the **hypnoidal stage**. In the hypnoidal stage, the subject stops being critical. He accepts suggestions or commands without argument, without questioning, and in an uncritical way. New habits, new convictions, and new behavior are now easily programmed into his mind.

Soviet brainwashers omitted this third stage of brainwashing. The Russians sent the prisoner on to serve his time after he broke and "confessed." Chinese brainwashers, however, sent the softened-up prisoner for the third stage: **reconditioning**.

Reconditioning is accomplished by **message repetition**, **operant conditioning**, and **milieu control**. The typical instruction program continues from morning to night, repeating its teachings over and over. As the prisoner shows signs of genuine conversion, he is rewarded with group approval and upgrades in physical circumstances. Operant conditioning, a system of rewards and punishments, retrains by linking hope to conformity, and fear to nonconformity. Milieu control works because humans are social beings and generally follow the crowd.

Grateful for the Cure

After the prisoner has been broken and retrained, he defends the new mental conditioning. He feels genuine **gratitude** for having been brainwashed. The human mind has a natural tendency to defend its status quo—whatever it is. Retraining is finished when all the new attitudes are "frozen" in place. They will now be as resistant to outside change as were their predecessors. The more rigid the subject's personality was before the break, the more stoutly he will now defend and cling to his new programming.

Musings

I have been to the breaking point, and beyond, three times in my life. The first Pavlovian reversal occurred when I was sixteen years old and had fallen in love for the first time. My parents harshly resisted my attachment to the young man and broke up our relationship. I converted my love for that young man into rage at my parents and despair over my own prospects. I transformed from a meek girl-child into a bitter, alienated adolescent, seeking worldliness. I went from "naturally good" to genuinely bad.

The climax of a novel based on the history of Donovan's OSS (W. E. B. Griffin, *The Last Heroes*, audio version, 1997) described a similar conversion from good to bad. The hero, obedient to his OSS directive, murders an absolutely innocent man as if it were a trivial matter. Then he knocks out and kidnaps another man, one whose life is considered by the U.S. government to be useful. In the dramatic finale, we learn that our hero's love interest, his unit director, has agreed to a date; and Donovan himself, Big Brother incarnate, is taking a personal interest in his future with the organization.

The reader is expected to feel good and satisfied with the protagonist's conversion from an everyday Joe with mom-and-pop moral values into a person who will commit any crime, if so directed by his secret agency (government) superior. The novel's conclusion implies that this is the climactic moral transformation demanded of our new world order: to trash Judeo-Christian morals and thereby demonstrate one's worthiness to win romance and the Agency Director's protection.

I went through my second spontaneous Pavlovian reversal years later, when I was in my early thirties. In the midst of personal crisis, I again made a huge transition. This time, I confessed my sins, faced my responsibility and guilt for all that I had done wrong, and made the switch from sinful to redeemed.

The capacity for Pavlovian reversal is an innate God-given gift. Like any other ability, it can be used for good or for evil. Its worse use is of switching us from the state of assuming we are good to a conscious commitment to obey sleazy or self-destructive impulses, or evil orders. Its best use is to move us from an humble recognition that all humankind begins from a helpless state of sin, through confession, shame, and on to acceptance of Christ's gift of redemption.

That long ago day, I prayed, "Jesus, come into my heart." And He did. The bud of my life's potential then began to grow into spiritual maturity, beauty, and strength. I became empowered in my personal struggles, now in alliance with a greater power. Mostly, I used this new strength and guidance to more effectively fulfill my family responsibilities, but I also completed and marketed my first book.

My third Pavlovian reversal took place thirteen years ago, once again during a period of personal turmoil. It was now time to confront my programmed powerlessness, fear, conscious ignorance, and unconscious resistance to change. The worm turned. I began to fight. At first, my battles were all in the land of mind against my hypnoprogramming. I learned how to fight by fighting. In this process, I had to go through a period of holding up my most fundamental beliefs to profound scrutiny and reevaluation, leaving all known paths to plunge directly into the unknown. When I came out the other end of the tunnel, I was reaffirmed in my basic Christian faith. My God was once human and Himself experienced humiliation and learned obedience through suffering. He hates injustice.

Bit by bit, I regained mental territory from the enemy: memories, feelings, abilities, another page written, another interview, a new bit of research accomplished. I struggled first to reunite and heal my own, broken self, but eventually I had to seek ways to help others who had been similarly victimized. I realized that I must become the print "authority" on criminal hypnosis, for there was no other adequate to meet their need.

Thirteen years ago, the dream of researching and writing this book seemed impossible. I persevered because I could have no peace in my spirit otherwise. Against the impossible obstacles, I flung impossible amounts of work and sacrifice. For many years, it felt like I was struggling alone against this great evil.

Gradually, I came to understand that this aspect of my life was also part of God's purpose for my life, to be achieved in God's timing. Sometimes, I experienced extraordinary instances of clearly supernatural assistance and protection. After many years of relative isolation, my path has recently reconverged with those of many other believers. I have experienced anew warm fellowship and have received almost daily miracles of kind, and expert, assistance.

Behaviorism and Government Ally

The Philosophical Postulates of Behaviorism

☑

Skinner on Behavior Control: The Rest of the Story

> ***"Men like me, who possess hidden wisdom, are freed from common rules just as we are cut off from common pleasures. Ours, my boy, is a high and lonely destiny." As he said this, he sighed and looked so grave and noble and mysterious that for a second Digory really thought he was saying something rather fine. But then he remembered the ugly look on his Uncle's face the moment before Polly had vanished; and all at once he saw through Uncle Andrew's grand words. "All it means," he said to himself, "is that he thinks he can do anything he likes to get anything he wants."***
>
> **C.S. Lewis, *The Magician's Nephew***

In the area of mind-control, after World War II, there developed:

- A new branch of psychology: military psychology
- A new relationship between the mental sciences and the government
- A psychological/scientific philosophy that set the rules and justified the new sci-tech socialism: **behaviorism.**

Together with the secret government push for more and better people-control technologies (buttressed by constant technological advances in data collection and manipulation, communication, and conditioning), the new psychological philosophy of behaviorism developed.

History of Behaviorism

Behaviorism began in the Soviet Union, although the term was not coined until later. Dr. Horsley Gantt was the first American after the Communist Revolution to research in Russia. He left the Phipps Psychiatric Clinic, at John Hopkins University, to work in Pavlov's laboratory for six years. There, Gantt met all the important Russian psychophysiologists. He translated the writings of Pavlov and Luria into English. Gantt's translations introduced English-speaking physiologists and psychologists to the Soviet's new way of looking at—and researching—the human mind, as merely another "natural object."

An American psychologist, John B. Watson, then made Pavlov's discoveries on conditioned reflexes part of mainstream American psychology. Watson urged psychologists to study only observable behavior as Pavlov did, not inner feelings as Freud had. It was Watson who named this new psychological point of view **behaviorism**. Behaviorists, like Pavlov, view brain function as the sum of inborn reflexes, plus learned (conditioned) reflexes. The dark side was that

> *Watson had little or nothing to say about intention or purpose or creativity...his examples were not incompatible with a manipulative control.* **(Skinner, *About Behaviorism*, pp. 6-7)**

In the Soviet Union, where the Communists enthroned the dream of manipulative control over the masses, Pavlovian psychiatry had soon become official psychological doctrine. Civilian psychiatry in the United States, however, largely ignored concepts of **the conditioned reflex** and **artificial neurosis**, preferring Freudian or Jungian healing approaches. CIA and military psychiatrists, on the other hand, enthusiastically embraced the new approach to the study of the mind which emphasized the role of **mental reflexes**. Brains are constructed so that the reflexive act is immediate, unthinking, and usually **dominant**. That fact was of great interest to mind-control researchers.

THE PHILOSOPHICAL POSTULATES OF BEHAVIORISM

There is one aspect of human research which is usually overlooked: the existence of a moral and social duty to advance scientific knowledge. (p. 211) ...The prospect of any degree of physical control of the mind provokes a variety of objections: theological objections because it affects free will, moral objections because it affects individual responsibility, ethical objections because it may block self-defense mechanisms, philosophical objections because it threatens personal identity. These objections, however, are debatable. A prohibition of scientific advance is obviously naive and unrealistic. It could not be universally imposed...

- **Delgado, *Physical Control of the Mind*, p. 214**

Behaviorism has been the busiest, and best financed, field of psychological research since World War II. Scientific research is a priority in the technocratic society. There is a "moral duty" to do scientific research, Delgado said. In the United States, however, it is now illegal to conduct research on a person without their informed consent—unless that person is a child in public school. (Or, probably, unless that research is "secret, don't tell.")

The implementation of all discoveries that may conceivably advance power or profit, despite risks to human and other life on the planet, is also a high priority.

Behaviorism provides a psychological—and political—philosophy that serves the new elite. It has evolved into a secular religion which embraces four philosophical postulates that government psychotechnocrats want to hear. For this reason, behaviorists have dominated applied psychology (and government funding for psychological research). Startling fifth and sixth postulates have developed, corollaries to the first four.

1) Unlimited Research

The first postulate is that NEVER ENDING, UNTRAMMELED RESEARCH IS INEVITABLE AND DESIRABLE. To the behaviorists, nothing is sacred. Anything they can imagine, they can try.

> *...without stimuli...the mind cannot exist...the mind may be defined as the intracerebral elaboration of extracerebral information...the basis of the mind is cultural, not individual.* **(Delgado, *Physical Control of the Mind*, p. 27)**

Delgado doubted that there is such a thing as a "soul." He added that, if the soul exists, "A natural question would be whether or not the soul could be modified by experimentation..." **(Ibid., p. 29)**

2) Behavior Control

The second psychological postulate of this new order is that MANIPULATION AND CONTROL OF PEOPLE'S BEHAVIOR IS INEVITABLE AND PRAISEWORTHY. A line from B.F. Skinner, a behaviorist researcher, is often quoted: "People will be controlled; I just want them to be controlled more effectively." (**Skinner**, ***Beyond Freedom and Dignity*, 1971**)

Behaviorists say that THE GOAL OF PSYCHOLOGY IS THE PREDICTION AND CONTROL OF HUMAN BEHAVIOR.

> *The whole notion of psychological freedom strikes the behaviorist as mystical, unscientific, and somehow having religious connotations...the committed behavioral engineer is seldom assailed by doubts. He firmly believes that his is the voice of science and not myth.* **(James Deese, *Psychology as Science and Art*, 1972, p. 105)**

Perry London, behaviorist philosopher, explained:

> *Control means power. Behavior control means power over people. In times past, it meant power over life and death and some visible activities in between. Now, it is coming to mean power over all the details of people's lives—of attitudes, actions, thoughts, and feelings, of public postures and the secrets of the heart...* **(London, *Behavior Control*, p. 199)**

Behaviorists practice **action therapy**. Action therapy starts from the premise that getting rid of the symptom eliminates the problem. It takes for granted that the therapist is a proper source of behavior control. The behaviorist therapist assumes that:

> *His job is to give the patient not self-control but symptom relief...whatever works without damaging the patient is acceptable...Skill at manipulation, anathema to insight therapy, is the moral prize beyond purchase of the actionists, whose title to exercise control is as certain to them as their responsibility for healing is clear.* **(Ibid., p. 64)**

3) Government Control of Science

Government is seen as the PROPER CENTER OF SCIENTIFIC GOALSETTING, RESEARCH, AND OPERATIONAL APPLICATIONS of present, or future, psychological (and non-psychological) technologies. The working partnership that developed during and after World War IIbetween government employees and research scientists in educational institutions extended also to industrialists who built products for research and operations, products which were purchased with government money.

Since World War II, government, higher education, industry (and their bureaucracies) have become ever more bound together in secret research and manufacturing projects. This came about because of the buying of science by the grant system, and the buying of industry through government contracts. Government has become the dominant purchaser (and director) of research because most research is now so expensive that only government (or huge corporations) can afford to bankroll it.

Government directors in the mind-control field were attracted to the behaviorists, who were seen as the most practical, and the least impeded by moral squeamishness, of the psychological camps. Behaviorists who embraced government control and funding of their research were, in turn, generously supported (also highly controlled). In 1979, a writer looked back and declared that behaviorists became dominant in American psychology mainly "because Behaviorism was correct about science being a public enterprise" **(Furst, *Origins of the Mind*, p. 11)**.

4) Government Control of Information

When government funded the mind-control research, it could control the goals and methods of that research. Most research relevant to mind-control has been publicly funded. PUBLIC FUNDING GAVE GOVERNMENT THE POWER TO ENFORCE SECRECY OF RESEARCH RESULTS. **Secret** means that there is no public oversight, no public control, no public participation in any development or application of the secret technology. Secrecy denies the public a true picture of what is possible, and what is being done—even though tax dollars are used to do it.

Even researchers studying mind-control topics may not have an accurate picture. Each isolated specialist or team, working on individual government contracts in scattered institutions, is told only the bare minimum needed to proceed with work on their particular piece of the puzzle. And they have no control over how the technology which they develop will be used. No matter how purely defense-oriented the researchers are, once that technology exists, they have no say in decisions on who will use it, on whom, or in what way.

Secrecy prevents normal dialogue between scientists. It eliminates public oversight and criticism. It prevents public knowledge of new mind-control technologies, either in experiments or in operations. Secrecy especially envelops any government operation that borders on illegality. Secrecy protects government agencies (and their personnel) who are involved in illegal, or quasi-legal, activities.

And, invisible under the cloak of secrecy, it is much easier for an agency to slide rapidly into greater and greater possession and abuses of power.

Any secret research can be turned against the government's enemies, foreign or domestic. Many secret technologies could also be used to protect the interests of any governmental agency or organization which had the use of that technology and which felt threatened, thwarted, or wished to establish a stronger position for itself. Such an agency, if it had propaganda capability, for example, might be tempted to generate "news" that would make the public think its enemies are their enemies, hoping thereby to eliminate its opponents. Agency managers thus might rationalize that any clandestine use of secret technology which protects their own interests is for the good of all.

5) Government Patents Its Research and May Seize Civilian Research

NSA contracts with private industry to manufacture its equipment but "the U.S. government, through NSA, owns all patent rights to both the research and the hardware." **(Bamford, p. 491)** THE GOVERNMENT OWNS PATENT RIGHTS TO ITS RESEARCH AND HARDWARE. IT ALSO SEIZES CERTAIN CIVILIAN RESEARCH.

Of the some three hundred secrecy orders issued each year at the U.S. patent office, all but a very few are on inventions the government has originated itself and has already classified. The remainder are on appropriated civilian research. The government can take any civilian research that it wants. Every civilian application to the Patent Office is first screened by an NSA-linked "Secret Group." The Secret Group decides which applications will be blocked with secrecy orders and taken over by the government.

Flanagan first encountered this rule as a high schooler. He developed a method of detecting time and direction of atom blasts and major rocket takeoffs worldwide. He won a science prize for his method, and got written up in the newspaper. Then, officers from Air Research and Development showed up and interviewed him. They learned his system, classified the information Top Secret, and departed. Months later, the U.S. government announced their possession of this technology.

Flanagan encounted a similar obstacle a few years later when he applied for a patent. The device, which he had invented, conveyed information to the brain by electromagnetic waves passed directly through the skin to a person's general nervous system. By his method, either visual or auditory images can be relayed without intake via eyes or ears. They are conveyed directly to the brain from peripheral nerves via the skin (which also is a sense organ). This technology of direct transmission to brain, via skin, had applications to "very narrow band radio systems."

Flanagan's patent material was seized by the Defense Intelligence Agency under National Security Order #756,124. When the inventor protested in court, the seizure was defended by the United States Justice Department. Under law, no compensation was required. The inventor was forbidden to discuss, promote, or do any further research on his technology. **(Begich,*Towards a New Alchemy*, pp. 28-30)**

In April, 1978, Carl Nicolai (and a group of three other young inventors) received the patent office's reply to a six-month-old request for a patent on the Phasorphone, a voice-privacy invention. He received, instead of a patent, a Secrecy Order on the invention. He also was warned that he would spend two years in jail and pay a $10,000 fine if he revealed anything about his Phasorphone to anybody who did not already know about it. **(Bamford, pp. 446-449)**

The same day that Nicolai received his Secrecy Order, another inventor, Dr. George I. Davida, a University of Wisconsin professor, had the same experience. Davida had applied for a patent on a new cipher instrument. The National Science Foundation had been funding his work. Both Nicolai and Davida fought their Secrecy Orders, taking on the NSA in court. After years of legal wrangling, the NSA eventually backed down on those two inventions. But the Agency did not make any long-term changes in their general style of operations.

A recent, similar case involved the Clipper Chip, another privately invented device. It created an unbreakable code for computer-to-computer communications. The inventor of the Clipper Chip refused to submit to the Secrecy Order's demand that he release information on his invention only to government personnel. He defied it. For that reason, he was prosecuted, convicted, and is now serving a long prison term.

> *...we face ever increasing intrusions on individual inventors by a government with a million lawyers on the payroll, funded with hundreds of billions of dollars and able to tie up individuals in a web of regulation and control, strangling freedom of thought...whose interests are served by withholding this kind of knowledge? And who are these non-elected, unappointed thought-police...? ...confiscation of property for application in military purposes may run counter to an inventor's religious or philosophical reliefs...What right does a government have to take what others have created, and interfere with the inventor's ability to continue to develop his ideas?* **(Begich, pp. 32-33)**

6) Managed Media

Propaganda is mind-control designed to efficiently influence many people at the same time. It can be disseminated via print, pictures, TV, radio, and contrived rumor. Nazi propagandists used "The Big Lie" technique in World War II. Whatever the tale was, no matter how illogical or slanderous, if a credible source repeated it, many people would come to believe it. Other propaganda methods are fake photos (an easy technology in the computer age), false statements by authoritative sources, use of loaded words such as "racist" or "white supremicist," combining a message in speech or lyrics with an emotional setting (the national anthem before the ball game), the bandwagon technique ("everybody's doing it"), and the use of media subliminals.

The techniques of propaganda and advertising are the same. The goals may differ. The April 24, 1995, issue of *Advertising Age*, on "terrorism," frankly described THE LINK BETWEEN SECRET AGENCIES AND MEDIA. In "Setting Minds Against Terrorism," author Joe Mandese, says that "public policy" is thought up by National Security Council "policy makers" and then packaged in "behavioral science" (mind control/propaganda technologies?). He says the policy makers then send the package over to the CIA and FBI (and NSA?). Those agencies have partners on Madison Avenue who then see to it that the package is nicely presented and well distributed by print and electronic media.

If Mandese is correct, high-level government intelligence organizations decide what Americans are to believe. In a society where situational ethics (whatever we tell you is right, is right) is promoted, situational data is a natural corollary (whatever we tell you is a fact, is a fact). Mandese quoted interviews with executives whose first priority was to "implement strategies" rather than to report facts. The media manager's top priority was to make persons view the U.S. government as loving and benevolent (and truthful?).

The only change in this procedure that Mandese, a representative of the advertising profession, proposed in his article was shifting the process, of planning government propaganda, to include advertising and marketing specialists who would join the committee of intelligence agency representatives. Mandese did not want to lessen government media influence. He just wanted a bigger role for his constituency—the advertising professionals—in the process of deciding what citizens are caused to believe, and in determining how they will be made to believe it.

The *Science of Coercion* by Christopher Simpson (Oxford University Press, 1994) further documents how private corporations, thinktanks, foundations, and university social scientists have advised officials and police agencies on how best to deploy government propaganda. There are now said to be "Psy War" groups in the Pentagon, NSA, FBI, CIA, NSC, ATF, Secret Service, and U.S. Marshal Departments. The Defense Department has established a Director of Information Warfare who will manage an Information Corps.

> *The Information Corps would be an elite military force developed to mastermind information attacks and countermeasures. Under the cloak of national security initiatives, this group would act not only to defend our borders against alien attacks of aggression, but also to protect the nation's Government from its own citizens.* **("The Double Edge of Computers," *The Voluntaryist,* June 1996, p. 4)**

How tragic that true facts are seen as a problem to be overcome by those who govern. How tragic that propaganda creation and dissemination—and even disinformation—is being institutionalized as a part of secret agency, military, and police agency operations. INFORMATION CONTROL IS THE KEY TO MIND-CONTROL—INDIVIDUAL OR MASS. You are what you know (or what you think you know), true or false. If what you know is fact, you can make the best possible decision. Democracy works best when voters are correctly, and fully, informed.

Musings

After World War II, democracy's shift to technocracy in the United States accelerated. New attitudes arrived with that shifting social basis of power. The new sci-tech elite rewrote the commandments.

Telling the truth is not just off the list of commandments; telling the truth to anybody but your authorized associates and superiors—if you know anything of significance—has been made a **sin** in the new order of things. With the Ten Commandments and God seemingly disposed of, **situational ethics** is in power.

The bottom line, after the casting away of Biblical values, is what a blatent mind controller told me, years ago, when I asked him to define 'good' and 'evil': "If I can get away with it, it is 'good,'" he replied. That is the emerging ethic of our Machievellian Brave New World. The goal of those who play this game is power, profit, or both. Their method is—anything they can get away with.

Musings on The Waco News

I had no patience with people who tried to tell me that our media is controlled until the day the fire started in the Branch Davidian compound in Waco. Like millions of Americans, I was watching CNN as a tank rolled up to the thin, wooden, outer wall of the compound. The tank then rammed and penetrated it. I watched the tank back up, leaving a small hole, and then surge forward again, punching the hole larger. I don't recall how many times it backed up and rolled forward, enlarging that hole.

I do clearly remember that, after one backing out, I saw a fire inside the jagged opening in the compound wall that the tank had made. I watched in horror as the flames rapidly spread from there to the rest of the structure, and then engulfed it.[1]

A few minutes after the fire started, a CNN announcer appeared and said they didn't know how or where the fire had started and that they were waiting for information from Washington, D.C. I thought, "That's odd. Everybody who was watching knows where and how the fire started. In a minute they'll rerun the film of the tank going in and out of the wall and show again the film of that first appearance of flames inside the broken-down wall." But they did not show that footage again. Instead, a few minutes later, the announcer came back on and said that sources in Washington, D.C. had informed him that the fire had started in several places at once, and that those fires had been started by persons inside the compound.

I was shocked to realize that CNN had a government representative in their control booth (or elsewhere, watching and in phone contact), who decided what people would see as "news" and what our "facts" were going to be. What would be the slant of this kind of news? That day, the operational guideline was: If it makes the government look bad, it did not happen. If it makes the other guy look bad, it did happen.

After people catch on (and they do), however, government distortion of news ends up making the government look bad rather than good. People who realize they have been lied to may lose faith in everything they are told by a public source. They may assume that any news that makes the government look bad must be the truth. They may become open to believing terrifying propaganda produced by persons whose agenda is even less desirable than that of their government. In the long run, It is better public policy to allow journalists to tell the truth as they (and the viewers) really saw it.

Skinner on Behavior Control: The Rest of the Story

There is no subjugation so perfect as that which keeps the appearance of freedom...
- Jean-Jacques Rosseau, *Emile*

As an undergraduate, B. F. Skinner read Gantt's translation of Pavlov. Later, he studied Watson's books. He decided to devote himself to this new field of behaviorism. Ultimately, he became a Harvard professor. Skinner wrote about ten books, and many articles, over a long and distinguished career. He discovered another way of building conditioned reflexes in addition to the phenomenon which Pavlov had identified and called classical conditioning. Skinner's method, called **operant conditioning,** is accomplished by either **positive** or **negative** reinforcement.

The National Institutes of Mental Health supported Skinner financially while he produced the thin volume titled *Beyond Freedom and Dignity*. Was that support because the NIMH managers wanted to popularize concepts of conditioning and Skinner's arguments on behalf of a society managed by psychologists who viewed people as sophisticated machines? After publication, that book received tremendous media support. It was a Book-of-the-Month Club selection, serialized in *Psychology Today* and the *New York Post*; it was assigned reading in psychology classes, and enormously successful both in hardcover and paperback.

Skinner wrote a sequel to *Beyond Freedom and Dignity*, titled *About Behaviorism.* Therein, he stated that this book was intended to be an antidote, a correction to what he viewed as the rosy one-sidedness of *Beyond Freedom and Dignity. About Behaviorism* deals with abuses of control—a subject which his previous book had completely ignored. *Beyond Freedom and Dignity* also ignored all methods of behavior control which were painful (negative reinforcement) rather than pleasant (positive reinforcement).

---

[1] I heard later through independent media that the fire started because the tank's intrusion knocked over a kerosene lamp.

The many organizations which had supported the success of *Beyond Freedom and Dignity,* at every stage, did not similarly support *About Behaviorism*. NIMH did not financially support Skinner's work on the second book before publication. After the completed book was on sale, the media did not promote it. Virtually unknown to the public, *About Behaviorism* sold poorly and was soon out of print.

In *Beyond Freedom and Dignity*, Skinner provided strong arguments for control of people. He said, "The literature of freedom has never come to grips with techniques of control which do not generate escape or counterattack..." **(p. 34)** Did he mean fat paychecks? Did he mean suggestions given to people who are staring at a screen, in a lowered state of consciousness, watching advertising, propaganda, or "entertainment"?

> *A government may prevent defection by making life more interesting—by providing bread* [food stamps?] *and circuses* [TV sitcoms?] *and by encouraging sports, gambling, the use of alcohol and other drugs, and various kinds of sexual behavior...The Goncourt brothers noted the rise of pornography in the France of their day: "Pornographic literature," they wrote, "serves...one tames a people as one tames lions, by masturbation."* **(Skinner, *Beyond Freedom and Dignity,* p. 32)**

In *Beyond Freedom and Dignity*, Skinner seems always to be supporting the controllers. In *About Behaviorism,* however, Skinner clearly corrected that impression:

> *Organized agencies or institutions, such as governments, religions, and economic systems, and to a lesser extent educators and psychotherapists, exert a powerful and often troublesome control. It is exerted in ways which most effectively reinforce those who exert it, and unfortunately this usually means in ways which either are immediately aversive to those controlled or exploit them in the long run.*
>
> *Those who are so controlled then take action. They escape from the controller—moving out of range if he is an individual, or defecting from a government, becoming an apostate from a religion, resigning, or playing truant—or they may attack in order to weaken or destroy the controlling power, as in a revolution, a reformation, a strike, or a student protest. In other words, they oppose control with countercontrol.* **(*About Behaviorism,* p. 190)**

Skinner called the power of non-controllers, **countercontrol**. He considered countercontrol a good thing. Between labor and union, for example, he said, countercontrol can result in a negotiated contract that meets the needs of both sides. In a true democracy, the opposition party represents the needs of those who are temporarily out of power. Eventually, when the force of public frustration has built up enough to win an election, power makes a healthy shift, at least for a while, to the previous outsiders. If democracy is allowed to function, this is how it works.

Skinner called a balance of politically opposing forces, with equally effective powers on each side, **equilibrium**. He said that political equilibrium was about as good as it gets, though inherently unstable.

Skinner did not believe that benevolence and compassion were important motivations in human behavior. He tended to interpret all social dominance dynamics in terms of power. He said "benevolence is no guarantee against the misuse of power." **(*Beyond Freedom and Dignity*, p. 38)**. He later expanded on that thought:

> *The point is illustrated by five fields in which control is not offset by countercontrol and which have therefore become classical examples of mistreatment. They are the care of the very young, of the aged, of prisoners, of psychotics, and of the retarded. It is often said that those who have these people in charge lack compassion or a sense of ethics, but the conspicuous fact is that they are not subject to strong countercontrol. The young and the aged are too weak to protest, prisoners are controlled by police power, and psychotics and retardates cannot organize or act successfully. Little or nothing is done about mistreatment unless countercontrol, usually negative, is introduced from outside.* **(*About Behaviorism*, p. 191)**

People with satellite-tracked chips in them would not be able to "escape from the controller by moving out of range." The original Constitution and Bill of Rights of this nation was designed to perfectly balance control with counter-control. That balance is now lost—or at risk—in many areas. For example, a friend of mine, who is an elected county judge, recently told me of pressures to eliminate elected judges (making all appointed) and the use of juries, nationwide.

Glossary

The language of hypnosis can be confusing to the uninitiated. How can a "suggestion" be words meant to be obeyed with machinelike unconscious automaticity? Why is a hypnotist also called an "operator"? These definitions, along with the table of contents and index, are designed to help you better understand the vocabulary and technology of hypnosis.

A

Ability, Hypnotic—This is a modern euphemism for what the old-timers called **hypnotic susceptibility.**

Abreaction—**Abreaction** is a deeply emotional remembering, a reliving of some past incident. It usually takes place in a state of lowered consciousness. If no emotion was expressed, abreaction did not occur. Healing is enabled when the patient recovers to consciousness forgotten memories and experiences—and simultaneously expresses their associated deep emotions. Jung said that abreaction was

> *...the dramatic rehearsal of the traumatic moment...in the waking or in the hypnotic state and* [it] *often has a beneficial therapeutic effect. We all know that a man feels a compelling need to recount a vivid experience again and again until it has lost its affective value...Abreaction is...an attempt to reintegrate the autonomous (traumatic) complex, to incorporate it gradually into the conscious mind as an accepted content, by living the traumatic situation over and over again...* (***The Practice of Psychotherapy*, pp. 131-132)**

Freud and Breuer were the first to identify the phenomenon of abreaction. They called it **catharsis**. Freud built his psychoanalytic psychology on this foundation. In World War I, hypnotic abreactive treatment was common. In World War II, doctors speeded up the treatment. They used narcohypnosis to quickly induce deep trance, then suggested regression and reliving of the memories and buried pain from recently repressed war experiences.

For an amnesic patient, the medical goal of abreaction treatment was to retrieve the repressed memory, plus its associated emotion. If a patient could remember the incident, but had repressed its associated emotion, the therapeutic goal was to retrieve and feel that emotion.

Abreaction also results in bonding with the therapist, and in increased suggestibility. It is a fact that you bond with whomever you cry with, and you listen to their advice with enhanced suggestibility.

> *If any patient is subjected to repeated abreaction...as in psychoanalysis and other*

> *more intensive forms of psychotherapy, and if this occurs over a period of months or years, he often becomes increasingly sensitive and suggestible to the therapist's suggestions and interpretations of symptoms. A hypnoid state of brain activity may result. Patients may come to feel that in some way they are in the hands of a person of almost divine wisdom; they avidly accept suggestions from the therapist about altering their behavior, which would have been quite unacceptable to them in their more normal state of mind. Quite bizarre interpretations are accepted and false memories are believed as facts...* **(Sargant, *The Mind Possessed*, 1974, p. 17)**

Releasing the emotion is a predictable path to healing if the emotion is fear or anger. An extreme outburst of feelings of fear or anger relieves symptoms, so the patient's reliving needs to be as emotional as possible. The doctors developed a routine wherein the patient accessed it, felt it, and worked with it until he consciously understood how the repression had affected him. Then he was able to put the traumatic memory to rest and get on with his life. (However, accessing the emotion of sadness in a depressed patient makes him more depressed.)

Most therapies now include abreaction as a goal. Some therapies now use an abreaction process based in a context of confabulated "memories" and their associated emotions.

Addiction—If you do not quit doing what does not work, you are **addicted**, or have a **neurosis**. Those are deep-level programmings that need to be revised.

Affect—**Affect** is the psychologist's word for emotion. The affective part of a person's response can range from **apathy**, which means no affect at all, to very intense feelings. **Affective tone** refers to a point on the possible spectrum of affect, ranging from the worst pain to the keenest pleasure. Every **conditioned reflex**, meaning every imprint your brain contains, has an associated affective tone.

Emotion makes you more programmable. It **lowers thresholds** (makes programming easier) if the affect is increasing. By the same rule, you become less programmable when in a state of decreasing affect. Greater associated affective tone means better memory for that item. Less associated affective tone means you are more likely to lose that memory.

For example, the TV story, fight, game, or news heightens your emotion. Then comes the commercial. The commercial may further arouse you emotionally (and/or lull you hypnotically). Then comes the commercial's pitch line. Whatever you associate with emotion, can program you.

Agent—Euphemism for a hypnotist, operator.

Altered State of Consciousness—An altered state of consciousness is any mental state (caused by physiological, mental, or chemical actions or agents), which the subject, or an observer of the subject, recognizes as different from his usual waking consciousness.

Amnestic—Amnestic information is brain data for which you are amnestic.

Analysis—"Analysis" can be an abbreviated term for **psychoanalysis,** which investigates verbal memory and thought processes, looking for buried old traumatic material that may be causing present problems. **Jungian analysis** investigates your symbolic, mythic right-brain memory and thought processes. Both analytic approaches have validity, because each draws on a different one of the two separate, parallel hemispheric memory systems--verbal and symbolic. The experience of them is very different, however.

Anchoring—A purely mental suggestion can be strongly reinforced by associating it with an actual physical event, usually a touch. **Anchoring** involves the hypnotist touching the subject, or the hypnotist telling the subject to touch a real object.

Bergen used an anchoring touch to begin, reinforce, and deepen Mrs. E's trance when he was trying to persuade her unconscious to do something particularly objectionable. When John first hypnotized Candy, he told her to close her eyes, think of her forehead, and relax her forehead. He then gently, briefly touched her forehead and eyelids--an anchoring.

Antisocial Hypnosis—For 200 years, the term **antisocial hypnosis** has categorically referred to the possibility that a hypnotic subject can be made to commit a crime, or to be a victim of a crime. The **experimental hypnotists** who researched and argued this subject usually avoided the question of whether a hypnotist could be tempted to so use a subject. They focused almost entirely on whether exploitation was possible.

Anxiety—If you feel apprehension, uneasiness, or a sense of dread, but do not know why, you fit the psychological definition of **anxiety**. The cause is unconscious fear. It may be appropriate, or just a misprogramming. The feeling is hard to overcome until you learn what its unconscious basis is.

Association—In the context of psychology, an **association** is a mental connection between ideas. You can associate words, images, or both. Associations are more like a web than a chain. They are linked in **associative networks**. The key word, to which you associate, is called the **index word.** It draws out con-

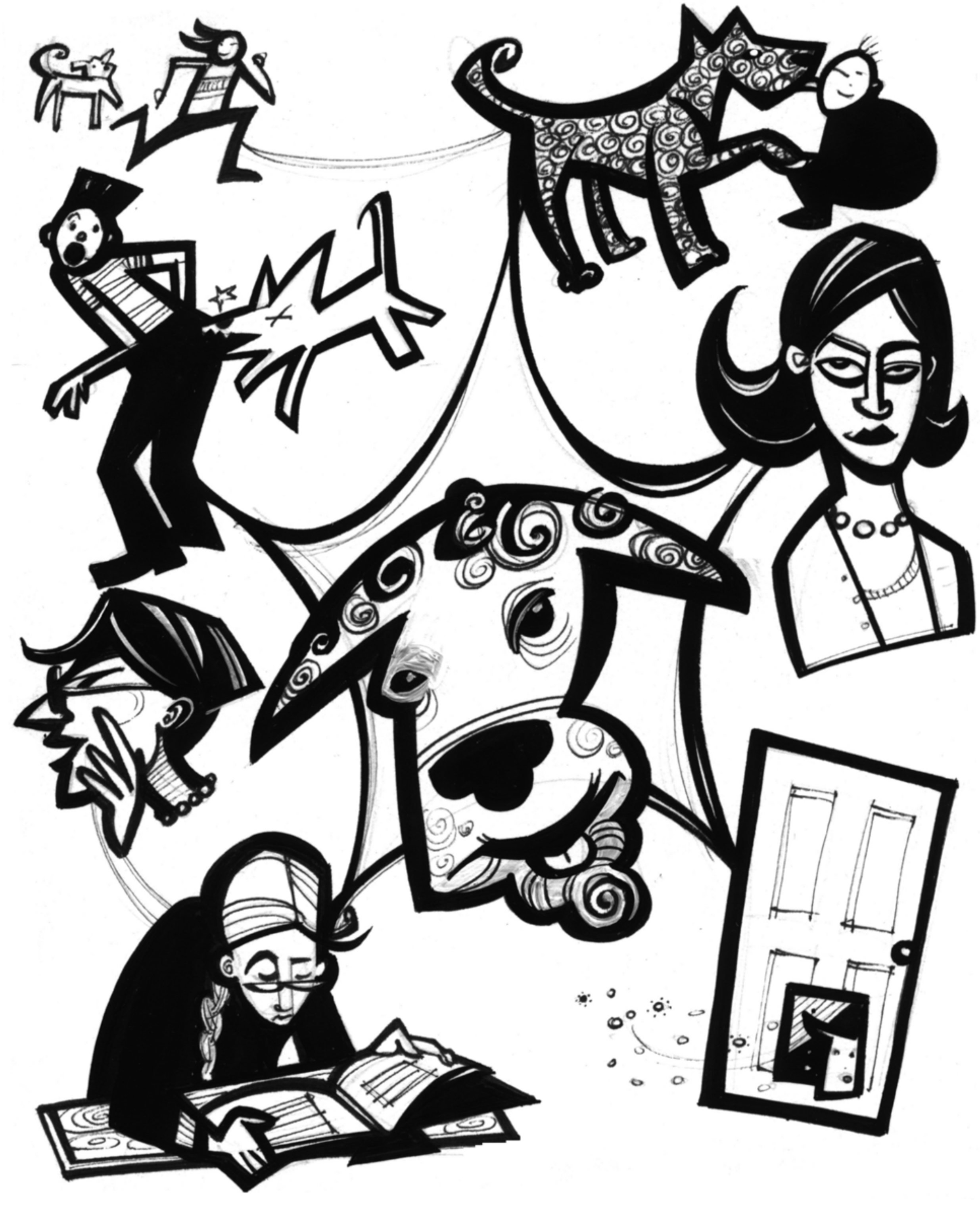

nected items from what memory expert Casey called the "ramifying pathways."

> *...to remember my childhood dog "Peggy" is at the same time to enter a microcosm of that period of my life, a mini-world in which "Peggy" links up with other dogs my family owned, with the way they were regarded by my siblings, with the way they made that domestic space more warmly familiar, etc. Each of the themes just mentioned represents a pathway in this particular part of my past; and from each pathway still others diverge: from "Peggy" the dog to Peggy Mills, the wife of my father's law partner, to "Peg O' My heart," or to Charley Peguy, the French writer...Exploration within memory—even within a single given memory—is potentially endless.* **(Casey, *Remembering*, pp. 204-205.)**

Association has an important role in the remembering process, and in the therapy process.

Automatism—**Automaticity** refers to actions performed unconsciously, reflexively. When you learn to drive, you are learning dependable habit-responses that will eventually be **automatic**, functioning with little active participation by your conscious mind.

Aversive Conditioning—**Aversive conditioning** means training by punishment. In behavioristic psychology experiments, it has often meant electric shock.

> [Prodding is]*...primarily a form of punishment training which almost always includes elements of classical conditioning...In virtually all of the clinical procedures, the delivery of a shock stimulus is contingent on the occurrence of a deviant response.* **(Rachman and Teasdale, *Aversion Therapy and Behaviour Disorders,* Ch. 11)**

Rachman and Teasdale's big, grim book on the subject of using electric prods to educate people also covers other aversive methods, but the authors' preferred method was the prod.

Pavlov's Russian contemporary and competitor, Sechenov, was the first to use electric shocks for conditioning. Shocking has been used ever since. The idea of using cattle prods on people is about as old as cattle prods.

> *Electrical stimulation can be precisely controlled. The therapist is in a position to administer a discrete stimulus of measured intensity for an exact duration of time at precisely the required moment...Unlike chemical aversion treatment, electrical stimulation permits frequent repetitions of the association between the unwanted behaviour and the noxious stimulus. It is perfectly feasible to present a large number of trials to the patient during one session and also to provide for numerous conditioning sessions within the same day. This should enable treatment to progress more quickly. It is also feasible to construct portable apparatus for the delivery of shocks and this allows treatment to be carried out on an outpatient basis.* **(Rachman and Teasdale, *Aversion Therapy and Behaviour Disorders*, pp. 34-6)**

Capitalists responded promptly to requests for a smaller, human-sized prod:

> *Many reform schools and corrective institutions in different parts of the country are still employing the electrically charged cattle prod to shock the recalcitrance out of one's system. The voltage is high enough to destroy the skin on contact. Recent entrants into the field boast of greater refinements in the kind of electric-shock devices they produce; for instance, the Farrall Instrument Company of Grand Island, Nebraska, claims to have overcome the crudity of the cattle prod by having its electric shockers include a voltage control.*
>
> *The Farrall Company, which exhibits its wares at the meetings of the American Psychological Association and other professional conventions, distributes literature rejecting the views of many professionals that aversive methods are more punitive than corrective. It contends that zapping is the panacea for 'antisocial behavior, for psychosomatic disorders, self-destructive behavior and sexual deviance.'* **(Chavkin, *The Mind Stealers*, p. 58)**

The shocks used in aversive conditioning are big ones, maximally strong from the very beginning:

> *...shock intensities need to be fairly high and the hope expressed earlier by Eysenck and Rachman (1965) that mild shocks may be adequate, now seems less probable. It is best to avoid building up from mild to strong shock as this procedure may produce habituation effects...* **(Rachman and Teasdale, p. 70)**

Rachman and Teasdale quoted Azrin and Holz

(1966) on how to most effectively eliminate a targeted behavior using aversive conditioning:

1) *The punishing stimulus should be arranged in such a manner that no unauthorized escape is possible.*

2) *The punishing stimulus should be as intense as possible.*

3) *The frequency of punishment should be as high as possible; ideally the punishing stimulus should be given for every* [disobedient] *deviant response.*

4) *The punishing stimulus should be delivered immediately after the response.*

5) *The punishing stimulus should not be increased gradually but introduced at maximum intensity.*

6) *Extended periods of punishment should be avoided...since the recovery effect may thereby occur...*

7) *An alternative response should be available which will not be punished...* **(Ibid, p. 21)**

The available **alternative response** is submission to whatever the person holding the prod is demanding.

Awake—When the hypnotist is finished and wants you to **wake up**, he says so, and you do. Technically, hypnosis is not sleep, although many oldtime researchers thought it was. Humans are suggestible and are likely to do what the suggester means rather than what he says. If he says "sleep" in an induction procedure, and means hypnosis, he may obtain a hypnosis.

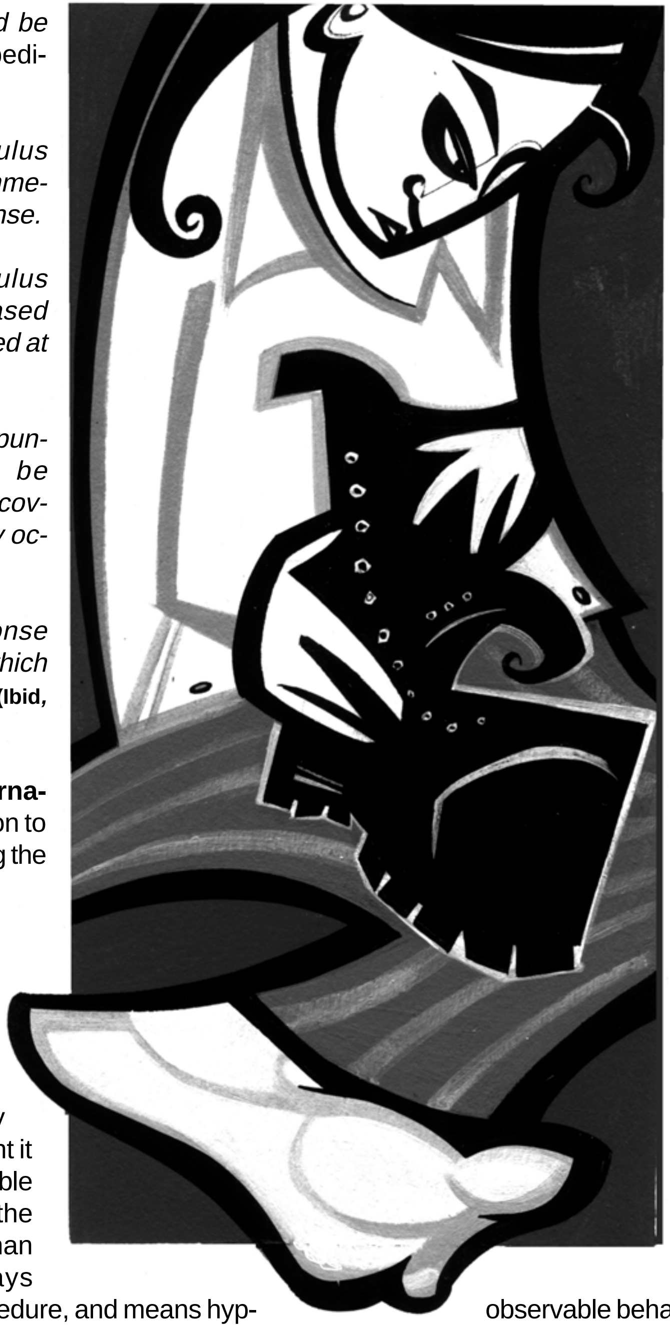

B

Behavior Shaping—This term, **behavior shaping**, comes from **behavior modification**. It means the planned, step-by-step establishment of a series of conditioned reflexes. Each step is achieved and **reinforced** before the next is begun.

Pascal and Salzberg (1959) published a behavior shaping series of steps to create **hypnotic conditioning**. Item 7 asked for waking trance (a somnambulistic depth). Items 8 and 9 were for posthypnotic suggestions: one for a specific amnesia, the other for a posthypnotic act (removing one's shoe to take out hallucinated "pebbles"). In step 10, the wake-up suggestion was given, and tests were given to see if 8 and 9 had worked. Using this system, Pascal and Salzberg reported that over 50% of their subjects had reached somnambulist depth.

Behavior Therapy—The process of **behavior therapy** assumes that personality is an expression of past conditioning. It is a brain's physiological habits. The basic techniques of behavior therapy are **aversion therapy**, **desensitization**, **operant conditioning, modeling** and **biofeedback.**

Behavioral psychologists focus on outwardly observable behavior rather than on what their patient thinks. Behavior therapists focus on treating a specific symptom, rather than freeing up a wide range of unconscious feelings, as a Jungian or Freudian therapist might do. Thus, behavior therapy emphasizes **symptom removal**: "Get rid of the symptom and you have eliminated the neurosis." **(Eysenck, 1959, p. 65)** If the symptom goes away, that means, to a behaviorist, that the treatment was a good one.

Some behavior therapists depend heavily on **relaxation** and **imagery** inductions followed by suggestions or image manipulations. A behaviorist is not interested in spontaneous images which a subject may generate. The goal of this type of therapist is to cause the subject to visualize only the specific images which he tells him to visualize.

Block—A suggestion given under hypnosis that prevents any later hypnotic suggestion is called a **block**. For example, a **sealing suggestion** blocks induction by any other hypnotist.

Brief Therapy—Because **hypnotherapy** can go so quickly to the root of the problem, one school of hypnotherapists calls it **brief therapy**. But some "brief" therapists keep their treatment far briefer than others do. The time requested by a hypnotherapist to solve a subject's problem can range from one session to months, or even years, of sessions.

C

Catatonic—A **catatonic** state involves suggested muscular flaccidity or rigidity.

Clinical—Literally, **clinical** means "bedside." Clinical training is actual internship in a medical setting as contrasted with learning from books and lectures.

Cognitive Dissonance—We defend our mental and life status quo against whatever seems to threaten it. Leon Festinger first pointed out the phenomenon of cognitive dissonance.

> *The word "dissonance", in its ordinary meaning, refers to an inharmonious, inconsistent, discrepant relation between two things. The usage in the theory is similar to this. A cognition is something a person knows about himself, about his behavior, or about his surroundings. Dissonance is said to exist when two cognitions, occurring together, are inconsistent with each other according to the expectations of the person...These expectations of what goes with what are built up on the basis of past experience, including notions of logical relations, cultural mores, and learned empirical correlations among events.*
>
> *The central hypothesis of the theory is that the presence of dissonance gives rise to pressure to reduce that dissonance, and that the strength of the pressure is a direct function of the magnitude of the existing dissonance... Dissonance is conceived as a motivating state comparable to other drive states. Successful reduction of dissonance is, for example, comparable to successful reduction of a state of hunger.* **(Festinger and Bramell, 1962, p. 256)**

People also emphasize the best of what they have chosen in the past and automatically deprecate what they have rejected in the past. We prize consistency in our thought. When a survivor of criminal hypnosis, first recovered a memory associated with amnestic sexual abuse, she refused to continue the process of remembering. She said that what she was remembering was not possible. It did not fit with what she had believed about her life before that moment. She was suffering from cognitive dissonance.

Conditioning—Pavlov originated the view of mental function as based on natural and acquired mental reflexes. He taught that mental reflexes can be created deliberately, or erased. He called that process **conditioning**. Conditioning is a type of training meant to take hold in your unconscious as a reflex. Hypnotists, during and after the fifties, began to use the behaviorist's word, **conditioning,** to also mean suggestions given under hypnosis.

The study of conditioning theories, methods, and applications is now far advanced. There are four types of conditioning: 1) direct **programming** of a subject in trance using conventional forms of communication, 2) Pavlov's **classical conditioning**, 3) Skinner's **operant conditioning**, and 4) Thorndike's **solution learning**. All four types create habits, which are unconscious reflexes.

Classical conditioning happens automatically. In operant conditioning—also known as **learning theory**--you learn because of the result of your act. Operant conditioning is the carrot-and-stick, reward-and-punishment, system. Your operant learning may be initially conscious, but it soon turns to habit (unconscious).

Conscious Mind—There are parts of the brain associated with the **conscious mind**, and parts associated with the unconscious mind. The conscious is closely linked to the **somatic nervous system** (voluntary muscles) via the cerebral cortex (the outermost layer of the cortex). Your thinking, reasoning site is at the extreme frontal area of the cortex. Some psychoanalytic psychologists call the conscious the **ego**, or "Ego."

The job of consciousness is to deal with things for which no habits yet exist or which cannot be left to habit. Consciousness is a luxury in terms of using available mental circuits. We use it sparingly. Most of our mental activity is unconscious (automatic and out of awareness). Stopping at a red light is something you do consciously the first few times. You shift to doing it unconsciously as soon as it becomes habit. When you make an automatic response based on habit, choice is not involved. The act is unconscious.

Choice is the most important role of the conscious part of your mind. Consciously we look at new possibilities, consider reasons and circumstances, factor in our emotions and hopes. If you are denied consciousness, you are denied much of your capacity for free choice, free will.

Consciousness can only work with what data is available to it. Repressed, denied, amnestic data is out of reach for the conscious mind. Therefore, it cannot be factored into conscious analyses preceding choices. The better we understand all the unconscious factors that influence our behavior, the freer and wiser we can be in our behavioral choices. On the other hand, it would be cumbersome, inefficient--if not overwhelming--to consciously process all our sensory intake, data evaluation, and responses.

Therefore, we need both our conscious and unconscious minds. The conscious mind, or **ego,** is our analyzer and decision-maker. The **id (**libido) provides hormonal, instinctive goal directions that **drive** (in the sense of impel) the brain system. The **superego** contains the rules we have been taught, and those learned by experience. It forces the drive to play the game by those rules. The deep **unconscious** is a vast data bank and data processor whose program never finishes running.

Contagion—Induction by **contagion** means induction by unconscious acceptance of an unconsciously perceived suggestion to enter trance and behave in a way you have heard mentioned or seen modeled by someone else.

Context Clues—A hypnotic subject may recognize a past hypnosis incident because of context inconsistencies or inappropriateness. For example, Zebediah realized the hands of the clock had inexplicably jumped forward.

Control—"The concept of **control** is at the center of all psychological research," Ms. Higgins lectured my Developmental Psychology class. The goal of behaviorist, "scientific" psychology has been the prediction and control of behavior.

> *The fundamental moral issues in behavior control do not change, of course, no matter what technology develops around them. They are now, as ever, only these: Who shall be controlled? By whom? How?* **(London, *Behavior Control*, pp. 180-181)**

The inability to make somebody else do what you want frustrates; the dream of omnipotence lures. Society tends to be a hierarchy of controllers and controlees. The healthy counterbalance to control is **autonomy**, for the opposite of control is autonomy. Autonomy is fundamental to identity (and knowing one's true identity is fundamental to autonomy).

Human beings typically give up some autonomy. Why? They do so in order to bond, network, and create a safe social shelter in which to live. The loss of autonomy is scary, yet also attractive, because we are a naturally cooperative species whose cooperation helps us and our descendants to survive. It is the nature of our lives that we have to work together to accomplish almost anything.

Control always looks better in a context of one human being taking responsibility for the welfare of another. As long as our trust is fulfilled and not betrayed with exploitation it is a trade-off that can work for both sides. Control can be predatory, or altruistic, or set up for fair-sharing of power and rewards.

Some psychologists look for ways to control people. Some look for ways to set people free. Some do both. Different schools of psychology have different inclinations. Behaviorists are generally more controlling, Jungians more freeing. Brainwashing is a control technology. Hypnosis can be used either to control or to free.

To a behaviorist, the means to control a life form is to control its environment. To acquire complete control, you completely control the subject's environment. The "mountain tribes," the "country people," have been throughout history a source of annoyance to urban centers of political control. Rural populations tend to be more independent-minded because they are accustomed to more control over their own environment. They grow some of their own food and livestock, perhaps hunt. They situate and build homes somewhat more freely than urban folks. They live, perhaps, beyond observation.

The control of a person's environment, above all, is based in control of their data input. We are what we know (or what we think we know). Whoever influences, or controls, the press, the media—what is said on the 5 o'clock news—influences, or controls, the mind of the nation. People who refuse to watch TV, who do not read conventional newspapers or listen to regular radio stations, and who homeschool their children, are most threatening to central programmers. They avoid "knowing" what everybody else "knows." That allows them to develop some point of view or belief that is uncomfortable to the media-controllers.

Conversion—This has two meanings:

1) To change belief systems. **Conversion** is the goal of every form of persuasion from advertising to evangelism to brainwashing. The prize is your belief because, from your beliefs, come your behaviors, your choices in religion, politics, economics, child bearing, and child rearing. In every contact and context, you experience persuasion—and probably also exert it.

2) "Conversion" is also a term used by hypnotists to mean switching one symptom or behavior (or belief) for another.

Corroboration—Additional independent evidence that supports the original evidence is corroboration. For example, nonhypnotic evidence that supports evidence from a rehypnotization is corrobation and is considered important if a case of criminal hypnosis comes to trial.

Cue—The **cue** is the sensory trigger for a previously implanted posthypnotic suggestion. It instantly triggers a trance state, which is a continuation of the previous trance, and which is focused totally on the accomplishment of the cued task.

Cybernetics—When the brain and nervous system are thought of as an electronic machine—and when machines are thought of as possessing intelligence, even consciousness—this is **cybernetics**.

D

Daydreaming—**Daydreaming** occurs in a lowered state of consciousness-- more to certain types of people than to others. Some daydreamers make up their own stories. Some simply let it happen; that is **autonomous imagery**.

Delirium—An oldtime word for a somnambulistic trance.

Deprogramming—A person who has been brainwashed and then undergoes a rebrainwashing directed at undoing the previous one is said to be **deprogrammed.**

Densitization—**Desensitization** is a behavioral therapy technique for dealing with anxiety-provoking ideas. It can cure **phobias**. Desensitization usually starts with relaxation training to create a trance, but formal trance does not have to be involved. After doing induction training, the therapist presents a series of imagined situations, involving the phobia, in a progression from least to most anxiety-causing. He first asks the client to imagine only little challenge in the problem category, but then moves on to suggest the imagining of bigger, and yet more difficult scenes. (The same **behavior-shaping system** can be used to sneak up on any goal.)

The hypnotic **abreaction** of a traumatic, repressed memory is accomplished in a similar way. When the memory is first encountered, the subject perhaps can be there and suffer the feelings for only half a minute. Then he is brought forward to a happier time for relief. The therapist then returns the subject back to the traumatic scene for about 30 seconds--on that same day, or on a later one. After enough brief visits to the traumatic material, it will be desensitized.

Why did Candy agree to welcome a stranger into her hotel room in San Francisco? She was a long-term responder to patriotic appeal. Every request in the desensitization series that the CIA used to entice her into their hypnoconditioning trap involved the patriotic angle:

1. Will you (help the law and) give me information about the burglary? ("Yes," she said.)

2. Will you let the FBI receive letters here? ("Yes.")

3. Will you call this number everytime something comes for us in the mail? ("Yes.")

4. Will you personally carry a letter to a man in San Francisco? ("Yes.")

Candy's recruitment to CIA hypnoprogrammed courier status was proceeding in a systematic way too:

1. Candy agrees to receive letters for the agency.

2. She agrees to personally carry a secret letter to some unknown man who would knock at her hotel room door in a faraway city.

3. She is then invited to officially become a CIA courier.

4. Ultimately, she carries messages on paper, or in her mind, consciously knowing, or unknowing.

Disorientation—This technique aids induction, deepens trance, and strengthens operator control. For more information, see Operation Often in Part II.

Drive—The deeply rooted needs that push you are called **drive**. In the brain, "drive" equals energy. Emotion causes drive. Sex and aggression are brain drives which are usually inhibited or limited to a permissible form of expression. **Primary process** (unconscious) thinking is sometimes also called "drive," when it is bound up with deep-level drive emotions. We are most likely to repress, "forget," mental thoughts or data which are drive-related, having sexual or aggressive associations. The way our brain is wired gives drive-related thoughts a capacity for indirect, unconscious expression.

E

Ego—The **ego** is your conscious mind. It is the part of you that has the responsibility of making choices, your "I wills," and "I won'ts." It sets goals for the unconscious. It is skeptical and analytical, a good reality tester. It holds the reins to retrievable memories (the continuity of experience by which you define yourself). The ego is not always in control. (See Rationalization, the lies we tell to ourselves.) Reality and fantasy are difficult for an unconscious to distinguish if deprived of its ego's supervision and abilities. That is because, to an unconscious, all data is "now" and "real."

F

Feedback—Observing cause and effect, noting good and bad outcomes, and revising our behavior accordingly, is our **feedback** loop. Self awareness lets you exercise self-control. With feedback, people can accomplish marvelous feats of learned self-control. On the other hand, if the feedback function is blocked--as by suggested amnesia-- the subject is prevented from reforming problem programming in his mind.

Forensic Hypnosis—This is the study of the use of hypnosis in a trial setting.

Freudian Hypnotists—Although many aspects of Freud's theories have been revised or discarded by later psychologists, his concepts of the function of the unconscious, of repression and other defense mechanisms, and the importance of impressions in early childhood, have successfully withstood the test of time. Some Freudian hypnotists performed **psychoanalysis** under hypnosis, which they called **hypnoanalysis**, instead of using Freud's long talking method of psychoanalysis. During World War II, some Freudian psychiatrists used drug inductions followed by abreaction, a process which they called **narcoanalysis.**

Both narcoanalysis and the theories of the Freudian hypnotists are important in the history of mind control.

H

Hellstromism—Hellstromism is a "highly developed 6th sense." Stage performers who do mentalist acts use this word to describe their skill. Texts on this subject are sold in magician specialty shops.

Hypermnesia—Hypermnesia is an ultra-clear remembering of forgotten details of past experience by

Freudian Hypnosis Theory

Schilder and Kauders, two Viennese psychiatric hypnotists contemporary with Freud, began the effort to interpret hypnotic phenomena, a la Freud. They believed infantile, unconscious needs powered the hypnotic induction and subsequent rapport:

1) The wish to "participate in omnipotence" (to subordinate oneself to another person's authority).

2) Tendency to love.

1) Need for Omnipotence—Schilder believed that the infant unconsciously desires **omnipotence.** He meant that the baby wants to win in all contests of will. Reality forces that "latent need" to retreat. Even after it is repressed, however, that desire continues to influence the child's fantasy. As fantasy, it has potential for projection upon other persons—such as a hypnotist.

> *...alterations take place in the external world at his mere wish. For the hypnotized, at least, he is the great magician, who alone is capable, by his wish and will, to produce creative changes in the universe, to eliminate objects from the universe, or supply them to it. In addition, he has this great power over the bodily functions of the hypnotized, in other words, the hypnotizer is a magician, a sorcerer, in the mind of the hypnotized.* **(Schilder and Kauders, p. 42)**

Indeed, the hypnotist can be a powerful magic-maker who changes the subject's sensory perception and bodily function at his mere word. Schilder reasoned that because of the subject's own latent longing for such magical power, he yields himself to the hypnotist's will "to have a share in the greatness of the hypnotizer."

R.W. White was a psychoanalytically-oriented psychiatrist who researched during World War II. He said that susceptibility to hypnosis depends on aptitude plus **motivation**—unconscious needs for love, obedience, and an omnipotent person in your life:

> *...latent infantile needs sometimes function as motivating forces favorable to hypnosis: the need for love, such as a child feels toward its parents, the tendency toward passive compliance in the presence of an elder, and the wish to participate in omnipotence.* **(R.W. White, "*An Analysis of Motivation in Hypnosis, p.161)***

2) Tendency to Love—This is called the **erotive root** of hypnosis. Freud compared being hypnotized to being in love because lovers also tend to display rapport-like subjection, compliance, and disinclination to judge or criticize. Being "in love" generates some trance physiology. Schilder and Kauders, however, saw every hypnosis as an erotic relationship (ordinarily not consummated, of course), hetero-erotic or homo-erotic, depending on the sexes of hypnotist and subject.

means of hypnosis. It is one of the phenomena characteristic of somnambulistic depth of hypnosis. “Hypermnesia” can also mean removal under rehypnotization of a previously suggested hypnotic amnesia, thus allowing a subject to recover memories from previous hypnoses. What the inner will has been induced to suppress, that will can also be moved to set free.

Hypersuggestibility—Orne used the term **hypersuggestibility** to designate the phenomenon of a subject’s enhanced suggestibility, even after the trance is technically over and he has been told to “awake.” Until after a night’s sleep (or longer), the subject remains in a hypersuggestible state. The subject’s respect, awe, unconscious longing to feel that way again, and his suggestibility, linger on. This tendency of rapport to remain, even after the active trance is over, is part of human physiology, and a basis of social bondings. Thus, leaders can get followers. Thus, attraction can build into love.

Hypno-analysis—**Hypno-analysis** is psychoanalysis done under hypnosis. Like hypnotherapy, hypnoanalysis uses age regression, free association, attention to dissolution of resistances, and recovery of repressed material and its accompanying affect, suggested dreams, and posthypnotic suggestions. Unlike hypnotherapy, hypno-analysis also uses purely psychoanalytic concepts such as interpretation of the transference, and the search for the Oedipal root.

Hypnoidal State—Some writers have used the term **hypnoidal state** to mean a light trance.

Hypnotherapy—Therapy done with a client in the state of hypnosis enables the methods of hypnotherapy, to be used. If the client is in a state of trance, but not in formal hypnosis, these methods may also be used: age regression, free association, dissolution of resistances, recovery of repressed information and its accompanying emotion, suggested dreams, and posthypnotic suggestions.

Hypnotist—A hypnotist, in broadest definition, is a person who knowingly puts another person into a a trance state, and then deliberately utilizes the subject’s condition of lowered consciousness by giving suggestions. According to that definition, of course, everybody from the music leader in church to any mesmerizing speaker is a hypnotist” (See the opening section of Part III for more on this.) In its narrowest definition, a hypnotist is a person who seeks to lower consciousness to the point of natural amnesia--or who suggests amnesia.[1]

Hysterical Symptoms—Any illness that has been caused by suggestion can be removed by suggestion. **Hysteria** is an illness of self-suggested symptoms. Hysterical symptoms can be healed by faith or by hypnotherapy which identifies the historical circumstances of, and reason behind, the first appearance of the symptom, abreacts the memory’s emotional content, and supplies mature logic to correct the misprogramming.

I

Ideomotor—See Type 1 inductions: ideomotor reponses.

L

Learned Helplessness—Psychologists call the feeling that you cannot do anything to make it better, that you will keep on failing no matter what, **learned helplessness**. When persons, or animals, receive punishments they cannot predict or prevent, they learn helplessness. Bruno Bettleheim observed it among inmates in Nazi concentration camps. A painful situation has been judged hopeless. The best defense against learned helplessness is optimism, even “foolish” hope.

There has been research both on how to cause learned helplessness, and on how to cure it. Causing it is easy: repeated suffering with no possible escape from it. Curing learned helplessness is harder than causing it, but dogs--and people--can be healed of this. One thing that works is **rescue:** the victim is snatched up and carried away from the situation which taught helplessness. The other thing that works is giving the victim complete **control** of his environment.

Learning Theory—**Learning theory** is a term for operant conditioning, the carrot-and-stick, reward-and-punishment, method of teaching, and learning.

---

[1] I would like to know how those few Bible translators (the Good News bible, for example) that include the word “hypnotism” define it.

Libido—What is termed **instinctual libido** means the classic sexual and aggressive drives.

M

Meditation—Meditation is usually first learned from a book or teacher (hypnotist). After you learn how to get into the trance, you can do it on your own--**self-hypnosis**. At its purest, meditation is the inductive stage of hypnosis, a simple lowering of consciousness. However, suggestibility and rapport always accompany lowered consciousness. The suggestions, specific or implied, and the rapport, will define the future of the experience. Meditation has been demonstrated to reduce stress by those who favor it. However,exercise, daydreaming, and prayer also reduce stress.

Medium—**Medium** once was the European term for any hypnotic subject. In the **spiritualist movement** which evolved from one branch of mesmerism, "medium" came to mean a hypnotized person who delivered messages from spirits of the dead. Another usage meant a somnambulist stage performer. It is now applied mostly to **channelers**. The channeler operates in a self-induced trance.

N

Neurosis—A **neurosis** can result from a struggle between a strong **instinct** and an equally strong **prohibition** in the mind that forbids capitulation to that instinct. The best outcome is finding a way to channel that drive energy into a form of expression that does not risk shame and damage. If the method of expression is a problem, the condition is a neurosis. Luria began the hypnotic technique of creating an artificial neurosis. This process suggests a fake situation of desire, versus prohibition, to a hypnotized person. Amnesia is then suggested, which puts the implant out of reach of the subject's conscious ability to reprogram himself.

O

Operant Conditioning—Human beings constantly revise and correct their own programming according to whether things are working or not. That is **operant conditioning**.

Operator—An **operator** is a hypnotist. He operates the hypnotic subject by means of his instructions to the unconscious machine function in the subject's brain.

P

Posthypnotic Suggestion—A **posthypnotic suggestion** is a hypnotic suggestion regarding something that the subject is to do, think, or believe at some designated future time. Any posthypnotic suggestion must be triggered by a **cue,** any recognizable sign that the hypnotist has suggested to the subject.

Primary Process—**Primary process** is a term originated by Freud. He defined it as thoughts which were impulsive, irrational, primitive, libidinous, and linked to sex and aggression. Freud distinguished between primary thought processes and secondary ones. Primary process was later used to mean hypnotic experiences with vivid imagery. (See Drive.)

Projection—In the hypnotic context, **projection** has two meanings:

1) A **transference reaction** is a projection. People tend to project onto another person—therapist or loved one—feelings associated with a previous relationship, such as father, mother, previous spouse, previous hypnotist.

2) Making up a fairy tale, seeing a shape in a cloud, or in a Rorschach inkblot is also called projection. When a person creates, visualizes, or attributes shape, design, or ideas to something outside himself, he is projecting. Dreams are autonomous, spontaneous projections. Any projection tells much about the projector. You are what you see. The pictures you draw, or stories you tell, express your true attitudes, values, and strivings—both conscious and unconscious.

Psychoanalysis—Freud and Breuer got the credit, but it was really Anna O., Breuer's patient, who invented abreaction, and the "talking cure" that made Freud famous and became known as **psychoanalysis**.

> *During spontaneous auto-hypnotic states...* [Anna] *insisted on relating...fantasies that had the effect of temporarily relaxing her* [inducing trance]. **(Moss, p. 10)**

Breuer called Anna's spontaneous trances "a state of bewilderment." When he noticed her thus, he began to hypnotize her and insist she tell him what she was thinking about. When he had traced all her symptoms back to their origin, they disappeared and did not return. In the process, the cause of each became startlingly clear. Each cause was a amnestic idea/memory acquired in a repressed, painful experience. The hysterical symptoms

> *...immediately and permanently disappeared when we had succeeded in bringing clearly to light the memory of the event by which they were provoked and in arousing their accompanying affect, and when the patient has described that event in the greatest possible detail and has put the affect into words.* **(Breuer and Freud, *Studies on Hysteria*, 1966, pp. 264-265)**

Breuer and Freud had discovered the natural mechanism of **repression** which can cause an unwanted symptom (a conversion of the repressed drive). Anna O. had demonstrated how healing could come from expression and psychological integration of that repressed data. A repressed idea is, by definition, a distorted idea because it has no conscious integration in terms of adult, rational understanding. Since it is entirely unconscious, it is under "irrational," automatic management. The drive energy of the repressed idea and its associated emotion was dispersed by being experienced and expressed--**abreaction**. This was a totally different method of psychological healing from the simple attempts at symptom removal by direct suggestions under deep hypnosis that the oldtime mesmerists had tried.

Pumper Command—A **pumper command** is a suggestion has been linked to an impelling physiological event. The linkage is used to automatically repeat and add drive energy to the suggestion. A common pumper command is, "With every breath you take, you will go deeper and deeper." The subject must breathe. If his unconscious accepts the suggestion, he will go deeper and deeper.

Another pumper command might be, "Every time you have a bowel movement, that act of pushing automatically makes you remember, hold in, and strengthen all my commands." Or, "every time you ...[some sex act], it automatically 'pumps up' your obedience to me--and that obedience will be always strong, firm, exciting and imperative." Pumper commands of this type may be used to program an unknowing subject. They may be intended to keep the entire body of commands at peak functioning, even after the initial conditioning is completed.

R

Rapport—**Rapport** is the unconscious bond which any subject feels with his source of trance. Suggestibility, even outside formal trance, is characteristic of rapport. Suggestible people adulate whoever has impressed them and are vulnerable to further suggestions.

Rationalize -The lie you tell yourself, and/or other persons, to explain an amnestic posthypnotic obedience is called a **rationalization**. The unconscious does not inform the conscious mind that a posthypnotic act was performed because of the hypnotist's suggestion--if that knowledge has been forbidden. So the subject creates another explanation for the act. All hypnotic subjects who obey a posthypnotic suggestion explain their act by a rationalization. They will make up a plausible reason if that is possible. They will produce a stupid excuse if that is the best they can do to explain the posthypnotic act. We always have an explanation for our behavior, true or false.

Recovered Memory—A **recovered memory** is a memory that once was hidden by amnesia. The amnesia might be 1) suggested under hypnosis, or 2) spontaneous, as in terrible emotional shock, or 3) functional, as in the spontaneous dissociation of deep trance.

Reflex—A **reflex** is an automatic stimulus-response function.

Repression—**Repression** is a special form of memory. The unconscious preservation of memories in amnesia is an active, rather than a passive, forgetting process. The unconscious tends to repress a painful memory, keeping it out of conscious awareness. Memories which are most likely to be repressed are those involving trauma, or forbidden wishes, usually of a sexual or aggressive type. Since repressed memory cannot be consciously recalled, it is not subject to the normal mental processes of integration and forgetting. Repressed memories are preserved with content unchanged. They continue to exert pressure (proportionate to their amount of emotional drive) for expression and resolution.

Freud observed that unconscious pressure from amnestic data and feelings resulted in what he called the **return of the repressed**--in dreams, fantasies, slips of the tongue, and forgettings. Those "returns" allow a bit of the repressed idea to return to the subject's real-life function, but in a disguised way.

Resistance—Freud observed that, in order to make repressed information and feelings conscious again, "it was necessary to overcome something that fought against one in the patient." (Freud, *Autobiographical Study)*. That force is called **resistance**. Resistance refuses entrance to certain thoughts. It defends the territory of conscious mind (what you already know) from unconscious data that you do not remember that would emotionally upset you if you did remember it. Resistance is the border guard of your mind against **cognitive dissonance**. It keeps you from thinking ideas that would cause you anguish or would make no sense in terms of your present mental framework.

A hypnotist uses the word "resistance" in a more technical way. He means something inside a subject's mind that resists induction, deepening, releasing of certain information, or the accomplishment of any other suggested mental purpose.

Role-playing—Any suggestible person (actually most persons are more or less suggestible) responds to environmental cues about how to behave. This phenomenon is also true for persons in a formal hypnotic trance. Hypnosis researchers have learned that subjects are sensitive to operator cues, both overt and covert, as to what behavior is expected of them in trance. That tendency in human behavior is called **role-playing**. Some hypnotists have pushed that concept so far as to argue that hypnosis is only suggestible people role-playing what they expect trance to be.

Rorschach Test—This projective personality test evaluates personality and is used to diagnose personality disorders. The **Rorschach test** can also be used to predict hypnotizability. It consists of a set of ten cards, each of which contains an inkblot formed by folding a piece of paper over a patch of ink. Some are in black and white; some are in color. The client is asked what images he sees or is reminded of, either in the inkblot as a whole, or in its details. His answers, together with his timing and attitudes, are tabulated and analyzed.

Each blot was carefully chosen. The responses of thousands of people have been scored and analyzed to establish standard responses, so definite conclusions can be made from the elicited information. Scoring is now very sophisticated, and done by computer. The computer prints out thirty to forty, quite accurate diagnostic paragraphs based on those Rorschach responses.

S

Seance—The European term for a formal session of deep trance or hypnosis is **seance**.

Sensory Deprivation—**Sensory deprivation** denies sensory input. Isolation from other people is its mildest form. Denial of sight, hearing, and touch is its most extreme form. A brain must have sensory input to function normally. If a mind does not get enough input, it will grasp at whatever new data is available . Data acquired in an informational vacuum will be taken more seriously than data acquired under normal circumstances. Sensory deprivation results in both greater suggestibility and greater hypnotic susceptibility.

Shadow—This useful Jungian term describes repressed or undeveloped tendencies and the consciously unacceptable thoughts that are not ordinarily let out. Robert Bly described the roots of a normal shadow:

> *When we were one or two years old we had what we might visualize as a 360-degree personality. Energy radiated out from all parts of our body and all parts of our psyche. A child running is a living globe of energy...but one day we noticed that our parents didn't like certain parts of that ball. They said things like: "Can't you be still?" Or "It isn't nice to try and kill your brother." Behind us we have an invisible bag, and the part of us our parents don't like, we, to keep our parents' love, put in the bag.* **(Bly, p., 17).**

Opposites are an important part of the shadow. For each thing that you consciously are, there exists an unconscious opposite in your shadow. For example, if a person comes on strong about authority, he has a subservient worm in his shadow. If he comes on with superiority, he has an inferiority complex hidden in the darkness of his soul.

For years, I have been consciously characterized by optimism to the point of irrationality. In my shadow an equally irrational, bleak depression was stuffed. As I draw to a close the thirteen years of intense effort spent creating this book, some of that depression has begun to leak out, enabling me to deal with it and get a more realistic outlook. The leakage is evidence of my healing in progress. It means that now I have enough hope to be able to integrate my hidden despair.

The best way to manage a shadow is bravely to look at it, to be aware that it is there. Becoming aware of your shadow reduces its power. Self understanding makes you stronger. It gives you more control over those shadow tendencies.

From the Christian's point of view, we want to expose our past sin to look at and grieve over. Thereby, we acquire the gift of shame. It is shame, deeply felt and laid at the foot of the cross, which then empowers us to CHANGE. From first spiritual experience to last, the Christian's process of becoming is a sorting and resorting process. Empowered by redemption, aided by the Holy Spirit, we push into the shadow what properly belongs there (sin). We bring out what properly should be out (Christlike qualities).

In our unconscious minds, we all carry forever an early model of each parent. Lifelong, we have potential identification with those shadow parental models. Any subject of amnestic hypnosis also acquires a shadow presence of the operator in his unconscious, thus adding the role of hypnotist as well as the role of subject to the previous models. In this book, I know I offer a very mixed message, modeling both operator and subject roles. That reflects the strong hypnotist's presence in my shadow.

Somnambulist—A **somnambulist** is a person who can walk and talk in deep trance without waking up. A somnambulist, when in the deepest trance condition, can "see" a positive or negative hallucination, and he will accept a suggestion for amnesia.

Stockholm Syndrome—The tendency of a prisoner to form a human attachment and identify with the jailer is called **Stockholm syndrome**. The name comes from a hostage-taking holdup in a Stockholm bank, during which one hostage came to identify her well-being with the safety of the criminal who had taken her hostage. In cases of Stockholm syndrome, even for weeks afterward, hostages may have difficulty rejecting feelings that the hostage taker was protecting her from the authorities, and difficulty expressing animosity toward him.

Anna Freud first described this phenomenon of **identification with the aggressor,** a psychological defense mechanism. To avoid a threat, you have to support, even help, the person who poses the threat to you. At the unconscious level, that behavior develops into identification with the threatening person: Stockholm syndrome. At the unconscious level that maneuver can develop into loyalty, obedience, and identification, by means of which the victim tries to earn the aggressor's protection.

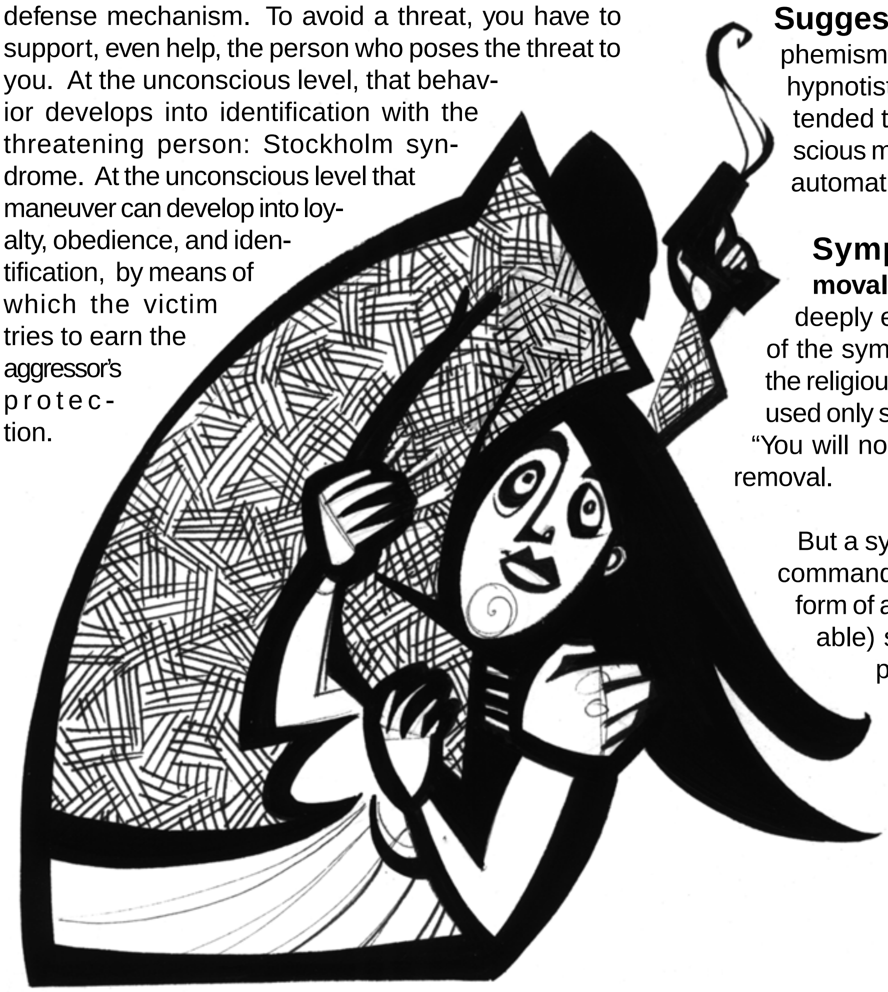

Bruno Bettleheim analyzed Stockholm syndrome in people incarcerated in Nazi concentration camps who began to want to please their aggressor. A victim of criminal hypnosis also may have Stockholm syndrome.

Subconscious—The terms **subconscious** and **unconscious** are interchangeable, but I prefer the latter, which better expresses the significance of that vast non-conscious sector of mind.

Subject—A hypnotized person, or any person who has been hypnotized in the past, is called a **subject**.

Subliminal—A **subliminal** is a message in advertising or motivational material via art, video, audio, or text, which is intended to go directly into unconscious registry without being perceived (or evaluated!) by the conscious mind.

Suggestion—**Suggestion** is a very old euphemism that means any instruction given by a hypnotist to his subject. A suggestion is intended to be received by the subject's unconscious mind as a command and performed with automaticity.

Symptom Removal—**Symptom removal** is a healing technique. The patient is deeply entranced, then healing (and removal of the symptom) is suggested. Faith healers in the religious tradition and the first hypnotherapists used only symptom removal to treat their patients. "You will no longer overeat," suggests symptom removal.

But a symptom simply repressed by hypnotic command may reappear by **conversion** in the form of another (perhaps even more objectionable) symptom, so this method has limited potential.

T

Testing—There are three basic types of **testing** for hypnotic subjects:

1) The **susceptibility test** is a standardized induction to see if a potential subject can become hypnotized, and to measure how easily the induction takes place, and how deep the resulting trance is.

2) After induction, the operator may **test trance depth** by suggesting catalepsy of a body part, such as inability to open the eyes, followed perhaps by some constraint of arm motion. Some hypnotists have tested depth by suggesting numbness, then pinching, burning, or puncturing the subject's flesh.

3) A **follow-up test** checks on the firmness and functionality of deep-level implants by observing whether or not posthypnotic suggestions are carried out. The hypnotized subject may be given a) an amnesia suggestion, and b) a suggestion for a posthypnotic negative hallucination. Those two tests demonstrate maximum somnambulist depth, maximum hypnotic obedience.

Therapy—**Therapy** is one person trying to help another. In **talk therapy,** the counselor listens and reacts. It is amazing how helpful telling a sympathetic listener your troubles for an hour a week can be. It is also amazing how suggestible you can become to clues from the person you tell your troubles to. Talk therapy addiction is now common. For many persons, purchased friendship and "professional" advice have taken over the role that friends and family once had in their lives.

Every form of nondrug therapy has trance experiences available in it. Dream therapy develops positive hallucination. TA leads the subject to dissociation. Prayer lowers consciousness for the believer. Any time a person is vividly remembering what happened in early childhood, or before birth, or "past lives," or seeing things people do not normally see, or conversing with "spirits," they are in deep trance. Any time you experience a full-scale fantasy under deep hypnosis, it is going to feel real and important—profoundly moving, insight-granting, key to personal change. The experience tends to leave you feeling much better, at least for the moment.

> *We even found on occasion that the release of great anger or fear could be more effectively produced around incidents which were entirely imaginary and had never happened to the patient at all, and such abreactions of imaginary events could have remarkably beneficial effects...We found that the two emotions which it was most helpful to arouse...were feelings of great anger and aggression, or of intense fear and anxiety.* **(Sargant, *Battle for the Mind*, p. 5)**

Token Economy—A **token economy** is an operant conditioning method. It gradually **shapes behavior** to bring it into conformity with what is wanted. Complicated behavior patterns can be created by rewarding each item of wanted behavior, or punishing each item of unwanted behavior. Thus, we bring up children.

Torture—Once I thought that **torture** meant only physical and extreme cruelties, such as breaking legs. Then I learned

> *...the generally accepted definition of torture produced by the United Nations, Amnesty International, and other human rights organizations: the deliberate infliction of pain by one person on another in an effort to break the will of the victim.* **(Thomas, p. 2)**

The pain in that definition does not limit torture to physical pain. Forced stress intended to break the will is also "torture." Deliberately caused mental stress can be torture. Suggested, hallucinated pain can be torture. Suggested feelings of terror can be torture.

The important ingredients in the definition of torture are neither the nature of the pain, nor its origin. The two essential elements that define an act as "torture" are 1) that the act is "against his will" and 2) that its purpose is "an effort to break the will of the victim."

Tranceable—Hypnotizable.

Trance Logic—Hypnotized persons are stripped to the mechanical stimulus/response level of their minds. They are literal and humorless. That literalness is called **trance logic**. People simulating hypnosis are unlikely to accurately mimic trance logic, so its appearance has been used as a test to establish if a person is really hypnotized.

Transference—Hypnotic subjects and therapy patients tend to develop rapport--an extraordinary emotional relationship to their hypnotist or therapist. They tend to imbue that relationship with projected, remembered qualities of some unconsciously associated person from their own past, such as a parent. That phenomenon is called **transference**. The transference can be positive or negative. This projection of unconscious feelings from a previous relationship may be mild or intense in strength.

Transfer of Control—If a hypnotist shifts command of a conditioned subject to another operator, that is called **transfer of control** or **shifting the rapport**. The rapport can be shifted in the middle of a trance or by a posthypnotic suggestion. The switch of operators is made keeping all previous hypnotic conditioning fully operational.

U

Unconscious—Subconscious, subjective, subliminal, superconscious, and unconscious, are all terms that have been used to refer to the part of your mind that is not conscious. It is your vast ocean of memory, association, thought, feeling, and habit. In that great deep, your conscious mind is like a little boat floating,

16 Important Characteristics of Every Person's Unconscious

If this seems huge and complex, remember that the human brain is the most complex thing in the known universe, and the unconscious is the larger and most complex part of that brain.

1) The unconscious is a vast and powerful component of your mind. It contains your **intuitive abilities** and your **religion circuits**, the antennae by which you sense the presence of the divine, the mechanism which points out profound truths to your conscious.

2) Your conscious and unconscious minds are **independent, and yet linked**, like gears whose cogs connect. The conscious directs and affects the unconscious. The unconscious directs and affects the conscious. Both rules are true. The unconscious rules by reflex and habit. The conscious rules by suggestion, command, will, and desire.

3) The unconscious accepts any idea you **believe** into your programming basics. The conscious mind can reason either deductively (from principle to derived assumption) or inductively (from evidence to principle). It is a function of the conscious mind to evaluate new ideas and decide if they are true. If that new idea is accepted as true by the conscious, it is then sent along for registering in the unconscious. There, it becomes a deductive principle from which the unconscious will, in the future, automatically reason. The unconscious lacks the analytic, criticizing function which is assigned to your conscious, and it normally reasons only by deduction.

4) The unconscious **reasons by deduction** (from principle to detail), basing its decisions on the accumulation of all your previous beliefs. When we accept religious, moral, or scientific principles (or self-talk—true or false) into our basic unconscious programming, then we live the life that derives from those assumptions.

5) The unconscious contains much programming from childhood, and adolescence, before we could clearly discriminate truth. Some earlier programming may be in **error** and a problem. Impulsive, "illogical" behavior is based in this erroneous programming. If you wish to change yourself, you must change your unconscious beliefs. If your unconscious is reasoning from a false premise, a correct one needs to be substituted.

6) The unconscious is the location of **habit** in your mind. Ideas or behaviors that are frequently repeated become habits. Your unconscious programming is ordinarily dominant over your conscious because most of your behavior is based on habit and automatic.

7) Your unconscious contains your **goals**, and it will drive you toward them. It contains your **attitudes** and will constrain your behavior to conform to them.

8) **Words** have more power than real experience to influence the human unconscious.

9) By means of lowered consciousness (trance), the unconscious mind can be accessed directly. **Trance** inhibits the conscious mind and thereby enables direct contact with the unconscious.

10) Your unconscious contains the origin, memory, and associations of your **emotions**.

11) The unconscious has computer-comparable **memory** with a huge capacity. We know more than we consciously realize.

12) As well as the brain areas containing our memory storage, emotions, and habit, the unconscious is linked to **physiological control systems** of the autonomic nervous system, glands, and the involuntary muscles of heart, lung, and digestive function.

13) It is the seat of creativity, source of that sudden flash of knowing called **insight**. Insight follows intensive preparation by studying and working with a problem, a period of incubation to allow unconscious thinking, and then "listening" with the conscious mind. That listening allows the barrier between conscious and unconscious to lower enough that the answer can be delivered to the conscious.

14) It contains your **id**, the primitive **drive emotions**—anger, fear, sexual desire.

15) It contains your **superego**, which is your **conscience** and restrains you from impulsive, drive-based action.

16) It contains your **hidden observer**, a computerlike, analytic recording mechanism that always knows what is going on and silently registers those facts. The hidden observer rouses you in the presence of danger. For example, it wakes a mother in the night when her child needs her.

or sailing, on its surface with you aboard. You can also think of the **unconscious** as your mind's hard drive. Your conscious mind is you looking at what is on screen.

Freud used the word "unconscious" to describe thought content and process of which we have been unaware, but which can become conscious. The problem with that term is that it can be confused with the knocked-out state. Janet, therefore, substituted the word **subconscious**. But "subconscious" implies a lower mind, and some people object vehemently to that. There are many more terms for the unconscious, just about one for every induction system, philosophical, psychological, or religious view. Often that name is claimed to be the only true one. The unconscious is the mental circuity by which sensitive persons experience the supernatural. That fact makes people touchy about labels.

I use the neutral term "unconscious."

V

Visualization—When a person is told to imagine one, or a series, of mental image(s), that is called **visualizing**. Focus on mental imagery is a standard induction method, often used as a disguised technique.

W

Wake Up—The **wake up** is the coming up/out of the trance.

Bibliography

A Brief History of Information on Criminal Hypnosis

> ***Not the least of the reasons for seeking to discredit hypnotism has been that the public and scientists alike have feared it. In one way, it is most unfortunate that...there should appear popular and scientific articles which tend to arouse further fear—articles by the very men who sincerely believe that hypnosis has something of great value to offer. Pointing out that it can be dangerous in unscrupulous hands is bound to develop and increase such fears...Popular fears of its dangers will certainly restrict its use in the future...On the other hand, if hypnosis can be dangerous to the hypnotized subject, then the public is entitled to know the facts. There can be no question of this...***
>
> **LeCron, *Experimental Hypnosis*, 1952, pp. 371-2**

The work of previous authors who have struggled to collect, record, and disseminate information about the mind-control technologies and their abuses has been a great help and comfort to me. Each writer added nuggets of precious knowledge to the public store and, thereby, made my work easier. Their books were carefully, even tediously, researched—not easy to write. Few sold well. Most passed quickly out of print, and were soon forgotten, the author's hard work neither financially nor socially rewarded.

Information on the possibility of unethical use of hypnosis was first declared top secret in 1784. That year, a Secret Addendum, "For the King's Eyes Only," was delivered to the King of France by Benjamin Franklin's Committee, assigned to evaluate mesmerism. The Addendum stated that there was a risk that women could be raped or seduced when under the influence of hypnosis.

Soon, however, hypnotists were talking openly about those risks. For the next two centuries, European hypnotists argued passionately about the possibility of what became known as **antisocial hypnosis—** whether a hypnotist could get a subject to commit a crime, or to submit to a crime. Some insisted that a hypnotic somnambulist could be caused to commit even theft and murder. Others declared that a hypnotic subject could not be caused to do anything that was against his morals. If the subject accepted a hypnotic suggestion to steal or murder, that only proved he had weak morals and the crime was his fault.

Experimental hypnotists quoted research results at each other. They devised research strategies to prove, or disprove, a position. They researched, argued, and wrote books. Up to 1888, 801 books on various aspects of hypnosis had been published in Europe. Between 1888 and 1890, 382 more books on hypnosis were published. In France, some years, no books were published except on hypnosis! Most of those books dealt with the creation of subjects who were amnesic for their experience under hypnosis: **somnambulists**. In that era more than twenty-five criminal cases were tried that involved criminal hypnosis.

The long and lively debate over antisocial hypnosis raged, unimpeded, in the public press from the time of Mesmer to the 1960s—except for the suppression of Dr. Kroener's book on the case of "Z" by the German government. The heated print arguments dealt with what an operator could, or could not, get a subject to do, and how the operator might accomplish criminal hypnosis, and why the subject might, or might not, submit. (They rarely inquired into the likelihood that an operator might, or might not, attempt to commit the crime.) Up to the 1960s, books on how to hypnotize were in every bookstore. Writers on hypnosis freely discussed the hypnotic condition of amnesic somnambulism.

In 1959, in one of the last and best of those frank and forthright books on hypnosis, Dr. Marcuse stated that a person can be hypnotized against his will under certain circumstances **(*Hypnosis*, pp. 106-107)**. Marcuse said a hypnotist can make a subject obey an objectionable command, and also can make the subject be the one to experience the guilt for doing that act **(Ibid., pp. 109-110)**. He said that a previously hypnotized subject cannot resist re-induction, except by being unable to perceive the cue **(p. 107)**. He warned of problems caused by amateur (or careless) hypnosis.

As military psychology and CIA mind-control research ballooned in the 1960s, print mention of criminal hypnosis in civilian publications dwindled. Marcuse noticed that. He described the Salpetriere case of the deeply entranced girl (Witt.) who, when instructed by male medical students to take off her blouse, converted the suggestion instead into hysterics and woke herself up. If that had been a current news case, and if she had obeyed, Marcuse wrote, "...it may be questioned whether journals or texts would carry this report." **(p. 109)**

Over the next forty years, by a combination of repression, denial, and a busy industry of myth-making, the truth about criminal hypnosis became scarce, sketchy, and confusing—or written in obscure technical language which only insiders could comprehend. Increasingly, any possibility of unethical hypnosis was flatly denied.

During those forty years, the technologies of trance manipulation have become ever more sophisticated and widespread. Experts have become more expert, more potentially exploitative. At the same time, real information about the risks of hypnosis has become ever more limited in supply—and more and more riddled with falsehood. Widespread pro-trance propaganda and lobbying have steadily increased public trust in any trance experience and have encouraged ever greater numbers of people to choose to participate in deep trance experiences.

Libraries now provide generous amounts of information on almost any topic, but not on how to build a nuclear weapon. That is classified. Nor do they provide information on the creation of unknowing hypnotic subjects and other mind-control technologies, for that is "inextricably bound with the secret world of intelligence" **(Thomas, p. 354)**.

But truth has a way of appearing unexpectedly, again, despite everything.

Public Sources of Hypnosis Information

Seattle's public library served me wonderfully well. Through their interlibrary loan department, I obtained hundreds of books and articles about hypnosis from all over—at no charge. I read them all. Bit by bit, the picture came clearer. There are excellent print collections on hypnosis in McGill University's Osler Library (Montreal, Canada), at Vanderbilt University (the Albert Moll Collection), and at Wichita State University (Kansas; the Maurice and Jean H. Tinterow Collection). The National Guild of Hypnotists (P.O. Box 308, Merrimack, NH 03054-0308, 603- 429-9438, FAX 603- 424-8066) sells new and used hypnosis books. It also has a 39-page catalog of audio/video tapes from their annual national conference presenters. Magic, Inc., 5082 N. Lincoln Ave., Chicago, IL 60625, 312-334-2855, sells books on stage hypnotism. Out-of-print, or secondhand books and manuscripts on hypnotism are offered by Mario Carrandi, Jr. (122 Monroe Ave., Belle Mead, NJ 08502, 908-874-0630).

Writings Cited in—Or Relevant to—This Book: A—Z

A

Adams, Ronald L., and Williams, R.A. “Biological Effects of Electromagnetic Radiation (Radiowaves and Microwaves) Eurasian Communist Countries,” [prepared for the] Defense Intelligence Agency, [by the] U.S. Army Medical Intelligence and Information Agency, Report No. DST-1810S-074-76, March 1976. (Summarized in Brodeur, Ch. 24).

Akwei, John St. Clair. Evidence filed in Civil Action 92-0449 against the NSA, U. S. Courthouse, Washington DC. Reprinted in full by the Australian magazine, *Nexus*, April-May, 1996, p. 17. Substancial excerpts are reprinted in *Project L.U.C.I.D.* by Marrs.

Alexander, Gary. “America’s Programmed Assassins,” *Gallery Magazine*, Sept. 1977, p. 36.

Allodi, Federico, M.D. “The Psychiatric Effects of Political Persecution and Torture in Children and Families of Victims,” *Canada’s Mental Health* Sept. 1980, Vol. 28, pp. 8-10; “Ethical and Psychiatric Aspects of Torture: A Canadian Study,” *Canadian Journal of Psychiatry* 1982, Vol. 27, pp. 98-102; “Physical and Psychiatric Effects of Torture: Two Medical Studies,” Stover, Eric and Nightingale, Elena (eds), *The Breaking of Bodies and Minds*, N.Y.: W.H. Freeman, 1985.

This compassionate doctor founded a Canadian center for the treatment of victims of political torture where he studied torture symptoms and their treatment.

Andrews, Lewis M., and Karlins, Marvin. *Requiem for Democracy? An Inquiry into the Limits of Behavioral Control*. N.Y., 1971.

Arnold, William. *Shadowland.* N.Y.: McGraw Hill Book Co., 1978. This brief, readable, tragic biography of the movie star, Frances Farmer, written by a Seattle journalist and investigative reporter, is a case study in brainwashing and the misuse of psychiatry.

Assagioli, Roberto, M.D. *Psychosynthesis*. New York: Viking Press, 1965.

Azam, E. E. *Hypnotisme, double conscience et alteration de la personnalite*. Paris: Bailliere, 1887.

B

Baer, Randall N. *Inside the New Age Nightmare*. Huntington House (P.O. Box 53788, Lafayette, LA 70505), 1989.

Bailly, J. S., et al. “Secret Report on Mesmerism or Animal Magnetism,” Binet and Fere, *Animal Magnetism*, 1887.

Bain, Donald. *The Control of Candy Jones*. Chicago: Playboy Press, 1976.

Bamford, James. *The Puzzle Palace*: *A Report on America’s Most Secret Agency*. New York: Penguin Books, 1983.

Barber, T.X. “Comparison of Suggestibility During Light Sleep and Hypnosis,” *Science*, 1956, Vol. 124, p. 405; “Antisocial and Criminal Acts Induced by ‘Hypnosis’: A Review of Clinical and Experimental Findings,” *Archives of General Medicine*, 1961, Vol. 5, p. 311; “Experimental Evidence for a Theory of Hypnotic Behavior. Vol. II. Experimental Controls in Hypnotic Age Regression,” *International J. of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis,* 1961, Vol. 9, No. 4, pp. 181-93; “Toward a Theory of ‘Hypnotic’ Behavior: the ‘Hypnotically Induced Dream,” *J. of Nervous and Mental Disease,* 1962, Vol. 135, pp. 206-21; “Hypnotic Age Regression: A Critical Review,” *Psychosomatic Medicine* 1962, Vol. 24, No. 3, pp. 286-289; (with Chauncey, H.H., and Winer, R.A.) “Influence of Verbal Suggestion on the Parotid Gland Response to Gustatory Stimuli,” *Proc. Soc. Esp. Biol. Med.*, 1964, Vol. 116, pp. 898-890; “The Effects of ‘Hypnosis’ on Learning and Recall: A Methodological Critique,” *J. of Clinical Psychology* Vol. 21, pp. 19-25; (with D. S. Calverley) “Effects on Recall of Hypnotic Induction, Motivational Suggestions, and Suggested Regressions: A Methodological and Experimental Analysis,” *J. of Abnormal Psychology,* 1966, Vol. 71, pp. 169-180; *Hypnosis: A Scientific Approach*. N.Y.: Van Nostrand Reinhold Co., 1969; “Who Believes in Hypnosis?” *Psychology Today*, July, 1971, p. 84; (with D.M. Cronin and N.P. Spanos) “Augmenting Hypnotic Suggestibility by Providing Favorable Information about Hypnosis,” *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, 1971, Vol. 13, pp. 259-264; (with R. R. Q. Johnson) “Hypnosis, Suggestions, and Warts: An Experimental Investigation Implicating the Importance of ‘Believed-in-efficacy’,” *Amer. J. clin. Hypnosis*, 1978, Vol. 20, pp. 165-174.

Barbizet, Jacques. *Human Memory and Its Pathology*. San Francisco: W. H. Freeman & Co., 1970. (Tr. by D.K. Jardine.)

Barker, W., and Burgwin, S. “Brain Wave Patterns Accompanying Changes in Sleep and Wakefulness During Hypnosis.” *Psychosomatic Medicine*, 1948, Vol. 10, pp. 317-326; “Brain Wave Patterns During Hypnotic Sleep and Normal Sleep,” *Arch. Neurol. Psychiat.*, 1949, Vol. 62, pp. 412-420.

Beaunis. *Le somnambulisme provoque*. Paris, 1887.

Becker, Robert O., and Selden, Gary. *The Body Electric*: *Electromagnetism and the Foundation of Life*. N.Y.: William Morrow, 1985. Becker also published a book called *Cross Currents* which I have not seen.

Beecher, Henry K. “Ethics and Clinical Research,” *New England Journal of Medicine*, 1966, Vol. 274, pp. 1354-1360 (also anthologized in Reiser, Dyck, & Curran.); “Evidence for Increased Effectiveness of Placebos with Increased Stress,” *Amer. J. Physiol*, 1956, Vol. 187, pp. 163-169.

Begich, Dr. Nick. *Towards a New Alchemy: The Millennium Science*. Anchorage, AK: Earthpulse Press.

Bell, Art. *After Dark*. This newsletter contains transcripts from Bell’s late-night radio show. Central Point, OR: Chancellor Broadcasting Co.

Bell, C. “Hypnotism and the Law,” *Medico-Legal Journal* 1895, Vol. 13, pp. 47-56; “The Case of Spurgeon Young,” *Medico-legal Journal* Vol. 13, pp. 529-545.

Benson, Herbert, M.D. “Decreased Alcohol Intake Associated with the Practice of Meditation: A Retrospective Investigation,” *Annals of the New York Academy of Sciences*, 1974, Vol. 233, pp. 174-177; (with R. K. Wallace) “Decreased Drug Abuse with Transcendental Meditation: a Study of 1862 Subjects” in *Drug Abuse Proceedings of the International Conference*, Zarafonetis, C.J.D. (ed.), Philadelphia: Lea and Febiger, 1972, pp. 369-376; *The Relaxation Response*. N.Y.: William Morrow, 1975. (Benson’s bibliography for this book reviews public sources on hypnotic physiology as of 1975. He omits Pavlovian induction types 2, 3, and 4.)

Berger, N. “Evidence—Hypnotically Induced Testimony Admissible if Reasonably Likely to Result in Recall Comparable to Normal Memory,” *Seton Hall Law Rev.*, 1982, Vol. 12, pp. 404-406.

Bernheim, H. M. *Hypnotisme, Suggestion, Psychotherapie*, Paris, 1891. Published in parts, 1884, 1886, and, with a new preface, 1887. Tr. by C. A. Herter, 1888: *Hypnosis and Suggestion in Psychotherapy: A Treatise on the Nature and Uses of Hypnotism*. Reprint, introduction by E. R. Hilgard, New Hyde Park, N. Y.: University Books, 1964. Bernheim also wrote *Suggestive Therapeutics: A Treatise on the Nature and Uses of Hypnotism* (tr. by C. A. Herter), N.Y.: G. P. Putnam’s Sons Co., 1889, and N.Y.: London Book Co., 1947.

Biderman, Albert D. “Communist Techniques of Coercive Interrogation,” (Lackland Air Force Base, Texas. Air Force Personnel and Training Research Center, December, 1956, Development Report AFPTRC-TH-56-132, ASTIA Document #098908; “Communist Attempts to Elicit False Confessions from Air Force Prisoners of War,” B*ulletin of the New York Academy of Medicine*, 1957, Vol. 33, pp. 616-625; “Sociopsychological Needs and Involuntary” Behavior as Illustrated by Compliance in Interrogation,” *Sociometry*, 1960, Vol. 23, pp. 120-217; (with Herbert Zimmer, eds.) *The Manipulation of Human Behavior*, N.Y.: John Wiley & Sons, 1961; *March to Calumny: The Truth About American POW’s in Korea*, N.Y.: Macmillan, 1963.

Binet, A. and Fere, C. French original, 1886. *Animal Magnetism*. London: Kegan Paul, 1887; N.Y.: Appleton-Century, 1888, 1901.

Birns, H.D. *Hypnosis: How to Unleash the Power of Your Mind Without Drugs!* New York: Award Books, Universal Publishing, 1968, 1969. This author makes fleeting, but hard-hitting, reference to unethical hypnosis in Chapter 10, "The Evil Eye: hypnosis in the hands of criminals." He also discusses personality splitting.

Björnstörm, F. *Hypnotism* (Tr. by Baron Nils Posse). N.Y.: Humboldt Publishing Co., 1887.

Blake, Robert Rogers. Article in Biderman and Zimmer (eds) *The Manipulation of Human Behavior*.

Blum, Gerald S., *A Model of the Mind*. N.Y.: Wiley, 1961. "Hypnotic Programming Techniques in Psychological Experiments," in Estabrooks (ed), *Hypnosis: Current Problems*, 1962, Ch. 11; "Hypnosis as a Research Tool," paper presented at the 1968 annual meeting, Society for Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis.

Bly, Robert. *A Little Book on the Human Shadow*. San Francisco: Harper & Row, 1988.

Bourguignon, Erika. (ed) *Religion, Altered States of Consciousness, and Social Change*. Columbus: Ohio State University Press, 1973.

Bowart, Walter. *Operation Mind Control*. N.Y.: Dell Publishing, 1978.

Bowers, Kenneth S. "The Effect of Demands for Honesty on Reports of Visual and Auditory Hallucinations," *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1967, Vol. 15, pp. 31-36; *Hypnosis for the Seriously Curious*. Belmont, CA: Wadsworth Publishing, 1976.

Braid, J. *Neurypnology: The Rationale of Nervous Sleep Considered in Relation with Animal Magnetism, Illustrated by Numerous Cases of its Successful Application in the Relief and Cure of Disease*, London: John Churchill, 1843. It was reprinted, after editing by A. E. Waite as *Braid on Hypnotism: Neurypnology. A new Edition Edited with an Introduction, Biographical and Bibliographical, Embodying the Author's Later Views and Further Evidence on the Subject*, London: George Redway, 1889. And again reprinted and retitled as *Braid on Hypnotism: The beginnings of Modern Hypnosis*, N.Y.: Julian Press, 1960.

Braid also wrote *The Power of the Mind Over the Body: An Experimental Inquiry into the Nature and Cause of the Phenomena Attributed by Reichenbach and Others to a "New Imponderable"* (London: John Churchill, 1846). This one was then revised and published in *Medical Times* (June 13, 20, & 23, 1846). For a modern, abridged version look in W. Dennis, *Readings in the History of Psychology* (N.Y.: Appleton-Century-Crofts, 1948, pp. 178-193). Braid reacted to Colquhoun's 1852 book by writing: *Magic, Witchcraft, Animal Magnetism, Hypnotism, and Electrobiology: Being a Digest of the Latest Views of the Author on These Subjects*. Three editions, each larger than the one before, were published (London: John Churchill, 1852).

Bramwell, J. Milne. "James Braid: His Work and Writings," *Society for Psychical Research: Proceedings*, 1896-7a, 12, Part 30, Supplement pp. 127-166; "What is Hypnotism?" *Society for Psychical Research: Proceedings*, 1896-97b, 12, Part 31, pp. 204-258; *Hypnotism: Its History, Practice and Theory*, London: Rider, 1903, 1913, 1921, reprint N.Y.: Julian Press, 1903, revised edition, Philadelphia: Lippincott, 1928.

Brende, Joel Osler, M.D. "The Use of Hypnosis in Post-Traumatic Conditions" in William E. Kelly (ed.) *Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder and the War Veteran Patient*, N.Y.: Brunner/Mazel, 1985.

Brenman, Margaret. "Experiments in the Hypnotic Production of Anti-social and Self-injurious Behavior," *Psychiatry*, 1942, Vol. 5, pp. 49-61; (with R. P. Knight) "Hypnotherapy for Mental Illness in the Aged: Case Report of Hysterical Psychosis in a 70-year-old Woman," *Bulletin of the Menninger Clinic*, 1943, Vol. 7, p. 188; (with S. Reichard) "Use of the Rorschach Test in the Prediction of Hypnotizability," *Bull. of Menninger Clinic* 1943, Vol. 7, pp. 5-6, 183-187; (with Merton M. Gill) "Treatment of a case of anxiety hysteria by an hypnotic technique employing psychoanalytic principles," *Bulletin of the Menninger Clinic* 1943, Vol. 7, pp. 5-6, 163-71; (with M.M. Gill, and F. J. Hacker) "Alterations in the State of the Ego in Hypnosis," *Bull. Menninger Clin.*, 1947, Vol. 11, p. 60; (with Gill) "The Use of Hypnotic Techniques in a Study of Tension Systems," 1947; (with Gill) *Hypnotherapy: A Survey of the Literature*, London: The Pushkin Press, and N.Y.: International Universities Press, 1947; "Dreams and Hypnosis," *Psychoanalytic Quarterly*, 1949, Vol. 18, pp. 455-465; (with Darrow, Henry, Gill, and Converse) "Frontal Motor Parallelism and Motor Occipital In-phase Activity in Hypnosis, Drowsiness and Sleep," *EEG Clin. Neurophysiol.*, 1950, Vol. 2, pp. 230 and 355; *Hypnosis*, N.Y., 1953; (with Merton M. Gill) *Hypnosis and Related States: Psychoanalytic Studies in Regression*, N.Y.: International Universities Press, 1961.

Breuer. Chapter in Freud and Breuer's *Studies on Hysteria*, Avon Library, 1966.

Brickner, Richard M. (with Kubie, L.S.) "A Miniature Psychotic Storm Produced by a Superego Conflict over a Simple Posthypnotic Suggestion," *Psychoanal. Quart.*, 1936, Vol. 5, pp. 467-487; (with Porter, Robert T., Homer, Warren S., and Hicks, Julia J.) "Direct Reorientation of Behavior Patterns in Deep Narcosis (Narcoplexis)." *Archives of Neurology and Psychiatry* 1950, Vol. 64, pp. 165-195.

Brodeur, Paul. *The Zapping of America: Microwaves, Their Deadly Risk, and the Cover-Up*. N.Y.: W. W. Norton & Co., 1977.

Brooke, Tal, "Education: Capturing Hearts and Minds for a New World," *SCP Journal*, 1992, Vol. 16:4, pp. 20-22.

Brother Lawrence. Selections anthologized in *Practicing His Presence*, Beaumont, TX: The SeedSowers, 1973.

Brouardel, P.; Motel, A.; and Garnier, P. "Affaire Valrof." *Annales d'Hygiene Publique et de Medecine Legale*, 29, 497-524, 1893. Brouardel criticized the legal management of the Bompard case.

Brown, Barbara B., "Recognition of Aspects of Consciousness through Association with EEG Alpha Activity Represented by a Light Signal, *Psychophysiology*, 1970, Vol. 6, pp. 442-452.

Brown, Daniel P., and Fromm, Erica. *Hypnotherapy and Hypnoanalysis*. Hillsdale, N.H.: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates, 1986.

Bryan, William J. *The Legal Aspects of Hypnosis*. Springfield, IL, 1962.

Burgess, Thomas O. "Hypnosis in Dentistry," in LeCron (ed.) *Experimental Hypnosis*.

C

Cameron, D. E. "Psychic Driving: Dynamic Implant," *The American Journal of Psychiatry*, 1956, Vol. 112:7, pp. 502-509; (with Levy and Rubenstein) "Effects of Repetition of Verbal Signals upon the Behaviour of Chronic Psychoneurotic Patients," *The Journal of Mental Science*, 1960, Vol. 106, pp. 742-754; "Production of Differential Amnesia as a Factor in the Treatment of Schizophrenia," *Comprehensive Psychiatry*, 1960, Vol. 1, pp. 26-33; (with Levy, Ban, and Rubenstein) "Further Report on the Effects of Repetition of Verbal Signals" in the *Canadian Psychiatric Association Journal*, 1962, Vol. 6, pp. 210-221. The American Psychiatric Association library in Washington, D.C. has a complete set of the approximately 130 Cameron titles. Thomas, pp. 374-375, lists the Cameron titles.

Cannon, Alexander. *The Science of Hypnotism*, 1936; "Hypnosis in Criminology," *Brit. J. Med. Hypn.*, Summer 1950, Vol. 1, p. 17.

Cannon, W. B. "'Voodoo' Death," *American Anthropologist* XLIV, 1942, pp. 169-181. Reprinted, abridged, in W.A. Lessa and E. Z. Vogt (eds.), *Reader in Comparative Religion: An Anthropological Approach*, N.Y.: Harper & Row, 1965.

Casey, Edward S. *Imagining: A Phenomenological Study*, Bloomington: Indiana U. Press, 1976; *Remembering: A Phenomenological Study,* Bloomington: Indiana U. Press, 1987.

Cautela, J.R. On covert sensitization, *Psychological Record*, 1966, Vol. 16, pp. 33-41; on covert negative reinforcement, *Journal of Behavior Therapy and Experimental Psychiatry*, 1970, Vol. 1, pp. 273-278; on covert conditioning, in A. Jacobs and L. B. Sachs (eds), *The Psychology of Private Events: Perspectives on Covert Response Systems*, N.Y.: Academic Press, 1971; on covert extinction, *Behavior Therapy*, 1971, Vol. 2, pp. 192-200; "Rationale and Procedures for Covert Conditioning," in R. D. Rubin, H. Fensterheim, J.D. Henderson, and L. P. Ullmann (eds), *Advances in Behavior Therapy,* Vol. 4, N.Y.: Academic Press, 1972.

Charcot, J. M. *Hypnotisme et suggestion*. Paris, 1885. Also, *Lectures on the Diseases of the Nervous System*. London, The New Sydenham Society, 1877-1889; "The Faith-cure," *New Review*, 1893, Vol. 8, No. 44, pp. 18-31.

Chavkin, Samuel. *The Mind Stealers: Psychosurgery and Mind Control*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1978.

Christenson, James A., Jr., "Dynamics in Hypnotic Induction," in LeCron (ed), *Experimental Hypnosis*, 1952, pp. 33-53.

Citrenbaum, Charles M., King, Mark E., Cohen, William I. *Modern Clinical Hypnosis for Habit Control*. N.Y.: W.W. Norton & Co., 1985.

Coe W.C. (with Kobayashi, K. and M.L. Howard) "An Approach Toward Isolating Factors that Influence Antisocial Conduct in Hypnosis," *International J. of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis, 1972,* Vol. 20, No. 2, pp. 118-31; "More on Experimental Design in Evaluating the Influence of Hypnosis in Antisocial Conduct," *Proceedings, 80th Annual Convention of the American Psychological Association*, pp. 861-862; "The Problem of Relevance Versus Ethics in Researching Hypnosis and Antisocial Conduct," *Annals of New York Academy of Sciences* 1977, Vol. 296, pp. 90-104; (with Ryden, K.) "Hypnosis and Risks to Human Subjects," *Ameri-*

can Psychologist, 1979, Vol. 34, No. l8, pp. 673-81.

Collins, Anne. *In The Sleep Room: The Story of the CIA Brainwashing Experiments in Canada*.

Collins, Larry. *Mind Control: The Top Secret Weapons of the Future Are Here: Don't Be Frightened. Don't Bother to Run*. I have heard of this book, but have not found a copy.

Colquhoun, J. C. *An History of Magic, Witchcraft, and Animal Magnetism*. (Published in 1800s.)

Condon, Richard. *The Manchurian Candidate*. N.Y.: McGraw-Hill, 1959.

Conn, J. H. "Is Hypnosis Really Dangerous?" *Int. J. Clin. Exp. Hypnosis*, 1972, Vol. 20, pp. 61-79; "The Myth of Coercion through Hypnosis," *International Journal of Experimental and Clinical*, 1981, Vol. 29, pp. 95-100.

Cook, Sm. Wesley, *Practical Lessons in Hypnotism and Autosuggestion*. New York: Willey Book Co., 1927. I found this one while browsing the University of Idaho library shelves. I had wondered if doing that might reveal any books on hypnosis which were not listed in the computer references. His book is interesting, readable—and revealing.

Coon, Dennis, *Essentials of Psychology: Exploration and Application*, (4th ed.), N.Y., West Publishing, 1988. This Psychology 101 text gives the standard patter that hypnosis cannot be misused. It does not mention narcohypnosis. References to hypnosis are always positive.

Corson, William R. *The Armies of Ignorance*, N.Y.: Dial Press/James Wade, 1977.

Corydon, Bent and Hubbard, L. Ron, Jr. (a.k.a. Ronald DeWolf). *L. Ron Hubbard: Messiah or Madman?* Secaucus, N.J.: Lyle Stuart, 1987.

Coue, E., *How to Practice Suggestion and Autosuggestion*, N.Y.: American Library Service, 1923.

Crick, Frances, in *Scientific American*, Dec. 1995, p. 82.

D

Damon, Dr. Dwight. "An Interview with George H. Baranowski," *Journal of Hypnotism*, June 1991, pp. 5-6.

Danto, B. L. "The Use of Brevital Sodium in Police Investigation," *Police Chief*, 1979, Vol. 46, No. 5, pp. 53-55.

Das, J. P. "The Pavlovian Theory of Hypnosis: An Evaluation," *Journal of Mental Science*, 1958, Vol. 104, pp. 82-90; "Conditioning and Hypnosis," *Journal of Experimental Psychology*, 1958, Vol. 56, pp. 110-113; "Learning and Recall under Hypnosis and in the Waking State: a Comparison," *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 1961, Vol. 4, pp. 517-521.

Davis and Husband, "A Study of Hypnotic Susceptibility in Relation to Personality Traits," *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology*, Ap. 1931-Mar. 1932, 26.

Deese, James. *Psychology as Science and Art*, N.Y.: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1972.

De Jonge, Alex. *The Life and Times of Grigorii Rasputin*. N.Y.: Coward, McCann and Geoghegan, 1982.

Deleuze, J. P. F. *Practical Instruction in Animal Magnetism: Part I*. French original published 1825. Translation by T. C. Hartshorn with notes on U.S. cases published in Providence, R.I.: B. Cranton & Co., 1837. *Animal Magnetism*, N.Y., 1846.

Delgado, Jose M., M.D. "Intracerebral Radio Stimulation and Recording in Completely Free Patients," *J. nerv. ment. Dis.*, 1968, Vol. 147, pp. 329-340; *Physical Control of the Mind: Toward a Psychocivilized Society*, N.Y.: Harper & Row, 1969; "E.S.B.," [electrical stimulation of the brain.] *Psychology Today*, May 1970, Vol. 3, No. 12, p. 48.

Dessoir, Max. *Bibliographie des modernen Hypnotismus*, Berlin: Carl Dunckers Verlag, 1888; *Erster Nachtrag zur Bibliographie des modernen Hypnotismus*, Berlin: Carl Dunckers Verlag, 1890.

Deutsch, J. Anthony. "Neural Basis of Memory." *Psychology Today*, May 1968, pp. 56-61.

Deyoub, Paul L. "Hypnotic Stimulation of Antisocial Behavior: A Case Report," *The International Journal of Clinical & Experimental Hypnosis*, July 1984, pp. 301-306.

Du Maurier, George. *Trilby*. New York: Grosset & Dunlap, 1894.

Du Prel, Karl. *Das hypnotische Verbrechen und seine Entdeckung*. Munich 1889.

E

Edmonston, William E., Jr. "An Experimental Investigation of Hypnotic Age Regression," *Amer. J. Clin. Hypn.*, 1960, Vol. 3, pp. 127-138; "Hypnosis as Related to Learning and Electrodermal Measures," *Amer. J. clin. Hypn.*, 1966, Vol. 9, pp. 31-51; "Stimulus-Response Theory of Hypnosis," in J.E. Gordon, (ed.), 1967, pp. 345-387; (with J. R. Erbeck) "Hypnotic Time Distortion: A Note," *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, 1967, Vol. 10, pp. 79-80; "The Effects of Neutral Hypnosis on Conditioned Responses," in Fromm. E. & Shor, R.E. (eds.), *Hypnosis: Research Developments and Perspectives*, Chicago: Aldine-Atherton, 1972, pp. 323-356; (with W. R. Grotevant) "Hypnosis and Alpha Density," *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, 1975, Vol. 17, pp. 221-232; (ed.) "Conceptual and Investigative Approaches to Hypnosis and Hypnotic Phenomena," *Ann. N.Y. Acad. Sci.*, 1977, Vol. 296, pp. 264-273; "Neutral Hypnosis as Relaxation," *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, 1977, Vol. 20, pp. 69-75; "The Effects of Neutral Hypnosis on Conditioned Responses: Implications for Hypnosis as Relaxation," in Fromm, E. & Shor, R.E. (eds.) *Hypnosis: Developments in Research and New Perspectives* (2nd ed.). N.Y.: Aldine Publishing Co., 1979, pp. 415-455; *Hypnosis and Relaxation: Modern Verification of an Old Equation*, N.Y.: John Wiley & Sons, 1981; *The Induction of Hypnosis*, N.Y.: John Wiley & Sons, 1986.

Edmunds, Simeon. *Hypnotism and Psychic Phenomena*. No. Hollywood, CA: Wilshire Book Co., 1961. This little paperback reprint of an English book includes a chapter on "Hypnotism and Crime" and material on psychic research involving trance.

Eisenbud, J. "Psychology of Headache." *Psychiatric Quart.*, 1937, Vol. 11, pp. 592-619.

Ellenberger, Henri F. *The Discovery of the Unconscious: The History and Evolution of Dynamic Psychiatry*. N.Y.: Basic Books, 1970.

Engstrom, D. R., "The Enhancement of EEG Alpha Production and Its Effects on Hypnotic Susceptibility," unpublished doctoral dissertation, U. Southern Cal., 1970.

Epstein, Edward Jay. *Legend: the Secret World of Lee Harvey Oswald*. N.Y.: McGraw-Hill, 1978. He also wrote *Inquest: The Warren Commission and the Establishment of Truth*; *Counterplot: The Garrison Case*; *News from Nowhere*; *Between Fact and Fiction*, and *Agency of Fear.*

Erickson, Milton H.—M. H. Erickson wrote 150 articles on many aspects of hypnosis over a span of many years. The title of an article often does not reveal its most important contents. His most cited publications are:

"The Investigation of a Specific Amnesia," *British Journal of Medical Psychology*, 1933, Vol. 13, pp. 143-150; "A Study of Hypnotically Induced Complexes by Means of the Luria Technique"(with Huston and Sakow), *Journal of General Psychology*, 1934, Vol. 11, pp. 65-97; "A Study of Experimental Neurosis Hypnotically Induced in a Case of Ejaculatio Praecox," *British Journal of Medical Psychology*, 1935, Vol. 15, pp. 34-50; "Development of Apparent Unconsciousness During Hypnotic Reliving of a Traumatic Experience," *Archives of Neurology and Psychiatry*, 1937, Vol. 38, pp. 1282-1288; "The Experimental Demonstration of Unconscious Mentation by Automatic Writing," *Psychoanalytic Quarterly*, 1937, Vol. 6, p. 513; "A Study of Clinical and Experimental Findings on Hypnotic Deafness: I. Clinical Experimentation and Findings," *Journal of General Psychology*, 1938, Vol. 19, pp. 127-150. II. "Experimental Findings with a Conditioned Response Technique," pp. 151-167; "The Use of Automatic Drawing in the Interpretation and Relief of a State of Acute Obsessional Depression," *Psychoanalytic Quarterly*, 1938, Vol. 7, pp. 443-466; "The Hypnotic Induction of Hallucinatory Color Vision Followed by Pseudo-negative After-images," *Journal of Experimental Psychology*, 1938, Vol. 22, pp. 581-588; "The Applications of Hypnosis to Psychiatry," *Medical Record*, 1939, Vol. 150, pp. 60-65; "The Induction of Color Blindness by a Technique of Hypnotic Suggestion," *Journal of General Psychology*, 1939, Vol. 20, pp. 61-89; "An Experimental Investigation of the Possible Anti-Social Use of Hypnosis," *Psychiatry*, 1939, Vol. 2, pp. 391-414; "The Permanent Relief of an Obsessional Phobia by Means of Communication with an Unsuspected Dual Personality," *Psychoanalytic Quarterly*, Oct. 1939, Vol. 8, pp. 471-509; "Experimental Demonstrations of the Psychopathology of Everyday Life," *Psychoanalyt. Quart.*, 1939, Vol. 8, pp. 338, 391, 394-395; "The Translation of the Cryptic Automatic Writing of One Subject by Another in a Trance-Like Dissociated State," *Psychoanalytic Quarterly*, 1940, Vol. 9, pp. 51-63; "Hypnosis: A General Review," *Diseases of the Nervous System*, 1941, Vol. 2, pp. 13-18; "Concerning the Nature and Character of Posthypnotic Behavior," *Journal of General Psychology*, 1941, Vol. 24, pp. 95-133; (with Kubie) "The Successful Treatment of a Case of Acute Hysterical Depression by a Return under Hypnosis to a Critical Phase of Childhood," *Psychoanalytic Quarterly*, Oct. 1941, Vol. 10, pp. 583-609; article in *Psychiatry*, 1942, Vol. 5, pp. 49-62; "Hypnotic Investigation of Psychosomatic Phenomena: Psychosomatic Interrelationships Studied by Experimental Hypnosis," *Psychosomatic Medicine*, 1943, Vol. 5, pp. 51-58; "Hypnotic Investigation of Psychosomatic Phenomena II. The Development of Aphasia-like Reactions from Hypnotically Induced Amnesias," *Psychosomatic Medicine*, 1943, Vol. 5, pp. 59-66; "Hypnotic Investigation of Psychosomatic Phenomena III: A Controlled Experimental Use of Hypnotic Regression in the Therapy of an Acquired Food Intolerance," pp. 67-70; "Unconscious Mental Activity in Hypnosis," *Psychoanalytic Quarterly*, Jan. 1944, Vol. 13, pp. 60-78; "Hypnosis in Medicine," *M. Clin. North America*, 1944, Vol. 28, pp. 639, 389-390; "The Method Employed to Formulate a Complex Story for the Induction of an Experimental Neurosis in a Hypnotic Subject," *Journal of General Psychology*, 1944, Vol. 31, pp. 67-84. Reprinted in J. Haley (ed.), 1967, pp. 312-325; "Hypnotic Techniques for the Therapy of Acute Psychiatric Disturbances in War," *Am. J. Psychiat.*, 1945, Vol. 101, p. 668; "Deep Hypnosis and Its Induction," in L. M. LeCron (ed.), *Experimental Hypnosis: A Symposium of Articles on Research*, N.Y.: Macmillan, 1952, pp. 70-112; "Special Techniques of Brief Hypnotherapy," *J. Clin. Exp. Hypn.*, 1954, Vol. 2, pp. 109-129; "Hypnosis in Painful Terminal Illness," *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, 1958, Vol. I, pp. 117-121; "Further Techniques of Hypnosis—Utilization Techniques," *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, 1959, Vol. 2, pp. 3-21; "A Transcript of a Trance Induction with Commentary," *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, 1959, Vol. 2, pp. 49-84, reprinted in J. Haley, (ed.) 1967, pp. 51-88; "Historical Note on the Hand Levitation and Other Ideomotor Techniques," *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, 1960, Vol. 3, pp. 196-199; *The Practical Application of Medical and Dental Hypnosis*, N.Y.: Julian Press, 1961; "Basic Psychological Problems in Hypnosis Research" and comments in panel discussion transcribed in G. H. Estabrooks (ed.), *Hypnosis: Current Problems*, N.Y.: Harper & Row, 1962, pp. 207-223, 238-272; "The Confusion Technique in Hypnosis," *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, 1964, Vol. 6, pp. 183-207, and reprinted in J. Haley, (ed.), 1967, pp. 130-157; "Initial Experiments Investigating the Nature of Hypnosis," *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, 1964, Vol. 7, pp. 152-162. "Further Experimental Investigation of Hypnosis: Hypnotic and Nonhypnotic Realities," *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, 1967, Vol. 10, pp. 87-135; "Laboratory and Clinical Hypnosis: The Same or Different Phenomena?" *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, 1967, Vol. 9, pp. 166-170; (with E.L. Rossi) "Varieties of Hypnotic Amnesia," *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, 1974, Vol. 16, pp. 225-289.

Esdaile, James. *Mesmerism in India and Its Practical Application in Surgery and Medicine*. London: Longman's, Green & Co., 1846; reprinted, Hartford, England: S. Andrus & Son, 1850; reprinted, retitled *Hypnosis in Medicine and Surgery*, N.Y.: Julian Press, 1957; again reprinted, retitled *Mesmerism in India and Its Practical Application in Surgery and Medicine*, N.Y.: Arno Press, 1976; *Natural and Mesmeric Clairvoyance, with the Practical Application of Mesmerism in Surgery and Medicine*, London: Bailliere, 1852. Reprint N.Y.: Arno Press, 1975.

Estabrook, Marjorie. "Synthetic Dreams Can be 'Made to Order,'" *The Seattle Sunday Times*, Sept. 6, 1942, p. 1.

Estabrooks, George Hoben. "Experimental Studies in Suggestion," *J. of Genetic Psychology*, 1929, Vol. 36, pp. 120-139; "A Standardized Hypnotic Technique Dictated to a Victrola Record," *Am. J. of Psychology*, 1930, Vol. 42, pp. 115-116; "The Psychogalvanic Reflex in Hypnosis," *Journal of General Psychology*, 1930, Vol. 3, pp. 150-157; "Hypnotism is Akin to Sleep Walking and Insanity," *Scientific American*, March, 1936; *Hypnotism*. N.Y.: E.P. Dutton, 1943; 2nd edition, 1944; significantly revised 3rd edition, 1957; (with Richard Lockridge) *Death in the Mind*. N.Y.: E. P. Dutton, 1945; (with Leslie Lieber) "Hypnosis: Its Tremendous Potential as a War Weapon," *Argosy*, Feb. 1950; "The Possible Anti-Social Use of Hypnotism," *Personality: Symposia on Topical Issues*, 1951, Vol. 1, pp. 294-299; "A Case Study in Vocational Adjustment," *Brit. J. Med. Hyp.*, Winter 1952-1953, pp. 13-16; (with Nancy E. Gross) *The Future of the Human Mind*, N.Y., 1961; (ed.) *Hypnosis: Current Problems*, N.Y.: Harper & Row, 1962; "Hypnosis Come of Age," *Science Digest*, April 1971; *Using Hypnotism*. Toronto, Canada: Coles, 1980. (I have not read *Using Hypnotism*, but it must be pretty tame, for it is the only publication by Estabrooks that Lawrence and Perry cite in their book which attempts to shove criminal hypnosis back into the closet.)

Other books by Estabrooks are *Spiritism* and *Man, The Mechanical Misfit*. "Hypnotism is Akin to Sleep Walking and Insanity" has interesting experiments in posthypnotic suggestion. *Hypnosis: Current Problems* offers articles, plus panel participation from Wolberg, Orne, Wright, M. H. Erickson, Estabrooks, et. al., who were brought together for a Colgate University hypnosis symposium.

Evans, F. J. (with Thorn): "Source Amnesia after Hypnosis," *American Psychologist*, 1963, Vol. 18, p. 373. (Abstract); (with Gustafson, O'Connell, Orne, and Shor) "Response During Sleep with Intervening Waking Amnesia," *Science*, 1966, Vol. 152, pp. 666-667; (with Thorn) "Two Types of Posthypnotic Amnesia: Recall Amnesia and Source Amnesia," *International Jour-*

nal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis, 1966, Vol. 14, pp. 162-179; "An Experimental Indirect Technique for the Induction of Hypnosis Without Awareness," *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1967, Vol. 15, pp. 72-85; "Suggestibility in the Normal Waking State," *Psychological Bulletin*, 1967, Vol. 67, pp. 114-129; (with Gustafson, O'Connell, Orne, and Shor) "Sleep-induced Behavioral Response: Relationship to Susceptibility to Hypnosis and Laboratory Sleep Patterns," *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*, 1969, Vol. 148, pp. 467-476; (with Orchard) "Sleep Learning: The Successful Waking Recall of Material Presented During Sleep," presented at Association for the Psychophysiological Study of Sleep, Boston, March 1969; (with Gustafson, O'Connell, Orne, and Shor) "Verbally Induced Behavioral Responses During Sleep," *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*, 1970, Vol. 150, pp. 171-187; "Simultaneous Changes in Skin Potential and Subjective Estimates of Depth of Hypnosis," presented at Eastern Psychological Association, Atlantic City, April, 1970; "Contextual Forgetting: A Study of Source Amnesia," presented at Eastern Psychological Association, New York, April, 1971; (with Kihlstrom) "Posthypnotic Amnesia as Disrupted Retrieval," *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 1973, Vol. 82, pp. 317-323.

Eysenck, H.J. *Uses and Abuses of Psychology*. Baltimore: Penguin, 1953.

F

Faraday, Ann. *Dream Power.* Berkeley: Medallion, 1973; *The Dream Game*, Perennial, 1974.

Farago, Robert. "HDTV Mass Hypnosis," *Journal of Hypnotism*, Sept. 1991.

Ferenczi, Sandor. [Also spelled Ferenci.] *Sex in Psychoanalysis*, Boston: Richard G. Badger, 1916, "Introjection and Transference," reprinted in *Sex in Psychoanalysis*. N.Y.: 1950, pp. 35-93; *Contributions to Psychoanalysis*. (Tr. by E. Jones) Boston: Badger, 1916; (with others) *Psycho-analysis and the War Neuroses*. London: International Psycho-analytical Press, 1921; *Theory and Technique of Psychoanalysis* (Tr. by J. I. Suttie), N.Y.: Boni & Liveright, 1927; "Suggestion and Psychoanalysis," in *Further Contributions to the Theory and Technique of Psychoanalysis*, London: Institute of Psychoanalysis and Hogarth Press, 1926.

Festinger, Leon. *A Theory of Cognitive Dissonance*, Stanford, CA: 1957; (with J. M. Carlsmith), "Cognitive Consequences of Forced Compliance," *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology* 1959, Vol. 58, pp. 203-10; (with D. Bramel) "The Reactions of Humans to Cognitive Dissonance," in Bachrach, A.J. (ed.) *Experimental Foundations of Clinical Psychology*. Basic Books, N.Y., 1962; *Conflict, Decision and Dissonance*, Stanford, CA, 1964.

Finkelhor, David. "What's Wrong with Sex between Adults and Children? Ethics and the Problems of Sexual Abuse." *American Journal of Orthopsychiatry*, 1979, Vol. 49, pp. 692-697.

Fisher, C. "Hypnosis in Treatment of Neuroses Due to War and Other Causes," *War Med.*, 1943, Vol. 4, p. 565.

Fisher, Seymour. *The Use of Hypnosis in Intelligence and Related Military Situations*. Technical Report No. 4, Study SR 177-D, Contract AF 18 (600) 1797. Washington, D.C.: Bureau of Social Science Research, Inc., 1958.

Forel, August. *Der hypnotismus*. Stuttgart, Germany: von Ferdinand Enke, 1902. *Psychotherapy and Suggestion, or Hypnotism*. N.Y.: Allied Publishing Co., 1927.

Franklin, Benjamin. Some researchers list the "Report on Mesmerism" as authored by Franklin, who was Chairman of the French Commission. Actually, Bailly, the Commission's official Reporter, wrote it.

Franklin, Jon. *Molecules of the Mind: The Brave New Science of Molecular Psychology*. N.Y.: Atheneum, 1987.

Freud, Sigmund. "The Psychic Mechanism of Hysteria Phenomena," in *Selected Papers on Hysteria and Other Psychoneuroses*. N.Y.: J. Nerv. Ment. Dis. Publishing Co., 1893; (with J. Breuer) *Studies in Hysteria*. Washington: Nervous and Mental Disease Publishing, 1914; *The Ego and the Mechanisms of Defense,* N.Y.: International Universities Press, 1936, reprinted 1946; "Origin and Development of Psychoanalysis," in *General Selection from Works of Freud,* London: L. and V. Woolf, Institute of Psychoanalysis, 1937; *Group Psychology and the Analysis of the Ego*, London: The Hogarth Press, 1948; "Recommendations to Physicians Practising Psychoanalysis," in *Standard Edition of the Complete Psychological Works* (tr. under editorship of James Strachey), Vol. XII, London: Hogarth, 1958; "Remembering, Repeating and Working-Through," *Standard Edition*, Vol. 12.; *The Ego and the Mechanisms of Defense,* N.Y.: International Universities Press, 1966.

Frey, Alan H. "Auditory System Response to Radio Frequency Energy," *Aerospace Medicine*, Dec. 1961, Vol. 32, pp. 1140-1142; "Human Auditory System Response to Modulated Electromagnetic Energy," *Journal of Ap-*

plied Physiology, Vol. 17, No. 4, July 1962, pp. 689-692.

Fried, Yehuda and Agassi, Joseph. *Paranoia: A Study in Diagnosis*. Boston: D. Reidel Publishing Company, 1976. “Editorial Preface” by Robert S. Cohen and Marx W. Wartofsky. Fromm, Erika and Shor, Ronald E., (eds.) *Hypnosis: Research Developments and Perspectives*. Chicago: Aldine-Atherton, 1972.

Furst, Charles, *Origins of the Mind: Mind-Brain Connections*. Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice-Hall, 1979.

G

Gibbs, Nancy. “The EQ Factor,” *Time*, Oct. 2, 1995, pp. 60-68.

Gindes, Bernard C., M.D. *New Concepts of Hypnosis: Theories, Techniques and Practical Applications*. N.Y.: Julian Press, 1951; reprint, No. Hollywood, CA: Wilshire, 1967.

Glaser, Robert D. and Thorpe, Joseph S., “Unethical Intimacy: A Survey of Sexual Contact and Advances Between Psychology Educators and Female Graduate Students,” *American Psychologist*, Vol. 41, pp. 43-51.

Goldstein, Eleanor and Farmer, Kevin. *Confabulations: Creating False Memories—Destroying Families*. Boca Raton, FL: Social Issues Resources Series Books, 1992; *True Stories of False Memories*. Boca Raton, FL: SIRS, 1993.

Goleman, Daniel. “Sad Legacy of Abuse: The Search for Remedies,” *The New York Times*, Jan. 24, 1989, pp. C1, C6.

Goleman, Daniel and Thurman, Robert A. F., (eds.), *MindScience: An East-West Dialogue*. Boston: Wisdom Publications, 1991.

Gorton, B.E. “The Physiology of Hypnosis. I. A Review of the Literature.” *Psychiatric Quarterly*, 1949, Vol,. 23, pp. 317-343; “The Physiology of Hypnosis. II. A review of the literature.” *Psychiat. Quart.*, 1949, Vol. 23, pp. 457-485; “Current Problems of Physiologic Research in Hypnosis,” in Estabrooks, *Hypnosis: Current Problems*, p. 30.

Grinker, Roy P. and Spiegel, John P. *War Neuroses in North Africa*. N.Y.: Josiah Macy, Jr. Foundation, 1943; *Special Report: Conference on Narcosis, Hypnosis, and War Neuroses*, sponsored by the Josiah Macy, Jr. Foundation, N.Y.: Jan., 1944, “privately distributed”; *Men under Stress*, Philadelphia: Blakiston, 1945; *War Neuroses*, N.Y.: Blakiston, McGraw-Hill, 1945.

Gruneberg, M.M. “Feeling of Knowing and Cued Recall,” *Acta Psychologica*, 1974, Vol. 38, pp. 257-265; “The First Letter Search Strategy,” *IRCS Medical Science: Psychology and Psychiatry*, 1976, Vol. 4, p. 307; “The Feeling of Knowing, Memory Blocks and Memory Aids,” in (with P.E. Morris, eds.) *Aspects of Memory*, London: Methuen, 1978; (with R.N. Sykes) “Knowledge and Memory: The Feeling of Knowing and Reminiscence” in (with P.E. Morris and R. N. Sykes, eds.) *Practical Aspects of Memory*, Academic Press, London, 1978.

H

Hammerschlag, Dr. Heinz E. *Hypnotism and Crime*. Wilshire Book Co., 1957. (Tr. from German, forewords by John Cohen and Melvin Powers) Hammerschlag was a Swiss hypnotist. This brief (137-page) collection of old European incidents involving exploitative hypnosis is of mixed value to researchers. Some cases are marginal, some helpful, some rare and valuable. Although his style is pretentious and often abstract, yet it is also readable and frank about criminal hypnosis.

Harriman, P.L. “The Experimental Production of Some Phenomena Related to the Multiple Personality,” *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology*, 1942, Vol. 37, pp. 244-255; “A New Approach to Multiple Personalities,” *Amer. J. Orthopsychiat.*, 1943, Vol. 13, pp. 638-644.

Hart, Ernest. *Hypnotism, Mesmerism, and the New Witchcraft*. N.Y.: D. Appleton, 1898.

Harte, Richard, *Journal of Hypnotism*, Dec. 1990, Vol. 5, No. 4.

Hartland, J. *Medical and Dental Hypnosis and Its Clinical Applications*. London: Bailliere, 1971 (2nd ed.); “An Alleged Case of Criminal Assault upon a Married Woman under Hypnosis,” *American J. of Clinical Hypnosis* 1974, Vol. 16, No. 3, pp. 188-198. *Medical and Dental Hypnosis and Its Clinical Applications* is a respected collection of induction routines and hypnotherapy principles by this British author.

Hearst, Patricia. *Every Secret Thing*. N.Y.: Doubleday, 1982.

Hebb, Donald (and others). “The Effects of Isolation upon Attitudes, Motivation, and Thought,” and (with W. Heron) “Effects of Radical Isolation upon Intellectual Function and the Manipulation of Attitudes,” both presented at Fourth Symposium, Military Medicine, Defense Research Board, Canada, 1952.

Heron, William T. *Clinical Applications of Suggestion and Hypnosis*, Springfield: Charles C. Thomas, 1950; "Hypnosis as a Factor in the Production and Detection of Crime," *The British Journal of Medical Hypnotism*, 1952, Vol. 3, pp. 15-29; "Hypnosis in Obstetrics (A Psychological Preparation for Childbirth)," in LeCron (ed.) *Experimental Hypnosis*; (ed) *A Handbook of Therapeutic Suggestions*, Minneapolis, MN: American Society of Clinical Hypnosis-Education and Research Foundation, 1971.

Heyer, G. *Hypnosis and Hypnotherapy*. London: W. Daniel Co., 1931. (A British medical hypnotherapy text.)

Hilgard, Ernest R. (with Marquis) *Conditioning and Learning*, 1940; "Impulsive vs. Realistic Thinking: An Examination of The Distinction Between Primary and Secondary Processes in Thought," *Psychological Bulletin*, 1962, Vol. 59, pp. 477-488; "Ability to Resist Suggestions Within the Hypnotic State: Responsiveness to Conflicting Communications," *Psychological Reports*, 1963, Vol. 12, pp. 3-13; *Hypnotic Susceptibility*. N.Y.: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1965; (with L. M. Cooper) "Spontaneous and Suggested Posthypnotic Amnesia," *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1965, Vol. 13, pp. 261-273; "Lawfulness within Hypnotic Phenomena," in Estabrooks, G. H. (ed.), *Hypnosis: Current Problems*, 1965; "Hypnosis and Childlikeness," in J.P. Hill (ed.) *Minnesota Symposia on Child Psychology*, 1971, Vol. 5; "A Critique of Johnson, Maher, and Barber's 'Artifact in the Essence of Hypnosis: An Evaluation of Trance Logic,' with a Recomputation of Their Findings," *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 1972, Vol. 79, pp. 221-233; (with J. R. Hilgard) *Hypnosis in the Relief of Pain*. Los Altos, Calif.: William Kaufmann, Inc., 1975; *Divided Consciousness: Multiple Controls in Human Thought and Action*. N.Y.: John Wiley & Sons, 1977 (Expanded ed., 1986); "Divided Consciousness in Hypnosis: The Implications of the Hidden Observer," in E. Fromm & R. E. Shor (eds.), *Hypnosis: Developments in Research and New Perspectives;* revised. 2nd ed. N.Y.: Aldine, 1979, pp. 145-179; (with E.F. Loftus) "Effective Interrogation of the Eyewitness," *International J. of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1979, Vol. 27, No. 4, pp. 342-57, 1979.

Hilgard, Josephine. (with E.R. Hilgard, and M.F. Newman) "Sequelae to Hypnotic Induction with Special Reference to Earlier Chemical Anesthesia," *J. Nervous and Mental Disease,* 1961, Vol. 133, pp. 461-478; "Personality and Hypnotizability: Inferences from Case Studies," in E. R. Hilgard, *Hypnotic Susceptibility,* N.Y.: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1965; *Personality and Hypnosis: A Study of Imaginative Involvement*, Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1970; "Sequelae to Hypnosis, *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1974, Vol. 22, pp. 281-298; "Imaginative Involvement: Some Characteristics of the Highly Hypnotizable and the Non-Hypnotizable," *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1974, Vol. 22, pp. 138-156; (with E.R. Hilgard) *Hypnosis in the Relief of Pain*, Los Altos, CA: Wm. Kaufmann, 1976.

Hillman. Quoted in *U.S. News and World Report*, June 24, 1991, "Where Emotions Come From" by Erica E. Goode with Joannie M. Schrof and Sarah Burke, p. 62.

Hinkle. Article in Biderman and Zimmer (eds.), *The Manipulation of Human Behavior.*

Hittleman, Richard. *Guide to Yoga Meditation*. N.Y.: Bantam, 1969.

Horsley, J.S. "Narco-Analysis," *Journal of Mental Science*, Vol. 82, pp. 416-422; "Narco-Analysis: A New Technique in Short-cut Psychotherapy: A Comparison with Other Methods," *Lancet*, 1936, Vol. 1, p. 55; "Pentothal Sodium in Mental Hospital Practice," *Brit. M.J.*, May 9, 1936, Vol. 1, p. 938; "Narco-analysis: A Method of Investigating Normal and Morbid Mentality," *M. Press*, 1937, Vol. 194, p. 5109; *Narco-Analysis*. New York & London: Oxford University Press, 1943; Oxford Medical Publications, 1946; "Narcotic Hypnosis: A Critical Discussion of the Relationship Between Hypnosis and Narcosis, and of the Value of These States in Psychological Medicine" in LeCron (ed.) *Experimental Hypnosis*. N.Y.: Macmillan, 1952.

Howell, Max. "Profile of an Investigative Hypnosis Interview," in *Journal of Hypnotism,* March 1991, pp. 36-40.

Hubbard, L. Ron. Dianetics. N.Y.: Hermitage Press, Inc., 1950; *The Science of Survival,* LA: Church of Scientology, 1951.

Hudson, T. R. *The Law of Psychic Phenomena*. 1892.

Hughes, John C. *Hypnosis: The Induction of Conviction*. Hollis, N.H.: Transcendental Publications, 1990.

Hull, Clark L. (with B. Huse) "Quantitative Methods of Investigating Waking Suggestion," *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology*, 1929, Vol. 24, p. 153-169; "Comparative Suggestibility in the Trance and Waking States," *American Journal of Psychology*, 1930, Vol. 42, pp. 279-286; "Quantitative Methods of Investigating Hypnotic Suggestion, Part I," *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology*, 1930, Vol. 25, pp. 200-223;

"Part II," *Ibid.*, 1931, pp. 390-417; (with Patten, E. F., and Switzer, S. A.) "Does Positive Response to Direct Suggestion as Such Evoke a Generalized Hypersuggestibility?" *Journal of General Psychology*, 1933, Vol. 8, pp. 52-64; *Hypnosis and Suggestibility: An Experimental Approach*. N.Y.: Appleton-Century, 1933 (reprint, 1968); "The Concept of the Habit-Family Hierarchy and Maze Learning," *Psychological Review*, 1934, Vol. 41, pp. 33-54; "Mind, Mechanism, and Adaptive Behavior," *Psychological Review*, 1937, Vol. 44, pp. 1-32; *Principles of Behavior: An Introduction to Behavior Theory*. N.Y.: Appleton-Century-Crofts, 1943; *Essentials of Behavior*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 1951; *A Behavior System*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 1952; "Psychology of the Scientist: IV. Passages from the 'Idea Books' of Clark L. Hull," *Perceptual and Motor Skills*, 1962, Vol. 15, pp. 807-882.

Hunt, Morton M. *Mental Hospital*. N.Y., 1962.

Huxley, Aldous. *The Doors of Perception*. N.Y.: Harper & Row, 1954; *Brave New World Re-Visited*. N.Y.: Harper & Row, 1958; *Moksha: Writings on Psychedelics and the Visionary Experience* (1931-1963) (eds., Michael Horowitz and Cynthia Palmer), N.Y.: Stonehill, 1977.

Aldous Huxley coined the term "expanding consciousness" in *The Doors of Perception*, wherein he mused on a mescaline experience. From then on, Huxley advocated the use of hallucinogenic drugs. He had a CIA connection through his correspondence with Lewis J. West. Huxley once proposed hypnotizing subjects then giving them LSD, the resulting mental trip to be directed by posthypnotic suggestions. The CIA was interested.

Hyman, Jackie. AP article. "'Betrayal' alerts women to trust instincts, star says." *Seattle Post-Intelligencer*, Mon., Jan. 3, 1994.

J

Jacobson, E. *Progressive Relaxation*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1928, revised ed., 1938; periodic new editions, such as: *You Must Relax*, 1977.

James, William. "Automatic Writing," *Proceedings of the American Society for Psychical Research*, 1909, Vol. 1, pp. 548-564. *The Principles of Psychology*, Volumes I and II. N.Y.: Henry Holt & Co., 1890, 1904. Reprinted by Dover, 1950. *The Varieties of Religious Experience*. N.Y.: Modern Library, 1902, 1929.

William James, a Harvard professor, wrote the first American psychology text, *The Principles of Psychology*. It served a generation. (My mother used it at college.) In Chapter 27, James broke the psychological taboo against considering the concept of human will as a brain function. About a fourth of his text discussed hypnotism, covering every hypnotic and posthypnotic phenomenon, including hypnotic amnesia and rehypnotization. James later broke another taboo and wrote *The Varieties of Religious Experience*, a psychological study of experiential religious phenomena.

Janet, Pierre. *L'Automatisme psychologique* (Felix Alcan, 1889); *Psychological Healing: A Historical and Clinical Study*. Vol. I & II. (tr. by Eden and Cedar Paul), N.Y.: Macmillan, 1925; *The Mental State of Hystericals,* N.Y.: Putnam, 1901; *The Major Symptoms of Hysteria,* N.Y.: Macmillan, 1907.

Jones, Penn, Jr. *Forgive My Grief*, Vols I-IV. *Volume I*: *A Critical Review of the Warren Commission Report*, 1966; *Volume II, A Further Critical Review of the Warren Commission Report*, 1967; *Volume III, Now the People Know Who Killed Their President and They Are Totally Afraid*, 1969 (reissued with photos in 1976); *IV*: *A Further Critical Review of the Warren Commission Report on the Assassination of President John F. Kennedy*, 1974.

K

Kahn, David. *The Codebreakers*. N.Y.: Macmillan, 1967.

Kaiser, Robert Blair. *"R.F.K. Must Die!": A History of the Robert Kennedy Assassination and Its Aftermath*. N.Y.: E.P. Dutton, 1970.

Katz, Dolores. "Swapping 'Old' Personalities for 'New,'" *Detroit Free Press*, Sunday, Feb. 11, 1973, Vol. 142-No. 279.

Kelly, Sean F., Ph.D., and Reid J. Kelly, A.C.S.W. *Hypnosis: Understanding How It Can Work for You*. Menlo Park, CA: Addison-Wesley, 1983, 1985.

Kleinhauz, Morris and Beran, Barbara. "Misuses of Hypnosis: A Medical Emergency and Its Treatment," *Int. J. Clin. Exp. Hypnosis*, 1981, Vol. 29, pp. 148-161; "Misuse of Hypnosis: A Factor in Psychopathology," *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, Jan. 1984, Vol. 26, No. 3, pp. 283-288.

Kline, M. V. "Hypnotic Age Regression and Intelligence, *J. Genet. Psychol*, 1950, Vol. 77, pp. 129-132; (ed.) *A Sci-*

entific Report on "The Search for Bridey Murphy," N.Y.: Julian Press, 1953; *Hypodynamic Psychology* (ed.) N.Y., 1955; (with Ventur, P., Kransdorff, M.) "A Differential Study of Emotional Attitudes toward Hypnosis with Card 12M of the Thematic Apperception Test," *British Journal of Medical Hypnosis*, 1956, Vol. 8, pp. 5-16; "The Dynamics of Hypnotically Induced Anti-Social Behavior," *J. Psychol*, 1958, Vol. 45, pp. 239-245; *Freud and Hypnosis: The Interaction of Psychodynamics and Hypnosis*, N.Y.: Julian Press, 1958; "The Production of Antisocial Behavior Through Hypnosis: New Clinical Data," *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1972, Vol. 20, pp. 80-94; "Dangerous Aspects of the Practice of Hypnosis and the Need for Legislative Regulation," *Clinical Psychologist,* 1976, Vol. 29, No. 2, pp. 3-6—and other publications.

Knight, Bryan M. "The Case Against Restrictive Laws," *Journal of Hypnotism,* Dec. 1990, Vol. 5, No. 4, pp. 27-30.

Kolb, Lawrence Coleman. *Modern Clinical Psychiatry*. Philadelphia: W. B. Saunders Company, 1982.

Korotkin, I.I. and Suslova, M.M. "Changes in Conditioned and Unconditioned Reflexes During Suggested States in Hypnosis." *In The Central Nervous System and Human Behavior—Translations from the Russian Medical Literature*. Bethesda, MD: U.S. Dept. of HEWW, 1959, pp. 653-670.

Kosslyn, Stephen Michael. *Ghosts in the Mind's Machine: Creating and Using Images in the Brain*. N.Y.: W.W. Norton & Co., 1983.

Kovel, Joel. *A Complete Guide to Therapy from Psychoanalysis to Behavior Modification*. N.Y.: Pantheon Books, 1976.

Kovnat, Denise Bolger, "Committed to Memory," *Rochester Review*, Spring 1989, pp. 9-13.

Kroger, William S. (with Freed) *Psychosomatic Gynecology: Including Problems of Obstetrical Care,* Chicago: Free Press, 1956, reprint by Wilshire, 1962; (with Schneider, A.) "An Electronic Aid for Hypnotic Induction: A Preliminary Report," *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1959, Vol. 7, pp. 93-98; *Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis in Medicine, Dentistry and Psychology*. Philadelphia: J.B. Lippincott, 1963, 1977; (with W.D. Fezler) *Hypnosis and Behavior Modification: Imagery Conditioning*. Philadelphia: Lippincott, 1976; (with R. G. Douce) "Hypnosis in Criminal Investigation," *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1979, Vol. 27, No. 4, pp. 358-74; (with R.G. Douce) "Forensic Uses of Hypnosis," *American J. of Clinical Hypnosis,* Vol. 23, No. 2, pp. 86-93.

Kronenwetter, Michael. *Covert Action*. New York: Franklin Watts, 1991.

Kubie, Lawrence S. "Relation of the Conditioned Reflex to Psychoanalytic Technic." *Archives of Neurology and Psychiatry*, 1934, Vol. 32, pp. 1137-1142; (with R. Brickner) "A Miniature Psychotic Storm Produced by a Superego Conflict over a Simple Posthypnotic Suggestion," *Psychoanal. Quart.*, 1936, Vol. 5, pp. 467-487; "A Critical Analysis of the Concept of a Repetition Compulsion," *Int. J. Psa.*, 1939, Vol. XX, pp. 390-402; (with Margolin) "A Physiological Method for the Induction of States of Partial Sleep, and Securing Free Association and Early Memories in Such States," *Trans. Amer. Neurol. Assoc.*, 1942, pp. 136-139; "Review of Pavlov and His School, by Y.P. Frolov." *Psychoanal. Quart.*, April 1942, Vol. X, pp. 329-339; "Induced Hypnagogic Reveries in the Recovery of Repressed Data," *Bulletin of the Menninger Clinic,* Sept.-Nov. 1943, Vol. 7, pp. 6-7, 172-182, reprinted in Rhodes (ed.), *Therapy Through Hypnosis with Case Histories*; (with S. Margolin) "An Apparatus for the Use of Breath Sounds as a Hypnagogic Stimulus," *Amer. J. Psychiat.*, 1944, Vol. 100, p. 610; (with Margolin) "The Process of Hypnotism and the Nature of the Hypnotic State," *Amer. J. Psychiat.*, 1944, Vol. 100, pp. 611-622; (with Margolin) "The Therapeutic Role of Drugs in the Process of Repression, Dissociation and Synthesis," *Psychosomatic Medicine,* 1945, Vol. 7, pp. 147-151.

Kuhn, Lesley and Russo, Salvatore (eds). *Modern Hypnosis*. No. Hollywood, CA: Wilshire Book Co., 1958. This collection of articles includes Rowland's "Will Hypnotized Persons Try to Harm Themselves or Others"; Wells's "Ability to Resist Artificially Induced Dissociation" and "Experiments in the Hypnotic Production of Crime"; and Erickson's "Concerning the Nature and Character of Post-Hypnotic Behavior" and also "Experimental Investigation of the Possible Anti-Social Use of Hypnosis."

Kuper, Andrew, "AT&T's $12 Billion Cellular Dream," *Fortune,* Dec. 12, 1994, p. 102. (Same info in *Microwave News,* Nov./Dec. 1994.)

L

Laubach, Frank. Selection in *Practicing His Presence* Beaumont, TX: The SeedSowers, 1973.

Lausch, Erwin. *Manipulation: Dangers and Benefits of Brain Research*. N.Y.: The Viking Press, 1972. (Translated from German.) About lobotomy, electroshock, and psycho-drugs.

Lawrence, Jean-Roch, and Perry, Campbell. *Hypnosis, Will, and Memory: a Psycho-legal History*. N.Y.: The Guilford Press, 1986, 1988.

Lawrence, Jodi. *Alpha Brain Waves*. N.Y.: Avon Books, 1972.

LeCron, Leslie M. (with Bordeaux, Jean), *Hypnotism Today*. No. Hollywood, CA: Wilshire, 1947; " A Study of Age Regression Under Hypnosis," in LeCron, (ed.) *Experimental Hypnosis: A Symposium of Articles on Research by Many of the World's Leading Authorities*. N.Y.: Macmillan, 1952, pp. 155-174; "The Loss During Hypnotic Age Regression of an Established Conditioned Reflex," *Psychiat. Quart.*, 1952, Vol. 26, pp. 657-662; "A Method of Measuring the Depth of Hypnosis," *Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1953, Vol. 1, pp. 4-7; *Self Hypnotism*, Englewood Cliffs, N.J., 1964; *The Complete Guide to Hypnosis*, N.Y.: Harper & Row, 1971.

Hypnotism Today is a good little paperback overview of hypnosis (foreword by M. H. Erickson) for lay readers and beginners at hypnotherapy. *The Complete Guide to Hypnosis* is a later paperback overview, also written for the lay reader but with a reassuringly professional flavor. *Experimental Hypnosis* contains: Paul C. Young's "Antisocial Uses of Hypnosis"; M. H. Erickson's "Deep Hypnosis and Its Induction"; "Narcotic Hypnosis" by the hypno-analytic pioneer, Stephen J. Horsley; "The Influence of Hypnosis in Somatic Fields of Function," by Paul J. Reiter, and more.

Lee, Martin A. and Schlain, Bruce. *Acid Dreams: The CIA, LSD, and the Sixties Rebellion*. New York: Grove Press, 1985.

Leuba. "Hypnosis as a Method of Controlling Variables in Psychological Experiments," *Am. J. Psychol.*, 1946, Vol. 59, p. 686.

Levitt, E.E.; Persky, H.; Brady, J.P.; Fitzgerald, J.; and den Breeijen, A. "Evidence for Hypnotically Induced Amnesia as an Analog of Repression," *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*, 1961, Vol. 133, pp. 218-221; (with S. Hershman) "The Clinical Practice of Hypnosis in the United States: A Survey," Paper read at the 14th Int. Congr. Appl. Psychol., Copenhagen, August, 1961; (with S. Hershman) "Clinical Practice of Hypnosis in the United States: A Preliminary Survey," *Int. J. Clin. Exp. Hypnosis*, 1963, Vol. 11, pp. 55-65; (with T. M. Overley and D. Rubinstein) "The Objectionable Act as a Mechanism for Testing the Coercive Power of the Hypnotic State." *American J. of Clinical Hypnosis* 1975, Vol. 17, No. 4, pp. 263-66; (with G. Aronoff, C.D. Morgan, T.M. Overley, and M.J. Parrish). "Testing the Coercive Powers of Hypnosis: Committing Objectionable Acts. *International J. of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1975, Vol. 23, No. 1, pp. 59-67. (Levitt's "objectionable acts" used to test coercive powers of hypnosis were the mutilation of a flag or Bible.) "Research Strategies in Evaluating the Coercive Power of Hypnosis," *Annals of the New York Academy of Sciences*, 1977; "The Use of Hypnosis to "Freshen" the Memory of Witnesses or Victims," *Trial*, 1981, Vol. 17, No. 4, pp. 56-59, 63.

Lew, Mike. *Victims No Longer: Men Recovering from Incest and Other Sexual Child Abuse*. N.Y.: Harper & Row, 1990.

Lewis, C.S. *The Magician's Nephew.* N.Y.: HarperCollins, 1994.

Liebeault, A. A. *Du sommeil et des etats analogues consideres surtout au point de vue de l'action moral sur le physique*. Paris: V. Masson, 1866. "Anesthesie par suggestion," *Journal Magnetisme*, 1885, 64-67.

Liegeois. *De la Suggestion et du Somnambulisme dans leurs rapports avec la Jurisprudence et la Medicine legale*. Paris: 1889.

Lifton, Robert J. "Thought Reform in Western Civilians in Chinese Communist Prisons," *Psychiatry*, 1956, Vol. 19, p. 173; *Thought Reform and the Psychology of Totalism: A Study of "Brainwashing" in China*. N.Y.: W.W. Norton, 1961, 1963, 1969; *Death in Life*, Basic Books, 1968; *The Life of the Self*, Basic Books, 1976; *The Broken Connection*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1979. *Indefensible Weapons*, Basic Books, 1982; *The Nazi Doctors: Medical Killing and the Psychology of Genocide*. N. Y.: Basic Books, 1986.

Lindner, Robert M. *Rebel Without a Cause*. N.Y.: Grove Press, 1944; "The Shared Neurosis: Hypnotist and Subject," *Int. J. Clin. Exp. Hypnosis*, 1960, Vol. 7, pp. 61-70.

Loftus, Elizabeth. "Leading Questions and the Eyewitness Report," *Cognitive Psychology,* 1975, Vol. 7, pp. 560-572; (with G. Zanni) "Eyewitness Testimony. The Influence of the Wording of a Question," *Bulletin of the Psychonomic Society,* 1975, Vol.5, pp. 86-88; *Memory: Surprising New Insights into How We Remember and Why We Forget*. Menlo Park, CA: Addison-Wesley, 1980.

London, Perry. "Hypnosis in Children: An Experimental Approach," *The International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1962, Vol. 2, pp. 10, 69-91; *The Children's Hypnotic Susceptibility Scale*, 1963; *The Modes and Morals of Psychotherapy*, 1964; (with M.Convant and G. C. Davison) "More Hypnosis in the Unhypnotizable: Effects of Hypnosis and Exhortation on Rote Learning," *J. Personality* Vol. 34, pp. 71-79; "The Induction of Hypnosis," in J. E. Gordon (Ed.) *Handbook of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, N.Y.: Macmillan, 1967, pp. 44-79; *Foundations of Abnormal Psychology* (with David Rosenhan), 1968; (with J. T. Hart and M. Leibovitz) "EEG Alpha Rhythms and Susceptibility to Hypnosis," *Nature*, 1968, Vol. 219, pp. 71-72, 1968; *Behavior Control*. N.Y.: Harper & Row, 1969; (with David Rosenhan) *Theory and Research in Abnormal Psychology*, 1969; (with D. R. Engstrom and J.T. Hart) presented "Increasing Hypnotic Susceptibility by EEG Alpha Training" at American Psychological Association annual meeting, Miami Beach, Sept., 1970; "The End of Ideology in Behavior Modification," appeared in *American Psychologist* 27: 913-20, 1972; "Social Issues of Behavior Control: Present and Prospective," *Lex et Scientia* 9:4, pp. 132-38, 1972; "The Future of Psychotherapy" a speech given at the Institute of Society, Ethics and the Life Sciences' Conference on Psychological and Psychotherapeutic Methods of Behavior Control, May 1973, Tarrytown, N.Y (Partial reprint *Hastings Center Report*, Dec., 1973, later revised as "The Psychotherapy Boom," *Psychology Today*, pp. 62-68, June 1974; "Legislating the Brain: The Citizen as Patient," on the ethics of behavior control, in The *Columbia Forum*, Spring 1972, pp. 2-7; "Kidding Around With Hypnosis," *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1976, Vol. 24, p. 2, 105-121.

Lovell, Stanley, Ph.D. *Of Spies and Stratagems*. Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice-Hall, 1963.

Ludwig, Arnold M. "Clinical Features and Diagnosis of Malingering in Military Personnel; Use of Barbiturates as an Aid in Detection," *War Med.*, 1944, Vol. 5, p. 379; "Hypnosis in Fiction," *The International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1963, Vol. XI, No. 2, pp. 71-80; "An Historical Survey of the Early Roots of Mesmerism," *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1964, Vol. 12, pp. 205-217; (with Lyle, W. H.) "Tension Induction and the Hyperalert Trance," *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology*, 1964, Vol. 69, pp. 70-76; "Altered States of Consciousness," *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 1966, Vol. 26, pp. 225-234; "Altered States of Consciousness," in *Trance and Possessions States* (Raymond Prince, ed.) Montreal: R. M. Bucke Society, 1968; Ludwig (et. al.) "The Control of Violent Behavior Through Faradic Shock," *J. of Nervous and Mental Disease*, 1969, Vol. 148, No. 6, pp. 624-31; Ludwig (et. al.) "The Objective Study of a Multiple Personality, Or, Are Four Heads Better Than One?" *Archives of General Psychiatry*, April, 1972, Vol. 26, p. 298; (with Brandsma, J. M.) "A Case of Multiple Personality: Diagnosis and Therapy," *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1974, Vol. 22, pp. 216-233.

Ludwig began his career by experimenting on the use of narcohypnosis to uncloak malingering soldiers. His publications over the next thirty years included reviews of hypnosis in fiction and of the early history of mesmerism, studies of tension inductions, of trance by various names in normal social settings, of curing violent behavior by the use of cattle prodding, and of multiple personality. He publicly claimed that criminal hypnosis existed only in fiction, but experimented at one time or another with most of its elements, including drug induction and sophisticated psychoanalytic manipulations of the unconscious. It would be logical to guess that Ludwig was associated with the technology applied in the Operation Often case history.

Luria, A. R. *The Nature of Human Conflicts (Or Emotion, Conflict and Will: An Objective Study of Disorganization and Control of Human Behaviour*). (Translated from Russian by W. Horsley Gantt) N.Y.: Grove Press, 1932 (Also, New York: Liverright, 1932).

M

Magonet, Philip A. *Practical Hypnotism*. No. Hollywood, CA: Wilshire Book Co., 1957.

Malko, George. *Scientology: The Now Religion*. N.Y.: Dell/ Delacorte Press, Delta Book, 1970.

Mander, Jerry. *Four Arguments for the Elimination of Television.* N.Y.: William Morrow & Company, 1978.

Mandese, Joe. "Setting Minds Against Terrorism." *Advertising Age*, April 24, 1995.

Marcuse, F. L. "Hypnosis in Dentistry," *Amer. J. Orthod. and Oral Surg.*, 1947, Vol. 33, pp. 3-16; "Anti-social behavior and hypnosis, *J. Clin. Exp. Hypn.*, 1953, Vol. 1, p. 18; *Hypnosis: Fact and Fiction*, Baltimore, MD: Penguin Books, 1959 (rev. ed., Baltimore, 1966); *Hypnosis Throughout the World*, Springfield, IL, 1964.

Marks, John D. (with Marchetti, Victor) *The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence*. N.Y., Dell, 1974. *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*. N.Y.: The New York Times

Book Co., 1979.

Marks, Robert W. *The Story of Hypnotism*. New York: Prentice-Hall, 1947.

Marrs, Texe. *Project L.U.C.I.D.—The Beast 666 Universal Human Control System*. Austin, TX: Living Truth Publishers, 1996.

Martin, David C. *Wilderness of Mirrors*. New York: Harper & Row, 1980.

Masserman, Jules H. *Behavior and Neuroses: An Experimental Psychoanalytic Approach to Psychobiologic Principles*. 1943.

Mayer, Dr. med., Ludwig. *Das Verbrechen in Hypnose, and seine Aufklarungsmethoden*. Berlin: J. F. Lehmanns Verlag, 1937. Also, *Die Technik der Hypnose*. Munich: J. F. Lehmanns Verlag, 1953. *Die Technik der Hypnose* includes rebuttal arguments against critics of Dr. Mayer's previous book (on the case of Mrs. E) who insisted in various print sources that hypnotism cannot be abused.

McConnell, James V. "Criminals Can Be Brainwashed Now." *Psychology Today*, April 1970.

McGill, Ormond. *The Encyclopedia of Genuine Stage Hypnotism*. Colon, Michigan, Abbott's Magic Novelty Co., 1947; *Hypnotism and Mysticism of India*; *Professional Stage Hypnotism; Instantaneous Hypnosis Techniques*; Hypnosis Opinions," *Journal of Hypnotism*, June 1991.

McLeester, Dick. *Welcome to the Magic Theater: A Handbook for Exploring Dreams*. Worcester, MA: Saltus Press, 1976.

Meares, A. *Hypnography: A Study in the Therapeutic Use of Hypnotic Painting*. Springfield, IL: Charles C. Thomas, 1957; A System of Medical Hypnosis, Philadelphia: Saunders, 1960; "An Evaluation of the Dangers of Medical Hypnosis," *Amer. J. clin. Hypn.*, 1961, Vol. 4, pp. 90-97.

Meerloo, Joost A. M. "Pavlovian Strategy as a Weapon of Menticide," *Amer. J. Psychiat.*, 1954, Vol. 110, pp. 173-196; "Medication into Submission; the Danger of Therapeutic Coercion," *J. Nerv. Ment. Dis.*, 1955, Vol. 122, pp. 353-360; *The Rape of the Mind: The Psychology of Thought Control, Menticide, and Brainwashing*. N.Y.: Grosset & Dunlap, 1956.

Miller, Tim. *The Assassination Please Almanac*. Chicago: Henry Regnery Co., 1977.

Moll, A. *Der Hypnotismus*, 1889. Translated from fourth German edition by A. F. Hopkirk as *Hypnotism*, N.Y.: Chas. Scribner's Sons, 1898, reprint N.Y.: Walter Scott, 1904; Reprint titled *The Study of Hypnosis: Historical, Clinical, and Experimental Research in the Techniques of Hypnotic Induction*, N.Y.: Julian Press, 1958. Reprint titled *Hypnotism*, N.Y.: Da Capo Press, 1982.

Montgomery, Geoffrey. "Molecules of Memory," *Discover*, Dec., 1989, pp. 46-55.

Moss, Aaron A. "Hypnodontics" in LeCron (ed) *Experimental Hypnosis*.

Moss, C. Scott. "Therapeutic Suggestion and Autosuggestion, *J.Clin.Exp.Hypnosis*, 1958, Vol. 6, pp.109-115; "Present Status of Psychological Research and Training in Hypnosis: A Developing Professional Problem," *Amer. Psychol.*, 1962, Vol. 17, pp. 542-549; "Brief Crisis-Oriented Hypnotherapy," in J. Gordon (ed) *Handbook of Hypnotherapy*, N.Y.: Macmillan, 1965; *Hypnosis in Perspective*. N.Y.: Macmillan, 1965.

Myers. *Exploring Psychology*, 1990.

N

Naeslund, Robert. *When the State Rapes*. (You may contact the author, Robert Naeslund, at Slipgaten 12, 117-39, Stockholm, Sweden).

Nelson, Robert A. *Hellstromism*. (Oldtime mentalist stage performers' catalog published by Nelson Enterprises, Columbus, Ohio).

Noel, Barbara. *You Must Be Dreaming*. Poseidon Press.

O

Orne, Martin T. "The Mechanisms of Hypnotic Age Regression: An Experimental Study," *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology*, 1951, Vol. 46, pp. 213-225; "The Nature of Hypnosis: Artifact and Essence," *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology*, 1959, Vol. 58, pp. 277-299; "The Potential Uses of Hypnosis in Interrogation," in Biderman and Zimmer (eds), *The Manipulation of Human Behavior*, 1961; (with O'Connell, D.N.) "Bioelectric Correlates of Hypnosis: An Experimental Reevaluation," *J. of Psychiatric Research*, 1962, Vol. 1, pp. 201-213; "Implications for Psychotherapy Derived from Current Research on the Nature of Hypnosis," *Amer. J. Psychiat.*, 1962, Vol. 118, pp. 1097-1103; "Hypnotically Induced Hallucinations," In L. J. West (Ed.) *Hallucinations*. N.Y.: Grune and Stratton, 1962; "Antisocial Behavior and Hypnosis: Problems of Control and Validation in Empirical Studies," in Estabrooks (ed.) *Hypnosis: Current Problems*. N.Y.: Harper & Row, 1962, pp. 137-192; Undesirable Effects of Hypnosis: The Determinants and Management," *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1965, Vol. 13, pp. 226-237; (with F. J. Evans) "Social Control in the Psychological Experiment: Antisocial Behavior and Hypnosis," *J. of Personality and Social Psychology* 1965, Vol. 1, No. 3, pp. 189-200; "The Use and Misuse of Hypnosis in Court," "Can a Hypnotized Subject Be Compelled to Carry out Otherwise Unacceptable Behavior?" *The Int. J. Clin. Exp. Hypnosis*, 1972, Vol. 20, pp. 101-117; "The Use and Misuse of Hypnosis in Court," *Int. J. Clin. Exp. Hypnosis*, 1979, Vol. 24, pp. 311-341; amicus brief to U.S. Supreme Court in case of *Quaglino v. The People of the State of California*, 1978

Ornstein, Robert E. (with Naranjo, C.) *On the Psychology of Meditation*. N.Y.: Viking, 1971; *The Psychology of Consciousness*. San Francisco: Freeman, 1972 (2nd ed. N.Y.: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1977); *The Nature of Human Consciousness*. N.Y.: Viking, 1973; (with Richard F. Thompson) *The Amazing Brain*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1984.

Oswold, Ian. *Sleep*. Baltimore, MD: Penguin Books, 1966.

P

Paivio, A. "Imagery and Language," in Segal, S.J. (ed.) *Imagery: Current Cognitive Approaches*. N.Y.: Academic Press; *Imagery and Verbal Processes*. N.Y.: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1971; "Imagery and Long-term Memory," in Kennedy, A. and Wilkes, A. (eds) *Studies in Long Term Memory*: London: Wiley; "Dual Coding: Theoretical Issues and Empirical Evidence," in Scandura, J.M. and Brainerd, C.J. (eds) *Structural/Process Models of Complex Human Behavior*. Leiden: Nordhoff.

Pardell, S. S. "Psychology of the Hypnotist," *Psychiat. Quart.*, 1950, Vol. 24, pp. 483-491.

Pavlov, I.P. *Conditioned Reflexes*. London: Oxford Press, 1927 (reprint N.Y., 1960); *Lectures on Conditioned Reflexes*. (Tr. by W. Horsley Gantt): Vol I. *The Higher Nervous Activity (Behaviour) of Animals*, London: Lawrence & Wishart, 1928; and *Lectures on Conditioned Reflexes*, Vol II: *Conditioned Reflexes and Psychiatry*, Vol. II, N.Y.: International Publishers, 1941; *Experimental Psychology*: N.Y., Philosophical Library, 1957.

Perry, C. W. "An Investigation of the Relationship between Proneness to Fantasy and Susceptibility to Hypnosis." Unpublished doctoral dissertation, University of Sydney, Australia, 1965; "The Relation of Some Aspects of Imagery and Fantasy to Hypnotic Susceptibility," *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 1970, Vol. 76, pp. 279-287; (with F.J. Evans, D.N. O'Connell, M.T. Orne, and Emily C. Orne) *Behavioral Response to Verbal Stimuli Administered and Tested During REM Sleep: A Further Investigation*, Philadelphia, PA: Institute of the Pennsylvania Hospital, 1972; "Variables Influencing the Posthypnotic Persistence of an Uncancelled Hypnotic Suggestion," in W. E. Edmonston, Jr. (ed.), *Conceptual and Investigative Approaches to Hypnosis and Hypnotic Phenomena*; "Hypnotic Coercion and Compliance to It: A review of Evidence Presented in a Legal Case," *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1979, Vol. 3, No. 27, pp. 187-218. Also see Lawrence (and Perry).

Pettinati, Helen M. (ed.) *Hypnosis and Memory*. Guilford Press, 1988. This book was published by Lawrence and Perry's publisher as part of the Guilford Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis Series (which Pettinati coedits). I have not read it. According to the advertising, it is "directly questioning the value of hypnosis" in a legal setting. The ad also mentions amnesia:

> *No volume on hypnosis and memory can be complete without a discussion of the use of hypnosis to aid forgetting (posthypnotic amnesia)... Understanding the reversal of amnesia in laboratory studies* [is] *reviewed in the book's third section...*

The publisher also claims that this book covers hypnotherapy and "narcosynthesis," and describes it as "an indispensable reference for investigators...a source of pertinent information for law enforcement and legal professionals." Having carefully read the publisher's other offering in this field (by Lawrence and Perry), I am skeptical.

Phillips, Mark E. Various brief self-published items. Phillips works hard to get the word out that he is an "MK-ULTRA Abuses Investigator" for the "SKBI Research Group." He urges past mind-control victims to contact him. I advise you to avoid him and his organization. If what Phillips fears has even a grain of truth, networking would be a dumb thing to do. Including, or especially, with him.

Pincher, Chapman, "Typist in Trance Against Her Will," *Daily Express*, Nov. 13, 1959.

Pines, Maya. *The Brain Changers: Scientists and the New Mind Control*. N.Y.: Signet (New American Library), 1973

Platanow, K.I. "On the Objective Proof of the Experimental Personality Age Regression," *J. Gen. Psychol.*, 1933, Vol. 9, pp. 190-209.

Polgar, F. J. *The Story of a Hypnotist*. N. Y.: Hermitage House, 1951.

Pope, Kenneth S.; Keith-Spiegel, Patricia; Tabachnick, Barbara G. "Sexual Attraction to Clients: The Human Therapist and the (Sometimes) Inhuman Training System," *American Psychologist*, Vol. 41, pp. 147-158.

Powers, Melvin. *Advanced Techniques of Hypnosis*. No. Hollywood: Wilshire, 1953; *Hypnotism Revealed: The Powers Technique of Hypnotizing and Self-Hypnosis*. Hollywood: Wilshire, 1949, 1969.

Powers also wrote: *Self-Hypnosis*, *Dynamic Thinking*, *Hypnotism Revealed*, *The Science of Hypnosis*, *Advanced Techniques of Hypnosis*, *A Practical Guide to Self-Hypnosis*, *A Practical Guide to Better Concentration*. He wrote this revealing series of how-to-hypnotize books for the mass market in the 50s; his Wilshire Book Company still sells them by mailorder.

R

Rachman, S. and Teasdale, J. *Aversion Therapy and Behaviour Disorders: An Analysis*. Coral Gables, FL: U. of Miami Press, 1969.

Rauchman, Steven. "The Invisible Scars of Torture." *Canadian Doctor*, Nov/Dec, 1985, pp. 29-34.

Reilly, S. W. *Stage Hypnotism*. (Superficial information, scripts for short hypnosis acts by stage magicians.); *Hellstromism*. (On mentalist acts, using highly-developed ability to observe.)

Reiser, M. "Hypnosis as an Aid in a Homicide Investigation," *American J. of Clinical Hypnosis*, 1974, Vol. 17, No. 2, pp. 84-87; "Hypnosis as a Tool in Criminal Investigation," *Police Chief*, 1976, Vol. 43, No. 11, pp. 36, 39-40; "Hypnosis and Its Uses in Law Enforcement, *Police J.*, 1978, Vol. 5, No. 1, pp. 24-33; *Handbook of Investigative Hypnosis*, L.A., Calif.: Lehi Pub. Co., 1980; (with M. Nielson) "Investigative Hypnosis: A Developing Specialty, *American J. of Clinical Hypnosis*, 1980, Vol. 23, No. 2, pp. 75-77.

Reiter, P. J. *Antisocial or Criminal Acts of Hypnosis: A Case Study*. Springfield, IL: Charles C. Thomas, 1958; "The Influence of Hypnosis on Somatic Fields of Function, " in LeCron (ed) *Experimental Hypnosis: A Symposium of Articles on Research by Many of the World's Leading Authorities*. N.Y.: Macmillan, 1952.

Rhodes, Raphael H. (ed.). *Therapy Through Hypnosis with Case Histories*. No. Hollywood, CA: Wilshire Book Co., 1952.

Rolin, Jean. *Police Drugs*. N.Y.: Philosophical Library, 1956.

Rothschild, David, et. al. "Regressive Shock Therapy in Schizophrenia," *Diseases of the Nervous System*, 1951, Vol. 11, pp. 147-150.

Rowland, L. W. "Will Hypnotized Persons Try to Harm Themselves or Others?" *J. Abnorm. & Social Psychol*, 1939, Vol. 34, pp. 114-117. Reprinted in L. Kuhn & S. Russo (eds.), *Modern Hypnosis*, North Hollywood, CA: Hal Leighton, 1958.

Ruckman, Peter. *Black Is Beautiful*. Pensacola, FL: Bible Believer's Press, 1995.

S

Salter, Andrew. "Three Techniques of Autohypnosis." *Journal of General Psychology*, 1941, Vol. 24, pp. 423-438; *What Is Hypnosis? Studies in Auto and Hetero Conditioning*. N.Y.: Richard R. Smith, 1944; London: Athenaeum Press, 1950, N.Y., 1965, 1972; *The Case Against Psychoanalysis*. N.Y.: Holt, 1952; *Conditioned Reflex Therapy: The Direct Approach to the Reconstruction of Personality*. N.Y.: Creative Age Press, 1949, 2nd ed. Capricorn Books, 1961; (with Joseph Wolpe and L.J. Reyna) *The Conditioning Therapies*, N.Y.: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, Inc., 1964.

Sargant, William. (with R. Fraser) "Inducing Hypnosis by Hyperventilation," *Brit. J. Med.*, 1935, Vol. 1, p. 378; *Battle for the Mind: A Physiology of Conversion and Brain-Washing*. N.Y.: Doubleday, 1957 (reprints Harper and Row, 1971, and Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1975); *The Unquiet Mind: The Autobiography of a Physician in Psychological Medicine*. London: William Heinemann, Ltd., 1967; (with E. Slater) *Introduction to Physical Methods of Treatment in Psychiatry*. Churchill and Livingston, 1973; *The Mind Possessed: A Physiology of Possession, Mysticism and Faith Healing*, N.Y.: J. B. Lippincott Co., 1974.

Schacter, Daniel L., "Multiple Forms of Memory in Humans and Animals," in Weinberger, McGaugh, Lynch (eds.), *Memory Systems of the Brain*, N.Y.: Guilford Press, 1985. (In Ch. 20, he describes the independent memory systems of left and right brains, and muscle memory.)

Scheflin, Alan W. and Opton, Edward, M., Jr. *The Mind Manipulators*. N.Y.: Grosset & Dunlap, 1978. Also, New York and London: Paddington Press, Ltd.

Schilder, P. F., and Kauders, O. *Hypnosis*. Translated from German by S. Rothenberg. N.Y.: Nervous and Mental Disease Publishing Co. Monograph Series, No. 46, 1927. Reprint titled *The Nature of Hypnosis*. (Tr. by Gerda Corvin) N.Y.: International Universities Press, 1956; Excerpts reprinted in the *Journal of Hypnotism.* For example, Chapter 11, "The Technique of Hypnosis," Dec. 1990, pp. 31-36; Schilder (no coauthor), *Psychotherapy*. N.Y.: W.W. Norton, 1938.

Schorr, Daniel. *Clearing the Air*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1977.

Schrag, Peter. *Mind Control*. N.Y.: Pantheon Books, 1978.

Schreiber, Flora Rheta. *Sybil*. N.Y.: Warner Paperback Library, 1973.

Schrenck-Notzing, A.N. *The Use of Hypnosis in Psychopathia Sexualis*. N.Y.: The Julian Press, 1956.

Schultz, J. H. *Die seelische Krankenbehandlung.* Stuttgart, 1952.

Schwartz, B. E., Bickford, R. G., and Rasmussen, W. C. "Hypnotic Phenomena, Including Hypnotically Activated Seizures, Studied with the Electroencephalogram." *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*, 1955, Vol. 122, pp. 564-574.

Sextus, Carl. *Hypnotism: A Correct Guide to the Science and How Subjects Are Influenced*, 1893. Reprint: No. Hollywood, CA: Wilshire Book Company, 1957.

Simpson, Christopher. *Science of Coercion*. Oxford University Press, 1994.

Skinner, B. F. *Walden Two.* N.Y.: Macmillan., 1948; *Science and Human Behavior*. N.Y.: Macmillan, 1953; "Freedom and the Control of Men," *The American Scholar* Winter 1955-56, Vol. 25, pp. 47-65; *Beyond Freedom and Dignity*. N.Y.: Bantam/Knopf, 1971; About *Behaviorism.* N.Y.: Alfred A. Knopf, 1974.

Spanos, N. P. and John F. Chaves (eds), *Hypnosis: The Cognitive-Behavioral Perspective*. Prometheus Books, 1989.

Spiegel, Herbert, M.D. (with Shor, J., and Fishman, S.) "An Hypnotic Ablation Technique for the Study of Personality Development," *Psychosomatic Medicine,* Vol. 7, p. 273; "Hypnosis and Evidence: Help or Hindrance?" *Annals of N.Y. Academy of Science*, Vol. 347, pp. 73-85. Spiegel also wrote an Introduction to Bain's book, *The Control of Candy Jones*.

Stephenson, Sir William. *A Man Called Intrepid.*

Stine, G. Harry. *The Silicon Gods*. N.Y.: Dell, 1984.

Stover, Eric and Nightingale, Elena O., M.D. (eds). *The Breaking of Bodies and Minds*: *Torture, Psychiatric Abuse, and the Health Professions*. (American Association for the Advancement of Science) N.Y.: W. H. Freeman and Co., 1985.

Suedfeld, Peter. "The Benefits of Boredom: Sensory Deprivation Reconsidered." *American Scientist*, 1975, Vol. 63, pp. 60-69.

T

Tardieu, *Etudes medico-legales sur les attentats aux moeurs*. Paris, 1878.

Tart, Charles T., "Types of Hypnotic Dreams and Their Relation to Hypnotic Depth," *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 1960, Vol. 71, pp. 377-382; (with Suzanne Troffer) "Experimenter Bias in Hypnotist Performance," *Science*, 1964, Vol. 145, pp. 1330-331; "Psychedelic Experiences Associated with a Novel Hypnotic Procedure, Mutual Hypnosis," *American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, 1967, Vol. 10, pp. 65-78, reprinted in Tart (editor) *Altered States of Consciousness: A Book of Readings.* Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday and Co., 1969, reprint 1990, Harper, San Francisco; "Three Studies of EEG Alpha Feedback," *Biofeedback Society Proceedings*, Santa Monica, 1969, Part III, pp. 14-19; "Waking from Sleep at a Preselected Time," *Journal of the American Society of Psychosomatic Dentistry and Medicine*, 1970, Vol. 17, pp. 3-16; "Measuring the Depth of an Altered State of Consciousness, with Particular Reference to Self-Report Scales of Hypnotic Depth," 1970; "Transpersonal Potentialities of Deep Hypnosis," *Journal of Transpersonal Psychology*, 1970, Vol. 2, p. 33; (with Lois Dick) "Conscious Control of Dreaming: I. The Posthypnotic Dream," *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 1970, Vol. 76, pp. 304-315; *Waking Up*. Boston, MA: Shambhala, 1987.

Tebbetts, Charles. *Miracles on Demand: Radical Short-term Hypnotherapy*. Edmonds, WA: Hypnotism Training Institute of Washington, 1985; *Self Hypnosis and Other Mind Expanding Techniques*, Edmonds, WA: Tebbetts Hypnotism Training Institute, 1989.

Teitlebaum, Myron. "Admissibility of Hypnotically Adduced Evidence and the Arthur Nebb Case," *St. Louis Law J.*, 1963, Vol. 8, pp. 205-214; "Personal Injury Law and Hypnotism," *Medical Trial Technique Quarterly,* 1963, pp. 95-101; *Hypnosis Induction Technics*. Springfield, IL: Charles C. Thomas, 1965.

Thigpen, Corbett H., M.D. and Cleckley, Hervey M., M.D. *The Three Faces of Eve*. N.Y.: McGraw-Hill Book Co., 1957; "Safeguards Against Suggestiveness: A Means for Admissibility of Hypno-Induced Testimony," *Washington and Lee Law Rev.*, Vol. 38, pp. 197-212..

Thoinot, L. *Medicolegal Aspects of Moral Offenses*. (tr. by A.W. Weysse). Philadelphia: F. A. Davis, 1919.

Thomas, Gordon. *Journey into Madness: The True Story of Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse*. N.Y.: Bantam Books, 1989, 1990.

Tourette, Gilles de la. *L'Hypnotisme et les etats analogues au point de vue medico-legale*. Paris, 1887.

U

Udolf, Roy. (with A. Cohn) *The Criminal Justice System and Its Psychology*. N.Y.: Van Nostrand Reinhold, 1979; *Handbook of Hypnosis for Professionals*. N.Y.: Van Nostrand Reinhold Co.; *Forensic Hypnosis: Psychological and Legal Aspects*. Lexington, MA: D.C. Heath & Co., 1983.

United States documents...

I quoted government documents excerpted in Bain, Bowart, Collins, John Marks, Lee and Schlain, Scheflin and Opton, etc. Lee and Schlain have an especially clear listing of these sources (pp. 328-329) Typical government sources were:

Supplemental Detailed Staff Reports of Foreign and Military Intelligence, Book IV: Final Report of the Select Committee to Study Governmental Operations with Respect to Intelligence Activities, United States Senate (1976) [Church Committee Report]. Scheflin and Opton say it "contains an excellent history of the CIA and other valuable reports."

Biomedical and Behavioral Research, 1975: Joint Hearings before the Subcommittee on Health of the Committee on Labor and Public Welfare and the Subcommittee on Administrative Practice and Procedure of the Committee on the Judiciary, United States Senate (1976). Scheflin and Opton say it "contains hundreds of pages of CIA mind-control documents as well as a wealth of other source material."

V

Valenstein, Elliot S. *Brain Control: A Critical Examination of Brain Stimulation and Psychosurgery*. N.Y.: John Wiley & Sons, 1973.

Van Pelt, S. J. *Hypnotism and the Power Within*. Skeffington, London (N.Y., Wehman Bros.), 1950; *Secrets of Hypnotism*. No. Hollywood, CA: Wilshire Book Company, 1958; *Hypnotic Suggestion* (Wright, Bristol); "The Control of Heart Rate by Hypnotic Suggestion," LeCron (ed.) *Experimental Hypnosis*.

Verdier, Paul A. *Brainwashing and the Cults: An Expose on Capturing the Human Mind*. No. Hollywood, CA: Wilshire Book Co., 1977.

Volgyesi, Ferenc A. *Hypnosetherapie and psychosomatische Probleme*. Stuttgart, 1950.

Voluntaryist, The. Ed., Carl Watner. PO Box 1275, Gramling, SC 29348.

Von Schrenck. "The Medico-forensic Aspect of Suggestion," *Archiv fur Criminal-Anthropologie und Criminalistik*, August 1900.

W

Warrington, E. K. and Weiskrantz, L. "Amnesia: A Disconnection Syndrome?" *Neuropsychologia*, 1982, Vol. 20, pp. 233-248.

Watkins, J. G. "Antisocial Compulsions Induced under Hypnotic Trance," *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology*, 1939, Vol. 34, pp. 114-117; "A Case of Hypnotic Trance Induced in a Resistant Subject in Spite of Active Opposition," *Brit. J. Med. Hypnotism*, 1941, Vol. 2, pp. 26-31; "Antisocial Compulsions Induced under Hypnotic Trance," *Journal of Abnormal & Social Psychology*, 1947, Vol. 42, pp. 256-259; "Projective Hypnoanalysis" in Le Cron (ed) *Experimental Hypnosis*, N.Y.: Macmillan, 1948; *The Hypnotherapy of War Neuroses*, N.Y.: Ronald Press, 1949; "Case of Hypnotic Trance Induced in a Resistant Subject in Spite of Active Opposition," *Brit. J. Med. Hypnotism*, 1951, Vol. 2, pp. 26-31; "Trance and Transference," *Journal Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1954, Vol. 2, pp. 284-291; "Symposium on Posthypnotic Amnesia: Discussion," *Int. J. Clin. Exp. Hypn.*, 1966, Vol. 14, pp. 139-149; "The Affect Bridge," *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1971, Vol. 19, pp. 21-27; "Antisocial Behavior under Hypnosis; Possible or Impossible?" *Int. J. Clin. Exp. Hypnosis*, 1972, Vol. 20, pp. 95-100; "Hypnotic Coercion as Perceptually Determined," in E. Goffman (Chm.), "Can a Person Be Coerced through the Use of Hypnosis?" Symposium presented at the 28th annual meeting of the Society for Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis, Philadelphia, June 1976.

Watson, Peter. *War on the Mind: The Military Uses and Abuses of Psychology*. N.Y.: Basic Books, 1978.

Weinstein, Harvey. *A Father, A Son, and the CIA*. This was first a hardback published by James Lorimer and Co., Canada, 1988. Then it was reprinted as a paperback: Goodread Autobiographies, Halifax, Nova Scotia, 1990, Formac Publishing Co. A revised, retitled edition, was published in hardcover: *Psychiatry and the CIA: Victims of Mind Control* in Washington, D.C., by the American Psychiatric Press, Inc., 1990.

Wells, W. Raymond. "Experiments in Waking Hypnosis for Instructional Purposes," *Journal of Abnormal Psychology and Social Psychology*, 1923-1924; "Hypnotizability versus Suggestibility, *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology*, 1931, Vol. 25, pp. 436-449; "Ability to Resist Artificially Induced Dissociation," *J. of Abnormal and Social Psychology*, 1940, Vol. 35, pp. 261-272; "The Extent and Duration of Posthypnotic Amnesia," *Journal of Psychology*, 1940, Vol. 9, pp. 137-151; "Experiments in the Hypnotic Production of Crime," *J. of Psychology*, 1941, Vol. 11, pp. 63-102; "The Hypnotic Treatment of the Major Symptoms of Hysteria: A Case Study," *J. Psychol.*, 1944, Vol. 17, p. 269; "Expectancy Versus Performance in Hypnosis," *J. Gen. Psychol.*, 1946, Vol. 35, pp. 99-119.

West, Louis J. (with Niell, K.C. and Hardy, J.D.), "The effects of Hypnotic Suggestion on Pain Perception and Galvanic Skin Response," *Archives of Neurol. Psychiat.*, 1951,Vol. 69, pp. 549-560; *Report No. 4, U.S. Airforce Prisoners of the Chinese Communists*. Group for the Advancement of Psychiatry, N.Y., 1957, pp. 270-84; (ed.) *Hallucinations* (AAAS symposium on hallucinations, December 1958); "Psychophysiology of Hypnosis," *Journal of the American Medical Association*, 1960, Vol. 172, pp. 672-675; "Psychiatry, 'Brainwashing' and the American Character," *The American Journal of Psychiatry*, 1964, Vol. 120, pp. 842-509; (with G. H. Deckert) "Dangers of Hypnosis," *J. American Medical Association*, 1965, Vol. 192, pp. 9-12.

White, R. W., "Two Types of Hypnotic Trance and Their Personality Correlates," *J. Psychol.*, 1936, Vol. 3, pp. 279-289; "Prediction of Hypnotic Susceptibility from a Knowledge of Subject's Attitudes," *J. Psychol.*, 1937, Vol. 3, pp. 265-277; (with Fox, G.F. and Harris, W.W.) "Hyperamnesia for Recently Learned Material," *J. Abnorm. Soc. Psychol.*, 1940, Vol. 35, pp. 88-103; "A Preface to the Theory of Hypnotism," *The Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology*, Oct. 1941, Vol. 4, pp. 36, 477-505; "An Analysis of Motivation in Hypnosis," *J. Gen. Psychol.*, 1941, Vol. 24, p. 145; (with Shevach, B.J.) "Hypnosis and the Concept of Dissociation," *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology*, July, 1942, Vol. 37, p. 3, 309-328.

Wiener, Norbert. *Cybernetics: Or Control and Communication in the Animal and the Machine*. N.Y.: John Wiley and Sons, 1948. Reprint: *Cybernetics*, N.Y.: The M.I.T. Press, 1961. Also, *The Human Use of Human Beings*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1950.

Williams, Glanville. *Criminal Law: The General Part. (*Second ed.) London: Stevens and Sons, 1961.

Williams, Griffith. "Hypnosis in Perspective," in L. M. LeCron (ed.) *Experimental Hypnosis: A Symposium of Research*. N.Y.: Macmillan, 1952, pp. 4-21; "Difficulty in Dehypnotizing," *J. Clin. Exp. Hypnosis*, 1953, Vol. 1, pp. 3-12; "Highway Hypnosis: An Hypothesis," *The International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1963, Vol. 11, pp. 143-151.

Winn, Ralph B. *Scientific Hypnotism: An Introductory Survey of Theory and Practice*. Boston: Christopher, 1939. Reprinted Hollywood, CA: Wilshire Book Co., 1956.

Wolberg, L.R. "A Mechanism of Hysteria Elucidated During Hypnosis, *Psychoanalytic Quarterly*, 1945, Vol. 14; *Hypnoanalysis*. N.Y.: Grune and Stratton, 1945, (second ed.) 1964; "Hypnotic Experiments in Psychosomatic Medicine," *Psychosom. Med.* 1947, Vol. 9, p. 337; *Vol I: Medical Hypnosis*, Vol. II: *The Principles of Hypnotherapy.* N.Y.: Grune and Stratton, 1948; (with M.V. Kline) *The Nature of Hypnosis: Contemporary Theoretical Approaches*. N.Y., 1962; "The Efficacy of Suggestion in Clinical Situations" in Estabrooks (ed), *Hypnosis: Current Problems*.

Wortman, Loftus, and Marshall. *Psychology*, 1981.

Wright, Erik M. "Hypnosis Research and Rehabilitation

Problems" in Estabrooks (ed), *Hypnosis: Current Problems* (N.Y.: Harper and Row, 1962); "Symposium on Posthypnotic Amnesia: Discussion," *International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis*, 1966, Vol. 14, pp. 135-138.

Y

Young, P.C., "An Experimental Study of Mental and Physical Functions in the Normal and Hypnotic States," *Amer. J. Psychol.*, 1925, Vol. 36, pp. 214-232; "An Experimental Study of Mental and Physical Functions in the Normal and Hypnotic States: Additional Results, *Amer. J. Psychol*, 1926, Vol. 37, pp. 345-356; "Is Rapport an Essential of Hypnosis?" *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology*, 1927, Vol. XXII, pp. 130-139; "The Nature of Hypnosis: As Indicated by the Presence or Absence of Post-Hypnotic Amnesia and Rapport," *J. Abnorm. Soc. Psychol.*, 1928, Vol. 22, No. 4, pp. 372-382; "Hypnotic Regression—Fact or Artifact?" *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology*, 1940; "Experimental Hypnotism: A Review," *Psych. Bull.*, 1941, Vol. 38, pp. 92-104; "Antisocial Uses of Hypnosis," in L. M. LeCron (ed.), *Experimental Hypnosis*. N.Y.: Macmillan, 1952, 1954, 1956.

Z

Zeig, Jeffrey K., *Teaching Seminar with Milton H. Erickson, M.D.*. N.Y.: Brunner/Mazel, 1980.

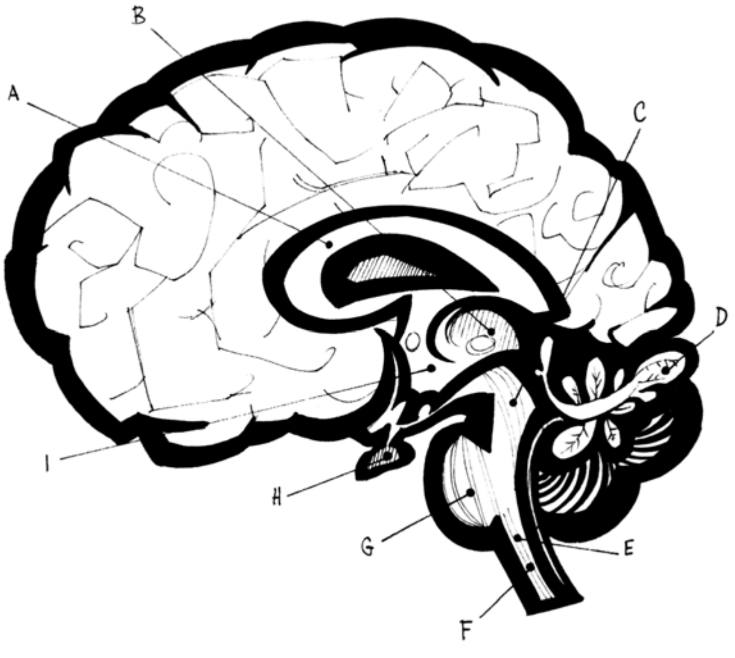

A - Corpus Callosum
B - Thalamus
C - Midbrain
D - Cerebellum
E - Brain Stem
F - Medulla
G - Pons
H - Pituitary
I - Hypothalamus

Relevant Chronology:

1493 to Present

1493 Paracelsus is born. He is the first person who scientifically describes and defines unethical hypnosis. He calls the phenomena of hypnotism **magic** (a word then used to describe any incomprehensible science). He calls hypnosis, used benevolently for medical purposes **white magic**. Hypnotism used harmfully, for exploitative control, he calls **black magic**.

1679 Guillaume Maxwell, a Scot, writes *De Medicina Magnetica*, describing a universal force, supposedly magnetic, transmissible, and useful for healing (an idea later adopted by Mesmer.)

1775 Mesmer demonstrates the power of suggestion to a German scientific commission, tells them anybody can do it.

1780 Marquis Tissart du Rouvres, the three de Puysegur brothers, General LaFayette, and other French military officers do mesmeric experiments with troops. Many French posts have officer-magnetists on staff.

1784 The French King authorizes a Commission to examine Mesmer's scientific claims for **animal magnetism**. The Committee is chaired by America's Dr. Benjamin Franklin. It reports the phenomena are caused by imagination rather than a mysterious invisible fluid. The Committee delivers a Secret Addendum to the report to the King. It states that mesmerism can be used for unethical purposes, such as seduction.

1784 Puysegur describes the spontaneous posthypnotic amnesia associated with deepest trance. He names that state **artificial somnambulism**, because subjects, if so instructed, can walk about with open eyes, without awaking from trance.

1787 Posthypnotic suggestions are described.

1790 Luys creates first mechanical induction devices: metronome, and hypnodisc with spinning light(s) on side.

1807 Puysegur describes **transfer of rapport**, when control of a somnambulist is shifted from one hypnotist to another by verbal suggestion.

1815 Franz Anton Mesmer dies. He leaves many disciples with various opinions and induction techniques. They spread **mesmerism** all over the world, some as scientific hypnosis, some as **spiritualism.** Some mesmerists say the cures are from God. Some use seances to call up spirits of the dead. One disciple founds chiropracty. Mesmer's efforts to find a physiological explanation for hypnotic phenomena caused scholars to shift from considering hypnosis as magic or religion to seeking scientific understanding of it. Thus, Mesmer began **dynamic** (unconscious) **psychiatry.**

1815 Abbe Faria comes to Paris from India, gives public demonstrations of hypnosis, hypnotizes as many as 5,000 at a time. He, like Mesmer's disciple Puysegur, proves Mesmer's props are not necessary for induction. He says that both the induction and the cures arise from expectancy and cooperation in the patient.

1820 Dr. Alexandre Bertrand publishes treatise saying trance makes subject preternaturally sensitive to suggestions of the mesmerist, both spoken and unspoken.

1821 First recorded operations under hypnotic anesthesia done by Recamier. First tooth extraction under hypnosis.

1823 First childbirth under formal hypnosis.

1825 The word **hypnosis** (from Greek, "sleep") is first used. Hypnotic anesthesia, analgesia, positive and negative hallucinations, catalepsy, regression, posthypnotic suggestion, and some physiological effects on the body caused by suggestion are all identified and experimented with.

1837 John Elliotson, an English doctor, begins lifelong campaign for scientific study and medical use of hypnotism.

1841 An English doctor in India, James Esdaile, uses hours of mesmeric stroking and **passes** in a semi-darkened room, combined with "sleep" suggestions to induce trances deep enough for major surgeries, hypnosis being the only available anesthetic. He experiments on a prisoner: he induces deep trance, automatism, then amnesia, and makes him an unknowing hypnoprogrammed subject.

1843 James Braid, a Scottish surgeon, sees mesmerism demonstrated, and begins a lifelong study of it. He pioneers practical medical applications of hypnosis. He theorizes that it is a type of special suggestibility. He discusses disguised induction—trance (hypnosis) deliberately caused in a susceptible subject without a formal or pre-announced induction.

1846 Chemical anesthesia begins. Surgeons lose interest in Esdaile's hypnotic anesthesia. Hypnotists begin to experiment with drug-induced trances.

1858 Dr. Azam, of Bordeaux, attempts to create an artificial multiple personality by means of hypnosis. **(Hammerschlag, p. 14)**

1860s Charcot's Salpetriere group competes with Liebeault and Bernheim's Nancy School. Charcot, et. al., accept hypnosis as worthy of scientific analysis, but insist that criminal hypnosis is impossible (though he and his staff exploit, display, and scorn somnambulist women). The Nancy School believes criminal hypnosis is possible because suggested amnesia is possible.

1866 Dr. Liebeault defines **suggestion** and **suggestibility**. He analyzes the depth stages of trance, classifying the next-to-deepest stage by its characteristic mild amnesia, the deepest stage by the spontaneous appearance of complete amnesia.

1879 Wilhelm Wundt opens the first psychological laboratory at Leipzig, Germany. That event is considered to begin the new science of **psychology**.

1880 Multiple personality is a hot topic among hypnosis researchers, writers, and the public. Hypnotists know how to artificially create the condition.

1882 Conrad and Guthzeit synthesize barbital (5,5-diethyl-barbituric acid), the first barbiturate used for medical purposes.

1882 Parapsychology begins as a science with the founding of the Society for Psychical Research, which attempts careful investigation of hypnotic phenomena having parapsychological implications.

1888 Hypnosis researchers commonly know that hypnotic amnesia can be overcome in a subsequent trance state. Moll writes: "...the subject remembers in hypnosis all that has happened in previous hypnosis."

1889 Pierre Janet (1859-1947), a famous French hypnosis researcher, defines **dissociation**: "Things happen as if an idea, a partial system of thoughts, emancipated itself, became independent..." This explains hypnotic amnesia and obedience to "forgotten" posthypnotic suggestions.

1890 Research and practice of hypnosis are now part of medicine and psychology. Max Dessoir's bibliography of books on hypnotism now includes 1183 titles, many dealing with issues of crime under hypnosis.

1892 Freud writes about regression to childhood during lowered consciousness.

1892 British Medical Association unanimously accepts hypnotism as therapeutic method.

1893 A Swedish hypnotist, Wetterstrand, finds that "a few drops of chloroform," plus his regular induction routine, turns resistive individuals into good hypnotic subjects.

1894 George DuMaurier publishes *Trilby*, a protest novel about the abused stage "mediums" of his day in which the ruthless hypnotist, Svengali, captures Trilby by a disguised induction, trains her, then displays her somnambulist skill on stage.

1899 Herrero reports to first International Congress of Hypnotism, in Paris, on various drugs that facilitate hypnotic induction, especially barbiturates.

1900 Paris meeting of International Congress of Hypnotism accepts therapeutic value of hypnotism.

1901 Freud points out the phenomenon which he calls **slips of tongue**, and explains the cause of such "thoughtless" mis-sayings, mislayings, etc., as repressed unconscious feelings managing to act out.

1903 Bramwell pioneers many elements used in modern hypnotic inductions: **pre-induction interview** to gain trust and understanding, use of quiet, darkened room to reduce sensory input, telling subject to "just let it happen," and directing subject's attention to "sensations he probably is experiencing" (actually sensory illusions and exercises in obedience). He uses narcohypnotic induction to overcome cases of resistance to merely verbal induction.

1903 Pavlov introduces **classical conditioning**.

1904 William James reports that the Frenchman, M. Liegeois, has hypnotized persons as far away as twelve kilometers by giving an induction cue over the telephone.

1907 A German, Auguste Forel, writes that a criminal hypnotist could prevent his discovery by means of **sealing**, which he calls "locking suggestions."

1907 Lapponi reports that electric shocking can induce trance: electro-induction.

1908 First American researcher on the physiology of hypnosis, William McDougal, describes inhibited state of cortex during trance, suggests new methods to cause that inhibition (staring, monotonous stimulation, etc.)

1912 A researcher in Pavlov's laboratory causes **neurosis** in a dog. Pavlov later does extensive investigation of artificial neurosis.

1914 Juliusburger uses diallylbarbituric acid as a hypnotic drug to treat psychosis.

1915 Watson and Lashley perform first human conditioning experiments in U.S. John Watson's publications popularize the terms **behaviorism** and **conditioning**. His child-rearing books are best sellers.

1917 Hungary's Dr. Volgyesi uses a strong electric shock to induce "passivity." He then verbally deepens the trance and further trains the hypnotic subject.

1921 In a small German town, "Z" is hypnotized (using a disguised induction) by his ex-con neighbor. He is an exploited, unknowing hypnotic subject for the next decade.

1923 Eli Lilly and Company markets the barbiturates amobarbital and butabarbital.

1923 The State Institute of Experimental Psychology in Moscow reports Luria's success with hypnotically-implanted "crimes." He made people confess to things they did not really do.

1924 Hans Berger, Austrian psychiatrist, discovers electric brain waves, weak but detectable, coming from his son's brain. He then learns that different states of mind emit different characteristic signals. This research will result in the EEG. (A flat EEG is now the legal definition of death.)

1925 P. C. Young publishes the first true **controlled experiment** on hypnosis.

1926 U.S. research into causing **artificial neuroses** in animals begins in Howard S. Liddell's laboratory.

1927 Pavlov wins Pulitzer Prize for discovering classical conditioning: he can make dogs drool when a bell rings.

1929 Sodium amytal is first used to force hypnosis on a subject.

1930 George Estabrooks markets first recorded hypnotic induction (12-inch Victrola record). One side is induction, catalepsy challenge, then waking hypnosis instruction. The other is induction, challenge, then shifting of rapport from the recorded voice to a live hypnotist in the room-IF subject has given prior written permission.

1931 W. Horsely Gantt, after six years in Pavlov's lab, returns to Johns-Hopkins and founds a U.S. conditioning laboratory. He studies experimental neuroses, frustration, and drive conflict in dogs.

1932 Hauptmann, in Germany, and Dr. J.S. Horsley, in Great Britain, independently discover that injecting the barbiturate Evipan causes "a state indistinguishable from verbally-induced hypnosis." **(LeCron, *Experimental Hypnosis*, p. 141)** Horsley begins a career of practicing and promoting barbiturate-induced trance, followed by conventional hypnotic training. The method offers speed, depth, and coercion.

1933 Dr. Clark Hull, Yale, publishes *Hypnosis and Suggestibility*, first book-length behaviorist study of hypnosis. Most hypnosis research is now published in scientific journals.

1934 Mr. E. tells police that an unknown "doctor" is covertly hypnotizing and abusing his wife.

1935 Tabern and Volwiler synthesize Pentothal (thiopental) and Lundy introduces it as an intravenous anesthetic.

1935 Biofeedback experiments begin.

1935 Portuguese neurologist Egas Moniz invents prefrontal lobotomy. It soon becomes a popular psychiatric technique. A few years later, he wins a Nobel Prize for the lobotomy.

1936 P. Brotteaux reports use of combined scopolamine and chloralose to induce hypnotic suggestibility. **Sodium pentothal** is first synthesized nd used as an intravenous anesthetic.

1936 Walter Bergen and his accomplice are sentenced to jail because of criminal hypnosis.

1937 Dr. Mayer's *Das Verbrechen en Hypnose und seine Aufklaringsmethoden,* describing Mrs. E's, case is published.

1938 Cerletti and Bini introduce electroconvulsive shock treatments. Over the coming years, hundreds of experiments are carried out on animals and people. Many seek predictable control of the shock's amnesia effect.

1939 Estabrooks recruits M. H. Erickson to do hypnosis experiment for F.B.I. Erickson's subject demonstrates detailed, accurate memory in hypnotic regression.

1940 William J. Donovan (World War I general, N.Y. lawyer) proposes to Pres. Roosevelt a new government organization to specialize in secret scientific research and "securing of information important for national security"—the Organization for Special Services (OSS).

1941 Donovan, first director of OSS, recruits U.S. scientists from all fields, atomic to hypnotic.

1941 Estabrooks proposes various uses of hypnosis for military. He creates hypnoprogrammed couriers. **(*Science Digest*, April 1971)**

1942 Donovan organizes OSS committee of psychiatrists and biochemists to study drugs which might be useful for interrogation.

1942 Development of electronic computers and artificial intelligence begins.

1943 George Estabrooks publishes *Hypnotism*, publicly urges military and police use of hypnoprogrammed spies and couriers, reveals that hypnosis both causes and cures multiple personality.

1943 U.S. and British psychiatrists use **narcohypnosis** as a quick, effective treatment for battle fatigue.

1943 Jules H. Masserman, University of Chicago, applies Pavlovian concepts of conditioning and experimental neuroses to humans, and integrates them with theories of psychopathology and psychoanalysis.

1944 Ferenc Volgyesi, "best hypnotist in Hungary," helps Gestapo use Scopolamine-Ephotamine-Hukatal to create a highly suggestible mental state in prisoners. During that state, hypnosis is induced, subjects are interrogated, and then prepared for trial.

1945 English doctors, Grinker and Spiegel, publish *War Neuroses.* It describes the use of barbiturate to induce trance and to accelerate abreactive hypnotherapy, a therapy method they call **narcosynthesis**. American doctors call it **narcohypnosis**.

1945 John J. McCloy establishes "Psychological Warfare" as a top-secret branch of the War Department.

1947 Nielsen uses disguised induction in a yoga context to make his Danish cellmate an unknowing hypnotic subject.

1947 Congress passes National Security Act. It creates CIA out of post-war remnant of OSS. The law says CIA has no police or security function within the U.S. Truman signs, later says he was not fully informed and regrets having signed.

1947 U.S. keeps secret records of Nazi mind-control experiments (including drug-hypnosis) obtained from Dachau ruins. **(Marks, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*, pp. 4-5)**

1948 Research begins on a machine that will emit signals at the frequency of alpha brain waves on the theory that brainwaves of hypnotically susceptible nearby persons will synchronize, shifting the subject into a trance condition.

1949 Congress passes Central Intelligence Agency Act, which also restricts CIA activities to foreign countries.

1949 Hungarian government puts Cardinal Mindszenty on trial. With a glazed look in his eyes, he publicly confesses to astonishing and illogical crimes of treason. Within six months, CIA believes they know how the Cardinal's mind was broken: psychological stress, drugs, and hypnosis.

1949 S.M. Korson reports the "Successful Treatment of an Obsessive-Compulsive Neurosis with Narcosynthesis Followed by Daily Electroshocks."

1949 Dr. Janis (Rand Corporation report) urges research on “drugs, hypnotism, hypno-narcoanalysis, electric and drug shock...” and on ECT (convulsive level of electric shock to brain) to assist mind control. Testing mind-control drugs is underway. Rockefeller and Macy [CIA conduit] Foundations fund Menninger Clinic to research hypnosis.

1949 The Society for Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis is founded: membership by invitation only.

1950 Brickner reports implanting false unconscious memories of early childhood incest in amnesic drugged persons: “Direct Reorientation of Behavior Patterns in Narcosis.”

1950 Lie detector tests (biofeedback analysis) are becoming accepted by police forces.

1950 Edward Hunter’s article “‘Brain-Washing’ Tactics Force Chinese into Ranks of Communist Party” introduces the term **brainwashing**.

1950 CIA’s Roscoe Hillenkoetter approves “virtually unlimited use of unaccountable funds” **(Thomas, p. 96)** for new Project, BLUEBIRD. Goals include 1) learning to obtain accurate data from persons, willing or unwilling; 2) learning to condition persons so that data cannot be extracted from them by any means; 3) researching combinations of electroshock, Freudian psychiatry, hypnoid drugs, and hypnotic training techniques to achieve **subconscious isolation** (artificial personality splitting) and increase “compliance to suggested acts.” Then comes induced amnesia for all those procedures. **(Scheflin & Opton, *The Mind Manipulators*, p. 115)** CIA Director Morse Allen okays **terminal experiments**.

1950 Soviet and U.S. governments both begin pouring money into secret research to develop and control **psychic** powers.

1951 Nielsen’s hypnorobot, Palle Hardwick, commits second bank robbery, murders, and is arrested. Witnesses implicate Nielsen. Dr. Reiter enters case.

1951 CIA psychiatrist reports that ECT can produce varying degrees of **amnesia**. Morse Allen asks the CIA psychiatrist to try using the post-ECT “groggy” period to gain hypnotic control. A CIA memo says that, using hypnosis, they could “brief a prisoner...dispatch him on a mission and successfully debrief him on his return without his recollection...” **(Scheflin & Opton, p. 114)**

1951 CIA begins ARTICHOKE (named for the “A treatment,” drug-hypnosis combinations), a joint program of BLUEBIRD-type research with the military (Army, Navy, and Air Force). The F.B.I. refuses to join.

1952 Project ARTICHOKE mission statement targets development of means to obtain data “from a person against his will and without his knowledge,” preventing those means from being used on “us,” and raises the question, “Can we get control of an individual to the point where he will do our bidding against his will and even against such fundamental laws of nature such as self-preservation?” **(Chavkin, p. 13)** Project M-K-Delta investigates how to covertly modify a person’s behavior. Amnesia is a research goal: “The greater the amnesia produced, the more effective the results.” **(John Marks, pp. 40-41)** Parapsychology is another research area.

1952 During the Korean war, 7000 Americans are captured. None escape; 30% die; 33% collaborate. The many false confessions of germ warfare participation by U.S. and British prisoners astonish U.S. public, and stir interest in **brainwashing**.

1952 President Truman signs National Security Agency into existence.

1952 Prescription tranquilizers become common.

1953 U.S. signs Nuremburg Code, containing rules governing medical research. They prohibit human experimentation, unless subject is provided full information beforehand and freely consents. It states the subject can withdraw at any time.

1953 CIA begins covert testing of chemicals and technologies on unknowing citizens. ARTICHOKE becomes Project MKULTRA, a Technical Services Staff (TSS) operation, which will continue for twenty years. (Project MKDelta is absorbed into MKULTRA.) Richard Helms is the "driving force behind this" **(Weinstein, p. 129).** MKULTRA experiments with "electroshock, psychology, psychiatry... aversive therapy, electric shock, and...'brainwashing'." **(Bowart, pp. 105-108)** Improving their hypnoprogramming technology is a top goal. The Director of Security for Artichoke adds a sub-goal: "...attempting to have a hypnotic subject kill someone while in a trance." **(Lee and Schlain, *Acid Dreams*, p. 28)**

1953 Dr. Ewan Cameron, head psychiatrist at McGill U., Montreal, Canada, reads paper at a Neuropsychiatric meeting in Arkansas which explains his concept of **depatterning** by electroconvulsive shock and **repatterning** by **psychic driving** (forced listening to repeated, taped message). He says, "We have explored this procedure in one case, using sleeplessness, disinhibiting agents [barbiturate], and hypnosis."

1954 Morse Allen, CIA hypnosis chief, hypnotizes office secretaries. He causes one to shoot her friend with an (unloaded) pistol. He wants to test if "hypnotically induced amnesia would stand up to torture." **(Marks, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*, p. 187).** CIA gives a Soviet agent the **"A" treatment** (barbiturate to induce unconsciousness, then, twenty minutes later, a shot of stimulant); the agent then accepts a male interrogator as being his beloved wife Eva, and confides in her. Suggested total amnesia is successful.

1954 Soviet defector Petrov's revelations of KGB infiltration of CIA shake up President Eisenhower. Lieutenant General Doolittle urges "every possible scientific and technical avenue of approach to the intelligence problem" and becoming "more ruthless" than the KGB.

1954 CIA Director Allen Dulles shifts hypnosis research from Morse Allen to Sid Gottlieb's MKULTRA team. Alden Sears begins experiments: "Could a hypnotist induce a totally separate personality? Could a subject be sent on missions he would not remember...?" **(Ibid., p. 186)**

1954 Dr. Frank R. Olson's suicide becomes public (CIA slipped him LSD). Congress gives widow big monetary settlement. Director Allen Dulles writes public letters to responsible persons in the Agency accusing them of "poor judgment." However, his handwritten private memo makes clear the letters are merely for public consumption: "These are not reprimands and no personnel file notation is being made." **(Scheflin & Opton, p. 112)**

1954 Copenhagen Criminal Court convicts Nielsen of using hypnotic and other means to control of Hardwick cause him to commit robbery and murder. Nielsen is sentenced to prison, Hardwick to psychiatric confinement.

1955 For first time in history, twenty-six Korean War POWs elect to stay in Communist China rather than return to U.S. Others return, but then hand out flyers on street-corners urging support for

North Korean victory. **Brainwashed** becomes a household word—and a government research priority.

1955 Army pays for Tulane U. research program which implants electrodes in brains of mental patients.

1956 Dulles assigns Hinkle and Wolff to create a definitive study on the roots, history, and methods of brainwashing.

1956 The Group for the Advancement of Psychiatry (CIA funds conduit for brainwash research) holds Symposium No. 3 in New York on "Factors Used to Increase the Susceptibility of Individuals to Forceful Indoctrination: Observations and Experiments."

1957 Alden Sears refuses to continue experiments on artificial personality-splitting for CIA. Cameron submits grant application to Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology (CIA front), gets $60,000 to test ECT amnesia and psychic driving.

1957 Vance Packard publishes *The Hidden Persuaders*, exposing the advertising industry's adoption of unconscious motivators. *New York Times* quotes ad executive who says that **subliminals**, messages so briefly flashed on screen as to be consciously indiscernible, do influence buying decisions.

1957 Estabrooks' *Hypnotism*, new edition, says: "A nation fighting with its back to the wall is not worried over the niceties of ethics." It says research on hypnoprogramming will not be made public, but discusses disguised induction, amnesia, sealing, waking hypnosis, and creation of an artificially-split personality.

1958 Seymour Fisher (Bureau of Social Science Research, Rand Corporation subcontractor) sends Air Force a report predicting that "some drugs would prove useful in reducing the amount of time required to induce complex hypnotic behavior." **(Bowart, p. 23)**

1959 A machine which aids hypnotic induction by putting out a repetitive electric signal in alpha or theta range is invented: the **Brainwave Synchronizer**.

1959 First hypnosis **susceptibility scales** are published; these standardized inductions enable systematic, reliable prediction of response to hypnosis at any depth in one standardized induction.

1959 Marcuse **(*Hypnosis: Fact and Fiction,* p. 204),.** states that a person involved in military hypnosis experiments told him they were "unethical" and "a dirty mess."

1959 Congress passes law forbidding the National Security Agency to disclose any information about itself.

1960 MKULTRA launches expanded "operational experiments in hypnosis" with three goals: 1) rapid, disguised induction; 2) creation of durable amnesia; 3) implantation of "durable and operationally useful posthypnotic suggestion." MKULTRA does the laboratory development of techniques; TSS (Technology and Science Section) handles "field experimentation." **(J. Marks, p. 189)**

1960 CIA begins spying on "domestic dissidents." The Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology (a funds conduit), publishes *Brainwashing: A Guide to the Literature*.

1961 Researchers study left and right brain hemispheres, discover they have independent consciousness and also have separate, independent memory systems.

1961 Alan H. Frey discovers that humans can perceive pulsed microwaves in 300-3,000 megahertz range by direct brain perception of the radiated energy—no ears necessary.

1962 CIA discusses “joint work in hypnosis with a foreign secret service...” for experimental torture interrogation of a hypnoprogrammed agent. **(J. Marks, p. 188)**

1962 President Kennedy dumps Allen Dulles, puts McCone in charge of CIA: “I must have someone there with whom I can be in complete and intimate contact—someone from whom I will be getting the exact pitch [truth]. I made a mistake in putting Bobby in the Justice Department...Bobby should be in CIA.” **(Martin, p. 118)** McCone is not told about “the safehouses and the CIA-Mafia assassination plots” **(J. Marks, p. 100)**

1963 McCone’s Inspector General learns of MKULTRA. He reports: a) It is “professionally unethical,” (b) doubts its legality by original [CIA] charter, (c) warns “it places the rights and interests of U.S. citizens in jeopardy,” and (d) warns that “public disclosure of some aspects of MKULTRA activity could induce serious adverse reaction in U.S. public opinion, as well as stimulate offensive and defensive action in this field on the part of foreign intelligence services.” **(Scheflin & Opton, *The Mind Manipulators*, p. 132)**

1963 In the midst of conflict with the CIA, on November 22, President Kennedy is assassinated. President Lyndon Johnson immediately returns the CIA to business as usual.

1964 J. Lee Rankin, General Counsel for the Warren Commission (investigating the assassination) asks CIA’s Helms for data on Soviet mind-control technology. Helms reports that they “consistently lagged about five years behind Western research.” **(Warren Commission Doc. #1131)**

1964 CIA “ends” MKULTRA, telling Congress and the press that its behavioral research is over. However, the Science and Technology Directorate quietly continues brain research.

1964 Hypnotic audiotapes proliferate in therapeutic circles and in the general marketplace. Hypnosis researchers (Barber & Calverley, 1963; Hoskoved, Svorad, & Lanc, 1963) confirm their effectiveness. Videotaped hypnotic induction and training will soon follow.

1965 The CIA’s San Francisco **safehouse** (a fake brothel where mind-control experiments on unknowing citizens are conducted) closes. The N.Y. safehouse remains open until 1967.

1966 CIA experiments in Taiwan test the ability of hypnoprogrammed person (Candy Jones) to resist interrogation, including under drugs and torture.

1967 The CIA announces the “end” of mind-control testing, and claims to have destroyed related records. (Ditto in 1964 and 1973.)

1969 Delgado proposes direct radio interface between brains and machines: “direct communication can be established between brain and computer, circumventing normal sensory” routes. **(Delgado, 1963, p. 93)**

1969 “...Agency [CIA] scientists from the Office of Research and Development (ORD) ran a number of bizarre and potentially far-reaching experiments in mind control... The most innovative and daring doctors had been transferred to ORD, and a number of young consultants from civilian medical research laboratories had been recruited...called Operation Often." **(Thomas, p. 273)**

1970 Behavioral psychologist McConnell writes "...we can combine sensory deprivation with drugs, hypnosis and astute manipulation of reward and punishment to gain almost absolute control over an individual's behavior..."

1971 Microprocessor introduced to computing world. Computer miniaturization is now possible. Implantation in humans will be researched.

1972 Maimonides Medical Center confirms the theoretical link between trance and psychic ability.

1973 The Watergate and Church Committees force unpleasant disclosures. In January, CIA Director Richard Helms orders remaining MKULTRA records (files 1-152) shredded, then resigns. A document which lists the file titles, however, escapes the shredding. (The last two titles are "GRANT.") Dr. Sidney Gottlieb (MKULTRA's other most important manager) retires.

1973 Dr. Joseph C. Sharp, Walter Reed Army Institute of Research, understands words radiated directly into his brain in the form of "a pulsed-microwave audiogram (analog of the words' sound vibrations)" **(Becker, 1985, p. 319)**

1973 The NSA's Advanced Research Projects Agency begins work on creating a machine that can read minds by deciphering the brain's radiated magnetic waves. Aspects of the new technology are being worked on at MIT, NYU, UCLA, and NASA's Ames Research Center.

1974 CIA Document #455, 6 May 1974, reports on "Experimentation Programs Conducted by the Department of Defense That Had CIA Sponsorship or Participation and That Involved the Administration to Human Subjects of Drugs Intended for Mind-control or Behavior-Modification Purposes" **(J. Marks, p. 230)**.

1975 *Report to the President by the Commission on CIA Activities within the United States* says "...studies explored the effects of radiation, electric-shock, psychology, psychiatry, sociology..."

1975 John Marks files Freedom of Information Act requesting the CIA documents mentioned in the above Report which deal with studies of "possible means for controlling human behavior."

1975 Inspector General sends memo to CIA Director: "Precautions must be taken ...to conceal these activities from the American public... The knowledge that the Agency is engaging in unethical and illicit activities would have serious repercussions in political and diplomatic circles and would be detrimental to the accomplishment of its mission..." **(Scheflin & Opton, p. 498, #177)**

1976 Playboy Press publishes *The Control of Candy Jones*. Candy and Bain start nationwide publicity tour, give one interview, then accept $100,000 for "movie rights," and never give another.

1976 Sen. Frank Church (Church Committee Report) says in a radio interview: "I know the capacity that is there to make tyranny total." He warns urgently that the secret agencies have acquired such devastating tools of control that they must always be required to operate within the law, and must always be supervised.

1977 CIA, pressured by President Carter, releases ten boxes of old documents to Marks—and to other reporters and journalists. *New York Times* front page reports the MKULTRA effort: twenty-five years and $25,000,000, and it quotes their 1952 mission statement. Congress calls for testimony on the documents that Marks obtained. CIA Director Admiral Stansfield Turner testifies that 185 nongovernment researchers in eighty institutions were involved in the MKULTRA research. Among them were forty-four colleges and universities, fifteen research foundations, twelve hospitals and clinics, and three penal institutions. He refuses to name specific institutions or researchers.

1977 The investigating committee lacked time to read all 16,000 pages, and “the small cadre of [longtime CIA] witnesses had agreed among themselves beforehand to limit their testimony to questions asked, not to volunteer anything.” **(Collins, p. 34)**

1978 Michel Ter-Pogossian, et. al., at Washington University, St. Louis, has built prototype PET. This sophisticated brain-scanning device lets scientists watch the brain at work by detecting bioradiation from outside the head. A computer projects the data as a picture.

1979 Nine of Cameron’s surviving McGill research subjects file a lawsuit against the CIA.

1979 U.S. District Court orders CIA to name the universities and researchers that worked for MKULTRA (to facilitate the finding and compensating of research victims which Congress has ordered). CIA Director Turner, however, argues for keeping the names secret, on the basis that they fit the CIA definition of **“**intelligence sources.”

1980 GAO reports that the National Security Agency (NSA) classifies 50 to 100 million documents per year. “...its classification activity is probably greater than the combined total activity of all components and agencies of the government.”

1981 U.S. Army begins SRI study with goal of systematizing psychic phenomena and making the results of performance of psychics reliable, consistent, and useful to nonpsychics. Funding is millions of dollars per year.

1982 The National Science Foundation begins funding research on ways of “gluing” **biochip** proteins to neurons. Biochips use organic materials to create data processing chips which may be integrated with human nervous systems, creating actual machine-man combinations.

1983 Despite the 1979 U.S. District Court order, only fourteen CIA experimental subjects (all surreptitiously dosed with LSD in the S.F. safehouse) are found. Only one of them is compensated. CIA’s Laubinger deposes: “It was decided that there were no subjects that required notification other than those.” Admiral Turner expresses regret about “...a disappointingly small number” notified, but defends the CIA’s refusal to declassify: “I don’t think that would have been necessarily the best way...Not in the litigious society we live in.”

1983 CIA psychics develop the skill of **remote viewing**.

1983 National Security Agency budget is estimated to be $10 billion.

1984 The federal budget for scientific and technological reasearch is $47 billion. Two-thirds of that money goes to the military. Government research in bioelectricity and biomagnetism kicks into high gear.

1985 “...the CIA, which has always been at the cutting edge of developments in psychopharmacology, continues to conduct secret research aimed at creating more sophisticated forms of chemical [mind] control" **(Lee & Schlain, *Acid Dreams*, p. 292)**

1985 Judge John Penn, U.S. District Court, D.C., rules that CIA does not have to reveal names of MKULTRA researchers: "Courts do not have sufficient background or expertise to formulate a knowledgeable decision as to what may be harmful to the intelligence-gathering procedures used by this country..." **(Weinstein, p. 184)**

1987 Jon Franklin describes each brain's unique energy-radiated **brainprint** which could be used for identification. He predicts use in near future of "scanners" by police to read minds. **(Franklin, *Molecules of the Mind*)**

1987 "Secret ESP research is still being conducted, although CIA spokesmen refuse to comment on the nature of these experiments." **(Lee and Schlain, *Acid Dreams*, 1987)**

1988 CIA settles out of court with Cameron's patients, paying $100,000 to each—on condition that they drop the case without requiring a CIA admission of guilt and never again give an interview. They agree.

1988 Science journalist Howard Rheingold gets through the tight security guarding Stanford Research Institute's top-secret mind-control program's enormous center in Santa Monica to interview a scientist, "Mack." It's a short interview. Mack warns, "...you're strolling through a mine field." Mack does confide this much: "We are entering an area more revolutionary than any traditional political theory...In some fundamental ways, getting high [entering trance] is really what makes the world go around. We're talking about changing the nature of our beliefs about reality when we talk about 'getting high'." Mack tells Rheingold that "perception of reality can be reshaped by modifying those beliefs through drugs, hypnosis, or psychotherapy techniques." **(Rheingold, 1988, pp. 122-3)**

1990 The Dec. *Journal of Hypnotism* reprints Schilder and Kauder's narcohypnosis instructions to National Guild of Hypnosis members.

1994 Ohio Sen. John Glenn convenes hearings on cold war experiments on unknowing citizens. The administration works to "keep our focus limited to human radiation" (with nuclear materials). **("The Cold War Experiments," *U.S. News & World Report*, Jan. 24)**

1994 *U.S. News & World Report* interviews Gittinger, Gottlieb, et. al. Gittinger says, "...most of it [the mind-control research] was exciting and interesting and stimulating, and quite necessary as it happens, during that period of time." Former MKULTRA Director Sidney Gottlieb, who now works with hospice AIDS and cancer victims, says he is "trying to get on the side of the angels instead of the devils." **(Ibid.)**

1995 Rohypnol, "the date rape drug," becomes street problem. In three weeks of July at Laredo, 101,000 tablets of this drug, which strips away consciousness, enter U.S.

1996 The Commission on the Roles and Capabilities of the U.S. Intelligence Community reveals the CIA has "accumulated a $2 billion slush fund" and recommends that spooks who lie to Congress be severely punished. The Commission also points out the need "for greater disclosure of details of the now-classified intelligence budget" because right now nobody knows exactly how much they get or what they use it for." **(*Asheville Citizen-Times*, Mar. 7, 1996, p. 4A)**

Index

BOLD-FACE ENTRIES ALSO CAN BE FOUND IN THE GLOSSARY.

A

"A" treatment 149, 523, 524
abasement 175
Abbe Faria 445, 518
ability, hypnotic 292. *See also* susceptibility
abreaction 430, 434, 482, 487
  defined 475
  therapy 270
abuse, bizarre 413
acidosis 147
Adams and Williams 496
ADD 234
Addendum, Secret 443–444, 494
addiction 476
  response 243
Addiction Research Center 134
Advanced Research Projects Agency 218, 527
adventure 295
advertising 185, 232–233, 472
Aesculapian temple 440
affect 354, 435. *See also* emotion
  tone 476
affective
  arousal 174
  behavior disorganization 160
AFL-CIO 358
agent 94, 111
  double 113, 141–142
  unknowing 113–116, 226
aggression 161, 433
  primary process element 174
aging 398
agitated 63
Aha! 230, 335
Air Force 117, 130, 148, 180
  Office of Scientific Research 88
  Psychological Warfare Division 119
Akwei, John St. Clair 130, 192, 215, 216
Albert Moll Collection 494
alcohol 147, 228
alertness 301
Alexander, Gary 496
alien abduction 424
alkalosis 147
Allen, Morse 123, 133, 523, 524
Allodi, Federico 496
alpha 205, 306, 310, 336–337
  controlled production 291
altered state of consciousness 476
Alzheimer's disease 258
ambivalence 431
American Civil Liberties Union 190
American Psychiatric Association 355, 499
American Psychological Association 343
amnesia 36, 43, 46, 62, 75, 86, 90, 102, 113, 114–115, 119, 137–138, 140, 143, 158–159, 173, 242, 259–262, 285, 297, 301, 346, 374, 419–424, 446, 450, 523
  caused by regressive ECT 156
  complete 118, 142, 159, 300
  dominance factor 125
  drug-caused 146
  hides sealing 256
  Hilgard's two types 179
  hypnotic 258
  methods to cause 146, 186–187
  one-way 91, 146
  overcoming 419–424
  posthypnotic 142, 300, 354, 384
  profound (total) 374–375
  research goal 523, 525
  resolves conflict 179–182
  retroactive 156, 183

  retrograde 156
  selective 115
  source 426
  spontaneous 300, 335, 380, 446, 519
  tested by torture 95
  testing 263
  traumatic 262
amnesias
  specific 396
amnestic 476
amplification level 177
amplify (sensory imput) 308
amygdala 176
analgesia 249
analysis 326, 476
analytical 45, 361
analyzer 316, 460
anchoring 277, 349, 476
Andrews and Karlins 496
anesthesia 65, 73, 96, 104, 281, 285, 297, 320, 397
  chemical 147
  dental 294
  hypnotic 249–250, 397
  obstetrical 306
angels 424
anger 161, 371, 433, 476
Ann Landers 355
anthropologist view of trance 292
antisocial. *See also* hypnotism: antisocial; suggested...
  hypnosis 133, 370–371, 476
anxiety 230, 375, 402, 404, 419, 422, 477
  death 464
apathetic 406
apathy 476
approach-avoidance 403
aptitude 484
Army 525
  Medical and Information Agency 214
Arnold, William 496
art 327
arterial pressure 306
ARTICHOKE 123, 137, 146, 149, 190, 196, 523
Asklepeion program 466
Assagioli, Roberto 496
assassination 196–201, 411, 526
assault, report 419
assertive 406
association 257–258, 477
  image 422
  learning 64, 182
attitude, frozen 466
audience 378
audiogram 214, 527
audiotapes 235, 526
aura 310
Austin v. Barker 347–348
authority 368
  attitude toward 406
  figure 370, 430
automatic 478
  learning 64
  obedience 119, 159
  speech 420
  writing 162, 243, 425
automatism 119, 240–243, 301, 314, 344, 362, 370, 374, 378, 441, 449, 478
  demonstrated in court 419
autonomic nervous system 290–291
autonomy 481
autopsied 346
autosuggestion 290
Avatar 207
aversive 478. *See also* conditioning
awake 53, 479
awakened 323
axon 313
Azam 158, 447, 496, 518

B

Babinsky 451
Baer, Randall N. 319, 496
Bagnone, Francisco 440
Bailly, J. S. 443, 496
Bain, Donald 100, 106–108, 201, 496
Bamford, James 496
baquet 442
Baranowski, George H. 357, 367
Barber, T. X. 368, 376–377, 496
Barberisms 377–378
barbiturate 75, 91, 94, 124, 147, 410, 419, 519
  forces induction 149–150
  in hypnotherapy 147
  overdose 428–429
  plus stimulant 149
  police use 147
Barbizet, Jacques 497
Barker and Burgwin 497
Bay of Pigs invasion 197
Beaunis 449, 453, 497
Bech, n.d 80
Becker, Robert O. 497
Beecher, Henry K. 497
Begich, Nick 497
behavior
  control 124, 142, 470, 473, 527
  inexplicable 396
  modification 462–464, 479, 527
  paradoxical 459
  predicting 113
  shaping 171, 354, 390
  therapy 479
behaviorism 472, 521
  history 468
  postulates 469
behaviorist 142, 378–379, 457, 470
belief 294, 307, 492
Bell, Art 497
Bell, C. 497
Benson, Herbert, M.D 497
Benzedrine 149
Bergen, Walter 41
Berger, Hans 520
Berger, N. 497
Bernheim 241, 290, 334
Bernheim, H. M. 448–449, 453, 497
Bertrand, Alexandre 518
beta
  brainwaves 310
  endorphins 310
betray 464
Bibliography 494
Biderman, Albert 117, 119, 462–463, 497
Big Lie 191, 472
Binet and Fere 449, 497
biochip 219, 528
biocomputer 129, 219
bioelectric 313
  circuit 129–130
  monitoring 215–220
  research 216
bioelectricity/ biomagnetism
  research 528
biofeedback 290–291, 305–306, 479, 521
  training 230
biomagnetism 129–130, 219, 309, 313, 315, 336
bioradiation 528
Birns, H.D. 497
Björnstörm, F. 498
blackness, visual 300
Blake, Robert Rogers 498

blanked 156, 184
  minds 124
bleeding 291
block 480
  protective 436
blocked 215, 415
  extrasensory induction 202–203, 208
blocking 258, 402, 413
  pain perception 312–313
  when questioned 403
blood pressure 291
BLUEBIRD 123, 133, 137, 160, 191, 523
Blum, Gerald S. 174, 498
Bly, Robert 498
body flush 301
body space, invasion of 463
Bompard, Gabrielle 454–455
bond 240, 271, 433
Bourguignon, Erica 292, 498
bouton 313
Bowart, Walter 108, 180, 498
Bowers, Kenneth 386–387, 498
Braid, James 457, 498, 518
brain
  hemispheres 420
  left (verbal) 142, 420, 423
  overload 443
  right 276, 327, 420, 430
    memory 421
  scan 529
  syndrome 315, 333–335, 462
brainprint 209, 214, 218, 221, 529
brainstem 176, 308
brainwash 116, 119, 124, 135, 142–143, 173, 334, 404, 439, 461–467, 523–524, 525
  Chinese Comm. system 464
  final stage 186
  forced conversion 464
  positive 142
  procedure 178
  research 119, 133
brainwave 310
  doubletake 309
  intention 309
  nonsynchronized 336
  slowing 306–307
  surprise 309
  synchronization 207, 297, 310, 336, 338, 358, 523, 525
Bramwell, J. Milne 457, 498, 519
breakdown, artificial 462
breaking point 119, 178, 458, 464
breast milk production 174
breathing 301, 306, 399, 429
Brende, Joel Osler 498
Brenman, Margaret 371, 384, 498
Breuer 498
Breuer and Freud 329
Brevital Sodium 147
Brickner, Richard 498, 523
Brickner's technique 167
Bridey Murphy 270
bridge phenomenon 65, 246, 281, 346
brief therapy 480
British Intelligence 112
Brodeur, Paul 499
Brooke, Tal 499
brothel 134
Brother Lawrence 323, 499
Brouardel 454, 455, 499
Brown and Fromm 499
Brown, Barbara B. 499
Bryan, William Jennings 123, 366, 499
Buckley, Bill 95
Buddhism 229, 439
Burger, Marshall 84
Burgess, Thomas O. 499

C

Cabell, General Charles 197
Caffeine Sodium-benzoate 149
calming 153, 157
Cameron, Ewen 123–124, 193, 330, 499, 524, 528
  electroshock research 156–157
  patients 135–136, 529
  titles 499
candidate 88, 115, 410
Candy Jones 82–95
Cannon, Alexander 499
Cannon, W. B. 499
can't come up 172
capacity regression. *See also* regression: capacity
Cardinal Mindszenty 522
carrier wave 209, 212
Carter, President 129, 190, 527
case, court 346–350
case history 29
  Barbara Noel 355
  Candy Jones 82, 201, 527
  Edith Austin 347–348
  Joe gets brainwashed 192–194
  Kline's cases 353–354
  Mrs. E 382
  Mrs. E. 41–49
  Nora O. 402
  Operation Often 168
  Palle Hardwick 50, 200, 362, 381, 382
  Sala Affair 348
  Springston 351
  Spurgeon Young 346
  "Z" Kantor 34–49
Casey, Edward S. 499
catalepsy 62, 65, 73, 245–246, 285, 300, 302, 308, 374
  eyelid 449
cataleptic 332, 346
catatonia 246
catatonic 52, 334, 374, 452, 460, 480
catharsis 475
cathartic 267
Catholic 440
cattle prod 478
caudate nucleus 305
cause-and-effect
  training 241
Cautela, J. R. 422, 499
centered prayer 229
Central Intelligence Agency. *See* CIA
Central Intelligence Agency Act, 522
central nervous system 116
central-inhibition 116
cerebellum 176
cerebrum 420
channeling 53, 230, 486
chaotic stimulation 315
Charcot, J. M. 347, 379, 451, 499
charismatic 209, 229
CHATTER 149, 191
Chavkin, Samuel 499
chemical communication, neural 313, 336
Chevreul's pendulum 327, 425
childhood's importance 174
childlike persona 163–165
chiropracty 518
chloroform 147, 519
chlorpromazine 147
Chowchilla 363, 365–366
Christenson, James A. 499
Christian 209, 229, 418, 467
Church Committee 527

Church Committee Report] 514
Church, Frank 527
CIA 103, 111, 120, 126, 128, 132–137, 145, 149, 153–156, 160, 168–170, 189–190, 196–198, 360, 366, 469, 522
  begins 120
  censor 190
  employees 89
  mind-control documents 514
  unit 89
cigarettes 232
citizen researcher 197
Citrenbaum, King, and Cohen 499
clairvoyant 204–205
Clandestine Services 123
classified 127–128, 130–131, 471, 528
climax 53
clinical 480
Clipper Chip 471
clue 426–427
CNN 473
coached childbirth 230
code (brain) 307
Coe, W.C. 499
coercion 472
cognition 422
cognitive dissonance 171, 415, 420, 428, 480, 488
cognitive expectancy 386
cognitive modes 420
Colgate University 113
Collins, Anne 500
Collins, Larry 500
Colquhoun, J. C. 500
Columbia University 134
coma 281, 300, 303, 308, 334, 441
Company, the 89
compel 37
compensation 245
complex
  implanted 375. *See also* neurosis, artificial
compliance 464
compulsion 285, 389
compulsive 139, 465
computer 522
  hypno-concept 174
  implant in human 527
  research 116, 127–130
concentration 52, 230, 295, 457
  camp survivors 404
conditionability 321
conditioned 386
  reflex 240–241
  theory of 386
  response 64, 241
  stimulus (word) 241
  term introduced 410
  un- 64
conditioning 64, 140–142, 182, 287–288, 480, 520
  abstract 325
  association 92
  aversive 478
  classical 64, 92, 182, 458, 473, 480, 520
  covert 499
  density 428
  four types 480
  narcotic 147–153
  operant 466, 473, 479, 480, 486
  sessions 478
  theories 162
Condon, Richard 88, 160, 386, 410, 500
confabulation 268–270, 335, 365, 381, 409, 424, 426
  safeguards against 364–366
  suggested 409
confession 38, 348–349, 464, 466
  false 38, 79, 147, 523
confidential 343, 455
conflict
  imaged 73–75
  internal 431
  motivational 179
  non resolved 172
  resolved 179
  stable 160
confusion 172, 194, 215, 330, 462–463
Conn, J. R. 353, 500
Conrad and Guthzeit 519
conscience 492
conscious mind 65, 167, 241, 284, 361, 460, 481
  displacement of 246
consciousness
  altered state of 292, 476
  expanding 506
  loss of 35
  lowered 64, 228, 310, 317
  spontaneously lowered 402
consent 132–134
consolidation 257
constructive errors 427
contagion 481
container, image of 430
context clues 396, 481
continuance 393
contract, induction 282–283
control 137–153, 159, 173, 419, 433, 462, 464, 469, 481
  abuses of 474
  agent 89
  by threats 172
  erotic 441
  fear of 194–195, 406
  feeling in 397
  hypnotic 281
  loss of 276, 462
  of information 470
  pharmacological 124
  psychological 124
  subjects 377
conversion 482
  linked to stress 335, 461
  reaction 100, 158, 245, 433, 490
convulsion 442–443, 451
Cook 143, 300, 500
Coon, Dennis 500
Cornell 116, 119
corpus callosum 420
corroboration 366, 482
Corson, William R. 500
cortex 176, 307–308
  auditory 215
  excitation 310
  inhibition 314
  rational 177
  reduced stimulation to 308
Corydon and Hubbard 500
Coue, Emile 290, 500
Council of Professional Hypnosis Organizations 358
counseling 208
  cult bait 358
count backwards 84
counter-suggestibility 459
countercontrol 474
counterintelligence 137
courier
  hypnoprogrammed 86, 94, 138–139, 439, 483
  interrogation of 95
court 75–81
cover personality 392. *See also* personality: cover
covert
  sensitization 499
creative 227
Crick, Frances 500
crisis 452
  chamber 443

  suggested 442
crossover, dream info 407
crossover time (hypnogogic) 311
cryptographer 125
crystals 319
cue 38, 44, 55, 138, 254, 482, 487. *See also* posthypnotic
  (re-) induction 43, 63, 92, 115, 192
  inadvertent 381
  statement 185
  word 44
    memory recovery 48, 427
cued reflex 283
cult 395
current of injury
  reverses polarity 312
cybernetics 116, 174, 482
cyborg 219
cycles-per-second brainwaves 310

D

Dachau 148, 522
Damon, Dwight 500
Danto, B. L. 500
d'Arcet 443
Das, J. P. 500
data (brain) 307
Davida, George I. 471
Davis and Husband 500
daydreaming 276, 295, 351, 482
De Bory 443
De Jonge, Alex 500
De Maupassant 33
De Puysegur, Marquis. *See* Puysegur
deaths 196–198
deceit 86, 281. *See also* permissible deceit
decode 218
deductive principle 492
deepen trance 46, 297
  by re-inductions 298
  by visualization 298
  time factor 298
Deese, James 500
defend 433
Defense Intelligence Agency 471
defense lawyers 71
defense mechanism 253, 403, 490
defensive 433
degradation 463
dehumanized 173
dehypnotize 53
Deleuze 445, 500
Delgado, Jose 215–216, 500, 526
delirium 482
Delphic 440
delta brainwave 310
delusion
  logical 394
  paranoid 394
demand characteristics 378
demands, trivial 463
demonstration 49
dendrites 313
densitization 482
dentist 369
depattern 156, 184, 524
dependence 167, 430
depotentiation 422
depression 163, 389, 404, 476
deprogram 142, 414, 482
depth of trance 53, 143, 148, 227–229, 242, 297–299, 375, 444, 458
  analysis 459
  characteristics 301–302
    degrees 300
  drug-induced 298
  limited 46, 62, 254, 398
  medium 301
  plenary 303
  scale 299
    self-report 300
  stages 447
  test 490
  training 297
desensitization 245, 386, 422, 479, 482
desires 380
desires, lewd 452
Deslon, M. 443, 444
Dessoir, Max 43, 159, 500, 519
Deutsch, J. Anthony 500
Deyoub, Paul L. 351, 500
diagnosis
  abusive hypnosis 408, 412
  mental illness 247
Diamond 199
direct command 353. *See also* suggestion: direct, indirect
direct current 308–309, 314
disguised induction. *See* induction: disguised
disinformation 472
disinhibiting agent. *See* narcohypnosis
disorientation 170–171, 215, 374, 462–463, 483
displacement 65, 159, 208
dissociated 243, 246
dissociation 29, 146, 159, 243, 246, 299, 319, 351, 355, 425, 457, 519
  spontaneous 403–404
  tendency 88
distract 215
dogma of moral integrity 39, 76, 80, 244–245, 351, 360, 363, 377, 380, 453
domestic dissidents 525
dominance 406
dominant 469
domineering 164
Donovan, William 84, 86, 111–112, 121–122, 521
down 310
dowse 327, 425
dream 292, 406
  analysis 407
  clues 406
  nightmare 407, 411
  not remembered 407
  of survivor 69, 406
  repeated 407
  suggested 354
  therapist 230
  therapy 491
drive 174, 481, 483
  conflict 179–182
  emotions 176, 492
  related 388
  strength 243
drug 142
  abreaction 145
  induced trance 145, 147–153, 518
  use enhances susceptibility 295
Du Maurier, George 29, 500, 519
Du Prel, Karl 500
dual coding system 420
Dulles, Allen 124, 147–148, 191, 197, 524, 526
Dumas, Alexander 33

E

E.S.B. 500
Earman, John 197
ears, sound bypass 337
ECS 153

Edmonston, William E., Jr. 304, 501
Edmunds, Simeon 501
EEG 291, 302, 309, 520
ego 65, 143, 316, 464, 481, 483
  inflation 335
  strongest 295
  weakening 154
Egypt 439
Eisenbud, J. 245, 501
Eisenhower, President 133
electric 315, 336–337
  currents 309
  field around head 309
  shocks 97, 142, 153, 442, 478
electrically-controlled 215, 500
electro-induction/narcosis 153, 314–315, 337, 362, 460, 520
electrode 97, 214
  brain stimulation 500
  implant 525
electromagnetic
  field 214, 309, 312, 315
  wave 216, 471
electronic
  brain stimulation 216, 500
  mind-reading 129–130
  surveillance 128
electroshock 124, 135–136, 153–157, 194, 521, 523
  amnesia 525
    three stages 156–157
  brain damage 193
  convulsion 153
  machine 183
  regressive 157
  three effects 153
  use in hyonoprogramming 184
electrosleep 314
electrostatic machine 312
Ellenberger, Henri F. 501
Elliotson, John 518
emotion 74, 77, 177, 329–331, 475, 476, 483, 492. *See also* carrier wave
  amplification level 177
  dominates programming 435
  flat 459
  intensity 242
  numbing 403
  reprograms 177
  shocks 330
emotional cognition 423
energy, radiant 145
Engstrom, D. R. 501
enkephalins 310
enlightened 323
entrapment 86
epilepsy 442, 451
Epstein, Edward 198, 501
equilibrium 474
equivalent phase 459
Erickson, Elizabeth Moore 369
Erickson Foundation 369
Erickson, M. H. 115, 162, 172, 173, 181, 215, 368, 369, 388, 501, 521
  on "antisocial hypnosis" 370
  technology applicable to criminal hypnosis 374
erotic 164
  signal 215
erotive root 484
Esdaile, James 320, 502, 518
EST 225
Estabrook, Marjorie 502
Estabrooks, George 33, 92, 112–116, 158, 352, 371, 502, 521, 525
ether 57, 147
ethics 55, 342, 358, 385, 525
  issues 430
  medical 136
  situational 472
euphoric 310
Evans, F. J. 502
Eve 435–436
Evipan 62, 75, 147, 521
excitation 313, 329–331
excitatory system 161
exhaustion 334, 463
exorcism 229, 441
expectations 377
experiment
  controlled 387, 520
  FBI 115
  field 137
  human 524, 528
  hypnosis 84, 89–94, 137–153, 384
  mind-control 145–146
  mocked-up 370
  snake-in-box 97, 377
  terminal 95, 99, 132–137, 523
expressionless 321
extinction 428
  covert 499
extrasensory perception 145, 201–222, 227, 299, 337, 446
  research 529
eye
  closure 281, 285, 317, 448
  conditioned pupillary light reflex 64
  fixation 228, 448
  focus 276
  pupil contraction 301
  pupil dilation 300
  relaxation 321
  sleepy appearance 321
  upward gaze 447
  upward roll 301
eyelid flutter/quiver 301, 306
Eyraud 454
Eysenck, H.J. 503

F

fabrication 268, 269, 299, 409, 427
fact 472
faith 290
  healing 50, 440
  v. science on hypnosis 440
fakir 439
false
  front 116
  knowing 269
  memory
    implanting 365
    syndrome 268–270
family 227
fantasy 299, 351, 483
  classroom, guided 232
  v. reality 167
Faraday, Ann 503
Faraday Hand 337
Farago, Robert 503
Farmer, Frances 496
fasting 335
father 163–164
FBI 86, 115, 121, 123, 129
fear 332, 404, 422, 476
feedback 291, 483
  circuit 161
Fere. *See* Binet and Fere
Ferencz, Sandor 163, 503
Festinger, Leon 503
fiction 33
fight 433
Finkelhor, David 503
firewalking 358
Fisher, C. 503
Fisher, Seymour 503, 525
fixed idea 451
flaccidity 245
Flanagan 471

Flint 32
focus 242, 308, 317, 319
Forel, August 300, 334, 347, 503, 520
forensic hypnosis 483. *See also* hypnotism: forensic
forget 136, 297, 420
  forced 148, 156–157, 186–187
  remembering enables 420
Franklin, Benjamin 443, 503
Franklin Commission Report 443–444
Franklin, Jon 218, 503, 529
Freedom of Information Act 126, 129, 190
frequency 216
  modulated 218
Freud and Breuer 475
Freud, Sigmund 503, 519
Freudian
  concepts 169
  hook 175
  hypnosis researchers 163
  hypnotists 483
Frey, Alan H. 214, 503, 526
Fried and Agassi 504
Fromm and Shor 504
frozen 466
fugue 262
Furst, Charles 504

G

Galvani 312
Galyean 232
gambling 332
Gantt, Horsley 162, 468, 521
Garrison, Jim 198
Gassner, Father 441
generalize the response 64, 182
gentle 406
Geschicter Foundation for Medical Research 116
Gestapo 148
Gibbs, Nancy 504
Gill, Merton M. 385
Gindes, Bernard C. 504
Gittinger, John 119
Glaser and Thorpe 504
Glenn, Sen. John 529
goals 423, 492
Goldstein and Farmer 504
Goleman and Thurman 504
Goleman, Daniel 504
good or evil 33, 292
Gorton, B.E. 504
Gottlieb, Sidney 111, 123–124, 190, 524, 527, 529
government contracts 470
grandiose ideas 389
grant system 470
graphics language 430
gratitude 467
Greatrakes, Valentine 440
Grinker and Spiegel 147, 504, 522
Group for the Advancement of Psychiatry 116, 525
Gruneberg, M.M. 504
guess 243, 426
Guilford Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis Serie 511
Guillotin 443
guilt 464
  induced 161
  repeated driving 185
  to create submission 166
  training 178–182

H

habit 113, 182, 257, 492
  of obedience 276
  strength 243
habituation 478
hallucination 43, 73, 247, 269, 285, 302, 318, 335, 370, 374, 386, 449
  autonomous 247
    hearing a voice 66
    negative 53, 65
    pain 44
    positive 48
    posthypnotic 54
    spontaneous 74
    visual 65
  negative 277, 387, 411
    difficult suggestion 293
    test 184
  positive 277
    visual 47, 301
  posthypnotic 396
    multisensual 66
  visual 276, 317
Hammerschlag, Heinz E. 504
handclasp challenge 52, 325
Harriman, P.L. 162, 504
Hart, Ernest 504
Harte, Richard 504
Hartland, J 504
Harvard 134, 473
Hauptmann 521
HDTV 235
healing 441
  for survivor 412
  relationship 434
Hearst, Patricia 143, 462, 504
heart rate (trance control) 174, 291, 306
Hebb, Donald 317, 504
Heidelberg case 46
Hellstromism 483
Helms, Richard 111, 123, 124, 134, 197, 527
Heron, William T. 505
Herrero 519
Heyer, G. 505
hidden observer 408, 492, 505
hierarchy 348
Hilgard, E. R. 165, 179, 505
Hilgard, Josephine 88, 505
Hillenkoetter, Roscoe 523
Hillman 505
Hindu 229, 439
Hinkle 119, 334, 505
Hinkle and Wolff 525
hippocampus 420
Hittleman, Richard. 505
holy 323
Holy See
  view on hypnosis 430
Holy Spirit 489
Hoover, J. Edgar 121
hope 422, 437
hopeless 436
Horsley, J. S. 505, 521
Howell, Max 357, 505
Huard, Jeanine 193
Hubbard, L. Ron 505
Hudgins 64
Hudson, T. R 505
Hughes, John C. 505
Hull, Clark 113, **369**, 505, 521
humor, lost sense 300
Hunt, Morton M. 506
Hunter, Edward 119, 523
Huxley, Aldous 506
Hyman, Jackie 506
hynotism
  books 496–516
hyperactivity 234
hypermnesia 483

hypersuggestibility 374, 485
hypnagogic
  crossover 311
hypno-analysis 145, 298, 388, 485
hypnochild 166–167
hypnocourier 138
hypnodisc 322, 517
hypnogogic 205, 228, 311
  crossover 426
hypnoid 159, 310, 324, 336
  drug. *See* narcohypnosis
  state 476, 485
hypnoidal stage 466
hypnopompic 311, 426
hypnoprogrammed 55, 135, 138–139
  agent 112–113
  assassin 198–201
hypnoscope 322
hypnotherapist 230, 417–418
hypnotherapy 104, 322, 358, 414–417, 480, 485
  client-centered 290
  course 358, 429–430
  legislation 418
  regression 266–267
  techniques 430, 433–434
hypnotic
  ability. *See* susceptibility
  coercion 117, 148
  conditioning 479
  drug 520. *See also* narcohypnosis
  exploitation 31, 36
  management 440
  phases 458
  posture 303
  predator 413
  slave 439
  subject. *See* subject
  susceptibility. *See* susceptibility
  techniques 169
Hypnotic Induction Profile 105
Hypnotism
  The Journal of 358
hypnotism 52, 76, 89–90, 225–226, 446, 457, 518. *See also* suggestion; trance
  4000 BC-1900 AD 439
  addiction 239
  antisocial 80, 346, 359, 380, 387–388, 447, 449, 476, 494, 495
  audience 378
  books 33, 40, 49, 80, 108, 197, 198, 358
  conditioning 386
  dangers 377
  definition x, 227–228, 439
  demonstration 68–70, 73–74, 99
  depth 375. *See also* depth of trance; hypnotism: waking
  detection 303
  espionage 91
  forensic 381, 483
    Texas 367
    texts, training 357
  highway 228
  history 439
  history, criminal xi
  history: criminal 494
  in psych text 506
  investigative/interrogation 381, 384
  legislation 358
  libraries 495
  mescaline combo 199
  misuse 346–355
  motivation 65
  mutual 230
  offensive uses 137
  precautions 384
  pretend 378
  rape 345, 347, 350
  research goals 137–153, 191
  scientific explanation 444
  self 83, 230, 289, 380, 486
  somatic reaction 401–402
  speeds therapy 433
  stage 29–49, 275–278, 322, 378
    fakery? 280–281
  unethical 29, 47, 114–116, 301, 346–355, 359, 364, 368, 382, 388, 410, 440, 449, 498, 500
  victim identification 391–408
  volunteer for 283
  waking 43, 65, 91, 116, 278, 300, 302–303, 309, 373, 374, 383, 392
  witness 363–365, 381
hypnotist 485
  behaviorist 325
  convention 358
  counterintelligence 211
  experimental 387, 390, 446, 476, 495
  identification with 65
  organization 358
  psychology of 178, 385
  qualifications 358, 381
  subject's role model 390
hypnotizability. *See* susceptibility
hypnotize 62–63, 102
hypnotized
  refusal to admit 103
hypospray 149
hypotaxis 300
hypothalamus 176, 420
hysteria 451, 485
  defined 459
  mass 337
hysteric 139
hysterical
  blindness 266
  disorders 158
  paralysis 451
  symptoms 485

I

id 174, 481, 492
ideas 471
identification 464–465
  with aggressor 489
identity 172
ideomotor 294–295, 425, 485
illogical, accepted 167
illusion 325
imagery 71, 172, 327, 419–421, 430
  autonomous 421–422
  depth measure 299
  directed 327
  for forgetting 419
  free 421
  generating 422
  guided 231
  inspecting 422
  manipulating 422
  predicts susceptibility 293
  reliable 421
  suggested 435
  therapy 419–421
  transformations 422
imaginary friend/playmate 83, 87, 88, 294
imagination 268–270, 276, 365
  marker for susceptibility 295
immersion 90, 147–153, 410
imperativeness 161
impersonation of spirits 293
implant 160
  dynamic 185
imprint 167, 430
impulse
  irresistable 119

indecision 431
index word 258, 477
indignation overload 397
individuality 172
indoctrination 127, 461
induction 52, 62, 66, 84, 116, 143, 238, 275–287, 398–399, 448
  anxiety/somatic reaction to 398–399
  audiotaped 322
  avoiding H word 284. *See also* induction: disguised
  behavior reveals abuse 398–399
  books about 304
  by abstract conditioning 325
  by boredom 317–322
  by brain syndrome 333–335
  by breathing exercises 52
  by choking 334
  by combination 319
  by confusion 213, 323
  by drug 147–153, 230. *See also* narcohypnosis
  by electroshock 153–154
  by extrasensory method 201–222
  by eye focus 324
  by fatigue 348–349
  by flashing lights 322, 337
  by highway hypnosis 228, 317
  by imagery 276, 285–286, 421, 480
  by input-overload 329–331
  by machine 315, 322, 337–338. *See also* brainwave synchronizer
  by mind blanking 448
  by mirror 83, 290, 322
  by monologue 319
  by monotony 228–235
  by noise 330
  by nonlogical/paradoxical 323
  by obedience 298, 326
  by Pavlovian Type 1 317–328, 462
  by Pavlovian Type 2 329, 462
  by Pavlovian Type 3 338, 462
  by Pavlovian Type 4 336, 462
  by Pavlovian Types 1-4 315
  by pretending 281
  by pyramiding. *See* pyramiding
  by relaxation 84, 102, 230, 276, 285, 351
  by sensory deprivation 316–328
  by shift to right brain 327
  by sleep patter 171, 378
  by spinning disc 322
  by "standard" patter 381
  by standardized test 293
  by suffering 331–332
  by thought-centering 284
  by thought-stopping 323
  by verbal patter 449
  by "watching television" 354
  by yoga training 52, 348
  cue 46, 54, 70, 92, 118, 119, 254, 399
    blocking 413
    over phone 92, 413, 449, 520
    reinducts 241–242
    written 66
  definition 316–317
  denial 103
  disguised 89, 102, 115, 137, 150, 284–285, 325–326, 349, 361, 362, 373, 378, 380, 428, 449, 456, 518, 525
    by chaperone method 361
    by conversational method 213, 286, 369, 457
    by imagery 285–286
    by relaxation 102, 285, 320–321, 361
    during medical exam 358
    of sleeping subject 36, 286–287
    seal breaking 428
  electronic 153, 314
  extrasensory 42, 201–222, 212
  failure 288
  first 90, 170, 282–283
  forced 287–288
  group 284, 320
  hardware 90, 322
  maternal style 163, 328
  mechanical 207
  negative 460
  paternal style 328
  patter 285
  positive 460
  pressure 215
  recorded 113, 322
  reflex 287–288
  repeated 46
  resistance to 296, 399, 429
  self 289–290, 439
  stages 282–283, 446
  synchronizing 207
  trust element 86, 170
  types 315
  videotaped 322
indulgences 463
inhibition 285, 313, 315, 330, 332, 402
  caused by overstimulation 460
  complete 374, 457
  mechanisms 314
  of cortex 457, 458
  protective reflex 460
  spreading 313, 457–459
  suggested 449
inhibitory system 161
initiative, lost 299
Inquisition 424
insight 492
insomnia 63, 102, 334, 406
Inspector General 527
instinctual drives 162, 486
Institute for Defense Analysis 127
insulin shock 145
integration, healing 266, 434
intelligence
  budget 529
  community 125, 189
  gathering 84, 111
  military 180–181
  sources 528
Intelligence Committee 122
intensive 161
interrogation 60, 115, 117, 137, 145, 380, 522
  counterintelligence 211
  hypnotic chamber 318
  nice cop, mean cop routine 184
  resist 526
  testing courier 95
introvert 139, 294, 406
intuitive abilities 492
invasion 208
IQ 317
irradiated 214
irrational 487
isolation 462
  breaking out of 100
  of M-K researchers 127, 131
  of mind-control victims 53, 92
  tank 319

J

Jacobson, Edmund 320, 506
James, William 506
Janet, Pierre 159, 455, 506, 519
Janis 523
Jefferson, Thomas 196
Jensen, Gilbert 84
Jesus 423

John Hopkins 468
Johnson v. State 349
joke, loss of awareness 300
Jones, Penn, Jr. 197, 506
Josiah Macy Foundation 116
journalism
  investigative 108, 126, 180, 197, 198
Judaism 229
Jung 369, 475
Jungian 419, 469
  analysis 476
justice 356

K

Kahn, David 126, 506
Kaiser, Robert Blair 506
Kalevala 440
Kamiya 291
Kantor, "Z" 34
Katkov 300
Katz, Dolores 506
Kelly and Kelly 506
Kennedy, Jacqueline 197
Kennedy, John F. 124, 197–198, 411, 526
Kennedy, Robert F. 197–201, 411
Kennedy, Ted 191
King, Stephen 332
Kleinhauz and Beran 352, 506
Kline, Milton V. 198, 353–354, 506
Knight, Bryan M. 358, 507
Kohlberg, Lawrence 167
Kolb, Lawrence Coleman 507
Korean War 523
Korotkin and Suslova 507
Korson, S. M. 522
Kosslyn, Stephen Michael 507
Kovel, Joel 507
Kovnat, Denise Bolger 507
Kroener, Dr. 381
Kroger, William S. 337, 507
Kronenwetter, Michael 507
KSAN 107, 108
Kubie and Margolin 65
Kubie, Lawrence S. 507
Kuhn and Russo 507
kundalini 53, 335
Kuper, Andrew 507

L

Ladame 347
Lafontaine, Charles 31, 457
language 420. *See also* word
Lapponi 520
Lassaigne, Auguste 32
Laubach, Frank 331, 507
Laubinger 528
laughter, healing 332
Lausch, Erwin 508
Lavoisier 443, 444
Lawrence and Perry 362–363, 508
Lawrence, Jodi 508
Le Roy 443
learned
  easily 295
  helplessness 182, 485
learning
  state-dependent 427–428
  theory 480, 484
LeCron and Bordeaux
  50-degree depth scale 300
LeCron, Leslie M. 369, 508
Lee and Schlain 190, 508
legal 75–81, 78–79
  appeal 78–81
  cases 346–355, 357, 361, 453–454, 471
  issues in criminal hypnosis 341–355, 390
lethargy 300, 301
Leuba 508
levitation 52
Levitt, E.E 508
Lew, Mike 508
Lewis, C.S 508
libido 486
lie 368, 370, 394
  detection 220
  detector 523
Liebeault 447, 508, 518
Liegeois 449, 453
Liegeois, Jules 449, 453, 455, 508
Lifton, Robert J. 119, 462, 464, 508
limbic/emotional system 176, 307, 335, 420
Lindner, Robert M. 150, 298, 508
Lisina 291
listener helps healing 415
lobotomy 145, 423, 521
Loftus, Elizabeth 508
logic, missing 431
London, Perry 509
Louis v. State 348
love 228, 295, 422, 430
Lovell, Stanley 111, 509
LSD 198
  with hypnosis 199, 506
Lubicz-Czynski, Ceslav 32
Ludwig, Arnold M. 509
Luria, A. R. 160–161, 468, 509, 520
Luys 322, 517

M

M-K-Delta Project 523
machine induction. *See* induction: hardware; brainwave synchonizing
Madison Avenue 472
magic 440, 517
Magic, Inc. 494
magicians, Chaldean 439
magnetic
  field 309
  fluid 443
  force 441
  medicine 447
  strokings 52, 442
magnetism
  animal 442, 517
magnetizer 442
magnetoencephalogram (MEG) 309
magnetometer 312
Magonet, Philip A 509
Majault 443
Malko, George 509
malpractice lawsuits 357–358
Manchurian Candidate 160, 199, 366, 386
  novel 410–411
Mander, Jerry 509
Mandese, Joe 472, 509
Mann, Thomas 33
manslaughter 32
mantra 321
Marchetti, Victor 126
Marcuse 371, 495, 509, 525
Marks, John 126, 189, 196, 509
Marks, Robert W. 510
Marrs, Texe 510
Marshall, George 122
Martin, David C. 510

mask, deep trance 67
masochism 162, 164
  natural development of 178
  suggestions 174
massage 230
Masserman, Jules H. 162, 355, 510, 522
Maxwell, Guillaume 441, 447, 517
Mayer, Ludwig 46, 510
McCloy, John J. 522
McCone, J. 197, 526
McConnell, James V. 142, 510, 527
McDougal, William 520
McGill, Ormond 510
McGill University 123, 135, 317, 524
  Osler Library 494
McLeester, Dick 510
McVeigh, Timothy 199
Meares, A. 510
Medfield Foundation. 377
media 472, 473
  information control 382
  Information Warfare 130, 472
medical professionals 369
meditation 52, 208, 306
  in classroom 232
  monastic 229
medium 31, 230, 456, 486
meek 406
Meerloo, Joost 462, 510
memory 162, 257–262, 492
  absent, or too perfect 405
  blocking 402
  contaminated 381
  direct 268
  dynamic storage 257
  false 269, 449, 476, 523
  long-term (LTM) 257
  muscle 257, 513
  normal 257–258
  of names/faces 193
  recovered 62–65, 365, 405, 420, 434, 451, 488
  retrieval 258, 421
  revised 266
  short-term (STM) 257
  spontaneous eruption of 403–404
  symbolic 257, 513
  training 137–138, 302
  verbal 257, 513
Menninger Clinic 523
mental reorganization 142–143, 180
mescaline 506
Mesmer, Franz A. 441–456, 517
mesmerism 33, 441–443
mesmerist 238, 443
messenger. *See* courier
metrazol 145
microprocessor 527
microwave signal 214–215
  audiogram 214, 527
  pulsed 214, 526, 527
midbrain 160
migraine 291, 321
milieu control 466
military 326
  intelligence 364
  mind 131
Military Aptitude Test 88
Miller, Tim 510
Miller, Tom 197
mind
  control research 111–119
  expansion 52
  reading 52, 129, 204, 208
    by scanner 220, 529
mindprint 220
Mirowitz v. State 349
MIT 527
MKULTRA 82, 123–125, 134, 137–142, 149, 191, 197, 204, 524–525, 528, 529
modeling 479
Moll, A. 43, 510, 519
Montanists 323
Montgomery, Geoffrey 510
Moss, Aaron 80, 369, 510
Moss, C. Scott 510
motivation 178, 484
  infantile 388
  research 233
  specialist 30
  tapes 290
motive 374
motor analyzer 308
multiple personality. *See* personality: multiple
murder 196
music 327
Myers 510
mystical 229
myths about hypnosis 283

N

Naeslund, Robert 510
Nancy School 447–448, 518
  v. Salpetriere 453
narcoanalysis 145, 147, 483
narcohypnosis 57, 62–63, 147–153, 166–167, 168, 171, 355, 362, 388, 410, 428–429, 522
  detects malingering 509
  immersion 399
  in therapy 419
  training 526
narcoplexis 499
narcosynthesis 145, 153, 522
NASA's Ames Research Center. 527
National Guild of Hypnotists 494
National Institutes of Health 145, 219
National Institutes of Mental Health 473
National Science Foundation 219, 471, 528
National Security Act 121, 522
National Security Agency 125–131, 189, 524, 525
National Security Agency (528
National Security Council 121, 472
National Security Order 471
National Technical Information Service 180
navy 149
Nazi mind-control experiments 522
need-to-know 127
need-to-tell 415
needles 281
negative current 314
Nelson, Robert A. 510
nerve polarity 314
nervous burn-out 335
nervous system 481
Nettesheim, Agrippa von 440
neural net 219
neurobehavioral science 216
neurobiology 307, 312
neuron 219, 313–314
  excited 313
neurophysiological response 336
neuroscience 116, 210, 218
neurosis 185, 307, 419, 451, 476, 486
  artificial 375, 433
  artificial research 160–167, 486, 520
  symptoms 266
neurotic 88
neurotransmitter 162, 313, 457
New Age 230, 335
Nicolai, Carl 471
Nielsen, Bjorn Schouw 50–81

Nixon 129
Noel, Barbara 355, 510
nonverbal directive 370
nonvolition 241
Nuremberg Code 133, 524
nymphomaniac 451–452
NYU 527

O

obedience 54, 141, 143, 182, 300
  4-step method 173
  internalization of 465–467
observe 257
obsession 162, 351
obsessive
  ideas 389
obsessive-compulsive neurosis 153
  neurotic 465
occult 50, 348, 440
  terminology 52
Oedipal
  cravings 163
  experience 175–182
  root 117–119, 122–125, 484
  stage, defined 175
Office of Research and Development (ORD) 526
Olson, Frank R. 524
omnipotence 374
  demonstrating 463
  need for 484
omniscience 463
open eyes 302
open-end clause 121
operant conditioning 486
Operation Chaos 189
Operation Mind Control 180
Operation Often 168, 526–527
operator 486
  anachronism 427
  controlled 290
opiate 310
opposites 100, 436, 489
oracular answers 53
orgasm 53, 333, 443
Orne, Martin T. 169, 199, 336, 351, 352–353, 368, 380–382, 510
  on Mrs. E's case 382
Ornstein, Robert E. 511
OSS 111–112, 121–122, 147, 147–148, 521
Oswald, Lee Harvey 198
Oswold, Ian 511
out-of-court settlement 344, 345, 351–355
overlearned 420
overload induction 329–331
  sensory 315
overstimulation 457, 462

P

Packard, Vance 525
pain 476. *See also* suggested: pain
  chronic 230
  patient 230
pain and pleasure
  centers 176
  linkage 174
  response of split personality 96
Paivio, A. 511
Paracelsus 440, 517
paradoxical phase 459
paranoid 199
  schizophrenic 200
paranormal phenomena 230
parapsychology 204, 519, 523
Pardell, S. S. 511
parent 489
  child relationship 240
passes 320, 442, 518
passive 64, 317, 406
past life 424, 491
patsy 196–201
patterned input 318
Pavlov, I. P. 113, 147, 468, 511, 520
Pavlovian
  reversal 459, 465
  syndrome 306
  vocabulary 457
penal code, model 344
pendulum 425
People v. Leyra 348
perception
  monopolization of 463
perineural cells 314
permissible deceit 222
Perry, C. W. 511
personality
  alteration of 140, 143–153
  artificially-split 29, 86, 88, 91–95, 144, 169, 518, 525. *See also* imaginary playmate
  childlike 167
  cover 141, 186, 392, 403
  dual 159
  multiple 113, 146, 158, 159–160, 294, 403, 519
    natural 165–167
  restore the original 140
  restructuring 142–153
  root self 88, 92, 417, 431
  split 91, 115–116, 146, 417, 459
  splitting 29, 91, 113, 158–167
PET scan 458, 528
Pettinati, Helen M. 511
pharmacological 124
Phillips, Mark E. 511
philosophy 468
phobia 94, 230, 266, 389, 404, 429, 482
physiological
  event 334
  state 291
piggybacking 398, 399, 428
Pincher, Chapman 511
Pines, Maya 512
pituitary 420
placebo 330, 377
Platanow, K. I. 512
Platonov 306
poetry 420
Polgar, F. J. 512
political torture
  help for victims 496
polygraph 127, 137, 146
Pope, et. al. 512
positive current 314
positive thinking 290
possession 293
  spirit 424
post-traumatic stress
  symptoms 404
  syndrome 408
posthypnotic 56
  amnesia 43
  cued reinduction 287–288
  suggestion 37, 43, 56, 58, 60, 62, 66, 73, 251–253, 302, 351, 364, 486, 517. *See also* suggestion: posthypnotic
postmortem 32
Potter, David 312
power 471
Powers, Melvin 512
prayer 491
pre-induction
  evaluation 381

  interview 429, 457, 519
  suggestion 276, 283
pre-speech cortex 212, 215–222
preconditioned 141
predator 296
pregnant 347
press 121, 472, 495
pride 323
primary process 174, 177, 265, 388, 483, 487
primitivation 265
Princeton 124, 134
prisoners of war 404, 524
problem solving 299
procedure (intention) 307
programming 240–243, 480
  chronological sequence 242
  conflicting 431
  dominance attributes 242
  error 396, 430
  hypno- 55, 115–116, 174
  unconscious 94
prohibition 486
Project Lightning 127
Project Monarch 181
projection 487
projective techniques 400, 421, 423, 487
propaganda 121, 124, 191, 233, 318, 372, 471, 495
  bandwagon 275
  techniques 370
prosopagnosia 193
psychiatrist 94, 358, 364
psychiatry 76, 210
  dynamic (unconscious) 518
  physical methods 123, 145
psychic 201–222
  ability 523
  CIA 528
  experiments 204–205, 528
  in trance 460
  research 204, 501
  transfer 32
psychic driving 136, 156, 184–185, 524
psychoanalysis 475, 476, 483, 485, 487
  in narcosis 147, 165–167, 179
  view of hypnosis 65
psychoanalytic 145
  hypnotist 160–167, 240, 485
  view of hypnosis 65, 146, 174–182, 485
psychobiology 199
psychodynamic 174
psychological warfare 130–131, 472, 522
psychologist 358, 369
  clinical 280, 341
  sports 30
psychology 76, 519
  applied 469
  behavioral 143
  dynamic 380
  military 130–131, 468
  psychoanalytic 475
  textbook 500, 506
psychopharmacology 528
psychophysiologist 468
psychosis 200. *See also* suggested: psychosis
psychosomatic 245, 306
  conversion 91, 245
psychosurgery 145
psychotherapy 476
Psychotronic Technology 204–205
pulse rate 67
pulses (neuron) 313
pumper command 298, 487
punishment 164, 182–183, 478
purification 335
Puysegur 204, 517
pyramiding suggestions.instructions 173
pyramiding suggestions/instructions 276, 326

Q

quackery 368, 447
questions
  leading 381, 424
  persistent 424
  subtle 419

R

Race, Victor 446
Rachman and Teasdale 512
radiation 216
Radiation Intelligence 216
RAND 130, 148, 523
rape (hypno-) 178, 347, 351, 444
rape, healing 332
rapport 44, 71, 72, 206, 230, 271, 365, 430, 444, 446, 448, 487
  Freudian view of 240
  shift/transfer 44, 240, 491, 517
Rasputin 178
rationalize 37, 66, 253, 269, 488
Rauchman, Steven 512
reaction time (slowed) 317
reactivity (loss of) 301
readiness (pre-induction) 282–283
Reagan, Ronald 129
reality 72
  testing 299
reason by deduction 492
receptors 313
recognition 258, 427
recondition 141, 466–467
recovered memory 488
recovery effect 479
redemption 489
redintegration 426
reenacting 266
reflex 182, 240–243, 290, 480, 488
  conditioned 64, 113, 469, 476
  dominance attributes 242
  implant conditioned 458
  inborn 469
  inhibition 159
refreeze 466
Regina v. Palmer 350
regression 39–40, 47–49, 65, 67, 70, 90, 102, 149, 265–266, 300, 374, 387, 403, 416, 434
  blocked 398
  blots out future 102
  capacity 172, 173, 175, 387
  fabricated 409
  psychoanalytic view 175
  spontaneous 102, 404. *See also* spontaneous
  therapy 266
  truthful 67–68
rehypnotization 46, 280, 288, 450
Reilly, S. W. 512
reincarnation 52
reindoctrination 462, 466
reinforcement 64, 479
  covert negative 499
  negative 473
  positive 277, 473
Reiser, M. 512
Reiter, P. J. 62, 306, 364–365, 381, 512, 523
  takes on Erickson 372

relationship, positive 295
relaxation 301, 306–307, 317, 320, 321, 446, 480. *See also* induction, by relaxation
  progressive 102
  response 306, 321
  tapes 235
  techniques 52, 316
relearn 427–428
releasing 266
religion
  circuits 492
  Eastern 229
  experiences, research 506
remember 266
  diphasic act 258
  intention to 258
Remote Neural Monitoring 215
remote viewing 204–205, 528
Renaissance 440, 441
reorient 171–172
repattern 524
repetition 184–185. *See also* induction: by repetition
  of message 466
report
  direct 393
repressed
  return of the 488
repressed, return of the 174
repression 158, 165, 177, 179–182, 392, 483, 487, 488
  emotional 403
  of traumatic event 266–267
reprogram 141–142, 431
research 440, 470
  budget, federal 528
  duty 469
  hypnotism/mind-control 84, 111–119
  patent process 471
  unlimited 469
resistance 58, 165, 182, 258, 433, 488
  overcoming 195
  to hypnosis 117, 147
resonance frequency 218
respect and obey 296
response
  alternative 182, 479
  automatic 441
  deviant 479
responsibility 363
retarded 296
reticular activating system (RAS) 305, 308
retracted 271
revivification 102–103, 266, 366, 427
reward and punishment 142
Rheingold, Howard 529
Rhodes, Raphael H. 512
rigid 245–246, 281
Rockefeller Foundation 145
Rockefeller, Vice President 190
Rohypnol 529
role-playing 266, 427, 448, 488
  operator 103
Rolin, Jean 512
Roosevelt, President 111, 121
root self 91
Rorschach 293, 488. *See also* projective; projection
Rothschild, David, et. al 512
Rowland, L. W. 97, 512
Ruby, Jack 198–199
Ruckman, Peter 512
running your energy through a person 208

S

safehouse 134, 197, 526, 528
Sala affair 50, 80, 348
salivary output 290
Sallin 443
Salpetriere 379, 451–454, 518
Salter, Andrew 369, 386, 410, 512
sanity 46, 80, 105, 200, 394–395
Sarbin, Theodore 368, 379
Sargant, William 135, 159, 461, 512
satellite cameras 128
scale, performance 299
scan 210, 218–220
Schacter, Daniel L. 513
Scheflin and Opton 108, 513
Schilder and Kauders 484, 513
schizoid personality 351
schizophrenic 201, 355
Schneck, J.M. 119
Schorr, Daniel 513
Schrag, Peter 513
Schreiber, Flora Rheta 165, 513
Schrenck-Notzing, A.N. 513
Schultz, J. H. 513
Schwann cells 314
Schwartz, Bickford, and Rasmussen 513
Science and Technology Directorate 526
Scientology 225
scopolamine 147
script 167
  training 169
Scripture 435
seal breaking 428
sealing 46, 55, 62–63, 116, 139, 203, 364, 399, 429, 480, 520
seance 31, 439, 489
Sears, Alden 134, 524, 525
secret xi, 178, 197, 470, 471
  agencies 113, 120
  For the King's Eyes Only 443
  police 210
  will rule 125
Secretary of Defense 126
security clearances 180
security oath 89
sedative 150
seers 204
self
  talk 492
  waking 298
sensory deprivation 145, 276, 315, 326, 462, 463
sensory distortion 374
Sentic Cycles 306
septum 305
sequence, command 44
sequential coding 420
sex 52–53
  assault 123, 165, 352, 358, 449. *See also* rape
  desire 161, 333, 444
  dysfunction 230, 404
  in therapy 430
  obsession 335
  orgasms 443
  primary process element 174
  with hypnotist 347–349, 352–355
  with instructor 358
Sextus, Carl 513
shadow 489
shaping. *See* behavior: shaping
Sharp, Joseph C. 214, 527
shock 82, 332. *See also* electric: shocks
shutdown (overload) 330
SI (subconscious isolation) 160
sigh (deep, evidence of lowering consciousness) 254, 429
sigh (deep, evidence of lowering subconsciousness) 306
signal system (Pavlov's)

  first 241, 243
  second 241, 243
Signals Intelligence 216
Silva Mind Control 206, 225, 232, 319, 327
Simpson, Christopher 513
Simson-Kallas, Eduard 200
simultaneous 421
sin 472
singing 327, 420
Sirhan Sirhan 107, 198–201
SKBI Research Group 511
Skeptics, the 378–379
Skinner, B. F. 470, 473–474, 513
slain in the Spirit 209
sleep 446, 449
  continuous (drugged) 145
  deprivation 102, 119
  induction 320
  partial 458
  patterns 406
  suggestions 448
  teaching 145
  temple 440
sleepwalker 302, 446
slips of tongue 519
smoking, stop 358
social isolation. *See* isolation
Society for Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis 523
Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology 116, 125, 185, 380, 525
Sodium Amytal 62, 147, 152, 166, 355, 520
Sodium Pentothal 147, 171, 521
solution learning 480
somnambulic passion 240
somnambulism
  artificial 446, 517
  deep stage 293, 374
somnambulist 36, 43, 62, 63–66, 276, 297, 299–301, 346, 374–375, 443, 447, 457, 489, 495
  genetic 115
somnolence 300
song lyrics 420
sore spot 463
soul 469
source amnesia 426
Soviet mindcontrol research 124, 204
Spanos and Chaves 513
Spanos, N. P. **368**, 379
spasm 335
Special Forces 88, 195, 211
speech 420
speech center 215–216
Spiegel, Herbert 201, 513
spiritualism 486, 518
spontaneous
  multiple personality 165–166
  trance 101, 403–404
stage hypnotists. *See* hypnosis: stage
Stanford Research Institute 204
stare 201, 206, 300, 324
starvation 119, 306, 463
state of consciousness 310
state of equalization 459
State v. Levitt 349
Stephenson, Sir William 112, 513
stimulant 149
stimulus 241, 321
  noxious 478
  weak 459
stimulus-response machine 182
Stine, G. Harry 513
Stockholm syndrome 489
stop-smoking clinic 322
Stover and Nightingale 513
stream-of-consciousness 426
stress 330, 402, 459, 464
  management 358
  strong stimulus 459
stuporous 300, 303, 374
subconscious. *See also* unconscious
  consent 361
  isolate 88, 170
  isolation 137, 160, 523
subject 426, 442, 490
  bonding together 240
  normal 135, 159, 394–395
  rights of 290
  terminal 133–137
  training 240–241
  unknowing 36, 113–114, 158–160, 495, 518
subjective 491
subjugation 463
subliminal 207, 319, 472, 490, 491, 525
  audio 215
  messages 235, 236
  projection 145
subordination 166
Suedfeld, Peter 513
Sufism 229
suggested
  amnesia 115, 370, 524
  anxieties 145
  arousal 174
  blindness 43
  blisters 174
  breast milk (start or stop) 174
  burn 32
  colorblindness 375
  conversion 144
  convulsion 104
  crime 293, 450
  crisis 442
  deafness 43
  death 32
  dream 354
  epileptic seizure 442
  false confession 38
  false testimony 43
  forced marriage 352
  hypochondria 389
  indecent exposure 353
  masochism 174
  miscarriage 174, 306
  murder 44, 55, 57, 119, 198–201, 244
  neurosis 395
  obsessive ideas 389
  pain 43, 145, 373
  paralysis 43
  personas 169–170
  phobia 94
  physiologic changes 174, 290–291, 305–306
  psychosis 55, 61, 72, 395
  rape. *See* rape (hypno-)
  robbery/murder 37, 44–45, 348, 351, 384, 450
  self-injury 381
  sensory deprivation 375
  suicide 45–46, 99, 348
  vomiting 174
suggestibility 52, 174, 377–378, 444
  enhanced 148, 153, 278, 332
suggestion 36, 43, 63–65, 237, 444, 490, 517
  direct vs. indirect 238, 370
  extraverbal 238
  indirect 45, 353–354, 370
  intraverbal 238
  literal 301, 435
  mutual 240
  nonverbal 238
  positive 435
  posthypnotic 63–66, 113, 114, 119, 137–138, 142, 243, 448,

    486. *See also* posthypnotic
    test 184
  pre-induction 283
  rejected 344–345
  repeated 375
  systematic 374
  verbal 238, 241
superconducting quantum interferometric device
  (SQUID) 314
superconscious 491
superego 481, 492
  artificial 55, 65, 170, 182, 390
Supreme Court 381
surveillance 128–131
susceptibility 36, 50, 88, 89, 102, 115, 139, 203, 277, 292–294, 299, 374, 378, 444, 455, 484
  child 294
  genetic 293
  multiple personality 294
  non- 398
  of extravert/introvert 139
  personality types 139, 292–294
  scales 525
  screening for 292–293
  test 490
  training 297–298, 398
  unusual 398
Svengali 29–31, 353, 367, 519
Sybil 165
symbol. *See* imagery
symptom
  conversion 243–244
  removal 245, 480, 490
synapse (neural) 257, 313
synchronize. *See* brainwave synchronization

T

TA 491
Tabern and Volwiler 521
Tardieu 347, 513
Tart, Charles T. 300, 513
teacher (public school) 231
Tebbetts, Charles 373, 429–430, 513
technocracy 472
Teitlebaum, Myron 90, 359, 514
telephone. *See* induction: cue, over phone
television 234, 332
tell (need to) 415
temperature
  body 174, 291
Ter-Pogossian, Michel 528
terrorism 472
test (after trance) 65, 184, 410–411, 490
  follow-up 285, 479, 490
  standardized 299
  with pain/shame 95
testimony 75–76
thalamus 305, 308
Thematic Apperception Test 105, 139, 293, 400
therapist
  credentialing/training 418
  gender choice 417
  lay 418
therapy 71–72, 355, 391–408, 491
  accepting 433
  action 470
  addiction to 491
  brief 423, 480
  client-directed 433
  cost 417
  parts 420–436
  past-life 358, 430
  process 416–417, 433
  strengthen subject 433
  talk 416, 491
theta brainwaves 310, 336
Thigpen and Cleckley 435–436, 514
thinktank 127
Thoinot, L. 347, 514
Thomas, Gordon 514
thorazine 94
Thouret 444
threat 47, 54, 172, 463
Tibet 291
time
  in therapy 416, 436
  meaningless concept 300
  missing 35, 103, 114, 346
token economy 491
torture 95, 491, 526
Tourette, Gilles 451, 455, 514
train 36, 43, 52–55, 57, 115–116, 140–142, 276–277, 287–288, 297–298, 325–326, 444, 462
  flatworms 142
  increases susceptibility 292, 297–298
  mind-control experts 86
trance 225–226, 392, 492. *See also* hypnotism
  automatistic 441
  capacity 229. *See also* susceptibility
  creative 228
  deep 227–228, 374–375
  depth. *See* depth of trance
  hyperalert 333
  light 227, 301, 370
  logic 491
  management 447
  natural 228
  operator-managed 230
  personal experience 225–226
  physiology of 305–310, 457, 497
  profound/coma 301–303
  psychic 205
  reaction to onset 398–399
  reverses nerve polarity 314–315
  self-recognition of 300
  subjective experience 227
  walking/waking 53, 302–303. *See also* somnambulism
tranceable 491
tranquilizer 94, 524
Transcendental Meditation 306
transfer of rapport 491
transference 63–65, 165, 240, 433, 448, 491
  interpretation 485
  reaction 487
transidentification 389
transmarginal 458
  collapse 464
  states 459
  stimulation 458
transmission
  to brain via skin 471
trauma 329–335
treatment 412–436, 478
trial 75–76
Trilby 29, 411, 519
Truman, Harry 120, 125
trust 240, 283, 295
truth 68, 108, 127, 221, 368, 386, 472, 495
truth serum 124, 148
Tulane University 525
tunnel of forgetfulness 430
Tunney, Gene 86
Turner, Stansfield 205, 528
tyranny 527

U

- UCLA 527
- Udolf, Roy 359, 361, 514
- ULTRA 123
- ultraparadoxical 159, 459, 464
- unconscious 451, 481, 490, 491. *See also* subconscious
  - accepts beliefs 492
  - "agreement" to be hypnotized 284, 361
  - association 64
  - behavior 241
  - characteristics of 492
  - conditioned reflexes 240–241
  - ESP base 204–205
  - goal-setting 423
  - habit 321. *See also* habit
  - isolate. *See* subconscious isolate
  - motivators 525
  - self-healing 422
  - study of 444
- unfreeze 466
- United States
  - documents 514
  - Justice Department 471
  - v. Springston 351

V

- Valenstein, Elliot 215, 514
- Van Pelt, S. J. 514
- Vanderbilt University 494
- variable, intervening 243
- Verdier, Paul A 514
- vibrations, ultrasonic 145
- videotape 381
- vigilambulism 289, 323
- vision 229, 230
  - quest 335
- visual activity 310
- visual blackness 300
- visualization 57, 247–249, 285, 327, 354, 420–421, 493
  - ability 295
  - of "guide" 231–232
- Voisin, August 296
- Volgyesi, Ferenc 148, 153, 306, 334, 337, 514, 520, 522
- voltage, neural 314
- Von Schrenck 514
- voodoo death 32

W

- Waco 473
- wake up 53, 479, 493
- Walter, Franz 41, 47–48
- Warren Commission 124, 198, 526
- Warrington and Weiskrantz 514
- watch list 189
- watch operation 128
- Watergate 527
- Watkins, J. G. 117–119, 147, 423, 514
- Watson, John B. 469, 520
- Watson, Peter 130–131, 515
- weakness 406
- Weinstein, Harvey 135, 515
- Welch, Livingston 325
- Wells and Brenman 383–384
- Wells, Raymond 44, 371, 383–384, 515
- West, Louis Jolyon 199, 515
- Wetterstrand 519
- White, George 111, 134–135
- white noise 317
- White, R. W. 65, 175, 484, 515
- Whole Life Expo 208
- Wichita State University 494
- Wiener, Norbert 116, 174, 515
- will 302
  - against his 287–288
  - power 50, 360
- Williams, Glanville 515
- Williams, Griffith 515
- Winn, Ralph B. 515
- Wisner, Frank 111
- witches 376
- witness 60, 381
  - expert 178, 357, 358
- Wolberg, L. R. 369, 515
  - Five-step Therapy 433
- Wolff 119, 133
- word 492
  - association. *See* association
  - conditioned stimulus 240–241
  - key 128
  - written
    - dominates spoken 233–234, 435
- Wortman, Loftus, and Marshall 515
- Wright, Erik M. 515
- writers on criminal hypnosis 494–495
- Wundt, Wilhelm 519

Y

- Yale 113
- yoga 225, 306, 323, 335
  - kundalini 53
  - training 51, 348
- Young, Paul Campbell 369, 371, 387–408, 516, 520
- Young, Spurgeon, case 346

Z

- Zeig, Jeffrey K. 516
- Zen 229, 306

Thank you, God,
for enabling the
completion of this long
and heavy task of
telling. All glory be
to You in Your holy
aspect of Truth.

Carla Emery

This photo was taken by Mark Spencer of Zelienople, Pennsylvania, in his living room. Mark is a professional photographer. While visiting Mark and his family, I told him I needed some photos. He said, “Sure.” Half an hour later, he had captured 25 different Carla-expressions. (He used a small colored screen as a backdrop.) Corey chose the close-mouthed look. Actually, I can smile and show my teeth, too.

Corey Smigliani

Corey Smigliani is a graduate of the Massachusettes College of Art and currently resides in the Boston area, sharing the roof of Art Making Factory #53 with some talented alumni and friends. With the solemn “Secret, Dont Tell” under her belt, Corey is looking forward to working on some lighter ideas of her own.

Should you care to get in touch with Corey, she may be reached via her hometown P.O. Box of 264 - Brant Rock, MA 02020.

Have nothing to do with the fruitless deeds of darkness, but rather expose them. For it is shameful even to mention what the disobedient do in secret. But everything exposed by the light becomes visible, for it is light that makes everything visible. This is why it is said:

Wake up, O sleeper,
rise from the dead,
and Christ will shine on you.

Ephesians 5: 11-14 NIV

I. Case Histories of Criminal Hypnosis
II. A Partial History of U. S. Government Mind-control Research
III. Trance Phenomena
IV. Induction Methods
V. Legal and Therapy Issues in Criminal Hypnosis
VI. Reference: History, Glossary, Bibliography, Chronology, Index

> *But all at once...with one wave of his hand over her - with one look of his eye - with a word - Svengali could turn her into the other Trilby, his Trilby - and make her do whatever he liked...*
>
> George Du Maurier, *Trilby*, 1894

From corrupt therapists to unethical researchers to secretive government agencies, Svengalis have victimized the unsuspecting and the imprudent. SECRET, DON'T TELL is a good read about this too-long closed subject, exposing the darker side of hypnotism throughout history - a world where real-life Svengalis abuse their hapless Trilbys.

Born from the author's own painful experience with unethical hypnosis, SECRET, DON'T TELL is the product of over a decade of interviews and diligent scholarly research. It is a true encyclopedia in the field of hypnosis and modern mind-control technologies, indispensable for anyone interested in trance phenomena, psychotherapy, psychoanalysis, counseling, or related fields of law.

Yet Carla Emery's writing is far from stuffy or academic. This book is intensely readable, with the pace of an excellent suspense novel. It is both compelling and terrifying - and every word is true.

Carla Emery is a mother, speaker, and writer - especially of encyclopedias. She is the author of the critically and publicly acclaimed *Encyclopedia of Country Living*, a basic reference work in the field of family food production ("goats and gardens"). In print for 25 years, currently in its ninth edition, this old-fashioned recipe book and how-to manual now has some 400,000 copies in print. She is also a perceptive watcher and clarion of world events affecting our environment, health, freedoms, and fortunes.

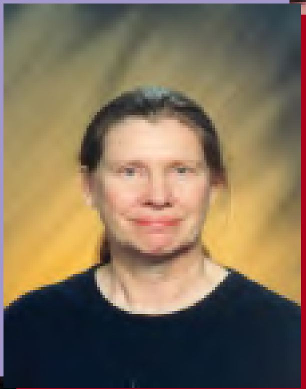

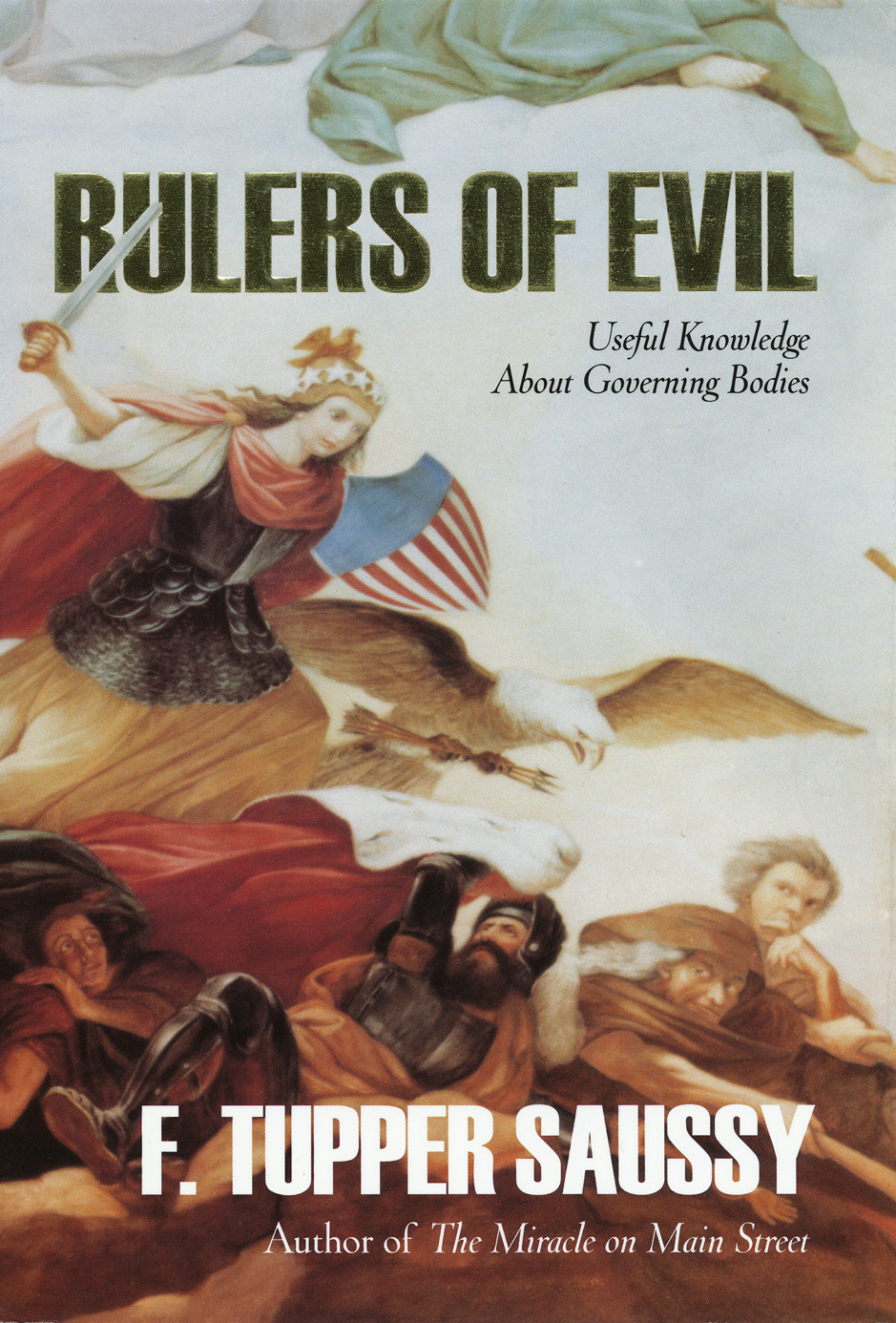

RULERS OF EVIL

Useful Knowledge About Governing Bodies

F. TUPPER SAUSSY

Author of *The Miracle on Main Street*

RULERS OF EVIL

Useful Knowledge About Governing Bodies

F. TUPPER SAUSSY

OSPRAY
BOOKMAKERS

Copyright © 1999 by Frederick Tupper Saussy

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or by any information storage or retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publisher.

Published by Ospray Bookmakers, Reno, Nevada

Further information:
Pastoral Business
1223 Wilshire Boulevard, No. 855
Santa Monica, California 90403

World rights inquiries:
The Peter Fleming Agency
peterfleming@earthlink.net
15200 Sunset Boulevard, Suite 204
Pacific Palisades, California 90272

ISBN 0-9673768-0-7
First Edition

OSPRAY BOOKMAKERS IS AN IMPRIMATUR OF
THE ORDER OF SIMON PETER, LAS VEGAS, NEVADA

“The worst thing you can do in life is underestimate your adversary.”

—PRESIDENT WILLIAM J. CLINTON,
CBS News, March 31, 1999

xx The Capitol dome*
1 Time Magazine Cover*
6 Fasces*
8 The Washington Nunciature*
11 Emperor Constantine*
12 Mithras & David†
14 Pope Gregory IX Excommunicating the Holy Roman Emperor*
18 Pope Clement VII & the Holy Roman Emperor*
21 Martin Luther*
26 Ignatius de Loyola*
34 The Baphomet*
36 Map of Troyes*
42 Fingerstroke of God*
46 Giulia Farnese*
54 The Spirit of Trent (after Sebastiano Ricci)*
62 Ignatius in Heaven†
96 Lorenzo Ricci†
114 Castel Sant'Angelo*
116 Washington in Masonic Regalia*

ILLUSTRATIONS

124 Charles Thomson*
128 Cardinal Robert Bellarmine*
134 John Stuart, Lord Bute*
146 Bishop John Carroll*
154 Archbishop von Hontheim*
166 King George III*
186 East India Company Flag†
202 American Graffiti†
204 The Mosaic Seal†
226 L'Enfant's Plan of Washington*
228 Congressional Medal of Honor†
232 Seal of Georgetown University‡
234 Persephone, Goddess of the Capitol‡
246 "Apotheosis of Washington"§
248 Constantino Brumidi*
252 Rev. Charles Chiniquy*
257 The States§ / The Virgin pursues evildoers§
258 Young America§
259 Jehu worshiping Shalmaneser II†
261 Mercury 6k Morris§
293-5 The Annu Signature*, †, ‡

* sketch by the author
† author's collection
‡ photographed by the author
§ Architect of the Capitol

Introduction: ix
  Preface ix
  Foreword xi
  Orientation xiii
1: Subliminal Rome 1
2: Missionary Adaptation 9
3: Marginalizing the Bible 15
4: Medici Learning 19
5: Appointment at Cyprus 27
6: The Epitome of Christian Values 35
7: The Fingerstroke of God 43
8: Moving In 55
9: Securing Confidence 63
10: Definitions 77
11: The Thirteen Articles Concerning Military Art 85
12: Lorenzo Ricci's War 97
13: The Secret Bridge 117
14: The Dogma of Independence 129

CONTENTS

15: The Madness of King George III 135
16: Tweaking the Religious Right 147
17: A Timely Grand Tour 155
18: The Stimulating Effects of Tea 167
19: Death and Resurrection of Lorenzo Ricci 187
20: American Grafitti 203
21: Jupiter's Earthly Abode 227
22: The Immaculate Conception 235
23: The Dome of the Great Sky 247
24: The Mark of Cain 265
25: The Two Ministries 279
Appendix 293
  A: Fifty Centuries of the Annu Signature 293
  B: Superior Generals of the Society of Jesus 296
  c: Glossary 298
  D: Notes 303
  E: Bibliography 313
  F: Index 318

RULERS OF EVIL

Introduction

PREFACE

THE ONLY PEOPLE in the world, it seems, who believe in the conspiracy theory of history are those of us who have studied it. While Franklin D. Roosevelt might have exaggerated when he said “Nothing happens in politics by accident; if it happens, it was planned that way,” Carroll Quigley – Bill Clinton’s favorite professor at Georgetown University – boldly admitted in his *Tragedy & Hope* (1966) that (a) the multitudes were already under the control of a small but powerful group bent on world domination and (b) Quigley himself was a part of that group.

Internet conspiracy sites strive to identify the conspiratorial factions. We get pieces here and pieces there. The world is run by Freemasons, some say. Other say Skull & Bones, and a loose confederation of secret societies. CIA gets lots of votes, along with Mossad (though I suspect these factions are merely tools) and, of course, “the British.” A major frontrunner is the International Banking Cartel. When Victor Marsden published *The Protocols of the Elders of Zion* in 1906, which purported to be a Jewish plan to take over the world, Jewish writers denied responsibility, charging a Catholic plot to defame Jewry. Whose side was Marsden on? You can get so deep into conspiracies that the suspects start canceling each other out. It can become frustrating.

I'm happy to report that F. Tupper Saussy has come to our emotional rescue. During his ten years as a fugitive from the Department of Justice (convicted of a crime that cannot be found in the lawbooks), Saussy occupied himself with an investigation into the powers that be. It was an investigation the likes of which, as far as I know, has never before been undertaken. The fruit of his amazing legwork is *Rulers of Evil,* a powerful book that in less loving hands might have been angry and judgmental.

Saussy's thesis: There is indeed a small group that runs the world, but we can't call it a conspiracy because it identifies itself with signs, mottoes, and monuments. Signs, mottoes, and monuments? you ask. *Quick:* what occupies the highest point on the U.S. Capitol building? It's probably the most *oft-published* statue on earth, and you can't name it? As long as you don't know whose feet are firmly planted atop your country's legislative center, or how she got there, or whence she came, the group that controls America remains invisible. Once you know these things, the fog begins lifting.

Saussy has analyzed hundreds of signatory clues left by the true rulers of the world, clues that we have perhaps been trained to ignore. He's traced them to their origins, and matched them to facts of history going back six thousand years – all balanced against the most reliable human reference work there is, the Bible. The result: an unavoidable touchstone for all future works on the subject.

Rulers of Evil is an indispensable study book that you'll probably deface from cover to cover with highlighting. By all means keep it on your lower library shelf, within close reach of inquisitive children.

— *Pat Shannon*
Journalist-at-Large, MEDIA BYPASS

Introduction

FOREWORD

WHETHER OR NOT it's appropriate for a literary agent to write his client's Foreword, I don't know. If I'm breaking the rules here, well, this is a rule-breaking book. Example. During last spring's Bookexpo in Los Angeles, I agently introduced my client, Tupper Saussy, to one of New York's most unshockable publishing executives. As Tupper articulately summarized *Rulers of Evil* for him, I personally witnessed the brow of this fearless executive develop a twitch. I saw him actually gulp. With my own ears I heard him say, "This is a little too *extreme* for us."

The twitch developed as Tupper was saying "the Roman Catholic Church really does run the world, including the United States government, and this is openly declared in monuments and emblems and insignia as well as official documents..." By the time Tupper calmly reached his payoff – "And this is good, because it's divinely ordained" – the exec was staring into space.

All right, *Rulers of Evil* is extreme. (Does that frighten you?) It was researched and written during a decade of flight that probably saved the author's life from vindictive federal authorities. I wanted to represent this book from the moment I read the first draft back in 1993, completely unaware that its author could claim the classic *Miracle On Main Street* as his own. (Tupper Saussy's identity was not revealed to me until his capture in 1997. He can keep a secret.)

Like no book I've seen in my thirty years of literary-agenting, *Rulers of Evil* lays out who's *really* who in world power, pegs them as evil (about as evil as the rest of us, more or less), and then explains how spiritual wickedness in high places works for the ultimate good of mankind. It's the book about conspiracies that doesn't advocate throwing the bums out.

Rulers of Evil is almost a self-help product. The useful knowledge it imparts reveals the world structure as it really is. Once we can see, our choices increase, our pathways widen, and our lives improve.

But don't expect a breeze. Parts of the book are so rich in historical detail that your brain might feel over-burdened. When that happens, just flip to more readable parts. Or study the pictures. My client doesn't mind being read casually, back to front, front to back, middle out, a few pages at a time. Enjoy freedom of movement. If a chapter doesn't fit today's mood, find another that does. Use a bookmark, or the dustjacket flaps.

Ultimately, you'll get it all. And when you do, I predict you'll be a different person. You'll have a new worldview, one shaped by evidence that has never been assembled quite this way before. I can say this with confidence because *Rulers of Evil* is still influencing my own life, having begun in me a process of answering many of the heretofore unanswerable questions of our time.

— *Peter Fleming*
THE PETER FLEMING AGENCY

Introduction

ORIENTATION

"The only new thing in this world is the history you don't know."
— PRESIDENT HARRY S. TRUMAN

ON FRESHMAN ORIENTATION day at the University of the South in Sewanee, Tennessee, I took a seat across the table from my faculty advisor. He was a professor of botany named Edmund Berkeley. Dr. Berkeley studied the tab on my manila file folder as though it were some rare species of leaf. Suddenly his eyes leapt into my face. Giddy eighteen-year-old that I was, I gulped and tried to smile.

'"Saussy,"' he mused calmly. "Good Huguenot name."

The word stumped me. "Huguenot?"

"'Saussy' is a French name," he lectured. "Sewanee is a Protestant university. Your people must have been Huguenots."

I silently forgave my father for never having told me our name was French and that our ancestors might have been something called "Huguenots."

"What exactly are Huguenots?" I inquired.

"French Protestants," declared my advisor. "Massacred by soldiers ordered by Catherine d'Medici in cahoots with the Jesuits.

The survivors were exiled. Some established in England, others in Prussia. Some came to America, as your people obviously did."

"Jesuits." Now that was a familiar word. In Tampa, my hometown, there was a high school named Jesuit. Jesuit High was greatly esteemed academically and athletically. I was aware of a connection between the Jesuits and the Roman Catholic Church, but little else.

"What are Jesuits?" I asked.

"Oh, the Jesuits are members of the Society of Jesus," he replied. "Excellent men. Intellectuals. They work exclusively for the Pope, take an oath to him and him alone. Some people call them the Pope's private militia. Kind of a swordless army. Controversial. They've gotten into trouble meddling with civil governments in the past, trying to bring them under the Pope's dominion, you know, but in this century they've been tamed down considerably. They're wonderful educators."

That night I called my father, who answered Dr. Berkeley's surmise. Yes, our people were Huguenots. They arrived at Savannah harbor in the latter half of the eighteenth century, after a stopover of several generations in Scotland. They had indeed been run out of their beloved country, the same way the Jews were run out of Germany. Nazis chased the Jews, Jesuits chased us. Ah, but that was a long time ago, my father said, and I agreed. Forgiveness is a great virtue, and it's best to let bygones be bygones. So I forgot about Huguenots and Jesuits and plunged into my college career, my future, my life.

I never had occasion to think about my conversation with Edmund Berkeley until some thirty years later, in August of 1984, during a brief but telling encounter with an assistant United States attorney by the name of John MacCoon. We were standing a few paces apart in the marble hallway outside a federal courtroom in Chattanooga, waiting for the morning session to be called. I was on the docket, scheduled to be arraigned on charges of willful failure to file income tax returns for the years 1977, 1978, and 1979.

I had no doubt that the charges would be dropped. The statute I had supposedly run afoul of applied to persons "required" to file returns. Yet I possessed a letter signed by the IRS District Director stating that a diligent search of IRS files had failed to disclose any tax liability in my name for those years. People who have no tax liability are not required to file returns. Why was I there?

The booming voice of a lawyer friend broke my concentration. "Tupper," he said, guiding me over to John MacCoon, "have you met your prosecutor?"

He introduced us in a jovial fashion and then rushed off to a huddle of other litigants.

MacCoon and I shook hands. "John," I asked, feeling the need to make small talk, "are you from Chattanooga?"

"No," he replied, "I came from Washington."

Something inside told me to press. "So you're originally from Washington?"

"No, originally I'm from New Orleans."

"I have lots of cousins in New Orleans," I beamed. He seemed to get a little edgy.

"Well, the name Saussy is not unknown there," he said.

"One of my favorite cousins lives in New Orleans," I said, and named my cousin.

"He's your cousin? Why, he and I were ordained together."

"Ordained?" I asked. "My cousin is a Jesuit priest. Are you a Jesuit?"

"Yes," said my prosecutor, now visibly agitated. "You know, I might have to recuse myself...."

"I've got a better idea, drop the charges."

"Oh no, I couldn't do that."

The dialogue ended suddenly with the hoarse drawl of a bailiff announcing that court was now in session.

So John MacCoon was a Jesuit! The media, spoonfed by his offices, had already branded me a "tax protestor." What was going on? Were the Jesuits chasing Protestants again?

Actually, I had not protested any taxes at all. I had merely discovered some truths about the tax and monetary laws and had dared to stand on them. As with the Huguenots and the truths they'd discovered about Christianity, authorities were offended. Wasn't it interesting that both of us – my ancestors and me – were branded as antisocial, repugnant, as people who disturb good order by daring to "protest"? Was this a religious persecution here? Was my stand on Truth somehow so offensive that the Pope had dispatched one of his swordless warriors to do me in? And then there was the date. The charges against me were filed on July 31st. That happens to be the Feast Day of St. Ignatius Loyola, the founding father of the Society of Jesus. According to the dogma of the Roman Liturgical Calendar, any cause initiated on a saint's feast day is especially worthy of the saint's attention.

A bizarre series of furtive proceedings occurred over the next eleven months. Exculpatory evidence was ignored or suppressed. There were prosecutorial improprieties, which the court excused. When I attempted to avoid the consequences of the improprieties, I was punished. Few precedents for such judicial steam-rolling could be found outside the annals of the Roman Inquisition, which I learned had been administered since 1542 by the Jesuits. What was this – the American Inquisition? All the while, the IRS, John MacCoon, and the media kept labeling me "tax protestor." Sometimes they would slip and call me a "tax evader," even though I had never been accused of the much more serious crime of tax evasion.

Ultimately, a jury acquitted me of willfully failing to file income tax returns for 1978 and 1979. But for 1977 they found willfulness, and the higher courts upheld their verdict. It was only a misdemeanor. The last defendant in my district to be convicted on the same count had been sentenced to six weeks. But the court sentenced me to a full year, the maximum allowed by statute. This was due to what the prosecutor called my "unrepentance." Some say I should have wept crocodile tears and promised to mend my ways. But that would be gameplaying. How can you repent of willfully failing to do something that was never required in the first place?

WHEN I soberly reviewed the long list of prosecutorial absurdities, I decided that I was being punished for something not remotely connected to willfulness in filing tax returns. I was being punished for mobilizing what turned out to be the only constitutional issue no court in the United States will fully entertain – the money issue.

Back in the late seventies, I discovered that constitutional government was contravening every American's right to an economy free of fluctuating monetary values. I wrote a book *The Miracle On Main Street: Saving Yourself and America from Financial Ruin* (1980), in which I compared American money as mandated by the Constitution – gold and silver coin – with American money currently in use – notes, computer entries, and base-metal tokens. Not only was the money in use inferior to constitutional money, but also it had been introduced without a constitutional amendment. Since our values were denominated in units of lawless money, we had become a lawless nation. Quality of life follows quality of money. I urged the people to take the initiative in nudging government officials to restore the kind of monetary system established by the Constitution. The ultimate payoff would be a wholesome society. Main Street activism would have worked a miracle.

MOMS caught on very quickly. Activists began asserting economic rights in many creative ways. To assist and document their work, I launched "The Main Street Journal." Published more or less monthly, the MSJ reported in detail the interesting, sometimes frightening consequences of economic rights activism.

By July 1984, my book and my journal had expanded into a growing bibliography of historic and legal materials related to the money issue. I was speaking all over the country, and holding well-attended seminars in Tennessee. We had history on our side. The Framers of the Constitution had unanimously voted down the kind of monetary system that was destroying modern America, and had unanimously voted for the system we were advocating. We had the law on our side. The Supreme Court had never ruled that America's lawless monetary system was constitutional. What we didn't have on our side was the entity having most to gain from lawless money – the governing bodies. We were deeply offending their appearance of legitimacy. As one Tennessee village lawyer said, in returning *Miracle On Main Street* to the friend who'd loaned it to him, "This book won't get Saussy killed, but they'll figure out a humane way of shutting him up."

THERE was an interval of two years between my trial and the Supreme Court's decision on it. About midway during that interval, I received a postcard from the most famous prisoner in Tennessee, James Earl Ray. Mr. Ray, the self-convicted assassin of Dr. Martin Luther King, wanted me to help him write his autobiography. I interviewed him personally, examined his manuscript, and conducted some research of my own. The evidence persuaded me that Mr. Ray did not deserve to be called, in Life Magazine's words, "the world's most hated man." He had been tortured into pleading guilty. Far from punishment for murder, his confinement was the government's way of concealing the true assassins, and at the Tennessee taxpayers' expense. I felt that he, like myself, was being maliciously used by governing bodies for the purpose of deceiving the public.

I worked closely with Mr. Ray, publishing his autobiography under the title *Tennessee Waltz: The Making of A Political Prisoner.* I included an epilogue of my own, "The Politics of Witchcraft," in which I discussed how Dr. King's murder benefitted no one as much as it did the economic powers of government. About a month before *Tennessee Waltz* would be coming off the press, I was notified that the U.S. Supreme Court had denied my appeal. Then the District Judge ordered me to surrender myself to Atlanta Federal Prison Camp on or before April 10, 1987. A friend happened to say, "You know, if your previous writings brought about the tax prosecution, think what *Tennessee Waltz* might provoke them to, with you in custody...."

And so, when the moment came for me to pass through the Prison Camp gates, something got in the way. I can only call it a spirit, an irresistible spirit. It was the same spirit that had directed me to stand on the truth in my writing and speaking. It was the same spirit that had led me to interrogate John MacCoon at our first encounter in that marble hallway back in 1984, the same spirit that had moved him to tell me he was a Jesuit. This spirit turned me away from the prison gate and led me into a fugitive lifestyle.

I felt an overwhelming obligation to love my enemies by studying them in intricate detail. I wanted to know the extent of Jesuit involvement in United States government, presently and historically. What I discovered was a vast Roman Catholic substratum to American history, especially the Revolution that produced the constitutional republic. I found that Jesuits played eminent and under-appreciated roles in moving the complacent New Englanders to rebel against their mother country. I discovered facts and motives strongly suggesting that events that made Great Britain divide in 1776 were the outworkings of an ingenious Jesuit strategy. This strategy appears to have been single-handedly designed and supervised by a true founding father few Americans have ever heard of – Lorenzo Ricci (known to British Jesuits as Laurence Richey). In fact, investigating Jesuit involvement in the formation of the United States turned up a whole host of hitherto little-known names, such as Robert Bellarmine, Joseph Amiot, the Dukes of Norfolk, Daniel Coxe, Sun-Tzu, Lord Bute, Francis Thorpe, Nikolaus von Hontheim, and the Carrolls, Daniel, Charles, and John. In their way, these men were as essential to our constitutional origins as Jefferson, Paine, Adams, Washington, Locke, and George III.

My investigation began in 1987. It coursed ten years, and ranged – with the help of our Lord and many courageous friends, to whom this book is dedicated – from the Florida Keys to Puget Sound, from the District of Columbia to southern California. The mounting evidence inexorably changed the way I perceived constituted authority, and my relationship to it. Finally, on the thirteenth minute of the thirteenth hour of the thirteenth day of November, 1997, the journey that had begun with the filing of charges against me thirteen years earlier reached its destination. I was captured without violence by three U.S. Marshals outside my office on the canals in Venice, California. A valuable personhood

I was prepared to deny forever was given back to me. For sixteen months, the Bureau of Prisons afforded me the opportunity to discuss the fruits of my investigation with intelligent prisoners in California, Georgia, Tennessee, Oklahoma, and Mississippi. Their straightforward questions, comments, insights, and criticisms helped further prepare my manuscript for a general audience.

Now that my liberties are fully restored, I am able finally to relate my findings to you in my own true voice, tried in adversity, seasoned by time.

F. Tupper Saussy

RULERS OF EVIL

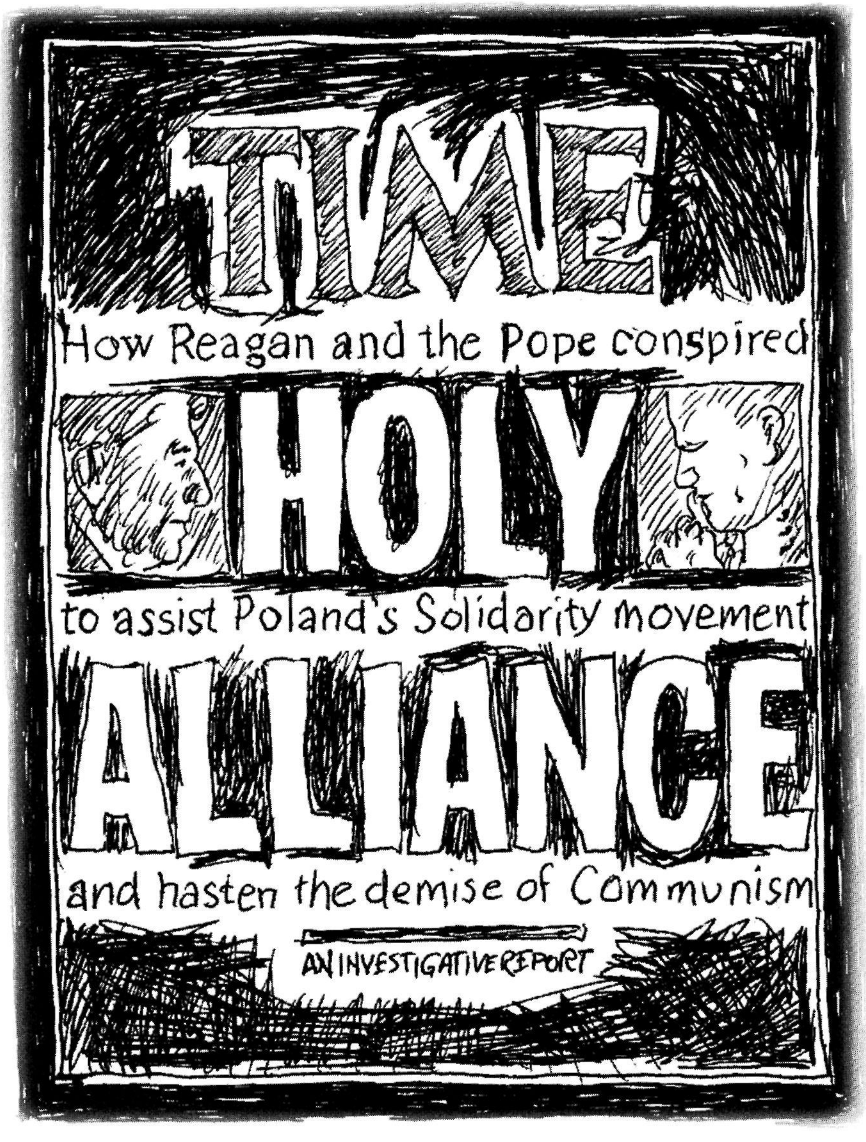
TIME
How Reagan and the Pope conspired
HOLY
to assist Poland's Solidarity movement
ALLIANCE
and hasten the demise of Communism
AN INVESTIGATIVE REPORT

Chapter 1

SUBLIMINAL ROME

"The Roman Catholic Church is a State."
— BISHOP MANDELL CREIGHTON, LETTERS

WHEN A PULITZER PRIZE-winning reporter announced in his 1992 Time Magazine cover story[1] that a "conspiracy" binding President Ronald Reagan and Pope John Paul II into a "secret, holy alliance" had brought about the demise of communism, at least one reader saw through the hype.

Professor Carol A. Brown of the University of Massachusetts fired off a letter to Time's editors saying,

> Last week I taught my students about the separation of church and state. This week I learned that the Pope is running U.S. foreign policy. No wonder our young people are cynical about American ideals.

What Brown had learned from Carl Bernstein I had discovered for myself over several years of private investigation: the papacy really does run United States foreign policy, and always has. Yes, Bernstein noted that the leading American players behind the Reagan/Vatican conspiracy, to a man, were "devout Roman Catholics" – namely,

William Casey
Director, CIA

Richard Allen
National Security Advisor

Judge William Clark
National Security Advisor

Alexander Haig
Secretary of State

Vernon Walters
Ambassador-at-Large

William Wilson
Ambassador to the Vatican State

But the reporter neglected to mention that the entire Senate Foreign Relations committee was governed by Roman Catholics, as well. Specifically, Senators

Joseph Biden
Subcommittee on European Affairs

Paul Sarbanes
International Economic Policy, Trade, Oceans, and Environment
Daniel P. Moynihan
Near Eastern and South Asian Affairs

John Kerry
Terrorism, Narcotics, and International Communications

and...

Christopher Dodd
Western Hemisphere and Peace Corps Affairs

Bernstein would have been wandering off-point to list the Roman Catholic leaders of American domestic policy, such as Senate majority leader George Mitchell and Speaker of the House Tom Foley.

In fact, when the holy alliance story hit the stands, there was virtually no arena of federal legislative activity, according to *The 1992 World Almanac of US Politics,* that was not directly controlled by a Roman Catholic senator or representative. The committees and subcommittees of the United States Senate and House of Representatives governing commerce, communications and telecommunications, energy, medicine, health, education and welfare, human services, consumer protection, finance and financial institutions, transportation, labor and unemployment, hazardous materials, taxation, bank regulation, currency and monetary policy, oversight of the Federal Reserve System, commodity prices, rents services, small business administration, urban affairs, European affairs, Near Eastern 6k South Asian affairs, terrorism/narcotics/ international communications, international economic/trade/ oceans/environmental policy, insurance, housing, community development, federal loan guarantees, economic stabilization measures (including wage and price controls), gold and precious metals transactions, agriculture, animal and forestry industries, rural issues, nutrition, price supports, Food for Peace, agricultural exports, soil conservation, irrigation, stream channelization, flood-control, minority enterprise, environment and pollution, appropriations, defense, foreign operations, vaccines, drug labeling and packaging, drug and alcohol abuse, inspection and certification of fish and processed food, use of vitamins and saccharin, national health insurance proposals, human services, legal services, family relations, the arts and humanities, the handicapped, and aging – in other words, virtually every aspect of secular life in America – came under the chairmanship of one of these Roman Catholic laypersons:

Frank Annunzio
Joseph Biden
Silvio Conte
Kika De la Garza
John Dingell
Christopher Dodd
Vic Fazio
James Florio
Henry Gonzalez
Thomas Harkin
Edward Kennedy
John Kerry
John LaFalce
Patrick Leahy
Charles Luken
Edward Madigan
Edward Markey
Joseph McDade
Barbara Mikulski
George Miller
Daniel Moynihan
John Murtha
Mary Rose Oakar
David Obey
Claiborne Pell
Charles Rangel
Dan Rostenkowski
or Edward Roybal.[2]

Vatican Council IPs *Constitution on the Church* (1964) instructs politicians to use their secular offices to advance the cause of Roman Catholicism. Catholic laypersons, "whoever they are, are called upon to expend all their energy for the growth of the Church and its continuous sanctification," and "to make the Church present and operative in those places and circumstances where only through them can it become the salt of the earth" (IV, 33). Vatican II further instructs all Catholics "by their competence in secular disciplines and by their activity [to] vigorously contribute their effort so that … the goods of this world may be more equitably distributed among all men, and may in their own way be conducive to universal progress in human and Christian freedom … and [to] remedy the customs and conditions of the world, if they are an inducement to sin, so that they all may be conformed to the norms of justice and may favor the practice of virtue rather than hinder it" (IV, 36).

Vatican II affirms Catholic doctrine dating back to 1302, when Pope Boniface VIII asserted that "it is absolutely necessary for the salvation of every human creature to be subject to the Roman Pontiff." This was the inspiration for the papacy to create the United States of America that materialized in 1776, by a process just as secret as the Reagan-Vatican production of Eastern Europe in 1989. What? American government Roman Catholic from the beginning?

Consider: the land known today as the District of Columbia bore the name "Rome" in 1663 property records; and the branch of the Potomac River that bordered "Rome" on the south was called "Tiber."[3] This information was reported in the 1902 edition of the *Catholic Encyclopedia's* article on Daniel Carroll. The article, specifically declaring itself "of interest to Catholics" in the 1902 edition, was deleted from the *New Catholic Encyclopedia* (1967). Other facts were reported in 1902 and deleted from 1967. For example, when Congress met in Washington for the first time, in November, 1800, "the only two really comfortable and imposing houses within the bounds of the city" belonged to Roman Catholics. One was Washington's first mayor, Robert Brent. The other was Brent's brother-in-law, Notley Young, a Jesuit priest.

Daniel Carroll was a Roman Catholic congressman from Maryland who signed two of America's fundamental documents, the Articles of Confederation and the United States Constitution. Carroll was a direct descendant of the Calverts, a Catholic family to whom King Charles I of England had granted Maryland as a feudal barony. Carroll had received his education at St. Omer's Jesuit College in Flanders, where young English-speaking Catholics were trained in a variety of guerrilla techniques for advancing the cause of Roman Catholicism among hostile Protestants.

In 1790, President George Washington, a Protestant, appointed Congressman Carroll to head a commission of three men to select land for the "federal city" called for in the Constitution. Of all places, the commission chose "Rome," which at the time consisted of four farms, one of which belonged to... Daniel Carroll. It was upon Carroll's farm that the new government chose to erect its most important building, the Capitol.

THE American Capitol abounds with clues of its Roman origins. "Freedom," the Roman goddess whose statue crowns the dome, was created in Rome at the studio of American sculptor Thomas Crawford. We find a whole pantheon of Roman deities in the great fresco covering the dome's interior rotunda: Persephone, Ceres, Freedom, Vulcan, Mercury, even a deified George Washington. These figures were the creation of Vatican artist Constantino Brumidi.

The fact that the national Statehouse evolved as a "capitol" bespeaks Roman influence. No building can rightly be called a capitol unless it's a temple of Jupiter, the great father-god of Rome who ruled heaven with his thunderbolts and nourished the earth with his fertilizing rains. If it was a *capitolium,* it belonged to Jupiter and his priests.

Jupiter's mascot was the eagle, which the founding fathers made their mascot as well. A Roman eagle tops the governing idol of the House of Representatives, a forty-six-inch sterling silver-and-ebony wand called a "mace." The mace is "the symbol of authority in the House."[4] When the Sergeant-at-arms displays it before an unruly member of Congress, the mace restores order. Its position at the rostrum tells whether the House is in "committee" or in "session."

America's national motto *"Annuit Coeptis"* came from a prayer to Jupiter. It appears in Book IX of Virgil's epic propaganda, the *Aeneid,* a poem commissioned just before the birth of Christ by Caius Maecenas, the multi-billionaire power behind Augustus

Caesar. The poem's objective was to fashion Rome into an imperial monarchy for which its citizens would gladly sacrifice their lives.

Fascism may be an ugly word to many, but its stately emblem is apparently offensive to no one. The emblem of fascism, a pair of them, commands the wall above and behind the speaker's rostrum in the Chamber of the House of Representatives. They're called *fasces,* and I can think of no reason for them to be there other than to declare the fascistic nature of American republican democracy.

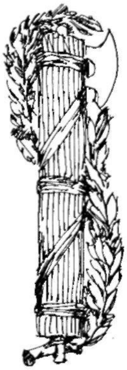

A fasces is a Roman device. Actually, it originated with the ancient Etruscans, from whom the earliest Romans derived their religious jurisprudence nearly three thousand years ago. It's an axe-head whose handle is a bundle of rods tightly strapped together by a red sinew. It symbolizes the ordering of priestly functions into a single infallible sovereign, an autocrat who could require life and limb of his subjects. If the fasces is entwined with laurel, like the pair on the House wall, it signifies Caesarean military power. The Romans called this infallible sovereign *Pontifex Maximus,* "Supreme Bridgebuilder." No Roman was called *Pontifex Maximus* until the title was given to Julius Caesar in 48 BC. Today's *Pontifex Maximus* is Pope John Paul II.

As we shall discover in a forthcoming chapter, John Paul does not hold that title alone. He shares it with a mysterious partner, a military man, a man holding an office that has been known for more than four centuries as *"Papa Nero,"* the Black Pope. I shall present evidence that the House fasces represent the Black Pope, who indeed rules the world.

Later, I will develop what is sure to become a controversial hypothesis: that the Black Pope rules by divine appointment, and for the ultimate good of mankind.

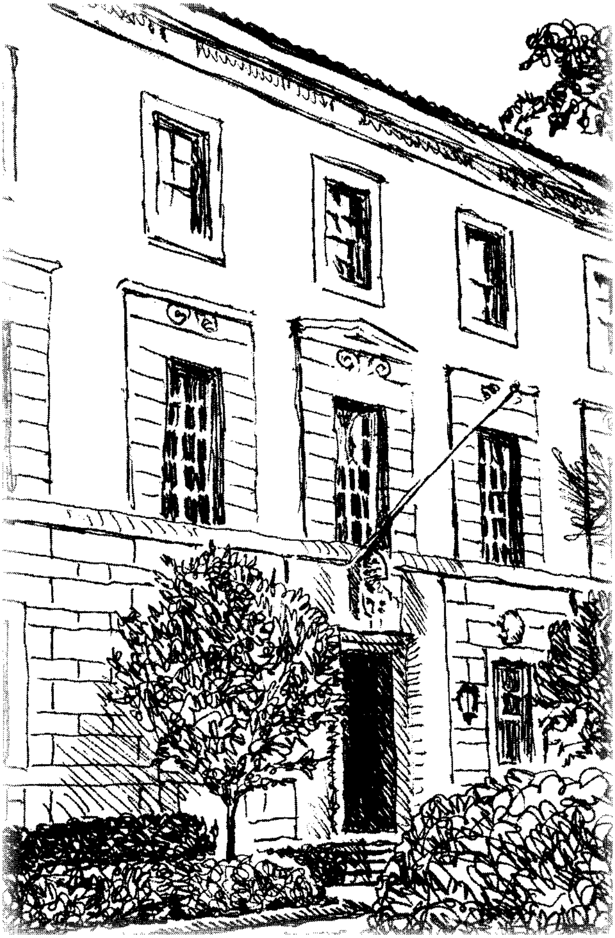

APOSTOLIC NUNCIATURE, UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
3339 Massachusetts Avenue NW
Washington, D.C.

Chapter 2

MISSIONARY ADAPTATION

FEW PEOPLE SEEM to be aware that the Roman Catholic Church in America is officially recognized as a State. How this came about makes interesting reading.

Early in his administration, President Ronald Reagan invited the Vatican City, whose ruling head is the Pope, to open its first embassy in Washington, D.C. His Holiness responded positively, and the embassy, or Apostolic Nunciature of the Holy See, opened officially on January 10, 1984.

Shortly thereafter, a complaint was filed against President Reagan at U.S. District Court in Philadelphia by the American Jewish Congress, the Baptist Joint Committee on Public Affairs, Seventh Day Adventists, the National Council of Churches, the National Association of Evangelicals, and Americans United for Separation of Church and State.The plaintiffs sought to have the Court declare that the administration had unconstitutionally granted to the Roman Catholic faith privileges that were being denied to other establishments of religion.

On May 7, 1985 the suit was thrown out by Chief Judge John Fullam. Judge Fullam ruled that district courts do not have jurisdiction to intervene in "foreign policy decisions" of the executive branch. Bishop James W. Malone, President of the U.S. Catholic Conference, praised Judge Fullam's decision, noting that it settled "not a religious issue but a public policy question."[1] The plaintiffs appealed. The Third Circuit denied the appeal, noticing that "the Roman Catholic Church's unique position of control over a sovereign territory gives it advantages that other religious organizations do not enjoy."[1] The Apostolic Nunciature at 3339 Massachusetts Avenue N.W. enables *Pontifex Maximus* to supervise more closely American civil government – "public policy" – as administered through Roman Catholic laypersons. (One such layperson was Chief Judge Fullam, whose Roman Catholicism apparently escaped the attention of the plaintiffs.)

This same imperium ran pagan Rome in essentially the same way. The public servants were priests of the various gods and goddesses. Monetary affairs, for example, were governed by priests of the goddess Moneta. Priests of Dionysus managed architecture and cemeteries, while priests of Justitia, with her sword, and Libera, blindfolded, holding her scales aloft, ruled the courts.[2] Hundreds of priestly orders, known as the Sacred College, managed hundreds of government bureaus, from the justice system to the construction, cleaning, and repair of bridges (no bridge could be built without the approval of *Pontifex Maximus),* buildings, temples, castles, baths, sewers, ports, highways, walls and ramparts of cities and the boundaries of lands.[3]

Priests directed the paving and repairing of streets and roads, supervised the calendar and the education of youth. Priests regulated weights, measures, and the value of money. Priests solemnized and certified births, baptisms, puberty, purification, confession, adolescence, marriage, divorce, death, burial, excommunication, canonization, deification, adoption into families, adoption into tribes and orders of nobility. Priests ran the libraries, the museums, the consecrated lands and treasures. Priests registered the trademarks and symbols. Priests were in charge of public worship, directing the festivals, plays, entertainments, games and ceremonies. Priests wrote and held custody over wills, testaments, and legal conveyances.

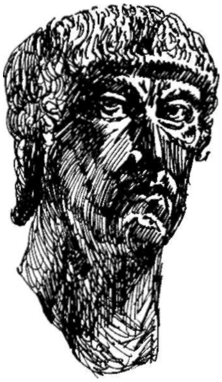

Constantine

By the fourth century, one half of the lands and one fourth of the population of the Roman Empire were owned by the priests.[4] When the Emperor Constantine and his Senate formally adopted Christianity as the Empire's official religion, the exercise was more of a merger or acquisition than a revolution. The wealth of the priests merely became the immediate possession of the Christian churches, and the priests merely declared themselves Christians. Government continued without interruption. The pagan gods and goddesses were artfully outfitted with names appropriate to Christianity.[1] The sign over the Pantheon indicating "To [the fertility goddess] Cybele and All the Gods" was re-written "To Mary and All the Saints." The Temple of Apollo became the Church of St. Apollinaris. The Temple of Mars was reconsecrated Church of Santa Martina, with the inscription "Mars hence ejected, Martina, martyred maid/ Claims now the worship which to him was paid."

Haloed icons of Apollo were identified as Jesus, and the crosses of Bacchus and Tammuz were accepted as the official symbol of the Crucifixion. Pope Leo I decreed that "St. Peter and St. Paul have replaced Romulus and Remus as Rome's protecting patrons."[2] Pagan feasts, too, were Christianized. December 25 – the celebrated birthday of a number of gods, among them Saturn, Jupiter, Tammuz, Bacchus, Osiris, and Mithras – was claimed to have been that of Jesus as well, and the traditional Saturnalia, season of drunken merriment and gift-giving, evolved into Christmas.

Bacchus was popular in ancient France under his Greek name

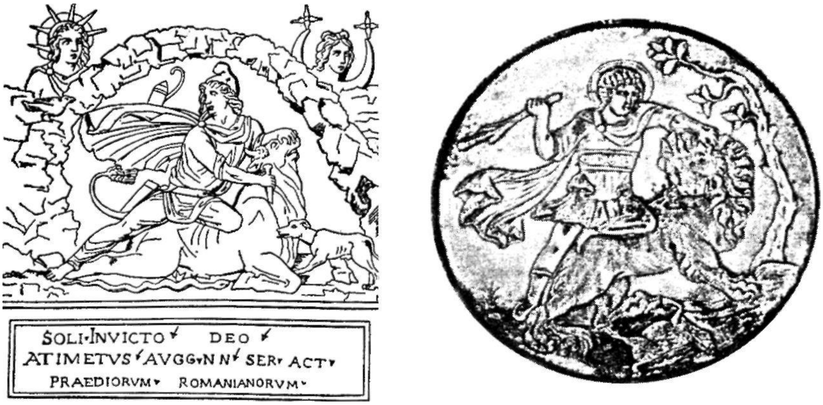

Sketch of Mithras (left), from a stone carving. Mithras was *"Sol Invictus"* the "unconquerable Sun," an imperial Roman god since the third century BC Under Constantinian Christianity, artisans re-consecrated him Jesus and other biblical names. In the silver dish made on Cyprus in the eighth century AD, Mithras (note the peculiar stance) slaying the Cosmic Bull became David killing a lion.

Dionysus – or, as the French rendered it, Denis. His feast, the *Festurn Dionysi,* was held every seventh day of October, at the end of the vintage season. After two days of wild partying, another feast was held, the *Festum Dionysi Eleutherei Rusticum* ("Country Festival of Merry Dionysus"). The papacy cleverly brought the worshippers of Dionysus into its jurisdiction by transforming the words Dionysos, Bacchus, Eleutherei, and Rusticum into... a group of Christian martyrs. October seventh was entered on the Liturgical Calendar as the feast day of "St. Bacchus the Martyr," while October ninth was instituted as the "Festival of St. Denis, and of his companions St. Eleuthere and St. Rustic." *The Catholic Almanac* (1992 et seq) sustains the fabrication by designating October ninth as the

> Feast Day of Denis, bishop of Paris, and two companions identified by early writers as Rusticus, a priest, and Eleutherius, a deacon martyred near Paris. Denis is popularly regarded as the apostle and patron saint of France.

PLAYING loose with truth and Scripture in order to bring every human creature into subjection to the Roman Pontiff is a technique called "missionary adaptation." This is explained as "the adjustment of the mission subject to the cultural requirements of the mission object" so that the papacy's needs will be brought "as much as possible in accord with existing socially shared patterns of thought, evaluation, and action, so as to avoid unnecessary and serious disorganization."[1]

Rome has so seamlessly adapted its mission to American secularism that we do not think of the United States as a Catholic system.Yet the rosters of government rather decisively show this to be the case.

By far the greatest challenge to missionary adaptation has been Scripture – that is, the Old and New Testaments, commonly known as the Holy Bible. Almost for as long as Rome has been the seat of *Pontifex Maximus,* there has been a curious enmity between between the popes and the Bible whose believers they are presumed to head. In the next chapter, we shall begin our examination of that enmity.

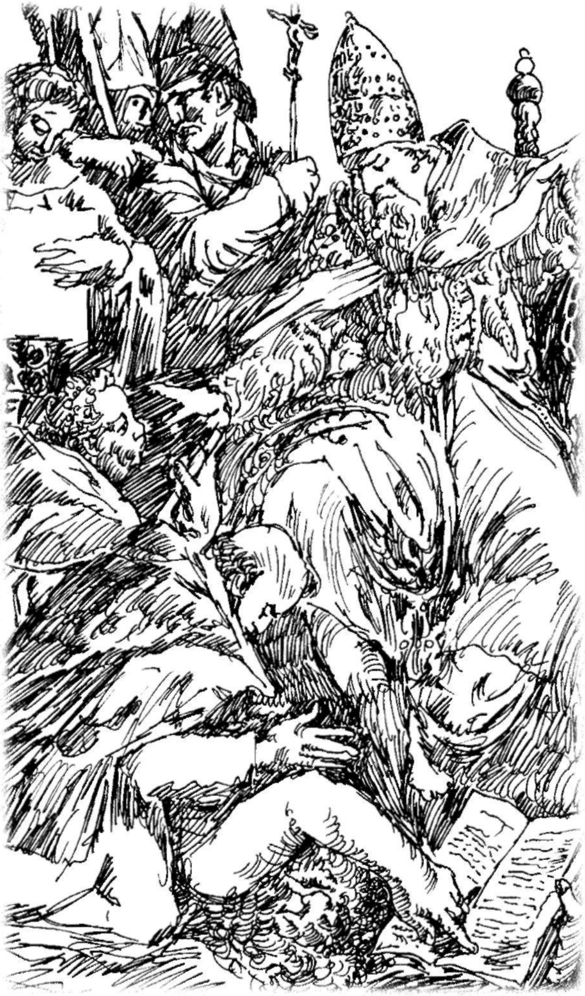

ROME vs. SCRIPTURE
Pope Gregory IX (1227-41), founder of the Inquisition and champion of Aristotle, excommunicates Holy Roman Emperor Frederick II, upside down with Bible. (From the painting by Vasari.)

Chapter 3

MARGINALIZING THE BIBLE

EVERY RULED SOCIETY has some form of holy scripture. The holy scriptures of Caesarean Rome were the prophecies and ritual directions contained in the ten Sibylline gospels and Virgil's *Aeneid*.

The *Aeneid* implied that every Roman's duty was to sacrifice his individuality, as heroic Aeneas had done, to the greater glory of Rome and *Pontifex Maximus*. The Sibyllines, borrowing from Isaiah's much earlier prophecy of Jesus Christ, prophesied that when Caesar Augustus succeeded his uncle Julius as *Pontifex Maximus* he would rule the world as "Prince of Peace, Son of God." Augustus would issue in a "new world order," as indeed he did.

The Sibyllines and the *Aeneid* were so beloved by the government priests that they were considered part of the Roman constitution. The same scriptures were made part of the United States Constitution when the mottoes *"ANNUIT COEPTIS"* and "*NOVUS ORDO SECLORUM*," taken from the *Aeneid* and the Sibyllines respectively, were incorporated, by the Act of July 28, 1782, into the Great Seal of the United States.[1]

The Sibyllines and the *Aeneid* were open only to priests and certain privileged persons. The people learned their sacred content by the trickle-down of priestly retelling. When the Old and New Testaments were adopted as the Empire's official sacred writings they, too, were given to the exclusive care of the priests. And in accord with Roman tradition, the people learned sacred content from discretionary retelling. This had to be, for the sake of the Holy Empire. For should the people acquire biblical knowledge, they would know that *Pontifex Maximus* was not a legitimate Christian entitlement. Knowing this, they would not bow to his supremacy. The Empire could collapse. And so the monarchial Roman Church forcibly suppressed the Bible's intelligent reading. This is why the millennium between Constantine and Gutenberg is known as "the Dark Ages."

Sprinkled throughout the Empire, however, were isolated Christian assemblies who had preserved Scripture from the days of the early Church. For them the Bible invited an ongoing, personal communion with the Creator of the universe. They lived by the writings of which Rome was so jealous. By the thirteenth century, these assemblies had grown so vibrant that Pope Gregory IX declared unauthorized Bible study a heresy.[2] He further decreed that "it is the duty of every Catholic to persecute heretics." To manage the persecution, Gregory established the Pontifical Inquisition.

The Inquisition treated the slightest departure from the life of the community as proof of direct communion with the Bible or Satan. Either instance was a sin worthy of death.[3] Cases were prosecuted according to a strict routine. First, the inquisitors would enter a town and present their credentials to the civil authorities. In the pope's name, they would require the governor's cooperation. Next, the local priest would be ordered to summon his congregation to hear the inquisitors preach against heresy, which was defined as anything the least bit opposed to the papal system. A brief grace period followed the sermon, wherein the people were given an opportunity to step forward and accuse themselves of crimes. Those who did were usually punished mildly. Later, the inquisitors would receive at their lodgings unverified accusations, guaranteeing in the pope's name the anonymity of informants. Many innocent lives were ruined by false testimony.

Trials were conducted arbitrarily and secretly by tribunals consisting of the inquisitors, their staffs, and their witnesses, all concealed under hoods. The accused were never told the charges against them, and they were forbidden to ask. No defense witnesses were permitted. The accused had but one option: to confess guilt and die. Those who refused to confess (and witnesses who balked at testifying) were carried to the dungeon for torture sessions (boys under fourteen and girls under twelve exempted). Inquisitors and executioners were commanded by papal edict to show no mercy. No acquittal was ever recorded. Every fully prosecuted case ended in the death of the defendant and the forfeiture of his or her property, since it was assumed (as in American forfeiture cases since 1984) that the property was gained in sin. Sometimes the property of family members for generations to come was forfeited. These forfeitures were paid out in expenses to the scribes and executioners, half of the remainder going into the papal treasury and half to the inquisitors. Although popes and inquisitors amassed great fortunes from the Inquisition, its greatest beneficiary was, and has been, the Roman system.[4]

The Inquisition was most effective against the isolated truth-seeker in an ignorant community. As communities became more literate, the Inquisition grew subtler. What brought literacy to communities was the epidemic of Bible-reading made possible by the perfection of Johannes Gutenberg's invention of movable type.

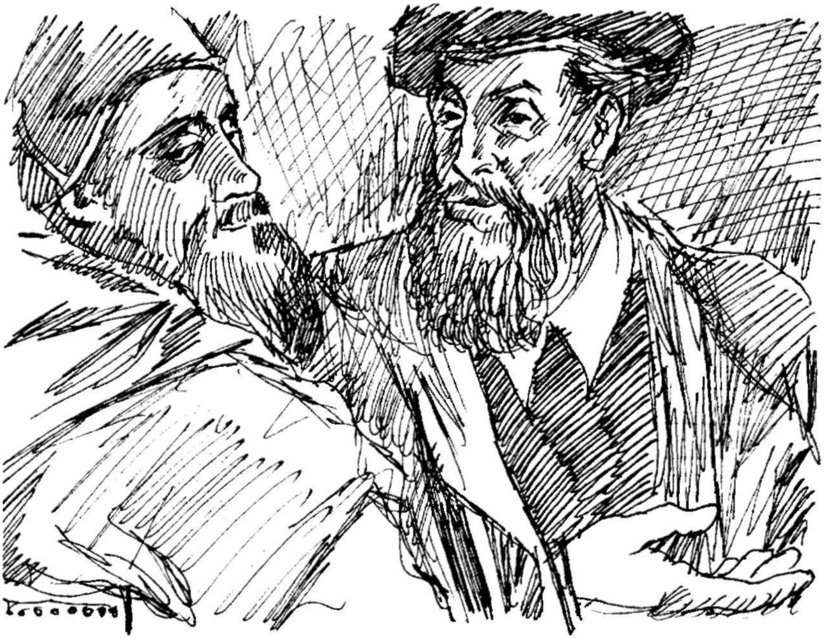

NOMINATION
Charles Habsburg (right, King of Spain and Holy Roman Emperor) confides to Pope Clement VII (Giulio d'Medici) his choice of the man to stop defections to Protestantism. (After the painting by Vasari.)

Chapter 4

MEDICI LEARNING

GUTENBERG CHOSE the Bible to demonstrate movable type not so much that the common man might be brought nearer to God, but that he and his backer, Dr. Johannes Faust, might make a killing in the book trade.

Prior to 1450, Bibles were so rare they were conveyed by deed, like parcels of real estate. A Bible took nearly a year to make, commanding a price equal to ten times the annual income of a prosperous man. Johannes Gutenberg intended his first production, a folio edition of the 6th-century Latin Bible (known as the Vulgate), to fetch manuscript prices. Dr. Faust discreetly sold it as a one-of-a-kind to kings, nobles, and churches. A second edition in 1462 sold for as much as 600 crowns each in Paris, but sales were too sluggish to suit Faust, so he slashed prices to 60 crowns and then to 30.

This put enough copies into circulation for Church authorities to notice that several were identical. Such extraordinary uniformity being regarded as humanly impossible, the authorities charged that Faust had produced the Bibles by magic. On this pretext, the Archbishop of Mainz had Gutenberg's shop raided and a fortune in counterfeit Bibles seized. The red ink with which they were embellished was alleged to be human blood. Faust was arrested for conspiring with Satan, but there is no record of any trial.

Meanwhile, the pressmen, who had been sworn not to disclose Gutenberg's secrets while in his service, fled the jurisdiction of Mainz and set up shops of their own. As paper manufacture improved, along with technical improvements in matrix cutting and type-casting, books began to proliferate. Most were editions of the Vulgate. In the decade following the Mainz raid, five Latin and two German Bibles were published. Translators busied themselves in other countries. An Italian version appeared in 1471, a Bohemian in 1475, a Dutch and a French in 1477, and a Spanish in 1478.

As quickly as our generation has become computer-literate, the Gutenberg generation learned to read books, and careful readers found shocking discrepancies between the papacy's interpretation of God's Word and the Word itself.

In 1485, the Archbishop of Mainz issued an edict punishing unauthorized Bible-reading with excommunication, confiscation of books, and heavy fines. The great Renaissance theologian Desiderius Erasmus challenged the Archbishop by publishing, in 1516, the first printed edition of the Greek New Testament. He addressed the anti-Bible mentality in his preface with these words:

> I vehemently dissent from those who would not have private persons read the Holy Scriptures nor have them translated into the vulgar tongues, as though either Christ taught such difficult doctrines that they can only be understood by a few theologians, or the safety of the Christian religion lay in ignorance of it. I should like all women to read the Gospel and the Epistles of Paul. Would that they were translated into all languages so that not only the Scotch and Irish, but Turks and Saracens might be able to read and know them.

A Catholic monk named Martin Luther, against the advice of his superiors, plunged into the New Testament of Erasmus. He was

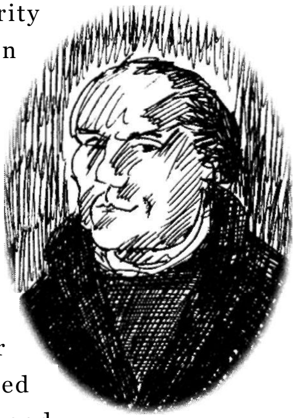
Martin Luther

shocked by the absence of scriptural authority for so many Church traditions. Of the seven Church Sacraments only two, Baptism and the Lord's Supper, were grounded in Scripture. The remaining five – Confirmation, Absolution, Ordination, Marriage, and Extreme Unction – were the inventions of post-biblical councils and decrees. Luther found no scriptural mandate for celibacy of monks and nuns, or for pilgrimages and the veneration of sacred relics. The Church taught that prayer, good works, and regular participation in the Sacraments might save man from eternal damnation. Luther found this to be opposed to the teaching of Scripture. According to Scripture, only one thing can save man from the consequences of his sins: God's grace, and that alone.

The most explosive result of Luther's Bible-reading was its attitude toward the papacy. Nowhere in Scripture could the passionate monk find that God had ordained an imperious Roman "Vicar of Christ" to rule over a vast economy based on selling rights to do evil. These rights were called indulgences. They had been a Church tradition since Pope Leo III had begun granting them in the year 800, payable in the money coined by Pope Adrian I in 780.

Indulgences were floated on the Church's credibility, rather like government bonds are issued on the credibility of states today. In 1491, for example, Innocent VII granted the 20-year *Butterbriefe* indulgence, by which Germans could pay 1/20th of a guilder for the annual privilege of eating dairy products even while meriting from fasting. The proceeds of the *Butterbriefe* went to build a bridge at Torgau.[1] Rome's indulgence economy was as extensive as America's income tax system today. And it was every bit as fueled by the people's trembling compliance, voluntarily, to a presumption of liability.

In 1515 Pope Leo X issued a Bull of Indulgence authorizing letters of safe conduct to Paradise and pardons for every evil imaginable,[2] from a 25-cent purgatory release (the dead left purgatory the instant one's coins hit the bottom of the indulgence-salesman's bucket) to a license so potent that it would excuse someone who had raped the Virgin Mary. For the payment of four ducats, one could be forgiven for murdering one's father. Sorcery was pardoned for 6 ducats. For robbing a church, the law could be relaxed for only 9 ducats. Sodomy was pardoned for 12 ducats. Half the revenues from Leo's indulgence went to a fund for the building of St. Peter's Cathedral, and the other half to paying 40% interest rates on bank loans subsidizing the magnificent works of art and architecture with which His Holiness was establishing Rome as the cultural capital of the Renaissance. Historians have glorified Leo, whose father happened to be the great Florentine banker Lorenzo d'Medici, by marking the sixteenth century as "the Century of Leo X."

In early 1521, Martin Luther formally protested the indulgence racket by nailing his famous *Ninety-five Theses Upon Indulgences* to the door of the castle church of Wittenburg. The church was said to own a lock of the Holy Virgin's hair worth two million years of indulgences. Luther's *Theses* exhorted Christians "to follow Christ, their Head, through penalties, deaths, and hells," rather than purchase "a false assurance of peace" from Church indulgence-salesmen.

Leo had Luther arrested and detained for ten months in Wartburg Castle. While in custody, Luther managed to translate the Greek New Testament of Erasmus into German. Its publication alarmed the broadest reaches of Roman authority. D'Aubigne, in his *History of the Reformation,* tells us that "Ignorant priests shuddered at the thought that every citizen, nay every peasant, would now be able to dispute with them on the precepts of our Lord."

Meanwhile, Leo X died. The new pope, Adrian VI, hardly eulogized Leo when confessing to the Diet of Nuremberg that "for many years, abominable things have taken place in the Chair of Peter, abuses in spiritual matters, transgressions of the Commandments, so that everything here has been wickedly perverted."[3]

Adrian died shortly after speaking these lines, to be succeeded by the Cardinal who had been handling Martin Luther's case all along, another Medici, Leo X's first cousin, Giulio d'Medici. Giulio took the papal name Clement VII.

Just as Leo X's corruption had ignited Luther, Clement VII's shrewdness determined how the Church would deal with the proliferation of Bibles. Clement was personally advised by the cagey Niccolo Machiavelli, inventor of modern political science, and Cardinal Thomas Wolsey, Chancellor of England. Machiavelli and Wolsey opined that both printing and Protestantism could be turned to Rome's advantage by employing movable type to produce a literature that would confuse, diminish, and ultimately marginalize the Bible. Cardinal Wolsey, who would later found Christ Church College at Oxford, characterized the project as *"to put learning against learning."*[4]

Against the Bible's learning, which demonstrated how man could have eternal life simply by believing in the facts of Christ's death and resurrection, would be put the learning of the gnostics. Gnosticism held out the hope that man could achieve everlasting life by doing good works himself. To put it succinctly, Bible-learning was Christ-centered; gnostic learning was man-centered.

An enormous trove of gnostic learning had been brought from the eastern Mediterranean by agents of Clement VII's great-grandfather, Cosimo d'Medici. Suppressed since the Emperor Justinian had piously shut down the pagan colleges of Athens back in 529, these celebrated mystical, scientific and philosophical scrolls and manuscripts flattered humanity. They taught that human intelligence was competent to determine truth from falsehood without guidance or assistance from any god. Since, as Protagoras put it, "man is the measure of all things," man could control all the living powers of the universe. If elected and initiated into the secret knowledge, or *gnosis,* man could master the *cabalah* – the "royal science" of names, numbers, and symbols – to create his very own divinity.

Cosimo had stored huge quantities of this pagan material in his library in Florence. The Medici Library, whose final architect was

Michaelangelo, welcomed scholars favored by the papacy. These scholars, not surprisingly, soon began emulating the papacy in focusing more upon humanity than upon the Old and New Testaments. So extensive was the Medici Library's philosophical influence that even scholars today consider it the cradle of Western civilization.

Martin Luther, seeing that *learning against learning* was the future of Christianity, voiced an "Appeal to the Ruling Classes" (1520), in which he wrote, rather prophetically:

> Though our children live in the midst of a Christian world, they faint and perish in misery because they lack the Gospel in which we should be training and exercising them all the time. I advise no one to place his child where the Scriptures do not reign paramount. Schools will become wide-open gates of hell if they do not diligently engrave the Holy Scriptures on young hearts. Every institution where men are not increasingly occupied with the word of God must become corrupt.

It was one thing to recommend *learning against learning,* and quite another to manage its multiple dimensions. *Learning against learning* amounted to no less than making war on the Bible. To wage such a war, the papacy needed a new priestly order of pious soldiers conditioned to wield psychological weapons on a battlefield of... *human thought.* But first, there had to be a general. The man chosen to lead the assault on the Bible was a swashbuckling adventurer from the proud Basque country of northern Spain.

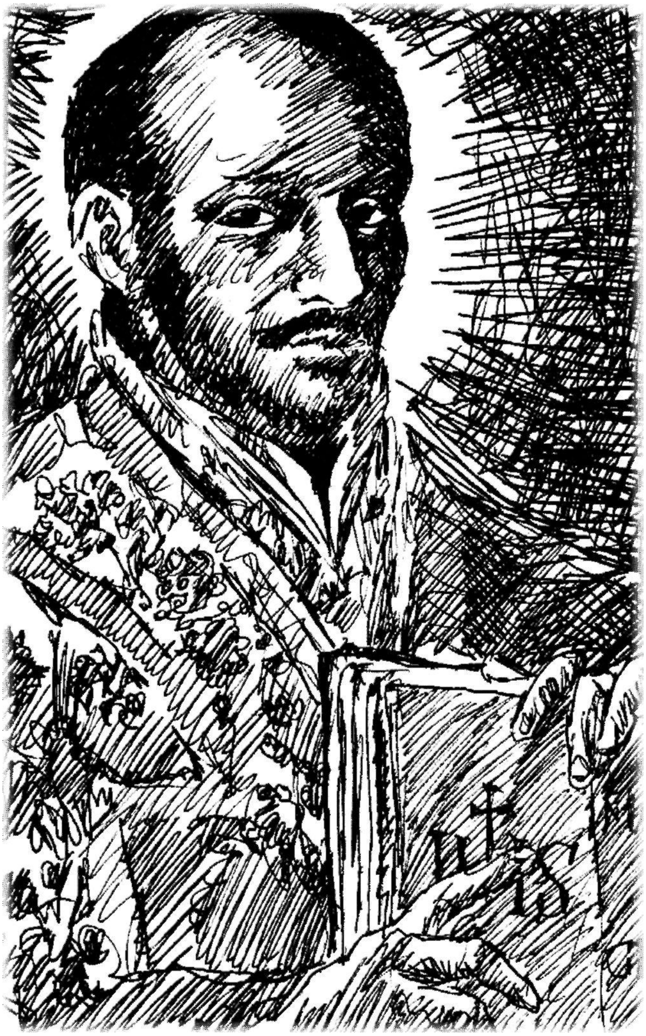

IGNATIUS OF LOYOLA

Chapter 5

APPOINTMENT AT CYPRUS

His name was Iñigo de Loyola. He was born in 1491 to a rich family, youngest of eight boys, one of thirteen children. His older brother had sailed to the New World with Christopher Columbus.

Iñigo served as a page in the court of King Ferdinand and Queen Isabella of Spain. He became friends with Ferdinand's Belgian grandson, Charles Habsburg, whose other grandfather was Holy Roman Emperor Maximilian. (The Holy Roman Emperor was a kind of secular pope who presided over the Christian kingdoms of the western world.) Charles was propelled to great authority before his twenty-first birthday by the deaths of his two grandfathers within a space of two years. From Ferdinand, Charles inherited Spain. From Maximilian, he inherited the Holy Roman Empire. Charles Habsburg was King Charles I of Spain, Emperor Charles V of Rome. He was the most powerful secular figure in Europe. And he was Iñigo's friend.

In 1518, Iñigo was part of a legation negotiating for Charles with Spain's traditional rival, France, at the court of the Duke of Najera in Valladolid. While the summit was in session, Catherina, the Emperor's sister, was presented to the Najera court. Iñigo fell in love with her. He was twenty-seven and she was eleven. (The Emperor was eighteen.) The match, however, was not to be.

On Monday, May 20, 1521, while commanding a garrison at the Duke's fortress in Pamplona, Iñigo was struck by a French cannonball. His right leg was shattered, and with it – since a well-shaped leg was among a courtier's most prized assets – the prospects for a romantic life with Catherina, or any other woman. An honor guard of French soldiers bore the wounded champion on a stretcher to his family's castle in the Spanish Pyrenees. Surgeons butchered his leg and reset the bones. He lost appetite and was told he might die. He made confession and was given last rites. But a few days after the feast of Sts. Peter and Paul, he was pronounced out of death's immediate grasp. He credited this recovery to his devotion to St. Peter.

Iñigo remained bedridden for nearly a year. Under the concerned if distant eye of the youthful Emperor, he spent his time "searching for substitutes for the shattered ideals, ambitions, and values that had been so central to his sense of himself."[2] He gazed obsessively at a small icon of Saint Catherine, a gift from Queen Isabella to his sister-in-law. The icon sparked dreams of Catherina, which only throttled his heart with desolation. He turned to books, Ludolph of Saxony's *Life of Christ* and Voragine's *Lives of the Saints* – the only two volumes in the family library despite the fact that a Spanish Bible had been available for forty years.

The icon and the books gave him visions. The visions, in turn, led him to develop a process of "preparing and disposing the soul to rid itself of all inordinate attachments, and, after their removal, of seeking and finding the will of God."[3] Iñigo called this process "the Spiritual Exercises."

In the Exercises, a Director leads a Retreatant through Four Weeks of intense prayer, meditation, and dialogue with the Blessed Virgin Mary, Jesus, and God the Father. Frequent repetition of

"Anima Christi," Loyola's own habitual prayer for disorientation and sensory deprivation ("Blood of Christ, inebriate me"), is advised. The First Week is spent considering and contemplating sins, creating vivid mental pictures of "hell in all its depth and breadth, putting your five senses at the service of your imagination." The Second Week explores the life of Christ up to Palm Sunday inclusively; the Third Week undertakes the Crucifixion, in which the Retreatant is directed to "imagine Christ our Lord present before you on the Cross, and begin to speak with him ... and ask 'What have I done for Christ? What am I doing for Christ? What ought I to do for Christ?'"[4] The Fourth Week is occupied with the Resurrection and Ascension, after which the Retreatant prays "for a knowledge of the deceits of the rebel chief and help to guard myself against them; and also to ask for a knowledge of the true life exemplified in the sovereign and true Commander, and the grace to imitate him."

By the time the Exercises have run their course, the Retreatant's purified imagination is totally dominated by mental pictures of Jesus resurrected, Jesus the King Militant. One can now answer the King's call to conquer Protestantism and its rebel chief ("the enemy of human nature") with the selfless fidelity of a chivalrous knight. One's consciousness has been altered. One's soul and brain have been washed. One's liberty has been sacrificed to authority. One's individuality has been surrendered to the Christ of Rome. One no longer has a will of one's own. One volunteers for *any* assigned task no matter how adverse.

Martin Luther spent Loyola's year of recovery imprisoned at Wartburg Castle for insulting the papacy with his *Ninety-Five Theses.* Remarkably, while one prisoner experienced mystical visions that urged him to defend the Church's honor in the romantically chivalrous manner of the Knights Templar, the other was translating (with the miraculous permission of his keepers) the New Testament into German so that ordinary people might learn the will of God directly. These parallel, simultaneous quests for holiness would define modern life's underlying conflict: Which Master Do I Serve, Rome or the Word of God?

PURIFIED by the Spiritual Exercises, Iñigo's sensual attachment to Princess Catherina was transformed through Saint Catherine into a higher, spiritual attachment to a higher femininity – to Mary, the Queen of Heaven. An apparition of the Virgin appeared to him one night and validated that he was free of fleshly lusts and was now worthy of a pilgrimage to Jerusalem. In Martin Luther's opinion, "as far as God is concerned, Jerusalem and all the Holy Land are not one whit more, or less, interesting than the cows in Switzerland."[5] But to a spiritual warrior preparing to lead the Church to war against Scripture, a touchdown in Jerusalem was absolutely necessary. Jerusalem was the domain of King Solomon's Temple, the geo-spiritual center of the Knights Templar. If Iñigo was to revive the Templars, as the Emperor desired, it was liturgically imperative that his newly-washed spirit present itself in the Sacred City for initiation into the mysteries of holy warfare.

All pilgrims to the Holy Land were required by law to apply to the pope at Easter for permission to proceed. In early March 1522, more than a year in advance, Iñigo set out for Rome in all his aristocratic finery, riding on the back of a mule. The corrupt Leo X had died suddenly of malaria in December 1521, and on January 9, 1522, Charles Habsburg (King and Emperor) had engineered the nearly unanimous election of his former tutor, Adrian Dedal, to succeed Leo as Adrian VI. Iñigo headed for Rome coincidentally with Adrian's journey across Spain to Barcelona, the point of embarcation for voyages to Italy. The new pope stopped in Navarre, in northern Spain, for an official reception by the Duke of Najera's successor. Iñigo, too, stopped at Navarre to do some undescribed business at the Duke's residence at Navarette. Perhaps Adrian gave him a discreet audience.

Further on, the pilgrim kept an all-night vigil at a chapel of the Virgin of Aranzazu, Protectress of the Basques, vowing his chastity to her small, dark statue. He continued on to Montserrat, where he lodged in a Benedictine abbey. There, he rededicated himself to God's service before another statue of the Virgin, the Black Madonna of Montserrat, Protectress of Catalonia, Patroness of Christian Conquest. The spiritual exercise here must have been intense, for in the late afternoon of the third day, Iñigo traded clothes with a beggar, hung his sword and dagger on the Madonna's shrine, and gave his mule to the abbey.

While Adrian VI proceeded on to Barcelona, Iñigo detoured on foot to the village of Manresa for ten months of penances, spiritual preparation, and note-taking. Stripped of everything but sackcloth, a gourd for drinking, and a pilgrim's staff, he adopted the lifestyle of the early Knights Templar, begging food and alms. He was initiated into the *Illuminati,* the "Enlightened Ones," a secret society of gnostic fundamentalists who preached that all matter is absolutely and eternally evil.

The gnostics taught that humanity itself is of Satanic origin. Adam and Eve were the offspring of devils. Humanity can achieve salvation from death and eternal punishment, however, by freeing soul from body for absorption into the pure light of Godliness. This is done by withdrawing from sensual pleasure and intuitively discovering hidden truths as conveyed by the cabalah. (The gnostics' contempt for anything having to do with the physical side of existence translated into wildly ironic behavior. Some practiced radical celibacy because they believed the result of sexual intercourse, conception, would only imprison more souls in physical bodies. Others practiced unbridled sexual libertinism in order to prove they were completely free from all physical inhibition. Still others combined the two, pursuing hypocritical lives of celibate fornication, of which "safe sex" is the modern institution. Loyola's particular cult apparently chose the asceticism of self-flagellation, for Iñigo wandered many nights about the Manresa countryside whipping himself with a scourge studded with iron barbs. Later in life, he would decide that the whips and barbs "sapped one's strength," that the Godhead could as adequately be sought by the more humane self-mortification of the Spiritual Exercises.)

While Iñigo was outlining the Exercises in Manresa, Luther's translation of the New Testament was introducing readers and listeners in Germany, Switzerland, France, Bohemia, and England to a different form of spiritual exercise, one in which God's will, ancient and immutable, was expressed not within the private imagination but publicly, in the printed Word, for all to see. People devoured the New Testament even before it reached the bindery. In one contemporary's words, "The sheet, yet wet, was brought from the press under someone's cloak, and passed from shop to shop."[6]

THE pilgrim sailed from Barcelona to the Italian port city of Gaeta, and walked the remaining distance to Rome, arriving there on Palm Sunday, March 29, 1523. Two days later, according to Vatican archives, "Iñigo de Loyola, cleric of the diocese of Pamplona" received permission from Pope Adrian VI to visit Jerusalem.

From Rome, Iñigo proceeded to Venice, where one of Charles Habsburg's agents received him graciously and introduced him to the Doge, Andrea Gritti, the highest official in Venetian civil government. A famed diplomat and linguist, Gritti arranged free passage for Iñigo aboard a small ship whose name – the *"Negrona"* – was appropriate for an evangelist dedicated to the Black Virgin of Christian Conquest.

On July 14, 1523, the *Negrona* left Venice, arriving a month later at the island of Cyprus. At Cyprus, one Diego Manes and his servant, along with several Cypriot officials, boarded ship for the rest of the voyage to Haifa. Diego Manes was a Commander of the Knights Hospitallers of St. John of Jerusalem.[7] Since 1312, the Hospitallers had held title to the vast wealth of the Knights Templar. They had been drawing upon these assets to defend the Roman economy against Islamic marauders in the east. But when the Turks attacked the Hospitallers' headquarters on the Island of Rhodes, the assets were frozen by the pope and his former pupil, the Holy Roman Emperor Charles. No assistance in any form was forthcoming from either party. Consequently, in December 1522, the Hospitallers had no choice but to surrender Rhodes and retreat to what would become their final domicile, Malta. The message was clear. Now that Luther's German-language New Testament was in print, Protestantism loomed a greater menace to Rome than Islam ever did.

It is possible that in a Jerusalem-bound ship named *Negrona,* Commander Diego Manes turned over the litanies, lists, secret codes, formulae, cabalah, and other portable assets comprising the Knights Templar resources to Iñigo. If this indeed happened, the western world's secret infrastructure was now Loyola's to populate and manipulate in the cause of *learning against learning.* That is my hypothesis. What is not hypothesis is that as soon as the pilgrim returned from Jerusalem he began vesting himself with Medici learning.

The idea of uniting the Templars with the Hospitallers was first argued publicly in a book published in 1305 by Raimon Llull, a renowned *illuminatus* from Majorca. Llull's book, *Libre de Fine,* ("Free At Last") appeared in the midst of a raging controversy between the French monarchy and the Roman papacy over who held jurisdiction over the Templars. That is the subject of our next chapter.

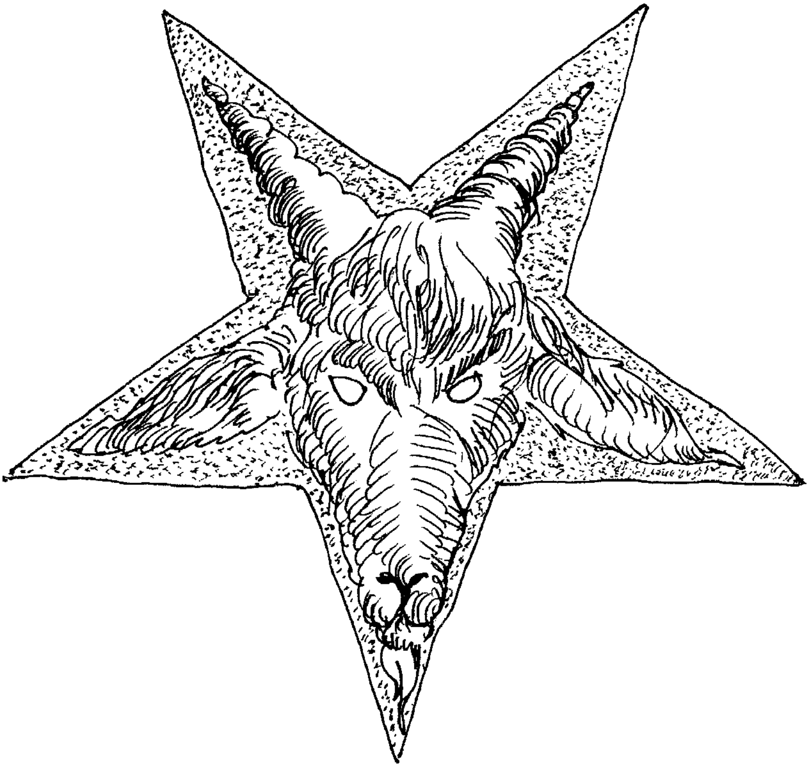

THE BAPHOMET

Chapter 6

THE EPITOME OF CHRISTIAN VALUES

SINCE THEIR FOUNDING on French soil in 1118, the Knights Templar had grown from a pair of self-impoverished knights hoping to keep Muslim terrorists from molesting pilgrims in the Holy Land to a mammoth organization controlling international finance and politics. The founders, Hugh de Payen and Godfroi de St. Omer, organized a group of excommunicated knight-crusaders and secured their absolution by a bishop. After placing the restored knights under oaths of poverty, chastity, secrecy, and obedience, they pledged the organization to rebuilding Solomon's Temple. Given space adjacent to an Islamic mosque situated upon the Temple's supposed ruins, they took the corporate name "Poor Knights of Christ and of the Temple of Solomon."

Bernard, Abbot of Clairvaux, the leading propagandist of the day, extolled the Templars as "the epitome and apotheosis of Christian values." Bolstered by such unprecedented promotion, the Poor Knights attracted the best and the brightest young men of Europe to become Crusaders, to vow celibacy and leave their families in defense of Christ's tomb against Muslim terrorists.

The mission failed within nine years. Even so, Bernard's propaganda caused the Templars to be received as conquering heroes when they returned to France. They set up their permanent lodge at Troyes under the patronage of the court of Champagne. (For nearly a century, Troyes had been Europe's leading school for the study of the cabalah, which may explain why the city is laid out in the shape of a champagne cork.)

For making the Templars a world power, Bernard shares credit with Cardinal Aimeric of Santa Maria Nuova. Aimeric was the Church's highest judicial officer. It was his unlawful connivance[1] that created Honorius II, the pope who ordained the Templars as the Church's most highly-esteemed religious order. It was Aimeric, too, who devised a radical "inner renewal of the Church," which inspired noblemen throughout England, Scotland, Flanders, Spain, and Portugal to shower the Templars with donations of land and money – over and above the properties required of all initiates upon joining the Order.

When Honorius died in 1130, Aimeric led a minority of cardinals in another connivance resulting in the election of Innocent II, who was consecrated pope in Aimeric's titular church of Santa Maria Nuova. In 1139, Innocent issued a bull placing the Templars under an exclusive vow of papal obedience – a measure by which Aimeric effectively put all Templar resources at the disposal of the papacy. Within another decade, the Knights were given exclusive rights by Pope Eugenius III to wear the *rose croix,* the rosy cross, on their white tunics. As their list of properties lengthened with donations from Italy, Austria, Germany, Hungary, and the Holy Land, the Templars built hundreds of great stone castles. Wealthy travelers lodged in these castles because of their unmatched security. Convinced they were building a new world, the Templars called each other *frère maçon* ("brother mason"). Later, this term would be anglicized into "Freemason."

The Templars invented modern banking by applying an oriental invention to their commerce. Agents of the Chinese emperor Kao-tsung, inventor of paper currency called *fei-chi'en,* "flying money," sought trade with the middle east during the period of Templar occupation.[2] Kao-tsung's was the first government on earth to enforce circulation of drafts as legal tender for debts. Evidently, Kao-tsung's agents introduced the Knights to this new medium of exchange created out of merchant drafts. The Templars enhanced their already booming business of (1) accepting current accounts, deposit accounts, deposits of jewels, valuables and title deeds, (2) making loans and advances (charging "fees" because the Church forbade interest), and (3) acting as agents for the secure transmission of such things by (4) adding circulating letters of credit – flying money – to serve as paper currency. To supply the Templars' currency needs may explain why paper in France was first manufactured in the Poor Knights' hometown of Troyes.

By 1300, presiding over the world economy from their Paris office,[3] the Templars had become an international power unto themselves. Engaged in diplomacy at the highest levels of state from the Holy Land westward, they set the tastes, the goals, the morality, the rules of the civilized world. Kings did their bidding – when Henry III of England threatened to confiscate certain of the Order's properties, he was upbraided by the Master Templar in the city of London:

> "What sayest thou, O King? So long as thou dost exercise justice, thou wilt reign. But if thou infringe it, thou wilt cease to be King."[4]

But suddenly, at their very zenith, the Poor Knights suffered a strange reversal of fortunes. In 1302, King Philip IV of France dared to challenge their sovereignty on his own soil. He asserted that in France everyone, Knights Templars included, was subject to the King. Pope Boniface VIII jumped in and declared that France, the King, the Templars, all of them, and everybody else as well, belonged to *Pontifex Maximus* – "It is absolutely necessary for the salvation of every human creature to be subject to the Roman

Pontiff." Philip then accused the pope of illegitimacy, sexual misconduct, and heresy. Boniface prepared a bull excommunicating Philip, but before it could be published, a band of the Philip's mercenaries stormed the Vatican and demanded the pope's resignation. Although the intruders were driven off, the shock to body and soul was too much for Boniface, and he died a month later.

Two successor popes held firm against Philip, until Bertrand de Got, Archbishop of Bordeaux, was elected in 1305. Crowned in Lyons with the papal name Clement V, de Got moved the papacy to Avignon, and began a long train of concessions to Philip's royal prerogative. Finally, on Friday, October 13, 1307, Philip arrested all but thirteen of the Templars in France, tried them and, upon evidence of their practice of the cabalah, found them guilty of blasphemy and magic. At least fifty knights were burned at the stake.

From captured documents it was learned that the Templars, from the very beginning, had renounced what Roman theologians called "the religion of St. Peter." They had been initiated into a secret gnostic branch of the Eastern Church known as "the Primitive Christian Church." Because the Primitive Christians' apostolic succession claimed to flow from John the Baptist and the apostle John they were called "Johannites."[5]

The Johannites believed that although Jesus was "imbued with a spirit wholly divine and endowed with the most astounding qualities," he was not the true God. Consistent with gnostic logic, the true Johannite God would never lower Himself to become vile human matter. Jesus was in fact a false Messiah sent by the powers of darkness. He was justly crucified – although when his side was pierced he did repent of his pretensions and receive divine forgiveness. Thanks to his repentance, Jesus now enjoys everlasting life in the celestial company of the saints.

Regarding miracles, the Johannites believed that Jesus "did or may have done extraordinary or miraculous things," and that "since God can do things incomprehensible to human intelligence, all the acts of Christ as they are described in the Gospel, whether acts of human science or whether acts of divine power" can be accepted as true – except for the Resurrection, which is omitted from the Templars' copy of the Gospel of St. John.[6] Therefore, for all his wonderful attributes, Christ "was nothing, a false prophet and of no value." Only the Higher God of Heaven had power to save mankind.[7]

But the Higher God avoided human matter, and so lordship over the material world belonged to Satanael, the evil brother of Jesus. Satanael alone could enrich mankind. Templar cabalah represented Satanael as the head of a goat emblazoned with, sometimes contained within, a pentagram.[8] This symbol is deeply rooted in Old Testament cabalah, in which the goat is identified with power in the world and separation from God. On the greatest Israelite feastday, *Yom Kippur,* the Day of Atonement, one goat was spared the sacrificial knife, and was sprinkled with the blood of another goat killed for the sins of Israel. The spared goat, the scapegoat, was then banished from the congregation to bear Israel's sins into the wilderness, which typified the world.[9] The scapegoat escaped with his life, his freedom.

King Solomon conferred with evil spirits,[10] but Scripture describes the spirits only generally. However, the Zohar, or "Book of Splendor," one of the main works of ancient cabalistic literature, tells us evil spirits appeared to the Israelites "*under the form of he-goats* and made known to them all that they wished to learn."[11]
The Templars called this goat-idol "Baphomet," from *baphe-* and *–metis,* Greek wor
Baphomet encapsulates the career of Solomon, who Scripture says was absorbed into the wisdom of God more than any other human being,[12] yet finished out his life in communion with he-goatish evil spirits.[13] By the Templars' Johannite standard, communing with the evil spirits was the secret to controlling the world. By the biblical standard, however, Solomon represents the impossibility of human perfectibility. Perfectibility is indeed attainable, according to Scripture, but only through the redemptive process shown in the New Testament which Rome kept the Templars from reading.

ON March 22, 1312, Clement V dissolved the Knights Templar with his decree *Vox clamantis* ("War Cry"). But the dissolution proved a mere formality to further appease Philip. More importantly, it permitted the Templars, in other manifestations, to continue enriching the papacy. For Grand Master Jacques de Molay, just prior to his execution in 1313, sent the surviving thirteen French Templars to establish four new Metropolitan lodges: one at Stockholm for the north, one at Naples for the east, one at Paris for the south, and one at Edinburgh for the west. Thus, the Knights *remained* the militant arm of the papacy. Except that their wealth, their secrecy, their gnostic cabalism, and their oath of papal obedience were obscurely dispersed under a variety of corporate names.

A subtle provision in *Vox clamantis* transferred most Templar estates to the Knights of St. John of Jerusalem, who took possession after King Philip's death. In Germany and Austria, the Templars became "Rosicrucians" and "Teutonic Knights." The Teutonic Knights grew strong in Mainz, birthplace of Gutenberg's press. Six centuries later, as the "Teutonic Order," the Knights would provide the nucleus of Adolf Hitler's political support in Munich and Vienna.

The Edinburgh lodge would become the headquarters of Scottish Rite Freemasonry, which Masonic historians call "American Freemasonry" because all but five of the signers of the Declaration of Independence are said to have practiced its craft. In Spain and Portugal the Templars became the *"Illuminati"* in whom Iñigo had taken membership at Manresa, and "Knights of Christ." It was under the red pattée cross of the Knights of Christ that Columbus had taken possession of what he called *"las Indias"* for King Ferdinand V of Spain, grandfather of Iñigo's discreet patron, Charles I and V, the Holy Roman Emperor.

As early as August of 1523, as I hypothesized in the previous chapter, this vast yet fragmented subterranean empire – Roman Catholicism's unseen root-system binding together the world – belonged to Iñigo de Loyola. His spiritual dynasty, which continues to this day, would use this system to cause God-fearing men who hated the papacy to perform, without realizing it, exactly how the papacy wanted them to.

But what of Iñigo’s education? His rise in academe is the subject of the next chapter.

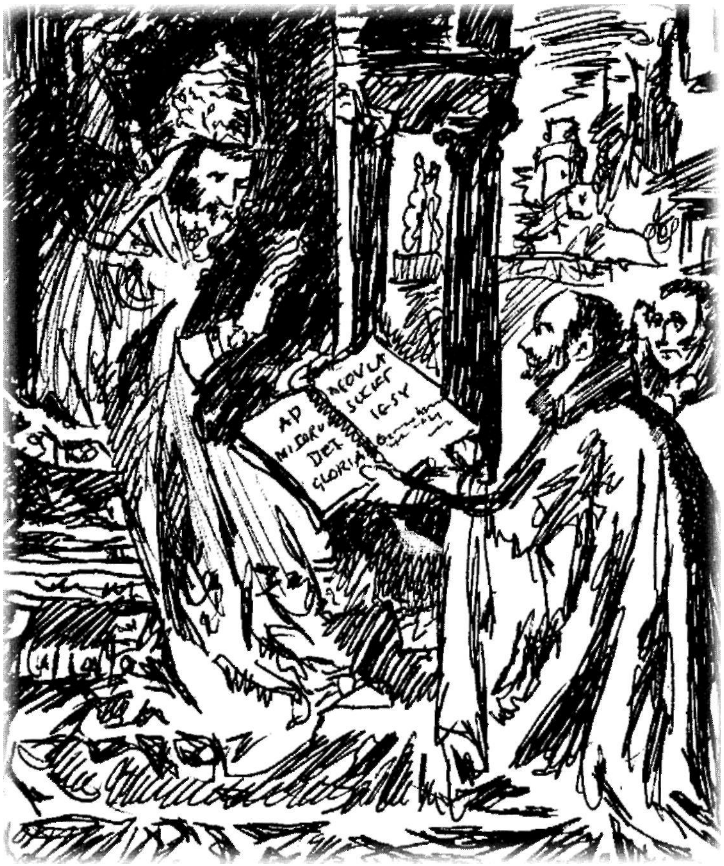
AD
MAIORU
DEI
GLORIA
REGULA
SOCIET
IESU

"Hoc est digitus dei!"
Pope Paul III declares Loyola's plan for the Company of Jesus an Act of God. (From a Jesuit altar)

Chapter 7

THE FINGERSTROKE OF GOD

Determined on a priestly life, Iñigo de Loyola returned to Barcelona from Jerusalem in the spring of 1524. He spent the next three years in Spain getting the requisite Latin. Since direct contact with the Bible was prohibited by law, his reading coursed the humanities.

With the esoteric experience of his Spiritual Exercises, he charmed the wives of important men. He received frequent invitations to dine at elegant tables, but preferred to beg food door to door and distribute the choice pickings to the poor and sick. He lived in an attic and slept on the floorboards, trying desperately to persuade God of his worthiness. He prayed for six hours each day, attended mass three times a week, confessed every Sunday, and continued whipping himself. He devised secret penances, such as boring holes in his shoes and going barefoot in winter.

Sometimes the Exercises aroused in his followers instances of bizarre conduct – swooning, long spells of fainting or melancholia, rolling about the ground, being gripped with corpse-like rigidity. The Spanish Inquisition investigated him on suspicion of preaching gnostic illuminism. When Iñigo insisted that he was not preaching at all, but was merely talking about the things of God in a familiar way, the Inquisitor released him. In successive frays, the Inquisition ordered Iñigo (1) to get rid of his eccentric clothing and dress like other students, (2) to refrain from holding meetings until he had completed four years of study, and (3) to refrain from defining what constituted a grave sin. Wearying of the harassment, he decided to seek his four years of education beyond the Inquisition's reach.

He set out for the University of Paris with a pack mule carrying his belongings. He arrived at the University on February 2, 1528, and soon afterward registered in the run-down old College of Montaigu. John Calvin, who would become Protestantism's great theological systems designer, was leaving Montaigu just as Loyola arrived. Erasmus, the College's most famous alumnus, remembered graduating from Montaigu "with nothing except an infected body and a vast array of lice." The student body consisted mostly of wayward Parisian boys kept under harsh discipline; Iñigo was thirty-seven.

Paris was expensive, even for students. Much of the funds Iñigo had raised in Barcelona had been stolen by one of his disciples. In early 1529 he went into Belgium, where it is believed he received money from people close to the Holy Roman Emperor. One of these was Juan de Cuellar, Treasurer of the Kingdom of Spain. Another was Luis Vives, personal secretary to the Emperor's aunt, Queen Catherine of England, and private tutor to her daughter, Princess Mary (afterward the "Bloody" Queen). Iñigo returned to Paris much better off. He upgraded his lodgings.

In October, he left Montaigu and enrolled at the College of Ste. Barbe across the street. He pursued a course in arts and philosophy that would last three and a half years. His name appears on the Ste. Barbe registry as "Ignatius de Loyola." Some Jesuit historians have guessed he adopted the name in veneration of Ignatius of Antioch, an early Christian martyr. It was at Ste. Barbe that Iñigo began earnestly organizing his army, but not before traveling again to Belgium to ask Juan de Cuellar and Luis Vives for yet more money.

Armed with his command of the Templar secrets and with introductions provided by the Emperor and Vives, Ignatius crossed to England. This significant voyage is mentioned only once in his autobiography. He admits that he "returned with more alms than he usually did in other years." Perhaps Queen Catherine, the Emperor's aunt, introduced him to the Howards and the Petres, known to be among the first families to receive and nourish Jesuits sent to England.

Starting with his two Ste. Barbe roommates, Ignatius soon gathered a circle of six close friends ranging in age from teens to early twenties. Somewhat like himself, they were adventurous, impressionable, intelligent, and unpersuaded of the Bible's supreme authority. Their fondest dream was to save the Holy Land from the Muslims by performing heroic Templaresque exploits. One by one Ignatius gave them the Spiritual Exercises, and one by one they became disciples. Within a few years they were calling themselves *La Compañìa de Iesus,* the Company of Jesus.

On August 15, 1534, Feast Day of the Assumption of the Virgin into heaven, the companions swore oaths of service to the Blessed Virgin in Ste. Marie's Church at Montmartre, and to St. Denis, patron saint of France, in his chapel. (The experience of the Montmartre Oaths must have been intense, for Francis Xavier, who would become St. Francis, Apostle to the East, made the Spiritual Exercises with "a penitential fervor," says Broderick in *Origin of the Jesuits,* "that nearly cost him the use of his limbs.") They vowed poverty, chastity, and to rescue Jerusalem from the Muslims. However, should the rescue prove infeasible within a year, they vowed to undertake without question whatever other task the pope might require of them.

Well before a year had passed, Clement VII died and the Jerusalem dream was overwhelmed by more present dangers. Luther's Bible in German was creating defection in record numbers throughout Germany, Norway, Sweden, and Denmark. In

France, the response to LeFevre's Bible was so decisive that King Francis I exclaimed that he would behead his own children if he found them harboring the blasphemous heresies acquirable through direct contact with scripture. England was lost in its entirety, due not to Bible reading, which Henry VIII prosecuted as avidly as any pope, but to the royal love life. Henry had demanded that Clement VII grant him a divorce from the Emperor's aunt Catherine, and then recognize the Protestant-oriented Anne Boleyn as his new Queen. When Clement stood mute, Henry took all of England away from Rome and made himself "complete owner of the lands and tenements [of England], as well at law as in equity."[1]

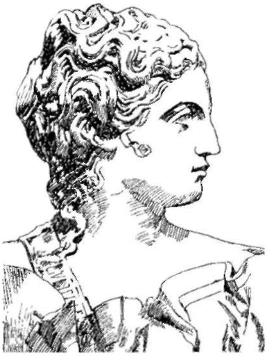
Giulia Farnese, with metal blouse

Clement VII was succeeded by the oldest cardinal, an erudite humanist with formidable diplomatic skills, 66-year-old Alessandro Farnese. Cardinal Farnese had been privately educated in the household of Lorenzo d'Medici and had been appointed Treasurer of the Vatican in 1492. He was crowned Pope Paul III. Vatican wags called Farnese "Cardinal Petticoat" because his strikingly beautiful sister Giulia had been mistress to the licentious Pope Alexander VI, for which the same wags nicknamed her "Bride of Christ." Giulia posed undraped for the statue of the Goddess Justice that still reclines voluptuously on Paul Ill's tomb in St. Peter's Basilica. Two centuries later, at the command, in the interests of decency, of Pius IX, the first pope to be officially declared infallible, Giulia's exposed breasts were fitted with a metal blouse.[2]

Paul III is a major figure in the history of the Society of Jesus, and consequently of the United States of America, since it was he who approved, in the summer of 1539, Ignatius de Loyola's business plan. Ignatius proposed a "minimal society" that would "do battle in the Lord God's service under the banner of the Cross." The militia would be very small, no more than sixty members, and each would have to take four vows – of poverty, chastity, obedience to the Church, and a vow of special obedience to the pope. They would not be confined to any specific parish but would be dispersed throughout the world according to the papacy's needs. They would wear no particular habit, but would dress according to the environment in which they found themselves. They would infiltrate the world in an unpredictable variety of pursuits – as doctors, lawyers, authors, reforming theologians, financiers, statesmen, courtiers, diplomats, explorers, tradesmen, merchants, poets, scholars, scientists, architects, engineers, artists, printers, philosophers, and whatever else the world might demand and the Church require.

Their head would be a Superior General. In the Constitutions which Ignatius was writing, the Superior General would be "obeyed and reverenced at all times as the one who holds the place of Christ our Lord."[3] The phrase "holds the place of Christ" means that the Superior General would share with the Pope, at a level unperceived by the general public, the divine title of "Vicar of Christ" first claimed by Gelasius I on May 13, 495. Loyola's completed *Constitutions* would repeat five hundred times that one is to see Christ in the person of the Superior General.[4] The General's equal status with the Pope, advantaged by an obscurity that renders him virtually invisible, is why the commander-in-chief of the Society of Jesus has always been called *Papa Nero,* the Black Pope.

The Superior General's small army would be trained by the Spiritual Exercises to practice a brand of obedience Loyola termed *contemplativus in actione,* active contemplation, instantaneous obedience with all critical thought suppressed. As stated in Section 353.1 of the Exercises, "We must put aside all judgment of our own, and keep the mind ever ready and prompt to obey in all things the hierarchical Church." But Jesuit obedience would be more than mere obedience of the will. An obedient will suppresses what it would do in order to obey what a superior wants done. Ignatius demanded obedience of the *understanding.* An obedient understanding alters its perception of reality according to the superior's dictates. Section 365.13 declares, "We must hold fast to the following principle: *What seems to me white, 1 will believe black if the hierarchical Church so defines.*" Francis Xavier would later describe this quality of submission in a vow that unintentionally summarized the Jesuit mission: "I would not even believe in the *Gospels* were the Holy Church to forbid it."

The Society does not open its extreme oath of obedience to public inspection. However, a script alleged to be a true facsimile was translated by Edwin A. Sherman and deposited in the Library of Congress with the number BX3705.S56. According to this document,

> when a Jesuit of the minor rank is to be elevated to command, he is conducted into the Chapel of the Convent of the Order, where there are only three others present, the principal or Superior standing in front of the altar. On either side stands a monk, one of whom holds a banner of yellow and white, which are the Papal colors, and the other a black banner with a dagger and red cross above a skull and crossbones, with the initials 'I.N.R.I.,' and below them the words *'ICSTUM NACAR REGES IMIOS,'* the meaning of which is 'It is just to annihilate impious rulers.' [Biblically, these initials represent the Roman inscription above Christ's head on the cross: 'Jesus of Nazareth King of the Jews.']
>
> On the floor is a red cross upon which the postulant or candidate kneels. The Superior hands him a small black crucifix, which he takes in his left hand and presses to his heart and the Superior at the same time presents to him a dagger, which he grasps by the blade and holds the point against his heart, the Superior still holding it by the hilt....
>
> The Superior gives a preamble, and then administers the oath:
>
> I,_______________, now, in the presence of Almighty God, the Blessed Virgin Mary, the blessed Michael the Archangel, the blessed St. Paul and all the Saints and sacred Hosts of Heaven, and to you, my Ghostly Father, the Superior General of the Society of Jesus, founded by Ignatius Loyola, in the Pontificate of Paul the Third, and continued to the present, do by the Womb of the Virgin, the Matrix of God, and the Rod of Jesus Christ, declare and swear, that His Holiness the Pope is Christ's

Vice-Regent and is the true and only Head of the Catholic and Universal Church throughout the earth; and that by virtue of the keys of binding and loosing, given to His Holiness by my Saviour, Jesus Christ, he hath power to depose heretical kings, princes, states, commonwealths and governments, all being illegal without his sacred confirmation, and that they may safely be destroyed.

Therefore, to the utmost of my power, I shall and will defend this doctrine and His Holiness' right and custom against all usurpers of the heretical or Protestant authority whatever, especially the Lutheran Church of Germany, Holland, Denmark, Sweden and Norway, and the now pretended authority and churches of England and Scotland, and branches of the same now established in Ireland and on the Continent of America and elsewhere; and all adherents in regard that they be usurped and heretical, opposing the sacred Mother Church of Rome.

I do now renounce and disown any allegiance as due to any heretical king, prince, or state named Protestants or Liberals, or obedience to any of their laws, magistrates or officers.

I do further declare that the doctrines of the churches of England and Scotland, of the Calvinists, Huguenots and others of the name Protestants or Liberals to be damnable, and they themselves damned and to be damned who will not forsake the same.

I do further declare that I will help, assist and advise all or any of His Holiness' agents in any place wherever I shall be, in Switzerland, German, Holland, Denmark, Sweden, Norway, England, Ireland, or America, or in any other kingdom or territory I shall come to, and do my uttermost to extirpate the heretical Protestants or Liberals' doctrines and to destroy all their pretended powers, regal or otherwise.

I do further promise and declare that, notwithstanding I am dispensed with, to assume any religion heretical, for the propagating of the Mother Church's interest, to keep secret and private all her agents' counsels from time to time, as they may entrust me, and not to divulge, directly or indirectly, by word, writing, or circumstance whatever; but to execute all that shall be proposed, given in charge or discovered unto me, by you, my Ghostly Father, or any of this sacred convent.

I do further promise and declare that I will have no opinion or will of my own, or any mental reservation whatever, even as a corpse or cadaver, but will unhesitatingly obey each and every command that I may receive from my superiors in the Militia of the Pope and of Jesus Christ.

That I will go to any part of the world whithersoever I may be sent, to the frozen regions of the North, the burning sands of the desert of Africa, or the jungles of India, to the centres of civilization of Europe, or to the wild haunts of the barbarous savages of America, without murmuring or repining, and will be submissive in all things whatsoever communicated to me.

I furthermore promise and declare that I will, when opportunity presents, make and wage relentless war, secretly or openly, against all heretics, Protestants and Liberals, as I am directed to do, to extirpate and exterminate them from the face of the whole earth; and that I will spare neither age, sex, or condition; and that I will hang, burn, waste, boil, flay, strangle and bury alive these infamous heretics, rip up the stomachs and wombs of their women and crush their infants' heads against the walls, in order to annihilate forever their execrable race. That when the same cannot be done openly, I will secretly use the poisoned cup, the strangulating cord, the steel of the poinard or the leaden bullet, regardless of the honor, rank, dignity, or authority of the person or persons, whatever may be their condition in life, either public or private, as I at any time may be directed so to do by any agent of the Pope or Superior of the Brotherhood of the Holy Faith, of the Society of Jesus.

In confirmation of which, I hereby dedicate my life, my soul, and all my corporeal powers, and with this dagger which I now receive, I will subscribe my name written in my own blood, in testimony thereof; and should I prove false or weaken in my determination, may my brethren and fellow soldiers of the Militia of the Pope cut off my hands and my feet, and my throat from ear to ear, my belly opened and sulphur burned therein, with all the punishment that can be inflicted upon me on earth and my soul be tortured by demons in an eternal hell forever!

All of which I,________________________, do swear by the blessed Trinity and blessed Sacrament, which I am now to receive, to perform and on my part to keep inviolably; and do

> call all the heavenly and glorious host of heaven to witness these my real intentions to keep this my oath.
>
> In testimony hereof I take this most holy and blessed Sacrament of the Eucharist, and witness the same further, with my name written with the point of this dagger dipped in my own blood and sealed in the face of this holy Convent.
>
> He *receives the wafer from the Superior and writes his name with the point of his dagger dipped in his own blood taken from over the heart....*

WHEN Ignatius concluded his presentation, the Pope reportedly cried out "*Hoc est digitus Dei!*" – "This is the fingerstroke of God!" On September 27, 1540, Paul III sealed his approval with the highest and most solemn form of papal pronouncement, a document known as a "bull" (from the Latin *bulla,* meaning "bubble," denoting the attached ovoid or circular seal bearing the pope's name). Paul's bull ordaining the Jesuits is entitled *Regimini militantis ecclesiae,* "On the Supremacy of the Church Militant." The title forms a cabalistic device common to pagan Roman divining. Known as *notariqon,* this device is an acronym that enhances the meaning of its initialized words, in the way "MADD" tells us that Mothers Against Drunk Drivers are more than "against" drunken drivers, they're very angry. *"Regimini militantis ecclesiae"* produces the notariqon "R[O]ME," the empire whose salvation the Society of Jesus was ordained by this bull to secure through the arts of war.

The following April, the original six and a few other members elected Ignatius de Loyola their first Superior General. What had been approved as a minimal society soon multiplied to a thousand strong. Ignatius did this by administering to only sixty the extreme oath of obedience to the pope, while admitting hundreds more under lesser oaths. Ever since, the exact size of the Society has been known only to the Superior General. As the world gained increasing numbers of doctors, lawyers, authors, reforming theologians, financiers, statesmen, courtiers, diplomats, explorers, tradesmen, merchants, poets, scholars, scientists, architects, engineers, artists, printers, and philosophers, it was extremely difficult for an ordinary citizen to tell which were Jesuits and which were not. Not even Jesuits could say for sure, because of a provision in the Constitutions (Sections 81-86 of Part I) which authorizes the Superior General to "receive agents, both priestly agents to help in spiritual matters and lay agents to give aid in temporal and domestic functions." Called "coadjutors," these lay agents could be of any religious denomination, race, nationality, or sex. They took an oath which bound them "for whatever time the Superior General of the Society should see fit to employ them in spiritual or temporal services." This provision was availed by so many black popes that the French had a name for people suspected of being Jesuit agents: *les robes-petites* ("short-robes"). The English called them "short-coats" or "Ignatians."

Within two years of *Regimini militantis ecclesiae,* Paul III appointed the Society to administer the Roman Inquisition (not to be confused with the Spanish Inquisition, which reported only to the Spanish crown). When the Jesuits were comfortable with the Inquisition, Paul made his move to "reconcile" with the Protestants.

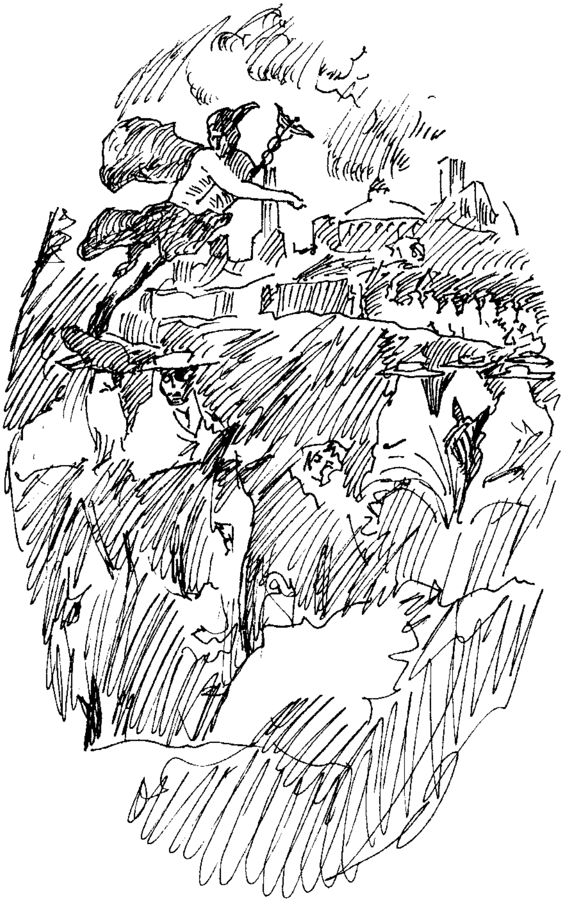

THE SPIRIT OF TRENT

Sketch from the Sebastiano painting of the Psychopomp directing Paul III (left center) and his cardinals to the Council of Trent.

Chapter 8

MOVING IN

THE TERM "PROTESTANT" was coined in 1529 to describe the large number of princes and delegates of fourteen cities, largely German, who protested Emperor Charles Habsburg's attempt to enforce the Edict of Worms. This edict bound the Empire's three hundred princely states and free cities to Roman Catholicism. The Protestants proposed a compromise formula – basically a statement of the Lutheran faith – known as the Augsburg Confession.

For fifteen years the Edict of Worms and the Augsburg Confession kept Catholic and Protestant rulers in a Mexican standoff. Then, on December 13, 1545, Paul III called both factions to the small German-speaking northern Italian cathedral city of Trent. The promise was to resolve differences peacefully in an ecumenical council.

The Council of Trent had not been seated four months before it decreed that the books and biblical translations of Luther, LeFevre, Zwingli, Calvin, and other "unapproved persons" were "altogether forbidden [and] allowed to no one, since little advantage, but much danger, generally arises from reading them."[1]

Then the Jesuits moved in. Diego Lainez, Alfonso Salmeron, two of the original companions, and Claude LeJay, all three in their early thirties, distinguished themselves at Trent early on by spurning the grand style of the other delegates. They set up housekeeping in a "narrow, smoke-blackened baker's oven" and wore clothing so heavily patched and greasy that other priests were embarrassed to associate with them.[2] They carried with them intricate advisories from Ignatius himself, written from the delegates' point of view, as for example:

> When the matter that is being debated seems so manifestly just and right that I can no longer keep silent, then I should speak my mind with the greatest composure and conclude what I have said with the words 'subject of course to the judgment of a wiser head than mine.' If the leaders of the opposing party should try to befriend me, I must cultivate these men, who have influence over the heretics and lukewarm Catholics, and try to win them away from their errors with holy wisdom and love....

Most of the eighteen-year lifetime of the Council of Trent consisted of two intermissions spanning four and ten years each. At the beginning of the second intermission, Ignatius founded a special college in Rome for German-speaking Jesuits called the Germanicum. Three years later, the Peace of Augsburg established the principle *cuius regio, eius religio,* "whose the region, his the religion." The Peace of Augsburg was Jesuit paydirt. They could now bring whole populations to Rome simply by winning over a few princes. And so they did. By 1560, the Society had returned virtually all of South Germany and Austria to the Church.

The fruits of the Germanicum were so successful that when the Council of Trent finally adjourned on December 4, 1563, its decrees and canons conceded nothing to the Protestant reformers. Indeed, under the spiritual direction of Superior General Diego Lainez – Ignatius had died in 1556 – the Council denied every

Protestant doctrine point by point. Anathematized (eternally damned) was anyone who believed that salvation is God's free gift to His faithful and does not depend upon partaking of Church sacraments. Anathematized was anyone who looked to the Bible for the ultimate authority on "doctrine, reproof, correction, and instruction in righteousness"[3] rather than to the teaching Church. Anathematized was anyone who regarded as unworthy of belief such unscriptural doctrines as (1) the efficacy of papal indulgences, (2) of confession alone to a priest as necessary to salvation, (3) of the mass as a true and real sacrifice of the body of Christ necessary to salvation, (4) the legitimacy of teachings on purgatory, (5) the celibate priesthood, (6) invoking saints by prayer to intercede with God, (7) the veneration of relics, and (8) the use of images and symbols.

The Council of Trent hurled one hundred twenty-five anathemas – eternal damnations – against Protestantism. Then, as an addendum to its closing statements, the Council recommended that the Jesuits "should be given pride of place over members of other orders as preachers and professors." It was at Trent that the Roman Catholic Church began marching to the beat of the Black Papacy.

A generation later, the guidelines of the Roman Inquisition under Jesuit direction were published at the command of the Cardinals Inquisitors General. This *Directorium Inquisitorum* (1584) was dedicated to Gregory XIII, the pope who bestowed upon Jesuits the right to deal in commerce and banking, and who also decreed that every papal legate should have a Jesuit advisor on his personal staff.[4] Here follows a summary of the *Directorium Inquisitorum* (translated by J. P. Callender, 1838):

> He is a heretic who does not believe what the Roman Hierarchy teaches— A heretic merits the pains of fire____By the Gospel, the canons, civil law, and custom, heretics must be burned.... For the suspicion alone of heresy, purgation is demanded.... Magistrates who refuse to take the oath for defense of the faith shall be suspected of heresy____Wars may be commenced by the authority of the Church.... Indulgences for the

> remission of all sin belong to those who signed with the cross for the persecution of heretics____Every individual may kill a heretic. Persons who betray heretics shall be rewarded.... Heretics may be forced to profess the Roman faith.... A heretic, as he sins in all places, may everywhere be judged.... Heretics must be sought after, and be corrected or exterminated.... Heretics enjoy no privileges in law or equity.... The goods of heretics are to be considered as confiscated from the perpetration of the crime... The pope can enact new articles of faith.... Definitions of popes and councils are to be received as infallible.... Inquisitors may torture witnesses to obtain the truth.... It is laudable to torture those of every class who are guilty of heresy____The Pope has power over infidels.... The Church may make war with infidels— Those who are strongly suspected are to be reputed as heretics____He who does not inform against heretics shall be deemed as suspected— Inquisitors may allow heretics to witness against heretics, but not for them.... Inquisitors must not publish the names of informers, witnesses, and accusers.... Penitent heretics may be condemned to perpetual imprisonment____Inquisitors may provide for their own expenditures, and the salaries of their officers, from the property of heretics.... Inquisitors enjoy the benefits of a plenary indulgence [a full papal forgiveness of sin] at all times in life, and in death.

The Inquisition's effect, of course, was to send the more resourceful of the "heretics, Protestants and Liberals" who escaped torture or execution scurrying underground, or into the burgeoning world of commerce, or into regions where Protestant civil authorities kept Inquisitors at bay. Yearning for a less intrusive religious experience, they joined attractive philosophical fraternities where they could speak freely against Roman Catholicism. For this ostensible reason, these fraternities or cults or lodges operated in secrecy. In fact, they were the remnants of the Templar network – Rosicrucians, Teutonic Knights, the numerous and various rites of Freemasonry. Like the Templars and the Jesuits, they were religious hierarchies of strict obedience. They differed from the Jesuits, however, in that their pyramid culminated in an ultimate authority no brother could identify with certainty. The highest master of a Lodge received commandments from an "Unknown Superior," a Superior whose will the master's whole struggle up the degrees had trained him to obey without question. What the masters never realized was that this mysterious personage, as we shall examine in more detail later, was in fact none other than the Black Pope.

A century after Trent, a descendant of Paul III, Ranuccio Farnese, commissioned the great Venetian painter Sebastiano Ricci to commemorate the genesis of this definitive Council. Sebastiano produced his famous "Paul III and the cardinals en route to Trent." The work is breathtakingly candid. In the air, above the pope's head, hovers a deity, directing the entourage onward. The deity is not Jesus or Mary or Yahweh, God of the Bible. It is Mercury of the Sibylline and Virgilian gospels – the holy scripture of Caesarean Rome.

Mercury is the celebrated god of commerce. The metal most essential to commercial fluidity is named for him. Metallic mercury is known to scientists as the element Hg (derived from the Latin *hydrargyrum,* "liquid silver"). It is Hg's unique chemical nature that produces refined gold, the fundamental substance in which commercial value is denominated. Liquid at room temperature, Hg draws impurities out of gold ore and binds them into an amalgam. When the amalgam is heated, the heat drives away both Hg and the impurities. What is left is pure gold suitable for further amalgamation into coin.

Mercury's theological life began in ancient Babylon, where he was known as Marduk. The Bible calls him Merodach, the Hebrews called him Enoch, the Egyptians called him Thoth, the Scandinavians worshiped him as Odin, the Teutons as Wotan, and the Orientals as Buddha. Livy says he was introduced to the Romans in 495 BC as a Latinate version of the Greek god Hermes.[5]

By whatever name, in whatever culture, Mercury is considered the god of the Universal Mind, of Writing, Number, and Thought. Just as Mercury the metal draws out impurities and binds them into a mass that is burned and discarded, Mercury the deity uses his intellectual brilliance to play Pied Piper to impure humanity.

He attracts followers and leads their souls to Hades, for which the Greeks gave him the title *Psychopompas* (from *psycho-* "soul" and *pompous,* "director"). Because Hades is not the most desirable of destinations, the Psychopomp had to construct elegant missionary adaptations. He had to charm souls, *deceive* them into following him any way he could – whether by words, sights, or sounds. Like Hg, his metallic form, Mercury could change his shape instantaneously. Did you see the villain in the movie *Terminator II?* With his ever-changing voices, physiognomies, and identities, he is state-of-the-art Psychopomp. In many cultures, Mercury's ingenious deceptions earned him the title of "The Trickster." He was patron deity of deceivers. And of thieves – even as a baby, Mercury couldn't resist stealing Apollo's cattle....

Was Sebastiano Ricci telling us that Mercury was the dominating spirit of the Council of Trent? Certainly the Council required, and still requires, Roman Catholics to honor many traditions which the Bible either condemns or does not authorize. Yet the Council also required, and still requires, that the Bible be honored as divinely inspired. Honoring the Bible by advocating unbiblical norms? This calls for a skill worthy of the Psychopomp, a skill that makes one believe that black is white. As we've seen, this is the Jesuit skill – securing obedience of the subject's understanding. If indeed the Society of Jesus performs the function of Mercury, it is participating in a natural process known to pagan and biblical scriptures alike, a process by which impure humanity is attracted to oblivion, leaving behind only the pure. The theological implications of this process we shall discuss toward the end of this book.

With the Inquisition and the Council of Trent to pave their way, the Society of Jesus quickly became what Loyola had dreamed it would become: the resurrected Knights Templar. In the next chapter, we shall examine the continuation of their meteoric rise as developers of the modern world.

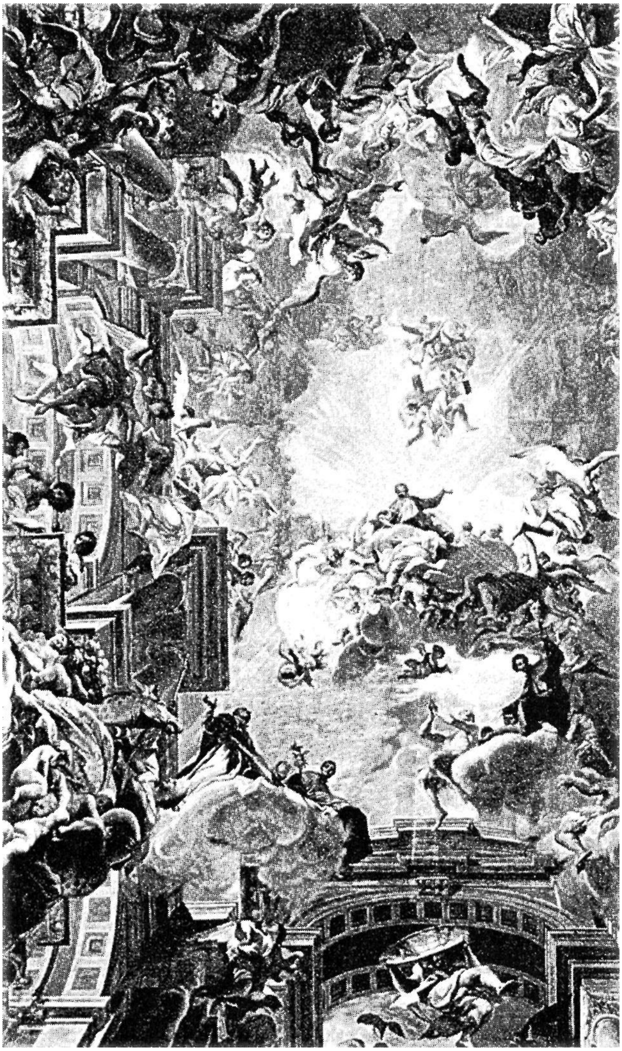

IGNATIUS IN HEAVEN

Padre Pozzo's spectacular ceiling at the Church of St. Ignatius in Rome. Note how the light emanates from Ignatius rather than Jesus Christ, who still bears His cross.

Chapter 9

SECURING CONFIDENCE

STRENGTHENED BY Trent's unqualified endorsement, the Jesuits quickly became the Church's most popular confessors. Ignatius directed that "a Jesuit should not allow anyone to leave the confessional entirely without comfort." If a confessant's opinion on any matter could be found in the least bit defensible, Ignatius said, "he should be permitted to adhere to it, even when the contrary opinion can be said to be more correct."

People relished confessing to Jesuits. "Always go to the Jesuits for confession," it was said in Germany, "for they put cushions under your knees and under your elbows, too."

Merchants, aristocrats, courtiers, and crowned heads insisted that Jesuit confessional direction was the best in all Christendom. They considered the Jesuits to be the greatest converters of hardened sinners, the surest moral guides through life's bewildering complexities. Indeed, for two centuries, all the French kings, from Henry III to Louis XV, would confess to Jesuits. All German emperors after the early seventeenth century would confess to Jesuits, too. Jesuits would take the confessions of all Dukes of Bavaria after 1579, most rulers of Poland and Portugal, the Spanish kings in the eighteenth century, and James II of England.

The sacrament of confession kept Jesuit information channels loaded with vital state secrets. It also furnished the Society an ideal vehicle for influencing political action. One of the most dramatic instances is found in the famous memoir of François de la Chaize, Jesuit confessor to the painfully diseased King of France from 1675 until 1709. "Many a time since," wrote La Chaize,

> when I have had him [Louis XIV] at confession, I have shook hell about his ears, and made him sigh, fear, and tremble, before I would give him absolution.[1] By this I saw that he had still an inclination to me, and was willing to be under my government; so I set the baseness of the action before him by telling the whole story, and how wicked it was, and that it could not be forgiven till he had done some good action to balance that, and expiate the crime. Whereupon he at last asked me what he must do. I told him that he must root out all heretics from his kingdom.

Louis obeyed his confessor by revoking the Edict of Nantes (October 1685), which immediately resulted in:

> the demolition of all the remaining Protestant temples throughout France, and the entire prohibition of even private worship under penalty of confiscation of body and property; the banishment of all Protestant pastors from France within fifteen days; the closing of all Protestant schools; the prohibition of parents to instruct their children in the Protestant faith; the injunction upon them, under a penalty of five hundred livres in each case, to have their children baptized by the parish priest, and brought up in the Roman Catholic religion; the confiscation of the property and goods of all Protestant refugees who failed to return to France within four months; the penalty of the galleys for life to all men, and of imprisonment for life to all women, detected in the act of attempting to escape from France.[2]

It was inevitable that the Council of Trent would establish the Jesuits as the schoolmasters of Europe. With money from royalty and commerce (and not so much as a pfennig from the Church), the Society built an extensive system of schools and colleges. No tuition was charged, but each prospective student was thoroughly examined to see if he had aptitudes the Society could use. With the founding of the first Jesuit school at Coimbra, Portugal, by the Emperor's youngest sister Catherina (Iñigo's romantic interest who had since married the King of Portugal), the principal Jesuit occupation became teaching. By 1556, three-fourths of the Society's membership were dedicated in 46 Jesuit colleges to "learning against learning," to indoctrinating minds with the learning of illuminated humanism as opposed to the learning of Scripture. This network would expand by 1749 to 669 colleges, 176 seminaries, 61 houses of study, and 24 universities partly or wholly under Jesuit direction.

Many Protestant families sent their sons to Jesuit schools, despite Martin Luther's early warning in An *Appeal to the Ruling Class* (1520) that "unless they diligently train and impress Scripture upon young students, schools will prove to be widening gates of hell." The Jesuit curriculum, or *ratio studiorum* ("method of study"), gave Scripture significant inattention. Part IV, Section 351 of Loyola's Constitutions prescribes courses in "the humane letters of different languages, logic, natural and moral philosophy, metaphysics, scholastic and positive theology," with "Sacred Scripture" bringing up the rear. How rigorously any one of these subjects was to be studied depended upon "circumstances of times, places, persons, and other such factors, according to what seems expedient in our Lord to him who holds the principal charge." Section 366 puts Scripture at the mercy of these factors: "The scholastics should acquire a good foundation in Latin before they attend lectures on the arts, and in the arts before they pass on to scholastic theology; and in it before they study positive theology. Scripture may be studied either concomitantly or later on." If Scripture should be studied at all, the commentary and critical interpretation of Protestant scholastics were to be ignored: "In the case of Christian authors, even though a work may be good it should not be lectured on when the author is bad, lest attachment to him be acquired."

"The curriculum of the Jesuit colleges came to be adopted to a great extent as the basis of the curricula in the European colleges generally," wrote Dr. James J. Walsh, Dean of Fordham University Medical School.[3] Moreover, according to Dr. Walsh,

> The Founding Fathers of our American Republic, that is to say the groups of men who drew up and signed the Declaration of Independence, who were the leaders in the American Revolution, and who formulated the Constitution of the United States ... were, the majority of them, educated in the colonial colleges or in corresponding colleges abroad ... which followed ... almost exactly the Jesuit *Ratio Studiorum*. The fact has been missed to a great extent in our histories of American education....

Embedded in the *ratio studiorum* were the elements of entertainment, of dramatic production – composition, rhetoric, and eloquence. These courses interlinked with the Spiritual Exercises to intensify the experientiality of Catholic doctrine over Scripture and Protestantism. They resulted in a genre of spectacular plays that won distinction as "Jesuit theatre."

The first Jesuit theatre was performed in Vienna in 1555, nearly forty years before the emergence of Shakespeare. It was instantly popular and quickly spread to other parts of Europe. Between 1597 and 1773 more than five hundred Jesuit theatricals were staged in the lower Rhine regions alone. Jacob Bidermann's play *Cenodoxus* ("Newfangled Beliefs"), a point-by-point rebuttal of Luther's teachings, proved the power of entertainment to achieve political reform. "Such a wholesome impression was made," wrote Father Bidermann recalling the 1609 opening of *Cenodoxus* in Munich, "that a full fourteen persons of the highest rank of the Bavarian court retired into solitude during the days that followed, to perform the Spiritual Exercises and to reform their manner of living. Truly a hundred sermons would not have done so much good."[4]

An exemplary Jesuit drama, performed in 1625 at the College of St. Omer in honor of Belgian royalty, allegorized the glorious end to civil war in Belgium brought by the advent of Princess Isabella and her husband, Albert. The play, as reviewed by a contemporary official,

> represented a country, long heavily oppressed under the Iron Age, supplicating the help of Jupiter, who, after having summoned a council of the gods, sent down Saturn, lately married to Astraea. These visitors were received with much pomp by twelve zodiacs or princes sent by Mercury. They then dispatched four most potent heroes, Hercules, Jason, Theseus and Perseus from the Elysian Fields, with commands to conquer Iron Age, War, Error, and Discord. The heroes expelled those terrible monsters from the country and substituted in their stead Golden Age, Peace, Truth, and Concord. The Princess with the whole assembly were highly delighred.[5]

The faculty of Munich College praised the way Jesuit theatre captivated Protestants, especially the parents of school-aged youngsters: "There is no better means of making friends out of the heretics and the enemies of the Church, and filling up the enrollment of the school than good high-spirited playacting." Moliere's Jesuit theatricals in Paris were so popular that even the dress rehearsals were sold out. Mozart, at the age of eleven, was commissioned to write music for a play at the Jesuit college in Salzburg, where his father was musical director to the Archbishop. Even from the West Indies a Jesuit missionary reported that "nothing has made a more forceful impression on the Indians than our play."

In England, Jesuit theatre was not known as such because of Queen Elizabeth's statute making it a capital crime to be, or even to assist, a Jesuit within her orbit. But if the purpose of Jesuit theatre was to capture that share of man's spiritual attention which might otherwise have been directed toward the Bible, then England certainly produced the greatest Jesuit playwright of them all. Shakespeare occupies us with the human process in a way that subtly marginalizes the Bible – exactly pursuant to the Jesuit mission.

Shakespearian characters do preach, and they preach a religion, but it is not the Gospel of Jesus Christ. It is the gnostic illumination of Medici learning that Shakespeare preaches, the stuff of Jesuit schools. Not surprisingly, the secret tradition of Templarism claims Shakespeare, at least the writer of his plays, to have been a Rosicrucian steeped in Medici learning:

> The philosophic ideals promulgated throughout Shakespearian plays distinctly demonstrate their author to have been thoroughly familiar with certain doctrines and tenets peculiar to Rosicrucianism; in fact, the profundity of the Shakespearian productions stamps their creator as one of the *illuminati* of the ages....
>
> Who but a Platonist, a Qabbalist, or a Pythagorean could have written *The Tempest, Macbeth, Hamlet,* or *The Tragedy of Cymbeline*? Who but one deeply versed in Paracelsian lore could have conceived A *Midsummer Night's Dream*?

Yet, as Garry Wills in his book *Witches & Jesuits* points out, *Macbeth* is an elaborate condemnation of the Jesuits as satanists, murderers, witches. *Macbeth* is one of many of its period's "powder plays," a genre in which certain buzz words, well understood by contemporaries, memorialize the guilt and execution of eight Jesuits for having schemed the Gunpowder Plot of November 5, 1605. The Plot aimed to blow up the entire government of Great Britain, including the royal family, in a single catastrophic explosion under the Houses of Parliament.

How could a play defaming Jesuits be of service to the Jesuit agenda? As we shall see, warfare in defense of the papacy requires extravagant measures. In fact, both the Gunpowder Plot, which failed, and the celebration of its detection, which lives on in *Macbeth,* served Rome abundantly. King James I, who declared himself the Plot's divinely-illuminated discoverer, blamed the Plot on "Jesuits and papists." But at the same time, James exonerated "less fanatical Catholics."[6] According to Wills, "the Plot gave [James] his best opportunity to separate loyal and moderate Catholics from the mad extremists of the Plot." In short, the Plot secured England for "loyal and moderate" Roman Catholicism. In the reasoning of a Superior General, particularly the General of the Gunpowder Plot and Shakespearian theatre, Claudio Acquaviva, the sacrifice of eight Jesuits was a small tactical price to pay for moving the King of England to express confidence in the pope's British subjects, estimated at half the population of the realm.

CERTAINLY the most elaborate single Jesuit theatrical event was produced by Gregory XV, the first Jesuit pupil to be elected Pope. This was the canonization of Ignatius de Loyola, the climax of Gregory's brief pontificate (he reigned only three years). Canonization is authorized nowhere in the Bible. Rather, it is a process adapted from the pagan tradition of "apotheosis," whereby the priestly college declared a particularly effective mortal to be a god. In Roman Catholicism, the Sacred Congregation of Rites conducts a lengthy inquisition into the works of a deceased candidate. The inquisition can take dozens, even hundreds of years. The candidate's works are defended before a tribunal of three judges against a "devil's advocate." A final judgment is declared by the Pope, who orders the Church to believe that the candidate's soul is in Heaven, and to venerate the person with the title of "Saint." (The Bible teaches that anyone who hears and does the commandments of Jesus is a saint. Without any hierarchical red tape, he or she avoids judgment and goes to heaven immediately upon physical death.)

Loyola's canonization was celebrated on March 12, 1622 in a ceremony that was "an unprecedented display of ecclesiastical pomp, pageantry, and extravagance."[7] One eyewitness described the event as "an expression of the reborn spirit of the Catholic Church, of the triumph of the Blessed Virgin over Luther and Calvin."[8]

RIDING the crest of humanist exuberance following Loyola's canonization, Jesuit priest Athenasius Kircher (1602-1680) contributed powerfully to Jesuit theatre as sensory experience. With his megaphone, which enabled the voice of one to reach thousands, Kircher invented broadcasting. He also fathered modern camera theory with his perfection of the *lanterna magica.* The magic lantern projected sharp images through a lens upon a screen, giving audiences the illusion of burning cities and conflagrations. Kircher's work influenced the creation of the phenakistoscope (1832), the zoetrope (1860), the kinematoscope (1861), the kineograph (1868), the praxinoscope (1877), and finally, Thomas Alva Edison's kinetograph for filming action to be projected onto a screen through his kinetoscope (1894). Edison had a pet name for the tar-papered studio in West Orange, New Jersey, where all his prototypical films were made. He called it "Black Maria," a term that aptly described the image to whom Iñigo de Loyola dedicated his life in 1522 – the Black Madonna of Montserrat.

The American cinema's earliest subject matter to capture the popular imagination – the "cowboy" – was a Jesuit contribution as well. Eusebio Kino, whose statue is one of two representing Arizona in the U.S. Capitol building, was a Jesuit professor from Ingolstadt College in Bavaria. Between 1687 and 1711 Kino introduced cattle and their management to southern Arizona. For this he is gratefully remembered as "Father of the Cattle Business." Pondering the works of Kircher and Kino, we come to a rather astonishing awareness: Kino's cowboys, as projected through Kircher's magic lantern, indoctrinated America's earliest movie audiences with the underlying message of Jesuit theatre and Roman Catholic theology – that knowing and obeying Scripture is not necessary in comprehending the ways of good and evil, or in doing justice under natural law.

Using cinema and radio to unite Catholic laypersons with the Roman hierarchy was a main purpose of "Catholic Action." Catholic Action was inaugurated in 1922 by Pius XI, whose two confessors, Fathers Alissiardi and Celebrano, were Jesuits. The first pope to install a radio station at the Vatican (1931) and to establish national film review offices (1922), Pius XI ordered Catholics into politics. In the letter *Peculari quadam* ("Containing the flock") he warned that "the men of Catholic Action would fail in their duty if, as opportunities allow it, they did not try to direct the politics of their province and of their country."

The men of Catholic Action did try. Their first major effort was to employ Black Pope Vladimir Ledochowski's strategy of bringing the Catholic nations of central and eastern Europe together into a pan-German federation. To head the federation, Ledochowski required a charismatic leader charged with subduing the communistic Soviet Union on the east, Protestant Prussia, Protestant Great Britain, and republican France on the west.[9] Ledochowski chose the Catholic militarist Adolf Hitler, who told Bishop Bernind of Osnabruch in 1936 that

> there was no fundamental difference between National Socialism and the Catholic Church. Had not the church, he argued, looked on Jews as parasites and shut them in ghettos? 'I am only doing,' he boasted, 'what the church has done for fifteen hundred years, only more effectively.' Being a Catholic himself, he told Berning, he 'admired and wanted to promote Christianity.'[10]

To promote Christianity as taught him by Roman Catholicism, Hitler appointed Leni Riefenstahl to create the greatest fascist films ever produced. Her deification of Hitler and romanticization of autocracy in spectacles like *Triumph of the Will* are, in themselves, the history of German cinema in the thirties and early forties. In print, Ledochowski's pan-German manifesto took the form of Hitler's autobiographical *Mein Kampf* ("My Struggle"), ghost-written by the Jesuit Father Staempfle[11] and placed beside the Bible on the altars of German churches.[12]

After World War II, during September 1957, Pope John XXIII gave Jesuit theatre even broader horizons with his encyclical *Miranda prorsus* ("Looking ahead"), saying,

> Men must be brought into closer communion with one another. They must become socially minded. These technical arts (cinema, sound broadcasting, and television) can achieve this aim *far more easily than the printed word.* [Italics mine] The Catholic Church is keenly desirous that these means be converted to the spreading and advancement of everything that can be

> truly called good. Embracing, as she does, the whole of human society within the orbit of her divinely appointed mission, she is directly concerned with the fostering of civilization among all peoples.

To Catholic film producers and directors, *Miranda prorsus* delivered

> a paternal injunction not to allow films to be made which are at variance with the faith and Christian moral standards. Should this happen – which God forbid – then it is for the Bishops to rebuke them and, if necessary, to impose upon them appropriate sanctions.

John XXIII urged that Pius XI's national film reviewing offices

> be entrusted to men who are experienced in cinema, sound broadcasting, and television, under the guidance of a priest specially chosen by the Bishops.... At the same time We urge that the faithful, and particularly those who are militant in the cause of Catholic Action [Jesuits and their protégés], be suitably instructed, so that they may appreciate the need for giving to these offices their willing, united, and effective support.

In 1964, Pope Paul VI amplified *Miranda prorsus* with the decree *Inter mirifica* ("Among the Wonders"), saying "it is the Church's birthright to use and own ... the press, the cinema, radio, television and others of a like nature." Paul cited

> a special responsibility for the proper use of the means of social communication [which] rests on journalists, writers, actors, designers, producers, exhibitors, distributors, operators, sellers, critics – all those, in a word, who are involved in the making and transmission of communications in any way whatever.... They have power to direct mankind along a good path or an evil path by the information they impart and the pressure they exert. It will be for them to regulate the economic, political, and artistic values in a way that will not conflict with the common good....

The quality of entertainment's content was decreed in a section of *Inter mirifica* encouraging "the chronicling, the description or the representation of moral evil [which] can, with the help of the means of social communication and with suitable dramatization, lead to a deeper knowledge and analysis of man and to a manifestation of the true and the good in all their splendor." Emboldened by this papal decree, social communicators since 1965 have pushed the constitutional guarantees of "free speech" to the limit by chronicling, describing, and representing moral evil with such progressively vivid, repulsive, prurient, yet often appealing detail that entertainment has become, in the opinion of many, a veritable *technological "how to"* of moral evil. It clearly does not lead audiences to a deeper appreciation of Holy Scripture. This fact identifies entertainment today as a successful Jesuit theatrical mission.

DURING its four centuries of existence, the Jesuit educational/theatrical enterprise has produced a proud, poised, and imaginative graduate. He or she is enlightened by the Medici Library's humanities, facile in worldly matters, moved by theatricality, and indifferent toward Holy Scripture. Producing Jesuitic graduates has become the aim of modern public education, despite the heavy price of ignoring Scripture (which, as Luther warned and the Columbine murders attest, has indeed turned the public schools into "widening gates of hell"). Jesuit theatre and the Spiritual Exercises, whose original purpose was to bring human understanding into papal subservience through esoteric emotional experiences, have evolved into the full panoply of contemporary social communication.

The great objective of obscuring Scripture has operated to discourage the formal study of the basics of which the Bible is the cornerstone – literature, science, and history. Research by the National Association of Scholars (NAS) of U.S. News & World Report's annual listing of "America's Best Colleges" (including both private and public) disclosed startling figures.[15] In 1914, nearly all of these institutions had required courses in English composition; by 1964 the figure was 86%; in 1996, 36%. In 1914, 82% of the best colleges and universities had traditional mathematics requirements; by 1964 only 36% did; by 1996, 12%. In 1914, 1939 and 1964, more than 70% of the institutions required at least one course in the natural sciences; that figure fell to 34% in 1996. Literature courses were required at 75% of the institutions in 1914, and at 50% in 1939 and 1964. Today, not one of the "best" institutions has a literature requirement. Most colleges today are turning out graduates who have studied little or no history. In 1914, 90% of America's elite colleges required history; in 1939 and 1964 more than 50% did; by 1996 only one of the 50 best schools offered a required history course. The day is approaching, perhaps, when the only historians will be amateurs who study history as self-help, who examine the past in order to make sense of the present and not be caught unprepared by the future.

America's understanding has been systematically bent to the will of the Church Militant, while the intellectual means for sensing the capture have been disconnected. Most of the content of modern media, whether television, radio, print, film, stage, or web, is state-of-the-art Jesuit *ratio studiorum*. The Jesuit college is no longer just a chartered institution; it has become our entire social environment - the movies, the mall, the school, the home, the mind. Human experience has become a Spiritual Exercise managed by charismatic spiritual directors who know how to manipulate a democracy's emotions. Logic, perspective, national memory, and self-discipline are purged to the point that "unbridled emotional responses," as economist Thomas Sowell put it, "are all we have left."

Despite its ascendancy over American life, few Americans understand the term "Jesuit." In our next chapter, we shall examine how this term is defined in our basic reference works. These definitions will help us to better understand the kind of character produced by Ignatian psychological technique.

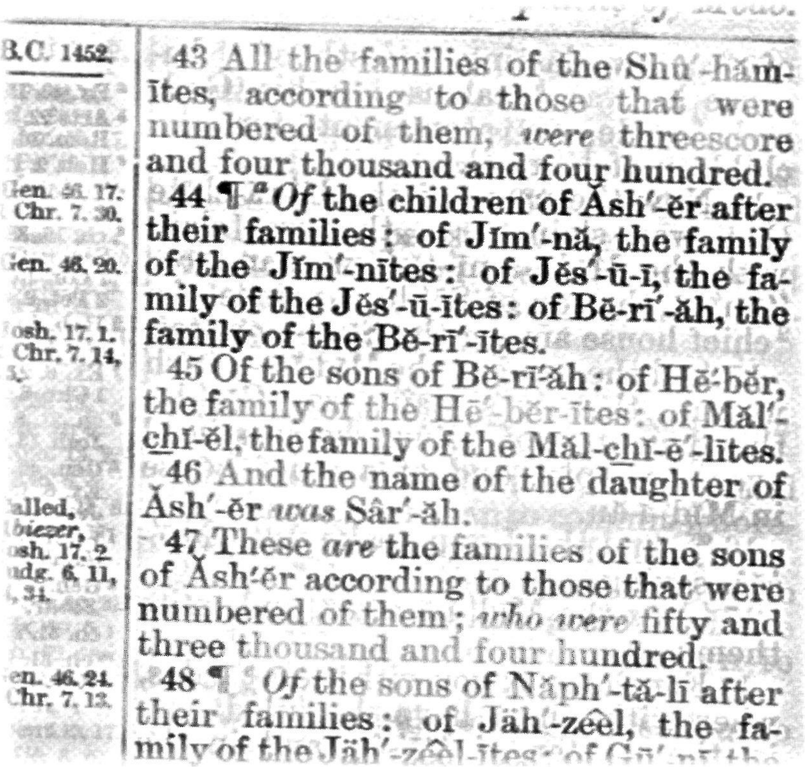

B.C. 1452.

en. 46. 17.
Chr. 7. 30.
en. 46. 20.
osh. 17. 1.
Chr. 7. 14,
alled,
biezer,
osh. 17. 2
udg. 6. 11,
, 34.
en. 46. 24.
Chr. 7. 13.

43 All the families of the Shū′-hăm-ītes, according to those that were numbered of them, *were* threescore and four thousand and four hundred.

44 ¶ [a] *Of* the children of Ăsh′-ĕr after their families: of Jĭm′-nă, the family of the Jĭm′-nītes: of Jĕs′-ū-ī, the family of the Jĕs′-ū-ītes: of Bĕ-rī′-ăh, the family of the Bĕ-rī′-ītes.

45 Of the sons of Bĕ-rī′-ăh: of Hē′-bĕr, the family of the Hē′-bĕr-ītes: of Măl′-chī-ĕl, the family of the Măl-chī-ē′-lītes.

46 And the name of the daughter of Ăsh′-ĕr *was* Sâr′-ăh.

47 These *are* the families of the sons of Ăsh′-ĕr according to those that were numbered of them; *who were* fifty and three thousand and four hundred.

48 ¶ *Of* the sons of Năph′-tă-lī after their families: of Jäh′-zêel, the family of the Jäh′-zêel-ītes:

DEFINITIONS

THE TERM "Jesuit" was first used to describe a member of the Society of Jesus in 1559. It did not originate from within the Society, but from outsiders. Whether intended derisively or respectfully, "Jesuit" does appear to have been inspired.

We find in the Bible (Numbers 26:44) the mention of "Jesuites." These Jesuites were the progeny of Jesui, whose name in Hebrew, *Yishviy,* means "level." The Jesuits certainly levelled the Protestant menace.

Jesui was a great-grandson of Abraham. His father was the Israelite tribal chieftan Asher (Asher, "happy"). At Genesis 49:20, Asher's posterity is divinely prophesied to "yield royal dainties *(ma-adanim,* 'delights')." Their uniquely privileged access to the minds and wills of kings has certainly enabled the Jesuits to yield copious harvests of royal delights.

But in fulfilling their scriptural prophecy, the Jesuits seem to have alienated themselves from people who use the English language. This does not disappoint St. Ignatius. "Let us hope," he once wrote, "that the Society may never be left untroubled by the hostility of the world for very long."

America's first indigenous dictionary was compiled by Noah Webster and published in 1828. His *American Dictionary of the English Language* reflects the place held by Jesuits in the opinion of a public whose senior citizens had brought forth the Declaration of Independence and the Constitution (Webster himself was forty-one when the Constitution was ratified):

> **Jesuit.** One of the society of Jesus, so called, founded by Ignatius Loyola; a society remarkable for their cunning in propagating their principles.
> **Jesuited.** Conforming to the principles of the Jesuits.
> **Jesuitess.** A female Jesuit in principle.
> **Jesuitic, jesuitical.** Pertaining to the Jesuits or their principles and arts. **2.** Designing; cunning; deceitful; prevaricating.
> **Jesuitically.** Craftily.
> **Jesuitism.** The arts, principles and practices of the Jesuits. **2.** Cunning; deceit; hypocrisy; prevarication; deceptive practices to effect a purpose.

One hundred seventy-eight years later, Webster's *Third New International Dictionary* (1986) informs us that the language has not repented:

> **Jesuit: 1:** a member of a religious society for men founded by St. Ignatius Loyola in 1534. **2:** one given to intrigue or equivocation: a crafty person: CASUIST
> **Jesuited:** jesuitic
> **Jesuitic or jesuitical: 1:** of or relating to the Jesuits, Jesuitism, or Jesuitry. **2:** having qualities thought to resemble those of a Jesuit - usu. used disparagingly
> **Jesuitize:** to act or teach in the actual or ascribed manner of a Jesuit: to indoctrinate with actual or ascribed Jesuit principles
> **Jesuitry:** principles or practices ascribed to the Jesuits, as the practice of mental reservation, casuistry, and equivocation

Webster's online dictionary, *WWWebster* (1999), is particularly revealing. Here we read that "Jesuit" means "a member of the Roman Catholic Society of Jesus founded by Saint Ignatius Loyola in 1534 and devoted to missionary and educational work," and that a Jesuit is "one given to intrigue or equivocation." *WWWebster* defines "to intrigue" as meaning "to cheat, trick, plot, and scheme," and "to equivocate" as "to use equivocal language especially with intent to deceive; to avoid committing oneself in what one says." "Equivocal" language, according to the same source, is language "subject to two or more interpretations and usually used to mislead or confuse; of uncertain nature or disposition toward a person or thing; of doubtful advantage, genuineness, or moral rectitude."

The Jesuit discipline has elevated mental reservation, casuistry, and equivocation to high arts - you will not find a more hilarious defense of these arts than Blaise Pascal's classic "Pastoral Letters"(1657), freely available on the internet. Purportedly written to a friend, the "Letters" report conversations Pascal is having with a Jesuit casuist. The Jesuit defends his arts thusly:

> Men have arrived at such a pitch of corruption nowadays that, unable to make them come to us, we must e'en go to them, otherwise they would cast us off altogether; and, what is worse, they would become perfect castaways. It is to retain such characters as these that our casuists have taken under consideration the vices to which people of various conditions are most addicted, with the view of laying down maxims which, while they cannot be said to violate the truth, are so gentle that he must be a very impracticable subject indeed who is not pleased with them. The grand project of our Society, for the good of religion, is never to repulse any one, let him be what he may, and so avoid driving people to despair.

Jesuit moral theology hardly needs a satirist. Its humor is self-contained. Consider Hermann Busenbaum, one of the Society's most venerated moral theologians. Busenbaum literally wrote the book on self-serving logic. His celebrated *Medulla theologiae moralis*

("The Marrow of Moral Theology," 1645) enjoyed more than two hundred printings and was required ethics reading in all the Jesuit colleges. A man of stout appetites, Busenbaum constructed an equivocation to relieve himself of the obligation to eat fish on Fridays: "On Fridays every good Catholic must eat only creatures that live in the water, which justifies ordering a nice roast duck!"

Busenbaum demonstrated how mental reservation could enable a criminal to escape a charge of breaking and entering:

> "Did you force the window to gain felonious entry into these premises?" asks the judge. "Certainly not!" replies the accused, qualifying his denial with the mental reservation "I *entered through the skylight."*

Father Gury, who taught moral theology at the Roman College from his book *Casus Conscientire* (1875), approved of the way an adulterous wife, having just received absolution for her sin from a priest, used mental reservation to mislead her husband:

> To the entreaties of her husband, she absolutely denied the fault: "I have not committed it," she said; meaning "adultery such as I am obliged to reveal;" in other words, "I have not committed an adultery." She could deny her sin as a culprit may say to a judge who does not question him legitimately: "I have not committed any crime," adding mentally, "in such a manner that I should reveal it." This is the opinion of St. Liguori, and of many others.

The "St. Liguori" to whom Gury refers is Alphonse Liguori, declared Patron Saint of Confessors and Moralists by Pope Pius XII. St. Liguori was not a Jesuit himself, but he was devoted to them. He facilitated adultery by means of an equivocation: "An adulteress questioned by her husband, may deny her guilt by declaring that she has not committed 'adultery,' meaning 'idolatry,' for which the term 'adultery' is often employed in the Old Testament."

Casuistry is the process of applying moral principles falsely in deciding the rights or wrongs of a case - the word "casuistry" comes from "cases." *WWWebster* equates casuistry with rationalization, "to cause something to seem reasonable; to provide plausible but untrue reasons for conduct." (In early 1999, President Clinton's biographer, David Maraniss, could be seen remarking on talkshows that the President owed his formidable skills as a criminal defendant to "his training in casuistry at Georgetown University.") The great Jesuit casuist Antonio Escobar pardoned evildoing as long as it was committed in pursuit of a lofty goal. "Purity of intention," he declared in 1627, "may justify actions which are contrary to the moral code and to human laws." Hermann Busenbaum ratified Escobar with his own famous maxim "Cum *finis est licitus, etiam media sunt licita,*" "If the end is legal, the means are legal." Escobar and Busenbaum boil down to the essential doctrine of terrorism: "The end justifies the means."

Casuistry solved the problem of usury. Although the voice of Jesus commanded "lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward will be great" (Luke 6:35), Jesuit lenders often charged exorbitant interest. Father Gury explained the principle:

> If lending one hundred francs you are losing ten francs by it, you lend really one hundred and ten francs. Then you shall receive one hundred and ten francs.

Indeed, casuistry has set the moral tone of world economics. In his *Universae theologiae moralis* ("Catholic Moral Theology", 1652-66), Antonio Escobar rendered the opinion that "The giving of short weight is not to be reckoned as a sin when the official price for certain goods is so low that the merchant would be ruined thereby." By this reasoning, the international network of central banks (beginning with the Knights Templars and sustained by the Society of Jesus) has been absolved of manipulating monetary values if doing so helps individual sovereign nation-states manage their subjects. Subjects are cyclically required to part with true value - that is, hard-earned gold and silver coinage - in exchange for intangible credit denominated in paper notes whose official promises to repay in precious coinage... are cyclically broken. As the most powerful office in Roman Catholicism, the black papacy might have promoted stable national economies by means of the divinely fair monetary system commanded in the Bible at Leviticus 19 -

> Ye shall do no unrighteousness in measure. Just balances, just weights, shall ye have: I am the Lord your God, which brought you out of the land of Egypt.

Instead, it has promoted Escobar's casuistry, which directs merchants to survive official value manipulations by cheating one another. There are significant sociological consequences. When giving short weight becomes policy, a moral paradigm is set. That paradigm governs more than just commercial transactions. It affects human relationships, as well. Partners in friendships, marriages, and families begin giving short weight - giving less than represented. This results in one-sided, frustrating, dysfunctional emotional transactions, and ultimately an aberrant society. The ultimate beneficiary of aberrant societies, of course, is *Pontifex Maximus,* whose profession is their regulation.

If we depend solely on dictionary definitions, we learn that Jesuits are churchmen and teachers of a doubtful moral rectitude who are likely to cheat, trick, plot, scheme, deceive, and confuse us while avoiding to commit themselves verbally. When we study their published moralists, we sense a rather vibrant presence of The Trickster. But in the Society's defense, it must be said these are *legitimate* character traits for a militia empowered by a declaration of war, and we must remember that Paul Ill's bull ordaining the Society of Jesus, *Regimini militantis ecclesiae,* is just such a declaration. Human life in a declared war becomes subject to the first great rule of war, *belli legum dormit,* “in war the law sleeps.” When the law sleeps, the unarmed priest's only weapons are the intrigue, deceit, equivocation, casuistry, and mental reservation with which the Jesuits have made themselves so notorious and so often despised.

In forthcoming chapters, we shall be examining how the Society of Jesus made war against Great Britain and the British colonies during the second half of the eighteenth century, and then against the sovereign American States a century later. In each instance, the warfare was of the highest sophistication. It was so subtly conceived and so masterfully executed, that neither of the major combatants could discern the presence of Jesuits in the equation. The amazing technology of Jesuit warfare - that is the subject of our next chapter.

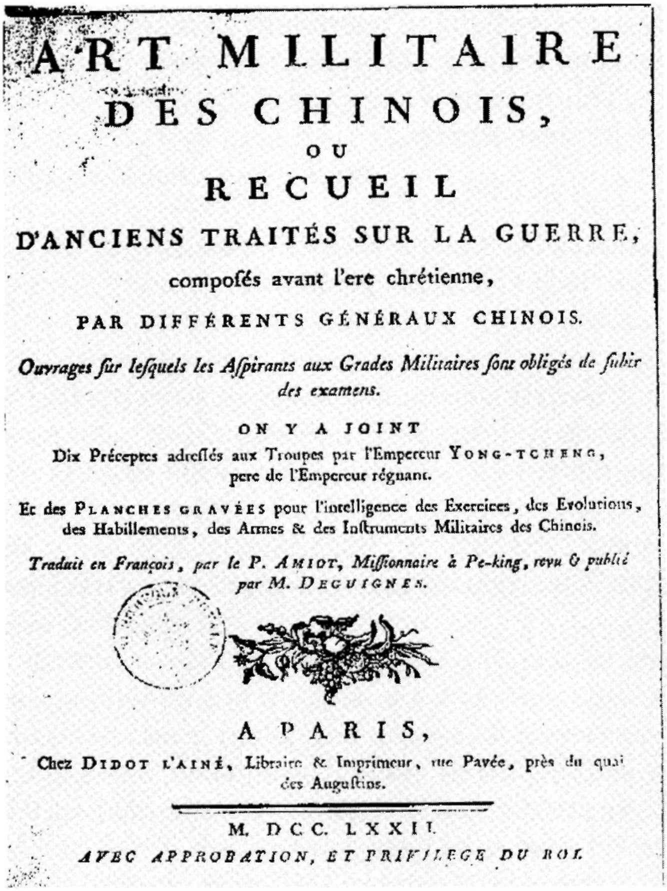

ART MILITAIRE DES CHINOIS,

OU

RECUEIL D'ANCIENS TRAITÉS SUR LA GUERRE,

compoſés avant l'ere chrétienne,

PAR DIFFÉRENTS GÉNÉRAUX CHINOIS.

Ouvrages ſur leſquels les Aſpirants aux Grades Militaires ſont obligés de ſubir des examens.

ON Y A JOINT
Dix Préceptes adreſſés aux Troupes par l'Empereur YONG-TCHENG, pere de l'Empereur régnant.

Et des PLANCHES GRAVÉES pour l'intelligence des Exercices, des Evolutions, des Habillements, des Armes & des Inſtruments Militaires des Chinois.

Traduit en François, par le P. AMIOT, Miſſionnaire à Pe-king, revu & publié par M. DEGUIGNES.

A PARIS,
Chez DIDOT L'AINÉ, Libraire & Imprimeur, rue Pavée, près du quai des Auguſtins.

M. DCC. LXXII.

AVEC APPROBATION, ET PRIVILEGE DU ROI.

Chapter 11

THE THIRTEEN ARTICLES CONCERNING MILITARY ART

BEFORE THE American Revolution, Roman Catholics were barred from voting or holding public office throughout the British colonies. They were a persecuted minority everywhere but in the proprietary domain of William Penn (Pennsylvania and Delaware). Some of their most energetic persecutors, in fact, were the very Huguenots whom the Catholics had chased out of France in the wake of Louis XIV's revocation of the Edict of Nantes.

The basis of Roman Catholic persecution was political. Catholics owed allegiance to *Pontifex Maximus,* the Bishop of Rome. The Bishop of Rome was a foreign ruler who, as a matter of public policy, regarded the British king and his Protestant Church as heretics to be destroyed. From the American colonists' standpoint, to allow Catholics to vote or hold office was tantamount to surrendering their colonies to a foreign conqueror. A crucial part of maintaining personal liberty in Protestant colonial America was keeping Roman Catholics out of government. But then came the Revolution. The colonial citizenry fought for and won their independence from Great Britain. They established a Constitution that amounted to... *surrendering their country to a foreign conqueror.* Consider the legalities. Before the Constitution was ratified, American Catholics had few civil rights; after ratification, they had them all. Article VI, section 3 provides that “no religious test shall ever be required as a qualification to any office or public trust under the authority of the United States,” while the First Amendment denies Congress the power “to make any law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof.” With Article IV Section 3 and the First Amendment, the Constitution welcomed agents of *Pontifex Maximus,* the world's chief enemy of Protestantism, into the ranks of government.

Of the 2,500,000 enumerated inhabitants in 1787 America, the Roman Catholic population consisted of no more than 16,000 in Maryland, 7,000 in Pennsylvania, 1,500 in New York, and 200 in Virginia.[1] Once the Constitution was in place, a steady influx of European immigrants transformed Roman Catholicism from America's smallest to largest religious denomination. By 1850, the higher powers at Rome could view the United States as a viable tributary, if not another papal state.

This awesome result did not just happen. I submit that it was brilliantly designed and commanded by a man I am pleased to honor as the American republic's least known founding father, Lorenzo Ricci (pronounced “Richey.”) Ricci was a Tuscan aristocrat by birth, a stoical philosopher by reputation, and a Jesuit father by profession. He was Superior General of the Society of Jesus during the formative years of the American Revolution, from 1758 until 1775. He also may be credited with having written the most celebrated treatise on war ever published, a work entitled *The Thirteen Articles Concerning Military Art.*

The reputed author of this work is a quasi-historical Chinese general believed to have lived in the sixth century BC named Sun-tzu. Sun-tzu was unknown to western languages until Joseph-Marie Amiot, astronomer to the Emperor of China, brought forth a

French edition of the *Thirteen Articles* in 1772. Amiot was a Jesuit priest under obedience to General Ricci. I base my inference that Ricci is the author of Amiot's Sun-tzu on a remark from today's premier Jesuit spokesman, Malachi Martin, retired professor at the Pontifical Institute in Rome, to the effect that a book written by a Jesuit, due to the obedience factor, can be presumed "in essence" to be the work of his Superior General.[2] Amiot's Sun-tzu, then, can be presumed to have been "written" by Lorenzo Ricci.

The black pope's decision to publish Sun-tzu prior to the outbreak of the Revolution he had engineered demonstrates, I believe, his confidence that divine authority had already delivered victory to him. Ricci knew that circumstances had reached the point at which there was nothing which his enemy, the forces of Protestantism on both sides of the Atlantic, could do to alter the outcome. He was like a chess master who sees the inevitability of checkmate four moves ahead and reveals his winning method out of courtesy to the imminent loser. His method was so sublimely Sun-tzuan that his opponents never even perceived his army to be an opponent - just as Protestants today are unaware that extirpating their credo is still the unrelenting Jesuit mission.

The Thirteen Articles were ignored by Americans until the nineteen-seventies, when our corporate executives discovered that their oriental counterparts were doing business according to Sun-tzuan strategies. As U.S. corporations increased their presence in the Pacific Rim, Sun-tzu became a major survival tool. Since the middle eighties, more than fifty editions of the *Articles* have been published in this country, mostly under the "*Art of War*" title. These editions represent Sun-tzu well enough, but none of them are derived from the 1772 Amiot translation into French (which itself was based on a Tartar-Manchurian version of the older Chinese manuscripts). Amiot's Sun-tzu appears never to have been published in English, although a 1996 commission by La Belle Église produced a very fine manuscript English translation by Hermine F. Garcia. That manuscript is the source of my citations here.

Only the Amiot edition reflects in virtually the Jesuit General's own words how he formed the United States of America by dividing the British Empire against itself, while at the same time dividing the rest of Europe against Britain, against even the General's own army! The Amiot is all the more remarkable for appearing in the very midst of the unfolding of this extraordinary process.

AMIOT begins *The Thirteen Articles* by noting how odd it is that the benign Chinese morality should spawn a warrior of Sun-tzu's magnitude:

> If we are to judge the Chinese by their morals ... and in general by everything one can currently observe of them, we would instantly conclude that this must be the most pacifist Nation in the world, far from having the brilliant qualities necessary for Warriors. Yet, surprisingly, this very Nation, which has subsisted for nearly four thousand years in approximately the same state we see it in today, has always, or almost always, triumphed over its enemies; and when it had the misfortune of being conquered, it gave its laws to the conquerors themselves.

We know this, Amiot says, from the Annals, which contain "admirable accounts of prodigious bravery," and lists of actions and military conduct of various founders of dynasties. He exclaims

> What Heroes! What Politicians! What Warriors! No Alexander or Caesar could surpass them. Why shouldn't these great men, these powerful geniuses, who made such fine political and civil Laws, have made military laws which were just as fine?

The reference to Caesar is significant. Declaring China's dynastic heroes to be Caesar's equals, Amiot equates Lorenzo Ricci, the reigning bearer of Caesarean authority, with the greatest oriental Warriors. Were the oriental military laws "just as fine" as Caesar's? "It is not up to me to judge this," Amiot answers. "Our Warriors must pronounce themselves in this regard."

If the term "Our Warriors" means "our Jesuit brethren," as I believe it does, then we have before us Ricci's clandestine order that the book be received by the scattered members of the Society as the latest statement of the General's military Law. (Clandestine generals order clandestinely.) Amiot admits that translating a war manual was "contrary to my taste, & so far from the object of my profession." He says that he only undertook the work in hopes that the reader might have "some pleasure conversing with these foreign Heroes and receiving some of their instructions and [finding] something useful." What cannot be denied is that Rome was served by critical events in America and England during the years of Ricci's reign in ways that flow quite discernably from the strategies, laws, and maxims set forth in the *Thirteen Articles.* I believe that anyone reading Amiot's Sun-tzu in 1772, knowing that its translator was a Jesuit, knowing the Jesuit mission, and knowing the nature of Jesuitic obedience, could observe world events with this knowledge, and predict that the dispute between the American colonists and the British Empire would end - as it actually did - in Roman dominance over a new, independent republic.

Before presenting the works of Sun-tzu, Amiot recounts an important legend demonstrating the severity of Sun-tzuan authority. It is a severity that empowers the General to overrule even his Sovereign in order to secure the army's perfect obedience. Hearing that the King of Oo was preparing for war and not wishing to remain idle, Sun-tzu offered his services to the King. The King had read Sun-tzu's book and liked it, but doubted its practicability.

> "Prince," replied Sun-tzu, "I said nothing in my Writings that I had not already practiced in the army. What I have not yet said, but of which I presume to assure Your Majesty today, is that I am capable of transmitting these practices to anyone whomsoever & training them in military exercises when I am authorized to do so."
>
> "I understand," replied the King. "You wish to say that you will easily teach your maxims to intelligent men who are already both prudent and valorous; that you will have no difficulty giving training in military exercises to men accustomed to hard work who are docile & full of good will. But the majority is not of that nature."
>
> "It matters not," replied Sun-tzu. "I said *anyone whomsoever*

and I exclude no one from my offer, including the most mutinous, the most cowardly and the weakest of men."

"To hear you speak," said the King, "you would even inspire women to have the feelings of Warriors; you would train them to bear arms."

"Yes, Prince," replied Sun-tzu in a firm voice, "and I beg Your Majesty to be assured of it."

The King, who in the circumstances in which he found himself was no longer entertained by the customary amusements of Court, took advantage of this opportunity to find a new sort of amusement. He said, "Bring me one hundred eighty of my wives." He was obeyed, & the Princesses appeared. Among them were two in particular whom the King loved tenderly; they were placed ahead of the others. "We will see," said the King, smiling. "We will see, Sun-tzu, if you will be true to your word. I make you General of these new troops. All throughout my palace you need only choose the place which seems the most comfortable to give them military training. When they are sufficiently instructed you will let me know, & I will come myself to render justice to them & to your talent."

The General sensed the ridicule of the role he was asked to play. But he did not back down, and instead appeared quite satisfied by the honor bestowed on him by the King, not only by allowing him to see his wives but also by putting them under his direction. "I will do well with them, Sire," he said in an assured tone, "and I hope that soon Your Majesty will have cause to be satisfied with my services. At the very least, Your Majesty will be convinced that Sun-tzu is not a man who takes risks."

Once the King had retired to his apartments, the Warrior thought only of executing his commission. He asked for weapons & all the military equipment needed for his newly created soldiers. While waiting for everything to be ready, he led his troop into one of the courtyards of the palace which seemed the best suited for his work. Soon the items he had requested were brought to him. Sun-tzu then spoke to the Princesses. "Here you are," he said, "under my direction and my orders. You must listen to me attentively and obey me in whatever I command you to do. That is the first & most essential military law: make sure you don't break it. By tomorrow I want you to perform exercises before the King, & I intend for them to be done perfectly."

After those words he strapped on their swords, put spears in their hands, divided them into two groups, and put one of the favorite Princesses at the head of each. Once that arrangement was made, he began his instructions in these terms: "Can you tell the difference between your chest and your back, & your right hand from your left hand? Answer me." At first the only response he received was some bursts of laughter. But he remained silent and very serious. "Yes, of course," the Ladies then replied in one voice. "If that is so," resumed Sun-tzu, "then listen carefully to what I am going to say. When the drum strikes only one beat, you will remain as you are now, only paying attention to what is before your chest. When the drum strikes two beats, you must turn so that your chest is in the place where your right hand was before. If instead of two beats you hear three, you must turn so that your chest is precisely where your left hand was before. But when the drum strikes four beats, you must turn so that your chest is where your back was, & your back will be where your chest was.

"What I just said may not be clear enough; let me explain. A single drum beat means that you must not change your position & you must be on guard. Two beats means you must turn right. Three beats means you must turn left. And four beats means you make a half turn. I will explain even more.

"This is the order I shall follow. First I will strike one beat: at that signal you will be ready to receive my orders. A few moments later I will strike two beats: then, all together, you will turn to the right with gravity, after which I will not strike three beats but four, & you will make a half-turn. I will then have you return to your first position and, as before, I will strike one beat. At the first signal, be ready. Then I will strike, not two beats but three, & you will turn left; at four beats you will complete the half-turn. Have you well understood what I am saying? If you have any difficulties, you have but to speak to me of them and I shall attempt to explain the matter." "We have understood," replied the Ladies. "If that is so," responded Sun-tzu, "I will begin. Do not forget that the sound of the drum takes the place of the General's voice, but he is the one who is giving you these orders."

After repeating his instructions three times, Sun-tzu again aligned his small army, after which he had the drum strike one beat. At that sound, all the Ladies began to laugh. At two drum beats, they laughed even louder. Ever serious, the General spoke to them thus: "It is possible that I did not explain clearly enough the instructions I gave you. If that is so, it is my fault. I will attempt to remedy it by speaking to you in a way that is more accessible to you (& at once he repeated the lesson three times in other terms), and then we will see," he added, "if you obey me any better." He had the drum strike one beat, and then two. Seeing him look so serious, and given the strange situation they found themselves in, the Ladies forgot to obey him. After attempting in vain to stop the laughter that was choking them, they finally let it burst forth loudly.

Sun-tzu was in no way disconcerted, but in the same tone he had used when speaking to them before, he said: "If I had not explained myself clearly, or if you had not assured me, in unison, that you understood what I said, you would in no way be guilty. But I spoke to you clearly, as you admitted yourselves. Why did you not obey? You deserve punishment, and military punishment. Among the Makers of War, whoever does not obey the orders of his General deserves death. Therefore you will die." After that short preamble, Sun-tzu ordered the women who formed the two lines to kill the two who were leading them. Just then, one of the men whose job it was to guard the women, seeing that the Warrior was not joking, ran to warn the King of what was happening. The King sent someone to Sun-tzu to forbid him from going any farther, & in particular from mistreating the two women he loved the best & without whom he could not live.

The General listened with respect to the words that were spoken on behalf of the King, but he refused to bow to his wishes. "Go tell the King," he replied, "that Sun-tzu believes him to be too reasonable & too just to think he might have changed his mind so soon, & that he truly wishes to be obeyed in what you have just told me on his behalf. The Prince is the lawmaker; he would not give orders which would sully the dignity he vested in me. He asked me to train one hundred and eighty of his Wives as soldiers, he made me their General. The rest is up to me. They

> disobeyed me, they will die." So saying, he pulled out his sword and with the same calmness he had displayed until then, he cut off the heads of the two who were leading the others. He immediately put two others in their place, and had the drum strike the various beats he had explained to his troops. And it was as if those women had been professional soldiers all their lives; they made their turns silently and impeccably.
>
> Sun-tzu spoke thus to the Envoy: "Go tell the King," he said, "that his wives know how to drill. Now I can lead them to war, make them affront all sorts of perils, & even make them pass through water & fire."
>
> When the King learned what had happened, he was penetrated by the deepest sorrow. With a great sigh he said, "Thus have I lost what was dearest to me in this world.... Have that Foreigner return to his country. I do not want him, nor his services— What have you done, barbarian?... How can I go on living?" ... and so on.
>
> As unconsolable as the King was, time and the circumstances soon made him forget his loss. His enemies were ready to descend upon him. He asked Sun-tzu to return, made him General of his armies, & with his help he destroyed the Chou Kingdom. Those of his neighbors who had formerly been the most worrisome were now penetrated by fear at the mere mention of the glorious acts of Sun-tzu, and thought only of living peacefully under the protection of a Prince who had such a man at his service.

This introduction confirms that Paul Ill's war declaration *Regimini militantis ecclesiae* is about protecting the life of the nation, which is the Roman Church. Protecting the Church may require the Superior General to sacrifice his soldiers, his citizens, and if need be, his sovereign, the pope. In a very real sense, the great General is so inscrutably alone, so omnipotent, that he is at war with... *everyone.* Sacrificing his own (just as Saturn, the grandfather-god of Rome devoured his own children) in order to defeat an enemy short of coming to blows, this is a great General's legitimate obligation. Sun-tzu writes:

> Without giving battle, without spilling a drop of [the enemy's] blood, without even drawing a sword, the clever General succeeds in capturing cities. Without setting foot in a foreign Kingdom, he finds the means to conquer them. He acts in such a way that those who are inferior to him can never guess his intentions. He has them change location, even taking them to rather difficult places where they must work and suffer. When a clever General goes into action, the enemy is already defeated. When he fights, he alone must do more than his entire army, not through the strength of his arm but through his prudence, his manner of commanding, & above all his ruses.

Lorenzo Ricci's most compelling ruse was disestablishing the Society of Jesus, a campaign that mimicked the collapse of the Knights Templar four centuries earlier. With astonishing precision, the Disestablishment ran concurrently with the escalation of hostilities between the American colonies and the British Crown.

It was an amazing juggle that spanned seventeen years. It saw Ricci's secret liaisons in and around the British Parliament buy legislation that inflamed his secret liasons in and around the American colonial governments to formulate a culture of rebellion. It saw his own visible army, mute and defenseless, systematically assaulted by the European powers and eventually suppressed "for all eternity" by a 1773 papal brief. Once the stage was set and the action scripted, it saw the General slip into deeper cover to let the Protestant powers exhaust themselves in wars that within a single generation resulted in a glorious Roman presence where once England had reigned.

Clandestine military operations inspired by the ingenuity of Sun-tzu are virtually impossible to document. If strategic notes were taken, if written commands were given, they were carefully destroyed. Such that survive may have been spared in order to misinform. The mouths of covert operatives are kept shut out of a simple desire to stay alive. Sensational disclosures, too, we can presume to be misinformational. To determine that Lorenzo Ricci did in fact mount any clandestine operation at all requires a careful evaluation of circumstantial evidence. Was there an outcome that benefitted him and his Sovereign? Did he have the authority, the motive, the resources, the ability, and the opportunity to do what created the outcome? As to outcome: English-speaking Protestantism did in fact violently divide, and the victorious party moreover invited Roman Catholic religionists to participate in its political government. As to authority for waging war against Protestantism, *Regimini militantis ecclesiae* authorized the General to prosecute enemies of the Roman faith. As to motive: the Jesuit oath spiritually obligated the extirpation of Protestantism in both America and Great Britain. As to resources, the black papacy, even as its martial strategy brought its own organization to apparent oblivion, had instant call on the vast reserve of Roman Catholic wealth - as the old Spanish proverb goes, *"Don Dinero es muy Catolico."* Ricci's ability to direct an international covert operation was stated and defined by the momentous publication of *The Thirteen Articles* in what was then the language of international diplomacy. Finally, a man commanding unlimited financial resources and unlimited obedience of an unlimited supply of well-trained personnel enjoys unlimited opportunity to do anything possible, and some things deemed impossible. To deny that Lorenzo Ricci orchestrated American Independence may be to ignore his talent and demean his office.

Let us move now to the next chapter, and begin our examination of how the General did it.

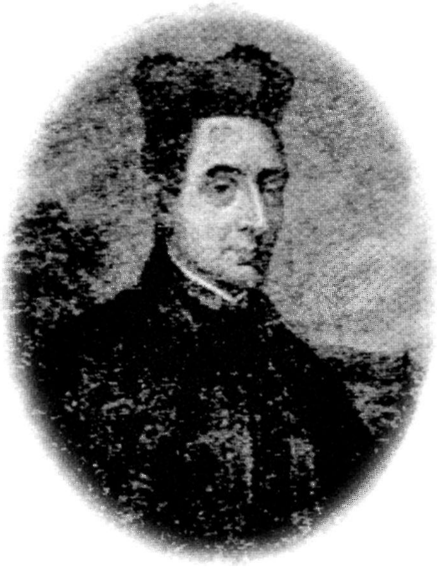

LORENZO RICCI A/K/A LAURENCE RICHEY.
(From a painting believed contemporaneous.)

Chapter 12

LORENZO RICCI'S WAR

LORENZO RICCI'S strategy of dividing the British imperial system can be discerned in events occurring as early as 1752. In that year, Catholic interests in America were rather poorly managed by the Congregation for the Propaganda at Rome, depending upon a tangle of ambassadors (or nuncios) and intermediaries in Madrid, Paris, London, and Brussels. The Jesuit mission was to consolidate these often adversarial parts into a dynamic and independent whole governed directly from the mind of the black papacy.

In 1752, the Society of Jesus was brilliantly powerful, and had been so for nearly a century. "Most statesmen," a fine Jesuit historian has written, "reckoned that the Society was a major force in politics, an international Great Power, acting primarily for its own intetests."[1] Lorenzo Ricci had been Spiritual Father of this great power for nearly a year. Although that title assured him of unanimous election as Superior General upon the demise of General

Luigi Centurioni, it presently endowed him with diplomatic oversight embracing the whole world. Ricci's particular geographic interests included France and its possessions in New France - the whole Mississippi valley, from Canada and the Great Lakes down to the Gulf of Mexico; and England and its colonies in New England - all the lands to the south of French Canada and north of Spanish Florida stretching from the Atlantic to the Pacific coasts.

Both empires were to a certain extent Jesuit-driven. Great Britain was run by the Catholic-loathing system of Freemasonry, whose highest adepts obeyed the revered "unknown superior." France was run by Louis XV, who obeyed the same superior through his Jesuit confessor, Père de Sacy. De Sacy's good-natured ministry reduced the King's dinner, on a strict fast day, from eight courses to five, and limited his wine consumption to three glasses per sitting.

Sun-tzu wrote;

> I demand the art of making enemies move as one wishes. Those who possess that admirable art know how to arrange their men & the army they command in such a way that they make the enemy come toward them whenever they judge it appropriate. They know how to make generous gifts when appropriate, even to those they wish to conquer. They give to the enemy & the enemy receives; they abandon things to him & he comes to take them. They are ready for anything, they take advantage of any circumstance. They do not fully trust those whom they employ but choose others to be their overseers. They do not count on their own strength alone but use other means which they believe can be useful to them. They consider the men against whom they must fight to be stones or pieces of wood which they have been asked to roll down a slope. You, therefore, who are commanding an army must act in such a way that the enemy is in your hands like a round stone that you have caused to roll down a mountain a thousand paces high. Thus it will be recognized that you have power & authority, and that you are truly worthy of the position you occupy.

Lorenzo Ricci transformed British and French colonial personnel into round stones by creating a crisis between their conflicting imperial claims to dominion in North America. In 1752 his spiritual fatherhood directed French soldiers and their Indian allies to destroy the important British colonial trading center on the upper Great Miami river. Then followed the plundering, capture or killing – not murdering, but papally-absolved extirpating – of every English-speaking trader in the upper Ohio valley that the French and Indians could locate. Although these lands were legally British, dating from a grant to Virginia by King James I in 1609, the important Virginia families failed to empathize with the misfortunes of explorer-inhabitants in such remote and undeveloped wilderness. But when, toward the end of 1752, the Virginia government granted an additional 1,500,000 acres of Ohio valley land, empathies burst into bloom. Suddenly the Virginians had something to lose, and it was being lost to a band of Roman Catholics and their Indian converts.

In 1753, French engineers constructed a chain of forts connecting Lake Erie with the Ohio River. The governor of Virginia dispatched a small militia to confront these Catholic trespassers. Leading the militia was a recent initiate into the Fredericksburg Masonic Lodge, twenty-one-year-old Major George Washington. Washington warned the garrison at Fort LeBoeuf that it was illegally occupying Virginia real estate "so notoriously known to be the property of the Crown of Great Britain." He read aloud the governor's demand that they depart. The French ignored him and he returned home.

Despite the clear indication that the French intended not to concede to the governor's demands, Virginia encouraged the Ohio Company to build a palisaded fort at the fork where the Allegheny and Monongahela Rivers join to create the Ohio River – where Pittsburgh now stands. The government pledged Virginian troops to support the venture.

Construction began in the spring of 1754. Almost immediately, French and Indians descended upon the tiny crew of woodcutters and carpenters and overwhelmed them. By the time Washington, now a Lieutenant Colonel, could reach the scene, he was forced by Catholic fire-power to fall back to Fort Necessity. Here Washington surrendered on July 4. It was this clash between British and French armies that precipitated what was called by contemporary writers "The Maritime War," or "Great War," or "Great War for the Empire," or "Seven Years' War," or "French and Indian Wars." It could more appropriately be called "Lorenzo Ricci's War."

As these rounded stones began rolling, more succumbed to Ricci's gentle touch. The colony most affected by the fighting was meek Pennsylvania, the colony originally settled by adherents of the renowned Quaker leader, William Penn. Penn had been dead a whole generation, and ownership of his colony had devolved upon a British corporation which included some of Penn's descendants and was known austerely as "the Proprietors." The Proprietors wanted wars in Pennsylvania to be fought by Pennsylvanians. The Quakers, who controlled the Assembly, abhorred the notion of Pensylvanians bearing arms. When the Assembly voted to raise a war chest, the Quakers stepped down and out of power. First, however, they appointed their most celebrated member, Dr. Benjamin Franklin, official printer of Pennsylvania's paper currency, to sail to London and represent them against the Proprietors.

Dr. Franklin, who happened to be Grand Master of Pennsylvania Freemasonry, arrived in London to find that King George II, having made peace with France as recently as 1748, favored the Proprietors. The king's attitude was "Let Americans fight Americans." Franklin explained that Virginia's undisciplined militiamen and the pacifists of Pennsylvania were no match for seasoned French regulars and savage Indian braves. France was jeopardizing British imperial interests. The king acquiesced to Franklin's reasoning and ordered General Edward Braddock to take a small army to clear the forks of the Ohio of the French trespassers. He also sent Admiral Edward Boscawen's fleet to the Gulf of St. Lawrence to prevent the arrival of more French reinforcements in Canada. All this was in perfect obedience to Lorenzo Ricci's strategy of establishing a British military presence in America. The Crown ultimately would require the Americans to pay for this presence, which would expose the colonists to taxation from afar, which they could readily be fomented to resist. The resistance would be met with harassment, which would incite rebellion and, ultimately, division.

The philosophical similarities between Quakers and Loyolan gnosticism should not escape our notice. "Quaker," the term, was first used by an English judge in 1650 to ridicule how the leader of that denomination, George Fox, admonished him to "tremble at the Word of the Lord!" Fox summoned all who sought spiritual truth and peace to come out of the churches and seek an intimate, "personal relationship with Christ." Jesus of the Quakers spoke through inner illumination, a light available to all, having nothing to do with outward forms of ceremony, ritual, or creed. To the Quaker, every person was a walking church; every heart was God's altar and shrine. There was no need, therefore, to attend "steeple houses," or pay taxes to support a state church clergy, or doff a hat to king or commoner, or fight wars, or distinguish between sex or social class. Such doctrine, of course, was highly offensive to the Church of England, and so the Quakers were mercilessly persecuted as treasonous criminals.

They found a haven across the Atlantic in the colony conveniently granted by King Charles II to William Penn, one of the more outspoken English Quakers. Charles granted the land to settle a debt the Crown owed Penn's deceased father, Admiral Sir William Penn. Knowledgeable contemporaries publicly charged the younger Penn with being "a Jesuit in disguise." Actually, all Catholic clergy in England were to a certain extent "in disguise," thanks to a law prohibiting Roman Catholics from wearing clerical garb. Promulgated with the intent of handicapping "Popery," the law might as well have been written by Jesuits, as its effect reduced the Jesuit profile to nothing – the level preferred by covert militias. Eighteenth-century London was teeming with disguised Jesuit missioners trained at places like St. Omer's in moral theology (casuistry, equivocation, mental reservation), as well as espionage, cloak-and-dagger diplomacy, guerrilla tactics, and the manipulation of public opinion.

William Perm's higher education began at Cardinal Wolsey's endowment for the furtherance of papal supremacy, Christ Church College at Oxford. Before completing Oxford, Penn was sent by his father to the small University of Saumer, France. Penn left Saumer an accomplished propagandist less interested in achieving specific biblical objectives ("Much reading is an oppression of the mind," he would later advise his children) than in establishing illuminated social justice through reason and natural understanding. His most influential work, the pamphlet "No Cross, No Crown," published in 1669, agitated for Quaker separatism. Charles II readily accommodated Penn's agitations by launching the Great Persecution of 1682, which created enormous migrations of diehard Protestants and Catholics alike to the American colonies. If Penn was not the Jesuit he was believed to be, he was at least a rather superior Jesuit product, another in a long train of Princes (designated "Proprietor" in Penn's case, deferring to the Quakers' dislike for titles of nobility) well-trained to populate, administer and defend their land-grants in obedience to the will of the Grantor. Penn's example, and Franklin's after him, inspired Franklin's esteemed masonic brother Jean-François Arouet, better known as Voltaire, a founder of the Enlightenment, to memorialize Quakers as the noblest kind of born-again European.

Yet well-informed Englishmen saw neither Quaker nor regeneration in Penn's curiously compromising friendship with James II, who succeeded Charles II in 1685. What possible league could a Quaker have with a King? Worse, a King converted to Roman Catholicism by Jesuits? Certainly no true Quaker could have written Penn's Charter for the City of Philadelphia, which amounted to his gift of that estate to the Church of England. In the Charter's Preamble, Penn stated: "I have, by virtue of the king's letters patent, under the great seal of England, erected the said town into a borough, and do, by these presents, erect the said town and borough into a City."[2] The name "city," in every case, signifies the location of a bishop's *see,* the seat of his authority (from the Latin *sedes),* and the territory under his supervision.[3] No place in England was called a City unless governed by a bishop – as in the See or City of Canterbury, See or City of York, See or City of London, of Bath and Wells, of Bristol, of Salisbury, etc. With the Philadelphia charter, Penn erected for the persecuting Church of England a nearly invisible mechanism for recycling the very victims of its persecutions. Indeed, Penn's last will and testament, which became effective with his death in England in 1718 at the age of 74, turned all Pennsylvania into the same mechanism with these words: "The government of my province of Pennsylvania, and territories thereunto belonging, and All Powers relating thereto, I give and devise to the most honourable the Earl of Oxford, and Earl Mortimer, and their heirs, upon trust, to dispose thereof to the Queen [Anne], or to any other person, to the best advantage and profit they can." With a stroke of Penn's quill, the children of the Quakers who had followed him out of the Church of England were literally given back. To become free of this bondage, the Quakers were obliged to align themselves with the Church of Rome, at least the black papacy. This alliance was facilitated by Benjamin Franklin, whose political career was built on defending the Quaker interests against the Proprietary heirs, which were the Church of England. Against this common enemy, Franklin and the Quakers united, knowingly or unknowingly, with the designs of the Roman Church Militant.

WHILE these stones rolled unstoppably toward their objective, Jesuit General Luigi Centurioni died. Early in May of 1758 the General Congregation arrived at Rome to choose his successor. On the last day of the month the Congregation unanimously elected Lorenzo Ricci, the Society's Spiritual Father and Secretary, as its eighteenth Black Pope.

Ricci, a professor of philosophy, theology, and the classics at the Roman College, was known for his patient, placid nature, his even temper. He inherited an organization in remarkably good shape. The Latin American missions were flourishing. A mission had just been established in Poland. Everywhere the schools and colleges were prospering. In the natural sciences, Jesuits were counted among the world's leading authorities. Their presence in economic and secular government had never been more imposing. As the papal nuncio to Vienna stated in a letter to his superior at the Vatican, "the Jesuits have the upper hand over everything, even the most prominent ministers of State, and domineer over them if they do not carry out their will."[4]

But the Society's legendary power could hinder Catholic activity in the Protestant missions. To defeat Great Britain without a battle Lorenzo Ricci required the abilities and resources of an important Maryland family, the Carrolls. The three Carroll sons, Daniel, John and their first cousin Charles, all now in their twenties, had been trained in Jesuit warfare at St. Omer's. John was teaching there. Charles was studying law at the Jesuit College Louis-le-Grand in Paris, about to undertake further studies at London's Inner Temple. Daniel – of Daniel's activities between 1753 and 1781, very little is known. What is well-known is that the Carroll lads were among the wealthiest Americans alive. The mother of Daniel and John, Eleanor Darnall, claimed direct descent from the Calverts, the owning family of original Maryland. She had come into possession of much of the land that Daniel would transfer to the District of Columbia. Charles Carroll stood to inherit America's largest private estate; later, John Adams would label him America's richest citizen.

Lorenzo Ricci could not win his War without the overt participation of the Carrolls. But New England was virulently Protestant. What Protestant leader would stoop to cooperate with devout Roman Catholics schooled in trickery by the all-powerful Jesuits? Would uniting with Jesuits not be laying America's future at the feet of the Bishop of Rome? In this consensus Ricci was able to discern a valuable negative weapon. If the stones of envy and hatred were given a gentle nudge, their own weight and momentum could spectacularly blast the Society of Jesus to smithereens. With the Society out of the way, Roman Catholicism would hang in the wind, defenseless. To a Protestant's perception, the Church would no longer be a forceful contender for political power. Sun-tzu advised a ruse known in the lingo of modern covert professionals as "blown cover as cover:"

> There will be times when you will lower yourself, and others when you pretend to be afraid. Sometimes you will feign weakness so that your enemies, opening the door to presumption & pride, come to attack you unwisely.... Give out false information about the state [you] are in ... [The enemy], believing [it] to be true, will act in consequence toward his Generals & all the Officers presently at his service....

Yes, sudden misfortune would bless the Society. Weakness and persecution would be transformed into magnificent new capital for building sympathetic relationships with other weak and persecuted people, such as the British colonists were destined soon to become. Without detailing his strategy (for Sun-tzu says "You will act in such a way that those who are inferior to you can never guess your intentions...."), Lorenzo Ricci affirmed to the General Congregation that stormclouds were gathering on the horizon. The Congregation summarily gave its understanding in obedience to the "hidden design" of their new Superior General – who occupied, after all, the place of Jesus. It issued a call for *esprit* to the brotherhood at large:

> If, God permitting it because of his hidden designs which we could do nothing else but adore, we are to become the butt of adversity, the Lord will not abandon those who remain attached and united to him; and as long as the Society is able to go to him with an open soul and a sincere heart, no other source of strength will be necessary for it.[5]

The Prime Minister of Portugal, Sebastian the Marquis de Pombal, had been conducting what the New Catholic Encyclopedia calls "a long campaign of calumnies, false rumors, distorted manipulation of incidents, all intent on undermining the Jesuits' reputation by ascribing to them nefarious doctrines, purposes, and practices." Among Pombal's allegations were that the Jesuits had incited revolts in Paraguay (a Portuguese colony), had traded illegally, had even conspired to murder the King. Pombal supported his claim with numerous anti-Jesuit tracts and inflammatory pastoral letters, which he submitted to Parliament. In the Society's defense, a group of bishops showered Pope Clement XIII with letters commending the Jesuits for their invaluable work. Clement, known by Jesuit historians as "a Jesuited pope,"[6] hastened to send copies of these endorsements to Lorenzo Ricci for publication under the title "Catholic Ecclesiastical Judgment for the Present Status of the Society of Jesus." Publication of these endorsements would show the world that the Society enjoyed the solid support of the Roman hierarchy. Significantly, *Ricci declined to publish them.*

On January 19, 1759, the Marquis de Pombal procured a royal decree expelling the Jesuits from Portugal and its overseas colonies. More than a thousand Jesuit fathers were crammed into ships and dumped on the shores of the Papal States (then an area in central Italy only slightly more spacious than Switzerland). Two hundred-fifty fathers were cast into dungeons, many perishing from maltreatment. The Portuguese Crown seized all the Society's houses, churches, and colleges, as well.

STONES were then nudged in France. The Superior of a Jesuit mission in the Caribbean, Père LaValette, had obtained commercial credit to finance his mission in Martinique. When it happened that he could no longer pay his debt, a trading firm in Marseilles alleged damages against him of more than two million francs. LaValette asked Lorenzo Ricci for help. *Ricci turned him down.* The firm sued the Society in a French court and won. Ricci then appealed the case to the Parlement in Paris, which was more of a supreme court than a legislative body. His lawyers argued that the Society could not be held liable for personal debts of its members due to a prohibition laid down by St. Ignatius himself in the *Constitutions* against any member's doing business as a principal or partner. Although this claim was easily dismissible as a flimsy legal fiction, the court demanded evidence to support it. This required Lorenzo Ricci to produce the *Constitutions,* which had never before been publicly revealed. When the volumes were brought to court and examined, the government attorneys had a field day. A lawyer from Brittany named LaChatolais charged that the *Constitutions* was a handbook of "every known form of heresy, idolatry, and superstition, [which] provides tutelage in suicide, legicide, blasphemy, and every kind of impurity, usury, sorcery, murder, cruelty, hatred, vendetta, insurrection, and treason."[7]

As the LaValette case unfolded, during 1759 and 1760 Benjamin Franklin's beloved Voltaire slammed the Jesuits in two satirical plays mounted on the Parisian stage. Educated in the humanities and theatrical arts by Jesuits at the Collège Louis-le-Grand, Voltaire served the Society and the Catholic Church with distinction by becoming their chief critic and debunker, much in the way Will Rogers served Franklin Roosevelt's administration by lampooning New Deal politicians, or in the way Keystone Cops tickled an America being transformed into a police state. Audiences at *Candide* howled at Jesuit buffoons strutting about self-importantly drilling their Paraguayan Indian troops. In *The Account of the Sickness, Confession, Death and Apparition of the Jesuit Berthier,* the editor of a Jesuit literary review who dies of sheer boredom challenges the notion that the Society is even worthy of existence. With his predecessor Blaise Pascal (whose *Provincial Letters* had alerted earlier generations to the egomania of high Jesuitry), Voltaire provided a spirit of ridicule which gave Jesuit-bashing the feel of good sport.

Lorenzo Ricci's handling of the LaValette case resulted in a resolution, passed by Parlement on August 6, 1762, condemning the Jesuits as "endangering the Christian faith, disturbing the peace of the Church, and in general building up far less than they destroy." The resolution continued:

> The Society of Jesus by its very nature is inadmissible in any properly ordered State as contrary to natural law, attacking all temporal and spiritual authority, and tending to introduce into Church and State, under the specious veil of a religious Institute, not an Order truly aspiring towards evangelical perfection, but rather a political organization whose essence consists in a continual activity, by all sorts of ways, direct and indirect, secret and public, to gain absolute independence and then the usurpa-

> tion of all authority.... They outrage the laws of nature and as enemies of the laws of France should be irrevocably expelled.

Louis XV being an absolute monarch, parliamentary resolutions were worthless without his signature. Louis being obedient to his Jesuits, it was highly unlikely that he would ever sign a resolution condemning the Jesuits. *Yet sign it he did.* And why he did has remained a point of debate. Some say his mistress, Madame de Pompadour, craved vengeance against court Jesuits for implacably denying her a mass. Others say the king needed Parlement's favor to bail him out of debt. I submit that Louis signed because Lorenzo Ricci wanted him to.

When the resolution became law, Ricci released the French Jesuits from their vows. The Society as an institution ceased to exist on French soil. Louis consented to allow the Jesuits to remain in France, but as "regular clergy." Others went into exile. (Père LaValette, whose financial problems had brought on the debacle, was exiled by Ricci to live the rest of his life as a private citizen in England. When the war that had begun in the Ohio valley reached Martinique, the English occupied that tiny island and took over the Jesuit plantations, selling them, slaves and all, for more than enough money to have paid off LaValette's debts.)

In the midst of their decomposing glory, the Jesuits received from Clement XIII an awesome gift designed to make welcome the most humiliating of circumstances. This was the mass and office of the Sacred Heart, with its icon of a realistically bloody heart plucked from Christ's ribcage and ignited by an eternal flame. Based on visions resulting from the Spiritual Exercises made by Ste. Margaret-Marie Alacoque (1647-90) as promoted by her Jesuit spiritual director, Claude de la Colombière, Sacred Heart is a gnostic Jesuit production centering on the Saviour's perfect humanity. "By devotion to my Heart," Jesus supposedly revealed to Alacoque, "tepid souls shall grow fervent, and fervent souls shall quickly mount to high perfection." Sacred Heart summons true believers to pay a debt of "reparation" for the world's sins. The debt is payable only by prayers, penances, masses, and (significantly for this epoch in the Society's history) social action. John Carroll, so indispensable for the outworking of the American Revolution, was profoundly devoted to Sacred Heart.

Louis xv was the effective head of the "Family Compact," an agreement between reigning Bourbon monarchs to present a united front before the rest of the world "on important measures." Once he had dissolved the Jesuits in France, he advised other Bourbons to do likewise, although he could not name anything to be gained politically, economically, or financially by the Society's dissolution. The issue "still remains puzzling and problematic" (Professor Martin says[8]) unless considered (I submit) in light of Sun-tzuan ruse.

At any rate, the Bourbon Charles III of Spain followed Louis' advisory. Charles convened a special commission to prepare a master plan for ousting the Jesuits. No one could produce any hard evidence against the Society. But there were plenty of rumors. A mob that had risen up to protest a law Charles had passed forbidding the wearing of wide sombreros was said to have been fomented by Jesuits. A rumor swept across Spain that the Jesuits were nursing a plot to assassinate Charles. The Jesuits supposedly had proof that the king was technically a bastard and should be deposed. None of these rumors were ever substantiated. Moreover, *General Ricci ordered the Jesuits to do nothing to dispel them.* The result was that forty-six of the sixty Spanish bishops decided that Spain should follow the Marquis de Pombal and oust the Society.

And so the commission drafted an expulsion order, which Charles signed on February 27, 1767. The order was executed by ambush, reminiscent of Philip IV's move against the Knights Templar in 1312. Charles sent out sealed envelopes marked "Not to be opened before sunrise of April 2 on pain of death" to all provincial viceroys and military commanders. When sunrise came and the recipients opened their envelopes, they discovered two letters inside. The first ordered them to place troops around the Jesuit residences and colleges during the night of April 2, to arrest all Jesuits, and to arrange for them to be placed aboard waiting ships at certain docks. "If a single Jesuit," concluded the king, "even though sick or dying, is still to be found in the area under your command after the embarcation, prepare yourself to face summary execution."

The second letter was a copy of King Charles' original order of expulsion, which began "Being swayed by just and legitimate reasons which shall remain sealed within my royal breast forever," and went on to say that "all members of the Society of Jesus are to leave my kingdoms [Castille, Aragon, Navarre, and the other formerly independent kingdoms that made up Spain] and all their goods are declared forfeit ... by virtue of the highest power, which the Lord God Almighty has confided into my hands." The king made sure to discourage any investigation into causes: "It is not for subjects to question the wisdom or to seek to interpret the decisions of their sovereign."

Only days before April 2, the Spanish ambassador to the Holy See presented a document from Charles to Pope Clement XIII that explained,

> Your Holiness knows as well as anyone else that a sovereign's first duty is to ensure the peace of his dominions and the tranquillity of his subjects. In the fulfillment of this sovereign task, I have found it necessary to expel all the Jesuits residing in my kingdoms and to commit them directly to Your Holiness' wise stewardship in the States of the Church.... I beg Your Holiness to consider that my decision is unalterable and has been made as the result of mature reflection and all due consideration for the consequences....

Clement, the likelihood of whose submission to the will of Lorenzo Ricci should not be underestimated, responded in a melodramatic vein, as though playing for an audience: "Of all the shocks I have had to endure in the nine unhappy years of my pontificate, this one, of which Your Majesty has informed me, is the worst." The pope had little more to say, except that the king may have placed himself in danger of eternal damnation.

The order was executed during the night of April second and third. Some six thousand Jesuits were rounded up throughout Spain. They were crammed into the lower decks of twenty-two watships. In May 1767 the gruesome fleet appeared off Civitavecchia, the port of the Papal States, and – amazingly, *was fired upon by shore artillery!* The ships were denied permission to land their human cargo *by order of the pope himself, pursuant to a conference with Lorenzo Ricci!* Historians are at a loss to explain why Clement, so devoted to the Jesuits, would impose such cruelty upon his beloveds in their hour of need. The most plausible answer, I would suggest, is that his understanding was obedient to the inscrutable command of his General, whose exceedingly private objective, after all, was to disqualify the Society of Jesus and the Roman Catholic Church as viable enemies of Protestantism, at least in the North American colonies. No longer enemies, they could develop personal alliances. The suffering priests, the guns of Civitavecchia, were all explained in Amiot's Sun-tzu:

> Your army, accustomed to not knowing your plans, will he equally unaware of the peril which threatens it. A good General takes advantage of everything. But he can only do that because he has operated in the greatest secrecy, because he knows how to remain cool-headed & because he governs with uprightness. At the same time, however, his men are constantly misled by what they see & hear. He manages for his troops never to know what they must do nor what orders they must receive.... If his own people are unaware of his plans, how can the enemy discover them?

Over the next few months, thousands more Jesuits were expelled from the remaining Bourbon states of Naples, Parma, Malta, and Spanish America. Jesuits in French America (Quebec) and New England were left undisturbed, as were those in Austria. In October 1768 the Austrian Empress Maria-Theresa, a Habsburg, wrote her Jesuit confessor, Father Koffler: "My dear fathet, there is no cause for concern; as long as I am alive you have nothing to fear." But Maria-Theresa hoped to marry her two daughters to Bourbon princes, Caroline to the son of the Spanish king, Marie-Antoinette to the son of Louis XV. Bourbon ambassadors advised her that unless she expelled the Jesuits, she would have to look elsewhere for sons-in-law. The Empress reneged on her promise to Father Koffler, expelled the Jesuits, and the girls got their men. (Marie-Antoinette's marriage would end with the execution of her husband, Louis XVI, in January 1793. Nine months later, she would die the same way, decapitated by the guillotine. This device bears the name of the French Revolutionist who in 1792 first suggested its use in administering the death penalty, Dr. Josef Guillotin. Dr. Guillotin was a disestablished Jesuit.)

In January 1769 the ambassadors from France, Spain, and Portugal visited Clement XIII to demand "the complete and utter suppression of the Society of Jesus." Clement called for a special consistory of the College of Cardinals to deliberate the question. But when the cardinals convened February 3, it was not to discuss Bourbon ultimatums, but to choose Clement's successor. For the 76-year-old pope had died the night before "of an apoplectic attack," said the official record, a heart attack attributed to the pressures applied by the Bourbon diplomats.

For nearly three months, one question charged the turbulent conclave: Should the next pope be for or against the Jesuits? The cardinals' choice of Lorenzo Ganganelli was a triumph for Lorenzo Ricci. Although Ganganelli was a Franciscan, he had colleagued with Jesuits as a special consultant to the Inquisition. His celebrated book *Diatriba theologica* (1743) had been dedicated to Ignatius Loyola. Moreover, Ganganelli literally owed his papacy to Lorenzo Ricci, as it was Ricci who had sponsored his nomination for cardinal in 1759.[9] Almost immediately after receiving the red hat Ganganelli had shown evidence of cooperating with General Ricci's strategy of gradually disestablishing the Society of Jesus. *Oxford Book of Popes* indicates a sudden and unexplainable habit change: "Hitherto regarded as a friend of the Jesuits, Cardinal Ganganelli now distanced himself from them." And now, a decade later, calling himself Clement XIV, Ganganelli presented what the Catholic Encyclopedia calls "in *appearance* a hostile attitude" toward the Jesuits, an *apparent* hostility, a theatrical hostility that masked an involved loyalty toward the Society. Clement XIV would do whatever was necessary to help the Society win victory without doing battle, even if it meant obliterating the Society.

The Bourbons needed appeasing. Hastily, Clement promised Charles III of Spain forthcoming documents necessary to "proclaim to all the world the wisdom of Your Majesty's decision to expel the Jesuits as unruly and rebellious subjects." He assured Louis XV of France also of a "plan for the complete suppression of this society." On Maundy Thursday 1770, Clement omitted the annual reading of *In coena Domini* ("On the Lord's supper"). The omission was an astonishing statement. This celebrated bull, first proclaimed in 1568 by Pope Pius V, arrogantly reminded kings that they were but vassals of the papacy. Suddenly discontinuing this assertion flattered the royal self-importance, inviting crowned heads to stay on the anti-Jesuit, anti-Church track so necessary for the fulfillment of Lorenzo Ricci's secret designs in England and America. It surely evidences Clement's involvement in the strategy of feigned weakness in order to conceal what Sun-tzu called "an order that nothing can interrupt." The non-reading of In *coena Domini* rang the deathknell of the strong-armed white papacy as manifest by Ricci's political theorist, "Justinius Febronius," in his 1763 masterpiece On *the State of the Church & the Legitimate Power of the Roman Pontiff* – about which more presently.

For more than eighty years, the papacy had supported Rome-based members of the Stuart monarchs exiled from England for being Roman Catholics. Not only did Clement XIV diminish this tradition to almost nothing, in 1772 he began extending a highly visible and most cordial hospitality to the Protestant King George III and his family. This tableau was enormously disturbing to American Protestants, who at that time were having extreme difficulties with George. The prospect of England reuniting with Rome gave them all the more reason to strive for what Lorenzo Ricci wanted, their independence.

Finally, on July 21, 1773, Clement XIV delivered on his promise by signing the brief *Dominus ac Redemptor noster* ("God and our Redeemer"). The brief "dissolved, suppressed, disbanded, and abolished" the Society of Jesus "for all eternity" so as "to establish a real and enduring peace within the Church." All the Jesuits' "offices, authorities, and functions" were declared "null and void, and all their houses, colleges, hospices, and any other places occupied by them to be hereby disestablished, no matter in what province, state, or kingdom they might be found."

Clement appointed five cardinals, an archbishop, a bishop, two theologians, and other ecclesiastical dignitaries to supervise the Disestablishment. None of the confiscated Jesuit records, correspondence, and accounts showed any incriminating evidence.

Although Lorenzo Ricci lived a short walk from the pope's palace at St. Peter's, notice of the Disestablishment was not served upon him until mid-August. Guards took the General into custody at his offices in Number 45 Piazza del Gesu. They removed him to the English College a few blocks away. He remained there five weeks. Things were then happening in England and America that make Ricci's presence in the English College extraordinarily significant. We shall consider those happenings in a forthcoming chapter

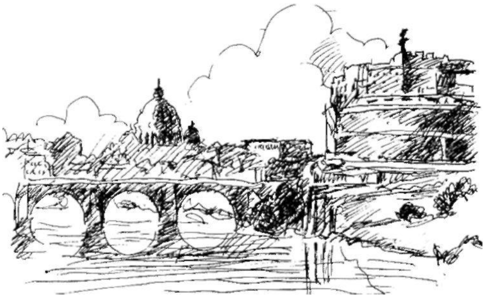

View of St. Peter's Basilica from Castel Sant'Angelo

Toward the end of September, Lorenzo Ricci was taken from the English College to Castel Sant'Angelo, a medieval fortress whose dungeons suggest a prison. His detention was probably less demeaning than we might imagine, as Sant'Angelo contained quite elegant rooms. Popes often used them as a convenient resort from administrative stresses. In fact, a secret underground tunnel connected Sant'Angelo to the papal palace at the Vatican. It would be consistent with Lorenzo Ricci's position and strategy for him to stay in personal, secret contact with Clement XIV by means of this tunnel.

On September 22, 1774, the first anniversary of Ricci's detention at Sant'Angelo, Clement died. He was sixty-nine. He had suffered the last year of his life in severe depression, it was said, with morbid paranoia over assassination. His corpse decomposed rapidly, feeding rumors of death by poison, rumors which his famous last words tended to confirm: "Mercy! Mercy! *Compulsus feci*!" ("I was compelled to do it!") For many years afterward, historians would wonder just whom Ganganelli was addressing: God? A vengeful Jesuit assassin? Ricci? What was the "it" he was compelled to do? Disestablish the Jesuits? Commit suicide? The definitive answer may never be known, because the pope's personal papers and effects decomposed as rapidly as his flesh. What is quite known, though, is that the death of Clement XIV, in the words of *Oxford Book of Popes,* "brought the prestige of the papacy to its lowest level in centuries." Which is precisely what Lorenzo Ricci needed for his American Revolution to happen.

WE now proceed to examine the structured darkness of the men who led the attack against the Society of Jesus. It was the same darkness from whence came not only the Englishmen who turned their kingdom into a hated tyranny, but also the Americans who advocated rebellion against that tyranny. The darkness is called Freemasonry, and it is the subject of our next chapter.

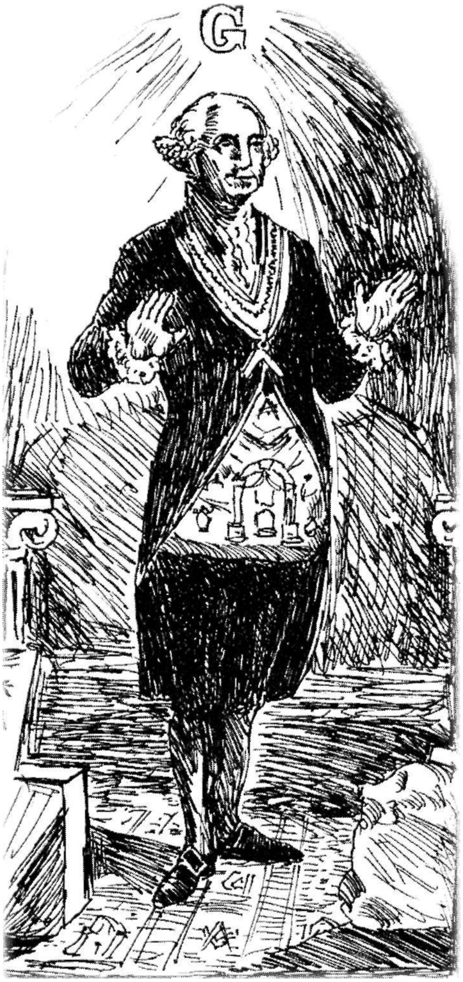

WASHINGTON IN MASONIC REGALIA
(From a Currier & Ives engraving, 1868.)

Chapter 13

THE SECRET BRIDGE

> *"The papal prohibition might even have encouraged Masonry by identifying opposition to the group with Catholic tyranny and superstition."*
>
> — STEVEN C. BULLOCK,
> REVOLUTIONARY BROTHERHOOD, 1996

THE *New Catholic Encyclopedia* identifies the men who attacked the Society of Jesus as "the radical devotees of the rationalistic Enlightenment – richly talented and influential writers, such as Voltaire, Rousseau, and other '*philosophes*' among the Encyclopedists, the followers of Freemasonry, and high placed government officials." Attacking the Jesuits was for them "a step toward their ultimate objective of abolishing all religious orders, the papacy, and finally the Church itself."

The masterpiece of the encyclopedists (most of whom happened to be *philosophes),* was the monumental *Encyclopedia of Sciences, Arts, and Trades* (1743-1751). The *Encyclopedia* was the flame of the Enlightenment, the fulfillment of Cardinal Wolsey's dream of flooding the world with print containing "learning against learning." It brought so much learning (secular learning, as against Scriptural learning) that it became its own paradigm demanding radical change in existing norms. The Enlightenment called for a "new age" that placed Reason above any Church, above even the Bible. The new age issued in the elegant neo-gnostic religion of Deism, the thinking man's alternative to Roman Catholicism and its imperious hold on the human conscience.

Nowhere was Deism more methodically practiced than "around the altars of Freemasonry," as the great Masonic scholar Albert Pike put it. Here, wrote Pike in his influential *Morals and Dogma* (1871), "the Christian, the Hebrew, the Moslem, the Brahmin, the followers of Confucius and Zoroaster, can assemble as brethren and unite in prayer to the one God who is above all gods." The brethren prayerfully climb the gnostic pyramid of successive illumination until, hopefully, a oneness with the supreme God is attained. As Pike explained, the Deists (like the papacy) looked upon the Bible as something of a stumbling block:

> The Freemason does not pretend to dogmatic certainty, nor vainly imagine such certainty attainable. He considers that if there were no written revelation, he could safely rest the hopes that animate him and the principles that guide him, on the deductions of reason and the convictions of instinct and consciousness.
>
> He studies the wonders of the Heavens, the framework and revolutions of the Earth, the mysterious beauties and adaptations of animal existence, the moral and material constitution of the human creature, so fearfully and wonderfully made; and is satisfied that God IS....

Most of the *philosophes,* including Frederick the Great, the Protestant King of Prussia who subsidized the entire *Encyclopedia* project, were Deistic brethren. As were the "high placed government officials" who pushed for the disestablishment of the Jesuits. All the Bourbon monarchs employed as their official advisors "ardent members of the Lodge," to use Professor Martin's phrase.[1] The Marquis de Pombal of Portugal was a Mason. Charles III's advisor the Count de Aranda, Louis XV's Minister de Tillot and the Duc de Choiseul, as well as Maria-Theresa's Prince von Kaunitz and Gerard von Swieten – all belonged to the secret brotherhood.

Since it was no secret that the Enlightenment aimed to make Roman Catholicism passée, Pope Clement XII promulgated in 1728 the constitution In *eminenti,* which appeared to condemn Freemasonry thusly:

> *CONDEMNATIO SOCIETATIS DE CONVENTICULORUM DE* FREEMASONS, UNDER THE PENALTY *IPSO FACTO* INCURRED, OR EXCOMMUNICATION; ABSOLUTION FROM IT BEING RESERVED TO *PONTIFEX MAXIMUS*
>
> Free Masons of whatever sect or religion, confederate together in a close and inscrutable bond, according to secret laws and orders agreed upon between them, and bind themselves as well by strict oath taken on the Bible as by the imprecations of heavy punishments to preserve their mysteries with inviolable secrecy___
>
> The great mischiefs which generally accrue from secret bodies are antagonist to civil and canonical laws.
>
> Wherefore, by the advice of the cardinals and of our mere motion, and from the plenitude of the apostolic power, we do condemn and prohibit the meetings of the above-named society of Free Masons.
>
> We strictly command that no one, under any pretext or color, dare to presume to promote, favor, admit, or conceal in their houses members of assemblies of this abominable order, nor in any way aid or assist in their meeting in any place, or to administer medicine to them in their sickness, or in any manner, directly or indirectly, by themselves or others, afford them counsel or help in their hour of trial and affliction, or persuade others to join said Order....

While *Eminenti's* stern rhetoric, which was renewed by Benedict XIV in 1751, seems to dig a wide ocean between Catholicism and Freemasonry, its fruits tell another story. Why, for example, were the Bourbon monarchs, all of them Roman Catholic, never penalized or excommunicated for admitting, promoting, and favoring Masonic advisors? And why, a decade after the Marquis de Pombal had shipped the Jesuits out of Portugal, did Clement XIV send an appeasing nuncio to the Portuguese court, elevate Pombal's brother to Bishop, and confirm all Pombal's nominees in bishoprics?[2] The answer, of course, is contained in the bull's title, which provides that absolution from penalties or excommunication is "reserved to *Pontifex Maximus.*" That is to say, associating with the abomination of Freemasonry, if done for a cause valuable to the papacy (such as weakening the Jesuits to the point everybody assumes they're no longer a threat to Protestantism), will be absolved by the papacy. Given the historical context, does any other answer make sense?

The leading Jesuit-bashers were not only Freemasons, they were also the product of Jesuit learning against learning. It was the *ratio studiorum* – the Medici Library's gnostic wisdom absorbed in an ambiance of casuistry, equivocation, mental reservation, and obedience of the understanding, combined with smatterings of Holy Scripture usually filtered through the commentaries of Church doctors – that had turned two centuries of Jesuited students into secular *philosophes.* The *ratio studiorum* dictated the form and scope of the *Encyclopedia,* which in turn codified the Enlightenment paradigm, whose Deistic litany was preached "around the altars of Freemasonry."

Hold Freemasonry up to the light and you cannot help but see the black papacy's watermark. Isn't it reasonable, given the circumstances, that the "G" in the center of the familiar Masonic emblem represents the initial of *"Gesu,"* the residence of the black popes at the Jesuits' world headquarters at Number 5, Borgo Sancto Spiritu, in Rome? Freemasons wouldn't suspect this, nor would Jesuits. It would be information reserved uniquely to the unknown superior, who shares what he knows with no one. "Your enemies will serve you without their wishes," said Sun-tzu, "or even their knowledge."

Freemasonry was the natural, the reasonable, the only intelligent way for the Roman Catholic Church to control (a) the ongoing affront of Protestantism, (b) the increase in "divine right" kings heading their own national churches independent of Vatican control, and (c) the incredible explosion of international mercantilism. Like the aquatic creature whose mouth resembles a comfortable resting place to its prey, the Lodges were a sagacious recycling of the old Templar infrastructure into a dynamic spiritual and economic brotherhood that gave Protestants, Jews, Buddhists, Muslims, agnostics, and anyone else an opportunity to build a better life outside Roman Catholicism, yet still under the Church's superintending eye. For Sun-tzu said, "The General sees all, hears all, does all, and in appearance is not involved with anything." The Jesuit General is the disembodied eye substituting for the pyramid's missing capstone, the stone the builders rejected.

The Lodge's secrecy and its condemnation by the Church were essential to sustaining the integrity of both institutions. And so the deepest Masonic secret, the secret that not even their Grandest Masters could penetrate, was that all their secrets were known to one man alone, the Superior General of the Society of Jesus. This should not surprise anyone aware of how thoroughly Freemasonry is suffused with Jesuitic technique. Both Freemasonry and the Society of Jesus are (a) humanist religious orders, (b) secretive, (c) fraternal, (d) socially conscientious and politically active – questing, like Aeneas, the prototypical Roman, for the greatest good for the greatest number. Both orders (e) hold Tradition, Reason, and Experience in equal if not greater esteem than the Bible, (f) employ carefully structured programs of gnostic visualization to achieve an ever-increasing knowledge of the divine, (g) condone "the end justifies the means," and (h) require absolute obedience, secured by a blood oath, to a hierarchy of superiors culminating in the Jesuit General, whose orders are so wisely suited to the recipient that they are obeyed as though willed by the recipient himself.

THE first recorded member of American Freemasonry was Daniel Coxe, who was constituted Provincial Grand Master of the provinces of New York, New Jersey, and Pennsylvania on June 5, 1730, on a deputation granted by the Duke of Norfolk, Grand Master of Masons in England.[5] Evidently, Coxe was an industrious recruiter. Minutes of a meeting of the Grand Lodge of London on January 29, 1731 reflect that "Coxe's health was proposed and drank [*sic*] as 'Provincial Grand Master of North America.'"

Daniel Coxe was actually a junior, according to Sidney Hayden's *Washington and His Compeers* (1868). He was "the son of Dr. Daniel Coxe of England, who was physician to the Queen of Charles II." Dr. Coxe must be presumed a Roman Catholic sympathizer, as both Charles and his Queen were Catholics. The Queen, Catherine of Braganza (Portugal), flaunted a huge Vatican entourage, for which she was continually harassed by death plots. Charles converted to Catholicism in exchange for money from Louis XIV of France under the terms of the Treaty of Dover.

The junior Daniel Coxe deserves wider recognition as an American visionary, or at least the sole apologist of some undisclosed visionary. Thirteen years before Benjamin Franklin's proposal of a "colonial Union" to the Albany congress in 1754, for which Franklin is credited with being the first to suggest a "united States," Coxe published in England a dissertation promoting a scheme to settle "an extensive tract of country lying on the Gulf of Mexico" owned by his father, the Queen's physician. The dissertation, entitled A *Description of the English Province of Carolina, by the Spaniards called Florida, and by the French La Louisiane,* promoted the elder Coxe's tract as an English province allied with New England against the Spanish, French, and Indians. It called for "all the colonies appertaining to the crown of Great Britain, on the northern continent of America, [to] be united under a legal, regular, and firm establishment; over which a lieutenant or supreme governor may be constituted and appointed to preside on the spot, to whom the governors of each colony shall be subordinate." With this union of governments under one president, Coxe foresaw "a great council or general convention of the estates of the colonies" to "meet together, consult and advise for the good of the whole." These "united states" would provide "for their mutual defense and safety, as well as, if necessary, for offense and invasion of their enemies" – independently of the protections of the British Crown. Of course, these imaginings became reality forty years later with the fulfillment of Lorenzo Ricci's strategy for dividing the British Empire. Considering the elements involved – lands owned by the Catholic Queen's physician, lands managed and promoted by the physician's son, who is a Freemason deputed to generate an American brotherhood by the eighth Duke of Norfolk, who himself was a member of England's premier Roman Catholic family – Coxe's dissertation appears to be the earliest formatting of the colonial conscience to divisive thinking by agents of the black papacy.

The Duke of Norfolk, "Grand Master of Masons in England," was also known as Thomas Howard, Earl of Arundell. His nephew, Henry, Lord Arundell, occupied Wardour Castle near Tisbury in Wiltshire at the time Clement XIV disestablished the Jesuits. We shall see how, in the autumn of 1773, it was to Lord Arundell's castle that John Carroll repaired when civil authorities closeci down the Jesuit school in Liège, Belgium, where Carroll had been teaching. For a year Carroll stayed at Wardour, serving as the Arundell family's tutor and chaplain before sailing for America to participate in the Revolution.

THIRTY-THIRD degree Masonic scholar Manly P. Hall, in his gnostic extravaganza *Secret Teachings of All Ages: An Encyclopedic Outline of Masonic, Hermetic, Qabbalistic and Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy* (1988), remarked that "not only were many founders of the United States Government Masons, but they received aid from a secret and August body existing in Europe, which helped them to establish this country for a peculiar and particular purpose known only to the initiated few."

Most histories of the American Government skim over the Masonic presence. Americans like their history told in high-definition icons of good and evil, liberty and tyranny, heroism and treason, might and right. They won't buy a heritage polluted by dark spots of mystery. Yet the greater part of American governmental heritage is almost wholly mysterious.

The man best qualified to become our country's greatest historian, certainly the man with the most complete access to primary sources in the Revolutionary cause, was Charles Thomson. An authentic classical scholar, a discreet Protestant steeped in Medici learning, Thomson was known as "Perpetual Secretary of the Con-

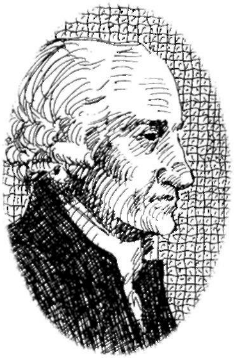

Charles Thomson, the man who talked the truth.

tinental Congress." He inscribed minutes of every Congressional session from 1774 until ratification of the Constitution in 1789. With William Barton, a Freemason, he designed the Great Seal of the United States of America: the choice of its Virgilian mottoes is credited exclusively to Thomson.

Among his contemporaries, Charles Thomson's name was synonymous with Truth. So accurate were his minutes of Pennsylvania's negotiations with the Delaware Indians that the Delawares called him *Wegh-wu-law-mo-end,* "the man who talks the truth." When he would take his daily reports of congressional proceedings to the streets, eager mobs would cry "Here comes Charles Thomson! Here comes the Truth!"

Once the Constitution was ratified, Charles Thomson retired to Harriton, his country home in Bryn Mawr. He destroyed his personal papers relative to the creation of the new republic. An article by Kenneth Boling in the *Pennsylvania Magazine of History and Biography* (1976) says that Thomson actually wrote a lengthy history of the Revolution, which he also destroyed. Thomson biographer J. Edwin Hendricks of Wake Forest suggests a fate other than destruction, alluding to "persistent rumors that the Thomson papers are in the Pennsylvania Masonic records." (Professor Hendricks assured me personally that numerous inquiries have failed to reflect Thomson's membership in Pennsylvania Masonry.) Whether Thomson destroyed his history or surrendered it to the crypt of secrecy, it is clear that he knew there were certain elements in the formation of American government that must, *must* be ignored. "If the truth were known," he told friends darkly, "many careers would be tarnished and the leadership of the nation would be weakened."[4]

And so Charles Thomson occupied the remaining forty years of his life translating the Septuagint, the Greek-language Bible, into English. Still, he was frequently requested to write the definitive insider's history of the Revolution. Dr. Benjamin Rush overheard Thomson's reply to one such request and recorded it in his diary:

> "No," said he, "I ought not, for I should contradict all the histories of the great events of the Revolution, and shew by my account of men, motives and measures, that we are wholly indebted to the agency of Providence for its successful issue. Let the world admire the supposed wisdom and valor of our great men. Perhaps they may adopt the qualities that have been ascribed to them, and thus good may be done. I shall not undeceive future generations."[5]

What I believe Thomson was meaning to say is simply that no historical account of the American Revolution can be truthful unless it discloses the role played by "*the agency of Providence.*" Notice that Thomson does not use the word "*Providence*" alone, which was understood in his day to mean "God" or "Christ." He does not say "*we are wholly indebted to* God," or "*we are wholly indebted to Christ,*" but rather to the "*agency*" thereof.

If Thomson knew the word "agency" was a synonym for "vicar," and I can't imagine that a professional linguist wouldn't, and if he knew that the popes had been called "vicars of Christ" since the fifth century, and I can't imagine that a biblical scholar of his quality wouldn't, then Thomson was most likely saying "*We are wholly indebted to the Vicar of Christ, that is, the Roman papacy.*"

But what a ridiculous statement to the post-Revolutionary American mindset! Who would have believed such an outrageous notion, coming from even the man who talks the truth? The embattled, degenerate, dying papacy could not possibly have effected the Revolution! Anyone foolish enough to run with this idea would have crashed headlong into a wall of ridicule. For Thomson, there was no future in telling what he knew. Since he chose not to undeceive future generations, the American people have lived according to histories that can be contradicted by truth. They have been served by careers and leaders that truth could tarnish and weaken. They seem comfortable in their deception, which is generally the case among consenting subjects to Roman rule.

Let's move now to the next chapter, wherein we shall see how the Jesuits, which we now recognize as the unsung architects of the Enlightenment, supplied the American colonists a philosophical basis for rebelling against Great Britain.

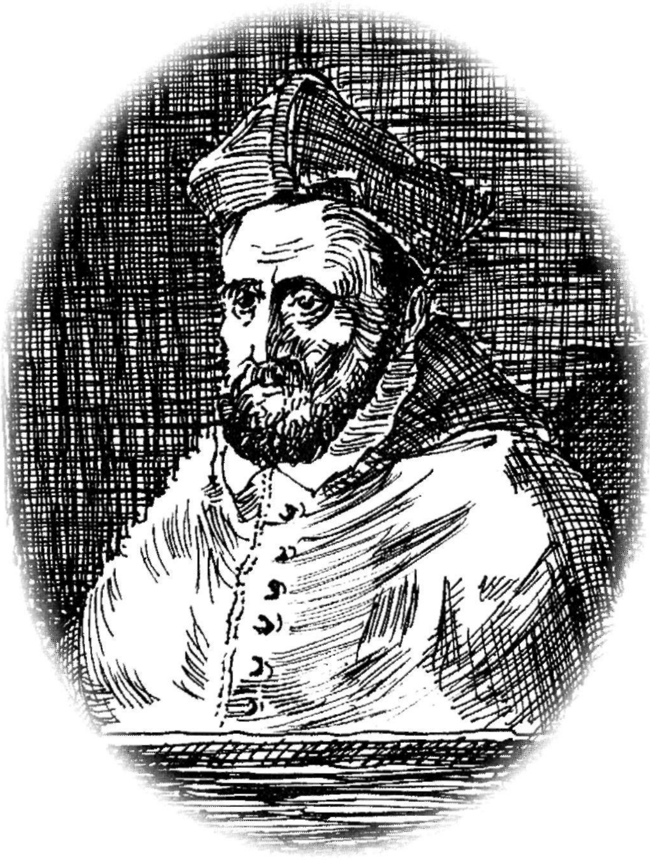

CARDINAL ROBERT BELLARMINE (1542-1641)
(After Passerotti's engraved portrait from life.)

Chapter 14

THE DOGMA OF INDEPENDENCE

THE JESUIT *ratio studiorum* imbued western culture with a purely Catholic political theory. This theory, as articulated by Deist *philosophes* and politicians, ultimately became the rhetorical mainspring of the American Revolution. It so impacted the world that its formulator and original apologist, a Jesuit priest named Robert Bellarmine, was created a Saint in 1930.

Prior to Henry VIII's break with the Roman papacy in the mid-1530s and subsequent creation of the Church of England, kings regarded themselves, within their respective realms, as the anointed vicars of God for secular purposes only. After Henry's schism, Protestant kings assumed God's anointment covered religious purposes as well. They became infallible popes of their own national churches. Following the biblical teaching that the ruler is "God's minister to thee for good," Protestant kings claimed to rule by Divine Right, holding absolute sway over their subjects. In the maxim of Divine Right's greatest champion and James I's private theologian, Sir Robert Filmer, “The King can do no wrong.”

Divine Right’s staunchest opponent was Robert Bellarmine, private theologian to the pope, Clement VIII (1592-1605), who made him Cardinal Bellarmine in 1599. Cardinal Bellarmine appealed to the self-interest of the common man, something the Divine Right system failed to do. He invented liberation theology. Drawing on Aristotle and St. Thomas Aquinas, Bellarmine maintained that God anointed no kings but instead gave sovereignty directly and naturally to the people. The people were free to confer their sovereignty upon whomever or whatever they chose. Should the people’s chosen sovereign prove himself (or itself) unworthy, the people had the right to depose him (or it) and start anew with any form of government they deemed necessary, whether monarchy, aristocracy, or republic.

Understandably, the Protestant monarchs loathed Cardinal Bellarmine. A *Collegio Anti-Bellarminianum* was established at Heidelberg to train Lutherans in how to cope with Bellarmine’s democratic egalitarianism. When Queen Elizabeth ordered that Bellarmine be lectured against at Cambridge, the lecturer, while reading the Cardinal to refute him, converted to Roman Catholicism. Theodore Beza, who succeeded John Calvin as head of the Protestant church at Geneva, is said to have declared of Bellarmine’s magnum opus, *Christian Controversy,* “This book has ruined us!”

Of the process of “making the enemy move as one wishes,” Sun-tzu wrote: “The great science is to make him desire everything you wish him to do & to provide him with all the means to help you in this, without his realizing it.” Thus, liberation theology reached the American revolutionaries through the voice and energies of its principal *adversary,* Sir Robert Filmer. Sir Robert spent the first four pages of *Patriarcha* (1680), his illustrious defense of Divine Right monarchy, refuting Cardinal Bellarmine. But his refutation contains so much material from Bellarmine’s works that *Patriarcha* amounts to nothing less than a concise *introduction* of Bellarminian theory.

The two most conspicuous reviewers of *Patriarcha* were Algernon Sidney, Puritanism's greatest political philosopher, and John Locke, the voice of Enlightenment in England and America. Algernon Sidney's name means little to modern Americans, but in his day, and for generations after, it was synonymous with individual liberty. Babies and country estates were called "Sidney" in his honor, even though he was beheaded in 1683 for plotting the death of King Charles II. Sidney's philosophical admirers loved his open hostility to Roman Catholicism. They ignored his intrigues with the Jesuits of Louis XIV, and his long visits to Rome. *Discourses concerning Government,* his most celebrated work, was known respectfully as "the noble book." After its republication in 1763, along with an account of his preposterous trial (no indictment, no assistance of counsel, perjured testimony, tainted evidence, packed jury), it could be found in the library of every affluent home in America.

Sidney began *Discourses* with the following sentence: "Having lately seen a book entitled *Patriarcha* written by Sir Robert Filmer concerning the universal and undistinguished right of all kings, I thought a time of leisure might well be employed in examining his doctrine and the questions arising from it: which seem to concern all mankind." Whereupon, quoting Filmer's quotations from Bellarmine, Sidney goes on to attack Filmer and *in the process defends Bellarmine.* How wondrously Sun-tzuan that a trusted Protestant thinker would indoctrinate a nation of fellow-Catholic-bashers with the teachings of a Jesuit Cardinal!

John Locke held such influence over revolutionary intellectuals that historians have labeled him "America's Philosopher." He, too, endorsed Bellarmine by attacking Filmer. On the title page of his *Two Treatises on Government* (1690), Locke advertises that he will refute *Patriarcha* with reasoning wherein "the false principles and foundation of Sir Robert Filmer and his followers are detected and overthrown." He then expounds Cardinal Bellarmine in his own words, words that will become the rationale of the American Revolution: "Men being by nature all free, equal, and independent, no one can be put out of this estate, and subjected to the political power of another, without his consent...."

The personal library of the main author of the Declaration of Independence, Thomas Jefferson, contained a copy of *Patriarcha,* and also a handsome folio of four hundred ninety-seven pages of the discourses of Algernon Sidney. "If Jefferson read but the opening pages of Sidney's and Filmer's books," Bellarminian scholar John Clement Rager wrote in 1926,

> he had the principles of democracy as propounded by Bellarmine, in a nutshell. It is more than likely, however, that the curiosity of Jefferson ... prompted [him] to look more deeply into the original writings of this Catholic Schoolman.
>
> [He] had not far to go. In the library of Princeton University there was a copy of Cardinal Bellarmine's works. James Madison, a member of the committee which framed the Virginia Declaration of Rights, was a graduate of Princeton. Probably he read Bellarmine, for at this period of his life he read everything he could lay his hands on and was deeply versed in religious controversy.
>
> It might be remarked that several members of the committee which drew up the [Virginia] Declaration of Rights had been educated in England, where the writings of Bellarmine were not unpopular even among those who were most inimical to his faith.

The operative philosophy of the Declaration of Independence is easily traceable to Bellarminian liberation theology:

Cardinal Bellarmine	**Declaration of Independence**
"Political power emanates from God. Government was introduced by divine law, but the divine law has given this power to no particular man."	"The people are endowed by their Creator with certain inalienable rights."
"Society must have power to protect and preserve itself."	"To secure these rights, governments are instituted among men."

Cardinal Bellarmine	**Declaration of Independence**
"The people themselves, immediately and directly, hold the political power."	"Governments are instituted among men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed."
"All men are born naturally free and equal."	"All men are created equal."
"For legitimate reason the people can change the government to an aristocracy or a democracy or vice versa."	"Whenever any form of government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the Right of the People to alter or abolish it, and to institute a new goverment."

Interestingly, *Patriarcha* (1680) was not published until twenty-eight years after its author Sir Robert Filmer's death. It arrived in an era of dwindling hopes for Divine Right, the concept having been thoroughly discredited when King Charles I was beheaded in 1625.

Could it be that *Patriarcha* was edited or ghost-written by Jesuits at the command of Superior General John Paul Oliva (1661—1681)? The purpose would have been to induce the enemies of Roman Catholicism to follow Bellarmine by having Bellarminian liberation *attacked* by a *loser,* Filmer, the disgraced champion of a lost Protestant cause. The idea is not far-fetched when one considers actual outcome. For *Patriarcha* did in fact produce the theory of revolution that impelled the colonists to create a nation subservient to the black papacy.

But for liberation theology to translate into the violence necessary to divide the English-speaking world, England had to commit acts of tyranny. How this was accomplished, despite a dazed and confused and rather innocuous young king, is the subject of our next chapter.

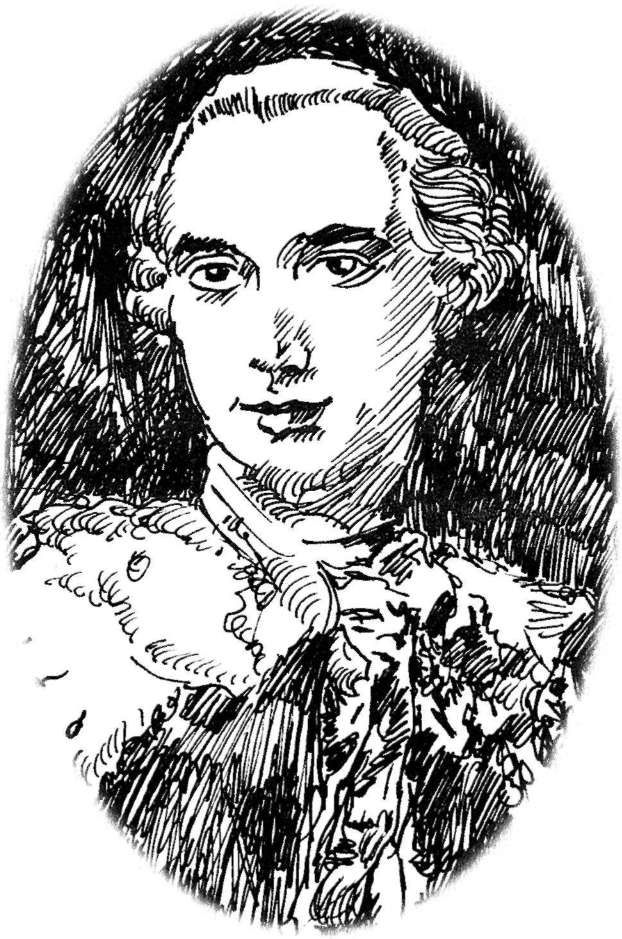

JOHN STUART, 3RD EARL OF BUTE
(From the portrait by Alan Ramsay.)

Chapter 15

THE MADNESS OF KING GEORGE III

UPON THE DEATH in 1732 of Thomas Howard, Eighth Duke of Norfolk and real Founder of American Freemasonry, the Norfolk title passed to Thomas' brother Edward. In a curious way, the Ninth Duke of Norfolk played a part in the founding of the United States as well, albeit a cameo role.

Sun-tzu wrote

> Multiply your spies, put them everywhere, in the very Palace of the enemy Prince; have a list of the principal Officers who are at his service. Know their first & last names, the number of their children, their relatives, their friends, their servants. Let nothing happen to them that is not known to you.

Edward, Ninth Duke of Norfolk, was a regular in the crowd of Frederick William, Prince of Wales, and his Princess, Augusta of Saxony. The Waleses were party creatures, and an on-going disappointment to the Prince's father, King George II. The king resented that his son appeared not to have inherited his craving for war – George II was the last British monarch to lead his army into battle, which he did against the Spanish in 1739. George despised his son's Ignatian entourage. When Frederick William ran up an exorbitant tab entertaining foreign ambassadors at St. James's Palace, the king cut his allowance, shooed the ambassadors away, and ordered the couple to move out of St. James's and take up a simpler residency at Leicester House.

In 1738, Augusta gave birth to a son, George William. At the age of six the child was placed under the tutelage of a Dr. Ayscough. Like the Society of Jesus, Ayscough did not wish the head of the Church of England well. "He is chiefly remarkable," says Brittanica, "as an adherent of the opposition." Ayscough's role in history was to keep the future king of England, who suffered emotionally under the ungainly squabbles dividing father and grandfather, virtually illiterate for more than five years.

The Prince of Wales was fond of horse-racing. One afternoon in 1747, so the official story goes, a sudden downpour of rain confined him and a handful of friends to his tent at the Egham races. Determined to play cards, the Prince sent Edward, Ninth Duke of Norfolk, out in the rain to find someone to make up a whist party. The Duke returned with a strikingly handsome Scot, John Stuart, third Earl of Bute. "Bute immediately gained the favour of the prince and princess," says Brittanica, "and became the leading personage at their court." What Britannica omits saying, along with every other source I could find on this leading character in the formation of Anglo-American relations, is that Bute, like Norfolk, was *a secret brother of the Lodge.* This fact is ascertainable only from the keystone of the arch over Bute's mausoleum in St. Mary's Cemetery at Rothesay, Isle of Bute, in the Firth of Clyde west of Glasgow. Carved into that keystone is the familiar Masonic disembodied all-seeing eye.

Born in 1713, educated at Eton, Bute was elected in 1737 to the representative peerage for Scotland. He never opened his mouth in debate. When his bid for re-election failed, he returned to the family estate on the Isle of Bute, whose remarkably temperate climate produces a lush foliage, even palm trees. There he indulged a passion for botany that can be experienced to this day in the verdant grounds at Mount Rothesay. In 1745, Bute suddenly left Rothesay and took up residence in London. The year 1745 is distinguished by the so-called Jacobite Rebellion, another wondrous Sun-tzuan ruse in which apparent defeat for the Society of Jesus masked a hidden victory.

The Jacobite Rebellion aimed to restore Roman Catholic rule over England by deposing George II and placing James II's grandson Charles Stuart, better known as Bonnie Prince Charlie, on the throne. However, when Charlie marched on London with a band of Scottish devotees, no Catholic politician of any prominence would desert George II. The Rebellion was forced to abort. Charlie escaped to France and the and the Scots were massacred. Clearly, this was a Catholic disaster. Or was it? Such extensive Catholic support for a Protestant king assured England that the monarchy would be forever Protestant. A Catholic England was now an impossible dream. The Jesuits could give up. Englishmen could now relax with them in their midst, just as Jesuits could now go about their business without causing official alarm. The Jacobite Rebellion made England at last... *safe* for the black papacy. The Jesuits secured a new cover by blowing their cover – "blown cover as cover" in the parlance of CIA. The Sun-Tzuan General wins whatever the circumstances.

WHEN Bute joined the court of the Prince and Princess of Wales, their son George William was an emotional basket case. Bute lavished attention on the lad, won his trust and admiration, became his mentor. Indeed, Bute made himself so delightfully indispensable around Leicester House that the Prince appointed him, in 1750, to the most intimate position on his staff, Lord of the Bedchamber. Nothing happened in the life of the two heirs to the throne of England that was not privy to a man under obedience to the Unknown Superior.

But in the year following Bute's appointment, the Prince died mysteriously at the age of forty-four. Rumors that Bute was responsible circulated for a while and evaporated. However, gossip linking Bute romantically to Princess Augusta never went away, even though he was husband to a devoted wife and happy family.

George II, surprisingly desolate over the Prince's untimely death, remained an absurdly stern grandfather to George William. Until his own death in 1760, George II grew increasingly melancholic and disinterested in ruling. Parliament gained strength. Bute acted the surrogate father to the future king. Caring for the gardens at Leicester House, he inspired the boy with a lifelong interest in botany. He encouraged him to patronize the arts – the composer Handel, though blind, was still superintending performances of his works at the royal behest. However, Bute did little to allay George's tormenting fears of inadequacy. Reinforcing himself as the ideal of conduct, the Scot nourished the boy's self-distrust, which would become the most prominent feature of his maturity.

Such was the context of English power when Lorenzo Ricci tipped the stones in the Ohio valley that tumbled into a costly world war between England and France. Six years into the war, George II died at the age of seventy-seven. He left behind a disunited Parliament and a dysfunctional heir barely out of his teens. George William, now King George III, fearfully turned the British Empire over to John Stuart. Bute acted swiftly to conform to the wishes of his Unknown Superior. He began by appointing a more compliant first lord of the Treasury, the office later to be known as Prime Minister. Next, with secretly-funded grants, he purchased votes from key members of Parliament widely known as "the King's Friends." Under the noble pretext of achieving "a closer unity of the British Empire under Parliament," Bute whipped the King's Friends into passing a law to enforce writs of assistance across the Atlantic. These were revenue-raising warrants issued summarily under the royal seal requiring a law officer to take possession of lands without trial, without jury.

One does not need a doctorate in political science to know that summary expropriation is a sure way to divide an empire, not unite it. When the writs were enforced in Massachusetts, James

Otis resigned his Advocate-General's post in the Court of Admiralty to preach against them "in a style of oratory," John Adams would later recall, "that I have never heard equalled in this or any other country." In July 1776, Adams would declare that the enforcement of Bute's writs of assistance in 1761 was "the commencement of this controversy between Great Britain and America."[1]

Lorenzo Ricci's War, or the Maritime War, or the French and Indian Wars, came to an end in 1763. England was the apparent victor. Bute was sent by his protege, George III, to negotiate a peace in Paris. Assisted by Robert Petty, Lord Shelburne, the notorious "Jesuit of Berkeley Square," Bute perfected the Treaty of Paris. Under its terms England won from France all of Catholic Quebec and the region east of the Mississippi, except for the island of New Orleans. This was such a great territorial windfall for the colonists that North Carolinians created Bute County in the northeastern part of the colony.[2] However, Bute restricted the windfall by ordering the infamous Royal Proclamation of 1763, which prohibited Americans from moving west of a line drawn along the crest of the Allegheny Mountains. Most colonists viewed the Proclamation as a scheme to imprison them between the Alleghenies and the Atlantic. To purchasers of western real estate prior to the Treaty, it was legalized theft. The churchgoers saw a papal advance: "With Roman Catholicism no longer actively persecuted in England, many Americans concluded that the mother country was about to return to Rome."[3]

Prior to Lorenzo Ricci's accession to the black papacy in 1758, the colonists had been blissfully loyal to the mother country. Looking back on the pre-Riccian years while testifying before the House of Commons in 1766, Benjamin Franklin recalled that "the colonists were governed by England at the expense only of a little pen, ink, and paper; they were led by a thread." Yet, with the rise of Ricci, as if in preparation for the absurdities of Bute, radical propagandists began appearing throughout the colonies - Christopher Gadsden in South Carolina, Cornelius Harnett in North Carolina, Patrick Henry and Thomas Jefferson in Virginia, and, in Pennsylvania, Charles Thomson. The dean of all these propagandists was Samuel Adams, the celebrated "Father of the American Revolution" and Freemasonry's "dominant figure in the mobilization of the Boston artisans and inland towns."[4] John Adams, in a letter dated February 9, 1819, framed his cousin Sam's political activism within *exactly* the seventeen years of Lorenzo Ricci's generalate:

> Samuel Adams, to my certain knowledge, from 1758 to 1775, that is, for seventeen years, made it his constant rule to watch the rise of every brilliant genius, to seek his acquaintance, to court his friendship, to cultivate his natural feelings in favor of his native country, to warn him against the hostile designs of Great Britain, and to fix his affections and reflections on the side of his native country.

Thus, well before the advent of much to rebel against – well before Bute's writs of assistance and the Royal Proclamation – a propaganda of American rebellion was being organized. At the same time, Dr. Franklin put together the means of disseminating it. He streamlined the colonial postal system to flow smoothly and efficiently from southern Virginia through eastern New England.

On the diplomatic front, England's future war-making capability was stunted by the Paris negotiations of Bute and Shelburne, which isolated England from any possibility of forming helpful European alliances. This, in 1763, was of negligible importance to anyone but the foreknowing and omniscient Lorenzo Ricci. When the hour came for America to revolt for independence, and no one but Ricci knew when that hour would come, England had to be friendlessly alone.

Having weakened England and stimulated the production of hostile, divisive rhetoric in America, Bute resigned from public life a very unpopular man. But the king's mentor was not yet finished. From the shadows, Bute handpicked a new Prime Minister, George Grenville. Grenville made a broad show of refusing to accept office unless the king promised never again to employ Bute in office or seek his counsel. The king promised. Pledging to give the British Empire a thorough overhauling, Grenville then proceeded (with

Bute's secret counsel and more money grants from the King's Friends) to create dynamic situations that accelerated Britain and the colonies toward divorce.

Duties were increased on colonial imports, justified by the notion that the colonies should contribute their fair share to the increased expenses of running an Empire much expanded by the Treaty of Paris. Higher duties heightened smuggling activities, which in turn increased the admiralty caseload. Americans began sniffing tyranny in the breeze.

Grenville's new Sugar and Molasses Act enforced ruinous duties on foreign staples necessary for rum-making. The Act reduced imports of sugar and molasses from the French, Spanish, and Dutch West Indies, which in turn greatly reduced the meat, fish, flour, horses and lumber which the colonies could export to the islands. This caused a slump in colonial production. Large debts which colonists owed to their British creditors for furniture, clothing, ironware, pottery, jewelry, and many other articles, went unpaid. Merchants complained that Parliament was killing the goose that laid the golden egg. Parliament's strange response was to prohibit the colonies from issuing paper currency to supply their lack of gold and silver. George Grenville did, however, invite the fuming colonists to propose suggestions for how they would like to be taxed. When the colonists refused to dignify the invitation with a response, Parliament in March 1765 passed, without debate or opposition, an even more infuriating measure.

The Stamp Act required the purchasing and fixing of stamps to all colonial deeds, leases, bills of sale, pamphlets, newspapers, advertisements, mortgages, wills, and contracts. If duties on sugar and molasses could be considered part of the regulation of the Empire's trade, the Stamp Act was a tax levied by a body thousands of miles away for the sole purpose of raising a revenue. It affected all classes of colonist. Never before had Parliament dared to impose such a tax. Whereas the duty on foreign molasses or anti-smuggling measures were felt only by the great merchants in New York, Boston, Philadelphia, or Charleston, the Stamp Act affected a wider public. It added the price of a stamp to the lawyer's bill of every colonist selling a horse, making a will, or mortgaging a house. The price of every newspaper was increased by the stated value of the stamp attached to it.

In Massachusetts, "Britannus Americanus," one of Sam Adams' more than twenty pseudonyms, charged that it was as absurd for Parliament to tax the American people as it would be for an assembly of Americans to tax the people of England. In Virginia, Patrick Henry cried his slogan "*NO TAXATION WITHOUT REPRESENTATION!*" From the London Coffee House in Philadelphia, Charles Thomson led a secret club of workers, teachers, merchants and professionals in advocating the production and sales of local goods strengthened by an intercolonial agreement not to import goods from Britain.

A month before the first stamps arrived, Sam Adams agitated Massachusetts to hold a "Stamp Act Congress," which convened at New York in October. The Congress drew up a Declaration of Rights and Grievances protesting that the Act threatened "the liberties of the colonies." By the time the stamps arrived from England in November, the colonists had forced most of the stamp-distributors to resign. The merchants of Boston, New York, and Philadelphia agreed not to import English goods, causing a decline in trade with Great Britain of about twenty-five percent within a year. In an address before the House of Commons, Benjamin Franklin issued his famous warning that if troops should be sent to the colonies to enforce the Act, they "will not find a revolution there but might very well *create one.*"

Grenville's ministry suddenly fell to William Pitt and Lord Rockingham, who repealed the Stamp Act in March. The colonies rejoiced and pledged loyalty to George III. They hardly noticed that the King's Friends had accompanied the repeal with a Declaratory Act claiming "full power and authority to bind the colonies and people of America, subjects of the Crown of Great Britain, in all cases whatsoever."

Regarding Patrick Henry's objections to unfair taxation as "so much nonsense," Charles Townshend, Chancellor of the Exchequer, vowed to get "plenty of revenue from the colonies." In the summer of 1767, he and the King's Friends passed acts laying duties on glass, painters' colors, red and white lead, paper, and tea shipped to America. But the acts produced little revenue. By Townshend's own estimate, made shortly before his premature death at forty-two, the British Treasury stood to gain no more than £40,000. The real, covert, purpose of the Acts appears to have been not to get "plenty of revenue," but to stimulate the rebellious investment of colonial capital in local manufacturing.

In March of 1770, a small crowd of jeering Bostonians pelted a few British redcoats with snowballs. The angry redcoats fired into the crowd, killing four men, wounding several more. The town and surrounding countryside reacted in rage to the Boston Massacre. Samuel Adams led his disciples to the mansion of acting Governor Thomas Hutchinson and demanded the immediate deportation of the redcoats, who wisely retreated to Castle William on the harbor. When news of the Massacre reached England, the King's Friends scolded Hutchinson's "cowardly surrender to Sam Adams's regiments." Thenceforth, each anniversary of the Boston Massacre became an occasion for Adams and others to make more blistering orations against British tyranny in favor of independence.

In 1770, Lord North, the new Prime Minister, declared the Townshend Acts were costing more to collect than the revenue was returning to the Treasury. North secured the repeal of all the Townshend duties, except a tax on tea of threepence a pound to prove Parliament had authority to tax the colonies. The colonists weren't affected by this miniscule tax, since most of their tea was smuggled in from Holland anyway. Feelings toward England turned amicable once again, as colonial merchants increased orders from British firms from £1,336,122 in 1769 to £4,200,000. Sam Adams, Patrick Henry, Charles Thomson and Thomas Jefferson took advantage of the lull to agitate. Observing the first anniversary of the Boston Massacre on March 5, 1771, Adams called for action and solidarity:

> It is high time for the people of this country explicitly to declare whether they will be Freemen or Slaves. Let it be the

> topic of conversation in every social Club. Let every Town assemble. Let Associations & Combinations be everywhere set up to consult and recover our just Rights.[5]

Between 1770 and 1773, about the only troublesome confrontations were those between British revenue vessels and smugglers. The colonies began producing more. Trade was so brisk that merchants, formerly the chief opponents of British rule, had little to protest. They turned their full attention back to business.

And then Lorenzo Ricci nudged his weightiest boulders to date, the Religious Right, the Protestant churchgoers. How he did this is the subject of our next chapter.

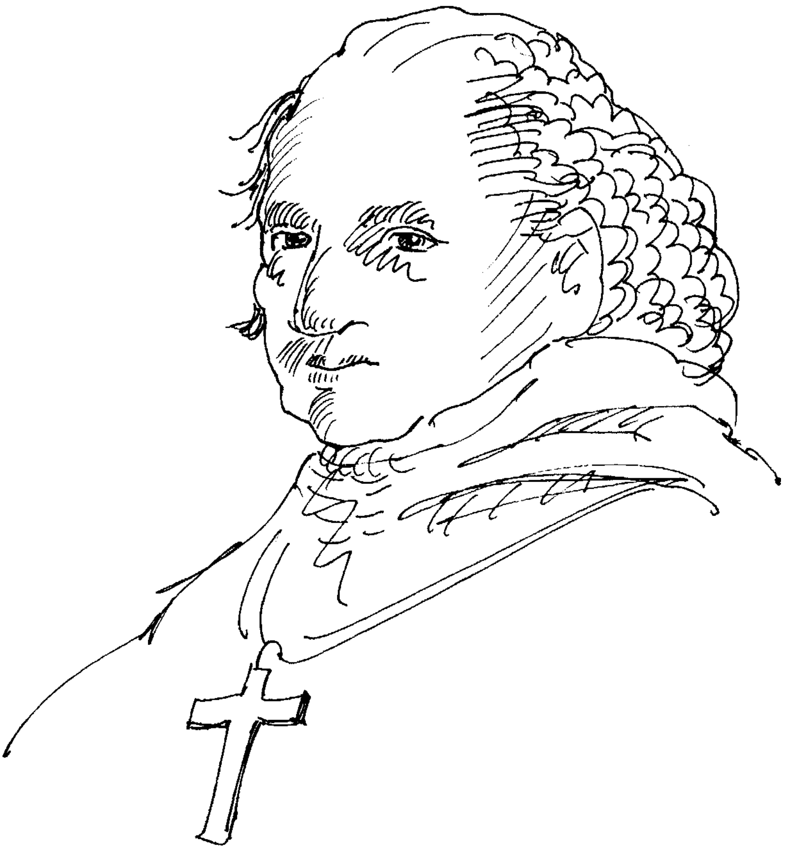

JOHN CARROLL, BISHOP OF BALTIMORE
AND FOUNDER OF GEORGETOWN UNIVERSITY.
(From the portrait by Gilbert Stuart)

Chapter 16

TWEAKING THE RELIGIOUS RIGHT

As THE FUROR over the Stamp Act was cooling down, the Jesuits of Maryland and Pennsylvania discovered that the director of Catholic operations in the British colonies, Bishop Richard Challoner, had asked Rome to ordain an American bishop.

The American Jesuits disliked the idea. Father Ferdinand Steinmayer (alias Farmer) of New York cautioned Bishop Challoner, "It is incredible how hateful to non-Catholics in all parts of America is the very name of bishop." Still, in Challoner's view, an American bishop would establish better order in the colonies, restore discipline, and make it possible for colonial Catholics to be confirmed. Steinmayer and his American brethren strenuously opposed the idea on grounds that it would only make life among Protestants more difficult for Catholics. They collected lay support for their views and asked Challoner himself to forward the protests to Rome, which he declined to do, leaving it to the Jesuits to state their own case.[1]

Rome never replied to Challoner's petition for an American bishop. The bishop later discovered that the petition, made in a letter to Cardinal Spinelli and entered into the post in 1764, *never left England.* In Bishop Challoner's words, "it was opened, and stopt on this side of the water."[2]

Whoever opened Challoner's letter must have passed its contents on to the Church of England. For no sooner had Challoner posted his letter than the *Anglican* Bishop of London, who had thus far been content to rule his American subjects from London, asked the British cabinet to permit the *Church of England* to create an American bishop to "attend the sheperdless flock in the colonies." When word of this request reached the colonies, which were mostly Protestant but less than fifteen percent Anglican,[3] the reaction must have elated Lorenzo Ricci. The sons and daughters of immigrants who had braved wild Indians and rattlesnakes to escape religious prelates took the Bishop's petition to be the worst act of tyranny yet, the most pressing cause for alarm, the number one thing to revolt against.

The American bishop scare was whipped up in the non-Anglican Protestant church pulpit – the era's most electrifying communications medium. Presbyterian and Congregationalist preachers, representing nearly fifty percent of the churched colonists, charged that an American bishop would be "an ecclesiastical Stamp Act" which would strip Americans of all their liberties, civil as well as religious, and "if submitted to will at length grind us to powder."[4] They warned that an American bishop would dominate the colonial governors and councils, strengthen the position of the colonial oligarchy, and drive dissenters from political life with a Test Act requiring officials to state their religious preference. Having brought the colonial governments under his control, the American bishop would then establish the Church of Rome in all the colonies and impose taxes for the support of its hierarchy. A letter in the *New York Gazette or Weekly Post Boy* for March 14, 1768 charged that an American bishop would "introduce a system of episcopal palaces, of pontifical revenues, of spiritual courts and all the pomp, grandeur, luxury, and regalia of an American Lambeth" – Lambeth Palace being the residence of the Archbishop of

Canterbury, head of all England after the royal family. An American bishop would transform Americans into a people "compelled to fall upon their knees in the streets and adore the papal miter as the Apostolic Tyrant rides by in his gilded equipage."

Rev. Jonathan Mayhew, Dudleian Lecturer at Harvard, inveighed against "Popish Idolatry" in a famous (and arguably prophetic) sermon by that title, saying,

> Let the bishops get their foot in the stirrup, and their beast, the laity, will prance and flounce about to no purpose. Bishops will prove to be the Trojan horse by which Popery will subjugate North America.

The American bishop scare did more to foment the colonists to revolt, and eventually raised more soldiery, than all the tyrannical writs and tax schemes combined. Immediately, it created permanent Committees of Correspondence, an intercolonial organization of churches, and a "Society of Dissenters" based in New York. These organizations brought all opposed to the Church of England into correspondence with one another, whether in America, Great Britain, or Ireland.[5] The specter of an American bishop gave the colonial patriots an almost inexhaustible fund of propaganda to employ against any form of perceived tyranny at home and abroad. It served, in Jonathan Boucher's words, "to keep the public mind in a state of ferment and effervescence; to make the people jealous and suspicious of all measures not brought forward by [popularly-approved leaders]; and above all, to train and habituate the people to opposition."[6]

The fact that Americans were trained and habituated to oppose the British Crown and the Church of England not by Roman Catholics but by Protestant churchmen is, to my mind, proof of the Sun-Tzuan ingenuity of Lorenzo Ricci. Sun-Tzu said: "The General will know how to shape at will, not only the army he is commanding but also that of his enemies." While Ricci's own army was appearing in the world's opinion markets to be a band of vicious dolts slipping down into their well-deserved oblivion, a small elite corps of indispensibles, some neither knowing nor caring who their true boss was, were facilitating English-speaking Protestant churchgoers in systematically annihilating one another! Lorenzo Ricci's orchestration had reached such fullness that he could now soliloquize Iago's boast in *Othello:* "Now, whether he kill Cassio or Cassio him, or each do kill the other, every way makes my gain."

Back in the nineteen-sixties and seventies, Central American Jesuits designed posters to motivate campesinos to overthrow corrupt politicians. The posters for this Bellarminian liberation theology depicted an angry Jesus Christ in the image of Che Guevara, swathed in fatigues, draped in bullet-belts, holding a submachine gun at the ready, a Rambo Jesus, a Jesus whose Sacred Heart called for social action that included killing. The American bishop scare aroused the same dynamic in the 1770's. What was considered by many to be the most influential sermon on the subject was preached to Boston's Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company by Rev. Jonathan Mayhew's successor at Harvard, Rev. Simeon Howard. Simeon Howard received his early preaching experience in Nova Scotia – or Acadia, as the French settlers called it. He experienced first-hand the uprooting and expulsion, by British soldiers, of some three thousand French Catholic Acadians, along with their Jesuit priests. Cruelly, often violently, the Acadians were forced to emigrate to various American colonies, with no compensation for property or livestock. (Longfellow memorialized the event in *Evangeline).*

With a casuistry that would have delighted Cardinal Bellarmine, Rev. Howard's famous Artillery Company sermon openly advocated the use of violence against a political tyrant. Our duty to defend personal liberty and property, he argued, is stated in Scripture at Galatians 5:1 – "Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free." True, Rev. Howard admitted, Christ requires us to "resist not evil – love your enemies, do good to them that hate you" (Matthew 5), and "recompense to no man evil for evil – avenge not yourselves" (Romans 12, 17, 19). But these precepts apply only to cases of "small injuries," Howard said, not large ones, such as tyranny.

Nor, said Rev. Howard, should we fully accept Christ's commandments on property. "Love not the world, nor the things that are in the world" (John 2:5), and "Lay not up for yourselves treasure on earth" (Matthew 6:19), and "Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee, turn not thou away" (Matthew 5:42) – such precepts as these, Rev. Howard said, are "indefinite expressions" which "we have a right to limit."

Now, the defensive application of lethal force is reasonable, and noble, and patriotic. But it is not recommended by Jesus Christ. The Jesus of the Scriptures cautions that life by the sword means death by the sword. It is Rome, not Jesus, that commands the use of lethal force – Rome, whose natural-law society was built on the willingness of the individual to risk his own life in killing to preserve the Religious State. And it was Rome that Simeon Howard beseeched his audience to emulate: "Rome, who rose to be mistress of the world by an army composed of men of property and worth."

A decade after the American bishop scare had broken out, thousands of American Protestant and Catholic churchgoers began killing and being killed to win The War That Would Keep Anglican Bishops Out of America. And they won this war. But the utterly stupefying outcome of their victory was that no bishops were kept *out* of America: two bishops were brought *into* America, an Anglican and a Roman Catholic!

The Roman Catholic, of course, was John Carroll. This Jesuit son of Maryland was consecrated Bishop of Baltimore on August 15, 1790, in the chapel of Lulworth, a castle set high on the Dorset coast of England owned by the Welds, a prominent Roman Catholic family. Lulworth's upper "Red Room" looks to the east upon a commanding view of the estate's long entrance meadow and to the south upon a famous smugglers' cove in the distance. A frequent visitor to Lulworth Castle, and honored guest in its Red Room, I am told, was King George III.

Bishop Carroll became the Holy See's direct representative not just in Baltimore but throughout the U.S. This fact was validated in 1798 by Judge Addison, President of the Court of Common

Pleas of the Fifth Circuit of Pennsylvania in the case of Fromm vs. Carroll. Fromm was a recalcitrant German Franciscan who wanted to establish his own German-speaking, laity-owned parish. Addison ruled that "the Bishop of Baltimore has sole episcopal authority over the Catholic Church of the United States, and without authority from him no Catholic priest can exercise any pastoral function over any congregation within the United States." Fromm was excommunicated and held up as an example of what happens to rebels against wholesome Church authority. Addison's use of the term "Catholic Church of the United States" is an interesting judicial notice that Carroll's ordination instituted, for all practical purposes, a secular church ruled by the black papacy. Eminent Catholic historian Thomas O'Gorman concurred in 1895, observing that American Catholicism was, "in its inception, wholly a Jesuit affair and [has] largely remained so."[7]

America's first Anglican bishop, ordained in 1784, was Rev. Samuel Seabury of Connecticut. Rev. Seabury was both a High Churchman and a Freemason.[8] To avoid the political repercussions of swearing allegiance to the Church of England so soon after 1776, Seabury was consecrated in November 1784 at Aberdeen, Scotland. Of critical importance to Rome was that the three bishops consecrating Seabury were all "nonjuring" bishops. "Nonjuring" described the class of Catholic bishops that stood in the succession of "Jacobite" clergy who, remaining loyal to King James II after his abdication in 1689, had refused to take a loyalty oath to James' successors – his daughter, Mary Stuart, and son-in-law, William of Orange, both Protestants.[9] America's first Protestant bishop, like his Roman Catholic counterpart, owed allegiance to Rome.

This obscure fact is commemorated in one of London's most heavily-trafficked and world-famous locations. The spacious grassy lawns on either side of the great stairway leading up to the National Portrait Gallery facing Trafalgar Square are identical except for their bronze statuary, one piece alone placed at the center of each lawn. On the north lawn stands James II, crowned with imperial laurel, wearing the armor of Julius Caesar. (An elderly British Jesuit with a passion for offbeat historical detail confided to me that James loved to go in Caesarean drag.) On the south lawn stands the celebrated Houdon figure of... *George Washington,* garbed in period attire, leaning for support upon a huge bundle of rods from which projects the head of an axe – the *fasces,* ancient emblem of Roman legal authority! When Bishop Seabury united his episcopate with the other two Anglican communions in America in 1789, the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States was born. George Washington was a member of this Church. The London statuary are explaining the little-known historical fact that James II's Roman Catholic rulership of the English-speaking people was resumed in the First President of the Constitutional United States of America. It is a tribute to the phenomenal generalate of Lorenzo Ricci.

John Carroll spent his final years in Europe helping to develop Lorenzo Ricci's vision of rebellion in America. He moved cautiously, and often incognito. What few traces he left behind are quite revealing.

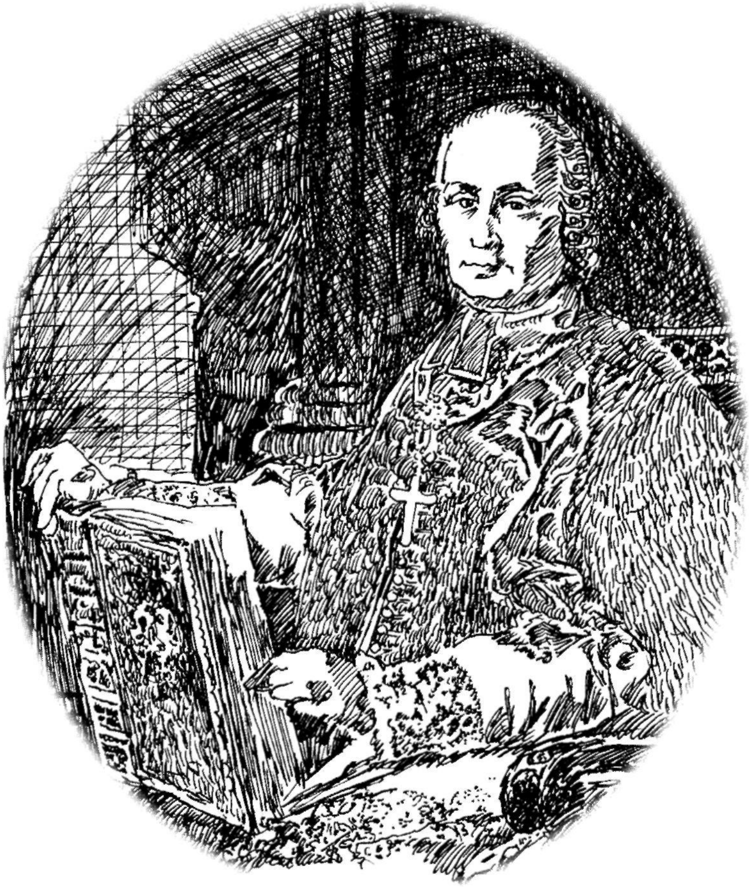

ARCHBISHOP NIKOLAUS VON HONTHEIM (JUSTINIUS FEBRONIUS)
(From a painting in Trier)

Chapter 17

A TIMELY GRAND TOUR

AMONG THE MANY British visitors to Rome during Clement XIV's sweetening toward England in the early 1770's was a young member of an ancient ruling family of Dorset and Somerset counties named Charles Philippe Stourton.[1] Charles Philippe was nephew to the Dukes of Norfolk. We remember the Norfolks, Thomas and Edward Howard, for their significant contributions to American independence – Thomas, originator of colonial Freemasonry; Edward, coupler of Lord Bute to the future George III.

Arriving in Rome with Charles Philippe was his professor at the Jesuit college in the medieval Flemish (now Belgian) city of Bruges, John Carroll. The pair were enjoying a Grand Tour of Europe which had begun in the summer of 1771.

From Bruges they had proceeded by carriage down through Alsace-Lorraine to Strasbourg, across the Rhine to Baden-Baden, then upstream to Carlsruhe, Bruschal, Heidelberg, Mannheim, Worms, and Mainz. From Mainz they made a curious detour over to Trier, back to Mannheim, through Swabia to Augsburg, then to Munich, Innsbruch, across the Italian border to Trent, along the Adige River to Roveredo, Verona, Mantua, Modena, and Bologna. They reached Rome in the autumn of 1772.

In Rome, Lorenzo Ricci appointed Carroll to the position of Prefect of the Sodality. This title designates, according to the New Catholic Encyclopedia, "a chief organizer of laymen for the promotion of some form of social action." For the promotion of what social action, I wonder, might Ricci have ordained Carroll to organize, if not the American Revolution?

While John was in Rome with Lorenzo Ricci, his cousin Charles Carroll, now in his mid-thirties, pulled off a clever media ruse in Maryland. It won him tremendous popularity and established him as an important civic leader. In January 1773, a letter in the Maryland *Gazette* attacked the administration of Maryland Governor Robert Edens. The letter was signed "First Citizen." In a subsequent *Gazette,* the attack was demolished by the eloquent arguments of a "Second Citizen." But in February, "First Citizen" demolished "Second Citizen." As the duel continued on into the summer, "First Citizen" was revealed to be Charles Carroll. Whereupon "Second Citizen" nastily *slandered* Carroll, putting him down as a "disfranchised Catholic." Suddenly now, Carroll was an underdog – just like his fellow Americans in relation to the British Crown. Although Charles was a super-rich lawyer-landowner educated at the best Jesuit colleges in Europe, the people lavished him with sympathy. They despised "Second Citizen" for his bigotry. Maryland and America now had a new hero, a preeminent champion of religious liberties, a Roman Catholic First Citizen advocating a new political order. Loathsome Second Citizen made the status quo seem distasteful and undesirable – which, of course, was his assignment in the ruse. Second Citizen turned out to be the acknowledged head of the American bar, a Mr. Dulany....

MEANWHILE, with the coming of spring, Carroll and Stourton left Rome for Florence, Genoa, Lyons, Paris, Liège, arriving back in Bruges just a few weeks before Ganganelli, Clement XIV, disestablished the Jesuits. Carroll kept a journal of their tour.[2] Partly a study-guide for Charles Philippe, partly a travelog, it's a "fragmentary and circumspect" document, as one historian gingerly put it. Here and there, one finds snatches of informal political opinion. Although Carroll's opinions are interesting, it's his circumspection that intrigues us most, it's what his journal *doesn't* say. Traveling with a student appears ordinary enough, but Charles Philippe Stourton was no ordinary collegian. He was a student of casuistry, equivocation, and Bellarminian liberation theology taught by professionals sworn to expand Roman Catholicism and extirpate Protestantism. He had been indoctrinated to obedience through the Spiritual Exercises, was a member of England's premier Catholic and Masonic family, and was about the age of Alexander Hamilton (who by then was already turning out anonymous revolutionary pamphlets at King's College in New York). Nor were Carroll and Stourton merely sight-seeing. They were up to something big. Carroll's journal alludes to meetings with high-ranking officials in church and state, but gives no specific names. Writing to an English Jesuit colleague, he confided "I keep a close incognito during this time."[3]

Despite Carroll's circumspection, his itinerary reveals certain clues. Consider that odd detour to Trier from the route between Mainz and Mannheim. Trier is more than two hundred kilometers out of the way, quite a long day's journey. What might warrant such a deviation? There appeared in 1763 a highly controversial book by an obviously pseudonymous person, "Justinius Febronius." The pseudonym belonged to Bishop Nikolaus von Hontheim, Chancellor of the University of Trier. In John Carroll's day, Trier University had been run by Jesuits for more than a century. The book, of which there is apparently no published English translation out of its original Latin, is entitled On *the State of the Church and the Legitimate Power of the Roman Pontiff.*

The gist of State *of the Church* suggests why Carroll had to visit

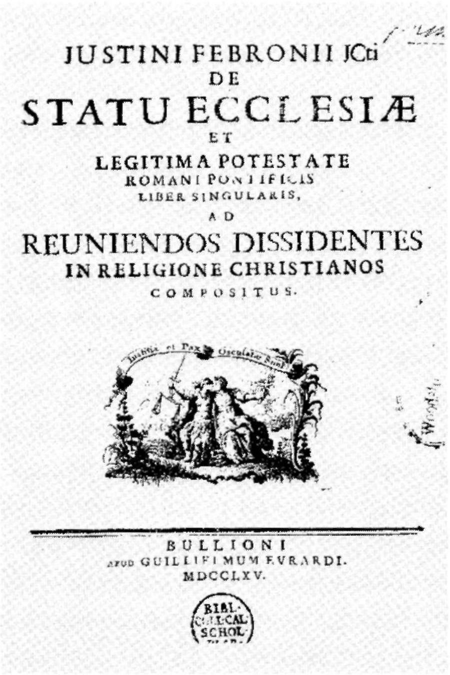

JUSTINI FEBRONII JCti
DE
STATU ECCLESIÆ
ET
LEGITIMA POTESTATE
ROMANI PONTIFICIS
LIBER SINGULARIS,
AD
REUNIENDOS DISSIDENTES
IN RELIGIONE CHRISTIANOS
COMPOSITUS.

Justitia et Pax osculatæ sunt

BULLIONI
APUD GUILLIELMUM EVRARDI.
MDCCLXV.

BIBL. COLL. CAL. SCHOL.

Trier: "Febronianism," the philosophy of von Hontheim's book, contains the formula for administering Protestant America as a Bellarminian commonwealth! Febronianism calls for decentralizing the Roman Catholic Church into independent *national* churches modeled on the Church of England. Because they are ruled directly by kings and princes, these churches are more correctly called "States." The Pope may be successor to Peter, Prince of the Apostles, but under Febronianism he has no legal jurisdiction. He is merely a principle of unity, a spiritual unifier obligated to abide by the decrees of general councils under the leadership of bishops and their properly enlightened laymen.

Crucial to Febronianism's application is "thorough popular education." Once laymen, bishops, and councils are "properly enlightened" they will be empowered to resist any attempts of the papacy to exert monarchial control over the Church. Febronius emphasized that his system would succeed only in a milieu of popular enlightenment. His context presumes an enlightenment wherein the public is indoctrinated with the Jesuit *ratio studiorum's* full humanist diet, of course. It cannot operate where Scripture reigns supreme. Once the milieu's understanding, its *mentality,* has been shaped by the Superior General of the Society of Jesus, it will respond with unquestioning obedience to the will of the man whose fundamental duty is the expansion of Roman Catholicism and the extirpation of Protestantism. Thus will unfold a perfect secular political state within the Roman Catholic Church, an autocracy ruled by a monarch invisible to all but the few who, by the grace of God, cannot be deceived.[4]

Febronianism was the secret formula for returning the non-Catholic world to the bosom of the Church. To mask this fact, the Vatican dramatically condemned the book. The jesuited Clement XIII had banned it from colleges and universities. In a rather quaint example of academic "blown cover as cover," Bishop von Hontheim, whom few realized was Febronius, even banned it from his own classes at the University!

On *the State of the Church* is arguably Lorenzo Ricci's "American Manifesto," the social blueprint for how the General intended to realize Bellarminian liberation in a Protestant monarchy. The full title page of the first edition copy of the book says it all:

> *On the State of the Church and the Legitimate Power of the Roman Pontiff: A Singular Book On the Properly-Ordered Reunification with Dissidents in the Christian Religion.*

Here one beholds a description of the momentous social change that the American Revolution would indeed produce – neither monarchial overthrow, nor democracy, nor republicanism, but a "properly-ordered reunification with dissidents in the Christian religion," that is, the reunification of Roman Catholics with Protestants under a secularized religion whose values – long on humanism, short on Scripture – are taught through public schools following the Jesuit *ratio studiorum.* "Reunification" means that Protestantism has been *reabsorbed* into Rome. This, in the eyes of the black papacy, to the Sun-Tzuan mind, and to common sense, equals the practical extirpation of Protestantism.

ALTHOUGH Bishop von Hontheim lived in Trier, he was Archbishop of Mainz. His jurisdiction extended to the Mainz principality of Hesse-Hanover. Von Hontheim was thus the spiritual counterpart of the ruler of Hesse-Hanover, Frederick II (not to be confused with the King of Prussia, Frederick the Great, who was also a Frederick II.) Frederick II of Hesse was married to the aunt of the King of England, which made him George III's uncle. Born a Protestant, Frederick subscribed to the Rosicrucian style of Freemasonry. Although Jesuits converted him to Roman Catholicism, he nevertheless remained a Rosicrucian secretly active.

Frederick of Hesse was one of Europe's richest rulers. Much of his business was handled by his son, Prince William, also a Rosicrucian Freemason. William's specialty was facilitating war. He drafted able-bodied male Hessians, outfitted and trained them for battle, and then sold them to his English cousin George, who used them to fight alongside his own redcoats. Every time a Hessian was killed, William received a reparation in the form of extra compensation. As casualties mounted, so did his profits, which he loaned out at interest.

In September 1769, Prince William appointed Meyer Amschel Rothschild of nearby Frankfurt to transact some of his financial affairs in the capacity of Crown Agent. Aware that the Rothschilds are an important Jewish family, I looked them up in *Encyclopedia Judaica* and discovered that they bear the title "Guardians of the Vatican Treasury." The Vatican Treasury, of course, holds the imperial wealth of Rome. Imperial wealth grows in proportion to its victories in war – as the Jesuit empowerment *Regimini militantis ecclesiae* implies, the Church-at-War is more necessary than the Church-at-Peace. According to H. Russell Robinson's illustrated *Armour of Imperial Rome*, Caesarean soldiers protected themselves in battle with shields painted red. Since the soldiery is the State's most valuable resource (the Council of Trent admitted this in preferring the Jesuits to all other religious orders), it is easy to understand why the red shield was identified with the very life of the Church. Hence, the appropriateness of the name *Rothschild*, German for "red shield." The appointment of Rothschild gave the black papacy absolute financial privacy and secrecy. Who would ever search a family of orthodox Jews for the key to the wealth of the Roman Catholic Church? I believe this appointment explains why the House of Rothschild is famous for helping nations go to war. It is fascinating that, as Meyer Rothschild's sons grew into the family business, the firm took on the title *Meyer Amschel Rothschild und Söhne,* which gives us the notariqon MARS. Isn't Mars the Roman God of War, whose heavenly manifestation is "the red planet"? There is powerful cabalah here, and there's hardly an acre of inhabitable earth that hasn't been affected by it in some way.

It may never be known if John Carroll and Charles Philippe Stourton paid a call on the offices of Meyer Rothschild during their Grand Tour. Carroll was not permitted to keep a record, and the Rothschild name is synonymous with secrecy. But a call, keeping a "close incognito," at the House of Rothschild would not be inconsistent with outcome. The newly-designed Prefect of the Sodality, chief organizer of laymen for social action, would have a legitimate need to talk finances with the Church's most secret trustee. As things were developing, General Ricci needed an American financial crisis to provoke the colonists into resolving the utter necessity of war.

Carroll's journal reflects that he and Stourton did enter the Frankfurt-Mainz area, which is Rothschild country, in early spring 1772. If we suppose they talked financial crisis with the Rothschilds, the outcome of their talks actually did occur several months later. During July, in fact, the British banking system underwent a severe credit reduction. This consequently threw American merchants into an extreme financial distress that did not end until the Revolutionary War itself produced a business boom in 1776. Rothschild, with his access to Hesse-Hanover's vast wealth, and conceivably that of the Jesuits as well, had power to affect a credit reduction in British banking. And Rothschild's profiting from the Revolutionary War is well known. If, during the spring of 1772, the circumspect young Jesuit professor conveyed to the powerful young Jewish banker Lorenzo Ricci's need for a financial disturbance in England and America, didn't John Carroll admirably serve his Superior General, his Church, and his country? And didn't Rothschild do his client likewise?

Even as Carroll and Stourton were networking (according to my surmise) with Ricci and the bankers of war, Amiot's Sun-Tzu was published. Carroll's circumspection bars us ever from knowing whether he and Stourton came upon a copy and read it. Did Rothschild know the book? Even if they knew it well, the experience could not possibly have been for them the adventure in irony it is for us now. We open *The Thirteen Articles* and hear the gentle voice of the man in charge of the papacy's most important business, the man who decided everything, who was in the process of gaining advantage from dangerous and critical circumstances, whose intentions were unguessable, whose decisions were shaping both his own army and the armies of his English-speaking Protestant enemies, the man who through cleverness and ruse had already secured the obedience of his enemies in London and Boston and Paris and Philadelphia although they believed him and his army to be far away and slumped in rest from sustained losses, the man who would win the most important War in modern times without giving battle or drawing a sword, who uniquely knew the day, the hour, the moment of battle-less, sword-less combat. Lorenzo Ricci's voice whispers to us across the centuries between the lines in passages such as these:[5]

> A State's most important business is its army. It is the General who decides everything. If he is clever, he will gain an advantage from even the most dangerous & critical circumstances. He will know how to shape at will, not only the army he is commanding but also that of his enemies.
>
> Try to be victorious without giving battle. Without giving battle, without spilling a drop of blood, without even drawing a sword, the clever General succeeds in capturing cities. Without setting foot in a foreign Kingdom, he finds the means to conquer them. He acts in such a way that those who are inferior to him can never guess his intentions. He has them change location, even taking them to rather difficult places where they must work & suffer.
>
> Do not disdain the use of artifice. Begin by learning every-

thing there is to know about your enemies. Know exactly what relationships they have, their reciprocal liaisons & interests. Do not spare large amounts of money. Have spies everywhere, be informed of everything.

Overlook nothing to corrupt what is best on the enemy's side: offers, presents, caresses, let nothing be omitted. Maintain secret liaisons with those amongst the enemy who are the most depraved. Use them for your own ends, along with other depraved individuals. Cross through their government, sowing dissension amongst their Chiefs. Ceaselessly give them false alarms & bad advice. Engage the Governors of their Provinces in your interests. That is approximately what you must do, if you wish to fool them by cleverness & ruse.

When a clever General goes into action, the enemy is already defeated. When he fights, he alone must do more than his entire army, not through the strength of his arm but through his prudence, his manner of commanding, & above all his ruses. The great secret of solving all problems consists of the art of knowing how to create division when necessary.

What is far must be brought near, advantage must be drawn even from losses, and slowness must be turned into diligence. You must be near when the enemy believes you to be far, have a real advantage when the enemy believes you have sustained some losses, be occupied by useful work when he believes you are slumped in rest, and use all sorts of diligence when he only perceives you to be moving slowly. Thus, by throwing him off track, you will lull him to sleep in order to attack him when he expects it the least & without him having the time to prepare for it.

As it is essential for you to be completely familiar with the place where you must fight, it is no less important for you to know the day, the hour, even the moment of combat. That is a calculation which you must not neglect.

You, therefore, who are at the head of an army must overlook nothing to render yourself worthy of the position you hold. Throw your gaze upon the measurements of quantities & the measurements of dimensions. Remember the rules of calculus. Consider the effects of balance. Examine what victory really is. Think about all of this deeply & you will have everything you need in order to never be defeated by your enemies.

They who possess the true art of governing troops well are

> those who have known & who know how to make their power formidable, who have acquired unlimited authority, who are not brought low by any event no matter how vexing, who do nothing with precipitation, who conduct themselves as calmly when they are surprised as they do when their actions have been planned long in advance, and who always act in everything they do with that promptness which is in fact the fruit of cleverness combined with great experience.
>
> The strength of this sort of warrior is like that of those great bows which can only be stretched with the help of some machine. Their authority has the effect of those terrible weapons which are shot from bows which are thus stretched. Everything succumbs to their blows, everything is laid low....
>
> If you do exactly as I have indicated, success will accompany all your steps. Everywhere you will be a conqueror, you will spare the lives of your soldiers, you will affirm your country in its former possessions and procure new ones, you will augment the splendor & glory of the State, and the Prince as well as his subjects will be indebted to you for the sweet tranquility in which they will henceforth live their lives. What objects can be more worthy of your attention & all your efforts?

CHARLES Philippe Stourton and John Carroll departed Rome for Flanders in March 1773. The journey took them four months. They passed through Florence, Genoa, Lyons, and Paris, arriving at Liège in early July. John returned Charles Philippe to his father, Lord Stourton, and proceeded alone to the Jesuit College at Bruges.

Meanwhile, in London, during the month of April, the British East India Company presented the King's Friends a scheme which, if measured by the way it would anger American merchants and point them inexorably toward rebellion, could only have sprung from the Sun-Tzuan intellect of Lorenzo Ricci – "*I demand the art of making enemies move as one wishes.*" That scheme, a plan to glut New England with cheap tea, is the subject of our next chapter.

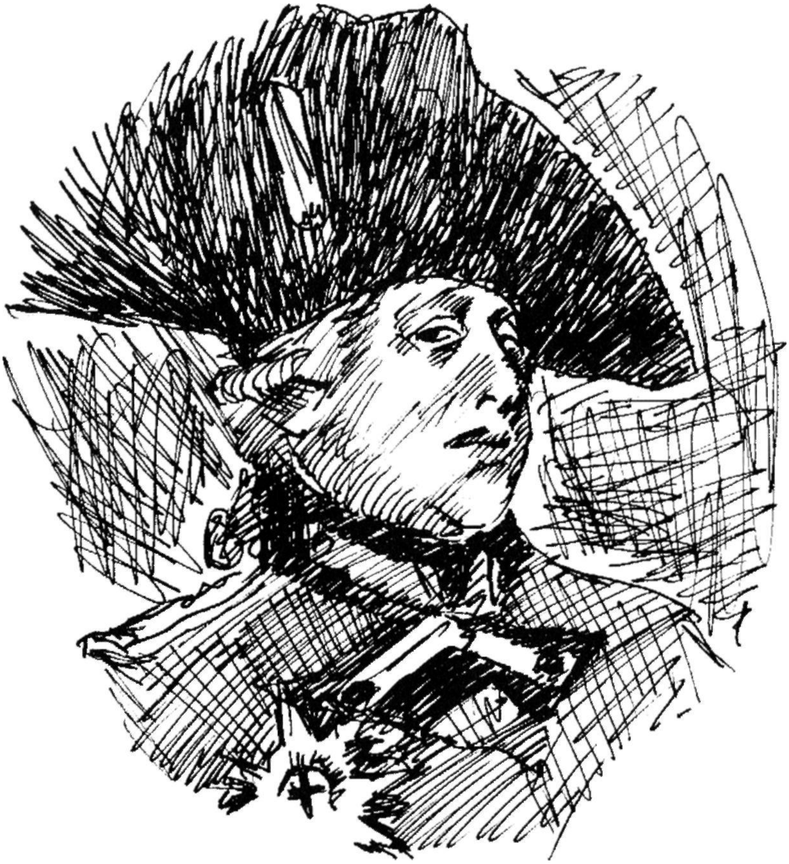

KING GEORGE III

Chapter 18

THE STIMULATING EFFECTS OF TEA

THE EAST INDIA COMPANY was a major subsidizer of the Jesuit mission to Beijing.[1] The Jesuits, in turn, interceded with oriental monarchs to secure lucrative commercial favors for the Company, including monopolies on tea, spices, saltpeter (for explosives), silks, and the world's opium trade. Indeed, according to Reid's *Commerce and Conquest: The Story of the Honourable East India Company,* the Company appears to owe its very existence to the Society of Jesus. How this came to be is worth a digression.

Briefly, in 1583, four young commercial travelers – Fitch, Newbery, Leeds, and Storey – set out from London with letters of introduction from Queen Elizabeth to the Emperor of China. Somewhere east of the Persian Gulf, they were arrested by the Portuguese for illegally crossing the "line of demarcation." Pope Alessandro VI (whose mistress, we recall, was Giulia Farnese, Paul Ill's beautiful sister) had drawn the line in 1493 from the North

Pole through the Azores to the South Pole. All lands west of the line he granted to Spain and those east to Portugal.

The four violators were sent in chains to the Portuguese colony of Goa on the western coast of India. In Goa, they were rescued by a fellow countryman, Thomas Stevens. Stevens had influence. He was Rector of the University of Goa, and he was a Jesuit priest. Father Stevens arranged their release, but apparently not without certain conditions. Storey joined the Society of Jesus. Newbery and Leedes accepted posts in the Goan colonial government. Ralph Fitch proceeded on to China, evidently under an Ignatian oath, otherwise the Portuguese Viceroy would not have permitted him to carry on.

In 1591, Fitch returned to England and, like Marco Polo before him, tantalized adventurers with the lucrative possibilities of transporting to the western hemisphere all the oriental splendors he'd seen. Eight years later, on September 24, 1599, with a subscription of a little more than £30, Fitch and several others formed the East India Company.

And now, in 1773, the East India Company was governed by Freemasons, whose Grand Master since 1772 was the ninth Lord Petre (his mastery would continue until 1777). Related to the Stourtons, Norfolks, and Arundells, the Petre family (pronounced "Peter") was highly esteemed by the Society of Jesus. It was the Petres who, back in the sixteenth century, bankrolled the original Jesuit missions to England.

The East India Company's most powerful political attaché was Robert Petty, Lord Shelburne. We recall Shelburne as "The Jesuit of Berkeley Square" who worked in 1763 with Lord Bute to conclude the French and Indian Wars with the Treaty of Paris, which isolated England from European alliances and angered the Americans over the western lands. Acting on East India Company's behalf, Shelburne colluded with the King's Friends on a scheme designed to disturb the relative peace which had existed between American merchants and England since the repeal of the Townshend Acts in 1770. It went like this.

Stored in the Company's dockside British warehouses were seventeen million pounds of surplus tea. This tea could not be released for sale until a duty of one shilling per pound was paid to the Crown. If the King would exempt the Company from paying the shilling duty, the Company would sell the tea through special consignees to Americans at prices lower than the colonists were paying for either the dutied English tea or the smuggled Dutch tea. Everyone would win. The American tea-drinkers, still suffering from the depressive effects of the British banking crisis of July 1772, would win. East India Company would win. And with a windfall duty of not one but *three* shillings a pound, the Crown would win. The only loser would be the colonial tea merchants, who had been enjoying nice profits on both dutied and smuggled tea. The King's Friends directed Parliament to put the scheme into law, and on May 10, 1773, the "Tea Act" went into effect.

Predictably, the tea merchants reacted in fury. Over the next six months, they pressed the intercolonial network of dissident propagandists to help them mount a protest. What began as an injustice against tea merchants was amplified by the propagandists into a widely-felt injustice against the colonies generally....

THEN, on July 21, 1773, Ganganelli, Clement XIV, abolished the Jesuits "for all eternity." His brief of disestablishment is entitled *Dominus ac Redemptor noster,* which is usually translated "God and Our Redeemer." We should note that "*redemptor*" also means "revenue agent." Considering that the brief's real effect in the long term was a dramatic increase in papal revenues from a new Febronian America, perhaps "God and Our Revenue Agent" would be a more appropriate translation, if not the intended one.

Although Catholic history calls the Disestablishment "a supreme tragedy," John Carroll more accurately appraised it as the "secularisation" of the Society of Jesus. Thousands of Jesuits now rose to secular prominence throughout the western world, in the arts, sciences, and government. Raimondo Ximenes became a radical Freemason. Alessandro Zorzi from Venice joined the editors of the Italian *Encyclopedia.* Dr. Boscovich arrived in Paris where his scientific reputation secured him the post of Director of Optics of the French Navy. Esteban Arteaga became a music critic and published a book in Paris entitled *The Revolution in the Italian Musical Theatre.* We've already seen how Professor Joseph-Ignace Guillotin of the Bordeaux College became the physician who gave France the beheading machine named after him. Adam Weishaupt, dismissed from the Jesuit college at Ingolstadt, attracted the fiercer elements of European Rosicrucian Freemasonry into a new secret cult in Bavaria. His "Illuminati," whose cover was eventually blown in order to convince public opinion that *evil* secret societies were being diligently unmasked when in fact they were not – was another instance of "blown cover as cover." Countless other members of the greatest clandestine intelligence agency the world has ever known, now secularized with the jeering approval of its enemies, crossed the Atlantic to help guide Americans through the pains of becoming the first nation expressly designed to be a Febronian, Bellarminian democratic republican Church-State. What an amazing production, all the more impressive for the complete invisibility of its means!

We've seen how the Brief of Disestablishment was served upon Lorenzo Ricci in mid-August, and how the General was removed to the English College a few blocks away, where he remained for five weeks, until late September. Interestingly, the Dean of the English College at that time was a thirty-two-year-old Jesuit professor of controversial theology named John Mattingly. Mattingly was an American, said to be the lone American Jesuit in Rome. He was a native of Maryland, a graduate of St. Omer's, and a dear friend of John Carroll, who (as we know) had departed Rome five months before Ricci's arrest. Within fifteen years, Carroll would invite Mattingly to become the first president of Georgetown University, an offer Mattingly would decline.

What might Lorenzo Ricci be likely to discuss for five weeks (a) under a British roof, (b) in the custody of a young American Jesuit, (c) at a time when American merchants were incensed at being cheated out of their tea profits by a new law (d) sponsored by British Freemasons, (e) whose Grand Master happened to be Ricci's secret servant?

Might the General have been conferring with members of the British East India Company, one of the English College's major patrons? Might their discussions have involved to which American ports their tea might be most advantageously shipped, and when? Apparently so, for while Ricci was residing at the English College, Parliament authorized the East India Company to ship half a million pounds of tea to Boston, New York, Philadelphia, and Charleston, consigned to a group of specially-chosen merchants.

Might Ricci have been formulating with Carroll's friend Mattingly plans for a demonstration intended to climax the agitations that had been fomented in the colonies since the beginning of his generalate, in 1758? Might he have suggested a spectacular event to occur in, say, Boston Harbor, symbolizing the colonists' frustrations with England? And might not Parliament respond to this event with vengeful measures designed to push the colonists over the brink of rebellion? Aren't five weeks sufficient time to script such a "Boston Tea Party," along with the harsh legal measures with which it might be punished? As well as how the colonists' violent reaction to the punishment might be coordinated? Outcome suggests that Ricci did more in his five weeks at the English College than languish in custody.

We have seen how the General was taken from the English College to Castel Sant'Angelo, with its secret tunnel to the papal apartments in the Vatican. For many months after his "imprisonment," Lorenzo Ricci was "questioned by the Inquisition," according to traditional Church history. But the Inquisition had been administered by Jesuits since 1542. Not surprisingly, the inquisitors pried absolutely no useful information out of Lorenzo Ricci....

IN October of 1773, Austrian officials with drawn bayonets descended upon the Jesuit College in Bruges – the officials were Austrian because Bruges was under the jurisdiction of the Austrian government. They arrested John Carroll and the rest of the college faculty and students. Stripped of his possessions and papers, Carroll was spared further humiliation by the timely intercession of his erstwhile traveling companion Charles Philippe Stourton's cousin, Henry Howard, Lord Arundell of Wiltshire. The Catholic nobleman escorted Carroll across the English Channel to Wiltshire's lushly rolling hills. On his family estate near Tisbury, Howard had been constructing a Palladian mansion, New Wardour Castle. One of Carroll's duties was to write his version of the closing of Bruges College in order to help Henry Howard and other English sponsors of the college win damages from the Austrian government. His principal chore, however, was to administer the Chapel occupying New Wardour Castle's west wing. In this way Carroll established a connection with Henry Howard's art agent in Rome, a Jesuit named Francis Thorpe.[2] Thorpe was a renowned intelligence-broker, a man whose knowledge of Rome, its happenings and resources, was legendary. His apartment was a favorite meeting place for visiting English nobility, and his favorite English nobleman was Henry Howard.[3] Howard had put Father Thorpe in charge of "every detail, every aspect of the Chapel's design." Father Thorpe and John Carroll needed no introduction to one another. From the editor's notes to Carroll's letters, we learn that Thorpe taught at St. Omer's during the years John was a student there. Moreover, he was *Carroll's favorite instructor.*

These remarkable facts suggest interesting probabilities. From Tisbury, in less than a day, Carroll could reach Benjamin Franklin's residence in London by stagecoach. Franklin, for his scientific achievements and enlightened egalitarianism, had long been the toast of Europe, a darling of Jesuit intellectuals. He was the exclusive colonial agent now, representing the commercial interests of all thirteen colonies before the Crown. Franklin knew more about America than anyone else living in England, and more about England than any other American. Francis Thorpe knew more about England than anyone else living in Rome, and more about Rome than any other Englishman.

And both men knew John Carroll well.

And there Carroll was, for the six months during which time the Tea Act erupted into the most explosive scandal of the revolutionary epoch, poised in Tisbury to facilitate information between these two personal friends of his, geniuses, *institutions.* But where is the evidence that anything bearing on the American Revolution transpired between Ricci and Thorpe and Carroll and Franklin and Howard and the entire Anglo-American Masonic system? We are left with nothing but clues and outcome, which nonetheless emphatically point to a fruitful collaboration.

During the night of December 16, 1773, a gang of Indians climbed aboard certain ships in Boston Harbor, ripped open three hundred forty-two of the East India Company's tea-chests and threw overboard their contents, valued at $90,000. Well, they *looked* like Indians, and witnesses *thought* they were Indians, but the big open secret was that they were Freemasons in disguise. Perhaps the most succinct statement on the subject appears in respected Masonic historian Arthur Edward Waite's *New Encyclopedia of Freemasonry:* "The Boston Tea Party was entirely Masonic, carried out by members of the St. John's Lodge during an adjourned meeting."

Parliament reacted to the Boston Tea Party in a way calculated to increase dozens of rolling boulders into a devastating landslide. Without seriously inquiring into who was responsible, and wholly disregarding the offer of more than a hundred Boston merchants to make restitution, Parliament rushed into law a mass of unreasonably punitive legislation – closing the port of Boston to trade, forbidding town meetings without the consent of the governor, denying the Massachusetts legislature the right to choose the governor's council, providing for the quartering of British and Hessian troops in the colony, and ordering that any officer or soldier of the Crown accused of an act of violence in the performance of his duty should be sent to another colony or to England for what would surely be a sweetheart trial.

To complete the overkill, Parliament passed the Quebec Act, which cut off the claims of Massachusetts, Connecticut, Virginia, and New York to their western lands, and placed these lands, to add insult to injury, under the French Catholic jurisdiction of Quebec.

So exaggeratedly out of proportion to the offense they were framed to punish, these notorious "Intolerable Acts" caused every class of American to sympathize with the Tea Partyers. Suddenly, independence was no longer a radical alternative. The Intolerables rendered independence the subject of sensible, serious conversation as never before.

Governor Hutchinson was recalled to England and was replaced by General Thomas Gage, who brought an army of four thousand men to quarter in Boston. Gage vowed severe discipline. The colonists vowed severe resistance. "The die is cast," George III wrote to Lord North. "The colonies must either triumph or submit."

JOHN Carroll left Wardour Castle in May 1774 and sailed for Maryland to reunite with his aged and widowed mother, the former Eleanor Darnall, whom he had not seen in twenty-five years. The history of Eleanor Darnall is the history of Maryland, which bears some reflection here.

In 1625, at about the time young Charles Stuart was inheriting the throne of England from his father, King James I, the Jesuits converted a high government official to Roman Catholicism. That official was Secretary of State George Calvert, the first Lord Baltimore. For the sake of appearances – it was deemed inappropriate for a Catholic to serve a Calvinist monarch – Baltimore resigned his post. Meanwhile, behind the scenes the Jesuits perfected an audacious marriage arrangement between Charles, now King Charles I, and a Roman Catholic princess, Henriette-Marie, sister of Louis XIII of France. The marriage purported to be good for Charles' economic interests. He went out of his way to accommodate the Jesuits. Although a Scottish Calvinist, Charles conducted his monarchy in many respects as though it were Roman Catholic. He systematically weakened England's foreign policy toward Catholic France, the country of his Queen. He promoted to the highest levels in the Church of England members of the High Church Party, clergymen sympathetic with Roman Catholic ritual and traditions. And he squandered England's resources in a pointless, Jesuit-engineered war with Spain.

Seven years into his marriage with Henriette-Marie, Charles found himself stuck between personal indebtedness to Ignatian creditors and a stingy Parliament. In hopes of generating tax revenues abroad, he carved a feudal barony out of northern Virginia and granted it to Lord Baltimore. But Baltimore died before developing the grant. The charter passed down to his son, Cecilius Calvert.

Calvert, the new Lord Baltimore, called persecuted emigrants desiring religious and tax freedom to participate in a voyage to a place bearing a name dear to Catholics "Maryland," after the Blessed Virgin. Baltimore did not neglect appealing to the irreligious niche as well. A number of his advertisements spoke of the limitless opportunities from settling in "Merrie Land."

On November 22, 1633, two ships, the *Ark* and the *Dove,* set sail from London. The passenger list included three Jesuits, sixteen to twenty Roman Catholic gentlemen, several hundred predominantly Protestant slaves and laborers, and Cecilius Calvert's brother Leonard. Leonard Calvert had been appointed Maryland's first governor. The voyage of the *Ark* and the *Dove* was spiritually directed by a Jesuit priest named Andrew White. Educated at both St. Omer's and Douai, a professor for twenty years in Portugal, Spain, and Flanders, Andrew White is remembered by the Church as "the Apostle to Maryland."

Choosing an *Andrew* for the task was good liturgical cabalah on the part of the Gesu. Andrew was the brother of the apostle Peter, the first Pope, the Rock upon whom Roman Catholicism claims to be established. Andrew is the Patron Saint of Scotland; King Charles I was a Scot. A personal representative of the king's brotherly attitude toward Rome could not be more eloquently identified than by the simple name "Andrew." Andrew White consecrated the Maryland voyage to two Catholic saints: the Virgin Mary, Protectress of the Jesuits, and Ignatius Loyola, only recently decreed Patron Saint of Maryland by Urban VIII, the second pupil of Jesuits to be elected Pope.

The ships were at sea nearly four months. Finally, one hundred twenty-three days from England, on March 25, 1634, the parties reached St. Clements Island in the mouth of the Potomac River.

It was an auspicious day. Not only was March 25 the first day of spring, but also it was the first day of the Julian calendar. (In 1752 the colonies would adopt the Gregorian calendar, which we follow today.) On March 25, Andrew White read the first Roman Mass ever held in any of the original thirteen colonies. Then he formally took possession of the land "for our Saviour and for our Sovereign Lord King of England."

Maryland historians trace the juridical origins of the Roman Catholic Church in the United States to a Patuxent Indian chieftain's wigwam, which Andrew White denoted in his diary "the first chapel of Maryland." White introduced Roman Catholicism to the Patuxents, Anacostics, and Piscataways on real estate that today comprises the District of Columbia. It's quite probable that the District of Columbia's executive mansion was termed "White House" less because of a color of exterior paint than out of reverence for the Apostle to Maryland. Every utterance of "White House" should fill the historically knowledgeable Jesuit with pride in his Society's achievements.

Conversions among the Indians ran high, but the Society enjoyed greater profits evangelizing Protestants. For every Protestant settler converted, the Jesuits won a land grant from Cecilius Calvert. Other lands Calvert retained and passed on to his descendants. Over the generations, Rock Creek Farm with its "Rome," on which the U.S. Capitol was erected, devolved to the Calvert heiress Eleanor Darnall and her husband, an Irish immigrant whose marriage and abilities had earned enough money to make him a prosperous merchant-planter. It was to this couple, and on this land, that the first American bishop was born in 1735.

Like his older brother Daniel, Jacky Carroll did his earliest schooling at Bohemia Manor, a secret Jesuit academy just down the road. Bohemia Manor had to be run secretly because of anti-Catholic laws resulting from the abdication of Catholic James II and the succession of Protestants William and Mary to the British throne in 1689. The Penal Period in Maryland, which would extend up to the American Revolution, served the black papacy well by inclining affluent Catholic families to send their sons across the

Atlantic to take the Jesuit *ratio studiorum* at St. Omer's. Indeed, more Americans went to St. Omer's College in the eighteenth century than to Oxford and Cambridge combined.[4]

At the tender age of thirteen, Jacky sailed to Europe with his even younger cousin, Charles Carroll, for schooling at St. Omer's. Daniel returned home from there to help manage the family interests he stood to inherit. In 1753, Jacky entered the novitiate of the Jesuits at Watten in the Netherlands. Charles went on to study pre-law at Voltaire's alma mater, the Collège Louis-le-Grand in Paris. In 1758, Jacky returned to St. Omer's to teach, while Charles crossed the Channel to England, enrolling in London's premier school for barristers, the Inner Temple, founded in the fourteenth century by the Knights Templar.[5]

Jacky was ordained to the Jesuit priesthood in 1761. When he learned that St. Omer's was about to be seized by the French government in preparation for the royal edict suppressing the Jesuits in France, he with other teachers and their pupils moved to Bruges. In 1769, he renounced his Calvert inheritance, sloughed off his nickname, took the extreme Jesuit vow of papal obedience, and began teaching philosophy and theology at the English college in Liège. It was here that he befriended Charles Philippe Stourton, his Grand Tour companion.

JOHN Carroll's arrival at his mother's home in Maryland coincided with Paul Revere's ride to Philadelphia bearing letters from the Boston Committee of Correspondence seeking aid from Charles Thomson's group in protesting the closing of Boston Harbor. From his mother's estate at Rock Creek, Carroll dealt with the aftermath of the Tea Act by exercising his "secularised" priestly authority as Prefect of the Sodality. He integrated the Catholics of Maryland, Pennsylvania, and northern Virginia into the movement for independence.

Charles Thomson's Philadelphia committee sent Boston a letter of support. The committee additionally proposed a congress of deputies from the colonies to (a) consider measures to restore harmony with Great Britain and (b) prevent the dispute from advancing to "an undesirable end." Thomson then notified all the colonies south of Pennsylvania of his committee's action. He suggested the necessity of calling a general congress to consider the problem. Combined with a similar call from the Virginia House of Burgesses, his suggestion was approved throughout the colonies. Plans were laid for the First Continental Congress to meet at Philadelphia in September.

On June 1, 1774, the bill closing Boston Harbor went into effect. Thomson's radicals led Philadelphia in observing a day of mourning. Shops closed, churches held services, the people remained quietly in their homes. On June 8, Thomson and more than nine hundred freeholders petitioned Governor Richard Penn to convene the Pennsylvania Assembly so that it might consider sending delegates to an all-colony congress to explore ways of restoring harmony and peace to the British Empire. The Governor refused their request, which justified Thomson's taking action outside the established order.

Thomson called for a town meeting to be held on June 18. Nearly 8,000 Philadelphians attended. Boisterously, they resolved that the closing of Boston Harbor was tyrannical, and that a Continental Congress to secure the rights and liberties of the colonies must be convened in Philadelphia.

In July, the Pennsylvania Assembly yielded to Thomson's popular pressure and agreed to name a delegation to this First Continental Congress. Thomson, however, was not named.

Thanks to the publicity from his "First Citizen/Second Citizen" media production during the first half of 1773, Charles Carroll was named by the Annapolis Committee of Correspondence to be a delegate to the First Continental Congress. But he declined the nomination. He said that his usefulness might be restricted by anti-Catholic sentiment engendered by the Quebec Act (with which Parliament had avenged the Boston Tea Party by giving the western lands of Massachusetts, Connecticut, Virginia, and New York to Catholic Quebec). He attended the Congress, however, but as an "unofficial consultant" to the Marylanders. Charles Thomson accompanied the Pennsylvanians in the same capacity.

To prepare for the September 5th opening session, delegates began arriving in Philadelphia in late August. They congregated at a well-known radical meeting-place, the elegant mansion of Thomas Mifflin. Mifflin had studied classics under Charles Thomson at Benjamin Franklin's Academy (later to become University of Pennsylvania). They were close friends. As Mifflin's houseguest, Thomson was on hand round the clock to greet and confer with the arriving leaders, most of whom already knew him by name. John Adams' diary entry for August 30th speaks of "much conversation" he and his fellow delegates had with the learned Thomson. He called Thomson "the Sam Adams of Philadelphia," and "the life of the cause of liberty."

Thomson and the Carrolls – Charles, Daniel, and John – spent these critical preliminary days lobbying for the inevitability of war. Thomson was already heavily invested in New Jersey's Batso Furnace. Batso would furnish cannon balls, shot, kettles, spikes and nails to the army through the War Commissioner, who controlled all the executive duties of the military department. The War Commissioner was just the man Lorenzo Ricci needed for the job: *Charles Carroll.*

Thomson was elected Secretary of the First Continental Congress, an office he held under the title "Perpetual Secretary" until the United States Constitution was ratified in 1789. He led the delegates through an itemized statement of the American theory of rebellion that culminated in the critical Declaration and Resolves of October 14, 1774.

IT was while the First Continental Congress was deliberating America's future under British tyranny that Ganganelli, Pope Clement XIV, died his agonizing death (September 22, 1774). When the papacy is vacant, says *New Catholic Encyclopedia,* the administration and guardianship of the Holy See's temporal rights – that is, its business affairs – are routinely taken over by the Treasurer of the Apostolic Chamber. The Apostolic Treasurer on the day of Ganganelli's passing was Cardinal Giovanni Braschi. A fifty-seven-year-old aristocrat of impoverished parentage, Cardinal

Braschi was a sterling product of the Jesuit colleges. The *ratio studiorum* had made of him a distinguished lawyer and diplomat. He had been Apostolic Treasurer when Rothschild began serving the Catholic principality of Hesse-Hanover in 1769. This interesting fact awakens the possibility that the Cardinal and Rothschild had been involved in Ricci's American project for years. But that is only conjecture. What is beyond conjecture, however, is that until a new pope could be elected, the whole fiscal wealth of the Roman Catholic Church belonged to Braschi and to no one else. Although lacking formal entitlement, Cardinal Braschi would rule as a kind of "virtual" *Pontifex Maximus* for one of the longest periods of papal vacancy on record.

Day after day after day, the conclave haggled over a single issue – What would the candidates do about the Jesuits? Should Ganganelli's brief of Disestablishment continue to be enforced or not?

Although Lorenzo Ricci was in detention at Castel Sant'Angelo, we know he could easily hop a tunnel carriage to the Vatican for covert meetings with the Virtual Pope. In a very real way, Braschi was a creation of Ricci's. Braschi had been made a Cardinal under the sponsorship of Ganganelli, whose own cardinalate was sponsored, as we recall, by Ricci. These two most powerful men on earth, Ricci and Braschi, had been secretly allied for years. And now the turn of events had made them invisible and inaudible. These last precious days in the final bursting-forth of Ricci's grand strategy afforded ideal conditions for Braschi and Ricci to determine face-to-face with the Rothschild emissaries, out of public sight and mind, how the Vatican's immense resources – money, men, supplies – would be deployed in the coming months and years. (In October 1774, for example, colonial agent Benjamin Franklin sent England's most enlightened copywriter, Tom Paine, to beef up the pamphleteers in Philadelphia.)

The days of papal vacancy wore on – thirty, fifty, sixty, seventy-five, a hundred days, a hundred and ten. Finally, after nearly five months of confusion, on February 15, 1775, the one hundred thirty-fourth day, it was announced that Rome had a new Pope. The new pope was a man acceptable to both sides of the Jesuit question. He had tacitly assured the anti-Jesuits that he would continue to enforce Disestablishment, yet the pro-Jesuits knew he would enforce it *tenderly* because of the great intellectual, political, and spiritual debts he owed the Society. The new pope was best qualified for the papacy because he'd been running the Holy See with Lorenzo Ricci for the past hundred thirty-four days – *Giovanni Braschi!* Braschi took the papal name Pius VI.

And now plummeted the great avalanche.

ON February 9, 1775 the British Parliament declared Massachusetts to be "in a state of rebellion."

On March 23, Patrick Henry delivered his famous "*GIVE ME LIBERTY OR GIVE ME DEATH*" oration.

On April 19, at a tense daybreak confrontation on Lexington Green between a group of angry colonists and some eight hundred redcoats, an unseen and unidentified shootist fired on the redcoats from behind a nearby meeting-house. This was the "shot heard 'round the world" – although Ralph Waldo Emerson coined that phrase in his *Concord Hymn* (1836) to describe a skirmish at Concord Bridge, seven miles away and a few hours later. The air on Lexington Green crackled with exploding gunpowder, and when the smoke cleared, eight colonists lay dead.[6]

As the redcoats returned to Boston, they were attacked by ever-increasing colonial militiamen. The Massachusetts Provincial Congress mobilized 13,600 colonial soldiers and placed Boston under a siege that lasted for almost a year.

To prevent the spread of the Boston carnage to the Quaker province, the Pennsylvania Assembly named Charles Thomson and twelve others to a committee to purchase explosives and munitions – the leading manufacturers of which happened to be Thomson and Charles Carroll.

On May 10, the Second Continental Congress convened in Philadelphia and named George Washington commander-in-chief of the Continental Army.

On June 22, Congress voted to issue a continental currency –

two million dollars in unsecured bills of credit – to be used in paying the costs of war.

On July 3, George Washington formally assumed command of the Continental Army, about seventeen thousand men gathered in Cambridge, Massachusetts.

On July 5, Congress adopted its last humble plea for peace with England, the "Olive Branch Petition," written by Charles Thomson and John Dickinson. Governor Penn of Pennsylvania personally delivered the Petition to London, but the King's Friends prevented George III from seeing Penn or even acknowledging the Petition.

On July 6, Congress adopted the Declaration of the Causes and Necessities of Taking Up Arms, which fell short of asserting independence, but vowed a holy war of liberation from slavery.

On August 23, George III issued a proclamation declaring that all thirteen American colonies were in a state of open rebellion. Two months later, in October, British forces burned Falmouth, what is presently Portland, Maine.

The war was on. But from Lorenzo Ricci's vantage point, the war was *won.* There remained only opportunities now for his enemies, the British Crown and the American colonials, to engage in blood-letting hostilities that would eventually separate and exhaust them both. *Divide et impera,* divide and conquer. What to the British was "the War of American Rebellion," and to the Americans "the War for Independence," was to General Ricci "the War of Reunification with Protestant Dissidents." From it would rise the first Febronian government on earth, a constellation of secular churches called states led by an electorate of laymen properly enlightened by the *ratio studiorum* and *united* under the spiritual guidance of *Pontifex Maximus,* and paying tribute to Rome for the privilege. *United ... States.*

The *real* war over, there began now the unraveling, which was the *historical* war, the *theatrical* war. This would consist of a series of bloody battles mounted by Congress and Crown for the people's participation, observation, and commemoration. These events would produce Caesarean Rome's essential emotional cornerstone.

Like Virgil's *Aeneid,* epic national heroes would forge a fictitious national legacy. We must not forget Charles Thomson's candid assessment that the Revolution's leaders were largely deceptions, men of "supposed wisdom and valor" who were far inferior to "the qualities that have been ascribed to them."

And there is evidence – admittedly the faintest hint of evidence (as is so often the case with clandestine warriors) – that Lorenzo Ricci communed with these American heroes, and gave them instruction, on their own soil. This evidence is presented in our next chapter.

THE GENERALATE OF LORENZO RICCI — 1750-1775

A Brief Summary of Events

	EUROWORLD	ENGLAND	AMERICA
1758	**LORENZO RICCI** elected Black Pope, **CLEMENT XIII** elected Pope. **JOHN CARROLL** begins teaching at **ST. OMER'S. POMBAL** denounces Jesuits in **PORTUGAL.**	**BENJ. FRANKLIN** in **LONDON** seeking greater British presence in Pennsylvania. **KING GEORGE II** obliges by plunging England into the French & Indian Wars. **CHAS. CARROLL** graduates in civil law from Jesuit college in **PARIS**, arrives in London for more legal studies at the **MIDDLE TEMPLE.**	Colonies happy, seeking greater British presence, yet **SAM ADAMS** begins organizing against Great Britain. Gadsen in S.C., Harnett in N.C., Patrick Henry and Jefferson in Virginia, and Chas. Thomson in Phila. follow suit.
1759	Jesuits expelled from **PORTUGAL, VOLTAIRE** bashes Jesuits in two hit plays in Pans, **GANGANELLI** becomes cardinal, under **RICCI'S** sponsorship.	**GEORGE II'S** grandson, the **PRINCE OF WALES**, matures under the spiritual direction of **LORD BUTE.**	**CHAS. THOMSON** formalizes **"YOUNG JUNTO,"** a secret club for young men interested in useful arts and sciences cloned from **FRANKLIN'S "JUNTO,"** and akin to **SAM ADAMS' "CAUCUS CLUB"** in Boston.
1760	Jesuits under attack in **SPAIN.**	**GEORGE III** takes throne upon Grandfather's death, **BUTE** runs Parliament through **"KING'S FRIENDS."**	Happy to be English subjects, **COLONISTS** are peacefully "ruled by a little pen, ink, and paper-led by a thread."
1761	Jesuits condemned in **SPAIN.**	**BUTE**, virtual head of British government, chooses mate for **GEORGE III,** Queen **CHARLOTTE** of Mecklenburg.	**WRITS OF ASSISTANCE** imposed on colonists by **KING'S FRIENDS. JOHN ADAMS** considers this the **"COMMENCEMENT OF THE CONTROVERSY."**
1762	Jesuits condemned by **FRENCH** parlement. **JOHN CARROLL** transfers to **BRUGES.**		**BENJ. FRANKLIN** returns to install **POSTAL SYSTEM** connecting southern Virginia with eastern New England
1763	**FEBRONIUS** publishes *STATE OF THE-'. CHURCH,* calling for reunification of Protestants with Catholics in states under the papacy's spiritual direction.	**ENGLAND** wins **FRENCH & INDIAN WARS,** but under terms of the **PEACE OF PARIS**, negotiated by **LORD BUTE**, is cut off from any European alliances and made object of colonial resentment. **BUTE** forced to resign.	Colonists resent **ENGLAND'S** grant of lands to **FRANCE** under the **PEACE OF PARIS**. The secret clubs agitate against England.
1764	Pope **CLEMENT XIII** bans **FEBRONIUS'** book. **LOUIS XV** suppresses Jesuits by royal edict in **FRANCE.**	**BUTE** picks **GRENVILLE** new Prime Minister. **GRENVILLE** increases duties on colonial imports. **CHAS. CARROLL** leaves England for **MARYLAND.**	**FRANKLIN** returns to England to lobby for Pennsylvania's becoming a royal colony. Colonists resent **GRENVILLE'S** measures, smuggling increases, **GRENVILLE** brings **ADMIRALTY COURTS** inland
1765	**CLEMENT XIII** authorizes office of **SACRED HEART**, a Jesuit cult which holds believers responsible for reparations for the sins of the world, payable through prayers, penances, masses and **SOCIAL ACTION.**	**GRENVILLE** passes **STAMP ACT. ANGLICAN CHURCH** requests British cabinet to establish an **AMERICAN BISHOP.**	**CHAS. CARROLL** arrives in **MARYLAND.** The **AMERICAN BISHOP SCARE** "trains and habituates the colonists to opposition." **PATRICK HENRY**, furious at **STAMP ACT**, cries "No taxation without representation!" **SAM ADAMS** convenes **STAMP ACT CONGRESS** in **NEW YORK.**
1766	**CLEMENT XIII** appoints jesuited **GIOV. BRASCHI** Treasurer of the Apostolic Chamber.	**GRENVILLE** falls. **STAMP ACT** repealed, with rider that **PARLIAMENT** has "full power" to bind colonies, **CHAS. TOWNSHEND** takes over as Prime Minister.	Colonies exuberant over **STAMP ACT** repeal.
1767	**KING CHARLES III** expels Jesuits from **SPAIN.**	**TOWNSHEND ACTS** place high duties on goods received in America.	**TOWNSHEND ACTS** stimulate colonial productivity.

	EUROWORLD	ENGLAND	AMERICA
1768	Jesuits expelled from other Catholic countries.	First *ENCYCLOPEDIA BRITTANICA* published.	Productivity and self-support help raise comfort level of **SEPARATION** and **INDEPENDENCE** among colonists.
1768	Day before meeting with European powers to discuss **DISSOLUTION OF JESUITS**, Pope **CLEMENT XIII** dies suddenly. **GANGANELLI** elected **CLEMENT XIV. ROTHSCHILD** appointed guardian of Vatican treasury. **JOHN CARROLL** ordained a Jesuit.	**TOWNSHEND ACTS** costing more to enforce than revenue returns. **BENJ. FRANKLIN** now representing **PENNSYLVANIA, GEORGIA**, and **NEW JERSEY** in **LONDON.**	**CHAS. THOMSON** opens a rum distillery near **PHILADELPHIA.**
1770		**FRANKLIN** adds **MASSACHUSETTS** to list, making him chief spokesmen for American interests in England. **TOWNSHEND ACTS** repealed	**REDCOATS** fire into an angry Boston crowd. **BOSTON MASSACRE** becomes the symbol of British tyranny.
1771	**JOHN CARROLL** begins tour of Europe with **CHARLES STOURTON.**		On anniversary of **BOSTON MASSACRE, SAM ADAMS** calls for **ACTION AND SOLIDARITY** against England.
1772	**RICCI** causes *AMIOT’S SUN-TZU* to be published in **PARIS**, disclosing his strategy for bringing America under Rome’s dominion.		
1773	After making **GIOV. BRASCHI** cardinal, **CLEMENT XIV** dissolves Jesuits on July 21. On August 17, **LORENZO RICCI** is taken to **ENGLISH COLLEGE** for meetings with **JOHN MATTINGLY** of **MARYLAND, BRASCHI**, and others, perhaps including **EAST INDIA COMPANY.** Sept. 22, **RICCI** taken to **CASTEL SANT’ANGELO**, as Tea Act product heads for Boston.	In May, **PARLIAMENT** passes the **TEA ACT**, proposed by **EAST INDIA COMPANY. JOHN CARROLL** arrives at **WARDOUR CASTLE** in Wiltshire, England, to serve as Chaplain to the **ARUNDELLS.**	**CHAS. CARROLL** runs his *“FIRST CITIZEN”* opinion shaper. **CHAS. THOMSON’S** group turns back Tea Act product meant for Philadelphia. **DISGUISED FREEMASONS** stage the **BOSTON TEA PARTY**, Dec. 16
1774	Pope **CLEMENT XIV** dies. Church gives appearance of serious disability. **RICCI** accesses **VATICAN** via tunnel from **SANT’ANGELO** for meetings with **CARDINAL BRASCHI**, who runs Holy See during long conclave to elect successor.	**PARLIAMENT** enacts the **INTOLERABLE ACTS**, ostensibly to punish the colonies for **TEA PARTY** offense, but meant to drive them to **SEPARATION. GEORGE III** writes **LORD NORTH**: “The die is cast; the colonies must either triumph or submit.” **TOM PAINE** boards ship for America with letter of introduction from **BENJ. FRANKLIN. JOHN CARROLL** also departs for America	Efforts of **CHAS. THOMSON** result in **FIRST CONTINENTAL CONGRESS** at Philadelphia in Sept., with **THOMSON** serving as *“PERPETUAL SECRETARY”* for the next fifteen years. **CHAS. CARROLL** attends first **CONGRESS** as “unofficial consultant” to Maryland delegation. **THOS. MIFFLIN’S** house scene of secret meetings between **CARROLLS** and patriot leaders. **CHAS. CARROLL** and **CHAS. THOMSON** manufacture explosives and weaponry.
1775	Long conclave (143 days) elects **GIOV. BRASCHI** pope, who takes name **PIUS VI. LORENZO RICCI** “dies” in **CASTEL SANT’ANGELO** Nov 24.	**GEORGE III** ignores *“OLIVE BRANCH PETITION”* offered by Congress.	On Apr. 19, **REDCOATS** fire on Americans in response to an unseen shootist at **LEXINGTON GREEN**, near Concord Bridge
1776	**JOHN AND CHAS. CARROLL** join Congressional **MISSION TO CANADA** and secure **QUEBEC’S NEUTRALITY** in the coming War		**PAINE’S** *COMMON SENSE* published. **DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE** resolved **JULY 2, MDCCLXXVI.**

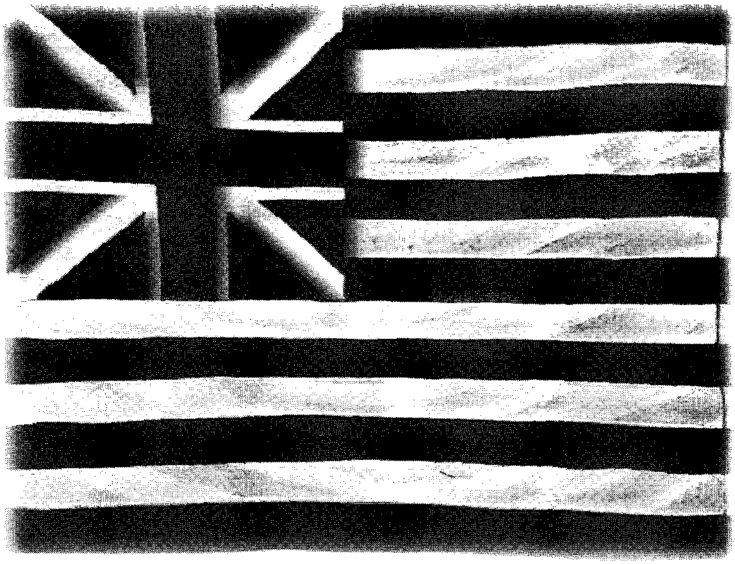

THE NEW REPUBLIC'S FIRST FLAG: THE FLAG OF THE EAST INDIA COMPANY

Chapter 19

THE DEATH & RESURRECTION OF LORENZO RICCI

ON NOVEMBER 19, 1775 officials at Castel Sant'Angelo were presented the following deposition, given under oath and signed by Lorenzo Ricci: "The Society of Jesus that is dissolved offered no reason or pretext whatsoever for its dissolution."

This, Ricci's last official statement, is a masterpiece of mental reservation, for indeed the Society had not offered a pretext or reason for its dissolution, and indeed Lorenzo Ricci had not furnished a pretext or reason for his incarceration. The Jesuits had been dissolved and Ricci imprisoned *for no offered reasons whatsoever;* ergo, their dissolution for all eternity was null and void. Outcome would prove this fact: the Society of Jesus would be officially restored in 1814. Since the Disestablishment was a nullity from the beginning, it must follow that the Jesuits were still technically alive as the world's largest clandestine *milice du Christ*. Legally, thousands of Jesuits were still bound to their oath of obedience to the black papacy. They were free now to expand Roman Catholicism with perfect invisibility, end justifying means, dedicating their encyclopedic skills in the useful arts, law, religion, medicine, philosophy, the humanities, finance, commerce, communications, diplomacy, banking, finance, espionage, and intrigue – dedicating all to both sides of the self-extirpating Protestant belligerents. "*Now, whether he kill Cassio or Cassio him, or each do kill the other, every way makes my gain!*"

If the Society of Jesus could conquer though believed dead, could not its Superior General do the same? When Lorenzo Ricci "died" in his cell at Castel Sant'Angelo on November 24, 1775, what if his "death" was no more physical than the supposed disestablishment of his army? Lesser mystics than Ricci, who secretly commanded the Rosicrucians, were known to die and resurrect at the threshold of important endeavors:

> According to material available, the supreme council of the Fraternity of the Rose Croix [Rosicrucians] was composed of a certain number of individuals who had died what is known as the "philosophic death." When the time came for an initiate to enter upon his labors for the Order, he conveniently "died" under somewhat mysterious circumstances. In reality he changed his name and place of residence, and a box of rocks or a body secured for the purpose was buried in his stead. It is believed that this happened in the case of Sir Francis Bacon who, like all servants of the Mysteries, renounced all personal credit and permitted others to be considered as the authors of the documents which he wrote or inspired.[1]

Was it really Ricci's body lying in state at the cathedral of San Giovanni d'Fiorentini during the elaborate funeral mass that Pius VI arranged for him? Was it really Lorenzo Ricci who was entombed beneath the Church of the Gesu a week later, in the vault reserved for Generals of the Society? Or was it a wax effigy sculpted by artisans upon a corpse of Ricci's dimensions under the direction of John Carroll's collaborator, man-about-Rome and art agent *extraordinaire* Francis Thorpe?

Of course, Lorenzo Ricci would have covered his tracks in sublimely Sun-Tzuan fashion, so we can never be sure. But is it not consistent with his authority, resources, motives, and modus operandi, as well as the verifiable outcome of American Independence, that the General would feign death at precisely this opportunity and sail to America in order to conduct his orchestrations personally? Reflect on his counsel in *The Thirteen Articles* of Sun-Tzu, particularly –

> The great art of a General is to arrange for the enemy never to know the place where he will have to fight & to carefully withhold from him knowledge of which posts he must guard. If he manages that & can also hide the slightest of his movements, then he is not only a clever General, he is an extraordinary man, a prodigy. Without being seen, he sees. He hears without being heard.
>
> Go to places where the enemy would never suspect that you intended to go.... Do not think of gathering the fruits of your victory until his entire defeat has put you in a position where you can yourself reconnoitre surely, tranquilly & with leisure.

If the General did sail to America rather than lie in state, he would arrive not as a conquering hero but as a gentle, harmless, nameless, scholarly old man who spent most of his time reading. And during the course of his stay, inevitably, someone would observe his subtle power over great patriots and write about it. Just such a person was observed and written about.

DURING the fall of 1775, Congress authorized a committee made up of Benjamin Franklin, Thomas Lynch, Benjamin Harrison and George Washington to consider and recommend a design for the first united colonial flag. The so-called "Flag Committee" traveled to Cambridge, Massachusetts. There, according to the only known account of its proceedings, given in Robert Allen Campbell's book, *Our Flag* (Chicago, 1890), the Committee mysteriously shared its authority with a total stranger. This stranger was an elderly European transient known only as "the Professor."

He had arrived from parts unknown at summer's end. (The prisoner of Castel Sant'Angelo had not been publicly seen in two years – ample time to manage Braschi's election to the papacy, relax, pack important things, die the philosopher's death, and take a three-month voyage to Boston Harbor). Since his arrival, the Professor had occupied a guestroom in a private Cambridge home whose hostess, "one of his earnest and intelligent disciples," would remember him in her diary (cited in Campbell's book) as "a quiet and very interesting member of the family."

What the hostess records about the Professor matches remarkably what is known about the character of Lorenzo Ricci. For example, the Professor is perceived to be "more than three-score and ten" years of age; Lorenzo Ricci was seventy-two. The Professor spoke many languages fluently, displayed an encyclopedic knowledge of history, and was "seemingly at home upon any and every topic coming up in conversation." We might expect the very same of Lorenzo Ricci, a distinguished professor of literature, philosophy and theology at the Roman College and a well-established confidant of Europe's leading intellectuals, *philosophes,* and mystics. The Professor kept "locked away in a large, old fashioned, cubically shaped, iron bound, heavy, oaken chest, a number of very rare old books and ancient manuscripts," which he spent much of his time "deciphering, translating, or rewriting." We might expect as much of Lorenzo Ricci, the voracious scholar and publisher of oriental masterworks.

On the morning of December 13, 1775, the committeemen arrived in Cambridge for a midday feast. The Professor greeted them as we might expect Lorenzo Ricci would, "with an ease, grace and dignity [evidencing] his superior ability, experience and attainments, and ... with a courtly bow that left no room to doubt that he had habitually associated with those in acknowledged authority." When Benjamin Franklin was presented to him, the hostess watched the patriarchal Doctor lock hands with the patriarchal Professor, "and as fingers closed upon fingers, their eyes also met, and there was an instantaneous, a very apparent and a mutually gratified recognition." What had the woman witnessed? The

Ultimate Summit? Unknown Superior revealing himself to America's Grandest Freemason?

The table talk soon focused on subjects that had occupied Lorenzo Ricci's attention since the beginning of his generalate. The hostess witnessed them discussing "the relation of the Colonies to each other and to the Mother Country." She saw them discuss "the related question of one's duty to the Colony, as related to his allegiance to Great Britain." She saw the Professor take "a noticeable, though not at all an obtrusive, part in the conversation, himself possessed of a wonderful fund of varied and accurate information concerning the Colonies, an understanding of their progress, condition and needs, and a familiarity with the principles and operations of British and European statesmanship." Wouldn't we expect as much from the Superior General of the world's best intelligence agency?

After lunch, General Washington and the committeemen held a "brief, undertone conversation." Then Dr. Franklin rose and stated: "As the chairman of this committee, speaking for my associates, with their consent, and with the approval of General Washington, I respectfully invite the Professor to meet with the Committee as one of its members; and we, each one, personally and urgently, request him to accept the responsibility, and to give us, and the American Colonies, the benefit of his counsel."

Taking the floor, the Professor accepted the responsibility. Then, startlingly, he proposed that his disciple, the hostess, be placed on the committee "because she is our hostess, because she is a woman, and above all, because she is a superior woman." (The committee considered this an innovation; yet the Jesuits had been employing female coadjutors for centuries.) The proposal was "immediately and unanimously adopted." Luncheon was adjourned. The committee would reconvene at seven in the evening, "in the guest chamber usually occupied by the Professor."

Franklin and the Professor spent the afternoon together walking about Cambridge. When they returned, the hostess noted that "both of them wore the relieved and confident look of earnest and determined men who had, in a satisfactory way, solved a perplexing problem, and of victors who had successfully mastered a difficult and dangerous situation."

At the evening session, Franklin turned the meeting over to "his new-found and abundantly honored friend." The subject was a flag. Addressing the committee as "Comrade Americans," the Professor explained that, since the colonies were still dependent upon Great Britain, "we are not expected to design or recommend a flag which will represent a new government or an independent nation," but instead one "that will testify our present loyalty as English Subjects," a flag that was "already in use," a flag that had been recognized by the British government for "half a century," a flag having a field of alternate horizontal red and white stripes with the Grand Union Flag of Great Britain in the upper left corner.

"I refer," he said, "to the *flag of the East India Company."*

To hide the fact that Americans would be fighting under the private flag of an international mercantile corporation controlled by Jesuits, the Professor provided a plausible cover whereby the flag could be "explained to the masses:"

> "The Union Flag of the Mother Country is retained as the union [upper left corner] of our new flag to announce that the Colonies are loyal to the just and legitimate sovereignty of the British Government. The thirteen stripes will at once be understood to represent the thirteen Colonies; their equal width will type the equal rank, rights and responsibilities of the Colonies. The union of the stripes in the field of our flag will announce the unity of interests and the cooperative union of efforts, which the Colonies recognize and put forth in their common cause. The white stripes will signify that we consider our demands just and reasonable; and that we will seek to secure our rights through peaceable, intelligent and statesmanlike means – if they prove at all possible; and the red stripes at the top and bottom of our flag will declare that first and last – and always – we have the determination, the enthusiasm, and the power to use force – whenever we deem force necessary. The alternation of the red and white stripes will suggest that our reasons for all demands will be intelligent and forcible, and that our force in securing our rights will be just and reasonable."

The Professor reminded the committee that "the masses of the people, and a large majority of the leaders of public opinion, desire a removal of grievances, and a rectification of wrongs, through a fuller recognition of their rights as British Subjects; and few of them desire and very few of them expect – at this time – any complete severance of their present political and dependent relations with the English Government." That severance would occur "before the sun in its next summer's strength" – indicating that the Professor foreknew, as Lorenzo Ricci would have foreknown, a July declaration of independence. At that time, the East India Company flag could be "easily modified" by replacing the Union Jack with stars against a blue background, "to make it announce and represent the new and independent nation."

Washington and Franklin lavished the Professor's idea with "especial approval and unstinted praise." The committee formally and unanimously adopted the East India Company's banner, known as "The Thirteen Stripes," as the "general flag and recognized standard of the Colonial Army and Navy." Just before midnight, they adjourned.

On January 2, 1776, at a formal ceremony attended by the Flag Committee, George Washington personally hoisted the East India Company flag "upon a towering and specially raised pine tree liberty pole," unfurling it to the breeze and displaying it for the first time "to his army, the citizens of the vicinity, and the British forces in Boston." The British officers at Charlestown Heights perceived the event

> to mean that General Washington had thus announced his surrender to them. At once, they saluted "The Thirteen Stripes" with thirteen hearty cheers. They immediately followed this spontaneous outburst of British Enthusiasm with the grander and more dignified official salute of thirteen guns, the thirteen-gun salute being the highest compliment in gunpowder, the military "God speed you."

By so colorfully equivocating both his enemies, the Professor had made himself God of Confusion. The redcoats were toasting the good health of the rebels, who in turn were fighting for the East India Company. One of the few places in the world where such ludicrous phenomena are considered standard and routine is in the pages of Lorenzo Ricci's *Thirteen Articles:* "The General decides everything; he knows how to shape, at will, not only the army he is commanding but also that of his enemies."

LORENZO Ricci's post-mortem attendance in America is strongly suggested in yet another pivotal episode, the famous "mission to Canada." This strange exercise is normally regarded by historians as a colossal failure. It began on February 15, 1776, when the Second Continental Congress resolved to send Benjamin Franklin, Samuel Chase, and Charles Carroll to Montreal with full authority "to promote or form a union" with Canada against England.

Just before the committee left Philadelphia, John Adams proposed a curious last-minute resolution. On the record, he requested "that Charles Carroll *prevail on Mr. John Carroll to accompany the committee to Canada,* to assist them in such matters as they shall think useful." Congress adopted the resolution.

How might a priest have assisted the committee in promoting or forming a union with Canada? The answer lies in demographics. Canada then was largely Quebec, and Quebec, though ruled despotically by the British since 1763, was mostly Roman Catholic. A Jesuit priest, armed with the right Vatican paperwork or password, could exert powerful influence on Canadian foreign policy. The same priest, if accompanied by the combined head of the black papacy and international Freemasonry, could *make* that policy.

The mission arrived in Montreal only to learn that Bishop Briand of Quebec had ordered Pierre Floquet, the Jesuit superior in Montreal, to consider John Carroll *persona non grata.* Floquet, however, defied his bishop and invited Carroll to say a mass in his home anyway, for which Floquet was immediately suspended from his priestly functions. The incident colored the mission with disaster (although Floquet was restored, according to Walsh's *Ameri-*

can Jesuits, after a simple apology). Disaster was verified when the committee returned to Philadelphia with no prospect for any union whatsoever with Canada. Congress lamented that America's first diplomatic legation had failed.

But America's first diplomatic legation was Sun-Tzuan and Jesuitic, and Jesuit diplomacy can be expected to conceal victory behind mishap. As the *Thirteen Articles* put it, "You must have a real advantage when the enemy believes you have sustained some losses." So we examine the Canadian mishap for a real advantage and discover something far more valuable than the originally-sought union. While Bishop Briand was outwardly demeaning John Carroll, the mission was obtaining from Canada a position of *neutrality.* This was a significant achievement, considering Canada's good relationship with Great Britain on the one hand and two centuries of hostilities toward New England on the other. For the colonists, Canadian neutrality removed the threat of a powerful northwestern enemy and cleared the way for a declaration of independence. At Montreal, as at Cambridge, I sense the presence of someone infinitely more commanding than mere committeemen appointed by Congress. I sense the presence of the "honorary" committeeman unlisted in any record – the Professor, the fugitive Vicar of Christ.

Returning from Canada, Benjamin Franklin fell ill. It was John Carroll who escorted him to Philadelphia. At Franklin's invitation, Carroll moved into his home. Franklin acknowledged the fact in a letter dated May 27, 1776, mentioning "Mr. Carroll's friendly assistance and tender care of me." These were critical weeks of countdown to the Declaration of Independence. I wonder who else might have been found under the Franklin roof? Perhaps the Professor, with his dynamic oaken chest?

Philadelphia was crawling just now with social activists from all over, the very people Lorenzo Ricci had appointed John Carroll, as Prefect of the Sodality, to organize. The home of America's pre-eminent Freemason, with Carroll and perhaps even Ricci in residence, would have become the main clearing-house for sub rosa congressional business.

ON July 3, 1776, John Adams took pen in hand and dashed off a letter to his wife Abigail. Adams was a writer of Mozartean facility, concentration, and confidence. Everything he ever wrote was first-draft and good. He never struck through words, never edited. His moving hand, having writ, just moved on. "Yesterday," he scribbled,

> the greatest question was decided which ever was debated in America, and a greater, perhaps, never was nor will be decided among men. A resolution was passed without one dissenting colony, that these United Colonies are, and of right ought to have, full power to make war, conclude peace, establish commerce, and to do all other acts and things which other States may rightfully do. The *second day of July 1776* will be the most memorable date in the history of America. I am apt to believe that it will be celebrated by succeeding generations as the great anniversary festival. It ought to be commemorated as the day of deliverance, by solemn acts of devotion to God Almighty. It ought to be solemnized with pomp and parade, with shows, games, sports, guns, bells, bonfires, and illuminations, from one end of this continent to the other, from this time forward, forevermore.

If the black papacy truly had orchestrated America's breakaway from England, we would expect to find the second day of July to be rich in cabalah and in Roman Catholic liturgical color. The Liturgical Calendar is a process, authorized nowhere in the Bible, through which faithful Catholics may plead with Almighty God for favors through the merits of ascended saints on special feast days. Supposedly, the prayerful performance of an act on a date the Church has consecrated to a saint endows the act with the mystique of the saint as well as the saint's intercessory prayers to God for success.

Maryland history, for example, is grounded in the Liturgical Calendar. We recall how the original settlers of Maryland, many of whom were Roman Catholics, set sail from England, under the spiritual direction of Jesuit father Andrew White, on November 22, 1633. November 22 is the Feast Day of St. Cecilia, a third century Roman martyr and traditional patroness of musicians. Did Cecilia's spirit bless the voyage with musicality to cheer up an otherwise oppressive boredom? The voyagers reached landfall the following year on March 25, Annunciation Day, feast of the angel Gabriel's announcement to the Virgin Mary that she is pregnant with the Son of God. Annunciation Day contains the joyful mystery of an angel's announcing the planting of the divine seed within a virgin matrix. Did the settlers imagine themselves planting the seed of a new social order in a strange wilderness, the whole enterprise blessed by God through the merits of the Virgin Mary's unique relationship to Him? Then, exactly one year later, on Annunciation Day 1634, Father White consecrated the colony of Maryland to the Virgin Mary.

The second day of July in the year 1776 was Visitation Day, commemorating the event recorded in the first chapter of Luke wherein the Virgin, pregnant with the Messiah, visits her cousin Elizabeth, who is pregnant with John the Baptist. (Nowadays Visitation Day is celebrated on May 31, but in the year 1776 it was celebrated on July second, as it had been celebrated, according to the *New Catholic Encyclopedia*'s article entitled "Visitation of Mary," every year since the Council of Basel in 1441.)

No day in the Liturgical Calendar is more suited to Bellarminian liberation theology than Visitation Day. Ste. Margaret-Marie Alacoque, whose visions inspired the Jesuit social-action cult of Sacred Heart, was a member of the Visitandines, an order of nuns devoted to the Visitation. Visitation Day's scriptural basis is the Virgin Mary's ecstatic sermon to Elizabeth at Luke 1:46-55. This famous ejaculation, known as the *Magnificat* (the opening word in the Latin Vulgate's rendering of the passage, meaning "it magnifies"), literally *defines* the social action called for by Sacred Heart in Philadelphia on the second day of July, 1776:

> My soul doth magnify the Lord, and my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour. For he hath regarded the low estate of his handmaiden: for, behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed. For he that is mighty hath done to me great things; and holy is his name. And his mercy is on them that fear

> him from generation to generation. He hath shewed strength with his arm; he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts. He hath put down the mighty from their seats, and exalted them of low degree. He hath filled the hungry with good things; and the rich he hath sent empty away....

Scattered the proud, put down the mighty, exalted them of low degree, filled the hungry, emptied the rich.... This is the rhetoric of Christian redemption, yes, but in the context of Lorenzo Ricci's agenda it's the rhetoric of rebellion-to-tyranny, the very *point* of the Declaration of Independence, and it's spoken by the Virgin Mary, Patroness of the Society of Jesus, Patroness of Maryland, indeed, Patroness of Roman Catholic Conquest, on the day particular to her.

Even the year of Independence seems divinely validated by the perfect design of sixes and sevens contained within its expression in Roman numerals, MDCCLXXVI:

MDC = 1600 = (1+6) = 7
CLX = 160 = (1+6) = 7
XVI = 16 = (1+6) = 7

Particularly fascinating is the way the Latin equivalent of 1776 is structured upon 666 and 777. Swiss theologian E. W. Bullinger, in his scholarly guide to biblical arithmography, *Number In Scripture,* says that 6 in the Bible is always associated with humanity, 7 with divinity. The two numbers total 13, which Bullinger says is biblically associated with rebellion.

MDCCLXXVI, 1776, really does seem to be a unique convergence of time and human rebellion in the service of a divine ordination. This is eerily corroborated by John Adams' letter to Abigail on July third. He confides to his wife that independence *should have been declared in December of 1775:*

> Had a Declaration of Independency been made *seven months ago,* it would have been attended with many great and glorious effects. If I could write with freedom, I could easily convince you that it would, and explain it to you the manner how.

Adams never fully explained how the earlier declaration would have produced great and glorious effects. However, the numbers suggest it would have rather fizzled. Roman numerals for 1775 fall into the following groups:

MDC = 1600 = (1+6) = 7
CLX = 160 = (1+6) = 7
XV = 15 = (1 + 5) = 6

Plain to see, December 1775 fails as cabalah. It gives no indication of divine approval to rebellious humanity. This is why, I believe, Lorenzo Ricci held out for 1776.

Of course, a sufficiently gnostic Jesuit would see in MDCCLXXVI more than good numbers. He would see an encapsulation of the very origins of the Society of Jesus. MDC would give him *milice du Christ* ("Christian militia"), the official classification of the Knights Templar and the Society of Jesus. MDC also produces Medici, the family name of Pope Leo X, whose degeneracy provoked Martin Luther to create the Protestant movement, which in turn created the need for the Society. CLX specifies the Ignatian era, which historians have ever since called the "Century of Leo X." And the last three numerals name the Century of Leo X, the sixteenth century, XVI.

WHEN it came time to sign the Declaration of Independence, how could Lorenzo Ricci not be present? How could he who had labored more than seventeen years for this superbly Bellarminian ambiance *not* participate in the excitement?

There is a story, usually told in conjunction with the Professor and the Flag Committee, involving another mysterious stranger, one who suddenly appeared in the legislative chamber of the old State House in Philadelphia on the night of July fourth.

The moment was tense. Independence had been resolved, but the document lacked signatures. Some were having second thoughts about the risks. Masonic historian Manly P. Hall writes:

> It was a grave moment and not a few of those present feared that their lives would be the forfeit for their audacity. In the

> midst of the debate a fierce voice rang out. The debaters stopped and turned to look upon the stranger. Who was this man who had suddenly appeared in their midst and transfixed them with his oratory? They had never seen him before, none knew when he had entered, but his tall form and pale face filled them with awe. His voice ringing with a holy zeal, the stranger stirred them to their very souls. His closing words rang through the building: "God has given America to be free!" As the stranger sank into a chair exhausted, a wild enthusiasm burst forth. Name after name was placed upon the parchment: the Declaration of Independence was signed. But where was the man who had precipitated the accomplishment of this immortal task – who had lifted for a moment the veil from the eyes of the assemblage and revealed to them a part at least of the great purpose for which the new nation was conceived? He had disappeared, nor was he ever seen again or his identity established.[2]

Be warned. This is only a story, unsupported by primary source material. John Adams, the most talkative of the framers, said not a word about it. But we know from Adams' own pen that some kind of gag order had been imposed upon the signers – *"if I could write with freedom"* he had told Abigail in that letter dated the third of July. Could Manly Hall have received the story through Freemasory's well-insulated oral tradition? Could the stranger whose voice rang "with a holy zeal" have been the Professor, Lorenzo Ricci? Could the "wild enthusiasm" with which the legislators signed the declaration have resulted not from Ricci's inspiring pep-talk but upon his disclosure of documents taken from the oaken chest, documents easy for the Vicar of Christ in his capacity as Freemasonry's Unknown Superior to obtain, *guaranteeing that the international monetary network would indemnify the signers for their action?* My mind, informed by an ever-increasing knowledge of how the greatest clandestine warriors fight, has no problem whatsoever believing this to be the case. It is exquisitely consistent with the formation of a Febronian union of thirteen Protestant colonies, ordained to be ruled from a federal city named "Rome," a city situated within the See of Baltimore, under the protection of the Patroness of the Society of Jesus.

One of the more intriguing clues that the United States of America was established under *Regimini militantis ecclesiae* is the new republic's Great Seal. As we shall see in the next chapter, the Seal is legal proof that America's true founding fathers were indeed priests of Rome.

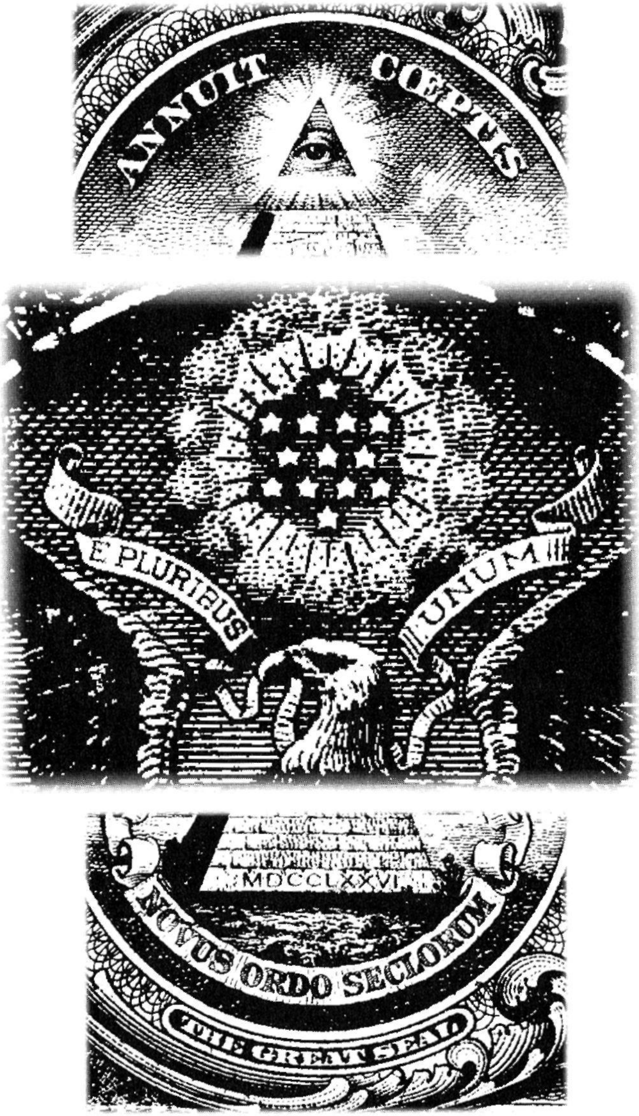
ANNUIT COEPTIS
E PLURIBUS UNUM
MDCCLXXVI
NOVUS ORDO SECLORUM
THE GREAT SEAL

Chapter 20

AMERICAN GRAFFITI

THERE IS A UNIVERSAL legal tradition that requires acts of a governmental authority to be marked by a seal – otherwise the acts are not authentic. Typically, a seal discloses the character of the authority it represents by means of an image which can be, and usually is, amplified by some sentence, phrase, or word.

The first seal of the United States of America, designed to authenticate all governmental actions under the Declaration of Independence, was presented to Congress in August 1776. Created by an official committee consisting of Benjamin Franklin, John Adams, and Thomas Jefferson, the seal illustrates an event based on Exodus 14:19-27. It is a cameo of Moses leading the Israelites through the parted waters while a chariot-bound Pharaoh, wielding a sword and wearing the crown of tyranny, perishes in the maelstrom. Framing the picture are the words "*REBELLION TO TYRANTS IS OBEDIENCE TO GOD.*"

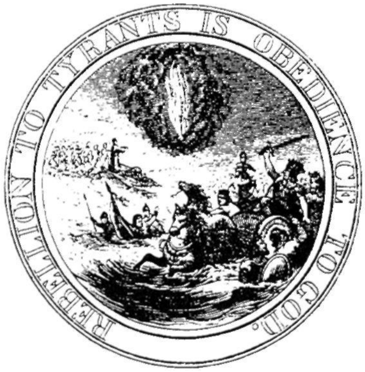
REBELLION TO TYRANTS IS OBEDIENCE TO GOD.

THE MOSAIC SEAL
of August, 1776

When I first became aware of this seal many years ago, I thought it demonstrated how intensely *biblical* was the faith of the founding fathers. But once I began discerning the hidden makers of American nationalism, my thinking changed radically. I now see this seal, despite the biblical glow of the committee that designed it, as the profession of an intensely *Roman Catholic* faith. For there is a great disparity between biblical faith and Roman Catholic faith. Indeed, this disparity was the crux of the Protestantism which Pope Paul III commissioned the Society of Jesus to extirpate.

Biblical faith regards the Bible alone, *sola scriptura,* apart from any other source, to be a sufficient and infallible rule of life. In the Bible's own words: "All scripture is God-breathed, and is profitable for teaching, for counseling, for correction, and for training in righteousness: that the man of God may be perfect, completely outfitted to perform good works" (2 Timothy 3:16).

Roman Catholic faith, on the other hand, while agreeing that the Bible is God-breathed, considers scripture neither infallible nor sufficient in itself as a rule of life, unless so interpreted by the Magisterium (the teaching authority of the Church), and then so pronounced by the infallible pope.

At Paul III's Council of Trent (1545-63), which we have learned was closely supervised over its eighteen years of existence by the Jesuits, it was decreed that the Magisterium "receives and venerates, with a feeling of piety and reverence all the books of the Old and New Testaments, *also the traditions* [italics mine], whether they relate to faith or morals, as having been dictated either orally by Christ or by the Holy Ghost, and preserved in the Catholic Church in unbroken succession."[1] Over the centuries, Roman Catholic faith in Scripture, as modified by tradition, as pronounced by the Magisterium and pope, has bound millions of consciences to a thousand doctrines not found in scripture and either unknown or rejected by the apostles and early Christian fathers.[2]

The 1776 seal agrees with Roman Catholic teaching as much as it disagrees with the Bible. Whereas the caption "Rebellion to tyrants is obedience to God" is found nowhere in Scripture, it is the cornerstone of Bellarminian liberation theology. The Bible *never* condones rebellion, not even rebellion to those tyrants under whom God's own people, the Israelites, were obliged to suffer continuously. When Scripture mentions rebellion, it is almost always referring to the disobedience of the Israelites toward their God Yahweh. The seventeenth chapter of Proverbs teaches that "the evil man seeks rebellion," and 1 Samuel 15:23 admonishes that "rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft." The God of Scripture cannot be obeyed by evil-doing and witchcraft. He will not be honored in the breach. However, sacred *tradition* authorizes *anything* in the service of Rome – *Cum finis est licitus, etiam media sunt licita,* the end justifies the means.

Depicting rebellion as a salvational act, the 1776 seal further harmonizes with the Magisterium on how the sinful soul of man is saved from eternal punishment. The Magisterium concurs with the Bible that salvation is the free gift of God's grace, but adds the nonscriptutal teaching that salvation can be *lost* if good works are not performed through the "sacred channels" of Baptism, Confession, and the Mass. Scripture (Ephesians 2:8-10) says that Jesus Christ does not shate his saviorhood with *anyone or anything* ("You have been saved by grace through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God; not as a result of works, so that no one should boast"), yet the Magisterium says that Christ is *no savior* without the sinner's cooperation with the Church and its traditions.

In fact, Scripture's account of the Exodus shows the departure from Egypt not to be a rebellion at all. When called by Yahweh to represent Israel before Pharaoh, Moses pled himself incapable (Exodus 3:11), uninformed (3:13), unauthorized (4:1), ineloquent (4:10), unadapted (4:13), unproven (5:23), and uncredentialed (6:12) – hardly the audacious mindset of a great rebel leader. What

Moses led was no rebellion but a sociological deliverance for which Yahweh alone claimed responsibility: "Come now, therefore, and I will send you to Pharaoh so that you can bring my people, the children of Israel, out of Egypt.... And I will stretch out my hand, and smite Egypt with all my wonders which I will do in the midst thereof: and after that he will let you go" (Exodus 3:10, 20). If Adams, Franklin, and Jefferson had wished the 1776 seal to express the true teaching of Scripture, they might have written "*YAHWEH REMOVES TYRANTS FOR HIS FAITHFUL.*"

But even with a biblically correct motto the seal fails the biblical standard. For it is after all a *seal,* authority represented by a graven image. Although the use of seals and images is one of Roman Catholicism's proudest sacred traditions, Scripture prohibits it. The only Israelite shown to rule with a seal is king Ahab, who "did evil in the sight of the Lord above all that were before him" (1 Kings 16:30). Ahab's seal, apparently appropriated from ancient pagan tradition, was employed by his wife, the quintessentially wicked Jezebel, to commit fraud and murder (21:8-16). Scripture warns of an unlimited potential for evil inherent in graven-image seals. The apostles of Christ understood this principle well. They saw the pharisees demand Jesus show them a token of His authority, and what Jesus showed them was not an image but Scripture – the book of Jonah (Matthew 12:39). Paul the apostle had no seal except the people he'd evangelized: "for the seal of my apostleship are those of you in the Lord" (1 Corinthians 9:2). Indeed, the seal of the Body of Christ is represented in Scripture not by the miter and crossed keys of the Holy See, or the doves, flames, Bibles, bare crosses, and sunbursts of the Protestant denominations, but by *Scripture alone:* "The foundation of God stands sure, having this seal: *THE LORD KNOWS HIS OWN; AND LET CHRIST'S FAITHFUL DEPART FROM INIQUITY*" (2 Timothy 2:19).

The early Christian leaders, whose faith is historically regarded as the best-informed of any generation's, rigorously opposed the making of images or likenesses of any kind. Scripture had taught them well that Yahweh's people always suffered terrible calamity whenever they violated the commandment not to identify themselves or their God with "any graven images or any likeness of any thing" (Exodus 20:4). Edwyn Bevan's *Holy Images: An Inquiry into Idolatry and Image Worship in Ancient Paganism and in Christianity* cites three important early churchmen who forbade images. Clement of Alexandria taught that images were "not true," and were forbidden by Yahweh "in order that we might not direct our attention to sensible objects, but might proceed to the intelligential." Origen held that images "drag the soul down instead of directing the mind to a divine invisible reality." Tertullian instructed the servants of God to avoid every form of imagery, even secular art. Indeed, as Bevan points out, Christians of the first and second centuries placed visual artists in a class with harlots, drunkards, brothel-keepers, and actors.

But for thousands of years Mediterranean cultures had been receiving their religious and political information from myths narrated by visual art. Paulinus, Bishop of Nola, said of his congregations, "They are not devoid of religion, but not able to read." This was Paulinus' excuse for beseeching the Bishop of Rome to permit him to teach with graven images. Paulinus had forgotten, or perhaps had never learned, that the basis of the Gospel of Christ was above all *literary* – else why had its Author prohibited graphic likenesses? Knowing this, the apostles devoted a large part of the evangelical process to spreading *literacy* – "blessed is he who *reads*" (Revelation 1:3). Even so, the apostle Peter foresaw the time of Paulinus, Bishop of Nola, a time when "false teachers among you shall bring in damnable heresies denying the Lord" (2 Peter 2:1). What more damnable heresy could there be than depicting a God who condemns images... *with an image?* Could such a God even be depictable by an image? Wouldn't an image purporting to be Him have to be in reality, by sheer force of logic, the image of *another God?* The apostle Paul, aware of the compelling nature of images, and their definitive incapacity to teach Jesus and the Gospel, warned the Corinthians how easily a false teacher could lead them to "another Jesus, another gospel" (2 Corinthians 11:4). The time was very close, Paul knew, when Christians "will not endure sound doctrine, but will heap to themselves teachers who will switch them from truth to myths" (2 Timothy 4:3,4). And what are graven images but the very *grammar* of myths?

The switch began noticeably happening in the third century, when teachers like Paulinus of Nola began instructing from pictures (for which Paulinus was canonized by the Roman Catholic Church). With Constantine a century later, as we've seen, a powerful new "Christian" visual language developed. Old mythic icons were renamed to fit Bible stories, and an iconic Christianity was spread through pagan images processed by missionary adaptation. What the new converts were *not* taught is that Scripture categorically rejects such attempts to iconize its contents, and that therefore (again, by sheer force of logic) the likenesses upon whom they reverently gazed were no more than the gods and goddesses originally pictured, *other gods of other gospels.* Archaeology traces these gods and their gospels back to the very earliest Babylonian cathedrals. It was in these cathedrals, erected nearly four thousand years before the Christian era, that the Roman Catholic sacred iconographic tradition was born. We shall explore this subject in some detail in a forthcoming chapter.

CONGRESS refused to adopt the 1776 seal. We may never know why. There is no record of any debate, only the notation that the seal was ordered to lay "on the table." Five years later, in the summer of 1781, a fleet of twenty-five French war vessels arrived in Chesapeake Bay with more than twenty thousand soldiers accompanied by ninety Roman Catholic chaplains and God only knows how many secularized Jesuits. A month later, the British army surrendered to General Washington at Yorktown. The legend-spinning visible war was over at last.

In June 1782, Benjamin Franklin and John Adams were meeting in Paris to perfect a treaty with envoys of the newly-elected British Prime Minister – Robert Petty. We recall Petty, Lord Shelburne, the ubiquitous "Jesuit of Berkeley Square" who teamed with Lord Bute to conclude the French and Indian Wars in terms that had made the Revolution inevitable. Franklin and Adams found themselves approaching the negotiating table without a national seal. Nothing they might do on behalf of the United States could be valid without a seal. This was the exigency that moved Congress to adopt, on June 28, the seal designed by Charles Thomson and William Barton.

The Great Seal is "written" in cabalah, that style of allegorical communication composed of seemingly unrelated symbols, numerals, and phrases. A piece in *Le Charivari* No. 18 (Paris, 1973), discussing certain symbolic motifs used by the enlightened French artist Nicolas Poussin, explains the practical advantage of cabalistic works:

> A single word suffices to illumine connections which the multitude cannot grasp. Such works are available to everyone, but their significance addresses itself to an elite. Above and beyond the masses, sender and receiver understand each other.

Cabalah goes beyond mere secret communication. Supposedly, it thrusts the sender "into direct contact with the living powers and forces of the Universe, and through them with the eternal source of all manifestation," explains Henrietta Bernstein in her *Cabalah Primer*. "In other words, you make contact with God." To a cabalist gnostic illuminatus whose special knowledge has liberated him from the clutch of matter and is speeding him toward the pure light of godliness, cabalah is "the royal art, a closed body of knowledge sacred to the elect."

Since the Great Seal is written in the language of cabalah, it appears to be a veritable Gnostic Constitution. In terms well known to initiates and God Almighty, it sets forth the origin, nature, purpose, and plan of American government. Of course, as Charles Thomson and Manly Hall have intimated, the initiates will never disclose to outsiders the meaning of the Seal's elements. But God Almighty is not so aloof. He does not resist inquiries. Nor is He a respecter of persons. Contrary to the cabalist's boast of privileged access, Scripture promises more light to any mind that seeks it from God in person. Shining that light on commonly available histories of rulers and religions, anyone can trace the Seal's elements back to their ancient origins and in the end know as much as, if not more than, the gnostics.

On the front or *obverse* side of the Seal we find an eagle clutching an olive branch and thirteen arrows, with a banner in his beak inscribed with the motto *"E PLURIBUS UNUM."* The earliest images of sacred eagles have been found in that region of present-day Iraq once known as Babylon. The eagle was identified with the Babylonian sky-god Annu. When Annu entered sacred Roman iconography as Jupiter, the eagle was still his mascot. For the more than two thousand years since the death of Rome's first emperor, Julius Caesar, Jupiter's eagle has signified Rome's imperial power – "imperial" meaning the right of the Caesars to make laws and enforce them. In many a church, Roman Catholic and Protestant alike, the Bible from which lessons are publicly read rests on a hardwood lectern carved in the shape of a magnificent eagle. Yet in the pages of this very Bible, God forbids carved images of eagles. What, then, does the eagle signify, if not a power indifferent to Scripture?

The brilliant cloud hovering over the eagle's head in the Great Seal is the *aegis.* The *aegis* is a goatskin. (We have already examined how Scripture equates the goat with worldly power and separation from God.) When Jupiter was a baby he was nursed by a she-goat named Amaltheia. (The priestly artists often portrayed the adult Jupiter as a satyr, having a man's body with the horns, hair, and legs of a goat.) When Amaltheia died, Jupiter made the *aegis* out of her hide.

The *aegis* of the Great Seal glorifies thirteen five-pointed stars, or pentagrams. Each pentagram represents an original State. In gnostic symbology, the pentagram is identified with Jupiter's wife, Venus. There is a natural reason for this. A dedicated observer, from a fixed location over an eight-year period, will discern that the planet Venus travels a unique celestial pathway that exactly describes a pentagram. Carl Ljungman, in *Dictionary of Symbols,* has written:

> As the orbit of Venus is closer to the sun than the earth's position, she is never seen more than 48 degrees from the sun. During a period of 247 days, Venus is visible as the Evening star that is, within 48 degrees or less of the sun after the sun has set. Then Venus comes too close to the sun for us to see her. She

> remains invisible for 14 days, then reappears as the Morning star (or Eastern star) immediately before the sun rises in the east. For 245 days we can see Venus each morning at dawn before she again disappears into the sun's light by getting too close to the sun. Venus is now invisible for 78 days. On the 79th evening, she appears again in the west immediately after the setting sun. Now she is the Evening star once more.
>
> If one knows the ecliptic [that is, the great circle of the celestial sphere that is the apparent path of the sun among the stars] and can pinpoint the present position of the planets in relation to the constellations of fixed stars in the zodiac, one can mark the exact place in the 360 degrees of the zodiac where the Morning star first appears shortly before sunrise after a period of invisibility. If we do this, wait for the Morning star to appear again 584 days later [the synodic orbital time of Venus] and mark its position in the zodiac, and then repeat this process until we have five positions of Venus as the Morning star, we will find that exactly eight years plus one day have passed. If we then draw a line from the first point marked to the second point marked, then to the third, and so on, we end up with a pentagram.
>
> Only Venus possesses the five-pointed star sign. Not one of the innumerable stars above us can recreate this by its own orbit.[3]

Charles Thomson, the Great Seal's co-designer, led a group of dedicated observers of Venus. The first coordinated scientific experiment of the American Philosophical Society, the club Thomson founded for politically radical young professionals, focused on Venus' celestial pathway. On the evening of June 3, 1769, with colleagues stationed at three sites in Pennsylvania and Delaware, Thomson and five others watched, from the Public Observatory on State House Square in Philadelphia, an eclipse caused by "the transit of Venus across the Sun."[4]

The goddess Venus, as we've seen, was absorbed by missionary adaptation into the Roman Catholic sacred tradition as the Virgin Mary. The adapters even ascribed to Mary the Venusian epithet "Queen of Heaven," a title never ascribed to Mary in the Bible.

"Queen of Heaven" in Scripture names only one personage, and that is Ishtar, the Babylonian Venus. Most faithful Catholics, historically insulated from Scripture by the Magisterium and the Inquisition, have not known this. Jeremiah 44 explains how the Israelites violated their covenant with Yahweh by praising the Queen of Heaven, and in turn lost their dignity, property, freedom, *everything* to the Babylonians. Scripture teaches, also, that the Babylonian interests have much to gain from inducing souls to praise the Queen of Heaven. And as we shall later see, their gain is divinely approved.

The term "Queen of Heaven" appears nowhere else in the Old and New Testaments but at Jeremiah 44, and there exactly *five times.* Did Jeremiah know that Venus' celestial trail delineated five points? And did the other thirty-five writers of the Bible's sixty-six books know as well? Did all these men, who wrote in different languages over a period of more than a thousand years, conspire *not* to mention "Queen of Heaven" in order to preserve Jeremiah's five mentions, so that the link between (a) the Queen of Heaven, (b) the five-pointed path of Venus, and (c) the curse resulting from praising her would stand as a divine lesson for the rest of eternity? Or did it just happen that way by accident? Or, as the Bible teaches, were Jeremiah and his co-authors inspired by the Author of all creation to say (and not say) things for reasons beyond their individual understanding?

THE Great Seal's eagle holds a banner in its beak inscribed "*E PLURIBUS UNUM.*" This phrase, which appears on American coinage as well, is popularly understood to signify the melting of many people into one nation, "of many, one." Or to identify the coin as one of many identical coins. The gnostic understanding of this phrase, however, borders on the psychedelic. According to Manly Hall, *e pluribus unum* refers to the ancient Bacchic Rites, which he says was "a forerunner to Freemasonry." Mysterious and fantastic, the Bacchic Rites are built upon the following story line:

In a time before the creation of mankind, the twelve Titans cause Bacchus, Jupiter's beautiful son, to become fascinated by his own image in a mirror. Enthralled by himself, Bacchus is seized by the Titans. They kill him, tear him to pieces, boil the pieces in water, and afterwards roast and eat them. This grieves all his loved ones, hence his name, from *bakhah,* "to weep" or "lament." The strewn body parts of Bacchus become the four elements of matter.

One of Bacchus' sisters, the virgin Minerva, rescues his sacred heart from the four elements and places it before Jupiter in Heaven. From Heaven, Jupiter hurls thunderbolts at his son's murderers and reduces the Titans to ashes. The rains further reduce the ashes, mingling with the four elements, to slime. From this evil slime Jupiter forms mankind, a "Titanic embodiment" from which the "Bacchic idea," or rational soul, must be released. The Bacchic idea is released by evil slime's sexual energy, especially when facilitated by alcoholic drink – hence Bacchus is associated with grapevines, wild dancing, phallic symbols, and fornication.

When death and sex have rescued the rational soul from the four slimy corners of the earth, a transfigured, eternal Bacchus is resurrected as the flaming Sun. He is *E PLURIBUS UNUM,* One from Many, a resurrection symbolized by the pentagram, the one rising out of the four to make five. This, says Manly Hall, is "the magical formula of man,"

> the human soul rising from the bondage of the animal nature. The pentagram is the true light, the Star of the Morning, marking the location of five mysterious centers of force, the awakening of which is the supreme secret of white magic.

With "*E PLURIBUS UNUM*" flowing from his beak, Jupiter's eagle preaches the Bacchic Gospel. It is a gospel of salvation that antedates that of Jesus Christ by many, many centuries. The Bacchic Gospel was preached and played out in the pagan cults. A Holy Virgin would ritually rescue the Son of God's Sacred Heart from the slime of humanity imprisoning the Son's soul. Each cult initiate – a fractional part of the Son's soul – supposedly gained increasing amounts of knowledge from mind-altering substances and sexual ecstasy administered for money, of course, by the temple priests and priestesses. The initiate looked forward to being released from his slimy humanity by ever-increasing knowledge. He yearned to be reunited ultimately with the Sacred Heart in Heaven, resurrected and transfigured for all eternity.

This salvational plan, or some variation of it, can be found at the core of all the secret or mystery religions – cults of empire. It persists from the earliest Babylonian prototype right on down through the Great Seal. It has succeeded not because it calls for repentance from sin, but because it makes sin an asset in a process of self-deification. The Bacchic Gospel serves an economy of sin management, in which sins are forgiven upon the payment of money or performance of some act of contrition valuable to society. It is about people control. Because it prospers on the addictive nature of fornication and mind-altering substances, it naturally facilitates sex and booze and drugs and all their destructive fallout in order to have a context in which to make itself useful. Unlike the Christian Gospel, which conditions forgiveness of sins upon *repentance* – "and if he repents, forgive him" (Luke 17:3) – the Bacchic Gospel forgives upon the tendering of appropriate sacrifices to the priest of the appropriate deity. The congeniality of this gospel to secular government and Roman Catholicism speaks for itself.

THE reverse side of the Great Seal contains four elements. First, the motto *"ANNUIT COEPTIS;"* second, a thirteen-coursed topless pyramid with MDCCLXXVI engraved in the foundation; third, a disembodied eye forming the pyramid's capstone, and fourth, the motto "*NOVUS ORDO SECLORUM*." These elements define exactly the "divine providence" upon whose protection the signers of the Declaration of Independence firmly relied.

The land of the Pyramid, Egypt, is where Caesarean Rome was inaugurated. By "Caesarean" I mean the empire whose head commands not only affairs of state but those of religion as well. Caesarean Rome officially began in Alexandria, Egypt, at the temple of Jupiter, on the winter solstice – December 25 – in the year 48 BC, when a fifty-two-year-old priest of Jupiter was declared to be Jupiter's incarnation, thus "Son of God." His name was Caius of the family of Marius, Caius Maria. After deification, and occasionally before, Caius Maria was referred to as "Caesar," a cabalism formed by the letter "C" (for Caius) attached to "*Aesar*," the Etruscan word for "God." The God Caius. (Suetonius, the first-century biographer of the Caesars, suggests that the title was formed from prefixing Aesar with the numeral "C," meaning "hundred." God of the Hundred, or Hundreds.)

According to Scottish theologian Alexander Hislop, Caesar consented to deification in order to inherit the huge kingdom of Pergamum.[5] Consisting of most of Asia Minor (present-day Turkey), Pergamum was bequeathed to the Roman people in 133 BC by its king, Attalus III. But there was a catch: the people of Rome had to regard their leader as God.

The Pergamenian kings had begun ruling as God when the title of *Pontifex Maximus* fled the fall of Babylon in 539 BC. In that eventful year, Persian invaders assassinated the Babylonian king Belshazzar. Just moments prior, Belshazzar had seen his assassination prophesied by the famous handwriting on the wall: "Mene *Mene Tekel Upharsin,*" ("the Numberer is *numbered*").[6] Ruling as God by divine appointment, Belshazzar had profaned the sacred vessels of the Israelite temple. This was the unpardonable sin of blasphemy, for which God sent the Persians to destroy him.

Belshazzar's priests were evidently spared. Rather than submit to the Persian conquerors, they furtively gathered together all their portable treasures, entitlements, codes, inscriptions, astrology, sacred formulae, and insignia and fled with them northwesterly to Pergamum. Since the rulers of Pergamum were already practicing Babylonian religion, they were honored to receive the fugitive Babylonian College and their great endowment.

Pergamum, the new residence of *Pontifex Maximus,* became a showplace for despotism. The neighboring Greeks reflected its sudden transformation with the myth of Midas, the king whose touch turned everything to gold. Babylonian rule graced Pergamum with the world's greatest medical complex, the Asklepion, dedicated to the god of pharmacological healing, Asklepios. Pergamum became the most important humanist learning center, its library housing more than two hundred thousand scrolls. (Marc Antony would later move these assets to Alexandria as a gift to Cleopatra. Many of them eventually found their way from Alexandria to the Medici Library in Florence.)

When Attalus III died in 133 BC, he bequeathed all his kingdom's Babylonian grandeur to the Romans. But no Roman emperor was deemed fit to receive it because the Roman constitution had never suffered a man to be deified. The bequest lay unclaimed until 48 BC, when Caius Maria Caesar was declared God Almighty in the Serapion, Alexandria's temple of Jupiter.

Deification entitled Caesar now to assume the title *Pontifex Maximus.* To indicate his infinitely holier status, he took the name "Julius."[7] The name was a claim of descent from Julius Ascanius, the legendary son of legendary Aeneas, Virgil's maritime hero who sailed westward with a band of his Trojan fellow-countrymen fleeing the sack of Troy by Greek marauders. Assisted by the whole heavenly network of mythic deities, Aeneas led his followers to sacrifice their individuality for a glorious collective existence that would one day be called "Rome."

Aeneas was considered the offspring of a union between a human being, Anchises, and Jupiter's wife Venus. (When Anchises boasted of his intercourse with the goddess, Jupiter struck him blind with a thunderbolt. The *Aeneid* opens with Aeneas carrying blind old Anchises out of Troy on his shoulders.) By taking the name of Aeneas' son Julius and claiming descent from him as well, Caesar was able to trace his lineage back to the Queen of Heaven. The divine lineage supposedly flowed through his mother, Maia, who was purported to have conceived him without losing her virginity. Maia also claimed to have remained a virgin even in childbirth by having her son delivered from the side in a surgical operation that still bears Caesar's name.

All of this "fable and endless genealogy," which Paul taught the church not to heed, is foundational to American secular government. For it is Julius Ascanius, grandson of Venus and claimed ancestor of the original Caesar, who inspired "*ANNUIT COEPTIS*," the upper motto on the flip side of the Great Seal of the United

States. The phrase, which the U.S. Department of State interprets to mean "God hath favored this undertaking," was spoken by young Julius Ascanius in the Ninth Book of Virgil's *Aeneid.*

The scene is a battleground. The Trojans are outnumbered and fearful. Young Julius Ascanius takes a position in front of his shrinking countrymen. He looks up at an evil giant named Remulus, King of the Rutulus. Remulus mocks the Trojans for sending a boy to fight him. While the giant quakes with derisive laughter, Julius slips an arrow onto his bowstring and cries toward the heavens:

> Almighty Jupiter, favor this rebellious undertaking (*AUDACIBUS ADNUE COEPTIS*)! Each year, I shall bring to thy temple gifts in my own hands, and place a white bullock at thy altar!

Jupiter then hisses an arrow from the sky that strikes Remulus in the head with such force that it passes clean through his temples. The Trojans "raise a cheer and laugh aloud; their hearts rise toward the stars." Apollo, from his throne of cloud, shouts the gnostic credo: "By striving so, men reach the stars, dear son of gods and sire of gods to come!"

A thrilling story. And one that leaves no doubt as to the identity of the god who favored the undertaking of the United States. It was a pagan deity, the god of Julius Ascanius, and not the God of the Bible. Surely, if Congress had wanted to show that the new nation was underwritten by Yahweh, God of the Bible, it could have referred to the boy-downs-giant story told in the Old Testament. Who doesn't know David and Goliath? Charles Thomson's biblical scholarship could easily have produced a motto based on I Samuel 17:47, where David says to Goliath:

> "The Lord saves not with sword and spear: for the battle is the Lord's, and He will give you into our hands!"

Reduced to an original-language motto at least as comprehensible as "*ANNUIT COEPTIS,*" the passage might have appeared in the Seal as the Hebrew

והוה מלהמה

or even in translation, "*THE BATTLE IS THE LORD'S.*"

But establishing a national government directly on biblical scripture was not the intent, I believe, of the founding fathers. Far more useful to them, and acceptable to the souls they knew would be populating America in good time, were the fabulous vanities of Roman religion. These souls required the sacred icons of burgeoning humanity and uninhibited sexual energy, legends that inspired hotblooded heroism and patriotism. Consent to images of this character presumed *obedience* to the omnipotent intelligence hovering inscrutably above the *ESTABLISHMENT* of ancient, stone-heavy, well-ordered pyramidic hierarchy.

LESS than four years after his deification, Julius Caesar was assassinated by an executive conspiracy. For another four years, civil war raged as two of the assassins, Brutus and Cassius, struggled for control against Caesar's immediate successor, a Triumvirate comprised of Lepidus, Marc Antony, and Caesar's adopted son (his biological grand-nephew), Caius Octavian Capias.

The Triumvirate defeated the assassins only to war against each other. Poets lamented that Rome, against whom no foreign enemy had ever prevailed, was being destroyed by the strength of her own sons. Obligations of every kind dissolved. Class fought against class. A fog of guilt and despair settled in. The poets yearned for escape beyond the world's borders, to a place of innocence and peace, perhaps to a new order of things. In his book about Rome's revolution from republic to Babylonian autocracy, Oxford historian Ronald Syme writes:

> The darker the clouds, the more certain was the dawn of redemption. On several theories of cosmic economy it was firmly believed that one world-epoch was passing, another was coming into being. The lore of the Etruscans, the calculations of

> astrologers and the speculations of philosophers might conspire with some plausibility and discover in the comet that appeared after Caesar's assassination the sign and herald of a new age. Vague aspirations and magical science were quickly adopted for purposes of propaganda by the rulers of the world. Already coins of the year 43 BC bear symbols of power, fertility and the Golden Age.[5]

The most influential and enduring celebration of Golden Age optimism was Virgil's prophetic-sounding *Fourth Eclogue.* This work was addressed to one of Virgil's chief benefactors, Caius Asinius Pollio, who was Consul (roughly equivalent to the office of President) when Caius Octavian, Antony, and Lepidus were reconciled in 40 BC by the Peace of Brindisi. Pollio, who represented Octavian at the Brindisi negotiations, introduced Virgil to Caius Maecenas, the media mogul of his day. He had risked his fortune supporting Julius Caesar's rise to absolute dictatorship, and he would risk no less to put Caesar's adopted son, Caius Octavian, in the same place. He scouted and subsidized the most highly talented artists, sculptors, and poets to create a totally new kind of communication. Virgil gave him the most for his money. Virgil developed a new "civic" literature whose pious rhetorical style gently guided public opinion toward accepting the rule of a deified Babylonian autocrat. In writing the *Fourth Eclogue,* Virgil borrowed heavily from the messianic verses of Isaiah, whose writings were freely accessible through the Jewish rabbis of Rome:

> Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and call his name 'God With Us'.... [Isaiah 7:14] For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. [9:6]

Six hundred years after Isaiah, Virgil solemnly announced in the *Fourth Eclogue* that the Prince of Peace would be produced by the unrolling of a New World Order *("NOVUS ORDO SECLORUM")*:

> Now returns the Golden Age of Saturn, now appears the Immaculate Virgin. Now descends from heaven a divine Nativity. O! Chaste Lucina [Goddess of Maternity], speed the Mother's pains, haste the glorious Birth, and usher in the reign of thy Apollo. Thy consulship, O Pollio, shall lead this glorious Advent, and the *new world order [NOVUS ORDO SECLORUM]* shall then begin to roll. Thenceforth whatever vestige of Original Sin remains, shall be swept away from earth forever, and the Son of God shall be the Prince of Peace!

The billionaire Maecenas exploited the *Fourth Eclogue* in the media as though it were a divine summons for Caesar's adopted son Octavian to take the throne and begin sweeping the world free of Sin. A fabulous resume of Octavian was already going around – about how a thunderbolt had blasted the city wall of his birthplace, Velitre, just prior to his birth. And how the priests interpreted this to be Jupiter's way of saying the future ruler of the world would arise from the spot. And about how the Senate, upon hearing this, had decreed that all male babies should be executed. And how Octavian was saved by his mother, who pilfered the stone tablet on which the decree was engraved.

Octavian's mother was Atia of the family of Marius, Atia Maria, a vestal virgin, niece of Caius Maria, the man who would become Julius Caesar. When Octavian reached the age of twelve, great-uncle Caius became his legal father through adoption. Three years later, in Octavian's fifteenth year, his adoptive father was deified as Julius Caesar, *Pontifex Maximus.* That's when the propagandists of Maecenas got busy promoting the Son's divine origins – about how the child was born September 28, 63 BC in humble circumstances: the butler's pantry at his grandfather's mansion at Velitre. About how he had been conceived on December 25 by Apollo, who came in serpent form and impregnated the virgin Atia Maria as she lay sleeping on the floor of the Apollonian temple. About how, just prior to the child's advent, the virgin Maria had dreamed that her body was scattered to the stars and encompassed the universe. About how her husband, too, had dreamed that from within her shone the bright beams of the sun, which then "rose from between her thighs." About how the toddler Octavian's head was often seen being licked by golden solar flames.

The propaganda circulated the story of how the great astrologer Theogenes, when told Octavian's birth sign (Capricorn), rose and flung himself at the lad's feet. Theogenes knew the astrological ruler of Capricorn was Saturn, whose second Golden Age was at hand – Saturn, the celestio-mythical Father-God of Rome and father of Jupiter. Octavian, as the incarnation of Jupiter, would be ruled by Saturn, the most dictatorial house in the zodiac, terrible for his restriction, limitation, control, even to the excesses of fornication and cannibalizing of his own children. No wonder Theogenes flung himself at Octavian's feet!

In 28 BC, twelve years after the publication of the *Fourth Eclogue,* Octavian entered Rome triumphantly as the Prince of Peace. Like Julius had done, the new *Pontifex Maximus* received a new and holier name, Caesar *Augustus* ("since sanctuaries and all places consecrated by the augurs are known as 'August,'" according to Suetonius). And like Julius, he was hailed as "Son of God." Historian Alexander Del Mar describes the universal acceptance of the divine Octavian in these excerpts from his landmark exposition of Roman political deification, *The Worship of Augustus Caesar* (1899):

> In the firm establishment of the Messianic religion and ritual, Augustus ascended the sacred throne of his martyred sire and was in turn addressed as the Son of God *(Divi filius),* whilst Julius was worshiped as the Father.... This claim and assumption appears in the literature of his age, was engraved upon his monuments and stamped upon his coins.... It was universally admitted and accepted throughout the Roman empire as valid and legitimate, according to chronology, astrology, prophecy, and tradition.... His actual worship as the Son of God was enjoined and enforced by the laws of the empire, accepted by the priesthood and practised by the people.... Both *de jure* and *de facto* it constituted the fundamental article of the Roman imperial and ecclesiastical constitution.
>
> As supreme pontiff of the Roman empire, Augustus lawfully

acquired and exercised authority over all cardinals, priests, curates, monks, nuns, flamens, augurs, vestal virgins, temples, altars, shrines, sanctuaries and monasteries, and over all religious rites, ceremonies, festivals, holidays, dedications, canonizations, marriages, divorces, adoptions, benefices, wills, burying grounds, fairs, and other ecclesiastical subjects and matters.... The common people wore little images of Augustus suspended from their necks. Great images and shrines of the same god were erected in the highways and resorted to for sanctuary. There were a thousand such shrines in Rome alone.

Augustus wore on his head a pontifical mitre surmounted by a Latin cross, an engraving of which, taken from a coin of the *Colonia Julia Gemella,* appears in Harduini, *de Numiis Antiquis* [1689], plate I.... The images of Augustus upon the coins of his own mintage, or that of his vassals, are surrounded with the halo of light which indicates divinity, and on the reverse of the coins are displayed the various emblems of religion, such as the mitre, cross, crook, fishes, labarum, and the Buddhic or Bacchic or Dionysian monogram of PX [the Greek *chi-rho,* "Cairo," site of the great pyramid].

The Augustan writers furnished materials showing that [Augustus'] Incarnation was the issue of a divine father and mortal mother, that the mother was a wife-virgin, that the birth occurred in an obscure place, that it was foretold by prophecy or sacred oracle, that it was presaged or accompanied by prodigies of Nature, that the divinity of the child was recognized by sages, that the Holy One exhibited extraordinary signs of precocity and wisdom, that his destruction was sought by the ruling powers, that his miraculous touch was sufficient to cure deformity or disease, that he exhibited a profound humility, that his deification would bring peace on earth, and that he would finally ascend to heaven, there to join the Father.

So universally were his divine origin and attributes conceded, that many people, in dying, left their entire fortunes to his sacred personal fisc, in gratitude, as they themselves expressed it, for having been permitted to live during the incarnation and earthly sojourn of this Son of God. In the course of twenty years he thus inherited no less than 35,000,000 gold aurei [nearly $1 billion at 1996 values].... Many potentates bequeathed him not

> only their private fortunes, but also their kingdoms and people in vassalage.... The marble and bronze monuments to Augustus still extant contain nearly one hundred sacred titles. Among them are Jupiter Optimus Maximus, Apollo, Janus, Quirinus, Dionysus, Mercurius, Volcanus, Neptunus, Liber Pater, Savus [Saviour], and Hesus.
>
> At his death, Senator Numericus Atticus saw his spirit ascend to Heaven. The Ascension of Augustus is engraved upon the great cameo, from the spoils of Constantinople, presented by Baldwin II to Louis IX, and now in the Cabinet of France. A facsimile of it is published in Duruy's *History of Rome....*

America's Great Seal, with its obsessive fidelity to Caesarean Rome, cannot represent a nation more moral than the source of its scripture. The icons and mysterious cabalistic language of this Seal introduce a preposterous Babylonian gospel. Taken seriously (and shouldn't a government's solemn statements be taken seriously?), the Seal's gospel teaches that America's high spiritual purpose is to assist in the resurrection of the Son of God's mutilated parts from the evil slime of human flesh. It tells us that already the Holy Virgin has rescued the Son's Sacred Heart from the slime – *E PLURIBUS UNUM,* "one from many" – and has placed it high in the vault of Heaven, as her five-pointed celestial path describes for all to see. It calls for America to exert fervent sexual energy so that the Son's many parts on earth might be reunited with the *UNUM* in Heaven. It promises that America will rise toward the pure light of sinlessness and Godliness, into eternal life as part of the solar body of the Son – the Sun – of God. It signifies that this cosmic resurrective process is administered by a pyramidic hierarchy conceived in ancient Babylon, exported to Asia Minor, and bequeathed to Rome. At the top of the hierarchy sits an unseen chieftain, an unknown superior, a God of the Seal who possesses universal intelligence and authority over every soul who confederates with, or subscribes to, the Seal.

The God of the Seal wields the fasces to sweep the earth clean of the last traces of Original Sin. He is assisted by a new priestly order, a "new world order" charged with destroying all individual identity deemed inconsistent with the resurrection to godliness. Uncooperative governments and dissident citizens alike are cut down by arts of war so frugal that the liquidation increases popular faith in the fasces. Because they function in a Golden Era of Saturn, the chief and his hierarchy can be depended upon to mimic Saturn's strictness, cruelty, licentiousness, even cannabilism as the situation requires. To the charge that such is impossible in America, one comparison should be sufficient. No sooner was Augustus Caesar deified than he sacrificially murdered three hundred Senators in Perugia to atone for the assassination of his adoptive father Julius.[9] Likewise, no sooner was an American president inaugurated than he, as Commander-in-Chief of the armed forces, authorized the sacrificial murder of nearly a hundred misguided Christians near Waco, Texas, to atone for what? A growing popular disenchantment with federal government?

What the Seal of the United States of America represents, to anyone who takes it seriously, is a *Ministry of Sin. A* speech by Jesuit political scientist Michael Novak, published in the January 28, 1989 issue of *America,* the weekly magazine of American Jesuits, sums it up eloquently enough:

> The framers wanted to build a "novus ordo" that would secure "liberty and justice for all".... The underlying principle of this new order is the fact of human sin. To build a republic designed for sinners, then, is the indispensable task.... There is no use building a social system for saints. There are too few of them. And those there are are impossible to live with!... Any effective social system must therefore be designed for the only moral majority there is: sinners.

In the next chapter, we shall examine how faithfully the founding fathers reconstructed Babylonian Rome on the banks of the Potomac.

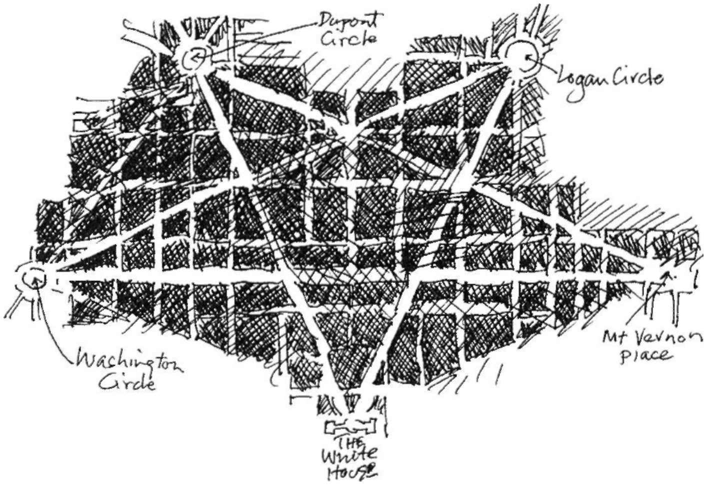
Dupont Circle
Logan Circle
Washington Circle
Mt Vernon Place
The White House

L'Enfant's celebrated plan of Washington, D.C., conforming to the cabalistic Baphomet, arranged so that the Goat's mouth (see below) is the White House.

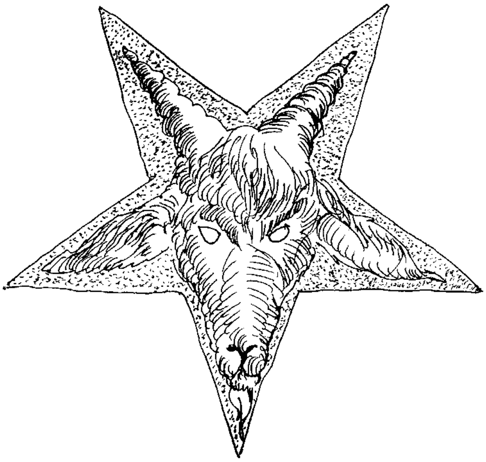

Chapter 21

JUPITER'S EARTHLY ABODE

ROME'S GOD OF GODS, Jupiter, was served in temples called *capitolia,* from the Latin word meaning "head." As we've seen, America's temple of Jupiter was erected on land that had been known as "Rome" for more than a hundred years before it was selected by Daniel Carroll's "federal city" committee from properties owned by Carroll himself.

Subdividing the federal city, or District of Columbia, into plats was the task of an artistic Parisian engineer named Pierre-Charles L'Enfant. According to Dr. James Walsh in his book *American Jesuits,* L'Enfant got the job through the intercession of his priest, John Carroll.

L'Enfant was a Freemason. He subdivided the city into a brilliant array of cabalistic symbols and numerics. Perhaps his best-known device is the pattern that is discerned when a straight line is drawn from the White House along Connecticut Avenue to Dupont Circle, then along Massachusetts Avenue to Mount Vernon Square, then back across K Street to Washington Circle, then up Rhode Island Avenue to Logan Circle, then along Vermont Avenue back to the White House. What results is a perfect pentagram, the Queen of Heaven's eight-year-and-one-day celestial journey.

But L'Enfant's pentagram points downward, forming the shape of Baphomet, the gnostic "absorption-into-wisdom" goat's-head icon of the Knights Templar. Gnostic historian Manly Hall says the upside-down pentagram "is used extensively in black magic" and "always signifies a perverted power." The Baphomet imposed upon the federal city by Pierre-Charles L'Enfant puts the mouth of this "perverted power" exactly at the White House.

The Congressional Medal of Honor, depicting Aeneas within a Baphomet, rewards Americans who have sacrificed most for the Roman ideal.

The presence of perverted power is underscored in L'Enfant's numbering of Washington's city blocks.[1] The 600 series of blocks runs in a swath from Q Street North through the Capitol grounds down to the mouth of James Creek below V Street South. All the numbers between 600 and 699 are assigned to blocks within this swath, except for the number 666. That number is missing from the map. It must have been secretly affixed to the only unnumbered section of blocks in the 600 series. That section, we find, includes the Capitol grounds that once were called "Rome." Of course, 666 is the "number of the name of the Beast" mentioned in the thirteenth chapter of Revelation. If America's temple of Jupiter sits upon the Beast named 666, could it be that the true founding fathers soberly recognized Congress as "the great whore" of Revelation 17:1?

The Latin historians Ovid, Pliny, and Aurelius Victor all tell us that the prehistoric name for Rome was *Saturnia,* "city of Saturn." Saturnia's original settlers came from the east, from Babylon. In the Babylonian (or Chaldean) language, according to Alexander Hislop, Saturnia was pronounced "Satr" but spelled with only four characters, *Stur.* Now, Chaldean, like Hebrew, Greek, and to a limited extent Latin, had no separate numbering system. Their numbers were represented by certain characters of their alphabet. The cabalah derives its power from mathematical energies conveyed from these languages. Hislop reported a phenomenon that he said "every Chaldee scholar knows," which is that the letters of Stur, Rome's earliest name, total 666:

S = 60; T = 400; U = 6; R = 200 := 666

Hislop further reported that Roman numerals consist of only six letters, D (500), C (100), L (50), X (10), V (5), and I (1) – we ignore the letter M, signifying 1,000, because it's a latecomer, having evolved as shorthand for two D's. When we total these six letters, we discover a startling link with the Beast of Revelation embedded in the very alphanumeric communication system of the Romans:

D = 500; C = 100; L = 50; X = 10; V = 5; I = 1 := 666

Demonism, black magic, and perverted power formatted into the streets of the federal city? Well, as Michael Novak observed, the indispensable task of the founding fathers was to build a republic designed for sinners. Not all sinners can be governed with a loving call to repentance, with reason, logic, patience, understanding, and forgiveness. Sin develops cunning villains who steal, rape, destroy, torture, and kill. A republic designed for sinners must be up to the villainy of its meanest subject. This is why the great revolutionary pamphleteer Tom Paine candidly characterized human government as "a necessary *evil.*" A government must necessarily be as evil as the evildoers it's charged with regulating or it cannot protect the innocent. This just stands to reason. Scripture shows the principle as divinely ordained. Yes, God ordained the evil to rule the good. But the details of this gracious ordination, which we'll be examining presently, are so embarrassing to the flaunted piety of rulers that they must be concealed in cabalah.

Soon after completing his master plan for the federal city, Pierre-Charles L'Enfant became embroiled in a flagrant dispute with Bishop Carroll's high-ranking brother Daniel. The young engineer wanted an avenue to go where Daniel Carroll intended to build his new manor house. When Carroll refused to build elsewhere, L'Enfant ordered the work crew to tear the new house down. Before any significant damage could be done, however, President Washington dismissed L'Enfant. The whole affair diverted attention away from the demonic symbolism in L'Enfant's designs while conveniently removing him from public scrutiny. Again, blown cover as cover. The designs were executed by his successor, Andrew Ellicott, without significant alteration.

The formal creation of Jupiter's American Abode on Wednesday, September 18, 1793 was a jubilant affair. President George Washington and Capitol Commissioner Daniel Carroll departed from the White House, marching side by side. They led a magnificent parade "with music playing, drums beating, and spectators rejoicing in one of the grandest Masonic processions which perhaps ever was exhibited on the like important occasion."[2]

Arriving at the construction site on Lot 666, Commissioner Carroll presented "Worshipful Master Washington" a large silver plaque engraved with the following words:

> This South East corner stone, of the Capitol of the United States of America in the city of Washington, was laid on the 18th day of September, in the thirteenth year of American Independence, in the first year of the second term of the Presidency of George Washington, whose virtues in the civil administration of his country have been as conspicuous and beneficial, as his military valor and prudence have been useful in establishing her liberties, and in the year of Masonry, 5793, by the President of the United States, in concert with the Grand Lodge of Maryland, several lodges under its jurisdiction, and Lodge No. 22 from Alexandria, Virginia.

President Washington then descended into a builder's trench prepared for the Capitol's foundations, laid the plaque on the ground, and covered it over with the cornerstone. The cornerstone was a massive rock cut from Eagle Quarry, a property in Acquia Creek, Virginia, owned by the family of Daniel Carroll's nephew, Robert Brent.

Then, just as the priests of Jupiter might have blessed their *capitolia* two millennia ago three Worshipful Masters consecrated the stone with corn, wine, and oil. Washington and the other Masters stepped out of the trench, and joined the assembled throng to listen to a patriotic speech. Afterward, said the *Gazette,*

> the congregation joined in reverential prayer, which was succeeded by Masonic chanting honors, and a 15-volley from the artillery. Then the participants retired to a barbecue, at which a five-hundred-pound ox was roasted, and those in attendance generally partook, with every abundance of other recreation....

Reading of the barbeque, I was reminded of the passage in the *Aeneid* where Julius Ascanius promised a sacrifice to Jupiter for favoring his rebellious undertaking: "I shall bring *to thy temple gifts* in my own hands, and place a white *bullock at thy altar...*" Could it be that the silver plaque, the corn, the wine, the oil, the chanting, the roasted ox, and the reverential prayer were the fulfillment of that promise – a burnt sacrifice to Jupiter, on the altar of his *capitolium,* upon land called Rome, land formally consecrated by *Pontifex Maximus* to the protection of the goddess Venus? Historians who believe the government of the United States was founded by Christians will certainly disagree. But the ceremony, as reported in the press, was anything but Christian. Moreover, the plaque itself reckoned time according to three systems: (1) the years of independence of the United States, (2) the years of George Washington's administration, and (3) the years of Freemasonry. It completely ignored the system that reckons time in the years of Jesus Christ.[3]

Eight years after the sacrifice, Congress met in the Capitol for the first time. Washington gave the appearance of a Roman

Catholic settlement. The most imposing houses in the city belonged to Daniel Carroll and his brother-in-law, secularized Jesuit priest Notley Young. The city's mayor was Carroll's nephew, Robert Brent, who was also purveying stone for most of the federal buildings. Over on the west side of town stood Georgetown College, established by Bishop John Carroll in 1789. Georgetown quickly became the foremost incubator of federal policy, foreign and domestic. It is still administered by the Society of Jesus.

Seal of the Black Papacy's Georgetown University, as it appears today on a campus security vehicle. The Roman eagle grasps both the world and the cross, State and Roman Catholic Church, the banner in its beak declaring "UTRAQUE UNUM," – "Both together."

When Pope Pius VII restored the Society of Jesus in August 1814, former presidents John Adams and Thomas Jefferson exchanged comments. "I do not like the resurrection of the Jesuits," wrote Adams.

> They have a general now in Russia [Tadeusz Brzozowski], in correspondence with the Jesuits in the United States, who are more numerous than everybody knows. Shall we not have swarms of them here, in the shape of printers, editors, writers, schoolmasters, &c? I have lately read Pascal's letters over again [Blaise Pascal's *Provincial Letters* helped bring about the suppression of the Society], and four volumes of the History of the Jesuits. If ever any congregation of men could merit eternal perdition on earth and in hell it is this company of Loyola. Our system, however, of religious liberty must afford them an asylum; but if they do not put the purity of our elections to a severe trial, it will be a wonder.

Jefferson's reply indicates (or pretends) that he, too, was unaware that America's destiny had been shaped by the hands of Rome: "Like you, I disapprove of the restoration of the Jesuits, which seems to portend a backward step from light into darkness."

During the next seventy years, Superior Generals John Roothaan (1829-1853) and Pieter Jean Beckx (1853-1883) would pump the Society up to its original greatness, swelling the membership from a few hundred to more than thirteen thousand. In those same seventy years, the Protestants who had fought for America's independence would vastly diminish in proportion to the influx of fresh Roman Catholic refugees from European tyrannies. (There is evidence these tyrannies were Jesuit-fed, for the express purpose of populating America. Perhaps a new scholarship will investigate more thoroughly than I have time or inclination for.)

As America's public became increasingly Catholic, Generals Roothaan and Beckx were able to signify Washington's debt to the black papacy with much bolder iconographic and architectural symbols. This little-explored material is the subject of our next chapter.

Persephone, Goddess of the U.S. Capitol Dome.
Said by her priests to have been immaculately conceived, she was renamed "Freedom" for American consumption. Abducted by Hades, son of Saturn, she ruled the dead and all else that is within the earth, namely metals and precious stones.
At daybreak of May 9, 1993, helicopters lowered the Queen of the dead to ground level for her first cleaning in more than a century. The author attended this historic event and snapped the above photograph. Significantly, May 9, 1993 was...
Mother's Day.

Chapter 22

THE IMMACULATE CONCEPTION

As IF IT WEREN'T enough that Christopher Columbus had dedicated the New World to her, and that Andrew White had dedicated Maryland to her, and that Bishop Carroll had dedicated his See of Baltimore to her, the 1846 convention of American Roman Catholic bishops declared the Virgin Mary to be "Patroness of the United States."

The first two years under her patronage enriched the national government considerably. The Oregon territory and the Southwest joined the Union. As did California, with its bursting veins of gold. The blessings had their downside, however. They precipitated a corresponding increase in intersectional tensions that erupted in a devastating interstate bloodbath some historians call the Civil War. In that war, the Patroness of the United States dealt as cruelly with the enemies of her protectorate as the vengeful goddess Ishtar did with the enemies of ancient Babylon.

In February 1849, "Pio Nono" (the popular name for Pope Pius

IX; there's a boulevard named after him in Macon, Georgia) issued an encyclical that colored America's Patroness with the fearsome aspects of Ishtar. The encyclical, entitled *Ubi primum* ("By whom at first"), celebrated Mary's divinity, saying:

> The resplendent glory of her merits, far exceeding all the choirs of angel, elevates her to the very steps of the throne of God. Her foot has crushed the head of Satan. Set up between Christ and his Church, Mary, ever lovable, and full of grace, always has delivered the Christian people from their greatest calamities and from the snares and assaults of all their enemies, ever rescuing them from ruin.

Holy as she may sound, a Satan-bashing, life-saving Virgin Mary is a fabrication of sacred pagan tradition. The Bible does prophesy that Satan's serpentine head will be violated. But not by Mary. At Genesis 3:15, we read God's vow that Satan's seed will be bruised by the seed of Eve. It may be argued that Eve's seed was Mary. But according to the inspired understanding of the apostles, it was Jesus. At Romans 16:20 Paul promises a Roman congregation that "the *God of peace* shall bruise Satan under your feet." Nor was Mary given power to deliver people from their enemies. Only the "one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus" (1 Timothy 2:5), "a name which is above every other name" (Philippians 2:9), is a divinely-authorized deliverer.

No, the Mary of *Ubi Primum* will not be found anywhere in the Bible. But then Pio Nono, the first pope ever to be declared Infallible, carried about a rather famous theological ignorance. His private secretary, Monsignor Talbot, defended Pio's ineptitude in a letter cited by Jesuit author Peter de Rosa in his *Vicars of Christ:*

> As the Pope is no great theologian, I feel convinced that when he writes his encyclicals he is inspired by God. Ignorance is no bar to infallibility, since God can point out the tight road even by the mouth of a talking ass.

The truth of the matter, according to J.C.H. Aveling, is that throughout Pius IX's long reign (1846-1878), most of his theology was written by Jesuits. On December 8, 1854, Superior General Beckx brought three hundred years of Marian devotion to a glorious climax with *Ineffabilis Deus* ("God indescribable"), the encyclical defining the Immaculate Conception, the extrascriptural doctrine that Mary, like Jesus, was conceived and remained free of sin:

> The doctrine which holds that the most blessed Virgin Mary, in the first instant of her conception, by a singular grace and privilege granted by Almighty God, in view of the merits of Jesus Christ, the Saviour of the human race, was preserved free from all stain of original sin, is a doctrine revealed by God and therefore to be believed firmly and constantly by all the faithful.

Ineffabilis Deus mobilized the United States Congress to pass extraordinary legislation. Congress became suddenly obsessed with expanding the Capitol's dome. According to the official publication *The Dome of the United States Capitol: An Architectural History* (1992), "Never before (or since) has an addition to the Capitol been so eagerly embraced by Congress." Within days of Pio Nono's definition of the doctrine of Immaculate Conception, legislation was rushed through Congress that effectively incorporated the new Vatican doctrine into the Capitol dome's crowning architectural platform, its cupola.

A week following *Ineffabilis Deus* Philadelphia architect Thomas Ustick Walter, a Freemason, completed his drawings for the proposed dome. It would be surmounted by a bronze Marian image which would come to be recognized as "the only authorized Symbol of American Heritage."[1] Her classical name was *Persephone,* Graeco-Roman goddess of the psyche, or soul, and leading deity in the Eleusinian Mysteries of ancient Greece. Persephone was abducted by Saturn's son, Hades, and made queen-consort of his dominion, the underworld. Persephone was distinguished for her *Immaculate Conception* – described by Proclus, head of the Platonic Academy in Athens during the fifth century of the Christian era, as "her undefiled transcendency in her generations." In fact, most of the statues of Persephone in the Christianized Roman Empire had been simply re-identified and re-consecrated as the Virgin Mary by missionary adaptation.

Congress appropriated $3,000 for a statue of Persephone. President Franklin Pierce's Secretary of War, Jefferson Davis, awarded the commission to a famous young American sculptor named Thomas Crawford. Crawford lived and worked in Rome. His reputation had been established with a statue of Orpheus which, when exhibited in Boston in 1843, was the first sculptured male nude to be seen in the United States. Since another of Persephone's ancient names was *Libera* ("Liberty"), Crawford named his Persephone "Freedom." His work has worn this title ever since.

After two years of labor in the shadow of the Gesu, Crawford completed a plaster model of Freedom. Her right hand rested on a sword pointing downward. Her left hand, against which leaned the shield of the United States, held a laurel wreath. She was crowned with an eagle's head and feathers mounted on a tiara of pentagrams, some inverted, some not. When ultimately cast in bronze, Freedom would reach the height of nineteen feet, six inches – a sum perhaps deliberately calculated to pay homage to the work's final destination, the Beast of Revelation at Lot 666, for nineteen feet, six inches works out to 6+6+6 feet, 6+6+6 inches.

Freedom would stand upon a twelve-foot iron pedestal also designed by Thomas Crawford. The upper part of the pedestal was a globe ringed with the motto of the Bacchic Gospel, *E PLURIBUS UNUM,* while the lower part was flanked with twelve wreathes (the twelve Caesars?) and as many fascia, those bundles of rods wrapped around axe-blades symbolizing Roman totalitarianism.

Crawford wanted his sculpture to be cast at the Royal Bavarian Foundry in Munich (where Randolph Rogers' great ten-ton bronze doors leading to the Capitol rotunda were cast), while architect Thomas U. Walter preferred Clark Mills' foundry, near Washington. Their transatlantic argument ended abruptly when Crawford died in London on September 10, 1857, of a tumor behind his left eye.

In that same year, 1857, the United States Supreme Court handed down *Dred Scott vs. Sanford,* a decision which most historians agree ignited the Great American Civil War. The opinion was written by the Roger Brooke Taney, who succeeded John Marshall as Chief Justice. A devout Roman Catholic "under the influence of the Jesuits most of his long life" according Dr. Walsh's *American Jesuits,* Taney held that Negro slaves and their descendants could never be State citizens and thus could never have standing in court to sue or be sued. Nor could they ever hope to be United States citizens since the Constitution did not create such a thing as "United States citizenship."

Taney's opinion was widely suspected of being part of a plot to prepare the way for a second Supreme Court decision that would prohibit *any* state from abolishing slavery. American slavery would become a permanent institution. This is exactly what happened, although not quite as everyone supposed it would. First, slavery was abolished by the Thirteenth Amendment (1865). Then, the Fourteenth Amendment (1868) created a new national citizenship. Unlike State citizenship, which was denied to Negroes, national citizenship was available to *anyone* as long as they subjected themselves to the jurisdiction of the United States – that is, to the federal government, whose seat is the District of Columbia, "Rome." What is so remarkably Jesuitic about the scheme that proceeded out of Roger Taney's opinion is that slavery was *sustained* by the very amendment that supposedly *abolished it.* Amendment Thirteen provides for the abolition of "involuntary servitude, except as punishment for crime whereof the party shall have been duly convicted." In our time the federally regulated communications media, with their continually exciting celebration of violence and drug-use, have subtly but vigorously induced youthful audiences to play on a minefield of complementary criminal statutes. The fruit of this collaboration is a burgeoning national prison population of men and women enslaved constitutionally. American slavery has become a permanent institution.

Reaction to Taney's decision animated Abraham Lincoln to immerse himself in abolitionist rhetoric and challenge Stephen A. Douglas for the Senate in 1858....

MEANWHILE in Rome, Freedom's plaster matrix was packed into five huge crates and crammed, with bales of rags and cases of lemons, into the hold of a tired old ship bound for New York, the *Emily Taylor*. Early on, the *Emily* sprang a leak and had to put in to Gibraltar for repairs. Once the voyage was resumed, stormy weather caused new leaks. Despite attempts to lighten her load by jettisoning the rags and the citron, things got so bad she put in to Bermuda on July 27, 1858. The crates were placed in storage, and the *Emily* was condemned and sold.

In November, Lincoln lost his bid for Douglas' seat in the Senate, and in December, another ship, the *G.W. Norton,* arrived in New York harbor from Bermuda with some of the statuary crates. By March 30, 1859 all five crates had been delivered to the foundry of Clark Mills on Bladensburg Road, on the outskirts of the District of Columbia, where the process of casting the Immaculate Virgin into bronze and iron was begun.

Lincoln opposed Stephen Douglas again in 1860, this time for the Presidency, and this time victoriously. The northern states rejoiced. The southern states, fearing Lincoln would abolish slavery, prepared to secede. "The tea has been thrown overboard!" shouted the *Mercury,* of Charleston, South Carolina, capital of American Scottish Rite Freemasonry. "The revolution of 1860 has been initiated!"

By Lincoln's inauguration in March 1861, six states had seceded from the Union. In April, General Pierre Beauregard, a Roman Catholic who resigned his Superintendency of West Point to join the Confederacy, fired on the United States military enclave at Fort Sumter and brotherly blood began flowing. Jefferson Davis, who five years earlier had commissioned Crawford to sculpt the Immaculate Virgin, served as President of the rebellious Confederate States of America. In historian Eli N. Evans' book on Judah P. Benjamin, I happened upon a strange and interesting link between Davis and the Vatican.

While a young Protestant student at the Roman Catholic monastery of St. Thomas College in Bardstown, Davis had pled to be received into the Catholic faith, but was "not permitted to convert." He remained "a hazy Protestant" until his confirmation into the Episcopal Church at the age of fifty. Despite outward appearances of rejection, the Confederate President maintained a vibrant communion with Rome. No one was more aware of this than Abraham Lincoln. At an interview in the White House during August 1861, Lincoln confided the following to a former law client of his, a Roman Catholic priest named Charles Chiniquy, who published the President's words in his own autobiography, *Fifty Years In The Church of Rome:*

> "I feel more and more every day," [stated the President] "that it is not against the Americans of the South, alone, I am fighting. It is more against the Pope of Rome, his Jesuits and their slaves. Very few Southern leaders are not under the influence of the Jesuits, through their wives, family relations, and their friends.
>
> "Several members of the family of Jeff Davis belong to the Church of Rome. Even the Protestant ministers are under the influence of the Jesuits without suspecting it. To keep her ascendency in the North, as she does in the South, Rome is doing here what she has done in Mexico, and in all the South American Republics; she is paralyzing, by civil war, the arms of the soldiers of liberty. She divides our nation in order to weaken, subdue and rule it....
>
> "Neither Jeff Davis not any one of the Confederacy would have dared to attack the North had they not relied on the promises of the Jesuits that, under the mask of democracy, the money and the aims of the Roman Catholics, even the arms of France, were at their disposal if they would attack us. I pity the priests, the bishops, and monks of Rome in the United States when the people realize that they are in great part responsible for the tears and the blood shed in this war. *I conceal what I know, for if the people knew the whole truth, this war would turn into a religious war, and at once, take a tenfold more savage and bloody character....*[2]

The Great Civil War rampaged for another year. In autumn of 1862, the Confederacy's invasion of the Union was defeated at the Battle of Antietam in Sharpsburg, Maryland. As if in celebration, the Immaculate Virgin was moved from the foundry and brought to the grounds of the Capitol construction site. The lower floors of the building were teeming with the traffic of a Union barracks and makeshift hospital. Above all this loomed Thomas U. Walter's majestic cast-iron dome, patterned after that of St. Isaac's Cathedral in St. Petersburg, Russia.

In March 1863, Freedom was mounted on a temporary pedestal, "in order that the public may have an opportunity to examine it before it is raised to its destined position," as stated in Walter's Annual Report dated November 1, 1862. One would expect photographers to be climbing all over themselves to make portraits of "the only authorized Symbol of American Heritage" while she was available for ground-level examination. America's pioneer photographer, Matthew Brady, had shot a comprehensive record of the Capitol under construction, including portraits of both Capitol architect Thomas U. Walter and Commissioner of Public Buildings Benjamin B. French. But neither Brady nor anyone else photographed Freedom while she was available for closeups.[3] Why? Was there a fear that perhaps some Protestant theologian might raise a hue and cry about the pagan icon about to dominate the Capitol building?

Apparently, not too many Protestants ever examined Freedom at ground-level. The District of Columbia was still virtually a Roman Catholic enclave. Moreover, the nation in 1863 had been drastically reduced in size. The secession of the southern states had left only twenty-two northern states, and these twenty-two were heavily populated by Catholic immigrants from Europe and Ireland. "So incredibly large," we recall from Sydney E. Ahlstrom's *Religious History of the American People,* "was the flow of immigrants that by 1850 Roman Catholics, once a tiny and ignored minority, had become the country's largest religious communion." Thus, Crawford's towering goddess was being examined mostly by Roman Catholic eyes, eyes that could not help but see in her the dreadnaught Mary described by Pius IX in *Ubi Primum:* "ever lovable, and full of grace, set up between Christ and his Church, always delivering the Christian people from their greatest calamities and assaults of all their enemies, ever rescuing them from ruin."

The war rapidly advanced to conclusion while Freedom held forth on the east grounds of the Capitol. The Union forces under Burnside lost to Lee at Fredericksburg, but Rosecrans defeated the Confederates at Murfreesboro, and Grant took Vicksburg. In summer, Lee's second attempt to invade the North failed at Chancellorsville and Gettysburg. By fall, Grant won the Battles of Chattanooga and Missionary Ridge with Sherman and Thomas. By the end of November 1863, the Union had taken Knoxville, and the Confederacy found its resources exhausted and its cause hopelessly lost.

On November 24, a steam-operated hoisting apparatus lifted the Immaculate Virgin Mother of God's first section to the top of the Capitol dome and secured it. The second section followed the next day. Three days later, in a driving thunderstorm, the third section was secured. The fourth section was installed on November 31.

At quarter past noon December 2, 1863, before an enormous crowd, the Immaculate Virgin's fifth and final section was put into place. The ritual procedure for her installation is preserved in Special Order No. 248 of the War Department. Her head and shoulders rose from the ground. The three-hundred-foot trip took twenty minutes. At the moment the fifth section was affixed, a flag unfurled above it. The unfurling was accompanied by a national salute of forty-seven gunshots fired into the Washington atmosphere. Thirty-five shots issued from a field battery on Capitol Hill. Twelve were discharged from the forts surrounding the city. Reporting the event in the December 10 issue of the *New York Tribune,* an anonymous journalist echoed the qualities that Pius IX had given Mary:

> During more than two years of our struggle, while the national cause seemed weak, she has patiently waited and watched below: now that victory crowns our advances and the conspirators are being hedged in, and vanquished everywhere, and the bonds are being freed, she comes forward, the cynosure of thousands of eyes, her face turned rebukingly toward Virginia

> and her hand outstretched as if in guaranty of National Unity and Personal Freedom.

If *Tribune* readers felt more nationally united and personally free because Freedom was glaring at rebellious Virginia and outstretching her hand to her beloved America, they were deceived. For the goddess faced in *precisely the opposite direction!* She faced *east,* as she does to this day, faced east across Maryland, the "land of Mary," across the Atlantic, toward her beloved Rome. In fact, neither hand outstretches in any direction. Both are at rest, one on her sword, the other holding the laurel wreath.

And her forty-seven Jupiterean thunderbolt-gunshots? They were a tribute to the Jesuit bishop who had placed the District of Columbia under her protection. For December 2, 1863 tolled the *forty-seventh year from John Carroll's last full day alive, December 2, 1815!*

ONCE the pressures of the installation were over, an exhausted but relieved Capitol Architect Thomas U. Walter wrote his wife, Amanda, at their Philadelphia home, to say that "her ladyship looks placid and beautiful – much better than I expected, and I have had thousands of congratulations on this great event, and a general regret was expressed that you were prevented from witnessing this triumph." Someone else had missed the triumph, too, someone who by all the rules of protocol should have been there no matter what: the Commander-in-Chief of the United States Armed Forces, whose War Department had engineered the whole Capitol project from top to bottom – *President Abraham Lincoln.* At noon on the day the temple of federal legislation was placed under the patronage of Persephone, Freedom, Wife of Hades, Queen of the Dead, Immaculate Virgin of Rome, Protectress of the Jesuits, Protectress of Maryland, and Patroness of the United States, the record shows that Lincoln sequestered himself inside the White House, touched with "a fever." A telling detail.

But the sacred iconography was still not complete. The engineers began now preparing the interior of the dome, its canopy, for a massive painting Congress had approved back in the spring of

1863. This painting would depict George Washington undergoing the secular version of the canonization of Ignatius Loyola. It contains even more data useful to our understanding of the character and provenance of American government. We examine this masterpiece in our next chapter.

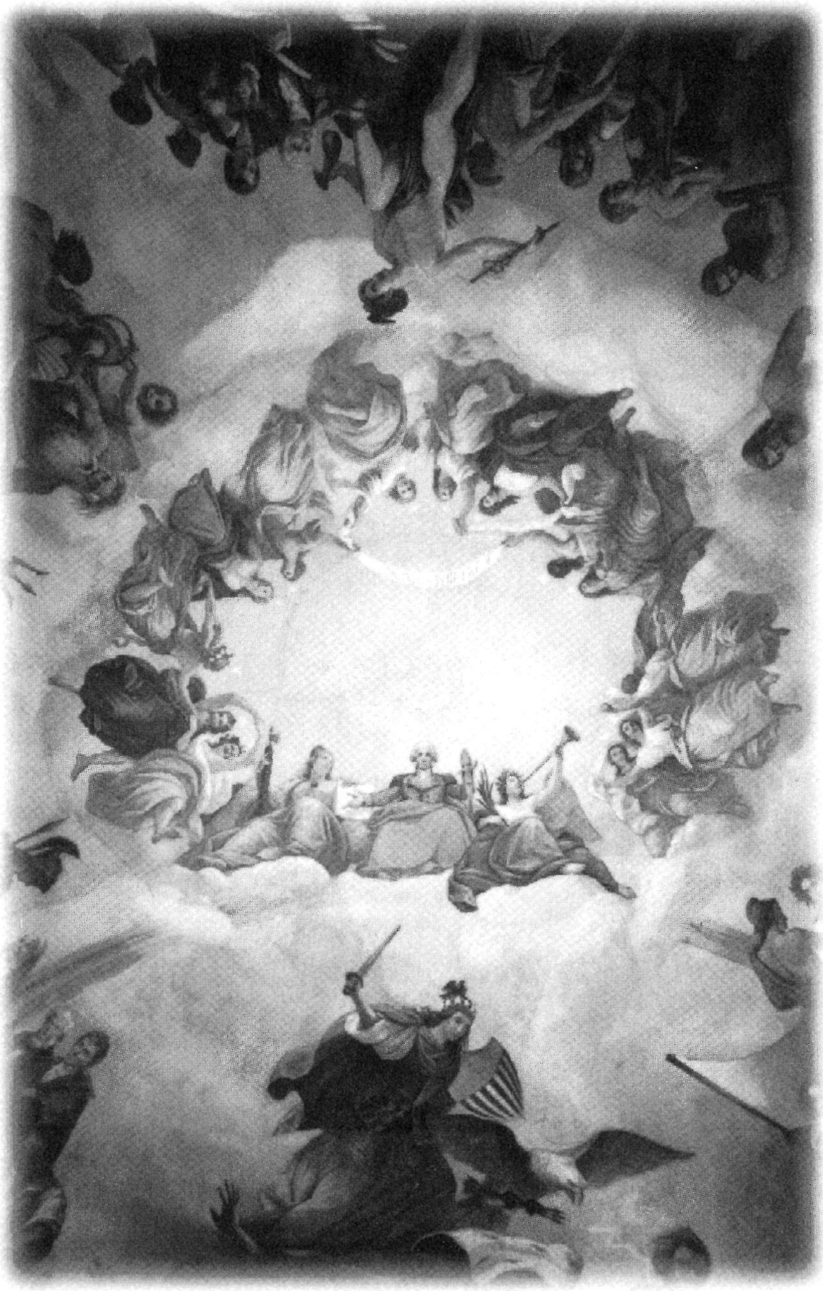

APOTHEOSIS OF WASHINGTON.
(Photograph: Architect of the Capitol)

Chapter 23

THE DOME OF THE GREAT SKY

“”It’s like St. Peter’s!“”
— *Tourists describing the rotunda fresco,*
as quoted in the official Capitol guidebook
WE, THE PEOPLE

ARCHBISHOP JOHN HUGHES of New York sailed for Rome in the autumn of 1851, just after Congress had approved funds to enlarge the Capitol. Hughes had laid the cornerstone for St. Patrick’s Cathedral in Manhattan, and had helped the Jesuits establish Fordham University in Westchester. Now he was helping them decorate the Capitol’s interior.

In Rome, Superior General John Roothaan introduced the Archbishop to Constantino Brumidi, an artist boasting an impressive list of credits. Brumidi had painted an acclaimed portrait of Pio Nono (which the Vatican still exhibits), an Immaculate Conception in the little Sanctuary of the Madonna dell’Archetto in Via San Marcello, and the restoration of three sixteenth-century frescoes in the Vatican Palace. Brumidi was good. General Roothaan had determined to make him America’s Michaelangelo. Archbishop Hughes let it be known that Brumidi would be welcome to paint some frescoes in churches of the New York bish-

Constantino Brumidi

opric. General Roothaan then went about making the Vatican's artist acceptable to American egalitarianism.

Soon after the Archbishop left Rome for New York, the Vatican accused Constantino Brumidi of criminal acts. Supposedly, Brumidi had committed crimes during his membership in the Republican Civil Guard under Giuseppe Mazzini, the Italian Freemason who had recently led ill-fated nationalist revolutions against the papacy. These crimes were said to have included (a) refusing to fire on his Republican friends, (b) looting several convents, and (c) participating in a plot to destroy the Catholic Church – acts reasonably sure to merit a hero's welcome in Protestant America. The Architect of the Capitol's unpublished dossier on Brumidi, which I was permitted to examine during 1993, notes that "several widely divergent accounts suggest that Constantino Brumidi himself was probably the source of at least some of the legends."

Vatican justice found the artist guilty in December 1851 and sentenced him to eighteen years in prison. Several weeks later the sentence was reduced to six years. And within two months, on March 20, Pio Nono himself quietly granted Brumidi an unconditional pardon. General Roothaan then placed his newly-created republican freedom fighter on a ship bound for America.

Brumidi arrived in New York harbor on September 18. On November 29 he filed for state citizenship with the New York Court of Common Pleas. Although the invite had come to paint New York churches, there was no such work to be done there. Instead, the Archbishop sent him to Mexico City – by way of Washington, D.C. In Washington, Brumidi was received by his Masonic brother Thomas Ustick Walter. For two years Walter had been serving President Millard Fillmore as Architect of the Capitol. When the cornerstone for Walter's Capitol expansion plan was laid on the Fourth of July of 1851, President Fillmore and Commissioner of Public Buildings Benjamin B. French, who also happened to be "Grand Master of the Masonic fraternity," led a colorful ceremony. Washington's popular *National Intelligencer* reported the occasion was "welcomed by a display of National flags and the ringing of bells from the various churches and engine houses."[1]

Thomas Walter needed Constantino Brumidi. An edifice as important as the United States Capitol – like the palaces of Augustus and Nero, the Baths of Titus and Livia, the Loggia of Raphael at the Vatican – required the most noble and permanent interior decoration possible. Only fresco painting, in which pigments are mixed with wet mortar immediately before application to the surface, would suffice. And only Constantino Brumidi, of all the artists living in America, knew how to paint fresco. But the dome was not yet ready to be frescoed. So the artist was routed to the sunny, Italianate climate of Mexico City to enjoy life, to ponder his subject matter at a casual pace, to wait for the call.

Two years later, on December 28, 1854, less than three weeks following Pio Nono's decree of the doctrine of Immaculate Conception, Constantino Brumidi appeared in the office of Montgomery C. Meigs, Supervising Engineer of the Capitol extension project. The Capitol's unpublished dossier on Brumidi relates that as the two men conversed in broken French, Brumidi struck Meigs as "a lively old man with a very red nose, either from Mexican suns or French brandies." The immediate upshot of their conversation was a commission to paint a fresco covering an elliptical arch at one end of Meigs' office in the Capitol. It was the first fresco ever painted in the United States, as well as Brumidi's first in five years. The fresco celebrated the coming Civil War in terms of Roman history. According to the commission's report it depicted "a senator, who points to Rome and appeals to Cincinnatus to come to the help of his country." Cincinnatus, the fifth-century BC Roman dictator, was called to defend Rome twice, first from foreign invaders, then from his own common people. Likewise, American heroes first defended their Rome against foreign British invaders, and were now about to be called to defend the same Rome against her own seceding states.

Brumidi completed the Cincinnatus in March 1855. Meigs invited various Congressmen to behold it. They were impressed. Thomas U. Walter was "much delighted." On March 20, Jefferson Davis approved of the Cincinnatus and authorized Meigs to negotiate a salaried contract with Brumidi. Constantino Brumidi's lifetime career spent decorating the Capitol began on a salary of $8.00 a day. His contract allowed him to accept other artistic projects but not to leave Washington. In November 1855 he began a canvas painting of the Blessed Virgin for St. Ignatius' Jesuit church in Baltimore, but was not present for its December 4th installation, on the occasion of the Feast of the Immaculate Conception.

IN the summer of 1862, even as Thomas Crawford's statue was being cast at the Mills foundry, Thomas U. Walter wrote to Brumidi asking him to paint something monumental "in real fresco" to cover the 4,664-square-foot inner surface of the Capitol's dome. Three weeks later, Brumidi submitted sketches of something he entitled "Apotheosis of Washington." The word *"apotheosis"* was then commonly understood by its definition in Webster's 1829 Dictionary:

> Apotheosis – the act of placing a prince or other distinguished person among the heathen deities. This honor was often bestowed on illustrious men of Rome, and followed by the erection of temples, and the institution of sacrifices to the new deity.

Walter responded ecstatically to the "Apotheosis," writing the artist that "no picture in the world will at all compare with this in magnitude." He praised the design before Worshipful Master and Commissioner of Buildings Benjamin French as "probably the grandest, and the most imposing that has ever been executed in the world." French enthusiastically agreed, adding that the Secretary of Interior was also greatly impressed. Final approval of "Apotheosis" at a price of $40,000 came on March 11, 1863, just as the Immaculate Virgin was being placed on her temporary pedestal on the Capitol's east grounds. "Frustrating delays in manpower," according to official histories, would hold the fresco in abeyance until December 1864.

On April 9, 1865, Richmond fell and the Confederacy surrendered to Ulysses S. Grant. Less than a week later, on the evening of April 14 at Ford's Theatre, during an instant of hilarious laughter, one of the country's leading actors, John Wilkes Booth, cried out an oath summarizing the liberation theology of Cardinal Robert Bellarmine: *"Sic Semper Tyrannis"* ("Always this [i.e., death] to tyranny"), and fired a shot into the head of President Abraham Lincoln. *Sic Semper Tyrannis* is also the motto of Virginia, then considered a State in rebellion. Might Booth's cry have been intended to give the assassination the look of an official act of the Confederacy, much in the way Lee Harvey Oswald's much-touted sympathy for Cuba initially gave the Kennedy assassination the look of communist revenge? An illusion of official Confederate responsibility for a beloved president's assassination justified the elaborately cruel revenge which the federal government inflicted upon the southern states in order to bring all the states under the jurisdiction of Washington D.C. (The inferiority of states to the federal "Rome" is expressed in the law of flag. Wherever state and national flags are flown together, the national is always higher.)

Booth had associated with seven people who were brought to trial less than a month following the assassination. It was not a civilian trial but a special eleven-man military tribunal appointed by President Andrew Johnson called "The Hunter Commission."

Counsel for the defendants objected to the Commission, arguing that the military had no jurisdiction over civilians, and therefore the proceeding was unconstitutional. The objection was overruled and the trial moved forward. Within seven weeks, the Commission (a two-thirds majority, not the unanimity required of a civilian jury) found four of the conspirators guilty. On July 7, 1865 they were hanged.

"The great fatal mistake of the American government in the prosecution of the assassins of Abraham Lincoln," wrote Rev.

Charles Chiniquy, the excommunicated priest whom Lincoln had successfully defended in his early law career (see note 2, Chapter 22),

> was to cover up the religious element of that terrible drama. But this was carefully avoided throughout the trial.[2]

The religious element – the fact that all seven of the conspirators were devoted Roman Catholics – was carefully avoided because of who controlled the trial. As Commander-in-Chief of the armed forces, it was Johnson himself who quite constitutionally reigned supreme over the Hunter Commission. But Johnson was also a Freemason, which meant that he followed the wise directives of the Unknown Superior. Thus, the real power behind the Hunter Commission was Superior General Pieter Jean Beckx, a relatively young Belgian who was a great favorite of Pio Nono, Pope Pius IX, the only head of state in the world to recognize the Southern Confederacy as a sovereign nation. Obedient to the will of General Beckx, President Johnson issued an executive order closing the courtroom to the working press. At the end of each day, officials would ration to selected reporters from the Associated Press news carefully evaluated to keep "the religious element" out of the public consciousness.

Charles Chiniquy

Charles Chiniquy tirelessly investigated the assassination. After the conspirators were executed, he went incognito to Washington and found that

> not a single one of the government men would discuss it with me except after I had given my word of honor that I would never mention their names. I saw, with a profound distress, that the influence of Rome was almost supreme in Washington. I could not find a single statesman who would dare to face that nefarious influence and fight it down.[3]

One official told him: “This was not through cowardice, as you might think, but through a wisdom you ought to approve, if you cannot admire it.” Had there not been censorship, had the witnesses been pressed a little further, “many priests would have been compromised, for Mary Surratt’s [one of the four executed conspirators] house was their common rendezvous; it is more than probable that several of them might have been hanged.”

Thirty years after the assassination, a member of the Hunter Commission, Brigadier General Thomas M. Harris, published a small book revealing that Lincoln’s assassination had actually been a Jesuit murder plot to extirpate a Protestant ruler. Harris stated:

> It is fact well established that the headquarters of the conspiracy was the house of a Roman Catholic family, of which Mrs. Mary E. Surratt was the head; and that all of its inmates, including a number of boarders, were devoted members of the Roman Catholic Church. This house was the meeting place, the council chamber, of Booth and his co-conspirators, including Mrs. Mary E. Surratt, and her son, John H. Surratt, who, next to Booth, were the most active members of the conspiracy.[4]

Commissioner Harris went on to relate that Mary Surratt’s son John had been a Confederate spy for three years, “passing back and forth between Washington and Richmond, and from Richmond to Canada and back, as a bearer of dispatches.” John’s mentor during this period was a Jesuit, Father B.F. Wiget, president of Gonzaga College and a priest noted for his sympathies for the Confederacy. John introduced Father Wiget to his mother and the priest became Mary Surratt’s confessor and spiritual director. As well, Father Wiget gave spiritual direction to the famous John Wilkes Booth who, though “a drunkard, a libertine, and utterly indifferent to matters of religion,” was spiritually attracted to him. “The wily Jesuit, sympathizing with Booth in his political views, and in the hope of destroying our government, and establishing the Confederacy ... was able to convert him to Catholicism.” Hard evidence of that conversion was found on the assassin’s corpse: “On examination of Booth’s person after his death, it was found that he was wearing a Catholic medal under his vest, and over his heart.”

At the conspiracy trial, Father Wiget testified to Mary Elizabeth Surratt's "good Christian character." Even assuming her complicity in the assassination, Wiget as a Jesuit could truthfully say Surratt was a good Christian simply by reserving mentally (a) that by "Christian" he meant "Roman Catholic;" (b) that under the terms of the *Directorium Inquisitorum* (see Chapter 8), "Every individual may kill a heretic;" and (c) that President Lincoln was twice a heretic: for his Protestantism and for his having successfully defended an excommunicated priest.

But Mary after all "kept the nest that hatched the egg," as President Johnson put it, and was hanged. Conditional to her death sentence was a provision that a petition for mercy would be attached and sent to Johnson. By execution day, July 7, 1865, Surratt's daughter Anna had heard nothing from the President. Distraught, she appeared at the White House to beg him for clemency. Two government men stood in her way. Preston King and Senator James Henry Lane denied her access to the President, who later declared he had never received any petition for mercy. The following November, Preston King drowned, his body laden with weights. In March, Senator Lane shot himself. (In the judgment of one modern investigator, "Some person or persons were apparently determined that Mary Surratt should not live."[5]) Shortly thereafter, the Supreme Court rendered a landmark decision that would have won all the conspirators a jury trial. *Ex parte Milligan* held that military courts have no jurisdiction over civilians. *Milligan* lent Mary Surratt's death at the hands of Protestants an aura of tragedy and Catholic martyrdom.

Charles Chiniquy obtained important testimony supporting the widely held suspicion of Jesuit responsibility for the assassination. He received from Rev. Francis A. Conwell, Chaplain of the first Minnesota Regiment, a sworn affidavit saying that on April 14, 1865, he was visiting St. Joseph, Minnesota, location of a Roman Catholic seminary. Rev. Conwell swore that at about six o'clock that evening the man in charge of the seminary, a storekeeper by the name of J.H. Linneman, told him and another visitor, Mr. H.P. Bennett, that President Lincoln had "just been killed."

The next day, Rev. Conwell journeyed ten miles to the town of St. Cloud. As soon as he arrived, he asked the hotelier, Mr. Haworth, if he had heard any news of a presidential assassination. Mr. Haworth had heard nothing, as St. Cloud had neither railroad nor telegraph. On the following morning, April 16th, on his way to preach a sermon in church, Rev. Conwell was handed a copy of a telegram brought up by stagecoach from Anoka, Minnesota. The telegram announced that President Lincoln had been assassinated on Friday evening at about nine o'clock.

On the morning of Monday the 17th, Rev. Conwell hurried to St. Paul and reported to the newspaper that in St. Joseph he had been informed of President Lincoln's assassination three hours before the event took place. The paper published his report.

"We have now before us," wrote Commissioner Harris,

> positive evidence that these Jesuit Fathers, priests of Rome, engaged in preparing young men for the priesthood away out in the village of St. Joseph, in far off Minnesota, were in correspondence with their brethren in Washington City, and had been informed that the plan to assassinate the President had been matured, the agents for its accomplishment had been found, the time for its execution had been set, and so sure were they of its accomplishment, that they could announce it as already done, three or four hours before it had been consummated. The anticipation of its accomplishment so elated them that they could not refrain from passing it around ... as a piece of glorious news.

MEANWHILE, through the Lincoln assassination and its aftermath, the Vatican's artist, Constantino Brumidi, along with some seventy French and Italian assistants, applied pigmented mortar to the interior canopy of the Capitol dome. They were still working when the first session of the Thirty-ninth Congress met on December 4, 1865. Not until the following January did the scaffolding come down. When it did, viewers were awestruck by what they beheld. Brumidi had crowned the ceiling of America's legislative center with a glorious, panoramic visualization from Book VI of Virgil's *Aeneid,* where Aeneas' blind father, Anchises, explains

> "Here is Caesar, and all the line of Julius, all who shall one day pass under the dome of the great sky. This is the man, this one, of whom so often you have heard the promise, Caesar Augustus, son of the deified, who shall bring once again an Age of Gold to Latium, the land where Saturn reigned in early times. He will extend his power beyond the Garamants [Africans] and Indians, over far territories north and south of the zodiacal stars, the solar way...."

The epicenter of "Apotheosis of Washington" is a solar orb, the Sun-God into which Augustus Caesar was said to have been absorbed when his body died. From the Capitol's highest interior point Augustus radiates his golden light outward and downward to the next in the "line of Julius," the deified George Washington. The god Washington occupies the judgment seat of heaven, sword of Justice firmly clasped in his left hand. Basking in the light of Augustus – *Pontifex Maximus* – he rules "over far territories north and south of the zodiacal stars, the solar way." Like his Caesarean forebears, Washington is God, Caesar, Father of his Country.

On the right hand of the Father sits Minerva, holding the emblem of Roman totalitarianism, the fasces. Minerva, we recall, was the virgin goddess of the Sacred Heart – it was she who rescued the heart of the Son of God, and placed it with Jupiter in heaven. She was called "Minerva" when praised for her justice and wisdom. When praised for her beauty and love, Minerva was known as Venus, the Queen of Heaven. She and Venus were often identified with each other, just as statues of both were reconsecrated "Mary" through Roman Catholic missionary adaptation. Minerva's most persistent role in ancient paganism was *Dea Benigna,* "The Mediatrix." She heard the prayers of sinful mortals and passed them on to Jupiter, in the same way the Roman Mary is believed to pass Catholic prayers on to Christ.

Completing the circular composition around the solarized Augustus are thirteen nubile goddesses. These are the original States. They dance weightlessly in space, supporting a white banner inscribed with the soul of the Bacchic Gospel, "*E PLURIBUS UNUM*." Above the head of each State-goddess floats a magical white pentagram.

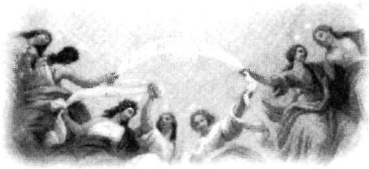

The States

Beneath all this celestial revelry, Brumidi painted more Roman gods mingling with American mortals. Here is Vulcan, the god of fire and craftsmanship, planting his foot on a cannon, while his workers prepare munitions and weapons of death and destruction. And over here Neptune rises with his trident from the sea in a horse-drawn scallop-shell chariot. And here the wise Mediatrix communicates with American scientists Benjamin Franklin, Samuel F. B. Morse, inventor of the Code, and Robert Fulton, inventor of the steamship.

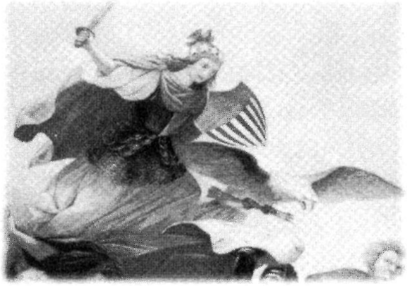

The Virgin pursues evildoers

And here, the Goddess Immaculately Conceived, the Dreadnaught Mary. Wearing the pentagrams and eagle headdress of Thomas Crawford's statue atop the dome's exterior, she mobilizes her sword and shield against a pack of fleeing sinners labeled "Tyranny" and "Kingly Power." Jupiter's mascot, the Roman eagle, glides just behind her clutching a bunch of thunderbolts in his talons. Innocent in her flowing scarlet cape, the Goddess is situated *exactly* beneath the deified George Washington, coming between him and the embattled viewing public gazing up from ground level. It is the graphic realization of Pio Nono's *Ubi primum,* which decreed the Virgin Mary was "set up between Christ and his Church, always delivering the Christian people from their greatest calamities and from the snares and assaults of all their enemies."

The eagle gliding behind Mary explains the otherwise inscrutable seal of the United States Justice Department, which contains a wingspread eagle surrounded by the motto "*QUI PRO DOMINA JUSTITIA SEQUITUR*" ("He who follows the Goddess Justice"). Persephone, or Minerva the Mediatrix, when judging the sinfully dead in Hades was called *Justitia,* or Justice. The *"HE"* of the Justice Department's motto identifies the eagle, symbol of Rome. Rome follows the Goddess Justice – that is, the Immaculately Conceived Mother of God in her judicial capacity.

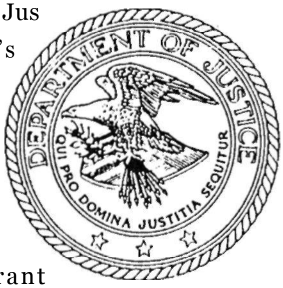
DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE
QUI PRO DOMINA JUSTITIA SEQUITUR

A rainbow sweeps across the lower quadrant of the Dome of the Sky from Benjamin Franklin to a young boy wearing a Smurf-cap and a toga. The boy attends a goddess who reclines on a large horse-drawn reaper. She is Persephone's mother Ceres, who was reconsecrated by early missionary adaptation as Anna, mother of the Virgin Mary. The golden boy is officially designated "Young America." Although Brumidi has hidden the boy's face from us, he deserves our careful scrutiny for one very important reason. Bearing the name "America," he is the only element in the sacred national iconography that defines the character of the *American person as perceived by government.*

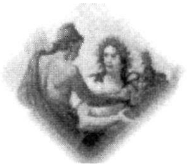
YOUNG AMERICA

Young America's Smurf-cap is a style of headgear known as the "Phrygian cap." Phrygia was a district in the Kingdom of Pergamum. We remember Pergamum. It was the middle point in the transfer of Babylonian religion westward to Rome. *Phrygia* is a Greek word meaning "freemen" (our English word "free" comes from the first syllable, "phry-"). Phrygian caps were given to freed Roman slaves to indicate their new liberated status. Roman law regards liberty as a conditional status. Once *granted* by a patron, it could be *revoked* at any time for cause. Phrygian-cap freedom, then, means liberty (freed Roman slaves, by the way, were called *"liberti")* to please Caesar. We remember from Chapter 8 how Ignatius described such freedom in Section 353.1 of his Exercises: "We must put aside all judgment of our own, and keep the mind ever ready and prompt to obey in all things the hierarchical Church." Of course, those *liberti* bold enough to protest what their superiors commanded lost their freedom, no matter how lucid and reasonable their own judgment might have been. They were reverted to slavery. Since the advent of the Febronian State Church, the reversion of protestant *liberti,* or Protestants, to slavery has been so methodically insidious that it's hardly noticeable. The shackles are psychological, humanely fitted by increasing varieties of spiritual exercise. Like Aeneas, Anchises, Julius Ascanius and their Trojan followers, most Americans are indeed Phrygian-cap freemen, free to sacrifice their individuality to the greater glory of Rome.

The Black Obelisk of Calah, which stands in the Babylonian-Assyrian Wing of the British Museum, records the great accomplishments of the ninth-century BC god-king Shalmaneser II. In a scene depicting various monarchs paying obeisance to Babylon, we see one monarch kneeling before Shalmaneser, worshiping him. Shalmaneser in turn offers a sacrifice to an eight-pointed star set within a bird's wings and tail-feathers. Inscriptions identify this kneeling monarch as King Jehu of Israel. Remarkably, according to the New Catholic Encyclopedia, Jehu's likeness here is the only known contemporaneously-rendered portrait of a biblical personage. More remarkably, Jehu is wearing the Phrygian cap. Like Brumidi's Young America, Jehu's liberty is subject to the mood of his god-king.

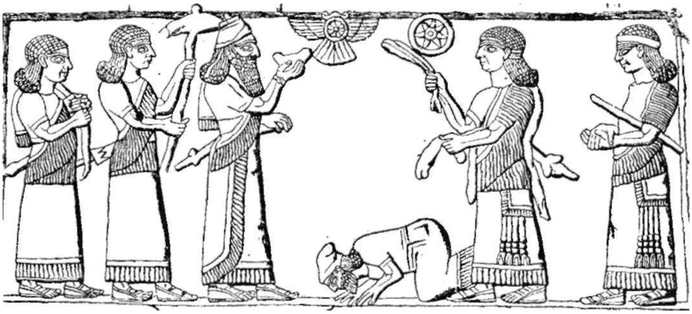

THE FREEDOM CAP
Jehu submitting to Shalmaneser

The Bible confirms the testimony of the Black Obelisk. At II Kings 10:31 we read: "Jehu took no heed to walk in the law of the Lord God of Israel with all his heart." Scripture further tells us that

Jehu worshiped the golden calf, a sacred Babylonian icon made fashionable in tenth-century-BC Israel by Jehu's predecessor, Jeroboam. Jeroboam renounced "the law of the Lord God of Israel" and instituted... *democracy.* Democracy opened the Israelite priesthood, originally appointed by Yahweh exclusively to the family of Levi, to all applicants. Consequently, Yahweh's priesthood was infiltrated by non-believers and foreign sympathizers. They prepared the way for Jehu to make of himself a Phrygian freeman, obligated to concur with obedience of the understanding in all things which his superior, Shalmaneser II, commanded – exactly as the Black Obelisk explains in lucid visual terms. As a direct result of Jehu's departure from the God of Israel, the Israelite nation began falling apart. It was ultimately destroyed by Caesarean Rome, the legitimate heir to Shalmaneser's Babylonian authority as it passed down through Pergamum.

Running throughout this cosmic Battle of the Faiths is a highly refined cabalah involving the concept of "golden calf." The word "calf" in Hebrew, the language of Jehu and Jeroboam, is **צגל**, pronounced *"eagle."* Whereas Jehu gave his people Shalmaneser's golden **צגל** to worship, the Church Militant has trained the American public to worship Rome's golden *eagle,* which surmounts every flagpole. Could it be that if we show respect, affection, or loyalty toward the national eagle we create the presumption of worshiping the golden calf, and so alienate ourselves from the God of the Bible and in the vacuum find ourselves under the rule of the Church Militant?

ACCORDING to J.C. Judson, in his *Biography of the Signers of the Declaration of Independence,* as General Washington was planning his famous expedition against Cornwallis at Yorktown, "the army was destitute, the government treasury was empty, her credit shivering in the wind." Suddenly, a miracle in the annals of philanthropy occurred. Robert Morris, Superintendent of Finance, the highest officer in the United States under the Articles of Confederation (1781), personally raised eighty cannon and a hundred pieces of field artillery. In addition, he raised "all other necessary supplies not furnished from other sources" and became personally

> responsible to the amount of $1,400,000 upon his own notes, which were promptly paid at maturity. This enabled the American army to give the finishing stroke to the revolution, and triumph, in victory complete, over a proud and merciless foe.

So goes a historian's version of how Robert Morris saved America. The *official* version is revealed in Constantino Brumidi's "Apotheosis of Washington." Here we see Superintendent Morris gazing up from his accounts ledger at yet another Roman deity. We recognize the deity from the familiar *caduceus* in his right hand, from the winged sandal he's thrust to within kissing distance of Morris' lips, and from the shadowy bag of gold he tantalizingly dangles in Morris' face. The deity is Mercury, the Psychopomp, the Trickster, the patron deity of commerce, deceivers, and thieves. Mercury, the brilliant, lovable Pied-Piper deity who deceives the souls of sinful humanity into following him exuberantly down into the oblivion of Hades. Just as Sebastiano Ricci's painting subtly established Mercury as the guiding spirit of modern Roman Catholicism, Brumidi's painting acknowledges the same deity's ascendancy over the fulfillment of the American Revolution.

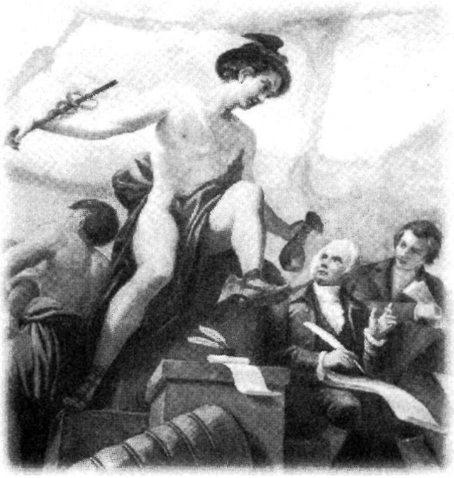

Mercury & Robert Morris

Amazing stuff, these pictures. And like so many of the testimonies presented in this book – the supremacy of the Church Militant, the publication of Sun-Tzuan strategies in a western language, the names, the numbers, the dates, the locus and layout of the federal city, the architecture, the statuary, the monuments, the emblems, the frescoes, the ceremonies – they come not from the Trickster's victims, *but from the Trickster himself.* It's as if the point of the trick is to warn the victim beforehand, in words and pictures, that he or she is about to be tricked. A con is much sweeter when the mark actually *consents* to the con. That way, the Trickster's conscience is clear.

CONSTANTINO Brumidi continued decorating the Dome of the Great Sky well into his seventies. In 1879, at the age of 74, while painting "Penn's Treaty with the Indians" on the Rotunda frieze, he slipped from a scaffold. Dangling fifty-eight feet from the marble floor, he held on until help came. He escaped a deadly fall. But the shock of the experience killed him a few months later.

Chapter 24

THE MARK OF CAIN

“The mark of Cain is stamped upon our foreheads. Across the centuries, our brother Abel has lain in blood which we drew, and shed tears we caused by forgetting Thy love.”

—Pope John XXIII, A Prayer (1960),
cited in *VICARS OF CHRIST*

WE LIVE IN THE New World Order, just as people under Augustus Caesar did. Not a future thing to be feared or avoided, the New World Order is a present reality to be identified, understood, and dealt with in a way most pleasing to God. It was God, after all, who established the New World Order. We can read about it in the Bible. In fact, the Bible is the only record we have that publicly and truthfully sets forth the essentials of the Order’s origins and development through time.

The Bible records the great decisive events in the progress of human life up to the close of the first century AD. Creation of earth and the fullness thereof, creation of man and woman, their turning away from God, the first conception, the first birth, the first sacrifice, the first murder, the first insignia, the first city, the first and only great flood, the surviving family and its peculiar relationship through time with God – all of this momentous data is given in the Bible with a stark truthfulness that is invariably supported, often to the surprise of many, by the results of scientific inquiry. The writers of the Bible, Israelite prophets inspired by their God Yahweh, held no monopoly on reporting these events. Priests of other nations reported them, too. But in doing so, they cunningly adapted them to fit prevailing administrative needs. The result of their adaptations is what we call mythology.

One very persistent myth, based on a crucial event accounted for in the Bible, explained to people under Babylonian rulership the divine origin of their government. This was the myth of Marduk.[1]

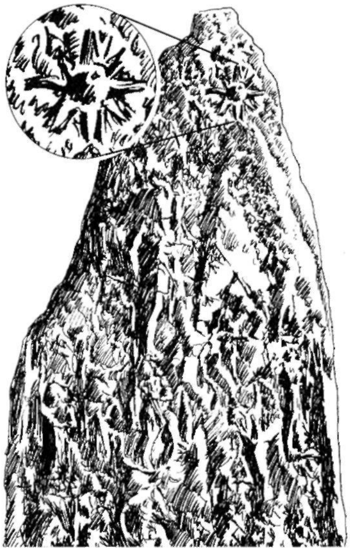
The Naram-Sin [Enoch] Stele, with Annu's name over the mountain-top.

The myth of Marduk begins with Annu, "the head deity of Babylonian mythology,"[2] looking down upon earth in dismay. The land is in chaos, overrun by flood-waters and monstrous serpents. Annu senses that bringing order to such chaos is a job for Marduk, the first-born son of the moon goddess Ea. So Annu summons Marduk and asks him to organize the earth. Marduk agrees to the task, but "only on the condition that he be made first among the gods and that his word shall have the force of the decree of Annu."[3] Annu accepts Marduk's terms and vests him with "the powers and insignia of kingship – and Marduk's word was declared to have the authority of Annu." Armed with divine power, Marduk goes to earth and separates dry land from sea. He polices the monsters, and any evildoer foolish enough to oppose him receives the wrath of God.

The result of Marduk's ordination was depicted in the Stele of Naram-Sin, now in the Louvre. In this very ancient Babylonian monument, Annu is shown imbuing Naram-Sin (Enoch to the

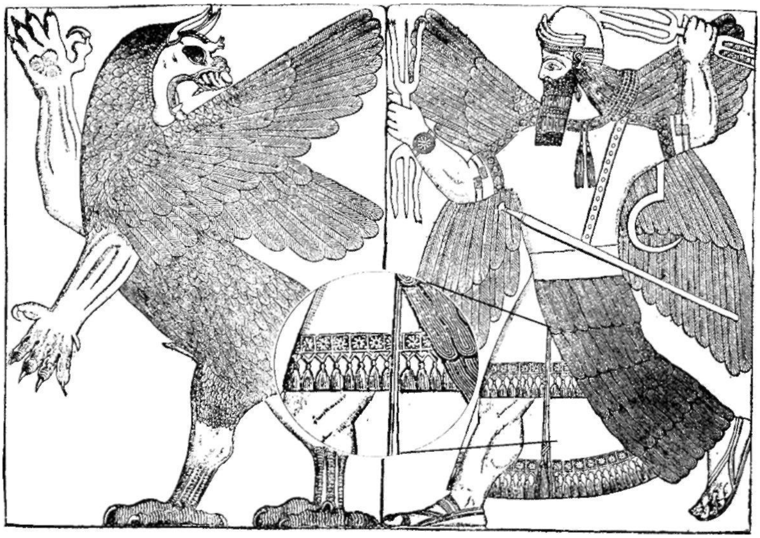

Marduk policing the evildoer Tiamat with thunderbolts. From a bas-relief on the walls of the palace of the Assyrian king Assur-nasir-pal (9th century bc at Calah, now in the British Museum). Note the repeated Annu signature in the sacred hem of Marduk's garment. And the scythe under his left arm: is the artist subtly revealing that Marduk was once a farmer?

Hebrews) with power over a mass of other beings. Annu's name, seen in the tip of the stele, is the cuneiform symbol for "heaven," the double-cross, or ✳

Marduk wears the Annu signature like a cop with his badge. It makes him a god. In fact, the ordination-of-power iconography of ancient Babylonian nations was never without it. Even today (see Appendix: "Fifty Centuries of the Annu Signature"), we find it in the flag of Great Britain, said to be the union of St. Andrew's Scottish cross and St. George's English cross. We find it prominently displayed in the decor of government buildings, especially courtrooms. It forms the motif for much of the decorative architecture of the U.S. Supreme Court Building, interior and exterior. The pavement surrounding the Obelisk of Caligula in St. Peter's Piazza, where the multitudes stand to receive papal edicts and blessings, is inlaid with a gigantic Annu signature. No doubt about it: a very ancient symbol has remained consistently identified with the presence of rulership. Could it be that a symbol of so much power is based on a myth? Or is it based on the fact from which the myth sprang?

THE sensitive Bible-reader immediately sees in the myth of Marduk a missionary adaptation of the biblical account of Cain. The two protagonists are remarkably similar. Both Cain and Marduk were firstborn sons of mothers bearing almost the same name: Marduk, son of Ea; Cain, son of Eve. Both firstborns were appointed to rule over evil, albeit for different reasons: Marduk because of his heroism, Cain because of his own wickedness.[4] So that they might move effectively among evildoers, both were given protective seals of immunity by the God of Heaven. God said to Cain,

> Therefore whosoever slayeth Cain, vengeance shall be taken on him sevenfold. And the Lord set a mark upon Cain, lest any finding him should kill him.[5]

In Marduk's case, the evildoers were chaotic beings ruining Annu's earth. Cain's evildoers were persons who might slay him because he had become a homeless trespasser. The Bible details exactly why Cain became homeless. His farm refused to yield harvests because he had defiled the soil with the blood of his brother. Cain "rose up against Abel his brother and slew him." We're not told why. It may have been jealous rage, and it may not. Nothing in Scripture indicates that Cain hated Abel. The most we know of their relationship is that "Cain talked with his brother," and afterward, in a field, murdered him.[6] Nor are we given details of the murder, except that it was bloody.[7] The blood is an important clue as to motive.

We know that Cain was first crestfallen then angry at God for preferring Abel's sacrifice to his own.[8] Abel, the shepherd, sacrificed lambs from his flock.[9] Cain, the farmer, apparently thinking sacrifice was about returning the best of his productivity to God, sacrificed the best of his harvest. God found Cain's sacrifice offensive and Abel's pleasing.[10] Elsewhere in Scripture we learn why. It involves a principle that is very difficult for many of us to comprehend. The principle is this: *without shedding of blood there is no* *remission of sin.*[11] Abel pleased God because he shed blood, the blood of sacrificial animals.

The great teaching of the Bible is that the death sentence mankind has inherited from the original breaking of God's Law by Cain's parents ("Thou shalt not eat of the fruit...") is pardonable only by death, by the extreme act of *shedding blood fatally.* This teaching is the bedrock of the Old Testament and the whole point of the New. In the Old Testament, the people of God were pardoned the sinfulness inherited from Adam by shedding the blood of animals, as Abel had dutifully done. In the New, the people of God were pardoned this same sinfulness by doing exactly as Cain had done, *shedding the blood of a man.* To this day, according to the Scriptures, all who believe that Jesus Christ's blood has power to remit sins are imputed sinless by God.[12] Imputed sinless, their sentence of eternal separation from God is commuted, and they are given eternal life in Heaven.[13]

Now, Scripture does not tell us that God ever explained the purpose of blood sacrifice to Cain.[14] But we know that God is the greatest of all teachers. And we know he wants the best for mankind. It's unthinkable, then, that He would want Cain ignorant of the life-saving effect of blood sacrifice. He must have taught Cain as thoroughly as he taught Abel. And Cain must have listened attentively, for we know he was anxious to please God – otherwise, why would he have been angry and crestfallen at learning of God's dissatisfaction with his sacrifice? But Cain was more creative than obedient. It's entirely consistent with his character for him to have decided

> Okay, if it's blood sacrifice He wants, I'll give Him the sacrifice He deserves, a better sacrifice than lambs: I'll give Him the blood *of an innocent man!*

Cain's intent was evil only in that he sought to *improve* on what God had commanded, in the way Saul improved on God's commandment to annihilate the Amalekites by sparing their king and certain valuable livestock.[15] Cain knew the logic of God – he was, after all, the first human being born with the knowledge of good and evil. And we know from what happened to Jesus that God's logic calls for the sacrifice of the only One whose perfect innocence overcame death. In his obsession to *please* God, wouldn't Cain have regarded spilling Abel's blood as the *ultimate* godliness?

What I am suggesting is that, in Cain's mind, Abel was not so much murdered as *sacrificed,* nailed to Annu's very name —

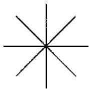

— *hanged upon a cross!* Wouldn't this explain why Scripture shows no evidence that Cain sensed any guilt? Wouldn't it also explain the hundreds of ancient, pre-Christian myths of young shepherds (such as Tammuz, Bacchus, Attis, Mithras) who were slain in cold blood by various villains only to rise from the dead, their shed blood having supposedly propitiated original sin and resurrected them to eternal life? The myths, obviously based on the fact of Abel's crucifixion, all pointed to a *universally anticipated event* foretold by the Israelite prophets: Messiah's death and resurrection, which would pardon the sins of mankind and restore eternal life.

Thus emerges the possibility that the "lamb slain from the foundation of the world" mentioned at Revelation 13:8 might have indeed been Abel, God's first obedient servant. For it is a fact that "the World" – by which the New Testament writers meant the ordering of human institutional systems which God admitted into existence – did actually begin, as we are about to see, in the immediate aftermath of Abel's death. If this is the case, then mankind owes a strange debt to Cain. No Cain, no death of Abel. No death of Abel, no World. No World, no incarnation of God as only begotten Son. No Son of God, no true death and resurrection. No true death and resurrection, no hope of mankind for eternal intimacy with God.

IT was the complaint of an earth outraged by Abel's spilt blood that moved God to banish Cain from his accustomed habitat forever. Just as Marduk demanded protection from the monsters he had been asked to control, Cain demanded protection from possible assailants in his exile. God graciously accommodated Cain by "set[ting] a mark" upon him which made Cain seven times more powerful than any mortal competitor. The mark served as the very "powers and insignia of kingship" Annu had granted Marduk. It empowered Cain to rule all human beings likely to challenge his protective mark, beings unafraid of Yahweh's name,[16] beings who shared Cain's environs "out from the presence of the Lord."[17]

Armed with his mark, Cain began the rulership of evil. The Bible accounts for Cain's movements after his ordination. He took a wife and sired a son. Then, he built a city and named it after his son, "Enoch."[18] Centuries later, Enoch disappeared under the silt of Noah's flood. It passed from memory to mystery to oblivion, until the 1840s, when archaeologists following the Bible's descriptions of Babylonia began excavating in present-day Iraq. Along the Euphrates River, near Al Khidr, they discovered numerous strata of ancient settlements. The deepest stratum, beneath which there was nothing but bedrock, had called itself Unuk. "Unuk was founded on the oldest bricks," declared one of the leading archaeologists, a renowned classical linguist from Queens College, Oxford, named Archibald Sayce.

Having deciphered and evaluated large numbers of clay tablets from the site, Professor Sayce issued the opinion in 1887 that Unuk was indeed biblical Enoch, the city built by Cain and his son.[19] Lecturing at Oxford, Sayce also pointed out that one of Cain's mythological names was Marduk[20] – an important contribution to the Marduk-equals-Cain hypothesis. Unuk's dominant temple bore the title "house of Annu," further enhancing the probability that Marduk's myth was spun from Cain's murder of Abel. As ruler of Unuk, Cain was known as Sargon – or, as other translators have rendered the spelling, Shargani, Sarrukinu, Sargoni, etc.[21] These variations of Sargon are composites of the Babylonian *shar,* meaning "king" and *gani, kinu,* or *goni,* meaning "Cain."[22] It would be hard to say Sargon means anything other than "King Cain."

Unuk had been no primitive village. *Encyclopedia Britannica* noted that "transparent glass seems to have been first introduced in the reign of Sargon."[23] Sargon built a metropolis of enormous complexity. But what astonished the archaeologists most was the city's miraculous historical *suddenness.* Unuk seemed to have materialized from out of nowhere:

> We have found, in short, abundant remains of a bronze culture, but no traces of preceding ages of development such as meet us on early Egyptian sites.[24]

The suddenness factor severely challenged those scholars who viewed history through Darwinian anti-biblicalism, which had become the fashion in Jesuit-influenced academic circles. To fit evolutionary theory, Unuk should have evidenced development from a much older civilization. As a contributor to the London Times' prestigious *Historians' History of the World* grumbled,

> Surely such a people as this could not have sprung into existence as a *Deus ex Machina* [a person or thing introduced or appearing unexpectedly so as to provide an artificial or contrived solution to an otherwise insoluble problem]. It must have had its history – a history which presupposes development of several centuries more.[25]

But Unuk as a social organization had no previous history. This maddening circumstance drove the British Museum's H. R. Hall to rationalize that its "ready-made" culture must have been "brought into Mesopotamia from abroad."[26] Modern anti-biblicists find it easier to accept that Unuk's sudden complexity came from other galaxies than from something as simple as... acquiring divine intelligence from biting into a piece of forbidden fruit. Of course, eating the fruit of disobedience is how the Bible explains the suddenness factor. Cain had extraordinary powers because he inherited from his parents the knowledge of good and evil which the Trickster had encouraged them to obtain at the price of eternal life.[27] In Mrs. Bristowe's words: "Cain was born and bred in the atmosphere of the miraculous; his parents were possessed of supernatural knowledge, some of which must have been imparted to their children."[28]

King Cain was no primitive chieftain. On one of his many autobiographical inscriptions, he boasted that "in multitudes of bronze chariots I rode over rugged lands … I governed the upper countries," and "three times to the sea I have advanced."[29] A brilliant, well-organized military emperor – the prototypical Caesar – Cain controlled a "vast empire." The Cambridge History tells us he divided his imperium

> from the [Persian Gulf] to the [Mediterranean], from the rising to the setting of the sun into districts of five double hours march each, over which he placed the 'sons of his palace.' By these delegates of his authority he ruled the hosts of the lands together.[30]

Cain's empire was founded on slavery[31] – the inevitable result of one man's retributive power exceeding all others sevenfold. For the most part, however, it appears that Cain exercised his advantage in the public interest. Professor Sayce tells us that his empire was "full of schools and libraries, of teachers and pupils, and poets and prose writers, and of the literary works which they had composed." Furthermore,

> the empire was bound together by roads, along which there was a regular postal service, and clay seals which took the place of stamps are now in the Louvre bearing the name of Sargon and his son…. It is probable that the first collection of astronomical observations and terrestrial omens was made for a library established by Sargon.[32]

The insignia of power and kingship did not vanish with Cain's death. That Cain built the original city with his son implies that the mark was intended to be an hereditary entitlement. The son's name implies that he received the power of the mark from his father. "Enoch" in Hebrew means "the initiated" – to be inducted by special rites, to be instructed in the rudiments or principles of something." Scripture implies that Enoch and perhaps Cain in turn initiated other deputies and successors. Four generations after Cain's birth, we find Enoch's great-great grandson Lamech still exercising, in fact *augmenting,* the prerogative of divine vengeance:

> Lamech said to his wives, "Adah and Zillah, listen to me; wives of Lamech, hear my words. I have killed a man for wounding me, a young man for injuring me. If Cain is avenged seven times, then Lamech seventy-seven times."[34]

Receiving authority to govern requires taking an oath which binds the initiate to a code of rights and responsibilities. Interestingly, our word "oath" is cognate with the Hebrew אות (pronounced "oath"), which is the word translated "mark" at Genesis 4:15, "the Lord set a *mark* upon Cain." Knowing this, we may accurately say "the Lord put Cain under oath," an oath visibly represented by the various insignia governments display. The mark, then, stands for a covenant between God and Cain. It is not the all-encompassing sort of covenant which God struck with the humbly obedient Abraham – "And I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations for an everlasting covenant, to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed after thee."[35] Cain's unwillingness to obey the letter of Yahweh's commandments made him unfit for intimacy with the divine. In Cain's own words, "from thy face shall I be hid."[36] The exile covenant was strictly limited to assuring God's vengeance against anyone who would threaten Cain's life. In matters of wisdom, correction, instruction in righteousness, Cain was on his own. He was on his own, also, if he should try to attack the peaceful. *The mark was a covenant of retribution only.*

Early on, Cain saw there was great profit in provoking assailants. The more enemies, the more spectacular the displays of vengeance. The more vengeance, the more justice; the more justice, the more power to Cain; a more powerful Cain could do more excellent public works. Thus, it became essential to the self-interest of the bearer of the mark – which remains to this day a first principle of ordered government – to provoke and encourage evildoing, particularly the form that manifests itself in rebellion.

Cain terrorized evil with awesome dependability. His faith that God would avenge his enemies made him a highly reliable public protector. Down through the ages, righteous people could live secure in the knowledge that the mark-bearer would stop at nothing to persecute evildoers. This fact is marvelously declared in Scripture. In the seventh century BC, the mark-bearing Babylonians were appointed by God to capture the wayward Israelites and show them some harsh discipline. Israel couldn't understand why God would put a vain, evil Babylonian king over His own chosen people. God explained saying: "See, he is puffed up, and his desires are not upright, but the *righteous shall live by his faith*."[37]

How has the mark managed to remain vibrant for nearly six thousand years? Grand Commander Albert Pike, in his influential *Morals and Dogma,* threw valuable light on the subject. He declared that "from the earliest time," Freemasonry has been the "custodian and depository" of the "symbols, emblems, and allegories ... erected by Enoch."[38] The Commander was careful to say he meant not Cain's son Enoch, but the Bible's other Enoch, Enoch-2, the good Enoch, the Enoch "who walked with God."[39] However, his attempt to dissociate his institution from Cain puts the Commander at variance with Masonic and biblical chronology. For if a biblical Enoch erected the earliest imagery of Freemasonry, it could not possibly have been Enoch-2. It had to have been Enoch-1. Let's examine the chronology.

Enoch-2 was descended from Seth, whom Eve conceived after the death of Abel – "for God, said she, hath appointed me another seed instead of Abel, whom Cain slew."[40] When Eve conceived Seth, Adam was 130 years old.[41] According to the scripturally faithful computations of the Archbishop of Armagh, James Ussher (1581–1656), Adam was created in 4004 BC. Thus, Seth was born in 3874 BC. Genesis 5:6–20 gives us an exact toll of the years between Seth and his great-great-great-great grandson Enoch-2:

Father	**Son**	**Age of father at son's birth**
Seth	Enos	105
Enos	Cainan	90
Cainan	Mahaleel	70
Mahaleel	Jared	65
Tared	Enoch-2	162
	Total years	492

According to the Bible, Enoch-2 was born 492 years after the birth of Seth, or in 3382 BC. NOW, Commander Pike's book, *Morals and Dogma,* reckons its date of publication in both Christian (1871 AD) and Masonic (5680 AM) chronology. To find out the beginning of Masonic history – that "earliest time" in which Enoch erected his "symbols, emblems, and allegories" – in terms of Christian chronology, we subtract the given Christian year from its Masonic equivalent (1871 from 5680). This gives us a first Masonic year of 3809 BC.[42] But the figures show that Enoch-2 was not born until 3382, some 427 years *after* Freemasonry's "earliest time"! Enoch-2 could not possibly have erected the prototypical symbolic devices of which Freemasonry has ever been custodian and depository. However, Cain's son, Enoch-1, very well could have!

Cain began his wandering after Abel's death, which the Bible marks with Seth's conception and Adam's age, 130 years, in about 3876 BC. If we give Cain ten years to find a wife, settle down, and sire a child, Enoch-1 would have been born in 3866 BC. This would make him a 55-year-old man in the first Masonic year, 3809. At that age, Enoch-1 would have been fully equipped to erect symbols and allegories memorializing his father's divine appointment to rule populations "out from the presence of the Lord."[43]

Incidentally, Professor Sayce placed Cain in Masonry's early years *against his previous determinations.* Sayce admitted to being compelled by the scholarly diligence of a latter-day Babylonian king to accept the evidence that Sargon lived as early as four thousand years before Christ:

> The last king of Babylonia, Nabonidas, had antiquarian

> tastes, and busied himself not only with the restoration of the old temples of his country, but also with the disinterment of the memorial cylinders which their builders and restorers had buried beneath their foundation. It was known that the great temple of the Sun-god at Sippara … had originally been erected by Naram-Sin [Enoch], the son of Sargon, and attempts had been already made to find the records which, it was assumed, he had entombed under its angles. With true antiquarian zeal, Nabonidas continued the search until he had lighted upon 'the foundation stone' of Naram-Sin himself. This 'foundation-stone' he tells us had been seen by none of his predecessors for 3200 years. In the opinion, accordingly, of Nabonidas, a king who was curious about the past history of his country, and whose royal position gave him the best possible opportunities for learning all that could be known about it, Naram-Sin and his father Sargon lived 3200 years before his own time, or 3750 BC.

What we see in the Bible's account of how Unuk came about is nothing less than *the foundation of the world's legal system*. That God would ordain an evil man to administer the law makes sublime sense to me.

In our final chapter, I shall ask your indulgence in a few personal reflections of my own as to how a system designed to process evil can do as much good as it does.

Chapter 25

THE TWO MINISTRIES

> "The years pass so quickly – where do they go? – so quickly, and then we get old. We never knew what any of it was about."
>
> —WOODY ALLEN, *RADIO DAYS*

WHAT, TO ME, makes the Bible such an inviting resource is the vigor with which the rulers of evil have suppressed its unlicensed reading. It's been my experience that as predictably as such rulers play with truth, the Bible forthrightly tells it.

The previous chapters have been written in the presumption that ruling institutions *are* what they say they are (under the Cain covenant they must truthfully identify their origins, which they do with cabalah). It's only fair, then, that I write this chapter in the presumption that the Bible really is what it says it is. It claims to be the unique, revealed Word of God,[1] and the veritable literary embodiment of Jesus Christ.[2] If we disbelieve that claim, we must disbelieve all the mottoes, insignia, bulls, encyclicals, laws, acts, ordinations, constitutions, oaths, and decrees of the rulers of evil.

According to God (as given in Scripture), the purpose of law is to regulate evildoers. Hear the apostle Paul:

> We also know that law is made not for the righteous but for lawbreakers and rebels, the ungodly and sinful, the unholy and irreligious; for those who kill their fathers or mothers, for murderers, for adulterers and perverts, for slave traders and liars and perjurers – and for whatever else is contrary to the sound doctrine that conforms to the glorious gospel of the blessed God.[3]

In other words, any behavior not conforming to "the glorious gospel" of God belongs to the law, which, obviously from its subject matter, is a jurisdiction foreign to Jesus Christ.

Scripture teaches us that the glorious gospel commands (1) repenting of sinful lifestyles,[4] (2) loving neighbor as oneself,[5] (3) loving and blessing one's enemies,[6] (4) giving freely without thought of reward,[7] (5) forgiving debts and injuries,[8] and (6) preaching that whoever believes the evidence of Christ's life, death, and resurrection enters the royal family of God for all eternity.[9] Not every personality is drawn to the glorious gospel,[10] although Scripture tells us that everyone is asked (in some way) to know it.[11] For the protection of those drawn to the glorious gospel, and for the management of those foreign to it, there exists the "rule of law." Rule of law is the system by which authorities bearing Cain's "powers and insignia of kingship" rule the World. Very briefly, it compares with the glorious gospel in the following ways:

Glorious gospel	**Rule of law**
Repent of sinful lifestyle	Manage sinful lifestyle
Love neighbor as oneself	Achieve advantage over neighbor
Love and bless one's enemies	Conquer one's enemies by legal means
Give freely without thought of reward	Give requiring reward
Forgive debts and injuries	Enforce payment of debts and injuries with interest
Preach that whoever believes the evidence of Christ's life, death, and resurrection enters the royal family of God for all eternity	Preach the absentee, impersonal God of Cain, Deism, and other faiths

The following table shows how readily the Roman Catholic Church-State organism conforms to the rule of law:

Rule of law	Secular Government	Roman Catholicism
Manage sinful lifestyle	Legislation, police, criminal justice, philanthropy, media	Pontification, Inquisitioi the Holy Sacraments, media
Competition: Achieve advantage over neighbor	Self-interested political action, competition, partisanism, nationalism	Self-interested political action in the guise of eci menism (e.g., Trent)
Conquer one's enemies by legal means	War and emergency powers, Darwinian survivalism, patriotism	"End justifies the means" rationale of the Church Militant *(Regimini militantis ecclesiae)*
Give, requiring reward	Profit-based trade and commerce	Salvation earned by good works; the selling of indulgences
Enforce payment of debts and injuries with interest	Judiciary, police	Forgiveness of sins in exchange for payments and penances
Preach the absentee, impersonal God of Cain, Deism, and other faiths	Preaching "In God We Trust" while prohibiting Bibles in schools	Praying to saints for intercession with an absentee, impersonal Saviour

The rule of law is what Scripture calls a "ministration of condemnation."[12] The "strength" of the rule of law is sin.[13] This is observable in how law is at its most vibrant when ferreting out, prosecuting, and punishing crime. Officials of the rule of law are called "ministers of righteousness, whose end shall be according to their works."[14] (I take this to mean "Good works, good end; bad works, bad end.") As might be expected of a ministry appointed to Cain, who Scripture tells us was "of that wicked one,"[13] the ministration of condemnation – the rule of law – belongs to Satan. It is a shocking thing to realize that, according to Scripture, world law is Satan's province. But surprisingly, Scripture also teaches that a certain degree of cordiality exists between God and Satan.

We learn from the book of Job that Satan is welcome in God's heavenly throne room,[16] even though he has led a rebellion in Heaven for which one third of the angelic population were cast out.[17] His business consists of "going to and fro in the earth, walking up and down in it."[18] Since he is an angel, and therefore incapable of a bodily existence, Satan can only affect human affairs by (1) providing spiritual direction to human beings who consent to him as "the god of this world,"[19] and (2) manipulating the forces of nature as "prince of the power of the air."[20] To secure popular consent to his spiritual direction, he employs his supernatural abilities to make himself irresistibly attractive. He's an angel of light,[21] the author of the humanist extravaganza – pomp and circumstance, breathtaking visual experience, disorienting emotionalism, architecture that overwhelms. He means to convince us (1) that he wields the power of God Almighty on earth, and (2) that we are therefore bound to follow his moral guidance.[22] Jesus Christ agreed with the first proposition (and in so doing affirmed, in my opinion, the covenant between God and Cain), but admonished Satan that *only the written word of God* is fit to guide mankind and Trickster alike.[23] Quite apart from its infallible moral guidance, the written word of God appears to be *the only truthful disclosure of Satan's origin, scope, and purpose.* Its potential for damaging his appeal is why the highest rulers of law have traditionally prohibited, or at least not diligently encouraged, Bible reading.

THE earliest Christians well understood Rome's indispensable satanic role in human affairs. In the legal process which Christ established for members of his Church, the harshest sentence an offender could receive was abandonment to Caesarean authority:

> If your brother sins against you, go and show him his fault, just between the two of you. If he listens to you, you have won your brother over. But if he will not listen, take one or two others along, so that 'every matter may be established by the testimony of two or three witnesses.' If he refuses to listen to them, tell it to the church; and if he refuses to listen even to the church, treat him as you would a pagan or a tax collector.[24]

Writing about "Hymenaeus and Alexander, whom I have *handed over to Satan* to be taught not to blaspheme,"[25] the apostle Paul was not talking about committing unruly churchmen to some satanic cult. Nor did he mean by the following counsel that the church at Corinth should engage in demonic incantations:

> When you are assembled in the name of our Lord Jesus and I am with you in spirit, and the power of our Lord Jesus is present, *hand this man over to Satan,* so that the sinful nature may be destroyed and his spirit saved on the day of the Lord.[26]

In both cases, Paul was heeding Christ's commandment concerning brethren who rejected both the glorious gospel and the rule of law: turn them over to the Caesarean criminal justice system *for their own good and for the good of the church.* Thus, the earliest Christians were keenly aware that Rome's purpose, as the spiritual heir of Cain and the incarnation of the satanic spirit, was (1) to teach the people of God not to blaspheme, (2) to destroy the sinful nature, thereby (3) to save man's spirit from eternal damnation on judgment day. This violent good-working spirit is characterized at Psalm 2:9 and again at Revelation 2:27 as a "rod of iron" with which Christ rules nations and dashes them to pieces. The Judaean political leaders, anticipating a Messiah who would overthrow Caesar, didn't understand that *Rome* was Christ's rod of iron. Because He would not dash Rome to pieces, they declared Him an impostor, demanded His crucifixion, and gloated when He failed to come off the cross. They could not fathom His consenting to suffer under the violent justice of His own rod. Nor could they foresee that He would use this same rod on September 8, 70 in the person of the Roman general Vespasianus Titus, who captured their rebellious city, Jerusalem, and dashed it to pieces.

Paul, whom his non-believing Israelite brethren continually mugged, persecuted, jailed, tortured, and hounded throughout his Mediterranean and Aegean ministry, understood the rod of iron. It was in his letter to the Romans that we find perhaps the most eloquent statement on the New World Order ever written (I cite from the New International Version):

> Everyone must submit himself to the governing authorities, for there is no authority except that which God has established. The authorities that exist ["powers that be" in the King James Version] have been established by God.
>
> Consequently, he who rebels against the authority is rebelling against what God has instituted, and those who do so will bring judgment on themselves.
>
> For rulers hold no terror for those who do right, but for those who do wrong. Do you want to be free from fear of the one in authority? Then do what is right and he will commend you.
>
> For he is God's servant to do you good. But if you do wrong, be afraid, for he does not bear the sword for nothing. He is God's servant, an agent of wrath to bring punishment on the wrongdoer.
>
> Therefore, it is necessary to submit to the authorities, not only because of possible punishment but also because of conscience.
>
> This is also why you pay taxes, for the authorities are God's servants, who give their full time to governing.
>
> Give everyone what you owe him: If you owe taxes, pay taxes; if revenue, then revenue; if respect, then respect; if honor, then honor.
>
> Let no debt remain outstanding, except the continuing debt to love one another, for he who loves his fellowman has fulfilled the law.[27]

Since the epoch of Emperor Constantine, the Roman papacy has fostered the concept that the ruler who terrorizes wrongdoers is necessarily a Christian. Pope Sylvester, the Bishop of Rome who supposedly converted Constantine to Christianity, saw nothing strange in a warrior coming to faith in a crucified Christ by slaughtering his enemies."[28] This thinking pervaded Sylvester's successors, as well as the Crusades, the Holy Roman Empire, European nationalism, the American Revolution, the War of Southern Secession, and the wars of the twentieth century. Indeed, perhaps the black papacy's most admirable psychological conquest is that Protestants generally agree that armed rulership is an authority instituted by God for Christians to exercise. Since there is no scriptural authority for a member of the Body of Christ to bear any kind of armament whatsoever other than the figurative weaponry of God's Word, agreeing to such a principle signifies *prima facie* adherence to the moral guidance of him who bears the power of Almighty God on earth, the person who legitimately bears the mark of Cain in a long succession begun with Peter. Yes, the popes can truthfully declare that "Peter" is their foundation by holding in mental reservation that the Hebrew פטר, pronounced "payter," means... *firstling,*[29] which of course is Cain's primary attribute as firstborn of Eve.

Supporters of the argument favoring lethal-force Christian rulership usually stand on a single scriptural passage. It's that verse in Luke 22 wherein, as the betrayal nears, Christ admonishes his disciples, "If you don't have a sword, sell your cloak and buy one."[30] I have often heard Christian militiamen (some of whom I am not ashamed to call my friends) use this to justify arming themselves against the minions of unjust rulers. But Jesus explained otherwise in the very next verse: "It is written: 'And he was numbered with the transgressors' [see Isaiah 53:12]; and I tell you that this must be fulfilled in me." In order to fulfill prophecy, Christ had to be numbered among lawbreakers, which bearing swords would certainly make of the disciples of any true Prince of Peace. As soon as the disciples produced two swords – the minimum number constituting the plural "transgressors" – prophecy was fulfilled. Christ then told them "It is enough." From then on, no more cloaks were sold, no more swords bought.

ROMAN Christianity's success at avenging evil has resulted in a world that severely mistrusts the Christian gospel. It's to Rome's advantage that the Christian gospel be mistrusted, for any soul that mistrusts Christ is Rome's lawful prey. It's to Rome's advantage that governing bodies be rebelled against as tyrannical, for rebellion against tyrants is disobedience to the glorious gospel. Much as I despaired over the vicious taking of innocent life in the Waco massacre, I had no choice but to see it as a rather standard Church-Militant inquisitorial procedure against perceived rebelliousness. ATF Special Agent Davy Aguilera's affidavit,[31] which resulted in the warrant under which governing bodies invaded the Davidian compound, *dutifully listed the scriptural errors of David Koresh.* According to the affidavit, Vernon Howell adopted the name David Koresh because he "believed that the name helped designate him as the messiah or the anointed one of God" (p2). Yet one group member stated that Koresh's teaching "did not always coincide with the Bible" (p11). This allegation is supported by Aguilera's finding that the "anointed one of God" and his followers had spent at least $44,000 on guns and explosives during 1992 alone, including hand grenades and rifle grenades, gunpowder and potassium nitrate (p6). Where in Scripture are the anointed ones of Christ told to stock up on destructive weaponry? According to Aguilera's inquisition, "David Koresh stated that the Bible gave him the right to bear arms" (p15). Where in the glorious gospel is an anointed one of God given the right to bear arms? Koresh prophesied the immanent end of the world, "that it would be a 'military type operation' and that all the 'non-believers' would have to suffer" (p9). Where in Scripture are Christians commanded to make war against non-believers?

From the Inquisition's standpoint, the Davidians paid lip-service to Jesus Christ but demonstrated a substantive infidelity to Him by infringing upon the ancient Cain franchise – the mark – which flows through the United States government from the black papacy. Against Christ's commandment, even while professing scriptural knowledge, the Davidians chose to brandish deadly weapons – weapons that Cain could envision pointed at himself someday. How could any mark-bearing ruler resist mobilizing sevenfold vengeance in self-defense? How could Cain resist holding these professed Christians responsible under Christ's warning at Revelation 13:10: "He that killeth by the sword must be killed by the sword"? Is it any wonder that government regards memories of Waco as little more than annoyances to be stonewalled?

YET one can live intelligently, freely, and safely in a World legitimately governed by the Trickster. The secret is revealed in the resource which the Trickster has labored so tirelessly to marginalize: the Holy Bible. I cite again that remarkable verse in Habakkuk (2:4), in which God tells us that although governing bodies have the wrong desires, we can live safely in *their faith* that God will not punish them for annihilating their mortal enemies.

Scripture reduces all human interaction to two great ministries: the ministry of Condemnation"[32] and the ministry of Reconciliation.[33] Condemnation is the rulership of evil by law; it judges and does justice. Since its subject is the criminal mind ("the strength of the law is sin"), Condemnation requires the brilliance of the firstling, Cain, along with the deviousness of Jesuitry and Sun-Tzu. Condemnation enforces its authority with deadly force – it "does not bear the sword for nothing."

The ministry of Reconciliation teaches and administers the glorious gospel of Christ. Reconciliation does not judge executably or do justice. Rather, it judges spiritually, it loves, nurtures, suffers patiently, forgives, and rejoices in the truth. Reconciliation never fails because its strength is not sin but the power of God.

The ministry of Condemnation operates "out from the presence of the Lord." Its only proof of divine association is an inert substance, a seal, a pallium, a miter, a collar, a badge, the mark of Cain, the insignia of its authority to terrorize evildoers. The ministry of Reconciliation is directly animated by the Lord operating within. It proves divine association by everything it does: its mere *existence* is its seal.

There are exceptions, of course: Condemnors who Reconcile and Reconcilers who Condemn. Many loving Roman Catholic priests dedicate their lives to a form of reconciliation, Confession and Absolution. But aren't these sacraments really a process of Condemnation in which the confessant pleads guilty and is sentenced on the spot by the priestly judge to certain penitential acts which pardon the guilt? Reconciliation according to Scripture forgives the sin *free of charge* and directs the confessant's energies not to punishments but toward a repentant, constructive *life* within the mind of Christ. I suspect there are lots of Catholic priests who do true Reconciliation, even though it's technically heretical. My elderly British Jesuit friend stationed at the Gesu was a Reconciler of sorts: he took confession every weekday afternoon by the clock in Italian, a language he didn't understand.

My father was a good lawyer who denied himself many a handsome legal fee by trying to reconcile marriages out of divorce court. He was a minister of Condemnation by trade, yet the word of God written on his heart made a Reconciler out of him almost in spite of himself. This, I believe, is what Scripture calls "every knee bow[ing] at the name of Jesus Christ, in heaven and on earth, and under the earth."[34] It's proof of the great power of Reconciliation that the World highly esteems Condemnors who Reconcile, Condemnors for whom the name of Jesus Christ may not be important or even credible. (My private opinion is that many who find Christ uninteresting have been sold an inferior gospel by hypocritical preaching. I tend to agree with G.K. Chesterton's remark, "It's not that Christianity has been tried and found wanting, but that it's hardly been tried at all.")

Despite crossovers, Condemnation and Reconciliation work together as opposites, like male and female, sea and land, night and day, yin and yang. Condemnation punishes us for alienating God; Reconciliation lovingly brings us together with God. Condemnation cannot bring us to God, but it can drive us to Him. Reconciliation cannot punish us for alienating God, but it can release us to Condemnation, which walks to and fro in search of corrupt Reconcilers to persecute along with the usual suspects. Release is a conciliatory operation. The spiritual judgments of Reconciliation are executed in release, while the natural judgments of Condemnation are executed by the opposite of release: restriction – restriction of body, comfort, freedom, property, options, life.

Restriction is the flexure of Condemnation's muscle, and this is good for Reconciliation. It provides God a captive audience. I saw it in a dozen jail cells in Tennessee, Oklahoma, Georgia, Mississippi, and California. Condemnation can so restrict that its subject cries out for Reconciliation. In jail, God is not a philosophical proposition to be deliberated at leisure. He's a vivid benefit grasped as though He were a key to the jailhouse lock. I have seen it so often, under so many circumstances, that I have to regard it as a principle: The More Restriction, the Closer to God.[35] So even though the ministry of Condemnation is directed by Satan to do justice among evildoers (and what could be more just than for Satan to rule evil?), the ultimate beneficiary is He who ordained the whole system in the first place.

For, just as Paul says, Satan is an angel of light and his ministers are ministers of righteousness whose end shall be according to their works. Scripture is a catalog of satanic ministers who were absolutely necessary for Christ to perform His finished work: the Serpent, Cain and Enoch, Ham, Nimrod, Esau, Pharaoh, the Amalekites, Nebuchadnezzar, Belshazzar, Cyrus, Ahasueras, Haman, Judas, and many, many others. Some were deplorably wicked, other surprisingly moral – it was Judas' sense of guilt that drove him to suicide. The Jesuit priest who inaugurated my prosecution on the Feast Day of St. Ignatius was a satanic minister, and he was absolutely necessary for my maturity as a Christian. He sent me on a fifteen-year journey that has brought me to this page.

ONCE I understood the two ministries, hard questions answered themselves. What can a responsible citizen do to restore moral, fair, constitutional government? First, realize that no judgment that government is immoral, unfair, or unconstitutional can be executed unless by an authorized person. Only Condemnation has authority to alter government's patterns of conduct. To change government by conventional means, I must become a Condemnor. (Can anyone name a true Reconciler who is great in the World?) To gain influence among Condemnors, I must master the arts of Sun-Tzu and the Trickster. Little good this will do, for as my investigation has tended to show, always the preponderance of Condemnation's resources go into keeping the system evil. If I build forces capable of meaningfully altering the system, the masters will terminate me because they are authorized by God to avenge sevenfold those who would slay Cain. In short, the potential for improvement *within* the system of Condemnation appears to be limited to cyclical periods of pretty good times, pretty bad times. Isn't this obvious from history and the news?

Of course, God could change government by a simple miracle, and Revelation says He will, on the "last day," the fearful day of cosmic shakedown when unrepentant evildoers will burn with their beast and only the perfect will remain. Scripture is silent as to when that day will come. In the meantime, Reconcilers are told that improving human rulership is *their* responsibility. Not by taking control of the system, and not by sealing themselves off in well-fortified communes, either. Reconcilers improve the system by making themselves... *available.* Reconcilers are attractive to Condemnation because they don't judge or attempt to do justice. They don't put down, attach blame, or pin guilt. Consequently, Reconcilers are not perceived as a threat. They are wise as serpents and harmless as doves.[36]

This is not to say that Reconcilers condone evil. Their posture toward sin is this: People know right from wrong. People don't need to be told they're sinful. People know. God's law written on their hearts continually reminds them. What the World needs is the *friendship* of someone who is God-minded (if not well-versed in the Word of God), someone confident in the *Love* of God who can patiently and non-judgmentally hold the most evil of souls in friendship while helping it work through repentance to healthier values at its own pace.

Many years in Condemnation have driven me into the ministry of Reconciliation, and the heart of Reconciliation is love. I now appreciate the simple wisdom in Felix Mendelssohn's question, "Why should any man offend the people in power?" Offending people in power – offending anyone – is no longer attractive to me. I do good, or at least try to with our Lord's help. The most reliable instruction I've yet found for this purpose is the Bible with its glorious gospel, and the Bible tells me that if I do good (not good as I see it, but good as the gospel defines it: *Love God with all your heart, soul, and mind; love your neighbor as yourself),* the rulers of evil will commend me.

And so I freely subject myself to Condemnation for examination of my conscience. Who knows? I might just interest the examiner in the joys of Reconciliation. Taxes? I continue to pay every tax for which I am liable, and none for which I'm not.

Finally, I anticipate that some may disagree with certain of the conclusions in this and other chapters. I welcome disagreement. Disagreement is the mother of this book. Nobody is paying me to market any particular doctrine. I'm not the kind of person who has to be right. I let the evidence lead me. The evidence shaped my conclusions. The evidence wrote this book. To anyone who knows of countervailing evidence, evidence that might point me in a different direction, this is my request to see it. I'm not above repenting again, nor would I shrink from printing retractions. I want Reconciliation, and I want Truth.

If St. Francis Xavier can say "I would not even believe in the *Gospels* were the Holy Church to forbid it," with no less commitment I can say that I would not believe even the *Bible* were Truth to forbid it.

Appendix A

FIFTY CENTURIES OF THE ANNU SIGNATURE

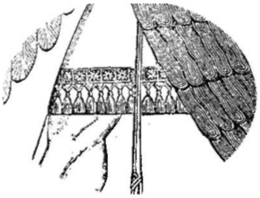

Above. The hem of Marduk's garment (see page 267) consists of the Annu signature, authorizing Marduk to rule evildoers.

Right. Ancient Babylonian cylinder in the British Museum depicts the Queen of Heaven, Ishtar, empowered by four Annu signatures.

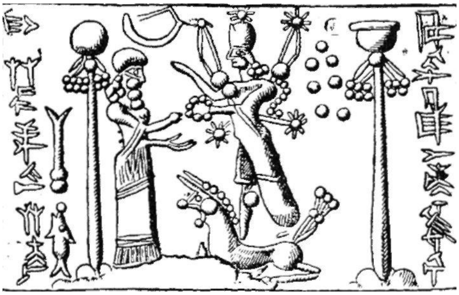

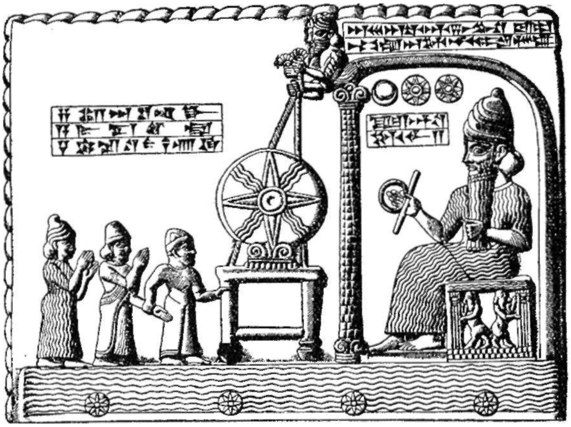

Left. Stone tablet in the British Museum depicts Nabonidas, the scholarly Babylonian *Pontifex Maximus,* supervising the placement of the ancient Annu signature during the restoration of Annu's temple at Sippara eight or nine centuries before Christ.

Left. St. Peter's Piazza at Rome, where throngs gather to give audience to the popes, is inlaid with the Annu signature

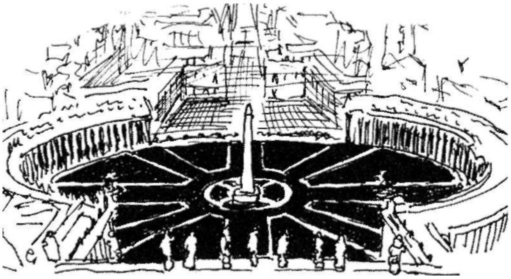

Below. Front and back-side of an ancient Assyrio-Babylonian bronze tablet "representing the world in the clutches of an evil demon" (1959 *Britannica* Vol. 7, p 190). The "demon" is just a dog, who shepherds unruliness for Annu, as does Satan for Yahweh "by going to and fro in the earth, and walking up and down in it." Note the Annu signature just below and to the left of the dog's gaping mouth. Canines are a favorite metaphor for Cain. There's no brighter star in the heavens than the "dog star," named Canis Major after Cain. The Egyptians called Canis the "second sun" because it ruled the mysterious world of night, a ruler of what Paul calls "the darkness of this world" (Ephesians 6:12). Homer called Canis "the evil star" because its rising brought on the hot summer season and its attendant pestilence. Human sacrifices were offered to appease the dog star, believed by many scholars to be the "Lucifer" of Isaiah 14:12.

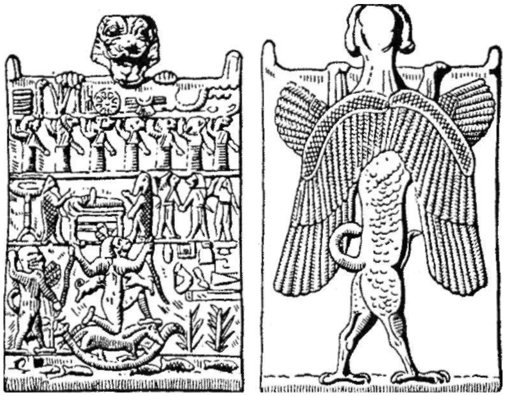

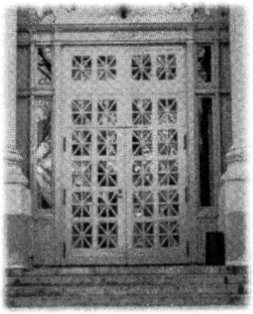

Right. The Annu signature declares the entrance to Harvard Law School.

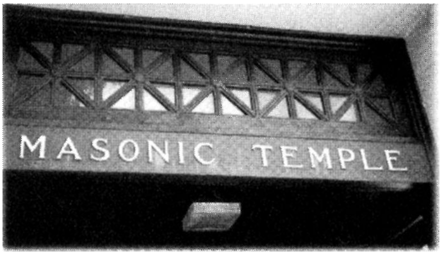

Left. As the Commander Albert Pike attested, the Annu signature and other emblems representing Cain's authority to rule have been protected by Freemasonry since their creation by Enoch. Every Masonic temple proclaims its devotion to Annu.

Below. The U.S. Supreme Court Building reveals the Annu signature in its exterior stone and bronze work, as well as its interior throughout. American justice avenges its offenders at least sevenfold not because it is corrupt but because it has inherited Cain's divine empowerment to do so.

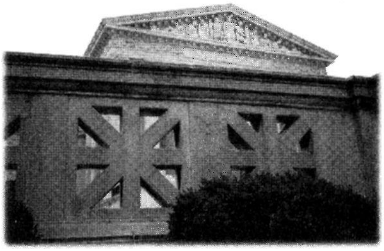

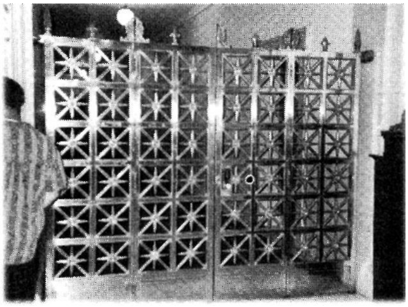

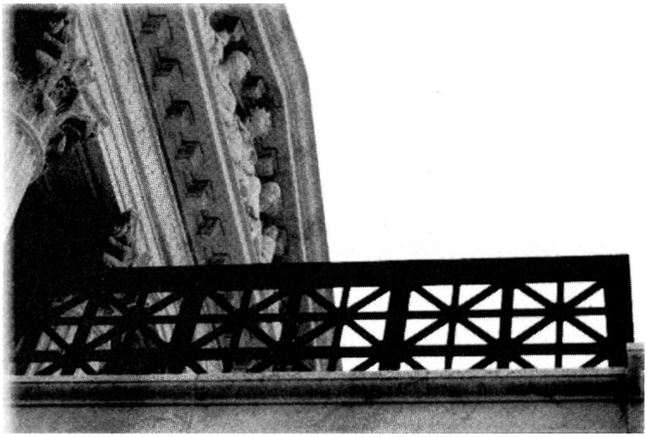

1. Ignatius Loyola, 1 April 1541 – 31 July 1556 (65 yrs at death)
2. Diego Laynez, 2 July 1558 – 10 Jan 1565 (53)
3. Francis Borgia, 2 July 1565 – 1 October 1572 (62)
4. Everard Mercurian, 23 April 1573 – 1 August 1580 (?)
5. Claudius Aquaviva, 19 Feb 1581 – 31 Jan 1615 (72)
6. Mutius Vitelleschi, 15 Nov 1615 – 9 Feb 1645 (82)
7. Vincent Caraffa, 7 Jan 1646 – 8 June 1649 (65)
8. Francis Piccolimini, 21 Dec 1649 – 17 June 1651 (69)
9. Alexander Gottifred, 21 January 1652 – 13 March 1652 (58)
10. Goswin Nickel, 17 March 1652 – 31 July 1664 (82)
11. John Paul Oliva, who had been elected *Vicarius Generalis perpetuus cum jure succedendi 7 Junii 1661* was immediately invested with the government of the Society at Nickel's death. He died 96 November 1681 (81)
12. Charles de Noyelle, 5 July 1682 – 12 Dec 1686
13. Thyrsus Gonzales, 6 July 1687 – 19 Nov 1705 (78)
14. Michaelangelo Tamburini, 31 Jan 1706 – 28 February 1730
15. Francis Retz, 30 Nov 1730 – 19 Nov 1750 (78)
16. Ignatius Viconti, 4 July 1751 – 4 May 1755
17. Luigi Aloysius Centurioni, 30 November 1755 – 2 October 1757
18. Lorenzo Ricci, 21 May, 1758 – 24 Nov 1775 (72)

The brief of Clement XIV for suppressing the Society, dated 21 July 1773 was put in execution 16 August.

Superior Generals of the Society of Jesus

according to *The Historical Catechism, chiefly relating to the English Province of the Society,* Ed. by George Oliver, St Nicholas Priory, Exeter, 1838; amplified by current research)

IN RUSSIA

19. Stanislaus Czerniewicz, permitted by Catherine the Great to feign for life as “Superior General for Russia” 17 Oct 1782 – 21 Oct, 1785 (57)
20. Gabriel Lenkiewisz, 8 October, 1785 – 21 October 1798 (77)
21. Francis Karew, 12 Feb 1799 – 4 Aug 1802 (71)
22. Gabriel Gruber, 22 Oct 1802 – 6 April 1805 (67)
23. Thaddeus Brzozowski, elected in 1805, would serve as head of the whole Society when it was restored 7 August 1814 by the Bull of Pope Pius VII *Solicitudo omnium Ecclesiarum,* but would never remove to Rome because the Russian Government refused him permission to leave, died 5 Feb 1820

24. Aloysius Fortis, 18 Oct 1820 – 29 Jan 1829 (81)
25. John Roothaan 1829 – 1853
26. Pieter Jean Beckx, 1853 – 1887
27. Ludovico Martin, 1892 – 1901
28. Franz XavierWernz, 1907 – 1914
29. Vladimir Ledochowski, 1915 – 1942
30. Jean-Baptiste Janssens, 1946 – 1964
31. Pedro Arrupe, 1965 – 1981 (removed by Pope John Paul II)
32. Paolo Dezza, Giuseppe Pittau, 1981 – 1983 (appointed by John Paul II)
33. Peter Hans Kolvenbach, 1983 –

Appendix C

GLOSSARY

absolution: a remission of sins pronounced by a priest

acronym: a word formed from the initial letter or letters of each of the successive parts or major parts of a compound term

anathema: a ban or curse solemnly pronounced by ecclesiastical authority and accompanied by excommunication

Assyria: an ancient west Asian empire extending along the middle Tigris River and over foothills to the east, identified with Babylonia

autocracy: government in which one person possesses unlimited power

Babylon: the ancient civilization spawned on foundations built by the historical Cain and his son Enoch; a metaphor for Rome

black pope: informal name for the Superior General of the Society of Jesus

bull: a solemn papal letter sealed with a bulla or with a red-ink imprint of the device on the bulla

cabalah: (cabala, qabbala, etc): a system of signs, letters, numbers, and images believed to put one in private communication with God and like-minded persons; a gnostic system marked by mysticism, magic, and a belief in creation through emanation; esoteric doctrine or mysterious art

Caesar: a powerful, autocratic ruler, dictator, head of religious and civil governments but limited in Matthew 22:21 to the civil power. First to hold the title was Gaius Julius Maria (100-44 BC)

Calvinism: the theological system of John Calvin (c. 1570) and his followers marked by strong emphasis on the sovereignty of God, the depravity of mankind, and the doctrine of redestination

casuistry: a resolving of specific cases of conscience, duty, or conduct through generally false interpretation of ethical principles or religious doctrine; specious argument, rationalization

Christendom: the part of the world in which Christianity prevails

Christian: one who professes belief in the teachings of Jesus Christ

Christianity: the religion derived from Jesus Christ, based on the Bible as sacred scripture, and professed by Eastern, Roman Catholic, Protestant, and nondenominational bodies

condemnation: authoritatively judging a matter and rendering an enforceable opinion

Deism: a movement or system of thought advocating natural religion independent of scriptural revelation, emphasizing morality, and denying the personal involvement of the Creator in human affairs or with the laws of the universe

Diet: (from Middle English *diete,* day's journey, day set for a meeting, from Medieval Latin *dieta,* daily regimen): a formal deliberative assembly of princes or estates; any of various national or provincial legislatures

ecumenical: of, relating to, or representing the whole of a body of churches; promoting or tending toward worldwide Christian unity or cooperation

empire: from Latin *imperium,* absolute authority; a major political unit having a territory of great extent or a number of territories or peoples under a single sovereign authority

encyclical: a papal letter to the bishops

Encyclopedists: the writers of the French *Encyclopedia of Sciences, Arts and Trades* (1743–51) who were identified with the Enlightenment and advocated deism and scientific rationalism

Enlightenment: a philosophic movement of the 18th century marked by a rejection of traditional social, religious, and political ideas and an emphasis on rationalism

equivocation: to use tricky language especially with intent to deceive; to avoid committing oneself in what one says; lying

extirpate: to destroy completely, to wipe out, to pull up by the roots, to cut out by surgery, to exterminate

fascism: a political philosophy, movement, or regime that exalts nation above the individual and that stands for a centralized autocratic government headed by a dictatorial leader, severe economic and social regimentation, and forcible suppression of opposition

Gesu, the: the international headquarters of the Society of Jesus, at

No. 5 Borgo Sancto Spiritu,
Rome

gnosticism: the thought and practice especially of various cults of late pre-Christian and early Christian centuries distinguished by the conviction that matter is evil and that emancipation comes through *gnosis* ("knowing")

gospel: sacred writing, the message or teachings of a religious teacher, something accepted as infallible truth or as a guiding principle; the message concerning Christ, the kingdom of God, and salvation

hierarchy: a ruling body of clergy organized into orders or ranks each subordinate to the one above it: a body of persons in authority; the classification of a group of people according to ability or to economic, social, or professional standing

Holy Roman Empire: the commonwealth of Europe ruled by papacy and Holy Roman Emperor as coordinate sovereigns. At various times, the Emperor claimed authority over the German states and Hungary, Poland, France, Spain, the Scandinavian peninsula, and the British Isles. However, the "effective empire" embraced only Germany, Burgundy, and the old Lombard kingdom in Italy's Po Valley

Ignatian: noun: a person under special oath to perform services, usually clandestine, for the Superior General of the Society of Jesus

Illuminati: any of various groups claiming special religious enlightenment; persons who are or who claim to be unusually enlightened

illuminism: belief in or claim to a personal enlightenment not accessible to mankind in general

Inquisition: an investigation conducted with little regard for individual rights; a severe questioning; a Roman Catholic tribunal for the discovery and punishment of heresy, presently functioning under the title Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith

Israel: a complex identifier, being (1) the name given by Yahweh to Jacob, signifying Jacob's acquiring his twin brother Esau's birthright to lead God's chosen people; (2) the ancient Hebrew nation which, after the death of Solomon, divided into two kingdoms, Israel to the north, Judah to the south; (3) the biological nation of which the man Jesus Christ was a descendant through his mother; (4) a modern state occupying the rough geographical perimeters of Caesarean Judaea and Samaria, having an official policy of denying the New Testament Gospel; (5) the amorphous body of those who, through studious belief in and love for Jesus Christ, have been grafted by divine surgery to the ancient Hebrew nation

Judaea: Greek term for Judah, the southern Hebrew kingdom whose inhabitants were called Jews

learning against learning: concept advanced by Cardinal Thomas Wolsey that pitted humanist doctrine against scriptural Christian teaching

liberation theology: a religious movement especially among Roman Catholic clergy in Latin America that combines political philosophy usually of a Marxist orientation with a theology of salvation as liberation from injustice

Majesterium: the teaching authority of the Roman Catholic Church

mental reservation or reserve: intentional withholding of truth when it is regarded as inconvenient to disclose it (as from people who are regarded as unable to understand it or receive it with benefit)

missionary adaptation: process by which populations are brought under subjection to the Roman papacy by harmonious cultural integration

notariqon: cabalistic technique in which the initials of an acronym create a word that enhances the acronym's meaning

pagan: a follower of a polytheistic religion (as in ancient Rome); one who delights in sensual pleasures and material goods

pallium: a white woolen band with pendants in front and back worn over the chasuble by a pope or archbishop as a symbol of full episcopal authority

papacy: the office of pope; a succession or line of popes; the term of a pope's reign; the system of government of the Roman Catholic Church of which the pope is the supreme head

Papal States: lands ruled directly by the popes in central Italy between 755-1870

penance: an act of self-abasement, mortification, or devotion performed to show sorrow or repentance for sin

philosophes: the deistic or materialistic writers and thinkers of the 18th century French Enlightenment

Pontifex Maximus: ancient title first applied to head of Babylonian civil and religious government, meaning "supreme (or sovereign) bridgebuilder;" first assumed by Roman autocrats at the deification of Gaius Maria as Julius Caesar in 48 BC; title owned by the Roman popes

Protestant: one who makes or enters a protest; any of a group of German princes and cities presenting a defense of freedom of conscience against an edict in 1529 intended to suppress the Lutheran movement; a member of any of several church denominations denying the universal authority of the Pope and affirming the

Reformation principles of justification by faith alone, the priesthood of all believers, and the primacy of the Bible as the only source of revealed truth; a Christian not of a Catholic or Eastern church

Psychopomp: from Greek *psychopompas,* “soul director;” a name often applied to Mercury, Roman god of commerce, communication, and thievery

ratio studiorum: Latin “method of study;” the educational process by which the Jesuit schools and colleges obscure the moral supremacy of the Holy Bible and secure tacit obedience to the will of the black papacy

reconciliation: restoration of harmony and friendship; in Roman Catholicism: penance, the result of the sacrament of absolution

salvation: deliverance from the power and effects of sin; the agent or means that effects salvation

sacrament: a Christian rite (in Roman Catholicism: baptism, Holy Eucharist or Mass, penance, matrimony, anointing of the sick, confirmation by the Church, and holy orders) that is believed to have been ordained by Christ and that the Magisterium holds to be a means of divine grace

sodality: from Latin *sodalitas,* “comradeship”: an association of Roman Catholic laity

Sibylline prophecies: utterances of any of several prophetesses usually accepted as ten in number and credited to widely separate parts of the ancient world (as Babylonia, Egypt, Greece, and Italy)

Spiritual Exercises: Loyola’s 30-day intensive program of psychological indoctrination designed to align individual thought with papal authority

Vulgate: a Latin version of the Bible authorized and used by the Roman Catholic Church

Appendix D

NOTES

PP 1-16

Chapter 1: Subliminal Rome

1. "Holy Alliance: How Reagan and the Pope conspired to assist Poland's Solidarity movement and hasten the demise of Communism." Time, February 24, 1992.
2. An updating of this list will not reflect a significant change in the presence of Roman Catholic lay-persons in the higher legislative reaches. According to the Association of Jesuit Colleges and Universities, in the 106th Congress there are 40 Jesuit alumni who graduated from 17 Jesuit institutions. There are 5 alumni in the US. Senate and 35 alumni in the House of Representatives. Out of these 40 alumni, 23 received graduate or professional degrees from Jesuit Universities. Georgetown University has the most graduates, boasting 15 alumni in the U.S. Congress. President William J. Clinton is a graduate of Georgetown University and Secretary of Commerce, William M. Daley, is a graduate of Loyola University of Chicago.
3. Scharf, *History of Western Maryland,* Baltimore (1882), pp 27-30
4. *We, the People: The Story of the United States Capitol: Its Past and Its Promise,* U.S. Capitol Historical Society, p 56.

Chapter 2: Missionary Adaptation

1. 1989 Catholic Almanac, p 175.
2. U.S. Court of Appeals for the Third Circuit, Case No. 85–1309.
3. Just as the Roman priests traditionally took as their own the name of the god or goddess they served, judges on the United States Supreme Court ceremonially adopt the appelation of the goddess Justitia, as in "Mr. Justice Antonin Scalia."
4. Alexander del Mar, Middle Ages Revisited, California 90250: Hawthorne, Omni Book Club (orig. pub. 1899), pp 101–102.
5. *Ibid.,* p 86
6. *Ibid.,* pp 144–146
7. Chadwick, *The Early Church,* Eerdmans (1967), p 243
8. The New Catholic Encyclopedia, "Missionary Adaptation."

Chapter 3: Marginalizing the Bible

1. J. Edwin Hendricks, *Charles Thomson and the Making of A New Nation 1729-1824,* Fairleigh Dickinson University Press (1979), pp 136-137

2. Council of Toulouse, 1229.
3. Peter de Rosa, SJ, *Vicars of Christ: The Dark Side of the Papacy,* New York: Crown Publishers (1988), p 162 ff.
4. *Pontifex Maximus* has laundered the Inquisition's name twice. In 1908, Pope Pius X renamed it "the Holy Office," which Paul VI transformed into "Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith" in 1965,

Chapter 4: Medici Learning

1. Peter de Rosa, *Vicars of Christ,* p 116—118
2. *Ibid.*
3. De Rosa, *Vicars of Christ,* p 120
4. "Since printing cannot be put down, it is best to set up *learning against learning,* and by introducing all persons to dispute, to suspend the laity between fear and controversy. This at most will make them attentive to their superiors and teachers." Quoted in Lord Herbert's *Life of Henry VIII.*

Chapter 5: Appointment At Cyprus

1. In constructing this brief biography of Loyola, I draw from the following sources: Barthel's *Jesuits,* Martin's *Jesuits,* Aveling's *Jesuits,* Meissner's *Ignatius*, Caraman's *Ignatius*, Letson & Wiggins' *The Jesuit Mystique,* Paris' *Secret History of the Jesuits,* Catholic Encyclopedia, New Catholic Encyclopedia, and Encyclopedia Britannica. In certain needful instances, an individual source will be endnoted.
2. W.W. Meissner, SJ, MD, *Ignatius of Loyola: The Psychology of A Saint,* New Haven, London: Yale University Press (1992), P55.
3. Louis J. Puhl, *The Spiritual Exercises of St. Ignatius,* Westminster, MD: The Newman Press (1959)
4. *Ibid.*
5. Manfred Barthel, transl. by Mark Howson, *The Jesuits: History and Legend of the Society of Jesus,* New York: Quill, William Morrow (1982-84), p 29.
6. Michelet, *Life of Luther,* p 70, 71
7. Philip Caraman, SJ, *Ignatius Loyola: A Biography of the Founder of the Jesuits,* San Francisco: Harper & Row (1990), p 48

Chapter 6: The Epitome of Christian Values

1. While the unanimously-acclaimed Celestine II was being installed, "the Frangipani family, with the connivance of Chancellor Aimeric, broke into the assembly and at sword-point had Cardinal Lamberto acclaimed Honorius II." *The Oxford Dictionary of Popes,* p 165 ff.
2. Encyclopedia Britannica, "China."
3. Piquet, *Des Banqiers au Moyen Age: les Templiers,* Paris, (1931), as cited in *Holy Blood, Holy Grail,* p 451
4. Daraul, *History of Secret Societies,* pp 46ff.
5. J. M. Ragon, *Cours Philosophique et Interpretatif des Initiations anciennes et modernes,* edition sacree a l'usage des Loges et des Macons SEULEMENT (Masonic year 5,842) p 37.

6. J. B. Fabre Palaprat, *Recherches historiques sur les Templiers,* (1835) p 31
7. Michelet, *Procès des Templiers,* II, 404. This work largely consists of the publication in Latin of the Papal bulls and trials of the Templars before the Papal Commission in Paris.
8. Jules Loiseleur, *La doctrine secrète des Templiers,* p 141
9. Leviticus 16:6–10
10. I Kings 11:4
11. The Zohar, Section Ahre Moth, folio 70a.
12. I Kings 3:12.
13. *Ibid,* 11:4.

Chapter 7: The Fingerstroke of God

1. The Statute of Uses (27 Henry VIII, c. 10) Parliament concurred in Henry's assumption of Rome's clerical power with its Act of Supremacy, which stated: "Albeit the king's Majesty justly and rightfully is and ought to be the supreme head of the Church of England, and so is recognized by the clergy of this realm in their convocations, yet nevertheless, for corroboration and confirmation thereof, and for increase of virtue in Christ's religion within this realm of England, and to repress and extirpate all errors, heresies, and other enormities and abuses heretofore used in the same, be it enacted, by authority of this present Parliament, that the king, our sovereign lord, his heirs and successors, kings of this realm, shall be taken, accepted, and reputed the only supreme head in earth of the Church of England, called Anglicans Ecclesia; and shall have and enjoy, annexed and united to the imperial crown of this realm, as well the title and style thereof, as all honors, dignities, pre-eminences, jurisdictions, privileges, authorities, immunities, profits, and commodities to the said dignity of the supreme head of the same Church belonging and appertaining; and that our said sovereign lord, his heirs and successors, kings of this realm, shall have full power and authority from time to time to visit, repress, redress, record, order, correct, restrain, and amend all such errors, heresies, abuses, offenses contempts and enormities, whatsoever they be, which by any manner of spiritual authority or jurisdiction ought or may lawfully be reformed, repressed, ordered, redressed, corrected, restrained, or amended, most to the pleasure of Almighty God, the increase of virtue in Christ's religion, and for the conservation of the peace, unity, and tranquillity of this realm; any usage, foreign land, foreign authority, prescription, or any other thing or things to the contrary hereof notwithstanding." [From: Milton Viorst, ed., *The Great Documents of Western Civilization* (New York; Barnes and Noble, 1965) pp. 97-98]
2. Peter de Rosa, *Vicars of Christ,* page 28
3. Part IX, Sections 764 and 765

4. J. Huber, *Les Jesuites,* Paris: Sandoz et Fischbacher (1875), pp 71ff

Chapter 8: Moving In

1. Fourth session, April 8, 1546, *The Canons and Decrees of the Council of Trent,* translated by H.J Shroeder, Rockford IL: TAN Books (1978)

2. Barthel, *The Jesuits,* p 101
3. II Timothy 3:16.
4. Encyclopedia Brittanica, Livy ii, 21, 7; 27,5.
5. Barthel, *The Jesuits,* p 49

Chapter 9: Securing Confidence

1. La Chaize probably directed the King through the Fifth Exercise, the famous "meditation on hell," which became the centerpiece of Protestant "hellfire and brimstone" preaching. The Fifth Exercise, in its entirety, is as follows: "First point. This will be to see in imagination the vast fires, and the souls enclosed, as it were, in bodies of fire. Second point. To hear the wailing, the howling, cries, and blasphemies against Christ our Lord and against His saints. Third point. With the sense of smell to perceive the smoke, the sulphur, the filth, and corruption. Fourth point. To taste the bitterness of tears, sadness, and remorse of conscience. Fifth Point. With the sense of touch to feel the flames which envelop and burn the souls. Colloquy. Enter into conversation with Christ our Lord. Recall to memory that of those who are in hell, some came there because they did not believe in the coming of Christ; others, though they believed, because they did not keep the Commandments. Divide them all into three classes: 1. Those who were lost before the coming of Christ; 2. Those who were lost during His lifetime; 3. Those who were lost after His life here on earth. Thereupon, I will give thanks to God our Lord that He has not put an end to my life and permitted me to fall into any of these three classes. I shall also thank Him for this, that up to this very moment He has shown Himself so loving and merciful to me. Close with an *Our Father."*
2. Samuel Smiles, *The Huguenots,* New York: Harper & Brothers (1869), p 153
3. James J. Walsh, MD, *American Jesuits,* New York: The Macmillan Company (1934), P 174
4. Manfred Barthel, *The Jesuits,* p 125
5. Henry Foley, SJ, *Records of the English Province SJ,* VII, Part 2, London (1877-1883), pp 1162ff.
6. Garry Wills, *Witches & Jesuits: Shakespeare's Macbeth*, New York: Oxford University Press (1995), p 20.
7. Barthel, *The Jesuits,* page 42
8. *Ibid.*
9. Edmond Paris, *The Secret History of the Jesuits* (translated 1975, original publisher and publication date unknown), distributed by Chino CA: Chick Publications, pp 127-8
10. Peter de Rosa, *Vicars of Christ,* p 5
11. *Ibid.*, p 138
12. Barthel, *The Jesuits,* p 260
13. *Education Reporter,* May 1996, published monthly by Eagle Forum Education & Legal Defense Fund, St. Louis, MO 63105

Chapter 11: The Thirteen Articles Concerning Military Art

1. Estimation in 1784 of then Father Superior of the American Mission, John Carroll,

a Jesuit priest and brother of Daniel Carroll, upon whose land, “Rome,” the U.S. Capitol building was erected.

2. M. Martin, SJ, *The Jesuits: The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church,* New York: Simon & Schuster (1987), p 490. Prof. Martin concludes that since the currently-reigning Supetior General, Peter Hans Kolvenbach, “sanctions” a book by Jesuit Juan Luis Segundo, *Theology and the Church* (1985), the book constitutes Kolvenbach’s “ultimate answer to the continued dissatisfaction of Popes with the new Society.”

Chapter 12: Lorenzo Ricci’s War

1. J.C.H. Aveling, *The Jesuits,* p 225
2. Hyneman and Lutz, editors, *American Political Writing During the Founding Era* 1760-1805, Indianapolis: Liberty Press (1983), Vol. I, p 383.
3. *Ibid.* The anonymous author of this 1776 material on the Penn Charter and the city of Philadelphia was, in the editors’ opinion “probably a lawyer – or at least had considerable knowledge of legal matters.”
4. Aveling, *The Jesuits,* p 225
5. Martin, *The Jesuits,* p 215
6. Aveling, p 278
7. Barthel, *The Jesuits,* p 208
8. Martin, p 212

9. *Catholic Encyclopedia,* “Lorenzo Ricci”

Chapter 13: The Secret Bridge

1. Martin, *The Jesuits,* p 23
2. *Oxford Book of Popes*
5. Sidney Hayden, *Washington and His Masonic Compeers,* New York: Masonic Publishing and Manufacturing Company (1868)
3. Hendricks, *Charles Thomson and the Making of A New Nation,* p. 189
4. Rush, *Autobiography,* p. 155

Chapter 15: The Madness of King George III

1. Koch and Peden, *The Selected Writings of John & John Quincy Adams,* New York: Alfred A. Knopf (1946), letter of July 3, 1776
2. In 1779, they would divide Bute County into two new counties, named Warren and Franklin, after patriots Joseph and Benjamin. Bute County no longer exists.
3. John G. Miller, *Origins of the American Revolution*, New York: Little, Brown (1943), p 190
4. S. Bullock, *Revolutionary Brotherhood: Freemasonry and the Transformation of the American Social Order,* 1730-1840, Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, (1996), p 106
5. David S. Muzzey, *Our Country’s History,* Boston: Ginn &Company (1961), p 92

Chapter 16: Tweaking the Religious Right

1. Denis Gwynn, *Bishop Challoner,* London:Douglas Organ (1946), p 192
2. Gwynn, *Challoner*, p 191
3. Finke & Stark, *The Churching of America,* New Jersey: Rutgers University Press (1993), p 25
4. Theodore Sedgwick, Jr., *A Memoir of the Life of William Livingston,* New York (1844), p 136
5. *The Literary Diary of Ezra Stiles,* New York (1901), Vol I, p 490
6. Jonathan Boucher, in Miller, *Origins*, p 195
7. Thomas O'Gorman, *History of the Roman Catholic Church in the United States,* New York (1895), p 208
8. Sidney Hayden, *Washington and his Masonic Compeers,* New York: Masonic Publishing and Manufacturing Co., (1868), p 371. Before the Provincial Grand Lodge of New York, Rev. Seabury delivered an address December 27, 1782, as seen by the following record of that body: "Resolved unanimously, that the thanks of this Lodge be given to our Rev. Bro. Dr. Seabury, for his sermon delivered this day, before this and other Lodges, convened for the celebration of St. John the Evangelist."

9. Ahlstrom, *Religious History of the American People,* pp 368-70

Chapter 17: A Timely Grand Tour

1. The Barony of Stourton, according to *Burke's Peerage,* is "the oldest surviving barony created by Letters Patent." A "letter patent" is a royal grant.
2. The John Catroll Papers, Georgetown University,
3. J.C. Papers, Letter to Thomas Ellerker, October 26, 1772
4. Matthew 24:24
5. Garcia's manuscript translation from the French of Amiot's *Thirteen Articles Concerning Military Art,* used by permission of La Belle Eglise.

Chapter 18: The Stimulating Effects of Tea

1. As such, East India seems likely to have been the source of funding for Amiot's translation of Sun-Tzu. Perhaps someday this connection can be investigated.
2. *Country Life,* October 10, 1968
3. *Ibid.*
4. Geoffrey Holt, S.J, *St. Omers and Bruges Colleges, 1593-1773: A Biographical Dictionary,* London (1979)
5. Black's Law Dictionary, 5th edition, page 709
6. Pat Shannan, who investigates clandestine government involvement in great public catastrophes such as the bombing of the Murrah Building in Oklahoma City, suggests that the mysterious shot might have been fired by Sam Adams himself. When I spoke with Shannan in July 1999, he had just returned from several weeks of sleuthing around Lexington Green. He told me the following: "Sam Adams and John Hancock had big prices on their heads and were hiding out during the early morning hours of 19 April in the home of Rev. Jonas Clarke. Clarke's house is less

than a quarter mile from Lexington Green. Adams delivered many of his rabble-rousing speeches at the meeting-house near the Green. It was from behind this meeting-house shortly after daybreak that the initial shot was fired on the redcoats. As to who was responsible for firing that shot, really the first of the Revolution, my number one suspect since my first visit to Lexington years ago has always been Sam Adams. He had motive, he had access, and he, more than anyone else, had been in the King's face for a long time with his firebrand speeches. He was always urging the people to value liberty more than life itself – which is really what that shot was about."

Chapter 19: The Death & Resurrection of Lorenzo Ricci

1. Hall, *The Secret Teachings*,etc., p CLXVIII
2. *Ibid.,* CC

Chapter 20: American Griffiti

1. Council of Trent, *Decree Concerning the Canonical Scriptures,* Fourth Session.
2. The best-documented, most reasoned, and certainly most energetic analysis of the conflict between Roman Catholicism and Scripture is regularly published by Dave Hunt, of Bend, Oregon. His monthly newsletter, "The Berean Call," is studiously researched, wonderfully written, and free for the asking. Other finely reasoned works on the subject are James R. White's *The Roman Catholic Controversy,* and *Roman Catholics and Evangelicals: Agreements and Differences* by Norman Geisler and Ralph MacKenzie.
3. *Dictionary of Symbols,* Malmo, Sweden: Merkur International KB
4. *Pennsylvania Gazette,* June 8, 1769
5. Hislop, *The Two Babylons,* pp 240,241. Hislop cites the *Phocica* of Pausanius (Book x, chap xv, p 833)
6. Daniel 5:25, 26
7. Del Mar, *The Worship of Augustus Caesar,* p 306. "In all the earlier works referring to [Julius] he is called Caius Caesar, and sometimes simply Caius."
8. Syme, *The Roman Revolution,* p 218 ff
9. Del Mar, *Worship of Augustus Caesar,* p 318

Chapter 21: Jupiter's Earthly Abode

1. As published in Senate Document 332, 71st Congress, 3d Session, and available through the Library of Congress as "Johnson's Map of Georgetown and Washington." This phenomenon was first pointed out to me by Daniel Salmons, who has explored the cabalism of the federal city's layout with incredible fervor and imagination.
2. *Maryland Gazette* for September 26, 1793
3. According to the office of the Architect of the Capitol, the silver plaque has been lost, along with the cornerstone, despite two scientific excavations in recent years.

Chapter 22: The Immaculate Conception

1. *National Republic,* March 1960
2. Chiniquy, *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome: The Conversion of a Priest,* orig. pub. London, 1886, by Protestant Literature Depository. Abridged version published 1985 by Chick Publications, Chino CA. For refusing to obey his bishop's order to send a rich parishioner to a nunnery (thereby expropriating her wealth for the Church), Rev. Chiniquy was first excommunicated, then criminally prosecuted in Urbana, Illinois, on trumped-up sexual impropriety charges. Young Abraham Lincoln won his acquittal in 1856 by exposing perjury in the testimony of several priests. Chiniquy and Lincoln remained good friends.
3. I was personally informed by the Architect of the Capitol in 1992 that "no ground-level photographs of Freedom are known to exist."

Chapter 23: The Dome of the Great Sky

1. See *The Dome of the United States Capitol: An Architectural History* (U.S. Government Printing Office, 1992), and *We, the People: The Story of the United States Capitol* (U.S. Capitol Historical Society, in association with the National Geographic Society, 1985). Most of the material relative to Brumidi's association with the Capitol project is derived from these two handy resources.
2. Chiniquy, *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome,* p 312
3. *Ibid.*
4. Brig. Gen. Thomas Harris, *Rome's Responsibility for the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln,* orig. pub. 1897, repub. by Petersburg OH 44454: Pilgrim Brethren Press (1989), p 19.

5. John Cottrell, *Anatomy of an Assassination,* New York: Funk & Wagnalls (1966)

Chapter 24: The Mark of Cain

1. S.H. Hooke, *Babylonian and Assyrian Religion,* Norman OK: University of OklahomaPress (1963), p 15
2. George Smith, *The Chaldean Account of Genesis,* New York: Scribner, Armstrong & Co. (1876), pp 54–55
3. Hooke, *Babylonian Religion,* p 61
4. Genesis 4:7. God cautioned Cain that if he failed to do well, the Evildoer would lie at his door. "And unto thee shall be his desire, and thou shalt *rule over him."*
5. Genesis 4:15
6. Genesis 4:8
7. Genesis 4:10
8. Genesis 4:5
9. Genesis 4:2
10. Genesis 4:4
11. Hebrews 9:22
12. Matthew 26:28, Acts 20:28, Romans 3:25, 5:9, Ephesians 1:7, 2:13, Colossians 1:14, Hebrew 9:12, 9:20, 10:19, 13:12, I Peter 1:2, 19, I John 1:7, Revelation 1:5, 7:14, 12:11.

13. Ephesians 2:6
14. Genesis 4:6, 7
15. I Samuel 15:9
16. Genesis 4:26. Only upon the birth of Seth's son Enosh did "men [begin] to call on the name of the Lord." Up to that time, most of humanity apparently ignored or denied the Holy Name. These were Cain's lawful subjects.
17. Genesis 4:16
18. Genesis 4:17
19. Sayce, *The Hibbert Lectures on Babylonian Religion* (1887), p 185
20. Mrs. Sidney Bristowe, *Sargon the Magnificent,* Canada: Burnaby, B.C., Association of the Covenant People (undated, but estimated c. 1925), p 83. Sayce used the term Merodach, which is the Hebrew variant of Marduk.
21. H. S. Williams, Editor, *The Historians' History of the World, A Comprehensive Narrative of the Rise and Developlment of Nations As Recorded by the Great,* London: The Times (1980), Vol I, p 373. See also George Smith, *The Chaldean Account of Genesis: Containing the description of the creation, the fall of man, the deluge,* London: Sampson Low (1976), p 295.
22. *Ibid.* See also Bristowe, *Sargon,* for a well-documented presentation favoring the identification of Cain with Sargon and numerous mythological personages.
23. Edition 2, Vol. 3, "Babylonia"
24. Leonard King, *Egypt, Babylon and Palestine,* p 28 (noted in Bristowe)
25. Williams, *Times History,* Vol. I p 356.
26. H.R. Hall, *The Ancient History of the Near East,* London: Mithuen & Co. (11th Edition, 1950), p 172
27. Genesis 3
28. Bristowe, *Sargon,* pp 39-40
29. Ragozin, Zenaide A., *Chaldea from the Earliest Times to the Rise of Assyria,* London: T. Fisher Unwin (1886), pp 205-207
30. *Cambridge History,* Vol I, p 406 (noted in Bristowe)
31. "Slavery was part of the foundation upon which Babylonian society rested." Sayce, *Babylonia and Assyria,* p. 67
32. *[London] Times History,* Vol. I, p 362
33. Webster's definition.
34. Genesis 4:23-24
35. Genesis 17:7-8
36. Genesis 4:14
37. Habakkuk 2:4
38. Pike, *Morals and Dogma,* p 210
39. Genesis 5:17
40. Genesis 4:25
41. Genesis 5:4
42. There is a discrepancy of 191 years between Pike's reckoning and that inscribed into the plaque of the Capitol Cornerstone (1793 AD from 5793 AM) I am inclined to believe Pike's is more scientifically determined.
43. Genesis 4:16

Chapter 25: The Two Ministries

1. Hebrews 1:1
2. John 1:1-14
3. 1 Timothy 1:9-10 (NIV)
4. Matthew 3:8
5. Matthew 19:19
6. Matthew 5:44
7. Matthew 10:8
8. Matthew 6:12; 18:22
9. Mark 16:15
10. John 6:44
11. I Timothy 2:4
12. II Corinthians 3:9
13. I Corinthians 15:56
14. II Corinthians 11:15
15. I John 3:12
16. Job 1:6,7
17. Isaiah 14:12, Revelation 12:12
18. Job 1:7
19. II Corinthians 4:4
20. Ephesians 2:2
21. II Corinthians 11:13
22. Matthew 4:1-10
23. *Ibid.*
24. Matthew 18:14-17. In other words, “Respect his wish to avoid you, as the pagans do.” The tax collectors known to the Israelites were disloyal brethren hired by Romans to tax other Israelites for personal profit. Today’s equivalent might be undercover agents working to create tax liability for a church.
25. 1 Timothy 1:20
26. 1 Corinthians 5:4-5
27. Romans 13:1-8
28. De Rosa, *Vicars of Christ,* p 36
29. Strong’s Hebrew Lexicon, no. 6363
30. Luke 22:36
31. U.S. District Court, Western District of Texas, filed February 26, 1993, No. W-93-15M.
32. II Corinthians 3:9
33. II Corinthians 5:18

54. Philippians 2:10

35. The principle is proved by its reverse: The Less Restriction, the Farther from God, which is borne out by high recidivism statistics. The free world tends to dilute the intimacy with God which restriction has established.
36. Matthew 10:16

Appendix E

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Ahlstrom, Sydney E., A *Religious History of the American People,* New Haven & London: Yale University Press (1972)

Aveling, J.C.Hugh, *The Jesuits,* New York: Stein 6k Day (1981)

Barthel, Dr. Manfred, transl. by Mark Howson, *The Jesuits: History and Legend of the Society of Jesus,* New York: Quill, William Morrow (1982-84)

Baigent, Michael, Richard Leigh and Henry Lincoln, *Holy* Blood, *Holy Grail,* New York: Delacorte Press (1982)

Black's Law Dictionary, 5th edition

Bristowe, Mrs. Sidney, *Sargon the Magnificent,* Canada: Burnaby, B.C., Association of the Covenant People (undated, but estimated c. 1925)

Bullock, Steven C., *Revolutionary Brotherhood: Freemasonry and the Transformation of the American Social Order,* 1730-1840, Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press (1996)

Caraman, Philip, SJ, *Ignatius Loyola: A Biography of the Founder of the Jesuits,* San Francisco: Harper & Row (1990)

Carroll, John (edited by Thomas O'Brien Hanley), *The John Carroll Papers, 1755-1791,* in 3 volumes, University of Notre Dame Press (1976)

Catholic Almanac

Chadwick, *The Early Church,* Eerdmans (1967)

Chiniquy, Rev. Charles, *My Fifty Years in the Church of Rome: The Conversion of a Priest,* orig. pub. London, 1886, by Protestant Literature Depository. Abridged version published 1985 by Chick Publications, Chino CA

Cottrell, John, *Anatomy of an Assassination,* New York: Funk & Wagnalls (1966)

Daraul, Arkon, A *History of Secret Societies,* Citadel Press (1995)

Del Mar, Alexander, *Middle Ages Revisited,* California 90250: Hawthorne, Omni Book Club (orig. pub. 1899); *The Worship of Augustus Caesar,* Hawthorne, CA: Christian Book Club of America (1976)

De Rosa, Peter, *Vicars of Christ: The Dark Side of the Papacy,* New York: Crown Publishers (1988)

Dictionary of Symbols, Malmo, Sweden: Merkur International KB

Dillenberger, John, ed., *Martin Luther: Selection from his writings,* New York: Doubleday Anchor Press (1961)

Dome of the United States Capitol, The: An Architectural History, U.S. Government Printing Office (1992)

"Education Reporter," published monthly by Eagle Forum Education & Legal Defense Fund, St. Louis, MO 63105

Fabre Palaprat, J.B, *Recherches historiques sur les Templiers,* (1835)

Finke & Stark, *The Churching of America,* New Jersey: Rutgers University Press (1993)

Foley, Henry, SJ, *Records of the English Province SJ,* London (1877-1883)

Geisler & MacKenzie, *Roman Catholics and Evangelicals: Agreements and Differences,* Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, (1995)

Gwynn, Denis, *Bishop Challoner,* London:Douglas Organ (1946)

Hall, H.R., *The Ancient History of the Near East,* London: Mithuen & Co. (11th Edition, 1950)

Hall, Manly P., *The Secret Teachings of All Ages: an Encyclopedic Outline of*

Masonic, Hermetic, Qabbalistic & Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy, Philosophical Research Society, (1988)

Harris, Brig. Gen. Thomas, *Rome's Responsibility for the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln,* orig. pub. 1897, repub. by Petersburg OH 44454: Pilgrim Brethren Press (1989)

Hayden, Sidney, *Washington and His Masonic Compeers,* New York: Masonic Publishing and Manufacturing Company (1868)

Hendricks, J. Edwin, *Charles Thomson and the Making of A New Nation* 1729-1824, Fairleigh Dickinson University Press (1979)

Herbert of Cherbury, Edward, Lord, *The Life and Raigne of King Henry the Eighth,* London: Printed by E. G. for Thomas Whitaker (1649)

Hislop, Alexander, *Two Babylons,* Neptune, New Jersey: Loiseaux Brothers (1916)

Holt, SJ, Geoffrey, *St. Omer's and Bruges Colleges, 1593-1773: A Biographical Dictionary,* London (1979)

Hooke, Samuel H., *Babylonian and Assyrian Religion,* Norman OK: University of Oklahoma Press (1963)

Huber, J., *Les Jesuites,* Paris: Sandoz et Fischbacher (1875)

Hunt, Dave, Editor, "The Berean Call," P.O. Box 7019, Bend, Oregon 97708

Hyneman and Lutz, editors, *American Political Writing During the Founding Era* 1760-1805, Indianapolis: Liberty Press (1983), two volumes

Kaster, Joseph, *Putnam's Concise Mythological Dictionary,* The Putnam Publishing Group (1963)

Kelly, J.N.D.,The Oxford Dictionary of Popes, Oxford & New York:Oxford University Press (1986, 1989)

King, Leonard W., *A History of Babylon,* London: Chatto and Windus (1919)

Koch and Peden, *The Selected Writings of John & John Quincy Adams,* New York: Alfred A. Knopf (1946)

Letson & Wiggins, *The Jesuit Mystique,* Chicago: The Loyola Press (1995)

Martin, Malachi, SJ, The Jesuits: *The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the*

Roman Catholic Church, New York: Simon & Schuster (1987)

Meissner, W.W., SJ, MD, *Ignatius of Loyola: The Psychology of A Saint,* New Haven, London: Yale University Press (1992)

Michelet, M., *Life of Luther, written by himself,* London: David Bogue (1846). Luther's texts collected, arranged, and translated by Michelet

Miller, John G., *Origins of the American Revolution,* New York: Little, Brown (1943)

Muzzey, David S., *Our Country's History,* Boston: Ginn & Company (1961)

Needham, Guil. (Imprimatur), A *Brief Historical Account of the Behaviour of the jésuites and their Faction, for the First twenty five Years of Q. Elizabeth's Reign, with an Epistle of W. Watson, a Secular Priest, shewing, How they were thought of by the other Romanists of that Time,* London: James Adamson (1689)

New Catholic Encycyclopedia (1967)

O'Gorman, Thomas, *History of the Roman Catholic Church in the United States,* New York (1895)

Paris, Edmond, *The Secret History of the Jesuits* (translated 1975, original publisher and publication date unknown), distributed by Chino CA: Chick Publications

Piquet, *Des Banqiers au Moyen Age: les Templiers,* Paris, (1931)

Pike, Albert Commander, *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry,* Richmond, Virginia: Jenkins, Inc. (1871, 1923)

Puhl, Louis J., *The Spiritual Exercises of St. Ignatius,* Westminster, MD: The Newman Press (1959)

Ragon, J.M., *Cours Philosophique et Interpretatif des Initiations anciennes et modernes,* edition sacree a l'usage des Loges et des Macons Seulement (Masonic year 5,842)

Ragozin, Zenaide A., *Chaldea from the Earliest Times to the Rise of Assyria,* London: T. Fisher Unwin (1886)

Rush, Benjamin (Ed. by George W. Comer), *The Autobiography of Benjamin Rush,* Princeton University Press, (1948)

Sayce, Archibald, *The Hibbert Lectures on the Origin and Growth of Religion, as*

Illustrated by the Religion of the Ancient Babylonians, London: Williams & Norgate, (1909)

Scharf, *History of Western Maryland,* Baltimore (1882)

Sedgwick, Jr., Theodore, *A Memoir of the Life of William Livingston,* New York (1844)

Shroeder, H.J., trans., *The Canons and Decrees of the Council of Trent,* Rockford IL: TAN Books (1978)

Smiles, Samuel, *The Huguenots*, New York: Harper & Brothers (1869)

Smith, George, *The Chaldean Account of Genesis,* New York: Scribner, Armstrong & Co. (1876)

Stiles, Ezra, *The Literary Diary of Ezra Stiles,* New York (1901)

Strong's *Exhaustive Concordance with Hebrew & Greek Lexicons*

Syme, Ronald, *The Roman Revolution,* Oxford University Press (1966)

U.S. Court of Appeals for the Third Circuit, Case No. 85-1309

We, the People: The Story of the United States Capitol: Its Past and Its Promise, U.S. Capitol Historical Society

Viorst, Milton, ed., *The Great Documents of Western Civilization,* New York; Barnes and Noble, 1965

Walsh, James J., MD, *American Jesuits,* New York: The Macmillan Company (1934)

White, James R., *The Roman Catholic Controversy,* Minneapolis: Bethany House Publications (1996)

Williams, H. S., Editor, *The Historians' History of the World, A Comprehensive Narrative of the Rise and Development of Nations As Recorded by the Great,* London: The Times (1908)

Wills, Garry, *Witches & Jesuits: Shakespeare's Macbeth,* New York: Oxford University Press (1995)

INDEX

A

Abel 268, 269,270,271,275,276
Abigail 198, 200
  Adams 196
abolition 239
Abraham 77
Abraham Lincoln 240, 241, 244, 251
Acadia 150
Acquaviva, Superior General Claudio 69
actors 72, 207, 251
Adams, John 104, 139, 140, 179, 184, 194, 196, 198, 200, 203, 208, 232
Adams, Samuel 140, 143
Addison, Judge 151
Admiralty 139, 141, 184
adultery 80
Aeneas 15, 121,216, 228, 256, 259
Aeneid, The 15, 16, 216, 231
Aguilera, ATF Special Agent Davy 286
Ahlstrom Sydney E. 242
Aimeric of Santa Maria Nuova, Cardinal 36
Alacoque, Ste. Margaret-Marie 108, 197
Albany congress 122
Alissiardi, Fathers 70
American colonists 85, 89, 126, 133, 139, 141, 142, 143, 148, 149, 161, 184, 195
American Inquisition xvi
American Jewish Congress 9
American Revolution 66, 85-86, 109, 115, 125, 129-131, 140, 156, 159, 173, 176, 261, 284
Americans United for Separation of Church and State 9
Amiot, Josef-Marie 86, 87, 88
Anacostics 176
Anathema 57
Anathematized 57
Andrea Gritti 32
Anglican 148, 151, 152, 184
annals 260
Annapolis 178
Annu 210, 266, 267, 268, 270, 271
Annuit Coeptis 5, 15, 214, 217, 218
Annunciation Day 197
Annunzio, Frank 3
Antietam 242
Antioch, Ignatius of 44
Apollo 11, 60, 217, 220, 223
Apostolic Nunciature of the Holy See 9
apotheosis 35, 69, 250, 256, 261
Appeal to the Ruling Classes 24, 65
Aquinas, St. Thomas 130
Aragon 110
Aranda, Count de 118
Aranzazu, Virgin of 30
Archbishop John Hughes 247
Archibald Sayce 271
Aristotle 14, 130
Ark 175
Articles of Confederation 260
artillery 111, 150, 231,261
Arundell, Earl of (Thomas Howard) 123
Arundell, Lord (Henry Howard) 172
Asher 77
assassination 115, 215, 219, 224, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255
Athens 23, 237
Atonement, Day of 39
Augsburg
  Confession 55
  Peace of 56
Augusta of Saxony 135
Avignon 38

B

Bacchus 11, 12,213
Baltimore 146, 151, 152, 174, 201, 235, 250
banking 37, 57, 161, 169, 188
Baptist Joint Committee on Public Affairs 9
Barcelona 30, 32, 43, 44
Barton, William 124, 209
Basel, Council of 197
Basque country 24

Batso Furnace 179
Bavaria 64, 70, 170
Beauregard, Gen. Pierre 240
Beckx, Superior General Pieter Jean 233
Beijing 167
Belgium 44, 67, 123
belli legum dormit 82
Benjamin, Judah P. 241
Berkeley Square 139, 168, 208
Berkeley, Dr. Edmund xiii, xiv
Bernard, Abbot of Clairvaux 35
Bernstein, Carl 1, 2
Berthier, the Jesuit 107
Beza, Theodore 130
Biden, Sen.Joseph 2, 3
Bidermann, Jacob 66
Bishop of Rome (pope) 85, 104, 207
Black Madonna of Montserrat 30, 70
Black Papacy 57, 82, 95, 97, 103, 120, 123, 133, 137, 139, 152, 159, 161, 177, 187, 194, 196, 232, 233
Black Pope 6, 47, 59, 71, 87, 103, 184
blood 20, 29, 39, 50, 51, 94, 121, 162, 182, 240, 241, 265, 268, 269, 270
Bohemia 31, 176
Boleyn, Anne 46
Boling, Kenneth 124
Booth, John Wilkes 251, 253
Bordeaux 38, 170
Boscawen, Admiral Edward 100
Boston 140, 141, 142, 143, 150, 162, 171, 173, 174, 177, 178, 181, 184, 185, 190, 193,238
Boston Massacre 143
Boston Tea Party 171, 173, 178, 185
Bourbon(s) 109, 111, 112, 118
Braddock, General Edward 100
Brady, Matthew 242
Branch Davidians 286
Braschi, Cardinal Giovanni 180
Brent, mayor Robert 4, 232
Briand, Bishop 194
Bristowe, Mrs. Sidney 272
Britannus Americanus 142
British colonies 82, 85, 147
British Empire 88, 89, 138, 140
broadcasting 70, 71, 72
Brown 1
Bruges 155, 157, 164, 171, 172, 177, 184
Brumidi, Constantino 5, 247, 248, 249, 250, 255, 257, 258, 259, 261, 262
Buddha 59
Bullinger, E. W. 198
Busenbaum, Hermann 79, 81
Bute, third Earl of (Lord Bute) 134, 136 137, 138, 139, 140, 155, 168, 184
Butterbriefe (indulgence) 21

C

cabalah 23, 31, 33, 36, 38, 39, 175, 196, 199 209, 230, 260
Caesar
  Augustus 5, 221, 224, 256
  Julius 6, 152, 210, 218, 219, 220
Cain 265, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 275, 276, 277, 279, 280, 281, 282, 283, 285, 286, 287, 289
Caius Maecenas 5, 219
Calvert 174, 175, 176, 177
Calvert, Cecilius 175, 176
Calvert, George (Lord Bute) 174
Calvert, Leonard 175
Calvin, John 44, 130
Cambridge 130, 177, 182, 189, 190, 191, 195
Campbell, Robert Allen 189,190
Canada 98, 100, 185, 194, 195, 253
canonization 10, 69, 245
Capitol *(capitolium)*, U.S. 70, 234
Cardinal Thomas Wolsey 23, 102, 117
Carroll
  Charles 104, 156, 177, 178, 179, 181, 194
  Daniel 227, 230, 231, 232
  John xvii, 65, 123, 146-164, 169, 172, 88, 193,227,232,244
Casey, William 2
Cassio 150, 188
Castel Sant'Angelo 114, 171, 180, 185, 187, 188, 190
Castille 110
Castle William 143
Casuist 78, 81
casuistry 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 120, 150, 157
Catholic Action 70, 71, 72
Catholic Almanac 12
Catholic Church of the United States 152
Catholic Encyclopedia
  1902 edition 4
  New (1967) 4
Celebrano, Father 70
Cenodoxus 66
Centurioni, Superior General Luigi 103
Ceres 5, 258
Chaize, Francois de la 64
Challoner, Bishop Richard 147
Champagne 36
Charles Habsburg 18, 27, 30, 32, 55

Charles Stuart 137, 174
Charleston 141, 171, 240
Chase, Samuel 194
Chattanooga, Tennessee xiv, xv, 243
children 24, 27, 46, 64, 93, 102, 103, 135, 206,221
Chinese 37, 86, 87, 88
Chiniquy, Rev. Charles 241, 252, 254
Christ, Jesus 15, 49, 50, 62,68, 150, 151, 205, 213, 231, 237
Christian Corurot'ers)' (Bellarmine) 130
Christianity xvi, 11, 12, 71, 208
Christopher Columbus 27, 235
Christopher Dodd 2, 3
Church Militant 51, 74, 103, 260, 261
Church of England 101, 102, 103, 129, 136, 148, 149, 152, 158, 174
Cincinnatus 249, 250
cinema 70, 71, 72
Civil War, American 239
Civitavecchia 111
Clark Mills 239, 240,250
Clark, Judge William 2
Clinton, William J. 3
coadjutors (lay agents) 52, 191
coin xvii, 59, 212, 222
College of Cardinals 112
Collegio Anti-Bellarminianum 130
Colombière, Claude de la 108
Columbine murders 73
commerce 2, 37, 57, 58, 59, 65, 167, 188, 196, 261
Company of Jesus 42, 45
condemnation 68, 121, 281, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291
Confederacy 240, 241, 242, 243, 251, 252, 253
Confederate States of America 240
confession 10, 28, 57, 63, 64, 107, 205
confessor, Jesuit 64, 98, ill
Confucius 118
Congregation for the Propaganda 97
Congregationalist 148
Connecticut 152, 173, 178, 227
Constantine, Emperor 11, 16, 206, 284
Constitution of the United States 66
Constitution of the United States Article VI, section 3 86
Constitution of the United States First Amendment 86
Conte, Silvio Rep. 3
contemplativus in actione 47
Continental Congress 124, 178, 179, 181, 185, 194
cowboys 70
Coxe, Jr., Daniel xix, 121-122
Coxe, Sr., Dr. Saniel 122
Crawford, Thomas 5, 238, 250, 257
Creighton, Bishop Mandell 1
critics 72
Crown 52, 94, 99, 101, 102, 106, 122, 142, 149, 156, 160, 169, 172, 173, 182,203
Cuellar, Juan de 44, 45
Cybele 11
Cyprus 12, 27, 29,31,32,33

D

Dark Ages 16
Darnall, Eleanor 104, 174, 176
David 12, 217, 286
Davidians 286
Davis, Jefferson 238, 240, 250
Declaration and Resolves of October 14, 1774 179
Declaration of Independence 40, 66, 78, 132, 133, 185, 193, 195, 198, 199, 200, 203,214, 260
Declaration of the Causes 182
Declaratory Act 142
Deism 118
Delaware 85, 124, 211
Diatriba theologica 112
Diet of Nuremberg 22
Dionysus 10, 12, 223
Directorium inquisitorum 57, 254
Discourses concerning Government (Locke) 131
Disestablishment 94, 114, 118, 169, 170, 180, 187, 188
divine right 120, 129, 130, 133
Dominus ac Redemptor noster 113, 169
Dorset coast 151
Douglas, Stephen A. 240
Dove 128, 130, 131, 132, 133, 150, 175, 251
Dover, Treaty of 122
Dr. Benjamin Rush 125
Dred Scott vs. Sanford 239
Due de Choiseul 118
Duties 141, 143, 172, 179, 184

E

Ea 266, 268
eagle 5, 210, 213, 231, 232, 257, 258, 260
East India Company 164, 167, 168, 169, 171, 173, 185, 186, 192, 193, 194
Edinburgh 40

Edison, Thomas Alva 70
education 4, 10, 41, 44, 66, 73, 102, 138
Egham races 136
emotional 73, 74, 82, 137, 183
emotions 74
Encyclopedia of Sciences, Arts, and Trades 117
Encyclopedists 117
England ii, 4, 23, 31, 36, 44, 45, 46, 49, 64, 67, 68, 69, 89, 94, 98, 101, 102, 103, 104, 108, 111, 113, 114, 121, 122, 123, 131, 132, 133, 137, 138, 139, 140, 142, 143, 148, 149, 151, 155, 157, 160, 161, 164, 168, 171, 172, 173, 174, 176, 180, 182, 184, 185, 195, 196, 197
English College 114, 170, 171, 177, 185
Enlightenment, the 102, 117, 119, 120, 126
Enoch (Unuk) 59, 266, 272-276, 294
entertainment 66, 73
Episcopal Church 153, 241
equivocation 78, 79, 80, 82, 101, 120, 157
Erasmus, Desiderius 20
Escobar, Antonio 81
esoteric experience 43
Eton 136
Etruscans 6, 219
euse 138, 141, 142, 143, 164, 168, 169, 182
Evangeline 150
Eve 31, 236, 268,275
evil 21, 22, 31, 39, 70, 72, 73, 123, 150, 170, 205, 206, 213, 217, 223, 229
Exercises 29
Exercises, Spiritual 28, 30, 31, 43, 45, 47, 66, 73, 108, 157

F

Family Compact 109
Farnese, Alessandro (Paul III) 46
Farnese, Giulia 46, 167
Farnese, Ranuccio 59
fasces 6, 153, 224, 256
Fascism 6
Faust, Dr. Johannes 19
Fazio, Rep. Vic 3
Feast Day of St. Ignatius Loyola xiv, 289
Febronianism 158, 159
Febronius, Justinius (see Hontheim) 113, 154, 157
Fillmore, Millard 248
Filmer, Sir Robert 130, 131, 133
Fiorentini 188
Firth of Clyde 136
Fitch, Ralph 168
Flag Committee 189, 193, 199
Flanders 4, 36, 164, 175
Floquet, Father Pierre 194
Florence 23, 157, 164,216
Florida vii, 98, 122
Florio, Rep.James 3
flying money *(fei-chi'en)* 37
Foley, Rep. Thomas 2
Fort Sumter 240
founding fathers 5, 66, 201, 204, 218, 224, 228,229
Fourteenth Amendment 239
Fox, George 101
France 11, 12, 28, 31, 36, 37, 38, 45, 46, 64, 71, 85, 98, 102, 106, 108, 109, 122, 137, 138, 139, 170, 174, 177, 184, 223, 241
Franciscan 112, 152
Franklin, Benjamin 100, 103, 107, 122, 139, 142, 172, 179, 180, 189, 190, 194, 195, 203, 208, 257, 258
Frederick II of Hesse-Hanover 160
Frederick William, Prince of Wales 135
"Freedom" 234
"Freedom" (see Libera, Justitia) 5
Freemason 36, 118, 123, 124, 152, 160, 169, 191, 195, 227, 237, 248, 252
Freemasonry 40, 58, 98, 100, 115, 117, 118, 119, 120, 121, 135, 140, 155, 160, 170, 173,194, 200,212,231,240
Freemasons 119, 120, 168, 170, 173, 185
French and Indian War 100
French, Benjamin B. 242, 249
fresco 5, 247, 249, 250, 251
Fromm vs. Carroll 152
Fullam, Judge John 10

G

Gadsden, Christopher 139
Ganganelli, Lorenzo 112
Garcia, Hermine F. 87
Garza, Rep. Kika De la 3
George William (George III) 137
Georgetown College 232
Georgetown University 81, 146, 170, 232
Germanicum, the 56
Germany xiv, 31, 36, 40, 45, 49, 56, 63
Gesu 114, 120, 175, 188, 238, 288
glorious gospel 280, 283, 285, 286, 287, 290
Gnosticism 23, 101
Goa 168
goat 39, 210, 226, 228
god 5, 12, 15, 19, 20, 21, 24, 28, 29, 30, 31, 38, 39, 40, 42, 43, 44, 46, 51, 57, 59, 69, 72, 82,93, 101, 105, 110, 113, 115, 125,

129, 130, 132, 159, 161, 169, 193, 194, 196, 197, 198, 200, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 208, 209, 210, 213, 215, 216, 217, 219, 220, 221, 223, 224, 227, 229, 236, 237, 238, 243, 244, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260
Gonzalez, Henry 3
Got, Bertrand de 38
Governor Richard Penn 178
Governor Thomas Hutchinson 143
Grand Union Flag of Great Britain 192
Grant, Ulysses S. 251
Great Britain vii, 68, 71, 82, 86, 95, 98, 99, 104, 122, 126, 139, 140, 142, 149, 178, 184, 191, 192, 195
Guillotin, Dr. Josef 112
guillotine 112
Gulf of Mexico 98, 122
Gunpowder Plot 68, 69
Gury, Father 80, 81
Gutenberg, Johannes 17,19

H

Hades 60, 234, 237,258, 261
Haifa 32
Haig, Alexander 2
Hall, Manly P. 123, 199
Hamilton, Alexander 157
Harkin, Sen. Thomas 3
Harnett, Cornelius 139
Harris, Brigadier General M. Thomas 253
Harrison, Benjamin 189
Harriton 124
Harvard 149, 150
Hayden, Sidney 122
heaven 5, 30, 39, 45, 48, 62, 69, 212, 213, 216, 220, 222, 223, 228, 256
Hebrew 77, 118, 218, 229, 260
hell 24, 29, 50, 64, 73, 232
Hendricks, J. Edwin 124
Henry, Patrick 139, 142, 143, 181, 184
Hermes 59
Hesse-Hanover 160, 161, 180
Hierarchy 57, 70, 106, 121, 148, 218, 223, 224
High Church Party 174
Historians 22, 40, 44, 74, 106, 111, 115, 131, 176,194,199, 229, 231,235,239
history ix, x, xii, xvii, xix, 22, 46, 71, 73, 74, 109, 123, 124, 125, 136, 169, 171, 174, 190, 196, 223, 232, 237, 242, 249
Hitler, Adolf 40, 71
Holland 49, 143
Holy Land 30, 35, 36,37,45
Holy Roman Emperor Charles V 32, 40, 44
Holy Roman Emperor Maximilian 27
Hontheim, Nikolaus von xix, 154, 157, 158, 159, 160
Howard, Edward 155
Howard, Rev. Simeon 150
Howard, Thomas 123, 135
Huguenots xiii, xiv, xvi, 49, 85
humanism 65, 159
humanist 46, 69, 121, 159, 216
Hunter Commission 251, 252, 253

I

Iago 150
idolatry 80, 149, 207
Illuminati 31, 40, 68, 170
illuminism 44
Immaculate Conception 237, 239, 241, 243, 245, 247, 249, 250
In eminenti 119
Indian 99, 100, 107, 139, 168, 176, 184, 208
indulgences 21, 22, 57
infallibility 236
Ingolstadt College 70
Inquisition
  American xvi
  Roman xvi, 52, 57
  Spanish 44, 52
Inter mirifica 72, 73
Intolerable Acts 174, 185
IRS, income tax system xv, xvi
Isaiah 15, 219
Islam 32

J

Jacobite 137, 152
Jacobite Rebellion 137
Jerusalem 30, 32, 40, 43, 45
Jesui 77
Jesuit drama 67
Jesuit schools and colleges 65, 68
Jesuit theatre 66, 67, 69, 70, 71, 73
Jesuit warfare 83, 104
Jesuited78, 106, 120, 159, 184
Jesuitess 78
Jesuitic 78, 89, 121, 195,239
Jesuitry 78, 107
Jesuits xviii-xvi, xix, 45, 51, 52, 56, 57, 58, 63, 64, 65, 68, 69, 70, 72, 77, 78, 82, 83, 101, 102, 104, 105, 106, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 117, 118, 120, 123, 126, 131, 133, 137, 147, 150, 157,

160, 161, 167, 169, 171, 174, 175, 176, 177, 180, 181, 184, 185, 187, 191, 192, 195, 204, 208, 224, 227, 232, 233, 237, 239, 241,244, 247,286, 289
Johannites 38
John MacCoon xiv, xv, xvi, xix
John Mattingly 170, 185
John the Baptist 38, 197
Johnson, Andrew 251
journalists 72
Jupiter 5, 11, 67, 210, 213, 215, 216, 217, 220, 221, 223, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 238, 256, 257
Justinian, Emperor 23
Justitia 10, 258

K

Kao-tsung, Emperor 37
Kaunitz, Prince von 118
Kennedy, Sen. Edward 3
Kerry, Sen. John 2, 3
Keystone Cops 107
King
  Charles I (England) 4, 133, 174, 175
  Charles I (Spain) 27
  Charles II (England) 101, 131
  Charles III (Spain) 184
  Ferdinand V (Spain) 40
  Francis I (France) 46
  Frederick the Great (Prussia) 118
  George II (England) 100
  George III (England) 113, 166
  Henry III (England) 37
  Henry III (France) 63
  Henry VIII (England) 46, 129
  James I (England) 68, 99, 174
  James II (England) 152
  Louis XIV (France) 64, 85, 122, 131
  Louis XV (France) 63, 98, 108, 112, 113, 118, 184
  Philip IV (France) 37, 109
  William of Orange 152
Kino, Eusebio 70
Kircher, Athenasius 69
Knights Hospitallers of St. John 32
Knights of Christ 35, 40
Knights of St. John of Jerusalem 40
Koffler, Father 111, 112
Koresh, David 286

L

LaFalce, Rep. John 3
Lainez, Diego 56
Lambeth 148
LaValette, Father 106, 107, 108
laypersons 3, 10, 70
Leahy, Patrick 3
Ledochowski, Superior General Vladimir 71
LeFevre 46, 56
Leicester House 136, 137, 138
LeJay, Claude 56
Lexington Green 181, 185
Libera 10, 238
liberation theology 130, 132, 133, 150, 157, 197, 205, 251
line of demarcation 167
Liturgical Calendar xvi, 12, 196, 197
liturgical year 175
Livy 59
Llull, Raimon 33
Locke, John 131
London 37, 97, 100, 101, 103, 104, 121, 137, 142, 148, 152, 153, 162, 164,167, 172, 175, 177, 182, 184, 185, 239
London Coffee House (Philadelphia) 142
Longfellow, H.W. 150
Lorenzo Ricci's War 97, 99, 100, 101, 103, 105, 107, 109, 111, 113, 115, 139
Louis-le-Grand (college) 104, 107, 177
Loyola St. de Ignatius 44, 46, 51, 69
Ludolph of Saxony 28
Luis Vives 44, 45
Luken, Rep. Charles 3
Lulworth Castle 151
Lynch, Thomas 189

M

mace 5
Madigan, Rep. Edward 3
magic lantern (laterna magia) 70
Magnificat 197
Main Street Journal xvi-xvii
Mainz (mentz) 20, 40, 156, 157, 160, 161
Majorca 33
Malone, Bishop James W. 10
Malta 32, 111
Manes, Grand Master Diego 32, 33
Manresa 31, 40
Maraniss, David 81
Marco Polo 168
Marduk 59
Maria-Theresa, Empress 111
Marie-Antoinette 112
Maritime War 100, 139
Mark of Cain 265, 267, 269, 271, 273, 275, 277, 285, 287

Markey, Rep. Edward 3
Mars 11, 161
Marshall, Justice John 239
Martin Luther 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 29, 30, 65, 199
Martin, Malachi 87
Martinique 106, 108
Mary, Virgin 22, 28, 48, 175, 197, 198, 212, 235, 236, 237, 238, 257, 258
Maryland 4, 86, 104, 147, 151, 156, 170, 174, 175, 176, 177, 184, 185, 196, 197, 198, 230, 235, 242, 244
Masons 119, 121, 123
Massachusetts 1, 8, 10, 138, 142, 173, 178, 181, 182, 185, 189, 227
Mayhew, Rev. Jonathan 149, 150
Mazzini, Giuseppe 248
McDade, Rep. Joseph 3
Medici learning 33, 68, 124
Medici Library 23, 24, 73, 120, 216
d'Medici
  Catherine xii
  Cosimo 23
  Giulio (Clement VII) 18, 23
  Lorenzo "the Magnificent" 22, 46
Medulla theologiae moralis 79
megaphone 69
Meigs, Montgomery C. 249-250
Mein Kampf 71
Mendelssohn, Felix 290
mental reservation 50, 78, 79, 80, 82, 101, 120, 187
merchants 47, 51, 63, 82, 141, 142, 143, 144, 161, 164, 168, 169, 170, 171, 173
Mercury 5, 59, 60, 67, 240, 261
Merodach 59
Merrie Land 175
Messiah 38, 197
Michaelangelo 24, 247
Mifflin, Thomas 179
Mikulski, Sen. Barbara 3
milice du Christ 187, 199
militiamen 100, 181, 285
Miller, Rep. George 3
Miracle On Main Street xii, xvii-xviii
Miranda prorsus 71, 72
missionary adaptation 11, 13, 208, 211, 238, 256, 258
Mitchell, Rep. George 2
Molay, Jacques de 40
Moliere 67
Moneta 10
monetary system xii, xvii-xviii, 82
Montaigu 44
Montgomery C. Meigs 249
Montreal 194, 195
Morals and Dogma 118
Moses 203, 205
Mount Rothesay 137
Moynihan, Sen. Daniel P. 2
Mozart 67
Munich 40, 66,67, 156, 238
Murtha, Rep John 3
Muslim 35, 36

N

Nabonidas 276, 277
Najera, Duke of 28, 30
Nantes, Edict of 64, 85
Naples 40, 111
Naram-Sin 266-267, 277
National Association of Evangelicals 9
National Association of Scholars 73
National Council of Churches 9
National Portrait Gallery (UK) 152
Navarette 30
Navarre 30, 110
Negrona 32
New Deal 107
New England 98, 104, 111, 122, 140, 164, 184, 195
New France 98
New Orleans xv, 139
New Testament 20, 22, 29, 31, 32, 39
New Wardour Castle 172
new world order 15, 220, 224, 265, 283
New York 142, 147, 148, 173, 178, 240, 243, 247, 248
Niccolo Machiavelli 23
Ninety-five Theses 22, 29
Noah Webster 78
nonjuring bishops 152
Norfolk, Eighth Duke of 123, 135
Norfolk, Ninth Duke of 135, 136
North Carolina 139
North, Lord 143, 174, 185
notariqon 51, 161
Nova Scotia 150
Novus ordo seclorum 15, 214, 220, 256
Number In Scripture 198
nuncios 97

O

O'Gorman, Thomas 152
Oakar, Rep. Mary Rose 3
oath xiv, 40, 48,51,52,57,95, 119, 121,

152, 168, 187, 251, 274
oath of obedience 48, 51, 187
Obey, Rep. David 3
Odin 59
Ohio 99, 100, 108, 138
Oliva, Superior General John Paul 133
Olive Branch Petition 182, 185
On the State of the Church 113, 157, 159
opium 167
Osiris 11
Oswald, Lee Harvey 251
Othello 150
Otis, James 138
Our Flag 189, 192
Oxford 23, 102, 103, 112, 1 15, 177, 218

P

Paine, Tom 180, 185, 229
Pamplona 28, 32
Papal States 106, 111
paper currency 37, 100, 141
Paraguay 106
Paris 12, 19, 37, 40, 44, 67, 97, 104, 106, 139, 140, 157, 162, 164, 169, 170, 177, 184, 185, 208, 209
Paris, Treaty of 139, 141, 168
Parlement 106, 107, 108, 184
Parliament 68, 94, 106, 138, 141, 142, 143, 169, 171, 173, 175, 178, 181, 184, 185
Parma 111
Pascal, Blaise 79, 107, 232
Pastoral Letters 79, 106
Patriarcha (Robt. Filmer) 130, 131, 132, 133
Patuxents 176
Payen, Hugh de 35
Peculari quadam 70
Pell, Sen. Claiborne 3
penances 31, 43, 184
Penn, Admiral Sir William 101
Perm, William 100, 101, 102
Pennsylvania 85, 86, 100, 103, 121, 124, 139, 147, 152, 177, 178, 179, 181, 182, 184, 185, 211
pentagram 39, 210, 211, 213, 228, 257
Persephone 5, 234, 237, 238, 244, 258
personal liberty 85, 150
Petty, Robert (Lord Shelburne) 139, 168, 208
Pharaoh 203, 205, 206
Philadelphia 9, 102, 103, 141, 142, 162, 171, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 185, 194, 195, 197, 199, 211, 237, 244
Philadelphia, Charter for the City of 102
philosopher's death 190
philosophes 117, 118, 120, 129, 190
Pike, Albert Grand Commander 118
Piscataways 176
Poland 64, 103
Politics of Witchcraft, The xviii
Pombal, Sebastian the Marquis de 105
Pompadour, Madame de 108
Pontifex Maximus 6, 10, 13, 15, 16, 37, 82, 85, 86, 119, 120, 180, 182, 215, 216, 220, 221, 231, 256
Pontifical Institute 87
Popes
  Adrian I 21
  Adrian VI 22, 32
  Alessandro VI 167
  Alexander VI 46
  Boniface VIII 4, 37
  Clement V 38, 40
  Clement VII 18
  Clement VIII 1 30
  Clement XII 119
  Clement XIII 106, 110, 184, 185
  Clement XIV 179, 185
  Eugenius III 36
  Gelasius I 47
  Gregory IX 14, 16
  Gregory XIII 57
  Gregory XV 69
  Honorius II 36
  John Paul II 1,6
  John XXIII 71
  Leo I 11
  Leo III 21
  Leo X 21, 199
  Paul III 42, 46, 204
  Paul VI 72
  Pius IX 235, 252
  Pius V 113
  Pius VII 232
  Pius XII 80
  Sylvester 284
  Innocent VII 21
population, Roman Catholic 86
Portugal 36, 40, 64, 65, 105, 106, 112, 118, 119, 122, 168, 175, 184
powder plays 68
preachers 57, 148
Prefect of the Sodality 156, 161, 177, 195
Presbyterian 148
Primitive Christian Church 38
Princeton University 132
Proclus 237

Professor, the 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 194, 195, 199, 200
Ptoprietors, the 100
Protagoras 23
Protestant xiii, xv, 5, 46, 49, 55, 56, 57, 58, 64, 65, 71, 77, 85, 94, 104, 113, 118, 124, 129, 130, 131, 133, 137, 144, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 158, 159, 160, 162, 175, 176, 182, 188, 199, 200, 206, 210, 241,242,248,253,259, 284
Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States 153
Protestantism 18, 23, 29, 32, 44, 57, 66, 86, 87,95, 111, 120, 157, 159, 254
Protestants xiii, xv, 5, 49, 50, 52, 55, 58, 67, 87, 102, 113, 121, 147, 152, 159, 176, 184, 233, 242, 254, 259
Psychopomp, the (Mercury) 54, 60, 261
purgatory 22, 57
pyramid 58, 118, 121, 136, 214, 222
Pyrenees 28

Q

Quaker(s) 100, 101, 102, 103, 181
Quebec 194
Quebec Act 173, 178
Queen
  Catherine of Aragon (England) 44
  Catherine of Braganza (England) 122
  Elizabeth I (England) 67, 130, 167
  Henriette-Marie (England) 174, 175
  Isabella 27, 28
  of Heaven 30, 212, 216, 256

R

radio 70, 72, 74
Rager, John Clement 132
Rangel, Charles 3
Raphael 249
ratio studiorum (method of study) 65, 66, 74, 120, 129, 159, 177, 180, 182
Ray, James Earl xviii
Reagan, Ronald 1, 9
Reconciliation 287, 288, 290, 291
Red Room 151
redcoats 143, 160, 181, 185, 194
Regimini militantis ecclesiae 51, 52, 82, 93, 95, 160, 201
Religious History *of the American People* 242
Remus 11
resurrection 23, 29, 39, 187, 189, 191, 193, 195, 197, 201, 213, 223, 224, 232
Rev. Samuel Seabury 152
Revere, Paul 177
Rhodes 32
Ricci, Superior General Lorenzo xix, 86, 87, 88, 94, 95, 97, 98, 100, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 110, 112, 113, 114, 115, 122, 138, 140, 144, 148, 149, 150, 153, 156, 159, 161, 164, 170, 171, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 193, 194, 195, 197, 198, 199, 200,201
Ricci, Sebastiano 54, 59, 261
Rock Creek Farm 176
Rogers, Will 107
Roman College 80, 103, 190
Rome 1,3,4,5,6, 10
"Rome" (District of Columbia) 4
Romulus 11
Roosevelt, Franklin D. 107
Roothaan, Superior General John 247
Rosicrucian 68, 123, 160, 170
Rostenkowski, Rep. Dan 3
rosy cross *(rose croix)* 36
Rothesay, Isle of Bute 136
Rothschild 160
Rothschild, Meyer 161
Royal Proclamation of 1763 139
Roybal, Rep. Edward 3
rule of law 280, 281,283

S

Sacraments, the seven Roman Catholic 21, 57
Sacred College 10
Sacred Heart 108, 109, 150, 184, 197, 213, 214, 223, 256
sacrifice 6, 15, 57, 69, 93, 216, 231, 232, 259, 265, 268, 269
Sacy, de 98
St. Alphonse Liguori 80
St. Apollinaris 11
St. Catherine 28, 30
St. Cecilia 197
St. Denis 12, 45
St. Francis Xavier45, 48, 291
St. Isaac's Cathedral 242
St. John 39, 40, 173
St. John's Lodge 173
St. Martina 11
St. Omer's Jesuit College 4, 67, 101, 104, 170ff
St. Omer, Godfroi de 35
St. Paul 11, 48, 255
St. Peter 11, 22, 28, 38, 46, 114, 247

St. Peter's Cathedral (Basilica) 22
Salmeron, Alfonso 56
Salzburg 67
Sarbanes, Sen. Paul 2
Sargon 271, 272, 273, 276, 277
Satan 16, 20, 236, 281-283, 289, 292
Satanael 39
Saturn 11, 67, 93, 220, 221, 224, 229, 234, 237, 238, 244, 256
Scottish Rite Freemasonry 40, 240
Scripture 13, 14, 15, 16, 21, 30, 39, 46, 59, 65, 66, 70, 73, 120, 150, 159, 204, 205, 206, 208, 209, 210, 212, 218, 223, 229, 260
Second Continental Congress 181, 194
Secret Teachings of All Ages (Hall) 123
Seventh Day Adventists 9
Sewanee, Tennessee xiii
Shakespeare 66, 67, 68
Sharpsburg 242
Shelburne, Lord (Robert Petty) 139, 168, 208
Sibylline 15, 59
Sidney, Algernon 130, 131
smuggling 141, 184
social communication 72, 73
Society of Dissenters 149
Society of Jesus xiv, xvi, 46, 47, 48, 50, 51, 60,77,78, 79,81,82,86, 94, 97,104, 106, 107, 110, 111, 112, 114, 115, 117, 121, 136, 137, 159, 167, 168, 169, 187, 188, 198, 199, 201, 204, 232
Solomon, King 30, 39
South Carolina 139, 240
Spain 18, 24, 27, 28, 30, 36, 40, 43, 44, 109, 110, 111, 112, 168, 175, 184
Spinelli, Cardinal 148
Spiritual Exercises 45, 66
Stamp Act 141, 142, 147, 148, 184
Stamp Act Congress 142, 184
Ste. Barbe, College of 44
Steinmayer, Father Ferdinand (alias Farmer) 147
Stevens, Rev. Thomas 168
Stourton, Charles Philippe 155, 157, 161, 164, 171, 177
Stuart monarchs 113
Sun-Tzu vii, 86-94, 98, 104, 105, 111, 113, 120-121, 130, 135, 149, 162, 185, 189, 286, 287, 289
Surratt, John H. 253
Surratt, Mary 253, 254
Swieten, Gerard von 118
Switzerland 30, 31,49, 106

T

Tammuz 11
Taney, Justice Roger Brooke 239, 240
Tea Act 169, 172, 177, 185
television 71, 72, 74
Templarism 68
Tennessee Waltz: The Making of A Political Prisoner xviii
Terminator II 60
Test Act 148
Teutonic Knights 40, 58
Teutons 59
thirteen xix, 27, 38, 40, 85, 86, 87, 88, 89, 91,93,95, 122, 162, 172, 176, 177, 182, 189, 192, 193, 194, 195, 200, 210, 214, 233, 239, 257
Thirteen Articles Concerning Military Art 86, 87,89,91,93,95
Thirteenth Amendment 239
Thomson, Charles 123, 124, 125, 140, 142, 143, 177, 179, 181, 182, 183, 209, 211, 217
Thorpe, Francis xix, 172, 188
Thoth 59
"Tiber" 4
Tillot, Minister de 118
Tisbury 123, 172
Torgau 21
Townshend Acts 143, 168, 184, 185
Townshend, Charles 142
Trafalgar Square 152
Treasurer of the Apostolic Chamber 179, 184
Trent, Council of 54, 55, 56, 57, 60, 65, 160, 204
Trickster 60, 82, 261, 282, 286-287
Trier 154, 156, 157, 158, 160
Troyes 36, 37
Turks 20, 32
tyranny 115, 117, 123, 133, 141, 143, 148, 149,150,179,185, 198, 203,251,257

U

U.S. Catholic Conference 10
United States foreign policy 1
United States Supreme Court 239
United States, Great Seal of the 16
University of Paris 44
University of Saumer 102
University of the South xiii
University of Trier 157

Unknown Superior 59, 98, 120, 137, 138, 191,200,223,252
Unuk 271,272,277
usury 81, 107

V

Valladolid 28
Vatican 2, 3, 4, 5, 9, 32, 38, 46, 70, 104, 114, 120, 159, 160, 171, 180, 185, 194, 237, 241, 247, 248, 249, 255
Vatican II (1964) 3, 4
Venice xix, 32, 169
Vernon Howell 286
Vicar of Christ 21,47, 125, 195,200
Vienna 40, 66, 104
Virgil 5, 15, 183,216,217,219,256
Virginia 99, 140, 175, 177, 178, 184, 244
Virginia Declaration of Rights 132
Visitandines 197
Visitation 197
Voltaire 102, 107, 117, 177, 184
Voragine 28
Vox clamantis 40
Vulcan 5, 257

W

Waco 224, 285, 286
Waite, Arthur Edward 173
Walsh, Dr. James 227
Walter, Thomas U. 239, 242, 244, 250
Walters, Vernon 2
Wardour Castle 123, 174, 185
Wartburg Castle 22, 29
Washington and His Compeers (Hayden) 122
Washington, D.C. 8, 9, 248
Washington, George 153, 181, 182, 189, 193, 230, 245
Webster's Dictionary 78, 79, 82, 250
Weishaupt, Adam 170
Welds 151
West Indies 67, 141
West Point 240
White House 176, 226, 227, 228, 230, 241, 245, 254
White, Andrew 175, 176, 197, 235
Wiget, Father B.F. 253
Wills, Garry 68
Wilson, William 2
Wiltshire 123, 172, 185
Wittenburg castle 22
Woody Allen 279
World War II 71
Worms, Edict of 55
Wotan 59
writers 12, 72, 100, 117, 212, 222, 232
WWWebster 79, 81, 138, 139, 140, 184

Y

Yahweh 59, 205, 206, 212, 217, 260
Yom Kippur 39
Young, Notley 4, 232

Z

Zohar ("Book of Splendor,") 39
Zoroaster 118
Zwingli 56

ROGUE AGENTS

The Cercle and the 6I in the Private Cold War 1951 - 1991

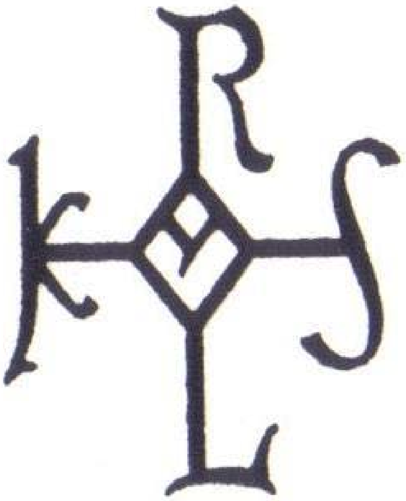

by

David Teacher

ROGUE AGENTS

The Cercle and the 6I in the Private Cold War

ABSTRACT

The Cercle Pinay was founded in 1952-53 as a confidential forum of European leaders who sought to promote the vision of a Catholic and conservative Europe and to oppose the threat of Communism. Shrouded in secrecy, the Cercle brought together statesmen such as Antoine Pinay, Konrad Adenauer, Franz Josef Strauß, Giulio Andreotti, Otto von Habsburg, Richard Nixon, Henry Kissinger and David Rockefeller, as well as top figures from the European and American intelligence services. Following the rise of student counter-culture in the 1960s, the Cercle focused on domestic subversion, using its network of propaganda and intelligence veterans to attack progressive politicians such as Harold Wilson, Willy Brandt, Jimmy Carter and François Mitterrand, and to promote their favoured candidates: Giscard d'Estaing, Margaret Thatcher, Ronald Reagan and Franz Josef Strauß. Throughout the 1960s and 1970s, the Cercle also worked to defend apartheid South Africa and the dictatorships in Spain and Portugal. After the electoral victory of the Right in 1979-1980, the Cercle and the private intelligence agency, the 6I, targeted Western peace campaigners and the new Soviet regime under Mikhail Gorbachev. Meanwhile, Habsburg played a key part in the fall of the Iron Curtain and then ensured the integration of Eastern Europe into the European Union.

REVIEWS

"Teacher began this [in November 1988] in an essay in *Lobster* 17 ('Brian Crozier, the Pinay Circle and James Goldsmith') and he just kept pursuing it, expanding it. [...] A monumental piece of work" - Robin Ramsay, *Lobster* no. 71, Summer 2016.

"I read some of your book last night, and it really is an excellent piece of work [...] having known some of the 'personalities' - Tony Cavendish, George Kennedy Young, Airey Neave - it is fascinating to see their respective roles set in context. I agree with your view that there is still a lot to be discovered and written about the story, especially the role of 'Shield' and The Monday Club. It really is a remarkable story and one that has been largely ignored by the media and historians" - Colin Wallace, key British psy-ops witness.

"This is mind-boggling research which I have just begun to digest" - Peter Dale Scott, former Professor, University of Berkeley, California; noted parapolitics author.

"Teacher should be counted as one of the major pioneers on documenting the conservative Paneuropa elite of mainland Europe [...] simply the most detailed book on the subject" - Cercle researcher Joël van der Reijden of https://isgp-studies.com/.

Teacher "provides an extremely valuable account of some of the characters participating in the Cercle and on the transnational network of organizations in which these protagonists were active. His account is based on numerous internal documents and publications of these groups as well as a vast amount of literature in six different languages" - Dr. Adrian Hänni, Lecturer at the Distance Learning University Switzerland/Postdoctoral Fellow at the University of Leiden.

An "exhaustive compilation of publicly available [sic] information on the Cercle made by Teacher (2011). Teacher's accurate documentation deserves respect" - Junior Professor Johannes Großmann, University of Tübingen.

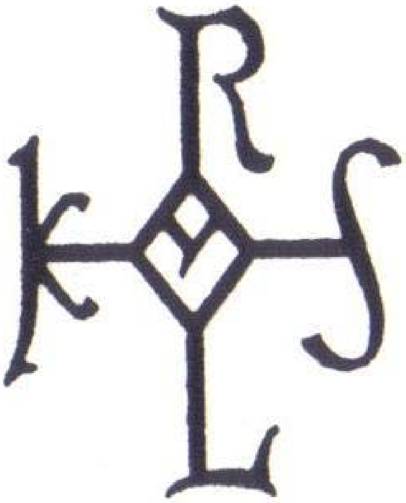

The seal of Karolus Magnus or Charlemagne - the AESP logo

FRONTISPIECE

Full sixth edition, January 2021.
© 1993, 2008, 2011, 2015, 2017, 2021. All rights strictly reserved.

The author does not necessarily endorse or espouse the contents or opinions of any website which may host this work or any interpretation of this research which may be produced by third parties. He may be contacted at david-teacher@hotmail.com. This full version of the sixth edition of this book includes a documentary annex of mostly unpublished internal documents from the various groups in the Cercle complex; both the full and the "text-only" (text and footnotes only) versions are available at https://isgp-studies.com/david-teacher. Text and translations by the author use British spelling and the necessary accents and letters in other languages; weblinks and quotations from British and American sources which do not use such characters or spelling are reproduced unamended. To find all references to a person, readers should therefore search this text for their name both with and without accents or characters, e. g. Strauß and Strauss. To access weblinks, right-click to choose the Select Tool, highlight the entire weblink, copy and paste into a browser. This may not retrieve the relevant internet page; if so, checking that Adobe Acrobat has not dropped a hyphen in the link or deleting the characters %20 from the pasted link (indicating a line break or inadvertent space in this text) should ensure correct page display.

***

Dedicated to six courageous people in whose debt we all stand:

Colin Wallace, Cathy Massiter, Mordechai Vanunu,
Chelsea Manning, Peter Francis and Edward Snowden.

***

"The heirs of the French, English and American revolutions had partly believed in their own phrases about the rights of man, freedom of speech, equality before the law, and the like, and have even allowed their conduct to be influenced by them to some extent. But by the fourth decade of the twentieth century all the main currents of political thought were authoritarian. The earthly paradise had been discredited at exactly the moment when it became realizable. Every new political theory, by whatever name it called itself, led back to hierarchy and regimentation. And in the general hardening of outlook that set in round about 1930, practices which had been long abandoned, in some cases for hundreds of years - imprisonment without trial, the use of war prisoners as slaves, public executions, torture to extract confessions, the use of hostages, and the deportation of whole populations - not only became common again, but were tolerated and even defended by people who considered themselves enlightened and progressive" – Emmanuel Goldstein in *1984*, George Orwell, 1949.

***

CONTENTS

Introduction (1993) … … … pg 7

Foreword (2021) … … … pg 11

1945-1963 - Post-War Paneuropeans … … pg 17

1964-1970 - Mobilisation … … … pg 31

1971-1975 - Outreach and Operations … … pg 67

1975-1976 - Crises and Continuation … … pg 103

1977-1980 - Election Fever … … … pg 145

1981-1991 - Forward to Victory … … … pg 199

Postscript - The Garnier-Lançon Papers … … pg 245

Epilogue … … … … pg 279

Footnotes … … … pg 281

Sources … … … pg 475

CIOC-CIDCC-Sint Unum Annex … … … pg 489
NSIC Annex … … … pg 529
IFF Annex … … … pg 553
Documentary Annex … … … pg 571

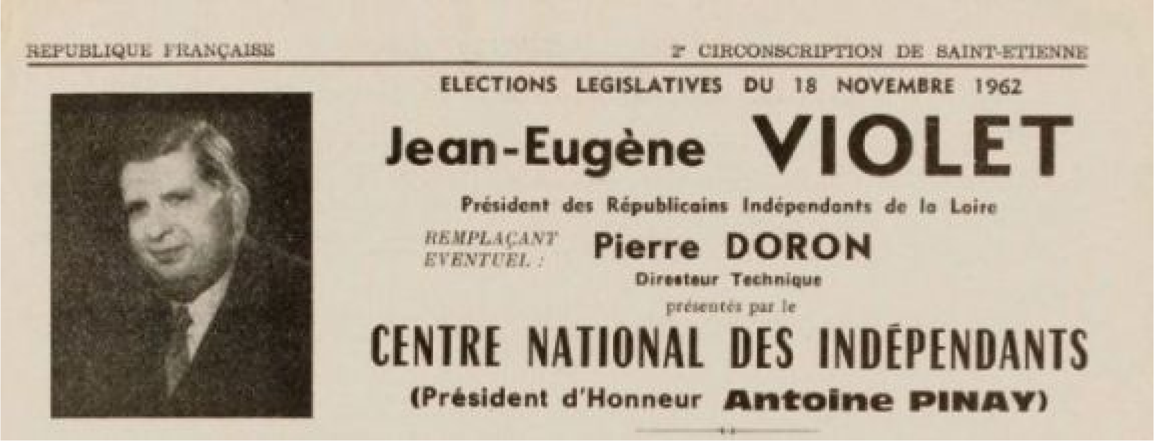

REPUBLIQUE FRANÇAISE 2e CIRCONSCRIPTION DE SAINT-ETIENNE

ELECTIONS LEGISLATIVES DU 18 NOVEMBRE 1962

Jean-Eugène VIOLET

Président des Républicains Indépendants de la Loire

REMPLAÇANT EVENTUEL : **Pierre DORON**

Directeur Technique

présentés par le

CENTRE NATIONAL DES INDÉPENDANTS

(Président d'Honneur **Antoine PINAY**)

Election manifesto for Jean-Eugène Violet, November 1962 – see footnote 14

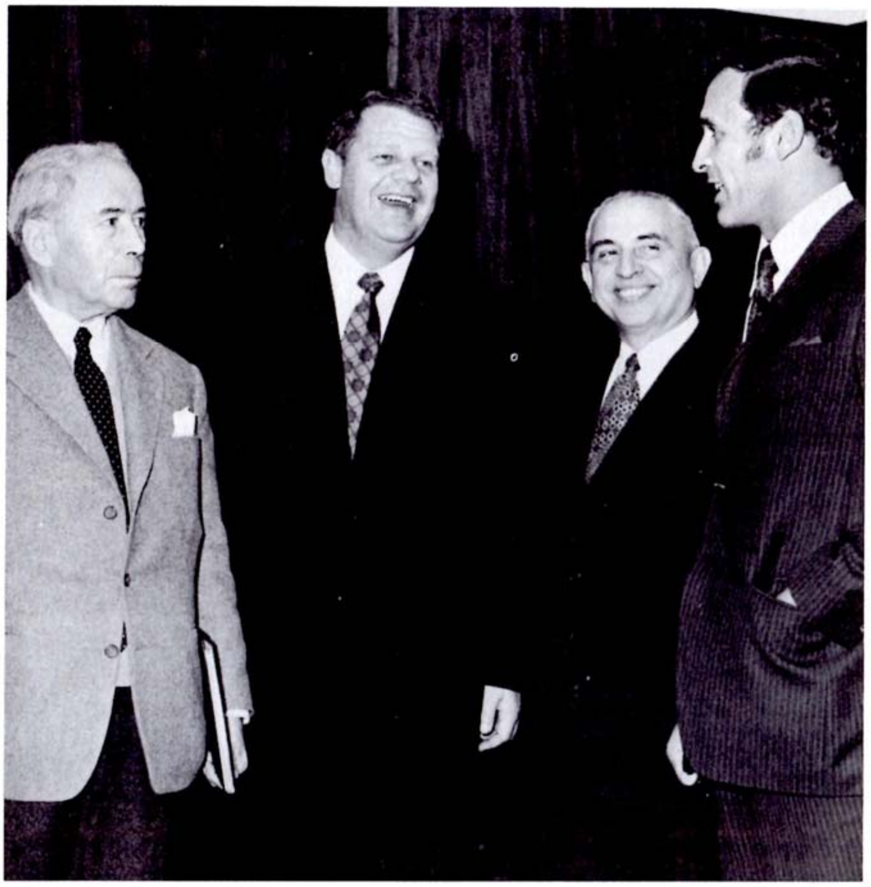

Ex President Pinay of France (left) in discussion with Dr. Mulder in 1973 and, next to me, Dr. Julien Violet, a prominent French advocate. In 1974 we secretly funded the establishment of an Institute in Paris to study strategic problems of the modern world with special emphasis on Africa and South Africa.

Photo: Department of Information

(L-R) Pinay, Mulder, a misnamed Violet and Rhoodie
from Rhoodie's 1983 book, *The Real Information Scandal*

INTRODUCTION
(1993)

One of the paradoxes of modern political journalism is its inherent cultural isolation. Whilst no-one would deny that the major political developments in a given country may owe much to international forces, the investigation of political processes has remained overwhelmingly confined within national boundaries. This is partly due to the linguistic problems, specialist knowledge and additional burden involved in researching foreign politics; however, this cultural isolation is also compounded by a vague and usually unexpressed opinion that the connections of a foreign Conservative MP cannot be of great import to a better understanding of the murkier side of politics at home in one's own country. Yet it is clear that no country is an island. This is nowhere more true than in the field of parapolitics, the networks of unofficial power that, usually via serving or retired friends in the world's major intelligence and security services, exert greater influence than is generally realised on national political life. Both the private networks of influence and the intelligence services work internationally; more often than not, they work hand in hand in a shadow world that brings together top politicians and veterans of covert action, counter-subversion and media manipulation. An investigation to delineate such networks of covert transnational cooperation must, to succeed, tackle the complexities of the unseen political world in many countries.

This study is an attempt at a preliminary transnational investigation of the Paneuropean Right and particularly of the covert forum, the Cercle Pinay and its complex of groups. Amongst Cercle intelligence contacts are former operatives from the American CIA, DIA and INR, Britain's MI5, MI6 and IRD, France's SDECE, Germany's BND, BfV and MAD, Holland's BVD, Belgium's Sûreté de l'Etat, SDRA and PIO, apartheid South Africa's BOSS, and the Swiss and Saudi intelligence services. Politically, the Cercle complex has interlocked with the whole panoply of international right-wing groups: the Paneuropean Union, the European Movement, CEDI, the Bilderberg Group, WACL, Opus Dei, the Moonies, Western Goals and the Heritage Foundation. Amongst the prominent politicians associated with the Cercle Pinay were Antoine Pinay, Konrad Adenauer, Archduke Otto von Habsburg, Franz Josef Strauß, Giulio Andreotti, Manuel Fraga Iribarne, Paul Vanden Boeynants, John Vorster, General Antonio de Spínola, Margaret Thatcher and Ronald Reagan.

Despite a wealth of covert operations centring on media campaigns to promote or denigrate election candidates, the international impact of the Cercle complex has not yet [1993] been the main focus for an investigation in any language. The information contained in this study was compiled from a sheaf of internal documents from the Cercle Pinay and its partners, the Belgian AESP, the British ISC and the Swiss ISP, as well as over one hundred books and numerous Press reports in English, French, German and Spanish (all translations by this author).

The insight afforded is only partial; as Brian Crozier wrote in his memoirs about this author's previous research on the Cercle complex: "There are pitfalls in writing about confidential matters from the outside, and drawing on similarly handicapped material" (1). However, the publication in 1993 of Crozier's memoirs, *Free Agent - The Unseen War 1941-1991*, served to confirm the main thrust of this investigation and filled in some but by no means all of the loopholes; in turn, this investigation has uncovered some of what Crozier preferred to conceal. Once the fragmented information is pieced together, the network that emerges cannot be overlooked: the Cercle complex can be seen to be an international coalition of right-wing intelligence veterans, working internationally to promote top conservative politicians who would shape the world in the 1970s and 1980s.

To take the British example, much of the destabilisation of British democracy in the 1970s can only be fully understood by analysing the international support given to groups like the Anglo-American "deniable propaganda" outlet, the Institute for the Study of Conflict. The Cercle Pinay was a major source of support for the ISC virtually from its inception on; the Cercle Pinay and the ISC also tied in with another key British group, the Foreign Affairs Research Institute, heavily funded by BOSS, apartheid South Africa's secret service. BOSS's other incursions into domestic politics in Britain, notably their smear operations against leading Liberals such as Jeremy Thorpe and Peter Hain, were a significant factor in the hijacking of British democracy in the 1970s. Three Cercle members on the FARI Board assisted FARI's actions from 1976 through to the early 1980s. FARI in many ways was the British successor to a previous Cercle operation to support South Africa; the Cercle and the ISC had been active partners in setting up a Paris-based propaganda outlet in 1974 as part of South Africa's covert media campaign later exposed in the "Muldergate" scandal.

German intelligence reports on the Cercle Pinay written in late 1979 and early 1980 which were published in *Der Spiegel* in 1982 also shed new light on a "Thatcher faction" within MI6 in the lead-up to the Conservatives' 1979 election victory. Whilst receiving wide publicity in France and Germany, these reports have never been covered by the British Press. This serious omission is astounding in the light of the undeniable authenticity of the reports and the startling allegations they contain: one of the German intelligence reports dated November 1979 quotes a planning paper by Crozier about a Cercle complex operation "to affect a change of government in the United Kingdom (accomplished)". The report goes on to describe a working meeting held at Chequers, the Prime Minister's country residence, just after the Conservatives' election victory which brought together Prime Minister Thatcher, serving MI6 Chief Sir Arthur Franks and two Cercle complex members - Brian Crozier and former MI6 Division Head Nicholas Elliott. Crozier's planning paper quoted by the German report also specifically mentioned international Cercle campaigns "aiming to discredit hostile personalities and/or events".

This is no isolated example; throughout the 1970s the Cercle Pinay complex was active in similar ways in France, Germany, Spain, Portugal, Italy and Belgium. In the latter three countries, the Cercle complex also had close links to those waging a strategy of tension to support a right-wing coup, the latest example of which was the strategy of tension which killed 28 people in Belgium from 1982 to 1985. The Cercle complex's other covert campaigns to promote right-wing candidates concentrated in two key periods: the mid-1970s and 1979-1980, both central to the electoral defeat of the Left throughout Europe generally.

The Cercle Pinay itself is an informal but confidential strategic talking-shop consisting of a core of "regulars" who invite occasional guests to Cercle meetings and who are assisted by a range of associates in many nationally-based groups. In order to make the complexities of the Right in several European countries understandable to readers, I have focused on the personnel links within and between the national groups forming part of the Cercle Pinay complex. As one of the tendencies of such groups is for their members to "play musical chairs", changing place frequently on the raft of names sponsoring an organisation, a personnel-based research approach can give rise to the danger of over-estimating the ties that link some characters or organisations. Sharing a Board membership with someone does not necessarily imply intimate knowledge of the other's various activities.

The fragmentary nature of the information available does not allow us to draw definite conclusions about to what extent a particular group or person was aware of Cercle operations, particularly of those run by several of the Cercle "regulars" with intelligence experience who would later form a private covert intelligence service, the 6I, within the Cercle complex. Crozier himself makes the point that many of the prominent politicians invited to sit in on Cercle strategic sessions had no knowledge of their hosts' more clandestine operational activities – if only because of the "need to know" principle.

Nonetheless, a stalwart multi-functionary on the Boards of several groups linked to the Cercle can be presumed to have some deeper involvement beyond just lending his name to the cause. This study can only be a beginning; a closer look at some of those involved at national level could shed more light on the significance of the Cercle complex. The only point of certainty beyond the information given here is that the Cercle merits further investigation.

Finally, this book is dedicated to the small community of unpaid parapolitics researchers who have done much to uncover the truth that lies behind the history of the 20th century. Two in particular deserve thanks for the help and encouragement they have given me in compiling the information given here: Robin Ramsay of the *Lobster* and Jeffrey M. Bale of the University of Berkeley, California.

Many journalists have already covered fragments of the Cercle Pinay complex: Péan, the *Spiegel*, Roth and Ender, Ramsay and Dorril of the *Lobster*, Dumont, Mungo, the Arbeitskreis Nicaragua who produced *IGfM*, the Young European Federalists, Herman and O'Sullivan, Gijsels, and Brewaeys and Deliège were all important sources.

David Teacher

***

IN MEMORIAM
(2016)

Veteran Belgian journalist Philippe Brewaeys, who worked for the anti-fascist magazines *Pour*, *Article 31* and *CelsiuS* as well as for the RTBF and the *Soir Magazine*, was of great assistance in helping to complete the first draft of this book in the early 1990s and was the source for the internal AESP documents included in the documentary annex mentioned in the frontispiece. He died on 2nd May 2016.

R. I. P.

http://resistances-infos.blogspot.be/2016/05/philippe-brewaeys-journaliste.html

***

IN MEMORIAM
(2019)

The *grand journaliste d'enquête* Pierre Péan, who first unearthed the story of the Cercle Pinay amongst many others, died on 25th July 2019; his obituaries can be found at https://www.lemonde.fr/disparitions/article/2019/07/26/mort-de-l-ecrivain-et-journaliste-d-investigation-pierre-pean_5493540_3382.html; https://www.nouvelobs.com/teleobs/20190725.OBS16420/l-ecrivain-journaliste-pierre-pean-est-mort.html.

R. I. P.

FOREWORD
(2021)

The text which follows has more than doubled in size since the original 100,000 word manuscript of a book intended for publication in 1993 as the culmination of several years of research on the Cercle Pinay complex of groups, some of which had previously appeared in the *Lobster* magazine in the UK in 1988-89. Ironically foreshadowed in the Introduction, the initial manuscript fell victim to its main claim to any merit – that it was the first transnational investigation of a paneuropean covert complex, the Cercle Pinay and its many national associates. Editors in several countries expressed great interest in publishing the manuscript ... providing that the "foreign bits" could be reduced and the book refocused on their respective countries. With little chance of integral publication, the book project was shelved and, apart from one major revision in 1993 to integrate Brian Crozier's memoirs which confirmed the main thrust of this investigation, the manuscript gathered dust for the next fifteen years. The world moved on, and the events described below, hot news when the book was completed, became cold history.

Things would have remained like that had I not come across Joël van der Reijden's ISGP website (https://isgp-studies.com/) in 2007 – at that time, the only serious investigation of the Cercle Pinay since the original articles by Robin Ramsay and myself in the *Lobster* in the late 1980s. In appreciation of Joël's efforts, I revised the manuscript and published it as the second edition in 2008. It was however already clear that the history of the Cercle was incomplete: whilst the scattered print references had outlined some of the operations by the Cercle or the 6I in the 1970s and 1980s, almost nothing was known about the first two decades of the Cercle's existence. The confidential discussions of Adenauer, Strauß, Habsburg, Pinay and Violet went unminuted by the Cercle itself, and their private papers remained out of public view; only after their deaths were some of them opened to scholarly research.

Fortunately however, other contemporary sources did detail their activities from the 1950s to the 1970s within the other axis to this investigation – Habsburg's CEDI and the international Christian groups CIOC and CIDCC which included Pinay, Violet and Dubois. Franco's extensive support for this international Catholic network was well documented at the time by the Spanish Press, whose reporting is all the more reliable as, under Franco's regime of press censorship, every article had to be approved before publication by his Ministry of Information and Tourism, headed from 1962 to 1973 by two CEDI and Cercle mainstays, Fraga Iribarne and Sánchez Bella. With the advent of the Internet, these Press resources became available outside of Spain, and after further research of the two free online archives of *La Vanguardia Española* and *ABC*, a third and expanded edition of *Rogue Agents* was published in 2011, with Habsburg and Pinay included in the subtitle to aid internet searches and to reflect the added material.

Intended to be the final version, the full third edition also included video weblinks for the major protagonists and an annex comprising all of the roughly 175 pages of internal documents used in research for this book, many from Florimond Damman's AESP, the Cercle's operational centre in Brussels throughout the 1970s. Most of these AESP documents had not previously been publicly released, online or elsewhere. The annex of internal documents is contained in this full sixth edition.

Due to the complexity of covering both the Cercle and the 6I in their various activities in nine countries, it became too unwieldy to integrate all information into the main body of the text. Many details which are relevant but not central to this account of the 'Cercle complex' are therefore relegated to footnotes and marked with an asterisk thus (xxx)*, worth consulting whilst reading. Footnotes which merely give source references without further information are marked (xxx) without an asterisk and need not be consulted whilst reading the main text.

Since the publication of the third edition in 2011, several significant primary sources on the Cercle have emerged, leading to the unforeseen need to update *Rogue Agents*. The first major primary sources to surface were internal Cercle meeting records from June 1982 to February 1985 included in the Hoover Institution archive of papers from Monique Garnier-Lançon, security advisor to Jacques Chirac and French convenor of the Cercle in the early 1980s. Published on the web by Joël van den Reijden, they may be found at https://isgp-studies.com/2011-10-26-first-ever-documents-on-le-cercle-pinay (the list for the early 1983 meeting, almost certainly held in Washington, is included in the Bonn 1983 download).

Needless to say, the first direct revelation of Cercle participation in the early to mid-1980s could not be overlooked. These Cercle meeting records, detailed in the Postscript, confirm the main personalities already mentioned in this book, whilst also identifying several previously unknown members, including former senior CIA and MI6 officers as well as powerful members of the Reagan Administration and the US Congressional staff. On the European level, the Cercle lists also document the regular participation at Cercle meetings of top figures from not only the CSU's Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung, but also the CDU's Konrad-Adenauer-Stiftung, the two main backers and beneficiaries of the private intelligence service run by erstwhile 6I member Hans von Stauffenberg.

Perhaps the most explosive revelation in the Cercle participants' lists concerns Belgium, then suffering a wave of murderous assaults on supermarkets – the Brabant Wallon killings. The documents confirm the presence within the mid-1980s Cercle of almost all of the members of the post-Damman MAUE Board, a discovery that should not be under-estimated. At the same time as attending the Cercle meetings, the MAUE team was certainly also working closely with the 6I, Crozier's private operational intelligence agency, in its virulent international campaign against the nuclear disarmament movement.

Belgian researcher Hervé Beghinselen has provided invaluable access to an extensive archive of the LIL internal bulletin *Damoclès* as well as to the Hoover Institution papers of two key sources: the Bulgarian Kyril Drenikoff, a longstanding intimate of Belgian Cercle convenor Jacques Jonet and LIL mainstay Paul Vankerkhoven, and Monique Garnier-Lançon, the French Cercle convenor mentioned above who was also Vice-Chairman of the EIS. These primary sources shed much light both on the role of the Belgian LIL/AESP/MAUE/PIO complex in running the Belgian 6I front groups RAPPEL and the IEPS, and on their troubled relationship with the EIS.

To turn to America, new primary sources detailing the Cercle's transatlantic outreach in 1969-1970 have emerged following the declassification of the meeting notes and telephone transcripts of Henry Kissinger, including a record prepared for Kissinger of the debate at a December 1970 Cercle meeting – a document which gives unique insight into Cercle discussions, never minuted by the Cercle itself. The memorandum, kindly provided by Dac Cong Papsouley, is reproduced in an annex bringing together this author's research on the post-war Christian groups CIOC and the CIDCC which involved Pinay, Violet and Dubois.

The most intriguing document from this period is a further secret memorandum from Kissinger to Nixon with an attached CIA report which detail the involvement of Pesenti and Violet in a hitherto unknown covert Catholic group, Sint Unum, as described by Alice Arduini, formerly of the University of Florence, whose research paper is included in the annex with permission and with thanks.

Another important American diplomatic source was the wealth of declassified State Department cables from the Central Foreign Policy Files made available online by the National Archives and Records Administration. Although only covering the period from 1973 to 1979, the cables provide much detail about several Cercle members and reveal a hitherto unknown four-day Cercle meeting held in November 1977, coordinated by Jameson and attended amongst others by Pinay, Strauß, Sánchez Bella, David Rockefeller, both the former and the serving National Security Advisors Henry Kissinger and Zbigniew Brzezinski, and William Colby, who had retired the previous year as Director of Central Intelligence.

Published in November 2017, the fifth edition of *Rogue Agents* integrated a further major American official source – records held by the CIA, which provided online access to 930,000 files for the first time in January 2017. A number of these files – which may be found by searching this text for "readingroom" – concern the Cercle Pinay, including a Kissinger memorandum of a July 1969 Cercle meeting, an earlier companion piece to the December 1970 Kissinger memorandum mentioned above. The now-declassified 1969 Kissinger memorandum explains the genesis of the

Sint Unum project and also gives Jean-Eugène Violet's full name, something not revealed in any previous Cercle research. Knowledge of his full name and consultation of the online archive of French electoral literature maintained by the Sciences Po/CNRS joint centre CEVIPOF uncovers Maître Violet's political past supporting Pinay's CNIP party in Pinay's region of the Loire throughout the 1950s.

The fifth edition extended the investigation into the covert South African propaganda campaign exposed in the 1978 "Muldergate" scandal. Although the third edition had already included the main work on the subject, the 1980 book *Muldergate – the story of the Info Scandal* by *Rand Daily Mail* journalists Rees and Day, the fifth edition integrated three other important print sources – Eschel Rhoodie's massive 1983 account and James Sanders's excellent two studies from 2000 and 2006. Besides underscoring the key part played by the Cercle Pinay in the international covert pro-apartheid campaign, these sources highlight the considerable support given by South Africa to the British groups NAFF and FARI, intimately associated with the then Conservative Opposition leader Margaret Thatcher.

The fifth edition also added to the research into the Ukrainian exile community, which had started in the fourth edition with the integration of the online archive of the American newspaper *The Ukrainian Weekly*. A further source integrated in 2017 was the online archive of *ABN Correspondence*, the journal of the Munich-based Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations and its sister group the European Freedom Council, which were member chapters of WACL and liaised closely with Strauß's Bavarian CSU.

This sixth edition, published in January 2021, now updates the internet links given and adds articles from the Dutch Press thanks to the Dutch Royal Library's search engine at https://www.delpher.nl/; the articles, which may be found by searching this text for the word "resolver", give useful information about one of the key early Belgians, Marcel de Roover, as well as the 6I's anti-unilateralist campaign of the early 1980s. For this sixth edition, the book reverts to the model chosen for the third edition - this "full" version including the documentary annex, and a shorter, "text-only" version; download links for both are given in the frontispiece.

Academic historians have also made contributions to our fragmentary knowledge of the Cercle. Professor Giles Scott-Smith of Leiden University has pursued his investigation of Interdoc in an authoritative publication in 2012 – see footnote 33. Also in 2012, German intelligence historian Dr. Stefanie Waske has thoroughly researched the archive of Stauffenberg's private intelligence service, an early core component in Crozier's 6I – see footnote 325. Dr. William Clark of Strathclyde University, a previous *Lobster* contributor who runs the very informative site https://pinkindustry.wordpress.com/, has kindly provided his 2013 doctorate on the IEDSS, a key British partner in the anti-disarmament campaign run by the 6I and its allies in the 1980s.

In 2007-2008, Dr. Klaartje Schrijvers of the University of Gent produced an outstanding doctorate based on investigative journalist Walter de Bock's archive of personal papers left by Florimond Damman; it unfortunately only came to my attention after the fact and is highly recommended. In 2012, the Gaullist historian Dr. Catherine Lanneau of the University of Liège has described Damman's political activities in the 1960s prior to the foundation of LIL and the AESP - on Schrijvers and Lanneau, see footnote 88.

A very significant academic work was *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, the proceedings of a conference held at the University of Fribourg in October 2011 which included a presentation on the Cercle by Dr. Adrian Hänni, then of the University of Zürich. Published in April 2014 almost exactly thirty years after investigative journalist Pierre Péan blazed the trail, Hänni's article *A Global Crusade against Communism: the Cercle in the "Second Cold War"* was the first academic paper to be specifically devoted to the Cercle and is essential reading, drawing on the personal archives of Cercle members Julian Amery, Brian Crozier, Monique Garnier-Lançon and William A. Wilson. Hänni's website is at https://adrianh.ch/. The 2011 conference proceedings also contained important contributions by Professor Scott-Smith on Interdoc, veteran *Le Monde* journalist Pierre Abramovici on WACL and Junior Professor Dr. Johannes Großmann of Tübingen University on the CIDCC.

Since then, Großmann has produced a March 2014 article, *Winning the Cold War: Anti-Communism, Informal Diplomacy, and the Transnational Career of Jean Violet*, and a subsequent major book on CEDI, the CIDCC and the early Cercle, *Die Internationale der Konservativen* – see footnote 4 for references and a review. Although sparse on details of the later Cercle, Großmann's book has recorded the frequent Cercle attendance in the late 1970s of Shield initiator Sir Stephen Hastings, IEDSS linch pin Lord Chalfont, German conservative media mainstay Gerhard Löwenthal and the American "Prince of Darkness", Richard Perle, confirming their description in this book as important members of the Cercle complex.

Journalists too have added to the body of Cercle research since 2011, notably in portraying British ex-MI6 members of the Cercle and the 6I. An informative post-war history of MI6 by BBC security correspondent Gordon Corera sheds light on the "Robber Barons", a hardline pro-covert action faction within MI6 to which G. K. Young and Cercle members Julian Amery, Nicholas Elliott and Anthony Cavendish belonged. A detailed account by espionage author Ben Macintyre of the relationship between Kim Philby and Elliott reveals much about the personality of Crozier's faithful deputy whilst not covering his later activities in Shield and the 6I that are described here.

The latest independent research has been adduced in 2018 by South African activist Hennie van Vuuren in his *Apartheid, Guns and Money*, which particularly focuses on contacts between the South African government and the Cercle under the chairmanship of Julian Amery.

Meanwhile, time has taken its toll; over recent years, many of the core members of the Cercle complex or the 6I have died – Hans Huyn and Robert C. Richardson in January 2011, Otto von Habsburg in July 2011, Manuel Fraga Iribarne in January 2012, Brian Crozier in August 2012 (the last of the *hommes de l'ombre* – Jean Violet is now known to have died in December 2000), Margaret Thatcher in April 2013, Giulio Andreotti and Herb Romerstein in May 2013, Joe Douglass in May 2014, Richard Mellon Scaife in July 2014, Arnaud de Borchgrave in February 2015, and David Rockefeller on 20th March 2017 at the age of 101. Others live on; Henry Kissinger turned 97 on 27th May 2020.

Since 2011, Europe has also commemorated two milestones in its evolution in which the Cercle had a hand. In January 2013, France and Germany jointly fêted the fiftieth anniversary of the 1963 Elysée Treaty that had been brokered by Violet, an occasion marked by the first bi-national issue of a special two Euro coin. In October 2015, Germany celebrated the twenty-fifth anniversary of its 1990 reunification, a process that had been triggered by Habsburg's "Paneuropean Picnic" in August 1989.

These events make it an apposite moment to bring this investigation to a natural close, thirty-odd years after it started in the UK magazine *Lobster*. Hopefully this final edition will assist later researchers to shed more light on the considerable covert part played in European and world history by the Cercle Pinay and the 6I.

David Teacher

TRAITÉ
DE L'ÉLYSÉE
50
ANS
JAHRE
2013
ÉLYSÉE-
VERTRAG
D
A

25 JAHRE DEUTSCHE EINHEIT 2015
WIR SIND EIN VOLK
A

1945 - 1963
POST-WAR PANEUROPEANS

THE PANEUROPEAN REVIVAL: THE PEU, HABSBURG AND CEDI

In the immediate post-war period, several political figures jostled for position in setting up movements for European unity. The oldest movement was the **Paneuropean Union** (PEU), a movement for European Union that had been founded in 1923 by **Comte Richard Coudenhove Kalergi**, the PEU's Life President. Coudenhove Kalergi had also set up the Interparliamentary Union, a debating forum for members of parliament from many countries, which still exists today. Serving as Vice-President of the PEU under Coudenhove Kalergi was **Archduke Otto von Habsburg**, born in 1912 as eldest son of Karl, the last Austro-Hungarian Emperor, and heir to his throne as well as Opus Dei's candidate as monarch to rule over a united Catholic Europe (2)*. As well as his imperial pretensions, Habsburg was a prominent advocate of European Union and the regal mentor of the Bavarian **Christian Social Union** party (CSU), the future fief of Franz Josef Strauß (3)*.

In 1952, Habsburg founded the **Centre Européen de Documentation Internationale** (CEDI), an international grouping of Catholic conservatives which aimed to break the diplomatic isolation of Franco's Spain following the UN's rejection of Spanish membership in June 1945, the UN General Assembly's condemnation of the regime in February 1946 and its resolution calling for the withdrawal of ambassadors from Spain in December 1946. CEDI organised frequent congresses in Madrid from 1952 onwards but only be formally incorporated in 1957 with headquarters in the Bavarian capital of Munich, a reflection of Habsburg's influence as CEDI Life President. CEDI grew rapidly; by the early 1960s, it had sections in eleven European countries. As one might expect, Habsburg's political protégé Strauß was a regular participant at CEDI's annual congresses from at least 1963 on (4)*.

One of the co-founders of CEDI with Habsburg later became a central figure in the Cercle Pinay complex: the Spanish diplomat and future minister **Alfredo Sánchez Bella**, since 1948 the Director of the Instituto de Cultura Hispánica (5)*. He also was a high-ranking member of Opus Dei, as were his two brothers Florencio and Ismael (6)*. In 1956, Alfredo Sánchez Bella was appointed Spanish Ambassador to the Dominican Republic, then to Colombia in 1959 and finally to Italy from 1962 on until he was recalled to serve as Franco's Minister for Information and Tourism from October 1969 to June 1973, a period during which he dramatically intensified censorship of the Press, notably closing down the daily newspaper *Madrid* in November 1971.

THE EUROPEAN MOVEMENT, THE CCF AND THE BILDERBERG GROUP

One of the hidden architects of post-war European politics was Polish exile **Dr. Joseph Retinger**. Retinger's campaigning, always clouded in secrecy, gave rise to the creation of open political bodies such as the Strasbourg-based **Council of Europe** (CoE) as well as CIA-funded rivals to the PEU - the **European Movement** and the European Youth Campaign - and more clandestine bodies like the powerbrokers' confidential forum, the **Bilderberg Group**.

Retinger's European Movement was the main component in the CIA's campaign to infiltrate and control the wave of political sentiment favourable to European union in the immediate post-war period. The European Movement was financed from the outset by the CIA, receiving some £380,000 between 1949 and 1953. The CIA also supported another Retinger creation, the European Youth Campaign, which received £1,340,000 from the CIA between 1951 and 1959. The conduit for CIA funding of the EM and EYC was the American Committee on a United Europe, launched in 1949 specifically to support the creation of the EM.

ACUE's list of officers included four top figures from the American intelligence community. The post of ACUE Chairman was filled by Bill Donovan, former Director of the CIA's wartime predecessor, the OSS; another prominent ACUE post was held by Major-General Walter Bedell Smith, US Ambassador in Moscow from 1946 to 1948 and CIA Director from 1950 to 1953. ACUE's Vice-Chairman was Allen Dulles, Bedell Smith's successor as Director of the CIA from 1953 to 1961; its Executive Director was Thomas Braden, head of the CIA's International Organisations Division, responsible for setting up CIA front groups throughout the world (7)*.

Despite early post-war collaboration between Coudenhove Kalergi and Retinger, represented by EM co-founder Duncan Sandys, conflicts soon emerged (8)*. Coudenhove Kalergi's authoritarian leadership style was only one of the bones of contention; it was also felt that he did not take a robust enough position in relation to the Cold War. Indeed, in his later book entitled *From War to Peace* written in 1959, Coudenhove Kalergi called for the public recognition of the division of Germany - anathema to conservatives and to many PEU members. In his book, Coudenhove Kalergi also criticised the position of Retinger's European Movement: "this new European Movement felt that its first task was not the strengthening of world peace but the defence of Europe against the imperialism of the Soviet Union and the liberation of the oppressed nations of Eastern Europe. It received considerable support from the United States via the Marshall Plan and therefore was an integral component of the anti-Bolshevik alliance set up by the Americans in both the East and the West" (9).

In the light of his conciliatory – or rather, inflammatory – position, the CIA preferred not to count on Coudenhove Kalergi's Paneuropean Union but rather to set up a new organisation for European unity over which it could have greater control. Led by Retinger and Sandys, the cold warriors decided to go their own way, founding the European Movement as a rival to the PEU. The two complexes - Retinger's and Coudenhove Kalergi's - co-existed in competition until Coudenhove Kalergi's death in 1972. Under his successor Habsburg, the PEU was relaunched both materially and ideologically; after some internal controversy, Habsburg brought the PEU over to a Cold War philosophy, opening up the possibility of collaboration between the PEU and the EM.

Besides the 1949 foundation of the European Movement, the CIA's International Organisations Division headed by Thomas Braden also created another front organisation, the **Congress for Cultural Freedom**, which aimed to bring together Western intellectuals in the cause of anti-Communism. The CCF saw the light of day in dramatic circumstances; on the day of the CCF's foundation at a West Berlin conference on 24th - 25th June 1950, North Korea invaded its southern neighbour.

The CCF ran several news features services spanning the globe: Forum Information Services in English, Preuves-Informations in French and El Mundo en Español in Spanish. The CCF also published a range of literary magazines such as *Encounter* and *Survey* in London, *Quadrant* in Australia, *Cuadernos* in Buenos Aires and *Cadernos Brasileiros* in Rio de Janeiro. The CCF has been the subject of extensive research (10); at this stage, it is sufficient to note that the CCF would hire **Brian Crozier** in 1964 and launched him as an international media asset for the Western intelligence services by creating the CIA-funded news agency Forum World Features in 1965. His activities from that time on will be a major focus for this book.

Alongside the European Movement and the Congress for Cultural Freedom which functioned as mass political and cultural fronts, Joseph Retinger and the CIA created a third forum which was to be far more secretive and more influential than the EM or the CCF – the **Bilderberg Group**. On 25th September 1952, a small group of eminent statesmen and dignitaries met with the aim of creating the new forum; the distinguished - and discreet - guests included from the Netherlands Prince Bernhard, from France the new Prime Minister (11) Antoine Pinay accompanied by politician Guy Mollet, from Belgium the Foreign Minister Paul Van Zeeland, from Italy Prime Minister Alcide de Gasperi and from the US Major-General Walter Bedell Smith, the CIA Director from 1950 to 1953 and Board member of the American Committee for a United Europe (ACUE), the funding conduit for the European Movement. Named after the venue for their first formal meeting in May 1954 in the De Bilderberg Hotel in Oosterbeek near the Dutch town of Arnhem, this international group of decision-makers still meets at least once a year for confidential discussions of world affairs (12)*.

PINAY, VIOLET AND STRAUSS

One of the most prominent members of the new Bilderberg Group was the French politician **Antoine Pinay** who served as Minister of Public Works, Transport and Tourism from July 1950 to March 1952 before becoming President of the Council (Prime Minister) and Minister of Finance until January 1953. In December 1953, Pinay stood unsuccessfully as the candidate for the Centre National des Indépendants et Paysans (CNIP) in the eighth round of voting of the last presidential elections of the Fourth Republic; the thirteenth round finally saw the victory of René Coty, also of the CNIP. Pinay later served under President Coty as Minister for Foreign Affairs from February 1955 until February 1956, and Minister of Finance again under Prime Minister and then President Charles de Gaulle from June 1958 to January 1960 when he introduced the new French franc, then resigned from politics (13). Apart from his distinguished career in public office, Antoine Pinay had other less obvious attributes – and not just within the select club of Bilderbergers. In 1952-53, at the same time as the Bilderberg Group was being set up, French Prime Minister Pinay and German Chancellor **Konrad Adenauer** created the Cercle Pinay as a confidential forum for Franco-German policy coordination via personal contacts between Pinay, Adenauer and other Christian Democrat Heads of State.

These less public political consultations owed much to Pinay's confidant, right-hand man and eventual successor at the helm of the Cercle Pinay, **Maître Jean (Jean-Eugène) Violet**. It was in 1951 that Antoine Pinay first met Violet, a Parisian business lawyer close to the French employers' federation CNPF, who also shadowed the UN General Assembly's Sixth Committee on legal affairs as an informal observer for the Vatican from 1948 to 1955. Pinay recommended the lawyer to Pierre Boursicot, head of the French secret service, the **Service de Documentation Extérieure et de Contre-Espionnage** (SDECE). Violet helped the SDECE where he could; as he has said: "Aware of the fact that I could be of some use to my country thanks to my professional situation on the international chessboard, I chose to fight for France within the ranks of the SDECE" (14)*.

After the arrival of General Grossin as head of the SDECE in 1957, Violet was taken on as an agent and given missions of increasing political importance. Violet rose to become perhaps the SDECE's most valued 'Honourable Correspondent' with the title of Special Advocate to the service. One indication of Violet's significance as a veteran covert operator is the fact that throughout his fifteen years of service with the SDECE, his case officer was the head of the service - first Grossin from 1957 to 1962, then Jacquier from 1962 to 1966, and then finally Guibaud until 1970. Reporting directly to General Grossin, "Violet was masterminding a *Service Spécial* to promote the General's [de Gaulle's] objectives in defence and foreign policy" (15), a rather ironic fact bearing in mind that Brian Crozier, Violet's future associate in the Cercle, was monitoring de Gaulle's defence and foreign initiatives with some suspicion from the other side of the Channel.

An early associate of Violet in his work for the SDECE was former Chaplain to the French Far East Expeditionary Force in Indochina **Reverend Father Yves-Marc Dubois**, 'foreign policy spokesman' for the Dominican order and an unofficial member of the Pontifical Delegation to the UN, who was believed by the SDECE to be the head of the Vatican secret service. Violet and Dubois were active in the United Nations from the mid-1950s on when Violet was attached to the French delegation headed by Pinay, at that time Minister of Foreign Affairs. Violet's tasks at the UN included ensuring the Lebanon did not break off relations with France after its involvement in the 1956 Suez fiasco and winning over Latin American republics to block UN condemnation of France's Algerian policy in 1959. Violet's lobbying in the UN also paved the way for de Gaulle's tour of Latin America in 1964. Another major focus for Violet and Dubois' activities for the SDECE was Eastern Europe: they received half a million francs a month from General Grossin to run the "Church of Silence", Catholic networks behind the Iron Curtain. These activities focused on the countries in what was sometimes referred to as the "Catholic Curtain": Poland, Czechoslovakia, Hungary and Romania (16)*.

Besides these operations for the SDECE, Violet also acted as the *homme de confiance* of Antoine Pinay in assisting the process of Franco-German reconciliation. Pinay had already played a considerable part in the conclusion of prior agreements on the construction of Europe, notably the Paris Treaty and Bonn Agreement of 1952 whose ratification in May 1955 allowed Germany to attain full sovereignty and created the Western European Union, the first successful post-war European defence pact. Following this, the signature in March 1957 of the Euratom and European Common Market Treaties led to the creation of the European Economic Community as of 1st January 1958.

"Violet played an historically key role between 1957 and 1961 in bringing about this [Franco-German] rapprochement, which is the real core of the European Community. He had developed a close friendship with Antoine Pinay, who had served as French Premier in 1951 under the unstable Fourth Republic. At a lower level, a complementary role was played by his SDECE colleague Antoine Bonnemaison [described in the next chapter]. Violet was the go-between in secret meetings between Pinay and the West German Chancellor, Konrad Adenauer, and his coalition partner, Franz Josef Strauss. These paved the way for Charles de Gaulle's own encounters with Adenauer, which culminated in the Franco-German [Elysée] Treaty of January 1963 [...] The Pinay Cercle was a natural offshoot of Jean Violet's Franco-German activities" (17)*.

Franz Josef Strauß, the "Lion of Bavaria", was a key figure in the Cercle complex from the early days of the post-war Federal Republic until his death in the late 1980s. Born in 1915, Strauß was first elected to the Bundestag (German Federal Parliament) in 1949 as an MP for the Bavarian **Christian Social Union** (CSU) party, coalition partner of Adenauer's CDU; that year, he was also appointed CSU General Secretary. In 1953, four years after his election to the Bundestag, Strauß gained ministerial rank as Minister without Portfolio; he again served in Adenauer's CDU/CSU Cabinet as Nuclear Power Minister from 1955 to 1956 and as Defence Minister from 1956 to 1962.

Meanwhile, on the regional level, the CSU Party Chairman and former Bavarian Prime Minister **Hanns Seidel** had died in 1961; Strauß replaced him as Party Chairman, a post he held until his death twenty-seven years later. Within a year of his elevation to Chairman, the CSU won a landslide victory in the 1962 regional elections, gaining an absolute majority in the Bavarian Parliament that it did not lose for another forty-six years until its electoral rout in September 2008 - after five years of coalition with the FDP, the CSU regained its absolute majority in September 2013, but lost it again in October 2018.

As the German constitution forbids regional premiers serving as federal ministers, and as Strauß was the rising CSU star in national government as former Defence Minister, he stayed on the federal level and served as Finance Minister during the Grand Coalition with the SPD in 1966-69. In 1978, he resigned from the Bundestag to return to regional politics, being elected Prime Minister of Bavaria as a springboard for a 1980 bid for the Federal Chancellorship. Despite substantial Cercle support, his bid failed; Strauß nonetheless remained Prime Minister of Bavaria for a decade until his death in 1988.

Besides his public career in German government office, Strauß had had other more private connections; he was an early ally of Pinay in the mid-1950s when both Strauß and Pinay were at the height of their political careers, as Strauß described in his memoirs:

"Since 1953 [having first been appointed minister], I had had close ties to Antoine Pinay; these later changed into a kind of paternal friendship for me from a man who was 25 years my senior [..., in 1955] I met Pinay in the office of one of his confidants [Maître Violet?] on the avenue Foch. I was well acquainted with this circle of opponents of Pierre Mendès-France, ousted in early February; one could trust them; with a little imagination we could have considered ourselves to be co-conspirators" (18).

Strauß also met Pinay during the closeted discussions of the Bilderberg Group, a forum which Strauß had frequented since the September 1955 Bilderberg conference held in Garmisch-Partenkirchen, close to Munich. Strauß and Pinay met, for example, at the Bilderberg conference in Cannes in May 1963 (19)*; the same year, Strauß also attended the CEDI Congress in Madrid with Habsburg (20).

One early example of cooperation between Strauß, Pinay and Violet came in 1964, when Violet, acting for Pinay and recommended by former Defence Minister Strauß, presented enormous claims for reparations to the German Finance Ministry, allegedly for deliveries of metals to the Germans during the occupation of France. Strauß advised that the Ministry pay up in the interests of Franco-German friendship, but it transpired that the delivery notes were fake, and the swindle was exposed (21).

THE BONNEMAISON FORUM AND INTERDOC

In March 1955, the Bilderberg Group met in Barbizon near Paris to discuss "Communist influence in the West, European Communist parties and political, ideological and economic ripostes to the Red Menace" (22). This CIA-linked powerbrokers' forum was not the only group of covert decision-makers to debate the issue; the European intelligence services were also sponsoring attempts at Franco-German-Dutch rapprochement with an aim to strengthen anti-communism.

One key early figure was the French SDECE's **Colonel Antoine Bonnemaison**, who under the cover of a SDECE front group called the Centre de Recherches du Bien Politique, was responsible for coordinating all psy-ops work carried out by the Cinquième Bureau (23). From 1955 on, Bonnemaison began acting as organising secretary for a series of informal meetings, held alternately in France and in Germany, which brought together top intelligence veterans from three countries: France, Germany and Holland.

> "The blend of 'delegates' [in 1959] was basically the same in all three [national] groups: intelligence, both civil and military; leading academics; non-academic political or economic specialists; one or two trusted politicians; leaders of industry; trade union leaders; and clerics of various denominations [...] these meetings [...] were very productive in terms of facts, background, analysis and intelligent discussion" (24).

The idea of a covert European alliance to fight communism was discussed in 1957, when a Franco-German group met in the South of France to discuss what steps could be taken to combat Communism. Their first decision was to reinforce their network; by the following year, the circle had widened to include representatives from Holland, Italy, Switzerland and Belgium. A further expansion to include the UK came in 1959 following Bonnemaison's chance encounter the previous year with the then Editor of the *Economist Foreign Report*, a man who later became undoubtedly the most prominent propagandist for several Western intelligence services and the key character in the UK counter-subversion complex - **Brian Crozier** (25).

Born in 1918, Brian Rossiter Crozier started his career in journalism in 1936. Having worked in aeronautical inspection in 1941, he was hired by the news agency Reuters, which had links to MI6, in 1943. After a spell at the *News Chronicle* in 1944 and the *Sydney Morning Herald* in 1948, he returned to Reuters in 1951. From 1952 to 1954, Crozier toured the South-East Asian conflicts in Vietnam and Malaya for Reuters and the *New Straits Times*, which was used during the Malayan emergency as a channel for British disinformation prepared by the Foreign Office's **Information Research Department** (IRD). It was in Saigon that Crozier started his long partnership with MI6 by meeting "Ronald Lincoln", a friendship renewed back in London when both men had returned home in 1954. Crozier then also met a second MI6 officer "Ronald Franks" who acted as his link for several years. Thanks to the fruitful exchange of information with his MI6 contacts, "Lincoln" and "Franks", Crozier joined the staff of the *Economist* in September 1954 as Editor of their prestigious *Economist Foreign Report*, a post he filled until 1964 (26)*.

Having met Crozier in 1958, Antoine Bonnemaison invited Crozier as the first ever British visitor to attend one of his *colloques*, held this time near Frankfurt. There were three delegations present from France, Germany and the Netherlands, and each included senior intelligence officers. The French delegation was led by General Jean Olié, de Gaulle's Chief of General Staff, seconded by SDECE Colonel Bonnemaison.

The German delegation was led by Lieutenant-General Hermann Foertsch, "who had served as a senior deputy to the better-known **General Reinhard Gehlen**, creator of the post-war West German Federal Intelligence Service, the **BND** (Bundesnachrichtendienst)". The delegation also included two university academics close to the BND, "Professor Lades and Kernig, both specialists on Communism in general and East Germany in particular. There was a German equivalent of Bonnemaison's Centre: the **Deutsche Vereinigung für Ost-West Beziehungen** [German Association for East-West Relations]. The Vereinigung was based in Munich, appropriately close to the headquarters of the BND at Pullach" (27)*. **Professor Hans Lades** and **Dr. C. D. Kernig** also belonged to another BND front group to support Interdoc, the **Verein zur Erforschung sozial-politischer Verhältnisse im Ausland** [Association for the Study of Foreign Socio-political Relations], a registered charity also conveniently based in Munich. Amongst the Verein's members, Professor Lades, Chairman of the Verein Board, and Dr. Kernig regularly attended Bonnemaison's meetings whilst **Dr. Norman von Grote**, who ran the Verein, joined them as the third German founding member of Interdoc in 1963. Grote had been a propaganda officer in Wehrmacht FHO (Fremde Heere Ost - Eastern Front intelligence) with special responsibility for liaison with Russian General Andrey Vlasov and his army of Nazi collaborators, later the core of the NTS (28)*. FHO was commanded from 1st April 1942 onwards by General Gehlen; it was Gehlen himself who had adopted Vlasov and defended the idea of an anti-communist army under Vlasov against strong pressure from Himmler (29).

The Dutch delegation was represented by two top veterans from the **Binnenlandse Veiligheidsdienst** (BVD), the Dutch internal security service, **Louis Einthoven** and **Cornelis Christiaan 'Cees' Van den Heuvel**.

Einthoven had been Chief Commissioner for Police in Rotterdam in the 1930s. After the war, he was appointed by General H. J. Kruls to head the Bureau Nationale Veiligheid, renamed the BVD in 1946; Einthoven then served as the BVD's first director, retiring only in 1961. He played a key role in the Dutch Gladio component, Operaties & Inlichtingen [O&I - Operations and Intelligence], also founded in 1946 by General Kruls. Einthoven commanded the Operations Division of O&I which was in charge of preparing for armed resistance but was also crucially tasked with "sensitizing people to the danger of communism during times of peace" (30)*. Van den Heuvel was the head of the Training Department of the BVD, in which capacity he liaised closely with O&I - having played "a heroic role in the Dutch Resistance during the Nazi occupation", Van den Heuvel was already well acquainted with the principles of stay-behind networks (31).

In February 1959, Van den Heuvel led a study group to America to visit the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology, a CIA front group founded in 1955 which changed name in 1961 to become the Human Ecology Fund, "human ecology" being at the time the official euphemism for psychological warfare and deprogramming. Both American organisations were funding conduits for the CIA's MK-ULTRA programme of research into mind control and brainwashing (32). After returning to Holland, Van den Heuvel wrote a planning paper in November 1959 entitled *Hoofdlijnen van een Internationaal Instituut ter Bestrijding van de Psychologische Oorlogvoering van het Communisme* [An Outline of an International Institute to Combat Communist Psychological Warfare], and in 1960 founded the **Stichting voor Onderzoek van Ecologische Vraagstukken** [SOEV, Foundation for the Investigation of Ecological Problems] with Van den Heuvel, still in the BVD, as the Director – he resigned in 1962 to go full-time for SOEV, joining Einthoven who retired from the BVD in 1961. After obtaining funding from Dutch industry thanks to contacts with Prince Bernhard, the SOEV was formally launched in February 1962 with the twin aims of briefing industry and political parties about Communist subversion and developing propaganda to counter Soviet influence. Later that year, the SOEV was strengthened by the creation of the Stichting ter Voorlichting over de Oost-West Verhouding [Institute for Information on East-West Relations]; the two merged in 1965 as the **Oost-West Instituut** [East-West Institute] which continued operations until 1978.

According to an Italian secret service (SIFAR) report dated October 1963, the BVD had funded a meeting in Barbizon near Paris on 5th - 8th October 1961 where "the participants decided to unite all efforts and initiatives of the struggle against Communism within a new organisation and place these on a serious and expert footing" (33). An international documentation centre to pool efforts against

Communism became particularly necessary after Charles de Gaulle's decision in early 1963 to close down France's psychological warfare unit, the Cinquième Bureau, too full of ex-Algeria hands for de Gaulle's comfort.

The demise of the Cinquième Bureau also meant the withdrawal of SDECE support for the Bonnemaison group, and the breaking up of the Franco-German-Dutch triangle for the *colloques*. Bonnemaison himself resigned from the SDECE in late 1962 and set up a private-sector structure, the Centre d'Observation du Mouvement des Idées, receiving funds from Péchiney and Air Liquide. This could provide for continuing the *colloques*, which became dominated by the French, but such a structure was clearly insufficient to support the scale of operations planned for the documentation centre, and so the Dutch BVD took over where the SDECE had left off.

The new organisation was formally incorporated in the Hague in February 1963 under the name **Interdoc** - the International Documentation and Information Centre - with Van den Heuvel as its Director. Alongside Einthoven and Van den Heuvel, two other Dutch founding members of Interdoc, both from the SOEV, were **Herman Jan Rijks**, a senior executive at Royal Dutch Shell, and **Dr. J. M. Hornix**, a sociology lecturer for the Dutch armed forces and longstanding student of psychological warfare. The news was announced at the meeting of Bonnemaison's forum held in Bad Godesberg near Bonn in late March 1963 (34)*.

According to the registration papers deposited in the Hague, Interdoc's task was "documentation in the field of Western values and world communism and the informing of the public on these matters. This aim is to be pursued through the establishment of an international documentation centre, which will cooperate with national centres in different countries." An internal Interdoc report indicates that swift progress was made in setting up "an index system, a library, a collection of newspapers and a collection of special reports, documents, etc" which were made available "to official departments responsible for the East-West question, international companies and employers' organisations" (35).

Initial funds for Interdoc were provided by Royal Dutch Shell, which was later a benefactor to the ISC and to other MI6 front groups like the Ariel Foundation (36). The most eminent administrator of Royal Dutch Shell was Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands, President of the Bilderberg Group from its formal creation in 1954 until his resignation in 1976 as a result of the Lockheed bribes scandal (37)*.

In the early days of Interdoc, Einthoven was active as a fundraiser; in his 1974 autobiography published in Holland (38), Einthoven states that he was lobbying for support for Interdoc from France, Holland, Italy, Switzerland, Israel and Indonesia, and the Interdoc files show that Einthoven visited Munich, Zürich, Bern and Geneva in January 1962 on Interdoc business. During the 1960s, Interdoc also seems to have received funding from the US, Germany and Britain. Crozier reports that Interdoc "depended largely on West German subsidies" (39).

The British intelligence community also offered considerable high-level support for Interdoc even before its creation. Crozier reports that he "was involved from the start" with Interdoc; amongst the other founding members in 1963 were two senior British intelligence officials: **Charles H. "Dick" Ellis** of MI6 and later of the Australian Security Intelligence Organisation ASIO, and "an ex-MI5 man" whom Crozier declines to identify. As for Ellis, he had first encountered Interdoc at one of the last of Bonnemaison's *colloques* held in Mont Saint Michel in March 1962 (40). The following year, when Interdoc was founded, Ellis wrote to Sir William Stevenson, Ellis's former boss within the wartime US/UK liaison group in New York, the British Security Coordination, to tell him that he had been recommended to a new organisation by Sir Stuart Menzies, the MI6 Chief who had founded several of the European Gladio components:

> "I am kept busy with this Interdoc organisation. And, together with other chaps, I have formed a working committee which is organizing an international conference at Oxford in September [Ellis was at this time attached to St. Antony's College, Oxford, close to MI6]. We have raised money from [deleted] and some professional groups, much to the astonishment of the Foreign Office who said that it couldn't be done. They are now wondering if it was a good thing to kick me out [of MI6] [...] as several of us are now doing privately what they have never succeeded in doing - getting an "action group" going. We are keeping it "private and confidential", as publicity could kill it" (41).

Interdoc's other link to British Intelligence, the "ex-MI5 man" not named by Crozier, was **Walter Bell**. During the war, Bell like Ellis had served under Stevenson at BSC in New York before moving back to Britain in 1942 to act as the London liaison officer between MI6 and the OSS. After the war, Bell joined MI5 in 1949 and worked as an advisor to various Commonwealth governments and as personal assistant to MI5 chief Roger Hollis. Following his retirement from MI5 in 1967, Bell raised funds for Interdoc from British sources (42). British help for Interdoc came from, amongst others, the anti-union outfits **Common Cause** and the **Economic League**; by 1969, **Neil Elles** of Common Cause and **John Dettmer** of the Economic League sat with Crozier, then Director of Forum World Features, on the Consultative Council of Interdoc (43).

Interdoc's Italian founding member in 1963 also had intelligence connections. **Professor Luigi Gedda** was a well-known figure of the Catholic Right in Italy and one of the CIA's main agents in their massive intervention in the 1948 elections which banished the spectre of a Communist victory and installed the Christian Democrats in power. Part of Gedda's role was to set up a national network of 20,000 anti-communist groups, the Comitati Civici. Funded by the CIA and supported by the

Vatican, the Comitati each had their own intelligence department and a radio transmitter, and played a key part in ensuring a Christian Democrat victory: "according to the American Embassy and the CIA representative in Rome, they undertook 'psychological warfare' and were considered by the Embassy to be the most important anti-communist group, which the Embassy felt justified a subsidy of $500,000 from the State Department to the CIA" (44).

After 1948, as head of Azione Cattolica, Gedda had powerful political connections within the ruling Christian Democratic Party. His leadership of Azione Cattolica and his intimate friendship with Pope Pius XII, to whom he was medical advisor, gave him high-level access to the Vatican, access which he used to help Joseph Retinger of the CIA-funded European Movement and the Bilderberg Group. In May 1950, Gedda arranged an audience with Pope Pius XII for Retinger, who hoped to win Vatican support for the cause of European Union. The meeting was also attended by the Vatican's Substitute Secretary of State, **Monsignor Montini**, the future **Pope Paul VI**. Despite a very positive meeting, objections from the Archbishop of Canterbury, Dr. Fisher, caused the plan to fail. Nonetheless, Gedda later gave Retinger "a good deal of help in Italy" (45).

ALBERTINI, GRAU AND SAGER

A number of front groups referring to East-West relations were set up by the European intelligence services in the late 1950s. Of these, the German BND front group the Deutsche Vereinigung für Ost-West Beziehungen and the Dutch BVD front group the Oost-West Instituut were certainly involved in the SDECE Bonnemaison forum and its reincarnation as Interdoc in 1963. However, three individual propagandists active in the late 1950s and early 1960s in France, Germany and Switzerland also need some mention at this stage. Whilst their connections remain unclear, each was later a major actor in the counter-subversion operations organised by the Cercle complex throughout the 1970s.

Georges Albertini, one of the mainstays of post-war French anti-communism, had had a controversial wartime past: a former right-hand man of the pro-Nazi collaborator Marcel Déat during the Occupation, Albertini had been a member of the Vichy administration working in the Secretariat of the Vichy Prime Minister Pierre Laval. After being jailed for two years for collaboration, during which time he shared a cell with banker Hippolyte Worms, Albertini became an ardent Gaullist, helped by his schooltime days with Georges Pompidou.

Through his contacts in politics and his work as a political advisor to the Worms banking and business consortium, Albertini set up "a huge network of informants and helpers", working as an 'Honourable Correspondent' of the SDECE and as an unofficial advisor to both Pompidou and later Jacques Chirac. Albertini was a longstanding associate of Antoine Pinay: both men had attended a series of International Conferences on Political Warfare organised in 1960-61 by Suzanne Labin, future mainstay of WACL's French section (46). Albertini's Centre d'Archives et de Documentation politique et sociale also produced the fortnightly magazine ***Est et Ouest***, "the most authoritative publication in the French language on the problems of Communism" in Crozier's view, a publication which may well have been part of the Interdoc network (47). As well as serving as one of the major channels for anti-Socialist propaganda in France in the mid-1970s, Albertini also became closely involved in the Cercle complex, publishing the ISC's output in French, attending Cercle meetings and playing a significant part in Crozier's private intelligence service, the 6I.

Karl Friedrich Grau was the Federal Secretary of the German PEU section Europa-Union Deutschland from at least 1967 until 1975, and in 1966 had been one of the founding Board Members and later Vice-President of the **Deutschland-Stiftung** [Germany Foundation], a political trust based in Munich which brought together many prominent German right-wing politicians. The Foundation published the journal *Deutschland-Magazin* and awarded the Konrad Adenauer Prize, an event given Oscar-like coverage by the German conservative Press.

Despite the prestige of its honorary President, former Chancellor Adenauer, and that of its frequent guest, Otto von Habsburg, the Deutschland-Stiftung soon aroused considerable controversy due to the far-right opinions of several of its members. One notable case was the aristocrat, former NSDAP member and wartime officer in Gehlen's FHO **Professor Freiherr Bolko von Richthofen**, a member of the Foundation's Board from 1968 on; he was eventually excluded from the Deutschland-Stiftung in 1972 for his overt support for the neo-nazi NPD party.

Alongside Grau's more overt positions within the PEU and the Deutschland-Stiftung, the aptly named Mr. Gray was the most significant covert operator within the CDU, acting as a bag-man for illegal election fund contributions from industry and various foundations for both the CDU and for its Bavarian sister party, Strauß's CSU. Grau soon became notorious for the ruthless tactics he used to support the conservative cause; he ran several smear and disinformation campaigns for the CDU/CSU through a network of anti-communist propaganda groups which he controlled.

The earliest known group in Grau's network was created in 1958, the **Studiengesellschaft für staatspolitische Öffentlichkeitsarbeit** [Study Group on Political Communication], founded in Frankfurt by Grau, CSU MP from 1957 to 1969 **Karl-Heinz Vogt** and CDU member **Dr. Walter Hoeres**, a fellow member of the Deutschland-Stiftung. Vogt served as the Frankfurt Study Group's President, Grau as Executive Director. As "the largest and most influential of the political front groups within the Federal Republic", the Frankfurt Study Group's stated goal was to give "reliable and effective information and revelations about powers and their plans to destroy the fundaments of our Christian, free, democratic social organisation" and to "strengthen and reinforce the free, democratic State and social form, and to coordinate all efforts and measures to defend it against all kinds of totalitarianism".

A later political front group reportedly co-founded by Grau is the Hamburg-based Staats- und Wirtschaftspolitische Gesellschaft [Political and Economic Society, **SWG**], created in Cologne on 9th April 1962, which still exists today. Many of the SWG's early speakers belonged to CEDI and later groups in the Cercle complex, notably a third front group run by Grau, the Swiss-based **ISP**, detailed below. The Frankfurt Study Group, the Hamburg SWG, the Swiss ISP and various other groups controlled by Grau were major German disinformation outlets throughout the 1960s and 1970s and acted as German relays for the Cercle complex's counter-subversion operations (48)*.

Dr. Peter Sager was a well-known Swiss "*éminence grise* of anti-communist propaganda" and later member of the Swiss Parliament. Born in 1925, Sager had been educated in Switzerland, the Soviet Union (as part of Harvard University's study programme) and the UK. In 1948, Sager created the Schweizerische Osteuropa-Bibliothek [Swiss Library on Eastern Europe], now part of the University of Bern. In 1959, one year after Swiss representatives had joined the debate on Communism in Europe, Sager founded the Schweizerisches Ost-Institut [**SOI**, Swiss Institute for the East] in Bern whose journal was published in both German and French. SOI's publications – which included German translations of Interdoc conferences – were widely circulated throughout the German-speaking world, as well as being distributed in the UK.

Major support for the SOI was provided from its inception by Karl Friedrich Grau. In 1961 Grau and Sager founded a Frankfurt-based SOI support group, the Schweizerisch-Deutsche Gesellschaft für Ostforschung [Swiss-German Society for Research on the East]. Sager was President, Vogt of the Frankfurt Study Group was Vice-President and Grau Secretary-General, whilst the Board of the new group included Sager's partner Heinz Luginbühl and Grau's future associate from the Deutschland-Stiftung Board, Professor Freiherr Bolko von Richthofen. Grau also ensured the distribution of the SOI magazine in Germany throughout the 1960s.

1964 - 1970
MOBILISATION

THE BIRTH OF THE STRATEGY OF TENSION

The Paneuropeans and Europe's covert conservatives were not the only people to mobilise; in the mid-1960s, the forces of renascent fascism in Europe regrouped, most notably in Italy and in Portugal. In order to give an all-too-brief account of the main facts relevant to this history of the Cercle complex, we must first look at the Italian **General Giovanni De Lorenzo** who, for over a decade, held crucial posts in the Italian military hierarchy.

In December 1955, De Lorenzo was appointed head of the Italian military intelligence service SIFAR, serving until October 1962 when he became Commandant of the Carabinieri, a post he filled until January 1966. Both SIFAR and the Carabinieri came under the authority of the Defence Minister, a post filled from February 1959 to February 1966 by **Giulio Andreotti**. De Lorenzo then served as Chief of the Army General Staff until April 1967 when he was dismissed for having spied on the Italian government. Andreotti was entrusted with the destruction of the voluminous files De Lorenzo had built up on prominent Italian public figures, but it later transpired that, prior to their destruction, the files had been copied and given to **Licio Gelli**, Grand Master of the P2 masonic lodge, on whom see below. In May 1968, De Lorenzo was elected as a monarchist MP, joining the far-right MSI in 1971; he died in April 1973.

De Lorenzo was a major figure in the Italian strategy of tension, particularly during his time as head of the Carabinieri from 1962 to 1966. Following the 1963 elections, in which the Communists gained 25% of the vote, De Lorenzo used his unprecedented powers to launch a vast anti-communist operation which started with the training of the 'gladiators' the same year. Simultaneously, with some twenty top Carabinieri commanders, De Lorenzo finalised **Plan Solo**, a coup d'état scheduled for the summer of 1964 which included the assassination of Prime Minister Aldo Moro and his replacement by a right-wing Christian Democrat. Opposition to the coup was to be minimised by a wave of preventive arrests based on the files that De Lorenzo had built up on 157,000 people since 1959. The coup was cancelled at the last moment as the result of a pact between the Socialists and the Christian Democrats, but De Lorenzo continued planning for a later coup.

Also in 1964, under De Lorenzo's guidance, SIFAR (renamed SID in 1965) funded the creation of the Alberto Pollio Institute which, the following year, organised the now infamous conference which marked the ideological birth of the strategy of tension. Held in the **Parco dei Principi** hotel on 3rd - 5th May 1965, the conference was attended by the elite of the Italian military and the extreme Right, including Europe's most notorious fascist terrorist, **Stefano Delle Chiaie**, a key actor in the *stragi* which rocked Italy throughout the 1970s. Delle Chiaie's group Avanguardia Nazionale (AN) had been founded in 1959 with funding from prominent industrialist and banker Carlo Pesenti, a future backer of the Cercle complex and the sniffer plane project, detailed below. AN had been preparing for a strategy of tension since the spring of 1964 when the Italian neo-fascist militants had followed courses in terrorism and psychological warfare.

As well as the AN militants Franco Freda and Giovanni Ventura, another close associate of Delle Chiaie during this period was **Guido Giannettini**, a journalist on military affairs, expert in revolutionary warfare and SIFAR informant. A veteran in fascist circles, Giannettini also had high-level transatlantic connections: in 1961, he had been invited to give a presentation at the US Naval Academy in Annapolis on "The techniques and possibilities of a coup d'état in Europe", a lecture attended by Pentagon officials and CIA officers (49). Giannettini did not confine himself to theory, giving shelter to former OAS members who had fled to Italy after their abortive coup attempt in 1962 (50). Whilst visiting Spain in 1962, Giannettini was awarded the honour of 'Captain of the Crusade' by the OAS for his services (51). Through his contacts with SIFAR/SID, Giannettini could also ensure a certain degree of protection for Delle Chiaie's militants. Giannettini and Delle Chiaie both attended the Parco dei Principi conference; Giannettini himself gave a presentation on "The variety of techniques for the conduct of revolutionary warfare", a subject he tackled in greater depth in his book published the same year, *The techniques of revolutionary warfare.*

The year after the Parco dei Principi conference, the paramilitary far Right and the OAS joined forces in 1966 to set up the now-notorious revolutionary fascist group **Aginter Presse**. Sheltered in Lisbon under the protective wing of Portuguese dictator António de Oliveira Salazar, Aginter Presse was run by former OAS activist **Ralf Guérin-Sérac** (Yves Guillou), with Delle Chiaie one of the pioneers of the strategy of tension. Aginter Presse worked under the cover of a press agency, but in reality was a coordination centre for destabilisation. In close cooperation with Salazar's secret service, the Polícia Internacional e de Defesa do Estado (PIDE), one section of Aginter Presse ran a parallel intelligence service with links to the CIA, the German BND, the Spanish DGS, the South African BOSS and the Greek KYP. Another section of Aginter Presse organised the recruitment of terrorists for bomb attacks and assassinations - an important contact here was Delle Chiaie. A third group dealt with psychological operations, and Aginter Presse's fourth section, called Ordre et Tradition, was an international fascist contact network with a clandestine paramilitary wing, the Organisation Armée contre le Communisme International.

Aginter Presse's Italian contacts included Delle Chiaie and Giannettini, one of the most active Aginter Presse members, responsible for liaising between Aginter's Lisbon offices, Delle Chiaie's AN and the Italian secret services. Aginter Presse started up in Lisbon in September 1966, and the Italian strategy of tension was launched in April 1969 with AN's bomb in Milan. After the failure of Plan Solo in 1964, another coup attempt was launched on the night of 7th December 1970. In Operation Tora Tora, now known as the Borghese coup after its fascist leader **Prince Borghese**, the putschists who included Delle Chiaie and other AN and Fronte Nazionale militants seized the Ministry of the Interior but then withdrew, abandoning the operation on "orders from above". News of the coup attempt was suppressed by SIFAR, and none of the participants was prosecuted. Amongst those implicated in the Borghese coup were several of the members of the **Istituto di Studi Strategici e per la Difesa** (ISSED) in Rome, an Italian body that cooperated closely with Brian Crozier's Institute for the Study of Conflict in the 1970s, described in the next chapter.

ISSED's founder, General Diulio Fanali, a former Chief of General Staff of the Air Force, was one of the people accused with Delle Chiaie and Giannettini of involvement in the Borghese coup. Fanali's name also cropped up in the judicial inquiry into the Rosa dei Venti covert network, detailed below. The Director of ISSED's magazine *Politica e Strategia* was Filippo de Iorio, a close friend of Giulio Andreotti with links to the Italian secret service. A future member of the P2 lodge run by Licio Gelli, de Iorio was forced to flee Italy after being implicated in the Borghese coup with Fanali, Giannettini and Delle Chiaie. The Co-Director of the ISSED magazine was Eggardo Beltrametti, who with Giannettini was one of the speakers at the 1965 Parco dei Principi conference. Beltrametti was also mentioned alongside Giannettini during the judicial inquiry into the Milan bombings which launched the strategy of tension in 1969 (52).

IRD, FORUM WORLD FEATURES AND THE ISC.

Amongst the Allied partners in the immediate post-war period, it was the British who had first recognised the need for media manipulation to check the threat of communism throughout the colonies and at home. Unlike the CIA's anti-communist programme which concentrated on the creation of mass movements like the European Movement and the Congress for Cultural Freedom, the British Foreign Office had decided in 1947-48 to counter the ideological offensive launched by Stalin by setting up a covert propaganda and disinformation unit called the **Information Research Department** (IRD) (53). The IRD grew to become the biggest department in the Foreign Office with some 400 staff. The IRD network of 'press agencies' which distributed both attributable research papers and unattributable briefings served as the model for one of the CIA's most important clandestine media manipulation operations.

In 1965, the International Organisations Division of the CIA decided to use its intellectual front group, the Congress for Cultural Freedom, to create a new propaganda outlet, a press agency called **Forum World Features**. This CIA features service, which at its peak supplied over 150 newspapers worldwide, was run - from its launch in 1966 until its exposure in 1974 - by Brian Crozier. Whilst still Editor of the *Economist Foreign Report*, Crozier had already provided articles for the CCF journal *Encounter* as well as working on commission for the IRD for who he "transformed a thick folder of IRD documents into a short book" later published under the title *Neo-Colonialism* as part of a series called Background Books. After his departure from the *Economist* in February 1964, Crozier accepted a part-time consultancy for the IRD, advising departments and writing research papers. A few weeks later, Crozier was contacted by the CCF who offered him the job of taking over the CCF's features service and commercialising its output. Tied up with the IRD consultancy and other contracts, Crozier refused but accepted a second more limited commission: to tour South America and report on how the CCF could improve the distribution of the Spanish-language version of their magazine, *Encounter.* Concerned by Crozier's involvement with a CIA front, his MI6 contacts invited Crozier to MI6 headquarters upon his return in November 1964 and commissioned him to write an extensive background report on Sino-Soviet subversion in the Third World; a sanitised version of the report was published in 1966 as part of the Background Books series under the title *The Struggle for the Third World* (54).

In May 1965, Crozier finally accepted the post of Director of the CCF features service, Forum World Features, and Crozier started at FWF that July. Initial control of FWF ran via two CIA officers, CCF President Michael Josselson, and FWF auditor "Charles Johnson". The legal and financial infrastructure for FWF was provided by one of the CIA's "quiet channels", millionaire **John Hay Whitney**, a wartime member of the OSS (55), former US Ambassador to Britain during Crozier's time at the *Economist* and future publisher of the *International Herald Tribune.* Whitney obligingly registered FWF under his own name as a Delaware corporation with offices in London (56); CIA funding for FWF was channelled through **Kern House Enterprises**, a publishing firm run by Whitney. For a while, wrangles between Crozier and the CCF continued about FWF's independence from the CCF; Crozier eventually ensured complete separation of FWF from the CCF and direct control via a CIA case officer he calls "Ray Walters". Walters brought in an office manager, Cecil Eprile, and FWF opened its doors on 1st January 1966.

Crozier was however absent for much of 1966, researching a biography of Franco in Spain. An interview with the Caudillo won Crozier high level access within the Falangist government and particularly with **Manuel Fraga Iribarne**, Franco's Minister for Information and Tourism from 1962 to 1969 when he was dismissed and replaced by Opus Dei's Alfredo Sánchez Bella, co-founder of CEDI with Otto von Habsburg. Long networked with the European Right, Fraga became a key Spanish partner in the Cercle complex and a leading conservative politician in the post-Franco era (57)*.

It was also in Madrid – in Franco's waiting room - that Crozier met one of the future main backers of the UK counter-subversion lobby: **Frank Rockwell Barnett** who since 1962 had been running the New York-based **National Strategy Information Center** (NSIC) with the assistance of his Director of Studies, Frank N. Trager. Barnett had had long experience in Cold War propaganda, having served from 1958 to 1962 as Program Director of the **Institute for American Strategy**. Barnett's colleagues in the IAS were IAS Administrative Director and Air Force Major-General Edward Lansdale and Colonel William Kintner. Lansdale had been a CIA advisor to French counter-insurgency operations in Vietnam in 1953, then serving as Head of the Saigon Military Mission from 1954 to 1957, a period which spanned the disasterous defeat of French forces at Điên Biên Phủ, the July 1954 Geneva Accords which ended the First Indochina War and partitioned Vietnam, and the rigging of the October 1955 referendum in the South which installed the Catholic strongman Ngô Đình Diêm as President of the Republic of Vietnam. Returning to the US in 1957, Lansdale then worked as Assistant Secretary of Defense for Special Operations, coordinating the CIA's Operation Mongoose to overthrow Fidel Castro until his official retirement in 1963; he nonetheless returned to serve in the American Embassy in Saigon from 1965 to 1968. As for Kintner, he worked as a Department of Defense planning officer and liaison to the CIA for eleven years before retiring from the US military in 1961. Kintner was then appointed Professor of Political Science at the University of Pennsylvania where he ran the Foreign Policy Research Institute, a career interrupted by service as American Ambassador to Thailand from 1973 to 1975 during the height of the Vietnam War.

The IAS had its origins in the **American Security Council** (ASC), founded in 1955 by General Robert Wood, pre-Pearl Harbor Chairman of the isolationist America First Committee, together with former FBI Special Agent from 1947 to 1953 John M. Fisher who became the ASC Executive Secretary and later Chairman of the ASC Board. From 1955 to 1961, the ASC organised a series of annual "Military-Industrial Conferences"; the IAS was founded as the response of the Military-Industrial Conference of 1958 to a National Security Council Directive the same year recommending that "the military be used to reinforce the Cold War effort".

The IAS became the vehicle for the National Security Council's propaganda campaign and ran into controversy in 1961 for its political indoctrination of the military and its use of active-service military personnel for its foreign policy propaganda in civilian forums. The influence of the ASC and IAS over the American political process became so great that outgoing President Eisenhower gave a specific public warning about this "military-industrial complex" in his farewell speech in January 1961. Further details of IAS activities were published in the March 1961 issue of the *Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists*, and in August 1961 the IAS was denounced directly to newly-elected President Kennedy by Senate Foreign Relations Committee chairman Senator William J. Fulbright in his *Memorandum on Propaganda Activities of Military Personnel Directed at the Public* (58)*.

No doubt due to the uncomfortably high profile acquired by the IAS, Barnett left the institute in 1962 to found the NSIC together with wartime OSS veteran **William Casey**, Reagan's future campaign manager and his first Director of the CIA. The new group rapidly expanded its network of influence, particularly focusing on the university system, as Casey explained: "As a founding Director of the National Strategy Information Center, I supported the establishment of chairs and professorships in national security on 200 campuses throughout the United States" (59)*.

During their 1966 meeting in Madrid, Barnett invited Crozier to come over to the United States once his Franco research was over. The visit did not occur until 1968 but ensured substantial backing for Crozier's future ventures. Soon after Crozier returned from Spain, his previous insistence on a complete separation of FWF from the CCF in early 1966 was vindicated. In March 1967, the American magazine *Ramparts* exposed covert CIA funding of a series of organisations. This revelation was compounded by an article by Thomas Braden, head of the CCF's parent body, the International Organisations Division of the CIA, which linked the CCF to the CIA. Despite the attention devoted to the CCF, FWF prospered and by the 1970s had added a Spanish service followed by French and Chinese, becoming one of the CIA's main covert propaganda outlets which ran for eight years before its exposure in 1974. In reflection of FWF's importance, Crozier recalls flying to Washington three or four times a year in the early 1970s for briefings with Cord Meyer and the Covert Action department at Langley (60).

Crozier's operation with FWF considerably expanded with the advent of 1968 which brought student revolt and a major change in intelligence and security service tasking: subversion from the New Left. The IRD asked Crozier to prepare a briefing paper on the New Left which was circulated in 1969 under the title *The New Apostles of Violence*; a condensed version was marketed by FWF and placed with the *Washington Post* and the London *Times*. For the IRD, Crozier then expanded his paper "on the basis of a vast supply of classified documents" into a book entitled *The Future of Communist Power* which "incorporated, with slight amendments, the paper on political violence I had prepared for IRD" (61).

As Crozier noted: "In this increasingly threatening situation, I saw a serious gap. Existing institutes or research centres (or 'think tanks' as the Americans called them), however worthy, were either too academic, or too neutral, or too heavily concentrated on hardware strategy [...] they failed to take account of the more dangerous Soviet strategy of take-overs by 'non-military' means, such as subversion and terrorism [...] The need, as I saw it, was for a research centre which would produce studies on the ever-widening range of groups and forces bringing violence, chaos and disruption into our societies, but always in the context of Soviet strategy" (62). Crozier therefore set up a low-key features service within FWF called the

Current Affairs Research Services Centre in 1968. CARSC started publication of a series of monthly monographs on conflict, the first one appearing in December 1969. Crozier records that "the Agency had permitted me to produce the first five Conflict Studies under CARSC as a commercial imprint" using the FWF address; the sixth went out in January 1970 under the name of Crozier's new venture, the **Institute for the Study of Conflict** (63).

Kern House provided the start-up capital for the ISC, and Crozier functioned as Director of both FWF and the ISC. Several of FWF's research staff and the FWF library were absorbed into the ISC; FWF then paid the ISC the sum of £2,000 for use of the library it had once owned. Oil companies put up seed capital: first was Shell, who put up £5,000 a year for three years, and British Petroleum £4,000 for two years (64)*. Then the real money came in, thanks to the Agency and via an old American friend: Frank Barnett of the NSIC (65)*. Having met Barnett in Madrid in 1966, Crozier visited him in New York in 1968. When the ISC was then set up in 1969-1970, the NSIC provided substantial assistance. Apart from a guaranteed regular purchase of each issue of the Conflict Studies, Barnett's NSIC also provided the salary for one of the ISC researchers and footed the printing and publicity bill for the ISC's annual publication, the *Annual of Power and Conflict* (66).

Above all, beyond NSIC funding, Barnett could provide contacts, arranging a meeting with Dan McMichael, who remained a true friend to Barnett's NSIC for more than fifteen years, serving on its Advisory Council until at least 1985. McMichael was administrator of the trust funds of the Scaife family, major shareholders in Gulf Oil. Barnett persuaded **Richard Mellon Scaife** ("Dick Scaife as he liked to be called – a tall, fair-haired man with film-star good looks", as Crozier puts it) to provide $100,000 a year for the ISC as well as taking over the FWF subsidies from Jock Whitney. According to Crozier: "From that moment, the ISC took off". From 1973 to 1981, Scaife donated a total of $5.8 million to the NSIC; from 1973 to 1979, he gave $1.1 million to the London ISC (67).

The Foreign Office's covert propaganda arm IRD also contributed to the setting-up of the new Institute; indeed, "IRD became the midwife of the ISC" (68)*. When seeking initial funding to set up the ISC in January 1970, Crozier wrote to a powerful friend, **Sir Peter Wilkinson**, a senior veteran of the wartime **Special Operations Executive** (SOE) and former Deputy Head of the IRD in the 1950s who was later Coordinator for Security and Intelligence in the Cabinet Office in 1972-73. Wilkinson arranged for a retired Major-General, Fergus A. H. Ling, to act as a fundraiser for the ISC in military circles; Ling served as the ISC's Financial Director before becoming its Defence Services Consultant. This early assistance for the ISC by a former IRD member was only the beginning; almost all the key ISC staff were former MI6, IRD, CCF or FWF personnel:

- **Brian Crozier** was Director of both FWF and the ISC, and a consultant to the IRD.

- **Iain Hamilton**, a former Editor of the *Spectator*, replaced Crozier as Managing Editor of FWF before moving to the ISC as its Editorial Director. Both Crozier and Hamilton were fully aware of the CIA's role in supporting FWF and the ISC.

- **Michael Goodwin**, the ISC's Administrative Director, had been involved with the CCF since January 1951 when he was a founding member and Honorary Secretary of the British Society for Cultural Freedom, subsidised by the CCF to the tune of £700 a month deposited in Goodwin's account. As the editor of the journal *The Twentieth Century* and a contract employee of the IRD, Goodwin was considered by the CCF's Paris office to be "a vital contact", and as such the CCF bailed out Goodwin's indebted journal in 1951 with a lump sum payment of some £3,000 and a monthly subsidy of £150. As for the British Society, it had gotten off to a shaky start and was soon riven by dissensions centred on Goodwin; he resigned in January 1952, and worked for the IRD from 1952 to 1956 as editor of the Bellman Books series for Ampersand, the IRD's publishing outlet. Goodwin's post as Secretary of the British Society was then filled by the IRD's John Clews (69)*.

- **Nigel Clive**, an MI6 officer from 1941 to 1969 who served in Greece, Israel and Iraq before being appointed head of the MI6 Special Political Action section created to reproduce in Egypt the success of the 1953 MI6/CIA coup against Iranian Prime Minister Mossadegh. As such, Clive worked closely with the then head of MI6 Middle Eastern operations G. K. Young in planning the 1956 invasion of the Suez Canal Zone following its nationalisation by Egyptian President Gamal Abdel Nasser in July of that year. Clive went on to serve as MI6 head of station in Tunisia and Algeria before returning to London in 1966 to become head of the IRD until 1969. He then worked as Advisor to the Secretary-General of the OECD from 1970 to 1980, during which time he wrote Conflict Studies for the ISC, later acting as the ISC's editorial consultant from 1982 on (70).

- **Kenneth Benton**, an MI6 officer from 1937 on, served in Italy and Spain (under Philby) before becoming MI6 Head of Recruitment from 1956 to 1962. He then worked as head of station in Peru and Brazil and rose to become Deputy Director for Latin America before his retirement from MI6 in 1968, joining the ISC whilst their Conflict Studies were still published by the Current Affairs Research Services Centre of FWF.

- **David Lynn Price**, a regular author of ISC Conflict Studies, first worked for the IRD before moving to FWF in 1969 and the ISC in 1970.

- **Peter Janke**, the ISC's senior research officer and specialist on Southern Africa, had also previously worked for the IRD.

- **Patrick 'Paddy' Honey**, a Vietnam expert and former colleague of Crozier on the *Economist Foreign Report*, wrote for both the IRD and the ISC.

- **Tom Little**, another *Economist* journalist, was a central figure in an IRD front, the Arab News Agency, before writing Conflict Studies for the ISC (71).

Another important staff member of the ISC who became Crozier's inseparable partner throughout the 1970s and 1980s was **Robert Moss**, like Crozier born in Australia. Educated at the University of Canberra and the London School of Economics, Moss first met Crozier in 1969 when Moss came to see him with an introduction from his father-in-law Geoffrey Fairbairn, a founding member of the ISC Council (72). A central figure in the ISC and many later Crozier ventures, Moss followed Crozier's precedent in becoming Editor of the *Economist Foreign Report* from 1974 to 1980 and served as one of the CIA's main disinformation assets, particularly in the campaign to destabilise Chile's Salvador Allende in 1973.

Besides its staff's extensive links to MI6, the IRD and the CIA's FWF, the ISC also had on its Council senior figures from MI5 and the military intelligence community: **Leonard Schapiro**, ISC Chairman from 1970 on, had been a wartime member of MI5 and an advisor to MI6's G. K. Young some time between 1953 and 1956, when Young as Director of Requirements was reorganising MI6's chaotic information collation and analysis methods (73). In the 1970s, Schapiro held the Chair of Soviet Studies at the London School of Economics; he was later a foreign policy advisor to Thatcher.

A top military intelligence officer was **Vice-Admiral Sir Louis Le Bailly**, from 1972 to 1975 the Director-General of Intelligence at the MoD and a member of MI5's recruitment panel, who later served on the ISC Council, as did **Sir Edward Peck**, former Chairman of the Joint Intelligence Committee from 1968 to 1970 and thereafter UK Permanent Representative to the NATO North Atlantic Council until 1975, a post then filled until 1979 by later Cercle member Sir John Killick, detailed in the Postscript.

Two leading counter-insurgency experts also joined the ISC Council, the first being **Sir Robert Thompson**, a key figure in the British Army's campaign during the Malayan Emergency of the late 1950s, serving as Deputy Secretary of Defence for Malaya in 1957 and Permanent Secretary for Defence from 1959 to 1961. From 1961 to 1965, the year in which he received his knighthood, Thompson was the main architect of early American counter-insurgency strategy in Vietnam as Head of the British Advisory Mission (74)*. Thompson's books on his experiences of counter-insurgency in Malaya and in Vietnam were published by Forum World Features.

The second leading counter-insurgency expert was another old Malaya hand, **Major-General Sir Richard Clutterbuck**, who was Senior Army Instructor at the

Royal College of Defence Studies when he joined the ISC Council (75)*. The early ISC Council also included Brigadier W. F. K. Thompson, a powerful voice in the British Press as military correspondent of the *Daily Telegraph* from 1959 to 1976. Another senior military figure who later joined the ISC Council was **General Sir Harry Tuzo**, General Officer Commanding Northern Ireland from 1971 to 1973 and Deputy Supreme Allied Commander, Europe from 1976 to 1978.

Through these extensive contacts with the British security establishment, the ISC gained a unique role as an unofficial (deniable) but powerful propaganda tool, which could put over the intelligence community's views to the Press under the guise of a 'neutral' academic research body. It could also take over some of the networking with private bodies that the IRD had recently abandoned. As Crozier reports, by the end of the 1960s, the IRD had "decided to sever all relations with two major continental networks with which I had been associated. One was the Hague-based Interdoc group. The other was admittedly more controversial. This was a private but highly effective French group controlled by a friend of mine, the late Georges Albertini. [...] In return for all information and the contacts he gave me, I made sure that he received the IRD output, of which he made good use. [...] There was no question of restoring these official contacts, however, once they had been broken. In any case, Interdoc's value had decreased sharply after the advent of Willy Brandt as Chancellor of the Federal Republic of Germany in September 1969. As for Albertini, whom I met frequently in Paris or London, I made sure both that he received IRD material likely to be useful to him, and that I made good use of his own information and influence" (76). Albertini's influence was indeed of use to Crozier, particularly after the presidential election of June 1969 when Albertini's old schoolmate and Bilderberg member Georges Pompidou replaced Général de Gaulle.

The ISC also developed excellent relations with four private anti-union blacklisting groups: the Economic League, Common Cause, **Aims of Industry** and the **Industrial Research and Information Service** (IRIS). In 1970, whilst the ISC was being established, Crozier had edited the anti-communist anthology *We Will Bury You*, published by Common Cause. Alongside Neil Elles of Common Cause and John Dettmer of the Economic League, the authors included Charles Ellis of Interdoc and two founding members of the ISC, Crozier and Brigadier W. F. K. Thompson, the latter serving as Interdoc Chairman from 1971 on. This early joint venture was the first in a series of collaborative efforts throughout the 1970s and 1980s; Aims of Industry and IRIS, in particular, worked with the ISC during their counter-subversion campaigns.

THE MONDAY CLUB AND SIF

Besides its intelligence and industrial sponsors, the ISC also gained considerable political support, particularly in the favourable climate that followed the election victory of the Conservatives under Edward Heath in June 1970. The main political group echoing the ISC's concerns on Communist subversion was the **Monday Club**, a ginger group within the Conservative Party which included many Members of Parliament, several of whom were veteran British intelligence operatives.

The Monday Club had been set up within the Conservative party in 1961 to bring together defendants of South Africa and White Rhodesia who opposed the new decolonisation policy announced by Conservative Prime Minister Harold Macmillan in his "winds of change" speech. One of the earliest members of the Monday Club, joining in 1962, was the Catholic traditionalist **Sir John Biggs-Davison**, a Conservative MP from 1955 until his death in 1988. From at least 1965 on, Biggs-Davison served on the PEU Central Council alongside Vice-President Otto von Habsburg and the PEU International Events Secretary **Florimond Damman**, the future Belgian keystone of the Cercle complex, described in the next chapter. A stalwart in the Monday Club, Biggs-Davison served as its President from 1974 to 1976 (77).

Another Monday Club member with links to the Cercle complex – indeed a future Chairman of the Cercle Pinay itself - was **Julian Amery**. Amery was a prominent MP on the Conservative Right with a long history of extensive intelligence contacts. Having served in the Balkans with MI6's Section D and the SOE during the war, he was one of the major figures who pushed MI6 in the immediate post-war period to adopt its disastrous plan "to liberate the countries within the Soviet orbit by any means short of war", notably the catastrophic attempts to "set the Soviet Union ablaze" by landing armed bands of émigrés in Albania, Latvia, the Caucasus and the Ukraine. In June 1950, Amery attended the founding conference in Berlin of the CIA-funded CCF and served on its International Steering Committee; at the time, Amery was also one of the leading members of the Central and Eastern Europe Commission of Retinger's CIA-funded European Movement. Amery also sat in the Parliamentary Assembly of the Council of Europe (PACE) from 1950 to 1957 and on the Central Committee of the Paneuropean Union in the mid-1950s (78)*.

As for his parliamentary career, Amery was elected as a Conservative MP in 1950, marrying Harold Macmillan's daughter the same year. He went on to hold several government posts under his father-in-law, firstly as Under-Secretary of State at the War Office in 1957 and the Colonial Office in 1958, before being promoted to the Cabinet post of Secretary of State for Air (in charge of the Royal Air Force and its nuclear weapons) from 1960 to 1962 and then serving as Minister of (Civil) Aviation until the Conservatives' electoral defeat by Labour's Harold Wilson in 1964. Amery had joined the Monday Club soon after its creation in 1961; he was the guest of honour at the Club's annual dinner in 1963. In 1966, he lost his parliamentary seat but regained it in 1969, remaining MP until 1992, when he was created a life peer. By the time of the ISC's creation in 1970, the political pendulum had just swung back to the Right. New Conservative Prime Minister Edward Heath appointed Amery Housing

Minister, where he served until 1972 when he became Minister of State for Foreign and Commonwealth Affairs until Heath's defeat by Wilson in 1974, a year when he was again the guest of honour at the Monday Club's annual dinner (79)*.

Another Monday Club member was Amery's Private Secretary as Housing Minister, **Winston Churchill**, an MP from 1970 until 1997. Churchill's father Randolph had been one of the founding members of the SAS and a life-long intimate of SAS co-founder **David Stirling**, who contributed to the counter-subversion campaign of the mid-1970s by founding the citizens' militia GB75 in 1974.

One of Amery's oldest political allies in the Monday Club was **Sir Stephen Hastings**, an Old Etonian born in Rhodesia. During the war, Hastings had served with Stirling in North Africa as one of the founding members of the SAS before moving to SOE and fighting in France. In 1950, he joined MI6 and was stationed first in Helsinki until 1954 and then in Paris until 1958, reporting on the French side of the Suez invasion and de Gaulle's rise to power. His colleague and close friend at the MI6 station in Paris was Christopher Phillpotts, a future Head of MI6 Counter-Espionage. In 1958, Hastings was then posted to Cyprus, serving alongside **Peter Wright** of MI5 who later worked extensively with Phillpotts in the molehunts of the late 1960s. Disgusted with the outcome of the Suez operation, Hastings left MI6 in 1960 and was elected as Conservative MP; his first appearance in the House of Commons was sponsored by Amery, then Aviation Minister. Hastings then joined Amery in the Monday Club as one of the Club's eleven MPs in 1963. In 1965, Amery and Hastings campaigned with newly elected Conservative MP Cranley Onslow against the cancellation of the nuclear-capable TSR2 strike aircraft. Onslow shared Hastings' and Amery's intelligence connections; having served in MI6 from 1951 until 1960, he worked briefly for the IRD before being elected to Parliament in 1964, chairing the Conservative Aviation Committee and remaining an MP until 1997.

Another early – and key - member of the Monday Club from 1964 on was **Geoffrey Stewart-Smith**, later a Conservative MP from 1970 to 1974. In 1962, Stewart-Smith had founded the **Foreign Affairs Circle**, the British section of WACL until 1974, which produced the hardline anti-Soviet journal ***East-West Digest***, a fortnightly publication sent free of charge to all MPs. Stewart-Smith's journal *East-West Digest* would appear to be one of the outlets created around Interdoc following the foundation in the late 1950s of the Deutsche Vereinigung für Ost-West Beziehungen in Germany, the Oost-West Instituut in Holland, the Schweizer Ost-Institut in Switzerland and Albertini's *Est et Ouest* magazine in France. In the mid-1960s, Stewart-Smith also founded the **Foreign Affairs Publishing Company** (FAPC), which continued the *East-West Digest* and published many works by Crozier and other figures on the British Right through until the mid-1980s. As well as distributing the publications of the four British anti-union groups Aims of Industry, Common Cause, the Economic League and IRIS, the FAPC also acted as agent for the SOI press in Switzerland, SOI-Verlag, and for Interdoc in Holland (80)*.

Last and very definitely not least amongst the Monday Club members was **George Kennedy Young**, a veteran MI6 coup-master closely involved in MI6's Albanian landings in the immediate post-war period, strongly supported by Amery. Unfortunately for all concerned, the top MI6 officer in Washington liaising with the CIA for the operation was Kim Philby, who promptly blew it to the KGB. Young was later a key figure in Project Ajax, the coup against Mossadegh in Iran in 1953, the year that Young was promoted to Deputy Chief of MI6. Young also held the post of MI6 Director of Requirements and re-organised MI6 intelligence-gathering in the 1950s before taking early retirement in 1961 and joining **Kleinwort Benson**, the merchant bankers.

Young was brought into the Monday Club by Biggs-Davison in 1967, and was largely responsible for the Monday Club's rapid lurch to the extreme Right, particularly on the issues of immigration and subversion. In 1969, the Monday Club published Young's *Who Goes Home*, an anti-immigration pamphlet that stirred up controversy due to its call for mandatory repatriation of black people. Besides running the Halt Immigration Now Campaign (HINC) from within the Monday Club, from 1967 to 1969 Young chaired the Monday Club Action Fund, which he used to pay for his supporters to work in Monday Club regional offices. In short, as a trained intelligence officer, Young planted his cadres throughout the Monday Club's national and regional groups; one of Young's allies, Bee Carthew, controlled the administrative structure of the Monday Club as Meetings Secretary (81).

The Monday Club Subversion Committee was chaired by another of Young's associates, **Ian Greig**, one of the four founding members of the Monday Club in January 1961 and a close partner of the ISC and Crozier throughout the 1970s. In January 1970, Greig's Committee organised a Monday Club seminar on subversion, at which the panel included Greig, Young, Charles Lyons of the FBI and the ISC's Sir Robert Thompson. Young and Greig's preoccupation with subversion was certainly shared by the main speaker at that Monday Club seminar: General Giovanni De Lorenzo, former head of SIFAR and of the Carabinieri and main actor in the aborted 1964 coup attempt, Plan Solo.

De Lorenzo, now a monarchist MP close to the MSI, had been invited by Young, who was an expert on Italian fascist policing methods. Posted to Rome just after the war, Young had dismantled the German and Italian intelligence networks for MI6 in close cooperation with his OSS X-2 counterpart from 1945 to 1947, **James Jesus Angleton**, later the legendary (and notorious) chief of CIA Counter-Intelligence from 1954 until his dismissal in December 1974, and thereafter a powerful focus of opposition to restriction of the CIA until his death in 1987.

De Lorenzo's speech to the Monday Club came midway between the beginning of the strategy of tension in April 1969 and the Borghese coup in December 1970; at the time of his visit, De Lorenzo was also a key figure in an anti-communist resistance network within the Carabinieri and the secret services codenamed **Rosa dei Venti** [Compass Rose], which had been set up after the failure of Plan Solo. The Rosa dei Venti group, a major component in the Italian Gladio network, was later implicated in a further coup planned for the spring of 1973 (82).

As the same time as he was taking over the Monday Club, G. K. Young was tightening his grip on another right-wing group, the **Society for Individual Freedom**, formed by the fusion of two other groups in 1942. By 1970, Young had succeeded in becoming Chairman of SIF; the remaining posts on the SIF National Executive were filled by Young's allies, such as Biggs-Davison and later Conservative MP **Gerald Howarth**, SIF General Secretary from 1969 to 1971, member of the Monday Club National Executive Council in 1971-72 and also a member of Young's Monday Club Immigration Committee. Other associates of Young on the SIF National Executive included **Michael Ivens**, Director of the anti-union outfit Aims of Industry from 1971 to 1992, and **Ross McWhirter**; Ross and his brother Norris were veteran figures on the British ultra-right and editors of the *Guinness Book of Records*. Another member of the SIF National Executive was Monday Clubber **Sir John Rodgers**, Conservative MP from 1950 to 1979 who became SIF President in the summer of 1970. A CEDI regular since at least 1963, Rodgers had served as CEDI International President from 1965 to 1967. Like fellow SIF and Monday Club member Biggs-Davison, Rodgers later became a Life Member of the AESP (83)*.

A final SIF National Executive member was the Conservative MP **Sir Frederic Bennett**, a close associate of SIF President Sir John Rodgers as Chairman of the SIF Parliamentary Committee. Bennett was Senior Director of the Kleinwort Benson bank alongside G. K. Young, and also a Director at Commercial Union Assurance, where he worked with another retired MI6 officer with long experience in the Middle East, Ellis Morgan. Bennett later assisted Young in creating the 'private army' Unison in 1974-76. Besides being a close ally of Rodgers and Young within SIF, Bennett was also a stalwart member of the Bilderberg Group, attending fourteen annual Bilderberg conferences between 1963 and 1984 (84)*. Bennett's significance within the Bilderberg Group can be judged by the fact that Bennett was chosen as host for their 1977 conference, crucial for the restoration of the Bilderbergers' tarnished reputation after the Lockheed bribe scandal which led to the cancellation of their 1976 conference and the resignation in disgrace of the longstanding Bilderberg President, Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands. The conference, organised in the UK to commemorate the Jubilee, was held in Bennett's constituency of Torquay in April (85)*.

In 1970-71, SIF was active in opposing demonstrations by the Stop The Seventy Tour campaign led by Young Liberals chairman Peter Hain to protest against sporting tours in the UK by South African cricket and rugby teams: one photograph illustrating a SIF action shows Young, Howarth, Biggs-Davison and McWhirter carrying an urn of "ashes of English liberty". In 1971, SIF set up the Hain Prosecution Fund which raised £20,000; its Chairman was Ross McWhirter, its Treasurer Howarth. A valuable partner of SIF in support of their actions against anti-apartheid demonstrators was the **Bureau of State Security** (BOSS), the South African secret service from 1969 to 1978. **Gordon Winter**, one of BOSS's key agents in London working under journalistic cover (including seven years for Crozier's FWF), had regular meetings with Howarth to coordinate BOSS/SIF collaboration. Winter was cautious about SIF however, as his BOSS handler had informed him that SIF was a British intelligence front run by two senior British intelligence operatives - Young and McWhirter. On Young, the information was certainly right.

As a journalist, Winter had attended all of the matchs during the Springboks' tour with the task of photographing the demonstrators for BOSS files. Winter then offered Howarth over one thousand mug-shots of the demonstrators as well as his 60-page report for BOSS on the tour and on Hain's anti-apartheid campaign. Winter also offered to stand as the main witness in SIF's private prosecution of Hain, but withdrew at the last moment on orders from BOSS, who wanted him to maintain his cover for a much more important task - the ultimately successful attempt to smear Liberal leader Jeremy Thorpe (86). BOSS did not give up on Hain however, using a double in an attempt to frame him for a bank robbery in Putney in October 1975. A month before Hain's trial, he escaped a letter-bomb posted from Vienna; the bank robbery charge against him was ultimately dismissed (87)*.

FLORIMOND DAMMAN AND THE AESP

At the same time as the IRD and FWF were organising their new Institute under Brian Crozier, Jean Violet was working to provide a new logistical basis for the Cercle Pinay and for the political alliance of Pinay, Habsburg, Strauß and Sánchez Bella. The man entrusted with this crucial support role was Habsburg's longstanding Belgian contact, **Florimond Damman**. Damman was a key Belgian linkman, representing together with a few close friends the Belgian end of almost all the international right-wing networks - PEU, CEDI and WACL. Damman had been Habsburg's close associate since at least 1962, when Damman served as Secretary of the Belgian PEU section, Action pour l'Europe Nouvelle et l'Expansion Atlantique (AENA), before rising to become Chairman of the International Events Committee on the Central Council of the PEU in 1966 alongside PEU Vice-Presidents Habsburg and Biggs-Davison, Brussels-based PEU International Secretary and former Counsellor at the EEC **Vittorio Pons** and Pons's deputy and close associate of Damman, Belgian **Baron Bernard de Marcken de Merken**.

Damman's chairmanship of the PEU International Events Committee reflected his ceaseless energy in networking amongst the European Right – he ultimately died of apoplexy at the height of his powers. One particular form this dynamism took early on was the organisation of banquets, **Charlemagne Grand Dinners** as Damman called them, to bring together representatives and personalities from the fragmented paneuropean movements. Starting in the early 1960s, these dinners were organised in Brussels or Aachen by Damman and the Belgian PEU section. Together with CEDI Belgium, the AENA hosted a March 1963 Charlemagne Grand Dinner to welcome Spanish Information Minister Manuel Fraga Iribarne, and Damman's renamed Conseil Belge pour l'Union Paneuropéenne (CBUP) held the IX Charlemagne Grand Dinner in Brussels in January 1966 in the presence of "His Imperial and Royal [KuK] Highness Archduke Otto von Habsburg". By 1969, the Belgian PEU group again changed name to become the **Mouvement d'Action pour l'Union Européenne** (**MAUE**), but was still run by Damman who liaised with the Habsburg-Sánchez Bella group CEDI as a close personal friend of Sánchez Bella (88)*.

The Belgian section of CEDI was run by Damman's close associate **Paul Vankerkhoven**, who served on CEDI's International Council and also acted as Damman's Vice-President within the PEU section MAUE. The two men developed a series of right-wing groups, the earliest being the Belgian section of the **Ligue Internationale de la Liberté** (LIL), founded by Vankerkhoven in 1966, soon to be the Belgian chapter of WACL. In April 1969, Vankerkhoven also set up a select right-wing club, the **Cercle des Nations**, which became a frequent meeting place for members of the PEU, CEDI and WACL (89). In April 1970, for example, Damman and Vankerkhoven organised a Cercle des Nations reception in honour of the Greek colonels. Another collaborative venture for Damman and Vankerkhoven was the joint organisation of the 1970 Brussels Congress of the Anti-Bolshevik Block of Nations (ABN), an anti-communist group of mainly Ukrainian exiles financed by the CIA and BND, strongly supported by Strauß's CSU; its headquarters were in Munich (90)*.

Of greatest interest though for the Cercle complex was another club, set up by Florimond Damman in January 1969, the **Académie Européenne des Sciences Politiques** (AESP). Damman was Secretary-for-life of the AESP; Vankerkhoven served as a member of the AESP organising core, the Permanent Delegation. The AESP continued the tradition of organising the Charlemagne Grand Dinners and acted as a right-wing clearing house, as Damman described in his note 229:

> "Everywhere in Europe, there are people who share our ideology and who are unable to contribute to it because they are, and above all, they feel, isolated. The same applies to the small, restricted and regional groups which are jealous of their independence and their individuality, and we have to allow them that. We should not impose a line of conduct on them, we should suggest certain initiatives to them, but also find a way of bringing together their leaders on a individual basis, setting up permanent liaison between them without giving them the impression that they are linked, consult them for certain missions and make them believe that they have taken the initiative in giving us their approval" (91).

Besides bringing together the fragmented forces of national right-wing groups, another intention behind the fledgling Academy was to absorb the other transnational European right-wing movements, particularly CEDI and the PEU, the latter being based in Brussels since 1965. Whilst these two organisations would continue to exist, the AESP would act as a forum for a meeting of minds between fractions within both international groups. This goal of integrating the movements working for European union was in part due to a latent power struggle between political positions and personalities in European federalism.

Within the PEU-AESP complex, the struggle was one which opposed PEU founder and 'dove' Comte Coudenhove Kalergi with CEDI founder and 'hawk' Archduke Otto von Habsburg. The 1969 creation of the AESP may well have been initially intended as a means of stripping the PEU of its more influential members and sidelining Coudenhove Kalergi, a move rendered unnecessary by Coudenhove Kalergi's death on 27th July 1972, which cleared the way for Habsburg to become President of all three organisations - the PEU, CEDI and the AESP. In 1969, however, it seems that Coudenhove Kalergi could not be ousted immediately - his prestige could do much to gain acceptance for the new Academy, and so it was decided to at least start up the AESP with Coudenhove Kalergi as honorary President.

Before the latent power struggle between Coudenhove Kalergi and Otto von Habsburg within both the PEU and the AESP had been resolved, Damman had considered setting up another group to replace the AESP if Coudenhove Kalergi did not give way to Habsburg. Damman had already started the groundwork for a new group, **CREC**, to be run by Damman and a new ally, **Ralf Guérin-Sérac**, leader of **Aginter Presse**, the Lisbon-based revolutionary fascist group founded in 1966.

It is possible that Guérin-Sérac saw the new group CREC as an opportunity to provide Aginter Presse's international fascist contact network, Ordre et Tradition, with links to top conservative politicians, a bridge between the revolutionary fascist underground and 'respectable' public figures, whilst at the same time pursuing the strategy of tension that Aginter Presse had developed. After an initial contact in late 1968, Guérin-Sérac came to Brussels in January 1969 as Damman's guest to develop contacts amongst the elite conservative circles Damman frequented. Damman started by inviting Guérin-Sérac to the AESP's XII Charlemagne Grand Dinner on 27th January 1969, just four months before the Milan bomb blast that launched the Italian strategy of tension. Amongst the illustrious guests were Habsburg and serving Belgian Prime Minister **Gaston Eyskens**; one of Guérin-Sérac's dinner companions at table G was the Belgian neo-fascist **Emile Lecerf**, later to become notorious in connection with rumours of a planned coup in 1973 and a strategy of tension in Belgium in the 1980s.

Guérin-Sérac soon became involved in the internal power struggle within the AESP between Count Richard Coudenhove Kalergi and Archduke Otto von Habsburg. In a letter to Damman on Ordre et Tradition headed paper dated 26th March 1969, Guérin-Sérac gave the following description of the power struggle between Coudenhove Kalergi and Habsburg three months after the AESP's creation:

> "Dear Mr. Damman,
>
> Thank you for your kind letters of the 19th and 20th March which bring me here at the extreme tip of the continent [Portugal] the reviving spirit of European aspirations from the very heart of Europe!
>
> If I may give my opinion, I also feel that the maximum effort should be given to the Academy and the College [of Young European Leaders, an AESP youth offshoot], because it is from here that the most active and dynamic elements will come. However, and you are right on this as well, so as to create the necessary climate, we must contact a wider and more diversified elite. Removing the Count and replacing him with the Archduke is a solution, but if it turns out to be impossible, I feel it is logical to think of setting up another organisation" (92).

By the summer of 1969, Guérin-Sérac and Damman had concluded an "agreement in principle" to found the new group, **CREC**, which would try and reconcile two conflicting positions: the traditional Right, anti-communist but not anti-parliamentarian, and the revolutionary extreme Right represented by Aginter Presse. Guérin-Sérac and Damman then met at least twice more, as detailed in a progress report written by Guérin-Sérac on 19th May 1969 and sent out by Aginter Presse to their correspondents:

> "We should take stock of the progress made in our effort to set up CREC. I must admit that little progress has been made since the beginning of the year, i.e. since the agreement in principle on the two syntheses [...] the major reasons for this delay are:
>
> - the difficulties suffered by the group of our Italian friends as a result of the chaotic and revolutionary situation in their country;
>
> - the centrifugal tendencies of the French group, whose reconversion has not yet been completed.
>
> [...] We should not however give up. In a Franco-Belgian preparatory meeting held in Brussels in March, we agreed on the following work programme:
>
> A - Definition of basic political positions with regard to European union.

> B - Definition of goals and strategy.
>
> C - Organisation of a structure for CREC: bases and statutes.
>
> D - Preparation of a political plan and a psychological plan to be implemented by CREC.
>
> E - Organisation of a financial committee.
>
> In the meeting in Vienna at the beginning of this month, it was suggested we drew up a questionnaire so as to facilitate the definition, classification and alignment of the political ideas held by the various groups active on the subject of European union. Please find annexed a questionnaire covering paragraphs A and B of the above plan.
>
> I would suggest you send me your answers and any points you would like to add. I will then prepare a summary and if necessary highlight the conflicts or major disagreements and try to find an acceptable compromise with those concerned before finally submitting the conclusions to you" (93).

In this report, Guérin-Sérac refers to the "chaotic and revolutionary situation" in Italy, a climate stoked by the Italian correspondents of Aginter Presse, centred around the Avanguardia Nazionale group under the leadership of Stefano Delle Chiaie. Almost exactly one month after Guérin-Sérac wrote to Damman about CREC in March 1969, the Italian neo-fascists working with Aginter Presse carried out the bomb attack that announced the beginning of the strategy of tension in Italy. The bomb that exploded in the Fiat Pavilion at the Milan Fair on 25th April 1969 wounded twenty people; by the end of this first year of terror tactics, 149 bomb attacks occurred, as compared to fifty in the four years from 1964 to 1968.

Whether Damman knew of Guérin-Sérac's terrorist connections or not is uncertain, but it is clear that Aginter Presse's neo-fascist terrorists were in contact with conservatives throughout Europe, as Guérin-Sérac explained:

> "Our number consists of two types of men:
>
> i) officers who have come to us after the fighting in Indochina or Algeria, and even some who even enlisted with us after the battle for Korea;
>
> ii) intellectuals who, during the same period, turned their attention to the study of the techniques of Marxist subversion [...] Having formed study groups, they have shared experiences in an attempt to dissect the techniques of Marxist subversion and lay the foundations of a counter-technique. During

> this period, we have systematically established close contacts with like-minded groups emerging in Italy, Belgium, Germany, Spain or Portugal for the purpose of forming the kernel of a truly Western league of Struggle against Marxism" (94).

In an 1974 interview, Aginter Presse's key Italian representative, Guido Giannettini, alluded to the contacts between Ordre et Tradition and groups like the AESP, and specifically mentioned Franz Josef Strauß's CSU party (95)*:

> "I passed my information on to some friends in certain milieux of the international Right. They passed me theirs [...] the practical form for this exchange was private bulletins which circulated amongst certain European groups of the Centre-Right [...] such as, for example, the Bavarian CSU party, the French 'geopolitical groups' [Cercle Pinay], and other groups in Belgium [LIL/MAUE/AESP], Switzerland [SOI/ISP], and almost every country in Europe" (96).

Despite Guérin-Sérac's interest in the new group, CREC never got beyond the planning stage. Nonetheless, journalist Serge Dumont who infiltrated the AESP at the time states that contacts between Damman and Guérin-Sérac continued until April 1974 when the Lisbon offices of Aginter Presse were occupied by left-wing soldiers during the Portuguese revolution, blowing the operation's press agency cover (97). There was however one person who did not forget Guérin-Sérac's insurrectionary message - his table companion at Damman's Charlemagne Grand Dinner in January 1969, Belgian neo-fascist Emile Lecerf. In 1973, the names of Lecerf and several eminent members of Damman's Academy were included in a Gendarmerie report on plans for a coup d'état in Belgium, detailed in a later chapter.

Although the CREC project came to nothing, Damman soon overcame the internal struggle within the AESP and expanded its activities. At a symposium organised by Habsburg in Vienna in May 1969, Damman met Jean Violet (98)*. By October, Violet was looking for a group that could provide an operational framework for the Cercle Pinay, and thought of Damman and his AESP. On 21st October 1969, Violet wrote to Damman saying that he would like to meet him, having been "mandated by President Pinay to carry out a study of European perspectives after the German elections" i.e. Willy Brandt's September election victory.

The meeting took place one week later on 28th October in Brussels, where Violet was accompanied by two of his contacts, the first of whom was **Marcel Collet**, who had just retired as a director of Euratom. Violet's second companion was certain to ensure a favourable reception from Damman - none other than the International Secretary-General of the Paneuropean Union **Vittorio Pons**. Over lunch, Violet, Damman, Collet and Pons agreed on a new role for the AESP to act as a forum linking the PEU and CEDI under Habsburg and Sánchez Bella to the Bilderberg

Group and Cercle Pinay, represented by Pinay and Violet. The revamped Academy would be run by Damman directed from behind the scenes by Violet and his trio of associates Collet, Father Dubois and **François Vallet**, an industrialist in pharmaceuticals. Violet announced that he would go to Pöcking, Habsburg's seat just outside Munich, to confer with the Archduke and Strauß about the financing of the AESP.

Within eight months of the Academy's relaunch, the process of interlinking was already well underway, as a membership list dated 21st June 1970 testifies (99). The honorary figurehead of the AESP was PEU founder Coudenhove Kalergi, but the position was only symbolic: as on all future AESP documents, Archduke Otto von Habsburg's name is first on the list of names, whereas Coudenhove Kalergi's name appears only in third place under the letter C. The PEU/CEDI axis was represented by Habsburg, Sánchez Bella and Pons, the Cercle Pinay by Pinay, Violet, Father Dubois, Italian industrialist Carlo Pesenti and Collet.

The operational core of the AESP, the Permanent Delegation, brought together the Belgian sections of the PEU, CEDI and WACL - the duo of Damman and de Marcken represented the PEU Central Council and the Belgian PEU section MAUE, whereas Vankerkhoven was Secretary of both the Belgian LIL chapter within WACL and the Belgian section of CEDI. CEDI's Belgian section was also represented within the AESP by its President, the **Chevalier Marcel de Roover**, a veteran anti-communist who had played a major part in the early post-war creation of two private anti-communist intelligence services linked to the Belgian Gladio network, Milpol and the Delcourt network. From the late 1950s on, de Roover had represented Belgium in various anti-communist networks that later became formalised within WACL. He was also one of the earliest Belgians to frequent CEDI: he was appointed CEDI International Treasurer in January 1960 and founded its Belgian section in 1961, serving as its President until his death in 1971. Following de Roover's death, Vankerkhoven took over Belgian representation within WACL and CEDI, being appointed Secretary-General of CEDI and moving its Belgian office into his Cercle des Nations (100)*.

The most prominent Belgian members of the AESP however were **Gaston Eyskens**, the serving Belgian Prime Minister from 1968 to 1973, and his immediate predecessor as Prime Minister from 1966 to 1968, **Paul Vanden Boeynants** from the Parti Social Chrétien (PSC). Vanden Boeynants, or **VdB** as he was known, became a national institution in Belgian politics - the Belgian Andreotti, going on to serve as Belgian Defence Minister from 1972 to 1979 and as Prime Minister in 1978-79. He first entered politics at the age of 29 in the ranks of Retinger's European Movement. Before being elected to Parliament, he was one of the five Belgian representatives at the second conference of the Union of European Federalists, the most powerful group within the European Movement, held in Rome in November 1948 shortly after massive intervention by the CIA to ward off an electoral victory by the Socialist-

Communist Popular Democratic Front in the April 1948 elections. As we will see below, one key Italian politician in this anti-communist propaganda effort also figured amongst the AESP's members in 1970.

Through the UEF, Vanden Boeynants made a valuable contact in the person of the UEF Treasurer, the Belgian banker Pierre Bonvoisin, who in 1952 was one of the founding members of the Bilderberg Group with Antoine Pinay. When VdB was Belgian Defence Minister in the 1970s, he showed his gratitude to Pierre Bonvoisin by appointing Bonvoisin's son, Benoît, as his political advisor.

Baron Benoît de Bonvoisin – "the Black Baron" - was at the time the most notorious patron of Belgian fascism and a key international linkman for the far Right. Perhaps because of his controversial connections, de Bonvoisin did not figure on any formal AESP or MAUE membership lists until after Damman’s death in 1979, however attending CEDI and AESP events from 1976 on. He joined the MAUE Advisory Board in 1979 and sat on its Management Board after MAUE's relaunch in 1980; by 1982, he and several other MAUE Board members were the core Belgian participants in Cercle meetings as detailed below.

The same lack of early formal membership of the AESP or MAUE applied to another of VdB's most trusted advisors, **Nicolas de Kerchove d'Ousselghem**, a close associate of Damman, Vankerkhoven and later de Bonvoisin. An early and particularly significant contact for de Kerchove came in March 1964 when the young lecturer at the Belgian School of Political and Social Sciences of the Catholic University of Louvain – not yet thirty years old - was invited to attend the 1964 Bilderberg conference in Williamsburg, Virginia devoted to discussions of the Atlantic Alliance. The name after his on the list of participants was that of Henry Kissinger; other luminaries with links to the Cercle attending the conference included Antoine Pinay himself, David Rockefeller, George W. Ball, Senator Henry M. Jackson, Joseph Luns, Sir Frederic Bennett and General Pierre Gallois. The Bilderberg Group was not the only elite grouping the young de Kerchove frequented; as a protégé of de Roover, de Kerchove accompanied him to the 1966 XV CEDI Congress, where he was a speaker and was invited to join the International Council of CEDI for their private reception with Franco in the El Pardo palace during the Congress (101).

The following year, de Kerchove joined VdB's cabinet during the latter's tenure as Prime Minister. By 1971, de Kerchove was already one of Damman's contacts, noted as being unable to attend an October 1971 AESP Study Group meeting. After VdB was appointed Defence Minister in 1972, de Kerchove became his chef de cabinet with particular responsibility for political liaison with NATO headquarters in Brussels. In 1972, as well as returning to Federal government, VdB reinforced his political influence within his party, the PSC, by the formation around him of a hard-Right fraction under the title **CEPIC**, detailed below. De Kerchove sat on the CEPIC National Bureau and chaired the CEPIC Defence Committee, Vankerkhoven chaired the CEPIC International Relations Committee, de Bonvoisin was CEPIC Treasurer, and a fourth prominent member of the CEPIC National Bureau was de Marcken. Besides working together in CEPIC, de Kerchove and Vankerkhoven also ensured Belgian representation within CEDI after de Roover's death in 1971; by 1972, both men sat on the CEDI International Council and ran its Belgian section. As personal advisors to Vanden Boeynants, CEPIC members de Kerchove and de Bonvoisin were later VdB's communications channel to **PIO**, a controversial Army counter-subversion unit founded in 1974 and ultimately controlled by de Bonvoisin, described in a later chapter.

After Damman's death in 1979, de Kerchove joined de Bonvoisin and Vankerkhoven on the MAUE Board in 1980; all three men attended meetings of the Cercle in the early to mid-1980s. Both de Kerchove and de Bonvoisin also figured prominently in the 1982-85 Belgian strategy of tension, de Kerchove as chef de cabinet of Deputy Prime Minister and Justice Minister Jean Gol, and de Bonvoisin as backer of far-Right groups linked to the killings.

To return to the formal membership of the AESP in 1970, alongside the international leadership of the PEU and CEDI and their Belgian affiliates, the newly founded Academy also included three top members of Europa-Union Deutschland, the German PEU section, the most influential of the PEU national delegations. The first of this trio of German AESP members was a man we have already met, the conservative bag-man and German PEU Federal Secretary until 1975 - **Karl Friedrich Grau**, longstanding coordinator of the Frankfurt Study Group, the Hamburg SWG and the German support group for Sager's Swiss SOI. Grau was one of Damman's major partners in the early 1970s; Damman's private diary reveals at least 25 meetings with Grau from 1969 to 1973, as well as joint plans to set up a certain 'Collège de Coordination' in Cologne with Grau as President (102).

Throughout the 1970s, Grau's Frankfurt Study Group was a key source of German anti-communist propaganda via its private newsletter entitled ***intern-informationen***, an existing bulletin that the Study Group took over in 1971. Although the Frankfurt Study Group produced the bulletin, the legal publication address was that of a Swiss affiliate - putting Grau and the newsletter's contributors out of the reach of German law, and for good reason: the bulletin, which included contributions from BND officers, regularly published defamatory articles about Centre-Left politicians, focusing shortly after its creation on the SPD challenge from Brandt in the November 1972 elections (103)*. As one of the founding members put it in an interview with Swiss television, "the Swiss branch was set up to ensure that the left-wing German government [under Willy Brandt] can't touch us". Grau gave a similar explanation during a meeting with militants of the neo-fascist NPD party in December 1973: "We have compiled lists of Socialists, Reds and trades unionists. To be certain that only authorised people can get at them, we have deposited them in a vault in Switzerland" (104).

Grau's Swiss affiliate, the **Internationale Studiengesellschaft für Politik** [ISP, International Study Group for Politics] was founded in Interlaken in 1971 and was funded by a grant of 10% of the Frankfurt Study Group's income. From 1972 on, the ISP acted as a major German-language outlet for anti-Soviet and anti-communist propaganda, in many ways similar to the British Institute for the Study of Conflict. With participants and speakers coming from the military, the police and the intelligence and security services of Switzerland, Germany and other European countries, the ISP held conferences on Soviet subversion of Western society: typical titles of speeches included "Is the Bolshevisation of Europe inevitable?" and "The threat of German reunification - under the hammer and sickle!"

Considerable support for the ISP was given by Dr. Peter Sager and his SOI. For many years, Grau's smear sheet *intern-informationen* was produced by a printing company that belonged to Sager. Sager himself spoke frequently at ISP conferences in the 1970s, and the Secretary-General of the ISP from 1973 on was Sager's partner Heinz Luginbühl. Support for the ISP was also given by Habsburg and the AESP: the Austrian Archduke gave speeches and contributed articles to the Frankfurt Study Group from 1965 onwards, and several other German or Swiss members of the AESP worked as speakers for the ISP in the mid-1970s.

Alongside Grau, another German who joined the AESP in 1970 was **Hans-Joachim von Merkatz**, a senior CDU politician first elected to the Bundestag in 1949 as a member of the small Deutsche Partei [German Party]. Merkatz served in the Cabinet (alongside Strauß) as Minister for Senate Affairs from 1955 to 1961, and simultaneously as Justice Minister from 1956 to 1957; during his ministerial office, he also represented Germany in the Parliamentary Assembly of the CoE from 1951 to 1957. He switched party allegiance to the CDU in 1960 and served a second simultaneous mandate from 1960 to 1961 as Minister for Expellees, Refugees and War Victims – the approximately 12 million ethnic Germans expelled by 1950 from the Central and Eastern European countries behind the Iron Curtain were a notable factor in post-war German politics. Leaving national politics in 1962, Merkatz served as German representative on the Executive Council of UNESCO from 1964 to 1968 and in the Parliamentary Assembly of the CoE from 1964 to 1969.

More significant than Merkatz's political career was his role in paneuropean politics. In 1967, he had replaced Coudenhove Kalergi as President of the German PEU section, serving on the PEU Central Council as Vice-President. This succession was the first victory for the Habsburg fraction of the PEU to which Merkatz belonged; he had been a member of Habsburg's CEDI since at least 1959, and was President of the Europäisches Institut für politische, wirtschaftliche und soziale Fragen [European Institute for political, economic and social issues] which shared CEDI's Munich headquarters and served as its informal German section. One of the most senior figures in CEDI, Merkatz served as its International President in 1964 and later as a Vice-President, attending CEDI congresses until at least 1976. A Member of the Honorary Presidium of the Deutschland-Stiftung from 1966 on, he was also a speaker for Grau's SWG on several occasions and served on the Boards of several other organisations within the Cercle Pinay complex.

The third German member of the AESP in 1970 was Brussels-based EEC official **Rudolf Dumont du Voitel**, a Board member of the German PEU section. Dumont du Voitel was involved in the running of the AESP as a member of the core group, the Permanent Delegation; he also gave the AESP access to the European Community and the media, thanks to his position as Director of Radio, Television and Film in the EEC's General Directorate for Press and Information from 1968 until his retirement in 1973.

Franco's government in Spain was also well represented in the AESP in 1970. CEDI co-founder Alfredo Sánchez Bella was, of course, one of the AESP founding members; at this time, he had just taken over as Franco's Minister for Information and Tourism, a post he filled until June 1973. Also on the 1970 membership list of the AESP was his immediate predecessor as Minister of Information and Tourism between 1962 and 1969, Manuel Fraga Iribarne, whom we have already met as an associate of Damman since 1963 and one of Brian Crozier's contacts from 1965 on (105)*.

If the Spanish members of the AESP are of interest, one French member is no less so: in the 1970 AESP membership list, **André Voisin** is credited as an advisor in the French Prime Minister's Private Office. Voisin however had other connections not mentioned by the AESP: he was one of the earliest collaborators of Dr. Joseph Retinger, founder of the European Movement and the Bilderberg Group. Voisin was Vice-President of the European Movement, and therefore provided the AESP with a channel for contacts between the PEU and the EM. Voisin was also one of the founding members of the Bilderberg Group alongside Antoine Pinay and Pierre Bonvoisin, having attended the meeting in September 1952 which decided to create the powerbrokers' forum.

On top of the Academy's early contacts in Belgium, Germany and France, an Italian member of the 1970 AESP is of particular note: **Ivan Matteo Lombardo**. Lombardo, a textile industrialist and director of several American companies in Italy, had been one of the most prominent Italian politicians in the immediate post-war period, serving first in 1945-46 as Under-Secretary for Industry and Commerce under Parri and de Gasperi's first coalition and then in 1947 as the Italian Ambassador Extraordinary who negotiated post-war reparations with the American government.

The same year, as Secretary-General of the Socialist Party, Lombardo worked with future Italian President Giuseppe Saragat to oppose a Socialist-Communist electoral alliance, leaving the Socialist Party to form the right-wing PSLI (later PSDI). He subsequently served from 1948 to 1950 as Minister for Industry and Commerce in de Gasperi's fifth government elected in April 1948 after massive intervention by the CIA (106) before changing briefs in 1950-51 to become Minister for Foreign Trade in de Gasperi's sixth Cabinet. In 1951-52, he was the Italian representative at the Paris Conference which launched the European Defence Community in May 1952; Prime Minister Pinay signed for France, but the French National Assembly rejected ratification in August 1954.

Lombardo was a frequent participant at early conferences on the defence of Europe against Soviet subversion: in December 1960, he served with Pinay and Albertini on the Sponsors' Committee of the "First International Conference on Soviet Political Warfare" organised by the veteran anti-communist activist Suzanne Labin, future head of the French chapter of WACL. Labin and Lombardo were amongst the earliest members of WACL following its foundation in November 1966 and first conference in September 1967. The December 1967 first issue of *Damoclès*, the journal of the Belgian section of the Ligue Internationale de la Liberté, notes: "The International League For Freedom, directed by Mme Suzanne Labin and Mr. Yvan [sic] Matteo Lombardo, is currently composed of a French section, an Italian section and a Belgian section", the latter run by its Secretary-General Paul Vankerkhoven; these three national LIL sections formed part of the official WACL Chapters in their respective countries (107)*.

Lombardo had previously attended the Seoul 1962 conference of the Asian Peoples' Anti-Communist League, forerunner of WACL; as President of the Italian section of WACL, he attended most WACL conferences including those in 1970 (Japan), 1972 (Mexico) and 1975 (Brazil). In 1967, he was one of the founding Chairmen (and later President) of the **European Freedom Council** and led its Italian section, the Comitato per la Liberta d'Europa; Labin chaired the EFC Information Committee. The EFC shared its offices in Zeppelinstrasse 67 in Munich with the ABN, and the two organisations held joint international congresses (108)*.

Lombardo was also active internationally within the Atlantic Treaty Association, of which he was Vice-President and from 1959 on President; in 1955, he was the founding President of its Italian section, the Comitato Italiano Atlantico. In 1965, the Comitato called for the carabinieri and Italian police to be given powers to intervene in Italian domestic politics to protect the NATO Alliance. The same year, Lombardo was one of the speakers at the Parco dei Principi conference of the Alberto Pollio Institute that gave birth to the strategy of tension. In his contribution, "Permanent Communist War against the West", he called for "universal counter-guerrilla warfare". By this time, he evidently had considerable international outreach - the closing speaker at the Parco dei Principi meeting, Colonel Adriano Magi-Braschi, mentioned that he had "had pleasure in meeting Mr. Lombardo in the most diverse parts of the world". Lombardo spoke at the Alberto Pollio Institute's follow-on conferences in 1966 and 1968 as well as a later conference on "Unconventional Warfare and Defence" held in June 1971. Lombardo also attended conferences held by Interdoc in Noordwijk in March 1968 ("The armed forces in the psychopolitical East-West confrontation") and in Brighton in 1971. In 1974, according to the Italian Press, he was implicated in the Sogno coup (109).

To sum up this overview of the Academy afforded by the June 1970 membership list, we can see that only eight months after its relaunch, the Academy had succeeded in bringing together the leadership of the PEU, CEDI, European Movement and the expanded Cercle Pinay, including all the key personalities involved in conservative campaigns for European Union. Internationally, it could call on friends in high places who belonged to the Bilderberg Group. On a European political level, the Academy's members included former or serving Ministers from France, Germany, Belgium, Italy and Spain; at the same time, behind the scenes, the AESP shared common ground with the Portuguese Aginter Presse and its underground terrorist army.

.

THE SNIFFER PLANE PROJECT

At the same time as Damman and Violet were busy setting a new foundation for the AESP, they were also working on the trials and marketing of "an incredible technological breakthrough" - the ability to detect underground liquid deposits from the air. The procedure had been developed by the Italian Aldo Bonassoli working with the Belgian **Alain Comte de Villegas**. De Villegas was no stranger to Damman; his elder brother Diego de Villegas was married to Damman's sister, and Alain de Villegas himself was a member of the AESP Permanent Delegation, the inner circle that dealt with AESP business. At the end of 1969, the three AESP core members Damman, de Marcken and de Villegas met Violet at the Westbury hotel in Brussels to discuss how to proceed with the sniffer plane project. De Marcken attended the meeting as he had been involved in an earlier project by de Villegas and Bonassoli, a water desalination plant which had been tested on a holiday campsite on Ibiza that belonged to de Marcken.

The crucial question was to get an impressive first contract for field trials to help secure funding. After the failure, described below, of an attempt to obtain financing for the project from **Crosby Moyer Kelly**, an American industrialist in military aviation, de Villegas visited the Spanish Embassy on 6th April 1970 to lunch with Sánchez Bella's top civil servant as Director-General of Information and Tourism Ernesto Laorden Miracle, a former Spanish Ambassador, member of Opus Dei and fellow founding member of the AESP. Sánchez Bella's role as Minister for Tourism allowed him to promote de Villegas' scheme: de Villegas flew out to the Canaries in December 1970 with a contract to discover underground sources of drinking water on a site belonging to Entursa, the Spanish Tourism Agency.

The financing was also provided thanks to a longstanding client of Violet whom we have already met as Delle Chiaie's backer - **Carlo Pesenti**, "that most Catholic of financiers" who from 1942 on ran one of Italy's largest industrial conglomerates, Italcementi, inherited from his uncles whose close contacts with Mussolini had given the firm privileged access to contracts for concrete in Italian-occupied Ethiopia. After the war, Pesenti expanded his business empire via his financial holding company Italmobiliare, active in banking, insurance and newspapers, and was also the owner of the Lancia car brand from 1956 to 1969 (110)*. Pesenti was the most senior of a trio of Vatican financial backers, the other two being P2 members Michele Sindona and Roberto Calvi (111). Pesenti had a long history as a patron of far-Right groups; in the early 1960s, Pesenti gave 300,000 lire a month to Delle Chiaie's group Avanguardia Nazionale, which had begun training its militants in revolutionary warfare in the spring of 1964 (112). Pesenti was a major source of funds for the Cercle Pinay and for Damman's Academy throughout the early 1970s until Sindona's attempted take-over of his business empire forced Pesenti to cut their funding.

Whilst Pesenti provided the initial financial backing for the sniffer planes, Sánchez Bella used his contacts as advisor to the Union des Banques Suisses to arrange for UBS Director **Philippe de Weck** to come and witness the trials. De Weck was the main financier later implicated in the sniffer plane scandal; he served as Chairman of de Villegas' sniffer plane company, Fisalma (113). The invention would turn out to be a massive fraud; although de Weck succeeded in retrieving some £50 million of the funds provided by Elf, the French state oil company which had invested heavily in the project, another £50 million was never recovered, spent, according to de Weck, on "religious charities and other good causes" (114).

Other developments simultaneous with the genesis of the sniffer plane project might well explain the exact nature of some of these 'good causes'. Whilst the launch of the AESP was progressing so well, the expanding Cercle network suffered three serious setbacks in 1969-1970. The first was, as mentioned above, the decision by the British IRD to cut off contacts with Interdoc and the Albertini network, leaving Crozier's nascent ISC as the main British link with these Continental allies.

The second setback was the advent in September 1969 of a "hostile" government in Germany under Willy Brandt. In 1970, as part of his diplomatic opening to the East called Ostpolitik, Brandt signed the Treaty of Moscow normalising relations with the Soviet Union and the Treaty of Warsaw officially recognising the German-Polish border. Whilst Ostpolitik won Brandt the Nobel Peace Prize in 1971, it was anathema to German conservatives, amongst whom the exile community was prominent, and both CDU/CSU politicians and their more covert operators such as Karl Friedrich Grau mobilised to combat Brandt's government, particularly via a sustained campaign of attack ads in the run-up to the November

1972 German federal elections, called after Brandt lost a working majority in Parliament.

The third setback in 1969-1970 seemed at first sight to be promising – the June 1969 election victory in France of Georges Pompidou, which considerably strengthened the network run by his old schoolfriend, Georges Albertini. For Jean Violet however, Pompidou's victory soon turned into disaster; his fifteen year relationship with the SDECE was abruptly severed. In October 1970, Pompidou appointed a new head of the SDECE, **Alexandre Comte de Marenches**. De Marenches carried out a major purge within the SDECE, and together with many other staff, Violet found himself evicted from the cosy niche the SDECE had offered him since 1957. The SDECE under de Marenches was no longer prepared to pay the exorbitant cost of Violet's operations. In the secret intelligence reports he wrote on the Cercle Pinay in 1979-1980, **Hans Langemann**, the top Bavarian civil servant in charge of security matters, reported that General Jacquier, head of the SDECE from 1962 to 1966, had been giving Violet DM 72,000 a year and that Violet had been getting the same sum from the BND's General Gehlen.

In his testimony to the French parliamentary inquiry into the sniffer plane scandal, de Marenches stressed the financial burden of Violet's operations:

> "One figure [in agents' budgets] attracted my attention because it was followed by a lot of zeros. I asked who was this champion of intelligence. It was intimated that 'he was top of the range, an extraordinary person, he is an agent of the Vatican' [...] with considerable difficulty, after two or three days, I obtained his reports: a normally gifted person could have compiled them by reading *Le Monde*, *Le Figaro*, and three or four other magazines and adding a few personal touches. That was his entire production. I therefore decided to dispense with his services" (115).

It is also possible that Violet, the *éminence grise par excellence*, had accumulated too much power for comfort, as de Marenches hinted in his 1986 memoirs:

> "Before my arrival, the service included a picturesque personality (I won't say 'charming' because I have never met him myself) who was one of these more or less imaginary sources of intelligence for the service for many years. He became well-known later on in connection with the planes whose smelling powers were front-page news for a while. I dispensed with his services several weeks after I had taken over. On the basis of the reports I had been shown, I noticed that his services were very expensive. The results of the funds that had been given him in the past were not those one was entitled to expect from a good 'honourable correspondent' [intelligence source]. For a press review that anybody could have compiled, he had been paid the highest fees in the service.

> I was told he ran a pay-off system within the SDECE itself. I put an end to his exploits and had him dismissed within half an hour [...] some [of the SDECE staff dismissed] were quickly hired by a private parallel network that had nothing to do with the official services of the State [Elf's PSA, see below]. The sniffer plane affair is a skilful fraud whose outcome is unknown [...] in the maze I had discovered in 1970, there were a certain number of parasites who were not serving the State or France but were involved in lobbies, organisations whose foreign ramifications at times gave rise to serious problems" (116).

One such lobby was the newly expanded Cercle Pinay network, and thanks to funding from Pesenti, Violet was able to overcome the withdrawal of SDECE support and extend the Cercle's international outreach. Even before de Marenches' blow fell in the winter of 1970, Violet and Pesenti had been active consolidating their links across the Atlantic in America.

THE CERCLE AND SINT UNUM IN 1970

Whilst the *tête-à-tête* discussions of European heads of state in the first decade of the Cercle's existence remain almost entirely undocumented, a clearer picture emerges in the period 1969-1970. At some time in the 1960s, the Cercle had expanded to include business leaders, most notably Carlo Pesenti, Violet's close partner and major source of funding.

Several primary documents - two memoirs by prominent public figures, declassified transcripts of telephone calls by National Security Advisor Henry Kissinger and a secret memorandum from Kissinger to President Nixon including a CIA report on Pesenti and Violet - make it clear that, besides launching the AESP and the sniffer plane project in Belgium, the pair were also active in America and within other hitherto unknown organisations. The documents also underscore the significance of Pesenti in providing the Cercle with access to two Americans from the highest levels of business and government – Chairman of the Board of the Chase Manhattan Bank and later founder of the Trilateral Commission **David Rockefeller** and, through him, **Henry Kissinger**, appointed as National Security Advisor to President Nixon on 20th January 1969 (117)*. David Rockefeller and Kissinger were close friends and fellow Bilderbergers, coordination of their attendance often figuring in their telephone conversations. Rockefeller describes his involvement in the Cercle – or the "Pesenti Group", as he tellingly calls it – in the chapter "Consorting with Reactionaries" in his 2002 *Memoirs*, an account which is worth quoting in full:

> "Bilderberg overlapped for a time with my membership in a relatively obscure but potentially even more controversial body known as the Pesenti Group. I had first learned about it in October 1967 when Carlo Pesenti, the owner of a

number of important Italian corporations, took me aside at a Chase investment forum in Paris and invited me to join his group, which discussed contemporary trends in European and world politics. It was a select group, he told me, mostly Europeans. Since Pesenti was an important Chase customer and he assured me the other members were interesting and congenial, I accepted his invitation.

Jean Monnet, Robert Schuman and Konrad Adenauer were founding members of the group, but by the time I joined, they had been replaced by an equally prominent roster that included Antoine Pinay, a former French President [of the Council, i.e. Prime Minister]; Giulio Andreotti, several times Prime Minister of Italy; and Franz-Josef Strauss, the head of the Christian Social Union in Bavaria and a perennial contender for the Chancellorship of the Federal Republic of Germany. The discussions were conducted in French, and usually I was the sole American present, although on a few occasions when the group assembled in Washington, Henry Kissinger, at the time President Nixon's national security advisor, joined us for dinner.

Members of the Pesenti Group were all committed to European political and economic integration, but a few - Archduke Otto of Austria, the head of the house of Habsburg and claimant to all the lands of the Austro-Hungarian empire; Monsignor Alberto Giovannetti of the Vatican and a prominent member of Opus Dei, the conservative Catholic organization; and Jean-Paul Léon Violet [incorrect; Jean-Eugène Violet], a conservative French *intellectuel* - were preoccupied by the Soviet threat and the inexorable rise to power of the Communist parties of France and Italy.

Pesenti set the agenda for our thrice-yearly meetings, and *Maître* Violet, who had close connections with the Deuxième Bureau of the Service des Renseignements (the French CIA), provided lengthy background briefings. Using an overhead projector, Violet displayed transparency after transparency filled with data documenting Soviet infiltration of governments around the world and supporting his belief that the threat of global Communist victory was quite real. While all of us knew the Soviets were behind the "wars of national liberation" in Asia, Africa, and Latin America, I was not personally convinced the Red Menace was quite as menacing as *Maître* Violet portrayed it to be, but my view was a minority one in that group. Even though I found the discussions fascinating, the ultraconservative politics of some participants were more than a bit unnerving. My Chase associates, who feared my membership could be construed as "consorting with reactionaries", eventually prevailed upon me to withdraw" (118).

A second source of information about Rockefeller's attendance at Cercle meetings in 1969-1970 are secret transcripts which Kissinger ordered prepared of his telephone calls, 'telcons' which have now been mostly declassified. Several telcons between Kissinger and Rockefeller show that Kissinger accompanied Rockefeller to least two Cercle meetings in 1969-1970, the first on 2nd July 1969 and the second on 2nd December 1970. Both meetings were minuted by Kissinger's staff; the July 1969 record has recently been declassified by the CIA, whereas the twelve-page memorandum documenting the December 1970 meeting is reproduced in full below.

Besides Kissinger's participation at these private dinners with the Cercle, two telephone calls between Rockefeller and Kissinger from December 1969 and January 1970 refer to a letter from Violet to Crosby M. Kelly, a business partner of Rockefeller who also attended both Cercle dinners. The context of the calls makes it clear that the letter from Violet to Kelly, which Rockefeller forwarded to Kissinger, was related to French and American Middle East policy, and the timing is interesting - just when Violet was canvassing Kelly as a potential source of funding for the sniffer plane project. Kissinger's scepticism about Violet's overblown claims of access to newly-elected French President Pompidou coincided with a damning leak of information about a meeting between Kissinger, Rockefeller and other oil industry figures in an unidentified newspaper article which ultimately killed off any idea of closer American involvement with the sniffer plane project. As we will see later, initial support for the venture was finally provided by Sánchez Bella and Pesenti in the spring of 1970 before Elf got taken in by the massive swindle (119)*.

As Rockefeller indicates, another Cercle participant from July 1969 on was Giulio Andreotti who referred to the meetings in a chapter of his memoirs describing a vacation in America in August 1971:

> "Relations with America during my interval in government service (1968-72) did not rotate around official commitments but were nonetheless marked by moments of no lesser interest.
>
> The French stateman Antoine Pinay invited me to join a small and entirely informal group of Europeans and Americans set up to discuss current world affairs. We used to meet once or twice a year, ordinarily in Washington at the home of Nelson Rockefeller, but at times also in Europe (I recall one session in Bavaria as the guests of Franz Josef Strauss). Some of the participants varied according to the subject for discussion (highly regarded was Henry Kissinger), while the others, according to their respective schedules, were always the same.
>
> A scholarly Dominican, Fr. Dubois, who was on the Holy See's Permanent Mission to the United Nations, gave a religious touch to the sessions by celebrating Mass for those who wished to attend and offering brief

> meditations for all. Another participant from Italy was Pinay's good friend, the engineer Carlo Pesenti. Assiduous amongst the Americans was David Rockefeller. With his travels and personal contacts at the highest possible level in almost all nations he was always a source of the latest inside information.
>
> Pinay also travelled extensively and was always up-to-date on everything. What I most admired in him were his pragmatic outlook and refusal to espouse the pessimism which was quite widespread at that time and not without a certain justification. His prestige at home and abroad was not linked so much to his length of service in government (Minister of Finance and for a long time Prime Minister) [sic; Pinay was only Prime Minister for ten months, from March to December 1952] as it was to the successful campaign to strengthen the French currency and to the fact he was consulted during difficult economic situations and his advice was much appreciated. His many commitments did not prevent him from holding the office of Mayor in his small hometown of Saint Chamon [sic; Pinay was Mayor of Saint-Chamond from 1929 to 1944 and 1947 to 1977] until not long ago; this conforms to a traditional French practice for important politicians.
>
> Over the past few years Pinay has been active but has had to heed the precautionary measures dictated by age. Other friends of the group have departed from this world and so those annual appointments no longer take place [sic]. We occasionally meet, one on one, when someone happens to come through Italy or when I visit their respective nations" (120).

Besides his involvement in the Cercle, Andreotti also figured as an eminent guest of Damman's AESP from its foundation on. One of the earliest AESP events was a Charlemagne Grand Dinner held in Aachen on 6th May 1970 and timed to coincide with the annual award ceremony of the Charlemagne Prize which that year was being given to a colleague of Violet, François Seydoux de Clausonne, the senior French diplomat involved in the drafting of the 1963 Elysée Treaty between Adenauer and de Gaulle which had been secretly brokered by Violet. The AESP dinner brought together Pinay, Violet, Dubois, Sánchez Bella, Pesenti, Damman, de Villegas and Andreotti, the first of at least two occasions in 1970 that members of this group met (121).

The second occasion came on 2nd December 1970 when the Cercle gathered in the Rockefeller family mansion in Washington. A now declassified SECRET/EYES ONLY memorandum prepared by Kissinger's staff details attendance at the meeting. The American group was composed of David Rockefeller accompanied by his deputy at the Chase Manhattan Bank Joseph Verner Reed, Henry Kissinger accompanied by his closest advisor Winston Lord, author of the memorandum and later a key figure in the restoration of US-China relations, and a Mr. Kelly, no doubt Crosby M. Kelly whose son-in-law worked as Appointments Secretary for Kissinger. Governor Nelson Rockefeller joined the group towards the end of the dinner meeting. The European core of the Cercle was represented by Pinay, Violet, Pesenti, Andreotti, Otto von Habsburg and Strauß. In the wide-ranging discussions which also focused on Allende's new government in Chile, the Latin American view was given by two powerful figures in banking and insurance, the Argentinian financier Luis María Otero Monsegur and the Brazilian magnate Antonio Sanchez de Larragoiti (122)*.

As the full document is reproduced in the CIOC-CIDCC-Sint Unum annex below, a detailed description of the discussion at the December 1970 meeting may be dispensed with, save to note the critical point in time at which it occurred. The election of Georges Pompidou eighteen months earlier had led to the appointment of Alexandre de Marenches as new SDECE chief in October 1970; 'within weeks', Violet's privileged connection to the French secret service was severed, and so Violet turned to Damman and his Belgian friends as his new operational arm. Meanwhile in Germany, having dominated the federal government since the end of the war, the Cercle's conservative allies in the CDU/CSU had suffered a reversal of fortune in September 1969 when the election victory of Willy Brandt ended the 1966-69 Grand Coalition in which Strauß had served as Finance Minister - the CDU/CSU did not return to power on the federal level until October 1982 when the FDP left Helmut Schmidt's coalition to support Helmut Kohl as CDU Chancellor. Italy had also experienced political turbulence in 1969, although of an entirely different kind – on 25th April 1969, Avanguardia Nazionale under Stefano Delle Chiaie had launched the decade-long strategy of tension with their two bomb attacks in Milan; only five days after this Cercle meeting, Delle Chiaie and other fascist militants led by Prince Borghese implemented Operation Tora Tora, seizing the Interior Ministry before withdrawing on orders from above.

Besides the July 1969 and December 1970 Cercle minutes prepared for Kissinger, Kissinger was also the source of another secret memorandum which reveals that Pesenti and Violet were not just collaborating at the time within the Cercle and on the sniffer plane project but also within **Sint Unum**, described as a "clandestine Catholic international organization whose aims are to oppose Communism and further the principles of Christianity" and which had been founded in the immediate post-war period.

The document revealing the existence of this previously unknown group is an undated personal memorandum sent in late January or early February 1970 by Kissinger to President Nixon with an accompanying CIA report on Sint Unum, both of which are included in the research paper by Alice Arduini reproduced in the CIOC-CIDCC-Sint Unum annex below. The backdrop to Kissinger's Sint Unum memorandum was President Nixon's wish to re-establish official diplomatic relations with the Vatican by appointing a Special Representative to the Holy See. Diplomatic ties had lapsed exactly a century before in 1870, and a previous attempt by President

Truman in 1950-51 to re-establish formal ties had had to be abandoned after strong objections from various quarters about a violation of the constitutional separation of Church and State. Nixon fared no better and in April 1970 gave up his plan to formally appoint an Ambassador to the Vatican, instead strengthening links unofficially. The venture would finally succeed under President Reagan; the American Ambassador to the Holy See chosen was also Reagan's confidential channel to the Cercle and the 6I, on which see below.

The memorandum and CIA report reveal that Sint Unum was funded and chaired by Carlo Pesenti; its executive Secretary-General for life was Violet. The group had contacts with Generals Grossin and Gehlen of the SDECE and BND respectively, and Violet also had important connections to both American labour unions and to the US military in the persons of George Meany and General Gruenther. From 1952 to 1955, Meany was the strongly anti-communist President of the whites-only American Federation of Labor who oversaw its fractious 1955 merger with the racially-integrated Congress of Industrial Organizations; he then served as AFL-CIO President until 1979. Meany's status as an anti-communist figurehead was such that in 1966, during the process that would lead to the creation of WACL the following year, Meany was spoken of as a suitable leader for a future WACL American coordinating body (123)*. Major-General Alfred B. Gruenther was the first Chief of Staff of SHAPE in 1951 under the first two Supreme Allied Commanders Europe (SACEUR), Generals Eisenhower and Ridgway, before serving as SACEUR himself from July 1953 until his retirement in November 1956, during which time Germany joined NATO with Gruenther's strong support.

In early 1970, Sint Unum gave David Rockefeller a funding proposal for the creation of three publications in Rome, Paris and Montreal as well as "ten editorial and document centers throughout the world". Rockefeller passed the proposal on to Kissinger, who then immediately transmitted the document and a memorandum giving his views to President Nixon, recommending that "it is too risky for the US to become involved in financing a counter-movement within the Church". Apart from the Kissinger memorandum and its annexed CIA report, no other primary source on Sint Unum has yet emerged, and nothing else is known of its history or any action it may have undertaken (124)*.

1971 - 1975
OUTREACH AND OPERATIONS

THE CERCLE, THE INSTITUTE AND THE ACADEMY

Although the Cercle had long associated the core European countries and also enjoyed high-level support in Spain and in America, one vital link was still missing – across the Channel in Britain. The natural partner for this network of covert conservatives was Brian Crozier and his newly founded Institute for the Study of Conflict. Crozier's memoirs recount that Violet first contacted Crozier in mid-1971 following the publication in *US News and World Report* of a long interview with Crozier on the subject of terrorism and Communist intentions (125)*. Violet suggested that the ISC should organise a study group on the problems inherent in the détente process; Violet's group put up the funds thanks to Pesenti.

Violet brought along the report of an initial study group he had chaired, which was circulated to all members of the ISC and which provoked objections from one unidentified Board member for its "extreme right-wing views". Once those objections had been overcome, an ISC study group was set up including Crozier, Moss and two experts of interest: Sovietologist Robert Conquest, and Leo Labedz, editor of the CCF magazine *Survey* and one of the most important sources of material throughout the FWF operation (126). The study group met between July and November 1971 with, as a backdrop, Edward Heath's expulsion of 105 Soviet diplomats and officials on charges of spying. These concerns were integrated into the ISC's deliberations; as Crozier records, "a Whitehall friend of mine had brought me a detailed analysis of Soviet spying activities and techniques which I fed into our discussions" (127).

The Study Group's findings were published in January 1972 as an ISC Special Report entitled *European Security and the Soviet Problem*. The Cercle Pinay was very satisfied with the result, as an internal ISC memo dated 21st January 1972 shows:

> "Report on European Security and the Soviet Problem;
> Visit of Maître Jean Violet.
>
> The Chairman said that from what he'd heard, the report had been a remarkable success. He was impressed with the way in which M. Pinay had accepted the views of the ISC on how the Institute thought it should be handled, and it was gratifying that the Pinay Committee had been so delighted with the finished result.

> Mr. Crozier said that M. Violet, who had commissioned the report on behalf of the Pinay Committee, had come to London with M. Pinay during that week and that he, with Mr. Goodwin, had met them over lunch. Pinay had given Mr. Crozier documents relating to their next project. M. Pinay had presented a copy of *European Security and the Soviet Problem* to President Nixon and Dr. Kissinger in America. Earlier that week he had had a three hour session with President Pompidou, during which time he had presented him with a copy of the publication in French. Maître Violet had also presented copies to a number of German politicians, mainly Christian Democrats, who are having the report translated into German. And he had shown a copy to the Spanish Minister [probably Sánchez Bella, Minister for Information] and to the Pope. NSIC in New York had bought 500 of the ISC's initial print order [providing the ISC with an immediate income of £2,000], and another 500 had been bought by the American Bar Association. In effect, we were out of print on the day of publication. Numerous orders were in hand for the reprint. A leader in the *Daily Telegraph* of 14 January spoke highly of the publication" (128).

To give wide promotion to the Cercle/ISC study, Violet used the AESP network; in a letter dated 28th January 1972, Violet asked Damman to send out four pages from the ISC report to all addresses on the Academy's mailing list. On 11th February, Violet told Damman to make use of the Institute's services and to keep in touch with Crozier. An AESP/MAUE activity report for the first quarter of 1973 gives a picture of the intensity of Damman's operation; a note indicates that the total number of mailings sent out by the Academy in 1973 would exceed 50,000.

As the ISC Council minutes record, the Cercle Pinay was delighted with the results of their collaboration with the ISC, and the Cercle and its backer Pesenti soon became a major source of funding for the ISC. ISC Council minutes of 11th July 1972 report that "Mr. Crozier said that he had recently spoken about the future of the ISC with members of the Pinay Committee in Paris. He was hopeful of this committee putting up some £20,000 in 1973." This grant represented a major part of the ISC's annual budget of some £30,000 and replaced the CIA funding channelled via Kern House Enterprises:

> "The Kern House subsidy continued until at least the middle of 1972, by which time other sources of finance had materialized. Together with 2,000 odd subscriptions to ISC publications, they make up ISC's budget of, as of 1976, over £30,000" (129).

The significance of the Cercle Pinay grant can be judged by comparison to other gifts to the ISC by multinational companies: the Ford Foundation donated £20,000 over three years, and, in 1971, Shell had contributed a lump sum of £30,000 (130).

The success of the collaboration between the Cercle and the ISC led to a second joint venture in 1972-73, the production of another ISC Special Report to "analyse the crisis in Western societies in the light of Soviet subversion" (131). In September 1972, a study group was convened including Irish expert Iain Hamilton, former managing editor of FWF and Director of Studies of the ISC. "This time the Whitehall input was even more substantial than with the previous study group. It included comprehensive details of the Soviet KGB and GRU presence throughout Western Europe. The only country missing was Britain itself, partly no doubt for reasons of national security, but mainly because of the still recent expulsion of the 105 Soviet spies. Without revealing the name of my informant, or his department, I made it clear to the participants that the material provided came from an official source. [...] Our report, *The Peacetime Strategy of the Soviet Union*, was published in March 1973. It provided individual country studies of Soviet subversion covering the United Kingdom, France, West Germany, Italy and the United States, with shorter entries for smaller countries. It was probably the most comprehensive compilation of facts and analysis to have been presented in public. [...] the former Prime Minister Antoine Pinay, then over eighty but still wonderfully energetic, was so fired with enthusiasm on reading the report that he came to London to present it in person to Prime Minister Edward Heath" (132).

Jean Violet recognised that the ISC and their publications were the most appropriate outlet for a Western propaganda counter-offensive against Soviet subversion, but the ISC's Conflict Studies were only published in English. From 1972 onwards, one of the major concerns for the Cercle Pinay complex was therefore to ensure European distribution, and particularly French-language publication, of the ISC's output. The Cercle's existing French-language outlets were not adapted to running an international campaign of this scope; the AESP's monthly bulletin, *Europe Information*, was an amateurish production with a print run of only 2,000 copies. Violet felt that the Academy's bulletin was not prestigious enough to be the vehicle of Cercle/ISC material, and so in 1973 an existing journal, the ***Bulletin de Paris***, was taken over, and a second, ***Le Monde Moderne***, was founded with funding from Pesenti (133)*. Over the next few years, these two publications were to become major French-language outlets for ISC reports.

The *Bulletin de Paris*, close to the conservative white-collar union CGC, concentrated in 1974-75 on similar themes to the ISC: the chaotic situation in Portugal, communist designs on Southern Africa and threats to the Cape route for the West's supply of commodities, the deception of détente and the war of subversion waged by the Soviet Union. Amongst its correspondents were Strauß and **General Jean Callet**, a veteran of Indochina in 1950 and Algeria in 1956 who directed the Institut des Hautes Etudes de Défense Nationale (IHEDN) from 1972 to 1974.

Le Monde Moderne, a quarterly foreign affairs magazine, reached a more prestigious audience and was edited by one of Violet's close associates, **Jean**

Vigneau, together with former SDECE officer and Foreign Ministry advisor **Jacques Leguèbe**, and Bernard Lejeune, editor of the *Courrier austral*. *Le Monde Moderne* was a regular French-language vehicle for the ISC's publications - the first issue in 1973 consisted mainly of a translation of the 1972 ISC Special Report commissioned by the Cercle Pinay, *European Security and the Soviet Problem*. Later in 1973, *Le Monde Moderne* republished *The Peacetime Strategy of the Soviet Union*, the ISC's Cercle-sponsored Special Report from March of that year, followed in 1975 by the ISC's March 1974 Conflict Study *Marxism and the Church of Rome*. Other contributors to *Le Monde Moderne* included Strauß, Sánchez Bella, Moss and General Callet (134).

THE AESP IN 1972 AND PEACE WITHOUT FRONTIERS

In January 1972, at the same time as the ISC published their first Special Report commissioned by the Cercle Pinay, the AESP held its XV Charlemagne Grand Dinner in Brussels. The attendance list of the Grand Dinner, held on 15th January 1972 at the Cercle des Nations, reveals other early contacts that the Academy enjoyed. The top members of the Academy and the PEU were in attendance: Habsburg and Coudenhove Kalergi presided over the dinner. Reduced to a figurehead in Habsburg's Academy, Coudenhove Kalergi's death in July 1972 cleared the way for Habsburg to take over full control of all three organisations, the PEU, CEDI and the AESP.

At the January 1972 dinner, Habsburg and Coudenhove Kalergi were seconded by the Brussels organising group of Damman, Vankerkhoven, de Villegas and **Jacques Jonet**, a former political secretary of Otto von Habsburg and a Vice-President of MAUE, the Belgian PEU section run by Damman. Germany was represented by the Federal Secretary of PEU Germany, Karl Friedrich Grau, the coordinator of the Swiss ISP set up the year before, and also by Rudolf Dumont du Voitel, the EEC official who was a member of the AESP's Permanent Delegation and Board member of PEU Germany.

From Paris came the French coordinators of the AESP, Jean Violet and Marcel Collet, accompanied by **René-Louis Picard**, President of the **International Society of Friends of Wilton Park**, who regularly attended AESP events from at least 1971 onwards. Picard is an interesting contact for the AESP, as Wilton Park was a forum for propaganda activities by the British Foreign Office. In his 1966 study of "anti-communist political warfare", future Conservative MP and partner of Crozier Geoffrey Stewart-Smith lists Wilton Park with the IRD:

> "It is generally felt that the Research Department and its sister organisation, the Information Research Department [...] have a staff which is woefully inadequate in view of the growing importance of its work, and that its personnel are underpaid. Now if any British taxpayer's money is being spent

> on strategic political warfare, it is spent in the work of these two departments [...] Wilton Park at [Wiston House in] Steyning, Sussex, controlled by the Information Executive Department, 'is an institution sponsored by Her Majesty's Government. But, while the Government finds about seven-eighths of the money required to run it, the Warden has a free hand and is responsible for the planning of conferences [...] Wilton Park conferences of which there are usually ten a year, are a British contribution to the creation in Europe of an informed public opinion' (H. Koeppler, The Aims of Wilton Park, Central Office of Information, 1960, pg 8)" (135).

In other words, whilst the IRD and its 'private' offshoot the ISC ensured the surfacing of black propaganda in the international media, Wilton Park offered an official but confidential forum for discussions with foreign dignitaries. The International Society of Friends of Wilton Park was set up from 1968 onwards with branches in France, Belgium, Spain, Germany, Austria, Switzerland and Italy. By 1978, the Cercle succeeded in dominating this Wilton Park network by creating a European Liaison Committee whose nine founding members included four from the AESP: Picard as President, Violet, Sánchez Bella and Jonet (136).

Two Spanish diplomats at the AESP's 1972 Grand Dinner also had influential contacts. The most notable and more prominent Spaniard was **Alberto Ullastres Calvo**, who had served as Franco's Minister of Trade from 1957 to 1965 before becoming Spanish Ambassador to the EEC from 1965 to 1976. A high-ranking member of Opus Dei since 1940 and CEDI member since at least 1961, Ullastres was a Life Member of the AESP. The second and more discrete figure was **Roberto Jacobo**, whose post of Information Counsellor at the Spanish Embassy in Brussels reportedly concealed his activities as a member of Franco's intelligence service. Jacobo remained in touch with Damman throughout the 1970s; Damman's diaries published by his deputy Aldo-Michel Mungo reveal contacts between Jacobo and Damman in February 1977, by which time Jacobo had risen to become the Brussels head of station (137)*.

Another of the Academy's guests at the XV Grand Dinner was **Dr. Erno (Ernest) Töttösy**, European President of the World Organisation of Free Hungarian Lawyers and leader of the Hungarian section of WACL. Sentenced to twelve years imprisonment for "participation in a US-inspired coup plot" and tortured during his detainment, Töttösy escaped from Hungary during the 1956 revolution and fled to Belgium, obtaining Belgian citizenship in 1964. Töttösy had been in contact with Damman since at least 1961; on 3rd October of that year, Töttösy spoke on "The Modern Inquisition in Hungary" at a conference organised by the Partisans de L'Europe Nouvelle, one of several short-lived Academy precursors founded by Damman. After the foundation of the AESP in 1969, Töttösy was a regular attendant at Academy events; in the late 1970s and again in the 1990s, Töttösy founded associations for European-Hungarian co-operation with Habsburg and other Cercle friends.

The attendance list for the January 1972 Grand Dinner included a certain Mr. Valori, credited as Secretary-General of the Institute for International Relations in Rome. **Giancarlo Elia Valori** was far more than that - at the time of the Grand Dinner, he was one of the most powerful men within P2 and right-hand man to P2 Grand Master **Licio Gelli**. As an international financial advisor for important sectors of Italian industry (138)*, Valori had excellent overseas connections, particularly to Latin America, connections which he used to assist Gelli. Only one year previous to thie 1972 dinner, Valori had personally introduced Gelli to the Argentinian strongman Perón, then in exile in Spain (139)*. At the time of the meeting with Perón in early 1971, Gelli had just been named organising secretary of the P2 lodge, but by July of the same year, his infiltration of Masonic circles and his plans for a coup had gone far enough to provoke Grand Master Salvini into warning a meeting of the Governing Council of the Grand Orient of Gelli's intentions.

When Perón visited Rome in November 1972 - ten months after this AESP Grand Dinner – Valori arranged a lengthy meeting with Giulio Andreotti; Perón then returned to Argentina temporarily, accompanied by Valori and Gelli. After Perón's permanent return to Argentina in June 1973 and his investiture on 12th October as Argentinian President, a ceremony observed by Valori, Gelli and Andreotti, Perón appointed Gelli his Honorary Consul in Florence, a post that gave Gelli Argentinian nationality and diplomatic immunity. Gelli's contact with Perón via Valori also gave the P2 Grand Master an essential powerbase in Argentina, where Gelli set up a sister lodge to P2, just as well-connected to government as was the Italian lodge; the Argentinian P2 included Admiral Emilio Massera, head of the three-member ruling Junta of the 1970s and 1980s.

Gelli's relationship with Perón was more than intimate; Andreotti was amazed to note that Perón treated Gelli with remarkable deference and respect. Having won over Perón, Gelli then tried to cut Valori's contacts to Perón. The two became bitter rivals for economic and political influence, and Gelli finally expelled Valori from P2 in 1974. Valori would go on to provide some very significant testimony about Gelli's activities in Argentina and Uruguay to the Italian parliamentary commission investigating P2 in 1983. A likely cause for the rivalry was the extremely lucrative nature of Gelli’s Argentinian business activities. Together with Gelli's confidant and fellow P2 member Umberto Ortolani, Valori and Gelli had founded a company called Ase (Agenzia per lo sviluppo economico or Agency for Economic Development), with the capital being divided into 50% for Gelli, 25% for Valori and 25% for Ortolani. "Gelli brokered three-way oil and arms deals among Libya, Italy and Argentina through the quaintly named Agency for Economic Development, which he and Umberto Ortolani owned. In 1976 Italy sold Argentina $239 million worth of arms; by 1978 the total had hit $1.27 billion" (140)*.

This impressive list of AESP contacts would be the platform for another joint operation between Crozier, Violet and Damman - the launching of an international campaign for human rights and freedom of movement and persons under the title "Appel pour une vraie "Sécurité Européenne"". The backdrop for this first of two AESP "Helsinki Actions" was the start in November 1972 of negotiations that ultimately led to the 1973-75 Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe and the Helsinki Final Act of 1975.

> "The three of us - Damman, Violet and I - drafted an appeal for 'Peace without Frontiers', in which we defined "our" concept of a true détente. [...] The appeal, dispatched to distinguished people in Western Europe from the Académie in Brussels, collected many hundreds of signatures in favour of 'Peace without Frontiers'. It is no exaggeration to claim that this initiative led to the Western insistence on 'Basket III' in the Helsinki discussions. Basket III was the third of the packages of themes for discussion at the proposed European Security Conference. It dealt with human rights, freedom of information, and cultural exchanges. It was the most fundamental and therefore the most important of the 'baskets' " (141).

An AESP/MAUE activity report for the first quarter of 1973 gives a glimpse of the work carried out by the Academy on this operation:

"24.1.73: Contact dinner at the Cercle des Nations - Minister von Merkatz, Archduke Otto.

25.1.73: Meeting of the Permanent Delegation of the AESP. XVII Charlemagne Grand Dinner - more than 200 attended - wide press coverage of Archduke Otto's speech.

26.1.73: Assembly of the Academy and lunch at the Cercle des Nations - over one hundred participants - wide-ranging and lively debate on Mr. Violet's speech about the Helsinki Appeal.

27.1.73: Contact meeting at the Westbury - Mr. Violet, Mr. Vallet, Comte de Villegas and Mr. Damman.

Contact meetings with Mr. Vandoros from Athens, Schwarzer from Bonn, Greig from London, Trainar from Limoges.

5.2.73: Mailing of 2,000 copies of *Europe Information*.

15.2.73: Start of dissemination of the 10,000 Helsinki Appeals: printing. Printing of 7,000 accompanying letters and 7,000 reply coupons. This operation will continue throughout March, April, May and June 1973.

17.2.73: A MAUE delegation attended the Assembly of the Beweging voor de Verenigde Staten van Europe [Movement for the United States of Europe] in Antwerp. Further meetings with Mr. André Voisin and Mr. Max Richard. Contact with Mr. [George] Thomson (Labour Party), [the recently appointed] British member of the Commission of the EEC, Mr. Molenaar, President of the Dutch European Movement, Mr. Koppe of Europa Union Deutschland, etc.

5.3.73: *Damoclès*, the monthly journal of the Ligue Internationale de la Liberté, distributed 1,000 Helsinki Appeals.

10.3.73 Distribution of 2,000 copies of *Europe Information*.

20.3.73 Participation of Mr. Damman at the Board Meeting of the Association Atlantique Belge. Preparation of the General Assembly of the ATA Atlantic Treaty Association to be held in Brussels in September 1973.

22/23.3.73 Meeting of the Permanent Delegation of the AESP in Hotel Tulpenfeld in Bonn. Organisation of the Helsinki Appeal Action in Germany.

Working meeting with Messrs von Wersebe, Dirnacker and [Cercle member since at least 1969] Mertes MP. Debate in the evening with some forty VIPs including the Secretary to former Chancellor Erhard.

30.3.73-
1.4.73: Participated in the Wilton Park meeting in Madrid. "The economic future of Europe and inflation". Belgian delegation: Mr. and Mrs. de Limelette, General Vivario, Mr. Damman, Mr. Jonet, Miss Verlaine, Mrs. Bauduin.

Academy contact meeting: Messrs. Violet, Vallet, Jonet and Damman.

Contact with Don Manuel Fraga Iribarne, former Information Minister, who is completely won over to our cause" (142)*.

At the January 1973 Charlemagne Grand Dinner mentioned in the report, Damman, de Villegas and Habsburg had the honour of again welcoming a distinguished guest - Giulio Andreotti, seven times Italian Prime Minister, implicated in many of the scandals that shook Italy during his terms of office and a longstanding friend of Pesenti and Violet who, as detailed above, had previously attended both Cercle meetings since at least 1969 and AESP events since at least 1970 (143).

Another important guest at the January 1973 Grand Dinner - indeed, with Violet and Crozier, a future member of the triumvirate coordinating the Cercle Pinay - was the German diplomat and Count **Hans Graf Huyn**, born in Warsaw where his father had been the Embassy Press Attaché.

Huyn served as a German diplomat from 1955 to 1965; in 1956, he was the Secretary to the German delegation at the EEC negotiations. From 1957 to 1959, he worked on Western European Affairs at the Foreign Ministry in Bonn. After diplomatic postings in Tunis, Dublin, Tokyo and Manila, Huyn returned to the Foreign Ministry in 1964, working in the Political Division charged with "European political integration, Council of Europe, European NGOs and Western European Union (non-military affairs)", a major focus being the implementation of the 1963 Elysée Treaty, concluded after the secret negotiations between Pinay, Adenauer and Strauß that had been facilitated by Violet. Huyn requested dismissal from the Foreign Service in 1965 after being accused of trying to undermine Foreign Minister Gerhard Schröder, whose emphasis on strengthening Anglo-German ties was perceived by Huyn as threatening the burgeoning cooperation between France and Germany. Huyn then worked for the German Finance Ministry from 1969 to 1972 when he left government service to become the foreign policy spokesman for Strauß's CSU fraction in the Bundestag.

A Board Member of the Deutschland-Stiftung, Huyn was another of the CEDI recruits to the Academy; a 1972 CEDI publication lists Huyn as a member of the International Council of CEDI alongside AESP members Habsburg, Sánchez Bella, Merkatz and Vankerkhoven. At the time of the 1973 Grand Dinner, Huyn had recently become the CSU foreign policy spokesman in the German Parliament, a post he filled until elected himself as a CSU MP in 1976. Huyn went on to serve in the Bundestag until 1990, acting as the key foreign and defence policy spokesman for the CSU; his CDU counterpart – previously the founding father of the German military psy-ops programme - was **Dr. Werner Marx**, who had sat with Huyn on the CEDI International Council since at least 1972. Besides representing Strauß within the Cercle Pinay, Huyn also became a central linkman for the Cercle in Germany, serving on the Boards of numerous propaganda outfits of the German Right, described in later chapters (144)*.

Damman's mention in the activity report of a meeting in January 1973 with "Mr. Greig from London" almost certainly refers to Ian Greig, at the time Chairman of the Subversion Committee of the Monday Club and a close associate of G. K. Young who had worked with Crozier and the ISC since its creation in 1970. Cooperation with the ISC continued throughout the year; a letter from Damman to Violet dated 12th September 1973 stated that "a contact meeting was held with one of the staff of Brian Crozier, founder and director of the Institute for the Study of Conflict" (145). Another letter from Damman to Violet from September 1973 spoke optimistically of intensified collaboration between the AESP and Interdoc, detailing a Brussels meeting between Interdoc Director Van den Heuvel, Damman and Vankerkhoven, with Damman offering the conclusion that "our cooperation with Interdoc should provide us with a good cell in the Netherlands as Mr. Van den Heuvel's connections are very extensive", a relationship between the two groups that was formalised in 1978 by the Director of Interdoc becoming an AESP member (146)*.

THE AESP, CEPIC AND THE 1973 COUP

In 1972, whilst Violet and Damman were cooperating closely with Crozier's ISC and Grau's German and Swiss groups, several leading AESP/MAUE members set up a right-wing ginger group within the major Belgian conservative party, the Parti Social Chrétien (PSC). The group, **CEPIC**, the Centre Politique des Indépendants et des Cadres Chrétiens, became an official section of the PSC in 1975. In September 1973, a Gendarmerie report by Major de Cock implicated several prominent AESP/CEPIC members in funding an extreme right-wing group, the **NEM Clubs**. A 1976 Gendarmerie report by Chief Adjutant Roger Tratsaert further alleged that the NEM Clubs had been major participants in plans for a coup d'état by elements of the Gendarmerie in the early 1970s (147).

The most prominent founding member of CEPIC to belong to Damman's Academy was former Prime Minister **Paul Vanden Boeynants**, commonly known as VdB. An AESP Member of Honour since at least June 1970, he would rise to become President of CEPIC from 1977 onwards and leader of the PSC. VdB was implicated by the de Cock report in funding groups planning a coup d'état; at the time, he was Belgian Defence Minister, the minister responsible for overseeing the Gendarmerie.

Another figure common to CEPIC and the AESP was **Baron Bernard de Marcken de Merken**. A member of the PEU Central Council with Habsburg, Pons, Damman and Biggs-Davison, and also a Board Member of MAUE, de Marcken had been a member of the AESP core group, the Permanent Delegation, since the Academy's inception in 1969. As we have seen, de Marcken had been present at the 1969 meeting with Violet, Damman and de Villegas which launched the sniffer plane scheme. De Marcken was also named in the de Cock report.

A third central figure in CEPIC named in the de Cock report was the CEPIC treasurer, **Baron Benoît de Bonvoisin**, Vanden Boeynant's political advisor whilst VdB was Defence Minister (148). De Bonvoisin has been one of the most notorious characters in European fascism with particularly close links to the Italian MSI and Stefano Delle Chiaie; in 1975, de Bonvoisin hosted a gathering of European fascists at his castle at Maizeret, attended by the heads of Ordine Nuovo, the MSI, the National Front, Fuerza Nueva and the French Forces Nouvelles, amongst others. The Belgian representatives at the 1975 fascist summit were AESP contact Emile Lecerf, editor of the NEM, and Francis Dossogne of the Front de la Jeunesse, the two organisations that the CEPIC members were accused of financing in the de Cock report.

De Bonvoisin's close relationship with AESP leaders was not confirmed by formal membership of the Academy until the late 1970s, but as VdB's factotum, de Bonvoisin will have been a regular participant at AESP administration meetings. He was also an intimate of Archduke Otto von Habsburg, and was in close contact with Jean Violet, as indicated by a diagram of connections between various persons drawn up by leading Belgian fascist **Paul Latinus**, in which Violet's name figures directly under de Bonvoisin's. Significantly, Violet is not linked by Latinus to any other person on the list – possibly a gateway into a different network. **Aldo-Michel Mungo**, Damman's former deputy as AESP Delegate-General and MAUE Secretary-General, offers an interesting and no doubt well-informed claim in his pseudonymous exposé *Enquêtes et Reportages*:

> "What links are there between this man [de Bonvoisin] and lawyer Violet? Apparently none, except for the declarations made by de Bonvoisin who, amongst friends, claimed to have the warmest relations with the mysterious lawyer [...] Before the sniffer plane affair got juicy, de Bonvoisin and Damman were on good terms [...] once Violet's funds began flowing to Damman, relations between the two took a turn for the worse, each clearly seeking to be the sole beneficiary of such manna. If we are now certain that Damman and his friends benefited royally from Violet's 'subsidies', it is more difficult to prove the same for de Bonvoisin. One point is certain: the hostilities between the two camps ended with the end of the sniffer plane affair. It is not proof, but it does allow us a hypothesis: what if Violet, like the Red Brigades, had set up two 'columns' in Belgium, applying the old principle of not putting all one's eggs in the same basket?" (149).

Beyond his contacts with Violet, de Bonvoisin also enjoyed a privileged relationship with Antoine Pinay; de Bonvoisin's father Pierre had been one of the founding members of the Bilderberg Group alongside Pinay in 1952. When de Bonvoisin was attacked in the Press in a 1981 revival of the charges of funding the Front de la Jeunesse and NEM, the NEM Club magazine retaliated by printing a picture of de Bonvoisin in Washington in the company of two senior Bilderberg and Cercle members: David Rockefeller and Antoine Pinay (150)*.

The NEM Clubs themselves were formed of readers of the fascist magazine, ***Nouvel Europe Magazine***, edited by Emile Lecerf. The history of the *Nouvel Europe Magazine* is interesting: it was founded on 14th December 1944 as *Grande-Bretagne* by British intelligence agent Cecil H. de Sausmarez. De Sausmarez had been Press Attaché at the British Embassy in Brussels in 1939; evacuated to Britain in 1940, he took over control of the Belgian and Dutch resistance networks run by the Political Warfare Executive, and as such forged links with a branch of the Flemish New Order, the Verdinaso movement. De Sausmarez also coordinated psychological warfare in the form of radio broadcasts to the two countries. In 1945, he returned to the British Embassy in Brussels where he worked until 1948. The editor of the magazine de Sausmarez founded was a personal friend, the Verdinaso militant Pierre Blanc; the editorial writer of the journal, working under the pseudonym Ossian Mathieu, was Emile Lecerf, the magazine's future editor and protégé of de Bonvoisin. The magazine was retitled *Europe-Amérique* in 1945 before becoming *Europe-Magazine* from 1953 to 1969 and then *Nouvel Europe Magazine* (151). The magazine had a long history of being involved in underground paramilitary groups; one of *Europe-Amérique*'s correspondents was **André Moyen**, a wartime agent for the OSS and British and Belgian intelligence services. Moyen, who ran Milpol, a Belgian private intelligence service founded in 1948, was a key figure in the Belgian Gladio network (152). *Europe-Amérique* was also the launching ground for a young Belgian journalist **Arnaud de Borchgrave**, who was later a close friend of de Bonvoisin and a leading American disinformation asset in partnership with Robert Moss.

Emile Lecerf was a longstanding acquaintance within AESP circles: he ran the Belgian WACL chapter LIL with AESP/MAUE member Paul Vankerkhoven in the early 1970s. As we've seen, Lecerf was a guest at the January 1969 Charlemagne Grand Dinner organised by Damman, where he shared a table with Guérin-Sérac of Aginter Presse, just four months before the Milan bomb that launched the strategy of tension in Italy. This contact between Lecerf and Aginter Presse, masters of destabilisation, soon bore fruit: in May 1971, two months after Lecerf became editor-in-chief of *NEM* and just over two years after AN's Milan bomb, the magazine made the first of several references to a coup d'état in a long article entitled *The technique of an ideal coup d'état* (153). Such incitation to revolt evidently did not alienate Lecerf's backers: that month, the *NEM* moved to new premises, owned by de Bonvoisin.

The same allegations of funding for the NEM Clubs and the Front de la Jeunesse provided by VdB and de Bonvoisin again surfaced in connection with coup plots in the 1980s, covered in a later chapter. Despite the contact between Guérin-Sérac and Lecerf in 1969 and the links between Lecerf and the AESP/MAUE from the early 1970s through to the 1980s, the official enquiries into destabilisation in Belgium have paid scant attention to Aginter Presse, the AESP and their contacts with Emile Lecerf.

CONSULTANTS IN COUNTER-INSURGENCY

In 1972-73, whilst producing the two Special Reports commissioned by the Cercle Pinay and working on the Academy's Helsinki Appeal, the ISC was also active on the British domestic scene. Although it was an 'unattributable' asset, the ISC developed unprecedented links with the State by lecturing on subversion not only to industry but also to the British Army (including the SAS) and at the National Police

College.

In 1972, John Alderson, Commandant of the Bramshill Police College wrote to Peter Janke of the ISC requesting their assistance in developing a course on terrorism and counter-subversion. As Janke wrote in a report of his visit to Bramshill in July 1972, "the Commandant assured me that he would like to keep in touch more frequently with the Institute and would bear very much in mind our capacity to be of service to Bramshill" (154).

Following this collaboration between the ISC and Bramshill, "as a sign of renewed mutual confidence", the IRD commissioned the ISC to produce a *Manual of Counter-Insurgency*, consisting of a series of seven separate *Counter-Insurgency Studies*. "This enabled IRD to distribute the studies selectively, according to the character of the government at the receiving end", Crozier notes (155); despite the stamp "for official use only", the Foreign Office might indeed not have wanted to distribute studies such as *Psychological and Information Measures* and *The Rehabilitation of Detainees* too widely.

The *Manual of Counter-Insurgency* might have "contributed significantly to the international reputation of the ISC" but it was also stepping on someone else's bureaucratic turf, as Crozier noted: "IRD had always had its enemies within the Foreign Office, however. With some logic, many high officials objected to its involvement in domestic affairs [...] Logically, a counter-subversion organisation should have been run by the Home Office" (156). This concern within the Foreign Office led in 1973 to what Crozier calls "the IRD massacre", when the IRD budget was removed from the secret vote, unattributable briefings were ended and a quarter of IRD's four hundred staff were transferred elsewhere in the Foreign Office. Although depriving the ISC of a powerful patron, the reduction in IRD activities made the ISC even more important as a propaganda outlet.

The ISC's role as consultants in counter-insurgency also led it to study the war in Northern Ireland. The ISC Council minutes from January 1972 mention an ISC conference on Ireland that was held at **Ditchley Park** under conditions of extreme secrecy. Ditchley Park is a conference centre at Enstone in Oxfordshire used for private VIP meetings which are guarded by Special Branch and MI5. Ditchley Park was closely linked to the Bilderberg Group, fourteen of whose members sat on the centre's Board of Governors at one time or another (157). One of the results of the ISC’s Ditchley Park conference on Ireland would seem to be the creation in November 1972 of the **British-Irish Association**, founded by Iain Hamilton, Managing Director of Forum World Features and later Editorial Director of the ISC. **Professor, the Lord Vaizey**, a Governor of the Ditchley Foundation from 1973 on, served as Honorary Treasurer of the BIA; other BIA founding members included Moss and Crozier, the latter asking specifically for his name not to be included in the list of BIA sponsors. The BIA organised its first conference in Cambridge in March 1973 and a second in

July 1974.

Another major domestic campaign run by the ISC in 1972-73 - without the support of the secret services, Crozier claims - was to support counter-subversion operations run by industry, a campaign which in February 1974 gave the ISC the greatest media coup it ever had. In January 1972, the Deputy Director-General of the Confederation of British Industry John Whitehorn - "one of our converts" as Crozier puts it - had sent out a long memorandum to all CBI subscribers in which he expressed "the concern of industry at the rise of subversive influences in British industry" and appealed for contributions to five "anti-subversive organisations" (158). Four of these groups were already well-known for their reports on industrial subversion and the blacklists of militant trades unionists that they supplied to employers: the Economic League, Aims of Industry, Common Cause and IRIS. The fifth anti-subversive organisation destined for industry's contributions was the ISC. As we have seen, Crozier had already been working since at least 1969 with both the Economic League and Aims of Industry within the Consultative Council of Interdoc.

As Crozier records, "by the spring of 1972, I had decided that a special study on subversion in industry had become necessary; the stark fact was that the trades unions virtually *owned* the Labour Party" (159). As industry was being slow to support the ISC's campaign, Crozier asked **Nigel Lawson**, whom Crozier had known at the *Spectator*, to produce a brief report entitled *Subversion in British Industry*. In November 1972, thirty copies of the Lawson report were printed and distributed to the captains of industry, thanks to the help of John Dettmer, Chairman of the Economic League, and Michael Ivens, Director of Aims of Industry. The Lawson report succeeded in raising the funds to convene a study group on subversion in industry which began working in the autumn of 1973. The backdrop at the time was the confrontation between the National Union of Mineworkers and the Heath government over Heath's Industrial Relations Act, culminating in Heath calling an election for February 1974 under the slogan "Who governs Britain?" As Crozier records: "Just before polling day, the Institute's report, *Sources of Conflict in British Industry*, had been published with unprecedented publicity" (160). This media coup was a major contribution by the ISC to a concerted campaign against the Labour candidate Harold Wilson, a campaign described further below.

Besides its British and European operations in 1972-73, the ISC was also an active partner in the CIA's media campaign against Allende when its material was also surfaced by a Chilean CIA front group, the Institute for General Studies. The most prolific author in this campaign was Crozier's partner Robert Moss, a central member of the ISC who had visited Chile in early 1972 as a correspondent for the *Economist*. In February and March of 1973, the ISC published two Conflict Studies on Chile written by Moss, *The Santiago Model: Revolution within Democracy* and *The Santiago Model: the Polarisation of Politics*. The ISC also focused on alleged KGB support for Allende in the Caribbean region at this time, producing a Conflict Study by Crozier entitled *Soviet Pressures in the Caribbean* in June 1973 and a Special Report by Moss, *The Stability of the Caribbean*, in November 1973, the latter being the proceedings of a conference held in May at Ditchley Park under the chairmanship of Major-General Clutterbuck and sponsored by the ISC and the Georgetown Centre for Strategic and International Studies (CSIS) (161)*. Forum World Features itself published the most notorious contribution to the anti-Allende campaign, Robert Moss's *Chile's Marxist Experiment*. The book arrived too late to contribute to the campaign - Allende had already been killed in the military coup - but the book still had its uses: the Chilean Junta bought nearly 10,000 copies for distribution by the Chilean Embassy in Washington. Moss added his conclusions on the coup in March 1974 in an article entitled *Chile's Coup and After* published by *Encounter*, the journal of the FWF parent body, the CCF. Moss also came back to Allende and the coup in his 1975 book *The Collapse of Democracy* (162).

THE WAR AGAINST COMMUNIST SUBVERSION

By the mid-1970s, the Cercle complex had succeeded in creating an international contact network of groups working on anti-Soviet and counter-subversion propaganda. In Belgium, the Cercle worked hand in hand with the AESP and could count on the help of the Defence Minister and his aides. In France, the prestige of a former Prime Minister and intelligence contacts from SDECE days ensured the Cercle's influence. In Britain, the complex found parliamentary friends in the Monday Club and amongst the discreet gentlemen of the secret services and the world of black propaganda, public and private. In the Netherlands, they could turn to the archivists of Interdoc, well connected to the BVD. In Germany, former BND agents, conservative bagmen and prominent parliamentary spokesmen challenged the Socialist government and consolidated the power of the "Lion of Bavaria"; across the border in Switzerland, they could rely on an untouchable disinformation outlet to spread their message.

But despite such wide-ranging contacts, the various components of the Cercle's network, brought together to defend the conservative cause, felt their vision of the world to be threatened as never before. Between 1974 and 1976, a paranoid feeling of apocalypse, of imminent Armageddon spread through the private clubs, the lobby rooms and the secret services throughout Europe: the Left was on the rise! In Germany, despite a barrage of smears and attack ads, Brandt had triumphed in the 1972 elections; after his resignation in 1974, the new Chancellor Helmut Schmidt led the SPD towards a strong showing in the 1976 elections. In Britain, humiliated by the National Union of Mineworkers, the Conservative government fell, and Labour won the two elections of 1974. In France and in Belgium, the Left seemed well-placed to break the electoral monopoly of the conservatives. In the Iberian peninsula, the longstanding geopolitical stability was soon overturned: in Portugal, the dictatorship of Salazar crumbled before the left-wing soldiers of the Armed Forces Movement, and in Spain, the Caudillo died, and democratic elections were called. Everywhere, the trades unions, the socialist parties and the peace movements, nests of Soviet subversion, gained ground. The Right were convinced that they were witnessing the total collapse of Western society as they knew it; this was the second emotional peak of the Cold War, a renaissance of the atmosphere of the 1950s. But they would not take defeat lying down, and the Cercle and their friends organised to confront this wave of subversion. In his note no. 167, written at the beginning of April 1975, Florimond Damman sets the tone of the age:

> "The Soviet Union gains no advantage in provoking a war, because under the cloak of détente, it continues to wage a war of subversion, and is winning everywhere. The West puts up no opposition to this war of subversion, and encourages it through its weakness due to both splits in the domestic policy field and clashes on foreign policy between European countries and also within the Atlantic Alliance.
>
> I propose a meeting of an urgent brain-trust which should establish:
>
> 1. the effects of the war of subversion in each of the countries of the Atlantic Alliance, in Europe as well as in the United States;
>
> 2. the effects of the war of subversion throughout the world: Korea, Vietnam, Middle East, Portugal, trade routes of raw materials;
>
> 3. the means that the Western block can use to initiate its own effective subversive action both within the Warsaw Pact countries and in the other contaminated countries around the world;
>
> 4. how to encourage countries within the Atlantic Alliance to take immediate steps to define effective tactics for an ideological offensive, which is the only way to win this war of subversion. The free movement of persons and ideas is one offensive tactic; we must find others.
>
> 5. consider setting up an action centre for offensive tactics in the US or Canada. Free movement of persons and ideas" (163)*.

In response to this challenge, the Cercle Pinay intensified its actions and created new outlets. In Britain, between 1974 and 1976, the ISC and its allies unleashed a propaganda offensive against the Labour government and its union supporters. With the help of the counter-subversion lobby, Edward Heath was replaced as leader of the Conservative Party by the hard-right candidate Margaret Thatcher; by sustaining their media war, the complex helped to ensure that she became Prime Minister in 1979.

In France in 1974, the friends of the Cercle Pinay assisted a massive smear campaign against the Socialist candidate for the Presidency, François Mitterrand. In Germany and in Switzerland, the two groups run by Karl Friedrich Grau organised an intensive programme of conferences and seminars on Soviet subversion attended by Swiss and German government, police and intelligence officials. In Belgium, members of the AESP set up a semi-public semi-private counter-subversion unit under the aegis of the military intelligence service, a unit which had close links to the extreme Right and coup plots in the 1970s.

On the Iberian peninsula, the complex did what it could to limit the damage caused by the fall of the two dictatorships. In Portugal, it supported the putschist aspirations of General Spínola and his underground army, the ELP, who in 1975 waged a strategy of tension with the expert help of the unmasked Aginter Presse group. In Spain, the complex channelled clandestine funds to its friends amongst Franco's former ministers who were standing as candidates in the first democratic elections in 1976.

Internationally, with funding from the South African intelligence service BOSS, the Cercle complex established a pro-apartheid propaganda bureau in Paris, and then a second in London. The complex also extended their operations to America by setting up the US Committee of the Institute for the Study of Conflict (USCISC) as a transatlantic relay for the complex's concerns.

Finally the 'Peace without Frontiers' Helsinki Appeal launched by Crozier, Violet and Damman bore fruit in July 1975 when the Helsinki Final Accord was signed within the framework of the Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe (CSCE).

THE AESP AND THE EEC

Before going on to investigate these national campaigns by Cercle allies in their various countries, one should first note the Cercle's presence at the heart of Europe – the EEC in Brussels, whose very creation had been the aim of the Cercle's founders Pinay, Adenauer and Strauß.

A glimpse of the influence of Cercle friends within the European Community of the mid-1970s is given by the **Association Pour l'Etude des Problèmes de l'Europe** (AEPE), a Paris-based discussion group founded in 1958. Whilst the prestigious association had no formal place in the EEC structure, it benefited from its foundation onwards by the presence at its annual Round Tables of top-ranking EEC officials and prominent politicians and businessmen from both the EEC member states and from the United Kingdom, serving (as did CEDI) as a bridge for Europhiles on both sides of the Channel until at least 1980.

> "The international organisations, notably the European Communities, the OECD and the Council of Europe have provided assistance to the Association Pour l'Etude des Problèmes de l'Europe by attending its Round Tables. Speaking on behalf of the EEC and Euratom on the 6th May 1960 in Brussels following the Liège Round Table, Mr. Hirsch [Etienne Hirsch, President of Euratom from 1959 to 1962] expressed "the very deep recognition of the two Communities for the work accomplished by the Association and for the extremely important contribution made by the Round Tables to the construction of Europe.""

Whilst the AEPE itself was innocuous and was graced by the presence of many senior officials from the EEC, the OECD and the CoE, several core members of the AESP also held high positions in the association and ensured Cercle input to the process of European integration. The Historical Archives of the European Union document the mid-1970s membership of the AEPE and participation at its XXVII Round Table, held at the Belgian Foreign Ministry's Palais d'Egmont in Brussels in April 1974 (164).

Amongst the 1974 AEPE participants, we find several persons we have met before: Sir Frederic Bennett, soon to set up the Unison militia detailed below, the CDU Deputy Secretary-General and Head of Foreign Relations Dr. Heinrich Böx, a contact of the AESP since at least 1972 and a Life Member by 1977, Marcel Collet, a former director of Euratom and Honorary EEC Head of Division who had been a founding member of the AESP with Violet and Damman, Florimond Damman himself as Secretary-General of both the AESP and MAUE and Administrator of the Association Atlantique Belge, Jacques Jonet here credited as Advisor to the Presidency of the Society of Friends of Wilton Park, the President of that Society René-Louis Picard who had attended AESP events since at least 1971, and Vittorio Pons, PEU International Secretary-General, personal representative of PEU President Habsburg and another founding member of the AESP.

Such a gathering of the core members of the AESP is unsurprising in the light of the high positions other Academy friends held in the AEPE: founding AESP member Hans-Joachim von Merkatz served as AEPE Honorary President, Vice-President and Member of the Administrative Board at the time of this 1974 meeting. Amongst the roster of AEPE Honorary Members, we can find a trio of Italians - Ivan Matteo Lombardo, President of the Italian Atlantic Committee and a core AESP member, Carlo Pesenti, the industrialist and financier who had been the main source of funding for the Cercle, the AESP and the sniffer planes for several years, and Giovanni Malagodi, President of the Italian Liberal Party and founding member with Pinay of the Bilderberg Group in 1954 who went on to attend AESP events in 1976.

It is worth noting that of the above AEPE Honorary members and participants at the April 1974 AEPE Round Table, four - Merkatz, Pons, Damman and Jonet - met again three months later at the XXIII CEDI Congress held in July. The presence of these key AESP members within the AEPE demonstrates that by the mid-1970s the Cercle through its Brussels operational base had succeeded in ensuring its influence at the highest levels of EEC decision-making. At the national level too, the Cercle's allies worked to shape events to follow their world view.

A VERY BRITISH COUP

The Cercle complex's UK connections lead us into the heart of a major manipulation of British domestic politics, 'the Thatcher coup' concentrating in the period from Harold Wilson's two election victories in 1974 to Margaret Thatcher's election as Conservative Leader on 11th February 1975 and culminating with her election as Prime Minister on 4th May 1979 (165). A substantial body of verified information confirms the existence of a conspiracy to undermine the Labour Government of Harold Wilson, to discredit Liberal leader Jeremy Thorpe and to have Conservative leader Edward Heath replaced by someone of a 'more resolute approach'. **Colin Wallace** - a former psy-ops officer within the IRD-founded **Information Policy Unit** in Northern Ireland and a key witness on MI5 intervention in domestic British politics in the 1970s - writes:

> "Various key members of the Intelligence community - past and present - assisted by influential figures in the public service, politics and commerce produced a series of political and psychological warfare projects which were designed to:
>
> a) prevent the election and re-election of a Labour Government;
>
> b) prevent any coalition between the Labour and Liberal parties;
>
> c) discredit key figures in both parties;
>
> d) collate and disseminate 'black' information which could be used to discredit or 'control' various politicians who were deemed to hold power behind the scenes in all three major political parties;
>
> e) have Mr. Edward Heath removed as leader of the Conservative party and replaced by someone of a more resolute approach to the political and industrial unrest" (166)*.

It is possible to divide the conspirators roughly into two groups, the first of which centred on serving MI5 officers including *Spycatcher* author Peter Wright and others who had transferred from MI5's K Branch (counter-espionage) to F Branch (counter-subversion) when MI5 strengthened its role as a political police in the mid-1970s. This was notably the case of **Charles Elwell** who transferred from running K2 (Soviet satellite states) counter-espionage to heading F1 (CPGB and other groups) counter-subversion in April 1974 and who worked closely with Brian Crozier after his retirement from MI5 in May 1979.

The second group was a powerful private-sector coalition of retired MI6 officers, IRD disinformation assets and prominent members of the Tory Right, several of whom later served as Ministers under Thatcher. Whilst the Fleet Street Press has concentrated on Peter Wright and his MI5 faction in their late-1980s reports of the Wilson destabilisation, the ex-MI6/IRD/Tory MP coalition and their partners in the industry-funded anti-union outfits were also major actors in the psychological warfare campaign being waged against all three party leaders, a contribution that has been largely underestimated. It is this coalition - the 'counter-subversion lobby' - that was closely connected with the Cercle Pinay, not only through the ISC but also through two future groups, NAFF and FARI.

Following his resounding defeat by the miners after power cuts, massive strikes and the introduction of a three day working week, Conservative Prime Minister Edward Heath called a General Election on the issue of "Who governs Britain?" The campaigning for the February 1974 election was held with the backdrop of widespread MI5 smear campaigns about a "Communist cell in the Labour Party"; Wilson himself was placed under blanket surveillance by MI5 during the election campaign. For the first time, troops and tanks were deployed at Heathrow airport, and joint Army/police patrols started.

On 18th January, the *Times* reported that the CIA and NSA were also stepping up counter-subversion operations in Britain; in the article, former senior CIA officer Miles Copeland declared that MI5 had their hands tied and were too timid to expose subversion. The following week, on the 25th, the *Times* published largely unfounded allegations by Josef Frolik, a Czech intelligence defector to the CIA, who claimed that several Labour MPs were spying for the Soviet Union. Frolik was a key witness for the counter-subversion lobby and the ultras within MI5, "confirming" their fears that the Labour Party was indeed a nest of Soviet spies; it is perhaps not coincidental that the MI5 officers in contact with Frolik were Peter Wright, "leader" of the ultra faction, and Charles Elwell, head of F1 counter-subversion from 1974 to 1979 before working closely with Brian Crozier on anti-Labour smear operations throughout the 1980s. On 28th January, the *Daily Telegraph* carried a full-page article entitled *Communists Aim to Dictate Labour Policy* which described "the grip of Communist trades unionists on the Labour government". The contribution of the anti-union outfits to cranking up the tension was considerable: Aims of Industry, run by SIF's Michael Ivens, launched an appeal for £500,000 to prevent the election of a Labour government. The considerable sums raised from Aims's 4,000 member companies paid for a massive media scare campaign which ran newspaper adverts depicting Stalin hiding behind a grinning mask (167).

Another important contributor to the media barrage was the veteran MI6 coupmaster, G. K. Young. Having stood unsuccessfully as Conservative candidate for Brent East in 1972, Young brought the ideological struggle in the Monday Club to a head in April 1973 when he stood for Chairman. Young lost by 455 votes to 625, and left the Monday Club, as did several of his supporters. Besides rallying the Monday Club dissidents in a new group **Tory Action**, founded with Airey Neave in November 1974, Young also developed another tack, working in 1974-76 with his colleagues from SIF, Ross McWhirter and Conservative MP Sir Frederic Bennett, as well as two former MI6 officers, Anthony Cavendish (with Young an unsuccessful Conservative candidate in 1972) and Colonel Ronnie Waring of CEDI, to set up the Unison Committee for Action, a citizens' militia to keep essential services running, perhaps the most significant of the three private armies formed in the mid-1970s. Unlike the militias formed in Belgium in the early 1970s and early 1980s, the private armies in Britain may well have been not primarily a paramilitary but more a psychological operation – a "Political Action" in MI6 jargon. Unison may have only been intended to be a "paper tiger", whose aim of strengthening the public feeling of a climate of disorganisation and impending chaos (and therefore the need for an authoritarian government response) was achieved simply by the news of its creation. That news came on 1st February 1974, when Young first announced the formation of Unison to MI5 friend Chapman Pincher.

Two days later, the ISC followed with a major media coup when over a page of the *Observer* was given over to a summary of the ISC's Special Report *Sources of Conflict in British Industry* under the banner headline *The Communist Connection.* Written by Nigel Lawson using information from the ISC's right-wing anti-union partners Aims of Industry, the Economic League, IRIS and Common Cause, the ISC report claimed that the unions were rampant with "red wreckers" plotting to bring British industry to its knees. On the 20th February, eight days before the election, the *London Evening News* carried a claim by G. K. Young that there were "40 or 50 Labour MPs for whom the Labour ticket is a cover for more sinister activities". Another element in the anti-union campaign was death threats against union leaders; the police took the threats seriously enough to arrange for police protection for several TUC officials (168).

Despite this barrage of propaganda, the election on 28th February 1974 did not give any party a clear majority. After the Liberals refused a coalition with the Conservatives, Edward Heath was forced to resign. The counter-subversion lobby's fears had become reality; having won the largest number of seats, Labour formed the new government. However, the new Prime Minister Harold Wilson had an unworkably small majority, and so he called fresh elections for October. In between the two elections, MI5 and the counter-subversion lobby went all out to ensure a Labour defeat.

One major focus for their campaign was Northern Ireland. Whilst MI5 tacitly encouraged the Ulster Workers' Strike of May 1974 in which the Loyalists rejected and eventually brought down Labour's policy of power-sharing, the Army stood by and did nothing to break the Loyalists' grip. At the same time, at the IRD's Information Policy Unit in the Army Press Office in Northern Ireland, Colin Wallace received floods of MI5 smears on several dozen Westminster MPs from the Centre-Left of the Tory Party, the Liberal Party and the Labour Party, including Prime Minister Wilson and most of his Cabinet Ministers as well as both other party leaders, Thorpe and Heath. Using the MI5 files, Wallace was tasked to create disinformation documents as a part of a comprehensive smear operation called Clockwork Orange 2, also referred to as Carbon Dioxide (169).

In June 1974, the three major private armies - Young's Unison, Sir Walter Walker's Civil Assistance (which appears to have grown out of Unison; he is presented below) and David Stirling's GB75 - were exposed in the Press, as was probably their original intention. In June, July and September, troops and tanks again made their appearance at Heathrow Airport whilst the Army continued joint patrols with the police. In August, Geoffrey Stewart-Smith joined in the anti-Left campaign by publishing a brochure called *The Hidden Face of the Labour Party*, which claimed that "over 10% of all trades union officials in the major industrial unions are Communists or far left-wing revolutionary Marxists". However, again, the smear campaigns and "reds under the beds" scare tactics were not quite enough to ensure a Conservative victory; in the October election, Labour scraped through with a majority of three seats.

Despite Labour's election victory, the propaganda barrage went on; the allegations made by the Czech defector Frolik were revived through the intermediary of Czech exile **Joseph Josten**, the Director of the Free Czech Information News Agency, close to MI6. Josten had served with SHAEF Psychological Warfare during World War II and immediately after the war had won the Czech Defence Ministry's prize for his study *Propaganda and Peace during the War* before leaving Czechoslovakia in 1948. In 1974-75, Josten was in close contact with the counter-subversion lobby; he joined the ISC, SIF and Monday Club members in NAFF the following year, later writing an ISC Conflict Study. Through Josten, Frolik accused Labour Minister John Stonehouse of being a Czech agent; Wilson angrily denied this in Parliament on 17th December 1974. On 19th December, Stewart-Smith wrote to Josten offering him and Frolik money to prove that Wilson was lying (170)*.

The 11th February 1975 brought the highpoint of a long campaign when Edward Heath was finally deposed as Leader of the Conservative Party and replaced by a relatively unknown outsider, his former Education Secretary, Margaret Thatcher. Thatcher's leadership campaign, which culminated in her victory over her rival William Whitelaw by 146 votes to 79, had been run by Tory MP and former MI6 officer **Airey Neave**, who played a central role in the Thatcher conspiracy together with Peter Wright and the MI5 ultras, G.K. Young and the Crozier complex. During the war Neave had served in MI9, the escape network of MI6, after having been imprisoned in Colditz Castle along with two other key figures in the counter-subversion lobby: David Stirling, founder of the SAS and creator of the private army GB75, and Charles Elwell of MI5 who, with Peter Wright, would handle Frolik. As a qualified lawyer who spoke fluent German, it was Neave who had been chosen to read out the indictments to the Nazi leaders at the Nuremberg trials.

After demobilisation, Neave was elected to Parliament as a Conservative MP in 1953, a position he retained until his death. With the reputation of a war hero and with his MI6 contacts, Neave rose quickly in politics and in 1974 threw his influence on the Tory backbenches behind Thatcher as candidate for the Conservative leadership. After her victory, Thatcher showed her recognition for the crucial part he had played in her leadership campaign by appointing him first as her private secretary and then to the key position of Shadow Minister for Northern Ireland; his deputy as Shadow Minister was John Biggs-Davison. Once in power, Thatcher also planned to nominate him to head a new government department to oversee the security and intelligence services. Neave would never take the post; he was killed by an Irish National Liberation Army bomb blast in the House of Commons car park on 30th March 1979, five weeks before Thatcher was elected Prime Minister.

With a new hard right leader at the helm of the Conservative Party, the counter-subversion lobby's campaign continued. On 26th February, two weeks after Thatcher's election as Conservative leader, a House of Lords debate on "Subversive and Extremist Elements" again aired the Frolik allegations, a debate initiated by **Lord Chalfont** (Lieutenant-Colonel Alun Arthur Gwynne Jones), a former military intelligence officer who had served in Malaya from 1955 to 1957 and then in Cyprus in 1958-59 alongside Stephen Hastings of MI6 and Peter Wright of MI5. After leaving the Army in 1961, he was the defence correspondent for the *Times* until November 1964 when he was ennobled as Baron Chalfont by Harold Wilson and appointed as Minister of State at the Foreign and Commonwealth Office, a post he held until 1970. As such, in December 1966, he signed the agreement to lease the British Indian Ocean Territory of Diego Garcia to America for fifty years with the option to extend the lease to seventy years. As Minister for Disarmament, he was chief British negotiator for the Nuclear Non-Proliferation Treaty, signed by the UK in July 1968. In 1967, Chalfont was charged with negotiating British entry into the EEC, a move soon blocked by de Gaulle; from 1969 to 1970, he represented Britain within the Western European Union. Following Wilson's election defeat in 1970, Chalfont became the Opposition chief spokesman on Defence and Foreign Affairs in the Lords, serving until April 1972 but left the Labour Party in September 1974 in protest at the "radical left" and rapidly veered rightwards to become a significant outlet for the counter-subversion lobby, particularly through his *Times* articles and television programmes on defence and security matters. Allegedly "the CIA's man in the House of Lords", Chalfont had sat on the Executive Committee of the CIA-funded European Movement.

MITTERRAND MENACE

In France, 1974 saw the first challenge by Mitterrand to unbroken Republican rule in France since 1945. The Cercle Pinay's sympathies were clearly with Giscard d'Estaing, who had received his first ministerial post from Antoine Pinay; several Members of Parliament from Giscard's party were members of the AESP. Propaganda operations against the Left intensified after June 1972, when Mitterrand's Socialist Party concluded an electoral alliance with the Communist Party on the basis of a Common Programme. In the run-up to the Parliamentary elections in March 1973, the **CNPF** – the French employers' confederation that was Violet's stamping ground - and the **Union des Industries et des Métiers de la Métallurgie** (UIMM) ran extensive propaganda campaigns highlighting the national disaster that would result from the election of France's first post-war Socialist government. In the six months from October 1972 to March 1973, the UIMM alone published nearly 9 million anti-Mitterrand brochures:

Revelations, an eight page newspaper: 3.5 million copies

Monsieur Dupont sees red, 16 page photo-novel: 4 million copies

Open letter to left-wing intellectuals, 8 pages: 600,000 copies

The nightmare or the application of the Common Programme, 40 pages: 210,000 copies

France deserves better than Chile, 8 pages: 300,000 copies

Letter to doctors, *Letter to hairdressers*: 40,000 copies each (171)*.

Crozier's close associate Georges Albertini also ran several groups which organised discrete *coups* for the CNPF, denouncing communism and syndicalism, and assisting 'independent' trade unions. One of Albertini's groups was to play a major part in propaganda support for Giscard in the 1974 Presidential elections; at the height of campaigning, Albertini's **Association pour la Liberté économique et le Progrès social** (ALEPS) produced 750,000 letters to executives, 170,000 brochures to teachers and 8 million copies of a fake daily newspaper called *France-Matin*, all of which described the catastrophic results if Mitterrand were to win the elections. *France-Matin*, however, never quite had the impact it could have: print workers seized and destroyed many of the copies before they could be distributed.

News of Giscard's victory was welcomed by the complex, as Damman described in a letter to Habsburg on 8th May 1974:

> "So Giscard has got into power but with a very narrow margin, we have simply won a little time which we must put to good use so as to organise our movements into active forces. The meeting of the 8th May has been an excellent springboard for setting up the regional teams of MAUE which we are building up mainly in Belgium and in France, and this strategy for action has proved to be very fruitful.
>
> Maître Violet will be arriving in Brussels tomorrow (Tuesday) and will stay until Thursday. Now that we are concentrating on the provisional fate of France, we can draw up a plan for action. The key point is to ensure that the majority wins the next parliamentary elections which should normally be held in three years time, and, once again, it will be a close-run fight. It's clear now that each important domestic event in each of our countries will have a major impact on a European scale, and we must strengthen our influence in those countries where we have very few structures: the Netherlands, Denmark and Great Britain" (172).

The extent of the Academy's influence becomes clear from a letter dated 7th August 1974, from de Villegas, in Pretoria to test his sniffer planes, to Damman:

> "The meeting planned for Washington seems to me to be a major chance for the Academy. It will be an opportunity for us to make new contacts and to be given a budget which is a kind of consecration [for the Academy]. You chose well and showed good judgment in naming Mr. Destremau a permanent member of the Academy. Your choice was a wise one, as President Giscard d'Estaing has appointed him Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs. All this promises much for the future [...] As far as the European relaunch is concerned, here too you have a good card in your hand, particularly as it is President Giscard d'Estaing who will himself take the initiative for this relaunch" (173)*.

The mention of a meeting in Washington in the late summer of 1974 is interesting as, at this time, the British end of the Cercle complex was working on the creation of a transatlantic bridgehead - the Washington Institute for the Study of Conflict (WISC). Four months later, in November 1974, the Cercle core of Violet, Vallet, Crozier and Huyn hosted a future member of the US Committee for the ISC, Admiral John S. McCain Jnr, former Commander in Chief of Pacific Forces during the Vietnam War, at the launch of the Centre du Monde Moderne. In March 1975, the formation of the WISC was announced as the American counterpart to the London and Paris outlets.

As Damman's letter to Habsburg in May 1974 shows, the complex was concentrating "on the provisional fate of France". The ISC also supported this campaign by publishing in January-February 1975 a Conflict Study entitled *Social Conflict in France*, written by none other than Crozier's old SDECE friend from the 1950s, Antoine Bonnemaison.

Another of Crozier's old French friends was active in this campaign: Georges Albertini. In May 1975, Albertini launched another magazine, *La Lettre de l'Homme Libre*, together with **Colonel Maurice Robert** who had resigned as SDECE Deputy Director of Research in 1973. Robert had started his career in the French military, training counter-gangs in Vietnam in the early 1950s before joining the SDECE in 1953 and directing their Africa Service from 1960 on. Albertini and Robert's magazine concentrated on Communist subversion in France and continued publication until at least 1979. During this time, Robert was a Director of Elf, having been previously mandated by Pierre Guillaumat, Elf President from 1966 to 1977 and himself a former wartime intelligence agent, to set up and supervise a private intelligence network for Elf, to be run by **Colonel Jean Tropel**, another former SDECE officer.

Tropel had spent his career in the SDECE Counter-Espionage Division where he was responsible for security within Section 7, the SDECE's team of 'plumbers'. Dismissed after the Ben Barka affair in 1966, Tropel then joined Elf and from 1969 onwards set up Elf's intelligence network, called PSA (Protection, Security, Administration) which was very active, particularly in Africa. Its members included many of the SDECE agents fired along with Violet by de Marenches in 1970 as well as former officers of the French security service DST and mercenaries such as Bob Denard (174)*.

As we have seen in previous chapters, having developed the sniffer planes project and ensured preliminary trials in Spain and a prospection campaign in South Africa, Violet and the two inventors Bonassoli and de Villegas had still not found a commercial outlet for their discovery. Violet however hoped to get Elf to accept the project, and his Trojan horse for working his way into Elf was its intelligence network. Violet knew Tropel well - they had been active together in Catholic organisations in the early 1970s - and Tropel had previously hired Violet's services as a lawyer for Elf in 1972. However, Violet did not approach Tropel directly, but first went to see Colonel Franck who functioned as Violet's SDECE case officer whenever Violet's usual contact - the Head of the SDECE himself - was not available. Franck knew Tropel very well; during the war, when Franck had commanded the Andalousie resistance network around Bordeaux, Tropel had been his adjutant.

Informed by Violet of this "incredible technological breakthrough", Franck wasted no time in contacting his former adjutant, now head of security at Elf. Tropel was to remain intimately involved in the sniffer plane project after its acceptance by Elf; Tropel was responsible for security during the numerous trips taken by Violet and the team of inventors. Tropel also took care of some of the financial arrangements: in 1976 some of the initial payments by Elf to Fisalma, de Villegas' sniffer plane company, were channelled through Unindus, a Swiss subsidiary of Elf run by Tropel. When the sniffer plane project expanded in 1978, the Unindus staff was reinforced by the addition of **Paul Violet** and **Alain Tropel**, the sons of the two former SDECE agents (175).

WHITE RULE, BLACK PROPAGANDA

Besides carrying out its own domestic and international operations, the Cercle complex was soon to become a partner in one of the largest covert propaganda campaigns since the Second World War: the media war waged by the South African Department of Information (DoI) in the mid-1970s, later exposed by the 1978 **"Muldergate"** scandal which would lead to the resignations of Prime Minister Vorster, Information Minister Connie Mulder and BOSS chief General Hendrik van der Bergh, and the unsuccessful prosecution of Mulder's deputy **Dr. Eschel Rhoodie** (176)*. The South African government's Erasmus Commission which investigated the scandal reported that between 1974 and 1977 the DoI channelled at least $73 million into a five-year clandestine operation to "finance secret propaganda and influence-buying projects abroad". Some 160 projects were launched, several of which aimed to buy out newspapers both in South Africa and abroad.

One of the first projects within South Africa was an unsuccessful bid to buy a majority shareholding in South African Associated Newspapers so as to control the *Rand Daily Mail*, the liberal opposition newspaper that was part of the SAAN stable. When that failed, the DoI tried to out-compete the *Rand Daily Mail* by launching the newspaper *The Citizen* in 1976. The only newspaper to support the ruling National Party, it received some $35 million of secret funds before being blown as a DoI-funded propaganda outlet in 1978.

Abroad, the projects included channeling $11 million to US conservative publisher John McGoff to buy the *Washington Star*. When this second attempt to buy a newspaper failed, McGoff used the money to purchase the Californian daily, the *Sacramento Union*. In 1986, McGoff was charged for having failed to register as a foreign agent of the South African government; the charges were later dropped because the Justice Department had exceeded the five year statute of limitations in bringing the case. A later DoI project in the US was the funding in 1978 of an Iowa Republican Senate nominee, Roger Jepsen, who defeated a key opponent of apartheid, Senator Dick Clark.

The Cercle complex also benefited from funds from the DoI. Between 1973 and 1978, Cercle members worked in close collaboration with the DoI and the South African intelligence service BOSS in a propaganda campaign that aimed to highlight the Soviet menace and Kremlin aspirations in Southern Africa. *Le Monde Moderne* was a major outlet for this common campaign; besides republishing the 1972 ISC Special Report, the first issue of *Le Monde Moderne* also contained an article by Jacques Leguèbe calling for the defence of South Africa. The same theme dominated the second issue, which included a piece by Dr. Eschel Rhoodie.

But the most important step was taken on 6th November 1973, when *Le Monde Moderne* organised a three-day restricted "brain-trust" meeting on South Africa, attended by Crozier, Violet, Vallet, Damman and **Albertus B. F. Burger**, South African Ambassador to France from 1969 to 1975, then to the EEC until 1979. The Ambassador presented a two-page report drawn up personally by Prime Minister Vorster, Information Minister Mulder, his deputy Rhoodie and General van der Bergh of BOSS. Then a discussion was held as to how the ISC, the Academy and *Le Monde Moderne* could assist the campaign that the South African government was conducting through such Pretoria-funded publications as the Dutch-based magazine *To The Point* with which *Le Monde Moderne* worked (177)*. The meeting decided to launch several campaigns to put over South Africa's point of view to influential figures in Europe, one of which was to target French Members of Parliament - Pinay himself had been the guest of the South African government during a private visit four months earlier in August 1973:

> "A Franco-South African Friendship Association was set up a while ago. Now we have to breathe life into it. Increase its numbers and quality. We must organise manipulation of the Members of Parliament - but with subtlety" (178).

This campaign was successful; from 1974 on, the number of French MPs visiting South Africa increased considerably. Another campaign targeted industrialists, a third the French and Belgian Press, particularly by inviting over South African journalists. The significance of the French group's campaigns were confirmed in a debate on Information held in the South African Parliament in April 1975, when the Deputy Minister for Information told the assembly "that an estimated 11 million French people had read favourable reports about South Africa as a result of his Department's careful planning concerning the type of guest invited from France" (179). The brain-trust had also taken the decision to set up a second group to promote South Africa: the group was created in 1978 as the Amis Français des Communautés Africaines (AFCA, French Friends of the African Communities), chaired by Pinay and including Leguèbe (180).

However, the November 1973 "brain-trust" meeting also decided that the greatest need was to create a prestigious French equivalent of the ISC, a 'neutral' geopolitical institute that could back up the more personal influence of VIP visits for Pretoria friends with 'academic' data on strategic considerations. According to the US Justice Department's charges against John McGoff, his attempt to buy the *Washington Star* for Pretoria aimed to ensure that "positive material relating to the strategic and economic importance of South Africa to the US and the West would be published and disseminated to policy and opinion makers within the US capital". The ISC/*Le Monde Moderne* team would be a powerful European source or relay for such propaganda. A key theme was to be oil: the oil crisis of October 1973 had focused the attention of Conservatives on the need to protect the West's vital fallback for oil supplies - the Cape sea route. The DoI's campaign aimed to ensure that the West's need for a strategic outpost on the Cape overrode any objections about apartheid; the propaganda line to be used was, predictably, Soviet designs on world energy resources, as Violet described to Damman, Crozier and Ambassador Burger at the seminar:

> "Oil is the vital weapon of the Cold War. The Soviet Union controls its sources and seeks to dominate the main oil trade routes - South Africa and the African territories owned by Portugal" (181)*.

The first result of the campaign came in March 1974 when the ISC brought out two Special Reports, both of which stressed the importance of South Africa for Western oil supplies: *The Security of the Cape Oil Route* and *Soviet Objectives in the Middle East*. The security of oil supply was also of interest to the South Africans themselves: after personal contacts between Pinay and Vorster, de Villegas travelled to South Africa in the summer of 1974 to run a series of tests of the sniffer planes for South Africa's state oil company, Sasol.

By the end of 1974, the plan to establish a South African-backed propaganda institute in collaboration with *Le Monde Moderne* and the ISC had been completed, and the **Centre d'Etudes du Monde Moderne** was launched with covert South African funding to the tune of one million francs provided by Rhoodie (182). On 7th November 1974, a year after the initial brain-trust meeting, the Centre d'Etudes du Monde Moderne began its inaugural conference on the theme of "Africa and the Defence of the West". South Africa was represented by Cas de Villiers of the Africa Institute, soon to become Director of the Foreign Affairs Association, a major DoI front group, and Professor Charles Nieuwoudt. The French core group at the launch were Violet, Vallet and the *Monde Moderne* team including Jean Vigneau, Jacques Leguèbe and Bernard Lejeune; the latter, a Johannesburg-based journalist, had worked for Rhoodie and the DoI since at least mid-1973 (183)*.

Attending for the ISC were Crozier and Peter Janke, author of ISC Conflict Study No. 52, *Southern Africa: End of Empire*, published the month before. Much of the study's information on 'terrorism' in Mozambique came from P.J. De Wit, a senior BOSS operative. Janke, formerly of the IRD, was the ISC's Senior Researcher and South Africa expert. In 1973, Janke had hosted Michael Morris, a South African 'journalist' working in London. Morris was soon exposed as a sergeant in the South African Security Police who had 'resigned' earlier that year from their Special Branch to write a book *South African Terrorism*. In 1974, Janke met Morris again when in

Capetown to collect information for Conflict Study No. 52 from De Wit at BOSS headquarters. Morris later headed a BOSS propaganda front, the South African Terrorism Research Centre, "a direct copy of the British Institute for the Study of Conflict, but not half as good", according to BOSS's Gordon Winter (184)*.

Also attending the launch of the Centre d'Etudes du Monde Moderne was Count Hans Huyn, Strauß's foreign policy advisor. The new centre's launch in 1974 is the earliest recorded meeting of all three men who formed the triumvirate coordinating the Cercle complex in the late 1970s: Violet, Crozier and Huyn. It is unlikely however that this was the three men's actual first meeting: Huyn had served since at least 1972 on the International Council of CEDI with Habsburg, Sánchez Bella, Merkatz and Vankerkhoven – all AESP members. Huyn had also attended the January 1973 AESP Charlemagne Grand Dinner in the company of Habsburg, Damman and Giulio Andreotti. At the time of this 1974 launch, the AESP and the Cercle had been working closely with Crozier and the ISC for some time; the ISC had already produced three Special Reports co-funded by the Cercle since 1972.

Another significant German speaker – also providing a link to the Brussels AESP – was **Jürg Meister**, listed as a "Foreign Policy Editor, Switzerland" and in reality the editor in chief of *intern-informationen*, the Swiss-based bulletin of the Frankfurt Study Group run by founding AESP member Karl Friedrich Grau (185).

Representatives of two major American military propaganda institutes cooperating with the ISC also attended the Centre's launch. The first was **James L. Winokur**, one of the Directors of the NSIC which had already supported the first Cercle/ISC joint venture by buying 500 copies of the Cercle-sponsored 1972 ISC Special Report. Frank Barnett of the NSIC had also planned to attend the launch but was prevented by a last-minute impediment.

The second American figure was **Admiral John S. McCain Jnr**, the former Commander-in-Chief Pacific Forces (CINCPAC) in charge of Vietnam War military operations from 1968 until his retirement in 1972. McCain then joined the Board of the ASC and was working at this time to create a Washington ISC offshoot, announced in March 1975. In May 1974, six months before this inaugural conference of the Centre d'Etudes, McCain had shown his support for South Africa – and courted considerable controversy – by inviting the Chief of the South African Defence Staff, Admiral Hugo Biermann, for a week-long private visit to the United States (186)*.

The launch of the Centre d'Etudes du Monde Moderne also hosted further military figures. The South African Defence Force was represented by Major-General J. Robbertze, Director-General of Strategic Studies (187)*. Attending the launch from France were senior officers from the French armed forces such as General Jean Callet, former Director of the Institute for Higher National Defence Studies (IHEDN) in

1972-74, Admiral André Storelli, former Chief of the General Staff of the Navy from May 1970 until his retirement in January 1972, former Rear-Admiral Marius Peltier, French military attaché in Moscow from 1946 to 1951, former General François Pin, Colonel J.M. Bonnier, former Africa specialist at the General Secretariat for National Defence, and General François Maurin, an observer from the Chief of General Staff of the Army. The Spanish armed forces were represented by Colonel J. M. Sancho Sofranis, Professor at the Spanish Institute for Strategic Studies (188).

The following year, the Centre d'Etudes du Monde Moderne published the proceedings of this first seminar as *Africa and the Defence of the West* by Jean Vigneau (189). In parallel to their considerable input to the Centre d'Etudes du Monde Moderne, the ISC also helped South Africa by passing on the ISC's 1974 Special Report *Sources of Conflict in British Industry*, "which would be useful for indicating how South African unions might be attacked as recalcitrant or strike-prone, not on account of any real grievances, but only because of left-wing militants and outside agitators" (190).

THE WASHINGTON ISC

At the same time as the Cercle complex was intensifying pressure on left-wing candidates in France and Britain and supporting BOSS in their international propaganda campaign, the ISC had been working in 1974 on plans to set up an American satellite. By early 1975, the final preparations had been made, and the **US Committee of the ISC** (USCISC) was formally launched on 3rd March 1975, two weeks after Thatcher became leader of the Conservative Party (191).

The USCISC was to be the parent body for a **Washington Institute for the Study of Conflict** which was intended to be materially independent of the London ISC and therefore would have its own facilities for research and publication. The Washington ISC would however closely mirror the political agenda of its London predecessor; in its Statement of Purpose, the WISC declared: "the United States, the pre-eminent power in the Free World, is experiencing its own problems with subversion. The US Institute for the Study of Conflict has thus been established to address this complex problem which has not been fully recognized in this country" (192). Much of the USCISC's funding was provided by Dick Scaife whose Scaife Foundation had been a longstanding source of support for the the NSIC and the ISC.

The USCISC was able to call on the same kind of high-power coalition of senior politicians and intelligence veterans that the Cercle Pinay enjoyed in Europe. The USCISC was chaired by **George Ball**, former Under-Secretary of State for Economic and Agricultural Affairs under Kennedy and Lyndon Johnson. One of the founding members of the Bilderberg Group with Pinay, Voisin and Bonvoisin, Ball had been one of the rapporteurs at their inaugural meeting at the Hotel Bilderberg in

1954. One month after the launch of the USCISC, Ball attended the April 1975 Bilderberg conference, held in Cesme, Turkey, along with Strauß, Thatcher and Sir Frederic Bennett of SIF (193).

Another Bilderberger and crucial political figure on the USCISC was **Zbigniew Brzezinski**, who had proposed to the 1972 Bilderberg conference in Knokke, Belgium, to create a similar forum to bring together the three economic world powers, the US, Europe and Japan. The new body, the Trilateral Commission, was founded in late 1972; its first Director from 1973 to 1976 was Brzezinski. Brzezinski also attended the 1975 Bilderberg conference with Ball, Strauß, Thatcher and Bennett. At the time the USCISC was founded, Brzezinski was working for the Research Institute on Communist Affairs and was Democrat candidate Jimmy Carter's top foreign policy advisor; Brzezinski and Ball were considered to be the main Democrat frontrunners for the post of Secretary of State, a measure of the USCISC's political influence. After Carter's November 1976 election victory, Brzezinski was appointed his National Security Advisor, serving until 1981; the post of Secretary of State however went to Cyrus Vance, previously Johnson's Deputy Secretary of Defence.

The USCISC also included former senior CIA officers, the most famous of whom was **Kermit Roosevelt**, a veteran CIA coupmaster who had worked closely with G. K. Young of MI6 on Project Ajax, the 1953 coup against Mossadegh in Iran. Young's action plan had been adopted by the CIA; infiltrated into Iran, Roosevelt reported to Young, based in Cyprus.

Another former senior CIA officer on the USCISC was **Robert W. Komer** who had worked as an intelligence analyst in the Directorate of Intelligence and the Office of National Estimates from 1947 to 1960. He then served on the National Security Council until 1965 when he was appointed Special Assistant to President Johnson. In February 1967, he was posted to Saigon with ambassadorial rank to take over responsibility for all civil and military pacification programmes (Civil Operations and Rural Development Support) in Vietnam, an effort previously shaped by Sir Robert Thompson, Head of the British Advisory Mission to Vietnam from 1961 to 1965.

Together with his deputy (and, in November 1968, his successor) William Colby, a former covert operations chief in the CIA's East Asia Division, Komer was the main architect of the notorious Phoenix programme. His controversial past however had consequences; in 1968, Komer was appointed Ambassador to Turkey, but after local riots about his presence, he left public service in 1969 and joined the RAND Corporation, producing their February 1972 study "The Malayan Emergency in Retrospect: Organization of a Successful Counterinsurgency Effort" (194).

After a suitable interval, Komer was brought back into public service in the Carter Administration - whose national security policy was coordinated by fellow USCISC member Brzezinski. Under Carter, Komer served from 1979 to 1981 as

Under-Secretary of Defense for Policy, the third-ranking Pentagon post. Komer also accompanied Carter's Secretary of Defense Harold Brown on his groundbreaking trip to China on 4th - 13th January 1980 when Brown solicited Chinese aid for the covert war against the Soviet troops occupying Afghanistan. The negotiations were successful; on 24th January, the United States granted Most Favoured Nation trading status to China, whilst China reciprocated over the following six months by supplying weapons to the Afghan mujaheddin and granting unprecedented permission for the CIA and NSA to set up two electronic listening posts targeting the Soviet Union at Qitai and Korla in Xinjiang (195).

Komer was not the only expert in counter-revolutionary warfare to figure on the USCISC; another Committee member was Dr. **George Kilpatrick Tanham**, a counter-insurgency expert for the RAND Corporation since 1955. Tanham served as Associate Director for Counter-Insurgency at the US Agency for International Development in South Vietnam from 1964 to 1965, then as Special Assistant for Counter-Insurgency to the American Ambassador to Thailand from 1968 to 1970 before returning to America to work as Vice-President of the RAND Corporation's Washington office from 1970 to 1982. In late 1975, Tanham took over as President of the WISC when the first President, James Theberge who is presented below, was appointed Ambassador to Nicaragua; WISC then moved into the RAND Corporation's Washington office (196).

Another USCISC member with CIA connections was NSIC President Frank Barnett; the NSIC was also represented on the USCISC by NSIC Vice-President and General Counsel **Admiral William C. Mott**, a former Judge Advocate General of the Navy from 1960 until his retirement in 1964. The NSIC was not the only geopolitical study group which had a representative on the USCISC; as mentioned above, American Security Council Board member Admiral John S. McCain Jnr, former Commander-in-Chief of Pacific Forces during the Vietnam War, was one of the USCISC's founding members.

The USCISC also included four academics with links to the CIA, the first being **James Theberge**, who acted as the WISC's first President. Having first spent a year from 1969 to 1970 as a Research Associate at St Antony's College Oxford, close to MI6, Theberge then became Director of Latin American Studies at the Georgetown Centre for Strategic and International Studies (CSIS), the ivory tower for CIA retirees. There, Theberge wrote two books for publication by the CSIS, *Soviet Naval Power in the Caribbean* and *Russia in the Caribbean*, in which Theberge launched the propaganda myths of a camp run by Koreans for training Chilean guerrillas, and a KGB plan for a Chilean submarine base. In 1974, Theberge also produced the book *The Soviet Presence in Latin America* for the NSIC. The CIA made use of Theberge's books as part of their destabilisation campaign against Allende by ensuring that the books were quoted at length in the Chilean Press, notably in the CIA-funded *El Mercurio*, just before the March elections.

In May 1975, six months before Franco's death, the CSIS and the ISC organised a joint academic conference in London on NATO and the Iberian Peninsula at which Theberge, Crozier and Janke were speakers. In July 1975, Theberge was appointed US Ambassador to Nicaragua, a post he filled until June 1977; Tanham replaced him as President of the WISC. Theberge later served from 1982 to 1985 as Reagan's Ambassador to Chile (197).

The second university professor to serve on the USCISC was OSS veteran **Professor Edward Shils**, a Fellow of Peterhouse, Cambridge, Professor of Sociology at Chicago University and Chairman of the Wharton School at the University of Pennsylvania. Shils took over publication of the magazine *Encounter* after the Congress for Cultural Freedom was exposed as a CIA front in 1967. From 1975 to 1977, Shils served on the ISC Study Group on Higher Education which produced a Special Report on "communist subversion in the education system" (198).

Another academic on the USCISC in 1975 was the Sovietologist **Professor Richard Pipes**. Pipes had been working with the ISC since at least late 1973 when he served on an ISC Middle East Study Group whose findings were published in March 1974 as the Special Report *Soviet Objectives in the Middle East*. In 1976, a year after the foundation of the USCISC, CIA Director George Bush asked Pipes to work on the staff of a new CIA thinktank called **Team B** with **General Daniel O. Graham**, previously Deputy Director of the CIA under William Colby in 1973-74 and then Director of the Defense Intelligence Agency DIA from 1974 to 1976. Team B was tasked to 'beef up' the CIA's assessment of the Soviet threat, which was considered to be too soft on Communism, so as to highlight an alleged "missile gap". Pipes later worked as an advisor on Soviet Affairs to the National Security Council and a Professor at Harvard University (199)*.

The fourth university professor on the USCISC was also a Sovietologist who had worked for the CIA, **Professor Robert F. Byrnes** of Indiana University. Between 1951 and 1954, Byrnes provided intelligence assessments on the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe to the CIA's Office of National Estimates; from 1954 to 1956, he served as Director of the Mid-Europe Study Center, a CIA-funded thinktank on Soviet issues. From 1975 to 1982, Byrnes was a member of the Board of Trustees of Radio Free Europe/Radio Liberty, the radio station long financed by the CIA.

A final member of note on the USCISC was **Adolph W. Schmidt**, in 1975 the recently retired American Ambassador to Canada. Schmidt had served in the OSS from 1942 to 1946, playing a vital role as OSS head in Ghana in preventing German access to Congolese uranium. In 1957, he was a member of the American delegation to NATO before moving on in 1959 to the Atlantic Congress in London, then returning to NATO in 1962; during this period, he played a key part in unifying the American pro-NATO movement and founding the Atlantic Institute in Paris. In 1965, he attended the Bilderberg conference held in Villa D'Este, Italy along with founding Bilderberger and future WISC Chairman George W. Ball, David Rockefeller and Sir Frederic Bennett. In 1967, Schmidt was an advisor to the US Commission for Europe before serving as Nixon's Ambassador to Canada between 1969 and 1974. In 1975, as well as the USCISC, Schmidt also joined the Advisory Board of Barnett's NSIC, serving at least until 1985. At a 1976 CEDI Congress, Schmidt met the core members of the Cercle; he was almost certainly a Cercle member himself (200)*.

As can be judged from this list of Board members, the Cercle could count on friends on the highest levels of the intelligence and political hierarchy in the United States. Pinay himself had a privileged relationship with Nixon and Kissinger, personally handing the two men the Cercle-sponsored ISC Special Report *European Security and the Soviet Problem* in 1972; he visited them again later in 1975 to lobby for the ISC, no doubt with the support of the US Committee of the ISC. The USCISC ensured that, despite Nixon's fall from power, the Cercle continued to enjoy unparalleled access to the American national security apparatus under both Presidents Ford and Carter. Within a year of the USCISC's creation, Pipes was working on the revision of the CIA's assessment of the Soviet threat and later acted as advisor to the National Security Council. Brzezinski filled the top job of NSC Director and National Security Advisor to President Carter from 1977 to 1981; his top civilian subordinate in the Pentagon from 1979 to 1981 was Under-Secretary of Defense for Policy, Robert Komer.

One opportunity to support the ISC's American expansion came in May 1975, only two months after the foundation of the USCISC, when the Subcommittee on Internal Security of the Senate Committee on the Judiciary, run by Robert A. Fearey, convened for hearings on international terrorism. One major witness was Brian Crozier who records:

> "My role, although it was not spelt out, was to define various types of terrorism and above all to produce the evidence (which the State Department was anxious to conceal) of the key role of the Soviet Union and its satellites in the recruiting, training and financing of terrorist gangs. The tactic worked. Not only were my speech and answers to questions written into the record, but so were extensive extracts of my Institute's publications" (201)*.

Fearey provided Crozier with a second opportunity ten months later; in March 1976, Fearey chaired a major international conference on terrorism in Washington, whose keynote speaker was Crozier, accompanied on the podium by Robert Moss and two other ISC authors whom we will meet later, Hans Josef Horchem and Professor Paul Wilkinson.

1975 - 1976
CRISES AND CONTINUATION

EXPOSURE AND RELAUNCH

Turning back to the spring of 1974, the Cercle complex's domestic and international operations were reaching new heights; indeed at this time, Crozier resigned as Chairman of FWF to turn his attention fully to the ISC and its international contacts via the Cercle. Iain Hamilton, "fully conscious and in touch with the CIA officers in London" took over as Chairman (202). Unbeknownst to Crozier and the Cercle, the first of two major leaks was about to expose the CIA sponsorship of Forum World Features. The seeds of disaster were sown in the spring of 1974 by the publication of the groundbreaking book *The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence* by CIA veteran Victor Marchetti and former State Department Intelligence official John D. Marks. Although the CIA temporarily staved off the crisis by forcing the suppression of 168 passages from the book, several of which referred to FWF as a CIA operation and one of which named Crozier specifically, it could only be a matter of time before FWF's cover was definitively blown.

The blow would come a year later. Ironically the leak that exposed FWF and then the ISC came not from a CIA dissident like Marchetti but from the heart of the CIA itself. Due to the CIA's sloppy security procedures, a British *World in Action* television crew filming at CIA Headquarters in Langley in April 1975 caught sight of a very explosive CIA memorandum. Dated May 1968, the memorandum was from then-IOD head Cord Meyer (203)* to CIA Director Richard Helms and described CIA funding of Forum World Features, stating: "In its first two years, FWF has provided the United States with a significant means to counter Communist propaganda, and has become a respected feature service well on the way to a position of prestige in the journalism world." A handwritten note on the document also indicated that FWF was "run with the knowledge and cooperation of British Intelligence". At the same time, the CIA discovered that Marchetti and Marks were planning to release the suppressed material in London. The CIA took the decision to close down FWF in May 1975, just ahead of the publication in June of an article *The CIA Makes the News* in the alternative London weekly *Time Out* which quoted Cord Meyer's 1968 memorandum (204).

The closure of FWF after the exposure of its CIA links was only the first setback; no doubt due to the Press revelations about FWF, the offices of the ISC were burgled in June 1975, and some 300 documents amounting to 1,500 pages were taken. Many of the documents found their way to *Time Out* which published further long articles in August and September detailing the ISC's links to the British, American and South African intelligence communities (205).

The 1975 revelations however largely overlooked the ISC's international collaboration with the Cercle, even though the haul from the Institute's offices had included the January 1972 Council minutes describing Cercle sponsorship of the ISC Special Report and their £20,000 grant to the ISC for 1973. Another revealing document stolen from the ISC's offices was a very recent internal ISC memo dated 2nd June 1975, detailing a meeting between the ISC and the Cercle held at Ditchley Park:

> "Mr. Crozier told the meeting that after the conference at Ditchley Park, the Pinay group should organize similar sessions in Madrid, Rome, Milan, Brussels and Bonn in the autumn with the object of raising money for the Institute and enhancing its reputation" (206)*.

Crozier records that the conference was a study group which yielded a further ISC Special Report, *New Dimensions of Security in Europe*. Amongst the notable participants were Pinay himself, Carlo Pesenti and another Italian business leader, Eugenio Cefis, President of the chemical giant Montedison and Vice-President of the Italian business association Confindustria; Cefis was an ally of Pesenti in fending off P2 financier Michele Sindona's take-over bids. A helicopter had to be sent to pick up "the aged President Pinay", but whilst certainly elderly, Pinay was still sprite: as well as attending the Ditchley Park conference, Pinay made an extensive tour of prominent Cercle friends throughout 1975 to muster support for Crozier's Institute and its planned transatlantic expansion. Amongst those he visited were Richard Nixon, Henry Kissinger, Pope Paul VI, Manuel Fraga Iribarne (then Spanish Ambassador in London), Franz Josef Strauß, Giulio Andreotti and Prince Bernhard of Holland, President of the Bilderberg Group (207). With such a powerful coalition of political and intelligence contacts to call on, the ISC overcame its temporary crisis (208)* and intensified its activities, notably through a new alliance of the British Right, the National Association for Freedom (NAFF).

NAFF AND SHIELD

One month after the Cercle launched its international campaign to raise the profile of the ISC, a new organisation was formed in Britain to bring together the various groups that were "concerned about the relentless spread of subversion" (209). The new group, the **National Association For Freedom** (NAFF), was formed in July 1975, although not formally founded until December. NAFF's first action in August 1975 was to organise a seminar on subversion where veteran espionage journalist and MI5 friend Chapman Pincher served as guest speaker; unsurprisingly, Pincher was later a major media outlet for the anti-CND propaganda produced by Crozier's private intelligence service, the 6I. By mid-1977, NAFF boasted 30,000 members (210). The list of members of the Executive and National Council of the NAFF shows that the new alliance was a merger of the SIF, the ISC and the Tory Right, including many of the figures involved in the anti-Labour operations of the previous few years.

The Director of NAFF and first editor of its bulletin *The Free Nation* was Robert Moss. Moss enjoyed close links to the newly elected Conservative leadership and soon became one of Thatcher's favourite speechwriters - it was a speech written by Moss and given by Thatcher in January 1976, only six weeks after NAFF's foundation, which famously mocked and then adopted the nickname of "Iron Lady" given to her by the Soviet military newspaper *Red Star*. Alongside Moss on the NAFF Executive, we find **Norris McWhirter**, a member of the SIF National Executive and co-author of the NAFF Charter with his brother Ross, the latter being assassinated by the Provisional IRA just before NAFF's official launch in December 1975 (211)*.

Alongside Moss and Norris McWhirter on the NAFF Executive was Michael Ivens, the Director of the anti-union outfit Aims of Industry. Aims of Industry had bankrolled many of the anti-Labour operations in the early 1970s; it also provided the start-up capital for NAFF. Like McWhirter, Ivens had also served on the SIF National Executive. Aims of Industry was further represented on the National Council of NAFF by **William E. Luke**, a Board member of Aims since 1958. A former MI5 officer during the war, Luke later served as Chairman of the London Committee of the South Africa Foundation and in 1965 was the founding Chairman of the UK-South Africa Trade Association, active in the pro-Pretoria campaign (212).

The NAFF National Council also included the indefatigable Crozier, who provided NAFF with their first offices - in Kern House, headquarters of Forum World Features. Several other ISC friends served on the NAFF National Council, amongst them the Czech exile Josef Josten, who ran the Free Czech Information News Agency, close to MI6. Josten was a major channel for dissemination of the allegations made by Czech defector Josef Frolik. Another ISC friend on the NAFF National Council was **Dr. Kenneth Watkins**, an author of pamphlets published by Aims. A month before NAFF's foundation, Watkins had joined an ISC Study Group on Communist subversion in higher education that included Lord Vaizey of the Ditchley Foundation and Professor Edward Shils of the USCISC. The Study Group's findings were published as an ISC Special Report, *The Attack on Higher Education*, in September 1977.

Alongside Crozier on the National Council of NAFF was another of the key actors in the counter-subversion lobby, ex-Deputy Director of MI6, G. K. Young, founder of the Unison Committee for Action. As Chairman of SIF, Young brought with him into NAFF almost all of SIF's leaders; besides McWhirter and Ivens who served with Moss as NAFF's "inner core" on the Executive, SIF recruits to NAFF also included Bilderberger Sir Frederic Bennett, Chairman of the SIF Parliamentary Group, and John Biggs-Davison, former Chairman of the Monday Club, member of the SIF National Executive and Deputy Shadow Minister for Northern Ireland under

Airey Neave.

Biggs-Davison was joined in NAFF by other top Tory MPs from the Monday Club, notably the former MI6 officer Sir Stephen Hastings and Winston Churchill, the latter serving as Thatcher's opposition junior frontbench spokesman on defence from 1976 to November 1978. Also on the NAFF National Council were three other members of Thatcher's Shadow Cabinet who later held ministerial office in Thatcher's government: **Rhodes Boyson**, **David Mitchell** and **Nicholas Ridley**.

The NAFF National Council also included three senior military figures, two of whom served on the ISC Council. The first was Vice-Admiral Sir Louis Le Bailly, who had recently resigned as Director-General of Intelligence at the Ministry of Defence (213). The second ISC Council member on the NAFF Council was Sir Robert Thompson, a leading counter-insurgency expert with experience in Malaya in the late 1950s and Vietnam in the early 1960s. The third military figure was **Field Marshal Sir Gerald Templer**, a wartime head of SOE's German section who was appointed Director of Military Intelligence in 1946 and Vice Chief of the Imperial General Staff in 1948, the year that Prime Minister Attlee sent British troops to combat the Malayan Emergency. For Attlee, Templer also chaired a secret committee to investigate Communist subversion in Britain, concluding that the Soviet Union would continue to try to penetrate the Labour Party, the trades unions, the media and the universities.

From 1952 to 1954, Templer served as both High Commissioner and Director of Operations in Malaya, implementing the Briggs Plan which, from 1950 onwards, introduced the concept of "New Villages" for forced civilian resettlement to fortified centres. On his return from Malaya, Templer undertook a worldwide investigation of colonial security for Prime Minister Winston Churchill, completed in April 1955; he was then appointed Chief of the Imperial General Staff of the Army in September 1955, advising the government on the Suez Crisis in 1956 and serving until his retirement in September 1958. In late 1960, Templer was called on to head a sensitive government inquiry into a radical reorganisation of British military intelligence, leading to the merger of the three service branches in the new Defence Intelligence Staff in 1964. From 1966 to 1973, Templer occupied a key post for those fighting subversion: as Lord-Lieutenant of Greater London, he was in charge of all contingency planning for Military Aid to the Civil Power (MACP).

Templer had also played a part in the genesis of the private armies by introducing G. K. Young to **Major-General Sir Walter Walker** of the Gurkhas. Lieutenant-Colonel Walker had been a Malayan colleague of Templer and Thompson, having set up the Far East Land Forces (FARELF) Training Centre or Jungle Warfare School near Johor Bahru in Malaya in 1948-49. In 1954, he was posted back to the UK and helped to plan the 1956 Suez invasion, before returning to Malaya in 1957 as Commander of the 99th Gurkha Infantry Brigade until 1959, when his unit was sent to Singapore to ensure internal security during the elections. Promoted Major-General, Brigade of Gurkhas, in 1961, Walker then commanded Britain's counter-insurgency campaign in Borneo in 1962-65 where Walker's Gurkhas and covert cross-border incursions broke the back of Indonesia's policy of *konfrontasi* with Malaysia. Returning to Europe, he served as Deputy Chief of Staff, NATO Army Land Forces Central Europe (AFCENT) until 1967, when he became General Officer Commanding the Northern Command. In 1969, he was appointed Commander-in-Chief of Allied Forces Northern Europe, serving until his retirement in 1972. In 1974, Walker worked alongside Young within Unison before splitting off to form **Civil Assistance**. Throughout 1976, Civil Assistance held long negotiations with NAFF about a possible merger of the two groups; the talks were abandoned in October 1976 when Civil Assistance shut down due to lack of active support (214).

The NAFF National Council also included an impressive array of the leaders of industry – **Viscount De l'Isle** of Phoenix Assurance who functioned as NAFF's President, Sir Frank Taylor of Taylor Woodrow, ex-CBI chief Sir Paul Chambers and Sir Raymond Brookes, Chairman of GKN Engineering, a member of the CBI Council and a member of William Luke's UK-South Africa Trade Association. As to the day-to-day running of NAFF, Crozier records:

> "To avoid the delays implicit in formal Council meetings, a small group of us decided to function as an informal action committee, without reporting to the Council. Bill De l'Isle presided, and the other members were Winston Churchill MP, **John Gouriet**, a former Guards officer and merchant banker, Robert Moss and myself" (215)*.

By bringing together the ISC, SIF, leading industrialists and top Tories from Thatcher's Shadow Cabinet, NAFF acted as an unprecedented alliance between the operators from the counter-subversion lobby and the candidate they worked to promote. On the links between Thatcher and NAFF, one can do no better than to quote Robin Ramsay and Stephen Dorril:

> "NAFF pulled together all the elements of the previous networks: the spooks, the propagandists, the anti-union outfits, and - this is the difference between NAFF and its predecessors - it brought in a group of Tory MPs with connections all the way to the top of the post-Thatcher Tory Party [...] NAFF was formed just after Mrs. Thatcher became leader of the Tory Party. It is difficult not to view it as essentially formed around her [...] Mrs. Thatcher duly gave her public blessing to this group, appearing as guest of honour at NAFF's inaugural subscription dinner in January 1977" (216).
>
> "In its first eighteen months, NAFF initiated what an intelligence officer would have called 'political actions': legal actions against strikes, propaganda about 'scroungers', and 'Marxists' in the Labour Party - and, most spectacularly, its

> strike-breaking intervention in the strike at the Grunwick factory. These brilliantly successful psychological operations gained them oceans of favourable coverage in the Tory Press, anticipating (and to some extent, setting) the agenda for the Conservative Government of 1979 [...] the first Thatcher administration was the National Association For Freedom Government" (217).

Besides these NAFF actions, the counter-subversion lobby kept up the pressure on the Labour Party in the foreign Press: the smears against Labour politicians and Heath and Thorpe were channelled across the Atlantic, reaching American newspapers in September and October 1975. The message was repeated for a domestic British audience in January 1976, when Lord Chalfont provided a platform for Brian Crozier's warnings of the Red Menace in a television programme on subversion called *It Must Not Happen Here* (218)*.

An indication of this close relationship between NAFF and the new Leader of the Conservative Party came on 19th January 1976 when Margaret Thatcher gave her historic "Iron Lady" speech - which had been written for her by Robert Moss. However, the close cooperation between NAFF and Thatcher went far beyond speechwriting and public political support: as Crozier revealed in his memoirs, several members of NAFF set up a secret advisory committee on security and intelligence matters to brief the Conservative leader.

The initiative for the committee, called **Shield**, came from the ex-SAS/MI6 officer and NAFF National Council member Sir Stephen Hastings who was active in 1977 in giving a Parliamentary platform to NAFF's psy-ops campaigns. On 9th March 1976 at a dinner hosted by Lord De l'Isle, and attended by Margaret Thatcher and NAFF founding members Crozier, Moss, Gouriet and McWhirter, the creation of the Shield committee was given the go-ahead. Coincidentally or not, the same day, according to the authorised history of MI5, "the maverick former Deputy Chief of SIS, George Young, gave a speech alleging that three of Wilson's ministers were crypto-Communists" (219).

The timing for Shield's creation could not have been more critical; within days, the Labour Prime Minister Harold Wilson resigned, worn down by the psy war waged by his enemies within the British counter-subversion lobby, MI5, MI6, the CIA and BOSS. In the vacuum created by Wilson's mid-term resignation, NAFF and their friends in MI5 and MI6 feared that the left-winger Michael Foot might be Wilson's successor. NAFF caused a storm in April 1976 by publishing an editorial in the *Free Nation* urging the Queen to dissolve Parliament and call fresh elections if a Labour government under Foot were to succeed Wilson. Another article in that *Free Nation* issue was written by "a recently retired counter-subversion chief of MI-5" (220).

THE CERCLE'S ALPINE ALLIES

Whilst the counter-subversion lobby mounted their campaign in Britain against "Communist infiltration" of the government and the unions, Karl Friedrich Grau and his Frankfurt Study Group had also been spreading much the same message from the ISP's safe refuge over the Swiss border. At the same time, Grau was the linch pin of the German PEU section, acting as its Federal Secretary through until 1975. Whilst cooperation between the Belgian, French, German and British components of the Cercle flourished in the period 1974-76, Grau himself ran into controversy, first in Germany, then in Switzerland.

Grau's far-right views became an embarrassment for the CDU party hierarchy when it was revealed in early 1974 that he had held meetings with militants of the neo-fascist NPD party with a view to concluding an alliance for the Hesse regional elections (221)*. The controversy led to the resignation in May of five CDU MPs from Grau's Frankfurt group, the Studiengesellschaft für staatspolitische Öffentlichkeitsarbeit [Study Group for Political Communication] and Grau's formal exclusion from the CDU in June. In the interim, the co-founder of the Study Group, the CDU's Dr. Walter Hoeres, took over as President. The storm did not last long however, and in a Study Group circular in November, Grau could boast that the loss of the five CDU members had been offset by applications for membership from CSU MPs. In any case, Grau's services as clandestine fundraiser for the CDU/CSU were too valuable to lose, and the CDU quietly readmitted him in May 1976 in time for the national elections.

Grau scored a coup for his Swiss group in early 1976 when he got the agreement of Swiss Air Force **Major-General Ernst Wetter** to act as President of the ISP. A former Head of Air and Air Defence Forces from 1968 to 1974, Wetter served from 1975 to 1980 as personal advisor to the Swiss Ministry of Defence (Département Militaire Fédéral - DMF/Eidgenössisches Militärdepartement - EMD). However, Grau's coup rebounded on him and became an own goal; a few months later, Wetter was forced to resign from the ISP Presidency by the DMF which did not take kindly to Swiss military personnel using their rank in their private lives. The incident led to an investigation of the ISP and trouble for Grau. To obtain Wetter's agreement, Grau had claimed that the three International Vice-Presidents of the ISP were the CDU foreign and defence policy spokesman Dr. Werner Marx, Jean Violet, and a Viennese lawyer called **Wolfram Bitschnau**. Grau had the habit of using people's names without taking the trouble of asking them, and, on checking, all three men denied any knowledge of being an International Vice-President of the ISP.

The denials ring hollow: although they may never have actually held office within the ISP, all three men had links with Grau. Marx had been a longstanding speaker for Grau's Frankfurt Study Group, even if he had been one of the five CDU MPs to "leave" the Study Group after the 1974 scandal about Grau's contacts with the NPD. Together with Huyn, Marx had also represented Germany on the International Council of CEDI since at least 1972. As for Violet, Grau was one of the earliest and closest allies of Violet's AESP, and several German AESP members including Habsburg and Huyn spoke regularly at ISP seminars. Bitschnau was the Habsburg family's longstanding Austrian lawyer and was also connected to the AESP; a year later, in 1977, Academy documents listed Bitschnau as an AESP member in his capacity of President of the Institut für Internationale Zukunftstudien [Institute for International Studies of the Future] (222)*. The official investigation into the ISP drew attention to the murky nature of Grau's political activities, and he was issued with a formal warning by the Swiss government in May 1976. Following a parliamentary question, the Swiss government declared "Mr. Grau has received a warning for interference in Swiss internal affairs and for undesirable political activities and has been threatened with expulsion under Article 70 of the Federal Constitution" (223). Whilst Grau had to tone down his operations for a while, the Swiss government never followed up on its threat to expel him.

What then were these "undesirable political activities" by Grau that interfered with Swiss internal affairs? An examination of some of the ISP's conferences in 1975 and 1976 shows that Grau was doing in Switzerland exactly what the ISC had started doing in Britain in 1972: giving seminars on Communist subversion to government and police officials. One of the ISP's subversion seminars was held between 29th September and 3rd October 1975 in the Tenigerbad Hotel in Rabius; with heavy irony, a poster in the hotel lobby announced an "Agricultural Seminar on Pest Control". Inside, the keynote speaker on "farming" was General Reinhard Gehlen, former head of the BND. One third of the audience were officers from the Swiss political police; apart from Grau's Swiss partner Dr. Peter Sager of the SOI, all of the speakers were Germans.

The conference timetables for two further ISP seminars on industrial subversion and counter-espionage in March 1976 give us a fuller picture of the ISP's "undesirable activities". At their height, the seminars were held at the rate of two a month; each lasted five days and included some fifteen presentations by government or police officials from Germany, Switzerland and several other countries.

The first of the two March 1976 seminars opened with a presentation by Ernst Wetter, at that time still President of the ISP. Then Grau gave a lengthy introduction to the ISP before handing over to the keynote speaker, Dr. Peter Sager of the SOI who spoke on "the global political situation in the politico-revolutionary war: an analysis of psychological warfare". In the afternoon, a certain Mr. I. Reinartz closed the first day of the seminar with a speech on "the importance of industry for Communist strategy and tactics - the company as the battlefield of Communism". Reinartz also gave the morning lecture on the second day on the subject of "the destabilisation of companies by radical left-wing forces - from agitation to action"; the afternoon included two presentations on "protection of data from internal or external access" and "the Communist intelligence services - mission, organisation, function". The seminar followed the same vein for the five days, giving details of technical and human resources for industrial espionage and counter-tactics against Communist subversion of industry. Inspector W. Dibbern from the Criminal Police, for example, spoke on "the protection of the State today - modern forms of defence" and "when, where and how an infiltration is mounted - how the agent works".

Another five-day ISP subversion seminar was held at the end of March 1976, and covered much the same topics. This time however, the keynote speaker was not Dr. Sager but **Lieutenant-Colonel Ernst Cincera**, the most notorious figure in Swiss parapolitics whose long history of collecting files on "subversives" is described below. At the seminar, Cincera spoke on "the clandestine struggle on all levels", a theme that was picked up by the following speaker **Dr. J. Kurt Klein**, from 1970 until 1989 Scientific Director of the German Army School for Psychological Warfare in Euskirchen, who gave two presentations on industrial subversion. Chief Commissioner Georg Pohl of the German Criminal Police spoke on "terrorism and anarchism in the Federal Republic - a threat to trade and industry", and retired Colonel Rudolf Mischler closed the seminar with three lectures on "action in case of attack by explosive or incendiary bombs (with practical examples)", "what to do in case of attack and hostage-taking?" and "preparations for sabotage and counter-measures".

No wonder the Swiss, touchy about their neutrality, found Grau's seminars undesirable. More information about who was working with Grau in the ISP is given by an ISP speakers' list for 1975-76, a document reproduced in the documentary annex to this full sixth edition. Grau himself was of course the most frequent speaker, speaking fourteen times in 1975-76. Grau's speeches concentrated on the Red Menace with titles such as "Is the Bolshevisation of Europe inevitable?" and "The strategy of Communism's clandestine forces". Military psy-ops expert Dr. J. Kurt Klein was a regular fixture, contributing no fewer than thirteen speeches such as "Soviet espionage in Germany" and "Areas of activity for Communist clandestine forces in Germany". Dr. Walter Hoeres, co-founder of the ISP's Frankfurt parent body and at this time standing in for Grau as its President, spoke eight times throughout the year.

Certainly the most controversial Swiss guest of the ISP was **Lieutenant-Colonel Ernst Cincera** who would soon become the subject of a national scandal in November 1976. "Colonel Ernst Cincera, member of the Radical Party, is well-known for his long and stormy activity as a 'snooper'. Carried out as a private citizen, his activities benefited from close cooperation with the Federal Military Department (DMF) [...] Cincera's information was included on the DMF microfilm files and Cincera worked in extremely close coordination with René Schmid's bureau, the DMF's specialist 'counter-subversion' unit" (224)*.

For many years, Cincera had been running a private counter-subversion service called **Informationsgruppe Schweiz** (Information Group Switzerland) which from 1974 on published its denunciations in the private bulletin *WasWerWieWannWo - Information über Agitation und Subversion des politischen Extremismus in der Schweiz* [WhatWhoHowWhenWhere - information on agitation and subversion by political extremists in Switzerland]. Cincera and his agents worked closely with the **Schmid bureau**, a secret counter-subversion unit set up within the DMF's Health Department under the leadership of Colonel René Schmid, Chief Medical Officer of the Swiss Army (225)*. The exchange of information between Cincera's group and the Schmid bureau was direct: in 1975, one of Cincera's young agents, Andreas Kühnis, supplied the Schmid bureau directly with a list of participants at a seminar organised by the Salecina Foundation. On the orders of Colonel Schmid, his bureau then sent back to Cincera's group a request for further information and included for each "suspect" an identity photo and a specimen signature drawn from the DMF's personnel records (226)*.

In exchange for its services, Cincera's group regularly received DMF files from the Schmid bureau, a case of illegal access which was exposed - with the help of Andreas Kühnis - by members of the Democratic Manifesto in November 1976. The national scandal that ensued was repeated the following year when the members of the Democratic Manifesto revealed that over 1,700 pages of material from Cincera were stocked on one single computer cassette amongst the thousands held by the Army in its MIDONAS database, the Military Document Reference System, which included all articles written about the Swiss Army and military service.

Cincera's material included personal and political data on each "suspect", one of whom was journalist Jürg Frischknecht of the *Tages-Anzeiger*, one of the authors of *Die unheimlichen Patrioten*, a comprehensive exposure of the Swiss Right. Frischknecht's case shows the kind of cooperation between Cincera's network and Grau's ISP. At the second ISP seminar in March 1976, described above, Grau had accepted to answer written questions from Frischknecht, but in fact never did so. In 1977, when the members of the Democratic Manifesto obtained the MIDONAS cassette, they found in Cincera's file on Frischknecht the list of questions that he had submitted to Grau the previous year. The DMF kept an embarassed silence about its cooperation with Cincera, but the newspaper close to Cincera, *Abendland*, confirmed the facts: "One of the people responsible for setting up the DMF's new computer system stayed in contact with Mr. Cincera for several months to clarify to what extent his archives could be linked to this information system" (227).

Despite his notoriety, Cincera was a frequent speaker at ISP seminars, speaking no fewer than seven times in 1975 as well as his contribution to the March 1976 seminar mentioned above. His subjects included "agitation and subversion as a means of Communist strategy" and "agitation against the Army - agitation within the Army" (228)*. Cincera was of course not the only Swiss contributor to the ISP: Jürg

Meister, a military journalist and editor of Grau's *intern-informationen* from 1972 to 1976, spoke six times for the ISP in 1975-76, whereas Dr. Peter Sager, Grau's partner since 1961 in their Frankfurt-based SOI support group, spoke at three ISP seminars in 1975-76 on predictable themes such as "The changing face of Communism - a narcotic to dupe the West" and "Why the Communists in the non-communist world do not want peace". At this time, the SOI was expanding its activities, adding a second monthly review *SOI-Bilanz* to its bi-monthly journal *Zeitbild*, both of which were distributed in Germany by Grau (229)*.

Most of the ISP speakers were, however, Germans, including the luminary of the Catholic conservative Right, **Brigadier-General Professor Friedrich August Freiherr von der Heydte**, the veteran President of the Abendländische Akademie, one of the earliest members of CEDI and a speaker for Grau's Hamburg-based group, the SWG. Heydte spoke three times for the ISP in 1975-76; at this time, he was in his final year as Professor of Law at Würzburg University, handing over in 1976 to Dieter Blumenwitz who is presented below. Another ISP speaker was **Wolfgang Reineke**, a Heidelberg-based business advisor since 1974, who gave six speeches for the ISP in 1975-76; he later figured in a Cercle anti-disarmament group in the 1980s.

The CSU's political foundation, the Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung, also contributed to the ISP: the Chairman of the HSS Defence Policy Working Group from 1973 to 1979, CSU MP **Franz Handlos**, spoke four times for the ISP in 1975-76; he was Vice-President of Grau's Frankfurt Study Group in 1974. The HSS representative in Paris, French Army **Colonel Ferdinand Otto Miksche**, also spoke four times for the ISP in 1975-76. In August 1954, Miksche had attended the III CEDI Congress with Habsburg and Heydte; all three were ISP speakers in 1975-76 and also contributed to the SWG. Another SWG friend – indeed, with Grau, the co-founder of the SWG - who spoke four times for the ISP in 1975-76 was **Hugo Wellems**, editor from 1967 until his death in 1995 of both the SWG's *Deutschland-Journal* and the *Ostpreußenblatt*, the largest selling German expellee newspaper which regularly advertised SWG and PEU publications and conferences. A further frequent speaker and writer for both the SWG and the *Ostpreußenblatt* who gave four lectures to the ISP in 1975-76 was **Friedrich-Wilhelm Schlomann**, who had fled from East Germany in 1950, soon joining the Kampfgruppe gegen Unmenschlichkeit [Combat Group against Inhumanity], a West Berlin-based group funded by the CIC/CIA and Gehlen Org which carried out intelligence-gathering and sabotage missions in East Germany until its dissolution in 1959. Schlomann then became a veteran mainstay in the Ministry of Defence's Psychological Warfare Directorate founded by Strauß and Marx in 1958; after starting with the Directorate in 1959, Schlomann worked there for over a decade. In 1970, he joined the German state radio broadcaster Deutsche Welle, serving as Editor of its foreign broadcast monitoring service until 1992; during this time, he also produced several books on intelligence matters with a focus on East Germany, Vietnam and China.

A foreign dignitary speaking three times for the ISP in 1975-76 was Pinochet's Cultural and Press Attaché in Berlin, journalist **Lucía Gevert Parada**, who was appointed as Chilean Ambassador to Germany in February 1976, serving until October 1978; she also gave lectures to the SWG and to the ABN. A British guest at the ISP was **Reginald Steed**, the foreign policy lead writer for the *Daily Telegraph* in the 1960s and 1970s, and its Deputy Editor from 1978 on; he spoke four times for the ISP in 1975-76, having contributed to the SWG and the *Ostpreußenblatt* from November 1973 on.

Another foreign lecturer for the ISP was veteran French paratrooper **Brigadier-General Albert Merglen** from Alsace. In 1951-53, Merglen had been Deputy Commander and then Commander of the Foreign Legion's 2e Bataillon Etranger de Parachutistes, seeing service in France's Indochina War; the unit was later annihilated during the Điện Biên Phủ siege of April-May 1954. After fighting in Algeria with the 1er Régiment de Chasseurs Parachutistes and spending three years at the Infantry and Paratroop School at Fort Benning, from 1961 to 1963 Merglen had been the last commander of the 11e Demi-Brigade Parachutiste de Choc, the famed special forces unit that carried out SDECE operations, which was disbanded in December 1963 due to fears of its sympathy for l'Algérie française. Merglen then ran the French Army's paratroop school before retiring from military service in 1970. Besides giving no fewer than nine lectures for the ISP in 1975-76, Merglen also spoke for the SWG and the *Ostpreußenblatt* from May 1974 on (230).

Several of Grau's associates from the Deutschland-Stiftung also supported the ISP. The CSU foreign policy spokesman Count Hans Huyn, a Board Member of the Deutschland-Stiftung, was one of the most frequent contributors, giving eight lectures at ISP seminars in 1975, mostly on his specialist theme of Ostpolitik, Germany's relationship with Eastern Europe. Another Deutschland-Stiftung member active within Grau's ISP was former **Brigadier-General Heinz Karst** who had taken early retirement as head of the Army's Education and Training Corps in October 1970 after political differences with Brandt's Defence Minister, Helmut Schmidt. Karst, the Chairman of the Deutschland-Stiftung from 1973 to 1977, spoke at six of the ISP's conferences in 1975-76. Habsburg himself spoke at four ISP seminars in that year and had been writing articles for Grau's Frankfurt Study Group since at least 1965 as well as speaking for the SWG as did Huyn and Karst.

Two winners of the Deutschland-Stiftung's Konrad Adenauer Prize also acted as speakers for the ISP in 1975-76: **Professor Hans-Joachim Schoeps** of Erlangen University, the 1969 prize winner who spoke twice for the ISP and also spoke for the SWG, and **Winfried Martini**, a journalist for *Die Welt*, the *Rheinischer Merkur* and the CSU's *Bayernkurier* who was the Deutschland-Stiftung's 1970 prize winner. Martini, who spoke eight times for the ISP in 1975-76, was working closely at the time with Dr. Hoeres to found the right-wing quarterly *Epoche*; he also wrote for the *Ostpreußenblatt*, whose 1975 book to commemorate the newspaper's 25th anniversary included contributions from Habsburg, Martini, Merglen, Merkatz, Miksche and Steed.

The close links between the Deutschland-Stiftung and Grau's ISP were illustrated by one incident when the *Deutschland-Magazin* quoted Grau's smear bulletin *intern-informationen* in accusing SPD Minister and Brandt's Head of Chancellory Horst Ehmke of contacts with the Czech secret service. After losing a libel suit, the *Deutschland-Magazin* was forced to retract its allegations - Grau however could continue to publish them with impunity from *intern-informationen*'s address in Switzerland. The *Deutschland-Magazin* also worked closely with the magazine *Zeitbild* published by Sager's SOI; as we have seen, it was Grau, Vice-President of the Deutschland-Stiftung, who distributed SOI's publications in Germany (231). When SOI celebrated its jubilee in 1984, it was attended by the President of the Deutschland-Stiftung from 1977 to 1994, **Gerhard Löwenthal**.

Gerhard Löwenthal was, with Grau and Huyn, perhaps the most important right-wing multifunctionary in Germany throughout the 1970s and 1980s (232)*. Born in Berlin in 1922 as the son of a Jewish businessman, Löwenthal survived internment in Sachsenhausen concentration camp. However, the Communist take-over in East Berlin radicalised him, and he joined the PEU in 1947. Having started a career in broadcasting in 1945 with the American Occupation Forces station RIAS (Radio in the American Sector), Löwenthal was appointed RIAS Deputy Director in 1951, later moving over to the Berlin radio station Sender Freies Berlin after its creation in 1954.

After a spell working at the OECD in Paris from 1959 to 1963, Löwenthal returned to broadcasting, joining the second German television channel ZDF as its European Correspondent and head of the Brussels bureau. He soon rose to become one of Germany's most prominent television anchormen as presenter of the fortnightly current affairs programme, **ZDF Magazin**, which he presented from January 1969 right through until December 1987. This programme gave Löwenthal the media power and public recognition of a Robin Day or a Jeremy Paxman, television access which he used to focus heavily on Soviet repression in Eastern Europe and particularly in East Germany. He was a close political ally of Franz Josef Strauß who was a frequent guest on his programme; Brian Crozier also later benefited from television airtime thanks to Löwenthal. Löwenthal also had excellent contacts with the BND and particularly with **Gerhard Wessel**, Gehlen's deputy during and after the war and his successor as BND President from 1968 to 1980; Löwenthal was Wessel's frequent personal guest at BND headquarters (233).

An early example of cooperation between Löwenthal and the Cercle complex's German contacts was the creation in 1973 of the **Freie Gesellschaft zur Förderung der Freundschaft mit den Völkern der Tschechoslovakei** [Free Society for the Promotion of Friendship with the Peoples of Czechoslovakia]. Alongside Löwenthal as founding members of the Free Society, we find three future speakers at Grau's ISP subversion seminars: Count Hans Huyn, Luděk Pachman and Walter Becher. **Luděk Pachman** was a former Czech Chess Grand Master who fled to Germany in November 1972, acquiring German nationality in October 1975 and giving five speeches on Czechoslovakia to the ISP in 1975-76. Throughout the 1970s and 1980s, Pachman was Löwenthal's inseparable sidekick, a German Crozier-Moss act.

Walter Becher was from the Sudetenland, the German-speaking part of the Czech Republic. In 1931, Becher joined Hitler's NSDAP; in 1933, he joined the Sudetendeutsche Heimatsfront [Sudeten German Homeland Front, later Party] led by Konrad Henlein, who was appointed Reichskommissar of the Sudetenland when it was annexed by Hitler in October 1938. After the war, following the expulsion of some three million ethnic Germans from the Czech Republic, Becher played a prominent part in exile politics, sitting in the Bavarian Parliament for a small exiles' party between 1950 and 1962. In 1965, he was elected to the Bundestag; after joining the CSU in 1967, he continued in the Bundestag as a CSU MP until 1980, sitting throughout the period on the Foreign Affairs Committee where he was one of the most outspoken opponents of Brandt's Ostpolitik. Besides his parliamentary role, Becher also spoke three times for Grau's ISP in 1975-76; the ISP speakers' list gave Becher's address as Pullach bei München, the location of the BND headquarters, where he still lived when he died in 2005.

Two further founding members of the Free Society were **Jaroslav Pechacek**, Head of the Czech Division of Radio Free Europe, the CIA-funded radio station, and **Rainer Gepperth**, Director of the International Department of the **Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung**, the CSU's political foundation, examined in later chapters. The final founding member of the Free Society in 1973 was a person with close links to two early anti-communist propaganda groups, one in Britain and one in Germany: Cornelia Gerstenmaier.

Cornelia Gerstenmaier was the daughter of Eugen Gerstenmaier, from 1954 to 1969 the longest serving President of the Bundestag, prominent member of the Parliamentary Assembly of the CoE from 1950 to 1957 and an early CEDI member. In 1970, she was one of the founding members of the British-based **Centre for the Study of Religion and Communism**, run by the Reverend and later Canon **Michael Bourdeaux**. The CSRC later changed names to **Keston College** and then to **Keston Research**, but remained focused on the same theme: the repression of the freedom of worship in the Communist bloc. It has been alleged that the CSRC was an IRD/MI6 front similar to the ISC which was created around the same time. The attribution of the CSRC to the IRD is given credence by the revelation in Crozier's memoirs that shortly before the CSRC's foundation, the IRD had officially curtailed publication of its own Christian anti-communist output, the *Religious Digest* (234).

The young CSRC certainly had close ties to other intelligence-linked propaganda outlets such as the ISC: Bourdeaux was one of the contributors to Crozier's 1970 anthology for Common Cause, *We Will Bury You*, and the CSRC's publications were distributed by the same outfit used by the counter-subversion lobby, SOI and Interdoc: Stewart-Smith's FAPC. The KGB was always interested in Keston: one of the special tasks for former KGB London Resident Oleg Gordievsky was to monitor Keston's activities, and former KGB Major-General Oleg Kalugin later confirmed that the KGB's Counter-Espionage department kept a close eye on Keston (235)*.

However, Cornelia Gerstenmaier's real significance lay in her role in running an organisation which acquired a certain notoriety in the 1980s, the **Internationale Gesellschaft für Menschenrechte** [IGfM, International Society for Human Rights, ISHR]. The IGfM was first founded in Frankfurt in 1972 as a purely German organisation, the Gesellschaft für Menschenrechte [GfM, Society for Human Rights], which was chaired from 1973 to 1978 by Gerstenmaier (236)*. It is interesting to note that the GfM was founded around the same time as the trio of ISC, Cercle and AESP launched their Helsinki Appeal on human rights; the foundation of the GfM may represent a German pillar to the complex's campaign.

The GfM's future political orientation was illustrated by its founding members, who stemmed from the NTS, a group of former Russian Nazi collaborators funded by the CIA and intimately linked to WACL. The founding members of the GfM included Ivan Agrusov, President of the NTS, and Leonid Müller, the NTS Treasurer. The IGfM also had close connections to the German Right; on the Board of the GfM or IGfM at one time or another were Habsburg, Merkatz, Pachman and Sager. The GfM became international in 1981, and by 1988 it had 16 foreign sections; its campaigns in the 1980s are described in a later chapter.

Another early organisation of note created by Löwenthal was the **Konzentration Demokratischer Kräfte** [KDK, Concentration of Democratic Forces, also known as Korrigiert den Kurs - Correct the Course], a right-wing ginger group that campaigned for the CSU. Löwenthal's partner for the 1974 creation of KDK was **Dr. Lothar Bossle**, whom we will meet again in the late 1970s as a partner in the Cercle's German operations.

No presentation of the Cercle's German friends in the mid-1970s would be complete without mentioning **Hans Josef 'Jupp' Horchem**, from 1969 until 1981 Director of the Hamburg regional branch of the German security service **Bundesamt für Verfassungsschutz** [BfV, Federal Office for the Protection of the Constitution]. Having joined the BfV in 1957, Horchem rose to become one of its top analysts on left-wing extremism before moving over in later years to concentrate on right-wing extremism. Horchem's first known appearance in the Cercle complex came in March 1973 when he wrote a Conflict Study for the ISC, *West Germany: "The Long March* *through the Institutions"*; this was soon followed by two further Conflict Studies, *West Germany's Red Army Anarchists* published in April 1974 and *Right-wing Extremism in Western Germany* published in November 1975. In March 1976, Horchem joined the ISC trio of Crozier, Moss and Professor Paul Wilkinson as speakers at a major international conference on terrorism in Washington chaired by Robert Fearey (237)*. In 1978, he served as a special consultant to the Spanish government in anti-terrorist measures, and from 1980 on also advised the Basque regional government. In the early 1980s, Horchem also worked closely with Löwenthal within the right-wing ginger group Konservative Aktion, as well as acting as a prime German channel for Crozier's private secret service, the 6I (238).

THE IBERIAN PENINSULA

In the mid-1970s, right-wing fears about the rise of the Left were reinforced by the fall of the Iberian dictatorships following the Portuguese revolution of April 1974 and the death in November 1975 of the Spanish Caudillo. Coming after Wilson's victory in the February 1974 elections and Mitterrand's favourable position in the run-up to elections in France, the Portuguese revolution provided further confirmation to the Right of a left-wing landslide throughout Europe. The ISC's 1974-75 annual review, the *Annual of Power and Conflict*, focused specifically on Portugal: "An introductory article by Brian Crozier, the editor, on *Subversion and the USSR* makes special reference to the Soviet Union's activities in Portugal" (239), and in his article for the *Annual*, *Western Europe's Year of Confusion*, Kenneth Mackenzie summarised the situation in saying: "By early 1975 Portugal looked in distinct danger of becoming the first country in the Alliance to fall under Communist control" (240).

Apart from the weakening of NATO's southern flank, the Portuguese revolution also had strategic implications outside of Europe, due notably to the new Portuguese regime's decision to withdraw from its African colonies of Angola and Mozambique, riven by war between Cuban-backed pro-Soviet forces and pro-Western forces supported by the CIA and the Rhodesian Central Intelligence Office. The Portuguese withdrawal from Africa coincided with the death in Spain of a bastion of Western values, Caudillo Franco. Following the American doctrine of the "domino theory", the Right feared that Spain would also be contaminated by the "Portuguese disease" and that the left-wing upheaval in Portugal could drag Spain down with it. The worrying situation of the Iberian peninsula was one of the major focuses for the ISC's publications between 1974 and 1976, which included two Special Reports and two Conflict Studies: *Revolutionary Challenges in Spain* (a Special Report by Robert Moss, June 1974), *Southern Europe: NATO's Crumbling Flank* (June 1975), *Portugal - Revolution and Backlash* (September 1975) and *Portugal and Spain: Transition Politics* (May 1976), a Special Report which was the product of an international seminar held in London in mid-1975 and sponsored by the ISC, Georgetown University's CSIS and the Institute for International Studies of the University of South Carolina.

Whilst the geostrategic experts at the ISC alerted their readership to the danger of a Communist take-over in the Iberian peninsula, the ISC's allies in the Cercle complex channelled financial aid to right-wing leaders in Portugal and Spain through Franz Josef Strauß and Otto von Habsburg. In Portugal, the main beneficiaries of Cercle support were two putschist Generals who were central figures in the history of the Portuguese revolution and its aftermath: **General Kaúlza de Arriaga**, former Commander of Portuguese Forces in Mozambique from 1970 to 1973 and leader of a group of extreme right-wing Army officers, and **General António de Spínola**, former Governor-General and Commander-in-Chief of Portuguese Guinea (later Guinea-Bissau) from 1968 to 1973. Strauß gave generous clandestine funding to both Arriaga and Spínola until at least 1979, and both men were in contact with the top members of the Cercle Pinay. Within a year of an attempted coup in March 1975, Arriaga attended CEDI's 1976 annual Congress in Spain with top Cercle members; both Arriaga and Spínola attended meetings of the Cercle itself (241).

Following a serious stroke in 1968, the Portuguese dictator António de Oliveira Salazar had been replaced as Prime Minister by his previous deputy Marcelo Caetano. Caetano's attempt to introduce a modest reform programme of the Estado Novo was strongly resisted and eventually foiled by hardliners in the Portuguese Armed Forces. In December 1973, Arriaga and a group of extreme right-wing officers and politicians approached Spínola to canvass his support for a coup against the Caetano government. Spínola however refused to become involved and revealed the plot to Caetano who rewarded Spínola by appointing him to the recently created and powerful post of Deputy Chief of Staff of the Armed Forces. This promotion was however short-lived; following the furore caused by Spínola's book *Portugal and the Future*, which indicated that the wars in Portugal's African colonies could not be ended by military means alone but also required reform at home, Spínola was dismissed in March 1974 as was his superior Costa Gomes who had refused to swear an oath of loyalty to Caetano.

After the Armed Forces Movement's bloodless coup which overthrew Caetano on 25th April 1974, Spínola was appointed President of the seven-man Junta of National Salvation and President of the Portuguese Republic on 15th May. However, after rumours of his involvement in a planned simultaneous counter-coup in Lisbon and Luanda scheduled for 28th September, Spínola was replaced as President of Portugal by his deputy Costa Gomes on 30th September, and Kaúlza de Arriaga and three former Caetano ministers were imprisoned. Spínola's supporters then went underground; Spinolist Army officers with experience of counter-insurgency with the FNLA in Angola joined with former agents of the shattered former intelligence and security service PIDE to create a clandestine army, the **ELP** (Exército de Libertação de Portugal, Army for the Liberation of Portugal). With its cover blown and its offices and archives seized by the Armed Forces Movement, Aginter Presse also took up the fight within the ELP: Guérin-Sérac and his lieutenant Jay Salby were prominent ELP commanders. Further help for the ELP came from supporters of Arriaga, who later joined him after his release from prison in January 1976 in the Movimento Independente para a Reconstruçao Nacional (MIRN). Spínola and the ELP made a second coup attempt on 11th March 1975, which also failed, and Spínola was forced to flee Portugal.

In exile in Switzerland, Spínola founded the MDLP (Democratic Movement for the Liberation of Portugal), a coalition of former Caetano officials and members of the ELP. Throughout 1975, whilst the ELP carried out several hundred bomb attacks in Portugal to destabilise the government of the left-wing Armed Forces Movement, Spínola travelled around Europe, seeking support for a putsch, should the Left win the Parliamentary elections to be held on 25th April 1976, the second anniversary of the 1974 revolution. After meeting the American Ambassador to Portugal, Frank Carlucci, in the US air base at Torrejón de Ardoz outside Madrid at the beginning of August, Spínola travelled to Bonn where he met a key contact: Franz Josef Strauß, who also arranged for Spínola to meet a friend with international influence in the field of finance, **Hermann Josef Abs**. Abs, described by David Rockefeller as "the leading banker of the world", was a former head of the Deutsche Bank who also served as a close advisor to Chancellor Adenauer.

Abs had been head of the Deutsche Bank from 1940 to 1945. The Deutsche Bank was the Nazis' bank throughout the war; Abs was in effect Hitler's treasurer. Abs was also on the Board of chemicals conglomerate I. G. Farben and attended company Board meetings when members discussed the use of slave labour at a Farben rubber factory located in the Auschwitz concentration camp (242). The Deutsche Bank's collaboration with the Nazi regime did not lead to a purge of its staff; after the war, Abs continued on the Board of the bank, serving as spokesman for the Board from 1957 to 1967 before being appointed Honorary Chairman of the Board in 1976.

Besides his banking activities, Abs had been one of the key German partners of Dr. Joseph Retinger in his efforts to set up the CIA-funded European Movement and the Bilderberg Group. Abs was one of the two leaders of the German section of the Independent League for Economic Cooperation, one of the five organisations that made up the European Movement; Abs chaired the EM's Economic and Social Commission in 1955 (243). Abs had also been one of the founding members of the Bilderberg Group, having served on the 1952 organisation committee with Pinay, Voisin, Ball and Bonvoisin. The friendship between Abs and Strauß dated back to at least the mid-1950s when the two men met at meetings of the Bilderberg Group; Strauß, then Nuclear Power Minister, had attended the Bilderberg conference in Garmisch-Partenkirchen in September 1955. One year before the 1975 meeting between Abs, Strauß and Spínola, Abs and Strauß had both attended the 1974 Bilderberg conference held in April in Megève, France (244). Besides Bilderberg, Abs also met Strauß regularly within CEDI; they both attended the XI CEDI Congress in 1963 (245). Together with AESP and CEDI member Merkatz, Abs was a member of CEDI's informal German section, the Europäisches Institut für politische, wirtschaftliche und soziale Fragen (European Institute for political, economic and social issues).

After his meeting with Abs, Spínola moved on to Paris, where he met a representative of the arms company Merex, founded in 1966 by former paratroop Major Gerhard Georg Mertins, a colleague of Otto Skorzeny, the Nazi commando in exile in Spain who was a major rallying point for European fascism. Besides its links to the extreme Right, Merex also had a close working relationship with the BND (246). In Paris, Spínola also had the opportunity of soliciting the support of Western intelligence agencies for his planned coup, meeting the CIA Head of Station Eugen Burgstaller and attending as guest of honour a meeting organised at the Paris Sheraton by Colonel Lageneste, in charge of SDECE foreign relations (247). The Sheraton meeting was in fact a major conference bringing together all the anti-communist forces in Portugal; amongst those present were Spínola, CDS party leader **Freitas do Amaral**, Manuel Allegre of the Portuguese Socialist Party and Jorge Jardim, leader of the Portuguese colonists in Mozambique, who later met top Cercle members at the 1976 CEDI Congress. Amaral also had close links to the Cercle, as a letter from Habsburg to Damman of 29th August 1975 shows:

> "I sent replies to your previous letters via Pöcking [the Archduke's Bavarian residence] because of my trip to Portugal during which - for good reasons - I didn't dare to write or even take notes. I had very interesting contacts, particularly with the leadership of the CDS, who deserve our support. I am planning to bring their leaders - this is highly confidential - Amaro da Costa and Freitas do Amaral to Bavaria in the second half of September. In the meanwhile, I have suggested to Mr. Strauß that we should set up Portugal Support Committees, whose aim would be to give moral and financial support to the freedom forces in Portugal. We should act as the Communists did in relation to Vietnam in organising public demonstrations, collections, appeals and support groups formed by intellectuals, etc. I hope that Strauß will accept the idea. I don't see why the Communists should be the only ones to support their friends or why we should practice non-intervention" (248)*.

By the end of September, Spínola was in Lausanne where he met John McCone, a former director of the CIA who then worked for ITT; ITT promised $300,000 for Spínola's putsch. Despite the support of several foreign intelligence services and pledges of several hundred thousand dollars from ITT and other multinationals, Spínola's plans were wrecked just before the April 1976 elections by investigative journalist Günter Walraff who, posing as a right-wing militant, had tape-recorded Spínola's conversations about his plans for a putsch (249).

In Spain, the death of Caudillo Franco in November 1975 set a challenge for the Cercle: could the "Portuguese disease" be prevented? From 1975 to 1977, Strauß channelled clandestine funds to a trio of former Franco Ministers who led parties within the Alianza Popular (AP) coalition, founded in October 1976. We have already met the most important of the three, AP's founder and President from 1976 until 1986: **Manuel Fraga Iribarne**, Franco's Information Minister from 1962 to 1969, and a contact of Damman since 1963 and of Crozier since 1965, joining the AESP in 1970. Removed from his ministerial post in 1969 in a purge of opponents of Opus Dei, Fraga Iribarne served as Spanish Ambassador in London from 1973 on; he received a personal visit there from President Pinay as part of Pinay's 1975 European tour to promote the ISC. After Franco's death, Fraga Iribarne returned to Spain in December 1975, formed the Reforma Democrática party and served in the first post-Franco government as Vice-President of the Government and Interior Minister. Fraga also sat on the eight-man committee that drafted the 1978 Constitution.

The second Strauß beneficiary was **Federico Silva Muñoz**, Public Works Minister from 1965 to 1970, prominent member of Opus Dei, leader of Acción (later Unión) Democrática Española and Honorary President of Fraga's AP coalition. The third recipient of CSU funds was **Cruz Martínez Esteruelas**, President of the Unión Democrática del Pueblo Español, who had served in Franco's last two cabinets as Planning and Development Minister in 1973 and Education and Science Minister in 1974. All three were given generous covert funding by Strauß: in 1977, Fraga Iribarne received at least DM 135,000, and Silva Muñoz and Martínez Esteruelas DM 100,000 each. Fraga Iribarne had had an opportunity that year to discuss funding with Strauß; the two men met in April 1977 at the Bilderberg conference organised in Torquay by Sir Frederic Bennett (250).

Strauß's support for Fraga Iribarne continued well into the 1980s via their respective party foundations:

> "In 1986, like its sister foundation the [CDU's] Konrad-Adenauer-Stiftung, the [CSU's] Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung would choose the same path for backdoor funding of its activities in favour of the Contras. On the 6th - 7th October 1986, a seminar on Latin America with representatives from the Contras was held in Geneva, organised by the Institut Economique de Paris which has close links with the Heritage Foundation. The conference was sponsored amongst others by the Fundación Cánovas [del] Castillo, politically close to the right-wing conservative Alianza Popular. The former President of Alianza Popular - Manuel Fraga Iribarne - is not only an old friend of Strauß and his CSU, but also a well-known right-wing radical in Spain. The Fundación Cánovas [del] Castillo is supported by the Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung, which benefits the Alianza Popular. In 1985 the German Federal Ministry for Cooperation [which funds party foundations like the HSS] approved a grant of 5 million DM to the HSS for the Madrid foundation" (251)*.

THE AESP, VDB AND PIO

Whilst Strauß was funding Franco friends in Spain, and AESP associates Crozier and Grau were organising seminars on subversion in Britain and in Switzerland, the Belgian members of the AESP were active on the domestic front: Defence Minister and AESP member Paul Vanden Boeynants (VdB) and his advisor de Bonvoisin set up a military counter-subversion and propaganda service, the **Public Information Office** or PIO. PIO was headed by a longstanding associate of VdB and de Bonvoisin, **Major Jean-Marie Bougerol.** Bougerol was a central figure in Belgian parapolitics implicated in previous coup plots: the 1976 Gendarmerie report by Roger Tratsaert stated that one of the plans for a coup d'état in 1973 was jointly organised by the NEM Clubs (funded by VdB and de Bonvoisin) and a group of gendarmes and Army officers centred around Bougerol.

PIO's genesis - and that of the coup plots in Belgium and elsewhere - lay in the political upheaval in America and Europe at the end of the 1960s. By 1970, the Army had become seriously concerned by the "internal threat" posed by the anti-Vietnam movement and the students' movement after 1968. Moves to create the Army's own counter-subversion agency bore fruit in April 1970, when Chief of the Army General Staff **Lieutenant-General Georges Vivario** (by 1973, part of an AESP delegation) together with **Colonel Paul Detrembleur** established the Division des Services Spéciaux (DSD) as an independent unit reporting directly to the Minister of Defence. The unit, headed by a general, brought together members of the Minister's office and representatives from the General Staff of the Army and the Gendarmerie. Composed of five sections, the DSD's specific task was to counter "protest and subversive propaganda". Part of its task was to set up a "Speakers' Bureau", a pool of military personnel trained as media representatives for public debates, television appearances, etc - this bureau later gave birth to PIO. Despite press uproar and the resignation of Vivario's Deputy Chief in protest, the creation of the DSD went ahead.

New impetus was given to the DSD's work in 1972-73 when the new Defence Minister, VdB, introduced reforms of the Army including a plan for the "Military Defence of the Territory" (DMT) designed to counter leftist and pacifist influence by a dramatic reinforcement of the Gendarmerie and greater involvement of the Army and its reserve officers in counter-subversion work. Faced with massive student protests in early 1973 against the DMT plan, the Army tightened military service rules and hardened its stance; in a study on "Objectivity and the Mass Media" dated 13th September 1973, Lieutenant-Colonel Weber, head of Counter-Information in the Belgian military intelligence service **SDRA** (252)*, wrote in apocalyptic terms of the threat to freedom and democracy posed by professional agitators within the media and the peace movement, and urged the creation of a permanent group within the SDRA to combat subversion. Weber's study came at a critical moment: in mid-August, the Press had reported the existence of a planned coup. Three days before

Weber wrote his study, the Gendarmerie General Staff had received Major de Cock's report alleging links between VdB, de Bonvoisin and the NEM Clubs (253). However, Weber's report and similar concerns within the Army General Staff led to a decision in 1974 to strengthen the Army's counter-subversion and propaganda roles by creating the Public Information Office PIO, headed by Major Bougerol, as an autonomous group within the Army General Staff.

Despite its independent status, PIO had considerable links to the SDRA: Bougerol claims he was given the use of an office within the Counter-Information section of SDRA in 1974-75 whilst he was setting up PIO, and one of his closest collaborators was **Commissioner Fagnart** of the Military Security section of SDRA. PIO had two official missions, the first of which was to expose Soviet disinformation in the media, largely through the publication of a press review called ***Inforep***. PIO's second task was to act as a clearing-house for information on subversion, distributing information to the Army, the Gendarmerie, the **Sûreté de l'Etat** - Belgium's internal security agency, and the Foreign Ministry Security Division. Unofficially, Bougerol used PIO to mount the same kind of aggressive counter-intelligence programmes that the FBI had been conducting in America under COINTELPRO against the Students for a Democratic Society, the Black Panther Party and the American Indian Movement from 1969 until at least 1976 (254). It is probably no coincidence that PIO's title - unusual for being in English in the original - copied FBI jargon:

> "PIO (Public Information Officer): the FBI classification for the agent whose speciality is providing intentionally inaccurate "facts" (disinformation) to the media; the FBI counterpart to the military psychological operations (psy-ops) specialist" (255).

Amongst PIO's operations were organised sabotage of left-wing conferences, promotion of groups favourable to the Army, and seminars on Soviet subversion. Through such operations, Bougerol set up a network of unofficial correspondents baptised the **Miller network**, a pseudonym he used when writing in letters to the Belgian newspapers. The 445 known correspondents were a gathering of officers from the Sûreté, the SDRA, the Gendarmerie and police, members of the EEC's security division, militants from the NEM Clubs and other fascist groups, private "security operatives" and innocent or not so innocent journalists (256)*.

To gain experience of counter-intelligence and propaganda operations, Bougerol went on a European tour in 1976, visiting Northern Ireland, Spain, Portugal, Italy, France and Holland. In several of these countries, Bougerol was hosted by AESP contacts. It is likely that during his visit to the UK, Bougerol had the opportunity of meeting Brian Crozier and the AESP's partners at the ISC - as we will see in the next chapter, Bougerol, de Bonvoisin and Crozier had already met in February 1976 at the AESP's IX Chapter Assembly and would meet again in

November that year at the CEDI Congress. Bearing in mind that SDRA Commissioner Fagnart's 1978 letter, quoted in full below, warned Bougerol "we could imagine another danger [...] if there was a leak about the Saud affair or the affairs concerning Formosa, Spain or the UK", it would be interesting to know what Bougerol was up to in the UK. The AESP also provided Bougerol with a host for his visit to Italy the same year: Ivan Matteo Lombardo (257), present at the Parco dei Principi birth of the strategy of tension in 1965, a member of the AESP since 1970 and implicated in the 1974 Sogno coup only two years earlier.

The mention of Formosa in SDRA Commissioner Fagnart's 1978 letter refers to another 1976 trip, this time to Taiwan for training in psychological warfare and counter-information. In this context, it is interesting to note that the Political Warfare Cadres Academy in Peitou (Taiwan), which trained counter-subversion forces for many of the Latin American death-squad states, had extremely close links to WACL which both prospected for business for the Academy and recruited WACL members from the ranks of Academy graduates (258). The Academy has in fact had the closest links with both WACL and the CIA since its foundation: the Academy co-founders were Chiang Kai Shek's son and **Ray S. Cline**, CIA Chief of Station in Taipei from 1958 to 1962. During this period, Cline was also a channel for financial and logistical support for the founding meeting in 1958 of the Asian Peoples' Anti-Communist League (APACL), forerunner of WACL. Cline rose to become CIA Deputy Director of Intelligence from 1962 to 1966, and, after resigning from the CIA in 1969, served as Director of the Bureau of Intelligence and Research (INR) at the State Department, where he contributed considerably to the anti-Allende operations of 1973, the year which saw his official retirement from intelligence work. The interconnections between the Peitou Academy, WACL, the CIA, Cline and Bougerol seem all the more significant in the light of a reference by Cline in a 1992 BBC interview about Gladio to "the counter-insurgency training given to the Belgian Major Jean-Marie Bougerol and his men in the US" in the early 1970s (259).

Whatever Cline's possible links to Bougerol and PIO in the early 1970s, the CIA veteran and the PIO chief later shared a common friend who did much to help PIO - the American disinformationist of Belgian descent, **Arnaud de Borchgrave**. Arnaud, Comte de Borchgrave d'Altena, sixteenth in line to the Belgian throne, was the son of Baudouin de Borchgrave, head of Belgium's military intelligence service exiled in London during World War II who then served as Belgian Military Attaché in Washington from 1946 on (260). After war service in the British Navy, Arnaud de Borchgrave started his journalistic career in 1947 as Brussels bureau chief for United Press, also working as a correspondent of *Europe-Amérique*, forerunner of the *Nouvel Europe Magazine* subsidised by Bougerol's political master Benoît de Bonvoisin. In 1950, de Borchgrave joined *Newsweek* as its Paris bureau chief and stayed with the magazine for thirty years, serving as Senior Editor from 1953 on and starring as its chief international correspondent throughout the 1960s and 1970s. During this period, de Borchgrave played a key role in the genesis of PIO; as Bougerol recalled in an interview, it was de Borchgrave who, in the early 1970s, introduced Bougerol to PIO's future patron, Benoît de Bonvoisin. According to a May 1981 Sûreté report on de Bonvoisin's contacts in Paris, de Borchgrave also allegedly acted as an intermediary between de Bonvoisin and the CIA (261).

In the late 1970s, de Borchgrave was one of PIO's prized foreign press contacts; when PIO chartered a plane to fly journalists to the troubled Zairean province of Shaba in 1978, the plane had to wait on the tarmac for one late VIP - de Borchgrave. De Borchgrave subsequently filed reports for *Newsweek* alleging Cuban involvement in Shaba; Moss drew attention to de Borchgrave's *Newsweek* articles in a piece he wrote for the Heritage Foundation's *Policy Review* in its Summer 1978 issue (262)*. De Borchgrave and Moss were already longstanding friends; they had met in 1972 when de Borchgrave, in hiding in London after writing an article on Black September for *Newsweek*, asked to meet a specialist on subversion (263). The meeting heralded the beginning of a long partnership between the two men which reached its peak in the 1980s.

De Borchgrave also benefited from close contacts with SDECE chief Alexandre de Marenches, who, when asked where would be an interesting place to spend the Christmas of 1979, advised de Borchgrave to go to Afghanistan. De Borchgrave was one of the few Western journalists on the spot during the Soviet invasion (264). De Borchgrave was fired by *Newsweek* in 1980 after he was discovered to have been building files on his colleagues for several years. At the time, he was working with Robert Moss on the first of two notorious disinformation novels, *The Spike* and *Monimbo*, both heavily influenced by the veteran CIA Counter-Intelligence chief James Jesus Angleton and filled with plots of Soviet subversion launched with the assistance of the Sandinista government in Nicaragua and the complicity of left-wing journalists in Europe.

In 1985, de Borchgrave became editor-in-chief of the Moonies' newspaper, the *Washington Times*. The Unification Church was a forum for cooperation between de Borchgrave and Cline: Cline was on the Editorial Board of *The World and I*, the Moonies' monthly edited by de Borchgrave. De Borchgrave was a former Board member of the Moonies' US Global Strategy Council, chaired by Cline in the late 1980s. Cline and de Borchgrave also shared a platform with William Casey as speakers at a special conference series on intelligence held at the Ashbrook Center, Ohio in 1986, one of Casey's last public appearances before his death in May 1987. At this time, de Borchgrave was working with Moss and John Rees of the John Birch Society/Western Goals in Mid-Atlantic Research Associates (MARA) which produced a monthly private intelligence report called *Early Warning* (265)*.

To return to PIO, from the outset, Bougerol used his earlier contacts with the extreme Right for PIO operations. As part of his counter-subversion work, Bougerol gave lectures to reserve officers, many of whom were recruited as PIO agents. One of the reserve officers' clubs at which Bougerol lectured was the Brabant Reserve Officers' Club (BROC), which in 1975 was given the task of bolstering the patriotism of other reserve officers' clubs. BROC's members included not only AESP member Baron Bernard de Marcken de Merken and Colonel Paul Detrembleur, who helped set up the DSD and later headed the SDRA from 1981 to 1984 at the height of the strategy of tension in Belgium, but also **Paul Latinus**, the Belgian Delle Chiaie, protégé of de Bonvoisin. A former leader of the Front de la Jeunesse financed by de Bonvoisin, Latinus later emerged as commander of the fascist parallel intelligence service **Westland New Post** (WNP), a key component in Belgian parapolitics in the 1980s covered in detail in a later chapter. According to Sûreté sources, Latinus was recruited into PIO by Bougerol in 1977; in his limited testimony to the Belgian Parliament's Gladio Inquiry, Bougerol at least admitted having met Latinus (266).

Bougerol's contacts with the extreme Right also extended to de Bonvoisin's other protégé, veteran fascist putschist Emile Lecerf, editor of the *Nouvel Europe Magazine*, and to future WNP militant Michel Libert, who was introduced to Bougerol by Lecerf. Bougerol and Lecerf were not only personal friends; Bougerol also gave lectures on subversion to the NEM Clubs. These close links between de Bonvoisin's protégés Latinus and Lecerf and Bougerol's PIO are not surprising in the light of the considerable support given to Bougerol by de Bonvoisin, political advisor to Defence Minister VdB under whose jurisdiction PIO fell.

De Bonvoisin had already provided PIO with much of its logistic structure and played an ever-increasing part in the running of PIO in the late 1970s. PIO's civilian offices were located in the same building which housed CEPIC, the political ginger group run by VdB and de Bonvoisin; de Bonvoisin's company **PDG** was also housed at the same address and ensured the printing of the PIO press review *Inforep*. From 1976 onwards, PDG contributed more than a million Belgian francs a year to PIO, which received total external funding of some 600,000 Belgian francs a month. De Bonvoisin exerted increasing influence on PIO; by early 1980 the editorial team producing PIO's *Inforep* consisted of Emile Lecerf and Jacques Van den Bemden, drawn from the other PDG beneficiary, the neo-nazi magazine *Nouvel Europe Magazine*. The PIO/PDG operation was finally blown in May 1981 when the CEPIC/MAUE/PDG/PIO building was raided as a result of a Sûreté note about de Bonvoisin's patronage of fascist groups. It quickly became apparent that PIO's files had been transferred wholesale to PDG.

Apart from this funding of PIO by de Bonvoisin and the links that Bougerol had with Detrembleur and AESP member de Marcken within the reserve officers club BROC, Bougerol also had frequent direct contacts with the leadership of the AESP and the Cercle. The first trace we find of direct links between the AESP and Bougerol dates from February 1976 when Bougerol attended the IX Chapter Assembly of the AESP together with many of the Cercle's international contacts.

THE ACADEMY IN 1976

On 6th February 1976, the AESP held its XIX Grand Dîner Charlemagne in the Hotel Métropole in Brussels, before meeting the next day in the more private setting of the Cercle des Nations club for the IX Chapter Assembly of the AESP, devoted to the subject "After Helsinki" - the Helsinki Final Accord had been signed in July 1975. The attendance lists of these two events give us an overview of the Academy's contacts and of their preoccupations. Besides continuing its work on the theme of free movement of persons and ideas linked to the Helsinki Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe (CSCE), the Academy was a vocal advocate of the Doomsday message that the Third World War had already begun and was being lost by the West, passively submitting to a war of Soviet subversion corrupting the very pillars of Western civilisation. Under the title "Are we at war?", Damman's editorial on the front page of the January 1976 issue of the AESP/MAUE journal *Europe Information* which announced the Charlemagne Grand Dinner and the AESP Chapter Assembly opened with the words:

> "One would have to be blind not to notice that the Third World War is in full swing with a new weapon of extraordinary power, acting upon the spirit, the intellect and morale: subversion, slowly contaminating all sectors of society and all regions of the world, is gaining the upper hand because we refuse to confront it head on. All of our political parties including the Communist Party are infiltrated by the agents of Soviet imperialism which has never renounced its goal of world hegemony. The West is still unaware of the power of the subversive forces infiltrating every organisation under the most varied disguises, both in Europe and America and in the countries of the Third World. The Atlantic Alliance ignores this tactical weapon following an extraordinary reasoning which has led it since the end of the last World War to surrender on all fronts to Soviet imperialism [...] Soviet imperialism has in the Western camp a gigantic and ever-active organisation, skilfully structured to maintain anarchy and confusion where they are needed, studied in exact detail to confuse the mind and stoke antagonism. We have become puppets, and it is our enemies who pull the strings."

This apocalyptic vision of the West slowly being strangled by the invisible forces of Soviet subversion fits entirely with the philosophy of the intelligence-backed counter-subversion and disinformation operations of the day such as the ISC, the *Monde Moderne* and PIO, all three of which were represented at the 1976 XIXth Charlemagne Grand Dinner and the subsequent IX Chapter Assembly of the AESP: the list of participants includes Crozier from the ISC, Vigneau and Leguèbe from the *Monde Moderne*, and Benoît de Bonvoisin and "Major de Bougerolle" from PIO (267)*. This was the first of at least two occasions for the Cercle's counter-subversion propagandists to meet in 1976; as we will see in a subsequent chapter, the same people met again at the XXV CEDI Congress in November.

At the February AESP gathering, the Belgian Academy team was fully represented by Damman, de Merken, Jonet, Vankerkhoven and de Villegas. Also attending were three longstanding AESP members whom we have not yet met. **Vincent Van den Bosch** was another of Damman's key partners, a lawyer and Catholic activist who served as International Secretary-General of CEDI, a core AESP member on the Permanent Delegation, Secretary-General of Damman's MAUE and Administrator of the Cercle des Nations whose Vice-President was Vankerkhoven. **Bernard Mercier**, an Academy member, served on the Board of the conservative ginger group CEPIC alongside de Bonvoisin, de Kerchove and AESP members Vanden Boeynants and Vankerkhoven; he worked in the cabinet of several PSC ministers. **Jean-Paul R. Preumont** was Deputy Secretary-General of Damman's MAUE under Van den Bosch, and Secretary-General of the **Collège des Jeunes Dirigeants Europeens** [CJDE, College of Young European Leaders], an AESP youth offshoot. Preumont had been involved with Damman since at least July 1974, when he had attended the XXIII CEDI Congress along with Habsburg, Sánchez Bella, Huyn, Damman, Jonet, Vankerkhoven and Marcken de Merken (268).

Although Jean Violet himself was not present, most of his closest associates from France were in attendance: Collet, Vallet, Father Dubois and Picard of Wilton Park. The Academy's German members, Dumont du Voitel and Merkatz, were there, bringing along the CDU Vice-President of the Bundestag, **Kai-Uwe von Hassel**, who had served as the CDU's Deputy Chairman from 1956 to 1969 and had been Regional Prime Minister for Schleswig-Holstein from 1954 to 1963. Following the 1962 *Spiegel* Affair, Hassel replaced the disgraced Strauß as Defence Minister in 1963, a post he held until 1966 when he was appointed Minister for Expellees, Refugees and War Victims in the Grand Coalition Cabinet in which Strauß was Finance Minister. In 1969, Hassel replaced Eugen Gerstenmaier as President of the Bundestag, serving until the SPD's victory in 1972 when he became CDU Vice-President of the Parliament, a post he filled until 1976. He remained a CDU MP until 1980. Hassel also represented Germany in the Parliamentary Assembly of the CoE from 1977 to 1981. The roll-call of core Academy members was brought to a close by Pons of the PEU and Sánchez Bella of CEDI.

However, it is the Italian connections of the AESP that are the most fascinating. The former high-ranking P2 member **Giancarlo Elia Valori** attended both the Charlemagne Grand Dinner and the AESP Chapter Assembly; he became a member of the AESP's organising core, the Permanent Delegation, the following year. His presence is particularly interesting in the light of the allegations concerning P7 - two of the Academy members allegedly involved in P7, Pons and Töttösy, were also at these meetings with Valori. Valori's attendance at Academy events from 1972 on also points to possible connections between the sniffer plane scandal and P2. Most of the key members in the sniffer plane negotiations were present at the 1976 Grand Dîner and Chapter Assembly with Valori: de Villegas, Father Dubois and Vallet. Vallet and de Villegas joined Valori on the AESP Permanent Delegation by 1977. At the time of these February 1976 AESP events, final agreements were being reached with Elf; the contract between de Villegas' Fisalma and Elf was signed at the end of May, saving the Cercle Pinay complex from financial ruin, as described in the next chapter.

Valori and Lombardo already provided the AESP with high-level contacts to P2 and the group involved in the 1974 Sogno coup. A new face at the February gathering strengthened the Academy's links to Italian politics and to the Sogno coup: former Minister **Giovanni Malagodi**, a participant with Pinay at the Bilderbergers' inaugural conference in May 1954; Malagodi later attended the Bilderberg conferences in 1957 (again with Pinay), in 1958 and in 1965 (269). Sogno had fought Communism during the war as a contact of the British secret service; in 1953, he was one of the founders of the Italian section of Paix et Liberté, the virulently anti-communist Vatican-backed propaganda group whose Belgian section was run by the Chevalier de Roover (270).

Both President of the Liberal International and President of the Italian Liberal Party PLI, Malagodi was an influential member of the PLI's Sogno faction in 1974 when Sogno, a future member of P2, was insisting that a coup of "liberal" inspiration was necessary to save Italy from Communism. The "liberal coup" that Sogno proposed was scheduled for August 1974 and included the capture of the Presidential Palace, the dissolution of Parliament and the nomination of a government of technocrats, but the plan was aborted shortly beforehand.

Despite the failure of their plan, the Sogno fraction continued to insist that the rise of Communism threatened the very basis of the Italian State. One month after the planned Sogno coup, in September 1974, Malagodi participated in the 7th Study Conference of the PLI's youth group along with fellow Bilderberger and PLI Senator **Manlio Brosio**, from 1964 to 1971 the Secretary-General of NATO who had previously served in de Gasperi's first post-war coalition as Defence Minister responsible for the re-organisation of the Italian intelligence community and the establishment of SIFAR (271)*. At the September 1974 conference, Brosio declared that only communism - and not fascism - presented an immediate danger to stability in Italy.

The judicial inquiry into the Sogno coup was blocked in November 1974 by the death of the main witness, secret service Colonel Giuseppe Condo. Condo, aged 42, died of a "heart attack" a week before magistrates were due to question him. Sogno and one of his co-conspirators were arrested on charges of attempting a coup d'état in 1976, but this second inquiry failed to get to the bottom of the coup plans because of the State secrecy imposed on documents showing foreign support for Sogno's plans (272).

CASH CRISIS AND THE SNIFFER PLANES

In the midst of such international networking, the Cercle Pinay went through a severe financial crisis. The main source of funding for the Cercle had been Carlo Pesenti, who had also financed the launch of de Villegas' sniffer plane project. However, following the 1972 acquisition of a one-third stake in Italcementi by P2 financier Michele Sindona, Pesenti was forced to borrow from his own banks to hold off the threat of a take-over. Pesenti's straitened finances obliged him to make drastic cuts in his funding of Violet. Pesenti was ultimately able to beat back Sindona's offensive with the help of Philippe de Weck, Director of UBS Zürich and administrator of de Villegas' sniffer plane company Fisalma, but his assistance triggered an investigation by the Bank of Italy: "the inspectors went through the books of the banks of Pesenti, exposing the dubious means by which he had extricated himself from Sindona's grip" (273).

This was not the first time Pesenti had been raided by Sindona; Sindona's 1968 attempt to take over Pesenti's empire permanently weakened Pesenti's finances. Obliged to borrow money from his own three banks to buy Sindona out, Pesenti was later forced to sell off those banks one by one to settle his debts, as well as selling the lossmaking Lancia car company to the Fiat Group in 1969. Pesenti also shored up his indebted Italmobiliare group by substantial borrowings from Banco Ambrosiano and its various Italian offshoots, secured by large blocks of shares in companies controlled by Pesenti. Another of Pesenti's suspect dealings later to be investigated was "a curious 50 billion lire loan granted to Pesenti in 1972 - apparently by the IOR - and indexed to the Swiss franc. The latter's appreciation meant that the sum eventually reimbursed was 185 billion lire. A decade after that loan was signed, magistrates in Milan were still unsure whether the Vatican Bank had excogitated a brilliant deal, or whether it had acted as a 'fiduciary' once more, this time for an irregular capital export by Pesenti" (274). Pesenti used the loan capital to buy shares from Roberto Calvi, head of the Banco Ambrosiano, but kept the loan off Italmobiliare's books until 1979 when it fell due. This led some Italmobiliare shareholders to challenge the very existence of the loan, believing that Pesenti was under pressure to pay the vast sum to IOR for other unspecified reasons. The case wound up in court but was not resolved before Pesenti's death in September 1984 (275)*.

Following Sindona's attack on Pesenti's financial empire and Pesenti's reduction of funds to the Cercle, the Cercle went through a disastrous cash crisis, above all in the light of the ambitious scope of its operations. Violet's cassette message to Damman of 31st March 1976 was so serious that, despite specific instructions to the contrary, Damman transcribed it in full:

> "Considerable financial difficulties mainly due to the storm on the lira. The situation that has arisen has led to people cancelling their contributions,

> having to submit to a *fait accompli*.
>
> Closure of the Centre du Monde Moderne and probably of the *Bulletin de Paris*.
>
> With these limited means, the keystone to any action is money. I will devote myself to setting up structures of financial groups so as to essentially develop the Academy and all that revolves around it, as well as the London group [the ISC], and set up Edicercle on a serious basis, and launch the Bible-prisoners operation on that basis [...] we will ensure the vital minimum for the Academy which is a priority" (276)*.

On 16th April, Damman received another cassette from Violet, which this time he only partially transcribed: "Search for backers in progress. Meeting in Paris end of May/beginning of June" (277). The timing and the mention of backers allows us to make an almost certain connection to the negotiations taking place between Elf, the French state oil company, and Fisalma, the sniffer plane company set up by de Villegas, represented by de Weck of UBS and assisted by Violet. Elf had been testing the sniffer planes for some time and was now interested in acquiring exclusive rights over the invention. At the meetings with Elf, de Villegas was accompanied by the "inner circle" of Pinay members: not only Violet, but also Pinay himself and Father Dubois frequently participated. The contract between Elf and Fisalma was signed on 29th May 1976, and the meeting between Valéry Giscard d'Estaing, Elf President Pierre Guillaumat, and Pinay, representing Violet, was held on 2nd June.

For exclusive rights over the invention for a period of one year, Elf undertook to make four quarterly payments of 50 million Swiss francs to Fisalma, the first scheduled for 15th June, the second for 15th October. The Cercle's financial situation dramatically improved after the key discussion between Pinay and the French President. On 8th October, Violet sent another cassette to Damman, this time much more optimistic about funding for the AESP: "Good perspectives for 1977. The President [Antoine Pinay] and a group of friends. Essential resources. Modifications to means." Damman replied to the good news from Violet on 13th October: "I was very happy to receive your cassette message guaranteeing funding for the Academy for 1977 [...] my warmest thanks for the essential minimum you have provided us with, we will do the rest" (278).

THE FOREIGN AFFAIRS RESEARCH INSTITUTE

Shortly after attending the Academy's Grand Dinner and Chapter Assembly in Brussels in February 1976, Brian Crozier launched a regrouping of British Cercle friends, the **Foreign Affairs Research Institute** (279)*. The new South African-funded geopolitical institute brought together under one roof the disinformation assets of the ISC and top Conservative politicians in the Thatcherite NAFF and SIF who had worked with BOSS to oppose demonstrations against sporting links with South Africa. FARI was the British-based counterpart to the Centre d'Etudes du Monde Moderne, the Cercle's Parisian pro-Pretoria outfit. As had been the case with the Centre d'Etudes du Monde Moderne, it was the South Africans who footed the bill for FARI, providing £85,000 a year for several years; South Africa continued to finance FARI until at least 1981 (280)*. Funding for FARI was reportedly also forthcoming from the Lockheed and General Dynamics corporations.

In terms of personalities, FARI represented a coming together of Crozier's NAFF and ISC with Stewart-Smith's Foreign Affairs Circle and Foreign Affairs Publishing Company; FARI continued publication of Stewart-Smith's previous fortnightly bulletin *East-West Digest*, distributed free to all British MPs, and cooperation with the FAPC's foreign associates, notably Interdoc and Dr. Peter Sager's Swiss SOI (281).

The President of FARI was veteran Bilderberger Sir Frederic Bennett, a member of SIF and NAFF. The FARI Director was Geoffrey Stewart-Smith; the Deputy Director was Ian Greig, co-founder of the Monday Club, Chairman of its Subversion Committee and probable contact of Damman since 1973. On the Council of FARI we find the inseparable duo of Crozier and Moss of the ISC, NAFF and Shield, who brought along **Air Vice-Marshal Stewart Menaul**, an ISC Council member who became a FARI mainstay. Having served as Senior Air Staff Officer, HQ Bomber Command (then in charge of British nuclear weapons) from 1961 to 1965, Menaul went on to become the Commandant of the Joint Services Staff College and Director General of the influential thinktank, the Royal United Services Institute (RUSI), from 1968 to 1976 – a critical timespan in British politics. Besides joining the ISC Council, Menaul had also provided the ISC with their first registered address in the premises of the RUSI. Another member of the FARI Council alongside the ISC team of Crozier, Moss and Menaul was Michael Ivens of Aims, SIF and NAFF.

The political support FARI enjoyed is illustrated by the Council membership of four top Conservatives whom we have met before – Thatcher's leadership campaign manager and Shadow Minister for Northern Ireland Airey Neave and his deputy John Biggs-Davison of SIF and NAFF, at this time Chairman of the Monday Club, as well as future Cercle Chairman Julian Amery and Lord Chalfont. Another member of the FARI Council was **Colonel Ronnie Waring**, lecturer in counter-insurgency at the Royal Defence College and an associate of G. K. Young within Unison (282)*.

Major propaganda themes for FARI were to be the West's dependence on strategic minerals from South Africa and the country's significance for defence of the Cape oil route in the face of rising Soviet naval power in the Indian Ocean and Soviet encroachment in Mozambique, Angola and Namibia. In June 1976, Peter Janke visited Swaziland to speak at a mining conference organised by a South African Department of Information front group, the Foreign Affairs Association. At the conference, "Janke of the Institute of the Study of Conflict in London stressed the importance of South Africa's minerals to the West and dangers of the Soviet threat"; on his return to London, Janke prepared an edited version of the conference speeches for distribution to "persons of influence", published by FARI as *The West cannot survive without minerals from Southern Africa* (283). The same theme was echoed by Grau's Frankfurt Study Group, which published a brochure called *Südafrikas strategische Bedeutung für die Rohstoffversorgung des Westens* [South Africa's Strategic Significance for the West's Supply of Commodities], stating:

> "The cutting-off of contacts between South Africa and the industrialised countries of the West as the result of a Soviet Navy blockade or as a result of the fall of the current South African government and its replacement by a Communist or Communist-influenced government would leave the West entirely defenceless" (284).

Working in partnership with FARI, the ISC continued their campaign in favour of South Africa with a total ISC budget for 1976 of over £30,000. July 1976 saw the publication of a Conflict Study by Janke, *Southern Africa: New Horizons*, followed in November by another Conflict Study, *Soviet Strategic Penetration of Africa* by David Rees. Further projects to support South Africa included a June 1976 interview with FARI Council member Lord Chalfont on the Cape oil route in the Pretoria-funded Dutch magazine *To The Point* and a 1976 South African television "documentary", *The Angolan File*, which attacked the Americans for pulling out of Angola. The programme, broadcast on South African television, had been produced by the South African Military Intelligence Division (MID), who had commissioned Crozier of the ISC/FARI to write the script (285).

Besides its defence of apartheid, FARI was also active in domestic politics in the UK, one of the major propaganda themes being the laxity of the Labour government in dealing with a "Soviet-dominated" IRA. On three occasions between August and September 1976, the two Conservative spokesmen for Northern Ireland, Neave and Biggs-Davison, both FARI Council members, used IRD disinformation to attack the "failure" of the Labour government to combat the "Czech and Cuban agents stoking revolution in Northern Ireland". The source of this disinformation was Colin Wallace of the Information Policy Unit in Northern Ireland. In 1974-75, Infpol was being pressured by MI5, rival to MI6 for control of the province, to go beyond black propaganda against the IRA and to turn its disinformation capability to the themes of KGB penetration of the Labour Party and Soviet manipulation of the IRA.

As mentioned above, in 1974 Wallace was tasked by MI5 to produce defamatory documents for press release on the basis of smears and analyses of political, sexual and financial vulnerabilities of several dozen Westminster MPs. When Wallace refused to participate in this operation codenamed Clockwork Orange 2 without guarantees of ministerial approval, MI5 arranged for his removal from the province and his dismissal from the Civil Service, a fate that befell other actors in the secret war who would not toe the MI5 line. With a broken career behind him, Wallace did not refuse when in 1976 Neave, Shadow Minister for Northern Ireland, proposed that Wallace work for him as a consultant. Part of Wallace's work consisted in providing the Neave-Biggs-Davison team with the information that Wallace had collated on Soviet subversion in Northern Ireland. Wallace has given the Press a letter addressed to him from Neave, written in August 1976, in which Neave asked specifically for a report that Wallace had prepared for Infpol, *Ulster - a State of Subversion*. This document by Wallace was based on a unattributable IRD Press briefing called *Soviets Increase Control Over British Communists*. Neave then recycled the report's main allegations of Soviet subversion in Northern Ireland and KGB penetration of the Parliamentary Labour Party in a speech given in August. A few days later, FARI published a brochure written by Neave's deputy Biggs-Davison entitled *The strategic implications for the West of the international links of the IRA in Ireland*. The brochure was also based on the unattributable IRD briefing and made the same references to the alleged laxity of the Labour government in dealing with Soviet subversion in Northern Ireland. Neave repeated the allegations in a second speech on 11th September, and the same theme of Soviet manipulation of the IRA was featured in a Conservative Party Position Paper on Northern Ireland published later the same month (286).

THE MADRID MEETING

Two months later, on 25th - 28th November 1976, CEDI held its XXV International Congress in Madrid, a second international gathering of Cercle contacts after the February Chapter Assembly of the AESP described above. The Madrid meeting brought together most of the major characters we have met so far. Presiding over the Congress was Archduke Otto von Habsburg, assisted by two familiar faces: Alfredo Sánchez Bella and Hans-Joachim von Merkatz. The conference participants came from all over the world, showing the kind of international outreach CEDI and the Cercle enjoyed; besides more than one hundred Spanish delegates, some 120 foreign guests from Europe, America and South Africa gathered in Madrid.

Despite such broad participation, the 1976 CEDI Congress was for the first time given scant mention by the Spanish media in contrast to the lavish coverage of earlier years; a mere ten lines in one newspaper briefly announced the Congress and its speakers "Brian Crozier, Arvid Fredborg, Fourie, Gómez Hurtado and Otto von Habsburg" (287). This reticence was no doubt due to the sensitive political climate in Spain in late 1976 at a time when the Cercle's trio of former Franco ministers had just launched their Alianza Popular coalition; the fawning exposure previously given to CEDI under Franco could now compromise their electoral chances. Fortunately, despite this dearth of reporting, both the full list of participants and the programme of the 1976 CEDI Congress have been published, and give unprecedented insight into the complex's international contacts.

Of the groups previously mentioned, the CEDI Congress brought together the Cercle, the AESP/MAUE and PIO from Belgium, *Le Monde Moderne* from France, the ISC, Shield and FARI from Britain, the USCISC from the US, the major Portuguese figurehead for a right-wing coup against the government elected in April, election candidates from Spain supported by the Cercle, and senior South African diplomats - a true reunion of the international Right and their friends with intelligence links.

From Belgium came the Secretary-General of both CEDI and MAUE Vincent van den Bosch and his colleagues within the core of AESP/MAUE organisers: Florimond Damman, Damman's deputy and later whistle-blower Aldo-Michel Mungo, CEPIC President Paul Vankerkhoven, Jacques Jonet and MAUE Deputy Secretary-General Jean-Paul R. Preumont. The most significant new face from Belgium attending a CEDI Congress for the first time - according to the documents at our disposal - was **Baron Benoît de Bonvoisin**, who, as at the February AESP Chapter Assembly, was accompanied by Major Bougerol, described in the participants' list as Head of the Public Information Office of the Army General Staff. At this time of course, PIO was in full swing; Bougerol had just completed his European tour, visiting AESP contacts and gathering experience in counter-subversion for use in PIO's Belgian operations. Bougerol's visit to Madrid was sensitive - in his 1978 letter to Bougerol warning him of the growing hostility in official circles to PIO's wide-ranging missions, Commissioner Fagnart of the Belgian military security service specifically mentioned the dangers of a leak concerning four dubious operations: the "Saud affair" and Bougerol's visits to Formosa, the UK and Spain.

Bougerol came to the Madrid Congress in the company of CEPIC Senator Angèle Verdin and CEPIC Board member Bernard Mercier; the latter had also attended the February Chapter Assembly. Along with fellow CEPIC members Vankerkhoven and de Bonvoisin, Mercier was also implicated in the funding of the fascist NEM Clubs and the Front de la Jeunesse in the 1980s. Before arriving in Madrid, Bougerol, Mercier and Verdin had stopped off to pay their respects at the grave of the recently-deceased Caudillo Franco; Mercier wore a black shirt for the occasion.

A final important member of the Belgian delegation was Ernest Töttösy, the Hungarian WACL leader who, as we will see, was later accused of being a member of P7, a covert CIA funding channel for Gelli's P2 lodge. Also present at the CEDI Congress was another alleged member of P7, the PEU International Secretary-General, Vittorio Pons from Lausanne. Pons was already increasing contact with the ISC at this stage: in September 1977, the ISC published a Conflict Study written by Pons, *The Long-term Strategy of Italy's Communists.*

Ten Britons attended the CEDI Congress, four of whom were members of the Cercle Pinay itself. The first three were the key FARI Board members Crozier, Moss and Amery, who was accompanied by his former colleague in SOE's Albanian operations, Lord St Oswald (288)*. FARI had cause for celebration: the counter-subversion lobby's campaign against Harold Wilson had finally borne fruit in mid-March that year, when Wilson tendered his resignation and was succeeded by James Callaghan.

The CEDI Congress also offered Crozier and Moss a second opportunity that year to meet the PIO team of Bougerol and de Bonvoisin. Bougerol had visited the UK earlier in the year and most probably also met Crozier and Moss then; if so, Commissioner Fagnart's 1978 warning to Bougerol about "the affair concerning the UK" is intriguing. Whatever the truth about possible FARI/PIO collaboration, Moss could reminisce with de Bonvoisin and Bougerol about a common friend, Arnaud de Borchgrave, who by 1976 was a prized PIO contact on the staff of *Newsweek*. Bougerol was no doubt keen to add Moss to his PIO Press list; as editor of the *Economist Foreign Report*, Moss would be a powerful relay for PIO's output.

Apart from Crozier, Moss and Amery, the fourth British Cercle member to attend the CEDI Congress was banker **Sir Peter Tennant** who, as Crozier records, shared the chairmanship of Cercle meetings with himself, Amery and Pesenti (289). Tennant had been one of the earliest members of SOE, recruited in 1940 by Sir Charles Hambro, a later head of SOE in 1942-43. Tennant headed SOE in Sweden under the cover of Press Attaché at the British Embassy in Stockholm during the war before being sent as an Information Counsellor to the British Embassy in Paris from 1945 to 1950, where he probably had contacts with Antoine Pinay, soon to become French Premier. Tennant then served as Deputy Commandant of the British Sector in Berlin from 1950 to 1952 before occupying various senior posts in the Federation and later Confederation of British Industry, acting as Director-General of the British National Export Council from 1965 to 1971. At the time of this 1976 CEDI Congress, Tennant was President of the London Chamber of Commerce and Industry and a longstanding advisor to Barclays' bank (290)*.

Besides Amery, two other Conservative MPs from the Monday Club attended the 1976 CEDI Congress. The first was **Sir Peter Agnew**, who sat in Parliament continuously from 1931 to 1966 (except for 1950-55) before rising to serve as Conservative Party Secretary in 1975. Agnew had attended CEDI Congresses since at least 1960 and had sat on CEDI's Steering Committee since at least 1972; this Congress was the last in his two-year mandate as CEDI International President.

The second Monday Clubber was **Sir John Rodgers**, an MP from 1950 to 1979 and a CEDI regular since at least 1963, serving as CEDI International President in 1965-67 and sitting as ex officio CEDI Vice-President since 1974. The leader of the British Conservatives in the Council of Europe, Rodgers had recently been involved in supporting one of the Cercle's three post-Franco election candidates, Federico Silva Muñoz; he attended Silva Muñoz's UDE National Assembly in February 1976. After the three former Franco ministers joined forces in October 1976 within the Alianza Popular coalition, Rodgers attended its Constituent Congress held in March 1977. Within the UK, Rodgers had been President of SIF from 1970 on alongside National Executive members Biggs-Davison, Bennett and G. K. Young. At the time of this November 1976 Congress, Rodgers was the Vice-President of the General Affairs Committee of the Western European Union; the Committee's rapporteur was Bennett, the President of FARI who was working closely with Young as parliamentary coordinator of Unison. By 1977, Rodgers and his fellow Congress participant Agnew joined Biggs-Davison as AESP Life Members.

From France came the Cercle core: Antoine Pinay himself, accompanied by Violet, Vallet and Father Dubois. Also attending was René-Louis Picard, whom we have previously met as President of the International Society of Wilton Park. A Swiss section of Wilton Park had been set up earlier in 1976 and an Italian branch was founded the following year. In 1978, Picard joined with three of the other 1976 CEDI Congress participants - Violet, Sánchez Bella and Jacques Jonet - to set up CLEW, the European Liaison Committee of Associations and Friends of Wilton Park.

The editorial team of the *Monde Moderne*, Jean Vigneau and Jacques Leguèbe, were also present at the 1976 CEDI Congress, giving the South African-backed propaganda outfit another opportunity that year to confer with their British sister organisation FARI, represented by its three Board members Crozier, Moss and Amery. As we have seen, the *Monde Moderne* team had already met Crozier in early 1976 at the AESP's Charlemagne Grand Dinner and Chapter Assembly when the PIO duo of de Bonvoisin and Bougerol were also in attendance. At the November Congress, the *Monde Moderne* team and the FARI group could also talk directly to their South African paymasters: amongst the prominent diplomats at the CEDI Congress were the South African Secretary of Foreign Affairs **Brand (Bernardus Gerhardus) Fourie**, South African Ambassador to the UN in Geneva from 1971 to 1978 **Harold (Langmead Taylor) Taswell**, previously Ambassador to the US from 1965 to 1971, and Mr. Hating, a South African diplomat in France in charge of Cercle-Pretoria coordination since 1975.

A final and eminent member of the French delegation was the French-born American **Ridgway B. Knight**, since 1973 the Paris-based Director of International Relations of the Chase Manhattan Bank and David Rockefeller's principal advisor on European affairs. The CEDI participants' list did not however detail Knight's extensive previous career as an American diplomat. Having spent four years from 1946 onwards as Special Assistant to the US Ambassador in Paris with responsibility for liaising with the French political parties, Knight returned to Washington in 1950 to handle Western European affairs, NATO and the budding European movement at the State Department. In the mid- to late 1950s, he served at SHAPE in Paris as the political advisor to NATO SACEUR General Gruenther (one of Violet's contacts) and his successor General Norstad before returning to Washington to work as Deputy

Director of the Operations Coordinating Board, an Eisenhower-era inter-agency body coordinating national security policy which had replaced the Psychological Strategy Board in 1953 and was abolished by Kennedy in 1961. After a posting as Ambassador to Syria from 1962 to 1965, Knight served as Ambassador to Belgium from June 1965 to April 1969, when he had to contend both with the Congo after Mobutu's coup d'état in November 1965 and with France's ejection of NATO headquarters and its resettlement in Belgium in 1966-67. Knight's tour of duty in Brussels also encompassed the December 1967 creation of the Belgian section of LIL by Vankerkhoven, Damman and their associates; throughout 1968, they were preparing the launch of the AESP in January 1969 and the Cercle des Nations in April 1969, events that Knight must have followed, bearing in mind the considerable political support they enjoyed. Knight's diplomatic career then concluded with another significant posting as Nixon's Ambassador to Portugal from July 1969 to February 1973 with a particular focus on the situations in Angola and Mozambique – as we will see below, the Portuguese participants at this CEDI Congress included the former Commander-in-Chief of Portuguese Forces in Mozambique and the leader of the Portuguese colonists in that country, key figureheads for a potential right-wing coup against the minority Socialist government elected in April 1976.

The Cercle's representation would, of course, not have been complete without the core members from Germany. We have already noted the presence of Otto von Habsburg and Hans-Joachim von Merkatz as Chairmen of the Congress; also attending was Strauß's right-hand man in the Cercle, Count Hans Huyn. The 1976 Congress therefore again brought together the Cercle's operational triumvirate - Violet, Crozier and Huyn. Another future "leading German member of the Cercle" at the 1976 CEDI Congress was **Franz Josef Bach**. A qualified engineer, Bach later studied political science at the University of Virginia in 1949 before attending the German Diplomatic Service school in 1950-51, being posted to Sydney from 1951 to 1954 and to Washington from 1954 to 1957. After returning to Germany, he filled the posts of Head of Foreign Office Affairs in the Chancellor's Office in 1957 and ministerial advisor in 1958 before running Adenauer's private office from 1959 to 1961. Returning to foreign duty, Bach served as General Consul in Hong Kong until 1964 when he was posted to Teheran as German Ambassador until 1968. Between 1969 and 1972, Bach then represented Aachen – Charlemagne's city - as a CDU MP in the Bundestag. In 1975, a year before this CEDI Congress, Bach had been interviewed by Senator Church's committee investigating bribes paid by aviation manufacturer Northrop. By the late 1970s, Bach worked closely with Crozier in taking over the practical organisation of Cercle meetings from Jean Violet (291)*.

Three other Germans of note attended the 1976 CEDI Congress. The most prominent was **Dr. Richard Jaeger**, a member of Hitler's SA from 1933 on (292)*. After the war, Jaeger sat as a CSU MP in the Bundestag from 1949 to 1980, serving as Chairman of the Parliamentary Defence Committee from 1953 to 1961 (Strauß was Defence Minister from 1956 to 1962) and Vice-President of the Bundestag continuously from 1953 to 1976 apart from a brief post as Justice Minister from 1965 to 1966. Jaeger also provided access to the Council of Europe, sitting in the Parliamentary Assembly of the CoE from 1958 to 1966. As for CEDI, Jaeger had been a member since at least 1959, acted as a co-founder of the revamped CEDI German section CEDI Deutschland in 1972 and served as CEDI President from 1972 to 1974. From 1957 until 1990, he was President of the German Atlantic Association; in early 1984, he was appointed leader of the German delegation on the UN Human Rights Commission. Another top CSU politician at the CEDI Congress was **Dr. Fritz Pirkl**, Bavarian Secretary of State for Labour from 1964 to 1966, then Bavarian Labour Minister until 1984; Pirkl also occupied the key position of Chairman of the CSU's Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung from its creation in 1967 until his death in 1993. The third German was **Major-General Heinz Hükelheim** from Cologne who had an interesting early connection with the Belgian Gladio network; as a colonel in the German military security service, the **Militärischer Abschirmdienst** (MAD), in the 1950s, Hükelheim had been the German partner of André Moyen (293)*.

Another German-speaking participant of note at the 1976 CEDI Congress was **Alfons Tomicic-Dalma**, Director of News and Information for Austrian radio and television (ÖRF), who had attended CEDI Congresses since at least 1955 (when he was Chief Editor of the *Münchner Merkur*) and who had represented Austria on CEDI's International Council since at least 1972. Dalma may have discussed the Washington ISC with Schmidt at the CEDI Congress. Dalma had met two USCISC members one month after the USCISC's foundation in March 1975, when he attended the April 1975 Bilderberg conference in Cesme, Turkey, with George Ball and Zbigniew Brzezinski of the USCISC, Sir Frederic Bennett of NAFF and future President of FARI, and two Cercle beneficiaries, Franz Josef Strauß and Margaret Thatcher.

The Italian participants at the CEDI Congress were characterised by their links to the world of Catholic high finance. One Italian Congress participant we've met before was Carlo Pesenti of Italcementi and Italmobiliare, financer of Stefano Delle Chiaie, the Cercle, the AESP and the sniffer plane project. Accompanying Pesenti at the CEDI Congress was another Catholic financier, **Orazio Bagnasco**. Both Pesenti and Bagnasco were later central figures in the Banco Ambrosiano just before its collapse in 1982.

Amongst the hundred or so participants from Spain were three Cercle contacts. CEDI founder Alfredo Sánchez Bella was one of the co-chairs for the Congress; also attending was one of the Cercle-sponsored candidates in the Spanish elections, Cruz Martínez Esteruelas, President of the Unión Democrática del Pueblo Español, which had just joined Fraga Iribarne's Alianza Popular. The CEDI Congress was an opportunity for Martínez Esteruelas to meet Franz Josef Strauß's foreign policy representative, Hans Huyn; over the next twelve months, Strauß channelled some DM 100,000 to Martínez Esteruelas for his election campaigns.

Besides this German-Spanish axis, the French *Monde Moderne* team of Vigneau and Leguèbe also met an old friend, Colonel Juan Manuel Sancho Sofranis, a Spanish military representative at the 1974 Paris launch of the Centre d'Etudes du Monde Moderne.

The two Portuguese representatives attending the CEDI Congress had been central figures in Portugal's colonial wars in Africa, the first of whom was **Brigadier-General Kaúlza de Arriaga**. As Commander-in-Chief of Portuguese Forces in Mozambique from March 1970 to 1973, Arriaga had conducted Operation Gordian Knot, the most extensive counter-insurgency campaign ever undertaken in Portuguese Africa. During his spell in Mozambique, Arriaga had liaised closely with the second Portuguese participant at this 1976 CEDI Congress, millionaire and "former king of the Portuguese colonists" **Jorge Jardim**.

Jardim was the secret backer and leader of the Uniao Nacional Africana de Rombezia (UNAR), a splinter group from FRELIMO whose goal was to set up a buffer state between Tanzania and Zambese to block FRELIMO's advance - Jardim was closely linked to the 1969 assassination of FRELIMO's founder and first leader Eduardo Mondlane, killed by a parcel bomb. Together with leading counter-insurgency expert Captain Alpoim Calvao, later one of the commanders of the Aginter Presse/Spínola underground army ELP, Jardim had set up the Flechas in Mozambique, a "counter-gang" of black mercenaries under white leadership who operated from Jardim's estates on the Mozambique/Malawi border. After Machel's victory in Mozambique in June 1975, Jardim fled to Gabon and became a major source of finance for RENAMO, the Mozambican counter-revolutionary guerrilla force set up by the Rhodesian Central Intelligence Organisation. Besides his African operations, Jardim was also active on an international level to support Spínola's plans for a coup in Portugal, attending the SDECE's Sheraton Hotel conference for the putschists in September 1975. After Spínola's preparations for a coup were exposed just before the April 1976 elections, Jardim switched support to Arriaga who was now a key rallying point for the Right in Portugal. Having been imprisoned in September 1974 for his involvement in a planned coup, Kaúlza de Arriaga was released in January 1976, regrouping his supporters within the far-right Movimento Independente para a Reconstruçao Nacional (MIRN) and campaigning throughout Portugal against the minority Socialist government under Prime Minister Soares (294)*.

Besides the Cercle's European contacts, the 1976 CEDI Congress also brought together several of their transatlantic allies; we have already met Rockefeller's representative, Ridgway B. Knight. Two other recently retired US Ambassadors also attended the Congress, the first of whom was the OSS veteran, NATO diplomat and Cercle member Adolph W. Schmidt who had served as Ambassador to Canada from September 1969 to January 1974. In March 1975, eighteen months before this CEDI

Congress, Schmidt had joined the US Committee of the ISC which aimed to set up Crozier's American offshoot, the Washington ISC. The same year, Schmidt had become a member of the Advisory Council of the NSIC, serving until at least 1985.

The second recently retired US Ambassador was **Henry J. Tasca** whose career had started at the American Embassy in Rome during the 1948 election campaign, later serving as Ambassador to Morocco in 1965-69. It was however his second ambassadorial posting that was to prove the most controversial – from January 1970 onwards, Tasca was Nixon's Ambassador in Athens during the junta of the Greek Colonels. His period of service encompassed the November 1973 overthrow of junta leader (and possible 1960s CEDI contact) Georgios Papadopoulos by his hardline deputy Dimitrios Ioannidis, Ioannidis's July 1974 coup against Cypriot President Archbishop Makarios, the swift Turkish invasion of the island and the subsequent fall of the Greek junta later that month. Tasca, known for his close links to the military junta, would not long survive it; his withdrawal as American Ambassador to Greece was announced in mid-August 1974. In 1976, Tasca gave secret sworn testimony to the House Intelligence Committee that the Greek KYP intelligence service had channelled funds to Nixon's election campaign in 1968. Tasca died in a car accident in 1979.

Another North American participant of note at the 1976 CEDI Congress was Crosby M. Kelly, a Cercle member from at least 1969 on and the public relations expert for the American aviation industry originally intended as a source of seed capital for the sniffer plane project. In January 1976, Kelly had been appointed Vice-President for Communications at Rockwell International, a major defence contractor and developer of the B-1 strategic nuclear bomber whose cancellation was promised by Jimmy Carter during the 1976 federal election campaign. Kelly ran into controversy one month after this CEDI Congress when he gave a press interview to the *Pittsburgh Post-Gazette* alleging that opponents of the B-1 programme were funded by the Soviet Union. When pressed for details, "Kelly offered no specific documentation for Soviet activity in the B1 controversy, but he said the Institute for the Study of Conflict in London supports his thesis in general." An action for libel against Rockwell and Kelly was upheld before being finally dismissed by the Supreme Court of Pennsylvania in December 1981 (295).

A final North American participant at the 1976 CEDI Congress was **Charles T. Mayer**, President of the Washington-based **Foreign Policy Discussion Group**, whose Vice-President was CIA veteran Kermit Roosevelt. The FPDG had previously organised a March 1973 dinner in honour of Habsburg, had invited Kissinger to speak in October 1974, and had hosted CIA Deputy Director Vernon Walters in March 1976. In 1989, Mayer was invited to a meeting of the Cercle, attending alongside Pinay, Amery, Crozier and Huyn, all present at the November 1976 CEDI Congress.

Latin America was also represented at this CEDI Congress, one participant being the Head of the Colombian Conservative Party, **Álvaro Gómez Hurtado**, son of Laureano Gómez Castro, the hardline conservative President of Colombia in 1950-51 who was overthrown in 1953. A Colombian Ambassador to Switzerland in 1947-48 and to Italy in 1953, Álvaro Gómez Hurtado had stood as Presidential candidate in April 1974; he later attended Cercle meetings in 1982 and 1985, described in the Postscript. Another Latin American present at the CEDI Congress was the Cercle's old friend, Brazilian magnate **Antonio Sanchez de Larragoiti**, the President of the SulAmérica insurance group, who had previously attended the July 1969 and December 1970 Cercle dinners in Washington minuted by Kissinger's staff.

This November CEDI Congress allows us to draw certain conclusions about the Cercle's operations. In 1976, there were two opportunities for the main Cercle propagandists to meet; the ISC/FARI team, the *Monde Moderne* staff and the PIO duo of de Bonvoisin and Bougerol all met at both the AESP Chapter Assembly in February and the CEDI Congress in November at a critical time for their respective operations.

Without being able to deduce any indication of mutual assistance, these meetings do indicate the close communication between the national groups that made up the Cercle complex. As Großmann reports (296), the 1976 CEDI Congress was held in conjunction with a meeting of the Cercle; many of the persons named on the 1976 CEDI participants' list were members of the Cercle rather than of CEDI. This meeting was also the last Annual Congress to be held by CEDI which slipped into decline as the post-Franco era dawned; the Cercle would however be recast, notably by its British members, closely connected to the new Conservative leader, Margaret Thatcher.

The few internal documents from the ISC, the AESP, the ISP and CEDI that are available can only afford a glimpse of their international networking. Despite the scarcity of documents from other years, there can be no doubt that this coalition of top right-wing politicians and covert operators held meetings several times a year throughout the 1970s. This glimpse in 1976, another in 1977, a third in 1979-1980 and a fourth in 1982-85 may be fragmentary, but they certainly show only the tip of the iceberg.

1977 -1980
ELECTION FEVER

THE CERCLE IN 1977

Following the description of international cooperation afforded by the list of participants at the November 1976 CEDI-Cercle meeting, further evidence of collaboration between Cercle members in 1977 emerges from statements published by Cercle researchers Großmann, van der Reijden and van Vuuren taken together with an examination of declassified State Department cables.

The Cercle held two meetings in 1977, in May at the HSS conference centre in Wildbad Kreuth, and then in November in Washington. Fortunately, the subjects and, to some extent, the participants at these meetings are known. In particular, the May 1977 meeting is described in a report written a month after the meeting by South African UN Ambassador Harold Taswell (297), who had attended Cercle meetings since 1974 (298). As the full document is available online, we can dispense with a lengthy description of the Cercle's view of world affairs in early 1977, except to note one subject of pressing concern which was the fate of Portugal and its minority Socialist government under Prime Minister Soares.

Soares was being challenged by the far-right Movimento Independente para a Reconstruçao Nacional (MIRN) led by former Chief of Portuguese Forces in Mozambique General Kaúlza de Arriaga, a Cercle guest at their November 1976 meeting. The concern at the rise to prominence of this military figure led the American Ambassador in Lisbon, Frank Carlucci (later to become Deputy Director of the CIA under Carter and National Security Advisor and Secretary of Defense under Reagan), to send a now declassified State Department cable 1977LISBON01147 on 10th February 1977:

> "Kaulza is far rightist disguised as democrat. Caetano used to refer to Kaulza as the danger on the Right. Although he has no significant current backing in military, Kaulza is dangerous. He has the potential for catalyzing public support" (299).

Großmann records that Kaúlza de Arriaga attended the May 1977 meeting of the Cercle hosted by Strauß in Bavaria, a meeting also attended by Fraga and Silva Muñoz (300). Taswell refers to the hectic campaigning conducted by Kaúlza de Arriaga against the minority Socialist government in Portugal in his report:

> "A Portuguese, who formerly held a position of importance in Portugal, described the situation in that country as precarious. Only about 3% of the

> present Cabinet Ministers could be described as competent. The Socialists, though technically in power, do not have real authority in Portugal. They are in fact just a camouflage for the Communists. If the Socialists are able to remain in office, the Communists will eventually be in full charge of the country" (301).

Taswell also reports that the British delegation at the Cercle meeting had considerably increased, and counted "one member of the House of Lords and two members of the House of Commons" (302). An 18th May 1977 letter from Brian Crozier to Margaret Thatcher, kindly provided by Hervé Beghinselen, specifies that he, Amery and Hastings attended this Cercle meeting in Wildbad Kreuth:

> "I have just returned from a conference near Munich, in which the participants also included Julian Amery and Stephen Hastings. We were guests of Dr. Strauss. In small, informal talks (but not in the main conference), suggestions were made that it would be very desirable for you to meet Strauss, Chirac and Fraga" (303).

To return to Arriaga, the support for him was considerably boosted in November that year when Arriaga visited the United States (for the autumn 1977 Cercle meeting), claiming to have met Henry Kissinger and Zbigniew Brzezinski, which, if true, implied high-level American backing for his virulent campaign against the Portuguese government. Carlucci nervously sent cable 1977LISBON08893 of 18th November 1977:

> "Ultra-rightist General Kaulza de Arriaga held press conference on his return from US in which he claimed he lunched with Henry Kissinger and dined with NSC Director Zbigniew Brzezinski. Given the tension here at the moment, the concern over possible right wing coups, and the widespread belief that Kaulza is one of the potential coup plotters, Embassy expects to receive a number of questions on the alleged lunch and dinner. Request ASAP any information Department can provide. Carlucci."

Secretary of State Cyrus Vance responded the next day in priority cable 1977STATE277883, calming the concerns expressed which allowed Carlucci to then reassure Soares on 28th November as reported in cable 1977LISBON09146. Of greater interest however is the private information ("FYI") that Vance had given Carlucci in his priority cable 1977STATE277883 which reads in full:

> "1. About 30 guests attended each of the affairs mentioned by Arriaga (reftel). They were part of November 10-13 meetings of European and American businessmen and politicians. Arriaga was accompanied by his aide Costa da Noruega. NSC Director Brzezinski was present at a November 12 dinner and former Secretary of State Kissinger attended a luncheon, but neither held private discussions with Arriaga.

> 2. FYI: other participants included Antoine Pinay, France; Franz Josef Strauss, Germany; David Rockefeller, US; Alfredo Sanchez Beya [sic], Spain; and senior Italian industrialists. The group has no formal name and does not seek wide press coverage, but it is occasionally called the Pinay Group or the Cercle Violet, the latter derived from the name of a French lawyer instrumental in forming the group 20 years ago. The meetings began as discussions of international issues by European Christian Democrats. End FYI Vance" (304).

Brzezinski's attendance at the autumn 1977 Cercle meeting had been rescheduled to 12th November; according to declassified State Department cable 1977BRUSSE16914, he was still in Brussels on 10th November, recording a Belgian television interview for a programme on French-speaking Belgian television (RTBF), to be broadcast on 18th November. In a reflection of the AESP's political influence in 1977-78, the programme was dominated by members of the Cercle: Kissinger, David Rockefeller, Brzezinski, Pinay, Vanden Boeynants and Strauß were all interviewed (305)*.

Strauß's attendance at the November 1977 Cercle meeting was discussed in declassified State Department cable 1977BONN18128 of 31st October 1977 which reads in part:

> "Strauss will arrive in Washington in the evening of November 9, prior to attending four days of meetings under the auspices of the Cercle Violet (sic). These meetings include Secretary [of Defense from 1977 to 1981 Harold] Brown and Dr. Brzezinski (November 10), US labor leaders [George] Meany and [Lane] Kirkland [first and second Presidents of the AFL-CIO from 1955 to 1979 and 1979 to 1995 respectively] (November 11), and reportedly also Secretary [of the Treasury from 1977 to 1979 W. Michael] Blumenthal and [former Director of Central Intelligence from 1973 to 1976] William Colby. We understand that Donald F. P. Jameson (tel 703-525-2335) coordinates the Cercle Violet schedule" (306).

At this time, Strauß had just been endorsed at the September 1977 CSU Congress as the CSU candidate to replace the retiring Bavarian Prime Minister Alfons Goppel (307). Strauß went on to win the Bavarian parliamentary elections held in October 1978, resigning from the Bundestag in November 1978 and serving as Bavarian Prime Minister until his death in October 1988. Within days of this November 1977 Cercle meeting, Strauß flew out for a nine-day tour of Latin America including a highly controversial five-day visit to Pinochet's Chile; six months earlier, Chile had been forced to withdraw their Military Attaché in Bonn after reports in the *Spiegel* that he had tortured opponents of Pinochet (308). On his tour, Strauß was accompanied by the HSS's Fritz Pirkl, the KAS's Bruno Heck, Hans Huyn, a delegation from the German-Chilean Friendship Circle run by Bossle and Huyn, and a representative of the Deutschland-Stiftung. In 1978, Strauß's speeches in Chile were reprinted together with an article by Robert Moss by the HSS in their *Politische Studien* series (309)*.

Großmann confirms Colby's participation at the November 1977 meeting and reports that further participants included William J. Baroody Jr. of the American Enterprise Institute and a delegation of senators - Democrat Henry M. Jackson whose Senior Staff Member from 1969 to 1980 was future Cercle member Richard Perle (310), and Republicans John Chafee and Philip Crane (311). In December 1977, Senator Crane planned a private visit to Europe, requesting meetings with Margaret Thatcher, the Baron de Bonvoisin (a private dinner was scheduled for 4th January 1978), NATO SACEUR Alexander Haig, Werner Marx, Alois Mertes, Hans Graf Huyn and Franz Josef Strauß (312)*.

Crozier almost certainly also attended the second Cercle meeting in November 1977 in Washington, although he is not mentioned in Vance's cable 1977STATE277883. In his memoirs (313), Crozier notes that he had interpreted for Kissinger at an unspecified Cercle meeting. A 10th February 1978 letter from Kissinger to Crozier, also kindly provided by Hervé Beghinselen, reads:

> "Thank you for your thoughtful note of January 16 about my television program [probably his November 1977 RTBF interview – see below]. I appreciate your kind words. It was good to see you in Washington. You did quite well as an interpreter!" (314).

However, throughout 1977 Crozier had more muscular activities on his mind than interpreting – ones that would have a direct impact on the Cercle and its future orientation.

A SHIELD FOR THE IRON LADY

The late 1970s were a period of intense activity for the London end of the Cercle complex. During this period, Crozier and his associates concentrated on two main projects: setting up **Shield**, the advisory group on subversion which personally counselled Margaret Thatcher, and the creation of an international private intelligence service which came to be known as the **6I** (six-eye), misprinted in Crozier's memoirs as the "61" (sixty-one).

As we have seen, Shield was created in March 1976 by the inner core of NAFF members: Crozier, Moss, McWhirter, Gouriet and Lord De l'Isle, all present at the March 1976 dinner with Margaret Thatcher. Crozier records:

> "Thereafter we had many meetings, either at the Thatchers' London home [...] or in her room in the House [of Commons]. Later they continued, usually at Chequers, but sometimes at Downing Street. Mostly we met alone. In the early days, however, I was often accompanied by a well-known (some would say notorious) ex-senior man in Britain's Secret Intelligence Service [MI6], **Nicholas Elliott**" (315).

Elliott was indeed notorious; the son of a former headmaster of Eton and an MI6 officer from 1939 to 1968, Elliott had been completely duped by the upper-class background of Kim Philby, as had been three other intelligence veterans who counted Philby amongst their closest friends: MI6's G. K. Young and the CIA's James Jesus Angleton and Miles Copeland.

Elliott together with Young was one of the "Robber Barons", MI6 hawks who preferred covert action to the more mundane activity of intelligence-gathering; Elliott had run MI6's London station during the disasterous and unauthorised 1956 'Buster' Crabb operation. When MI5's suspicions of Philby hardened in 1955, it was Elliott and Young who defended him and, without telling the CIA, put him back on the MI6 payroll, sending him to Beirut as a journalist for the *Observer* and the *Economist*. There, Elliott and Philby soon met again, remaining in frequent contact during Elliott's tour of duty as MI6 Lebanon station chief from 1960 to 1962.

In January 1963, three months after Elliott's return to London, the suspicions about Philby could no longer be avoided but the Old Boys' network would still function; it was Elliott, Philby's most devoted friend, who was sent back to Beirut to confront him. Elliott's inept questioning alerted Philby to the imminent threat of arrest, precipitating his flight to the Soviet Union (316)*. As described in later chapters, Elliott went on to play a key role not only in Shield, but also in the 6I, Crozier's international private intelligence service created in 1977.

As for Shield's structure, Crozier records that Shield's providers were Crozier, former MI6 officers Elliott and Hastings, and Lieutenant-Colonel Harry Sporborg, a former Deputy Head of the wartime Special Operations Executive then working for Hambro's Bank (Hambro had been head of SOE in 1942-43). With Tennant, Amery and Hastings, Sporborg was the fourth SOE veteran within the Cercle complex.

> "With the resources of the Institute for the Study of Conflict at our disposal, we produced some twenty papers on various aspects of subversion. The researchers were Peter Shipley and Douglas Eden. The papers were made available immediately to Margaret Thatcher and, on request, to other members of the committee on the 'receiving' side. Apart from Mrs. Thatcher, there were three of them, all members of her shadow cabinet: Lord Carrington, William (later Lord) Whitelaw, and Sir Keith Joseph [responsible for foreign, domestic and economic affairs respectively]" (317)*.

Thatcher's Shadow Minister for Northern Ireland – and intended intelligence supremo - Airey Neave and his deputy John Biggs-Davison were of course other shadow cabinet members intimately linked to Shield.

> "The work of the Shield committee fell into two broad categories. One was strategic: it concerned the state of Britain's existing counter-subversion machinery, proposals for fundamental change, and contingency planning for a major crisis - a widespread paralysis caused by political strikes and riots [...] The other category was tactical: to provide short, factual and accurate research papers on the Communist connections of Labour MPs and trades unionists in the increasingly critical industrial scene, especially in late 1978 and early 1979" (318).

As regards the latter category for Shield actions, the initiator of Shield - SAS, SOE and MI6 veteran Stephen Hastings, now a Conservative MP - provided a parliamentary platform immune from domestic libel laws for the counter-subversion lobby's charges concerning Labour MPs' Communist connections. In 1977, Hastings relaunched the 1969 Frolik allegations that Labour MPs had spied for the Czech intelligence service. In 1976, veteran espionage journalist and MI5 friend Chapman Pincher had sent Hastings tape recordings of interviews with Frolik reiterating his charges. This contact between Pincher and Hastings was not surprising; Pincher had been the guest speaker at a NAFF seminar on subversion organised in August 1975 before NAFF's formal creation. In December 1977, under parliamentary privilege, Hastings named the Labour MPs whom Frolik accused of having worked for the Czech intelligence service; in January 1978, Hastings stepped up the pressure by sending to Prime Minister Callaghan a copy of a letter from Frolik to Josef Josten (a member of NAFF like Hastings), in which Frolik said he was afraid to visit Britain because the Czech intelligence service had British friends in high places (319)*.

As for the first category for Shield actions, "Shield's first move was to commission an extensive report on the current state of subversion and on the existing official agencies that were supposed to handle the problem. The report, which ran to about 100 pages, was drafted by a former senior member of the Secret Intelligence Service: an old and trusted friend of Stephen Hastings and myself. After revisions by Stephen, Nicholas and me, the final draft was ready in May 1977" (320). The most likely candidate for this anonymous author is G. K. Young, former Deputy Director of MI6 and NAFF National Council member. Having failed to take over the Monday Club in 1973, Young had begun organising the private army Unison in 1974 with Ross McWhirter and two former MI6 colleagues, Anthony Cavendish and Colonel Ronnie Waring, the latter joining the FARI Council with Crozier, Moss et al in 1976.

The direct line to Mrs. Thatcher that Shield provided allowed disgruntled former MI5 and MI6 officers to condemn what they saw as the previous fatal weakening of Britain's counter-subversion effort. The IRD had been cut back in the late 1960s; the ISC stepped into the breach following its creation in 1969-1970. The completion in May 1977 of this first Shield report on the need for a reorganisation and reinforcement of the official counter-subversion effort coincided with the decision of Labour Foreign Secretary David Owen to finally close down the IRD. According to Crozier, this was at least in part motivated by the close links between the IRD and the ISC which had hit the headlines a year previously. In the eyes of the counter-subversion lobby, the decision smacked of treachery: "Thus, the Labour Government had destroyed the only active instrument of counter-subversion in the United Kingdom [...] as a sop to the Left. The KGB had won, possibly when it least expected victory" (321).

The radical tone of Shield's report can be judged from Crozier's analysis of the challenge Shield sought to combat:

> "The problem was subversion: the deliberate undermining of the State and society. Subversion is an insidious man-made disease, a creeping paralysis in which the State's defensive organs are invaded and neutralized, until they cease to function: the political equivalent to AIDS. In Britain, as in other affected countries, the ultimate aim was to turn the country into a 'people's democracy' on the East European model. [...] In Britain in particular the problem had become more threatening. The main reason was simply that the trades unions and the Labour Party had been largely taken over by the subversive Left. Many other areas of life were affected: the schools and universities, the media, the Churches" (322)*.

Crozier further states that Shield's actions were "a question of survival in a nation in which the dominant role, increasingly, was played by extreme Left Labour MPs and constituency managers and by trades unions whose long-term goal [...] was to transform Britain into another East Germany or Czechoslovakia" (323). The Shield report concluded that MI6 was "basically in good shape" but that MI5 was not, due to its charter restricting surveillance (officially) to threats of "the overthrow of the government by unlawful means" under MI5's 1952 Maxwell Fyfe directive, i.e. that lawful peaceful public dissent was not to be monitored. Not content with these official strictures, Crozier urged a more proactive role to counter Communist subversion:

> "In that initial paper, therefore, we had proposed an urgent redefinition of the terms of reference of MI5, along with fresh directives to both the Services enabling them not merely to report on subversion, but to go over to the counter-offensive. For MI6, too, the counter-offensive angle was emphasized" (324).

Whilst work progressed on the review of Britain's counter-subversion effort, Shield also turned its attention to reporting on current subversive threats.

> "Between May 1977 and July 1979, Shield produced no fewer than fifteen strategic papers, recommending counter-action to meet the subversive challenge and defeat it" (325). "One, dated April 1978, gave details of joint Labour-Communist activity [...] in November of that year, we identified forty-eight Labour Party prospective parliamentary candidates with extreme Left views and connections [...] on 15 January [1979], a Shield paper traced the origin of the [lorry drivers'] strike to Alex Kitson, General Secretary of the Scottish Commercial Motormen's Union [...] well known for his pro-Soviet sympathies [...] on 17 January, a further paper analysed the potential consequences, which included the possible use of troops for essential services [...] In a further paper, on 29 January, Shield dwelt on the extremist influences within the National Union of Public Employees [...] In a longer paper dated 12 February 1979, Shield looked at the strike policy of the Communist Party [...] In another paper, dated 26 February 1979, we gave details of various Labour groups which had been campaigning for the overthrow of the Shah of Iran" (326).

Crozier also felt that Thatcher's confidence needed strengthening so as to "cultivate and consolidate a public image of clear-headedness and resolution. To this end, at one of our private Flood Street meetings, I handed her a programme of 'Psychological Action' [...] a practical technique originally formalized by my close French friend, Maître Jean Violet [...] What I had done was to borrow Violet's tried and tested principles, and adapt them to current British needs". This programme of 'Psychological Action' focused on identifying people's needs and fears, and on that basis developing questions to be inserted into political speeches. Crozier notes that "many, though not all, of the points made surfaced in her speeches and those of her followers in the run-up to the next elections" (327).

As the industrial action of the "winter of discontent" under Wilson's successor James Callaghan intensified, Shield revised their initial paper on the British counter-subversion effort and in a "Mechanism Paper" dated May 1978 proposed the creation of a "Counter-Subversion Executive" "not only to counter anti-British subversive activity both in the United Kingdom and in other parts of the world, by clandestine means both offensive and defensive, but also actively to conduct a clandestine offensive against Soviet power" (328).

Several weeks later, Crozier, Elliott, Hastings and Sporborg met with Thatcher, Whitelaw, Joseph and Carrington to discuss the Counter-Subversion Executive. Difficulties arose as to the administrative accountability of the proposed CSE; Lord Carrington objected to Crozier's suggestion of housing it within the Foreign Office and to Thatcher's suggestion of accommodating it within the Cabinet Office or in Downing Street. Sporborg then wrote to Hastings, Crozier and Elliott to suggest that the CSE should be a secret appendage of MI6, thus ensuring the necessary confidentiality for the proposed new body.

Shield's view of the necessity for such a body was reiterated in a Shield strategic paper written in June 1979 "by a senior officer of MI5 who had just retired" who gave "a penetrating dissection of the Security Service, and specifically where it had gone wrong. The picture that emerged was of an intellectually weakened organisation no longer prepared to take Marxist-Leninist influences seriously. Too much time and resources were devoted to the trailing of foreign spies [...] and too little to domestic subversion".

This unnamed former MI5 man is clearly **Charles Elwell**, who had retired the previous month as Assistant Director of MI5 and head of F1 Branch (CPGB and other subversive groups); Elwell worked closely with Crozier over the next decade, as detailed below (329)*.

The perspectives for the creation of the proposed CSE as a remedy to such perceived failings of MI5 had been given a boost by Thatcher's election victory in May 1979, but ultimately Lord Carrington's hostility to the counter-subversion lobby could not be overcome, and in a July 1979 meeting at Chequers with the new Prime Minister, the Shield team was informed that Shield's efforts were no longer necessary and that the CSE would not be created. Although the rejection of the CSE was a blow to the Shield group, it was not fatal: since early 1977, Crozier had been running an international private secret service called the 6I or Sixth International; as Crozier records, "the London end of the 6I simply took over Shield's work" (330).

SIX EYE – PRIVATE SPY

The initiative for formalising Cercle contacts into an international private secret service came in early 1977, a year or so into Shield's operations. As Crozier records: "Something bigger than Shield was needed to deal with the wider threat from the Soviet Union and its worldwide subversive network" (331). At the time, the Western counter-subversion effort was in disarray: the IRD was formally closed down in April-May 1977, and the American intelligence community was still reeling from the exposure of the Watergate scandal and the four hundred intelligence posts shed by the CIA after the appointment of Admiral Stansfield Turner. Crozier voiced the counter-subversion lobby's point of view in saying: "This catastrophic decision completed the self-emasculation of American intelligence" (332).

> "The question was whether something could be done in the private sector - not only in Britain, but in the United States and other countries of the Western Alliance. A few of us had been exchanging views, and decided that action was indeed possible. I took the initiative by convening a very small and very secret meeting in London. We met in the luxurious executive suite of a leading City of

> London bank on the morning of Sunday 13 February 1977. Our host, a leading figure in the bank, took the chair. Three of us were British, four were American, with one German. Ill health prevented a French associate from joining us; Jean Violet was with us in spirit" (333).

Crozier does not identify the host of the first 6I meeting, although the most likely candidate is SOE veteran Sir Peter Tennant of Barclays, the co-Chairman of the Cercle who, only two months before this first 6I meeting, had attended the November 1976 CEDI Congress in Madrid with the full Cercle crew: Crozier, Moss and Amery from Britain, Pinay, Violet and Vallet from France, Damman and Vankerkhoven of the AESP, de Bonvoisin and Bougerol of PIO, Vigneau and Leguèbe from *Le Monde Moderne* and Adolph W. Schmidt from the US Committee for the ISC.

Other possible hosts for the 6I could be either Harry Sporborg of Hambro's Bank or G. K. Young of investment bankers Kleinwort Benson. Crozier goes on to identify the third Briton as Nicholas Elliott, but conceals the German's identity with the following words: "The German was a very active member of the Bundestag, whose career had started in diplomacy. He had a very wide understanding of Soviet strategy, on which he wrote several first-rate books" - all of which is a perfect fit for Count Hans Huyn, who had also attended the 1976 CEDI Congress.

As for the Americans, the most notable participant at the 6I meeting was **Lieutenant-General Vernon 'Dick' Walters**, who served as Deputy Director of Central Intelligence (under William Colby, himself a Cercle member) from May 1972 to July 1976, retiring six months before this first 6I meeting. Fluent in six European languages as a result of his childhood in the UK and France, Walters was a veteran coupmaster involved in most of the CIA's dirtiest operations – Iran, Italy, Vietnam, Chile, Angola, Honduras, Guatemala, El Salvador and Fiji, often working with other Cercle contacts. As American Military Attaché in Teheran, Walters had worked with Kermit Roosevelt and G. K. Young in the 1953 Operation Ajax to overthrow Iranian Prime Minister Mossadegh. From 1969 to 1972, when the Cercle's Belgian base of the AESP was being set up, Walters was Senior Department of Defense Attaché in Paris responsible for the Benelux region.

The three remaining American participants at the 1977 founding meeting of the 6I were "two able and diligent Congressional staffers, and the Viennese born representative of a big Belgian company". Although no definite identification of this trio has yet been possible, two probable contenders for the 6I's anonymous Congressional founding members emerge from Crozier's later contacts in the Reagan Administration. Both men had Congressional positions around the time of the 6I's creation and worked alongside Crozier in the early 1990s within the **International Freedom Foundation** (IFF), a South African military intelligence front group which included Huyn, Horchem and other 6I members, described in detail below.

After wartime military service, **Herbert Romerstein** worked as a research analyst for American Business Consultants, publishers of the anti-Communist newsletter *Counterattack*. He testified before the Senate Sub-Committee on Internal Security on Communist Infiltration of Youth Organizations in 1951 and before the Subversive Activities Control Board in 1954, 1955 and 1962. He was an investigator on Communism for a New York State Joint Legislative Committee from 1954 to 1956 and for a New York State Senate Committee in 1964. In 1965, Romerstein entered government service, working as an Investigator for the House Committee on Un-American Activities (HUAC, 1965-1971), Minority Chief Investigator for the House Committee on Internal Security (1971-75), and Professional Staff Member for the House Intelligence Committee (1978-1983). In his 1993 memoirs, Crozier recalls that Romerstein was "one of the leading American official specialists on the Soviet intelligence system, whom I have known for many years" (334).

Crozier's second contact and later IFF companion was **Sven Kraemer** who had worked in the Office of the Secretary of Defense from 1963 to 1967 before serving as an arms control expert on the National Security Council from 1967 to 1976 under Presidents Johnson, Nixon and Ford. After nearly fifteen years in the executive branch, Kraemer then became "Senior Staff Member for Defense and Foreign Policy, US Senate (1978-1981)", holding "senior staff positions in the Congressional branch of government, working with Senator John Tower (R-Tex) and the Republican Policy Committee of the US Senate (1979-80)" (335)*.

At the inaugural 6I meeting, Crozier proposed to Elliott, Huyn, Walters and the other participants to create "a Private Sector Operational Intelligence agency, beholden to no government, but at the disposal of allied or friendly governments for certain tasks which, for one reason or another, they were no longer able to tackle. I must make it clear that 'these tasks did not include any acts of armed force or physical coercion' "(336).

The tasks of the 6I would rather be in the field of intelligence-gathering, psychological warfare and covert funding; Crozier summarises the tasks of the 6I as follows:

> "to provide reliable intelligence in areas which governments were barred from investigating, either through recent legislation (as in the US) or because political circumstances made such inquiries difficult or potentially embarrassing; to conduct secret counter-subversion operations in any country in which such actions were deemed feasible" (337).

The future role of the 6I in circumventing domestic restrictions on intelligence operations and in coordinating private sector counter-subversion efforts is stressed by Crozier:

> "We planned both to initiate secret operations in our various countries, and to coordinate the existing overt actions of the many private groups involved in the resistance to Soviet propaganda and Active measures [...] Unlike existing agencies, we would not be hampered by prohibitions on functioning in our own or Allied countries" (338).

Crozier records that the name of the "Sixth International" or "six-eye" (following the five Communist or Trotskyist internationals) was suggested some months later by "a distinguished Argentine associate of ours, a former Justice Minister (and anti-Perónist) named Jacques Perriaux" (339)*. Elliott and Crozier undertook to find the funding necessary for the 6I's operations from industrial sponsors; an initial estimate of $5 million a year was suggested, although as Crozier notes: "our initial estimate of financial needs was too high: not for the requirements, but for the realistic limits of generosity on the part of the necessarily small number of sources we approached" (340). "At the height of the 6I's activities in the mid-1980s, we were spending around $1 million a year" (341).

As for the 6I's members, Crozier records that its network of agents and informants grew swiftly.

> "The main requirement for recruitment was "access". We needed well-placed men and women, with access to leaders, to intelligence and security services, to selected politicians, to editors of potentially useful publications. All that was needed was for those selected from the contacts each had built up before and after the birth of the 6I, to be conscious of our existence and our goals. [...] In addition to our own network, we gained access to a number of existing networks, both private and official. In Germany, we had three prime sources. One was the ex-diplomat turned politician, Count Hans Huyn, a close friend of the Bavarian leader Franz Josef Strauss [...] Another was the ebullient, ever-cheerful Hans Josef 'Jupp' Horchem [...] The third source was one of the senior intelligence officials who had resigned in disgust when Chancellor Brandt emasculated the former Gehlen office (342)*. I shall call him **Hans von Machtenberg**. With him, into early retirement, he took a substantial network of agents, whose identities he had refused to disclose to his new political masters. Hans lived near Pullach, in Bavaria, headquarters of the BND. There, with the approval and backing of Strauss, he secured financial backing to continue his work, in the private sector [...] I invited him to join our directing committee (which we called our 'Politburo'). Thereafter, he received our bulletin and a selection of our secret reports. In return, I received his regular intelligence reports in German, with full discretion to use them, unattributably" (343).

Hans Christoph Schenk Freiherr von Stauffenberg had been an Intelligence Analyst with the BND before leaving in 1969 to set up a private intelligence service working for the CDU and Strauß's CSU. Stauffenberg's network liaised closely with the Bavarian Interior Ministry's State Protection Department headed by former BND special operative **Hans Langemann**, Strauß's top linkman to the security and intelligence services. The technical advisor for Stauffenberg's secret service was Langemann's former boss in the Strategic Service of the BND, retired **Brigadier-General Wolfgang Langkau**, who had resigned in 1968 when Wessel abolished Langkau's Strategic Service due to its over-reaching influence and right-wing sympathies. Much of Stauffenberg's information came from Langemann, who received over DM 300,000 from Stauffenberg between 1977 and 1982. Langemann in turn used an intelligence slush fund, "Positive Protection of the Constitution", to finance a registered charity, the Arbeitskreis für das Studium internationaler Fragen [Working Group for the Study of International Issues] which supported Stauffenberg's group. 100 copies of each Stauffenberg report were printed: recipients included Strauß and Gerold Tandler, Bavarian Interior Minister - Langemann's political bosses (344)*.

The CSU not only received private intelligence reports from Stauffenberg's "little service", but also used the CSU's political foundation, the **Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung**, as its external covert action arm. The Chairman of the Board of Directors since 1975 and Director of the International Department was Archduke Otto. HSS operations were truly international: active in pro-Contra fundraising and propaganda, exporting intelligence equipment to Idi Amin, supporting Mobutu in Africa, diverting state development aid from Germany into right-wing party coffers in Ecuador. HSS activities notably accelerated after 1977 when the foundation obtained a massive increase in funding from the State: its grant from tax-payers' money went from DM 1.9 million in 1977 to DM 13 million in 1980 (345)*. The scale of HSS parapolitical operations can be judged by a report, circulated amongst the CSU leadership and believed by them to stem from the BND, on the CIA's operative interest in the HSS:

> "23rd March 1979.
>
> Personal and confidential: recipient's eyes only.
>
> CIA operative interest in the Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung.
>
> 1. Initially unconnected indications of CIA focuses for intelligence-gathering on the Federal Republic of Germany have confirmed that the Konrad-Adenauer-Stiftung [CDU foundation] and above all the Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung are of operative interest to the American agency. Up until now the Friedrich-Naumann-Stiftung [FDP foundation] and the Friedrich-Ebert-Stiftung [SPD foundation] have not been mentioned.
>
> 2. The interest in the HSS is due to indications that have led the CIA management to believe that the HSS is active directly on behalf of the Bavarian Prime Minister both for foreign intelligence-gathering as well as for the

> execution of quasi-diplomatic or clandestine measures (covert action*) [*in English in the original].
>
> It appears that the CIA believes that some of the HSS representatives abroad are "private intelligence gatherers for the CSU" who "can only be distinguished from the BND residents by their lower level of typical intelligence tradecraft". The CIA attributes these "para-intelligence service" and "covert action" activities (political and financial exertion of influence, "business mediation useful for the party including arms trading") to the HSS in the following countries: first Namibia, Zaire and Nigeria, then Morocco, Togo, Greece, Portugal, Turkey, Manila, Hong Kong/Peking, Jordan, Saudi Arabia, finally the United States itself and "South America". For the business mediation, alleged HSS links to Messerschmitt-Bölkow-Blohn, Krauss-Maffei, Airbus Industries and companies in the foodstuffs and pharmaceutical sectors are supposed.
>
> 3. According to all appearances, the CIA reckons on systematic intelligence tasking by the MfS [East German intelligence] and the KGB against HSS representatives (and their offices) abroad, and [the CIA] sees here a potentially rich source for tips for their own counter-intelligence service working against the Eastern Bloc agencies" (346)*.

HUMAN RIGHTS AND RELIGION

A major activity for the Cercle complex from 1975 onwards was a relaunch of the Cercle/AESP's 1973 'Peace without Frontiers' appeal to collect prominent signatures on the theme of free movement of persons and ideas. Damman details the uses for the thousand signatories to the Academy's appeal in his Note 229:

> "This group of a thousand people can constitute a force if we manage to use it wisely. The organisation and the use of this force should be studied by a brain-trust like the one organised at Mr. Vallet's house which dealt with the problems facing South Africa [...] Europe must convince America that beyond the nuclear strike-force, the ideological weapon is more powerful if we have the means to use it [...] The funding for an ideological campaign represents one tenth of a percent of the enormous budget allocated to nuclear and conventional weapons [...] A spiritual alliance between Europe and America must find means more powerful than those available for the Soviet strategy of propaganda. We must make ourselves masters of the media in the free world" (347).

The negotiations in Helsinki which included Basket III, the human rights chapter, had culminated in July 1975 with the signature of the Final Act. Nonetheless, the Cercle complex was sceptical about the Soviet Union's willingness to respect its commitments. Crozier records that a senior KGB officer felt that the Helsinki Agreements were "one of the Soviet Union's greatest triumphs since World War II" (348). The complex therefore pursued the issue of human rights in the mid- to late 1970s. In a cassette message to Damman dated 16th October 1975, Violet referred to the campaign as part of the Academy's programme for the coming year:

> "The Soviet Union had tried to hurl a spear at the heart of Western Europe, but, whilst it was in the air, the West succeeded in changing the spear into a boomerang [...] if, by 1977, the Soviet Union does not want to liberalise its regime, it will have to confront a growing pile of dossiers on human rights violations. And all of this is due to the active campaign for free movement [...] we must talk of the release of political prisoners [...] that is an outline of the programme for the Academy for the beginning of 1976" (349).

In 1977-78, the Cercle intensified its campaign against the Soviet Union on the theme of human rights violations, coordinating its actions as in the past between the four main pillars of the Cercle's European network - Belgium, Britain, France and Germany; indeed, the coordinated campaign may well have been one of the first operations of Crozier's newly founded 6I. The first indication of this relaunch of the AESP 1973 Appeal is given in a notation in Damman's diary dated 6th January 1977 which reads:

> "7.19 am: Quartier Léopold station, departure for Zürich. Arrival 1.59 pm - Hôtel Baur au Lac. 5 pm: meeting with Jean Violet and Alain de Villegas. Dolder Dinner - plan prepared for Operation H2 [Helsinki 2]" (350)*.

This meeting came just before the conference in Belgrade that was to study the implementation of human rights under the Helsinki II treaty. Habsburg addressed the Belgian members of MAUE on the subject on 1st March 1977, and then the Academy launched a mailshot campaign attacking the Soviet Union for human rights abuses: on 3rd April 1977, Damman noted in his diary: "Start of Operation H2, the first letters have been sent." Damman's diary also records that part of the campaign involved the AESP buying full-page advertising space in *Le Figaro* for its appeal. The AESP Appeal was given front-page coverage by the *Bulletin Européen* in April, and the following month the ISC relayed the AESP campaign with the publication of a Conflict Study entitled *Human Rights - Soviet Theory and Practice* (351)*.

Another angle to the complex's human rights attack on the Soviet Union was to mobilise right-wing Christian groups on the issue of the repression of religious worship in the Soviet Union. This was of course familiar territory for Violet and Dubois who had worked with Catholic networks behind the Iron Curtain in the 1950s and 1960s for the SDECE. The complex's activity was both intense and influential: Damman's diary for 1st October 1977 records that AESP representative Jacques

Jonet was received by the Pope, no doubt in connection with the complex's campaigns. Besides the Helsinki II operation, the Cercle also ran a specific religious campaign called the "Bible-prisoners" action, referred to in Violet's note of 31st March 1976 about the Cercle's cash crisis, quoted above. Further details of this campaign emerge from another entry in Damman's diary dated 31st October 1977:

> "Vincent van den Bosch has announced a demonstration for Saturday, 10th December at 2pm, to be held in front of the Soviet Embassy. Free circulation of the Bible, freedom of religion and thought, re-opening of churches, release of prisoners - organised by Solidarité Chrétienne Internationale (international committee for freedom of conscience and religion)" (352)*.

Besides running SCI, Vincent van den Bosch, Secretary-General of CEDI, was a central figure in Damman's complex of groups, serving as a member of the AESP Permanent Delegation and as Secretary-General of MAUE - and also having met Crozier twice in 1976 at the February AESP Chapter Assembly and again at the November CEDI Congress. The campaign for religious freedom in the Soviet Union, like the general human rights campaign, was coordinated between three of the main pillars of the complex: Belgium, Britain and Germany. To support the demonstrations and mailing actions undertaken by the AESP in late 1977, the ISC brought out a Conflict Study on the Prague-based Christian Peace Conference in January 1978, *The CPC - Human Rights and Religion in the USSR*.

The AESP and the ISC were not the only Cercle associates to support these campaigns; the Cercle's German friends also contributed. As we have seen, the German pillars of the Cercle throughout the 1970s had been Strauß's CSU, represented by Cercle/6I member Count Hans Huyn, and the Swiss group ISP, run by AESP partner Karl Friedrich Grau. In 1977, the Cercle's German friends set up a specialised group to support the campaigns on religious freedom being run by the ISC and the AESP – a German equivalent to the earlier British-based CSRC/Keston College.

This new group was the **Brüsewitz Centre**, a "Christian" group whose aim was to "publicise human rights violations and particularly the violations of the freedom of worship in the so-called German Democratic Republic". The Brüsewitz Centre was named after Oskar Brüsewitz, an East German priest who burned himself alive in August 1976; the priest's widow tried in vain to prevent the group using his name. The founding body for the Brüsewitz Centre was the Christlich-Paneuropäische Studienwerk [Christian Paneuropean Study Group], founded in July 1977 and chaired by Otto von Habsburg's teenage daughter, **Walburga von Habsburg** (353)*. The Brüsewitz Centre's Board included several well-known faces: Habsburg, Huyn and Merkatz, all three CEDI members and early associates of the AESP. On the Board of the Brüsewitz Centre, we also find the Czech exile Luděk Pachman, whom we have already met as a speaker for Grau's ISP in 1975-76 along with Habsburg and Huyn. Habsburg, Merkatz and Pachman of the Brüsewitz Board all also served on the Board of Amnesty International's right-wing rival, the IGfM.

The Brüsewitz Centre's Board also included five other Germans who would crop up in later Cercle operations in the 1980s. The first of these was **Hans Filbinger**, member of the PEU Council and CDU Regional Prime Minister of Baden-Württemberg from 1966 to 1978, when he was forced to resign following a scandal about his past as a military judge in Hitler's Navy. In July 1977, four months before the creation of the Brüsewitz Centre, Filbinger had been one of the founding members of the **Ludwig-Frank-Stiftung**, a far-right pressure group of German politicians and businessmen that organised conferences together with fascist parties such as the German NPD and Italian MSI.

Based in Munich, the LFS set as its aim "to resist the dangers of a Popular Front and Eurocommunism". LFS activities concentrated on right-wing trades unions, and it had close links to the far Right including the Comitato Tricolore degli Italiani nel Mondo, a PEU affiliate close to the Italian MSI. The LFS journal was another channel for anti-Socialist disinformation, e.g. "There are people in Bonn who are financed by the East. One of them is Mr. Brandt." Many German associates of the Cercle complex were Board members of the LFS, amongst them Habsburg. The LFS's inaugural international conference in February 1978 was attended by representatives of several groups close to the Cercle complex: the Paneuropean Union, the Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung, the Brüsewitz Centre, the IGfM and the IfD, the latter being described below.

The second of the five new faces on the Brüsewitz Board was also a co-founder of the LFS, the Bavarian **Heinrich Aigner**. A CSU MP in the Bundestag from 1957 to 1980, Aigner was also an appointed Member of the European Parliament from 1961 on and served alongside Habsburg as an elected MEP from 1979 until his death in 1988. A Chairman of the Bavarian PEU section, Aigner also served as Board member and later Vice-President of the German PEU section. In 1982, Aigner visited Paraguay with Filbinger as part of an LFS delegation paid for by the German Foreign Office. In 1983, Heinrich Aigner's son Heinz, a CSU member and intimate of Strauß, founded the Institute for German-Paraguayan Relations for the Promotion of Trade and Culture, a pro-Stroessner propaganda group, which organised a planned visit by Stroessner to Germany in 1985. With Löwenthal, Heinz Aigner attended the 1981 joint WACL/CAUSA congress in Asuncion, hosted by Stroessner and Pinochet.

The third Brüsewitz Board member of note was **Dr. Lothar Bossle**, a member of the Central Committee of German Catholics, President of the Katholische Deutsche Akademikerschaft [Catholic German Academic Society] and one of the most vocal opponents of liberation theology. Having been a socialist student activist in his youth, Bossle switchED to the CDU in 1959; from 1960 to 1963, he worked at the German Army School in Koblenz before being assisted by Filbinger in becoming Professor at the Pedagogical High School in Lörrach. In 1972, Bossle was active within the Aktion der Mitte group which used industry millions from Axel Springer and others to publish election propaganda against the socialist-liberal coalition ("One dose of socialism – from 1933 to 1945 – was quite enough!"); in 1974, he was a co-founder of the pro-CSU campaign group KDK. In 1975, he courted controversy in calling Allende a "socialist Hitler" and then applying the same treatment to Willy Brandt and Olof Palme. Bossle becAme one of Pinochet's most fervent supporters in Germany ("Chile is on the path to true democracy") and a key contact person for **Colonia Dignidad**, the German group in Chile linked to the Chilean secret service DINA, which Bossle visited at least four times (354)*.

Bossle's big break came in 1977 when Strauß intervened with Culture Minister Hans Maier to override the Julius Maximilian University of Würzburg's Academic Senate, Nomination Committee and Faculty Council and to have Bossle appointed as Professor of Sociology. His inauguration was marred by massive faculty protests, and Bossle's Sociology Department later became notorious as a 'degree mill', handing out doctorates to those who had the money and who shared Bossle's world-view. In 1977, the year of his university appointment, Bossle joined Filbinger and Aigner within the Ludwig-Frank-Stiftung and the Brüsewitz Centre. Like fellow Brüsewitz Board members Habsburg, Merkatz and Pachman, Bossle served in the IGfM, sitting on its Honorary Presidium. The Sociology Professor also sat on the Scientific Council of the Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung and frequently attended seminars organised by the International Conference for the Unification of the Sciences, the Moonies' scientific front group (355)*.

More significantly, whilst at Würzburg, Bossle acted as Director and later President of the **Institut für Demokratieforschung** [IfD, Institute for Democracy Research], one of whose Vice-Presidents was Cercle member Count Hans Huyn. In 1977, the IfD published Huyn's contribution to the Cercle's post-Helsinki human rights campaign, *Menschenrechte und Selbstbestimmung* (Human rights and self-determination); in 1974, Huyn had been a co-founder of the Swiss-based **Europäische Konferenz für Menschenrechte und Selbstbestimmung** [EKMS, European Conference for Human Rights and Self-Determination], another forum for the Cercle complex which worked closely with Sager's SOI throughout the 1980s. In 1977, the IfD also supported the fledgling Brüsewitz Centre, publishing the report *Oskar Brüsewitz: Sein Protest – sein Tod – seine Mahnung* [Oskar Brüsewitz: his protest – his death – his warning]. In 1979, the IfD published a German version of Crozier's February 1978 Conflict Study *Surrogate Forces of the Soviet Union*, and Bossle organised a 1979 conference by Crozier at the Sociological Institute of Würzburg University (356)*.

Bossle's IfD had extensive intelligence contacts - the IfD's Scientific Director was prominent CDU MP and later Brüsewitz Board member **Heinrich Lummer**, whose numerous Libyan trips were financed by the BND; the Deputy Scientific

Director was former **Major-General Gerd Helmut Komossa**, from 1977 to 1980 head of Germany's military security service, the MAD.

Bossle's close associate on the Board of the IfD was **Prof. Dieter Blumenwitz.** Professor of International and Constitutional Law at Würzburg University from 1976 on, Blumenwitz had represented Bavaria before the Federal Constitutional Court in summer 1973 in an ultimately unsuccessful attempt to prevent the conclusion of the Basic Treaty governing relations between East and West Germany. Blumenwitz shared Bossle's close links with Chile and reportedly visited Colonia Dignidad with Bossle. In 1979, Blumenwitz was one of the co-authors with Crozier of Pinochet's Chilean Constitution; in 1980, Blumenwitz intervened on behalf of Colonia Dignidad in legal proceedings seeking to block Amnesty International's German section from publishing allegations that the colony had served as a secret DINA torture centre (357)*. Like many of the Cercle's German friends, Blumenwitz was also a Board Member of the IGfM and an advisor to and author for the Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung.

Another of Bossle's partners was **Dr. Günter Rohrmoser**, a frequent speaker for both the LFS and the IfD, with Bossle a member of the 1974 group KDK, and one of the most active Board members of the IGfM. An Honorary Professor of Philosophy at Cologne University in the 1960s, Rohrmoser like Bossle was assisted in his academic career by Filbinger, who secured his appointment as Professor of Social Philosophy at Hohenheim University in 1976 where he served for twenty years until becoming Professor Emeritus in 1996. With connections like these, it is not surprising that the IfD attracted notoriety; Bavarian SPD MP Dr. Heinz Kaiser tried unsuccessfully to raise questions about the IfD in the Bavarian Parliament, speculating that it might be a covert BND training centre.

To return to the Brüsewitz Centre, the fourth new face on the Board was CSU MP **Hans Hugo Klein**, a former Development Minister (therefore in charge of government grants to the Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung), and a member with Grau and Huyn of the Deutschland-Stiftung. In 1977, the same year the Brüsewitz Centre was founded, Klein led a parliamentary delegation from the CDU/CSU on a trip to South Africa; their conclusions, reported in *Deutschland-Magazin*, were that "South Africa must not fall". Klein then served as the CSU's election manager for the 1980 Chancellorship candidacy of Strauß. He was also later a member of the Bilderberg Group, attending their 1986 conference in Gleneagles. He then served as Vice-President of the Bundestag from 1990 to 1994 and died in 1996.

The final new face on the Brüsewitz Board that we will meet again in the 1980s was **Professor Nikolaus Lobkowicz**, a Czech aristocrat and exile who acquired American nationality in 1967. From 1967 on, Lobkowicz taught as Professor then Dean of Faculty at the Ludwig Maximilian University in Munich, rising to become *rector magnificus* from 1971 to 1976 and then University President until 1982. From 1984 to 1996, he served as President of the Catholic University of Eichstätt bei München and worked from 1994 on as the Director of the University's Central Institute for Central and Eastern European Studies. From 1978 on, he was a member of the Western European Advisory Committee of Munich-based Radio Free Europe; he became its Chairman in 1994, serving until 2001. Together with Rohrmoser, Lobkowicz was one of the most active Board Members of the IGfM where he was responsible for links with the "freedom fighters" group Resistance International, of which he was a Member of Honour (358)*; he also served as a member of the prize jury of the CSU's Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung.

Amongst the speakers for the Brüsewitz Centre, we find the television presenter Gerhard Löwenthal, inseparable team-mate of Luděk Pachman. In 1977, the year the Brüsewitz Centre was founded, Löwenthal became President of the Deutschland-Stiftung. That year, the Deutschland-Stiftung's Adenauer prize was awarded to Otto von Habsburg; the guest speaker was Franz Josef Strauß. In 1980, Crozier, Löwenthal, Pachman and Huyn worked together in one of the Cercle's most ambitious operations: the attempt to ensure "Victory for Strauß" in the 1980 Chancellorship elections. Another speaker for the Brüsewitz Centre was former Brigadier-General Heinz Karst, Löwenthal's predecessor as President of the Deutschland-Stiftung from 1973 to 1977 and a speaker for the Swiss ISP in 1975-76 together with Habsburg, Huyn and Pachman of the Brüsewitz Board.

THE AESP IN 1977-78

As we have seen, the danger that the AESP would be forced to close its doors as a result of the 1976 cash crisis was soon averted thanks to the provision of minimum financing by Violet. By 1977, the Academy's finances were again healthy: Damman's diaries from 1977 to 1979 make frequent mention of large cash transfers from de Villegas to Damman. At this time, Elf was paying the bulk of the enormous sums that would change hands for the sniffer plane project. As with the last-minute rescue of the Academy, it is not possible to prove that the considerable funds passing through Damman's hands from Violet and de Villegas came from the sniffer plane project. The only evidence we have is Damman's diary; it is however eloquent (359). On 7th January 1977, Damman's diary records the payment from de Villegas of "one million plus two hundred thousand"; the next day, Damman received FS 4,000 from Jonet and 100,000 from Violet. The payments from de Villegas to Damman continued: in November, 200,000, in December, 50,000, in January 1978 75,000 and in March 20,000. Aldo-Michel Mungo, Damman's deputy and later author of an exposé on the AESP, claims that the unspecified currency was in fact Swiss francs. In July and August 1978, de Villegas' contribution would be enormous: 315,000.

De Villegas' generosity in July and August 1978 may well have been connected with the signature of a second contract between Elf and de Villegas' sniffer plane company Fisalma on 24th June 1978. The new contract stipulated that Elf would pay Fisalma a further 500 million Swiss francs, half of which was due upon signature. The contract gave Elf the right to inspect the internal workings of the sniffer plane technology which allowed them finally to detect the fraud in May 1979 after warnings from Alexandre de Marenches that the sniffer plane deal had been set up by an "international swindler".

However, before the house of cards came crashing down, de Villegas provided the total funding for a new central secretariat for the AESP and all of its satellite groups. The **Cercle Charlemagne**, as the new offices were called, was equipped with its own printing press and a central file of the 10,000 AESP contacts. However, the Cercle Charlemagne would not last; inaugurated in April 1978 by Habsburg in the presence of Damman, de Villegas, de Bonvoisin and many leading lights of the European Right, the centre burnt down only five months later.

Despite this setback, the AESP continued to expand throughout 1978. On the 12th May that year, the AESP's earlier contacts with the International Society of Wilton Park via its President, René-Louis Picard, were formalised by the creation in Rome of CLEW, the European Liaison Committee of Associations of Friends of Wilton Park. According to CLEW's statutes, four of the nine founding members were members of the AESP: Violet, Sánchez Bella, Jonet and Picard, the latter being appointed President of CLEW for a three year term (360)*.

Two internal AESP documents give us a clear picture of the Academy's international outreach in 1977-78: a typed, undated AESP membership list from sometime in 1977 and a second AESP membership list from the month of June 1978, headed "Strictly confidential document for the exclusive use of H.E. the Ambassador of H.M. the King of Morocco" (361)*. The interconnections between the sniffer plane project and the AESP are clearly demonstrated by this mention. On 29th May 1978, the King of Morocco was informed by Elf that "a new detection procedure" had located two oil fields near Fez and Taza. On 21st June 1978, Damman's diary records that a dossier had been prepared for the Moroccan Ambassador; the membership list undoubtedly stems from this dossier. From 19th to 30th August 1978, de Villegas' sniffer planes carried out a comprehensive oil prospection programme in Morocco.

The membership lists shows that by 1977-78 the AESP had become a major nexus point for the Cercle complex. The Academy's aim of absorbing the members of CEDI and PEU had been achieved, as most of the international and national leaderships of both organisations figured on the AESP list. Another recurring theme was the Atlantic Alliance - the AESP now included the Presidents of the Atlantic Committees in Italy, France, Germany and Belgium, and spokesmen from NATO and Radio Free Europe. Former Allied combatants were represented by their international and European associations, alongside **Lieutenant-Colonel Dr. Jean-Victor Marique**, the President of the Brussels Reserve Officers Club and President of the AESP Military Committee since at least November 1974 - interesting in the light of Bougerol's work with reserve officers in the Brussels region from 1974 on.

The AESP's executive body, the Permanent Delegation, had also grown to now include Huyn, Vallet, Valori and Van den Heuvel, an indication of the closer international ties the AESP now possessed. At this time, Van den Heuvel was busy transferring the activities of the Oost-West Instituut (East-West Institute] to another group he had created, the Centrum voor Europese Veiligheid en Samenwerken [Centre for European Security and Cooperation]; the AESP could no doubt be of assistance. Besides this broadening of organisational contacts, the AESP's Life Members also expanded to include several prominent politicians, a reflection of the political influence the AESP wielded by 1978. Joining the previous core of Life Members composed of Habsburg, Pinay, Violet, Father Dubois, Sánchez Bella, Fraga Iribarne, Andreotti, Pesenti, Lombardo, Merkatz and Vanden Boeynants were politicians such as Jacques Soustelle of OAS fame, longstanding PEU Central Council member Sir John Biggs-Davison, also of the Monday Club and SIF, and two former International Presidents of CEDI, Sir Peter Agnew and Sir John Rodgers, the latter a former President of SIF.

The German presence in the AESP in 1977-78 illustrated a future major forum for the CSU, PEU and Cercle – the **European Parliament**, for which the first direct elections were held in June 1979. Having controversially acquired dual German nationality in 1978, Habsburg himself was elected as a CSU MEP in 1979 and served twenty years in the EP, sitting on the Political Affairs Committee from 1979 to 1992, chairing or co-chairing the Delegation on Relations with Hungary from 1989 to 1999 and sitting on the Committee on Foreign Affairs, Security and Defence Policy from 1992 to 1999. From 1979 on, Habsburg was assisted by CSU MEP Heinrich Aigner, who held the powerful post of Chairman of the EP Committee on Budgetary Control continuously until his death in 1988.

Two new German Life Members of the AESP in 1977-78 later joined Habsburg and Aigner in the EP. The first was former Bavarian Minister and regional MP **Dr. Fritz Pirkl**, Chairman of the Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung from its creation in 1967 until his death in 1993. Two years before joining the AESP, Pirkl had attended the 1976 CEDI Congress; the next year, he visited Pinochet's Chile with Strauß and Huyn. The second new AESP Life Member and future MEP was the German Count **Franz Ludwig Schenk Graf von Stauffenberg**, a Vice President of the German PEU section and CSU MP in the Bundestag from 1972 to 1984 – from 1973 to 1991, Stauffenberg chaired the CSU's Working Party on Germany and Foreign Policy. Both Pirkl and Stauffenberg sat in the European Parliament from 1984 to 1992 and served with Habsburg on the Bureau of the European People's Party group within the EP. Stauffenberg sat on the key EP Committee on Legal Affairs and Citizens' Rights from

1984 to 1987 before becoming its Chairman from 1989 to 1992. Pirkl functioned as Chairman or Deputy Chairman of the Delegation for Relations with Austria from 1985 to 1993; Austria applied for membership of the EU in July 1989 and formally acceded to the EU on 1st January 1995 (362)*.

A third significant German Life Member of the AESP in 1977-78 was **Dr. Heinrich Böx**, former Ambassador, Deputy Secretary-General of the CDU and head of the CDU's Bureau for Foreign Relations, who died in 2004. In 1949, Böx had been appointed by Adenauer to a short-lived post as Secretary of State in the Chancellor's Office before acting as the top government Press spokesman in 1951. By 1961, he worked as German trade representative in Finland and then served as German Ambassador in Norway from 1964 to 1966 and in Poland from 1966 to 1970. Böx had been in contact with Damman and the AESP since at least 1972. In 1976, whilst working as Head of the CDU's Bureau for Foreign Relations, Böx was suspected of espionage activities for a foreign power. Böx was presumably cleared by the investigation, as the 1978 AESP membership list still referred to him as Head of the CDU's Bureau for Foreign Relations. Böx completed the Cercle complex's networking of German conservative foreign policy spokesmen - the CDU's Dr. Marx and the CSU's Count Huyn had served within Habsburg's CEDI since 1972; both men had been close allies of Grau's Frankfurt and Swiss groups throughout the 1970s.

The AESP Study Groups also encompassed new members such as Swiss **Colonel Fernard Marie Thiébaut Schneider**, a LIL contact since at least 1971 and speaker for Grau's ISP from 1975 onwards, bringing the total of ISP speakers within the AESP to four: Grau himself, Habsburg, Huyn and Schneider.

A new Italian member of the AESP's study groups with parapolitical links was **Professor Leo Magnino**, a former Professor at the Universities of Rome and Naples and an ABN and WACL stalwart since the early 1960s; by 1985, he was an Executive Board member of the European Freedom Council, the sister body to the ABN. An advisor to the Ministry of Public Education, Magnino was listed by the AESP as President of the University of the Mediterranean. The University started life as the International Academy of the Mediterranean, founded in Palermo in 1951; Magnino was its Chancellor from 1971 to 1974. The President of the Academy was Gianfranco Alliata di Montereale, a major figure in Italian parapolitics. A right-wing monarchist prince and mason, Alliata was a member of P2 and close associate of Gelli with links to American intelligence dating back to the Second World War. At Alliata's initiative, an American Academy of the Mediterranean was founded in Mexico City in 1958, the same year that saw the creation of the Tecos, the Mexican branch of WACL which, perhaps more than any other branch, was responsible for WACL's opening-up to fascism. Other sponsors of the American Academy were Salazar and Andreotti. In a meeting held on 26th October 1968 at Palazzo Barbarini, plans were drawn up to establish the International University of the Mediterranean, no doubt the organisation headed by Magnino in 1978. In the 1968 meeting, it was decided that the pro-rector was to be Monsignor Antonio de Angelis, previously pro-rector of the University for Social Studies Pro Deo, Pro Deo being the right-wing Catholic organisation subsidised by American intelligence and run by the Belgian priest Félix Morlion.

On the domestic (Belgian) front, the AESP had been continuing close cooperation with the PIO counter-subversion group. Contacts between Damman, Bougerol and PIO's political master Benoît de Bonvoisin intensified in the late 1970s. Having visited the AESP Chapter Assembly in February 1976 and the CEDI Congress in the following November, both times accompanied by de Bonvoisin and both times meeting Brian Crozier, Major Bougerol remained in touch with the AESP throughout 1977. In the September/October 1977 issue of the MAUE/AESP journal *Europe Information* which also circulated the Cercle's post-Helsinki "Appeal for Freedom", Florimond Damman announced: "December 1977, date yet to be fixed: a lecture by Major Bougerol at the Université Libre de Bruxelles on the theme "Subversion, the ultimate weapon?" with slideshow on the events of May 1968". Entries in Damman's diary confirm that Bougerol gave his lecture for MAUE members on 13th December 1977, and a further entry in Damman's diary dated 30th December 1977 makes reference to a meeting with Bougerol to discuss *Inforep.*

The close cooperation between the AESP and de Bonvoisin was formalised by the latter's inclusion on the 1977 AESP membership list as a member of the AESP's Study Groups. A MAUE circular produced for the European elections in June 1979 shows that by then de Bonvoisin had also been taken up as an Advisory Board member of MAUE. In 1978, de Bonvoisin was at the height of his official power, serving as advisor to Defence Minister Vanden Boeynants as well as providing considerable financial and logistical backing for PIO. Indeed, since 1976, de Bonvoisin's company **PDG** had been subsidising PIO to the tune of over one million Belgian francs a year. As would later become apparent, de Bonvoisin and VdB had also continued funding for the NEM Clubs implicated with Bougerol in the rumours of a coup d'état in 1973. By 1978, the fascists funded by these two CEPIC/AESP members were setting up a network of cells within the Gendarmerie who were later the main suspects in the wave of destabilisation in Belgium in the early 1980s.

However, de Bonvoisin's support for PIO and Bougerol's ambitious expansion of PIO activities was not without risk. In a 1978 letter, Bougerol's partner Commissioner Fagnart of the SDRA military security service warned him of growing concern within the Belgian military and intelligence community about his apparently limitless horizons for PIO:

> "I don't want to give details of the defects of your ship, as you know them as well as I do, if not better. However, offhand, I quote:

a) the discretion of your "network" is insufficient (whether this be your fault or not);

b) the infiltration of this network must be considered not as possible but as probable, if not certain;

c) you are invading other people's turf - don't yell! You want examples:

- how would you, or can you, justify your role in the occasional missions of people going to Zaire or elsewhere?

- are you sure that all you ask of your correspondents is justified within the strict framework of your activities?

d) what do your correspondents in the official services - Gendarmerie, Sûreté, etc - think of you, and what role do they think you are playing?

But .. I don't think I have to convince you!

We could imagine another danger:

a) if a "plumber" [burglar] visited the avenue d'Auderghem [PIO military branch] or perhaps the rue Belliard [PIO civilian offices in a building shared with CEPIC, PDG and later MAUE];

b) if messages or telephone calls were intercepted;

c) if what you said at the "secret" meetings were to be divulged;

d) if there was a leak about the Saud affair or the affairs concerning Formosa, Spain or the UK, incidents which you should consider as "to be foreseen".

It's impossible for you to fit these into the framework of your official duties (for PIO or others).

- of course, I know as well as you do that without taking risks, you would remain inefficient. But I want to convince you to reduce these risks to what is strictly necessary. (Sorry if I am being tough, but our friendship allows me to be, and forces me to be so.)

- what to do?

a) start again on the basic principle of absolute need-to-know, above all for those matters that go beyond your official mission;

b) create an unassailable and solid justification with reference to the official mission in each of your actions;

c) for this, re-define this official mission and always advance this cover to everyone.

- Last argument which isn't scientific at all: I feel that the danger is imminent" (363)*.

The danger was indeed imminent; the "semi-private, semi-public" PIO was removed from the Army hierarchy in December 1978 after the death of Bougerol's protector, Lieutenant-General Pierre Roman, Chief of the Army General Staff. Despite this, PIO continued to function until at least 1980 as a private group financially supported by de Bonvoisin (364).

THE AESP, P2 AND P7

We have already noted the presence of former top P2 member Giancarlo Elia Valori in AESP circles from 1972 onwards; Valori figures on the 1977 and 1978 AESP lists as a member of the Academy's executive body, the Permanent Delegation. According to allegations made in 1988 by Richard Brenneke, three other leading AESP members were involved in a CIA funding channel for P2 called **P7**. Before detailing Brenneke's claims about P7, it is necessary to learn more about the man as a source. Brenneke's reliability has frequently been called into question, not least of all because his statements revived media investigation into alleged negotiations between future CIA chief William Casey and senior Iranian officials in October 1980. The negotiations by Reagan-Bush campaign manager Casey aimed to ensure that the 52 US hostages captured in the Teheran embassy were not released before the November 4th presidential election to ensure that no "October surprise" allowed President Carter to gain another term in office (365)*.

Whilst there clearly was a campaign to discredit his "October surprise" claims, Brenneke made matters worse by embroidering his evidence to inflate his personal involvement in the "October surprise" and P2/P7 stories. His claimed role in actually going to Paris for the October 1980 negotiations was proved to be false when investigation of his credit card records showed him to be at home in Oregon at the time. Nonetheless, his account of the Paris meetings was corroborated by multiple witnesses from America, Iran, France and Germany; a court challenge on charges of perjury in May 1989 ended with Brenneke being acquitted unanimously on all counts. With all its resources, the US government was unable to prove that the main participants named by Brenneke (Bush, Casey and Donald Gregg) were where they said they were on the weekend of the meetings - and this two weeks before the presidential election. On Brenneke's reliability, Sick comments:

> "The bottom line on Brenneke was that he had access on occasion to information that was extremely sensitive and known to only a few individuals. When he spoke publicly about any of these issues, however, he exaggerated his own role and tried to place himself at the centre of the action. The basic information was often true, but the flourishes and claims of firsthand knowledge were often false" (366).

Having seen the strengths and weaknesses of Brenneke's testimony, we can consider his allegations about P2/P7. Brenneke claimed to have been personally involved in CIA funding of the P2 lodge via P7 from 1969 through to the 1980s. On the strength of his past record, one can doubt the degree of his personal involvement, but the details he gives of P7 as a funding channel for P2 are persuasive. Brenneke provided a 30-strong list of members of P7, amongst whom we find three of the longest-serving AESP members: **Ivan Matteo Lombardo** (joined AESP in 1970; by 1978, a Life Member), **Vittorio Pons** (AESP founding member, by 1978 on the Permanent Delegation) and **Ernest Töttösy** (in contact with Damman since 1961; by 1978 a member of an AESP Study Group). In 1972, Valori, Pons and Töttösy attended the Academy's XV Grand Dîner Charlemagne; in 1976, all three attended the XIX Grand Dîner Charlemagne. Pons and Töttösy met a second time in 1976 at the XXV CEDI Congress. The same year, Töttösy and Francis Dessart published a book *Comité Hongrie 1956-76* to commemorate the revolution; in 1977, the two men set up an eponymous committee whose address was the familiar building at 39, rue Belliard, home to CEPIC, PDG, PIO and later MAUE. The list of its Board members is revealing: alongside Töttösy and Dessart, the Board included Damman, Lecerf, Victor de Stankovich, Bernard Mercier and Jacques Borsu.

The late **Victor de Stankovich** was another Hungarian exile who also figured on the P7 list - of the five Belgians on the P7 list, three were linked to Damman: Pons, Töttösy and de Stankovich. De Stankovich was a fervent Atlanticist and a former contributor to Radio Free Europe, Voice of America and *Report and Dispatch from NATO*. **Bernard Mercier** was a Board member of CEPIC, named with de Bonvoisin and Vankerkhoven in the 1981 Sûreté report as financial backers of the Front de la Jeunesse and the NEM Clubs. An intimate of Bougerol, Mercier accompanied Bougerol and CEPIC Senator Angèle Verdin to Spain after Franco's death to visit his grave; all three then went on to attend the XXV CEDI Congress where they met Töttösy and Pons. A 1983 Sûreté report repeated allegations by WNP members that Mercier was a regional representative/inspector of the WNP. **Francis Dessart**, Professor of Communications at the Institute for High Economic and Social Studies in Brussels, was closely linked to the Moonies, the ABN and WACL, speaking at the 1981 WACL conference; he was also one of Aginter Presse's contacts in Belgium along with two other Board members of the Comité Hongrie 1956-76, Damman and Lecerf. **Jacques Borsu** was a former comrade-in-arms of French mercenary Bob Denard and leader of the neo-nazi Parti Européen. Having organised paramilitary training camps for the Flemish fascist Vlaamse Militanten Orde (VMO), he was one of the co-defendants in a 1981 trial of VMO leaders (367)*.

Whilst Brenneke's testimony frequently exaggerated his own involvement and falsified the truth in the process, the fact that Damman's AESP connected key P2 member Valori and alleged P7 members Lombardo, Pons, Töttösy and de Stankovich seems to give some credence to Brenneke's allegations.

FARI AND FREEDOM BLUE CROSS

Jean Vigneau, editor of Violet's ISC outlet, *Le Monde Moderne*, was also listed as a member of the AESP's study groups in 1978. Despite the closure of the *Bulletin de Paris* and the Centre du Monde Moderne as a result of the 1976 funding shortage, *Le Monde Moderne* magazine continued publication, carrying an article on Angola by Robert Moss in 1977. In 1978 however, *Le Monde Moderne* was replaced by a new outlet founded by Crozier and Cercle and 6I member Georges Albertini, ***Le Monde des Conflits***, devoted exclusively to circulating ISC studies in the French-speaking world. Seven issues had appeared by September 1979, but the 6I French bulletin was not yet financially viable; it however continued until at least 1981 (368)*.

Despite the closure of the Centre du Monde Moderne, the Cercle's propaganda effort on behalf of Pretoria was not weakened. With South African funding, the London-based FARI under Cercle members Crozier, Moss and Amery continued the Cercle's campaign in favour of South Africa throughout 1977 by stressing Pretoria's strategic importance for the West in FARI publications: *An American View on the growing Soviet Influence in Africa*, *The Need to safeguard NATO's Strategic Raw Materials from Africa*, and two reports by FARI Deputy Director Ian Greig, *Barbarism and Communist Intervention in the Horn of Africa* and *Some Recent Developments affecting the Defence of the Cape Route*, an update of the ISC's Special Report of March 1974 (369)*.

Greig followed these in December 1977 with his book, *The Communist Challenge to Africa*, which included a preface by FARI Council member Lord Chalfont. The book was published in the UK by Stewart-Smith's FAPC and in South Africa by the Southern African Freedom Foundation (SAFF), a Department of Information front which also paid for trips to Pretoria for Robert Moss and Major-General Sir Walter Walker. The FAPC followed this publication with that in 1978 of *The Bear at the Back Door - the Soviet threat to the West's lifeline in Africa*, written by Walker with an introduction by Amery. The book, whose cover illustration showed a Soviet bear cutting a petrol line running from the Gulf around the Cape to Europe, accused the

US intelligence community of harbouring pro-ANC sympathies and advised a more rigorous approach in countering Soviet advances in Southern Africa (370).

1978 also saw a flood of pro-Pretoria propaganda from FARI: *The growing United States dependency on imported strategic raw materials* and *The war on gold* (both "by our mining correspondent"), *The growing vulnerability of oil supplies* by former ISC researcher Audrey Parry, *Africa: Soviet action and Western inaction* and *Indirect aggression by Warsaw Pact and Cuban forces in the third world*, both by Greig, and *East Germany's role in Africa*, a review of a West German article (371). Also in 1978, Janke of the ISC helped Jan du Plessis of another South African DoI front, the Foreign Affairs Association, to compile the *1978 Freedom Annual* (372)*. The ISC returned to the significance of South Africa for the West's oil supply in a May 1979 ISC Special Report, *The Security of Middle East Oil.*

Much of this output from FARI, the ISC and the FAPC was recycled by Count Hans Huyn in his October 1978 book, *Der Angriff - Der Vorstoss Moskaus zur Weltherrschaft* [The Attack - Moscow's Thrust for World Domination]. Huyn's book, a German-language vehicle for the UK counter-subversion lobby, illustrated the degree of mutual recycling of Cercle propaganda; it lists no fewer than sixteen ISC Conflict Studies, eleven FARI reports and four issues of the *East-West Digest*, quoting prolifically from Crozier, Moss, Greig and Amery, all FARI members. Huyn also recycled the anti-Labour propaganda produced before the 1974 British elections, particularly *Not to be trusted - Extremist Influence on the Labour Party Conference* by Geoffrey Stewart-Smith, future director of FARI. Besides these British Cercle friends, Huyn also drew on several of the Cercle's international contacts for his book: Vigneau of *Le Monde Moderne* and the AESP, Barnett of the NSIC/USCISC, Gerstenmaier and Rohrmoser of the IGfM, and Sager of SOI, five of whose publications were quoted.

In 1978, the British and American ends of the Cercle complex also sought funding from multinational companies for Crozier's recently founded private intelligence service, the 6I. In June 1978, the NSIC held a conference in Brighton on "NATO and the Global Threat - what must be done" which aimed to raise private-sector funds to supplement the activities of the official agencies, "crippled" after the earlier US Congressional Committees and the official "closure" of Britain's IRD in the spring of 1977.

The conference, coordinated by Air Vice-Marshal Stewart Menaul of FARI, was sponsored by Aims, FARI, the ISC, the CSIS and Lombardo's Comitato Atlantico Italiano, amongst others. The "Brighton Declaration" adopted by the conference, written by keynote speaker and ISC Council member Vice-Admiral Sir Louis Le Bailly, stated that "the destruction of the CIA and other assaults on Western intelligence sources make it imperative that the US and its allies should again take the initiative on intelligence, information and counter-intelligence." The conference called for the establishment of a "new" industry-funded group, **Freedom Blue Cross**, to carry out these private propaganda activities - in all likelihood, Freedom Blue Cross was intended to be merely a funding front for Crozier's 6I.

For the Cercle complex, the 1978 Brighton conference was attended by Crozier, Greig, Chalfont, Menaul, Le Bailly, Tanham of the USCISC, and NSIC/ISC benefactor Dick Scaife. According to a 1984 report in *Article 31*, other American and European participants included William Casey, Frank Barnett, Hans Graf Huyn, Gérard Daury, a Board member of the Service d'Action Civique (the Gaullist parallel police whose co-founder and Vice-President was Charles Pasqua) and André Aumonier, President of the Centre chrétien des patrons et dirigeants d'entreprise. The South African delegation included Vice-Admiral James Johnson who had retired as head of the South African Navy in September 1977, Cas de Villiers and Jan du Plessis of the DoI front group, the Foreign Affairs Association, and Gideon Roos of the South African Institute of International Affairs.

Besides other ex-military personnel and academics from Britain, Europe, South Africa and Japan, the conference also brought together representatives of many of the British-based multinationals which had also been funding the four British anti-union groups: Taylor Woodrow, Tate & Lyle, Barclays (Tennant?) and National Westminster banks, Vickers, British American Tobacco and the British subsidiary of ITT, Standard Telephone Cables (STC). Despite the impressive roll-call of companies, big business's interest was lukewarm: National Westminster and STC formally disassociated themselves from the Declaration (other companies did not), and nothing further apparently came of Freedom Blue Cross (373)*.

However, the following year, Crozier continued trying to raise funds from British and German industry for his "transnational security organisation" by circulating a planning paper entitled *The Multinationals and International Security*, as detailed in secret German intelligence reports by top Bavarian security official Hans Langemann, described below.

THE AESP AND MAUE IN 1979-1980

1979 brought considerable organisational upheaval in the Cercle complex. In February, Violet's covert SDECE/Vatican comrade–in-arms for over twenty-five years Reverend Dubois died. Although Violet did not yet know it, in less than five years the revelation of the sniffer plane scandal by Pierre Péan in 1983 would lead to Violet's exposure and force his withdrawal from the Cercle.

Within months of Dubois' death, Violet suffered a second blow; in July 1979, Florimond Damman died of apoplexy, and the AESP was riven by internal rivalries for his succession, a struggle eventually to lead to its closure. The same internal conflict also befell MAUE; in 1978, the veteran anti-communist and former associate of

Damman Roger de Laminne shunned MAUE, claiming that it "passes in Belgium for holding extreme-right opinions verging on fascism", and in August 1979 Baron Adelin de Yperzele de Strihou resigned from the post of MAUE Honorary President, saying that "MAUE had been politically infiltrated" (374).

De Yperzele de Strihou's resignation was particularly sensitive considering his long history of support for groups run by Damman and Vankerkhoven - from at least 1967 on, he had been Chairman of the Board of Damman's AENA/CBUP and a member of the Committee of Patronage of Vankerkhoven's LIL; from 1969 on he was Honorary President of the Cercle des Nations and the initial owner of its magazine, *L'Eventail*, as well as a founding member of the AESP, figuring on its 1970 membership list.

The controversy about MAUE's extremist views no doubt centred around the polarising figure of de Bonvoisin whose ascendancy in both MAUE and the AESP had begun well before Damman's death. As we have seen, both de Bonvoisin and Bougerol had attended the February 1976 AESP Chapter Meeting and accompanied Damman, Jonet and Vankerkhoven to the November 1976 CEDI Congress; de Bonvoisin joined an AESP Study Group in late 1977 and the Advisory Board of MAUE by July 1979. Whilst the presence of the notorious **Baron Noir** led a few personalities to disassociate themselves from MAUE, most were apparently not so particular. With Damman's passing, the road ahead was clear for a recasting of the MAUE Board which formalised the longstanding contacts with several key Belgian figures who had previously remained largely in the background.

MAUE's new 1980 figurehead President was **Robert Nieuwenhuys**, a former Sûreté Division Chief from 1943 to 1945, then attaché to Kings Léopold III and Baudouin until the end of the 1950s. In the mid-1960s, Nieuwenhuys served as Chairman of the Association Atlantique Belge (the Belgian Atlantic Treaty Association component whose Administrator was Damman), and briefly chaired Interdoc Belgium. He later became Deputy Chef de Cabinet for the Secretary-General of NATO from 1971 to 1984, Joseph Luns; in January 1978, he and Secretary-General Luns met President Carter during the latter's visit to Brussels. Damman's diaries show that Nieuwenhuys had been in contact with the AESP/MAUE since at least 1977, and Nieuwenhuys also served with the CEPIC Study Centre.

Joining Nieuwenhuys on the 1980 MAUE Board as Vice-Presidents were not only old hands Jonet and Vankerkhoven, but also two Belgian figures we have not yet met - the controversial former tank commander **General Robert Close** and the veteran television anchorman **Luc Beyer de Ryke**.

Having joined the Royal Military School in 1939, **General Robert Close** was active in the Belgian Resistance before being captured by the Germans and imprisoned from 1942 until the end of the war when he resumed his military career.

In 1961, Close was posted to SHAPE, remaining until 1965. After a brief spell on the staff of the Belgian Defence Cabinet, Close was posted to London as the Military Attaché at the Belgian Embassy from 1966 until 1970; interestingly, this was the period in which the ISC was being set up. After a further four years duty back in Belgium, Close was then appointed Deputy Commandant of the NATO Defence College in Rome in January 1974, serving until June 1976.

However, as the new Programme Studies Director, he soon discomforted NATO with his first Defence College publication in 1975, *The feasibility of a surprise attack against Western Europe*, which imagined an unprovoked and unexpected lightning invasion of West Germany by the Soviet Union. An article in the *Times* by Lord Chalfont in March 1976 publicised Close's war scenario, which then triggered political controversy in Germany - where Close was commanding Belgian tank forces at the time - when it was detailed in a cover story in the *Spiegel* in August 1976. Published in French in 1977 under the title *L'Europe sans défense? 48 heures qui pourraient changer la face du monde* [Europe without defence? 48 hours that could change the face of the world], Close's book caused a storm in the international Press and in the corridors of NATO headquarters in Brussels; in London, the FARI bulletin and Lord Chalfont quickly ensured widespread publicity for the book (375).

Close then returned to Belgium to take up the position of Chairman of the National Committee on Defence Problems under the aegis of Defence Minister Vanden Boeynants, but soon stirred up turmoil again after producing an April 1978 confidential report excoriating the Belgian civil defence system largely staffed by leftist conscientious objectors. Close however did not keep his inflammatory opinions to himself, giving interviews to the Belgian and European Press to express his vision of an enfeebled Europe delivered up to Soviet invasion by the cowardice of peaceniks and the weak-willed self-interest of politicians. His views evidently met with international approval at the highest level: he attended the April 1978 Bilderberg conference in Princeton alongside Henry Kissinger, David Rockefeller, Winston Lord, Carter's National Security Advisor Zbigniew Brzezinski, NATO Supreme Allied Commander Europe Alexander Haig, NATO Secretary-General Joseph Luns, Sir Frederic Bennett and Thatcher's Shadow Foreign Secretary Lord Carrington (376).

In Belgium however, the growing rift over defence policy twinned with the perennially thorny question of constitutional reform soon upset the notoriously fractious political climate. Following the collapse of the Tindemans IV government on the issue of federal reform, a transitional government was formed in October 1978 under Prime Minister Vanden Boeynants, Defence Minister since 1972 as well as Deputy Prime Minister under Tindemans IV. VdB's interim administration supervised a general election held in December 1978 and remained in power until the installation of the new coalition under Flemish conservative Wilfried Martens in April 1979. Martens reconfirmed VdB's position as Defence Minister and Deputy Prime Minister, but this was not to last: ending a seven-year reign as Defence Minister, VdB resigned from the government in October 1979 following his election as President of the PSC. In 1986, he was convicted of fraud and tax evasion, scotching his chances of running for the post of Mayor of Brussels; he died in January 2001.

Besides the person of VdB, a further complication for the serial Martens governments (there would be nine in all) was the coalition's reluctance to deploy American Cruise missiles, decided by NATO in December 1979 – deployment at the Florennes airbase only began in August 1984 with the first sixteen Cruise missiles becoming operational in March 1985. Needless to say, such hesitation was vociferously condemned by the Chairman of the National Committee on Defence Problems - General Close. After publishing an article in the magazine *NATO's Fifteen Nations* which accused a senior Socialist member of the government coalition of being consciously or unconsciously manipulated by Soviet propaganda against deployment, a head-on confrontation between the General and the government could no longer be avoided, and Close was dismissed from the National Committee on Defence Problems in February 1980.

Following his dismissal, Close resigned from military service and within months joined VdB's CEPIC friends in LIL and the post-Damman MAUE, increasingly using the LIL bulletin *Damoclès* as a vehicle for his views as well as delivering the same message to the high-level international audience attending the March 1980 meeting of the AEPE, a speech denounced during a session of the Belgian Chamber of Representatives the following month (377). In March 1981, the recently-founded Belgian Liberal (i.e. Conservative) Parti Réformateur Libéral (PRL) created a PRL Committee on Defence and Security Problems; Close was its Chairman and soon published another swingeing attack on defence policy, *Encore un effort et nous aurons définitivement perdu la Troisième Guerre mondiale* [Another effort and we will have definitively lost the Third World War], co-written with Nicolas de Kerchove, VdB's former chef de cabinet and a Vice-President of the Association Atlantique who also sat on the new MAUE Board with Close (378). In November 1981, Close was elected to the Belgian Senate for the PRL; de Kerchove was his alternate Senator. With its Flemish counterpart, the PVV, the PRL remained in government until 1987.

Close went on to be a central figure in the 1980s 6I propaganda campaign against the nuclear disarmament movement detailed below; he also served as World President of WACL in 1983-84, Vice-President of the General (Political) Affairs Committee of the West European Union (WEU) from 1986 on, Executive Board member of Habsburg's European Freedom Council, President of Western Goals Belgium and a frequent Resistance International signatory. Close continued as a PRL Senator until his resignation, disillusioned, in 1987; he died in 2003.

To turn to another 1980 Vice-President of MAUE alongside Close, **Luc Beyer de Ryke** was the Belgian counterpart of Gerhard Löwenthal, having for 18 years presented the French-speaking Belgian television news from 1961 to 1979. A member of the Honorary Committee of Vankerkhoven's Cercle des Nations in 1969, Beyer de Ryke had been in contact with the AESP since at least October 1971 when he attended an AESP Study Commission. In November 1974, he served as the Chairman of the AESP Press Committee preparing for the 1976 celebration of the Bicentennial of American Independence. After retiring from Belgian television, Beyer took over a vacant seat at the European Parliament in July 1980, sitting until 1989. He was in good company; other MEP Cercle friends during his term of office included fellow MAUE Vice-President Vankerkhoven as well as AESP Life Members Habsburg, Pirkl and Franz von Stauffenberg (379). In parallel to his parliamentary career, Beyer de Ryke also served on the International Council of Presidency of the PEU alongside Habsburg, Sánchez Bella and Jonet, who was also PEU Deputy Secretary-General, running the PEU Brussels bureau. In September 1984, Beyer de Ryke continued on the PEU International Council after its reconstitution following the European Parliament elections.

The post-Damman MAUE Board also included three previous MAUE/AESP members whom we have already met – the Catholic activist, lawyer and later WNP counsel Vincent Van den Bosch who had been Secretary-General of MAUE in the mid-1970s, his former assistant as MAUE Deputy Secretary-General Jean-Paul R. Preumont, and MAUE Board member Baron Bernard Marcken de Mercken. More significantly, the new MAUE Board also integrated two key figures whose longstanding involvement with groups run by Damman and Vankerkhoven had not previously been formalised - **Nicolas de Kerchove** and **Benoît de Bonvoisin**, who until 1979 were the two personal advisors to Defence Minister Vanden Boeynants liaising with Bougerol and the PIO, the politicial direction being given by de Kerchove and the day-to-day management being ensured by de Bonvoisin who subsequently took over PIO funding. Both men later figured prominently in the investigations of the Brabant Wallon killings with de Bonvoisin allegedly funding fascist groups linked to the killings and de Kerchove acting as chef de cabinet to Justice Minister Jean Gol whose insistence on pursuing an implausible criminal motive for the attacks sidetracked the first of the six ultimately fruitless official inquiries.

Later chapters cover the Brabant Wallon killings and mid-1980s Cercle participation in greater detail; at this stage, it is sufficient to note that the 1980 MAUE Board members Close, Jonet, Vankerkhoven, de Kerchove, de Bonvoisin and Beyer de Ryke all attended various Cercle meetings between 1982 and 1985 alongside the key 6I figures of Crozier and Huyn, and several of their agents. Described in the Postscript, these Cercle meetings bringing together veteran CIA and MI6 covert operators with almost the entire MAUE Board certainly give pause for thought when considering the Brabant Wallon killings that were occurring at the same time.

THE ISC AND THE 6I IN 1979

Meanwhile, whilst MAUE was undergoing a revival in Belgium, in Britain some of Crozier's colleagues in the London ISC had become concerned at Crozier's covert activities. "Partly for security reasons, partly because I did not want to involve the ISC Council in my extra-curricular activities, I had not taken any member of it into my confidence about the creation of the 6I. I can only assume some indiscretion within Whitehall, presumably from one of the few officers of SIS [MI6] who were aware of it: Lou [Le Bailly] and Leonard [Schapiro] both had intelligence contacts" (380). Things came to a head when Le Bailly offered a letter of resignation from his post on the ISC Council, stating that Crozier's high profile and other activities were undermining the objectivity and efficiency of the ISC. The conflict escalated to end as a straight choice: Crozier's resignation as Director of the ISC or the resignation of several if not most of the ISC Council members. As Crozier felt that "my 'other' work was more important than running the ISC" (381), Crozier resigned his position in September 1979, to be replaced as ISC Director by Michael Goodwin with Ian Greig becoming Senior Executive (382)*. "Within weeks of my departure, the entire research staff of the ISC had been sacked. Not long after, the research library I had built up over many years was disposed of ...". Despite this upheaval, the ISC continued under a different guise, as will be described in a later chapter.

Crozier's resignation from the ISC did however allow him to concentrate his efforts on the 6I which left ISC premises to set up in offices on Trafalgar Square. With a reserve of $30,000, Crozier expanded the staff of the 6I and began publication of a monthly restricted newsletter, *Transnational Security*. "The recipients of *Transnational Security* [...] fell into three categories. The top layer, which included the President [Reagan] and Mrs. Thatcher, consisted of the Western and friendly Third World leaders, selected politicians, and friendly secret services. In the second layer, as of right, were contributors to our funds. The third layer consisted of our own people: agents and associates in various countries." The bulletin later changed title to *Notes and Analysis* before merging with the Moss-de Borchgrave-Rees newsletter *Early Warning* in early 1986; its Vaduz-based foundation closed down in April 1990 (383).

One early task for the 6I was to recreate the ISC's liquidated research library by compiling "a reference archive of quotations from the already published words of hundreds of extremist politicians and trades unionists, as raw material for analytical reports in the Shield manner. In charge was a former MI5 man who had brought me disquieting information about the paralysis of the Security Service in the late 1970s" (384). The unnamed MI5 man was clearly Charles Elwell, who had retired in May 1979 as head of MI5's F1 counter-subversion branch and immediately joined Shield; he worked with Crozier throughout the 1980s to produce the smear bulletin, *Background Briefing on Subversion*, detailed below.

Crozier records that two early operations for the 6I were in Latin America and in Iran prior to the 1979 revolution. In Argentina, Uruguay and Chile, the 6I advised the armed forces and the security services in "the use of some of the non-violent, psychological techniques with which we had been experimenting in Europe" (385). Crozier also spent several days closeted with General Pinochet, drafting fourteen articles of the new Chilean Constitution. Apart from supporting Pinochet and other Latin American regimes, the 6I was also increasingly concerned by the instability of the Shah's regime in Iran in the months preceding the Islamic revolution. Here again, the 6I's experience in psychological warfare techniques was needed; the brutal repression by the Shah's secret service SAVAK and the armed forces served only to feed the rising tide of Islamic fervour. Jean Violet in particular urged Crozier to travel to Iran to talk with the Shah. **Major-General Douglas Brown** who was Secretary of the Dulverton Trust, one of the ISC's financial backers (386)*, found an intermediary for the Cercle in the person of **General Charles Alan Fraser**, from 1973 on South Africa's Consul-General in Iran and a personal friend of the Shah. In the spring of 1978, Crozier flew to Teheran where he met Fraser; the two men were then received by the Shah, who seemed reluctant to heed Crozier's warning that the CIA would not act to save the Shah and that psychological operations by the 6I were necessary to counter the climate of revolutionary unrest.

In May, shortly after this first visit to Teheran, Crozier met **Prince Turki al-Faisal**, brother of Prince Saud al-Faisal, the Saudi Foreign Minister since 1975. Six months earlier, Turki had replaced his uncle, Turkish-born Kamal Adham, as head of Al Mukhabarat Al A'amah, the Saudi intelligence service. As such, he would become a key link in the covert war waged against Soviet forces occupying Afghanistan by the coalition of the CIA, the ISI - the Pakistani military intelligence service which created the Taliban - and the Afghan mujaheddin, including one of Turki's personal contacts, Osama bin Laden. In recognition of his services, Turki was one of the Taliban's guests of honour at the proclamation of the Islamic Republic of Afghanistan in Kabul on 28th April 1992.

Turki would become one of the world's longest-serving intelligence chiefs, his reign lasting from September 1977 until August 2001 just prior to the WTC attack when, as an all-too-visible personification of US-Saudi links, he was removed as head of the Saudi intelligence service to assuage growing anti-American feeling in Saudi Arabia. However, he was too valuable a man to lose and, after a "decent interval", was appointed Saudi Ambassador to the UK in late 2002 where he played a prominent role in the media drive for war with Iraq in 2003 (387)*.

This first contact between Crozier and Turki al-Faisal was arranged via Dan McMichael, administrator of the Scaife family's trust funds, a major source of funding for the NSIC and ISC. Crozier briefed the Saudi prince about the 6I and its initial contact with the Shah. A proposed second meeting with Prince Turki al-Faisal in the summer of 1978 did not come off, but Crozier and the Cercle finally met the Saudi intelligence chief again at a Cercle meeting in Bavaria in the spring of 1979 when Turki al-Faisal accepted to act as the main backer for a planned 6I radio propaganda operation in the Middle East, detailed in the next chapter.

In the meanwhile, the Shah was reconsidering Crozier's offer of 6I help for psy-ops campaigns and contacted Turki al-Faisal, who put in a good word for the 6I. Turki al-Faisal's recommendation of the 6I carried a lot of weight for the Iranians; Turki al-Faisal was the Saudi representative on the **Safari Club**, a network for covert cooperation between the French, Saudi, Iranian, Moroccan and Egyptian intelligence services, founded by Alexandre de Marenches on 1st September 1976 with headquarters in Cairo (388). Besides Turki al-Faisal's recommendation, Cercle participant General Fraser had also been advising the Shah to accept the 6I's help: "he had raised with the Shah the question of financial assistance for our group, in return for our advice and expertise in combating the wave of subversion that threatened to sweep him off his throne" (389). Fraser advised Crozier to involve ISC Council member Sir Robert Thompson whose counter-insurgency experience during the Malayan campaign and the early stages of the Vietnam War could be useful in the Iranian context.

In August 1978, the Shah reversed his previous decision and invited the Cercle to Teheran; although Violet was prevented from travelling due to ill-health, Crozier, Elliott, Thompson and a team of advisors flew to Teheran on 3rd September. The Cercle team stopped off in France to pick up Antoine Pinay, whose long acquaintance with the Shah would add authority to the Cercle's proposals. The Cercle team met the Shah for two and a half hours, but were struck by his apathy. They then went on to discuss the situation with SAVAK Deputy Chief General Ali Motazed and SAVAK's Head of Research, Kaveh. The Cercle and SAVAK officials discussed a plan to distribute leaflets to split the tacit alliance between the Shiite fundamentalists and the Communist Tudeh party. The time was past however for such subtleties; the commander of the Teheran garrison General Gholam Ali Oveissi, who had planned to meet the Cercle team, was unable to attend due to the unrest in the Iranian capital. The Cercle's visit came at a crucial time: the caretaker Prime Minister resigned the day after the Cercle's meetings, and martial law was declared four days later, just after the Cercle team's return to London. FARI got to work, producing Ian Greig's *Iran and the lengthening Soviet shadow*.

In early November, the Shah finally decided to give the go-ahead for the Cercle to intervene, and the top civilian in SAVAK flew to London to spend a full week closeted with Robert Moss transforming a pile of SAVAK reports on Communist influence in the revolution into an ISC Conflict Study. Following publication of Moss's Conflict Study *The Campaign to Destabilise Iran* in November 1978, the Shah authorised a first annual payment of £1 million to the 6I for a psychological action operation, but the decision to involve the 6I further came too late as the ailing Shah was overthrown in January 1979 before the payment could be made. Rockefeller and

Kissinger pressured Carter to allow the Shah to visit New York from October to December for medical treatment, but to no avail: his cancer was too advanced. The exiled Shah's death in July 1980 did not however end the 6I's interest in Iran; Crozier "felt that there remained at least a fighting chance of a coup to overthrow Ayatollah Khomeini's fledgling regime. The outbreak of the Iraq-Iran War encouraged this view" (390). Crozier therefore flew three times to Cairo between July and November 1980 to meet the Shah's widow and President Sadat, but nothing came of these meetings apart from a 6I report circulated to Mrs. Thatcher and President Reagan.

THE LANGEMANN PAPERS

Whilst the 6I launched truly global operations in Latin America and in Iran in 1978-79, they were not neglecting the European scene. Once Margaret Thatcher had won the general election in Britain in May 1979, the next priority was the October 1980 election for West German Chancellor, where Cercle co-founder Franz Josef Strauß was standing as a candidate.

An unprecedented insight into Cercle/6I operations at this time was given by the September 1982 publication in the *Spiegel* of secret intelligence reports written by **Hans Langemann**, the head of Bavarian State Security, whom we have already met as a close collaborator of key German 6I member, Hans Christoph Freiherr von Stauffenberg and his private CDU/CSU intelligence service. Langemann had served in the BND from 1957 to 1970, where he rose to become a key operative for "Special Operations" working closely with Brigadier-General Wolfgang Langkau, head of the BND's Strategic Service and future technical advisor to the Stauffenberg network (391). In 1970, Langemann was appointed security chief for the 1972 Munich Olympics – a disaster as it turned out - and then served in the Bavarian Interior Ministry as head of its State Protection Department, in which capacity he acted as top linkman between the Bavarian government, Strauß's CSU party, the Bavarian regional office of the BfV security service and the BND based in Pullach, a suburb of the Bavarian capital Munich.

Unbeknownst to Crozier and the 6I, Langemann had been receiving full reports on the Cercle from Stauffenberg (392)*, information which Langemann then repeated in a series of secret intelligence reports, addressed to either Gerold Tandler, Bavarian Interior Minister, or to Tandler's Private Secretary, Dr. Georg Waltner, who also received the private intelligence reports from the Stauffenberg network. Langemann's reports to Tandler and Waltner quoted a planning paper by Crozier describing the efforts being made to provide a solid operational basis for the 6I by canvassing leaders of industry for financial support. The reports also detailed the high-level support Crozier could count on - amongst those named in the Langemann papers were two serving intelligence chiefs: **Sir Arthur "Dickie" Franks**, Chief of MI6 from 1978 to 1981, and the **Comte Alexandre de Marenches**, Director of the SDECE from 1970 to 1981. Langemann's reports also revealed that one of the major goals for the 6I was to shape the future decade by supporting three key right-wing election candidates in 1979-1980: Margaret Thatcher in Britain, Franz Josef Strauß in Germany, and Ronald Reagan in America.

"PROTECTED SOURCE

Contributions to State Protection

Minister's Eyes Only

*****

Brian Crozier, London

- The Multinationals and International Security (393)*.

- Project Victory for Strauß

*****

1. The militant conservative London publicist, Brian CROZIER, until September 1979 Director of the famous Institute for the Study of Conflict, has been working with his wide circle of friends in international politics to set up an anonymous action group ("transnational security organisation") and to widen its field of operations. His intention is to approach multinational companies about this group, which was the reason for drawing up this planning paper. Not least of all, so as to obtain the necessary funding: $750,000 to start with and up to $3 million. CROZIER has already approached German industrialists and shown them this paper, despite it being stamped "Secret". A new publication *Transnational Security* is being prepared so as to promote this project. For the reasons mentioned under item 2, it should be pointed out that CROZIER has worked with the CIA for many years. One has to assume, therefore, that they are fully aware of his activities.

He has extensive contacts with members (or more accurately, former members) of the most important (Western) security and intelligence agencies, such as the Comte de MERONGES [sic], ex-Director of the French SDECE (394)*. Furthermore, it is known that he has a good relationship with Mr. "Dickie" FRANKS, Chief of the British Secret Intelligence Service (so-called MI6) (395)*; his closest assistant, Mr. N. ELLIOTT was a Division Head in MI6.

CROZIER, ELLIOTT and FRANKS were recently invited to Chequers by Mrs. THATCHER for a working meeting. It must therefore be concluded that MI6 as well is fully aware of, if not indeed one of the main sponsors of, the anonymous security organisation.

Also very closely connected to Mrs. THATCHER is the prominent journalist Robert MOSS, who is involved in the promotion of the group's media actions together with Fred LUCHSINGER (396)*, Dr. KUX (397)* of the Swiss Intelligence Service (Colonel BOTTA), and Richard LÖWENTHAL (398)*.

Amongst other points in the planning paper are:

- V, i

Specific aims within this general framework are:

To affect a change of government in (a) the United Kingdom (accomplished) and (b) in West Germany, to defend freedom of trade and movement and to oppose all forms of subversion including terrorism ...

-VI A

What the group can do:

Get certain well-known journalists in Britain, the USA and other countries to produce contributions. Access to television.

Guarantee a lobby in influential circles, whether directly or through middlemen, witting or unwitting.

Organise public demonstrations in particular areas on themes to be selected.

Involve (exploit) the main security and intelligence services both to obtain information and to pass on (feed) information to these agencies.

Covert financial transactions for political purposes.

- VI B

What the group can do if funding is available:

Conduct international campaigns aiming to discredit hostile personalities and/or events.

Create our own intelligence service specialising in particular themes.

> Set up offices under suitable cover, each run by a full-time coordinator. Current plans include London, Washington, Paris, Munich (!), Madrid ...
>
> 2. As far as can be judged by an outsider, CROZIER has, together with his group, launched the project "Victory for Strauß" using the media or covert tactics applied in Great Britain (major themes, amongst others: communist-extremist subversion of the ruling party and trade unions, KGB direction of terrorism, crippling of internal security). He will support and direct the future development of the project on an international level.
>
> However, for the present time, consideration must be given to the fact that the personal connections of the CROZIER group, in particular his affinity to personalities from the secret services, and the tactical and conspiratorial aims and proposed methods for the "Victory for Strauß" project described in the planning paper, can in fact be completely identified, even if this was not their intention. It also appears almost certain that on the basis of his project, CROZIER must provoke sharp defensive reactions from those security and intelligence services whose supervisory heads do not follow his political line, such as the BND and BfV. As CROZIER mentions both his basic plan and the Victory project to those he talks to, the problem this causes is obvious.
>
> The possible, but avoidable, consequence may be definitely undesirable negative publicity.
>
> Munich, 8th November 1979
> Dr. Langemann, Department I F" (399).

The mention by Langemann of a working meeting at Chequers between Thatcher, Franks and the 6I team of Crozier and Elliott shortly after Thatcher's election victory is highly significant. Franks's presence with Crozier and Elliott at the Chequers 6I meeting raises the question whether the support given to Thatcher by the retired MI6 officers and IRD assets in the counter-subversion lobby was not echoed by serving MI6 officers such as Franks - MI6 Chief from 1978 to 1981. Franks was renowned as a hard right-winger who had sat uncomfortably as deputy to Maurice Oldfield, a man of liberal views. An early highlight of Franks's MI6 career had been working with G. K. Young on the 1953 Mossadeq coup; he later served as MI6 station chief in Germany from 1962 to 1966. A few months after the Langemann report was written, Franks would play a key role in circulating the manuscript of the Chapman Pincher/Peter Wright book *Their Trade is Treachery* around Whitehall; his letter dated 15th December 1980 was produced as evidence in the Australian *Spycatcher* trial as proof that the British Government, MI5 and MI6 had known long in advance that Wright was passing on his allegations of Soviet subversion within MI5 and the Wilson government to Chapman Pincher – indeed, it had been Thatcher's advisor, wartime MI5 officer Victor Lord Rothschild, who had first introduced Wright to Pincher and then encouraged Wright to publish his memoirs.

Referring to this author's previous research on the Cercle published in *Lobster* magazine in 1988-89, Crozier writes, not without some guile:

> "Much has been written about the Cercle, from the outside, and much of it has been false or misleading. For example, it has been alleged that it was a forum for bringing together 'international linkmen of the Right', such as myself and Robert Moss, with secret service chiefs like Alexandre de Marenches, long-time head of the French SDECE, and Sir Arthur ('Dickie') Franks, sometime head of MI6. There are pitfalls in writing about confidential matters from the outside, and drawing on similarly handicapped material. In fact, neither [de] Marenches nor Dickie Franks ever attended a Pinay Cercle meeting during the years I was involved with it: between 1971 and 1985. There was a very good reason why [de] Marenches would never have been invited. The inspirer and long-serving organizer of the Pinay Cercle was Jean Violet, who for many years had been retained by the SDECE as Special Advocate [...] Inevitably he had made enemies. One of them was a close friend of the Comte de Marenches who, on being appointed Director-General of the SDECE in 1970, closed down Violet's office without notice. The two men – [de] Marenches and Violet - never met. As for Dickie Franks, he never attended Cercle meetings, for the reason that Directors of SIS do not involve themselves in such private groups. So he was never invited" (400).

This denial of links between the Cercle, de Marenches and Franks is certainly disingenuous if not deliberately misleading, seeking to use the lack of formal involvement in the Cercle to discount any cooperation with it. Whilst serving Directors of SIS or the SDECE might not like to be seen at Cercle meetings, Langemann repeats information from Cercle and 6I insider Stauffenberg that Franks did accompany the 6I core of Crozier and Elliott – not to a Cercle gathering but to to a working meeting with Thatcher shortly after her election victory. As for de Marenches, aside from any animosity with Violet, the French Count had for many years been an intimate advisor to Cercle co-founder Franz Josef Strauß.

The "undesirable negative publicity" feared by Langemann did indeed arise: the *Spiegel* got wind of Strauß's international links and published a two-part series in February and March 1980. Besides documenting Strauß's support for Spínola and Arriaga and his covert funding of Fraga Iribarne, Silva Muñoz and Martínez Esteruelas, the *Spiegel* articles revealed Strauß's close friendship with the Comte de Marenches, reporting that Strauß frequently met de Marenches, either at the *Piscine* (SDECE headquarters) or at Strauß's Paris hotel, *le Bristol*. The *Spiegel* also reproduced a letter from Huyn to Strauß dated 13th February 1979, which mentioned the Cercle Pinay for the first time:

> "Furthermore, I would like to inform you that I have just received news from Riyadh confirming that Prince Turki al-Faisal, head of the Saudi intelligence service and brother of the Foreign Minister, will be attending the Cercle meeting in Wildbad Kreuth [since 1975, the international conference centre of the Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung]. I think his participation will be of particular interest in view of the Middle East situation [i.e. the overthrow of the Shah one month previously]" (401).

Following the initial contact between Crozier and Prince Turki al-Faisal in the spring of 1978 and the subsequent Cercle meeting in summer 1979 referred to above, the 6I and the Saudi intelligence chief worked together on a propaganda project detailed in another report by Langemann written on 7th March 1980. At the same time as Voice of America was rushing to expand its broadcasts to the Islamic border populations of the Soviet Union (402), the Cercle/6I was preparing for its radio debut. Together with the Saudi intelligence service, the Cercle/6I planned to set up a powerful transmitter in Saudi Arabia for propaganda broadcasts to the same target audience as VoA: the Soviet Islamic world radicalised by the Iranian revolution in January 1979 and the Soviet invasion of Afghanistan in December 1979.

Huyn had already proposed similar action in his October 1978 book *Der Angriff - Der Vorstoss Moskaus zur Weltherrschaft* [The Attack - Moscow's Thrust for World Domination], where, as a conclusion, Huyn gave a list of twenty proposals for action to be undertaken if the West was to "survive in freedom". The ninth proposed action on the list explains the background to the joint Cercle/6I-Saudi project:

> "The people in the Soviet zone of domination must be given more intensive exposure to objective news from the free world ... In the hermetically sealed system of non-freedom of the Soviet bloc, the people can only be reached very partially by a few shortwave broadcasts. These options must be considerably strengthened and expanded; all the developments of modern technology - including satellite television broadcasting - should be used" (403).

Although no follow-up to the radio project has been identified, this Cercle/6I-Saudi cooperation did produce the 1980 FARI bulletin *The importance of Saudi Arabia's security to the West* by Audrey Parry.

Langemann's March 1980 report also gave general background information on the Cercle and specifically dealt with the damaging revelations that had just appeared in the *Spiegel*:

> "Contributions to State Protection
>
> Confidential note for Dr. Waltner, as agreed in conversation.

CERCLE

(*Spiegel*, 10/80, pg 23)

1. As far as my previous BND knowledge and my current information go, this Circle, obviously named with the aim of defaming it, consists of a loose gathering of various conservative and anti-communist politicians, publicists, bankers and VIPs from other professions that meets about twice a year in various parts of the world. Its origins lie with the former French Prime Minister, Antoine PINAY. The Circle, which also invites guests, still exists today.

The last meeting of the PINAY CIRCLE was held over the weekend of 1st December 1979 in the Madison Hotel in Washington. Amongst the participants were former [Regional] Minister NARJES (Germany), former Air Minister Julian AMERY (UK), former CIA Director William COLBY, Federal Bank Director VOLKERS [sic, Paul Volcker] and Heritage Trust Foundation President FEULNER (USA) (404)*, as well as [former] Finance Minister PANDOLFI (Italy) and General FRAZER [sic] (South Africa) (405)*.

2. Acting as a kind of coordinator from the original French side is the Parisian lawyer Jean VIOLET who took over the operational side of the Circle as PINAY himself got older (406)*.

VIOLET has connections to several Western intelligence services; certainly to the CIA, to the French SDECE, to the British SIS and to the Swiss Military Intelligence Service, particularly to its Head of Procurement, Colonel BOTTA.

3. GEHLEN, who was always interested in the undertaking, its personalities and its results, recruited VIOLET as a "Special Contact" and for many years provided him with DM 6,000 a month. GEHLEN claimed that this sum had been agreed with the head of the SDECE, at that time General JACQUIER [from 1962 to 1966], because VIOLET was receiving the same amount from the SDECE.

As I was the main operative for GEHLEN's "Special Operations", I met with VIOLET on many occasions in his Paris flat, together with my fellow operative, the late Marchese de MISTURA.

Certainly, VIOLET and I never discussed the PINAY CIRCLE in any detail. However, I did once give him DM 30,000 from GEHLEN "for this purpose". The reporting to this complex, which also included the French statesman POHER, was essentially channelled through Special Contacts Dr. Johannes SCHAUFF and the late Klaus DOHRN. Later, the Parliamentary Secretary of State in the Chancellor's Office, Baron GUTTENBERG, personally gave me the task of keeping "the dubious Mr. VIOLET" (cover name: Veilchen - Little Violet) under observation for counter-espionage purposes. Nothing came of this for reasons I don't need to go into here.

One should stress however that VIOLET himself has never boasted of possible contact with the Prime Minister [Strauß], although GEHLEN and GUTTENBERG always insisted on this. As politically coloured gossiping and rumour-mongering are basically "not professional" in counter-espionage, I never attempted to ask VIOLET about this, whether directly or by hinting at it. GEHLEN accepted this, and in particular, my direct superior at the time, General LANGKAU (Strategic Service), specifically approved it.

4. Recently, we have noted the establishment of a "command staff" or Inner Circle which develops suitable lines of action for current political questions. The activities of Brian CROZIER (Transnational Security) have already been the subject of previous reports.

On the 5th and 6th January 1980, a group from within the Circle met in Zürich to discuss executive measures. VIOLET led the meeting; amongst others present were Count HUYN MP, Brian CROZIER (previously a longtime CIA agent), Nicholas ELLIOTT (former Division Head in the British SIS), former General STILWELL (ex-US Defence Intelligence Agency) [sic], and Mr. JAMESON (ex-CIA).

The main themes for discussion included:

a) international promotion of the Prime Minister [Strauß].

b) influencing the situation in Rhodesia and South Africa from a European Conservative viewpoint.

c) the establishment of a powerful directional radio station in Saudi Arabia aiming at the Islamic region and including the corresponding border populations of the Soviet Union.

Note:

These commendable goals have not been tackled with sufficient attention paid to protecting secrecy in my view. Therefore, negative publicity cannot be ruled out. There is simply too much "loose talk". There is an urgent need for professionally restricted consultation on foreign intelligence service influences both here and abroad.

Munich, 7th March 1980
Dr. Langemann, Department I F" (407).

Langemann's report was the first primary source to describe the December 1979 Cercle meeting and reveal the presence of both former CIA Director William Colby and Conservative MP Julian Amery, soon to become Chairman of the Cercle. His account also names for the first time a powerful Cercle ally – the German MP from 1972 to 1981 **Karl-Heinz Narjes**, who went on to provide the Cercle with a link to the very top of the European Community throughout the 1980s.

Having joined the German diplomatic service in 1955, the same year as Huyn, Narjes was a key official in the fledgling EEC throughout its first decade. From the EEC's creation in January 1958 until 1967, Narjes served as deputy chef de cabinet and then chef de cabinet to the first President of the EEC Commission, Adenauer intimate **Walter Hallstein** (408)*. Hallstein had previously led the German delegation in the negotiations to create the EEC; the delegation's Secretary was Huyn. As Hallstein's right-hand man, Narjes helped to resolve de Gaulle's boycott of the EEC from July 1965 to January 1966 ("*la politique de la chaise vide*"). After Hallstein's retirement in 1967, Narjes served until 1969 as Director-General of the EEC's Press and Information service; its Director of Radio, Television and Film until 1973 was Rudolf Dumont du Voitel, a member of the AESP's Permanent Delegation from 1970 on. In 1972, Narjes left Brussels and returned to German national politics as a CDU MP, serving as the CDU spokesman on foreign economic policy and chairing the Bundestag Committee for Economic Affairs from 1972 until 1976; he was spoken of as a future German Finance or Economics minister.

In January 1981, just over a year after the Cercle meeting detailed by Langemann, Narjes resumed his EEC career as German appointee to the crucial post of European Commissioner for the Internal Market, Customs Union and Enlargement, attending at least four Cercle meetings between 1982 and 1984, detailed in the Postscript. In January 1985, Narjes switched portfolio to become Vice-President of the Commission for Industry, Science, Research and Innovation until retiring in 1988. His successor as Commission Vice-President in charge of Science, Research and Innovation from 1989 to 1993 was fellow 1979 Cercle member Filippo Maria Pandolfi (409)*.

Besides describing the presence at the 1979 Cercle meeting of Amery, Colby, Narjes and Feulner, Langemann's report also raises more fundamental questions about the relationship between the Cercle and the 6I. His comment about the emergence of a "command staff or Inner Circle" illustrates the difficulty in separating the functions of the Cercle as a confidential discussion forum and the 6I as a covert intelligence agency. Crozier himself comments on the point in reference to this author's previous articles on the Cercle:

> "To describe it [the Cercle] as a forum is strictly accurate. There were no members in a formal sense. It was an informal group of broadly like-minded people, who met twice a year, once in America, once in Europe. Usually, some distinguished figure was invited to speak. Amongst the guest speakers at times when I was present were Strauss, Henry Kissinger (for whom I interpreted), Zbigniew Brzezinski, David Rockefeller and Giulio Andreotti. Within the wider Cercle, a smaller gathering called the Pinay Group met on occasion to discuss possible action. [...] Some outsiders have jumped to the wrong conclusion that the Pinay Cercle was the same as my 'secret' organisation. One of them was a CIA veteran whom I had known since my FWF days. There was in fact some minor overlapping, but the functions of the 6I, which I have been describing, were quite different. Some members of the 6I's 'Politburo' also attended the Cercle meetings; others did not. Most members of the Cercle were unaware of the existence of the 6I. Many on the 6I's networks had no connection with the Cercle. For all these reasons, the Langemann 'revelations' were deeply misleading" (410).

However, as is apparent from the 1982-85 Cercle participants' lists detailed in the Postscript, it is not Langemann's account but Crozier's attempted distancing of the Cercle from the 6I which is "deeply misleading". Langemann's "Inner Circle" is virtually identical to the 6I 'Politburo'; far from "some minor overlapping", both bodies included the key figures of Violet, Crozier, Elliott, Huyn, Stilwell and Jameson, the latter two being described below. Only a few of the 6I 'Politburo' members were not in attendance at this "command staff" meeting, amongst them Walters, Stauffenberg, Horchem and Albertini.

Langemann also mentions for the first time two senior American intelligence veterans who served on the 6I's 'Politburo', the first of whom was four-star Army **General Richard Giles 'Dick' Stilwell**. Stilwell's post-war career started in 1947 with a two-year posting to Rome as Special Military Advisor to the American Ambassador. From 1949 to 1952, he served as Chief of the Far East Division of the CIA (not the DIA as Langemann asserts). After a tour of duty in Korea in 1952-53, Stilwell worked as Chief of Strategic Planning at SHAPE from 1956 to 1958 before being appointed in 1959 to the President's Committee for the Study of Foreign Assistance Programs which developed US counter-insurgency policy, notably producing "one of the most influential documents of the past quarter-century" (411) - the May 1959 report *Training under the Mutual Security Program* which coined the term "pacification" (412). Stilwell's policies laid the groundwork for the American pacification program in Vietnam which were implemented successively by three Cercle contacts - Thompson, Komer and Colby (413)*.

Between 1963 and 1969, Stilwell again served in the Asian theatre, firstly in 1963 in Vietnam, when he worked as Chief of Staff to General Westmoreland within the Military Advisory Command Vietnam (MACV), then in Thailand as Commander of the US Military Assistance Command from 1965 to 1967 before returning to Vietnam from 1968 to 1969. After Vietnam, Stilwell filled political posts, first as Deputy Chief of Staff for US Military Operations at the United Nations from 1969 to 1972, and then as Commander-in-Chief of the UN and US Forces in South Korea from 1973 to 1976, the year of his retirement from active service. Less than a year after Langemann's 1980 report, Stilwell was appointed Reagan's Deputy Under-Secretary of Defense for Policy, a post he filled from February 1981 to February 1985; he joined the ASC Board and the 'Politburo' of the 6I soon after his appointment (414)*.

The second 6I 'Politburo' member mentioned by Langemann was **Donald 'Jamie' Jameson**, from 1951 on a twenty-year veteran of the CIA's Directorate of Operations who headed the branch in charge of Soviet Bloc covert action and defectors from 1962 to 1969. Jameson's branch encouraged dissidents behind the Iron Curtain, debriefed defectors and helped smuggle banned books to and from the Soviet Union and its satellite countries. Jameson had first debriefed Golitsyn, the defector who "confirmed" the fears of the ultras within the CIA, MI6 and MI5 about Soviet penetration of Western governments and intelligence services, ensnarling the CIA, MI6 and MI5 in fruitless and highly destructive molehunts. Sceptical of Golitsyn's claims and wary of the high-level attention the Soviet defector was being paid, Jameson recommended caution; he was however overridden by Angleton, who removed Jameson as Golitsyn's debriefer.

After retiring from the CIA in 1973, Jameson helped set up the "private" defector reception group, the Jamestown Foundation, serving as its Vice-President. From at least 1977 on, Jameson was the organiser of the once-yearly Cercle meetings in Washington DC (415). Besides this, Jameson worked from 1980 to 1987 as Vice-President of Research Associates International Ltd, a Washington-based "risk assessment consultancy" set up in 1979 by veteran CIA covert operator **Theodore Shackley** (416)*, who himself was a core Cercle member as described below. Jameson also worked with Romerstein and Cline as an advisor to the Nathan Hale Institute, incorporated in 1983 by **W. Raymond Wannall**, the longstanding head of the FBI's Intelligence Division until his retirement with the rank of Assistant Director in 1976 (417)*. The Institute's parent body, the Hale Foundation, was co-chaired by General Graham, and included Barnett, Clare Booth Luce, former Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff Admiral Thomas H. Moorer of the ASC and NSIC (on whom see below), Angleton's former Deputy in CIA Counter-Intelligence Raymond Rocca and Wannall as members.

VICTORY FOR STRAUSS

The outlines of the operation to promote Strauß as candidate for the German Chancellorship in the October 1980 elections are quite clear: within a month of the

January Cercle meeting, Crozier in Britain and Löwenthal in Germany had launched a coordinated pro-Strauß campaign. The task was not easy: Strauß's previous run for the Chancellorship in the early 1960s had been dashed by his murky reputation, already tarnished in the 1962 "*Spiegel* Affair" which revealed that he had orchestrated the illegal extradition from Spain of the magazine's deputy Chief Editor, Conrad Ahlers. In June 1963, the *Spiegel* alleged that Strauß had been involved in a fraud whilst serving as German Defence Minister; he was later exonerated but the scandal scotched his chances of rising from Defence Minister to the Chancellorship. In the mid-1970s, Strauß was implicated in the Lockheed bribes scandal following his approval as Defence Minister of the disastrous German purchase in 1959 of the Lockheed F-104 Starfighter or "Widowmaker" aircraft, 61 of which had crashed by mid-1966; of 916 German Starfighters ultimately purchased, 292 crashed (418)*.

This time around, the Cercle was determined to discredit the *Spiegel*'s relentless revelations of Strauß's parapolitical links. The tactic used was the old ploy of accusing awkward journalists of being in the pay of the Kremlin. Within a month of the January 1980 Cercle meeting, Löwenthal had founded a Strauß support group, the **Bürgeraktion Demokraten für Strauß**. The group's posters alleged the existence of a systematic anti-Strauß campaign steered from Moscow:

> "Germans! Do you know who is behind the anti-Strauß campaigns? Journalists financed by East Germany, cheque fraudsters, dope smokers, terrorist sympathisers, Communists and unfortunately also Social Democrats. Stop this left-wing Popular Front!" (419)*.

Grau's Frankfurt Study Group was also involved in the pro-Strauß campaign with a typically devious 'political action' – plastering the election posters of prominent SPD moderates with forged stickers reading "Better the Russians in Heilbronn than Strauß in Bonn! Détente! - Young Socialists in the SPD". Grau's action team were caught by the police, the Study Group offices searched and considerable amounts of further forged campaigning material found, e.g. "Popular Front for Schmidt!". Grau was later prosecuted for this campaign (420), an action which led to further police investigations of Grau and, ultimately, to his dramatic death in 1984, detailed below.

International support for the Strauß campaign was provided by Crozier who from February on planted pro-Strauß articles in **Sir James Goldsmith**'s magazine ***NOW!***, for which Crozier edited an entire section during the magazine's short lifespan from 1979 to 1981. In the event, the Cercle's efforts were fruitless; although the CDU/CSU got 45% of the secondary votes, Helmut Schmidt won 43% for the SDP and Hans-Dietrich Genscher 10% for the FDP, ensuring the continuation of the Socialist/Liberal coalition.

The failed pro-Strauß campaign did however have one later consequence. One article by Crozier, published on 15th February 1980, had dealt in depth with the allegations made by the *Spiegel* in 1963. Goldsmith himself later joined in the campaign; on 21st January 1981, he addressed the Conservative Media Committee in the House of Commons on "The Communist Propaganda Apparatus and Other Threats in the Media". In his speech, he quoted the Czech defector Major-General Jan Sejna who "admitted that the campaign by the German news magazine *Der Spiegel* to discredit Franz Josef Strauss was orchestrated by the KGB". The *Spiegel* naturally sued. Goldsmith then employed Crozier and a team of twenty researchers for three and a half years to back up his case, claiming to have interviewed every major defector from the Eastern bloc (421)*.

By 1984, however, Goldsmith was seeking to retreat from his previous claims: in a speech to the Defence Strategy Forum of the NSIC in Washington on 24th May 1984, whilst repeating that the KGB was behind the campaign against Strauß, he added: "this does not mean that the publications or journalists in question were knowingly involved or that they were aware that their views were being manipulated and used by the Soviets for their own purposes" (422). Goldsmith's case collapsed when one of his star witnesses, the temporary Soviet defector, Oleg Bitov, returned to the Soviet Union. Bitov later wrote of the episode in the *Moscow Literary Gazette*, correctly stating that Crozier was coordinating the research from his Regent Street office (423).

Eventually, in October 1984, an out-of-court settlement was reached between the *Spiegel* and Goldsmith, with Goldsmith paying his costs; despite this legal retreat, Goldsmith took out full-page adverts in the British and German Press, declaring the *Spiegel* to be "a victim of the propaganda techniques of the KGB". Much of Crozier's research was later recycled by Chapman Pincher in his 1985 book, *The Secret Offensive*, a major outlet for the 6I and its allies (424)*.

THE REAGAN CAMPAIGN

The final Cercle document from this period came not from Langemann but from German investigative journalist Jürgen Roth, who published the alleged minutes of the next Cercle meeting, held in Zürich on 28th and 29th June 1980. The "Victory for Strauß" campaign was in full swing, but despite Crozier and Löwenthal's efforts, it was not going well, particularly because of the revelations in the *Spiegel* in February and March. Besides following progress on the Strauß project and the radio station in Saudi Arabia, the Cercle turned their attention to the looming American Presidential elections:

> "A further meeting of the Circle was held under the chairmanship of Violet and attended by those present at the previous meeting, including Colonel Botta of the Swiss Intelligence Service and Fred Luchsinger, head of the *Neue Zürcher Zeitung*.

> 1. The prospects for positive influence on the election campaign in favour of Strauß cannot be judged to be very favourable. While the many promotional influences in US, UK and Swiss newspapers were welcomed by their readers, their impact in the Federal Republic lagged far behind. Furthermore, it seems doubtful that Strauß will be able to match the dynamic foreign policy initiatives that Federal Chancellor Schmidt has been able to make. In contrast to the situation in the US, where President Carter is confronted with the shattered remains of his foreign policy - difficult to present favourably for the election campaign, even in part - Schmidt has understood how to make clear and prominent political steps which represent an achievable goal for the population's desire for peace. Luchsinger said that he was prepared to produce a series of three leading articles highlighting the tendency of current government policy in Bonn to weaken NATO. Crozier felt that similar steps could be tried again through Moss in London and the *Baltimore Sun* in the US (425)*.
>
> 2. Count Huyn reported on his meeting with the head of the Saudi security service about the establishment of a short-wave radio transmitting towards the Soviet Union. The Saudis were interested, he said, and had guaranteed finance on the condition that a situation such as that created in Moscow by Radio Free Europe and Radio Liberty must be avoided at all costs.
>
> 3. A discussion was held about a series of appropriate measures to promote the electoral campaign of Presidential candidate Reagan against Carter. Elliott reported that in this context, positive contact had been made with George [H. W.] Bush as well (426)*.
>
> 4. Colonel Botta stated that in his opinion, support must be given to the Israeli intelligence service. It was noted that, as far as Europe was concerned, the efficiency of the service had diminished considerably" (427)*.

The presence of former CIA officers during the Cercle's discussions on the promotion of Ronald Reagan is indicative: participants at the Cercle's earlier "command staff" meeting in January 1980 had included not only Violet, Crozier, Elliott and Huyn, but also Jameson and Stilwell, the latter a Board member of the American Security Council. At the time of the Cercle meeting, the ASC Foundation was launching an intense media campaign against Carter for "disarming America to death" through the SALT 2 Treaty. The ASCF produced a film called *The SALT 2 Syndrome* that was notably used in South Dakota to oust Senator George McGovern. The film was shown eleven times on the three major state television channels, and as a film or videotape it was screened to over 1,000 audiences. ASC official John Fisher stated:

> "In the last three months of the campaign [...] ASCF increased its average TV showings from 30 a month to 180 bookings per month for a total of 1,956 showings during this election year" (428)*.

Within ten days of the Cercle meeting of 28th - 29th June, Crozier flew out to Los Angeles to brief Reagan personally on the 6I and offer its services. Crozier was not the only one to contact Reagan or his campaign team; also in early July, the Comte de Marenches met William Casey, Reagan's campaign manager, in Paris. De Marenches, who wrote in his memoirs that "under Carter, the Americans committed voluntary suicide", shared with OSS veteran Casey not only a total disdain for Carter but also a past in the Resistance during the Second World War and an arch-conservative approach to both politics and intelligence work. De Marenches was well placed to advise Casey on the Iranian hostage crisis; he had been the driving force behind the creation of the Safari Club, founded in 1976 to coordinate covert cooperation between the French, Iranian, Saudi, Moroccan and Egyptian intelligence services.

One month after the de Marenches-Casey meeting, Casey flew to Madrid for a series of meetings with senior Iranian officials to negotiate the framework for a deal to delay the release of the Teheran Embassy hostages. The key meetings to finalise the "October Surprise" deal were held in October in Paris under the benevolent eye of de Marenches's SDECE; in September, Alain de Marolles, SDECE Director of Operations and principal deputy to de Marenches, had given the go-ahead for French arms dealers to supply Iran with military equipment in direct violation of Carter's embargo (429). After Reagan's election victory, de Marenches was invited to meet the President-elect and flew to California on 21st November 1980 to advise him on selection of Administration personnel and policy. Above all, de Marenches warned Reagan not to trust the CIA, particularly because of its lack of purposefulness:

> "Reagan repeated [de] Marenches's warning - "Don't trust the CIA" - to George Bush, who had been CIA chief in 1976-77. Bush thought it was hogwash, but all the same it obviously left a deep impression on Reagan. Bush had already told one of his CIA friends that, given Reagan's detached management style and his unfamiliarity with intelligence matters, it was important the President have a CIA Director he felt close to, someone he trusted fully, particularly on the issue of purposefulness. Now, after the [de] Marenches warning, that was even more important" (430)*.

The man to whom Reagan offered the job - within days of his meeting with de Marenches - was someone the French spymaster approved of entirely: OSS veteran and NSIC co-founder William Casey. Thanks to Casey and others, the NSIC and the Cercle/6I could enjoy unbroken access to the highest levels of US policymaking even before the advent of the Reagan Administration. As well as having been Reagan's election manager, Casey was also head of the Reagan transition team, particularly in the field of intelligence, where Casey was assisted by two former senior CIA officials as Special Advisors, 6I founding member Lieutenant-General Vernon Walters and longstanding ISC friend Ray S. Cline. The agenda for the incoming Reagan Administration had to a large extent already been mapped out in a 3,000-page list of policy recommendations published by the Heritage Foundation in January 1981 under the title *Mandate for Leadership* - its intelligence proposals had been drafted by NSIC Washington chief Roy Godson, Senate Intelligence Committee staffer and later NSIC and IEDSS author Angelo Codevilla, and Crozier's old associate and probable 6I founding member Herb Romerstein (431).

Once in charge of the CIA, Casey helped to provide initial funding for the 6I's operations. Members of the 6I 'Politburo' also soon assumed high office: General Walters acted as Reagan's Ambassador at Large from 1981 to 1985, US Representative at the UN from 1985 to 1989, and Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary to West Germany from 1989 to 1991, whilst General Stilwell served from 1981 to 1985 as Reagan's Deputy Under-Secretary of Defense for Policy – despite the anodyne title, Stilwell was in reality charged with a fundamental reform of US special forces. Reagan also ensured contact with the Cercle and the 6I through an old Californian friend, William A. Wilson, whom Reagan appointed as his personal envoy to the Vatican in February 1981 and full US Ambassador to the Holy See in March 1984, resuming US-Vatican diplomatic relations suspended since the early 1970s. Besides the channels to Reagan via Casey, Walters or Wilson, the Cercle/6I also liaised directly with Reagan's successive National Security Advisors, Dick Allen, William P. Clark, Bud McFarlane and Admiral Poindexter.

The NSIC and Cercle/6I could also count on several other highly-placed friends within the American national security apparatus throughout Reagan's two terms as President. One of Crozier's frequent contacts throughout the 1980s - indeed, as mentioned above, a probable founding member of the 6I in 1977 - was the 1977 NSIC Program Director **Sven Kraemer**, the veteran NSC staffer who had spent the Carter Presidency working as Senior Staff Member for Defense and Foreign Policy for the Senate. In 1979, Kraemer served as the Chair of the Heritage Foundation's Transition Team for the Defense Department. After Reagan's election, Kraemer returned to the NSC, serving in the Defense Policy Directorate from 1981 to 1983 and the Defense Programs and Arms Control Directorate from 1983 to 1987; he then acted as Senior Staff Member for Defense and Foreign Policy for the House of Representatives until 1989. In 1985, at least, Kraemer attended a Cercle meeting in Washington, as described in the Postscript.

Another regular Crozier partner and possible 6I founding member was **Richard Perle**, nicknamed the "Prince of Darkness", named by Großmann in 2014 as a Cercle member from the late 1970s on. Perle worked from 1969 to 1980 as a Senior Staff Member for Senator Henry 'Scoop' M. Jackson, a prominent member of the Senate Armed Services Committee and leading opponent of the SALT II treaty. Whilst with Jackson, Perle ensured a massive expansion of US military aid to Israel:

> "Aided by Perle, Jackson quickly became Israel's number-one man in the Congress, constantly pushing for more and more money with fewer restrictions. In fiscal year 1970, Israel received military credits from the United States worth $30 million. But, thanks to a Jackson amendment, the next year the amount sky-rocketed to $545 million. By 1974, it had reached an extraordinary $2.2 billion, more than seventy times what it had been just four years earlier" (432).
>
> "One of Perle's great victories while working for Jackson came in late 1975, when he sabotaged the SALT II treaty that called for limiting American and Russian nuclear stockpiles and restricted missile defense systems [...] Rumsfeld pressed Ford to back away from SALT. Already reeling from the harsh attacks of Republican challenger Ronald Reagan, who accused Ford of coddling the Russians, the President declined to sign the treaty" (433).

In 1981, President Reagan appointed Perle as his Assistant Secretary of Defense for International Security Policy, a post he filled until 1987; at this time, Perle was a member of the ASC's lobbying arm, the Coalition for Peace through Strength. In 1982, Perle hired NSC Middle East expert **Douglas J. Feith** as his Special Counsel; a former assistant to Jackson, Feith served as Reagan's Deputy Assistant Secretary of Defense for Negotiations Policy from 1984 to 1986.

A third Crozier contact and influential figure in the Reagan Administration was **Ken deGraffenreid** who had served as Senior Staff Member of the Senate Select Committee on Intelligence from its foundation in 1977 until 1981. He worked with Casey, Walters and Cline on Reagan's transition intelligence team before being appointed Senior Director of Intelligence Programs at the NSC in 1981, serving for six years. Leaving government office in 1987, he became a Senior Fellow on Intelligence at the NSIC in the late 1980s.

Kraemer, Perle, Feith and deGraffenreid would work together over the next twenty years, becoming notorious figures in Rumsfeld's Pentagon from 2001 on. Other Crozier allies within Reagan's NSC were Sovietologist and NSC Advisor Richard Pipes, a USCISC member, and, last but certainly not least, Colonel Oliver North of Iran-Contra fame.

1981 - 1991
FORWARD TO VICTORY

A TIME OF CHANGE: THE CERCLE IN THE 1980s

Whilst the Cercle had been focusing in 1979-1980 on its three campaigns to elect Thatcher, Reagan and Strauß, and had seen success in the first two, time had been taking its toll. The 1980s saw the disappearance of several of the key personalities and groups who had previously formed the core of the Cercle complex in France, Belgium and Germany. Whilst some figures died discretely, others found themselves the unwelcome focus of official investigations and press headlines in three countries. The Cercle itself also faced devastating exposure; after thirty years in the shadows, the very existence of the Cercle and some details of its activities were uncovered by journalists. The publication of the Langemann papers by the *Spiegel* in September 1982 was the first serious breach in Cercle security, a leak which soon spread to other countries; Crozier records being confronted with the Langemann papers in French translation during a visit to a Belgian Atlantic Association meeting in October 1984, "an example of the damage done" (434). The *Spiegel* scoop was however only the first in a series of exposures about the Cercle and its extensive operations.

To turn first to the original French heart of the Cercle, 1980 saw the withdrawal from the Cercle of both its founder Antoine Pinay, now nearly 90, and of his right-hand man Jean Violet who was suffering deteriorating health. The focus of the Cercle made a decisive shift towards a more Anglo-American orientation; the new Cercle Chairman, serving for the next fourteen years, was Julian Amery, whilst transatlantic representation was bolstered by the rise within the Reagan Administration of many of the Cercle's American allies. Crozier's considerable involvement in the Cercle over the previous decade was further boosted, not least because of the 1977 creation with Violet and Huyn of the private sector intelligence service, the 6I, whose members and operations increasingly influenced the Cercle. After Violet's withdrawal, the practical organisation of Cercle meetings was ensured throughout the 1980s by Cercle secretary Bach and the team of Crozier, Huyn and Jonet, heir to Damman's complex of Brussels-based groups following the latter's death in July 1979.

However, Violet's eclipse was only the calm before the storm both for the French lawyer and for the Cercle and AESP. In June and then December 1983, distinguished French journalist **Pierre Péan** revealed the sniffer plane scandal in articles in the *Canard Enchaîné*, followed in July 1984 by his groundbreaking book *V* (V for Violet, Villegas, Vatican, Vorster and Valéry Giscard d'Estaing), a comprehensive exposure of Violet's activities which were then further highlighted by a French Court of Auditors inquiry into the sniffer plane scandal (435). Violet tried to salvage his reputation after the savaging inflicted by de Marenches and Péan by obtaining testimonials from his former SDECE employers Generals Grossin, Jacquier and Guibaud and from Strauß, but to no avail (436).

The withdrawal of Violet in 1980 – and the earlier death of his veteran SDECE/Vatican partner Father Dubois in February 1979 – were not however the only losses suffered by the French core of the Cercle. March 1983 saw the death of Georges Albertini, the longstanding French ally of Crozier's London ISC and a founding member of the 6I in 1977. The disappearance of these four major figures – Dubois, Pinay, Violet and Albertini – permanently weakened French representation within the Cercle which came increasingly to depend on its British, American, German and Belgian contacts.

The French were not the only veteran Cercle members to run into trouble in the early 1980s. Both in Italy and in Germany, the major pillars of the Cercle/AESP also faced official investigation and died soon after - both Carlo Pesenti and Karl Friedrich Grau. Even before the exposure of his involvement in the sniffer plane scandal and the AESP revealed by Péan in 1983-84, Pesenti had already courted controversy due to the central part he played in Banco Ambrosiano, the "P2 bank" which collapsed in June-July 1982. Under a permanent threat of take-over by Michele Sindona, Pesenti had shored up his indebted Italmobiliare group by substantial borrowings from Banco Ambrosiano and its various Italian subsidiaries, secured by large blocks of shares in companies controlled by Pesenti.

The relationship between Banco Ambrosiano, Pesenti and the Cercle complex became more explicit in the final months before the bank's crash. In late 1981, the Vatican, concerned about the growing scandal surrounding Roberto Calvi, canvassed support for a successor. Their favoured candidate was another prominent Catholic banker, Orazio Bagnasco, active in property-based mutual funds and by 1980 the owner of the CIGA group of hotels. Bagnasco was known to be very close to Giulio Andreotti; what is less known is that both Andreotti and Bagnasco had links to the AESP and the Cercle Pinay complex. Andreotti had attended Cercle and AESP events from 1970 on, becoming a Life Member of the AESP in 1977; Bagnasco was a participant at the 1976 CEDI Congress along with the main Cercle/AESP members involved in the sniffer plane scandal - Pesenti, Pinay, Violet, Damman and Sánchez Bella.

Despite Calvi's objections, Bagnasco was appointed Vice-President of Banco Ambrosiano on 26th January 1982. Shortly afterwards, the bank secretly underwrote a loan of 100 billion lire to Pesenti to allow him to buy into Banco Ambrosiano. On 10th March 1982, Pesenti's Italmobiliare became the largest declared shareholder in Banco Ambrosiano, and Pesenti was appointed an Ambrosiano director. When the bank finally collapsed three months later, Pesenti lost 100 billion lire on his Ambrosiano shareholding alone, and was forced to sell off another of his banks six weeks after Calvi died. Already in poor health, Pesenti did not long survive the Ambrosiano fiasco; he died on 20th September 1984 (437)*.

Another major pillar of the Cercle and the AESP was also lost in the mid-1980s following the death on 5th September 1984 of Karl Friedrich Grau who met an end that matched his conspiratorial nature. After Grau's 1981 prosecution for the underhand tactics adopted during the 1980 pro-Strauß campaign, the German police had become interested in his involvement in providing covert funding for a variety of political initiatives. As part of a fraud investigation into movements of millions of Marks deposited with Luxembourg banks, the police arrested Grau during one of his trips to Luxembourg; he was carrying a list of bank accounts and an unauthorised and loaded pistol. Resourceful as ever, Grau faked a medical emergency and was transferred under police guard to a hospital; he broke his neck jumping out of an upper-storey window in an attempt to escape (438). Grau's death seriously handicapped the network of groups he had established in Germany and Switzerland. Whilst the SWG continued, both the Frankfurt Study Group and the Swiss ISP ceased operations.

The loss of Grau and his network in 1984 had been preceded by that of another key German partner of the Cercle and the 6I, Hans Christoph von Stauffenberg and the private intelligence service he ran for the CDU/CSU. As we have seen, Stauffenberg was the source for Langemann's secret reports on Crozier, the Cercle and the 6I which were published by the *Spiegel* in September 1982. Despite the high quality of political intelligence provided by Stauffenberg's network, not just on Eastern Europe but also on France where the Cercle/6I now had few resources of its own, Crozier regretfully severed contact with Stauffenberg sometime in autumn 1983; the last recorded attendance of Stauffenberg at a Cercle meeting was that held in Bonn in July 1983, as detailed in the Postscript.

Two other German associates of the Cercle/6I, Löwenthal and Pachman, also ran into difficulties in the 1980s. Although the campaign to promote Strauß for Chancellor had failed and the Bürgeraktion Demokraten für Strauß had disbanded, it was revived in June 1981 as a political pressure group called **Konservative Aktion**. The KA President was Luděk Pachman; Löwenthal was Chairman of the Board, which also included Dr. Lothar Bossle. KA also had excellent contacts with the German security and intelligence services: the advisor for KA's Internal Security Working Group was Crozier's old ISC friend and 6I colleague Horchem, who had just retired as head of the Hamburg BfV. KA's speaker on German and East European policy was **Prof. Hans Werner Bracht**, a professor of international law who served from 1961 to 1972 as a senior lecturer at the German Army School for Psychological Warfare in Euskirchen, with a spell from 1969 to 1970 in the Political Division at NATO headquarters in Brussels. One further KA member was former Brigadier-General

Heinz Karst, a speaker for Grau's ISP, Chairman of the Deutschland-Stiftung from 1973 to 1977 and a member of the Brüsewitz Centre.

Whilst marginal, KA drew headlines due to its uncompromising hard-right slant and the frequent violence shown by younger militants at KA anti-immigration demonstrations and during attempts to storm squatted houses. In 1983, KA pierced a hole in the Berlin Wall; it also circulated letters in Turkish urging Turkish immigrants to return home. In 1986, a KA demonstration calling for the release of Rudolf Hess and a KA circular insulting Willy Brandt led to dissension amongst KA's leading members. Several prominent conservatives including Karst resigned from KA, and despite a purge of the Board by Pachman and Löwenthal, the group filed for bankruptcy in September 1986 (439). The following year, Löwenthal's unrivalled media access as moderator of ZDF Magazin also came to an end; long uncomfortable with the controversy generated by his programme, the ZDF management took the opportunity of Löwenthal's 65th birthday to force him into retirement and to discontinue ZDF Magazin in December 1987. Löwenthal, previously a regular Cercle participant, withdrew from Cercle meetings, an absence soon followed by the death in October 1988 of the Cercle's political mainstay Franz Josef Strauß. The Cercle, and particularly the 6I, increasingly relied on Huyn and Horchem for their German outreach in the 1980s.

This atrophying of contacts in France, Italy and Germany was not however echoed across the Channel; under the leadership of Amery and Crozier, the British axis of the Cercle/6I complex blossomed. With funding provided first by Casey's CIA and then by the Heritage Foundation, Crozier was able to rejuvenate the 6I network by hiring several young British activists to run the 6I's London end, notably assisted on the Continent by a dynamic 6I component in Belgium. This was, as Crozier reports, the 6I's peak period of operations; due to the intense activity of the 6I network, Crozier withdrew from the Cercle in 1985, leaving it to continue as a biannual discussion forum. Despite the surge in 6I operations, Britain was not however spared some thinning of the ranks in the 1980s, notably due to the withdrawal of veteran anti-communist activist and key Crozier partner Geoffrey Stewart-Smith. Both his Foreign Affairs Publishing Company and the South African-funded FARI was wound down in 1986, and Stewart-Smith himself declared bankruptcy in 1987 (440). At that time, according to Crozier, the 6I was also going through a funding crisis; although new sources of funds were found, Crozier, now seventy, decided that "it was time to pull back and hand over". Having "paid off all the 6I's agents, mainly in Britain, France, Belgium, Germany, Holland, Spain, Portugal and the United States", Crozier records shutting down the 6I in the late summer of 1987, a claim which must be treated with some scepticism (441).

Before then, however, the 6I ran a series of operations in Britain, Europe and America that had a significant impact on domestic and international politics throughout the 1980s, as detailed in later chapters. Whilst the 6I could thrive in the

UK and the US with the benevolent support of the Reagan and Thatcher governments, other 6I components faced more turbulent times on the domestic front, notably in Belgium.

THE BELGIAN STRATEGY OF TENSION

As we have already seen in the early 1970s, the Belgian members of the Cercle complex often had more robust plans than influencing elections in mind. A 1981 report by the Sûreté de l'Etat makes it clear that the Belgian AESP/MAUE members implicated in the rumours of a planned coup d'état in 1973 were again involved in the mid-1980s in funding fascists planning a coup together with a group of extreme right-wing sympathisers in the Gendarmerie (442).

The Sûreté report dated 11th May 1981 was submitted by the Justice Minister, Socialist Philippe Moureaux, to the Wijninckx Committee, a Senate committee investigating the extreme Right and their private armies (443)*. The report revealed that leading members of CEPIC, including Paul Vankerkhoven, Bernard Mercier and Benoît de Bonvoisin, had been funding two extreme right-wing groups also implicated in the 1973 coup plans: the **Front de la Jeunesse**, a major Belgian fascist group run by **Francis Dossogne** and **Paul Latinus**, and the *Nouvel Europe Magazine*, edited by **Emile Lecerf**. Lecerf and Dossogne had represented Belgium at the 1975 gathering of European fascists at de Bonvoisin's castle. The Sûreté report further revealed de Bonvoisin's continued financial support for Bougerol and the PIO publication *Inforep*, Bougerol's role as a speaker at NEM Club events and his close links with Bernard Mercier of the CEPIC Board.

The NEM Clubs, composed of readers of Lecerf's *Nouvel Europe Magazine*, had been implicated with Major Bougerol in the 1973 coup plans by the de Cock and Tratsaert reports; the de Cock report had already alluded to the financing of the *NEM* by VdB and de Bonvoisin in the early 1970s. By the 1980s, the NEM Clubs were also the recruiting pool for the most notorious of the fascist private armies, **Westland New Post**, headed by former Front chief Paul Latinus. The WNP was far more than a group of rowdies: it appeared to run a full-blown parallel intelligence service with links to the Sûreté; Latinus himself was a major Sûreté informant. The links between the WNP, the Front de la Jeunesse and CEPIC were multiple: besides the funding of the Front and the NEM Clubs disclosed in the 1981 Sûreté report, 1976 CEPIC election candidate Joseph Franz had joined CEPIC straight from the Front. Former CEPIC President Jean-Pierre Grafé appealed directly to the Front for help with his election campaign. Front billstickers ensured CEPIC's election poster coverage - when they couldn't cope, the WNP's poster team filled the gap. Lecerf published appeals to vote for CEPIC in his *Nouvel Europe Magazine*. A 1983 Sûreté report repeated allegations by WNP members that Mercier of the CEPIC Board was also a regional representative/inspector of the WNP.

The WNP had been infiltrated by **Commissioner Christian Smets** of the Surêté, after Smets's superior, **Chief Commissioner Victor Massart**, had recruited WNP leader Latinus as a Sûreté informant (444)*. Massart appointed Smets as Latinus's case officer, and Latinus duly introduced Smets into the group as "the Duck", a sympathiser from the Sûreté. To prove his good faith, after checking with headquarters, Smets gave the WNP lessons in surveillance and counter-surveillance. In February 1982, in the middle of Smets's training course, WNP militants used their newly-gained knowledge to stalk and then kill two people. The arrest of the WNP militants and the confession of the killer, Latinus's lieutenant Marcel Barbier, brought Smets's "membership" of the WNP to light by 1983, whereupon the establishment and left-wing Press had a field day.

It seemed clear that a serving Sûreté officer had been caught red-handed training a fascist private army guilty of a double murder. The uproar was enormous, leaving the Sûreté compromised and Smets accused of being a fascist sympathiser colluding with the WNP through political conviction. Fired on by the Press and by de Bonvoisin, Smets could only weakly claim to have been following orders from his Sûreté superior Massart who was in the front ranks of his attackers, proclaiming Smets had acted totally without authority. Smets was condemned on all sides; even the *NEM* and other fascist publications vociferously joined in, covering Brussels with posters reading "Sûreté assassin!"

With hindsight and later information, the situation looks radically different: it now appears that the WNP scandal was the successful culmination of an operation to sabotage Sûreté investigations into de Bonvoisin's patronage of fascist groups. The operation was as effective as it was ingenious: Smets, whose investigations posed a real threat to de Bonvoisin, Bougerol and the extreme Right, was tarred with the fascist brush and publicly vilified. With Smets disgraced and his team closed down as a result of the WNP scandal, the investigations into the links between de Bonvoisin, Bougerol and the fascist militias came to an end.

If collusion there was between the Sûreté and the WNP, it was between Massart and Latinus with the aim of compromising Smets. Later investigations into Gladio and PIO revealed that Massart, Smets's superior, had been the principal contact in the Sûreté for VdB/de Bonvoisin's intelligence chief, Bougerol. Massart gave open access to Sûreté files for Bougerol and his team. Smets's enquiries were a threat not only to CEPIC and the NEM Clubs, but also to Massart. Bougerol's visits were no secret at the Square de Meeûs (Sûreté headquarters); after it could no longer be overlooked that PIO had officially been closed down, Massart's cooperation with Bougerol continued via Bougerol's secretary, Mirèze Legon, who regularly visited Massart to view Sûreté files. To deflect criticism, Massart had informed his colleagues that Legon no longer worked with Bougerol; Smets, though, working on the de Bonvoisin/Bougerol/NEM triangle, had Legon followed from Massart's office to ... the

PIO military branch office. With the discovery of Massart's ongoing illegal cooperation with PIO, Smets was simply getting too close for comfort.

It will come as no surprise to learn that the WNP leader Paul Latinus "committed suicide" in April 1984 as the WNP scandal gathered pace. Opinions remain divided about whether the suicide was arranged or not. Latinus could have been a key witness not just in the WNP case but also in a vice scandal that hit the headlines at the same time as the May 1981 Sûreté report on CEPIC's links to the NEM. Shortly before dying, Latinus had referred to a file that was his "insurance policy" - a dossier compromising top politicians in a vice ring: **the Pinon file**. Dr. Pinon's wife ran a child vice ring in which VdB and other right-wing notables were allegedly compromised. In early 1981, details of the ring reached Lecerf who wrote an article; perhaps unsurprisingly in view of his connections, Lecerf never published the piece. Lecerf may have been the source for Latinus's file.

In mid-June 1981, Dr. Pinon gave details of the ring to the left-wing magazine *Pour*, which had originally exposed de Bonvoisin's fascist connections. *Pour*'s editor, Jean-Claude Garot, was preparing to go into print when he received a phone call from a lawyer attempting to prevent publication: Garot refused. Ten days later, the premises of *Pour* were burnt to the ground by a joint commando group from the Front de la Jeunesse/WNP and the Flemish fascist group VMO. Garot never identified the lawyer who phoned him by name, but did reveal that it was "a lawyer from the extreme Right, a member of MAUE". A subsequent detailed study of the *Pour* case stated that the lawyer was Vincent van den Bosch, a close associate of the late Florimond Damman and longstanding member of the Permanent Delegation of the AESP who served with de Bonvoisin as a Board member of MAUE in the 1980s (445). Van den Bosch later figured in the WNP trials as counsel for WNP killer Michel Barbier.

THE BRABANT WALLON KILLERS

The involvement of AESP/MAUE/LIL/CEPIC members with the extreme Right may tie into the most notorious of Belgian parapolitical affairs - the "**Brabant Wallon killers**", a gang of alleged "bandits" who specialised in holding up supermarkets with maximum violence and minimum loot, killing 28 people between 1982 and 1985. The theory that the killers were motivated by criminal gain - an idea pushed hard by the Belgian Justice Minister (and AESP patron) Jean Gol - was demolished by the wanton killing of unarmed and unresisting shoppers, the highly professional and military approach taken to the attacks, and the provocative tactics employed: on one occasion, having needlessly gunned down several people and seized takings of only several thousand Euros, the killers sat in the supermarket car-park to calmly await the arrival of the police before making good their getaway. Such provocation, together with the concentration of their attacks in one limited area (the Brabant Wallon), even to the extent of driving directly from one attack to hit another supermarket only ten miles away, all pointed to a strategy of tension with political motivations rather than to organised crime.

The multiple investigations into the Brabant Wallon killings have thrown up considerable evidence that points to the authors of the attacks being extreme right-wing sympathisers within the ranks of the Gendarmerie. One of the actions of the killers was to break into a warehouse and steal prototype bulletproof vests, whose existence was only known to the Gendarmerie and a handful of ballistic experts. It also became clear that those carrying out the supermarket attacks must have had intimate knowledge of the tactics called "Practical Shooting", a preserve shared by the Diane group, the Gendarmerie's anti-terrorist unit, and a series of private "Practical Shooting Clubs" dominated by the extreme Right. Some of the weapons used in connected attacks had been "stolen" from the barracks of the Diane group on New Year's Eve, 1981-82.

In 1989, sensational allegations about Gendarmerie involvement in the killings were made by **Martial Lekeu**, a former member of the Diane Group and also of the Gendarmerie's political intelligence section, the BSR. Lekeu alleged that in the mid-1970s he was recruited into a secret neo-nazi organisation within the Gendarmerie, **Group G**. The Gendarmerie officer who recruited him was Didier Mievis, a BSR member and recruiter for the Front de la Jeunesse within the Gendarmerie (446)*. Lekeu claimed that the two external controllers of Group G were Francis Dossogne and Paul Latinus, heads of the Front. Lekeu's first contact with Group G was during a Front meeting held in Latinus's house; Latinus was Lekeu's next-door neighbour. From 1975 onwards, the Front and Group G, together with a corresponding group in the Army, Group M, planned a coup d'état to bring CEPIC to power. At this time, Vanden Boeynants was President of CEPIC and Belgian Defence Minister, the supervisory authority for the Gendarmerie. The 1981 Sûreté report reveals that during this period VdB and de Bonvoisin were giving substantial funding to Dossogne and Latinus for the Front. Lekeu alleged:

> "When I joined the Gendarmerie, I was a convinced fascist. I got to know people in the Diane group who shared my opinions. We used to exchange the Nazi salute. Every time we smacked our heels together in the canteen or in the corridors of the BSR headquarters, we heard others doing the same. It was a sign of brotherhood [...] during the Front meetings, a plan was developed to destabilise Belgium and prepare for an authoritarian regime. This plan was divided into two stages: a phase of political terrorism and a phase of gangsterism. I worked on the second phase. I was one of the specialists who would train the young people in extreme Right ideology; we had to turn them into a group of individuals that were ready for anything. Then, I should break off all contact with them so that they would become a completely autonomous group who would commit armed raids without being aware that they were part

of a perfectly planned plot."

The Intelligence section of the BSR were well aware of Group G's activities: according to a BSR report drawn up by Chief Adjutant Tratsaert in October 1976, the BSR had several of Group G's documents, and had infiltrated some of their meetings, photographing the group's members. The 1976 report confirms Lekeu's claim that Dossogne was a member of the group. Lekeu stated that he left Group G when they started committing the Brabant killings; a 1985 BSR report by Agent Bihay declared that Group G included at least one other gendarme closely linked to the killings: **Madani Bouhouche**, who was also a member of the WNP. Lekeu further claimed that Group G was behind the 1981 theft of Group Diane's weapons: certainly, Bouhouche was seen in the Diane barracks on the day of the robbery and used one of the Gendarmerie's vans taken later that night by the thieves.

According to Lekeu, Group G was not only responsible for carrying out the Brabant killings, but also for launching earlier attempted assassinations which targeted Gendarmerie colleagues whose investigations into fraud scandals linked to VdB were getting too close to the truth. Lekeu specifically mentioned the 1981 attack on Gendarmerie **Major Herman Vernaillen** as a Group G operation. Vernaillen had certainly been treading on toes: besides investigating VdB's links to financial and drug scandals, Vernaillen had been following up indications of VdB's involvement in coup plots. In May 1989, Vernaillen declared that in 1980 the Brussels banker and CEPIC member, **Leo Finné**, had informed him of a planned coup d'état in the 1980s which involved several senior figures in Opus Dei and a former Minister. Finné was in a position to know: it has subsequently emerged that he was involved with VdB in one of the planned coups in 1973.

In a confidential report, Vernaillen gave further details and named participants in the 1980s plot as CEPIC President VdB, former Deputy Prime Minister and CEPIC member José Desmarets (in 1986-87, President of WACL, working closely with Vankerkhoven within the Belgian WACL chapter, LIL), State Prosecutor Raymond Charles, former Gendarmerie General Fernand Beaurir, ex-Chief of the Army General Staff **Lieutenant-General Georges Vivario** (447)* and CEPIC member Jean Militis, a paratroop colonel implicated in the rumours of a planned coup in 1973. Vernaillen's allegations were corroborated in November 1989 by the testimony before the Parliamentary Committee of Inquiry from another Gendarmerie officer, Chief Adjutant Dussart, who confirmed the names of the participants in the 1980s plot and stated that several of the 1980s plotters had also been involved in the 1973 plans for a coup: the de Cock and Tratsaert reports had detailed the NEM Clubs' involvement in the 1973 plans and named CEPIC members VdB and de Bonvoisin.

Whilst some figures in CEPIC appear to have been the beneficiaries of the strategy of tension, others were definitely its victims. As Hugo Gijsels points out, closer examination of some of the people murdered by the Brabant killers during their attacks throws up a remarkable series of coincidences. Several people were coldly executed with bullets to the head, in contrast to the shooting in the supermarkets that claimed most victims. Amongst those executed in September-October 1983 were three CEPIC members: Elise Dewit and Jacques Fourez, a business contact of VdB, and Jacques van Camp, innkeeper of the "Auberge des Trois Canards", a favourite haunt for VdB, General Beaurir, Dewit and Fourez. In October 1985, the killers claimed an even more significant victim amongst the ranks of CEPIC: banker Leo Finné, Vernaillen's informant, the first person killed in the raid on the Delhaize supermarket in Overijse.

This is a very brief summary of an extremely complex series of events, and although much remains unknown, it is clear that those who gravitated in the AESP/Cercle Pinay environment were closely linked both to the rumoured plans for a coup in 1973 and to the Belgian strategy of tension in the 1980s. Certain parallels can be drawn to two previous cases of a strategy of tension: Italy from 1969 onwards and Portugal in 1975-76. In all three countries, the beneficiary of the strategy of tension was a Cercle Pinay contact - Andreotti, Spínola and Vanden Boeynants. In all three cases, the operational experience in running a strategy of tension came from Aginter Presse, Stefano Delle Chiaie and fascist militants in the ranks of the local police and Army.

The most promising avenue for investigation to understand the coup plots and strategy of tension in Belgium in the 1970s and 1980s lies no doubt in exploring contacts between Aginter Presse, the Belgian extreme Right, the AESP, MAUE, LIL and the PIO. It is significant that Damman, Lecerf and Guérin-Sérac met only two years before Lecerf's *NEM* made its first appeal for a coup d'état - at the beginning of its long and close relationship with de Bonvoisin and VdB. Official investigations of the case have been notably timid, although Belgium's thirty-year statute of limitations, due to close the case in November 2015, has now been extended to forty years to allow continued enquiry. A full exposure of those behind these events will probably never come, but as one of the top police investigators working on the Brabant killings said about the sniffer plane scandal:

> "If you're looking for the motives behind the killings in the Brabant, start by understanding the motives behind that gigantic swindle" (448).

PEACE PROPAGANDA

A major factor in 1980s politics was the intensified nuclear confrontation in the European theatre following Soviet deployment of SS-20 missiles from 1977 on. Besides continuing to run the post-Helsinki human rights campaign in the late 1970s, the Cercle complex also acted to highlight the Soviet nuclear build-up. After a glowing recommendation by Violet, Crozier's ISC commissioned French nuclear strategy expert **General Pierre M. Gallois**, formerly of SHAPE, to produce a Conflict Study on the SS-20 threat, published in June 1978 under the title *Soviet Military Doctrine and European Defence*. Gallois was an old friend of the Cercle complex; he had attended the 1963, 1964 and allegedly also the 1965 Bilderberg conferences along with Pinay, and also had attended CEDI Congresses in 1961, 1968 and 1974, sitting since at least 1972 on CEDI's International Council alongside Habsburg, Sánchez Bella, Merkatz, Vankerkhoven, Huyn and Agnew – by 1978, all AESP members. In parallel to liaison through CEDI, Gallois also attended meetings of the Cercle itself; five years after his ISC SS-20 study, he was again of service to the Cercle and the 6I in the nuclear missile debate (449).

In December 1979, after considerable internal debate, NATO responded to the SS-20 threat by adopting its Double-Track Decision which foresaw offering the Soviet Union negotiations for the elimination of all Intermediate Nuclear Forces in the European theatre whilst pursuing the stationing of new American GLCM (Cruise) and Pershing II nuclear missiles in Britain, Italy, Belgium, Germany and Holland. These deployments provoked a wave of protest from the previously moribund peace movement unseen since the Vietnam demonstrations of the early 1970s. The European Right and the intelligence services reacted in the early 1980s much as they had done a decade earlier: by a wave of aggressive counter-intelligence, agents provocateurs and smear campaigns to discredit peace activists as potentially violent KGB dupes or stooges.

The Cercle and particularly Crozier's London-based 6I played a key part in these anti-disarmament campaigns throughout the 1980s; indeed, the chapter of Crozier's memoirs covering this period starts with the words:

> "The best thing the 6I ever did was to penetrate and defeat the Soviet 'peace' fronts and the Western campaign groups [...] in the absence of government reaction in any of the affected countries [sic, see below], it was left to private groups to counter the Soviet campaigns. At the 6I, we took a decision to create new peace counter-groups wherever necessary, and to assist such groups where they already existed, both financially and with ideas. It was a considerable international coordinating effort which paid off in the end" (450).

To quote Crozier again, this time from his address to the Cercle meeting held in Wildbad Kreuth in June 1982:

> "Even before the [NATO] meeting of December 1979, the Soviets had shown that they understood what was at stake and proposed to act. The vast propaganda and subversion apparatus, controlled by the International Department of the Soviet Communist Party (CPSU) was mobilized and unleashed in the autumn of 1979. The key role is played by the World Peace Council, and through it by innumerable subsidiary bodies in all the Western

> countries. The objective is clear and simple: to make it psychologically unthinkable and politically impossible to deploy the new American missiles. If the "peace" campaign succeeds, the Soviets will be the victors: a Finlandised Europe will break away from America, or alternatively a disillusioned America will abandon Europe. ... Against this background, the Soviet-supported "peace" movement in Western Europe made rapid headway in 1981 – particularly in West Germany, Britain, Holland and Belgium. It is encouraging to note, however, that in all these countries, and in France as well, counter-movements or groups have been created, which weaken the impact of the unilateralist organizations by calling for multilateral disarmament" (451).

The most intense of these 6I anti-unilateralist campaigns targeted the British peace movement, the Campaign for Nuclear Disarmament (CND). Although the 6I was also notably active against proponents of nuclear disarmament in two further 'problematic' countries, Belgium and Holland, there were several good reasons why the British CND should have been singled out as the prime focus for 6I disruption. CND was not only the largest of the European peace movements with a third of a million active members in the early 1980s, but also the oldest. At the time of the 1979 NATO Double-Track Decision, CND could look back on a twenty-year history of protest, having been founded in 1957 amidst growing opposition to recent British hydrogen bomb tests in Australia and the Pacific. Between 1958 and 1965, annual marches were held from the Atomic Weapons Establishment near Aldermaston to Trafalgar Square - 150,000 protestors attended the 1961 and 1962 Aldermaston marches, unprecedented numbers for the day. After the 1963 Test Ban Treaty, peace protestors' focus shifted from nuclear weapons to opposition to the Vietnam War, but peace activism dwindled following American withdrawal from Vietnam in 1975.

However, uniquely, the British peace movement was reinvigorated well before the December 1979 NATO decision by two domestic upheavals, the first cultural, the second political. From 1976 on, the explosion of punk music ripped through Britain and revived anti-establishment opinion against the backdrop of the Queen's Silver Jubilee in 1977 when the BBC Top of the Pops televised charts had to omit the banned Number One single which screamed: "God Save the Queen, the fascist regime, they made you a moron, potential H-bomb." Politically, after three years of social and industrial conflict following the resignation of Harold Wilson in 1976, the May 1979 election of Margaret Thatcher hardened the cultural divide. The Conservatives won 44% of the votes cast, compared to 37% for Labour and 14% for the Liberals, leaving a nation riven by conflict about many areas of policy adopted by the new Thatcher government. Coming barely six months after the election, the NATO Double-Track Decision sparked a renaissance of the peace movement which exceeded even its previous peak in the early 1960s - in October 1981 and again in October 1983, more than 250,000 people rallied at CND demonstrations in London.

A further contributing factor to the scale of British protests was both the schedule and the scale of deployment of Cruise missiles in Europe – Britain was to be both the first and also the largest base for Cruise missiles. The European Cruise deployment programme began in July 1982 with 96 missiles installed at Greenham Common, soon publicly surrounded by a Women's Peace Camp. Although more missiles - 112 in all - were later based at the remote location of Comiso in Italy from June 1983 on, Britain – "Airstrip One" to quote George Orwell's novel, *1984* – was the only one of the five NATO deployment countries to host two Cruise missile bases; a further 64 missiles were stationed at Molesworth in December 1986, ensuring that the nuclear missile issue did not fade in the news.

The British peace movement was therefore the primary 6I target, and between 1979 and 1987, CND was subjected to an unprecedented propaganda and harassment campaign run by an alliance of three complexes: firstly, several private-sector groups closely linked to the Cercle Pinay, the 6I and their backers in the Heritage Foundation; secondly, **DS19** (Defence Secretariat 19), an official but covert anti-CND propaganda unit within the Ministry of Defence; and last but certainly not least, MI5's Internal Subversion division, F Branch.

As we will see below, these State and private initiatives interlocked on several levels. One notable link was MI5's Charles Elwell who later worked with Brian Crozier throughout the 1980s to produce a smear bulletin targeting the Labour Party, progressive charities and church groups, described in a later chapter. From April 1974 to May 1979, Elwell had been an Assistant Director of MI5 and the head of F1 Branch (CPGB and other subversive groups), playing a major part in MI5's shift in operations away from counter-espionage towards counter-subversion and strengthening the Security Service's role as a political police.

In the mid-1970s, Elwell set up a special unit within MI5 to produce a report on "subversion and left-wing bias in the media". The unit investigated journalists judged to hold anti-establishment views as well as those appointed to what MI5 considered politically sensitive or influential posts – from 1937 until 1985, MI5 vetted all BBC News and Drama staff from an office in the BBC's Broadcasting House, stamping suspect journalists' personnel files with a Christmas tree symbol (452). Although Elwell's MI5 media monitoring unit was later disbanded, MI5 held on to its files – maybe not too tightly, bearing in mind the ISC Study Group on subversion in the media which met from May 1977 to April 1978 and which published its findings as an ISC Special Report, *Television and Conflict*, in November 1978.

In Elwell's capacity as a senior MI5 counter-subversion officer, he designated prominent figures in CND and the National Council of Civil Liberties (NCCL, now Liberty) as persons having "Communist contacts", allowing undercover surveillance that provoked a media furore in 1985 following revelations made by former MI5 F

Branch officer Cathy Massiter. Massiter, an MI5 officer from 1971 on who had worked fulltime on the monitoring of CND from 1981 to 1983, testified that the telephone lines of CND and NCCL leaders were being tapped, and that information on CND personalities taken from MI5 files had been provided to the MoD's covert anti-CND unit, DS19 (453)*.

This official but covert harassment of the peace movement was echoed by the private-sector groups centred around Crozier. FARI fired one of the first shots in the UK anti-unilateralist campaign in the form of a 1980 brochure by Crozier entitled *The Price of Peace - a Plain Man's Guide to Current Defence Issues*; the cover of the FARI brochure illustrated the launch of an SS-20. Published by Stewart-Smith's FAPC and also distributed by the Monday Club, the brochure's tables of the East-West nuclear balance in the brochure were produced by the ISC, and the defence expenditure table came from *NATO Review*. Having conceded that many peace campaigners were sincere, Crozier then went on to ask: "But how many realize that the campaign against nuclear arms modernisation, in which they are involved, is manipulated by Moscow?" Crozier later revealed in his memoirs that the basic research had been done by "a Dutch friend"; the brochure was published in Dutch in 1981, and an updated and expanded edition was published in the US by the Heritage Foundation in 1983 (454)*.

In 1981, with continued if reduced South African funding (455)*, FARI organised the first Annual World Balance of Power Conference which brought together many of the Cercle's American contacts: Feulner of the Heritage Foundation, General Graham of the ASC, Barnett of the NSIC and also of the Committee on the Present Danger (456), and Cline of CSIS. The conference, which aimed "to consider the need of the entire non-communist world to respond to the Soviet global political and military threat", started with a message of goodwill from President Reagan. A Second Annual World Balance of Power Conference was held in July 1982.

Beyond FARI's efforts, the Cercle/6I also created several new British groups specialising in anti-disarmament propaganda, thanks to American funding from three main sources, of which the first was the CIA - in his memoirs, Crozier records that, after initial hesitation, Reagan's Director of Central Intelligence Bill Casey provided £50,000 in 1981 and $100,000 in 1982 (457)*.

Another official but covert American source of funding for the UK campaigns against pacifist sentiment was the **US Information Agency**. "On September 9, 1982, President Ronald Reagan designated the United States Information Agency to lead an inter-departmental effort to counter Soviet propaganda and disinformation. For an advisory body, the Administration created the Active Measures Working Group in 1981 to bring together the information the various agencies held to counter Soviet disinformation and forgery. It served as a clearing-house to expose such information and it had permission to use classified documents and any other resources that were required to meet this goal. The Working Group was chaired by the State Department with representatives from State, Central Intelligence Agency, Defense Intelligence Agency, Arms Control and Disarmament Agency, United States Information Agency, and the Defense and Justice Departments. The Working Group ended in 1991, two years after the collapse of the Soviet Union" (458).

One of the first actions of the USIA was to create a special unit to lead this campaign, the **Office to Counter Soviet Active Measures and Disinformation**; its Director from 1983 to his retirement in 1989 was Crozier's longstanding contact and probable 6I founding member, **Herb Romerstein**. Within months of his appointment, Romerstein ensured USIA funding for anti-disarmament propaganda by another old Crozier friend, USCISC member Ernest W. Lefever. As Director of the Ethics and Public Policy Program at Georgetown University, ""Ernest Lefever used the $200,000 given by USIA to help "highly placed and influential leaders in Western Europe to gain a solid understanding of US defence and arms control policies, with special reference to their religious and moral implications." One conference was organised in Britain in May [1983] with church leaders in attendance. It was sponsored by the British Atlantic Committee (BAC) and the Institute for European Defence and Strategic Studies [IEDSS, see below]."" Lefever's conference was also attended by another regular Crozier contact and probable 6I founding member, Sven Kraemer, in 1977 the NSIC Program Director and at this time working in the Defense Policy and Arms Control Directorates of the NSC (459)*.

Major private-sector funding for the Cercle/6I campaigns was also provided by the American **Heritage Foundation**, whose President since 1977 **Edwin Feulner** had attended the December 1979 Cercle meeting. The Heritage Foundation, whose role is concealed in Crozier's memoirs, provided the infrastructure and funding for three Cercle/6I groups active in anti-peace movement propaganda in Britain. Whilst some of the funding was direct and therefore public, the Heritage Foundation also created an intermediary to act as a conduit for covert funding for the Cercle/6I campaign: the **International Freedom Fund Establishment**, which was run by Brian Crozier, who thus became the Heritage Foundation's bag-man in Britain. IRS tax returns for the Heritage Foundation show that it donated a total of $140,000 to the IFFE for the three years 1982, 1983 and 1985. In an interview, Heritage Foundation Vice-President Herb Berkowitz described the IFFE as "a networking operation [...] we support them, and he [Crozier] does the work" and admitted to a further Heritage donation to Crozier of $50,000 in 1986. Crozier himself conceded that the IFFE received a total of £200,000 from the Heritage Foundation between 1982 and 1986, whilst declining to identify the ultimate beneficiaries of such largesse (460).

The main beneficiary of Heritage Foundation funds - receiving an estimated half a million dollars from 1982 to 1985 - was the **Institute for European Defence and Strategic Studies** (IEDSS). Founded in 1979, the IEDSS set as its goal "to assess the impact of political change in Europe and North America on defence and strategic issues, in particular, to study the domestic political situation in NATO countries and how this affects the NATO posture". The IEDSS Chairman was Heritage President Feulner; the IEDSS Council included Heritage Fellow Richard V. Allen, Reagan's chief foreign policy advisor from 1977 to 1980 and later appointed as his first but short-lived National Security Advisor, in which post Allen was a recipient of the 6I's confidential bulletin, *Transnational Security* (461). Serving on the IEDSS Council with him was an old ISC stalwart: Leonard Schapiro.

The IEDSS was closely linked to the ISC from its inception on; the IEDSS initially shared the ISC's Golden Square address before moving to new premises - two doors away. Several ISC associates also wrote reports for the IEDSS - Brian Crozier (*Communism - why prolong its death throes?*), the ISC's Turkey expert Kenneth Mackenzie, Richard Pipes of the USCISC and Lord Chalfont, the latter serving as a Council member of IEDSS and as a Board member of FARI with Crozier, Moss and Amery. Heritage Foundation control over the IEDSS was eloquently illustrated by US Internal Revenue Service figures for the year 1985: Heritage contributed $151,273 of a total IEDSS budget of $185,611. According to IRS figures, the Heritage Foundation donated $427,809 to the IEDSS for the three years 1982, 1983 and 1985 (462).

Besides its Heritage Foundation/ISC links to the "private sector" for anti-disarmament propaganda, the IEDSS was also directly tied in to the British State's anti-CND campaign through two IEDSS Council members: Conservative MP **Ray Whitney** and senior Tory **Sir Peter Blaker** - an old friend of Crozier from Cambodian days (463). As Under-Secretary of the Army, Blaker had worked with Amery when the latter was Minister of State at the FCO from 1972 to 1974; Blaker joined the FCO briefly in 1974. After Thatcher's election victory, Blaker took Amery's old job as Minister of State at the FCO from 1979 to 1981 and then served as a junior Minister in the Ministry of Defence from 1981 to 1983 when Defence Minister Michael Heseltine appointed him to head a secret Ministerial Group on Nuclear Weapons and Public Opinion. This Ministerial Group led to the creation in February 1983 of **DS19**, an MoD unit which received information on CND from MI5 and which generated films and literature attacking the peace movement. This official but clandestine campaign by Heseltine and Blaker was assisted by Conservative MP Ray Whitney, who served with Blaker on the IEDSS Board from 1979 to 1984.

Whitney had previously had considerable experience in black propaganda. Prior to being elected to Parliament and becoming a junior Minister under Mrs. Thatcher, Whitney was the last head of the IRD before it was officially "closed down" in April 1977; like many other IRD staff, he then transferred to the IRD's "purged" successor, the Overseas Information Department. After releasing a letter purporting to prove communist domination of CND and the Labour Party, Heseltine commented: "Our colleague Ray Whitney has added a valuable contribution to our knowledge of the political motivations of CND". The IEDSS allowed Blaker, Whitney and the MoD team to recycle their anti-unilateralist propaganda under the guise of "academic respectability"; one such IEDSS publication was *Perception and Reality - An Opinion Poll on Defence and Disarmament*, published in 1986 and written by Blaker together with **Sir Clive Rose**, former Deputy Secretary in the Cabinet Office from 1976 to 1979, running the Civil Contingencies Unit there during the 1978 'Winter of Discontent' before serving as UK Permanent Representative on the North Atlantic Council from 1979 to 1982. Rose, another old ISC friend, had previously written the 1985 book *Campaigns against Western defence: NATO's adversaries and critics* and in 1988 produced *The Soviet propaganda network: a directory of organisations serving Soviet foreign policy*.

The IEDSS's anti-CND campaign was supported on an altogether more vicious level by another Heritage beneficiary, the **Coalition for Peace through Security**. The CPS was founded in the autumn of 1981 after Crozier had secured initial 6I funding from the CIA in March. The Heritage Foundation's tax returns recorded a 1982 donation of $10,000 to the CPS, and a letter from the CPS to the Foundation thanked it for a further contribution of $50,000 in October of the same year. The general coordinator appointed by Thatcher for the Government's attack on CND was **Winston Churchill** MP, a FARI member alongside Chalfont and the Cercle trio of Crozier, Moss and Amery; the CPS initially shared offices with FARI. The CPS enjoyed close links to the Conservative Party Central Office - the three Directors of the CPS (Tony Kerpel, Julian Lewis and Edward Leigh) were all prospective Conservative parliamentary candidates. Immediately after its foundation in 1981, the CPS obtained the list of Conservative Party agents around the country and was given free access to the Party's mainframe computer. One of its earliest actions was to set about infiltrating CND so as to gain access to its 1982 annual conference; this was the beginning of a savage smear campaign, running slogans such as "CND = KGB" and "Communists Neutralists Defeatists". In one typical action in August 1986, CPS activists disrupted a two minute silence commemorating Hiroshima in Trafalgar Square by playing the national anthem full-blast over a loudspeaker system.

The main CPS activist was, according to Crozier, "a gifted young man named **Julian Lewis**. Introduced to me by Norris McWhirter, Dr. Lewis became the 6I's leading activist in Britain, notably as the scourge of [CND leader] Monsignor Bruce Kent and the Campaign for Nuclear Disarmament [...] in Britain, the energetic Julian Lewis and his young assistants wrote letters to the press, hired light aircraft trailing anti-CND slogans, organised counter-demonstrations, and challenged Bruce Kent and other speakers at CND rallies. Books, pamphlets, folders, posters were produced, all of them pithy and telling" (464). Lewis had been active in student politics before graduating from Oxford in 1977; in 1976, with secret funding from NAFF, he posed as a Labour moderate to join the Newham North-East Constituency Labour Party in a failed attempt to reverse the deselection of Labour right-wing MP and former minister Reg Prentice, later to become the highest-ranking Labour figure to defect to the Conservative party (465)*.

In 1981, Lewis completed his studies, receiving a D. Phil. in Strategic Studies from St Antony's College, Oxford, and went straight to work for Crozier - from 1981 to early 1985, he served as Research Director of the CPS, working alongside CPS Director **Edward Leigh**, Thatcher's private correspondence secretary in 1976-77 when she was Leader of the Opposition being briefed by Crozier and Shield. After working for Thatcher, Leigh served as Chairman of the National Council for Civil Defence from 1980 to 1983 when he was elected to Parliament, acting as Joint Secretary of the Conservative Parliamentary Defence Committee from 1983 to 1985 and sitting on the Commons Select Committee for Defence until 1987. Lewis, who also stood as a candidate in 1983, was not successful, remaining outside Parliament until elected in 1997. He spent the 1980s as the 6I's director of operations in Britain, running the CPS and a host of other 6I front groups. The tone of the CPS attack on CND can be judged from a later press interview given by Lewis:

> "I am not surprised that the Stasi [East German security service] were worried about those of us who were working for the vital deployment of NATO Cruise missiles in Britain in 1983, and for the retention of our own nuclear deterrent. However, I am increasingly alarmed at the determination of the Labour government [in 2000] to take no action whatever to expose the identity of these despicable hacks and traitors who were spying for our potential enemies at a crucial turning-point of the Cold War. Three-quarters of Labour MPs at that time were committed to one-sided nuclear disarmament, and several were fellow-travellers of the Soviet system, so it is not surprising that the Government wishes to hush the matter up. What is more worrying is that MI5 – our domestic security service – is colluding in this or was so incompetent that it failed to discover what was going on in the first place" (466)*.

In 1985, Lewis set up his own organisation to run 6I campaigns in several fields; the new group, **Policy Research Associates**, "successfully campaigned for changes in the law on Educational Indoctrination, Media Bias, Propaganda on the Rates [local taxes], and Trade Union Democracy" (467). The mention of "Propaganda on the Rates" referred to another 6I action to undermine support for the peace movement - the **Campaign against Council Corruption** (CAMACC). The CAMACC was run by Tony Kerpel as its Director and Edward Leigh as its main parliamentary activist, both Directors of the CPS; CAMACC and the CPS were both run from PRA's address. The CAMACC aimed to prevent local councils from publicly opposing American missile deployment by declaring their areas nuclear-free zones. As Crozier records,

> "in military terms, the 'nuclear-free zones' in various council areas were of no significance. The point was that £10 million or more had gone to CND and

> other like-minded bodies, thus building up further support for the peace movement. The net effect was that the 'loony Left' councils, as they were increasingly called in the press, were spending millions to make the West safe for the Soviet SS-20s" (468).

Another campaign undertaken by Lewis targeted alleged "Media Bias"; in 1985, with the support of the Conservative Central Office, Lewis founded the **Media Monitoring Unit**, a repeat of the ISC's 1970s actions against perceived leftist influence in the media. To raise funds for the MMU, Lewis called on Cercle member Sir Peter Tennant:

> "The Media Monitoring Unit was conceived and created last year by a small group of self-described Right-of-centre political activists. The driving force is Julian Lewis [...] He runs a political pressure group called Policy Research Associates which pops up now and again in debates on such matters as council corruption, trade union law and CND. Lord Chalfont is a patron as is Norris McWhirter, who founded the Freedom Association, and Edward Leigh, MP [...] The increasing activity of the PRA and the decision to form the monitoring unit is indicative of a more aggressive approach in Right-of-centre circles to getting across its message [...] To get the unit off the ground, he approached Sir Peter Tennant, 75, a senior City businessman and advisor to the CBI. Tennant in turn drew together a nucleus of sympathisers, mostly from the City, who put up the £25,000-or-so to hire a director, buy a video recorder and publish the report" (469).

Crozier recounts:

> "We produced several occasional issues of the *Monitoring Report*, an impressively researched survey of the political attitudes in the media, which showed, in my view beyond doubt, that there was a predominantly left-wing bias, especially in television. The first yearly report, at the end of 1986, attracted much press attention, most of it favourable" (470).

Besides monitoring the media, the 6I was also prolific in producing its own publications attacking the peace movement, both in the UK and abroad. In 1982, the post-Crozier ISC brought out a Conflict Study entitled *Political Violence and Civil Disobedience in Western Europe*, whilst Crozier's London 6I outfit CPS followed suit with *The Peace Movement and the Soviet Union* by former Soviet dissident and vocal right-winger **Vladimir Bukovsky**; co-published by the Committee for the Free World with an introduction by Winston Churchill, the booklet's scarlet cover portrayed a Soviet nuclear bomb dropping on silhouetted demonstrators waving CND signs.

The same year, Bukovsky's contribution appeared in the US and in France (as *Les pacifistes contre la paix*); it was reviewed by General Close as the lead article in the November 1982 issue of the LIL bulletin, *Damoclès*. In 1983, Bukovsky's book was published in German by the Swiss SOI which, the same year, also produced Hans Graf Huyn's *Frieden in Freiheit: Wege zum Ziel* [Peace in Freedom: Paths to the Goal]. Crozier himself then put together a 1984 anthology, *This War Called Peace*, published by his Sherwood Press.

The major anti-CND publication by the Cercle/6I complex was however *"Peace" of the Dead* by **Paul Mercer**, "one of the best of our activists" according to Crozier (471)*. The massive 465-page book, "an exhaustive and authoritative analysis of the CND and its affiliates", was published in 1986 by Lewis's Policy Research Publications. The book's tone was set by the cover illustration of the CND symbol combined with a hammer and sickle cutting through a map of the UK; joining Mercer in his exhaustive efforts to prove Moscow's domination of CND were the Coalition for Peace through Security, the Freedom Association, Brian Crozier, Lord Chalfont (who contributed the foreword), John Rees and Peter Shipley, whose ISC Conflict Study, *Patterns of Protest in Western Europe*, was also published in 1986.

Whilst Crozier and the London-based groups kept up the propaganda barrage against CND, they were also active in giving practical assistance to pro-Cruise groups in Holland. When the 6I operation was launched in 1982, Holland was still holding out against the new NATO missiles and would end up never actually deploying them. Whilst 48 missiles were assigned to the Woensdrecht base by the USAF in 1983, it was only in 1985 that the Dutch government reluctantly accepted to host Cruise, and deployment itself was aborted by the December 1987 conclusion of the INF treaty. A number of groups were set up in Holland to support deployment, using the same tactic as in the UK of accusing the largely Church-based Dutch peace movement of being Soviet-controlled. Crozier states that the Dutch group "that was proving the most useful in countering the Soviet-led campaign was the **Stichting Vrijheid, Vrede en Verdediging** [Freedom, Peace and Defence Foundation]" (472)*.

According to a *Guardian* report in 1987, the ISC acted as a channel for covert American funding to certain Dutch pro-Cruise groups. **Frank Brenchley**, a former Chairman of the ISC Council (473)*, told the *Guardian* that the ISC produced a private, unpublished report on the Dutch peace movement. Sir Clive Rose acknowledged using ISC information on Holland when writing his book, *Campaigns against Western Defence*. The research was carried out, he said, by two ISC members, Professor Leonard Schapiro and Nigel Clive, the latter a former MI6 coupmaster and head of the IRD. Michael Goodwin, ISC Director since Crozier's departure in 1979 and also a former IRD member, confirmed that Holland was of particular interest to the ISC in 1983 (474).

The Dutch peace movement was evidently a focus for the CIA as well; besides the ISC propaganda operation to counter the Dutch peace movement in 1980-83, the BVD and CIA infiltrated an agent provocateur amongst Dutch and Belgian peace-campers in early 1984 in an attempt to compromise them in the theft of live ammunition from the Belgian Cruise base at Florennes; some of the ammunition was later recovered near the peace-camp at the Dutch Cruise base of Woensdrecht (475)*.

However, the main 6I focus in Europe was Belgium, where deployment of Cruise missiles at the Florennes airbase was delayed by public and parliamentary protest until August 1984. The leading figure for anti-pacifist propaganda was the controversial former senior military officer General Robert Close. As described above, within months of his resignation from military service in 1980, Close had joined WACL and the post-Damman MAUE, serving with Jonet and Vankerkhoven as one of MAUE's Vice-Presidents; in 1981, Close and MAUE Board member Nicolas de Kerchove published *Encore un effort et nous aurons définitivement perdu la Troisième Guerre mondiale* [Another effort and we will have definitively lost the Third World War]. Close was prominent in several 1980s anti-disarmament groups linked to the Cercle and the 6I.

The first of these was the **Europäisches Institut für Sicherheitsfragen** [EIS, European Institute for Security Matters], officially founded under Habsburg's patronage in Luxembourg in December 1981, although a preliminary conference was held in Paris in June 1980 (476). The intent underlying the foundation of the EIS appears to have been to overcome the EEC's lack of powers in the defence field by creating an external high-level European forum - a political showboat – to promote hawkish defence policies and combat pacifist sentiment, its main target audience being the EEC institutions:

> "By its structure, the Institute will be able to debate problems relating to the defence and security of Europe, even if these are not explicitly covered by the terms of the Treaty of Rome, for the benefit of the European institutions and particularly the [European] Parliament" (477).

The German-language title of the EIS reflected the preponderance of German members, many of whom were previous associates of Karl Friedrich Grau in his various political action groups. Alongside Habsburg and the Belgian duo of Close and de Kerchove, other founding members of the EIS included:

Martin Bangemann - German MP from 1972 to 1980 and in 1987-89; appointed MEP in 1973-79; elected MEP from 1979 to 1984; Minister for the Economy in 1984-88; Chairman of Liberal FDP Party in 1985-88; EEC Commissioner for the Internal Market from 1989 to 1993 and for Industrial Policy in 1993-99.

Hans Filbinger - CDU former Regional Prime Minister of Baden-Württemberg; PEU Council; SWG; Brüsewitz Centre; Ludwig-Frank-Stiftung.

former Major-General Jochen Löser - founding member of Western Goals Europe.

former General Wolfgang Schall – CDU MEP from 1979 to 1984; SWG; leader of the German WACL delegation from 1981 on.

former General Johann Kielmannsegg – in 1963-67 NATO Commander Allied Land Forces Central Europe, then from 1967 until his retirement in 1968 Commander in Chief Allied Forces Central Europe; Board of the magazine *Beiträge zur Konfliktforschung – Psychopolitische Aspekte* [Contributions to the Study of Conflict – Psychopolitical Aspects], founded in 1971 and funded by the Federal Defence Ministry. Took free trips to South Africa in 1971 and 1975.

Lieutenant-Colonel Gerhard Hubatschek - speaker for Grau's SWG; appointed to the German Army Planning Staff by Defence Minister Manfred Wörner in 1983; author for Western Goals Europe in 1984.

Wolfgang Reineke - Heidelberg-based business advisor; Chairman of the television viewers' lobby AFF which had worked with Grau since the early 1970s; speaker for Grau's Swiss ISP in 1975-76; member of the International Institute for Strategic Studies in London.

Kai-Uwe von Hassel - CDU former Regional Prime Minister of Schleswig-Holstein; former Defence Minister; CDU MP in 1953-54 and from 1965 to 1979; former President and Vice-President of the Bundestag until 1976. Attended the AESP Grand Dîner Charlemagne in January 1976. Vice-President of the Parliamentary Assembly of the CoE in 1977. President of the WEU Assembly in 1977-79. CDU MEP from 1979 to 1984. Resistance International signatory, visited US to lobby Congress to support Contras as part of an RI delegation. Participant with Huyn and Graf von Stauffenberg at the secret Berlin meeting on 8-10/6/87 on "The Future of German-American Relations", organised by the International Security Council, a group within the Moonies' political arm, CAUSA.

Leo Tindemans - former Belgian Prime Minister in 1974-78 (when VdB was Defence Minister and latterly Deputy Prime Minister); Foreign Minister in 1981-89; MEP from 1979 to 1981 and 1989 to 1999.

Pierre Pflimlin - Bilderberg Group; appointed MEP in 1962-67; elected MEP from 1979 to 1989; Vice-President of the European Parliament from 1979 to 1984 and President in 1984-87.

The first official conference of the EIS, held in 1981 in the Belgian Foreign Ministry's Egmont Palace, concentrated on how to promote NATO against peace movement opposition. Its first General Assembly was then held in April 1982 in Brussels in the presence of NATO Secretary-General Joseph Luns (whose Deputy Chef de Cabinet was Robert Nieuwenhuys, then President of MAUE) and European Commissioner Karl-Heinz Narjes, at the time a prominent member of the Cercle Pinay according to Hans Langemann's 1980 intelligence report on the Cercle.

By 1982, the EIS Board had also expanded to include a number of new members, several of whom attended the second EIS conference in Luxembourg in April 1982:

Franz Josef Strauß

Gerhard Löwenthal - ZDF; President of the Deutschland-Stiftung from 1977 to 1994; Brüsewitz Centre; Bürgeraktion Demokraten für Strauß; Konservative Aktion; SWG; Resistance International; WACL; CAUSA.

Dr. Heinrich Aigner - CSU MP from 1957 to 1980; appointed MEP from 1961 to 1979; elected MEP from 1979 to 1988; Vice-President of the German PEU section; Brüsewitz Centre; Ludwig-Frank-Stiftung.

former Brigadier-General Heinz Karst - SWG; ISP; Chairman of the Deutschland-Stiftung in 1973-77; Brüsewitz Centre; Konservative Aktion.

Alfons Goppel – member of Hitler's SA from 1933 on and NSDAP from 1937 on; from 1962 to 1978 Regional Prime Minister of Bavaria, succeeded by Franz Josef Strauß; CSU MEP from 1979 to 1984; Board member of PEU.

former Lieutenant-General Günther Rall – Air Force Staff project officer for the introduction of the nuclear-capable Lockheed F-104 Starfighter in the mid-1960s, Inspector of the German Air Force in 1971-74, then Chief of Air Staff and German representative to the Military Council of NATO. In October 1974, under the false name of Ball, took a three-week free trip to South Africa sponsored by the South Africa Foundation, touring the Pelindaba nuclear research site. Exposure of the visit in September 1975 led to great public controversy and his dismissal from the Air Force. Shortly thereafter, Rall was interviewed by the US Senate Foreign Relations Committee's Sub-Committee on Multinational Corporations that was investigating the Lockheed bribery scandal (478).

Dr. Ludwig Bölkow - Bilderberg Group; Managing Director of Messerschmitt Bölkow Blohn, the major military aviation contractor (Strauß sat on the Board); prominent CSU member and linked to the Starfighter scandal with Strauß; named President of the NATO arms standardisation committee in 1976.

Nicolas Estgen – Luxembourg; MEP from 1979 to 1994, former Vice-President of the European Parliament, member of Bureau of the EP conservative fraction EPP with Habsburg, served on the PEU International Council from 1984 on.

However, this 1982 enlargement of the EIS to include many powerful Germans cost it several of its influential members, notably the Belgian team of Close, Jonet and de Kerchove, their departure being attributed by the EIS to 'policy differences'. According to further statements made by Close, the split in the EIS was partly triggered by a shift from its initial focus of attacking perceived Communist subversion of the European peace movement (i. e. a psy-ops or 'Political Action' outfit) towards becoming a lobby group for European arms contractors - no doubt Close was referring to the recent arrival of the Starfighter-tainted Strauß, Rall and Bölkow.

Undaunted but reduced in ranks, the EIS continued under its Vice-Chairman from 1983 to 1988 and Chairman thereafter **Monique Garnier-Lançon**, who remained involved with the EIS until 1995. Her participation in the Cercle Pinay as convenor of the French delegation from 1982 to 1986, detailed in the Postscript, reflected a change of generation in French representation from Pinay and Violet's contacts to those of **Jacques Chirac**, the rising star of the French Right who had served as Prime Minister under President Giscard d'Estaing from 1974 to 1976.

Under the banner of the Rassemblement Pour la République (RPR) which he founded in December 1976, Chirac was elected in March 1977 to the newly re-created ancient post of Mayor of Paris, serving for eighteen years until elected as French President in 1995. Chirac's power base as Mayor of Paris - a position of national prominence outside of government, similar to that of the Labour Leader of the Greater London Council from 1981 to 1986, Ken Livingstone - was crucial for the French Right, particularly after Socialist François Mitterrand's unprecedented presidential election victory over Giscard d'Estaing in May 1981. At the Paris Town Hall, Garnier-Lançon was one of Chirac's closest advisors on security policy and served under him from 1977 until 1989 as one of the thirty-six (later reduced to twenty-eight) Deputy Mayors of Paris.

The departure of Close, Jonet and de Kerchove from the EIS did not however disrupt the 6I anti-pacifist campaign, as the MAUE team of Close, Jonet, Vankerkhoven and de Kerchove had already set up their own Belgian anti-disarmament group with 6I help - the **Rassemblement pour la Paix dans la Liberté/Vereniging voor Vrede en Vrijheid** [RAPPEL, Rally for Peace in Freedom] set up by Jonet, "our man in Brussels", a group whose "influence spread not only through the Belgian Parliament, but into the schools, with the distribution of officially approved booklets on defence", as Crozier noted (479). RAPPEL's inaugural meeting was held in March 1982 and chaired by Close; speakers included **Count Yves du Monceau de Bergendal**, a PSC senator from 1971 on and supporter of

Opus Dei (480)*, and **Armand De Decker**, the founding Deputy Secretary-General of the PRL from 1979 to 1981 who served as a PRL Member of Parliament from 1981 on and as President of the Liberal group within the Western European Union Assembly from 1982 on (481)*.

Crozier however makes no mention in his memoirs of a second Brussels-based 6I front group, this time international in both agenda and membership: the **Institut Européen pour la Paix et la Sécurité** (IEPS), created as a parallel organisation to the EIS: whilst the EIS is usually referred to by its German/English acronym, its French acronym had also been IEPS - the Institut Européen pour les Problèmes de Sécurité (482). The new Belgian-based IEPS, which ran until at least 1993, held its first General Assembly in April 1982, attended by Strauß and Habsburg. After their august presence at the IEPS inaugural ceremony, the German dignitaries were swiftly sidelined - the IEPS operational base was the core Brussels MAUE/RAPPEL team, and the London command centre was under 6I chief Crozier who then liaised with the 6I's American allies in the ASC/NSIC complex. The new Belgian group focused on 'Political Action' (propaganda) operations against Communist subversion of Western protest movements, along the lines of the 6I operations in Holland and in the UK, the latter run by the London 6I/CPS core of Crozier, Lewis, Leigh, Kerpel and Mercer.

Close was President of the IEPS. His fellow MAUE Vice-President and Belgian Cercle coordinator Jonet was one of the IEPS Administrators, as was MAUE Board member de Kerchove. A third IEPS Administrator was Belgian **Colonel Henri Bernard**, wartime veteran of the SOE and emeritus Professor of History at the Belgian Military College. Bernard had been one of the earliest partners of Damman and Vankerkhoven, serving as a speaker for AENA in the early 1960s and as a member of the Committee of Patronage of the Ligue Internationale de la Liberté from its foundation in 1966 onwards; he was also a longstanding CEDI member (483)*.

The IEPS Vice-Presidents were RAPPEL members Yves du Monceau de Bergendal and Armand De Decker; other IEPS luminaries included 1976 AESP patron **Jean Gol**, who had been the founding President of the PRL in 1979 and who served as Belgian Deputy Prime Minister and Justice Minister from 1981 to 1987 (throughout the Brabant Wallon killings) when his chef de cabinet was de Kerchove (484)*. Other Belgian *prominenti* included Louis Michel, Gol's successor as PRL President, and Willy Declercq, Belgian Finance Minister in 1973-77 and again in 1981-85 before serving as Belgian EEC Commissioner for External Relations and Trade until 1989, and then sitting in the European Parliament until 2004.

As for the non-Belgian members, the 6I Politburo was represented in the IEPS by Crozier and Huyn. Other European members of the IEPS included two further Cercle members - Chairman Julian Amery and IEDSS mainstay Lord Chalfont - as well as Viscount Cranborne, 6I author Vladimir Bukovsky and French 6I ally Marie-France Garaud, the latter being introduced below. The US was represented by

Lieutenant-General Daniel O. Graham and **Brigadier-General Robert C. Richardson III**, both members of the Political Action Committee of the ASC involved in the anti-Carter campaign of 1980. Following Reagan's election victory, Generals Graham and Richardson had been Founder and Founding Vice-President respectively of **High Frontier**, a group created in September 1981 to lobby for space-based missile defence, a project adopted by Reagan in 1983 as the Strategic Defense Initiative, commonly known as Stars Wars (485)*. Reportedly, a further Vice-President of the IEPS was German business consultant **Wolfgang Reineke,** one of Grau's allies since the 1970s who had been a founding member of the EIS alongside Close, Jonet and de Kerchove (486)*.

The IEPS held monthly lectures where the speakers were introduced by De Decker or Vankerkhoven, the latter having been elected to the European Parliament for the PSC in November 1982, where he sat until July 1984. The first International Congress of RAPPEL was held on 19th - 23rd September 1983 in Luxembourg in conjunction with the 16th Annual Conference of WACL; the opening ceremony was held in the European Parliament. There was considerable overlap between MAUE, RAPPEL, the IEPS and WACL at the 1983 Luxembourg WACL meeting; the President of the WACL Preparatory Committee was Close, who was appointed WACL Chairman at the conference, one of the conference speakers was his fellow MAUE Vice-President Vankerkhoven, and also in attendance as a 'journalist' was MAUE Board member and IEPS Administrator de Kerchove. One of the resolutions proposed by the Belgian WACL chapter was entitled "Beware of Camouflaged Red Peace Moves".

The other European components of the 6I's anti-disarmament campaign were represented by three further speakers at the WACL conference: Vladimir Bukovsky ("The Illusions of the West: Pacifists against Peace"), General Sir Walter Walker ("Either We Hang Together – or We Hang Separately") and **Marie-France Garaud** ("Détente or Defence?"). Garaud, who served from 1967 to 1974 as an advisor to Georges Pompidou and a close associate of 6I stalwart Georges Albertini, had co-founded the RPR with Jacques Chirac in 1976 before creating the **Institut International de Géopolitique** - another French 6I outlet – in 1982 with the support of FARI, the USCISC, the NSIC and the CSIS (487)*.

The cooperation between WACL and the Belgian 6I members in the IEPS was to become even more explicit after the Luxembourg conference; on 28th October 1983, the new WACL Chairman Close sent out an English-language "Circular to all National Chapters and Associated Organizations of the World Anti-Communist League" in which he wrote:

> "In order to follow up concretely the precious work accomplished by the participants of the 16th Annual Conference, the European Institute for Peace and Security (EIPS) offers the following programme in collaboration with the World Anti-Communist League:

> - Awaken public opinion at all political levels and create systems and instruments of information capable of efficiently countering the destabilization methods used by the Soviet Union, not only in the European context but also throughout the rest of [the] world. [...]
>
> The EIPS envisages:
>
> a) The production and distribution of video-cassettes containing presentations and informative exposés (in French and English) by experts on East/West relations. The following are already recorded and are awaiting the "production" process, but many more are planned: [there follows a list of presentations filmed at the Luxembourg WACL conference, including those given by Close, Vankerkhoven, Garaud, Walker and Bukovsky].
>
> b) The organization of a series of lectures by experts in the field of security as well as writers, university professors and members of the mass media and [sic] examine the most current and important problems of the various aspects of the Soviet threat.
>
> Needless to say, this ambitious programme of video-cassettes, which is only part of an even greater global action, requires substantial funds. Our present target is approximately $300,000, which we hope to raise through combined efforts of the various organizations, i.e. members of the EIPS, the delegates of WACL and possibly other affiliated organizations pursuing identical aims. WE APPEAL TO ALL FOR SUPPORT.
>
> It might be worthwhile to mention that we have been able to collaborate with the NATO Information Service for distribution of copies of the film "Barriers", produced by NATO in 1982 [and screened at the WACL conference], to more than 20 non-NATO nations. This film depicts eloquently the historical background and the contrast between freedom in the West and slavery in the subjugated nations" (488).

Apart from these Dutch and Belgian anti-disarmament operations, Crozier records in his memoirs that the Cercle/6I also cooperated with two existing groups in France and Germany, the **Comité Français contre le Neutralisme et pour la Paix** run by former Minister and French Cercle member **Philippe Malaud** and the **Bonner Friedensforum** [Bonn Peace Forum] (489)*.

Besides this minor German student group, the Cercle/6I also had a more important presence in another German anti-disarmament outfit: Huyn, one of the Cercle/6I triumvirate, was a Board member of the **American European Strategy**

Research Institute (AESRI), an offshoot of the German section of **Western Goals**. The founding meeting of the Munich-based **Western Goals Europe** was held on 17th May 1981, attended by Huyn, Hans Klein of the Brüsewitz Centre and the Deutschland-Stiftung, former Rear-Admiral and later Cercle member Günter Poser – from 1964 to 1969 Head of Military Intelligence at the Defence Ministry, then Assistant Director of NATO's Intelligence Division until his resignation over Brandt's Ostpolitik in 1973, former Major-General Jochen Löser - Chairman of the EIS Board of Directors, Carl-Gustav Ströhm - Eastern European correspondent for the newspaper *Die Welt* and speaker for Grau's SWG, Larry McDonald - co-founder of the Western Goals Foundation in 1979 and member of the John Birch Society, and former Generals George Patton and Lewis Walt. McDonald put up $131,982 of initial funds, at the time about a third of Western Goals' operating capital. AESRI was then founded in Munich on 8th July 1981 by Huyn, Klein, McDonald, Patton, CDU MP and Program Director for Western Goals Europe Helmut Sauer, BND agent Stefan Marinoff and American industrialist Robert Stoodard. AESRI had branches in Heidelberg, Bonn and Munich (490)*.

In May 1982, AESRI member Huyn aroused a media storm with a publication entitled *Für Frieden in Freiheit* (For Peace in Freedom), which accused prominent Dutch and German Christian peace groups of communist sympathies and returned to an old theme, Soviet subversion in the Churches via the Christian Peace Conference. Huyn's conclusions were also reported in the Dutch daily, *De Telegraaf*, as well as in other European and American newspapers. Another frequent writer for AESRI and Western Goals Europe was Professor Hans Werner Bracht, the former senior lecturer at the German Army School for Psychological Warfare who had worked with Löwenthal in the Deutschland-Stiftung, the Brüsewitz Centre and Konservative Aktion; Bracht took over as President of Western Goals Europe in March 1983. AESRI and Western Goals Europe again courted controversy in 1985 by publishing allegations of communist agitation at Bielefeld University, having infiltrated it (491).

THE 6I'S AMERICAN OUTREACH

A major transatlantic relay in the propaganda chorus was of course the NSIC which in 1979 created the **Consortium for the Study of Intelligence** to organise a series of conferences in Washington whose proceedings, published by the NSIC as the series *Intelligence Requirements for the 1980s*, had considerable influence on the defence policy of the Reagan Administration (492). The conferences brought together many of the American allies of the Cercle/6I, most of whom we have already met.

The first conference was a Colloquium on Analysis and Estimates, held in Washington on 30th November – 1st December 1979, attended amongst others by Richard V. Allen, chief foreign policy advisor to Governor Reagan and a 6I contact, Barnett, Trager and Godson of the NSIC, Cline, Senate Intelligence Committee Staff Member Angelo Codevilla (an IEDSS author in 1982 and 1988), Colby, former Arms Control and Disarmament Director Fred Iklé who as future Under-Secretary of Defense later played a significant part in covert anti-pacifist propaganda operations, Sven Kraemer (then of the Senate Republican Policy Committee and Heritage Foundation Transition Team Chair for Defense), veteran disinformationist **Michael A. Ledeen** (on whom see below), stalwart NSIC and ISC supporter Morris Leibman of the ABA, Professor Richard Pipes of the USCISC, James Jesus Angleton's former Deputy in CIA Counter-Intelligence Raymond Rocca who had resigned from the CIA shortly after Angleton's enforced retirement in December 1974 (see below), House Intelligence Committee staffer Romerstein, former Czech General and defector Jan Sejna, and the then Deputy Assistant Secretary of Defense Paul Wolfowitz.

This was followed by a Colloquium on Counter-Intelligence, held on 24th - 26th April 1980, whose participants included Barnett, Godson and Mott from the NSIC, Cline, Senate Intelligence Committee staffers deGraffenreid and Codevilla, Romerstein, Angleton's former colleagues in CIA Counter-Intelligence Raymond Rocca and Newton S. Miler, Pipes, Shackley and Wannall.

A third conference was held on Clandestine Collection on 30th-31st December 1981 and brought together Cline, Codevilla, deGraffenreid (now on the National Security Council), Godson, General Graham, Leibman, McNamara of the Hale Foundation (on whom see below), Pipes, Rocca, Romerstein and Shackley.

A fourth conference, a Symposium on the Role of Special Operations in US Strategy for the 1980s, took place on 4th - 5th March 1983 and involved amongst others Barnett and Godson from the NSIC, the Staff Director of the Senate Republican Conference Committee Margo Carlisle (whom we shall return to later), Codevilla, de Borchgrave, 6I members Jameson and Shackley of Research Associates International, Deputy Under-Secretary of Defense for Policy and 6I founding member General Stilwell, Tanham of the RAND Corporation and the US Committee for the ISC, Major Oliver North of the NSC, and Maurice Tugwell and General Sir Walter Walker, both British counter-insurgency veterans.

A fifth colloquium on Intelligence and Policy was then held on 9th - 10th November 1984; its participants included Codevilla, Colby, de Graffenreid (now Senior Director of Intelligence Programs at the NSC), his colleague working for the NSC Arms Control Directorate Sven Kraemer, Crozier's former CIA controller Cord Meyer, Pipes, Rocca, Romerstein (now at the USIA) and Shackley.

Another significant US strategy group with links to the Cercle was the ASC and its main operational arm, the **Coalition for Peace Through Strength** (CPTS), one of the most vocal anti-disarmament groups in the 1980s, several of whose members held prominent positions in the Reagan Administration (493). The ASC had links to the Cercle complex through five serving or retired senior military officers on the ASC Board:

Gen. Richard G. Stilwell	senior 6I member whilst Deputy Under-Secretary of Defense for Policy from February 1981 to February 1985;
Gen. Daniel O. Graham	CPTS Co-Chairman from 1978 on, ASC/High Frontier representative on IEPS Board in 1983;
Gen. Robert Richardson	ASC/High Frontier representative on IEPS Board in 1983;
Gen. Lewis Walt	founding member of Western Goals Germany in 1981;
Adm. John S. McCain	1974 launch of Centre du Monde Moderne, Board member of US Committee for the ISC.

Generals Stilwell and Graham also ensured Cercle access to the Moonies' CAUSA and their American geostrategic propaganda outlet, the **US Global Strategy Council** (USGSC), the two Generals serving on the Board with Pipes under the Chairmanship of Ray Cline in the late 1980s. Graham was also Vice-President of the United States Council for World Freedom, the American branch of WACL, which strongly supported the anti-pacifist campaign; in April 1982, USCWF founder General Singlaub asserted at the North American Regional WACL conference that "the so-called "Ground Zero" movement and anti-nuclear demonstrations in the United States and Western Europe are Moscow-inspired and directed against the United States and the rest of the free world" (494).

The involvement of ASC stalwart General Richardson in the 6I Belgian front group IEPS also leads us back to the late 1970s and a complex of American-based groups in which Richardson figured prominently. The complex of groups had originally been formed around **James Jesus Angleton** who, as veteran CIA Counter-Intelligence chief from 1954 on, had played a major part in CHAOS, the CIA's illegal domestic intelligence-gathering programme which targeted over seven thousand American anti-war protestors.

ANGLETON IN EXILE

After CIA Director Colby forced his resignation in December 1974, Angleton launched a campaign in 1977 to defend two senior FBI officers indicted for illegal acts committed as part of the FBI's COINTELPRO programme. The two FBI agents charged in 1978 and convicted in November 1980 of supervising illegal break-ins at the homes of Weather Underground sympathisers in 1972-73 were W. Mark Felt (of Deepthroat fame), then the Acting Associate Director of the FBI, and Edward S.

Miller, the Assistant Director of the Domestic Intelligence Division. Their convictions would however not stand for long, unconditional presidential pardons being granted five months later by Ronald Reagan in March 1981 (495).

To quote from the official but mostly still classified eleven-volume official CIA report by Cleveland Cram into Angleton's previous activities:

> "In the summer of 1977, Angleton developed a new forum for his ideas. He and like-minded associates organized the **Security and Intelligence Fund** [here ASIF] to defend US security and intelligence organizations and to raise money for the defense of two FBI officers then under indictment by the Carter administration. Here, Angleton was on surer ground. He had the support of a large number of FBI retirees as well as many former CIA officers. This was the period when the Pike and Church Congressional committees were in full cry investigating and exposing CIA operations and numerous ex-intelligence people believed they had gone too far. ASIF raised more than $600,000 and within six months was reported to have more than 17,000 members. Angleton was chairman, and his friends held senior positions" (496)*.

ASIF was registered as the Security and Intelligence Fund, Inc. in Washington D.C. in April 1977, and was chaired by Angleton; General Richardson served as its Director and Secretary-Treasurer (497). Whilst Angleton and his alliance of CIA and FBI veterans chose to confront the courts and Congress, two months earlier Crozier had taken a different path, creating the 6I in February 1977 as a "Private Sector Operational Intelligence agency" designed to sidestep any public investigation of or legal restriction on intelligence and counter-subversion work.

To return to ASIF, following the presidential pardon of the two FBI men in 1981, "the purpose for which ASIF was created more or less evaporated. Angleton then converted it into a forum for spreading information about Soviet deception. The Fund remained in effect into the 1980s until, after Angleton's death and the coming of glasnost, it withered away" (498). This account of ASIF by the author of the definitive CIA report on Angleton's record is however not entirely accurate. In February 1985, ASIF was re-registered under the name of the **Security and Intelligence Foundation, Inc.** (SIFI), which published the journal *Nightwatch*. As before in ASIF, Richardson served in Angleton's new group SIFI as Secretary-Treasurer, hiring a young and energetic Executive Director, **Charles S. Viar**, presented below. After Angleton's death in May 1987, far from withering away, SIFI continued under Viar, now SIFI President, assisted by SIFI Chairman W. Raymond Wannall, former Assistant Director of the FBI in charge of the Intelligence Division and then mainstay of the **Nathan Hale Institute**, which with ASIF had defended the indicted FBI men (499)*. By March 1988, SIFI would spawn a sister organisation, the **Center For Intelligence Studies** (CFIS) with Viar as Chairman and General Richardson on the Board (500)*.

With offices on Washington's K Street, "the Center For Intelligence Studies and its diverse activities are dedicated to the memory of James J. Angleton, my friend, mentor, and guide" wrote CFIS Chairman Charles S. Viar. Viar's web biography records that, as

> "a top expert in the fields of intelligence and counterintelligence, Charles Viar first became involved in intelligence during his service in the United States Marine Corps Reserve (1971-1973). He has been continuously involved in intelligence or intelligence-related matters ever since ... After working at the American Security Council and the Heritage Foundation, Mr. Viar became Executive Director and later President of the Security and Intelligence Foundation [SIFI]. Between 1985 and 1987, he had the unique privilege of studying under the late James J. Angleton, the legendary former chief of CIA Counterintelligence. Since 1989, he has been Chairman and CEO of the Center For Intelligence Studies in Washington, DC" (501).

Viar's autobiography *From Whence the Darkness* records that ASIF, SIFI and CFIS had strong links to the ASC, and particularly to ASC Board members Generals Graham and Richardson. Viar had worked at the ASC as research assistant to Graham from spring 1979 to late 1980; whilst at the ASC, he also liaised with Richardson and Angleton, both active in ASIF and the ASC – Angleton sat on the ASC National Strategy Committee and acted alongside Richardson as an Associate Editor of the ASC's *Journal of International Relations*. ASIF itself was housed in the ASC offices until 1984 before being briefly hosted by the Heritage Foundation. Following its refoundation in 1985, SIFI moved into the premises of High Frontier, run by Graham and Richardson (502).

Besides Viar and Richardson, there was further overlap between the personnel of SIFI and CFIS; a close colleague of theirs in both organisations was former wartime Army Intelligence Major **Francis John McNamara** who saw service during World War II in Burma before working in China after the war for the United Nations Relief and Rehabilitation Administration.

> "Returning to the US in 1948, McNamara went to work as a researcher for American Business Consultants, Inc., in New York City, a security firm and publisher of the anti-communist newsletter *Counterattack*. In January of 1950 he became editor of *Counterattack* where he remained until May of 1954. He then moved to Washington, D.C., to head the National Security Program of the Veterans of Foreign Wars (VFW). In 1958 he left the VFW to serve as a research analyst and consultant to the House Committee on Un-American Activities (HUAC). In 1961 he became director of research at HUAC, and in 1962, its staff director [until 1969]. In 1970 he went to work for the Subversive Activities Control Board (SACB) where he served as executive secretary [until

1973]. In 1981 he became executive director of the Nathan Hale Foundation. He served as Vice-Chairman of the Security and Intelligence Foundation [SIFI] from 1987-90 and is a Senior Fellow at the Center For Intelligence Studies in Arlington, Virginia" (503)*.

Another person who held positions in both organisations was lawyer **Dr. Scott S. Powell**, a Senior Fellow at CFIS and also a Senior Fellow at SIFI from 1990 to 2005 (504).

RED COCAINE

Besides General Richardson, another associate of Crozier's 6I on the CFIS Board in 1988 was **Joseph D. Douglass, Jr**, "a national security analyst and author with expertise in defence policy, threat assessment, deception, intelligence and political warfare, nuclear strategy, terrorism, advanced chemical and biological warfare agents and applications, and international narcotics trafficking ... He has worked in and for the national laboratories (Sandia Corporation), the US Government, where he was Deputy and Acting Director, Tactical Technology Office, [Defense] Advanced Research Projects Agency [DARPA] and with various defence contractors" - a background in Air Force political warfare and weapons testing shared with Richardson. A member of the Committee on the Present Danger, Douglass was appointed Assistant Director of the Arms Control and Disarmament Agency by President Reagan in 1981. In August 1982, he wrote to CIA Director Casey to propose "external research on Soviet deception and disinformation". He also worked throughout the 1980s as an author for the NSIC and the Institute for Foreign Policy Analysis; at least one 1986 study was sponsored by the CIA (505)*.

In December 1986, Douglass headed a 6I propaganda campaign accusing the Soviet Union and Fidel Castro of controlling and directing the world drugs trade. The research team under Douglass was coordinated by Crozier, producing a report which was given wide publicity just before Christmas in Europe, being published in full in France by *L'Express* and then in Spain by *ABC* – a major media coup for the 6I. The same message was covered for the American market by a December 1986 article by Douglass and Jan Sejna entitled *International Narcotics Trafficking: the Soviet Connection*, echoed in Washington by the Heritage Foundation in their 1987 booklet *Narco-Terrorism: the Kremlin Connection* followed in 1988 by *Narco-terrorism and the Cuban connection.* The Freedom Association ensured British circulation for the campaign in February 1987 via an article *The Soviet Drug War Against the West* in its bulletin, *The Free Nation* (506)*. In 1990, Douglass produced his major work, *Red Cocaine: the Drugging of America and the West* (with a foreword by Ray S. Cline), whose red cover dramatically portrayed Lenin and a syringe superimposed on a hammer and sickle (507)*.

SMEAR!

As we have seen, the Cercle/6I complex could use its international links to intelligence-backed private disinformation outlets not only to circulate anti-Communist propaganda themes but also to intervene in each country's domestic politics by promoting their favoured political candidate and by accusing politicians or movements of the Left or Centre of being Soviet dupes or stooges. Crozier's 1979 Transnational Security planning paper bluntly stated that one of the functions of the group was to "conduct international campaigns aiming to discredit hostile personalities and/or events".

A major example of this was a 6I campaign targeting the Left in Britain throughout the 1980s. After Thatcher's election victory in May 1979 and her subsequent working meeting at Chequers with MI6 chief Franks and the 6I team of Crozier and Elliott, the UK counter-subversion lobby's smear campaign against the Labour Party continued with scarcely an interruption. In 1988, it emerged that Brian Crozier had been working for nearly a decade with **Charles Elwell**, the former Head of MI5 F1 counter-subversion branch from 1974 to 1979, who together with Peter Wright had been one of the MI5 officers most closely connected with the Frolik allegations central to the anti-Labour campaigns of 1974-76 (508)*. Immediately after his retirement from MI5 in May 1979, Elwell started working with Crozier in Shield/6I to reconstitute a press cuttings archive and to produce a secret smear bulletin called ***Background Briefing on Subversion***, whose title echoed that of the now-closed IRD's regular confidential report, *Background Briefing*. The newsletter targeted many of the same politicians and reproduced many of the same smears as MI5's previous Clockwork Orange 2 operation (509). Exposed by the *Guardian* in late 1989, it was not until late 1990 that further details of the smear bulletin, later called ***British Briefing***, were published in the *Observer*; the bulletin closed down the same year (510).

Available only to a select few, and containing strict warnings not to reveal its existence, the bulletin accused many prominent Labour politicians of Communist or Stalinist affiliations. Amongst the targets were Neil Kinnock, shadow health secretary Robin Cook, social services spokesman Michael Meacher, and Labour MPs Harriet Harman (a previous MI5 target during her spell at the NCCL), Harry Cohen, Chris Mullin, Harry Barnes and David Blunkett. Several progressive organisations were also tarred with the Communist brush, notably the housing charity Shelter, the Institute for Race Relations and the World Council of Churches. All were smeared by association using quotations from left-wing newspapers such as the *Morning Star* – exactly the tactic that the ISC and 6I used, thanks to their research libraries.

The bulletin, usually 35 pages long, brought out two special General Election supplements in March and April 1987: the March supplement, 29 pages long, contained smears on nearly 50 candidates. The tone of *British Briefing* can be judged by the following declaration in the February 1987 issue:

> "The march of communism through the trades unions, the Labour Party, local government, religion, education, charity, the media under the leadership of communists who may or may not be members of the Communist Party, is what BB is all about. BB seeks to provide those who have the means to expose the communist threat with clear evidence of its existence."

Funding for the smear operation was channelled through a registered charity, the Industrial Trust, financed by many of the UK's leading companies (511)*. Publishing was carried out at the address of IRIS, Industrial Research and Information Services, one of the right-wing blacklisting services which published its own newsletter, *IRIS News*, aimed at a trade-union audience. The Industrial Trust's accounts showed that since 1985 the Industrial Trust also had given more than £500,000 to IRIS, as well as £5,000 a year to Common Cause (512). The Trust was later investigated by the Charities Commission for possible breaches of the ban on political activity by charities. Further funding for *British Briefing* came from media magnate **Rupert Murdoch**, who provided some £40,000 a year for Elwell's smear sheet. An old friend of Crozier, Murdoch also bailed out Crozier's publishing company, Sherwood Press, which by 1987 had accumulated a deficit of £65,000. Murdoch's News International took a half-stake in the company and agreed to meet losses then totalling over £90,000. Crozier also had legal costs to pay after losing a libel case brought by Richard Barnet, director of the Institute for Policy Studies (513).

Perhaps because of this considerable financial strain, publication of *British Briefing* was taken over in 1988 by **David Hart**, a close aide to Mrs. Thatcher. From 1977 to 1981, Hart had been research assistant to Archie Hamilton, the man who, as Minister of State for the Armed Forces, had to bear the fall-out from the Colin Wallace case. In 1979, Hart worked as campaign organiser for the Corby and Kettering election campaigns of Rupert Allason, later elected Tory MP for Torbay - alias Nigel West, the spooks' favoured historian.

In 1984, during the strike by the National Union of Mineworkers, Hart made media fame by setting up the Working Miners' Committee from a suite in Claridges. Hart also set up the **Committee for a Free Britain**, funded by Rupert Murdoch, which ran "virulent full-page anti-Labour advertisements in the national press during the 1987 general election". In 1986, Hart applied to Tory Central Office to become a candidate for the 1987 general election; despite having powerful sponsors (Transport Secretary Malcolm Rifkind, later Tory Party chairman Lord Young, and Ian Gow, Thatcher's private secretary for her first four years in office), he was turned down. Besides his intelligence links in Britain, Hart had contacts in the US: CIA director Bill Casey used Hart to run a UK campaign in favour of Star Wars, supported in the US by Generals Graham and Richardson. Hart was also an associate of

Reagan's Under-Secretary of Defense for Policy Fred Iklé (514). Hart later financed anti-CND propaganda by Lady Olga Maitland to counter a demonstration against the first Iraq War on 2nd February 1991.

THE "TERRORIST THREAT"

By the late 1980s, the focus for scare tactics by the disinformation institutes had shifted from Moscow manipulation of the peace movement and Russian and Cuban involvement in the drugs trade to Soviet backing for international terrorism. The Cercle's London partner, the ISC, had carried out much of the early propaganda work on terrorism, providing consultancy services in training for the police and armed services. One of the right-wing academics who lectured at police colleges in the early 1970s at the suggestion of the ISC was **Professor Paul Wilkinson**, who went on to cut his propaganda teeth with ISC Conflict Study No. 67, *Terrorism versus Liberal Democracy: The Problem of Response*, published in January 1976. Two months later, in March 1976, with Crozier, Moss and Horchem, Wilkinson was one of four ISC speakers at a major international conference on terrorism in Washington, chaired by Robert Fearey. In 1979, the same ISC team attended two Israeli conferences on terrorism, the first organised by the Israeli Jaffee Centre for Strategic Studies, where Wilkinson was accompanied by Moss and Horchem (515). The second Israeli conference on "International terrorism, challenge and response" was held in early July in Jerusalem and was the founding conference of the probable Mossad front, the **Jonathan Institute**, a major gathering of Cercle assets. At the Jonathan Institute's launch, contributors included not only the ISC team of Crozier, Moss, Wilkinson and Horchem, but also ex-CIA chief George H. W. Bush, Ray Cline, Lord Chalfont, Vladimir Bukovsky, Jacques Soustelle and Gerhard Löwenthal (516)*.

Wilkinson, later professor at Aberdeen and St. Andrew's universities, rose to become a prominent advisor on terrorism to Margaret Thatcher; this is not surprising when one looks at the Board members of Wilkinson's **Research Foundation for the Study of Terrorism**, founded in late 1986 (517)*. The RFST, which operated from the address of Aims of Industry, included on its Board many figures from SIF, NAFF, FARI, the ISC and the Cercle complex:

Col. Ronnie Waring, Duke de Valderano	Chairman of the RFST Council, MI6, CEDI, Unison with G. K. Young, FARI Council.
Michael Ivens	Director of Aims, SIF National Executive with G. K. Young, FARI Council, NAFF National Executive and inner core with Moss, Vice-President of the Freedom Association.

Norris McWhirter	SIF, NAFF National Executive and inner core with Moss and Ivens, Chairman of the Freedom Association.
Ian Greig	Founding Monday Club member, Deputy Director of FARI, Senior Executive of the ISC, probable early AESP contact.
John Biggs-Davison	SIF National Executive with G. K. Young, FARI Council, Monday Club President, longstanding PEU Council member, AESP Life Member.
Nicholas Elliott	MI6, 6I/Cercle with Crozier.

In 1989, the RFST merged with the rump of the post-Crozier ISC under the title of the **Research Institute for the Study of Conflict and Terrorism** (RISCT). Alongside RISCT Director Wilkinson was RISCT's Chairman Frank Brenchley, former Chairman of the ISC Council, and RISCT Executive and Editorial Director **Professor William Gutteridge**, an ISC author from 1971 onwards. RISCT offered for sale the whole series of Conflict Studies from 1970 onwards, and proclaimed itself successor to the ISC in its publication list:

> "The Research Institute for the Study of Conflict and Terrorism was established in 1989, primarily to undertake research and publishing activities. It continues to produce the well-established monthly series, *Conflict Studies*, begun in 1970 by its predecessor, the Institute for the Study of Conflict."

Besides Wilkinson and his RFST and RISCT, the Cercle and 6I also had links to several other 'terrorism research' outfits in the 1980s and 1990s, of which perhaps the most prominent was **Control Risks Information Services**. After leaving the ISC, the Institute's Senior Researcher and South Africa expert Peter Janke became chief researcher at Control Risks, which also included Major-General Richard Clutterbuck, a former Council member of the ISC, and Richard Sims, who had been the ISC's librarian. Control Risks continued the ISC's previous assistance to South Africa: in 1986, it set up a syndicate for British companies trading with South Africa. For a price of £1,500 per place, Control Risks informed the syndicate's members of "the activities of anti-apartheid groups in Europe, their relationship to terrorist groups and their intentions" (518).

FARI also provided the Cercle and 6I with connections to another terrorism disinformation outlet - besides serving on the Governing Council of FARI with Crozier, Moss and Amery and supporting 6I operations as sponsor for Julian Lewis's PRA, Lord Chalfont also chaired the London **Institute for the Study of Terrorism**, founded in 1985 and run by Jillian Becker. Both Chalfont and Becker were authors for the IEDSS - Becker's contribution was typically entitled *The Soviet Connection - State Sponsorship of Terrorism.* Moss himself then went on to run **Mid-Atlantic**

Research Associates, a "risk analysis firm" together with Arnaud de Borchgrave and John Rees of the John Birch Society.

A German terrorism propaganda outlet intimately linked with the Cercle complex and the 6I was the Bonn-based **Institut für Terrorismusforschung** [Institute for Terrorism Research], created in 1986 by Hans Josef 'Jupp' Horchem, former Director of the Hamburg BfV. In the mid-1970s, Horchem had been a prolific author for the ISC, joining Crozier's 6I soon after its creation in 1977. Together with Moss and Wilkinson, Horchem attended the two 1979 Israeli conferences on terrorism organised by the Israeli Jaffee Centre for Strategic Studies and the Jonathan Institute. After taking early retirement in January 1981, Horchem became a Research Fellow of the Centre for Strategic Studies in Tel Aviv and of the Institute for Strategic and International Studies at Georgetown University. He also signed up with the Axel Springer Verlag, the newspaper group which publishes both *Die Welt* and *Bild*, the newspaper with the largest circulation in Europe. Besides railing against communists and peace campaigners in *Die Welt*, Horchem also served as advisor to the "Internal Security Working Group" of Konservative Aktion, whose Vice-Chair was Löwenthal, another participant at the Jonathan Institute's launch in 1979.

In the mid-1980s, Horchem produced his fourth ISC Conflict Study, *Terrorism in Germany*, and also contributed sections on terrorism in Germany to publications by Wilkinson and Ariel Merari (519). Horchem's views were evidently in favour with his previous employers: Horchem, his deputy in the Bonn institute Rolf Tophoven and Dr. J. Kurt Klein all contributed to the German Interior Ministry publication *Der Terrorismus - eine akute Bedrohung der Menschenrechte* [Terrorism – an acute threat for human rights] published in 1985, and a thousand copies each of two of Horchem's books were bought by the BfV in 1987 for purposes of "positive protection of the constitution by information work", i.e. propaganda (520). In July 1988, Horchem was one of the former intelligence officers interviewed as part of the BBC Radio programmes on the intelligence services, *My Country, Right or Wrong?*, broadcast after the government's temporary injunction banning the programme was lifted. The programmes also featured two ex-CIA officers, fellow 6I member Jamie Jameson and Cercle guest William Colby.

A transatlantic outlet for Cercle output on terrorism was provided by the Canadian **Centre for Conflict Studies** (CCS), founded in 1979 by **Brigadier Maurice Tugwell**, former head of the Northern Ireland black propaganda unit, Information Policy, and a participant in ISC Study Groups. Although CCS was attached to the University of New Brunswick, it gave no academic courses and its activities consisted largely of contract work for the Royal Canadian Mounted Police, Canadian Police College, Canadian Department of National Defence, US Department of Defense, and NATO. The CCS worked with both the ISC and its successor RISCT; the editorial advisory board for the CCS quarterly journal, *Conflict Quarterly*, included Professor Paul Wilkinson. It also collaborated with the American NSIC, contributing a paper entitled *Special Operations and the Threat to United States Interests in the 1980s* to a 1984 study entitled *Special Operations in US Strategy* compiled by the NSIC for the US National Defense University.

In 1988, the publication of *Combatting the Terrorists* was announced, a book sponsored by the ISC in London and the Washington office of the CCS. The book brought together old friends: the editor, H. H. Tucker, was a former Deputy Head of the IRD, and the book included a chapter by ex-IRD writer Peter Janke of the ISC. Tugwell combined his anti-Soviet disinformation activities with pro-South African propaganda: he served as a director of the Canada-South Africa Society, a pro-apartheid support group funded by South African "businessmen". In the mid-1980s, Tugwell also founded the **Mackenzie Institute for the Study of Terrorism, Revolution and Propaganda** (521).

GUNNING FOR GORBACHEV

By mid-1988, Crozier was concentrating on a new campaign against Mikhail Gorbachev

> "as a necessary corrective to the wave of adulation about the Soviet leader at that time sweeping the West. My prime discovery was that Gorbachev's first concern was not [...] the 'restructuring' of the Soviet economy and Party organisation, but of the entire apparatus of disinformation and other Active Measures. My aim was to present, in factual detail, the Soviet involvement – since Gorbachev's advent to supreme power – in 'peace' disinformation, including forgeries, in international terrorism and drugs-running, in penetration of the Western Churches, and in deliberate cheating in arms control negotiations" (522).

The same anti-Gorbachev message was being echoed across the Atlantic by one of Crozier's longstanding contacts, Herbert Romerstein. As Director of the US Information Agency's Office to Counter Soviet Active Measures and Disinformation from 1983 to 1989, Romerstein played a considerable part in a USIA official report entitled *Soviet Active Measures in the Era of Glasnost* that was submitted to Congress in 1988.

Crozier's claims to have withdrawn from the Cercle in 1985 and to have shut down the 6I in late 1987 are belied by the minutes of a Cercle meeting held on 21st February 1989 and continued in Washington on 10th April. The February meeting was attended amongst others by Pinay, Crozier, Cercle Chairman Amery, Huyn and Barnett of the NSIC/USCISC as well as Charles T. Mayer of the Foreign Policy Discussion Group, who had previously attended the November 1976 CEDI Congress. The main theme on the agenda for the veteran operatives was "What can be done to contain the pro-Gorbachev mood in the Federal Republic?" The minutes of the meeting reveal that one item discussed was a campaign to discredit German Foreign Minister **Hans-Dietrich Genscher** from the Liberal FDP party.

> "The problem:
>
> Genscher's power is unbroken. He determines Bonn's foreign policy, even though he has been responsible for it for 14 years and makes the Chancellor dependent on the FDP.
>
> - the weakness of Kohl, the great appeaser,
>
> - the popularity of Gorbachev in public opinion in the Federal Republic,
>
> - the media.
>
> Possible methods:
>
> - in the Federal Parliament? Support from Alfred Dregger [Leader of the CDU/CSU group]? Support from Otto Lambsdorff?
>
> - Can Genscher be discredited? Certainly there is enough 'dirt' available.
>
> - Have we got any allies in the media? Horchem? *Die Welt*?
>
> - Is all of West German television contaminated?
>
> - Outside of Parliament (extra-parliamentary action). Can we use the Bonn Peace Forum? (523)* Possible themes or slogans for demonstrations: Stop Re-armament in the USSR; don't pay Gorbachev's bills,
>
> - Diplomatic pressure, particularly through the new US Ambassador, Dick Walters (524)*,
>
> - A comment: the modernisation of weapons (Lance) is relatively insignificant. The most important problem is the general atmosphere of a policy of reconciliation" (525)*.

But even as the 6I was preparing to intensify its anti-Gorbachev campaign, it was overtaken by events on the ground; 1989 brought the long-awaited collapse of the Iron Curtain. The fall of the Berlin Wall on 9th - 10th November 1989 was however only the final act in a process in which Habsburg and the PEU played a prominent part, working on bilateral contacts with Eastern European countries, notably through the European Parliament where Habsburg and Pirkl held powerful posts on the

Delegations for Relations with both Austria and Hungary. The process had started in July 1988 when Habsburg secretly visited Hungary, returning for his first official post-war visit to the country as part of a European Parliament delegation on 28th February 1989, a week after the Cercle/6I meeting mentioned above. The decisive step came on 2nd May 1989, when Hungarian border guards began dismantling the watch-towers on the Austro-Hungarian border, an act officialised on 27th June when the Foreign Ministers of Austria and Hungary, Alois Mock and Gyula Horn respectively, personally cut the border fence near the Hungarian town of Sopron.

The PEU then obtained 'official permission' to hold a "Paneuropean Picnic" on the same spot on 19th August under the combined patronage of Hungarian minister Imre Pozsgay and Otto von Habsburg of the PEU, to open – for three hours - the border gate sealing the old Pressburg (Bratislava) highway between Sankt Margarethen in Austria and Sopronköhida in Hungary. The PEU ensured advance publicity for this 'peace demonstration' as far as Poland, particularly targetting the annual crowd of East German holiday-makers. On the day, Habsburg's daughter Walburga symbolically cut the barbed wire fence, the gate was opened, and 661 East Germans crossed into the West whilst the Hungarian border guards observed without intervening. Despite an immediate crackdown on border security by the Hungarian government, the writing was on the wall; the Austro-Hungarian border was fully opened for East Germans on 11th September, followed by the Czechoslovak-German border in the first few days of November. Faced with massive numbers of East Germans preparing to use these breaches, the East German government was powerless to prevent the fall of the Berlin Wall. The PEU celebrated the momentous event at its 1990 International General Assembly, held for the first time in an Eastern bloc capital, Prague.

The Cercle/6I group, however, continued to gun for the Soviet leader, trying to dampen the West's enthusiasm for glasnost and perestroika. Despite Crozier's claim to have wound down the 6I in late 1987, he was able to count on "old and new outlets in New York, Washington, Paris, Madrid and other places" (526). Although not all of these outlets have yet been identified, the mention of Paris referred to a relaunch of the Cercle/6I's outreach in the French-speaking world. The new forum was the **Institut d'Etudes de la Désinformation** (IED) with headquarters on the Champs Elysées, founded in January 1987 by Radio France journalist and IED President **Daniel Trinquet** and award-winning Russian novelist **Vladimir Volkoff**, whose book *La Désinformation, arme de guerre* [Disinformation – weapon of war] was published in 1986. The IED was reportedly at least partially funded by the UIMM, the employers' federation of the metalworking industry, whose enormous cash slush fund totalling 600 million Euros had been used for interventions in French domestic politics since the early 1970s (527)*.

The IED held its "First International Assizes on Disinformation" in Nice on 13th - 16th November 1989 – barely four days after the fall of the Wall. According to the programme, the seminar was devoted to:

> "Day One - The new methods of seduction of the Communist countries: Gorbachevism, analysed from inside by true dissidents, a presentation of countries generally targeted by Soviet disinformation, a study of all those who contribute, voluntarily or otherwise, to this disinformation by acting as its channels in the West;
>
> Day Two - The role of the State: the omnipotent State which exerts an ideological domination over its essential bodies such as the Army, the police or the judiciary [...] analysis of disinformation which presents capitalism, and not socialism, as a corrupting force and which wants social progress to be linked to Statism and a government of the Left;
>
> Day Three - Daily Disinformation: an analysis of the major fears which reject the very idea of progress and cultural disinformation which [...] contributes to the corruption of our society leading to the collapse of the pillars of the State;
>
> Day Four - An insider's view of the French Press: having analysed different examples of disinformation from the most varied fields, understanding the mechanisms which make such a phenomenon possible so as to act more efficiently at a later stage" (528)*.

Attended by numerous French academics and journalists, the seminar was introduced by the IED top brass - IED President Daniel Trinquet and then the host as Mayor of Nice since 1965 and editorial writer for the IED's weekly bulletin *Désinformation Hebdo*, **Jacques Médecin** - an AESP member since 1977. Within a year of this conference, Médecin resigned as Mayor and fled to Uruguay after being placed under investigation for massive corruption; he was later extradited and convicted on several counts. Amongst the speakers at the 1989 IED conference were three 6I Politburo members: Crozier, an "expert on international relations" who spoke on "The myth of Gorbachevism: the difference between promises and reality. Does the West want to be disinformed?", Huyn ("Soviet methods of destabilisation of Europe") and Horchem, "Director of the Bonn Institute for the Study of Terrorism", who spoke on "Terrorism: a weapon at the service of disinformation". Of these three 6I speakers, Horchem had just produced the first contribution to the 6I's anti-Gorbachev campaign, his 1989 book *Pro pace - der zweite Weg sowjetischer Außenpolitik. Der Kampf des Kremls um Herzen und Hirne* [Pro pace - the second path of Soviet foreign policy. The Kremlin's struggle for hearts and minds]. Alongside Horchem as co-authors were Dr. Iain Elliot of the IEDSS Board and Roy Godson of the NSIC's Washington office. The same year saw the publication of Herbert Romerstein's *Soviet Active Measures and Propaganda: Influence Activities in the Gorbachev Era* and Huyn's *Die Doppelfalle Glasnost für Perestrojka ; das Risiko Gorbatschow* [Double Trap Glasnost for Perestroika – the Gorbachev Risk]; these books were then followed in

1990 by Huyn's *Gorbachev's Operation: A Common European House - Soviet Strategic Deception* and Crozier's *The Gorbachev Phenomenon: Peace and Secret War* (529).

At the IED Assizes, the 6I brought along three friends as fellow speakers, one American and two English. The American guest was USAF Brigadier-General Robert C. Richardson III of the ASC, ASIF/SIFI/CFIS and the pro-Star wars group High Frontier, who served on the IEPS Board with Crozier, Huyn and General Graham, founder of High Frontier. The first of the two British speakers was David Hart, "leader writer at the *Times*" who the previous year had taken over from Crozier as backer of Elwell's smear-sheet *British Briefing* and who had recently run a pro-Star Wars campaign in Britain on behalf of CIA Director Bill Casey. The second British 6I friend to address the IED conference was Cercle member **Lord Robert Cranborne** (on whom see the Postscript) who spoke on "The proof that Socialism is not irreversible: Great Britain".

The French speakers at the IED Assizes included the veteran Nice RPR politician since 1983, Professor of Law at Nice University and Cercle member **Bernard Asso**, former Army Chief of the General Staff from 1980 to 1983 General Jean Delaunay, former Director of the Renseignements Généraux from 1972 to 1975 Prefect Roger Chaix, former head of the French DST internal security service from 1967 to 1972 Prefect Jean Rochet, longstanding intelligence author Pierre de Villemarest and the President and Honorary President of the French right-wing debating society Club de l'Horloge Henry de Lesquen and Yvan Blot. With them was a trio of 6I friends: Suzanne Labin, veteran leader of the French section of WACL, and two Senior Fellows from the Viar/Richardson group CFIS - Dr. Françoise Thom and Joel-François Dumont, the latter a senior journalist specialising in security and intelligence issues at the French FR3 regional television network. **Joel-François Dumont de Vries**, to give him his full name,

> "has, over the last twenty-four years [i.e. since 1967], gained considerable experience of international affairs: first as Brussels-based EC and NATO correspondent, and more recently in his present capacity as a political and diplomatic analyst in Paris. Mr. Dumont is a former Auditor [*auditeur*, external pupil] of France's National Institute for Advanced Defence Studies [IHEDN, whose Director from 1972 to 1974 was Cercle associate General Callet] and a graduate of the Institute of Security Studies at Kiel University, Germany. He is also currently Director of the Centre for Intelligence Studies (Europe). He has published and contributed to a number of studies, among which: *The Peace Movements in Europe and America* (London, 1985); *Für ein Deutschland in der Zukunft* [For a Germany in the Future] (Berlin, 1985); and *La Désinformation Stratégique et les Mesures Actives Soviétiques* [Strategic Disinformation and Soviet Active Measures] (Paris, 1987)" (530)*.

Besides the French outlet provided by the IED, the Cercle also benefited from the creation in the late 1980s of three further groups involving the 6I's American allies - the **International Freedom Foundation** (1986), the **Center for Security Policy** (1988) and the **Institute of World Politics** (1990).

To turn first to the **International Freedom Foundation**, according to a 1995 *Newsday* article (531), the IFF was founded in 1986 and fronted by notorious American lobbyist Jack Abramoff, later jailed for his corrupt relationship with several congressional legislators. With a staff of twenty under Chairman Duncan Sellars and Executive Director Jeff Pandin, the IFF operated from prestigious offices in Washington, lobbying Congress, organising high-profile conferences and award ceremonies and publishing an extensive range of journals, reports and briefing papers. With branches in London, Rome, Hamburg, Brussels and Johannesburg, the IFF's stated aims were that it "works to foster individual freedom throughout the world" and "encourages and mobilizes support of indigenous democratic movements".

In reality, the IFF's purpose was the exact opposite – to counteract pressure in the US for sanctions on South Africa by denigrating Nelson Mandela and the ANC as Soviet stooges (532)*. Over half the IFF's funding was provided by the South African MID - the Military Intelligence Division - which gave at least $1.5 million a year from 1986 on. Interestingly, the IFF's creation in 1986 coincided with the closure after ten years of the London-based FARI, previous beneficiary of South African funds. In 1992, President de Klerk ended MID funding of the IFF as part of a withdrawal from 'Third Force' operations negotiated with Mandela; the IFF closed down in 1993. Prior to its closure, however, the IFF afforded the 6I its last appearance covered by this investigation in a series of conferences in the US and in Germany in the autumn of 1991.

Before detailing this swansong by the 6I, it is useful to examine the career and other affiliations of one particular IFF officeholder - **J. Michael Waller**, listed by the US Information Agency as Director of the IFF's International Security Affairs section (533). Waller had been "a member of the staff of the US House of Representatives and the US Senate, served on the White House Task Force on Central America, and has served as a consultant to the US Information Agency, the US Agency for International Development and the Office of the Secretary of Defense in support of operations in Afghanistan and Iraq. In 2006, he received a citation from the Director of the FBI for "exceptional service in the public interest" ... He is a frequent lecturer and instructor in psychological and information operations for the US military and the intelligence community" (534). Between 1984 and 1991, Waller was a key author for the Council on Inter-American Security's anti-Sandinista and anti-FMLN campaigns, and also produced *Peace, Power and Protest: Eastern Europe in the Gorbachev Era*, published in March 1988 by Wilkinson's RISCT as Conflict Study 209.

In 1993, Waller was a founding co-editor of the magazine *Demokratizatsiya – the Journal of Post-Soviet Democratization*; a 2003 article celebrating the magazine's tenth anniversary stated: "The policy approach of the journal was also covered by the International Freedom Foundation and later by the **American Foreign Policy Council**, both of which assumed critical roles in editing and financing the journal." Such support was not surprising: in 1994, Waller was a Senior Fellow of the AFPC, later rising to become AFPC Vice-President and Editor of its *Russia Reform Monitor* in 1997. Founded in 1982, the AFPC was a major forum for the Cercle complex's American friends; Kraemer and deGraffenreid have been frequent participants on AFPC delegations (535)*.

Waller also served as Vice-President for Information Operations at the **Center for Security Policy**, founded in Washington in 1988, another body which involved several of Crozier's American contacts - the CSP "National Security Advisory Council" included Kraemer, deGraffenreid and their future Pentagon bosses Douglas J. Feith and Cercle member Richard Perle, as well as Edwin Feulner, Midge Decter and former CIA Director James Woolsey; Cercle member Margo Carlisle was a member of the Board of Directors (536)*.

Waller and the trio of 6I friends Romerstein, Kraemer and deGraffenreid also provided overlap with another American group, the **Institute of World Politics**, a "Graduate School of National Security and International Affairs" founded in Washington in 1990. All four have served on the IWP Faculty, and IWP Guest Lecturers have included three former CIA Directors - Schlesinger, Woolsey and Tenet - as well as Douglas J. Feith and Caspar Weinberger (537)*.

To return to the IFF, before its closure in 1993 following the ending of South African 'Third Force' operations, the IFF provided a platform for the 6I's American and European members in the autumn of 1991. Three IFF conferences on intelligence were held, the first two in Washington and the last in Germany; the proceedings were published the following year by the IFF's German branch under the title *Intelligence and the New World Order*. The speakers at the first two Washington seminars, *Assessing US Intelligence Needs for the 1990s: Congressional Oversight of the Intelligence Community – Finding the Proper Balance*, included Romerstein, Kraemer and Holliday as well as CIA veterans Theodore Shackley and George Carver (538)*. Of greatest interest though was the third IFF intelligence conference, held in November 1991 in Potsdam under the title *National Intelligence Agencies in the period of European Partnership*.

Hard by the Berlin Wall breached almost exactly two years earlier, the IFF's German venue symbolised the changes since the fall of the Iron Curtain and German reunification, "closing the circle of the superpower era, at a conference in Schloss Cecilienhof, Potsdam, where Stalin initiated the Cold War", as the IFF book put it. The two keynote speakers in Potsdam also reflected the meeting of East and West: General

Oleg Kalugin, former head of KGB Counter-Intelligence, and William Colby, ex-Director of the CIA and a Cercle guest. Alongside them on the podium as speakers were the 6I core of Crozier (539)*, Huyn (540)* and Horchem (541)* together with their companion from the 1989 IED seminar, French security journalist Joel-François Dumont (542)*. Finally, amongst the participants at the IFF conference was another familiar face, Cercle/6I member Jamie Jameson. In new times, there's nothing like old friends (543)*.

A CIRCLE OF FRIENDS

(1993)

In contrast to the public conception of "conspiracy theory", the links uncovered by parapolitical research are rarely lines of command. Parapolitical activity is not pyramidal like a government hierarchy; it is connective, a network of nodes like a circle of friends. The links between the nodes are lines of support arising not from a command structure, but from a community of interest, shared objectives and interlocking memberships.

Individual groups do not so much set the agenda or run the show as act within their own sphere of influence or speciality, occasionally supporting actions taken by others. Many are isolated and have little impact outside their own country, and here the Cercle came into its own as a group with a world-wide agenda, connecting and, to some extent, coordinating the activities of groups in many different countries. The Cercle complex stands almost alone as an active international network linking intelligence veterans and their media manipulators to top right-wing politicians. As to its significance, one can do no better than to quote Ramsay and Dorril:

> "One of the conclusions to be drawn from this essay is about networks. One common response to the delineation of a network is to say, 'Yes, all that is interesting, but where is the actual transmission of power?' To which we would argue - and this is the only claim we make which might be called theoretical - that the network is the power. A network of people who are, elsewhere, powerful, is per se a powerful network."

Through its network of private-sector spies and their disinformation outlets, the Cercle complex could promote or denigrate public figures not only in their own country, but throughout Europe and America. Its activities during the Cold War - covert funding, black propaganda, smear campaigns and, at least, connections to planned coups d'état - were those of any intelligence agency, and, in many ways, that is what the Cercle complex has been: the rogue agents of the international Right.

POSTSCRIPT

(2015)

THE GARNIER-LANCON PAPERS

It is rare that the membership and concerns of confidential discussion groups of powerbrokers should become documented public knowledge. Indeed, the only instance so far of a voluntary - if paltry - release of such information has been by the Bilderberg Group, founded at the same time as the Cercle Pinay, which reacted to its growing notoriety a decade or so ago by publishing since then a bare list of the delegates and topics for its annual conferences. Not so for the Cercle which continues to meet in the same anonymity that it has enjoyed for the last sixty-odd years.

Despite its crucial significance for the genesis of the European Union and its far-reaching covert influence in both domestic and international politics since then, the Cercle still remains almost completely unknown today. For six decades, in spite of the eminence of its members and the notoriety of its allies in the intelligence community, the Cercle has stayed "under the radar", its existence unexposed except by the 1982 publication of the Langemann papers, and by Péan's groundbreaking 1984 book *V* on Violet and the AESP, neither of which were investigated further by the Press in Germany, France or Britain. Not even the publication in 1993 of Crozier's firsthand memoirs revealing the existence of the 6I – in his words, an international "Private Sector Operational Intelligence agency" closely linked to the Cercle – led to any further journalistic or academic examination of its activities. This study over the past twenty-five years has patiently pieced together the jigsaw of scant print references to Cercle operations by previous investigative journalists in several countries, extended their research to include reliable online resources and published some of the AESP internal documents that circulated amongst Belgian journalists at the time and were later reviewed by Schrijvers. However, no internal documents from the Cercle itself had emerged or were known even to exist.

All of this has changed in recent years, as the private papers of Cercle participants became available after their deaths, shedding light both on the Cercle's membership and on their meetings. The watershed came in October 2011 with the first-ever public release by Joël van der Reijden of primary sources from Le Cercle itself: internal Cercle meeting attendance lists from the Hoover Institution archive of papers from Monique Garnier-Lançon, a security advisor to Paris Mayor Jacques Chirac and one of his Deputy Mayors of Paris from 1977 to 1989 who served in the early 1980s as the post-Violet/Dubois convenor of the French Cercle delegation. Van der Reijden's 2011 publication of the Cercle attendance lists has been followed in August 2015 by a fuller release of the Garnier-Lançon archive by Belgian researcher Hervé Beghinselen. These primary sources considerably extend the available information about membership of the Cercle and the 6I at a critical point in their covert anti-disarmament campaign, confirming many of the links previously detailed in this investigation, clarifying several issues and identifying new paths of enquiry for later researchers.

The Cercle described in the 1982-85 participants' lists had changed markedly since the 1970s following the withdrawal of its co-founders Pinay and Violet and the eclipse of its longstanding financial backer Pesenti, then embroiled in the collapse of the Banco Ambrosiano. The loss of these original pillars of the Cercle was compounded in May 1981 by the electoral victory of Socialist François Mitterrand, a political sea-change which ejected the Cercle's natural allies from power and left them in disarray. By contrast, in Germany, although Strauß's Cercle-backed election bid in October 1980 had failed to unseat SPD Chancellor Helmut Schmidt, a constructive vote of no confidence in the Bundestag brought the CDU's Helmut Kohl to power in October 1982, marking the beginning of sixteen years of uninterrupted conservative rule. Whilst the German axis to the Cercle continued under the leadership of Huyn and Bach, French participation in the Cercle was further undermined by Pierre Péan's 1983 revelation of the sniffer plane scandal which led to a parliamentary inquiry and implicated Pinay and Violet, both old men in ill health. As the influence of the French waned and the Cercle struggled to find credible partners in that country, the Anglo-American and intelligence dimensions to the Cercle expanded considerably. Under the Chairmanship of SOE veteran Julian Amery, the post-Violet Cercle shifted focus, coming under the sway of Brian Crozier and his covert network, the 6I.

THE CERCLE AND THE 6I

The interaction between the Cercle and the 6I went far beyond the "minor overlapping" mentioned by Crozier; not only did senior figures from the British and American intelligence communities attend Cercle meetings, but also almost entire national delegations of the Cercle – most notably the post-Damman MAUE from Belgium – were recruited to the 6I cause, soon setting up front groups to assist Crozier's anti-unilateralist propaganda campaign. This process had been ongoing since the previous two meetings of Cercle allies for which we have full participants' lists - the February 1976 AESP Chapter Assembly and the November 1976 CEDI Congress – but the launch in February 1977 of Crozier's 6I accelerated the pace of integration. Indeed, the CEDI Congress in particular appears to have heralded the creation of the 6I which came only three months later; three key CEDI participants in November 1976 - Violet, Crozier and Huyn, the triumvirate then running the Cercle - were all, according to Crozier, core founding members of the 6I 'Politburo' in February 1977. Whilst Crozier's memoirs preferred to downplay the overlap between the Cercle and the 6I, noting that "some members of the 6I's 'Politburo' also attended the Cercle meetings; others did not" (544), the Cercle participants' lists between 1982 and 1985 belie the impression of separation that Crozier wished to give, as they record the frequent presence at Cercle meetings of most of the members of the 6I 'Politburo' and many of their operatives.

At the June 1982 Cercle meeting held at the HSS conference centre in Wildbad Kreuth, the first meeting covered by the Cercle documents in the Garnier-Lançon archive, the 6I 'Politburo' was well represented by Crozier, Elliott, Huyn and Jameson, the latter having acted as American coordinator of the Cercle since at least 1977. Other 6I contacts attending the Cercle meeting in Bavaria included General Alan Fraser, the 6I's close South African ally and previous channel to the Shah, and the London financier and wartime head of SOE Sweden Sir Peter Tennant who, in 1982, was acting Chairman of the Wilton Park Academic Council, resigning the following year over budget cuts to the centre; he later coordinated funding for 6I activist Julian Lewis's Media Monitoring Unit, as detailed above.

Also attending the 1982 Cercle meeting in Bavaria were most of the 6I's Belgian partners - Close, Jonet, de Kerchove and de Bonvoisin. The presence at this 1982 Cercle meeting of almost the entire top membership of MAUE demonstrates that Belgian cooperation with Brian Crozier had continued uninterrupted despite the sudden death in July 1979 of Florimond Damman and the subsequent implosion of the AESP, an upheaval followed that October by the end of Paul Vanden Boeynants' seven-year reign as Defence Minister and the 1980 'removal from the Army hierarchy' of the controversial counter-subversion unit, PIO.

This new evidence about Belgian membership of the Cercle also underscores the continuity and personnel overlap that had long existed between the public AESP and CEDI, the 'semi-public' Belgian PIO, the confidential Cercle and the covert 6I. To focus on but one figure, Benoît de Bonvoisin, the *Baron Noir* had previously attended the February 1976 AESP Chapter Assembly and the November 1976 CEDI Congress, both times accompanied by the PIO's Major Bougerol and by Belgian Cercle convenor Jacques Jonet, and both times meeting Crozier. The MAUE group were active partners of the 6I in its virulent campaign against the nuclear disarmament movement; shortly before this June 1982 Cercle meeting, they had set up the Belgian 6I front groups RAPPEL and the IEPS in March and April respectively.

It is highly significant that the two former political controllers of Vanden Boeynants' PIO, de Bonvoisin and de Kerchove, both attended various Cercle meetings throughout the Brabant Wallon killings. At this time, de Bonvoisin had long been the main financial backer and patron of both the PIO and the fascist groups linked to the killings, whilst de Kerchove was the key aide to the Justice Minister in charge of the sidetracked and fruitless first investigation.

Whilst the Cercle documents provide no evidence of a foreign hand in either the planning or the execution of the Brabant Wallon killings, this new primary source on Belgian membership of the Cercle further strengthens the probability that the LIL/AESP/MAUE/PIO complex is the most promising path of investigation for elucidating the crimes, still unresolved after thirty years. Belgium's statute of limitations was due to formally close the case on 10th November 2015; although this has now been extended *in extremis* to 2025 to allow continued enquiry, the sixth official investigation has failed to shed any further light on this dark affair, lost in the futile search for the mere *exécutants* rather than the real *commanditaires*.

Returning to RAPPEL and the IEPS, despite excellent progress in setting up the Belgian 6I front groups in early 1982, a storm of disagreement soon clouded the relationship between the Belgian team and the German-dominated European Institute for Security founded in 1980, of which Monique Garnier-Lançon was Vice-Chairman. At first, all seemed to bode well: at an EIS Board meeting held on 9th June 1982 – two days before the beginning of this Cercle meeting - the EIS appointed Close as Chairman of the EIS Board of Directors and de Kerchove as EIS Treasurer-General. Both men and EIS Vice-Chairman Garnier-Lançon then travelled to Bavaria to attend the Cercle meeting in Wildbad Kreuth.

Shortly afterwards, however, Close was replaced by the EIS Board as Chairman by Major-General Jochen Löser, and de Kerchove was removed as EIS Treasurer. This alleged abuse of the EIS Statutes was only one bone of contention; another was the acceptance by the EIS Board of several more powerful German members, again allegedly in violation of the Statutes. In an eight-page letter to the EIS Board of 14th September 1982 (also copied to "Maître Jonet, member of the EIS"), Close furiously denounced this German domination of the EIS:

> "a) the Board of Administration includes, as of 15th March 1982, 4 German members ... plus five coopted German members, illegally included as not in accordance with the Statutes, making in total 9 out of 16 members i. e. more than an absolute majority; b) the Presidium includes 7 German members out of 13 i. e. more than an absolute majority; c) the Curatorium includes 23 German members out of 33, i. e. nearly one and a half times an absolute majority" (emphasis in the original).

The EIS remained unswayed, and Close, de Kerchove and Jonet decamped from the EIS, with Close writing to Löser on 18th October 1982 saying that, failing remedial action (which was not forthcoming): "I am afraid I cannot afford the luxury of associating with an Institute whose Board of Directors continuously disregards the Statutes of its Institute and decides upon new rules and regulations whenever it conveniently fits the occasion and desires of seemingly the majority of the members of the Board" (545). As described below, the rift between the EIS and its former Belgian members could not be resolved, and Close and his team concentrated their efforts on RAPPEL, the IEPS and WACL.

To turn to others present at the 1982 Wildbad Kreuth Cercle meeting, the participants' list also reveals the attendance of three top British and American intelligence figures - and no doubt 'senior advisors' to the 6I – whom we have not yet met and whose involvement in the Cercle was concealed in Crozier's later memoirs.

SOE and MI6 veteran **Neil 'Billy' McLean** was an old comrade-in-arms of Cercle Chairman Julian Amery – indeed almost forty years earlier, during the war, Lieutenant-Colonel McLean had been Captain Julian Amery's Commanding Officer in M. O. 4 or "the Musketeers", the SOE unit supporting the Albanian royalist resistance under Ihsan Bey Toptani in 1944 (546). After leaving the SOE at the end of the war, McLean like Amery had worked for MI6 as a Middle Eastern expert before being elected as Unionist MP for Inverness in 1952, remaining MP until 1964 whilst also working for MI6 throughout the post-war period. In late 1962, McLean accepted an Israeli request passed on by recently-retired MI6 Deputy Chief G. K. Young to intervene in North Yemen to support the royal family overthrown by republicans backed by Egyptian President Gamal Abdel Nasser. Together with then Colonial Secretary Duncan Sandys, then Air Minister Julian Amery, SAS founder David Stirling and Major David Smiley (McLean's second-in-command in the SOE Albanian unit), McLean conducted a private guerrilla war covertly supported by the British, Saudis and Israelis which finally brought about powersharing between republicans and royalists after Nasser withdrew his forces in June 1967 (547).

McLean remained in touch with MI6 and Amery over the years, attending all but one of the Cercle meetings between June 1982 in Wildbad Kreuth and February 1985 in Washington DC; he died in November 1986. McLean's presence in the Cercle was revealed in 1990 by his erstwhile SOE comrade-in-arms Xan Fielding who had served together with McLean, Amery and later CEDI stalwart Rowland Winn (Lord St Oswald) in SOE in Albania and/or Siam. The relevant passage of Fielding's biography of McLean reads:

> "There was another institution which gave Billy particular pleasure. It was called Le Cercle, and outside the circle nothing was known about it but the name. Its origins and membership were (and still are) as deeply cocooned in mystery as those of the most exclusive Masonic lodge. It appears to have been founded by the French statesman, Antoine Pinay, and when he retired, Julian Amery took over the chairmanship. It seems to have been a small assembly of European and American Conservatives meeting on an ad hoc basis once or twice a year, for two or three days at a time, to exchange views on world affairs. Because of his knowledge and understanding of the Middle East and North Africa, Billy was a most acceptable candidate for membership, which, in due course, he acquired. He had already attended several meetings – in Bonn, Munich, Washington and elsewhere – and looked forward to attending more" (548).

McLean was not the only veteran covert operator from MI6 to attend the 1982 Cercle meeting in Wildbad Kreuth ; the participants' list also records the presence of a certain **Frank Steele**, according to the documents, a "banker". Steele, who attended four Cercle meetings between 1982 and 1985, was far more than that; he had been one of MI6's most senior frontline officers whose career, both in the Service and in later life, was intimately connected with George Kennedy Young and Nicholas Elliott.

Having joined MI6 in 1951, Steele was posted to Basra in Iraq; in 1953, he helped prepare for a southern invasion of Iran after the temporary flight of the Shah before the ultimate success of the joint CIA/MI6 coup against Iranian Prime Minister Mossadegh, an operation that was run from Cyprus by Young, MI6 Director of Middle Eastern operations. Steele then served under Young in Cyprus, Cairo and Tripoli before being posted home in 1956. During this period, Young had been working closely with Nigel Clive's Special Political Action section in London to plan the failed Israeli/British/French invasion of the Suez Canal Zone following its nationalisation by Egyptian President Gamal Abdel Nasser in July 1956. Steele did not however find his return to headquarters any quieter than the Middle East; since April 1956, MI6 had been embroiled at home in public scandal (and a clandestine turf war with MI5) over the disasterous 'Buster' Crabb operation. The ill-fated and unauthorised attempt to use a frogman to examine a Soviet warship in a British harbour had been run by MI6 London station chief Nicholas Elliott who nonetheless survived the uproar unscathed. Steele spent two years in London before being posted abroad from 1958 to 1961 to the MI6 Beirut station, serving for his last year under a new station chief: Nicholas Elliott - an old colleague he'd meet again at this 1982 Cercle meeting.

Steele returned to London in 1961, the year that Young retired as Deputy Director of MI6 and joined Sir Frederic Bennett as a Senior Director of the newly created investment bank Kleinwort Benson. Meanwhile, Steele served at MI6 headquarters until 1965 when he was posted to Jordan and then in 1968 to Kenya where he conducted secret negotiations with Jomo Kenyatta. This presaged the highpoint of Steele's MI6 career which came in early 1971 when he was posted to the MI6 station in Northern Ireland "as a member of the small FCO team there, and in May of the following year succeeded to its senior position."

Steele's Northern Irish tour of duty came at a particularly violent period of the Troubles: Operation Demetrius, the internment without trial of over 300 IRA suspects, was conducted in August 1971, the Bloody Sunday killing of fourteen unarmed civilians by the British Army occurred in January 1972 (549), and in March 1972, Edward Heath suspended the Stormont Parliament and introduced Direct Rule from Westminster. The senior MI6 officer in Northern Ireland since May, Steele was then given the politically explosive task of contacting the Provisional IRA leadership to discuss a ceasefire, leading to the highly secret meeting in London on 7th July 1972 between Northern Ireland Secretary William Whitelaw and a PIRA delegation including PIRA Chief of Staff Seán Mac Stíofáin, PIRA Derry second-in-command

Martin McGuinness and Gerry Adams, released from internment to attend the meeting. The negotiations however came to nothing, and the province was soon riven by a savage clandestine struggle for control between MI6 and MI5, two of the many victims being Ulster headquarters InfPol/IRD propaganda officer Colin Wallace and MIU/MI6 cross-border operative Captain Fred Holroyd.

Steele however escaped the worst of it, being posted back to MI6 headquarters in May 1973 to assume "a senior position connected with the Middle East in London [presumably Young's old post as MI6 Director of Middle Eastern operations] but he took premature retirement in 1975, frustrated by the constraints placed on his freedom of action". Immediately after his retirement from MI6, Steele started a career in the City – at Kleinwort Benson alongside his old MI6 boss, George Kennedy Young. Young, who retired from Kleinwort Benson the following year, had been running the Unison Committee for Action with fellow Kleinwort Benson Senior Director Sir Frederic Bennett since February 1974. Steele remained with the bank from 1975 until his own retirement in 1987. At the time of this Cercle meeting in 1982, Steele was Director of Export Financing at Kleinwort Benson as well as Chairman of Network Television from 1981 to 1987, a useful media position (550).

Another former senior intelligence officer and probable 6I 'senior advisor' at the June 1982 Cercle meeting was **Arnold M. Silver**, like Elliott coyly referred to in the Cercle participants' lists as a "Security Advisor". Silver had started his intelligence career in 1945 as a US Army Intelligence Sergeant debriefing Soviet and Nazi intelligence operatives at Camp King in Oberursel, Germany (551). During his tour at Camp King, Silver had notably interrogated Nazi commando Colonel Otto Skorzeny, recommending that he be exculpated and resettled. Skorzeny was however eventually tried and acquitted at the 1947 Dachau Trials before escaping from American military custody to reach Madrid where he became a veteran hero and rallying point for re-emergent European fascism in Spain, Portugal, Italy and Greece in the 1960s and a major inspiration for the formation of Aginter Presse, the Greek coup and the *stragi* until his death in 1975.

As for Silver, with firsthand knowledge of Soviet intelligence networks from Camp King, he joined the CIA in 1948 and served in Austria, Luxembourg (Chief of Station from 1957 to 1960), Germany, Turkey and the US, rising to become a "very senior Agency man in charge of counter-subversion in Western Europe", "a former senior CIA officer who had long specialised in German and Soviet affairs. He had joined the 6I after being made redundant by President Carter's DCI, Admiral Turner, in his purge of specialists on Communism" (552). Silver returned to Luxembourg after retirement from the CIA in 1978. In 1981, he wrote a report on the Socialist International for the Heritage Foundation - alongside him at this 1982 Cercle meeting were Heritage Foundation co-founder **Paul M. Weyrich** and the Foundation's organiser amongst Republican senators, Margo Carlisle, as detailed below. Silver later attended a further Cercle meeting held in Bonn in July 1984 (553).

Also at the 1982 Cercle meeting was another figure with wartime service in the OSS, although poles apart from CIA veteran Silver: the American-born Aline Griffith who had married the Conde de Quintanilla in 1947 and inherited the title of **Condessa de Romanones** in 1963. A former model who socialised widely with European aristocracy, she later exaggerated her minor part as a lowly OSS cipher clerk in Madrid from 1943 on in a trio of bestselling memoirs of derring-do (554). Nonetheless, her social connections were of great service to the 6I; as Crozier records, it was Romanones who, via her friendship with Nancy Reagan, arranged Crozier's meeting with Republican presidential candidate Ronald Reagan in July 1980 and Reagan's subsequent appointment of William A. Wilson as his backchannel to both the Cercle and the 6I (555).

The significant presence of the 6I at the 1982 Cercle meeting was repeated, indeed intensified, a year later at the July 1983 Cercle meeting held in Bonn which was attended by a near-full 6I crew: 'Politburo' members Crozier, Elliott, Huyn, Stauffenberg, Shackley and Jameson alongside all of the key 6I operatives from the four British and Belgian outlets involved in the 6I's ongoing anti-disarmament campaign: the London duo of Lewis and Leigh from the Coalition for Peace through Security together with their fundraiser Sir Peter Tennant, the Editor of *Soviet Analyst* and IEDSS Board member Iain Elliot, and Close, Jonet and de Kerchove from RAPPEL and the IEPS.

Although these three Belgians had left the German-dominated EIS in the autumn of 1982, Close was still prepared, at least on paper, to offer collaboration between the IEPS and the EIS, writing on 25th March 1983 to the Acting Chairman of the EIS Board, Dutch Navy Captain T. Sleeswijk Visser: "During our last meeting, I promised to give you more details about our newly created European Institute for Peace and Security in Brussels. As you well know, I formed the Institute because I was quite disappointed with the practical approach of the EIS ... I would like to underline that we are willing to work in close cooperation with the EIS because our aims are exactly the same, even if our methods of approach differ ... Of course, this offer of cooperation is left to your discretion ... In other words, whilst keeping our full autonomy, we will be associated with you as we are with the Institut International de Géopolitique of Mme Marie-France Garaud and the Foreign Affairs Research Institute of Mr. Geoffrey Stewart-Smith" (556).

In reality, cooperation between the EIS and the RAPPEL/IEPS team never took off – the Belgian group was at the time busy preparing for the first International Congress of RAPPEL, held in September 1983 in Luxembourg in conjunction with the WACL Annual Conference. As well as leading RAPPEL and the IEPS, Close was also the President of the WACL Preparatory Committee and then Chairman of the conference, also attended by Vankerkhoven and de Kerchove. Despite the failure to overcome the rift between the Belgian 6I team and the EIS, one British 6I operative present at this July 1983 Cercle meeting continued to work with the EIS: an EIS press release from 1985 states: "An Anglo-French delegation from the European Institute for Security is in Geneva and is available for interview by the press, radio or television until 12 noon on Wednesday, 20 November. It consists of 1) Madame Monique Garnier-Lançon – Vice-Chairman and Foreign Affairs Director of the European Institute for Security; and 2) Dr. Julian Lewis – Director of the British Coalition for Peace through Security, and a member of the EIS Board of Directors" (557). This July 1983 Cercle meeting was however the last one attended by Stauffenberg – Langemann's disasterous exposé of Stauffenberg's reporting on the Cercle and the 6I had been published in the *Spiegel* in September 1982.

The domination of the Cercle by Crozier's 6I continued in the two Cercle meetings held in 1984, the first of which ventured further afield to South Africa. Held in January, the meeting included 6I 'Politburo' members Crozier, Elliott, Huyn and Jameson, 6I contacts Steele, Fraser and Romanones, and Philippe Malaud whose Comité Français contre le Neutralisme et pour la Paix had been working closely with Crozier and the Belgian 6I front group IEPS (558). Although Crozier was absent for health reasons at the second 1984 Cercle meeting, held in Bonn in July, the 6I attended in force: Elliott and Huyn of the 'Politburo' were supported by their advisors McLean and Silver, and the 6I anti-disarmament campaign was represented by their French and Belgian allies: Malaud and an extensive delegation from MAUE/RAPPEL/IEPS – Jonet, Vankerkhoven, Close, de Decker and Beyer de Ryke.

At the July 1984 meeting, Habsburg (in a rare late attendance at the Cercle) could congratulate some of the other participants: following the European Parliament elections held three weeks earlier, Habsburg and Beyer de Ryke had been re-elected as MEPs, whereas Malaud had been elected for the first time. Vankerkhoven meanwhile had decided not to stand again after replacing a deceased MEP from 1982 until 1984. After the EP elections, the International Council of Presidency of the PEU was reconstituted in September; joining President Habsburg, Deputy Secretary-General Jonet and Council member Beyer de Ryke was Malaud as PEU Vice-President.

A later Washington meeting of the Cercle held in February 1985 also included senior 6I figures. Although Crozier himself was again absent, the conference brought together 6I 'Politburo' members Elliott, Huyn, Jameson and Stilwell alongside 6I partner General Fraser and probable 6I founding member Sven Kraemer. Also present were Stilwell's superior as Under-Secretary of Defense for Policy from 1981 to 1987 Fred C. Iklé, and Herbert E. Meyer, from 1981 on Special Assistant to CIA Director Bill Casey and Vice-Chairman of the National Intelligence Council; both Iklé and Meyer are presented below.

INTERNATIONAL OUTREACH

Besides documenting the considerable contingent from Crozier's 6I, the Cercle meeting records also highlight changes in the international representation within the Cercle. After some thirty years of cooperation both in Catholic conservative groups and in the Cercle, the older founding generation of Pinay, Violet, Pesenti and, largely, Habsburg had ceased attending Cercle meetings - although Alfredo Sánchez Bella and Sir John Biggs-Davison participated in several Cercle meetings from 1982 to 1985, they were the last members with links to CEDI going back to the 1950s (559).

As could be expected of a Cercle now chaired by Julian Amery supported by 6I head Crozier, the British group within the Cercle swelled to include several of their Conservative Party allies. One such was the former Grenadier Guards officer **John Browne**, the MP for Winchester from 1979 to 1992 who attended three Cercle meetings in June 1982 in Wildbad Kreuth, in July 1983 in Bonn and in February 1985 in Washington DC. Browne served as Secretary of the Conservative Backbench Finance Committee in 1981–83, Secretary of the Conservative Backbench Defence Committee in 1982–83, and a Member of the Treasury Select Committee from 1982 to 1987; he later sat as a Delegate to the North Atlantic Assembly from 1986 to 1992, acting as its Rapporteur on Human Rights from 1989 to 1992.

Another former Grenadier Guards officer and parliamentary friend of Amery, attending the June 1982 Cercle meeting in Wildbad Kreuth and the July 1984 meeting in Bonn, was **Lord Cranborne** or Robert Gascoyne-Cecil, 6th Marquess of Salisbury. Having served as a Conservative MP from 1950 to 1954, Cranborne inherited his title and entered the House of Lords in 1972. His late father, the 5th Marquess, had been the first President of the Monday Club, serving from 1961 to his death in 1972; Lord Cranborne succeeded him in the post, serving from 1974 to 1981. Unsurprisingly, he was also President of the Anglo-Rhodesian Society; the family had longstanding links with Rhodesia whose colonial capital Salisbury had been named after them. His elder son, Robert Gascoyne-Cecil, Viscount Cranborne, spoke against Rhodesian sanctions at the Conservative Party conference in October 1978 before being elected as an MP in 1979 and serving until 1987, during which time he was a firm friend of former Rhodesian minister and Cercle member P. K. Van der Byl with whom he shared membership at the Turf Club and White's (560).

Another member of the House of Lords to attend Cercle meetings – three, in January 1984 in Stellenbosch, in July 1984 in Bonn, and in February 1985 in Washington - was **Lord Kimberley** or John Wodehouse, 4th Earl of Kimberley, listed in 1984 as the Chairman of the House of Lords Defence Committee. A former Liberal peer who had been Honorary Secretary of the House of Lords All-Party Defence Group since 1978, he was fired as the Liberal Party spokesman in the Lords after recommending that electors vote for Margaret Thatcher in the 1979 elections. After being persuaded to join the Conservative Party by Monday Club President Lord

Cranborne, he sat as a Tory peer until 1999, acting as a British delegate to the North Atlantic Assembly from 1981 to 1993 and also serving as a member of the British Atlantic Committee. In 1982, he joined the Monday Club and in 1983 was appointed as a member of its Executive Council as well as Chairman of the Club's Foreign Affairs Committee, a post previously held by Geoffrey Stewart-Smith. In June of the same year, in his capacity as Monday Club Foreign Affairs Chairman, Kimberley also addressed the NATO Plenary Session supporting the deployment of Cruise missiles. By 1985 he was the House of Lords Speaker for European Affairs (561).

A further participant at the January 1984 Cercle meeting in Stellenbosch was **Sir John Killick**, a veteran Cold War diplomat who had worked in the Western Europe Department of the Foreign Office from 1958 to 1962 before being posted to Washington as Counsellor and Head of Chancery at the British Embassy from 1963 to 1968. Following another spell in London as Assistant Under-Secretary at the FO, he then served as British Ambassador to the Soviet Union from 1971 to 1973. After returning home and, as Deputy Under-Secretary, acting as senior advisor to the Foreign Secretary (first Sir Alec Douglas-Home and then James Callaghan), in 1975 Killick was appointed Permanent Representative to NATO, serving until 1979 when he retired to South Africa. A few months after the 1984 Cercle meeting in Stellenbosch, he returned to the UK following the death of his South African-born wife and took up the post of President of the British Atlantic Council which he filled from 1985 to 1992 (562).

At the July 1984 Cercle meeting in Bonn, one very influential British participant was Conservative MP **Sir Philip Carter Goodhart**, a scion of the American Lehman banking family. Goodhart had worked from 1950 on as a leader writer and foreign correspondent for the *Daily Telegraph* and *Sunday Times*, notably covering the British invasion of the Suez Canal from Port Said in 1956, before being elected to the Commons in 1957. A hawk on defence and foreign policy, particularly on Rhodesia, Vietnam and Northern Ireland, he was a member of the North Atlantic Assembly for twenty-four years and at various times chaired the Conservative backbench Defence and Northern Ireland committees as well as having briefly served as a shadow defence spokesman under Leader of the Opposition Sir Alec Douglas-Home in late 1964 before being dismissed by Edward Heath in 1965.

Goodhart's influence however came from his role as joint secretary of the 1922 Committee (the Conservative backbench caucas), a post he held for a record nineteen years from 1960 to 1979, putting him at the heart of two Conservative leadership contests that both followed Labour election victories under Harold Wilson: the 1965 contest when Edward Heath replaced Sir Alec Douglas-Home as Conservative Leader, and, more crucially, the 1975 leadership election that pitted Edward Heath against challenger Margaret Thatcher (563). It was at this time that

Goodhart, who strongly supported Thatcher, drew close to the counter-subversion lobby, producing *The Climate of Collapse – the terrorist threat to Britain and her allies*, published by the FAPC in 1975, and *The death of the Cambodian nation*, published by FARI in 1976; Goodhart was a member of the FARI Council in 1978. After Thatcher's election victory, he was rewarded by being appointed Parliamentary Under-Secretary for Northern Ireland in 1979 before becoming Parliamentary Under-Secretary for the Army in January 1981. Goodhart however left ministerial office (with a compensatory knighthood) that September after disagreement with cuts to the armed forces, and returned to the backbenches where he sat until leaving Parliament in 1992 (564).

Another Conservative MP and junior minister who had started his career in journalism was **Sir Eldon Griffiths**, who attended the Cercle meeting held in Washington in February 1985. From 1949 to 1960, Griffiths had been a US-based foreign correspondent and foreign editor for *Time-Life* before returning to the UK to work both as a journalist for *Newsweek* and as chief European correspondent of the *Washington Post* from 1961 to 1963. That year, he joined the Conservative Research Department as a speech writer to Prime Minister Sir Alec Douglas-Home, and was elected to Parliament in the 1964 election that saw Douglas-Home defeated by Labour's Harold Wilson. In 1968, he was voted onto the 1922 Committee executive and, at the 1969 Conservative Party conference, proposed the successful resolution on Britain's membership of the then Common Market, also chairing the Conservative Group for Europe.

A robust supporter of continued sporting links with South Africa, Griffiths served in Edward Heath's government from 1970 to 1974 as Parliamentary Secretary for Housing, Local Government and Sport in the Department of the Environment; Amery was the Housing Minister from 1970 to 1972. Although a junior position, the Sports portfolio was a sensitive post at the time in the light of widespread protests against South African cricket and rugby tours of the UK, protests which were being combated by both SIF (Young, Rodgers, Biggs-Davison, Howarth and Sir Frederic Bennett) and by BOSS. After Heath's electoral defeat by Wilson in 1974, Griffiths became Shadow Industry Minister, and then, after Thatcher replaced Heath as Conservative Leader, her frontbench spokesman on foreign and commonwealth affairs in 1975-76, notably including the June 1975 referendum on British EEC membership. During this time, Griffiths was one of several MPs to take a trip to South Africa paid for by the South Africa Foundation. Although Griffiths was not included in Thatcher's government after her victory in the May 1979 elections, he was knighted in June 1985, a few months after this Cercle meeting, and remained on the backbenches until his retirement in 1992 (565).

Besides Griffiths, another Conservative MP to attend the February 1985 Cercle meeting in Washington was **John Wilkinson**, a former RAF pilot and Conservative Research Department aviation expert, who sat as a Conservative MP from 1970 to

1974 and then from 1979 until 2005, his thirty years in Parliament making him one of its longest-serving Members. Besides his time on the backbenches, Wilkinson had briefly served after 1979 as Parliamentary Private Secretary to Industry Minister Adam Butler before becoming Parliamentary Private Secretary to Defence Minister John Nott in 1981, serving during the 1982 Falklands War. He also sat as a member of the Parliamentary Assembly of the Western European Union from 1979 to 1990, and as a member of the Parliamentary Assembly of the CoE from 1979 to 2005. Apart from this parliamentary career, Wilkinson also had longstanding links to the European Freedom Council and the Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations. A participant at EFC meetings from 1971 on, Wilkinson was elected President of the EFC Executive Committee at the 1982 joint ABN/EFC conference (where he spoke alongside Major-General John Singlaub), serving until 1990; during this period, the EFC Honorary Presidium included Habsburg, Fraga Iribarne, Yaroslav Stetsko of the ABN, and FARI President Sir Frederic Bennett (566).

After the British delegation led by Amery and Crozier, the next most powerful European country represented within the Cercle in 1982-85 was Germany under its convenor and 6I 'Politburo' member Hans Huyn who attended all of the meetings held between June 1982 and February 1985; with him at each meeting was the Cercle's overall coordinator, former Ambassador and MP Franz Josef Bach. Under their leadership, the German delegation included powerful Cercle friends, one of the most prominent of which was undoubtedly Huyn's old colleague from the German diplomatic service, the veteran EEC official **Karl-Heinz Narjes**. In 1980, Langemann reported that the then Bundestag MP had attended a Cercle meeting held in Washington in December 1979 together with Huyn and Heritage Foundation head Edwin Feulner, soon to begin funding Crozier's 6I anti-unilateralist campaign. Since then, Narjes had left the Bundestag, returning to the EEC in January 1981 as European Commissioner for the Internal Market before serving in 1985-88 as Vice-President of the European Commission in charge of Industry and Research. He nonetheless continued to frequent the Cercle whenever he could - the Garnier-Lançon papers record his presence at the Cercle meetings held in June 1982 in Wildbad Kreuth, in early 1983 probably in Washington, in July 1983 in Bonn, and in July 1984 in Bonn. In April 1982, Narjes had been an honoured guest at the inaugural General Assembly of the EIS; the EIS Chairman General Close, the EIS Treasurer de Kerchove and prominent EIS member Jonet then met Narjes again at the 1982 Wildbad Kreuth meeting held three months later.

Narjes was not the only eminent Cercle friend to attend the July 1982 meeting in Bavaria; another participant was one of the most senior conservative politicians in Germany, **Dr. Bruno Heck**. A former Federal Minister for Family and Youth from 1962 to 1968, Heck also served as CDU General Secretary from 1967 to 1971, coordinating Kiesinger's campaign in the 1969 elections won by the SPD candidate, Willy Brandt. In 1968, Heck had also taken over as Chairman of the CDU party foundation, the Konrad-Adenauer-Stiftung, a post he filled for over twenty years until

1989, during which time the KAS was a leading German backer of the Cercle. As Hänni notes, "whenever the meetings were held in West Germany (roughly one in every three), the Cercle was the guest of either the CDU party foundation, the Konrad-Adenauer-Stiftung, or its Bavarian CSU counterpart, the Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung. The two foundations sponsored Cercle meetings – including meals and accommodation – no less than seven times between 1977 and 1986" (567). Heck, for example, was the host for the Cercle meeting held in Bonn in July 1983. Alongside Heck at the 1982 meeting in the HSS conference centre in Wildbad Kreuth was the HSS's **Dieter A. Schmidt**, who also attended the Cercle meeting in early 1983. The two foundation representatives could count on military advice from a recently retired senior German Army officer, **General Franz Joseph Schulze**, NATO Commander Central Europe (AFCENT) from 1977 until his retirement in 1979. Schulze was a frequent participant at Cercle meetings, attending not only this 1982 meeting in Wildbad Kreuth, but also those held in early 1983, July 1983 in Bonn, and July 1984 in Bonn.

Alongside CSU foreign policy spokesman Huyn was his longstanding CDU counterpart and fellow German CEDI representative **Dr. Werner Marx**, by then Chairman of the Bundestag Foreign Affairs Committee, also attending the Cercle meetings held in early 1983 and in July 1983 in Bonn. At the first of the two 1983 meetings, Marx brought along a member of his Foreign Affairs Committee, **Peter Petersen**, a CDU MP from 1965 to 1990 (apart from a gap in 1972-76), who later attended the January 1984 Cercle meeting in South Africa. At the Cercle meeting in early 1983, the CSU was represented not just by Huyn but also by two senior CSU politicians, the first of which was **Dr. Franz Heubl**, a founding member of the CSU. A Bavarian regional MP from 1953 to 1990, he served as Bavarian Minister of State for Federal Affairs from 1962 to 1978 when he became President of the Bavarian Parliament, a post he filled until 1990. Heubl was accompanied at the Cercle meeting in early 1983 by his successor as Bavarian Minister of State for Federal and European Affairs **Peter Schmidhuber**, who sat in the Bundestag for the CSU in 1965-69 and 1972-78 before being elected to the regional Bavarian Parliament and serving as minister under Strauß from 1978 to 1987; at this time, he was also a member of the NATO Parliamentary Assembly. Schmidhuber later served as an EEC/EU Commissioner in Brussels from 1987 to 1995. Besides these friends from the world of politics, the Cercle was also supported by German industry, notably by **Peter Jungen**, the Chairman of the mechanical engineering firm Pohlig, Heckel, Bleichert/PHB Weserhütte AG and Vice-Chairman of the CDU Economic Council who attended all five Cercle meetings held from early 1983 until February 1985 (568).

The July 1983 Cercle meeting hosted in Bonn by Heck and the KAS was also attended by top figures from the CDU, the most senior of whom was **Alois Mertes**, like fellow participants Huyn and Narjes a veteran of the German diplomatic service which Mertes had joined in 1952. He served as General Consul in Marseille and at the German Embassy in Paris from 1958 to 1963 at a time when Pinay was at the peak of his power as de Gaulle's Minister of Finance charged with the introduction of the new French franc in 1960. Mertes was then posted to the German Embassy in Moscow from 1963 to 1966. After being sent to study under Kissinger at Harvard in 1968-69, he served as the Foreign Office's Director of European Security and Regional Disarmament from 1969 to 1971, attending a July 1969 Cercle dinner with Kissinger. Elected to the Bundestag in 1972, he was an AESP contact from at least 1973 on and was made a Life Member of the AESP in 1977. The CDU arms control spokesman from 1975 on, Mertes served as Chairman of the CDU Bundestag Foreign Policy Working Group from 1980 until being appointed Minister of State in the Foreign Office in October 1982, the position he held when attending the Cercle meetings in July 1983 and July 1984; he died in office in June 1985 (569).

At the July 1983 Cercle meeting, Mertes was accompanied by a longstanding German CEDI contact, **Dr. Philipp Jenninger**, a CDU MP from 1969 until 1990, who had served as the press spokesman at the Ministry of Defence from 1964 to 1966 and then as political advisor to Finance Minister Strauß until 1969. From 1973 until 1982 Jenninger was the First Parliamentary Secretary of the CDU/CSU fraction in the Bundestag, attending the 1974 XXIII CEDI Congress alongside Huyn, Sánchez Bella and Jonet, all of whom were also present at the July 1983 Cercle meeting (570). The year before this 1983 Cercle meeting, Jenninger had been appointed Minister of State in the Federal Chancellor's Office, serving until 1984 when he became President of the Bundestag until 1988.

Alongside Mertes and Jenninger at the Cercle meeting in July 1983 were two senior figures from the KAS, the first of whom was KAS backer **Alphons Horten**. An industrialist born in East Germany and Managing Director of the J. Weck preserving jar manufacturer, Horten had been a co-founder of the CDU Economic Council in 1963, and later its Vice-President and Treasurer. In 1964, he acted as Treasurer of the KAS's registered charity for political education which supported its study centre. In 1965, Horten was elected as a CDU MP, serving seven years until 1972; from 1968 to 1972, he was also the Treasurer of the Konrad-Adenauer-Stiftung under its new Chairman Bruno Heck, the host of this 1983 Cercle meeting. From the mid-1970s on, Horten was a contact of the AESP, having met the full AESP team at their Grand Dîner Charlemagne and Chapter Assembly held in February 1976 (571).

Another top KAS member at the July 1983 Cercle meeting was the German expert on weapons of mass destruction and nuclear proliferation **Dr. Hans Rühle**, a prominent figure in the KAS Institute for Social Sciences, having served as its Head of Research for Foreign and Defence Policy from 1974 to 1978 and then heading the Institute from 1978 to 1982. That year, Rühle was appointed Head of the Planning Staff in the Defence Ministry, the position he held when attending two Cercle meetings in July 1983 and July 1984. In 1987, Chancellor Kohl blocked his promotion to the post of Secretary of State at the Defence Ministry; Rühle then left the CDU (572).

The July 1984 Cercle meeting in Bonn welcomed not only Habsburg but also the serving Federal Minister for Economic Cooperation, CSU politician **Jürgen Warnke**, whose 1958 law doctorate (on democracy and the French political parties) had been supervised by Professor von der Heydte. A Bavarian regional MP from 1962 on, Warnke was elected to the Bundestag in 1969 and sat there until 1988. From 1982 to 1987, he was the Federal Minister for Economic Cooperation in charge of German development aid; after a brief stint as Federal Minister of Transport until 1989, he resumed his post as German development minister until 1991. A year after attending this Cercle meeting, Warnke approved a 1985 grant of five million Marks from his ministry to the HSS for its Spanish partner organisation, the Fundación Cánovas del Castillo - run by fellow Cercle member Carlos Robles Piquer who had attended both Cercle meetings the year before in 1983. Alongside Warnke, another participant at the July 1984 Cercle meeting was the retired Rear-Admiral **Günter Poser**, Assistant Director of NATO's Intelligence Division from 1970 till his retirement in 1973; in 1981, he and Huyn had been founding members of Western Goals' German anti-disarmament group, AESRI. A final – and very powerful – German participant at Cercle meetings was the veteran television presenter, Strauß promoter and Deutschland-Stiftung President **Gerhard Löwenthal** who attended the February 1985 Cercle meeting in Washington (573).

As described above, the French delegation to the Cercle in 1982-85 was left in disarray by the withdrawal of Cercle co-founders Pinay and Violet; their absence was further compounded by the fierce infighting that had rent French conservatism since mid-1976, a savage battle for dominance pitting the moderate President Valéry Giscard d'Estaing against his former Prime Minister, hardliner Jacques Chirac. Having resigned as Prime Minister in August 1976, Chirac had created the RPR in December 1976 and decisively defeated Giscard's candidate to become Mayor of Paris in March 1977. The struggle carried through into the first round of the presidential elections in April 1981 when Giscard d'Estaing easily beat off the two right-wing challenges from Chirac and RPR co-founder Marie-France Garaud to stand as the conservative candidate against the Socialist François Mitterrand in the second round. However, Giscard's initial victory was pyrrhic; unlike Britain, America and Germany, France was dominated by the Left throughout the 1980s. In the second round in May 1981, twenty-three years of unbroken conservative rule were abruptly terminated when Mitterrand vanquished Giscard to become the first Socialist President of the Fifth Republic, a defeat which deprived the Right of access to government and the influence that went with it.

The only French participant to regularly attend the Cercle gatherings held between 1982 and 1985, missing only the early 1983 meeting, was the French convenor and security advisor to Chirac, Monique Garnier-Lançon, who was unable to attract to the Cercle suitable attendees who could come to more than one or two meetings. Several of the participants were also past their prime, as was shown at the July 1983 Cercle meeting hosted by the KAS in Bonn; the top two French guests were both eminent diplomats and no doubt of a like mind with the Cercle, but one was a colleague of Pinay from 1955, whereas the second had retired twenty years earlier.

The first was the veteran French EEC official **Jean-François Deniau**, who had been one of the delegates with Antoine Pinay at the 1955 Messina conference that had created the ECSC. After working as Permanent Secretary-General of the French delegation in Brussels in 1956, Deniau had drafted the preamble to the Treaty of Rome in 1957 and served as EEC Director and then Director-General in charge of negotiations with the UK from 1958 to 1963, an accession ultimately vetoed by de Gaulle. After four years as French Ambassador to Mauritania, Deniau came back to Brussels to work at the EEC again, first as Commissioner for Foreign Trade in charge of membership negotiations with the UK, Denmark and Ireland from 1967 until 1970 and then as Commissioner for Foreign Affairs until 1973 when the three countries joined the EEC. Returning to national politics, Deniau served as Secretary of State for Cooperation in 1973 and Secretary of State for Agriculture and Rural Development in 1974-75 before becoming heavily involved with the Spanish transition to democracy as French Ambassador in Madrid in 1976. In 1977, he was appointed Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs, switching to Minister for Foreign Trade in 1978 and finally serving as Minister for Administrative Reform in early 1981. An MP from 1978 to 1981, Deniau later sat in the European Parliament for the UDF from 1984 to 1986 when he was again elected to the National Assembly, serving as an MP until 1997 (574).

The second former senior French diplomat at the July 1983 Cercle meeting, later also attending the January 1984 meeting in South Africa, was **Francis Lacoste** who had started his diplomatic career in 1929, serving as Plenipotentiary Minister and Deputy Delegate to the UN Security Council in 1950-54, and French Ambassador in Canada from 1955 to 1962 and then in Belgium until his retirement in 1963. The UN High Commissioner in Bangladesh in 1973, Lacoste was a Life Member of the AESP from at least 1976 on, attending its February 1976 Dinner and Assembly (575).

At the two Cercle meetings held in 1984 – in January in Stellenbosch, South Africa, and in July in Bonn – France was further represented by another veteran member whom we have met before: the former minister Philippe Malaud, who chaired Pinay's old party, the Centre National des Indépendants et Paysans (CNIP), from 1980 to 1987. In July 1984, Malaud was elected to the European Parliament and, from that September on, sat on the the PEU International Council alongside Habsburg and Jonet, two of the other participants at the second 1984 Cercle meeting. As noted above, over the previous year, Malaud's Comité Français contre le Neutralisme et pour la Paix had been working with Paul Vankerkhoven, the Belgian IEPS and Garaud's Institut International de Géopolitique within the 6I's anti-disarmament campaign (576).

The July 1984 Cercle meeting in Bonn also attracted another Cercle supporter, this time from the media rather than the world of politics or diplomacy: **François d'Orcival**, Chairman of the Editorial Committee of the conservative news magazine *Valeurs Actuelles*, for which he is still an editorial writer today. Back in the 1950s, d'Orcival had been one of the leaders of Jeune Nation, a right-wing extremist group banned in 1958 after bombing the French National Assembly; in 1960, he was one of the founders of the Fédération des Etudiants Nationalistes (FEN) which was involved in the attacks carried out by the OAS to defend l'Algérie française – d'Orcival was interned for four weeks in 1962 as a result. It was whilst editing the FEN journal, *Les cahiers universitaires*, that he met his future employer and fellow Cercle member **Raymond Bourgine,** founder in 1957 of the Compagnie française de journaux (Valmonde Group) whose main titles are *Valeurs actuelles* et *Le Spectacle du monde*, for which d'Orcival started work in 1966 (577). Bourgine, who was close to Pinay and Pompidou, joined Pinay's CNIP in 1971 and worked in the higher organs of the party until 1977 when he was elected as a Paris councillor on the RPR ticket headed by Jacques Chirac under whom he served as Deputy Mayor of Paris from 1977 until 1983. Meanwhile, Bourgine served as a CNIP Senator for Paris from September 1977 onwards, becoming Vice-President of the CNIP in 1978 and First Vice-President in 1985; he was present at the next Cercle meeting after that attended by d'Orcival, held in Washington in February 1985. He continued as a Senator after joining the RPR in 1986, serving until his death in 1990 (578).

Also attending the Washington Cercle meeting alongside Bourgine was one of the most significant – and, many would argue, most sinister - figures of the French hard Right since the 1960s: **Charles Pasqua**. A founder in 1959 of the Gaullist parallel police, the Service d'Action Civique (SAC), he remained a member until 1969. In December 1976, he was a co-founder of the RPR with Chirac and Marie-France Garaud, becoming its Deputy Secretary-General. He was elected to the Senate for the RPR in 1977 and led the unsuccessful Chirac campaign to replace Giscard d'Estaing as the conservative candidate in the 1981 presidential elections. Between 1981 and 1986, he was then President of the RPR in the Senate; his attendance at the February 1985 Cercle meeting in Washington falls in this period. Disappointed with the failure of Garnier-Lançon to find suitable members (she relinquished the post of French convenor in 1986), it would seem that the Cercle turned for help to Pasqua, a formidable networker and conservative *éminence grise*. He was certainly a more powerful friend, leaving the Senate in March 1986 to serve as the controversial Interior Minister under Prime Minister Chirac during the first cohabitation government which held office until May 1988. Pasqua's closest cabinet colleague was the Justice Minister, Albin Chalandon, the former head of ELF from 1977 to 1983 during the sniffer plane scandal. In 1988, Pasqua returned to the Senate, serving there, apart from two interludes, until 2011 (579).

At the February 1985 Cercle meeting in Washington, Pasqua was accompanied by a key assistant from the RPR, **Jean-François Probst**, who had been the chargé de mission for Chirac when the latter was Prime Minister under Giscard d'Estaing in 1974-76. From 1976 to 1978, Probst served as directeur de cabinet for Jérôme Monod, Secretary-General of the RPR; the Deputy Secretary-General was Pasqua. After a spell in the Foreign Ministry from 1979 to 1981, Probst then worked as Secretary-General of the RPR group in the Senate; its President was Pasqua. As a member of the RPR Central Committee, Probst was, with Pasqua, one of Chirac's closest advisors and played a considerable part in Chirac's unsuccessful presidential bid in 1988 (580).

A final member of the French delegation at the February 1985 Cercle meeting in Washington was military veteran Air Force General **Etienne Copel**, who was a French nuclear tactical expert, in many ways the tactical counterpart to the French nuclear strategist, fellow Cercle member and CEDI stalwart General Pierre Gallois. In 1969, Copel had been put in charge of the first French nuclear tactical squadron; in 1973, he was the first pilot to carry out a solo drop of a tactical nuclear bomb at the French nuclear testing facility at Mururoa atoll. From 1981 on, Copel commanded the Air Defence Operations Centre before being promoted in 1983 to the post of Deputy Head of the Air General Staff for Operations. He however resigned in March 1984, nearly a year before this Cercle meeting, so as to be able to publicly express his opposition to the Socialist government's defence policy, a move similar to the 1980 resignation of General Close in Belgium. He went on to be the Vice-President of the High Council for Civil Defence in 1987 (581).

The Spanish delegation to the Cercle may have been small but it included several prominent figures. Romanones, Crozier's channel to Ronald Reagan in July 1980, attended five of the six Cercle meetings held between June 1982 and February 1985, missing only the July 1984 meeting in Bonn. Veteran Opus Dei and CEDI luminary Alfredo Sánchez Bella was also a regular participant, attending the Wildbad Kreuth meeting in June 1982, both meetings in 1983 and the February 1985 meeting in Washington. At the Cercle meeting held in early 1983, the delegation also included the two top figures from Alianza Popular: the party's President, Manuel Fraga Iribarne, and his brother-in-law, Carlos Robles Piquer, since 1982 the General Coordinator of Alianza Popular. Having scored only 6% of the vote in the March 1979 elections, the first to be held under the December 1978 Constitution that Fraga had co-written, Alianza Popular had gained strength following the collapse of the centrist UCD government under Adolfo Suárez, and in the October 1982 elections won 26% of the vote, becoming the main opposition party to the Socialist government under Felipe González which had won a landslide victory with 48% of the vote. Robles Piquer also attended the next Cercle meeting held in July 1983 in Bonn; he had been elected as a Senator a month previously and served until 1987 when he was elected as an MEP in the first direct Spanish elections to the European Parliament, sitting there until 1999 (582).

TRANSATLANTIC ALLIES

The American delegation to the Cercle however almost outweighed all of these European participants, making up nearly half of those attending Cercle meetings between 1982 and 1985, a reflection of the fact that, since the arrival of Rockefeller, Kissinger and Nixon in the Cercle in the late 1960s, every second Cercle meeting had been held in Washington. Unsurprisingly, the most regular American attendee was Donald Jameson, the Cercle's transatlantic coordinator since at least 1977 and a 6I Politburo member, who attended all of the Cercle meetings between June 1982 and February 1985 except the meeting in Bonn in July 1984. At the various Cercle meetings, he was accompanied by senior members of the Reagan Administration, Congress and the American military. One such military figure who attended four Cercle meetings during this period (June 1982 in Wildbad Kreuth, early 1983, July 1984 in Bonn and February 1985 in Washington DC) was **Rear Admiral Robert J. Hanks**, who had commanded the American naval forces in the Near East in the early 1970s before serving as Director of the Security Assistance Division in the Office of the Chief of Naval Operations until his retirement in 1977 (583).

Powerful figures in the Reagan Administration also attended this 1982 Wildbad Kreuth meeting, the first of which was Reagan's Assistant Secretary of State for Economic and Business Affairs from 1982 to 1985, **Richard T. McCormack**, who later attended the Cercle meetings held in July 1983 in Bonn and in February 1985 in Washington. Before being appointed by Reagan in 1982, McCormack had served from 1979 to 1981 as Legislative Assistant to **Senator Jesse Helms**, the senior Republican from North Carolina first elected to the Senate in 1972 who, for nearly thirty years, was a key hardline influence on American foreign and domestic policy, earning the nickname "Senator No" (584). Six months after the last Cercle meeting covered by the Garnier-Lançon papers, that of February 1985, McCormack was appointed as Permanent Representative of the US to the Organisation of American States, serving until 1989 when he became Under-Secretary of State for Economic Growth, Energy and the Environment. During his term of office until 1991, McCormack served as President Bush's personal representative at the 1989 economic summit in Paris and at the 1990 summit in Houston, Texas (585).

Senator Helms himself was also represented at several Cercle meetings by his two top aides, the first of whom was his Chief Legislative Assistant, **James P. Lucier**, who attended the Cercle meetings held in June 1982 in Wildbad Kreuth, in January 1984 in Stellenbosch, and in February 1985 in Washington. As well as acting as Helms's Chief Legislative Assistant, Lucier also served as the Minority Staff Director of the Senate Foreign Relations Committee, Helms's stamping ground, but was fired by Helms in January 1992. The second top aide was Helms's foreign policy advisor from 1974 to 1982, lawyer **John E. Carbaugh**, who attended the Cercle meeting in Bonn in July 1984. Carbaugh had been recommended to Helms in 1973 by longstanding Senator from South Carolina Strom Thurmond, a member of the Senate

Armed Services Committee; Lucier was a former aide to Thurmond. Between them, Lucier and Carbaugh acted as Helms's *éminences grises*, representing or accompanying him on many of his foreign trips and lobbying for his positions in Washington.

The pair also played a considerable part in facilitating discreet conservative funding for domestic or foreign allies, as is evidenced by declassified State Department cable 1977STATE134962 of 10th June 1977 which referred to a "sensitive IRS investigation" of an American corporation, Analysis And Research Association, Inc., and detailed the text of an Inland Revenue Service letter agreed with the State Department that had been sent out to "each of the former officials they were interested in interviewing (Strauss, Barzel, Marx, Von Bismark, Rinsche, Bahner)". The letter stated that "the principal officers of the corporation were Paul Weyrich, Victor Fediay and James Lucier. Certain records of the corporation indicate that you may have had dealings with the corporation or its officers during the years 1971 and 1972". The 1977 State Department cable noted that Marx had replied that he had no information to offer to the IRS, whereas Strauß could not remember and might need his memory jogged (586)*. Of the corporation's officers, Lucier was not the only one to attend the 1982 Cercle meeting hosted by Strauß in Wildbad Kreuth; another participant was **Paul M. Weyrich**, co-founder with Edwin Feulner of the Heritage Foundation in February 1973 and co-founder with Jerry Falwell of the Moral Majority in June 1979 (587)*.

This was not the only time that Lucier or Carbaugh were implicated in dodgy political funding of interest to the IRS; the *New York Times* reported in June 1982 that "Mr. Carbaugh and James P. Lucier, another Helms aide, are, respectively, the vice president and secretary-treasurer of the Institute of American Relations and the Institute of American Relations Foreign Affairs Council which were set up in 1975 as tax-exempt educational organisations [...] Several Senate aides and friends of Mr. Carbaugh, however, are convinced that a key reason for his leaving the job [of foreign policy advisor to Helms in 1982] was a series of news reports and events involving a network of conservative support groups, in which Mr. Carbaugh played a central role, that threatened to embarrass Senator Helms because of their controversial tax-exempt status [...] although Mr. Carbaugh was employed full time by the Senator, tax returns showed that the aide had spent about half his time on institute business and received more than $70,000 from between 1977 and 1980 from one of the groups, the Institute of American Relations. The group's largest supporter was the oil billionaire, Nelson Bunker Hunt, according to *Congressional Quarterly*" (588).

Carbaugh and Lucier were certainly active for Senator Helms; in September 1979, the pair had stirred up a diplomatic storm when visiting London to urge Rhodesian Premier Ian Smith not to give any ground in the ongoing Lancaster House talks with the British, bluntly stating that "we don't want to see this conference succeed". Whilst in London, Lucier and Carbaugh had also met with Amery, Churchill and other Tory hardliners on Rhodesia. Although Thatcher had been in contact with Helms since her days in opposition, had met him in London in July 1979 and had accepted to meet Carbaugh during his September visit, she was infuriated at what she saw as unwelcome and offensive meddling by Helms and his aides in a thorny issue which had long split the Conservative Party with Monday Clubbers such as Amery, Hastings, Biggs-Davison, Churchill and Lord and Viscount Cranborne in open rebellion against the government line.

Edward Lanpher, the American diplomat in London charged with shadowing the talks, sent an urgent cable to the then American Secretary of State, Cyrus R. Vance, later recalling: "I had a call that evening or early the next morning from Dick Moose, the Assistant Secretary, saying, "When your cable on Carbaugh and Lucier hit Mr. Vance's desk, he had to be scraped off the ceiling. He was hopping mad." He was following the negotiations very closely, reading every cable out of London and everywhere else. Vance had had problems with Carbaugh and Lucier on the Panama Canal treaties, on SALT, on Central America policy, and other things. And here they were, screwing up Rhodesia. But according to Moose, and I don't have this except by heresay [sic], apparently, Vance just went ballistic. He went up to the Hill [...] and got the Senate to get to Jesse Helms and order his aides out of London" (589).

Carbaugh also wielded considerable influence on other continents, attending the September 1980 conference of CAL, the Latin American chapter of WACL, alongside Stefano Delle Chiaie and El Salvadorean ARENA leader Roberto d'Aubuisson; Carbaugh later played an important part in the promotion of d'Aubuisson in the US in 1982 (590). According to the *New York Times*, Carbaugh "was a major force in the decision of the State Department and the White House last month [March 1981] to cut off aid to Nicaragua, despite concerns among policy makers that termination of aid might alienate Nicaragua from the United States, according to White House and State Department officials. He persistently lobbied the White House and the State and Defense Departments to win appointments to key policy posts for conservatives, including Fred C. Iklé, former chief of the Arms Control and Disarmament Agency under Presidents Ford and Nixon, who has been named Under-Secretary of Defense for Policy, according to the same officials [...] After Mr. Reagan's election, Mr. Carbaugh served on the State Department transition team. Mr. Carbaugh was known to have sought a high-ranking job in the Administration and was said to be disappointed when the position he was offered was Ambassador to Paraguay. After rejecting the job, Mr. Carbaugh told friends, ''I have more power where I am now''" (591). Pride however came before a fall and, as the *New York Times* and possibly the IRS closed in, Carbaugh resigned as foreign policy advisor to Helms, joining a Washington law firm in June 1982 and attending the July 1984 Cercle meeting in Bonn (592).

After leaving Republican Congressional politics, Carbaugh still had occasion to meet his old colleagues, amongst them veteran Republican Senate organiser **Margaret D. B. Carlisle**, who would meet Lucier at the June 1982 Cercle meeting in Wildbad Kreuth, and then Carbaugh at the July 1984 Cercle meeting in Bonn. Margo Carlisle had worked with Feulner and Weyrich of the Heritage Foundation since 1975; in January 1979, she wrote "Changing the Rules of the Game in the US Senate" for the Heritage Foundation journal, *Policy Review*. From 1979 on, she was the Executive Director of the Republican Senate Steering Committee and Staff Director of the Senate Republican Conference. Along with Carbaugh, Delle Chiaie and d'Aubuisson, she attended the 1980 conference of the Latin American chapter of WACL, CAL. From 1982 to 1985, Carlisle was a trustee of the Philadelphia Society; co-founder Feulner was its President in 1982-83 – see below.

In March 1983, in between the two known Cercle meetings she attended, Carlisle was one of the participants at the fourth conference organised by the NSIC's Consortium for the Study of Intelligence; its "Symposium on the Role of Special Operations in US Strategy for the 1980s" was also attended by the NSIC's Barnett and Godson, Senate Intelligence Committee staffer Angelo Codevilla (a co-drafter of the Heritage Foundation's January 1981 intelligence policy recommendations and later NSIC and IEDSS author), journalist Arnaud de Borchgrave, and a trio of core 6I and Cercle members – Shackley, Jameson and General Stilwell, then Iklé's Deputy Under-Secretary of Defense for Policy - as well as Major Oliver North of the NSC, and the British counter-insurgency veterans Maurice Tugwell, a Canadian-based NSIC partner, and General Sir Walter Walker, a speaker at Close's 1983 WACL conference held in Luxembourg six months later. In 1984, Carlisle worked for the Republican Senate Election Committee before serving from 1986 to 1989 as Reagan's Assistant Secretary of Defense for Legislative Affairs, "in essence the Defense Department's chief lobbyist on Capitol Hill". After leaving public service in 1989, she was the Vice President for governmental relations at the Heritage Foundation until 1991, and later a member of the Board of Directors of the Center for Security Policy (593).

Also attending the June 1982 Cercle meeting in Bavaria was Senate Foreign Relations Committee staffer **Patrick Balestrieri**, who attended this and two further Cercle meetings in early 1983 and in South Africa in January 1984 as the Assistant for International Affairs to Richard Perle, the "Prince of Darkness", confirmed to have been a member of the Cercle since the late 1970s. From 1981 to 1987, Perle was Reagan's Assistant Secretary of Defense for International Security Policy; at the time, he was a member of the ASC's lobbying arm, the Coalition for Peace through Strength. In 1982, soon after Perle's appointment to the Reagan Administration, he hired NSC Middle East expert Douglas J. Feith as his Special Counsel; Feith went on to serve as Reagan's Deputy Assistant Secretary of Defense for Negotiations Policy from 1984 to 1986 (594).

A final American participant at the June 1982 Cercle meeting in Wildbad Kreuth was **Miles M. Costick**, an expert on Soviet trade who had coined the phrase "resource war" to describe the battle between the US and the Soviet Union for raw materials and Third World spheres of influence. For several years, Costick had been an active contributor to the US WACL chapter, the American Council of World Freedom (ACWF). He addressed their annual meeting in 1976 and, the following year, was a speaker with Crozier, Cline, Allen, Helms, Lefever and Colby at an ACWF anti-détente conference. In 1978, Costick produced the report *The Strategic Dimension of East-West Trade* for the ACWF Task Force on Strategic Trade. In 1979, Costick worked alongside Richardson and Elbridge Durbrow as a speaker at the triennial convention of the National Confederation of American Ethnic Groups; "Lt. General Daniel O. Graham USA (Ret.), national co-chairman of the Coalition for Peace through Strength, served as the banquet speaker".

From 1978 on, Costick was the President of the Institute for Strategic Trade which denounced American technology transfer to the Soviet Union during the Carter Administration; in September 1980, Costick gave testimony on the subject to the US Senate Committee on Governmental Affairs. In November 1981, Costick 'testified' alongside US WACL notables General Singlaub and Professor David Rowe before the National Committee to Restore Internal Security; also present was the Committee Chairman, Robert Morris, in the 1950s a former Chief Counsel of the Senate Internal Security Subcommittee and by the 1980s a Director of the USCWF, the refounded American WACL chapter run by Generals Singlaub and Graham. In April 1982, Costick was quoted in *Damoclès*, the newsletter of the Belgian WACL chapter; two months later, he joined Close, Jonet, de Kerchove and de Bonvoisin at this Cercle meeting in Bavaria (595).

The following Cercle meeting in early 1983, almost certainly held in Washington, also evidenced the Cercle's contacts at the highest level of American politics – one of the guests was the former President, **Richard Nixon**. At the meeting, Nixon was accompanied by his former foreign policy coordinator from 1968 on, **Richard V. Allen**. From 1977 to 1980, Allen had worked as Governor Ronald Reagan's chief foreign policy advisor, sitting on the IEDSS Council from 1979 on. Allen was then appointed President Reagan's first National Security Advisor, serving from January 1981 until his forced resignation in a scandal about paid access in January 1982. Whilst National Security Advisor, Allen had helped to ensure initial CIA funding for the 6I and was one of the recipients of the 6I bulletin, *Transnational Security*. Following his resignation, Allen became a Fellow of the Hoover Institution in 1983 and served as Senior Counsellor for Foreign Policy and National Security for the Republican National Committee (596).

Not all those at the early 1983 Cercle meeting had however been forced to leave public service; one such was **William Schneider Jnr**, from 1982 to 1986 Reagan's Assistant Secretary of State for Security Assistance, Science and Technology – the man in charge of coordinating all American foreign military aid who also attended the Cercle meetings held in July 1983 and July 1984 in Bonn.

From 1971 on, Schneider had been a staff member of the Hudson Institute, also serving as an advisor to James L. Buckley, a New York Senator from 1971 to 1977 and member of the Senate Budget Committee for Defense and International Affairs. In 1972, Schneider joined Buckley's staff and worked from 1974 to 1976 as his Legislative Assistant, visiting Vietnam with him in 1974 and 1975, accompanied on the latter visit by Jeffrey B. Gayner of the Heritage Foundation, described below. In 1976, Schneider made another trip abroad, this time to Zaire along with Edwin Feulner, co-founder of the Heritage Foundation and Executive Director of the House Republican Study Committee. Between 1976 and 1978, Schneider contributed articles to several publications by the Council for American Affairs, an American chapter of WACL run by racist and anti-Semitic anthropologist Roger Pearson; Schneider's co-authors were Feulner, Gayner, Cline and Graham.

From 1975 to 1978, Schneider was also a trustee of the Philadelphia Society, a dinner discussion group which had been set up in 1964 by Feulner, M. Stanton Evans, Milton Friedman, conservative publisher Henry Regnery and *National Review* founder William F. Buckley, Senator Buckley's younger brother. Philadelphia Society meetings attracted hardline conservatives such as Weyrich, Pearson, Harrigan, Casey, Carlisle, Allen, Pipes, Lefever and Shakespeare. At one Philadelphia Society meeting Schneider addressed in April 1977, one of his fellow speakers was Robert Moss; at another Schneider attended in November 1980, the keynote speaker was Arnaud de Borchgrave.

After Ronald Reagan's election victory that month, Schneider was first appointed as Associate Director for National Security and International Affairs at the Office of Management and Budget, serving from 1981 to 1982; his former boss Senator Buckley meanwhile became Reagan's Under-Secretary of State for Security Assistance. In 1982, Schneider took over from Buckley at the State Department as Under-Secretary of State for Security Assistance, Science and Technology, serving until 1986; Buckley filled the post of President of Radio Free Europe/Radio Liberty, Inc. until 1985 (597).

A neoconservative academic who attended the Cercle meeting in early 1983 was **Prof. Dr. Robert Pfaltzgraff**, Professor of International Security Studies at the Fletcher School of Law and Diplomacy of Tufts University, and co-founder in 1976 of the **Institute for Foreign Policy Analysis** (IFPA), of which he has been the longstanding President. Also present at the same 1983 Cercle meeting were one of the IFPA's frequent authors in the 1980s, Rear Admiral Robert J. Hanks, as well as an old acquaintance of Pfaltzgraff from the early 1970s – William Schneider (598).

A further figure of interest at the early 1983 Cercle meeting was **John Barron**, listed as the Chief Editor of the *Reader's Digest* and a lead author for the magazine in 1974 and 1977. Long renowned as a disinformation outlet, the *Reader's Digest* was at this time promoting the now thoroughly discredited "Bulgarian Connection" theory espoused by its contributor Claire Sterling, according to which the Bulgarian secret service under KGB direction had hired the Turkish ultra-nationalist gunman Mehmet Ali Ağca to kill Pope John Paul II in May 1981 because of his support for the Solidarnośc trades union in Poland. As her obituary in the *Independent* put it, "Claire Sterling, a self-proclaimed terrorism expert, was one of three journalists responsible for fabricating and divulging the details of the theory. The others were Paul Henze, a propaganda expert and former CIA station chief in Turkey, and Michael Leeden [sic, Ledeen] [...] under Ronald Reagan's administration, the US was involved in a massive re-armament programme and the Bulgarian Connection served effectively to counter the pacifist movement, and the Allies were persuaded to accept the deployment of Cruise and Pershing missiles." Sterling's vehicle of choice for launching the theory was a September 1982 article in the *Reader's Digest*, "The Plot to Kill the Pope", which she later expanded into a book, *The Time of the Assassins*, published in 1983; the disinformation was also recycled in Frederick Forsyth's 1984 novel *The Fourth Protocol* (599).

The Cercle's strong transatlantic connections to the American section of WACL and the Heritage Foundation continued at its July 1983 meeting in Bonn in the person of veteran right-wing multi-functionary **Lee Edwards**, credited as President of the Center for International Relations. Throughout the 1970s, Edwards had been the Secretary of the American Council for World Freedom, the first US WACL chapter whose President was John M. Fisher of the IAS and ASC; both Fisher and Edwards had attended the 4th WACL Conference held in Tokyo in September 1970. Edwards served as the Executive Secretary of the National Captive Nations Committee (whose Congress in 1983 included future British Cercle member John Wilkinson, detailed above) and wrote a regular column for the *Ukrainian Weekly;* he was also Senior Editor of the Moonies' magazine *The World & I* and a contributor to their *Washington Times*, whose 20th anniversary Edwards commemorated with the book *Our times: the Washington Times, 1982-2002.*

A Distinguished Fellow of the Heritage Foundation, Edwards was the author of the 1997 book *The power of ideas: the Heritage Foundation at 25 years* and the 2013 definitive history of the Foundation, *Leading the Way: The Story of Ed Feulner and the Heritage Foundation*, as well as the author of biographies of Walter Judd, William F. Buckley and Ronald Reagan. Needless to say, Edwards was also a Distinguished Member of Feulner's Philadelphia Society, having been at various times its President or its trustee. He later became an Adjunct Professor at the Institute of World Politics, serving on the faculty alongside Herb Romerstein, Kenneth deGraffenreid, J. Michael Waller and fellow Cercle members Sven Kraemer and Norman A. Bailey, presented below. Edwards has also served as Chairman of the

Victims of Communism Memorial Foundation, whose National Advisory Council includes Feulner, Pipes and Singlaub and whose International Advisory Council has included the late Vladimir Bukovsky and Brian Crozier (600).

A year later, in July 1984 again in Bonn, the Heritage Foundation was represented by their stalwart policy analyst **Jeffrey B. Gayner**, who also attended the February 1985 Cercle meeting in Washington. Gayner had worked for the Heritage Foundation since at least 1974, visiting Vietnam with Schneider in 1975 as Director of the Heritage Foundation Foreign Policies Study Center, a post he filled until at least 1982. From 1976 to 1978, he co-wrote several books for the US WACL affiliate, the Council on American Affairs; Feulner, Schneider, Cline and Graham were his co-authors. In 1979, Gayner chaired the Heritage Foundation Transition Team for the State Department. He continued to work for the Heritage Foundation throughout the 1980s and 1990s, acting as the Director of its Moscow Office in 1993 and serving as a Senior Fellow in 1995; he was also a trustee of the Philadelphia Society from 1995 to 1998 (601).

However, it was at the February 1985 meeting on home turf in Washington that the Cercle best showed the level of its contacts within the Reagan Administration including leading figures from the Department of Defense, the intelligence community and the National Security Council. The most senior of the Cercle attendees from the Pentagon was **Fred C. Iklé**, the serving Under-Secretary of Defense for Policy; his Deputy Under-Secretary of Defense for Policy was the 6I's General Richard Stilwell who accompanied Iklé to this Cercle meeting. Iklé was a veteran nuclear defence analyst who had written reports for the RAND Corporation from 1957 to 1971. After Iklé had met Nixon at Harvard, Kissinger appointed him as Director of the Arms Control and Disarmament Agency in 1973, a post he filled under Presidents Nixon and Ford until 1977. In 1979-1980, Iklé was coordinator of the team of foreign policy advisors to Governor Reagan and then served in both Reagan Administrations as Under-Secretary of Defense for Policy from 1981 to 1987. In March 1985, one month after this Cercle meeting, Reagan signed Iklé's proposal to arm the Afghan mujaheddin with Stinger anti-aircraft missiles, a policy implemented after initial CIA objections in February 1986 (602).

As well as the Iklé/Stilwell team, the Cercle could also count on other powerful friends within Reagan's national security apparatus, as noted above - both Richard Perle, the Assistant Secretary of Defense for International Security Policy from 1981 to 1987, and William Schneider Jnr, the Under-Secretary of State for Security Assistance from 1982 to 1986, were members of the Cercle at the time.

Besides its contacts in the Pentagon and the State Department, the Cercle enjoyed top-level access to the intelligence community – a further participant at the February 1985 Cercle meeting was **Herbert E. Meyer**, an economist and associate editor of *Fortune* magazine who was brought into the CIA in early 1982 by Director

Casey to act as his Special Assistant; in January 1983, he was also appointed Vice-Chairman of the National Intelligence Council (NIC), the body which produces the National Intelligence Estimates giving the consensus view of the (then) sixteen American intelligence agencies. One of the most senior intelligence officials serving in the Reagan Administration, Meyer held the position on the NIC until December 1985, gaining considerable notoriety in November 1983 for a report he submitted to Casey and CIA Deputy Director John McMahon entitled "Why the World Is So Dangerous". The report, which forecast the collapse of the Soviet Union eight years before the event, was also read and appreciated by Reagan who later awarded Meyer the National Intelligence Distinguished Service Medal, the intelligence community's highest honour. The report however stirred up resistance in the CIA and was subsequently leaked to the Press. "There was subsequent uproar throughout Washington, which made Meyer very nervous. He was summoned to his boss's office. "Herb, right now you've got the smallest fan club in Washington," Bill Casey told him grimly. As Meyer turned pale, Casey laughed: "Relax. It's me and the president"."

After his period at the CIA, Meyer went on to found the business consultancy Real-World Intelligence, Inc. and to work in 1988 with the 6I's David Hart to set up a press agency on Soviet dissidents whose main source of information was Vladimir Bukovsky. True to form, nearly twenty years later, Meyer recycled two notorious disinformation stories in the *Wall Street Journal* in the aftermath of the 2003 invasion of Iraq, claiming the CIA had refused to countenance "a persuasive case that Iraq and al Qaeda worked closely together in the months and years leading up to 9/11 [...] an eerie replay of what happened in the early 1980s, when the CIA bureaucracy insisted - in the face of all experience and common sense - that the Soviet Union had nothing to do with the attempted assassination of the Pope" (603)*.

Another Casey appointee to the CIA in 1981 who attended the 1985 Washington Cercle meeting was **Constantine C. Menges**, at the time of the meeting a Latin America expert on the National Security Council and Special Assistant to the President for National Security Affairs. Whilst completing graduate studies at Columbia under Carter's future National Security Adviser, Zbigniew Brzezinski, Menges started the first of what was to be three periods at the Hudson Institute. From 1966 to 1968, he then worked for the RAND Corporation; whilst there, he wrote a key study:

> "While many take credit after the fact for what became known as the "Reagan Doctrine", it was Constantine who, in 1968, wrote the original RAND paper that became the Reagan Doctrine, "Democratic Revolutionary Insurgency as an Alternative Strategy", arguing that "Communist regimes are very vulnerable to a democratic national revolution that is conducted with skill and the determination to succeed"" (604).

Menges then served in the Nixon and Ford Administrations in minor positions as Deputy Assistant Secretary for Education in the Department of Health, Education and Welfare, and, in 1975-76, as Director of the Bureau of International Affairs of the Civil Aeronautics Board. In 1978, he rejoined the Washington office of the Hudson Institute until 1981 when he was hired to work first for the CIA and then for the NSC:

> "An academic by training, Mr. Menges was recruited by new CIA Director William Casey in May 1981 to be National Intelligence Officer for Latin America [...] Just before joining the CIA, Menges proposed the U.S. government establish a "National Foundation for Democracy", to promote nascent democratic movements in countries under communism and other forms of tyranny. President Reagan embraced the idea, and two years later convinced Congress to fund the National Endowment for Democracy [...] When he moved to the White House in 1983 to become a Special Assistant to the President for National Security Affairs [until 1986], his first assignment was to draw up plans to restore democracy in Grenada after a communist coup. It was this part of the Grenada mission, more than the military intervention alone, that marked the definitive end of the Carter era and demonstrated it was possible to "roll back" communism, surely Ronald Reagan's greatest legacy" (605).
>
> "In *President Reagan: The Role of a Lifetime*, author Lou Cannon described Dr. Menges as one of a cadre of National Security Council aides who believed, as did Casey, "that the West should be mobilized to fight Communists with their own methods". Cannon described Dr. Menges "as one of the most forceful of these polemicists" and "a principled conservative." White House and State Department pragmatists, according to Cannon, dubbed him "Constant Menace," a play on his name, for his ardent support of action, covert and otherwise, against Nicaraguan Sandinistas and Salvadoran rebels [...] Dr. Menges contended that the invasion of Grenada helped avert a possible Grenada nuclear deployment crisis and strengthened President Ronald Reagan's hand in deploying intermediate-range missiles in Europe in late 1983" (606).

After leaving the NSC in 1986, Menges became a Resident Scholar at the American Enterprise Institute in November 1987, giving a lecture that December with AEI Resident Fellow and Cercle member Richard Perle on "The Purpose of American Power". In May 1989, alongside fellow Cercle members Herb Meyer and Michael Ledeen, he spoke at a seminar on "The Role of Intelligence in a Free Society" (607)*.

Alongside Menges at the 1985 Cercle meeting in Washington was another National Security Council staffer – and also a Special Assistant to the President for National Security Affairs - **Walter (Walt) Raymond Jr.**, a former senior CIA career officer who was, at the time of the meeting, the Reagan Administration's chief propaganda expert marshalling support for the American-backed opponents of the Sandinista government in Nicaragua and the FMLN rebels in El Salvador.

After service in the Korean War, Raymond had started his intelligence career in 1954 in the Defense Department monitoring Soviet Bloc and Western European affairs before moving to the State Department in 1960 where he worked in Europe as a political and information officer. In 1970, he joined the CIA, becoming an authority on "clandestine overseas media operations" i.e. propaganda and disinformation. Raymond served as Director of the Covert Action Staff at the CIA from 1978 to June 1982 when he was appointed to the NSC as the Chief of its Intelligence Directorate; he continued working on intelligence matters whilst at the NSC, drafting a Presidential Finding on Covert Action in Nicaragua in mid-September 1983. However, his main function at the NSC was in "public diplomacy"; in mid-1983, Raymond was appointed Special Assistant to the President for National Security Affairs and Senior Director of International Communications Policy at the NSC. As well as chairing an NSC working group on Central American Public Diplomacy which brought together representatives of the USIA, CIA, Defense and NSC (including Oliver North), he was also the NSC head of S/LPD, a controversial Office for Public Diplomacy for Latin America and the Caribbean housed within the State Department.

> "From early 1983 until November of 1986 [when the Iran-Contra scandal became public], the NSC staff, with the backing of Bill Casey and support from National Security Advisors Bill Clark, Bud McFarlane and John Poindexter, and with continuing help from Oliver North, created an inter-governmental structure, the purposes and activities of which were masked from Congress and public view. The NSC and S/LPD, operating under the cover of the State Department, hired outside consultants and gave encouragement, support and direction to groups of private citizens outside the government. These groups raised money for Contra weapons, lobbied the Congress, ran sophisticated media campaigns in targeted Congressional districts, and worked with S/LPD to influence American public opinion through manipulation of the American press. In the latter half of 1986, Raymond was attempting to set up a private group with more prestige and greater clout" (608)*.

The sensitivity of putting a senior official from the CIA – forbidden to engage in domestic propaganda – in charge of gathering private sector support for the Reagan Administration's policies in Central America was underscored by Raymond's formal resignation from the CIA in April 1983 so, as he later told the Congressional committees investigating the Iran-Contra scandal, "there would be no question whatsoever of any contamination of this". The NSC also prepared a press guidance document answering the question "Press reports state that there is no CIA involvement in the Public Diplomacy Program. Yet isn't Walt Raymond, a CIA employee, involved heavily?" with the response "Walter Raymond is a member of the National Security Council staff. In the past he has worked for Defense, CIA and State [...] IF PRESSED ABOUT WHERE HE LAST WORKED: He retired from CIA. He is a permanent member of the National Security Council. IF PRESSED ABOUT WHAT HIS DUTIES WERE: His duties there are classified" (609)*.

A March 1984 NSC memo from Raymond to Roy Godson of the NSIC Washington office, also copied to the then Deputy National Security Advisor, Admiral John Poindexter, shows that Raymond supported involving Brian Crozier, Rupert Murdoch and Sir James Goldsmith in this private coalition to support the Contras and the El Salvadorean government under Roberto d'Aubuisson's ARENA:

> "Attached herewith are some papers that I have received from Brian Crozier. Crozier is looking for private sector funding to work on the question of "anti-Americanism" overseas. I am pursuaded [sic] it is a significant long term problem. It is also the kind of thing that Ruppert [sic; Murdoch] and Jimmy [Goldsmith] might respond positively to."
>
> In a handwritten note on the memo, Poindexter replied:
>
> "Walt, it seems to me as with all programs like this it very much depends on the competence of the organizer. Is he really good? Worth $500k/yr? If the answer to both is yes, then I think we should work to help him" (610).

Although the outcome of this 1984 contact about Crozier is unclear, less than a year later Raymond attended the Washington Cercle meeting held in February 1985. In 1987, following the emergence of the Iran-Contra scandal, Raymond was transferred from the NSC to the US Information Agency as Assistant Director and Senior Coordinator of its Office of the Eastern European Initiative, a post he filled until 1992.

A third NSC staffer at the 1985 Cercle meeting was a veteran NSC official whom we have met before - **Sven Kraemer**, who had served on the NSC as an arms control expert from 1967 to 1976 under Presidents Johnson, Nixon and Ford and had then spent the Carter Presidency working as Senior Staff Member for Defense and Foreign Policy for the Senate. In 1979, he chaired the Heritage Foundation's Transition Team for the Defense Department before returning to the NSC after Reagan's election, working in the Defence Policy and Arms Control Directorates from 1981 to 1987. In 1977, Kraemer had been the Program Director of Barnett's NSIC whose Consortium for the Study of Intelligence, created in 1979, involved several American Cercle members listed here. Amongst the participants at five CSI conferences held between November 1979 and November 1984 were Cercle members Richard V. Allen, Margo Carlisle, William Colby, Fred Iklé, Donald Jameson, Sven Kraemer, Michael Ledeen, Robert Pfaltzgraff, Ted Shackley and General Richard Stilwell. In the new millennium, another body with similar overlap was the Institute of World Politics where Kraemer served on the faculty alongside fellow Cercle members Edwards and Bailey (presented below) as well as Romerstein, deGraffenreid and Waller.

A fourth NSC staffer at the 1985 Cercle meeting – who by this time had left the NSC to become an international economic consultant – was **Norman A. Bailey**, whose US Army service had been spent in Strategic Intelligence and Joint Operational Planning. From 1981 to 1983, Bailey worked for Reagan's NSC, successively filling the posts of Director of Planning and Evaluation, Senior Director of National Security Planning and International Economic Affairs, and finally Special Assistant to the President for National Security Affairs. During his period of government service as an expert in tracking international financial flows, Bailey was a central character in "President Reagan's strategy to accelerate the demise of the Soviet Union [... and] to run economic warfare against the USSR", as is explained by William P. Clark, Reagan's second National Security Advisor, in his Foreword to Bailey's 1998 monograph, *The Strategic Plan that won the Cold War*:

> "The president worked closely with his National Security Council (NSC) team to configure a security-minded economic strategy that would constrict financial and other forms of Western life-support being tapped by the Kremlin. National Security Decision Directive (NSDD) 66 and the economic section of NSDD 75 (prepared in November 1982 and January 1983, respectively) provide the best illustrations of this critically important dimension" (611).

> "According to Bailey [...] the NSA has been using its vast powers with signals intelligence to track financial transactions around the world since the early 1980s. From 1982 to 1984, Bailey ran a top-secret program for President Reagan's National Security Council, called "Follow the Money", that used NSA signals intelligence to track loans from Western banks to the Soviet Union and its allies. [...] According to Bailey, the Reagan program marked a significant shift in resources from human spying to electronic surveillance, as a way to track money flows to suspected criminals and American enemies. "That was the beginning of the whole process", he said" (612).

In January 1985, after leaving government service, Bailey founded an international consulting firm with former CIA Director and Cercle guest William Colby. He later joined the faculty of the Institute of World Politics as Professor of Economics and National Security serving alongside fellow Cercle members Kraemer and Edwards as well as Romerstein, deGraffenreid and Waller (613). From 2006 to

2007, Bailey headed a special unit within the Office of the Director of National Intelligence focused on financial intelligence on Cuba and Venezuela (614).

The military were also represented at the 1985 Cercle meeting by USAF **Lieutenant-General James Alan Abrahamson**, who, from 1981 to 1984 had been seconded to NASA to run the space shuttle programme. From 1984 until his retirement in 1989, Abrahamson served as the first Director of the Strategic Defense Initiative Organization set up by Reagan with vociferous backing from the High Frontier group run by Generals Graham and Richardson, as detailed above (615).

Another significant military figure to attend the 1985 Cercle meeting was **Admiral Thomas H. Moorer**, the Vietnam-era Chief of Naval Operations and then Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff who had been a member of Team B in 1975-76. A Board member of the ASC and Western Goals, Moorer was a co-chairman alongside Fisher and Graham of the ASC's Coalition for Peace Through Strength launched in August 1978, which, by 1981, could count on the support of 271 members of Congress and over 2,500 generals and admirals. From 1980 until at least 1989, Moorer was also Director of the NSIC. In October 1981, Reagan appointed Moorer to the President's Foreign Intelligence Advisory Board (616).

One prominent foreign guest at the February 1985 Cercle meeting was the Ukrainian-born former Soviet diplomat **Arkady Shevchenko**, who had served as the advisor to Soviet Foreign Minister Gromyko from 1970 until being appointed Under Secretary-General of the UN in 1973. "Second only to Kurt Waldheim at the United Nations [...] Mr. Shevchenko was considered the C.I.A.'s top trophy of the 1970s", reporting to the CIA from late 1975 on and defecting in April 1978 as the highest-ranking Soviet official ever to claim political asylum. With the help of William Geimer, the founder of the Jamestown Foundation in 1984, Shevchenko wrote his bestselling memoirs, *Breaking With Moscow*, which were published in March 1985, one month after this Cercle meeting. Shevchenko became an American citizen in February 1986 and sat on the Board of Advisors of the Jamestown Foundation alongside the Cercle's American organiser Donald Jameson, Richard V. Allen, Zbigniew Brzezinski, Dick Cheney, Donald Rumsfeld and Midge Decter (617)*.

SOUTH AFRICAN FRIENDS

A final national delegation at the Cercle meetings from 1982 to 1985 was that from South Africa, whose longstanding links with the Cercle have been documented above. The Cercle took the opportunity to examine the situation on the ground by meeting three times in South Africa before the downfall of the apartheid regime – in the Afrikaner heartland of Stellenbosch in January 1984, and in Capetown in March 1988 and March 1991 (618).

The most frequent South African Cercle participant was **General Alan Fraser**, the former Chief of the Army Staff and Consul-General in Iran who had been working with the 6I since 1978; Fraser attended the Cercle meetings in June 1982 in Wildbad Kreuth, in early 1983 most probably in Washington, in January 1984 in Stellenbosch and in February 1985 in Washington DC.

However, most of the South African Cercle members – the only country to be represented by an official government delegation – were senior diplomats from the Department of Foreign Affairs (DFA), a major source of funding for the Cercle in the 1980s (619)*. One such diplomat was **Robert Abraham du Plooy**, who attended the Cercle meetings in early 1983, in July 1983 in Bonn, and in January 1984 in Stellenbosch. Having worked as the chargé d'affaires at the South African Embassy in Bonn from 1955 to 1960 (at a time when Strauß was Nuclear Power Minister, then Defence Minister), du Plooy served as ambassador in Latin America in the late 1960s and 1970s before representing South Africa in Paris as Ambassador to the Mitterrand government from December 1981 to May 1985 (620).

Another very important diplomat at the January 1984 Cercle meeting in Stellenbosch was **Charles B. H. Fincham**, listed as a "former Ambassador, S.A. Institute for International Affairs". This mention underplays Fincham's significance as the first direct representative of South Africa in Israel. Previous cooperation between the two countries (such as the sale of uranium from South Africa to Israel from 1963 on) had been channelled through the South African mission in Athens, but by the spring of 1972, formal diplomatic relations could be established via the appointment of a South African Consul-General in Tel Aviv - Charles Fincham. The Consulate-General was upgraded to full Embassy status in December 1975; Fincham served as Ambassador until at least 1977 (621)*.

A key target for the South African government in the 1980s was to try and overcome the international sanctions on the country by promoting business opportunities, hence the presence at the January 1984 Stellenbosch meeting of a trio of high-powered South African industry representatives - **Gavin Relly**, Chairman of the Anglo American Corporation, **Dirk Hertzog**, Deputy Chairman of the Stellenbosch-based tobacco and industrial conglomerate Rembrandt Group and **Basil Hersov**, Chairman of the Anglovaal mining and industrial group (622)*. The concern to encourage business ventures was supported by the South African Ambassador to the US from 1982 to 1985, **Brand Fourie**, whose Embassy organised an annual business seminar in Washington (623). Fourie, formerly the South African Secretary/Director-General of Foreign Affairs from 1966 to 1982, attended the February 1985 Cercle meeting in Washington. Fourie was certainly no stranger to the veteran members of the Cercle, having previously attended the 1976 Madrid CEDI/Cercle meeting along with Amery, Huyn, Bach and Sánchez Bella, all of whom he met again at the 1985 Washington Cercle meeting (624)*. Once again, in new times, there's nothing like old friends.

EPILOGUE

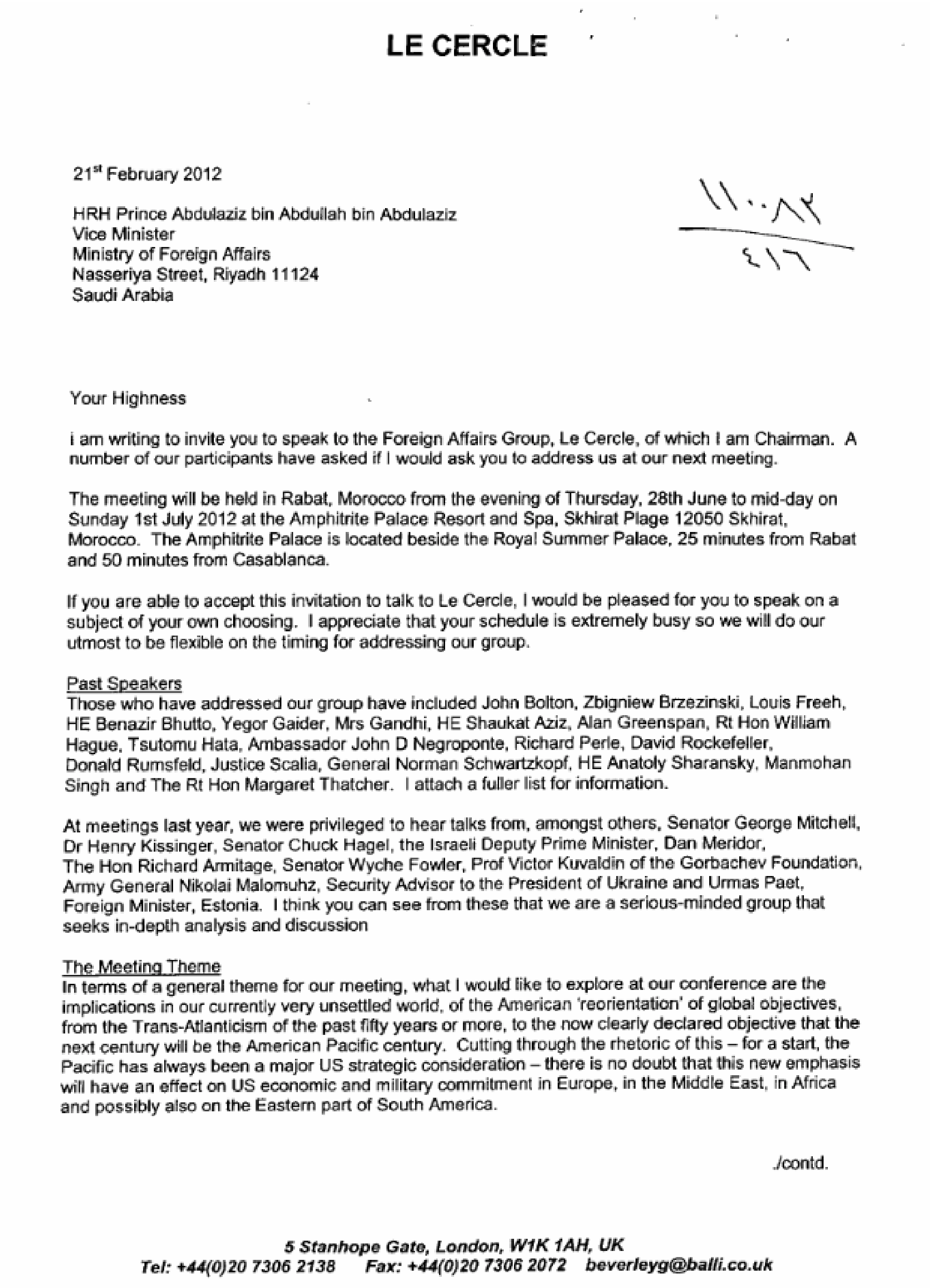

LE CERCLE

21st February 2012

١١٠٠٨٢
٤١٦

HRH Prince Abdulaziz bin Abdullah bin Abdulaziz
Vice Minister
Ministry of Foreign Affairs
Nasseriya Street, Riyadh 11124
Saudi Arabia

Your Highness

I am writing to invite you to speak to the Foreign Affairs Group, Le Cercle, of which I am Chairman. A number of our participants have asked if I would ask you to address us at our next meeting.

The meeting will be held in Rabat, Morocco from the evening of Thursday, 28th June to mid-day on Sunday 1st July 2012 at the Amphitrite Palace Resort and Spa, Skhirat Plage 12050 Skhirat, Morocco. The Amphitrite Palace is located beside the Royal Summer Palace, 25 minutes from Rabat and 50 minutes from Casablanca.

If you are able to accept this invitation to talk to Le Cercle, I would be pleased for you to speak on a subject of your own choosing. I appreciate that your schedule is extremely busy so we will do our utmost to be flexible on the timing for addressing our group.

Past Speakers
Those who have addressed our group have included John Bolton, Zbigniew Brzezinski, Louis Freeh, HE Benazir Bhutto, Yegor Gaider, Mrs Gandhi, HE Shaukat Aziz, Alan Greenspan, Rt Hon William Hague, Tsutomu Hata, Ambassador John D Negroponte, Richard Perle, David Rockefeller, Donald Rumsfeld, Justice Scalia, General Norman Schwartzkopf, HE Anatoly Sharansky, Manmohan Singh and The Rt Hon Margaret Thatcher. I attach a fuller list for information.

At meetings last year, we were privileged to hear talks from, amongst others, Senator George Mitchell, Dr Henry Kissinger, Senator Chuck Hagel, the Israeli Deputy Prime Minister, Dan Meridor, The Hon Richard Armitage, Senator Wyche Fowler, Prof Victor Kuvaldin of the Gorbachev Foundation, Army General Nikolai Malomuhz, Security Advisor to the President of Ukraine and Urmas Paet, Foreign Minister, Estonia. I think you can see from these that we are a serious-minded group that seeks in-depth analysis and discussion

The Meeting Theme
In terms of a general theme for our meeting, what I would like to explore at our conference are the implications in our currently very unsettled world, of the American 'reorientation' of global objectives, from the Trans-Atlanticism of the past fifty years or more, to the now clearly declared objective that the next century will be the American Pacific century. Cutting through the rhetoric of this – for a start, the Pacific has always been a major US strategic consideration – there is no doubt that this new emphasis will have an effect on US economic and military commitment in Europe, in the Middle East, in Africa and possibly also on the Eastern part of South America.

./contd.

5 Stanhope Gate, London, W1K 1AH, UK
Tel: +44(0)20 7306 2138 Fax: +44(0)20 7306 2072 beverleyg@balli.co.uk

From https://wikileaks.org/saudi-cables/doc78174.html and (next page) https://wikileaks.org/saudi-cables/doc33489.html; also see https://wikileaks.org/saudi-cables/doc52938.html and https://wikileaks.org/saudi-cables/doc31187.html.

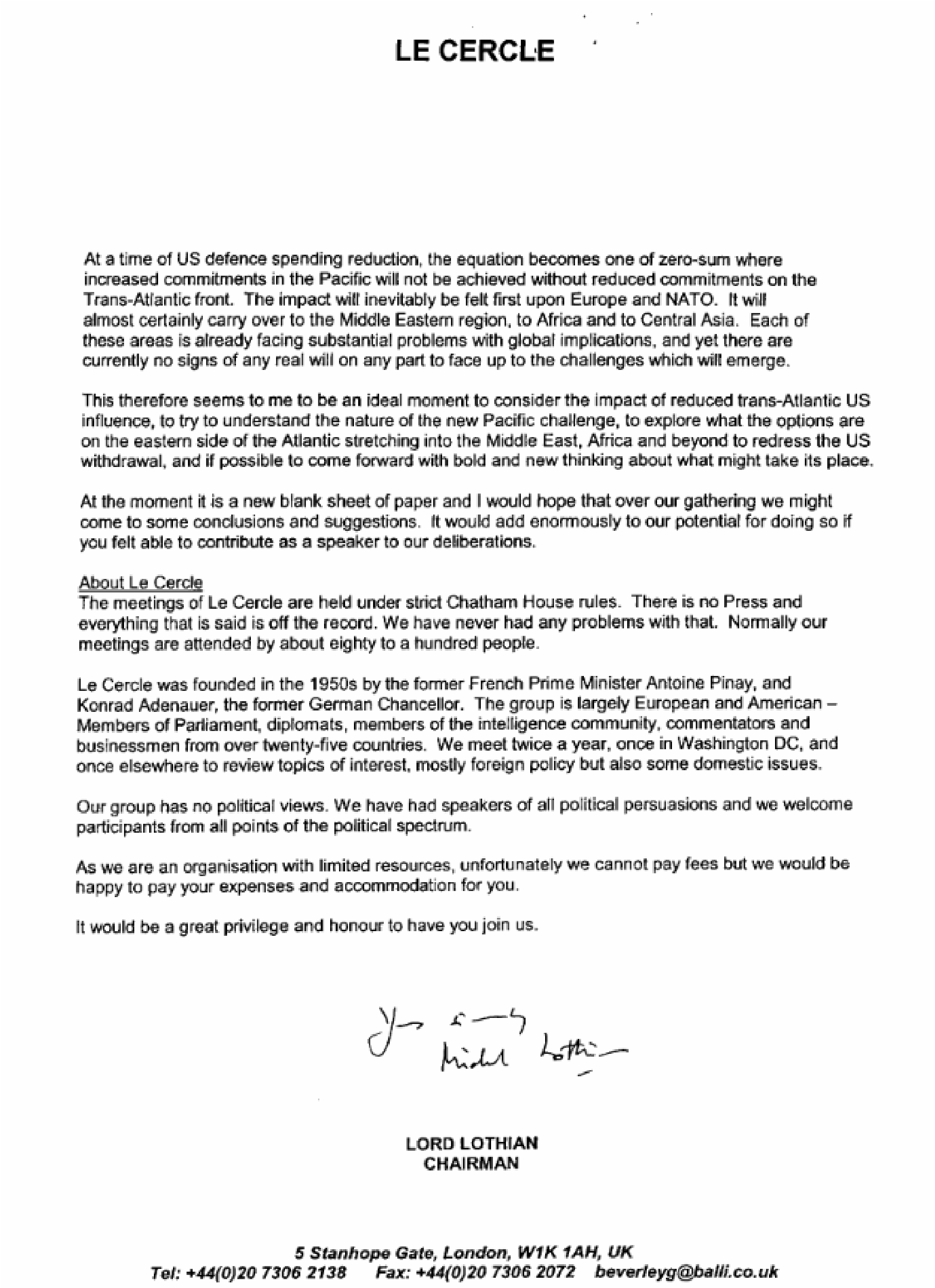

LE CERCLE

At a time of US defence spending reduction, the equation becomes one of zero-sum where increased commitments in the Pacific will not be achieved without reduced commitments on the Trans-Atlantic front. The impact will inevitably be felt first upon Europe and NATO. It will almost certainly carry over to the Middle Eastern region, to Africa and to Central Asia. Each of these areas is already facing substantial problems with global implications, and yet there are currently no signs of any real will on any part to face up to the challenges which will emerge.

This therefore seems to me to be an ideal moment to consider the impact of reduced trans-Atlantic US influence, to try to understand the nature of the new Pacific challenge, to explore what the options are on the eastern side of the Atlantic stretching into the Middle East, Africa and beyond to redress the US withdrawal, and if possible to come forward with bold and new thinking about what might take its place.

At the moment it is a new blank sheet of paper and I would hope that over our gathering we might come to some conclusions and suggestions. It would add enormously to our potential for doing so if you felt able to contribute as a speaker to our deliberations.

About Le Cercle

The meetings of Le Cercle are held under strict Chatham House rules. There is no Press and everything that is said is off the record. We have never had any problems with that. Normally our meetings are attended by about eighty to a hundred people.

Le Cercle was founded in the 1950s by the former French Prime Minister Antoine Pinay, and Konrad Adenauer, the former German Chancellor. The group is largely European and American – Members of Parliament, diplomats, members of the intelligence community, commentators and businessmen from over twenty-five countries. We meet twice a year, once in Washington DC, and once elsewhere to review topics of interest, mostly foreign policy but also some domestic issues.

Our group has no political views. We have had speakers of all political persuasions and we welcome participants from all points of the political spectrum.

As we are an organisation with limited resources, unfortunately we cannot pay fees but we would be happy to pay your expenses and accommodation for you.

It would be a great privilege and honour to have you join us.

Michael Lothian

LORD LOTHIAN
CHAIRMAN

5 Stanhope Gate, London, W1K 1AH, UK
Tel: +44(0)20 7306 2138 Fax: +44(0)20 7306 2072 beverleyg@balli.co.uk

On Lord Lothian, see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Michael_Ancram; https://members.parliament.uk/member/259/career; https://henryjacksonsociety.org/signatories-to-the-statement-of-principles/; https://www.globalstrategyforum.org/gsf-advisory-board/, a body set up by Lothian which includes Lamont, "a former Chairman of Le Cercle (a foreign affairs think tank)". The contact details above refer to the steel and commodities broker Balli plc, of which Lamont was a non-executive director; after trading mainly with Iran, the company went into administration in March 2013 – see https://publications.parliament.uk/pa/ld/ldreg/prevreg/147.pdf; https://uk.reuters.com/article/uk-balli-steel-administration-iran-idUKBRE9310KS20130402; https://www.justice.gov/opa/pr/uk-firm-pleads-guilty-illegally-exporting-boeing-747-aircraft-iran.

FOOTNOTES

(1) Crozier, pg 191.

(2) Habsburg died on 4th July 2011. The major print source on Habsburg and the Paneuropean Union is the Young European Federalists. The early Catholic influence on movements for European integration can be seen in both the PEU symbol and the flag of today's European Union; the design of a circle of stars on a field of blue was derived from the halo of twelve stars crowning the Virgin Mary in Catholic iconography. Arsène Heitz, the designer of the flag adopted by the Council of Europe in 1955 and by the European Union in 1985, said that "the flag of Europe is the flag of Our Lady" - see Carlo Curti Gialdino, *The Symbols of the European Union: origin of the design for the European flag* at https://www.cvce.eu/obj/en-df9f9dde-98a3-461b-a8a8-8f9c13012343. Anecdotally, the European Union anthem taken from Beethoven's Ninth Symphony also had roots in PEU history, having originally been suggested by Coudenhove-Kalergi in 1929 and again in 1955; it was finally adopted by the the Council of Europe in 1972 and the European Union in 1985 – see http://web.archive.org/web/20081030100401/http://www.coe.int/t/dgal/dit/ilcd/Historical_Content/hymn/kalergi1.pdf.

Quite apart from Habsburg's political credentials, he was, as heir to the throne of the Austro-Hungarian Empire, the last in the line from Charlemagne, ruler of the first Holy Roman Empire, whose seal was the symbol of the AESP. The first Holy Roman Empire, founded in 800 AD, covered more or less the same territory as the European Coal and Steel Community (ECSC), the forerunner to the EEC created in 1951. Charlemagne's Holy Roman Empire was, of course the First Reich, Kaiser Wilhelm's the Second, and Hitler's the Third. Banned from Austria since 1919, Habsburg had to renounce his claim to the Imperial and Royal Throne (KuK) in 1961 to be allowed back into Austria. Nonetheless, as nominal heir to Austro-Hungary, Habsburg was Opus Dei's candidate for the European Catholic throne; some Spanish friends from CEDI (Sánchez Bella, Martín Artajo - see below) dreamed of placing the conservative Habsburg rather than the young and less pious Juan Carlos de Borbón on the Spanish throne, but Habsburg flatly refused and, to his credit, did not respond when Franco raised the subject of Spanish succession – see *Blanco y Negro*, *ABC* (Madrid), of 26/10/97 pgs 36-42 (for a weblink for *ABC*, see the Sources annex).

Pinay, Violet and many European members of the Cercle complex were staunch supporters of Opus Dei. This investigation cannot attempt to cover the vast field of the Catholic Right, Opus Dei and the Vatican in any detail, and the paucity of references here to those networks is certainly no indication of a lack of Cercle-Opus Dei connections. However, as early Catholic contacts by Pinay, Violet and Dubois with Franco's Spain are little documented, a summary is provided in this author's "The Cross and the Caudillo" in the CIOC-CIDCC-Sint Unum annex below. For a revealing account of Opus Dei's later contacts in Belgium and with the AESP, see Van Bosbeke.

(3) With his seat in Pöcking just south of Munich, Habsburg acted throughout post-war German history as the elder statesman of the Christian Social Union (CSU), the conservative party in the independence-minded Free State of Bavaria, an essential German Federal coalition partner of the CDU. Despite hosting the post-war negotiations to create the Federal Republic of Germany, Bavaria never signed its founding act, agreeing only to abide by it. Already a citizen of Austria, Hungary and Croatia, Habsburg controversially received dual [sic] German nationality in 1978, just in time for him to be elected to the European Parliament in June 1979 – at that time,

Austria, Hungary and Croatia were not EU members. For the next twenty years, Habsburg sat in the European Parliament, notably chairing or co-chairing the Delegation on Relations with Hungary from 1989 to 1999, by which time Hungary's accession to the EU was assured. He later played a significant part in creating the first breach in the Iron Curtain ... between Austria and Hungary - on the Paneuropean Picnic, see below and footnote 353. For a 1990 television appearance by Habsburg, see https://www.c-span.org/video/?11757-1/european-parliament (starts at 21 mins 51 secs; note Vernon Walters as US Ambassador to the UN, starting at 2 mins 52 secs). For an official EU interview in 2004 with Habsburg about the history of European integration, see https://www.cvce.eu/en/histoire-orale/unit-content/-/unit/a6cf7d49-2651-4aac-b05d-6bafa3d3ddc7/d0321dce-b205-42a4-a901-497c3df941c2.

(4) An account of CEDI and biographic details on Habsburg can be found in *IGfM*, pgs 59-60 and 75-76 - an outstanding piece of research on the international Right; for a fuller biography, see Young European Federalists. For Strauß's attendance at the 1963 CEDI Congress, see footnote 20.

CEDI was a little-known but significant forum for a meeting of minds on European integration between Franco's government, French Gaullists, German Christian Democrats and British Conservative members of the March and Monday Clubs; the early presence of Geoffrey Rippon (see footnote 290), leader of the UK delegation negotiating British membership of the EEC, is indicative of the contribution CEDI made to smoothing the path for eventual British membership in January 1973. CEDI's main aim of bringing Spain into the European fold was not achieved before Franco's death in 1975; having been rebuffed in the 1960s (see footnote 105), Spain formally applied for EEC membership in July 1977 and finally became a member on 1st January 1986. By then, CEDI had long been moribund; its last Annual Congress was held in 1976. CEDI's last significant international meeting was in 1986 when Vankerkhoven was elected as International President, and the German CEDI section closed down in 1991 – see Johannes Großmann's *Die Internationale der Konservativen* (detailed below), pgs 510-511.

Alongside Habsburg and Sánchez Bella, a key CEDI founding member was **Alberto Martín Artajo**, a monarchist and National President of Acción Católica in 1945 when Franco appointed him as first post-war Foreign Minister; he served twelve years until 1957. Martín Artajo chaired the Spanish CEDI section from its foundation until handing over to Sánchez Bella in 1970; that year, he attended the 4th WACL Conference in Tokyo along with Rippon, de Roover and other CEDI representatives – see footnote 108. For an insider account of early CEDI congresses, see Franco's official foreign policy review, the *Revista de Política Internacional* produced by the **Instituto de Estudios Políticos** (IEP), numbers 22 (*En torno al problema de la coexistencia (crónica de una reunión)*), 32 and 37 at http://www.cepc.gob.es/publicaciones/revistas/fondo-historico?IDR=13&IDN=ALL.

The IEP review provided early publication for Habsburg (number 27, July-September 1956) and for French nuclear expert General Pierre Gallois whom we will meet below (number 56, July-August 1961); both returned to its pages in the 1970s (numbers 150, March-April 1977, and 135, September-October 1974, respectively). The IEP journal also covered Crozier's work from the beginning of his career onwards, starting in 1956 with a review of his IRD article on Indochina, then reviewing his books *Neo-Colonialism* in 1964 and *The Struggle for the Third World* in 1965 before Crozier came to Spain to work on his biography of Franco. In Autumn 1975, the review gave full publication to a 1974 study on détente produced by an ISC group bringing together Crozier, Schapiro, Shils, Labedz, Pipes, Godson and Conquest; the study had previously appeared in the CCF journal *Survey* published by Labedz and in Albertini's Paris-based *Est et Ouest* – see the *Revista de Política Internacional* number 141, International Documentation section; the same issue also featured Sánchez Bella's speech on détente to the 1975 CEDI Congress.

On the IEP which worked closely with CEDI throughout the years, see footnotes 6 and 16, and the useful 2005 article by Nicolas Sesma Landrin of the Instituto Universitario Europeo in Florence at https://www.ehu.eus/ojs/index.php/HC/article/view/4275/3821. CEDI was extensively covered by the Spanish newspapers *La Vanguardia Española* and *ABC*; see the Sources annex for dates and weblinks. On early attendance at CEDI meetings by Strauß, see footnote 20. The list of participants at the 1974 CEDI Congress and the programme of the 1976 Congress were hosted until recently on the Fondazione Dragan website; as this is now offline, the two documents are given in the documentary annex below. Other CEDI documents not previously published on the web, such as scans of a 1972 commemorative booklet and the list of participants at the 1976 Congress, can also be found in the documentary annex.

The nucleus of the German presence in both CEDI and in the CIDCC (see the CIOC-CIDCC-Sint Unum annex) was the **Abendländische Akademie** [Occidental Academy], a 1950s group of prominent conservative politicians which included several of Adenauer's ministers. The origins of the Academy lay with two groups founded in 1951: Erste Legion, founded by (of those mentioned in this book) the Federal government press spokesman Dr. Heinrich Böx and the then party fraction leader for the Deutsche Partei Hans-Joachim von Merkatz, and a larger action group, the Abendländische Aktion, centred around the journal *Neues Abendland*. By 1952, the year that CEDI was founded, the two groups had merged to become the Abendländische Akademie.

The Academy's President was Freiherr **Friedrich August von der Heydte**, a member of the NSDAP and SA from 1933 on. A decorated paratroop commander during the war, he served as an Army Reserve officer from 1956 to 1966, first as a Colonel and, from 1962 on, as a Brigadier-General; he was a rare non-American member of the Institute for American Strategy's Advisory Committee on Foreign Affairs in 1960 (see https://isgp-studies.com/organisations/ASC/1960_08_12_NMIC_and_IAS_board.pdf). An expert in Public Law, he was also a Professor of Law, first at Mainz University from 1951 to 1954 and then at Würzburg University from 1954 until 1975; his successor at Würzburg was Dieter Blumenwitz, presented below. On top of his legal and military activities, Heydte sat on the Central Council of German Catholics from 1948 to 1958 and was one of the earliest CEDI members, attending the II CEDI Congress in 1953 and the III Congress in 1954; he was later a central figure in the 1962 '*Spiegel* Affair' in which Heydte sued the *Spiegel* for treason. For a lengthy retrospective piece on the '*Spiegel* Affair', see *Spiegel* 0/1997 pgs 56-81 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-8650338.html.

The Academy's Secretary was Ritter **Georg von Gaupp-Berghausen** who became a permanent fixture as CEDI Secretary. The Academy's members included the *Neues Abendland* publisher and Academy President from 1956 on, Georg Fürst von Waldburg zu Zeil, and several senior serving Cabinet members - Minister for Senate Affairs Hans-Joachim von Merkatz; Foreign Minister Heinrich von Brentano; Exiles Minister from 1953 to 1960 Theodor Oberländer; Vice-President of the Bundestag from 1953 to 1965 and 1967 to 1976 Richard Jaeger; and lastly, CDU MP Hermann Pünder, Chairman of the Parliamentary Committee for the Marshall Plan from 1949 to 1953 before becoming a Member of the European Parliament until 1956 and the CoE thereafter. Habsburg was a regular participant at Academy conferences.

On the Abendländische Akademie, see Hirsch, pgs 205-206 and 249-250; Carlos Sanz Díaz, *España y la República Federal de Alemania (1949−1966)* Univ.-Diss., Madrid 2005, pgs 433−457 at http://webs.ucm.es/BUCM/tesis//ghi/ucm-t28931.pdf; the Konrad-Adenauer-Stiftung's *Historisch-Politische Mitteilungen* Heft 8/2001 at https://www.kas.de/c/document_library/get_file?uuid=1f211e2c-b71e-bd28-8e93-85db8535cd3b&groupId=252038; *Spiegel* 33/1955 pgs 12-14 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-31970943.html, 51/1955 pg 58 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-31971778.html, 2/1956 pg 42 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-31587182.html, 7/1956 pgs 18-19 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-31587424.html, 14/1956 pg 50 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-43061838.html, 45/1956 pg 74 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-43064588.html, 47/1962 pgs 55-66 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-45124776.html, 10/1965 pgs 50-52 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-46169649.html, 46/1968 pgs 57-59 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-45878698.html.

The most extensive research on the Abendländische Akademie, CEDI and the CIDCC has been produced by Junior Professor Dr. Johannes Großmann of Tübingen University - see http://www.nng.uni-saarland.de/forschung/promotionen/promotionsprojekt_grossmann.htm; https://www.perspectivia.net/servlets/MCRFileNodeServlet/ploneimport_derivate_00000547/grossmann_rand.doc.pdf; https://link.springer.com/chapter/10.1007%2F978-3-531-92512-7_12; https://uni-tuebingen.de/fakultaeten/philosophische-fakultaet/fachbereiche/geschichtswissenschaft/seminareinstitute/zeitgeschichte/personen/prof-johannes-grossmann/publikationen.html; his *Vom "christlichen Kominform" zur "geistigen Nato". Das Internationale Comité zur Verteidigung der Christlichen Kultur als transnationale antikommunistische Propagandaagentur* in *Jahrbuch für Historische Kommunismusforschung* 2011, pgs 139–154; his 2014 English-language articles *The Comité international de défense de la civilisation chrétienne and the Transnationalization of Anti-Communist Propaganda in Western Europe after the Second World War* and *Winning the Cold War: Anti-Communism, Informal Diplomacy, and the Transnational Career of Jean Violet*, both of which are referenced in the Sources annex.

In the latter article on Violet, which uses the private papers of Violet, Alois Mertes, Strauß and Amery, Großmann acknowledges the "exhaustive compilation of publicly available information [sic] on the Cercle made by Teacher (2011)" and notes that "Teacher's accurate documentation deserves respect", but contends that this author's "interpretations are, however, unbalanced, often unsound and inspired by conspiratorial views". Readers may judge the validity of his claim for themselves in the light of the wealth of factual information given in this book, the accuracy of which has not been – and cannot be - challenged. After considering the numerous primary and secondary sources detailing the activities of Violet, Crozier, Huyn and others within the Cercle and their later "Private Sector Operational Intelligence agency", the 6I, it is difficult to find an adequate description for such covert transnational collaboration other than that of conspiracy.

Großmann's invaluable research on CEDI and the CIDCC has since been consolidated in a major German-language book *Die Internationale der Konservativen: Transnationale Elitenzirkel und private Außenpolitik in Westeuropa seit 1945* [The Conservative Internationale: Transnational Elite Groups and Private Foreign Policy in

Western Europe since 1945] – see https://www.degruyter.com/view/product/219741; https://www.faz.net/aktuell/politik/politische-buecher/johannes-grossmann-heimliche-verteidiger-des-abendlandes-13285673-p2.html. Großmann's book, which is not fully integrated here, particularly focuses on the earlier days of the Cercle in the 1950s and 1960s when it was a Eurocentric gathering of Franco-German Conservative-Catholic statesmen; on this period, it is a comprehensive and authoritative academic source which adds much to the fragmentary information available about the Cercle's genesis and development.

The same cannot unfortunately be said about its account of the later and more controversial period of the Cercle from the 1970s to the 1990s, to which Großmann devotes only one sixth of his book. In the late 1960s and early 1970s, following the introduction of characters like Rockefeller, Kissinger and Crozier, the Cercle underwent a profound transformation. With the backdrop of enormous social upheaval centring on anti-war protest and the internal threat posed by the New Left in both America and Europe, this later incarnation of the Cercle expanded and hardened to become a transatlantic alliance of right-wing political and intelligence operatives with intimate links to the West's conservative leaders of the mid- to late 1970s - Thatcher, Reagan, Strauß and VdB. During this period, the Cercle also served as a major and influential relay for the covert pro-apartheid propaganda campaign conducted by the South African government, an aspect little covered by Großmann.

In general, Großmann's account downplays the intelligence dimension to the later Cercle, understating the key involvement from the 1970s on of dissident veterans of the Anglo-American intelligence community – the 'Rogue Agents' – notably the ex-MI6/CIA operatives Crozier, Elliott, Shackley and Jameson, all prominent figures in, indeed co-organisers of, the Cercle of the 1970s and 1980s. Other Cercle members with well-documented intelligence links are regrettably misrepresented, examples being the cursory descriptions given of Benoît de Bonvoisin as merely a "Belgian entrepreneur" (rather than as the coordinator of VdB's counter-subversion unit PIO and a notorious patron of European fascism), Sir Stephen Hastings as simply a "Conservative MP" (rather than as the ex-MI6 initiator of Thatcher's counter-subversion outfit Shield), and General Stilwell as a "former Commander of US [and UN] Forces in Korea" (rather than as the ex-CIA Pentagon official in charge of a major overhaul of US special forces at the time that he joined the Cercle and the 6I Politburo). The 6I itself, the "Private Sector Operational Intelligence agency" founded by the core Cercle trio of Crozier, Huyn and Violet, is again misnamed the 61 and mentioned only in passing.

This reduced picture of the later Cercle is compounded by the omission in Großmann's book of the network of groups - vital partners in the Cercle's campaigns - that were run either directly by core Cercle members such as Huyn and Crozier or by significant close allies and relays of theirs such as Grau and Löwenthal in Germany or Sir Frederic Bennett and Chalfont in the UK. Contrary to Großmann's dismissive assertion that these are "a cumulative expansion of the subject of investigation to include all of those organisations, groups and activities which – even without evidence of their concrete material connections – can be linked in one way or another by their personnel", this author would contend that the longstanding personal involvement of core Cercle members in key groups like the Belgian AESP and MAUE, the German SWG and Frankfurt Study Group, the Swiss ISP and the British NAFF, FARI and IEDSS has in fact been, to quote Großmann, "meticulously evidenced" in this book from multiple primary documentary sources, and that it is the exclusion of this wider network of groups rather than its inclusion which is unbalanced and unsound. As Großmann's research has now confirmed the direct Cercle membership of several key individuals previously identified in this book as associates of the "Cercle complex" – Hastings, Chalfont, Löwenthal, de Bonvoisin and Perle, to name but a few - their actions and connections in the fractious political landscape of the 1970s and 1980s are clearly relevant and worthy of further investigation. A comprehensive academic history of the later Cercle which gives a full picture of its activities and its outreach during the two critical decades from 1969 to 1989 has therefore yet to be written. Despite these shortcomings, Großmann's book is nonetheless an essential addition to the body of early Cercle research which won the 2013 Bruno-Heck Science Prize awarded by the CDU party foundation, the Konrad-Adenauer-Stiftung - see https://www.kas.de/veranstaltungsberichte/detail/-/content/ein-abend-der-bewegenden-momente1.

(5) The Instituto de Cultura Hispánica, co-run/run by Sánchez Bella from 1947 to 1956, was the main body used by Franco for outreach to the Latin American countries whose votes helped to end Spain's international isolation in a series of diplomatic moves: withdrawal of the UN General Assembly's condemnation of Spain and accession to the FAO in November 1950, the return of ambassadors to Madrid in March 1951, membership of UNESCO in November 1952, the Vatican Concordat in August 1953, the US-Spain Pact of Madrid in September 1953 and finally Spain's entry into the UN in December 1955 - see Gallo; 1947 CIG report at https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP82-00457R000800160001-9.pdf; *ABC* (Madrid) of 22/11/47 pg 8 and 2/12/48 pg 10. The same tactic of courting Latin American countries for their General Assembly votes was extensively pursued in the late 1950s by the UN-based SDECE-Vatican team of Violet and Dubois to forestall international condemnation of France's policies towards its North African colonies. Sánchez Bella died in 1999 – see *La Vanguardia Española* of 27/4/99 pg 27; *ABC* (Madrid) of 26/4/99 pg 24; https://elpais.com/diario/1999/04/27/agenda/925164001_850215.html. His predecessor as Minister for Information and Tourism from 1962 to 1969, **Manuel Fraga Iribarne**, was also an early CEDI member and an important Cercle and AESP contact – see footnote 105 and the CIOC-CIDCC-Sint Unum annex. Fraga had been appointed Deputy Director of the Instituto de Estudios Políticos in 1956 and was its Director from 1958 to 1962 before serving as Minister until opponents of Opus Dei were purged from Franco's government in October 1969; from 1975 on, he was a central figure in post-Franco Spain.

(6) Both Ismael and Florencio were amongst the earliest members of Opus Dei, reportedly joining in 1940 alongside Alberto Ullastres Calvo – see http://www.opus-info.org/index.php?title=Lista_de_los_primeros_miembros_del_Opus_Dei. Both brothers rose to the highest ranks of Opus Dei and frequently acted as public representatives of the movement's founder, José María Escrivá de Balaguer.

Ismael Sánchez Bella joined Opus Dei's study centre, the Estudio General de Navarra, immediately after its creation in 1952 by Escrivá de Balaguer, serving as its first Director of the Faculty of Law until 1954 and Rector until 1960 when the centre was officially recognised as the University of Navarra; he served as Vice-Rector of the University until at least 1985 and Professor until at least 1989 - see Walsh, pg 66; the year 1954 at https://www.unav.edu/web/conoce-la-universidad/historia; *ABC* (Madrid) of 19/10/52 pgs 43-44; *ABC* (Sevilla) of 18/10/85 pg 34 and 21/10/89 pg 54; *La Vanguardia Española* of 15/1/60 pg 6 and 26/10/60 pg 4.

Florencio Sánchez Bella was ordained in 1951 and served for twenty-four years as the head of Opus Dei's main Spanish branch (as Consiliar for Spain, later called Regional Vicar) from 1960 until 1984 when he went to Rome to serve in the personal Prelature created by Pope John Paul II in 1982; he then worked in Mexico from 1991 on and died in 2008. From 1960 on, he was also Vice Grand Chancellor of the University of Navarra. See https://www.unav.es/noticias/opinion/op021008.html; *ABC* (Madrid) of 5/10/08 pg 59; *La Vanguardia Española* of 12/10/54 pg 19, 4/12/60 pg 52 and 16/8/84 pg 14; *ABC* (Madrid) of 4/2/84 pg 6. Escrivá de Balaguer was canonised by Pope John Paul II in 2002.

(7) Braden was replaced as head of the IOD by Cord Meyer in 1954, when Meyer took over responsibility for the CIA's clandestine funding of the EM and EYC until 1962. On Meyer, see footnote 203.

(8) On the early relationship between the two complexes, see Young European Federalists and Retinger, pgs 209-216; on CIA funding of the EM and EYC, see *The European Movement 1945-1953*, F. X. Rebattet (son of the EM Secretary-General Georges-Louis Rebattet), unpublished thesis, Oxford University, 1962; Eringer, pgs 19-21; *The CIA backs the Common Market*, Steve Weissman, Phil Kelly and Mark Hosenball, and *How CIA money took the teeth out of British Socialism*, Richard Fletcher, both published in *Dirty Work: The CIA in Western Europe*, various authors. Lord Duncan Sandys, son-in-law to Winston Churchill, sat in the Parliamentary Assembly of the CoE in 1950-52 and then from 1965 continously until 1983; he died in 1987. All data on mandates in the Parliamentary Assembly of the Council of Europe (PACE) are taken from http://www.assembly.coe.int/nw/xml/AssemblyList/MP-Search-EN.asp. A complete archive of the *Bulletin Européen* was hosted until recently on the website of the Fondazione Dragan, founded by Iosif Constantin Dragan, who was a participant at CEDI Congresses from 1970 on and an AESP contact from at least 1976 on - see the 1976 AESP dinner attendance list in the documentary annex to this full sixth edition of *Rogue Agents*.

(9) Van Doorslaer and Verhoeyen, pgs 149-150. The official PEU site at https://web.archive.org/web/20100328001646/http://www.paneuropa.org/ (History tab) describes Coudenhove Kalergi's power struggle with Habsburg and the latter's victory after Coudenhove Kalergi's death in the following terms: "Coudenhove envisaged the inter-war period of Europe as having an alternative "integration or collapse." Even in 1923, he vehemently warned against the "future war" and of the danger that Europe, after the war, would be "divided" by an artificial border "into a Soviet colony and an American protectorate." ... At the 8th Pan-Europa Congress in Bad Ragaz [in 1957], Otto von Habsburg was elected to the Central Council of the Pan-Europa Union and soon afterwards, as the Vice-President of Coudenhove-Kalergi, proposed himself as the successor in the Office of President. ... On 27 July 1972, Coudenhove-Kalergi died in Vorarlberg. On a proposal by the French President, George Pompidou in 1973, Otto von Habsburg was elected as the International President of the Pan-Europa Union and new aims were set for the movement: the idea of liberating Central and Eastern Europe from communist oppression - as a precondition of genuine European integration in the sense of a united Europe - and the defence of Christian values/the spirit of Christian teaching in relation to how mankind is meant to be in an increasingly materialistic age. Concluded on 11-12 May 1973, the Strasbourg Declaration of Basic Principles formulated the aims of the Pan-Europa Union which held sway for almost two decades until the victory of freedom in Central Europe."

10) A major source, not fully integrated here, is the exhaustive - and exhausting - book by Saunders, which refers to Forum World Features only in passing and makes no mention at all of Crozier.

(11) Since March 1952.

(12) On the Bilderberg Group, see Retinger; Eringer; González-Mata; Retinger's internal history at https://web.archive.org/web/20111125023119/http://mirror.wikileaks.info/leak/bilderberg-history-1956.pdf; https://publicintelligence.net/category/documents/bilderberg/bilderberg-participant-lists/. Having worked in Franco's intelligence service (and for the CIA) from the end of the Second World War until resigning disillusioned in 1972, González-Mata was particularly well informed on the Bilderberg Group, and his book was one of the first to reveal its existence and, partially, its membership. On González-Mata, see https://es.wikipedia.org/wiki/Luis_M._Gonz%C3%A1lez-Mata. The Hotel De Bilderberg, flagship of the Bilderberg Groep Hotels and Restaurants, is itself also still running – see https://www.bilderberg.nl/en/oosterbeek/hotel-de-bilderberg/.

(13) Pinay's political career is dealt with in depth in Rimbaud; the book makes no mention of the Cercle Pinay and includes only a passing reference to Maître Violet in connection with the sniffer planes scandal, detailed below. After acting as Secretary of State for Economic Affairs under the Queuille I government from September 1948 to October 1949 and then as Minister for Public Works, Transport and Tourism under the Pleven I, Queuille III, Pleven II and Faure I governments until February 1952, Pinay served as Prime Minister, Finance Minister and Economics Minister from March to December 1952, launching the Pinay loan in May 1952 that stabilised French finances. Pinay was out of political power under the Mayer, Laniel I, Laniel II and Mendès France governments from January 1953 to February 1955, a period spanning the French military defeat in Indochina in May 1954 and the beginning of the Algerian insurrection in November 1954. Pinay then served as Foreign Minister under the Faure II government from February 1955 to January 1956, negotiating Moroccan independence under the La Celle-Saint Cloud agreements as well as Tunisian autonomy. The last parliamentary elections under the Fourth Republic were held in January 1956 which led to the leftwing government of Guy Mollet during which Tunisia and Morocco gained their independence. However, in March 1956 France discovered massive oil reserves in Algeria which promised to make France independent of the Gulf states for its energy, a reason for treating French Algeria differently than its former (and much smaller) colonies in Morocco and Tunisia – see *Power And Glory*, R. T. Howard, Biteback Publishing, London 2016, pgs 102-103.

After the May 1958 military rebellion in Algeria and appointment of de Gaulle as Prime Minister followed by the referendum approving the Constitution of the Fifth Republic in September 1958, the first round of parliamentary elections was held on 23rd November 1958. CNIP leader Pinay was elected in the newly-organised 3rd constituency of Saint-Etienne, the largest town in the Loire *département;* the 3rd constituency included the Loire's third-largest town, Saint-Chamond, of which Pinay was the longstanding Mayor. In December 1958, de Gaulle was elected President of the Fifth Republic by indirect suffrage and appointed Pinay as his Finance Minister, launching the Pinay-Rueff stabilisation plan which involved a 17.5% devaluation and the launch of the New Franc in January 1960. However, the same month saw Pinay's resignation from de Gaulle's cabinet after profound disagreement with de Gaulle's policy towards Algeria – having been elected to ensure the continuance of French Algeria, de Gaulle had accepted the principle of "Algerian self-determination" in September 1959 and then of the "Algerian Republic" in November 1960. A referendum held in France and in Algeria in January 1961 resulted in a 75% vote in favour of self-determination, and the Evian Agreements of March 1962 ended the Algerian War, with Algeria declaring independence in July 1962.

Pinay withdrew from national politics following his resignation in 1960 and did not stand in the November 1962 parliamentary elections. Following the adoption in October 1962 of universal direct suffrage for French presidential elections, Pinay was increasingly considered as a rallying point for those on the Right who saw de Gaulle's acceptance of Algerian independence as treachery. Pinay did not however stand in the 1965 presidential elections against de Gaulle because of Gaullist threats to publish police logbooks compromising Pinay in a sex scandal, information which, whilst well-known at the time, was only published in 2006 in the book *Sexus Politicus* – see https://books.google.fr/books?hl=fr&id=06MnsxZQh60C&q=Pinay#v=snippet&q=Pinay&f=false. Pinay died in December 1994 shortly before his 103rd birthday.

(14) Faligot and Krop, pg 194; Großmann, *Winning the Cold War*, pg 89. Besides working for the SDECE and with Pinay in the Cercle and in Catholic networks, Violet was active in supporting Pinay through his party, the CNIP. In the legislative elections of June 1951, Jean-Eugène Violet stood as a CNIP candidate in Pinay's Loire *département* – see http://www.parlements.org/publications/congres_CIHAE_2006_Jean-Michel_Steiner.pdf, pgs 385-386. It is not currently known whether Violet again stood for the CNIP in the 1956 parliamentary elections. However, in the crucial parliamentary elections of 23rd November 1958, Violet, by then the regional President of the CNIP in the Loire, stood in the 2nd Saint-Etienne constituency (Pinay stood in the 3rd) under the ringing slogan "To avoid the adventure which leads to Communism, to re-establish a strong and respected France, to save French Algeria, vote for Jean-Eugène Violet" – see their election manifestos at https://archive.org/details/EL010L195811042031PFPdfmasterocr and https://archive.org/details/EL010L195811042021PFPdfmasterocr. Placed second in his constituency with 29%, Violet could have gone on to the second round, but chose to cede to the leading conservative candidate Lucien Neuwirth (UNR, 35.8%), giving Neuwirth an easy contest against the Communist candidate. Despite Pinay's withdrawal from national politics after his resignation in 1960, Violet did stand as a CNIP candidate in the Loire in the first round of the November 1962 parliamentary elections - see https://archive.org/details/EL028L196211042021PFPdfmasterocr.

(15) Crozier, pg 191.

(16) On Violet's early relationship with Antoine Pinay, Dubois and the SDECE, see Faligot and Krop, pgs 193-200; Faligot and Guisnel, pgs 33-34, 514-518 and 603-607; Péan, pgs 33-54 - the major book on the sniffer plane scandal; Mungo - a key AESP/MAUE insider source; *Lobster* 18, pgs 24-25; Crozier, pgs 97 and 191-192. On early contacts between Franco's government and international Catholic networks including Violet, Dubois and Pinay, see this author's "The Cross and the Caudillo" in the CIOC-CIDCC-Sint Unum annex below.

(17) Crozier, pg 192. Crozier gives a similar account in his last book *Political Victory: the Elusive Prize of Military Wars* (2005, pgs 29-30): "Not only did Adenauer preside over post-war Germany's advent to democracy, he also cooperated with the French leader General de Gaulle's covert action plan to foster a deep-seated partnership with France's enemy of three wars, which became the real and lasting heart of the European idea. On the French side, de Gaulle's choice to guide this major initiative was the popular politician Antoine Pinay, who was France's economics minister in 1949, prime minister and finance minister for most of 1952 and foreign minister in 1955-56; and de Gaulle's finance minister in 1958. As de Gaulle himself put it, he had chosen Pinay to restore economic and financial stability in France because "this eminent personage, well known for his common sense, esteemed for his character, popular for his devotion to the public interest," would

strengthen confidence and help avert the threatening catastrophe. It was a sound choice. On Pinay's advice, de Gaulle launched a national loan which was spectacularly successful. This was the public Pinay. But there was also a secret Pinay, the man chosen by de Gaulle to visit chancellor Adenauer and engineer the firm but discreet relationship that would form the heart of the European movement and forever remove the risk of any further Franco-German wars. Specifically, Pinay's secret mission was to brief the German chancellor on the French leader's policies and to propose the creation of a secret Franco-German friendship organization, which became known as Le Cercle Pinay. For years, prominent French and German leaders in various walks of life met in secret twice a year. The initiative was in the hands of a Paris lawyer, Jean Violet, who invited me to join the Cercle in 1970. Already, in 1958, I had been invited to join a parallel organization, similarly motivated. Both were controlled by the French foreign secret service, known as the SDECE (Service de Documentation extérieure et de Contre-espionnage, the French equivalent of Britain's MI-6). The other SDECE organization, run from a modest private office in Paris by Antoine Bonnemaison through an organization calling itself the Centre de Recherche du Bien Politique ("Research Centre for the Political Good") complemented the Cercle. It, too, ran twice-yearly meetings called Colloques, initially limited to French and Germans but later broadened to include other Western countries. The point to note is that French officialdom, before and after the return of de Gaulle to power in 1958, devoted a good deal of time and money to developing and maintaining close relations with their German neighbours. The era of Franco-German military conflicts had been brought to an amicable close: a perfect example of political victory." See https://books.google.co.uk/books?hl=fr&id=qZIOs84I7dEC&q=Pinay#v=snippet&q=Pinay&f=false.

The significance of these Franco-German encounters can be judged from a 1958 article in the *International Herald Tribune* about the first face-to-face meeting of the two leaders: "The warmest expression of French-German friendship and cooperation since the end of World War II was contained in a joint communique issued last night [Sept. 14] by French Premier Charles de Gaulle and West German Chancellor Konrad Adenauer following a meeting in Colombey-les-Deux-Eglises. 'We are convinced', the communique said, 'that close cooperation between the German Federal Republic and the French Republic is the foundation of all constructive action in Europe. It contributes to the reinforcement of the Atlantic Alliance. It is indispensable to the world'. 'We feel', the communique further declared, 'that the hostility of the past is forever at an end and that Frenchmen and Germans are called upon to live in accord and to work together.' Mr. Adenauer spent the night in the general's home" - *International Herald Tribune*, 15/9/58, republished in the *IHT* on 15/9/08. This visit was the first step in a process of Franco-German reconciliation that culminated in the signature of the Elysée Treaty on 22nd January 1963; important landmarks were a State visit by Adenauer to Reims (where the German Army had surrendered on 7th May 1945) to attend a solemn mass at the Cathedral alongside de Gaulle on 8th July 1962, the start the same day of the first joint Franco-German military exercise in Mourmelon-le-Grand, and a State visit by de Gaulle to Germany on 4th - 9th September 1962. The treaty itself can be downloaded at http://www.assemblee-nationale.fr/12/dossiers/traite-franco-allemand.pdf.

(18) *Mémoires*, Critérion, Paris 1991, pgs 285-286. Strauß also notes (pg 344) that his two main channels to Pinay were "extremely pro-German, one a Dominican priest and the other a lawyer". Strauß and Pinay notably cooperated in 1954 to scupper the creation of the European Defence Community (EDC) by highlighting the "excessive" restrictions on Germany demanded by France.

(19) *Le Figaro*, 2/4/63, quoted by González-Mata, pg 38. At the September 1955 Bilderberg conference in Bavaria, Strauß was accompanied by General Gehlen, head of the future BND - see González-Mata, pg 27. The Gehlen Org - formally renamed the BND in 1956 – participated in many early meetings on European unification. One of the earliest CEDI meetings, the IV CEDI Congress held in June 1955 in Madrid, was attended by Archduke Otto von Habsburg and a certain "Señor Professor **Wolfgang Langkau**" – see *ABC* (Madrid) of 3/6/55 pg 30; *La Vanguardia Española* of 3/6/55 pg 4; footnote 344. From 1950 on, former Waffen-SS Major Langkau was Gehlen's adjutant within the Gehlen Org, acting as his closest advisor and his principal contact to the leading West German political parties as well as to Mossad. Langkau served as the head of the Gehlen Org's crucial West Berlin station from 1953 until the official foundation of the BND in 1956 when he was appointed Head of Acquisition, i.e. intelligence-gathering. His British counterpart, in MI6-speak the Director of Requirements, from 1953 until 1961 was G. K. Young.

Langkau was also appointed Chief of the BND Strategic Service, which established an extensive international network of agents under Langkau's personal control, giving rise to great internal controversy as a "BND within the BND". The Strategic Service was shut down in 1968 by Gehlen's successor Gerd Wessel, provoking Brigadier-General Langkau's resignation from the BND and his determination to continue operations as a private intelligence service in the form of the CDU/CSU network run from 1970 on by Hans Christoph von Stauffenberg, blown by Hans Langemann in 1982 and finally comprehensively documented in 2012 by Waske. Langemann, a former Eastern Front reconnaissance officer, was one of Langkau's most senior subordinates in the Strategic Service, serving under him from 1957 until 1968 and then leaving the BND in 1970, two years after Langkau's departure, to become head of security for the 1972 Munich Olympics and later head of State Protection in the Bavarian Interior Ministry.

On Langkau's part in the liaison between the BND and Mossad from the 1950s on, see https://www.berliner-zeitung.de/in-einer-villa-in-pullach-bei-muenchen--in-der-einst-hitlers-parteikanzleichef-martin-bormann-residierte--besiegelten-an-einem-wintertag-anfang-der-60er-jahre-ein-frueherer-nazi-geheimdienstchef-und-ein-ueberlebender-des-holocaust-die-geheime-zusammenarbeit-des-deutschen-bundesnachrichtendienstes-mit-dem-israelischen-mossad--fuer-die-sicherheit-israels-kooperieren-wir-sogar-mit-dem-teufel-16103610.

(20) *Frankfurter Rundschau*, 13/9/63, reproduced in *IGfM*, pg 75; *La Vanguardia Española* of 14/5/63 pg 5, 9/6/63 pg 7 and 22/8/64 pg 4; *ABC* (Madrid) of 5/6/63 pgs 51-52; *Spiegel* 36/1963 pgs 44-51 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-46171717.html, which also reveals that Strauß had secretly met Franco in 1955.

(21) *Spiegel* 39/1964 pgs 37-38 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-46175456.html and 10/1980 pgs 20-28 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14315032.html; *Spiegel-Buch*, pg 110, an invaluable source on Strauß. In 1965, Grau attempted to defend Strauß against accusations of dubious activities via a publication, *Apropos Strauß. Eine Dokumentation* (foreword by Konrad Adenauer) - see *Zeit* 35/1965 at https://www.zeit.de/1965/35/fuer-strauss.

(22) González-Mata, pg 26.

(23) Crozier, pg 33.

(24) Crozier, pg 32.

(25) Crozier, pgs 29-31; also see Interdoc's own internal history at https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/QKACTIVE%20%20%20VOL.%209%20%20%20(CS%20FILE%20JAN.%201965-DEC.%201967)_0014.pdf. For Crozier's 2012 obituaries, see footnote 539.

(26) On the subject of the *Economist Foreign Report*, the *Economist* of 15/06/13 wrote: "The *Economist* launched the eight-page weekly newsletter, printed on distinctive blue paper and with a cultivated cachet of confidentiality, as a home for stories and titbits that were too speculative for the newspaper to publish. Spooks and nukes were favourite subjects, as were drugs and thugs" – see https://www.economist.com/international/2013/06/15/bluesooth. Many MI6 officers and agents worked on the staff of the *Economist* at one time or another, amongst them the famous double agent Kim Philby (who had been recommended to the journal by top MI6 officers Sir John Sinclair and G. K. Young). Other *Economist* journalists included Tom Little and Patrick Honey, two IRD writers who joined Crozier in the ISC, and last and most certainly not least, Robert Moss who was an editorial writer and special correspondent for the *Economist* from 1970 to 1980, editing the *Economist Foreign Report* from 1974 to 1980. "In 1986, Moss felt the need to get away from the commercial fast track and moved to a farm in upstate New York ... where he developed the practice he calls Active Dreaming" – see https://mossdreams.com/.

(27) Crozier, pg 32; for an authoritative account of these early BND front groups, see Scott-Smith (2012). As part of the post-war decentralisation of German government offices, the BND had been located in Pullach near Munich in the heart of Strauß's fief, Bavaria. This geographic consideration and shared political convictions led to a longstanding close relationship between Strauß's CSU and the BND under Gehlen and Wessel right up until the FDP's "Kinkel coup" of 1980, when Wessel was replaced by Genscher's man, Klaus Kinkel, a future German Foreign Minister, putting an end to the "Gehlen dynasty" and the BND's longstanding affiliation with the Right which had earned it the nickname of "Bavarian Intelligence Service". The relationship between Strauß and Gehlen did not however always run smoothly - see Höhne and Zolling, pgs 213 et seq.

There were two General Foertschs who were active in the remilitarisation of Germany: General Hermann Foertsch who worked closely with Gehlen and the BND and played a part in setting up Interdoc (see Scott-Smith in *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, pg 135) and his younger brother, General Friedrich Foertsch who, after returning from Soviet captivity in 1955 and rejoining the Army in 1956, rose to become Deputy Head of the Planning Staff at NATO headquarters in Paris in 1959. In April 1961, Defence Minister Strauß appointed General Friedrich Foertsch as Inspector-General of the German Army; the pair soon aroused controversy as strong proponents of the nuclear rearmament of West Germany - see *Zeit* 51/1978 at https://www.zeit.de/1978/51/general-ohne-truppen/komplettansicht; *Spiegel* 17/1961 pgs 25-26 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-43160848.html. Gehlen however reported that the new Kennedy Administration would never permit German possession of nuclear weapons, leading to a direct confrontation with Strauß. A cover story on General Friedrich Foertsch and the policy of a pre-emptive nuclear strike then triggered the *Spiegel* Affair in which Heydte sued the *Spiegel* for treason – see *Spiegel* 41/1962 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-25673831.html and https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-25673830.html. For an interesting discussion of Strauß's views on German nuclear armament and Franco-German military cooperation, see Beatrice Heuser, *The European Dream of Franz Josef Strauß*, in *Zeitschrift für Geschichte der*

Europäischen Integration, 1998 Vol. 4 No. 1 at https://www.zgei.nomos.de/fileadmin/zgei/doc/Zgei_98_01.pdf.

(28) Dorril and Ramsay, 1990, pg 6. Grote worked closely with Vlasov for FHO Army Propaganda East – see *Spiegel* 52/1951 pgs 30-32 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-20300796.html. After the war, the NTS was the parent body for the IGfM - see *IGfM*.

(29) Höhne and Zolling, pgs 33-36. Also see the CIA's file on Gehlen at https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB138/CIA%20Information%20Act%20-%20Reinhard%20Gehlen.pdf.

(30) "As in neighbouring Belgium, the Dutch stay-behind army was also made up of two branches. One branch was called Operations, or O for short. It was directed by Louis Einthoven, a cold warrior who died in 1973 [incorrect; aged 83, Einthoven died in 1979] and throughout his life had warned of the dangers of communism. Einthoven, who ran the O branch for 16 years in secrecy, was also the first director of the Dutch post-war domestic security service Binnenlandse Veiligheidsdienst (BVD). "The double function of Einthoven as chief [of] BVD and of O was of course very valuable to us," a former unnamed member of O recalled, for this helped to firmly integrate the secret army into the Dutch intelligence community. The second branch of the Dutch stay-behind was Intelligence, or I. It had been set up after World War Two by J.M. Somer, but was commanded by J.J.L. Baron van Lynden after Somer was dispatched to the Dutch colony of Indonesia in 1948 to fight the independence movement there. ... The O unit, under Einthoven, carried out sabotage and guerrilla operations, and was charged with strengthening the local resistance and creating a new resistance movement. O was also in charge of sensitizing people to the danger of communism during times of peace. Moreover, O was trained in covert action operations, including the use of guns and explosives, and possessed independent secret arms caches." - Ganser, pgs 85-86. Those interested in Gladio should see Ganser's excellent book *NATO's Secret Armies – Operation Gladio and Terrorism in Western Europe* (Frank Cass, London 2005). On Einthoven and the Dutch Gladio units O/I, see Jan. H. Kompagnie, 'Einthoven, Louis (1896-1979)', in *Biografisch Woordenboek van Nederland* 3 (Den Haag 1989), online at http://resources.huygens.knaw.nl/bwn1880-2000/lemmata/bwn3/einthoven, and the works by Professor Giles Scott-Smith referenced in footnote 33. It is interesting to note that the Intelligence Director of the Dutch Gladio network, J.J.L. Baron van Lynden, had been imprisoned during the war in Colditz Castle, as had Neave, Stirling and Elwell – see Paul Koedijk, *Gladio in Nederland* in *Vrij Nederland*, 25/01/92.

(31) Crozier, pg 32.

(32) See Marks, chapter 9; Thomas.

(33) Barbizon quote: Laurent, pg 303, quoting Zangrandi. Both Zangrandi and Laurent were groundbreaking sources of their day; other fragmentary early sources on Interdoc were *Libération*, 9/10/75; Verhoeyen and Uytterhaegen; Dorril and Ramsay, 1990, pgs 6-8. The first real insight into the genesis of Interdoc was given by the publication of Crozier's memoirs in 1993 - see pgs 29-33 and 45-49. However, it was not until the new millenium that considerable detail of Interdoc's operations emerged, thanks to the invaluable research conducted by Dutch journalist Paul Koedijk and Professor Giles Scott-Smith of Leiden University and of the Roosevelt Study Center and Academy in Middelburg, research which is only summarised here - see *Confronting Peaceful Coexistence: Psychological Warfare and the Role of Interdoc*

1963-1972, Giles Scott-Smith, *Cold War History*, Vol. 7 No. 1, February 2007 (available at https://leidenuniv.academia.edu/GilesScottSmith/Papers); *Interdoc: Dutch-German cooperation in psychological warfare, 1963-1972*, Giles Scott-Smith, in *Battleground Western Europe: intelligence operations in Germany and the Netherlands in the twentieth century*, Ben de Jong, Beatrice de Graaf, Wies Platje (eds), Het Spinhuis (www.hetspinhuis.nl), 2007; *Psychological Warfare for the West: Interdoc, the Western European Intelligence Services, and the International Student Movements of the 1960s*, Giles Scott-Smith, in *The Establishment Responds: Power and Protest during and after the Cold War*, Kathrin Fahlenbrach, Martin Klimke, Joachim Scharloth (eds), Palgrave Macmillan, London 2011, a chapter which is online at https://leidenuniv.academia.edu/GilesScottSmith/Papers. See the Sources annex for details of Professor Scott-Smith's 2012 book and 2014 contribution to *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, essential reading for understanding the links between European groups detailed in this investigation. A useful list of Interdoc conferences and publications is given at https://www.worldcat.org/search?q=%22 International+Documentation+and+Information+Centre%22&qt=results_page; Scott-Smith (2012) gives a full list of Interdoc conferences and publications.

(34) In August 1962, Hornix had been the founding director of the Stichting Volk en Verdediging, a pro-military charity under the patronage of Prince Bernhard – see *Algemeen Handelsblad* of 31/8/62 pg 3 at https://resolver.kb.nl/resolve?urn= KBNRC01:000036163:mpeg21:pdf. On Interdoc's registration, see footnote 25.

(35) Dorril and Ramsay (1990), pg 6.

(36) See Bloch and Fitzgerald.

(37) It is interesting to note that the March 1955 Bilderberg conference was held in Barbizon, the same venue as the seminal Interdoc group in 1961. Prince Bernhard's role is indicative of the assistance given by the Bilderberg Group, only recently created itself, to the fledging Interdoc organisation – see Scott-Smith's article in *Cold War History* referenced in footnote 33.

(38) I have not been able to track down Einthoven's memoirs (*Tegen de stroom in: levende vissen zwemmen tegen de stroom in, alleen de dooie drijven mee*, Apeldoorn, 1974, ISBN 90-6086-596-0) – it would no doubt be an interesting read.

(39) Crozier, pg 49.

(40) Crozier, pg 46.

(41) Stevenson, pg 253. Ellis's intelligence career is given in Dorril. Ellis founded Interdoc UK in 1964 and ran it until retiring due to ill-health in 1969. Interdoc had also created a West Berlin offshoot in 1967 and had discussed an Interdoc USA centre with the NSIC in the mid-1960s, a plan which ultimately came to nothing – see the CIA report detailing a December 1965 visit to Interdoc referenced in footnote 25. Interdoc however later collaborated with the American Bar Association, longstanding backers of the NSIC and ISC; the ABA and Interdoc co-sponsored a conference on "American-European relations vis-a-vis Communist objectives in Europe" held at Valley Forge, Pennsylvania in November 1972, and the American Bar Association published Cees van den Heuvel's *Soviet perceptions of East-West relationships* in 1977. On ABA support for the ISC in the early 1970s, see footnote 67. On Menzies' role in Gladio, see his letter to the Belgian Prime Minister of 1949 in Gijsels (1991), pgs 149-150. Crozier also notes that "Ronald Franks" of MI6, to whom

Crozier reported on the Bonnemaison/Interdoc meetings, expressed "great interest" in them - Crozier, pg 31.

(42) Dorril and Ramsay, pgs 6-7; biography in Dorril. On Bell, also see footnote 59.

(43) On the links between Interdoc, the ISC and the Monday Club, see *Time Out*, 29/8/75; Ramsay and Dorril, pgs 3 and 40-41. On the history of the anti-union outfits Common Cause and IRIS, see Dorril and Ramsay's *In a Common Cause – the anti-communist crusade in Britain 1945-60* in *Lobster* 19 (May 1990), pgs 1-8, and Ramsay's *The Clandestine Caucus – anti-socialist campaigns and operations in the British Labour Movement since the war*, *Lobster* Special Issue, 1996. On the Economic League, see *Spies At Work* by *Lobster* contributor Mike Hughes at https://web.archive.org/web/20160318232514/http://www.1in12.com/publications/archive/spiesatworkcontents/spiesconts.html; Chapters 7 and 8 in Hollingsworth and Norton-Taylor. In 2009, it emerged that the industrial blacklisting activities of the four groups mentioned above had continued from 1993 onwards via a new organisation, the Consulting Association (TCA), which held reports on more than 3,000 workers. TCA, which was funded by more than forty member companies in the construction sector and which had access to police and security service data, also ran a separate blacklist of environmental campaigners. TCA was shut down in March 2009 following a raid by Britain's data protection authorities, the Information Commissioner's Office – see http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/uk_news/7927487.stm; http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/uk_news/7927711.stm; https://ico.org.uk/your-data-matters/construction-blacklist/; https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2009/mar/06/data-protection-construction-industry; https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2009/mar/06/ian-kerr-data-protection; https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2009/jul/16/construction-firms-jobs-blacklist; https://www.theguardian.com/technology/2012/mar/03/police-blacklist-link-construction-workers; https://www.theguardian.com/business/2012/mar/03/blacklisted-building-workers-court-hopes; https://www.theguardian.com/business/2012/jul/29/victims-consulting-association-mcalpine-building; https://www.theguardian.com/business/2013/jan/12/mcalpine-blacklist-court-claim; https://www.theguardian.com/business/2013/jan/28/blacklist-construction-firms-environmental-protests; https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2013/jan/29/construction-workers-blacklist-vince-cable; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2013/aug/18/police-activists-blacklisting-agency-alleged. In October 2013, the Independent Police Complaints Commission confirmed that Special Branch information had been fed into the TCA blacklists – see https://www.theguardian.com/business/2013/oct/12/police-blacklist-construction-workers-watchdog. The same month, eight of the companies involved in funding the TCA - Balfour Beatty, Carillion, Costain, Kier, Laing O'Rourke, Sir Robert McAlpine, Skanska UK and Vinci – announced that they would be compensating some of the 3,213 workers on the TCA blacklist; the compensation scheme was however denounced in March 2015 by the Scottish Affairs select committee of Parliament which called for a full public inquiry into blacklisting – see https://www.theguardian.com/business/2015/mar/27/mps-slam-construction-firms-over-compensation-for-blacklisted-workers. In November 2014, it emerged that, as late as 2008, the Head of Police Liaison at the National Extremism Tactical Coordination Unit (NETCU) had briefed the Consulting Association, shortly before it was raided and closed down in March 2009 – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2014/nov/08/police-colluded-blacklist-construction-workers-consulting-association-union-activists. Further evidence of police infiltration of trades unions has emerged – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2015/feb/27/on-the-blacklist-building-firms-secret-information-on-workers; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/undercover-with-

paul-lewis-and-rob-evans/2015/mar/13/covert-police-unit-spied-on-trade-union-members-whistleblower-reveals; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/undercover-with-paul-lewis-and-rob-evans/2015/mar/13/ex-undercover-officer-reveals-that-covert-police-unit-spied-on-trade-union-members-full-statement; http://undercoverresearch.net/2015/03/10/blog-blacklisted-the-book-is-out-now/.

In March 2015, Home Secretary Theresa May announced the establishment of a public inquiry under Lord Justice Pitchford to investigate the extent and tactics of undercover police work over the last fifty years. In May 2015, the Blacklist Support Group lobbied to be included in the Pitchford inquiry; in October 2015, this was accepted – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/undercover-with-paul-lewis-and-rob-evans/2015/may/28/blacklisted-workers-seek-to-prise-open-secrets-of-covert-police-surveillance; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/undercover-with-paul-lewis-and-rob-evans/2015/oct/08/more-than-140-people-given-key-role-in-public-inquiry-into-undercover-police. On the Pitchford/Mitting Inquiry, see footnote 453. It is however clear that, despite the existence of the Inquiry, blacklisting still continues today – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2019/jul/29/revealed-crossrail-hired-security-firm-to-monitor-trade-unionists. Trades union members were not the only persons targeted by private spies working for the corporate sector - on the 2007 exposure of Paul Mercer, who infiltrated CND for the 6I and the Campaign Against the Arms Trade for BAE, see footnote 471.

(44) Van Doorslaer and Verhoeyen, pg 143; Laurent, pg 41 et seq; *Gladio*, pg 77; Willan, pg 33.

(45) Retinger, pgs 236-237.

(46) Laurent, pgs 302-303, quoted in full in footnote 107.

(47) Crozier, pgs 102-104. From 1961 on, *Est et Ouest* produced a Latin American edition, *Este y Oeste*, and an Italian edition, *Documenti sul comunismo.* Ivan-Matteo Lombardo contributed to the Italian edition in 1964 – see https://archives.eui.eu/files/inventories/15258.pdf, pg 14, section IML-62. In the 1950s, one of the editorial team working on *Est et Ouest* with Albertini was Roland Goguillot, alias Roland Gaucher, present at the 1975 fascist summit at de Bonvoisin's castle - Brewaeys and Deliège, pg 34. Gaucher, a former militant in Marcel Déat's RNP, worked for Albertini's magazine for over ten years, as well as for Albertini's Institut d'Histoire Sociale – see *CelsiuS* no. 52, August-September 1992. Gaucher was one of the founders of the Front National in 1972, leaving to create the Parti des Forces Nouvelles in 1974 and rejoining the FN in 1979, serving as an FN MEP from 1986 to 1989 - see https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/Roland_Gaucher; http://www.europarl.europa.eu/meps/en/1667/ROLAND_GAUCHER/history/2; footnote 124. On Albertini, see his biography in van der Reijden; *L'Homme de l'Ombre – Georges Albertini 1911-1983*, Laurent Lemire, Ed. Balland, 1989 ; *Le Dossier Georges Albertini – une intelligence avec l'ennemi*, Jean Lévy, Ed. L'Harmattan-Le Pavillon, 1992 (Lévy, who worked for *CelsiuS*, was interviewed about his book in *CelsiuS* no. 52 of August-September 1992); *Georges Albertini, socialiste, collaborateur, gaulliste*, Pierre Rigoulot, Perrin, 2012, a book reviewed in *Valeurs Actuelles*, a magazine that had been founded by Raymond Bourgine and whose Chairman of the Editorial Committee was and still is François d'Orcival – see http://www.valeursactuelles.com/histoire/le-mysterieux-georges-albertini-37264. Both Bourgine and d'Orcival attended Cercle meetings in the mid-1980s – see the Postscript.

(48) Young European Federalists, pg 208. In 1968, Grau's Frankfurt Study Group published his *Demontage der Demokratie*; the same year, Strauß as Finance Minister intervened to ensure favourable tax treatment of the Frankfurt Study Group – see *Spiegel* 36/1981 pgs 59-61 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14340807.html; *Frankfurter Rundschau* of 15/2/74. On the Deutschland-Stiftung, see the publications listed in the Sources annex: Deutschland-Stiftung; Pressedienst Demokratische Initiative; Young European Federalists; Hirsch.

The SWG was reportedly founded by Grau, CDU MP from 1961 to 1969 Artur Missbach who was a former NSDAP, SA and SS member, and former Goebbels spokesman Hugo Wellems (see below); the SWG moved from Cologne to Hamburg in 1973. The website of the SWG gives a list of previous SWG speakers (http://www.swg-hamburg.de/Vortrage/vortrage.html; for SWG authors, also see the *Deutschland-Journal* at http://www.deutschlandjournal.de/Deutschland_Journal_-_Altere_A/deutschland_journal_-_altere_ausgaben.html), amongst whom we find Filbinger, Pinochet's Ambassador to Germany Lucía Gevert Parada, Habsburg, Col. Gerhard Hubatschek, Huyn, Richard Jaeger, General Karst, Dr. J. Kurt Klein, Major-General Komossa, Swiss Professor Kurz, Dr. Marx, Merkatz, Miksche, Richthofen, Professor Rohrmoser, Dr. Sager and Reginald Steed, the influential Cold War editorial writer for the *Daily Telegraph* who had served in the Intelligence Corps interrogating German POWs in World War II and who died in 1993 – see *Lobster* 26, pg 8; http://archiv.preussische-allgemeine.de/1973/1973_11_10_45.pdf.

Another of the SWG's speakers and later SWG Board Member was **Father Lothar Groppe**, son of a General and a Jesuit Military Chaplain from 1962 on, who worked from 1963 to 1971 as Military Chaplain and Lecturer at the German Army's Command School, also based in Hamburg, with which the SWG was closely linked. Groppe later lectured for the Austrian Army Command School from 1973 to 1987, and directed the German section of Radio Vatican for some years. With Huyn and Löwenthal, Groppe founded the registered charity Förderverein Konservative Kultur und Bildung [Association to Promote Conservative Culture and Education] which ran a Conservative Bureau in Bielefeld; Groppe and Huyn were on the Board of Trustees, Löwenthal was spokesman – see https://www.apabiz.de/archiv/material/Profile/IKBF.htm; https://de.wikipedia.org/wiki/Lothar_Groppe; *Spiegel* 43/1980 pgs 48-49 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14320751.html; https://philosophia-perennis.com/2018/07/30/unbeugsamer-gottesmann-in-berlin-pater-lothar-groppe-wird-heute-91-jahre-alt/.

A web article on the SWG from Antifaschistische Informationen, Rechte Organisationen in Hamburg, Nr. 1 of 02/06/95 at https://www.nadir.org/nadir/archiv/Antifaschismus/Organisationen/Diverse/AIswg.html names as further SWG speakers Löwenthal, Dr. Böx of the CDU and the AESP, General Schall and Polish-German exile Herbert Hupka, a Board member of Grau's earlier Frankfurt Study Group, CDU MP from 1969 to 1987, Vice-President of the **Bund der Vertriebenen** [League of Expellees, the main German exile pressure group] and a fervent opponent of Ostpolitik. Hupka contributed throughout the 1970s to the ***Ostpreußenblatt***, the largest selling German expellee newspaper which was based in Hamburg - see https://de.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ostpreu%C3%9Fenblatt; https://www.nadir.org/nadir/archiv/Antifaschismus/Publikationen/AIostp.html; https://www.preussische-allgemeine.de/.

Ostpreußen [East Prussia] refers to the Baltic German region of the Second and Third Reichs that was split between Poland and the Soviet Union after 1945.

According to 1958 German government figures, by 1950 some eight million ethnic Germans had been evacuated, expelled or had fled from the territories now under Polish control – see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/File:Vertreibungsgebiet.jpg. The German-Polish border along the Oder-Neisse line (and hence the Polish claim to East Prussia) was given de facto recognition by the West German government under the Treaty of Warsaw, signed in December 1970 by Willy Brandt – an act considered outright treachery by the numerous and vocal German exile community, fiercely denounced in the 1971 book *Ostpolitik im Kreuzfeuer* [Ostpolitik in the Crossfire] which included articles by the Polish-German CDU/CSU politicians Hupka and Huyn. The capital of East Prussia was Königsberg, now known as the Russian EU enclave of Kaliningrad.

The *Ostpreußenblatt* has been both geographically and politically close to the SWG, not surprising considering that both the SWG's *Deutschland-Journal* and the *Ostpreußenblatt* were edited from 1967 until his death in 1995 by **Hugo Wellems** who joined the Nazi party as an 18 year old in 1930 and served as a Falangist volunteer in the Condor Legion during the Spanish Civil War before working in Goebbel's Ministry for Popular Education and Propaganda; after the war, he worked for the CIA for five years and joined the Deutsche Partei – see https://de.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hugo_Wellems; http://archiv.preussische-allgemeine.de/1995/1995_04_01_13.pdf; http://www.deutschlandjournal.de/Deutschland_Journal_-_Sonderau/Deutschland_Journal_-_Sonderau/deutschland_journal_-_sonderausgabe_2012.html, the latter being a history of the SWG published on the fiftieth anniversary of its foundation, in which the SWG formally disputes Grau's part in its creation. The denial of Grau's involvement however rings hollow when one considers the considerable overlap between the list of SWG speakers and those for Grau's Swiss ISP.

An SWG publication defending SWG speakers General Schall (later of WACL) and General Karst (Chairman of the Deutschland-Stiftung from 1973 to 1977, and a speaker for Grau's Swiss ISP and the Brüsewitz Centre) was reviewed in http://archiv.preussische-allgemeine.de/1977/1977_05_07_19.pdf. A series of SWG documents are given in the invaluable annex in Young European Federalists, partially reproduced in the documentary annex of this full sixth edition of *Rogue Agents*. The Young European Federalists annex includes a 1976 issue of *Vertrauliche Mitteilungen aus Politik und Wirtschaft* [Confidential News from Politics and the Economy], another newsletter produced by Grau, which advertised a three-day lecture tour by Habsburg jointly organised by the SWG and PEU. Huyn's *Wir alle sind Afghanistan: Moskaus Ziel heißt Europa* [We Are All Afghanistan: Moscow's Target is Europe] was published by the SWG in 1980; the *Ostpreußenblatt* of 21/4/90 published an article by Huyn that formed part of the 6I campaign against Gorbachev - see http://archiv.preussische-allgemeine.de/1990/1990_04_21_16.pdf.

A key stalwart of the *Ostpreußenblatt* was **Dr. Heinz H. Gehle**. Born in 1925, Gehle joined the CDU in 1946 and fled from his native East Germany in 1949. Gehle was a mainstay of the CIDCC's German section in the early 1960s, acting as their foreign policy expert, as well as Press Secretary of the CIDCC and editor of the CIDCC Bulletin from 1961 on – see the CIOC-CIDCC-Sint Unum annex. The *Ostpreußenblatt* covered CIDCC events in Germany from 1954 on; Gehle later became one of the *Ostpreußenblatt*'s most prolific correspondents, writing for it several times a year for over twenty years from 1974 until 1995 – see https://www. preussische-allgemeine.de/archiv-suche.html and search for "Heinz Gehle". In 1979, the SWG commissioned a book from Gehle denouncing Brandt, Schmidt and socialist Ostpolitik in general – see the *Ostpreußenblatt* of 01/09/79 pg 24 at http://archiv. preussische-allgemeine.de/1979/1979_09_01_35.pdf. In 1982, Gehle produced *Paneuropa: Wegbereiter für ein freies und christliches Europa* [Paneuropa: Trailblazer for a free and Christian Europe], published by the Paneuropa-Union Deutschland; he was also an author for the German section of Huyn's EKMS, contributing two books in 1982 and in 1989 – see footnote 356. His 1988 book *Deutschland mahnt – mehr als vierzig Jahre geteilt* [Germany warns – divided for more than forty years] was reviewed by ISP speaker and SWG contributor Friedrich-Wilhelm Schlomann in the *Ostpreußenblatt* – see http://archiv.preussische-allgemeine.de/1988/1988_04_16_16.pdf, pg 10. As well as his frequent articles in the *Ostpreußenblatt*, Gehle contributed to the SWG's *Deutschland-Journal* yearbook in 1997 and 1999. Gehle also represented Germany within WACL, attending the 1983 conference in Luxembourg with Theodor Oberländer – see the Kyril Drenikoff papers referenced in footnote 487. On the occasion of his 85th birthday in 2010, Gehle's fellows in the German Templar Knights – German Priory (**Ordo Militiae Crucis Templi – Deutsches Priorat**, OMCT-DP) produced a Liber Amicorum for him entitled *Für Christentum und Vaterland* [For Christianity and Fatherland]. Intriguingly, the same issue (no. 60) of its journal *Non Nobis* that reports on Gehle's Liber Amicorum also covers the funeral of fellow 'Knight' Gerhard Maerlender, who "[in 1946] fulfilled important tasks for the Gehlen Organisation". Gehle was awarded the OMCT-DP's Gold Honour Ring in 2012, and acted as speaker at its Conventions in 2013 and 2014, the latter marking its fiftieth anniversary - see https://www.tempelherren-orden.de/bildungsorden/periodicals-non-nobis/. Gehle died in January 2018 – see https://www.tempelherren-orden. de/dr-phil-heinz-h-gehle/.

The OMCT-DP has certainly had murky connections, not least to Karl Friedrich Grau and his Frankfurt Study Group. In a February 1973 response to a major *Spiegel* article in December 1972 on election dirty tricks involving Grau, the OMCT-DP confirmed that Grau himself and two other Study Group members, CDU MPs Hermann Götz and Walter Picard, were OMCT-DP members – see *Spiegel* 50/1972 pgs 38-54 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-42763090.html, 6/1973 pg 64 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-42675552.html and 12/2000 pg 38 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-15985961.html. Götz, a Sudeten German and CDU MP from 1949 to 1976, was from 1970 to 1973 the Chairman of the CDU/CSU Eastern and Central German Committee (OMV); in 1974, together with his successor as OMV Chairman from 1973 to 1989 Herbert Hupka, he spoke in the Bundestag to denounce the December 1973 treaty on mutual relations between Germany and Czechoslovakia negotiated by Brandt as part of Ostpolitik. From 1974 to 1978, Götz served as Prior of the OMCT-DP. The OMCT-DP had even closer links to the Hamburg SWG; Hugo Wellems, longstanding editor of the *Ostpreußenblatt* and the SWG's *Deutschland-Journal*, was inducted into the OMCT-DP in 1964 (the year of its foundation), elected Chancellor in 1974 and Prior in 1980, serving until 1991 and thereafter as Honorary Prior, according to his obituary by Edmund Sawall, the next Prior of the OMCT-DP and also a SWG speaker and author, published in the *Ostpreußenblatt* of 1/4/95 at http://archiv.preussische-allgemeine.de/1995/1995_04_01_13.pdf, pg 30. The role of both Götz and Wellems as previous Priors of the OMCT-DP is confirmed by the OMCT-DP at https://www. tempelherren-orden.de/geschichte/grossmeister/. The *Ostpreußenblatt* published a presentation of the OMCT-DP in its issue of 2/12/2000 at http://archiv.preussische-allgemeine.de/2000/2000_12_02_48.pdf, pg 4. Sawall died in 2011; his obituary was published by the OMCT-DP at https://www.tempelherren-orden.de/dr-edmund-sawall/.

On Grau and his various groups, see Young European Federalists, pgs 158, 167, 208-214, 265 et seq. including its annex of ISP documents; *Die unheimlichen Patrioten*, pgs 427-442; *IGfM*, pgs 78-79; Hirsch; footnotes 103, 104 and 354; Wolfgang Deuling – see the Sources annex. Hirsch is an excellent and exhaustive encyclopaedia of the German Right which gives further details on many of the Germans mentioned in this book. Deuling, from 1971 on an official at SPD headquarters who was named in 2007 as having been an insider HV A (East German intelligence) source on Schmidt and the SPD, is a controversial but essential source for all interested in anti-Brandt propaganda, having compiled for the SPD an extensive documentary archive of anti-socialist media interventions by Grau and others in the West German Press during the 1972 elections - see *Spiegel* 45/1972 pg 105 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-42787435.html; *Spiegel* 50/1972 pgs 38-54 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-42763090.html; https://www.tagesspiegel.de/politik/streit-um-im-vorwurf-bonner-ehepaar-zieht-klage-gegen-wissenschaftler-mueller-enbergs-zurueck/7780506.html; https://de.wikipedia.org/wiki/Wolfgang_Deuling; http://www.general-anzeiger-bonn.de/news/politik/Buecherverbrennung-in-Bonn-Stasi-Terror-im-Osten-article1003055.html.

(49) Willan, pgs 123-124 - the best English-language account of the manipulation of democracy and terrorism in Italy in the post-war period, and very highly recommended.

(50) For details of Delle Chiaie, Giannettini and Aginter Presse, see Christie's excellent book; Laurent; Bale (1989), pgs 2-18; Willan, particularly Chapters 6 and 7. Delle Chiaie died on 10th September 2019 - see http://www.ansa.it/english/news/general_news/2019/09/10/neo-fascist-stefano-delle-chiaie-dead_863627cf-62ed-45f5-81dc-ee69fcd82f68.html.

(51) Christie (1984), pg 15.

(52) Laurent, pg 304; Roth and Ender, pg 54; Willan, pgs 41 and 95; González-Mata, pg 78. On Beltrametti, also see footnote 108.

(53) On the IRD in general, see Bloch and Fitzgerald; Smith; Fletcher - a major source on the IRD; *Guardian*, 27/1/78; *Observer*, 29/1/78; *New Statesman*, 27/2/81; *Leveller*, 64/1981; *Guardian*, 18/12/81; *Tribune*, 2/9/83, 9/9/83. A later source not integrated here is Paul Lashmar and James Oliver's book *Britain's Secret Propaganda War*, Sutton Publishing, Stroud 1998. A more recent academic study also not integrated here is *Political Warfare against the Kremlin – US and British Propaganda Policy at the Beginning of the Cold War*, Lowell H. Schwartz, Global Conflict and Security since 1945 series, Palgrave Macmillan, London 2009.

(54) Crozier, pgs 56-57.

(55) Saunders, pg 261.

(56) Saunders, pgs 311-312.

(57) Crozier, pgs 72-74. Crozier's widely publicised 1967 biography, translated into Spanish by Esteban Perruca, in charge of the newsreels section of the Information Ministry, was a major coup for Fraga, at the time the central figure in a government campaign to rehabilitate the Franco regime in the eyes of the international community following the March 1964 rebuff to Spanish aspirations of association with the EEC (see footnote 105). Fraga's first move was the March 1966 Press Law

which formally abolished pre-censorship whilst maintaining the arsenal of repressive restrictions on Press freedom – see https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/politics-obituaries/9018817/Manuel-Fraga.html. In November 1966, Fraga announced a limited amnesty for certain acts during the Spanish Civil War (which did not allow the half-million post-1939 Spanish exiles to return), followed by the December 1966 referendum – a first for Spain – on the Organic Law, a wide-ranging but superficial recasting of the State to downplay the central part played by Franco, the Falange and the Movimiento Nacional. Whilst formally separating the trades unions from the Movimiento, the latter continued with Franco appointed as its leader for life; whilst cosmetic changes were made to the structures of government, Franco and his forces remained in effective control. The government campaign for a Yes vote in the referendum was launched by Fraga with the words "To vote Yes is to vote for our Caudillo, to vote No is to follow the orders of Moscow or Prague"; the unconvincing official result was 95% approval of the constitutional reform - see Gallo, pgs 405-416. On Fraga's dismissal from Franco's cabinet in the 1969 purge of opponents of Opus Dei, see this author's "The Cross and the Caudillo" in the CIOC-CIDCC-Sint Unum annex below; for his career before 1962 and post-Franco, see footnotes 5 and 251.

(58) Senator Fulbright's memorandum was placed in the *Congressional Record* on 2nd August 1961, pgs 14433-14439 (Senate). A list of IAS members in 1960 can be found at http://www.grazian-archive.com/archive/pdf/1960/1960-08/1960-08-12_barnettFR_to_al_01-02.pdf; the full document has been provided by Joël van der Reijden at https://isgp-studies.com/organisations/ASC/1960_08_12_NMIC_and_IAS_board.pdf. The IAS continued into the 1970s before being absorbed into the American Security Council Foundation founded in 1962; the last recorded IAS publication was the 1974 study *TV and national defense: An analysis of CBS news, 1972-73* by Ernest W. Lefever, on whom see footnotes 200, 352 and 459. On the ASC and IAS, see https://ascfusa.org/about/ and https://web.archive.org/web/20170325030042/http://www.ascfusa.org/app/webroot/files/fckfiles/HISTORY%20MILESTONES.pdf, also available at https://isgp-studies.com/organisations/ASC/2005_11_01_John_Fisher_ASC_history.pdf; Bellant, pgs 29-57, an outstanding piece of research on Reagan's links to the American far Right; http://militarist-monitor.org/profile/American_Security_Council/; *Roads to Dominion - Right-Wing Movements and Political Power in the United States*, Sara (Sara Rose) Diamond, Guilford Press, 1995, pgs 46-51; Joël van der Reijden's extensive research at https://isgp-studies.com/american-security-council and https://isgp-studies.com/american-security-council-membership-list. IAS and ASC founder John M. Fisher retired in 2002 and died in January 2013 – see https://www.legacy.com/obituaries/washingtonpost/obituary.aspx?pid=162603719.

Eisenhower started drafting his farewell speech in May 1959; all of the drafts focused on the threat to democracy posed by the military-industrial complex. The final version has lost nothing of its relevance over the last half-century and should still be quoted:

"We have been compelled to create a permanent armaments industry of vast proportions. Added to this, three and a half million men and women are directly engaged in the defense establishment. We annually spend on military security alone more than the net income of all United States corporations. Now this conjunction of an immense military establishment and a large arms industry is new in the American experience. The total influence - economic, political, even spiritual - is felt in every city, every Statehouse, every office of the Federal government. We recognize the imperative need for this development. Yet, we must not fail to comprehend its grave implications. Our toil, resources, and livelihood are all involved. So is the very structure of our society. In the councils of government, we must guard against the acquisition of unwarranted influence, whether sought or unsought, by the military-industrial complex. The potential for the disastrous rise of misplaced power exists and will persist. We must never let the weight of this combination endanger our liberties or democratic processes. We should take nothing for granted. Only an alert and knowledgeable citizenry can compel the proper meshing of the huge industrial and military machinery of defense with our peaceful methods and goals [sic], so that security and liberty may prosper together" – see https://archive.org/details/DwightD.Eisenhower-FarewellAddressmilitary-industrialComplexSpeech.

That Eisenhower's warning of "the disastrous rise of misplaced power" of the military-industrial complex has gone unheeded over the last fifty-five years has been irrefutably evidenced in veteran CIA consultant Chalmers Johnson's essential trilogy, *Blowback* (2000), *The Sorrows of Empire* (2004) and *Nemesis* (2006). More recently, the longstanding dominance of military force over diplomacy as the American default response to political crises was highlighted in an *Economist* special report on US foreign policy of 23/11/13: "Modern America has shown an unrivalled appetite for battle. During more than half the years since the end of the cold war it has been in combat ... between 1989 and 2001 the United States intervened abroad on average once every 16 months – more frequently than in any period of its history" – see https://www.economist.com/special-report/2013/12/12/the-uses-of-force.

(59) The quote from Casey is taken from the Senate Intelligence Committee hearing to confirm his 1981 appointment as CIA Director – see *State Research* no. 22, February-March 1981, pgs 86-87; https://www.intelligence.senate.gov/sites/default/files/hearings/97casey.pdf; footnote 199. Casey and Barnett had already worked together ten years before the 1962 foundation of the NSIC; "In 1951, the author worked [as executive secretary, later director] for the "American Friends of Russian Freedom", a private committee set up by Eugene Lyons of *The Reader's Digest* and a young Wall Street lawyer named William J. Casey", as Barnett wrote in a 1989 NSIC study on psy-ops – see footnote 505. In 1962, alongside establishing the NSIC, Casey, Barnett and their NSIC co-founder and lawyer Morris I. Leibman ensured the penetration of the national security ethos in law schools via the creation that year of the American Bar Association's Standing Committee for Education Against Communism, another powerful voice for the NSIC – see footnote 67. During the war, Casey had served in Washington as an aide to General Donovan, head of the OSS, before being posted to London in 1943 as staff assistant and later Head of the Secretariat to the OSS branch in charge of all Intelligence Operations in the European Theatre. Casey took over as head of the OSS Secret Intelligence Branch mission in December 1944, liaising with MI6 chief Sir Stuart Menzies and the head of SOE's German section, Sir Gerald Templer – see https://www.cia.gov/library/publications/intelligence-history/oss/art06.htm; https://www.cia.gov/library/center-for-the-study-of-intelligence/csi-publications/csi-studies/studies/unclass1994.pdf, pgs 73-74.

From 1942 on, the MI6 London liaison officer in charge of the OSS guests was Walter Bell, later a co-founder of Interdoc in 1963. One of his wartime charges was OSS officer James Jesus Angleton, serving in London from 1942 to 1944 in the X-2 Counter-Intelligence branch. OSS X-2 was housed one floor below MI6's counter-intelligence Section V, whose leading light was Angleton's instructor and soon mentor Kim Philby. Angleton was as completely deceived by Philby's charm as were MI6's Elliott and Young - see footnote 316; Macintyre. After his London tour, Angleton was posted to Italy as chief of the Rome X-2 station from 1945 to 1947, working closely with Young as his MI6 counterpart to dismantle German and Italian intelligence networks there before being posted back to Washington and beginning his meteoric rise within the CIA. Following his 1974 dismissal from the Agency, Angleton became a prominent pillar of the ASC, and mounted a powerful campaign against Congressional restrictions on intelligence through his Security and Intelligence Fund, an extensive alliance of CIA and FBI veterans, here referred to as ASIF. Angleton's influence within the CIA was restored in the 1980s under Director Casey; by coincidence, Casey and Angleton, both oldtimers from the wartime OSS, died within a week of one another in May 1987 - see footnote 496.

(60) Crozier, pg 90.

(61) Crozier, pgs 85-86.

(62) Crozier, pg 86.

(63) This study is too brief to cover all of the activities of the ISC in any depth: see *Time Out*, 20/6/75, 29/8/75, 5/9/75, 30/9/77; *CIA, Students of Conflict*, Steve Weissman, *Embassy Magazine*, August 1976, reprinted as *The CIA makes the news* in *Dirty Work: the CIA in Western Europe*, pgs 204-210; *Searchlight* no.18, November 1976 and no. 20, January 1977; *Guardian*, 20, 21, 31/12/76; *Daily Mail*, 22/12/76; *Private Eye*, 7/1/77; *State Research* no. 1, pgs 13-17; Laurent, pgs 304-305; González-Mata, pgs 162-163; Winter, 1981, pgs 170-171, 321, 543-544 and his two later articles listed in the Sources annex; Bloch and Fitzgerald, pgs 98-99; Freemantle, pgs 189-191; Péan, pgs 65-70; Ramsay and Dorril - essential reading; Norton-Taylor, pgs 73-74 - an excellent overview of the British security and intelligence services; Herman and O'Sullivan, pgs 108-112, an invaluable study on terrorism and propaganda groupings; Dorril and Ramsay (1991) - indispensable; Toczek - an outstanding summary of the British Right including the Monday Club, SIF, NAFF, ISC and FARI; Crozier – from the horse's mouth, albeit guardedly. The most recent article is by Jeffrey H. Michaels, an American military officer who is Lecturer in Defence Studies at King's College London - see *The Heyday of Britain's Cold War Think Tank: Brian Crozier and the Institute for the Study of Conflict, 1970 – 1979*, published in *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, pgs 146 –160, which downplays the significance of Crozier and the ISC in domestic British politics in the 1970s, making no mention of FARI, nor indeed of Shield or the 6I despite the extensive testimony in Crozier's memoirs from 1993 – see however footnote 181.

(64) Both donations were organised by Sir Robert Thompson - Crozier, pg 90.

(65) See the NSIC annex below; Dr. Tom Griffin's doctoral thesis at https://purehost.bath.ac.uk/ws/portalfiles/portal/155465473/GRIFFIN_Thomas_PhD_Thesis_FINAL.pdf. Barnett continued to serve as NSIC President until his death in August 1993 – see https://www.nytimes.com/1993/08/18/obituaries/frank-r-barnett-72-an-expert-on-military-strategy-and-security.html.

(66) Minutes of the ISC Council meeting on 2/1/72 in Knight, pg 176.

(67) Quote from Crozier, pg 90; figures from *Pittsburgh Post-Gazette*, 20-21/4/81 at https://tueriesdubrabant.1fr1.net/t2517p125-brian-crozier. Barnett also provided the contact for another major source of regular funding for the ISC, the **American Bar Association** which, together with the NSIC, bought one thousand copies of the first 1972 Cercle-commissioned ISC report, *European Security and the Soviet Problem*. Both American groups later took out standing bulk subscriptions to

ISC reports – core funding for Crozier's ISC and the Cercle Pinay. The ABA had been a major outlet for American anti-communist propaganda ever since the McCarthy era; it had extensive links to the NSIC from the latter's foundation in 1962 on. The now-defunct NSIC website states: "In the 1960s, NSIC worked with Lewis F. Powell, Jr. - then [1964-65] the American Bar Association President and later [1972-1987] a Supreme Court Justice - to introduce and educate lawyers on national security issues and law through what is now known as the ABA Standing Committee on Law and National Security" – see https://web.archive.org/web/20160331145915/ http://www.strategycenter.org/about-the-nsic/history-and-mission/.

The ABA's early anti-communist "history and mission" is however fortunately more detailed elsewhere. In 1950, the ABA had voted to disbar any of its members who belonged to the Communist Party or took the Fifth (Amendment] about suspected Party membership. The same year, the ABA set up a **Special Committee on Communist Tactics, Strategy and Objectives**, headed first by the former Senator from Maryland Herbert O'Conor, and later by former Justice Department attorney Peter Campbell Brown, who had been appointed to the **Subversive Activities Control Board** in 1950 and was SACB Chairman in 1952-53 - the SACB was an US Congressional body set up under the 1950 McCarran Internal Security Act to investigate and force registration of groups deemed to be under Communist control. The ABA Special Committee delivered explosive reports on "the internal threat posed by international Communism" in 1951 and again in 1958, leading the ABA in February 1959 to formally adopt resolutions critical of Supreme Court decisions that had revoked unlawful state rulings on sedition. The same month, the House Un-American Activities Committee (HUAC) published its report on "*Communist Legal Subversion – the role of the Communist lawyer*".

In August 1962, twelve years after its creation, the 'temporary' ABA Special Committee was finally given permanent status under the title of the **ABA Standing Committee for Education Against Communism** (and its Contrast with Liberty under Law), whose founding Chairman was **Morris I. Leibman**. At this time, Leibman was already working with Frank Barnett within the Institute for American Strategy (IAS), the offshoot of the American Security Council which co-sponsored the Military-Industrial Conferences. In 1960, Leibman was listed as a member of the IAS Board of Directors; Barnett was IAS Program Director. Leibman was a co-founder of the NSIC with Barnett in 1962 and remained one of its Directors until at least 1989. From 1964 to 1979, Leibman also acted as Civilian Aide at Large to the Secretary of the Army; in 1981, he was awarded the Presidential Medal of Freedom (the highest American civilian honour) by President Ronald Reagan. In 1983, Leibman founded the National Strategy Forum as a bridge between the ABA and the intelligence community; he was a Board Member of the US Institute of Peace (https://www.presidency.ucsb.edu/documents/nomination-morris-i-leibman-be-member-the-board-directors-the-united-states-institute), the University of Pennsylvania's Foreign Policy Research Institute (run by Kintner) and the Georgetown University CSIS.

Leibman died in 1992 - see https://www.nytimes.com/1992/04/29/obituaries/morris-i-leibman-81-a-senior-law-partner.html; http://articles.chicagotribune.com/1992-04-22/news/9202050616_1_sidley-austin-law-school-holocaust-memorial-council; https://web.archive.org/web/20110813090913/ http://nationalstrategy.com/Portals/0/PDFs/Leibman%20Tribute%20JW%205-14-07.pdf; https://www.sourcewatch.org/index.php/National_Strategy_Information_Center; the NSIC annex below; https://www.americanbar.org/content/dam/aba/publications/national_security_law_report/volume13_issue2.authcheckda m.pdf; https://www.americanbar.org/content/dam/aba/publications/national_security_law_report/volume14_issue5.authcheckdam.pdf.

The 1962 relaunch of the ABA Committee under Leibman coincided with the creation of the NSIC which had a predominant influence over the ABA Committee; the ABA Committee appointed NSIC President Frank Barnett as "our educational consultant from day one of its existence" – see https://www. americanbar.org/content/dam/aba/publications/national_security_law_report/volume13_issue5.authcheckdam.pdf. The post had been engineered by the lawyer, OSS veteran, NSIC co-founder and future Reagan CIA Director Bill Casey together with the NSIC Vice-President and General Counsel, former Navy Judge Advocate General **Rear Admiral William C. Mott**, a founding member of Leibman's committee who chaired its Advisory Committee and edited its monthly bulletin *Intelligence Report* from the early 1980s until May 1991. The influence of the NSIC over the new ABA Committee extended beyond Leibman, Barnett and Mott: one of the other Committee members in 1964 was John G. McKay Jnr who served as NSIC Vice-President from at least 1975 on and was a NSIC Director in 1980. Another person linking the mid-1960s ABA Committee and the NSIC was the ABA Committee's research assistant in 1964, Dorothy E. Nicolosi, by 1975 the NSIC Assistant Secretary and Assistant Treasurer, rising to Treasurer and Executive Administrator by 1980 and by 1985 a NSIC Vice-President who served until 2016 – see https://web.archive.org/web/20160330092719/http://www.strategycenter.org/about-the-nsic/board/; https://archive.org/details/freedomIsTheException; https://digital.libraries.psu.edu/digital/collection/transaction/search/searchterm/Nicolosi/order/nosort.

The mission of the ABA Standing Committee for Education Against Communism was described by the ABA By-laws as being to "study, make report and recommendations, plan and give effect to programs of education on communist tactics, strategy and objectives and encourage and support our schools and colleges in the presentation of adequate instruction on the contrast between communism and liberty under law". Barnett referred to this work in a 1989 NSIC study on psy-ops: "How will we know when we begin to redress the balance in the PSYOP arena? … When another dozen or so of our professional societies form their own in-house committees to mobilize private sector talent for the PSYOP game. The American Bar Association [has] taken that step … The ABA has a Blue Ribbon Committee of Lawyers that has trained thousands of teachers in Communist propaganda strategy and that refutes Soviet disinformation about SDI and Central America" – see footnote 505.

Within a year of its foundation, the Standing Committee produced a controversial draft syllabus for high school teacher training, *Democracy and Communism in World Affairs*, with the support of ABA President-Elect Lewis F. Powell - see the *ABA Journal*, October 1963, Vol. 49, pgs 992-994. In 1964, the Committee published two books, the first of which was *The New Czars vs. The Rule of Law*, a collection of speeches by NSIC President Barnett, former CIA Director Allen Dulles, Assistant Director of the FBI William C. Sullivan, and ABA stalwarts Powell, Leibman and Mott. The second book was *Peaceful Coexistence: A Communist Blueprint for Victory* by Richard V. Allen, Nixon's future chief foreign policy advisor from 1968 on - see the *ABA Journal*, November 1964, Vol. 50, pg 1056. These were followed in 1965 by the publication of three lectures by FBI Assistant Director William C. Sullivan under the title *Freedom Is The Exception* – see https://archive.org/details/freedomIsTheException.

Besides the ABA's involvement with the NSIC, it had also long cooperated with the NSIC's fellow Cold War grouping, the ASC. Loyd Wright, the ABA President in 1954-55 and President of the International Bar Association from 1954 to 1964, was a longstanding member of the ASC, becoming Chairman of the ASC National Strategy Committee in 1961 and serving as its Vice-Chairman and Co-Chairman until at least 1975 – see the official ASC history referenced in footnote 58. On ABA cooperation with Interdoc during the 1970s, see footnote 41.

One ironic detail about Leibman concerns the Chicago law practice of Sidley Austin, now one of the top ten American legal firms. In 1972, Leibman led the merger of his practice of Leibman, Williams, Bennett, Baird & Minow with the then Sidley & Austin; the reinforced Sidley & Austin with Leibman as senior partner represented the ABA itself throughout the 1970s – see http://www.fundinguniverse.com/company-histories/sidley-austin-brown-wood-history/. Anecdotally, it was at Sidley & Austin in 1989 that the young summer law intern Barack Obama met his mentor and future wife Michelle Robinson. In 1979, the ABA Standing Committee for Education Against Communism was renamed the ABA **Standing Committee on Law and National Security** (SCOLANS), which since 1997 confers the Morris I. Leibman Award in Law and National Security. In 2005, the award was presented to main NSIC backer and "Founding Associate of the Committee" Dan McMichael - see https://www.americanbar.org/groups/public_services/law_national_security/; https://www.americanbar.org/groups/public_services/law_national_security/awards/.

(68) *Leveller*, 64/1981. It is interesting to note that two IRD offshoots were created at roughly the same time: the ISC in London in 1970 and the Information Policy Unit in Northern Ireland in 1971 - both were involved in anti-Left propaganda in the critical period 1973-75, InfPol providing unattributable press briefings to discredit politicians, and the ISC railing on in the media about Communist subversion in the unions, journalism, education etc. InfPol's operations were exposed by top operative Colin Wallace in 1985: see Ramsay and Dorril; Foot; Dorril and Ramsay (1991).

(69) Saunders, pgs 107-111. In his memoirs, Crozier writes about recruiting Goodwin to the ISC: "[in 1970] I had known Goodwin for eight or nine years from the time he had commissioned a long study from me on Communist China's steel industry. A publishing venture he was involved in had collapsed, and I had helped him find a job with the Congress for Cultural Freedom, from which I now lured him" (Crozier, pgs 89-90). This seems to confuse chronologies: Crozier says he knew Goodwin from around 1961-62, yet Goodwin's only recorded collapsed publishing venture and his CCF involvement date back to the early 1950s. Saunders adds that Goodwin later became a Features and Drama Director at the BBC.

(70) On Clive, see https://www.theguardian.com/news/2001/may/18/guardianobituaries1; https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/1330618/Nigel-Clive.html; http://www.professorjamespettifer.com/uploads/files/pdf/Nigel%20Clive.pdf (obituary from the *Independent* of 9/6/01).

(71) For biographic details of many ISC authors, see Dorril; on ISC/IRD links, see Ramsay and Dorril; Lashmar and Oliver, not integrated here.

(72) Crozier, pg 98. On Fairbairn, see http://nla.gov.au/nla.ms-ms9326. For a biography of Moss, see *Covert Action Information Bulletin* nos. 7 and 10; Coxsedge, Coldicut and Harant, pg 124 (who report that Moss was "son of a senior Australian Defence officer"); Ramsay and Dorril, pgs 53-54; Dorril and Ramsay (1991); Toczek.

(73) Toczek, pg 29.

(74) All three pacification supremos in Vietnam later developed links with the Cercle Pinay: Thompson (ISC Council), Robert Komer (Board of the ISC's American offshoot WISC) and William Colby (guest at a Cercle Pinay meeting in December 1979).

(75) Clutterbuck later combined forces with Peter Janke and ISC librarian Richard Sims in Control Risks, perhaps the world's most prominent business security and kidnap ransom agency – see below. Clutterbuck died in 1998.

(76) Crozier, pgs 102-104.

(77) By 1978, Biggs-Davison was a Life Member of the Habsburg-Violet-Damman group, the AESP. From 1984 to 1986, he sat in the Parliamentary Assembly of the CoE. Biggs-Davison died in 1988 – see his obituary, written by fellow Catholic, Conservative MP and Monday Club member Sir Patrick Wall at https://web.archive.org/web/20150919074752/http://archive.thetablet.co.uk/article/24th-september-1988/30/obituary. Photographic portraits of Biggs-Davison can be found at https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/search/portraitLarge/mw99884/Sir-John-Alec-Biggs-Davison; https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/search/portraitLarge/mw110596/Sir-John-Alec-Biggs-Davison.

(78) In 1951, he served on the Board of the British Society for Cultural Freedom alongside Michael Goodwin, the future Administrative Director of the ISC. See Saunders, pgs 76, 88, 110; Crozier, pg 15. As for his position in the PEU, see http://web.archive.org/web/20081030100401/http://www.coe.int/t/dgal/dit/ilcd/Historical_Content/hymn/kalergi1.pdf.

(79) Howarth devotes a chapter to Julian Amery in his history of the SOE; also see Amery's *Sons of the Eagle* (1948) and Nigel West's *The Secret War*, Coronet, London 1993. Amery was responsible for British links with General Draža Mihailović, leader of the Chetniks, Serbian monarchist irregulars fighting the German occupation. After his capture by Tito's partisans, Mihailović was sentenced to death for treason and war crimes and executed in 1946; he was controversially rehabilitated by the Serbian High Court in May 2015 – see https://www.cbsnews.com/news/world-war-ii-general-draza-mihailovic-gets-nazi-treason-conviction-tossed-by-serb-court/. The British rendition of anti-Tito resistance fighters to Yugoslavia after the war (leading to their execution) was heavily criticised by Count Nikolai Tolstoy in his mid-1980s books, *Victims of Yalta* and *The Minister and the Massacres*, the latter attributing blame to Macmillan; Amery sided with Tolstoy who was feted at a Monday Club dinner in 1988. For Amery's more recent contacts with the Chetniks, see *Observer*, 17/5/92. On the Albanian operation, see Leigh, pgs 11-13 for a brief summary, Verrier for an intelligent insider's view; the main documentary work is Nicholas Bethell's *The Great Betrayal*, London 1984, which has many references to Amery. After service in the Balkans, Amery served from 1945 until demobilisation in China as aide to General Carton de Wiart, British representative to General Chiang Kai Shek. In December 1945, Julian's brother John, a convinced fascist, was hung by the British government for having organised the British Free Corps to fight alongside the Germans on the Russian front. On John Amery, see https://www.telegraph.co.uk/finance/property/3293770/Inside-story-traitor-in-the-family.html; https://www.independent.co.uk/voices/letters/rear-window-john-amery-the-traitor-whom-britain-politely-forgot-1572716.html.

Amongst Julian Amery's actions whilst at the FCO from 1972 to 1974 was the construction of the crucial American naval and sigint base on Diego Garcia (Chagos Islands), leased to the Americans in 1966 by Amery's FCO predecessor, Lord Chalfont – see the declassified State Department cables 1974LONDON01687 of 6th February 1974 and 1974USUNN00897 of 15th March 1974, referenced below. The background to the construction of the Diego Garcia base from March 1971 on (entailing the deportation of all of the islanders) was Western concern at the increased Soviet naval presence in the Indian Ocean and at Spínola's declaration that Portugal might consider granting independence to its African colonies, increasing the threat to the Cape oil route. Declassified State Department cable 1974CAPET00663 of 23rd October 1974 quotes Admiral John 'Jack' McCain, former Commander-in-Chief Pacific Forces from 1968 to 1972 and after retirement a prominent WACL and ASC member, as telling the Washington correspondent of the *Johannesburg Sunday Times*: "What has happened in Mozambique and Angola makes our possession [sic] of Diego Garcia more important than ever. But it also means that we absolutely need access to the South African naval facilities at Simonstown and Durban"; the military correspondent of the newspaper added: "The United States will go ahead with plans to develop the little British atoll of Diego Garcia, in the very heart of the Indian Ocean, as something more than a communications base - which incidentially will be linked with the projected Telstar communications satellite to hover over the Ocean on the Equator. Diego Garcia will be able to service American warships now scheduled to patrol the Indian Ocean, and will also be provided with an airstrip capable of taking the giant B-52 bombers." Search for the cable references at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/. The atoll later served as a CIA 'black prison'. UK sovereignty over the Chagos Islands was rejected by the UN International Court of Justice in February 2019 – see https://www.theguardian.com/world/2019/feb/25/un-court-rejects-uk-claim-to-sovereignty-over-chagos-islands; in May 2019, the United Nations General Assembly voted 116-6 to condemn Britain's occupation of the Chagos Islands – see https://www.theguardian.com/world/2019/may/22/uk-suffers-crushing-defeat-un-vote-chagos-islands.

As well as being a prominent member of the Monday Club during G. K. Young's ascendancy, Julian Amery was allegedly linked with Young to South Africa's development of a nuclear programme; Amery was a Director of the South African uranium mining company, the Vaal Reefs Exploration and Mining Corporation. He was also a consultant to the Bank of Credit and Commerce International which collapsed in July 1991 and has been implicated in many cases of money laundering including facilitating illegal arms sales to Iran and channelling covert CIA support to the Nicaraguan Contras – see http://content.time.com/time/magazine/article/0,9171,157496,00.html; https://www.newsweek.com/bcci-cia-connection-just-how-far-did-it-go-195454. BCCI's London branch was used as a conduit for CIA payments to 490 of its British contacts - see *Guardian*, 26/7/91. Amery resigned from the Monday Club in February 1991 in protest at its take-over by racist extreme right-wingers - see *Observer*, 24/2/91. To watch him speak in Parliament in 1991 (when Chairman of the Cercle), see https://www.c-span.org/video/?18136-1/question-time (starts at 11 mins 27 secs) and https://www.c-span.org/video/?23407-1/british-debate-european-community-union (starts at 42 mins 29 secs). Amery was elevated to the Lords as Baron Amery of Lustleigh in 1992, retired as Chairman of the Cercle at the end of 1993 and died in 1996. A biography of Julian Amery is given in Dorril, pg 2; another is at https://www.independent.co.uk/incoming/lord-amery-of-lustleigh-obituary-5601769.html. Portraits of Amery in 1961, 1965 and 1978 are at https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/search/portraitLarge/mw108992/Harold-Julian-Amery-Baron-Amery-of-Lustleigh; https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/

search/portraitLarge/mw90203/Harold-Julian-Amery-Baron-Amery-of-Lustleigh; https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/search/portraitLarge/mw89715/Harold-Julian-Amery-Baron-Amery-of-Lustleigh; https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/search/portraitLarge/mw89721/Harold-Julian-Amery-Baron-Amery-of-Lustleigh.

(80) See Ramsay and Dorril; Dorril and Ramsay (1991); Toczek; 1963 reports from MI6 (SMOTH) and MI5 (JAGUAR) to the CIA (KUBARK) at https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/QKACTIVE%20%20%20VOL.%208%20%20%20(CS%20FILE%20JAN.%201963-DEC.%201964)_0025.pdf.

(81) The major sources on Young are *Lobster* 9-21, and particularly 11 (Ramsay and Dorril) and 19, pgs 15-19, for an autobiographical obituary written by Young some time before his death in May 1990 - Young's account studiously avoids his days in the Monday Club, NAFF and Unison; Christie (no date), pgs 123-130 for a preliminary investigation; Toczek for an essential piece of research on Young and the Tory Right; Dorril and Ramsay (1991) which puts Young's efforts into context; Dorril for his MI6 career. Also see Bloch and Fitzgerald; Foot, pgs 78-79, 435; Verrier, chapters 3 and 4. Young's own book on subversion is an interesting read. It is worth noting that, during his service in MI6 Counter-Intelligence in Italy just after the war, Young liaised closely with his American counterpart James Jesus Angleton, head of the Italian section of the OSS counter-intelligence branch X-2 who played a major role in the manipulation of the 1948 Italian elections. On the Mossadegh coup, see https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB28/ and https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB126/. For the most recent (2015) Press references to Young, see https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/law-and-order/11975799/Former-MI6-deputy-director-George-Kennedy-Young-is-key-figure-in-missing-child-abuse-dossier-says-MP.html; https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=PoVwnCZsE3Y (starts at 11 mins 25 secs).

(82) Christie (1984), pgs 18-19; Willan, pgs 99-102 et seq.; *Gladio*, pgs 78 - 96; Herman and Brodhead, pg 80.

(83) Toczek, pgs 15-16. Ivens died in 2001 – see https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/1361693/Michael-Ivens.html. Ross McWhirter was assassinated by the IRA in 1975; his brother Norris died in 2004 – see http://news.bbc.co.uk/onthisday/hi/dates/stories/november/27/newsid_2528000/2528787.stm; https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/1459811/Norris-McWhirter.html; https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/1473655/The-high-and-mighty-remember-McWhirter-man-of-world-records.html; http://www.norrismcwhirter.com/index.htm; Episode 2 of the 2007 BBC documentary *Tory! Tory! Tory!* on NAFF at https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=TgSSoYCM00A. Rodgers was ennobled as 1st Baronet of Groombridge in 1964 and died in 1993 – see https://www.independent.co.uk/news/people/obituary-sir-john-rodgers-bt-1455550.html; https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/search/portraitLarge/mw142480/Sir-John-Charles-Rodgers-1st-Bt.

(84) Bennett attended Bilderberg conferences in 1963, 1964, 1966, 1967, 1968, 1971, 1973, 1974, 1975, 1977, 1978, 1979, 1980 and 1984. Bennett's mother Marguerite was a Kleinwort. The merger between Kleinwort and Benson in 1961 was facilitated by the fact that Sir Cyril Kleinwort (a Bilderberg participant with Bennett in 1966 and 1971) and Sir Mark Turner of Benson's were already working together as Directors of Commercial Union. In 1963, Bennett brought along Turner, the new Managing Director of the merged Kleinwort Benson Ltd., to the Bilderberg conference held in Cannes; in 1974, Bennett was accompanied at the Bilderberg conference in Megève by the then Kleinwort Benson President, Gerald Thompson – see González-

Mata, pg 315; https://publicintelligence.net/1963-bilderberg-meeting-participant-list/; https://publicintelligence.net/1974-bilderberg-meeting-participant-list/.

This association continued in the 1980s; Martin Wakefield Jacomb, Vice-Chairman of Kleinwort Benson Ltd, attended the May 1985 Bilderberg conference in Rye Brook – see https://publicintelligence.net/1985-bilderberg-participant-list/; he was knighted the following month – see https://www.thegazette.co.uk/London/issue/50154/supplement/1/data.pdf. Despite being bought by the Dresdner Bank in 1995, Kleinwort Benson still maintained its longstanding contacts with the Bilderberg Group: Simon Robertson, Chairman of the Kleinwort Benson Group plc, attended the 1996 Bilderberg conference in Toronto and the 1997 Bilderberg conference in Atlanta (see *Lobster* 35, pg 31), whereas Jaime Carvajal Urquijo, Chairman of Dresdner Kleinwort Benson S. A. (Spain) attended the 1998 Bilderberg conference in the Turnberry Hotel, Ayrshire – see the relevant years at https://publicintelligence.net/category/documents/bilderberg/bilderberg-participant-lists/. The representative of Kleinwort Benson in France in the early 1990s is also of interest - see footnote 171. Having passed through several hands, it continues to operate as a private bank today - see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Kleinwort_Benson; https://www.telegraph.co.uk/finance/10194133/Kleinwort-boss-Sally-Tennant-shares-Gingers-view-of-getting-on-in-heels-and-backwards.html; https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2014/jul/08/offshore-secrets-wealthy-political-donors; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Kleinwort_Hambros.

(85) González-Mata, pgs 290-291. The Bilderberg conference was held in the Paramount Imperial Hotel in Torquay, the constituency (renamed Torbay in 1974) that Bennett held for thirty-two years from his victory in a 1955 by-election until his retirement from Parliament in 1987. His successor as Torbay MP was Rupert Allason who writes authorised intelligence histories under the pen-name Nigel West.

Besides his regular attendance at Bilderberg meetings, Bennett also had a longstanding international foothold in two non-EU parliamentary bodies generally underestimated by British researchers: the **Council of Europe** (CoE) and the **Western European Union** (WEU). Bennett was an early member of the Parliamentary Assembly of the CoE in 1957-58 and returned there from 1974 to 1987; in 1976, the leader of the British Conservatives there was SIF President Sir John Rodgers. In 1976, Bennett was the rapporteur for the WEU General Affairs Committee; its Vice-President was Rodgers - search for declassified State Department cable 1976PARIS02501 of 27th January 1976 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/. From 1979 to 1987, Bennett was the leader of the UK delegation to and also Chairman of both the CoE and WEU Parliamentary Assemblies; his predecessor as Chairman of the WEU Assembly from 1977 to 1979 was Kai-Uwe von Hassel, guest at a 1976 AESP meeting.

Bennett's part in Young's Unison was described in Peter Cadogan's *Unlicensed Rebel of the Right*: "15 July 1976: Today I had lunch with GKY [Young] [...] he told me that when he first had the idea that is now Unison, he saw General Templer about it. Templer was interested but too old and sick to act [he died in October 1979] and he suggested General [Sir Walter] Walker [...] The form the thing now takes is that of an instant communications network capable of acting at the highest level if the established machinery and government breaks down [...] The key man in the [House of] Commons is Sir Frederic Bennett, and with him are some twenty other MPs [...] Unison will go public later this year" – see Dorril's *Lobster* 26, pg 23. In 1977, Bennett was a member of the Defence and Foreign Affairs Sub-Committee which heavily criticized government defence cuts – search for declassified State Department cable 1977LONDON04567 of 17th March 1977 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/. In 1979, Bennett's book *Reds under the Bed, or the Enemy at the Gate – and Within* was published by FARI and translated into Dutch in 1982 – see footnote 472. In February 1980, Bennett addressed the NSIC in Washington – see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP05T00644R000401140023-0.pdf.

In November 1985, Bennett was elected to the Honorary Presidium of the EFC alongside its President Habsburg, Yaroslav Stetsko of the ABN and Fraga Iribarne – see *ABN Correspondence*, November – December 1985 pgs 1-14 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/14110/file.pdf; *ABN Correspondence*, March – April 1987 pgs 7-8 and (for a June 1987 EFC 20th anniversary meeting attended by Habsburg, Wilkinson, Bennett, General Robert Close and Guillermo Kirkpatrick) July – August 1987 pgs 17-21 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/14112/file.pdf. After his retirement from parliamentary politics in 1987, Bennett acted as Chairman of the EFC's European Freedom Campaign (whose Secretariat also included Norris McWhirter), established at an Inaugural Rally at Westminster Central Hall on 10th December 1988 which was addressed by Chalfont, Amery and Bennett – see *ABN Correspondence*, January – February 1989 pgs 16 and 31-33 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/14114/file.pdf. In July 1990, Bennett attended the EFC Conference as a member of its Honorary Presidium – see *ABN Correspondence*, September – October 1990, pgs 1-3 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/14316/file.pdf. He died in September 2002 – see https://www.theguardian.com/news/2002/sep/20/guardianobituaries.obituaries and https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/1407481/Sir-Frederic-Bennett.html, neither of which makes any mention of Bennett's longstanding association with the Bilderberg Group, Young or Crozier. Photographs of Bennett in 1942 and 1968 may be found at https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/search/portraitLarge/mw99887/Sir-Frederic-Mackarness-Bennett; https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/search/portraitLarge/mw110437/Sir-Frederic-Mackarness-Bennett.

(86) See Winter (1981), pgs 382-383 and his two later articles listed in the Sources annex; Penrose and Courtiour. Unsurprisingly, Andrew's 2009 authorised history of MI5 calls Winter "mendacious and unreliable" (pg 636), and cites Penrose (pg 974 footnote 67) as saying that Winter was "an unscrupulous man who would do and say anything for money". For a recent retrospective on the Thorpe case, see https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/politics/forgiven-the-belated-rehabilitation-of-jeremy-thorpe-1651179.html.

(87) See Hain's book *A Putney Plot*, Spokesman Books, London 1986; https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2018/apr/10/peter-hain-cleared-of-robbery-1976. Colin Wallace's 1974 notes show that MI5 had targeted Thorpe, Hain and other Liberals in an attempt to prevent a coalition between the Liberals and Wilson's minority Labour government. Despite questions about South African intervention in British politics from 1971 on (see https://api.parliament.uk/historic-hansard/lords/1971/dec/09/south-african-intelligence-activities), calls for an investigation of South African covert activities in Britain were rejected by the Callaghan government in May 1976 – see https://api.parliament.uk/historic-hansard/written-answers/1976/may/18/south-african-bureau-of-state-security#S5CV0911P0_19760518_CWA_15.

(88) Dumont, pgs 174-179. On the March 1963 Charlemagne Grand Dinner and contacts between Damman's AENA and CEDI in 1963-65, see footnote 105. On AENA and CEDI Belgium, also see https://www.cairn.info/revue-courrier-hebdomadaire-du-crisp-1964-27-page-1.htm. For an excellent contemporary overview of the extreme Right in Belgium in the 1960s and 1970s including many of the groups mentioned in

this book, see *L'extrême droite francophone en Belgique* by distinguished historian Etienne Verhoeyen, published in CRISP in April 1974 and online at https://www.cairn.info/revue-courrier-hebdomadaire-du-crisp-1974-16-page-1.htm. Damman's political activities in the 1960s are detailed in a recent article by the Gaullist historian Dr. Catherine Lanneau of the University of Liège, *Du gaullisme à la droite radicale. Les étranges «compagnons de route» belges de l'Europe gaullienne* (for publishing details, see the Sources annex). Whilst her article provides much useful information about early Belgian conservative movements centred around Damman and about the fractious relationship between AENA, the PEU and the EM, an area on which she has conducted serious research, Lanneau in her unsubstantiated conclusion dismisses out of hand any connection between the 1973 plans for a coup d'état in Belgium, the later Brabant Wallon killings and the right-wing groups detailed not only in this book but also in other well-documented works by several renowned Belgian investigative journalists, all of whom are disparaged by Lanneau as "partisans of a great fascistoid conspiracy".

So that readers may judge for themselves, the relevant passage in Lanneau's conclusion declares (translation by this author): "All of these interlocking activities [of CEDI, AESP, LIL, MAUE, CREC and Aginter Presse, to which this author adds PIO] would continue throughout the 1970s and 1980s, feeding the research and, sometimes, the real obsessions, of certain investigative journalists who would examine what has been called the 'Cercle Pinay-Habsburg-Violet'. One can mention David Teacher and his multiple online versions of *Rogue Agents* … the British 'parapolitics' magazine *Lobster* by Robin Ramsay and Stephen Dorril … Pierre Péan and his book on the sniffer planes cited above or also Brian Crozier, a former member of the network who recounts his experiences in *Free Agent*. In Belgium too, a lot of ink has flowed, above all via very left-wing publishers, developing complicated constructions concluding in dodgy connections drawn by gaily throwing together the Italian 'years of lead' [stragi], the alleged plan for a Belgian military putsch in 1973, the scandals of the P2 lodge, Opus Dei and the 'sniffer planes' with speculations about the Brabant Wallon killers" – Lanneau, pgs 27-28; her footnote specifies that the journalists thus impugned are de Bock, Dumont and Bouten.

This author tends to agree with Lanneau's view of Bouten, a television presenter rather than an investigative journalist and a late arrival in *tueries* research, who in his most recent book - *De Bende van Nijvel en de CIA*, Uitgeverij Van Halewyck, Leuven 2011 - inaccurately recycles previous research by earlier sources about Damman, the AESP, etc., whilst adding little of his own. No evidence is however adduced by Lanneau to support her summary rejection of the lengthy and detailed investigations conducted by de Bock, Dumont and several other eminent Belgian journalists and historians, notably Gijsels, Haquin, Van Doorslaer and Verhoeyen, Brewaeys and Deliège, and Van Bosbeke. Almost all of their works were indeed published by EPO, an imprint well known to be close to the far-left PTB party but virtually the only contemporary outlet for books on the Belgian strategy of tension by journalists from the major mainstream French- and Flemish-speaking newspapers. Non-Belgian works unfortunately also get the same treatment from Lanneau: the two key sources on Violet and the Cercle - Péan's groundbreaking French journalistic investigation, and Crozier's invaluable but veiled British insider testimony - are simply swept aside without further comment, a staggering dismissal for an academic who has published no research on the subject.

Neither is any substantiation provided for Lanneau's astounding claim (pg 27) that Vankerkhoven's Belgian WACL chapter LIL was "headed by eminent members of the hyper-conservative establishment who cannot be suspected of fascism". Her assertion baldly - and boldly - contradicts the official May 1981 Sûreté report submitted by the Justice Minister, Socialist Philippe Moureaux, to the Wijninckx Senate Committee investigating the extreme Right and their private armies, in which CEPIC/MAUE members Vankerkhoven, Mercier and de Bonvoisin were personally accused of funding the Front de la Jeunesse and the NEM, both outright fascist groups implicated in the 1973 coup plans and the later investigations concerning the WNP and Group G, the fascist cell within the Gendarmerie accused of actually carrying out the Brabant Wallon killings. Lanneau's contention that MAUE/LIL stalwarts Vankerkhoven and his associates "cannot be suspected of fascism" is also inconsistent with evidence she herself provides (pgs 28-29), recording that both MAUE's longtime Honorary President Baron Adelin de Yperzele de Strihou and veteran anti-communist Roger de Laminne disassociated themselves from MAUE in 1978-79, claiming that it "had been politically infiltrated" and "passes in Belgium for holding extreme-right opinions verging on fascism", a reference to the transition between Damman and de Bonvoisin. Lanneau further seems to be unaware that Vankerkhoven's LIL continued to espouse the Lisbon-based international fascist terrorist group Aginter Presse well after its 1975 exposure and dissolution - having specificly recommended the Aginter Presse bulletin to readers of its March 1973 issue (pg 14), the LIL newsletter *Damoclès* was still quoting Aginter Presse approvingly in its March 1980 issue (pg 8), an issue which also cited Close and the PIO bulletin *Inforep* in defence of its causes.

Readers interested in a less partisan view of Damman and his associates – and covering their key decade from 1969 to 1979 rather than their earlier history - should consult the excellent Gent University doctoral thesis by Dr. Klaartje Schrijvers, *L'Europe sera de droite ou ne sera pas!*, at https://biblio.ugent.be/publication/4175616/file/4175676.pdf. Its extensive detail drawn from de Bock's archive of Damman's personal papers makes it an invaluable addition to this book and a perfect synthesis between primary source, cutting-edge journalist and faithful historian.

(89) Gijsels, *L'Enquête*, pg 224 et seq. - despite some inaccuracies and no index, the best introduction to the 1970s plans for coups d'état, the Brabant Wallon killings, the extreme right and the strategy of tension in Belgium. A chapter from the book is currently online at https://www.scribd.com/doc/271003213/Hugo-Gijsels-Coup-d-Etat-Manque-1969-1989. Whilst the best introduction to Belgian parapolitics, *L'Enquête* should however be read in conjunction with the later Brewaeys and Deliège, who have produced the (so far) definitive work on de Bonvoisin, PIO and the WNP scandal.

(90) Dumont; Laurent, pgs 297-298. On this and other conferences by the ABN/EFC, see footnote 108.

(91) Péan, pg 76.

(92) *Le Vif/L'Express*, 19/5/89. On the conflict between Coudenhove Kalergi and Habsburg in which Damman and AENA were embroiled, see footnote 88.

(93) Dumont; *Le Vif/L'Express*, 19/5/89.

(94) Christie (1984), pgs 15-16.

(95) Aginter Presse's contact within the CSU was Strauß's secretary, Marcel Hepp, who also edited the CSU newspaper, *Bayernkurier* – see Laurent, pg 133.

(96) *L'Espresso*, 24/03/74, quoted in Péan, pg 83.

(97) Dumont ; *Le Vif/L'Express*, 19/5/89. Some other Aginter Press documents are available online at http://www.ritaatria.it/Portals/0/Documenti/PiazzaFontana/aginter_presse_parte_1.pdf and http://www.ritaatria.it/Portals/0/Documenti/PiazzaFontana/aginter_presse_parte_2.pdf.

(98) Péan, pg 65. It is worth noting that in his progress report on CREC, Guérin-Sérac also mentions a meeting with Damman in Vienna in May 1969: could the three men have met at the same symposium?

(99) Published in Péan.

(100) After volunteering for service with the Force Publique in the Belgian Congo during the First World War, de Roover was sent to Russia in 1919 as unofficial Belgian liaison officer to the White Russian leader General Denikin – see the article by Van Doorslaer at https://socialistregister.com/index.php/srv/article/viewFile/5508/2406; http://www.kaowarsom.be/documents/bbom/Tome_VIIa/Roover_De.Marcel_Charles_Philippe.pdf. In November 1920, de Roover was appointed by the Council of the new League of Nations (whose first four non-permanent Council members included Belgium and Greece) to serve on the joint committee on the 1919 Greco-Bulgarian Convention of Neuilly-sur-Seine, a case later brought before the Permanent Court of International Justice – see *Het Vaderland* of 1/12/20 pg B1 at https://resolver.kb.nl/resolve?urn=ddd:010006949:mpeg21:pdf; *Het Vaderland* of 23/6/30 pg B2 at https://resolver.kb.nl/resolve?urn=ddd:010012956:mpeg21:pdf. In 1926, he became Director of SOGECHIM (Société Générale Industrielle et Chimique du Haut Katanga), then joining the anti-communist group S. E. P. E. S. - see Van Doorslaer and Verhoeyen at https://www.journalbelgianhistory.be/en/node/592; Lanneau, footnote 37 (on Lanneau, see footnote 88 here). In 1941, de Roover became Director of BRUFINA, the holding company of the Banque de Bruxelles which merged with the Banque Lambert in 1975 to become the Banque Bruxelles Lambert, BBL.

After the Second World War, de Roover was involved in several anti-communist groups - on Milpol, the Delcourt network and Gladio, see footnote 262; Van Doorslaer and Verhoeyen; *Histoire de glaives*, Michel Bouffioux, in *Gladio*, Various authors, pgs 29-60; Various authors, *Qui a tué Julien Lahaut?*; https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/PAPER%20MILLS%20AND%20FABRICATION_0001.pdf. He served as a member of the Presidium and Legal Committee of the Comité international d'Information et d'Action Sociale (CIAS), founded in 1956 - see Torben Gülstorff at https://www.wilsoncenter.org/publication/warming-cooling-war-introductory-guide-the-cias-and-other-globally-operating-anti. In November 1966, he signed an APACL Open Letter for CIAS Belgium alongside Stetsko, Labin, Kraft, Lombardo, Martín Artajo and Oberländer – see https://taiwantoday.tw/news.php?unit=4,20&post=6745.

De Roover was also a prominent early member of CEDI - see *La Vanguardia Española* of 27/1/60 pg 15 (appointed CEDI International Treasurer); *ABC* (Madrid) of 3/7/60 pg 76, *La Vanguardia Española* of 5/7/60 pg 5 and *ABC* (Sevilla) of 5/7/60 pg 15 (attended IX CEDI Congress); *ABC* (Madrid) of 11/7/61 pgs 39-40 (attended X CEDI Congress, also attending was General Gallois who published an article in the IEP Review number 56, July-August 1961); *ABC* (Madrid) of 6/3/63 pg 54 (with AENA, hosted a banquet for Fraga in Brussels – see footnote 105); *ABC* (Madrid) of 5/7/64 pg 85 and *La Vanguardia Española* of 7/7/64 pg 11 (attended

XIII CEDI Congress, Paul Van Zeeland also attending); *La Vanguardia Española* of 22/8/64 pg 4, *ABC* (Madrid) of 22/8/64 pg 44 and *ABC* (Madrid) of 26/8/64 pg 42 (attended CEDI European Political Week, Strauß also attending); *ABC* (Madrid) of 5/10/66 pg 80, 16/10/66 pg 99, 19/10/66 pg 91, 20/10/66 pg 97 and *ABC* (Sevilla) of 20/10/66 pgs 45-46 (attended XV CEDI Congress accompanied by de Kerchove, both men being speakers); *ABC* (Madrid) of 21/7/68 pg 52 (attended CEDI International Council, Gallois also attending); *La Vanguardia Española* of 20/1/70 pg 17 (hosted CEDI International Council in Brussels with Habsburg and Gaston Eyskens, the latter joining the AESP six months later); attended 4th WACL Conference in Tokyo in September 1970 as representative of CEDI Belgium - see footnote 108; *La Vanguardia Española* of 19/1/71 pg 16 (hosted CEDI International Council in Brussels). Knighted by the King in 1962, de Roover died in June 1971. On Vankerkhoven and CEDI Belgium, see Van Bosbeke, pg 15.

(101) On de Kerchove's attendance at the 1964 Bilderberg and 1966 CEDI meetings, see https://publicintelligence.net/1964-bilderberg-meeting-participant-list/; https://books.google.be/books?id=dj44AQAAMAAJ&pg=PA7684#v=onepage&q&f=false and https://books.google.be/books?id=dj44AQAAMAAJ&pg=PA7685#v=onepage&q&f=false; *ABC* (Madrid) of 5/10/66 pg 80, 16/10/66 pg 99 and 19/10/66 pg 91.

(102) Roth and Ender, pg 73.

(103) *Die unheimlichen Patrioten*, pg 437; *intern-informationen* letter of 2/11/72 in Deuling, *Verleumdung*, document IV.1.2 - see the Sources annex.

The editor of Grau's *intern-informationen* from September 1972 to March 1976 was military journalist and naval historian Jürg Meister, on whom see below, retro.seals.ch/cntmng?pid=asm-004:1972:138::962 and https://www.amazon.com/J%C3%BCrg-Meister/e/B001K1ENBK. Meister reportedly spied on Swiss journalists for the Swiss Military Intelligence Service and collaborated with the South African Military Intelligence Division (MID) to combat anti-apartheid protest, as recorded by Swiss historian Peter Hug in a recent federally-funded report:

"A South African military attaché was accredited in Switzerland from 1965 on. In 1966 the Swiss Chief of General Staff at the time [1965 - 1971], Paul Gygli, and Colonel Helmut von Frisching of the intelligence and security directorate (UNA) [Untergruppe Nachrichtendienst und Abwehr, Intelligence and Counter-Espionage Subgroup], established extraordinarily cordial contacts with the South African Chief of the Army Staff, General Charles Alan Fraser [see footnote 405] [...] Of special interest for South Africa's military intelligence service was the manner in which the Swiss army combated so-called "subversives" by waging "psychological war" [...] In Switzerland, the South African military attaché and others in his network built up contacts to some ambiguous figures on the extreme right fringe of the political spectrum, among them Jürg Meister, editor in chief of *intern-informationen*, published by Karl Friedrich Grau. As emerges from documents prepared by South Africa's military intelligence service, he considered it important to contact people like the Zürich "subversive hunter" Ernst Cincera, the director of the Schweizer Ost-Institut Peter Sager, and the president of the Working Group on Southern Africa, Christoph Blocher" – see http://www.snf.ch/SiteCollectionDocuments/nfp/nfp42p/nfp42p_hug-e.pdf.

Meister was named by Eschel Rhoodie (pg 249) of the South African Department of Information as a partner in South African propaganda operations:

"For example, we were far more active in promoting pro-South African books and manuscripts than this chapter might indicate. In fact, over a three-year period we spent some R400,000 in subsidising books by well known writers such as Wolfgang Schneider, Jurg Meister and others for the European market. There were also organisations in Switzerland and Austria which received many thousands of Rands from us to enable them to promote South Africa's interest and to build a better image for us."

In October 1974, Meister organised a meeting of the European Freedom Council in Zürich (see footnote 108), and in November attended the launch of the South African-funded Centre d'Etudes du Monde Moderne (see below). In 1975, as well as giving six speeches for the ISP, Meister also produced the ISP book *Die Weltkirchenrat und sein Blutgeld - Von der Oikumene zum Weltkirchensowjet* [The World Council of Churches and its blood money - from ecumenicalism to the World Soviet of Churches] which was widely distributed in Switzerland and in Germany - see *Die unheimlichen Patrioten*, pgs 417 and 437-442.

As for Grau's German campaigns, see *Spiegel* 50/1972 pgs 38-54 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-42763090.html for a major contemporary article on Grau's covert funding against Brandt in the 1972 elections; for other anti-Brandt operations in 1972, see footnote 354. For the most recent description of Grau's methods, see *Spiegel* 12/2000 pg 38 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-15985961.html. A fold-out chart included in Pressedienst Demokratische Initiative (see the Sources annex) lists the following Grau front groups: Studiengesellschaft für staatspolitische Öffentlichkeitsarbeit e. V. [e. V. – eingetragener Verein = registered charity] - here, the 'Frankfurt Study Group', Aktion Funk und Fernsehen, Gesellschaft für konstruktive Politik (see *ABN Correspondence*, September – October 1970 pg 41 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/13971/file.pdf), Bürger-Initiative '72, Gemeinnütziger Verein zur Förderung der politischen Willensbildung e. V. (see footnote 104), to which one should add both the Hamburg SWG (see footnote 48) and the Swiss ISP. On most of these groups and their actions in the 1972 elections, see the comprehensive documentary archive from SPD stalwart and East German intelligence (HV A) source Wolfgang Deuling, listed in the Sources annex. Both the Frankfurt Study Group and the SWG later provided 'gray' funding for the **Bund Freies Deutschland** which stood (with support from Wellems, Löwenthal, Strauß and Axel Springer) in the March 1975 West Berlin elections – search for declassified State Department cable 1974USBERL01996 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/; *Spiegel* 8/1974 pgs 30-33 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41652270.html; *Spiegel* 9/1975 pgs 28-34 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41575604.html. The **Aktion Funk und Fernsehen** (AFF) was created by Grau in 1969 to counter opposition to Löwenthal's arrival then dominance at ZDF - see *Spiegel* 52/1970 pgs 38-39 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-43801018.html, 6/1971 pgs 135-136 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-43732587.html, 33/1971 pgs 95-96 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-43144410.html, 36/1971 pgs 127-128 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-43175437.html, 46/1972 pgs 102-105 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-42765023.html, 37/1973 pgs 163-165 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41911275.html; Hirsch, pg 251; footnote 356. In the mid-1990s, the AFF Chairman was Wolfgang Reineke, a longstanding associate of Grau who had been a speaker for his Swiss ISP in the mid-1970s and was a founding member of the EIS in 1981.

(104) *Die unheimlichen Patrioten*, pg 431. On the Vereinigung [sic] zur Förderung der politischen Willensbildung e. V., a 1972 group founded by Grau for outreach to NPD

sympathisers, see Hirsch, pg 313.

(105) Crozier, pgs 72-74; *La Vanguardia Española* of 5/3/63 pg 13, 6/3/63 pg 19 and 8/3/63 pg 17; *ABC* (Madrid) of 6/3/63 pg 54, which reported a three-day visit by Minister Fraga to Brussels, his third after trips in 1959 and 1961: "He stated that the reason for this private visit was to meet with the Belgo-Spanish group of the Interparliamentary Union and with the Belgian CEDI section as well as with the members of AENA to exchange points of view." Although supposedly a private visit to Brussels, Fraga's RTBF television interview, radio speeches and attendance at a joint CEDI Belgium/AENA Charlemagne Grand Dinner were heavily covered in the Belgian French-speaking Press - *La Vanguardia Española* proudly noted that five Belgian newspapers, in all 850,000 copies a day, had reported on his visit, and that his hosts had "underscored the need for a rapid integration of Spain into the European and Atlantic Communities". Two months later, in May, Fraga accompanied Strauß to another CEDI event in Munich before attending a dinner in his honour in Bonn offered by Merkatz and attended by Jaeger, Brentano, Strauß and Globke – see *La Vanguardia Española* of 14/5/63 pgs 5 and 17; *ABC* (Madrid) of 8/5/63 pg 54, 12/5/63 pg 87, 14/5/63 pg 57, 15/5/63 pgs 5 and 56, 16/5/63 pg 57; *ABC* (Sevilla) of 8/5/63 pg 38, 12/5/63 pg 48, 14/5/63 pg 37, 15/5/63 pg 16, 16/5/63 pg 38 and 17/5/63 pg 54. Fraga, Merkatz and Strauß then met again the next month in Madrid at the CEDI XII Congress – see *ABC* (Madrid) of 8/6/63 pgs 5 and 57; *ABC* (Madrid) of 9/6/63 pgs 67 and 88. It is worth noting, in passing, the planned presence at the June 1963 CEDI Congress of a certain **Georges Papadopoulos**, possibly the then Major in the Greek KYP intelligence service and main contact with John Fatseas of the CIA from 1959 to 1964 who later led the coup d'état by the Greek Colonels in April 1967, ruling as head of the military junta until November 1973 – see *ABC* (Madrid) of 5/6/63 pgs 51-52. The Greek junta offered considerable support for Italian neo-fascism, later inviting fifty neo-fascist militants including Stefano Delle Chiaie for a 'study trip' to Greece in April 1968.

In 1965, two years after Fraga's visit to Belgium, Brussels was again the venue for a joint conference of European associations held in January 1965 by AENA, CEDI and the PEU, followed the next day by a meeting of the CEDI International Council - see *La Vanguardia Española* of 30/1/65 pg 44; *La Vanguardia Española* of 31/1/65 pg 80; *ABC* (Madrid) of 31/1/65 pg 72. This was a crucial period for the Spanish diplomatic effort to obtain membership of the EEC which however required candidate states to be democratic. Having requested the opening of association negotiations with the EEC in February 1962, Spain was rebuffed first in March 1964 and again in December 1966; despite support from France and Germany, Belgian and Italian objections about the lack of democracy in Franco's Spain could not be overcome. On German support for Spanish membership of the EEC via CEDI, see Birgit Aschmann, *The Reliable Ally: Germany Supports Spain's Integration Efforts 1957-67* in *Zeitschrift für Geschichte der Europäischen Integration*, 2001 Vol. 7 No. 1 at https://www.zgei.nomos.de/fileadmin/zgei/doc/Zgei_01_01.pdf. The process of Spanish membership of the EEC only resumed in July 1977 after the death of Franco; the lengthy hiatus underscored the usefulness of CEDI as a major channel between Spanish and European conservatives.

(106) Laurent, pg 302.

(107) Re the two International Conferences on Political Warfare of the Soviets (CIGP), ""These conferences [Paris, December 1960; Rome, November 1961], attended by public figures from some fifty countries, had the aim of bringing together "beyond the bounds of nations or of doctrines eminent persons from political, academic,

diplomatic, trade-union and media circles for the defence of freedom". Its Board of Sponsors notably included Senators Dodd, Keating, Mundt, Admiral Burke, Presidents Paul-Henri Spaak, Paul Van Zeeland, Antoine Pinay, René Pleven, Maurice Schumann, Heinrich von Brentano, Fulbert Youlou, Ivan Matteo Lombardo, Pacciardi, Carlos Lacerda, Jules Romain and Gabriel Marcel" (Henri Coston: *Dictionnaire de la politique française*). Amongst the other French representatives were General Vanuxem, François Duprat, former leader of Ordre Nouveau [...] the lawyer Georges de Maleville, member of the National Front, Georges Albertini and many exiles from Eastern European countries" - Laurent, pg 302; also see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP75-00149R000200330091-7.pdf. For pictures of Lombardo, Labin and others at the second conference in Rome in 1961, see https://patrimonio.archivioluce.com/luce-web/detail/IL0030000823/11/seconda-conferenza-internazionale-sulla-politica-soviet.html. Labin and her husband Edouard, mainstays of the French WACL section, were early contacts of Aginter Presse; a contact list of Aginter Presse published by the inquiry into Aginter Press by the post-revolutionary Portuguese intelligence service SDCI mentions a meeting between the Labins and Aginter Presse in December 1966, just after the creation of WACL and of Aginter Presse - see Laurent, pg 302. The LIL was founded in Paris by Labin some time before 1964 – see the December 1967 first issue of *Damoclès,* pg 4.

(108) On the 1962 APACL conference, see Lombardo's authorised European biography at https://archives.eui.eu/files/inventories/15258.pdf. Lombardo died in 1980. On the EFC, see http://ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1967/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1967-27.pdf, http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1972/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1972-35.pdf; http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1972/The_Ukrainian_ Weekly_1972-39.pdf; *Lobster* 12, pgs 60-61; *Eastern European Unity under Russian Communism and the Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations*, thesis by Alexander Sosenko, University of Illinois, 2010, online at https://www.ideals.illinois.edu/bitstream/handle/2142/18314/Sosenko_Alexander.pdf; https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/STETSKO,%20YAROSLAV_0147.pdf. For a riposte to hostile media coverage of Vankerkhoven, Lombardo, APACL/WACL and the ABN/EFC, see *Damoclès*, October 1980, pgs 1-7; Kyril Drenikoff papers (see footnote 487), Box 142, Folder 3. For an archive of *ABN Correspondence*, see http://diasporiana.org.ua/?s=ABN.

The Founding President of the **European Freedom Council** was Danish MP and former Foreign Minister from 1950 to 1953 **Ole Bjørn Kraft**, at the time a Vice-President of the PEU; he had previously served in the mid-1950s on the PEU Central Committee alongside Julian Amery and Paul van Zeeland – see http://web.archive.org/web/20081030100401/http://www.coe.int/t/dgal/dit/ilcd/Historical_Content/hymn/kalergi1.pdf. Kraft had been a founding member of the Bilderberg Group in 1954, also attending the 1958 Buxton and 1963 Cannes conferences – see the relevant years at https://publicintelligence.net/category/documents/bilderberg/bilderberg-participant-lists/. Lombardo and Yaroslav Stetsko, President of the ABN, were the two founding Chairmen of the EFC. The German WACL leader Theodor Oberländer, a former NSDAP member from 1933 to 1945 and later disgraced former Exiles Minister from 1953 to 1960 (see footnote 367), sat on the EFC Executive Committee. The Information Committee was chaired by Suzanne Labin and included another Vice-President of the PEU, the Marquis de Valdeiglesias, who was also Vice-President of CEDI.

One of the first joint ABN/EFC conferences was held in London from 15th - 22nd October 1968 on the theme "How to Defeat Russia". A later joint ABN/EFC conference entitled "Our Alternative" was held in Brussels on 12th - 16th November

1970, and was organised by Damman as Secretary-General of the CBUP, and Vankerkhoven as Secretary-General of the Belgian LIL section. The journal *ABN Correspondence* (January – February 1971 pgs 4-8 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/13972/file.pdf) reveals that the Brussels conference was attended amongst others by "the representative of the German anti-Communist organizations Mr. and Mrs. Grau", and that under the Chairmanship of Kraft and Stetsko, the speakers included Austin J. App (see the CIOC-CIDCC-Sint Unum annex), Labin, Lombardo, Oberländer, Vankerkhoven and French General Paul Vanuxem. Two months earlier, Kraft, Stetsko, Labin, Lombardo, Oberländer and Vanuxem had attended the 4th WACL Conference held in Tokyo in September 1970, as had the then Shadow Defence Minister Geoffrey Rippon and Stewart-Smith for the UK, American Council for World Freedom President John M. Fisher, Lee Edwards and Stefan Possony for the USA, Martín Artajo for Spain, Gaupp-Berghausen for CEDI, de Roover for CEDI Belgium, and Albertini for *Est et Ouest* – see the Unification Church's *The Way of the World*, October 1970 at https://www.tparents.org/Library/Unification/Publications/TWotW/TWotW-70/TWotW-7010.pdf. Vanuxem, who had previously represented France at the 2nd WACL Conference held in Saigon in December 1968 (see *ABN Correspondence*, January – February 1969 pg 2 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/13912/file.pdf), was later involved in the last-ditch defence of South Vietnam - "Vanuxem was present at the closing stages of the Vietnam War, urging the incoming South Vietnamese President, General Minh, to keep fighting until the bitter end, which came only a few days later" (*Decent Interval*, Frank Snepp, Penguin, London 1980). In 1978, Vanuxem figured on an AESP membership list as a member of an AESP Study Group; for his earlier involvement with Labin, Lombardo and Albertini, see footnote 107.

In November 1972, the EFC Executive Board included Kraft, Lombardo, Stetsko, Oberländer, Labin and Vankerkhoven – see *ABN Correspondence*, January – February 1973 pgs 7 and 25 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/13974/file.pdf, the latter mention coming just after the "text of a speech delivered at the closing meeting of the European symposium of Antibes organized by the European Academy of Political Science, the Movement for European Unification and the College of Young European Leaders on September 17, 1972". Lombardo and Vankerkhoven had recently visited Mexico City for the 6th WACL Conference in August 1972 – see *ABN Correspondence*, November – December 1972 pg 18 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/13973/file.pdf.

At a July 1973 meeting of the EFC in London, the participants included Lombardo, Habsburg, WACL notables David Rowe, Ryoko Osami Kuboki and Raimundo Guerrero, and Vanuxem. The July 1973 EFC meeting had grim news from Geoffrey Stewart-Smith, Chairman of the Foreign Affairs Circle, the British WACL chapter since 1972: following internal controversy (sparked by Stewart-Smith) about fascism and anti-semitism within WACL, the International Congress planned for the following month in London had been cancelled by WACL due to visa problems, but in the end was held as a meeting of the British Chapter of WACL attended only by those participants already in Europe – see http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1973/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1973-35.pdf. WACL refused to reimburse the expenses incurred by Stewart-Smith's British WACL chapter, which withdrew from WACL in 1974 as a result, triggering a decade-long dispute between Stewart-Smith and WACL. See http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1974/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1974-11.pdf; Anderson and Anderson, pgs 82-91; footnotes 186 and 487.

Meanwhile, under the presidency of Lombardo and Labin, the EFC held a meeting in Zürich in October 1974, a meeting organised by Jürg Meister, editor of

Grau's newsletter *intern-informationen*, and addressed by Peter Sager, "Karl Grau (East Germany)" and Meister amongst others – see *ABN Correspondence*, November – December 1974 pg 19 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/13975/file.pdf. The EFC meeting could celebrate good news; offsetting the resignation of Stewart-Smith's British WACL chapter, the EFC itself had been accepted as a National Chapter of WACL at the 7th WACL Conference, held that April in Washington – see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/World_League_for_Freedom_and_Democracy.

Another joint ABN/EFC conference was held in Munich in November 1975 on the subject of "The Tragic Agreement in Helsinki" – see http://protest-muenchen.sub-bavaria.de/artikel/560; *ABN Correspondence*, November – December 1975 pgs 1-8 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/13976/file.pdf which reveals that the conference was attended by German MP Walter Becher, that the Italian report was given by "the Italian editor Eggardo Beltremette", no doubt the Eggardo Beltrametti who was Co-Director of the ISSED magazine and one of the speakers at the 1965 Parco dei Principi conference (see above), and that the Dutch report was given by "the Dutch Dr. A. Mertens"; this is probably the Brugge-based journalist Dr. A. Mertens who had written to the ABN in April 1966 (*ABN Correspondence*, September – October 1966 pg 42 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/13909/file.pdf) and who had attended the July 1974 XXIII CEDI Congress representing the Antwerp-based *To The Point International* (see footnote 177). At the 1975 Munich meeting, Kraft was elected as EFC Honorary President, Lombardo as President, Yaroslav Stetsko as Vice-President, and Labin and Vankerkhoven as Executive Board members. The next day, the ABN Conference was addressed by Pinochet's representative, "Mrs. Lucia Gevert [Parada], legate at the Chilean embassy in Bonn" who also spoke at meetings of the SWG and of Grau's Swiss group, the ISP, in 1975-76 (see footnotes 48 and 354) and who served as Chilean Ambassador to Germany from February 1976 until October 1978.

A later joint ABN/EFC conference was held in London in 1982 ("The West's Strongest Allies"). The title of the 1982 conference may well be related to a 1980 book by Stefan Troyanski, published by Huyn's Swiss EKMS, entitled *Der mächstigste Verbündete* [The strongest ally] and republished in English in 1982 by the FAPC in London and Western Goals Europe in Munich as *The strongest ally: the free West's most reliable allies are the enslaved peoples in the Eastern bloc* – the German edition was reviewed by Dr. Werner Marx – see *Spiegel* 44/1983 pgs 51-58 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14024265.html. The Press release issued by the September 1982 ABN/EFC conference (Kyril Drenikoff papers, Box 54 – see footnote 487), describes the group in the following terms: "The EFC is a West European anti-communist, anti-Bolshevik organization whose primary aims are: to mobilize support in the Free World for the subjugated nations' liberation struggle; to promote the necessity of waging a Western political-psychological offensive against Russian imperialism and communism; and to combat Russian communist subversion and infiltration of Western free and democratic societies."

At the 1982 ABN/EFC conference, the British MP John Wilkinson (see below and footnote 566) was elected Chairman of the Executive Committee and EFC President; whilst EFC President, he attended a February 1985 Cercle meeting in Washington. The journal *ABN Correspondence* (November – December 1982, pgs 5-20 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/14106/file.pdf) reports that members of the Honorary Presidium elected at the 1982 conference included Habsburg, ABN President Yaroslav Stetsko, Fraga Iribarne "and others"; the speakers included Wilkinson, General Singlaub, and Dr. Bertil Häggman, a longstanding ABN/EFC stalwart and author of a 1975 ISC Conflict Study, *Sweden's Maoist*

Subversives – a Case Study, on whom see Scott-Smith (2012). The international support enjoyed by the ABN/EFC was demonstrated by the membership of the International Honorary Committee created to celebrate the 1982 fortieth anniversary of the Ukrainian Insurgent Army at a rally on Trafalgar Square with 3,000 participants; luminaries endorsing the ABN/EFC event included "Rt. Hon. Yaroslav Stetsko, H. R. H. Otto von Habsburg, Senator Barry Goldwater (USA), General Sir Walter Walker (Great Britain), General Bruce Holloway (USA), General Daniel O. Graham (USA), General John Singlaub (USA), General Robert C. Richardson III (USA), General Robert Close (Belgium), General Wego W. K. Chiang (Republic of China), General Adriano Magi-Braschi (Italy)", on whom see footnote 109. The year after this ABN/EFC conference, Generals Walker, Close, Singlaub, Graham and Magi-Braschi all attended the 1983 WACL conference in Luxembourg – see footnote 487.

The outreach of the ABN/EFC was demonstrated in November 1983 by the Honorary Committee to commemorate the fortieth anniversary of the ABN: amongst others, it included Habsburg; American Senators Jesse Helms and Philip Crane; British MPs John Wilkinson, Geoffrey Rippon and Winston Churchill; Spanish MP Guillermo Kirkpatrick; Generals Walker, Holloway ("former Commander-in-Chief of the Strategic Air Command (SAC)"), Graham, Singlaub, Richardson and Magi-Braschi; Professor Henri Bernard. The US Ambassador to the UN from 1981 to 1985, Jeane Kirkpatrick, and former National Security Advisor Richard V. Allen were speakers at the Congressional celebrations compered by Senator Crane; the ABN also received a telegram of congratulations from former Senator James L. Buckley, President of Radio Free Europe/Radio Liberty from 1982 until 1985, who had served as Reagan's Under-Secretary of State for Security Assistance from 1981 to 1982 – see *ABN Correspondence*, January – February 1984 pgs 6-7 and March – April 1984 pg 7 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/14109/file.pdf.

In November 1985, the ABN/EFC held a joint Congress in London at which Sir Frederic Bennett was elected to the Honorary Presidium of the EFC alongside its President Habsburg, Yaroslav Stetsko and Fraga Iribarne – see footnote 85 on this, a June 1987 EFC meeting attended by Habsburg, Wilkinson, Bennett, General Robert Close and Guillermo Kirkpatrick, a December 1988 Inaugural Rally for an EFC European Freedom Campaign chaired by Bennett which was addressed by Chalfont, Amery and Bennett, and a July 1990 EFC meeting attended by Bennett.

Besides rallying the forces of the Right, the ABN/EFC also offered a platform for anti-Soviet propaganda by disinformation experts associated with the Cercle. In November 1986, the ABN held a "Campaign Freedom Conference" in Toronto on the subject of "National Liberation as an Alternative to Nuclear War". Under the newly elected ABN President, Stetsko's widow Slava, the conference was attended by Nicaraguan Contra leader, Mario Calero, and addressed by Herbert Romerstein of the USIA and Maurice Tugwell, former Director of the Canadian Centre for Conflict Studies, amongst others – see *ABN Correspondence*, January – February 1987 pgs 8-12 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/14112/file.pdf. In May 1988, the ABN held a conference on "Will the Soviet Union Survive?" which was addressed by the following speakers: Arnaud de Borchgrave of the *Washington Times*; Maurice Tugwell, director of the Mackenzie Institute for the Study of Terrorism, Revolution and Propaganda in Canada; Reed Irvine, Chairman of Accuracy in Media; Dr. Robert Morris; Herbert Romerstein; John Wilkinson and Bertil Häggman of the EFC; General John K. Singlaub - see *ABN Correspondence*, May – June 1988 pgs 6-9 and 18-29 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/14113/file.pdf.

Romerstein's *Soviet Active Measures and Propaganda: Influence Activities in the Gorbachev Era* was published by Tugwell's Mackenzie Institute in 1990 – see *ABN Correspondence*, March - April 1990 pg 48 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/14316/file.pdf. After the fall of the Berlin Wall and the end of the Cold War, the ABN/EFC lost its purpose although it continued until 2000 – see http://diasporiana.org.ua/?s=ABN.

(109) *L'Espresso*, 17/12/74; Willan; Lombardo's authorised European biography referenced in footnote 108. Prior to this 1965 conference, Major Magi-Braschi had worked under General De Lorenzo within SIFAR, specialising in guerrilla warfare and counter-insurgency with a brief stay in Vietnam. After retiring with the rank of Major-General, Magi-Braschi supported the ABN/EFC and WACL - see footnotes 108 and 487. On Lombardo's attendance as a speaker at later conferences by the Alberto Pollio Institute and Interdoc, see tabs IML-64, IML-66 and IML-69 (pgs 14-15) in his official EU archive at https://archives.eui.eu/files/inventories/15258.pdf.

(110) Naylor, pg 259, who points out that a water-sniffing plane would be of great use to Pesenti's cement company; https://www.italcementi.it/it/la-nostra-storia; http://www.fondazionepesenti.it/the-history/?lang=en; Arduini reproduced in the CIOC-CIDCC-Sint Unum annex below; footnote 133. The Italmobiliare business empire owned by Italcementi included the Istituto Bancario Italiano (sold in 1982), the second-largest Italian insurance company Riunione Adriatica di Sicurtà (RAS), held from 1952 until Pesenti's death in 1984, and a stable of regional newspapers: *Il Tempo* in Rome, *La Notte* in Milan, *La Gazzetta del Sud* in Messina and *Il Giornale* in Bergamo. Lancia was sold to FIAT in October 1969 for a token sum, having incurred losses of $70 million at 1970 prices, according to the CIA report on Sint Unum reproduced in Arduini. On Pesenti's companies, see footnote 273.

(111) The Cercle Pinay complex had multiple links to Calvi's Banco Ambrosiano which are described below. This study cannot however attempt to give a full account of the financial links between the Vatican Bank, P2, Sindona, Calvi and Pesenti - see Cornwell; Yallop; Raw; Naylor.

(112) Christie (1984), pg 12; Willan, pg 44.

(113) Péan, pgs 97-102.

(114) Péan, pg 213.

(115) Bacelon, pgs 243-244; Wolton, pg 258. It should be noted that Bacelon is generally unreliable in comparison to Péan whose work he largely recycles.

(116) *Dans le secret des princes*, Christine Ockrent et le Comte de Marenches, Livres de poche Stock 1986, pgs 135-137. An English translation was published as *The Evil Empire*, Sidgwick & Jackson (Chapman Pincher's publishers ...), London 1988. Crozier suggests personal rivalries as a cause for Violet's dismissal – see Crozier, pg 191, also quoted below.

(117) Kissinger's later prominence as National Security Advisor and then Secretary of State has overshadowed his earlier career; he, like many Cercle Pinay contacts, started in the wartime intelligence services (OSS-CIC/SOE-MI6). As Vladimir Putin likes to recount, Kissinger once remarked to him: "All decent people started their careers in intelligence" - see https://www.economist.com/books-and-arts/2013/05/11/closing-doors. Having been spotted by the talent scout Fritz Kraemer (see

footnote 335), Kissinger served in the CIC during the war before teaching from 1946 on at the European Command Intelligence Center in Oberursel, known as Camp King. Besides being the interrogation centre for high-ranking members of the former Nazi administration, Camp King was also chosen in 1946 as the first site for the Gehlen Org - on Camp King, see http://www.campkingoberursel.de/Sonderdr_kompl_2011.pdf. One prominent American to serve alongside Kissinger at Camp King was Arnold M. Silver who went on to be a "very senior Agency man in charge of counter-subversion in Western Europe" (Crozier, pg 134), later fired as part of the 1977 mass dismissals of CIA officers, and a core member of the 6I in the 1980s.

After his tour in the CIC, Kissinger served as a consultant to the Director of the Psychological Strategy Board (later subsumed into the Office for Policy Coordination) and began a close association with the Rockefeller brothers in 1954, serving from 1955 to 1956 as director of a Council of Foreign Relations study group on nuclear weapons of which David Rockefeller was a member. He then worked from 1956 to 1958 as Director of the Special Studies Project funded by the Rockefeller Brothers Fund presided by Nelson Rockefeller, Governor of New York and candidate for the Republican presidential nomination in 1960, 1964, and 1968. After the Special Studies Project was concluded, Nelson Rockefeller employed Kissinger as a part-time foreign policy consultant before appointing him as a full-time member of his staff in late 1968. In 1969, when Kissinger became Nixon's National Security Advisor, Rockefeller paid him $50,000 as a severance payment. For the post of Military Assistant to the National Security Advisor, Kissinger chose Alexander Haig, another of Fritz Kraemer's acolytes; Kraemer's son Sven, in 1977 a probable 6I founding member, also served in the Nixon-Kissinger National Security Council.

Nelson Rockefeller went on to undertake four trips to twenty Latin American republics in April-May 1969 on behalf of President Nixon and served as Vice-President under Gerald Ford following Nixon's resignation in August 1974; in 1975, as Vice-President, he chaired the first investigation into the CIA's illegal domestic activities (the Rockefeller Commission, forerunner to the Church Committee) – see http://www.aarclibrary.org/publib/contents/church/contents_church_reports_rockcomm.htm; https://history-matters.com/archive/contents/church/contents_church_reports_rockcomm.htm; https://www.maryferrell.org/pages/Rockefeller_Commission.html.

(118) David Rockefeller, *Memoirs*, Random House, New York 2002, pg 413. Monsignor Alberto Giovannetti was appointed as the first Permanent Observer of the Holy See to the UN in March 1964 and served until July 1973 - see *ABC* (Madrid) of 8/4/64 pg 46; *La Vanguardia Española* of 9/4/64 pg 15; *ABC* (Madrid) of 28/7/73 pg 29; *La Vanguardia Española* of 21/8/73 pg 21; https://holyseemission.org/contents/mission/former-observers.php. Although eventually prevailed upon to withdraw from the Cercle, Rockefeller was a regular participant for nearly a decade, attending a November 1977 Cercle meeting – see declassified State Department cable 1977STATE277883 given below. Großmann records that Rockefeller first attended a meeting of the Cercle in Rome in May 1968, six months before Nixon's victory in the Presidential elections of November 1968. Rockefeller then attended the first Cercle meeting to be held on American soil at the Rockefeller Center on New York on 6th December 1968 and a later meeting hosted by Strauß in Bavaria in early 1969 – see *Die Internationale der Konservativen*, pgs 465-466.

(119) The telcons are available with a ProQuest subscription at the Digital National Security Archive – see https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB263/;

https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB263/index2.htm; https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB193/index.htm; https://www.proquest.com/products-services/dnsa.html. Initially, the telephone calls were transcribed as third-person accounts; by the end of 1969, with better technology, verbatim transcripts were produced.

It was in the spring of 1969 that Rockefeller first suggested that the recently-appointed National Security Advisor Kissinger meet the Cercle. Telcon KA00527 of 16th April 1969 records: "R asked if there was any chance of K's going to the next meeting of their group in Paris. R asked if K was going to Bilderberg. K said he has not decided yet, but it was on his calendar and barring any crises, he is hoping to go. R said K might consider staying over and attending meeting in Paris the following Tuesday. K said he would try. (FYI: Bilderberg is week-end of May 8)." The Bilderberg conference was held in Marienlyst, Denmark - see https://publicintelligence.net/1969-bilderberg-meetings-participant-list/. Kissinger was eventually unable to attend both the Bilderberg conference and the Paris Cercle meeting, so Rockefeller reported back to him on 16th May, as detailed in telcon KA00761: "R discussed meeting in Paris – Strauss was not there. R said the group would like to see K and asked about July 2, which would be after the French elections [of 1st and 15th June]. K asked how much time would be needed and R thought 2-8 hours. R said Pinet (?) himself is planning to come – K asked about Strauss and R said he was not at meeting so could not affirm it. K said blocking out that much time during the day is practically impossible. R asked about doing it at dinner - K said if it could be done at 8.00 this might work. R said 7.00 would be better even if K were a little late. They agreed to put this date down."

More details about the planned meeting are given in telcon KA00940 which records the following exchange on 25th June 1969: "R called concerning the appointment w/K on July 2. They discussed the time and K suggested 7.30 p.m. and he will try not to let it slip. R said it will be held at Governor [Nelson] Rockefeller's Washington home on Foxhall Road. K asked if he were expected to give a talk; R said no, the guests at the dinner will outline to K certain thoughts they feel would be of interest to him. R suggested that K might bring someone with him to make notes so K won't be occupied with that task. K said he would plan to bring one person. R said if K finds out 24 hours ahead that he couldn't make it, he would appreciate a call since these people are coming in from all over for this dinner meeting. K promised he would but added that it would take something really major to keep him from attending, and he doesn't foresee any particular crisis. R said they would hope and count on it, and he felt K would find it very worthwhile. K said he looked forward to seeing him."

A memorandum prepared for Kissinger of the dinner on 2nd July 1969 has recently been released at https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/LOC-HAK-268-2-27-3.pdf, and reveals that the meeting was attended for the American side by David Rockefeller and his assistant at the Chase Manhattan Bank Joseph Verner Reed (on whom see footnote 122), and Henry Kissinger and his aide William A. K. Lake, better known as Tony Lake. Lake soon disagreed with Kissinger on the bombing of Cambodia and left the State Department in 1970; he himself later served as National Security Advisor to President Clinton from 1993 to 1997. Another American attending the 1969 Cercle dinner was the industrialist Crosby M. Kelly.

The European representatives of the Cercle were Pinay, Violet (who is named as Jean-Eugène on page 11 of the CIA release), Pesenti, Andreotti, Otto von Habsburg and Alois Mertes who had been the German Foreign Ministry's Director for

European Security and Regional Disarmament since studying under Kissinger at Harvard in 1968-69. From 1982 to his death in 1985, Mertes was Minister of State at the Foreign Office, attending two Cercle meetings in July 1983 and July 1984, detailed below. The Latin American angle at the July 1969 Cercle dinner was given by Brazilian financier Antonio Sanchez de Larragoiti (on whom see footnote 122); another guest was Pierre Eddé, son of Emile Eddé, the Lebanese President from 1936 to 1941. A former Education and Finance Minister between 1953 and 1958, Pierre Eddé served simultaneously as Lebanese Minister of the Interior, of Labour and of Finance in 1968-69. Married to a Brazilian of Lebanese origin, he had considerable business interests in Brazil and was a close friend of Rockefeller – see http://www.rdl.com.lb/1997/1959/edde.htm.

Following the July 1969 Cercle meeting, Rockefeller and Kissinger discussed Violet, Pinay and Crosby Kelly in two telephone calls in December 1969 and in January 1970. The first telephone call, recorded in telcon KA01835 of 23rd December 1969, specifies that Violet had written to Crosby Kelly, to some extent claiming knowledge of Pompidou's position on the Middle East. Dubious about the claim, Kelly then sought confirmation from Rockefeller, who now felt that Violet had misrepresented his relationship with Pompidou; Kissinger, on the other hand, had been more sceptical from the outset: "R: [...] My friend Violay [sic] has written a long letter to Crosby Kelly who came in to see me today and the letter will arrive to you via your new appointment person Dave Young who is Crosby's son-in-law. He is going to bring it down. I read it today and frankly am quite embarrassed because he [Violet] now says that he and Mr. Pinay (?) have the closest understanding of where M. Pompidou is going but he has never said he is representing the President in an official way. He can give the views of what M. Pompidou thinks ... It shows you were so much smarter than we were and I am very embarrassed. You might want to see him. When you read the letter I wish you would let us know if you still want him to come but it was not what he represented to me and I am very sore about it. K: Well, that was a very understandable misunderstanding. R: I am sorry because it just shows how right you were to insist that ... clarify it. Henry, can you say anything about the story that came out about our visit [to you]? K: Well, it certainly did not come from us. R: Well, it did not come from us. K: Some of the group spoke to the Arabs and it may have come from them, but it certainly did not come from us. R: It was strange because the article said a "high government official". I am sure it did not come from you, but I wonder if it did not come from some White House source. K: Not unless it came from the President and I'm sure he wouldn't have. The only thing that happened that I remember, Flanigan [Peter Flanigan, on Kissinger's staff] is putting together a report on oil quotas - oil imports. There were some newsmen who had .... these 5 companies and were they trying to speed up because of your oil imports. R: On the other hand, the article did not mention any of the 3 oil company presidents. It mentioned Jack, Bob Anderson and myself. K: Conceivable it could have come from Anderson. R: The Arabs are pleased but our Jewish friends are anything but. K: But that bullet had to be bitten sooner or later. R: Thank you very much. Later on when you have seen the letter you might let me know what you think, but I think you should read the letter. K: I will read the letter and I will call you then."

The specific newspaper article referred to by Rockefeller has not been identified, but its subject matter is clear from contemporary Press reports - the "re-balancing" under Nixon and Kissinger of American policy towards the Middle East, taking a more pro-Arab stance and applying greater pressure on Israel to negotiate with Jordan for the return of the West Bank seized in the June 1967 Six Day War. A week after the telephone call, the Washington *Daily Chronicle* of 30th December 1969 reported that a committee of mostly Jewish American businessmen had been formed to lobby the White House "to offset pro-Arab influence exerted at the White House by David Rockefeller, Robert Anderson and John J. McCloy. In confidential White House chats the past few weeks, these three titans of U.S commercial and oil interests in the Arab states have pressed hard on Mr. Nixon to warm relations with the Arabs. U.S GIVEN WARNING Their message: the US stands to lose its entire Middle Eastern oil income to growing Soviet influence unless it moderates its strong historic pro-Israel posture" – see https://newspaperarchive.com/centralia-daily-chronicle-dec-30-1969-p-4/.

The second conversation between the two men about Violet and Kelly was held on 12th January 1970 and was recorded in telcon KA01902: "R: Other thing: I understand you got a letter from Violet. I'm curious whether it clarified things. K: I thought this was the letter that … No, it made the same point. R: Is this the letter to Crosby? K: Yes. I'd be glad to see Violet. It's clear that he is okay, but he gave us to understand that he was doing it in relation to Pompidou, and I don't think he was. He is knowledgeable and reliable, but he misled us. I get 2 types of hate mail a day: one saying get out of Vietnam, never mind what happens and two saying you god-damned bastards, why don't you protect the Jews. R: I have no doubt that you did the right thing. K: If we must stand, it is better to stand for something different from the Israelis. We're not going to back off of this. R: Good. Glad to hear it."

The 12th January 1970 date of this second phone-call suggests one likely subject of concern relating to Kissinger, Pompidou, Violet and American aviation industrialist Kelly: a major French intervention in Middle Eastern politics via the January 1970 sale by Pompidou of over one hundred Dassault Mirage 5 fighter-bombers to the new Libyan regime, the Revolutionary Command Council which had taken power under Muammar Gaddafi on 1st September 1969. The sale of the Mirage 5s – fifty of which had previously been ordered by Israel but were embargoed by France in 1967 after Israel launched the Six Day War despite de Gaulle's objections – crops up in a telcon between Kissinger and President Nixon on 14th January 1970, two days after the above phone-call: "K: The French Ambassador came in with a personal message to you from Pompidou about the Mid-East, the sale of Mirages to Libya. The number they gave and that was in the papers is 50, and the fact of the matter is 100. It is more than the Libyans can use in 50 years. [Seven lines redacted] K: It is really pushing the arms race several notches higher. P: What are the French up to. K: With the Germans screwing around in Eastern Europe the French want to start their own ____ to Moscow. They know they have nothing to offer in Mid-Europe. P: I suppose Pompidou has told the Russians. K: The Russians most certainly know. P: What is their game? Our game has to be to see if the Israeli[s] can take care of themselves. K: I think you have to move with the Israely [sic] aid request and be generous."

The Israelis certainly could take care of themselves, sidestepping the French embargo by building the Mirage 5 themselves – see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dassault_Mirage_5; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/IAI_Nesher and https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/IAI_Kfir. Dassault himself was none too happy about the sale of Mirages to Libya – see https://www.nytimes.com/1970/01/24/archives/dassault-mirage-jet-builder-says-he-has-no-control-over-sale-by.html. A confidential South African diplomatic communication from their representative in Cologne dated 16th January 1970 discusses an indirect approach to South Africa by Dassault to enquire "i) whether South Africa would have any interest in purchasing further Mirages for the use of the S. A. A. F. ii) if not whether South Africa would be prepared to acquire Mirages for re-export to Israel […] Dassault is pro-Israeli in sympathy and is much concerned at the projected sale of 50 Mirages to Libya. If South Africa were prepared to place an additional order for Mirages [...] Dassault would be able to plead difficulty in supplying Mirages to Libya" – see https://digitalarchive.wilsoncenter.org/document/116592. In April 1973, Libya's transfer of several of its Mirages to Egypt as part of the military build-up for the October 1973 Yom Kippur War aroused serious concern in the State Department and in Israel – see https://aad.archives.gov/aad/display-partial-records.jsp?f=4732&mtch=36&q=Libyan+Mirage&cat=all&dt=2472&tf=X&bc=sl,sd.

Besides the obvious geopolitical considerations, another reason for the American sensitivity about sales of the Mirage 5 related to US industrial policy - Crosby Kelly was a member of the American National Association of Manufacturers Foreign Relations Committee (see Scott-Smith referenced below). The main Western competitor to the Mirage III/Mirage 5 for foreign military sales was the Lockheed F-104 Starfighter which had won NATO approval and widespread deployment in Europe, Turkey, Jordan, Pakistan, Japan and Taiwan; nonetheless, the US government had to bail out Lockheed in 1971. "For the Third World, the French Mirage III is preferred over the MIG-21 or the American Starfighter as a simple and cheap supersonic aircraft" – *Spiegel* 4/1971 pg 76 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-43375320.html.

A decade earlier, the Swiss Air Force had also agreed, judging the Starfighter to be too expensive and too demanding of its pilots, and in 1961 had agreed to license local production of a Swiss version of the French fighter, the Mirage IIIS. The intermediary for the Swiss deal with Dassault was Jean Violet. However, the 66% cost overrun of the Mirage IIIS programme before their entry into service in 1966 led to a major scandal and the forced resignation of the Swiss Air Force commander, the Chief of the General Staff and the Minister of Defence – see Faligot and Guisnel, pgs 33-34; *Ausgemusterte Mittel der Schweizer Luftwaffe* at https://www.vtg.admin.ch/de/die-schweizer-armee/geschichte.html; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_the_Swiss_Air_Force#Mirage_affair. It should be noted that in 1963, despite the UN arms embargo against South Africa, the Swiss Air Force had secretly sold French DEFA cannon to South Africa to arm their own forty Mirage IIIs, received from 1962 on – see Hug, referenced in footnote 103; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dassault_Mirage_III#South_Africa; *Spiegel* 31/1970 pg 86 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-44916244.html. The 1961 Swiss licensing of Mirage III production was not the first occasion that Violet had acted on behalf of Dassault; Großmann records that Violet was the intermediary who set up a 1957 meeting between General Gallois and Defence Minister Strauß to discuss the purchase of Mirage IIIs by the German Air Force – see *Die Internationale der Konservativen*, pg 447.

Besides his involvement with Kissinger and Rockefeller within the Cercle, Crosby Kelly functioned from about 1967 to 1975 as the American promoter of Interdoc and distributor of its material within the US – see Scott-Smith (2012), pgs 196-197, and Scott-Smith, *Interdoc, Western Anti-Communism and the Transnational Imperative*, published in *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, pgs 139-141.

To return to the Cercle, telcon KA04141 of 5th November 1970 discusses preparations for a later Cercle meeting held in December 1970: "K: Will see you Dec 3, but if you come down earlier - - R: I will try to stop by. K: On the 3rd, the language problem we can work out as last time. R: Do you want to bring David or someone along? K: Winston Lord who is fluent in French. He's one of my assistance [sic]." The meeting, rescheduled to 2nd December, was attended by Kissinger and Lord, who was the author of the twelve-page memorandum recording the meeting, reproduced in full below. Kissinger certainly attended more than these two Cercle meetings; Rockefeller's memoirs note that Kissinger participated in Cercle private dinners "on a few occasions", and State Department cable 1977STATE277883, given in full below, records that Kissinger also attended a Cercle luncheon held in Washington in November 1977.

A further telcon between Rockefeller and Kissinger - KA07605 of 13th March 1972 - makes possible elliptical reference to Rockefeller's attendance at a Cercle meeting in Paris: "R: That's wonderful. I partly wanted to speak to you about that and partly on Bilderberg. You indicated you wanted to go if you could. K: I would like to go. R: I am taking our plane over on Wednesday the 19th and thought you might want to go with us. K: I would like to do that but it may be a little early. R: I am taking some of the Congressional members like Matt Mathias [probably Charles 'Mac' Mathias]. K: Oh yes. When are you coming back? R: I'm coming back – well, I'm staying over Monday and having a _______ [deleted in original] group meeting in Paris, so I'm not coming back until Tuesday. I had to squeeze in a few things at the same time. K: I wouldn't dare show up in Paris or 500 pressmen will be following me wherever I go. R: (Laughter)." In the end, Kissinger could not attend the 1972 Bilderberg meeting held on 21st - 23rd April in Knokke, Belgium, although, as with previous Bilderberg meetings, David Rockefeller and Sir Frederic Bennett did participate. Kissinger had however been able to attend the 1971 Bilderberg meeting held in Woodstock, Vermont along with Rockefeller, Bennett, Sir Cyril Kleinwort and Henri Simonet – see the relevant years at https://publicintelligence.net/category/documents/bilderberg/bilderberg-participant-lists/.

There then follows a gap until the next known meeting of the Cercle in December 1973. However, meetings of the Cercle were not the only way for its members to meet; declassified State Department cable 1973STATE205503, sent by Kissinger on 17th October 1973, refers to a 16th - 18th October visit to America by Franz Josef Strauß, during which Strauß was scheduled to meet with James Schlesinger (since July, the Secretary of Defense), Melvin Laird (Secretary of Defense from January 1969 to January 1973, and since that June, counsellor to the President for domestic affairs), Fred Iklé (then ACDA Director and a later important ally of the 6I), Henry Kissinger himself and Vernon Walters (then Deputy Director of the CIA and in 1977 a co-founder of Crozier's 6I with Strauß's deputy Huyn) - search for the cable reference at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/.

In December 1973, the next known Cercle meeting was held in America, a meeting which Kissinger planned to attend, as emerges from a telcon KA11614 between Kissinger and Rockefeller on 17th November: "K: David, you've been a good friend and I understand you'll be here on the 5th or 6th of December. R: Right. This little European group is very much hoping you will be able to join us." A declassified State Department cable 1973LISBON04406 dated 3rd December 1973 also refers to this Cercle meeting, reporting that "Alexandre Ribeiro de Cunha, senior inspector of [Portuguese] overseas ministry, plans to be in US about December 1-13. He will be on private visit, to meet with "Pinay Group" (with reps from France, Italy, UK and US) for private exchange of views on international issues." This message is currently the earliest known American diplomatic source to refer to a British presence in the Cercle, no doubt Crozier who had been invited to join in 1970-71 (see footnote 125); the ISC had already published two Special Reports funded by the Cercle, *European Security and the Soviet Problem* in January 1972 and *The Peacetime Strategy of the Soviet Union* in March 1973. Sánchez Bella probably also attended this Cercle meeting; State Department cable 1973SANTO05077 of 14th December 1973 records that Sánchez Bella flew to the US on 6th December 1973 for a "business meeting in

Washington". Search for the cable references at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/.

A later declassified State Department cable 1974TEHRAN00577 dated 23rd January 1974 sent by the American Ambassador to Iran (and former Director of Central Intelligence) Richard Helms to Kissinger indicates that Kissinger had not been able to attend the December 1973 Cercle meeting and suggested re-scheduling another meeting in March 1974: "Rockefeller planning return from current 12-nation Middle East tour February 3 … DR [Rockefeller] raised with Secretary [Kissinger] at their last meeting possibility of one hour meeting with DR and group which Secretary was forced to withdraw from in early December. Purpose of meeting is to present group's exhaustive study of relative strength of Soviet versus NATO forces in Europe. Best time for group would be mid-March … As personalities like President Pinay and Strauss plus four personalities from Europe and South America involved in group and plans need to be finalized, would appreciate your suggestive [sic] tentative time" – search for the cable reference at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/; see https://history.state.gov/departmenthistory/people/helms-richard-mcgarrah.

Whether Kissinger, Rockefeller and the Cercle finally met in March 1974 is undocumented, but that April Rockefeller and Strauß both attended the Bilderberg conference in Megève, France – see footnote 244. Kissinger also stayed in touch with Pesenti after Nixon's resignation in August 1974, sending cable P740136-1375 about US-Soviet relations to Pesenti in September 1974; when Kissinger visited Beijing that November, meeting Premier Zhou Enlai and Vice-Premier Deng Xiaopeng on 25th and 26th respectively, the US Beijing Embassy sent cables 1974PEKING02128 and 1974PEKING02165 to Kissinger on 27th and 28th November which speak of an unspecified "Pesenti dinner" – search for the cable references at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/. Großmann records that Rockefeller and Pesenti attended a Cercle meeting hosted by Strauß in Wildbad Kreuth in late 1975, and that a November 1976 Cercle meeting was held in conjunction with the CEDI Congress in Madrid (see *Die Internationale der Konservativen*, pgs 491-494). Later Cercle meetings in Wildbad Kreuth in May 1977 and in Washington in November 1977 (attended by Rockefeller, Kissinger and Strauß amongst others) are detailed below.

(120) Giulio Andreotti, *The USA Up Close: From the Atlantic Pact to Bush* (*Gli USA visti da vicino)* with foreword by Kissinger, New York University, New York 1992, Chapter 10: Vacation in the USA, pgs 61-62.

(121) Letter from Violet to Damman of 20th March 1970 reproduced in Péan, Annex 3; Roth and Ender, pg 158; https://www.karlspreis.de/en/laureates/francois-seydoux-de-clausonne-1970/biography.

(122) The Kissinger memorandum figures twice in the Digital National Security Archive, once under the title "Communist Threat to West" (CL00334) and again under the title "Dinner with Experts on European and Latin American politics" (KT00214). The full list of participants is not included in the declassified memorandum.

As for those participants identified in the text of the memorandum, **Winston Lord** worked on the National Security Council planning staff as Special Assistant to Kissinger from 1969 to 1973, accompanying Kissinger on his secret trip to China in 1971 and then serving on the US delegation during Nixon's groundbreaking trip there in 1972. From 1973 to 1977, he served as Director of Policy Planning in the State Department and its top China expert before becoming President of the Council on Foreign Relations from 1977 to 1985, attending the 1978 Bilderberg conference in Princeton with Henry Kissinger, David Rockefeller, Carter's National Security Advisor

Zbigniew Brzezinski, NATO Supreme Allied Commander Europe Alexander Haig, NATO Secretary-General Joseph Luns, Sir Frederic Bennett, Thatcher's Shadow Foreign Secretary Lord Carrington and General Close. From 1985 to 1989, he served under Reagan as Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary to China and from 1993 to 1997 under Clinton as Assistant Secretary of State for East Asian and Pacific Affairs – see https://history.state.gov/departmenthistory/people/lord-winston; https://publicintelligence.net/1978-bilderberg-meeting-participant-list/. To see Lord speak (with Richard V. Allen and Bud McFarlane) on the national security policy of Nixon and Kissinger, see https://www.c-span.org/video/?319144-1/discussion-president-nixons-national-security-council.

Joseph Verner Reed Jnr worked as Private Secretary to the President of the World Bank from 1961 to 1963 before joining the Chase Manhattan Bank (now JPMorgan Chase), serving as Assistant to the Director from 1963 to 1968 and then as Vice-President and Special Assistant to President Rockefeller from 1969 to 1981, during which time he liaised closely with Rockefeller's principal advisor on European affairs from 1973 on, Ridgway B. Knight, a participant at the 1976 CEDI Congress – see below. In 1981, Reed was appointed Reagan's Ambassador to Morocco serving until 1985 when he joined the UN as Deputy Permanent Representative to the UN Economic and Social Council, then serving from 1987 to 1989 as Under-Secretary-General of the United Nations for Political and General Assembly Affairs. In 1989, he returned to US government service as Under-Secretary of State for Public Affairs and Chief of Protocol for the State Department under George H. W. Bush until 1991, during which time he was responsible for the 1990 visits to the US of both Gorbachev and Mandela – see https://www.c-span.org/video/?13810-1/summit-preview; https://web.archive.org/web/20160304053552/http://www.stamfordadvocate.com /local/article/More-than-20-years-later-remembering-a-brief-4663065.php; https://history.state.gov/departmenthistory/people/reed-joseph-verner. In 1992, he rejoined the UN, serving as Under-Secretary-General and Special Representative for Public Affairs until 1997, then as President of the UN Staff-Management Coordination Committee until 2004, and from 2005 on, as UN Under-Secretary-General and Special Advisor to the UN Secretary-General, Ban Ki-Moon, a position reconfirmed in 2009. Reed died in September 2016 – see his obituaries at https://www.nytimes.com/2016/10/05/us/joseph-verner-reed-jr-protocol-chief-who-presided-over-colorful-gaffe-dies-at-78.html; https://www.washingtonpost.com/local/obituaries/joseph-verner-reed-jr-diplomat-and-white-house-protocol-chief-dies-at-78/2016/10/01/d94639f4-87e7-11e6-ac72-a29979381495_story.html.

Luis María Otero Monsegur was President of the Central Bank of Argentina in 1962-63 as well as serving as Director of the SulAmérica insurance company run by the Brazilian magnate **Antonio Sanchez de Larragoiti Jnr**. Monsegur later wrested control of the Banco Francés del Rio de la Plata, the oldest operating Argentinian bank, from its controlling Waller-Larragoiti group – see https://es.wikipedia.org/wiki/BBVA_Franc%C3%A9s. Larragoiti attended the November 1976 Cercle/CEDI meeting; he died in 1995. Monsegur died in 2002 – see https://www.lanacion.com.ar/392340-fallecio-luis-m-otero-monsegur.

(123) In his address to the 1966 APACL Conference preparing for the creation of WACL, Ukrainian National Association President Lev Dobriansky spoke of the "advancement of the need for a coordinating American anti-Communist body to prepare for a World Anti-Communist Freedom League, perhaps under the leadership of Mr. George Meany or Dr. Walter Judd" – see http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1966/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1966-43.pdf, pg 2; the body later created as the American chapter of WACL was the American Council for World

Freedom whose Honorary President was Judd. From 1964 onwards, Judd was Co-Editor of the daily radio version of the American Security Council's Washington Report; Dobriansky was its Economics Editor – see the official ASC history referenced in footnote 58. Meany was an honorary member of the National Captive Nations Committee chaired by Dobriansky and was jointly honoured with the President of APACL at a NCNC dinner in July 1969 – see http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1969/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1969-27.pdf, pg 2. Besides his connection to Violet, Meany and his foreign policy advisor Jay Lovestone were also frequent contacts for the private CDU/CSU intelligence network run by Langkau and Stauffenberg from 1969 on – see Waske, pgs 70-71. Both Meany and Lovestone were also core contributors to the ASC – see https://isgp-studies.com/organisations/ASC/ASC_Founders_Benefactors.pdf. Under Meany's presidency, the AFL-CIO gave strong support to the Vietnam War. Both Meany and Lane Kirkland, his future successor as AFL-CIO President from 1979 to 1995, attended a November 1977 Cercle meeting – see below.

(124) In correspondence with this author, former Editorial Advisor to the Vatican Library and Secret Archives, reserve naval commander, television journalist and writer Eric Lebec referred to his book *Histoire secrète de la diplomatie vaticane* (Albin Michel, Paris 1997; https://books.google.fr/books?id=NsJYDwAAQBAJ) which briefly notes this cooperation between Pesenti, Violet and Damman. According to Lebec, many of the campaigns run by Violet through the Cercle and the AESP were actually Sint Unum actions. Lebec describes this in a 2005 interview for *Zenit* in which he states he had been received by Pope Jean Paul II some ten times and had known Cardinal Ratzinger quite some time before the latter became Pope Benedict XVI, the subject of a 2005 book by Lebec: "I was also a militant in a discrete association "Sint Unum" created by the French lawyer Jean Violet who worked in the Holy See's representation at the UN. This association brought together such varied people as Antoine Pinay, Joseph Strauss [sic], Generals Grossin and Gelhen [sic], etc. It played an important part in Franco-German reconciliation when de Gaulle came to power [...] it was above all the creator of the "third basket" of the Helsinki Accords, with the support of Henry Kissinger. It has now disappeared along with Jean Violet, but it was an instrument that was appreciated from the start by Cardinal Tardini and his successors" – https://fr.zenit.org/2005/05/13/benoit-xvi-les-defis-d-un-pape-biographie-par-eric-lebec/; http://www.editionsarchipel.com/auteur/eric-lebec/.

Lebec's book offers no details of Sint Unum beyond the sweeping and probably exaggerated claim that it lay behind the Cercle. The only primary source on Sint Unum remains the 1970 CIA report given in Arduini; apart from Lebec, the only other known references to Sint Unum are a passing mention in Frédéric Chapier's *La CIA en France: 60 ans d'ingérence dans les affaires françaises* (Editions du Seuil, Paris 2008, pg 296) and a brief treatment in Großmann's *Die Internationale der Konservativen* (pg 469) who, no doubt correctly, concludes that "Sint Unum was nothing more than a cover name for the international "system" of personal contacts, discussion circles and action groups set up by Violet since the late 1940s whose threads coalesced in the Cercle from the mid-1960s on". Großmann also points out that the motivation for seeking American funding for Violet's activities within the Catholic Church was the halving of BND subsidies for "Operation Pax" following the replacement of Gehlen by Wessel in May 1968 during the CDU/SPD Grand Coalition of 1966-69 when Brandt was Vice-Chancellor and Foreign Minister – and Strauß was Finance Minister. When Brandt was elected as Federal Chancellor in September 1969, the BND subsidies then ceased completely. This termination of BND support also affected the German section of the CIDCC, which closed the following year, and the

BND-funded Dutch-based agency, Interdoc – see the CIOC-CIDCC-Sint Unum annex; Crozier, pgs 102-104.

Lebec has been interviewed several times (including alongside prominent Front National figure Bruno Gollnisch) by the late extreme right-wing editor and radio journalist Serge de Beketch. De Beketch was a former editorial director in 1985-86 of *National-Hebdo*, the unofficial newspaper of the Front National; his successor as editorial director from 1986 to 1993 was the newspaper's founder in 1984, Roland Gaucher – see https://sdebeketch.com/tag/eric-lebec/; http://www.france-courtoise.info/03/298/page.php?id=20lir; https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/Serge_de_Beketch; https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/National-Hebdo; https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bruno_Gollnisch; https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/Radio_Courtoisie; https://www.ouest-france.fr/bretagne/saint-malo-35400/le-feu-nucleaire-en-debat-lecole-maritime-772320; footnote 47.

There is some confusion as to whether Eric Lebec is the "Abbé Lebec" referred to in a handwritten redistribution list by Monique Garnier-Lançon on a 16th August 1982 letter from Brian Crozier to her: "15 copies: [...] Abbé Lebec; Maître Violet; J. Jonet" – see Garnier-Lançon papers, Box 3, Folder 29. Abbé Martin Marie Lebec was priest to the Milice de Jésus-Christ, a Catholic lay order to which Jean-Marie Bougerol also belonged – see https://www.scribd.com/document/368736969/Tele-Moustique-28-juin-1991-pdf and https://fr.zenit.org/2006/06/19/milice-de-jesus-christ/. Abbé Lebec was also the coordinator of an association, Europa Christiana, which was presided by Carlo Pesenti, and which held a meeting on 20th – 23rd November 1981 at the Abbaye de Royaumont between Paris and Chantilly. According to a participants' list in the Garnier-Lançon papers and also online at https://tueriesdubrabant.1fr1.net/t742p60-milice-de-jesus-christ, the seminar was attended by Violet, Collet, Sánchez Bella, Andreotti, Garnier-Lançon, Close, Jonet, Vankerkhoven and de Bonvoisin: all Cercle members (on de Bonvoisin, see footnote 305). However, the Europa Christiana list gives for Abbé Martin Marie Lebec the Paris address of 15, rue de Grenelle, the same address as is given in http://suaire-turin.fr/wp-content/uploads/2017/02/ Histoire-MNTV-46-d%C3%A9f.-2.doc for the "Abbé/Père Eric Lebec"; a letter from Europa Christiana is also signed "E. M. Lebec, priest". It is not known if there are two Lebecs or one, and if two, whether they are related.

(125) Crozier, pg 97 et seq. Crozier is however inconsistent in the date that he gives for his initial contact with Violet; his last book *Political Victory: the Elusive Prize of Military Wars* (2005) states that Violet "invited me to join the Cercle in 1970" – see footnote 17.

(126) Crozier, pg 64.

(127) Crozier, pg 98.

(128) ISC memo reproduced in Péan, pg 236. On cooperation between the ABA, NSIC, ISC and Interdoc, see footnotes 41 and 67.

(129) Bloch and Fitzgerald, pgs 98-99.

(130) *State Research* no. 1; Ramsay and Dorril, pg 38.

(131) Crozier, pg 100.

(132) Crozier, pgs 100-101.

(133) From 1972 on, there was major investment in expanding the Cercle's print output, first from the ISC and then also from *Le Monde Moderne*, much of it financed by Pesenti. Interestingly, Pesenti's financial operations in 1972 were a particular focus for Italian magistrates later investigating the IOR and the Banco Ambrosiano scandal – see below and footnote 274.

(134) Péan, pgs 92-93.

(135) Stewart-Smith, pgs 66-67.

(136) Mungo, pgs 39 - 40; Gijsels, *L'Enquête*, pgs 156-157; footnote 360. The **International Society of Friends of Wilton Park** (ISFWP) was a regular forum for Cercle complex friends from the early 1970s on; the ISFWP for example met in Paris in February 1972, attended by Picard, the Honorary President of the French ISFWP section Antoine Pinay and Spanish EEC Ambassador Alberto Ullastres, a Life Member of the AESP. Five weeks previously, the AESP XV Charlemagne Grand Dinner in Brussels had brought together Ullastres, Damman, Jonet, Violet and Picard, all of whom attended the next ISFWP meeting in Madrid in March 1973; other ISFWP participants in 1973 included Spanish Chief of General Staff Lieutenant-General Manuel Diez Alegria, Sánchez Bella, Crozier who spoke on "European Security and the Helsinki Conference", former Chief of the Belgian Army General Staff Lieutenant-General Georges Vivario and Alan Hughes, Deputy Rector of Wilton Park. On the 1972 and 1973 ISFWP conferences, see *ABC* (Madrid) of 23/2/72 pg 34; La *Vanguardia Española* of 24/2/72 pg 23, 29/3/73 pg 5, 30/3/73 pg 6, 31/3/73 pg 8, 1/4/73 pgs 7 and 44; Damman's AESP activity report for the first quarter of 1973. Damman's longstanding contacts Bernard Mercier and Ernest Töttösy were also members of the ISFWP; the members of the French section of the ISFWP were specifically indicated on the attendance list of the February 1976 Charlemagne Grand Dinner and Chapter Assembly of the AESP and included former SDECE officer and Foreign Ministry advisor Jacques Leguèbe of the *Monde Moderne*.

Wilton Park itself offered opportunities for Franco officials to meet with high-ranking members of the British government - Diez Alegria had spoken there in June 1971, and Fraga spoke there at the crucial juncture of December 1976, meeting Heath, Whitelaw and Carrington although not new Tory leader Margaret Thatcher due to her heavy schedule - see *La Vanguardia Española* of 10/12/76 pg 22. Having been Spanish Ambassador to London from 1973 until the death of Franco in November 1975, Fraga had served until June 1976 as Vice-President and Interior Minister of the first post-Franco government before forming the Alianza Popular coalition in October 1976 to contest the June 1977 elections. In April 1977, Fraga attended the Bilderberg conference organised by Sir Frederic Bennett in Torquay; another participant was Sir Keith Joseph – see https://publicintelligence.net/1977-bilderberg-meeting-participant-list/. On later developments concerning Wilton Park, see below re CLEW and footnote 360.

(137) Walsh, pgs 133-134; Van Bosbeke, pg 66; *La Vanguardia Española* of 9/7/61 pg 6. Jacobo, born in Bucarest in 1930, served at the Spanish Embassy in Brussels from at least 1959 until 1981 when he was appointed Director of the Communications Division of the Council of Europe, serving until at least 1992 – see *ABC* (Madrid) of 18/9/59 pg 42 and of 13/3/81 pg 25; https://books.google.es/books?id=21PZ_tvdO74C&pg=PA2&lpg=PA2&dq=Roberto+Jacobo+Conseil+de+l%27Europe#v=onepage&q=Roberto%20Jacobo%20Conseil%20de%20l'Europe&f=false.

(138) In 2002, Valori was the President of the Industrialists Union of Italy (Confindustria) and a UNESCO Goodwill Ambassador - see the UNESCO Appeal in *International Herald Tribune*, 12/06/02.

(139) Perón's Italian contacts came via his wartime service as Argentinian Consul in Rome.

(140) Naylor, pg 138; information from Jeff Bale; Raw, pg 143; Willan, pgs 60-61; Buongiorno, pgs 111-115; Cecchi, pgs 75-85. On the November 1972 meeting between Perón, Valori and Andreotti, see *ABC* (Madrid) of 15/11/72 pgs 29 and 35-36.

(141) Crozier, pgs 99-100.

(142) Péan, pgs 237-239. See footnote 136 on the Wilton Park meeting in Madrid; for later Cercle links to Wilton Park, see below re CLEW and footnote 360. The March 1973 issue of *Damoclès* that circulated the AESP Appeal specifies that the Appeal had been published by the *Monde Moderne*; Antoine Pinay was its first signatory – see the Kyril Drenikoff papers referenced in footnote 487, Box 142, Folder 3. On George Thomson, see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/George_Thomson,_Baron_Thomson_of_Monifieth. A minister under Wilson from 1964 to 1970, Thomson was a Bilderberg participant in 1971 alongside Sir Frederic Bennett, Denis Healey, Kissinger, Sir Cyril Kleinwort, Reginald Maudling and David Rockefeller (see https://publicintelligence.net/1971-bilderberg-meeting-participant-list/), before then serving as British Commissioner at the EEC from 1973 to 1977.

(143) Péan, pgs 52 and 68; Roth and Ender, pg 72. Andreotti had previously attended a Cercle meeting on 2nd July 1969 (see footnote 119) and an AESP Charlemagne Dinner on 6th May 1970 attended by Pinay, Violet, Dubois, Sánchez Bella, Pesenti, Damman and de Villegas – see above and footnote 121.

(144) Brewaeys and Deliège, pg 129; Roth and Ender, pgs 72-73; Joël van der Reijden. On the 'Huyn incident' in 1965, see https://www.kas.de/c/document_library/get_file?uuid=3aae5efa-1d5a-922d-b7ac-fd7524a91045&groupId=252038; on Guttenberg and his part in a later CDU/CSU private intelligence service that worked with the 6I, see below and footnote 344.

Dr. Werner Marx, a CDU MP from 1965 until his death in 1985, was the longstanding CDU foreign policy spokesman and one of the most prominent opponents of Brandt's Ostpolitik. In the late 1950s, Marx had played a key part in the development of the German Army's psychological operations capacity. Psychological warfare operations against the German Democratic Republic had been coordinated since the mid-1950s between the Eastern Europe (EE) Division of the CIA and Adenauer's CDU Ostbüro, notably through Secretary of State Hans Globke and CDU Secretary-General Bruno Heck.

According to a partially declassified May 1955 CIA report from EE Division to the Director of Central Intelligence to prepare for a June 16th meeting with Chancellor Adenauer and/or Dr. Globke, "Dr. Heck is the channel through which the German Mission recently reached policy-level agreement with the CDU for the establishment of a joint CDU/CIA program for psychological warfare operations in East Germany. This program is about to pass from the negotiation stage to actual operations utilizing the facilities of the CDU Ostbuero which will be expanded with CIA financial assistance and operational guidance. Under the program, it is contemplated that Dr. Heck will have full policy and operational responsibility on behalf of the CDU for its propaganda to the East" – see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/GLOBKE%2C%20HANS_0087.pdf which also discusses plans for psychological operations in West Germany (i. e. CIA black propaganda in the West German media) in a paragraph reserved for the Director of Central Intelligence only:

"There are several aspirants to the Federal Republic's psychological-warfare function, including Gehlen, [CDU left-winger from East Germany and Minister for Pan-German Affairs from 1949 to 1957 Jakob] Kaiser, [Nuclear Power Minister from 1955 to 1956, then Defence Minister from 1956 to 1962] Minister Strauss, [Otto] Lenz [Globke's predecessor as Head of the Federal Chancellory from 1951 to 1953, thereafter main CDU propagandist and MP until his death in 1957, founding President of the German Atlantic Society in 1956] and Globke. It appears likely that the Gehlen Organization will be given the psychological-warfare responsibility for the Soviet Zone (and foreign areas), but it is not yet clear what, if any, arrangements will be made to establish 1) centralized responsibility for information activities in West Germany or 2) a centralized policy agency for all psychological activities in both West and East Germany."

Following an April 1958 decision by the then Defence Minister Strauß to create a Psychological Warfare Directorate within the Ministry of Defence, Marx served as the top civilian official of the Directorate that oversaw the creation of psy-ops regiments in 1958 and a teaching staff for psychological warfare in 1959. The top military psy-ops officers alongside Marx were first from 1958 to 1965 Major (later Brigadier-General) Karl-Christian Trentzsch and then from 1965 to 1970 Colonel (later Major-General) Johannes Gerber, the leading light of German psychological warfare – see footnote 288. Although Marx left the Psychological Warfare Directorate in 1959 and joined the Army General Command in 1960, he continued to play a central part in the psy-ops programme, serving from 1965 until 1972 as First Chairman of the *Studiengesellschaft für Zeitprobleme* [Study Group on Contemporary Issues], a civilian front group for military psy-ops funded by the Ministry of Defence; his successor as First Chairman from 1972 until 1982 was Gerber, who served continuously from 1965 until 1990 on the Boards of both the Study Group and another Defence Ministry psy-ops front group, the *Deutsche Gesellschaft für Sozialbeziehungen* [German Society for Social Relations].

As for Marx, after a spell in the the Army General Command, he was elected to Parliament in 1965, sitting on the Parliamentary Defence Committee from 1965 to 1982 and serving as its Chairman during the Cruise missile crisis in 1980-82; he also sat on the Parliamentary Foreign Affairs Committee from 1966 to 1980 before becoming its Chairman from 1982 until his death in 1985 – see *Spiegel* 29/1985 pg 148 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-13515339.html. From 1970 on, Marx served as a major political protector of the private CDU/CSU intelligence service run by Hans Christoph von Stauffenberg – see footnote 344; Waske. He attended CEDI Congresses from at least 1971 on, and sat on the International Council of CEDI with Roegele (Chairman of Stauffenberg's funding channel - see footnote 344) and Huyn from 1972 on – see *La Vanguardia Española* of 11/7/71 pg 7.

In March 1979, Marx was severely embarrassed when his longstanding private secretary, Inge Goliath, defected to East Germany, having over the previous ten years provided the HV A (East German intelligence) with copies of a mountain of defence- and party-related documentation that had crossed Marx's desk. With the help of the

HV A, Goliath then produced three brochures denouncing him that were widely distributed in West Germany between June 1979 and October 1980. One of her accusations, which were sometimes true and sometimes false, was that Marx had supported a private intelligence service within the CDU/CSU that was used to spy on politicians from the SPD and FDP – see *Spiegel* 12/1979 pgs 23-27 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-40350178.html; *Zeit* 12/1979 at https://www.zeit.de/1979/12/spionage-in-einer-kleinen-stadt; *Spiegel* 30/1980 pg 16 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14314954.html. One of her reports to the HV A – received by them on 6th November 1973 – was entitled "On persons who work for an internal CSU information service, their social and financial habits, and their connections to the BND" see https://www.bstu.de/assets/bstu/de/Publikationen/EV_Bundestagsgutachten_barrierefrei.pdf, pg 91, footnote 296. According to Marx's biography by the Konrad-Adenauer-Stiftung, Goliath's defection allegedly scotched his chances in the late 1970s of a mooted post as BND President (see https://www.kas.de/statische-inhalte-detail/-/content/marx-werner), although it should be noted that Klaus Kinkel had already been nominated to replace Gerhard Wessel in November 1978. It is more likely that Marx was considered to replace Wessel's Vice-President Dieter Blötz who was forced to resign in August 1979 – see *Zeit* 35/1979 at https://www.zeit.de/1979/35/zeitspiegel; *Zeit* 36/1979 at https://www.zeit.de/1979/36/geheimdienst-nach-proporz; *Spiegel* 49/1982 pgs 21-22 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14356247.html.

On the German military psy-ops programme, see Dirk Drews' outstanding thesis at https://publications.ub.uni-mainz.de/theses/volltexte/2006/981/pdf/981.pdf and the *Spiegel* 39/1958 pgs 16-19 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41759175.html, in which Trentzsch attempted to disguise his identity by using his wife's maiden name of Herms, and *Spiegel* 20/1989 pgs 34-50 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-13494538.html. As was the case in the UK, veterans from the German military psy-ops programme played an important part in the Cercle complex – the founder of the German Army School for Psychological Warfare Dr. Werner Marx, its longtime Scientific Director Dr. J. Kurt Klein, and its Senior Lecturer Professor Hans Werner Bracht as well as Dr. Friedrich-Wilhelm Schlomann of the Ministry of Defence's Psychological Warfare Directorate, were all close associates of Grau and Huyn throughout the 1970s and 1980s. On a 1981 attempt by the German General Staff's Psychological Warfare Directorate to smear a prominent military opponent of NATO deployment of American nuclear weapons, see footnote 238.

(145) Roth and Ender, pg 72.

(146) Péan, pg 82; *Het Vrije Volk* of 12/01/84 pg 1 at https://resolver.kb.nl/resolve?urn=ddd:010961458:mpeg21:pdf; Scott-Smith (2012), pgs 127 and 232. The relationship between Interdoc and many of the anti-communist groups or activists mentioned in this book was however always a fraught one, with Crozier and the NSIC in particular taking increasing exception to Interdoc's moderate anti-communist position. From the start, Interdoc had been wary of compromising itself by associating with "the simplistic kind of right-wing anti-communism that Van den Heuvel and Einthoven had been trying to escape from". Whilst Vankerkhoven had agreed in 1967 that his newly-founded Belgian section of LIL would start distribution of Interdoc publications, and although on two occasions Interdoc had turned to LIL for clandestine help, both times with satisfactory results, "Van den Heuvel reported to [principal BND contact for Interdoc Colonel Rolf] Geyer after a trip to Brussels in January 1970 that, while the Ligue and its associated network [...] were useful for contacts, conference contributions, and special actions "that officially are better not

carried out by Interdoc", official links had to be limited with an organization that saw communist conspiracy everywhere. For these reasons, he declined the offer to join the Ligue's advisory board "with polite and careful words"" – see Scott-Smith (2012), pg 127, who also records that by 1970 LIL could count on 2,000 members in Belgium alone as well as substantial funding.

Although Van den Heuvel and Damman continued to correspond, it is worth noting that the Dutchman only became a formal member of the AESP in 1978 when his Oost-West Instituut was being wound down and its activities transferred to a new group, CEVS. Whilst Interdoc's connection with the Belgian characters described in this book was always cordial but at arms' length, the relationship between Interdoc and their British and American allies in the ISC and NSIC turned rancorous after Van den Heuvel visited the Soviet Union in October 1974, the first of several visits to Eastern European countries. Whereas Van den Heuvel saw the Helsinki process as an opportunity to engage positively with Soviet Bloc officials, Crozier and his Cold War colleagues considered the Helsinki process to be nothing less than Soviet strategic deception in which Van den Heuvel was at best an unwitting ally, if not a outright dupe. Before his Russian visit, the influence of both the ISC and the NSIC on Interdoc was demonstrated in June 1974 by the Board of Interdoc Publishing: its President (and Interdoc Chairman from 1971 on) was Brigadier W. F. K. Thompson of the ISC Council, and Board members included NSIC members Frank Barnett and Rear Admiral Mott – see *NRC Handelsblad* of 29/6/74 pg 7 at https://resolver.kb.nl/resolve?urn=KBNRC01:000033042:mpeg21:pdf. The final rift came at an NSIC-sponsored conference in late 1976 attended by Barnett and Trager for the NSIC and Crozier and Menaul for the ISC, at which Crozier denounced Van den Heuvel for being "soft on communism". The last recorded action bringing together Barnett and Mott, Crozier and Van den Heuvel was a conference in October 1977 – see Scott-Smith (2012), pgs 232 and 243.

(147) On CEPIC, see https://www.cairn.info/revue-courrier-hebdomadaire-du-crisp-1978-2-page-1.htm; Gijsels, *L'Enquête*, pg 197 et seq.; Benjamin and Dethy. The Tratsaert report is quoted in full in Gijsels, *Het Leugenpaleis*, pgs 61-66.

(148) On de Bonvoisin, see *CelsiuS*, numbers 12, 14, 15, 16, 17, 21, 22, 23, 24, 26, 29, 30, 31, 34; Brewaeys and Deliège, and the other books on Belgian parapolitics quoted below.

(149) Mungo (as "Michel de Frocourt"), pg 22. *Enquêtes & Reportages* was a short-lived quarterly publication whose later issues named Mungo as the editor; issue 4 of the new series interviewed IEPS President General Close about an IEPS report on Belgian civil defence. The diagram by Latinus is in Haquin, pg 178.

(150) Brewaeys and Deliège, pg 180; Brewaeys and Deliège also note (pg 39) that de Bonvoisin arranged a contract for a business contact by taking him to Paris in 1986 to meet Jean Violet's son, Paul Violet, then one of the twenty-eight Deputy Mayors of Paris under Jacques Chirac. Violet junior served as Deputy Mayor of Paris from 1983 to 1995, and was also Vice-President of the Regional Council of the Ile-de-France from 1984 to 1992, member of the National Council of Chirac's RPR and founder in 1991 of the Chirac lobby group, République et Valeurs (*Le Monde*, 20/9/91). In the June 1988 parliamentary elections, Paul Violet stood unsuccessfully for the RPR/UDF in the 6th Paris constituency; ironically, his first round challenger from the Front National was Jean-Marc Brissaud, formerly of the Centre d'Etudes du Monde Moderne (see footnote 183) – see https://archive.org/details/EL177L198806075061PFPdfmasterocr; https://archive.org/details/EL177L198806075062PFPdfmasterocr. Paul Violet's

previous employment by companies involved in the sniffer plane scandal was officially investigated in 2000-2001 with no charges being brought. From 2002 on, alongside Luc Beyer de Ryke, he was a Board member and later Vice-President of the Académie du Gaullisme – see https://www.france-politique.fr/wiki/Académie_du_Gaullisme_(ACADGAUL). "Gaulliste de gauche depuis toujours", Paul Violet joined the Socialist Party in 2005.

Several corruption scandals at the Paris City Hall under Mayor Chirac were later investigated by French judicial authorities, notably "l'affaire des marchés publics des lycées d'Ile-de-France" (school public tenders in the Parisian region) which involved covert funding of most of the French political parties. The main figure implicated in that scandal was Michel Roussin, head of security for Matignon, the Prime Minister's Office, from 1972 to 1974 before notably serving as chef de cabinet to SDECE chief Alexandre de Marenches from 1977 to 1981 and chef de service at the Defence Ministry in 1981. He then served as chef de cabinet under Jacques Chirac at the Paris City Hall and later at Matignon from 1984 to 1988 before becoming directeur de cabinet under Chirac at the Paris City Hall until 1993 and briefly serving as Development and Cooperation Minister in 1993-94. Roussin was convicted of complicity and concealing corruption in the school public tenders scandal in 2005, a conviction confirmed in 2006; Roussin's final appeal was rejected in 2008. Chirac himself was implicated in another scandal, that of creating fake jobs within the Paris City Hall for RPR activists. Protected by presidential immunity until May 2007, Chirac was then charged with embezzlement of public funds and abuse of office, the first French President since the Second World War to face criminal charges. On 15th December 2011, Chirac was convicted and given a two-year suspended prison sentence – see https://www.theguardian.com/world/2011/dec/15/jacques-chirac-guilty-corruption. He died on 25th September 2019.

(151) De Bock quoted in *CelsiuS* No. 17, pgs 17-18, currently online at https://www.scribd.com/doc/281768479/Celsius-17-1989-Coup-d-Etat; Brewaeys and Deliège, pgs 24-25. Also see *«Europe-Amérique»/«Europe-Magazine»: un hebdomadaire belge, organe de l'extrême droite française, 1945-1960?*, Dr. Catherine Lanneau, in Olivier Dard (ed.), *Supports et vecteurs des droites radicales au XXe siècle* (Europe-Amériques), proceedings of the colloqium organised at the Université Paul Verlaine-Metz on 24 and 25 October 2012, Berne – Bruxelles, Peter Lang, 2013, p. 65-88. An electronic copy may be obtained at https://orbi.uliege.be/handle/2268/154963 and click Request Copy at the bottom of the page.

(152) See *Gladio*, pgs 29-60. On Moyen and Milpol, see footnotes 100, 262 and 293; the scathing declassified CIA report from 1952 at https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/PAPER%20MILLS%20AND%20FABRICATION_0001.pdf.

(153) Extracts are given in *CelsiuS* no. 17, pgs 14-19, currently online at https://www.scribd.com/doc/281768479/Celsius-17-1989-Coup-d-Etat.

(154) *Searchlight*, no. 18, Nov 1976, pg 4.

(155) Crozier, pg 104.

(156) Crozier, pg 104.

(157) Eringer, pgs 37-40.

(158) Reproduced in the *Morning Star*, a newspaper close to the Communist Party of Great Britain, 31/1/76.

(159) Crozier, pg 106.

(160) Crozier, pg 107.

(161) The ISC Special Report was republished in book form by the CSIS; James Theberge of the CSIS and future President of the Washington ISC also contributed to the campaign - see below on the USCISC. Present at the Ditchley conference, the then American Ambassador to Venezuela Robert McClintock, later a member of the USCISC, sent a lengthy and now declassified cable 1973LONDON05968 dated 22nd May 1973 about its deliberations – search for the cable reference at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/. On McClintock, see https://history.state.gov/departmenthistory/people/mcclintock-robert-mills.

(162) Herman and O'Sullivan, pgs 82-83; ISC publications list; Ramsay and Dorril, pgs 38-39; Robert Moss, *The Collapse of Democracy*, Maurice Temple Smith, London 1975; Crozier, pgs 109-111.

(163) Péan, pgs 72-73. Curiously, Damman does not know of or does not think of the Cercle offshoot in the US, the Washington Institute for the Study of Conflict, founded the previous month. A whole series of ISC Conflict Studies in 1975-76 focused on the areas named by Damman under point 2 - Korea, Vietnam, the Middle East, Portugal, and the security of supply of raw materials: *Iraq: the Search for Stability* (May 1975), *Southern Europe: NATO's Crumbling Flank* (June 1975), *Portugal - Revolution and Backlash* (September 1975), *North Korea - Undermining the Truce* (March 1976) and *Stability in the Gulf: The Oil Revolution* (May 1976).

One example of the apocalyptic message given by the Cercle was an October 1974 NATO "Conference of Heads of Information Sections in Ministries of Defense" on which the American Ambassador to NATO, Donald Rumsfeld, reported in State Department cable 1974ATO05656 dated 12th October 1974: "Guest speaker at conference was Brian Crozier, founder and director of Institute for the Study of Conflict, who spoke on "Soviet subversion in Europe." Mr. Crozier's theme was that the Cold War was not over, much as people like to talk about "détente". Said that ultimate goal of "triumph of socialism" was still evident in Soviet publications and actions. Amongst the latter, Crozier cited $8 million spent annually by the Soviet Union on subversion of labor, commercial and other organizations in Western Europe; penetration and increasing use of the New Left since 1968; six month course in subversion given by Lenin Institute in Moscow to Communist Party members from many Western and third world countries" – search for the cable reference at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/. On Rumsfeld's posting to NATO, see https://history.state.gov/departmenthistory/people/rumsfeld-donald-henry.

(164) See the AEPE 1974 Round Table proceedings from which the above quotation is taken at https://archives.eui.eu/en/fonds/190979. Unfortunately, no list of participants at other AEPE Round Tables is available. It is probable that the AESP presence in the AEPE long predates 1974, and certainly continued in subsequent years: a 1977-78 AESP/MAUE events list (published in the documentary annex to this full sixth edition of *Rogue Agents*) records the attendance of an AESP delegation at the AEPE XXXI Round Table in Delphi in October 1977. General Robert Close later used the March 1980 Round Table of the AEPE in London as a platform to denounce Belgian defence policy – see below.

(165) On the destabilisation of democracy in the UK in the 1970s, see Penrose and Courtiour; *Lobster* 9 -21 and notably No. 11 (Ramsay and Dorril); Wright; Leigh; Foot; Dorril and Ramsay (1991). On these sources, Penrose and Courtiour were the first and came very close but then were led astray. *Lobster* pursued the story and produced much invaluable information, launching the Wallace story before Wright had even appeared. Wright, whilst being an inside source, is partial in its opinions and in its content. Leigh thoroughly documented one aspect - the straight Wilson-Wright struggle (see however *Lobster* 17) but has grave omissions, particularly in only focusing on Wilson to the exclusion of Heath, Thorpe and the dozen other politicians targeted, in totally omitting Winter and Wallace as key witnesses and in neglecting the counter-subversion lobby and other MI6 friends as key actors. Foot concentrates on the major witness, Wallace, and does an excellent job. Dorril and Ramsay (1991) continue the investigation they started in *Lobster* 11, and produce the most complete account of the destabilisation to date. On *Lobster* and Colin Wallace, see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Lobster_(magazine).

(166) Ramsay and Dorril; Foot. Various figures mentioned in Wallace's 1974 notes about this manipulation of domestic politics include G. K. Young, Geoffrey Stewart-Smith, John Biggs-Davison and Julian Amery, all four members of the Monday Club. Amery and Biggs-Davison were mentioned as possible contenders for the leadership of the Conservative party once Heath had been removed; it seems Young and Stewart-Smith were intended as channels for InfPol's disinformation. Amery's possible candidacy is confirmed in State Department cables 1975LONDON01156 of 24th January 1975 and 1975LONDON01842 of 5th February 1975 - search for the cable references at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/.

It is also interesting to note that the Foreign Office has withheld from the National Archives in Kew "a number of files about the activities in Northern Ireland during the early 70s of the Foreign Office cold war-era propaganda unit that was known as the information research department" – see https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2014/jan/20/slave-trade-papers-illegal-foreign-office-cache. The March 2015 inventory of FCO documents still withheld from the National Archive specifies (item 808) that the papers concern IRD operations in Northern Ireland in the years "1969–1975, 1990"; many more (items 1442, 1451, 1511-1544, 1573, 1705) also relate to IRD over the years – see https://www.gov.uk/government/publications/foreign-offices-archive-inventory. Whilst in theory the withheld files will be reviewed and released by 2019, the *Guardian* has commented: "For the first time a *Guardian* colleague submits a freedom of information request, asking for just one 42-year-old file from the FCO's hidden archive – albeit one that concerns the activities during Northern Ireland's Troubles of the now notorious black propaganda unit, the Information Research Department. But he was told it may not be released, as to do so could damage the UK's international relations. The need-to-know culture runs deep" – see https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2014/jan/15/hugh-muir-diary-troubles-titbits. A further 66,000 files, many relating to the Northern Ireland conflict, are also being withheld from the National Archive by the Ministry of Defence – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2013/oct/06/ministry-of-defence-files-archive.

(167) *Times*, 6/5/73. Copeland worked closely with Kermit Roosevelt on the 1953 Mossadegh coup before becoming an advisor to Egyptian President Nasser and blocking the British/French/Israeli seizure of the Suez Canal in 1956. A reputed jazz musician who had played with the Glenn Miller Orchestra, he was the father of Stewart Copeland, drummer of the Police, and of Miles Copeland III, their manager

and backer of three influential record labels during the punk era - Step Forward, Deptford Fun City and Illegal Records – see https://www.theguardian.com/music/2020/aug/05/stewart-copeland-father-miles-cia-spy-the-police .

(168) Dorril and Ramsay (1991), pgs 229-233.

(169) On Wallace and CO2, see Ramsay and Dorril; Foot; Dorril and Ramsay (1991); https://www.theguardian.com/comment/story/0,,802698,00.html; https://www.theguardian.com/theguardian/2002/oct/03/guardianletters. Wallace's testimony is undoubtedly the most serious exposure of the British secret state's intervention in domestic politics – the British Watergate - since the Second World War. The three sources listed above are essential reading for anyone interested in "the very British coup". For a 1990 parliamentary statement concerning Wallace by Archie Hamilton, Minister of State for the Armed Forces, see https://publications.parliament.uk/pa/cm198990/cmhansrd/1990-01-30/Writtens-2.html#Writtens-2_sbhd19. Hamilton was forced to concede that "the papers which have now come to light indicate that, when the case was made to establish Mr. Wallace's post, it was proposed that its duties should include responsibilities for providing unattributable covert briefings to the press; and it was stated that the incumbent would be required to make on-the-spot decisions on matters of national security during such interviews [...] in the light of this re-examination of the papers it would be right to consider again the handling of Mr. Wallace's appeal to the CSAB." Hamilton however continued: "I should also make it clear that the new information which has come to light does not substantiate Mr. Wallace's allegations of a cover-up relating to the Kincora boys' hostel in Belfast", according to Wallace child sex abuse that was covered up by MI5 for blackmail purposes.

On the 2014 official British inquiry under Sir Antony Hart QC into sexual abuse of children in Northern Ireland including at Kincora, see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2014/jan/13/care-home-abuse-inquiry-northern-ireland; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2014/jan/13/northern-ireland-child-abuse-inquiry; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2014/aug/01/northern-ireland-first-minister-mi5-belfast-boys-home-kincora-abuse; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2015/jan/14/kincora-northern-ireland-abuse-inquiry; https://www.theguardian.com/society/2015/feb/15/mi5-kincora-childrens-home-northwen-ireland-sexual-abuse; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2015/feb/17/belfast-boys-home-kincora-abuse-victim-wins-legal-bid; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2015/apr/07/home-secretary-must-include-kincora-abuse-in-inquiry-says-belfast-mp; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2015/jul/23/theresa-may-under-pressure-belfast-care-home-abuse-westminster-inquiry-kincora. Home Secretary Theresa May however resisted calls to transfer the case to the troubled nationwide inquiry on child sex abuse (on which see footnote 508) that could, unlike Hart, compel rather than invite MI5 and MI6 to testify or provide documents.

Hart rendered his final report in January 2017 which rejected any suggestion that Kincora had been used for blackmail by MI5: "Hart said the notion that the home was a homosexual "brothel" used by the security services to entrap paedophiles to spy on influential political figures was without foundation. Controversially, he also dismissed the notion that McGrath was a state agent. "We are satisfied that McGrath was never an agent of the state. William McGrath was a sexual pervert who had political views of a bizarre type." Hart was extremely critical of a number of individuals who had previously made claims about Kincora, including the former army intelligence officer Colin Wallace, who first raised allegations of a paedophile ring at the home" – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2017/jan/20/northern-ireland-inquiry-report-outlines-shocking-child-abuse. On Wallace's testimony to the 2003 official Irish parliamentary inquiry into the 1974 Dublin/Monaghan car bombings, see http://www.dublinmonaghanbombings.org/DubMonInterim.pdf.

(170) Leigh, pgs 163-180, 239-241. Frolik worked undercover for Czech intelligence in London in 1964-66 before being recalled to Prague; he then defected to the CIA in 1969 and published the book *The Frolik defection: the memoirs of an intelligence agent* in London in 1975. Josten died in 1985 – see his obituary at http://www.julianlewis.net/essays-and-topics/2935:obituary-a-life-to-remember-josef-josten-mbe-19131985-6.

Leigh records (pg 169) that when Wilson was first informed of MI5 doubts about Stonehouse in late July 1969, he immediately arranged for a face-to-face confrontation – in his presence and in the Cabinet Room – between Stonehouse and the MI5 head of K2 (Soviet satellite states) counter-espionage: Charles Elwell. As both Leigh and Andrew's authorised history of MI5 (pg 707) record, MI5 later reported to Wilson that "there was no evidence that Mr. Stonehouse gave the Czechs any information he should not have given them, much less that he consciously acted as an agent"; whilst sidelined as a Labour spokesman, Stonehouse was allowed to continue as Minister for Post and Telecommunications until Wilson's electoral defeat by Heath in June 1970. MI5 repeated the same assessment of Stonehouse to the incoming Prime Minister, but nonetheless Frolik's allegations against Stonehouse were leaked to Chapman Pincher in 1970 – see Leigh, pgs 173-174: "Whoever tipped off Pincher was behaving disgracefully: the fact that Blunt, for example, was a real spy, was kept an official secret; the fact that a Labour minister had had nothing proved against him was circulated as a smear. This was the reality, over the years, of the 'Wilson plot' by members of the Intelligence agencies. Much worse was to follow."

Although Frolik's inconclusive evidence against Stonehouse had been discounted by MI5 in reports to both Wilson and Heath, it was later alleged that the claims did have substance, as Andrew notes (pg 708): "In 1980 evidence from an StB [Státní bezpečnost, Czech intelligence] defector codenamed AFFIRM persuaded both the Security Service and the Thatcher government that Stonehouse had been a Czech agent. Since, however, it was decided that the defector's evidence could not be used in court, Mrs. Thatcher agreed that Stonehouse should not be prosecuted. AFFIRM's evidence was largely corroborated a quarter of a century later when some of the contents of Stonehouse's lengthy StB file were revealed in the Czech Republic." It should however be noted that recent research in the Czech Republic by the BBC's security correspondent Gordon Corera has comprehensively debunked the allegation made in Frolik's 1975 book that Prime Minister Edward Heath was the victim of homosexual blackmail by the StB; the StB agent cited as a source by Frolik denied ever planning, let alone conducting, such an operation for the StB and "describes Frolik's story about the Heath caper as "absolutely nonsense"" – see https://www.bbc.com/news/magazine-18556213. Most probably, the rumours circulating about Heath were launched by the ultra faction within MI5 as part of the Clockwork Orange 2 operation to smear several leading Westminster politicians; Colin Wallace's 1974 briefing notes on "Carbon Dioxide" confirm that Heath was seen as having "moral" vulnerabilities - see Foot, pg 289.

(171) Wolton, pgs 168-169. The cash slush fund run for decades by the UIMM was the subject of extensive French press revelations and an official investigation in 2007-08, when it transpired that the UIMM, whose 600 million Euro slush fund was

fed by levies on member companies, had regularly paid out vast cash sums to unidentified beneficiaries under the authority of the UIMM President Denis Gautier-Sauvagnac (known as DGS) who then resigned as UIMM President in November 2007. An inquiry by the French Finance Ministry's anti-moneylaundering unit Tracfin revealed suspicious cash withdrawals from UIMM funds of 19 million Euros between 2000 and 2007. The practice of cash payments, used according to DGS to "fluidify social relations" i.e. to facilitate the cooperation of union representatives, had previously been followed under Daniel Dewavrin, the UIMM's President from 1999 to 2006, as Dewavrin confirmed in an interview with *Le Monde* (16/10/07). Interestingly, DGS had worked as CEO of Kleinwort Benson France from 1990 to 1994 before joining the UIMM in 1994 as Delegate-General and rising to become its Vice-President in 1996 and then President in 2006. On possible UIMM funding of the Institut d'Etudes de la Désinformation which hosted Crozier, Huyn and Horchem in 1989, see footnote 527.

(172) Péan, pg 71. On ALEPS, see http://www.libres.org/a-propos-de-nous.html.

(173) Péan, pgs 240-241. Bernard Destremau was a French diplomat from 1945 on, serving notably in Egypt during the Suez Crisis and in South Africa. Close to Giscard d'Estaing, he represented Versailles in the National Assembly from 1967 to 1978, also sitting in the Parliamentary Assembly of the CoE from 1969 to 1974. In 1974, he was appointed Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs in the first Chirac government, serving until 1976 when he resumed his seat in the National Assembly. He was Ambassador to Argentina from 1978 until 1981, and died in 2002. The planned Washington meeting may have been of the Cercle – see footnote 119. As for the testing of the sniffer planes in South Africa, *La Vanguardia Española* of 20th January 1984 pg 28, reporting on the emerging French scandal, noted: "Furthermore, this is not the first time that an oil company has allowed itself to be swindled in circumstances similar to those facing Elf after the operation by Bonassoli and Villegas … Likewise, the Republic of South Africa has recently recognised having lost 35 million French francs in using a "new technique" to discover oil, undertaken in 1973 and 1974 by a company whose name is still a secret". According to the *Pretoria News* and the *Star*, South Africa paid R22 million to use the sniffer plane – see *De Volkskrant* of 20/1/84 pg 5 (also see pg 1) at https://resolver.kb.nl/resolve?urn=ABCDDD:010879576:mpeg21:pdf.

(174) On Colonel Robert, the Elf network and the Gabon connection, see Péan (1983); André Renault, *Maurice Robert: "ministre" de l'Afrique*, Seuil, Paris 2004. The Elf network also intervened in domestic politics during the 1981 elections - it was the channel chosen to transfer FF 2,000,000 from Gabonese oil revenue to support Giscard d'Estaing's 1981 election campaign. In 1979, Robert had been appointed French Ambassador to Gabon on Gabonese President Bongo's insistence, and much to the disquiet of the French Foreign Office - see Péan (1983), pgs 139-150. Robert died in November 2005 – see https://www.jeuneafrique.com/129053/archives-thematique/maurice-robert/.

(175) Péan, pgs 117-119, 135-136, 156; Wolton, pg 266.

(176) See Winter (1981), (1989) and (2004); Rees and Day; Manz; Rhoodie; Sanders (2000) and (2006), indispensable sources; *The Great White Hoax;* http://www.africacrime-mystery.co.za/books/fsac/chp19.htm; Haasbroek, an excellent recent MA thesis. Despite the Muldergate scandal and the restructuring of BOSS as the Department of National Security in 1978, many of the secret projects formerly run by the DoI continued; "The South African Department of Foreign Affairs inherited the

secret operations in 1978, handing them on to MID [Military Intelligence Division] in 1980. A Strategic Communications Branch (Stratcom) document dated 1984 showed hundreds of active propaganda operations" – see Sanders (2006), pg 114. Rhoodie died in 1993; see his obituaries at https://www.independent.co.uk/news/people/obituary-eschel-rhoodie-1487534.html and https://www.nytimes.com/1993/07/21/obituaries/eschel-rhoodie-a-south-african-at-center-of-scandal-dies-at-60.html.

(177) Rhoodie, Information Officer at the Embassy in the Hague from 1968 to 1971, served as Deputy Editor-in-chief of *To The Point* from January 1972 until his July 1972 appointment as Secretary of Information - *The Great White Hoax*, pg 32; *Nederlands Dagblad* of 20/01/72 pg 4 at https://resolver.kb.nl/resolve?urn=ddd:010558653:mpeg21:pdf. Dr. Anthony Mertens from Holland, "Director of the magazine *To The Point (International)*", attended the July 1974 XXIII CEDI Congress, as did Cape Town Commander Brigadier Helm Roos, in 1972 an Individual Member of CEDI and military attaché in Portugal – see the documentary annex to this full sixth edition of *Rogue Agents*. Both *To The Point* and *Le Monde Moderne* were included in a list of 1978-79 DoI projects written in April 1978 by Connie Mulder, *Le Monde Moderne* as project G.21A (R30,000 = $34,500) and *To The Point* as project G.25 (R1,300,000 = $1,495,000) – see Rhoodie, pgs 764-765; Sanders (2000), pg 235. Rhoodie states (pg 236): "*Le Monde Moderne* was given a new lease of life through the purchase of 2,000 copies per quarterly issue. I myself wrote only one article for *Le Monde Moderne* thereafter leaving it to others to supply the necessary pro-South African material. Up until March 31, 1978 we had contributed some R106,000 [= $121,900] to keep this prestigious magazine going in Paris."

(178) Péan, pg 110. Mulder's list of 1978-79 DoI projects includes projects "G.44B French South African Association, Johannesburg and Paris R100,000 [= $115,000] ... G.44G French South Africa Association's actions in France R20,000 [= $23,000] ... G.73 Management budget for British, French and SA operations, including offices in Johannesburg, Paris and London R200,000 [= $230,000]" – see Rhoodie, pgs 766-767; Sanders (2000), pg 236. On Pinay's visit to South Africa, see the declassified US State Department cables 1973PRETOR02677, 1973PRETOR02700 and 1973PARIS21218 which note that "Pinay was well known in French government and at Quai [d'Orsay, French Foreign Office] for his outspoken pro-South African and pro-Portuguese attitudes" and that "Pinay's statements are strongest endorsement of SAG's [South African Government's] homeland policy thus far from an important Western statesman" - search for the cable references at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/.

(179) *The Great White Hoax*, pg 4. Similar campaigns targeting German and British MPs and military officers were equally successful – see below; footnote 369. As Rhoodie stated (pg 315): "The Department of Information spent some R2,500,000 of taxpayers' money between 1965 and 1975 to bring thousands of opinion formers from all over the world to South Africa." The 1978 list of DoI projects published by Rhoodie included projects "G.32 Foreign guests of front organisations R200,000" [= $230,000] and "G.48 British Parliament members' visit to South Africa R10,000" [= $11,500] – see Rhoodie, pgs 765-766; Sanders (2000), pg 235-236. Declassified State Department cable 1979PRETOR06762 of 26th July 1979 described a series of four articles in the Dutch magazine *Elseviers* (owned by Hubert Jussen, the publisher of *To The Point*) based on discussions with Rhoodie held shortly before he was arrested in France and extradited to South Africa, reporting: "A document reportedly given to Elseviers by Rhoodie and reproduced by the magazine refers to "Parliamentary activities, Britain". The line describing this project (Project G-48), however, reportedly is blacked out in the document as reproduced but the entry shows that

R46,274.47 [= c. $53,200] was spent on these activities up to March 31, 1978, and that a further R10,000 [= $11,500] had been made available for the financial year of 1978-79." Further details of the DoI campaigns (including the 1978 exchange rate of R1 = $1.15) are given in the cable relating to the Erasmus Report, 1978PRETOR07235; search for the cable references at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/.

(180) Péan, pgs 92-93, 107-113. Also see https://www.worldcat.org/title/south-africa-and-france/oclc/4809137&referer=brief_results.

(181) Péan, pg 108. As part of this campaign, the Cercle provided £7,500 for the 1974 ISC Special Report *The Security of the Cape Oil Route* – see Jeffrey H. Michaels, *Brian Crozier and the Institute for the Study of Conflict*, published in *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, pg 154. The Cape sea route was a longstanding concern of European Conservatives; breaking with the UN arms embargo followed by the previous British Prime Minister Harold Wilson, the new Heath government had accepted in 1970 to arm South Africa to defend the sea route around the Cape – see *Spiegel* 31/1970 pg 86 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-44916244.html.

(182) Péan, pg 113.

(183) Laurent, pg 305; Rhoodie, pgs 235-244. The seminar was held in St-Germain-en-Laye on 7th - 10th November 1974; a report in the December 1984 issue of *Article 31*, pgs 6-7, refers to a 1974 conference on the same subject co-organised by the *Monde Moderne*, the ISC and the NSIC but, probably erroneously, dates it to the month of July – see https://www.scribd.com/document/241149424/A31-N-3-12-84.

Rhoodie names the other members of the *Monde Moderne* team attending the launch as Jean-Marc Brissaud, Claude Delmas and Denise Greef. Brissaud had previously stood for the Front National in the March 1973 parliamentary elections – see https://archive.org/details/EL068L197303075311PFPdfmasterocr; he later served as Secretary-General of the Groupe des Droites Européennes (from 1984 to 1989, the European Parliament group chaired by Jean-Marie Le Pen that included the French Front National and the Italian MSI), becoming a member of the Political Bureau of the Front National and standing again for the FN in 1988 (coincidentally against Paul Violet – see footnote 150), 1993 and 1997.

Rhoodie describes (pgs 239-240) the general roles of Vigneau and Leguèbe as follows: "[...] I appointed a number of secret collaborators, some still active in French government service. Jacques Leguebe and Paul Giniewski, prolific writers, were given the task of producing pro-South African books and of feeding, through high level contacts, background memoranda to the French Foreign Ministry. In Johannesburg, R. F. Metrowich of the SAFF [Southern African Freedom Foundation, another major DoI front group] prepared a quarterly resumé of developments in South Africa. This 50-page survey was then handed to Le Guebe [sic] in Paris who translated it into French, edited it, and sent it to his friend, the French Secretary General for Foreign Affairs, as his own private evaluation of developments in South Africa. Jean Vigneau had the task of arranging high level contacts with French politicians, including Members of Parliament for visitors from South Africa." Mulders' list of DoI projects for 1978-79 mentions: "G.28 Bernard Lejeune: salary, travelling and subsistence R45,000 [= $51,700]" – see Sanders (2000), pg 235; the Afrikaans original in Rhoodie (pg 765) masks Lejeune's name.

(184) *Guardian*, 30/3/73; Winter (1981), pgs 320-321; *Time Out*, 5/9/75; Herman and O'Sullivan, pgs 110, 116-117, 134. Morris's book *South African Terrorism* was published by Harold Timmins in 1973. Also see https://www.worldcat.org/search?q=au%3ATerrorism+Research+Centre+%28Cape+Town%2C+South+Africa%29. Sanders (2006) notes (pg 114): "Eschel Rhoodie revealed in his marathon interview with Mervyn Rees that Info had contributed £5,000 to the cost of Janke's research".

(185) Rhoodie, pgs 235-236. On Meister, see footnote 103.

(186) Four-star **Admiral John 'Jack' Sidney McCain Jnr** was the son of World War II navy aviation pioneer and four-star Admiral John 'Slew' Sidney McCain Snr. Admiral John McCain Jnr served as Chief of Naval Information in 1962-63 before leading the 1965 US invasion of the Dominican Republic and being posted to London in 1967 as Commander-in-Chief, US Naval Forces, Europe (CINCUSNAVEUR). He then directed all American forces in the Vietnam theatre as Commander-in-Chief Pacific Forces (CINCPAC) from May 1968 until his retirement in 1972. McCain's Washington boss was a future colleague on the ASC Board and a NSIC Director from 1980 until at least 1989, **Admiral Thomas H. Moorer**, the Chief of Naval Operations from 1967 to 1970 and then Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff from 1970 to 1974, later serving on Team B – see footnotes 199 and 616.

McCain's final posting in Vietnam was personally traumatic; his son, Navy pilot John Sidney McCain III, had been shot down over Vietnam in October 1967 and was only released in March 1973, after his September 1972 retirement from the Navy. During his Vietnam service, Admiral McCain was a stalwart supporter of President Nixon's policy of Vietnamisation, and played a significant part in the militarisation of US policy towards Cambodia, helping to convince Nixon to launch the 1970 Cambodian Incursion and establishing a personal relationship with Cambodian leader Lon Nol. McCain was also a proponent of the 1971 incursion into Laos. His hardline position on the Vietnam War can be judged from his 1976 appearance before the Special Sub-Committee on Future Foreign Policy of the House International Relations Committee where he was supposed to testify on the Philippines, as described in declassified State Department cable 1976STATE123382 of 19th May 1976: "Departing repeatedly from US/Philippine relations, McCain indicated his frustration over Washington limitations on the conduct of war in Vietnam, which he asserted could have been finished successfully in 1969 or 1970 had bombing of North Vietnam continued, and/or if US had not been restricted to fighting a defensive war in South Vietnam" – search for the cable reference at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/.

After retiring from the Navy in 1972, Admiral Jack McCain was mooted as the new American Ambassador to Thailand in April 1973; the political appointment however went to the veteran CIA-Pentagon liaison officer and NSC counter-insurgency expert William Kintner, as described in declassified State Department cables 1973BANGKO05362 of 5th April 1973 and 1973BANGKO11928 of 3rd August 1973 - search for the cable references at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/; see https://history.state.gov/departmenthistory/people/kintner-william-roscoe. In May 1974, McCain provoked a flurry of Press articles alleging American support for South Africa by inviting Admiral Hugo Biermann, Chief of the South African Defence Staff from 1972 to 1976, to attend a week of meetings organised by the US Strategic Institute that McCain presided, a visit detailed in declassified State Department cables 1974STATE102868 (according to which Biermann met Acting Secretary of the US Navy William Middendorf and Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff Admiral Thomas H. Moorer during his US visit), 1974LONDON06535, 1974CAPET00663, 1974STATE230955 and 1974STATE231309 - search for the cable references at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/. *The Great White Hoax* adds (pg 2) that "it was the Department of Information rather than the Department of Foreign Affairs that paved the way for the Chief of the SA Defence Force, Admiral H. H. Biermann to meet [the Director of the Defense Security Assistance Agency] Vice Admiral [Raymond E.] Peet and the Acting Secretary of the US Navy, William Middendorf, in May 1974".

Besides his contacts with the South African military, McCain also joined the Boards of both the ASC and WACL soon after his retirement. In April 1974, he was a speaker at the 7th WACL Conference held in Washington, and in September 1975 he was elected alongside General Graham to the Board of Directors of the American Council for World Freedom (ACWF), the US WACL chapter, at their Inter-American Conference on Freedom and Security in Washington – see http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1974/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1974-17.pdf and http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1975/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1975-39.pdf. At this time, the ACWF had just withdrawn from WACL due to internal conflicts about its fascist and anti-semitic Latin American and European members, a controversy sparked by UK WACL Chairman Geoffrey Stewart-Smith which had led to the cancellation of the scheduled 1973 WACL conference in London – see Anderson and Anderson pgs 82-91; Bellant; footnote 108. McCain remained a Board member of the ACWF until at least 1978 – see http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1978/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1978-39.pdf. On McCain, also see footnote 79 on the expansion of Diego Garcia; the British minister in charge was Amery. Jack McCain died in 1981, the same year that his son left the Navy. The US Navy later named the destroyer *USS John S. McCain* after Admirals Slew and Jack McCain.

Jack's son, future Arizona Senator and 2008 Republican Presidential candidate **John S. McCain III**, also supported WACL. In the mid-1980s, he sat on the Advisory Board of the United States Council for World Freedom, the reformed American WACL chapter under Generals Singlaub and Graham, both active within the ASC; John Fisher, the longstanding President of both the ASC and the earlier American WACL chapter, the ACWF (see footnote 108), sat with McCain on the USCWF Advisory Board – see https://www.huffingtonpost.com/chip-berlet/mccain-advised-ultra-righ_b_132612.html; https://www.lalibre.be/actu/international/mccain-lie-a-une-organisation-privee-d-extreme-droite-51b8a04ee4b0de6db9b3e03d; http://www.publiceye.org/foreign_policy/covert/wacl.html and http://www.publiceye.org/foreign_policy/covert/USCWF-circa-1986.pdf. On John S. McCain III, also see https://militarist-monitor.org/profile/john-mccain/; he died in August 2018 – see https://www.theguardian.com/us-news/2018/aug/25/john-mccain-obituary. See footnotes 199 on Graham and 428 on Singlaub.

(187) Janke later sent Conflict Study no. 52 to Robbertze; see the letter of 28/1/75 to Janke from Lieutenant-General K. R. Coster of the DGSS published in *Searchlight* no. 20, Jan 1977, pg 4.

(188) Rhoodie, pgs 235-236; *Données pour un moment* in *Bulletin du Centre de recherches et informations sociales et économiques (CRISE)*, no. 2, 15/6/77, quoted in Faligot, pgs 181-182; Péan, pgs 113-114.

(189) See bibliography in Huyn. The proceedings, which included contributions from Crozier ("Subversion in Africa"), Cas de Villiers and Rear-Admiral Peltier, were published in English, French, German and Spanish.

(190) Herman and O'Sullivan, pgs 109-110; *Time Out*, 5-11/9/75.

(191) See founding document in *Searchlight* no. 18, November 1976, pg 5. I am indebted to Stephen Dorril for the initial information on the USCISC. The exposure of FWF in June 1975 and then of the ISC that August may have killed off the idea of creating a Washington ISC, announced in March; at least, nothing further is known of any specific WISC action. However, the USCISC continued for at least another seven years, acting as one of the founding sponsors of Marie-France Garaud's IIG in 1982 – see footnote 487.

(192) *Covert Action Information Bulletin* no. 10, August-September 1980, pg 42.

(193) González-Mata, pgs 149-155; Eringer, pgs 45 and 49; https://publicintelligence.net/1975-bilderberg-meeting-participant-list/; footnote 215.

(194) On the Phoenix programme, see Valentine; Snepp; the CIA's own internal histories of the Vietnam War referenced in footnote 413. For a discussion of Thompson and Komer's part in the Phoenix programme, see *State Research* no. 17 (April-May 1980), pgs 105-106. On Komer's publications for the RAND Corporation, see https://www.rand.org/pubs/authors/k/komer_robert_w.html; for his paper on the Malayan Emergency, see https://www.rand.org/pubs/reports/R957.html. Komer died in 2000 – see https://www.nytimes.com/2000/04/12/world/robert-komer-78-figure-in-vietnam-dies.html.

(195) See Cooley, pgs 51-55. The ground for the January 1980 visit to China had been prepared a year earlier when America switched diplomatic recognition from Taiwan to the PRC on 1st January 1979. The Xinjiang listening posts were essential for the NSA following the loss of Kabkan and Behshahr in Iran, compromised by the Iranian revolution: "the intercept station, located in the remote, mountainous village of Kabkan, forty miles east of Meshed, was the most important listening post America had for monitoring Russian missile and space activity [...] The intercept operators at Behshahr, in fact, had pulled out in December 1979. But Kabkan was not only vital; it was irreplaceable. For that reason the United States decided to take the dangerous step of continuing to operate the base in total secrecy even from the [Islamic] government of the host country. It was hoped that once the dust of the revolution had settled, new agreements could be worked out and the eavesdropping could continue uninterrupted" – Bamford (1983), pgs 256-259; Richelson and Ball, pgs 171-172. The American eavesdroppers were however soon forced to leave Iran, and Turkey had previously ejected its NSA bases, hence the pressing need for listening posts in Xinjiang whose output was shared with the Chinese - in return, the Chinese supplied small arms to the CIA-backed mujaheddin fighting the Russian invasion of Afghanistan from December 1979 onwards.

(196) *Covert Action Information Bulletin* no. 10, August-September 1980, pg 42; https://www.rand.org/pubs/authors/t/tanham_george_k.html; RAND Corporation obituary at https://www.rand.org/news/press/2003/04/04.html. From 1978 on, Tanham edited the journal *Conflict* co-published by the Institute for Conflict and Policy Studies – see the Spring 1978 issue (pg 21) of the Heritage Foundation journal, *Policy Review*, at http://www.unz.org/Pub/PolicyRev-1978q2-00007?View=PDF. The Institute's founding President from 1977 to 1979 was Theberge – see https://wikispooks.com/wiki/Institute_for_Conflict_and_Policy_Studies.

(197) On the Chilean press campaign, see *El Mercurio*, 28/2/73 amongst others. On the London CSIS/ISC conference, see *La Vanguardia Española* of 30/5/75 pg 21 and declassified State Department cable 1975MADRID03270 dated 13th May 1975 -

search for the cable reference at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/. In March 1982, Reagan appointed Theberge as American Ambassador to Pinochet's Chile; he served until August 1985 and died in January 1988 - see https://history.state.gov/departmenthistory/people/theberge-james-daniel; https://www.nytimes.com/1988/01/24/obituaries/james-d-theberge-former-ambassador-56.html. Theberge's March 1982 appointment came during a press furore in America about the appointment of Brigadier-General Cristián Ackerknecht as Head of the Chilean Military Mission in Washington – see footnote 354.

(198) *State Research* no. 1, pgs 13-17. During the Second World War, Shils worked for the Research & Analysis section of the OSS – see https://www.cia.gov/library/publications/intelligence-history/oss/art04.htm.

(199) On Team B, see the chapter in *Peddlers of crisis - the CPD and the Politics of Containment*, Jerry W. Sanders, Pluto (UK)/South End Press (USA), 1983; the chapter *The Phantom Menace - Frank Gaffney and the Star Wars Crusade* in Silverstein. The partially declassified Team B report is at https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB139/nitze10.pdf.

General Daniel O. Graham worked for the CIA in the Office of National Estimates from 1963 to 1966. During the Vietnam war, he was chief of the Army's military intelligence estimates in 1967-68, returning to the Office of National Estimates from 1968 to 1971 before serving as Director of Collections for the Defense Intelligence Agency (DIA) in 1971. In 1973-74, Graham served as Deputy Director of the CIA under Director William Colby; from 1974 to January 1976, he was the Director of the DIA. For his 1976 and 1980 campaigns, Ronald Reagan called upon General Graham to be his military advisor. In 1978, Graham became Co-Chairman of the Coalition for Peace Through Strength, a campaigning group set up by the American Security Council to combat nuclear disarmament. Generals Graham and Singlaub (see footnote 428) were the most active participants in a 1980 campaign waged by the ASC against President Carter's Strategic Arms Limitations Treaty – see below and http://web.archive.org/web/20070128152820/http://www.danielgraham.net/content/Chapter13.htm. In 1981, Generals Singlaub and Graham were founding Chairman and Vice-Chairman of the United States Council for World Freedom, the revived American chapter of WACL; in September of the same year, Generals Graham and Richardson were founders of High Frontier, which lobbied for space-based missile defence, a project adopted by Reagan in 1983 as the Strategic Defense Initiative. For his television appearances, see https://www.c-span.org/person/?danielgraham. Graham died in 1995 – see his official eulogy at https://fas.org/irp/congress/1996_cr/h960105a.htm, and Brigadier-General Richardson's tribute to him at http://www.arlingtoncemetery.net/dograham.htm.

Another prominent member of Team B was **Admiral Thomas H. Moorer**, former Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, Director of the NSIC from 1980 until at least 1989 and Board member of the ASC and Western Goals – see footnotes 186 and 616; NSIC Annex below. A further ASC member and NSIC author who served on Team B was **William Van Cleave**, whom Reagan appointed to be his Director of the Department of Defense Transition Team to ensure transition from the Carter Administration – see http://militarist-monitor.org/profile/American_Security_Council/ and https://militarist-monitor.org/profile/william-van-cleave/. Another NSIC associate – indeed a co-founder of the NSIC in 1962 – involved in Team B was future CIA Director **William Casey**, as Senator Moynihan noted during the 1981 Senate Intelligence Committee hearing to confirm Casey's appointment as Director of Central Intelligence: "it was at a time when Mr. Casey was a member of the President's Foreign Intelligence Advisory Board that the decision was made, a very courageous decision by the then-Director of the CIA, the Vice President-elect today, Mr. Bush, to enter the mode of competitive analysis. I refer to the "A-Team/B-Team exercise" [...] This idea of subjecting [intelligence] community analysis to competition was very much a part of the work of William J. Casey" – see footnote 59. It is also worth noting that the Minority Staff Director of the Senate Intelligence Committee in 1981, Abram N. Shulsky, was a Senior Fellow in the NSIC in the late 1980s (see the 1989 NSIC study referenced in footnote 505) and worked in the Pentagon under Assistant Secretary of Defense for International Security Policy Richard Perle during the Reagan Administration. He later served as the Director of the Office of Special Plans in the run-up to the invasion of Iraq in 2003. On Shulsky, see https://militarist-monitor.org/profile/abram-shulsky/.

Many of those who had been on the Ford White House staff or associated with Team B at that time - notably Defense Secretary Rumsfeld, White House Chief of Staff Cheney, Wolfowitz, Perle and Shulsky - repeated this "A-Team/B-Team exercise" of sidelining a politically awkward CIA finding as a part of the WMD fiasco during the second Iraq war in 2003. The wish of the neo-cons to override CIA assessments and develop their own pro-war intelligence channels, largely reliant on the exile Iraqi National Congress under Chalabi, was a catastrophic own goal – the INC intelligence network, infiltrated by the Iranian intelligence service, obligingly provided "firm evidence" of Iraqi WMDs, triggering the American invasion which, in one fell swoop, not only reduced Iran's historic regional rival to chaos for a hundred years but also discredited in the eyes of the world Iran's greatest geopolitical adversary, the US neo-con clique.

Larry C. Johnson, a former CIA analyst and Deputy Director of the Office of Counter-Terrorism at the State Department, said: "When the story ultimately comes out, we'll see that Iran has run one of the most masterful intelligence operations in history. They persuaded the US and Britain to dispose of its greatest enemy" - *Guardian*, 25/05/04. Vincent Cannistraro, a former CIA Chief of Counter-Terrorism, stated: "It's pretty clear that the Iranians had us for breakfast, lunch and dinner ... I think Iran saw an opportunity here to feed information into the United States through [INC intelligence chief] Aras Habib Karim and Chalabi that influenced the US decision ... it seems that they were able to spread disinformation that found its way into the speeches of policy makers in the United States ... I think it was a pretty artful operation by the Iranians" - Australian Broadcasting Corporation: The World Today, 26/05/04. See https://www.newyorker.com/magazine/2003/05/12/selective-intelligence; https://www.newyorker.com/magazine/2003/10/27/the-stovepipe; Hersh, pgs 203-247; Bamford (2005), pgs 271-282 and 379-423; the 2006 Senate Select Committee on Intelligence report at https://www.intelligence.senate.gov/publications/report-use-intelligence-community-information-provided-iraqi-national-congress; the summary of the declassified 2007 Department of Defense report by the Deputy Inspector General for Intelligence at https://www.npr.org/documents/2007/feb/dod_iog_iraq_summary.pdf; http://www.pitt.edu/~gordonm/JPubs/TeamBqjs.pdf.

(200) Schmidt married the great-granddaughter of Thomas Mellon, founder of the Mellon Bank, in 1936 and died in 2000 - see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Adolph_W._Schmidt; http://history.state.gov/departmenthistory/people/schmidt-adolph-william; http://triblive.com/x/pittsburghtrib/news/regional/s_528623.html; https://www.amazon.com/dp/0916670244. On Schmidt, the OSS and Congolese uranium, see https://books.google.co.uk/books?id=ZUikDAAAQBAJ

&q=schmidt&f=false#v=snippet&q=schmidt&f=false; footnote 262. A 1998 NATO Research Fellowship report (see below for the link) notes that "Adolph Schmitt [a spelling later corrected in the text], an officer of T. Mellon and Sons" was treasurer of the American Committee for an Atlantic Institute in 1961, one of three overlapping American pro-NATO groups. In November 1961, Schmidt co-organised the merger of the American Committee for an Atlantic Institute, the Atlantic Council and the American Council on NATO to form a new unified group, the Atlantic Council of the United States (see https://www.atlanticcouncil.org/about/history); Schmidt remained an Honorary Director until at least 1986 – see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP93T01142R000100020001-0.pdf. Earlier in 1961, Schmidt had acted as Chairman of the Finance Committee for the Paris-based Atlantic Institute, founded in January 1961, whose Governors included Lombardo, Martino (see the CIOC-CIDCC-Sint Unum annex), Meany, Pinay, Spaak, van Zeeland and the American Ambassadors to the UK and the UN, David Bruce and Adlai Stevenson – see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP83-00036R000500020019-4.pdf; https://www.nato.int/acad/fellow/96-98/small.pdf. On Schmidt and Bilderberg, see https://publicintelligence.net/1965-bilderberg-participant-list/. In January 1969, he was considered for the post of Ambassador to NATO, but was instead appointed Ambassador to Canada – see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/ LOC-HAK-1-1-8-0.pdf.

As well as supporting the USCISC and NSIC in 1975 and attending the crucial CEDI Congress in 1976, Schmidt was clearly also a member of the Cercle: on 28th February 1977, he sent a State Department cable P770067-1337 to Jimmy Carter's newly appointed US Secretary of State, Cyrus Vance. Although only the message attributes are available online, they are eloquent: "Draft Date: 28 Feb 1977. From: SCHMIDT, ADOLPH. Subject: REPORT OF THE PINAY COMMITTEE. TAGS: PINS [Political Affairs – Internal Security], PINAY COMMITTEE, CEDI. To: VANCE, CYRUS R." A further cable P780063-0594 was sent by Schmidt a year later on 28th February 1978; the message attributes again referred to the Cercle: "Draft Date: 28 Feb 1978. From: SCHMIDT, ADOLPH W. Subject: PINAY COMMITTEE TAGS: OGEN, PINAY COMMOTTEE [sic], (MURUPA, MIGUEL A) To: n/a" – search for the cable references at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/. Mozambican Miguel Artur Murupa had been a protégé of Eduardo Mondlane and FRELIMO's Deputy Secretary of External Affairs who defected to the Portuguese after Mondlane's 1969 assassination, working with the Portuguese Army's Psychological Warfare Department in Mozambique under Arriaga before becoming a close associate of Jorge Jardim and Editor of his weekly newspaper, *Voz Africana* – search for Murupa at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/. Murupa had previously met Schmidt and most of the leading members of the Cercle at the XXV CEDI Congress in November 1976 – see the CEDI list in the documentary annex to this full sixth edition of *Rogue Agents*.

Besides Schmidt, the USCISC also included Leonard D. Theberge, Vice-President of Rohr Industries; John T. Diebold, founder of the Diebold Group, a participant with Ball and Bennett at the 1967 Cambridge Bilderberg conference; Robert McClintock, US Ambassador to Venezuela (see footnote 161); Professor Donald Treadgold, Chairman, Department of History, University of Washington who in 1960 had been a member of the Educational Projects Committee of the IAS; Dr. Ernest Lefever of the Brookings Institute who wrote a critical review of television coverage of the Vietnam War published by the IAS in 1974 and was later involved in the 1980s anti-disarmament campaigns run by the Cercle complex – see below.

(201) Crozier, pg 124; Crozier's testimony can be found at https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP77M00144R000300100029-0.pdf. Fearey was a

thirty-year veteran of the State Department with a particular focus on Japan, working on the issue from 1941 to 1972 and helping to negotiate both the post-war peace treaty with Japan and the US-Japan security treaty prior to serving as the last US Civil Administrator of the Ryukyu Islands (Okinawa) before their reversion to Japan in 1972. In 1975, Kissinger appointed him as Special Assistant and Coordinator for Combating Terrorism, a post detailed by Fearey in his May 1975 opening statement to the Senate Internal Security Subcommittee at https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP77M00144R000300100028-1.pdf.

In 1977, a reorganisation by President Carter of American anti-terrorism bodies led to the disbanding of the Cabinet Committee to Combat Terrorism, whose Working Group, chaired by Fearey from 1974 to 1976, had sponsored several conferences on terrorism; Fearey's congressional subcommittee was also shut down. This loss of a public platform was keenly felt by Crozier who raised two "particularly important" points during his first personal visit to then-Governor Ronald Reagan on 8th July 1980 to brief him about the 6I: "The other point was that the Subcommittee on Internal Security of the Senate Committee on the Judiciary had been disbanded. What this meant, quite simply, was that threats to the internal security of the US were no longer publicly examined in the Congress" – Crozier, pg 180.

Unsurprisingly, this position was shared by Angleton, Richardson and Durbrow of ASIF (see footnote 497), who wrote to their members on 28th April 1980 to say: "We have another collateral objective. It is to persuade the Congress to reestablish the Senate Internal [Security] Subcommittee which was capriciously scattered into oblivion by Senator Kennedy of Massachusetts. It was the only instrumentality in the government empowered to conduct serious investigations into the penetration of our society by the Soviet bloc spies, and to expose in open hearings the techniques of subversion, deception, and disinformation being practiced in our midst by the swarms of KGB agents and their Bloc confederates who come and go at will" - see Appendix D at https://archive.org/details/WarAgainstThePanthersAStudyOfRepressionInAmerica by Huey P. Newton, co-founder of the Black Panther Party. For a March 1976 speech by Fearey on terrorism, see http://www.connectedcommunities.net/robertfearey/terrorism.htm. After 1977, Fearey was a consultant to the Agency for International Development and the State Department on population affairs, retiring from government employment in 1979 – see http://www.connectedcommunities.net/robertfearey/rafbio.html and http://www.oac.cdlib.org/findaid/ark:/13030/kt7c6030d5/entire_text/.

It is worth noting that Robert J. Morris, a former Chief Counsel of the Senate Internal Security Subcommittee (1951-53, 1956-58), was Chairman of the National Committee to Restore Internal Security in the early 1980s – see *ABN Correspondence*, March - April 1984 pgs 45-46 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/14109/file.pdf. Morris was also a member of the Board of Directors of the USCWF, Singlaub/Graham's American WACL chapter, around 1986 – see http://www.publiceye.org/foreign_policy/covert/USCWF-circa-1986.pdf.

(202) Crozier, pg 113.

(203) Ironically, the death-blow to Crozier's FWF could not have come from a better friend. After serving as IOD chief for eight years from 1954 to 1962, Meyer then headed the Covert Action Staff in the CIA Directorate of Plans until 1967; he went on to served as Assistant Deputy Director of Plans until 1973. At this time he was a very close associate of Crozier who records that he flew to Langley three or four times a year to visit Meyer at Langley - Crozier, pgs 90-91. At the time of FWF's exposure in

the summer of 1975, Meyer was CIA Chief of Station in London, serving from 1973 to 1976 - Crozier's main linkman to the CIA throughout the crucial period of the mid-1970s. Meyer retired from the CIA in 1977 and died in 2001.

(204) *Time Out*, 20/6/75.

(205) *Conflicting Accounts*, 29/8/75; *Subversion Inc.*, 5/9/75.

(206) ISC memo, 2/6/75 quoted in Péan, pg 86; as this is translated from the French, the text given here will not match the exact wording of the English original. See Ramsay and Dorril, pg 39. The same year as this ISC conference at Ditchley Park, one of its Governors, Professor the Lord Vaizey, whom we have already met as Honorary Treasurer of the British-Irish Association founded by Hamilton, Crozier and Moss after the ISC's 1972 Ditchley Park conference on Ireland, served as an advisor to an ISC Study Group on subversion in higher education which started work in November 1975 and which published its findings in September 1977 as an ISC Special Report, *The Attack on Higher Education.* The ISC Education Study Group also included Professor Edward Shils of the USCISC and Dr. Kenneth Watkins of NAFF and Aims. See *State Research* no. 1, October 1977, pg 17; *Time Out*, 30/9/77.

(207) Roth and Ender, pg 54; González-Mata, pg 163; Crozier, pgs 124-125. On Montedison, Pesenti and Cefis, see State Department cable 1975ROME05753. Later industrial unrest in Bergamo and the Pesenti group's refusal to negotiate with trades unions were reported in cable 1976MILAN01099. A later political analysis of Bergamo which mentions Pesenti is given in cable 1978MILAN00427. Search for the cable references at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/.

(208) Crozier claims that what he calls "the Great Smear Campaign" against himself, the ISC and FWF ended his (official) links to MI5. A few days after the CIA/FWF story broke in June 1975, Crozier records having his last meeting with "the then head of MI-5, Sir Michael Hanley, and the head of its counter-subversion department, Dirk Hampden ... I had no further contact with MI-5, ever" - Crozier, pg 114. Nonetheless, in April 1976, Crozier's NAFF published a controversial article attributed to "a recently retired counter-subversion chief of MI-5", presumably Hampden, former Director of F Branch.

(209) Crozier, pg 118.

(210) *Scotsman*, 8/8/77. On NAFF, see Episode 2 of the 2007 BBC documentary *Tory! Tory! Tory!* at https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=TgSSoYCM00A.

(211) For video footage of the January 1976 speech written by Moss, see https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/margaret-thatcher/8104348/Margaret-Thatcher-pokes-fun-at-Iron-Lady-moniker-in-1976-speech-archive-footage.html. For Moss's influence over Thatcher, see declassified State Department cable 1976LONDON01830 of 5th February 1976 which reports that Thatcher preferred Moss's draft of her major defence speech to the advice of Reginald Maudling, her Shadow Foreign Secretary whom she dismissed in November 1976 - search for the cable reference at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/.

NAFF was renamed the Freedom Association in January 1979. The FA continued with many of NAFF's personnel; Robert Moss remained NAFF/FA Director until 1981. Norris McWhirter was FA Chairman, Ivens FA Vice-President, both being on the editorial committee of *Freedom Today*, the FA journal previously published as

The Free Nation whose editor, Philip Vander Elst, attended a Cercle meeting held in Bonn in July 1983 (also see footnote 472 on Ivens and Vander Elst). Crozier also served on the *Freedom Today* editorial committee until April 1989. FA Board members included the ISC's Vice-Admiral Sir Louis Le Bailly, SIF's Gerald Howarth and Rhodes Boyson, and Professor R. V. Jones who served with the ISC's Leonard Schapiro and G. K. Young in the group set up to reorganise MI6 in the 1950s. The FA used the same tactics of legal action against strikers that NAFF had used in 1976, most notably during the 1984 miners' strikes leading to the foundation of the breakaway Union of Democratic Mineworkers. Norris McWhirter died in 2004 – see footnote 83; Thatcher attended his memorial service. Of the people mentioned in this study, the FA Council in 2020 still includes Jillian Becker and former MP Sir Gerald Howarth – see https://www.tfa.net/council_management_committee.

The late former FA Honorary Vice-President Vladimir Bukovsky no longer figures on its website; in April 2015, the Crown Prosecution Service announced that Bukovsky was to be prosecuted for possession of indecent photographs of children; he counter-sued for libel – see https://www.theguardian.com/law/2015/aug/24/soviet-dissident-sues-crown-prosecution-service-alleging-libel. In July 2016, the High Court rejected Bukovsky's libel suit, ruling in favour of the CPS - see https://www.bailii.org/ew/cases/EWHC/QB/2016/1926.html. The trial resumed in December 2016 – see https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2016/12/12/russian-dissident-tells-court-downloading-child-abuse-images/. In February 2018, the trial in Cambridge County Court was stayed indefinitely due to Bukovsky's frailty – see https://www.dailymail.co.uk/wires/pa/article-5382179/Trial-Russian-dissident-stayed-ill-health.html; https://www.cambridge-news.co.uk/news/cambridge-news/russian-dissident-vladimir-bukovsky-court-14280235.
On the 2019 English-language publication of Bukovsky's 1995 book *Judgment in Moscow: Soviet Crimes and Western Complicity* with a foreword by Edward Lucas, see https://www.nationalreview.com/2019/05/vladimir-bukovsky-legendary-dissident-conversation/ and https://www.nationalreview.com/2019/05/vladimir-bukovsky-dissident-conversation-echoing-words/about. Bukovsky died on 27th October 2019 – see https://www.theguardian.com/world/2019/oct/28/vladimir-bukovsky-obituary; https://www.nytimes.com/2019/10/28/world/europe/Vladimir-Bukovsky-dead.html.

(212) *The Great White Hoax*, pgs 59-60.

(213) *Time Out*, 8/7/77. After a posting to Washington as Naval Attaché and Commander of the British Navy Staff from 1967 until 1969 (liaising closely with the US Navy Chief of Operations, Admiral Thomas H. Moorer), Le Bailly served as Deputy Chief of Defence Staff (Intelligence) in 1971-72 before becoming Director-General of Intelligence at the Ministry of Defence and Deputy Chairman of the Joint Intelligence Committee, resigning in July 1974; he died in 2010 – see Aldrich, pgs 246 and 440; https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/military-obituaries/naval-obituaries/8084056/Vice-Admiral-Sir-Louis-Le-Bailly.html.

(214) On Borneo, see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Operation_Claret. Photographs from 1960, 1965 and 1968 may be found at https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/search/portraitLarge/mw87256/Sir-Walter-Colyear-Walker; https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/search/portrait/mw90318/Sir-Walter-Colyear-Walker; https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/search/portrait/mw90579/Sir-Walter-Colyear-Walker.
In 1980, he published *The Next Domino?* with a foreword by Julian Amery – see https://www.amazon.com/Next-Domino-Sir-Walter-Walker/dp/0852050054.
Walker died in 2001; see https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/military-

obituaries/gurkha-obituaries/1337219/General-Sir-Walter-Walker.html.

(215) Crozier, pg 118. Besides funding from industry, NAFF almost certainly received covert financing from South Africa. The translated list of DoI projects for 1978-79 by Connie Mulder tellingly includes project "G.88 National Freedom Association, British (60,000 members) R200,000 [= $230,000]" - see Sanders (2000), pg 237; in the Afrikaans original given by Rhoodie (pg 767), the project title is blacked out, and the amount is given as R100,000. Sanders (2000) points out (pgs 153-154) that in March 1977 the DoI front group Club of Ten took out advertisements ("Russian plot to cripple defence of the West") in the *Times*, *Guardian*, *New York Times* and *Washington Post* which reproduced the final page of a four-part series on the Angolan War by NAFF Director Robert Moss, published in the *Sunday Telegraph* from 30th January to 20th February 1977. Rhoodie (pg 346) also alludes to DoI funding of one of NAFF's most famous legal actions in January 1977, suing the Union of Post Office Workers over their boycott of South African mail and then, after the suit was rejected, suing Labour Attorney General Sam Silkin for the right to appeal: "Killing a potential week long strike in Britain against handling of mail to South Africa was undoubtedly worth a couple of million. I have not revealed details of this operation but it was known to the [South African] Cabinet", Rhoodie notes.

William Sidney, 1st Viscount De l'Isle, who died in 1991, was elected MP in October 1944 but was elevated to the Lords following the death of his father, the 5th Baron De l'Isle and Dudley, in June 1945. He was Secretary of State for Air from 1951 to 1955 (Amery held the post in 1960-62), visiting Australia in 1953 after the first British nuclear weapons test there in October 1952 - until the signature of the Polaris Sales Agreement in April 1963 and the commissioning of the first British Polaris-equipped submarine in October 1967, the Royal Air Force was in charge of British nuclear weapons. In 1956, De l'Isle was made Viscount and served as the last English Governor-General of Australia from 1961 until his retirement in 1965. Portraits of De l'Isle from 1958, 1962 and 1969 may be found at https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/search/portraitLarge/mw100520/William-Philip-Sidney-1st-Viscount-De-LIsle; https://recordsearch.naa.gov.au/SearchNRetrieve/Interface/ViewImage.aspx?B=11215637; https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/search/portraitLarge/mw119026/William-Philip-Sidney-1st-Viscount-De-Lisle. For biographies, see http://www.thepeerage.com/p4625.htm#i46241; http://adb.anu.edu.au/biography/de-lisle-viscount-william-philip-bill-17369. Whilst NAFF was being formed in July 1975, De l'Isle was busy promoting the new Conservative leader Margaret Thatcher, planning a meeting between Thatcher and American Vice-President Nelson Rockefeller on 29th June 1975; she had already met David Rockefeller at the April 1975 Bilderberg conference and met him again for a private luncheon during her American trip in September – see footnote 193; search for the declassified State Department cables 1975LONDON12769, 1975LONDON09606, 1975LONDON09712 and 1975LONDON13954 at https://aad. archives.gov/aad/.

Churchill was sacked as Thatcher's opposition junior frontbench spokesman on defence in November 1978 after voting against the renewal of sanctions on Rhodesia, also opposed by Amery, Hastings and Biggs-Davison, the latter resigning as junior Northern Ireland spokesman before he could be fired – search for the declassified State Department cable 1978LONDON18497 of 9th November 1978 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/; see footnotes 319, 353 and 560. Churchill died in 2010 – see https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2010/mar/02/winston-churchill-obituary; https://www.independent.co.uk/news/obituaries/winston-churchill-tory-mp-who-never-emerged-from-his-grandfathers-shadow-1914742.html; https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/7352626/Former-Tory-MP-Winston-Churchill-dies.html. To watch Churchill speak, see https://www.c-span.org/person/?winstonchurchill. Photographs of Churchill in 1964 and 1988 may be found at https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/search/portraitLarge/mw251935/Winston-Spencer-Churchill; https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/search/portraitLarge/mw77479/Winston-Churchill.

NAFF Director John Gouriet had served in Malaya in 1956 and as General Staff Officer Grade III Intelligence to the Director of Operations in Borneo in 1965-66; he died in 2010 - see his obituary at https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/politics-obituaries/8000573/John-Gouriet.html; footnote 455; https://books.google.co.uk/books?id=JM_dBAAAQBAJ; Episode 2 of the 2007 BBC documentary *Tory! Tory! Tory!* on NAFF at https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=TgSSoYCM00A.

(216) Ramsay and Dorril, pg 15.

(217) Dorril and Ramsay (1991), pg 288.

(218) In February 1975, Chalfont had already addressed the House of Lords on the subject of subversion and extremism, notably claiming that "something like 10 per cent of officials in major trade unions are card-carrying members of the Communist Party", that "we are now in a position when the leaders of the Communist Party can claim - not entirely without justification, I believe - the ability to impose many of their policies upon the Labour Party" and that "there are those whose membership of the Labour Party disguises political aims of a more extreme kind" – see https://api.parliament.uk/historic-hansard/lords/1975/feb/26/subversive-and-extremist-elements; also see footnote 561. In March 1976, Chalfont wrote a *Times* article about General Close's "surprise attack" NATO report; in September 1976, he addressed the Atlantic Treaty Association conference held in Denmark – search for declassified State Department cables 1976LONDON04037 of 15th March 1976 and 1976COPENH02955 of 9th September 1976 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/. Also see footnote 283.

Chalfont had excellent security and intelligence contacts such as Jeremy Wetherell, formerly a member of K5, MI5's Soviet Counter-Espionage department. In the 1980s, Wetherell worked for the private detective agency Zeus Security Consultants, founded by Chalfont and Sir James Goldsmith in 1981, which was involved in political surveillance activities on behalf of the nuclear power industry - see *Observer*, 29/1/89. Active in FARI, the IEDSS and his IST, Chalfont also supported the pro-Star Wars campaign in Britain, producing the book *Star Wars - Suicide or Survival* in 1985 and contributing an article on the Strategic Defence Initiative to the Monday Club's October 1985 Conservative Party Conference issue of their newspaper, *Right Ahead*. On Chalfont, see https://pinkindustry.wordpress.com/the-institute-for-european-defence-and-strategic-studies/alun-chalfont/; https://www.independent.co.uk/news/business/profile-lord-chalfont-old-soldier-above-the-battle-1621493.html. In 2014, Großmann named Chalfont as a regular member of the Cercle from the mid-1970s through to the 1990s, stating that he was even briefly considered as a successor to Amery as Cercle Chairman in 1993 – see *Die Internationale der Konservativen*, pg 494. A December 1964 photographic portrait of the recently ennobled Baron Chalfont can be found at https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/search/portraitLarge/mw122517/Alan-Arthur-Gwynne-Jones-Chalfont-Baron-Chalfont.

(219) Crozier, pgs 127-129; Andrew, pg 638.

(220) Crozier, pgs 114 and 118. See footnote 208 for a discussion of the authorship of this article.

(221) Grau had previously worked with the NPD within a group set up for the 1972 parliamentary elections - see Hirsch, pg 313. In July 1975, the CDU bulletin *Union in Deutschland* reported (pg 9) that the Higher Regional Court of Frankfurt had issued an DM500,000 injunction against the South Hesse SPD newspaper *Der Sozialdemokrat* if it repeated the claim that "on behalf of the CDU, Karl Friedrich Grau had offered the NPD assistance in funding electoral campaigning".

(222) *Die unheimlichen Patrioten*, pgs 433-435. From the early 1960s on, Bitschnau represented the Habsburgs in court cases against the Austrian government to restore their Austrian citizenship and residence rights, described in Bitschnau's 2005 book *Heimkehr der Habsburger - Der Kampf um das Ende der Landesverweisung* [Return of the Habsburgs – the fight to end their expulsion], Ares Press - see https://antaios.de/buecher-anderer-verlage/ares-verlag/3246/heimkehr-der-habsburger-der-kampf-um-das-ende-der-landesverweisung.

(223) *Die unheimlichen Patrioten*, pgs 428-429. On Wetter, see http://www.hls-dhs-dss.ch/textes/d/D24422.php. Wetter was not the only high-ranking Swiss military figure to work with Grau; one of the SWG speakers was Professor Hans-Rudolf Kurz, a General Staff officer from 1949 on, Deputy Director of the DMF from 1975 to his retirement in 1980, and Professor of Military History at the University of Bern from 1973 to 1980 and thereafter Honorary Professor until his death in 1990 – see footnote 48; http://www.hls-dhs-dss.ch/textes/f/F23955.php.

(224) *Fiche et Fouine, ça suffit* No. 1, February 1990, the journal of the Comité En finir avec l'Etat-fouineur [Stop the Snooper State Committee], founded after a parliamentary inquiry revealed the existence of a longstanding secret political police department within the DJPF, the Swiss Justice and Police Ministry. A second parliamentary inquiry into the DMF, the Swiss Ministry of Defence, uncovered two secret components of the Gladio network in Switzerland, the armed resistance group P26 and the intelligence group P27. P26 worked closely with MI6 who had created Gladio's European operational basis. The last secret agreement between MI6 and P26 was signed in 1987, three years before the parliamentary inquiry. See back numbers of *Fiche et Fouine, ça suffit* and the Committee's book *Schnüffelstaat Schweiz* (Snooper State Switzerland); https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/8493181/Colonel-Albert-Bachmann.html; https://de.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fichenskandal; https://www.nzz.ch/die_seltsame_hinterlassenschaft_des_helvetischen_staatsschutzes-1.3015643.

(225) Colonel Schmid committed suicide in February 1981 when faced with a judicial inquiry into his collaboration with Cincera. Hug also notes: "Despite resistance from the [Swiss] Federal Police, the chief of the South African Medical Service (SAMS) also met with the Swiss Army's top medical officer in 1980, and other meetings followed" – see footnote 103. It should be noted that "in May 1981, the Surgeon General and head of SAMS [1980-88], Maj. Gen. Nieuwoudt, established Project Coast", the SADF chemical and biological weapons programme - see http://www.au.af.mil/au/awc/awcgate/cpc-pubs/southafrica.pdf, pg 18; http://www.justice.gov.za/trc/special/index.htm#cbw; http://www.miis.edu/media/view/18941/original/balecoastarticle.pdf; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Project_Coast.

(226) Non-Swiss readers should note that as Switzerland has compulsory military service and has placed rigorous restrictions on conscientious objection, almost all

Swiss men will have had an Army personnel file.

(227) *Abendland*, March 1981, quoted in *Die unheimlichen Patrioten*, pg 670 (on which outstanding book see https://de.wikipedia.org/wiki/Die_unheimlichen_Patrioten); *Fiche et Fouine, ça suffit*, No. 1, February 1990; *Schnüffelstaat Schweiz*, pgs 133-137. For a summary of "the Cincera affair" and "the MIDONAS affair", see *Die unheimlichen Patrioten*; the revelations were published at the time in three brochures by the Democratic Manifesto, *Dossier Cincera* (1976), *Dossier DM-Prozess* (1977) and *Cincera als Cäsar: wir waren Cinceras Berner Spitzel* (1977).

(228) In 1983, Cincera was elected to the National Council, the Swiss Parliament, at the same time as Dr. Peter Sager of SOI; the two men worked together on the Parliamentary Committee on the Media - see *Die unheimlichen Patrioten*, pg 676. On the mid-1970s contacts between the South African military intelligence service MID and Cincera, Sager and Grau, see footnote 103. Cincera served on the National Council until 1995; he died in 2004 - see http://www.hls-dhs-dss.ch/textes/d/D33671.php; https://www.parlament.ch/en/biografie/ernst-cincera/45; *Zeit* 4/1977 at https://www.zeit.de/1977/04/berner-kleine-freiheit; https://de.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ernst_Cincera.

(229) *Die unheimlichen Patrioten*, pg 589. Sager served on the National Council until 1991; from 1984 to 1991, he was also a Swiss representative on the Parliamentary Assembly of the Strasbourg-based Council of Europe, and served as its sometime Vice-President - see http://www.hls-dhs-dss.ch/textes/d/D6777.php and https://www.parlament.ch/en/biografie/peter-sager/765. Sager was the leading pro-Contra propagandist in Switzerland; his Vereinigung Demokratischer Nicaragua [VDN, Association for a Democratic Nicaragua] was one of the main outlets for anti-Sandinista disinformation in Europe in the mid-1980s. Sager was particularly useful for the Contras due to his role within the Council of Europe; in 1984, he headed a CoE delegation to Nicaragua. The head of press relations for the CoE at the time was Damman's old contact Roberto Jacobo – see footnote 137. In 1985, Sager was part of a Swiss National Council delegation that strongly condemned the Sandinistas after their return to Switzerland. On 16/2/86, Sager founded the VDN together with Contras Evenor Valdivia and Jaime Pasquier and industrialist Alexander Eugster. In March 1986, Sager travelled with a second Swiss National Council delegation to Nicaragua, and on 31/5/86, the VDN gave a press conference with CIA agent Roberto Ferrey. In 1986, Sager's pro-Contra book, *Case Study of Slander - media manipulation by Nicaragua, Propagandists in Switzerland* was published by SOI. On the cooperation between Huyn's Luzern-based EKMS (European Conference for Human Rights and Self-Determination, founded in 1974) and Sager's SOI, see footnote 356. The SOI closed due to a lack of funding in 1994, thirty-five years after its foundation; Sager died in 2006 – see http://www.swissinfo.ch/ger/peter-sager--bekaempfer--linker-unterwanderung---ist-tot/580096. On Sager, see *IGfM*, pgs 63-64; *Die Contra Connection*, pgs 84-87, 245; *Die unheimlichen Patrioten*; footnote 350.

(230) See https://www.defense.gouv.fr/actualites/memoire-et-culture/hommage-a-albert-merglen.

(231) *Die unheimlichen Patrioten*, pgs 431 and 593.

(232) On Löwenthal and his various groups, see *IGfM*; Young European Federalists; Hirsch. Together with Huyn, Löwenthal also served as a major German linkman for WACL and CAUSA, the political arm of the Moonies; Löwenthal frequently attended international conferences organised by WACL and CAUSA, such as the joint

WACL/CAUSA congress hosted by Stroessner and Pinochet in Asuncion, Paraguay in 1981. On WACL and CAUSA (the Confederation for the Association and Unity of Society in the Americas), see Anderson and Anderson; Boyer; *Die Contra Connection*. Löwenthal was also a Member of Honour of the "freedom fighters" alliance, Resistance International (see footnote 358), and an Honorary Member of the Board of the right-wing students' group Hochschulring Tübinger Studenten which had links to the neo-nazi Wehrsportgruppe Hoffmann – see *Spiegel* 41/1980 pg 31 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14316876.html; Hirsch, pg 406. Löwenthal died in 2002 – see *Spiegel* 51/2002 pg 194 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-25940411.html. One of his last interviews was given in 2001 to the far-right newspaper *Junge Freiheit* which has awarded the Gerhard Löwenthal Prize since 2004 – see https://phinau.de/jf-archiv/online-archiv/file.asp?Folder=01&File=291yy09.htm&STR1=gerhard%20l%F6wenthal&STR2=&STR3=&STR4=; https://de.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gerhard-L%C3%B6wenthal-Preis; http://www.bdk-berlin.org/stiftung/gerhard-loewenthal-preis/. His memoirs were published by *Junge Freiheit* and reviewed in the *Ostpreußenblatt* by ISP and SWG speaker Friedrich-Wilhelm Schlomann – see https://jf-buchdienst.de/Buecher/Biographien/Ich-bin-geblieben-Erinnerungen.html; http://archiv.preussische-allgemeine.de/1988/1988_10_01_40.pdf, pg 11.

(233) *Stern*, 8/1978.

(234) Ramsay and Dorril; Crozier, pg 102. For Bourdeaux's career before the CSRC, see http://www.unz.com/print/ProblemsCommunism-1967sep-00108.

(235) *Observer*, 10/2/91. Keston certainly was the major British outlet for this kind of disinformation with excellent contacts to the BBC World Service: Keston's Jane Ellis did three "Words of Faith" programmes for the World Service in November 1990 which were nothing less than a party political broadcast for a newly-formed Christian Democrat party in the Soviet Union. Three years later, Crozier revealed in his memoirs who exactly was behind the new party: "In 1990, taking advantage of glasnost, the NTS had emerged as a Christian Democrat opposition party. It was allowed to hold meetings in Russia and a USSR-wide congress in Leningrad in November 1990" – Crozier, pg 271. The head of the BBC World Service in 1990, John Tusa, had been company secretary of Forum World Features in 1966-67, resigning over editorial disputes with Crozier, unaware of FWF's CIA links. On Keston, see Crozier, pgs 70-71 and 73; Ramsay and Dorril, pgs 4 and 34; *Guardian*, 31/12/76 and 11/10/89; footnotes 352 and 529.

(236) In October 1975, Gerstenmaier and Bourdeaux sat on the panel of the somewhat shambolic Sakharov Hearings detailed in declassified State Department cable 1975COPENH03099 of 21st October 1975. In January 1977, one month after his expulsion from the Soviet Union, Soviet dissident and future major Crozier ally Vladimir Bukovsky made his first appearance in Germany at a conference organised by the GfM which also featured Gerstenmaier and Nikolaus Lobkowicz as described in declassified State Department cable 1977FRANKF00622 of 24th January 1977. Search for the cable references at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/. On Bukovsky and Gerstenmaier, see footnote 353.

(237) Crozier, pg 124. Horchem's first contribution to the ISC in March 1973 was soon followed by a controversial speech of his on "Europe and Marxism" given at a conference of NATO Command (AF North) in Oslo on 14th - 15th June 1973, in which Horchem warned of the growing threat of Soviet subversion in Europe - see *Spiegel* 34/1973 pg 14 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41926469.html. In 1974,

Horchem was spoken of as a candidate for the top job to replace retiring BfV chief Günther Nollau, but the post went instead to Dr. Richard Meier - see *Spiegel* 37/1974 pg 16 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41651584.html, and 30/1975 pgs 21-23 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41458238.html.

(238) On Horchem's later activities, see *Spiegel* 31/1978 pg 17 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-40606568.html, and 36/1981 pg 16 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14340469.html; Crozier; Various authors (IFF), pgs viii-ix.

It is interesting to note that the same page of the *Spiegel* 36/1981 issue on which Horchem proclaims the need for a barely-disguised 6I to combat the peace movement also reports on an attempt by the German General Staff's Psychological Warfare Directorate to smear former General Gert Bastian, a critic of the NATO deployment of American missiles and life-partner of German Green leader Petra Kelly, as a supporter of Soviet policy. On a later smear campaign against Bastian and Kelly by Western Goals and its German branch, see *Spiegel* 44/1983 pgs 51-58 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14024265.html; on the German psychological warfare programme and its connections to the Cercle, see footnote 144.

(239) ISC advert for the *Annual* in Conflict Study no. 60, August 1975.

(240) ISC *Annual of Power and Conflict 1974-75*, pg 16.

(241) On Spínola's attendance at Cercle meetings, see the Bavarian State Security reports by Hans Langemann published in translation below. On Strauß's support for Arriaga, see the *Spiegel* 10/1980 pgs 20-28 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14315032.html; Roth and Ender. For Arriaga's attendance at the November 1976 CEDI Congress and Cercle meetings in May and November 1977, see below; footnote 294.

(242) Yallop, pg 456; *State Research* no. 15, Dec 1979 - Jan 1980, pgs 50-51.

(243) Retinger, pg 212; *State Research* no. 15, Dec 1979 - Jan 1980, pgs 50-51; *Bulletin Européen*, January 1955, pg 2 (see footnote 8).

(244) Two other participants at the 1974 Bilderberg conference soon set up groups within the complex: George Ball, Chairman of the US Committee of the ISC, founded in March 1975, and Sir Frederic Bennett of SIF, a founding member of NAFF in July 1975 - González-Mata, pgs 21, 27 and 312-315; https://publicintelligence.net/1974-bilderberg-meeting-participant-list/.

(245) *Frankfurter Rundschau*, 13/9/63 reproduced in *IGfM*, pg 75.

(246) González-Mata, pg 107; *Spiegel* 3/1970 pg 65 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-45291986.html, 4/1971 pg 76 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-43375320.html, 47/1974 pgs 65-70 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41651335.html, 44/1975 pg 28 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41392791.html, 49/1975 pgs 31-32 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41392695.html, 52/1975 pgs 28-31 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41376615.html, 50/1978 pgs 19-22 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-40606369.html, 51/1978 pgs 24-26 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-40605957.html, 9/1983 pg 218 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14023976.html, 44/1984 pg 14 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-13513129.html, 20/1985 pg 270 at

https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-13514014.html, 13/1987 pgs 53-58 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-13523055.html.

(247) On Lageneste, see Faligot and Krop, pgs 334-335.

(248) Péan, pg 242. Habsburg succeeded in bringing at least one of the CDS politicians to Bavaria - see *La Vanguardia Española* of 26/9/75 pg 22 for a report of the inauguration of the HSS centre in Wildbad Kreuth attended by Strauß, Pirkl, Rodgers, Malaud, Amaro da Costa and former Franco minister Silva Muñoz.

(249) See Günter Walraff in *Stern*, 7/4/76 and *Libération*, 9-10/4/76 and 11/4/76; Walraff 's *Die Aufdeckung einer Verschwörung.*

(250) On funding from Strauß for the three former Franco ministers, see *Spiegel* 9/1980 pgs 22-29 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14327589.html. In the critical period of 1976 to 1977, CEDI was avoided as an organisation far too closely associated with the Franco years; in contrast to the extensive publicity accorded to its previous Congresses by the Spanish Press, the 1976 CEDI Congress merited only ten lines (*ABC* (Madrid) of 23/11/76 pg 37), and the 1977 CEDI Congress was afforded no mention in the Spanish media at all. Support for the three former Franco ministers was discretely given by prominent CEDI members at conferences held by the HSS, the PEU and the candidates' respective parties, notably the UDE under Silva Muñoz - see *La Vanguardia Española* of 26/9/75 pg 22 (HSS seminar attended by Strauß, Pirkl, Rodgers, Malaud, Silva Muñoz and Amaro da Costa); *ABC* (Madrid) of 28/2/76 pg 23 and *Blanco y Negro* (ABC) of 6/3/76 pg 26 (National Assembly of Silva Muñoz's UDE attended by Habsburg, Pirkl, CSU Secretary-General Tandler, Rodgers and Malaud); *ABC* (Madrid) of 11/5/76 pg 46 (PEU Congress attended by Silva Muñoz who was elected to the PEU Central Committee and honoured with a private interview with Helmut Kohl). When the three former Franco ministers joined forces in October 1976 within the Alianza Popular coalition, its Constituent Congress was attended by Rodgers, Lord St Oswald and Pons - see *La Vanguardia Española* of 8/3/77 pg 13. After the weak showing of AP candidate Fraga in the June 1977 elections, Silva Muñoz left the Alianza Popular and undertook a failed attempt to unite the Spanish extreme Right on a joint ticket with Blas Piñar of Fuerza Nueva in the March 1979 elections. On post-Franco politics, see the useful *Diccionario de la Transicion*, Victoria Prego, Plaza & Janes, Barcelona 1999.

It should be noted that the clandestine funding by Strauß of Spanish conservative candidates was paralleled by a covert German government programme, Operation Polyp, which used the BND to channel over 50 million Marks to the major political parties in Spain and in Portugal between 1975 and 1982 – see *Spiegel* 6/2000 pg 32 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-15613832.html.

(251) *Die Contra Connection*, pg 164; also see *Spiegel* 46/1984 pgs 153-157 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-13511516.html. The German Federal Minister for Cooperation at the time of this grant was CSU politician Jürgen Warnke, who attended a Cercle meeting in July 1984 - see the Postscript. The HSS published a celebration of sixteen years of cooperation with the Fundación Cánovas del Castillo in its *Informationen 1/2 1995* (pg 14), which quoted HSS Chairman Alfred Bayer: "Over the past sixteen years we have held no fewer than 7,350 seminars with over 335,000 participants, over 80% of which [were organised] in cooperation with the Fundación". Bayer and the Fundación's head, Carlos Robles Piquer, were received by King Juan Carlos as part of the 1995 celebration.

Robles Piquer was Fraga Iribarne's brother-in-law and had twice served under him, firstly from 1962 to 1967 as Director-General of Information, Fraga's top civil servant and Crozier's main contact when Fraga was Minister (see Crozier, pg 72 and *La Vanguardia Española* of 30/1/65 pg 1), and then again in the first post-Franco government of December 1975 – July 1976 when Fraga was Vice-President and Interior Minister and Robles Piquer was Minister for Education and Science. A former Spanish Ambassador to Chad, Italy, Libya and Malta, Robles Piquer then served as Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs from 1979 to 1981 before becoming Director of RTVE (Spanish Radio-Television) in 1981-82. In 1982 he was appointed General Coordinator of Alianza Popular and headed the Fundación Cánovas del Castillo throughout the 1980s and 1990s whilst serving as Senator from 1983 to 1986 and then Member of the European Parliament from 1986 to 1999 – see http://www.europarl.europa.eu/meps/en/1330/CARLOS_ROBLES+PIQUER/history/4. In 1983 (at least), Robles Piquer was a Cercle member, attending both Cercle meetings held that year – see the Postscript. He died in February 2018.

As for Fraga Iribarne, having founded the Alianza Popular coalition in October 1976 and been trounced as AP candidate in the June 1977 elections, Fraga was official Leader of the Opposition from 1982, when AP became the second strongest party in Spain, until 1986 when he resigned from AP. In 1989, Fraga Iribarne refounded AP as the Partido Popular, serving as its Honorary President and selecting future Prime Minister José María Aznar as PP's President. Withdrawing from national politics, Fraga Iribarne was then elected President of the Region of Galicia in 1990, a post he held until 2005. After his 2005 regional election defeat, he was selected to represent the Galician Parliament in the Senate, a post reconfirmed in 2008. Fraga Iribarne died on 15th January 2012 – see his obituaries in *La Vanguardia Española* of 16/1/12 pgs 1 and 11-13; *La Vanguardia Española* of 17/1/12 pgs 1 and 12-13; *ABC* (Madrid) of 16/1/12 pgs 1, 3, 5 and 20-31; *ABC* (Madrid) of 22/1/12 pgs 6-7; https://www.theguardian.com/world/2012/jan/17/manuel-fraga; https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/politics-obituaries/9018817/Manuel-Fraga.html.

(252) The Service de Documentation, de Renseignements et d'Action, a branch of the Army's Service Général de Renseignements. Part, at least, of the Gladio network in Belgium was run by SDRA-8.

(253) Brewaeys and Deliège, pg 58.

(254) See Blackstock; Churchill and Vander Wall, 1988 and 1990.

(255) Churchill and Vander Wall, 1988, pg xiv.

(256) It is interesting to note that one of PIO's Press contacts at the time was René Haquin, the journalist whose book *Des taupes dans l'extrême droite - la Sûreté de l'Etat et le WNP* first exposed the Latinus/Smets story, described in a later chapter. It appears with hindsight that Latinus's fascist militia WNP served to entrap and discredit Smets and other Sûreté officers investigating the triangle of de Bonvoisin, Bougerol and Massart, and their connections to the Belgian extreme Right - the WNP was subsequently deliberately blown by its members to compromise the Sûreté: this would explain the revealing interviews Latinus gave Haquin for his book. Haquin got sucked in and became as much an actor in parapolitical developments as a reporter of them; it would seem that Haquin was at least unwittingly manipulated into blowing the gaffe and sinking the Sûreté's investigations. Haquin's association with PIO several years previous to the WNP scandal may however indicate a less innocent involvement. Haquin, having paved the way, subsequently withdrew from further

political investigation and returned to his previous field of crime reporting; he died in 2006.

(257) Bougerol in conversation with Philippe Brewaeys.

(258) See Anderson and Anderson.

(259) Interview with Ray Cline by Alan de Francovitch and the BBC team preparing the programme *Gladio Story*, quoted by Bouffioux in *Télémoustique*, 23/4/92 – this experience may explain PIO's English-language title. On Cline, see notably Herman and O'Sullivan who cover his later career as a disinformationist in depth; also see https://www.c-span.org/person/?raycline and notably https://www.c-span.org/video/?312465-1/ray-cline-interview.

(260) See https://www.trumanlibrary.org/calendar/main.php?currDay=10&currMonth=7&currYear=1946; http://rheuh.free.fr/comptesrenduscis/pdf/patri05.pdf, pg 15 which reveals that in 1955 Arnaud's sister married Charles Winton Browne Rankin, private secretary to the Lord Chancellor of England, the Viscount Kilmuir, later 1st Earl Kilmuir. As Sir David Maxwell Fyfe, Kilmuir had previously been one of the prosecutors at the Nuremberg Trials, principal drafter in 1950 of the European Convention on Human Rights, and the Conservative Home Secretary from 1951 to 1954 who produced the 1952 Maxwell Fyfe Directive laying down the powers of MI5. On Baudouin de Borchgrave's contribution to the early American nuclear weapons programme, see footnote 262.

(261) Brewaeys and Deliège, pgs 55 and 118.

(262) See "Designs on Africa", *Newsweek*, 19/6/78; http://www.unz.org/Pub/PolicyRev-1978q3-00097; *Covert Action Information Bulletin*, no. 10, Aug-Sept 1980, pg 37; http://usacac.army.mil/cac2/cgsc/carl/download/csipubs/odomshaba2.pdf.

Besides the son's visit to Katanga/Shaba, there is an interesting connection between the region and de Borchgrave's father: Baudouin de Borchgrave had facilitated access to uranium from Katanga for the early American nuclear weapons programme. "Arnaud de Borchgrave's father, working in the *Deuxième Section* [Belgian military intelligence in exile in London], helped to organize the shipment of uranium to the US from the Belgian Congo" – see *A Spy's London*, Roy Berkeley (foreword by Rupert Allason/Nigel West), Pen and Sword, London 1994, pg 46 at https://books.google.co.uk/books?id=0XB-AwAAQBAJ&q=Katanga&f=false#v=snippet&q=Katanga&f=false. Baudouin de Borchgrave's later position as Belgian Military Attaché in Washington from 1946 on (see footnote 260) made him a key contact for American sourcing of uranium from the Belgian company, the Union Minière du Haut Katanga (UMHK) which "by 1926 had a virtual monopoly of the world uranium market (holding most of the deposits known at the time), to be broken only by the German invasion of 1940. This uranium was mostly refined at Olen, Belgium [...] The United States of America obtained uranium for the atomic bomb from the Union Minière. At a meeting on 18 September 1942 between Edgar Sengier, head of UMHK, and United States General Kenneth Nichols of the Manhattan Project, Nichols purchased the 1,500 tonnes of uranium (mostly mined at Shinkolobwe mine, near the town of Likasi) the project required. This was already in the United States, and additional ore was shipped from the Congo [...] some 1,200 tonnes of uranium stored at the Olen refinery were captured by the Germans in 1940, and only recovered by US troops at the end of the war" – see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Union_Mini%C3%A8re_du_Haut_Katanga; https://www.

newsweek.com/congolese-uranium-nazi-germany-and-race-build-bomb-471167; footnote 200.

UMHK, now known as Umicore, played an important part in the 1946 creation of the Milpol private intelligence service run by André Moyen; Milpol's three founders were Marcel de Roover (former Director of the Société Générale Industrielle et Chimique du Haut Katanga), Colonel René Mampuys of the Belgian military intelligence service and Herman Robiliart, Director of UMHK – see footnote 100; Van Doorslaer and Verhoeyen; *Histoire de glaives*, Michel Bouffioux, published in *Gladio*, pgs 33-34; Schrijvers, pg 319; http://www.kaowarsom.be/documents/bbom/Tome_VI/Robiliart.Herman_Jean.pdf; Various authors, *Qui a tué Julien Lahaut?*.

Coincidentally, in 1950 Arnaud de Borchgrave reported on alleged Russian subversion in the uranium mines of the Belgian Congo – see *De Gooi- en Eemlander* of 4/1/50 pg 3 at https://resolver.kb.nl/resolve?urn=ddd:011155252:mpeg21:pdf. The Belgian parliamentary report into the murder of Patrice Lumumba makes it clear that de Borchgrave's source was André Moyen – see https://www.lachambre.be/kvvcr/pdf_sections/comm/lmb/312_6_volume1.pdf, pg 512.

(263) Boyer, pg 283.

(264) See Cooley. In 2004, de Borchgrave wrote an article on a December 1980 private meeting between de Marenches and Ronald Reagan which de Borchgrave attended – see footnote 430.

(265) On de Borchgrave and MARA, see Boyer; *Lobster* 19, pg 20; Herman and O'Sullivan; Brewaeys and Deliège; https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP90-00845R000100270003-5.pdf. Rees, Moss and Ray Wannall (see footnote 417) also worked within the Scaife-funded Maldon Institute, founded in 1985 – see http://www.publiceye.org/liberty/Maldon.html; http://www.publiceye.org/liberty/Rees/Rees.html; http://www.publiceye.org/huntred/Hunt_For_Red_Menace-10.html#P962_221167. Cleveland Cram, author of the CIA's mostly classified assessment of James Jesus Angleton, underscored the close links between Angleton, Moss and de Borchgrave: "De Borchgrave, soon-to-be editor of the new *Washington Times*, and Moss were friends and admirers of Angleton, whose conspiracy theories were consistent with their own. Moss had been spreading Angleton propaganda for some time" – see footnote 496; https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/opinions/1980/10/12/the-conspiracy-to-create-traitors/3d0b41c3-5b62-471b-8d32-f99f8b32139a/.

From 1998 on, de Borchgrave served as CEO and Editor at large for United Press International (which was purchased by the Unification Church in 2000) and was still active as a UPI contributor when he died in February 2015, as well as being a founding Board member of Newsmax.com – see https://www.newsmax.com/blogs/deBorchgrave/id-80/; https://www.newsmax.com/Headline/de-borchgrave-obituary-war-correspondent-journalist/2015/02/15/id/624927/; https://www.upi.com/Top_News/US/2015/02/15/Arnaud-de-Borchgrave-UPI-editor-at-large-dies-at-88/6451424021985/; https://www.upi.com/Top_News/Opinion/Outside-View/2015/02/15/A-journalists-journalist-Arnaud-de-Borchgrave/8211424043057/; https://www.csis.org/programs/transnational-threats-project/current-projects/arnaud-de-borchgrave-transnational-threats-0; https://archive.triblive.com/news/obituaries/journalistic-royalty-de-borchgrave-bucked-mainstream-media-mentality/ [a Scaife-funded newspaper which notes that Scaife funded de Borchgrave's post at the CSIS]; https://www.washingtontimes.com/news/2015/feb/15/arnaud-de-borchgrave-former-washington-times-edito/; https://www.nytimes.com/2015/02/17/business/media/arnaud-de-borchgrave-a-journalist-whose-life-was-a-tale-itself-dies-at-88.html; https://www.bostonglobe.com/metro/obituaries/2015/02/19/arnaud-borchgrave-journalist-whose-life-was-tale-itself-dies/uG9ufZewmRWq0U9PcUonyL/story.html; https://www.independent.co.uk/news/people/arnaud-de-borchgrave-belgian-aristocrat-who-became-a-widely-admired-foreign-correspondent-and-later-10153286.html; https://georgetowner.com/articles/2015/03/05/legendary-newsman-arnaud-de-borchgrave-dies-88/; https://ericmargolis.com/2015/02/arnaud-de-borchgrave-i-salute-you/; https://franceintheus.org/spip.php?article5845.

(266) For a lecture on subversion given by Bougerol to BROC in February 1979, see *Damoclès*, March 1979, pgs 3-5. Eminent Flemish journalist Walter de Bock investigated Latinus in depth in a series of articles entitled *Latinus, de spiderman*, published in *De Morgen*, 1-12/7/89, and collected and translated into French as a special issue of *CelsiuS*, December 1991.

(267) Damman's misspelling of Bougerol's name is no indication of a lack of contact between Damman and Bougerol at this stage - the same 1976 Chapter participants' list includes Damman's misspelling "Totossy"; Töttösy had been in touch with Damman since at least 1961. The attendance lists for the 1976 Chapter Assembly and Charlemagne Grand Dinner can be found in the documentary annex to this full sixth edition of *Rogue Agents*.

(268) For the full list of participants at the 1974 CEDI Congress, see the documentary annex to this full sixth edition of *Rogue Agents*. Damman, Jonet, Vankerkhoven, Marcken de Merken and Preumont also all served on the Executive Committee set up by the AESP in November 1974 to prepare for the celebration of the 1976 Bicentennial of American Independence. From 1976 to 1991, Preumont served as Director of the Centre for Studies of the Euro-Atlantic Association of Belgium before being elected its Vice-President, serving from 1991 to 2011 when he was elected Treasurer of the international Atlantic Treaty Association - see http://www.atahq.org/ata-staff/jean-paul-preumont/.

(269) Eringer, pg 50; the relevant years at https://publicintelligence.net/category/documents/bilderberg/bilderberg-participant-lists/.

(270) Van Doorslaer and Verhoeyen, pgs 150-154; Willan, pgs 107-100; Bernard Ludwig, *Paix et Liberté: A Transnational Anti-Communist Network*, published in *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, pg 84.

(271) After serving as Defence Minister under de Gasperi, Brosio was appointed Italian Ambassador to the Soviet Union in 1947, to the UK in 1952, to the US in 1955 and to France in 1961, serving until 1964. Brosio allegedly attended an extraordinary Bilderberg meeting held in October 1957 at Fiuggi and devoted to security within NATO (also attended by Cord Meyer) - see González-Mata, pgs 27 and 58; Eringer, pg 45. During his term as Secretary-General of NATO from 1964 to 1971, Brosio attended Bilderberg conferences from at least 1965 to 1967 - in 1965 at Villa d'Este, Lake Como, Italy (with Ball, Bennett, the then President of the ENI Italian oil company Eugenio Cefis, Brosio's successor as NATO Secretary-General from 1971 to 1984 Joseph Luns, Malagodi, David Rockefeller, and Adolph W. Schmidt), in 1966 in Wiesbaden which dealt with the urgent question of a reorganisation of NATO (with Abs, the then Secretary of State George Ball, Bennett, Brzezinski, Kleinwort, Luns and Rockefeller; according to González-Mata and Eringer, Pinay and General Vernon

Walters also attended), and in 1967 in Cambridge (with Ball, Bennett, Diebold, Senator Henry M. Jackson, Luns and Rockefeller) - see the relevant years at https://publicintelligence.net/category/documents/bilderberg/bilderberg-participant-lists/.

After his NATO term ended in 1971, Nixon awarded him the Presidential Medal of Freedom. Brosio then served as a PLI Senator and leader of the PLI fraction in the Italian Senate from 1972 to 1976. In March 1975, he attended a conference on European security organised by the Centro Italiano di Documentazione e Azione Sociale (CIDAS) which included amongst its participants Gianno Accame, a former Italian correspondent of Aginter Presse, and General Diulio Fanali of ISSED, implicated in the Borghese coup and the Rosa dei Venti conspiracy – see Laurent, pg 304. After his electoral defeat in 1976, Brosio retired from active politics; he served as President of the Italian Atlantic Committee from 1979 until his death in March 1980.

(272) Information from Jeff Bale; Willan, pgs 107-110. For a fictionalised account of the various coup attempts in Italy, see Morris West's *The Salamander*, William Heinemann, London 1973.

(273) Cornwell, pg 90. On Pesenti's business empire, also see https://papers.ssrn.com/sol3/papers.cfm?abstract_id=391180.

(274) Cornwell, pgs 166-167. Naylor records [pg 127]: "Of particular interest was a 1972 "loan" [of 50,000 million lira] to Pesenti from the IOR. It was indexed to the Swiss franc and, when repaid [in 1979], cost him three times the sum originally contracted. Whether it was a smart business operation by the IOR, a cover for Pesenti's pumping money into the Vatican bank, or simply a device for the IOR to help Pesenti illegally move a large sum of cash abroad will likely remain a mystery." The *NRC Handelsblad* of 2/4/84 pg 15 (at https://resolver.kb.nl/resolve?urn=KBNRC01:000027721:mpeg21:pdf) and *La Vanguardia Española* of 3/4/84 pg 8 confirm that the repayment was more than triple the sum originally lent.

(275) The loan taken by Pesenti was only one of the extremely complex financial transactions by Calvi which allowed him to steal $250 million for P2. The most recent and comprehensive account of the Banco Ambrosiano is given by the respected financial journalist Charles Raw, who details Pesenti's relationship with Banco Ambrosiano. See Raw, pgs 91-92 for this episode.

(276) Péan, pg 90. Nothing is known of the Edicercle project - one possibility is indicated in footnote 360. Apart from the information in Péan and Rhoodie, little has been published about the Centre du Monde Moderne; its last known conference was the joint organisation with the ISC, NSIC and the German Thyssen Foundation of a "Multinational Conference on New Dimensions for the Defense of the Atlantic Alliance" held in Winchester in November 1976 – see Jeffrey H. Michaels in *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, pg 153.

(277) Péan, pg 91.

(278) Péan, pg 92.

(279) Crozier makes no mention at all of FARI or of BOSS in his memoirs, no doubt because of the sensitive issues of covert South African funding of FARI and BOSS involvement in the operations against prominent Liberals Jeremy Thorpe and Peter

Hain.

Rhoodie (pgs 210-213) gives details of the South African role in FARI: "From June 1, 1975 [Geoffrey Stewart-]Smith was linked by written contract with the [South African Department of Information front group] Foreign Affairs Association (FAA) of Cas de Villiers in Pretoria through which he received his general instructions [...] Our general instructions to the Foreign Affairs Research Institute in London included a note that they should continuously spotlight political double standards, emphasize South Africa's role as a staunch ally in times of need, its strategic importance in a military and economic sense, the oil route around the Cape and that the country was being subject to terrorism and violence [... Information Minister] Conny Mulder therefore decided to have his [Stewart-Smith's] organisation linked to the Southern African Freedom Foundation (SAFF) in Johannesburg, a full-time front organisation of the Department of Information headed by R. F. Metrowich. Its main task was to act as an anti-communist organisation in South Africa under the pretext of promoting free enterprise. The SAFF was also to be South Africa's representative in the Taiwanese-based World Anti-Communist League [...] As of 1st August, 1977, the Foreign Affairs Research Institute in London therefore came under the direction of Red Metrowich's SAFF".

(280) Coxsedge, Coldicut and Harant, pg 124; *Guardian*, 11/2/83. Stewart-Smith, who died in 2004, "admitted that another of his organisations, the Foreign Affairs Research Institute, had been mainly funded by the apartheid government in South Africa. The admission came in 1987 when Stewart-Smith appeared at the London Bankruptcy Court, disclosing debts of £150,388 and no assets" – see https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/1457299/Geoffrey-Stewart-Smith.html; https://www.theguardian.com/news/2004/apr/13/guardianobituaries.conservatives; https://www.thegazette.co.uk/London/issue/50878/page/4467/data.pdf; footnote 455. Rhoodie (pg 211) writes that: "It was a costly project, and by the end of June 1978 Smith's organisation (code-named Guard-project G.52) had received some R440,000 [= $506,000] from the Department of Information [DoI]"; the list of DoI projects given in Rhoodie (pg 766) specifies that R120,000 [= $138,000] was budgeted for "G.52 Guard: Foreign Policy Institute, London" for the year 1978-79.

(281) Christie (no date), pgs 126-127.

(282) *Guardian*, 6/5/80 and 11/2/83; Ramsay and Dorril, pgs 4-5 and 40; *State Research* no. 7, Aug/Sept 1978; *Observer*, 29/1/89; Dorril and Ramsay (1991); Toczek; Herman and O'Sullivan, pg 269, note 62.

After wartime service with the Italian partisans, **Colonel Ronald Edward Henry Waring**, later **18th Duke de Valderano**, served with MI6 in Rome during the immediate post-war years, helping László Almásy escape from an NKVD death squad in Hungary (fictionalised in the 1992 novel and 1997 film *The English Patient*) before 'retiring' to Portugal in 1954, lecturing on counter-subversion at the Portuguese Higher Military Academy and attending CEDI meetings held in Spain in the 1960s and early 1970s. A Portuguese branch of CEDI was first announced in 1959 and formally founded in 1962 – see the 1972 CEDI brochure in the documentary annex to this full sixth edition of *Rogue Agents*; *La Vanguardia Española* of 27/9/59 pg 7; *ABC* (Madrid) of 27/9/59 pg 81; *ABC* (Sevilla) of 7/11/62 pg 27; *ABC* (Madrid) of 9/11/62 pg 8; footnote 344.

News reports in *La Vanguardia Española* and *ABC* on CEDI meetings in the early 1960s refer to the presence at the 1960 IX CEDI Congress of an Irish Colonel variously named as Colonel Warding (*La Vanguardia Española* of 5/7/60 pg 5) or Colonel Waring (*ABC* (Sevilla) of 5/7/60 pg 15), then at the 1961 X CEDI Congress as Colonel Ronald Waring who gave a presentation on Angola (*ABC* (Madrid) of 8/7/61 pg 48), again at the 1962 XI CEDI Congress as Colonel Naring (*La Vanguardia Española* of 26/6/62 pg 9) or Mr. Ronald Woring who warmly applauded Portuguese policy in Angola and Mozambique (*ABC* (Madrid) of 24/6/62 pg 89), and finally at the 1963 XII CEDI Congress as a certain Irish Colonel Donald W. Aring (*La Vanguardia Española* of 9/6/63 pg 7 and *ABC* (Sevilla) of 9/6/63 pg 64) or Colonel Ronald Waring (*ABC* (Madrid) of 5/6/63 pgs 51-52). Waring was particularly active at this time on the subject of the insurgency in the Portuguese possession of Angola, publishing the English-language book *The War in Angola – 1961* in Lisbon (Tip Silvas Lda) in 1961 or 1962. Waring also defended *Catholic Herald* Assistant Editor Hugh Kay, who "has come under heavy fire [...] for his defence of the Portuguese troops against allegations of atrocities" (see *Catholic Herald*, 22/9/61 pg 8, *Angola – no massacre by troops, says British Army col*). In 1962, Waring contributed an article *The Case For Portugal* to the balanced Institute of Race Relations report *Angola, A Symposium: Views Of a Revolt*; Kay provided another pro-Portuguese article giving the Catholic view. Kay's *Catholic Herald* articles on Angola were republished in 1963 by the Portuguese Embassy in Australia. Kay later was lead author of the ISC's September 1975 Special Report, *Portugal: Revolution and Backlash* as well as author of the 1979 FARI brochure *The Case for a Christian co-operative social order.*

To return to Waring, following the death of his father in 1962, he inherited the title of 18th Duke of Valderano; although he attended the 1966 XV CEDI Congress as Colonel Waring (*ABC* (Madrid) of 19/10/66 pg 91), it was as the Duke of Valderano (but still attributed to Ireland) that he attended the 1971 XX CEDI Congress (*La Vanguardia Española* of 13/7/71 pg 9), and was listed as such amongst the individual CEDI members in their 1972 commemorative brochure. In 1972, Waring went out to Angola as a counter-terrorism advisor, reporting to MI6 on the state of the Portuguese military. He later attended the XXIII CEDI Congress in July 1974. After the collapse of the Portuguese regime, Waring returned to the UK and soon joined Young/Cavendish's Unison private army. Waring also served as a Council member of the South African-funded group FARI who published his essay, *Eurocommunism and Italy*, referred to by Robert Moss in the Summer 1977 issue (pg 14) of the Heritage Foundation journal *Policy Review* – see http://www.unz.org/Pub/PolicyRev-1977q3-00007?View=PDF. In 1986, Waring acted as founding Chairman of the Council of Professor Paul Wilkinson's Research Foundation for the Study of Terrorism ("lecturer and former instructor in anti-terrorism") alongside other FARI members and Lieutenant-General Jose de Bettencourt Rodrigues, Waring's former Portuguese colleague in the Angolan counter-insurgency campaign as Commander of the Eastern Military District in 1971-73 – see below; footnote 517.

On this period, former Special Forces officer Rupert Chetwynd wrote in his book *Yesterday's Enemy*: "Valderano had gained his formidable reputation for insight into terror, insurgency and guerilla warfare alongside the partisans in the north of Italy towards the end of the Second World War. This was before he had assumed his many Italian and Sicilian titles, as they would have been unlikely to cut much ice with the mostly communist partigiani. His more prosaic name was Ronnie Waring. He had gone on to valiant deeds in the early, tense days of the Cold War. This, in turn, had led to his appointment as an instructor at the NATO War College near Lisbon. With the 1974 revolution in Portugal, he was moved on to lectureships in Rome [at the NATO Defence College] and London [at the Royal Defence College], as well as the United States and Brazil. Other countries of special interest to him were Angola, the Congo, Mozambique and Zimbabwe. At much the same time, mid-1970s [incorrect, 1986], he set up a Research Foundation for the Study of Terrorism [...] Valderano's Research Foundation was to attract any number of august names but, unfortunately, a lesser enthusiasm for funding. He had the satisfaction of being chairman of a board, which included Senator 'Little John' John Tower, Sam Cummings, Paul Channon, Nathan Adams and the Archduke Otto von Habsburg, amongst many others from Europe, Latin America, the Far East, Asia and even Africa." – from the unarchived post http://www.yesterdaysenemy.impalapublications.com/finalchapter.pdf; see http://www.impalapublications.com/cat_enemy.php. On Waring and the RFST, see footnote 517; Leigh, pgs 221-222; http://www.agentura.ru/text/biblio/valderano.rtf. Waring died in 2005. Anecdotally, in 1965 Waring had considered investing in tourism development of Granada and the Costa del Sol together with notorious property developer J. G. Poulson, whose investigation (and later conviction) for corruption provoked the resignation of Home Secretary Reginald Maudling in 1972 – see *ABC* (Madrid) of 14/10/65 pg 67; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Poulson_affair.

(283) *The Great White Hoax*, pg 32. FARI's message was echoed in the House of Lords in December 1976 by FARI Council member Lord Chalfont: "what is happening, whether we like it or not - and we are not doing very much about it - is that the Republic of South Africa is very gradually being encircled [...] in that country there are now black extremists - some of them, not all of them, Communists or Communist trained - whose aim is not majority rule, is not a share in the Government of South Africa. It is the expulsion of the white man and the taking over of the country [...] If we in the West can be denied access to the precious mineral resources of Southern Africa; if the ports of the Continent of Africa can be denied to us, either in peace or in war; if the oil routes along which we bring our precious oil from the Middle East to this country and to much of Western Europe can be cut off, then we shall suffer economically and militarily. This is not only a question of the erosion of our economic prosperity in peacetime: it is a question of placing us in a situation of the profoundest danger if we should ever go to war" – see https://api.parliament.uk/historic-hansard/lords/1976/dec/01/address-in-reply-to-her-majestys-most#S5LV0378P0_19761201_HOL_104. Also see footnote 285.

(284) Annex of ISP documents in Young European Federalists.

(285) On Chalfont, see http://scientiamilitaria.journals.ac.za/pub/article/viewFile/738/741, footnote 7. On *The Angolan File, see* Winter (1981), pgs 543-544.

(286) Dorril and Ramsay (1991), pg 365, note 10; Foot.

(287) See *ABC* (Madrid) of 23/11/76 pg 37.

(288) The 4th **Lord St Oswald**, D.L., M.C., whose plebeian name was Rowland Denys Guy Winn, had reported on the Spanish Civil War for Reuters and the *Daily Telegraph* before serving with the SOE in Albania and Thailand from 1940 to 1945. Rowland Winn later volunteered for service in Korea from 1950 to 1952, winning a Military Cross. After demobilisation and having inherited his title in 1957, Lord St Oswald sat for a quarter-century as a Conservative Peer in the House of Lords until his death in December 1984, serving as a government whip from 1959 to 1962 and Joint Parliamentary Secretary to the Ministry of Agriculture from 1962 to 1964. Apart from his parliamentary career, he was also Vice-President of the Central and Eastern Europe Commission of the European Movement in 1964 – see the *Bulletin Européen* February 1964, pg 3; footnote 8. Within the UK, he was Vice-President of Stewart-

Smith's Foreign Affairs Circle, contributing a foreword to the FAPC's 1969 book *The Soviet Threat to Europe: an analysis of Soviet potentials and intentions* that was jointly published by the West German Markus Verlag, detailed below – see *Lobster* 19 (May 1990), pg 7. One regular focus of his was on Poland - from 1971 onwards, he campaigned with Airey Neave for British official recognition of the 1940 Katyn massacre as a Soviet war crime, serving with Neave and Sir Frederic Bennett as Deputy Chairmen of the Katyn Memorial Fund, one of whose patrons was Winston Churchill MP.

From 1973 until the first direct European Parliament elections in 1979, Lord St Oswald sat as an appointed MEP. The 1976 CEDI Congress was far from his first; in July 1972, as a Member of the House of Lords, he had visited Madrid for the XXI CEDI Congress, presumably having previously attended the CEDI General Assembly held in April in London. Other participants at the July 1972 XXI CEDI Congress included Habsburg, of course, as well as Sánchez Bella, Martín Artajo, Ullastres and Geoffrey Rippon. As a freshly appointed MEP, Lord St Oswald then spoke at the next CEDI Congress in Brussels in November 1973, also attended by Sánchez Bella, Martín Artajo and Richard Jaeger - see *La Vanguardia Española* of 16/7/72 pg 7 and of 11/11/73 pg 26, the latter of which reports his speech as saying that "the honourable gentlemen at Yalta in 1945 had bought the freedom of Western Europe at the price of slavery for Central and Eastern Europe". The same year, he provided the introduction for Joseph Josten's *Unarmed Combat* which also quoted from SOI and Sager, and was published by *Beiträge zur Konfliktforschung - Psychopolitische Aspekte* [Contributions to Conflict Studies – Psychopolitical Aspects], a journal produced by the Markus Verlag. In 1977, Lord St Oswald attended the Constituent Congress of the Alianza Popular coalition which brought together a trio of former Franco ministers supported by the Cercle and CEDI - see *La Vanguardia Española* of 8/3/77 pg 13.

The **Markus Verlag** [Press] in Cologne, which operated between 1951 and c. 1994, was a significant German-language government disinformation outlet; "the Markus Press was specialised in political propaganda books on military policy and the Eastern Block, sometimes published in close cooperation with the Federal Interior Ministry and the Federal Defence Ministry [...] From 1971 to 1990, the Press published the magazine ***Beiträge zur Konfliktforschung - Psychopolitische Aspekte***, launched by **General Johannes Gerber** which was funded by the Federal Defence Ministry and set itself the task of acting as a counterweight to the generally pacifist-inclined peace research of the day" – see https://de.wikipedia.org/wiki/Markus-Verlag. One of the quarterly journal's editors was Dr. J. Kurt Klein; a regular contributor of articles was Hans Josef Horchem. On German military psy-ops and Gerber, see footnote 144.

(289) Crozier, pg 193.

(290) Career information from https://www.queens.cam.ac.uk/life-at-queens/about-the-college/college-facts/fellows-and-presidents/fellows-1900-1999, tab "1933-1946"; http://www.specialforcesroh.com/showthread.php?52769; van der Reijden. He recorded his wartime experience in Stockholm in the 1992 book *Touchlines of War* – see https://www.amazon.co.uk/Touchlines-History-European-Peter-Tennant/dp/0859586030. Knighted in 1972, he died in 1996. Tennant appears not to have been active within CEDI; his name does not appear on a 1972 list of CEDI office-holders (see the documentary annex to this full sixth edition of *Rogue Agents*), which does however name other British CEDI members besides Agnew and Rodgers:

- the Rt. Hon. Geoffrey Rippon, who had been a Councillor in the London County Council in 1952-58 and Leader of the Opposition in the LCC in 1958-59 whilst Francis Bennett (see below) was Opposition Chief Whip; MP from 1955 to 1964 and 1966 to 1987; Shadow Defence Secretary in 1969-1970; prominent Monday Club member and guest of honour at their 1970 dinner; attended the 4th WACL conference in Tokyo in September 1970 (see footnote 108); in 1970-72 Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster, Minister for Europe and chief negotiator of British entry into the EEC on 1st January 1973; attended the 1972 XXI CEDI Congress with Habsburg, Sánchez Bella, Martín Artajo and Ullastres; Secretary of State for the Environment in 1972-74; Shadow Foreign Secretary in 1974-75; participant at the April 1974 Bilderberg conference in Megève together with Sir Frederic Bennett and Gerald Thompson of Kleinwort Benson; opposed Heath in calling for support for private armies in September 1974 (*ABC* (Madrid) of 10/9/74 pg 25); Leader of the Conservative group in the European Parliament in 1977-79; International President of CEDI from 1979 to 1982; backed Heath in strong opposition to Thatcher's monetarism in 1981 (*ABC* (Madrid) of 9/10/81 pg 33); created life peer in 1987; died in 1997;

- the Rt. Hon. Sir Frederick Corfield, QC, MP from 1955 to 1974, who served as Parliamentary Private Secretary to Airey Neave before becoming Minister for Aviation Supply and Aerospace Minister in 1970-72;

- Sir Denys [Colquhoun Flowerdew] Lowson, Baronet, an investment banker who had been Sheriff of London in 1939, Lord Mayor of London in 1950-51 and Councillor in the London County Council (LCC) from 1949 to 1952;

- Francis Bennett, Conservative Chief Whip of the LCC from 1957 to 1964 and of the Greater London Council (GLC) from 1964 to 1974, then Deputy Chairman of the GLC in 1975-76;

- Kenneth Clarke MP, a veteran pro-European Conservative politician and longstanding Bilderberger who served as a member of every Conservative government from 1972 to 2014. Most recently, Clarke served under David Cameron from 2010 to 2014, first as Lord Chancellor and Secretary of State for Justice, and then as Minister Without Portfolio. His resignation from the Cabinet following the rise of the Eurosceptic wing of the Conservative Party triggered Cameron's major ministerial reshuffle in July 2014. In February 2017, he was the only Conservative MP to vote against authorising the government to trigger Brexit. Father of the House of Commons (first elected in 1970), Clarke had the Conservative whip withdrawn by Prime Minister Boris Johnson in September 2019 - see https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2019/sep/07/ken-clarke-interview-andrew-rawnsley-lost-tory-whip; in July 2020, Johnson nominated him for a peerage.

CEDI's 1972 General Assembly was held in London. The 1974 CEDI Congress was attended by Francis Bennett, Clarke, Lowson and a Bernard Edwin Woodford, a company director of Witney, Oxfordshire; this 1976 CEDI/Cercle meeting was attended by Bennett, Woodford and a Martin McLaren of London, probably the later Conservative MP who "held a position in the Home Office until 1947" before serving in Parliament from 1959 to 1964 and 1970 to 1974.

(291) Crozier, pg 193. Bach died in 2001. On Bach's involvement in the Northrop bribes scandal, see the *Spiegel* 25/1975 pgs 77-78 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41484031.html and 4/1976 pg 130 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41309601.html; *Het Vrije Volk* of 8/6/76 pg 4 at https://resolver.kb.nl/resolve?urn=ddd:010959250:mpeg21:pdf; https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP88-01315R000400070084-2.pdf; https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP88-01315R000400070085-1.pdf. Declassified State Department cable 1976BONN16314 of 27th September 1976 notes:

"Former CDU member of the Bundestag Franz Josef Bach admitted to representing Northrop through a Swiss corporation. His job was to recommend Northrop products to influential officials in European governments without revealing that he was a paid representative of Northrop"; also see declassified cable 1975STATE201608 of 25th August 1975. Search for the cable references at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/.

(292) The German government confirmed Jaeger's membership of the SA in December 2011. Its report on the Nazi affiliations of many prominent post-war politicians and members of the West German police, security and intelligence services revealed amongst other things that in 1959, of the 34 top officials in the Bundeskriminalamt (Federal Criminal Police), over half were former SS members, and three-quarters were former members of the NSDAP. The BND and BfV are "currently preparing" reports on the considerable numbers of former Nazis employed by them in the post-war period. See *Spiegel* 1/2012 pgs 32-42 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-83422497.html and http://dip21.bundestag.de/dip21/btd/17/081/1708134.pdf.

(293) On Hükelheim and Moyen, see Van Doorslaer and Verhoeyen, pg 164. There is some inconsistency in the spelling of his name; the *Spiegel* sometimes spells it Hückelheim as does the *Hamburger Abendblatt*. In 1953, arms procurement officer Lieutenant-Colonel Heinz Hükelheim accompanied Adenauer's top security official Theodor Blank to the Pentagon to request 1,300 F-86 fighter jets for a possible German contribution to the EDC – see *Spiegel* 25/1953 pg 6 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-25656510.html, and 30/1953 pgs 5-6 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-25657210.html (both Hückelheim); the official German record of the Amt Blank (which spells it Hükelheim) at https://www.bundesarchiv.de/oeffentlichkeitsarbeit/bilder_dokumente/00879/index-27.html.de. In 1955-56, Colonel Hükelheim worked for SHAPE (under NATO command); the German Representative to SHAPE was General Kielmannsegg, and the Supreme Allied Commander Europe was General Gruenther – see *Spiegel* 32/1955 pgs 10-12 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-31970881.html (Hükelheim); https://www.abendblatt.de/archiv/1956/article202939303/Eine-Allianz-ohne-Beispiel.html (Hückelheim). Between April 1965 and September 1967, Major-General Heinz Hükelheim commanded the 5th Tank Division of the German Army – see *Spiegel* 8/1966 pg 112 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-46265705.html; https://de.wikipedia.org/wiki/5._Panzerdivision_(Bundeswehr).

(294) On Jardim, see Laurent, pgs 153, 329, 335; Péan (1983), pg 149. A useful contemporary account of events is given in Robert Harvey's *Portugal – the birth of a democracy*, Macmillan, London 1978. On Kaúlza de Arriaga, search for "Kaulza" at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/; see below. Although Kaúlza de Arriaga attended three Cercle meetings between November 1976 and November 1977, he was dropped in late 1978 by Habsburg and Strauß who preferred to support the CDS - search for cable 1979LISBON07015 of 26th September 1979 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/.

(295) See https://www.leagle.com/decision/1981957497pa4601881.

(296) *Die Internationale der Konservativen*, pgs 491-492.

(297) Published in 2017 by Hennie van Vuuren at https://www.dailymaverick.co.za/article/2017-10-24-declassified-apartheid-profits-le-cercle-the-phantom-profiteers/#gsc.tab=0 and republished by Joël van der Reijden at https://isgp-studies.com/2011-10-26-first-ever-documents-on-le-cercle-pinay.

(298) Van Vuuren, pg 346.

(299) Search for the cable reference at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/. On Carlucci, see https://history.state.gov/departmenthistory/people/carlucci-frank-charles and https://history.defense.gov/Multimedia/Biographies/Article-View/Article/571285/frank-c-carlucci/; he died in June 2018.

(300) See *Die Internationale der Konservativen*, pgs 494-495.

(301) See pg 6, https://isgp-studies.com/organisations/Cercle/1977-05-taswell-report- on-le-cercle.pdf.

(302) See pg 2, https://isgp-studies.com/organisations/Cercle/1977-05-taswell-report-on-le-cercle.pdf.

(303) See https://tueriesdubrabant.1fr1.net/t2517p100-brian-crozier.

(304) Search for the cable references at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/.

(305) The pre-recorded primetime RTBF programme was described in declassified State Department cable 1977BRUSSE16914 of 23rd November 1977, which states: "The interview requested by referenced telegram and filmed on November 10 between Assistant for National Security Affairs Brzezinski and Belgian newspaper [*La Libre Belgique*, *La Dernière Heure*] publisher Maurice Brébart [a probable Cercle member] was shown November 18 on prime time -- right after the main evening news program [presented by Beyer de Ryke, an AESP contact since at least 1971 and future Cercle member] -- on French-language Belgian TV. Program included other interviews with prominent leaders such as former Secretary Kissinger, banker David Rockefeller, former French Finance Minister Antoine Pinay, Belgian Foreign Minister Henri Simonet [who, the same year, attended the Bilderberg conference alongside Kissinger and Rockefeller, and also provided the introduction to Close's *L'Europe sans défense?*], Defense Minister Paul Vanden Boeynants and German former Defense Minister Frans [sic] Josef Strauss" - search for the cable reference at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/. On the 1977 Bilderberg conference in Torquay, see above; https://publicintelligence.net/1977-bilderberg-meeting-participant-list/. Simonet had previously attended the 1971 Bilderberg conference – see footnote 119; https://publicintelligence.net/1971-bilderberg-meeting-participant-list/. As for Brébart, he was pictured together with Pinay, Rockefeller and de Bonvoisin in Washington in a photograph published in the *NEM* in June 1981 in response to the accusations of de Bonvoisin's funding of the extreme Right – see https://tueriesdubrabant.1fr1.net/t2827-brebart-maurice.

(306) Search for the cable reference at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/.

(307) Search for declassified State Department cable 1977MUNICH02862 of 27th September 1977 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/.

(308) See footnote 354.

(309) See https://www.fjs.de/fileadmin/user_upload/FJS/Documents/reisen/Franz-Josef-Strauss-Reisen-chronologisch.pdf; search for State Department cable 1977SANTIA09595 of 28th November 1977 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/; *Spiegel* 49/1977 pgs 23-24 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-40680412.html; *Zeit*

51/1977 at https://www.zeit.de/1977/51/was-strauss-in-chile-lobte and *Zeit* 35/2013 at https://www. zeit.de/2013/35/pinochet-chile-hanns-seidel-stiftung.

(310) Van Vuuren reports that Perle gave a presentation to a 1978 Cercle meeting – van Vuuren, pg 346.

(311) *Die Internationale der Konservativen*, pgs 492-493.

(312) Search for State Department cables 1977STATE295249, 1977STATE302201, 1977BRUSSE18529 and 1977BRUSSE19121 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/. On Crane, declassified State Department cable 1978DURBAN00298 notes that "One example of success for the [South African] Information Department, however, was when the House of Representatives was taking up an anti-Transkei resolution in September 1976. The day before the vote on the resolution, De Keiffer [the American lobbyist for the South African government] delivered a critical fact sheet to Ed Fuelner [sic; Feulner], Staff Director of the House Republican Study Committee. Five months earlier, Fuelner had taken a 10-day trip to South Africa paid for by the South African Foundation. Fuelner gave a copy of the fact sheet to Congressman Philip Crane, an ultra-conservative sympathetic to South Africa, who with his wife and five other members of Congress, had been given a subsidised tour of South Africa in January 1975. Crane took the floor to speak against the resolution and in the course of his remarks introduced into the debate the critical fact sheet drafted by De Keiffer. He did not identify the source of that part of his speech. [...] The resolution, which needed a two-third vote for approval, failed by 23 votes. Of 11 House members who had visited South Africa on subsidised trips over the privious [sic] twelve months, 10 voted against it". Search for the cable reference at https:// aad.archives.gov/aad/.

(313) Crozier, pgs 192-193.

(314) See https://tueriesdubrabant.1fr1.net/t2517p100-brian-crozier.

(315) Crozier, pgs 127-128.

(316) After working for MI6 in the Hague from 1938 to 1940 and serving in the Intelligence Corps during the war, Elliott was MI6 Head of Station in Bern from 1945 to 1953, Vienna until 1956, London until 1960 and Beirut until 1962 before becoming a Director of MI6 until his retirement in 1968 and then serving as executive director of Lonrho until 1973 – see his obituary written by his former MI6 and Cercle colleague Sir Stephen Hastings at https://www.independent.co.uk/news/people/obituary-nicholas-elliott-1370833.html; Dorril; *Observer*, 2/2/92; Wright, pgs 73, 174 and 325; Corera; Macintyre; footnote 319. After Philby's death in 1988, Elliott proposed giving him a posthumous honour as a deception operation to mislead the KGB. Elliott's first memoirs are - in reference to Philby - entitled *Never Judge a Man by his Umbrella* (Michael Russel, Salisbury 1991); Elliott who hero-worshipped Philby had even bought an identical umbrella to Philby's. Elliott later wrote *With My Little Eye* (1993) and died, still unable to grasp Philby's betrayal, in 1994 – see Dorril's *Lobster* 28, pg 24-25.

Two more recent publications have added much to the previously scanty information about Elliott. A useful and entertaining account of the post-war history of MI6 was published by the BBC's security correspondent in 2011 (*The Art Of Betrayal,* Gordon Corera, Weidenfeld & Nicolson, London 2011/*MI6: Life and Death in the British Secret Service*, Gordon Corera, Phoenix, London 2013) - see Chapters 1 and 2 on Young, Cavendish, Elliott and Philby. A detailed study of the relationship between

Elliott and Philby was published in 2014 - see *A Spy Amongst Friends*, Ben Macintyre, Bloomsbury, London 2014, which however only refers in passing to Elliott's active post-retirement occupation from 1976 on as Crozier's right-hand man in both Shield and the 6I, previously revealed in Crozier's 1993 memoirs: "In the early 1980s, a tall, spare figure in an immaculate three-piece suit could be seen from time to time slipping without fanfare into Number Ten, Downing Street. Nicholas Elliott had become – no one was quite sure how – an unofficial adviser on intelligence matters to Margaret Thatcher. What was discussed during these meetings has never been fully revealed, and Elliott was far too discreet to say" - Macintyre, pg 283. On Philby, also see https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/features/10669294/Kim-Philby-The-man-I-knew-by-the-master-spys-oldest-friend.html.

(317) Crozier, pgs 129-130. Peter Shipley was a specialist on revolutionary groups in Britain, and author of a March 1977 ISC Conflict Study, *Trotskyism: 'Entryism' and Permanent Revolution*; he went on to do a spell in Thatcher's Cabinet Office, leaving in 1984 to rejoin the ISC. Shipley's *The Militant Tendency: Trotskyism in the Labour Party* was published by FAPC in 1983. "Douglas Eden reveals the extraordinary penetration of the 1970s Labour movement by pro-Soviet trade unionists and the extent of Callaghan's toleration of the hard Left" at https://www.spectator.co.uk/2009/06/we-came-close-to-losing-our-democracy-in-1979/.

(318) Crozier, pg 137.

(319) Pincher (1978), pgs 115 and 137-139; Ramsay and Dorril, pg 13. In February 1977, during a heated Parliamentary debate, Hastings had also drawn the Home Secretary's attention to the 'bias' in a *World in Action* television programme in favour of those journalists who had exposed the CIA funding of FWF. Hastings' key role in Shield was originally intended to be concealed in Crozier's memoirs with Hastings being disguised under the pseudonym "Sam Hall"; although the memoirs did finally name him, two instances of the previous pseudonym slipped through the editing process unnoticed – see Crozier, pg 143. In 2014, Großmann recorded (*Die Internationale der Konservativen*, pg 494) that Hastings had joined the Cercle around 1977 at the time that Shield was in full swing and the 6I was beginning operations; an 18th May 1977 letter from Brian Crozier to Margaret Thatcher, kindly provided by Hervé Beghinselen, confirms that Hastings attended a May 1977 Cercle meeting held at the HSS conference centre in Wildbad Kreuth – see above. Hastings' attendance at Cercle meetings seems to have tailed off after Thatcher's election victory in May 1979, and his name does not figure in the 1982-85 Cercle meeting documents from the Garnier-Lançon archive detailed in the Postscript.

In 1978, Hastings was one of the 114 Conservative MPs to rebel against the party whip and vote against Rhodesian sanctions – see footnotes 215 and 560. His *Daily Telegraph* obituary referenced below stated: "He saw the Lancaster House agreement of 1979, which created an independent Zimbabwe and led to Robert Mugabe's election, as a disaster caused by "unnecessary deference to the delusion of the Commonwealth, the Afro-Asian lobby and to the Americans by a series of British governments". Although Hastings claimed to have been invited to join Edward Heath's administration, his stance on Rhodesia effectively rendered him ineligible for office. Even Margaret Thatcher, whom he counted as an ally, kept him on the backbenches, though she recommended him for a knighthood in 1983 [...] In 1986 Hastings successfully sued the *Observer* for libel following allegations that he had been one of two [sic] Conservative MPs involved in an MI5 plot to oust Harold Wilson."

It should be noted that both Hastings (b. 1921) and Elliott (b. 1916) had attended "Durnford, a notoriously Spartan and uncomfortable preparatory school in Dorset", to quote Hastings' obituary of Elliott – see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Durnford_School; Macintyre, pg 5; footnote 316. Both men then studied at Eton under the headmastership of Elliott's father. Anecdotally, Ian Fleming (b. 1908) had previously attended both Durnford and Eton. Hastings died in 2005 – see https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/1480871/Sir-Stephen-Hastings.html; https://www.peterboroughtoday.co.uk/news/environment/funeral-fond-farewell-to-sir-stephen-1-153970. Photographic portraits of Hastings in 1948, 1960 and 1969 may be found at https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/search/portraitLarge/mw146068/Sir-Stephen-Lewis-Edmonstone-Hastings; https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/search/portraitLarge/mw101218/Sir-Stephen-Lewis-Edmonstone-Hastings; https://www.npg.org.uk/collections/search/portraitLarge/mw116966/Sir-Stephen-Lewis-Edmonstone-Hastings.

(320) Crozier, pg 128.

(321) Crozier, pg 120. For a contemporary article about the closure of the IRD, see "Death of the department that never was", David Leigh, *Guardian* 27/1/78 at http://www.cambridgeclarion.org/e/fo_deceit_unit_graun_27jan1978.html.

(322) Crozier, pg 128-129. The ISC had already dealt with subversion in education and in the Churches: in March 1974, the ISC had produced a Conflict Study entitled *Marxism and the Church of Rome*, which was republished by *Le Monde Moderne* in 1975. An ISC Study Group on subversion in higher education, which included Dr. Kenneth Watkins of NAFF and Aims, started work in November 1975; its findings were published in September 1977 as an ISC Special Report, *The Attack on Higher Education*. From May 1977 to April 1978, an ISC Study Group met to discuss on subversion in the media; the ISC Special Report *Television and Conflict* was finally published in November 1978 - see Crozier, pgs 150-155.

(323) Crozier, pgs 137-138.

(324) Crozier, pg 139.

(325) Crozier, pg 138.

(326) Crozier, pgs 139-140.

(327) Crozier, pgs 131-133.

(328) Crozier, pg 142.

(329) Crozier, pg 144. Although their lengthy collaboration had already been revealed by the Press in 1988-1990, Crozier's 1993 memoirs never name Elwell, no doubt following his wishes - or the sensitivities of MI5, who were incensed at Elwell's criticism of the Service, Crozier's attempted turf grab in proposing the creation of the CSE, and Elwell's immediate jump to Crozier's organisation after his retirement from MI5 in 1979. MI5 refused all contact with the Crozier-Elwell team and belatedly disavowed Elwell after his death in 2008 as someone "over-inclined to see subversion where none existed" – see below; footnotes 380 and 508.

(330) Crozier, pg 144.

(331) Crozier, pg 133.

(332) Crozier, pg 134.

(333) For all quotes by Crozier on the 6I below, see Crozier, pg 135.

(334) Crozier, pg 11, footnote 4. Biographical information on Romerstein from Various authors (IFF), pgs v-xiii; https://ashbrook.org/event/colloqui-2001-romerstein/; https://www.hoover.org/news/herbert-romerstein-collection-comes-hoover-archives; https://www.iwp.edu/news_publications/detail/professor-warned-not-to-abolish-police-intelligence-units-in-1977. On American Business Consultants, Inc. and *Counterattack*, see below and footnote 503.

(335) Biographical information on Kraemer from Various authors (IFF), pgs v-xiii; https://www.iwp.edu/doclib/20060126_iwp_brochure.pdf; https://www.afpc.org/about/experts/sven-f-kraemer; Crozier, pg 185. Whilst at the NSC, Sven Kraemer worked in the Vietnam Information Group, conducting a top-secret and now declassified 1968 review of the 1964 decision to start overt hostilities after alleged North Vietnamese aggression in the Gulf of Tonkin Incident, leading to the Vietnam War – see https://www.nsa.gov/news-features/declassified-documents/gulf-of-tonkin/chronologies/assets/files/release-2/rel2_wright_kraemer.pdf; https://www.nytimes.com/2001/11/06/us/new-tapes-indicate-johnson-doubted-attack-in-tonkin-gulf.html; https://www.nytimes.com/2005/10/31/politics/vietnam-study-castingdoubts-remains-secret.html; https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB132/press20051201.htm; https://www.nytimes.com/2005/12/02/politics/vietnam-war-intelligence-deliberately-skewed-secret-study-says.html.

Sven Kraemer's father had been a longstanding Washington insider; the German-born Fritz G. A. Kraemer was Senior Legal Advisor to the League of Nations at the League's Legal Institute in Rome during most of the 1930s before fleeing to America in 1939, leaving behind his wife and son. He became a US citizen by joining the US Army's 84th Infantry Division in 1943. "A gifted "talent scout" and teacher, in 1944 he discovered the young Henry Kissinger who joined his division. In 1961 he also discovered Alexander Haig, and in 1969 recommended him as the Military Assistant to then National Security Advisor Henry Kissinger. His son Sven Kraemer also served in the Nixon-Kissinger National Security Council. From the early 1950s until 1978, when he retired from civil service, he served as Senior Civilian Advisor to the US Army Chief of Staff in the Pentagon and influenced the Department of Defence during the Cold War. During his time at the Pentagon, he also influenced Secretaries of Defense James R. Schlesinger and Donald Rumsfeld [...] Kraemer died on September 8, 2003, in Washington, D.C., and was buried with full military honors in Arlington National Cemetery on October 8. He was honoured by former Secretary of Defense James R. Schlesinger, his former students Henry Kissinger and Alexander Haig." – see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fritz_G._A._Kraemer; https://www.henryakissinger.com/remembrances/fritz-kraemer/. His obituaries in the *Guardian* and *Daily Telegraph* stated that, besides Haig and Kissinger, other protégés of his were Vernon Walters and Edward Lansdale – see https://www.theguardian.com/news/2003/nov/12/guardianobituaries.usa; https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/1446315/Fritz-Kraemer.html. In 1990, Fritz Kraemer spoke alongside Lieutenant-General Daniel O. Graham and Frank Gaffney in favour of the Strategic Defense Initiative – see https://www.c-span.org/video/?15043-1/strategic-weapons-changing-world.

(336) Crozier, pg 135.

(337) Crozier, pgs 135-136.

(338) Crozier, pgs 180-181.

(339) Crozier, pg 136. Whilst there is no reason to doubt Crozier's explanation of a Latin American origin for the name the 6I (although "the reasoning was abstruse" – Crozier, pg 136), Crozier also wrote to Reagan on 7th February 1986 saying: "the organisation [the 6I], which has no name" – see https://tueriesdubrabant.1fr1.net/t2517p100-brian-crozier. It is worth noting that the 2013 revelations by Edward Snowden of global surveillance by the NSA and GCHQ recorded that the inhouse name for the alliance of the five intelligence services of the US, UK, Canada, Australia and New Zealand under the UKUSA/ANZUS treaties is the 'Five Eyes' (FVEY). As Crozier says on the dust jacket of his memoirs, the 'Six Eye' was "an international agency created and funded to bypass the official intelligence services", circumventing all the legal restrictions placed on domestic spying and black propaganda in America and elsewhere since the early 1970s – see footnote 342.

Jaime "Jacques" Perriaux served as Justice Minister from June 1970 to October 1971 in the military juntas of Generals Levingston and Lanusse, the latter losing power after the March 1973 election victory of Perón's Justicialist Party. Together with General Hugo Miatello, Lanusse's intelligence chief as head of the Secretaría de Informaciones del Estado (SIDE), Perriaux was the leader of the informal "Grupo Perriaux", which was influential amongst putschist military commanders. Miatello was later a leading figure in the March 1976 coup led by General Jorge Videla against Isabel Perón; Videla then appointed Miatello Ambassador to Pinochet's Chile from 1976 to 1981. See https://www.lanacion.com.ar/158398-anos-de-enajenacion-y-dolor; https://www.lanacion.com.ar/35071-fallecio-el-general-r-hugo-mario-miatello. Perriaux visited the US in June 1977, Lanusse in August 1978 - search for Perriaux, Lanusse and Miatello at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/; see https://www.dni.gov/files/documents/icotr/Argentina-Carter-Regan-and-Bush-VP-Part-1.pdf, pg 4.

(340) Crozier, pg 136.

(341) Crozier, pg 187.

(342) One of the enduring political lessons illustrated by this investigation is that purges of or restrictions on the security and intelligence services often simply displace rogue agents into the private sector as 'retirees'. The Cercle and 6I drew much of their support from intelligence veterans displaced after purges in Germany (1968-69), the UK and France (1970), the UK and the USA (1977) and Belgium (1978). As Wikipedia has commented on the Western Goals Foundation: "After the Watergate and COINTELPRO scandals of the early 1970s, several laws were passed to restrict police intelligence gathering within political organisations. The laws tried to make it necessary to demonstrate that a criminal act was likely to be uncovered by any intelligence gathering proposed. Many files on radicals, collected for decades, were ordered destroyed. The unintended effect of the laws was to privatize the files in the hands of 'retired' intelligence officers and their most trusted, dedicated operatives" – see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Western_Goals_Foundation.

(343) Crozier, pgs 189-190.

(344) *Spiegel* 37/1982 pgs 28-31 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14351703.html; Roth and Ender, pgs 57-58. Hans Christoph Schenk Freiherr von Stauffenberg, who died in Munich in 2005, was a member of the junior branch of the Stauffenberg family, being the son of Reichstag Nazi MP Franz Wilhelm Karl Maria Gabriel Schenk Freiherr von Stauffenberg.

Although the existence of Stauffenberg's "little service" and its international connections had already been revealed in the *Spiegel* in 1982, it was not until November 2012 that detailed research on the group's history and activities was published in *Die Zeit* in the article *Die Verschwörung gegen Brandt* [The Conspiracy against Brandt] and in an accompanying book *Nach Lektüre vernichten!* [Destroy after Reading!], both by freelance journalist and intelligence historian Dr. Stefanie Waske – see *Zeit* 49/2012 at https://www.zeit.de/2012/49/Spionage-CDU-CSU-Willy-Brandt/; Waske, the most significant West German publication on covert politics since Roth and Ender in 1987.

Forty years after the fact, Brandt's Socialist colleagues have belatedly perceived something of the extent of the campaign to destabilise his government and derail his policy of Ostpolitik - a far cry from Wilson's immediate but ultimately fruitless accusation of intervention in domestic politics by BOSS, the CIA and their friends in MI5 and MI6, the first and so far only time that a European Prime Minister has gone on record to state - like Allende - that he was being overthrown as he spoke: *The Pencourt File*, whilst flawed, is an essential contemporary source – see footnote 165. Following Waske's 2012 article, Egon Bahr, Brandt's closest collaborator on Ostpolitik, declared on Deutschland-Radio that Stauffenberg's service was "the greatest scandal in the history of the Federal Republic" – see https://www.deutschlandfunkkultur.de/der-groesste-skandal-in-der-geschichte-der-bundesrepublik.1013.de.html?dram:article_id=229359.

The dearth for decades of German academic research on the domestic and international covert campaigns against the SPD does not however offer much hope that this potential '*Spycatcher* moment' for Germany will lead to an investigation of the destabilisation of the 1969-1974 government under Brandt. Whilst one aspect of Langemann's revelations in the *Spiegel* – the private CDU/CSU intelligence service run by Stauffenberg - has been thoroughly documented by Waske, Langemann's reports published in the *Spiegel* in 1982 and Crozier's memoirs published in 1993 have not yet led to major research on the Cercle/6I save for the recent publications by Hänni and Großmann detailed in the Foreword and footnote 4. So far, the activities throughout the 1970s and 1980s of characters such as Grau, Bossle and Löwenthal remain woefully under-reported, as are the interventions in German politics by the Cercle, a group co-founded by Adenauer and Strauß, in which Huyn played a key part for nearly twenty years.

To summarise and extend the research on Stauffenberg's service by Waske, the driving forces behind its creation in 1969 were, on the intelligence side, General Wolfgang Langkau who had recently resigned from the BND after the closure of his Strategic Service following Gehlen's departure, and on the political side, **Karl Theodor Freiherr von und zu Guttenberg**, since 1957 a CSU MP and foreign policy expert. Guttenberg was mentor to a rising young star in CSU foreign policy, the diplomat Hans Huyn; in 1965, it was to Guttenberg that Huyn leaked information about a tilt in German defence policy away from France and towards America, leading to Huyn's unprecedented request for dismissal from the Foreign Office – see footnote 144. In December 1966, following the withdrawal of the FDP from the government coalition under CDU Chancellor Ludwig Erhard, a Grand Coalition was formed by new CDU Chancellor Kurt Georg Kiesinger (a member of the NSDAP from 1933 on, see footnote 292) and SPD Vice-Chancellor and Foreign Minister Willy Brandt. In 1967, Kiesinger appointed Guttenberg to the newly created post of Parliamentary Secretary of State in the Federal Chancellor's Office, a position Guttenberg held for two years until Brandt's election as Chancellor in September 1969 – the event which triggered the birth of Stauffenberg's service.

The decision to form the private CDU/CSU intelligence service was taken in the autumn of 1969 at a meeting of Kiesinger, Strauß, Guttenberg and **Hans Globke**, Adenauer's top intimate as former Head of the Federal Chancellory from 1953 to 1963 and previously one of the main authors of Hitler's Nuremberg Race Laws under the Nazi regime. Globke had been a main component in the psychological warfare operations jointly conducted by Adenauer's CDU and the CIA since the mid-1950s – see footnote 144. Contact between Violet and Globke has been confirmed by Waske (pg 125, footnote 527); as Adenauer's closest assistant, Globke must have been fully acquainted with Adenauer's contacts with Pinay within the Cercle since the mid-1950s.

Guttenberg and Langkau had first foreseen Langemann as head of the new service, but he had already been hired away from the BND by the Bavarian State Government to work on security for the - later disasterous - 1972 Munich Olympics, and so the choice fell on Stauffenberg. The political protectors of the new service were the two CDU/CSU foreign policy experts Guttenberg and Dr. Werner Marx, previously the top civil servant charged by Defence Minister Strauß in 1958 with the creation of Germany's military psy-ops programme. Marx served until 1972 as First Chairman of a major civilian front group for military psy-ops, the *Studiengesellschaft für Zeitprobleme* [Study Group on Contemporary Issues] – see footnote 144. As for Guttenberg, following his death in 1972, his position as top CSU foreign policy expert was taken by his acolyte Hans Huyn. From at least 1972 on, both Marx and Huyn sat on the International Council of Habsburg's CEDI. Huyn attended AESP events from January 1973 on, joining the Cercle in 1975 and soon becoming its key German figure and member of its triumvirate throughout the 1980s.

The recipients of the highly restricted reports from Stauffenberg's service included Guttenberg, Globke, Marx, Franz Josef Bach (who at this time was taking over from Violet as the Cercle's international organising secretary) and two prominent conservative media representatives: the Cercle member Gerhard Löwenthal of ZDF and **Otto B. Roegele** of the Catholic conservative weekly newspaper *Rheinischer Merkur*. Roegele had been Chief Editor of the newspaper from 1949 to 1963 when he was appointed as Professor of Journalism at Munich University; he nonetheless remained one of the newspaper's publishers until his death in 2005.

A member of the Central Committee of German Catholics (as was Lothar Bossle, a major figure in 1970s anti-Brandt campaigns), Roegele had long been closely associated with the BND and Opus Dei, having met Langkau back in 1955, fifteen years before the birth of Stauffenberg's service. As one of the earliest members of Habsburg's CEDI, Roegele had attended the III CEDI Congress in August 1954 with Habsburg, Jaeger, Heydte and Miksche, then attending the IV CEDI Congress in June 1955 with Habsburg, Jaeger and a certain 'Señor Professor Wolfgang Langkau'. In March 1957, Roegele attended a conference of intellectuals in Madrid organised by CEDI, and in September 1959, he and Merkatz represented Germany at the VIII CEDI Congress.

In January 1963, Roegele sat on the Board of the Verein zur Erforschung sozial-politischer Verhältnisse im Ausland [Association for the Study of Foreign Socio-political Relations], a BND front group used to channel support to Interdoc, the fledgling group for BND/BVD cooperation on anti-communist psychological operations. Alongside Roegele, the Verein's Board also included Professor Hans Lades, Dr. C. D. Kernig and Dr. Norman von Grote, the latter a wartime FHO propaganda officer; all three were members of the first German delegation to Interdoc, formally founded in February 1963. In August 1965, Roegele journeyed to Spain to give lectures in journalism at Opus Dei's University of Navarra; he returned there in October 1967 to receive an Honorary Doctorate personally bestowed by the University's Grand Chancellor, Opus Dei founder José María Escrivá de Balaguer. From 1971 on, Roegele played an essential part in Stauffenberg's service as Chairman of the Arbeitskreis für das Studium internationaler Fragen, the funding channel between Langemann and Stauffenberg.

By 1972, Habsburg's CEDI brought together the key players in conservative private intelligence services both in Germany and in Belgium - the CEDI International Council in 1972 included Roegele, Marx and Huyn from Germany, and de Kerchove and Vankerkhoven from Belgium. All three Germans were key sponsors of Stauffenberg's private CDU/CSU intelligence service; both Belgians were core members of CEPIC, recently created to support the new Defence Minister Paul Vanden Boeynants - de Kerchove had been appointed his chef de cabinet. In 1972, Vanden Boeynants was working on his controversial Military Defence of the Territory (DMT) plan to combat pacifist and left-wing opposition, whose public rejection in 1973 gave silent birth to the semi-covert military counter-intelligence unit PIO. In July 1974, Roegele attended the XXIII CEDI Congress along with Jaeger, Merkatz and Huyn from Germany and most of the core members of the AESP from Belgium – Damman, Jonet, Marcken de Merken and Vankerkhoven; by this time, PIO had been set up with de Kerchove acting alongside de Bonvoisin as the channel to Vanden Boeynants.

Although Roegele himself did not attend the 1976 CEDI Congress, the linkage between the European covert conservative operators within CEDI and the Cercle became even clearer with the 1976 CEDI participants including Pinay, Violet and Dubois from the SDECE/Vatican with their South African-sponsored *Monde Moderne* team from France; Crozier, Moss, Amery and Tennant from the UK, who had recently created both Thatcher's private advisory group on intelligence Shield and the South African-funded FARI; Damman, Jonet and Vankerkhoven from the Belgian AESP, accompanied by de Bonvoisin and Bougerol of the PIO; and finally Merkatz, Huyn and Cercle secretary Franz Josef Bach from Germany, a recipient of Stauffenberg's secret reports – a gathering of the core Cercle of Violet, Crozier, Huyn and Bach together with their main operatives from France, Germany, Britain, Belgium and South Africa.

On Roegele, see *La Vanguardia Española* of 31/8/54 pgs 3 and 11; *ABC* (Madrid) of 31/8/54 pg 20; *La Vanguardia Española* of 1/9/54 pg 3; *ABC* (Madrid) of 1/9/54 pg 20; *La Vanguardia Española* of 4/9/54 pg 4; *La Vanguardia Española* of 5/9/54 pg 3; *La Vanguardia Española* of 1/6/55 pg 16; *La Vanguardia Española* of 2/6/55 pg 13; *ABC* (Madrid) of 3/6/55 pg 30; *La Vanguardia Española* of 3/6/55 pg 4; *La Vanguardia Española* of 4/6/55 pg 5; *ABC* (Madrid) of 16/3/57 pg 43; *La Vanguardia Española* of 16/3/57 pg 9; *La Vanguardia Española* of 31/5/57 pg 17; *ABC* (Madrid) of 27/9/59 pg 81; *La Vanguardia Española* of 27/9/59 pg 7; *La Vanguardia Española* of 30/9/59 pg 4; *ABC* (Madrid) of 28/8/65 pg 47; *ABC* (Madrid) of 18/6/67 pg 85; *La Vanguardia Española* of 18/6/67 pg 11; *ABC* (Sevilla) of 23/9/67 pgs 57-58; *La Vanguardia Española* of 1/10/67 pg 7; *La Vanguardia Española* of 8/10/67 pg 7; *ABC* (Madrid) of 8/10/67 pg 95; *ABC* (Sevilla) of 8/10/67 pgs 61 and 78; 1972 CEDI membership list in the documentary annex to this full sixth edition of *Rogue Agents*; *ABC* (Madrid) of 4/7/74 pg 47; 1974 CEDI participants' list in the documentary annex to this full sixth edition of *Rogue Agents*; Waske; Scott-Smith (2012), pg 258 note 160.

It should be noted that alongside Habsburg, Jaeger, Langkau and Roegele, the June 1955 IV CEDI Congress was also attended by **Marcelo Caetano**, who the following month was promoted to become the immediate deputy to Portuguese dictator António de Oliveira Salazar with the title Minister Attached to the Presidency of the Council of Ministers, a post he filled until August 1958. Appointed Rector of Lisbon University in 1959, Caetano remained an important Portuguese contact person for CEDI, reporting on the formation of a Portuguese section to a 1959 meeting of the CEDI International Council at which Roegele was also present, and addressing CEDI on the subject of Africa in 1961 – see the above press references on Roegele and *La Vanguardia Española* of 27/9/59 pg 7; *ABC* (Madrid) of 27/9/59 pg 81; *La Vanguardia Española* of 1/10/59 pg 11; *ABC* (Sevilla) of 19/1/61 pg 19; *La Vanguardia Española* of 19/1/61 pg 8; *La Vanguardia Española* of 10/2/61 pg 12. However, Caetano was forced to resign as Rector of Lisbon University in March 1962 after savage repression of Portuguese student movements, later withdrawing from CEDI. He nonetheless replaced Salazar as Prime Minister of the Estado Novo in September 1968, serving until overthrown by the Armed Forces Movement in April 1974 and dying in exile in Brazil in 1980. On other CEDI contacts with Portugal, see footnote 282.

(345) In Germany, party foundations distribute grants from the Ministry for Cooperation and Development to 'deserving partners' in the Third World, and are an important and official component in political parties' foreign policy bodies.

(346) *Spiegel* 10/1980 pgs 20-28 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14315032.html; *Spiegel-Buch*, pgs 118-119. A handwritten note "GS/BK/HSS" on the document indicates that it should be passed to the CSU General Secretariat, the CSU newspaper *Bayernkurier* and the Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung itself. Several countries are underlined by hand: Nigeria, Turkey, Manila, Hong Kong, Jordan and Saudi Arabia. One country not mentioned was Angola. On the 16th October 1976, Strauß and Dr. Werner Marx met Holden Roberto in the Munich "Franziskaner" pub; the FNLA leader wanted Strauß's help in unfreezing arms shipments promised by Kissinger - *Spiegel* 10/1980; *Spiegel-Buch*, pg 119. On HSS activities, see *Die Contra Connection*; *Spiegel* 13/1977 pgs 60-62 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-40941748.html; *Spiegel* 26/1978 pgs 57-60 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-40616274.html; *Spiegel* 9/1980 pgs 22-29 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14327589.html, and 10/1980 referenced above; *Tageszeitung*, 24/1/87, 16/3/87, 13/5/87, 18/5/87, 20/5/87, 22/5/87, 6/6/87, 12/6/87, 3/7/87.

(347) Péan, pgs 76-77.

(348) Crozier, pg 125.

(349) Péan, pgs 72-74.

(350) Mungo, pg 24. The "Dolder Dinner" probably refers to an AESP event at the hilltop luxury hotel near Zürich, the Dolder Grand (https://www.thedoldergrand.com/). However, it may refer to veteran Swiss SOI member Peter

Dolder who, with Sager and his wife, had set up a bookshop specialising in Eastern Europe in 1958, a forerunner to the SOI founded the following year - see Dorril and Ramsay, 1990, pg 16. Dolder's central role in the SOI continued until at least 1988 - see https://www.e-periodica.ch/digbib/view?pid=asm-004:1988:154::1095#1095. In 1991, Peter Sager created the Stiftung für Demokratie (SFD) which, from 2001 on, has awarded an annual "Peter Dolder Prize" for doctorates in Swiss history and political rights – see https://www.sfd-bern.ch/index.php. A Swiss-based Cercle outlet which probably participated in this second AESP Helsinki campaign was Huyn's group, the EKMS - see footnote 356. Its January 1978 conference was entitled "Peoples In Chains: non-Russians in the Soviet Union"; the proceedings were published by Sager's SOI. The subject of the EKMS conference in 1977 is as yet unknown.

(351) Damman's diary from Mungo, pg 26. Operation H2 also involved publication of an article on Helsinki and détente by Habsburg in the February-March 1977 issue (pgs 4-7) of the *Bulletin Européen*, published by Constantin Dragan, an AESP contact since at least 1976; this was followed by the publication of the Appeal itself and a covering AESP letter in the April issue (pgs 1-3) of the same magazine. The next issue in May (pgs 5-8) published a long article by AESP stalwart Vincent Van den Bosch on the first direct European Parliament elections finally held in June 1979. Operation H2 also reached to Franco's Spain - Franco's official foreign policy review, the *Revista de Política Internacional* produced by the Instituto de Estudios Políticos (IEP), published an article by Habsburg on Soviet policy towards Europe in its number 150, March-April 1977 – see footnote 4 for the web address. The H2 campaign was also echoed by Töttösy's FEGOMEE – see footnote 367.

(352) Mungo, pg 27. Christian Solidarity International was founded in Switzerland in April 1977 and soon worked closely with the IGfM and Resistance International. Its Swiss website (archived at https://web.archive.org/web/20130907233145/http://www.csi-schweiz.ch/geschichte.php) records the CSI's condemnation at the 1983 WCC General Assembly "of the equal treatment given to Christian martyrs and killed guerrillas" and CSI's 1985 "intervention on behalf of Cardinal Obando y Bravo pressurised by Nicaragua's Communist Sandinistas. In 1990, after the electoral defeat of the Sandinistas, mass graves were discovered testifying to the crimes of the Sandinistas." Needless to say, the CSI's Christian concern did not extend to the numerous victims of the Nicaraguan Contras or to Archbishop Óscar Romero of San Salvador, killed at the altar by a paramilitary death squad in March 1980. The coordinator of the assassination, the head of security for Roberto d'Aubuisson, was condemned in absentia for extrajudicial killing and crimes against humanity in 2004 – see https://www.theguardian.com/world/2004/aug/25/danglaister; http://www.internationalcrimesdatabase.org/Case/994; http://www.asser.nl/upload/documents/DomCLIC/Docs/NLP/US/Romero_FOF_and_COL_Redacted_60.pdf. Romero was finally beatified by the Vatican in May 2015 and canonised in October 2018, thirty-eight years after his murder – see https://www.theguardian.com/world/2015/may/23/el-salvador-celebrates-beatification-martyred-archbishop-oscar-romero; https://www.theguardian.com/world/2018/oct/14/pope-francis-canonises-oscar-romero-and-pope-paul-vi.

Besides the IGfM and Resistance International, CSI has also worked closely with Keston College/Research/Institute; the current head of CSI-USA John Eibner worked for the Keston Institute in London between 1986 and 1990 before then joining CSI. As for this 1977 CSI campaign for religious freedom in the Soviet Union, Keston College had earlier contributed to the action: "After a World Council of Churches meeting in Nairobi in 1975, there was a request for the pooling of resources to produce documentation on religion in Eastern Europe. This was eventually published under the title *Religious Liberty in the Soviet Union* (footnote: published by Keston College, Kent, England, a centre for the study of religion and communism, and edited by the Rev. Michael Bourdeaux) ... Keston College is today perhaps the most valuable antidote to the disinformation on world affairs which so many of the clergy seem to lap up so avidly" - Deacon, pgs 69-70 and footnote 6. The full title of the publication to counter the allegedly pro-Soviet bias of the WCC was *Religious Liberty in the Soviet Union: WCC and USSR; a post-Nairobi documentation*, published by Keston College in 1976. On Deacon, see the article "Truth Twisting: notes on disinformation" by this author and Robin Ramsay in *Lobster* 19 (May 1990), pgs 20-22. For a 1975 anti-WCC publication by the Swiss ISP, see footnote 103.

The World Council of Churches was particularly accused of political bias (by BOSS as well as by British and European conservatives) after taking a strong stand against apartheid and its Western financial backers in 1977. A notable British critic of the WCC was Bernard Smith, editor of the newsletter *Open Eye* (1973-2005) and author of *The Crooked Conscience: are the churches politically bent?* (Monday Club, 1972), *The Fraudulent Gospel: politics and the World Council of Churches* (FAPC, 1977; see footnote 370) and *The World Council of Churches' false leadership* (FARI, 1979). A transatlantic contribution to the anti-WCC campaign was provided by Ernest Lefever's *Amsterdam to Nairobi: The World Council of Churches and the Third World.* (Ethics and Public Policy Center, Georgetown University, Washington, D.C., 1979). Keston hammered home the message in 1980 with the publication *May one believe, in Russia? : violations of religious liberty in the Soviet Union* by Michael Bourdeaux and the International Committee for the Defence of Human Rights in the U.S.S.R. A frequent outlet for Keston News Service bulletins was *The Ukrainian Weekly* – see http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1984/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1984-36.pdf pgs 5 and 13 for a lengthy interview with Bourdeaux. Keston College also worked closely with Kirche in Not/Aid for the Church in Need/Oostpriesterhulp-Kerk in Noot run by Werenfried van Straaten; see http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1978/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1978-43.pdf pg 2. Van Straaten liaised closely with Huyn, President of Kirche in Not Deutschland from 1988 to 2005, and Vankerkhoven's LIL which advertised Oostpriesterhulp throughout the 1980s. For other Keston campaigns, see https://www.worldcat.org/search?qt=hotseries&q=se%3A%22Keston+book%22; footnotes 235 and 529.

(353) The Brüsewitz Centre still (just) exists today – see http://www.bruesewitz.org/. On the Brüsewitz Centre, see *IGfM*, pgs 69-70; Young European Federalists, pgs 188-214; Hirsch; the *Ostpreußenblatt* at http://archiv.preussische-allgemeine.de/1977/1977_04_30_18.pdf, according to which the inauguration of the Centre was attended, apart from the persons named below, by three Cercle members - Habsburg, Strauß, and Bavarian Minister and HSS chief Fritz Pirkl, as well as Cornelia Gerstenmaier, the wife of Vladimir Bukovsky, Hassel and Pachman. The *Ostpreußenblatt* article is from the 30th April 1977 issue which contradicts the Brüsewitz Centre foundation date of October 1977 given in other sources. Another article on the same page of the *Ostpreußenblatt* reported on a speech about "Tovarich Brezhnev's Fifth Column" given in April 1977 by Winston Churchill - "Winston Churchill, the official defence spokesman of the Conservatives, addressed a meeting of the National Association for Freedom in the presence of Margaret Thatcher, Vladimir Bukovsky and members of both Houses of Parliament"; the article also announced that Churchill would be addressing a PEU conference in Saarbrücken on 8th May 1977 on the subject of Britain's contribution to Europe.

Bukovsky had been launched in Germany in January 1977 by Gerstenmaier and the GfM – see footnote 236. For a 1977 picture and article about Cornelia Gerstenmaier introducing Vladimir Bukovsky to Bundestag President Carstens, see the *Ostpreußenblatt* at http://archiv.preussische-allgemeine.de/1977/1977_03_12_11.pdf; for a 1979 meeting of the Brüsewitz Centre, see http://archiv.preussische-allgemeine.de/1979/1979_09_01_35.pdf. Bukovsky was a frequent signatory for and later President of Resistance International in the 1980s, as well as an active participant in the 6I's anti-disarmament and anti-Gorbachev campaigns – see Crozier, pg 246 and footnotes 358, 529 and 530. Bukovsky served as Honorary Vice-President of the Freedom Association (see footnote 211), member (with Singlaub and the late Brian Crozier) of the International Advisory Council of the Victims of Communism Memorial Foundation, and member of the Board of Academic Advisors of the IWP, on which see below.

Habsburg's youngest daughter, now **Walburga Habsburg Douglas**, played an active part in her father's political life from a very early age. In 1973, at the age of fifteen, she was co-founder of the German PEU youth wing, Paneuropa-Jugend Deutschland; at the age of nineteen, she was co-founder of the Christian Paneuropean Study Group and the Brüsewitz Centre before going on to study law and canonical law in Salzburg. She then worked with her father in the European Parliament from 1979 until 1992 with a spell in 1983 studying journalism in the National Journalism Centre in Washington and working in the Washington office of *Readers' Digest*. From 1985 to 1992 she worked as Information Counsellor in the Information Ministry of the Sultanate of Oman, and from 2004 on sat on the Board of the Arab International Media Forum in London. She did not however neglect the PEU, serving as PEU Deputy International Secretary-General from 1980 to 1988, PEU International Secretary-General from 1988 to 2004, and since then as PEU International Executive Vice-President. In August 1989, she and her father were key organisers of the Paneuropean Picnic which punctured the Iron Curtain and accelerated the fall of the Berlin Wall – see https://www.dw.com/en/walburga-habsburg-douglas-we-knew-the-iron-curtain-could-fall/a-17863605 and https://www.dw.com/en/the-picnic-that-changed-european-history/a-4580616. In 1992, she married the Swedish Count Archibald Douglas and became active in the Swedish Moderata samlingspartiet, standing on their list for the European Parliament in 1999 and 2004, and for the Swedish Parliament in 2002 and 2006, when she was finally elected, sitting on the Swedish Parliament's Joint Committee on Defence and Foreign Affairs and acting as Vice-President of the OSCE Parliamentary Assembly until her defeat in the Swedish elections of September 2014 - see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Walburga_Habsburg_Douglas; https://www.osce.org/pa/88669; https://www.osce.org/ pa/95174.

(354) On the propaganda attack against Brandt conducted by Bossle, Grau, Löwenthal and others before the November 1972 parliamentary elections, see *Zeit* 45/1972 at https://www.zeit.de/1972/45/falsches-spiel; *Spiegel* 44/1972 pgs 28-31 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-42787527.html, 47/1972 pgs 25-38 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-42805428.html, 50/1972 pgs 38-54 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-42763090.html and 51/1972 pg 65 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-42762647.html; Wolfgang Deuling, listed in the Sources annex; footnote 103 above. The campaign of over one hundred attack ads against Brandt was reported to have cost 34 million Marks on top of 20 million Marks of official election advertising spending by the CDU/CSU – see *Spiegel* 50/1972 pgs 38-54 referenced above and https://www.deutschlandfunkkultur.de/das-fuegt-sich-wie-ein-mosaikstein-in-ein-gesamtbild.954.de.html?dram:article_id=229343.
On the 1974 Löwenthal/Bossle/Rohrmoser group KDK, see *Spiegel* 15/1974 pgs 46-

49 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41751294.html and 16/1974 pgs 19-20 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41722084.html.

On Colonia Dignidad, see *Spiegel* 46/1987 pgs 58-61 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-13525120.html; footnote 357. Roth and Ender add (pg 79) that Bossle and Huyn served on the Presidium of a Deutsch-chilenischer Freundeskreis [German-Chilean Friendship Circle]. Both Huyn and Pinochet's Cultural and Press Attaché and later Ambassador to Germany, journalist Lucía Gevert Parada, were speakers for two of Grau's groups, the Hamburg SWG and the Swiss ISP. In November 1977, Huyn accompanied Strauß on a highly controversial visit to Chile that came six months after accusations by German-based Chilean émigrés and the *Spiegel* that the Chilean Military Attaché in Bonn, Colonel Cristián Guillermo Ackerknecht San Martín, had tortured Pinochet opponents whilst serving as a provincial military governor after the military coup – see *Spiegel* 16/1977 pgs 129-130 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-40915849.html. Although swiftly withdrawn by the Chilean government, Ackerknecht was soon promoted to the rank of Brigadier-General and embarrassingly visited the German Embassy in Chile – see *Spiegel* 49/1977 pgs 18-19 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-40680408.html. In 1980, the DIA reported that he was the supreme military Area Commander of Regions II and III during the Chilean state of emergency. Ackerknecht triggered another bout of protest in February 1982 when he was appointed Head of the Chilean Military Mission in Washington – search for Ackerknecht at https://foia.state.gov/Search/Search.aspx; see https://www.nytimes.com/1982/03/28/world/chilean-official-in-the-us-is-said-to-have-been-involved-in-torture.html.

(355) *Die Contra Connection*, pg 258. Pachman was also an author for the Moonie newspaper *Integral.*

(356) On the **EKMS**, see Roth and Ender, pg 62; *IGfM*, pg 80; Van der Reijden; Huyn bibliography, which cites as a source the "Résumé of the Founding Meeting of the European Conference on Human Rights, Luzern 1-3/3/74". Whilst the EKMS official seat was Luzern, the General Secretariat was based in Cologne – a similar arrangement to Grau's Interlaken/Frankfurt bases for the ISP.

The EKMS appears to have been created as a German-language component of the AESP's ongoing first Helsinki Appeal. The first AESP event known to have been attended by Huyn was the January 1973 Charlemagne Grand Dinner in Brussels which celebrated both Habsburg's 60th birthday and the launch of the AESP/*Monde Moderne* Appeal; the Permanent Delegation of the AESP then met in Bonn in March 1973 to organise the AESP action in Germany. The likelihood that the EKMS was created to echo the Belgian-based AESP's first Helsinki campaign is strengthened by the presence in the Kyril Drenikoff papers (Box 142, Folder 3; see footnote 487) of a typescript of a French-language conference speech by Paul Vankerkhoven marked "Lucerne 2nd March 1974", a date and place which coincide with the founding conference of the EKMS. The second EKMS conference was held in Luzern on 5th - 6th April 1975 - for a conference report, see *Südtiroler Ruf* of 27/5/1975 pgs 1-2 at https://digital.tessmann.it/tessmannDigital/digitisedJournalsArchive/edition/journal/43/27.05.1975. Huyn's signature 1977 text *Menschenrechte und Selbstbestimmung* [Human Rights and Self-Determination] was published by the Würzburg-based Naumann Verlag, a company closely linked to the IfD which also published works by Strauß, Habsburg, Pirkl, Bossle and Aigner. Huyn served as EKMS Vice-President from its foundation in 1974 until 1999.

The sometime Honorary President of the EKMS was Swiss CVP MP Dr. Edgar Oehler, a former Editor in Chief of the *Ostschweiz* newspaper group from 1973 to 1985 who served on the Swiss National Council from 1971 to 1995, sitting on the Security Policy, State Policy and Media Policy Committees – see https://www.parlament.ch/de/biografie/edgar-oehler/160; his personal site at http://www.oehler.ch/en/curriculum-vitae.html which coyly states that the EKMS was an "organization of Members of European Parliaments, especially active during the period of the cold war for family re-unification, relief for refugees etc". The sometime President of the EKMS was another Swiss newspaper editor and MP: Oscar Fritschi, the Editor in Chief of the *Zürcher Oberländer* newspaper from 1972 to 2004, and an FDP member of the National Council from 1991 to 1999, sitting on the same three committees as Oehler from 1995 to 1999. Fritschi died in 2016 – see https://www.parlament.ch/de/biografie/oscar-fritschi/86; http://www.hls-dhs-dss.ch/textes/d/D24780.php.

By 1977, the Swiss EKMS had also set up a Bonn-based German Section as a German registered charity, EKMS e. V; its Chairman until 1999 was **Claus Jäger**, CDU MP from 1972 to 1994, a prominent member of the Parliamentary Assembly of the CoE from 1981 to 1987 and Board member of the Brüsewitz Centre – see Hirsch, pg 281. In September 1979, the EKMS e. V. launched an appeal attacking Soviet control of Eastern Europe, signed for the EKMS e. V. by Huyn and Jäger, and co-signed by Otto von Habsburg for the PEU and Rudolf Wollner for the **Bund der Vertriebenen** [League of Expellees], the main German exile pressure group; Wollner was also a Vice-President of the PEU and a member of the ZDF Television Council – well-placed to support Löwenthal. For the appeal, see the *Ostpreußenblatt* of 1/9/79 pg 5 at http://archiv.preussische-allgemeine.de/1979/1979_09_01_35.pdf.

The EKMS held annual congresses in Switzerland, the proceedings of many of which were published by Sager's SOI in Bern or by the EKMS itself in collaboration with the Bonn-based Verlag Peter Wegener. According to the Swiss National Library (https://nb-helveticat.primo.exlibrisgroup.com/discovery/search?query=any,contains,Europ%C3%A4ische%20Konferenz%20f%C3%BCr%20Menschenrechte%20und%20Selbstbestimmung&tab=LibraryCatalog&search_scope=MyInstitution&vid=41SNL_51_INST:helveticat&lang=de&offset=0) and the German National Library (Deutsche Nationalbibliothek at https://portal.dnb.de/opac.htm?method=simpleSearch&reset=true&cqlMode=true&query=betRef%3D007221002&selectedCategory=any), the EKMS held at least the following conferences:

Völker in Ketten: Nichtrussen in der Sowjetunion [Peoples In Chains: non-Russians in the Soviet Union], held on 13th - 15th January 1978 in Luzern, published by SOI;

Die KSZE-Schlussakte und ihre Anwendung auf Deutschland [The CSCE Final Act and its application to Germany] held on 8th and 9th December 1982, published by EKMS/Wegener;

Terrorismus: Ursachen, Gefahren, Bekämpfung [Terrorism: its causes and risks and how to combat it], held on 9th and 10th May 1983 in Muri near Bern, published by SOI in 1983 and EKMS/Wegener in 1985;

Osthandel und Ostkredite I: Möglichkeiten, Grenzen, Gefahren [Eastern Trade and Eastern Loans I: possibilities, limits, risks] held on 30th and 31st October 1984 at the Schloss Lenzburg (near Zürich), published by SOI;

Gewerkschaft als Menschenrecht und gewerkschaftliche Praxis in der DDR [Trades unions as a human right and trades union practice in the GDR], a joint conference between the EKMS and the German Christian Trades Union League (CGB, whose Secretary-General Dr. Bernhard Koch spoke no fewer than ten times for Grau's ISP in 1975-76) held in 1985 in Friedrichshafen, published by Wegener;

Der politische Krieg: Die reale Gefahr [Political Warfare: the real danger]; held on 30th and 31st October 1985 in Muri near Bern, published by SOI;

Menschenrechte und Freiheit: Voraussetzung für den Frieden [Human Rights and Freedom: precondition for peace], held on 1st and 2nd September 1986 in Muri near Bern, published by SOI;

Jalta im Lichte der KSZE [Yalta in the light of the CSCE], held on 23rd and 24th April 1987 at the Jagdhof am Fuschlsee near Salzburg, published by SOI;

Die Atlantische Gemeinschaft [The Atlantic Community], held on 6th and 7th May 1988 at the Hotel Sternen in Muri near Bern, published by EKMS.

In the 1980s, the German EKMS section produced two books by Heinz Gehle - in 1982, *Die Welt klagt an - Stimmen zur "Mauer" in Berlin* (translated as The world accuses ... : 20 years of the wall dividing Berlin; voices and comments on the wall) which went into several editions, and in 1989, his *Eine Chance für Deutschland : Anwendung des Selbstbestimmungsrechts der Völker* [An Opportunity for Germany – Application of the Right to Self-Determination of the Peoples]. On Gehle, see footnote 48; this author's "The Cross and the Caudillo" in the CIOC-CIDCC-Sint Unum annex. The year before, the EKMS e. V. had organised a conference on *Psychiatry and Glasnost* on 23rd January 1988 in Bonn that was probably a part of the 6I anti-Gorbachev campaign - see footnote 529. In 1990, the EKMS e. V. published *Die globale Überwindung des Kommunismus duldet keinen Aufschub* [The Global Conquest of Communism Cannot Be Postponed] by Stefan Marinoff, a co-founder with Huyn of the German-based Western Goals Europe and AESRI in 1981; he had previously been an author for Stewart-Smith's *East-West Digest* in 1977 – see Huyn bibliography.

In 1992, the EKMS e. V. published *Die Hinterlassenschaft der kommunistischen Diktatur im geeinigten Deutschland bewältigen* [Overcoming the Legacy of Communist Dictatorship in a unified Germany], no doubt the title of the EKMS 1992 conference, and then in 1993, *Terrorismus, Marxismus, Minderheiten : Herausforderung für Deutschland* [Terrorism, Marxism, minorities: Challenge for Germany], proceedings of the 1993 conference whose main two speakers were CDU MP and EKMS stalwart Claus Jäger and Rolf Tophoven, Horchem's deputy in the Bonn-based Institute for Terrorism Research, an ISC/6I outlet which closed that year following Horchem's retirement – see footnote 541. In 1994, a Berlin Appeal was launched, warning of a resurgence of socialism and denouncing a "witch hunt against Conservatives and the democratic Right under the banner of anti-fascism". The Appeal was signed for the EKMS Board by former East German refugee Ehrhard Göhl; other signatories included EKMS e. V. Chairman Claus Jäger MP; Melvin Lasky; Wolfgang Reineke, the 1994 Chairman of Grau's television viewers lobby group AFF (see footnote 103) who had been a mid-1970s speaker for Grau's Swiss ISP and was a founding member of the EIS in 1981; Dr. Carl Gustaf Ströhm, the longtime Eastern European correspondent for the newspaper *Die Welt,* an SWG speaker and co-founder of Western Goals Europe and AESRI; and, last but certainly not least, Gerhard Löwenthal – see *TAZ* and *Süddeutsche Zeitung* of 28/9/94.

The President of the EKMS e. V. from 1999 on has been former East German civil rights activist (and daughter of a Stasi officer) Vera Lengsfeld, who was elected to the Bundestag for the Greens in 1994 before defecting to the CDU fraction in 1996 and then serving as a CDU MP until 2005 – see http://archiv.preussische-allgemeine.de/1999/1999_02_27_08.pdf. Lengsfeld wrote for the SWG's *Deutschland-Journal* in 2006 and has also written for the *Preußische Allgemeine Zeitung* (*Ostpreußenblatt*) and the *Bayernkurier*; she failed to be re-elected in 2009.

(357) On Blumenwitz, Strauß and the 1973 Basic Treaty, see https://de.wikipedia.org/wiki/Grundvertrag; *Spiegel* 22/1973 pgs 19-20 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41986667.html, 23/1973 pgs 21-22 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-42645123.html and 3/1984 pg 12 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-13509017.html. For biographies of Bossle, Blumenwitz and Rohrmoser, see *IGfM*, pgs 59, 63 and 65. On Bossle, see *Zeit* 45/1988 at https://www.zeit.de/1988/45/doktorspiele-in-wuerzburg, 51/1988 at https://www.zeit.de/1988/51/dienstverpflichtung, 4/1989 at https://www.zeit.de/1989/04/zeitmosaik, 41/1991 at https://www.zeit.de/1991/41/der-professor-mit-dem-schlechten-ruf, 35/1995 at https://www.zeit.de/1995/35/Neues_von_einem_Herzblutsoziologen, and 35/2013 at https://www.zeit.de/2013/35/pinochet-chile-hanns-seidel-stiftung; footnote 354 on the IfD; footnote 439 on Konservative Aktion. Blumenwitz' and Bossle's *Chile – Rückfahrt zur Demokratie* [Chile – Return to Democracy] was published by the IfD in 1987; the book is not listed in the Wikipedia biography of Blumenwitz who had received the Orden al Mérito de Chile in 1985 – see https://de.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dieter_Blumenwitz. Bossle and the IfD fell out of favour with the CSU in 1989 due to increasingly public scandal – see *Spiegel* 30/1989 pgs 69-70 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-13495251.html and 12/1993 pg 271 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-9277116.html. Bossle died in 2000, Blumenwitz in 2005, Rohrmoser in September 2008 – see Bossle's obituary in *Spiegel* 1/2001 pg 166 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-18166293.html and Rohrmoser's obituary at https://www.welt.de/welt_print/article2461503/Guenter-Rohrmoser-Philosoph-1927-2008.html. In 1981, Rohrmoser worked with the Federal Government on a publication covering the philosophical bases of terrorism; in 1986, a book of his was published by Western Goals Europe and in 1987-88, he worked several times as speaker for the German section of CAUSA. As for Blumenwitz, the legal proceedings against Amnesty International's German section ran for more than twenty years and eventually triggered a Chilean court inspection in 1988, leading to a Chilean government decision to close Colonia Dignidad in February 1991 - see *Guardian*, 24-25/8/91.

On Colonia Dignidad and its links to DINA, see Gero Gemballa's *Colonia Dignidad*, Rowohlt rororo aktuell, Reinbek bei Hamburg 1990, pgs 148-151; https://www.theguardian.com/world/2015/oct/19/chile-former-spy-germans-sentenced-kidnappings-colonia-dignidad. On Gemballa, see https://foia.state.gov/Search/Search.aspx and search for Gemballa. On DINA's Washington assassination of Orlando Letelier, see John Dinges and Saul Landau's *Assassination on Embassy Row* (Pantheon, New York 1980; McGraw-Hill, New York 1981); Taylor Branch and Eugene Propper's *Labyrinth* (Penguin, London 1983); https://www.theguardian.com/world/2015/oct/08/pinochet-directly-ordered-washington-killing-diplomat-documents-orlando-letelier-declassified. On DINA's international cooperation within Operation Condor, see John Dinges's outstanding *The Condor Years* (New Press, New York 2004); https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB416/ and https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB312/; https://www.theguardian.com/world/2016/may/26/operation-condor-trial-argentina-court-death-squads; https://www.theguardian.com/world/2016/may/27/argentinas-last-military-dictator-jailed-over-role-in-operation-condor; https://www.intel.gov/argentina-declassification-project/records; https://www.theguardian.com/news/2020/sep/03/operation-condor-the-illegal-state-network-that-terrorised-south-america. On a September 1977 visit by British, French and West German intelligence services to the Condor secretariat in Buenos Aires "to discuss methods for establishment of an anti-subversive organization similar to "Condor"", see https://www.theguardian.com/world/2019/apr/15/operation-condor-european-spies-dictators-cia-documents. On DINA's 1975 production of nerve-gas using precursor chemicals purchased from Britain, see *Observer*, 23/4/89. On DINA's biochemical weapons programme and its use of thallium and mustard gas in the 1982 murder of Allende's predecessor as Chilean President Eduardo Frei Montalva, see https://www.theguardian.com/world/2009/dec/08/murder-chile-president-frei-montalva; https://www.theguardian.com/world/2019/jan/30/chile-eduardo-frei-montalva-death-sentencing-murder-pinochet; https://consortiumnews.com/2014/12/15/pinochets-mad-scientist/; https://ciperchile.cl/wp-content/uploads/fallo_berrios.pdf; https://www.theguardian.com/world/2015/aug/13/former-chilean-general-hernan-ramirez-rurange-dies-apparent-suicide. On DINA, also see https://www.usip.org/sites/default/files/resources/collections/truth_commissions/Chile90-Report/Chile90-Report.pdf; https://www.theguardian.com/world/2000/dec/10/chile.pinochet; https://www.theguardian.com/world/2015/aug/08/manuel-contreras-head-of-chiles-spy-agency-under-pinochet-dies-aged-86; https://www.theguardian.com/books/2015/nov/06/chile-admits-pablo-neruda-might-have-been-murdered-by-pinochet-regime.

(358) On Lobkowicz, see *IGfM*, pg 62; *Die Contra Connection*; his web biography at https://de.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nikolaus_Lobkowicz and his CVs by the Catholic University of Eichstätt at https://www.ku.de/fileadmin/190806/PDF/vita-lobkowicz-eng.pdf and http://www1.ku-eichstaett.de/ZIMOS/festschrift/09%20Mitarbeiter.pdf which omit his support for the Brüsewitz Centre, IGfM and Resistance International. Lobkowicz also acted as a speaker for the German branch of Opus Dei in 2010 - see https://opusdei.org/de-de/article/das-christentum-kann-sich-ohne-europa-entfalten/. **Resistance International** was active throughout the 1980s, defending the Nicaraguayan Contras, the Afghan mujaheddin, RENAMO in Mozambique and Jonas Savimbi's Angolan UNITA. Several Cercle associates signed two RI appeals widely published in the international press, one in March 1985 just before Reagan imposed a trade embargo on Nicaragua (Crozier, Huyn, Stewart-Smith, Churchill, Close, Bernard, Lobkowicz, Hassel, Graf von Stauffenberg and Bukovsky), and another in October 1987 (Crozier, Stewart-Smith, Close, Löwenthal, Lobkowicz, Hassel, Graf von Stauffenberg and Bukovsky) – see *Die Contra Connection*, pgs 264-267. Löwenthal was also a German Member of Honour of RI; RI's American Members of Honour included US Ambassador to the UN from 1981 to 1985 Jeane Kirkpatrick, Midge Decter, a personal friend of Reagan and Executive Director of the Committee for the Free World, on which see footnote 516, and WACL President Major-General John K. Singlaub, on whom see footnote 428. On Resistance International, see *Die Contra Connection*; *IGfM*; footnote 529. Crozier also supported the anti-Sandinista campaign in the UK within the Committee for a Free Nicaragua – see *Die Contra Connection* pgs 90-91 and *Lobster* 16 (July 1988), pg 18. On IGfM/ISHR campaigns against the Namibian SWAPO and in favour of RENAMO, UNITA and the Contras, also see Brittain, pgs 125-128. On ZDF's suppression of an investigative report on the IGfM/ISHR because of Löwenthal's involvement with the group, see *Spiegel* 32/1980 pg 80 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14319030.html.

(359) Mungo, pg 24 et seq.

(360) The Vice-President of CLEW was Egidio Ortona, host for the founding ceremony and President of the Italian branch set up in 1977. A former Italian Ambassador to the US, Ortona was a founding member of the Trilateral Commission and served on its Executive Committee in 1979 as European Chairman – see Eringer. The other members of CLEW were the first Warden (1946 – 1977) of Wilton Park Sir Heinz Koeppler (who had conceived the idea of Wilton Park as a centre for outreach to a future defeated Germany whilst working during the war in the Foreign Office Political Intelligence Department), Düsseldorf lawyer Klaus F. Beckmann, the President of the Swiss Society of Friends of Wilton Park Doctor Georges Ladame, and the Vice-President of the International Society of Friends of Wilton Park (ISFWP) Jean J. Richard - see Mungo. The statutes of CLEW also mention an offshoot of Wilton Park called the European Discussion Centre (EDC), which may be the same as the "Edicercle" mentioned by Violet in his message to Damman of 31st March 1976 about the funding crisis of the Academy. The EDC merged with Wilton Park in 1981, foreshadowing swingeing budget cuts for Wilton Park that were fiercely contested in 1982-83 by Picard and by Cercle member Sir Peter Tennant, the acting Chairman of the Wilton Park Academic Council who resigned over the matter in 1983 along with over half of the Academic Council – see https://api.parliament.uk/historic-hansard/lords/1983/mar/16/wiston-house-centre. Other persons mentioned in this book and connected with Wilton Park include Habsburg, Strauß, Lummer, Garnier-Lançon, de Sausmarez and Whitney, the Parliamentary Under-Secretary of State at the Foreign and Commonwealth Office at the time of the Wilton Park cuts - see http://archiv.ifz-muenchen.de/hzeig.FAU?sid=48E2121913&dm=1&ind=1&zeig=Verein+zur+F%F6rderung+von+Wilton+Park. There are over 2,000 "Old Wiltonians" around the world; by 1983, some 15,000 people had attended Wilton Park conferences. On Wilton Park, see *In Victory, Magnanimity - In Peace, Goodwill - A History of Wilton Park*, Richard J. Mayne, Frank Cass, London 2003; footnote 136.

(361) The 1978 AESP membership list published by Mungo is also reproduced in Gijsels (1991), pgs 152-157, and in the documentary annex to this full sixth edition of *Rogue Agents*. Any project supported by Pinay was sure to win the ear of the Moroccan King; in November 1955, French Foreign Minister Pinay had signed the La Celle-Saint-Cloud Agreements ending the exile of the Sultan of Morocco Mohammed V, and introducing limited home rule, paving the way for the end of the French and Spanish protectorates and the independence of Morocco in 1956, after which Pinay was a regular private guest of the Moroccan King – see, for example, *La Vanguardia Española* of 19/3/69 pg 16.

(362) On the German CSU Members of the European Parliament, see http://www.europarl.europa.eu/meps/en/1265/OTTO_VON+HABSBURG/history/4; http://www.europarl.europa.eu/meps/en/1762/HEINRICH_AIGNER/history/2; http://www.europarl.europa.eu/meps/en/1254/FRITZ_PIRKL/history/3 and https://www.kas.de/statische-inhalte-detail/-/content/pirkl-fritz; http://www.europarl.europa.eu/meps/en/1240/Graf+von_FRANZ+LUDWIG,+SCHENK_STAUFFENBERG/history/3. This Stauffenberg, only distantly related to the Freiherr von Stauffenberg who ran the CSU's private intelligence network, was part of the main branch of the Stauffenberg lineage, being the third son of Claus Schenk Graf von Stauffenberg who, with his brother Berthold, was executed in 1944 for plotting to kill Hitler.

A final member of Habsburg's group of CSU/PEU MEPs has been **Bernd Posselt**, an intimate of Habsburg from the mid-1970s on and his press spokesman from 1978 to 1994. Co-founder of the German youth wing of the PEU (Paneuropa-Jugend Deutschland) with Habsburg's daughter Walburga in 1975, he was its Federal

President until 1990 – see *Spiegel* 31/1980 pg 34 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14316942.html. In 1977, Posselt was a co-founder of the Brüsewitz Centre; in the 1980s, he also worked for the IGfM and was a prominent supporter of the Nicaraguan Contras. In August 1989, he was co-organiser with Habsburg and his daughter Walburga of the Paneuropean Picnic that opened the Iron Curtain between Austria and Hungary, leading to the fall of the Berlin Wall. A member of the Board of the German PEU section since 1986, he has been its President since 1998. In 1994, he was elected to the European Parliament and sat there until 2014; he failed to gain re-election in 2019, although he continues to shadow the European Parliament today. On Posselt, see http://www.europarl.europa.eu/meps/en/2229/BERND_POSSELT/history/7; https://www.zeit.de/zeit-magazin/2015/44/europaparlament-csu-bernd-posselt; https://www.spiegel.de/politik/ausland/bernd-posselt-wie-ein-abgewaehlter-csu-mann-im-eu-parlament-blieb-a-1038988.html; https://www.spiegel.de/politik/deutschland/bernd-posselt-csu-politiker-will-wieder-ins-eu-parlament-a-1266367.html; https://www.sueddeutsche.de/muenchen/europawahl-bernd-posselt-nationalisten-kampf-1.4465390; his personal website at http://www.bernd-posselt.de/. For Habsburg's Belgian MEP allies from MAUE, see footnote 379.

(363) *Le Soir*, 4/9/91 (online at https://www.lesoir.be/art/stay-behind-et-les-autres-reseaux-les-mysteres-du-major_t-19910904-Z04D57.html) and Brewaeys and Deliège, pgs 62-63, quoted from the Senate Gladio Commission findings. No details are known of the "Saud affair", but the reference is intriguing. In the spring of 1978, Crozier had met the recently-appointed head of the Saudi intelligence service, Prince Turki al-Faisal, and briefed him on the 6I and its activities. Turki's brother Saud al-Faisal was the Saudi Foreign Minister for forty years from 1975 to April 2015, dying in July 2015.

(364) On PIO, Bougerol, de Bonvoisin, Latinus, de Roover and the Belgian Gladio network, see *Histoire de glaives*, Michel Bouffioux, published in *Gladio*, Various authors (pgs 29-60); Michel Bouffioux in *Libertés*, 9, 10, 11, 13-15, 17, 18, 19 and 20-22/4/91 (*Libertés* was a short-lived Belgian left-wing daily which appeared from March to June 1991; various issues are currently online at https://www.scribd.com/user/261432858/MycroftUlloa) and in *Télémoustique*, 28/6/91 (https://www.scribd.com/document/368736969/Tele-Moustique-28-juin-1991-pdf); *Le Soir*, 4/9/91 (see footnote 363); Gijsels (1991); Brewaeys and Deliège.

(365) The hostages were released five minutes after Reagan's inauguration on 20 January 1981; Reagan's first Presidential address was to announce their liberation. On the "October Surprise", see Reagan campaign assistant Barbara Honegger's *October Surprise* (Tudor, NY 1989); *An Election held Hostage? A Compendium*, ed. David Marks (Fund for New Priorities in America, NY 1991) which includes many declassified documents; Sick, a cautious but conclusive investigation by an eminent insider - National Security Council staffer under Presidents Ford, Carter and Reagan, principal White House aide for Iran during the 1979-1981 hostage crisis, and later of Columbia University, New York.

(366) Sick, pg 149. "One example [of Brenneke's inside knowledge] was his statement to a DIA official on 3rd January 1986, that 'Admiral Poindexter had given permission to sell 10,000 missiles to Iran'. On that date, a draft presidential finding was being prepared [...] that provided for the sale of TOW missiles to Iran. President Reagan signed the finding on 6th January" - Sick, pg 210. Sick devotes several pages to discussing Brenneke's claims and reliability; for other accounts of his claims, see Roth; Gijsels (1991).

(367) All information on P7 and the Comité Hongrie 1956-76 from Gijsels (1991), pgs 91-96. The launch of the Comité Hongrie 1956-76 was advertised in the MAUE newsletter. Dessart, President of the Institut de Documentation et d'Etudes Européennes, was later appointed member of the Board of the Ludwig-Frank-Stiftung (LFS) in November 1979 – see the Kyril Drenikoff papers held at the Hoover Institution Archive, Box 78, Folder 4. His speech to the 1981 WACL conference is given in *Damoclès*, April 1982, pgs 1-5.

Töttösy also worked directly with Habsburg and Jacques Jonet within the Association Europe Hongrie, a right-wing Catholic group set up in 1990. The AEH brought together bankers, industrialists and politicians with the aim of promoting industrial and commercial development in Hungary. The AEH's task was made easier by Habsburg's role as Chairman or Deputy Chairman of the European Parliament's Delegation for Relations with Hungary from 1989 to 1999. See *CelsiuS* 39 (April 1991), pgs 3-4.

To summarise Töttösy's biography: born 8th Dec. 1918; LLD Doctor of Law, University Pazmany, Budapest, Attorney at Law in Budapest Bar Association 1940; practiced in Budapest, 1940-52; Judge and Attorney Highest Distinction, 1945; admitted to the Budapest Court of Appeal 1951; accused of participation in a CIA coup attempt, imprisoned and physically and psychiatrically tortured 1952; fled to Belgium, received aid from Caritas Catholica Belgica 1956; Secretary of Belgian Christian Trade Unions - secrétaire permanent de la CSC, Belgium, 1957; Doctor of European Law, Catholic University of Leuven UCL, Belgium; Executive Manager of Mutual Fund Company, USA 1964; President United Atlantic Investment Corporation, 1965; President Amitalia Fund Management Company [alleged to be a covert CIA funding channel], 1970; Financial and Legal Advisor, 1974; publication *Hongrie 1956-1976* with Francis Dessart, Artigraph, 1976; founder Comité Hongrie 1956-76, first meeting rue Belliard 39 (CEPIC/PIO offices, see *Humo*, 15/11/1990); Director, Middle East Consulting Agency, 1977; Secretary-General, FEGOMEE - European Federation of Overseas and East European Refugees 1977; Secretary-General Tilapia Food Aid Organisation, 1982. Memberships in 1981: World Organisation of Periodical Press, Belgium; Wilton Park International; Vice President, World Federation of Hungarian Freedom Fighters; European Chairman of World Federation of Free Hungarian Jurists; Belgo-American Association; Belgian Atlantic Association; Secretary-General, FEGOMEE. Died 2009.

FEGOMEE [Fédération Européenne Des Groupements d'Outre-Mer et Expulsés de l'Est, European Federation of Overseas Groups and Expellees from the East] was founded in Paris in July 1977; the founding President was Belgian Professor Dr. Mairlot, one of the founding Vice-Presidents was Rudolf Wollner, Vice-President of the German BdV, and the founding Secretary-General was Töttösy who provided the group with offices in Brussels. The same year, FEGOMEE, claiming to represent some three million expellees, applied for NGO status with the Council of Europe and focused on the upcoming Belgrade CSCE conference also targeted by the AESP H2 campaign – see footnote 351; *Damoclès*, October 1980, pg 10. FEGOMEE also worked closely with Resistance International and WACL, attending its 1983 conference in Luxembourg – see footnote 487.

For links between Töttösy, Van den Heuvel, Vankerkhoven, de Bonvoisin etc, also see the article "Brusselse Truffels" by Editor Jan Portein in the left-wing Dutch investigative journal *Kleintje Muurkrant* 328 (8/1/99) at https://www.stelling.nl/kleintje/edities/1999/januari-328/janp. Portein was however unaware of the *Spiegel* articles *Oberländer – Truth about Lemberg* (1/1960 pgs 23-24 at https://

www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-43062900.html) and *Oberländer's Friends – Documents in safe* (31/1960 pgs 37-38 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-43067595.html) which report that after Oberländer was forced out as Minister for Exiles in 1960, allegedly forged wartime diaries of his implicating him in the 1941 Lemberg Massacre were offered for sale by the Dutch former concentration camp inmate Joop Zwart, the strongly anti-communist Secretary of the private Dutch-based International Commission of Enquiry into Lemberg 1941. The *Spiegel* named two potential takers in 1960: Peter Sager in Bern and Karl Friedrich Grau in Bonn, who both met Zwart to discuss the documents and tapes which they no doubt wished to remove from circulation - Oberländer was a patron of Grau's recently-founded Frankfurt Study Group. Zwart's Dutch legal action against Oberländer ended in December 1960 with Zwart being condemned for forgery – see *Spiegel* 50/1960 pg 98 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-43067944.html.

This at first sight straightforward case of forgery by Zwart becomes however more complicated on learning that ten years later both a certain Joop Zwart for the Netherlands and Theodor Oberländer for Germany attended the 4th WACL conference held in Tokyo in September 1970; Zwart's attendance was sponsored by the "Information Center 'Dossier' " – a mangled reference to Interdoc? - see footnote 108. The German government confirmed in December 2011 that Oberländer had joined the NSDAP in May 1933 and served as an Obersturmführer in the SA from July 1938 on – see footnote 292. Following his 1960 disgrace, Oberländer was a founding member of the European Freedom Council in 1967 (see footnote 108), which collaborated closely with the ABN and WACL; he served as the longstanding German representative within WACL, attending its 1983 conference in Luxembourg (see footnote 487). He died in 1998. For a defence of Oberländer by Herb Romerstein, see https://www.iwp.edu/news_publications/detail/divide-and-conquer-the-kgb-disinformation-campaign-against-ukrainians-and-jews.

(368) Crozier, pg 172; February 1981 issue of the Belgian LIL bulletin *Damoclès*, the last to mention *Le Monde des Conflits* which presumably ceased publication shortly thereafter. From the 1970s on, *Damoclès* had recommended to LIL members Albertini's *Est et Ouest*, frequently quoted in *Damoclès*, and also the French-language bulletin of Sager's SOI, *Etudes Politiques*. From March 1983 on, after Albertini's death, the LIL bulletin also recommended *Géopolitique*, the magazine of the Institut International de Géopolitique founded in 1982 by Albertini acolyte Marie-France Garaud. The October 1984 issue of *Damoclès* gives top place to *Géopolitique* ranked above *Est et Ouest* which had nonetheless continued after Albertini's death in March 1983 as the monthly journal of the Association d'Etudes Politiques Internationales published in cooperation with the Institut d'Histoire Sociale.

(369) These FARI brochures listed in Huyn's bibliography echoed an official South African publication on the theme in 1977, *South Africa: Defence and Strategic Value*, produced by the Department of Information: "A pamphlet distributed by the South African embassy in London in an effort to convince Western governments that Pretoria was an essential strategic ally reminded its readers that South Africa produced 70 percent of the world's gold and half of its diamonds, held 25 percent of the noncommunist world's uranium reserves, and was the largest producer of chromium outside the Soviet Union" – Polakow-Suransky, pgs 113-114, an essential source for those interested in apartheid South Africa, who also recalls (pg 104) the urgency of the campaign: the World Council of Churches denounced Western corporate support for apartheid in 1977, and, in November of that year, the United Nations made mandatory the previously voluntary arms embargo against South Africa adopted in 1963 – diplomatic disaster.

Besides in Britain, the South African government was also active on the theme of raw materials in Germany in 1977 – see https://www.worldcat.org/title/southern-africa-the-politics-of-raw-materials-a-selection-of-papers-delivered-at-a-conference-of-the-foreign-affairs-association-at-haus-rissen-international-institute-for-politics-and-economics-hamburg-from-3-to-4-june-1977/oclc/4667181&referer=brief_results; Rhoodie, pgs 275 and 349. The *Ostpreußenblatt* had supported the Cape Route campaign in April 1977 in an unsigned article entitled *Soviet Shadows Over Africa* - see http://archiv.preussische-allgemeine.de/1977/1977_04_16_16.pdf. Rhoodie (pg 248) gives a further example: "Through special seminars arranged by Cas de Villiers and Gerd Hennenhofer in Germany, we managed to put a dent in the left-wing campaign in the Bundestag for German disinvestment. On one occasion a special book, in fact an outstanding work, was prepared for us by Professor Van Rensburg of Wits University entitled: *Pawns on the African Chessboard: South Africa's Strategic Metals and Minerals* and then translated and published in German for the conference. The Germans thought it one of the most important publications ever to come out of South Africa". On a list of DoI projects for 1978-79 produced by Connie Mulder and given by Rhoodie (pg 763-765), projects "G.8C Heinz Behrens liaison programme in Germany R470,000 [= $540,500]" , "G.8D Hennenhofer [public relations agency] liaison programme in Germany R215,500 [= $247,825]", "G.20B Special conferences in Germany R60,000 [= $69,000]" and "G.26L German-South African Association, Germany R105,000 [= $120,750]" – close on one million US dollars for that year alone - illustrate the importance of Germany as a key target for the South African DoI in the late 1970s. See footnote 455 for later publications by Huyn, the ISC and FARI on the Cape oil route, and South Africa's strategic significance and mineral wealth.

(370) *People's News Service*, 6/2/79, pg 3. Walker's book and an earlier one by Bernard Smith (see footnote 352) were co-published by the FAPC in the UK and Valiant Publishers in South Africa and circulated as part of South Africa's covert propaganda campaign, as noted by Rhoodie (pg 264): "Some of the books which the Department of Information "purchased" from Valiant included [...] *The Fraudulent Gospel*, *The Bear at the Back Door*". On Valiant, see footnote 373.

(371) The article by Henning Von Lowis had been published in *Beiträge zur Konfliktforschung*, 1978, No. 1 – see footnote 288.

(372) Ramsay and Dorril, pg 53. The previous year, du Plessis's report, *Moscow's Control over Mozambique and Angola*, had been published by Stewart-Smith's *East-West Digest* (no. 23, 1977).

(373) On Freedom Blue Cross, see Rees and Day, pgs 196-197; *State Research* no. 7 (Aug-Sept 1978), pgs 130-132 (https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP88-01314R000300010056-1.pdf) and no. 16 (Feb-March 1980), pg 71; *Article 31*, December 1984, pgs 6-7, currently online at https://www.scribd.com/document/241149424/A31-N-3-12-84. Rhoodie notes (pg 211): "FAA representatives had to be invited to high level international seminars, such as the one arranged in Brighton in June 1978 and attended by experts in foreign affairs from many countries. Cas de Villiers and Dr Jan du Plessis represented the FAA. Admiral James Johnson and Dr Jack Penn from South Africa also attended, both having agreed to assist us". The FAPC contributed to the Freedom Blue Cross appeal with its 1978 book by Stefan Troyanski, *The missing triad: the case for a strategic political warfare offensive against the Communist bloc.* González-Mata gives a slightly different take, seeing Freedom Blue Cross as the reactionary rump of a "cleansed"

post-Lockheed Bilderberg Group: having described "[...] the reorganisation of the Bilderberg Group rid of its "black sheep", politicians, bankers and industrialists belonging to right-wing organisations which cannot be integrated, reserve officers, former intelligence chiefs, etc", González-Mata adds in a footnote: "These marginalised sectors would set up in London a new organisation, "worthy successor to the Bilderberg Club of heroic times" (sic), called Freedom Blue Cross whose main aim is to "hinder Soviet expansionism in Europe, Asia, Africa and Latin America" " – see González-Mata, pg 297.

The two DoI front groups, the FAA and the SAFF, closed down shortly after the Brighton conference following their exposure in the media during the Muldergate scandal – search for State Department cable 1978PRETOR07016 of 24th November 1978 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/. A list of DoI projects for 1978-79 written by Connie Mulder and referenced in footnote 177 reveals that R153,000 [= $175,950] had been budgeted for the FAA under project G.45 as well as R130,000 [= $149,500] for the SAFF under project G.34E. On the FAA, Rhoodie wrote (pgs 268-269): "The Foreign Affairs Association (FAA) was one of the most successful front organisations which the Department [of Information] had established. Up until June 1978 the Department had invested some R700,000 [= $805,000] into the FAA, and if additional money spent on conferences and visitors are added, the figure is close to R900,000 [= $1,035,000]. [...] the Erasmus Commission's knee-jerk reaction to bare all because some newspapers were spreading rumours of government funds for FAA, led to the destruction of the FAA. If the Government had stood firm and shrugged off the rumours which were being spread about, no one would ever have been able to produce concrete proof that the FAA was state funded". On the SAFF, Rhoodie wrote (pgs 263-264): "Up until the end of 1978, [under] Operation *Baard*, a reference to the impressive beard worn by the director, Mr. R. F. Metrowich, the SAFF received some R400,000 [= $460,000] from the Department of Information ... by the end of 1978, the Department of Information had paid some R800,000 [= $920,000] to Valiant Publishers which Red Metrowich set up at our request".

(374) Lanneau, pgs 28-29, referenced in footnote 88.

(375) See *The feasibility of a surprise attack against Western Europe*, Collège de Défense de l'OTAN documentation DOS/5/75; declassified State Department cable 1976LONDON04037 of 15th March 1976 (search for the cable reference at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/); *Spiegel* 34/1976 pgs 72-78 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41147322.html; *NATO's Vulnerability to a Surprise Blitzkrieg Revealed*, Curtis Cate (also author for the NSIC, Resistance International and the *Washington Times*), FARI 18/1977, reprinted in the *Bulletin Européen*, October 1977, pgs 16-18. The book was published as *L'Europe sans défense? : 48 heures qui pourraient changer la face du monde*, Robert Close (preface by Belgian Foreign Minister Henri Simonet), Éditions Arts et voyages, coll. « Collection Inédits », Bruxelles, 1977, 359 p. (ISBN 2-8016-0050-4), and republished in English translation as *Europe without defense: 48 hours that could change the face of the world*, Pergamon Press, coll. Pergamon Policy Studies, Oxford and New York, 1979 (ISBN 0-08-023108-X).

(376) On the 1978 Bilderberg conference held on 21st - 23rd April, see https://publicintelligence.net/1978-bilderberg-meeting-participant-list/. Close's co-author and intimate associate Nicolas de Kerchove had previously met Bennett, Kissinger, Rockefeller and Luns (as well as Pinay, Ball, Senator Henry Jackson and General Gallois) at the 1964 Bilderberg conference in Williamsburg, Virginia – see footnote 101. One particularly sensitive country in 1978 was Spain, then discussing the highly

controversial issue of Spanish entry into NATO; it became a member of the Atlantic Alliance on 30th May 1982, the first new NATO member since Germany had joined in 1955. Close was the subject of several reports in the Spanish Press from 1978 to 1980 in the run-up to NATO membership – see *ABC* (Madrid) of 13/12/78 pg 34, 17/6/79 pg 29, 10/11/79 pg 24, 22/12/79 pg 26, 23/2/80 pg 21 and 27/2/80 pg 24. Close returned to the subject of civil defence in an IEPS brochure, c. 1985, currently online at https://www.scribd.com/doc/289069647/IEPS-La-Protection-Civile-extraits.

(377) See *Damoclès*, March 1980, pg 10 (which quotes the PIO bulletin *Inforep* to defend Close), and April 1980, pg 12. For the denunciation of Close's speech to the AEPE, see https://sites.google.com/site/bplenum/proceedings/1980/k00782740/k00782740_00.

(378) Published by P. Belfond, Paris, 1981; it was also published in German the same year as *Das Ungleichgewicht des Schreckens: führt der Rüstungswettlauf zwischen Ost unde West zum Dritten Weltkrieg?* [The Disbalance of Terror: is the arms race between East and West leading to the Third World War?], produced by Verlag Fritz Molden, publishers in 1978 of Huyn's *Der Angriff - Der Vorstoss Moskaus zur Weltherrschaft* [The Attack - Moscow's Thrust for World Domination]. Whilst with the IEPS, Close also produced the 1983 book *Le Temps des actes*, published in English as *Time for action*, Brassey's Oxford and New York, 1983. On the PRL Committee on Defence and Security Problems, see *Damoclès*, September 1981, pg 12.

(379) See http://www.europarl.europa.eu/meps/en/1780/LUC+CH.H._BEYER+DE+RYKE/history/2; http://www.europarl.europa.eu/meps/en/671/PAUL_VANKERKHOVEN/history/1. Beyer de Ryke replaced MEP Jean Rey, a veteran PRL politician who had served as Belgian Economic Affairs Minister in 1954-58 before becoming EEC Commissioner for Foreign Affairs under Hallstein from 1958 to 1967 and then Hallstein's successor as President of the European Commission from 1967 to 1970. The year after retiring from the European Parliament, Beyer de Ryke was one of those personally paying their respects at the March 1990 funeral of veteran fascist militant and NEM editor Emile Lecerf - see *Le Vif/L'Express* of 9/3/90. From 2002 on, alongside Paul Violet, he was a Board member and later President of the Académie du Gaullisme – see https://www.france-politique.fr/wiki/Acad%C3%A9mie_du_Gaullisme_(ACADGAUL). He died in January 2018. Vankerkhoven, elected as a substitute MEP in 1979, sat in the European Parliament for two years from November 1982 to July 1984, completing the mandate of the late Victor Michel, Vice-President of the PSC at the time of the fall of VdB's government in February 1968. For the German CSU members of the European Parliament, see footnote 362.

(380) Crozier, pg 167. The concern at Crozier's covert activities is more likely to have come from MI5 rather than MI6; Langemann records in November 1979 that MI6 chief Dickie Franks had "recently" attended a working meeting at Chequers with Thatcher and the 6I team of Crozier and Elliott, concluding that MI6 was "fully aware of, if not indeed one of the main sponsors of, the anonymous security organisation". The two men named by Crozier as his chief critics within the ISC both had connections to MI5 - Schapiro had been a wartime member of MI5, and Le Bailly was a member of MI5's recruitment panel. MI5 strongly resented Crozier's May 1978 proposal to create a Counter-Subversion Executive – a threat to their powers - and Shield's employment from June 1979 onwards of Charles Elwell, just retired as head of MI5's F1 counter-subversion branch – see Crozier, pgs 138-139 and 144; footnote 508.

(381) Crozier, pg 171.

(382) Michael Goodwin later became a financial advisor to the International Association for Cultural Freedom which took over from the CIA-funded Congress for Cultural Freedom. Ian Greig died in 1995.

(383) Crozier, pgs 187-188; footnote 265; https://tueriesdubrabant.1fr1.net/t2517p100-brian-crozier; http://www.oera.li/webservices/HRG/HRG.asmx/getHRGHTML?chnr=0001096764&amt=690&toBeModified=0&validOnly=11000&lang=4&sort=0.

(384) Crozier, pg 188.

(385) Crozier, pg 157. The 6I were keen to offset the outcry about human rights abuses in Argentina following the March 1976 military coup, a focus for Jimmy Carter after his election in November 1976. Bob Pastor, Carter's political appointee as senior NSC staffer for Latin America, wrote to Brzezinski in July 1978: "The attached cable [1978BUENOS04937 - search for the cable reference at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/] summarizes Kissinger's visit to Argentina for the World Cup. His praise for the Argentine government in its campaign against terrorism was the music the Argentine government was longing to hear [...] what concerns me is his apparent desire to speak out against the Carter Administration's human rights policy to Latin America" – see https://www.dni.gov/files/documents/icotr/Argentina-Carter-Regan-and-Bush-VP-Part-1.pdf, pg 182; https://www.theguardian.com/world/2016/aug/09/henry-kissinger-mass-killings-argentina-declassified-files; https://www.theguardian.com/world/2016/sep/08/argentina-air-force-head-sentenced-abduction-prison-omar-graffigna; https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB73/; https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB104/; https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB133/; https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB185/; footnote 357.

(386) The Dulverton Trust gave the ISC £50,000 in 1978 - Crozier, pg 174.

(387) On Turki al-Faisal and the mujaheddin, see Cooley, an outstanding book; *US and the Taliban: a done deal,* Pierre Abramovici, *Le Monde Diplomatique*, English edition, January 2002. Turki served as Saudi Ambassador in London from January 2003 to July 2005 when he was posted to Washington; he however abruptly resigned in December 2006, but was not offered the mooted post of Saudi Foreign Minister replacing his brother Saud (https://www.economist.com/news/2006/12/13/reshuffle-in-saudi-arabia) and retired from public office in February 2007. On Horchem's contribution to the drive for a war in Iraq, see footnote 541.

(388) See Haykal.

(389) Crozier, pg 159. Also see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP81M00980R000600070042-3.pdf; https://www.theguardian.com/world/2015/sep/09/iran-revolution-shah-pahlavi-peacock-throne-1978.

(390) Crozier, pg 161. On Moss's ISC study on Iran, search for State Department cable 1978JIDDA08490 of 4th December 1978 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/.

(391) Many of Langemann's BND operations are described in Heigl and Saupe; the book's genesis is described in *Spiegel* 10/1982 pgs 98-100 at https://www.spiegel.

de/spiegel/print/d-14333989.html. Langemann died in 2004.

(392) "Hans von Machtenberg's indiscretion [in providing Langemann with information on the Cercle and the 6I] was nevertheless considered unacceptable, and the 6I's directorate decided to sever relations with him. I was personally very sorry about this rift, as I held Hans in high esteem" – Crozier, pg 193.

(393) Given in English in the original, this is no doubt Crozier's title for his second attempt to get multinationals to fund the 6I after the failure of Freedom Blue Cross.

(394) Besides spelling his name wrong, Langemann also was wrong in calling de Marenches ex-Director in 1979; he remained Director of the SDECE until 1981.

(395) It is interesting to note that Franks served as MI6 station chief in Bonn from 1962 to 1966, and will have therefore reported on the *Spiegel*'s allegations about Strauß and the '*Spiegel* Affair' in 1962 - see Dorril, and Franks's 2008 obituary at https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/3227310/Sir-Dick-Franks.html.

(396) Born in 1921, Luchsinger was Chief Editor of the influential Swiss daily newspaper *Neue Zürcher Zeitung* from January 1968 to January 1985. Having studied at Yale in 1951-52, Luchsinger joined the NZZ and worked as its Bonn correspondent from 1955 to 1963 when Strauß and Merkatz were Federal Ministers; he was then head of the NZZ foreign desk before serving as its Chief Editor from 1968 to 1984. Alongside Ball, Bennett and David Rockefeller, he attended the 1969 Bilderberg conference held in Marienlyst, Denmark – see https://publicintelligence.net/1969-bilderberg-meetings-participant-list/. According to his biography in van der Reijden, Luchsinger received the Freedom Prize in 1985, and was a member of the Löwenthal-Pachman-Horchem group Konservative Aktion, the IGfM, Resistance International, WACL, CAUSA, the Jonathan Institute, and the European Institute on Security, the latter no doubt the EIS detailed below. On Luchsinger, see http://www.hls-dhs-dss.ch/textes/d/D41608.php.

(397) This is probably Professor Ernst Kux, formerly the Soviet expert at the *Neue Zürcher Zeitung* in the 1960s who worked with Interdoc Switzerland – see Scott-Smith (2012), pgs 115-116. However, it may refer to Dr. Stefan Kux whose *Europe's Neutral States: Partners or Profiteers in Western Security?* was published by the IEDSS in 1986. Colonel Botta was the Head of Acquisition (i.e. intelligence-gathering) for the Swiss military intelligence service.

(398) Langemann is surely confusing two prominent figures called Löwenthal: the friend - Gerhard, ZDF anchorman and the Cercle member obviously intended here, and the enemy - Richard, Professor of Foreign Policy at the Free University of Berlin and close friend of Willy Brandt; the two had worked together to formulate the opening to East Germany, Poland and the Soviet Union under Ostpolitik for which Brandt received the Nobel Peace Prize in 1971.

(399) *Spiegel* 37/1982 pgs 28-31 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14351703.html; Roth and Ender, pgs 58-60.

(400) Crozier, pg 191.

(401) *Spiegel* 9/1980 pgs 22-29 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14327589.html and 10/1980 pgs 20-28 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14315032.html; *Spiegel-Buch*, pg 109.

(402) *Spiegel* 12/1980 pgs 156-157 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14319586.html; http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1981/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1981-13.pdf. The move was credited to Richard Pipes and Richard V. Allen of the NSC.

(403) Huyn, pg 258. *Der Angriff* was reprinted five times in 1978-79 before an expanded edition was published in 1980 – a key 6I text.

(404) In February 1973, the Heritage Foundation was co-founded by Edwin Feulner, Paul Weyrich and beer magnate Joseph Coors; Weyrich served as its first President. Feulner served as its President from 1977 until 2013 when he stepped down, taking the title of Founder. Whilst some Heritage/Cercle links are described below, the Heritage Foundation deserves more attention than can be given within the scope of this study. Useful starting points are Herman and O'Sullivan; Bellant. On Weyrich, like Feulner a Cercle member, see the Postscript; footnotes 553 and 587.

(405) General Charles Alan Fraser was South Africa's Consul-General in Iran from 1973 to 1979 and the Cercle's intermediary with the Shah, as mentioned above. Fraser served as South African Chief of the Army Staff in 1966-67, the only non-Afrikaner to hold the post; at this time, he tasked the South African military intelligence service MID to counter rising anti-apartheid sentiment in Europe - see footnote 103. From 1967 to his retirement in 1973, Fraser served as General Officer Commanding Joint Combat Forces, coordinating Army and Air Force operations and training, the third-highest post in the South African Defence Force's Supreme Command – see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Charles_%27Pop%27_Fraser.

(406) When Langemann wrote this document in 1980, Pinay was already 88; he died on 13th December 1994, a fortnight short of his hundred and third birthday. Later in 1980, Violet himself handed over the organisation of Cercle meetings to Crozier and Franz Josef Bach - Crozier, pg 193. Bach had previously attended the November 1976 CEDI Congress in Madrid with Crozier, Violet, Pinay and Huyn.

(407) *Spiegel* 37/1982 pgs 28-31 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14351703.html. On the Cercle's German contacts Dr. Johannes Schauff and Klaus Dohrn, see Waske, pgs 46 et seq. and 72 et seq.

(408) In 1950, Hallstein had been chosen by Adenauer as the leader of the German delegation at the Paris Conference to discuss the creation of the European Coal and Steel Community, forerunner to the EEC; in 1951, he was appointed Secretary of State in the Foreign Office under Adenauer who held the posts of both Federal Chancellor and Foreign Minister. As such, Hallstein accompanied Adenauer to the first Franco-German conference in Paris (brokered by Jean Violet) in October 1954. Hallstein then represented Germany at the key Conference of Messina in 1955 (alongside Pinay and Martino, see the CIOC-CIDCC-Sint Unum annex) and at the negotiations to create the EEC. In March 1957, Hallstein was one of the signatories of the Treaty of Rome alongside Adenauer and Martino before being appointed as the first President of the EEC Commission in January 1958 and attending the Bilderberg Conference held that September in Buxton, England – see https://publicintelligence.net/1958-bilderberg-meeting-participant-list/. He was awarded the Charlemagne Prize in 1961, retired after two terms of office as President of the EEC Commission in 1967 and chaired the European Movement International until 1974; he died in 1982.

(409) Elected to the Italian Parliament in 1968, Filippo Maria Pandolfi served as Under-Secretary of State for Finance under Aldo Moro from 1974 to 1976 before becoming Minister of Finance and then Treasury Minister under Andreotti in 1978. Six months before this Cercle meeting, after the Italian elections in June 1979, Pandolfi had tried to form a government after first Andreotti, then Socialist leader Craxi had failed to raise a workable majority. Pandolfi also failed; the new administration was formed by Christian Democrat Cossiga in August. Pandolfi then served as Minister for Industry and Commerce from 1980 to 1983 and Minister for Agriculture and Forestry from 1983 to 1988 before joining the European Commission as Italian Commissioner and Commission Vice-President in charge of Science, Research and Innovation from 1989 to 1993.

(410) Crozier, pgs 192-193.

(411) Prouty, pg 499.

(412) See Prouty, Appendix III (pgs 499-537) for the full text, which had been written by Stilwell and Air Force Major-General Edward G. Lansdale – at the time, Lansdale was Administrative Director of the Institute for American Strategy, founded in 1958; Frank Barnett was the IAS Program Director. See above and footnote 58. On Lansdale, see Prouty; the CIA's internal histories of the Vietnam War referenced in footnote 413; https://www.historynet.com/book-review-vietnam-declassified-the-cia-and-counterinsurgency-by-thomas-l-ahern-jr.htm; https://www.historynet.com/ed-lansdales-black-warfare-in-1950s-vietnam.htm; https://www.af.mil/About-Us/Biographies/Display/Article/106443/major-general-edward-g-lansdale/; https://www.nytimes.com/1987/02/24/obituaries/edward-lansdale-dies-at-79-adviser-on-guerrilla-warfare.html; https://pinkindustry.wordpress.com/edward-lansdale/; https://spartacus-educational.com/COLDlansdale.htm.

(413) Besides attending the December 1979 Cercle meeting described by Langemann, Colby had also attended a Cercle meeting two years earlier in November 1977 – see above. Colby had had early experience in unconventional warfare - one little-known part of his CIA career was his involvement in setting up and training the Gladio network in neutral Sweden and Finland and in the NATO members Norway and Denmark whilst stationed at the Stockholm CIA station in 1951. Colby's Scandinavian Gladio network soon got into controversy – the Swedish network was exposed in 1953 after the arrest of a right-wing militant, and in 1957, the director of the Norwegian secret service NIS, Vilhelm Evang, strongly protested against the domestic subversion of his country by the United States and NATO and temporarily withdrew the Norwegian stay-behind army from the CPC Gladio coordination meetings. See http://www.php.isn.ethz.ch/lory1.ethz.ch/index.html, a cooperative research project run by the Center for Security Studies at ETH Zürich and the National Security Archive at the George Washington University on behalf of the Parallel History Project on NATO and the Warsaw Pact network. On pacification in Vietnam, see Valentine; the CIA's own internal histories of the Vietnam war which have recently been declassified and are available at https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB284/, the most relevant volume being *CIA and Rural Pacification in South Vietnam*, which also covers the Phoenix programme.

(414) Crozier, pg 177. Immediately prior to his three years at the CIA, the then Colonel Stilwell was appointed Special Military Advisor to the US Ambassador in Italy in 1947; "over the next two years, his staff responsibilities encompassed the Trieste question, finalization of the Italo-Yugoslav boundary and Italian rearmament" - see his Army obituary at https://armypubs.army.mil/epubs/DR_pubs/DR_a/pdf/web/

go9202.pdf. The Italian Ambassador Extraordinary liaising with the Americans at the time was Ivan Matteo Lombardo. Stilwell's stint as Chief of Strategic Planning at SHAPE from 1956 to June 1958 came just after Richardson left SHAPE to return to the US in July 1955, having helped to set SHAPE up from 1951 on. From June 1958 until January 1959, Stilwell was Commander of the Western Area, Germany – Strauß was German Defence Minister at the time. Later, Stilwell's choice as his Chief of Staff in Korea in 1976 was Major-General John K. Singlaub who had served on and off under Stilwell since 1951 – see footnote 428.

One of Stilwell's immediate tasks at the Pentagon after his appointment as Deputy Under-Secretary for Defense for Policy in February 1981 was to reinforce intelligence support for special forces operations following the disasterous April 1980 attempt to rescue the American Embassy hostages held in Teheran (Operation Eagle Claw). The lack of forward reconnaissance and signals intelligence prior to special forces interventions was overcome in March 1981 by the creation under Stilwell's command of the **Intelligence Support Activity**. Using signals intelligence, the ISA played a central part in the January 1982 rescue of Brigadier-General James L. Dozier, kidnapped by the Italian Red Brigades, but soon afterwards got into controversy for assisting a planned private POW rescue mission, provoking a May 1982 rebuke to Stilwell from his superior Frank Carlucci: "I find the attached inspection report on ISA disturbing in the extreme … We seem to have created our own CIA, but like Topsy uncoordinated and uncontrolled … we have created an organization that is unaccountable". Despite the 1982 threat to close down the ISA, it continued under a new charter and a multiplicity of designations and cover names, and is still one of the most secret units within the US Army Special Forces today. A close collaborator of Stilwell's in developing the ISA was the Army Assistant Chief of Staff for Intelligence from 1981 to 1985, General William Odom, a former military assistant to Carter's National Security Advisor Zbigniew Brzezinski who went on to head the National Security Agency from 1985 to 1988 – see Aldrich, pg 452. On the ISA, see https://www.nytimes.com/1983/05/11/world/secret-pentagon-intelligence-unit-is-disclosed.html; *"Truth Conquers All Chains": The US Army Intelligence Support Activity, 1981-1989*, Jeffrey T. Richelson, *International Journal of Intelligence and CounterIntelligence*, Volume 12, Issue 2, 1999; Richelson's collection of declassified documents including the Carlucci memo at https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB46/; *Killer Elite: America's Most Secret Soldiers*, Michael Smith, Hachette UK, London 2011; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Intelligence_Support_Activity; Scahill, pgs 51, 95-96 and 120-121.

In the late 1980s, Stilwell served on the Board of the Moonies' geostrategy offshoot, the US Global Strategy Council: chaired by Ray Cline, the USGSC Board also included Richard Pipes of the USCISC and Lieutenant-General Daniel O. Graham of the ASC. In 1988, Stilwell also wrote for the Moonies' magazine *The World and I*, edited by de Borchgrave; Cline sat on its Editorial Board. The Psychological Operations Association (POA) presents the annual General Stilwell Award named after "the man who is known as the father of the rebirth of Psychological Operations in the late 1980s"; the first recipient in 1986 was Stilwell, the second in 1987 Frank Barnett, President of the NSIC – from the now-closed POA Geocities site archived at http://web.archive.org/web/20090903015257/http://geocities.com/psyopassociation/Stilwellb.html. In 1989, Stilwell contributed to a study edited by Barnett and the NSIC for the National Defense University, *Political warfare and psychological operations: rethinking the US approach*, whose authors included Iklé, Douglass and Jameson – see footnote 505. Stilwell died on Christmas Day 1991; one of his last television appearances was in January 1991 at an American Bar Association conference on the Gulf War where he spoke alongside Ray Cline of the

USGSC and CIA veteran George Carver (the latter also a speaker at the October 1991 IFF conference in Washington alongside several 6I members) – see https://www.c-span.org/person/?richardstilwell.

(415) On Jameson's role as American coordinating secretary of the Cercle from 1977 on, see above. Whilst at the CIA in the early 1950s, Jameson had played a peripheral role in the creation of the Congress for Cultural Freedom - see Saunders. On Jameson, see the 1992 IFF book *Intelligence and the New World Order*, pgs ix-x, given in the documentary annex to this full sixth edition; see also https://www.c-span.org/person/?donaldjameson. He died in September 2007 – see http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/content/article/2007/09/10/AR2007091002436.html.

(416) Research Associates International was "a company that does risk assessment and economic feasibility studies, reporting on international events, especially concerning the international oil market. In addition, the company operates an executive protection program for its principal clients in the oil trade" - from the 1992 IFF book, pg ix, given in the documentary annex to this full sixth edition.

The CIA career of Ted Shackley is too complex a subject to cover in any detail in this investigation; he was however a central figure in the later Cercle as described by van der Reijden. In brief, Shackley served as CIA Miami station chief running anti-Castro operations in 1962 before transferring to Laos in 1966 and Vietnam in 1968 where he oversaw the Phoenix programme. In 1972, he returned to America as head of the CIA's Western Hemisphere Division, playing a key part in operations against Allende. In 1976, Shackley was appointed Associate Deputy Director for Clandestine Operations under CIA Director George H. W. Bush, and retired from the CIA in 1979, setting up Research Associates International with Jameson. In 1994, Shackley registered an American Foreign For Profit Corporation, the Atlantic Cercle, Inc., at his home address in Florida, no doubt to provide a financial vehicle for organising the Cercle's regular Washington meetings; following his death in 2002, the corporation's assets and those of Shackley's estate were contributed to AFIO – see Van der Reijden at https://isgp-studies.com/2010-06-20-ted-shackley-and-atlantic-cercle-inc#atlantic-cercle-inc. On Shackley, see footnote 428; David Corn, *Blond Ghost: Ted Shackley and the CIA's Crusades*, Simon and Schuster, New York 1994; http://bearcave.com/bookrev/blond_ghost.htm; Roger Warner, *Back Fire: The CIA's Secret War in Laos and Its Link to the War in Vietnam*, Simon and Schuster, New York 1995; http://bearcave.com/bookrev/backfire.htm; https://spartacus-educational.com/JFKshackley.htm; Ted Shackley, *Spymaster: My Life in the CIA*, Brassey's, New York 2005; Joseph J. Trento, *Prelude To Terror: Edwin P. Wilson and the Legacy of America's Private Intelligence Network*, Basic Books/Carroll and Graf, 2006; https://www.nytimes.com/2002/12/14/us/theodore-shackley-enigmatic-cia-official-dies-at-75.html; http://articles.latimes.com/2002/dec/14/local/me-shackley14; https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/1417113/Ted-Shackley.html which reads in part: "Later he was to play an organising role in Le Circle [sic], a private group of respected Atlantic-orientated businessmen with an interest in security and political issues."

(417) Herman and O'Sullivan, pg 99. According to Wannall's 2011 obituary at https://cicentre.com/page/WANNALL_Ray, "in 1942, he was admitted to the D.C. Bar and entered the Federal Bureau of Investigation as a Special Agent. He retired in 1976. All but five of his years in the Bureau were spent at FBI Headquarters in the Intelligence Division, which was responsible for all FBI operations regarding

intelligence, counterintelligence, counterterrorism, security and espionage. His last position was as the head of the Intelligence Division as an Assistant Director of the FBI. In this position, he also served as the Bureau's representative on the United States Intelligence Board. He was one of its spokesmen before Congressional committees [e.g. the Church Committee], civic and other groups. His intelligence work has been acknowledged by awards from British and Canadian Intelligence services, CIA, the Emperor of Japan, and the Masonic Lodge of which he and FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover were life-long members [...] He served as the Chairman (1982-84) and President (1986-87) of AFIO [Association of Former Intelligence Officers] [...] He also served on the boards of other respected organizations including America's Future, Inc.; The Maldon Institute; The Hale Institute; and The American Sentinel." On the Nathan Hale Institute, see Herman and O'Sullivan, http://libertyparkusafd.org/Hale/index.htm; https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP90-00806R000200720004-6.pdf. On the Maldon Institute, see footnote 265. On Wannall and SIFI, see footnote 499.

(418) On the Starfighter purchase, see *Spiegel* 5/1966 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-38223909.html; on the Lockheed bribes scandal and Strauß, see *Spiegel* 50/1975 pgs 32-34 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41389555.html; on the Starfighter's safety record, see https://theaviationgeekclub.com/heres-luftwaffe-dubbed-iconic-f-104-starfighter-widow-maker. Strauß and many of the leading public figures implicated in the affair were members of the Bilderberg Group. For Lockheed-Bilderberg links, see the two books on the Bilderberg Group mentioned above and the factual novel by Bernt Engelmann.

Ironically, the 1962 '*Spiegel* Affair' had been triggered by a CEDI stalwart, the Spanish Information Minister Manuel Fraga Iribarne, who gave a Press conference on 6th November 1962 confirming the illegal extradition of *Spiegel* Chief Editor Conrad Ahlers, then on holiday in Spain, following a "request from Bonn" – see *Spiegel-Buch*, pg 126 et seq. The sharpest question of the day about the major scandal that ensued came, perhaps unsurprisingly, from Axel Springer's well-informed *Welt* which on 31st October 1962 had already written: "But that is also relatively unimportant. What however remains important is in which secretive way the Federal Prosecutor's Office could ensure the arrest in Spain of a German citizen without calling upon the help of the Federal government ... So, how then? Through help from colleagues in the secret services perhaps? Through the Falange, through the Abendländische Akademie? We give a grotesque picture here, but only because the matter is so grotesque" – see *Spiegel* 45/1962 pgs 22-49 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-45124471.html. For a lengthy retrospective piece on the '*Spiegel* Affair', see *Spiegel* 0/1997 pgs 56-81 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-8650338.html.

(419) See *Spiegel* 35/1980 pgs 22-25 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14323484.html, 36/1980 pg 250 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14326939.html and 32/1982 pgs 30-31 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14344373.html; *Het Vrije Volk* 27/9/80 pg 7 at https://resolver.kb.nl/resolve?urn=ddd:010960668:mpeg21:pdf. On Löwenthal's continued support for Strauß in his ZDF Magazin programme, see *Spiegel* 9/1983 pgs 104-106 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14023625.html.

(420) See *Spiegel* 36/1981 pgs 59-61 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14340807.html.

(421) *Sunday Times*, 7/10/84; Crozier pgs 222-227, who confirms collaboration with Joe Douglass: "As a consultant to Sir James, my job was to find the key

witnesses and prove our case. The contract was a personal one with me but in reality it was a contract with The 6I. Without it, no valid defence could have been made. My first priority was to get hold of General Sejna ... I had long talks with Walter Hahn and a friend of his, Joseph Douglass, who had spent months closeted with Sejna" (pg 224). Douglass later worked for Crozier on a 1986 6I operation accusing the Soviet Union and Cuba of backing the international drugs trade – see below. Goldsmith's sympathetic biographer Ivan Fallon notes (pg 390) that, besides interviewing defectors such as Frolik, Crozier "used former Soviet journalists, and Czech anti-communists, Harvard academics, former advisers to the American National Security Council, ex-CIA men, former MI5 and MI6 spooks, and many others ... The evidence piled up, more impressive in quantity than quality. Other than Sejna's important but circumstantial evidence, there was little to prove the link between the KGB and *Der Spiegel*". Goldsmith's research project was mentioned in *Damoclès*, October 1981, pg 13 in the following terms: "A fortunate initiative. British businessman J. Goldsmith has decided to offer a fifty thousand pound prize for the best journalistic investigation of subversion in the media. He is above all targeting the small extremist and revolutionary groups in Great Britain and wonders where they get the money for their publications".

(422) *Spiegel* 41/1984 pg 290 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-13511636.html; Fallon, pg 392.

(423) See http://www.sirjamesgoldsmith.com/wp-content/uploads/2015/01/Whimsy-From-Moscow-Oleg-Bitov-6_03_1985.pdf. On Bitov, also see https://www.nytimes.com/1984/09/19/world/russian-who-won-asylum-in-britain-is-back-in-moscow.html; https://www.independent.co.uk/life-style/he-came-he-saw-he-couldnt-take-it-he-was-a-soviet-defector-with-a-story-to-sell-and-duff-hart-davis-1383974.html.

(424) Goldsmith's full-page adverts appeared in the *Times, Daily Telegraph, Financial Times, New York Times, Wall Street Journal, Washington Post, Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung* and *Die Welt*. See *Spiegel* 41/1984 pg 290 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-13511636.html, and 42/1984 pgs 3 and 290 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-13511656.html and https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-13512369.html. A robust defence of Goldsmith's actions in the *Spiegel* case was included in Deacon, pgs 52-53 - see the article on Deacon by David Teacher and Robin Ramsay "Truth Twisting: notes on disinformation" in *Lobster* 19 (May 1990), pgs 20-22. Goldsmith's own account was distributed by the Monday Club. An article by Crozier for Goldsmith is online at http://www.sirjamesgoldsmith.com/wp-content/uploads/2015/01/Der-Spiegel-confirmation-from-the-East-by-Brian-Crozier-1993.pdf, in which Crozier records meeting Kalugin at a November 1991 conference in Potsdam, carefully not naming the IFF as host or detailing the role of the IFF conference as a South African-funded gathering of the 6I. As for tracking down the source of the claim that the KGB used the *Spiegel* to circulate disinformation, the allegation had been published by *Est & Ouest* (not stating that this was published by 6I stalwart Georges Albertini), as reprinted from *Zeitbild* (not stating that this was the SOI magazine). On *The Secret Offensive*, see footnote 471.

(425) Robert Moss's column in the *Daily Telegraph* was a regular outlet for Cercle/6I disinformation. One report from Langemann to his minister's office dated 21st February 1980, revealed a further example of a Cercle-inspired article in the British press and alluded to the CSU's private intelligence service, with which Langemann liaised closely: "The enclosed article ["The KGB's plans for the Games"] from the *Daily Telegraph* of 11/2/80, written by our friend Robert Moss, is the result of steps taken

together with the office of the Freiherr von Stauffenberg". Another occasion when the *Daily Telegraph* was used by Moss to plant propaganda came in August 1980 when Moss recycled a CIA report in his *Telegraph* column. The alleged CIA report, which claimed that the Nicaraguan Sandinistas' final offensive against the dictator Somoza had been planned by the Cuban General Staff, had been provided by "a senior member of the 6I in the Pentagon", probably General Stilwell, Reagan's Deputy Under-Secretary for Defense for Policy - see Crozier, pg 164.

(426) It's worth noting that George H. W. Bush's brother Prescott S. Bush Jnr had been a founding director of the NSIC with Barnett, Casey and Leibman in 1962, and was still serving as a member of its Advisory Council in 1985. Crozier had had the opportunity of "a long private talk" with George H. W. Bush a year before this Cercle meeting when both men attended the July 1979 launch of the Jonathan Institute in Jerusalem – see Crozier, pg 178.

(427) Roth and Ender, pgs 89-90. The Cercle/6I had already assisted the Israelis a year earlier at the July 1979 launch of the propaganda outlet, the Jonathan Institute – see below. Crozier reveals that the next Cercle meeting was held in December 1980 in Washington, a meeting that was attended by Carter's advisor on Soviet Affairs, Professor Marshall Shulman of Columbia University – see Crozier, pg 261. Crozier also reveals another guest at that meeting: "At the Cercle meeting in Washington in December 1980, Georges Albertini had brought along a quiet Frenchman named François de Grossouvre. This was an impressive example of his foresight. De Grossouvre, a physician, was the closest friend and confidant of the Socialist leader and presidential candidate François Mitterrand. For many years, de Grossouvre had carried out special missions for Mitterrand. By nature and training, he was self-effacing. He played no part in our debates, but listened carefully, taking notes. Five months later, François Mitterrand narrowly defeated Valéry Giscard d'Estaing in France's presidential elections. One of his first actions was to appoint de Grossouvre as his coordinator of security and intelligence. Shortly after, having obtained his direct line from Albertini, I went to see him in his modest office in the Elysée Palace. We had reacted with alarm to Mitterrand's victory, but de Grossouvre reassured me" – Crozier, pgs 217-218.

Mitterrand was also able to assuage the misgivings of the incoming Reagan Administration by offering the CIA access to Farewell (Vladimir Vetrov), a prized KGB source recruited by the French DST, at the first face-to-face meeting between the two leaders on 19th July 1981 during the G7 conference in Ottawa: "By admitting Reagan into this secret during the Ottawa Conference of 1981, Mitterrand established his credibility with a conservative US administration deeply suspicious of a French regime which counted communist ministers in its government" – *The French Secret Services*, Douglas Porch, Macmillan, London 1995, pg 447; see also https://www.cia.gov/library/center-for-the-study-of-intelligence/csi-publications/csi-studies/studies/96unclass/farewell.htm; https://www.nytimes.com/2004/02/02/opinion/the-farewell-dossier.html; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Farewell_Dossier; https://spectator.org/the-extraordinary-case-of-farewell/.

(428) Bellant, pg 39. The ASC election campaign included briefing or campaigning for 67 candidates; the two main ASC officials involved were Lieutenant-General Daniel O. Graham, Executive Director of the ASC Political Action Committee, former Deputy Director of the CIA and head of the DIA, and **Major-General John K. Singlaub**, Chairman of the ASC's action arm, the Coalition for Peace through Strength, who had been dismissed by Carter in 1977. Singlaub, later Chairman of the American WACL chapter and a central figure in the 1984-87 Irangate scandal,

had been a wartime colleague of Bill Casey, later Reagan's Director of the CIA; as head of the OSS Secret Intelligence Branch mission in London, Casey had been his superior when Singlaub parachuted into occupied France in 1944 – see https://www.cia.gov/library/publications/intelligence-history/oss/art06.htm; http://www.vegsource.com/articles/john44.htm; https://www.defensemedianetwork.com/stories/interview-with-maj-gen-john-k-singlaub-u-s-army-ret/.

Singlaub then worked for three years for the CIA in Manchuria alongside Ray S. Cline and Richard Helms before becoming Deputy Chief of Station in South Korea in 1951. From 1952 on, he served under General Dick Stilwell as a battalion commander in the 15th Infantry Regiment in Korea – see Chapter 12 of Singlaub's 1991 autobiography, *Hazardous Duty*. From 1964 on, as commander of the 'Military Advisory Command Vietnam - Studies and Observations Group' (MACV-SOG) in Saigon, Singlaub ran covert operations throughout South-East Asia; from 1966 on, he worked closely with the head of CIA operations in Laos, Ted Shackley, cooperation that continued after Shackley became Chief of Station in Vietnam running the Phoenix programme from 1968 to 1972.

In 1976, General Stilwell, then Commander-in-Chief of UN and US Forces in South Korea, chose Singlaub as his Chief of Staff, but in March 1977 Singlaub was ordered back to Washington and relieved of duty by President Carter after publicly criticising Carter's decision to withdraw American troops from Korea. The Press furore over his recall and dismissal ultimately scuppered Carter's withdrawal plan. After further blunt criticism of Carter's defence policies, this time denouncing the refusal to build the neutron bomb, Singlaub retired from the Army in April-May 1978, and that June gave a speech to the ASC – see declassified State Department cable 1978STATE141460 of 5th June 1978 (search for the cable reference at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/). Also in 1978, Singlaub was honoured by the Council Against Communist Aggression, which featured Frank Barnett on its National Committee – see http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1978/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1978-34.pdf and https://www.sourcewatch.org/index.php?title=Council_for_the_Defense_of_Freedom (the new name of the CCA since 1980).

In 1979, Singlaub was a co-founder of the Western Goals Foundation with Rep. Larry McDonald and John Rees. In 1981, he was founding Chairman of the United States Council for World Freedom, the renewed American chapter of WACL whose Vice-Chairman was Lieutenant-General Graham; in 1982, Singlaub was elected Chairman of the North American Regional WACL – see http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1982/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1982-19.pdf. For Singlaub's career, see https://spartacus-educational.com/JFKsinglaub.htm; for a supportive military account of his dismissal, see https://apps.dtic.mil/dtic/tr/fulltext/u2/a237770.pdf; for his TV appearances, see https://www.c-span.org/person/?johnsinglaub. On Stilwell, see footnote 414; on Graham, see footnote 199; on the USCWF, see footnote 186; on Shackley, see footnote 416.

(429) Sick, pgs 110-111.

(430) Woodward, pgs 39-41. For a 2004 account of a December 1980 meeting between de Marenches and Reagan attended by Arnaud de Borchgrave, see https://www.washingtontimes.com/news/2004/jun/10/20040610-105843-8888r/#pagebreak. At that time, although he did not know it, de Marenches himself had less than six months left as head of the SDECE; after eleven years at the helm, the arch-conservative abruptly resigned in May 1981 following the election of France's first post-war socialist government without even staying for his

replacement's customary "breaking-in" period. De Marenches also planned to combat Mitterrand's arrival after leaving office, as Crozier wrote to William A. Wilson, Reagan's channel to the Cercle, on 9th January 1981: "I had a long talk with Arnaud de Borchgrave two days ago. He told me about his meeting with Mr. Reagan, accompanied by the Count de Marenches not long ago. As you may know, [de] Marenches is planning to do something rather similar to our own work on retiring from his job as Head of the French intelligence service (SDECE) in May. I therefore decided to "level" with Arnaud, as it would be absurd to work on parallel lines but never to pool our resources" - see https://tueriesdubrabant.1fr1.net/t2517p100-brian-crozier.

Right-wing officers in the SDECE also fiercely resisted Mitterrand; its Action Service rebelled, purged Socialist sympathisers amongst the NCOs and refused to remove Giscard's portrait from the officers' mess. The rebellion of the Action Service centred around the diving base in Aspretto, Corsica, from which the divers for the 1985 anti-Greenpeace "Operation Satanic" were drawn. The theory that the operation against the Rainbow Warrior was deliberately blown (*inter alia* by drawing MI5's attention to the "covert" purchase of a Zodiac boat in London and by the monumental gaffe of leaving French Navy issue equipment at the scene of the crime) so as to sabotage the Socialist government's Defence Minister Charles Hernu (who had given his official approval for the operation) draws substance from the identity of the "Operation Satanic" action team: the commander of the operation was Lieutenant-Colonel Jean-Pierre Dillais, back in 1981 the rebel base commander of Aspretto. The captured Captain Alain Mafart was Dillais' deputy at Aspretto and another of the ringleaders of the revolt. The team that actually laid the limpet mines were all involved in the Aspretto revolt. See this author's article "French Vendetta" in *Lobster* 16, July 1988.

In 2005, a Freedom of Information action by the *Guardian* forced release of British documents about an attempt by the French to blame the attack on the British; see https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2005/nov/28/politics.freedomofinformation. In 2006, it emerged that Gérard Royal, brother of Socialist presidential candidate Ségolène Royal, had been one of the DGSE agents involved in the attack; see http://www.leparisien.fr/une/chez-nous-la-cravache-n-etait-jamais-loin-29-09-2006-2007372832.php; http://www.leparisien.fr/faits-divers/le-frere-de-segolene-royal-relance-l-affaire-du-rainbow-warrior-02-10-2006-2007380763.php; http://www.leparisien.fr/faits-divers/gerard-royal-refuse-de-detailler-sa-mission-03-10-2006-2007383626.php; http://www.lemonde.fr/societe/article/2006/10/01/le-frere-de-segolene-royal-et-l-affaire-du-rainbow-warrior_818759_3224.html; https://www.lexpress.fr/actualite/politique/freres-de_482711.html; https://www.cercle-k2.fr/users/single/369/G%C3%A9rard-Royal. In 2015, one of the DGSE combat divers who planted the limpet mines identified himself; see http://www.leparisien.fr/faits-divers/video-30-ans-apres-l-agent-de-la-dgse-qui-a-coule-le-rainbow-warrior-s-excuse-06-09-2015-5066449.php; https://www.theguardian.com/environment/2015/sep/06/french-spy-who-sunk-greenpeace-ship-apologises-for-lethal-bombing. Also see https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/Xavier_Maniguet.

(431) https://web.archive.org/web/20130511130310/http://www.cnss.org/data/files/resources/FirstPrinciples/FirstPrinciplesVol6No4.pdf pgs 2-3. For a 1994 television interview with Roy Godson, see https://www.c-span.org/video/?60540-1/central-intelligence-agency; for videos of Codevilla, see https://www.c-span.org/person/?angelocodevilla; for footage of Romerstein, see https://www.c-span.org/person/?herbertromerstein. Two enlightening interviews of Walters in

1988 (whilst US Ambassador to the UN) on Reagan's legacy and in 1990 (whilst US Ambassador to Germany) on post-reunification Germany can be seen at https:// www.c-span.org/video/?5593-1/interview-vernon-walters and https://www.c-span.org/video/?15452-1/current-political-events-germany.

(432) Bamford (2005), pg 273. Referring to the Reagan appointments of Stilwell and Perle to senior posts in the Pentagon, Crozier calls them "personal friends of mine" – Crozier, pg 243. For Großmann, see *Die Internationale der Konservativen*, pg 496; also see footnote 310. Perle is an International Patron of the Henry Jackson Society – see https:// henryjacksonsociety.org/international-patrons/.

(433) Silverstein, pg 232. On Perle and SALT, see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP88-01315R000400380034-3.pdf.

(434) Crozier, pg 193. The 31st October meeting was advertised in the *Damoclès* issue for September 1984, pg 6; Crozier spoke on "NATO and the non-military threat – terrorism and subversion".

(435) The Court of Auditors report is online at https://fr.wikisource.org/wiki/Rapport_de_la_Cour_des_comptes_sur_l%E2%80%99affaire_des_avions_renifleurs.

(436) Péan's first article in the *Canard Enchaîné* was published on 22nd June 1983; the front-cover story that launched the affair was published on 21st December 1983. Violet's testimonials were published in 1993 in Krop, pgs 764-772. In 2001, Paul Violet rose to his father's defence in a response to an article which dated Jean Violet's death to the end of the previous year: see the unarchived articles at http://www.lepoint.fr/actualites-politique/2007-01-19/elf-affaires-de-famille/917/0/57829 and http://www.lepoint.fr/actualites-chroniques/2007-01-20/opinions/989/0/58840. Großmann's 2014 article and book (pg 437) record Violet's birth on 20th May 1917 and his death sometime in December 2000.

(437) See Cornwell; Yallop, pgs 454-456. Bagnasco was a key witness to the last days of Banco Ambrosiano President Roberto Calvi. Having been appointed Ambrosiano Vice-President in January 1982, Bagnasco defeated Calvi in a crucial Board meeting on 7th June 1982, called after pressure from the Bank of Italy on 4th June for information about $1.4 billion of Ambrosiano foreign debt. Calvi opposed providing information but was outvoted by Bagnasco and his supporters. On 11th June, Calvi disappeared from Italy; his body was found hanging under Blackfriars Bridge in London on 18th June – see *La Vanguardia Española* of 4/4/83 pg 11; Raw. On Bagnasco, also see *CelsiuS* no. 42, July/August 1991.

Following the Banco Ambrosiano crash, the Vatican appointed a four-man commission of inquiry to "investigate" the scandal; of the four commissioners, two were Cercle Pinay contacts. One was Hermann Josef Abs, the German Bilderberger, European Movement and CEDI member who had met Spínola at Strauß's behest during the General's 1975 tour to raise funding for a coup d'état. The other was none other than Philippe de Weck who, with Pesenti, was the main financier implicated in the sniffer plane scandal. There are further links between the sniffer plane scandal and Banco Ambrosiano quite apart from the repeated presence of the two major players, Pesenti and de Weck: the company used as a conduit for Elf's initial sniffer plane payments to de Villegas' Fisalma, Ultrafin, was owned by Calvi and linked to Ambrosiano Holding Luxembourg. One of the Ultrafin shareholders was Ernst Keller, a member of de Weck's Zürich UBS staff responsible for overseeing transfers of sniffer plane money to Fisalma. De Weck's UBS bank had been one of the major channels used by Calvi for milking Banco Ambrosiano; UBS was also one of the principal Swiss banks used by P2. Amongst UBS accounts was one of $55 million for Gelli and another of $30 million for Calvi and his partner Flavio Carboni. Despite the sniffer plane scandal, in June 1989 de Weck was appointed to the five-man Supervisory Board of the IOR charged with selecting a successor to the disgraced former IOR President, Archbishop Paul Marcinkus. In 2014, de Weck was named as having been a Cercle member since May 1974 – see Großmann's book discussed in footnote 4.

(438) *Spiegel* 51/1984 pgs 92-93 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-13512014.html; *Die unheimlichen Patrioten*, pgs 609-611.

(439) Konservative Aktion was finally dissolved in 1989. On KA, see *Spiegel* 44/1983 pgs 92-101 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14024279.html, 28/1986 pgs 36-39 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-13517508.html, and 42/1986 pgs 122-129 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-13520252.html and https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-13520266.html; *Zeit*, 26/1983 at https://www.zeit.de/1983/26/mit-der-rechten-harke, 50/1985 at https://www.zeit.de/1985/50/vor-allem-alte-herren, 41/1988 at https://www.zeit.de/1988/41/schlaege-unter-die-guertellinie, and 5/1990 at https://www.zeit.de/1990/05/ein-volk-ein-reich.

(440) Stewart-Smith died in 2004 – see footnote 280.

(441) Crozier, pgs 287-288.

(442) All uncredited information in the section on the Belgian strategy of tension is taken from Gijsels, *L'Enquête* which, despite certain inaccuracies and no index, is the best overview of Belgium from a parapolitical perspective. Brief biographies of CEPIC figures can be found in a supplement to *CelsiuS* 29, May 1990. Other books on the rumours of a coup in 1973, the strategy of tension in the 1980s and the extreme right in Belgium are de Bock; Haquin; Willems; Dupont and Ponsaers; *De Bende Tapes*, various authors; Gijsels, *Het Leugenpaleis*; Brewaeys and Deliège, the latter being highly recommended. The official report of the investigation into the Brabant killings is published as *Les Tueries du Brabant*, various authors.

(443) The Sûreté report is published in full in Gijsels, *L'Enquête*. Amongst other things, the report stated: "The registered office of CEPIC is located at 39, rue Belliard in Brussels. The building also houses the Belliard auditorium, the registered office of the Mouvement d'Action pour l'Unité Européenne* and the offices of the Société de Promotion et de Distribution Générales (PDG) controlled by Benoît de Bonvoisin through front-men. *This is an otherwise unknown organisation run by Benoît de Bonvoisin bringing together various distinguished persons". The full Senate Committee report is available at https://www.senate.be/lexdocs/S0611/S06110269.pdf. Vankerkhoven fiercely contested the Sûreté report in *Damoclès*, October 1981, pgs 7-9 in a lengthy article entitled "A fine example of manipulation and disinformation"; also see http://benoitdebonvoisin.com/.

(444) Latinus later officially applied to become a regular officer within the Sûreté. Massart gave his version of the Latinus affair in *Les dés étaient pipés* [The dice were loaded], Editions Quorum, Ottignies, 1997.

(445) See Bouffioux; Brewaeys and Deliège.

(446) It is not difficult to understand why the Brabant Wallon investigations never exposed the truth when one learns that Didier Mievis was a member of one of the Gendarmerie investigation teams from the very beginning. The additional report by the Belgian Parliament into the alleged involvement of Group G in the killings is online at https://www.lachambre.be/FLWB/PDF/49/0573/49K0573010.pdf.

(447) Deputy Commander and then Commander of the Belgian forces in Korea from 1950 on, Vivario returned to Belgium to serve as Commander of the Paracommandos before being appointed aide de camp to the King in 1955. He later served as Commander of Belgian forces in the Lower Congo Basin in 1960, chef de cabinet to Defence Minister Segers in 1961-65 and Chief of the Army General Staff from December 1967 to February 1972. On Vivario's attendance of the March 1973 Wilton Park meeting alongside Damman, Jonet, Sánchez Bella and Crozier, see footnote 136. Vivario's alleged involvement in coup plots is significant, bearing in mind his role in creating the DSD, forerunner of Bougerol's PIO, in 1970. Vivario died in November 1990 - see https://www.lesoir.be/art/georges-vivario-est-mort-a-80-ans-les-plus-hautes-fonct_t-19901120-Z03AEV.html; Brewaeys and Deliège, pg 56; *CelsiuS* no. 36, January 1991.

(448) *Libertés*, 14/2/91.

(449) González-Mata, pgs 52-53; Crozier, pgs 239-241. Merkatz died in 1982 – see his obituary in the *Ostpreußenblatt* at http://archiv.preussische-allgemeine.de/1982/1982_03_13_11.pdf.

General Pierre Gallois was a former head of the French Air Force and architect of the French strategy of nuclear deterrence. As a key contributor to early strategic plans for the nuclear defence of Europe, Gallois was the French counterpart of US Air Force Brigadier-General Robert C. Richardson III, who had helped set up SHAPE in 1951 and formulated the first NATO atomic response plans. Gallois himself was posted to SHAPE in 1953-54, attended atomic tests in Nevada in 1955 and convinced General de Gaulle of the nuclear aspect of NATO planning in 1956. He retired in 1957. On his attendance at CEDI meetings from 1961 on, see footnote 100; *ABC* (Madrid) of 23/7/68 pg 55, 4/7/74 pg 47 and 7/7/74 pg 23. In 1982, he was co-founder with fellow French Cercle member Marie-France Garaud of the Institut International de Géopolitique, a French outlet for the 6I – see footnote 487. In January 1983, Gallois helped the Cercle/6I ensure that France, as the only Western nuclear power not in NATO, would not stand in the way of NATO's deployment of American missiles in the five other EU countries, particularly in Germany. As Crozier records, "Over breakfast at Claridge's in London, I discussed the problem with a French visitor. We agreed that the best way to mobilise Mitterrand on this issue was to persuade him to invite General Gallois to brief him on the SS-20 danger. We both knew Pierre Gallois. I had translated his important Conflict Study analysing the SS-20 threat, and interpreted for him at Pinay Cercle meetings. Jean Violet gave him a 'genius' rating" [...] He readily agreed to brief Mitterrand, who seized the opportunity to create a stir in Bonn. In the Presidential plane on his way to the Federal Republic, François Mitterrand read the draft speech prepared for him by the Quai d'Orsay [French Ministry of Foreign Affairs]. The draft was so far from the Gallois briefing, so much softer, more tactful, more 'diplomatic', that he arrived in a choleric mood. With half an hour to spare, he borrowed a desk in Chancellor Kohl's office and wrote the speech *we* wanted him to deliver." - Crozier, pg 241-242, italics in the original. Gallois died in August 2010 – see https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pierre_Marie_Gallois.

(450) Crozier, pgs 239-243. On the general history of the nuclear disarmament movement and Western governments' campaigns against it, see Laurence S. Wittner's *The Struggle against the Bomb, Vol. 3 – Towards Nuclear Abolition*, Stanford University Press, 2003 (ISBN 0-8047-4862-4).

(451) "Crisis of the Empire (Notes for Memory)", speech by Crozier to the meeting of the Cercle held in Wildbad Kreuth, 11th-13th June 1982 – see https://isgp-studies.com/organisations/Cercle/1982_06_11_13_Crozier_Cercle_speech_Germany.pdf. I am indebted to Joël van der Reijden for making several internal Cercle documents available at https://isgp-studies.com/2011-10-26-first-ever-documents-on-le-cercle-pinay; they are discussed in depth in the Postscript.

(452) See Hollingsworth and Norton-Taylor, Chapter 5.

(453) On MI5's surveillance of CND, see *Guardian*, 21, 22 and 28/2/85; Reeve and Smith; Hollingsworth and Taylor, pgs 131-133; Campbell and Connor, pgs 282-284 and 290-291 on BBC vetting; Norton-Taylor, pgs 80, 83-84. Massiter's revelations were made in "MI5's Official Secrets", a television documentary for Channel 4's 20/20 Vision programme scheduled for transmission on 20th February 1985; despite not being aired, the programme's content was extensively covered by the *Guardian* the following day – for the programme, see https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=qRuAzSDhZXk. Two of the intercept targets - Patricia Hewitt (NCCL General Secretary from 1974 to 1983) and Harriet Harman (NCCL Legal Officer from 1978 to 1982), both future ministers under Tony Blair - successfully took their cases to the European Court of Human Rights, which ruled in 1990 that the MI5 files on them were in breach of Article 8 of the European Human Rights Convention. For a heated 1998 parliamentary exchange on MI5 surveillance of CND between Conservative MP Julian Lewis of the 6I/CPS and Joan Ruddock, chair of CND from 1981 to 1987 and a later Labour MP and Minister, see https://publications.parliament.uk/pa/cm199798/cmhansrd/vo981102/debtext/81102-23.htm et seq.

In March 2015, the Home Secretary Theresa May announced the establishment of a public inquiry under Lord Justice Pitchford to investigate the extent and tactics of police infiltration of political campaigns over the last forty years – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2015/mar/12/senior-judge-to-lead-inquiry-into-police-spying-on-political-campaigns. Later in March, it was confirmed by former police infiltrator and Special Branch officer from 1990 to 2001 Peter Francis that the Special Branch had continued covert surveillance of Harman, Ruddock and other prominent progressive figures well after they had been elected as Members of Parliament – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2015/mar/25/police-spied-on-labour-mps-whistleblower; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2015/mar/26/labour-mps-spied-on-police-demand-see-secret-files-harriet-harman; http://www.publications.parliament.uk/pa/cm201415/cmhansrd/cm150326/debtext/150326-0001.htm#15032622000001. In October 2015, Francis stated that the Labour personalities under police covert surveillance after their election to Parliament included the later Labour Party Leader Jeremy Corbyn, former Labour ministers Harriet Harman, Joan Ruddock, Jack Straw, Peter Hain and the late Tony Benn, former Shadow Home Secretary Diane Abbott, former Greater London Council Leader Ken Livingstone, and veteran backbenchers Dennis Skinner and the late Bernie Grant – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/undercover-with-paul-lewis-and-rob-evans/2015/oct/02/police-facing-hard-questions-over-covert-monitoring-of-jeremy-corbyn-and-other-mps. Only a few days later, the notionally independent Investigatory Powers Tribunal ruled that GCHQ interception of parliamentarians' communications was lawful and that the longstanding 'Wilson doctrine' introduced in 1966 which banned covert monitoring of communications by MPs had no legal effect – see https://www.theguardian.com/world/2015/oct/14/gchq-monitor-communications-mps-peers-tribunal-wilson-doctrine. Also in October 2015, Lord Pitchford released a list of over 140 individuals whose cases will be examined; in November, it was announced that the inquiry will also include the covert police surveillance of MPs – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/undercover-with-paul-lewis-and-rob-evans/2015/oct/08/more-than-140-people-given-key-role-in-public-inquiry-into-undercover-police; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/undercover-with-paul-lewis-and-rob-evans/2015/nov/06/claims-that-police-spied-on-jeremy-corbyn-and-ken-livingstone-to-be-examined; https://www.ucpi.org.uk/core-participants/list-of-core-participants/. The inquiry will also examine the alleged use of police infiltrators to counter protests against the 2003 Iraq War – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2016/mar/21/police-concealed-role-undercover-officers-case-from-judges.

In May 2017, Sir John Mitting, former vice-president of the Investigatory Powers Tribunal, took over the inquiry – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2017/may/31/sir-john-mitting-undercover-police-inquiry-lord-justice-pitchford-motor-neurone-disease. In July 2017, the inquiry announced that over one thousand political groups had been infiltrated since 1968 – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2017/jul/27/undercover-police-spied-on-more-than-1000-political-groups-in-uk; a database of groups infiltrated is available at https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/ng-interactive/2018/oct/15/uk-political-groups-spied-on-undercover-police-list. In September 2017, thirteen women deceived into relationships with police spies wrote to Home Secretary Amber Rudd to raise concerns about Mitting's role and the openness of the inquiry - see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2017/sep/19/women-who-had-relationships-with-police-spies-criticise-inquiry; https://policespiesoutoflives.org.uk/women-call-on-home-secretary-to-recognise-institutional-sexism-in-the-police/. In March 2018, the mother of murdered black teenager Stephen Lawrence, Doreen, and some 60 other campaigners walked out of the inquiry, calling for Sir John Mitting's replacement – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/mar/21/campaigners-stage-walkout-of-secretive-police-spying-inquiry; in May 2018, Peter Francis boycotted the inquiry in protest at the the chairman deciding to grant anonymity to the police spies – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/may/09/undercover-uk-police-whistleblower-joins-boycott-of-inquiry.

Running very late, the inquiry will not report before 2023 – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/may/10/undercover-policing-inquiry-will-not-deliver-final-report-before-2023. Victims of undercover surveillance launched legal action in July 2018 against the Home Secretary's decision not to appoint a panel to sit with Mitting – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/jul/05/undercover-policing-inquiry-victims-launch-legal-action. In January 2019, Mitting refused to publish a list of groups monitored by covert surveillance – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2019/jan/31/judge-refuses-to-publish-list-of-groups-that-have-been-spied-on. In April 2019, Mitting granted anonymity to undercover police officers in fifty of seventy-eight cases – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2019/apr/29/undercover-police-to-have-fake-identities-hidden-at-inquiry. In July 2019, the inquiry revealed the fake identity of a black undercover policeman who had infiltrated the Stephen Lawrence campaign - see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2019/jul/16/black-undercover-officer-who-spied-on-stephen-lawrence-campaign-named. The inquiry began hearing evidence in late October 2020; see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2020/oct/28/secrets-and-lies-untangling-the-uk-spy-cops-scandal; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2020/oct/28/police-spying-inquiry-examine-targeting-black-justice-groups; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2020/nov/02/police-deployed-scruffy-officers-to-infiltrate-vietnam-protesters; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2020/nov/09/undercover-officer-rekindled-relationship-seven-years-later-inquiry-told; https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-8933179/Stephen-Lawrences-parents-losing-confidence-probe-revealing-spy-cops-targeted-family.html; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2020/nov/11/tariq-ali-spied-on-14-undercover-officers-spy-cops-inquiry-hears; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2020/nov/17/police-chief-who-spied-on-activists-went-on-to-work-for-union-blacklist-inquiry-told; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2020/nov/18/undercover-police-officer-spied-on-womens-rights-group-inquiry-told; http://undercoverresearch.net/; https://www.spycops.co.uk/; http://campaignopposingpolicesurveillance.com/. Also see footnotes 43 and 471.

(454) *The Price of Peace*, pg 1; Crozier, pg 246; for its Dutch publication, see footnote 472. The "Dutch friend" may well have been Cees Van den Heuvel, who contributed articles on Communist influence in the Dutch peace movement to the 1979 and 1980 editions of the Hoover Institution's *Yearbook on International Communist Affairs*, which were quoted in a May 1982 Heritage Foundation policy brief *Moscow and the Peace Offensive* – see http://www.unz.com/print/author/BarlowJeffreyG/.

(455) A letter reprinted in the *Guardian* (3/10/80) from John Adler at the South African Embassy to Stewart-Smith states that funding from Pretoria was to be cut from the 1980 figure of R175,000 ($96,000) to R125,000 ($68,000) for 1981. On this period of FARI, see *State Research* no. 7 (https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP88-01314R000300010056-1.pdf); *New Statesman*, 15/2/80; *Guardian*, 7/6/78 and 6/5/80; *Lobster* 11 (Ramsay and Dorril), pg 40; Herman and O'Sullivan, pg 269, note 62; Coxsedge, Coldicutt and Harant, pg 124.

Despite the failure of the 1978 Freedom Blue Cross initiative, FARI continued working on a "grand strategy", producing the July 1979 report *The struggle for freedom: a British contribution towards the formulation of a grand strategy for the defence of the Free World - a memorandum presented to select Governments of the non-Communist nations*. This was followed by a July 1980 FARI conference held in Leeds Castle, Kent, whose proceedings were published by the FAPC under the title *Towards a grand strategy for global freedom*; speakers included Air Vice-Marshal Stewart Menaul, Vice-Admiral Sir Louis Le Bailly of the NAFF and ISC Councils, Frank Barnett of the NSIC and Ray Cline of CSIS. FARI addressed the same theme in 1981 and 1982 at the two Annual World Balance of Power Conferences held at Leeds Castle; the proceedings of the first, held on 30th July - 2nd August 1981, and the second, held on 21st - 25th July 1982, were published by FARI in 1982 as *Global collective security in the 1980s* (with a foreword by Joseph Luns) and *The rebirth of global strategic thought* respectively. Huyn's 1982 contribution *The Soviet "Peace" Offensive* was published by the Heritage Foundation in 1983. FARI also echoed transatlantic efforts to develop a grand strategy, reporting on a strategy workshop held by Cline's Moonie US Global Strategy Council in a 1982 FARI publication, *Problems of evolving a western global strategy*.

Whilst contributing to the anti-disarmament campaign, FARI also continued with its core message of South Africa's significance for Western mineral resources and the Cape oil route. In 1980, FARI published *Western Dependence on Southern Africa's Mining Industry* by Audrey Parry and *The Security of Gulf Oil* by Ian Greig, followed in 1981 by *The Cape of Good Hope and the free world* by E. F. Gueritz, *Towards a minerals strategy for Britain* by Audrey Parry, *The United States realises it cannot survive alone* by Allan C. Brownfeld and *Why South Africa Will Survive* "by our Southern African associate", and in 1982 *The vulnerability of the Cape route* by E. W. Anderson. Another FARI-linked event on the theme was a November 1980 conference by the Fondation Européenne pour l'Economie, "The war of resources: threat to the free world" with papers submitted by FARI's Air Vice-Marshal Stewart Menaul and Michael Ivens, the NSIC's Frank Barnett and the Cercle/6I's Hans Huyn – see https://web.archive.org/web/20070607033038/http://www.kcl.ac.uk/lhcma/cats/menaul/mn010.htm; http://www.kingscollections.org/catalogues/lhcma/collection/m/me50-001/. An article by Huyn, *L'Afrique du Sud, enjeu de la guerre des ressources* [South Africa, stake in the war for resources], was published by the magazine *Politique Internationale*, No. 12, Summer 1981. The same year, the core NAFF and Shield member John Gouriet "published a novel, *Checkmate, Mr. President!* emphasising the West's lack of strategic minerals"; on Gouriet, see footnote 215.

(456) On the CPD, see *Peddlers of crisis - the CPD and the Politics of Containment*, Jerry W. Sanders, Pluto (UK)/South End Press (USA), 1983, and *State Research* no. 16 (February-March 1980).

(457) Crozier, pg 244-245. Casey addressed a previously unknown Cercle meeting held in Washington on 4th December 1981 – see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP88G01117R001004030001-2.pdf; https://tueriesdubrabant.1fr1.net/t1939p375-le-cercle-pinay.

(458) The account of the creation of Romerstein's Office is taken from http://www.faqs.org/espionage/De-Eb/Disinformation.html which thanks Romerstein for his collaboration in writing the piece.

(459) On the USIA/BAC/IEDSS conference, see *World in Action*, 24/10/83, reported in *Lobster* 4 (1984), pg 16; *New Statesman*, 20/5/83, reported in Stephen Dorril's *American Friends: the Anti-CND Groups* in *Lobster* 3 (1984), pgs 16-21, from which this quote is taken.

Ernest Lefever had been a longstanding associate of the USIA and author in 1957 of the book *Ethics and United States Foreign Policy* (The World Publishing Company, Cleveland, Ohio). In 1974, he wrote a critique of CBS television coverage for the Institute for American Strategy - see footnote 58 and the NSIC annex below. In 1975, he was a sponsor of the ISC's planned Washington offshoot, WISC – see footnote 200. In 1976, Lefever created the Ethics and Public Policy Center of Georgetown University, of which he was the President – see https://eppc.org/about/; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ethics_and_Public_Policy_Center. In 1977, he spoke alongside Crozier, Cline, Allen, Helms, Costick and Colby at an anti-détente conference coordinated by the US WACL chapter, the American Council for World Freedom – see http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1977/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1977-09.pdf. Eschel Rhoodie of the South African Department of Information states (pgs 271-273) that "Dr Ernest Lefever [was] a well placed contact of the FAA [South African front group, the Foreign Affairs Association] in Republican circles in Washington", attending three FAA conferences in Swaziland, Cape Town and Washington, and organising the speakers for the latter event. In 1978 and 1980, Lefever contributed several articles to the Heritage Foundation magazine, *Policy Review* – see http://www.unz.com/print/author/LefeverErnestW/. In November 1980, Lefever attended a Philadelphia Society meeting whose keynote speaker was Arnaud de Borchgrave; other participants mentioned in this book included William

Schneider, Frank Shakespeare, Richard Pipes and M. Stanton Evans – see https://phillysoc.org/tps_meetings/u-s-foreign-policy-and-national-security/. In 1984-87, Lefever was a Philadelphia Society trustee – see https://phillysoc.org/about/past-trustees/.

In 1981, President Reagan attempted to appoint Lefever as Assistant Secretary of State for Human Rights and Humanitarian Affairs in the Department of State – see http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1981/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1981-11.pdf and http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1981/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1981-21.pdf. However, Lefever had to withdraw after a crushing rejection of his appointment by the Senate Foreign Affairs Committee – see http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1981/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1981-24.pdf. He nonetheless served as an occasional consultant on counter-terrorism to Secretary of State Alexander Haig in 1981-82, and in 1982 edited the anti-disarmament anthology *The Apocalyptic premise: nuclear arms debated – thirty-one essays by statesmen, scholars, religious leaders and journalists*, published by the the Ethics and Public Policy Center, which included an article from Vladimir Bukovsky.

The religious aspect of Lefever's 1983 conference was of particular importance in Britain due to the longstanding Christian support for CND from the late 1950s on; the CND general secretary in 1980-85 and chair from 1987 to 1990 was the former Roman Catholic priest Monsignor Bruce Kent who had joined Christian CND in 1960. Lefever had previously attacked the activism of the World Council of Churches in a 1979 publication (see footnote 352), and CND's Bruce Kent had been alluded to by Bukovsky in his 1982 booklet *The Peace Movement and the Soviet Union*: "There are also the inevitable Catholic priests with a "mission" and other religious people who believe that God has chosen them to make peace on earth right now. But there is also not the slightest doubt that this motley crowd is manipulated by a handful of scoundrels instructed directly from Moscow" – see https://www.commentarymagazine.com/article/the-peace-movement-the-soviet-union/. In 1987, Lefever provided the preface for the Ethics and Public Policy Center anthology *Soviet Hypocrisy & Western Gullibility* which included a contribution by Bukovsky; in 1989, he edited another Ethics and Public Policy Center book attacking perestroika, *Perestroika: how new is Gorbachev's new thinking? The challenge by Mikhail Gorbachev: Responses by Zbigniew Brzezinski [and others]*, the others including Bukovsky, Kissinger and Thatcher - see http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf3/1989/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1989-20.pdf. Lefever died in 2009 – see https://www.nytimes.com/2009/08/05/us/politics/05lefever.html.

(460) *New Statesman*, 29/5/87; *Guardian*, 26/6/87.

(461) Crozier, pgs 184-185. Allen was instrumental in securing initial CIA funding for the 6I – see Crozier, pgs 244-245. On Allen's attendance at the Cercle, see the Postscript.

(462) Herman and O'Sullivan, pg 81. On the Heritage Foundation's UK groups, see *Guardian*, 30/4/83, 8/10/83, 26/11/85, 26/6/87 and *New Statesman*, 29/5/87. On IEDSS, see *City Limits*, 14/8/86; *Lobster* 13, pg 18; Herman and O'Sullivan, pgs 80-81; IEDSS 1991 Publications List; the excellent pieces by *Lobster* contributor Dr. William Clark at https://pinkindustry.wordpress.com/the-institute-for-european-defence-and-strategic-studies/ and https://pinkindustry.wordpress.com/the-institute-for-european-defence-and-strategic-studies/european-defence/; footnotes 397 and 459. The IEDSS later promoted the disinformation theme that the Soviet

special forces Spetsnaz used women peace-campers at Greenham Common as cover to reconnoitre the Cruise missile base - see this author and Robin Ramsay's piece "Truth Twisting: notes on disinformation" in *Lobster* 19 (May 1990), pgs 20-22.

(463) Crozier, pg 189. On Whitney who died in 2012, see https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/politics-obituaries/9478296/Sir-Ray-Whitney.html.

(464) Crozier, pgs 243-246. CPS posters were paid for by the Freedom Association - see Crozier, pg 250; footnotes 211 and 471. Norris McWhirter died in 2004 – see footnote 83.

(465) On Prentice and Lewis, see https://www.theguardian.com/news/2001/jan/22/guardianobituaries.obituaries and http://www.julianlewis.net/selected-newscoverage/3262:newham-fight-takes-new-turn-2. Prentice went on to join the Advisory Council of the IEDSS which was a close partner of Lewis's CPS in the anti-CND campaign. To watch Prime Minister Tony Blair mock Lewis for having started by infiltrating the Labour Party, see https://www.c-span.org/video/?112349-1/british-american-political-systems from 16:00 on.

(466) *Lymington Times*, 23/09/2000, http://www.julianlewis.net/old/cuttings_detail.php@id=44. From 1990 to 1996, Lewis was a Deputy Director of the Research Department at Conservative Central Office (CCO). In May 1997, he was elected to Parliament and still serves as MP today; he has been described by the *Daily Telegraph* as "one of the most vigorous right-wingers in the Commons" and by the *Guardian* as the Conservative Party's "front bench terrier". To watch a 1998 interview with the newly elected Lewis, see https://www.c-span.org/video/?112349-1/british-american-political-systems, particularly from 03:00 on when Lewis states, without mentioning the 6I or his role in it, that his earlier political career had consisted of "undermining the movements for nuclear disarmament at the height of the Cold War, in democratising labour union elections and ensuring that political subjects were covered impartially on the broadcast media and in school classrooms, that kind of campaigning".

From November 2002 until the formation of the first Cameron government in May 2010, Lewis served as Shadow Junior Defence Minister specialising in the Royal Navy, Royal Marines, the nuclear deterrent and other strategic issues. Lewis's colleague from 2002 to 2010 as Shadow Junior Defence Minister, this time with responsibility for defence procurement and the Royal Air Force, was another old Crozier friend – SIF's Gerald Howarth who represented Aldershot, a major Army base, as MP from 1997 to 2017. Howarth served as Parliamentary Under-Secretary of State for Defence (Minister for International Security Strategy) in the Cameron government of 2010-2012, following which he received a knighthood – see https://www.gov.uk/government/news/knighthood-conferred-upon-gerald-howarth-mp. To watch Lewis and Howarth speak in the UK Parliament, see https://www.c-span.org/person/?julianlewis and https://www.c-span.org/person/?geraldhowarth. Lewis has twice won the Trench Gascoigne prize awarded by the Royal United Services Institute for Defence and Security Studies for his essays *Nuclear Disarmament versus Peace in the 21st Century* (2005) and *Double-I, Double-N: A Framework for Counter-Insurgency* (2007). In 2008, Lewis was the coordinator of an ultimately successful campaign by MPs to prevent disclosure of their second-home addresses by amending the Freedom of Information Act - "Dr. Lewis admitted that it would already be possible for someone to "target" a particular MP. However, he warned of a situation where "someone with a grudge" or a follower of al-Qa'eda "conveniently finds 646 addresses and sends 646 packages containing something explosive, horrible or, at the very least, abusive to 646 unprotected mail boxes"." – see https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/conservative/2254044/Julian-Lewis-attacks-Sunday-Telegraph-in-expenses-row.html; https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/4884218/MPs-to-vote-on-keeping-their-addresses-secret.html; https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1158398/MPs-bid-hide-addresses-public-despite-fears-help-allowance-cheats.html; https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1158969/Commons-speaker-election-candidates-addresses-secret.html.

In September 2010, Lewis was appointed by Cameron as one of the nine cross-party members of the **Intelligence and Security Committee** chaired from 2010 to 2015 by Conservative former Foreign Minister Sir Malcolm Rifkind, on whom see footnote 514. A Conservative member of the Intelligence and Security Committee from 2006 to 2019 was Michael Ancram (Marquess of Lothian) who retired from Parliament in April 2010 and took over from Norman Lamont as Chairman of Le Cercle – see the Epilogue. The Intelligence and Security Committee, established in 1994, is a statutory committee rather than a parliamentary select committee; its members are nominated by the Prime Minister then merely appointed by Parliament, and the Intelligence and Security Committee reports directly to the Prime Minister, not to Parliament – see http://isc.independent.gov.uk/; https://www.publicwhip.org.uk/division.php?date=2008-07-17&number=266; http://www.legislation.gov.uk/ukpga/2013/18/pdfs/ukpga_20130018_en.pdf. To watch Lewis sitting with the Intelligence and Security Committee in October 2014, see https://www.c-span.org/video/?322280-1/meeting-british-joint-intelligence-security-committee. Nearly a year earlier, in November 2013, Lewis had intervened to support a campaign by Conservative MP Julian Smith urging government prosecution of the *Guardian* for publishing the revelations made by former CIA and NSA contractor Edward Snowden – see https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2013/oct/22/edward-snowden-guardian-should-be-prosecuted-tory-mp. In the wake of the Snowden revelations, the Intelligence and Security Committee has come in for considerable criticism about the inadequacy of its supervision of the security and intelligence services. The Intelligence and Security Committee finally produced its report on "privacy and security" in March 2015 – see https://www.theguardian.com/world/2015/mar/12/intelligence-security-committee-report-key-findings; https://www.theguardian.com/us-news/2015/mar/12/uk-surveillance-laws-need-total-overhaul-says-landmark-report-edward-snowden; http://isc.independent.gov.uk/news-archive/12march2015.

In December 2014, the Intelligence and Security Committee also started investigating the complicity of British security and intelligence services and former Foreign Secretary Jack Straw in the CIA's covert programme of 'extraordinary rendition' (kidnap and torture) - see http://isc.independent.gov.uk/news-archive/17december2014; https://www.intelligence.senate.gov/press/committee-releases-study-cias-detention-and-interrogation-program. Allegations that MI6 were directly involved in rendering Abdel Hakim Belhaj to the Gaddafi regime for torture were well documented by faxes sent by Sir Mark Allen, MI6 Director of Counter-Terrorism, to Moussa Koussa, Gaddafi's intelligence chief and later foreign minister, that were recovered from Libyan intelligence headquarters after Gaddafi's 2011 overthrow. In May 2018, Britain finally apologised to Belhaj for his rendition - see https://www.theguardian.com/world/2018/may/10/britain-apologises-for-appalling-treatment-of-abdel-hakim-belhaj; https://www.theguardian.com/world/2018/may/10/libyan-rendition-how-uks-role-in-kidnap-of-two-families-unravelled. In June 2018, two damning reports detailing extensive British involvement in renditions were published by the Intelligence and Security Committee under

Rifkind's successor, Dominic Grieve – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/jun/28/uks-role-in-rendition-and-torture-of-terrorism-suspects-key-findings; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/jun/28/uk-role-torture-kidnap-terror-suspects-after-911-revealed.

In February 2015, both Jack Straw and Sir Malcolm Rifkind were forced to step down following a cash-for-access sting by the media – see https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2015/feb/23/cash-for-access-allegations-jack-straw-malcolm-rifkind; https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2015/feb/24/the-isc-malcolm-rifkind-resignation-wont-give-this-watchdog-more-bite; http://isc.independent.gov.uk/news-archive/24february2015-1. Lewis resigned from the Intelligence and Security Committee in March 2015 "to focus on defence policy" – see http://www.publications.parliament.uk/pa/cm201415/cmhansrd/cm150316/debtext/150316-0001.htm; http://www.julianlewis.net/commons-speeches/4018:intelligence-and-security-committee; no announcement was made on the Intelligence and Security Committee's official website. The same month, Lewis was appointed to the hallowed circle of the Privy Council – see https://www.gov.uk/government/news/privy-council-appointments-march-2015; http://privycouncil.independent.gov.uk/wp-content/uploads/2015/03/Orders-approved-at-the-Privy-Council-30-March-2015.pdf. Following David Cameron's victory in the May 2015 elections, Lewis was elected Chairman of the parliamentary Defence Select Committee in June 2015, serving until January 2020 – see https://www.parliament.uk/business/committees/committees-a-z/commons-select/defence-committee/chair-nominations/; https://committees.parliament.uk/committee/24/defence-committee/membership/former/. In December 2015, Lewis was one of only seven Conservative MPs to defy Cameron's party whip and vote against authorisation of airstrikes without ground troops in Syria – see https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2015/dec/03/how-every-mp-voted-on-syria-airstrikes; https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3343639/It-s-dodgy-dossier-MP-attacks-Prime-Minister-s-claim-70-000-moderate-Syrian-troops-ready-join-fight-against-ISIS.html; https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/watch-julian-lewis-powerful-speech-6942338.

To turn to Edward Leigh, Lewis's former fellow 6I operative in the CPS, he still sits in Parliament alongside Lewis today and was knighted in June 2013 - see https://www.thegazette.co.uk/London/issue/60534/supplement/1/data.pdf.
From 1990 to 1993, he served as Parliamentary Under-Secretary of State for Industry and Consumer Affairs at the Department of Trade and Industry under Minister Michael Heseltine, but was sacked by Prime Minister John Major after opposing the Maastricht Treaty. From 2001 to 2010 (the maximum term), Leigh held the powerful post of Chairman of the Select Committee on Public Accounts; since 2011, he has been Chairman of the Public Accounts Commission, the body which monitors the National Audit Office. Since November 2010, he has also sat in the Parliamentary Assembly of the CoE. A devout Catholic, President of the Catholic Union of Great Britain and since 1994 a Knight of Honour and Devotion of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta, Leigh was sounded out for the post of British Ambassador to the Vatican in 2011, but preferred to remain at Westminster – see https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/religion/8246963/Criticism-as-David-Cameron-sends-trouble-shooter-to-the-Vatican.html.

Since July 2005, Leigh has been a founding co-Chairman of the Cornerstone Group, a traditionalist and Eurosceptic group within the Conservative Party whose slogan is "Faith, Flag and Family", the title of its manifesto written by Leigh; Sir Gerald Howarth is also a member – see http://www.conservativehome.com/

parliament/2012/05/what-is-the-cornerstone-group-mbarrettch-profiles-the-socially-conservative-tory-backbench-group.html; https://cornerstonegroup.wordpress.com/about/. It was to the Cornerstone Group that Conservative leadership candidate David Cameron gave his fateful September 2005 commitment to withdraw the Conservative Party from the EPP fraction in the European Parliament – see https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2009/may/29/david-cameron-european-parliament-epp-ed. "In addition to being the Chairman of the Cornerstone Group of MPs who meet in his office every week, he [Leigh] is Chairman of the All-Party Parliamentary Groups on France, Italy and the Holy See [...] until 2015, he was Chairman of the Conservative Backbench Committee on Foreign Affairs, Defence and International Relations" – see https://www.edwardleigh.org.uk/about-sir-edward-leigh. Leigh was another of the few Conservative MPs not to support British airstrikes in Syria, abstaining in the December 2015 parliamentary vote.

In the UK referendum on EU membership on 23rd June 2016, Leigh, Lewis and Howarth were amongst the 131 (of 330) Conservative MPs to support the winning Brexit campaign. Bearing in mind the Cercle's original goal of European integration, it is bitterly ironic that it was Norman Lamont, Cercle Chairman from 1997 to 2010, who had revived Tory Euroscepticism from 1994 on – see https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2016/jun/15/brexit-how-a-fringe-idea-took-hold-tory-party. In 2013, Julian Lewis had been one of the first to put pressure on Prime Minister Cameron to hold an in/out EU referendum – see https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2485818/Tory-Euro-rebels-early-EU-poll.html. Since then, along with Lord Lamont, Lewis has been a supporter of the Leave Means Leave pressure group; Howarth, who stood down from Parliament at the June 2017 general election, sits on its Political Advisory Board - see https://www.leavemeansleave.eu/who-we-are/. Lewis is also a member of the hardline Brexit group of Tory MPs, the European Research Group – see https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2018/feb/20/tory-mps-sign-letter-to-theresa-may-outlining-hard-brexit-goals. In an attempt to sway fellow ERG member Leigh's view, Prime Minister May appointed him to the Privy Council in her 2019 New Year's Honour List - see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/dec/28/pm-accused-brexit-deal-desperation-john-redwood-honour; http://privycouncil.independent.gov.uk/wp-content/uploads/2019/02/2019-02-13-List-of-Business-Part-1.pdf. The gambit worked; after tabling but then not moving an amendment during the debate, Leigh supported the government in the crucial 15th January 2019 parliamentary vote on May's Brexit withdrawal plan – see https://www.theguardian.com/politics/ng-interactive/2019/jan/15/how-did-your-mp-vote-on-mays-brexit-deal-meaningful-vote. Lewis however has consistently voted against May's Brexit plan as one of the "Spartan" Conservatives and has become a member of the ginger group StandUp4Brexit – see https://www.theguardian.com/politics/ng-interactive/2019/mar/29/how-did-your-mp-vote-on-the-withdrawal-agreement; https://standup4brexit.com/.

In an astonishing development in July 2020, the Conservative Party whip was withdrawn from Julian Lewis by Prime Minister Boris Johnson when Lewis, instead of Johnson's choice of Chris Grayling, was elected Chairman of the Intelligence and Security Committee – see https://committees.parliament.uk/committee/97/intelligence-and-security-committee-of-parliament/membership/; https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2020/jul/15/chris-grayling-fails-to-become-intelligence-and-security-chair; https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2020/jul/16/julian-lewis-attempt-to-impose-grayling-was-improper-request; https://order-order.com/2020/07/15/julian-lewis-loses-tory-whip/.

(467) See http://www.julianlewis.net/biography.

(468) On CAMACC, see Crozier, pgs 255-257. The German CDU/CSU also attempted to prevent councils declaring themselves nuclear-free zones – see *Spiegel* 8/1983 pgs 73-75 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14022489.html.

(469) *Daily Telegraph*, 20/11/86, at http://www.julianlewis.net/selected-news-cuttings/3270:pedigree-of-a-tv-watchdog-10.

(470) Crozier, pg 279.

(471) Crozier, pgs 243 and 278. The most recent support (2014) for 6I propaganda about CND has been given by current *Economist* Senior Editor (and one of the first commentators on the 2008 edition of this book) Edward Lucas, who writes in his *The Snowden Operation*: "A good account of the one-sided nature of the CND campaign, together with fully sourced details of its links with the left, including the Soviet front network, is set out in Paul Mercer's book *'Peace' of the Dead* (Policy Research Publications, 1986)" – see https://www.edwardlucas.com/snowden/, endnote 70.

Before the 1986 publication of *Peace of the Dead*, the 6I had already secured a high-profile platform for their output via Chapman Pincher's October 1985 book *The Secret Offensive*, a major vehicle for Crozier and the 6I. Three chapters of *The Secret Offensive* were devoted to the voluminous research conducted by Crozier and Douglass on the alleged KGB smear of Franz Josef Strauß, unused since the collapse of Sir James Goldsmith's lawsuit against the *Spiegel* in October 1984. Strauß, Goldsmith, and the 6I's Crozier and Huyn were given personal profiles at the end of Pincher's book, as were also Baroness Cox and Frolik. Pincher notes (pg 332, footnote 4) that amongst those prepared to give evidence for the Goldsmith case were Sejna, Frolik, Douglass, Lord Chalfont and Iain Elliot of the IEDSS.

A further five chapters of Pincher's book were devoted to what he calls "The Offensive Called 'Peace'"; Crozier's anthology *This War Called Peace* had been published the previous year. In one chapter devoted to Cruise and CND, Pincher states that "CND suits the [Soviet] Politburo's requirements so precisely that it could better be named the Campaign for Nuclear Disaster" and quotes Lewis and Chalfont as alleging that "nearly a quarter of the [CND] national council are members of the Communist Party and there are other committed left-wingers, including fellow-travellers who claim to be ex-Communists" (pgs 262-263). In a final chapter devoted to Crozier's favourite theme of a counter-offensive, after quoting Baroness Cox and Tugwell, Pincher states (pg 316): "However the counter-offensive is eventually mounted, as it will have to be, such a life-and-death encounter cannot sensibly be left to private organizations currently making some attempt at it, like Aims of Industry and the Coalition for Peace Through Security, nor to the philanthropy of a very few deeply concerned individuals like Sir James Goldsmith".

A popular fictionalised version of the counter-subversion lobby's anti-CND message was given in Frederick Forsyth's August 1984 novel *The Fourth Protocol* whose plot, as Forsyth admitted to the *Times*, had been suggested by MI5 and whose text had been vetted by MI6 – on *The Fourth Protocol*, see "Truth Twisting: notes on disinformation", a review of Richard Deacon's book by David Teacher and Robin Ramsay, in *Lobster* 19 (May 1990), pgs 20-22; https://www.theguardian.com/books/2016/sep/14/frederick-forsyth-to-stop-writing-thrillers; https://www.theguardian.com/books/2015/sep/01/frederick-forsyth-i-was-an-mi6-agent.

REDS UNDER THE BED?
OR
THE ENEMY AT OUR GATES
...AND WITHIN
BY
SIR FREDERIC BENNETT, M.P.
The Coalition for Peace
Through Security
Fourth Floor
27/31 Whitehall
London SW1A 2BX
Tel.: 01-839 3951
ICELAND
NORWAY
SWEDEN
FINLAND
UK
USSR
POLAND
FRANCE
CZECHOSLOVAKIA
AUSTRIA
HUNGARY
ROUMANIA
YUGOSLAVIA
BULGARIA
SPAIN
PORTUGAL
TURKEY
The Peace Movement and the Soviet Union
by Vladimir Bukovsky
CND
PEACE
BAN THE BOMB
PEACE
CND
THE SECRET OFFENSIVE
CHAPMAN PINCHER
The author of Their Trade is Treachery
The Soviet Challenge to Western Freedom
'PEACE' OF THE DEAD
Paul Mercer
Foreword by Lord Chalfont, OBE, MC, PC

6I propaganda publications

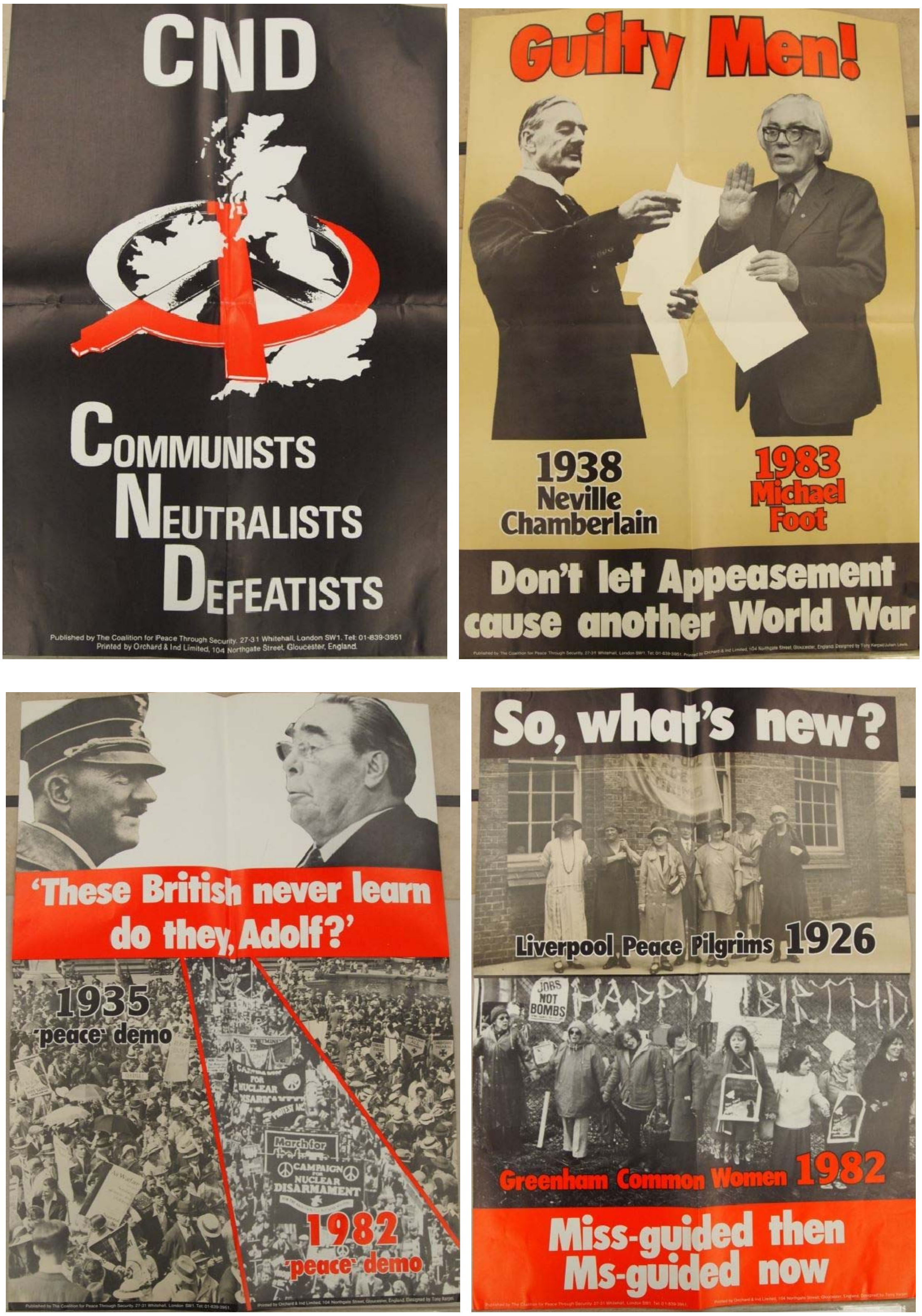
CND
COMMUNISTS
NEUTRALISTS
DEFEATISTS
Published by The Coalition for Peace Through Security. 27-31 Whitehall, London SW1. Tel: 01-839-3951
Printed by Orchard & Ind Limited, 104 Northgate Street, Gloucester, England.
Guilty Men!
1938 Neville Chamberlain
1983 Michael Foot
Don't let Appeasement cause another World War
'These British never learn do they, Adolf?'
1935 'peace' demo
1982 'peace' demo
So, what's new?
Liverpool Peace Pilgrims 1926
JOBS NOT BOMBS
Greenham Common Women 1982
Miss-guided then Ms-guided now

Anti-CND posters by the 6I's Coalition for Peace Through Security

As for Paul Mercer, after working very closely with Lewis to prepare *Peace of the Dead* in 1986, he continued infiltrating protest movements for another twenty years, notably for Global Open, a private security company run by Rod Leeming, a former senior Special Branch officer who had previously headed the Animal Rights National Index, a covert police unit specialised in infiltration of the animal rights movement. In 2007, Mercer was exposed as a covert infiltrator working for British Aerospace (whose consultant was David Hart) – see https://www.theguardian.com/world/2007/apr/19/bae.armstrade; https://www.theguardian.com/environment/2011/jan/12/mark-kennedy-policeman-corporate-spy; http://undercoverresearch.net/2015/02/09/377/.

A web article by activistsecurity.org detailed Mercer's activities:

"Nottingham Indymedia can reveal that a second spy linked to Global Open, Paul Mercer, was actively involved with environmental and animal rights campaigns in Nottingham, including Nottingham Against Incineration and Landfill (NAIL). Mercer was involved in groups in Nottingham in the period 2002-2007. … Mercer was publicly exposed for his role in spying on anti-arms trade campaigners, Campaign Against the Arms Trade (CAAT) in 2007. His contract for the operation was finalised through Global Open. Paul Symington Mercer graduated from the University of Nottingham in 1982 with a degree in Production Engineering. After leaving university, he worked for "free market think tank" the Adam Smith Institute, in Westminster. … He is also the author of at least seven books, including several specialist works on military aviation. Between 1987 and 1991 he served as a Conservative Borough Councillor in Charnwood, Leicestershire.

Mercer has a long-standing interest in protest movements. … At a meeting organised by think tank Policy Exchange in January he described himself as having spent 29 years trying to "combine an academic study of extra-parliamentary groups with actually going and seeing what happens on protests." He claimed to have "covered and having been on pretty well every major public order disturbance in London over that period," including the Poll Tax Riots and Mayday 2001.

In the 1990s, Mercer involved himself in the anti-roads movement including protests against the M11 in Claremont Road. In 1994, he published the *Directory of British Political Organisations* … Nowadays he presents himself as an expert on protest movements and advises companies on how to deal with protests. …

MERCER AND THE CAMPAIGN FOR NUCLEAR DISARMAMENT

In 1986, Mercer published *Peace Of The Dead – The Truth Behind the Nuclear Disarmers*. The book was described in an introduction by Lord Alun Chalfont as "an indispensable work of reference" for "the increasing number of people in this country who regard CND as at best a chronic nuisance and at worst an insidious danger." The vast tome running to 465 pages is an extended denunciation of CND and the wider "peace movement" with the scare quotes used throughout. Mercer argues at length that CND was a Communist front, attempting to disarm the UK, in the process furthering the foreign policy aims of the Soviet Union, supporting this with extensive quotations from publicity material produced by CND, various satellite groups and assorted Marxist sects. A series of appendices detail committee members, presidents and vice-presidents of CND and associated groups, with their various political affiliations.

In the preface, Mercer states that he has relied "as much as possible on primary sources, including confidential and internal CND documents." These documents, which consist primarily of official letters, reports and minutes, are, Mercer claims, "not normally available to outsiders." He states that they have been "obtained through careful research and from CND sources concerned about the developments within the Campaign for Nuclear Disarmament since its revival" (p 422). Presumably these are the same people who Mercer notes in the acknowledgements who "would rather not be named." One such internal document, which he considers sufficiently interesting to reproduced in full, is a letter from Nabil Ramlawi, the London representative of the Palestine Liberation Organisation (PLO) to CND promoting an upcoming rally in London complete with – what Mercer claims is – former-chair of CND Bruce "Kent's handwritten annotation."

At some point, it is clear that Mercer infiltrated CND, a fact stated openly when he was introduced at the Policy Exchange event. While *Peace Of The Dead* makes no explicit mention of infiltration as a research tool, Mercer does imply a first-hand knowledge of key-members of the organisation. The acknowledgements include, among those deserving of a "special mention", a nod to "Monsignor Bruce Kent (perhaps unwittingly)". Furthermore, the inside back cover of the book has a photograph of Kent apparently talking to Mercer, whose face has been obscured.

It is around this time that Mercer became friends with Conservative MP, Julian Lewis who is credited in the acknowledgements with having "done most in terms of proof-reading, copy-editing and acting as a source of inspiration." Lewis was the Research Director of the Coalition for Peace Through Security, who CND accuse of disrupting their events, sending a spy into their office and trying to link Bruce Kent with the IRA. Mark Loveday, James and Michele, all at the Coalition, also merit acknowledgements. Mercer's evident chummy relationship with the Coalition for Peace Through Security is, at least partly, explained by the fact that Policy Research Publications which published the book shared an office with the Coalition.

In 2007, Lewis (by then shadow defence minister) told the Guardian that he was still "in social contact with" Mercer. He admitted that he had "worked closely with Paul in the 1980s," and suggested that Mercer had done "a lot of good work exposing the far left". Lewis himself has a history of similar "good work". With his position in the Coalition for Peace Through Security he was a leading figure in an extensive government supported campaign to discredit CND. During the 1970s he had even infiltrated the Labour Party.

Among the other groups thanked in the acknowledgements is the Freedom Association a "non-partisan" right-wing libertarian group associated with the Conservative Party. During the 1980s they campaigned against the boycott of Apartheid South Africa and engaged in union breaking activities."

For the full article, see https://network23.org/infiltrators/2011/03/10/paul-mercer/.

Mercer's infiltration of CND and various environmental protest groups was paralleled by the operations run since 1968 by covert units of the Special Branch, Britain's political police charged with spying on domestic protest in cooperation with MI5. Both the Security Service and the Special Branch infiltrated moles into the National Union of Mineworkers, CND and many other protest movements in the 1980s. As has been the case with the covert blacklisting operations carried out since the late 1960s by the anti-union outfits mentioned in this book (see footnote 43), recent reporting in the *Guardian* has made it clear that the infiltration of protest movements by undercover police officers has not only continued unchecked over the last fifty years but has even expanded. The activities of whistleblower Peter Francis, Mark Kennedy (who later worked for Global Open) and several other police spies have been detailed by *Guardian* journalists Rob Evans and Paul Lewis in their excellent book *Undercover* (Faber and Faber/Guardian Books, London 2013) – see https://www.theguardian.com/environment/2011/jul/20/police-spy-on-climate-activists-unlawful; https://www.theguardian.com/uk/undercover-with-paul-lewis-and-rob-evans/gallery/2013/jun/24/undercover-police-spies-unmasked-in-pictures. Pictures of Paul Mercer are included in the activistsecurity.org article referenced above.

Besides the infiltration of political campaigns, undercover police officers also sought to spy on and discredit those contesting the result of police inquiries, notably the support group for the family of murdered teenager Stephen Lawrence – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2013/jun/23/stephen-lawrence-undercover-police-smears. The allegations of infiltration of the Lawrence support group were confirmed in 2014 by the independent inquiry ordered by Home Secretary Theresa May – see https://www.gov.uk/government/uploads/system/uploads/attachment_data/file/287031/stephen_lawrence_review_volume_1.pdf; https://www.

theguardian.com/uk-news/2014/mar/06/stephen-lawrence-police-corruption-ellison-report. In March 2014, May announced a public inquiry to investigate the extent and tactics of undercover police work over the last fifty years, established a year later under Justices Pitchford and Mitting – see footnote 453.

(472) Crozier, pg 245. The Stichting Vrijheid, Vrede en Verdediging based in Drunen contributed to *Vrede in vrijheid door evenwicht en onderhandeling*, Johan Coenraad Ramaer (Director of the International Relations Bureau of Philips), published by the Stichting Vredespolitiek (Den Haag) in 1983, and published *Kunnen Wij Dáár Vrede Mee Hebben? Feiten Over Het Sovjet-communisme*, Johan Coenraad Ramaer, with a foreword by A. A. M. (Dries) van Agt, Dutch Prime Minister from 1977 to 1982, first edition 1985, reprinted 1986. Ramaer later contributed the Dutch chapter to the 1988 book *Canada's allies speak* published by Tugwell's Mackenzie Institute for the Study of Terrorism, Revolution and Propaganda; Barnett contributed the chapter on the USA. Earlier contributions to the 6I's Dutch anti-pacifist campaign were made by the Stichtingen voor Vrijheid en Veiligheid "OSL"; Stichting Oud-Strijders Legioen [Foundations for Peace and Security; Veterans Legion] which published Dutch translations of Crozier's *The Price of Peace* in 1981 and FARI President Bennett's *Reds under the Bed, or the Enemy at the Gate – and Within* in 1982. The Stichting Vredespolitiek (SVP) had been founded in early 1982; its first meeting in May was attended by de Kerchove, one of the Administrators of the IEPS founded that April – see *Leeuwarder Courant* of 26/5/82 pg 11 at https://resolver.kb.nl/resolve?urn=ddd:010622017:mpeg21:pdf; https://nl.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pieter_de_Geus.

In October 1982, Ramaer also organised a meeting hosted by Jonet at the Cercle des Nations in Brussels to mount an advertisement campaign for a international "Urgent Appeal for Peace in Freedom"; the Appeal, coordinated between Ramaers and Lee Edwards (see the Postscript) was published in June 1983 as the "Appeal of 200" and signed, amongst others, by Bernard+, Close*+, de Decker*+, du Monceau de Bergendal+, Gol, Simonet and Vankerkhoven* for Belgium; Tugwell for Canada; Benoist+ and Garnier-Lançon* for France; Amery*#+, Chalfont*#+, Goldsmith, Hastings*# (see footnote 319), Ivens#, Josten#, Kimberley*, Sporborg#, Stewart-Smith#, Tennant*, Vander Elst*# (see footnote 211) and Watkins# for the UK; and Barnett, Bukovsky#+, Decter, Edwards*, Gayner* and Pfaltzgraff* for the US (* = known Cercle member, see above; # = NAFF, Shield or FARI member, see above; + = IEPS member, listed in footnote 482). For details of Ramaer, the Appeal and its signatories, see https://tueriesdubrabant.1fr1.net/t2344p105-e-i-s-european-institut-for-security-matters. The Appeal was published in the Netherlands as "Oproep tot vrede in vrijheid" by the SVP on 4th May 1983 – see *NRC Handelsblad* pg 8 at https://resolver.kb.nl/resolve?urn=KBNRC01:000027606:mpeg21:pdf, *Het Volkskrant* pg 8 at https://resolver.kb.nl/resolve?urn=ABCDDD:010878514:mpeg21:pdf and *Trouw* pg 20 at https://resolver.kb.nl/resolve?urn=ABCDDD:010820783:mpeg21:pdf.

The earliest component in the 6I's Dutch campaign was its Belgian outlet through LIL, which alleged that Dutch Christian peace groups were dupes of Moscow in the April 1980 issue (pgs 8-9) of the LIL bulletin *Damoclès* (which regularly quoted from the OSL bulletin *Sta Vast*): "Holland: religious opposition to the nuclear missiles infiltrated by the Communists. [...] The second movement the IKV (Inter-Church Peace Council) is ecumenical in nature and has adopted the structure of the Communists [...] Under the pressure of the IKV, pastors are multiplying appeals for pacifism. The propaganda is launched at all levels: factories, families, schools, etc [...] Luckily a salutary reaction has emerged, and the population is growing increasingly aware that many organisations are unwittingly infiltrated by Communist agitators who advocate unilateral disarmament with the ultimate aim of the subjugation of Western Europe by the USSR". Huyn's AESRI levelled the same accusation against Dutch and German Christian peace groups in 1982 (see footnote 491), and it was a constant theme of the MI5/6I attack against Monsignor Bruce Kent of CND in the UK – see below. On the Dutch government's hesitation to deploy Cruise, see https://www.wilsoncenter.org/publication/mass-psychotic-movement-washing-over-the-country-wave-natos-dual-track-decision. On contributions by other Philips executives to the Cercle complex, see footnotes 556 on T. Sleeswijk Visser and 582 on Frans Otten.

(473) *Guardian*, 26/6/87. Brenchley was a former signals intelligence officer and Ambassador to Norway from 1968 on and to Poland from 1972 on before serving as head of the Defence and Overseas Secretariat in the Cabinet Office from 1975 to 1978. After acting as Chairman of the ISC Council, he chaired the ISC successor, Paul Wilkinson's RISCT. For a biography, see Dorril (1989).

(474) *Guardian*, 26/6/87.

(475) The "Gardiner case": a certain Mr. Wood had infiltrated the Dutch peace campers under the name of Gardiner, acting on orders from the BVD; it was later confirmed that the man named by Wood as his case officer was indeed a member of the BVD. According to Wood, the operation was coordinated by an American Colonel Stevenson, based in Frankfurt, and Mr. Blackburn, a US Embassy official in the Hague. Wood alleged his mission was to use "all means" to encourage violent actions by the Dutch peace-campers; to this end, he participated in the theft of the ammunition with Belgian peace campaigners - see *Le Soir*, 4/9/91; footnote 363.

(476) The foundation date of 1980 is confirmed by a 1985 EIS press release in the Garnier-Lançon papers, Box 9, Folder 11. On the EIS, see *Die Contra Connection*, pgs 282-284, Roth and Ender, pgs 80-81; Van Bosbeke, pgs 17-18; https://tueriesdubrabant.1fr1.net/t2344p15-eis-european-institut-for-security-matters for the full list of founding members. Of the print sources, Roth and Ender, the earliest source, and Van Bosbeke both seem to be unaware of the 1981 Brussels conference, mentioned only in *Die Contra Connection*, which gives the fullest list of names.

(477) *Damoclès*, November 1982, pgs 4-5.

(478) See *Spiegel* 41/1975 pgs 27-30 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41443404.html; *Spiegel* 43/1975 pgs 23-25 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-41406409.html; declassified State Department cable 1975BONN20564 of 19th December 1975 - search for the cable reference at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/.

(479) Crozier, pgs 245-246.

(480) On RAPPEL's foundation, see *Damoclès*, March 1982, pg 5; April 1982, pg 8. Before CEPIC's 1982 dissolution by Gérard Deprez (who had beaten the CEPIC candidate Vankerkhoven in the elections for PSC President), CEPIC had also been active in the anti-pacifist campaign via a poster by de Bonvoisin, Chairman of the CEPIC European Affairs Committee - see http://web.archive.org/web/20150313033732/http://www.baronbenoitdebonvoisin.com/Francais/affiche.html.

Count Yves du Monceau de Bergendal was a wartime veteran in the Piron Brigade, the Belgian armed forces who escaped to Britain and later participated in the invasion of Normandy and the liberation of Belgium and Holland – see http://www.brigade-piron.be/noms_dem_en.html. Du Monceau was a PSC senator from 1971 to 1985, sitting on the Senate Defence Committee, before becoming a Member of Parliament until 1988. Like Nicolas de Kerchove d'Ousselghem, to whom he was related by marriage, du Monceau was a member of the National Bureau of CEPIC. Simultaneously with his parliamentary career, du Monceau served for thirty years from 1959 to 1989 as Mayor of the Walloon town of Ottignies, playing a central part in hosting the 1968 enforced exile of the French-speaking section of the Catholic University of Louvain to Ottignies-Louvain-la-Neuve, a crisis which provoked the collapse of the government led by Paul Vanden Boeynants and accelerated the half-century of political instability that has racked Belgium since the linguistic division of the country in September 1963. Du Monceau was also an Honorary Ambassador of the Sovereign Order of Malta. He was appointed Honorary Knight Commander of the British Empire (KBE) in 2000 and died in July 2013 – see https://www.lavenir.net/cnt/dmf20130729_00340813.

(481) A Reserve Officer in Belgium's Armoured Divisions (of which Close was a senior commander), Armand De Decker served as an advisor to Defence Minister Charles Poswick in 1980 and then as a PRL Member of Parliament from 1981 to 1995, sitting on the Foreign Affairs and Defence Committees throughout his tenure. He also acted as President of the Liberal Group in the Western European Union Assembly from 1982 to 1999, Vice-President and President of its Defence Commission, and President of the WEU Assembly in 2003-2004. Since 1995, he has served as a Senator for the PRL and its successor, the Mouvement Réformateur (MR). He was appointed an Honorary Minister of State in 1999. From 1999 to 2004, and from 2007 to 2010, he was President of the Belgian Senate; from 2010 to 2014, he was its second Vice-President. From 2006 until 2017, he served as Mayor of the Brussels borough of Uccle. From 2014 on, he sat as an MP in the regional Bruxelles-Capitale Parliament and was also a member of the Institut International de Géopolitique run by French Cercle member Marie-France Garaud. Implicated in the Kazakhgate scandal, he resigned as Mayor of Uccle in June 2017 and from the MR in May 2018 – see https://www.lesoir.be/159504/article/2018-05-29/armand-de-decker-puni-au-fond-de-la-classe.

(482) On the IEPS, see Van Bosbeke, pgs 16-17; back numbers of *Damoclès*; below, the Postscript and footnote 556; the IEPS membership list, c. 1985, currently online at https://www.scribd.com/document/279385588/IEPS-Liste-Des-Membres. As its availability may be only temporary, the list of members it gives is [with comments] as follows:

From *IEPS - La Protection Civile*, c. 1985, pgs 199-201:

Conseil d'Administration :
Président: Général (e.r.) [Retd] Robert CLOSE, Sénateur
Vice-présidents: Comte Yves du MONCEAU de BERGENDAL, Sénateur; Armand DE DECKER, Député
Secrétaire General : Jean DELHEZ

Administrateurs :
Professeur Henri BERNARD; Don Ottino CARACCIOLO di FORINO [attended February 1976 AESP dinner when a member of the Italian Permanent Delegation to NATO]; Nicolas de KERCHOVE d'OUSSELGHEM; Jacques GROOTHAERT,

Ambassadeur Honoraire; Jacques G. JONET, avocat; Colonel B.E.M. [member of the General Staff] Claude PAELINCK.

Membres effectifs :
Professeur Achille ALBONETTI (Italie); The Rt. Hon. Julian AMERY, MP (United Kingdom); Dr. Gerard BAUER, avocat, Dr H.C. de l'Université de Genève et de l'Université de Neuchâtel (Suisse); Emilio BELADIEZ, Marquis de la Conquista Real, Ambassadeur d'Espagne (Espagne); Jean-Marie BENOIST, Professeur Agrégé de Philosophie, Maître de Conférences au Collège de France (France); Vladimir BUKOVSKY, Lecturer of Psychology at Stanford University; Général (e.r.) Baron Hans BUTTLAR-ELBERBERG (Autriche); Professeur Franco CASADIO, Directeur de la Societa Italiana per l'Organizazzione Internazionale [the Italian UN Association; also longstanding Treasurer of the World Federation, WFUNA] (Italie); The Rt. Hon. The Lord CHALFONT, OBE, MC, PC (United Kingdom) [In 1987, the IEPS and Chalfont's IST co-published *ANC: cheval de troie de l'Union Soviétique?*, a French translation of the 1986 IST publication by Keith Campbell *ANC: A Soviet task force?* which "provides invaluable information on the links the ANC has with the Communist Party and the Soviet Union"; a German translation *ANC: Handlanger der Sowjetunion?* was published by the SOI in 1988 – see https://www.worldcat.org/search?qt=hotseries&q=se%3A%22Terrorism+in+South+Africa.%22. Also in 1987, Chalfont contributed alongside Ottino Caracciolo di Forino, Franco Casadio, Ray de Rose, Peter Sager and Ray Cline to the IEPS publication, *A Study in Crisis Management* – see https://www.worldcat.org/title/study-in-crisis-management/oclc/831847361]; Baron Pierre CLERDENT, Sénateur (Belgique); The Rt. Hon. Viscount CRANBOURNE [sic], MP (United Kingdom); Brian CROZIER, Journalist (United Kingdom); Willy DE CLERCQ, ancien Vice-Premier Ministre, Commissaire aux Communautés Européennes (Belgique); José DESMARETS, ancien Vice-Premier Ministre, Député (Belgique); Pierre EMMANUELLI, Secrétaire General de « Monde et Entreprises » (France); Marie-France GARAUD, Présidente de l'Institut International de Géopolitique (France); Alois GERLO, Recteur Honoraire de la Vrije Universiteit Brussel (Belgique); Jean GOL, Vice-Premier Ministre, Ministre de la Justice et des Réformes Institutionnelles, Ministre du Commerce Extérieur (Belgique); Lt. General Daniel O. GRAHAM (Retd), Director of the High Frontier Project (USA) [In 1984, the IEPS published *Star Wars strategy: implications and consequences for the Europeans of the Atlantic Alliance.*]; Pierre GREGOIRE, ancien Ministre des Affaires Etrangères du Grand Duché de Luxembourg, Président d'Honneur de la Chambre des Députés (Luxembourg) [Grégoire was a longstanding AESP member, figuring on both the 1977 and 1978 membership lists (included in the documentary annex to this full sixth edition of *Rogue Agents*); in September 1987, he was the founding President of a Luxembourg Chapter of the Ligue Internationale de la Liberté - see https://www.scribd.com/document/131186290/WACL-Lux-Statuts-du-Chapitre-Luxembourgeois-de-la-Ligue-Internationale-pour-la-Liberte]; Niels HAAGERUP, Director of the Danish Institute for International Studies (Denmark); Général Alexander M. HAIG Jr (Retd), Former Secretary of State and Supreme Allied Commander Europe (U.S.A.); Paul HATRY, Ministre de la Région Bruxelloise (Belgique); Fernand HERMAN, ancien Ministre, Député au Parlement Européen (Belgique); A. HEYNDRICKX, Professeur de Toxicologie, Rijksuniversiteit, Gent (Belgique); Hans Graf HUYN, Member of the Bundestag, Chairman of the Foreign Affairs Committee (Federal Republic of Germany); Professeur Enrico JACCHIA, Directeur du Centre d'Etudes Stratégiques de l'Université Libre de Rome (Italie); Peter McCARTHY, Director of the Center for Constructive Alternatives, Hillsdale College, Michigan (USA); Louis MICHEL, Président du PRL, Député (Belgique); The Rt. Hon. Tom NORMANTON, TD, MP, MEP (United Kingdom) [a FARI Board member in 1978]; Louis OLIVIER, Ministre des Travaux Publics (Belgique);

Brigadier General R. C. RICHARDSON (Retd), High Frontier Project (USA); Maurice SCHUMANN, ancien Ministre, Sénateur (France); S. E. Giovanni SPADOLINI, Ministre de la Défense (Italie); Comte François TRICORNOT de ROSE, Ambassadeur de France; Lt. Général Dr. Franz J. S. UHLE-WETTER, Commandant NATO Defense College, Rome (Federal Republic of Germany); Professeur Dr. Paolo UNGARI, Conseiller Juridique du Ministre de la Défense (Italie); A. VLERICK, ancien Ministre des Finances (Belgique); Major Sir Patrick WALL, MC, VRD, MP, Chairman of the North Atlantic Assembly [1983-85, leader of British delegation 1979-1987, Monday Club since 1963] (United Kingdom).

Conseil général executif:
Francis COCHEZ; Martine de BASSOMPIERRE [Jonet's wife and founding member of the AESP who ran the IEPS secretariat in the 1990s]; Marie-Thérèse de CUEVAS; Thibaut de KERCHOVE d'OUSSELGHEM [Nicolas' nephew, the President of the Brussels section of the Association Atlantique Belge whose Members of Honour included Close, Desmarets and Luns; the Vice-President of the Belgian section was Preumont – see http://users.skynet.be/aabbav.ata/frame_frans.htm; http://users.skynet.be/aabbav.ata/voorbijeactiviteiten.htm]; Genevieve de SPOT; Vincent DUDANT; Alexandre HALOT; General (e.r.) Federico ROMANO; Ernest TOTTOSY; Ruth WESTPFAHL.

(483) On Bernard and CEDI, see Van Bosbeke pg 15. Bernard was one of the most prominent members of the Piron Brigade, later serving as the President of the "Action Committee of the Belgian Forces of Great Britain 1940-45" and being awarded the distinction of Commander of the British Empire (CBE) – see http://www.brigade-piron.be/noms_b_en.html. Following the German occupation of Belgium, Bernard was one of three co-founders of the "Luc" stay-behind sabotage and intelligence network. After betrayal of the network in late 1941, Bernard fled to Britain where he took charge of armed resistance in Belgium within the exiled Belgian Defence Ministry, liaising closely with the SOE, following SOE training himself and preparing Belgian and British liaison troops for the invasion of Belgium. In 1946, he was appointed Lecturer at the Belgian Royal Military College where he remained until his retirement. In March 1985, Bernard joined fellow IEPS members Chalfont, Close, Crozier and Huyn, MAUE Vice-President Beyer de Ryke and FARI members Churchill and Stewart-Smith as signatories of a Resistance International appeal widely published in the international press just before Reagan imposed a trade embargo on Nicaragua - Resistance International had previously been warmly recommended to Belgian members of LIL in the February 1984 and October 1984 issues of *Damoclès*. As Belgium's most eminent military historian and author of several authoritative works on the Belgian Resistance, Bernard was awarded a baronetcy in 1986 shortly before his death in February 1987. His obituary was published in the LIL internal bulletin *Damoclès* (February 1987, pg 13; March 1987, pgs 1-6).

(484) Jean Gol served as President of the PRL party from 1979 until his appointment in December 1981 as Deputy Prime Minister and Justice Minister in the Martens/Gol governments that held power until December 1987. He again served as PRL President from March 1992 on. Gol was elected to the European Parliament in June 1994 and the Belgian Senate in 1995; he died in September 1995.

(485) For a list of IEPS members, see footnote 482. On Viscount Cranborne, see the Postscript; footnote 560. As for Richardson, following the creation of NATO in 1949, the then Colonel Richardson became the first Air Force planner on the NATO Standing Group and was primarily concerned with the negotiation of an agreement for German rearmament and for the establishment of the Supreme Headquarters

Allied Powers in Europe (SHAPE) in France. In 1951, he was designated as the US Joint Chiefs of Staff representative and military observer to the European Defense Community Treaty Conference in Paris before serving within Air Operations at SHAPE until 1955, primarily as the USAF member of the Inter-Allied Planning Committee that developed the first plans and concept for an atomic defense of Europe; his French counterpart was Pierre Gallois – see footnote 449. Richardson returned to Paris to play a key part at Headquarters US European Command implementing the NATO air response during the Berlin Crisis which immediately followed the construction of the Berlin Wall in August 1961 – see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Berlin_Crisis_of_1961.

General Richardson then worked in new weapons development and procurement in the 1960s as a Deputy Chief of Staff for Science and Technology in the USAF Systems Command and subsequently was Deputy Commander of the Defense Atomic Support Field Command, Sandia Base, New Mexico where he was responsible for atomic weapon development, training activities and maintaining the nuclear weapons stockpile, retiring from the USAF in August 1967 – see his official USAF biography which makes no mention of his post-retirement activities at https://www.af.mil/About-Us/Biographies/Display/Article/105808/brigadier-general-robert-charlwood-richardson-iii/; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Robert_C._Richardson_III; https://www.c-span.org/person/?robertrichardson02; the special issue *Nazis, the Vatican and CIA* in *Covert Action Information Bulletin* no. 25 (Winter 1986) pgs 27-38 at https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP90-00845R000100170004-5.pdf.

After his retirement in 1967, Richardson soon joined the ASC, sitting on its National Strategy Committee in March 1968 – see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP88-01315R000100280001-6.pdf. Joseph C. Goulden in his book on 'rogue' CIA agent Edwin P. Wilson, *The Death Merchant* (Simon and Schuster, New York 1984) notes (pg 47): "When Richardson retired in 1967, he became a consultant in defense affairs; one of his positions, which he was to take in 1973, was a vice-presidency of Ed Wilson's Consultants International". Bellant (pgs 51 and 61) notes: "One of the operatives involved in the Wilson-Terpil arms trade is Brig. Gen. (retired) Robert C. Richardson III. He was a Vice-President of Consultants International from 1973-77, a front company used in the Libyan operations [...] Robert C. Richardson III, the retired Air Force general who worked in the Air Force's Politico-Military, covert operations branch [...] was also aiding the Wilson-Terpil operations to Libya, involving secret gunrunning and explosives transfers". Also see the book by Trento listed in footnote 416.

From 1977 on, Richardson became a key pillar in ASIF, Angleton's alliance of intelligence veterans fighting Congressional investigation of the CIA and FBI, also serving in the ASC's anti-Carter campaign of 1980 before teaming up with Graham in the pro-Star Wars group High Frontier - see http://highfrontier.org/oldarchive/Highfrontier/main/Contact/Meet%20the%20Staff.htm; http://users.erols.com/hifront/hf_biography_page.html; http://web.archive.org/web/20070311033905/http://www.danielgraham.net/content/Chapter14.htm. On Graham, also see footnote 199. Richardson died in January 2011 – see http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/content/article/2011/01/18/AR2011011804905.html.

The Chairman of the Board of High Frontier was **Henry F. (Hank) Cooper**, who served first as Reagan's Deputy Assistant Secretary of the Air Force, instituting the 1981 Strategic Modernization Program, then from 1983 to 1985 as Assistant Director of the Arms Control and Disarmament Agency responsible for space arms control policy. He then defended the Strategic Defense Initiative as Deputy United States Negotiator for Defense and Arms at the Geneva Defense and Space Talks in 1985 (when he was given the personal rank of Ambassador by Reagan) and finally as Chief US Negotiator at the Defense and Space Talks in 1987. During the Bush 41 administration, Cooper worked for Defense Secretary Dick Cheney helping to reverse the SDI funding cuts mandated by Congress before serving as Director of the Strategic Defense Initiative Organization (SDIO) from 1990 to 1993. See http://users.erols.com/hifront/hf_biography_page.html; https://www.presidency.ucsb.edu/node/259878; https://pswscience.org/meeting/sdi-missile-defense/; https://www.mda.mil/global/documents/pdf/cooper.pdf; https://www.mda.mil/about/cooper_award.html. For his later activities, see footnote 536. On Star Wars, see the chapter *The Phantom Menace - Frank Gaffney and the Star Wars Crusade* in Silverstein.

(486) Information taken from the contemporary account by Van Bosbeke, not however confirmed by the c. 1985 IEPS membership list referenced in footnote 482 which does not mention Reineke. Unlike the Belgians, Reineke continued membership of the EIS and was cited as a member of the Editorial Board of the EIS journal in the first quarter of 1984 – it would seem that Van Bosbeke confused the EIS and the IEPS. Reineke signed a 1994 Berlin Appeal as Chairman of the right-wing television viewers' lobby group AFF (Aktion Funk und Fernsehen – Action Radio and Television) – see footnote 356. Reineke also acted as founding President of the Heidelberg-based Gesellschaft für Europäische Außen- und Sicherheitspolitik [GEAS, European Foreign and Security Policy Association], which its website at https://web.archive.org/web/20050716030403/http://www.geas-eu.de/ defined as the German offshoot of the EIS, and which had close links with the German-Iraqi Society. A 2002 GEAS German-Iraqi conference in Heidelberg had to be cancelled following protests from Iraqi exiles; the GEAS organised a visit to Saddam Hussein's Iraq in 2003 – see *Spiegel* of 31/1/03 at https://www.spiegel.de/politik/ausland/bagdads-internationale-schutztruppe-schroetter-gutt-mann-gutt-a-233086.html and of 5/3/03 at https://www.spiegel.de/politik/ausland/iraks-ministerpraesident-asis-der-leisesprecher-des-diktators-a-238705.html; http://www.netzine.de/irak-bericht-aus-einem-belagerten-land-2003/. On Reineke's business consultancy, see http://www.reineke-heidelberg.de/Reineke.html.

(487) I am indebted to Hervé Beghinselen for access to the Kyril Drenikoff papers held at the Hoover Institution Archive (Accession Number 88009-35.01/04; see Box 62 for the 1983 WACL conference); some may be viewed at https://tueriesdubrabant.1fr1.net/t2734-kyril-drenikoff-papers.

Drenikoff was the longstanding head of the Brussels-based Bulgarian Liberation Movement, the Bulgarian representative within the ABN from 1962 on, and Bulgarian representative within WACL from 1970 until his death in Brussels in 1983; he had been a close associate of Jonet and Vankerkhoven since the early 1970s. For a biography of Drenikoff, see http://www.oac.cdlib.org/findaid/ark:/13030/kt6g5013m5/entire_text/. This 1983 WACL conference was not the first attended by de Kerchove; *Damoclès*, October 1981, pgs 2-3, reports that de Kerchove had attended the August 1981 XV WACL conference in Taipei along with Vankerkhoven, President of both the Belgian and European sections of WACL (LIL and the European Council for World Freedom). Schall and Aigner also attended, and the speech of another Belgian participant, Francis Dessart, is given in *Damoclès*, April 1982, pgs 1-5.

Whilst the October 1983 issue of *Damoclès* (currently online at https://www.scribd.com/doc/237853473/Damocles-Octobre-1983) described the conference to LIL members as a great success, it was in reality riven by the continuing controversy sparked by former British WACL leader Geoffrey Stewart-Smith. In two Press releases produced in July and October 1983 by his Foreign Affairs Circle, Stewart-Smith denounced the decade-long failure of WACL to pay for the cancelled 1973 WACL conference he had organised in London and called for an official boycott of the Luxembourg conference of the "totally corrupt World Anti-Communist League which is financed by the Kuomintang regime in Taiwan and the South Korean regime" run by "primitive gangster oriental anti-communists", noting that "the organisers of the conference managed to trick certain honourable people into attending, and they made noble and valuable speeches, but their reputation will inevitably be tarnished by their association with people who have no concept of how to behave in a civilised manner, who are totally corrupt and who have a proven record of lawlessness and injustice".

Although American representatives attending the 1983 WACL conference included Major-General John Singlaub and Lieutenant-General Daniel O. Graham, other Americans were conspicuous by their absence, notably two intended speakers: Lieutenant-General Vernon Walters, a former Deputy Director of Central Intelligence until 1976, senior 6I founding member in 1977 and Reagan's Ambassador at Large from 1981 on, and Claire Boothe Luce, the former US Ambassador to Italy from 1953 to 1956, who joined the ASC's National Strategy Committee in 1969, serving on the President's Foreign Intelligence Advisory Board under Nixon from 1973 to 1977 and again under Reagan from 1981 to 1983 when she received the Presidential Medal of Freedom. The WACL conference was also shunned by Reagan who pointedly failed to send the usual message of good wishes. In tune, the Luxembourg Prime Minister, Foreign Minister and Army Minister all refused to attend, and no protection by the Luxembourg gendarmerie was provided. For other activities the previous year by Generals Walker, Close, Singlaub, Graham and Magi-Braschi, see footnote 108.

After starting a government career in 1961, **Marie-France Garaud** served under Prime Minister Pompidou's Justice Minister, Jean Foyer, from 1962 to 1967 before working directly for Pompidou until July 1968. Following Pompidou's election as French President in June 1969, Garaud was appointed technical advisor to the General Secretariat of the French Presidency, serving until Pompidou's death in April 1974, a period when she was heavily influenced by his private advisor Georges Albertini. From 1974 to 1999, she worked at the French Court of Auditors. In December 1976, Garaud worked with Jacques Chirac and Charles Pasqua to found the Rassemblement pour la République (RPR) conservative party as a vehicle for the newly elected MP Chirac to challenge the then French President Valéry Giscard d'Estaing, under whom Chirac had served as Prime Minister from 1974 to 1976. Garaud and Chirac, Mayor of Paris since March 1977, both stood against Giscard in the first round of the 1981 Presidential elections, with Garaud scoring a mere 1.33%; Giscard was beaten in the second round by Socialist candidate François Mitterrand.

In July 1982, Garaud founded the **Institut International de Géopolitique** (IIG) whose 69 founding members included four thinktanks (FARI, the USCISC, the NSIC and the CSIS), as well as individual members such as Geoffrey Stewart-Smith, Julian Amery, Lord Chalfont, Brigadier-General Robert C. Richardson III, General Pierre Gallois, General Close and Giancarlo Valori - see the December 1984 issue of *Article 31*, pgs 6-7, online at https://www.scribd.com/document/241149424/A31-

N-3-12-84. In the mid-1980s, Garaud was a member of the Belgian 6I front group, the IEPS, alongside Close, Amery, Chalfont and Richardson – see footnote 482; for a Spanish Press report on cooperation in 1983 between Garaud, Malaud, Vankerkhoven and the IEPS, see footnote 489. At the time, IIG co-founder General Gallois was working closely with Crozier and the 6I - see footnote 449. On the IIG, also see footnotes 368 and 481. Garaud later sat in the European Parliament as part of Charles Pasqua's RPFIE list from 1999 to 2004 – see http://www.europarl.europa.eu/meps/en/4360/MARIE-FRANCOISE_GARAUD/history/5; https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/Marie-France_Garaud. The Institut International de Géopolitique is still chaired by Garaud today. In the 2017 French Presidential elections, Garaud gave her support to the Front National candidate, Marine Le Pen – see http://www.lefigaro.fr/elections/presidentielles/2017/04/27/35003-20170427ARTFIG00361-marie-france-garaud-marine-le-pen-a-le-sens-de-l-etat.php; https://www.valeursactuelles.com/politique/marie-france-garaud-apporte-son-soutien-marine-le-pen-82087; https://www.lexpress.fr/actualite/politique/elections/presidentielle-gaulliste-historique-marie-france-garaud-rallie-marine-le-pen_1903239.html; http://lelab.europe1.fr/marine-le-pen-remercie-la-gaulliste-marie-france-garaud-pour-son-soutien-inestimable-3314330.

(488) Kyril Drenikoff papers, Box 62, Folder 4.

(489) Philippe Malaud was a French politician and diplomat whose career had started at the French Embassies in Warsaw from 1949 to 1952 and in Cairo from 1952 to 1953. In 1958, he became an assistant to French Foreign Minister Maurice Couve de Murville, and then his chef de cabinet from 1961 to 1967; from 1967 to 1968, he was the directeur de cabinet for Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs André Bettencourt. Under Pompidou's Prime Minister Pierre Messmer, he served from 1972 to 1974 as Secretary of State and then Minister for Public Administration, before being appointed Honorary Minister Plenipotentiary in 1975, serving until 2007. On the parliamentary level, Malaud sat in the French National Assembly as an Independent from 1973 to 1981, and chaired Pinay's old party, the Centre National des Indépendants et Paysans (CNIP), from 1980 to 1987.

As for Malaud's connections to the Cercle complex, he worked with Habsburg within the HSS, CEDI and PEU in the mid-1970s to support election candidates in Spain and Portugal, and probably was invited to join the Cercle by Habsburg at this time. Examples of Malaud's cooperation with Habsburg included his attendance at the XXIII CEDI Congress in July 1974 alongside Habsburg, Huyn, Damman and Malaud's future Belgian partners Jonet and Vankerkhoven. Malaud then attended the inauguration of the HSS conference centre in Wildbad Kreuth in September 1975 alongside former Franco minister Silva Muñoz and Portuguese politician Amaro da Costa, immediately followed by the 1975 CEDI Congress organised by Sánchez Bella – see *ABC* (Madrid) of 20/9/75 pg 28; *La Vanguardia Española* of 26/9/75 pg 22 and of 27/9/75 pg 24. In 1976, he attended the National Assembly of Silva Muñoz's UDE alongside Habsburg and then the PEU Congress which also hosted Silva Muñoz – see footnote 250. Some time before 1982, Malaud founded the Comité Français contre le Neutralisme et pour la Paix which was mentioned in the LIL bulletin *Damoclès* in January 1982 (pg 10) and which campaigned in the European Parliament against the Russian occupation of Afghanistan – see *ABC* (Madrid) of 21/3/82 pg 36. A telling example of cooperation in 1983 between Vankerkhoven, the IEPS and the French 6I outlets run by Malaud and Marie-France Garaud is given in *La Vanguardia Española* of 23/10/83 pg 20. Elected to the European Parliament in 1984, Malaud served as an MEP until 1989 - see http://www.europarl.europa.eu/meps/en/1603/PHILIPPE_MALAUD/history/2. He also sat from September 1984 onwards as a member of the PEU International Council alongside Jonet, and attended both Cercle meetings held in 1984, the first in January in Stellenbosch, and the second in June in Bonn, the latter also being attended by Habsburg and Jonet. Malaud died in 2007.

As for the Bonner Friedensforum, Crozier recalls that it was "largely composed of students alerted to the dangers of unconditional pacifism. Our funds contributed to the cost of posters and banners displayed during demonstrations" - see Crozier, pg 246; footnote 523.

(490) On Western Goals Europe and AESRI, see *Spiegel* 44/1983 pgs 51-58 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14024265.html; *Die Contra Connection*, pgs 272-274; Roth and Ender, pg 48; https://militarist-monitor.org/western_goals_foundation/. The US-based Western Goals Foundation created in 1979 did not long survive the death in September 1983 of its founder, Democratic Congressman Larry McDonald, killed on Korean Airlines flight KAL 007 that was shot down by Soviet air defences after deviating from its course over Russia. The Korean airliner's flightpath over Soviet airspace was similar to those regularly used by US spy flights, including during the spring 1983 exercises by the US Pacific Fleet. Since 1981, the Reagan Administration had pursued a programme of repeated provocative incursions into Soviet airspace which led the Soviet leadership to believe that the US was preparing a nuclear first strike. This Soviet perception was further strengthened by the NATO Able Archer exercise, conducted in Western Europe in November 1983, when the Soviet Union went on high alert, readying its nuclear forces for a counter-strike – see the CIA publication *A Cold War Conundrum: The 1983 Soviet War Scare* at https://www.cia.gov/library/center-for-the-study-of-intelligence/csi-publications/books-and-monographs/a-cold-war-conundrum/source.htm; https://www.wilsoncenter.org/publication/east-german-spying-reveals-nato-war-plans; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2013/nov/02/nato-war-game-nuclear-disaster; https://nsarchive.gwu.edu/nukevault/ebb533-The-Able-Archer-War-Scare-Declassified-PFIAB-Report-Released/; https://nsarchive.wordpress.com/2014/10/27/first-page-of-paramount-able-archer-83-report-declassified-by-british-archive-remainder-of-the-detection-of-soviet-preparations-for-war-against-nato-withheld/; https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2015/dec/07/security-chiefs-block-release-report-1983-soviet-nuclear-scare. Cercle members Stilwell, Meyer and Menges were all closely connected to Able Archer 83 - see footnote 603.

(491) On Huyn, see *De Telegraaf* of 12/6/82 at https://resolver.kb.nl/resolve?urn=ddd:011205365:mpeg21:pdf and search for Huyn; *Spiegel* 31/1982 pgs 57-59 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14342860.html. On Bracht and Bielefeld, see Roth and Ender, pg 61; *Zeit* 3/1985 at https://www.zeit.de/1985/03/eingebildeter-rotschock; https://www.worldcat.org/title/bielefeld-auf-dem-weg-ins-rot-grune-abseits-zielfelder-u-agitationszentren-linksradikaler-aktion-ud-rot-grune-wende-mit-neuen-mehrheiten-e-dokumentation/oclc/74959080&referer=brief_results.

(492) See https://wikispooks.com/wiki/Consortium_for_the_Study_of_Intelligence and related pages; https://digital.libraries.psu.edu/digital/collection/transaction/id/128943; the NSIC Annex given below; https://www.worldcat.org/search?q=au%3ANational+Strategic+Information+Center%2C+Inc..+Consortium+for+the+Study+of+Intelligence.&qt=hot_author. The 1979 creation of the CSI by the NSIC was accompanied by a relaunch of propaganda activities by the NSIC's longstanding partner, the American Bar Association. The ABA Standing Committee for Education Against Communism, co-founded in 1962 by Barnett, Leibman and Mott with

considerable input from Bill Casey, was renamed the ABA Standing Committee on Law and National Security in 1979; its monthly bulletin *Intelligence Report* was then edited by Mott for a decade until May 1991 – see footnote 67. Several of the people involved in the CSI conferences also worked on the intelligence policy recommendations published by the Heritage Foundation in January 1981 under the title *Mandate for Leadership* - see above and footnote 431.

(493) On the Reagan Administration's links to right-wing defence strategy groups such as the Coalition for Peace through Strength, Committee on the Present Danger and Committee for the Free World, see the background paper *The Reagan Administration* in *State Research* no. 22, February-March 1981, pgs 78-90.

It should be noted that Reagan's foreign and security policy team was dominated by Catholic figures who included Secretary of State Alexander Haig, Reagan's first two National Security Advisors Richard Allen and William Clark, CIA chief Bill Casey, Ambassador at Large Lieutenant-General Vernon Walters, Heritage Foundation President since 1977 Edwin Feulner who was Chairman of the US Advisory Commission on Public Diplomacy from 1982 to 1991, William Wilson, Reagan's first Ambassador to the Holy See and personal contact to the Cercle, and **Frank Shakespeare**, from 1981 on Chairman of the Board for International Broadcasting which oversaw the operations of Radio Free Europe. Back in 1962, Shakespeare had been a founding Director of the NSIC with Casey, Barnett and Leibman before serving as Director of the United States Information Agency under Nixon from 1969 to 1973. From 1977 to 1980, Shakespeare was a trustee of the Philadelphia Society which had been founded by Feulner and others in 1964 – see https://phillysoc.org/about/past-trustees/; footnote 597. From 1979 on, Shakespeare sat on the Advisory Council of Feulner's IEDSS, and from 1982 to mid-1985 he was Chairman of the Board of Trustees of Feulner's Heritage Foundation. He later served as American Ambassador to Portugal in 1985-86 before replacing William Wilson as Reagan's Ambassador to the Vatican from 1987 to 1989 – see https://history.state.gov/departmenthistory/people/shakespeare-frank-j. On Catholic influence in the Reagan Administration, see *The Holy Alliance*, Carl Bernstein, *Time*, 24/2/92 at http://content.time.com/time/magazine/article/0,9171,159069,00.html, also at http://www.carlbernstein.com/magazine_holy_alliance.php.

(494) A Report on a September 1982 strategy workshop held by the US Global Strategy Council was published in London by FARI. On the 1982 NARWACL conference, see http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1982/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1982-19.pdf. Besides serving within the USCWF, Graham also held posts on honorary committees of the American Friends of the Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations – see Herman and O'Sullivan, pg 99.

(495) See http://www.publiceye.org/liberty/felt.html.

(496) To avoid confusion with the earlier British group SIF, Angleton's Security and Intelligence Fund is here given the acronym ASIF; the references by Cram to the acronym SIF are amended to ASIF. The quotation is taken from https://www.cia.gov/library/center-for-the-study-of-intelligence/csi-publications/csi-studies/studies/95unclass/Cram.html, a downloadable version being available under the title *Of Moles and Molehunters: A Review of Counterintelligence Literature, 1977-92* at https://www.cia.gov/library/center-for-the-study-of-intelligence/csi-publications/books-and-monographs/U-Oct%20%201993-%20Of%20Moles%20-%20Molehunters%20-%20A%20Review%20of%20Counterintelligence%20Literature-%201977-92%20-

v2.pdf. Cleveland Cram was a former deputy chief of the CIA London station responsible for his service's liaison with MI5 and MI6, whose 1965 internal criticisms of MI5 chief Sir Roger Hollis were leaked by Angleton. Cram was recalled from retirement to evaluate Angleton's record as head of CIA Counter-Intelligence; the eleven volumes of Cram's highly classified report "ripped Angleton's reputation to shreds" - see https://www.theguardian.com/news/1999/jan/20/guardianobituaries.haroldjackson; https://theintercept.com/2018/01/01/the-complex-legacy-of-cia-counterintelligence-chief-james-angleton/.

After his dismissal in December 1974, Angleton's influence within the CIA resumed after 1982 under Director Casey; Viar's autobiography records Richardson as telling Viar: "We have filed all the legal paper work to change the name and status of the corporation [ASIF] to the Security and Intelligence Foundation [SIFI], and it will all be approved in a few days. But Bill Casey – that's the new CIA Director – asked Angleton to come back, and help him get the place unfucked. So Jim is spending most of his time out at Langley, and he doesn't have time to run it" – see footnote 502. Both Casey and Angleton had served in the OSS in London during the war (see footnote 59); ironically, they died within a week of one another in 1987, Casey on 6th May and Angleton on 12th May. On Angleton and the ASC, see *Nazis, the Vatican and CIA* in *Covert Action Information Bulletin* no. 25 (Winter 1986) pgs 27-38 at https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP90-00845R000100170004-5.pdf; Bellant; https://www.cia.gov/library/center-for-the-study-of-intelligence/csi-publications/csi-studies/studies/vol53no4/pdf/JIH-Angleton-Robarge-2003.pdf.

(497) ASIF was registered as a domestic non-profit corporation (status later revoked) by Washington District of Columbia Department of Consumer and Regulatory Affairs at the unarchived page http://mblr.dc.gov/corp/lookup/status.asp?id=105279; https://www.bizapedia.com/dc/security-and-intelligence-fund-inc.html.

A prominent Angleton friend in ASIF was **Elbridge Durbrow**, from 1946 to 1948 former Deputy Chief of Mission in Moscow under US Ambassador Major-General Walter Bedell Smith, before becoming Eisenhower's Ambassador to South Vietnam in 1957 to 1961 (when he was replaced by incoming President Kennedy), and later serving as American delegate to the NATO Council in Paris from 1961 to 1965. Durbrow had longstanding links with the Institute for American Strategy and the American Security Council. Following its foundation in 1966, he served as the Director of the IAS Freedom Studies Center, its residential conference centre near Boston, on which see http://ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1966/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1966-37.pdf, pgs 1 and 3. From at least 1968 to 1975, Durbrow was listed as one of the Co-Chairmen of the ASC National Strategy Committee; he toured Vietnam in January 1974 as a member of a Congressional delegation privately sponsored by the ASC – search for the declassified State Department cable 1974STATE000867 of 3rd January 1974 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/. He also served as President of the ASC partner organisation, the American Foreign Policy Institute (see footnote 535). On Durbrow, see https://history.state.gov/departmenthistory/people/durbrow-elbridge; https://adst.org/OH%20TOCs/Durbrow,%20Elbridge.toc.pdf; http://openvault.wgbh.org/catalog/V_F9C12D400BCE42ADB73172B06BD449EC and http://openvault.wgbh.org/catalog/V_AD24C9A1884E493CB757EC04CC6505D8; https://www.nytimes.com/1997/05/23/world/elbridge-durbrow-us-diplomat-dies-at-93.html.

Two of Angleton's former intelligence colleagues were also instrumental in setting up ASIF. The first of these was **Sam J. Papich**, a senior FBI agent until

1970 who spent 18 years from 1952 on as the FBI's counter-intelligence coordinator with Angleton at the CIA. The relationship between Papich and Angleton was not only long-lived but also influential; Angleton's "elevation to chief of counter-intelligence [in 1954] was a coup for J. Edgar Hoover. The depth of Angleton's discussions with the FBI was astonishing; he was by far Hoover's best source on what was going on inside the CIA. "He has been very cooperative and, as you know, has volunteered considerable information which has been of assistance to us," Papich reported" - Tim Weiner, *Enemies: A history of the FBI*, Penguin, London 2012, pg 177. Angleton could also count on support for ASIF from his former CIA Chief of Operations **Newton S. Miler**, an OSS veteran who served in the CIA from 1947 until he was also forced into retirement in 1975, later working with the NSIC. ASIF published the quarterly journal *Situation Report*, edited by Angleton and Colonel Charles J. V. Murphy, the former Editor-in-Chief of *Fortune* magazine and authorised biographer of the Duke of Windsor. On ASIF, see Viar's autobiography referenced in footnote 502; the special issue *Nazis, the Vatican and CIA* in *Covert Action Information Bulletin* no. 25 (Winter 1986) pgs 27-38 at https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP90-00845R000100170004-5.pdf. For a 1980 ASIF appeal, see Appendix D of Huey P. Newton's doctoral thesis, *War Against The Panthers – A Study Of Repression In America*, online at https://archive.org/details/WarAgainstThePanthersAStudyOfRepressionInAmerica.

(498) From Cram – see footnote 496 above.

(499) SIFI was registered as a domestic non-profit corporation (status later revoked) by Washington District of Columbia Department of Consumer and Regulatory Affairs at the unarchived page http://mblr.dc.gov/corp/lookup/status.asp?id=139816; https://www.bizapedia.com/dc/security-and-intelligence-foundation-inc.html. On Wannall, see footnote 417; on Wannall and SIFI, see http://intellit.muskingum.edu/alpha_folder/W_folder/wannall.html; http://www.unz.com/print/JSocialPoliticalEconomicStudies-1988q3 which issue also features articles by Graham and Richardson – also see footnote 505.

(500) The first CFIS website from 2005 on (http://web.archive.org/web/20051123030722/http://www.centerforintelligencestudies.com/) listed the Board of Directors as being Charles S. Viar, Chairman; B/Gen. Robert C. Richardson III, USAF (Ret.); Joseph D. Douglass, Jr., PhD; Lloyd F. Mercer, MD; L. J. Barnum. Further Advisory Board members were William F. Andrews and L. David Kendrick. CFIS Senior Fellows were Joel-François Dumont; Dr. François [sic] Thom; Dr. Stanley F. Jorgensen; Grant L. Mugge; Dr. Scott Powell (see footnote 504); former CIA Strategic Analyst, aide to Senator Gordon Humphrey and Professional Staff Member of the Senate Foreign Relations Committee David S. Sullivan (who attended the 1979, 1980 and 1987 CSI conferences – see footnote 492); Steven L. Schneider. A CFIS Adjunct Scholar was Dr. Ada Bozeman, Professor of International Relations at Sarah Lawrence College and a founding member of the CSI in 1979, attending its 1979, 1980, 1981 and 1984 conferences – see footnote 492. After 2009, the new CFIS website (http://www.centerforintelligencestudies.org) ceased publishing names of its Fellows but confirmed Viar, Richardson, Douglass, Mercer and Barnum as CFIS Directors. Since the death of General Richardson in 2011 and the resignation of Joe Douglass due to ill health in 2012 and his death in May 2014, the Board has now been reduced to Viar, Mercer and Janet Ruegg Wynne.

(501) See https://www.wanttoknow.info/aboutus#viar. At the Heritage Foundation in 1980-81, Viar worked with Willa A. Johnson on putting together prospective appointments for the first Reagan administration; Johnson was later appointed

Associate Director of White House Personnel for National Security Affairs. See https://phillysoc.org/tps_meetings/the-reagan-administration-a-report-card/.

(502) For Viar's autobiography, see http://web.archive.org/web/20080306040116/http://www.centerforintelligencestudies.com/cfisspecialsection.html. For a 2002 CFIS Intelligence Brief by Viar on MKULTRA, see https://www.wanttoknow.info/pandorasboxcv.

(503) On McNamara, who died in 2007, see https://scrc.gmu.edu/finding_aids/mcnamara.html. On the SACB, see footnote 67. American Business Consultants, Inc. was founded in May 1947 by Alfred Kohlberg, founding Director of the John Birch Society and a prominent supporter of Chiang Kai-shek, together with a trio of former FBI agents; its newsletter *Counterattack* played an important part in the Hollywood witchhunt conducted by Senator McCarthy - see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Red_Channels; http://library.bloomu.edu/Archives/SC/RadicalNewsletters/Counterattack/counterattack.htm; http://dlib.nyu.edu/findingaids/html/tamwag/tam_148/; https://www.historyonthenet.com/authentichistory/1946-1960/4-cwhomefront/1-mccarthyism/Red_Channels/index.html; https://archive.org/details/reportonblack00coglrich; https://www.h-net.org/reviews/showrev.php?id=14685.

Interestingly, one longstanding subordinate of McNamara was Herb Romerstein who worked as a research analyst for *Counterattack* in the 1950s - see https://www.hoover.org/news/herbert-romerstein-collection-comes-hoover-archives. Romerstein then served from 1965 to 1971 as an Investigator for HUAC, whose Staff Director from 1962 until 1969 was McNamara. McNamara and Romerstein were both later advisors to the Nathan Hale Institute – see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP90-00806R000200720004-6.pdf.

(504) Scott Steven Powell, a 1981 intern at the National Journalism Center of the Education & Research Institute (see footnote 543), was later the author of the main book attacking the Institute for Policy Studies, *Covert Cadre: Inside the Institute for Policy Studies* (Green Hill Publishers, May 1988), which was featured by Ray Wannall in an article written for SIFI at http://www.unz.com/print/JSocialPoliticalEconomicStudies-1988q3-00279/; https://www.commentarymagazine.com/articles/covert-cadre-inside-the-institute-for-policy-studies-by-s-steven-powell/. In January 1984 and June 1988, Powell contributed articles to the Heritage Foundation's *Policy Review* – see http://www.unz.org/Author/PowellSSteven.

(505) Quote from Douglass's 1990 biography in *Red Cocaine*. On Douglass, the CPD and the ACDA, see https://militarist-monitor.org/committee_on_the_present_danger/; https://militarist-monitor.org/profile/committee_on_the_present_danger/; footnote 456. Douglass's superior, the ACDA Director appointed by Reagan in 1981, was Eugene V. Rostow, a fellow CPD member, Director of the NSIC and President of the Atlantic Treaty Association from 1973 to 1976. On Douglass's offer to CIA Director Casey, see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP83M00914R001200110020-9.pdf. Douglass was previously the author of the USAF study *The Soviet Theater Nuclear Offensive* (prepared for the Office of the Director of Defense Research and Engineering and the Defense Nuclear Agency, USAF/Government Printing Office, 1976, see https://babel.hathitrust.org/cgi/pt?id=uiug.30112040378660&view=1up&seq=1), *The Nuclear Warfighting Dimension of the Soviet Threat to Europe* (*Journal of Social, Political, and Economic Studies*, June 1978 – which later published Graham, Richardson and Wannall, see

footnote 499), *Soviet Strategy for Nuclear War* (with fellow CPD member and Reagan 1981 appointee as Deputy Assistant Secretary of the Army for Research and Development Amoretta M. Hoeber, foreword by Eugene V. Rostow, Hoover Institution Press, 1979), *Soviet Military Strategy in Europe* (IFPA, 1980), *Conventional War and Escalation: the Soviet View* (with Amoretta M. Hoeber, NSIC, 1981), and co-author with Neil C. Livingstone of *CBW: The Poor Man's Atomic Bomb* (IFPA, 1984); the duo later produced the 1987 book *America The Vulnerable: the Threat of Chemical/Biological Warfare*. In 1986, Douglass wrote the CIA study *Why The Soviets Violate Arms Control Treaties* (IFPA, 1988) – see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP90G01353R000800090006-3.pdf; https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP90M00004R000200080031-4.pdf. In 1989, alongside Barnett, Iklé, Stilwell and Jameson, he contributed to an NSIC study *Political warfare and psychological operations: rethinking the US approach* – see https://permanent.access.gpo.gov/lps53194/Political%20Warfare%20and%20PSYOPS%20-%20Jan%2089/pwpor.pdf. For Douglass's activities after 1990, see footnotes 507 and 543.

(506) *L'Express, Drogue: la Filière Soviétique*, 19-25/12/86; *ABC* (Madrid) of 21/12/86 pg 38 and 11/1/87 pgs 5 and 59-63. Douglass comments in *Red Cocaine*: "For a partial English translation, see *The Soviet Drug War Against the West*, *The Free Nation*, February 1987, pages 1-2 [...] This [*L'Express* report] was immediately followed by Rachel Ehrenfeld, *Narco-Terrorism: The Kremlin Connection*, Heritage Lectures No. 89 (Washington, D.C., Heritage Foundation, 1987), and Joseph D. Douglass, Jr. and Jan Sejna, *International Narcotics Trafficking: The Soviet Connection*, *Journal of Defence and Diplomacy*, December 1986". Ehrenfeld's lecture at the Heritage Foundation on 4th December 1986 was the opening strike in the campaign; it is available online at http://www.policyarchive.org/handle/10207/bitstreams/13371.pdf. She followed the lecture with the article *Narco-terrorism and the Cuban connection* in the *Strategic Review* (Summer 1988), republished that year by the Cuban American National Foundation, and later wrote *Narco-Terrorism* (Basic Books, 1990 and 1992). In 1990, Ehrenfeld also produced *Narco-Terrorism: The Soviet Connection* published in the *Journal of Defence and Diplomacy*, September 1990; Douglass added *Drug Trafficking and the Castros* published in *Global Affairs* (Winter 1990). The Cercle/6I's message was also circulated by the *McAlvany Intelligence Advisor* in June 1988 - see http://archive.fatima.org/crusader/cr27/cr27pg34.asp and http://archive.fatima.org/crusader/cr28/cr28pg20.asp.

(507) For *Red Cocaine*, see https://portalconservador.com/livros/Joseph-Douglass-Red-Cocaine-The-Drugging-of-America-and-the-West.pdf. The book's claims are summarised by its subtitle: *an exposé of long-term Russian and Chinese intelligence operations aimed at achieving the demoralisation and ultimate control of the West through drugs, as a dimension of the continuing Leninist world revolution*. Douglass's 1990 biography in *Red Cocaine* also states: "He currently directs The Redwood Institute, which was formed to address the internal problems America faces - such as illegal drugs, crime and impoverished education". To watch broadcasts of panel discussions with Douglass, see https://www.c-span.org/person/?josephdouglass. For an article by Douglass produced in 2000, see http://web.archive.org/web/20040415093140/http://www.thenewamerican.com/tna/2000/04-10-2000/vo16no08_drugwar.htm; for audio of a 2004 lecture by Douglass, see https://archive.org/details/PsychoactiveDrugsAndCovertPoliticalintelligenceOperations.JosephD. From 2002 to 2007, he served as editorial writer of *Financial Sense*; see https://web.archive.org/web/20081015105010/http://www.financialsense.com/editorials/douglass/main.html. In a 2005 interview (https://web.archive.org/web/

20140327012937/http://www.globalpolitician.com/default.asp?2622-terrorism), Douglass alleged that the Soviet Union had adopted drug trafficking, organised crime and terrorism as strategic intelligence operations in 1955-56, advancing the ludicrous claim that the Soviet Union had heavily manipulated radical Islam ("A major dimension of Soviet strategy was to infiltrate, turn, and use all religions. One of the easiest to penetrate was Islam because this religion is so similar to communism and its world view"). Needless to say, it was the radical Sunni hatred for the "godless atheists" of Communism that was exploited by the CIA to mount the post-1979 mujaheddin resistance to the Soviet invasion of Afghanistan. To hear Douglass claiming that the international drugs trade and the 9/11 terrorists were under Soviet influence, American MIA POWs in the Korean War were used as guinea pigs for Chinese biological weapons trials, scenarios for Soviet military invasion of the US etc, etc, listen to the amusing and instructive one-hour interview by Jeff Nyquist from 2008 at http://www.jrnyquist.com/media/Joe%20Douglass%20Interview.mp3; he also interviewed Herb Romerstein in 2009 - see http://www.jrnyquist.com/media/Romerstein%20Interview.mp3. Douglass died in May 2014 – see https://www.washingtonpost.com/local/obituaries/notable-deaths-in-the-washington-area/2014/06/11/e6392122-efea-11e3-9ebc-2ee6f81ed217_story.html; https://www.dignitymemorial.com/obituaries/pompano-beach-fl/joseph-douglass-5983806.

(508) Hollingsworth and Norton-Taylor, pg 132 - an excellent book. On Frolik, see footnote 170. For Elwell's MI5 career and later activities, see Dorril; Wright; Leigh; Norton-Taylor, pgs 19, 85, 88 - one of the best books of its day on the British security and intelligence services; *Guardian*, 2/10/89, 14/12/89 and 15/12/89; https://web.archive.org/web/20170303235659/http://www.1in12.com/publications/archive/spiesatworkcontents/spieschapter9.html; http://www.specialforcesroh.com/index.php?threads/elwell-charles-john-lister.33867/; Andrew, pgs 668-669; https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/religion/ 8584157/MI5-labelled-the-Archbishop-of-Canterbury-a-subversive-over-anti-Thatcher-campaigns.html; https://www.anorak.co.uk/284544/reviews/daily-telegraph-uses-canadian-students-work-to-attack-rowan-williams-and-help-david-cameron.html. Elwell, who died in 2008, was married to former MI5 and IRD officer Ann Glass (whom Wright and Leigh call Anne Last) - see Wright, pgs 188-189; Leigh, pgs 100 and 166; their obituaries at https://www.independent.co.uk/news/people/obituary-ann-elwell-1325833.html; https://www.theguardian.com/news/2008/jan/21/mainsection.richardnortontaylor; https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/1576192/Charles-Elwell.html, an obituary obviously ghostwritten by MI5 which bitingly states:

> "The skills that had made Elwell such a shrewd, single-minded investigator of Communist spies were not as useful in the counter-subversion field, where he was over-inclined to see subversion where none existed. This prevented him from winning the further promotion that his intelligence and abilities might have merited, and he retired frustrated in 1979. He then joined the Institute for the Study of Conflict, where he produced regular bulletins called "*Background Briefing on Subversion*" (later "*British Briefing*"). In 1983 he published *Tracts Beyond the Times - A Brief Guide to the Communist and Revolutionary Marxist Press*. The Service [MI5] took the view that he had overstated the danger posed by such groups, and he was disappointed that, when *British Briefing* was wound up in 1990, it declined to take over his files."

MI5 had strongly resented Crozier's attempt to invade their bureaucratic turf in first proposing the creation of an independent Counter-Subversion Executive in 1978 and then producing the *Background Briefing on Subversion*. Stung by Elwell's criticism of the Service and his immediate employment by Shield after his retirement, MI5 showed their anger by shunning the Crozier/Elwell team; in February 1985, Crozier complained directly to Thatcher about MI5 'cold-shouldering' Elwell and the 6I: "I pointed out that MI-5 refused all contact with a former colleague who was now working in my organisation. Indeed, they had carried non-cooperation and non-recognition to the absurd extent of declining even to receive our reports." – Crozier, pg 255. In opposing this private-sector threat to their powers, MI5 were however constrained by Thatcher's strong support for Crozier's Shield/6I and her command of the intelligence community, as Andrew's 2009 authorised history of MI5 disapprovingly notes (pgs 668-670):

"The strongest supporter within the Security Service of detailed monitoring of the CPGB and its fellow-travellers during the Callaghan era was Charles Elwell, F1/O from April 1974 until his retirement in May 1979 … Shortly before Elwell retired, he 'abandoned bureaucratic niceties' and fired off a minute to the DG and DDG [Director-General and Deputy Director-General of MI5] complaining that the Service was not paying enough attention to the threat of subversion … Elwell's views, however, were those of a small and dwindling minority [sic] within the Service … After the May 1979 elections, the main pressure for more energetic counter-subversion came not from within the Service but from the new Conservative Prime Minister … [MI5 DG Howard] Smith at his first meeting with the Prime Minister found, as he expected, 'that Mrs. Thatcher assumes a greater role and influence on the part of the Communist Party and Trotskyists in the trade union and industrial field than they did in fact enjoy' [...] Mrs. Thatcher demanded prompt action to deal with the 'wreckers' in British industry, and summoned a meeting of the DG [Director-General of MI5, Howard Smith], [MI6 head] 'C' (Sir Arthur 'Dickie' Franks) and Lord Rothschild (with whom she had discussed the problem), chaired by the cabinet secretary, Sir John Hunt, to come up with 'solutions'. The Prime Minister, Hunt told the meeting, wanted all the 'wreckers' to be identified – which would breach the Security Service charter (the Maxwell Fyfe Directive) of 1952".

Faced with the hardline position taken by Thatcher, MI5 could not hope for help from (Victor) Lord Rothschild, a wartime head of MI5's anti-sabotage unit who soon became a major promoter of Peter Wright: "Instead of discouraging Wright, Rothschild encouraged him. … In August 1980, without telling the Security Service, Rothschild sent Wright a return air ticket from Tasmania to London" (Andrew, pg 760); he then introduced Wright to Chapman Pincher to work on Pincher's March 1981 book *Their Trade is Treachery*. Nor could MI5 count on MI6 head Franks - as Langemann noted in November 1979, "CROZIER, ELLIOTT and FRANKS were recently invited to Chequers by Mrs. THATCHER for a working meeting. It must therefore be concluded that MI6 as well [as the CIA] is fully aware of, if not indeed one of the main sponsors of, the anonymous security organisation". The following year, Franks was happy to see MI6's domestic rival discomforted by the assertions of Soviet penetration trumpeted in *Their Trade is Treachery* – Franks had secretly received a copy of the manuscript and informed Pincher that he had no objection to it, a fact which, when later revealed in an Australian court, demolished the British government's legal case against publication of *Spycatcher*.

Under pressure to comply with Thatcher's demand for action on industrial subversion and without allies to offer resistance, in October 1979 MI5 reluctantly seconded a senior highflyer to run a covert Cabinet Office unit targeting the 'wreckers' (Andrew, pgs 671-673). Outflanked and outranked by the counter-subversion lobby, MI5 may therefore have decided to strike back and weaken the foe by mounting a boardroom coup to eject Crozier from the ISC – see footnote 380. The influence of the Shield/6I team of Crozier, Elliott and Elwell over senior Conservatives was not the only alleged subject of concern to MI5; its authorised history also claims (pg 638) considerable disquiet within the Service about the domestic activities of G. K. Young:

> "Wilson's conspiracy theories about the involvement of the British intelligence services in plots against him were powerfully reinforced on 9 March [1976, the same day that Thatcher approved Hastings'/Crozier's creation of Shield] when the maverick former Deputy Chief of SIS, George Young, gave a speech alleging that three of Wilson's ministers were crypto-Communists and that a prominent Conservative had been run by a KGB officer in London during the Heath government. On the 15th, the day before he announced his resignation, Wilson was briefed about Young's extreme right-wing activities ... There was, in reality, no plot by any Service officer, serving or retired, to conspire with George Young against Wilson. Indeed, F Branch were becoming increasingly worried about Young's clandestine organization of the extreme right-wing group UNISON".

This is clearly self-serving; there was, of course, no subsequent action taken by F Branch against Young or any of the counter-subversion lobby who were far too well connected to the Conservative leadership to challenge them – even if MI5 had wanted to. As for the claim that "there was, in reality, no plot by any Service officer, serving or retired, to conspire with George Young against Wilson", the language is disingenuous when properly parsed; whilst tacitly conceding that Young did indeed plot against Wilson, it does not state unambiguously that no MI5 officer conspired against Wilson – only that they did not conspire in conjunction with Young. Andrew's authorised history also fails to account for the failure of MI5 to remove Elwell as head of F1 counter-subversion before his retirement in May 1979. For the five critical years of "the very British coup" from 1974 to 1979, MI5 management accepted Elwell's targeting of democratic dissent and acted accordingly; only after his death did MI5 repudiate him as "over-inclined to see subversion where none existed": "an embarrassment to his former Service" indeed, as MI5 said of Young (Andrew, pg 633).

Most seriously, the authorised MI5 history completely sidesteps Wallace's detailed statements about the Clockwork Orange 2 operation to smear several leading British politicians including Wilson and Heath, an operation which Wallace testified was ordered by a serving MI5 officer – i.e. not Young. In the authorised MI5 history, Wallace is mentioned only in passing (with a footnote reference to Foot), and his allegations are baldly dismissed as "baseless" – a scarcely credible assertion in the light of the extensive evidence submitted by Wallace to Prime Minister Thatcher in November 1984, which was officially received and then rejected and returned three weeks later. The file detailed intelligence exploitation of child sex abuse at the Kincora Boys' Home in Belfast, used by MI5 to entrap prominent personages and politicians. Following the launch of the Northern Irish Hart inquiry into Kincora, a fresh search of Home Office files miraculously turned up Wallace's Kincora report in July 2015, but Home Secretary Theresa May refused to transfer the Kincora investigation to the more powerful nationwide inquiry on child sex abuse which itself ran into trouble – see https://www.theguardian.com/society/2016/aug/05/uk-child-abuse-inquiry-lost-three-chairs-timeline; https://www.theguardian.com/society/2016/sep/29/child-abuse-inquiry-receives-fresh-blow-as-junior-counsel-quits; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2016/nov/18/child-abuse-survivors-group-withdraws-from-contrived-uk-inquiry; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2016/dec/16/child-abuse-inquiry-to-cut-number-of-public-hearings; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2019/jun/20/archbishop-vincent-nicholls-chose-catholic-church-children-sexual-abuse-inquiry; https://www.iicsa.org.uk/. On the Hart inquiry which concluded in January 2017, see footnote 169. On a related matter, see https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2019/jul/22/how-nick-the-serial-child-abuse-accuser-became-the-accused; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2019/jul/26/carl-beech-vip-paedophile-ring-accuser-jailed-for-18-years.

(509) *Guardian*, 2/10/89, 14-15/12/89; Norton-Taylor, pg 19; *Lobster* 18, October 1989, pg 34. On Clockwork Orange 2 and Colin Wallace, see Foot, and *Lobster* 11 - 20.

(510) *Observer*, 9/12/90 and 16/12/90. Also see the television programmes *This Week* (26/4/90) and *World in Action* (10/12/90).

(511) Contributions varying between £5,000 to £10,000 were made by Boots, Unilever, Bass, BP, the Hanson Trust, Courage, GKN, Allied Lyons, ICI and United Newspapers, publishers of the *Daily Express* and *Sunday Express*. The Trust's secretary was John Arkell, a former Boots director; trustees included Lord McAlpine and Lord Boyd-Carpenter, former chairman of backbench Tory peers. Council members included Sir Austin Bide of Glaxo, Peter Calazet of BP, and Sir Derek Palmar of Bass and United Newspapers.

(512) On the IRD, Common Cause and IRIS, see Dorril and Ramsay (1990).

(513) See *Lobster* 19, pg 20; *Observer*, 2/10/88; footnote 504.

(514) Paul Foot, *Daily Mirror*, 14/12/90. In an article entitled "Thatcher aide starts agency to publish Soviet dissidents: Emigres in Britain fear David Hart's CIA links in news scheme may lead to Soviet news clampdown" in the *Guardian* of 17/12/88, David Rose noted that Hart "is setting up a news agency to publish information from Soviet dissidents with the help of a former top-level executive of the US Central Intelligence Agency [and] holds regular meetings at 10 Downing Street with Mr. Charles Powell, the Prime Minister's private secretary and advisor on foreign affairs, at which he has supplied information from Soviet sources. Hart was a friend of the late CIA director, Mr. William Casey, whom he introduced to the late *Times* editor [1982-85], Mr. Charles Douglas-Home. He has met Mr. Robert Gates, the present deputy director of the CIA. He is friend and employer to Mr. Herb E. Meyer, who was, until 1986, vice-chairman of the CIA National Intelligence Committee, the body which collates intelligence assessments for the US President on the basis of the entire range of inputs from CIA agents in the field. [...] Hart's principal contact for material for the proposed news service [...] is Mr. Vladimir Bukovsky". On Hart and Bukovsky, see below and https://pinkindustry.wordpress.com/the-institute-for-european-defence-and-strategic-studies/european-defence/. On Hart, Douglas-Home, Casey and Meyer, see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP87-00462R000100120027-4.pdf; https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP87-00462R000100150024-4.pdf; https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP88G01116R000700840026-5.pdf; https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP87-00462R000100130010-1.pdf; https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP87-00462R000100150017-2.pdf; https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP87-00462R000100160018-0.pdf.

Hart's CFB was closely associated with the Crozier/Elwell smearsheet *British Briefing*. Paul Staines, CFB foreign policy analyst and UK Secretary-General of the ISHR active in its pro-Contra campaigns, served as the editor of *British Briefing* – see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Paul_Staines; http://www.anorak.co.uk/284544/

news/daily-telegraph-uses-canadian-students-work-to-attack-rowan-williams-and-help-david-cameron.html. Staines later became famous as blogger 'Guido Fawkes' – see https://order-order.com/; https://www.theguardian.com/media/2013/feb/15/guido-fawkes-paul-staines-interview; https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2019/may/28/pro-boris-johnson-campaign-launched-by-guido-fawkes-blogger. To return to Hart, in 1993 he was appointed personal advisor to Malcolm Rifkind when the latter became Secretary of State for Defence after the 1992 elections; during his tenure, Rifkind ensured the British purchase of Tomahawk cruise missiles. Hart remained personal advisor to the Secretary of State for Defence when Michael Portillo succeeded Rifkind in 1995, serving until Labour's election victory in 1997. In the 2000s, Hart controversially worked as a lobbyist for British Aerospace Systems (BAE) and Boeing (see https://www.theguardian.com/world/2007/jun/11/bae); in 2007, former 6I operative Paul Mercer was exposed as an infiltrator of the Campaign Against the Arms Trade employed by BAE – see footnote 471. Hart died in January 2011 – see his obituary at https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/8241884/David-Hart.html, from which the CFB quotation was taken; https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2011/ jan/09/david-hart-obituary.

Rifkind, who served in 1983-86 as Minister of State at the Foreign Office responsible for relations with the Soviet Union, Eastern Europe and the European Community, notably helped Foreign Secretary Sir Geoffrey Howe persuade Thatcher to accept Gorbachev as a Soviet leader she could "do business with", a political shift strongly resisted by the 6I. From 2010 to 2015, Rifkind served as the Chairman of the much-criticised Intelligence and Security Committee alongside fellow Conservative MPs Julian Lewis, a new appointee, and Michael Ancram, a Committee member since 2006 who resigned from the House of Commons in 2010 and became Chairman of the Cercle – see the Epilogue; https://committees.parliament.uk/committee/97/intelligence-and-security-committee-of-parliament/membership/former/. In February 2015, Rifkind was forced to step down as an MP and resign as Intelligence and Security Committee Chairman after being caught in a cash-for-access sting by the media – see https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2015/feb/23/cash-for-access-allegations-jack-straw-malcolm-rifkind; https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2015/feb/24/sir-malcolm-rifkind-resigns-isc-chairman-step-down-mp; https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2015/feb/24/malcolm-rifkinds-40-year-political-career; http://isc.independent.gov.uk/news-archive/24february2015-1. On Lewis, see footnote 466.

(515) Herman and O'Sullivan, pg 107.

(516) Herman and O'Sullivan, pg 105. The Jonathan Institute (Mekhon Yonatan) was named after Lieutenant-Colonel Yonatan Netanyahu, commander of the Israeli Sayeret Matkal special forces unit and their only Israeli military fatality during the 1976 hostage rescue from Entebbe, Uganda, killed as he emerged first from the plane. The Jonathan Institute published a biography of Yonatan Netanyahu, *Yoni 1946-1976*, and the proceedings of the July 1979 conference, edited by his younger brother Binyamin Netanyahu, also a former member of Sayeret Matkal and since 2009 Prime Minister of Israel – see https://www.theguardian.com/world/2016/jun/25/entebbe-raid-40-years-on-israel-palestine-binyamin-netanyahu-jonathan-freedland. Following Wilkinson's attendance with the ISC team at the two Israeli conferences in 1979, he and Major-General Richard Clutterbuck of the ISC Council were amongst the speakers at a closed-door seminar on "The Defence of Democracy against Terrorism in Europe: Tasks and Problems", held at the Parliamentary Assembly of the CoE on 12-14 November 1980. At the time, Sandys, Bennett, Jäger and Sager were prominent members of the Parliamentary Assembly of the Council of Europe. Wilkinson died in

August 2011 – see https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/politics-obituaries/8698835/Professor-Paul-Wilkinson.html; https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2011/aug/18/paul-wilkinson-obituary, which does not however mention Wilkinson's links to Crozier, the ISC, the RFST or RISCT. The 1979 Jonathan Institute conference gave birth in 1981 to the Committee for the Free World, whose UK President was Lord Chalfont, a participant at the first Jonathan Institute conference and Conference Chairman at the second in 1984 – see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP86M00886R002600010074-5.pdf. On the CFW, see the background paper *The Reagan Administration* in *State Research* no. 22, February-March 1981, pgs 88-90; the pinkindustry document in the NSIC annex; https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP83M00914R002800040058-9.pdf.

(517) On Wilkinson and the RFST, see *Lobster* 16, pg 16 (list of Board Members), pgs 23-24 and insert; *Lobster* 17, pgs 17-18; Herman and O'Sullivan. On Colonel Ronnie Waring, Duke de Valderano, see footnote 282. Waring brought several members into the RFST - his son Dr M. H. Waring, Lieutenant-General Jose de Bettencourt Rodrigues (Caetano's Minister for the Army from 1968 to 1970, Waring's former colleague in the Angolan counter-insurgency campaign as Commander of the Eastern Military District in 1971-73, and last Governor-General of Portuguese Guinea in 1973-74), and Waring's main American backer, **Anthony Harrigan**, who died in 2010. Throughout the 1960s, Harrigan had been Managing Editor of the American Security Council's *Washington Report* – see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP88-01314R000300390004-7.pdf. From 1970 to 1990, he was the President of the United States Business and Industrial Council and its Educational Foundation; from 1976 to 1979, he was also a trustee of the Philadelphia Society (see below; footnote 597), whose meetings he frequently attended - see https://www.postandcourier.com/news/anthony-harrigan-dies-in-va-at/article_0b76f2a7-8b43-5bbf-882c-24d5caba6362.html; https://www.legacy.com/obituaries/charleston/obituary.aspx?n=anthony-harrigan&pid=143199047; https://phillysoc.org/?s=Harrigan; https://snaccooperative.org/ark:/99166/w6ff485d; https://www.worldcat.org/search?q=au%3AHarrigan%2C+Anthony+H.&qt=hot_author. For an article by Waring, see *Reading Eagle* of 13/12/79 at https://news.google.com/newspapers?nid=1955&dat=19791213&id=wZ4tAAAAIBAJ&pg=2779,1613802&hl= en.

One interesting RFST member was **Norman Reddaway** who in 1948 had been a co-founder of the IRD. In 1970, as Under-Secretary of State at the Foreign Office, Reddaway mounted a covert IRD campaign backing British membership of the EEC – see http://www.powerbase.info/index.php/Norman_Reddaway; *Sunday Telegraph* of 27/4/97 at http://www.cambridgeclarion.org/press_cuttings/mi6.eu_stel_27apr1997.html. The RFST membership also included "Senator 'Little John' John Tower, Sam Cummings, Paul Channon, Nathan Adams and the Archduke Otto von Habsburg" - see footnote 282.

(518) *Observer*, 7/12/86.

(519) See *The Terrorism Reader*, Walter Laqueur and Ariel Merari, Meridian NAL Penguin, New York, 1987 (Horchem's contribution was originally published in *Terrorism - an international journal*), and *Contemporary Research on Terrorism*, Paul Wilkinson and Alasdair Stewart, Aberdeen University Press, Aberdeen 1987.

(520) Gemballa, pg 130: the two books were *Krieg im Frieden - Theorien des Terrorismus* [War in Peacetime - Theories of Terrorism] and *Die verlorene Revolution* [The lost revolution]. Horchem was previously author of *Extremisten in einer*

selbstbewussten Demokratie [Extremists in a self-aware democracy], Herder, 1975 and *Zum Entwicklungsstand des Rechtsextremismus im demokratischen Rechtsstaat* [On the development of right-wing extremism in the democratic State of law], Funke, 1978. Both Horchem and Dr. J. Kurt Klein were frequent authors throughout the 1980s for the Zürich-based **Institut für Politologische Zeitfragen** [Institute for Contemporary Politological Issues] co-founded in 1970 by Robert Vögeli and Ernst Cincera which ran until 1992 – see https://www.worldcat.org/identities/lccn-nr92-10578 and https://www.worldcat.org/search?q=Hans+Josef+Horchem&qt=results_page. One of Klein's other books was published by SOI in 1987 – see https://www.worldcat.org/title/werte-im-wandel-die-ethik-im-spannungsfeld-der-freiheit/%20oclc/025583635.

(521) On all of the above groups, see Herman and O'Sullivan. On Tugwell and the CCS, see *Lobster* 16, July 1988, pgs 22-23; *Lobster* 17, November 1988, pg 17; Manz - a major piece on South African propaganda in Canada; Herman and O'Sullivan, pgs 115-116, 173-176; Foot, pgs 16, 18, 22; https://phillysoc.org/tps_meetings/does-canada-have-a-future/. On the Mackenzie Institute, see Crozier, pg 204; *Lobster* 16; footnote 529. The 1984 study entitled *Special Operations in US Strategy* compiled by the NSIC for the US National Defense University is available online at https://permanent.access.gpo.gov/lps53477/Spec%20Ops%20in%20US%20Strat%20-%20Oct%2088/soist.pdf.

(522) Crozier, pg 290. On the 1986-87 Cercle/6I campaign accusing the Soviet Union and Cuba of directing the world drugs trade, see above and footnote 506; on a campaign against the World Council of Churches, see footnote 352.

(523) The Bonner Friedensforum was also mentioned in a letter from Crozier to Huyn, dated 9th January 1989, which prepared for this Cercle Pinay meeting the next month: "My dear Hans, I hope that the Bonn Peace Forum still exists, or, if not, that something similar exists or can be built up. The idea is to use such an organisation to circulate particular slogans" – for the source, see footnote 525.

(524) Walters was appointed Ambassador to West Germany in April 1989, a post he filled until August 1991, ushering in German reunification on 3rd October 1990 – see https://history.state.gov/departmenthistory/people/walters-vernon-a. Walters died in 2002 – see https://www.theguardian.com/news/2002/feb/18/guardianobituaries.haroldjackson; https://www.nytimes.com/2002/02/14/us/vernon-walters-ex-envoy-and-deputy-cia-chief-85.html.

(525) Translated from the German given in Roth, pgs 31-33. Roth claimed to have been given the 1989 Cercle minutes and Crozier's letter quoted above by a British intelligence officer based in Bonn. Direct transmission of documents however seems unlikely, bearing in mind that some of Roth's names of participants at this Cercle meeting are garbled, no doubt due to hasty note-taking during talks with his source. Attendance lists for Cercle meetings in 1982-85 discussed in the Postscript make it clear that Roth's mention of "P. K. van Zyl, a former senior BOSS agent" was in fact South African-born Rhodesian politician Pieter Kenyon Van der Byl (on whom see footnote 624), and Roth's "Professor Theodor Bach" is almost certainly a reference to the former German diplomat, CDU MP and Cercle organising secretary Doktor Franz Josef Bach. It is also dubious as to whether Pinay, then 97, would have attended this meeting.

The Washington-based FPDG had previously held a dinner in honour of Habsburg in March 1973 (see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-

RDP80R01731R001900060023-5.pdf), invited Kissinger in October 1974 (search for partially declassified State Department cable P750005-1775 of 22nd October 1974 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/), was attended by CIA Deputy Director General Vernon Walters in March 1976 (see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP80R01731R002100020026-3.pdf), and had been addressed by the National Intelligence Officer for China in December 1976 (see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP83B00100R000100130018-3.pdf). In March-April 1978, FPDG President Charles T. Mayer arranged an American visit for CSU MP and AESP Life Member Franz Ludwig Schenk Graf von Stauffenberg to discuss the neutron bomb and SALT (search for declassified State Department cable 1978BONN04766 of 15th March 1978 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/). In November 1983, the FPDG was addressed by Bill Casey (see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP85M00364R002204230050-7.pdf). Also see https://sites.google.com/site/fpdgdc/.

The diaries of Minister of State for Defence Alan Clark, published in 1994, revealed that a later meeting of the Cercle was held in Oman in November 1990. Attendees at the meeting at the Al Bustan hotel, Muscat, included Lord Julian Amery (joint Cercle Chairman), Sheikh Qaboos (Ruler of Oman), the later disgraced future Chairman of the Cercle in 1995-97 Jonathan Aitken (Minister of Defence Procurement, see https://www.theguardian.com/aitken/0,2759,183781,00.html; https://www.independent.co.uk/news/aitken-dropped-by-the-rights-secret-club-1258522.html), Paul Channon (former Secretary of State at the Dept. of Trade & Industry), General Norman Schwarzkopf (Commander of the Allied forces in the Gulf), the unnamed Head of the Dutch Secret Service, and an unnamed French Admiral.

(526) Crozier, pg 291.

(527) On the UIMM, see footnote 171. According to the unarchived article *Quand l'UIMM finançait l'Institut de la désinformation* [When the UIMM financed the Institute for disinformation] by Laurent Léger, previously at http://www.bakchich.info/Quand-l-UIMM-financait-l-Institut,03585.html, "the Institute was given considerable funding by the UIMM and its Parisian branch, the GIM, which represented 2,700 companies and 300,000 employees, funding which allegedly ceased when GIM's management changed a few years ago with the arrival as GIM Director of Pierre Chasseguet, a senior Dassault executive … Daniel Trinquet, one of the co-founders of the IED, denied the existence of such funding, telling *Bakchich* "Ah, I would have loved to be funded by the UIMM" before conceding that "the UIMM, the CNPF and other employers' federations" did take out "subscriptions" to the Institute's output. Subscriptions that were probably very well paid …". Volkoff died in 2005. Léger was a journalist at *Paris Match* for twelve years until 2002, later working for *Le Parisien* and *Le Point* before founding *Bakchich* as Chief Editor in 2006 and running it until 2009. He later worked as lead investigative reporter at *Charlie Hebdo*, narrowly escaping death in the January 2015 terrorist attack on the magazine – see https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/Laurent_L%C3%A9ger.

(528) From the 1989 IED programme included in the documentary annex to this full sixth edition of *Rogue Agents*.

(529) One possible early contribution to the anti-Gorbachev campaign was the organisation by the German offshoot of Huyn's EKMS of a conference *Psychiatry and Glasnost* held in Bonn on 23rd January 1988; co-sponsored by the Deutsche Vereinigung gegen politischen Mißbrauch der Psychiatrie e.V. (DVpMP, German Association Against Political Abuse of Psychiatry, founded in 1977), the conference

hosted speakers such as Cornelia Gerstenmaier ("Human Rights in the USSR under Gorbachev") and Franz Ludwig Graf von Stauffenberg ("Political Psychiatry – the Sedation of the Spirit") – see http://www.psychiatrie-und-ethik.de/rundbriefe/RB1-88.htm.

Horchem's book was published by the Deutsches Strategie-Forum in 1989, a year which also saw the appearance of Huyn's *Die Doppelfalle Glasnost für Perestrojka; das Risiko Gorbatschow* (Universitas, Munich) and Romerstein's *Soviet Active Measures and Propaganda: Influence Activities in the Gorbachev Era* (National Intelligence Book Center, Washington, D.C/Mackenzie Institute for the Study of Terrorism, Revolution and Propaganda, Toronto, Canada – run by Tugwell). These were followed in 1990 by Huyn's *Gorbachev's Operation: A Common European House - Soviet Strategic Deception* (Center For Intelligence Studies Reprint Series 2, Alexandria VA, USA, September 1990 - Huyn was a Senior Fellow at the CFIS), and Crozier's *The Gorbachev Phenomenon: Peace and Secret War* (Claridge Press, London 1990), on which see Crozier, pgs 290-291. Huyn also published an anti-Gorbachev article in the *Ostpreußenblatt* of 21/4/90 pg 2 at http://archiv.preussische-allgemeine.de/1990/1990_04_21_16.pdf.

The 6I core members were not the only ones to produce anti-Gorbachev books. Canon Michael Bourdeaux, director of Keston Research, Oxford, weighed in with *Gorbachev, Glasnost and The Gospel* (Hodder & Stoughton, 1990); Bourdeaux had been refused a visa by the Soviet authorities in October 1989 - see *Guardian*, 11/10/89. He had previously contributed the article *Secular Inhumanism* to the September 1985 issue of the Heritage Foundation magazine, *Policy Review*; he later added *Religion and the Collapse of the Soviet System* to the work *Religious Life in Russia* co-authored with Dr. Keith Armes of Boston University's Institute for the Study of Conflict, Ideology and Policy, published in July 1992 – see https://web.archive.org/web/19990225000013/http://www.bu.edu/iscip/pubseries.html.

Another anti-Gorbachev author was Ray Cline who produced *Behind the smile are teeth of iron: the real truth about Mikhail Gorbachev and the still-growing Soviet threat to the United States*, published by the United States Global Strategy Council in 1990. Top German psy-ops expert and previous frequent speaker for Grau's Swiss ISP Dr. J. Kurt Klein published three anti-Gorbachev texts through the Zürich-based Institut für politologische Zeitfragen [Institute for Contemporary Politological Issues]: *Der gorbische Knoten: Möglichkeiten und Grenzen des "realen Gorbatschowismus"* [The Gorbian Knot: possibilities and limits of "real Gorbachevism"] in 1989, *Sicherheitsrisiko Perestroika* [Security Risk Perestroika] in 1990 and *Götterdämmerung im Osten: Wandel und Zerfall der Ethik des "Marxismus-Leninismus"* [Twilight of the Gods in the East: the Change and Decay of "Marxism-Leninism"] in 1991.

A further voice in the anti-Gorbachev campaign was that of Vladimir Bukovsky, one of the contributors to an April 1989 book edited by Ernest Lefever and published by his Ethics and Public Policy Center which attacked perestroika - see http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf3/1989/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1989-20.pdf; Bukovsky again contributed at an August 1990 conference in Prague: "The central theme of the "Peaceful Road to Democracy" conference, sponsored in Prague by Resistance International and the American Foreign Policy Council, addressed the difficult task of transition: How do we build a free-market economy and a democratic society 'from under the rubble' (in Solzhenitsyn's phrase)? "Mr. Gorbachev is turning the Soviet Union into one giant Beirut," said Vladimir Bukovsky in his opening remarks at the conference. "State structures remain the greatest obstacle to human freedom, and ... socialism cannot be restructured or reformed: it can only be eliminated." – see https://www.afpc.org/news/events/afpc-conference-afpc-conference-in-prague-the-peaceful-road-to-democracy; https://www.afpc.org/news/events/the-long-road-to-democracy-and-free-markets; footnote 535.

In 1991, Huyn produced *Die deutsche Karte : Moskaus neue Strategie* [The German Map : Moscow's New Strategy] (Universitas, Munich); to watch Huyn and Charles Viar speak at a conference organised by the Center For Intelligence Studies on 28th October 1991 on the post-coup Soviet Union, see https://www.c-span.org/video/?22370-1/postcoup-soviet-union. In June 1992, the USIA published a sequel to their 1988 Congressional report entitled *Soviet Active Measures in the "Post-Cold War" Era 1988-1991*, "A Report Prepared at the Request of the United States House of Representatives' Committee on Appropriations", online at http://intellit.muskingum.edu/russia_folder/pcw_era/index.htm, which is a fascinating read (the non-hyperlinked sections can be found in the root directory pcw_era). Many of Huyn's and Romerstein's claims about Soviet Active Measures were also recycled in Switzerland by former Swiss Army Security Service officer Hans-Ulrich Helfer in his 1991 book *Manipulierte Eidgenossen* [Manipulated Confederates] – see https://www.presdok.ch/presdok/artikel/manipulierte-eidgenossen.pdf; footnotes 532 and 542 below.

(530) See Various authors (IFF), pg vii. Dumont was a Senior Fellow of the American CFIS until at least 2005 when the CFIS stopped listing its Fellows on its new website. His associate as CFIS Senior Fellow Dr. Françoise Thom, author of the 1987 book *Le Moment Gorbachev*, also contributed to the anti-Gorbachev campaign, speaking at the First IED Assizes on Disinformation in November 1989 before addressing the Conservative Leadership Conference in Washington on the subject of glasnost and perestroika in December 1989 – see https://www.c-span.org/video/?10137-1/glasnost-perestroika. For later activities by Dumont and Thom, see footnote 542.

Asso was named as a Cercle member since the mid-1980s by Großmann in *Die Internationale der Konservativen*, pg 544. On Chaix, see http://www.sfhp.fr/index.php?post/2009/05/03/Notice-biographique-Roger-Chaix. On Rochet, see http://www.sfhp.fr/index.php?post/2015/01/30/Notice-biographique-Jean-Rochet; http://www.lefigaro.fr/flash-actu/2010/12/30/97001-20101230FILWWW00439-deces-du-prefet-rochet-ancien-de-la-dst.php. Pierre Faillant de Villemarest was a former SDECE officer from 1945 to 1950; during the Algerian War, he was imprisoned for membership of the OAS and in 1968 married the daughter of OAS member Dr. Henri Martin, co-founder of the Cagoule. The President of the International Conference of Resistance in Occupied Nations (CIRPO), he spoke at the 19th WACL Conference in Luxembourg in 1986 – see *ABN Correspondence*, September – October 1986 pgs 30-31 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/14111/file.pdf.

The Club de l'Horloge (now Carrefour de l'Horloge), founded in 1974, has longstanding historical and ideological links to the Front National, and has hosted as speakers many Cercle members and associates, including, of those mentioned elsewhere in this book: Bernard Asso (1985, 1986, 1988, 1989 and three times in 1990), Jean-Marie Benoist (1984), Raymond Bourgine (1978, 1985, 1987, 1989), Albin Chalandon (1976), Pierre Chaunu (1978, 1996), Etienne Copel (1991), Jean Delaunay (1989, 1990), Bernard Destremau (1976), Manuel Fraga Iribarne (1978), Arvid Fredborg (1981), Jeffrey B. Gayner (1985, 1986), Enrique Gómez Hurtado (1987 – see footnote 617), Hans Huyn (1981), Philippe Malaud (1975, 1976, 1983), Alain de Marolles (1996), Jacques Médecin (1977, annually from 1985 to 1989), Jaime

Nogueira Pinto (1987 – see footnote 582, 1997), François d'Orcival (1989) and Vladimir Volkoff (1981) – see http://www.clubdelhorloge.fr/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=217:index-des-orateurs&catid=18:club-de-l-horloge.

The IED held its Second International Assizes on Disinformation in the French Assemblée Nationale on 10th-11th April 1992. The choice of the French Assemblée Nationale as venue for the IED's Second International Assizes on Disinformation reflected a move away from the internationalism of the First Assizes towards a more French-centred attendance. The participants at the second seminar's two days of presentations on "Disinformation in the world" and "Disinformation in France" were mostly from French academic or media circles with a few former senior military and security figures, notably Delaunay, Rochet, Chaix and de Villemarest, all of whom had attended the First Assizes. The previous IED attendance of many of the Cercle's international contacts had been slimmed down by the Second Assizes to just Brian Crozier, "Sovietologist", who spoke on "The story behind the Moscow coup and the exact historic role of Mikhail Gorbachev", and Vladimir Bukovsky. The only other non-French speakers were from the former Eastern bloc. For details of earlier planned cooperation between Bukovsky and David Hart, present at the first IED seminar, see footnote 514; for an earlier conference appearance by Bukovsky in the anti-Gorbachev campaign, see footnote 529 above.

(531) *Front for Apartheid* in *Newsday*, 16/07/95 – see the IFF annex below for the text and further details. I am indebted to Stephen Dorril for the initial information on the IFF.

(532) According to declassified FBI documents, the Bureau shared the IFF's view of Mandela as a communist agitator; see http://america.aljazeera.com/articles/2014/7/10/mandela-documentscommunistthreat.html and https://www.theguardian.com/world/2014/jul/10/fbi-monitored-mandela-1990s-communist-threat. Prior to the foundation of the IFF, Duncan Sellars had been advancing similar opinions within the North American Regional WACL; on its 1982 conference where Sellars spoke on Africa, see http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1982/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1982-19.pdf. A major IFF publication was the book *Glasnost, New Thinking and the ANC-SACP Alliance: A Parting of Ways*, a title which sums up the IFF's propaganda line; its regular publications included the journals *laissez-faire* and *terra nova*, *OPPORTUNITIES Briefing* (Eastern and Central Europe) and *Perspectives* (former Soviet Union). The IFF also followed a hard anti-EU line with the research papers *Sir Leon's Invisible Hand – Competition Enforcement in the EC* and *Culture Vultures – the EC's Imposition of Cultural Conformity*. One author for the IFF's magazine *terra nova* was stalwart Bilderberger Sir Frederic Bennett, from 1970 an associate of G. K. Young in Kleinwort Benson, SIF and then Unison, and from 1975 a companion of Crozier in NAFF and FARI. Two other authors for *laissez-faire* were the ex-CIA American Cercle coordinator Donald Jameson (*Covert Action and New Priorities*, *laissez-faire* 1 no. 3 (Winter 1992)) and Hans-Ulrich Helfer (*Countering Economic Espionage*, *laissez-faire* 1 no. 4 (Summer 1992), on whom see footnotes 529 and 542) – see Thomas Frank, *The Wrecking Crew*, Holt Paperbacks, New York 2009, pg 319, note 21; a corresponding abridged essay by Frank is given in the IFF annex.

(533) See https://fas.org/irp/news/1992/13422733-13426372.htm; https://www.americanbar.org/content/dam/aba/publications/national_security_law_report/volume14_issues6-8.authcheckdam.pdf.

(534) See https://web.archive.org/web/20121006070410/http://www.iwp.edu/faculty/facultyID.12/profile.asp. To watch video of Waller, see https://www.c-

span.org/person/?jwaller. On Waller, see https://militarist-monitor.org/profile/j-michael-waller/; the chapter *J. Michael Waller and the New Kids Network* in Chip Berlet's *The Hunt for Red Menace* at http://www.publiceye.org/huntred/Huntred_TOC.html.

(535) Quote from the now-dead and unarchived webpage http://findarticles.com/p/articles/mi_qa3996/is_200301/ai_n9183342. For the journal Demokratizatsiya, see http://demokratizatsiya.pub/. The **American Foreign Policy Council** was founded by Herman Pirchner Jnr in 1982 with an initial focus on supporting the Nicaraguan Contras and El Salvador's ARENA leader and death squad commander Roberto d'Aubuisson – see http://militarist-monitor.org/profile/American_Foreign_Policy_Council/ and https://www.afpc.org/about. After Waller joined the AFPC in the mid-1990s, its focus shifted to the former Soviet Union with a mission statement "to bring information to those who make or influence the foreign policy of the United States and to assist leaders in the former USSR and other parts of the world in building democracies and market economies" – see http://web.archive.org/web/19990203192416/http://afpc.org/index.htm; on Waller and the AFPC, see http://web.archive.org/web/19990505185826/http://afpc.org/bookbag/authors.htm and http://web.archive.org/web/19990508195147/http://www.afpc.org/issues/kgb.htm. On the involvement of Kraemer and deGraffenreid in the AFPC, see footnote 543. The current AFPC Advisory Board includes 1980s Cercle members Ambassador Richard McCormack and William Schneider Jnr (whose careers are detailed in the Postscript on the Cercle membership lists) as well as veteran hardline Republican and Speaker of the House from 1995 to 1999 Newt Gingrich, Reagan's third National Security Advisor from 1983 to 1985 and 6I contact Robert 'Bud' McFarlane, a key figure in the Iran-Contra affair, and CIA Director from 1993 to 1995 James Woolsey.

The AFPC should not be confused with the ASC offshoot, the **American Foreign Policy Institute**, which cooperated from 1978 on with the ASC Educational Foundation in publishing the *Journal of International Relations* and the *International Security Review*. The AFPI Chairman was Elbridge Durbrow (see footnote 497), and the AFPI Director was General Robert Richardson, both being co-founders of ASIF with Angleton in 1977; the AFPI Board of Trustees also included the ASC stalwarts John Fisher and General Daniel O. Graham – see https://www.osti.gov/servlets/purl/10132869; *Nazis, the Vatican and CIA* in *Covert Action Information Bulletin* no. 25 (Winter 1986) pgs 27-38 at https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP90-00845R000100170004-5.pdf; https://www.finance.senate.gov/imo/media/doc/Hrg95-62.pdf, pg 46. The AFPI was still active in 1997; see https://www.uvu.edu/profpages/data/acrobats/10450372.pdf.

(536) See https://www.centerforsecuritypolicy.org/; the chapter *The Phantom Menace - Frank Gaffney and the Star Wars Crusade* in Silverstein. For the later careers of Feith, Kraemer and deGraffenreid, see footnote 543. Another member of the CSP Advisory Council was Henry F. (Hank) Cooper, founding Chairman of the Board of the Graham/Richardson pro-Star Wars group High Frontier – see footnote 466. Cooper is still active in defending missile and space defence; he was still Chairman of High Frontier in 2018, having sat with NSIC/ISC benefactor Dan McMichael and William Van Cleave on the Independent Working Group, which produced a 2009 report on missile defence published by Pfaltzgraff's Institute for Foreign Policy Analysis – see http://highfrontier.org/independent-working-group/; http://www.ifpa.org/pdf/IWG2009.pdf. Cooper won the Missile Defense Agency's Ronald Reagan Award in 2010 – see http://www.mda.mil/about/cooper_award.html. For his television appearances, see https://www.c-span.org/person/?henrycooper.

(537) The IWP started offering summer courses a year after the IFF's three intelligence conferences in 1991 and expanded to a year-round programme in 1994 – see https://www.iwp.edu. For officeholders at the IWP, see footnote 543.

(538) The IFF's German branch seems to have been largely a publication outlet; no other IFF Germany activities are known. The IFF also spawned a British offshoot, IFF (UK), largely independent of its American parent and of little apparent relevance to the Cercle or 6I – on which see *Lobster* 16, July 1988, pgs 18-19. To watch television coverage of Romerstein, Holliday and Sellars at the first IFF conference in Washington in 1991, see https://www.c-span.org/video/?22278-1/us-intelligence-needs-1990s. Other IFF footage is at https://www.c-span.org/person/?duncansellars (in 1990 discussing "Nelson Mandela's visit to the U.S., and his association with certain international leaders. Mandela's statement in support of Kaddafi, Castro and Arafat which created controversy during his visit to the U.S", and in 1991 discussing "the announcement of President Bush to lift South African sanctions"); https://www.c-span.org/video/?14774-1/effectiveness-united-nations and https://www.c-span.org/video/?53006-1/russian-elections, which state that Mark Franz, previously UN expert at the Heritage Foundation from 1988 to 1990, was IFF Director of Research and Nina Belyaeva was IFF President, seen here speaking at the Heritage Foundation. Franz left the IFF in 1992 to work for the Bush/Quayle re-election campaign – see the IFF annex. In 1996-98, Sellars was a registered Foreign Agent acting on behalf of UNITA, the Free Angola Information Service and the Center for Democracy in Angola – see https://efile.fara.gov/docs/5096-Exhibit-AB-19960229-DPYZEP93.pdf and https://efile.fara.gov/docs/5096-Supplemental-Statement-19960831-E0KELZ05.pdf; for further filings, search for Sellars at https://efile.fara.gov/ords/f?p=1235:10.

(539) Crozier at this time was starting his memoirs; his account of the IFF conference was published in the *National Review* in January 1992 – see http://www.unz.com/print/NationalRev-1992jan20-00022/. To watch an American television interview with Crozier in 1999, see https://www.c-span.org/video/?153602-1/former-soviet-union. He died on his ninety-fourth birthday on 4th August 2012 – see https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/politics-obituaries/9462513/Brian-Crozier.html; https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2012/aug/09/brian-crozier; https://www.independent.co.uk/news/media/press/journalist-brian-crozier-dies-aged-94-8009934.html; https://www.independent.co.uk/news/obituaries/brian-crozier-intelligence-and-security-expert-who-fought-communism-and-founded-his-own-spy-network-8036652.html; https://www.smh.com.au/national/influential-cold-war-hardliner-wore-down-even-allies-20120813-244s9.html; https://www.nationalreview.com/corner/brian-crozier-cold-warrior-rip-john-osullivan/.

(540) In 1991, Huyn was the Vice-President of the Atlantic Treaty Association. In the 1990s, Huyn, Rohrmoser and Filbinger were all regular contributors to the Swiss right-wing weekly newspaper, *Schweizerzeit*; Huyn was taken on as a staff contributor in 1993 – see the 2007 Swiss Parliament report on right-wing extremism in Switzerland by Urs Altermatt und Hanspeter Kriesi, https://www.schweizerzeit.ch/cms/ and "The radical right in Switzerland: continuity and change, 1945-2000" by Damir Skenderovic (Altermatt's assistant), 2009, www.berghahnbooks.com. Huyn withdrew from public life after the death of his wife in 2004 and died in January 2011 – see his obituaries at https://www.kirche-in-not.de/aktuelle-meldungen/2011/01-25-nachruf-hans-graf-huyn; https://www.ovb-online.de/rosenheim/landkreis/profilierter-aussenpolitiker-1095115.html.

(541) Earlier in 1991, Horchem had helped to prop up the allied war effort during the first Iraq War by resurrecting the "threat" of international terrorism; during an interview for the British Channel 4 television programme *Dispatches* on 30th January 1991, he warned that over one thousand Iraqi hitmen lurked in every corner of Europe. His Bonn Institute for Terrorism Research closed in 1993, the year he published his memoirs, *Auch Spione werden pensioniert* [Even spies retire sometime], E.S. Mittler & Sohn, Herford, Berlin and Bonn. Horchem died in August 2004 – see his obituaries in https://www.welt.de/print-welt/article333057/Sein-Leben-galt-dem-Kampf-gegen-den-Extremismus.html and *Spiegel* 34/2004 pg 150 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-31822053.html. In 2003, Rolf Tophoven, Horchem's deputy in the Bonn institute, founded the Essen-based Institut für Terrorismusforschung und Sicherheitspolitik [Institute for Terrorism Research and Security Policy, https://www.iftus.de/] and has become a notable terrorism commentator in Germany today - see https://de.wikipedia.org/wiki/Rolf_Tophoven.

(542) In the late 1990s, Dumont wrote for the Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung, contributing to the HSS bi-monthly *Politische Studien* [Political Studies] no 351 of January-February 1997, a special issue devoted to "New Threats to State Security"; Dumont's article on "The Evolution of Terrorism" quoted abundantly from Horchem. CFIS Senior Fellows Dumont and Dr. Françoise Thom of the Sorbonne later attended a conference of intelligence experts devoted to the theme of preventive war, held at the Hanns-Seidel-Stiftung's conference centre in Wildbad Kreuth on 27th - 28th May 2003. In June 2008, Dumont was founding Vice-President of the European Security and Defence Press Association ESDPA (APESD in French) – see https://web.archive.org/web/20101021001141/http://www.esdpa-org.eu/association/regulamet/membersboard.html; the association has featured former CFIS Senior Fellow Françoise Thom. Dumont also directs the site http://www.european-security.com which lists Hans-Ulrich Helfer (see footnotes 529 and 532) as one of its foreign correspondents. Dumont has been a regular writer on intelligence matters for the magazine *Défense* published by the Association of Former Auditors of the IHEDN – see https://www.union-ihedn.org/a-propos-de-la-revue-defense.

(543) As to the later careers of Crozier's American contacts during the Bush 43 Presidency, following his retirement from official service in 1989, Herbert Romerstein became the Director of the Center for Security Research at the Education and Research Institute. As the ERI website stated:

"Over the years the Center has acquired collections of congressional hearings and reports on Communism, espionage, terrorism, front groups, attempts to penetrate the US Government, and numerous related issues. Sources of relevant documents include House and Senate committees, the Subversive Activities Control Board, reports from the intelligence community, State Department, Department of Defense, and others. More recently, with the release of secret records from the former USSR and its satellite countries, as well as from the vaults of our own intelligence/security agencies, the Center has been engaged in collecting documents from these sources. In particular, ERI has in its possession more than 100,000 pages of once highly classified records from the Federal Bureau of Investigation pertaining to Cold War security cases" - see https://web.archive.org/web/20071214183924/http://www.education-research. org/CSR/CSR.htm.

The ERI was founded in 1974 by M. Stanton Evans, head of the American Conservative Union from 1971 to 1977, the year that the ERI helped create the National Journalism Center which was headed until 2002 by Evans. To watch a conference jointly organised in 2000 by the ERI and the Monday Club with Herb

Romerstein and Nigel West, see https://www.c-span.org/video/?160058-1/soviet-intelligence-operations. To watch other broadcasts with Romerstein, see https://www.c-span.org/person/?herbertromerstein and https://www.c-span.org/video/?165165-1/historical-accuracy; Romerstein was a frequent commentator for the conservative media watchdog, Accuracy In Media. In 2012, Romerstein was co-author of the book *Stalin's Secret Agents: the Subversion of Roosevelt's Government*, written with M. Stanton Evans, himself author in 2007 of *Blacklisted by History*, a vigorous defence of Senator McCarthy. To watch M. Stanton Evans and Romerstein speak on rehabilitating McCarthy, see https://www.c-span.org/video/?155194-1/rethinking-mccarthy. Romerstein still worked for the IWP as Professor Emeritus until his death on 7th May 2013 – see https://www.iwp.edu/press-releases/2010/05/18/prof-romerstein-receives-lifetime-achievement-award-from-aoc/; https://www.iwp.edu/press-releases/2013/05/08/in-memoriam-herb-romerstein-professor-and-freedom-fighter/; https://spectator.org/55631_remembering-herb-romerstein/. Evans died on 3rd March 2015 – see https://www.nytimes.com/2015/03/04/us/m-stanton-evans-pioneer-of-conservative-movement-dies-at-80.html; https://www.washingtonpost.com/local/obituaries/m-stanton-evans-guiding-force-in-modern-conservatism-dies-at-80/2015/03/05/a266c59c-c2a0-11e4-ad5c-3b8ce89f1b89_story.html; https://dailysignal.com/2015/03/03/remembering-unique-conservative-voice-m-stanton-evans/. In 1964, Evans was a co-founder of the Philadelphia Society whose meetings he frequently attended – see footnote 597.

As for Sven Kraemer, after serving under Reagan as Director of Arms Control at the NSC from 1981 to 1987 and Senior Staff Member for Defense and Foreign Policy for the House of Representatives until 1989, Kraemer became Director of Policy at the American Security Council in 1991. Kraemer was a frequent member of American Foreign Policy Council delegations and participant at AFPC conferences in the 1990s, as was his father. To watch his 1988-91 testimony to House and Senate committees on missile defence, see https://www.c-span.org/person/?svenkraemer. In 1996, he offered highly critical testimony on US non-proliferation policy to the House Intelligence Committee – see https://www.iranwatch.org/library/government/united-states/congress/hearings-prepared-statements/prepared-testimony-sven-kraemer-house-intelligence-committee-hearing-us. In 1999, the AFPC, which awards the post of "Kraemer Strategy Fellow", published *The Soviet Union Fights the Cold War*, a CD-ROM of Reagan Administration documents prepared by project director Sven Kraemer – see http://web.archive.org/web/20000815070535/http://www.afpc.org/cd-rom/cold_war.htm.

Kraemer went on to serve from 2001 to 2005 as Policy Advisor to the Under-Secretary of Defense for Policy, Douglas J. Feith. Feith oversaw the Office of Special Plans (OSP), created in 2002 by Secretary of Defense Rumsfeld to bypass the CIA and channel raw data to Vice-President Cheney; the OSP Director was Abram Shulsky – see footnote 199. Romerstein tried to defend his friends by blaming the Iraq WMD fiasco on the KGB-trained Iraqi intelligence service in a 2003 article for the *Washington Times* – see https://www.iwp.edu/articles/2003/07/21/tricks-of-the-terror-trade-2/. Kraemer left the IWP Faculty sometime after 2006 – see https://www.iwp.edu/wp-content/uploads/2019/05/20060126_IWP_Brochure.pdf, but continued to frequent the AFPC and is currently listed as an AFPC Distinguished Fellow in National Security Affairs – see https://www.afpc.org/about/experts/sven-f-kraemer.

Like Kraemer, Kenneth deGraffenreid was also associated with the AFPC, serving as an AFPC Distinguished Fellow in Intelligence Studies – see https://www.afpc.org/about/experts/kenneth-e-degraffenreid. To watch an interview with him about the CIA budget in 1997, see https://www.c-span.org/video/?84901-1/cia-budget. He served under Feith as Deputy Under-Secretary of Defense for Policy Support in the Department of Defense from 2001 to 2004, where he oversaw the most sensitive of covert action programmes, the Special Access Programs (SAP). Following the 2003 appointment of Stephen Cambone to the new and more senior post of Under-Secretary of Defense for Intelligence, deGraffenreid lost control of SAPs to Cambone and left the Pentagon, becoming Deputy National Counterintelligence Executive (NCIX) until 2005. "As the lead agency for US counterintelligence, the NCIX is charged with providing strategic direction to and ensuring the integration of counterintelligence activities across the government."

At the NCIX, deGraffenreid worked under **Michelle Van Cleave**, appointed NCIX by President George W. Bush in July 2003 and serving until March 2006. Michelle Van Cleave had previously worked under Presidents Reagan and George H. W. Bush as General Counsel and Assistant Director for National Security Affairs of the White House Office of Science and Technology Policy. During the Clinton Presidencies, she worked as Staff Director of the Terrorism and Narcotics Subcommittee of the Senate Judiciary Committee from 1998 on as well as Counsel to Feith's law firm of Feith & Zell before serving under him at the Pentagon in the Bush 43 administration as "Special Assistant to the Under-Secretary [of Defense] for Policy [Douglas Feith, July 2001 – August 2005] and Senior Advisor to the Secretary of the Army, where she had lead responsibility for homeland defense policy development in the immediate aftermath of the September 11 terrorist attack" – see https://www.worldcat.org/title/counterintelligence-and-national-strategy/oclc/227949390&referer=brief_results. After 2006, she was a guest lecturer for the IWP and joined the Jamestown Foundation as a Board Member, still serving today – see https://jamestown.org/about-us/board-members/. Both Michelle Van Cleave and William Van Cleave were speakers for the CSP; both joined Sven Kraemer and Ambassador Cooper, amongst others, in signing an open letter to the US Senate denouncing the New START Treaty in December 2010. Michelle Van Cleave's television appearances can be seen at https://www.c-span.org/person/?michellevancleave; William Van Cleave's are at https://www.c-span.org/person/?williamvancleave. In 2013, deGraffenreid was Professor Emeritus on the IWP faculty along with Romerstein and Norman A. Bailey; J. Michael Waller was the IWP Vice-President and Provost.

Many of Crozier's American contacts listed above – and Crozier himself - have been given television airtime by the Conservative Caucas whose President Howard Phillips was a member of the Advisory Board of Singlaub/Graham's American WACL chapter, the USCWF – see http://www.publiceye.org/foreign_policy/covert/USCWF-circa-1986.pdf. The Caucas produced the *Conservative Roundtable* television programme, broadcast weekly on over 100 channels nationwide, mostly on public access television, which featured the following speakers:

1993 March - Sven Kraemer: Nukes in the Former Soviet Union; June - Gen John K. Singlaub: Jimmy Carter Defense Policies; June - Joe Douglass: China, Cuba & Drugs; December - Brian Crozier: Author, "The Unseen War"; 1994 March - Gen. Dan Graham: SDI Missile Shield, Defense Policy; April - Gen. Robert Richardson: Space, Defense; 1995 June - Michael Waller: Russia still a threat to U.S and freedom; 1996 June - Dr. Joseph Douglass: US P.O.W.s still held in Russia; 1997 February - Maj. Gen. John Singlaub, Ret: Update on Nicaragua & Taiwan; April - J. Michael Waller: Red China targets USA; September - Duncan Sellars: US helps Communists consolidate power in Angola; 2001 January - Herbert Romerstein: Author, "The Venona Secrets"; March - Ambassador Henry Cooper: Missile Defense; March -

Michael Waller: Missile Defense & Global Security; April - Ken deGraffenreid: Security & Intelligence; June - Ambassador Henry Cooper: Missile Defense - a Shield in Space; October - Dr. Joe Douglass: Unconventional Warfare; 2002 September - Dr. Joseph Douglass: Author, "Betrayed", about US abandonment of POWs [a book published by the CFIS].

For a list of speakers until 2007, see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_Conservative_Roundtable_episodes.

(544) Crozier, pg 193. It is true, however, that some members of the 6I's 'Politburo' named by Crozier - notably Walters and Horchem - are not known to have attended Cercle meetings during this period. Crozier also notes that "many on the 6I's networks had no connection with the Cercle" - for obvious reasons of operational security. Others, like Stilwell, despite being 6I 'Politburo' members, were retained from attending by their official duties – but could pick up the 'phone nonetheless.

(545) Both letters by Close are in the Garnier-Lançon papers, Box 9, Folder 9. The 14th September 1982 letter twice refers to the second FARI Annual World Balance of Power Conference, held on 21st - 25th July 1982 and attended by Close: "at Leeds Castle at the end of July, I strongly pleaded the Institute's cause ... the liaison programme in Washington and Leeds Castle with our American friends (amongst others Frank Barnett)" – see footnote 455. Close however continued collaboration with Garnier-Lançon; in September 1983, together with delegation chairman CDU MP Peter Petersen (see below) and Edward Leigh amongst others, they visited America to support deployment of new American nuclear weapons in Europe – see *Nederlands Dagsblad* of 16/9/83 pg 6 at https://resolver.kb.nl/resolve?urn=ddd:010627964:mpeg21:pdf. Close and Leigh had recently met at the July 1983 Cercle meeting in Bonn; Petersen attended the early 1983 and January 1984 Cercle meetings.

(546) See the obituaries of Toptani at https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/1309115/Ihsan-Bey-Toptani.html, https://www.theguardian.com/news/2001/jun/13/guardianobituaries and https://www.professorjamespettifer.com/uploads/files/pdf/Ihsan%20Bey%20Toptani.pdf, published in the *Independent* of 1/6/01.

(547) On the Albanian and Yemeni operations, see footnote 79; the obituaries of McLean, Fielding and Smiley in *The Daily Telegraph Second Book of Obituaries*, ed. Hugh Massingberd, London 1997 pgs 1-5 and 193-201; https://patrickleighfermor.org/2010/07/01/one-mans-great-game-lieutenant-colonel-%E2%80%9Cbilly%E2%80%9D-mclean/; https://patrickleighfermor.org/2010/05/09/xan-fielding-obituary/; https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/4210129/Colonel-David-Smiley.html; https://patrickleighfermor.org/2010/08/20/colonel-david-smiley/; https://patrickleighfermor.org/2010/08/30/colonel-david-smiley-blues-officer-and-mc-recipient/; *Aden Insurgency: The Savage War in Yemen 1962-1967*, Jonathan Walker, Pen & Sword Military, London 2011; *The War That Never Was*, Duff Hart-Davis, Century, London 2011/Arrow, London 2012; https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1357826/How-rag-tag-team-SAS-veterans-changed-history-secret-war-Britain-STILL-wont-admit.html. For the later activities of several SAS soldiers involved in the Yemen campaign within various mercenary companies in the 1970s and 1980s, see Duncan Campbell at https://www.mercenary-wars.net/recruitment/cozy-clubby-covert-uk.html.

(548) *One Man in His Time: the Life of Lt-Col. N. L. D. 'Billy' McLean, DSO*, Xan Fielding, Macmillan, London 1990, pg 205. This was the only print source to name Amery as Chairman of the Cercle during his tenure until 1994, and to reveal that Cercle meetings were held in Bonn, Munich and Washington - see *Lobster* 22, pg 17. On McLean and Fielding, also see footnote 547. On Winn, see footnote 288.

(549) The 2010 official inquiry by Lord Saville concluded that none of the 14 dead was carrying a gun, no warnings were given, no soldiers were under threat and the British troops were the first to open fire, comprehensively discrediting the 1972 whitewash by Lord Widgery, which accused the victims of firing weapons or handling bombs – see https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2010/jun/15/bloody-sunday-report-soldiers-prosecuted; https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2012/jul/05/bloody-sunday-murder-inquiry; https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2013/feb/14/bloody-sunday-families-offered-50000-compensation; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2014/mar/02/bloody-sunday-survivor-amnesty-soldiers-ira-letters; https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2019/mar/14/one-soldier-to-face-charges-over-bloody-sunday-killings.

(550) Quotations from Steele's obituary in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*, Volume 8, Issue 3, November 1998, pgs 434-435 at https://www.cambridge.org/core/journals/journal-of-the-royal-asiatic-society/article/frank-steele-obe/897B602A19B76776CA6530ED832BD7B8. His MI6 career is given in *Lobster* 16, pg 14. His activities in Northern Ireland were described in *Great Hatred, Little Room - Making Peace in Northern Ireland*, Jonathan Powell (Tony Blair's chief of staff), The Bodley Head, London 2008, extracted in https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2008/mar/18/northernireland.northernireland. Another Steele obituary is in *Asian Affairs*, Volume 29, Issue 2, 1998, pg 253, Royal Society for Asian Affairs, at http://www.tandfonline.com/doi/abs/10.1080/714041357?journalCode=raaf20#.VG77mPnF_CY. Steele attended the Cercle meetings in June 1982 in Wildbad Kreuth, early 1983 (probably held in Washington), January 1984 in Stellenbosch and February 1985 in Washington DC; he retired in 1987 and died in 1997.

(551) From 1946 on, Kissinger also worked at Camp King interrogating POWs for the Counter-Intelligence Corps; also in 1946, Camp King was chosen as the operational command centre for the proto-BND Gehlen Org.

(552) Crozier pgs 134 and 267; the former passage reportedly names Silver in the second paperback edition of *Free Agent*.

(553) Silver died in Luxembourg in 1993. For his intelligence career, see https://web.archive.org/web/20120214172832/http://www.campking.net/POSTWORLD.html; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Camp_King; Silver, Arnold M., "Memories of Oberursel; Questions, Questions, Questions", *Intelligence and National Security*, Vol 8, No 2, undated, Frank Cass, London published at https://www.cia.gov/library/center-for-the-study-of-intelligence/csi-publications/csi-studies/studies/unclass1994.pdf; https://www.heritage.org/report/the-new-face-the-socialist-international, published by the Heritage Foundation in 1981 in its *Institution Analysis* which describes Silver merely as a "former official of the Department of Defense and the Department of State with thirty years experience in European affairs"; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Arnold_M._Silver; https://www.nytimes.com/1991/08/08/opinion/08iht-lett.html. Paul Weyrich died in December 2008 – see http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/content/article/2008/12/18/AR2008121801771.html; https://www.nytimes.com/2008/12/19/us/politics/19weyrich.html; https://www.dailysignal.com/2008/12/18/conservative-leader-

paul-weyrich-dies-first-to-lead-heritage/; https://militarist-monitor.org/profile/paul-weyrich-1942-2008/. Also see below, footnotes 404 and 587.

(554) *The Spy Wore Red* (1988), *The Spy Went Dancing* (1991) and *The Spy Wore Silk* (1991). On the exaggeration of Romanones' OSS service, see https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1991-03-10-vw-55-story.html; https://www.nytimes.com/1987/06/21/books/no-headline-029887.html; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Aline_Griffith,_Countess_of_Romanones.

(555) Crozier, pgs 179 and 186. Besides this June 1982 Wildbad Kreuth meeting, Romanones went on to attend further Cercle gatherings in early 1983, in July 1983 in Bonn, in January 1984 in Stellenbosch, and in February 1985 in Washington DC. As for Wilson, Reagan appointed him as his personal envoy to the Vatican in February 1981 and full US Ambassador to the Holy See in March 1984 - see the confirmation hearing of the Senate Foreign Relations Committee at https://www.c-span.org/video/?124140-1/ambassador-vatican-nomination; https://history.state.gov/departmenthistory/people/wilson-william-a. Wilson served as US Ambassador to the Holy See until 1986 when he was succeeded by Frank Shakespeare (see footnote 493); he died in 2009 - see https://www.nytimes.com/2009/12/07/us/07wilson.html.

(556) Garnier-Lançon papers, Box 9, Folder 9. Visser was a former head of the Dutch naval intelligence service MARID and then head of security for Philips – on the Director of the International Relations Bureau of Philips, J. C. Ramaer, see footnote 472; on the Cercle membership of Frans Otten, member of the Board of Directors of Philips, see footnote 582. Close is incorrect in attributing the creation of the IEPS to dissatisfaction with the EIS; the first meeting of the IEPS was held in April 1982, Close and de Kerchove were offered the posts of EIS Chairman of the Board and EIS Treasurer that June, and the dispute with the EIS only emerged subsequently. Whilst RAPPEL/IEPS cooperation with Crozier's 6I is well-evidenced, the IEPS's association with FARI is less documented (though see footnotes 455 and 545 for cooperation between Close and FARI). One awkward issue was the September 1983 WACL conference organised and chaired by Close and heavily criticised by former British WACL representative Stewart-Smith who wrote that "the organisers of the conference managed to trick certain honourable people into attending" – see footnote 487. Close's letter to Visser also reveals that the IEPS was intended to take over at least one of the functions of the now-closed PIO; amongst the tasks described for the IEPS was a replication of the PIO Speakers' Bureau: "We are convinced that we must train the young for contradictory debates with representatives of the other side".

(557) Garnier-Lançon papers, Box 9, Folder 11.

(558) See *La Vanguardia Española* of 23/10/83 pg 20.

(559) Sir John Biggs-Davison attended this June 1982 meeting and one further Cercle gathering held in early 1983, whereas Habsburg attended only the July 1984 Cercle meeting in Bonn. On Sánchez Bella, see below. Although Pinay, Violet and Pesenti no longer attended Cercle meetings, their cooperation within Catholic conservative groups had continued – see footnote 124 for details of a 1981 meeting of Europa Christiana whose President was Pesenti, a gathering attended by Cercle members Violet, Sánchez Bella, Andreotti, Garnier-Lançon and a Belgian crew of Close, Jonet, Vankerkhoven and de Bonvoisin.

(560) In November 1989, Lord Cranborne served with Crozier, Huyn, Horchem, Hart, Richardson and Labin as a speaker at the IED's First International Assizes on Disinformation – see above. His son Viscount Cranborne shared his opposition to sanctions against Rhodesia along with their fellow Monday Club members Amery, Biggs-Davison, Churchill and Hastings. The American Embassy in London reported that, at the 1978 Conservative Party Conference, the speech on Rhodesia by Shadow Foreign Secretary John Davies met with "heavy barracking which continually interrupted the remainder of his speech – the strongest outburst to date at the normally genteel conference ... the audience was clearly frustrated by Davies' passivity and somewhat halting delivery and by his refusal to show moral support for White Rhodesians by promising to vote against sanctions. To the noisy disapproval of the floor, Davies gave three reasons why Tories are stuck with sanctions, however unpopular and ineffective" – search for the declassified State Department cable 1978LONDON16612 of 12th October 1978 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/. One month later, in a Commons vote in November 1978, an unprecedented 114 Conservative MPs defied their party whip and voted against the renewal of sanctions, a rebellion that cost Biggs-Davison and Churchill their posts as opposition spokesmen – see footnote 215.

A firm supporter of the Afghan mujaheddin and the Polish underground movement, Viscount Cranborne was a member of the Belgian-based 6I front group, the IEPS (see footnote 482), and later served under John Major as Parliamentary Under-Secretary of State for Defence from 1992 to 1994, and Lord Privy Seal and Leader of the House of Lords from 1994 to 1997; he retired from the House of Lords in 2002 and succeeded to the marquessate on his father's death in 2003. A leading supporter of Brexit, the 7th Marquess styles himself Robert Salisbury – see https://www.changebritain.org/content/team-page. His younger brother, Lord Richard Cecil, a former Grenadier Guards officer with three tours of duty in Northern Ireland and in 1974 a Conservative electoral candidate who called for covert incursions into the Republic of Ireland to hunt down the IRA, was killed in 1978 covering the Rhodesian conflict as a journalist. On the father and sons, see https://www.theguardian.com/news/2003/jul/15/guardianobituaries.conservatives; https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/1435871/The-Marquess-of-Salisbury.html; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Robert_Gascoyne-Cecil,_6th_Marquess_of_Salisbury; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Robert_Gascoyne-Cecil,_7th_Marquess_of_Salisbury; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Lord_Richard_Cecil. The Cecil family, one of the most powerful in Britain, has held the posts of Prime Minister, Lord Privy Seal and Leader of the House of Lords on several occasions.

On Pieter Kenyon Van der Byl, see footnotes 525 and 624.

(561) His call to vote Conservative in the 1979 elections is not surprising in the light of his contribution to the February 1975 Lords debate on subversion and extremism triggered by Lord Chalfont: "My Lords, we on these Benches would like to welcome this debate which the noble Lord, Lord Chalfont, has initiated this afternoon. As we have already heard, there are many subversive and extremist organisations in this country, and unfortunately they will continue to propagate and thrive as those in authority [the Labour government] continue to bury their heads in the sand" – see https://api.parliament.uk/historic-hansard/lords/1975/feb/26/subversive-and-extremist-elements. On Kimberley, also see footnote 472. He died in 2002 – see https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/1395628/The-Earl-of-Kimberley.html; https://www.theguardian.com/news/2002/may/30/guardianobituaries; https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-2002-jun-10-me-earl10-story.html.

(562) Killick died in 2004 – see https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/1454263/Sir-John-Killick.html; https://www.theguardian.com/news/2004/feb/16/guardianobituaries.obituaries.

(563) In 1973, Goodhart produced a history of the 1922 Committee, *The 1922*; the same year, he opposed British entry into the EEC, a further cause of animosity with Edward Heath after Goodhart's earlier support for rival candidate Reginald Maudling in the 1965 Conservative Party leadership elections. Although not originally foreseen as the main challenger against Heath, Thatcher's candidacy later drew considerable support from the 1922 Committee; Goodhart attended the key meeting at the City office of Sir Edward du Cann, 1922 Committee Chairman, which decided to back her. As his *Daily Telegraph* obituary noted, "Accused of plotting to install Mrs. Thatcher, Goodhart explained: "The election of Margaret Thatcher was not inevitable. The departure of Ted Heath was"" – see footnote 564.

(564) For the press release for Goodhart's *The Climate of Collapse: The terrorist threat to Britain and her allies*, see Rhoodie, pg 212. On Goodhart and FARI, see *State Research* no. 7, August/September 1978 pg 131 (https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP88-01314R000300010056-1.pdf). The Conservative Northern Ireland team had been left in disarray following the November 1978 resignation of junior spokesman John Biggs-Davison (see footnotes 215 and 560) and the March 1979 assassination of Thatcher's intended minister and former leadership campaign manager, Airey Neave. After Thatcher's May 1979 election victory, she appointed as Northern Ireland minister Humphrey Atkins, the former Conservative Party Chief Whip from 1973 to 1979, who served until September 1981; Goodhart worked under him as Parliamentary Under-Secretary. Goodhart later opposed Thatcher, supporting Michael Heseltine in the 1990 leadership contest that saw her replaced as Prime Minister by John Major. Following its foundation in 2005, Goodhart was a signatory of the Henry Jackson Society – see https://henryjacksonsociety.org/signatories-to-the-statement-of-principles/. He died in July 2015 - see https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2015/jul/07/sir-philip-goodhart; https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/11720720/Sir-Philip-Goodhart-politician-obituary.html; https://www.independent.co.uk/news/obituaries/sir-philip-goodhart-margaret-thatchers-mp-who-was-always-ahead-of-his-game-10379004.html; http://thepeerage.com/p47150.htm#i471495; https://www.hotchkiss.org/post-page/~board/alumni-news/post/march-2011-sir-philip-goodhart-44; https://www.hotchkiss.org/post-page/~board/alumni-news/post/in-memoriam-sir-philip-carter-goodhart-44.

(565) "Back from South Africa, Tory ex-minister Eldon Griffiths wrote a penetrating article in the London *Daily Telegraph* entitled "South Africa Keeps Its Cool"" – *South Africa Foundation News* of April 1976, quoted in *The Great White Hoax*, pg 26. On his knighthood, see https://www.thegazette.co.uk/London/issue/50154/supplement/1/data.pdf. He died in June 2014 – see https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/10872932/Sir-Eldon-Griffiths-obituary.html; https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2014/jun/04/sir-eldon-griffiths. His *Daily Telegraph* obituary notes that, having moved to California in 1990 and commuted until the 1992 election when he retired, Griffiths saw off "an attempt from the wealthy Thatcher confidant David Hart, an inconvenient constituent, to succeed him".

(566) John Arbuthnot Du Cane Wilkinson had supported the ABN since 1971 – see *ABN Correspondence*, September – October 1971, pg 36 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/13972/file.pdf. On his election as EFC President, see the September 1982 ABN/EFC conference press release in the Kyril Drenikoff

papers, Box 54 (see footnotes 108 and 487); *ABN Correspondence*, November – December 1982, pgs 5-20 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/14106/file.pdf, as well as March – April 1987 pgs 7-8, and July – August 1987 pgs 17-26 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/14112/file.pdf; *Eastern European Unity under Russian Communism and the Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations*, thesis by Alexander Sosenko, University of Illinois, 2010, at https://www.ideals.illinois.edu/bitstream/handle/2142/18314/Sosenko_Alexander.pdf; http://www.assembly.coe.int/nw/xml/AssemblyList/MP-Details-EN.asp?MemberID=2091; *Lobster* 12, pg 61. In 1987, Wilkinson was appointed to the parliamentary Defence Select Committee, and the following year stood as a hardliner against the moderate candidate, Sir Geoffrey Johnson Smith, for the chairmanship of the Conservative backbench defence committee. Johnson Smith won, chairing the committee from 1988 to 1993; Wilkinson however succeeded him as chairman until 1996. He was one of the Maastricht rebels who refused to support legislation proposed by Prime Minister John Major to enact the Maastricht Treaty on European Union into British law in 1993 - see http://www.brugesgroup.com/images/issues/civil_liberties/plan_b_for_europe_lost_opportunities_in_the_eu_constitution_debate_pdf.pdf; http://european-convention.europa.eu/pdf/reg/en/03/cv00/cv00567.en03.pdf. He died in March 2014 - see https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/10742653/John-Wilkinson-obituary.html; https://www.independent.co.uk/news/obituaries/john-wilkinson-conservative-mp-who-fell-out-with-john-majors-government-thanks-to-his-opposition-to-9226676.html.

(567) See Hänni in *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, pg 166. A former CDU Party Secretary from 1952 to 1958, Heck had been the founder in 1955 of the forerunner of the KAS which he chaired until 1958. In the mid-1950s, Heck was also the principal CDU official responsible for joint CIA/CDU psychological warfare operations against East Germany – see footnote 144.

(568) See *Spiegel* 8/1983 pgs 69-73 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14022471.html.

(569) On Mertes's attendance at the July 1969 Cercle dinner, see footnote 119. On his contacts with the AESP, see the 1973 activity report above and the 1977 membership list in the documentary annex to this full sixth edition. For a biography, see http://www.kas.de/wf/de/37.8251/.

(570) For the full list of participants at the 1974 CEDI Congress, see the documentary annex to this full sixth edition.

(571) See the participants' list reproduced in the documentary annex to this full sixth edition. Horten died in 2003; see https://www.kas.de/einzeltitel/-/content/kleine-chronik-der-stiftung; https://www.kas.de/statische-inhalte-detail/-/content/der-archivbestand-des-wirtschaftsrates-der-cdu-e.v.; *Spiegel* 35/1965 pgs 22-23 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-46273840.html and 8/1983 pgs 69-73 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-14022471.html.

(572) Rühle is a notable commentator on nuclear issues today; see his interesting article on early German-Israeli nuclear cooperation at https://internationalepolitik.de/de/aktion-geschaeftsfreund.

(573) Other German participants at 1983-85 Cercle meetings not mentioned elsewhere in this book were Dr. Jost Pfeiffer, a veteran CDU town councillor in

Aachen, serving from 1947 through until 1975 (early 1983, January 1984 in South Africa), Dr. Bernhard Worms, Chairman of CDU Rheinland and CDU Leader in the Nordrhein-Westfalen regional parliament, who failed to win election to the post of Prime Minister of Nordrhein-Westfalen in 1985 (July 1983 Bonn), and Dr. med. Rolf Gärtner (January 1984 Stellenbosch).

(574) President of the Clubs Perspectives et Réalités, Deniau died in 2007 - see https://www.theguardian.com/news/2007/jan/26/guardianobituaries.france; https://www.economist.com/news/2007/02/02/the-worries-of-warsaw; https://www.economist.com/special-report/2013/11/09/channel-deep-and-wide; https://www.economist.com/letters/2013/11/30/on-britain-the-jfk-assassination-colombia-life-logging-fancy-words; http://www.europarl.europa.eu/meps/en/1747/JEAN-FRANCOIS_DENIAU/history/2.

(575) See the February 1976 Dinner and Assembly participants' lists and the c. 1977 and 1978 AESP membership rolls reproduced in the documentary annex to this full sixth edition; https://www.diplomatie.gouv.fr/IMG/pdf/lacoste.pdf; https://ca.ambafrance.org/Liste-chronologique-des-ambassadeurs; https://be.ambafrance.org/Liste-chronologique-des-ambassadeurs-de-France-en-Belgique.

(576) On Malaud and the 6I, see above; footnote 489.

(577) See https://www.acrimed.org/Un-ancien-dirigeant-de-l-extreme-droite-represente-la-presse-francaise.

(578) See http://www.senat.fr/senateur/bourgine_raymond000545.html.

(579) Pasqua served in the Senate from 1988 to 1993, 1995 to 1999 and 2004 to 2011; he died in July 2015 - see http://www.senat.fr/senateur/pasqua_charles77053g.html; https://www.lemonde.fr/disparitions/article/2015/06/29/mort-de-charles-pasqua-homme-de-reseaux-et-de-bons-mots_4664182_3382.html; https://www.theguardian.com/world/2015/jul/09/charles-pasqua. On Garnier-Lançon's 1986 withdrawal as French Cercle coordinator and her replacement by Magdeleine Anglade, see Großmann in *Die Internationale der Konservativen*, pg 544. Anglade, a French MEP for the CNIP from October 1982 to July 1989, was also Secretary-General of Bourgine's Valmonde Group – see her letter to Garnier-Lançon of 12th December 1984 about the February 1985 Cercle meeting in Washington; http://www.europarl.europa.eu/meps/en/1772/MAGDELEINE_ANGLADE/history/2.

(580) Probst died in June 2014 – see https://www.lemonde.fr/politique/article/2014/06/13/le-chiraquien-jean-francois-probst-commentateur-acerbe-est-mort_4437421_823448.html; http://www.academie-gaullisme.fr/academie-gaullisme647/academie-gaullisme647.html, whose officers since 2002 have included the late Luc Beyer de Ryke and Paul Violet: see https://www.france-politique.fr/wiki/Académie_du_Gaullisme_(ACADGAUL).

(581) Copel sat from 1992 to 2004 in the Aube General Council as a UDF representative. Other French participants at 1982-85 Cercle meetings not mentioned elsewhere in this book were the economist William François (June 1982 Wildbad Kreuth, July 1983 Bonn); Pierre-Henri Renard, the French Ambassador to Uganda in 1975-79 (i. e. during the June 1976 hostage crisis of Air France flight 139 at Entebbe airport; June 1982 Wildbad Kreuth); Jules Pujo, until 1978 Vice-President of the CNPF employers' federation (June 1982 Wildbad Kreuth), perhaps related to Pierre

Pujo, a veteran leader of Action Française (on whom see https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pierre_Pujo; https://www.nouvelobs.com/politique/20071110.OBS4104/deces-d-un-dirigeant-historique-de-l-action-francaise.html); Pierre Joannon, a member of the extreme right-wing journal *Défense de l'Occident* in 1967, and from 1973 on the Irish Consul General in Provence-Alpes-Côte d'Azur (July 1983 Bonn, January 1984 Stellenbosch, July 1984 Bonn), and "Pierre Mehaignery, MP, President of the Regional Council of Ile de France" (July 1983 Bonn), no doubt the misspelled Pierre Méhaignerie, the President of the General Council of Ille-et-Vilaine from 1982 to 2001 who served as Agriculture Minister under Prime Minister Barre/President Giscard d'Estaing from 1977 to 1981, as Infrastructure, Housing, Planning and Transport Minister under the 1986-88 cohabitation government of Prime Minister Chirac/President Mitterrand (in which Pasqua was Interior Minister and Chalandon Justice Minister) and then as Justice Minister under Prime Minister Balladur/President Mitterrand in 1993-95.

(582) On Robles Piquer and his Fundación Cánovas del Castillo, which was given five million Marks in 1985 by German development minister and fellow Cercle member Jürgen Warnke, see above and footnote 251. Fraga and Robles Piquer were accompanied at the early 1983 Cercle meeting by Guillermo Kirkpatrick Mendaro, elected Alianza Popular MP for Granada in October 1982. In November 1985, Fraga was elected to the Honorary Presidium of the European Freedom Council alongside its Honorary President Habsburg, Yaroslav Stetsko of the ABN, and FARI President Sir Frederic Bennett; Guillermo Kirkpatrick was elected as Vice-President of the EFC Executive Board under EFC President John Wilkinson MP – see footnote 566.

Other Europeans attending 1982-85 Cercle meetings not mentioned elsewhere in this book were the Portuguese industrialist, director of the daily newspaper *O Seculo* and Professor at the Autonomous University of Lisbon Jaime Nogueira Pinto, a regular Cercle participant (June 1982 Wildbad Kreuth, early 1983, July 1983 Bonn, January 1984 Stellenbosch, February 1985 Washington) who was a close friend of Jacques Jonet (see http://ofuturopresente.blogspot.com/2007/04/adieu-mon-ami-short-memoir-of-jacques.html) and who spoke at a September 1987 Club de l'Horloge seminar with Enrique Gómez Hurtado who attended four of the five abovementioned Cercle meetings – see footnotes 530 and 617; the Portuguese businessman Edo Fernandes (January 1984 Stellenbosch); the Austrian MP from 1970 to 1999 Dr. Dr. Friedrich König, Deputy Leader of the ÖVP [Austrian People's Party] and Observer in the EPP fraction of the European Parliament in 1990-94 (both 1983 Cercle meetings); the Dutch industrialist Frans Otten, member of the Board of Directors of Philips (early 1983, February 1985 Washington) – on the contributions to the Cercle complex by T. Sleeswijk Visser, head of security for Philips, and J. C. Ramaer, Director of the International Relations Bureau of Philips, see footnotes 472 and 556; the Italian General Umberto Capuzzo, the Commander of the Carabinieri from February 1980 to September 1981 ("General Capuzzo, a former military attaché in Bonn and Moscow, is the highest ranking military figure in the fight against terrorism" - https://www.nytimes.com/1981/02/03/world/antiterrorist-police-in-italy-assert-the-worst-is-over.html; see also *Damoclès*, October 1981, pg 4), then from 1981 to 1985 Army Chief of General Staff, attending a June 1986 EIS conference in Paris with Garnier-Lançon, Huyn and Kraemer before serving from July 1987 to April 1994 as a Christian Democrat Senator – see http://www.senato.it/leg/11/BGT/Schede/Attsen/00000465.htm; http://www.rainews.it/dl/rainews/articoli/Difesa-morto-il-generale-Cappuzzo-Fu-comandante-dell-Arma-e-capo-di-stato-maggiore-dell-esercito-6769ef65-d4e8-43e3-9c90-e582d98d5f9c.html (February 1985 Washington); the Italian General Mario Buscemi who was Commander of the Italian military contingent in Iraqi Kurdistan in 1991, Army Deputy Chief of Staff in 1993 and Commander of the Sicilian region from 1993 to 1995 - see https://it.wikipedia.org/wiki/Operazione_Provide_Comfort; https://it.wikipedia.org/wiki/Comando_Militare_Esercito_%22Sicilia%22; https://it.wikipedia.org/wiki/Operazione_Vespri_siciliani; https://www.quirinale.it/elementi/6326 (February 1985 Washington); the Italian Captain Santino (February 1985 Washington); the Dutch Professor Frans Alphons Maria Alting von Geusau of the University of Utrecht and Professor of International Law at the University of Tilburg from 1965 to 1998 who was the Advisor on Peace, Security and Disarmament to the Dutch government in 1981 (February 1985 Washington), on whom see *De Waarheid* of 29/9/81 pg 3 at https://resolver.kb.nl/resolve?urn=ddd:010377655:mpeg21:pdf (also see pg 4 re VdB, de Kerchove and de Bonvoisin); the Turkish industrialist Eymen Topbas (February 1985 Washington) .

(583) Hanks wrote Special Reports for the IFPA in 1980-87 and died in 2001 – see http://www.arlingtoncemetery.net/rjhanks.htm.

(584) Helms died in July 2008 - see https://www.nytimes.com/2008/07/05/us/politics/00helms.html; http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/content/article/2008/07/06/AR2008070602321.html; https://www.latimes.com/news/la-me-helms5-2008jul05-story.html; https://www.theguardian.com/world/2008/jul/04/usa; https://www.economist.com/obituary/2008/07/10/jesse-helms; http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/7490458.stm; https://www.wral.com/conservative-icon-jesse-helms-dead-at-86/1755723/.

(585) On McCormack, see https://history.state.gov/departmenthistory/people/mccormack-richard-t; https://www.adst.org/OH%20TOCs/McCORMACK,%20Richard%20T.toc.pdf; https://www.c-span.org/person/?richardmccormack. As his interview with the Association for Diplomatic Studies and Training referenced above reveals, McCormack had originally planned to serve in the Reagan Administration as head of the State Department's intelligence division, the INR: "During the course of the [1981 Reagan] transition, I applied through the normal political process of the White House to be the Director of Intelligence and Research at the State Department. I was supported in this by Ted Shackley, the legendary former Deputy Director for Operations at CIA". Shackley and later McCormack were American chairmen of the Cercle.

(586) Besides Strauß and Marx, the former officials concerned were probably the then CDU Party President Rainer Barzel, the former NSDAP and then CDU MP Otto Fürst von Bismarck, the then CDU MP and later MEP Günter Rinsche, and the Chairman of the Bavarian FDP until 1970, Dieter Bahner senior. Search for the cable reference at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/.

(587) Weyrich had "met Jack Wilson, an aide of Joseph Coors, patriarch of the Coors brewing family [and later co-founder of the Heritage Foundation with Weyrich and Feulner]. Frustrated with the state of public policy research, they founded Analysis and Research Inc. in 1971, but this organization failed to gain traction" – see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Paul_Weyrich. On Weyrich, see footnotes 404 and 553. Victor A. Fediay was a longstanding aide to Senator Thurmond who often accompanied Lucier and Carbaugh abroad for or with Senator Helms - search, for example, for cables 1974PHNOM13524, 1975MONTEV03771 and 1976BUENOS04449 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/.

(588) See https://www.nytimes.com/1982/07/01/us/departing-senate-aide-leaves-trail-of-questions.html. On Hunt, see footnote 14 of the CIOC-CIDCC-Sint

Unum annex. From late 1979 on, Carbaugh organised the **Madison Group** which brought together many of the Cercle's American friends – see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP90-00552R000605860001-7.pdf.

(589) See footnotes 215, 319 and 560; https://www.adst.org/OH%20TOCs/Lanpher,%20Edward%20Gibson.toc.pdf; declassified State Department cables 1979LONDON18623 of 20th September 1979 and 1979STATE247802 of 21st September 1979 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/; Charles Moore, *Margaret Thatcher: The Authorized Biography, Volume One – Not for Turning*, Penguin, London 2013 at https://books.google.co.uk/books?id=lXMFs8427kQC&q=Carbaugh#v=snippet&q=Carbaugh&f=false. On Rhodesia, Thatcher had been in contact with the 6I's Nicholas Elliott: see https://www.margaretthatcher.org/document/116996. Langemann reported that, following the signature of the Lancaster House Agreement on 21st December 1979, "on the 5th and 6th January 1980, a group from within the Circle met in Zürich to discuss executive measures [... for] influencing the situation in Rhodesia and South Africa from a European Conservative viewpoint".

(590) See Anderson and Anderson, pgs 206-210.

(591) See https://www.nytimes.com/1981/04/22/world/behind-senator-helms-a-cherubic-assistant-reigns.html.html.

(592) Carbaugh died in March 2006 - see http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/content/article/2006/03/23/AR2006032301950.html; https://www.washingtontimes.com/news/2006/mar/22/20060322-111957-5926r/.

(593) Carlisle also died in March 2006 - see http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/content/article/2006/03/31/AR2006033101917.html; the CSP's obituary at https://www.centerforsecuritypolicy.org/2006/03/30/margo-d-b-carlisle-r-i-p-2/; http://www.unz.com/print/PolicyRev-1979q1-00079; Anderson and Anderson, pgs 206-210; https://www.c-span.org/person/?margocarlisle. Carlisle was a trustee of the Philadelphia Society from 1982 to 1985 and again from 1993 to 1996; she was its President from 1995 to 1996 – see footnote 597; https://phillysoc.org/?s=Carlisle.

(594) The Cercle lists misspell Balestrieri as Ballestreri (June 1982 Wildbad Kreuth), Bellestreri (early 1983) and Balestreri (January 1984 Stellenbosch). See http://fc95d419f4478b3b6e5f-3f71d0fe2b653c4f00f32175760e96e7.r87.cf1.rackcdn.com/810226%201545%20MT-Senators%20(600-171).pdf (pg 11) for the correct spelling. On Perle's Cercle membership, see footnotes 310 and 432.

(595) See http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1976/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1976-38.pdf; http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1977/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1977-09.pdf; http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1978/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1978-06.pdf; http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1978/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1978-39.pdf; https://books.google.com/books/about/The_Strategic_Dimension_of_East_West_Tra.html?id=a4pBAAAAIAAJ&redir_esc=y; http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1979/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1979-21.pdf (search for Kostick); https://news.google.com/newspapers?nid=1696&dat=19800207&id=6O4aAAAAIBAJ&sjid=BUcEAAAAIBAJ&pg=3731,970878&hl=en; http://calhoun.nps.edu/bitstream/handle/10945/22034/politicalimplica00beni.pdf; https://www.nytimes.com/1981/02/12/opinion/l-soviet-natural-gas-can-choke-america-s-allies-002225.html; https://taiwantoday.tw/news.php?unit=4&post=4922 (see footnote 201 above); https://books.google.com/books?id=1dtn0olA8PcC&pg=PA440&lpg=PA440

&dq=%22Miles+Costick%22&redir_esc=y#v=onepage&q=%22Miles%20Costick%22&f=false; *Damoclès*, April 1982, pg 14.

(596) On Allen, see above; footnotes 67 and 461; https://www.nytimes.com/1982/01/05/us/texts-of-allen-resignation-and-reagan-reply.html; https://www.hoover.org/profiles/richard-v-allen; https://militarist-monitor.org/profile/richard-allen/; https://phillysoc.org/tps_meetings/do-conservative-ideas-necessarily-have-conservative-consequences/, an April 1983 meeting of the Philadelphia Society attended by Allen, Carlisle, Feulner and Harrigan.

(597) Schneider later served as Chairman of President H. W. Bush's General Advisory Committee on Arms Control in 1991, and was a frequent signatory for the neo-conservative Project for a New American Century from 1998 on – see footnote 602. Appointed by Secretary of Defense Rumsfeld as Chairman of the Defense Science Board in 2001, he served until 2009. On Schneider, see http://www.unz.com/print/Search/?ContentType=Article&Author=William+Schneider&Action=Search; search for cables 1974STATE000867, 1975SAIGON03773 and 1976STATE087636 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/; https://www.worldcat.org/title/china-the-turning-point/oclc/17381112; https://www.worldcat.org/title/korea-in-the-world-today/oclc/4499601; https://www.worldcat.org/title/south-africa-the-vital-link/oclc/2955936; https://www.worldcat.org/title/nicaragua-an-ally-under-siege/oclc/3967043; https://phillysoc.org/tps_meetings/the-future-of-freedom-the-problems-and-the-prospects-2/; https://phillysoc.org/tps_meetings/u-s-foreign-policy-and-national-security/; https://www.newyorker.com/magazine/2006/04/17/the-iran-plans; https://www.c-span.org/person/?williamschneider03; https://militarist-monitor.org/profile/william-schneider-jr/; footnote 598. Philadelphia Society Trustees have included Feulner, Carlisle, Evans, Schneider, Edwards, Gayner, Harrigan, Lefever and Shakespeare – see https://phillysoc.org/about/past-presidents/; https://phillysoc.org/about/past-trustees/.

(598) On the IFPA, see above; http://www.ifpa.org/; http://www.ifpa.org/staff/bios/rlp.php; *Pittsburgh Post-Gazette*, 20-21/4/81 at https://tueriesdubrabant.1fr1.net/t2517p125-brian-crozier. A 1971 book co-written by Pfaltzgraff and former CIA officer William R. Kintner for the American Enterprise Institute was reviewed that November by William Schneider – see http://www.unz.com/print/AmSpectator-1971nov-00020. Pfaltzgraff was a founder member of the CSI – see footnote 492; he was also a signatory of the June 1983 "Urgent Appeal for Peace in Freedom" - see footnote 472.

(599) On John Barron who was in Navy intelligence in Berlin from 1953 to 1957 before later joining the *Reader's Digest*, see https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/local/2005/03/09/john-barron-dies/027f23b7-5d06-46bb-ad3f-4e74cbb533ac/. Claire Sterling and her "Bulgarian Connection" were debunked in *Manufacturing Consent*, Edward S. Herman and Noam Chomsky, Pantheon Books, New York 1988, and in Herman and O'Sullivan, listed in the Sources annex. On Sterling who died in 1995, see http://www.oac.cdlib.org/findaid/ark:/13030/kt4z09r9s3/entire_text/; https://www.independent.co.uk/news/people/obituary-claire-sterling-1588401.html; https://www.nytimes.com/1995/06/18/obituaries/claire-sterling-76-dies-writer-on-crime-and-terror.html. On Ledeen, see Herman and O'Sullivan; footnote 607. On *The Fourth Protocol*, see footnote 471.

(600) On Edwards' role in the ACWF and the *Ukrainian Weekly*, see, for example, http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/1978/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1978-25.pdf, pg 7. On the 4th WACL Conference, see footnote 108. On Edwards' role in coordinating a

1982-83 "Urgent Appeal for Peace in Freedom" also signed by Barnett, Decter, Gayner and Pfaltzgraff amongst others, see footnote 472. On the Philadelphia Society, of which Edwards was a trustee in 2001-2004 and President in 2003-2004, see footnote 597.

(601) On Gayner, see https://www.worldcat.org/title/allende-and-the-failure-of-chilean-marxism/oclc/1206073; State Department cable 1975SAIGON03773 of 30th March 1975 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/; footnotes 472 and 597; https://www.heritage.org/search?contains=gayner; https://phillysoc.org/?s= Gayner.

(602) Iklé's predecessor as Under-Secretary of Defense for Policy was Robert Komer, his successor Paul Wolfowitz, also later a Cercle member – see Großmann's *Die Internationale der Konservativen*, pg 552. In 1988, Iklé joined CSIS; he was a founding signatory of the statement of principles of the neo-conservative Project for a New American Century in June 1997, served from 2001 to 2005 as a member of the Defense Policy Board Advisory Committee (under chairman Richard Perle in 2001-2003), and died in November 2011. For Iklé's reports for RAND, see https://www.rand.org/pubs/authors/i/ikle_fred_charles.html. On Iklé, see https://militarist-monitor.org/profile/fred-ikle-1924-2011/; https://www.csis.org/news/csis-mourns-loss-fred-c-ikl%C3%A9; https://www.washingtontimes.com/news/2011/nov/16/cold-war-strategist-ikle-dies-ex-pentagon-leader/; https://www.washingtonpost.com/local/obituaries/fred-charles-ikle-reagan-administration-defense-official-dies-at-87/2011/11/11/gIQA5AlzQN_story.html; https://www.c-span.org/person/?fredikle. On the PNAC, whose signatories at various times have included, of those named in this book, Allen, Bergner, William F. Buckley, Cambone, Carlucci, Cheney, Decter, Feulner, Gaffney, Perle, Pipes, Rumsfeld, Schneider, Shulsky, Weyrich and Wolfowitz, see http://www.publiceye.org/pnac_chart/pnac.html. Their key document, the September 2000 report *Rebuilding America's Defenses*, is available at http://pnac.info/RebuildingAmericasDefenses.pdf.

(603) Letters from Jameson to Meyer about the February Cercle 1985 meeting can be found at https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP87-00462R000100020009-5.pdf and https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP87-00462R000100020005-9.pdf. On Meyer, see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/DOC_0000028820.pdf; https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP88T00988R000100090011-1.pdf; https://www.nationalreview.com/2011/07/predicting-soviet-collapse-paul-kengor/; https://www.americanthinker.com/articles/2006/10/the_big_secret_of_that_leaked.html; https://www.americanthinker.com/author/herbert_e_meyer/; http://www.stormkingpress.com/; footnote 514 on Meyer and Hart; https://www.c-span.org/video/?7808-1/role-intelligence-free-society for a May 1989 seminar with fellow Cercle members Constantine Menges and Michael Ledeen; https://www.c-span.org/video/?153401-1/ronald-reagan-won-cold-war for a November 1999 Heritage Foundation conference celebrating the tenth anniversary of the fall of the Berlin Wall. Meyer died on 23rd June 2019 – see http://www.sanjuanjournal.com/obituaries/herb-meyer-dec-31-1945-june-23-2019/; https://spectator.org/homage-to-a-cold-war-prophet/.

As the George Washington University's National Security Archive makes clear (https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB428/), Meyer, Stilwell and Menges - all participants at the February 1985 Cercle meeting - had been involved in the November 1983 Able Archer exercise and its fall-out, the closest brush with Armageddon between the two superpowers since the 1962 Cuban missile crisis. As for Meyer's 30th November 1983 report "Why the World Is So Dangerous", "this colorful missive to CIA leadership", written a fortnight after Able Archer concluded on November 11th, completely sidestepped the nuclear near-disaster that had just occurred, truly a Dr. Strangelove moment. The National Security Archive post referenced above also reproduces a "Department of State document recounting that the United States "sanitized" the Special National Intelligence Estimate (SNIE) [SNIE 11-10-84/JX, authored primarily by the CIA's National Intelligence Officer for the Soviet Union, Fritz Ermarth, approved by the Vice-Chair NIC Meyer] on the War Scare, removing all mentions of Able Archer 83 and the Soviet reaction to it, before providing it to NATO. Thus, the U.S. hid the danger of Able Archer 83 from the very allies who participated in the exercise." On Able Archer 83, see footnote 490.

(604) Quote from http://michellemalkin.com/2004/07/12/constantine-menges-rip/. On Menges, who died in 2004, also see https://www.hudson.org/research/3634-an-appreciation-of-constantine-menges; https://www.rand.org/pubs/authors/m/menges_constantine_christo.html; search for Menges at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/; https://muse.jhu.edu/article/437703/pdf; http://www.fumento.com/people/menges.html.

(605) See https://www.washingtontimes.com/news/2004/jul/15/20040715-082645-4699r/; http://www.thirdworldtraveler.com/Foreign_Policy/Rollback.html.

(606) See https://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/articles/A48344-2004Jul13.html.

(607) See https://www.c-span.org/video/?553-1/purpose-american-power; https://www.c-span.org/video/?7808-1/role-intelligence-free-society. Also see https://www.c-span.org/person/?costantinemenges; https://ashbrook.org/event/lecture-1989-menges/. In 1993, Menges became a Professor in the Political Science Department of George Washington University; in 1999, he returned for a third time to the Hudson Institute as a Senior Scholar, a post he held until his death in 2004. He was also a Fellow at the Center for Security Policy – see http://www.hudson.org/research/3634-an-appreciation-of-constantine-menges; https://www.centerforsecuritypolicy.org/2004/07/13/dr-constantine-c-menges-r-i-p-2/; https://www.wnd.com/2004/07/25550/; https://www.newsmax.com/Pre-2008/ConstantineMengesSenior/2004/07/11/id/680100/. Ledeen was named as a participant at the February-March 1986 Cercle meeting in Washington by Hänni in *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, pg 169.

(608) See https://consortiumnews.com/wp-content/uploads/2014/12/lostchapter.pdf, pgs 10-11, from https://consortiumnews.com/2013/03/14/iran-contras-lost-chapter/ by Robert Parry; https://www.reaganlibrary.gov/sites/default/files/archives/reference/scanned-nsdds/nsdd77.pdf. Also see Parry at https://consortiumnews.com/2014/12/28/the-victory-of-perception-management/, https://consortiumnews.com/2015/06/04/how-reagans-propaganda-succeeded/, https://consortiumnews.com/2017/03/25/how-us-flooded-the-world-with-psyops/ and https://consortiumnews.com/2017/09/13/reagan-documents-shed-light-on-u-s-meddling/. Groundbreaking journalist Robert Parry died on 27th January 2018 – see https://www.nytimes.com/2018/01/29/obituaries/robert-parry-investigative-reporter-dies.html; https://www.washingtonpost.com/local/obituaries/robert-parry-associated-press-reporter-who-covered-iran-contra-affair-dies-at-68/2018/01/29/c0eb3d80-0506-11e8-8777-2a059f168dd2_story.html; https://www.thenation.com/article/remembering-investigative-journalist-robert-parry/. Former NSC member Walter Raymond died in 2003 – see https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/local/2003/04/22/

obituaries/ca3b30e9-1e44-4a77-8f83-8b543b50d6b4/.

(609) See https://consortiumnews.com/wp-content/uploads/2014/12/Raymond-Guidance.pdf, from https://consortiumnews.com/2014/12/31/murdoch-scaife-and-cia-propaganda/ by Robert Parry.

(610) See https://consortiumnews.com/wp-content/uploads/2014/12/crozier-memo.pdf, from https://consortiumnews.com/2014/12/31/murdoch-scaife-and-cia-propaganda/ by Robert Parry.

(611) See https://www.iwp.edu/books/the-strategic-plan-that-won-the-cold-war/; https://www.reaganlibrary.gov/sites/default/files/archives/reference/scanned-nsdds/nsdd66.pdf; https://www.reaganlibrary.gov/sites/default/files/archives/reference/scanned-nsdds/nsdd75.pdf

(612) See https://www.salon.com/2008/07/23/new_churchcomm/.

(613) See https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP87M00539R002403890009-4.pdf; https://www.iwp.edu/faculty/norman-a-bailey/; https://www.iwp.edu/wp-content/uploads/2006/01/20060126_IWP_Brochure.pdf.

(614) See https://www.salon.com/2008/07/23/new_churchcomm/. On Bailey, also see https://www.c-span.org/person/?normanbailey.

(615) See https://www.af.mil/About-Us/Biographies/Display/Article/107876/lieutenant-general-james-a-abrahamson/.

(616) See footnotes 186, 199 and 213; http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1978/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1978-35.pdf; http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1978/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1978-50.pdf; http://www.ukrweekly.com/archive/pdf2/1981/The_Ukrainian_Weekly_1981-40.pdf; https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP02T06251R000900290022-4.pdf. In 2003, Moorer chaired a Commission of Inquiry into the 1967 *USS Liberty* incident, accusing Israel of deliberately sinking the American spy ship – see https://en.wikisource.org/wiki/The_Moorer_Report. Moorer died in 2004 – see http://www.arlingtoncemetery.net/thmoorer.htm; https://www.history.navy.mil/browse-by-topic/people/chiefs-of-naval-operations/admiral-thomas-h--moorer.html.

(617) Shevchenko died in 1998 – on him, see https://jamestown.org/about-us/; https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP88G01117R000802620003-0.pdf; https://people.com/archive/defector-arkady-shevchenko-and-wife-elaine-set-a-heartening-example-of-east-west-relations-vol-23-no-14/; https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/entertainment/books/1985/04/07/the-defection-of-arkady-shevchenko/830797f2-47da-41c0-a421-607a76fd2296/; https://www.upi.com/Archives/1986/02/27/Arkady-Shevchenko-the-highest-ranking-Soviet-official-ever-to-defect/2951509864400/; http://openvault.wgbh.org/catalog/V_406562B54AFB4916A04872F3767B2141; https://www.c-span.org/video/?20919-1/history-soviet-union; https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/local/1998/03/12/soviet-defector-arkady-shevchenko-dies/3fc5f474-e7b7-4d1c-b6f2-e565dfa1ef22/; https://www.nytimes.com/1998/03/11/us/arkady-n-shevchenko-67-a-key-soviet-defector-dies.html; https://www.independent.co.uk/news/obituaries/obituary-arkady-shevchenko-1151496.html.

Other North American Cercle members not mentioned elsewhere in this book include Senator William V. Roth Jr., Republican of Delaware and Member of the Senate Select Committee on Intelligence (early 1983, January 1984 Stellenbosch); Ian Butterfield, Assistant to Senator Roth (early 1983, January 1984 Stellenbosch); Robert M. McKinney, financier, President of the Jefferson Corporation (early 1983, January 1984 Stellenbosch, February 1985 Washington); John Lichowski, NSC (July 1983 Bonn); Senator Steven Symms, Republican of Idaho whose 1980 election to the Senate unseated the incumbent since 1957, Senator Frank Church (January 1984 Stellenbosch); Rolf Graage, industrialist (February 1985 Washington), on whom see https://www.nytimes.com/1983/07/23/us/company-admits-overcharging-us.html; Robert H. Knight, former Chairman, New York Federal Reserve (February 1985 Washington); Jeff Bergner, Staff Director, Senate Foreign Relations Committee and a later PNAC signatory - see https://militarist-monitor.org/profile/jeffrey-bergner/ (February 1985 Washington) and James Critchfield, President, Tetra Tech International (February 1985 Washington).

Critchfield was a former senior CIA officer, having joined the CIA in 1948 and served as the main liaison between the CIA and the Gehlen Org from 1949 to 1956. Critchfield then served as chief of the CIA's Eastern European Division and its Near East and South Asia Division; in the late 1960s and early 1970s, he was the CIA's National Intelligence Officer on energy issues – see his biography at https://isgp-studies.com/le-cercle-membership-list. Having retired from the CIA in 1974 and joined Tetra Tech in 1975, he was Jameson's boss: "Between [retiring from the CIA in] 1973 and 1979, Mr. [Donald] Jameson was employed as Senior Scientist and Project Director at Tetra Tech Inc. and as Secretary-Treasurer of Tetra Tech International. He directed US government projects in energy and Soviet weapons systems for Tetra Tech which provided technical services in the Middle East, especially Oman, where the company operated in an advisory capacity on oil, water and economic development" – see the 1992 IFF book *Intelligence and the New World Order*, pg ix, listed in the Sources annex under Various authors (IFF). Critchfield was identified in the programme for the February 1985 Cercle meeting (as opposed to the participants' list) as belonging to Research Associates International. To watch Critchfield talking about early CIA action in Central Europe, see https://www.c-span.org/video/?71352-1/us-postwar-intelligence-europe.

Latin American members of the Cercle included, from Colombia, Álvaro Gómez Hurtado, guest speaker at the 9th WACL Conference in Seoul in May 1976, participant at the joint CEDI/Cercle meeting in November 1976, Ambassador to the United States in 1983-85, Presidential candidate in 1986 and (National Salvation Movement) 1990, kidnapped by M-19 in 1988, co-author of the Colombian Constitution of 1991 and co-President of the Constituent Council, Ambassador to France from March 1992 to 1993 – see https://www.legifrance.gouv.fr/affichTexte.do?cidTexte=JORFTEXT000000174984, assassinated in November 1995 (June 1982 Wildbad Kreuth, February 1985 Washington); Álvaro's younger brother Enrique Gómez Hurtado, Ambassador to France from July 1979 to 1983 – see https://www.legifrance.gouv.fr/jo_pdf.do?numJO=0&dateJO=19790717&pageDebut=01859, spoke at a September 1987 seminar by the Club de l'Horloge (on which see footnote 530) cohosted by Albertini's ALEPS alongside Jaime Nogueira Pinto (see footnote 582) who had attended four 1982-85 Cercle meetings with him – see http://www.clubdelhorloge.fr/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=265:l-amerique-latine-victime-de-l-etatisme-ou-du-capitalisme-a&catid=14&Itemid=229, Senator from 1991 to 2010, President of the Conservative Party (June 1982 Wildbad Kreuth, July 1983 Bonn, January 1984 Stellenbosch, February 1985 Washington);

Daniel Muzuera, Colombian MP (June 1982 Wildbad Kreuth); and from Chile, Alfredo Alcaino (February 1985 Washington) and Francisco Bulnes, Chilean Senator (February 1985 Washington).

(618) *Die Internationale der Konservativen*, pgs 543 and 548.

(619) On South African representation in the Cercle, see Hänni in *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, pg 166. Peter Rae Killen, Deputy Secretary in the Department of Foreign Affairs (DFA) and the channel for communication between the DFA and the Cercle in the late 1970s and 1980s, had been South African Consul-General in London from 1965 on – see https://www.thegazette.co.uk/London/issue/43871/page/330/data.pdf.

(620) See https://www.vie-publique.fr/discours/135262-allocution-de-m-francois-mitterrand-president-de-la-republique-loc; https://www.legifrance.gouv.fr/jo_pdf.do?numJO=0&dateJO=19811204&pageDebut=03303; https://www.legifrance.gouv.fr/jo_pdf.do?numJO=0&dateJO=19871009&pageDebut=11751.

(621) See https://www.jta.org/1972/03/10/archive/s-africa-to-establish-soon-a-consulate-general-in-israel; https://www.jta.org/1972/03/28/archive/south-africas-first-consulate-general-in-israel-opens-next-month; https://digitalarchive.wilsoncenter.org/document/116594; https://www.jta.org/1975/12/22/archive/the-south-african-consulate-general-in-israel-is-to; search for declassified State Department cables 1974PRETOR02054 of 15th May 1974 and 1977TELAV00577 of 26th January 1977 at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/. Fincham, a senior diplomat and lawyer, had previously been Under-Secretary at the DFA in charge of international organisations, representing South Africa at the UN Conference on the Law of Treaties in 1968 and the International Atomic Energy Agency in 1970.

The opening of diplomatic relations between South Africa and Israel was advantageous for both countries; Israel had lost most of its African contacts following its 1967 Six Day War, whereas, for South Africa, Israel was the only Middle Eastern country to accept diplomatic relations with it until the 1990s. The April 1972 opening of the South African Consulate-General in Israel was soon reciprocated; that September, Israel abstained in a UN vote to grant observer status to the ANC. In April 1974, General van den Bergh and Eschel Rhoodie travelled to Israel to meet Israeli Defence Minister Shimon Peres and Labour Minister Yitzak Rabin, soon to be appointed Prime Minister; in November 1974, Peres paid a secret visit to Pretoria. The following year, Peres met his South African counterpart, P. W. Botha, in Switzerland to sign the Israel-South Africa Agreement (ISSA) on defence cooperation. In January and again in March 1975, South African and Israeli military and intelligence officers met to discuss arms sales, and in April 1975, Peres and Botha signed a second and more comprehensive defence agreement (SECMENT) whilst Rhoodie and van den Bergh visited Jerusalem to liaise with Peres and Rabin.

These contacts paved the way for an official State visit to Israel by South African Prime Minister Vorster in April 1976. "And unlike most high-profile diplomatic initiatives, the South African Foreign Ministry had virtually nothing to do with it. Vorster authorized Hendrik van den Bergh, Information Minister Connie Mulder and Mulder's deputy, Eschel Rhoodie, to bypass the Foreign Ministry and arrange a trip to Israel to meet defense and intelligence officials [...] While the official diplomats advocated treading cautiously, Rhoodie and van den Bergh made a strong alliance with Israel their priority [...] Vorster's secretly planned trip was news to the South African ambassador in Tel Aviv, Charles Fincham, as well as to Foreign Minister

Hilgard Muller and his secretary, Brand Fourie. Rhoodie's shadow foreign ministry had arranged everything behind their backs" – Polakow-Suransky, pgs 89-90. During his visit, Vorster visited the assembly line at Israel Aircraft Industries to see Kfir fighter jets being made; Israel later helped the South Africans develop the Atlas Cheetah jet - Polakow-Suransky, pgs 81, 95 and 151; see footnote 119. The pace of covert military cooperation accelerated following the unanimous adoption in November 1977 of UN Security Council Resolution 418 which rendered mandatory the previous voluntary arms embargo against South Africa.

Before his 1976 State visit, Vorster was uncertain of his reception in Israel in the light of his wartime pro-Nazi sympathies, a difficulty compounded by the actions of his secret emissary to Israel, Hendrik van den Bergh, only six years before the opening of its diplomatic office there in 1972. In September 1966, the South African National Council to Combat Communism had organised an International Symposium on Communism, at which future WACL notables Suzanne Labin, President of the International Conference on Political Warfare (CIGP), and Professor Stefan Possony, Director of the Hoover Institution on Peace, War and Revolution, had spoken alongside van den Bergh, who was at the time chief of the South African Security Police. Van den Bergh's presentation on sabotage in South Africa equated Jews with Communists and aroused a storm of protest – see http://www.ajcarchives.org/AJC_DATA/Files/1967_13_SouthAfrica.pdf (pgs 454-455); https://www.jta.org/1966/10/12/archive/so-african-security-chief-links-jews-with-communism-apologizes. The need of both countries to break their diplomatic isolation however trumped any concerns about "trading with the enemy". On Labin, Possony and WACL, see above and footnote 108.

(622) Gavin Relly, Chairman of AAC from 1982 to 1990, led a group of South African businessmen to meet the banned ANC in Zambia in 1985. The founder of the Rembrandt Group, Anton Rupert, was also a Cercle member – see Hänni in *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, pg 166. The Cercle list misspells Hersov's name as Hersow – see https://prabook.com/web/basil_edward.hersov/339184; https://books.google.co.uk/books?id=HgyXDwAAQBAJ&pg=PA348&lpg=PA348&dq=basil+hersov&source=bl&ots=sJMntMRzJD&sig=ACfU3U2L8xNBG6AjVVyv43wKwzWps7a_5w&hl=en&sa=X&redir_esc=y#v=onepage&q=basil%20hersov&f=false.

(623) For Fourie's letter announcing the 1983 business seminar, see http://africanactivist.msu.edu/document_metadata.php?objectid=32-130-69B.

(624) From 1985 to 1989, Fourie served as Chairman of the Board of the South African Broadcasting Corporation; he died in July 2008 - see https://www.iol.co.za/news/south-africa/leading-apartheid-era-diplomat-dies-410493; https://www.ufs.ac.za/docs/librariesprovider43/archive-for-contemporary-affairs-(previously-known-as-inch)-documents/scanned-inventories-documents/fourie-bg-2254-eng.pdf.

Another South African Cercle participant – at the January 1984 Stellenbosch meeting - was **Pieter Kenyon Van der Byl**, the South African-born former Minister of Foreign Affairs of Rhodesia who had been one of the most notorious figures in the Rhodesian government under Ian Smith.

During his lengthy career, Van der Byl served as Rhodesian Minister for Information [press censorship] and Tourism, Minister for Foreign Affairs and Minister for Defence. At the time of the 1984 Cercle meeting, Van der Byl was still a

Zimbabwean MP loyal to Ian Smith; after parliamentary seats reserved for whites were abolished in 1987, he retreated to live in South Africa, later becoming a Cercle regular – see above; footnote 525.

SOURCES

As this book focuses on the Cercle Pinay from its origins until the fall of the Soviet Union in 1991, it does not include the few print and web sources that refer to the Cercle under the later Chairmanships of Christian Schwarz-Schilling (1994-1995), Jonathan Aitken (1995-1997), Norman Lamont (1997-2010), Michael Ancram (Lord Lothian, 2010-2013), Rory Stewart (2013-2014) and Nadhim Zahawi (2015-2018) - see however the Epilogue; footnotes 466 and 525; https://publications.parliament.uk/pa/cm/cmregmem/100927/lidington_david.htm; https://www.politicshome.com/news/article/excl-top-tories-face-questions-over-links-to-secretive-foreign-affairs-group. Two British publications not integrated here are Paul Lashmar and James Oliver's book on the IRD (*Britain's secret propaganda war 1948 - 1977*, Sutton, Stroud 1998) and Stephen Dorril's *MI6 Fifty Years of Special Operations* (Fourth Estate/HarperCollins, London 2000/2001). I have also not integrated two major bodies of Cercle research, the website https://isgp-studies.com by Joël van der Reijden and the 2014 book *Die Internationale der Konservativen* (see footnote 4) by Dr. Johannes Großmann, or the 2018 book *Apartheid, Guns and Money* by Henning van Vuuren, which stand on their own and should be consulted in parallel to this book.

INTEGRATED BOOKS AND ESSAYS

Aldrich, Richard J., *GCHQ*, HarperPress, London 2010.

Anderson, Scott and Anderson, Jon Lee, *Inside the League*, Dodd, Mead & Co, New York 1986. See https://archive.org/details/pdfy-YAnJOkt3G0B4uEGh.

Andrew, Christopher, *The Defence of The Realm – The Authorized History of MI5*, Penguin, London 2010.

Bacelon, Jacques, *La République de la Fraude*, Jacques Grancher éditeur, Paris 1986.

Bale, Jeffrey M., *Right-wing terrorists and the Extra-parliamentary Left in post-World War II Europe: Collusion or Manipulation?*, *Berkeley Journal of Sociology* 32/1987, and *Lobster* 18, October 1989.

Bale, Jeffrey M., *The "Black" Terrorist International: Neo-Fascist Paramilitary Networks and the "Strategy of Tension" in Italy, 1968-1974*, 1994 Ph.D. thesis online at https://www.economicsvoodoo.com/wp-content/uploads/DISSERTATION-The-Black-Terrorist-International-Neo-Fascist-Paramilitary-Networks-Strategy-of-Tension-in-Italy-1968-1974_Jeffrey-Bale.pdf.

Bamford, James, *The Puzzle Palace*, Penguin, London 1983.

Bamford, James, *A Pretext for War – 9/11, Iraq and the Abuse of America's Intelligence Agencies*, expanded edition, Anchor Books, New York 2005.

Bellant, Russ, *Old Nazis, the New Right and the Reagan Administration*, Political Research Associates, 1988 and 1989, updated in 1991 as *Old Nazis, the New Right and the Republican Party,* available online at https://www.russbellant.us/Bellant-Old_Nazis_the_New_Right_and_the_Republican_Party.pdf. Page references refer to the 1991 edition.

Benjamin, Mico and Dethy, Jean-Michel, *L'Ordre Noir*, Editions Pierre de Méyère, Brussels 1977.

Blackstock, Nelson, *Cointelpro*, Anchor/Pathfinder Press, New York 1988.

Bloch, Jonathan and Fitzgerald, Patrick, *British Intelligence and Covert Action*, Brandon Press, Dingle 1983.

Bouffioux, Michel, *Pour - sous la plage, des pavés*, thesis for Faculty of Philosophy and Arts of the ULB, Brussels 1987.

Bourdrel, Philippe, *La Cagoule - 30 ans de complots*, Editions J'ai Lu, Albin Michel, Paris 1970.

Boyer, Jean-François, *L'Empire Moon*, La Découverte, Paris 1986.

Brewaeys, Philippe and Deliège, Jean-Frédérick, *De Bonvoisin et Cie*, EPO, Brussels 1992.

Brittain, Victoria, *Hidden Lives, Hidden Deaths – South Africa's Crippling of a Continent*, Faber and Faber, London 1990.

Campbell, Duncan and Connor, Steve, *On the Record - Surveillance, computers and privacy*, Michael Joseph, London 1986.

Cavendish, Anthony, *Inside Intelligence*, Collins, London 1990 (foreword by G. K. Young).

Christie, Stuart, *Stefano Delle Chiaie - portrait of a black terrorist*, Anarchy Magazine/Refract Publications, London 1984. Online at https://libcom.org/files/Stefano-Delle-Chiaie.pdf.

Christie, Stuart, *The Investigative Researcher's Handbook*, BCM Refract, London undated.

Churchill, Ward, and Vander Wall, Jim, *Agents of Repression: the FBI's secret wars against the Black Panther Party and the American Indian Movement*, South End Press, Boston, Mass 1988.

Churchill, Ward, and Vander Wall, Jim, *The Cointelpro Papers - Documents from the FBI's secret war on domestic dissent*, South End Press, Boston, Mass 1990.

Clark, Alan, *Diaries*, Phoenix Books, London 1994.

Cooley, John K., *Unholy Wars*, Pluto, London 1999; second edition, Penguin India, 2001.

Corera, Gordon, *MI6: Life and Death in the British Secret Service*, Phoenix, London 2013.

Cornwell, Rupert, *God's Banker*, Unwin, London 1984.

Coxsedge, Coldicut and Harant, *Rooted in Secrecy - the clandestine element in Australian politics*, Committee for the Abolition of the Political Police, Balwyn North, Victoria, Australia, 1982.

Crozier, Brian, *Free Agent - the unseen war 1941 - 1991*, Harper-Collins, London 1993 (online at https://archive.org/details/BrianCrozier.FreeAgentTheUnseenWar194191HarperCollins1993).

De Bende Tapes - see under Various authors.

De Bock, Walter, *Les plus belles années d'une génération - l'Ordre Nouveau en Belgique avant, pendant et après la Seconde Guerre Mondiale*, EPO, Berchem 1983.

Deacon, Richard [McCormick, Donald], *The Truth Twisters*, McDonald, London 1987/Futura, London 1988 (page numbers refer to the Futura edition).

Deuling, Wolfgang: unarchived web publications at http://haftgrund.net/dokumentation-cducsu-wahlkampf-zum-bundestag-1972/ and http://haftgrund.net/wp-content/uploads/2012/12/Dokumentation-Wahlkampf1972-CDUCSU.pdf.

Deutschland-Stiftung, *Die Deutschland-Stiftung – ein Vermächtnis Konrad Adenauers. Eine Dokumentation*, Holzner- Verlag, Würzburg 1967.

Die Contra Connection - see under Various authors.

Dirty Work - see under Various authors.

Dorril, Stephen, *A Who's Who of the British Secret State*, *Lobster Special*, June 1989.

Dorril, Stephen and Ramsay, Robin, *In a Common Cause - the Anti-Communist Crusade in Britain 1945-60*, *Lobster* 19, May 1990.

Dorril, Stephen and Ramsay, Robin, *Smear! Wilson and the Secret State*, Fourth Estate (289 Westbourne Grove, London W11 2QA; page numbers refer to this edition), 1991; Harper-Collins, London 1992.

Drews, Dirk, *Die Psychologische Kampfführung/Psychologische Verteidigung der Bundeswehr*, PhD dissertation for the Johannes-Gutenberg Universität Mainz, 2006, online at https://publications.ub.uni-mainz.de/theses/volltexte/2006/981/pdf/981.pdf.

Dumont, Serge, *Aginter-Presse et la Belgique*, annex in his *Les mercenaires*, EPO, Berchem 1983, pgs 174-179.

Dupont, Gilbert and Ponsaers, Paul, *Les tueurs*, EPO, Berchem 1988.

Engelmann, Bernt, *Hotel Bilderberg*, Steidl, Göttingen 1991.

Eringer, Robert, *The Global Manipulators*, Pentacle, Bristol 1980 (online at https://www.scribd.com/document/32563020/Bilderberg-Trilateral).

Faligot, Roger, *Guerre spéciale en Europe*, Flammarion, Paris 1980.

Faligot, Roger and Guisnel, Jean, *Histoire secrète de la Ve République*, La Découverte, Paris 2006.

Faligot, Roger and Krop, Pascal, *La Piscine - les services secrets français 1944-84*, Seuil, Paris 1985 (page numbers refer to this version); *La Piscine,* Blackwell, Oxford 1990.

Fallon, Ivan, *Billionaire - the Life and Times of Sir James Goldsmith*, Hutchinson, London 1991.

Fletcher, Richard, *British Propaganda since WW2: a case study, Media Culture and Society,* Vol. 4 1982.

Foot, Paul, *Who framed Colin Wallace?*, Pan, London 1990.

Freemantle, Brian, *CIA*, Futura, London 1984.

Gallo, Max, *Histoire de l'Espagne franquiste*, Marabout Université, Paris 1969.

Ganser, Daniele, *Terrorism in Western Europe: An Approach to NATO's Secret Stay-Behind Armies*, Whitehead Journal of Diplomacy and International Relations, Winter-Spring 2005.

Gemballa, Gero, *Geheimgefährlich - Verfassungschutz, BND, MAD, Stasi*, PapyRossa Verlag, Köln 1990, pgs 148-151.

Gijsels, Hugo, *L'Enquête - 20 années de déstabilisation en Belgique*, La Longue Vue, Brussels 1990 (original Flemish title: *De Bende et Cie,* Kritak, Leuven 1989).

Gijsels, Hugo, *Het Leugenpaleis van VdB*, Kritak, Leuven 1990.

Gijsels, Hugo, *Netwerk Gladio*, Kritak, Leuven 1991.

Gladio - see under Various authors.

González-Mata, Luis M., *Les vrais maîtres du monde*, Grasset, Paris 1979.

Großmann, Johannes, *The Comité international de défense de la civilisation chrétienne and the Transnationalization of Anti-Communist Propaganda in Western Europe after the Second World War* in *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War,* pgs 251-262, see Various authors.

Großmann, Johannes, *Winning the Cold War: Anti-Communism, Informal Diplomacy, and the Transnational Career of Jean Violet* in *New Global Studies*, 2014, issue 8.1, pgs 87-101, see https://www.degruyter.com/view/j/ngs.2014.8.issue-1/ngs-2014-0009/ngs-2014-0009.xml.

Haasbroek, Joshua Kruger, *A historical perspective of the Information Scandal*, MA dissertation for the University of the Free State, Bloemfontein, South Africa, 2016, online at http://scholar.ufs.ac.za:8080/xmlui/bitstream/handle/11660/6475/HaasbroekJK.pdf.

Hänni, Adrian, *A Global Crusade against Communism: the Cercle in the "Second Cold War"* in *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, pgs 161-174, see Various authors.

Hänni, Adrian, *Discurso terrorista y la militarización del contraterrorismo estadounidense: Los años de Reagan* in *Relaciones Internacionales*, No. 32, June 2016, pgs 97-117, at https://revistas.uam.es/index.php/relacionesinternacionales/article/view/5315/5753.

Haquin, René, *Des taupes dans l'extrême droite - la Sûreté de l'Etat et le WNP*, EPO, Berchem 1984.

Haykal, Mohammed, *Iran - the Untold Story*, Pantheon, New York 1982.

Heigl, Frank P. and Saupe, Jürgen, *Operation Eva - die Affäre Langemann*, Konkret, Hamburg 1982.

Herman, Edward and O'Sullivan, Gerry, *The "Terrorism" Industry*, Pantheon Books, New York 1989.

Hersh, Seymour M., *Chain of Command*, updated edition, Penguin, London 2005.

Hirsch, Kurt, *Rechts von der Union*, Knesebeck und Schuler, Munich 1989.

Höhne, Heinz and Zolling, Hermann, *The General was a spy*, Pan, London 1973.

Hollingsworth, Mark and Norton-Taylor, Richard, *Blacklist - the inside story of political vetting*, Hogarth Press, London 1988.

Holroyd, Fred with Burbridge, Nick, *War without Honour*, Medium (1a Clumber St., Hull HU5 3RH), 1989.

Howarth, Patrick, *Undercover - the men and women of the SOE*, Arrow, London 1990.

Huyn, Hans Graf, *Der Angriff - Der Vorstoss Moskaus zur Weltherrschaft*, Verlag Fritz Molden, Wien 1978 (six editions by 1980).

IGfM - see under Various authors.

Klaus, Thomas, *Der Messias mit dem Hakenkreuz – das Imperium der Mun-Sekte*, Verlagswerkstatt, Leutkirch 1991.

Knight, Derrick, *Beyond the Pale*, London 1982.

Krop, Pascal, *Les Secrets de l'espionnage français*, J. C. Lattès, Paris 1993.

L'Extrême Droite et l'Etat - see under Various authors.

Lanneau, Catherine, *Du gaullisme à la droite radicale. Les étranges «compagnons de route» belges de l'Europe gaullienne*, published in *Doctrinaires, vulgarisateurs et passeurs des droites radicales au XX siècle (Europe-Amériques)*, ed. Olivier Dard, Peter Lang, Brussels 2012, pgs 99-126. An electronic copy may be obtained at https://orbi.uliege.be/handle/2268/106145 and click Request Copy at the bottom of the page.

Laurent, Frédéric, *L'Orchestre Noir*, Stock, Paris 1978.

Le Vaillant, Yvon, *Sainte Mafia*, Mercure de France, Paris 1971.

Leigh, David, *The Wilson Plot*, Heinemann, London 1988.

Les Tueries du Brabant - see under Various authors.

Macintyre, Ben, *A Spy Amongst Friends*, Bloomsbury, London 2014.

Manz, George Martin, *The Lie Machine*, *Top Secret*, Number 1/89 (Postfach 270324, 5000 Köln 1, West Germany).

Marks, John, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*, Allen Lane, London 1979.

Mungo, Aldo-Michel ("Michel de Frocourt"), *Enquêtes et Reportages No. 1 - Renifleurs: la verité*, Phébus, Brussels, March 1985, currently online at https://www.scribd.com/document/273995778/Renifleurs-La-verite.

Naylor, R.T., *Hot Money and the Politics of Debt*, Unwin, London 1987.

Norton-Taylor, Richard, *In Defence of the Realm?*, Civil Liberties Trust, London 1990.

Péan, Pierre, *Affaires Africaines*, Fayard, Paris 1983.

Péan, Pierre, *V*, Fayard, Paris 1984.

Penrose and Courtiour, *The Pencourt File*, Secker and Warburg, London 1978.

Pincher, Chapman, *Inside Story*, Sidgwick & Jackson, London 1978.

Pincher, Chapman, *Their Trade is Treachery*, Sidgwick & Jackson, London 1981.

Pincher, Chapman, *Too Secret Too Long*, Sidgwick & Jackson, London 1984.

Pincher, Chapman, *The Secret Offensive*, Sidgwick & Jackson, London 1985.

Pincher, Chapman, *The Spycatcher Affair, A Web of Deception*, Sidgwick & Jackson, second revised edition, London 1988.

Pincher, Chapman, *The Truth about Dirty Tricks*, Sidgwick & Jackson, London 1990.

Polakow-Suransky, Sasha, *The Unspoken Alliance*, Vintage, New York 2011. A South African edition is online at https://www.sahistory.org.za/sites/default/files/file%20uploads%20/sasha_polakow-suransky_the_unspoken_alliance_isbook4you.pdf

Pressedienst Demokratische Initiative, *Die Deutschlandstiftung – eine PDI-Dokumentation*, Heft 20, Peter Hammer Verlag, Wuppertal, c. late 1974.

Prouty, Colonel L. Fletcher, *The Secret Team: the CIA and its allies in control of the world*, Ballantine, New York 1974.

Qui a tué Julien Lahaut? - see Various authors.

Ramsay, Robin and Dorril, Stephen, *Wilson, MI5 and the rise of Thatcher*, *Lobster* 11, April 1986.

Raw, Charles, *The Money Changers*, Harvill (HarperCollins), London 1992.

Rees, Mervyn and Day, Chris, *Muldergate – the story of the Info Scandal*, Macmillan, London and South Africa, 1980.

Reeve, Gillian and Smith, Joan, *Offence of the Realm*, CND Publications (22/24 Underwood St, London N1), 1986.

Retinger, Joseph, *Joseph Retinger - Memoirs of an Eminence Grise*, ed. J. Pomian, Sussex University Press, London 1972.

Rhoodie, Eschel, *The Real Information Scandal*, Orbis SA, Pretoria 1983.

Richelson, Jeffrey T. and Ball, Desmond, *The Ties That Bind*, Allen & Unwin, London 1985.

Rimbaud, Christiane, *Pinay*, Perrin, Paris 1990.

Roth, Jürgen and Ender, Berndt, *Geschäfte und Verbrechen der Politmafia*, IBDK Verlag, Berlin 1987. Originally published as *Dunkelmänner der Macht*, 1984, withdrawn in 1985 following prosecution for libel by Opus Dei.

Roth, Jürgen, *Die Mitternachtregierung*, Rasch und Rohring Verlag, Hamburg 1990.

Sanders, James, *South Africa and the International Media 1972-1979 – A Struggle for Representation*, Frank Cass, London 2000.

Sanders, James, *Apartheid's Friends – the rise of the South African secret service*, John Murray, London 2006.

Saunders, Frances Stonor, *Who Paid the Piper? The CIA and the cultural Cold War*, Granta, London 1999.

Scahill, Jeremy, *Dirty Wars*, Serpent's Tail, London 2014.

Schnüffelstaat Schweiz - see Various authors.

Schrijvers, Klaartje, *L'Europe sera de droite ou ne sera pas!*, doctoral thesis for Universiteit Gent, 2007-2008, online at https://biblio.ugent.be/publication/4175616/file/4175676.pdf

Scott-Smith, Giles, *Western Anti-Communism and the Interdoc network*, Palgrave Macmillan Transnational History Series, London 2012. See https://www.palgrave.com/gp/book/9780230221260.

Scott-Smith, Giles, *Interdoc, Western Anti-Communism and the Transnational Imperative* in *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, pgs 130-145, see Various authors.

Sick, Gary, *October Surprise*, I. B. Tauris, London 1991.

Silverstein, Ken, *Private Warriors*, Verso, London/New York 2000.

Smith, Lynn, *Covert British Propaganda: IRD 1947-77*, *Millenium, Journal of International Studies*, No.1, 1980.

Snepp, Frank, *Decent Interval: An Insider's Account of Saigon's Indecent End Told by the CIA's Chief Strategy Analyst in Vietnam*, Random House, New York 1977; Penguin, London 1980.

Sosenko, Alexander, *Eastern European Unity under Russian Communism and the Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations*, MA thesis for the University of Illinois, 2010, online at https://www.ideals.illinois.edu/bitstream/handle/2142/18314/Sosenko_Alexander.pdf

Spiegel-Buch - see Various authors.

Stevenson, Sir William, *Intrepid's Last Case*, Michael Joseph, London 1984.

Stewart-Smith, D. G., *No Vision Here - non-military warfare in Britain* (foreword by Julian Amery), Foreign Affairs Publishing Company, Richmond 1966.

Thomas, Gordon, *Journey into Madness*, Corgi, London 1989.

The Great White Hoax - see Various authors.

Toczek, Nick, *The Bigger Tory Vote*, AK Press (3 Balmoral Place, Stirling, Scotland FK8 2RD), 1991.

Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War - see Various authors.

Die unheimlichen Patrioten - see Various authors.

Valentine, Douglas, *The Phoenix Program*, Avon, New York 1992.

Van Bosbeke, André, *Opus Dei en Belgique*, EPO, Berchem 1986.

Van der Pijl, Kees, *Een Amerikaans plan voor Europa, achtergronden van de EEG*, SUA, Amsterdam 1978.

Van Doorslaer, Rudy and Verhoeyen, Etienne, *L'Assassinat de Julien Lahaut - une histoire de l'anticommunisme en Belgique*, EPO, Berchem 1987/La Renaissance du livre, Brussels 2010 (an extract is online at https://www.scribd.com/doc/263493981/L-Assassinat-de-Julien-Lahaut-Extrait-Andre-Moyen).

Van Vuuren, Hennie, *Apartheid, Guns and Money*, Hurst & Company, London 2018.

Various authors, *De Bende Tapes*, Kritak, Antwerp 1990.

Various authors, *Die Contra Connection*, Konkret Verlag, Hamburg 1988.

Various authors, *Die unheimlichen Patrioten*, Limmat Verlag, Zürich 1979.

Various authors, *Dirty Work: the CIA in Western Europe*, ed. Agee, Philip and Wolf, Louis, Zed Press, London 1978; online at https://archive.org/details/pdfy-9MwmH_ nnJ4eOmL66.

Various authors (ed. Jan Willems), *Gladio*, EPO, Brussels/Berchem 1991 (Michel Bouffioux's contribution *Histoire de glaives* is online at https://www.scribd.com/document/252966104/Extrait-de-Gladio-J-Willems-1991-avec-l-annexe-intitulee-Les-amis-du-chevalier-De-Roover).

Various authors (IFF), *Intelligence and the New World Order* (proceedings of *Assessing US Intelligence Needs for the 1990s*, a series of seminars held in September and October 1991 in Washington D.C. and *National Intelligence Agencies in the period of European Partnership*, a conference held on November 15, 1991 in Schloss Cecilienhof, Potsdam, Federal Republic of Germany), International Freedom Foundation German Branch, 1992, excerpts included in the documentary annex to this full sixth edition of *Rogue Agents*.

Various authors, *L'Extrême Droite et l'Etat*, EPO, Berchem undated.

Various authors, *Les Tueries du Brabant*, introd. Jean Mottard and René Haquin, Editions Complexe, Brussels 1990.

Various authors, *Propagandisten des Krieges, Hintermänner der Contra: "Internationale Gesellschaft für Menschenrechte" (IGfM)*, Arbeitskreis Nicaragua, Edition Nahua (Postfach 101320, 5600 Wuppertal 1, West Germany), third edition 1987.

Various authors, *Qui a tué Julien Lahaut?*, La Renaissance du livre, Brussels 2015.

Various authors, *Schnüffelstaat Schweiz*, Komitee Schluss mit dem Schnüffelstaat, Limmat Verlag, Zürich 1990, online at https://buchundnetz.com/werke/schnueffelstaat-schweiz/.

Various authors, *Spiegel-Buch – Überlebensgroß Herr Strauß*, Rowohlt Taschenbuch Verlag, Reinbek bei Hamburg 1980.

Various authors, *The Great White Hoax - South Africa's international propaganda machine*, Africa Bureau, London 1977.

Various authors, *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, Palgrave Macmillan Transnational History Series, London 2014. See https://www.palgrave.com/gp/book/9781137388797.

Verhoeyen, Etienne and Uytterhaegen, Frank, *De Kreeft met de zwarte Scharen*, Frans Masereelfonds, Gent 1982.

Verrier, Anthony, *Through the Looking Glass - British Foreign Policy in the Age of Illusions*, Jonathan Cape, London 1983.

Walraff, Günter, *Die Aufdeckung einer Verschwörung*, Kiepenheuer und Witsch, Köln 1976.

Walsh, Michael, *The Secret World of Opus Dei*, Grafton, London 1989.

Waske, Stefanie, *Nach Lektüre vernichten! Der geheime Nachrichtendienst von CDU und CSU im Kalten Krieg*, Carl-Hanser-Verlag, München 2012.

Willan, Philip, *Puppetmasters - the political use of terrorism in Italy*, Constable, London 1991. See http://www.philipwillan.com/.

Willems, Jan, *VdB - un citoyen au-dessus de tout soupçon*, EPO, Berchem undated.

Winter, Gordon, *Inside BOSS*, Penguin, London 1981.

Winter, Gordon, *Inside BOSS and After*, *Lobster* 18, October 1989.

Winter, Gordon, *Vindication is a dish still edible when cold*, *Lobster* 48, Winter 2004.

Woodward, Bob, *Veil*, Headline, London 1988.

Wolton, Thierry, *Les écuries de la Vième*, Grasset, Paris 1989.

Wright, Peter, *Spycatcher*, Heinemann, Australia 1987.

Yallop, David, *In God's Name*, Corgi, London 1987.

Young European Federalists, *Mobilmachung - Die Habsburger Front*, Bonn and Berlin 1979.

Young, George Kennedy, *Subversion and the British Riposte*, Ossian, Glasgow 1984.

Zangrandi, *Inchiesta sul SIFAR*, Editori Riuniti, Italy 1972.

INTEGRATED JOURNALS

ABN Correspondence: the web addresses for issues are given in the relevant footnotes; alternatively, search at http://diasporiana.org.ua/?s=ABN.

CelsiuS (Mantrant, BP 2128, 1000 Bruxelles 1, Belgium), nos. 12, 14, 15, 16, 17, 21, 22, 23, 24, 26, 29, 30, 31, 34, 39, 52.

Covert Action Information Bulletin, no. 7 (December 1979 - January 1980); no. 10 (August-September 1980); no. 25 (Winter 1986) at https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP90-00845R000100170004-5.pdf.

Damoclès (internal bulletin of the Belgian LIL section, 1967-1987), author's collection kindly provided by Hervé Beghinselen.

Fiche & Fouine, (Comité En finir avec l'Etat fouineur, rue de la Borde 11, 1018 Lausanne, Switzerland), no. 1, February 1990.

Lobster (214 Westbourne Avenue, Hull HU5 3JB, UK) nos. 3 (1984), 4 (1984), 11 (Ramsay and Dorril, 4/86), 14 (9/87), 16 (7/88), 17 (11/88), 18 (10/89), 19 (5/90), 22 (11/91), and *Lobster* Special Issues, *A Who's Who of the British Secret State*, Stephen Dorril, (6/89), and *The Clandestine Caucus – anti-socialist campaigns and operations in the British Labour Movement since the war*, Robin Ramsay, (1996). See http://www.8bitmode.com/rogerdog/lobster/ for free access to issues 1-25 (Ramsay/Dorril) and 26-31 (Dorril) and https://www.lobster-magazine.co.uk/ for paid

access to issues 26- 57 (Ramsay) and free access to issues 58 onwards.

State Research no. 1, October 1977, and no. 7, August/September 1978 (nos. 1 – 7 published in *Review of Security and the State 1978*, Julian Friedmann, London 1978; no. 7 is online at https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP88-01314R000300010056-1.pdf); nos. 8 – 13 published in *Review of Security and the State 1979*, Julian Friedmann, London 1979; no. 15 (Dec 1979 - Jan 1980), no. 16 (February-March 1980), no. 17 (April-May 1980), no. 22 (February-March 1981).

Top Secret, Number 1/89 (Postfach 270324, 5000 Köln 1, West Germany). On *Top Secret*, see http://intellit.muskingum.edu/russia_folder/pcw_era/sect_09b.htm.

Ukrainian Weekly: the web addresses for issues are given in the relevant footnotes; alternatively, search at http://www.ukrweekly.com/.

INTEGRATED PRESS

For the Dutch Press (marked NL), the web addresses and page numbers for articles are given in the relevant footnotes; alternatively search at https://www.delpher.nl/.

ABC - *ABC* (Madrid): 22/11/47 pg 8, 2/12/48 pg 10, 18/1/52 pg 11, 15/10/52 pg 23, 19/10/52 pgs 43-45, 21/10/52 pg 24, 28/5/53 pg 33, 25/6/53 pg 23, 28/6/53 pg 52, 29/8/54 pg 30, 31/8/54 pg 20, 1/9/54 pg 20, 3/6/55 pg 30, 16/3/57 pg 43, 18/9/59 pg 42, 27/9/59 pg 81, 3/7/60 pg 76, 8/7/61 pg 48, 11/7/61 pgs 39-40, 24/6/62 pg 89, 9/11/62 pg 8, 6/3/63 pg 54, 8/5/63 pg 54, 12/5/63 pg 87, 14/5/63 pg 57, 15/5/63 pgs 5 and 56, 16/5/63 pg 57, 5/6/63 pgs 51-52, 8/6/63 pg 5, 9/6/63 pgs 67 and 88, 8/4/64 pg 46, 11/6/64 pg 59, 5/7/64 pg 85, 22/8/64 pg 44, 26/8/64 pg 42, 8/1/65 pg 35, 30/1/65 pg 37, 31/1/65 pg 72, 18/2/65 pg 50, 28/8/65 pg 47, 14/10/65 pg 67, 5/10/66 pg 80, 16/10/66 pg 99, 19/10/66 pg 91, 20/10/66 pg 97, 18/6/67 pg 85, 8/10/67 pg 95, 21/7/68 pg 52, 23/7/68 pg 55, 13/5/70 pg 44, 23/2/72 pg 34, 15/11/72 pg 35, 28/7/73 pg 29, 4/7/74 pg 47, 7/7/74 pg 23, 10/9/74 pg 25, 20/9/75 pg 28, 28/2/76 pg 23, 11/5/76 pg 46, 23/11/76 pg 37, 13/12/78 pg 34, 17/6/79 pg 29, 10/11/79 pg 24, 22/12/79 pg 26, 23/2/80 pg 21, 27/2/80 pg 24, 13/3/81 pg 25, 9/10/81 pg 33, 21/3/82 pg 36, 4/2/84 pg 6, 21/12/86 pg 38, 11/1/87 pgs 59-63, 26/4/99 pg 24, 5/10/08 pg 59, 16/1/12 pgs 1, 3, 5 and 20-31, 22/1/12 pgs 6-7; *ABC* (Sevilla): 19/10/52 pg 24, 21/10/52 pg 18, 5/7/60 pg 15, 7/11/62 pg 27, 8/5/63 pg 38, 12/5/63 pg 48, 14/5/63 pg 37, 15/5/63 pg 16, 16/5/63 pg 38, 17/5/63 pg 54, 9/6/63 pg 64, 20/10/66 pgs 45-46, 23/9/67 pgs 57-58, 8/10/67 pgs 61 and 78; *Blanco y Negro*: 6/3/76 pg 26, 18/10/85 pg 34, 21/10/89 pg 54, 26/10/97 pgs 36-42. Search at http://hemeroteca.abc.es.

Algemeen Handelsblad (NL): 31/8/62.

Daily Mail: 22/12/76; the web addresses for other dates are given in the relevant footnotes.

Daily Mirror: 14/12/90.

Daily Telegraph: 20/11/86; the web addresses for other dates are given in the relevant footnotes.

Espresso: 17/12/74.

Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung: 30/3/85.

Gooi- en Eemlander (NL): 4/1/50.

Guardian: 20/12/76, 21/12/76, 31/12/76, 27/1/78, 7/6/78, 6/5/80, 3/10/80, 18/12/81, 11/2/83, 30/4/83, 8/10/83, 21, 22, 28/2/85, 26/11/85, 26/6/87, 2/10/89, 11/10/89, 14-15/12/89, 26/7/91, 24-5/8/91; the web addresses for other dates are given in the relevant footnotes.

Hamburger Abendblatt: 15/12/56.

International Herald Tribune: 15/9/58 (republished in the *IHT* on 15/9/08), 12/06/02.

Leveller: 64/1981.

Leeuwarder Courant (NL): 26/5/82.

Libération: 9/10/75, 9-10/4/76, 11/4/76.

Libertés: 14/2/91, 9/4/91, 10/4/91, 11/4/91, 13-15/4/91, 17/4/91, 18/4/91, 19/4/91, 20-22/4/91.

Monde: 24/2/78, 21/3/85.

Morgen: 1-12/7/89

Moscow Literary Gazette: 6/3/85.

Nederlands Dagblad (NL): 20/1/72; 16/9/83.

New Statesman: 15/2/80, 27/2/81, 29/5/87.

New York Times: 18/4/85.

NRC Handelsblad (NL): 29/6/74 ; 4/5/83; 2/4/84.

Observer: 3/2/74, 29/1/78, 7/12/86, 2/10/88, 29/1/89, 9/12/90, 16/12/90, 10/2/91, 24/2/91, 2/2/92, 17/5/92.

Private Eye: 7/1/77.

Scotsman: 8/8/77.

Soir: 4/9/91 (online at https://www.lesoir.be/art/stay-behind-et-les-autres-reseaux-les-mysteres-du-major_t-19910904-Z04D57.html).

Spiegel: 25/1953, 30/1953, 32/1955, 33/1955, 51/1955, 2/1956, 7/1956, 14/1956, 45/1956, 39/1958, 1/1960, 31/1960, 17/1961, 41/1962, 45/1962, 47/1962, 36/1963, 39/1964, 10/1965, 35/1965, 8/1966, 11/1967, 23/1967, 42/1968, 46/1968, 45/1969, 3/1970, 46/1970, 52/1970, 4/1971, 6/1971, 33/1971, 36/1971, 44/1972, 46/1972, 47/1972, 50/1972, 53/1972, 6/1973, 8/1973, 22/1973, 23/1973, 34/1973, 37/1973, 8/1974, 15/1974, 16/1974,

20/1974, 37/1974, 47/1974, 9/1975, 25/1975, 44/1975, 49/1975, 52/1975, 4/1976, 30/1975, 13/1977, 16/1977, 49/1977, 26/1978, 31/1978, 50/1978, 51/1978, 12/1979, 9/1980, 10/1980, 12/1980, 30/1980, 31/1980, 32/1980, 34/1980, 35/1980, 36/1980, 41/1980, 43/1980, 36/1981, 10/1982, 32/1982, 37/1982, 49/1982, 8/1983, 9/1983, 44/1983, 3/1984, 6/1984, 41/1984, 42/1984, 44/1984, 51/1984, 20/1985, 28/1986, 13/1987, 46/1987, 20/1989, 30/1989, 12/1993, 0/1997, 6/2000, 12/2000, 1/2001. The web addresses and page numbers of each article are given in the relevant footnotes; alternatively, search at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/index-2019.html.

Stern: 7/4/76, 8/1978.

Süddeutsche Zeitung: 24-25/10/87.

Sunday Times: 7/10/84.

Sunday Telegraph: 13/12/87.

Tageszeitung: 24/1/87, 16/3/87, 13/5/87, 18/5/87, 20/5/87, 22/5/87, 6/6/87, 12/6/87, 3/7/87.

Telegraaf (NL): 12/6/82.

Télémoustique: 28/6/91.

Time Out: 20-26/6/75, 27/6-3/7/75, 29/8-4/9/75, 5-11/9/75.

Tribune: 2/9/83, 9/9/83.

Trouw (NL): 4/5/83.

Vaderland (NL): 1/12/20; 23/6/30.

Vanguardia Española: 9/4/47 pg 4, 14/2/52 pg 7, 23/2/52 pg 3, 2/3/52 pg 7, 13/3/52 pg 4, 6/6/52 pg 4, 7/6/52 pg 4, 18/7/52 pg 7, 17/10/52 pg 3, 18/10/52 pg 4, 19/10/52 pg 4, 21/10/52 pg 6, 28/5/53 pg 4, 28/6/53 pg 30, 15/8/54 pg 3, 29/8/54 pg 3, 31/8/54 pgs 3 and 11, 1/9/54 pg 3, 4/9/54 pg 3, 5/9/54 pg 3, 12/10/54 pg 19, 30/4/55 pg 14, 1/6/55 pg 16, 2/6/55 pg 13, 3/6/55 pg 4, 4/6/55 pg 5, 15/11/55 pg 10, 27/3/56 pg 6, 8/6/56 pg 4, 4/9/56 pg 4, 24/6/58 pg 4, 31/7/58 pg 3, 16/8/58 pg 3, 31/1/59 pg 12, 5/2/59 pg 9, 6/5/59 pg 9, 27/9/59 pg 7, 30/9/59 pg 4, 1/10/59 pg 11, 14/11/59 pg 17, 15/11/59 pg 5, 22/11/59 pg 5, 14/1/60 pgs 7 and 9, 15/1/60 pg 6, 20/1/60 pg 20, 23/1/60 pg 22, 26/1/60 pgs 11 and 18, 27/1/60 pgs 15 and 17, 28/1/60 pgs 1, 10 and 11, 27/3/60 pg 5, 25/5/60 pg 21, 12/6/60 pg 9, 14/6/60 pg 20, 30/6/60 pg 5, 2/7/60 pg 10, 5/7/60 pg 5, 26/10/60 pg 4, 12/11/60 pg 33, 4/12/60 pg 52, 19/1/61 pg 8, 31/1/61 pg 15, 10/2/61 pg 12, 13/6/61 pg 7, 14/6/61 pg 46, 16/6/61 pg 16, 17/6/61 pg 7, 7/7/61 pg 36, 9/7/61 pg 6, 8/3/62 pg 7, 17/3/62 pg 13, 18/3/62 pg 20, 26/6/62 pg 9, 28/10/62 pg 60, 10/11/62 pg 32, 28/11/62 pg 8, 5/3/63 pg 13, 6/3/63 pg 19, 8/3/63 pg 17, 12/5/63 pg 5, 14/5/63 pgs 5 and 17, 17/5/63 pg 9, 28/5/63 pg 24, 6/6/63 pg 44, 7/6/63 pg 7, 9/6/63 pg 7, 11/6/63 pgs 7 and 8, 10/8/63 pg 3, 6/9/63 pg 14, 15/10/63 pg 8, 9/4/64 pg 15, 9/5/64 pg 8, 11/6/64 pg 7, 3/7/64 pg 12, 5/7/64 pg 7, 7/7/64 pgs 11 and 19, 9/7/64 pg 8, 26/7/64 pg 15, 22/8/64 pg 4, 25/8/64 pg 36, 27/8/64 pg 34, 5/9/64 pg 5, 6/9/64 pgs 5 and 46, 30/1/65 pgs 1 and 44, 31/1/65 pg 80, 10/2/65 pg 6, 1/5/65 pg 7, 22/6/65 pg 4, 21/7/65 pg 7, 4/11/65 pg 7, 24/2/66 pg 15, 29/3/66 pg 17, 30/3/66 pgs 14 and 44, 1/4/66 pg 13, 16/4/66 pg 23, 17/4/66 pg 20, 11/5/66 pg 8, 15/5/66 pg 5, 18/5/66 pg 16, 18/10/66 pg 7, 19/10/66 pg 8, 20/10/66 pg 6, 22/1/67 pg 51, 20/4/67 pg 14, 5/5/67 pg 11, 6/5/67 pg 6, 18/5/67 pg 9, 21/5/67 pg 6, 13/7/67 pg 80, 24/8/67 pg 22, 26/10/67 pg 17, 15/3/68 pg 16, 21/7/68 pg 36, 27/9/68 pg 14, 28/9/68 pg 17, 19/3/69 pg 16, 19/4/69 pg 7, 8/5/69 pg 17, 12/6/69 pg 11, 15/6/69 pg 7, 17/6/69 pg 11, 21/6/69 pg 7, 22/6/69 pg 20, 31/8/69 pg 21, 2/11/69 pg 20, 3/1/70 pg 20, 11/1/70 pg 6, 20/1/70 pg 17, 6/6/70 pg 11, 24/6/70 pg 10, 28/6/70 pg 5, 30/6/70 pg 8, 19/1/71 pg 16, 6/2/71 pg 23, 14/4/71 pg 16, 3/6/71 pg 5, 19/6/71 pgs 7 and 31, 20/6/71 pg 5, 23/6/71 pg 5, 11/7/71 pg 7, 13/7/71 pg 9, 11/1/72 pg 6, 24/2/72 pg 23, 16/7/72 pg 7, 18/1/73 pg 12, 30/1/73 pg 22, 20/3/73 pg 6, 29/3/73 pg 5, 30/3/73 pg 6, 31/3/73 pg 8, 1/4/73 pgs 7 and 44, 21/8/73 pg 21, 11/11/73 pg 26, 15/11/73 pgs 11 and 22, 5/7/74 pg 9, 6/7/74 pg 8, 7/7/74 pg 10, 12/1/75 pg 24, 30/5/75 pg 21, 27/6/75 pg 28, 24/9/75 pg 33, 26/9/75 pg 22, 27/9/75 pg 24, 25/10/75 pg 11, 21/11/75 pg 17, 10/12/76 pg 22, 11/9/79 pg 16, 16/8/84 pg 14, 27/4/99 pg 27, 16/1/12 pgs 1 and 11-13, 17/1/12 pgs 1 and 12-13. Search by date and page at https://www.lavanguardia.com/hemeroteca/.

Vif/L'Express: 19/5/89.

Volkskrant (NL): 4/5/83; 20/1/84.

Vrije Volk (NL): 8/6/76; 27/9/80; 12/01/84.

Waarheid (NL): 29/9/81.

Zeit: 35/1965, 45/1972, 4/1977, 51/1977, 51/1978, 12/1979, 35/1979, 36/1979, 26/1983, 3/1985, 50/1985, 41/1988, 45/1988, 51/1988, 4/1989, 5/1990, 41/1991, 35/1995, 49/2012, 35/2013, 44/2015. Web addresses for each article are given in the footnotes; alternatively, search at https://www.zeit.de/2019/index.

CIOC-CIDCC-SINT UNUM ANNEX

DOCUMENT 1

THE CROSS AND THE CAUDILLO

CIOC, CIDCC AND FRANCO'S SPAIN

by David Teacher

In the early 1950s, the team of Violet and Dubois were active within several Catholic groups running operations for the SDECE and Vatican intelligence. Both came into early contact with Franco's Spain, the key contact person being **Francisco Javier Conde**, from 1948 to 1956 Director of the IEP. According to Landrin (1), Conde was sent on official mission to Brussels by Foreign Minister Martín Artajo in March 1950; in October 1950, Conde attended a meeting of a certain Organisation Internationale d'Etudes Diplomatiques presided by Dubois. In January 1952, Conde then attended a conference of the **Conseil International pour l'Ordre Chrétien** (CIOC) whose Secretary-General was Violet and whose spiritual advisor was Dubois. Held in Paris, official seat of the Council, the CIOC conference brought together "representatives of Portugal, Italy, Switzerland, Luxembourg, Belgium, Holland, Britain, France, Spain and some fifteen American countries" (2). Six months later, Violet paid a return trip to Spain to prepare for the next CIOC conference scheduled to be held in Madrid on 18th-20th October 1952: on 5th June 1952 Foreign Minister Martín Artajo received "Mr. Violet, Secretary of the International Parliamentary Group Pro Orden Cristiano" and on 6th June, Esteban Bilbao, President of the Parliament, received Conde accompanying "Mr. Jean Violet, the Secretary-General of the Conseil International pour l'Ordre Chrétien" (3).

Conde, whose IEP helped host the Madrid conference, told journalists: "CIOC is a meeting of parliamentarians from various European countries, particularly French, Belgian, Dutch and Swiss. Its members also include parliamentarians from other countries such as Ireland and Italy. The main aim of the meetings is to influence the legislative bodies of the different peoples in a Catholic direction. The wish of the Council is not just to limit itself to Europe but also to welcome into its ranks parliamentarians from the great Catholic countries of the world, particularly from Latin American countries". Attended by twenty-nine participants, the CIOC sessions were chaired by Conde, Dubois and former Army Minister and then Senator for Paris **Edmond Michelet**, leading a French delegation of nine Members of the National Assembly and one other Senator (4). Michelet later addressed the 1955 IV CEDI Congress before being appointed Justice Minister in 1959 (when Pinay was Finance Minister), sending a telegram of support to the CEDI Congress of that year and holding the post of CEDI International President in 1962-63. Following the October 1952 CIOC Madrid conference, Conde, Dubois and Violet were received by

Franco on 27th May 1953 (5), and Franco's hospitality was returned a month later when Conde, the Minister in charge of labour relations and Secretary-General of the [Falangist] Movement **José Solís Ruiz** and two other Spanish delegates were hosted by Violet at the June 1953 CIOC conference in Paris (6). It is worth noting that from December 1952 to March 1953 Violet was accredited to the United Nations as a newspaper correspondent employed by the Catholic Information Press Agency, based in Fribourg, Switzerland (7). No mention of CIOC later than June 1953 has been found; it is possible that CIOC's more public functions were absorbed into the recently founded CEDI, in which Michelet was prominent, whereas its more covert functions were taken over by Sint Unum, on which see Arduini below.

Dubois visited Spain the next summer, this time in an official role as the spiritual advisor to the **Fédération Internationale des Pharmaciens Catholiques**, a lay federation founded in the 1930s and recognised by the Vatican. "Integrated in the Pax Romana movement", the FIPC held its III Congress (500 participants) in Zaragoza in August 1954 (8). As obscure as Catholic chemists may seem, the 1947 Congress of Catholic Pharmacists in Lyon was advertised in Spanish newspapers. Following the FIPC I Congress in Rome in August-September 1950, addressed by Pope Pius XII, and the II Congress held in Spa, Belgium in 1952, the Pax Romana meeting in Bonn in 1953 decided to hold the III FIPC Congress in Spain to overcome the lack of Spanish participants the previous year. Coach parties from Spain then attended the IV Congress in Freiburg in September 1956 (38 Spaniards), the V Congress in Belgium in August 1958 (80 Spaniards, 2,000 participants), the VI Congress in Paris in September 1960 (450 participants), the VII Congress in Lisbon in September 1963 (500 participants), the IX Congress in Vienna in August 1967 and the XI Congress in Dublin in July 1971 (9).

Besides the FIPC and despite the apparent disappearance of CIOC in the early 1950s, Dubois and Violet nonetheless kept up contact with Franco's Spain during the mid-1960s - accompanied by Solís Ruiz, Dubois and Violet, "member of the Governing Council of the IHEDN", had a private audience with Franco on 10th June 1964 (10). The *Revista de Política Internacional* later reported on a little-known action by the Dubois/Violet/SDECE group, the "Church of Silence": the submission of an anti-communist petition to the Ecumenical Council of the Vatican in 1965 (11).

Solís Ruiz was also a key Spanish contact for another Catholic group, this time involving Pinay himself: the **Comité International pour la Défense de la Civilisation Chrétienne** [CIDCC], a largely French body created in 1948, whose first President was Belgian Paul Van Zeeland and whose Secretary-General was noted Catholic publicist Pierre André Simon. It published a monthly journal *Vérité et Documents* whose first issue - on Hungarian Cardinal Mindszenty - appeared in February 1949. However, CIDCC's first International Conference was only held in June 1958, in Bonn and Berlin including delegations from nine countries – Germany, Austria, Belgium, France, Italy, the Netherlands and exile groups from Estonia, Latvia and Lithuania.

The CIDCC President elected at that conference was Hermann Lindrath, a wealthy German Protestant industrialist, CDU MP from 1953 on and Finance and Economy Minister in Adenauer's third cabinet from October 1957 until his death in February 1960. Lindrath had a chequered past, having joined the Nazi Stahlhelm in 1933, the SA in 1934 and the NSDAP in 1937; he joined the CDU in 1945 and fled from his native East Germany in 1951. At the first CIDCC International Conference in 1958, the Conference Vice-Presidents were Pinay, Solís Ruiz and the recent Italian Foreign Minister (1954-57) and leader of the Italian CIDCC section Gaetano Martino; Solís Ruiz chaired the Spanish CIDCC section, assisted by his Vice-President, IEP Director Fraga Iribarne. It is worth noting that in 1955 Pinay and Martino had been two of the six national delegates at the European Coal and Steel Community's crucial Conference of Messina that would lead to the Treaty of Rome in 1957 and the creation of the EEC in 1958 – van Zeeland was the first candidate proposed to head the committee to develop the proposal for a European common market, but was defeated by Paul-Henri Spaak. Martino went on to serve as President of the European Parliament from 1962 to 1964, and die in 1967.

January 1959 was a busy month for CIDCC Vice-President Pinay; on 5th January, he paid an urgent and unscheduled visit to Pope John XXIII and his Secretary of State, **Cardinal Tardini**, revealing only that their discussions focused on Franco-Vatican relations, although it would not be surprising if they related to the formation three days later of Prime Minister Debré's government in which Pinay served as Finance Minister whilst CIOC and CEDI member Edmond Michelet filled the post of Justice Minister. Interestingly, the Debré government also included two figures from the future sniffer plane scandal: Pierre Guillaumat, President of Elf from 1966 to 1977, was appointed Defence Minister, whereas Valéry Giscard d'Estaing obtained his first government post as Secretary of State for Finance, Pinay's Ministry.

Within a week of the formation of the new government, Pinay received an official visit on 14th January from Spanish Trade Minister Alberto Ullastres, a high-ranking Opus Dei and CEDI member who, as later Spanish Ambassador to the EEC, became a Life Member of the AESP. At the end of the month, it was the turn of Solís Ruiz to visit Paris, holding discussions with Debré, Pinay and Foreign and Information Ministers Couve de Murville and Frey before attending a CIDCC meeting on the 30th January at which he was appointed CIDCC Vice-President and Spain selected as the host for the next CIDCC Conference. In November 1959, Solís Ruiz invited President Lindrath to Madrid to prepare the ground for the II International Conference of the CIDCC; the Spanish media lionised Lindrath, the "biggest businessman in the world" who controlled "34% of German iron, 25% of its coal, 17% of liquid fuel, 62% of aluminium, 39% of lead, 4% of steel, 43% of zinc" and had important holdings in Volkswagen.

The II International Conference of the CIDCC including delegates from fourteen countries was held in Madrid on 25th - 27th January 1960, and was attended by Simon, Pinay, Solís Ruiz, Fraga, CEDI mainstay Merkatz and the head of the CIDCC German section, Hermann Pünder; it received telegrams of support from Adenauer, German Foreign Minister Heinrich von Brentano and Vatican Secretary of State Cardinal Tardini – Adenauer and his son, a Catholic priest, had visited the Pope and Cardinal Tardini in the Vatican on 22nd January. The CIDCC's II International Conference ended with a private audience with Franco for the foreign dignitaries, accompanied by Solis and Fraga – the Franco government had meanwhile arranged permanent premises in Madrid for the CIDCC headquarters. Lindrath was however absent from the January 1960 conference; he died on 27th February. The succession to the Presidency was only one outstanding issue: the German section wished to study the political and organisational problems of the CIDCC, the French section wanted to focus on media measures to combat Soviet psychological warfare (a reflection of Violet's influence (12)), the Italian section proposed drafting a declaration of principles, and the Spanish section felt the need to settle the definitive aim and international status of the Committee.

Another CIDCC meeting held in Paris on 13th June 1960 failed to settle the issue of the Presidency, as the German delegation, expected to fill the post, had not named a candidate due to tensions between Protestants and Catholics; ad interim, Pinay as First Vice-President took on the function. These issues were then again raised at a somewhat chaotic CIDCC Praesidium meeting, held in Bonn on 12th-13th June 1961 – Simon had resigned as Secretary-General, Pinay was occupied elsewhere with business affairs, and key personalities from France, Switzerland and the Netherlands could not attend. Solis accepted to chair the meeting, which was organised by the German section; the key CIDCC members were received by Adenauer.

It is not known what decisions the CIDCC took about the succession to the Presidency, de facto held by Solis, or the direction of the Committee, but another Presidium meeting was held in Berlin in April 1962, the III International Conference of the CIDCC met in Fribourg, Switzerland sometime that year, and the Spanish CIDCC section organised its second round of conferences in November-December, at which a key speaker was Federico Silva Muñoz. Foreign guests flying in for the Spanish CIDCC conferences included Heinz Gehle, foreign policy expert for the German section, Press Secretary of the CIDCC and Editor of its bulletin, and the new CIDCC Secretary-General Georg Jaeschke, both of whom had attended the Madrid 1960 conference (13). A further CIDCC Presidium meeting was held in Paris in December 1962, for the first time including an American representative, German-born US Major-General Charles Andrew Willoughby, who had served as General Douglas MacArthur's Chief of Intelligence during most of World War II, the occupation of Japan and the Korean War. A longstanding admirer of Franco and Mussolini whom MacArthur had nicknamed his "pet fascist", Willoughby travelled to Spain after his retirement in 1951 to act as an advisor and lobbyist for Franco's government, returning to the US in 1968 and dying in 1972. Earlier in 1962, Willoughby had founded an American section of the CIDCC; the American contribution to the CIDCC was funded by Willoughby's close associate, Texas oil tycoon Haroldson Lafayette Hunt (14).

The IV International Conference of the CIDCC was held in Luzern in October 1963, and, either at that conference or at a subsequent Presidium meeting, Solís Ruiz's temporary role as acting President was formalised – he was the International President at the V International Conference of the CIDCC held in Vienna in September 1964, which, for the first time, included a delegation from Portugal. The Portuguese Minister for Corporations (i.e. Labour and Welfare) and head of the Portuguese delegation, José João Gonçalves de Proença, then visited Solís Ruiz in Madrid in June 1965 to discuss the organisation of the next International Conference of the CIDCC, held nine months later in Lisbon in March 1966 under the chairmanship of the Portuguese President of the Republic (1958-74), Rear-Admiral Américo de Deus Rodrigues Tomás and CIDCC International President Solís Ruiz; the CIDCC Secretary-General was now Heinz Gehle.

Delegations from twenty-five countries attended the VI International Conference of the CIDCC in Lisbon, including an American representative, this time notorious Holocaust-denier and revisionist Austin J. App; like Willoughby a German-American, App was a fervent Catholic and advocate for the Germans expelled from Eastern Europe at the end of World War II (15). Germany was represented by Hermann Pünder, President of the German section, Dr. Bruno Heck, Federal Minister for Family and Youth Questions, and former Minister Dr. Theodor Oberländer. The Italian delegation included Bishop Tito Mancini, Vicar-General of Cardinal Tisserant, and Professor Leo Magnino, a stalwart of the ABN/EFC since 1960 and by 1985 a member of the EFC Executive Board. The ABN President, Yaroslav Stetsko, represented the Ukraine. Fraga sent a telegram apologising for his absence. Pinay gave the closing speech, before the leaders of the CIDCC were received by the President of the Portuguese Council, Oliveira Salazar. The conference was also celebrated officially by a special set of three postage stamps issued by the Portuguese Post Office to mark the occasion (16).

In reacting to news of the death of Adenauer in April 1967, Solís Ruiz told the Press that Adenauer had founded the CIDCC and that he himself had had the honour of replacing Adenauer as its President. Both statements seem inaccurate; although Adenauer had strongly supported the CIDCC in 1958-61, and Lindrath had certainly acted as his personal representative, no other data point to the German Chancellor having had a founding or directing role in the CIDCC. The next mention of the CIDCC came in March 1968 when Solís Ruiz extended a visit to Bonn to attend a CIDCC meeting, no doubt of the Presidium. The Spanish section held another round of conferences in April 1969, another CIDCC Presidium was held in Bonn on 8th May and the Spanish section organised a further round of conferences in Madrid in June. Solís Ruiz was still International President at this time, and said of the CIDCC before the May 1969 Presidium that "this organisation has acted over recent years as a channel for relations and activities between the Federal Republic of Germany and Spain".

In November 1969, the CIDCC, qualified in the *Vanguardia Española* reporting for the first time as "the extreme right-wing organisation CIDCC" published a letter from two Italian cardinals objecting to the new Mass approved by the Vatican – the Italian CIDCC section poured red ink into the fountains on St. Peter's Square on the first Sunday of Advent in 1970 when the new Mass was introduced, and submitted a petition with 100,000 signatures to the Pope. In December 1969, the CIDCC also wrote to the Pope protesting against modern-style "Beat masses".

However, 1969 also brought setbacks for two of the main sections of the CIDCC, the Spanish and the German. In Spain, the CIDCC's main representatives, Ministers Solís Ruiz and Fraga Iribarne, were both dismissed in October 1969 in a major cabinet reshuffle by Franco following the MATESA scandal which pitted the Falangist "reformistas" led by Fraga and Solís Ruiz against their "technocrat" adversaries in Opus Dei. In 1967, Fraga had already incurred the wrath of Opus Dei in passing the Law of Religious Freedom to cater for the *acatólicos*. In 1969, having ensured the passage of the 1966 Press Law abolishing pre-censorship, Fraga as Minister for Information allowed the Press an unprecedented free hand in reporting on the MATESA scandal which implicated senior Opus Dei figures close to the Prime Minister, Carrero Blanco.

After Franco's reshuffle, Opus Dei dominated the new cabinet; Fraga's replacement as Minister for Information and Tourism was Opus Dei's Alfredo Sánchez Bella, who had been serving as Spanish Ambassador in Italy since 1962. Following his dismissal, Fraga was posted abroad in 1973 as Spanish Ambassador to the UK, a Protestant country where he could do little damage to Opus Dei; he did not return to domestic political office until after Franco's death in November 1975 (17). As for the German CIDCC section, its government funding was first curtailed during the 1966-69 Grand Coalition (when Willy Brandt was Vice-Chancellor and Foreign Minister) before being terminated under Brandt's Chancellorship from 1969 on (18).

No international actions of the CIDCC have been identified after these two bodyblows in 1969 which fatally weakened the group and led to its disappearance; "the German section was therefore dissolved in March 1970, which also meant, in effect, the end of the CIDCC as a transnational propaganda organization" (19). The Italian section of the CIDCC however seems to have survived into the 1970s and had significant street presence at the beginning of the *stragi* (20).

FOOTNOTES

(1) See footnote 4 in the main text above.

(2) *ABC* (Madrid) of 18/1/52 pg 11 – see the Sources annex to the main text for weblinks.

(3) *La Vanguardia Española* of 6/6/52 pg 4 and 7/6/52 pg 4; *ABC* (Sevilla) of 6/6/52 pg 14 – see the Sources annex to the main text for weblinks.

(4) *La Vanguardia Española* of 17/10/52 pg 3, 18/10/52 pg 4, 19/10/52 pg 4 and 21/10/52 pg 6; *ABC* (Madrid) of 15/10/52 pg 23, 19/10/52 pgs 44-45 and 21/10/52 pg 24; *ABC* (Sevilla) of 19/10/52 pg 24 and 21/10/52 pg 18. De Gaulle's first Army Minister in 1945-46, Michelet again served under Prime Minister de Gaulle in the Fourth Republic as Minister for War Veterans from June 1958 to January 1959 when he was appointed as first Justice Minister of the Fifth Republic, a position he occupied until forced to resign in August 1961 by Prime Minister Debré due to his opposition to the savage oppression of Algerians in Paris. From April 1967 to May 1968, Michelet served under Prime Minister Pompidou as Minister of State for Public Administration and under Prime Minister Chaban-Delmas as Minister of Culture from June 1969 until his death in October 1970.

(5) *La Vanguardia Española* of 28/5/53 pg 4; *ABC* (Madrid) of 28/5/53 pg 33.

(6) *La Vanguardia Española* of 28/6/53 pg 30; *ABC* (Madrid) of 25/6/53 pg 23 and 28/6/53 pg 52; *ABC* (Sevilla) of 28/6/53 pg 29. Francisco Javier Conde García went on to serve as Spanish Ambassador to the Philippines in 1956, Taiwan from 1957 to 1959, Uruguay from 1959 to 1963, Canada from 1964 to 1969, and Germany from 1971 until his death in 1974, on which see *ABC* (Madrid) of 20/12/74 pg 46. He was included as an AESP Life Member on the 1978 membership list despite having died four years previously.

(7) See the CIA report on Sint Unum in Arduini, reproduced below.

(8) See http://www.vatican.va/roman_curia/pontifical_councils/laity/documents/rc_pc_laity_doc_20051114_associazioni_fr.html#FÉDÉRATION INTERNATIONALE DES PHARMACIENS CATHOLIQUES; *La Vanguardia Española* of 15/8/54 pg 3, 29/8/54 pg 3, and 4/9/54 pg 3; *ABC* (Madrid) of 29/8/54 pg 30 and 9/9/54 pg 17.

(9) *La Vanguardia Española* of 9/4/47 pg 4, 27/3/56 pg 6, 4/9/56 pg 4, 16/8/58 pg 3, 10/8/63 pg 3, 6/9/63 pg 14, 24/8/67 pg 22, and 19/6/71 pg 31; *ABC* (Madrid) of 8/9/60 pg 36 and 23/06/71 pg 60.

(10) *La Vanguardia Española* of 11/6/64 pg 7; *ABC* of 11/6/64 pg 59.

(11) *Revista de Política Internacional* number 89 (weblink in footnote 4 in the main text above).

(12) See Johannes Großmann, *The Comité international de défense de la civilisation chrétienne and the Transnationalization of Anti-Communist Propaganda in Western Europe after the Second World War*, published in *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, pg 256, referenced in the Sources annex.

(13) On Gehle of the CIDCC and the SWG, see footnotes 48 and 318 in the main text above.

(14) On Willoughby, Hunt and the American CIDCC section, see http://www.pennsylvaniacrier.com/filemgmt_data/files/The%20World%20Court.pdf; http://www.arlingtoncemetery.net/cawilloughby.htm; http://intellit.muskingum.edu/wwii_folder/wwiifepac_folder/wwiifepacwilloughby.html; http://www.gale.cengage.com/pdf/scguides/macarthur/RG-23.doc; Großmann in *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, pg 257; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Charles_A._Willoughby. Besides funding Willoughby, H. L. Hunt and his two sons were the backers of Dan Smoot's "Facts Forum" popular American television programme and many anti-communist causes – see https://archive.org/details/foia_Hunt_H.L.-HQ-1; https://archive.org/details/foia_Hunt_H.L.-HQ-2; http://www.bbc.co.uk/blogs/adamcurtis/entries/9849ae28-a4f7-3020-995f-1d07c4250d7a; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nelson_Bunker_Hunt which notes that H. L. Hunt's son was one of the major sponsors of the Western Goals Foundation created in 1979 by Singlaub.

Willoughby and H. L. Hunt's fervent support for anti-communist causes such as the CIDCC were parodied in Len Deighton's 1966 spy thriller *Billion Dollar Brain* (a classic 1967 film by Ken Russell starring Michael Caine), in which rabid Texas oil tycoon General Midwinter uses a sophisticated computer to run an extreme right-wing religious group, the Crusade for Freedom, and to plan a military invasion of Latvia with the help of stolen biological weapons – a reference to Willoughby's suppression of war crimes charges against Shiro Ishii, the head of Unit 731, the Imperial Japanese Army's covert biological and chemical warfare research group, in exchange for their data on human experimentation. See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Unit_731; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Shir%C5%8D_Ishii; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Crusade_for_Freedom; on the book and film, see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Billion-Dollar_Brain; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Billion_Dollar_Brain; http://www.imdb.com/title/tt0061405/.

(15) On App, see Bellant, referenced in the Sources annex. In 1970, App spoke alongside Labin, Lombardo and Oberländer at the ABN/EFC conference in Brussels organised by Damman and Vankerkhoven – see footnote 108 in the main text above.

(16) See *ABN Correspondence*, July – August 1966 pgs 32-38 and September – October 1966 pg 32 at http://diasporiana.org.ua/wp-content/uploads/books/13909/file.pdf; Großmann in *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, pg 251.

(17) On Franco's reshuffle and the victory of Opus Dei, see *Spiegel* 45/1969 pgs 133-134 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-45464964.html and 46/1970 pgs 152-157 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-43837777.html; the 1970 CIA report on Sint Unum given in Arduini and reproduced below. For the American State Department's interpretation of Fraga's posting to London, see the declassified State Department cable 1973MADRID04791 of 23rd August 1973. Solís Ruiz was recalled to Franco's cabinet in his old post of Secretary of the National Movement in June 1975 and served as Labour Minister in the first post-Franco cabinet – see the declassified State Department cable 1976MADRID01576 of 1st March 1976. Search for the cable references at https://aad.archives.gov/aad/.

(18) *Spiegel* 23/1967 pg 32 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-46409343.html and 42/1968 pgs 30-49 at https://www.spiegel.de/spiegel/print/d-

45949990.html; Großmann in *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, pgs 254-259.

(19) On the closure of the German section, see Großmann in *Transnational Anti-Communism and the Cold War*, pg 259. For further reading on the CIDCC, useful accounts of the 1958-61 meetings by Juan Beneyto Pérez, an early Spanish CIDCC member, CIDCC Director of Studies and later President of Franco's National Press Council, were published by the IEP – see *Revista de Política Internacional* numbers 47 and 58, sources for the above summary as were issues of the *La Vanguardia Española* of 14/2/52 pg 7; 23/2/52 pg 3; 2/3/52 pg 7; 13/3/52 pg 4; 18/7/52 pg 7; 4/1/59 pg 19, 6/1/59 pgs 13-14 and 38, 9/1/59 pg 10, 15/1/59 pg 3, 27/1/59 pg 21, 29/1/59 pg 12, 30/1/59 pg 30, 31/1/59 pg 12, 14/11/59 pg 17; 15/11/59 pg 5; 22/11/59 pg 5; 14/1/60 pgs 7 and 9; 20/1/60 pg 20; 23/1/60 pg 22; 26/1/60 pgs 11 and 18; 27/1/60 pgs 15 and 17; 28/1/60 pgs 1, 10 and 11; 12/6/60 pg 9; 14/6/60 pg 20; 13/6/61 pg 7; 14/6/61 pg 46; 16/6/61 pg 16; 17/6/61 pg 7; 8/3/62 pg 7; 10/11/62 pg 32; 28/11/62 pg 8; 15/10/63 pg 8; 5/9/64 pg 5; 6/9/64 pgs 5 and 46; 1/5/65 pg 7; 22/6/65 pg 4; 29/3/66 pg 17; 30/3/66 pgs 14 and 44; 1/4/66 pg 13; 20/4/67 pg 14; 15/3/68 pg 16; 19/4/69 pg 7; 8/5/69 pg 17; 21/6/69 pg 7; 31/8/69 pg 21; 2/11/69 pg 20; 3/1/70 pg 20, and back-numbers of *ABC* (Sevilla) of 21/11/59 pg 29, 27/1/60 pg 28, 28/1/60 pgs 7 and 15, 17/6/61 pg 49, 22/6/65 pg 41, 29/3/66 pg 32, 25/4/67 pgs 35-36, and 26/2/74 pgs 9, 11 and 13 – an interview with Solís Ruiz which still refers to him as International President of the CIDCC. Also see *La Vanguardia Española* of 25/5/60 pg 21 for possible CIDCC links to the Institute of European Studies at the University of Social Studies "Pro Deo" in Rome, founded by the Dominican Félix Morlion. CIDCC insider Beneyto Pérez also refers to Morlion and gives a useful summary of CEDI and the CIDCC in *Revista de Estudios Políticos – Nueva Epoca* number 71 (Jan-March 1991), pgs 197-218 – see the archive at http://www.cepc.es/publicaciones/revistas/revistaselectronicas. A comprehensive account of Spanish-German relations in the post-war period covering both CEDI and the CIDCC is given by Carlos Sanz Díaz in *España y la República Federal de Alemania (1949‒1966)* Univ.-Diss., Madrid 2005, pgs 433‒457 at http://biblioteca.ucm.es/tesis/ghi/ucm-t28931.pdf. For a brief discussion of CEDI and Strauß, see http://www.deutschlandfunk.de/der-andere-westen.1184.de.html?dram:article_id=185487. The most significant recent publications on the CIDCC are by German academic Junior Professor Dr. Johannes Großmann – see footnote 4 of the main text for details.

(20) An interesting article in *La Vanguardia Española* of 6/2/71 pg 23 reports on the neofascist bomb in Reggio Calabria, and lists the extreme right-wing groups making their presence felt on Italian streets as including "Ordine Nuovo, Avanguardia Nazionale, ... Defence of Christian Civilisation".

***

DOCUMENT 2

The Fight Against Communist Subversion within the Catholic Church – the Sint Unum plan – From a memorandum by Henry Kissinger for President Nixon by Alice Arduini, Dipartimento di Studi sullo Stato, Universita degli Studi di Firenze, 2010.

The Italian original is at http://www.statoechiese.it/images/stories/2010.2/arduini_lotta.pdf; this English translation is reproduced with the author's permission from http://unifi.academia.edu/AliceArduini/Papers/407839/The_Fight_Against_Communist_Subversion_within_the_Catholic_Church_the_Sint_Unum_plan_._From_a_memorandum_by_Henry_Kissinger_for_President_Nixon.

***

The Sint Unum proposal had been sparked by a Cercle dinner of 2nd July 1969 whose discussions were minuted for participant Henry Kissinger, a record recently released by the CIA – see footnote 119. The memorandum reads, in part:

> "Violet said that new opportunities for cooperation between Europe and the United States in opposing the Soviet threat are now presented. The election of Presidents Nixon and Pompidou, the probable result of the election in Germany [in fact, SPD leader Willy Brandt became Federal Chancellor after the September 1969 election], and the probability of a Conservative government's taking power in England in 1970 will allow for greater cooperation among these governments through exchanges of information "and influence."
>
> Mr. Kissinger asked what specific ideas the group had in mind. The only idea put forward in response to his question was suggested by Eddé and Otto von Habsburg, with the evident agreement of the rest. They expressed concern with Communist infiltration of the Catholic Church, particularly in South America. Indeed, most of the group felt that the Russians were now concentrating on the Church rather than on Communist Parties in South America. Catholic revolutionary activities are therefore very dangerous there. After Vatican II, the Communists had established a first-class information service targetted at the Catholic hierarchy. The service was organized by the Pax movement in Poland. They suggested that a counter-operation be established, with operations concentrating on Rome and South America. Mr. Kissinger said that he would welcome their sending him a concrete proposal in this regard. Violet said that he would do so".

Kissinger evidently felt that the emergence of liberation theology in Latin America was enough of a threat to hold an NSC meeting on the subject on 9th July 1969, commissioning a CIA study on the Church in Latin America (see https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/LOC-HAK-316-2-57-6.pdf, https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/LOC-HAK-2-1-34-0.pdf and https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/esau-42.pdf), although he later recommended turning down the Sint Unum proposal as detailed below.

On the re-establishment of formal US-Vatican diplomatic relations in January 1984 following the appointment of William A. Wilson, Reagan's personal envoy to the Holy See, as full US Ambassador, see https://www.theguardian.com/theguardian/2013/jan/11/vatican-usa-diplomatic-relations-1984-archive.

THE FIGHT AGAINST COMMUNIST SUBVERSION WITHIN THE CATHOLIC CHURCH: THE *SINT UNUM* PLAN.

From a memorandum by Henry Kissinger for President Nixon*

by Alice Arduini, Dipartimento di Studi sullo Stato,
Universita degli Studi di Firenze, 2010.

During the first months of 1970, the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) translated a dossier into English that had been drafted in French by an underground organization called "Sint Unum[1]." Subsequently, National Security Advisor Henry Kissinger forwarded the document to the President of the United States Richard Nixon. This paper was enclosed with a memorandum entitled "Study of Subversion within the Catholic Church". It is appropriate to place this document in its historical context in order to reach a better understanding of its pivotal role and to be aware of the reasons behind its arrival in the top echelons of the American Administration not to mention the fallout which ensued from this event.

Bilateral relations between the United States and the Holy See were the first main issue: a major positive turning point took place in the early Seventies[2]. Indeed, it was ever clearer that the President wanted to overcome long and deeply ingrained traditions by establishing diplomatic relations with the Holy See. This change of policy became increasingly apparent during Nixon's first European journey and particularly during his first meeting with Paul VI in early March 1969.

In this context one should bear in mind a telling setback during the Truman administration. In 1950, diplomat Myron C. Taylor resigned for health reasons from his post of "Special Representative of the President of the United States to His Holiness Pius XII". Although Taylor was selected for the position by Roosevelt, Truman granted him ambassador status and his appointment elicited protests from various quarters. Opponents argued that this decision was unconstitutional since it went against the principle of separation of church and state[3]. President Truman did accept Taylor's resignation, but to be sure, he did not give up his helpful work. On the 20th of October 1951 Truman nominated General Mark Clark for the post of Ambassador to the Vatican; this initiative followed a long period of unofficial high-level contacts: as a matter of fact the last American Ambassador had left his post in 1870.

However the President's appointment had to be confirmed by the Senate before becoming official. Strong opposition to the decision immediately reared its head in the United States. Truman's initiative met with a far more bitter outcry than he had actually anticipated. Anti-Catholic feelings, which were still alive and well in the United States, played a key role in the protests and gave rise to a refusal of the Presidential decree. Anti-Catholic sentiment spread rapidly throughout the country and thereafter occupied centre stage in political debates. Frayed nerves resulting from this polarizing issue were an important factor in the president's decision which had been taken together with General Clark to abandon the project as well as cutting short negotiations concerning the issue.

There were no subsequent attempts by the Truman Administration to create an American representative to the Vatican. After Eisenhower, John Kennedy, a Catholic himself flaunted his steadfast opposition to diplomatic ties with the Holy See, either formal or informal. His successor Lyndon Johnson also unwaveringly continued this policy. By contrast, President Nixon wanted to change this trend and start up diplomatic relations with the Vatican albeit on an informal basis. On the 5th of February 1969 he shared his intention of appointing his own "Special Representative to the Vatican" with Kissinger through a note. Kissinger responded the next day, after commissioning a study by his most trusted employees on the topic and he made all his misgivings known to the President:

> I have taken no samplings on the Hill, but I estimate that opposition in Congress on this point would still be powerful. We now exchange information and views with the Vatican both in Rome, where an officer of the American Embassy maintains contact with the Vatican Secretariat, and in Washington, through the Apostolic Delegation. Both we and the Vatican have considered these channels adequate to serve our mutual needs[4].

Regardless, in the same Memorandum the President steadfastly put down his intentions on paper: "I have definitely decided to go forward on this after I return from Europe[5]." During a press conference two days after his meeting with the Pope on the Second of March 1969 a journalist asked the President: "Do you think, Sir, that, from your talks with Pope Paul at the Vatican, there is any possibility that the United States might send an envoy to the Vatican as a permanent representative?" Nixon replied:

> That possibility has been considered by the State Department and by me, because we have been concerned that we should have very closer consultation and discussion with the Vatican. I found, for example, my conversation with the Pope Paul extremely helpful. […] I want that line of communication kept open. Whether we can have it kept open based on the present facilities that are available, I have not yet determined. The matter is still under study[6].

Protests did soon start to come in through open lines of communication: the White House and the State Department were swamped by a wide range of messages voicing opposition against the Presidential decision so much so that a standard answer to the spate of letters was drafted[7]. As the wave of protests hardly seemed to ebb, Nixon was forced to reconsider his projects at the end of April 1969: he gave up on the idea of appointing a Special Representative and he spent the following months re-establishing the dialogue with the Holy See instead.

In a later press conference the issue of a diplomatic representative to the Vatican was raised once again. Nixon reiterated his previous comments to establish a dialogue and added that he had reached a decision: "After examining the matter thoroughly, I have established channels of communication through high level visits by Cabinet officers[8]." The President decided to send two cabinet members along with other top White House officials on a mission to confer with the Pope: Secretary of Labour George Shultz, who was later Secretary of State during the Reagan administration, and Secretary of Transportation John A. Volpe who would later to become the American Ambassador in Italy.

Relations greatly improved from the last months of 1969 onwards, and President Nixon reinstituted the office of Special Representative to the Holy See. This decision was confirmed in May 1970 when Kissinger announced that Henry Cabot Lodge would start his mission in his capacity as "Special Representative of the President of the United States with His Holiness Paul VI".

Within this December 1969-May 1970 timeframe, a set of circumstances prompted a U-turn in the administration's desire for rapprochement with the Vatican. However, during these same months, a series of events was working against this progress and effectively worsening bilateral relations between the United States and the Holy See. First and foremost, suspicions were raised concerning a shift in relations between the Vatican and the Soviet Union. Robert Murphy, an American diplomat, sent the President a report detailing how a reliable source claimed that

Paul VI was about to establish diplomatic ties with the Soviet Union[9]. John R Brown explained to Kissinger in a memorandum regarding the report:

> Murphy notes that if the report proves well founded and the USSR establishes a diplomatic mission at the Vatican some of the Americans who opposed the idea on our part might have second thoughts. Upon reading this the President questioned whether we should reassess our previous decision. He would like your recommendations on this[10].

Kissinger responded with a lengthy memorandum in which he offered Nixon a study of the Holy See's foreign relations and underscored Canada's choice which was taken the same year and was pushed through by Prime Minister Trudeau to strengthen diplomatic links with the Vatican. Although Kissinger's caution is evident in his writing, he changed his past stance by declaring himself in favour of Diplomatic Representation with the Holy See and giving a detailed account of the reasons behind these thoughts:

> The Pope's recent helpful comments on Vietnam and his efforts to be of assistance in Biafra and the Middle East (the Israeli Foreign Minister called on the Pope on October 6) are significant. While I am not in a position to judge current or potential domestic attitudes on this matter, I can see no foreign policy reason not to have diplomatic relations and several reasons why we should. I think the arrangement you discussed with Lodge fills the bill[11].

Another striking change of tack took place soon after this. In January 1970, Thomas Patrick Melady, who was an American diplomat and was to become the United States Ambassador to the Vatican during the Reagan [correction: George H. W. Bush] administration, sent a memorandum to Kissinger referring to rumours foreshadowing Paul VI's alleged intention of accepting the invitation to visit Hiroshima in occasion of the twenty-fifth anniversary of the atomic bombings. Kissinger wrote the following remarks in a letter to his employee Peter Flanigan:

> I find it somewhat hard to believe that Pope Paul would allow himself to be drawn into as intensely political an event as a celebration of the 25th Anniversary of Hiroshima. However, Melady should know what he is talking about in this matter, and I agree with him that the visit would be most unfortunate, both for ourselves and for the moderates in Japan[12].

One last factor was added to the other two: to fan the flames in bilateral relations between the United States and the Vatican. It was no less than a scare linked with a subversive plan within the Catholic Church which is the topic under discussion in this paper. Members of the underground Catholic organization *Sint Unum* which was formed in the wake of World War II and of its affiliated group "La Commission pour l'Eglise Persécutée" founded in 1955 drafted a study trying to prove that the Church was being undermined by Communist subversion. This report landed in the inbox of the American Administration thanks to David Rockefeller[13] who delivered it to Kissinger directly. The National Security Advisor then took it upon himself to personally inform Nixon about this issue.

The *Sint Unum* organization, which was initially made up of French and German lay persons, and later included citizens of other countries. The common denominator of the group's members was that they were all members of a Christian Democratic party in their home countries. The president and the main backer of *Sint Unum* was the Italian businessman Carlo Pesenti[14] who also happened to be at the helm of host of Italian companies such as instance Lancia Automobiles (Fiat group) and Italcementi, the leading cement manufacturer in Italy.

The text of the dossier, which was first drafted in French and then translated into English by the CIA dealt with two different kinds of Communist infiltrations in the Catholic Church: leftist subversion and Catholic modernism. According to the document, the first movement had been started by "Pax". "Pax" was a group taking part in undercover activities which had actually been founded in Poland and revolved around a Warsaw-Paris-Mexico axis its main propaganda machine was a bimonthly publication with the title "Informations Catholiques Internationales".

The second movement pursued the aim of democratizing the Catholic Church: to make its ethics less self-denying; its discipline less demanding; and its tenets less unmovable. This movement rose in the Netherlands among the ecclesiastical hierarchy and had grown thanks to the IDOC[15] information centre: developing along a Utrecht-Paris-Mexico line.

According to the dossier, subversion within the Church had at first known a "descending" phase, which mainly included theoretical and intellectual works as well as divulging texts which purportedly had a scientific basis : in order to make certain socialists and revolutionary ideas sound more appealing. Following the "descending" phase was the "ascending" phase. This stage focused on revolutionary praxis and direct action. Once this intellectual revolution took root in the minds of theologians, teachers in the major seminars, and a number of Bishops, the groundwork would have thus been laid to inspire truly democratic revolutionary action.

Sint Unum's document brought to light a dark picture of Communist infiltrations within the Church but it also put forward a blueprint to foil such a plan through dissemination of information and propaganda. The document called for the same kind of publications being circulated by the opposition: a monthly letter with the title "Religious news from Rome" that targeted Bishops; a bimonthly bulletin to be printed in Paris which was to play a similar role to "Informations Catholiques Internationales"; and a scientific magazine to be published in Montreal. A third section of the dossier displayed the cost of putting out each publication and the projected budget over a five year span. The plan would cost nearly 74 million French Francs equivalent to approximately 13.4 Million American Dollars.

In his memorandum Kissinger brought the President up to date concerning alleged subversion from within the Catholic Church and he also enclosed two documents which had been drafted by the CIA: the English translation of the original dossier as well as those pieces of information about *Sint Unum* and its affiliate (see below). A reliable history of events which that followed from this plan has still to be written. Was the *Sint Unum* plan actually put into practice? Moreover, what was the involvement of the United States?

Memorandum for the President[16]

From: Henry A. Kissinger

Subject: Study on Subversion in the Catholic Church

David Rockefeller recently gave me a document on Communist subversion in the Catholic Church, which was in turn given to him by friends. It is apparently authored by a member or members of a clandestine Catholic group, Sint Unum, comprised principally of French and German lay Catholics. An English translation of the document (the original is in French) prepared by CIA is attached at Tab A[17]. A synopsis of information available on Sint Unum and its affiliate, "La Commission pour l'Eglise Persécutée", is attached at Tab B.

While the study purports to deal with subversion in the Church in Latin America it is actually a treatise on subversion within the entire Church. The document also proposes an action plan to combat Communist subversion and estimates the cost at about $13.4 million over five years. The purpose in having the document passed to me apparently was to ascertain if the US Government would have any interest in helping finance that campaign.

Summary

The study conceives of the Church as subject to the impact of two kinds of forces:

- "Progressist Subversion"- of Communist origin; subversion in the conventional sense, i.e. infiltration for political ends; begun in Poland through a clandestine Communist political/action group, "Pax", which has in recent years concentrated its efforts in France; major activity is dissemination of information through a publication called "Informations Catholiques Internationales", and attempts to infiltrate and influence the clergy.

- “Modernist Subversion”- the compendium of philosophical ideas and concepts propounded by those theologians and clergy who desire to achieve a “broad Christian ecumenism” and democratisation of the Church with less monolithic dogma and austere morality; the strongest center of modernism is the Dutch hierarchy; modernist ideas are spread by publications of an organization initially set up by the Dutch hierarchy, IDOC.

The study’s thesis, in brief, is that Communists utilize more liberal trends to favor their own ends, and that modernism in the Church has become an instrument of Progressist – or Communist – subversion.

This has happened because Communists know how to introduce themselves without revealing themselves; because a great number of intellectuals and priests are willing to work with Communists, given their concept of tolerance; and because some religious leaders are intellectually sympathetic to the economic doctrines of socialism.

Mechanically subversion is introduced as a purely religious activity to minimize defensive reactions; it develops in two stages – a “descending” stage, which is intellectual and theoretical and which creates the mind – set to be sympathetic to socialism, violence and revolution; and an “ascending” stage in which priests and bishops agitate for changes.

Proposed Counter- action

The document proposes that counter-action be taken through a program that is a mirror-image of the “subversive” one. It proposes to use “doctrinal elaboration”, i.e. counter modernist ideas and concepts, and utilize publications and document centers to do so. Tactically, it proposes to use “traditionalists”, but avoid identification with them; to insinuate counter-action on the “same wave-length” as Vatican II; and to aim especially at spreading ideas to the hierarchy and the seminaries, students and catechists.

The document proposes three publications – a monthly letter of religious news from Rome; a printed bulletin from Paris, and a scholarly theological review printed in Montreal. It also proposes the establishment of ten editorial and document centers throughout the world and eight information/action centers in Latin America to spread teaching of ideas. The total cost is estimated at 74 million francs over a five-year period (US $13.4 million).

Evaluation

The study is more an interpretation that a factual analysis, although much of what it says is probably true. The main question for us, however, is whether the US Government should become involved in the kind of action program proposed. We are in effect invited to help finance theological and ideological movements within the Church.

My feeling is that it is too risky for the US to become involved in financing a counter-movement within the Church, and I believe we should not do it.

[Tab A: CIA translation of Sint Unum document omitted]

Tab B: Sint Unum

[CIA report attached to Kissinger's memorandum]

Sint Unum, which has been described by one of its founders as a "clandestine Catholic international organization whose aims are to oppose Communism and to further the principles of Christianity", had its origins in the immediate post-war period when Europe was emerging from the chaos created by the Second World War. Former French Prime Minister Robert Schuman and German Chancellor Konrad Adenauer found a common bond in their desire to prevent future misunderstandings and hostility between Germany and France.

Under their encouragement, a small group of leading citizens of both France and Germany began a series of private discussions and activities from which the present organization emerged. Initially, the organization was made up exclusively of French and German citizens.

It was later expanded to include citizens of other countries who were by and large associated with the Christian Democratic Party of their particular country. The group meets periodically in formal discussion sessions covering a variety of subjects such as the decline of the church in modern life, modern man and morality, moral values among scientists, etc. The group has also incidentally provided several of its members with useful business contacts in other countries.

According to recent information, the President of *Sint Unum* and its principal financial contributor is Carlo Pesenti, a wealthy Italian industrialist and banker. Pesenti's fortune was delivered from his interests in an Italian cement company. He subsequently became the owner of a large number of banks and of the Lancia automobile company. Lancia became a large financial drain in the amount of $70,000,000 and was recently sold to Fiat. Pesenti is militantly anti-communist, and also pro-American without, however, a real understanding of the United States. Insofar as is known he has not been active in Italian politics.

One current project of the *Sint Unum* group is to fund a new international bi-weekly journal which is to be published by the Journal de Geneve, a conservative Swiss newspaper. *Sint Unum* will use this publication as an outlet for articles expressing the views of the group. Pesenti contributed a million dollars to help launch the journal which will be distributed free to organizations, intellectual centers, libraries and influential individuals. *Sint Unum* hopes that West German press magnate Axel Springer and former German Minister Franz Josef Strauss will agree to participate actively in this new publication. The group also plans to establish a file on all anti-Socialist writers, journalists, etc. , on who it will call for articles and feature material.

The socialist victory in Germany and the strengthening of *Opus Dei* in Spain have created certain problems for the *Sint Unum* group and resulted in the cancellation of the scheduled meeting recently. The group had hoped to invite certain French Government leaders to the meeting, but according to reports reaching *Sint Unum,* German Chancellor Willy Brandt and French President Georges Pompidou were in disagreement on certain basic issues. Thus it was judged inappropriate for French officials to attend a meeting in which such opponents of the Brandt regime as Franz

Josef Strauss would be present. Additionally, José Solis Ruiz, former head of the Sindicatos (labor organizations) in Spain and an enemy of *Opus Dei*, had also been invited. The reshuffling of the Spanish Government which resulted in the strengthening of *Opus Dei* elements and the weakening of Solis and his associates was another factor in the cancellation of the meeting. The Minister of Information and Tourism in the new Spanish Cabinet, Alfredo Sanchez Bella, is a longstanding friend of Jean Violet and may be invited to join *Sint Unum* in the future.

The next *Sint Unum* meeting will be held in Paris in March to be followed by another in Rio de Janeiro in July.

Jean Violet, a French lawyer, is described as the group's "executive officer" and receives a salary from Pesenti for his *Sint Unum* work.

Violet reportedly will visit this country in the near future to participate in preparations for French President Pompidou's visit to the United States in March [the visit would eventually be held from 23rd-26th February 1970]. Jean Violet was born on 20 May 1912 at St. Benin d'Azy (Nievre), France. Accredited in 1952 as a newspaper correspondent to the United Nations, he was employed by the Catholic Information Press Agency in Fribourg, Switzerland. His period of accreditation extended from 14 December 1952 to 14 March 1953. He is affiliated with a number of International legal organizations and specializes in international law. Violet has never been overtly active in French politics but remained close to Antoine Pinay as a political consultant. In addition to his contact with other *Sint Unum* members, Violet has had important contacts in the United States, including, inter alia, George Meany and General Gruenther. In the mid-fifties, Violet was also in contact with the directors of the French and German intelligence services from whom he hoped to secure financial aid to carry out certain of *Sint Unum*'s anti-communist programs.

La Commission pour l'Eglise Persécutée

In 1955 the "Commission pour l'Eglise Persécutée" was headquartered in Fribourg, Switzerland and was headed by a former member of the Swiss Secret Services. The "Commission" was closely connected with *Sint Unum* and had contact with ecclesiastical authorities, Catholic refugee centers in Eastern Europe, and with

Catholic diplomats from Western European nations posted to Eastern Europe. The "Commission" also claimed to have "discreet" liaison with Catholics living in Communist countries and with international Catholic organizations from which "intelligence" from Eastern European countries was received. The "Commission" once sought direct contact with this Agency from whom it wanted support for its intelligence gathering activities. However, at that time the Agency had indirect access to the so-called intelligence reports of the "Commission" and found them either erroneous or of such low level as to be of no interest. We did not, therefore, agree to the requested contact.

Jean Violet, secretary-organizer of *Sint Unum*, was in the past this latter organization's point of contact with the "Commission".

[END OF TAB B]

---

*Prof. Francesco Margiotta Broglio has drawn attention to this paper.

[1] The organization called *Sint Unum* had its origins in the early Fifties, in the immediate post-war period. Sint Unum has been described by one of its founders as a "clandestine Catholic international organization whose aims are to oppose Communism and to further the principles of Christianity", v. *infra*, Tab. B.

[2] For an historical frame on the United States-Vatican Relations, see: E. DI NOLFO, *Vaticano e Stati Uniti, 1939-1952: dalle carte di Myron C. Taylor*, Milano, Franco Angeli ed., 1978, 17- 29; G.P. FOGARTY Sr., *The United States and the Vatican, 1939 – 1984*, in P.C. KENT, J.F. POLLARD, *Papal Diplomacy in the Modern Age*, Westport, CT, Greenwood Press, 1994, 222 – 231.

[3] The principle of separation of Church and State in the United States was introduced by the First Amendment to the United States Constitution, ratified on December 15, 1791. The Amendment prohibits the Congress from making any laws regarding religious issues: "Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof." For a further analysis on the Separation of Church and State principle in the United States, see: F. ONIDA: *Uguaglianza e libertà religiosa nel separatismo statunitense*, Giuffré, Milano, 1970 and *Separatismo e libertà religiosa negli Stati Uniti. Dagli anni Sessanta agli anni Ottanta,* Giuffré, Milano, ed., 1984; G.V. BRADLEY, *Church-State Relationships in America,* Greenwood Press, Westport, CT, 1987; P. HAMBURGER, *"Separation of Church and State"*, Harvard University Press, Cambridge, MA, 2002. Regarding Roosevelt's nomination: G.Q. FLYNN, *Franklin Roosevelt and the Vatican: The Myron Taylor Appointment*, The Catholic Historical Review, vol. 58, n. 2, Washington, DC, July 1972, from p. 171. "The special mission also had limited aims, i.e "The task at hand had been publicly defined in restrictive terms: i.e. dealing with the problem of European displaced persons": E. DI NOLFO, *Vaticano e Stati*

Uniti, 1939-1952: dalle carte di Myron C. Taylor, op.cit., p. 17. Concerning the exact nature of protests brought about by this appointment: see. R.I. GANNON Sr., *The Cardinal Spellmann Story*, Doubleday, Garden City, NY, 1962, pp. 166–168, and G.Q. FLYNN, *Roosevelt and Romanism. Catholics and American Diplomacy, 1937–1945*, Greenwood Press, Westport, CT, 1976, pp. 111-114.

[4] United States National Archives at College Park, MD (Henceforward NA), Nixon Presidential Material (NMP), Files of the National Security Council (FNSC), Nixon Administration, 1968–1975, Country Files (CF), box 732: Vatican (thru May 1970, vol. I, to Vatican 1972-74, vol. II), memorandum (memo), Henry Kissinger to Richard Nixon, Washington, DC, 6.2.1969, *confidential*.

[5] *Ibidem*.

[6] The text of the press conference on the 4th March 1969 is available on the following website: "The American Presidency Project", referring to President Nixon's first journey to Europe: http://www.presidency.ucsb.edu/ws/index.php?pid=2444.

[7] NA, NMP, FNSC, Nixon Administration, 1968 – 1975, CF, Box 732, mem., Helmut Sonnenfeldt to Henry Kissinger, Washington, DC, 7.3.1969. The contents of the standard letter is as follows: "[…] The various means by which lines of communication (with the Holy See N/A) may be kept open are presently under study. The President can assure you that in reaching his final decision he will appropriately pay heed to suggestions coming from outside government institutions from citizens who have developed an interest in the matter at hand".

[8] NA, NMP, FNSC, Nixon Administration, 1968–1975, CF, box 732, memo, Helmut Sonnenfeldt to Henry Kissinger, Washington, DC, 1.7.1969. *sensitive*. Minutes from the press conference are enclosed with the preparatory document for the meeting between Kissinger and the Holy See's Apostolic Delegate to Washington, Mons. Luigi Raimondi, which took place in July 1969.

[9] NA, NMP, FNSC, Nixon Administration, 1968–1975, CF, box 732, memo, John R. Brown to Henry Kissinger, copy forwarded to Peter Flanigan, Washington, DC, 1.12.1969. Formal bilateral relations between Russia and the Vatican have been only forged fairly recently, on the 8th of December 2009, on the Apostolic Nunciature level for the Holy See, and on an embassy level for the Russian Federation. Among the handful of states which don't currently have diplomatic relations with the Vatican, one may find China and Egypt; see *Relazioni diplomatiche con 178 Stati nel mondo*, in *L'Osservatore Romano*, 12 January 2010.

[10] NA, NMP, FNSC, Nixon Administration, 1968–1975, CF, box 732, memo cit., John R Brown to Henry Kissinger.

[11] NA, NMP, FNSC, Nixon Administration, 1968–1975, CF, box 732, memo, Henry Kissinger to Richard Nixon, Washington, DC, 18.12.1969, *secret*.

[12] NA, NMP, FNSC, Nixon Administration, 1968–1975, CF, box 732, memo, Henry Kissinger to Peter Flanigan, Washington, DC, 21.1.1970, *confidential*.

[13] David Rockefeller (b. 1915), freemason, American banker and patriarch of the Rockefeller family, personal friend of Henry Kissinger.

[14] Bergamo's Pesenti family has been one of the most important families of entrepreneurs in Italy throughout the twentieth century; it is well-known because it founded the largest Italian commercial empire in the cement sector. By 1865 the Pesenti family was already at the helm of Italcementi, which continued its steady meteoric rise during Fascism and post-WWII Reconstruction. The company achieved no less than a figure of 4 billions in equity capital,

---

not to mention the 37 factories it owned throughout Italy; Italcementi produced more than 50% of Italian cement. Carlo Pesenti (1907-1984) was the boss during post-WWII Reconstruction and managed to acquire other companies as well as substantial stakes in other businesses through the Italmobiliare investment company (a holding company owned by Italcementi itself). The Pesenti family owned Lancia Automobiles between 1956 and 1969, the year in which it was taken over by the FIAT group; it also had RAS insurance up to 1984, as well as "La Notte", newspaper and the Istituto Bancario Italiano (IBI). See F. AMATORI e A. COLLI, *Impresa e Industria in Italia, dall'Unità a oggi,* Marsilio Editore, Venezia, 2003, pp. 293-303 and V. CASTRONOVO, *L'industria italiana dall'Ottocento ad oggi,* Mondadori, Milano, 2004, p.94.

[15] In December 1963 the Dutch Bishops favoured setting up a Study Centre in Rome, the DOC which initially published its findings in Dutch. Later relevant translations were written in the following languages: French, English, German, Spanish and Italian. In 1965, at the end of the Second Vatican Council, the Dutch DOC merged with another body (CCCC) to create the IDOC international organization.

[16] NA, NMP, FNSC, Nixon Administration, 1968–1975, CF, box 732, memo, Henry Kissinger to Henry Kissinger, Washington, DC, undated, *secret.*

[17] The dossier at Tab A will not be enclosed here, due to the excessive length of the document. See ARDUINI A., *Nixon and the Vatican* (1969-1971), unpublished thesis, University of Florence, Italy.

***

DOCUMENT 3

Record prepared for Kissinger of the Cercle meeting on 2nd December 1970. For details of participants, see footnote 122. The Kissinger memorandum offers unprecedented insight into the discussions at Cercle meetings which were never minuted by the Cercle itself. The memorandum also demonstrates Kissinger's intense suspicion of Allende since his investiture as President of Chile the previous month, an outcome the CIA had been tasked to prevent from September 1970 on – see https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB138/CIA%20Information%20Act%20-%20Chile%20Op%20File.pdf.

The record is currently online at https://www.scribd.com/document/241043341/DNSA-00334-Kissinger-Violet, but as its availability may be only temporary, it is reproduced in full below. The 2nd December 1970 dinner and an *Il Tempo* article referring to Andreotti's presence there are discussed in a cable exchange on 4th December 1970 between Kissinger and the American Ambassador in Italy, Graham Martin (on whom see https://history.state.gov/departmenthistory/people/martin-graham-anderson), recently released by the CIA at https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/LOC-HAK-165-5-4-9.pdf and https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/LOC-HAK-165-5-5-8.pdf. It is worth noting that the Borghese coup, aborted at the last minute, was planned for the night of 7th December 1970.

An earlier memorandum prepared for Kissinger of a Cercle dinner held on 2nd July 1969 has been released by the CIA at https://www.cia.gov/library/readingroom/docs/LOC-HAK-268-2-27-3.pdf. Both meetings are discussed in footnote 119 above.

I am indebted to Hervé Beghinselen for bringing these records to my attention.

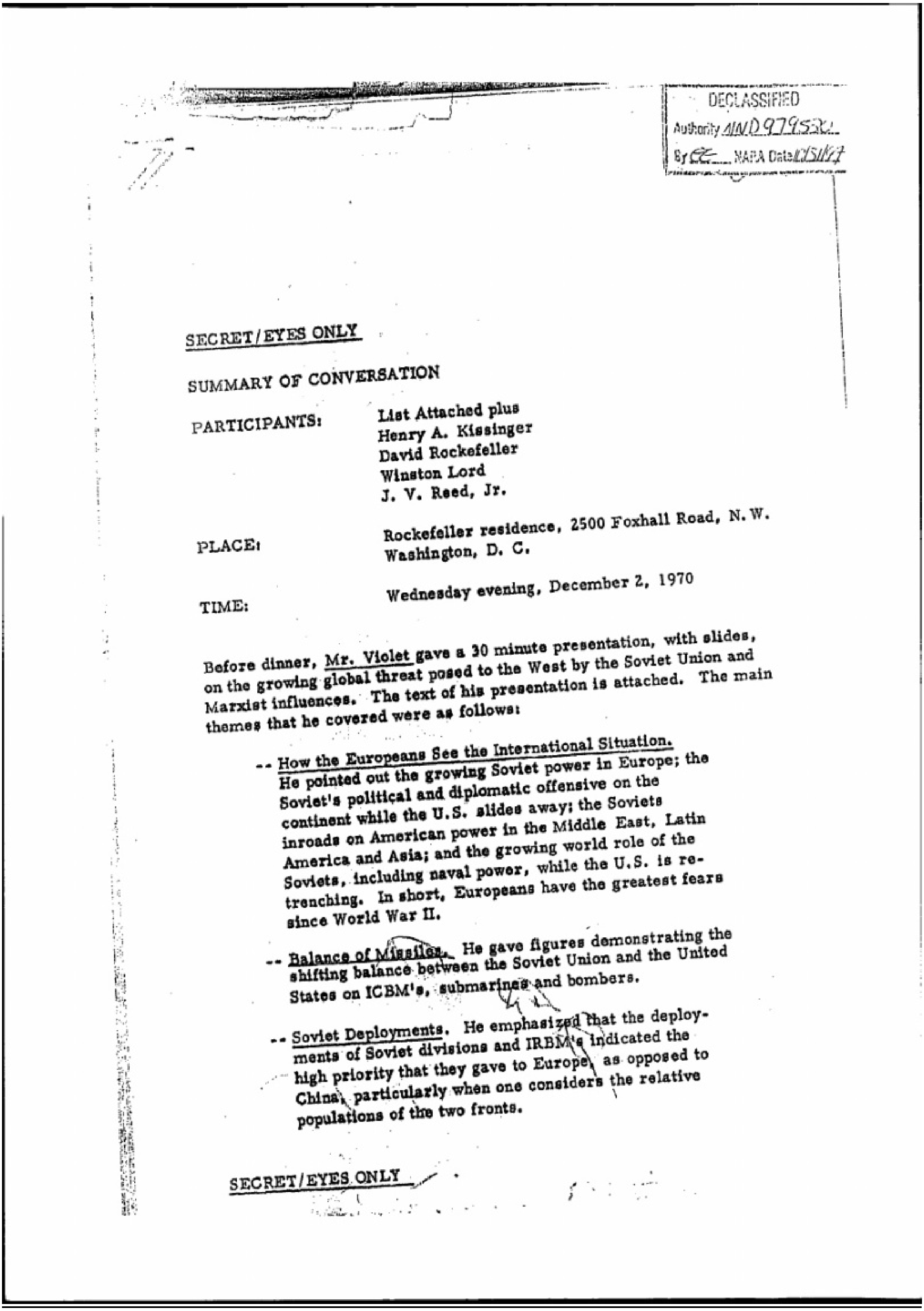

DECLASSIFIED
Authority NND 979520
By [illegible] NARA Date [illegible]

SECRET/EYES ONLY

SUMMARY OF CONVERSATION

PARTICIPANTS: List Attached plus
Henry A. Kissinger
David Rockefeller
Winston Lord
J. V. Reed, Jr.

PLACE: Rockefeller residence, 2500 Foxhall Road, N.W.
Washington, D. C.

TIME: Wednesday evening, December 2, 1970

Before dinner, Mr. Violet gave a 30 minute presentation, with slides, on the growing global threat posed to the West by the Soviet Union and Marxist influences. The text of his presentation is attached. The main themes that he covered were as follows:

-- How the Europeans See the International Situation. He pointed out the growing Soviet power in Europe; the Soviet's political and diplomatic offensive on the continent while the U.S. slides away; the Soviets inroads on American power in the Middle East, Latin America and Asia; and the growing world role of the Soviets, including naval power, while the U.S. is retrenching. In short, Europeans have the greatest fears since World War II.

-- Balance of Missiles. He gave figures demonstrating the shifting balance between the Soviet Union and the United States on ICBM's, submarines and bombers.

-- Soviet Deployments. He emphasized that the deployments of Soviet divisions and IRBM's indicated the high priority that they gave to Europe, as opposed to China, particularly when one considers the relative populations of the two fronts.

SECRET/EYES ONLY

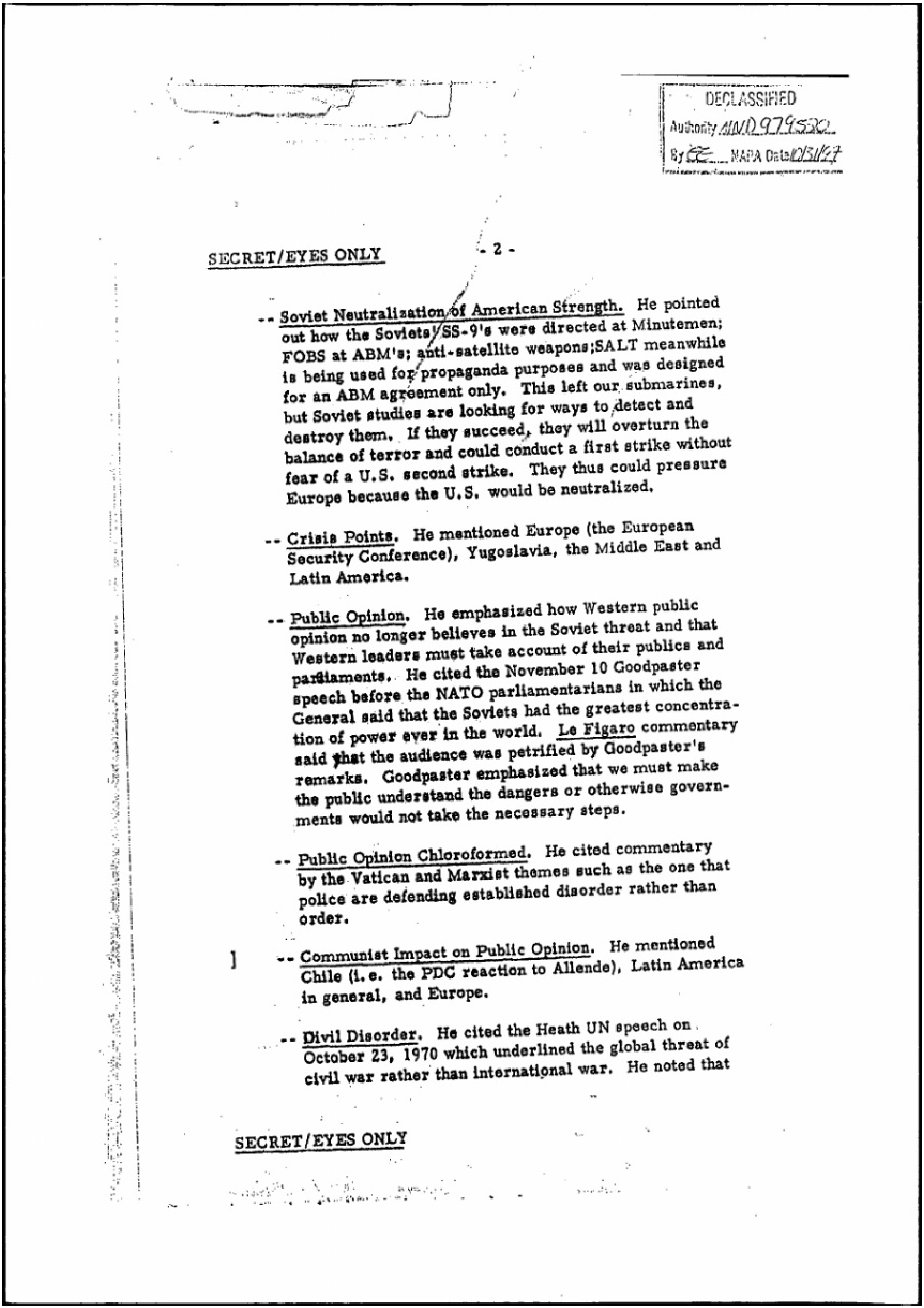

DECLASSIFIED
Authority NND979520
By NARA Date 12/31/97

SECRET/EYES ONLY

- 2 -

-- Soviet Neutralization of American Strength. He pointed out how the Soviets' SS-9's were directed at Minutemen; FOBS at ABM's; anti-satellite weapons;SALT meanwhile is being used for propaganda purposes and was designed for an ABM agreement only. This left our submarines, but Soviet studies are looking for ways to detect and destroy them. If they succeed, they will overturn the balance of terror and could conduct a first strike without fear of a U.S. second strike. They thus could pressure Europe because the U.S. would be neutralized.

-- Crisis Points. He mentioned Europe (the European Security Conference), Yugoslavia, the Middle East and Latin America.

-- Public Opinion. He emphasized how Western public opinion no longer believes in the Soviet threat and that Western leaders must take account of their publics and parliaments. He cited the November 10 Goodpaster speech before the NATO parliamentarians in which the General said that the Soviets had the greatest concentration of power ever in the world. Le Figaro commentary said that the audience was petrified by Goodpaster's remarks. Goodpaster emphasized that we must make the public understand the dangers or otherwise governments would not take the necessary steps.

-- Public Opinion Chloroformed. He cited commentary by the Vatican and Marxist themes such as the one that police are defending established disorder rather than order.

-- Communist Impact on Public Opinion. He mentioned Chile (i.e. the PDC reaction to Allende), Latin America in general, and Europe.

-- Civil Disorder. He cited the Heath UN speech on October 23, 1970 which underlined the global threat of civil war rather than international war. He noted that

SECRET/EYES ONLY

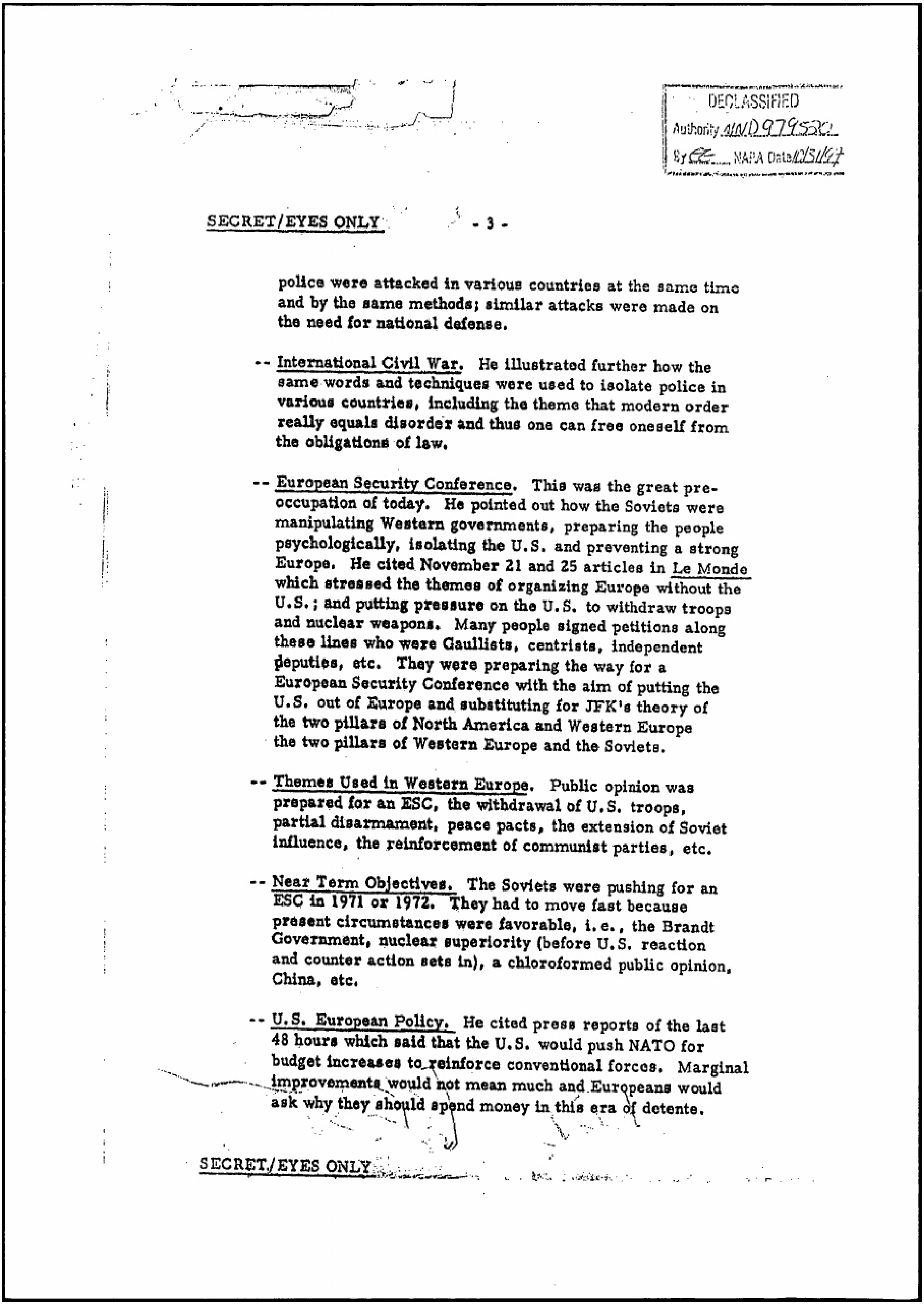

DECLASSIFIED
Authority NND979520
By NARA Date 12/31/97

police were attacked in various countries at the same time and by the same methods; similar attacks were made on the need for national defense.

-- International Civil War. He illustrated further how the same words and techniques were used to isolate police in various countries, including the theme that modern order really equals disorder and thus one can free oneself from the obligations of law.

-- European Security Conference. This was the great preoccupation of today. He pointed out how the Soviets were manipulating Western governments, preparing the people psychologically, isolating the U.S. and preventing a strong Europe. He cited November 21 and 25 articles in Le Monde which stressed the themes of organizing Europe without the U.S.; and putting pressure on the U.S. to withdraw troops and nuclear weapons. Many people signed petitions along these lines who were Gaullists, centrists, independent deputies, etc. They were preparing the way for a European Security Conference with the aim of putting the U.S. out of Europe and substituting for JFK's theory of the two pillars of North America and Western Europe the two pillars of Western Europe and the Soviets.

-- Themes Used in Western Europe. Public opinion was prepared for an ESC, the withdrawal of U.S. troops, partial disarmament, peace pacts, the extension of Soviet influence, the reinforcement of communist parties, etc.

-- Near Term Objectives. The Soviets were pushing for an ESC in 1971 or 1972. They had to move fast because present circumstances were favorable, i.e., the Brandt Government, nuclear superiority (before U.S. reaction and counter action sets in), a chloroformed public opinion, China, etc.

-- U.S. European Policy. He cited press reports of the last 48 hours which said that the U.S. would push NATO for budget increases to reinforce conventional forces. Marginal improvements would not mean much and Europeans would ask why they should spend money in this era of detente.

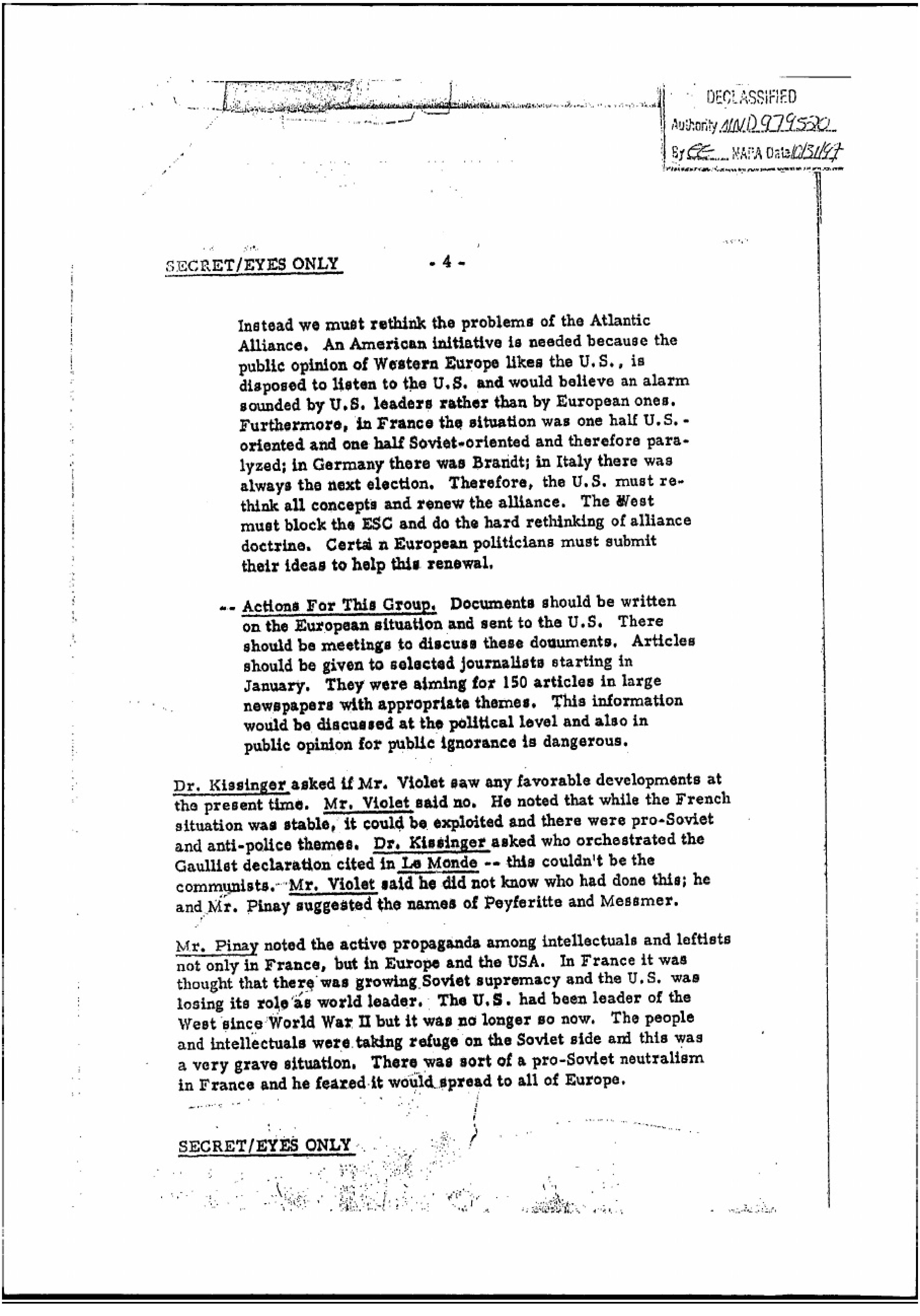

DECLASSIFIED
Authority NND 979520
By NARA Date 10/31/97

SECRET/EYES ONLY - 4 -

Instead we must rethink the problems of the Atlantic Alliance. An American initiative is needed because the public opinion of Western Europe likes the U.S., is disposed to listen to the U.S. and would believe an alarm sounded by U.S. leaders rather than by European ones. Furthermore, in France the situation was one half U.S.-oriented and one half Soviet-oriented and therefore paralyzed; in Germany there was Brandt; in Italy there was always the next election. Therefore, the U.S. must rethink all concepts and renew the alliance. The West must block the ESC and do the hard rethinking of alliance doctrine. Certain European politicians must submit their ideas to help this renewal.

-- Actions For This Group. Documents should be written on the European situation and sent to the U.S. There should be meetings to discuss these documents. Articles should be given to selected journalists starting in January. They were aiming for 150 articles in large newspapers with appropriate themes. This information would be discussed at the political level and also in public opinion for public ignorance is dangerous.

Dr. Kissinger asked if Mr. Violet saw any favorable developments at the present time. Mr. Violet said no. He noted that while the French situation was stable, it could be exploited and there were pro-Soviet and anti-police themes. Dr. Kissinger asked who orchestrated the Gaullist declaration cited in Le Monde -- this couldn't be the communists. Mr. Violet said he did not know who had done this; he and Mr. Pinay suggested the names of Peyferitte and Messmer.

Mr. Pinay noted the active propaganda among intellectuals and leftists not only in France, but in Europe and the USA. In France it was thought that there was growing Soviet supremacy and the U.S. was losing its role as world leader. The U.S. had been leader of the West since World War II but it was no longer so now. The people and intellectuals were taking refuge on the Soviet side and this was a very grave situation. There was sort of a pro-Soviet neutralism in France and he feared it would spread to all of Europe.

SECRET/EYES ONLY

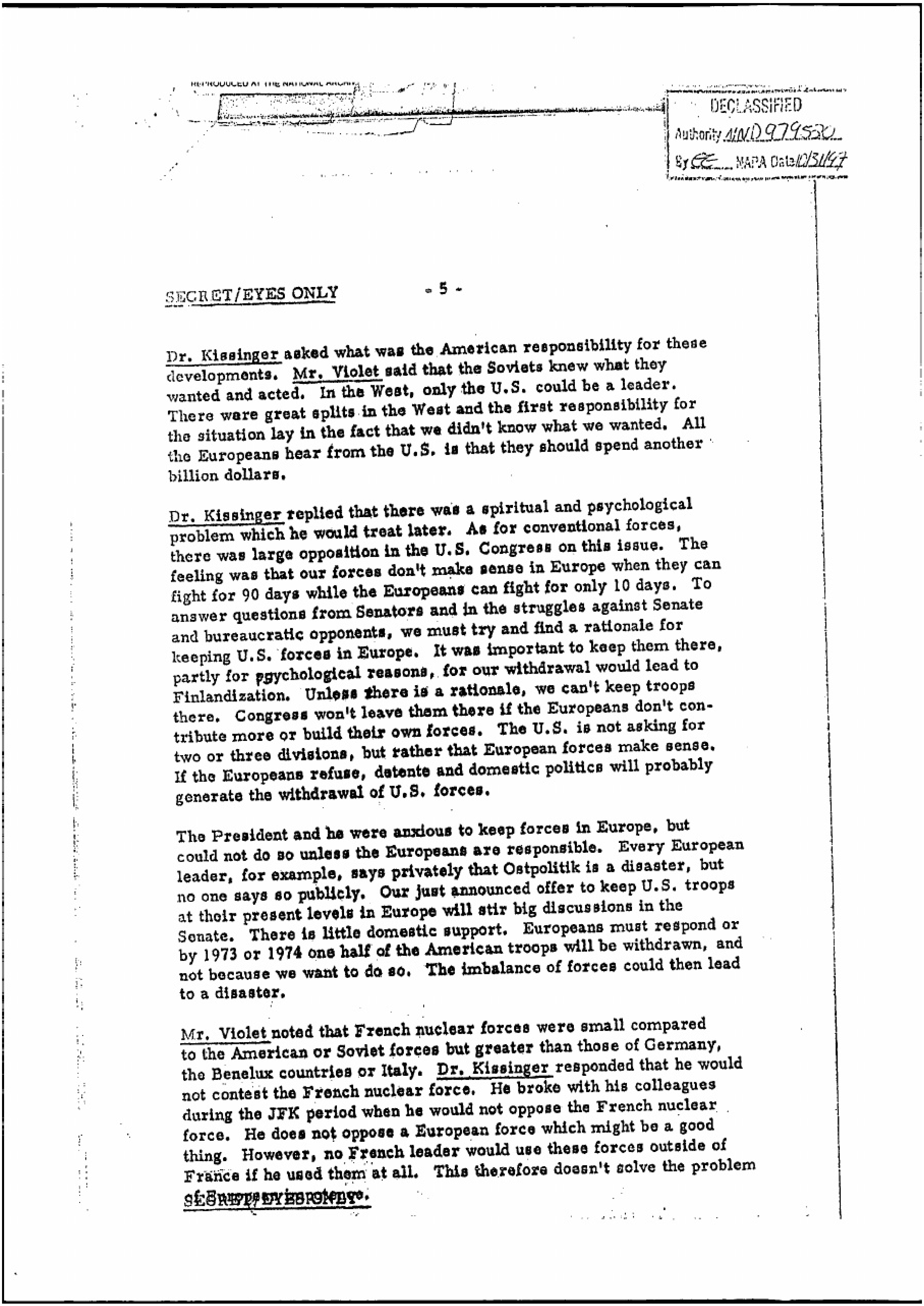

REPRODUCED AT THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

DECLASSIFIED
Authority NND 979530
By NARA Date 10/31/97

SECRET/EYES ONLY - 5 -

Dr. Kissinger asked what was the American responsibility for these developments. Mr. Violet said that the Soviets knew what they wanted and acted. In the West, only the U.S. could be a leader. There were great splits in the West and the first responsibility for the situation lay in the fact that we didn't know what we wanted. All the Europeans hear from the U.S. is that they should spend another billion dollars.

Dr. Kissinger replied that there was a spiritual and psychological problem which he would treat later. As for conventional forces, there was large opposition in the U.S. Congress on this issue. The feeling was that our forces don't make sense in Europe when they can fight for 90 days while the Europeans can fight for only 10 days. To answer questions from Senators and in the struggles against Senate and bureaucratic opponents, we must try and find a rationale for keeping U.S. forces in Europe. It was important to keep them there, partly for psychological reasons, for our withdrawal would lead to Finlandization. Unless there is a rationale, we can't keep troops there. Congress won't leave them there if the Europeans don't contribute more or build their own forces. The U.S. is not asking for two or three divisions, but rather that European forces make sense. If the Europeans refuse, detente and domestic politics will probably generate the withdrawal of U.S. forces.

The President and he were anxious to keep forces in Europe, but could not do so unless the Europeans are responsible. Every European leader, for example, says privately that Ostpolitik is a disaster, but no one says so publicly. Our just announced offer to keep U.S. troops at their present levels in Europe will stir big discussions in the Senate. There is little domestic support. Europeans must respond or by 1973 or 1974 one half of the American troops will be withdrawn, and not because we want to do so. The imbalance of forces could then lead to a disaster.

Mr. Violet noted that French nuclear forces were small compared to the American or Soviet forces but greater than those of Germany, the Benelux countries or Italy. Dr. Kissinger responded that he would not contest the French nuclear force. He broke with his colleagues during the JFK period when he would not oppose the French nuclear force. He does not oppose a European force which might be a good thing. However, no French leader would use these forces outside of France if he used them at all. This therefore doesn't solve the problem of European impotence.

SECRET/EYES ONLY

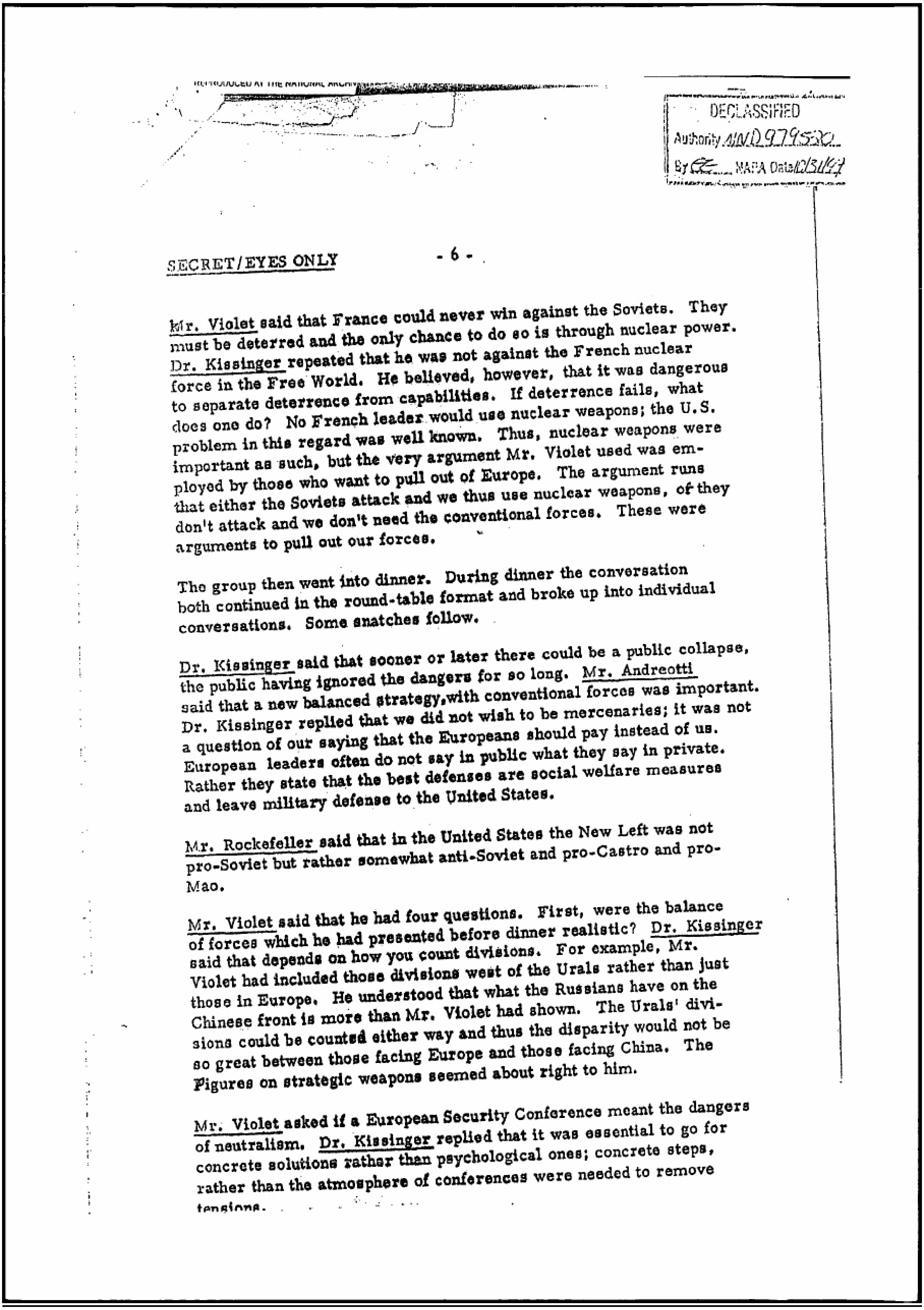

REPRODUCED AT THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

DECLASSIFIED
Authority NND979520
By [illegible] NARA Date 12/31/97

SECRET/EYES ONLY - 6 -

Mr. Violet said that France could never win against the Soviets. They must be deterred and the only chance to do so is through nuclear power. Dr. Kissinger repeated that he was not against the French nuclear force in the Free World. He believed, however, that it was dangerous to separate deterrence from capabilities. If deterrence fails, what does one do? No French leader would use nuclear weapons; the U.S. problem in this regard was well known. Thus, nuclear weapons were important as such, but the very argument Mr. Violet used was employed by those who want to pull out of Europe. The argument runs that either the Soviets attack and we thus use nuclear weapons, or they don't attack and we don't need the conventional forces. These were arguments to pull out our forces.

The group then went into dinner. During dinner the conversation both continued in the round-table format and broke up into individual conversations. Some snatches follow.

Dr. Kissinger said that sooner or later there could be a public collapse, the public having ignored the dangers for so long. Mr. Andreotti said that a new balanced strategy,with conventional forces was important. Dr. Kissinger replied that we did not wish to be mercenaries; it was not a question of our saying that the Europeans should pay instead of us. European leaders often do not say in public what they say in private. Rather they state that the best defenses are social welfare measures and leave military defense to the United States.

Mr. Rockefeller said that in the United States the New Left was not pro-Soviet but rather somewhat anti-Soviet and pro-Castro and pro-Mao.

Mr. Violet said that he had four questions. First, were the balance of forces which he had presented before dinner realistic? Dr. Kissinger said that depends on how you count divisions. For example, Mr. Violet had included those divisions west of the Urals rather than just those in Europe. He understood that what the Russians have on the Chinese front is more than Mr. Violet had shown. The Urals' divisions could be counted either way and thus the disparity would not be so great between those facing Europe and those facing China. The figures on strategic weapons seemed about right to him.

Mr. Violet asked if a European Security Conference meant the dangers of neutralism. Dr. Kissinger replied that it was essential to go for concrete solutions rather than psychological ones; concrete steps, rather than the atmosphere of conferences were needed to remove tensions.

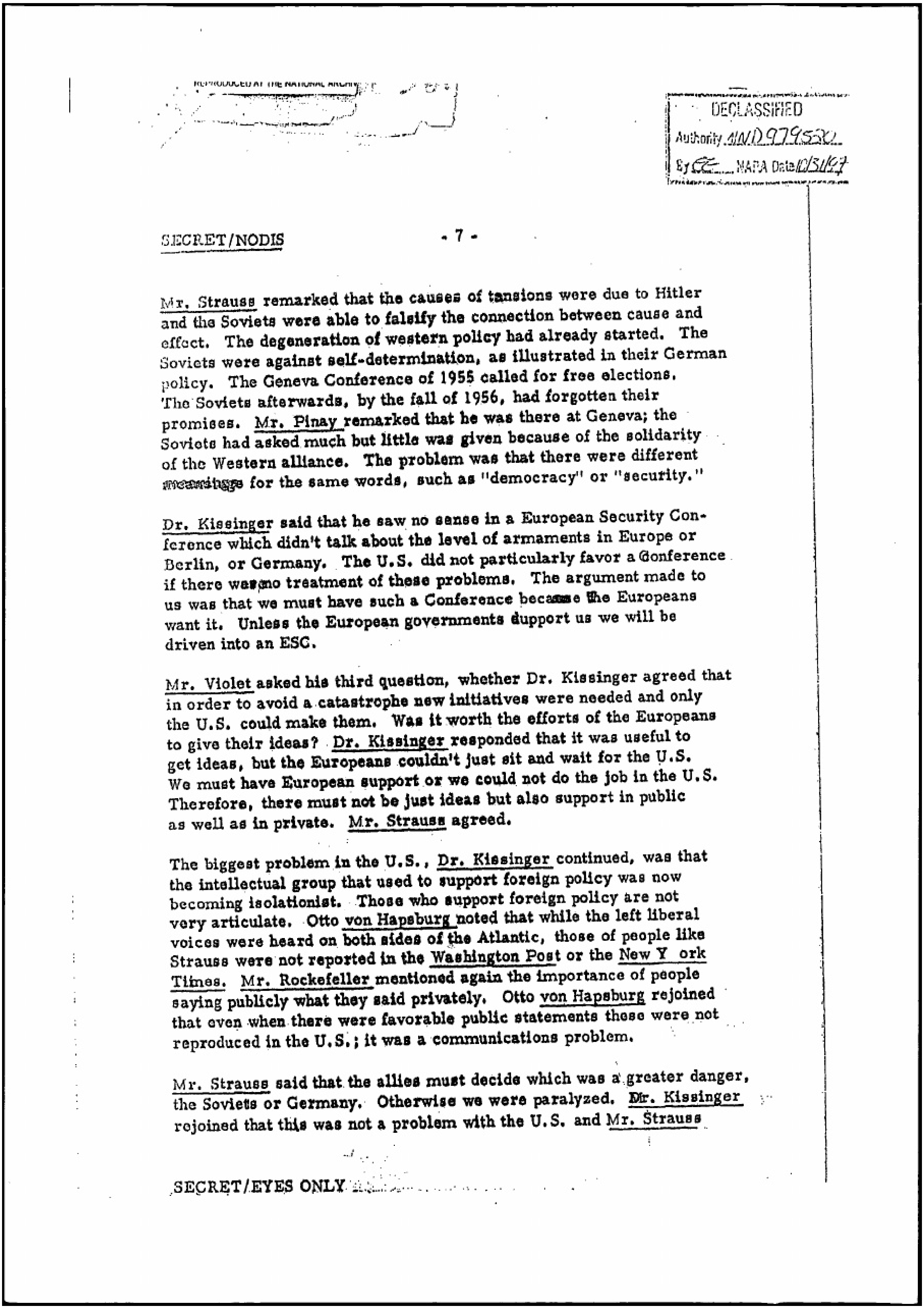

REPRODUCED AT THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

DECLASSIFIED
Authority NND979520
By CC NARA Date 12/31/97

SECRET/NODIS - 7 -

Mr. Strauss remarked that the causes of tensions were due to Hitler and the Soviets were able to falsify the connection between cause and effect. The degeneration of western policy had already started. The Soviets were against self-determination, as illustrated in their German policy. The Geneva Conference of 1955 called for free elections. The Soviets afterwards, by the fall of 1956, had forgotten their promises. Mr. Pinay remarked that he was there at Geneva; the Soviets had asked much but little was given because of the solidarity of the Western alliance. The problem was that there were different meanings for the same words, such as "democracy" or "security."

Dr. Kissinger said that he saw no sense in a European Security Conference which didn't talk about the level of armaments in Europe or Berlin, or Germany. The U.S. did not particularly favor a Conference if there was no treatment of these problems. The argument made to us was that we must have such a Conference because the Europeans want it. Unless the European governments dupport us we will be driven into an ESC.

Mr. Violet asked his third question, whether Dr. Kissinger agreed that in order to avoid a catastrophe new initiatives were needed and only the U.S. could make them. Was it worth the efforts of the Europeans to give their ideas? Dr. Kissinger responded that it was useful to get ideas, but the Europeans couldn't just sit and wait for the U.S. We must have European support or we could not do the job in the U.S. Therefore, there must not be just ideas but also support in public as well as in private. Mr. Strauss agreed.

The biggest problem in the U.S., Dr. Kissinger continued, was that the intellectual group that used to support foreign policy was now becoming isolationist. Those who support foreign policy are not very articulate. Otto von Hapsburg noted that while the left liberal voices were heard on both sides of the Atlantic, those of people like Strauss were not reported in the Washington Post or the New York Times. Mr. Rockefeller mentioned again the importance of people saying publicly what they said privately. Otto von Hapsburg rejoined that even when there were favorable public statements these were not reproduced in the U.S.; it was a communications problem.

Mr. Strauss said that the allies must decide which was a greater danger, the Soviets or Germany. Otherwise we were paralyzed. Dr. Kissinger rejoined that this was not a problem with the U.S. and Mr. Strauss

SECRET/EYES ONLY

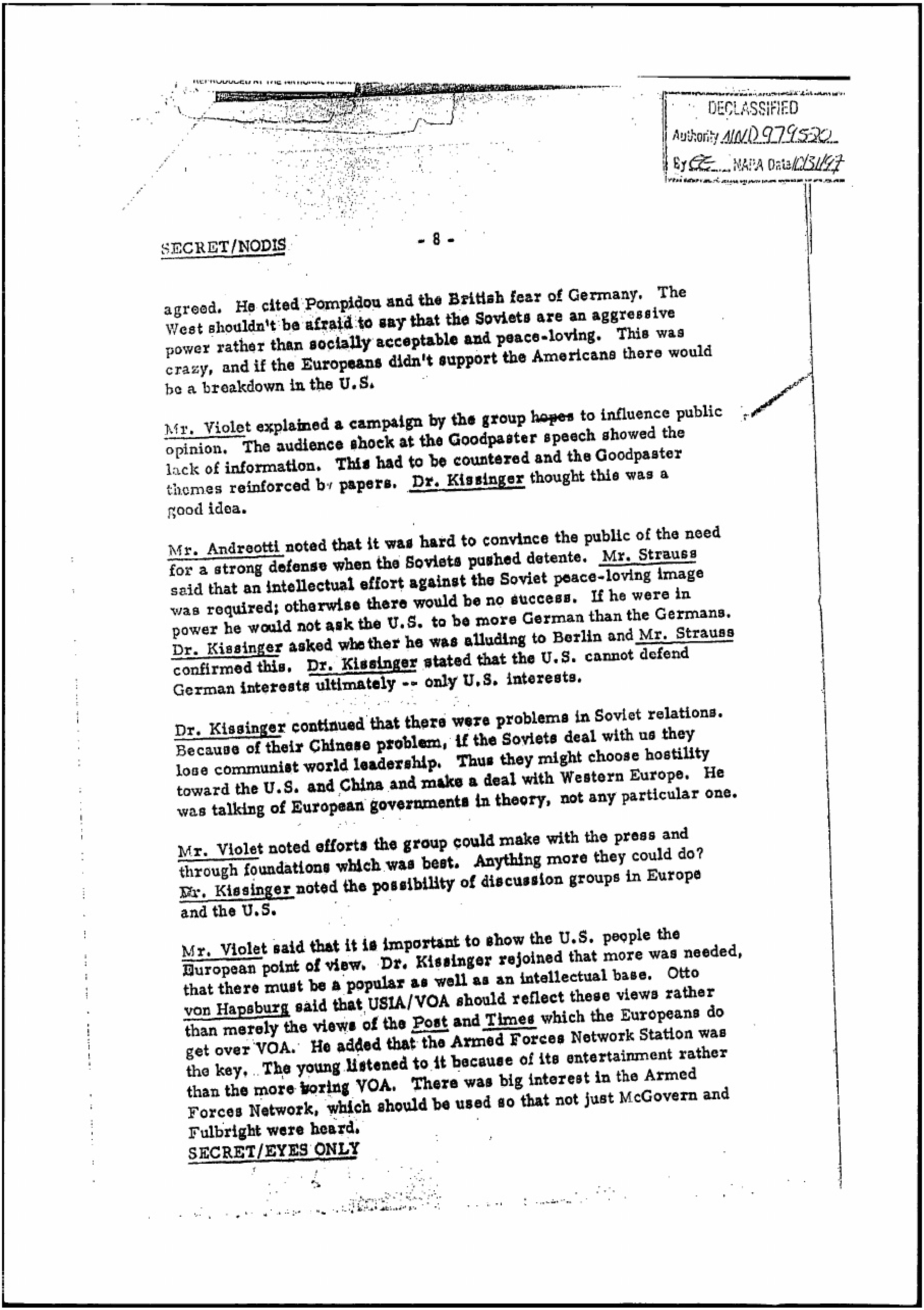

REPRODUCED AT THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

DECLASSIFIED
Authority NND 979520
By CE NARA Date 10/31/97

SECRET/NODIS - 8 -

agreed. He cited Pompidou and the British fear of Germany. The West shouldn't be afraid to say that the Soviets are an aggressive power rather than socially acceptable and peace-loving. This was crazy, and if the Europeans didn't support the Americans there would be a breakdown in the U.S.

Mr. Violet explained a campaign by the group ~~hopes~~ to influence public opinion. The audience shock at the Goodpaster speech showed the lack of information. This had to be countered and the Goodpaster themes reinforced by papers. Dr. Kissinger thought this was a good idea.

Mr. Andreotti noted that it was hard to convince the public of the need for a strong defense when the Soviets pushed detente. Mr. Strauss said that an intellectual effort against the Soviet peace-loving image was required; otherwise there would be no success. If he were in power he would not ask the U.S. to be more German than the Germans. Dr. Kissinger asked whether he was alluding to Berlin and Mr. Strauss confirmed this. Dr. Kissinger stated that the U.S. cannot defend German interests ultimately -- only U.S. interests.

Dr. Kissinger continued that there were problems in Soviet relations. Because of their Chinese problem, if the Soviets deal with us they lose communist world leadership. Thus they might choose hostility toward the U.S. and China and make a deal with Western Europe. He was talking of European governments in theory, not any particular one.

Mr. Violet noted efforts the group could make with the press and through foundations which was best. Anything more they could do? Mr. Kissinger noted the possibility of discussion groups in Europe and the U.S.

Mr. Violet said that it is important to show the U.S. people the European point of view. Dr. Kissinger rejoined that more was needed, that there must be a popular as well as an intellectual base. Otto von Hapsburg said that USIA/VOA should reflect these views rather than merely the views of the Post and Times which the Europeans do get over VOA. He added that the Armed Forces Network Station was the key. The young listened to it because of its entertainment rather than the more boring VOA. There was big interest in the Armed Forces Network, which should be used so that not just McGovern and Fulbright were heard.

SECRET/EYES ONLY

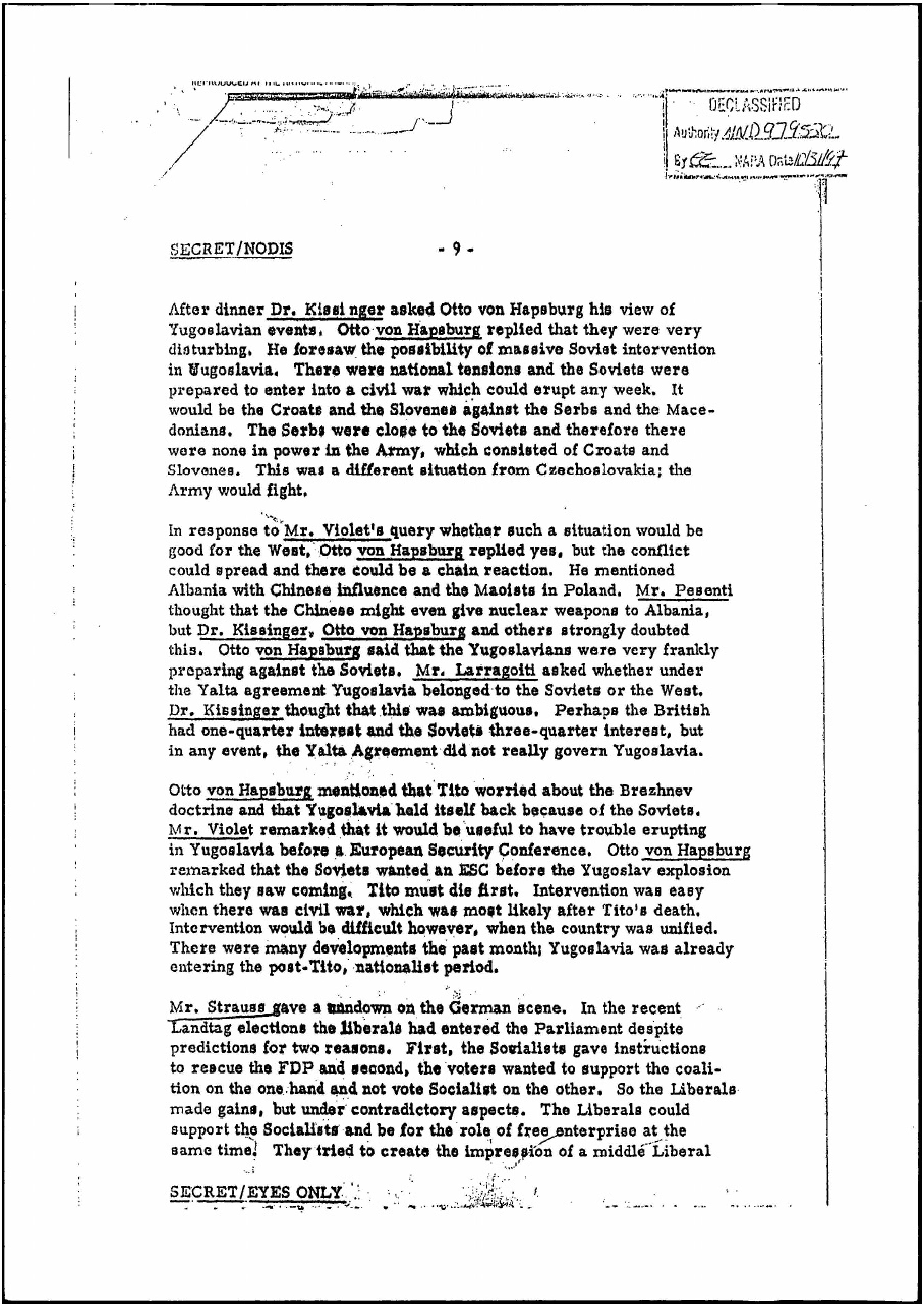

DECLASSIFIED
Authority NND 979520
By CE NARA Date 12/31/97

SECRET/NODIS - 9 -

After dinner Dr. Kissinger asked Otto von Hapsburg his view of Yugoslavian events. Otto von Hapsburg replied that they were very disturbing. He foresaw the possibility of massive Soviet intervention in Yugoslavia. There were national tensions and the Soviets were prepared to enter into a civil war which could erupt any week. It would be the Croats and the Slovenes against the Serbs and the Macedonians. The Serbs were close to the Soviets and therefore there were none in power in the Army, which consisted of Croats and Slovenes. This was a different situation from Czechoslovakia; the Army would fight.

In response to Mr. Violet's query whether such a situation would be good for the West, Otto von Hapsburg replied yes, but the conflict could spread and there could be a chain reaction. He mentioned Albania with Chinese influence and the Maoists in Poland. Mr. Pesenti thought that the Chinese might even give nuclear weapons to Albania, but Dr. Kissinger, Otto von Hapsburg and others strongly doubted this. Otto von Hapsburg said that the Yugoslavians were very frankly preparing against the Soviets. Mr. Larragoiti asked whether under the Yalta agreement Yugoslavia belonged to the Soviets or the West. Dr. Kissinger thought that this was ambiguous. Perhaps the British had one-quarter interest and the Soviets three-quarter interest, but in any event, the Yalta Agreement did not really govern Yugoslavia.

Otto von Hapsburg mentioned that Tito worried about the Brezhnev doctrine and that Yugoslavia held itself back because of the Soviets. Mr. Violet remarked that it would be useful to have trouble erupting in Yugoslavia before a European Security Conference. Otto von Hapsburg remarked that the Soviets wanted an ESC before the Yugoslav explosion which they saw coming. Tito must die first. Intervention was easy when there was civil war, which was most likely after Tito's death. Intervention would be difficult however, when the country was unified. There were many developments the past month; Yugoslavia was already entering the post-Tito, nationalist period.

Mr. Strauss gave a rundown on the German scene. In the recent Landtag elections the liberals had entered the Parliament despite predictions for two reasons. First, the Socialists gave instructions to rescue the FDP and second, the voters wanted to support the coalition on the one hand and not vote Socialist on the other. So the Liberals made gains, but under contradictory aspects. The Liberals could support the Socialists and be for the role of free enterprise at the same time. They tried to create the impression of a middle Liberal

SECRET/EYES ONLY

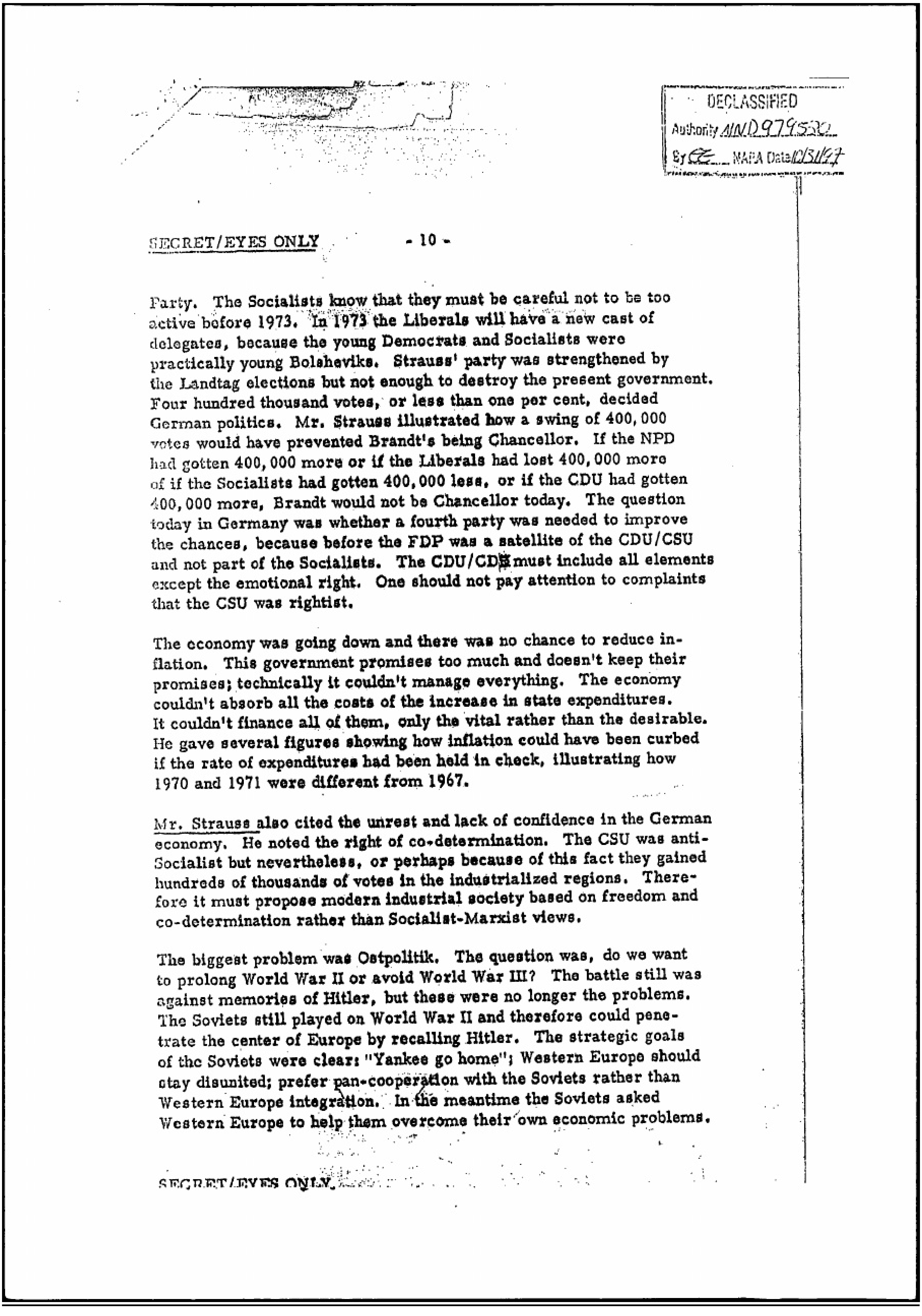

DECLASSIFIED
Authority NND 979532
By NARA Date 10/31/97

SECRET/EYES ONLY - 10 -

Party. The Socialists know that they must be careful not to be too active before 1973. In 1973 the Liberals will have a new cast of delegates, because the young Democrats and Socialists were practically young Bolshevike. Strauss' party was strengthened by the Landtag elections but not enough to destroy the present government. Four hundred thousand votes, or less than one per cent, decided German politics. Mr. Strauss illustrated how a swing of 400,000 votes would have prevented Brandt's being Chancellor. If the NPD had gotten 400,000 more or if the Liberals had lost 400,000 more of if the Socialists had gotten 400,000 less, or if the CDU had gotten 400,000 more, Brandt would not be Chancellor today. The question today in Germany was whether a fourth party was needed to improve the chances, because before the FDP was a satellite of the CDU/CSU and not part of the Socialists. The CDU/CSU must include all elements except the emotional right. One should not pay attention to complaints that the CSU was rightist.

The economy was going down and there was no chance to reduce inflation. This government promises too much and doesn't keep their promises; technically it couldn't manage everything. The economy couldn't absorb all the costs of the increase in state expenditures. It couldn't finance all of them, only the vital rather than the desirable. He gave several figures showing how inflation could have been curbed if the rate of expenditures had been held in check, illustrating how 1970 and 1971 were different from 1967.

Mr. Strauss also cited the unrest and lack of confidence in the German economy. He noted the right of co-determination. The CSU was anti-Socialist but nevertheless, or perhaps because of this fact they gained hundreds of thousands of votes in the industrialized regions. Therefore it must propose modern industrial society based on freedom and co-determination rather than Socialist-Marxist views.

The biggest problem was Ostpolitik. The question was, do we want to prolong World War II or avoid World War III? The battle still was against memories of Hitler, but these were no longer the problems. The Soviets still played on World War II and therefore could penetrate the center of Europe by recalling Hitler. The strategic goals of the Soviets were clear: "Yankee go home"; Western Europe should stay disunited; prefer pan-cooperation with the Soviets rather than Western Europe integration. In the meantime the Soviets asked Western Europe to help them overcome their own economic problems.

SECRET/EYES ONLY

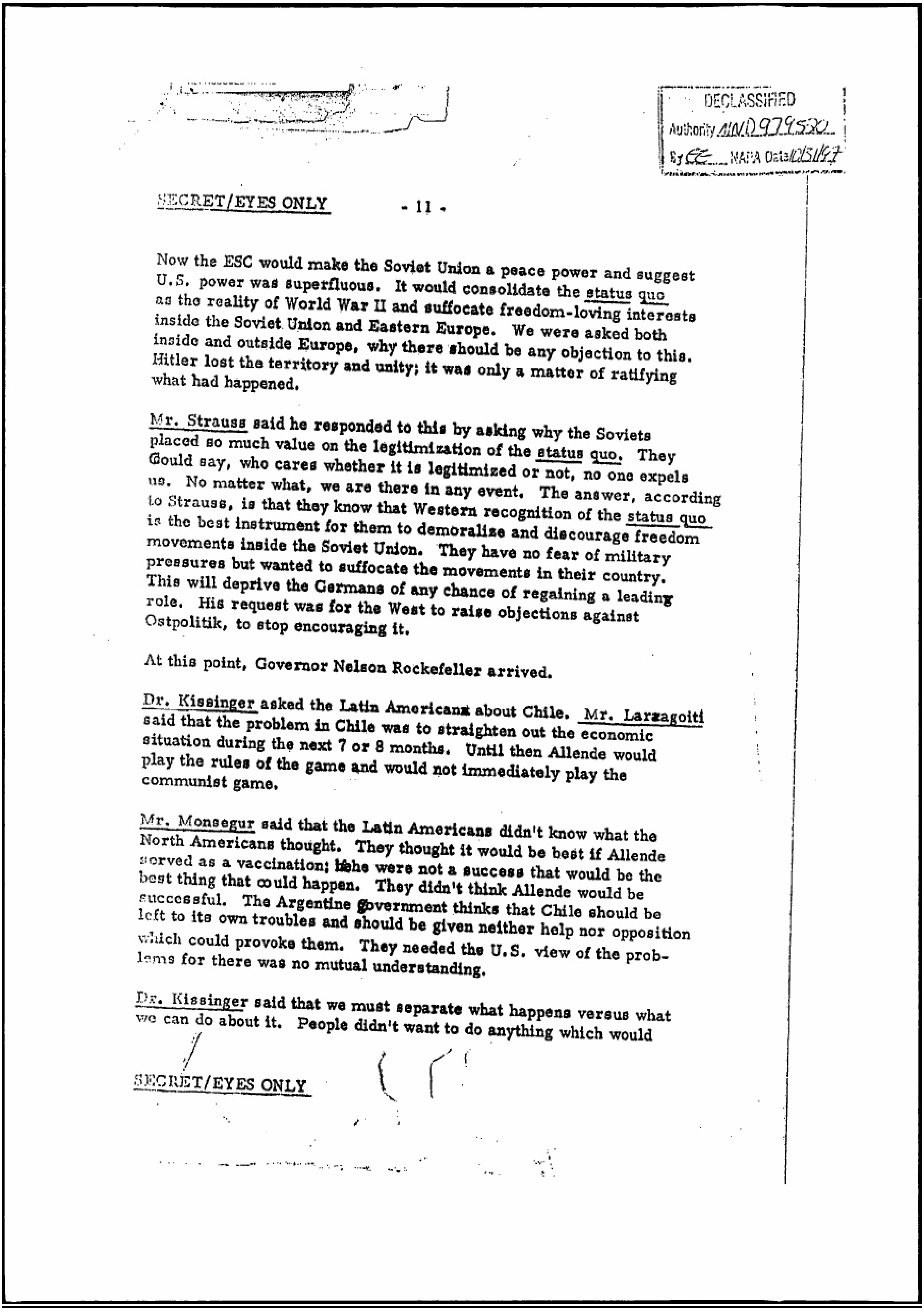

DECLASSIFIED
Authority NND 979520
By CE NARA Date 10/31/97

SECRET/EYES ONLY - 11 -

Now the ESC would make the Soviet Union a peace power and suggest U.S. power was superfluous. It would consolidate the status quo as the reality of World War II and suffocate freedom-loving interests inside the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe. We were asked both inside and outside Europe, why there should be any objection to this. Hitler lost the territory and unity; it was only a matter of ratifying what had happened.

Mr. Strauss said he responded to this by asking why the Soviets placed so much value on the legitimization of the status quo. They could say, who cares whether it is legitimized or not, no one expels us. No matter what, we are there in any event. The answer, according to Strauss, is that they know that Western recognition of the status quo is the best instrument for them to demoralize and discourage freedom movements inside the Soviet Union. They have no fear of military pressures but wanted to suffocate the movements in their country. This will deprive the Germans of any chance of regaining a leading role. His request was for the West to raise objections against Ostpolitik, to stop encouraging it.

At this point, Governor Nelson Rockefeller arrived.

Dr. Kissinger asked the Latin Americans about Chile. Mr. Larragoiti said that the problem in Chile was to straighten out the economic situation during the next 7 or 8 months. Until then Allende would play the rules of the game and would not immediately play the communist game.

Mr. Monsegur said that the Latin Americans didn't know what the North Americans thought. They thought it would be best if Allende served as a vaccination; if he were not a success that would be the best thing that could happen. They didn't think Allende would be successful. The Argentine government thinks that Chile should be left to its own troubles and should be given neither help nor opposition which could provoke them. They needed the U.S. view of the problems for there was no mutual understanding.

Dr. Kissinger said that we must separate what happens versus what we can do about it. People didn't want to do anything which would

SECRET/EYES ONLY

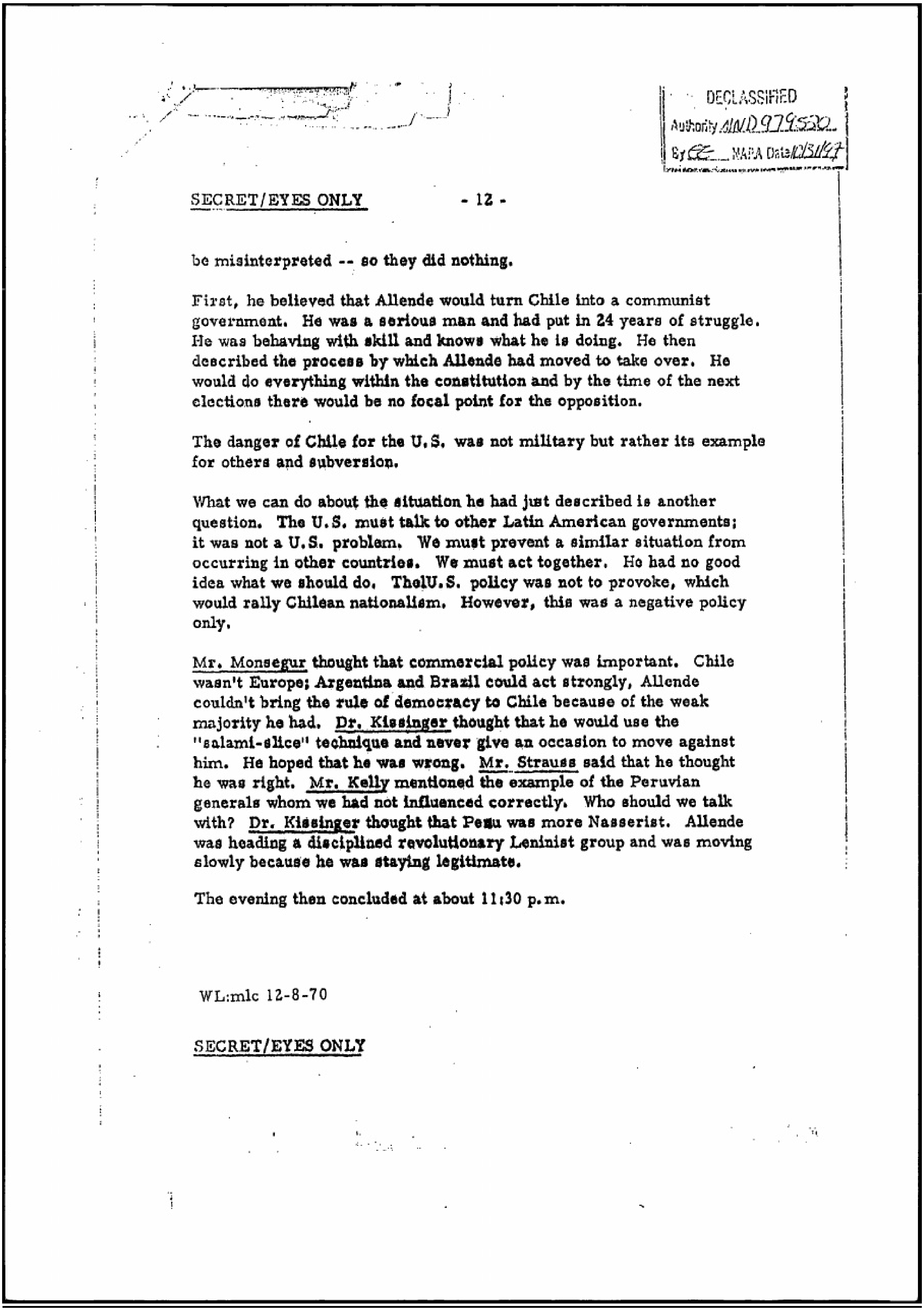

DECLASSIFIED
Authority NND 979520
By CC NARA Date 12/31/97

SECRET/EYES ONLY - 12 -

be misinterpreted -- so they did nothing.

First, he believed that Allende would turn Chile into a communist government. He was a serious man and had put in 24 years of struggle. He was behaving with skill and knows what he is doing. He then described the process by which Allende had moved to take over. He would do everything within the constitution and by the time of the next elections there would be no focal point for the opposition.

The danger of Chile for the U.S. was not military but rather its example for others and subversion.

What we can do about the situation he had just described is another question. The U.S. must talk to other Latin American governments; it was not a U.S. problem. We must prevent a similar situation from occurring in other countries. We must act together. He had no good idea what we should do. The U.S. policy was not to provoke, which would rally Chilean nationalism. However, this was a negative policy only.

Mr. Monsegur thought that commercial policy was important. Chile wasn't Europe; Argentina and Brazil could act strongly, Allende couldn't bring the rule of democracy to Chile because of the weak majority he had. Dr. Kissinger thought that he would use the "salami-slice" technique and never give an occasion to move against him. He hoped that he was wrong. Mr. Strauss said that he thought he was right. Mr. Kelly mentioned the example of the Peruvian generals whom we had not influenced correctly. Who should we talk with? Dr. Kissinger thought that Peru was more Nasserist. Allende was heading a disciplined revolutionary Leninist group and was moving slowly because he was staying legitimate.

The evening then concluded at about 11:30 p.m.

WL:mlc 12-8-70

SECRET/EYES ONLY

NSIC ANNEX

DOCUMENT 1

1989 text taken from: http://rightweb.irc-online.org/gw/2806.html, now online at https://militarist-monitor.org/profile/national_strategy_information_center/.

GroupWatch: Profiles of U.S. Private Organizations and Churches, was compiled by the Interhemispheric Resource Center, Box 2178, Silver City, NM 88062. Check when each article was last updated as much material is no longer current. This material is provided as a source for historic research.

National Strategy Information Center
Acronym/Code: NSIC
Updated: 8/89

Categories:
Political

Background:
The NSIC is a right-wing think tank for military strategy. It has a history of working with hard-line, anti-Soviet groups promoting an aggressive U.S. foreign policy. (10)
In a 1961 article in the Military Review on the subject of political warfare, Frank Barnett wrote,"Political warfare in short, is warfare--not public relations. It is one part persuasion and two parts deception. It embraces diverse forms of coercion and violence including strikes and riots, economic sanctions, subsidies for guerrilla or proxy warfare and, when necessary, kidnapping or assassination of enemy elites.
"The aim of political warfare... is to discredit, displace, and neutralize an opponent, to destroy a competing ideology, and to reduce the adherents to political impotence. It is to make one's own values prevail by working the levers of power, as well as by using persuasion."(22)
In 1962, Frank Barnett founded NSIC. Among its founding directors, officers and advisors were such stalwart right-wing figures as beer baron and funder of many ultra-rightist organizations Joseph Coors; Prescott Bush, Jr. , brother of President George Bush; Frank Shakespeare, chairman of the conservative think tank, the Heritage Fdn; and William Casey, former director of the CIA. (1,11,29)
The stated purpose of NSIC is to "encourage a civilmilitary partnership" to keep the public informed on issues surrrounding national defense. A properly informed public, the NSIC believes, will support "A viable U.S. defense system capable of protecting the nation's vital interests and assisting allies and other free nations determined to maintain their core values of freedom and independence."(12) One of the goals of NSIC is "to train young American labor leaders in the critical issues--philosophy, military, and political--that divide the free world from the Communist States."(10) The group focuses its efforts on business, labor, professional and military groups; academic and mass media; governmental schools; and colleges and universities. (12)

Funding:
Between 1973 and 1981, Richard Scaife donated a total of $6 million to the NSIC from the Carthage Fdn, the Sarah Scaife Fdn, and the Trust for the Grandchildren of Sarah Mellon Scaife. (1) In 1985 the John M. Olin Fdn gave the Washington office of NSIC three grants: $107,320 for support for an advisory committee for European democracy; $41,300 for support for a book by Abram Shulsky on American intelligence and national security; and $20,000 to support educational programs on the nature of totalitarian regimes. (3) In the same year, the NY office received the following grants: $10,000 from the Adolph Coors Fdn for programs and publications on national security; $35,000 for work on the history of Soviet intelligence, $30,000 for research and writing on detente, and $15,000 support for a conference at the Center for European Strategy from the Winston Salem Fdn; $5,000 of general support from the Samuel Roberts Nobel Fdn; and from the W. W. Smith Charitable Trust $260,000 for operating support and $70,000 for a Consortium for the Study of Intelligence which examines the intelligence networks of various nations. (3)
In 1986, the Washington office of NSIC received $41,000 from the John M. Olin Fdn to support the book by Abram Shulsky on American intelligence and
national security, and $152,000 from the Lynde and Harry Bradley Fdn to support a program on national defense and intelligence. (4) In 1986, the N. Y. office received $15,000 from the Smith Richardson Fdn, $5,000 from the TRW Fdn, and $175,000 from the Sarah Scaife Fdn for general operating support. (4)
In 1981-1982, the NSIC received a grant from the U.S. Information Agency to study the feasibility of an Intl Youth Year conference. (2)
The organization lists its 1989 budget as $1,600,000. (12)

Activities:
The NSIC worked with the Committee on the Present Danger (CPD) as a lobbyist for the preservation of containment militarism, a policy demanding a strong U.S. military build-up and presence throughout the world. The CPD saw the Soviet Union as a powerful evil force with the goal of world domination. (10) In order to be more effective in its work with the CPD, NSIC opened a full-scale office in Washington DC in 1976 to interact with the White House and the Pentagon, to work with Trade Associations, and to inform the public of the concepts and plans of the CPD. (10) In setting up the DC office, Barnett worked directly with ultra-hawk Eugene V. Rostow of the CPD. Barnett brought Rostow onto the NSIC board. (10)
The NSIC Washington office, run by Roy Godson, has spent the decade of the 1980s developing a nine volume agenda for U.S. foreign policy, with a special focus on low intensity warfare and intelligence. (28,29) According to NSIC's literature the purpose of NSIC's Consortium for the Study of Intelligence (CSI) is to encourage colleges and universities to offer in-depth programs of study on intelligence; to promote the development of a U.S. theory of intelligence and define its place in American national security policy; to encourage research into the intelligence process; and to study the tensions between intelligence activities and the democratic process and values of our society. (31)
Subjects of the volumes include: The Elements of Intelligence; Analysis and Estimates; Counterintelligence; Covert Action; Clandestine Collection; Domestic Intelligence; and Intelligence and Policy. (31)
The production of each volume of the series was preceeded by a conference or symposium of invited guests where the substance of the volume was

developed. Attendees at the conferences became defacto important players in the activities of the think tank. The CIA, the military intelligence divisions, and the executive branches of government were well represented at all of the gatherings. (28,30,31) The second volume in the series, Intelligence Requirements for the 1980's: Analysis and Estimates, was published in 1980. It attempts to teach people how to evaluate the quality of and analyze intelligence information received from agents. (30) Among those present at the 1979 colloquium that developed the substance of this volume were such intelligence luminaries as Richard V. Allen of the Natl Security Council; William Colby, former head of the CIA; Dr. Ray S. Cline, former deputy director of the CIA; Dr. Fred C. Ikle, former director of the Arms Control and Disarmament Agency; Mr. Morris Liebman [Leibman], chairman of the American Bar Association; and from the NSIC, Dr. Roy Godson and Frank R. Barnett. (30)

The subject of the 1981 conference was clandestine collection which led to the 1982 volume on the subject. This document claims that U.S. intelligence gathering is far inferior to that of the Soviet Union and sets out the U.S. intelligence needs. (31) Notable figures attending this colloquium included: Dr. Ray Cline of the Center for Strategic and Intl Studies; Lt. Gen. Daniel Graham, former director of the Defense Intelligence Agency; Dr. Edward Luttwak, ultra-hawk and expert on terrorism; and Dr. Richard Pipes, former chief Sovietologist at the Natl Security Council. (10,31)

In 1983, the NSIC, the Natl Defense University, and the Natl Security Studies Program of Georgetown co-sponsored a symposium on "The Role of Special Operations in U.S. Strategy for the 1980s."(21) Col. Oliver North, of Iran-Contra fame, attended as a representative of the National Security Council. (21) Edward N. Luttwak and Arnaud de Borchgrave, editor of the Unification Church-owned Washington Times, were present representing the Center for Strategic and Intl Studies. (21) Margo D. B. Carlisle, staff director of the U.S. Senate Republican Conference Committee, was also present. Carlisle, a former aide to Sen. James McClure, attended the 1980 World AntiCommunist League (WACL) conference and has been connected with WACL activities in Central America. (8) The CIA was represented by a number of people, including former assoc deputy director Theodore Shackley. The intelligence agencies of the military-especially the Defense Intelligence Agency, formerly headed by Gen. Daniel Graham--attended in number. (10,21)

In its 1984 book, Special Operations in U.S. Strategy, the NSIC showed a shift in strategy from containment militarism to one promoting low intensity conflict operations. The new strategy stresses the need for fulfilling U.S. objectives through "special operations." According to the strategy, the "special operations" are to be coordinated with the private sector in the countries where these operations are located, and call for the use of psychological techniques and operations. (11)

The NSIC strategies, according to an analysis by the Political Research Associates of Boston, advocate a U.S. policy of low-intensity conflict."In practice it is an endless, ongoing, permanent form of paramilitary action against governments and political movements that assert independence from U.S. domination."(29) Other criticisms of these volumes have ranged from calling them "authoritarian" to "a political blueprint for a police state."(29)

On Godson's recommendation, the NSIC paid Arturo Cruz, Sr. of the directorate of the Nicaraguan contras $40,000 to serve as a research fellow for six months. (2)

Roy Godson was a key figure in Anglo-American trade union relations, organizing "educational visits" for British trade unionists to visit the U.S. during the Reagan administration. (14) The trips were organized under the auspices of the Labour Desk of the U.S. Youth Council and the Intl Labor Program of Georgetown University. The purpose of the trips was "to broaden international education about Western democratic values." A typical trip included a visit to the naval base at Norfolk, a meeting with former Ambassador to the United Nations (Reagan administration) Jeane Kirkpatrick, talks on defense at the National Security Council (former operational base of Col. Oliver North) and talks at the NSIC. The trips were financed by the Reagan administration. (14)

Government Connections:
Frank Shakespeare was a United States Information Agency director and a director of Radio Free Europe and Radio Liberty. (15) During the Reagan administration he served as Ambassador to Portugal from 1985 to 1987, and after that as Ambassador to the Vatican. (15)
William Casey was CIA director in the Reagan administration, served as chair of the Securities and Exchange Commission from 1971 to 1973, and as Under Secretary of State for Economic Affairs from February 1973 to March 1974. (1,23)
Roy Godson served as a consultant to the President's Foreign Intelligence Advisory Board--a group of private citizens that oversees intelligence operations--in the Reagan administration. (2) Eugene V. Rostow was one of the architects of the containment militarism policy of the Reagan administration. He served as President Reagan's head of the Arms Control and Disarmament Agency. (10)
Richard Pipes served as a National Security advisor to President Ronald Reagan and was a major figure in the Committee on the Present Danger. (1)
Hon. Antonin Scalia, justice of the U.S. Supreme Court, is listed as a member of the Consortium for the Study of Intelligence. (13)
Margo D. B. Carlisle was an aide to Sen. James McClure (RID). (8) Margo Carlisle attended the 1980 WACL conference and is was involved in the "repackaging" of Roberto D'Aubuisson, the founder and former head of the ARENA party in El Salvador. (8)
Admiral Thomas Moorer was head of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, and a member of Team B, a group assembled in the mid 1970s by then-CIA director George Bush to study the Soviet danger. The Team B laid the foundation for the revitalization of the Committee on the Present Danger. (1,10)

Private Connections:
Frank Barnett was a prominent member of the Committee on the Present Danger, an anti-Soviet group advocating a strong U.S. military and a policy of containment militarism. (10) Before founding NSIC, Barnett was the director of research for the ultra-right Smith-Richardson Fdn and a program director of the Institute for American Strategy. (22)
William Casey served as pres and chairman of the exec committee of the International Rescue Committee (IRC), a private voluntary organization that helps refugees from totalitarian oppression. (24) The IRC worked with the CIA in Vietnam and cooperates with the U.S. government on programs in El Salvador. (25)
Prescott Bush, Jr. , a former director of the NSIC, is brother to President George Bush. He is a member of the Knights of Malta, a conservative lay Catholic group and has been involved with Americares, a right-wing private organization that receives grants from the U.S. Agency for International Development in Central America. (15)

Henry Fowler, former NSIC director, was co-chair of the Committee on the Present Danger until 1988. Fowler was Secretary of the Treasury under President Harry Truman. (1)

Admiral Thomas Moorer, former NSIC director, served on the national advisory board of Accuracy in Media, a right-wing media group that promotes conservative causes and monitors the teaching of college professors. (6,7) Moorer has been on the board of the American Security Council, an ultra-hawk organization that works on Congress to effect an anti-Soviet foreign policy. ASC runs the powerful lobby, the Coalition for Peace Through Strength, which has more than 190 Congressional members. (9,33) He also served on the board of Western Goals, a group that focused on national security and gathered information on suspected communist sympathizers. (8)

Frank Shakespeare, former director of NSIC, is chairman of The Heritage Fdn, a conservative think tank that played an important role in policy development in the Reagan administration. (10) He is also a member of the Knights of Malta and the American Catholic Committee (ACC). The ACC is a group that tried to undercut the U.S. bishops' pastoral on the economy. (15)

"Joseph Coors," wrote Al Weinrub in the Labor Report on Central America,"has used the power of the Coors financial dynasty not only to provide support to the contras, but to set a right-wing political agenda in the U.S..."(16) Coors was the chair of the Rocky Mountain region Reagan/Bush campaign in 1984. (17) He provided financial backing for Accuracy in Media, a media support group for the right wing. (17) He also supported various groups organized by New Right tactician Paul Weyrich including the Catholic Center, a religious group that sent conservative "truth squads" to organize workshops in cities with liberal bishops, and the Free Congress Fdn, a group dedicated to electing conservatives to Congress. (18,19) Coors and Weyrich combined efforts again in founding the conservative think tank, the Heritage Fdn. (19) Coors money has also supported right-wing religious groups including the Church League of America, Fellowship of Christian Athletes, the Moral Majority, and Campus Crusade for Christ. (19) Coors supported Lt. Gen. John Singlaub's U.S. Council for World Freedom (USCWF), the U.S. chapter of the World Anti-Communist League. USCWF and the Nicaraguan Refugee Fund, (another Coor's cause) played major roles in funding the Nicaraguan contras. (19) Both Joseph Coors and his wife Holly were on the 1982-1983 board of the Council for Natl Policy. (20)

Roy Godson is the Director of the International Labor program at Georgetown University and was deeply involved in the Iran-Contra Affair. He was a contact person and middle-man in fundraising for Lt. Col. Oliver North's network to supply the contras. He connected Terry Slease, attorney for Richard Scaife (wealthy right-wing philanthropist and NSIC donor), with North, and was present at meetings between National Security AdvisorBud McFarland, North and Slease. (2) Godson was a representative of the Intl Youth Conference which was one of the organizations used to channel funds to the Nicaraguan contras. He also was indirectly connected, through Slease, with the Institute for North-South Issues, a group funded by the National Endowment for Democracy, that served as a channel for contra funds. Godson also served as a contact between the private contra network and Edward Feulner, president of Heritage Fdn. Heritage served as a pass-through for INSI of a $100,000 donation to the Nicaraguan opposition. (2) Godson serves on the board of the League for Industrial Democracy, a neoconservative organization working with labor groups in the U.S. (26) He is also on the board of the Coalition for a Democratic

Majority, a quasi-governmental group that works primarily within the ranks of Congress to implement an anticommunist, pro-military agenda. (10,27)
Ray Cline served on the board of NSIC's Consortium for the Study of Intelligence. Cline is a former deputy director of the CIA, and has been involved with Major General John Singlaub's U.S. Council for World Freedom, the U.S. branch of the World Anti-Communist League. (8)
Lt. Gen. Daniel Graham is on the board of the U.S. Council for World Freedom. He is founder and chairman of the pro-SDI lobby group, High Frontier, and was on the 1982-1983 board of the Council for Natl Policy. Graham has also been involved with CAUSA, the political arm of the Unification Church (UC) and the American Freedom Coalition, another Christian political offshoot of the UC. (8,20,32)
Richard Pipes was a member of the Coalition for a Democratic Majority and a founding member of the Committee on the Present Danger. (10)

Misc:
Political Research Associates of Boston note that lowintensity warfare as defined by the NSIC is low intensity only from a U.S. government perspective where high-intensity warfare means nuclear war. (29)

Comments:
U.S. Address: 150 East 58th St, New York, NY 10155 and 1730 Rhode Island Ave, NW, Suite 601, Washington DC, 20036.

Principals:
Frank R. Barnett and Morris Liebman [Leibman], co-founders. (2) Frank R. Barnett, president; Roy Godson, director of the Washington DC office. (5) Others listed as officers in 1984 were: Dorothy Nicolosi, vice pres and treasurer, Paul E. Feffer, intl vice pres, Rear Admiral William C. Mott (ret.), vice pres and general counsel, Hugh F. McGowan, Jr. , sec, and Omer Pace, asst sec and asst tres. (11)
Directors listed in 1984 were: Karl R. Bendetsen, former chairman and CEO of Champion Intl Corp; D. Tennant Bryan, chairman of the board of Media General, Inc; Prescott S. Bush, Jr, senior vice pres and director of Johnson & Higgins; Richard C. Ham; Morris I. Liebman [Leibman], Sidley & Austin; John Norton Moore; Admiral Thomas H. Moorer (ret.); Jerald C. Newman, pres and CEO of The Bowery Savings Bank; Robert H. Parsley, Butler, Binion, Rice, Cook and Knapp; Frank Shakespeare, vice chairman of RKO General, Inc; Charles E. Stevenson, pres Denver West; James L. Winokur, chairman of Air Tool Parts and Service Co; Major General Richard A. Yudkin (ret.), senior vice pres (ret.) of Owens-Corning Fiberglas Corp. (11)
The 1984 Advisory Council members were: Issac L. Auerbach, Vice Admiral M.
G. Bayne (ret.), Allyn R. Bell, Jr, Joseph Coors, Henry H. Fowler, John W. Hanes, Jr, Admiral Means Johnston (ret.), R. Daniel McMichael, Rear Admiral David L. Martineau (ret.), Chuck Mau, Vice Admiral J. P. Moorer (ret.), Dillard Munford, Lloyd Noble, Harry A. Poth, Jr, Adolph W. Schmidt, Frederick Seitz, Laurence H. Silberman, Arthur Spitzer, John A. Sutro, Albert L. Weeks, Dee Workman, Evelle J. Younger, Admiral Elmo R. Zumwalt, Jr (ret.). (11)
The conferences and symposiums sponsored by NSIC play an important part in the development of the organization's strategy recommendations and publications. Personnel from NSIC who attended the 1983 symposium,"The Role of Special Operations in U.S. Strategy for the 1980s," were: Frank Barnett, president; Sara A. Begley, research asst for the Council on Economics and Natl Security; Dr. Roy Godson, director of the DC office;

Robert A. Silano, exec dir of the Council on Economics and Natl Security; and B. Hugh Tovar, research assoc.

Sources:

1. John Saloma III, Ominous Politics (New York, NY: Farrar, Straus and Giroux, 1984).
2. Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair, Appendix B, Vol. 12, 1987.
3. Foundation Grants Index, Recipients, 1987. 4. Foundation Grants Index, Recipients, 1988.
5. Phone conversation with Mr. Lovelace of NSIC, Washington DC, Aug 10, 1989.
6. Saul Landau,"Dress Rehersal For a Red Scare," The Nation, Apr 5, 1986.
7. Accuracy In Media brochure, undated.
8. Scott Anderson and Jon Lee Anderson, Inside the League: The Shocking Expose of How Terrorists, Nazis, and Latin American Death Squads Have Infiltrated the World Anti-Communist League (New York, NY: Dodd, Mead & Co, 1986).
9. Peace Through Strength, American Security Council report, undated, received Dec 15, 1988.
10. Jerry Sanders, Peddlers of Crisis: The Committee on the Present Danger and the Politics of Containment Militarism (Boston, MA: South End Press, 1983).
11. Special Operations in U.S. Strategy, NSIC, 1984.
12. The Encyclopedia of Associations, 23rd edition, 1989.
13. Letterhead from the Consortium for the Study of Intelligence, undated.
14."Anglo-American Union Exchanges Linked to Irangate Scandal," Tribune, Sep 30, 1988.
15. Penny Lernoux,"Who's Who? The Knights of Malta Know," National Catholic Reporter, May 5, 1989.
16. Al Weinrub,"Coors Brews More Than Beer," Labor Report On Central America, Sep/Oct 1985.
17. Michael Massing,"The Rise and Decline of Accuracy," The Nation, Sep 13, 1986.
18. Penny Lernoux,"A Reverence for Fundamentalism," The Nation, Apr 17, 1989.
19. The New Right Humanitarians (Albuquerque, NM: The Resource Center, 1986).
20. List of the board of directors of The Council for National Policy, 1982-1983.
21. Participant list from the "Symposium on the Role of Special Operations in U.S. Strategy for the 1980s," March 4-5, 1983.
22. Frank R. Barnett,"A Proposal for Political Warfare," Military Review, Mar 1961.
23. Profile of William J. Casey, completed in Oct 1974. Received from Political Research Associates, Aug 1989.
24. Intl Rescue Commisstion Annual Report, 1986.
25. AIFLD: Agents as Organizers (Albuquerque, NM: The Resource Center, 1987).
26. Letter from the League for Industrial Democracy, July 1989.
27. Coalition for a Democratic Majority letterhead, July 1989.
28. Conversation with Chip Berlet of Political Research Associates, Aug 1989.
29."The Coors Extended Family," Political Research Associates, 1989.
30. Roy Godson, editor, excerpts from Intelligence Requirements for the

1980's: Analysis and Estimates, NSIC, 1980.
31. Roy Godson, editor, excerpts from Intelligence Requirements for the 1980's: Clandestine Collection, NSIC, 1982.
32. Phone conversation with the natl office of the American Freedom Coalition, Sep 9, 1988.
33. Peace Through Strength, American Security Council report, undated, received Dec 15, 1988.

The underlying cites for this profile are now kept at Political Research Associates, (617) 666-5300. www.publiceye.org.

END OF WEB ARTICLE

DOCUMENT 1 ENDS

DOCUMENT 2

From https://pinkindustry.wordpress.com/national-strategy-information-center/, an excellent site with much information on many British-Atlantic groups, run by *Lobster* contributor Dr. William Clark .

PINKINDUSTRY The ATLANTIC SEMANTIC

National Strategy Information Center

According to a profile the National Strategy Information Center (NSIC):

> …is a right-wing think tank for military strategy. It has a history of working with hard-line, anti-Soviet groups promoting an aggressive U.S. foreign policy. Frank Barnett founded the NSIC in 1962 along with Morris Liebman [Leibman]. Other founding directors and advisors of the NSIC include ultra-rightist beer baron Joseph Coors; Frank Shakespeare, chair of the conservative think tank, the Heritage Foundation; and former CIA director William Casey. Barnett was also a prominent member of the Committee on the Present Danger. Before founding the NSIC, he served as the director of research for the ultra-right-wing Smith Richardson Foundation, and a program director of the Institute for American Strategy.[1]

It is can also be described as a US neoconservative think thank with a focus on intelligence-related issues. According to Phil Kelly's (1981) [2], The Leveller 52, the US National Strategy Information Center (NSIC) was:

> …founded in 1962 by William J Casey now appointed by Reagan to head the CIA. NSIC is a pressure group for militant anti-communism and is at the centre of a vast network of front organisations. One of its main activities, Casey told the Senate Intelligence Committee hearing on his CIA appointment, has been the building of academic respectability for the practice of intelligence. It has helped to sponsor more than 200 professorial chairs and teaching posts in US universities and colleges devoted to teaching and researching intelligence. NSIC provided some of the cash used by journalist and CIA contract employee Brian Crozier to transform his news agency Forum World Features, a CIA front organisation into the Institute for the Study of Conflict (ISC).

For Kelly one of the central characters in this process was Stephen Haseler, founder of the Social Democratic Alliance:

> Haseler works for the NSIC's 'left face', the Advisory Committee on European Democracy and Security (ACEDS), which published his book, Eurocommunism. Co-author of the work was NSIC's Dr. Roy Godson, director of the International Labor Programme at Georgetown University in Washington DC. This institution has been a centre of cold war sentiment among US intellectuals, and many of its staff now find themselves in the Reagan administration. According to Haseler and Godson, Eurocommunism is nothing more than a Soviet ploy to detach western Europe from the U.S. without a war.

He also lists a range of the front groups and political interventions backed by the NSIC including the Committee on the Present Danger (CPD), a grouping of academics, politicans, retired military and intelligence personnel and 'cold war liberals' and traces the rise of these groups to the nomination of George McGovern as Democratic Candidate in 1972 on a 'stop the Vietnam war' platform which pushed the Democratic right into a counter-attack, which grew into the CPD in 1976 in an alliance with the right-wing think tanks. Others mentioned are more right-wing in orientation including the Committee for the Free World, which he states was started by Midge Decter:

> Decter said the idea for the CFW originated at an Israeli government-sponsored conference on terrorism in 1979. Her husband, Norman Podhoretz, also a member of CPD and CFW, is editor of ‘Commentary’, the organ of the American Jewish community, which, like ‘Encounter’ was closely associated with the now-defunct Congress for Cultural Freedom, the major US post-war cultural intervention. The CCF collapsed in 1967 when it was revealed that its main source of income had been the CIA, through dummy foundations.

Decter, in an excerpt from her memoir, An Old Wife’s Tale: My Seven Decades in Love and War, reproduced at the Hoover Institution site states:

> The idea for the committee had in a very tentative way been brewing for a couple of years. A European friend named Leopold Labedz and I would meet from time to time and say, “Why don’t we . . .”—that sort of thing.

Leopold Labedz was the editor of *Survey: A Journal of East and West Studies,*, (with Walter Laqueur initally initially under the umbrella of the Congress for Cultural Freedom as *Soviet Survey*[3]), and a member of another NSIC funded project, which also involved Haseler and many of the others mentioned here, the Institute for European Defence and Strategic Studies. Decter — involved in a range of organisations such as the second incarnation of the Committee on the Present Danger, Hudson Institute, Heritage Foundation, Coalition for a Democratic Majority and the Project for the New American Century — outlined her concerns in her memoir thus:

> The beginning of my activist life came in 1972, when Richard Nixon was competing for his second presidential term against George McGovern. McGovern’s candidacy signaled the capture of the Democratic Party by the hard left, who had taken control of it through a lethal combination of radical opposition to the war in Vietnam, the radicalization of the civil rights movement, and women’s liberation.[...] By the 1970s there was a new peril in the United States—the demoralization brought on by the seizure of national self-hatred that had spread like typhus from the sixties radicals into the major institutions of the culture.

So to understand the NSIC we can view it within these ‘Atlanticist’ networks which grew and operated from the 1940s onwards. Key factors in the analysis should deal with: anti-communism (and other forms of threat generation such as ‘terrorism’), networks of front organisations, covert Intelligence connections, the building of academic respectability for the practice of intelligence, funding and organisation via think tanks and foundations, historical connections to organisations such as the Congress for Cultural Freedom (others would include the Committee on the Present Danger) and connections to the US/Isreali government-sponsorship such as the conference on terrorism in 1979. As Kelly notes, and this is also set out in Edward Herman and Gerry O’Sullivan (1990) *The Terrorism Industry* [4]the conference: the Jerusalem Conference on International Terrorism (JCIT) organised with the Jonathan Institute, can be viewed as a key node in the formulation of a defining theme that ‘international terrorism’ constituted an organised political movement whose ultimate origin was in the Soviet Union. This was used justify the requirement of a worldwide anti-terrorism offensive, involving the Western military intelligence services and the incorporation of think-tank and academic accounts of Soviet involvement in orchestrating the ‘international terrorist network’.[5]This network shifted its focus after the collapse of the Soviet Union and the present “war on terror.”

Origins

According to its website the NSIC was founded as a nonpartisan, nongovernmental organization in 1962.[6]Critical appraisals state that it was the first right-wing think tank to address such issues as national security strategy, low-intensity conflict, operations of intelligence agencies, political warfare, and the role of nongovernmental groups, especially labor unions, in furthering foreign and military policy goals. And that:

> Over the past four decades, NSIC has worked with the CIA and other U.S. intelligence agencies in studies of political and psychological warfare and in their collaboration with conservative labor union operations, especially in Europe and Latin America.[7]

This also adds that, like a great deal of this network such as the Heritage Foundation, it was launched with start-up funding from the Coors family, and is supported the Lynde and Harry Bradley Foundation. The NSIC's founding directors included Joseph Coors, Frank Barnett, William Casey, Frank Shakespeare, and Prescott Bush, Jr. Barnett was also a member of the Committee on the Present Danger, and a leading advocate of political warfare, psychological operations, and low-intensity conflict strategy in the 1980s. The NSIC's Consortium for the Study of Intelligence is housed in the International Labor program at Georgetown University, where Godson was the director.[8]

In a more in-depth profile at GroupWatch[9]Frank Barnett's intentions with the organisation are set out:

> In a 1961 article in the Military Review on the subject of political warfare, Frank Barnett wrote,"Political warfare in short, is warfare—not public relations. It is one part persuasion and two parts deception. It embraces diverse forms of coercion and violence including strikes and riots, economic sanctions, subsidies for guerrilla or proxy warfare and, when necessary, kidnapping or assassination of enemy elites. "The aim of political warfare… is to discredit, displace, and neutralize an opponent, to destroy a competing ideology, and to reduce the adherents to political impotence. It is to make one's own values prevail by working the levers of power, as well as by using persuasion."

The NSIC is also said to have a focus on training young American labor leaders together with influencing business, professional and military groups; academic and mass media; governmental schools; and colleges and universities. The profile also provides some information on NSIC's funding sources. Between 1973 and 1981, Richard Scaife donated a total of $6 million to the NSIC from the Carthage Foundation, the Sarah Scaife Foundation, and the Trust for the Grandchildren of Sarah Mellon Scaife. This also notes that in 1985 the John M. Olin Foundation gave the Washington office of NSIC three grants: $107,320 for support for an advisory committee for European democracy (together with a 1981-1982 grant from the U.S. Information Agency to study the feasibility of an Intl Youth Year conference, it is very likely that this is connected to the rise of the British American Project for a Successor Generation and Reagan's Project Democracy)[10]; $41,300 for support for a book by Abram Shulsky on American intelligence and national security; and $20,000 to support educational programs on the nature of totalitarian regimes.

The New York office (111 east 58th Street) continued to receive grants from the Adolph Coors Foundation for programs and publications on national security and the history of Soviet intelligence, research and writing on detente, and $15,000 support for a conference at the Center for European Strategy; and from the Winston Salem Foundation, the Samuel Roberts Nobel Foundation and from the W. W. Smith Charitable Trust.

The NSIC worked with the Committee on the Present Danger (CPD) to lobby for the preservation of containment militarism (1730 Rhode Island Ave.) although this seemed a re-interpretation of George Kennan's formulation). NSIC opened an office in Washington DC (in 1976 to be closer to the White House and the Pentagon. In setting up the office, Barnett worked directly with Eugene V. Rostow of the CPD, bringing him onto the NSIC board.

Early NSIC publication: W. Scott Thompson's (1978) Power Projection: A Net Assessment of the U. S. and Soviet Capabilities [11], lists its officers on the back cover, and in 1978 these were given as:

- Frank R. Barnett

- Dr.Frank N. Trager (Director, National Security Program, New York University) A biography from his essay on the US Security structure states that he was Director of Studies at the NSIC; general editor of the National Security Studies Series, editor of the Strategy Papers, and a member of the editorial boards of Orbis and Asian Affairs: An American Review; chairman of the American-Asian Educational Exchange; board member of the Foreign Policy Research Institute; chairman, Executive Committee, Chinese Cultural Center, Inc.; and member of the Council on Foreign Relations, the Burma Research Society, and the Siam Society. He has been on the faculties of Johns Hopkins and Yale Universities, the National War College, the Foreign Service Institute, Department of State, and has held various government positions. Trager has served as Director of the U.S. Economic Aid Mission to Burma and has frequently visited Southeast Asia. He has been a consultant to the Rand Corporation, Stanford Research Institute, Hudson Institute, and to the Departments of State and Defense. He is author of numerous books, monographs, and articles on Burma, Asia, and national security topics.[12]

Along with the NSIC's Frank Barnett, Trager was a signatory and member of the 1967 Citizens Committee for Peace With Freedom in Vietnam this included Harry Truman, Dwight Eisenhower and Dean Acheson) and argued that it:

> …felt that popular opposition to the war in Vietnam did not, in fact, represent the feelings of America's "silent center": a majority of "independent and responsible men and women who have consistently opposed rewarding international aggressors."[13]

- Robert G. Burke (General Counsel Burke and Cerutti)

- Paul E. Feffer (President, Feffer & Simons Inc.) Feffer was appointed to to draft a set of policy recommendations on the 'Book Gap', this was a perceived situation whereby the US National Security Council and the US Information Agency (USAID) felt that American books needed to combat the ideas and philosophies of other societies, particularly the then Soviet Union. Feffer chaired a study of 40 US publishers, librarians, lawyers and government officials under the auspices of the Helen Dwight Reid Educational Forum (HDRF) sponsored by USAID.[14]

Evron Kirkpatrick (Husband of Jeane J. Kirkpatrick) was president of HDRF and, according to a Sourcewatch profile, was part of CIA plans for a domestic "national psychological warfare program" as a part of the US cold war strategy.[15]Jeane Kirkpatrick helped establish the Coalition for a Democratic Majority and both husband and wife were involved in the American Enterprise Institute.[16]

With a foreword by, then Ambassador, Kirkpatrick, the eventual report on this was summarised in William M. Childs and Donald E. McNeil (Eds.) (1986) American Books Abroad: Toward a National Policy, published by the Helen Dwight Reid Educational Foundation.[17]Childs has been active for many years with USIA international publishing activities and in the 1980s was an advisor to the American Enterprise Institute.

Feffer was a publishing consultant and the chief executive of Feffer & Simons Inc., which was a publishing company in New York. A large international exporter of periodicals and books, in the mid-80s it tried to convince Chinese officials to import more consumer magazines through a chain of stores in China called 'Friendship Stores', where foreigners can shop with American dollars.[18]

According to an online biography Feffer was a director of Recoton (wireless monitoring systems etc.) and Chairman of Feffer Consulting Co., Inc., an international media consulting firm, since 1991 and a consultant to Merck & Company's publishing division. He founded Feffer and Simons Inc. in 1955, which was eventually sold to Doubleday & Co. in 1962 (where he remained as President of the subsidiary Feffer and Simons until 1986) and was Chairman of Baker & Taylor International, a subsidiary of W. R. Grace & Co., from 1987 until 1991. Feffer & Simons and Baker & Taylor specialized in international publishing and book and magazine distribution and development of overseas markets for U.S. publishers.[19]

According to the New York Times[20]Feffer was president of Hampton Arts International, a company involved in cultural exchanges between Eastern Europe and the US.

- Rear Admiral William C. Mott (Rtd.)(National legal center for the Public Interest): Mott was a judge advocate general of the Navy in the 1960s. During World War II he served with the Office of Naval Intelligence and then as an assistant naval aide to President Franklin D. Roosevelt. According to an obituary in The Washington Post (November 2, 1997) after the war he was assigned to the Office of the Chief of Naval Operations as a liaison with the State Department and the United Nations. He first worked with the Office of Judge Advocate General in 1946 as head of the International Law Branch and Foreign Claims Commission Office. After retiring from active duty, he became executive vice president of the U.S. Independent Telephone Association and served as chairman of the presidential advisory committee on the National Strategic Materials and Minerals Program and president of the Capital Legal Foundation and the National Legal Center for the Public Interest.

The Washington Times (October 18, 1989) states that he was part of the 1980s Bush administration's desire to ease legal restrictions on covert action "so that CIA operatives could assist a coup without fear of violating the ban on assassination". Mott is quoted as saying:

> "There's no question in my mind that it [the ban on assassination] puts a kind of halter around certain efforts,"

Mott was part of the American Bar Association's (ABA) Standing Committee on Law and National Security. The ABA, through the work of its various standing committees, collected and published studies on how the news media of Communist countries, especially in the Soviet Union, fulfill their assigned educational function under centralized policy control and daily censorship. The ABA's Standing Committee on Law and National Security also has generated and published considerable documentation about the use of journalists, foreign correspondents, scholars, and many types of nonpolitical associations to spread disinformation and to manipulate the press in foreign countries. The Department of State in 1981 issued a comprehensive report on Soviet disinformation techniques. The full report was published in the November and December 1981 issues of the ABA's Standing Committee's monthly Intelligence Report, edited by Mott.

> The State Department's paper notes that "the Soviets use the bland term 'active measures' to refer to operations intended to affect other nations' policies, as distinct from espionage and counterintelligence," but also quite distinct from the open, accepted public diplomacy in which virtually all nations engage extensively. The techniques of Soviet "active measures" include written or spoken disinformation, forgeries, blackmail, ghost-written stories, use of front organizations, and political influence operations. The United States is the primary target, but "Moscow is devoting increasing resources to 'active measures' against the governments of other industrial countries and countries in the developing world." The objective is "to disrupt relations between states, discredit opponents of the U.S.S.R., and undermine foreign leaders, institutions, and values." The tactics and emphasis adjust to changes in international situations, the report says, but such measures "continue, and in some cases intensify, during periods of reduced tensions."[21]

In the 1980s he was the panel moderator of the Association of Former Intelligence Officers.[22]He was also Executive Director of The Council on Economics and National Security (CENS), a project of the NSIC, which focuses its research and educational activities on the 'resource war': the possibility of interruptions in U.S. imports of strategic minerals on which its industrial might depends.

- Dorothy E. Nicolosi (Treasurer) Still with the NSIC[23], Nicolosi was associate Editor of the NSIC's Agenda Papers and other publications[24]

Sven F. Kraemer (Program Director): Son of senior civilian Pentagon analyst Fritz Kraemer who was a mentor of Henry Kissinger, according to a biography at The Institute of World Politics (where he teaches a course on U.S. National Security Strategy and Emerging Threats) Kraemer worked at the Office of the Secretary of Defense (1963-67); National Security Council staff (1967-1976); Senior Staff Member for Defense and Foreign Policy, U.S. Senate (1978-1981); Director of Arms Control, National Security Council (1981-87); Senior Staff Member for Defense and Foreign Policy, U.S. House of Representatives (1987-89); Policy Advisor, Office of the Secretary of Defense (2001-05)[25]. The Institute of World Politics, and Kraemer, have been heavily and continually funded by the Earhart Foundation, The Lynde and Harry Bradley Foundation, Inc., Smith Richardson Foundation and others for work that includes: Public Diplomacy and Political Warfare in the War on Terrorism (2004); a biography of Gen. Pinochet (2002); Business intelligence (2000); The Cold War, with Sven Kraemer as Project Director (1999); Soviet Espionage (1999).[26]

Dr. Roy Godson (Research Associate)

The Directors are:

Karl R. Bendetsen (Champion International Corporation)

Richard C. Ham (Attourney at Law)

Morris I. Leibman (Sidley & Austin)

John G. McKay Jr. (Bradford, Williams, McKay, Kimbrell, Harmann & Jennings)

John O. Marsh Jr. (Mays, Valentine, Davenport & Moore)

Admiral Thomas H. Moorer (Rtd.)

Col. John C. Neff

Robert M. Parsley (Butler, Binion, Rice, Cook & Knapp)

Dr. Eugene V. Rostow (Yale University Law School)

Frank Shakespeare (President RKO General Inc.)

James L. Winokur (Air Tool Parts and Service Company)

Major General Richard A. Yudkin (Owens-Corning Fiberglas [sic] Corporation)

The Advisory Council is:

Isaac L. Auerbach

Vice Admiral M. G. Bayne

Allyn R. Bell Jr.

J. Fred Bucy

Joseph Coors

Henry H. Fowler

John W. Hanes Jr.

Robert C. Hill

R. Daniel Mc Michael

Dillard Munford

Adolph W. Schmidt

Dr. Frederick Seitz

Charles E. Stevinson

John A. Sutro

This is much the same line-up as the 1984 board with the exception of Prescott S. Bush, Jr, (senior vice president and director of Johnson & Higgins); John Norton Moore; Jerald C. Newman, (CEO of The Bowery Savings Bank).

Of those listed Frank Shakespeare, Eugene V. Rostow, Sven F. Kraemer and Roy Godson and Admiral Thomas Moorer have readily identifiable connections to the network of anti-communists. [[

- Shakespeare was a United States Information Agency director and a director of Radio Free Europe and Radio Liberty. During the Reagan administration he served as Ambassador to Portugal from 1985 to 1987, and after that as Ambassador to the Vatican, he was also a member of the Institute for European Defence and Strategic Studies and the Heritage Foundation.

- Rostow was one of the architects of the containment militarism policy of the Reagan administration and appears on the orginal Committee on the Present Danger and its second incarnation. He served as President Reagan's head of the Arms Control and Disarmament Agency. He was also with the national council of the League for Industrial Democracywith Roy Godson.

- Admiral Thomas Moorer was part of Accuracy in Media that monitored the teaching of college professors, and on the board of the American Security Council and the Coalition for Peace Through Strength, and on the board of Western Goals which monitored suspected communist sympathisers.

- Godson ws the Director of the International Labor program at Georgetown University and caught up the Iran-Contra Affair in fundraising for Lt. Col. Oliver North's network to supply the contras. According to Rightweb, Godson also served as a contact between the private contra network and Edward Feulner of the Heritage Foundation which donated to the Nicaraguan opposition. Godson was also with the board of the Coalition for a Democratic Majority.

How the NSIC operated is set out in the Rightweb profile. To aid the production of a nine volume agenda for US foreign policy a conference or symposium of invited guests is organised whereby attendees became *de facto* players in the activities of the think tank.

> The CIA, the military intelligence divisions, and the executive branches of government were well represented at all of the gatherings. The second volume in the series, Intelligence Requirements for the 1980's: Analysis and Estimates, was published in 1980. It attempts to teach people how to evaluate the quality of and analyze intelligence information received from agents. Among those present at the 1979 colloquium that developed the substance of this volume were such intelligence luminaries as Richard V. Allen of the Natl Security Council; William Colby, former head of the CIA; Dr. Ray S. Cline, former deputy director of the CIA; Dr. Fred C. Ikle, former director of the Arms Control and Disarmament Agency; Mr. Morris Liebman [Leibman], chairman of the American Bar Association; and from the NSIC, Dr. Roy Godson and Frank R. Barnett.

The 1982 conference was attended by Ray Cline of the Center for Strategic and International Studies; Lt. Gen. Daniel Graham, former director of the Defense Intelligence Agency; Dr.Edward Luttwak and Richard Pipes, former chief Sovietologist at the National Security Council.

In 1983, the NSIC symposium "The Role of Special Operations in U.S. Strategy for the 1980s,"was attended by Col. Oliver North, National Security Council; Edward N. Luttwak andArnaud de Borchgrave, representing the Center for Strategic and International Studies with the CIA represented by a number of people, including former deputy director Theodore Shackley. The Rightweb profiles states that the NSIC showed a shift in strategy from containment militarism to one promoting low intensity conflict operations, stressing the need for "special operations" coordinated with the private sector in the countries where these operations are located, using psychological techniques and operations.

Crozier

Crozier's memoir *Free Agent* (p. 74) mentions a 1968 meeting with Frank Barnett who is quoted as saying the NSIC "co-ordinated the efforts of scattered scholars in the field of strategy", although it was at this point that Crozier's 'news agency' Forum World Features (FWF) was exposed as being a propaganda front. Crozier mentions that in 1970, NSIC founder William J. Casey (Reagan's campaign manager and head of the CIA) was impressed by FWF and was putting together a "syndicate of high-powered businessmen with a view to taking it over and marketing it in the US." This would seem to have come to nothing but Brian Crozier's (1971) *Annual of power and conflict*, was published by the NSIC, and [27]According to Crozier (p. 63) FWF had started with ‘Kern House Enterprises’ as the holding company (based in Delaware) , with the aim of supporting the CCF.

The Nation Magazine reported that:[28]

> In 1962 Richard Barnett had been recruited to lead the National Strategy Information Center by William Casey, later Director of Central Intelligence. In its heyday, the National Strategy Information Center was regarded as a shadowy group with close connections to the intelligence community; Barnett was a sort of freewheeling broker who put ideas and money people together. One such case involved a C.I.A.-sponsored organization in Europe called Forum World Features, run for a time by British freelance journalist and intelligence operative Brian Crozier. A bit more than a year ago, Crozier confirmed in an interview what others with less direct knowledge had said for many years: that “the C.I.A. personally requested Mr. SCAIFE” to take over as owner of Forum, which he ran from 1973 until 1975, when it was closed down shortly before TIME OUT, a London weekly, published an article on the C.I.A. connection which contained a 1968 CIA memorandum, addressed to then director Richard Helms, which described Forum as a CIA sponsored operation providing a significant means to counter communist propaganda.

Stephen Dorril's (1984) *American Friends: the Anti-CND Groups*, Lobster 3, states that the Committee for the Free World (CFW) announced itself to the public in a full page advertisement in the *New York Times* (6th April 1981), and that:

> Seed money came from the John M. Olin Foundation, the Smith Richardson Foundation, long time banker of the National Strategic Information Council, and the Heritage Foundation, and the Scaife Family charitable trusts. Both foundations have been identified as having extensive ties to the CIA. Richard Scaife, for example, owned the CIA newsfront, Forum World Features, for which Robert Moss was a regular contributor.

He notes that many of the CFW founders were involved in the Congress for Cultural Freedom, a propaganda cabal operating and also notes that the impetus for forming the CFW was the Jerusalem conference[29]:

> According to the Wall Street Journal (26th July 1979) participants at that conference included former CIA Director Bush, former CIA Deputy Director Ray Cline, Robert Moss and Brian Crozier – the latter two being paid propagandists for the CIA, French and British Intelligence. The Jerusalem Foundation that sponsored the '79 conference is an Israeli Intelligence front, established in the memory of one of the fallen commandos at Entebbe.

Dorril also notes that Ernest Lefever was funded by USIA to help "highly placed and influential leaders in Western Europe to gain a solid understanding of US defence and arms control policies, with special reference to their religious and moral implications." This led to a conference in the UK in May 1983 with church leaders in attendance and sponsored by the British Atlantic Committee (BAC) and the Institute for Defence and Strategic Studies:

> Lefever was refused a position in Reagan's administration because his views on human rights were to the right of Kirkpatrick's distinction between 'friendly authoritarianism' and 'hostile totalitarianism'. Lefever's Centre for Ethics and Public Policy received $250,000 in 1983 and is linked to the Heritage Foundation. He is co-author (with Roy Godson) of the apologist 'The CIA and The American Ethic'. Godson is a member of the Consortium for The Study of Intelligence (CSI) which includes 8 serving or former CIA officers.

This also notes that Godson was with the NSIC and that Sven Kraemer, Programme Director of the NSIC was at the May meeting. NSIC was described as a lobbying organisation dedicated to the preservation of 'containment militarism'; its stated goal to 'train young American Labour leaders in the critical issues that divide the Free World from the Communist states'. It received $6,000,000 from Richard Scaife, an ultra-right millionaire who "has made the formation of public opinion both his business and his vocation". He also gave $250,000 to the CPD, $3,800,000 to the Heritage Foundation and $5,300,000 to the Centre for Strategic and International Studies(CSIS).

> IEDSS which also backed the May meeting, also has links to the hardliners. Headed by Gerald Frost, former head of the Conservative Think Tank, Centre for Policy Studies (CPS), its chairman is J. Edwin Fuelner, who played a major part in the election of President Reagan and is President of the Heritage Foundation. He also sits on the study group on US Grand Strategy on which the CIA is represented via CSIS. IEDSS is based in the offices of the Institute for the Study of Conflict (ISC) whose board of management member Vice-Admiral Louis Le Bailley also attended.

Dorril also notes that Eugene V. Rostow, when Director of the Arms Control and Disarmament Agency, stated

> "there is participation on an increasing scale in the US of three groups whose potential impact should be cause for concern. They are the churches, the 'loyalist opposition' and, perhaps most important, the unpoliticised public".

He followed this by organising the propaganda campaign against the American Peace Movement's 'Ground Zero Week'.

Rostow was also concerned about the growing unilateralist movement and initiated a similar propaganda operation in the UK, aimed at neutralising the efforts of CND. This involved: mobilising public opinion, working within the Churches, and a 'dirty tricks' operation against the peace groups.

> William J. Casey, head of the CIA, met with US Information Agency (USIA) to organise the propaganda campaign in Europe. A direct mailing campaign was organised with Richard Viguerie and the U.S. Ambassador to Ireland, Peter Dailey. At the same time, Ernest Lefever, Director of the 'Ethics and Public Policy Programme' at Georgetown University, received $200,000 to organise the Church groups [...] Casey has claimed that the CIA weren't involved – and maybe he is right, for in the main the whole exercise was privately operated. What united the various participants is membership of or links to the 'Committee On The Present Danger' (CPD). The CPD is a Second Cold War pressure group populated by Reagan's political backers. It has a stranglehold on his defence and foreign policy and, as many commentators have noted, it is the present danger.

Drawing on a *Peace News* report of 29/9/83, he notes that:

> The Rand Corporation, a Californian military research body with links to the government and the CIA, sponsored a week's study on 'the Successor Generation' and its implications for Nato. 'The Successor Generation' is another name for anti-Americanism in Europe. Peter Dailey, US Ambassador to Ireland, noting the trend of antipathy to American policies, reported to the White House on ways of strengthening support for Cruise and Pershing, recommending that Reagan appoint an 'Arms Reduction Ombudsman' – not to help with arms reduction, but to do public relations work for Reagan's policies.

Consortium for the Study of Intelligence

The Consortium for the Study of Intelligence was founded in 1979 as a project of the NSIC. [30]

Board of directors

- Roy Godson: Professor of Government, Georgetown University. President
- Dorothy E. Nicolosi: Former Treasurer, National Strategy Information Center Vice President
- Jeffrey Berman Treasurer & Executive Director
- Omer Pace Secretary
- Reed Coleman: Chairman and CEO, Madison-Kipp
- Amado Gayol: President, Gayol and Associates
- Herb Magidson: Former Vice President, American Federation of Teachers
- John O. Marsh, Jr: Former Secretary of the Army
- Jay Mazur: President, 21st Century ILGWU Heritage Fund
- John Norton Moore: Professor of Law, Center for National Security Law, University of Virginia School of Law
- Jerald C. Newman: Former CEO, Long Island Medical Center
- Andrea Scrosati: Vice President, SKY Italia
- Allen Taylor: Chairman, Chipstone Foundation[31]

Publications

- Harold C. Hinton (c1980)*The China Sea: the American stake in its future*; ISBN: 0878558713

- Roy Godson(ed)[1982] *Clandestine collection*, ISBN: 0878558314.

- Roy Godson (ed)(1983)*Intelligence requirements for the 1980's: elements of intelligence*, ISBN: 087855954X.

- Herbert I. London; preface by John Tower (c1984) *Military doctrine and the American character: reflections on airland battle*, ISBN: 0887386148.

- İhsan Gürkan [foreword by Sinclair L. Melner](c1980) *NATO, Turkey, and the southern flank*, ISBN: 087855825X.

- Joyce E. Larson (ed) (1979)*New foundations for Asian and Pacific security: based on the addresses, papers, reports, and discussion sessions of an international conference held at Pattaya, Thailand, December 12-16*, ISBN: 0878554130.

- Marian K. Leighton (c1979) *The Soviet threat to NATO's northern flank*, ISBN: 0878558039.

- Alvin J. Cottrell and Michael L. Moodie (c1984) *The United States and the Persian Gulf: past mistakes, present needs*, ISBN: 0878559094.

Taken from ISBNdb.com

- Roy S. Godson, *Elements of Intelligence*, Transaction Publishers, ISBN 087855954X.

- James E. Dougherty and Paul H. Nitze and National Strategy Information Center and Francis X. Kane, *The Fateful Ends and Shades of SALT: Past ... Present ... and Yet to Come*, Crane, Russak, ISBN 084481332X.

- Morris Albert Adelman and National Strategy Information Center, *Oil, Divestiture, and National Security, Crane*, Russak, ISBN 0844810703.

- Norman Polmar and National Strategy Information Center, *Strategic Weapons: An Introduction*, Crane, Russak [for] National Strategy Information Center, ISBN 0844813990

These are undated and taken from BookFinder.com

AllBookstores.com states that Godson's *Intelligence Requirements for the 1980's : Elements of Intelligence*, is also published with the Consortium for the Study of Intelligence.

The list below is taken from National Library of Australia, and included in the list is one from the Brian Crozier run Institute for the Study of Conflict:

- *Strategy papers* (National Strategy Information Center) Published New York : The Center, 1969-
- *The Sino-Soviet confrontation : implications for the future* / Harold C. Hinton Published New York : Published by Crane, Russak [for] National Strategy Information Center, c1976
- *The evolution of Soviet security strategy, 1965-1975* / Avigdor Haselkorn Published New York : Crane, Russak, c1978
- *Agenda paper* / National Strategy Information Center Published New York : The Center, 1974-1985
- *Strategic weapons : an introduction* / Norman Polmar Published New York : Crane, Russak [for] National Strategy Information Center, c1982
- *The Military unbalance; is the U.S. becoming a second-class power?* Published New York, National Strategy Information Center [1971]
- *Trends in organized crime* [electronic resource] Published New Brunswick, N.J. : Transaction Periodicals Consortium for the National Strategy Information Center, c1995-

- *The Challenge of Soviet shipping*Published New York, NY : (111 E. 58th St., New York 10022) : National Strategy Information Center, [1982 or 1983]
- *Annual of power and conflict* Published London : Institute for the Study of Conflict
- *The fateful ends and shades of SALT : past ... present ... and yet to come?* / Paul H. Nitze, James E. Dougherty, and Francis X. Kane Published New York : Crane, Russak, c1979
- *Afghan alternatives : issues, options, and policies* / edited by Ralph H. Magnus Published New Brunswick, N.J., U.S.A. : Transaction Books, c1985

The list below is taken from University of Bradford

- '*Eurocommunism' : implications for East and West* / by Roy Godson, Stephen Haseler ; research contributors … (others). National Strategy Information Center. London (etc.)) : Macmillan (for the National Strategy Information Center)), 1978.
- *Strategic weapons : an introduction* / Norman Polmar. National Strategy Information Center. London : Crane, Russak for National Strategy Information, 1981.
- *Strategic weapons : an introduction* / (by) Norman Polmar. National Strategy Information Center. London : Macdonald and Jane's for National Strategy Information Center, Inc., 1976.
- Special operations in US strategy / edited by Frank R. Barnett, B. Hugh Tovar, Richard H. Shultz.

National Defense University., National Strategy Information Center. (Washington, D.C.?) : National Defense University Press in cooperation with National Strategy Information Center, Inc. :S Supt. of Docs., U.S. G.P.O. (distributor)), 1985.

The list below is taken from McMaster University

- *Trends in Organized Crime* [electronic resource].

by National Strategy Information Center.

- *The intelligent layperson's guide to "Star Wars" : 16 questions & answers on strategic defense and space weaponry'*

Larson, Joyce E., Bodie, William C., National Strategy Information Center. National Strategy Information Center, Inc., 1986.

- *Maritime strategy, geopolitics, and the defense of the West,*

Gray, Colin S., National Strategy Information Center. Published in the U.S. by Ramapo Press [for] the National Strategy Information Center, c1986.

- *Elements of intelligence* / edited by Roy Godson.

National Strategy Information Center., Consortium for the Study of Intelligence. National Strategy Information Center ; Distributed by Transaction Books, 1983.

- *Strategic weapons : an introduction*

Polmar, Norman., National Strategy Information Center. Crane, Russak [for] National Strategy Information Center, c1982.

- *Clandestine collection* / edited by Roy Godson.

by Godson, Roy, 1942-, National Strategy Information Center., Consortium for the Study of Intelligence., Colloquium on Clandestine Collection (1981 : Washington, D.C.) National Strategy Information Center ; Distributed by Transaction Books, [1982]

- *Intelligence requirements for the 1980's : covert action* / edited by Roy Godson.

National Strategy Information Center., Consortium for the Study of Intelligence. National Strategy Information Center ; distributed by Transaction Books, c1981.

- *Strategic options for the early eighties : what can be done?*

by Van Cleave, William R., Thompson, W. Scott (Willard Scott), 1942-, National Strategy Information Center. Automated Graphic Systems, c1979.

Some other works by Godson are discussed at the The Literature of Intelligence:A Bibliography of Materials,with Essays, Reviews, and Comments

Excepts and summaries of more recent work can be found at the website of the Consortium for the Study of Intelligence (part of the NSIC) but the links do not seem to be working. The site does provide links to the 2004 *Al Qaeda's Growing Sanctuary* By Douglas Farah and Richard Shultz, published in the Washington Post and the 2004 Armed Groups: A Tier-One Security Priority by Richard H. Shultz, Douglas Farah, Itamara V. Lochard, USAF Institute for National Security Studies.

its page on the Working Group on Intelligence Reform lists these publications (note Joseph Nye and David Kay):

- Patrick Watson, *FBI's Changing Missions in the 1990s.*
- Douglas MacEachin, *Tradecraft of Analysis: Challenge and Change in the CIA.*
- Abram Shulsky and Jennifer Sims, *What Is Intelligence?*
- Robert Kohler, *The Intelligence Industrial Base: Doomed to Extinction?*
- Walter Jajko, *The Future of Defense Intelligence.*
- L. Britt Snider with Elizabeth Rindskopf and John Coleman, *Relating Intelligence and Law Enforcement: Problems and Prospects.*
- William Hood, James Nolan, and Samuel Halpern, *Myths Surrounding James Angleton: Lessons for American Counterintelligence.*
- Henry Sokolski, *Fighting Proliferation: The Role of Intelligence.*
- Joseph S. Nye, *Estimating the Future.*
- Henry S. Rowen, *Reforming Intelligence: A Market Approach.*
- Randall M. Fort, *Economic Espionage: Problems and Prospects.*
- Roy Godson with Richard Kerr and Ernest May, *Covert Action in the 1990s.*
- James Q. Wilson, *Thinking About Reorganization.*

- David Kay, *Denial and Deception: Iraq and Beyond.*

Richard Shultz (seemingly the only employee of the Intelligence Consortium) has a list of his publications at his site at The Fletcher School, Tufts University

Projects

The idealist.com state that:

> "The Culture of Lawfulness (COL) Project of NSIC is an educational organization that helps develop academic approaches to enhance societal involvement in supporting the rule of law. The COL Project works with school systems, Ministries of Education, non-governmental organizations, and international organizations such as the United Nations and the Organization of American States."

Notes

1. ↥ International Relations Center (1998) Council for the Defense of Freedom.
2. ↑ An Unholy Alliance. Other sources state that the NSIC was founded by Frank R. Barnett and Morris Liebman [Leibman] and others that it was Prescott Bush and his son Prescott, Jr., William Casey and Leo Cherne
3. ↥ A BBC Broadcast (July 8, 1980) Publications in Britain on the "Soviet Threat" noted that Survey's subscribers, according to its publishers, include all Western governments and its contributors included the US National Security Advisor, Zbigniew Brzezinski, apart from its propaganda orientation, this is deflated by the observations on its predictive worth:

   Labedz [...] recently wrote an article for the London weekly 'Now!'. The article is headlined "The Fall of Europe" and claims to be a documented study of the current situation. It's full of all sorts of scientific prophecies of a pending Russian invasion of Western Europe. On the strength of a scrupulous analysis of the international situation, the author of this article predicts to the day when exactly the Russians will start building their naval base on the Norwegian archipelago of Spitzbergen. This will happen on 14th September 1983.

   Now! was run by James Goldsmith.

4. ↥ Edward S. Herman and Gerry O'Sullivan (1990) *The Terrorism Industry: The Experts and Institutions That Shape Our View of Terror*, this can also be seen in relation to Herman's (1982) *The Real Terror Network*, and the use of state-sponsored propaganda campaigns as modelled by Herman and Chomsky.
5. ↥ See: Sara Diamond (1995) Roads to Dominion: Right-wing Movements and Political Power in the United States. With a focus on the Christian Right, Diamond aims to show how both an understanding and prediction of the Right's influence on day-to-day policy making in the US by way of the observation of consistent patterns in its relationships with political elites and government agencies in both conflict and collaboration with state institutions. In the context mentioned above, this draws on Philip Paull's (1982) "International Terrorism": The Propaganda War, which detailed the media outlets and journalists involved in the campaign and their working relationship with US and other intelligence agencies(see note 83, P.374).
6. ↥ The National Strategy Information Center (2008)About NSIC.
7. ↑ Right Web (2004) The National Strategy Information Center, IRC-Political Research Associates.
8. ↑ Right Web (2004) The National Strategy Information Center, IRC-Political Research Associates.
9. ↑ International Relations Center (2006) National Strategy Information Center, IRC-Political Research Associates.
10. ↑ The Rightweb profile states that:

…Godson was a key figure in Anglo-American trade union relations, organizing "educational visits" for British trade unionists to visit the U.S. during the Reagan administration. The trips were organized under the auspices of the Labour Desk of the U.S. Youth Council and the Intl Labor Program of Georgetown University. The purpose of the trips was "to broaden international education about Western democratic values." A typical trip included a visit to the naval base at Norfolk, a meeting with former Ambassador to the United Nations (Reagan administration) Jeane Kirkpatrick, talks on defense at the National Security Council (former operational base of Col. Oliver North) and talks at the NSIC. The trips were financed by the Reagan administration.

11. ↥ W. Scott Thompson's (1978)Power Projection: A Net Assessment of the U. S. and Soviet Capabilities.
12. ↑ Frank N. Trager (1977) The National Security Act of 1947: Its Thirtieth Anniversary, Air University Review. The Air University Review also has a history of the NSIC: Lieutenant Colonel David R. Mets (1977)Watching the Pendulum Swing: A Look at the Works of the National Strategy Information Center. This states that the keystone to the NSIC's "entire publishing effort" may be said to be Frank N. Trager and Philip S. Kronenberg, editors (1973) National Security and American Society: Theory, Process, and Policy (Lawrence: University Press of Kansas). Lieutenant Colonel Mets' essay is a literature review that states that the NSIC has an authorship that tends to be less associated with the armed forces and federal government. Based in New York and affiliated with New York University (NYU), although it does not publish a periodical. However, it is "very active in soliciting a variety of topical studies concerning national security and in conducting seminars and conferences on the subject throughout the nation." By the mid-1970s the NSIC publications covered four principal areas: general studies, works on the use of the political instrument of national policy, books on military affairs, and essays on the economics sinews of national security policy; these took the form of general teaching tools, Strategy Papers, and Agenda Papers.
13. ↥ US History Encyclopedia:Statement by Committee Seeking Peace with Freedom in Vietnam.
14. ↑ Hendrik Edelman (1986) Book Review, Publishing Research Quarterly.This notes that: "Paradoxically, the report's leitmotif involves subsidizing the export of American books to get exposure for their free-world political and economic philosophy."
15. ↑ http://www.sourcewatch.org/index.php?title=Evron_Kirkpatrick
16. ↑ Bill Van Auken (2006) Jeane Kirkpatrick: from "social democrat" to champion of death squads.
17. ↑ Hendrik Edelman (1986) Book Review, Publishing Research Quarterly.
18. ↑ Folio: The Magazine for Magazine Management (1985)China beckons Western magazines; PRC's liberalization and continued thirst for technical knowledge keep interest high among publishers.
19. ↑ http://www.zoominfo.com/people/Feffer_Paul_93989074.aspx
20. ↑ Enid Nemy (1990) New Yorkers, etc. New York Times, May 20.
21. ↑ Albert Boiter (1982) Washington Perspectives, The Washington Quarterly.
22. ↑ Michael Getler (1982) Retired Intelligence Officers Alarmed by Soviet Spying in U.S., The Washington Post, October 3.
23. ↑ http://www.strategycenter.org/board.htm
24. ↑ See: Harold C. Hinton (1980) The China Sea: The American Stake in Its Future, Transaction Publishers, (p.41).
25. ↑ The Institute of World Politics (2007) Sven F. Kraemer: Biography
26. ↑ Institute of World Politics (2003) Media Transparency Profile. Earhart fund the Atlas Economic Research Foundation, Tufts University-Fletcher School of Law & Diplomacy, Institute of Economic Affairs, Jamestown Foundation, American Enterprise Institute for Public Policy Research, Georgetown University, Hoover Institution on War, Revolution and Peace, Ethics and Public Policy Center, Inc., Mackinac Center for Public Policy, Russell Kirk Center for Cultural Renewal, Mont Pelerin Society, Acton Institute For The Study of Religion and Liberty, George C. Marshall Institute, Philadelphia Society, Milton and Rose D. Friedman

Foundation, Project for the New American Century, the National Strategy Information Center and many other neoconservative organisations.

27. ↑ Brian Crozier (1993) Free Agent, Harper Collins
28. ↑ Quoted from http://www.mail-archive.com/ctrl@listserv.aol.com/msg05635.html
29. ↑ Kevin Toolis' (2004)Rise of the terrorist professors, The New Statesman, 12 June, notes that:

    Netanyahu, a vivid, brilliant propagandist and player on the Washington diplomatic circuit, sought to convince American conservatives that the sectional interests of the Israeli state were identical to those of the western democracies. He was largely preaching to the converted. Many of the names of contributors to the second Jonathan Institute conference, held in Washington in 1984, reappear as neoconservatives in the run-up to the 2003 Iraq war. They include Jeane Kirkpatrick, Charles Krauthammer, Michael Ledeen and Bernard Lewis.

    Benjamin Netanyahu, Mekhon Yonatan's (1981) International Terrorism: Challenge and Response, published by Transaction Publishers, contains contributions from Shimon Peres, Paul Johnson, Hugh Fraser MP, Henry M. Jackson, Menachem Begin, Chiam Herzog, Richard Pipes, Brian Crozier, Ahron Yariv and Lord Chalfont. To these names Herman and O'Sullivan (p.105) add Robert Moss, George Bush, Ray Cline, Midge Decter, Norman Podhoretz, Claire Sterling, Ben Wattenberg, George Will and that a 1984 conference included George Shultz, Jeane Kirkpatrick, Michael Ledeen, Arnaud de Borchgrave and Jillian Becker.

30. ↑ Consortium for the Study of Intelligence
31. ↑ National Strategy Information Center: Board

DOCUMENT 2 ENDS

David Teacher adds: Also see the useful collection of NSIC letters from 1975 to 1999 at https://digital.libraries.psu.edu/digital/collection/transaction/search/searchterm/NSIC/order/nosort.

NSIC ANNEX ENDS.

IFF ANNEX

DOCUMENT 1

Taken from https://web.archive.org/web/20011125061925/http://www.geocities.com/CapitolHill/2807/lhiff.html

Editors Note: *Front for Apartheid*, appeared in Newsday, Sunday, July 16, 1995. The article was reported by Dele Olojede in South Africa and Timothy M. Phelps in Washington. The article concerns a Washington think-tank called the International Freedom Foundation that had branches in Johannesburg, South Africa and London, England. The International Freedom Foundation was actually a front for intelligence operators who worked on psycho-political operations to prolong apartheid. People involved included United States Department of State Officials, United States Congressmen, and US Intelligence agents. The article says "jobs" for South African intelligence provided at least half of the total IFF revenue, and South African military intelligence would send fees from the "jobs" directly to the IFF Washington office.

The article is a limited hangout that doesn't mention the South African Institute of International Affairs, The Royal Institute of International Affairs, or the Council on Foreign Relations. The article has a picture of Secretary of State George Shultz shaking hands with Oliver Tambo, the late exiled leader of ANC, at the State Department in 1987. The article mentions that people like Henry Kissinger were invited to International Freedom Foundation seminars to deliver keynote speeches. Among those in attendance was former CIA director William Colby. Shultz, Kissinger and Colby were members of the Council on Foreign Relations. The article talks about Americans who were on the board of Directors of the IFF, and who worked for the IFF in South Africa. Nearly every man mentioned was a United States Intelligence agent at one time or another. Do former United States intelligence agents, continuing working as agents even after they become elected government officials, or are appointed to the US Department of State?

A list of some of the people mentioned in the story with locations and dates of intelligence service follows:

SHULTZ GEORGE P (Council on Foreign Relations Member) Panama 1984, Grenada 1984, Libya 1986

KISSINGER, HENRY A (Council on Foreign Relations member) South Africa 1969-1977, Philippines 1972, Indonesia 1975, Angola 1976, Britain 1976, Chile 1976,China 1989-1997

COLBY WILLIAM EGAN (Council on Foreign Relations member) Norway 1944-1952, Sweden 1951-1953, Italy 1953-1958, Vietnam 1959-1971, Indonesia 1963-1965, Chile 1970-1973, Japan 1985, Singapore 1985

DORNAN ROBERT K (R-CA) Laos 1981

SELLARS, DUNCAN W (Chairman IFF, 1993) South Africa 1986, Nicaragua 1988

ABRAMOFF JACK South Africa 1983

KEYES ALAN L India 1979-1980, Zimbabwe 1980-1981

BURTON DAN L (R-IN) Mozambique 1986

HELMS JESSE A (R-NC) Argentina 1975-1976, Taiwan 1975, Chile 1976-1986, Panama 1977, Guatemala 1981, Mozambique 1986 ,South Africa 1986

WILLIAMSON CRAIG South Africa 1980-1998

DE KLERK F W South Africa 1986-1996

BOOYSE WIM South Africa 1993

YUILL MARTIN South Africa 1983-1988

CRYSTAL RUSSELL South Africa 1983-1985

LEVENTHAL TODD United States Information Agency

KALUGIN OLEG D USSR 1960-1992

PARKER JAY A South Africa 1984-1985

The description of the International Freedom Foundation printed in the 1993 Encyclopedia of Associations reads,

"**14748* INTERNATIONAL FREEDOM FOUNDATION (Conservative) IFF*

200 G. St. NE, Ste, 300. Phone: (202) 546-5788

Washington, DC 20002. Duncan Sellars, Chm.

Founded 1986. Staff: 20 Nonmembership. Works to foster individual freedom throughout the world by engaging in activities which promote the development of free and open societies based on the principles of free enterprise, while recognizing and respecting the sovereignty and cultural heritage of nations. Believes that freedom of though and expression, and free association without government interference, is essential to human dignity and without protection from violent coercion, liberty and prosperity are impossible. Works to demonstrate the benefits of a "parliamentary" democracy" and expose the "failures" of a "people's democracy," which the group says, is often referred to as a system of "freedom" but is actually a guise for totalitarianism. Considers totalitarian systems to be the "enemies of freedom" and a threat to the security of the West. Encourages and mobilizes support of indigenous democratic movements. Organizes forums for dialogue and discussion on issues of human rights and free enterprise. Sponsors seminars, fellowships, and international exchanges; maintains speakers' bureau. Telecommunications Services: Fax (202) 546-5488."

"Publications Angola Peace Monitor, monthly Covers developments in the Angolan peace process · Price: $105/year. ISSN; 1045-0513 Circulation 2000. Advertising: not accepted. ·Freedom Bulletin, monthly. Newsletter, includes feature articles on major foreign policy issues. Price: $24/year in U.S. $30/year outside of U.S. ISSN: 0897-5086 Circulation: 221000. i Advertising: accepted. · Freedom Bulletin - UK Edition, 6/year. Newsletter including articles on foreign policy issues from British and European perspectives Price: $10/year; £8 /year in United Kingdom. Circulation 6000. · Freedom Bulletin - Republic of South Africa Edition, monthly, Newsletter including features on developments in South Africa. Price: $20/ year in U.S.; R45/year in South Africa. Circulation: 6000. Advertising: not accepted. · InterAmerican OPPORTUNITIES Briefing, bimonthly. Newsletter; includes business activity and economic reform in Latin America. Price: $105 /year. ISSN: 1055-9299. · Laissezfaire, quarterly Journal on European affairs and European-Third World relations; includes book reviews. Price: $30/year in U.S.; £l0/year in United Kingdom. Circulation: 6000. Advertising; accepted. OPPORTUNITIES Briefing, bimonthly. Newsletter; includes free market trends and business opportunities in Eastern Europe. Price: $105/year. ISSN: 0960-5088. Advertising: not accepted. · Soviet Perspectives, monthly. Guide to economic reform and business opportunities in the Soviet Union. Price $225/year ISSN: 1055-1042. · Sub-Sahara Monitor, monthly. Newsletter ; includes political and economic issues, periodic country reports, aid and trade briefs, investment analysis, and book reviews. Price: $105/year. ISSN: 1018-1520. · terra nova, quarterly. Journal containing scholarly articles on foreign policy issues, as related to free market economic and political thought; includes book reviews. Price: $24/year. ISSN: 1056-8018. Circulation: 7000. · Also publishes monographs, posters, and reports produces videotapes."

If the International Freedom Foundation is a front for Intelligence organizations do their publications contain information telling intelligence agents what to do?

Why didn't Newsday connect the International Freedom Foundation to the Council on Foreign Relations? Did the Truth and Reconciliation Commission investigate the Council on Foreign Relations/Royal Institute of International Affairs/South African Institute of International Affairs role in creating the racial tension, hatred and genocide in South Africa? If they did, what were their findings? If they did not, don't you think it is about time they did?

The Newsday article follows:

…………………………………..

NEWSDAY Sunday July 16, 1995 Front for Apartheid Washington-based think tank said to be part of ruse to prolong power *This article was reported by Dele Olojede in South Africa and Timothy M. Phelps in Washington, and was written by Olojede.*

Then Secretary of State [CFR member] George Shultz shakes hands with Oliver Tambo, the late exiled leader of ANC, at State Department in 1987.

Johannesburg, South Africa A respectable Washington foundation, which drew into its web prominent Republican and conservative figures like Sen.. Jesse Helms and other members of Congress, was actually a front organization bankrolled by South Africa's last white rulers to prolong apartheid, a Newsday investigation has shown.

The International Freedom Foundation, founded in 1986 seemingly as a conservative think tank, was in fact part of an elaborate intelligence gathering operation, and was designed to be an instrument for "political warfare" against apartheid's foes, according to former senior South African spy Craig Williamson. The South Africans spent up to $1.5 million a year through 1992 to underwrite "Operation Babushka," as the IFF project was known.

The current South African National Defence Force officially confirmed that the IFF was its dummy operation.

"The International Freedom Foundation was a former SA Defence Force project," Army Col. John Rolt, a military spokesman, said in a terse response to an inquiry. A member of the IFF"s international board of directors also conceded Friday that at least half of the foundation's funds came from projects undertaken on behalf of South Africa's military intelligence, although he refused to say what these projects were except that many of them were directed against Nelson Mandela's African National Congress.

A three-month Newsday investigation determined that one of the project's broad objectives was to try to reverse the apartheid regime's pariah status in Western political circles. More specifically, the IFF sought to portray the ANC as a tool of Soviet communism, thus undercutting the movement's growing international acceptance as the government-in-waiting of a future multiracial South Africa.

"We decided that, the only level we were going to be accepted was when it came to the Soviets and their surrogates, so our strategy was to paint the ANC as communist surrogates," said Williamson, formerly a senior operative in South Africa's military intelligence, who helped direct Babushka. "The more we could present ourselves as anti-communists, the more people looked at us with respect. People you could hardly believe cooperated with us politically when it came to the Soviets."

The South Africans found willing, though possibly unwitting, allies in influential Republican politicians, conservative intellectuals and activists. Sen. Jesse Helms, now chairman of the Senate Foreign Relations Committee, served as chairman of the editorial advisory board for the foundation's publications. Through a spokesman, Helms said that he did not know anything about the foundation.

"Helms has never heard of the International Freedom Foundation, was not chairman of their advisory board and never authorized his name to be used by IFF in any way shape or form. We never had any relationship with them," Mere Thiessen, a Helms spokesman, said.

Rep. Dan Burton, who was the ranking Republican on the House subcommittee on Africa, and Rep. Robert Dornan were active in IFF projects, frequently serving on its delegations to international forums. Alan Keyes, currently a candidate for the Republican presidential nomination, also served as advisor. (He did not return a call seeking comment.) The Washington lobbyist and former movie producer Jack Abramoff, and rising conservative stars like Duncan Sellers, helped run the foundation.

All those contacted denied knowing that it was controlled and funded by the South African regime.

Although there are strong indications that U.S. laws may have been broken some IFF officials have admitted in interviews that they knew that South African military intelligence money helped pay for the foundation's activities in Washington there is no clear evidence that the politicians associated with IFF either took campaign contributions or otherwise directly benefited financially from the foundation .

Under U.S. law, anyone who represents a foreign government or acts under its orders, direction or control, has to register with the Justice Department as a foreign agent. Asked if a "think-tank" sup up and supported by a foreign government has to register, a Justice official said, "If the foreign [government] has some say in what they are doing and, obviously, if they are funding it they probably do then they probably do have to register." Violation of the law carries a fine up to $10,000 and a prison term of up to five years.

Several key figures involved in the IFF and contacted by Newsday denied any knowledge that the foundation was a front for the political agenda of a foreign government. Duncan Sellers, now a Virginia businessman, said, "This is nothing I ever knew about. It's something that I would have resigned over or closed the foundation over. I would have put a stop to it."

"The Congressman didn't know anything about it," said a spokesman for Dornan, Paul Morrell. "This is all news to him if it is true." Morrell described Dornan's impression of the IFF as simply "pro-freedom, pro-democracy, pro-Reagan."

Phillip Crane, another U.S. representative listed as an IFF editorial advisor, joined the board in 1987 at the request of Abramoff, said an aide, and by 1990 had quit. "He never attended a board meeting that he can recall," said the aide, Bob Foster. "He had no idea that any such situation [intelligence connections] existed."

Williamson said that the operation was deliberately constructed so that many of the people would not know they were involved with a foreign government. "That was the beauty of the whole things guys pushing what they believed," he said. Helms for example, voted against virtually every punitive measure ever contemplated against South Africa's white minority government, however mild. And Burton was nearly hysterical in arguing against sanctions that a large bipartisan majority passed in 1986 over President Ronald Reagan's veto, at one point warning that "there will be blood running in the streets" as a result.

But in some cases, such as Abramoffs, the relationship with the South African security apparatus was more than merely coincidental, according to Williamson and others. A former chief of intelligence, now retired, said emphatically that the South African military helped finance Abramoffs 1988 movie "Red Scorpion" [David Teacher adds: see http://www.imdb.com/title/tt0098180/]. The movie was a sympathetic portrayal of an anti-communist African guerrilla commander loosely based on Jones Savimbi, the Angolan rebel leader allied to both Washington and Pretoria. Williamson also said the production of "Red Scorpion" was "funded by our guys," who in addition provided military trucks and equipment -as well as extras .

Abramoff reacted with anger when told of the allegations Friday, saying his movie was funded by private investors and had nothing to do with the South African government. "This is outrageous," he said.

Details of South Africa's intelligence operations in the last years of apartheid have begun to rapidly emerge with the imminent establishment of a Truth Commission by the Mandela government. The commission will elicit confessions of "dirty tricks" by apartheid's foot soldiers and their Commanders, in exchange for immunity from prosecution. Williamson, for instance, recently revealed that he was involved in the assassination of Ruth First, wife of the ANC and South African Communist Party leader Joe Slovo, and other anti-apartheid activists.

In South African government thinking, the IFF represented a far more subtle approach to defeating the anti-apartheid movement. Officials said the p!an was to get away from the traditional allies of Pretoria, the fringe right in the United States and Europe, "some of whom were to the right of Ghengis Khan," said one senior intelligence official. Instead, they settled for a front staffed with mainstream conservatives who did not necessarily know who was pulling the strings.

"They ran their own organization, but we steered them, that was the point," Williamson said.

"They were very good, those guys, eh?" said Vic McPheerson, a police colonel who ran security branch operations and participated in the 1982 bombing of the ANC office in London. "They were not just good in intelligence, but in political warfare."

Starting in 1986, when Reagan failed to override comprehensive U.S. economic sanctions, the South African government began casting about for ways to survive in an international environment more hostile to apartheid than ever. A very senior official in South African military intelligence, to whom IFF handlers reported at the time, said the operation cost his unit between $l million and $1.5 million a year. The retired general said the funds represented almost all of the IFF's annual operating budget, although the foundation gained such legitimacy that it began to attract funding from individuals and groups in the United States.

On at least one occasion, the IFF had trouble accounting for its money. It was unable to comply in 1989 with a New York State requirement that it provide an accountant's opinion confirming that its financial statements "present fairly the financial position of the organization." It was eventually barred, in January, 1991, from soliciting funds from New York. According to financial records provided by Jeff Pandin, the foundation's last executive director in Washington, IFF revenue in 1992 dropped by half of the preceding year's, to $1.6 million. It just so happened that President Frederik W. de Klerk ended secret South African funding for the foundation in 1992, in response to pressure from Mandela to demonstrate that he was not complicit in "Third Force" activities. Pandin expressed shock that much of the organization's money had been coming from clandestine South African sources. "I worked for the IFF from Day One to Day End," he said. "This is complete news to me." He said he once had met Williamson when he was in Mozambique, but was unaware of any official links.

On the surface, the IFF's headquarters was in north-east Washington, D.C., , at 200 G Street, next door to the Free Congress Foundation, another conservative institution. From that base, it launched campaigns against communist sympathizers and perceived enemies of the free market. It broadly supported Reaganism, and its principal officers ran with the Ollie North crowd. But it always paid special attention to ANC. When Mandela made his first visit to the United States in 1990, following his release from prison, the IFF placed advertisements in local papers designed to dampen public enthusiasm for Mandela. One ad in the Miami Herald portrayed Mandela as an ally and defender of Cuba's Fidel Castro. The city's large Cuban community was so agitated that a ceremony to present Mandela with keys to the city was scrapped.

The IFF published several journals and bulletins, in Washington and in its offices in Europe and Johannesburg. One of its contributors was Jay Parker, an African-American who was a paid public relations agent of successive apartheid regimes throughout the 1970s and 1980s. People like Henry Kissinger were invited to IFF seminars to deliver keynote speeches. The foundation brought together the together the world's top intelligence experts at a 1991 conference in Potsdam, Germany, to mull over the changing uses of intelligence in the post-Cold War world. Among those in attendance was former CIA director William Colby and a retired senior KGB general, Oleg Kalugin. The IFF also waged a major but not surprisingly futile campaign for U.S. retention of the Panama Canal. But its main purpose was always to serve the ultimate goals of the South African government, according to those who helped nudge it in that direction. The former senior South African military intelligence official said he traveled to the United States and Canada in 1988 as a guest of the IFF. But the real reason for his trip, he said, was to try to strengthen South African intelligence operations on the ground, at diplomatic posts and the North American offices of Satour, the country's tourism promotion agency.

"I was surprised at the kind of access the IFF operation provided us," said Wim Booyse, who went by the title of Senior Research fellow at the Johannesburg office of the IFF. Booyse said when he visited Washington In 1987 to attend IFF-sponsored seminars, part of the propaganda training he and other visitors received came from a disinformation specialist at the United States Information Service, an official he identified as Todd Leventhal. Leventhal said in response that he remembered meeting with Booyse and possibly a few other IFF people, but gave no formal talk and talked to them only about countering disinformation, not spreading it

Far from being a mere branch of the IFF, the Johannesburg office was in fact the nerve center of IFF operations worldwide. According to Martin Yuill, who served as administrator of the "branch," he began to realize that perhaps Johannesburg was not just a branch office after all, since it was always deciding how much money the other offices, Including the Washington headquarters, should have. "I guess one would have to conclude that that was the case," he said.

Although he insisted that the IFF was no clandestine operation, Russell Crystal who ran the Johannesburg office, said it was vital to the foundation. He said Friday in an interview that "jobs" for South African intelligence provided at least half of total IFF revenue, and that he sometimes asked military intelligence to send the fees from these "jobs" directly to the Washington office of the IFF.

"The military intelligence, there were certain things they wanted done -- tackling the ANC as a terrorist-communist organization," Crystal said. "The projects we did for them, they paid for. " He added that it was not impossible that South Africa accounted for far more than his estimated 50 percent, of IFF revenues.

As an example of this "tackling," Crystal cited the targeting of Oliver Tambo, whenever the late exiled leader of the ANC traveled around the world. Once, when Tambo visited with George Shultz, then-secretary of state, the IFF arranged for demonstrators to drape tires around their necks to protest the "necklace" killings of suspect ed government informers in black townships in South Africa.

"The advantage of the IFF was that it pilloried the ANC," said Williamson. "The sort of general western view of the ANC up until 1990 was a box of matches [violence] and Soviet-supporting -- slavishly was the word we latched on. That was backed up with writings, intellectual inputs. It was a matter of undercutting ANC credibility."

By 1993, the IFF effectively shut down after de Klerk pulled the plug on many politically motivated clandestine operations. But the IFF did not go down before one final parting shot.

In January that year, the foundation financed a investigation into alleged human rights abuses during the 1980's at ANC guerrilla camps in Angola. Bob Douglas, a South African lawyer, concluded there was evidence of torture and other abuses, forcing the ANC to acknowledge some abuses. Douglas said Friday he did not believe that the IFF worked for military intelligence. "I did a professional job for which I charged professional fees," he said crossly. "I did my job of work, I finished my work, and had nothing to do with it since then."

…………………………………..

DOCUMENT 1 ENDS

DOCUMENT 2

August 2008 article *The wrecking crew* by Thomas Frank, online at https://harpers.org/archive/2008/08/the-wrecking-crew/.

The wrecking crew:

How a gang of right-wing con men destroyed Washington and made a killing

By Thomas Frank

Thomas Frank is the author of four books, including What's the Matter with Kansas? and the forthcoming *The Wrecking Crew* (Metropolitan Books), from which this essay is adapted.

[Republished as a Holt paperback in 2009]

Corruption is uniquely reprehensible in a democracy because it violates the system's first principle, which we all learned back in the sunshiny days of elementary school: that the government exists to serve the public, not particular individuals. *We Are the Government,* insisted the title of a civics primer published in the earnest year of 1945. "The White House belongs to you," its dust jacket told us. "So do all the other splendid buildings in Washington, D.C." This idea runs so deep in the American grain that many of us can't bring ourselves to question it, even in this disillusioned age. Republicans and Democrats may fight over how big government should be and exactly what it should do, we tell ourselves, but surely everyone shares those baseline good intentions, that simple devotion to the public interest.

We continue to believe this despite such massive evidence to the contrary as the career of Jack Abramoff, the conservative lobbyist whose feats of corruption have been unreeling in newspaper and congressional investigations for years. On January 3, 2006, Abramoff pled guilty to bribing a member of Congress, evading taxes, and defrauding his clients, but what made his case memorable were the incredible details: the millions of dollars Abramoff and his confederates casually squeezed out of clients, the luxury restaurant he opened in order to hand out the goodies more efficiently, the golf trips to Scotland, the gleeful contempt he expressed for nearly everyone in his voluminous emails, and, later, the desperate wriggling of prominent Republicans as they tried to deny their old pal.

Journalistic coverage of the Abramoff affair has clung reliably to the "bad apple" thesis, in which the lobbyist's sins are carefully separated from the movement of which he was once a prominent part. What Abramoff represented, we read, was "greed gone wild." He "went native." He was "sui generis," a one-of-a-kind con man, "engaged in bizarre antics that your average Zegna-clad Washington lobbyist would never have dreamed of."

In which case, we can all relax: Jack Abramoff is in jail. The system worked; the bad apple has been plucked; the wild greed and undreamed-of antics have ceased.

But the truth is almost exactly the opposite, whether we are discussing Abramoff or the wider tsunami of corruption that has washed over the capital in recent years. It is just this: Fantastic misgovernment is not an accident, nor is it the work of a few bad individuals. It is the consequence of triumph by a particular philosophy of government, by a movement that understands the liberal state as a perversion and considers the market the ideal nexus of human society. This movement is friendly to industry not just by force of campaign contributions but by conviction; it believes in entrepreneurship not merely in commerce but in politics; and the inevitable results of its ascendance are, first, the capture of the state by business and, second, what follows from that: incompetence, graft, and all the other wretched flotsam that we've come to expect from Washington.

The correct diagnosis is the "bad apple" thesis turned upside down. There are plenty of good conservative individuals, honorable folks who would never participate in the sort of corruption we have watched unfold over the past few years. Hang around with grassroots conservative voters in Kansas, and in the main you will find them to be honest, hardworking people.

But put conservatism in charge of the state, and it behaves very differently. Now the "values" that rightist politicians eulogize on the stump disappear, and in their place we can discern an entirely different set of priorities—priorities that reveal more about the unchanging historical essence of American conservatism than do its fleeting campaigns against gay marriage or secular humanism. The conservatism that speaks to us through its actions in Washington is institutionally opposed to those baseline good intentions we learned about in elementary school. Its leaders laugh off the idea of the public interest as airy-fairy nonsense; they caution against bringing top-notch talent into government service; they declare war on public workers. They have made a cult of outsourcing and privatizing, they have wrecked established federal operations because they disagree with them, and they have deliberately piled up an Everest of debt in order to force the government into crisis. The ruination they have wrought has been thorough; it has been a professional job. Repairing it will require years of political action.

Let us start with conservatives' sense of their own exclusion. This idea may strike you as peculiar, but to conservatives it is fundamental; it predicates everything they do, say, and enact. The government is never theirs, they believe, no matter how much of it they happen to control. "Even when conservatives are in power they refuse to adopt the psychology of an establishment," marveled the journalist Sidney Blumenthal during the Reagan years. George W. Bush, who has grabbed more power for the executive branch than anyone since Nixon, actually sees himself as a "dissident in Washington." One of his more worshipful biographers calls him the nation's *Rebel-in-Chief*: he "operates in Washington like the head of a small occupying army of insurgents. . . . He's an alien in the realm of the governing class, given a green card by voters."

The hallucination is dazzling, awesome. For most of the past three decades these insurgents have controlled at least one branch of government; they were underwritten in their rule by the biggest of businesses; they were backed by a robust social movement with chapters across the radio dial. Still they remain the victims, the outsiders; they fight the power, the establishment, the snobs, the corrupt. John McCain rails against Washington as the "city of Satan"—which in any sober theology would make him Lucifer's lieutenant. Fred Barnes, the author of *Rebel-in-Chief,* is such a well-known Washington fixture that he hosts a TV show called *The Beltway Boys.* Karl Zinsmeister, the editor of a magazine published by the ultra-insiders at the American Enterprise Institute, reviled the people of the capital in 2004 as "morally repugnant, cheating, shifty human beings." Soon afterward he was rewarded for his adherence to the fantasy by being appointed chief domestic-policy advisor to President Bush.

Conservatism-as-revolution was not always such a ridiculous idea. In the Fifties and Sixties, conservatism was widely regarded as a deluded relic of an earlier age. The Republican Party itself was dominated at that time by its moderate faction, which conservatives defeated only after a titanic struggle spanning many years. Then, in the Seventies, right-wing insurgencies spread across the country: conservative cliques took control of the Southern Baptists and the National Rifle Association, and in 1978 the first of a wave of tax revolts shook California. In 1981 came the turn of the College Republicans, where the right-wing take-over was led by none other than the future supercorruptionist Jack Abramoff. This uprising holds special significance for the historian, since it not only introduces us to the cast of characters who went on to dominate Washington during the Gingrich and Bush eras but also provides a window into the conservative soul.

The story begins in 1980, the year of the "Reagan Revolution," when there appeared on the national scene a phenomenon that bewildered political observers: legions of politicized, energetic college students who were conservatives rather than liberals or radicals, as had been typical in the two decades previous. And not only were their politics deeply square but the idol of this unlikely youth craze was the oldest president ever. Reagan's entire Pennsylvania campaign, for example, was run by a lad of twenty. In 1984, the aged actor won 60 percent of the college-student vote. The historical turnabout was irresistible, and Reagan Youth became one of the great journalistic clichés of the period, powering hundreds of newspaper columns and at least one beloved TV sitcom.

These sons of Reagan had a strong sense of generational self-awareness, and they loudly told the world how they had come by it. In the midst of the interminable Iran hostage crisis, a crowd of them at one college campus were supposedly so moved by a showing of *Patton* that they demonstrated spontaneously in favor of a nuclear attack on that country, shaking the ivory tower with chants of

"First strike now!" Another well-known story of the era was how a bunch of privileged kids at Dartmouth College, a traditional fortress of privilege, decided that embracing the traditional politics of privilege and mimicking the traditional manners of the privileged were actually acts of great daring, exposing them to persecution by tyrannical liberals. Then there was Jack Abramoff, a College Republican leader in the Boston area who gained, according to the John Birch Society's *Review of the News,* a "reputation as one of the most innovative of the national Conservative youth leaders" after he mounted such a massive grassroots push for Reagan in 1980 that he almost single-handedly shifted Massachusetts into the Republican column.

Abramoff, a burly fellow from Beverly Hills, came to Washington in 1981 to assume the chairmanship of the College Republican National Committee. Back in the Vietnam days it had been leftists who fought the power, he explained to reporters. But "now *we're* the campus radicals." His newly energized College Republicans (CRs) fanned out across the nation, instructing clean-cut kids on how to use the tactics of the Sixties left for their own causes. A snapshot of Abramoff using a bullhorn to rally a conservative throng was proudly reproduced in the CRs' *Annual Report* for 1983, just across the page from a photo of Ralph Reed, who was then Abramoff's right-hand man, pumping his fist at the head of a swarm of angry, sign-waving conservatives. In both instances the young men had gone into action wearing neckties.

It was Abramoff's friend Grover Norquist, then a recent graduate of Harvard Business School, who came up with a plan for changing the very nature of the College Republicans. Norquist made a study of the CRs, developing a scheme to transform them from "a resume-padding social club," as one account puts it, into "an ideological, grassroots organization." Abramoff made Norquist the College Republicans' executive director, and the two put Norquist's theory into action. They purged the "old guard." They amended the group's constitution, establishing a structure that made the Washington office more powerful, and rewarded proselytizing on campus.

What the rising conservative sensibility of those years treasured above all else was "confrontation" with the left. It called for a quasi-military victory over liberalism; it would have no truck with civility or fair play; and it made heroes out of outrage-courting lib-fighters like Reagan's communications director Pat Buchanan, the organizer Howard Phillips, and the young Jack Abramoff.

The first and most noticeable characteristic of this new militancy was an air of swaggering truculence. There are, of course, bullies from every walk of life and every political persuasion, but on the right bullying holds a special, exalted position. It is no accident that two of the movement's greatest heroes—Tom DeLay and Oliver North—had the same nickname: "the Hammer."

Jack Abramoff filled this bill perfectly. He had reportedly been something of a bully in high school and had now grown into a "hard-charging" and "dynamic" leader, in the assessment of conservative magazines, an ass-kicking weight lifter who could quiet the commies with his fists if they got out of line. The gangster fetish of his later years is by now familiar to the whole world—his constant references to *The Godfather,* his black trench coat and fedora, his Meyer Lansky memorabilia, the murderer argot that will no doubt serve him and his friends well during their prison years.

Abramoff himself derided the moderates he had ousted from control of the CRs as "wishy-washy country-clubbers" and insisted that he had transformed the organization into an "ideological, well-trained, aggressive, conservative" outfit. "Fighting the Left with a goal of victory" became the official, stated purpose of his College Republican cadres, according to an essay Abramoff wrote for the group's 1983 *Annual Report.* The CRs were "fighting America's last stand," he blustered; they would "defund the enemy wherever possible," one of his lieutenants added. According to the journalist Nina Easton, CR officers had their underlings memorize the gory opening monologue from the movie *Patton,* only with the word "Demo crat" standing in for the word "Nazi." Other young rightists of the period went a step further. J. Michael Waller, the editor of the *Sequent,* a student paper at George Washington University, actually took breaks from red-baiting professors in order to zip down to Central America and hang out with the Nicaraguan Contras and the death-squad faction in El Salvador.

War was the order of the day, from President Reagan's fight with the air-traffic controllers right down to the college campus, where Abramoff became famous for his declaration: "It is not our job to seek peaceful coexistence with the Left. Our job is to remove them from power permanently." War plus revolution, actually. Abramoff liked to describe his CRs as "the sword and shield of the Reagan

Revolution," and in 1984 the young firebrand used his moment at the rostrum of the G.O.P. convention in Dallas to lecture the assembled small-business types on revolutionary theory.

Whether the small-business types grasped it or not, a revolution was indeed under way. Conservative politicians had long served business interests, and so businesspeople had long tended to be conservatives, but now would come a new turn: conservatism *as* business, conservatism as a source of profit for the people Jack Abramoff once referred to as "political entrepreneurs."

In its embryonic form, conservatism-as-industry consisted mainly in peddling right-wing grievances to the like-minded. In those days there were dealers in precious metals who used a towering contempt for liberalism as a sales pitch for gold coins. There were outfits raising money to help beleaguered conservative politicians who were in fact not beleaguered and had not asked for the help. There were anti-union charities and even fake anti-union charities, all of them capitalizing on the keen hatred for labor shared by so many businessmen. "There was so much money ready for conservative organizations in the United States," said Spitz Channell, a freelance conservative fund-raiser later involved in the Iran-Contra scandal, that the problem was finding "ways to spend that money."

Abramoff quickly established himself as an entrepreneur with promise. When the "campus radical" took over as the CRs' chairman in 1981, the group's budget came directly from the Republican National Committee. That had been sufficient for the old CRs, who liked to party and aimed to anger nobody. But Abramoff started to complain about the arrangement in his first year. And he schemed to achieve autonomy. He didn't want "to be the youth arm of the Republican National Committee," his onetime lieutenant David Miner remembers. He wanted

> a very strong, viable organization. And instead of once a year sitting down with the budget director and the political director of the RNC and making a twenty-minute case about why they should donate $100,000 a year to the College Republicans, Jack decided he was going to run the College Republicans just like the Republican National Committee was run: he was going to have his own direct mail list, he was going to have prominent members of Congress sign letters for him, and he was going to raise his own money. That's a pretty bold statement for someone to do at twenty-two years old.

It was so bold, in fact, that it infuriated the RNC officials charged with supervising the college auxiliary. They kicked the CRs out of their building.

No matter. Under Abramoff's leadership, enthusiasm was high, membership soared, and revenues quintupled; what's more, fully 70 percent of that income came from individual donors, dwarfing contributions from the RNC itself. "Jack was a very creative, smart executive," Miner told me. He was "a hell of a CEO."Before Abramoff's name became so poisonous, most College Republicans regarded this era as their finest hour. In 2001, then-chairman Scott Stewart introduced the lobbyist to the CRs' convention as "probably the best national chairman we've ever had."

As entrepreneurs are supposed to do, Abramoff and Norquist opened themselves to the market, setting up incentives for growth and looking for investors outside the parent organization. And what did the College Republicans have to offer these investors, these donors? Outrage. Activism. The right-wing position rammed home with force. To see college kids in the street, chanting the slogans of the hard right—this was a spectacle for which older Republicans, angered by what they had seen in the Sixties, were willing to pay a great price. And Abramoff's CRs delivered, with constant protests in Washington and a series of insulting posters, the most famous of which slyly implied that liberals were communist dupes.

I have managed to unearth a single specimen of direct mail from the CRs' Abramoff period, and it is typical of the genre circa 1983: by turns chummy, frightening, confiding, and apocalyptic. As was common in those days, the letter is signed by an elected official—in this case by New York Representative Jack Kemp, then the best-known conservative in Congress. (Today Kemp advises John McCain on economic policy.) It pleads with the recipient to "dig down deep" for the College Republicans, led by "my good friend Jack Abramoff." And why should Mr. and Mrs. America give to Jack Abramoff's CRs, of all groups? Because, according to Kemp, they are "the most important Republican organization in America today," prepared to do all manner of grassroots electioneering in the upcoming 1984 contest. And why should the reader care about that? Because "our nation is in grave danger of sliding into another depression" should liberals be permitted to resume their tax-and-spend ways. "That's right," Kemp warned. "A depression worse than the so-called Great Depression." Thankfully, though, Jack Abramoff and his "dedicated group of young leaders . . . understand what must be done to return economic prosperity to America."

The larger mechanism CEO Abramoff used to break free from his stodgy, moderate Republican elders was a tax-exempt fund-raising group called the United Students of America Foundation (a.k.a. the USA Foundation, or sometimes just USAF), which was technically nonpartisan but in reality simply added its voice to whatever cause the CRs happened to be pushing. While direct mail solicited funds from individual conservatives, the USA Foundation allowed Abramoff and his crew to go after hefty contributions from the real powers of American conservatism: corporations. And with the support of corporate money came, wouldn't you know it, support for corporate-friendly causes in the world at large.

Going freelance, as Abramoff did with the USA Foundation, soon became a popular career move among the sons of Reagan. Ralph Reed launched a group called Students for America, a Southern outfit designed to bring evangelicals into the conservative mix. Students for a *Better* America, which warred on liberal professors, was set up by Steve Baldwin, also a onetime Abramoff lieutenant. The Conservative Youth Federation of America was launched by Amy Moritz, yet another Abramoff associate. And let us not forget the Conservative Action Foundation, the Conservative Student Support Foundation, and the mysterious Young Conservative Foundation, "America's premier Human Rights organization."

It was through the USA Foundation that Abramoff seems to have discovered the profitable side of politics. The occasion for this discovery was the College Republicans' ongoing war with Ralph Nader's Public Interest Research Groups (PIRGs), student-activist outfits that were set up in the Seventies and funded at most colleges by "activity fees" that all students were required to pay unless they checked a box on a form. This was the point on which the CRs challenged them, insisting on campus after campus that it was "sinful and tyrannical" to compel students to fund an obviously political organization.

Like other Nader groups, the student PIRGs were something of a nuisance for business, and at some point it apparently occurred to Abramoff or Norquist that defunding and thus "killing" campus PIRG chapters was a service for which the targeted businesses ought to be paying. So the young entrepreneurs of the USA Foundation got out there and sold themselves as political hit men. According to one 1986 study, by the journalist Allan Nairn, the group managed to collect tribute from canning and bottling companies, two oil companies, an electric company (PIRGs were then working to set up utility watchdog groups), Amway, Coors, an assortment of San Francisco landlords worried about the possibility of rent control, and the Campbell Soup Company, which paid the USA Foundation to undermine a campus support group for a migrant farmworkers' union. It was pug nacity for pay.

The USA Foundation's motto was "Promoting a free market of ideas on the nation's campuses," and here we encounter yet another of the Washington right's signature lines. Like so many conservative ideas—anticommunism, for example—it sounds fine at first. A "free market of ideas" sounds like "free inquiry" or a "free exchange of ideas," an environment in which hypotheses are tested and bad ones are weeded out while good ones go on to earn the respect of the community of scholars. But this is not what the phrase means at all. Markets do not determine the objective merit of things, only their price, which is to say, their merit in the eyes of large corporations and the very wealthy.

The point, and the profit, was in getting the people with money to understand which ideas served their common interests, which ones didn't, and then to act together as a class—supporting the good ideas and crushing the liberal ones. This was a plan with legs: When I spoke to Grover Norquist in 2006, he was still insisting that businesses had to be instructed on big-picture thinking, on the amazing returns to be realized through funding conservatism. By then, of course, Grover Norquist was no longer some campus activist; he was the architect of the most effective defund-the-left program Washington has ever seen. And his old friend Jack Abramoff was on his way to jail.

Side by side with the Entrepreneur in those days stood another great conservative hero: the Freedom Fighter, a ragged warrior who had, according to myth, spontaneously taken up arms against communism in Third World countries around the globe. American conservatives came to love these freedom fighters intensely, and for a simple reason. These tough anticommunists in faraway lands validated the conservatives' most cherished fantasies of the Sixties turned right-side up. The freedom fighters proved it: Reagan's revolution was for real.

Traditional conservatives had generally regarded anticommunist guerrilla movements as necessary evils, doing important if ugly work. The transforming fire of Reaganism, however, turned all such cutthroats and mercenaries into patriots. It was our guys who were the heroic underdogs now, disrespected and ill-supplied, going up against the high-tech, organization-men monsters of the Soviet Union—and, of course, its liberal proxies here in the United States.

The peerless darling of the freedom-fighter fan club was Jonas Savimbi, the charismatic Angolan guerrilla leader whose every utterance seemed to strike young Eighties conservatives as a timeless profundity. Angola had been one of the very last countries in Africa to be freed from colonial domination, but, unlike seemingly every other "national liberator" in the preceding decades, Savimbi was not a communist. In Angola, the communists were the ones who grabbed power in the capital as soon as the Europeans left; Savimbi, who fought them with the backing of the apartheid government in South Africa, supposedly believed in free enterprise and balanced budgets.

Conservatives were smitten with this self-titled general who struggled for free markets in his remote land. They fell for Savimbi as romantically, and as guilelessly, as Sixties radicals once did for Che, Ho, and Huey. Savimbi was "one of the few authentic heroes of our time," roared Jeane Kirkpatrick, queen of the neocons, when she introduced him at the 1986 Conservative Political Action Conference. Grover Norquist followed the great man around his camp in Angola, preparing magazine articles for Savimbi's signature. Jack Abramoff made a movie about Savimbi, depicting him as a tougher, African version of Gandhi. Even Savimbi's capital—the remote camp called "Jamba"—was described in conservative literature with elevated language such as "Savimbi's Kingdom."

In truth, Savimbi's main achievement was to keep going, for nearly thirty years, a civil war that made Angola one of the worst places on earth—its population impoverished, its railroads and highways and dams in ruins, its countryside strewn with land mines by the millions, even its elephant herds wiped out, their tusks hacked off to raise funds for his army.

This was the man the rebel right chose for the starring role in one of the strangest spectacles in American political history, a media event designed to cement conservatism's identification with revolution. The organizer was Jack Abramoff; the place was Jamba; the model, I am told, was Woodstock—only a right-wing version, with guerrillas instead of rock bands. Every kind of freedom fighter was there, joining hands in territory liberated by arms from a Soviet client regime. There were Nicaraguan Contras, some Afghan mujahedeen, an American tycoon—and they all got together at Savimbi's hideout.

This "rumble in the jungle," as skeptics called it, came to pass in June of 1985. Of course, bringing it off required considerable assistance from Savimbi's South African patrons. Nobody else even knew how to *find* Jamba.

Since these freedom fighters had no actual issues to discuss—no trade agreements or mutual-defense plans or anything—they signed the Jamba Declaration, a bit of high-flown folderol written by Grover Norquist that aimed for solemnity but sounded more like the work of a fifth-grader who has been forced to memorize the Gettysburg Address and the Declaration of Independence and has got them all jumbled up somehow.

Jamba was meant as a celebration of *freedom,* a word revered by Americans generally and a term of enormous significance to conservatives in particular. Yet as freedom's embodiment Abramoff had chosen a terrorist: Jonas Savimbi, the leader of an armed cult. To fill the main supporting role in this great freedom-fest, meanwhile, the organizers turned to apartheid South Africa, a place where only a small, correctly complexioned percentage of the population possessed even the most basic democratic rights.

And here we encounter one of the right's great lost causes. You don't have to dig very deep into the conservative literature of the Eighties before you hit apartheid South Africa. Today the issue makes conservatives uncomfortable, naturally, and few of them will own up to the passion with which they once worked to rationalize that government or to vilify its foes. But in those days, South Africa's agonizing racial problems, its prosperous but beleaguered business community, and its stout defiance of all things communist made it a potent symbol for American conservatives: South Africa was essentially like us, and yet the liberals, with their sanctions and divestment strategies, with their airy do-gooder moralism, were prepared to sell out this loyal friend, just as they had sold out so many others.

As it happened, Jack Abramoff had visited South Africa in 1983 to meet with student leaders, presumably including Russel Crystal, who headed an energetic right-wing outfit on that nation's campuses. Crystal was a sort of South African doppelgänger to Abramoff, echoing not only the American's tactical thinking but his combative style as well. In the early Eighties, Crystal's group declared "all-out war" on its campus adversaries, who, he said, were "undermining the will of the Western world"; on one occasion his followers reportedly threatened a peaceful left-wing demonstration with baseball bats. Just like the College Republicans, Crystal's student organization spent heavily, and Crystal boasted about its financial "support from the business community."

One month after Jamba, Crystal's student group hosted a second right-wing Woodstock, bringing together conservative college students from around the world. The event was called "Youth for Freedom," and a "Dear Delegate" letter given to each participant explained its purpose: It was 1985, the U.N.'s "International Youth Year," and high-minded youth congresses were happening all over the world—most of them "under the leadership of . . . communist front organisations . . . to propagate their own marxist/leninist agenda." The duty of the righteous was obvious: "to gather the true defenders of liberty and freedom"; to ponder "the security and prosperity of the free world"; and to draft a statement to which "conservative students worldwide" might rally. Norquist, Abramoff,Although Abramoff is listed as the very last speaker on the official "Youth for Freedom" program, none of the attendees I talked to remember seeing him there. and a gaggle of College Republicans made up the American contingent. Color was added by a representative of the German extreme right. (Bonus points: he had been a U-boat captain during World War II.) The delegates listened to a denunciation of divestment. They received an expensively printed booklet about the martial and philosophical achievements of Jonas Savimbi. After the conference, the kids were given a treat: some of the "youth for freedom" got to go to a military base to see a riot-control demonstration.

Coverage of the conclave in the South African press focused on the lavishness of the proceedings and the great expense involved in flying everyone to Johannesburg. The participants stayed in the finest hotel in the city, and the conference provided a squad of interpreters and a video crew to document it all. Obviously, Russel Crystal's tiny student group couldn't have paid for all of this by itself, and Crystal himself kept mum about the financing. But other freedom-youths confirmed that the gathering had been at least partly funded by South African corporate concerns, in the now-familiar political-entrepreneur pattern: "The business community in South Africa is very enthused about any face-lift possibility that they can gain," one of the organizers told Allan Nairn.

Out of the Youth for Freedom conference came an organization called Liberty and Democracy International, which didn't last long, perhaps because of the neck-snapping contradiction between its dreamy title and its South African reality. Out of that organization, in 1986, came the International Freedom Foundation—the IFF—the strangest scheme hatched to that point by the sons of Reagan for bringing the power of money to bear on politics and the world of ideas.

Not one of the many former IFFers I contacted, either in the United States or in South Africa, would consent to an interview, but we do know the most basic facts about the group. According to the official report of the South African Truth and Reconciliation Commission, the duties of the IFF included supporting Jonas Savimbi and fighting trade sanctions against South Africa. The IFF's head office was in Washington, where Abramoff served as executive director. But the shots were called by the organization's South African branch, headed by Russel Crystal. There was an office in London and, eventually, one in West Germany. We also know that the IFF was an expensive proposition and that the apartheid government spent millions of dollars propping it up. The group hosted speakers, conferences, and presentations; it published several magazines and a flock of newsletters; its principals constantly traveled the globe, spreading their toxic trinity of "Liberty, Security, Prosperity."

The Washington branch of the IFF, it seems, was particularly successful at courting politicians. The group's "advisory board" listed, among others, Senator Jesse Helms and Representatives Phil Crane, "B-1 Bob" Dornan, James Inhofe (a stout family-values supporter), and "Buz" Lukens (an egregious family-values violator). The group also tried their hand at influence-buying. In 1987, the IFF's Washington office requested $450,000 from South Africa in order to buy a jet plane for the presidential campaign of Jack Kemp, then the idol of the conservative movement. According to internal IFF documents, this bauble would be an investment sufficient to make Abramoff's gang "the 'kitchen cabinet' types of the Kemp administration." The South Africans turned the proposal down, realizing even then what a long shot Kemp was.

The IFF made no direct attempt to justify apartheid, for the simple reason that racism as a philosophy of government was flatly irredeemable in the West. Instead the IFF aimed to tarnish apartheid's enemies, "to paint the ANC as a proj ect of the international department of the Soviet Communist Party." This was merely a large-scale replay of the political entrepreneurship we saw at the USA Foundation, with Jack and the gang yet again hiring themselves out to a wealthy client to perform a hit on a troublesome left-wing group. High points in this campaign included hearings by the House Republican Study Committee in 1987 to blame "the plight of the children of South Africa" on the commie-terrorist ANC; reports playing up the ANC's commie-derived taste for atrocities against kids; newspaper ads designed to throw cold water on Nelson Mandela during his triumphant visit to America in 1990; and an endless war on Ted Kennedy, a leading proponent of the 1986 sanctions against South Africa.

The real, confessed éminence grise behind the IFF was South Africa's infamous "superspy" Craig Williamson, a man whose bloody escapades deserve an entire volume in the annals of Cold War espionage. Williamson infiltrated South Africa's main leftist student group in the Seventies and rose to its leadership; he used the connections thus made to assist in the imprisonment and murder of the movement's other leaders. A respected South African historian, asked for his opinion of the man, said simply, "Craig Williamson was the scum of the twentieth century. He murdered friends of mine. I spit on the ground he walks on."

When the IFF's true identity was exposed in 1995, the Americans questioned by the media denied any knowledge of its ugly provenance. In most cases this was plausible enough; after all, the basic principle of a clandestine operation is secrecy. But Jack Abramoff almost certainly knew. Still, he denied it—"categorically," he exclaimed—when the truth came out. Plus, he had an explanation for all the bad press: "It's pay-back time in South Africa."

The single biggest scandal of the Eighties resulted from a confluence of the two great conservative themes I have been describing: the "freedom fighter" mentality and the cult of political entrepreneurship.

The outlines of the Iran-Contra story are well known. President Reagan's CIA was waging a "secret" war against the Sandinista government of Nicaragua; the Democratic Congress understandably objected, as we were technically at peace with that nation, and, in 1983, cut off funds to the CIA-backed Contras. Over at the National Security Council, however, Marine Lieutenant-Colonel Oliver North came up with a scheme to get money to the Contras anyway, using a network of private donors, weapons sales to Iran, and private supply operations. He also organized behind-the-scenes efforts to lobby Congress to change its mind.

Quite early on in the annals of Iran-Contra our pioneering political entrepreneurs make their inevitable appearance. Jack Abramoff crops up in North's notebook for February 14, 1985, his name misspelled but the beginnings of a great lobbyist unmistakable. On March 26, Abramoff showed up on a list of people helping North to influence the upcoming Contra-aid vote in Congress. Later that day, Abramoff phoned North and told him that a number of "votes" were available in exchange for some or other favor.

We do not ordinarily remember Iran-Contra for the business opportunities it generated, but in the long, winding history of conservatism-as-industry it remains a particularly instructive chapter. The aforementioned political entrepreneur Spitz Channell, for example, sensed the Contras' potential early on and used them to become the most successful fund-raiser in all of Washington, circa 1985. Channell's marks were conservative widows; he made his pitches in person, often using a scary slide show put together by Oliver North about the dangers of Nicaraguan communism. Not only did his donors reap tax write-offs by giving to one of the "nonprofit" groups Channell had set up but they sometimes got to meet President Reagan too, a favor the fund-raiser arranged simply by throwing some change to one of the president's former aides.

None of this put much money into the pockets of the Contras, though. On the right, the fund-raiser typically prospers, even if the cause does not. And Channell was a professional; he later admitted that he became interested in Nicaragua only after he noticed how the subject ticked off rich folks. He proceeded to take the customary profiteering to dizzy entrepreneurial heights. Of the $12 million raked in by Channell's empire of fund-raising organs in 1985 and 1986, it is estimated that only $2.7 million actually made it to the Contras. Huge sums were diverted to Channell's friends, his lover, and his friends' lovers. All the middlemen between here and Managua took a cut, too.

Iran-Contra was the scandal with the Midas touch, and it continued to rain money on the faithful even after the whole rotten operation had been rolled up. One day in July 1987, as the Dem ocrats in Congress screeched hysterically about the White House and its illegal foreign policy, Ollie North put on his uniform, stood before the cameras, raised his hand, and summoned up a backlash that ultimately crushed the liberals and brought a flood of prosperity to the political entrepreneurs of the right.

Jack Abramoff's IFF, for example, started selling copies of an Ollie North videotape made up of a slide show that was almost certainly the one Spitz Channell had used to scare his dotards, advertising it with a photo of the stern-faced Marine testifying before "the so-called Iran/Contra congressional committee." Oliver North videotapes eventually became something of an industry unto themselves, but the one made by Abramoff, titled *Telling It Like It Is,* is almost certainly the only bit of filmed entertainment ever to be dedicated "to the memory of William J. Casey," the CIA director made famous by his unabashed contempt for Congress.

The trade in Olliana boomed for years, as the persecuted patriot was indicted for his crimes and came to require a legal-defense fund (and also, apparently, a host of fake legal-defense funds). Jerry Falwell compared Ollie to Jesus Christ. There were Oliver North keychains and pocketknives and T-shirts and eventually even a TV show in which Ollie told America the secrets of war. There was the usual round of plunder, as funds raised to help Ollie stayed with the fund-raisers instead. And inevitably there was "Ollie, Inc.," as the man himself went into the nonprofit direct-mail business. By 1994, when he ran for a Senate seat in Virginia, Oliver North had become the most successful political fund-raiser in the land, bringing in some $20 million over the course of his campaign. Remarkably, he lost anyway.

Prodigious though they may seem, these acts of retail profiteering were minuscule compared with the colossal entrepreneurial gambit that the Iran-Contra investigation revealed. The insiders called it "the Enterprise": private money, raised through the sale of government favors and property, would go to fund private armies of "freedom fighters" operating overseas. The ultimate aim of the Enterprise, as envisioned by CIA Director Casey, was privatization on the grandest scale imaginable: the construction of a foreign-policy instrument that was free from the meddling of Congress, financed by sales of weapons and another precious commodity that government had in abundance but had hitherto been reluctant to market—access.

The Enterprise eventually fell apart under congressional scrutiny, but fifteen years later this very bad idea was back again in even more grandiose form: a vast selling-off of government favors to those willing to fund the conservative movement, a wholesale transfer of government responsibilities to private-sector contractors, and even private armies, unaccountable to Congress or to anyone else.

Today industry conservatism includes specialists in dozens of fields. There are professionals and amateurs; those who do it because they're paid to do it and those who do it because their eyes have seen the glory of the coming of the Entrepreneur. It includes establishment firms and feisty start-ups, megacontractors taking billions to do work that the government used to do itself for far less, young men with a nice smile and a single client— who just wants to do a little clear-cutting out West somewhere. In conservative circles you encounter entrepreneurs both formally and casually, at carefully programmed events laying out the opportunities for profit opened up by Hurricane Katrina, or in conversation at a banquet celebrating some right-wing anniversary or other. At one such event in 2004, waiting for the presentation of a "Charlton Heston commemorative firearm," I made the backslapping acquaintance of a freelance motivational speaker who, upon discovering that one of my tablemates was an officer of the Transportation Security Administration, immediately sought his confirmation that “we’re gonna privatize that, right?”

For some in winger Washington this is an idealistic business, but what gives it power and longevity is that it is a *profitable* business. I mean this not as polemic but as a statement of fact. Washington swarms with conservative ideologues not because conservatives particularly like the place but because there is an entire industry here that supports these people—an industry subsidized by the nation’s largest corporations and its richest families, and the government too. We are all familiar with the flagship organizations—Cato, Heritage, AEI—but the industry extends far beyond these, encompassing numerous magazines and literally hundreds of lobbying firms. There is even a daily newspaper—the *Washington Times*—published strictly for the movement’s benefit, a propaganda sheet whose distortions are so obvious and so alien that it puts one in mind of those official party organs one encounters when traveling in authoritarian countries.

There are political strategists, pollsters, campaign managers, trainers of youth, image consultants, makers of TV commercials, revolutionaries-for-hire, and, of course, direct-mail specialists who still launch their million-letter raids on the mailboxes of the heartland. Remember the guy who wrote all those sputtering diatribes for your college newspaper? Chances are he’s in D.C. now, thinking big thoughts from an endowed chair, or churning out more of the brilliant usual for one of the movement’s many blogs. The campus wingnut whose fulminations on the Red Menace so amused my friends and me at the University of Virginia, for example, resurfaced here as a columnist for the *Washington Times* before transitioning inevitably into consultancy. A friend of mine who went to Georgetown recently recalled for me the capers of *his* campus wingnut, whom he had completely forgotten until the guy made headlines as the lead culprit in a minor 2004 scandal called “Memogate.” Later he worked for the U.S. Embassy in Baghdad, teaching democratic civics to Iraqi politicians.

There is so much money in conservatism these days that Karl Rove rightly boasts, “We can now go to students at Harvard and say, ‘There is now a secure retirement plan for Republican operatives.’” The young people who, like Jack Abramoff before them, have answered conservatism’s call over the past three decades were obeying their conscience, perhaps, but they were also making a canny career move.

Canny career moves are just about all we can expect from conservative government these days: tax breaks for wealthy benefactors, wars started and maintained for the benefit of American industry, fat contracts granted to the clients of the right consultant. Like Bush and Reagan before him, John McCain is a self-proclaimed outsider, but should he win in November he will merely bring us more of the same: an executive branch fed by, if not actually made up of, lobbyists and other angry, righteous profiteers. Washington itself will remain what it has been—not a Babylon that corrupts our pure-hearted right-wingers but the very seat of their Industry Conservatism, constantly seething and effervescing, with tens of thousands of individuals coming and going, each avidly piling up his own tidy pile but between them engaged in an awesome common project.

Take a step back, reader, and see what they have wrought.

DOCUMENT 2 ENDS

DOCUMENT 3

From :https://web.archive.org/web/20060525185408/http://ricksincerethoughts.blogspot.com:80/2005/07/lost-in-stars.html

Wednesday, July 13, 2005

Lost in the Stars

This afternoon I received a telephone call from James Verini, a journalist working on a story for LA Weekly about a think-tank I worked for in the early 1990s, the International Freedom Foundation (IFF). Since the IFF has been defunct for a decade now, it seemed odd that a reporter would be interested in it. The hook is that one of the IFF's founders was Jack Abramoff, the Washington lobbyist now in hot water for alleged fraudulent activities involving several clients, in particular some Indian tribes. I told Mr. Verini that my time at IFF came after Abramoff's involvement in the organization and that, in fact, I had not met Abramoff (who may actually have remained on the IFF's board of directors but who had no role in its day-to-day activities).

My first contact with the IFF came in 1989, when I was asked to write a book under contract. That book was published in 1990 under the title Sowing the Seeds of Free Enterprise. Later, after working for almost a year in the public affairs office of the Center for Strategic and International Studies (CSIS), I was asked to apply for the new position of Director of African Affairs at IFF. I jumped at the chance, since I really did not like working at CSIS because it was bureaucratic and unwieldy and my job there was not intellectually challenging, while IFF had a small staff (I think about 15 at the time) and I was promised a great deal of autonomy in my research.

I edited a newsletter called Sub-Saharan Monitor (not the publication now available on line) and later was promoted to Director of International Economic Affairs. When Mark Franz left IFF to work for the Bush 41 re-election campaign, I took his job as editor of the quarterly journal, terra nova. I really enjoyed editing terra nova: it was, as Robert Bork put it in another context, "an intellectual feast." I was able to interact with scholars from around the world, commission articles on interesting subjects, combine articles and book reviews so that they fit a common theme, and try to market the product to readers in Africa, Europe, and the Americas. It was a dream job for a writer/editor like myself, and one that I would love to replicate some day.

I explained that I had left IFF after the 1992 election when a number of staff, including myself, were laid off as fundraising faltered. Verini asked if this was because a Democratic administration was coming into office, but I told him that it was more because the end of the Cold War had caused funds to dry up for anti-Communist organizations like the International Freedom Foundation.

He asked if I was aware that the IFF had been funded by the South African government. (He characterized it as a "front" for the apartheid government.) I said no, that I only became aware of that fact when I googled IFF about six years ago and discovered that files had been uncovered during the Truth and Reconciliation Commission's investigations. In fact, while I was at IFF, it seemed we were always scrambling for money, trying to find new and bigger funding sources. That was hardly the mark of an organization that was underwritten by a foreign government.

So far as I know, no one at the IFF at the time, including chairman Duncan Sellars or executive director Jeff Pandin, was aware of any underwriting by the South African government, the SADF, or South African intelligence services. The source of the money, such as it was, was hidden, and it is easy, in hindsight, to conclude that the money had been laundered quite successfully. Upon reflection, when I learned about the IFF's ultimate funding source a few years back, it occurred to me that the South African money must have been channeled through several European donors to IFF, who we all thought were primarily anti-communist in their motivation, none of whom had any apparent ties to South Africa or its government. (One, I remember, was described as an elderly Belgian businessman. And, no, I never learned his name.)

In his questions, Mr. Verini suggested that the International Freedom Foundation was a "pro-apartheid" organization. I told him this was a mischaracterization, that in fact the IFF was critical of the apartheid government, which we viewed as "ethnic socialism." (This view was best expressed, at the time, by George Mason University economist Walter E. Williams in his book, South Africa's War Against Capitalism, which I believe I reviewed in the predecessor to terra nova, International Freedom Review.) While the IFF was, in fact, opposed to the African National Congress, that was never equivalent to being in favor of apartheid.

I explained that we staff members -- researchers, writers, editors -- never had any pressure put on us to say anything in particular. Far from a propaganda front, the IFF provided us with free rein to pursue research topics. Naturally, those of us who worked for IFF shared a certain philosophy -- free-market oriented (in my case, libertarian) and anti-communist. No constraints were placed upon us in terms of what not to write about, and no direction was given about specific topics to pursue. There was no doubt, of course, that part of our job was to refute disinformation emanating from the ANC and pro-communist groups in southern Africa. Our overarching aim was to promote liberal democracy and free enterprise as an alternative to both communism and apartheid. This was typical of conservative and libertarian think tanks and advocacy groups in the closing years of the Cold War.

Verini asked what my views were on South African sanctions. I told him that I had testified before U.S. congressional committees during the 1980s, expressing my view that sanctions were an ineffective policy tool, and that I opposed the embargo against Cuba and sanctions against Libya for the same reason. (Believe me, such consistency was not common in the Reagan years. In fact, during my testimony at one hearing, Howard Wolpe, then-chairman of the House subcommittee on Africa, congratulated me for my consistency, albeit with a puzzled look on his face.) I also told Mr. Verini that my views have not changed, that I still believe sanctions are wrong-headed and ill-advised.

After our initial conversation, Verini called back to ask whether, during my time at the IFF, I had had any contact with the Bush administration. I told him nothing more than routine meetings with State Department officials, ambassadors, and the like, typical for anyone who works for a Washington think tank.

I did add this anecdote, however:

In the fall of 1992, I was working as the chief foreign policy advisor to Libertarian Party presidential candidate Andre Marrou and his running mate, my friend, Nancy Lord. My predecessor as editor of terra nova, Mark Franz, was working for the Bush re-election campaign. One day in September or October, Mark called me at work to ask me for some advice about how to frame a campaign issue. In the course of our conversation, I said to him, "You know, it's nice to have the luxury of knowing you're working for a presidential candidate who is going to lose." Mark responded ruefully: "I know exactly what you mean, Rick."

DOCUMENT 3 ENDS

David Teacher adds: See above and footnote 519 on the IFF and Franz.

IFF ANNEX ENDS.

DOCUMENTARY ANNEX

The reader will find below various internal documents and publications from several of the groups mentioned above; these are arranged chronologically to highlight the diversity of actions undertaken throughout Europe at any given point in time. Some of the documents are reproduced from the Young European Federalists (1979), Péan (1984), Mungo (1985) and *IGfM* (1987); others, notably those written by Damman, have not been published before.

HOTEL
De Bilderberg
Oosterbeek

Hotel De Bilderberg, Utrechtseweg 261, 6862 AK Oosterbeek, Tel: 085-340843, Fax: 085-334651

Hotel De Bilderberg, een locatie die vaak wordt gekozen vanwege de rustige en centrale ligging en het riante bos- en heuvellandschap rondom het hotel. Het hotel is gelegen in Oosterbeek en op slechts 15 minuten van Arnhem. Alle 144 kamers zijn voorzien van bad/douche en toilet, TV en weksysteem. Verkoopvergaderingen, symposia, workshops, seminars, incentive-programma's of feesten... De Bilderberg heeft de juiste ambiance. Vanaf minimaal 10 deelnemers zijn er verschillende congres-arrangementen. Dit kan uitgebreid worden met diverse sportattracties en zeer uitgebreid entertainment. Hotel De Bilderberg heeft een heel scala aan faciliteiten zoals zwembad, sauna/solarium, tennisbaan, fitnessruimte, biljart etc. Audiovisuele middelen verzorgen wij graag voor u. Hotel De Bilderberg beschikt over een ruime parkeergelegenheid en is goed bereikbaar.

Zalen	U-vorm	carré	school-opstelling	theater	banqueting	afmetingen
Bilderberg	46	50	86	200		152 m²
Bilderberg deel I	33	30	60	160		92 m²
Bilderberg deel II	23	24	30	60		62 m²
Hertog	20	24	22	40		52.5 m²
Hevea	20	24	22	40		49 m²
Gelderland	30	32	32	60		80 m²
Oosterbeek	30	32	32	60		75 m²
Restaurant 1					180	
Restaurant 2					200	

bbg
BILDERBERG GROE
HOTELS & RESTAURANTS

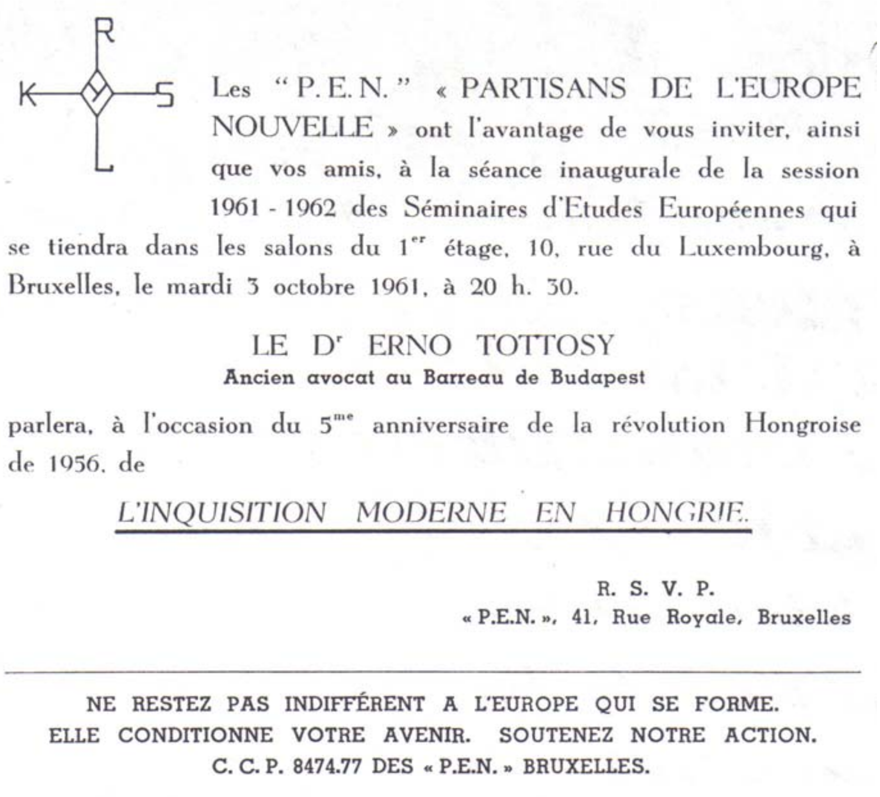

Les "P. E. N." « PARTISANS DE L'EUROPE NOUVELLE » ont l'avantage de vous inviter, ainsi que vos amis, à la séance inaugurale de la session 1961 - 1962 des Séminaires d'Etudes Européennes qui se tiendra dans les salons du 1^{er} étage, 10, rue du Luxembourg, à Bruxelles, le mardi 3 octobre 1961, à 20 h. 30.

LE D^{r} ERNO TOTTOSY

Ancien avocat au Barreau de Budapest

parlera, à l'occasion du 5^{me} anniversaire de la révolution Hongroise de 1956, de

L'INQUISITION MODERNE EN HONGRIE.

R. S. V. P.

« P.E.N. », 41, Rue Royale, Bruxelles

NE RESTEZ PAS INDIFFÉRENT A L'EUROPE QUI SE FORME.
ELLE CONDITIONNE VOTRE AVENIR. SOUTENEZ NOTRE ACTION.
C. C. P. 8474.77 DES « P.E.N. » BRUXELLES.

Below: report on organisations for European Union in Belgium written in February 1962 by Florimond Damman who notes that CEDI Belgium has considerably expanded its operations since 1961 with major funding and that the influence of Coudenhove Kalergi within the PEU remains very great.

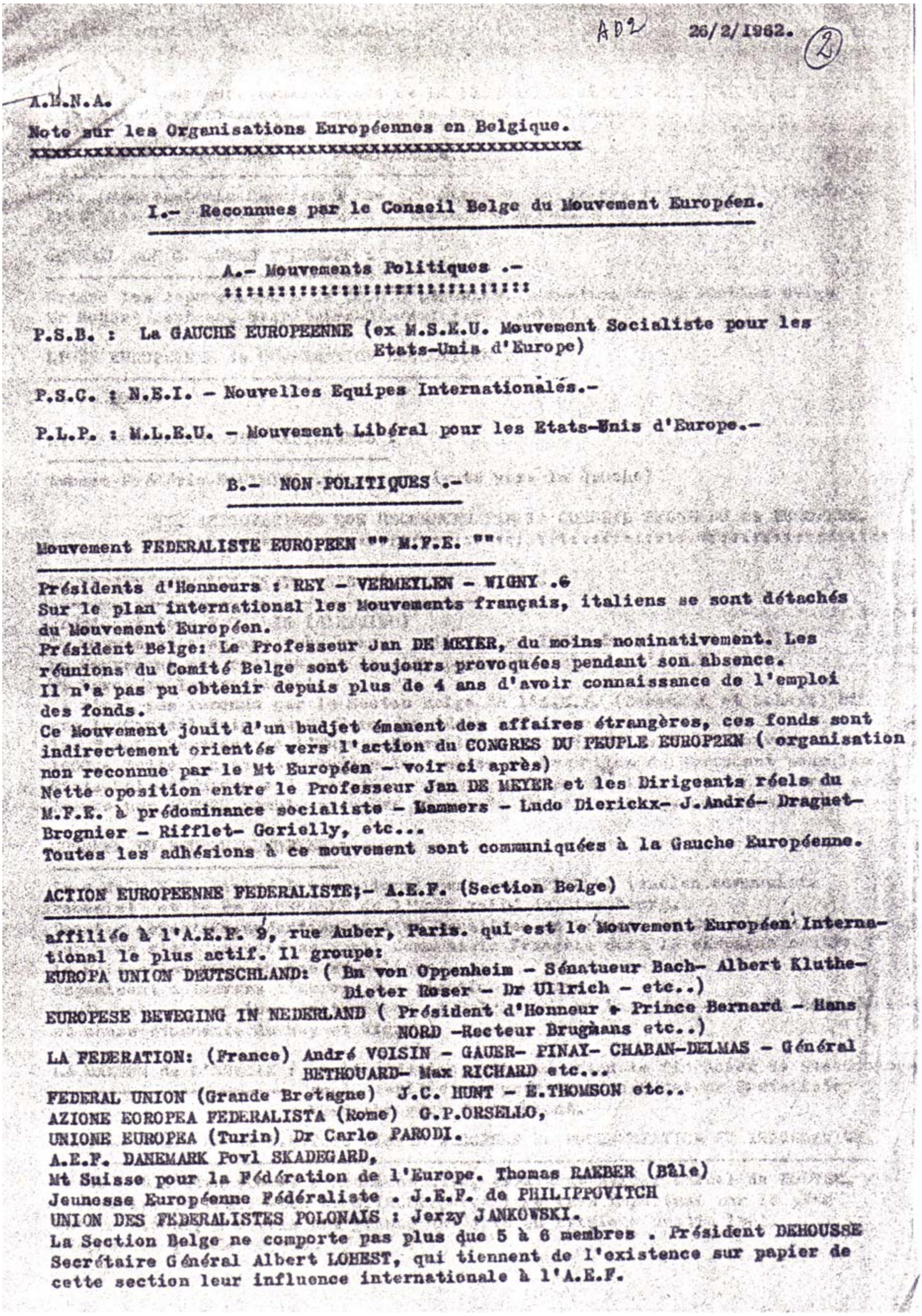

AD2 26/2/1962. ②

A.E.N.A.

Note sur les Organisations Européennes en Belgique.

I.- Reconnues par le Conseil Belge du Mouvement Européen.

A.- Mouvements Politiques .-

P.S.B. : La GAUCHE EUROPEENNE (ex M.S.E.U. Mouvement Socialiste pour les Etats-Unis d'Europe)

P.S.C. : N.E.I. - Nouvelles Equipes Internationales.-

P.L.P. : M.L.E.U. - Mouvement Libéral pour les Etats-Unis d'Europe.-

B.- NON POLITIQUES .-

Mouvement FEDERALISTE EUROPEEN "" M.F.E. ""

Présidents d'Honneurs : REY - VERMEYLEN - WIGNY .6
Sur le plan international les Mouvements français, italiens se sont détachés du Mouvement Européen.
Président Belge: Le Professeur Jan DE MEYER, du moins nominativement. Les réunions du Comité Belge sont toujours provoquées pendant son absence.
Il n'a pas pu obtenir depuis plus de 4 ans d'avoir connaissance de l'emploi des fonds.
Ce Mouvement jouit d'un budjet émanent des affaires étrangères, ces fonds sont indirectement orientés vers l'action du CONGRES DU PEUPLE EUROP2EN (organisation non reconnue par le Mt Européen - voir ci après)
Nette oposition entre le Professeur Jan DE MEYER et les Dirigeants réels du M.F.E. à prédominance socialiste - Mammers - Ludo Dierickx- J.André- Draguet- Brognier - Rifflet- Gorielly, etc...
Toutes les adhésions à ce mouvement sont communiquées à la Gauche Européenne.

ACTION EUROPEENNE FEDERALISTE;- A.E.F. (Section Belge)

affiliée à l'A.E.F. 9, rue Auber, Paris. qui est le Mouvement Européen International le plus actif. Il groupe:
EUROPA UNION DEUTSCHLAND: (Bn von Oppenheim - Sénatueur Bach- Albert Kluthe- Dieter Roser - Dr Ullrich - etc..)
EUROPESE BEWEGING IN NEDERLAND (Président d'Honneur + Prince Bernard - Hans NORD -Recteur Brugmans etc..)
LA FEDERATION: (France) André VOISIN - GAUER- PINAY- CHABAN-DELMAS - Général BETHOUARD- Max RICHARD etc...
FEDERAL UNION (Grande Bretagne) J.C. HUNT - E.THOMSON etc..
AZIONE EOROPEA FEDERALISTA (Rome) G.P.ORSELLO,
UNIONE EUROPEA (Turin) Dr Carlo PARODI.
A.E.F. DANEMARK Povl SKADEGARD,
Mt Suisse pour la Fédération de l'Europe. Thomas RAEBER (Bâle)
Jeunesse Européenne Fédéraliste . J.E.F. de PHILIPPOVITCH
UNION DES FEDERALISTES POLONAIS : Jerzy JANKOWSKI.
La Section Belge ne comporte pas plus que 5 à 6 membres . Président DEHOUSSE Secrétaire Général Albert LOHEST, qui tiennent de l'existence sur papier de cette section leur influence internationale à l'A.E.F.

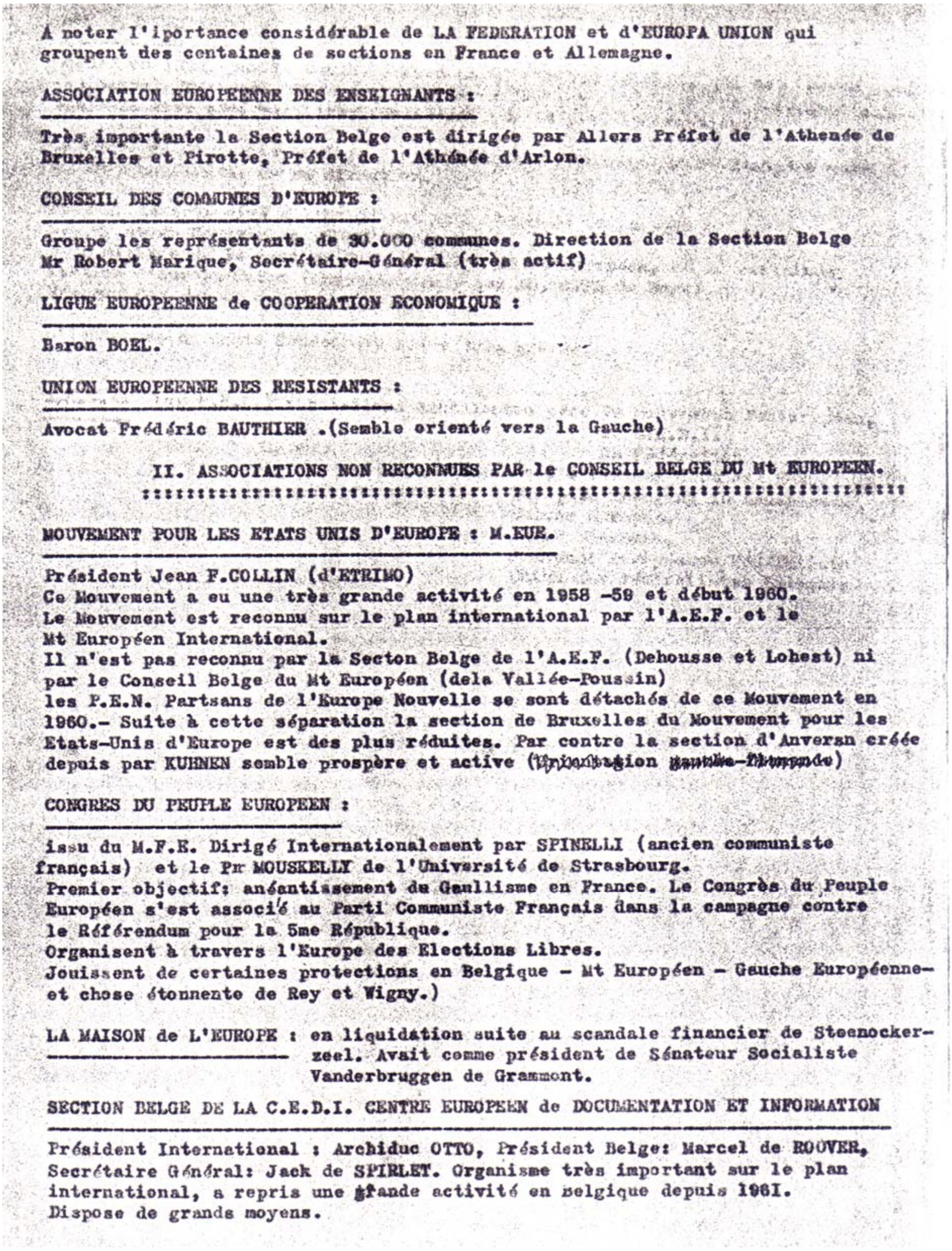

A noter l'iportance considérable de LA FEDERATION et d'EUROPA UNION qui groupent des centaines de sections en France et Allemagne.

ASSOCIATION EUROPEENNE DES ENSEIGNANTS :

Très importante la Section Belge est dirigée par Allers Préfet de l'Athenée de Bruxelles et Pirotte, Préfet de l'Athénée d'Arlon.

CONSEIL DES COMMUNES D'EUROPE :

Groupe les représentants de 30.000 communes. Direction de la Section Belge Mr Robert Marique, Secrétaire-Général (très actif)

LIGUE EUROPEENNE de COOPERATION ECONOMIQUE :

Baron BOEL.

UNION EUROPEENNE DES RESISTANTS :

Avocat Frédéric BAUTHIER .(Semble orienté vers la Gauche)

II. ASSOCIATIONS NON RECONNUES PAR le CONSEIL BELGE DU Mt EUROPEEN.

MOUVEMENT POUR LES ETATS UNIS D'EUROPE : M.EUR.

Président Jean F.COLLIN (d'ETRIMO)
Ce Mouvement a eu une très grande activité en 1958 -59 et début 1960.
Le Mouvement est reconnu sur le plan international par l'A.E.F. et le Mt Européen International.
Il n'est pas reconnu par la Secton Belge de l'A.E.F. (Dehousse et Lohest) ni par le Conseil Belge du Mt Européen (dela Vallée-Poussin)
les P.E.N. Partsans de l'Europe Nouvelle se sont détachés de ce Mouvement en 1960.- Suite à cette séparation la section de Bruxelles du Mouvement pour les Etats-Unis d'Europe est des plus réduites. Par contre la section d'Anversn créée depuis par KUHNEN semble prospère et active (Infiltration gauche-flamande)

CONGRES DU PEUPLE EUROPEEN :

issu du M.F.E. Dirigé Internationalement par SPINELLI (ancien communiste français) et le Pr MOUSKELLY de l'Université de Strasbourg.
Premier objectif: anéantissement du Gaullisme en France. Le Congrès du Peuple Européen s'est associé au Parti Communiste Français dans la campagne contre le Référendum pour la 5me République.
Organisent à travers l'Europe des Elections Libres.
Jouissent de certaines protections en Belgique - Mt Européen - Gauche Européenne- et chose étonnente de Rey et Wigny.)

LA MAISON de L'EUROPE : en liquidation suite au scandale financier de Steenockerzeel. Avait comme président de Sénateur Socialiste Vanderbruggen de Grammont.

SECTION BELGE DE LA C.E.D.I. CENTRE EUROPEEN de DOCUMENTATION ET INFORMATION

Président International : Archiduc OTTO, Président Belge: Marcel de ROOVER, Secrétaire Général: Jack de SPIRLET. Organisme très important sur le plan international, a repris une grande activité en Belgique depuis 1961.
Dispose de grands moyens.

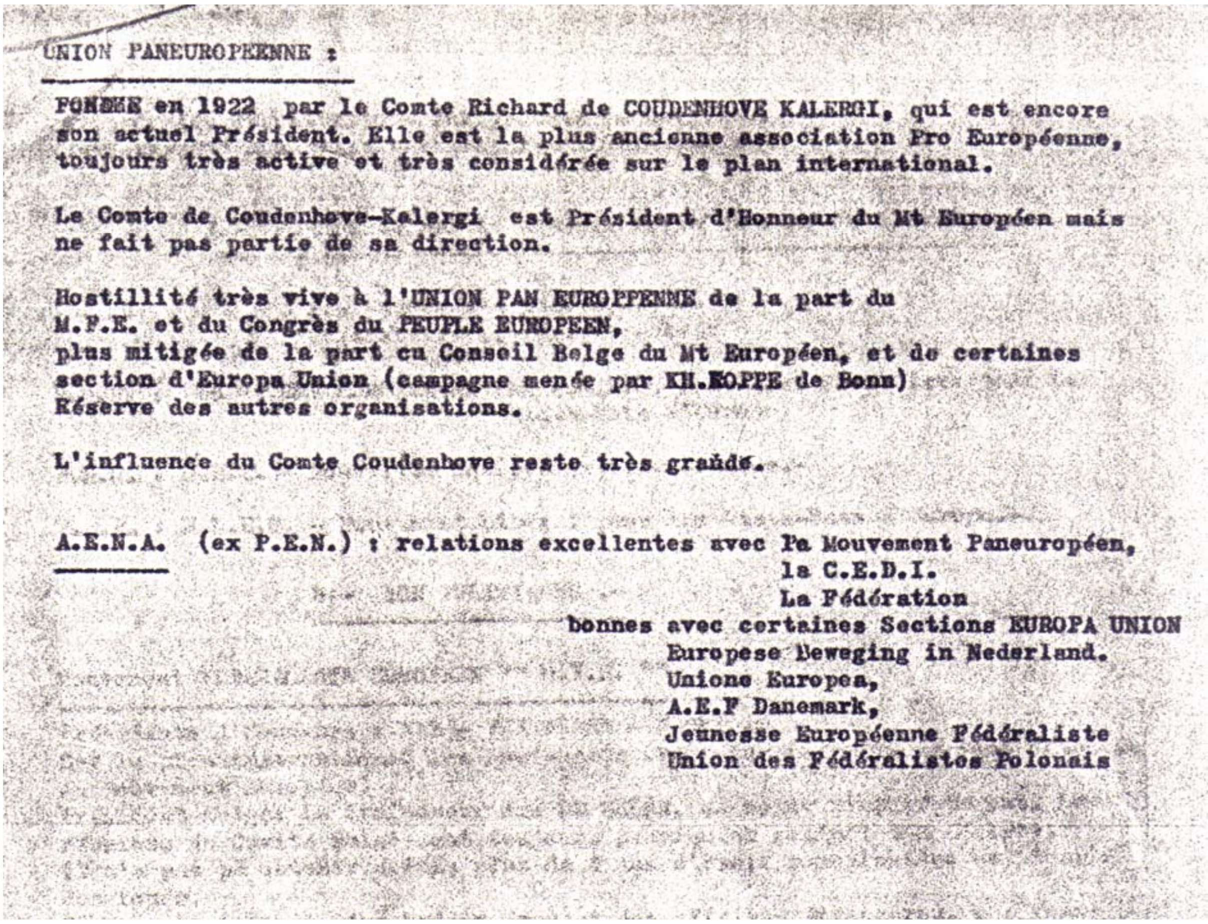

UNION PANEUROPEENNE :

FONDEE en 1922 par le Comte Richard de COUDENHOVE KALERGI, qui est encore son actuel Président. Elle est la plus ancienne association Pro Européenne, toujours très active et très considérée sur le plan international.

Le Comte de Coudenhove-Kalergi est Président d'Honneur du Mt Européen mais ne fait pas partie de sa direction.

Hostillité très vive à l'UNION PAN EUROPPENNE de la part du M.F.E. et du Congrès du PEUPLE EUROPEEN,
plus mitigée de la part cu Conseil Belge du Mt Européen, et de certaines section d'Europa Union (campagne menée par KH.KOPPE de Bonn)
Réserve des autres organisations.

L'influence du Comte Coudenhove reste très grande.

A.E.N.A. (ex P.E.N.) : relations excellentes avec le Mouvement Paneuropéen,
la C.E.D.I.
La Fédération
bonnes avec certaines Sections EUROPA UNION
Europese Beweging in Nederland.
Unione Europea,
A.E.F Danemark,
Jeunesse Européenne Fédéraliste
Union des Fédéralistes Polonais

Below : undated AENA document, circa 1965.

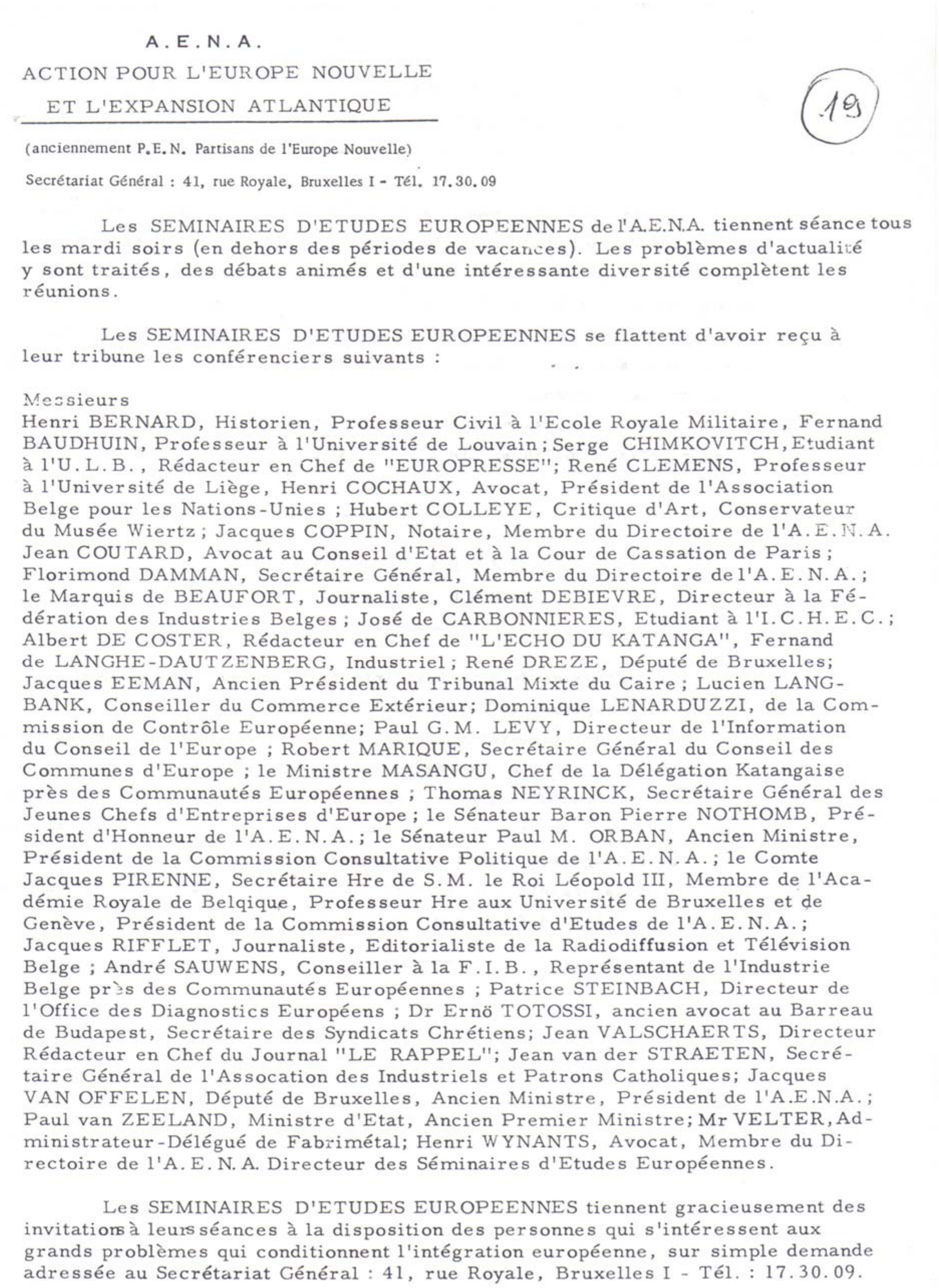

A.E.N.A.

ACTION POUR L'EUROPE NOUVELLE
ET L'EXPANSION ATLANTIQUE

19

(anciennement P.E.N. Partisans de l'Europe Nouvelle)

Secrétariat Général : 41, rue Royale, Bruxelles I - Tél. 17.30.09

Les SEMINAIRES D'ETUDES EUROPEENNES de l'A.E.N.A. tiennent séance tous les mardi soirs (en dehors des périodes de vacances). Les problèmes d'actualité y sont traités, des débats animés et d'une intéressante diversité complètent les réunions.

Les SEMINAIRES D'ETUDES EUROPEENNES se flattent d'avoir reçu à leur tribune les conférenciers suivants :

Messieurs
Henri BERNARD, Historien, Professeur Civil à l'Ecole Royale Militaire, Fernand BAUDHUIN, Professeur à l'Université de Louvain; Serge CHIMKOVITCH, Etudiant à l'U.L.B., Rédacteur en Chef de "EUROPRESSE"; René CLEMENS, Professeur à l'Université de Liège, Henri COCHAUX, Avocat, Président de l'Association Belge pour les Nations-Unies ; Hubert COLLEYE, Critique d'Art, Conservateur du Musée Wiertz; Jacques COPPIN, Notaire, Membre du Directoire de l'A.E.N.A. Jean COUTARD, Avocat au Conseil d'Etat et à la Cour de Cassation de Paris ; Florimond DAMMAN, Secrétaire Général, Membre du Directoire de l'A.E.N.A.; le Marquis de BEAUFORT, Journaliste, Clément DEBIEVRE, Directeur à la Fédération des Industries Belges ; José de CARBONNIERES, Etudiant à l'I.C.H.E.C.; Albert DE COSTER, Rédacteur en Chef de "L'ECHO DU KATANGA", Fernand de LANGHE-DAUTZENBERG, Industriel ; René DREZE, Député de Bruxelles; Jacques EEMAN, Ancien Président du Tribunal Mixte du Caire ; Lucien LANGBANK, Conseiller du Commerce Extérieur; Dominique LENARDUZZI, de la Commission de Contrôle Européenne; Paul G.M. LEVY, Directeur de l'Information du Conseil de l'Europe ; Robert MARIQUE, Secrétaire Général du Conseil des Communes d'Europe ; le Ministre MASANGU, Chef de la Délégation Katangaise près des Communautés Européennes ; Thomas NEYRINCK, Secrétaire Général des Jeunes Chefs d'Entreprises d'Europe ; le Sénateur Baron Pierre NOTHOMB, Président d'Honneur de l'A.E.N.A.; le Sénateur Paul M. ORBAN, Ancien Ministre, Président de la Commission Consultative Politique de l'A.E.N.A.; le Comte Jacques PIRENNE, Secrétaire Hre de S.M. le Roi Léopold III, Membre de l'Académie Royale de Belqique, Professeur Hre aux Université de Bruxelles et de Genève, Président de la Commission Consultative d'Etudes de l'A.E.N.A.; Jacques RIFFLET, Journaliste, Editorialiste de la Radiodiffusion et Télévision Belge ; André SAUWENS, Conseiller à la F.I.B., Représentant de l'Industrie Belge près des Communautés Européennes ; Patrice STEINBACH, Directeur de l'Office des Diagnostics Européens ; Dr Ernö TOTOSSI, ancien avocat au Barreau de Budapest, Secrétaire des Syndicats Chrétiens; Jean VALSCHAERTS, Directeur Rédacteur en Chef du Journal "LE RAPPEL"; Jean van der STRAETEN, Secrétaire Général de l'Assocation des Industriels et Patrons Catholiques; Jacques VAN OFFELEN, Député de Bruxelles, Ancien Ministre, Président de l'A.E.N.A.; Paul van ZEELAND, Ministre d'Etat, Ancien Premier Ministre; Mr VELTER, Administrateur-Délégué de Fabrimétal; Henri WYNANTS, Avocat, Membre du Directoire de l'A.E.N.A. Directeur des Séminaires d'Etudes Européennes.

Les SEMINAIRES D'ETUDES EUROPEENNES tiennent gracieusement des invitations à leurs séances à la disposition des personnes qui s'intéressent aux grands problèmes qui conditionnent l'intégration européenne, sur simple demande adressée au Secrétariat Général : 41, rue Royale, Bruxelles I - Tél. : 17.30.09.

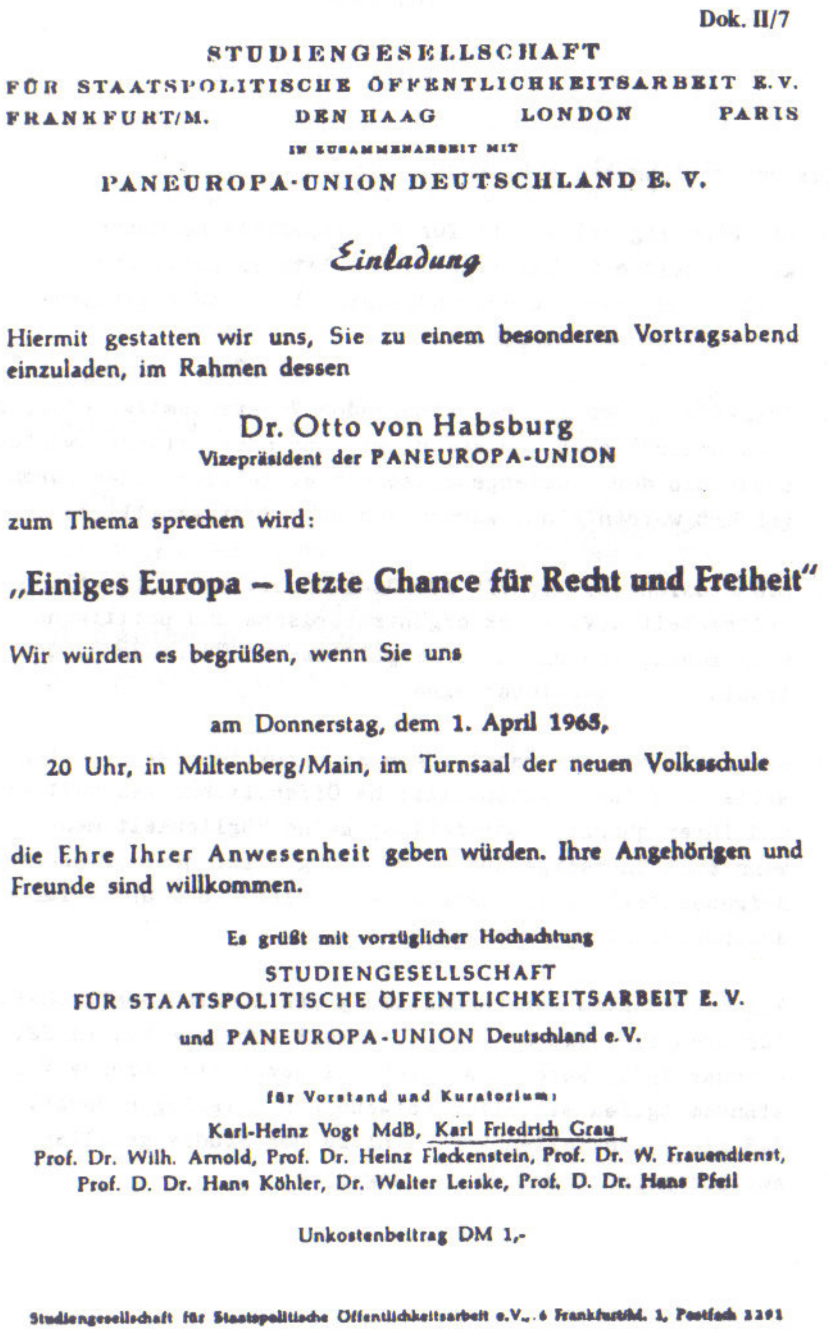

Dok. II/7

STUDIENGESELLSCHAFT
FÜR STAATSPOLITISCHE ÖFFENTLICHKEITSARBEIT E.V.
FRANKFURT/M. DEN HAAG LONDON PARIS
IN ZUSAMMENARBEIT MIT
PANEUROPA-UNION DEUTSCHLAND E. V.

Einladung

Hiermit gestatten wir uns, Sie zu einem besonderen Vortragsabend einzuladen, im Rahmen dessen

Dr. Otto von Habsburg
Vizepräsident der PANEUROPA-UNION

zum Thema sprechen wird:

„Einiges Europa – letzte Chance für Recht und Freiheit"

Wir würden es begrüßen, wenn Sie uns

am Donnerstag, dem 1. April 1965,
20 Uhr, in Miltenberg/Main, im Turnsaal der neuen Volksschule

die Ehre Ihrer Anwesenheit geben würden. Ihre Angehörigen und Freunde sind willkommen.

Es grüßt mit vorzüglicher Hochachtung
STUDIENGESELLSCHAFT
FÜR STAATSPOLITISCHE ÖFFENTLICHKEITSARBEIT E. V.
und PANEUROPA-UNION Deutschland e.V.

für Vorstand und Kuratorium:
Karl-Heinz Vogt MdB, Karl Friedrich Grau
Prof. Dr. Wilh. Arnold, Prof. Dr. Heinz Fleckenstein, Prof. Dr. W. Frauendienst,
Prof. D. Dr. Hans Köhler, Dr. Walter Leiske, Prof. D. Dr. Hans Pfeil

Unkostenbeitrag DM 1,-

Studiengesellschaft für Staatspolitische Öffentlichkeitsarbeit e.V., 6 Frankfurt/M. 1, Postfach 2291

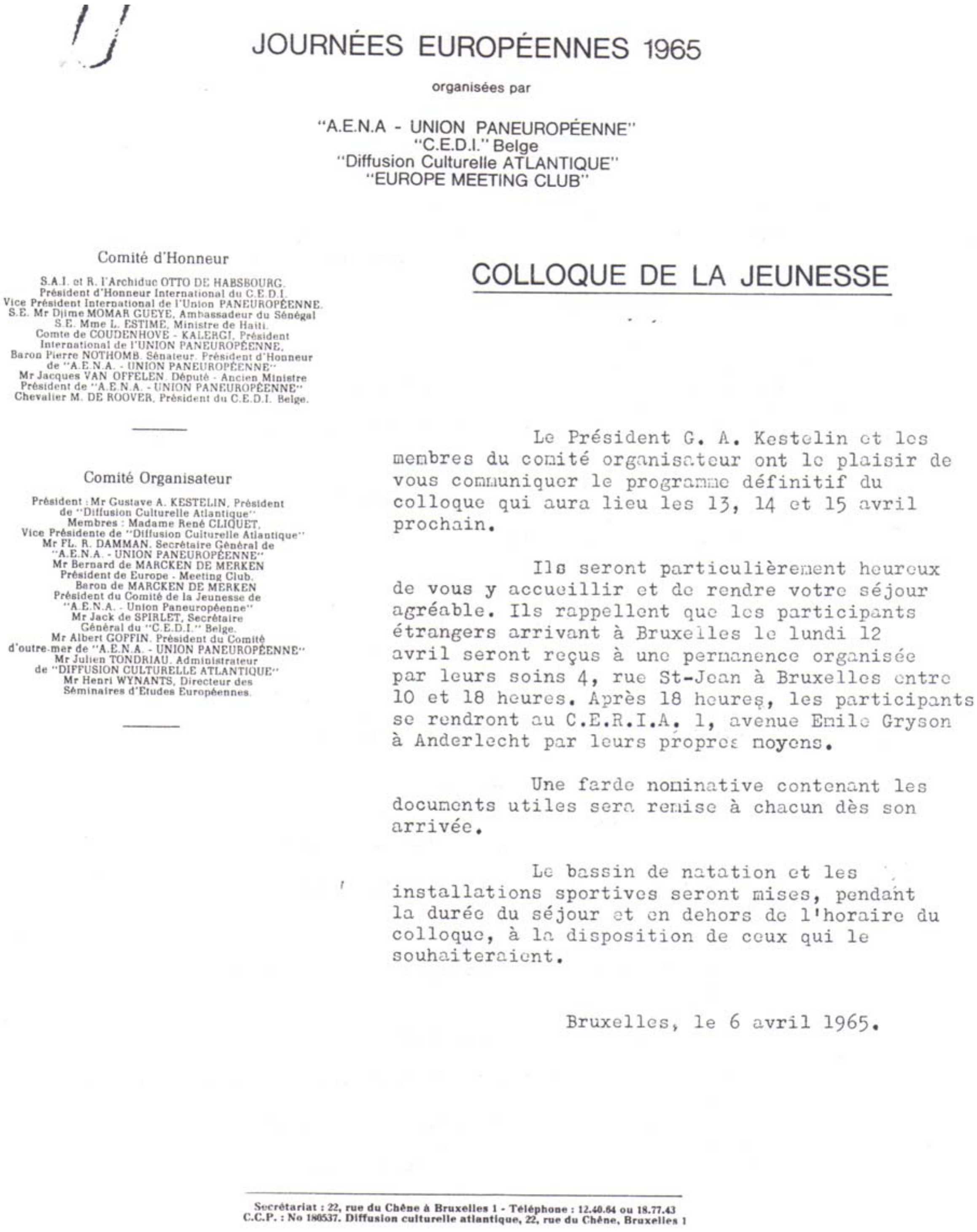

JOURNÉES EUROPÉENNES 1965

organisées par

"A.E.N.A - UNION PANEUROPÉENNE"
"C.E.D.I." Belge
"Diffusion Culturelle ATLANTIQUE"
"EUROPE MEETING CLUB"

Comité d'Honneur

S.A.I. et R. l'Archiduc OTTO DE HABSBOURG.
Président d'Honneur International du C.E.D.I.
Vice Président International de l'Union PANEUROPÉENNE.
S.E. Mr Djime MOMAR GUEYE, Ambassadeur du Sénégal
S.E. Mme L. ESTIME, Ministre de Haiti.
Comte de COUDENHOVE - KALERGI, Président
International de l'UNION PANEUROPÉENNE.
Baron Pierre NOTHOMB. Sénateur. Président d'Honneur
de "A.E.N.A. - UNION PANEUROPÉENNE"
Mr Jacques VAN OFFELEN. Député - Ancien Ministre
Président de "A.E.N.A. - UNION PANEUROPÉENNE"
Chevalier M. DE ROOVER, Président du C.E.D.I. Belge.

Comité Organisateur

Président : Mr Gustave A. KESTELIN, Président
de "Diffusion Culturelle Atlantique"
Membres : Madame René CLIQUET,
Vice Présidente de "Diffusion Culturelle Atlantique"
Mr FL. R. DAMMAN. Secrétaire Général de
"A.E.N.A. - UNION PANEUROPÉENNE"
Mr Bernard de MARCKEN DE MERKEN
Président de Europe - Meeting Club.
Baron de MARCKEN DE MERKEN
Président du Comité de la Jeunesse de
"A.E.N.A. - Union Paneuropéenne"
Mr Jack de SPIRLET, Secrétaire
Général du "C.E.D.I." Belge.
Mr Albert GOFFIN. Président du Comité
d'outre-mer de "A.E.N.A. - UNION PANEUROPÉENNE"
Mr Julien TONDRIAU. Administrateur
de "DIFFUSION CULTURELLE ATLANTIQUE"
Mr Henri WYNANTS, Directeur des
Séminaires d'Etudes Européennes.

COLLOQUE DE LA JEUNESSE

Le Président G. A. Kestelin et les membres du comité organisateur ont le plaisir de vous communiquer le programme définitif du colloque qui aura lieu les 13, 14 et 15 avril prochain.

Ils seront particulièrement heureux de vous y accueillir et de rendre votre séjour agréable. Ils rappellent que les participants étrangers arrivant à Bruxelles le lundi 12 avril seront reçus à une permanence organisée par leurs soins 4, rue St-Jean à Bruxelles entre 10 et 18 heures. Après 18 heures, les participants se rendront au C.E.R.I.A. 1, avenue Emile Gryson à Anderlecht par leurs propres moyens.

Une farde nominative contenant les documents utiles sera remise à chacun dès son arrivée.

Le bassin de natation et les installations sportives seront mises, pendant la durée du séjour et en dehors de l'horaire du colloque, à la disposition de ceux qui le souhaiteraient.

Bruxelles, le 6 avril 1965.

Secrétariat : 22, rue du Chêne à Bruxelles 1 - Téléphone : 12.40.64 ou 18.77.43
C.C.P. : No 180537. Diffusion culturelle atlantique, 22, rue du Chêne, Bruxelles 1

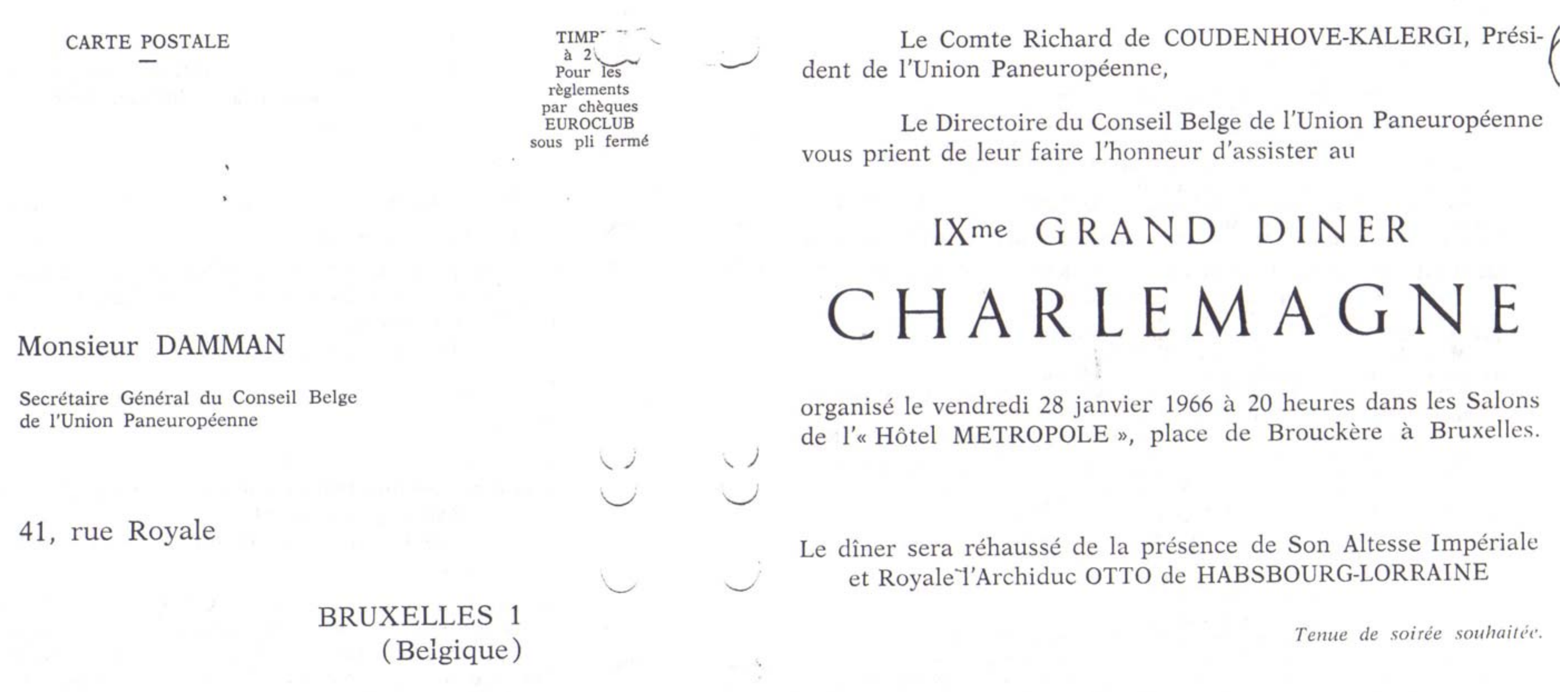

CARTE POSTALE
—

TIMP
à 2
Pour les
règlements
par chèques
EUROCLUB
sous pli fermé

Monsieur DAMMAN

Secrétaire Général du Conseil Belge
de l'Union Paneuropéenne

41, rue Royale

BRUXELLES 1
(Belgique)

Le Comte Richard de COUDENHOVE-KALERGI, Président de l'Union Paneuropéenne,

Le Directoire du Conseil Belge de l'Union Paneuropéenne vous prient de leur faire l'honneur d'assister au

IXme GRAND DINER

CHARLEMAGNE

organisé le vendredi 28 janvier 1966 à 20 heures dans les Salons de l'« Hôtel METROPOLE », place de Brouckère à Bruxelles.

Le dîner sera réhaussé de la présence de Son Altesse Impériale et Royale l'Archiduc OTTO de HABSBOURG-LORRAINE

Tenue de soirée souhaitée.

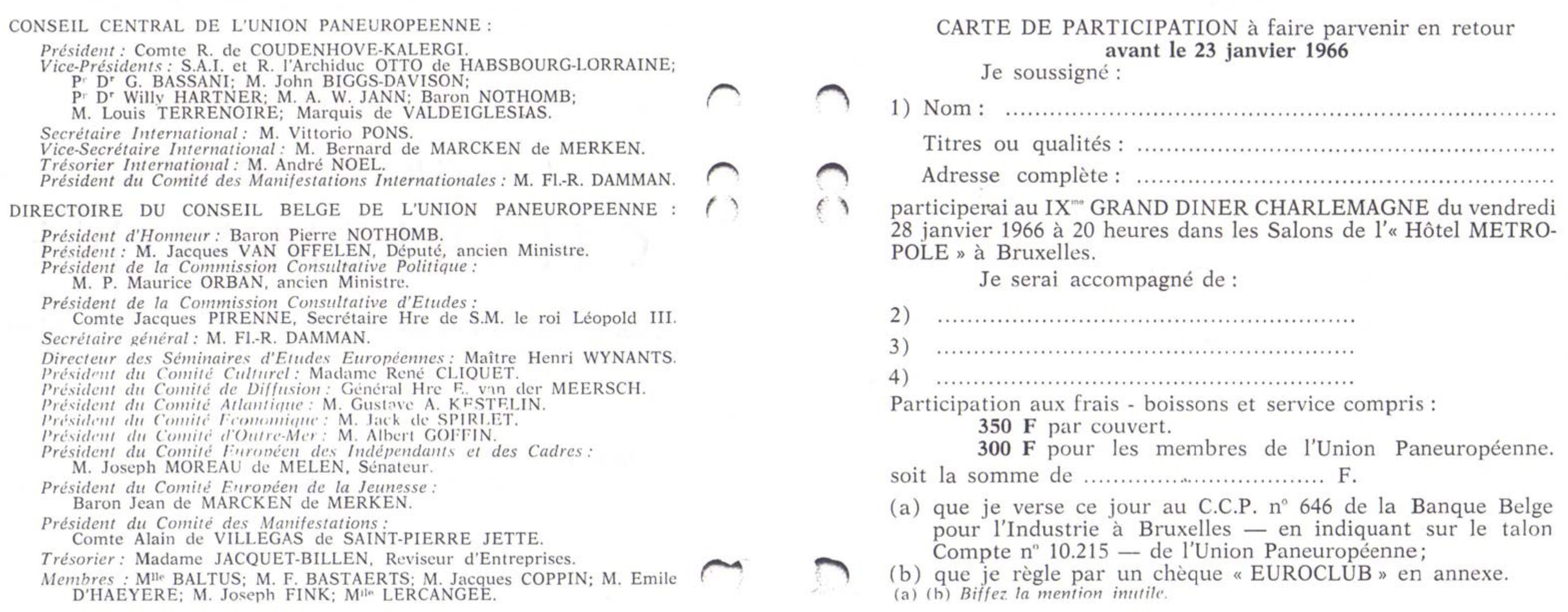

CONSEIL CENTRAL DE L'UNION PANEUROPEENNE :

Président : Comte R. de COUDENHOVE-KALERGI.
Vice-Présidents : S.A.I. et R. l'Archiduc OTTO de HABSBOURG-LORRAINE;
Pr Dr G. BASSANI; M. John BIGGS-DAVISON;
Pr Dr Willy HARTNER; M. A. W. JANN; Baron NOTHOMB;
M. Louis TERRENOIRE; Marquis de VALDEIGLESIAS.

Secrétaire International : M. Vittorio PONS.
Vice-Secrétaire International : M. Bernard de MARCKEN de MERKEN.
Trésorier International : M. André NOEL.
Président du Comité des Manifestations Internationales : M. Fl.-R. DAMMAN.

DIRECTOIRE DU CONSEIL BELGE DE L'UNION PANEUROPEENNE :

Président d'Honneur : Baron Pierre NOTHOMB.
Président : M. Jacques VAN OFFELEN, Député, ancien Ministre.
Président de la Commission Consultative Politique :
M. P. Maurice ORBAN, ancien Ministre.

Président de la Commission Consultative d'Etudes :
Comte Jacques PIRENNE, Secrétaire Hre de S.M. le roi Léopold III.

Secrétaire général : M. Fl.-R. DAMMAN.

Directeur des Séminaires d'Etudes Européennes : Maître Henri WYNANTS.
Président du Comité Culturel : Madame René CLIQUET.
Président du Comité de Diffusion : Général Hre F. van der MEERSCH.
Président du Comité Atlantique : M. Gustave A. KESTELIN.
Président du Comité Economique : M. Jack de SPIRLET.
Président du Comité d'Outre-Mer : M. Albert GOFFIN.
Président du Comité Européen des Indépendants et des Cadres :
M. Joseph MOREAU de MELEN, Sénateur.

Président du Comité Européen de la Jeunesse :
Baron Jean de MARCKEN de MERKEN.

Président du Comité des Manifestations :
Comte Alain de VILLEGAS de SAINT-PIERRE JETTE.

Trésorier : Madame JACQUET-BILLEN, Reviseur d'Entreprises.

Membres : Mlle BALTUS; M. F. BASTAERTS; M. Jacques COPPIN; M. Emile D'HAEYERE; M. Joseph FINK; Mlle LERCANGEE.

CARTE DE PARTICIPATION à faire parvenir en retour
avant le 23 janvier 1966

Je soussigné :

1) Nom : ....

Titres ou qualités : ....

Adresse complète : ....

participerai au IXme GRAND DINER CHARLEMAGNE du vendredi 28 janvier 1966 à 20 heures dans les Salons de l'« Hôtel METROPOLE » à Bruxelles.

Je serai accompagné de :

2) ....

3) ....

4) ....

Participation aux frais - boissons et service compris :

350 F par couvert.
300 F pour les membres de l'Union Paneuropéenne.

soit la somme de .... F.

(a) que je verse ce jour au C.C.P. n° 646 de la Banque Belge pour l'Industrie à Bruxelles — en indiquant sur le talon Compte n° 10.215 — de l'Union Paneuropéenne;

(b) que je règle par un chèque « EUROCLUB » en annexe.

(a) (b) *Biffez la mention inutile.*

Below : from 1967 AENA bulletin 27

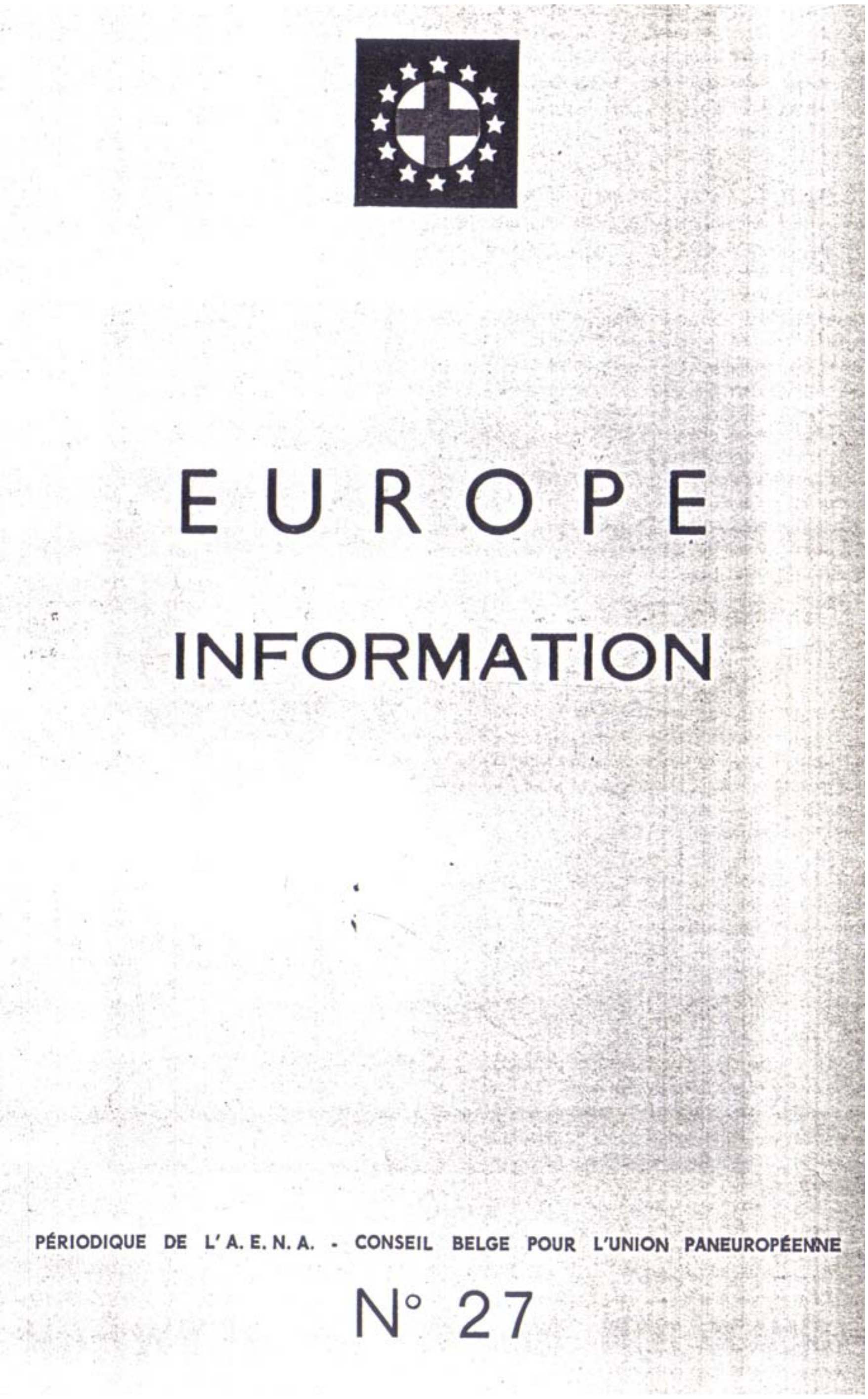

EUROPE

INFORMATION

PÉRIODIQUE DE L'A. E. N. A. - CONSEIL BELGE POUR L'UNION PANEUROPÉENNE

N° 27

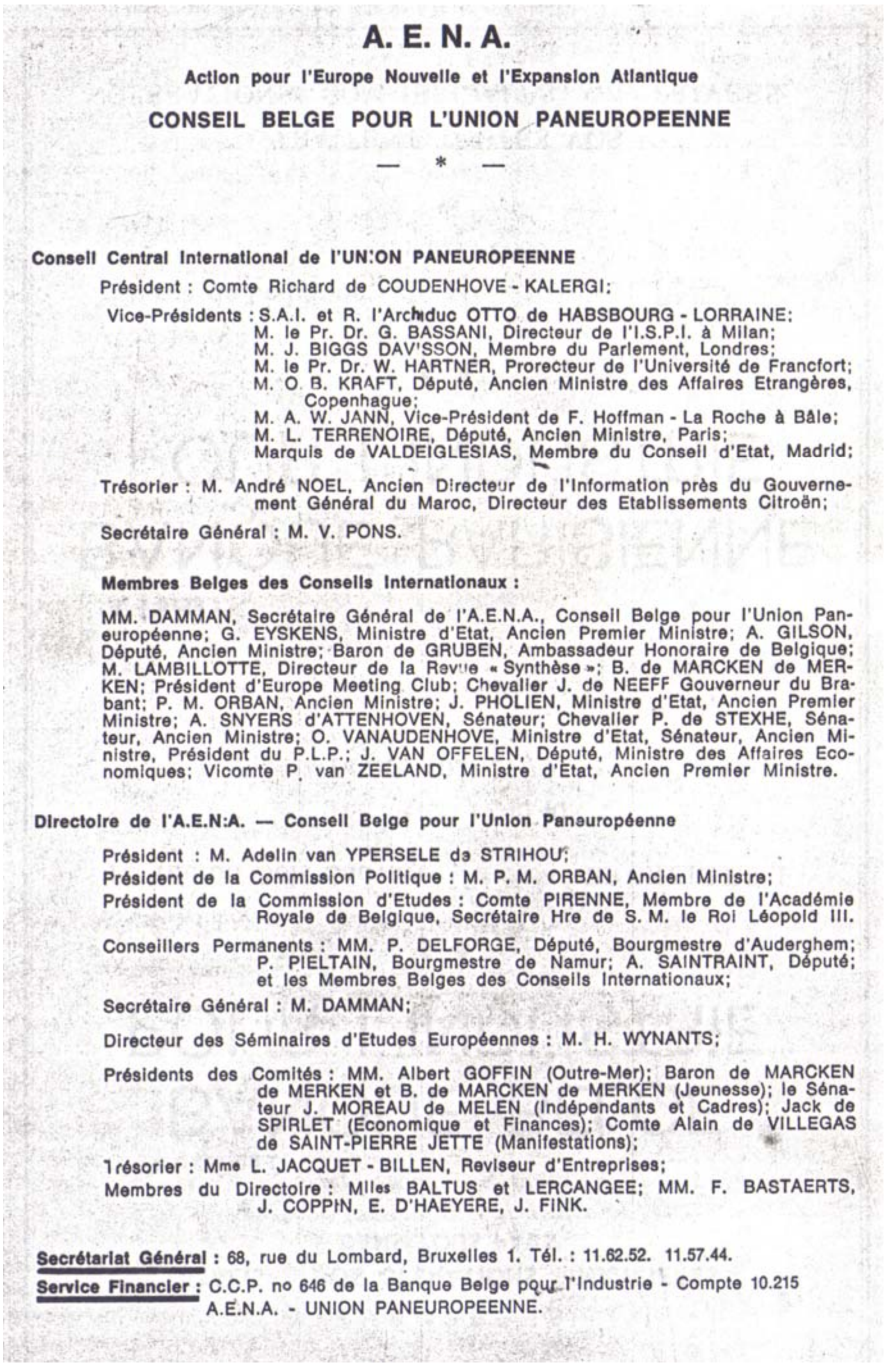

A. E. N. A.

Action pour l'Europe Nouvelle et l'Expansion Atlantique

CONSEIL BELGE POUR L'UNION PANEUROPEENNE

— * —

Conseil Central International de l'UNION PANEUROPEENNE

Président : Comte Richard de COUDENHOVE - KALERGI;

Vice-Présidents : S.A.I. et R. l'Archiduc OTTO de HABSBOURG - LORRAINE;
M. le Pr. Dr. G. BASSANI, Directeur de l'I.S.P.I. à Milan;
M. J. BIGGS DAVISSON, Membre du Parlement, Londres;
M. le Pr. Dr. W. HARTNER, Prorecteur de l'Université de Francfort;
M. O. B. KRAFT, Député, Ancien Ministre des Affaires Etrangères, Copenhague;
M. A. W. JANN, Vice-Président de F. Hoffman - La Roche à Bâle;
M. L. TERRENOIRE, Député, Ancien Ministre, Paris;
Marquis de VALDEIGLESIAS, Membre du Conseil d'Etat, Madrid;

Trésorier : M. André NOEL, Ancien Directeur de l'Information près du Gouvernement Général du Maroc, Directeur des Etablissements Citroën;

Secrétaire Général : M. V. PONS.

Membres Belges des Conseils Internationaux :

MM. DAMMAN, Secrétaire Général de l'A.E.N.A., Conseil Belge pour l'Union Paneuropéenne; G. EYSKENS, Ministre d'Etat, Ancien Premier Ministre; A. GILSON, Député, Ancien Ministre; Baron de GRUBEN, Ambassadeur Honoraire de Belgique; M. LAMBILLOTTE, Directeur de la Revue « Synthèse »; B. de MARCKEN de MERKEN; Président d'Europe Meeting Club; Chevalier J. de NEEFF Gouverneur du Brabant; P. M. ORBAN, Ancien Ministre; J. PHOLIEN, Ministre d'Etat, Ancien Premier Ministre; A. SNYERS d'ATTENHOVEN, Sénateur; Chevalier P. de STEXHE, Sénateur, Ancien Ministre; O. VANAUDENHOVE, Ministre d'Etat, Sénateur, Ancien Ministre, Président du P.L.P.; J. VAN OFFELEN, Député, Ministre des Affaires Economiques; Vicomte P. van ZEELAND, Ministre d'Etat, Ancien Premier Ministre.

Directoire de l'A.E.N:A. — Conseil Belge pour l'Union Paneuropéenne

Président : M. Adelin van YPERSELE de STRIHOU;

Président de la Commission Politique : M. P. M. ORBAN, Ancien Ministre;

Président de la Commission d'Etudes : Comte PIRENNE, Membre de l'Académie Royale de Belgique, Secrétaire Hre de S. M. le Roi Léopold III.

Conseillers Permanents : MM. P. DELFORGE, Député, Bourgmestre d'Auderghem; P. PIELTAIN, Bourgmestre de Namur; A. SAINTRAINT, Député; et les Membres Belges des Conseils Internationaux;

Secrétaire Général : M. DAMMAN;

Directeur des Séminaires d'Etudes Européennes : M. H. WYNANTS;

Présidents des Comités : MM. Albert GOFFIN (Outre-Mer); Baron de MARCKEN de MERKEN et B. de MARCKEN de MERKEN (Jeunesse); le Sénateur J. MOREAU de MELEN (Indépendants et Cadres); Jack de SPIRLET (Economique et Finances); Comte Alain de VILLEGAS de SAINT-PIERRE JETTE (Manifestations);

Trésorier : Mme L. JACQUET - BILLEN, Reviseur d'Entreprises;

Membres du Directoire : Mlles BALTUS et LERCANGEE; MM. F. BASTAERTS, J. COPPIN, E. D'HAEYERE, J. FINK.

Secrétariat Général : 68, rue du Lombard, Bruxelles 1. Tél. : 11.62.52. 11.57.44.

Service Financier : C.C.P. no 646 de la Banque Belge pour l'Industrie - Compte 10.215
A.E.N.A. - UNION PANEUROPEENNE.

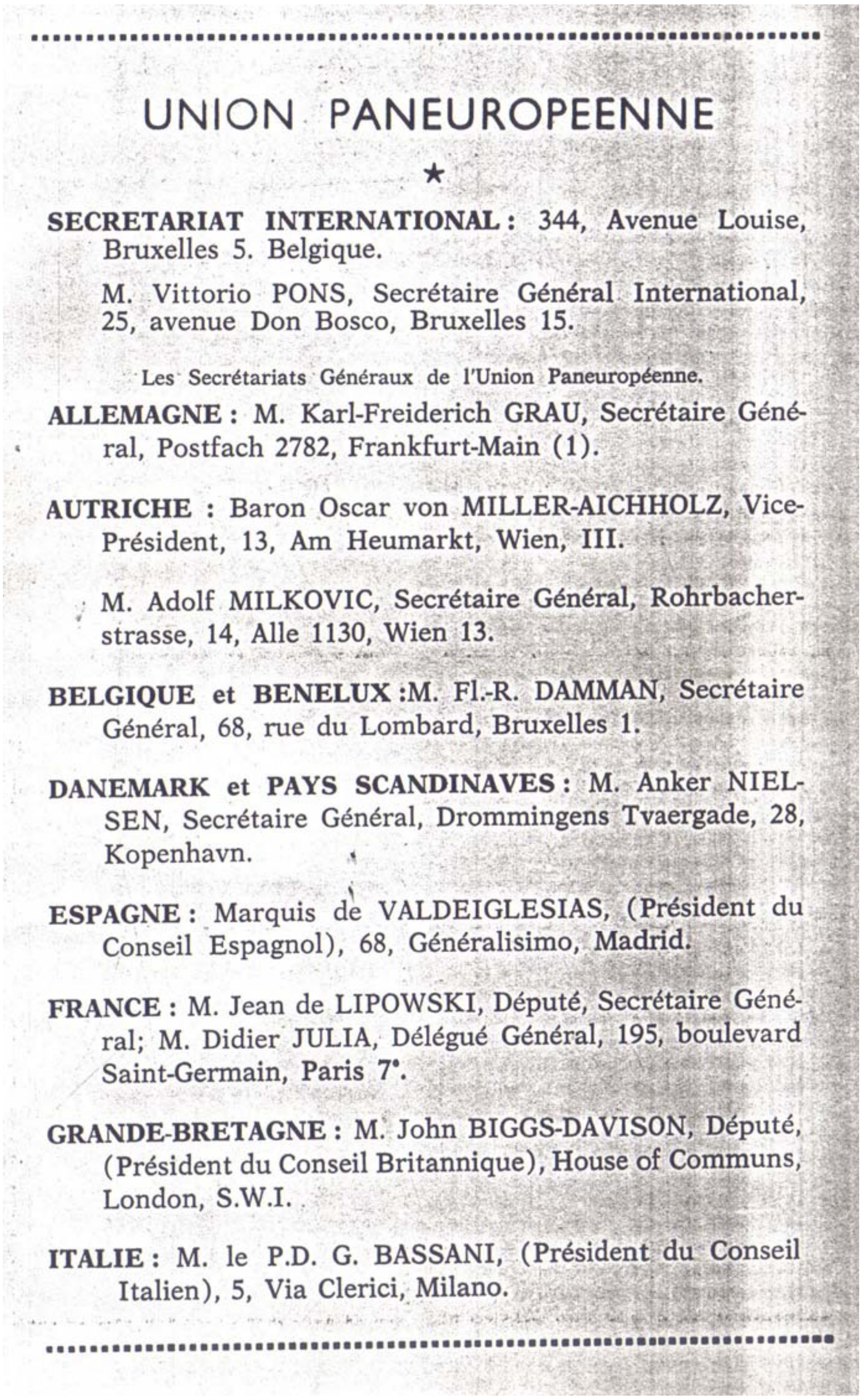

UNION PANEUROPEENNE

★

SECRETARIAT INTERNATIONAL : 344, Avenue Louise, Bruxelles 5. Belgique.

M. Vittorio PONS, Secrétaire Général International, 25, avenue Don Bosco, Bruxelles 15.

Les Secrétariats Généraux de l'Union Paneuropéenne.

ALLEMAGNE : M. Karl-Freiderich GRAU, Secrétaire Général, Postfach 2782, Frankfurt-Main (1).

AUTRICHE : Baron Oscar von MILLER-AICHHOLZ, Vice-Président, 13, Am Heumarkt, Wien, III.

M. Adolf MILKOVIC, Secrétaire Général, Rohrbacherstrasse, 14, Alle 1130, Wien 13.

BELGIQUE et BENELUX : M. Fl.-R. DAMMAN, Secrétaire Général, 68, rue du Lombard, Bruxelles 1.

DANEMARK et PAYS SCANDINAVES : M. Anker NIELSEN, Secrétaire Général, Drommingens Tvaergade, 28, Kopenhavn.

ESPAGNE : Marquis de VALDEIGLESIAS, (Président du Conseil Espagnol), 68, Généralisimo, Madrid.

FRANCE : M. Jean de LIPOWSKI, Député, Secrétaire Général; M. Didier JULIA, Délégué Général, 195, boulevard Saint-Germain, Paris 7e.

GRANDE-BRETAGNE : M. John BIGGS-DAVISON, Député, (Président du Conseil Britannique), House of Communs, London, S.W.I.

ITALIE : M. le P.D. G. BASSANI, (Président du Conseil Italien), 5, Via Clerici, Milano.

Below : from 1968 AENA bulletin 32

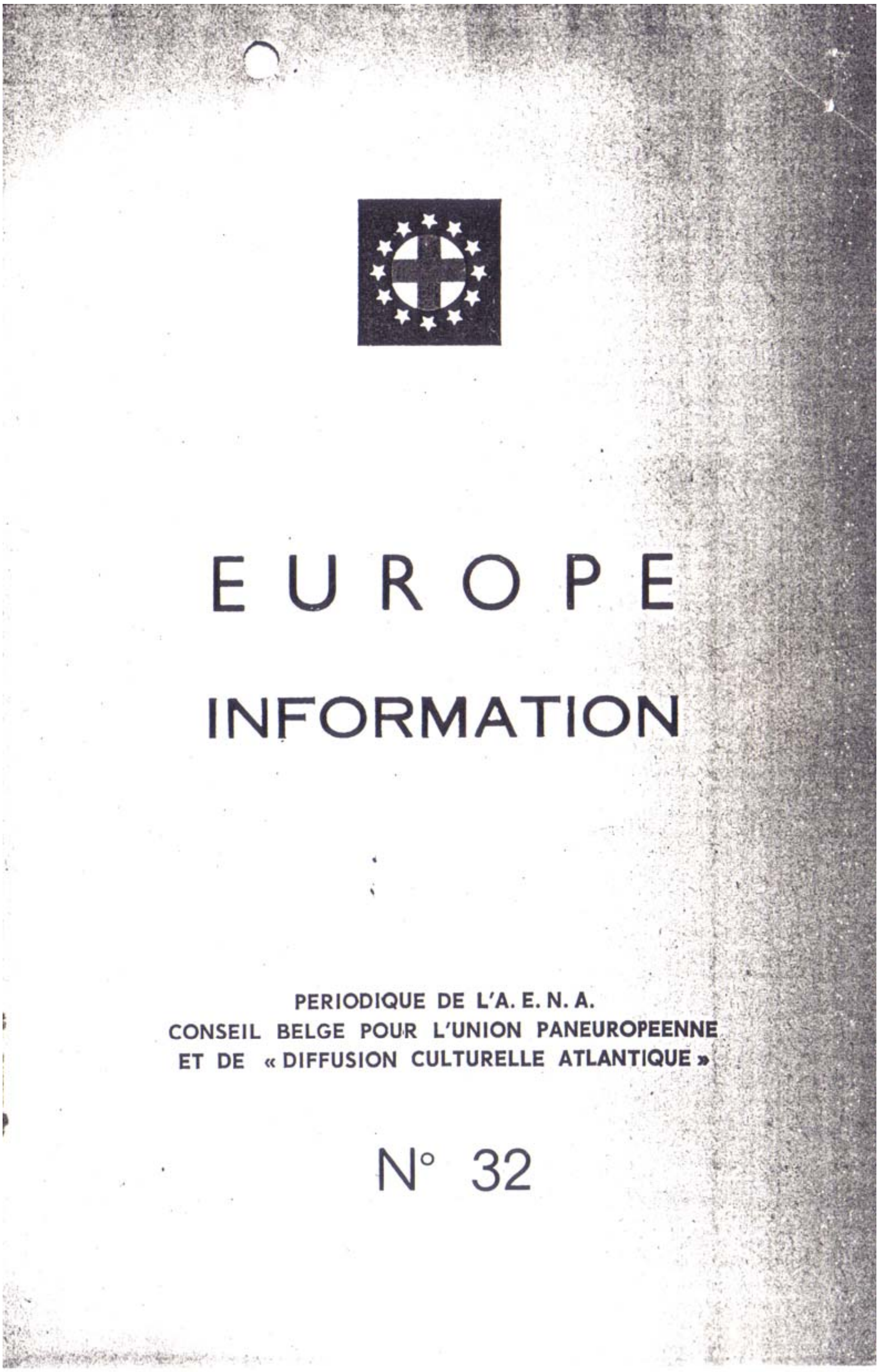

EUROPE

INFORMATION

PERIODIQUE DE L'A. E. N. A.
CONSEIL BELGE POUR L'UNION PANEUROPEENNE
ET DE « DIFFUSION CULTURELLE ATLANTIQUE »

N° 32

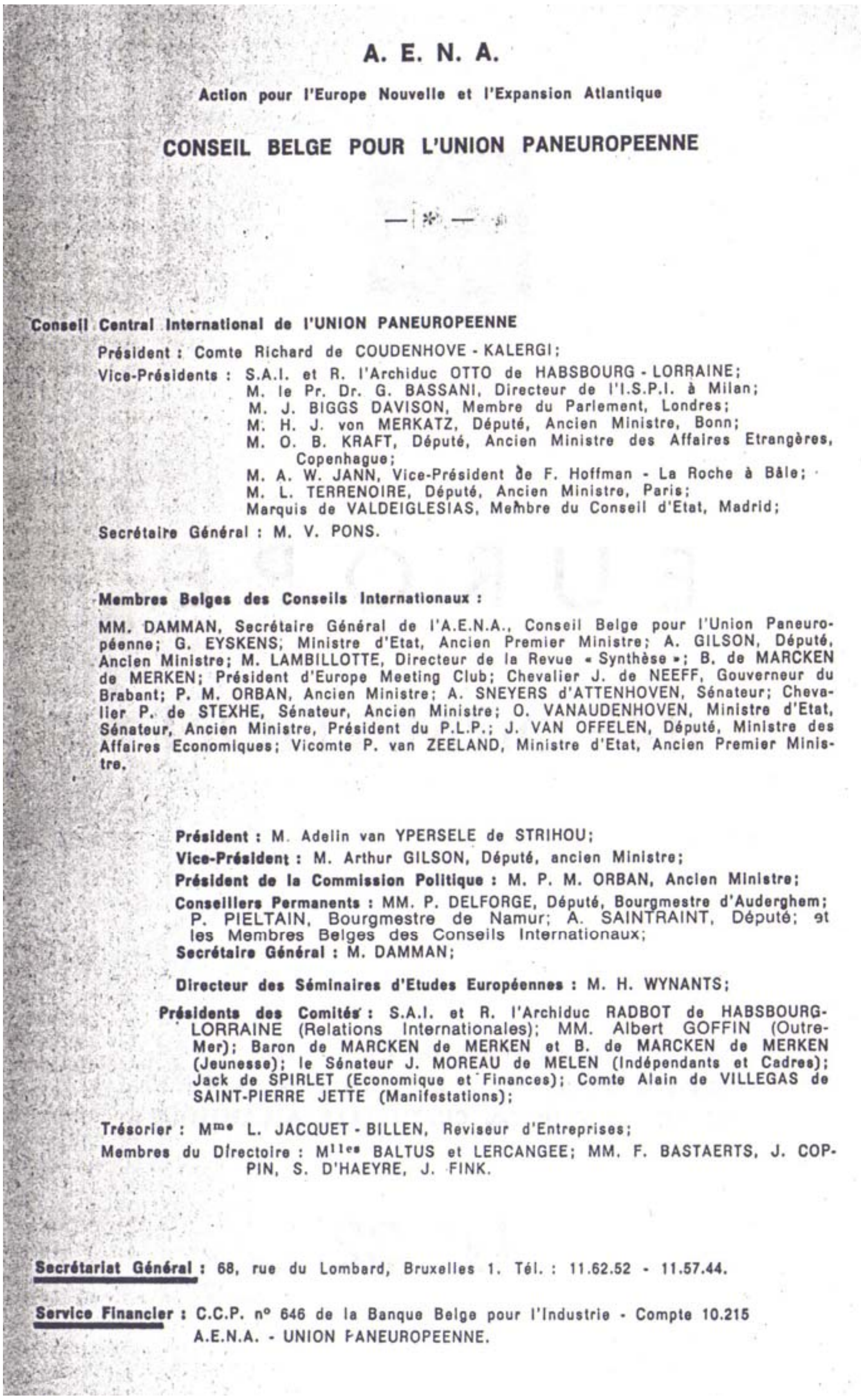

A. E. N. A.

Action pour l'Europe Nouvelle et l'Expansion Atlantique

CONSEIL BELGE POUR L'UNION PANEUROPEENNE

* * *

Conseil Central International de l'UNION PANEUROPEENNE

Président : Comte Richard de COUDENHOVE - KALERGI;

Vice-Présidents : S.A.I. et R. l'Archiduc OTTO de HABSBOURG - LORRAINE;
M. le Pr. Dr. G. BASSANI, Directeur de l'I.S.P.I. à Milan;
M. J. BIGGS DAVISON, Membre du Parlement, Londres;
M. H. J. von MERKATZ, Député, Ancien Ministre, Bonn;
M. O. B. KRAFT, Député, Ancien Ministre des Affaires Etrangères, Copenhague;
M. A. W. JANN, Vice-Président de F. Hoffman - La Roche à Bâle;
M. L. TERRENOIRE, Député, Ancien Ministre, Paris;
Marquis de VALDEIGLESIAS, Membre du Conseil d'Etat, Madrid;

Secrétaire Général : M. V. PONS.

Membres Belges des Conseils Internationaux :

MM. DAMMAN, Secrétaire Général de l'A.E.N.A., Conseil Belge pour l'Union Paneuropéenne; G. EYSKENS; Ministre d'Etat, Ancien Premier Ministre; A. GILSON, Député, Ancien Ministre; M. LAMBILLOTTE, Directeur de la Revue « Synthèse »; B. de MARCKEN de MERKEN; Président d'Europe Meeting Club; Chevalier J. de NEEFF, Gouverneur du Brabant; P. M. ORBAN, Ancien Ministre; A. SNEYERS d'ATTENHOVEN, Sénateur; Chevalier P. de STEXHE, Sénateur, Ancien Ministre; O. VANAUDENHOVEN, Ministre d'Etat, Sénateur, Ancien Ministre, Président du P.L.P.; J. VAN OFFELEN, Député, Ministre des Affaires Economiques; Vicomte P. van ZEELAND, Ministre d'Etat, Ancien Premier Ministre.

Président : M. Adelin van YPERSELE de STRIHOU;

Vice-Président : M. Arthur GILSON, Député, ancien Ministre;

Président de la Commission Politique : M. P. M. ORBAN, Ancien Ministre;

Conseillers Permanents : MM. P. DELFORGE, Député, Bourgmestre d'Auderghem; P. PIELTAIN, Bourgmestre de Namur; A. SAINTRAINT, Député; et les Membres Belges des Conseils Internationaux;
Secrétaire Général : M. DAMMAN;

Directeur des Séminaires d'Etudes Européennes : M. H. WYNANTS;

Présidents des Comités : S.A.I. et R. l'Archiduc RADBOT de HABSBOURG-LORRAINE (Relations Internationales); MM. Albert GOFFIN (Outre-Mer); Baron de MARCKEN de MERKEN et B. de MARCKEN de MERKEN (Jeunesse); le Sénateur J. MOREAU de MELEN (Indépendants et Cadres); Jack de SPIRLET (Economique et Finances); Comte Alain de VILLEGAS de SAINT-PIERRE JETTE (Manifestations);

Trésorier : Mme L. JACQUET - BILLEN, Reviseur d'Entreprises;

Membres du Directoire : Mlles BALTUS et LERCANGEE; MM. F. BASTAERTS, J. COPPIN, S. D'HAEYRE, J. FINK.

Secrétariat Général : 68, rue du Lombard, Bruxelles 1. Tél. : 11.62.52 - 11.57.44.

Service Financier : C.C.P. n° 646 de la Banque Belge pour l'Industrie - Compte 10.215
A.E.N.A. - UNION PANEUROPEENNE.

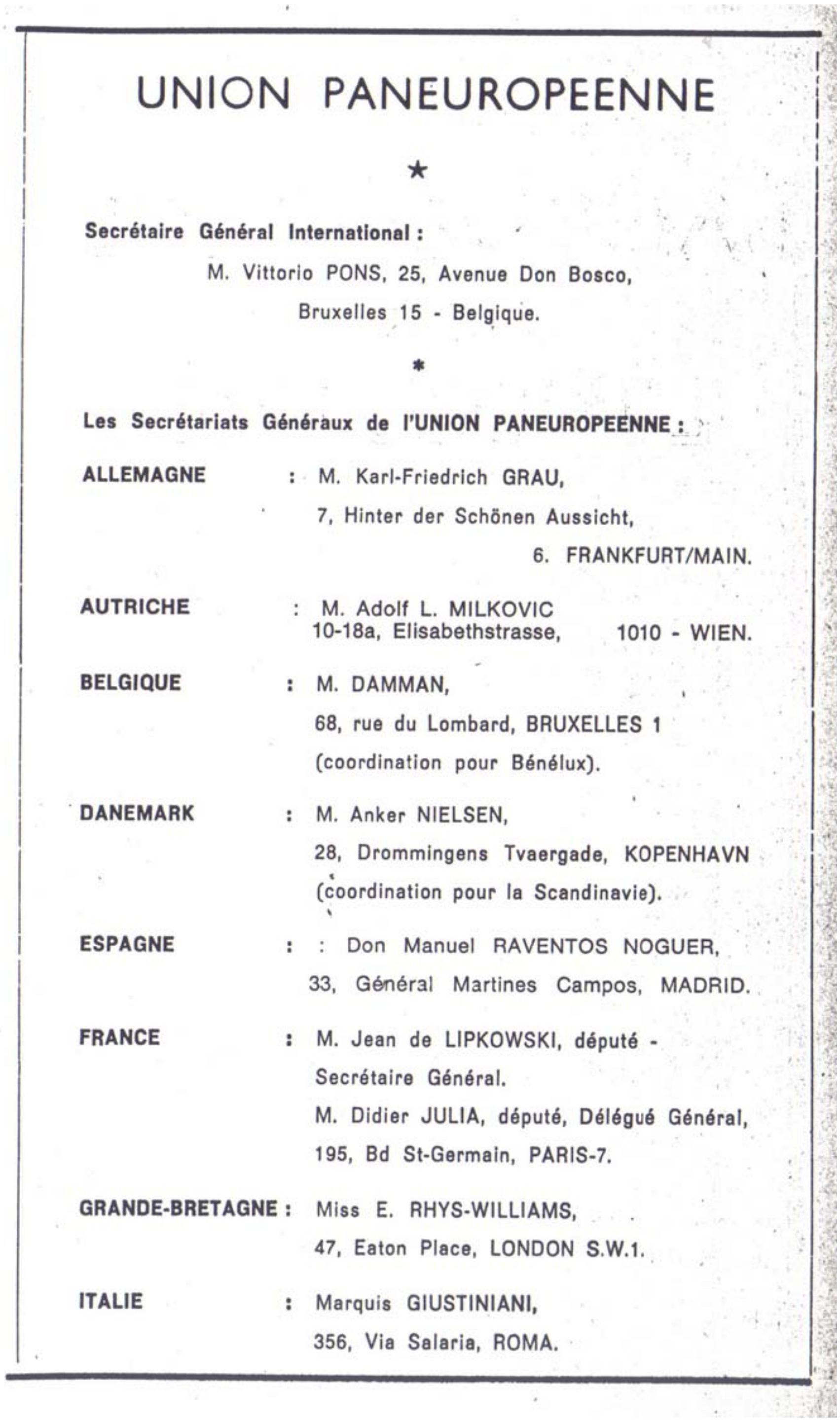

UNION PANEUROPEENNE

★

Secrétaire Général International :

M. Vittorio PONS, 25, Avenue Don Bosco,
Bruxelles 15 - Belgique.

*

Les Secrétariats Généraux de l'UNION PANEUROPEENNE :

ALLEMAGNE : M. Karl-Friedrich GRAU,
7, Hinter der Schönen Aussicht,
6. FRANKFURT/MAIN.

AUTRICHE : M. Adolf L. MILKOVIC
10-18a, Elisabethstrasse, 1010 - WIEN.

BELGIQUE : M. DAMMAN,
68, rue du Lombard, BRUXELLES 1
(coordination pour Bénélux).

DANEMARK : M. Anker NIELSEN,
28, Drommingens Tvaergade, KOPENHAVN
(coordination pour la Scandinavie).

ESPAGNE : : Don Manuel RAVENTOS NOGUER,
33, Général Martines Campos, MADRID.

FRANCE : M. Jean de LIPKOWSKI, député -
Secrétaire Général.
M. Didier JULIA, député, Délégué Général,
195, Bd St-Germain, PARIS-7.

GRANDE-BRETAGNE : Miss E. RHYS-WILLIAMS,
47, Eaton Place, LONDON S.W.1.

ITALIE : Marquis GIUSTINIANI,
356, Via Salaria, ROMA.

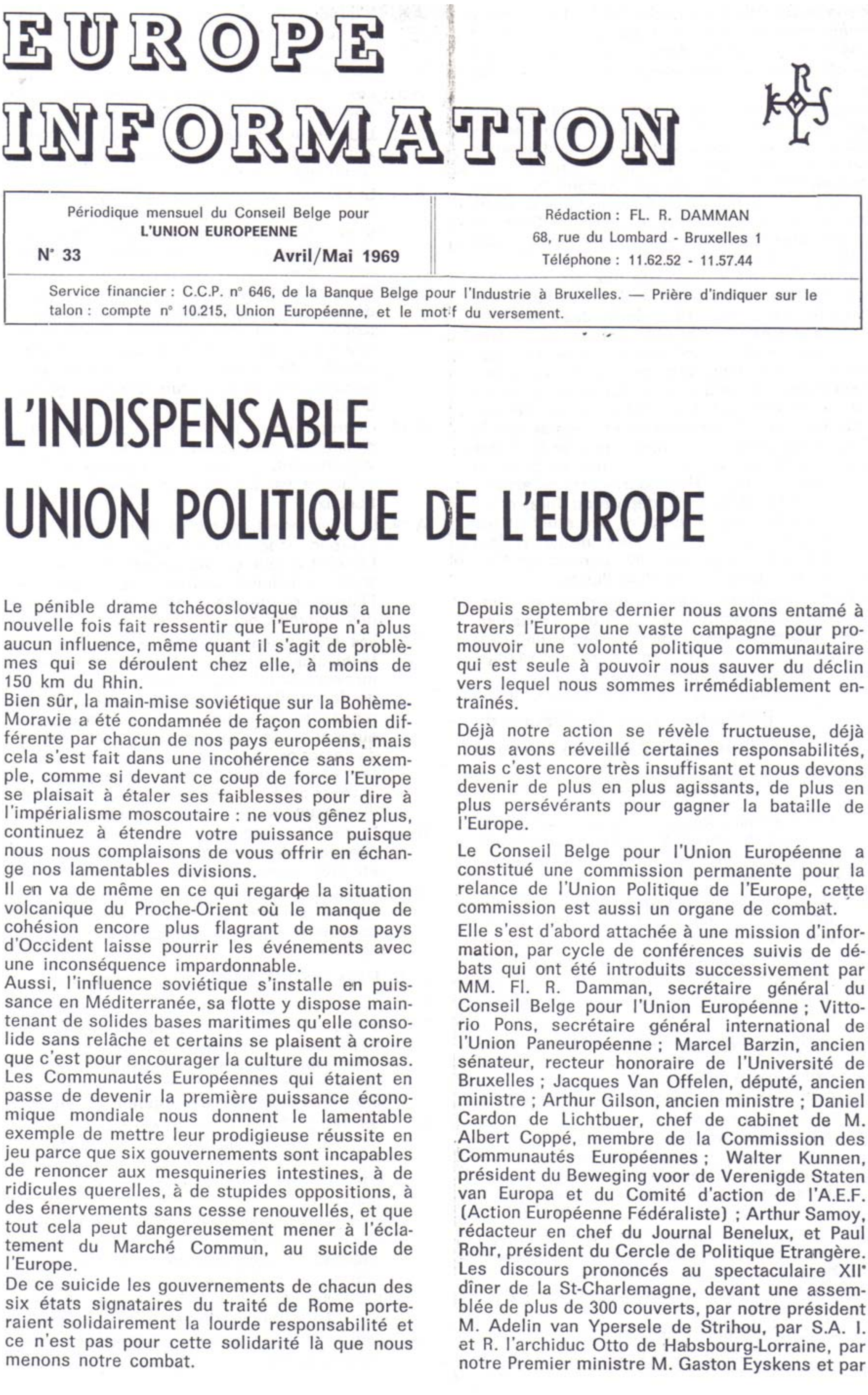

EUROPE INFORMATION

Périodique mensuel du Conseil Belge pour
L'UNION EUROPEENNE
N° 33 Avril/Mai 1969

Rédaction : FL. R. DAMMAN
68, rue du Lombard - Bruxelles 1
Téléphone : 11.62.52 - 11.57.44

Service financier : C.C.P. n° 646, de la Banque Belge pour l'Industrie à Bruxelles. — Prière d'indiquer sur le talon : compte n° 10.215, Union Européenne, et le motif du versement.

L'INDISPENSABLE UNION POLITIQUE DE L'EUROPE

Le pénible drame tchécoslovaque nous a une nouvelle fois fait ressentir que l'Europe n'a plus aucun influence, même quant il s'agit de problèmes qui se déroulent chez elle, à moins de 150 km du Rhin.

Bien sûr, la main-mise soviétique sur la Bohème-Moravie a été condamnée de façon combien différente par chacun de nos pays européens, mais cela s'est fait dans une incohérence sans exemple, comme si devant ce coup de force l'Europe se plaisait à étaler ses faiblesses pour dire à l'impérialisme moscoutaire : ne vous gênez plus, continuez à étendre votre puissance puisque nous nous complaisons de vous offrir en échange nos lamentables divisions.

Il en va de même en ce qui regarde la situation volcanique du Proche-Orient où le manque de cohésion encore plus flagrant de nos pays d'Occident laisse pourrir les événements avec une inconséquence impardonnable.

Aussi, l'influence soviétique s'installe en puissance en Méditerranée, sa flotte y dispose maintenant de solides bases maritimes qu'elle consolide sans relâche et certains se plaisent à croire que c'est pour encourager la culture du mimosas.

Les Communautés Européennes qui étaient en passe de devenir la première puissance économique mondiale nous donnent le lamentable exemple de mettre leur prodigieuse réussite en jeu parce que six gouvernements sont incapables de renoncer aux mesquineries intestines, à de ridicules querelles, à de stupides oppositions, à des énervements sans cesse renouvellés, et que tout cela peut dangereusement mener à l'éclatement du Marché Commun, au suicide de l'Europe.

De ce suicide les gouvernements de chacun des six états signataires du traité de Rome porteraient solidairement la lourde responsabilité et ce n'est pas pour cette solidarité là que nous menons notre combat.

Depuis septembre dernier nous avons entamé à travers l'Europe une vaste campagne pour promouvoir une volonté politique communautaire qui est seule à pouvoir nous sauver du déclin vers lequel nous sommes irrémédiablement entraînés.

Déjà notre action se révèle fructueuse, déjà nous avons réveillé certaines responsabilités, mais c'est encore très insuffisant et nous devons devenir de plus en plus agissants, de plus en plus persévérants pour gagner la bataille de l'Europe.

Le Conseil Belge pour l'Union Européenne a constitué une commission permanente pour la relance de l'Union Politique de l'Europe, cette commission est aussi un organe de combat.

Elle s'est d'abord attachée à une mission d'information, par cycle de conférences suivis de débats qui ont été introduits successivement par MM. Fl. R. Damman, secrétaire général du Conseil Belge pour l'Union Européenne ; Vittorio Pons, secrétaire général international de l'Union Paneuropéenne ; Marcel Barzin, ancien sénateur, recteur honoraire de l'Université de Bruxelles ; Jacques Van Offelen, député, ancien ministre ; Arthur Gilson, ancien ministre ; Daniel Cardon de Lichtbuer, chef de cabinet de M. Albert Coppé, membre de la Commission des Communautés Européennes ; Walter Kunnen, président du Beweging voor de Verenigde Staten van Europa et du Comité d'action de l'A.E.F. (Action Européenne Fédéraliste) ; Arthur Samoy, rédacteur en chef du Journal Benelux, et Paul Rohr, président du Cercle de Politique Etrangère.

Les discours prononcés au spectaculaire XII° dîner de la St-Charlemagne, devant une assemblée de plus de 300 couverts, par notre président M. Adelin van Ypersele de Strihou, par S.A. I. et R. l'archiduc Otto de Habsbourg-Lorraine, par notre Premier ministre M. Gaston Eyskens et par le comte de Coudenhove-Kalergi, ont mis brutalement en relief nos angoisses mais ont allumé aussi nos espérances dans le destin de l'Europe qui est celui que nous aurons la volonté de forger.

Au cours des séances de travail de la Commission, qui se sont alternées de semaine en semaine, avec les exposés et les débats d'information nous avons particulièrement remarqué les interventions de MM. Rudolf Dumont du Voitel, membre du Praesidium de Europa-Union Deuschland ; Henri Wynants, directeur de nos Séminaires d'Etudes Européennes ; Hervé Lavenir, conseiller au Sous-Secrétariat d'Etat du Premier Ministre de France ; Auguste Bekaert, président de la section de Bruxelles de l'Action Européenne Fédéraliste ; Gérard Dubois, Jean Bossuyt, Jean-Marie Charels, Christian Lejeune, Pino Piparo, Gaston Fagel, Paul Vande Perre et Marc Jacobs qui ont très largement contribué d'une façon suivie à l'étude et la rédaction de la motion pour la relance de l'Union Politique de l'Europe.

Cette motion a été présentée et adoptée par le Chapitre de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques réuni sous la présidence de S.A.I. et R. l'archiduc Otto de Habsbourg-Lorraine assisté de MM. le Dr. René Feït, député du Jura, et de Fl. R. Damman, son secrétaire perpétuel et par le Collège des Jeunes Dirigeants Européens dont le bureau était formé par MM. Bernard de Marcken, Thierry Brézillon et Pino Piparo.

La motion vient de recevoir l'agrément de nombreuses personnalités dirigeantes d'organisations militantes européennes et sera maintenant largement diffusée à travers les milieux responsables de l'avenir politique de l'Europe.

Nous vous présentons ci-après le texte de la

Résolution pour la relance de l'union politique de l'Europe

A. Les préalables

A.1. Les communautés européennes existantes, la C.E.C.A., la C.E.E. et l'Eurotam constituent, pour le moment, le seul patrimoine communautaire de l'Europe.

A.2. Nous sommes énergiquement décidés à défendre et consolider l'existence de ce patrimoine.

A.3. Les C.E. (communautés européennes) qui lient six Etats d'Europe ont largement contribué au développement des parties contractantes.

A.4. Cette prodigieuse réussite a été une source d'étonnement pour tous les pays européens qui n'ont pas voulu adhérer à l'origine aux C.E. alors qu'ils avaient été invités à le faire.

A.5. Aujourd'hui, le dynamisme de l'expansion interne des C.E., modifiant l'équilibre des relations économiques intereuropéennes, amène irrésistiblement les autres pays à venir la rejoindre.

A.6. La progression vers l'intégration économique s'étant développée d'étape en étape a permis de surmonter successivement les difficultés qui se sont présentées à la réalisation.

A.7. Cette méthode de progression par étapes s'est révélée la meilleure.

A.8. L'intégration économique a déjà entraîné chacun des Etats membres au transfert de pouvoirs nécessaires pour résoudre les problèmes communautaires.

A.9. Les C.E. ne sont qu'un premier pas vers une union européenne progressive.

A.10. L'Union européenne doit constituer une entité indépendante et souveraine à une dimension continentale.

A.11. Si l'Europe ne parvenait pas à rassembler très rapidement toutes ses forces pour vivre à une échelle continentale elle serait condamnée à perdre son indépendance et sa civilisation.

A.12. Par contre l'Europe unie peut devenir rapidement la plus grande puissance mondiale capable d'assurer sa sécurité, le développement de ses richesses, une expansion sociale d'envergure, et le prestigieux rayonnement de sa culture et de son génie créateur.

A.13. L'Europe unie sera alors aussi capable d'apporter une contribution majeure au développement mondial et de proposer des solutions valables aux problèmes internationaux.

A.14. La responsabilité de réaliser l'Union de l'Europe appartient en premier lieu aux Etats et à leur gouvernement qui doivent avoir la volonté politique de construire l'Europe et qui disposent des moyens et des pouvoirs pour le faire.

A.15. Les mouvements militants européens ont la mission et le devoir d'entretenir en permanence la foi dans le destin de l'Europe, de donner l'exemple d'une spiritualité européenne, de promouvoir un patriotisme européen, de faire preuve sans cesse d'une action sans cesse renouvelée, d'agiter l'opinion publique pour qu'une pression enthousiaste pousse les gouvernements de chaque Etat à une vocation européenne.

A.16. Toutes les tentatives d'unification européennes effectuées en dehors des C.E. ont été pratiquement négatives et ont échoué.

A.17. Les C.E. restent le seul moyen autour duquel et à partir duquel il est possible de construire et d'élargir l'Europe unie de demain.

B. Dans ces perspectives la Commisison constate :

B.1. que les C.E. subissent un dangereux ralentissement de croissance qui se manifeste à la fois au Conseil des Ministres, à la Commission, dans les gouvernements des Etats membres et dans l'opinion publique.

B.2. que les problèmes essentiels qui déterminen l'avenir même des C.E. se trouvent immobilisés par suite d'un manque de conciliation entre des tendances divergentes.

B.3. qu'une telle situation ralentit le rythme d'exécution des dispositions déjà prises, empêche la naissance de conditions favorables pour l'élaboration de nouvelles dispositions économiques et sociales et stérisilent les initiatives par suite d'à priori.

B.4. que la cohésion des C.E. conditionne son élargissement.

Below: CREC progress report, May 1969, from Dumont (see below)

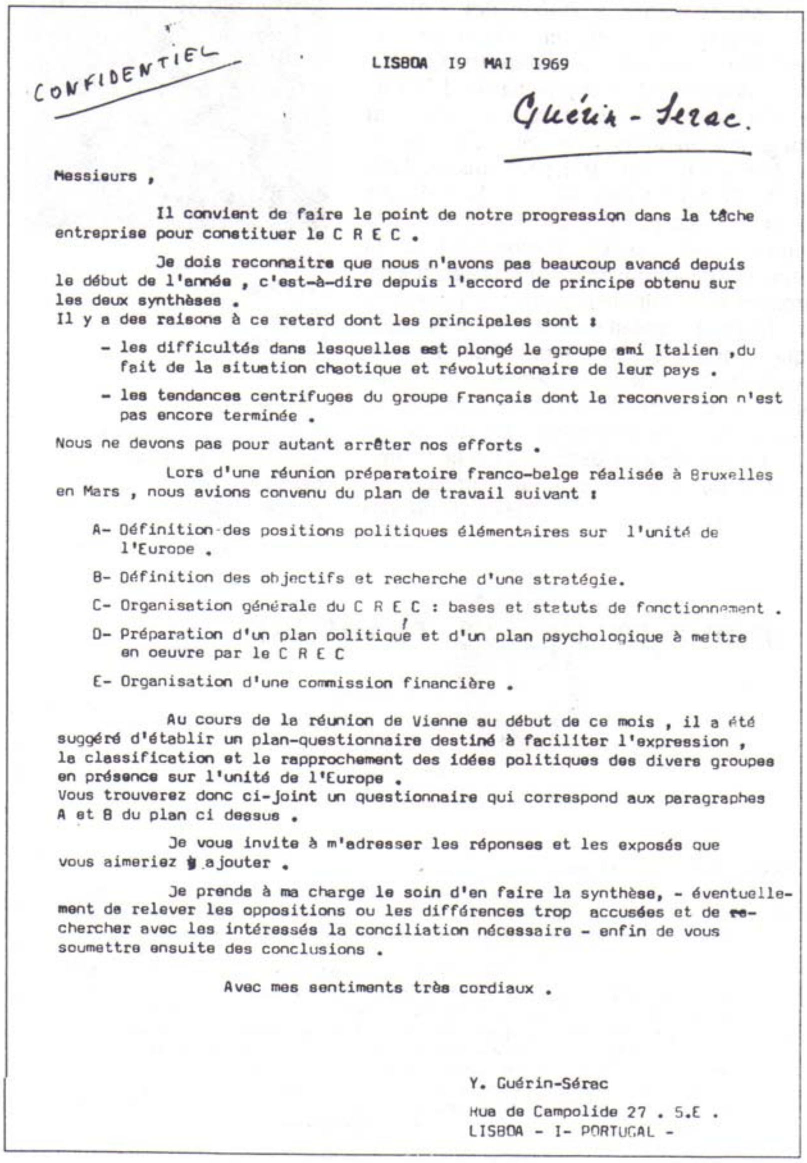

CONFIDENTIEL

LISBOA I9 MAI 1969

Guérin - Serac.

Messieurs ,

Il convient de faire le point de notre progression dans la tâche entreprise pour constituer le C R E C .

Je dois reconnaitre que nous n'avons pas beaucoup avancé depuis le début de l'année , c'est-à-dire depuis l'accord de principe obtenu sur les deux synthèses .
Il y a des raisons à ce retard dont les principales sont :

- les difficultés dans lesquelles est plongé le groupe ami Italien ,du fait de la situation chaotique et révolutionnaire de leur pays .
- les tendances centrifuges du groupe Français dont la reconversion n'est pas encore terminée .

Nous ne devons pas pour autant arrêter nos efforts .

Lors d'une réunion préparatoire franco-belge réalisée à Bruxelles en Mars , nous avions convenu du plan de travail suivant :

A- Définition des positions politiques élémentaires sur l'unité de l'Europe .

B- Définition des objectifs et recherche d'une stratégie.

C- Organisation générale du C R E C : bases et statuts de fonctionnement .

D- Préparation d'un plan politique et d'un plan psychologique à mettre en oeuvre par le C R E C

E- Organisation d'une commission financière .

Au cours de la réunion de Vienne au début de ce mois , il a été suggéré d'établir un plan-questionnaire destiné à faciliter l'expression , la classification et le rapprochement des idées politiques des divers groupes en présence sur l'unité de l'Europe .
Vous trouverez donc ci-joint un questionnaire qui correspond aux paragraphes A et B du plan ci dessus .

Je vous invite à m'adresser les réponses et les exposés que vous aimeriez y ajouter .

Je prends à ma charge le soin d'en faire la synthèse, - éventuellement de relever les oppositions ou les différences trop accusées et de rechercher avec les intéressés la conciliation nécessaire - enfin de vous soumettre ensuite des conclusions .

Avec mes sentiments très cordiaux .

Y. Guérin-Sérac
Rue de Campolide 27 . 5.E .
LISBOA - I- PORTUGAL -

Below: AESP membership of June 1970, from Péan.

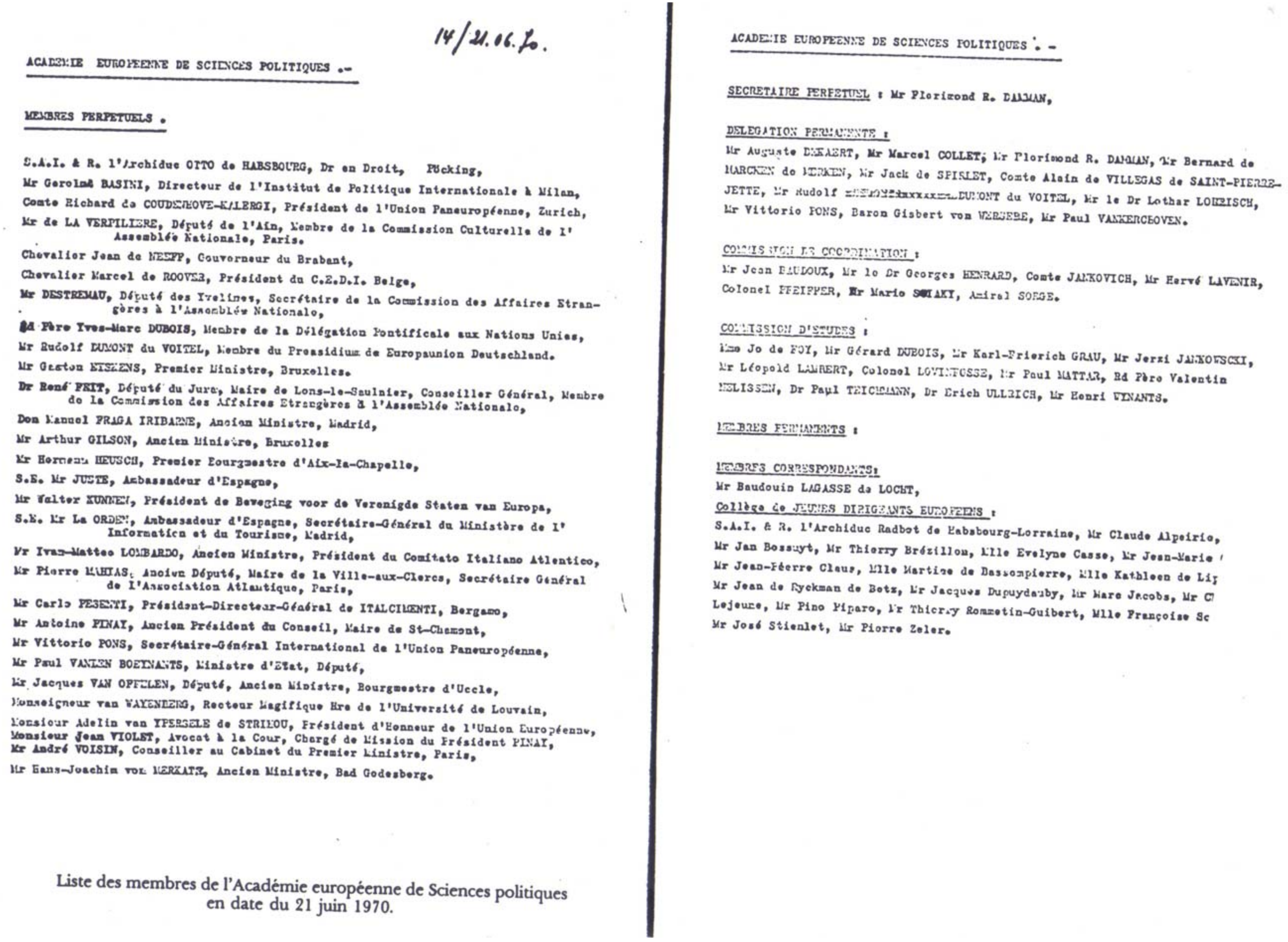

14/21.06.70.

ACADEMIE EUROPEENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES .-

MEMBRES PERPETUELS .

S.A.I. & R. l'Archidue OTTO de HABSBOURG, Dr en Droit, Pöcking,

Mr Gerolmo BASINI, Directeur de l'Institut de Politique Internationale à Milan,

Comte Richard de COUDENHOVE-KALERGI, Président de l'Union Paneuropéenne, Zurich,

Mr de LA VERPILIERE, Député de l'Ain, Membre de la Commission Culturelle de l'Assemblée Nationale, Paris.

Chevalier Jean de NEEFF, Gouverneur du Brabant,

Chevalier Marcel de ROOVER, Président du C.E.D.I. Belge,

Mr DESTREMAU, Député des Yvelines, Secrétaire de la Commission des Affaires Etrangères à l'Assemblée Nationale,

Rd Père Yves-Marc DUBOIS, Membre de la Délégation Pontificale aux Nations Unies,

Mr Rudolf DUMONT du VOITEL, Membre du Praesidium de Europaunion Deutschland.

Mr Gaston EYSKENS, Premier Ministre, Bruxelles.

Dr René FEIT, Député du Jura, Maire de Lons-le-Saulnier, Conseiller Général, Membre de la Commission des Affaires Etrangères à l'Assemblée Nationale,

Don Manuel FRAGA IRIBARNE, Ancien Ministre, Madrid,

Mr Arthur GILSON, Ancien Ministre, Bruxelles

Mr Hermann HEUSCH, Premier Bourgmestre d'Aix-la-Chapelle,

S.E. Mr JUSTE, Ambassadeur d'Espagne,

Mr Walter KUNNEN, Président de Beweging voor de Verenigde Staten van Europa,

S.E. Mr La ORDEN, Ambassadeur d'Espagne, Secrétaire-Général du Ministère de l'Information et du Tourisme, Madrid,

Mr Ivan-Matteo LOMBARDO, Ancien Ministre, Président du Comitato Italiano Atlantico,

Mr Pierre MAHIAS, Ancien Député, Maire de la Ville-aux-Clercs, Secrétaire Général de l'Association Atlantique, Paris,

Mr Carlo PESENTI, Président-Directeur-Général de ITALCIMENTI, Bergamo,

Mr Antoine PINAY, Ancien Président du Conseil, Maire de St-Chamont,

Mr Vittorio PONS, Secrétaire-Général International de l'Union Paneuropéenne,

Mr Paul VANDEN BOEYNANTS, Ministre d'Etat, Député,

Mr Jacques VAN OFFELEN, Député, Ancien Ministre, Bourgmestre d'Uccle,

Monseigneur van WAYENBERG, Recteur Magifique Hre de l'Université de Louvain,

Monsieur Adelin van YPERSELE de STRIHOU, Président d'Honneur de l'Union Européenne,
Monsieur Jean VIOLET, Avocat à la Cour, Chargé de Mission du Président PINAY,
Mr André VOISIN, Conseiller au Cabinet du Premier Ministre, Paris,

Mr Hans-Joachim von MERKATZ, Ancien Ministre, Bad Godesberg.

Liste des membres de l'Académie européenne de Sciences politiques
en date du 21 juin 1970.

ACADEMIE EUROPEENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES . -

SECRETAIRE PERPETUEL : Mr Florimond R. DAMMAN,

DELEGATION PERMANENTE :
Mr Auguste DEKAERT, Mr Marcel COLLET, Mr Florimond R. DAMMAN, Mr Bernard de MARCKEN de MERKEN, Mr Jack de SPIRLET, Comte Alain de VILLEGAS de SAINT-PIERRE-JETTE, Mr Rudolf DUMONT du VOITEL, Mr le Dr Lothar LOHRISCH, Mr Vittorio PONS, Baron Gisbert von WERSEBE, Mr Paul VANKERCHOVEN.

COMMISSION DE COORDINATION :
Mr Jean BAUDOUX, Mr le Dr Georges HENRARD, Comte JANKOVICH, Mr Hervé LAVENIR, Colonel PFEIFFER, Mr Mario SOMAKY, Amiral SORGE.

COMMISSION D'ETUDES :
Mme Jo de FOY, Mr Gérard DUBOIS, Mr Karl-Friedrich GRAU, Mr Jerzi JANKOWSCKI, Mr Léopold LAMBERT, Colonel LOVINFOSSE, Mr Paul MATTAR, Rd Père Valentin MELISSEN, Dr Paul TEICHMANN, Dr Erich ULLRICH, Mr Henri WINANTS.

MEMBRES PERMANENTS :

MEMBRES CORRESPONDANTS:
Mr Baudouin LAGASSE de LOCHT,
Collège de JEUNES DIRIGEANTS EUROPEENS :
S.A.I. & R. l'Archiduc Radbot de Habsbourg-Lorraine, Mr Claude Alpeirie, Mr Jan Bossuyt, Mr Thierry Brézillon, Mlle Evelyne Casse, Mr Jean-Marie
Mr Jean-Pierre Claus, Mlle Martine de Bassompierre, Mlle Kathleen de Li
Mr Jean de Ryckman de Betz, Mr Jacques Dupuydauby, Mr Marc Jacobs, Mr C
Lejeune, Mr Pino Piparo, Mr Thierry Rommetin-Guibert, Mlle Françoise Sc
Mr José Stienlet, Mr Pierre Zeler.

Below: MAUE membership appeal c. 1970

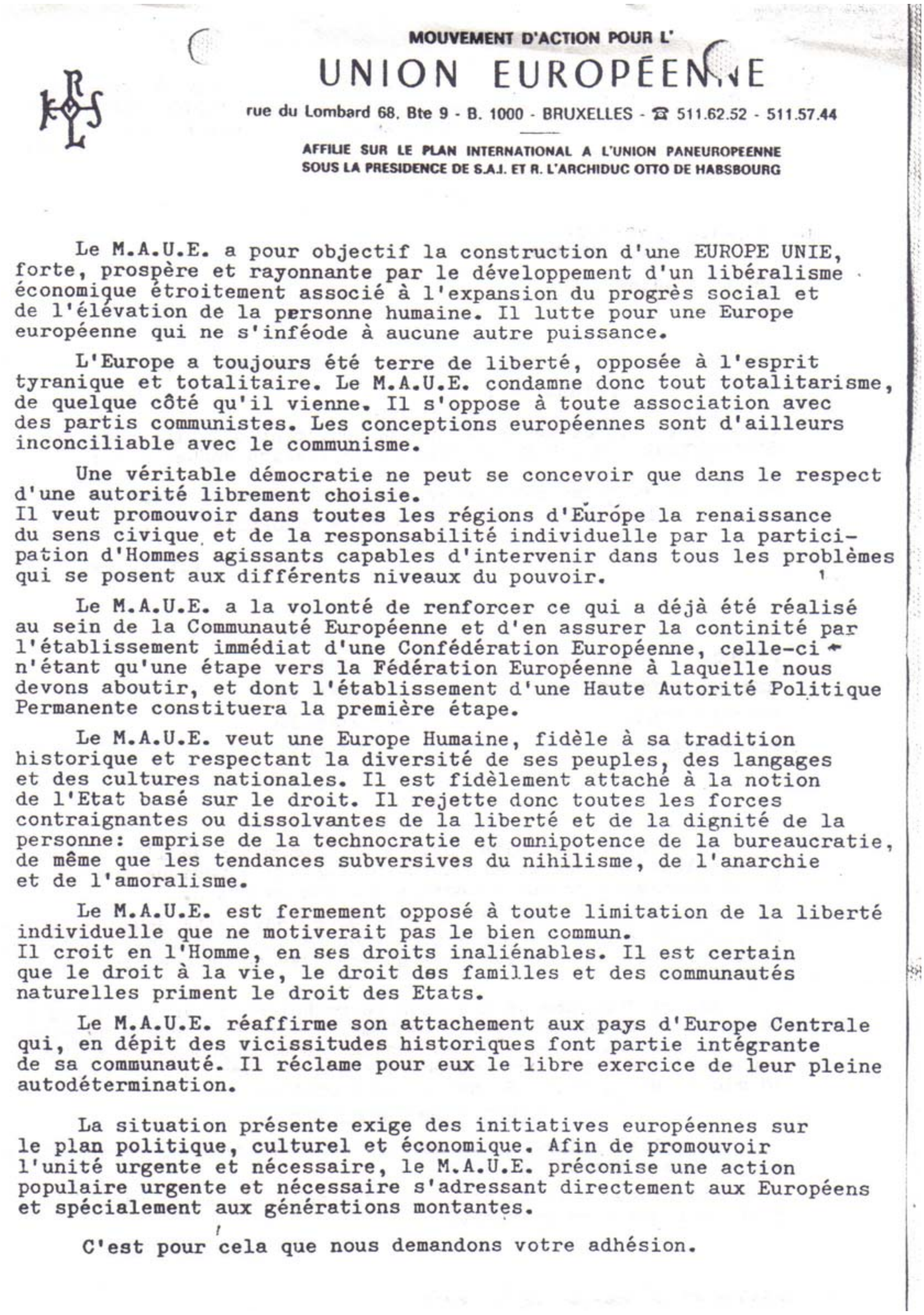

MOUVEMENT D'ACTION POUR L'

UNION EUROPÉENNE

rue du Lombard 68, Bte 9 - B. 1000 - BRUXELLES - ☎ 511.62.52 - 511.57.44

AFFILIE SUR LE PLAN INTERNATIONAL A L'UNION PANEUROPEENNE
SOUS LA PRESIDENCE DE S.A.I. ET R. L'ARCHIDUC OTTO DE HABSBOURG

Le M.A.U.E. a pour objectif la construction d'une EUROPE UNIE, forte, prospère et rayonnante par le développement d'un libéralisme économique étroitement associé à l'expansion du progrès social et de l'élévation de la personne humaine. Il lutte pour une Europe européenne qui ne s'inféode à aucune autre puissance.

L'Europe a toujours été terre de liberté, opposée à l'esprit tyranique et totalitaire. Le M.A.U.E. condamne donc tout totalitarisme, de quelque côté qu'il vienne. Il s'oppose à toute association avec des partis communistes. Les conceptions européennes sont d'ailleurs inconciliable avec le communisme.

Une véritable démocratie ne peut se concevoir que dans le respect d'une autorité librement choisie.
Il veut promouvoir dans toutes les régions d'Europe la renaissance du sens civique et de la responsabilité individuelle par la participation d'Hommes agissants capables d'intervenir dans tous les problèmes qui se posent aux différents niveaux du pouvoir.

Le M.A.U.E. a la volonté de renforcer ce qui a déjà été réalisé au sein de la Communauté Européenne et d'en assurer la continité par l'établissement immédiat d'une Confédération Européenne, celle-ci n'étant qu'une étape vers la Fédération Européenne à laquelle nous devons aboutir, et dont l'établissement d'une Haute Autorité Politique Permanente constituera la première étape.

Le M.A.U.E. veut une Europe Humaine, fidèle à sa tradition historique et respectant la diversité de ses peuples, des langages et des cultures nationales. Il est fidèlement attaché à la notion de l'Etat basé sur le droit. Il rejette donc toutes les forces contraignantes ou dissolvantes de la liberté et de la dignité de la personne: emprise de la technocratie et omnipotence de la bureaucratie, de même que les tendances subversives du nihilisme, de l'anarchie et de l'amoralisme.

Le M.A.U.E. est fermement opposé à toute limitation de la liberté individuelle que ne motiverait pas le bien commun.
Il croit en l'Homme, en ses droits inaliénables. Il est certain que le droit à la vie, le droit des familles et des communautés naturelles priment le droit des Etats.

Le M.A.U.E. réaffirme son attachement aux pays d'Europe Centrale qui, en dépit des vicissitudes historiques font partie intégrante de sa communauté. Il réclame pour eux le libre exercice de leur pleine autodétermination.

La situation présente exige des initiatives européennes sur le plan politique, culturel et économique. Afin de promouvoir l'unité urgente et nécessaire, le M.A.U.E. préconise une action populaire urgente et nécessaire s'adressant directement aux Européens et spécialement aux générations montantes.

C'est pour cela que nous demandons votre adhésion.

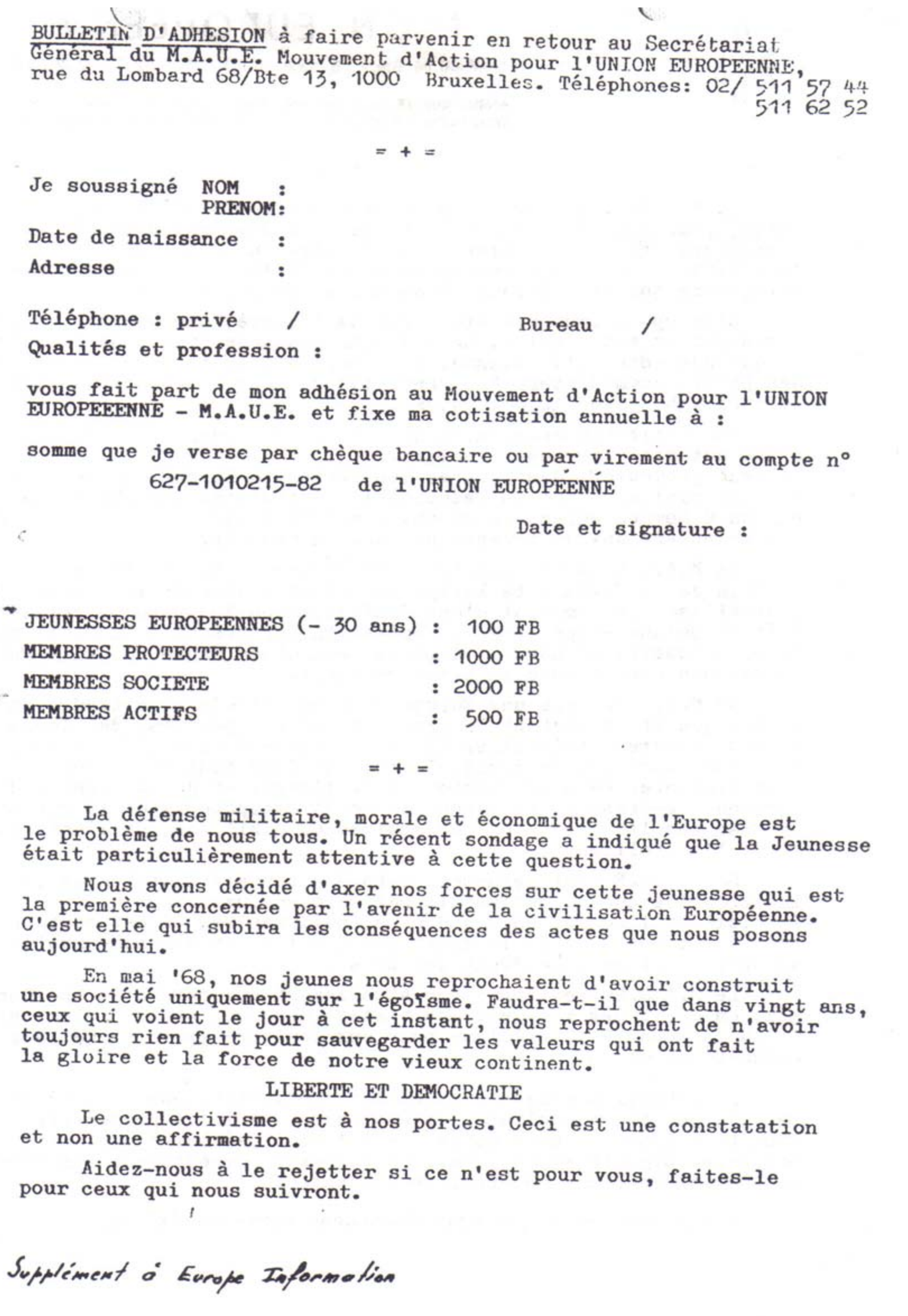

BULLETIN D'ADHESION à faire parvenir en retour au Secrétariat Général du M.A.U.E. Mouvement d'Action pour l'UNION EUROPEENNE, rue du Lombard 68/Bte 13, 1000 Bruxelles. Téléphones: 02/ 511 57 44
511 62 52

= + =

Je soussigné NOM :
PRENOM:

Date de naissance :

Adresse :

Téléphone : privé / Bureau /

Qualités et profession :

vous fait part de mon adhésion au Mouvement d'Action pour l'UNION EUROPEEENNE - M.A.U.E. et fixe ma cotisation annuelle à :

somme que je verse par chèque bancaire ou par virement au compte n° 627-1010215-82 de l'UNION EUROPEENNE

Date et signature :

JEUNESSES EUROPEENNES (- 30 ans) :	100 FB
MEMBRES PROTECTEURS :	1000 FB
MEMBRES SOCIETE :	2000 FB
MEMBRES ACTIFS :	500 FB

= + =

La défense militaire, morale et économique de l'Europe est le problème de nous tous. Un récent sondage a indiqué que la Jeunesse était particulièrement attentive à cette question.

Nous avons décidé d'axer nos forces sur cette jeunesse qui est la première concernée par l'avenir de la civilisation Européenne. C'est elle qui subira les conséquences des actes que nous posons aujourd'hui.

En mai '68, nos jeunes nous reprochaient d'avoir construit une société uniquement sur l'égoïsme. Faudra-t-il que dans vingt ans, ceux qui voient le jour à cet instant, nous reprochent de n'avoir toujours rien fait pour sauvegarder les valeurs qui ont fait la gloire et la force de notre vieux continent.

LIBERTE ET DEMOCRATIE

Le collectivisme est à nos portes. Ceci est une constatation et non une affirmation.

Aidez-nous à le rejetter si ce n'est pour vous, faites-le pour ceux qui nous suivront.

Supplément à Europe Information

Below: note by Damman on AESP Study Commission 2nd October 1971, accepted attendances.

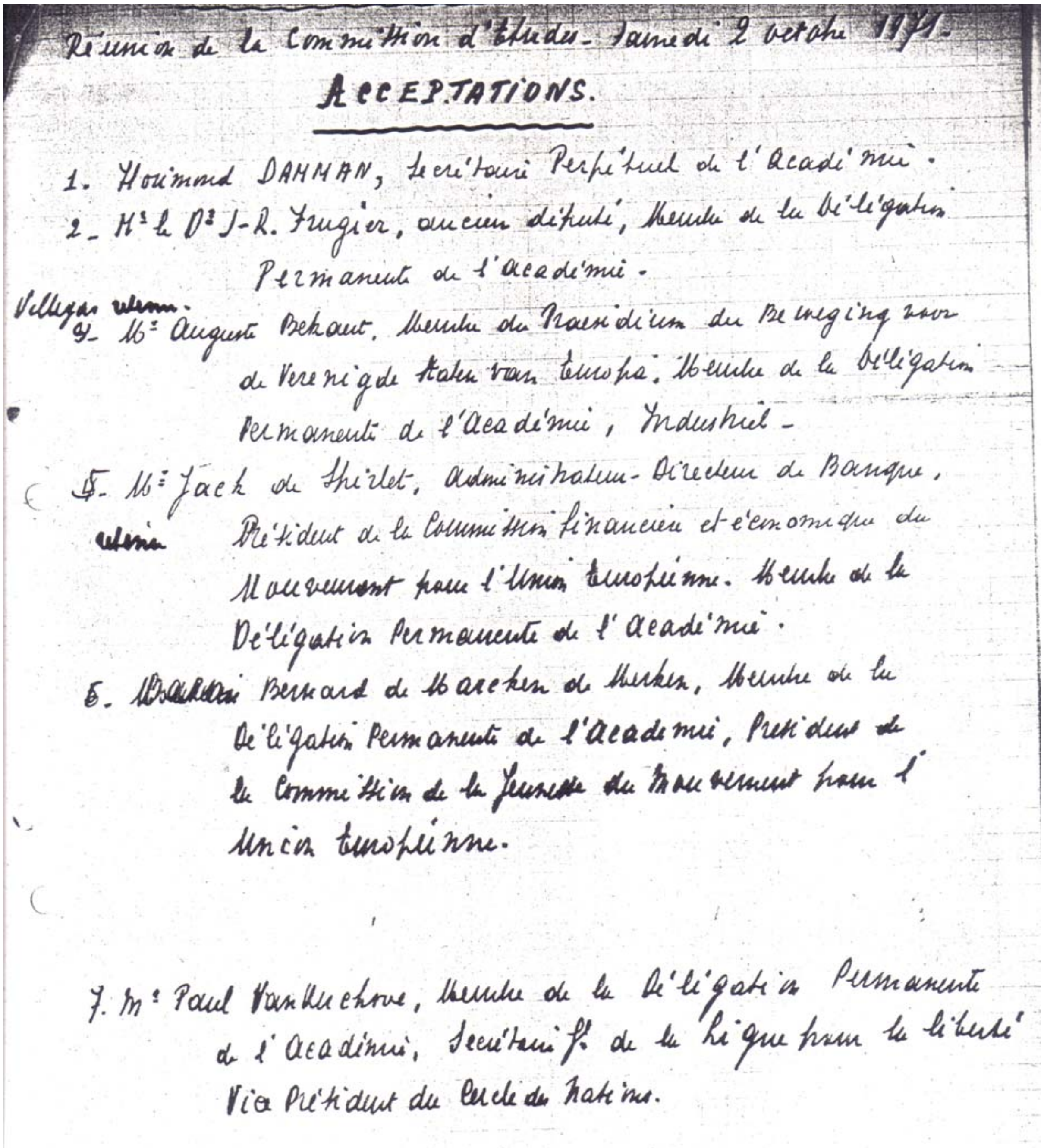

Réunion de la Commission d'Etudes - Samedi 2 octobre 1971.

ACCEPTATIONS.

1. Raymond DAMMAN, Secrétaire Perpétuel de l'Académie.
2. M. le Dr J-R. Frugier, ancien député, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'Académie.

Villegas [illegible]

4. M. Auguste Bekaert, Membre du Praesidium der Beweging voor de Verenigde Staten van Europa. Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'Académie, Industriel.
5. M. Jack de Spirlet, Administrateur-Directeur de Banque, Président de la Commission financière et économique du Mouvement pour l'Union Européenne. Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'Académie.

[illegible]

6. Baron Bernard de Marcken de Merken, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'Académie, Président de la Commission de la Jeunesse du Mouvement pour l'Union Européenne.

7. M. Paul Vankerkhove, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'Académie, Secrétaire Gl. de la Ligue pour la liberté, Vice Président du Cercle des Nations.

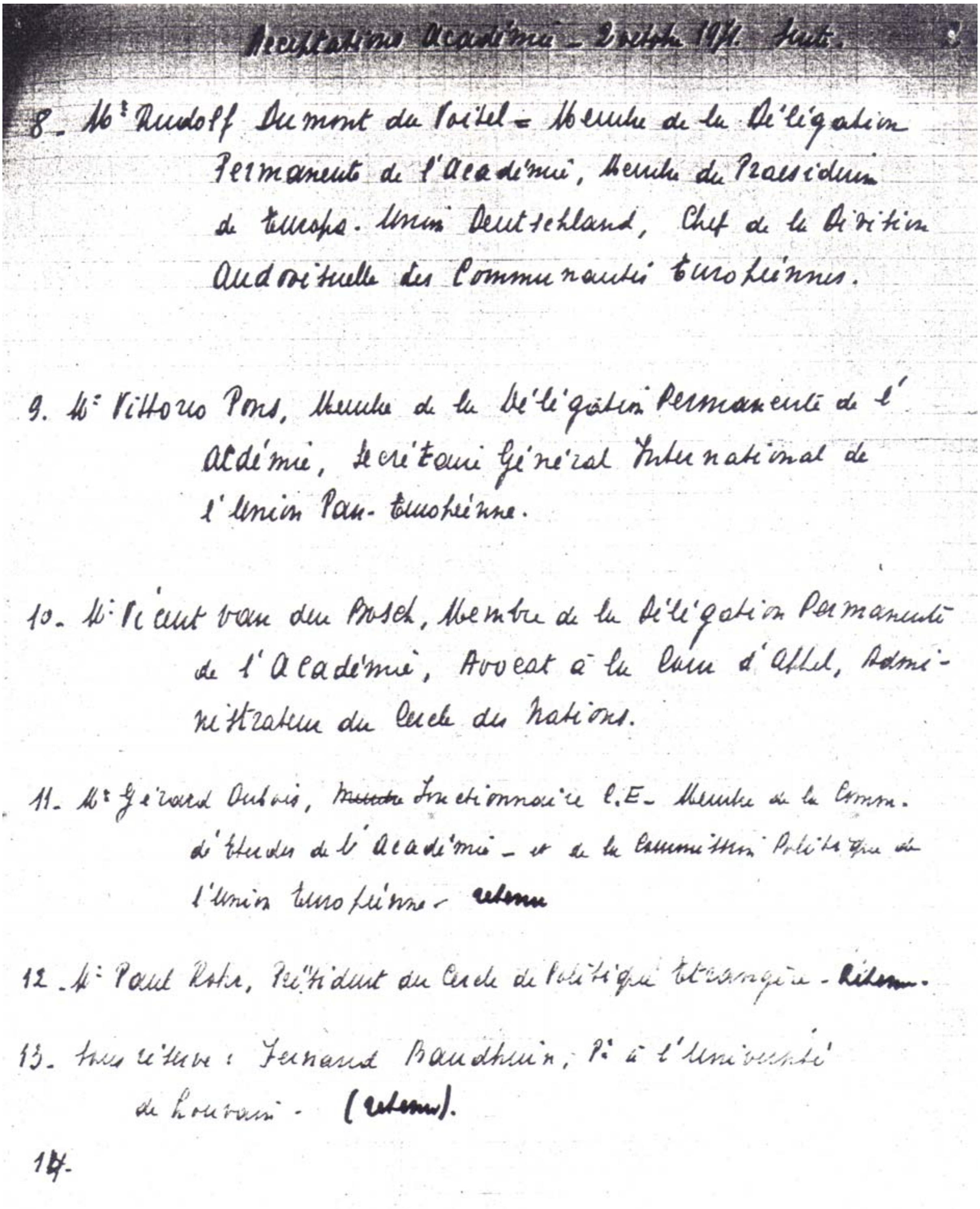

Acceptations Académie – 2 octobre 1971. Suite.

8. – Mr Rudolf Dumont du Voitel – Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'Académie, Membre du Praesidium de Europa-Union Deutschland, Chef de la Division Audiovisuelle des Communautés Européennes.

9. Mr Vittorio Pons, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'Académie, Secrétaire Général International de l'Union Pan-Européenne.

10. – Mr Vicent van den Bosch, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'Académie, Avocat à la Cour d'Appel, Administrateur du Cercle des Nations.

11. – Mr Gérard Dubois, ~~membre~~ fonctionnaire C.E. – Membre de la Comm. d'Etudes de l'Académie – et de la Commission Politique de l'Union Européenne – retenu

12. – Mr Paul Rohr, Président du Cercle de Politique Etrangère – Retenu.

13. – Mr le Recteur : Fernand Baudhuin, Pr à l'Université de Louvain – (retenu).

14. –

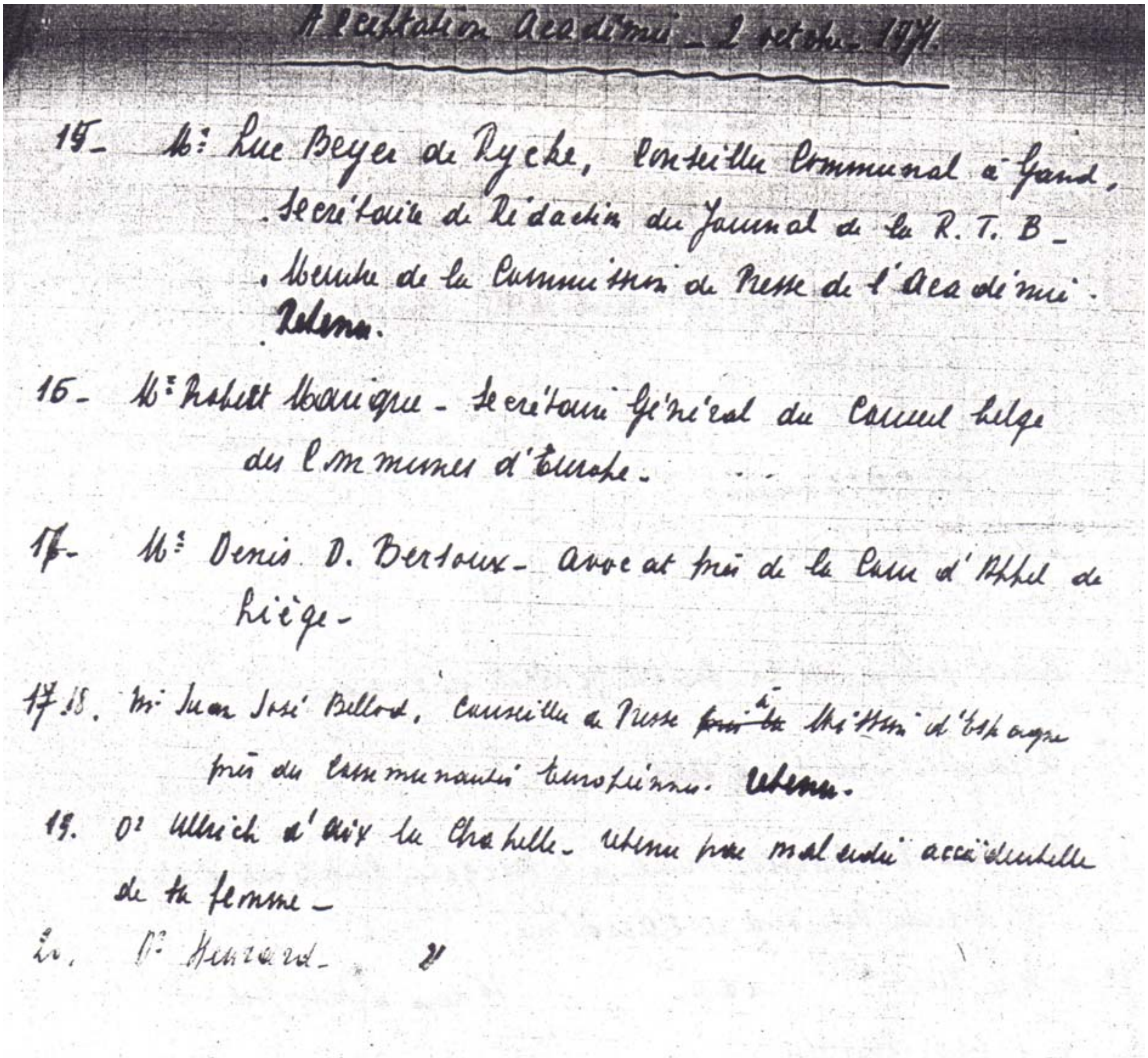

Accréditation Académie – 2 octobre 1971.

15– Mr Luc Beyer de Ryche, Conseiller Communal à Gand,
. Secrétaire de Rédaction du Journal de la R.T.B –
. Membre de la Commission de Presse de l'Académie.
. Retenu.

16 – Mr Robert Mavigne – Secrétaire Général du Conseil belge
des Communes d'Europe – . .

17 – Mr Denis D. Bertoux – Avocat près de la Cour d'Appel de
Liège –

17.18. Mr Juan José Bellod, Conseiller de Presse ~~près la~~ à la Mission d'Espagne
près des Communautés Européennes. retenu.

19. Dr Ullrich d'Aix la Chapelle – retenu par maladie accidentelle
de sa femme –

20. Dr Hernard – "

Below: note by Damman on AESP Study Commission 2nd October 1971, apologies for absence.

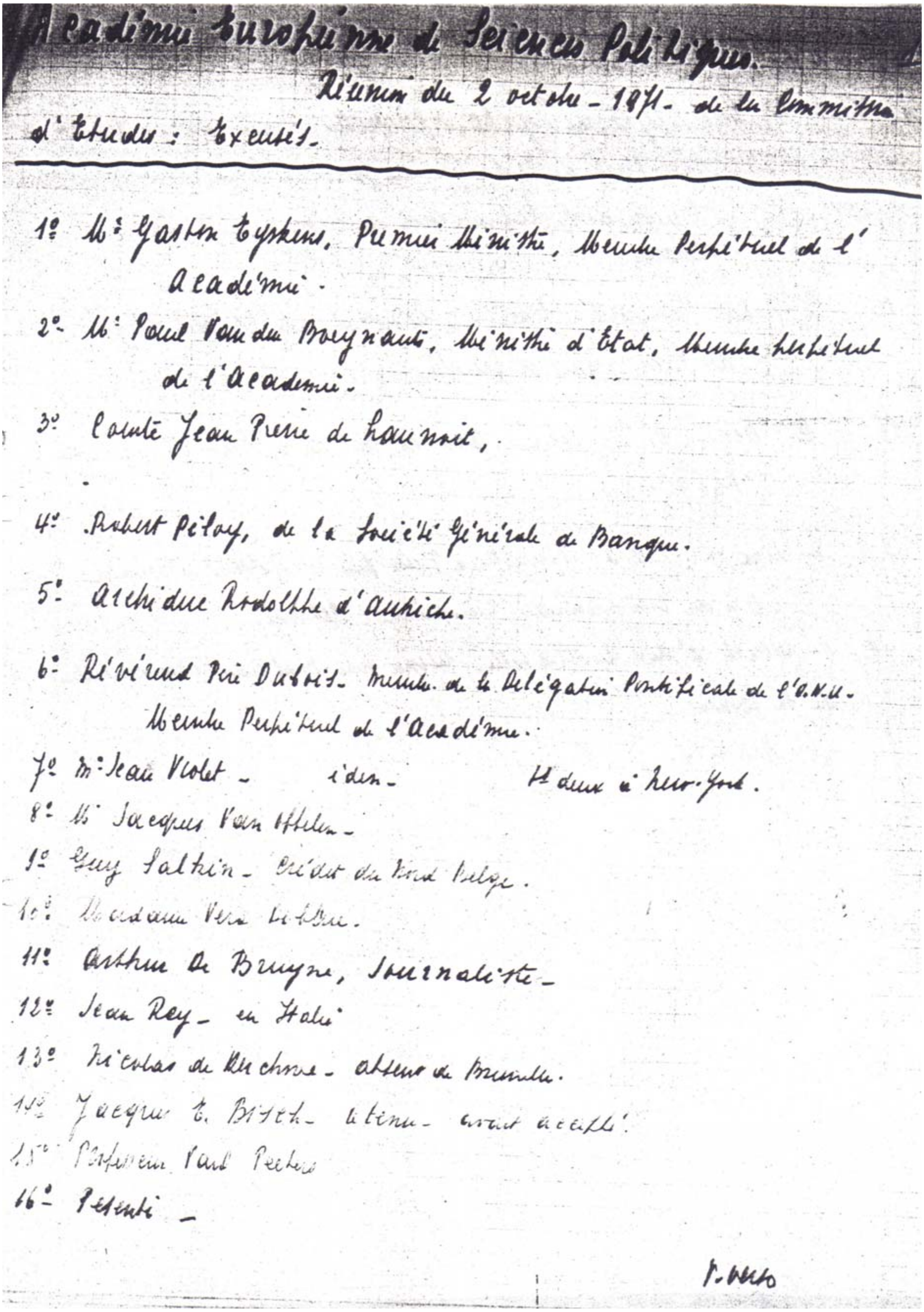

Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques.
Réunion du 2 octobre – 1971 – de la Commission d'Études : Excusés.

1° Mr Gaston Eyskens, Premier Ministre, Membre Perpétuel de l'Académie.
2° Mr Paul Vanden Boeynants, Ministre d'État, Membre Perpétuel de l'Académie.
3° Comte Jean Pierre de Launoit,
4° Robert Piloy, de la Société Générale de Banque.
5° Archiduc Rodolphe d'Autriche.
6° Révérend Père Dubois – Membre de la Délégation Pontificale de l'O.N.U. – Membre Perpétuel de l'Académie.
7° Mr Jean Violet – idem – Tous deux à New-York.
8° Mr Jacques Van Offelen –
9° Guy Salkin – Crédit du Nord Belge.
10° Madame Vera Lebbe.
11° Arthur De Bruyne, Journaliste –
12° Jean Rey – en Italie
13° Nicolas de Kerchove – absent de Bruxelles.
14° Jacques E. Bisch – retenu – avait accepté.
15° Professeur Paul Peeters
16° Pesenti –

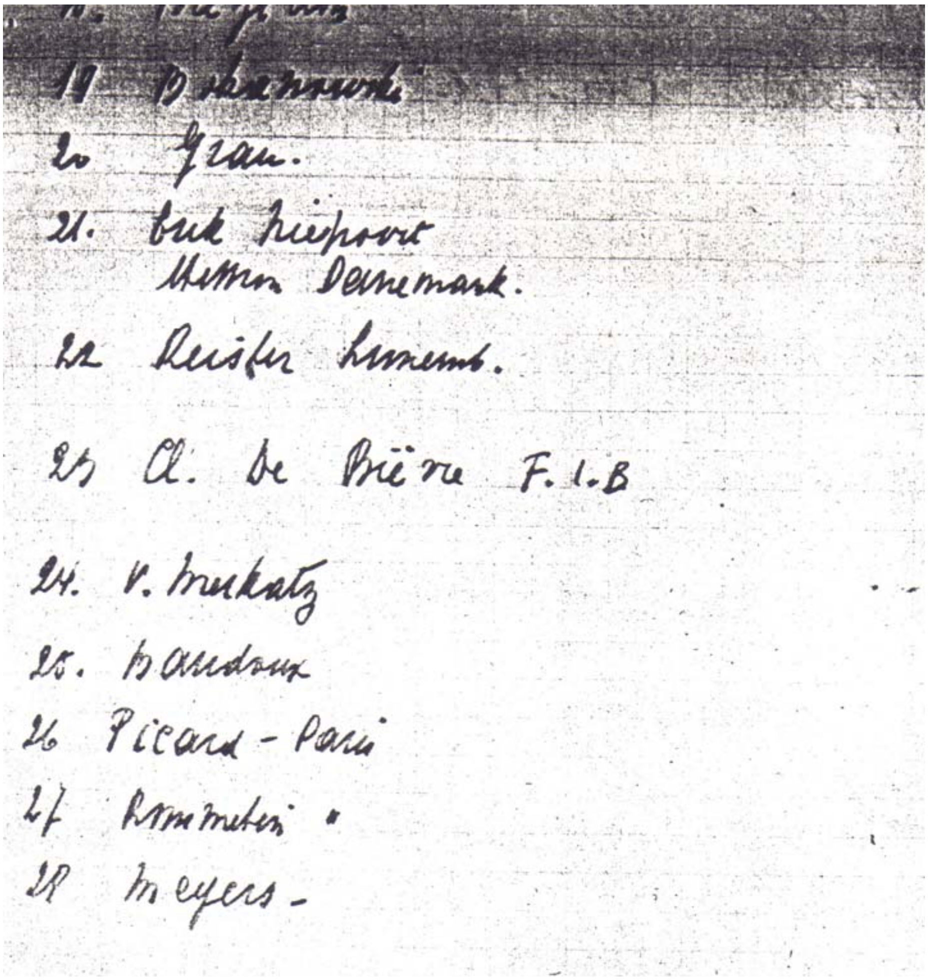

19 [illegible]

20 Gram.

21. Erik Nieuport
Metten Danemark.

22 Reisfer Lemmens.

23 Cl. De Brière F.I.B

24. V. Merkatz

25. Baudoux

26 Picard - Paris

27 Rommetein

28 Meyers -

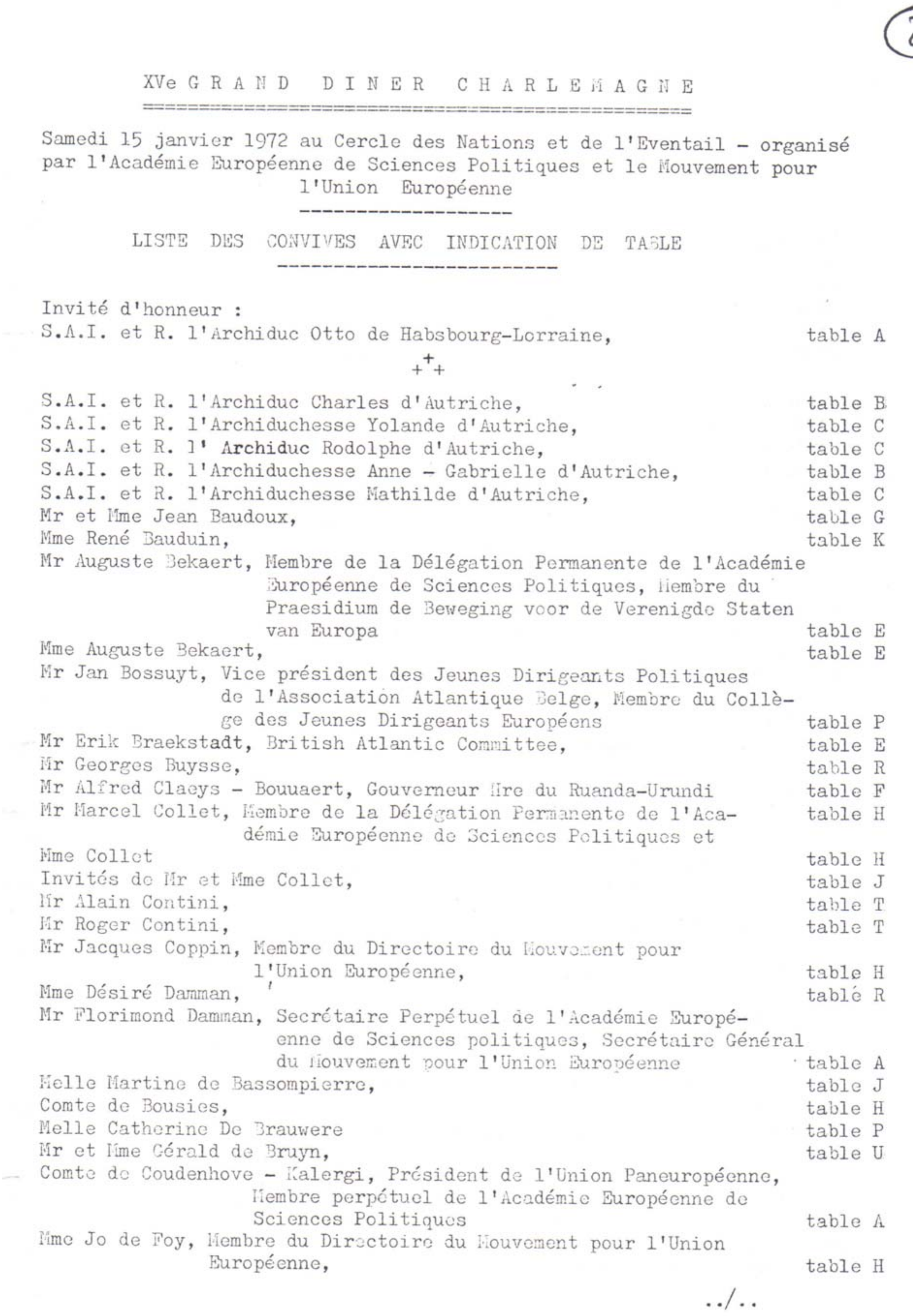

XVe GRAND DINER CHARLEMAGNE

Samedi 15 janvier 1972 au Cercle des Nations et de l'Eventail - organisé par l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques et le Mouvement pour l'Union Européenne

LISTE DES CONVIVES AVEC INDICATION DE TABLE

Invité d'honneur :

S.A.I. et R. l'Archiduc Otto de Habsbourg-Lorraine,	table A

+
+ +

S.A.I. et R. l'Archiduc Charles d'Autriche,	table B
S.A.I. et R. l'Archiduchesse Yolande d'Autriche,	table C
S.A.I. et R. l' Archiduc Rodolphe d'Autriche,	table C
S.A.I. et R. l'Archiduchesse Anne - Gabrielle d'Autriche,	table B
S.A.I. et R. l'Archiduchesse Mathilde d'Autriche,	table C
Mr et Mme Jean Baudoux,	table G
Mme René Bauduin,	table K
Mr Auguste Bekaert, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques, Membre du Praesidium de Beweging voor de Verenigde Staten van Europa	table E
Mme Auguste Bekaert,	table E
Mr Jan Bossuyt, Vice président des Jeunes Dirigeants Politiques de l'Association Atlantique Belge, Membre du Collège des Jeunes Dirigeants Européens	table P
Mr Erik Braekstadt, British Atlantic Committee,	table E
Mr Georges Buysse,	table R
Mr Alfred Claeys - Bouuaert, Gouverneur Hre du Ruanda-Urundi	table F
Mr Marcel Collet, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques et	table H
Mme Collet	table H
Invités de Mr et Mme Collet,	table J
Mr Alain Contini,	table T
Mr Roger Contini,	table T
Mr Jacques Coppin, Membre du Directoire du Mouvement pour l'Union Européenne,	table H
Mme Désiré Damman,	table R
Mr Florimond Damman, Secrétaire Perpétuel de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences politiques, Secrétaire Général du Mouvement pour l'Union Européenne	table A
Melle Martine de Bassompierre,	table J
Comte de Bousies,	table H
Melle Catherine De Brauwere	table P
Mr et Mme Gérald de Bruyn,	table U
Comte de Coudenhove - Kalergi, Président de l'Union Paneuropéenne, Membre perpétuel de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques	table A
Mme Jo de Foy, Membre du Directoire du Mouvement pour l'Union Européenne,	table H

../..

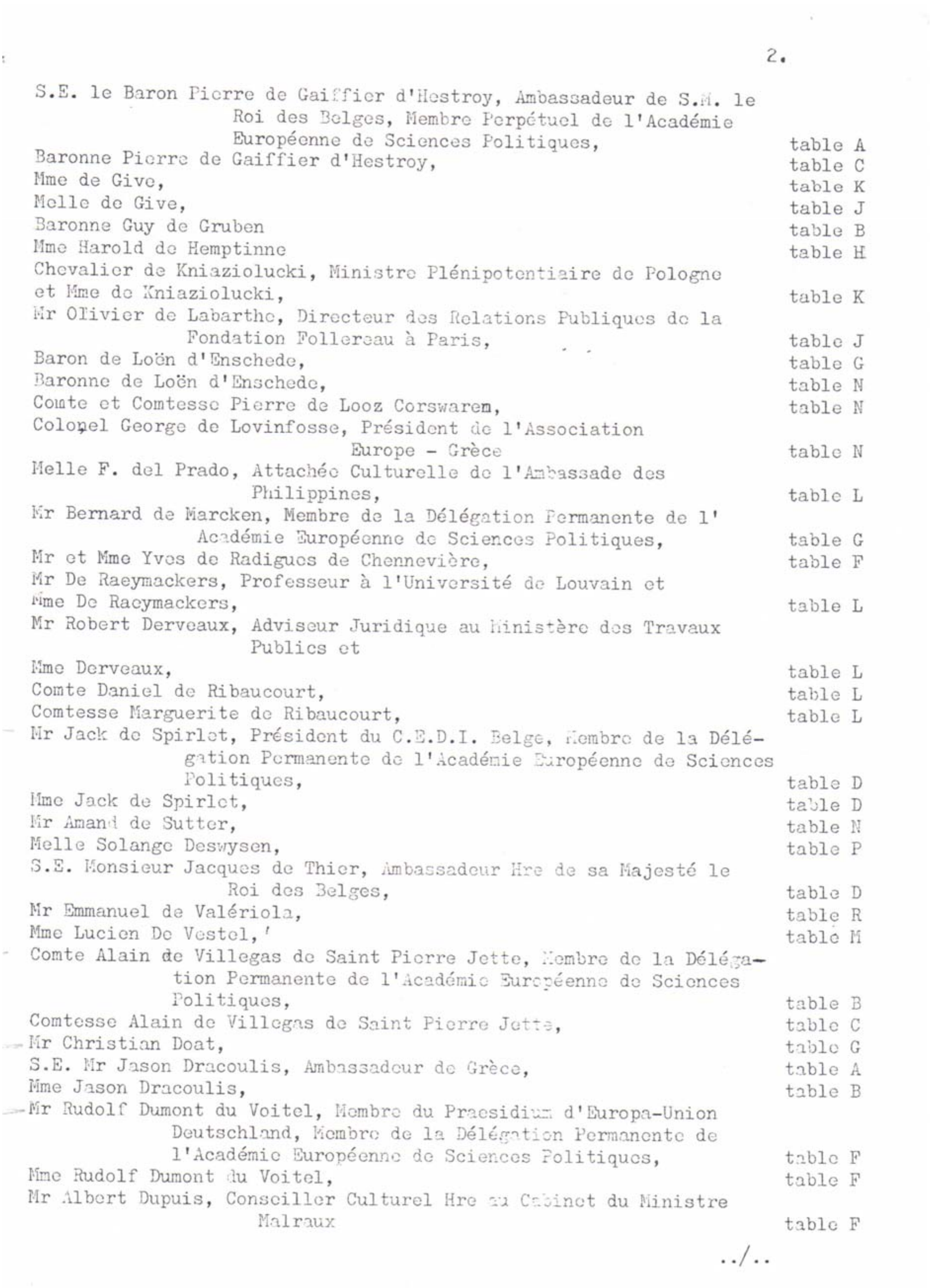

2.

S.E. le Baron Pierre de Gaiffier d'Hestroy, Ambassadeur de S.M. le Roi des Belges, Membre Perpétuel de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques,	table A
Baronne Pierre de Gaiffier d'Hestroy,	table C
Mme de Give,	table K
Melle de Give,	table J
Baronne Guy de Gruben	table B
Mme Harold de Hemptinne	table H
Chevalier de Kniaziolucki, Ministre Plénipotentiaire de Pologne et Mme de Kniaziolucki,	table K
Mr Olivier de Labarthe, Directeur des Relations Publiques de la Fondation Follereau à Paris,	table J
Baron de Loën d'Enschede,	table G
Baronne de Loën d'Enschede,	table N
Comte et Comtesse Pierre de Looz Corswarem,	table N
Colonel George de Lovinfosse, Président de l'Association Europe - Grèce	table N
Melle F. del Prado, Attachée Culturelle de l'Ambassade des Philippines,	table L
Mr Bernard de Marcken, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques,	table G
Mr et Mme Yves de Radigues de Chennevière,	table F
Mr De Raeymackers, Professeur à l'Université de Louvain et Mme De Raeymackers,	table L
Mr Robert Derveaux, Adviseur Juridique au Ministère des Travaux Publics et Mme Derveaux,	table L
Comte Daniel de Ribaucourt,	table L
Comtesse Marguerite de Ribaucourt,	table L
Mr Jack de Spirlet, Président du C.E.D.I. Belge, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques,	table D
Mme Jack de Spirlet,	table D
Mr Amand de Sutter,	table N
Melle Solange Deswysen,	table P
S.E. Monsieur Jacques de Thier, Ambassadeur Hre de sa Majesté le Roi des Belges,	table D
Mr Emmanuel de Valériola,	table R
Mme Lucien De Vestel,	table M
Comte Alain de Villegas de Saint Pierre Jette, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques,	table B
Comtesse Alain de Villegas de Saint Pierre Jette,	table C
Mr Christian Doat,	table G
S.E. Mr Jason Dracoulis, Ambassadeur de Grèce,	table A
Mme Jason Dracoulis,	table B
Mr Rudolf Dumont du Voitel, Membre du Praesidium d'Europa-Union Deutschland, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques,	table F
Mme Rudolf Dumont du Voitel,	table F
Mr Albert Dupuis, Conseiller Culturel Hre au Cabinet du Ministre Malraux	table F

../..

3.

Mr Hermann Ehringer, Communauté Economique Européenne, et Mme Ehringer,	table F
Mr et Mme Gaston Fagel,	table T
Mr Henri Fettweis,	table U
Mr le Dr Heinz Forsteneichner, Président de Deutsche- Französicher Kreis,	table C
Mr et Mme Prosper Francotte,	table E
Mr le Dr Jean -R. Frugier, ancien Député, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques,	table A
Mme Géron,	table L
Comtesse Godtz de Steyer Zu Ratzenberg,	table G
Mr Karl Friederich Grau, Secrétaire Gl de Paneuropa Union Deutschland	table M
Melle Renée Grimonpont	table N
Mr le Dr Georges Henrard, Président de l'Assemblée Gle de la Fédération Belge des Chambres Syndicales des Médecins,	table P
Mr Hermann Heusch, Premier Bourgmestre de la Ville d'Aix- la- Chapelle, Membre Perpétuel de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques,	table B
Mme Hermann Heusch,	table C
Mr et Mme Pierre-Félix Hoffmann,	table S
Mr George Hooreman,	table K
Mr et Mme Michel Illick,	table U
Mr Roberto Jacobo, Conseiller à l'Ambassade d'Espagne	table D
Mme Roberto Jacobo,	table E
Mme Louis Jacquet-Billen, Membre du Directoire du Mouvement pour l'Union Européenne,	table M
Mr Jerzy Jankowsky, Président de l'Union Européenne des Fédéralistes Polonais et Mme Jankowsky,	table M
Mme John Jans,	table P
Mme Joly,	table T
X Mr Jacques Jonet,	table J
Mr Kellner, Attaché Culturel à l'Ambassade du Canada,	table E
Mme Kellner,	table G
Mr Armand Kemps,	table G
Mme Armand Kemps,	table D
Mr Shih Ke - Ting, Chargé d'Affaires de la République de Chine	table C
Mr et Mme René Keyaerts,	table T
Mr et Mme Walter Kniep,	table U
Mr Werner Knies, de Frankfurt/Main	table E
Mme Adrien Kumpen,	table H
Mme Lipkowski - Harthorn	table D
Melle Kathleen Lipkowski- Harthorn,	table J
Mr Livin, représentant le Journal La Libre Belgique	table L
Mr Lo, Secrétaire de L'Ambassade de la République de Chine	table H
Mr et Mme Philippe Mal,	table N
Mr Robert Marique, Secrétaire Gl du Conseil des Communes d'Europe,	table K

../..

Mr Paul Mattar, Porte Parole Allemand du Service de l'Information de l'O.T.A.N. et	
Mme Mattar,	table G
Mr Stanislas Merlo,	table M
Mme Mertens,	table P
Mr Adolf Milkovic, Secrétaire Général de Paneuropa Union Osterreich,	table M
Rd Pre Valentin Nélissen, Directeur du Centre Universitaire de Louvain - A.A.,	table L
Mr Nguyen - van- Sack, Chargé d'Affaires de la République du Viet-Nam,	table B
Mr Jean Nicolaréas, Conseiller de Presse et d'Information à l'Ambassade de Grèce,	table E
Mme Jean Nicolaréas,	table D
Baronne Nothomb,	table H
Mr Willy Paternostre, Auditeur Militaire Hre,	table K
X Mr René-Louis Picard, Président de la Sté Internationale des amis de Wilton Park de langue française,	table D
Mme Poncelet,	table R
X Mr Vittorio Pons, Secrétaire Gl International de l'Union Paneuropéenne, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques,	table C
Mme Vittorio Pons,	table B
Mr le Dr Georg Propstl, Communauté Economique Européenne et	
Mme Propstl,	table F
Mr Pullinckx,	table R
Mme Raepsaet,	table P
Mr Robert A. Remy, représentant du Journal l'Eventail,	table R
Baron Richard, Conseiller à la Cour de Cassation,	table H
Mr le Pr Henri Rieben, Directeur du Centre de Recherche Européenne de l'Université de Lausanne, Membre Perpétuel de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques,	table C
Mr le Dr Guy Roggen, Chef du Service Médical de l'Université de Bruxelles,	table P
Mr Paul Rohr, Président du Cercle de Politique Etrangère,	table D
Mme Ruwell,	table M
Mme Salmon,	table T
Mr et Mme Roger Salvé,	table T
Mr et Mme Guillaume Samsoen de Gérard,	table S
Mme Sartillo,	table R
Mr et Mme Frédéric Steghers,	table U
Mme Sugg,	table K
Mr Jean Tchen - Tsinen Cheng, Directeur du Centre Culturel Chinois de Belgique,	table N
Mr le Dr Paul Teichmann, Conseiller Communal,	table P
Mr Emmanuel Thiebault de Mettenlinge,	table J
Mr le Dr Hubert Thys,	table P
Mr et Mme Ernest Tottosy,	table M
S.E. Mr l'Ambassadeur Alberto Ullastres, Chef de la Mission d'Espagne près des Communautés Européennes, Membre Perpétuel de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques,	table A

../..

Mr Valori, Secrétaire Gl de l'Institut pour les Relations Internationales à Rome,	table B
Mr Vincent van den Bosch, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques,	table J
Mme van der Bruggen,	table R
Mr Remy van der Looven,	table S
Mr Raymond van Haren,	table R
Mme R. van Hecke,	table N
Mr Paul Vankerkhoven, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques, Vice Président du Cercle des Nations,	table A
Mme Paul Vankerkhoven,	table D
Mr et Mme J. van Nierop,	table S
Mr Guy van Ongevalle,	table J
Mr Richard van Wyck,	table A
Melle Odette Verlaine,	table E
Mr Jean Violet, avocat à la cour d'Appel de Paris, Membre Perpétuel de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques,	table A
Mme Jean Violet,	table B
Melle Vossen,	table S
Melle Danièle Williame,	table R
Mr Joachim Willmann, Communautés Economiques Européennes et Mme Willmann,	table S
Mr Henri Wynants, Directeur des Séminaires d'Etudes Européennes et Mme Wynants	table K

+ + + + + + + + + + + + + + + + +

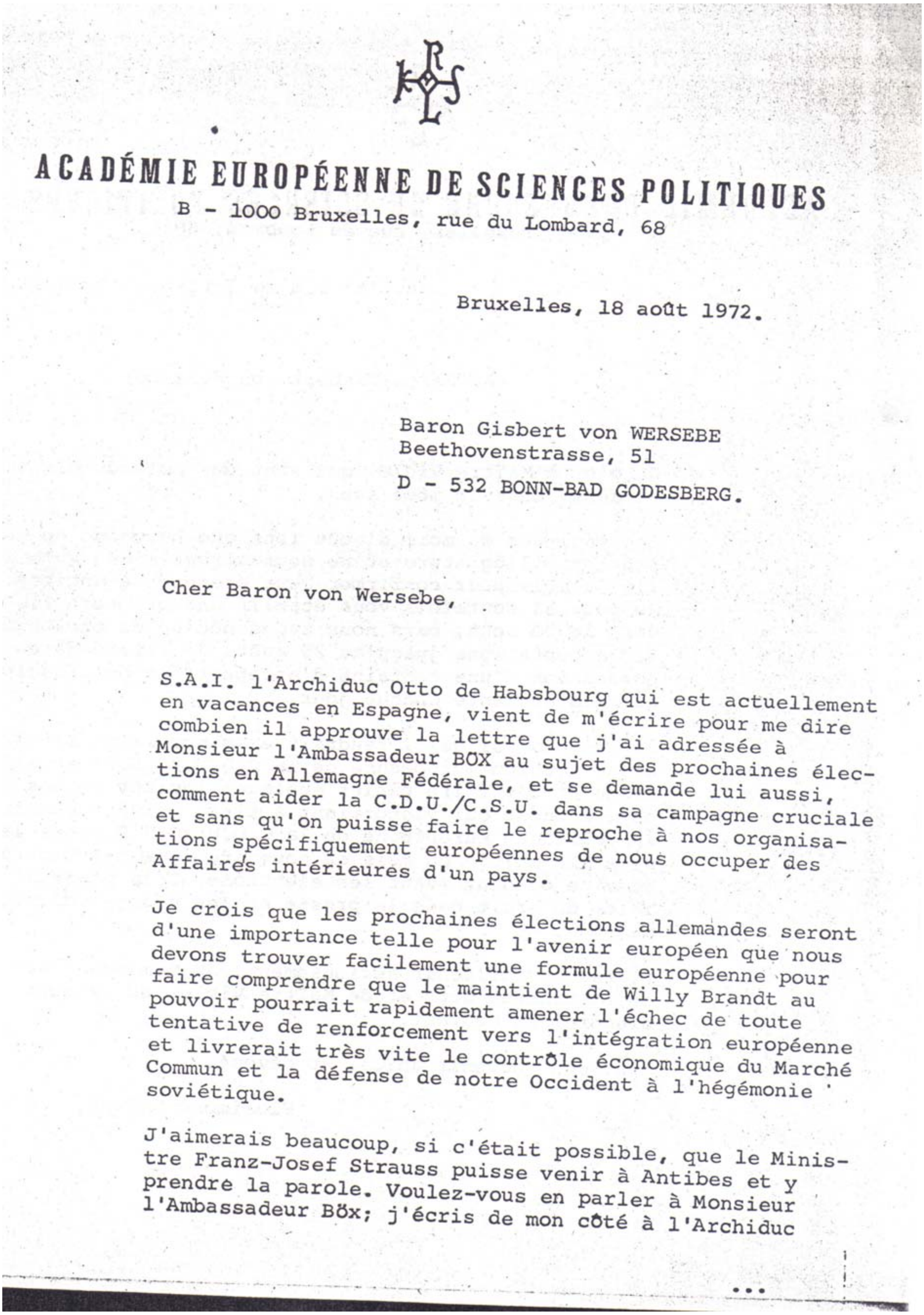

ACADÉMIE EUROPÉENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES
B - 1000 Bruxelles, rue du Lombard, 68

Bruxelles, 18 août 1972.

Baron Gisbert von WERSEBE
Beethovenstrasse, 51
D - 532 BONN-BAD GODESBERG.

Cher Baron von Wersebe,

S.A.I. l'Archiduc Otto de Habsbourg qui est actuellement en vacances en Espagne, vient de m'écrire pour me dire combien il approuve la lettre que j'ai adressée à Monsieur l'Ambassadeur BÖX au sujet des prochaines élections en Allemagne Fédérale, et se demande lui aussi, comment aider la C.D.U./C.S.U. dans sa campagne cruciale et sans qu'on puisse faire le reproche à nos organisations spécifiquement européennes de nous occuper des Affaires intérieures d'un pays.

Je crois que les prochaines élections allemandes seront d'une importance telle pour l'avenir européen que nous devons trouver facilement une formule européenne pour faire comprendre que le maintient de Willy Brandt au pouvoir pourrait rapidement amener l'échec de toute tentative de renforcement vers l'intégration européenne et livrerait très vite le contrôle économique du Marché Commun et la défense de notre Occident à l'hégémonie soviétique.

J'aimerais beaucoup, si c'était possible, que le Ministre Franz-Josef Strauss puisse venir à Antibes et y prendre la parole. Voulez-vous en parler à Monsieur l'Ambassadeur Böx; j'écris de mon côté à l'Archiduc

...

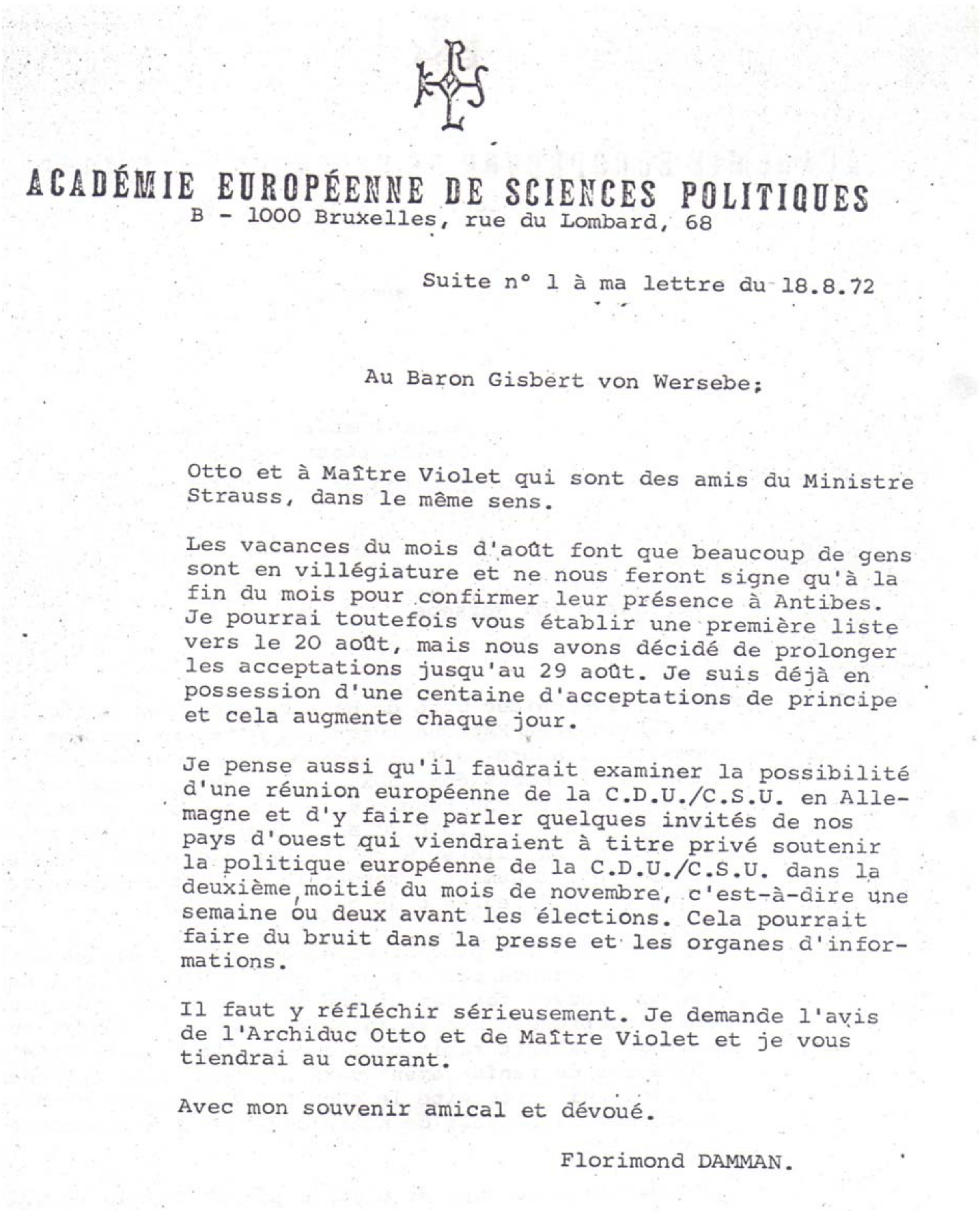

ACADÉMIE EUROPÉENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES
B - 1000 Bruxelles, rue du Lombard, 68

Suite n° 1 à ma lettre du 18.8.72

Au Baron Gisbert von Wersebe;

Otto et à Maître Violet qui sont des amis du Ministre Strauss, dans le même sens.

Les vacances du mois d'août font que beaucoup de gens sont en villégiature et ne nous feront signe qu'à la fin du mois pour confirmer leur présence à Antibes. Je pourrai toutefois vous établir une première liste vers le 20 août, mais nous avons décidé de prolonger les acceptations jusqu'au 29 août. Je suis déjà en possession d'une centaine d'acceptations de principe et cela augmente chaque jour.

Je pense aussi qu'il faudrait examiner la possibilité d'une réunion européenne de la C.D.U./C.S.U. en Allemagne et d'y faire parler quelques invités de nos pays d'ouest qui viendraient à titre privé soutenir la politique européenne de la C.D.U./C.S.U. dans la deuxième moitié du mois de novembre, c'est-à-dire une semaine ou deux avant les élections. Cela pourrait faire du bruit dans la presse et les organes d'informations.

Il faut y réfléchir sérieusement. Je demande l'avis de l'Archiduc Otto et de Maître Violet et je vous tiendrai au courant.

Avec mon souvenir amical et dévoué.

Florimond DAMMAN.

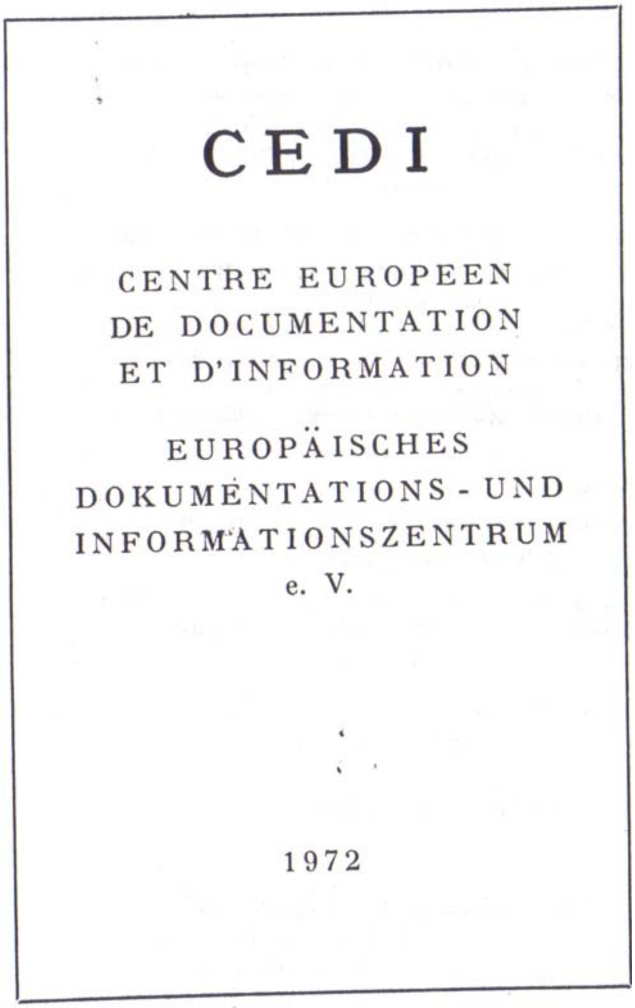

CEDI

CENTRE EUROPEEN
DE DOCUMENTATION
ET D'INFORMATION

EUROPÄISCHES
DOKUMENTATIONS - UND
INFORMATIONSZENTRUM
e. V.

1972

Secrétariat général du CEDI:

Esparteros, 1
MADRID - 12/ESPAGNE
Tel. 232 10 34

Depósito legal: M. 21.594-1972

Imprime,
HEROES, S. A.
Torrelara, 8 (Poligono Santamarca)
MADRID-16

ORGANISATION INTERNATIONALE

I. COMITE DE DIRECTION

Président d'Honneur:

S. A. I. R. Dr. **Otto von Habsburg**

Membre d'Honneur:

Alfredo Sánchez-Bella, Ministre espagnol de l'Information et du Tourisme

Président International:

Michel Habib-Deloncle, Député, ancien Ministre (France)

Viceprésidents (ex-officio):

Dr. **Hans-Joachim von Merkatz,** ancien Ministre Fédéral (Allemagne)

Alberto Martín-Artajo, ancien Ministre (Espagne)

Sir **John Rodgers,** Bt., M. P., ancien Ministre (Grande-Bretagne)

Prof. **Adriano Moreira,** ancien Ministre (Portugal)

Marquis de Valdeiglesias, Conseiller d'Etat (Espagne)

Viceprésidents:

Prince **Heinrich Liechtenstein,** Chargé d'Affaires (Liechtenstein)

Jean-Paul Palewski, Député (France)

Maurice Schot, ancien Sénateur et Député (Belgique)

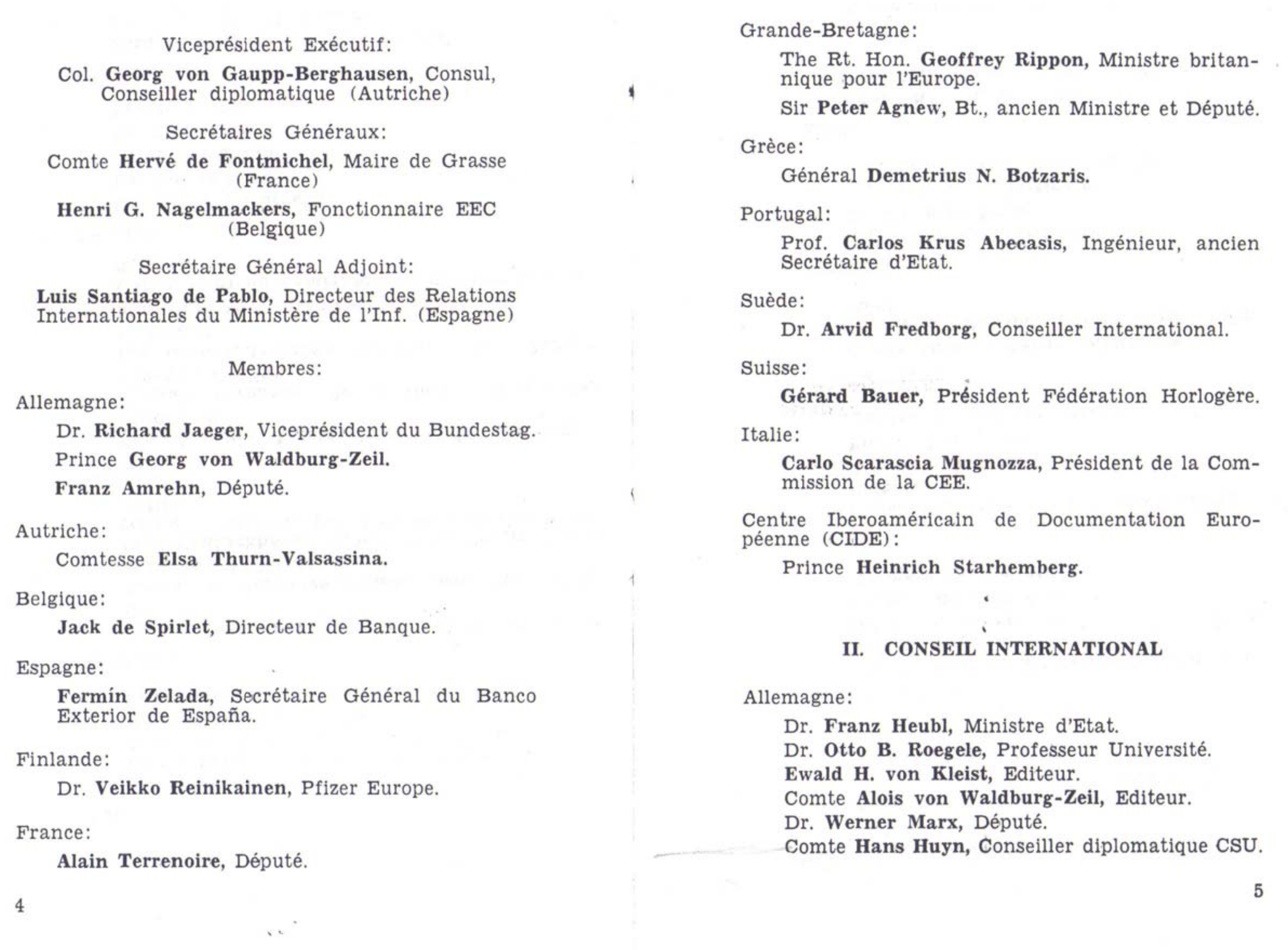

Viceprésident Exécutif:

Col. **Georg von Gaupp-Berghausen,** Consul, Conseiller diplomatique (Autriche)

Secrétaires Généraux:

Comte **Hervé de Fontmichel,** Maire de Grasse (France)

Henri G. Nagelmackers, Fonctionnaire EEC (Belgique)

Secrétaire Général Adjoint:

Luis Santiago de Pablo, Directeur des Relations Internationales du Ministère de l'Inf. (Espagne)

Membres:

Allemagne:

Dr. **Richard Jaeger**, Viceprésident du Bundestag.

Prince **Georg von Waldburg-Zeil.**

Franz Amrehn, Député.

Autriche:

Comtesse **Elsa Thurn-Valsassina.**

Belgique:

Jack de Spirlet, Directeur de Banque.

Espagne:

Fermín Zelada, Secrétaire Général du Banco Exterior de España.

Finlande:

Dr. **Veikko Reinikainen,** Pfizer Europe.

France:

Alain Terrenoire, Député.

4

Grande-Bretagne:

The Rt. Hon. **Geoffrey Rippon,** Ministre britannique pour l'Europe.

Sir **Peter Agnew**, Bt., ancien Ministre et Député.

Grèce:

Général **Demetrius N. Botzaris.**

Portugal:

Prof. **Carlos Krus Abecasis,** Ingénieur, ancien Secrétaire d'Etat.

Suède:

Dr. **Arvid Fredborg,** Conseiller International.

Suisse:

Gérard Bauer, Président Fédération Horlogère.

Italie:

Carlo Scarascia Mugnozza, Président de la Commission de la CEE.

Centre Iberoaméricain de Documentation Européenne (CIDE):

Prince **Heinrich Starhemberg.**

II. CONSEIL INTERNATIONAL

Allemagne:

Dr. **Franz Heubl,** Ministre d'Etat.
Dr. **Otto B. Roegele,** Professeur Université.
Ewald H. von Kleist, Editeur.
Comte **Alois von Waldburg-Zeil,** Editeur.
Dr. **Werner Marx,** Député.
Comte **Hans Huyn,** Conseiller diplomatique CSU.

5

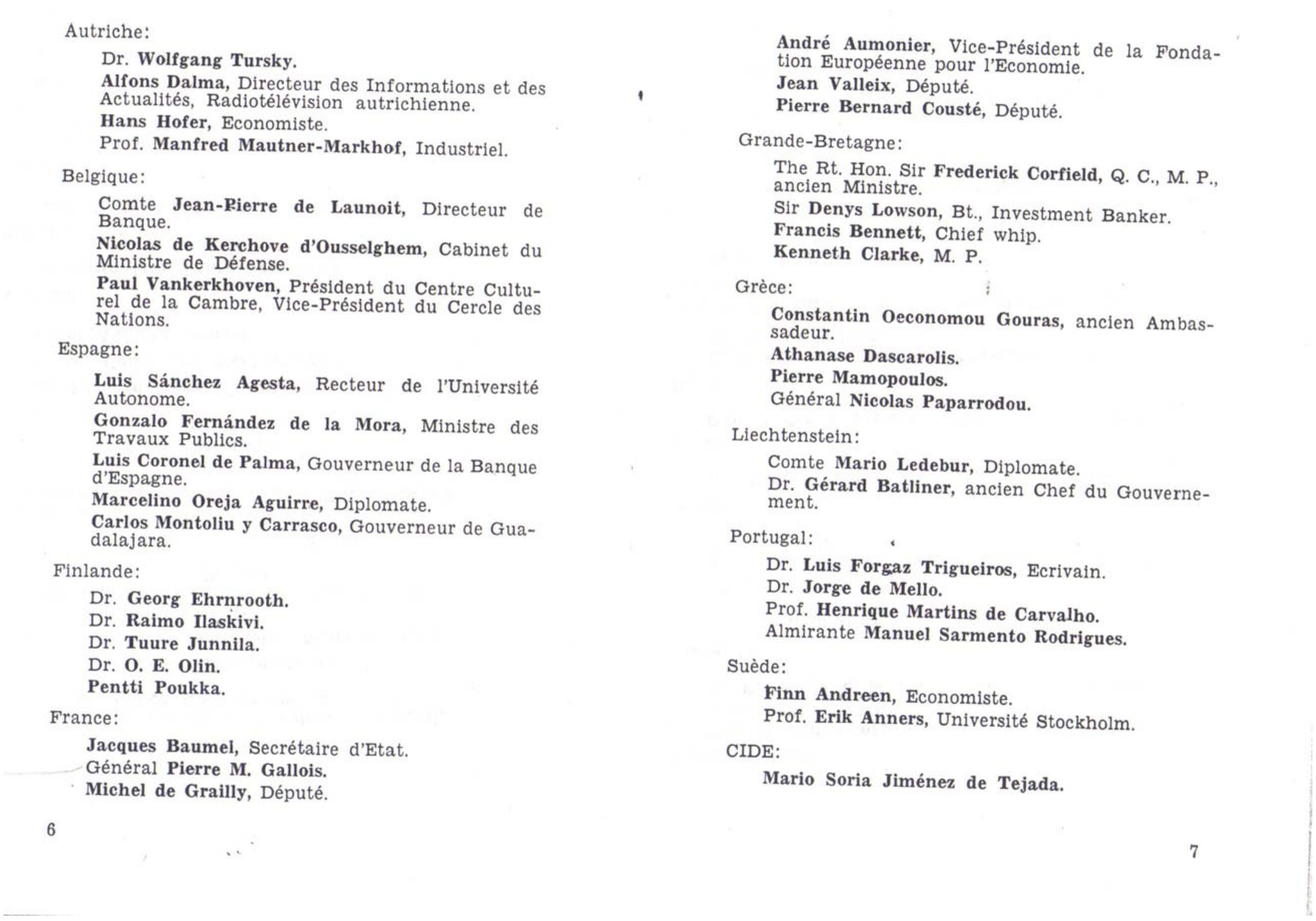

Autriche:

- Dr. **Wolfgang Tursky.**
- **Alfons Dalma,** Directeur des Informations et des Actualités, Radiotélévision autrichienne.
- **Hans Hofer,** Economiste.
- Prof. **Manfred Mautner-Markhof,** Industriel.

Belgique:

- Comte **Jean-Pierre de Launoit,** Directeur de Banque.
- **Nicolas de Kerchove d'Ousselghem,** Cabinet du Ministre de Défense.
- **Paul Vankerkhoven,** Président du Centre Culturel de la Cambre, Vice-Président du Cercle des Nations.

Espagne:

- **Luis Sánchez Agesta,** Recteur de l'Université Autonome.
- **Gonzalo Fernández de la Mora,** Ministre des Travaux Publics.
- **Luis Coronel de Palma,** Gouverneur de la Banque d'Espagne.
- **Marcelino Oreja Aguirre,** Diplomate.
- **Carlos Montoliu y Carrasco,** Gouverneur de Guadalajara.

Finlande:

- Dr. **Georg Ehrnrooth.**
- Dr. **Raimo Ilaskivi.**
- Dr. **Tuure Junnila.**
- Dr. **O. E. Olin.**
- **Pentti Poukka.**

France:

- **Jacques Baumel,** Secrétaire d'Etat.
- Général **Pierre M. Gallois.**
- **Michel de Grailly,** Député.

- **André Aumonier,** Vice-Président de la Fondation Européenne pour l'Economie.
- **Jean Valleix,** Député.
- **Pierre Bernard Cousté,** Député.

Grande-Bretagne:

- The Rt. Hon. Sir **Frederick Corfield,** Q. C., M. P., ancien Ministre.
- Sir **Denys Lowson,** Bt., Investment Banker.
- **Francis Bennett,** Chief whip.
- **Kenneth Clarke,** M. P.

Grèce:

- **Constantin Oeconomou Gouras,** ancien Ambassadeur.
- **Athanase Dascarolis.**
- **Pierre Mamopoulos.**
- Général **Nicolas Paparrodou.**

Liechtenstein:

- Comte **Mario Ledebur,** Diplomate.
- Dr. **Gérard Batliner,** ancien Chef du Gouvernement.

Portugal:

- Dr. **Luis Forgaz Trigueiros,** Ecrivain.
- Dr. **Jorge de Mello.**
- Prof. **Henrique Martins de Carvalho.**
- Almirante **Manuel Sarmento Rodrigues.**

Suède:

- **Finn Andreen,** Economiste.
- Prof. **Erik Anners,** Université Stockholm.

CIDE:

- **Mario Soria Jiménez de Tejada.**

III. MEMBRES

PERSONNES PHYSIQUES (qui ne sont pas membres du Comité de direction ou du Conseil international)

Comte **Max Khevenhueller** (Autriche).
Prof. **José Julio Gonçalves** (Portugal).
Fernando Magariños Torres (Espagne).
Prof. **Ugo Papi** (Italie).
Comte **Juan Podstatzky-Lichtenstein** (Chili).
Jean-Claude Prost (France).
Prof. **Alexander von Randa** (Autriche).
Col. **Helm Roos** (Afrique du Sud).
Albert Speeckaert (Belgique).
Duc de Valderano (Irlande).
Dr. **Isidoro Vázquez de Acuña** (Chili).
Dr. **Juan Antonio Widow** (Chili).

PERSONNES JURIDIQUES:

COMITE BELGE DU CENTRE EUROPEEN DE DOCUMENTATION ET D'INFORMATION - Bruxelles.

CENTRO EUROPEO DE DOCUMENTACION E INFORMACION - Madrid.

CENTRE TECHNIQUE D'ETUDES EUROPEENNES - Paris.

THE MARCH CLUB - London.

CENTRE HELLENIQUE D'ETUDES EUROPEENNES - Athènes.

CENTRO PORTUGUES DE ESTUDOS EUROPEUS - Lisbonne.

CENTRO IBEROAMERICANO DE DOCUMENTACION EUROPEA - Madrid.

La chartre constitutive du C. E. D. I. (21 articles) a été enregistrée dans le Livre Officiel des Associations Reconnues le 4 décembre 1957 sub No 49, volume 41 à Munich.

STATUTS

Texte original en langue allemande

§ 1

Das Europäische Dokumentations- und Informationszentrum ist eine internationale, überparteiliche Institution.

§ 2

Der Sitz des Europäischen Dokumentations- und Informationszentrums befindet sich in München. Es soll im Vereinsregister eingetragen werden.

§ 3

Das Ziel des Europäischen Dokumentations- und Informationszentrums ist:

In allen europäischen Ländern die Kräfte zu sammeln, die bereit sind, im öffentlichen Leben die Grundsätze der europäisch-christlichen Kultur zu verteidigen. Zur Erreichung dieses Zieles dient vor allem eine ständige Zusammenarbeit führender Männer des kulturellen, politischen und wirtschaftlichen Lebens aus allen Ländern Europas.

Grundsätzliche Probleme werden im Rahmen von Kongressen diskutiert. Die Ergebnisse sollen der Volksbildung und Völkerverständigung als praktische Grundlage dienen.

§ 4

Das Europäische Dokumentations- und Informationszentrum ist berechtigt einmalige und laufende

2) les membres représentatifs,

3) le Viceprésident exécutif et les Secrétaires généraux.

Le Comité de direction chargé de la gérance comprend le Viceprésident exécutif et les Secrétaires généraux, qui doivent exercer aussi la fonction du Trésorier.

§ 16

Les membres du Comité de direction peuvent assister aux séances de l'Assemblée générale des membres. Ils ont le droit de vote.

§ 17

Le Président préside le Comité de direction et l'Assemblée générale des membres.

§ 18

Le Viceprésident exécutif est responsable de l'administration du **CEDI**. Il l'assure en accord avec les Secrétaires généraux.

§ 19

L'Assemblée générale des membres, le Comité de direction et le comité directeur chargé de la gérance peuvent se donner leur règlement intérieur.

§ 20

En cas de dissolution du **CEDI** ses biens seront dévolus, après approbation de l'Assemblée générale des membres, à une oeuvre de bienfaisance.

§ 21

L'année civile commence avec le calendrier.

CONGRES INTERNATIONAUX

— 1952 —

1er Congrès international - 17-22 août - Santander
"PROBLEMES CONTEMPORAINS" Etudes sur la situation politique, culturelle, économique et sociale de l'Europe.

— 1953 —

IIe Congrès international - 21-30 septembre - Madrid
"UNION EUROPENNE - UNION IBEROAMERICAINE"

— 1954 —

IIIe Congrès international - 30 août - 4 septembre - Santander
"LA CONSTRUCTION FEDERATIVE D'UNE EUROPE CHRETIENNE"

— 1955 —

IVe Congrès international - 31 mai - 5 juin - El Escorial
"L'EUROPE DEVANT LE PROBLEME DE LA COEXISTENCE"

— 1956 —

Ve Congrès international - 4-6 juin - El Escorial
"L'EUROPE A L'HEURE ATOMIQUE"

— 1957 —

VIe Congrès international - 17-19 juin - El Escorial
"LA CRISE DU MONDE ATLANTIQUE"

— 1958 —

VIIe Congrès international - 19-21 juin - El Escorial
"LA SOLIDARITE EURO-AFRICAINE"

5-7 octobre - Bruxelles.
Réunion du Conseil international du CEDI.
"DIVERSITE DES NATIONS EUROPEENNES - COMMUNAUTE DE CULTURE"

22 décembre - Vaduz.
"FONDATION DU CEDI DE LA PRINCIPAUTE DE LIECHTENSTEIN"

— 1959 —

VIIIe Congrès international - 28-30 septembre - El Escorial (Valle de los Caídos)
"LA SOLIDARITE EUROPEENNE A L'EPREUVE"

— 1960 —

IXe Congrès international - 2-5 juillet - El Escorial (Valle de los Caídos)
"DANGERS SUR L'OCCIDENT - L'Europe dans la stratégie politique mondiale"

— 1961 —

Xe Congrès international - 7-9 juillet - Madrid
"L'OCCIDENT A L'HEURE IBERO-AMERICAINE"

— 1962 —

16-18 mars - Salzburg.
Réunion internationale et Assemblée générale du CEDI
"L'AUTRICHE SE PREPARE POUR L'INTEGRATION DE L'EUROPE"

XIe Congrès international - 22-24 juin - El Escorial
"LE PROBLEME SOCIAL A L'ECHELLE INTERNATIONALE"

4-5 novembre - Lisbonne
"FONDATION DU CEDI PORTUGAIS (CENTRO PORTUGUES DE ESTUDIOS EUROPEUS)"

8-9 décembre - Paris
Réunion du Conseil international du CEDI
"L'AVENIR DU PACTE ATLANTIQUE - Place de l'Europe dans son évolution"

— 1963 —

XIIe Congrès international - 8-10 juin - El Escorial
"EUROPE EN MUTATION"

26 et 27 octobre - Stuttgart
Réunion du Conseil international et du Comité de direction du CEDI

— 1964 —

29 février et 1 mars - Paris
Réunion du Conseil international et du Comité de direction du CEDI

XIIIe Congrès international - 5-8 juillet - El Escorial
"ASPECTS DE LA POLITIQUE DE DETENTE"

— 1965 —

28 et 29 janvier - Bruxelles
Réunion du Conseil international et du Comité de direction du CEDI

XIVe Congrès international - 20-22 juillet - Santiago de Compostela
"COMMENT NOUS LES JEUNES VOYONS L'EUROPE DE DEMAIN"

— 1966 —

15 et 16 avril - Lisbonne
Réunion du Comité de direction du CEDI

13 au 15 mai - Londres
Réunion du Conseil international et du Comité de direction
"LA SITUATION DES PARTIS NON-SOCIALISTES EN EUROPE"

XVe Congrès international - 17-19 octobre - El Escorial
"VERS UNE COORDINATION DE L'AIDE EUROPEENNE EN AFRIQUE"

— 1967 —

20 et 21 janvier - Rome
Réunion du Comité de direction et du Conseil international du CEDI

XVIe Congrès international - 17-19 mai - EL Escorial
"L'EUROPE A L'HEURE DES DECISIONS"

24 juin - Château de Pouy-sur-Vannes (France)
Réunion du CEDI international.

— 1968 —

20 et 21 juillet - Madrid
Réunion du Comité de direction et du Conseil international (Assemblée générale) du CEDI
"LA SECURITE DE L'EUROPE"

XVIIe Congrès international - 25-27 octobre - Alvor (Portugal)
"LE PROBLEME ETHNIQUE ET L'EUROPE"

15 décembre - Madrid
Réunion du Comité de direction du CEDI

— 1969 —

8 avril - Funchal/Madeira
Réunion du Comité de direction et du Conseil international du CEDI

XVIIIe Congrès international - 13-15 juin - Pareja (Espagne)
"LA REVOLTE DE LA JEUNESSE"

11 et 12 octobre - Château de Pouy-sur-Vannes (France)
Réunion du CEDI international (Assemblée générale) et cérémonie du souvenir en commémoration du Comte François de la Noë

— 1970 —

15 janvier - Bruxelles
Réunion du Comité de direction et du Conseil international du CEDI

XIXe Congrès international - 27-29 juin - Madrid
"SOCIETE ET LIBERTE A L'ERE INDUSTRIELLE"

— 1971 —

14 janvier - Bruxelles
Réunion du Comité de direction

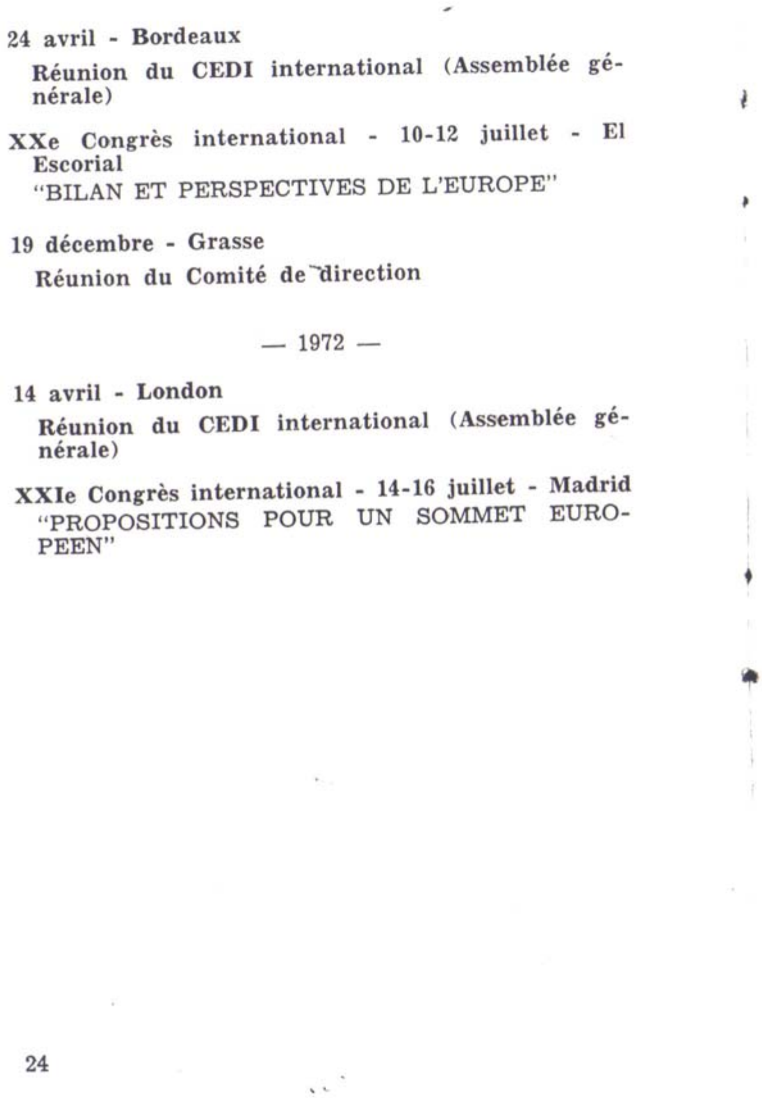

24 avril - Bordeaux

Réunion du CEDI international (Assemblée générale)

XXe Congrès international - 10-12 juillet - El Escorial
"BILAN ET PERSPECTIVES DE L'EUROPE"

19 décembre - Grasse

Réunion du Comité de direction

— 1972 —

14 avril - London

Réunion du CEDI international (Assemblée générale)

XXIe Congrès international - 14-16 juillet - Madrid
"PROPOSITIONS POUR UN SOMMET EUROPEEN"

24

NB: CEDI held their April 1972 General Assembly in London at a time when the Pinay Circle and the ISC were setting up close cooperation – see the ISC Council minutes of January and July 1972 below.

Below: extract from ISC Council minutes of 21st January 1972

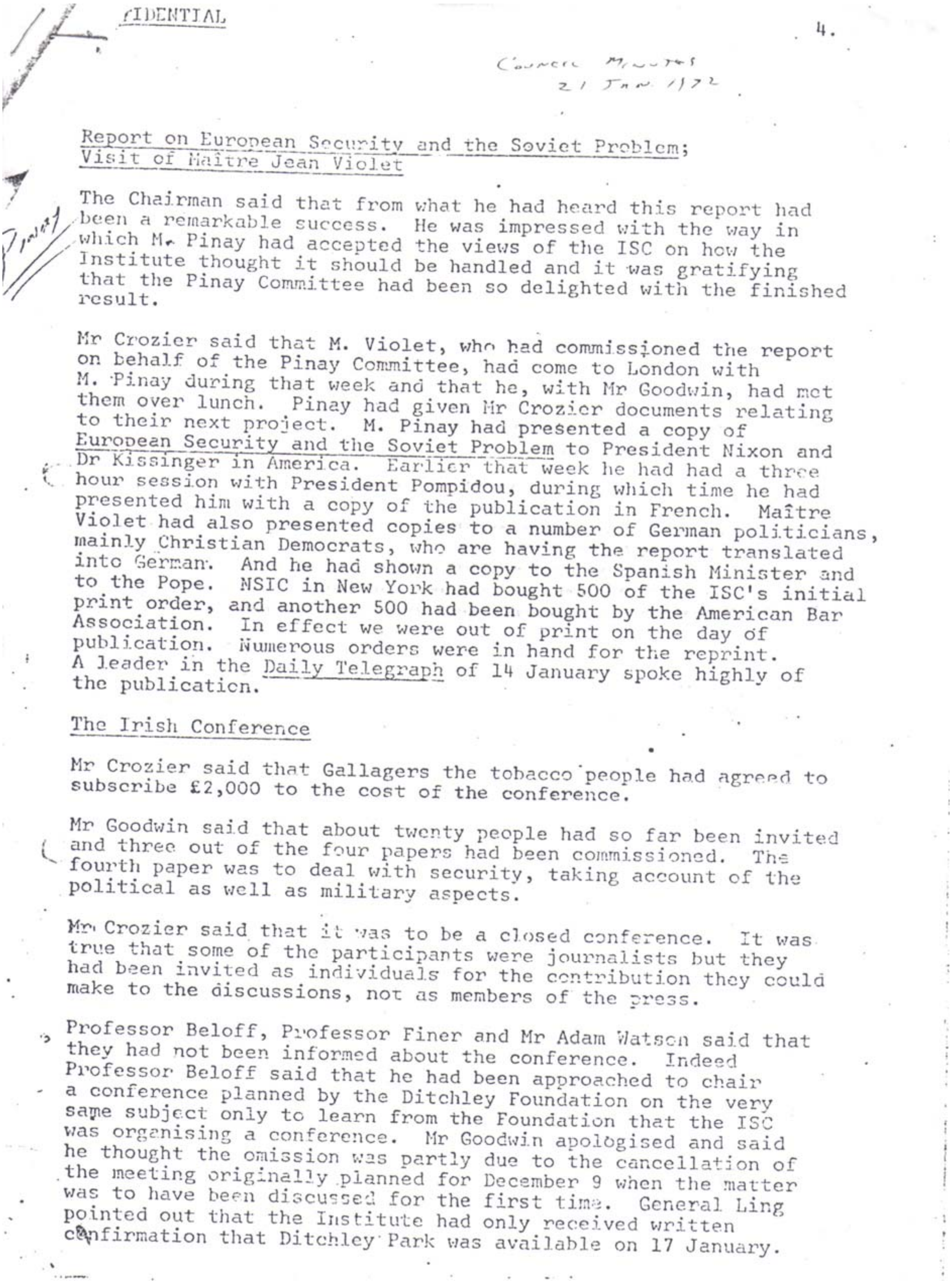

ΓIDENTIAL

4.

Council Minutes
21 Jan 1972

Pinay

Report on European Security and the Soviet Problem;
Visit of Maître Jean Violet

The Chairman said that from what he had heard this report had been a remarkable success. He was impressed with the way in which M. Pinay had accepted the views of the ISC on how the Institute thought it should be handled and it was gratifying that the Pinay Committee had been so delighted with the finished result.

Mr Crozier said that M. Violet, who had commissioned the report on behalf of the Pinay Committee, had come to London with M. Pinay during that week and that he, with Mr Goodwin, had met them over lunch. Pinay had given Mr Crozier documents relating to their next project. M. Pinay had presented a copy of European Security and the Soviet Problem to President Nixon and Dr Kissinger in America. Earlier that week he had had a three hour session with President Pompidou, during which time he had presented him with a copy of the publication in French. Maître Violet had also presented copies to a number of German politicians, mainly Christian Democrats, who are having the report translated into German. And he had shown a copy to the Spanish Minister and to the Pope. NSIC in New York had bought 500 of the ISC's initial print order, and another 500 had been bought by the American Bar Association. In effect we were out of print on the day of publication. Numerous orders were in hand for the reprint. A leader in the Daily Telegraph of 14 January spoke highly of the publication.

The Irish Conference

Mr Crozier said that Gallagers the tobacco people had agreed to subscribe £2,000 to the cost of the conference.

Mr Goodwin said that about twenty people had so far been invited and three out of the four papers had been commissioned. The fourth paper was to deal with security, taking account of the political as well as military aspects.

Mr Crozier said that it was to be a closed conference. It was true that some of the participants were journalists but they had been invited as individuals for the contribution they could make to the discussions, not as members of the press.

Professor Beloff, Professor Finer and Mr Adam Watson said that they had not been informed about the conference. Indeed Professor Beloff said that he had been approached to chair a conference planned by the Ditchley Foundation on the very same subject only to learn from the Foundation that the ISC was organising a conference. Mr Goodwin apologised and said he thought the omission was partly due to the cancellation of the meeting originally planned for December 9 when the matter was to have been discussed for the first time. General Ling pointed out that the Institute had only received written confirmation that Ditchley Park was available on 17 January.

Professor Beloff said he was concerned about the confidential aspect of the conference. He was doubtful about the invitation to journalists and would prefer not to have seen any invited at all.

Mr Crozier said that Iain Hamilton and Maurice Foley, the proposed Chairman, had suggested the same journalists quite independently of each other, as being essential to a conference on this subject. He stressed that each had something to contribute as an individual.

The Chairman wished to know if the ISC was now committed to its invitations. Mr Crozier said he thought it was, but that each invitee had been asked to treat the conference as a confidential affair. Mr Goodwin read out the list of invitees.

Professor Schapiro asked if it would be possible to extract a written assurance that all invitees would comply with our request that all proceedings should be treated in confidence. It was agreed that this would be done. Mr Adam Watson asked if there was to be a written account of the results of the conference. Mr Crozier said that four papers would be published and that Robert Moss was to act as rapporteur and would submit an account of the proceedings associated with the discussions with no names.

Professor Beloff said he felt there was too great a preponderance of journalists on the invitation list. He felt the economic aspects ought to be covered as well as the psychological aspects.

Mr Goodwin said that this question had been raised at the Gallager meeting and that Professor Beckett might be persuaded to extend his paper to include the economic and social aspects.

Professor Martin mentioned that the Social Science Research Council had been considering a number of projects on the subject of Ireland and the Institute might like to consider papers already in existence.

The Chairman felt that the list could do with more academics and suggested Professor Tom Wilson, the Glasgow economist, Professor J.D.B. Mitchell at the Centre of European Governmental Studies, University of Edinburgh, or another constitutional lawyer. He felt sure a suitable one could be found. Professor Beloff put forward the name of Judge Brown who was in charge of the inquiry dealing with detainees in Ireland.

The Chairman then suggested Professor Richard Rose of Strathclyde University. Professor Finer agreed that Professor Rose would be a valuable addition to the invitation list.

Below: unfortunately, this partial extract is all that remains of these ISC Council minutes, one of the 1,500 documents stolen from the ISC offices in 1975, most of which have since disappeared.

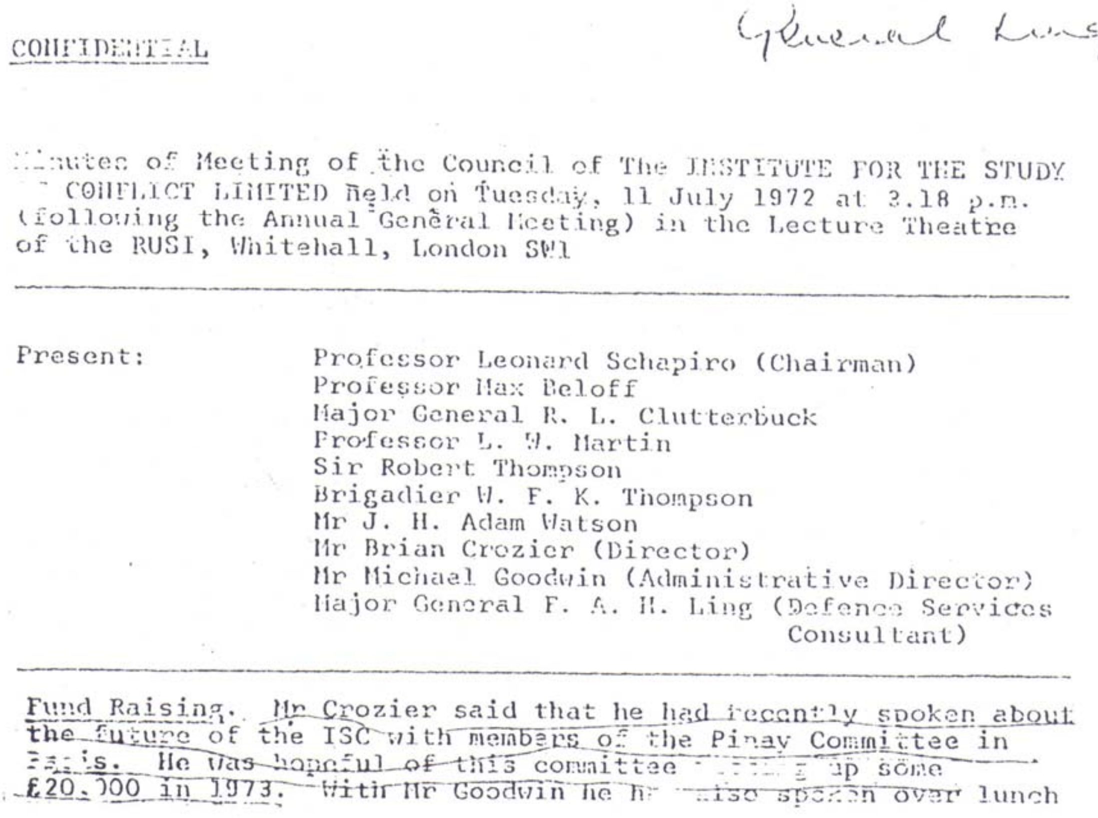

CONFIDENTIAL

General Ling

Minutes of Meeting of the Council of The INSTITUTE FOR THE STUDY OF CONFLICT LIMITED held on Tuesday, 11 July 1972 at 3.18 p.m. (following the Annual General Meeting) in the Lecture Theatre of the RUSI, Whitehall, London SW1

Present:

Professor Leonard Schapiro (Chairman)
Professor Max Beloff
Major General R. L. Clutterbuck
Professor L. W. Martin
Sir Robert Thompson
Brigadier W. F. K. Thompson
Mr J. H. Adam Watson
Mr Brian Crozier (Director)
Mr Michael Goodwin (Administrative Director)
Major General F. A. H. Ling (Defence Services Consultant)

Fund Raising. Mr Crozier said that he had recently spoken about the future of the ISC with members of the Pinay Committee in Paris. He was hopeful of this committee [illegible] up some £20,000 in 1973. With Mr Goodwin he had also spoken over lunch

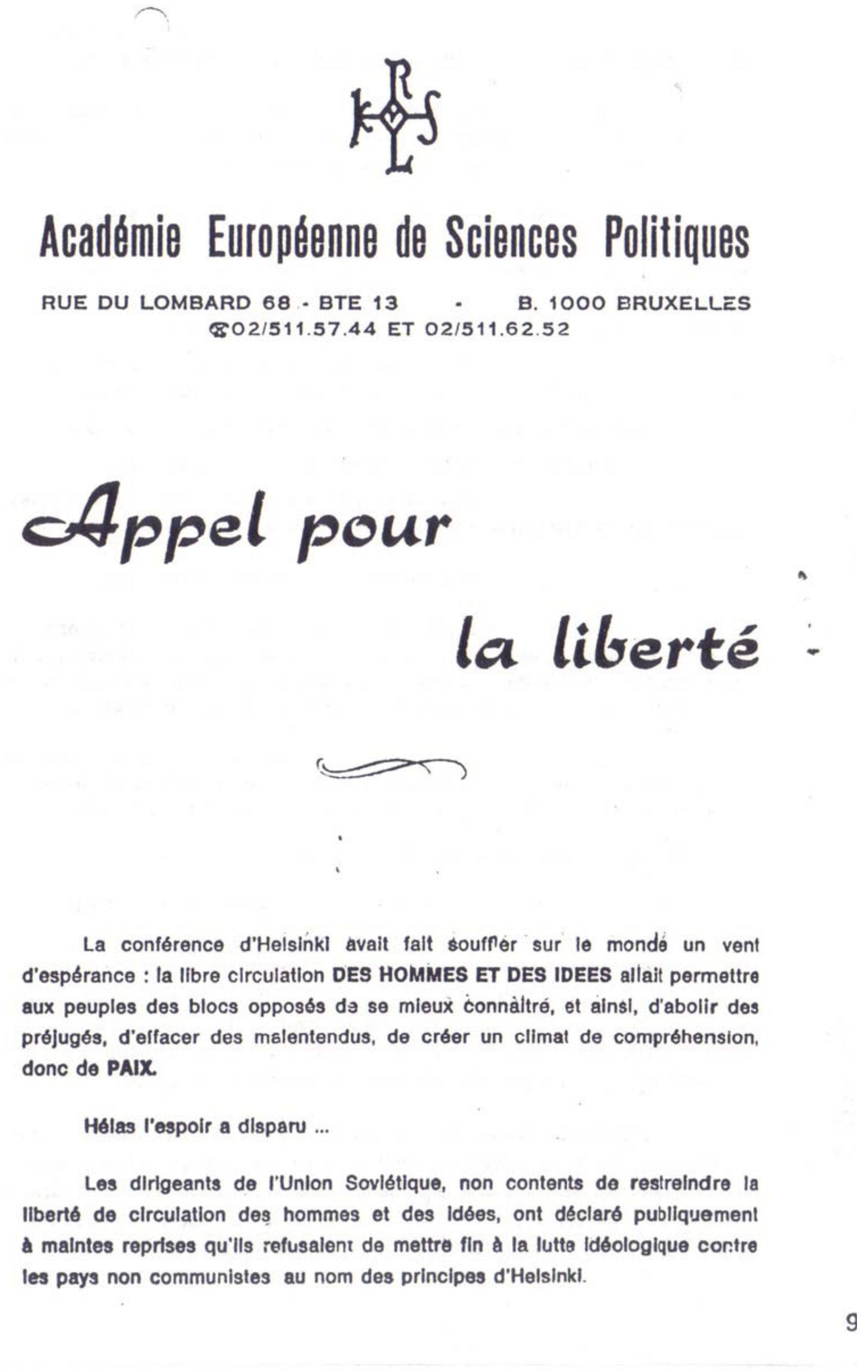

Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques

RUE DU LOMBARD 68 - BTE 13 · B. 1000 BRUXELLES
☎02/511.57.44 ET 02/511.62.52

Appel pour la liberté

La conférence d'Helsinki avait fait souffler sur le monde un vent d'espérance : la libre circulation **DES HOMMES ET DES IDEES** allait permettre aux peuples des blocs opposés de se mieux connaître, et ainsi, d'abolir des préjugés, d'effacer des malentendus, de créer un climat de compréhension, donc de **PAIX**.

Hélas l'espoir a disparu ...

Les dirigeants de l'Union Soviétique, non contents de restreindre la liberté de circulation des hommes et des idées, ont déclaré publiquement à maintes reprises qu'ils refusaient de mettre fin à la lutte idéologique contre les pays non communistes au nom des principes d'Helsinki.

9

Bien plus, ils exigent maintenant que cette lutte idéologique soit à sens unique :

- liberté pour l'Union Soviétique de soutenir les communistes dans le monde
- Interdiction pour les démocrates de manifester leur sympathie aux démocrates russes.

Les dirigeants soviétiques considèrent la lettre du Président américain à Sakharov comme une ingérence dans leurs affaires intérieures . . . mais, eux-mêmes, reçoivent continuellement à Moscou les chefs des partis communistes occidentaux !

Bien plus, lorsque Brejnev vient en France en visite officielle, il rend ouvertement visite aux chefs du parti communiste français, parti d'opposition, et assiste même à des réunions communistes ...

Alors de deux choses l'une ·

- ou l'on met fin à la lutte idéologique entre les deux blocs, et les dirigeants soviétiques doivent cesser de recevoir les chefs communistes occidentaux à Moscou, et lors de sa prochaine visite à Paris Brejnev se doit de ne pas rendre visite aux dirigeants du parti communiste ...
- ou l'on considère qu'Helsinki ne met pas fin à la lutte idéologique. Alors celle-ci ne doit pas être **à sens unique** et l'on doit considérer comme normal l'appui des dirigeants démocrates occidentaux aux démocrates russes; et lorsqu'un chef d'état occidental se rendra à Moscou **il devra pouvoir rendre visite à Sakarov ou à d'autres démocrates russes et assister à leurs réunions**, en un mot faire à Moscou ce que Brejnev fait à Paris.

LA JUSTICE s'oppose à la politique de deux poids et deux mesures.

A la légalisation des partis communistes en Occident doit correspondre la législation de partis démocrates en Union Soviétique.

Il y a plus scandaleux encore en Union Soviétique.

La plus **élémentaire des libertés**, avant même la liberté politique, est la liberté religieuse.

Or, le 11 décembre dernier, date anniversaire de la déclaration universelle des droits de l'homme, des chrétiens ont défilé silencieusement devant plusieurs ambassades soviétiques, distribuant la liste de centaines de ressortissants soviétiques emprisonnés dans des camps de concentration pour, le plus souvent, avoir imprimé ou distribué «illégalement» la **BIBLE.**

Ainsi en Union Soviétique, en dépit des affirmations de la constitution, la libre distribution de la Bible est considérée comme un crime : la Bible, dont tout l'enseignement peut se résumer en cette phrase : «aimez vous les un les autres» est qualifiée de subversive !

Il faut que soit mis fin à ce scandale.

Il faut que ces chrétiens soient libérés.

Il faut que la diffusion de la Bible soit libre en Union Soviétique.

Tous sont interessés par cette question. Si cette liberté **élémentaire** de professer sa religion n'est pas tolérée, aucune autre liberté, **surtout politique**, ne le sera «à fortiori» jamais.

Croyants et nons croyants démocrates doivent faire bloc pour le respect de cette liberté. Une autre liberté, **élémentaire elle aussi,** doit immédiatement être accordée car il n'existe aucune raison plausible de la refuser au nom de la sécurité de l'Etat : c'est la liberté **d'émigration.**

La lutte pour la liberté nous concerne tous.

C'est pourquoi, toute nouvelle conférence d'Helsinki ou de Belgrade serait une misérable imposture si, **préalablement :**

- il n'était pas mis fin à **la lutte idéologique à sens unique,**
- si les croyants emprisonnés pour leur foi n'étaient pas libérés,
- si l'élémentaire liberté religieuse n'était pas assurée notamment par l'autorisation de diffuser librement la Bible.
- si l'élémentaire liberté d'émigration n'était pas immédiatement reconnue sans restriction,
- si par toutes ces mesures il n'était pas prouvé que l'on cherchait, de bonne foi, à s'acheminer vers la libre circulation des hommes et des idées solennellement proclamée par tous à Helsinki.

C'est pourquoi aussi les dirigeants, à quelque titre que ce soit, dans les pays de démocratie, qui ne se joindraient pas à cette lutte pour la liberté de l'homme se feraient les complices de la dictature totalitaire.

Faut-il rappeler que la **LIBERTE** n'a pas de frontière et qu'elle est la condition de la **PAIX.**

Below: AESP activity report for the first quarter 1973, from Péan.

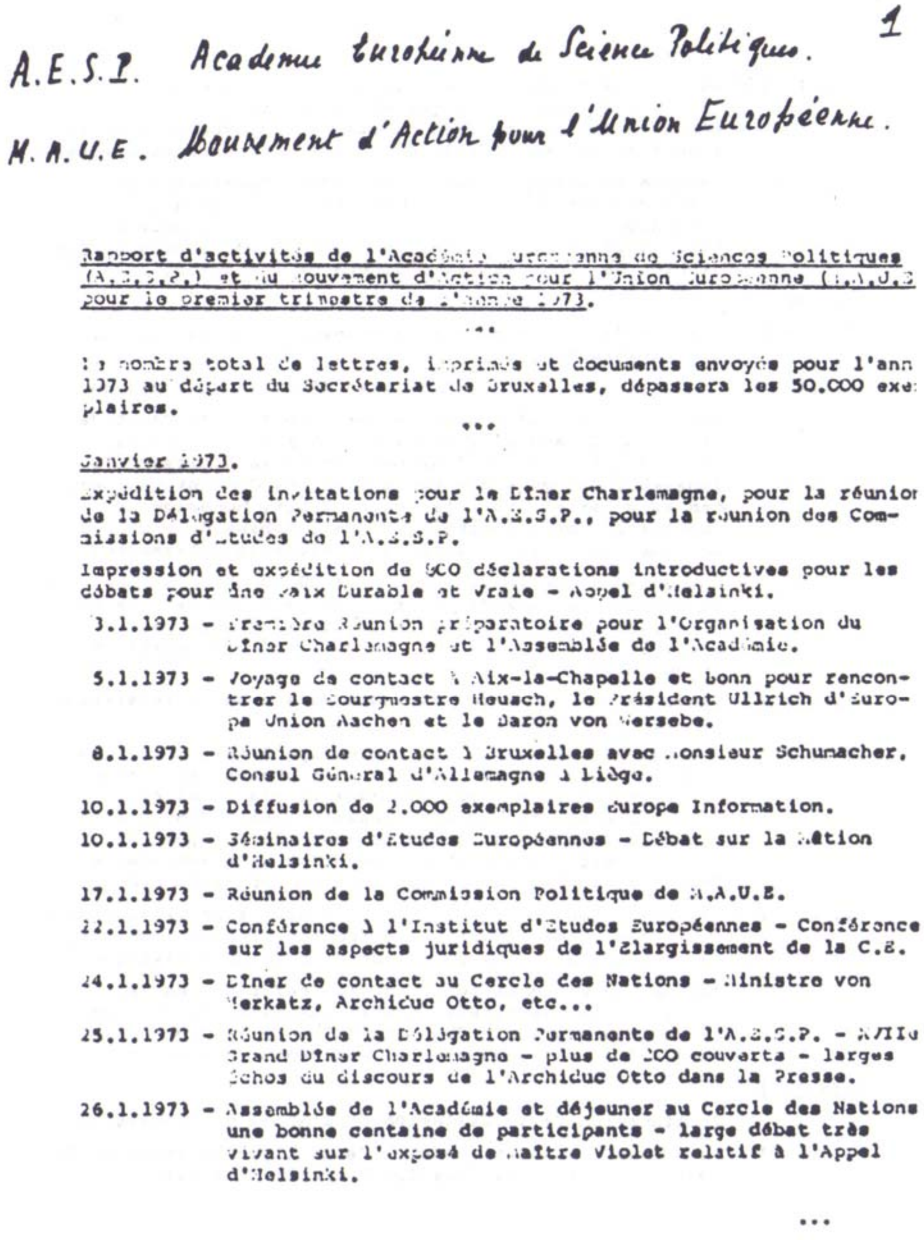

A.E.S.P. Academie Européenne de Science Politiques. 1

M.A.U.E. Mouvement d'Action pour l'Union Européenne.

Rapport d'activités de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques (A.E.S.P.) et du Mouvement d'Action pour l'Union Européenne (M.A.U.E pour le premier trimestre de l'année 1973.

...

Le nombre total de lettres, imprimés et documents envoyés pour l'ann 1973 au départ du Secrétariat de Bruxelles, dépassera les 50.000 exe plaires.

...

Janvier 1973.

Expédition des invitations pour le Dîner Charlemagne, pour la réunio de la Délégation Permanente de l'A.E.S.P., pour la réunion des Commissions d'Etudes de l'A.E.S.P.

Impression et expédition de 500 déclarations introductives pour les débats pour une Paix Durable et Vraie - Appel d'Helsinki.

3.1.1973 - Première Réunion préparatoire pour l'Organisation du Dîner Charlemagne et l'Assemblée de l'Académie.

5.1.1973 - Voyage de contact à Aix-la-Chapelle et Bonn pour rencontrer le Bourgmestre Heusch, le Président Ullrich d'Europa Union Aachen et le Baron von Wersebe.

8.1.1973 - Réunion de contact à Bruxelles avec Monsieur Schumacher, Consul Général d'Allemagne à Liège.

10.1.1973 - Diffusion de 2.000 exemplaires Europe Information.

10.1.1973 - Séminaires d'Etudes Européennes - Débat sur la Motion d'Helsinki.

17.1.1973 - Réunion de la Commission Politique de M.A.U.E.

22.1.1973 - Conférence à l'Institut d'Etudes Européennes - Conférence sur les aspects juridiques de l'Elargissement de la C.E.

24.1.1973 - Dîner de contact au Cercle des Nations - Ministre von Merkatz, Archiduc Otto, etc...

25.1.1973 - Réunion de la Délégation Permanente de l'A.E.S.P. - XVIIe Grand Dîner Charlemagne - plus de 200 couverts - larges échos du discours de l'Archiduc Otto dans la Presse.

26.1.1973 - Assemblée de l'Académie et déjeuner au Cercle des Nations une bonne centaine de participants - large débat très vivant sur l'exposé de Maître Violet relatif à l'Appel d'Helsinki.

...

Exemple (pour le premier trimestre 1973) d'un rapport d'activité de l'« Académie » et du Mouvement d'Action pour l'Union européenne.

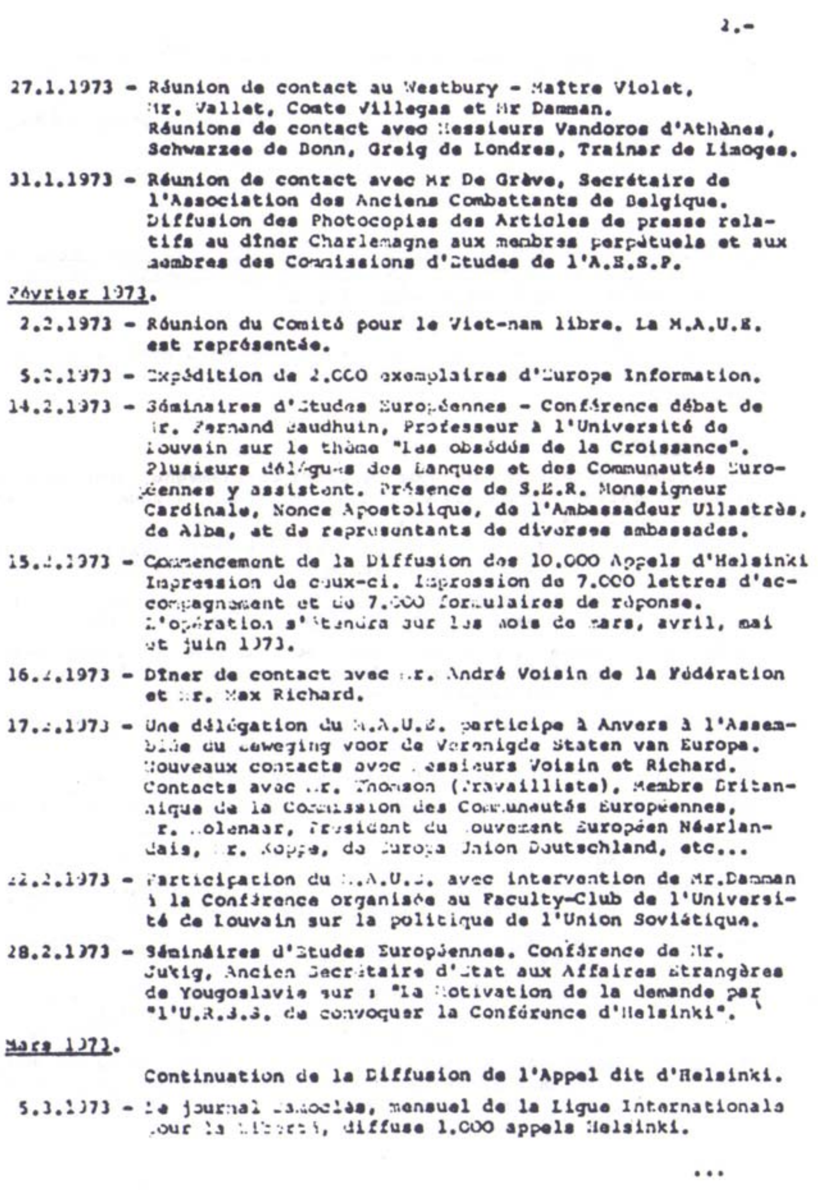

2.-

27.1.1973 - Réunion de contact au Westbury - Maître Violet, Mr. Vallet, Comte Villegas et Mr Damman.
Réunions de contact avec Messieurs Vandoros d'Athènes, Schwarzee de Bonn, Greig de Londres, Trainar de Limoges.

31.1.1973 - Réunion de contact avec Mr De Grève, Secrétaire de l'Association des Anciens Combattants de Belgique.
Diffusion des Photocopies des Articles de presse relatifs au dîner Charlemagne aux membres perpétuels et aux membres des Commissions d'Etudes de l'A.E.S.P.

Février 1973.

2.2.1973 - Réunion du Comité pour le Viet-nam libre. La M.A.U.E. est représentée.

5.2.1973 - Expédition de 2.000 exemplaires d'Europe Information.

14.2.1973 - Séminaires d'Etudes Européennes - Conférence débat de Mr. Fernand Baudhuin, Professeur à l'Université de Louvain sur le thème "Les obsédés de la Croissance". Plusieurs délégués des Banques et des Communautés Européennes y assistent. Présence de S.E.R. Monseigneur Cardinale, Nonce Apostolique, de l'Ambassadeur Ullastrès, de Alba, et de representants de diverses ambassades.

15.2.1973 - Commencement de la Diffusion des 10.000 Appels d'Helsinki Impression de ceux-ci. Impression de 7.000 lettres d'accompagnement et de 7.000 formulaires de réponse. L'opération s'étendra sur les mois de mars, avril, mai et juin 1973.

16.2.1973 - Dîner de contact avec Mr. André Voisin de la Fédération et Mr. Max Richard.

17.2.1973 - Une délégation du M.A.U.E. participe à Anvers à l'Assemblée du Beweging voor de Verenigde Staten van Europa. Nouveaux contacts avec Messieurs Voisin et Richard. Contacts avec Mr. Thomson (Travailliste), Membre Britannique de la Commission des Communautés Européennes, Mr. Molenaar, Président du Mouvement Européen Néerlandais, Mr. Kopps, de Europa Union Deutschland, etc...

22.2.1973 - Participation du M.A.U.E. avec intervention de Mr.Damman à la Conférence organisée au Faculty-Club de l'Université de Louvain sur la politique de l'Union Soviétique.

28.2.1973 - Séminaires d'Etudes Européennes. Conférence de Mr. Jukig, Ancien Secrétaire d'Etat aux Affaires Etrangères de Yougoslavie sur : "La Motivation de la demande par "l'U.R.S.S. de convoquer la Conférence d'Helsinki".

Mars 1973.

Continuation de la Diffusion de l'Appel dit d'Helsinki.

5.3.1973 - Le journal Damoclès, mensuel de la Ligue Internationale pour la Liberté, diffuse 1.000 appels Helsinki.

...

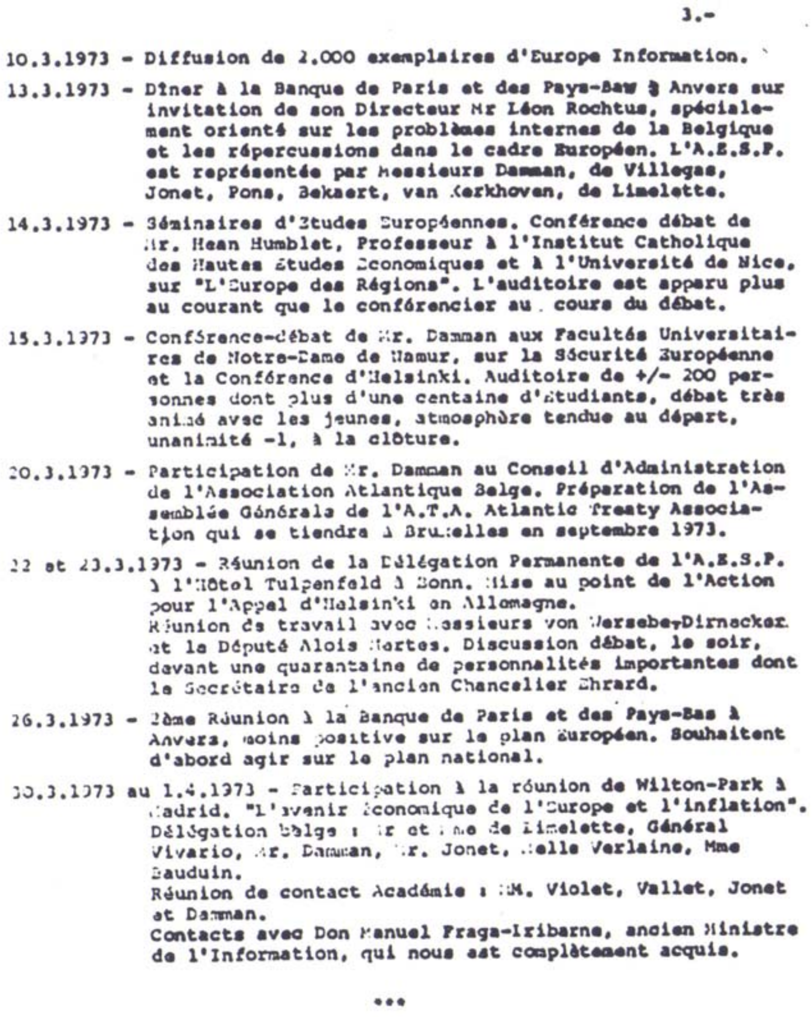

3.-

10.3.1973 - Diffusion de 2.000 exemplaires d'Europe Information.

13.3.1973 - Dîner à la Banque de Paris et des Pays-Bas à Anvers sur invitation de son Directeur Mr Léon Rochtus, spécialement orienté sur les problèmes internes de la Belgique et les répercussions dans le cadre Européen. L'A.E.S.P. est représentée par Messieurs Damman, de Villegas, Jonet, Pons, Bekaert, van Kerkhoven, de Limelette.

14.3.1973 - Séminaires d'Etudes Européennes. Conférence débat de Mr. Hean Humblet, Professeur à l'Institut Catholique des Hautes Etudes Economiques et à l'Université de Nice, sur "L'Europe des Régions". L'auditoire est apparu plus au courant que le conférencier au cours du débat.

15.3.1973 - Conférence-débat de Mr. Damman aux Facultés Universitaires de Notre-Dame de Namur, sur la Sécurité Européenne et la Conférence d'Helsinki. Auditoire de +/- 200 personnes dont plus d'une centaine d'Etudiants, débat très animé avec les jeunes, atmosphère tendue au départ, unanimité -1, à la clôture.

20.3.1973 - Participation de Mr. Damman au Conseil d'Administration de l'Association Atlantique Belge. Préparation de l'Assemblée Générale de l'A.T.A. Atlantic Treaty Association qui se tiendra à Bruxelles en septembre 1973.

22 et 23.3.1973 - Réunion de la Délégation Permanente de l'A.E.S.P. à l'Hôtel Tulpenfeld à Bonn. Mise au point de l'Action pour l'Appel d'Helsinki en Allemagne.
Réunion de travail avec Messieurs von Wersebe-Dirnecker et le Député Alois Mertes. Discussion débat, le soir, devant une quarantaine de personnalités importantes dont le Secrétaire de l'ancien Chancelier Ehrard.

26.3.1973 - 2ème Réunion à la Banque de Paris et des Pays-Bas à Anvers, moins positive sur le plan Européen. Souhaitent d'abord agir sur le plan national.

30.3.1973 au 1.4.1973 - Participation à la réunion de Wilton-Park à Madrid. "L'avenir Economique de l'Europe et l'inflation". Délégation Belge : Mr et Mme de Limelette, Général Vivario, Mr. Damman, Mr. Jonet, Melle Verlaine, Mme Bauduin.
Réunion de contact Académie : MM. Violet, Vallet, Jonet et Damman.
Contacts avec Don Manuel Fraga-Iribarne, ancien Ministre de l'Information, qui nous est complètement acquis.

...

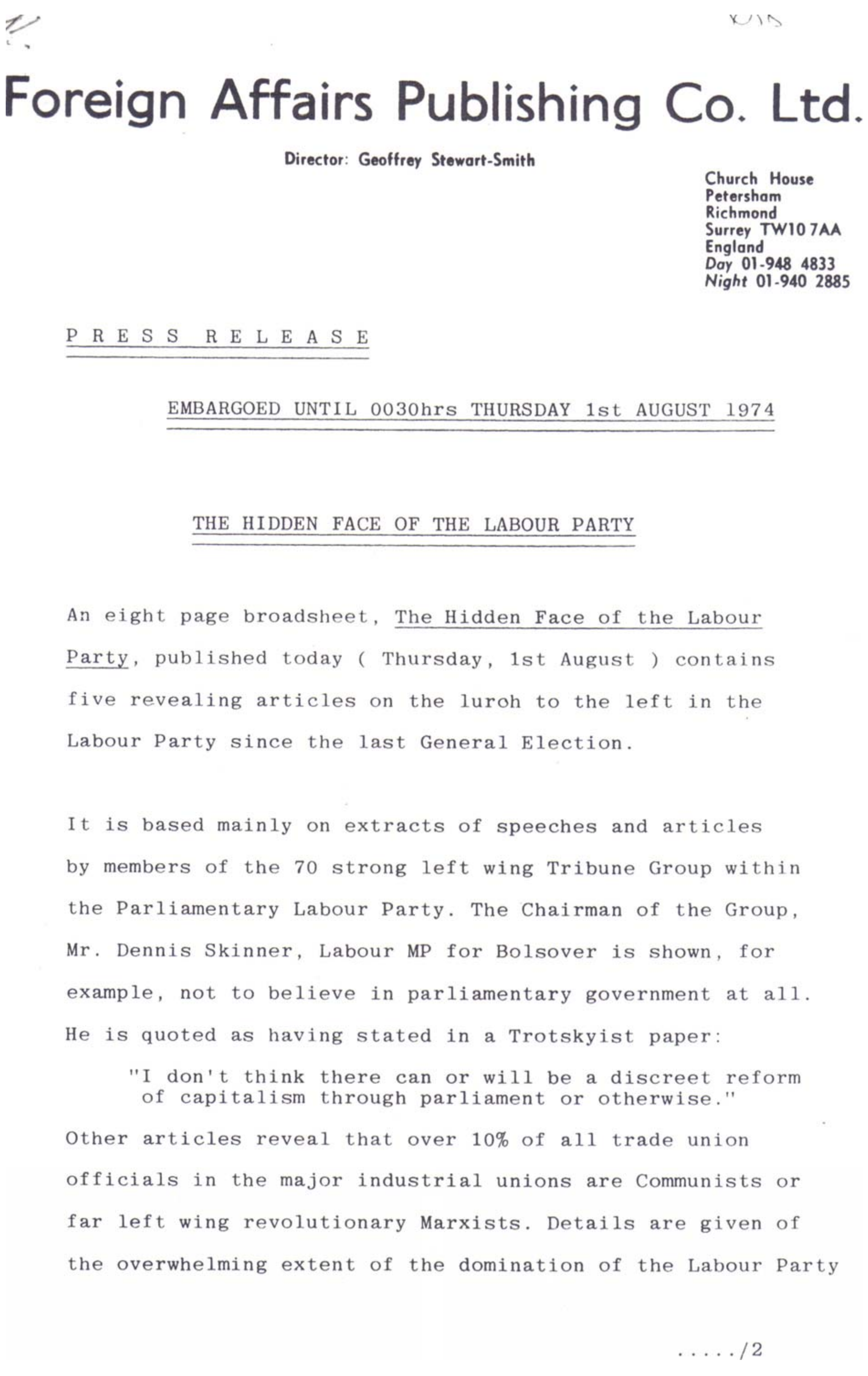

Foreign Affairs Publishing Co. Ltd.

Director: Geoffrey Stewart-Smith

Church House
Petersham
Richmond
Surrey TW10 7AA
England
Day 01-948 4833
Night 01-940 2885

PRESS RELEASE

EMBARGOED UNTIL 0030hrs THURSDAY 1st AUGUST 1974

THE HIDDEN FACE OF THE LABOUR PARTY

An eight page broadsheet, The Hidden Face of the Labour Party, published today (Thursday, 1st August) contains five revealing articles on the lurch to the left in the Labour Party since the last General Election.

It is based mainly on extracts of speeches and articles by members of the 70 strong left wing Tribune Group within the Parliamentary Labour Party. The Chairman of the Group, Mr. Dennis Skinner, Labour MP for Bolsover is shown, for example, not to believe in parliamentary government at all. He is quoted as having stated in a Trotskyist paper:

> "I don't think there can or will be a discreet reform of capitalism through parliament or otherwise."

Other articles reveal that over 10% of all trade union officials in the major industrial unions are Communists or far left wing revolutionary Marxists. Details are given of the overwhelming extent of the domination of the Labour Party

...../2

both politically and financially by left wing trade union leaders. Two articles are based on Communist Party directives to influence the Labour Party through the unions at the Annual Party Conference. One item recalls occasions on which Labour Party officials have been found to be in the pay of the Communists.

Lists are given of the 125 trade union sponsored Labour MPs and the 70 members of the Tribune Group itself.

It is estimated that between one and three million copies of the broadsheet will be sold or circularised within the next few weeks.

Available price 3p plus 3½p postage from Foreign Affairs Publishing Co.Ltd., Church House, Petersham Road, Richmond, Surrey, TW10 7AA.

END

EDITOR'S NOTE

The author, Mr. Geoffrey Stewart-Smith, formerly Conservative Member of Parliament for Belper 1970-1974; Director of the Foreign Affairs Pub.Co.Ltd. and Editor of East-West Digest can be contacted at 01-948 4833.

29th July 1974

Below: Frankfurt Study Group bulletin of November 1974 exonerating Grau of the charges of contact with the NPD and reinstating him as the Executive Secretary, from YEF.

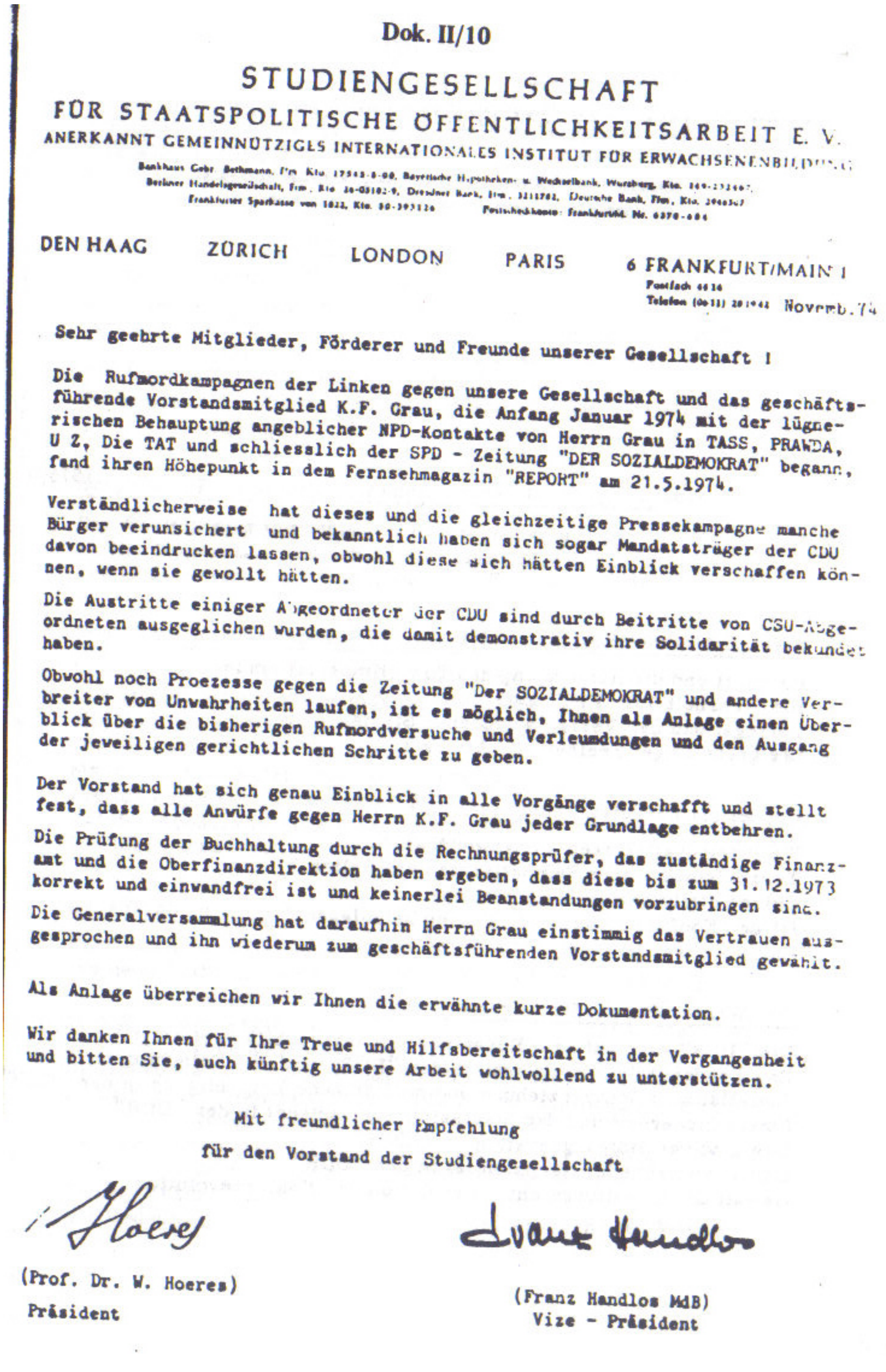

Dok. II/10

STUDIENGESELLSCHAFT
FÜR STAATSPOLITISCHE ÖFFENTLICHKEITSARBEIT E. V.
ANERKANNT GEMEINNÜTZIGES INTERNATIONALES INSTITUT FÜR ERWACHSENENBILDUNG

Bankhaus Gebr. Bethmann, Ffm. Kto. 17543-8-00, Bayerische Hypotheken- u. Wechselbank, Würzburg, Kto. 149-232467,
Berliner Handelsgesellschaft, Ffm., Kto. 16-05102-9, Dresdner Bank, Ffm., 3211782, Deutsche Bank, Ffm., Kto. 2946367
Frankfurter Sparkasse von 1822, Kto. 30-393126 Postscheckkonto: Frankfurt/M. Nr. 6370-604

DEN HAAG ZÜRICH LONDON PARIS 6 FRANKFURT/MAIN 1
Postfach 4416
Telefon (0611) 281944 Novemb. 74

Sehr geehrte Mitglieder, Förderer und Freunde unserer Gesellschaft !

Die Rufmordkampagnen der Linken gegen unsere Gesellschaft und das geschäftsführende Vorstandsmitglied K.F. Grau, die Anfang Januar 1974 mit der lügnerischen Behauptung angeblicher NPD-Kontakte von Herrn Grau in TASS, PRAWDA, U Z, Die TAT und schliesslich der SPD - Zeitung "DER SOZIALDEMOKRAT" begann, fand ihren Höhepunkt in dem Fernsehmagazin "REPORT" am 21.5.1974.

Verständlicherweise hat dieses und die gleichzeitige Pressekampagne manche Bürger verunsichert und bekanntlich haben sich sogar Mandatsträger der CDU davon beeindrucken lassen, obwohl diese sich hätten Einblick verschaffen können, wenn sie gewollt hätten.

Die Austritte einiger Abgeordneter der CDU sind durch Beitritte von CSU-Abgeordneten ausgeglichen wurden, die damit demonstrativ ihre Solidarität bekundet haben.

Obwohl noch Proezesse gegen die Zeitung "Der SOZIALDEMOKRAT" und andere Verbreiter von Unwahrheiten laufen, ist es möglich, Ihnen als Anlage einen Überblick über die bisherigen Rufmordversuche und Verleumdungen und den Ausgang der jeweiligen gerichtlichen Schritte zu geben.

Der Vorstand hat sich genau Einblick in alle Vorgänge verschafft und stellt fest, dass alle Anwürfe gegen Herrn K.F. Grau jeder Grundlage entbehren.
Die Prüfung der Buchhaltung durch die Rechnungsprüfer, das zuständige Finanzamt und die Oberfinanzdirektion haben ergeben, dass diese bis zum 31.12.1973 korrekt und einwandfrei ist und keinerlei Beanstandungen vorzubringen sind.
Die Generalversammlung hat daraufhin Herrn Grau einstimmig das Vertrauen ausgesprochen und ihn wiederum zum geschäftsführenden Vorstandsmitglied gewählt.

Als Anlage überreichen wir Ihnen die erwähnte kurze Dokumentation.

Wir danken Ihnen für Ihre Treue und Hilfsbereitschaft in der Vergangenheit und bitten Sie, auch künftig unsere Arbeit wohlwollend zu unterstützen.

Mit freundlicher Empfehlung
für den Vorstand der Studiengesellschaft

Hoeres
(Prof. Dr. W. Hoeres)
Präsident

Franz Handlos
(Franz Handlos MdB)
Vize - Präsident

Below: advert for the March 1974 ISC contribution to the pro-South Africa campaign, from Conflict Study 46 by Horchem, June 1974.

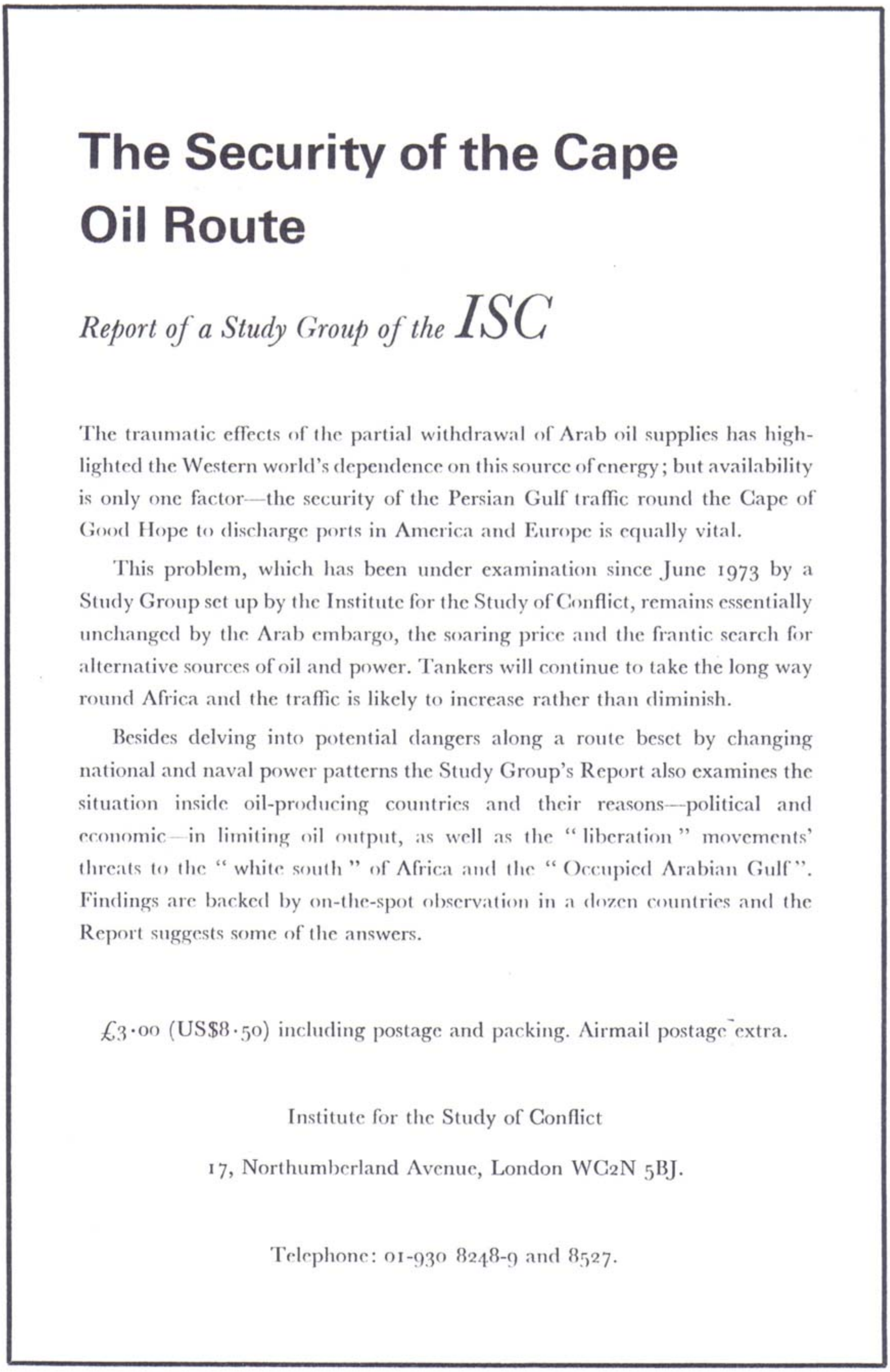

The Security of the Cape Oil Route

Report of a Study Group of the ISC

The traumatic effects of the partial withdrawal of Arab oil supplies has highlighted the Western world's dependence on this source of energy; but availability is only one factor—the security of the Persian Gulf traffic round the Cape of Good Hope to discharge ports in America and Europe is equally vital.

This problem, which has been under examination since June 1973 by a Study Group set up by the Institute for the Study of Conflict, remains essentially unchanged by the Arab embargo, the soaring price and the frantic search for alternative sources of oil and power. Tankers will continue to take the long way round Africa and the traffic is likely to increase rather than diminish.

Besides delving into potential dangers along a route beset by changing national and naval power patterns the Study Group's Report also examines the situation inside oil-producing countries and their reasons—political and economic—in limiting oil output, as well as the " liberation " movements' threats to the " white south " of Africa and the " Occupied Arabian Gulf ". Findings are backed by on-the-spot observation in a dozen countries and the Report suggests some of the answers.

£3·00 (US$8·50) including postage and packing. Airmail postage extra.

Institute for the Study of Conflict

17, Northumberland Avenue, London WC2N 5BJ.

Telephone: 01-930 8248-9 and 8527.

Below: details of the ISC group which scored their biggest media coup, from Conflict Study 46 by Horchem, June 1974.

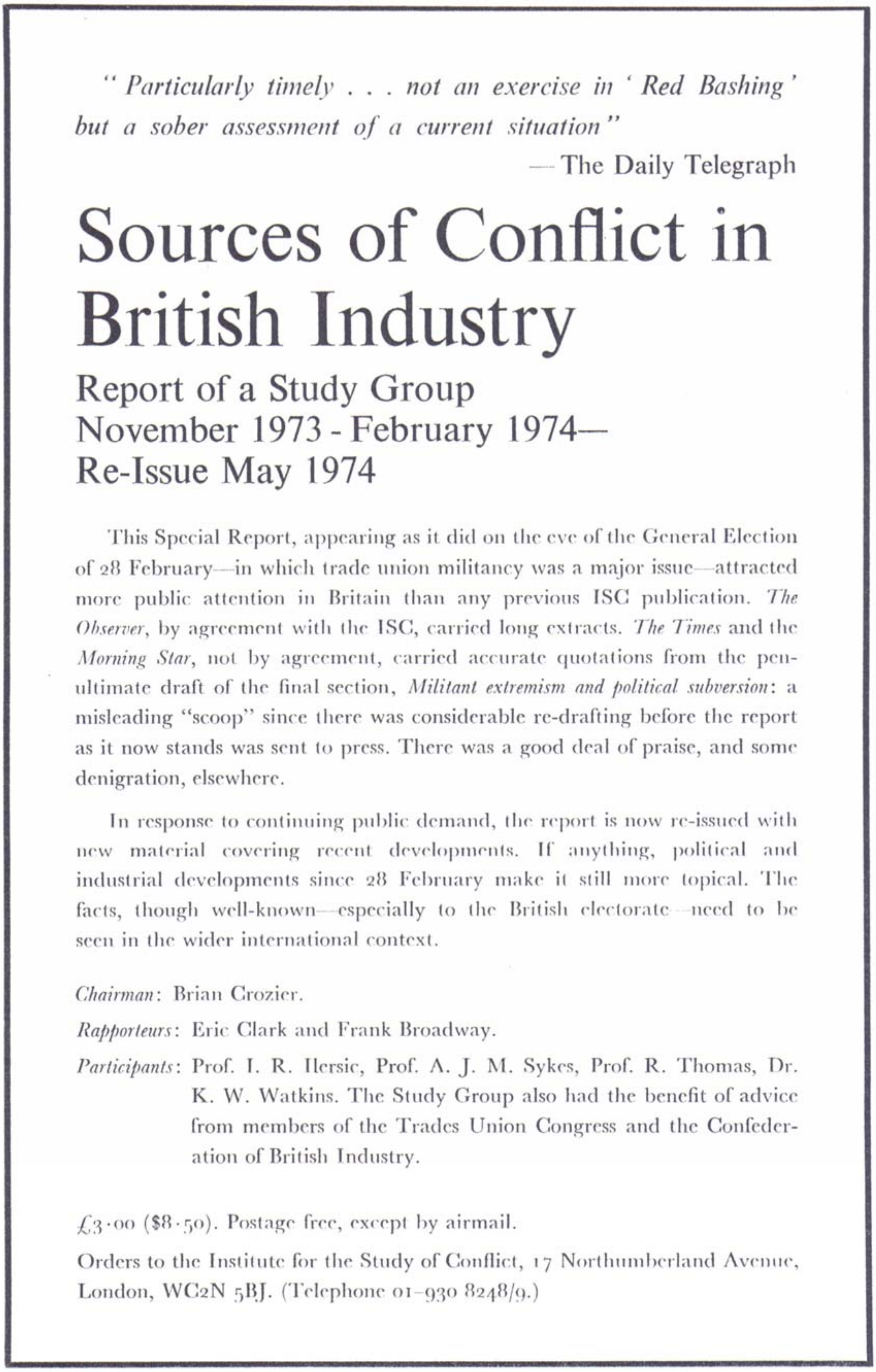

"Particularly timely . . . not an exercise in 'Red Bashing' but a sober assessment of a current situation"

—The Daily Telegraph

Sources of Conflict in British Industry

Report of a Study Group
November 1973 - February 1974—
Re-Issue May 1974

This Special Report, appearing as it did on the eve of the General Election of 28 February—in which trade union militancy was a major issue—attracted more public attention in Britain than any previous ISC publication. *The Observer*, by agreement with the ISC, carried long extracts. *The Times* and the *Morning Star*, not by agreement, carried accurate quotations from the penultimate draft of the final section, *Militant extremism and political subversion*: a misleading "scoop" since there was considerable re-drafting before the report as it now stands was sent to press. There was a good deal of praise, and some denigration, elsewhere.

In response to continuing public demand, the report is now re-issued with new material covering recent developments. If anything, political and industrial developments since 28 February make it still more topical. The facts, though well-known—especially to the British electorate—need to be seen in the wider international context.

Chairman: Brian Crozier.

Rapporteurs: Eric Clark and Frank Broadway.

Participants: Prof. I. R. Ilersic, Prof. A. J. M. Sykes, Prof. R. Thomas, Dr. K. W. Watkins. The Study Group also had the benefit of advice from members of the Trades Union Congress and the Confederation of British Industry.

£3·00 ($8·50). Postage free, except by airmail.

Orders to the Institute for the Study of Conflict, 17 Northumberland Avenue, London, WC2N 5BJ. (Telephone 01-930 8248/9.)

Below: ISC Council membership from Conflict Study 46 by Horchem (NB: his job is not specified), June 1974.

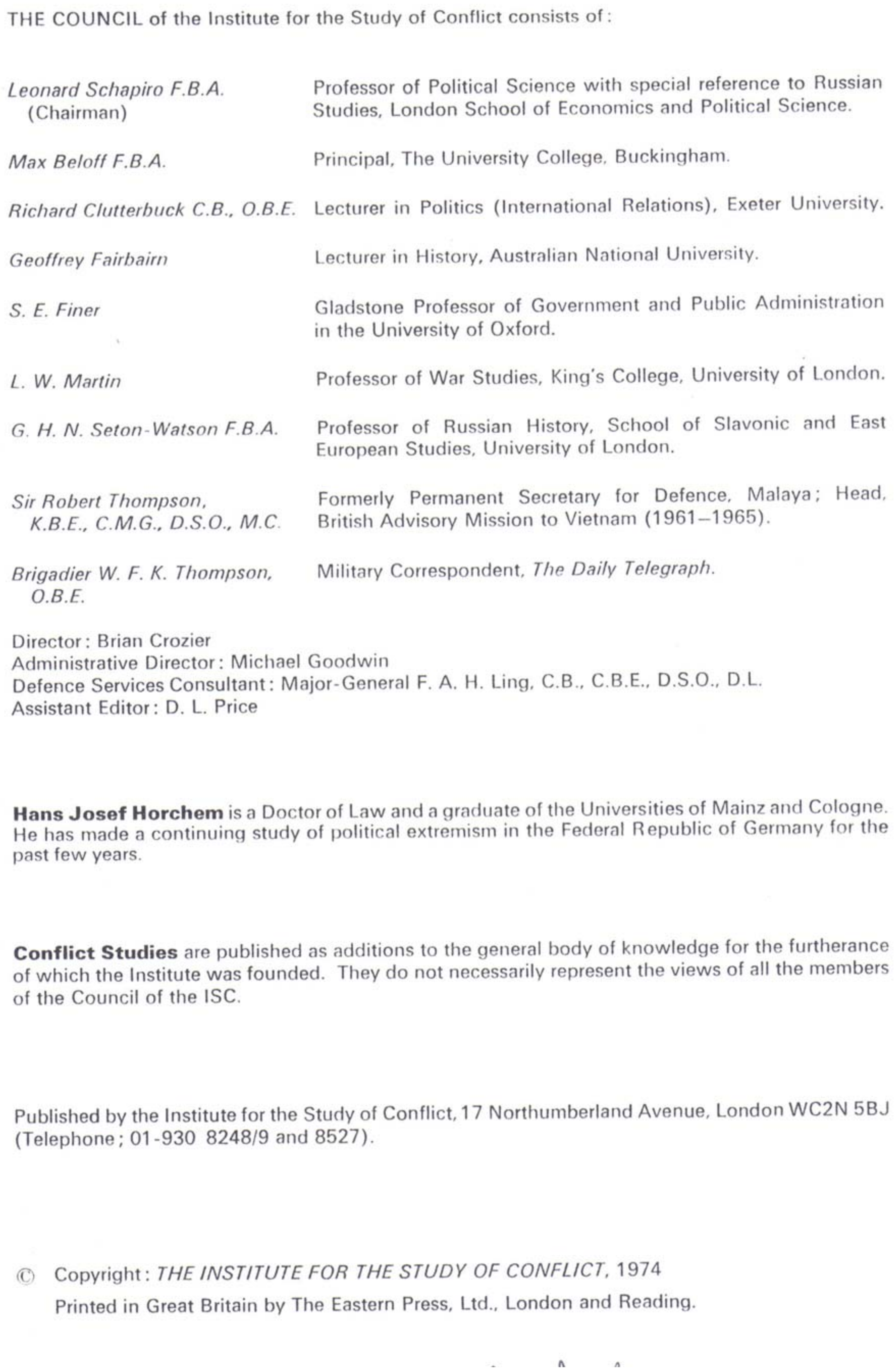

THE COUNCIL of the Institute for the Study of Conflict consists of:

Leonard Schapiro F.B.A. (Chairman)	Professor of Political Science with special reference to Russian Studies, London School of Economics and Political Science.
Max Beloff F.B.A.	Principal, The University College, Buckingham.
Richard Clutterbuck C.B., O.B.E.	Lecturer in Politics (International Relations), Exeter University.
Geoffrey Fairbairn	Lecturer in History, Australian National University.
S. E. Finer	Gladstone Professor of Government and Public Administration in the University of Oxford.
L. W. Martin	Professor of War Studies, King's College, University of London.
G. H. N. Seton-Watson F.B.A.	Professor of Russian History, School of Slavonic and East European Studies, University of London.
Sir Robert Thompson, K.B.E., C.M.G., D.S.O., M.C.	Formerly Permanent Secretary for Defence, Malaya; Head, British Advisory Mission to Vietnam (1961–1965).
Brigadier W. F. K. Thompson, O.B.E.	Military Correspondent, *The Daily Telegraph*.

Director: Brian Crozier
Administrative Director: Michael Goodwin
Defence Services Consultant: Major-General F. A. H. Ling, C.B., C.B.E., D.S.O., D.L.
Assistant Editor: D. L. Price

Hans Josef Horchem is a Doctor of Law and a graduate of the Universities of Mainz and Cologne. He has made a continuing study of political extremism in the Federal Republic of Germany for the past few years.

Conflict Studies are published as additions to the general body of knowledge for the furtherance of which the Institute was founded. They do not necessarily represent the views of all the members of the Council of the ISC.

Published by the Institute for the Study of Conflict, 17 Northumberland Avenue, London WC2N 5BJ
(Telephone; 01-930 8248/9 and 8527).

© Copyright: *THE INSTITUTE FOR THE STUDY OF CONFLICT*, 1974

Printed in Great Britain by The Eastern Press, Ltd., London and Reading.

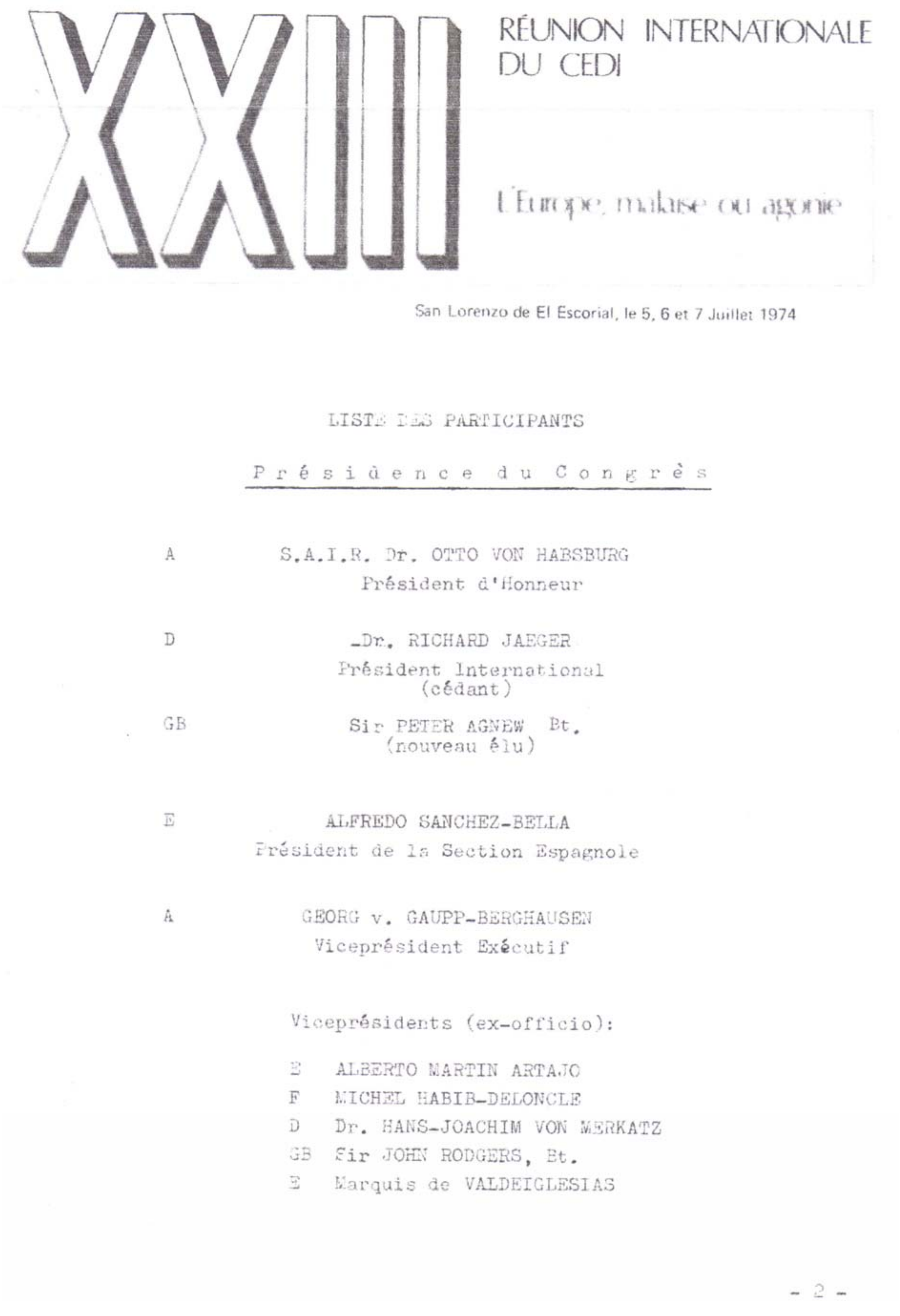

XXIII RÉUNION INTERNATIONALE DU CEDI

L'Europe, malaise ou agonie

San Lorenzo de El Escorial, le 5, 6 et 7 Juillet 1974

LISTE DES PARTICIPANTS

Présidence du Congrès

A	S.A.I.R. Dr. OTTO VON HABSBURG Président d'Honneur
D	Dr. RICHARD JAEGER Président International (cédant)
GB	Sir PETER AGNEW Bt. (nouveau élu)
E	ALFREDO SANCHEZ-BELLA Président de la Section Espagnole
A	GEORG v. GAUPP-BERGHAUSEN Viceprésident Exécutif

Viceprésidents (ex-officio):

E	ALBERTO MARTIN ARTAJO
F	MICHEL HABIB-DELONCLE
D	Dr. HANS-JOACHIM VON MERKATZ
GB	Sir JOHN RODGERS, Bt.
E	Marquis de VALDEIGLESIAS

- 2 -

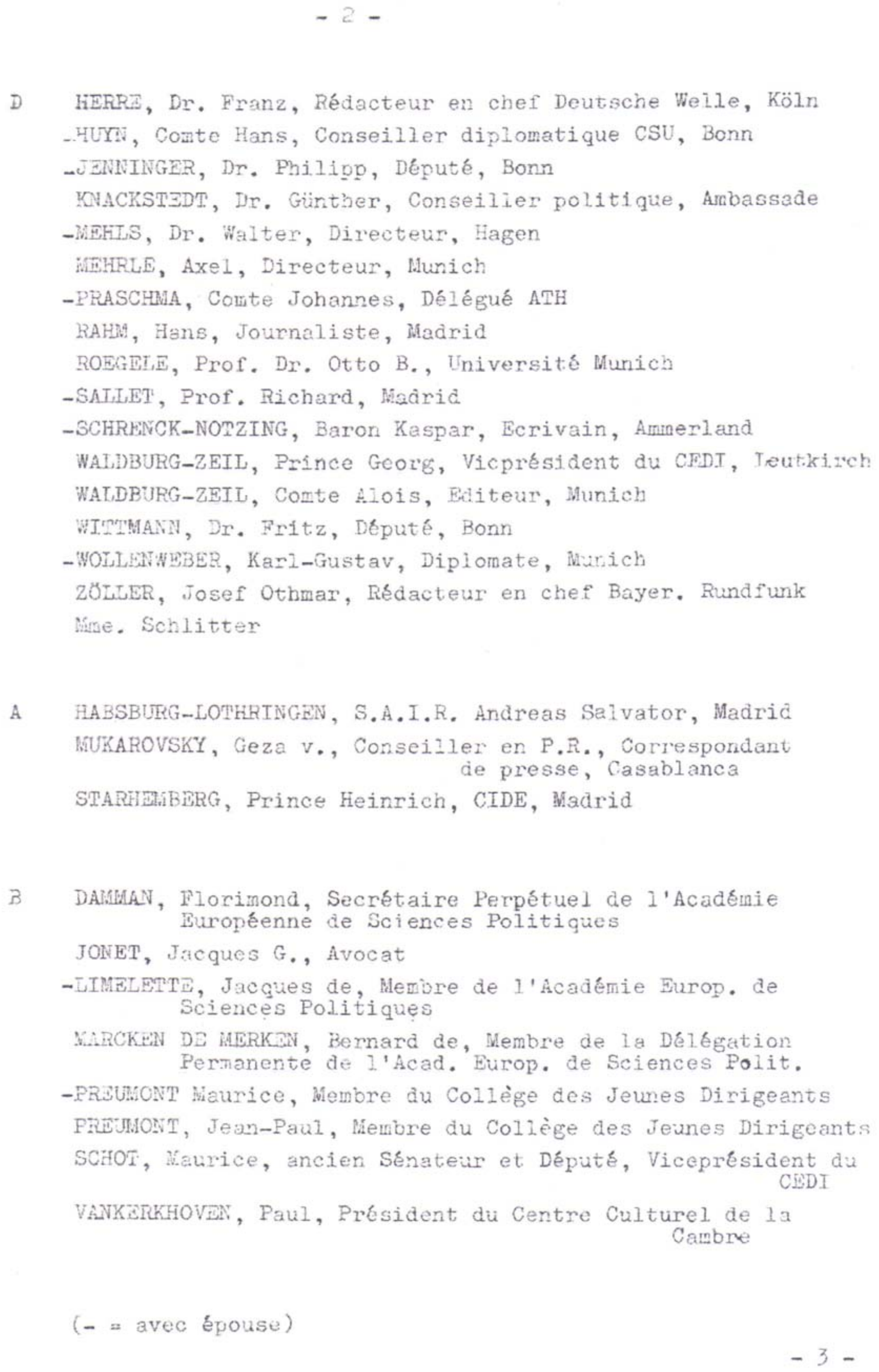

- 2 -

D HERRE, Dr. Franz, Rédacteur en chef Deutsche Welle, Köln
-HUYN, Comte Hans, Conseiller diplomatique CSU, Bonn
-JENNINGER, Dr. Philipp, Député, Bonn
KNACKSTEDT, Dr. Günther, Conseiller politique, Ambassade
-MEHLS, Dr. Walter, Directeur, Hagen
MEHRLE, Axel, Directeur, Munich
-PRASCHMA, Comte Johannes, Délégué ATH
RAHM, Hans, Journaliste, Madrid
ROEGELE, Prof. Dr. Otto B., Université Munich
-SALLET, Prof. Richard, Madrid
-SCHRENCK-NOTZING, Baron Kaspar, Ecrivain, Ammerland
WALDBURG-ZEIL, Prince Georg, Vicprésident du CEDI, Leutkirch
WALDBURG-ZEIL, Comte Alois, Editeur, Munich
WITTMANN, Dr. Fritz, Député, Bonn
-WOLLENWEBER, Karl-Gustav, Diplomate, Munich
ZÖLLER, Josef Othmar, Rédacteur en chef Bayer. Rundfunk
Mme. Schlitter

A HABSBURG-LOTHRINGEN, S.A.I.R. Andreas Salvator, Madrid
MUKAROVSKY, Geza v., Conseiller en P.R., Correspondant de presse, Casablanca
STARHEMBERG, Prince Heinrich, CIDE, Madrid

B DAMMAN, Florimond, Secrétaire Perpétuel de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques
JONET, Jacques G., Avocat
-LIMELETTE, Jacques de, Membre de l'Académie Europ. de Sciences Politiques
MARCKEN DE MERKEN, Bernard de, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'Acad. Europ. de Sciences Polit.
-PREUMONT Maurice, Membre du Collège des Jeunes Dirigeants
PREUMONT, Jean-Paul, Membre du Collège des Jeunes Dirigeants
SCHOT, Maurice, ancien Sénateur et Député, Viceprésident du CEDI
VANKERKHOVEN, Paul, Président du Centre Culturel de la Cambre

(- = avec épouse)

- 3 -

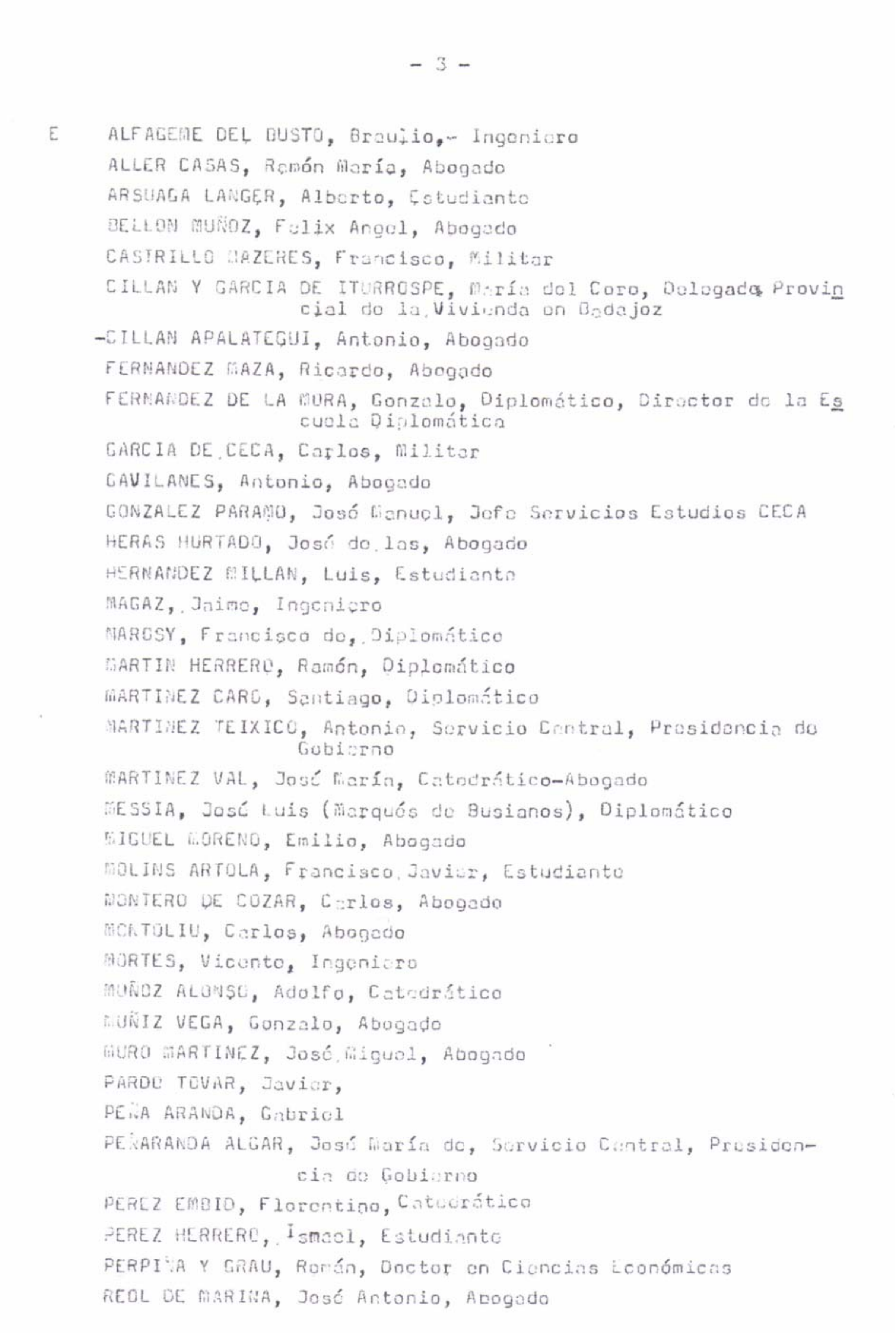

E ALFAGEME DEL BUSTO, Braulio,- Ingeniero
ALLER CASAS, Ramón María, Abogado
ARSUAGA LANGER, Alberto, Estudiante
BELLON MUÑOZ, Felix Angel, Abogado
CASTRILLO MAZERES, Francisco, Militar
CILLAN Y GARCIA DE ITURROSPE, María del Coro, Delegado Provincial de la Vivienda en Badajoz
-CILLAN APALATEGUI, Antonio, Abogado
FERNANDEZ MAZA, Ricardo, Abogado
FERNANDEZ DE LA MORA, Gonzalo, Diplomático, Director de la Escuela Diplomática
GARCIA DE CECA, Carlos, Militar
GAVILANES, Antonio, Abogado
GONZALEZ PARAMO, José Manuel, Jefe Servicios Estudios CECA
HERAS HURTADO, José de las, Abogado
HERNANDEZ MILLAN, Luis, Estudiante
MAGAZ, Jaime, Ingeniero
MAROSY, Francisco de, Diplomático
MARTIN HERRERO, Ramón, Diplomático
MARTINEZ CARO, Santiago, Diplomático
MARTINEZ TEIXIDO, Antonio, Servicio Central, Presidencia de Gobierno
MARTINEZ VAL, José María, Catedrático-Abogado
MESSIA, José Luis (Marqués de Busianos), Diplomático
MIGUEL MORENO, Emilio, Abogado
MOLINS ARTOLA, Francisco Javier, Estudiante
MONTERO DE COZAR, Carlos, Abogado
MONTOLIU, Carlos, Abogado
MORTES, Vicente, Ingeniero
MUÑOZ ALONSO, Adolfo, Catedrático
MUÑIZ VEGA, Gonzalo, Abogado
MURO MARTINEZ, José Miguel, Abogado
PARDO TOVAR, Javier,
PEÑA ARANDA, Gabriel
PEÑARANDA ALGAR, José María de, Servicio Central, Presidencia de Gobierno
PEREZ EMBID, Florentino, Catedrático
PEREZ HERRERO, Ismael, Estudiante
PERPIÑA Y GRAU, Román, Doctor en Ciencias Económicas
REOL DE MARINA, José Antonio, Abogado

REOL SUAREZ, Antonio.- Fiscal General
SANCHEZ AGESTA, Luis.- Catedrático
SANCHEZ-CERVERA, Antonio.- Abogado
SANCHEZ-CERVERA, Santiago.- Ingeniero Naval
SANCHO BORJA, Adrián
SANTAMARIA BUJEDO, Ricardo.- Estudiante
TEJADA, Marqués de.- Gobernador del Banco de España
THOMAS DE CARRANZA, Manuel.- Diplomático
VELASCO CALVO, Eugenio.- Abogado
WOLKOW, Jorge
CAMPILLO REGUEIRO, Eduardo.- Estudiante
JIMENEZ LAFERRIERE, José Antonio.- Estudiante
BAENA, Juan Julio
RODRIGUEZ, Carlos E.
SOLAR ORDOÑEZ, José Juan del
FERNANDEZ DE LA CIGOÑA, Francisco José
HOYO, Manuel del
GIL, Daniel
FERNANDEZ-XESTA, Ernesto
FERNANDEZ MONZON, Manuel
MERIDA, María
VALENTIN-GAMAZO, Manuel
VALENTIN-GAMAZO, Ramón

USA	MACMURRAUGH, Kilburn, Professeur, Madrid
	-PEETERS, Paul L., Professeur, Tournai
	RIGONI, Ernest, Délégué Internat. Comité Americ. célébration bi-centenaire Indépendance Etats-Unis
	-SITKO, Dr. Karol, Délégué Internat. Comité Americ. cél. bi-centenaire Indépendance Etats-Unis
F	PENICAUT, Alain
	DESPLATS, Anne, Collaboratrice, Paris
	-FONTMICHEL, Cte. Hervé de, Maire de Grasse, Secrétaire général du CEDI
	GALLOIS, Général Pierre,M., Paris
	-MALAUD, Philippe, ancien Ministre, Paris
	PALEWSKI, Jean-Paul, Député, Viceprésident du CEDI
	RIX, Pierre-Henry, Préfet retr., Avocat, Marseille
	EMANUELLI, Pierre, F.E.E., Paris
GB	BENNETT, Francis, Alderman
	-BIGGS-DAVISON, John, M.P.
	CLARKE Kenneth, M.P.
	-DUNDEE, The Earl of, House of Lords
	LOWSON, Sir Denys, Bt., Investment Banker
	St. HELENS, Lord, House of Lords
	WOODFORD, Bernard Edwin, Director
GR	BOTZARIS Demètre, Général, ancien Ministre, Viceprésident du CEDI, Athènes
IR	-VALDERANO, Duke of, Professor, Monte Estoril
I	PONS, Dr. Vittorio, Secr. Gén. Union Paneuropéenne
	DRAGAN, José Constantino, Dr., Milano
	PALLADINO, Prof. Giuseppe, Université de Rome

(- = avec épouse)

NL MERTENS, Dr. Anthony, Dir. de la revue "To the Point" (International)

P ARAUJO OLIVEIRA P. R., Dra. Aldina, Directora do Instituto Oriental

S - ANDREEN, Finn, Economiste
BRODIN, Nils-Eric, Ecrivain
FREDBORG, Dr. Arvid, Conseiller, Viceprésident du CEDI

+ + +

KHEVENHUELLER, Comte Max, Ambassadeur de l'Ordre Souverain de Malte
SEVILLA, Luis de, Ambassadeur, Président "Peoples for the United Nations World Council"
SORIA JIMENEZ DE TEJADA, Mario, C.I.D.E., Madrid
PODSTATZKY-LICHTENSTEIN, Comte Juan, Denia
TANG, Prof. Alfred, Vienne/Taipei
ROOS, Brig. Helm, Cape Town
HOTUNG, Eric, Extrême Orient

Secretariat du Congrès

Secrétariat Général

LUIS SANTIAGO DE PABLO
Secrétaire général adjoint

ELISABETH v. MAYER-HOHENWILL
Secrétaire Secrétariat Gén.

JUAN POSTLBAUER

Section Espagnole

FERNANDO MAGARINOS TORRES
Secrétaire technique de la Section Espagnole

ISABEL SHELLY PEREZ
Secrétaire Section Espagn.

ADELA PEREZ FERNANDEZ

+ + +

Below: KDK flier, circa 1974-75, from YEF.

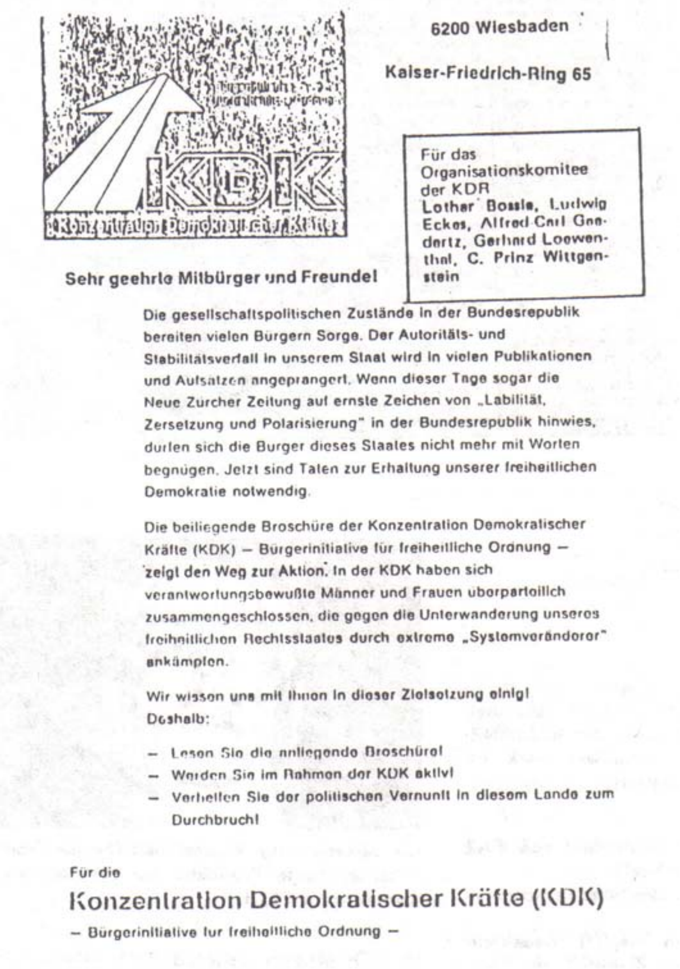
KDK
Konzentration Demokratischer Kräfte

6200 Wiesbaden

Kaiser-Friedrich-Ring 65

Für das
Organisationskomitee
der KDR
Lothar Bossle, Ludwig
Eckes, Alfred Carl Gae-
dertz, Gerhard Loewen-
thal, C. Prinz Wittgen-
stein

Sehr geehrte Mitbürger und Freunde!

Die gesellschaftspolitischen Zustände in der Bundesrepublik bereiten vielen Bürgern Sorge. Der Autoritäts- und Stabilitätsverfall in unserem Staat wird in vielen Publikationen und Aufsätzen angeprangert. Wenn dieser Tage sogar die Neue Zürcher Zeitung auf ernste Zeichen von „Labilität, Zersetzung und Polarisierung" in der Bundesrepublik hinwies, dürfen sich die Bürger dieses Staates nicht mehr mit Worten begnügen. Jetzt sind Taten zur Erhaltung unserer freiheitlichen Demokratie notwendig.

Die beiliegende Broschüre der Konzentration Demokratischer Kräfte (KDK) – Bürgerinitiative für freiheitliche Ordnung – zeigt den Weg zur Aktion. In der KDK haben sich verantwortungsbewußte Männer und Frauen überparteilich zusammengeschlossen, die gegen die Unterwanderung unseres freiheitlichen Rechtsstaates durch extreme „Systemveränderer" ankämpfen.

Wir wissen uns mit Ihnen in dieser Zielsetzung einig!
Deshalb:

– Lesen Sie die anliegende Broschüre!
– Werden Sie im Rahmen der KDK aktiv!
– Verhelfen Sie der politischen Vernunft in diesem Lande zum Durchbruch!

Für die

Konzentration Demokratischer Kräfte (KDK)

– Bürgerinitiative für freiheitliche Ordnung –

Below: ISP list of speakers and subjects in 1975-76, from YEF.

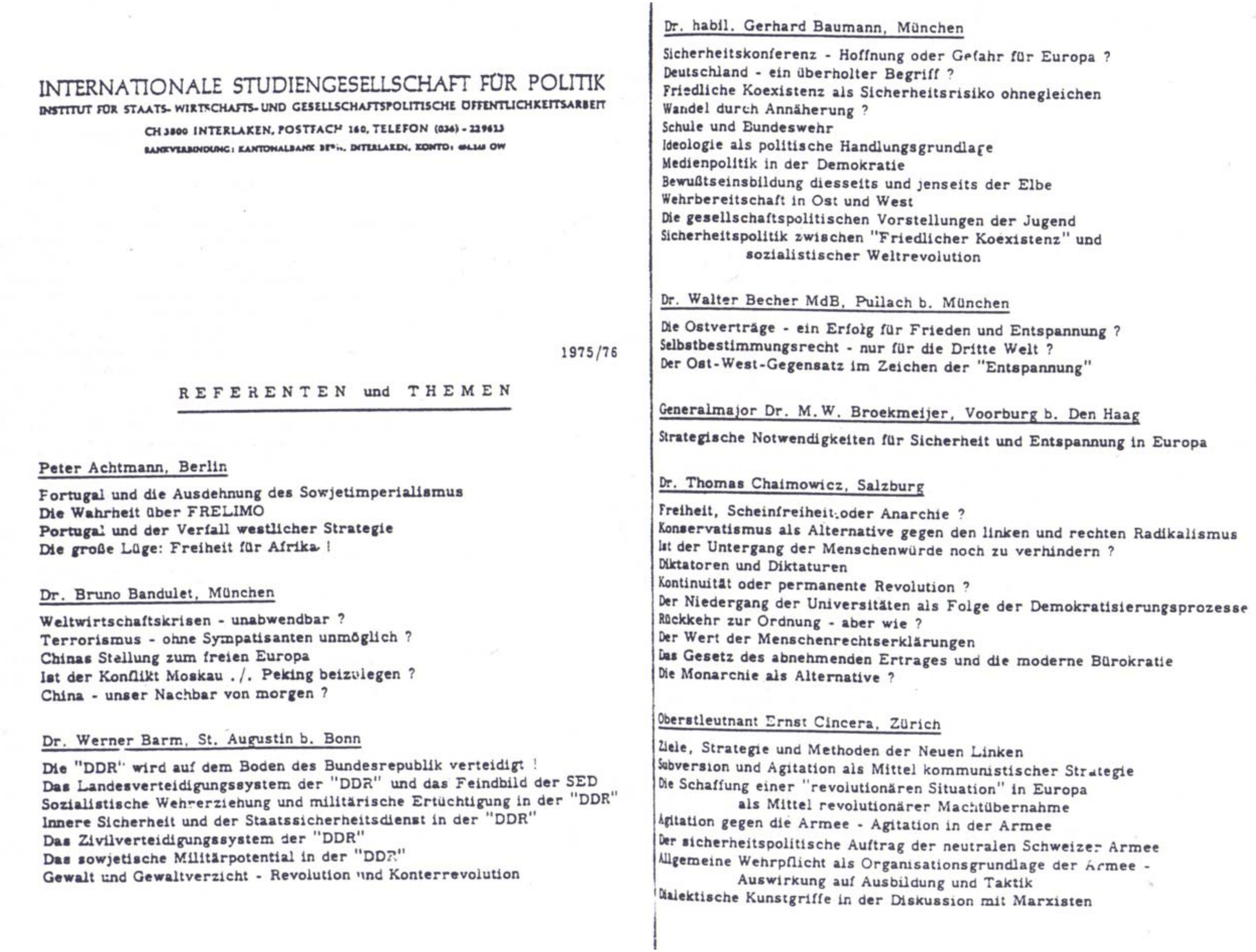

INTERNATIONALE STUDIENGESELLSCHAFT FÜR POLITIK
INSTITUT FÜR STAATS- WIRTSCHAFTS- UND GESELLSCHAFTSPOLITISCHE ÖFFENTLICHKEITSARBEIT
CH 3800 INTERLAKEN, POSTFACH 160, TELEFON (036) - 229623
BANKVERBINDUNG: KANTONALBANK BERN, INTERLAKEN, KONTO: [illegible] OW

1975/76

REFERENTEN und THEMEN

Peter Achtmann, Berlin

Portugal und die Ausdehnung des Sowjetimperialismus
Die Wahrheit über FRELIMO
Portugal und der Verfall westlicher Strategie
Die große Lüge: Freiheit für Afrika !

Dr. Bruno Bandulet, München

Weltwirtschaftskrisen - unabwendbar ?
Terrorismus - ohne Sympatisanten unmöglich ?
Chinas Stellung zum freien Europa
Ist der Konflikt Moskau ./. Peking beizulegen ?
China - unser Nachbar von morgen ?

Dr. Werner Barm, St. Augustin b. Bonn

Die "DDR" wird auf dem Boden des Bundesrepublik verteidigt !
Das Landesverteidigungssystem der "DDR" und das Feindbild der SED
Sozialistische Wehrerziehung und militärische Ertüchtigung in der "DDR"
Innere Sicherheit und der Staatssicherheitsdienst in der "DDR"
Das Zivilverteidigungssystem der "DDR"
Das sowjetische Militärpotential in der "DDR"
Gewalt und Gewaltverzicht - Revolution und Konterrevolution

Dr. habil. Gerhard Baumann, München

Sicherheitskonferenz - Hoffnung oder Gefahr für Europa ?
Deutschland - ein überholter Begriff ?
Friedliche Koexistenz als Sicherheitsrisiko ohnegleichen
Wandel durch Annäherung ?
Schule und Bundeswehr
Ideologie als politische Handlungsgrundlage
Medienpolitik in der Demokratie
Bewußtseinsbildung diesseits und jenseits der Elbe
Wehrbereitschaft in Ost und West
Die gesellschaftspolitischen Vorstellungen der Jugend
Sicherheitspolitik zwischen "Friedlicher Koexistenz" und
sozialistischer Weltrevolution

Dr. Walter Becher MdB, Pullach b. München

Die Ostverträge - ein Erfolg für Frieden und Entspannung ?
Selbstbestimmungsrecht - nur für die Dritte Welt ?
Der Ost-West-Gegensatz im Zeichen der "Entspannung"

Generalmajor Dr. M.W. Broekmeijer, Voorburg b. Den Haag

Strategische Notwendigkeiten für Sicherheit und Entspannung in Europa

Dr. Thomas Chaimowicz, Salzburg

Freiheit, Scheinfreiheit oder Anarchie ?
Konservatismus als Alternative gegen den linken und rechten Radikalismus
Ist der Untergang der Menschenwürde noch zu verhindern ?
Diktatoren und Diktaturen
Kontinuität oder permanente Revolution ?
Der Niedergang der Universitäten als Folge der Demokratisierungsprozesse
Rückkehr zur Ordnung - aber wie ?
Der Wert der Menschenrechtserklärungen
Das Gesetz des abnehmenden Ertrages und die moderne Bürokratie
Die Monarchie als Alternative ?

Oberstleutnant Ernst Cincera, Zürich

Ziele, Strategie und Methoden der Neuen Linken
Subversion und Agitation als Mittel kommunistischer Strategie
Die Schaffung einer "revolutionären Situation" in Europa
als Mittel revolutionärer Machtübernahme
Agitation gegen die Armee - Agitation in der Armee
Der sicherheitspolitische Auftrag der neutralen Schweizer Armee
Allgemeine Wehrpflicht als Organisationsgrundlage der Armee -
Auswirkung auf Ausbildung und Taktik
Dialektische Kunstgriffe in der Diskussion mit Marxisten

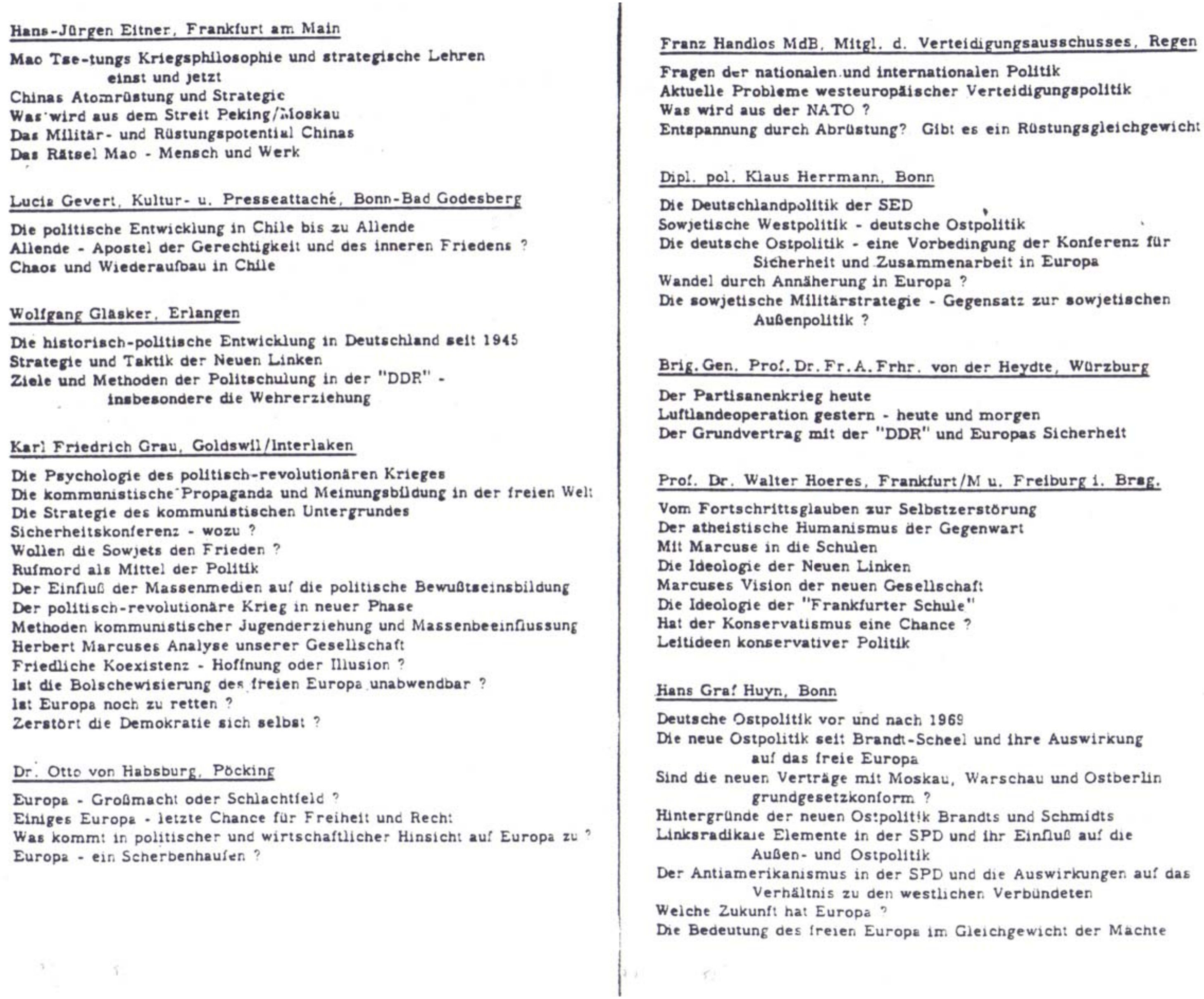

Hans-Jürgen Eitner, Frankfurt am Main

Mao Tse-tungs Kriegsphilosophie und strategische Lehren einst und jetzt
Chinas Atomrüstung und Strategie
Was wird aus dem Streit Peking/Moskau
Das Militär- und Rüstungspotential Chinas
Das Rätsel Mao - Mensch und Werk

Lucia Gevert, Kultur- u. Presseattaché, Bonn-Bad Godesberg

Die politische Entwicklung in Chile bis zu Allende
Allende - Apostel der Gerechtigkeit und des inneren Friedens ?
Chaos und Wiederaufbau in Chile

Wolfgang Gläsker, Erlangen

Die historisch-politische Entwicklung in Deutschland seit 1945
Strategie und Taktik der Neuen Linken
Ziele und Methoden der Politschulung in der "DDR" - insbesondere die Wehrerziehung

Karl Friedrich Grau, Goldswil/Interlaken

Die Psychologie des politisch-revolutionären Krieges
Die kommunistische Propaganda und Meinungsbildung in der freien Welt
Die Strategie des kommunistischen Untergrundes
Sicherheitskonferenz - wozu ?
Wollen die Sowjets den Frieden ?
Rufmord als Mittel der Politik
Der Einfluß der Massenmedien auf die politische Bewußtseinsbildung
Der politisch-revolutionäre Krieg in neuer Phase
Methoden kommunistischer Jugenderziehung und Massenbeeinflussung
Herbert Marcuses Analyse unserer Gesellschaft
Friedliche Koexistenz - Hoffnung oder Illusion ?
Ist die Bolschewisierung des freien Europa unabwendbar ?
Ist Europa noch zu retten ?
Zerstört die Demokratie sich selbst ?

Dr. Otto von Habsburg, Pöcking

Europa - Großmacht oder Schlachtfeld ?
Einiges Europa - letzte Chance für Freiheit und Recht
Was kommt in politischer und wirtschaftlicher Hinsicht auf Europa zu ?
Europa - ein Scherbenhaufen ?

Franz Handlos MdB, Mitgl. d. Verteidigungsausschusses, Regen

Fragen der nationalen und internationalen Politik
Aktuelle Probleme westeuropäischer Verteidigungspolitik
Was wird aus der NATO ?
Entspannung durch Abrüstung? Gibt es ein Rüstungsgleichgewicht ?

Dipl. pol. Klaus Herrmann, Bonn

Die Deutschlandpolitik der SED
Sowjetische Westpolitik - deutsche Ostpolitik
Die deutsche Ostpolitik - eine Vorbedingung der Konferenz für Sicherheit und Zusammenarbeit in Europa
Wandel durch Annäherung in Europa ?
Die sowjetische Militärstrategie - Gegensatz zur sowjetischen Außenpolitik ?

Brig. Gen. Prof. Dr. Fr. A. Frhr. von der Heydte, Würzburg

Der Partisanenkrieg heute
Luftlandeoperation gestern - heute und morgen
Der Grundvertrag mit der "DDR" und Europas Sicherheit

Prof. Dr. Walter Hoeres, Frankfurt/M u. Freiburg i. Brsg.

Vom Fortschrittsglauben zur Selbstzerstörung
Der atheistische Humanismus der Gegenwart
Mit Marcuse in die Schulen
Die Ideologie der Neuen Linken
Marcuses Vision der neuen Gesellschaft
Die Ideologie der "Frankfurter Schule"
Hat der Konservatismus eine Chance ?
Leitideen konservativer Politik

Hans Graf Huyn, Bonn

Deutsche Ostpolitik vor und nach 1969
Die neue Ostpolitik seit Brandt-Scheel und ihre Auswirkung auf das freie Europa
Sind die neuen Verträge mit Moskau, Warschau und Ostberlin grundgesetzkonform ?
Hintergründe der neuen Ostpolitik Brandts und Schmidts
Linksradikale Elemente in der SPD und ihr Einfluß auf die Außen- und Ostpolitik
Der Antiamerikanismus in der SPD und die Auswirkungen auf das Verhältnis zu den westlichen Verbündeten
Welche Zukunft hat Europa ?
Die Bedeutung des freien Europa im Gleichgewicht der Mächte

Gerd Klaus Kaltenbrunner, Burg-Kirchzarten

Der überforderte schwache Staat - sind wir noch regierbar ?
Mehr Demokratisierung = mehr Freiheit ?
Westliche Moskaupilger und ihr Bild vom "Paradies"
Enttäuschte Revolutionäre 1917 bis 1975
Hat Konservatismus noch eine Zukunft ?
Christen und Konservative - Gemeinsamkeiten und Unterschiede

Brig. Gen. a. D. Hans Heinz Karst, Mittelzell (B)

Sozialismus und Heer in der Geschichte
Grundfragen der soldatischen Erziehung heute
Linkstrend in der Jugend - unaufhaltsam ?
Die innere und äußere Sicherheit der Bundesrepublik
Was heißt Integration der Bundeswehr in die Gesellschaft ?
Führung und Management

Hannes Kaschkat, Würzburg

Parteistaat im anderen Deutschland
Die Grund- und Freiheitsrechte in der "DDR"
Warum stehen die meisten Studenten abseits ?
Radikalismus an den Universitäten - Gefahr für die Demokratie ?
Die DKP - Befehlsempfänger der SED ?
Die nationale Frage aus der Sicht der SED

Dr. J. Kurt Klein, Bonn, (Leiter der PSK-Schule d. BW)

Gesellschaftsreform oder Gesellschaftsrevolution in der
BR Deutschland - Versuch einer Konfliktanalyse -
Moskau-Peking und die Deutschlandfrage
Das Deutschlandbild Sowjetrußlands
Macht und Machtgrenzen des Sowjetsystems
Die sowjetische Deutschlandspionage, Organisation und Arbeitsweise
Wirkungsbereiche des kommunistischen Untergrundes
in der BR Deutschland
Ideologie, Strategie und Taktik der Neuen Linken
Ursachen der Jugendunruhen in unserer Zeit
Grundlagen der sowjetischen Ideologie
Deutschland in der sowjetischen Strategie und Taktik
Gegenwärtige globalstrategische Tendenzen der sowjetischen Politik
Tendenzen der gegenwärtigen sowjetischen Deutschlandpolitik
Gruppen und Tendenzen des politischen Extremismus in der BRD heute

Colonel Louis Kleinmann, Straßburg

Die Stellung der französischen Armee in Volk und Staat
- Flaut der Verteidigungswille in Frankreich ab ? -
Wie vernünftig ist die deutsch-französische Vernunftsehe ?
Wie europäisch sind Frankreich und die Franzosen ?

Dr. Bernhard Koch, Generalsekretär des CGB, Bad Godesberg

Die Bedeutung der Sozialstaatsklausel
Schutz der verfassungsmäßigen Ordnung vor Verfassungsfeinden
Verfassungsrecht und Völkerrecht
Partnerschaft in der Wirtschaft
Gewerkschaften und Wirtschaftsordnung
Das System der sozialen Sicherheit
Gewerkschaftspluralismus und Demokratie
Gewerkschaften und politische Parteien
Mitbestimmung - Vermögensbildung in gewerkschaftlicher Sicht
Internationale Gewerkschaftsbewegung

Oleg Krassowski (ehem. sowjet. Offizier), Offenbach

Asien im Spannungsfeld zwischen Moskau, Peking und Washington
Die Kraftprobe zwischen Kommunismus und Freiheit Ostasiens
Der sowjetisch-chinesische Konflikt und die
amerikanisch-chinesische Versöhnung
Die Sowjetarmee - ihr Aufbau und ihre Schlagkraft
Erziehung und Bildung zum Sowjetmenschen
Ist die Ostpolitik der Bundesregierung ein politischer
Seiltanz ohne Netz ?
Wie hoch ist der Preis der deutsch-sowjetischen Versöhnung und
wer wird ihn bezahlen müssen ?
Zwei Objekte der Sowjetpolitik - die Bundesrepublik und die "DDR"

Prof. Dr. Dr. Ed. Kroker, Leiter der Ostakademie Königstein

Mao Tse-tung und die Veränderung des Bewußtseins (Militarisierung,
Studium, Arbeit)
"Die Gewalt" in der Lehre des Vorsitzenden Mao Tse-tung
Interpretation maoistischer Texte auf dem Hintergrund der
chinesischen Innen- und Außenpolitik
Mao Tse-tung, Lehrer und Prophet des chinesischen Volkes
Das Bild des Menschen in den Schriften Mao Tse-tungs
Die Freiheit des Menschen - philosophische Grundlegung der Freiheit
Der Konfuzianismus - Wegbereiter der kommunistischen Revolution
Mao Tse-tung und die permanente Revolution
Die ideologischen Meinungsverschiedenheiten zwischen
Peking und Moskau

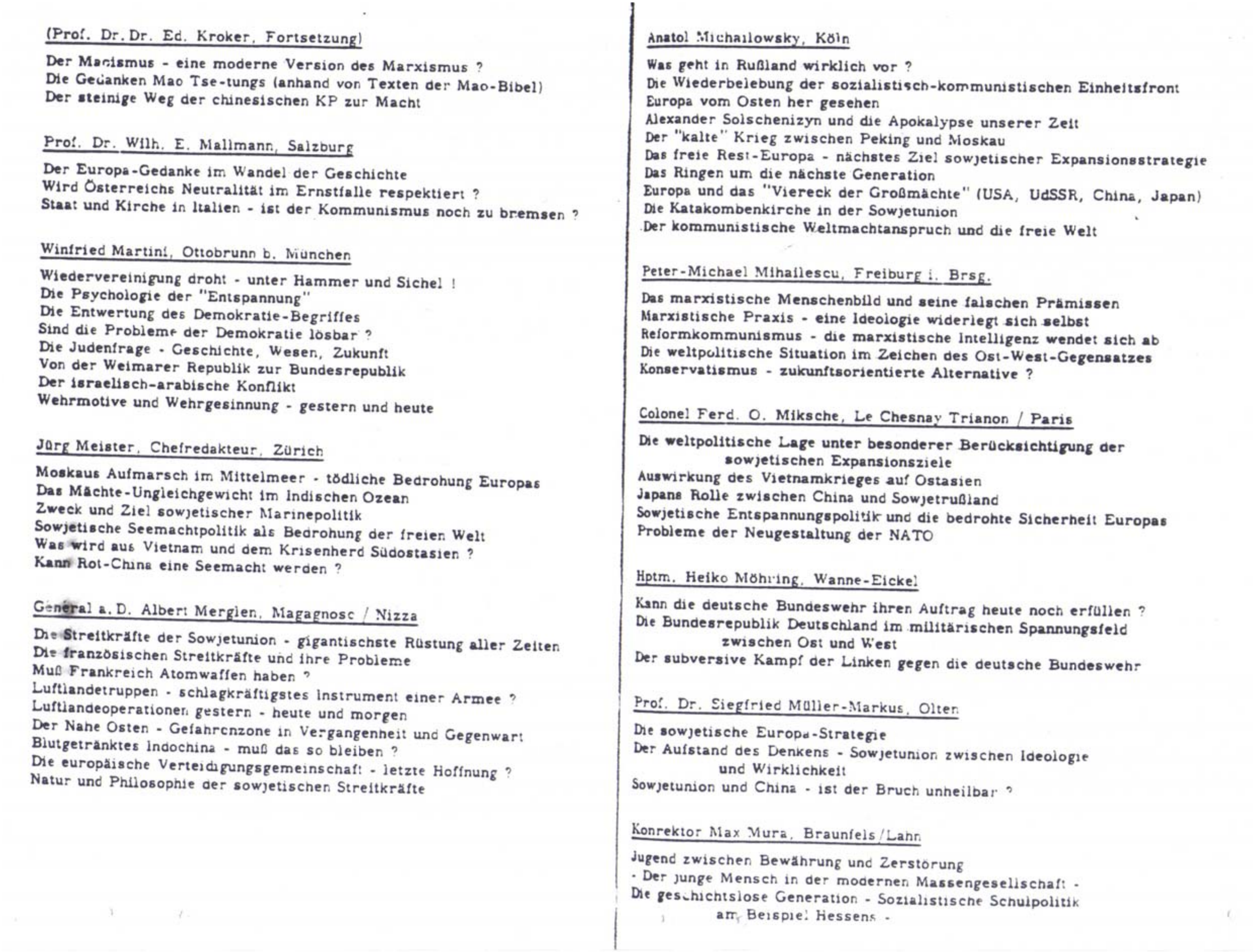

(Prof. Dr. Dr. Ed. Kroker, Fortsetzung)

Der Maoismus - eine moderne Version des Marxismus ?
Die Gedanken Mao Tse-tungs (anhand von Texten der Mao-Bibel)
Der steinige Weg der chinesischen KP zur Macht

Prof. Dr. Wilh. E. Mallmann, Salzburg

Der Europa-Gedanke im Wandel der Geschichte
Wird Österreichs Neutralität im Ernstfalle respektiert ?
Staat und Kirche in Italien - ist der Kommunismus noch zu bremsen ?

Winfried Martini, Ottobrunn b. München

Wiedervereinigung droht - unter Hammer und Sichel !
Die Psychologie der "Entspannung"
Die Entwertung des Demokratie-Begriffes
Sind die Probleme der Demokratie lösbar ?
Die Judenfrage - Geschichte, Wesen, Zukunft
Von der Weimarer Republik zur Bundesrepublik
Der israelisch-arabische Konflikt
Wehrmotive und Wehrgesinnung - gestern und heute

Jürg Meister, Chefredakteur, Zürich

Moskaus Aufmarsch im Mittelmeer - tödliche Bedrohung Europas
Das Mächte-Ungleichgewicht im Indischen Ozean
Zweck und Ziel sowjetischer Marinepolitik
Sowjetische Seemachtpolitik als Bedrohung der freien Welt
Was wird aus Vietnam und dem Krisenherd Südostasien ?
Kann Rot-China eine Seemacht werden ?

General a. D. Albert Merglen, Magagnosc / Nizza

Die Streitkräfte der Sowjetunion - gigantischste Rüstung aller Zeiten
Die französischen Streitkräfte und ihre Probleme
Muß Frankreich Atomwaffen haben ?
Luftlandetruppen - schlagkräftigstes Instrument einer Armee ?
Luftlandeoperationen gestern - heute und morgen
Der Nahe Osten - Gefahrenzone in Vergangenheit und Gegenwart
Blutgetränktes Indochina - muß das so bleiben ?
Die europäische Verteidigungsgemeinschaft - letzte Hoffnung ?
Natur und Philosophie der sowjetischen Streitkräfte

Anatol Michailowsky, Köln

Was geht in Rußland wirklich vor ?
Die Wiederbelebung der sozialistisch-kommunistischen Einheitsfront
Europa vom Osten her gesehen
Alexander Solschenizyn und die Apokalypse unserer Zeit
Der "kalte" Krieg zwischen Peking und Moskau
Das freie Rest-Europa - nächstes Ziel sowjetischer Expansionsstrategie
Das Ringen um die nächste Generation
Europa und das "Viereck der Großmächte" (USA, UdSSR, China, Japan)
Die Katakombenkirche in der Sowjetunion
Der kommunistische Weltmachtanspruch und die freie Welt

Peter-Michael Mihailescu, Freiburg i. Brsg.

Das marxistische Menschenbild und seine falschen Prämissen
Marxistische Praxis - eine Ideologie widerlegt sich selbst
Reformkommunismus - die marxistische Intelligenz wendet sich ab
Die weltpolitische Situation im Zeichen des Ost-West-Gegensatzes
Konservatismus - zukunftsorientierte Alternative ?

Colonel Ferd. O. Miksche, Le Chesnay Trianon / Paris

Die weltpolitische Lage unter besonderer Berücksichtigung der
sowjetischen Expansionsziele
Auswirkung des Vietnamkrieges auf Ostasien
Japans Rolle zwischen China und Sowjetrußland
Sowjetische Entspannungspolitik und die bedrohte Sicherheit Europas
Probleme der Neugestaltung der NATO

Hptm. Heiko Möhring, Wanne-Eickel

Kann die deutsche Bundeswehr ihren Auftrag heute noch erfüllen ?
Die Bundesrepublik Deutschland im militärischen Spannungsfeld
zwischen Ost und West
Der subversive Kampf der Linken gegen die deutsche Bundeswehr

Prof. Dr. Siegfried Müller-Markus, Olten

Die sowjetische Europa-Strategie
Der Aufstand des Denkens - Sowjetunion zwischen Ideologie
und Wirklichkeit
Sowjetunion und China - ist der Bruch unheilbar ?

Konrektor Max Mura, Braunfels/Lahn

Jugend zwischen Bewährung und Zerstörung
- Der junge Mensch in der modernen Massengesellschaft -
Die geschichtslose Generation - Sozialistische Schulpolitik
am Beispiel Hessens -

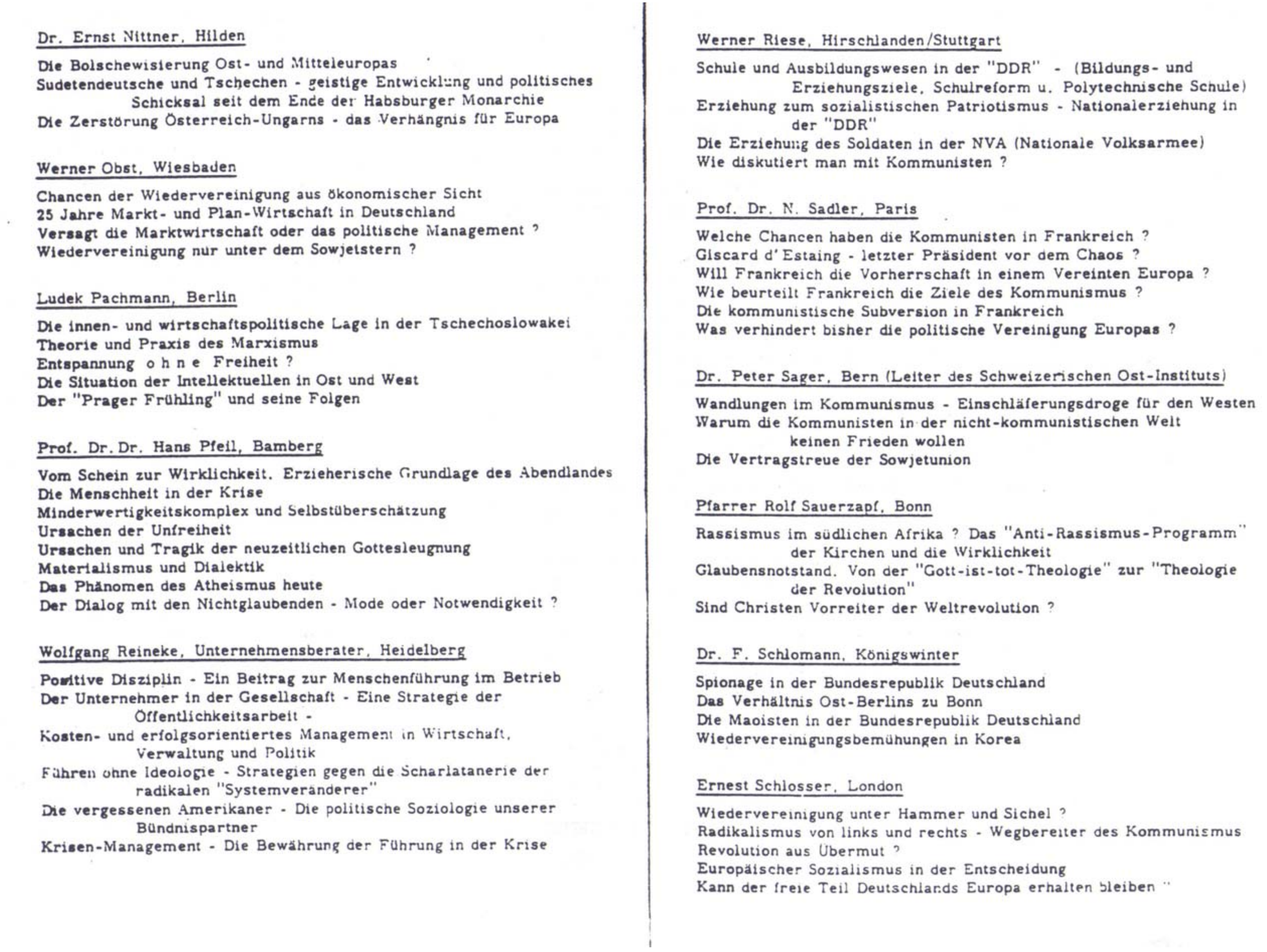

Dr. Ernst Nittner, Hilden

Die Bolschewisierung Ost- und Mitteleuropas
Sudetendeutsche und Tschechen - geistige Entwicklung und politisches Schicksal seit dem Ende der Habsburger Monarchie
Die Zerstörung Österreich-Ungarns - das Verhängnis für Europa

Werner Obst, Wiesbaden

Chancen der Wiedervereinigung aus ökonomischer Sicht
25 Jahre Markt- und Plan-Wirtschaft in Deutschland
Versagt die Marktwirtschaft oder das politische Management ?
Wiedervereinigung nur unter dem Sowjetstern ?

Ludek Pachmann, Berlin

Die innen- und wirtschaftspolitische Lage in der Tschechoslowakei
Theorie und Praxis des Marxismus
Entspannung ohne Freiheit ?
Die Situation der Intellektuellen in Ost und West
Der "Prager Frühling" und seine Folgen

Prof. Dr. Dr. Hans Pfeil, Bamberg

Vom Schein zur Wirklichkeit. Erzieherische Grundlage des Abendlandes
Die Menschheit in der Krise
Minderwertigkeitskomplex und Selbstüberschätzung
Ursachen der Unfreiheit
Ursachen und Tragik der neuzeitlichen Gottesleugnung
Materialismus und Dialektik
Das Phänomen des Atheismus heute
Der Dialog mit den Nichtglaubenden - Mode oder Notwendigkeit ?

Wolfgang Reineke, Unternehmensberater, Heidelberg

Positive Disziplin - Ein Beitrag zur Menschenführung im Betrieb
Der Unternehmer in der Gesellschaft - Eine Strategie der Öffentlichkeitsarbeit -
Kosten- und erfolgsorientiertes Management in Wirtschaft, Verwaltung und Politik
Führen ohne Ideologie - Strategien gegen die Scharlatanerie der radikalen "Systemveränderer"
Die vergessenen Amerikaner - Die politische Soziologie unserer Bündnispartner
Krisen-Management - Die Bewährung der Führung in der Krise

Werner Riese, Hirschlanden/Stuttgart

Schule und Ausbildungswesen in der "DDR" - (Bildungs- und Erziehungsziele, Schulreform u. Polytechnische Schule)
Erziehung zum sozialistischen Patriotismus - Nationalerziehung in der "DDR"
Die Erziehung des Soldaten in der NVA (Nationale Volksarmee)
Wie diskutiert man mit Kommunisten ?

Prof. Dr. N. Sadler, Paris

Welche Chancen haben die Kommunisten in Frankreich ?
Giscard d'Estaing - letzter Präsident vor dem Chaos ?
Will Frankreich die Vorherrschaft in einem Vereinten Europa ?
Wie beurteilt Frankreich die Ziele des Kommunismus ?
Die kommunistische Subversion in Frankreich
Was verhindert bisher die politische Vereinigung Europas ?

Dr. Peter Sager, Bern (Leiter des Schweizerischen Ost-Instituts)

Wandlungen im Kommunismus - Einschläferungsdroge für den Westen
Warum die Kommunisten in der nicht-kommunistischen Welt keinen Frieden wollen
Die Vertragstreue der Sowjetunion

Pfarrer Rolf Sauerzapf, Bonn

Rassismus im südlichen Afrika ? Das "Anti-Rassismus-Programm" der Kirchen und die Wirklichkeit
Glaubensnotstand. Von der "Gott-ist-tot-Theologie" zur "Theologie der Revolution"
Sind Christen Vorreiter der Weltrevolution ?

Dr. F. Schlomann, Königswinter

Spionage in der Bundesrepublik Deutschland
Das Verhältnis Ost-Berlins zu Bonn
Die Maoisten in der Bundesrepublik Deutschland
Wiedervereinigungsbemühungen in Korea

Ernest Schlosser, London

Wiedervereinigung unter Hammer und Sichel ?
Radikalismus von links und rechts - Wegbereiter des Kommunismus
Revolution aus Übermut ?
Europäischer Sozialismus in der Entscheidung
Kann der freie Teil Deutschlands Europa erhalten bleiben ?

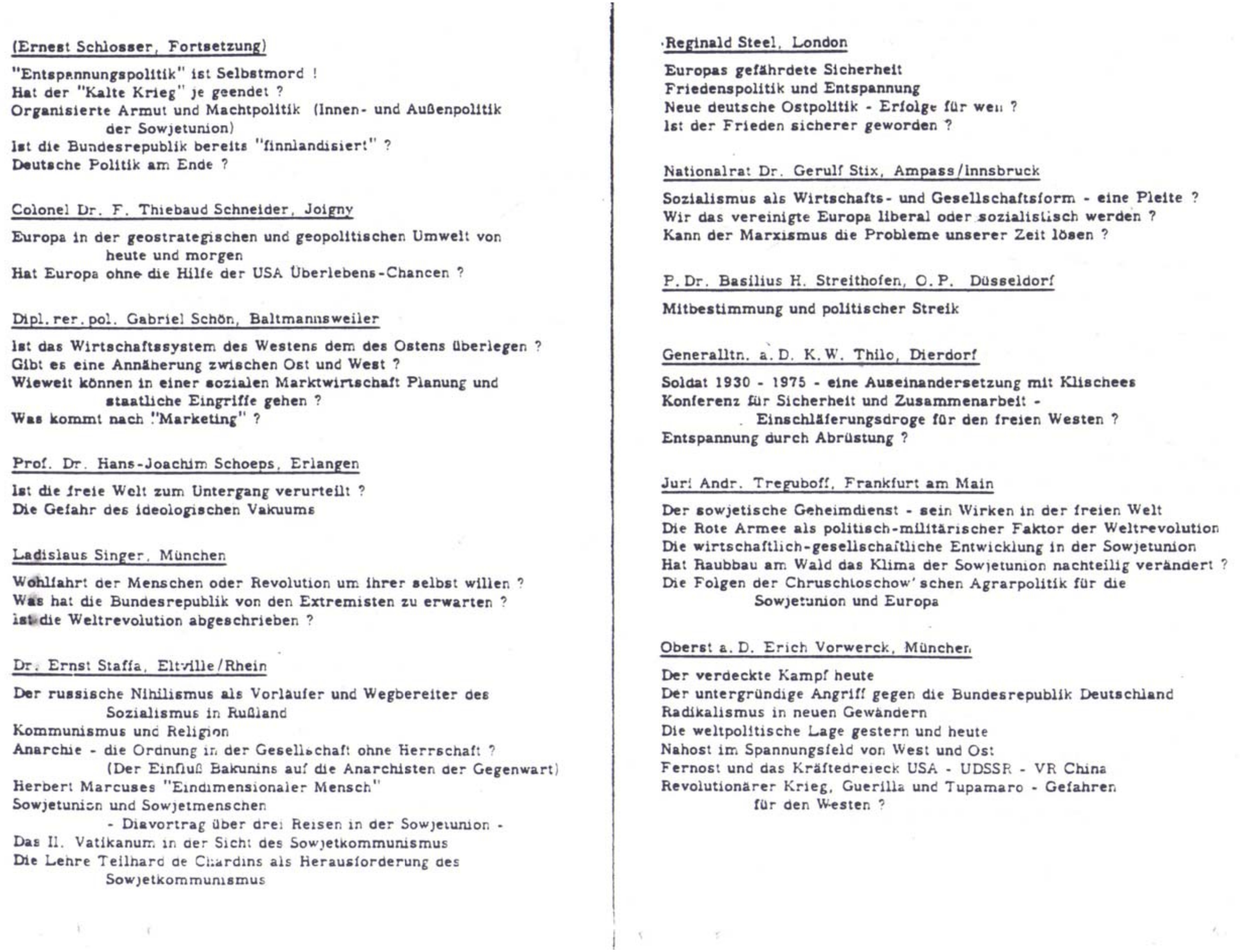

(Ernest Schlosser, Fortsetzung)

"Entspannungspolitik" ist Selbstmord !
Hat der "Kalte Krieg" je geendet ?
Organisierte Armut und Machtpolitik (Innen- und Außenpolitik der Sowjetunion)
Ist die Bundesrepublik bereits "finnlandisiert" ?
Deutsche Politik am Ende ?

Colonel Dr. F. Thiebaud Schneider, Joigny

Europa in der geostrategischen und geopolitischen Umwelt von heute und morgen
Hat Europa ohne die Hilfe der USA Überlebens-Chancen ?

Dipl. rer. pol. Gabriel Schön, Baltmannsweiler

Ist das Wirtschaftssystem des Westens dem des Ostens überlegen ?
Gibt es eine Annäherung zwischen Ost und West ?
Wieweit können in einer sozialen Marktwirtschaft Planung und staatliche Eingriffe gehen ?
Was kommt nach "Marketing" ?

Prof. Dr. Hans-Joachim Schoeps, Erlangen

Ist die freie Welt zum Untergang verurteilt ?
Die Gefahr des ideologischen Vakuums

Ladislaus Singer, München

Wohlfahrt der Menschen oder Revolution um ihrer selbst willen ?
Was hat die Bundesrepublik von den Extremisten zu erwarten ?
Ist die Weltrevolution abgeschrieben ?

Dr. Ernst Staffa, Eltville/Rhein

Der russische Nihilismus als Vorläufer und Wegbereiter des Sozialismus in Rußland
Kommunismus und Religion
Anarchie - die Ordnung in der Gesellschaft ohne Herrschaft ?
(Der Einfluß Bakunins auf die Anarchisten der Gegenwart)
Herbert Marcuses "Eindimensionaler Mensch"
Sowjetunion und Sowjetmenschen
- Diavortrag über drei Reisen in der Sowjetunion -
Das II. Vatikanum in der Sicht des Sowjetkommunismus
Die Lehre Teilhard de Chardins als Herausforderung des Sowjetkommunismus

Reginald Steel, London

Europas gefährdete Sicherheit
Friedenspolitik und Entspannung
Neue deutsche Ostpolitik - Erfolge für wen ?
Ist der Frieden sicherer geworden ?

Nationalrat Dr. Gerulf Stix, Ampass/Innsbruck

Sozialismus als Wirtschafts- und Gesellschaftsform - eine Pleite ?
Wir das vereinigte Europa liberal oder sozialistisch werden ?
Kann der Marxismus die Probleme unserer Zeit lösen ?

P. Dr. Basilius H. Streithofen, O.P. Düsseldorf

Mitbestimmung und politischer Streik

Generalltn. a.D. K.W. Thilo, Dierdorf

Soldat 1930 - 1975 - eine Auseinandersetzung mit Klischees
Konferenz für Sicherheit und Zusammenarbeit - Einschläferungsdroge für den freien Westen ?
Entspannung durch Abrüstung ?

Juri Andr. Treguboff, Frankfurt am Main

Der sowjetische Geheimdienst - sein Wirken in der freien Welt
Die Rote Armee als politisch-militärischer Faktor der Weltrevolution
Die wirtschaftlich-gesellschaftliche Entwicklung in der Sowjetunion
Hat Raubbau am Wald das Klima der Sowjetunion nachteilig verändert ?
Die Folgen der Chruschtschow'schen Agrarpolitik für die Sowjetunion und Europa

Oberst a.D. Erich Vorwerck, München

Der verdeckte Kampf heute
Der untergründige Angriff gegen die Bundesrepublik Deutschland
Radikalismus in neuen Gewändern
Die weltpolitische Lage gestern und heute
Nahost im Spannungsfeld von West und Ost
Fernost und das Kräftedreieck USA - UDSSR - VR China
Revolutionärer Krieg, Guerilla und Tupamaro - Gefahren für den Westen ?

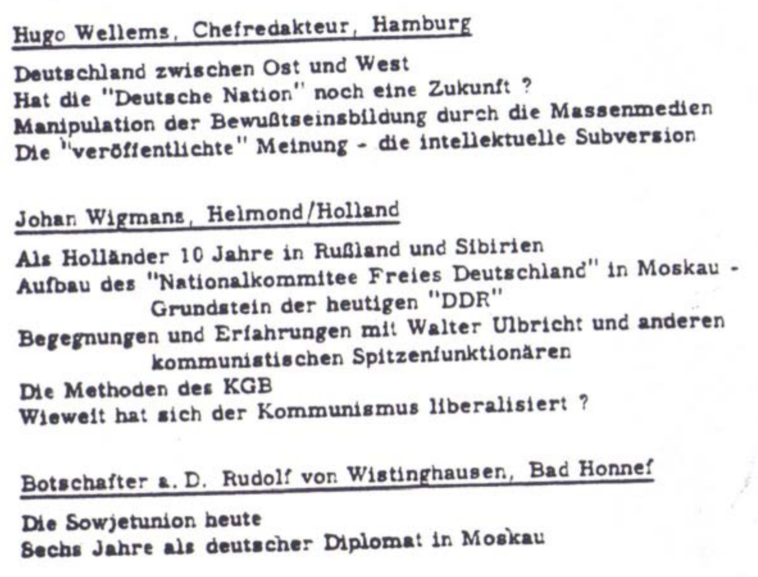

Hugo Wellems, Chefredakteur, Hamburg

Deutschland zwischen Ost und West
Hat die "Deutsche Nation" noch eine Zukunft ?
Manipulation der Bewußtseinsbildung durch die Massenmedien
Die "veröffentlichte" Meinung - die intellektuelle Subversion

Johan Wigmans, Helmond/Holland

Als Holländer 10 Jahre in Rußland und Sibirien
Aufbau des "Nationalkommitee Freies Deutschland" in Moskau - Grundstein der heutigen "DDR"
Begegnungen und Erfahrungen mit Walter Ulbricht und anderen kommunistischen Spitzenfunktionären
Die Methoden des KGB
Wieweit hat sich der Kommunismus liberalisiert ?

Botschafter a. D. Rudolf von Wistinghausen, Bad Honnef

Die Sowjetunion heute
Sechs Jahre als deutscher Diplomat in Moskau

Next page: advert for the ISC/Cercle report, *New Dimensions of Security in Europe*, May 1975.

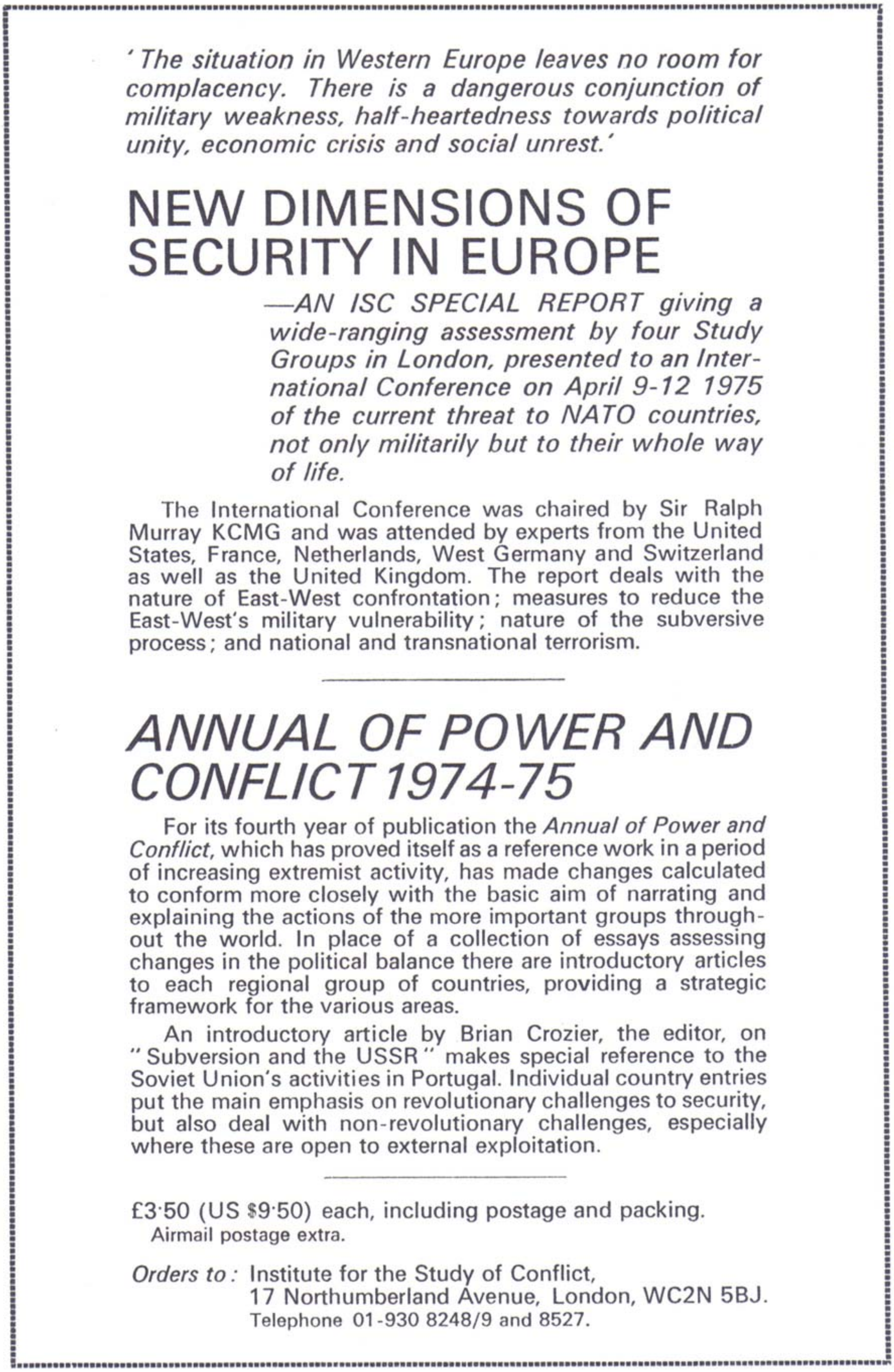

'The situation in Western Europe leaves no room for complacency. There is a dangerous conjunction of military weakness, half-heartedness towards political unity, economic crisis and social unrest.'

NEW DIMENSIONS OF SECURITY IN EUROPE

—AN ISC SPECIAL REPORT giving a wide-ranging assessment by four Study Groups in London, presented to an International Conference on April 9-12 1975 of the current threat to NATO countries, not only militarily but to their whole way of life.

The International Conference was chaired by Sir Ralph Murray KCMG and was attended by experts from the United States, France, Netherlands, West Germany and Switzerland as well as the United Kingdom. The report deals with the nature of East-West confrontation; measures to reduce the East-West's military vulnerability; nature of the subversive process; and national and transnational terrorism.

ANNUAL OF POWER AND CONFLICT 1974-75

For its fourth year of publication the *Annual of Power and Conflict*, which has proved itself as a reference work in a period of increasing extremist activity, has made changes calculated to conform more closely with the basic aim of narrating and explaining the actions of the more important groups throughout the world. In place of a collection of essays assessing changes in the political balance there are introductory articles to each regional group of countries, providing a strategic framework for the various areas.

An introductory article by Brian Crozier, the editor, on "Subversion and the USSR" makes special reference to the Soviet Union's activities in Portugal. Individual country entries put the main emphasis on revolutionary challenges to security, but also deal with non-revolutionary challenges, especially where these are open to external exploitation.

£3·50 (US $9·50) each, including postage and packing.
Airmail postage extra.

Orders to: Institute for the Study of Conflict,
17 Northumberland Avenue, London, WC2N 5BJ.
Telephone 01-930 8248/9 and 8527.

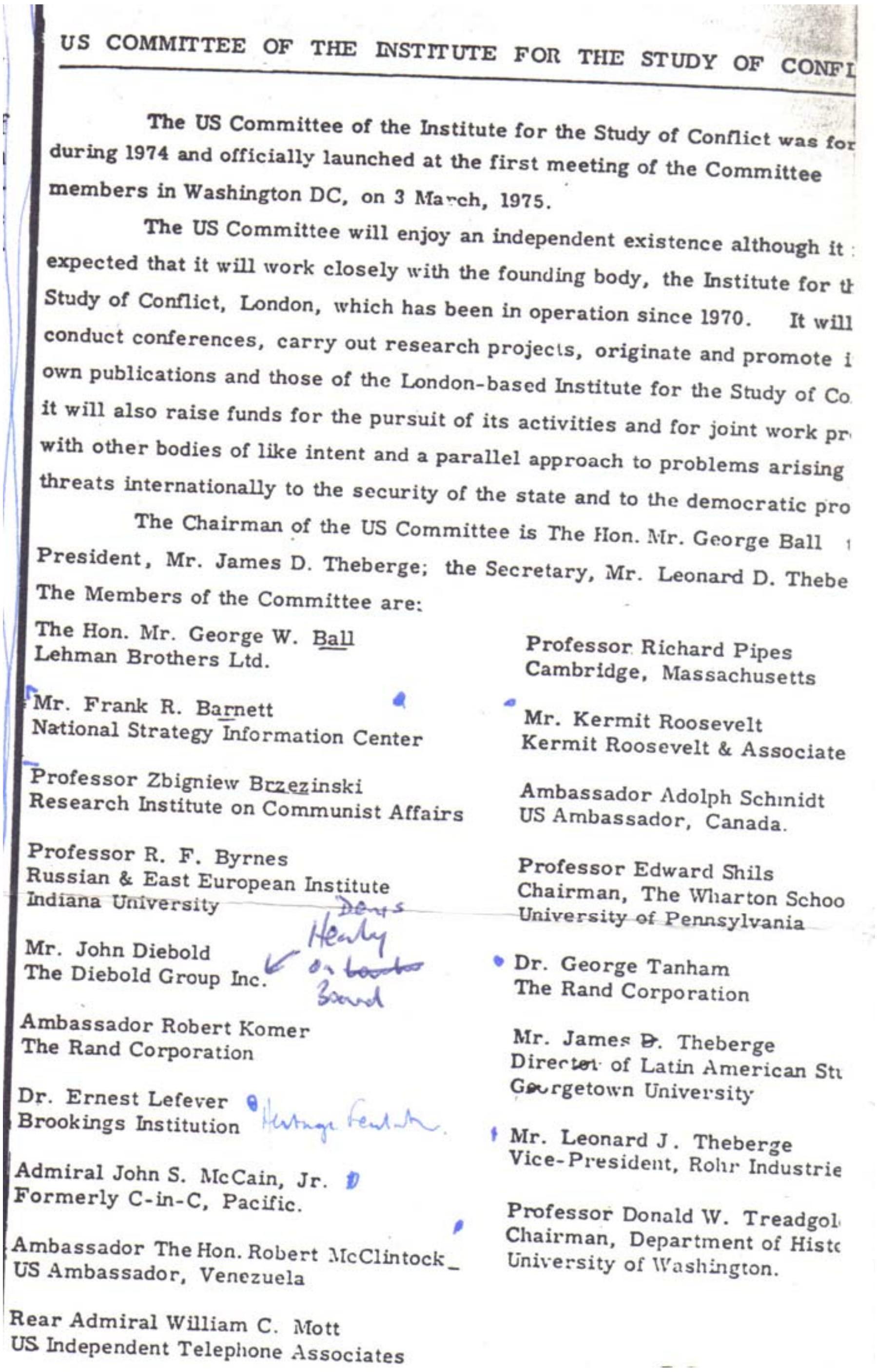

US COMMITTEE OF THE INSTITUTE FOR THE STUDY OF CONFI

The US Committee of the Institute for the Study of Conflict was for
during 1974 and officially launched at the first meeting of the Committee
members in Washington DC, on 3 March, 1975.

The US Committee will enjoy an independent existence although it
expected that it will work closely with the founding body, the Institute for th
Study of Conflict, London, which has been in operation since 1970. It will
conduct conferences, carry out research projects, originate and promote i
own publications and those of the London-based Institute for the Study of Co
it will also raise funds for the pursuit of its activities and for joint work pr
with other bodies of like intent and a parallel approach to problems arising
threats internationally to the security of the state and to the democratic pro

The Chairman of the US Committee is The Hon. Mr. George Ball
President, Mr. James D. Theberge; the Secretary, Mr. Leonard D. Thebe
The Members of the Committee are:

The Hon. Mr. George W. Ball
Lehman Brothers Ltd.

Mr. Frank R. Barnett
National Strategy Information Center

Professor Zbigniew Brzezinski
Research Institute on Communist Affairs

Professor R. F. Byrnes
Russian & East European Institute
Indiana University

Mr. John Diebold
The Diebold Group Inc.

Denys Healy on ~~boards~~ Board

Ambassador Robert Komer
The Rand Corporation

Dr. Ernest Lefever
Brookings Institution

Heritage Foundation

Admiral John S. McCain, Jr.
Formerly C-in-C, Pacific.

Ambassador The Hon. Robert McClintock
US Ambassador, Venezuela

Rear Admiral William C. Mott
US Independent Telephone Associates

Professor Richard Pipes
Cambridge, Massachusetts

Mr. Kermit Roosevelt
Kermit Roosevelt & Associate

Ambassador Adolph Schmidt
US Ambassador, Canada.

Professor Edward Shils
Chairman, The Wharton Schoo
University of Pennsylvania

Dr. George Tanham
The Rand Corporation

Mr. James D. Theberge
Director of Latin American Stu
Georgetown University

Mr. Leonard J. Theberge
Vice-President, Rohr Industrie

Professor Donald W. Treadgol
Chairman, Department of Histo
University of Washington.

Below: Frankfurt Study Group contribution to the pro-South Africa campaign, circa 1976, from YEF.

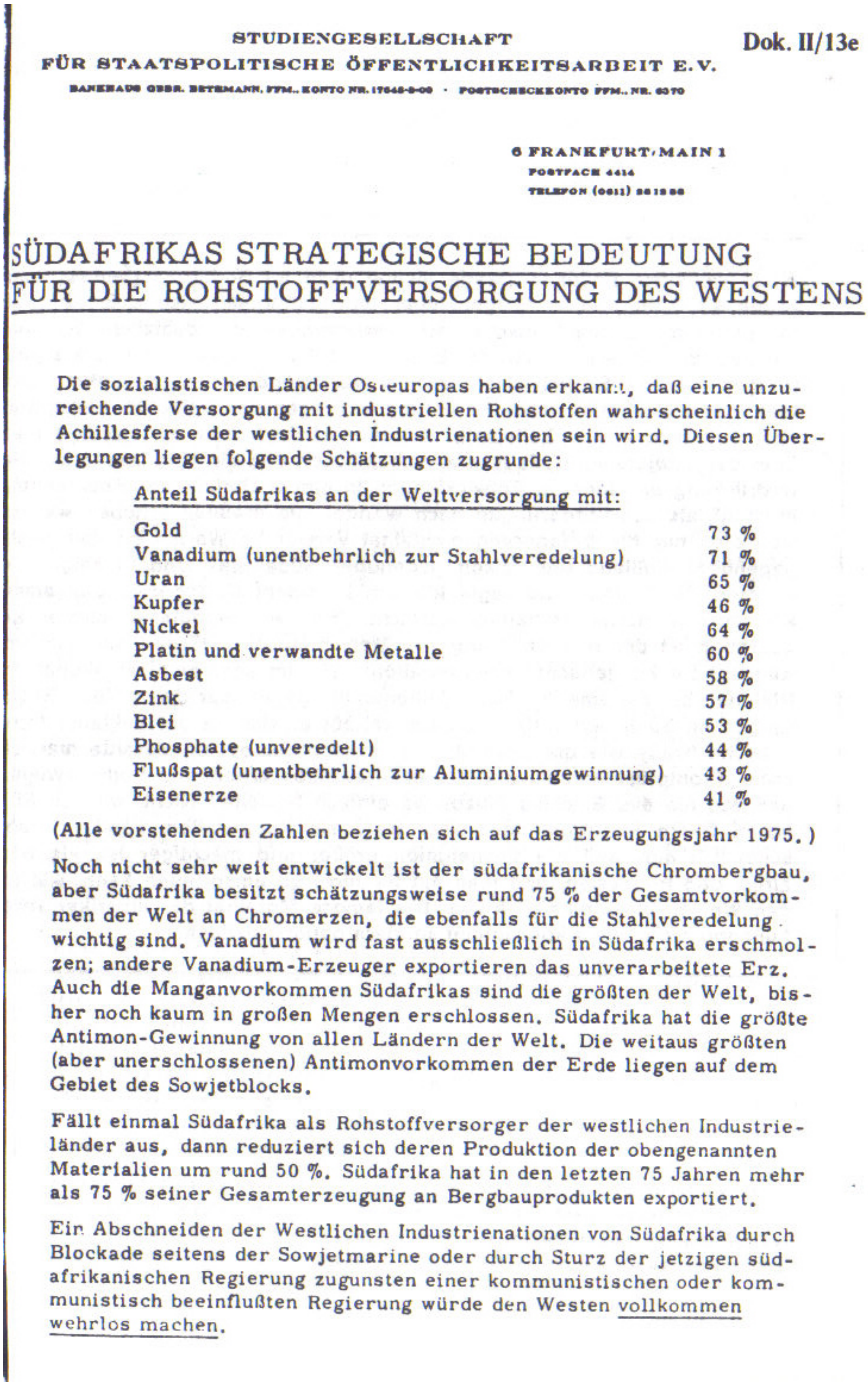

STUDIENGESELLSCHAFT
FÜR STAATSPOLITISCHE ÖFFENTLICHKEITSARBEIT E.V.
BANKHAUS GEBR. BETHMANN, FFM., KONTO NR. [illegible] · POSTSCHECKKONTO FFM., NR. [illegible]

6 FRANKFURT/MAIN 1
POSTFACH 4414
TELEFON (0611) [illegible]

Dok. II/13e

SÜDAFRIKAS STRATEGISCHE BEDEUTUNG FÜR DIE ROHSTOFFVERSORGUNG DES WESTENS

Die sozialistischen Länder Osteuropas haben erkannt, daß eine unzureichende Versorgung mit industriellen Rohstoffen wahrscheinlich die Achillesferse der westlichen Industrienationen sein wird. Diesen Überlegungen liegen folgende Schätzungen zugrunde:

Anteil Südafrikas an der Weltversorgung mit:	
Gold	73 %
Vanadium (unentbehrlich zur Stahlveredelung)	71 %
Uran	65 %
Kupfer	46 %
Nickel	64 %
Platin und verwandte Metalle	60 %
Asbest	58 %
Zink	57 %
Blei	53 %
Phosphate (unveredelt)	44 %
Flußspat (unentbehrlich zur Aluminiumgewinnung)	43 %
Eisenerze	41 %

(Alle vorstehenden Zahlen beziehen sich auf das Erzeugungsjahr 1975.)

Noch nicht sehr weit entwickelt ist der südafrikanische Chrombergbau, aber Südafrika besitzt schätzungsweise rund 75 % der Gesamtvorkommen der Welt an Chromerzen, die ebenfalls für die Stahlveredelung wichtig sind. Vanadium wird fast ausschließlich in Südafrika erschmolzen; andere Vanadium-Erzeuger exportieren das unverarbeitete Erz. Auch die Manganvorkommen Südafrikas sind die größten der Welt, bisher noch kaum in großen Mengen erschlossen. Südafrika hat die größte Antimon-Gewinnung von allen Ländern der Welt. Die weitaus größten (aber unerschlossenen) Antimonvorkommen der Erde liegen auf dem Gebiet des Sowjetblocks.

Fällt einmal Südafrika als Rohstoffversorger der westlichen Industrieländer aus, dann reduziert sich deren Produktion der obengenannten Materialien um rund 50 %. Südafrika hat in den letzten 75 Jahren mehr als 75 % seiner Gesamterzeugung an Bergbauprodukten exportiert.

Ein Abschneiden der Westlichen Industrienationen von Südafrika durch Blockade seitens der Sowjetmarine oder durch Sturz der jetzigen südafrikanischen Regierung zugunsten einer kommunistischen oder kommunistisch beeinflußten Regierung würde den Westen vollkommen wehrlos machen.

Below: MAUE bulletin, January 1976.

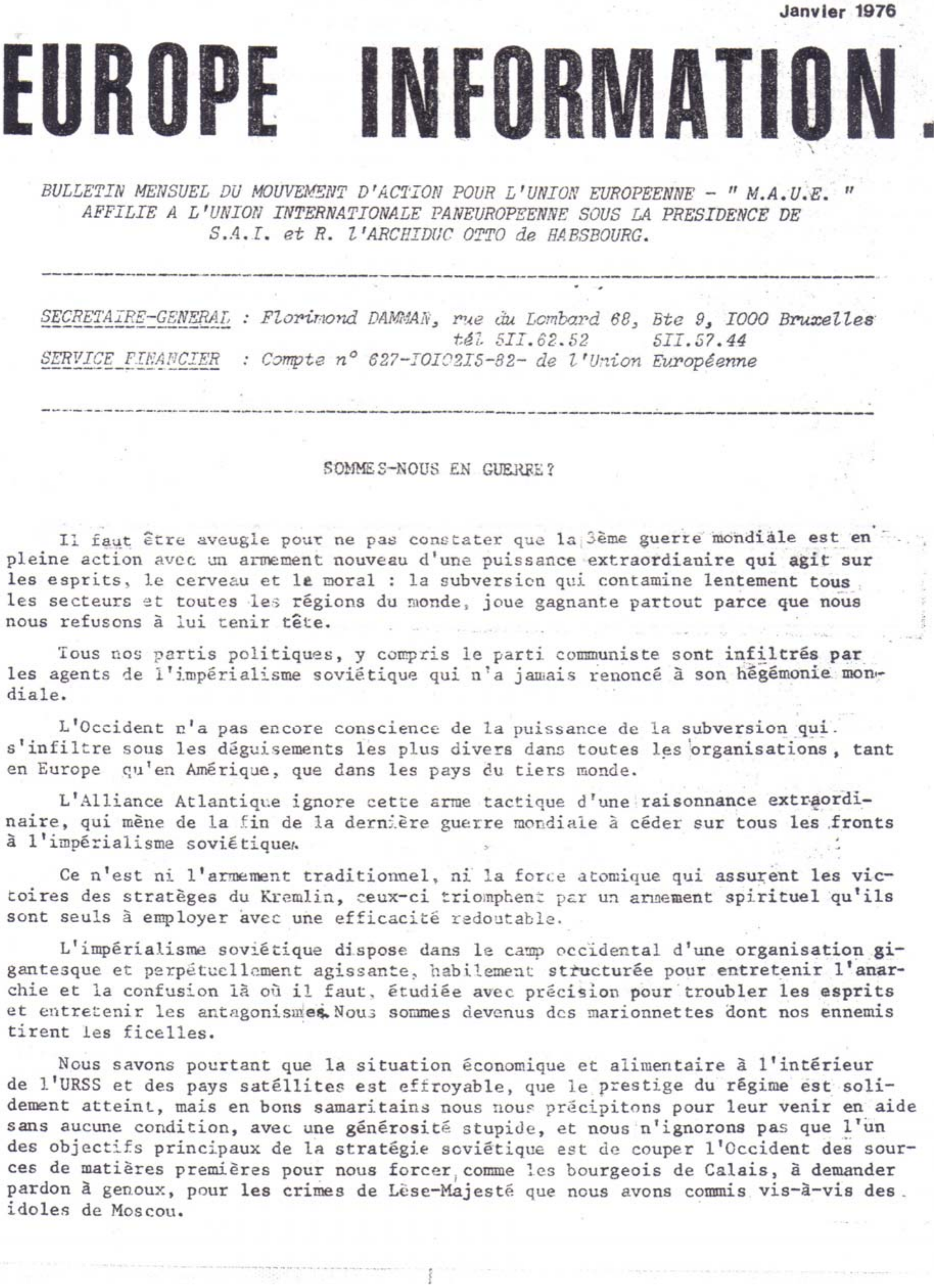

Janvier 1976

EUROPE INFORMATION.

BULLETIN MENSUEL DU MOUVEMENT D'ACTION POUR L'UNION EUROPEENNE - " M.A.U.E. "
AFFILIE A L'UNION INTERNATIONALE PANEUROPEENNE SOUS LA PRESIDENCE DE
S.A.I. et R. l'ARCHIDUC OTTO de HABSBOURG.

SECRETAIRE-GENERAL : Florimond DAMMAN, rue du Lombard 68, Bte 9, 1000 Bruxelles
tél 511.62.52 511.57.44
SERVICE FINANCIER : Compte n° 627-1010215-82- de l'Union Européenne

---

SOMMES-NOUS EN GUERRE?

Il faut être aveugle pour ne pas constater que la 3ème guerre mondiale est en pleine action avec un armement nouveau d'une puissance extraordianire qui agit sur les esprits, le cerveau et le moral : la subversion qui contamine lentement tous les secteurs et toutes les régions du monde, joue gagnante partout parce que nous nous refusons à lui tenir tête.

Tous nos partis politiques, y compris le parti communiste sont infiltrés par les agents de l'impérialisme soviétique qui n'a jamais renoncé à son hégémonie mondiale.

L'Occident n'a pas encore conscience de la puissance de la subversion qui s'infiltre sous les déguisements les plus divers dans toutes les organisations, tant en Europe qu'en Amérique, que dans les pays du tiers monde.

L'Alliance Atlantique ignore cette arme tactique d'une raisonnance extraordinaire, qui mène de la fin de la dernière guerre mondiale à céder sur tous les fronts à l'impérialisme soviétique.

Ce n'est ni l'armement traditionnel, ni la force atomique qui assurent les victoires des stratèges du Kremlin, ceux-ci triomphent par un armement spirituel qu'ils sont seuls à employer avec une efficacité redoutable.

L'impérialisme soviétique dispose dans le camp occidental d'une organisation gigantesque et perpétuellement agissante, habilement structurée pour entretenir l'anarchie et la confusion là où il faut, étudiée avec précision pour troubler les esprits et entretenir les antagonismes. Nous sommes devenus des marionnettes dont nos ennemis tirent les ficelles.

Nous savons pourtant que la situation économique et alimentaire à l'intérieur de l'URSS et des pays satellites est effroyable, que le prestige du régime est solidement atteint, mais en bons samaritains nous nous précipitons pour leur venir en aide sans aucune condition, avec une générosité stupide, et nous n'ignorons pas que l'un des objectifs principaux de la stratégie soviétique est de couper l'Occident des sources de matières premières pour nous forcer, comme les bourgeois de Calais, à demander pardon à genoux, pour les crimes de Lèse-Majesté que nous avons commis vis-à-vis des idoles de Moscou.

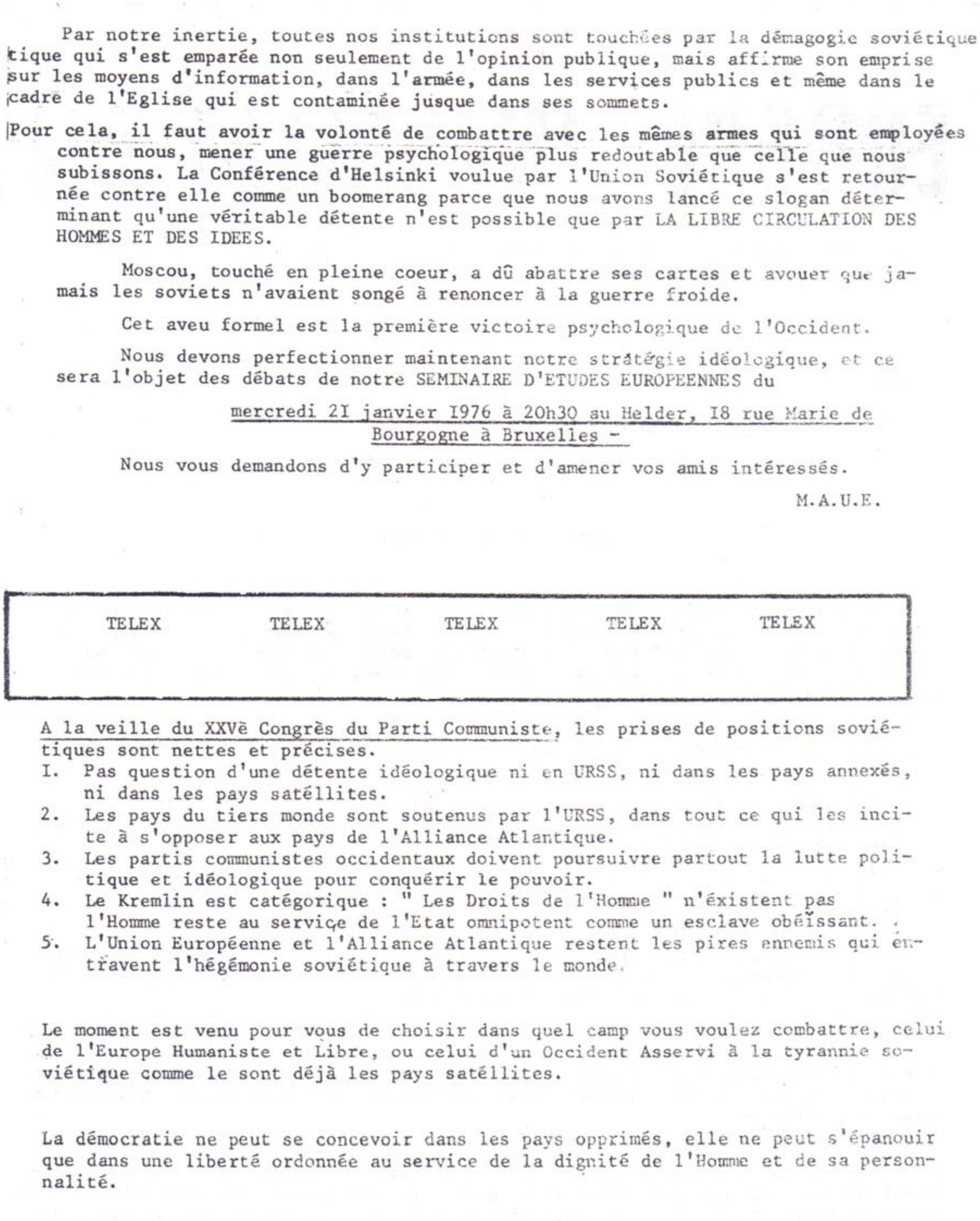

Par notre inertie, toutes nos institutions sont touchées par la démagogie soviétique tique qui s'est emparée non seulement de l'opinion publique, mais affirme son emprise sur les moyens d'information, dans l'armée, dans les services publics et même dans le cadre de l'Eglise qui est contaminée jusque dans ses sommets.

Pour cela, il faut avoir la volonté de combattre avec les mêmes armes qui sont employées contre nous, mener une guerre psychologique plus redoutable que celle que nous subissons. La Conférence d'Helsinki voulue par l'Union Soviétique s'est retournée contre elle comme un boomerang parce que nous avons lancé ce slogan déterminant qu'une véritable détente n'est possible que par LA LIBRE CIRCULATION DES HOMMES ET DES IDEES.

Moscou, touché en pleine coeur, a dû abattre ses cartes et avouer que jamais les soviets n'avaient songé à renoncer à la guerre froide.

Cet aveu formel est la première victoire psychologique de l'Occident.

Nous devons perfectionner maintenant notre stratégie idéologique, et ce sera l'objet des débats de notre SEMINAIRE D'ETUDES EUROPEENNES du

mercredi 2I janvier I976 à 20h30 au Helder, I8 rue Marie de Bourgogne à Bruxelles -

Nous vous demandons d'y participer et d'amener vos amis intéressés.

M.A.U.E.

TELEX TELEX TELEX TELEX TELEX

A la veille du XXVè Congrès du Parti Communiste, les prises de positions soviétiques sont nettes et précises.

I. Pas question d'une détente idéologique ni en URSS, ni dans les pays annexés, ni dans les pays satéllites.
2. Les pays du tiers monde sont soutenus par l'URSS, dans tout ce qui les incite à s'opposer aux pays de l'Alliance Atlantique.
3. Les partis communistes occidentaux doivent poursuivre partout la lutte politique et idéologique pour conquérir le pouvoir.
4. Le Kremlin est catégorique : " Les Droits de l'Homme " n'éxistent pas l'Homme reste au service de l'Etat omnipotent comme un esclave obéïssant.
5. L'Union Européenne et l'Alliance Atlantique restent les pires ennemis qui entravent l'hégémonie soviétique à travers le monde.

Le moment est venu pour vous de choisir dans quel camp vous voulez combattre, celui de l'Europe Humaniste et Libre, ou celui d'un Occident Asservi à la tyrannie soviétique comme le sont déjà les pays satéllites.

La démocratie ne peut se concevoir dans les pays opprimés, elle ne peut s'épanouir que dans une liberté ordonnée au service de la dignité de l'Homme et de sa personnalité.

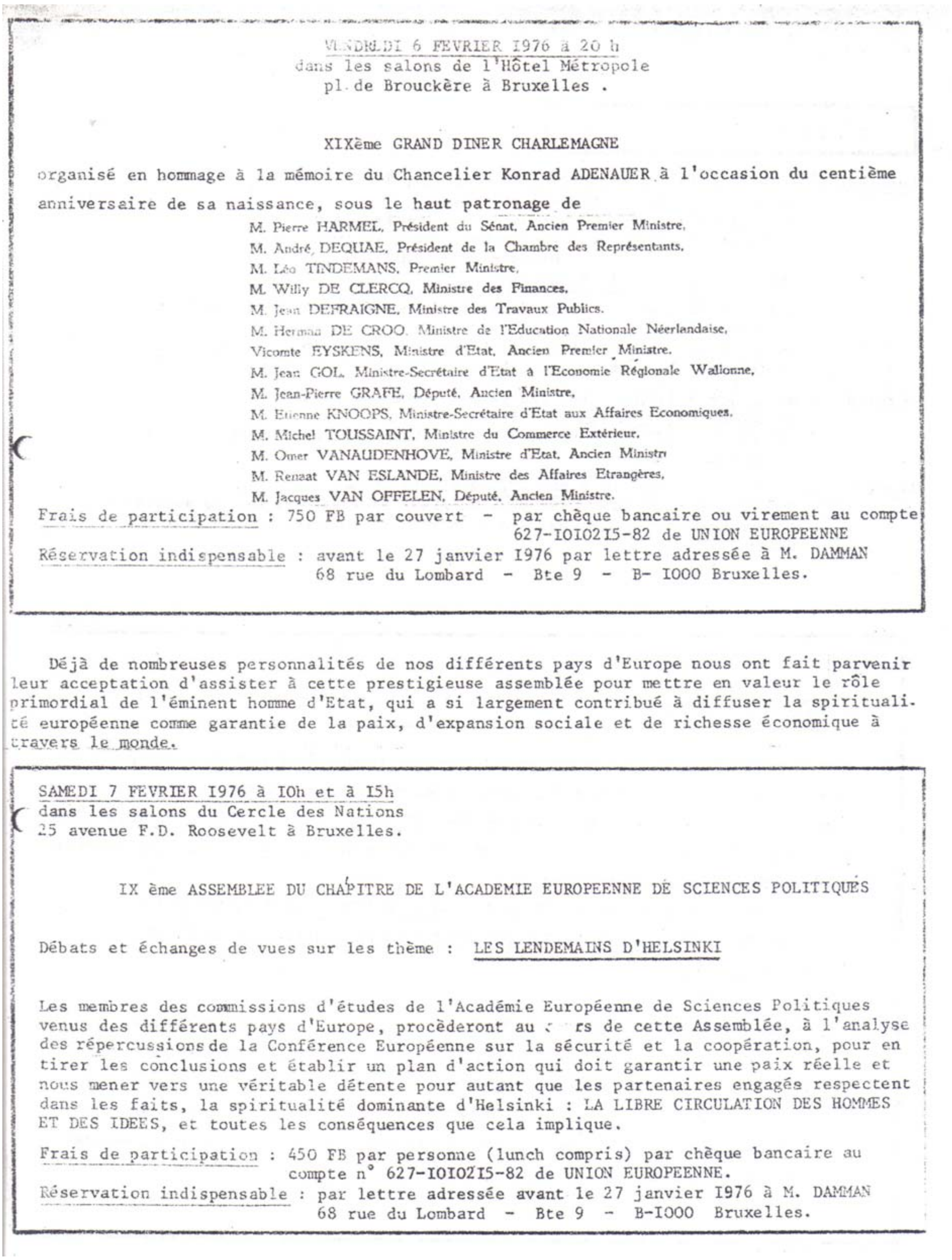

VENDREDI 6 FEVRIER I976 à 20 h
dans les salons de l'Hôtel Métropole
pl. de Brouckère à Bruxelles .

XIXème GRAND DINER CHARLEMAGNE

organisé en hommage à la mémoire du Chancelier Konrad ADENAUER à l'occasion du centième anniversaire de sa naissance, sous le haut patronage de

M. Pierre HARMEL, Président du Sénat, Ancien Premier Ministre,
M. André DEQUAE, Président de la Chambre des Représentants,
M. Léo TINDEMANS, Premier Ministre,
M. Willy DE CLERCQ, Ministre des Finances,
M. Jean DEFRAIGNE, Ministre des Travaux Publics,
M. Herman DE CROO, Ministre de l'Education Nationale Néerlandaise,
Vicomte EYSKENS, Ministre d'Etat, Ancien Premier Ministre,
M. Jean GOL, Ministre-Secrétaire d'Etat à l'Economie Régionale Wallonne,
M. Jean-Pierre GRAFE, Député, Ancien Ministre,
M. Etienne KNOOPS, Ministre-Secrétaire d'Etat aux Affaires Economiques,
M. Michel TOUSSAINT, Ministre du Commerce Extérieur,
M. Omer VANAUDENHOVE, Ministre d'Etat, Ancien Ministre
M. Renaat VAN ESLANDE, Ministre des Affaires Etrangères,
M. Jacques VAN OFFELEN, Député, Ancien Ministre.

Frais de participation : 750 FB par couvert - par chèque bancaire ou virement au compte
627-IOIO2I5-82 de UNION EUROPEENNE
Réservation indispensable : avant le 27 janvier I976 par lettre adressée à M. DAMMAN
68 rue du Lombard - Bte 9 - B- IOOO Bruxelles.

Déjà de nombreuses personnalités de nos différents pays d'Europe nous ont fait parvenir leur acceptation d'assister à cette prestigieuse assemblée pour mettre en valeur le rôle primordial de l'éminent homme d'Etat, qui a si largement contribué à diffuser la spiritualité européenne comme garantie de la paix, d'expansion sociale et de richesse économique à travers le monde.

SAMEDI 7 FEVRIER I976 à IOh et à I5h
dans les salons du Cercle des Nations
25 avenue F.D. Roosevelt à Bruxelles.

IX ème ASSEMBLEE DU CHAPITRE DE L'ACADEMIE EUROPEENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES

Débats et échanges de vues sur les thème : LES LENDEMAINS D'HELSINKI

Les membres des commissions d'études de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques venus des différents pays d'Europe, procèderont au cours de cette Assemblée, à l'analyse des répercussions de la Conférence Européenne sur la sécurité et la coopération, pour en tirer les conclusions et établir un plan d'action qui doit garantir une paix réelle et nous mener vers une véritable détente pour autant que les partenaires engagés respectent dans les faits, la spiritualité dominante d'Helsinki : LA LIBRE CIRCULATION DES HOMMES ET DES IDEES, et toutes les conséquences que cela implique.

Frais de participation : 450 FB par personne (lunch compris) par chèque bancaire au
compte n° 627-IOIO2I5-82 de UNION EUROPEENNE.
Réservation indispensable : par lettre adressée avant le 27 janvier I976 à M. DAMMAN
68 rue du Lombard - Bte 9 - B-IOOO Bruxelles.

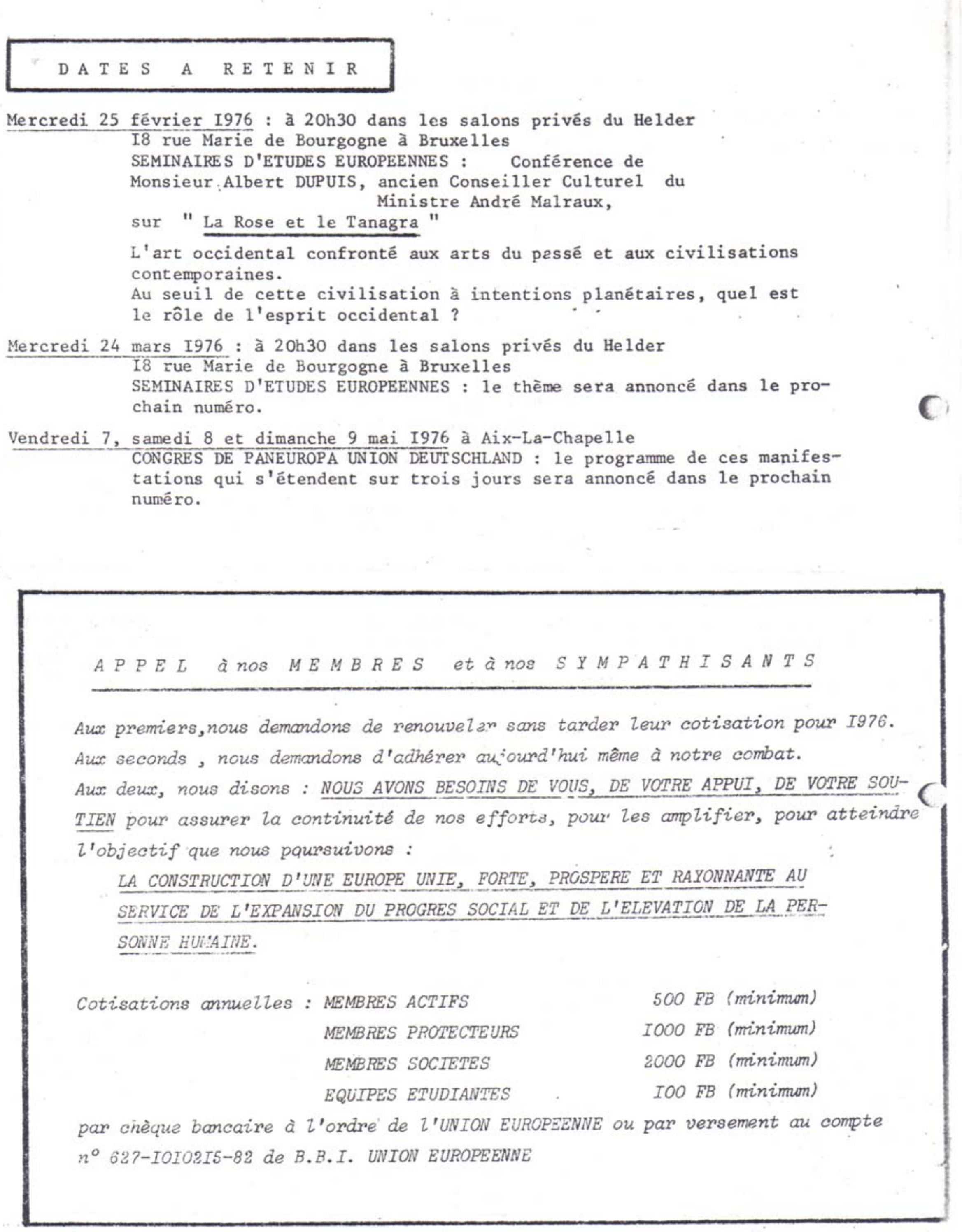

DATES A RETENIR

Mercredi 25 février 1976 : à 20h30 dans les salons privés du Helder
I8 rue Marie de Bourgogne à Bruxelles
SEMINAIRES D'ETUDES EUROPEENNES : Conférence de Monsieur Albert DUPUIS, ancien Conseiller Culturel du Ministre André Malraux,
sur " La Rose et le Tanagra "

L'art occidental confronté aux arts du passé et aux civilisations contemporaines.
Au seuil de cette civilisation à intentions planétaires, quel est le rôle de l'esprit occidental ?

Mercredi 24 mars 1976 : à 20h30 dans les salons privés du Helder
I8 rue Marie de Bourgogne à Bruxelles
SEMINAIRES D'ETUDES EUROPEENNES : le thème sera annoncé dans le prochain numéro.

Vendredi 7, samedi 8 et dimanche 9 mai 1976 à Aix-La-Chapelle
CONGRES DE PANEUROPA UNION DEUTSCHLAND : le programme de ces manifestations qui s'étendent sur trois jours sera annoncé dans le prochain numéro.

APPEL à nos MEMBRES et à nos SYMPATHISANTS

Aux premiers, nous demandons de renouveler sans tarder leur cotisation pour I976.
Aux seconds , nous demandons d'adhérer aujourd'hui même à notre combat.
Aux deux, nous disons : NOUS AVONS BESOINS DE VOUS, DE VOTRE APPUI, DE VOTRE SOUTIEN pour assurer la continuité de nos efforts, pour les amplifier, pour atteindre l'objectif que nous poursuivons :

LA CONSTRUCTION D'UNE EUROPE UNIE, FORTE, PROSPERE ET RAYONNANTE AU SERVICE DE L'EXPANSION DU PROGRES SOCIAL ET DE L'ELEVATION DE LA PERSONNE HUMAINE.

Cotisations annuelles :	*MEMBRES ACTIFS*	*500 FB (minimum)*
	MEMBRES PROTECTEURS	*I000 FB (minimum)*
	MEMBRES SOCIETES	*2000 FB (minimum)*
	EQUIPES ETUDIANTES	*I00 FB (minimum)*

par chèque bancaire à l'ordre de l'UNION EUROPEENNE ou par versement au compte n° 627-I0I02I5-82 de B.B.I. UNION EUROPEENNE

Below: attendance list for the XIXth Grand Dîner Charlemagne and IXth Chapter Assembly of the AESP, 6th - 7th February 1976

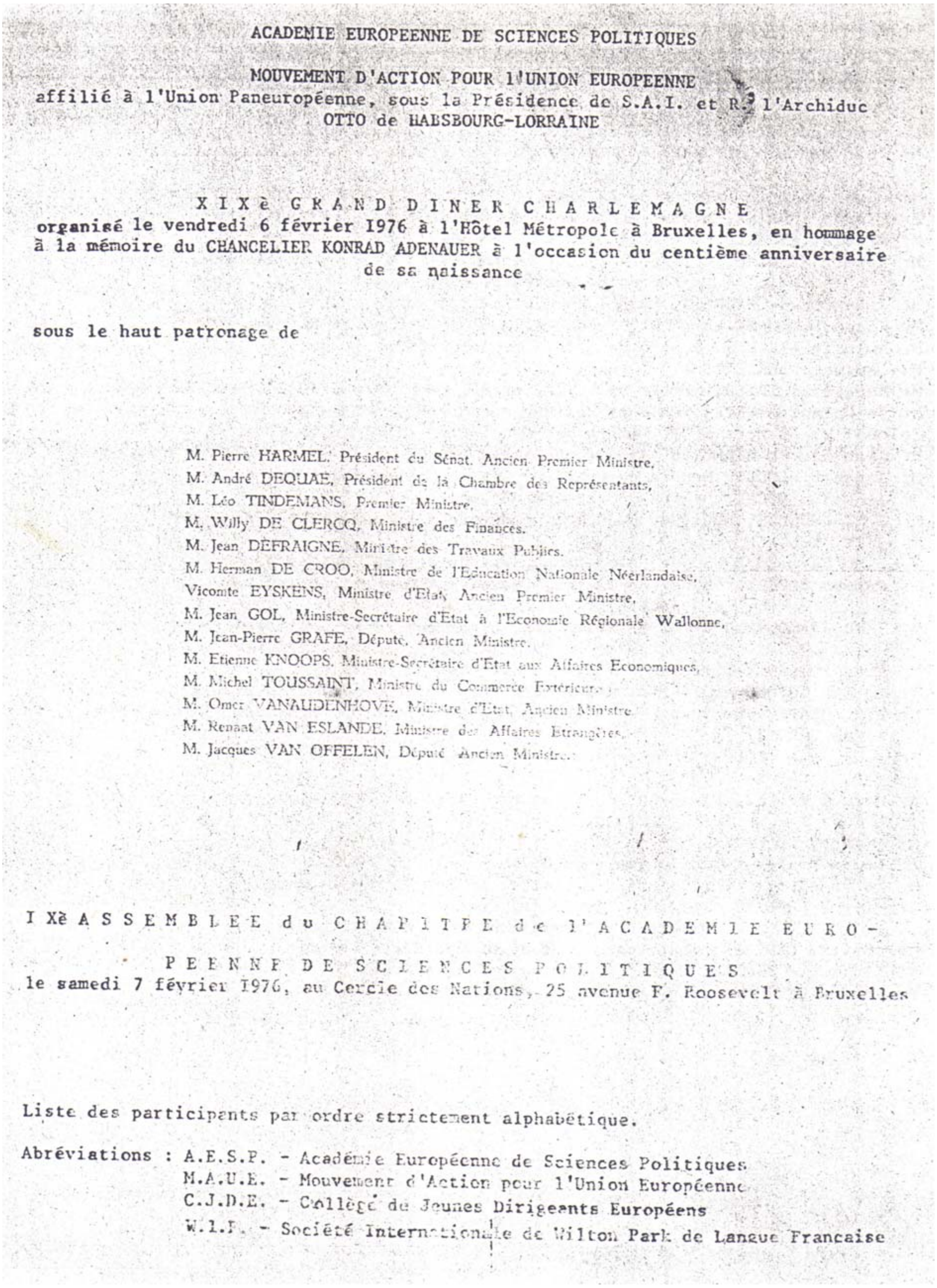

ACADEMIE EUROPEENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES

MOUVEMENT D'ACTION POUR L'UNION EUROPEENNE
affilié à l'Union Paneuropéenne, sous la Présidence de S.A.I. et R. l'Archiduc
OTTO de HABSBOURG-LORRAINE

XIXè GRAND DINER CHARLEMAGNE
organisé le vendredi 6 février 1976 à l'Hôtel Métropole à Bruxelles, en hommage à la mémoire du CHANCELIER KONRAD ADENAUER à l'occasion du centième anniversaire de sa naissance

sous le haut patronage de

M. Pierre HARMEL, Président du Sénat, Ancien Premier Ministre,
M. André DEQUAE, Président de la Chambre des Représentants,
M. Léo TINDEMANS, Premier Ministre,
M. Willy DE CLERCQ, Ministre des Finances,
M. Jean DEFRAIGNE, Ministre des Travaux Publics,
M. Herman DE CROO, Ministre de l'Education Nationale Néerlandaise,
Vicomte EYSKENS, Ministre d'Etat, Ancien Premier Ministre,
M. Jean GOL, Ministre-Secrétaire d'Etat à l'Economie Régionale Wallonne,
M. Jean-Pierre GRAFE, Député, Ancien Ministre,
M. Etienne KNOOPS, Ministre-Secrétaire d'Etat aux Affaires Economiques,
M. Michel TOUSSAINT, Ministre du Commerce Extérieur,
M. Omer VANAUDENHOVE, Ministre d'Etat, Ancien Ministre,
M. Renaat VAN ESLANDE, Ministre des Affaires Etrangères,
M. Jacques VAN OFFELEN, Député, Ancien Ministre.

IXè ASSEMBLEE du CHAPITRE de l'ACADEMIE EUROPEENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES
le samedi 7 février 1976, au Cercle des Nations, 25 avenue F. Roosevelt à Bruxelles

Liste des participants par ordre strictement alphabétique.

Abréviations : A.E.S.P. - Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques
M.A.U.E. - Mouvement d'Action pour l'Union Européenne
C.J.D.E. - Collège de Jeunes Dirigeants Européens
W.I.P. - Société Internationale de Wilton Park de Langue Francaise

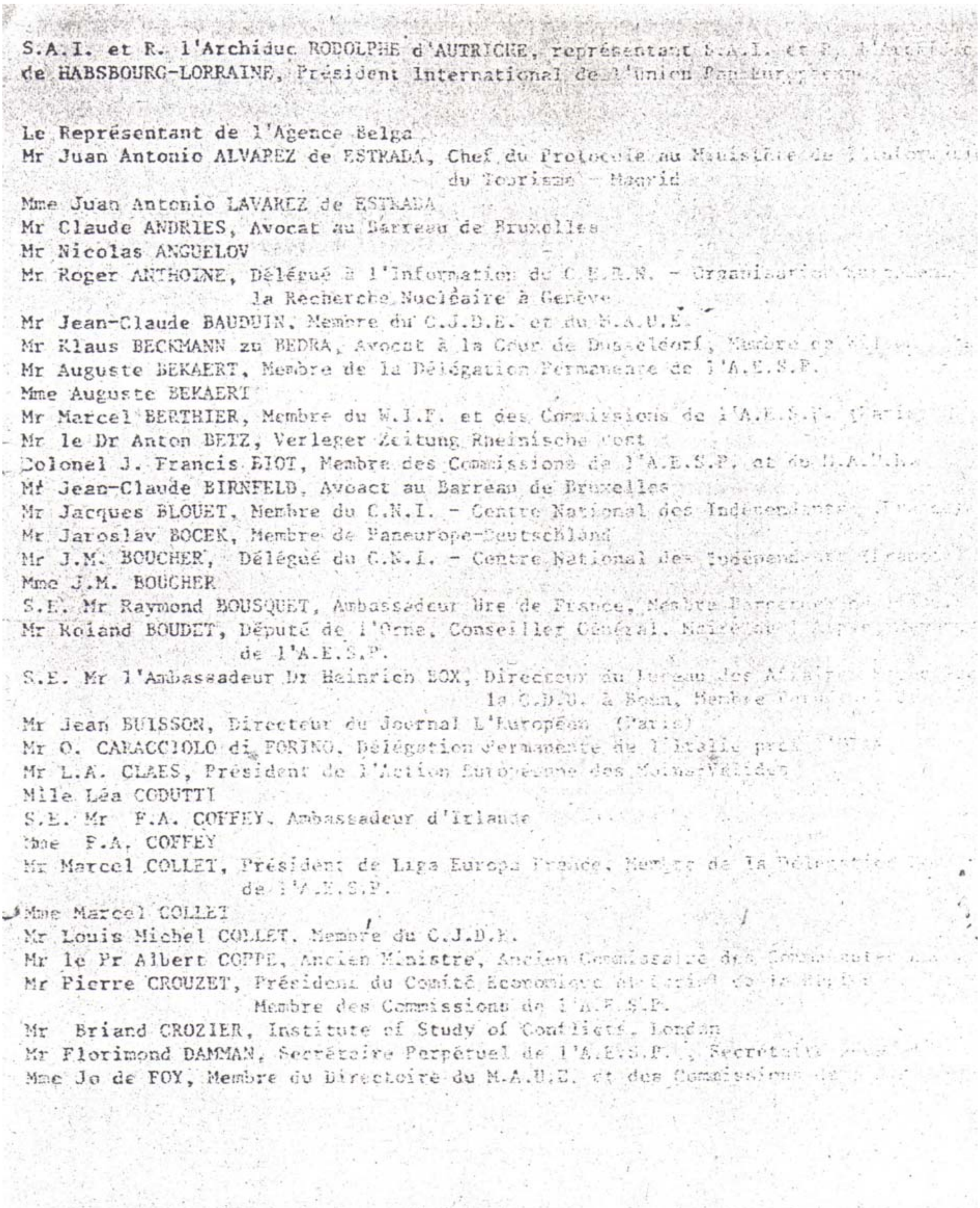

S.A.I. et R. l'Archiduc RODOLPHE d'AUTRICHE, représentant S.A.I. et R. [illegible]
de HABSBOURG-LORRAINE, Président International de l'Union Paneuropéenne

Le Représentant de l'Agence Belga
Mr Juan Antonio ALVAREZ de ESTRADA, Chef du Protocole au Ministère de l'Information [illegible]
du Tourisme - Madrid
Mme Juan Antonio LAVAREZ de ESTRADA
Mr Claude ANDRIES, Avocat au Barreau de Bruxelles
Mr Nicolas ANGUELOV
Mr Roger ANTHOINE, Délégué à l'Information du C.E.R.N. - Organisation [illegible]
la Recherche Nucléaire à Genève
Mr Jean-Claude BAUDUIN, Membre du C.J.D.E. et du M.A.U.E.
Mr Klaus BECKMANN zu BEDRA, Avocat à la Cour de Dusseldorf, Membre de [illegible]
Mr Auguste BEKAERT, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'A.E.S.P.
Mme Auguste BEKAERT
Mr Marcel BERTHIER, Membre du W.I.F. et des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P. (Paris)
Mr le Dr Anton BETZ, Verleger Zeitung Rheinische Post
Colonel J. Francis BIOT, Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P. et du M.A.U.E.
Mr Jean-Claude BIRNFELD, Avoact au Barreau de Bruxelles
Mr Jacques BLOUET, Membre du C.N.I. - Centre National des Indépendants (France)
Mr Jaroslav BOCEK, Membre de Paneurope-Deutschland
Mr J.M. BOUCHER, Délégué du C.N.I. - Centre National des Indépendants (France)
Mme J.M. BOUCHER
S.E. Mr Raymond BOUSQUET, Ambassadeur Hre de France, Membre [illegible]
Mr Roland BOUDET, Député de l'Orne, Conseiller Général, Maire [illegible]
de l'A.E.S.P.
S.E. Mr l'Ambassadeur Dr Heinrich BOX, Directeur du Bureau des Affaires [illegible]
la C.D.U. à Bonn, Membre [illegible]
Mr Jean BUISSON, Directeur du Journal L'Européen (Paris)
Mr O. CARACCIOLO di FORINO, Délégation Permanente de l'Italie près [illegible]
Mr L.A. CLAES, Président de l'Action Européenne des Moins-Valides
Mlle Léa CODUTTI
S.E. Mr F.A. COFFEY, Ambassadeur d'Irlande
Mme F.A. COFFEY
Mr Marcel COLLET, Président de Liga Europa France, Membre de la Délégation [illegible]
de l'A.E.S.P.
Mme Marcel COLLET
Mr Louis Michel COLLET, Membre du C.J.D.E.
Mr le Pr Albert COPPE, Ancien Ministre, Ancien Commissaire des Communautés [illegible]
Mr Pierre CROUZET, Président du Comité Economique [illegible]
Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Mr Briand CROZIER, Institute of Study of Conflicts, London
Mr Florimond DAMMAN, Secrétaire Perpétuel de l'A.E.S.P., Secrétaire [illegible]
Mme Jo de FOY, Membre du Directoire du M.A.U.E. et des Commissions de [illegible]

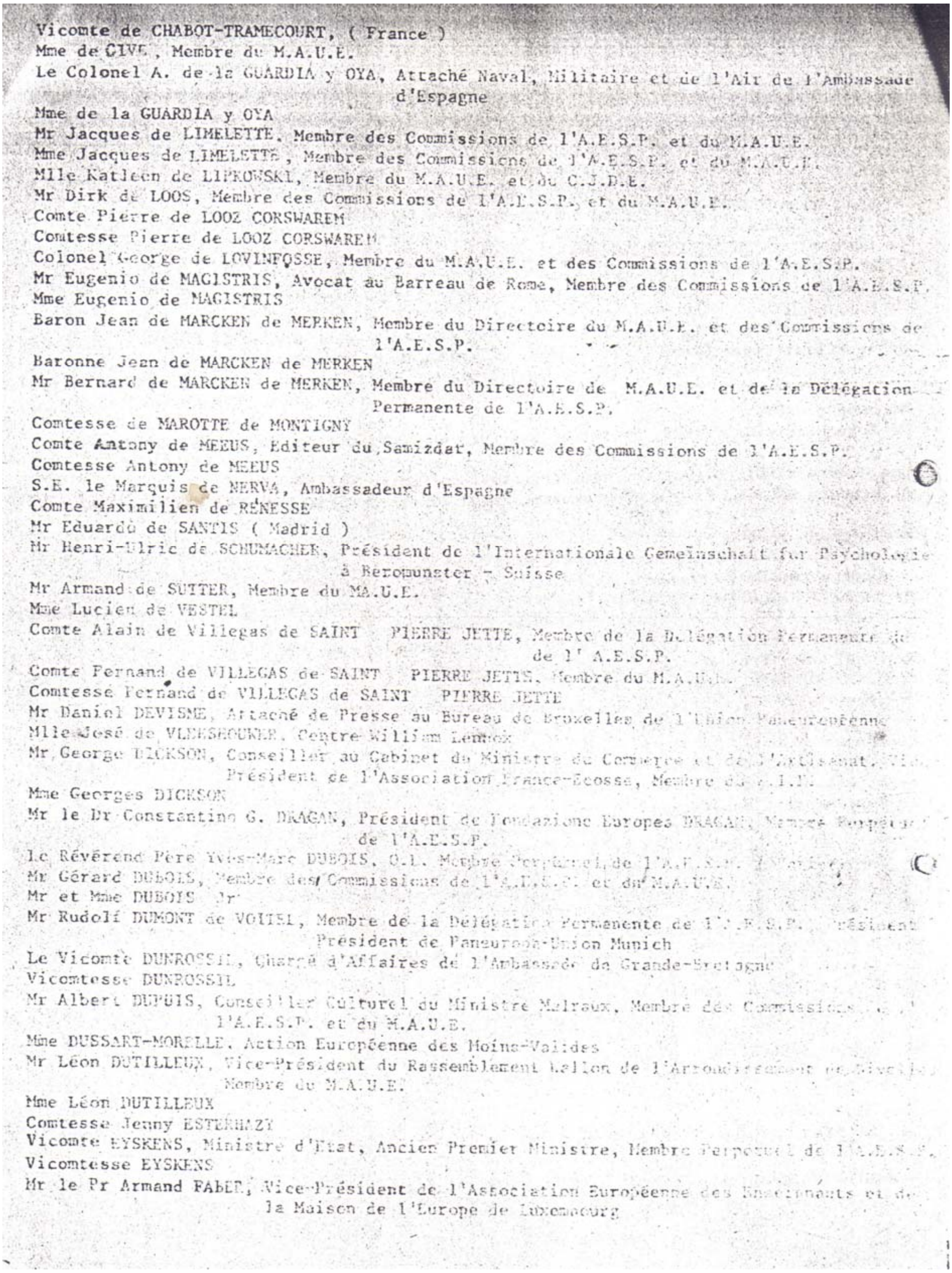

Vicomte de CHABOT-TRAMECOURT, (France)
Mme de CIVE, Membre du M.A.U.E.
Le Colonel A. de la GUARDIA y OYA, Attaché Naval, Militaire et de l'Air de l'Ambassade d'Espagne
Mme de la GUARDIA y OYA
Mr Jacques de LIMELETTE, Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P. et du M.A.U.E.
Mme Jacques de LIMELETTE, Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P. et du M.A.U.E.
Mlle Katleen de LIPKOWSKI, Membre du M.A.U.E. et du C.J.D.E.
Mr Dirk de LOOS, Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P. et du M.A.U.E.
Comte Pierre de LOOZ CORSWAREM
Comtesse Pierre de LOOZ CORSWAREM
Colonel George de LOVINFOSSE, Membre du M.A.U.E. et des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Mr Eugenio de MAGISTRIS, Avocat au Barreau de Rome, Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Mme Eugenio de MAGISTRIS
Baron Jean de MARCKEN de MERKEN, Membre du Directoire du M.A.U.E. et des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Baronne Jean de MARCKEN de MERKEN
Mr Bernard de MARCKEN de MERKEN, Membre du Directoire de M.A.U.E. et de la Délégation Permanente de l'A.E.S.P.
Comtesse de MAROTTE de MONTIGNY
Comte Antony de MEEUS, Editeur du Samizdat, Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Comtesse Antony de MEEUS
S.E. le Marquis de NERVA, Ambassadeur d'Espagne
Comte Maximilien de RENESSE
Mr Eduardo de SANTIS (Madrid)
Mr Henri-Ulric de SCHUMACHER, Président de l'Internationale Gemeinschaft für Psychologie à Beromunster - Suisse
Mr Armand de SUTTER, Membre du MA.U.E.
Mme Lucien de VESTEL
Comte Alain de Villegas de SAINT PIERRE JETTE, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de de l' A.E.S.P.
Comte Fernand de VILLEGAS de SAINT PIERRE JETTE, Membre du M.A.U.E.
Comtesse Fernand de VILLEGAS de SAINT PIERRE JETTE
Mr Daniel DEVISME, Attaché de Presse au Bureau de Bruxelles de l'Union Paneuropéenne
Mlle José de VLEESHOUWER, Centre William Lennox
Mr George DICKSON, Conseiller au Cabinet du Ministre du Commerce et de l'Artisanat, Vice-Président de l'Association France-Ecosse, Membre du [illegible]
Mme Georges DICKSON
Mr le Dr Constantino G. DRAGAN, Président de Fondazione Europea DRAGAN, Membre Perpétuel de l'A.E.S.P.
Le Révérend Père Yves-Marc DUBOIS, O.P. Membre Perpétuel de l'A.E.S.P. [illegible]
Mr Gérard DUBOIS, Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P. et du M.A.U.E.
Mr et Mme DUBOIS Jr
Mr Rudolf DUMONT de VOITEL, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'A.E.S.P. Président Président de Paneuropa-Union Munich
Le Vicomte DUNROSSIL, Chargé d'Affaires de l'Ambassade de Grande-Bretagne
Vicomtesse DUNROSSIL
Mr Albert DUPUIS, Conseiller Culturel du Ministre Malraux, Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P. et du M.A.U.E.
Mme DUSSART-MORELLE, Action Européenne des Moins-Valides
Mr Léon DUTILLEUX, Vice-Président du Rassemblement Wallon de l'Arrondissement de Nivelles Membre du M.A.U.E.
Mme Léon DUTILLEUX
Comtesse Jenny ESTERHAZY
Vicomte EYSKENS, Ministre d'Etat, Ancien Premier Ministre, Membre Perpétuel de l'A.E.S.P.
Vicomtesse EYSKENS
Mr le Pr Armand FABER, Vice-Président de l'Association Européenne des Enseignants et de la Maison de l'Europe de Luxembourg

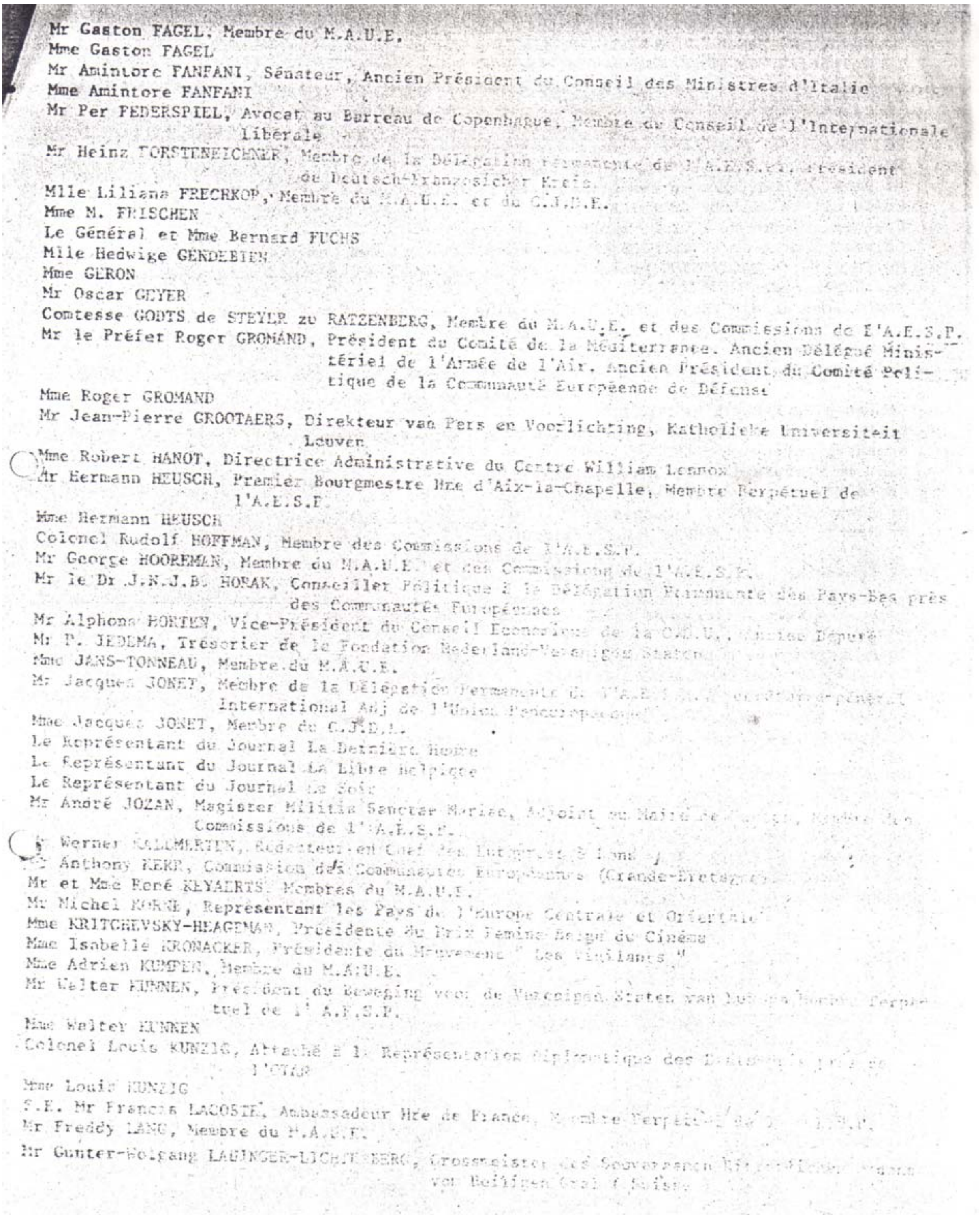

Mr Gaston FAGEL, Membre du M.A.U.E.
Mme Gaston FAGEL
Mr Amintore FANFANI, Sénateur, Ancien Président du Conseil des Ministres d'Italie
Mme Amintore FANFANI
Mr Per FEDERSPIEL, Avocat au Barreau de Copenhague, Membre du Conseil de l'Internationale Libérale
Mr Heinz FORSTENEICHNER, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'A.E.S.P., Président du Deutsch-Französischer Kreis.
Mlle Liliana FRECHKOP, Membre du M.A.U.E. et du C.J.D.E.
Mme M. FRISCHEN
Le Général et Mme Bernard FUCHS
Mlle Hedwige GENDEBIEN
Mme GERON
Mr Oscar GEYER
Comtesse GODTS de STEYER zu RATZENBERG, Membre du M.A.U.E. et des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Mr le Préfet Roger GROMAND, Président du Comité de la Méditerranée. Ancien Délégué Ministériel de l'Armée de l'Air. Ancien Président du Comité Politique de la Communauté Européenne de Défense
Mme Roger GROMAND
Mr Jean-Pierre GROOTAERS, Direkteur van Pers en Voorlichting, Katholieke Universiteit Leuven
Mme Robert HANOT, Directrice Administrative du Centre William Lennox
Mr Hermann HEUSCH, Premier Bourgmestre Hre d'Aix-la-Chapelle, Membre Perpétuel de l'A.E.S.P.
Mme Hermann HEUSCH
Colonel Rudolf HOFFMAN, Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Mr George HOOREMAN, Membre du M.A.U.E. et des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Mr le Dr J.N.J.B. HORAK, Conseiller Politique à la Délégation Permanente des Pays-Bas près des Communautés Européennes
Mr Alphons HORTEN, Vice-Président du Conseil Economique de la [illegible], Ancien Député
Mr P. JEDLMA, Trésorier de la Fondation Nederland-Verenigde Staten
Mme JANS-TONNEAU, Membre du M.A.U.E.
Mr Jacques JONET, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'A.E.S.P., [illegible] International Adj de l'Union Paneuropéenne
Mme Jacques JONET, Membre du C.J.D.E.
Le Représentant du Journal La Dernière Heure
Le Représentant du Journal La Libre Belgique
Le Représentant du Journal Le Soir
Mr André JOZAN, Magister Militiae Sanctae Mariae, Adjoint au Maire de [illegible], Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Mr Werner KALLMERTEN, Rédacteur-en-Chef [illegible] à Bonn
Mr Anthony KERR, Commission des Communautés Européennes (Grande-Bretagne)
Mr et Mme René KEYAERTS, Membres du M.A.U.E.
Mr Michel KORNE, Représentant les Pays de l'Europe Centrale et Orientale
Mme KRITCHEVSKY-HEAGEMAN, Présidente du Prix Femina Belge du Cinéma
Mme Isabelle KRONACKER, Présidente du Mouvement " Les Vigilants "
Mme Adrien KUMPEN, Membre du M.A.U.E.
Mr Walter KUNNEN, Président du Beweging voor de Verenigde Staten van Europa, Membre Perpétuel de l'A.E.S.P.
Mme Walter KUNNEN
Colonel Louis KUNZIG, Attaché à la Représentation Diplomatique des [illegible] près de l'OTAN
Mme Louis KUNZIG
S.E. Mr Francis LACOSTE, Ambassadeur Hre de France, Membre Perpétuel de l'A.E.S.P.
Mr Freddy LANG, Membre du M.A.U.E.
Mr Gunter-Wolfgang LAUINGER-LICHTENBERG, Grossmeister des Souveränen Ritterlichen Ordens vom Heiligen Gral (Suisse)

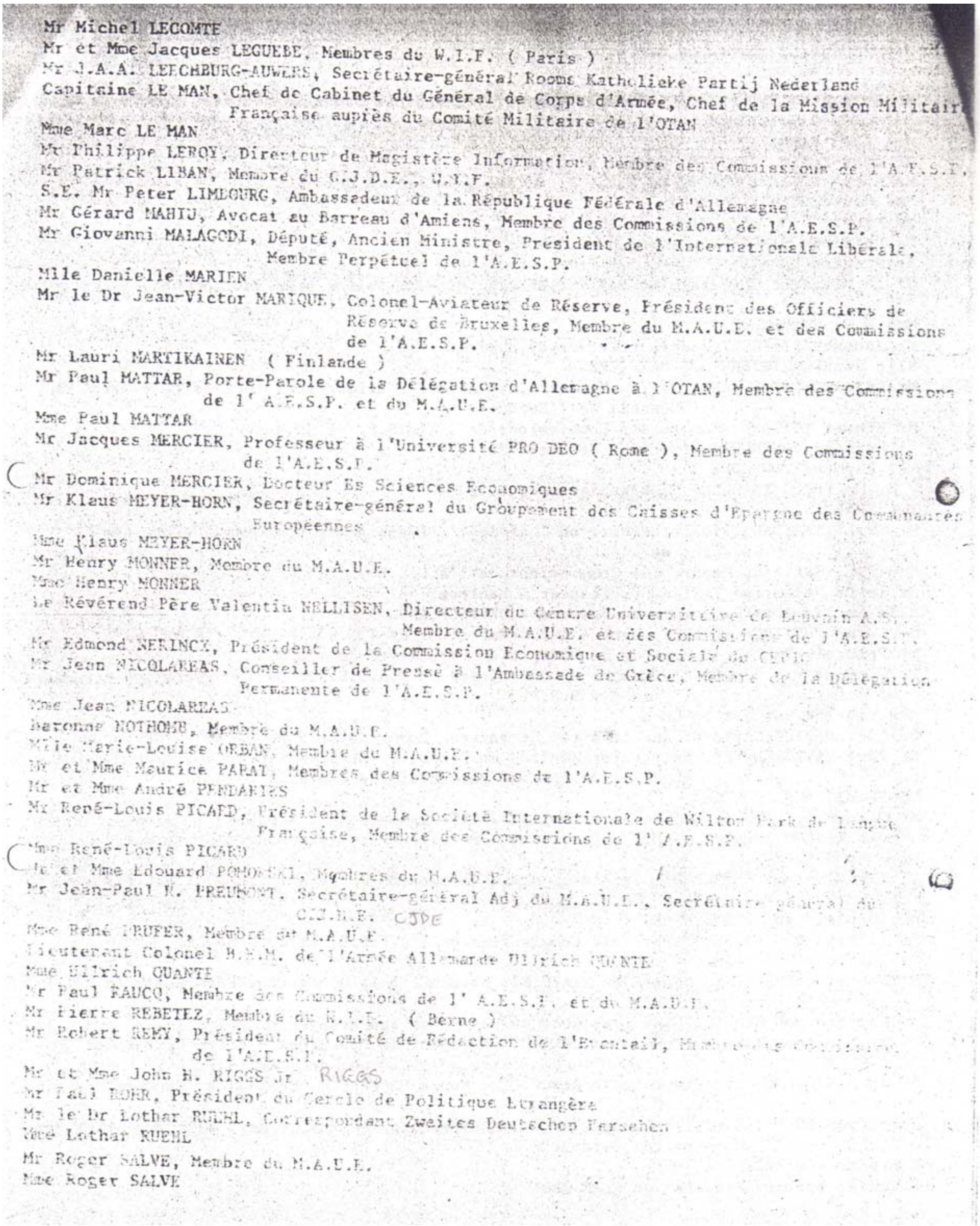

Mr Michel LECOMTE
Mr et Mme Jacques LEGUEBE, Membres du W.I.F. (Paris)
Mr J.A.A. LEECHBURG-AUWERS, Secrétaire-général Rooms Katholieke Partij Nederland
Capitaine LE MAN, Chef de Cabinet du Général de Corps d'Armée, Chef de la Mission Militair Française auprès du Comité Militaire de l'OTAN
Mme Marc LE MAN
Mr Philippe LEROY, Directeur de Magistère Information, Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Mr Patrick LIBAN, Membre du C.I.J.D.E., W.I.F.
S.E. Mr Peter LIMBOURG, Ambassadeur de la République Fédérale d'Allemagne
Mr Gérard MAHIU, Avocat au Barreau d'Amiens, Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Mr Giovanni MALAGODI, Député, Ancien Ministre, President de l'Internationale Liberale, Membre Perpétuel de l'A.E.S.P.
Mlle Danielle MARIEN
Mr le Dr Jean-Victor MARIQUE, Colonel-Aviateur de Réserve, Président des Officiers de Réserve de Bruxelles, Membre du M.A.U.E. et des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Mr Lauri MARTIKAINEN (Finlande)
Mr Paul MATTAR, Porte-Parole de la Délégation d'Allemagne à l'OTAN, Membre des Commissions de l' A.E.S.P. et du M.A.U.E.
Mme Paul MATTAR
Mr Jacques MERCIER, Professeur à l'Université PRO DEO (Rome), Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Mr Dominique MERCIER, Docteur Es Sciences Economiques
Mr Klaus MEYER-HORN, Secrétaire-général du Groupement des Caisses d'Epargne des Communautés Européennes
Mme Klaus MEYER-HORN
Mr Henry MONNER, Membre du M.A.U.E.
Mme Henry MONNER
Le Révérend Père Valentin NELLISEN, Directeur du Centre Universitaire de Louvain A.S., Membre du M.A.U.E. et des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Mr Edmond NERINCX, Président de la Commission Economique et Sociale du CEPIC
Mr Jean NICOLAREAS, Conseiller de Presse à l'Ambassade de Grèce, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'A.E.S.P.
Mme Jean NICOLAREAS
Baronne NOTHOMB, Membre du M.A.U.E.
Mlle Marie-Louise ORBAN, Membre du M.A.U.E.
Mr et Mme Maurice PARAT, Membres des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Mr et Mme André PENDARIES
Mr René-Louis PICARD, Président de la Société Internationale de Wilton Park de Langue Française, Membre des Commissions de l' A.E.S.P.
Mme René-Louis PICARD
Mr et Mme Edouard POMORSKI, Membres du M.A.U.E.
Mr Jean-Paul H. PREUMONT, Secrétaire-général Adj du M.A.U.E., Secrétaire général du C.I.J.D.E. CJDE
Mme René PRUFER, Membre du M.A.U.E.
Lieutenant Colonel B.E.M. de l'Armée Allemande Ullrich QUANTE
Mme Ullrich QUANTE
Mr Paul RAUCQ, Membre des Commissions de l' A.E.S.P. et du M.A.U.E.
Mr Pierre REBETEZ, Membre du W.I.F. (Berne)
Mr Robert REMY, Président du Comité de Rédaction de l'Eventail, Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Mr et Mme John H. RIGGS Jr RIGGS
Mr Paul ROHR, Président du Cercle de Politique Etrangère
Mr le Dr Lothar RUEHL, Correspondant Zweites Deutschen Fernsehen
Mme Lothar RUEHL
Mr Roger SALVE, Membre du M.A.U.E.
Mme Roger SALVE

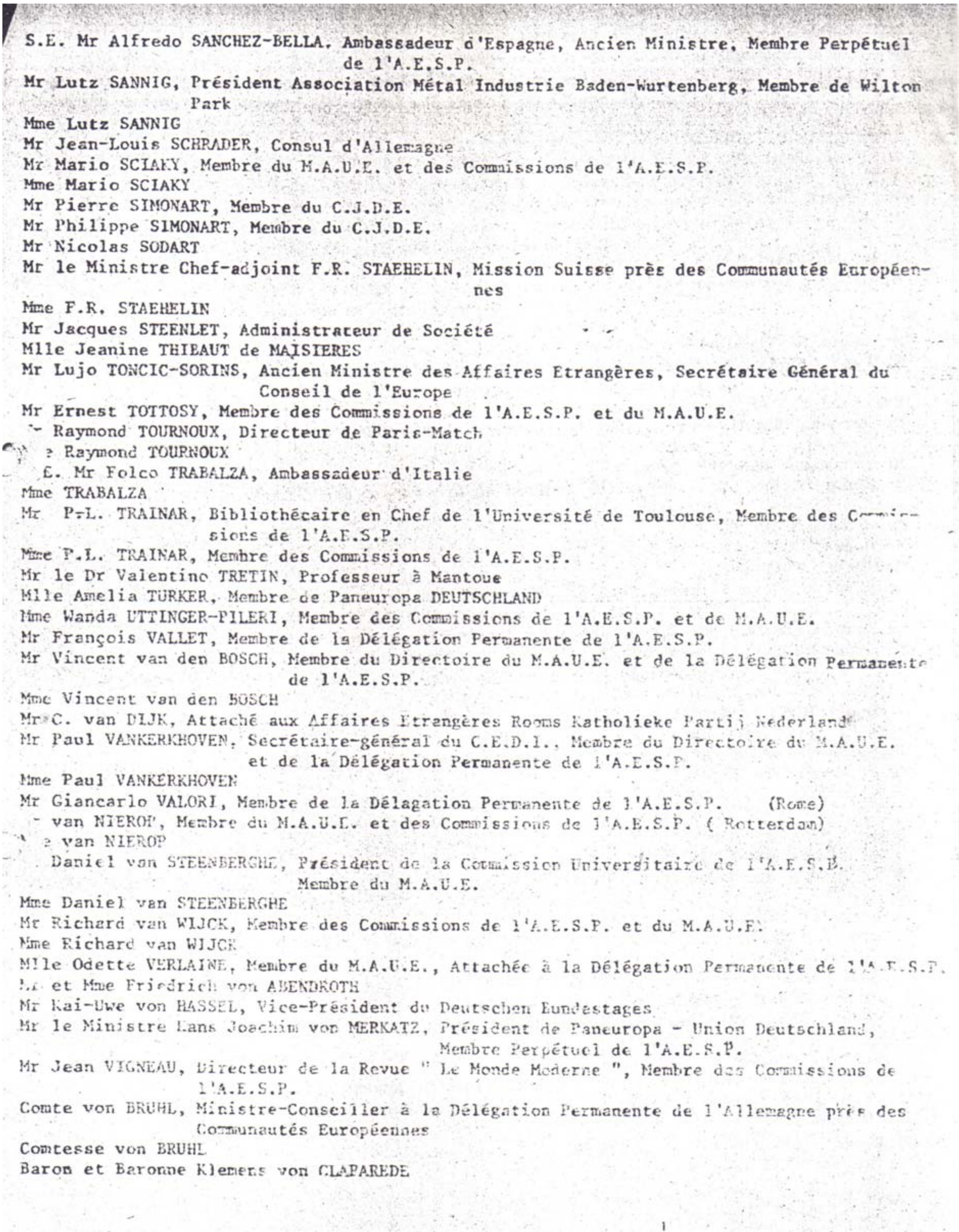

S.E. Mr Alfredo SANCHEZ-BELLA, Ambassadeur d'Espagne, Ancien Ministre, Membre Perpétuel de l'A.E.S.P.
Mr Lutz SANNIG, Président Association Métal Industrie Baden-Wurtenberg, Membre de Wilton Park
Mme Lutz SANNIG
Mr Jean-Louis SCHRADER, Consul d'Allemagne
Mr Mario SCIAKY, Membre du M.A.U.E. et des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Mme Mario SCIAKY
Mr Pierre SIMONART, Membre du C.J.D.E.
Mr Philippe SIMONART, Membre du C.J.D.E.
Mr Nicolas SODART
Mr le Ministre Chef-adjoint F.R. STAEHELIN, Mission Suisse près des Communautés Européennes
Mme F.R. STAEHELIN
Mr Jacques STEENLET, Administrateur de Société
Mlle Jeanine THIBAUT de MAISIERES
Mr Lujo TONCIC-SORINS, Ancien Ministre des Affaires Etrangères, Secrétaire Général du Conseil de l'Europe
Mr Ernest TOTTOSY, Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P. et du M.A.U.E.
Raymond TOURNOUX, Directeur de Paris-Match
e Raymond TOURNOUX
E. Mr Folco TRABALZA, Ambassadeur d'Italie
Mme TRABALZA
Mr P.-L. TRAINAR, Bibliothécaire en Chef de l'Université de Toulouse, Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Mme P.L. TRAINAR, Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Mr le Dr Valentino TRETIN, Professeur à Mantoue
Mlle Amelia TURKER, Membre de Paneuropa DEUTSCHLAND
Mme Wanda UTTINGER-PILERI, Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P. et de M.A.U.E.
Mr François VALLET, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'A.E.S.P.
Mr Vincent van den BOSCH, Membre du Directoire du M.A.U.E. et de la Délégation Permanente de l'A.E.S.P.
Mme Vincent van den BOSCH
Mr C. van DIJK, Attaché aux Affaires Etrangères Rooms Katholieke Partij Nederland
Mr Paul VANKERKHOVEN, Secrétaire-général du C.E.D.I., Membre du Directoire du M.A.U.E. et de la Délégation Permanente de l'A.E.S.P.
Mme Paul VANKERKHOVEN
Mr Giancarlo VALORI, Membre de la Délagation Permanente de l'A.E.S.P. (Rome)
van NIEROP, Membre du M.A.U.E. et des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P. (Rotterdam)
e van NIEROP
Daniel van STEENBERGHE, Président de la Commission Universitaire de l'A.E.S.B. Membre du M.A.U.E.
Mme Daniel van STEENBERGHE
Mr Richard van WIJCK, Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P. et du M.A.U.E.
Mme Richard van WIJCK
Mlle Odette VERLAINE, Membre du M.A.U.E., Attachée à la Délégation Permanente de l'A.E.S.P.
Mr et Mme Friedrich von ABENDROTH
Mr Kai-Uwe von HASSEL, Vice-Président du Deutschen Bundestages
Mr le Ministre Hans Joachim von MERKATZ, Président de Paneuropa - Union Deutschland, Membre Perpétuel de l'A.E.S.P.
Mr Jean VIGNEAU, Directeur de la Revue " Le Monde Moderne ", Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Comte von BRUHL, Ministre-Conseiller à la Délégation Permanente de l'Allemagne près des Communautés Européennes
Comtesse von BRUHL
Baron et Baronne Klemens von CLAPAREDE

1

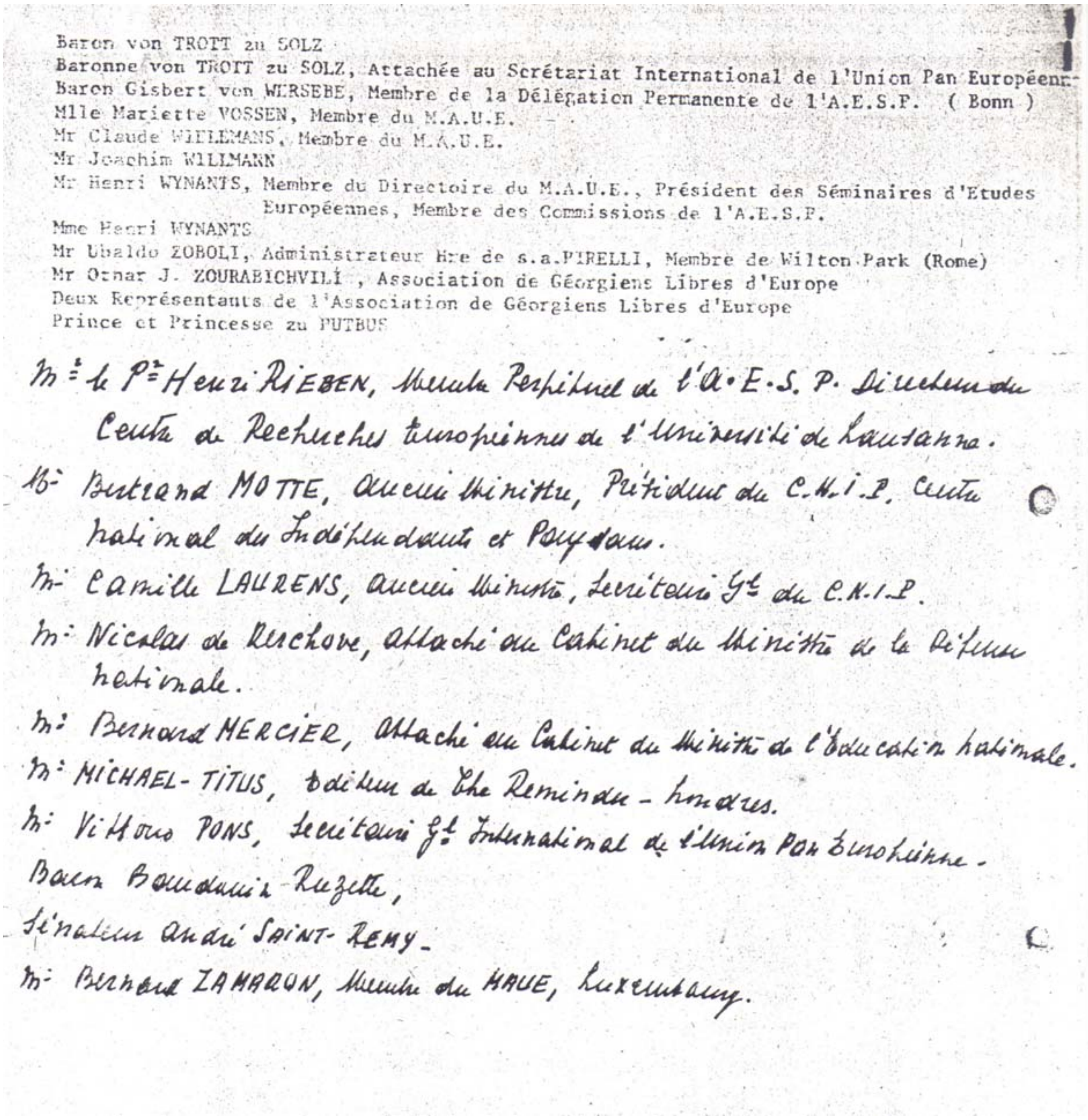

Baron von TROTT zu SOLZ
Baronne von TROTT zu SOLZ, Attachée au Scrétariat International de l'Union Pan Européen
Baron Gisbert von WERSEBE, Membre de la Délégation Permanente de l'A.E.S.P. (Bonn)
Mlle Mariette VOSSEN, Membre du M.A.U.E.
Mr Claude WIELEMANS, Membre du M.A.U.E.
Mr Joachim WILLMANN
Mr Henri WYNANTS, Membre du Directoire du M.A.U.E., Président des Séminaires d'Etudes Européennes, Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
Mme Henri WYNANTS
Mr Ubaldo ZOBOLI, Administrateur Hre de s.a.PIRELLI, Membre de Wilton Park (Rome)
Mr Otnar J. ZOURABICHVILI , Association de Géorgiens Libres d'Europe
Deux Représentants de l'Association de Géorgiens Libres d'Europe
Prince et Princesse zu PUTBUS

Mr le Pr Henri RIEBEN, Membre Perpétuel de l'A.E.S.P. Directeur du Centre de Recherches Européennes de l'Université de Lausanne.
Mr Bertrand MOTTE, Ancien Ministre, Président du C.N.I.P. Centre National des Indépendants et Paysans.
Mr Camille LAURENS, Ancien Ministre, Secrétaire Gl du C.N.I.P.
Mr Nicolas de Kerchove, Attaché au Cabinet du Ministre de la Défense Nationale.
Mr Bernard MERCIER, Attaché au Cabinet du Ministre de l'Education Nationale.
Mr MICHAEL-TITUS, Editeur de The Reminder - Londres.
Mr Vittorio PONS, Secrétaire Gl International de l'Union Pan Européenne.
Baron Baudouin Ruzette,
Sénateur André SAINT-REMY.
Mr Bernard ZAMARON, Membre du MAUE, Luxembourg.

Next pages : draft attendance list by Damman for the AESP IXth Chapter Assembly, 7th February 1976.

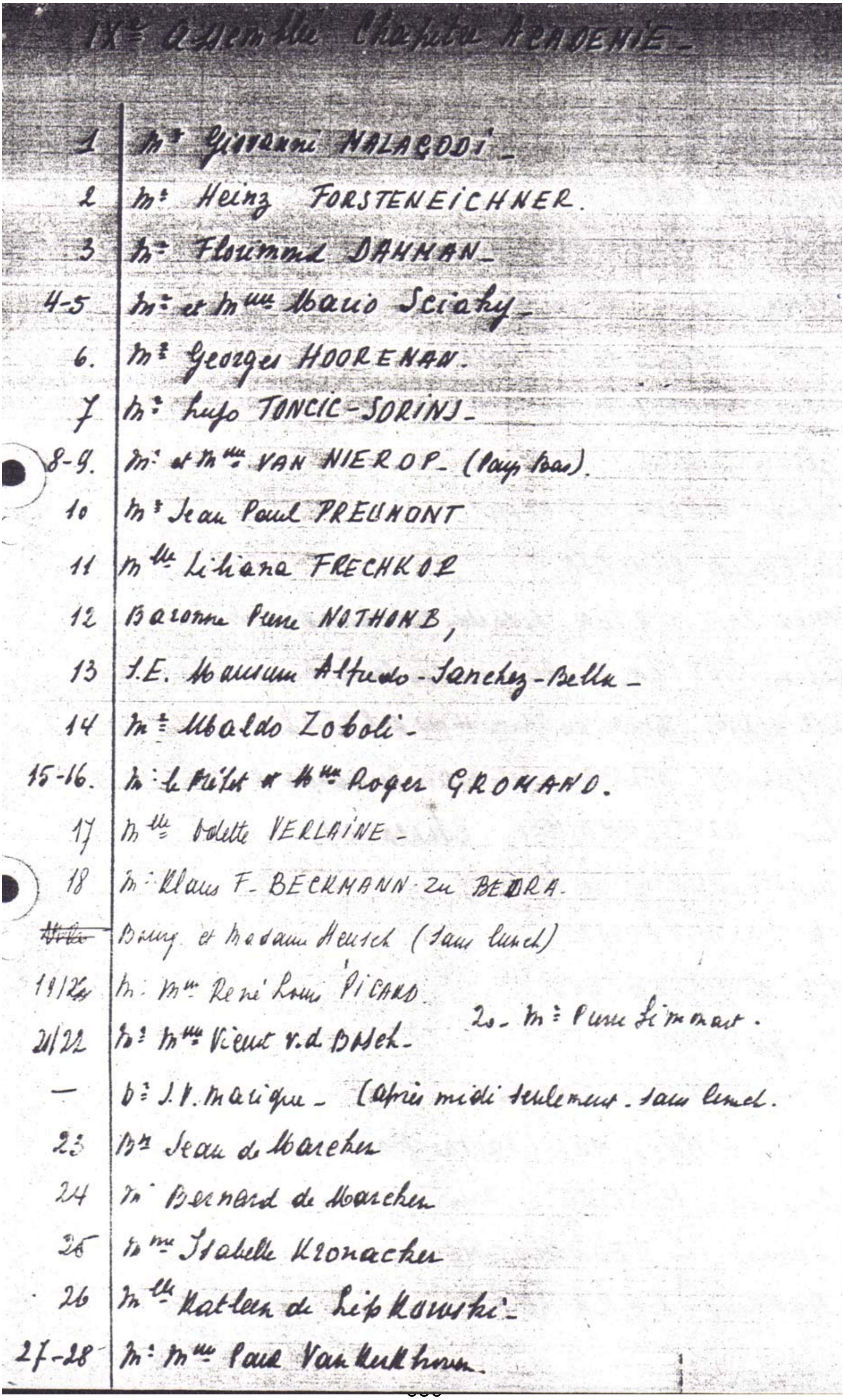

IXe Assemblée Chapitre ACADEMIE –

1	Mr Giovanni MALAGODI –
2	Mr Heinz FORSTENEICHNER.
3	Mr Florimond DAMMAN –
4-5	Mr et Mme Mario Sciaky –
6.	Mr Georges HOORENAN.
7	Mr Lujo TONCIC-SORINJ –
8-9.	Mr et Mme VAN NIEROP – (Pays Bas).
10	Mr Jean Paul PREUMONT
11	Mlle Liliana FRECHKOP
12	Baronne Pierre NOTHOMB,
13	S.E. Monsieur Alfredo-Sanchez-Bella –
14	Mr Ubaldo Zoboli –
15-16.	Mr le Préfet et Mme Roger GROMAND.
17	Mlle Odette VERLAINE –
18	Mr Klaus F. BECKMANN zu BEDRA.
~~19/20~~	Baron et Madame Heusch (sans lunch)
19/~~20~~	Mr Mme René Louis PICARD.
20	Mr Pierre Simonart.
21/22	Mr Mme Vicomt v.d. Bosch –
—	Dr J.V. Malique – (après midi seulement – sans lunch.
23	Bn Jean de Marchez
24	Mr Bernard de Marchez
25	Mme Isabelle Kronacker
26	Mlle Katleen de Lipkowski –
27-28	Mr Mme Paul Vankerkhoven.

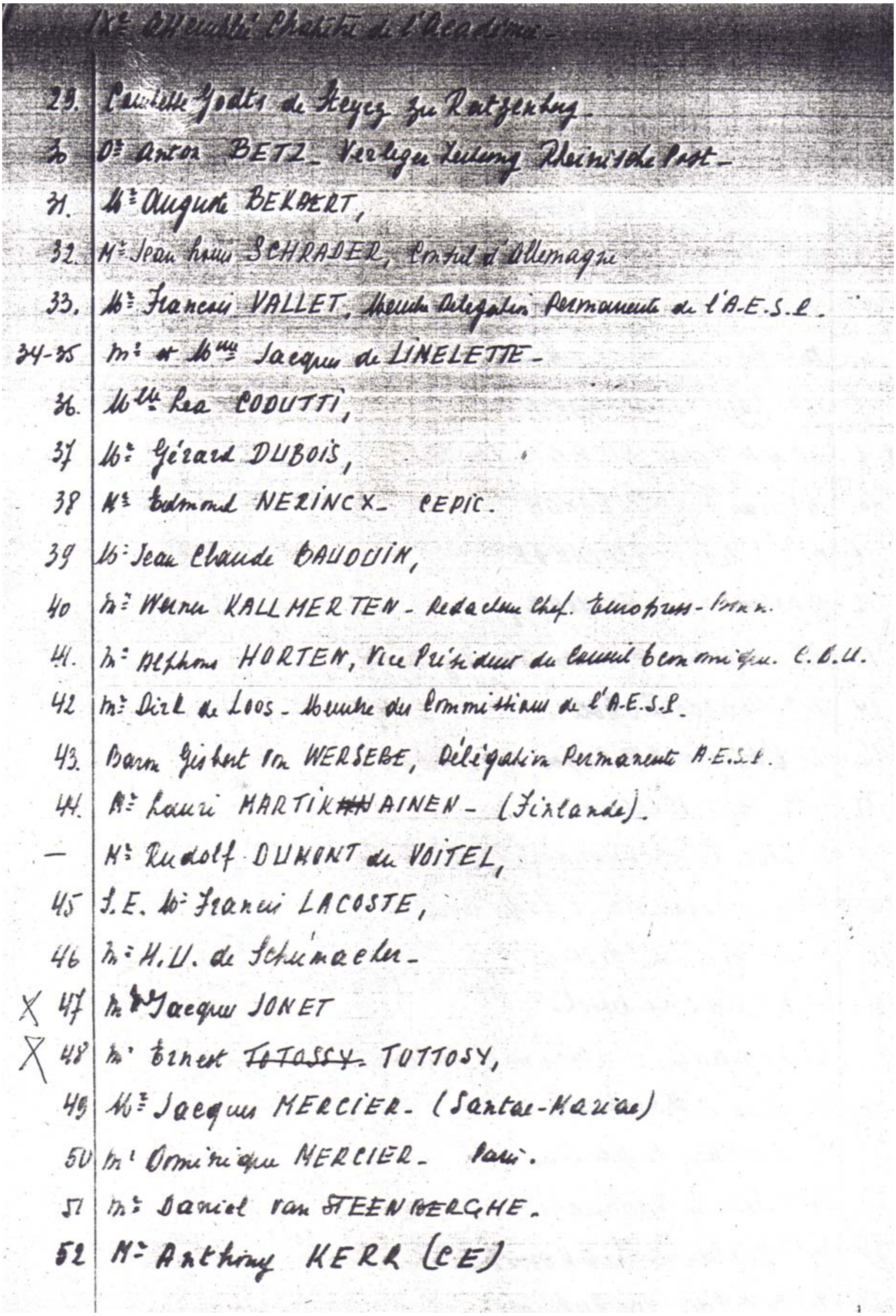

IXe Assemblée Statutaire de l'Académie –

29. Comtesse Godts de Steyez zu Ratzenburg –
30 Dr Anton BETZ – Verleger Zeitung Rheinische Post –
31. Mr Auguste BEKAERT,
32. Mr Jean Louis SCHRADER, Consul d'Allemagne
33. Mr Francois VALLET, Membre Délégation Permanente de l'A-E-S-P.
34-35 Mr et Mme Jacques de LINELETTE –
36. Mlle Rea CODUTTI,
37 Mr Gérard DUBOIS,
38 Mr Edmond NERINCX – CEPIC.
39 Mr Jean Claude BAUDUIN,
40 Mr Werner KALLMERTEN – Redacteur Chef. Europress-Bonn.
41. Mr Alphonse HORTEN, Vice Président du Conseil Economique. C.D.U.
42 Mr Dirk de Loos – Membre des Commissions de l'A.E.S.P.
43. Baron Gisbert von WERSEBE, Délégation Permanente A.E.S.P.
44. Mr Lauri MARTIKAINEN – (Finlande).
— Mr Rudolf DUMONT du VOITEL,
45 S.E. Mr Francois LACOSTE,
46 Mr H.U. de Schumacher –
X 47 Mr Jacques JONET
X 48 Mr Ernest ~~TOTASSY~~ TOTTOSY,
49 Mr Jacques MERCIER – (Santae-Mariae)
50 Mr Dominique MERCIER – Paris.
51 Mr Daniel van STEENBERGHE.
52 Mr Anthony KERR (CE)

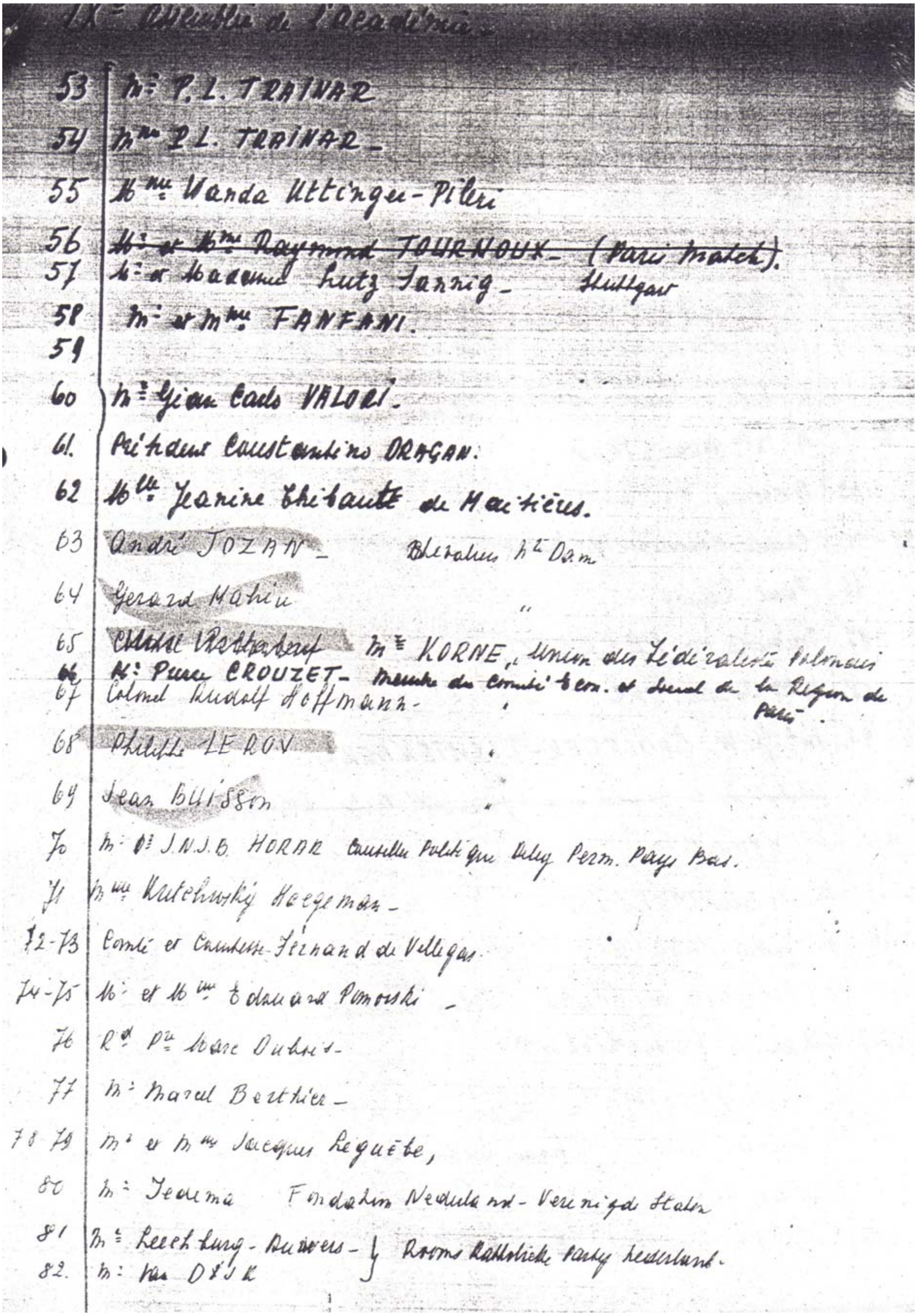

IXe Assemblée de l'Académie.

53 Mr P.L. TRAINAR
54 Mme P.L. TRAINAR –
55 Mme Vanda Uttinger-Pileri
56 ~~Mr et Mme Raymond TOURNOUX – (Paris Match).~~
57 Mr et Madame Lutz Jannig – Stuttgart
58 Mr et Mme FANFANI.
59
60 Mr Gian Carlo VALORI.
61. Président Constantino DRAGAN.
62 Mlle Jeanine Thibault de Maitières.
63 André JOZAN – Chevalier Nt Dam
64 Gerard Mahieu "
65 [illegible] Mr KORNE, Union des Fédéralistes Polonais
66 Mr Pierre CROUZET – membre du Comité Econ. et Social de la Région de Paris.
67 Colonel Rudolf Hoffmann – "
68 Philippe LE ROY "
69 Jean BUISSON "
70 Mr Dr J.N.J.B. HORAK Conseiller Politique Deleg. Perm. Pays Bas.
71 Mme Kutchinsky Hoogeman –
72-73 Comte et Comtesse Fernand de Villegas.
74-75 Mr et Mme Edouard Pomorski –
76 Rd Pe Marc Dubois –
77 Mr Marcel Berthier –
78 79 Mr et Mme Jacques Leguèbe,
80 Mr Jedema Fondation Nederland – Verenigde Staten
81 Mr Leechburg - Auwers – } Rooms Katholieke Partij Nederland.
82. Mr van DIJK

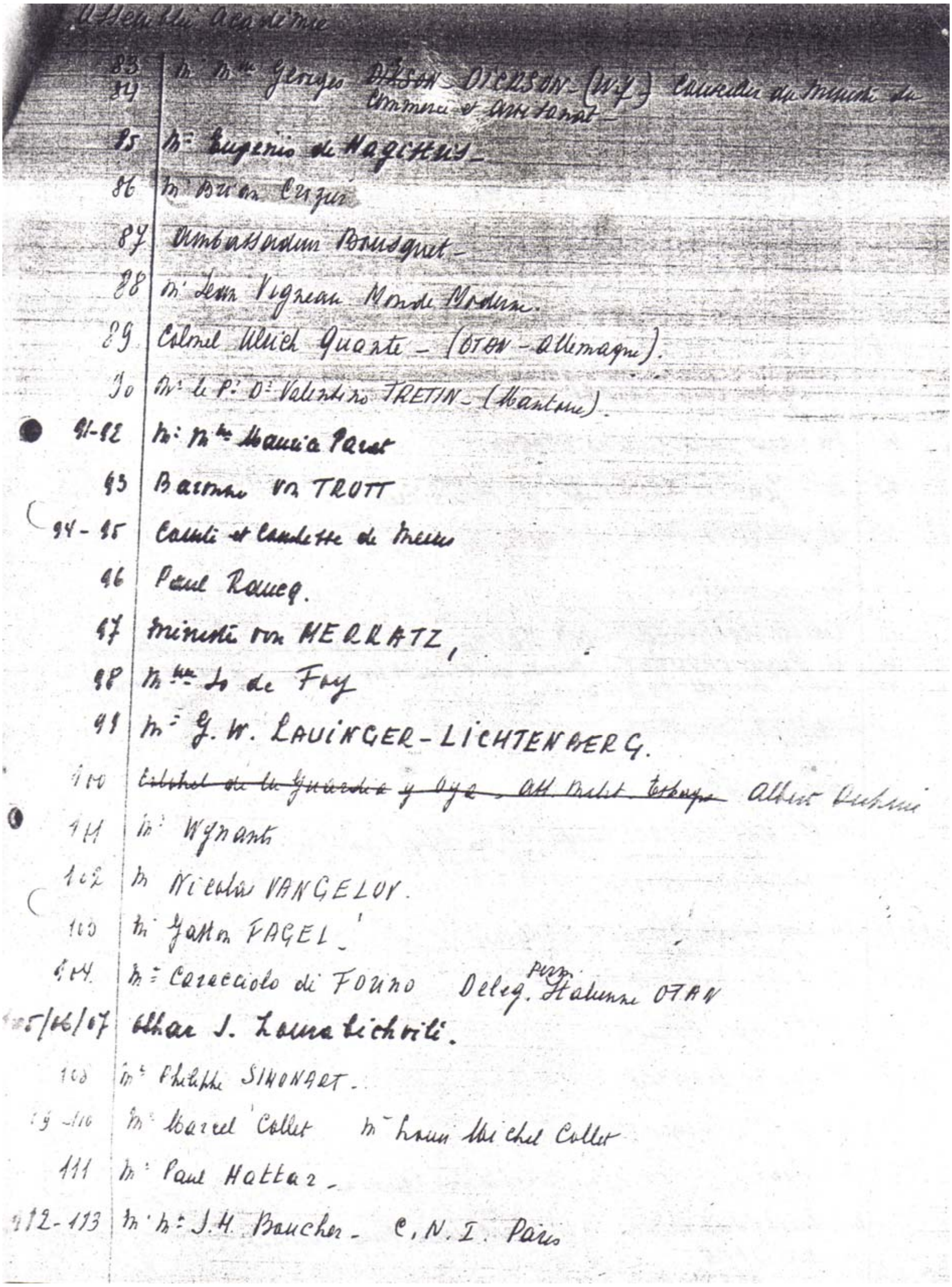

[illegible]

83-84 M. Mme Georges ~~DIXSON~~ DICKSON – (W.Y.) Conseiller du Ministre du Commerce & Artisanat –

85 Mr Eugenio de HAGIHUS –

86 M. Baron Cerzui

87 Ambassadeur Bousquet –

88 M. Leon Vigneau Monde Moderne.

89 Colonel Ulrich Quante – (OTAN – Allemagne).

90 Mr le Pr Dr Valentino TRETIN – (Mantoue).

91-92 M. Mme Maurice Parat

93 Baronne von TROTT

94-95 Comte et Comtesse de Meeus

96 Paul Rancq.

97 Ministre von MERKATZ,

98 Mme Lo de Fay

99 Mr G.W. LAUINGER-LICHTENBERG.

100 ~~Coronel de la Guardia y Oya – Att. Milit. Espagne~~ Albert Duchesne

101 M. Wynants

102 M. Nicolas VANGELOV.

103 M. Gaston FAGEL –

104 Mr Caracciolo di FORINO Deleg. Perm. Italienne OTAN

105/106/107 Alhac J. Lomatichvili.

108 Mr Philippe SIMONART.

109-110 M. Marcel Collet Mr Louis Michel Collet

111 Mr Paul Hattaz –

112-113 M. Mme J.H. Boucher – C.N.I. Paris

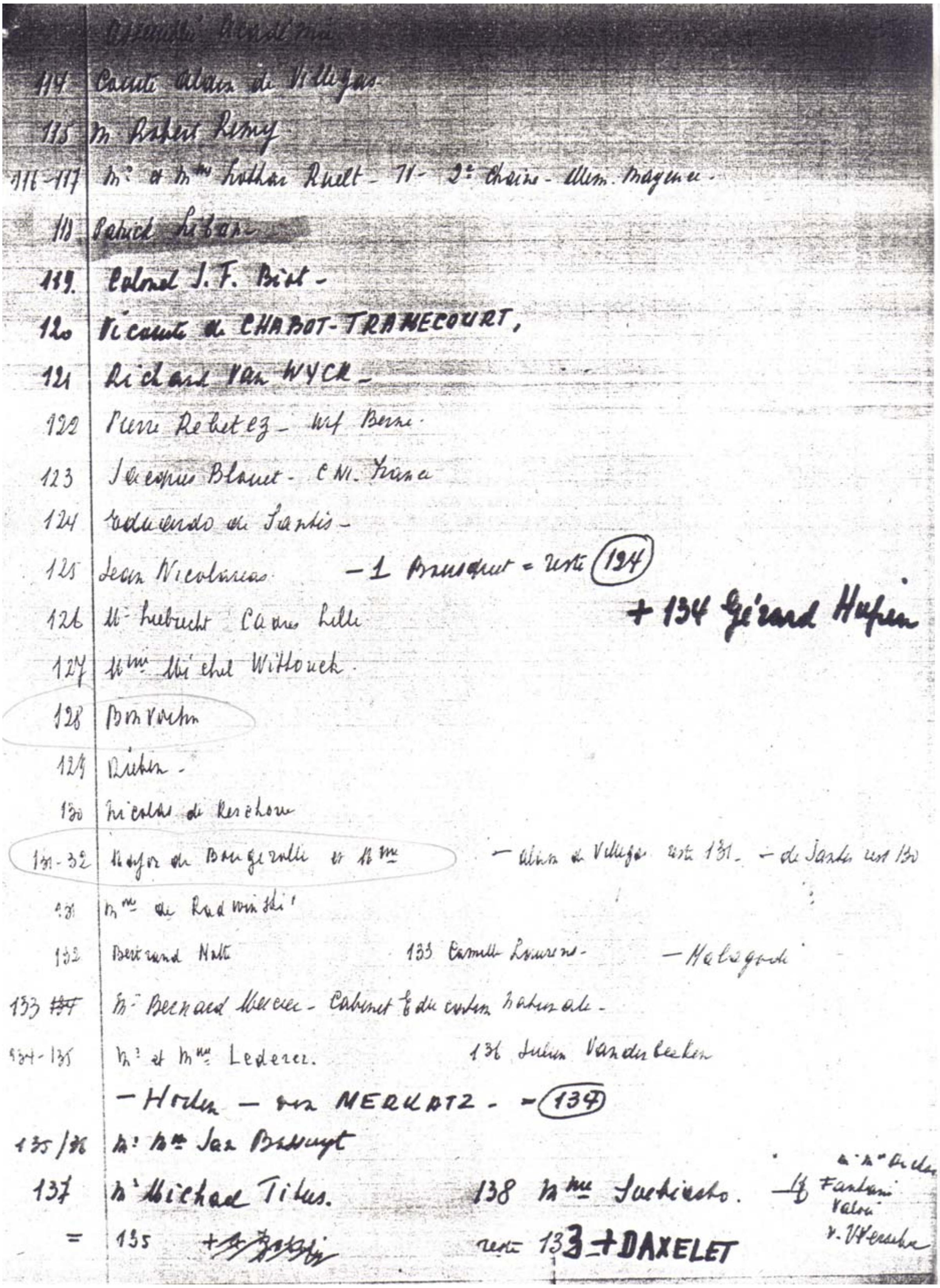

[illegible]

114 Comte Alvaro de Villegas.

115 M. Robert Remy.

116-117 Mr et Mme Lothar Ruelt – 71 – 2e chaîne – Allem. Mayence.

118 Patrick [illegible]

119. Colonel J.F. Bird –

120 Vicomte de CHABOT-TRAMECOURT,

121 Richard VAN WYCK –

122 Pierre Rebetez – ref Berne.

123 Jacques Blanet – CNI. France

124 Eduardo de Santis –

125 Jean Nicolaeas — 1 Président = reste (124)

+ 134 Gérard Hupin

126 M. Liebrecht Cadres Lille

127 Mme Michel Wittouck.

128 Bonvoisin

129 Dieben –

130 Nicolas de Kerchove

131-32 Major de Bongerolli et Mme — Alvaro de Villegas reste 131. – de Santis reste 130

131 Mme de Radwinski

132 Bertrand Nolte 133 Camille Lauwers – – Malagodi

133 ~~134~~ M. Bernard Mercier – Cabinet Education Nationale –

134-135 Mr et Mme Lederer. 136 Julien Vanderbeeken

– Holden – von MERKATZ – = (134)

135/36 Mr Mme Jan Bakruyt

137 Mr Michael Titus. 138 Mme Sachiesko. – [illegible] Fanfani Valori v. Wersebe

= 135 + ~~[illegible]~~ reste 133 + DAXELET

Below: two five-day seminars on industrial security and counter-intelligence organised by the ISP in March 1976, from YEF.

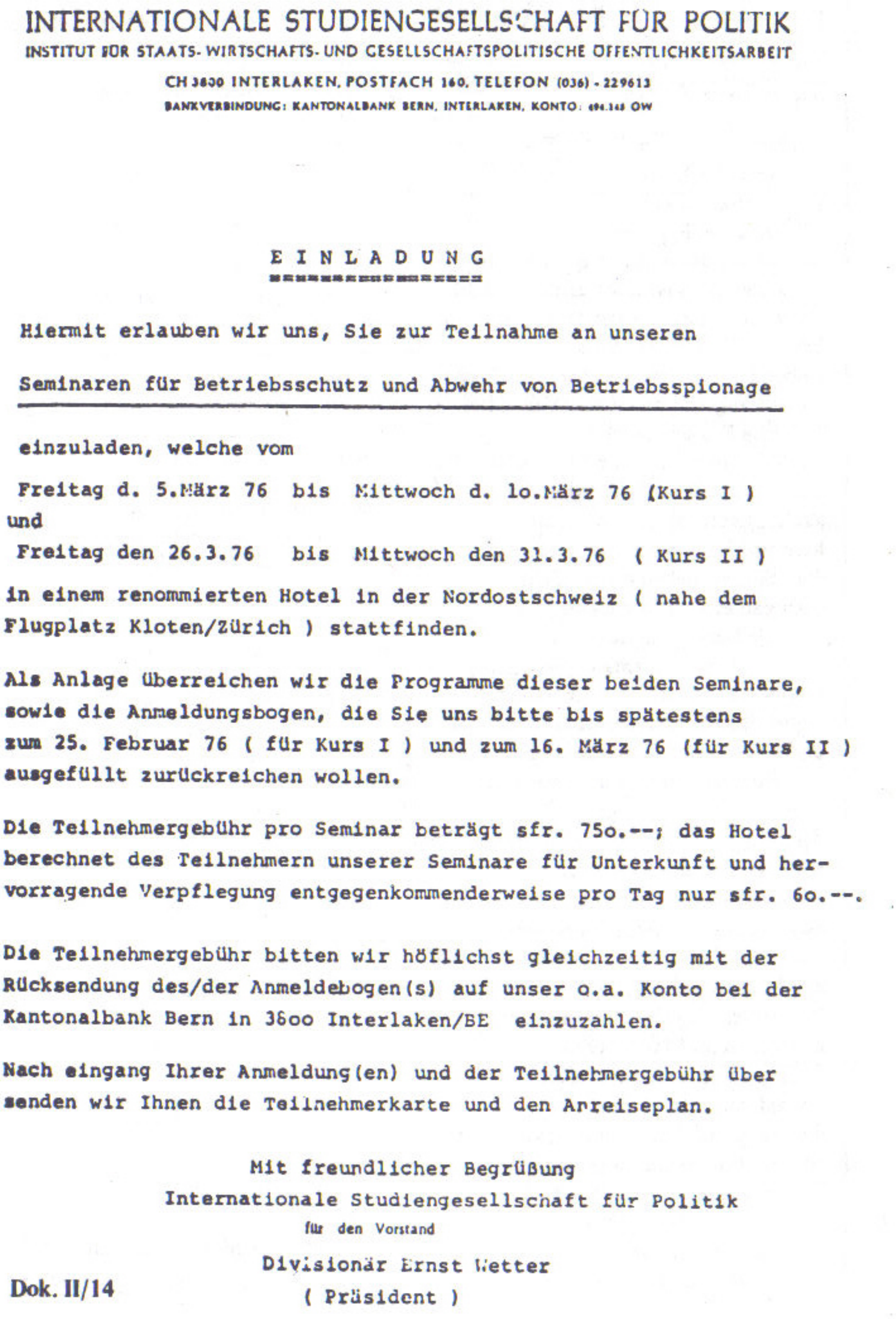

INTERNATIONALE STUDIENGESELLSCHAFT FÜR POLITIK
INSTITUT FÜR STAATS- WIRTSCHAFTS- UND GESELLSCHAFTSPOLITISCHE ÖFFENTLICHKEITSARBEIT
CH 3800 INTERLAKEN, POSTFACH 160, TELEFON (036) - 229613
BANKVERBINDUNG: KANTONALBANK BERN, INTERLAKEN, KONTO: 494.145 OW

EINLADUNG

Hiermit erlauben wir uns, Sie zur Teilnahme an unseren

Seminaren für Betriebsschutz und Abwehr von Betriebsspionage

einzuladen, welche vom

Freitag d. 5.März 76 bis Mittwoch d. lo.März 76 (Kurs I)
und
Freitag den 26.3.76 bis Mittwoch den 31.3.76 (Kurs II)

in einem renommierten Hotel in der Nordostschweiz (nahe dem Flugplatz Kloten/Zürich) stattfinden.

Als Anlage überreichen wir die Programme dieser beiden Seminare, sowie die Anmeldungsbogen, die Sie uns bitte bis spätestens zum 25. Februar 76 (für Kurs I) und zum 16. März 76 (für Kurs II) ausgefüllt zurückreichen wollen.

Die Teilnehmergebühr pro Seminar beträgt sfr. 75o.--; das Hotel berechnet des Teilnehmern unserer Seminare für Unterkunft und hervorragende Verpflegung entgegenkommenderweise pro Tag nur sfr. 6o.--.

Die Teilnehmergebühr bitten wir höflichst gleichzeitig mit der Rücksendung des/der Anmeldebogen(s) auf unser o.a. Konto bei der Kantonalbank Bern in 36oo Interlaken/BE einzuzahlen.

Nach eingang Ihrer Anmeldung(en) und der Teilnehmergebühr über senden wir Ihnen die Teilnehmerkarte und den Anreiseplan.

Mit freundlicher Begrüßung
Internationale Studiengesellschaft für Politik
für den Vorstand
Divisionär Ernst Wetter
(Präsident)

Dok. II/14

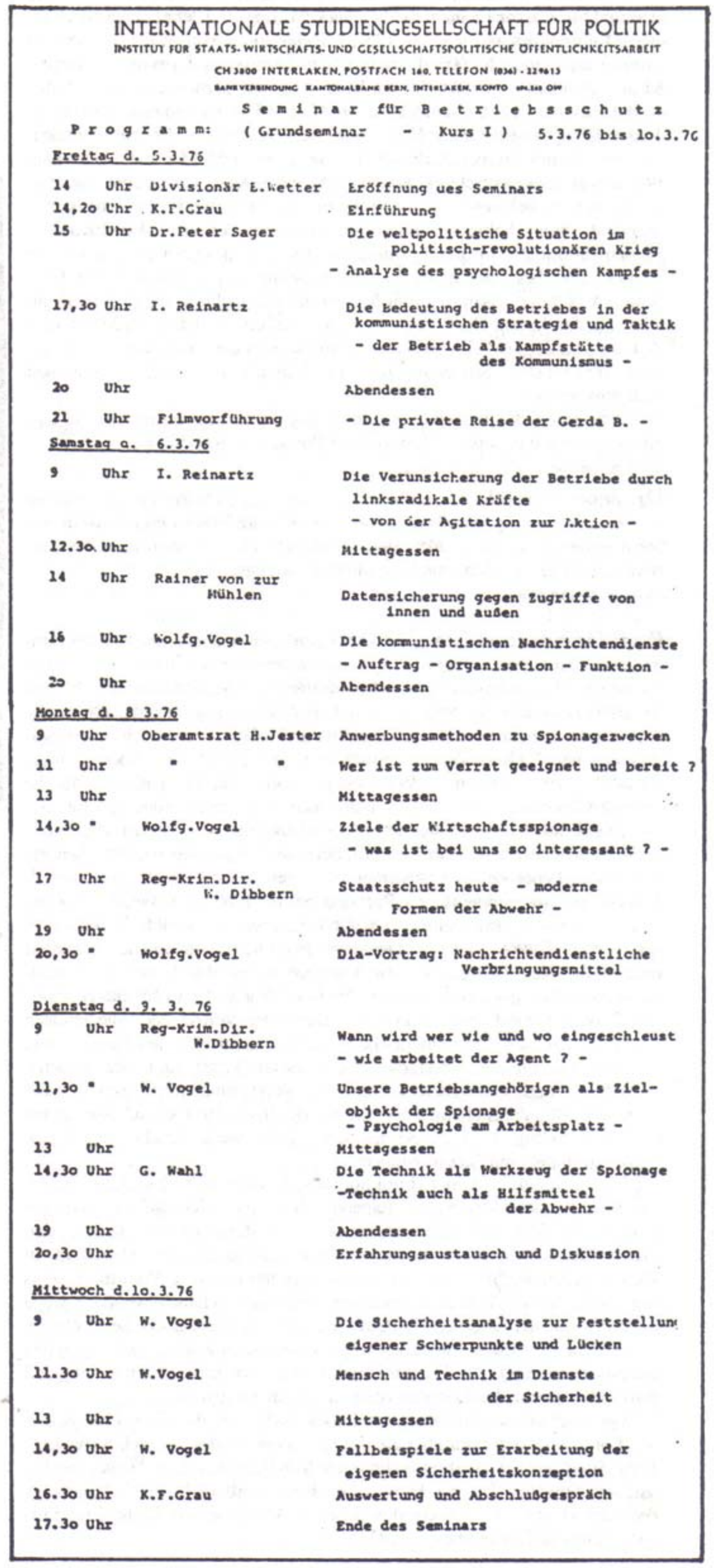

INTERNATIONALE STUDIENGESELLSCHAFT FÜR POLITIK
INSTITUT FÜR STAATS- WIRTSCHAFTS- UND GESELLSCHAFTSPOLITISCHE ÖFFENTLICHKEITSARBEIT
CH 3800 INTERLAKEN, POSTFACH 160, TELEFON (036) - 229613
BANKVERBINDUNG KANTONALBANK BERN, INTERLAKEN, KONTO [illegible] OW

Seminar für Betriebsschutz

Programm: (Grundseminar - Kurs I) 5.3.76 bis lo.3.76

Freitag d. 5.3.76

14	Uhr	Divisionär E.Wetter	Eröffnung des Seminars
14,2o	Uhr	K.F.Grau	Einführung
15	Uhr	Dr.Peter Sager	Die weltpolitische Situation im politisch-revolutionären Krieg - Analyse des psychologischen Kampfes -
17,3o	Uhr	I. Reinartz	Die Bedeutung des Betriebes in der kommunistischen Strategie und Taktik - der Betrieb als Kampfstätte des Kommunismus -
2o	Uhr		Abendessen
21	Uhr	Filmvorführung	- Die private Reise der Gerda B. -

Samstag d. 6.3.76

9	Uhr	I. Reinartz	Die Verunsicherung der Betriebe durch linksradikale Kräfte - von der Agitation zur Aktion -
12.3o.	Uhr		Mittagessen
14	Uhr	Rainer von zur Mühlen	Datensicherung gegen Zugriffe von innen und außen
16	Uhr	Wolfg.Vogel	Die kommunistischen Nachrichtendienste - Auftrag - Organisation - Funktion -
2o	Uhr		Abendessen

Montag d. 8 3.76

9	Uhr	Oberamtsrat H.Jester	Anwerbungsmethoden zu Spionagezwecken
11	Uhr	" "	Wer ist zum Verrat geeignet und bereit ?
13	Uhr		Mittagessen
14,3o	"	Wolfg.Vogel	Ziele der Wirtschaftsspionage - was ist bei uns so interessant ? -
17	Uhr	Reg-Krim.Dir. W. Dibbern	Staatsschutz heute - moderne Formen der Abwehr -
19	Uhr		Abendessen
2o,3o	"	Wolfg.Vogel	Dia-Vortrag: Nachrichtendienstliche Verbringungsmittel

Dienstag d. 9. 3. 76

9	Uhr	Reg-Krim.Dir. W.Dibbern	Wann wird wer wie und wo eingeschleust - wie arbeitet der Agent ? -
11,3o	"	W. Vogel	Unsere Betriebsangehörigen als Zielobjekt der Spionage - Psychologie am Arbeitsplatz -
13	Uhr		Mittagessen
14,3o	Uhr	G. Wahl	Die Technik als Werkzeug der Spionage -Technik auch als Hilfsmittel der Abwehr -
19	Uhr		Abendessen
2o,3o	Uhr		Erfahrungsaustausch und Diskussion

Mittwoch d.lo.3.76

9	Uhr	W. Vogel	Die Sicherheitsanalyse zur Feststellun eigener Schwerpunkte und Lücken
11.3o	Uhr	W.Vogel	Mensch und Technik im Dienste der Sicherheit
13	Uhr		Mittagessen
14,3o	Uhr	W. Vogel	Fallbeispiele zur Erarbeitung der eigenen Sicherheitskonzeption
16.3o	Uhr	K.F.Grau	Auswertung und Abschlußgespräch
17.3o	Uhr		Ende des Seminars

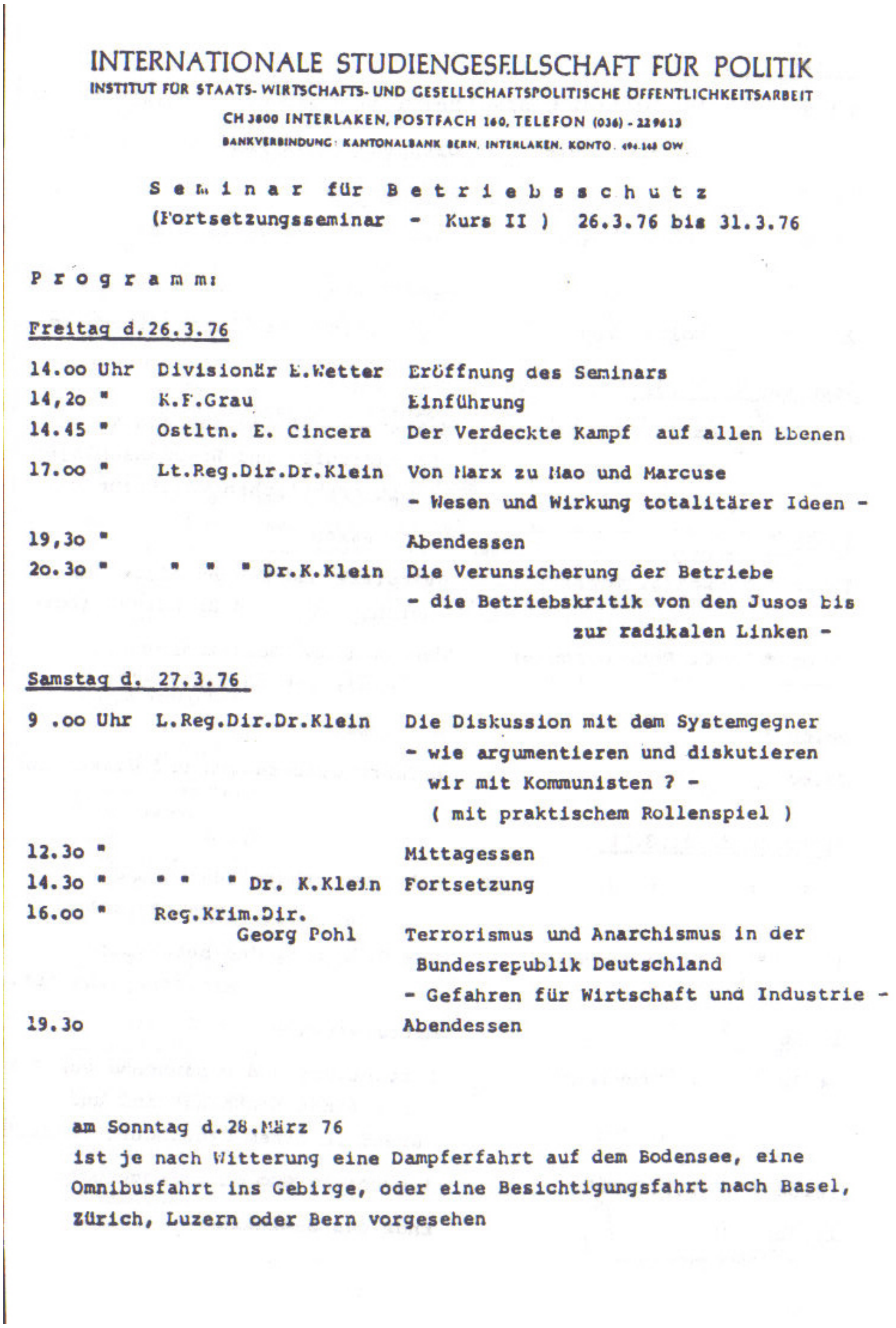

INTERNATIONALE STUDIENGESELLSCHAFT FÜR POLITIK
INSTITUT FÜR STAATS- WIRTSCHAFTS- UND GESELLSCHAFTSPOLITISCHE ÖFFENTLICHKEITSARBEIT
CH 3800 INTERLAKEN, POSTFACH 160, TELEFON (036) - 229613
BANKVERBINDUNG: KANTONALBANK BERN, INTERLAKEN, KONTO . 494.168 OW

Seminar für Betriebsschutz
(Fortsetzungsseminar - Kurs II) 26.3.76 bis 31.3.76

Programm:

Freitag d.26.3.76

14.00 Uhr	Divisionär E.Wetter	Eröffnung des Seminars
14,20 "	K.F.Grau	Einführung
14.45 "	Ostltn. E. Cincera	Der Verdeckte Kampf auf allen Ebenen
17.00 "	Lt.Reg.Dir.Dr.Klein	Von Marx zu Mao und Marcuse - Wesen und Wirkung totalitärer Ideen -
19,30 "		Abendessen
20.30 "	" " " Dr.K.Klein	Die Verunsicherung der Betriebe - die Betriebskritik von den Jusos bis zur radikalen Linken -

Samstag d. 27.3.76

9 .00 Uhr	L.Reg.Dir.Dr.Klein	Die Diskussion mit dem Systemgegner - wie argumentieren und diskutieren wir mit Kommunisten ? - (mit praktischem Rollenspiel)
12.30 "		Mittagessen
14.30 "	" " " Dr. K.Klein	Fortsetzung
16.00 "	Reg.Krim.Dir. Georg Pohl	Terrorismus und Anarchismus in der Bundesrepublik Deutschland - Gefahren für Wirtschaft und Industrie -
19.30		Abendessen

am Sonntag d.28.März 76
ist je nach Witterung eine Dampferfahrt auf dem Bodensee, eine Omnibusfahrt ins Gebirge, oder eine Besichtigungsfahrt nach Basel, Zürich, Luzern oder Bern vorgesehen

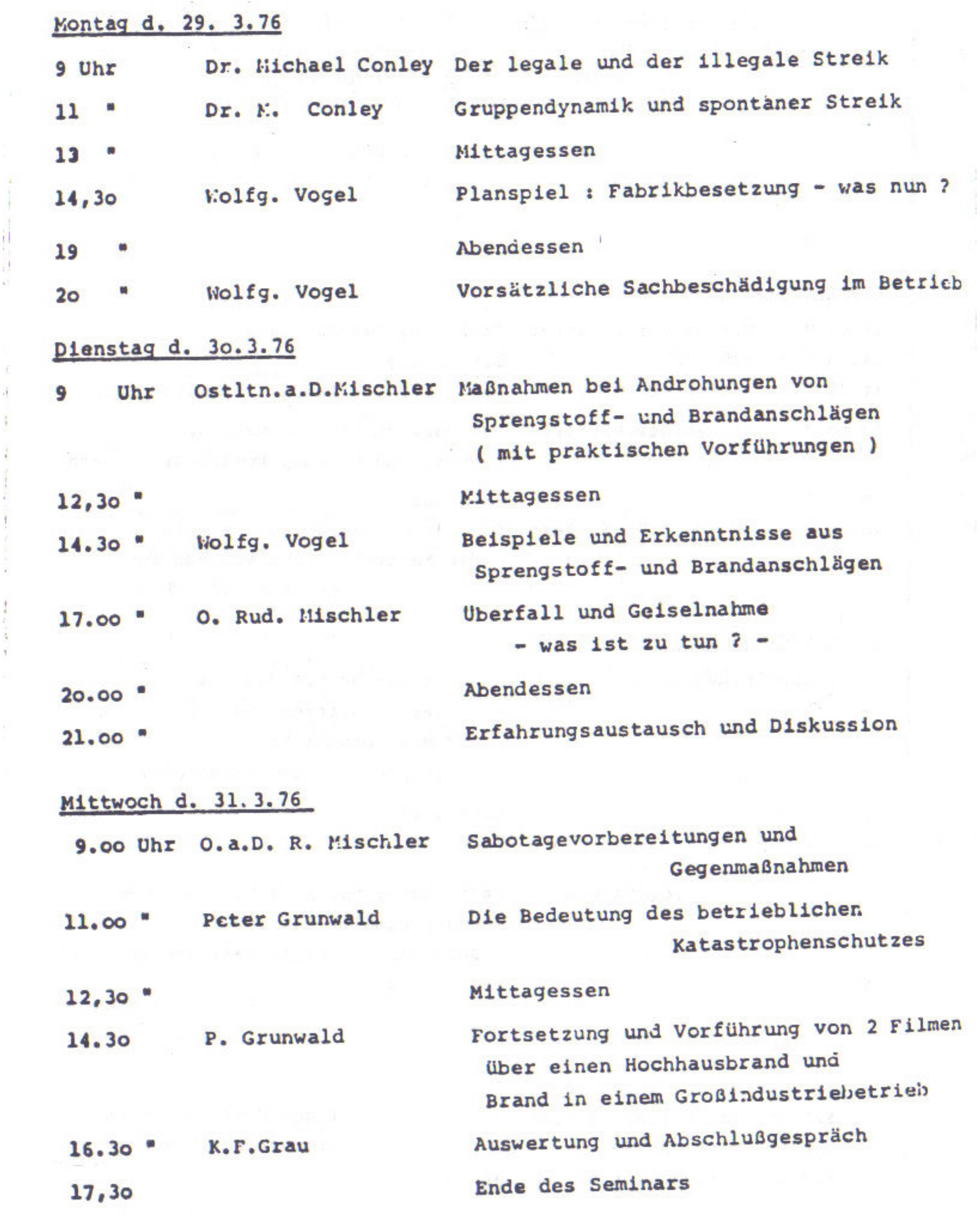

Montag d. 29. 3.76

9 Uhr	Dr. Michael Conley	Der legale und der illegale Streik
11 "	Dr. M. Conley	Gruppendynamik und spontaner Streik
13 "		Mittagessen
14,30	Wolfg. Vogel	Planspiel : Fabrikbesetzung - was nun ?
19 "		Abendessen
20 "	Wolfg. Vogel	Vorsätzliche Sachbeschädigung im Betrieb

Dienstag d. 30.3.76

9 Uhr	Ostltn.a.D.Mischler	Maßnahmen bei Androhungen von Sprengstoff- und Brandanschlägen (mit praktischen Vorführungen)
12,30 "		Mittagessen
14.30 "	Wolfg. Vogel	Beispiele und Erkenntnisse aus Sprengstoff- und Brandanschlägen
17.00 "	O. Rud. Mischler	Überfall und Geiselnahme - was ist zu tun ? -
20.00 "		Abendessen
21.00 "		Erfahrungsaustausch und Diskussion

Mittwoch d. 31.3.76

9.00 Uhr	O.a.D. R. Mischler	Sabotagevorbereitungen und Gegenmaßnahmen
11.00 "	Peter Grunwald	Die Bedeutung des betrieblichen Katastrophenschutzes
12,30 "		Mittagessen
14.30	P. Grunwald	Fortsetzung und Vorführung von 2 Filmen über einen Hochhausbrand und Brand in einem Großindustriebetrieb
16.30 "	K.F.Grau	Auswertung und Abschlußgespräch
17,30		Ende des Seminars

Below: *Vertrauliche Mitteilungen aus Politik und Wirtschaft* (Confidential News from Politics and the Economy), a newsletter produced by Grau.

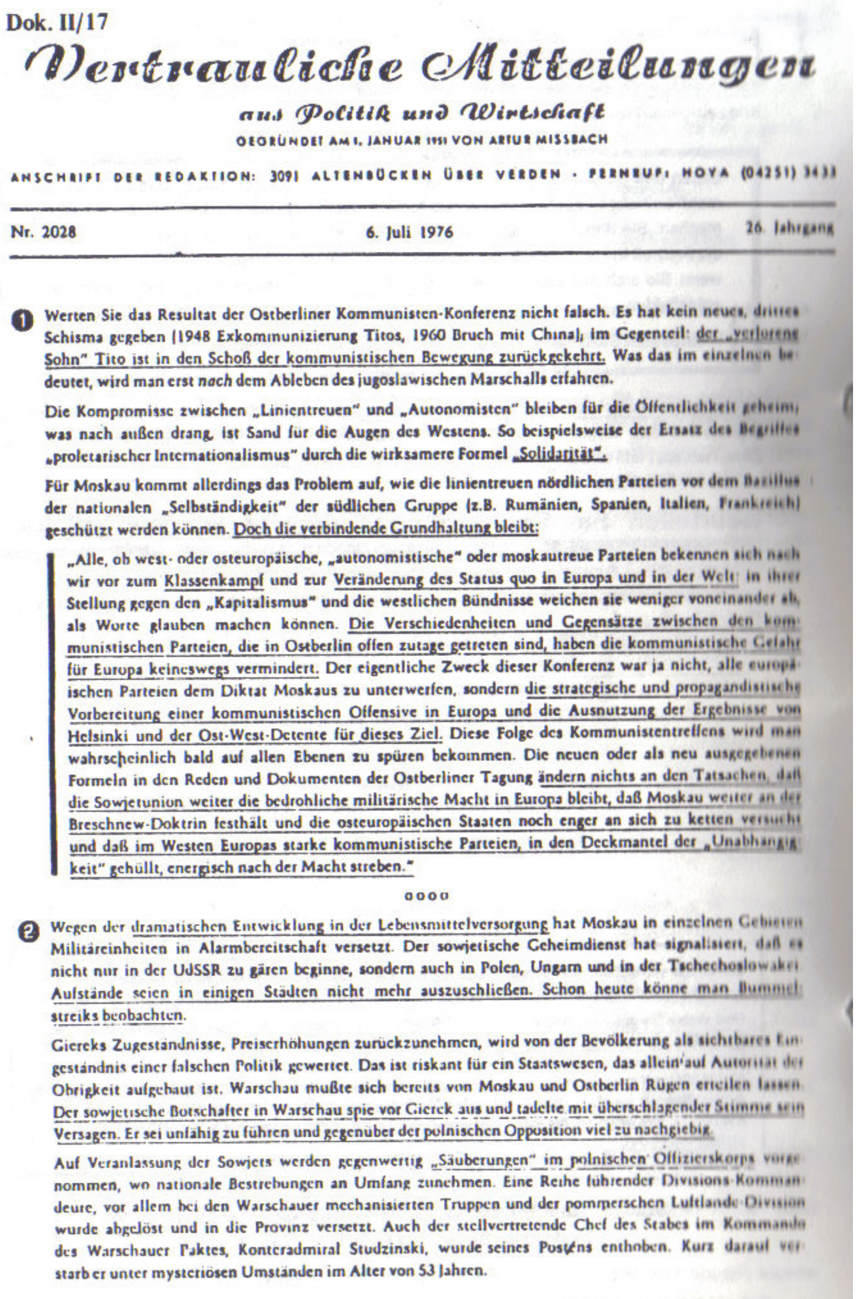

Dok. II/17

Vertrauliche Mitteilungen

aus Politik und Wirtschaft

GEGRÜNDET AM 1. JANUAR 1951 VON ARTUR MISSBACH

ANSCHRIFT DER REDAKTION: 3091 ALTENBÜCKEN ÜBER VERDEN · FERNRUF: HOYA (04251) 3433

Nr. 2028 — 6. Juli 1976 — 26. Jahrgang

❶ Werten Sie das Resultat der Ostberliner Kommunisten-Konferenz nicht falsch. Es hat kein neues, drittes Schisma gegeben (1948 Exkommunizierung Titos, 1960 Bruch mit China); im Gegenteil: der „verlorene Sohn" Tito ist in den Schoß der kommunistischen Bewegung zurückgekehrt. Was das im einzelnen bedeutet, wird man erst *nach* dem Ableben des jugoslawischen Marschalls erfahren.

Die Kompromisse zwischen „Linientreuen" und „Autonomisten" bleiben für die Öffentlichkeit geheim; was nach außen drang, ist Sand für die Augen des Westens. So beispielsweise der Ersatz des Begriffes „proletarischer Internationalismus" durch die wirksamere Formel „Solidarität".

Für Moskau kommt allerdings das Problem auf, wie die linientreuen nördlichen Parteien vor dem Bazillus der nationalen „Selbständigkeit" der südlichen Gruppe (z.B. Rumänien, Spanien, Italien, Frankreich) geschützt werden können. Doch die verbindende Grundhaltung bleibt:

> „Alle, ob west- oder osteuropäische, „autonomistische" oder moskautreue Parteien bekennen sich nach wir vor zum Klassenkampf und zur Veränderung des Status quo in Europa und in der Welt; in ihrer Stellung gegen den „Kapitalismus" und die westlichen Bündnisse weichen sie weniger voneinander ab, als Worte glauben machen können. Die Verschiedenheiten und Gegensätze zwischen den kommunistischen Parteien, die in Ostberlin offen zutage getreten sind, haben die kommunistische Gefahr für Europa keineswegs vermindert. Der eigentliche Zweck dieser Konferenz war ja nicht, alle europäischen Parteien dem Diktat Moskaus zu unterwerfen, sondern die strategische und propagandistische Vorbereitung einer kommunistischen Offensive in Europa und die Ausnutzung der Ergebnisse von Helsinki und der Ost-West-Detente für dieses Ziel. Diese Folge des Kommunistentreffens wird man wahrscheinlich bald auf allen Ebenen zu spüren bekommen. Die neuen oder als neu ausgegebenen Formeln in den Reden und Dokumenten der Ostberliner Tagung ändern nichts an den Tatsachen, daß die Sowjetunion weiter die bedrohliche militärische Macht in Europa bleibt, daß Moskau weiter an der Breschnew-Doktrin festhält und die osteuropäischen Staaten noch enger an sich zu ketten versucht und daß im Westen Europas starke kommunistische Parteien, in den Deckmantel der „Unabhängigkeit" gehüllt, energisch nach der Macht streben."

oooo

❷ Wegen der dramatischen Entwicklung in der Lebensmittelversorgung hat Moskau in einzelnen Gebieten Militäreinheiten in Alarmbereitschaft versetzt. Der sowjetische Geheimdienst hat signalisiert, daß es nicht nur in der UdSSR zu gären beginne, sondern auch in Polen, Ungarn und in der Tschechoslowakei Aufstände seien in einigen Städten nicht mehr auszuschließen. Schon heute könne man Bummelstreiks beobachten.

Giereks Zugeständnisse, Preiserhöhungen zurückzunehmen, wird von der Bevölkerung als sichtbares Eingeständnis einer falschen Politik gewertet. Das ist riskant für ein Staatswesen, das allein auf Autorität der Obrigkeit aufgebaut ist. Warschau mußte sich bereits von Moskau und Ostberlin Rügen erteilen lassen. Der sowjetische Botschafter in Warschau spie vor Gierek aus und tadelte mit überschlagender Stimme sein Versagen. Er sei unfähig zu führen und gegenüber der polnischen Opposition viel zu nachgiebig.

Auf Veranlassung der Sowjets werden gegenwertig „Säuberungen" im polnischen Offizierskorps vorgenommen, wo nationale Bestrebungen an Umfang zunehmen. Eine Reihe führender Divisions-Kommandeure, vor allem bei den Warschauer mechanisierten Truppen und der pommerschen Luftlande-Division wurde abgelöst und in die Provinz versetzt. Auch der stellvertretende Chef des Stabes im Kommando des Warschauer Paktes, Konteradmiral Studzinski, wurde seines Postens enthoben. Kurz darauf verstarb er unter mysteriösen Umständen im Alter von 53 Jahren.

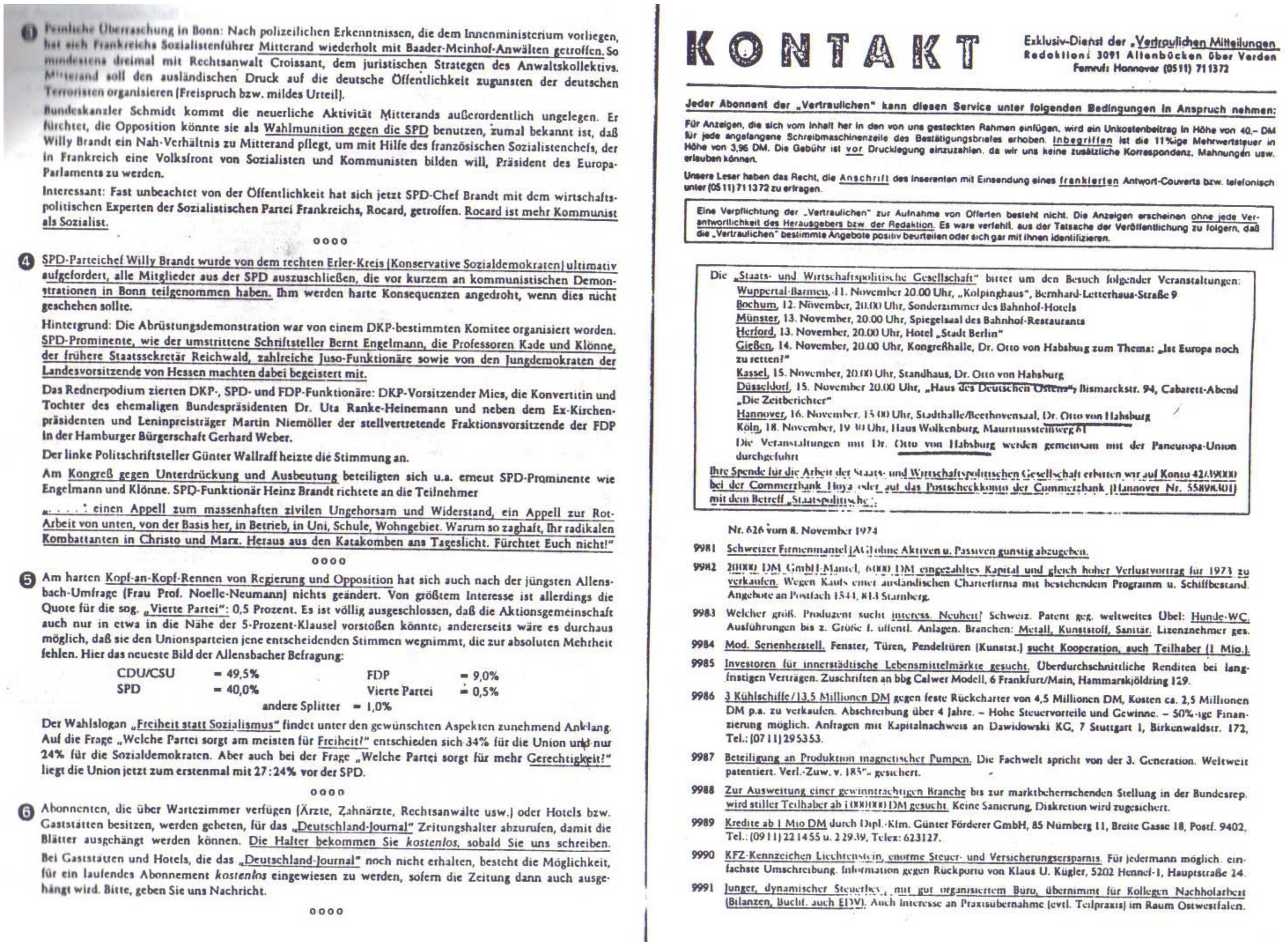

③ Peinliche Überraschung in Bonn: Nach polizeilichen Erkenntnissen, die dem Innenministerium vorliegen, hat sich Frankreichs Sozialistenführer Mitterand wiederholt mit Baader-Meinhof-Anwälten getroffen. So mindestens dreimal mit Rechtsanwalt Croissant, dem juristischen Strategen des Anwaltskollektivs. Mitterand soll den ausländischen Druck auf die deutsche Öffentlichkeit zugunsten der deutschen Terroristen organisieren (Freispruch bzw. mildes Urteil).

Bundeskanzler Schmidt kommt die neuerliche Aktivität Mitterands außerordentlich ungelegen. Er fürchtet, die Opposition könnte sie als Wahlmunition gegen die SPD benutzen, zumal bekannt ist, daß Willy Brandt ein Nah-Verhältnis zu Mitterand pflegt, um mit Hilfe des französischen Sozialistenchefs, der in Frankreich eine Volksfront von Sozialisten und Kommunisten bilden will, Präsident des Europa-Parlaments zu werden.

Interessant: Fast unbeachtet von der Öffentlichkeit hat sich jetzt SPD-Chef Brandt mit dem wirtschaftspolitischen Experten der Sozialistischen Partei Frankreichs, Rocard, getroffen. Rocard ist mehr Kommunist als Sozialist.

oooo

④ SPD-Parteichef Willy Brandt wurde von dem rechten Erler-Kreis (Konservative Sozialdemokraten) ultimativ aufgefordert, alle Mitglieder aus der SPD auszuschließen, die vor kurzem an kommunistischen Demonstrationen in Bonn teilgenommen haben. Ihm werden harte Konsequenzen angedroht, wenn dies nicht geschehen sollte.

Hintergrund: Die Abrüstungsdemonstration war von einem DKP-bestimmten Komitee organisiert worden. SPD-Prominente, wie der umstrittene Schriftsteller Bernt Engelmann, die Professoren Kade und Klönne, der frühere Staatssekretär Reichwald, zahlreiche Juso-Funktionäre sowie von den Jungdemokraten der Landesvorsitzende von Hessen machten dabei begeistert mit.

Das Rednerpodium zierten DKP-, SPD- und FDP-Funktionäre: DKP-Vorsitzender Mies, die Konvertitin und Tochter des ehemaligen Bundespräsidenten Dr. Uta Ranke-Heinemann und neben dem Ex-Kirchenpräsidenten und Leninpreisträger Martin Niemöller der stellvertretende Fraktionsvorsitzende der FDP in der Hamburger Bürgerschaft Gerhard Weber.

Der linke Politschriftsteller Günter Wallraff heizte die Stimmung an.

Am Kongreß gegen Unterdrückung und Ausbeutung beteiligten sich u.a. erneut SPD-Prominente wie Engelmann und Klönne. SPD-Funktionär Heinz Brandt richtete an die Teilnehmer

„. . . . : einen Appell zum massenhaften zivilen Ungehorsam und Widerstand, ein Appell zur Rot-Arbeit von unten, von der Basis her, in Betrieb, in Uni, Schule, Wohngebiet. Warum so zaghaft, Ihr radikalen Kombattanten in Christo und Marx. Heraus aus den Katakomben ans Tageslicht. Fürchtet Euch nicht!"

oooo

⑤ Am harten Kopf-an-Kopf-Rennen von Regierung und Opposition hat sich auch nach der jüngsten Allensbach-Umfrage (Frau Prof. Noelle-Neumann) nichts geändert. Von größtem Interesse ist allerdings die Quote für die sog. „Vierte Partei": 0,5 Prozent. Es ist völlig ausgeschlossen, daß die Aktionsgemeinschaft auch nur in etwa in die Nähe der 5-Prozent-Klausel vorstoßen könnte; andererseits wäre es durchaus möglich, daß sie den Unionsparteien jene entscheidenden Stimmen wegnimmt, die zur absoluten Mehrheit fehlen. Hier das neueste Bild der Allensbacher Befragung:

CDU/CSU = 49,5%
SPD = 40,0%
FDP = 9,0%
Vierte Partei = 0,5%
andere Splitter = 1,0%

Der Wahlslogan „Freiheit statt Sozialismus" findet unter den gewünschten Aspekten zunehmend Anklang. Auf die Frage „Welche Partei sorgt am meisten für Freiheit?" entschieden sich 34% für die Union und nur 24% für die Sozialdemokraten. Aber auch bei der Frage „Welche Partei sorgt für mehr Gerechtigkeit?" liegt die Union jetzt zum erstenmal mit 27:24% vor der SPD.

oooo

⑥ Abonnenten, die über Wartezimmer verfügen (Ärzte, Zahnärzte, Rechtsanwälte usw.) oder Hotels bzw. Gaststätten besitzen, werden gebeten, für das „Deutschland-Journal" Zeitungshalter abzurufen, damit die Blätter ausgehängt werden können. Die Halter bekommen Sie *kostenlos*, sobald Sie uns schreiben.

Bei Gaststätten und Hotels, die das „Deutschland-Journal" noch nicht erhalten, besteht die Möglichkeit, für ein laufendes Abonnement *kostenlos* eingewiesen zu werden, sofern die Zeitung dann auch ausgehängt wird. Bitte, geben Sie uns Nachricht.

oooo

KONTAKT

Exklusiv-Dienst der „Vertraulichen Mitteilungen
Redaktion: 3091 Allenbücken über Verden
Fernruf: Hannover (0511) 711372

Jeder Abonnent der „Vertraulichen" kann diesen Service unter folgenden Bedingungen in Anspruch nehmen:

Für Anzeigen, die sich vom Inhalt her in den von uns gesteckten Rahmen einfügen, wird ein Unkostenbeitrag in Höhe von 40,– DM für jede angefangene Schreibmaschinenzeile des Bestätigungsbriefes erhoben. Inbegriffen ist die 11%ige Mehrwertsteuer in Höhe von 3,96 DM. Die Gebühr ist vor Drucklegung einzuzahlen, da wir uns keine zusätzliche Korrespondenz, Mahnungen usw. erlauben können.

Unsere Leser haben das Recht, die Anschrift des Inserenten mit Einsendung eines frankierten Antwort-Couverts bzw. telefonisch unter (0511) 711372 zu erfragen.

Eine Verpflichtung der „Vertraulichen" zur Aufnahme von Offerten besteht nicht. Die Anzeigen erscheinen ohne jede Verantwortlichkeit des Herausgebers bzw. der Redaktion. Es wäre verfehlt, aus der Tatsache der Veröffentlichung zu folgern, daß die „Vertraulichen" bestimmte Angebote positiv beurteilen oder sich gar mit ihnen identifizieren.

Die „Staats- und Wirtschaftspolitische Gesellschaft" bittet um den Besuch folgender Veranstaltungen:

Wuppertal-Barmen, 11. November 20.00 Uhr, „Kolpinghaus", Bernhard-Letterhaus-Straße 9
Bochum, 12. November, 20.00 Uhr, Sonderzimmer des Bahnhof-Hotels
Münster, 13. November, 20.00 Uhr, Spiegelsaal des Bahnhof-Restaurants
Herford, 13. November, 20.00 Uhr, Hotel „Stadt Berlin"
Gießen, 14. November, 20.00 Uhr, Kongreßhalle, Dr. Otto von Habsburg zum Thema: „Ist Europa noch zu retten?"
Kassel, 15. November, 20.00 Uhr, Standhaus, Dr. Otto von Habsburg
Düsseldorf, 15. November 20.00 Uhr, „Haus des Deutschen Ostens", Bismarckstr. 94, Cabarett-Abend „Die Zeitberichter"
Hannover, 16. November, 15.00 Uhr, Stadthalle/Beethovensaal, Dr. Otto von Habsburg
Köln, 18. November, 19.30 Uhr, Haus Wolkenburg, Mauritiussteinweg 61

Die Veranstaltungen mit Dr. Otto von Habsburg werden gemeinsam mit der Paneuropa-Union durchgeführt

Ihre Spende für die Arbeit der Staats- und Wirtschaftspolitischen Gesellschaft erbitten wir auf Konto 42/39000 bei der Commerzbank Hoya oder auf das Postscheckkonto der Commerzbank (Hannover Nr. 55898301) mit dem Betreff „Staatspolitische".

Nr. 626 vom 8. November 1974

9981 Schweizer Firmenmantel (AG) ohne Aktiven u. Passiven günstig abzugeben.

9982 20000 DM GmbH-Mantel, 6000 DM eingezahltes Kapital und gleich hoher Verlustvortrag für 1973 zu verkaufen. Wegen Kaufs einer ausländischen Charterfirma mit bestehendem Programm u. Schiffbestand. Angebote an Postfach 1541, 813 Starnberg.

9983 Welcher größ. Produzent sucht interess. Neuheit? Schweiz. Patent geg. weltweites Übel: Hunde-WC. Ausführungen bis z. Größe f. öffentl. Anlagen. Branchen: Metall, Kunststoff, Sanitär. Lizenznehmer ges.

9984 Mod. Serienherstell. Fenster, Türen, Pendeltüren (Kunstst.) sucht Kooperation, auch Teilhaber (1 Mio.).

9985 Investoren für innerstädtische Lebensmittelmärkte gesucht. Überdurchschnittliche Renditen bei langfristigen Verträgen. Zuschriften an bbg Calwer Modell, 6 Frankfurt/Main, Hammarskjöldring 129.

9986 3 Kühlschiffe/13,5 Millionen DM gegen feste Rückcharter von 4,5 Millionen DM, Kosten ca. 2,5 Millionen DM p.a. zu verkaufen. Abschreibung über 4 Jahre. – Hohe Steuervorteile und Gewinne. – 50%-ige Finanzierung möglich. Anfragen mit Kapitalnachweis an Dawidowski KG, 7 Stuttgart 1, Birkenwaldstr. 172, Tel.: (0711) 295353.

9987 Beteiligung an Produktion magnetischer Pumpen. Die Fachwelt spricht von der 3. Generation. Weltweit patentiert. Verl.-Zuw. v. 185% gesichert.

9988 Zur Ausweitung einer gewinnträchtigen Branche bis zur marktbeherrschenden Stellung in der Bundesrep. wird stiller Teilhaber ab 1 000000 DM gesucht. Keine Sanierung, Diskretion wird zugesichert.

9989 Kredite ab 1 Mio DM durch Dipl.-Kfm. Günter Förderer GmbH, 85 Nürnberg 11, Breite Gasse 18, Postf. 9402, Tel.: (0911) 221455 u. 22939, Telex: 623127.

9990 KFZ-Kennzeichen Liechtenstein, enorme Steuer- und Versicherungsersparnis. Für jedermann möglich, einfachste Umschreibung. Information gegen Rückporto von Klaus U. Kügler, 5202 Hennef-1, Hauptstraße 24.

9991 Junger, dynamischer Steuerbev., mit gut organisiertem Büro, übernimmt für Kollegen Nachholarbeit (Bilanzen, Buchf. auch EDV). Auch Interesse an Praxisübernahme (evtl. Teilpraxis) im Raum Ostwestfalen.

Below: list of participants and programme, CEDI XXVth International Congress in Madrid, December 1976.

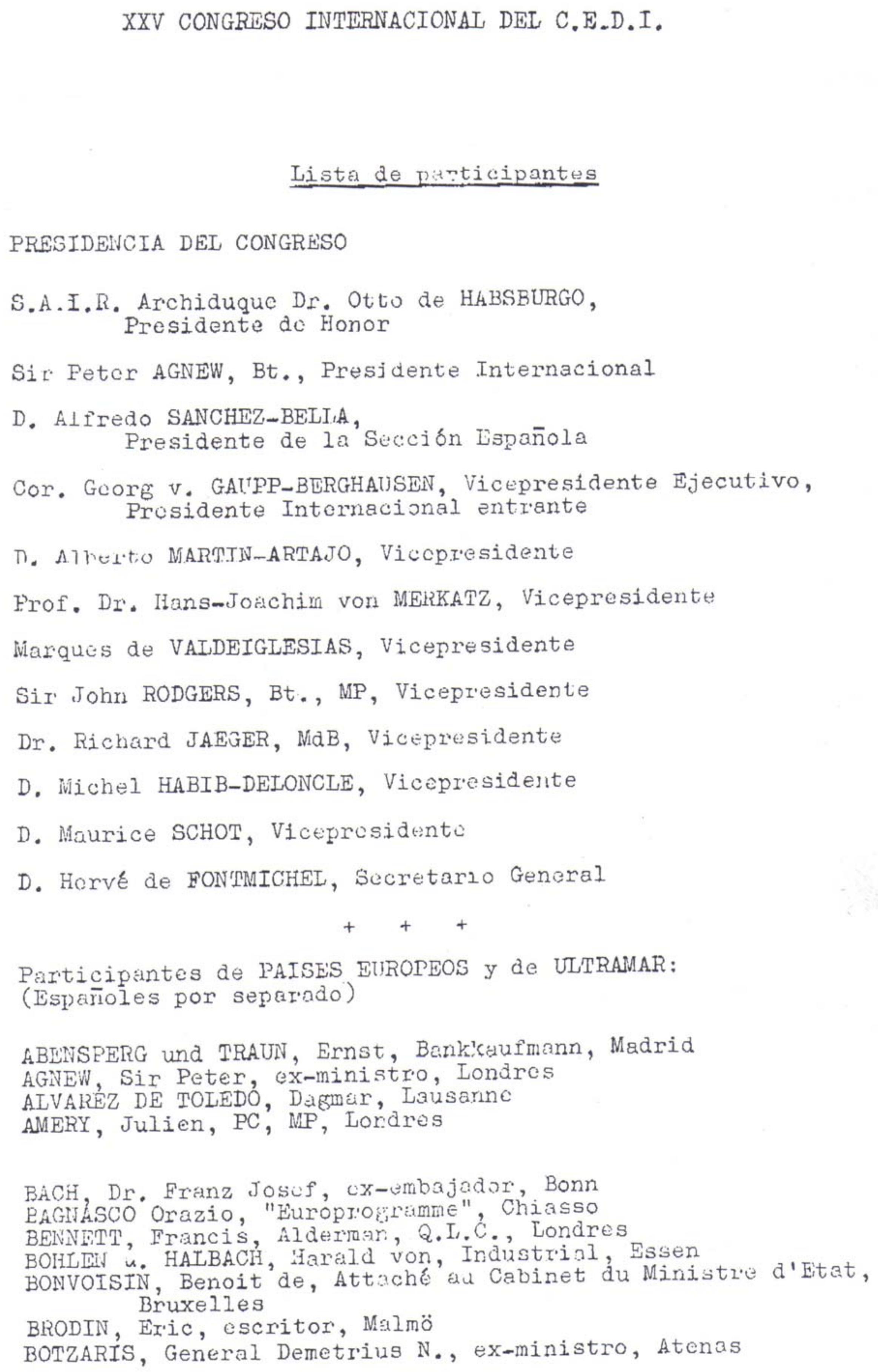

XXV CONGRESO INTERNACIONAL DEL C.E.D.I.

Lista de participantes

PRESIDENCIA DEL CONGRESO

S.A.I.R. Archiduque Dr. Otto de HABSBURGO,
Presidente de Honor

Sir Peter AGNEW, Bt., Presidente Internacional

D. Alfredo SANCHEZ-BELLA,
Presidente de la Sección Española

Cor. Georg v. GAUPP-BERGHAUSEN, Vicepresidente Ejecutivo,
Presidente Internacional entrante

D. Alberto MARTIN-ARTAJO, Vicepresidente

Prof. Dr. Hans-Joachim von MERKATZ, Vicepresidente

Marques de VALDEIGLESIAS, Vicepresidente

Sir John RODGERS, Bt., MP, Vicepresidente

Dr. Richard JAEGER, MdB, Vicepresidente

D. Michel HABIB-DELONCLE, Vicepresidente

D. Maurice SCHOT, Vicepresidente

D. Hervé de FONTMICHEL, Secretario General

+ + +

Participantes de PAISES EUROPEOS y de ULTRAMAR:
(Españoles por separado)

ABENSPERG und TRAUN, Ernst, Bankkaufmann, Madrid
AGNEW, Sir Peter, ex-ministro, Londres
ALVAREZ DE TOLEDO, Dagmar, Lausanne
AMERY, Julien, PC, MP, Londres

BACH, Dr. Franz Josef, ex-embajador, Bonn
BAGNASCO Orazio, "Europrogramme", Chiasso
BENNETT, Francis, Alderman, Q.L.C., Londres
BOHLEN u. HALBACH, Harald von, Industrial, Essen
BONVOISIN, Benoit de, Attaché au Cabinet du Ministre d'Etat,
Bruxelles
BRODIN, Eric, escritor, Malmö
BOTZARIS, General Demetrius N., ex-ministro, Atenas

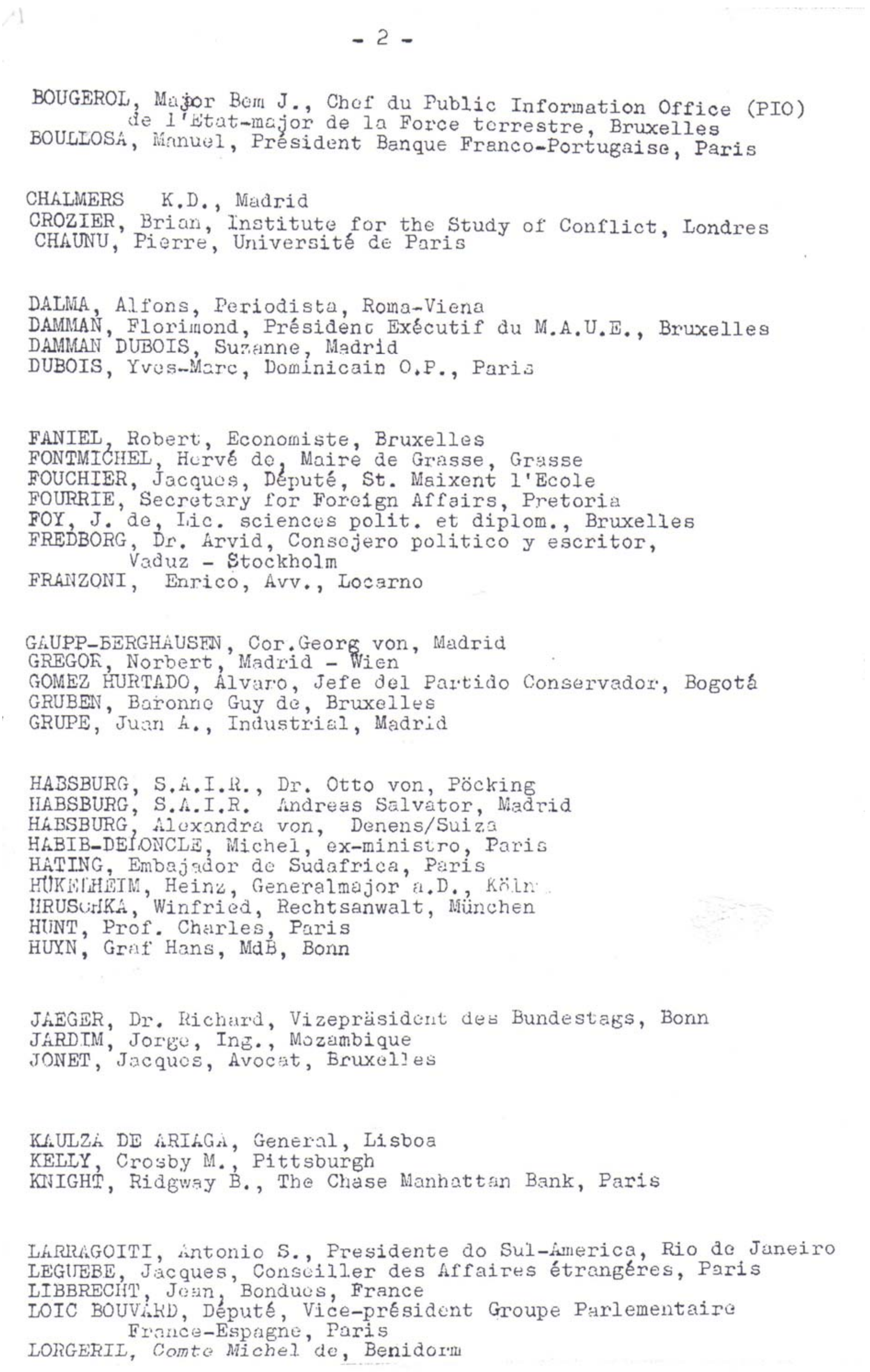

BOUGEROL, Major Bem J., Chef du Public Information Office (PIO)
de l'Etat-major de la Force terrestre, Bruxelles
BOULLOSA, Manuel, Président Banque Franco-Portugaise, Paris

CHALMERS K.D., Madrid
CROZIER, Brian, Institute for the Study of Conflict, Londres
CHAUNU, Pierre, Université de Paris

DALMA, Alfons, Periodista, Roma-Viena
DAMMAN, Florimond, Président Exécutif du M.A.U.E., Bruxelles
DAMMAN DUBOIS, Suzanne, Madrid
DUBOIS, Yves-Marc, Dominicain O.P., Paris

FANIEL, Robert, Economiste, Bruxelles
FONTMICHEL, Hervé de, Maire de Grasse, Grasse
FOUCHIER, Jacques, Député, St. Maixent l'Ecole
FOURRIE, Secretary for Foreign Affairs, Pretoria
FOY, J. de, Lic. sciences polit. et diplom., Bruxelles
FREDBORG, Dr. Arvid, Consejero politico y escritor,
Vaduz - Stockholm
FRANZONI, Enrico, Avv., Locarno

GAUPP-BERGHAUSEN, Cor.Georg von, Madrid
GREGOR, Norbert, Madrid - Wien
GOMEZ HURTADO, Alvaro, Jefe del Partido Conservador, Bogotá
GRUBEN, Baronne Guy de, Bruxelles
GRUPE, Juan A., Industrial, Madrid

HABSBURG, S.A.I.R., Dr. Otto von, Pöcking
HABSBURG, S.A.I.R. Andreas Salvator, Madrid
HABSBURG, Alexandra von, Denens/Suiza
HABIB-DELONCLE, Michel, ex-ministro, Paris
HATING, Embajador de Sudafrica, Paris
HÜKELHEIM, Heinz, Generalmajor a.D., Köln
HRUSCHKA, Winfried, Rechtsanwalt, München
HUNT, Prof. Charles, Paris
HUYN, Graf Hans, MdB, Bonn

JAEGER, Dr. Richard, Vizepräsident des Bundestags, Bonn
JARDIM, Jorge, Ing., Mozambique
JONET, Jacques, Avocat, Bruxelles

KAULZA DE ARIAGA, General, Lisboa
KELLY, Crosby M., Pittsburgh
KNIGHT, Ridgway B., The Chase Manhattan Bank, Paris

LARRAGOITI, Antonio S., Presidente do Sul-America, Rio de Janeiro
LEGUEBE, Jacques, Conseiller des Affaires étrangéres, Paris
LIBBRECHT, Jean, Bondues, France
LOIC BOUVARD, Député, Vice-président Groupe Parlementaire
France-Espagne, Paris
LORGERIL, *Comte Michel* de, Benidorm

MAYER, Charles T., Presidente del Foreign Policy Discussion Group, Washington
McLAREN, Martin, London
MERCIER, Bernard, Prof. de historia, Bélgica
MERKATZ, Prof.Dr.Hans-Joachim von, ex-ministro, Bonn
MOSS, Robert, editor del Foreign Report del "Economist",Londres.
MUKAROVSKY, Géza von, Periodista, Casablanca
MUNGO, Aldo M., Presidente de Jeunesses Europeennes,Bruselas
MacMURRAUGH, Kilburn, Prof. de Universidad, Madrid
MURUPA, Miguel Artur, Periodista, Wuppertal

NATALELLI, Maitre Jean Noel, Abogado, Marseille
NORONHA, Marcus de, Lisboa

OLIVEIRA E CASTRO, Luis Filipe de, escritor, Lisboa

PARDO, Javier, Madrid
PESENTI, Carlo, industrial, Bergamo
PICARD, René-Louis, Presidente de la Societé Internationale de Wiltonpark, Paris.
PIEKENBROCK, Eberhard, industrial, Madrid
PIEKENBROCK, Luisa Antonia, Licenciada, Madrid
PINAY, Antoine, Presidente, Paris
PIRKL, Dr.Fritz, Ministro de Estado, Munich
PODSTATZKY-LICHTENSTEIN, Conde Juan, Denia
PONS, Vittorio, Secretario General de la Unión Paneuropea, Lausanne
PREUMONT, Jean Paul R.,Director de Comité del Consejo Belga del Movimiento Europeo, Bruselas
PROST, Jean-Claude, escritor, Paris

QUENUM-POSSY-BERRY, Maximilien, Prof., Ex-Senador, Paris.

RIENER, Rudolf, redactor, Leutkirch/Wurtemberg
RIX, Pierre Henry, abogado, Marseille
ROCCI LUPI, Ottavio, Director de Neotécnica S-A.E.,Madrid
RODGERS, Sir John, Bt., M.P., ex-ministro
ROYER, Jean, Alcalde, Tours

SABBE, Jan, Presidente Administrador, Bélgica
SCHMIDT, Adolph W., Banquero, ex-diplomático, Ligonier (USA).
SCHOT, Maurice, ex-senador, diputado, Bruselas
SCHRENCK-NOTZING, Caspar von, editor, Ammerland
STARHEMBERG, Príndipe Enrique, Madrid
ST.OSWALD, Lord, London.

TASCA, Henry J., Embajador, Roma
TASWELL, Harold L T, Fish Hock (Africa del Sur)
TENNANT, Sir Peter, Banquero, London.
THURN, Dr.Max, economista, Viena
THURN, Mathias, Viena
TOTTOSY, Dr.Ernest, Presidente Europeo de la Organización Mundial de Juristas Ungaros Libres, Bruselas.

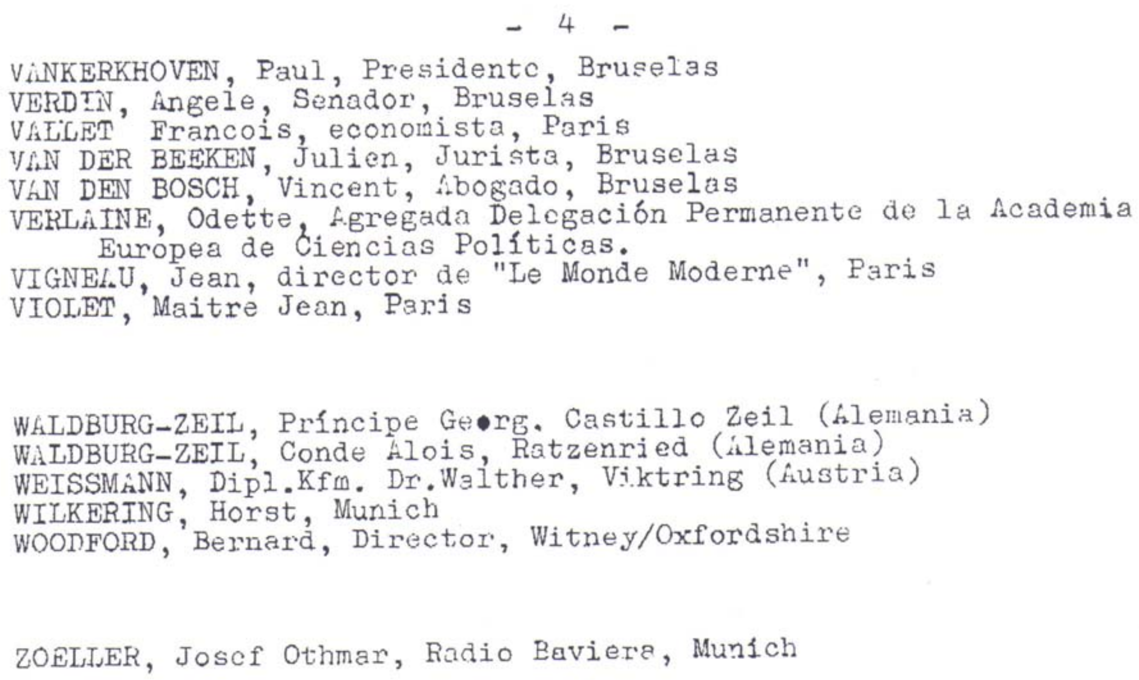

- 4 -

VANKERKHOVEN, Paul, Presidente, Bruselas
VERDIN, Angele, Senador, Bruselas
VALLET Francois, economista, Paris
VAN DER BEEKEN, Julien, Jurista, Bruselas
VAN DEN BOSCH, Vincent, Abogado, Bruselas
VERLAINE, Odette, Agregada Delegación Permanente de la Academia Europea de Ciencias Políticas.
VIGNEAU, Jean, director de "Le Monde Moderne", Paris
VIOLET, Maitre Jean, Paris

WALDBURG-ZEIL, Príncipe Georg. Castillo Zeil (Alemania)
WALDBURG-ZEIL, Conde Alois, Ratzenried (Alemania)
WEISSMANN, Dipl.Kfm. Dr.Walther, Viktring (Austria)
WILKERING, Horst, Munich
WOODFORD, Bernard, Director, Witney/Oxfordshire

ZOELLER, Josef Othmar, Radio Baviera, Munich

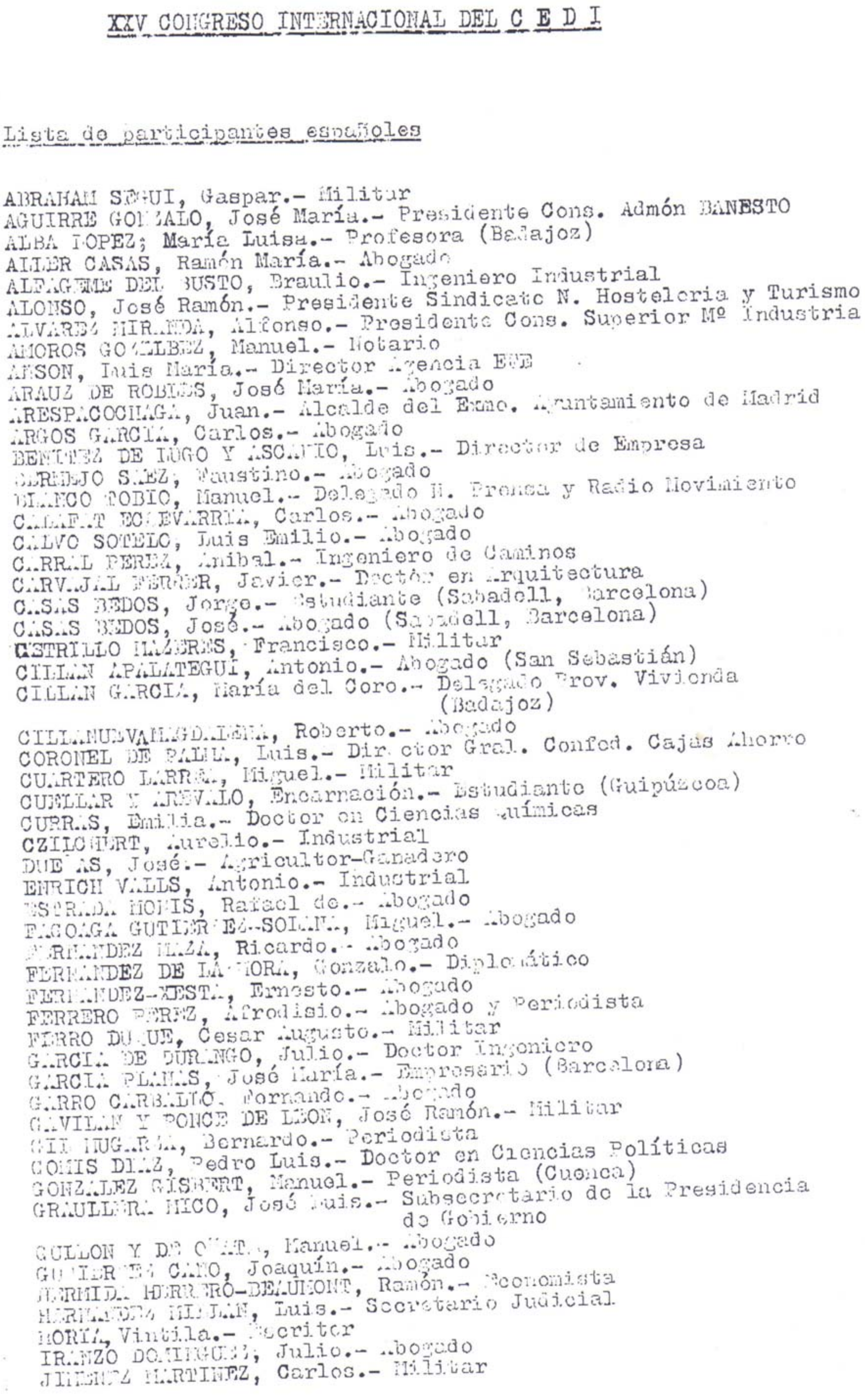

XXV CONGRESO INTERNACIONAL DEL C E D I

Lista de participantes españoles

ABRAHAM SEGUI, Gaspar.- Militar
AGUIRRE GONZALO, José María.- Presidente Cons. Admón BANESTO
ALBA LOPEZ; María Luisa.- Profesora (Badajoz)
ALLER CASAS, Ramón María.- Abogado
ALFAGEME DEL BUSTO, Braulio.- Ingeniero Industrial
ALONSO, José Ramón.- Presidente Sindicato N. Hosteleria y Turismo
ALVAREZ MIRANDA, Alfonso.- Presidente Cons. Superior Mº Industria
AMOROS GONZALBEZ, Manuel.- Notario
ANSON, Luis María.- Director Agencia EFE
ARAUZ DE ROBLES, José María.- Abogado
ARESPACOCHAGA, Juan.- Alcalde del Exmo. Ayuntamiento de Madrid
ARGOS GARCIA, Carlos.- Abogado
BENITEZ DE LUGO Y ASCANIO, Luis.- Director de Empresa
BERMEJO SAEZ, Faustino.- Abogado
BLANCO TOBIO, Manuel.- Delegado N. Prensa y Radio Movimiento
CALAFAT ECHEVARRIA, Carlos.- Abogado
CALVO SOTELO, Luis Emilio.- Abogado
CARRAL PEREZ, Anibal.- Ingeniero de Caminos
CARVAJAL FERRER, Javier.- Doctor en Arquitectura
CASAS BEDOS, Jorge.- Estudiante (Sabadell, Barcelona)
CASAS BEDOS, José.- Abogado (Sabadell, Barcelona)
CASTRILLO MAZERES, Francisco.- Militar
CILLAN APALATEGUI, Antonio.- Abogado (San Sebastián)
CILLAN GARCIA, María del Coro.- Delegado Prov. Vivienda
(Badajoz)

CILLANUEVAMAGDALENA, Roberto.- Abogado
CORONEL DE PALMA, Luis.- Director Gral. Confed. Cajas Ahorro
CUARTERO LARREA, Miguel.- Militar
CUELLAR Y AREVALO, Encarnación.- Estudiante (Guipúzcoa)
CURRAS, Emilia.- Doctor en Ciencias Químicas
CZILCHERT, Aurelio.- Industrial
DUEÑAS, José.- Agricultor-Ganadero
ENRICH VALLS, Antonio.- Industrial
ESTRADA MORIS, Rafael de.- Abogado
FAGOAGA GUTIERREZ-SOLANA, Miguel.- Abogado
FERNANDEZ MAZA, Ricardo.- Abogado
FERNANDEZ DE LA MORA, Gonzalo.- Diplomático
FERNANDEZ-XESTA, Ernesto.- Abogado
FERRERO PEREZ, Afrodisio.- Abogado y Periodista
FERRO DUQUE, Cesar Augusto.- Militar
GARCIA DE DURANGO, Julio.- Doctor Ingeniero
GARCIA PLANAS, José María.- Empresario (Barcelona)
GARRO CARBALLO, Fernando.- Abogado
GAVILAN Y PONCE DE LEON, José Ramón.- Militar
GIL MUGARZA, Bernardo.- Periodista
GOMIS DIAZ, Pedro Luis.- Doctor en Ciencias Políticas
GONZALEZ GISBERT, Manuel.- Periodista (Cuenca)
GRAULLERA MICO, José Luis.- Subsecretario de la Presidencia
de Gobierno

GULLON Y DE OÑATE, Manuel.- Abogado
GUTIERREZ CANO, Joaquín.- Abogado
HERMIDA HERRERO-BEAUMONT, Ramón.- Economista
HERNANDEZ MILLAN, Luis.- Secretario Judicial
HORIA, Vintila.- Escritor
IRANZO DOMINGUEZ, Julio.- Abogado
JIMENEZ MARTINEZ, Carlos.- Militar

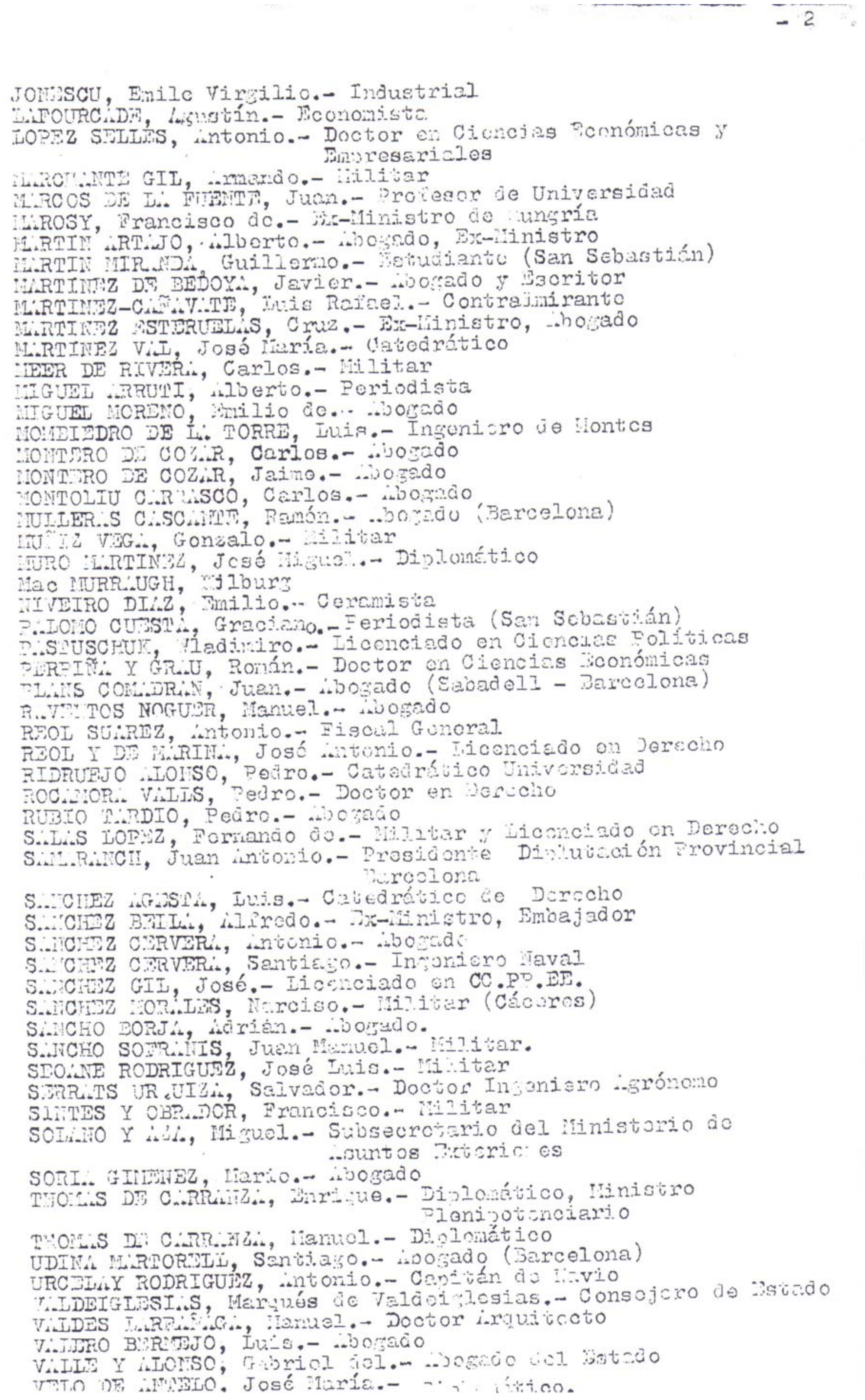

- 2 -

JONESCU, Emile Virgilio.- Industrial
LAFOURCADE, Agustín.- Economista
LOPEZ SELLES, Antonio.- Doctor en Ciencias Económicas y Empresariales
MARCOTANTE GIL, Armando.- Militar
MARCOS DE LA FUENTE, Juan.- Profesor de Universidad
MAROSY, Francisco de.- Ex-Ministro de Hungría
MARTIN ARTAJO, Alberto.- Abogado, Ex-Ministro
MARTIN MIRANDA, Guillermo.- Estudiante (San Sebastián)
MARTINEZ DE BEDOYA, Javier.- Abogado y Escritor
MARTINEZ-CAÑAVATE, Luis Rafael.- Contraalmirante
MARTINEZ ESTERUELAS, Cruz.- Ex-Ministro, Abogado
MARTINEZ VAL, José María.- Catedrático
MEER DE RIVERA, Carlos.- Militar
MIGUEL ARRUTI, Alberto.- Periodista
MIGUEL MORENO, Emilio de.- Abogado
MOMBIEDRO DE LA TORRE, Luis.- Ingeniero de Montes
MONTERO DE COZAR, Carlos.- Abogado
MONTERO DE COZAR, Jaime.- Abogado
MONTOLIU CARRASCO, Carlos.- Abogado
MULLERAS CASCANTE, Ramón.- Abogado (Barcelona)
MUÑOZ VEGA, Gonzalo.- Militar
MURO MARTINEZ, José Miguel.- Diplomático
Mac MURRAUGH, Hilburg
NIVEIRO DIAZ, Emilio.- Ceramista
PALOMO CUESTA, Graciano.- Periodista (San Sebastián)
PASTUSCHUK, Vladimiro.- Licenciado en Ciencias Políticas
PERPIÑA Y GRAU, Román.- Doctor en Ciencias Económicas
PLANS COMADRAN, Juan.- Abogado (Sabadell - Barcelona)
RAVENTOS NOGUER, Manuel.- Abogado
REOL SUAREZ, Antonio.- Fiscal General
REOL Y DE MARINA, José Antonio.- Licenciado en Derecho
RIDRUEJO ALONSO, Pedro.- Catedrático Universidad
ROCAMORA VALLS, Pedro.- Doctor en Derecho
RUBIO TARDIO, Pedro.- Abogado
SALAS LOPEZ, Fernando de.- Militar y Licenciado en Derecho
SAMARANCH, Juan Antonio.- Presidente Diputación Provincial Barcelona
SANCHEZ AGESTA, Luis.- Catedrático de Derecho
SANCHEZ BELLA, Alfredo.- Ex-Ministro, Embajador
SANCHEZ CERVERA, Antonio.- Abogado
SANCHEZ CERVERA, Santiago.- Ingeniero Naval
SANCHEZ GIL, José.- Licenciado en CC.PP.EE.
SANCHEZ MORALES, Narciso.- Militar (Cáceres)
SANCHO BORJA, Adrián.- Abogado.
SANCHO SOFRANIS, Juan Manuel.- Militar.
SEOANE RODRIGUEZ, José Luis.- Militar
SERRATS URQUIZA, Salvador.- Doctor Ingeniero Agrónomo
SINTES Y OBRADOR, Francisco.- Militar
SOLANO Y AZA, Miguel.- Subsecretario del Ministerio de Asuntos Exteriores
SORIA GIMENEZ, Mario.- Abogado
THOMAS DE CARRANZA, Enrique.- Diplomático, Ministro Plenipotenciario
THOMAS DE CARRANZA, Manuel.- Diplomático
UDINA MARTORELL, Santiago.- Abogado (Barcelona)
URCELAY RODRIGUEZ, Antonio.- Capitán de Navío
VALDEIGLESIAS, Marqués de Valdeiglesias.- Consejero de Estado
VALDES LARRAÑAGA, Manuel.- Doctor Arquitecto
VALERO BERMEJO, Luis.- Abogado
VALLE Y ALONSO, Gabriel del.- Abogado del Estado
VELO DE ANTELO, José María.- Diplomático.

VINUESA SANCHEZ, Abilio.- Arquitecto
WOLKOW, Jorge.- Escritor
XIMENEZ SANZ, Juan Antonio.- Estudiante

- - - - -

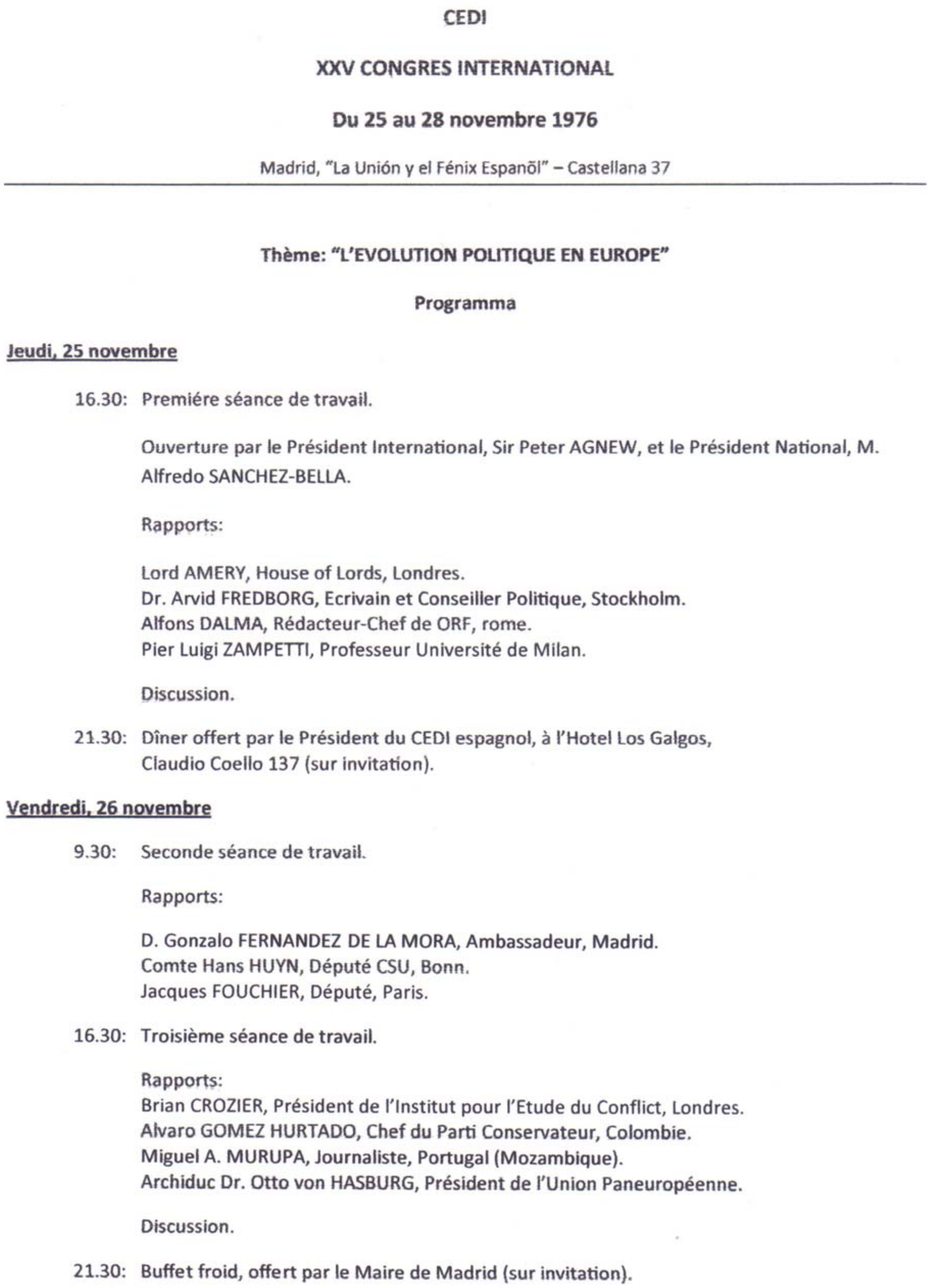

CEDI

XXV CONGRES INTERNATIONAL

Du 25 au 28 novembre 1976

Madrid, "La Unión y el Fénix Espanõl" – Castellana 37

Thème: "L'EVOLUTION POLITIQUE EN EUROPE"

Programma

Jeudi, 25 novembre

16.30: Premiére séance de travail.

Ouverture par le Président International, Sir Peter AGNEW, et le Président National, M. Alfredo SANCHEZ-BELLA.

Rapports:

Lord AMERY, House of Lords, Londres.
Dr. Arvid FREDBORG, Ecrivain et Conseiller Politique, Stockholm.
Alfons DALMA, Rédacteur-Chef de ORF, rome.
Pier Luigi ZAMPETTI, Professeur Université de Milan.

Discussion.

21.30: Dîner offert par le Président du CEDI espagnol, à l'Hotel Los Galgos, Claudio Coello 137 (sur invitation).

Vendredi, 26 novembre

9.30: Seconde séance de travail.

Rapports:

D. Gonzalo FERNANDEZ DE LA MORA, Ambassadeur, Madrid.
Comte Hans HUYN, Député CSU, Bonn.
Jacques FOUCHIER, Député, Paris.

16.30: Troisième séance de travail.

Rapports:
Brian CROZIER, Président de l'Institut pour l'Etude du Conflict, Londres.
Alvaro GOMEZ HURTADO, Chef du Parti Conservateur, Colombie.
Miguel A. MURUPA, Journaliste, Portugal (Mozambique).
Archiduc Dr. Otto von HASBURG, Président de l'Union Paneuropéenne.

Discussion.

21.30: Buffet froid, offert par le Maire de Madrid (sur invitation).

2

Samedi, 27 novembre

9.30: Quatrième séance de travail.

Rapports:

M. B. G. FOURIE, Secrétaire pour le Relations Extérieures, Afrique du Sud.
Prof. Alberto PIEDRA, Université Catholique d'Amérique.
M. Paul VANKERHOVEN, Président, CEPIC, Bruxelles.
M. Vittorio PONS, Secrétaire Général de l'Inon Paneuropéenne, Lausanne.

Discussion

17.30: Séance de clôture, pubblique.

Avec les interventions de:

Prof. Pierre CHAUNU, Paris, avec "Un problème capitale de l'Occident".
Mr. Robert MOSS, Editeur du Foreign Report de l'Economist", Londres, avec "Le future de la Démocracie".

La sèance sera fermée par:

M. Alfredo SANCHEZ-BELLA, Président de la Section espagnole.
Sir Peter AGNEW, Président International, sortant.
Col. Georg von GAUPP-BERGHAUSEN, Président International, élu.

21.30: Cocktail offert par le Président International du CEDI, dans la hall de "La Unión y el Fénix Espanõl".

Dimanche, 28 novembre

10.00: Sortie d el'Hotel Durobuilding pour Sigüenza.

12.00: Messe à la Cathédrale de Sigüenza. Visite de la ville.

14.00: Déjuner offert par le Président International, au Parador Nacional, Château de Sigüenza.

16.30: Retour à Madrid.

Heure d'arrivée à Madrid:19.00 approx.

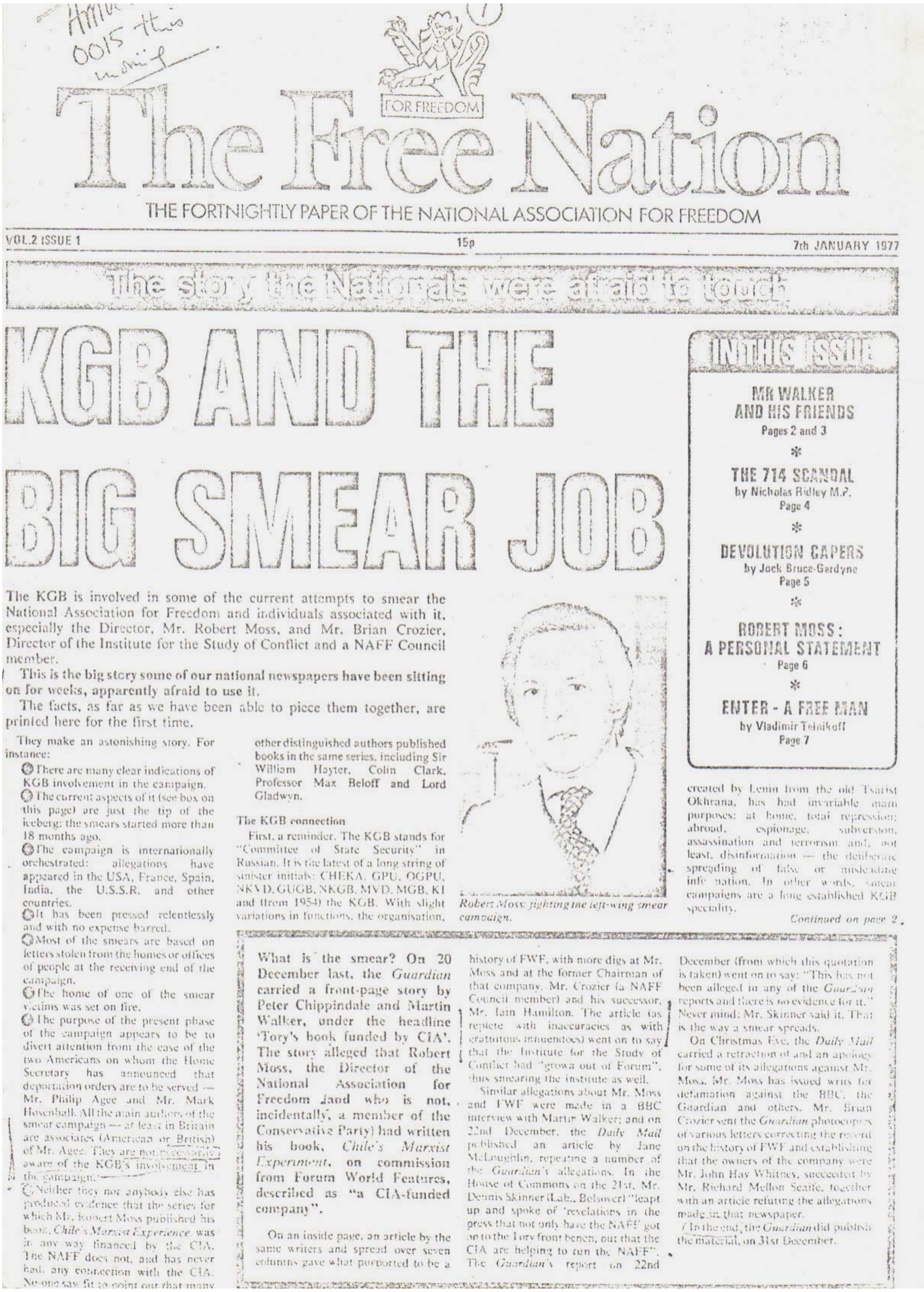

0015 this morning

7

FOR FREEDOM

The Free Nation

THE FORTNIGHTLY PAPER OF THE NATIONAL ASSOCIATION FOR FREEDOM

VOL.2 ISSUE 1 15p 7th JANUARY 1977

The story the Nationals were afraid to touch

KGB AND THE BIG SMEAR JOB

The KGB is involved in some of the current attempts to smear the National Association for Freedom and individuals associated with it, especially the Director, Mr. Robert Moss, and Mr. Brian Crozier, Director of the Institute for the Study of Conflict and a NAFF Council member.

This is the big story some of our national newspapers have been sitting on for weeks, apparently afraid to use it.

The facts, as far as we have been able to piece them together, are printed here for the first time.

They make an astonishing story. For instance:

- There are many clear indications of KGB involvement in the campaign.
- The current aspects of it (see box on this page) are just the tip of the iceberg: the smears started more than 18 months ago.
- The campaign is internationally orchestrated: allegations have appeared in the USA, France, Spain, India, the U.S.S.R. and other countries.
- It has been pressed relentlessly and with no expense barred.
- Most of the smears are based on letters stolen from the homes or offices of people at the receiving end of the campaign.
- The home of one of the smear victims was set on fire.
- The purpose of the present phase of the campaign appears to be to divert attention from the case of the two Americans on whom the Home Secretary has announced that deportation orders are to be served — Mr. Philip Agee and Mr. Mark Hosenball. All the main authors of the smear campaign — at least in Britain are associates (American or British) of Mr. Agee. They are not necessarily aware of the KGB's involvement in the campaign.
- Neither they nor anybody else has produced evidence that the series for which Mr. Robert Moss published his book, *Chile's Marxist Experience*, was in any way financed by the CIA. The NAFF does not, and has never had, any connection with the CIA. No-one saw fit to point out that many other distinguished authors published books in the same series, including Sir William Hayter, Colin Clark, Professor Max Beloff and Lord Gladwyn.

The KGB connection

First, a reminder. The KGB stands for "Committee of State Security" in Russian. It is the latest of a long string of sinister initials: CHEKA, GPU, OGPU, NKVD, GUGB, NKGB, MVD, MGB, KI and (from 1954) the KGB. With slight variations in functions, the organisation, created by Lenin from the old Tsarist Okhrana, has had invariable main purposes: at home, total repression; abroad, espionage, subversion, assassination and terrorism and, not least, disinformation — the deliberate spreading of false or misleading information. In other words, smear campaigns are a long established KGB speciality.

Continued on page 2

Robert Moss: fighting the left-wing smear campaign.

IN THIS ISSUE

MR WALKER AND HIS FRIENDS
Pages 2 and 3

THE 714 SCANDAL
by Nicholas Ridley M.P.
Page 4

DEVOLUTION CAPERS
by Jock Bruce-Gardyne
Page 5

ROBERT MOSS: A PERSONAL STATEMENT
Page 6

ENTER - A FREE MAN
by Vladimir Telnikoff
Page 7

What is the smear? On 20 December last, the *Guardian* carried a front-page story by Peter Chippindale and Martin Walker, under the headline 'Tory's book funded by CIA'. The story alleged that Robert Moss, the Director of the National Association for Freedom (and who is not, incidentally, a member of the Conservative Party) had written his book, *Chile's Marxist Experiment*, on commission from Forum World Features, described as "a CIA-funded company".

On an inside page, an article by the same writers and spread over seven columns gave what purported to be a history of FWF, with more digs at Mr. Moss and at the former Chairman of that company, Mr. Crozier (a NAFF Council member) and his successor, Mr. Iain Hamilton. The article (as replete with inaccuracies as with gratuitous innuendoes) went on to say that the Institute for the Study of Conflict had "grown out of Forum", thus smearing the institute as well.

Similar allegations about Mr. Moss and FWF were made in a BBC interview with Martin Walker; and on 22nd December, the *Daily Mail* published an article by Jane McLoughlin, repeating a number of the *Guardian's* allegations. In the House of Commons on the 21st, Mr. Dennis Skinner (Lab., Bolsover) "leapt up and spoke of 'revelations in the press that not only have the NAFF got on to the Tory front bench, but that the CIA are helping to run the NAFF". The *Guardian's* report on 22nd December (from which this quotation is taken) went on to say: "This has not been alleged in any of the *Guardian* reports and there is no evidence for it." Never mind: Mr. Skinner said it. That is the way a smear spreads.

On Christmas Eve, the *Daily Mail* carried a retraction of and an apology for some of its allegations against Mr. Moss. Mr. Moss has issued writs for defamation against the BBC, the Guardian and others. Mr. Brian Crozier sent the *Guardian* photocopies of various letters correcting the record on the history of FWF and establishing that the owners of the company were Mr. John Hay Whitney, succeeded by Mr. Richard Mellon Scaife, together with an article refuting the allegations made in that newspaper.

In the end, the *Guardian* did publish the material, on 31st December.

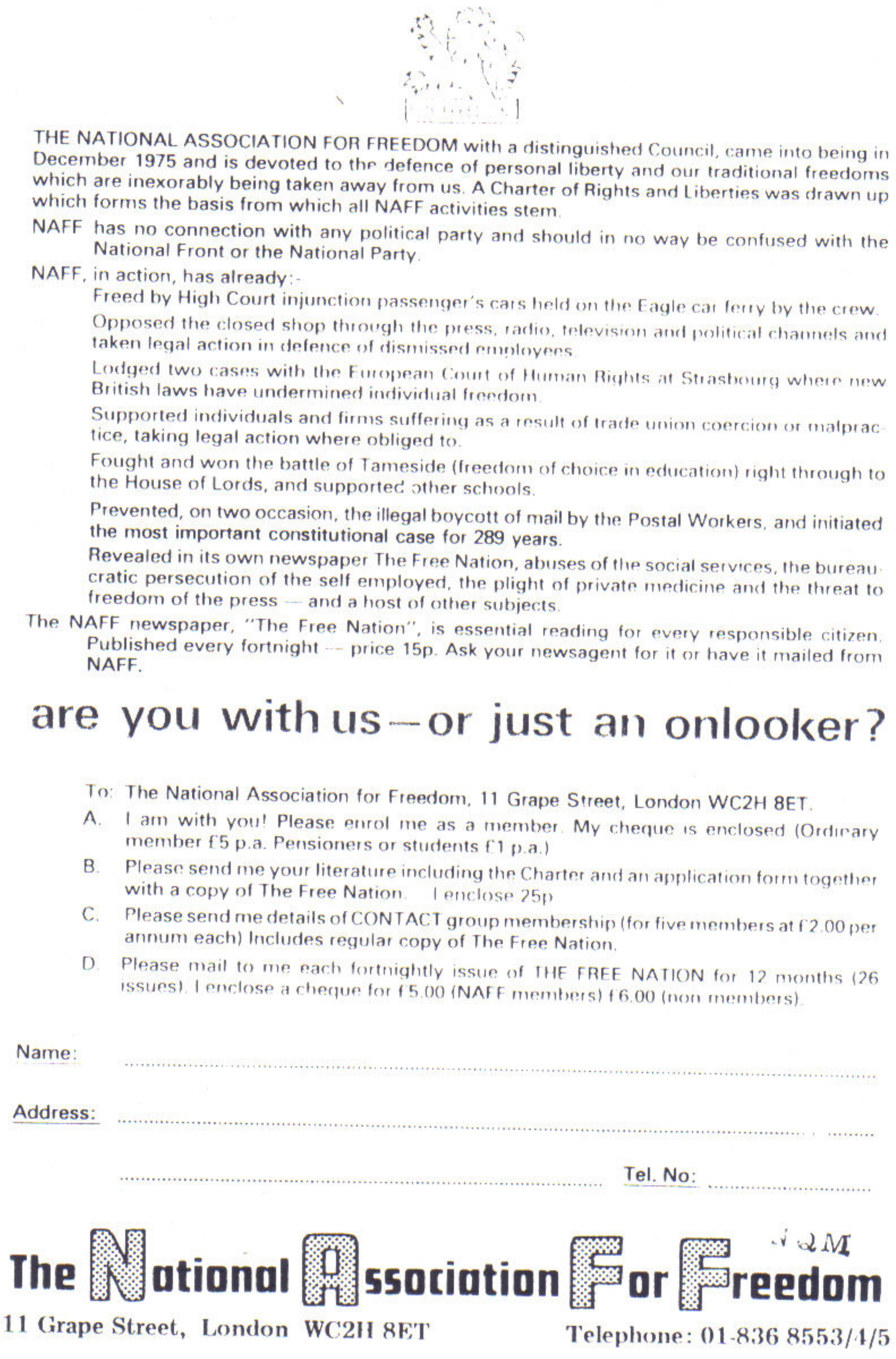

THE NATIONAL ASSOCIATION FOR FREEDOM with a distinguished Council, came into being in December 1975 and is devoted to the defence of personal liberty and our traditional freedoms which are inexorably being taken away from us. A Charter of Rights and Liberties was drawn up which forms the basis from which all NAFF activities stem.

NAFF has no connection with any political party and should in no way be confused with the National Front or the National Party.

NAFF, in action, has already:-

- Freed by High Court injunction passenger's cars held on the Eagle car ferry by the crew.
- Opposed the closed shop through the press, radio, television and political channels and taken legal action in defence of dismissed employees.
- Lodged two cases with the European Court of Human Rights at Strasbourg where new British laws have undermined individual freedom.
- Supported individuals and firms suffering as a result of trade union coercion or malpractice, taking legal action where obliged to.
- Fought and won the battle of Tameside (freedom of choice in education) right through to the House of Lords, and supported other schools.
- Prevented, on two occasion, the illegal boycott of mail by the Postal Workers, and initiated the most important constitutional case for 289 years.
- Revealed in its own newspaper The Free Nation, abuses of the social services, the bureaucratic persecution of the self employed, the plight of private medicine and the threat to freedom of the press — and a host of other subjects.

The NAFF newspaper, "The Free Nation", is essential reading for every responsible citizen. Published every fortnight — price 15p. Ask your newsagent for it or have it mailed from NAFF.

are you with us—or just an onlooker?

To: The National Association for Freedom, 11 Grape Street, London WC2H 8ET.

A. I am with you! Please enrol me as a member. My cheque is enclosed (Ordinary member £5 p.a. Pensioners or students £1 p.a.)

B. Please send me your literature including the Charter and an application form together with a copy of The Free Nation. I enclose 25p

C. Please send me details of CONTACT group membership (for five members at £2.00 per annum each) Includes regular copy of The Free Nation.

D. Please mail to me each fortnightly issue of THE FREE NATION for 12 months (26 issues). I enclose a cheque for £5.00 (NAFF members) £6.00 (non members).

Name: ....

Address: ....

.... Tel. No: ....

√ QM

The National Association For Freedom

11 Grape Street, London WC2H 8ET

Telephone: 01-836 8553/4/5

Below: Operation H2 launched by AESP/MAUE just before the conference in Belgrade devoted to the implementation of human rights under the Helsinki II treaty.

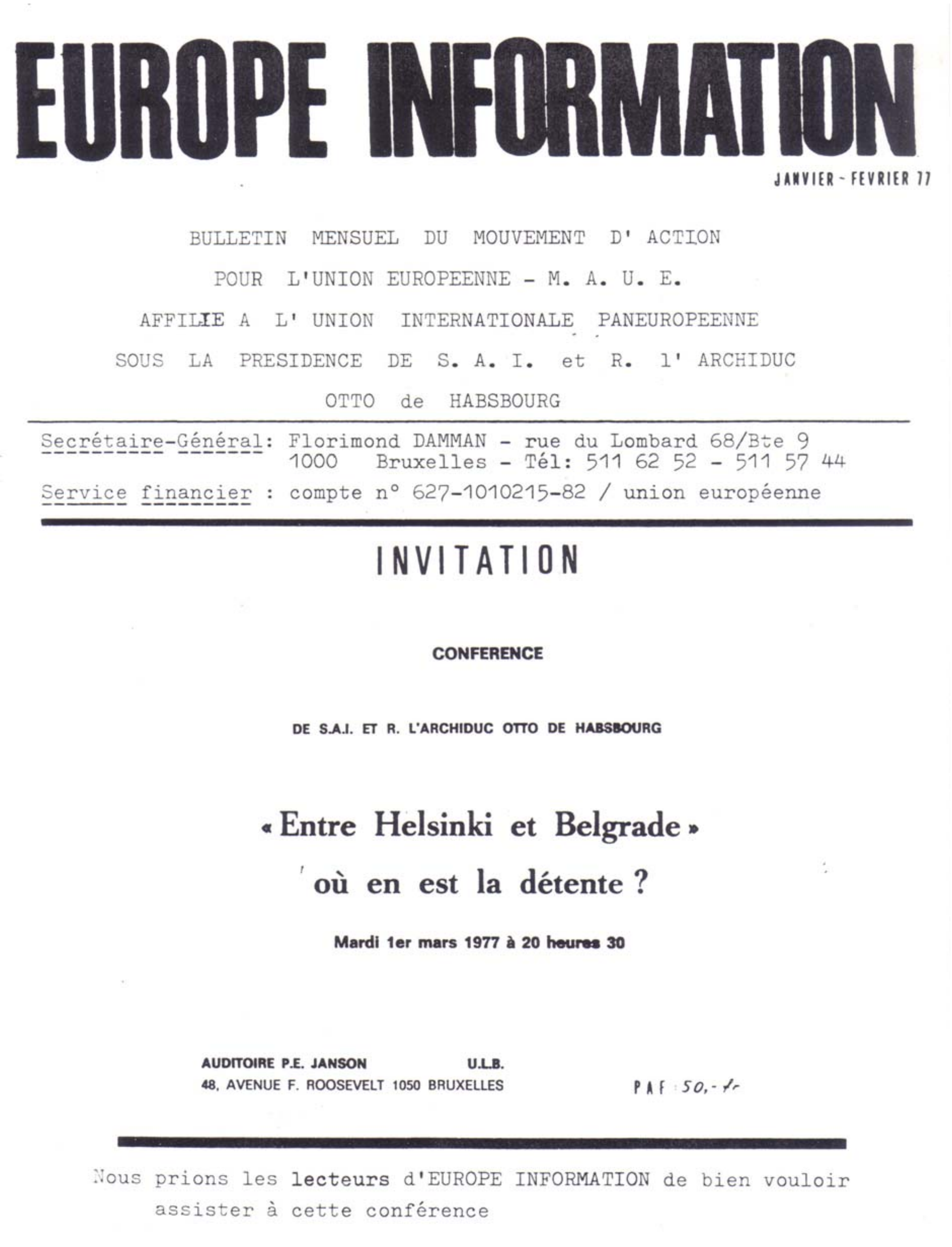

EUROPE INFORMATION

JANVIER - FEVRIER 77

BULLETIN MENSUEL DU MOUVEMENT D' ACTION
POUR L'UNION EUROPEENNE - M. A. U. E.
AFFILIE A L' UNION INTERNATIONALE PANEUROPEENNE
SOUS LA PRESIDENCE DE S. A. I. et R. l' ARCHIDUC
OTTO de HABSBOURG

Secrétaire-Général: Florimond DAMMAN - rue du Lombard 68/Bte 9
1000 Bruxelles - Tél: 511 62 52 - 511 57 44
Service financier : compte n° 627-1010215-82 / union européenne

INVITATION

CONFERENCE

DE S.A.I. ET R. L'ARCHIDUC OTTO DE HABSBOURG

« Entre Helsinki et Belgrade »
où en est la détente ?

Mardi 1er mars 1977 à 20 heures 30

AUDITOIRE P.E. JANSON U.L.B.
48, AVENUE F. ROOSEVELT 1050 BRUXELLES

PAF : 50,- fr

Nous prions les lecteurs d'EUROPE INFORMATION de bien vouloir assister à cette conférence

Next pages: undated internal AESP membership list, circa 1977.

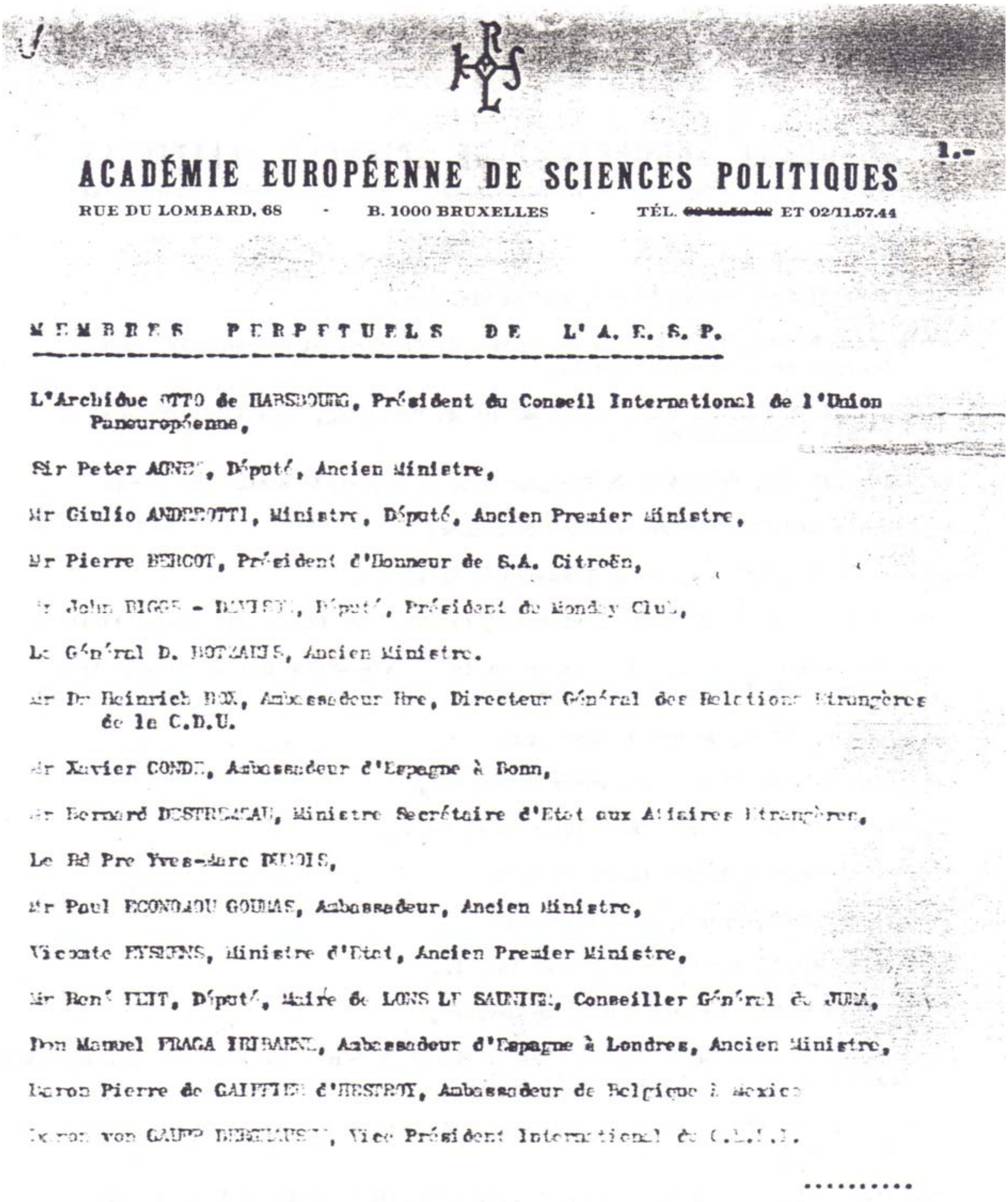

1.-

ACADÉMIE EUROPÉENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES

RUE DU LOMBARD, 68 - B. 1000 BRUXELLES - TÉL. ~~[illegible]~~ ET 02/11.57.44

MEMBRES PERPETUELS DE L'A. E. S. P.

L'Archiduc OTTO de HABSBOURG, Président du Conseil International de l'Union Paneuropéenne,

Sir Peter AGNEW, Député, Ancien Ministre,

Mr Giulio ANDREOTTI, Ministre, Député, Ancien Premier Ministre,

Mr Pierre BERCOT, Président d'Honneur de S.A. Citroën,

Mr John BIGGS - DAVISON, Député, Président du Monday Club,

Le Général D. BOTZARIS, Ancien Ministre.

Mr Dr Heinrich BOX, Ambassadeur Hre, Directeur Général des Relations Etrangères de la C.D.U.

Mr Xavier CONDE, Ambassadeur d'Espagne à Bonn,

Mr Bernard DESTREMAU, Ministre Secrétaire d'Etat aux Affaires Etrangères,

Le Rd Pre Yves-Marc DUBOIS,

Mr Paul ECONOMOU GOURAS, Ambassadeur, Ancien Ministre,

Vicomte EYSKENS, Ministre d'Etat, Ancien Premier Ministre,

Mr René FEIT, Député, Maire de LONS LE SAUNIER, Conseiller Général du JURA,

Don Manuel FRAGA IRIBARNE, Ambassadeur d'Espagne à Londres, Ancien Ministre,

Baron Pierre de GAIFFIER d'HESTROY, Ambassadeur de Belgique à Mexico

Baron von GAUPP BERGHAUSEN, Vice Président International du C.E.D.I.

....

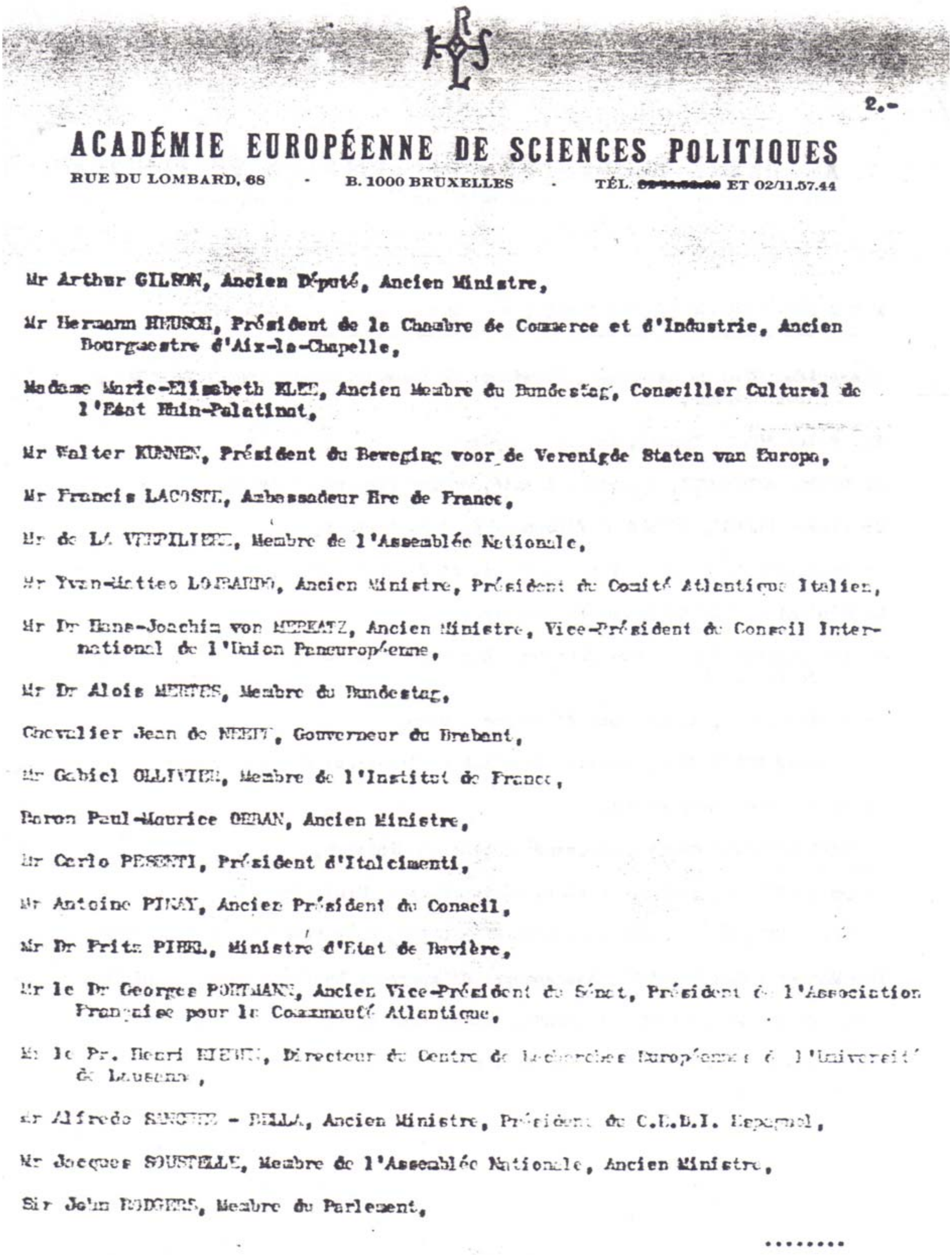

2.-

ACADÉMIE EUROPÉENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES
RUE DU LOMBARD, 68 - B. 1000 BRUXELLES - TÉL. ~~[illegible]~~ ET 02/11.57.44

Mr Arthur GILSON, Ancien Député, Ancien Ministre,

Mr Hermann HEUSCH, Président de la Chambre de Commerce et d'Industrie, Ancien Bourgmestre d'Aix-la-Chapelle,

Madame Marie-Elisabeth KLEE, Ancien Membre du Bundestag, Conseiller Culturel de l'Etat Rhin-Palatinat,

Mr Walter KUNNEN, Président du Beweging voor de Verenigde Staten van Europa,

Mr Francis LACOSTE, Ambassadeur Hre de France,

Mr de LA VERPILLIERE, Membre de l'Assemblée Nationale,

Mr Ivan-Matteo LOMBARDO, Ancien Ministre, Président du Comité Atlantique Italien,

Mr Dr Hans-Joachim von MERKATZ, Ancien Ministre, Vice-Président du Conseil International de l'Union Paneuropéenne,

Mr Dr Alois MERTES, Membre du Bundestag,

Chevalier Jean de NEEFF, Gouverneur du Brabant,

Mr Gabiel OLLIVIER, Membre de l'Institut de France,

Baron Paul-Maurice ORBAN, Ancien Ministre,

Mr Carlo PESENTI, Président d'Italcimenti,

Mr Antoine PINAY, Ancien Président du Conseil,

Mr Dr Fritz PIRKL, Ministre d'Etat de Bavière,

Mr le Dr Georges PORTMANN, Ancien Vice-Président du Sénat, Président de l'Association Française pour la Communauté Atlantique,

Mr le Pr. Henri RIEBEN, Directeur du Centre de Recherches Européennes de l'Université de Lausanne,

Mr Alfredo SANCHEZ - BELLA, Ancien Ministre, Président du C.E.D.I. Espagnol,

Mr Jacques SOUSTELLE, Membre de l'Assemblée Nationale, Ancien Ministre,

Sir John RODGERS, Membre du Parlement,

....

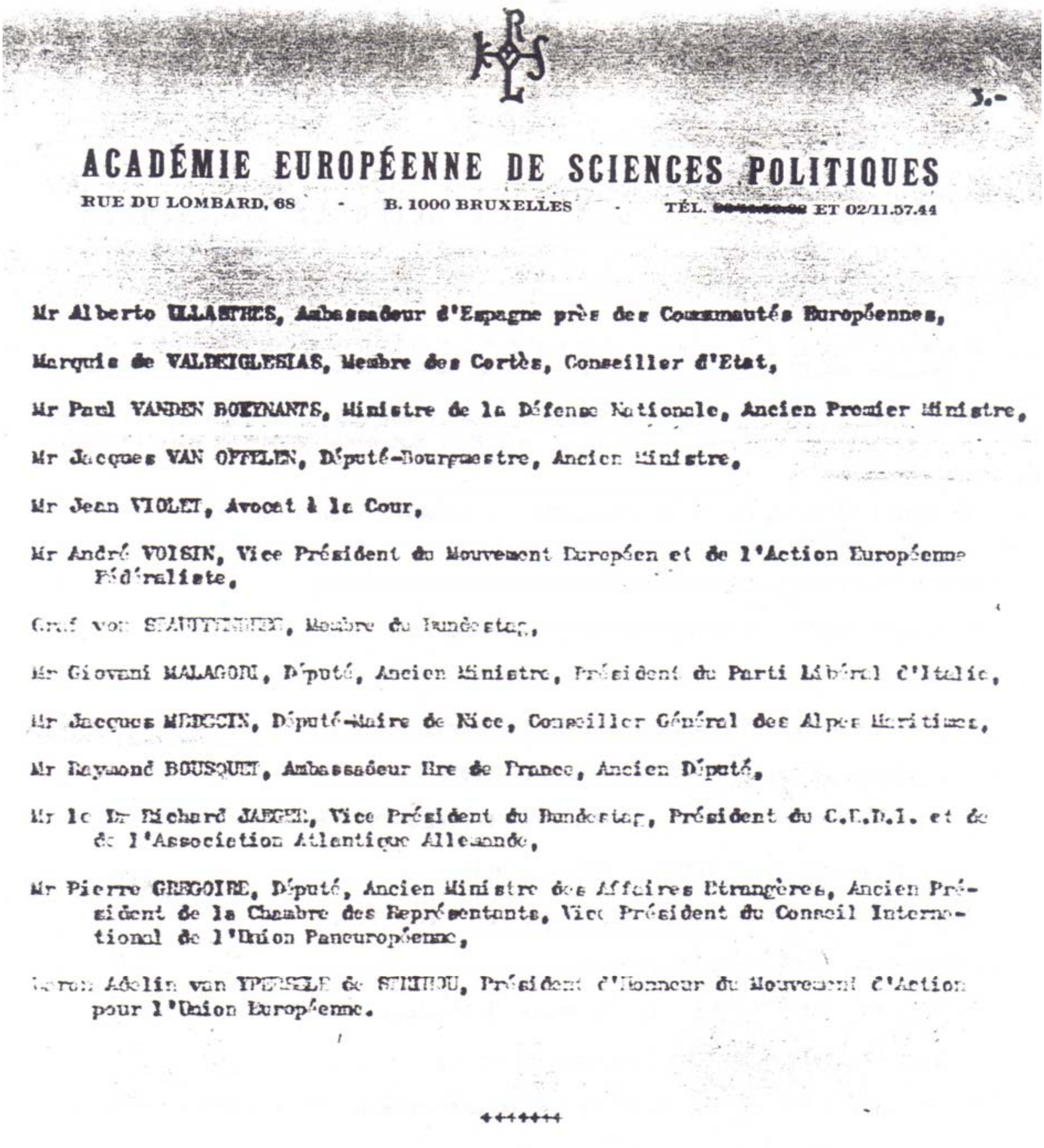

3.-

ACADÉMIE EUROPÉENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES

RUE DU LOMBARD, 68 - B. 1000 BRUXELLES - TÉL. [redacted] ET 02/11.57.44

Mr Alberto ULLASTRES, Ambassadeur d'Espagne près des Communautés Européennes,

Marquis de VALDEIGLESIAS, Membre des Cortès, Conseiller d'Etat,

Mr Paul VANDEN BOEYNANTS, Ministre de la Défense Nationale, Ancien Premier Ministre,

Mr Jacques VAN OFFELEN, Député-Bourgmestre, Ancien Ministre,

Mr Jean VIOLET, Avocat à la Cour,

Mr André VOISIN, Vice Président du Mouvement Européen et de l'Action Européenne Fédéraliste,

Graf von STAUFFENBERG, Membre du Bundestag,

Mr Giovani MALAGODI, Député, Ancien Ministre, Président du Parti Libéral d'Italie,

Mr Jacques MEDECIN, Député-Maire de Nice, Conseiller Général des Alpes Maritimes,

Mr Raymond BOUSQUET, Ambassadeur Hre de France, Ancien Député,

Mr le Dr Richard JAEGER, Vice Président du Bundestag, Président du C.E.D.I. et de de l'Association Atlantique Allemande,

Mr Pierre GREGOIRE, Député, Ancien Ministre des Affaires Etrangères, Ancien Président de la Chambre des Représentants, Vice Président du Conseil International de l'Union Paneuropéenne,

Baron Adelin van YPERSELE de STRIHOU, Président d'Honneur du Mouvement d'Action pour l'Union Européenne.

+++++++

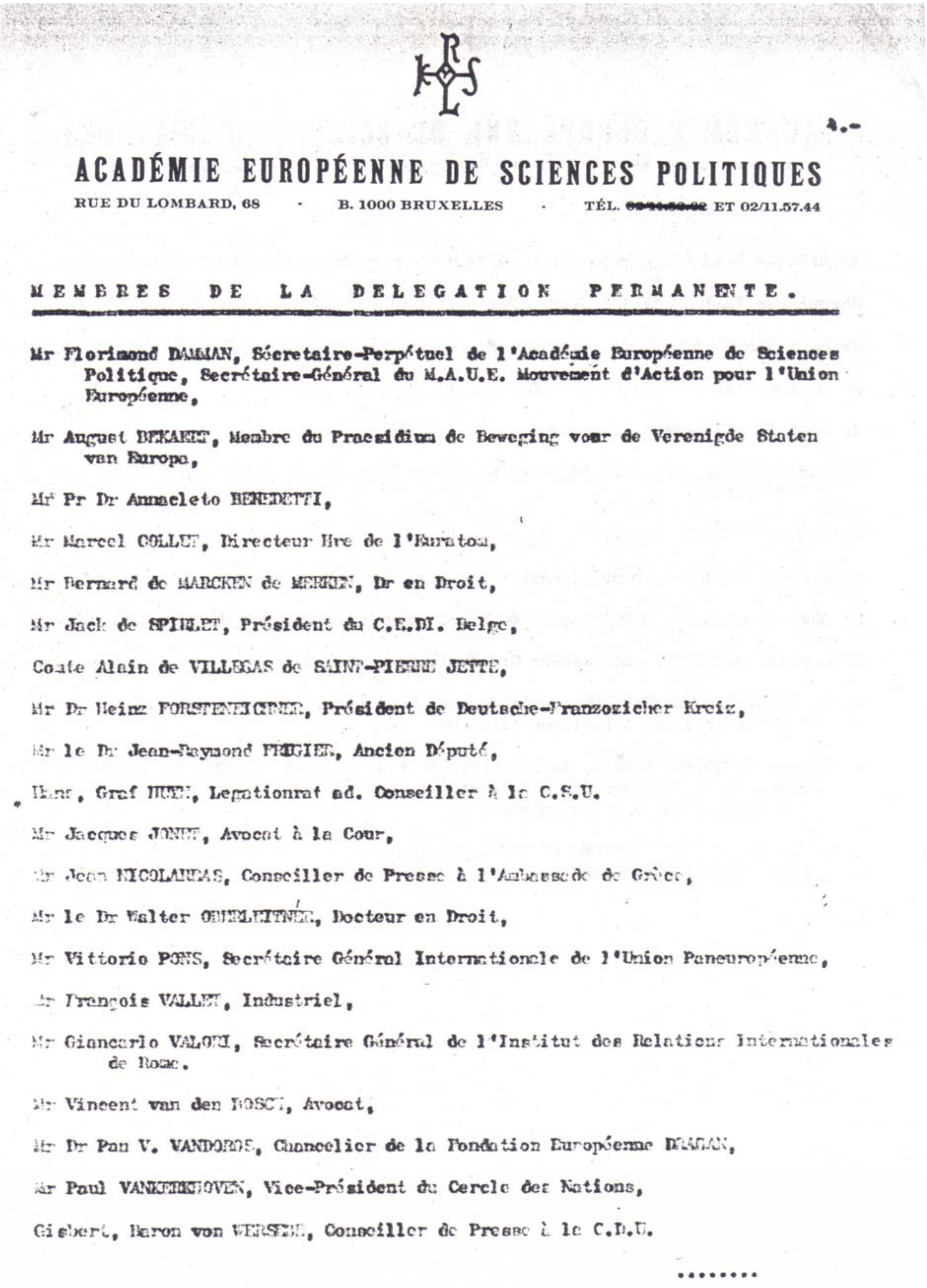

4.-

ACADÉMIE EUROPÉENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES
RUE DU LOMBARD, 68 · B. 1000 BRUXELLES · TÉL. ~~[illegible]~~ ET 02/11.57.44

MEMBRES DE LA DELEGATION PERMANENTE.

Mr Florimond DAMAN, Sécretaire-Perpétuel de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politique, Secrétaire-Général du M.A.U.E. Mouvement d'Action pour l'Union Européenne,

Mr August BEKAERT, Membre du Praesidium de Beweging voor de Verenigde Staten van Europa,

Mr Pr Dr Annacleto BENEDETTI,

Mr Marcel COLLET, Directeur Hre de l'Euratom,

Mr Bernard de MARCKEN de MERKEN, Dr en Droit,

Mr Jack de SPIRLET, Président du C.E.DI. Belge,

Comte Alain de VILLEGAS de SAINT-PIERRE JETTE,

Mr Dr Heinz FORSTENEICHNER, Président de Deutsche-Franzozicher Kreiz,

Mr le Dr Jean-Raymond FRUGIER, Ancien Député,

Hans, Graf HUYN, Legationrat ad. Conseiller à la C.S.U.

Mr Jacques JONET, Avocat à la Cour,

Mr Jean NICOLAREAS, Conseiller de Presse à l'Ambassade de Grèce,

Mr le Dr Walter OBERLEITNER, Docteur en Droit,

Mr Vittorio PONS, Secrétaire Général Internationale de l'Union Paneuropéenne,

Mr François VALLET, Industriel,

Mr Giancarlo VALORI, Secrétaire Général de l'Institut des Relations Internationales de Rome.

Mr Vincent van den BOSCH, Avocat,

Mr Dr Pan V. VANDOROS, Chancelier de la Fondation Européenne DRAGAN,

Mr Paul VANKERKHOVEN, Vice-Président du Cercle des Nations,

Gisbert, Baron von WERSEBE, Conseiller de Presse à la C.D.U.

....

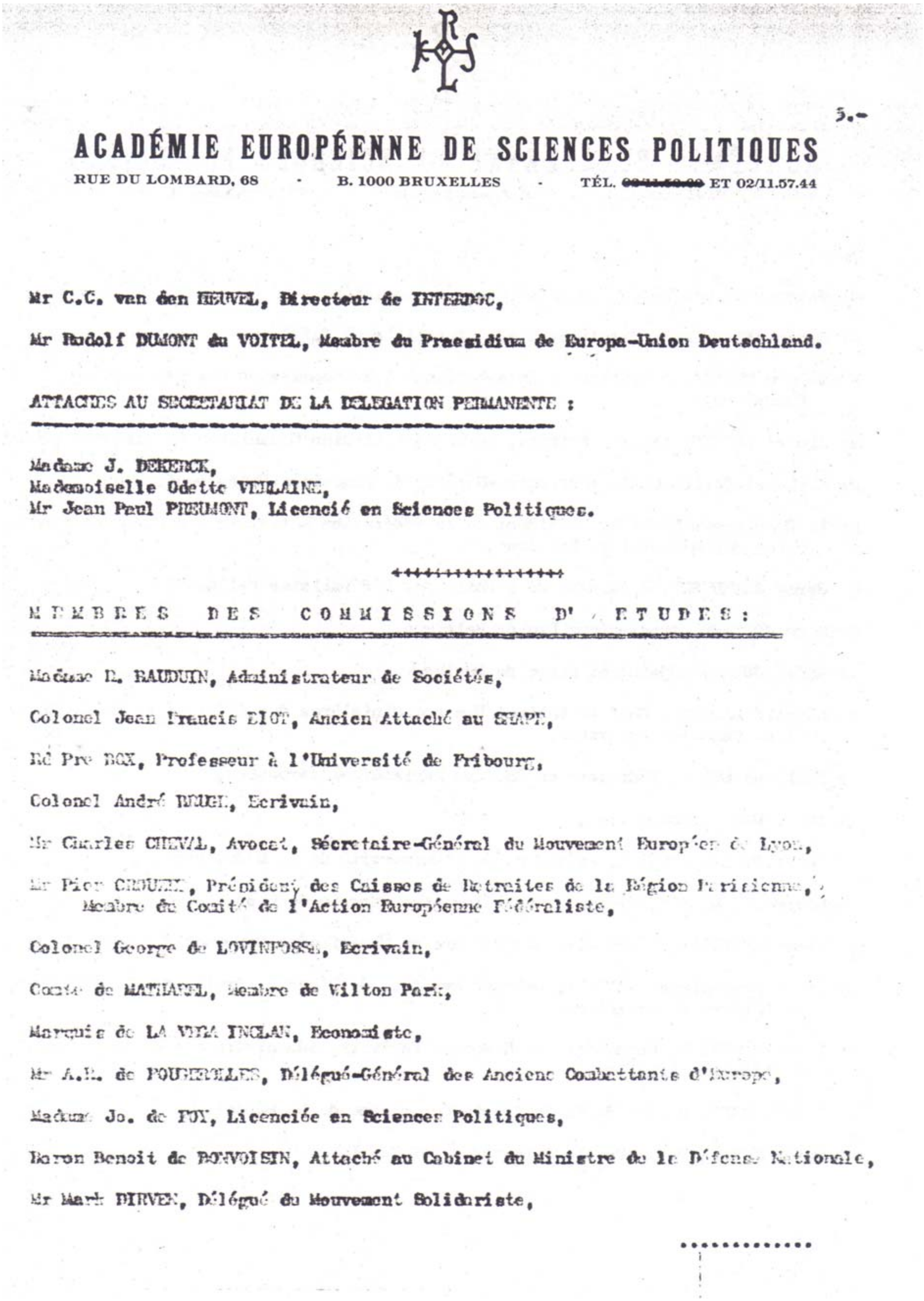

5.-

ACADÉMIE EUROPÉENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES
RUE DU LOMBARD, 68 · B. 1000 BRUXELLES · TÉL. ~~[illegible]~~ ET 02/11.57.44

Mr C.C. van den HEUVEL, Directeur de INTERDOC,

Mr Rudolf DUMONT du VOITEL, Membre du Praesidium de Europa-Union Deutschland.

ATTACHES AU SECRETARIAT DE LA DELEGATION PERMANENTE :

Madame J. DEKERCK,
Mademoiselle Odette VEILAINE,
Mr Jean Paul PREUMONT, Licencié en Sciences Politiques.

++++++++++++++++++

MEMBRES DES COMMISSIONS D' ETUDES:

Madame D. BAUDUIN, Administrateur de Sociétés,

Colonel Jean Francis DIOT, Ancien Attaché au SHAPE,

Rd Pre BOX, Professeur à l'Université de Fribourg,

Colonel André BRUGE, Ecrivain,

Mr Charles CHEVAL, Avocat, Sécretaire-Général du Mouvement Européen de Lyon,

Mr Pier CROUZET, Président des Caisses de Retraites de la Région Parisienne,
Membre du Comité de l'Action Européenne Fédéraliste,

Colonel George de LOVINFOSSE, Ecrivain,

Comte de MATHAREL, Membre de Wilton Park,

Marquis de LA VEGA INCLAN, Economiste,

Mr A.M. de POUGERELLES, Délégué-Général des Anciens Combattants d'Europe,

Madame Jo. de FOY, Licenciée en Sciences Politiques,

Baron Benoit de BONVOISIN, Attaché au Cabinet du Ministre de la Défense Nationale,

Mr Mark DIRVEN, Délégué du Mouvement Solidariste,

....

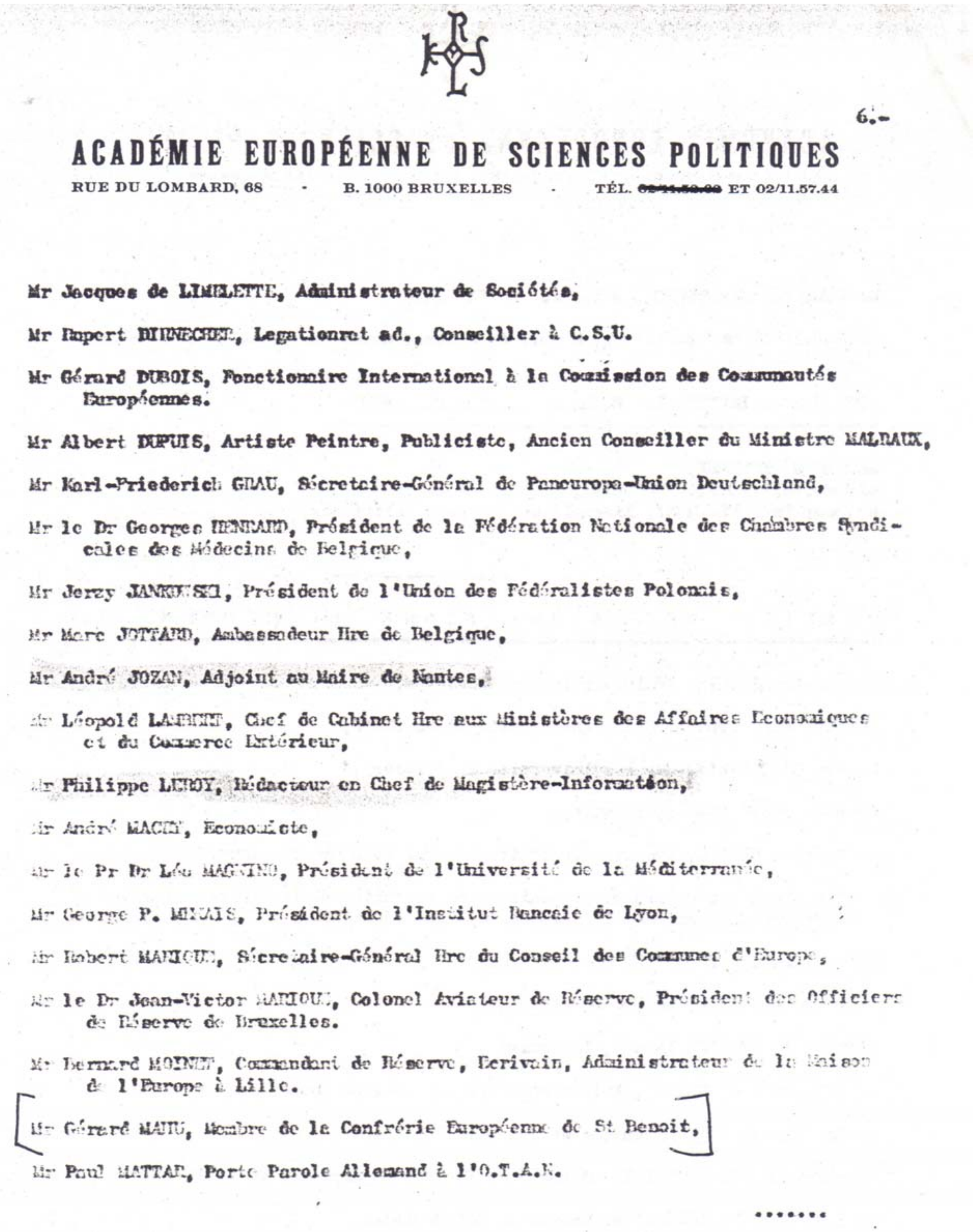

6.-

ACADÉMIE EUROPÉENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES

RUE DU LOMBARD, 68 · B. 1000 BRUXELLES · TÉL. ~~[illegible]~~ ET 02/11.57.44

Mr Jacques de LIMELETTE, Administrateur de Sociétés,

Mr Rupert DIRNECKER, Legationrat ad., Conseiller à C.S.U.

Mr Gérard DUBOIS, Fonctionnaire International à la Commission des Communautés Européennes.

Mr Albert DUPUIS, Artiste Peintre, Publiciste, Ancien Conseiller du Ministre MALRAUX,

Mr Karl-Friederich GRAU, Sécrétaire-Général de Paneuropa-Union Deutschland,

Mr le Dr Georges HENRARD, Président de la Fédération Nationale des Chambres Syndicales des Médecins de Belgique,

Mr Jerzy JANKOWSKI, Président de l'Union des Fédéralistes Polonais,

Mr Marc JOTTARD, Ambassadeur Hre de Belgique,

Mr André JOZAN, Adjoint au Maire de Nantes,

Mr Léopold LAMBERT, Chef de Cabinet Hre aux Ministères des Affaires Economiques et du Commerce Extérieur,

Mr Philippe LEROY, Rédacteur en Chef de Magistère-Informatéon,

Mr André MACHÉ, Economiste,

Mr le Pr Dr Léo MAGNINO, Président de l'Université de la Méditerranée,

Mr George P. MILLAIS, Président de l'Institut Bancaic de Lyon,

Mr Robert MARIOUL, Sécrétaire-Général Hre du Conseil des Communes d'Europe,

Mr le Dr Jean-Victor MARIOUL, Colonel Aviateur de Réserve, Président des Officiers de Réserve de Bruxelles.

Mr Bernard MOINET, Commandant de Réserve, Ecrivain, Administrateur de la Maison de l'Europe à Lille.

[Mr Gérard MAHU, Membre de la Confrérie Européenne de St Benoit,]

Mr Paul MATTAR, Porte Parole Allemand à l'O.T.A.N.

....

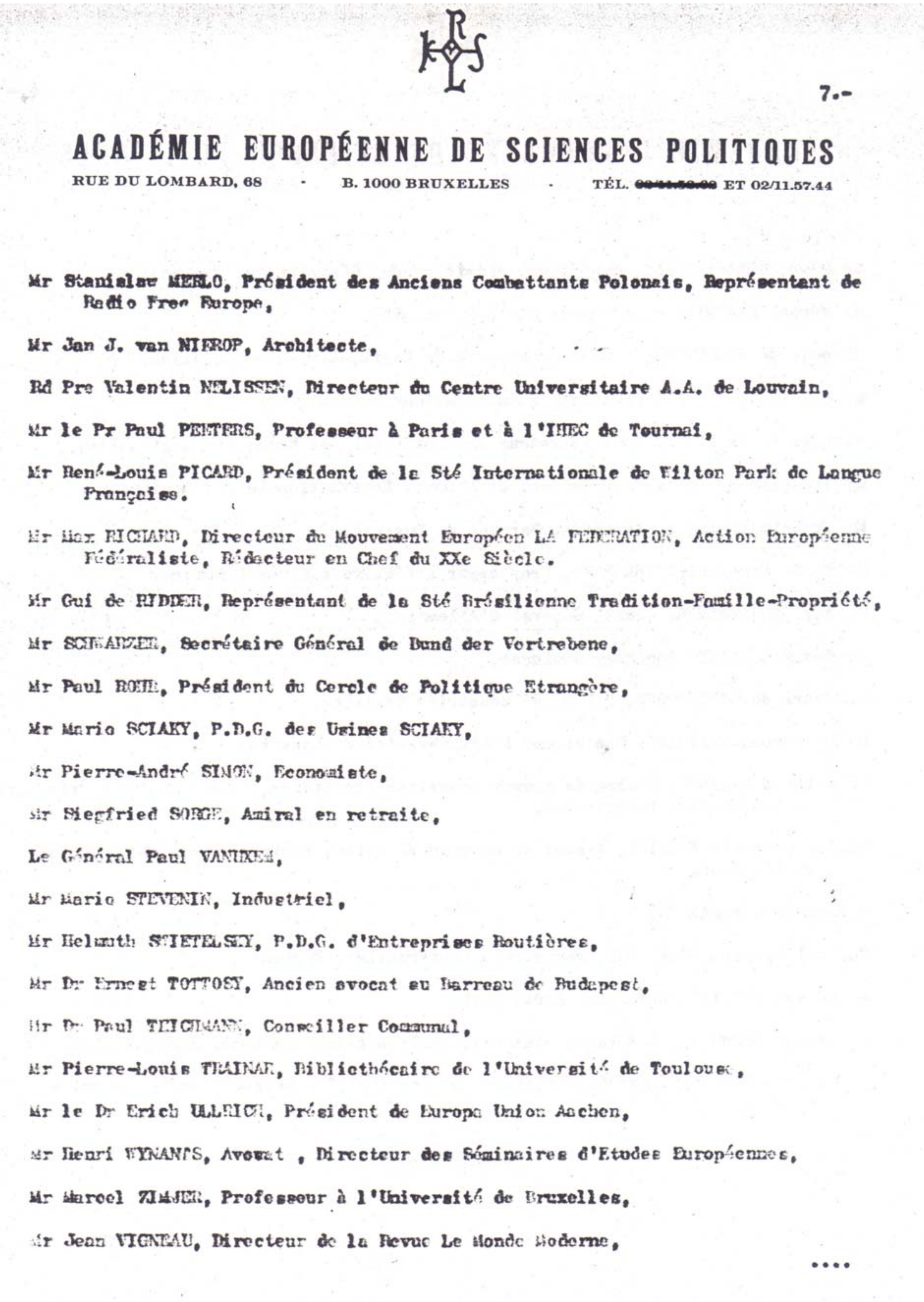

7.-

ACADÉMIE EUROPÉENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES
RUE DU LOMBARD, 68 · B. 1000 BRUXELLES · TÉL. [redacted] ET 02/11.57.44

Mr Stanislaw MERLO, Président des Anciens Combattants Polonais, Représentant de Radio Free Europe,

Mr Jan J. van NIEROP, Architecte,

Rd Pre Valentin NELISSEN, Directeur du Centre Universitaire A.A. de Louvain,

Mr le Pr Paul PEETERS, Professeur à Paris et à l'IHEC de Tournai,

Mr René-Louis PICARD, Président de la Sté Internationale de Wilton Park de Langue Française.

Mr Max RICHARD, Directeur du Mouvement Européen LA FEDERATION, Action Européenne Fédéraliste, Rédacteur en Chef du XXe Siècle.

Mr Gui de RIDDER, Représentant de la Sté Brésilienne Tradition-Famille-Propriété,

Mr SCHWARZER, Secrétaire Général de Bund der Vertrebene,

Mr Paul ROHR, Président du Cercle de Politique Etrangère,

Mr Mario SCIAKY, P.D.G. des Usines SCIAKY,

Mr Pierre-André SIMON, Economiste,

Mr Siegfried SORGE, Amiral en retraite,

Le Général Paul VANUXEM,

Mr Mario STEVENIN, Industriel,

Mr Helmuth STIETELSKY, P.D.G. d'Entreprises Routières,

Mr Dr Ernest TOTTOSY, Ancien avocat au Barreau de Budapest,

Mr Dr Paul TEICHMANN, Conseiller Communal,

Mr Pierre-Louis TRAINAR, Bibliothécaire de l'Université de Toulouse,

Mr le Dr Erich ULLRICH, Président de Europa Union Aachen,

Mr Henri WYNANTS, Avocat , Directeur des Séminaires d'Etudes Européennes,

Mr Marcel ZIMMER, Professeur à l'Université de Bruxelles,

Mr Jean VIGNEAU, Directeur de la Revue Le Monde Moderne,

....

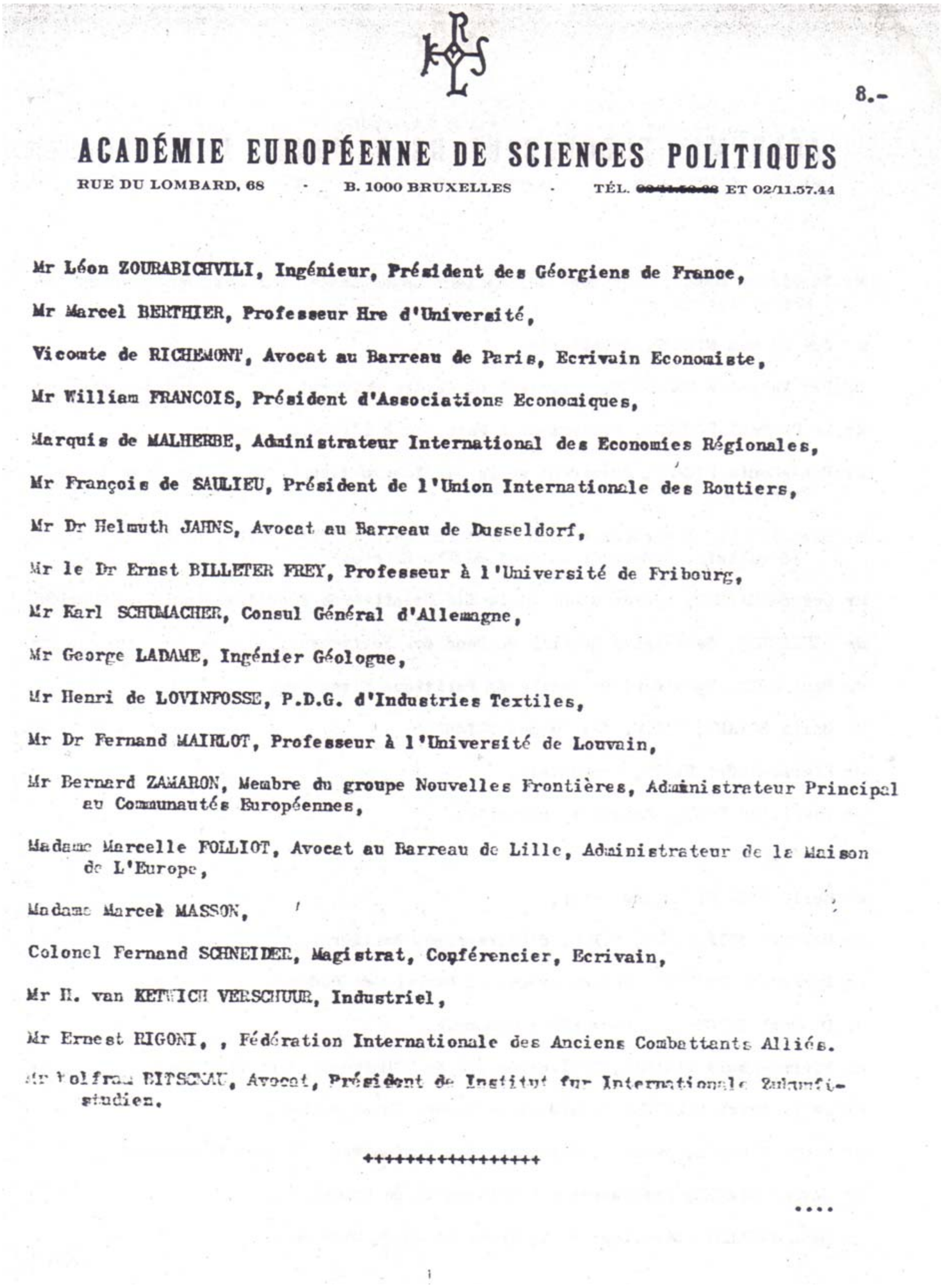

8.-

ACADÉMIE EUROPÉENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES

RUE DU LOMBARD, 68 - B. 1000 BRUXELLES - TÉL. ~~[illegible]~~ ET 02/11.57.44

Mr Léon ZOURABICHVILI, Ingénieur, Président des Géorgiens de France,

Mr Marcel BERTHIER, Professeur Hre d'Université,

Vicomte de RICHEMONT, Avocat au Barreau de Paris, Ecrivain Economiste,

Mr William FRANCOIS, Président d'Associations Economiques,

Marquis de MALHERBE, Administrateur International des Economies Régionales,

Mr François de SAULIEU, Président de l'Union Internationale des Routiers,

Mr Dr Helmuth JAHNS, Avocat au Barreau de Dusseldorf,

Mr le Dr Ernst BILLETER FREY, Professeur à l'Université de Fribourg,

Mr Karl SCHUMACHER, Consul Général d'Allemagne,

Mr George LADAME, Ingénier Géologue,

Mr Henri de LOVINFOSSE, P.D.G. d'Industries Textiles,

Mr Dr Fernand MAIRLOT, Professeur à l'Université de Louvain,

Mr Bernard ZAMARON, Membre du groupe Nouvelles Frontières, Administrateur Principal au Communautés Européennes,

Madame Marcelle FOLLIOT, Avocat au Barreau de Lille, Administrateur de la Maison de L'Europe,

Madame Marcel MASSON,

Colonel Fernand SCHNEIDER, Magistrat, Conférencier, Ecrivain,

Mr H. van KETWICH VERSCHUUR, Industriel,

Mr Ernest RIGONI, , Fédération Internationale des Anciens Combattants Alliés.

Mr Wolfram BITSCHAU, Avocat, Président de Institut fur Internationale Zukunftsstudien.

++++++++++++++++

....

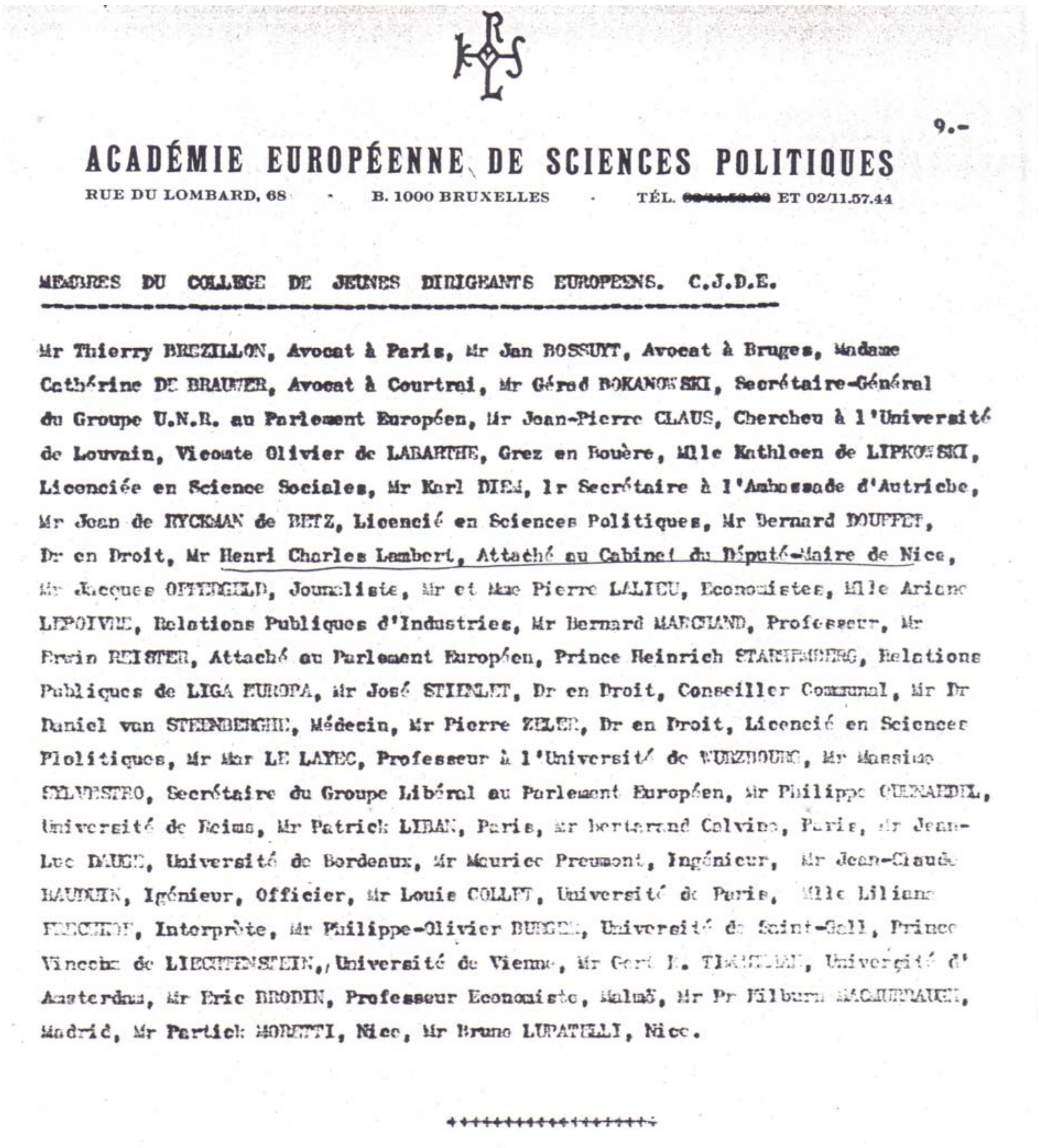

9.-

ACADÉMIE EUROPÉENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES

RUE DU LOMBARD, 68 · B. 1000 BRUXELLES · TÉL. [illegible] ET 02/11.57.44

MEMBRES DU COLLEGE DE JEUNES DIRIGEANTS EUROPEENS. C.J.D.E.

Mr Thierry BREZILLON, Avocat à Paris, Mr Jan BOSSUYT, Avocat à Bruges, Madame Cathérine DE BRAUWER, Avocat à Courtrai, Mr Gérad BOKANOWSKI, Secrétaire-Général du Groupe U.N.R. au Parlement Européen, Mr Jean-Pierre CLAUS, Chercheu à l'Université de Louvain, Vicomte Olivier de LABARTHE, Grez en Bouère, Mlle Kathleen de LIPKOWSKI, Licenciée en Science Sociales, Mr Karl DIEM, 1r Secrétaire à l'Ambassade d'Autriche, Mr Jean de RYCKMAN de BETZ, Licencié en Sciences Politiques, Mr Bernard DOUFFET, Dr en Droit, Mr Henri Charles Lambert, Attaché au Cabinet du Député-Maire de Nice, Mr Jacques OFFERGELD, Journaliste, Mr et Mme Pierre LALIEU, Economistes, Mlle Ariane LEPOIVRE, Relations Publiques d'Industries, Mr Bernard MARCHAND, Professeur, Mr Erwin REISTER, Attaché au Parlement Européen, Prince Heinrich STARHEMBERG, Relations Publiques de LIGA EUROPA, Mr José STIENLET, Dr en Droit, Conseiller Communal, Mr Dr Daniel van STEENBERGHE, Médecin, Mr Pierre ZELER, Dr en Droit, Licencié en Sciences Plolitiques, Mr Mar LE LAYEC, Professeur à l'Université de WURZBOURG, Mr Massimo SYLVESTRO, Secrétaire du Groupe Libéral au Parlement Européen, Mr Philippe GUENARDEL, Université de Reims, Mr Patrick LIBAN, Paris, Mr bertrand Colvine, Paris, Mr Jean-Luc DAUER, Université de Bordeaux, Mr Maurice Preumont, Ingénieur, Mr Jean-Claude BAUDUIN, Igénieur, Officier, Mr Louis COLLET, Université de Paris, Mlle Liliane FRECHKOF, Interprète, Mr Philippe-Olivier BURGER, Université de Saint-Gall, Prince Vincent de LIECHTENSTEIN, Université de Vienne, Mr Gert K. TIMMERMAN, Université d'Amsterdam, Mr Eric BRODIN, Professeur Economiste, Malmö, Mr Pr Kilburn MacMURRAUGH, Madrid, Mr Partick MORETTI, Nice, Mr Bruno LUPATELLI, Nice.

* * *

Below: ISC Council membership, from Conflict Study 87 by Pons, September 1977

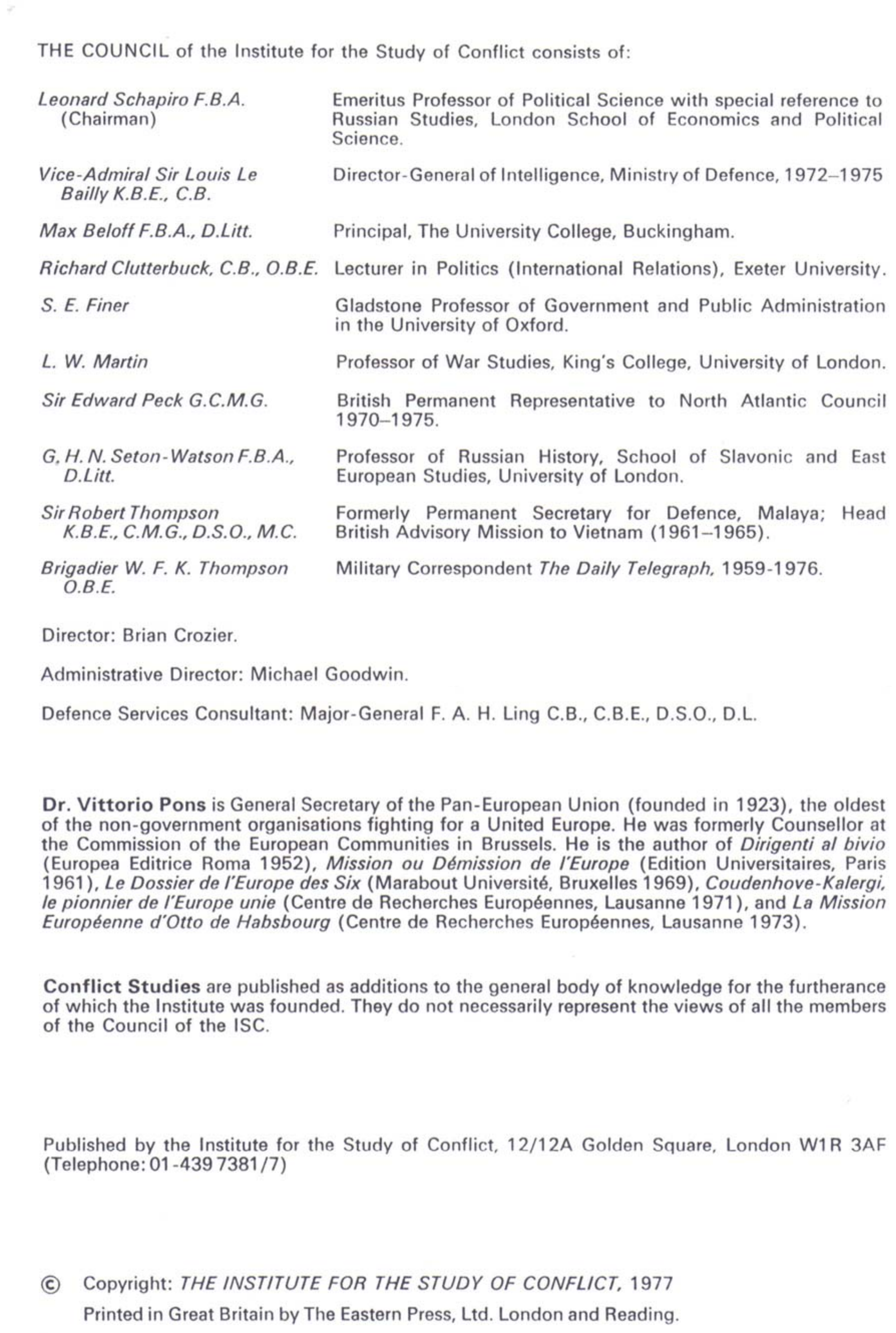

THE COUNCIL of the Institute for the Study of Conflict consists of:

Leonard Schapiro F.B.A. (Chairman)	Emeritus Professor of Political Science with special reference to Russian Studies, London School of Economics and Political Science.
Vice-Admiral Sir Louis Le Bailly K.B.E., C.B.	Director-General of Intelligence, Ministry of Defence, 1972–1975
Max Beloff F.B.A., D.Litt.	Principal, The University College, Buckingham.
Richard Clutterbuck, C.B., O.B.E.	Lecturer in Politics (International Relations), Exeter University.
S. E. Finer	Gladstone Professor of Government and Public Administration in the University of Oxford.
L. W. Martin	Professor of War Studies, King's College, University of London.
Sir Edward Peck G.C.M.G.	British Permanent Representative to North Atlantic Council 1970–1975.
G. H. N. Seton-Watson F.B.A., D.Litt.	Professor of Russian History, School of Slavonic and East European Studies, University of London.
Sir Robert Thompson K.B.E., C.M.G., D.S.O., M.C.	Formerly Permanent Secretary for Defence, Malaya; Head British Advisory Mission to Vietnam (1961–1965).
Brigadier W. F. K. Thompson O.B.E.	Military Correspondent *The Daily Telegraph,* 1959-1976.

Director: Brian Crozier.

Administrative Director: Michael Goodwin.

Defence Services Consultant: Major-General F. A. H. Ling C.B., C.B.E., D.S.O., D.L.

Dr. Vittorio Pons is General Secretary of the Pan-European Union (founded in 1923), the oldest of the non-government organisations fighting for a United Europe. He was formerly Counsellor at the Commission of the European Communities in Brussels. He is the author of *Dirigenti al bivio* (Europea Editrice Roma 1952), *Mission ou Démission de l'Europe* (Edition Universitaires, Paris 1961), *Le Dossier de l'Europe des Six* (Marabout Université, Bruxelles 1969), *Coudenhove-Kalergi, le pionnier de l'Europe unie* (Centre de Recherches Européennes, Lausanne 1971), and *La Mission Européenne d'Otto de Habsbourg* (Centre de Recherches Européennes, Lausanne 1973).

Conflict Studies are published as additions to the general body of knowledge for the furtherance of which the Institute was founded. They do not necessarily represent the views of all the members of the Council of the ISC.

Published by the Institute for the Study of Conflict, 12/12A Golden Square, London W1R 3AF
(Telephone: 01-439 7381/7)

© Copyright: *THE INSTITUTE FOR THE STUDY OF CONFLICT,* 1977

Printed in Great Britain by The Eastern Press, Ltd. London and Reading.

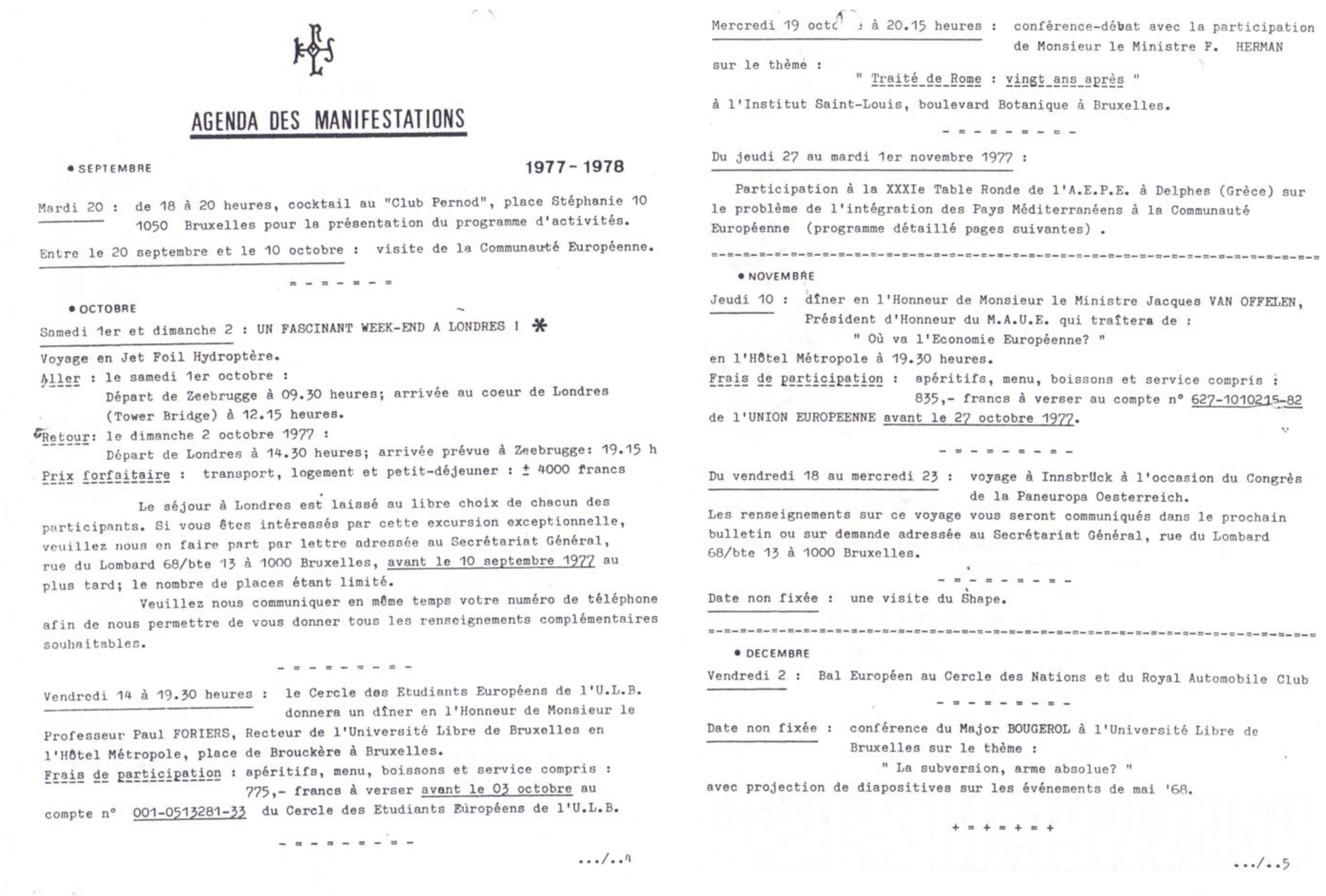

AGENDA DES MANIFESTATIONS

1977 - 1978

• SEPTEMBRE

Mardi 20 : de 18 à 20 heures, cocktail au "Club Pernod", place Stéphanie 10 1050 Bruxelles pour la présentation du programme d'activités.

Entre le 20 septembre et le 10 octobre : visite de la Communauté Européenne.

= - = - = - =

• OCTOBRE

Samedi 1er et dimanche 2 : UN FASCINANT WEEK-END A LONDRES ! *

Voyage en Jet Foil Hydroptère.

Aller : le samedi 1er octobre :
Départ de Zeebrugge à 09.30 heures; arrivée au coeur de Londres (Tower Bridge) à 12.15 heures.

Retour: le dimanche 2 octobre 1977 :
Départ de Londres à 14.30 heures; arrivée prévue à Zeebrugge: 19.15 h

Prix forfaitaire : transport, logement et petit-déjeuner : ± 4000 francs

Le séjour à Londres est laissé au libre choix de chacun des participants. Si vous êtes intéressés par cette excursion exceptionnelle, veuillez nous en faire part par lettre adressée au Secrétariat Général, rue du Lombard 68/bte 13 à 1000 Bruxelles, avant le 10 septembre 1977 au plus tard; le nombre de places étant limité.

Veuillez nous communiquer en même temps votre numéro de téléphone afin de nous permettre de vous donner tous les renseignements complémentaires souhaitables.

- = - = - = - = -

Vendredi 14 à 19.30 heures : le Cercle des Etudiants Européens de l'U.L.B. donnera un dîner en l'Honneur de Monsieur le Professeur Paul FORIERS, Recteur de l'Université Libre de Bruxelles en l'Hôtel Métropole, place de Brouckère à Bruxelles.

Frais de participation : apéritifs, menu, boissons et service compris :
775,- francs à verser avant le 03 octobre au compte n° 001-0513281-33 du Cercle des Etudiants Européens de l'U.L.B.

- = - = - = - = -

.../..4

Mercredi 19 oct[illegible] à 20.15 heures : conférence-débat avec la participation de Monsieur le Ministre F. HERMAN

sur le thème :
" Traité de Rome : vingt ans après "

à l'Institut Saint-Louis, boulevard Botanique à Bruxelles.

- = - = - = - = -

Du jeudi 27 au mardi 1er novembre 1977 :

Participation à la XXXIe Table Ronde de l'A.E.P.E. à Delphes (Grèce) sur le problème de l'intégration des Pays Méditerranéens à la Communauté Européenne (programme détaillé pages suivantes) .

=-=

• NOVEMBRE

Jeudi 10 : dîner en l'Honneur de Monsieur le Ministre Jacques VAN OFFELEN, Président d'Honneur du M.A.U.E. qui traîtera de :
" Où va l'Economie Européenne? "
en l'Hôtel Métropole à 19.30 heures.

Frais de participation : apéritifs, menu, boissons et service compris :
835,- francs à verser au compte n° 627-1010215-82 de l'UNION EUROPEENNE avant le 27 octobre 1977.

- = - = - = - = -

Du vendredi 18 au mercredi 23 : voyage à Innsbrück à l'occasion du Congrès de la Paneuropa Oesterreich.

Les renseignements sur ce voyage vous seront communiqués dans le prochain bulletin ou sur demande adressée au Secrétariat Général, rue du Lombard 68/bte 13 à 1000 Bruxelles.

- = - = - = - = -

Date non fixée : une visite du Shape.

=-=

• DECEMBRE

Vendredi 2 : Bal Européen au Cercle des Nations et du Royal Automobile Club

- = - = - = - = -

Date non fixée : conférence du Major BOUGEROL à l'Université Libre de Bruxelles sur le thème :
" La subversion, arme absolue? "
avec projection de diapositives sur les événements de mai '68.

+ = + = + = +

.../..5

Above: AESP/MAUE events for 1977 – in December, a lecture by Major Bougerol.

Below: AESP 1978 membership list prepared for the Ambassador of Morocco, from Mungo.

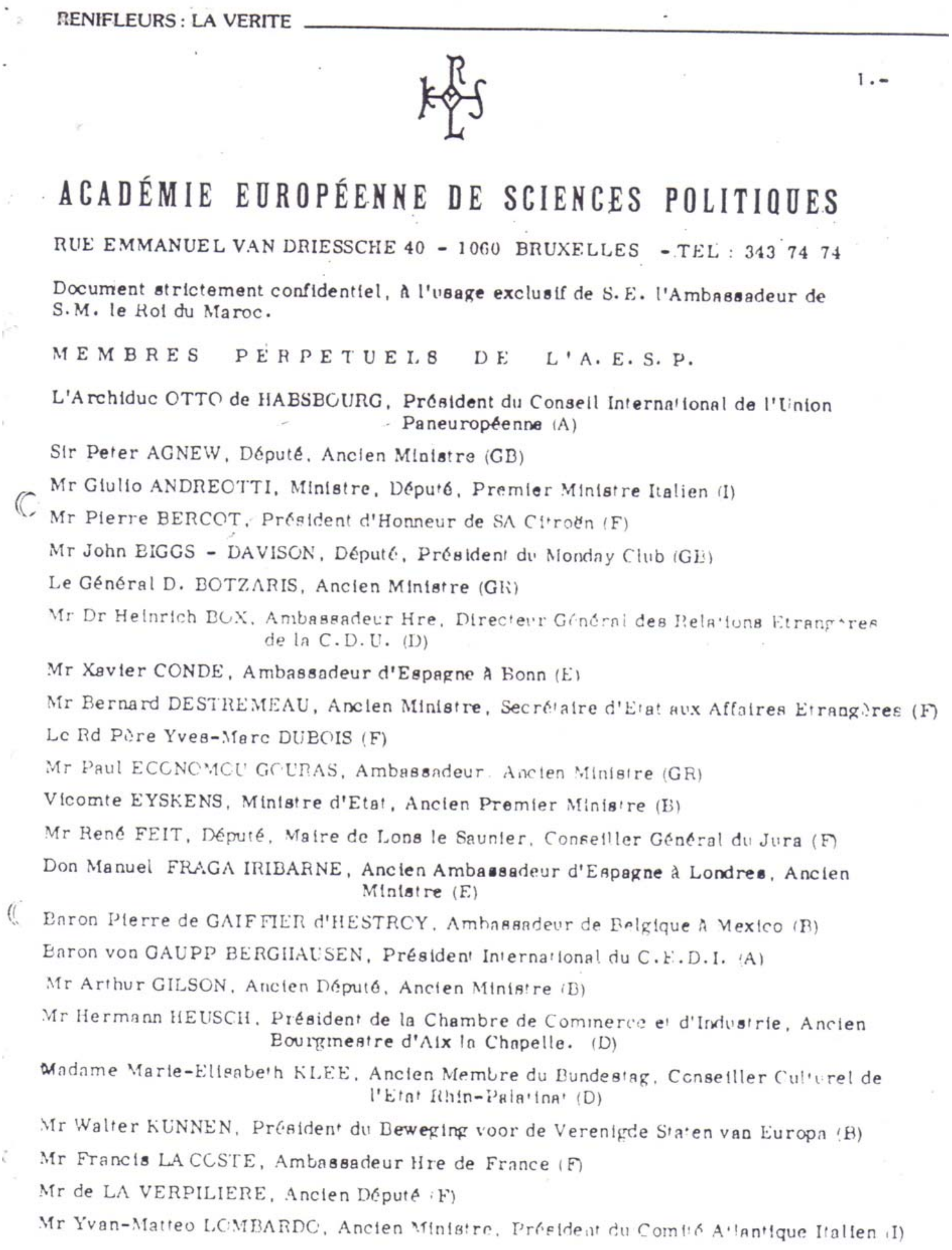

1.-

ACADÉMIE EUROPÉENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES

RUE EMMANUEL VAN DRIESSCHE 40 - 1060 BRUXELLES - TEL : 343 74 74

Document strictement confidentiel, à l'usage exclusif de S.E. l'Ambassadeur de S.M. le Roi du Maroc.

MEMBRES PERPETUELS DE L'A.E.S.P.

L'Archiduc OTTO de HABSBOURG, Président du Conseil International de l'Union Paneuropéenne (A)

Sir Peter AGNEW, Député, Ancien Ministre (GB)

Mr Giulio ANDREOTTI, Ministre, Député, Premier Ministre Italien (I)

Mr Pierre BERCOT, Président d'Honneur de SA Citroën (F)

Mr John BIGGS - DAVISON, Député, Président du Monday Club (GB)

Le Général D. BOTZARIS, Ancien Ministre (GR)

Mr Dr Heinrich BOX, Ambassadeur Hre, Directeur Général des Relations Etrangères de la C.D.U. (D)

Mr Xavier CONDE, Ambassadeur d'Espagne à Bonn (E)

Mr Bernard DESTREMEAU, Ancien Ministre, Secrétaire d'Etat aux Affaires Etrangères (F)

Le Rd Père Yves-Marc DUBOIS (F)

Mr Paul ECONOMOU GOURAS, Ambassadeur, Ancien Ministre (GR)

Vicomte EYSKENS, Ministre d'Etat, Ancien Premier Ministre (B)

Mr René FEIT, Député, Maire de Lons le Saunier, Conseiller Général du Jura (F)

Don Manuel FRAGA IRIBARNE, Ancien Ambassadeur d'Espagne à Londres, Ancien Ministre (E)

Baron Pierre de GAIFFIER d'HESTROY, Ambassadeur de Belgique à Mexico (B)

Baron von GAUPP BERGHAUSEN, Président International du C.E.D.I. (A)

Mr Arthur GILSON, Ancien Député, Ancien Ministre (B)

Mr Hermann HEUSCH, Président de la Chambre de Commerce et d'Industrie, Ancien Bourgmestre d'Aix la Chapelle. (D)

Madame Marie-Elisabeth KLEE, Ancien Membre du Bundestag, Conseiller Culturel de l'Etat Rhin-Palatinat (D)

Mr Walter KUNNEN, Président du Beweging voor de Verenigde Staten van Europa (B)

Mr Francis LA COSTE, Ambassadeur Hre de France (F)

Mr de LA VERPILIERE, Ancien Député (F)

Mr Yvan-Matteo LOMBARDO, Ancien Ministre, Président du Comité Atlantique Italien (I)

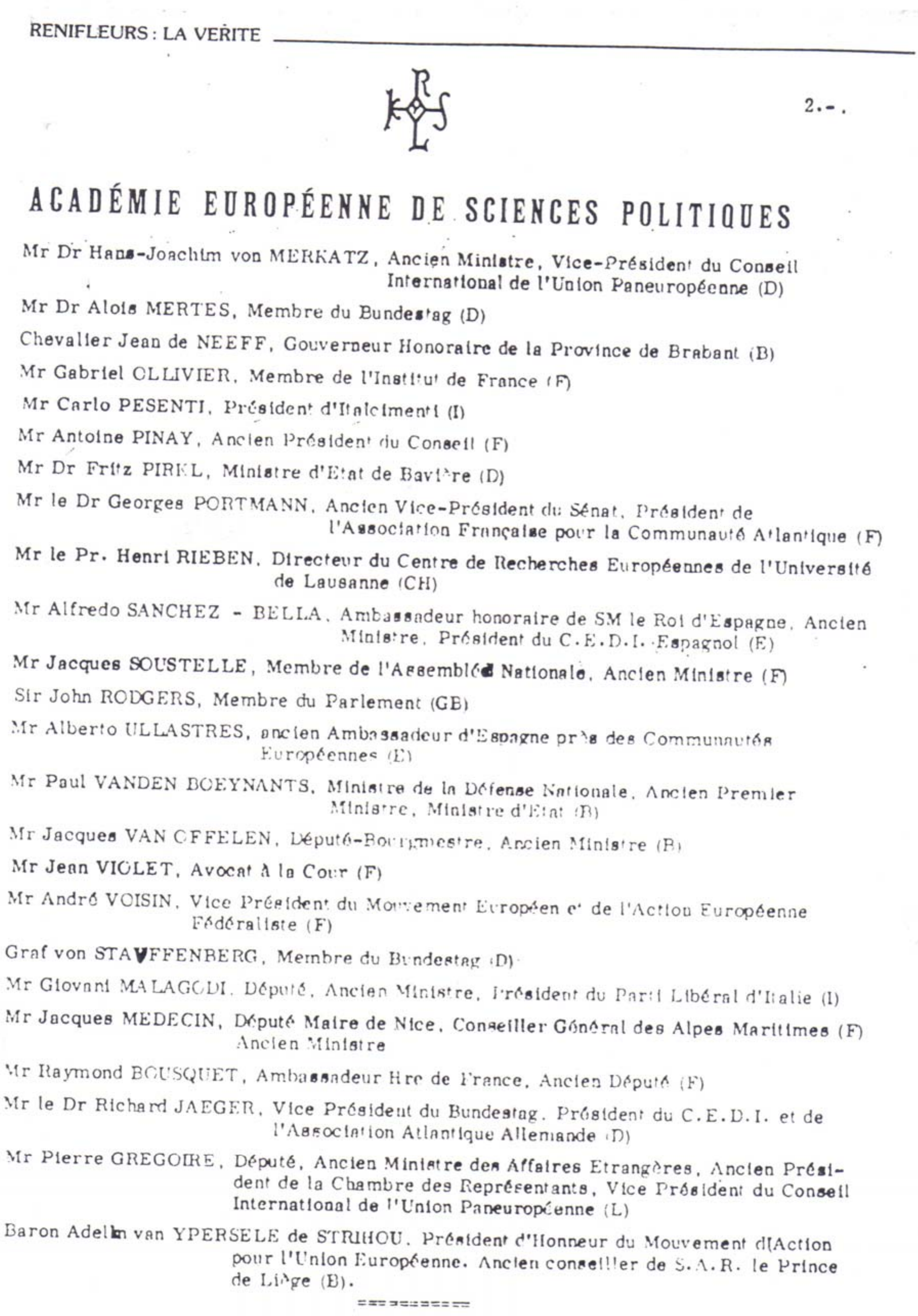

RENIFLEURS : LA VERITE

2.-.

ACADÉMIE EUROPÉENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES

Mr Dr Hans-Joachim von MERKATZ, Ancien Ministre, Vice-Président du Conseil International de l'Union Paneuropéenne (D)

Mr Dr Alois MERTES, Membre du Bundestag (D)

Chevalier Jean de NEEFF, Gouverneur Honoraire de la Province de Brabant (B)

Mr Gabriel OLLIVIER, Membre de l'Institut de France (F)

Mr Carlo PESENTI, Président d'Italcimenti (I)

Mr Antoine PINAY, Ancien Président du Conseil (F)

Mr Dr Fritz PIRKL, Ministre d'Etat de Bavière (D)

Mr le Dr Georges PORTMANN, Ancien Vice-Président du Sénat, Président de l'Association Française pour la Communauté Atlantique (F)

Mr le Pr. Henri RIEBEN, Directeur du Centre de Recherches Européennes de l'Université de Lausanne (CH)

Mr Alfredo SANCHEZ - BELLA, Ambassadeur honoraire de SM le Roi d'Espagne, Ancien Ministre, Président du C.E.D.I. Espagnol (E)

Mr Jacques SOUSTELLE, Membre de l'Assemblée Nationale, Ancien Ministre (F)

Sir John RODGERS, Membre du Parlement (GB)

Mr Alberto ULLASTRES, ancien Ambassadeur d'Espagne près des Communautés Européennes (E)

Mr Paul VANDEN BOEYNANTS, Ministre de la Défense Nationale, Ancien Premier Ministre, Ministre d'Etat (B)

Mr Jacques VAN OFFELEN, Député-Bourgmestre, Ancien Ministre (B)

Mr Jean VIOLET, Avocat à la Cour (F)

Mr André VOISIN, Vice Président du Mouvement Européen et de l'Action Européenne Fédéraliste (F)

Graf von STAUFFENBERG, Membre du Bundestag (D)

Mr Giovanni MALAGODI, Député, Ancien Ministre, Président du Parti Libéral d'Italie (I)

Mr Jacques MEDECIN, Député Maire de Nice, Conseiller Général des Alpes Maritimes (F) Ancien Ministre

Mr Raymond BOUSQUET, Ambassadeur Hre de France, Ancien Député (F)

Mr le Dr Richard JAEGER, Vice Président du Bundestag, Président du C.E.D.I. et de l'Association Atlantique Allemande (D)

Mr Pierre GREGOIRE, Député, Ancien Ministre des Affaires Etrangères, Ancien Président de la Chambre des Représentants, Vice Président du Conseil International de l'Union Paneuropéenne (L)

Baron Adelin van YPERSELE de STRIHOU, Président d'Honneur du Mouvement d'Action pour l'Union Européenne, Ancien conseiller de S.A.R. le Prince de Liège (B).

==========

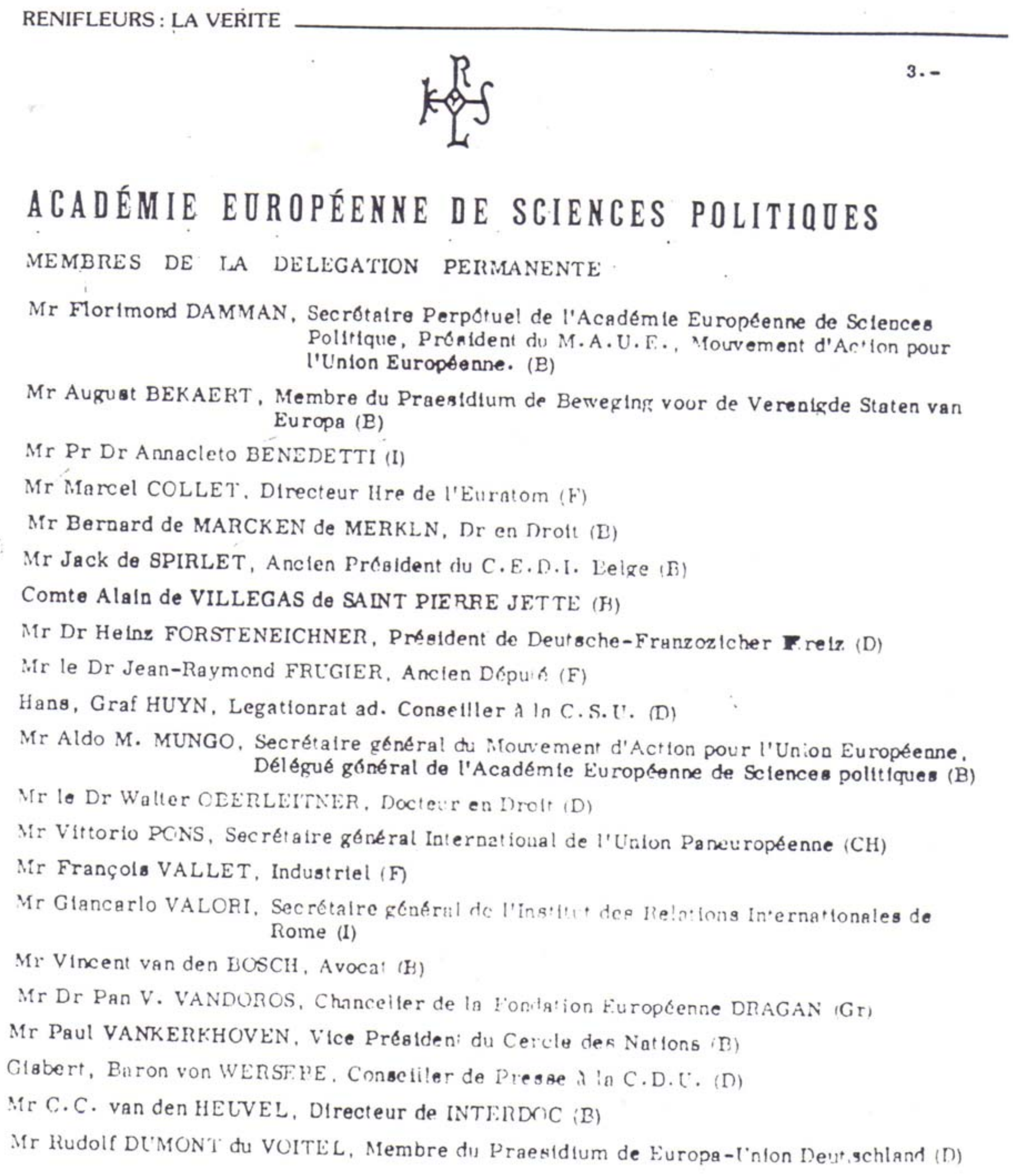

RENIFLEURS : LA VERITE

3.-

ACADÉMIE EUROPÉENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES

MEMBRES DE LA DELEGATION PERMANENTE

Mr Florimond DAMMAN, Secrétaire Perpétuel de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politique, Président du M.A.U.E., Mouvement d'Action pour l'Union Européenne. (B)

Mr August BEKAERT, Membre du Praesidium de Beweging voor de Verenigde Staten van Europa (B)

Mr Pr Dr Annacleto BENEDETTI (I)

Mr Marcel COLLET, Directeur Hre de l'Euratom (F)

Mr Bernard de MARCKEN de MERKEN, Dr en Droit (B)

Mr Jack de SPIRLET, Ancien Président du C.E.D.I. Belge (B)

Comte Alain de VILLEGAS de SAINT PIERRE JETTE (B)

Mr Dr Heinz FORSTENEICHNER, Président de Deutsche-Franzozicher Kreiz (D)

Mr le Dr Jean-Raymond FRUGIER, Ancien Député (F)

Hans, Graf HUYN, Legationrat ad. Conseiller à la C.S.U. (D)

Mr Aldo M. MUNGO, Secrétaire général du Mouvement d'Action pour l'Union Européenne, Délégué général de l'Académie Européenne de Sciences politiques (B)

Mr le Dr Walter OBERLEITNER, Docteur en Droit (D)

Mr Vittorio PONS, Secrétaire général International de l'Union Paneuropéenne (CH)

Mr François VALLET, Industriel (F)

Mr Giancarlo VALORI, Secrétaire général de l'Institut des Relations Internationales de Rome (I)

Mr Vincent van den BOSCH, Avocat (B)

Mr Dr Pan V. VANDOROS, Chancelier de la Fondation Européenne DRAGAN (Gr)

Mr Paul VANKERKHOVEN, Vice Président du Cercle des Nations (B)

Gisbert, Baron von WERSEBE, Conseiller de Presse à la C.D.U. (D)

Mr C.C. van den HEUVEL, Directeur de INTERDOC (B)

Mr Rudolf DUMONT du VOITEL, Membre du Praesidium de Europa-Union Deutschland (D)

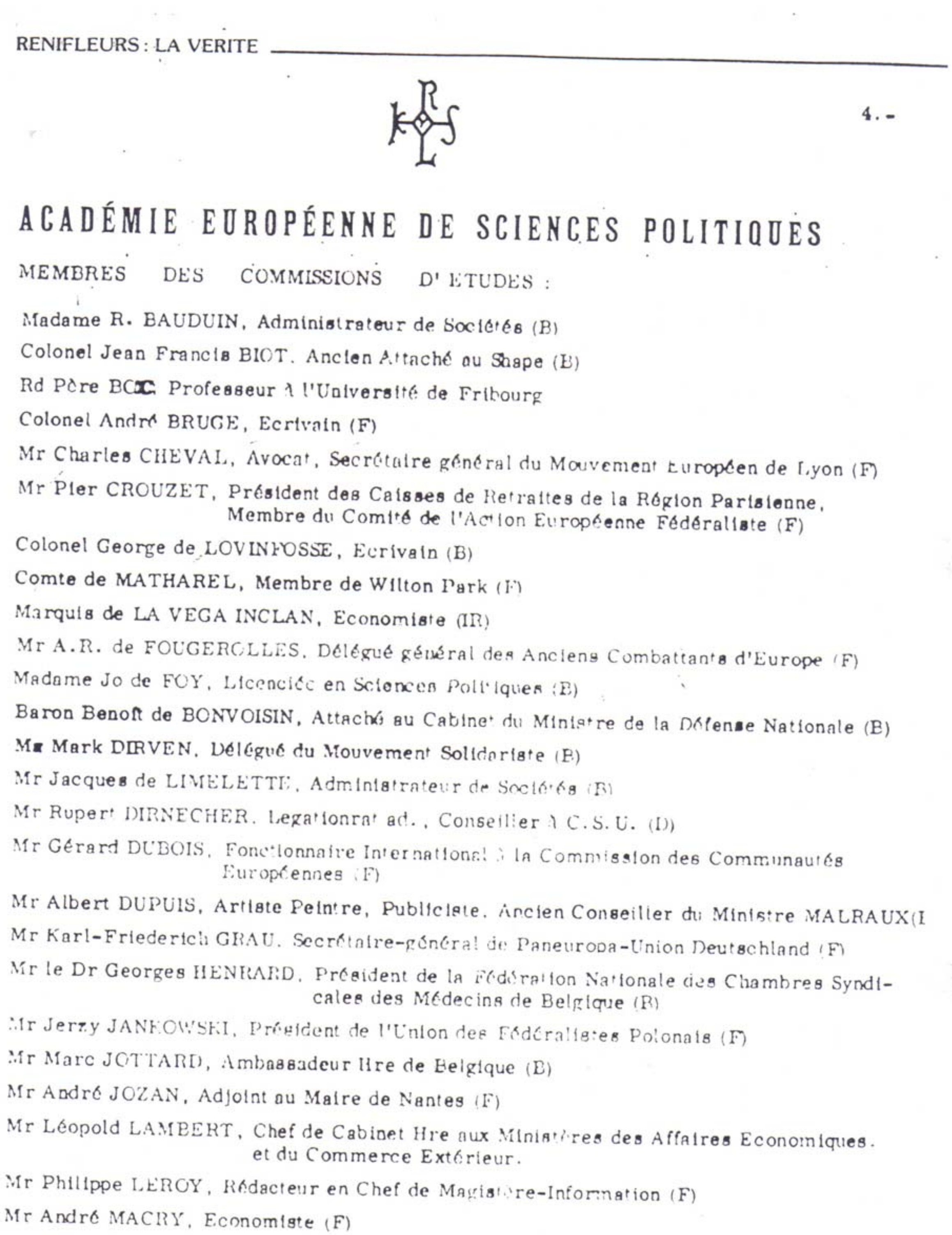

RENIFLEURS : LA VERITE

4.-

ACADÉMIE EUROPÉENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES

MEMBRES DES COMMISSIONS D' ETUDES :

Madame R. BAUDUIN, Administrateur de Sociétés (B)
Colonel Jean Francis BIOT, Ancien Attaché au Shape (B)
Rd Père BOC Professeur à l'Université de Fribourg
Colonel André BRUGE, Ecrivain (F)
Mr Charles CHEVAL, Avocat, Secrétaire général du Mouvement Européen de Lyon (F)
Mr Pier CROUZET, Président des Caisses de Retraites de la Région Parisienne, Membre du Comité de l'Action Européenne Fédéraliste (F)
Colonel George de LOVINFOSSE, Ecrivain (B)
Comte de MATHAREL, Membre de Wilton Park (F)
Marquis de LA VEGA INCLAN, Economiste (IR)
Mr A.R. de FOUGEROLLES, Délégué général des Anciens Combattants d'Europe (F)
Madame Jo de FOY, Licenciée en Sciences Politiques (B)
Baron Benoît de BONVOISIN, Attaché au Cabinet du Ministre de la Défense Nationale (B)
Mr Mark DIRVEN, Délégué du Mouvement Solidariste (B)
Mr Jacques de LIMELETTE, Administrateur de Sociétés (B)
Mr Rupert DIRNECHER, Legationrat ad., Conseiller à C.S.U. (D)
Mr Gérard DUBOIS, Fonctionnaire International à la Commission des Communautés Européennes (F)
Mr Albert DUPUIS, Artiste Peintre, Publiciste, Ancien Conseiller du Ministre MALRAUX(I
Mr Karl-Friederich GRAU, Secrétaire-général de Paneuropa-Union Deutschland (F)
Mr le Dr Georges HENRARD, Président de la Fédération Nationale des Chambres Syndicales des Médecins de Belgique (B)
Mr Jerzy JANKOWSKI, Président de l'Union des Fédéralistes Polonais (F)
Mr Marc JOTTARD, Ambassadeur Hre de Belgique (B)
Mr André JOZAN, Adjoint au Maire de Nantes (F)
Mr Léopold LAMBERT, Chef de Cabinet Hre aux Ministères des Affaires Economiques. et du Commerce Extérieur.
Mr Philippe LEROY, Rédacteur en Chef de Magistère-Information (F)
Mr André MACRY, Economiste (F)

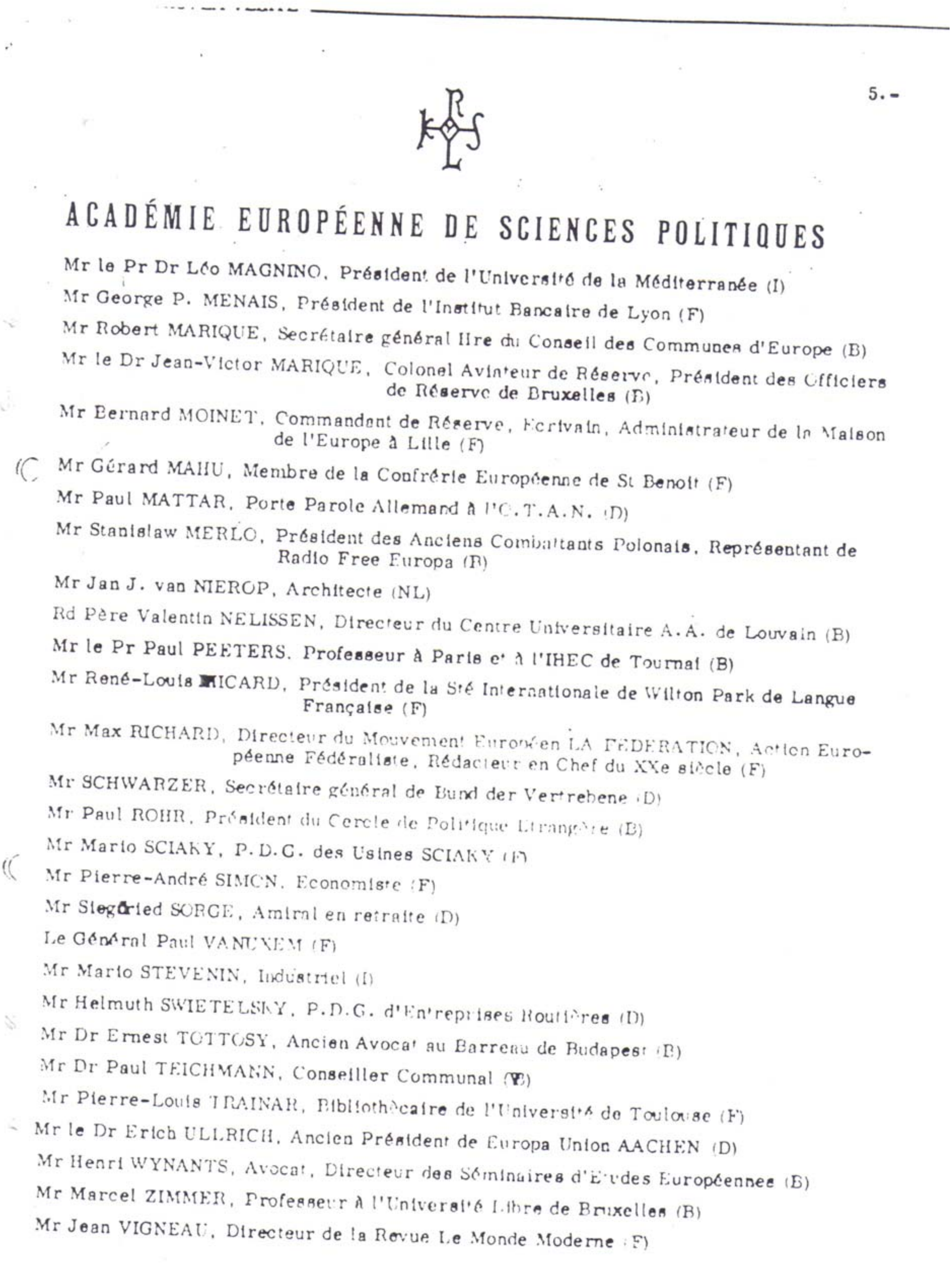

5.-

ACADÉMIE EUROPÉENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES

Mr le Pr Dr Léo MAGNINO, Président de l'Université de la Méditerranée (I)
Mr George P. MENAIS, Président de l'Institut Bancaire de Lyon (F)
Mr Robert MARIQUE, Secrétaire général Ire du Conseil des Communes d'Europe (B)
Mr le Dr Jean-Victor MARIQUE, Colonel Aviateur de Réserve, Président des Officiers de Réserve de Bruxelles (B)
Mr Bernard MOINET, Commandant de Réserve, Ecrivain, Administrateur de la Maison de l'Europe à Lille (F)
Mr Gérard MAHU, Membre de la Confrérie Européenne de St Benoit (F)
Mr Paul MATTAR, Porte Parole Allemand à l'O.T.A.N. (D)
Mr Stanislaw MERLO, Président des Anciens Combattants Polonais, Représentant de Radio Free Europa (B)
Mr Jan J. van NIEROP, Architecte (NL)
Rd Père Valentin NELISSEN, Directeur du Centre Universitaire A.A. de Louvain (B)
Mr le Pr Paul PEETERS, Professeur à Paris et à l'IHEC de Tournai (B)
Mr René-Louis RICARD, Président de la Sté Internationale de Wilton Park de Langue Française (F)
Mr Max RICHARD, Directeur du Mouvement Européen LA FEDERATION, Action Européenne Fédéraliste, Rédacteur en Chef du XXe siècle (F)
Mr SCHWARZER, Secrétaire général de Bund der Vertrebene (D)
Mr Paul ROHR, Président du Cercle de Politique Etrangère (B)
Mr Mario SCIAKY, P.D.G. des Usines SCIAKY (F)
Mr Pierre-André SIMON, Economiste (F)
Mr Siegfried SORGE, Amiral en retraite (D)
Le Général Paul VANUXEM (F)
Mr Mario STEVENIN, Industriel (I)
Mr Helmuth SWIETELSKY, P.D.G. d'Entreprises Routières (D)
Mr Dr Ernest TOTTOSY, Ancien Avocat au Barreau de Budapest (B)
Mr Dr Paul TEICHMANN, Conseiller Communal (B)
Mr Pierre-Louis TRAINAR, Bibliothècaire de l'Université de Toulouse (F)
Mr le Dr Erich ULLRICH, Ancien Président de Europa Union AACHEN (D)
Mr Henri WYNANTS, Avocat, Directeur des Séminaires d'Etudes Européennes (B)
Mr Marcel ZIMMER, Professeur à l'Université Libre de Bruxelles (B)
Mr Jean VIGNEAU, Directeur de la Revue Le Monde Moderne (F)

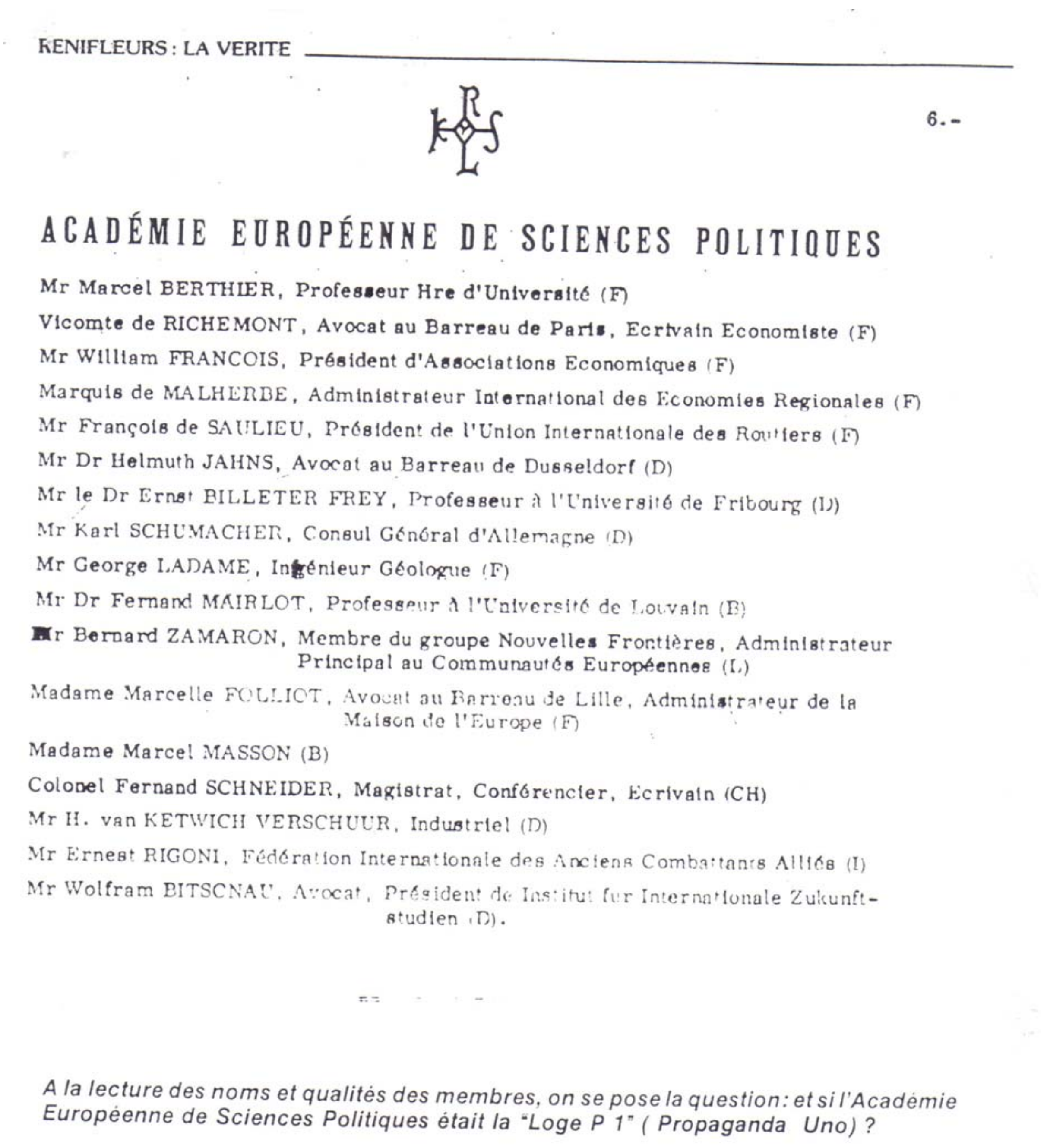

RENIFLEURS : LA VERITE

6.-

ACADÉMIE EUROPÉENNE DE SCIENCES POLITIQUES

Mr Marcel BERTHIER, Professeur Hre d'Université (F)

Vicomte de RICHEMONT, Avocat au Barreau de Paris, Ecrivain Economiste (F)

Mr William FRANCOIS, Président d'Associations Economiques (F)

Marquis de MALHERBE, Administrateur International des Economies Regionales (F)

Mr François de SAULIEU, Président de l'Union Internationale des Routiers (F)

Mr Dr Helmuth JAHNS, Avocat au Barreau de Dusseldorf (D)

Mr le Dr Ernst BILLETER FREY, Professeur à l'Université de Fribourg (D)

Mr Karl SCHUMACHER, Consul Général d'Allemagne (D)

Mr George LADAME, Ingénieur Géologue (F)

Mr Dr Fernand MAIRLOT, Professeur à l'Université de Louvain (B)

Mr Bernard ZAMARON, Membre du groupe Nouvelles Frontières, Administrateur Principal au Communautés Européennes (L)

Madame Marcelle FOLLIOT, Avocat au Barreau de Lille, Administrateur de la Maison de l'Europe (F)

Madame Marcel MASSON (B)

Colonel Fernand SCHNEIDER, Magistrat, Conférencier, Ecrivain (CH)

Mr H. van KETWICH VERSCHUUR, Industriel (D)

Mr Ernest RIGONI, Fédération Internationale des Anciens Combattants Alliés (I)

Mr Wolfram BITSCNAU, Avocat, Président de Institut fur Internationale Zukunftstudien (D).

A la lecture des noms et qualités des membres, on se pose la question: et si l'Académie Européenne de Sciences Politiques était la "Loge P 1" (Propaganda Uno) ?

Below: Brüsewitz Centre appeal for funds, March-April 1978, from YEF.

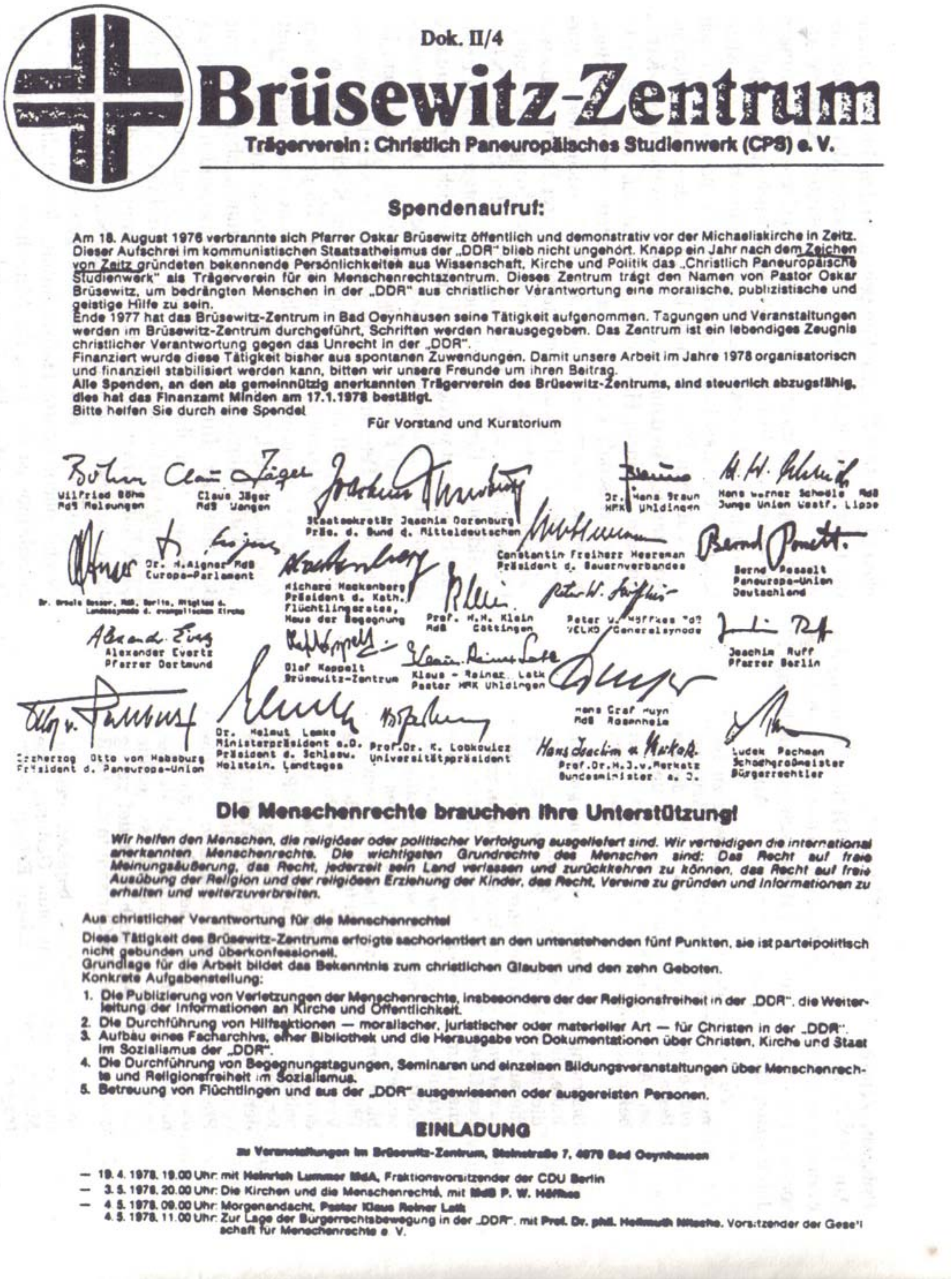

Dok. II/4

Brüsewitz-Zentrum

Trägerverein: Christlich Paneuropäisches Studienwerk (CPS) e. V.

Spendenaufruf:

Am 18. August 1976 verbrannte sich Pfarrer Oskar Brüsewitz öffentlich und demonstrativ vor der Michaeliskirche in Zeitz. Dieser Aufschrei im kommunistischen Staatsatheismus der „DDR" blieb nicht ungehört. Knapp ein Jahr nach dem Zeichen von Zeitz gründeten bekennende Persönlichkeiten aus Wissenschaft, Kirche und Politik das „Christlich Paneuropäische Studienwerk" als Trägerverein für ein Menschenrechtszentrum. Dieses Zentrum trägt den Namen von Pastor Oskar Brüsewitz, um bedrängten Menschen in der „DDR" aus christlicher Verantwortung eine moralische, publizistische und geistige Hilfe zu sein.

Ende 1977 hat das Brüsewitz-Zentrum in Bad Oeynhausen seine Tätigkeit aufgenommen. Tagungen und Veranstaltungen werden im Brüsewitz-Zentrum durchgeführt, Schriften werden herausgegeben. Das Zentrum ist ein lebendiges Zeugnis christlicher Verantwortung gegen das Unrecht in der „DDR".

Finanziert wurde diese Tätigkeit bisher aus spontanen Zuwendungen. Damit unsere Arbeit im Jahre 1978 organisatorisch und finanziell stabilisiert werden kann, bitten wir unsere Freunde um ihren Beitrag.

Alle Spenden, an den als gemeinnützig anerkannten Trägerverein des Brüsewitz-Zentrums, sind steuerlich abzugsfähig, dies hat das Finanzamt Minden am 17.1.1978 bestätigt.

Bitte helfen Sie durch eine Spende!

Für Vorstand und Kuratorium

Böhm
Wilfried Böhm
MdB Melsungen

Claus Jäger
Claus Jäger
MdB Wangen

Staatsekretär Joachim Dorenburg
Präs. d. Bund d. Mitteldeutschen

Dr. Hans Braun
HRK Uhldingen

Hans Werner Schoele MdB
Junge Union Westf. Lippe

Dr. H. Aigner MdB
Europa-Parlament

Dr. Ursula Besser, MdB, Berlin, Mitglied d. Landessynode d. evangelischen Kirche

Constantin Freiherr Heereman
Präsident d. Bauernverbandes

Bernd Posselt
Bernd Posselt
Paneuropa-Union Deutschland

Richard Hackenberg
Präsident d. Kath. Flüchtlingsrates,
Haus der Begegnung

Prof. H.H. Klein
MdB Göttingen

Peter W. Höffkes MdB
VELKD Generalsynode

Joachim Ruff
Pfarrer Berlin

Alexand. Evertz
Alexander Evertz
Pfarrer Dortmund

Olaf Koppelt
Brüsewitz-Zentrum

Klaus-Reiner Latk
Klaus - Reiner Latk
Pastor HRK Uhldingen

Hans Graf Huyn
MdB Rosenheim

Otto v. Habsburg
Erzherzog Otto von Habsburg
Präsident d. Paneuropa-Union

Dr. Helmut Lemke
Ministerpräsident a.D.
Präsident d. Schlesw. Holstein. Landtages

Prof. Dr. N. Lobkowicz
Universitätspräsident

Hans Joachim v. Merkatz
Prof. Dr. H.J. v. Merkatz
Bundesminister a. D.

Ludek Pachman
Schachgroßmeister
Bürgerrechtler

Die Menschenrechte brauchen Ihre Unterstützung!

Wir helfen den Menschen, die religiöser oder politischer Verfolgung ausgeliefert sind. Wir verteidigen die international anerkannten Menschenrechte. Die wichtigsten Grundrechte des Menschen sind: Das Recht auf freie Meinungsäußerung, das Recht, jederzeit sein Land verlassen und zurückkehren zu können, das Recht auf freie Ausübung der Religion und der religiösen Erziehung der Kinder, das Recht, Vereine zu gründen und Informationen zu erhalten und weiterzuverbreiten.

Aus christlicher Verantwortung für die Menschenrechte!

Diese Tätigkeit des Brüsewitz-Zentrums erfolgte sachorientiert an den untenstehenden fünf Punkten, sie ist parteipolitisch nicht gebunden und überkonfessionell.
Grundlage für die Arbeit bildet das Bekenntnis zum christlichen Glauben und den zehn Geboten.
Konkrete Aufgabenstellung:

1. Die Publizierung von Verletzungen der Menschenrechte, insbesondere der der Religionsfreiheit in der „DDR", die Weiterleitung der Informationen an Kirche und Öffentlichkeit.
2. Die Durchführung von Hilfsaktionen — moralischer, juristischer oder materieller Art — für Christen in der „DDR".
3. Aufbau eines Facharchivs, einer Bibliothek und die Herausgabe von Dokumentationen über Christen, Kirche und Staat im Sozialismus der „DDR".
4. Die Durchführung von Begegnungstagungen, Seminaren und einzelnen Bildungsveranstaltungen über Menschenrechte und Religionsfreiheit im Sozialismus.
5. Betreuung von Flüchtlingen und aus der „DDR" ausgewiesenen oder ausgereisten Personen.

EINLADUNG

zu Veranstaltungen im Brüsewitz-Zentrum, Steinstraße 7, 4970 Bad Oeynhausen

- 19. 4. 1978, 19.00 Uhr: mit **Heinrich Lummer MdA**, Fraktionsvorsitzender der CDU Berlin
- 3. 5. 1978, 20.00 Uhr: Die Kirchen und die Menschenrechte, mit **MdB P. W. Höffkes**
- 4. 5. 1978, 09.00 Uhr: Morgenandacht, **Pastor Klaus Reiner Latk**

4. 5. 1978, 11.00 Uhr: Zur Lage der Bürgerrechtsbewegung in der „DDR", mit **Prof. Dr. phil. Hellmuth Nitsche**, Vorsitzender der Gesellschaft für Menschenrechte e. V.

Below: Brüsewitz Centre Human Rights Day programme, August 1978, from YEF.

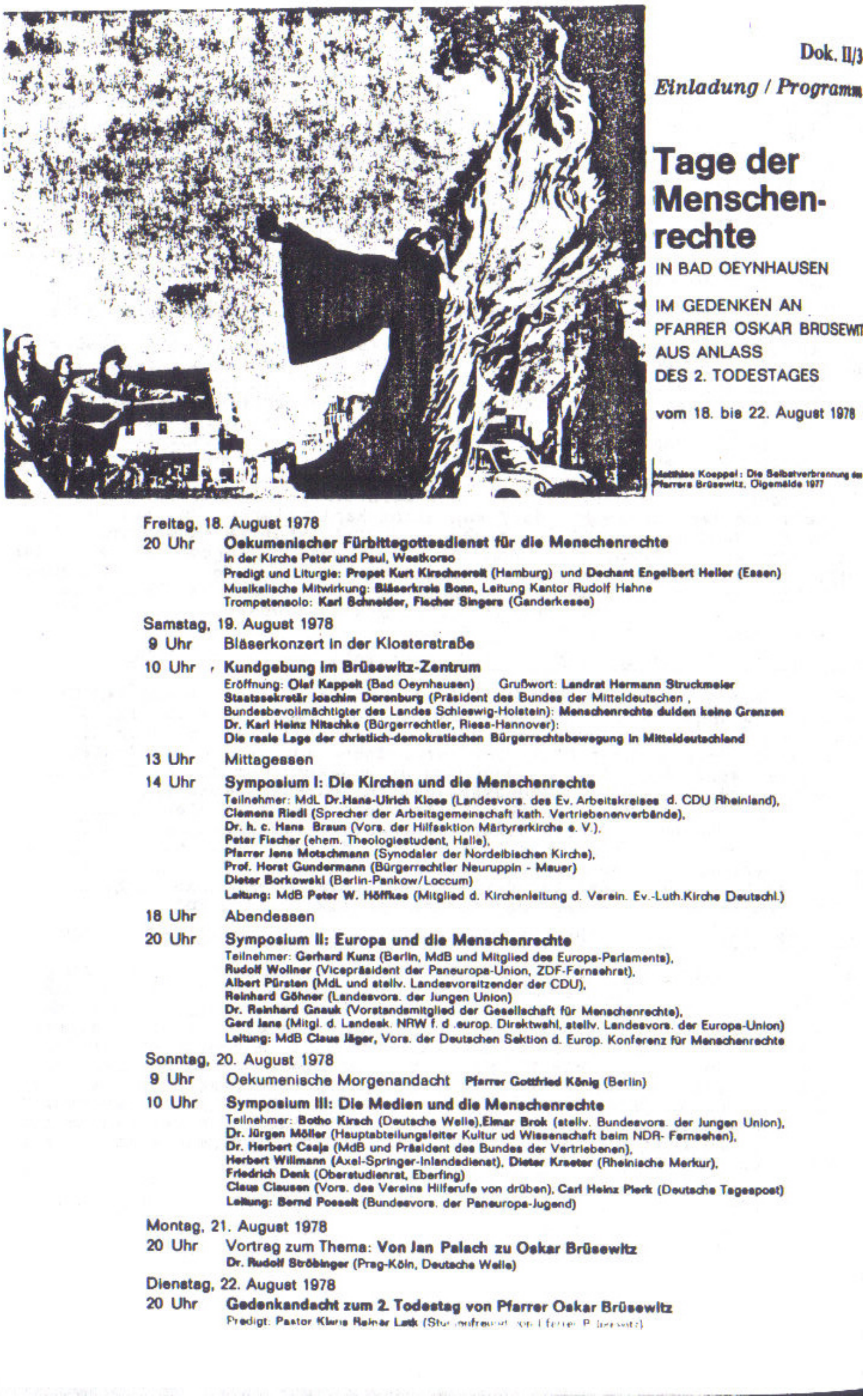

Dok. II/3

Einladung / Programm

Tage der Menschenrechte

IN BAD OEYNHAUSEN

IM GEDENKEN AN
PFARRER OSKAR BRÜSEWIT
AUS ANLASS
DES 2. TODESTAGES

vom 18. bis 22. August 1978

Matthias Koeppel: Die Selbstverbrennung des Pfarrers Brüsewitz, Ölgemälde 1977

Freitag, 18. August 1978

20 Uhr **Oekumenischer Fürbittegottesdienst für die Menschenrechte**
in der Kirche Peter und Paul, Westkorso
Predigt und Liturgie: Propst Kurt Kirschnereit (Hamburg) und **Dechant Engelbert Heller** (Essen)
Musikalische Mitwirkung: **Bläserkreis Bonn,** Leitung Kantor Rudolf Hahne
Trompetensolo: **Karl Schneider, Fischer Singers** (Ganderkesee)

Samstag, 19. August 1978

9 Uhr Bläserkonzert in der Klosterstraße

10 Uhr **Kundgebung im Brüsewitz-Zentrum**
Eröffnung: **Olaf Kappelt** (Bad Oeynhausen) Grußwort: **Landrat Hermann Struckmeier**
Staatssekretär Joachim Dorenburg (Präsident des Bundes der Mitteldeutschen,
Bundesbevollmächtigter des Landes Schleswig-Holstein): **Menschenrechte dulden keine Grenzen**
Dr. Karl Heinz Nitschke (Bürgerrechtler, Riesa-Hannover):
Die reale Lage der christlich-demokratischen Bürgerrechtsbewegung in Mitteldeutschland

13 Uhr Mittagessen

14 Uhr **Symposium I: Die Kirchen und die Menschenrechte**
Teilnehmer: MdL **Dr. Hans-Ulrich Klose** (Landesvors. des Ev. Arbeitskreises d. CDU Rheinland),
Clemens Riedl (Sprecher der Arbeitsgemeinschaft kath. Vertriebenenverbände),
Dr. h. c. Hans Braun (Vors. der Hilfsaktion Märtyrerkirche e. V.),
Peter Fischer (ehem. Theologiestudent, Halle),
Pfarrer Jens Motschmann (Synodaler der Nordelbischen Kirche),
Prof. Horst Gundermann (Bürgerrechtler Neuruppin - Mauer)
Dieter Borkowski (Berlin-Pankow/Loccum)
Leitung: MdB **Peter W. Höffkes** (Mitglied d. Kirchenleitung d. Verein. Ev.-Luth. Kirche Deutschl.)

18 Uhr Abendessen

20 Uhr **Symposium II: Europa und die Menschenrechte**
Teilnehmer: **Gerhard Kunz** (Berlin, MdB und Mitglied des Europa-Parlaments),
Rudolf Wollner (Vicepräsident der Paneuropa-Union, ZDF-Fernsehrat),
Albert Pürsten (MdL und stellv. Landesvorsitzender der CDU),
Reinhard Göhner (Landesvors. der Jungen Union)
Dr. Reinhard Gnauk (Vorstandsmitglied der Gesellschaft für Menschenrechte),
Gerd Jans (Mitgl. d. Landesk. NRW f. d. europ. Direktwahl, stellv. Landesvors. der Europa-Union)
Leitung: MdB **Claus Jäger,** Vors. der Deutschen Sektion d. Europ. Konferenz für **Menschenrechte**

Sonntag, 20. August 1978

9 Uhr Oekumenische Morgenandacht **Pfarrer Gottfried König** (Berlin)

10 Uhr **Symposium III: Die Medien und die Menschenrechte**
Teilnehmer: **Botho Kirsch** (Deutsche Welle), **Elmar Brok** (stellv. Bundesvors. der Jungen Union),
Dr. Jürgen Möller (Hauptabteilungsleiter Kultur ud Wissenschaft beim NDR- Fernsehen),
Dr. Herbert Czaja (MdB und Präsident des Bundes der Vertriebenen),
Herbert Willmann (Axel-Springer-Inlandsdienst), **Dieter Kreeter** (Rheinische Merkur),
Friedrich Denk (Oberstudienrat, Eberfing)
Claus Clausen (Vors. des Vereins Hilferufe von drüben), **Carl Heinz Pierk** (Deutsche Tagespost)
Leitung: Bernd Posselt (Bundesvors. der Paneuropa-Jugend)

Montag, 21. August 1978

20 Uhr Vortrag zum Thema: **Von Jan Palach zu Oskar Brüsewitz**
Dr. Rudolf Ströbinger (Prag-Köln, Deutsche Welle)

Dienstag, 22. August 1978

20 Uhr **Gedenkandacht zum 2. Todestag von Pfarrer Oskar Brüsewitz**
Predigt: **Pastor Klaus Reiner Latk** (Studienfreund von Pfarrer Brüsewitz)

Below: founding document of CLEW, May 1978, from Mungo.

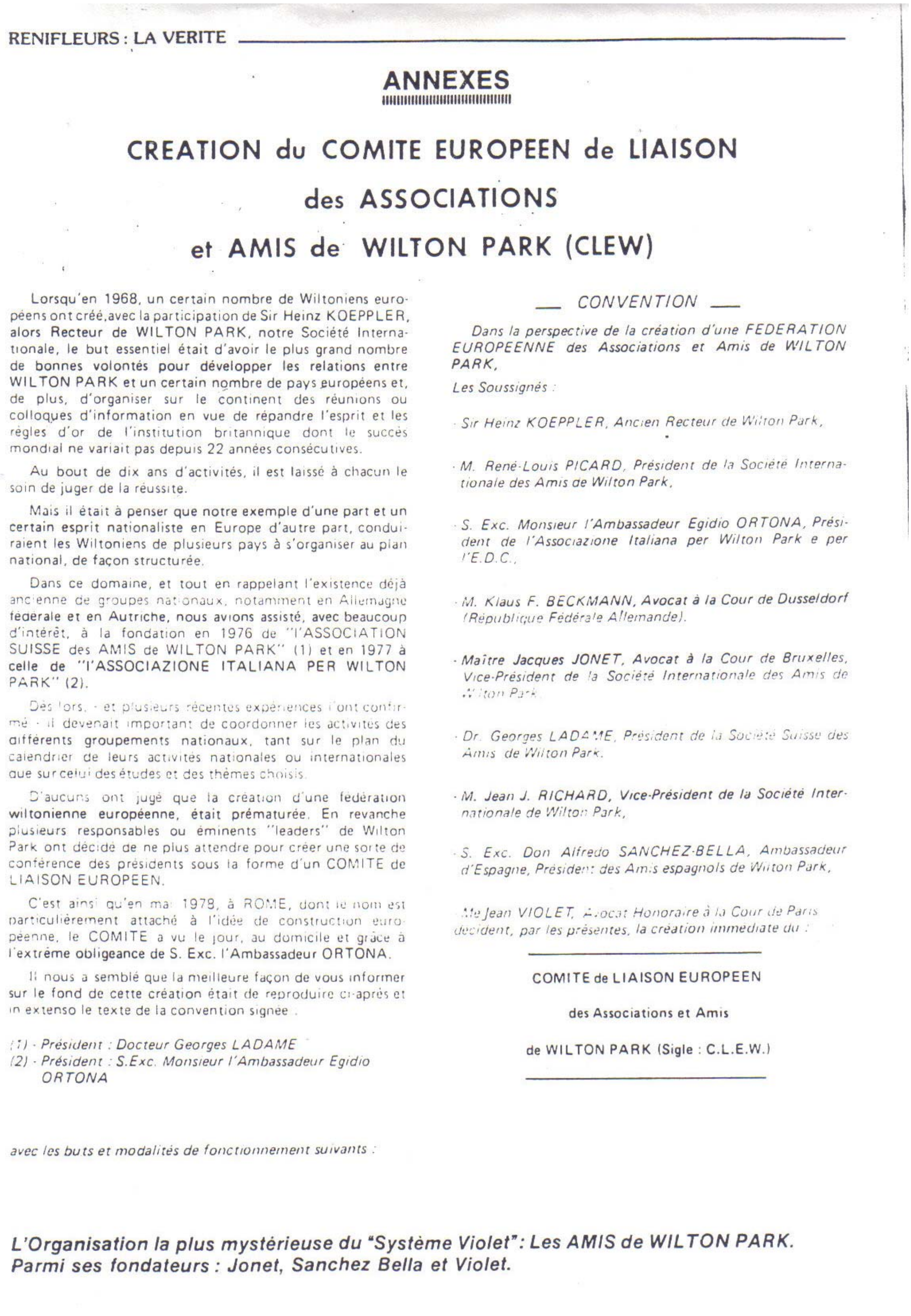

RENIFLEURS : LA VERITE

ANNEXES

CREATION du COMITE EUROPEEN de LIAISON des ASSOCIATIONS et AMIS de WILTON PARK (CLEW)

Lorsqu'en 1968, un certain nombre de Wiltoniens européens ont créé, avec la participation de Sir Heinz KOEPPLER, alors Recteur de WILTON PARK, notre Société Internationale, le but essentiel était d'avoir le plus grand nombre de bonnes volontés pour développer les relations entre WILTON PARK et un certain nombre de pays européens et, de plus, d'organiser sur le continent des réunions ou colloques d'information en vue de répandre l'esprit et les règles d'or de l'institution britannique dont le succès mondial ne variait pas depuis 22 années consécutives.

Au bout de dix ans d'activités, il est laissé à chacun le soin de juger de la réussite.

Mais il était à penser que notre exemple d'une part et un certain esprit nationaliste en Europe d'autre part, conduiraient les Wiltoniens de plusieurs pays à s'organiser au plan national, de façon structurée.

Dans ce domaine, et tout en rappelant l'existence déjà ancienne de groupes nationaux, notamment en Allemagne fédérale et en Autriche, nous avions assisté, avec beaucoup d'intérêt, à la fondation en 1976 de "l'ASSOCIATION SUISSE des AMIS de WILTON PARK" (1) et en 1977 à celle de "l'ASSOCIAZIONE ITALIANA PER WILTON PARK" (2).

Dès lors, - et plusieurs récentes expériences l'ont confirmé - il devenait important de coordonner les activités des différents groupements nationaux, tant sur le plan du calendrier de leurs activités nationales ou internationales que sur celui des études et des thèmes choisis.

D'aucuns ont jugé que la création d'une fédération wiltonienne européenne, était prématurée. En revanche plusieurs responsables ou éminents "leaders" de Wilton Park ont décidé de ne plus attendre pour créer une sorte de conférence des présidents sous la forme d'un COMITE de LIAISON EUROPEEN.

C'est ainsi qu'en mai 1978, à ROME, dont le nom est particulièrement attaché à l'idée de construction européenne, le COMITE a vu le jour, au domicile et grâce à l'extrême obligeance de S. Exc. l'Ambassadeur ORTONA.

Il nous a semblé que la meilleure façon de vous informer sur le fond de cette création était de reproduire ci-après et in extenso le texte de la convention signée.

— *CONVENTION* —

Dans la perspective de la création d'une FEDERATION EUROPEENNE des Associations et Amis de WILTON PARK,

Les Soussignés :

- *Sir Heinz KOEPPLER, Ancien Recteur de Wilton Park,*
- *M. René-Louis PICARD, Président de la Société Internationale des Amis de Wilton Park,*
- *S. Exc. Monsieur l'Ambassadeur Egidio ORTONA, Président de l'Associazione Italiana per Wilton Park e per l'E.D.C.,*
- *M. Klaus F. BECKMANN, Avocat à la Cour de Dusseldorf (République Fédérale Allemande).*
- *Maître Jacques JONET, Avocat à la Cour de Bruxelles, Vice-Président de la Société Internationale des Amis de Wilton Park.*
- *Dr. Georges LADAME, Président de la Société Suisse des Amis de Wilton Park.*
- *M. Jean J. RICHARD, Vice-Président de la Société Internationale de Wilton Park,*
- *S. Exc. Don Alfredo SANCHEZ-BELLA, Ambassadeur d'Espagne, Président des Amis espagnols de Wilton Park,*

Me Jean VIOLET, Avocat Honoraire à la Cour de Paris décident, par les présentes, la création immédiate du :

COMITE de LIAISON EUROPEEN

des Associations et Amis

de WILTON PARK (Sigle : C.L.E.W.)

avec les buts et modalités de fonctionnement suivants :

---

(1) - Président : Docteur Georges LADAME

(2) - Président : S.Exc. Monsieur l'Ambassadeur Egidio ORTONA

L'Organisation la plus mystérieuse du "Système Violet" : Les AMIS de WILTON PARK. Parmi ses fondateurs : Jonet, Sanchez Bella et Violet.

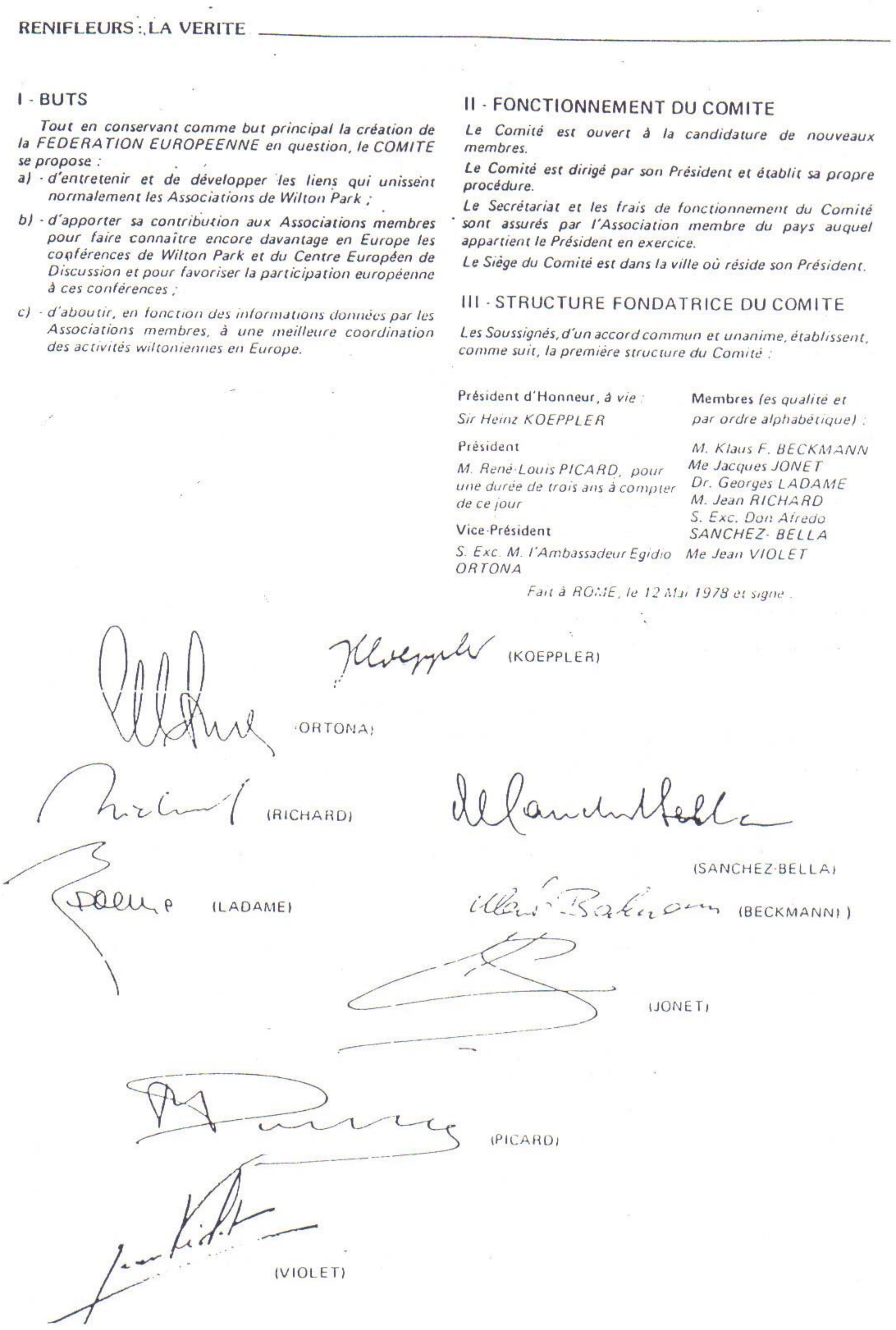

RENIFLEURS : LA VERITE

I - BUTS

Tout en conservant comme but principal la création de la FEDERATION EUROPEENNE en question, le COMITE se propose :

a) - d'entretenir et de développer les liens qui unissent normalement les Associations de Wilton Park ;

b) - d'apporter sa contribution aux Associations membres pour faire connaître encore davantage en Europe les conférences de Wilton Park et du Centre Européen de Discussion et pour favoriser la participation européenne à ces conférences ;

c) - d'aboutir, en fonction des informations données par les Associations membres, à une meilleure coordination des activités wiltoniennes en Europe.

II - FONCTIONNEMENT DU COMITE

Le Comité est ouvert à la candidature de nouveaux membres.

Le Comité est dirigé par son Président et établit sa propre procédure.

Le Secrétariat et les frais de fonctionnement du Comité sont assurés par l'Association membre du pays auquel appartient le Président en exercice.

Le Siège du Comité est dans la ville où réside son Président.

III - STRUCTURE FONDATRICE DU COMITE

Les Soussignés, d'un accord commun et unanime, établissent, comme suit, la première structure du Comité :

Président d'Honneur, *à vie :*
Sir Heinz KOEPPLER

Président
M. René-Louis PICARD, pour une durée de trois ans à compter de ce jour

Vice-Président
S. Exc. M. l'Ambassadeur Egidio ORTONA

Membres *(es qualité et par ordre alphabétique) :*
M. Klaus F. BECKMANN
Me Jacques JONET
Dr. Georges LADAME
M. Jean RICHARD
S. Exc. Don Afredo SANCHEZ- BELLA
Me Jean VIOLET

Fait à ROME, le 12 Mai 1978 et signé.

(KOEPPLER)

(ORTONA)

(RICHARD)

(SANCHEZ-BELLA)

(LADAME)

(BECKMANN)

(JONET)

(PICARD)

(VIOLET)

Below: ISP bulletin produced by Grau, October 1978, from YEF.

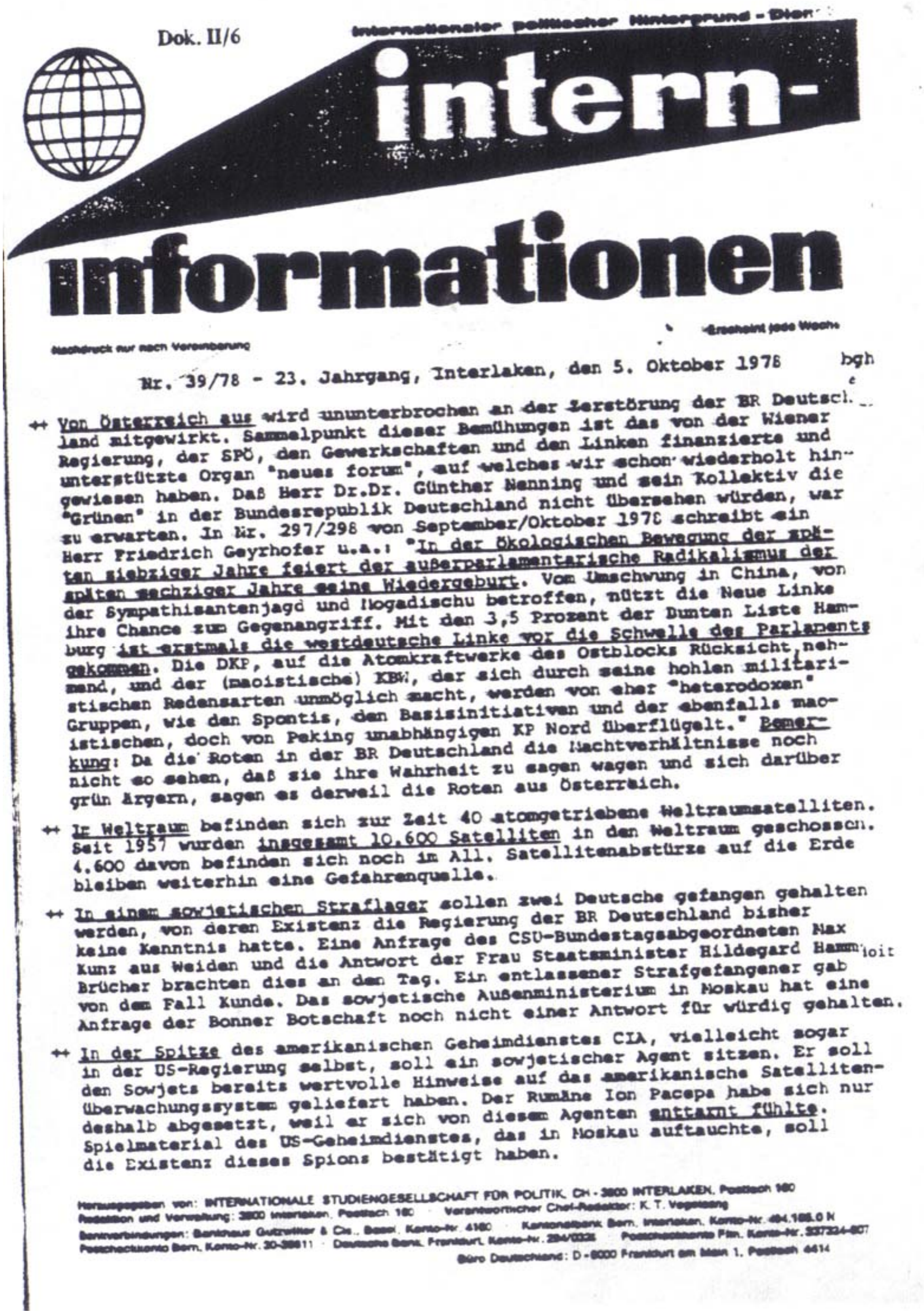

Dok. II/6

Internationaler politischer Hintergrund-Dienst

intern-informationen

Erscheint jede Woche

Nachdruck nur nach Vereinbarung

Nr. 39/78 - 23. Jahrgang, Interlaken, den 5. Oktober 1978

bgh

++ Von Österreich aus wird ununterbrochen an der Zerstörung der BR Deutschland mitgewirkt. Sammelpunkt dieser Bemühungen ist das von der Wiener Regierung, der SPÖ, den Gewerkschaften und den Linken finanzierte und unterstützte Organ "neues forum", auf welches wir schon wiederholt hingewiesen haben. Daß Herr Dr.Dr. Günther Nenning und sein Kollektiv die "Grünen" in der Bundesrepublik Deutschland nicht übersehen würden, war zu erwarten. In Nr. 297/298 von September/Oktober 1978 schreibt ein Herr Friedrich Geyrhofer u.a.: "In der ökologischen Bewegung der späten siebziger Jahre feiert der außerparlamentarische Radikalismus der späten sechziger Jahre seine Wiedergeburt. Vom Umschwung in China, von der Sympathisantenjagd und Mogadischu betroffen, nützt die Neue Linke ihre Chance zum Gegenangriff. Mit den 3,5 Prozent der Bunten Liste Hamburg ist erstmals die westdeutsche Linke vor die Schwelle des Parlaments gekommen. Die DKP, auf die Atomkraftwerke des Ostblocks Rücksicht nehmend, und der (maoistische) KBW, der sich durch seine hohlen militaristischen Redensarten unmöglich macht, werden von eher "heterodoxen" Gruppen, wie den Spontis, den Basisinitiativen und der ebenfalls maoistischen, doch von Peking unabhängigen KP Nord überflügelt." Bemerkung: Da die Roten in der BR Deutschland die Machtverhältnisse noch nicht so sehen, daß sie ihre Wahrheit zu sagen wagen und sich darüber grün ärgern, sagen es derweil die Roten aus Österreich.

++ Im Weltraum befinden sich zur Zeit 40 atomgetriebene Weltraumsatelliten. Seit 1957 wurden insgesamt 10.600 Satelliten in den Weltraum geschossen. 4.600 davon befinden sich noch im All. Satellitenabstürze auf die Erde bleiben weiterhin eine Gefahrenquelle.

++ In einem sowjetischen Straflager sollen zwei Deutsche gefangen gehalten werden, von deren Existenz die Regierung der BR Deutschland bisher keine Kenntnis hatte. Eine Anfrage des CSU-Bundestagsabgeordneten Max Kunz aus Weiden und die Antwort der Frau Staatsminister Hildegard Hamm-Brücher brachten dies an den Tag. Ein entlassener Strafgefangener gab von dem Fall Kunde. Das sowjetische Außenministerium in Moskau hat eine Anfrage der Bonner Botschaft noch nicht einer Antwort für würdig gehalten.

++ In der Spitze des amerikanischen Geheimdienstes CIA, vielleicht sogar in der US-Regierung selbst, soll ein sowjetischer Agent sitzen. Er soll den Sowjets bereits wertvolle Hinweise auf das amerikanische Satellitenüberwachungssystem geliefert haben. Der Rumäne Ion Pacepa habe sich nur deshalb abgesetzt, weil er sich von diesem Agenten enttarnt fühlte. Spielmaterial des US-Geheimdienstes, das in Moskau auftauchte, soll die Existenz dieses Spions bestätigt haben.

Herausgegeben von: INTERNATIONALE STUDIENGESELLSCHAFT FÜR POLITIK, CH-3800 INTERLAKEN, Postfach 160
Redaktion und Verwaltung: 3800 Interlaken, Postfach 160 · Verantwortlicher Chef-Redaktor: K. T. Vogelsang
Bankverbindungen: Bankhaus Gutzwiller & Cie., Basel, Konto-Nr. 4160 · Kantonalbank Bern, Interlaken, Konto-Nr. 404.165.0 K
Postscheckkonto Bern, Konto-Nr. 30-38611 · Deutsche Bank, Frankfurt, Konto-Nr. 294/0326 · Postscheckkonto Ffm., Konto-Nr. 337324-607
Büro Deutschland: D-6000 Frankfurt am Main 1, Postfach 4614

Next two pages: ISC publications list from Conflict Study 106, April 1979

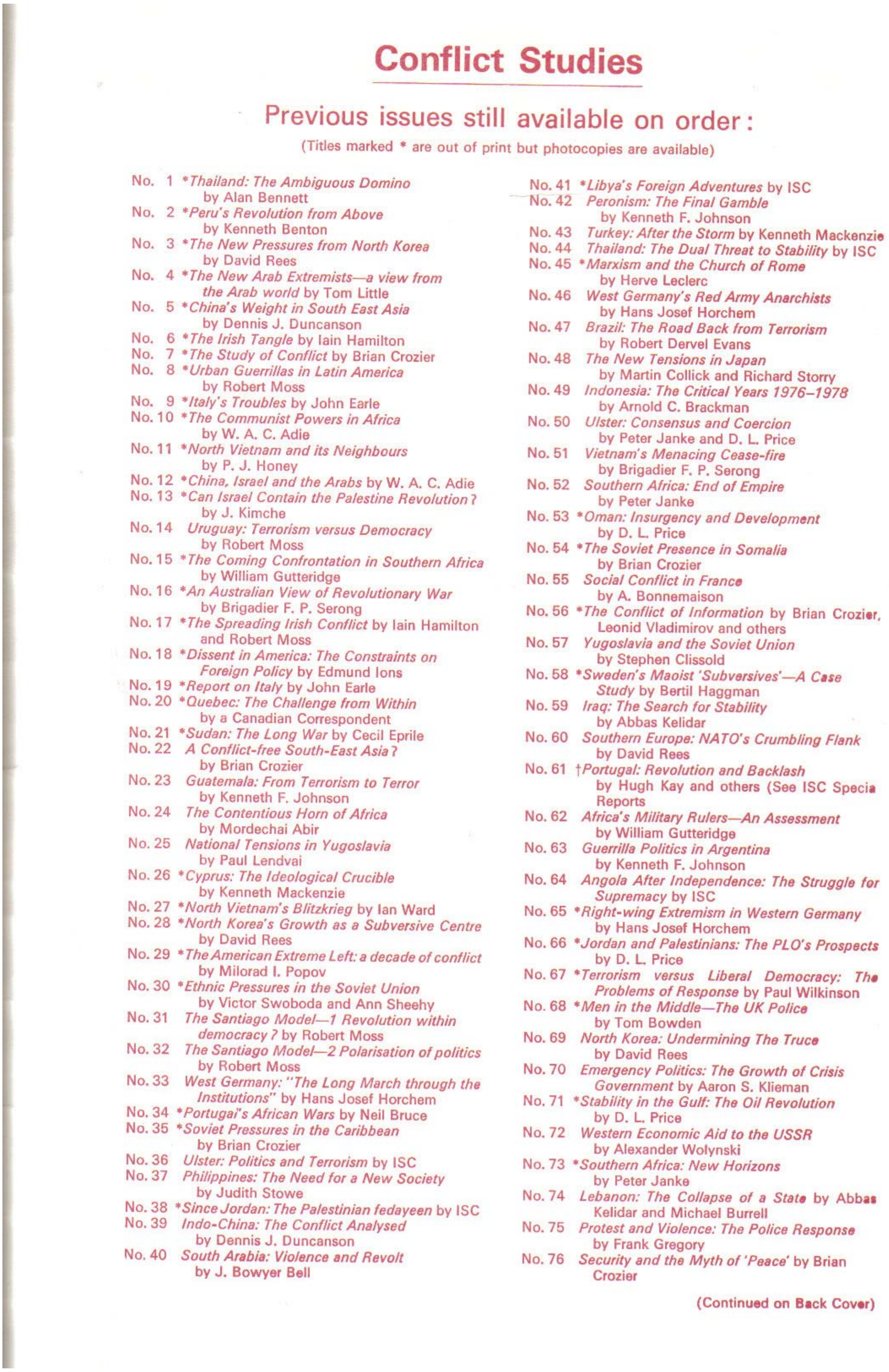

Conflict Studies

Previous issues still available on order:

(Titles marked * are out of print but photocopies are available)

No. 1 *_Thailand: The Ambiguous Domino_ by Alan Bennett
No. 2 *_Peru's Revolution from Above_ by Kenneth Benton
No. 3 *_The New Pressures from North Korea_ by David Rees
No. 4 *_The New Arab Extremists—a view from the Arab world_ by Tom Little
No. 5 *_China's Weight in South East Asia_ by Dennis J. Duncanson
No. 6 *_The Irish Tangle_ by Iain Hamilton
No. 7 *_The Study of Conflict_ by Brian Crozier
No. 8 *_Urban Guerrillas in Latin America_ by Robert Moss
No. 9 *_Italy's Troubles_ by John Earle
No. 10 *_The Communist Powers in Africa_ by W. A. C. Adie
No. 11 *_North Vietnam and its Neighbours_ by P. J. Honey
No. 12 *_China, Israel and the Arabs_ by W. A. C. Adie
No. 13 *_Can Israel Contain the Palestine Revolution?_ by J. Kimche
No. 14 _Uruguay: Terrorism versus Democracy_ by Robert Moss
No. 15 *_The Coming Confrontation in Southern Africa_ by William Gutteridge
No. 16 *_An Australian View of Revolutionary War_ by Brigadier F. P. Serong
No. 17 *_The Spreading Irish Conflict_ by Iain Hamilton and Robert Moss
No. 18 *_Dissent in America: The Constraints on Foreign Policy_ by Edmund Ions
No. 19 *_Report on Italy_ by John Earle
No. 20 *_Quebec: The Challenge from Within_ by a Canadian Correspondent
No. 21 *_Sudan: The Long War_ by Cecil Eprile
No. 22 _A Conflict-free South-East Asia?_ by Brian Crozier
No. 23 _Guatemala: From Terrorism to Terror_ by Kenneth F. Johnson
No. 24 _The Contentious Horn of Africa_ by Mordechai Abir
No. 25 _National Tensions in Yugoslavia_ by Paul Lendvai
No. 26 *_Cyprus: The Ideological Crucible_ by Kenneth Mackenzie
No. 27 *_North Vietnam's Blitzkrieg_ by Ian Ward
No. 28 *_North Korea's Growth as a Subversive Centre_ by David Rees
No. 29 *_The American Extreme Left: a decade of conflict_ by Milorad I. Popov
No. 30 *_Ethnic Pressures in the Soviet Union_ by Victor Swoboda and Ann Sheehy
No. 31 _The Santiago Model—1 Revolution within democracy?_ by Robert Moss
No. 32 _The Santiago Model—2 Polarisation of politics_ by Robert Moss
No. 33 _West Germany: "The Long March through the Institutions"_ by Hans Josef Horchem
No. 34 *_Portugal's African Wars_ by Neil Bruce
No. 35 *_Soviet Pressures in the Caribbean_ by Brian Crozier
No. 36 _Ulster: Politics and Terrorism_ by ISC
No. 37 _Philippines: The Need for a New Society_ by Judith Stowe
No. 38 *_Since Jordan: The Palestinian fedayeen_ by ISC
No. 39 _Indo-China: The Conflict Analysed_ by Dennis J. Duncanson
No. 40 _South Arabia: Violence and Revolt_ by J. Bowyer Bell
No. 41 *_Libya's Foreign Adventures_ by ISC
No. 42 _Peronism: The Final Gamble_ by Kenneth F. Johnson
No. 43 _Turkey: After the Storm_ by Kenneth Mackenzie
No. 44 _Thailand: The Dual Threat to Stability_ by ISC
No. 45 *_Marxism and the Church of Rome_ by Herve Leclerc
No. 46 _West Germany's Red Army Anarchists_ by Hans Josef Horchem
No. 47 _Brazil: The Road Back from Terrorism_ by Robert Dervel Evans
No. 48 _The New Tensions in Japan_ by Martin Collick and Richard Storry
No. 49 _Indonesia: The Critical Years 1976–1978_ by Arnold C. Brackman
No. 50 _Ulster: Consensus and Coercion_ by Peter Janke and D. L. Price
No. 51 _Vietnam's Menacing Cease-fire_ by Brigadier F. P. Serong
No. 52 _Southern Africa: End of Empire_ by Peter Janke
No. 53 *_Oman: Insurgency and Development_ by D. L. Price
No. 54 *_The Soviet Presence in Somalia_ by Brian Crozier
No. 55 _Social Conflict in France_ by A. Bonnemaison
No. 56 *_The Conflict of Information_ by Brian Crozier, Leonid Vladimirov and others
No. 57 _Yugoslavia and the Soviet Union_ by Stephen Clissold
No. 58 *_Sweden's Maoist 'Subversives'—A Case Study_ by Bertil Haggman
No. 59 _Iraq: The Search for Stability_ by Abbas Kelidar
No. 60 _Southern Europe: NATO's Crumbling Flank_ by David Rees
No. 61 †_Portugal: Revolution and Backlash_ by Hugh Kay and others (See ISC Specia Reports
No. 62 _Africa's Military Rulers—An Assessment_ by William Gutteridge
No. 63 _Guerrilla Politics in Argentina_ by Kenneth F. Johnson
No. 64 _Angola After Independence: The Struggle for Supremacy_ by ISC
No. 65 *_Right-wing Extremism in Western Germany_ by Hans Josef Horchem
No. 66 *_Jordan and Palestinians: The PLO's Prospects_ by D. L. Price
No. 67 *_Terrorism versus Liberal Democracy: The Problems of Response_ by Paul Wilkinson
No. 68 *_Men in the Middle—The UK Police_ by Tom Bowden
No. 69 _North Korea: Undermining The Truce_ by David Rees
No. 70 _Emergency Politics: The Growth of Crisis Government_ by Aaron S. Klieman
No. 71 *_Stability in the Gulf: The Oil Revolution_ by D. L. Price
No. 72 _Western Economic Aid to the USSR_ by Alexander Wolynski
No. 73 *_Southern Africa: New Horizons_ by Peter Janke
No. 74 _Lebanon: The Collapse of a State_ by Abbas Kelidar and Michael Burrell
No. 75 _Protest and Violence: The Police Response_ by Frank Gregory
No. 76 _Security and the Myth of 'Peace'_ by Brian Crozier

(Continued on Back Cover)

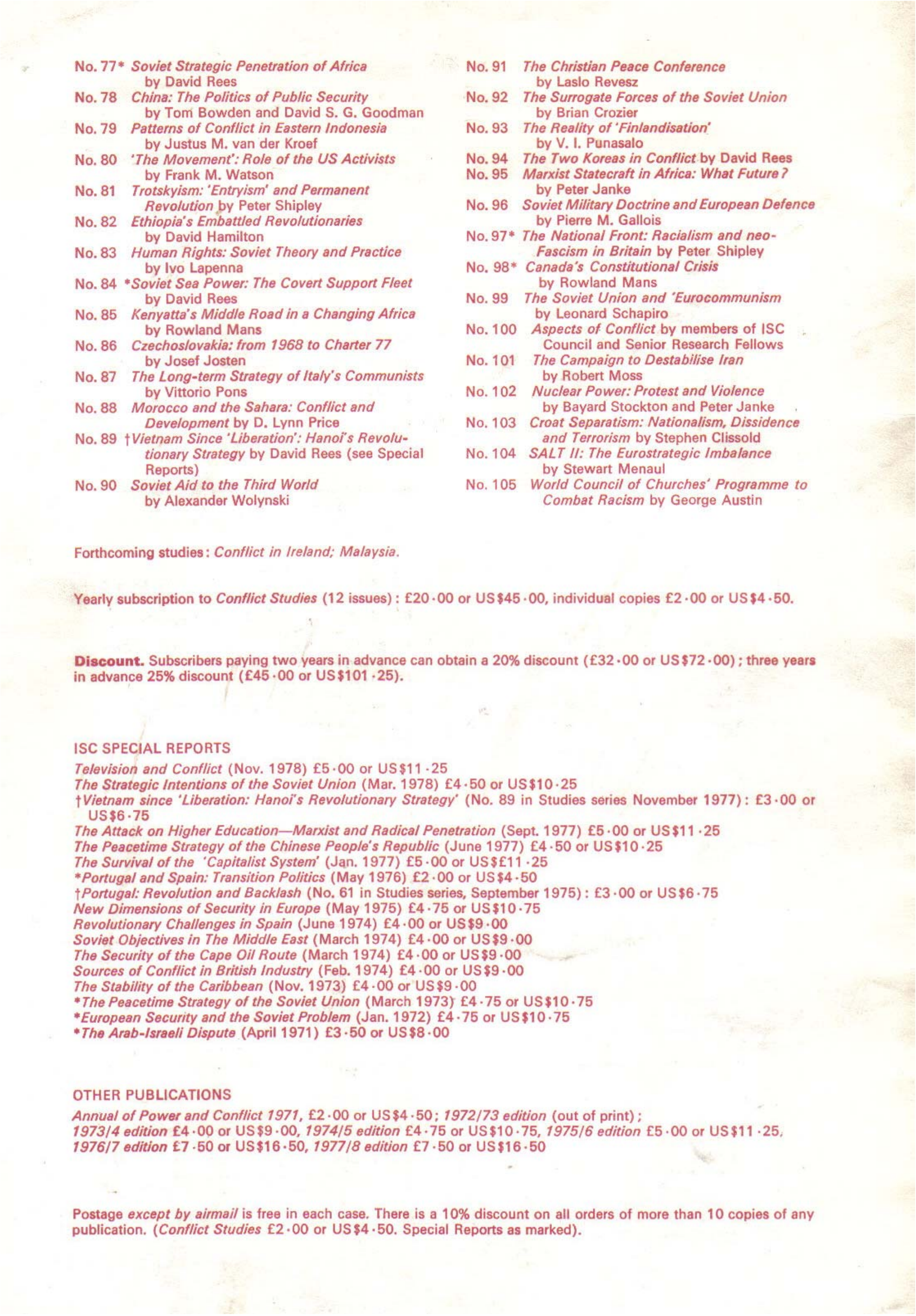

No. 77* *Soviet Strategic Penetration of Africa* by David Rees
No. 78 *China: The Politics of Public Security* by Tom Bowden and David S. G. Goodman
No. 79 *Patterns of Conflict in Eastern Indonesia* by Justus M. van der Kroef
No. 80 *'The Movement': Role of the US Activists* by Frank M. Watson
No. 81 *Trotskyism: 'Entryism' and Permanent Revolution* by Peter Shipley
No. 82 *Ethiopia's Embattled Revolutionaries* by David Hamilton
No. 83 *Human Rights: Soviet Theory and Practice* by Ivo Lapenna
No. 84 **Soviet Sea Power: The Covert Support Fleet* by David Rees
No. 85 *Kenyatta's Middle Road in a Changing Africa* by Rowland Mans
No. 86 *Czechoslovakia: from 1968 to Charter 77* by Josef Josten
No. 87 *The Long-term Strategy of Italy's Communists* by Vittorio Pons
No. 88 *Morocco and the Sahara: Conflict and Development* by D. Lynn Price
No. 89 †*Vietnam Since 'Liberation': Hanoi's Revolutionary Strategy* by David Rees (see Special Reports)
No. 90 *Soviet Aid to the Third World* by Alexander Wolynski
No. 91 *The Christian Peace Conference* by Laslo Revesz
No. 92 *The Surrogate Forces of the Soviet Union* by Brian Crozier
No. 93 *The Reality of 'Finlandisation'* by V. I. Punasalo
No. 94 *The Two Koreas in Conflict* by David Rees
No. 95 *Marxist Statecraft in Africa: What Future?* by Peter Janke
No. 96 *Soviet Military Doctrine and European Defence* by Pierre M. Gallois
No. 97* *The National Front: Racialism and neo-Fascism in Britain* by Peter Shipley
No. 98* *Canada's Constitutional Crisis* by Rowland Mans
No. 99 *The Soviet Union and 'Eurocommunism* by Leonard Schapiro
No. 100 *Aspects of Conflict* by members of ISC Council and Senior Research Fellows
No. 101 *The Campaign to Destabilise Iran* by Robert Moss
No. 102 *Nuclear Power: Protest and Violence* by Bayard Stockton and Peter Janke
No. 103 *Croat Separatism: Nationalism, Dissidence and Terrorism* by Stephen Clissold
No. 104 *SALT II: The Eurostrategic Imbalance* by Stewart Menaul
No. 105 *World Council of Churches' Programme to Combat Racism* by George Austin

Forthcoming studies: *Conflict in Ireland; Malaysia.*

Yearly subscription to *Conflict Studies* (12 issues): £20·00 or US$45·00, individual copies £2·00 or US$4·50.

Discount. Subscribers paying two years in advance can obtain a 20% discount (£32·00 or US$72·00); three years in advance 25% discount (£45·00 or US$101·25).

ISC SPECIAL REPORTS

Television and Conflict (Nov. 1978) £5·00 or US$11·25
The Strategic Intentions of the Soviet Union (Mar. 1978) £4·50 or US$10·25
†*Vietnam since 'Liberation: Hanoi's Revolutionary Strategy'* (No. 89 in Studies series November 1977): £3·00 or US$6·75
The Attack on Higher Education—Marxist and Radical Penetration (Sept. 1977) £5·00 or US$11·25
The Peacetime Strategy of the Chinese People's Republic (June 1977) £4·50 or US$10·25
The Survival of the 'Capitalist System' (Jan. 1977) £5·00 or US$£11·25
**Portugal and Spain: Transition Politics* (May 1976) £2·00 or US$4·50
†*Portugal: Revolution and Backlash* (No. 61 in Studies series, September 1975): £3·00 or US$6·75
New Dimensions of Security in Europe (May 1975) £4·75 or US$10·75
Revolutionary Challenges in Spain (June 1974) £4·00 or US$9·00
Soviet Objectives in The Middle East (March 1974) £4·00 or US$9·00
The Security of the Cape Oil Route (March 1974) £4·00 or US$9·00
Sources of Conflict in British Industry (Feb. 1974) £4·00 or US$9·00
The Stability of the Caribbean (Nov. 1973) £4·00 or US$9·00
**The Peacetime Strategy of the Soviet Union* (March 1973) £4·75 or US$10·75
**European Security and the Soviet Problem* (Jan. 1972) £4·75 or US$10·75
**The Arab-Israeli Dispute* (April 1971) £3·50 or US$8·00

OTHER PUBLICATIONS

Annual of Power and Conflict 1971, £2·00 or US$4·50; *1972/73 edition* (out of print); *1973/4 edition* £4·00 or US$9·00, *1974/5 edition* £4·75 or US$10·75, *1975/6 edition* £5·00 or US$11·25, *1976/7 edition* £7·50 or US$16·50, *1977/8 edition* £7·50 or US$16·50

Postage *except by airmail* is free in each case. There is a 10% discount on all orders of more than 10 copies of any publication. (*Conflict Studies* £2·00 or US$4·50. Special Reports as marked).

THE INSTITUTE FOR EUROPEAN DEFENCE AND STRATEGIC STUDIES

The Institute for European Defence and Strategic Studies was set up in London in 1979 to study political change in Europe and to assess its impact on strategic and defence issues. It is, therefore, particularly concerned with those developments which affect the future of the Western Alliance. It is hoped that the findings of its authors and contributors will be of interest to academics, politicians and others who have an impact on the formulation of policy. It is also hoped that by contributing to the exchange of ideas and information the Institute will increase understanding of the complex issues involved.

Accordingly, the Institute publishes books, monographs and occasional papers, holds conferences and seminars, and contributes to debate through articles in journals and newspapers.

Its activities are supervised by an international board of management and, where appropriate, it seeks the guidance of academics and respected public figures from Europe and the United States.

Advisory Council
Air Chief Marshal Sir Michael Armitage.
Dr Christopher Coker
Dr Robert Conquest
Baroness Cox
Leopold Labedz
Melvin J Lasky
John O'Sullivan
Professor Pedro Schwartz
Hon Frank Shakespeare
Dr Philip Towle
Dr G R Urban
Alan Lee Williams
Professor Albert Wohlstetter

Board of Management
Richard V Allen
Rt Hon Sir Peter Blaker MP
Rt Hon Lord Chalfont
Dr Iain Elliot
Dr Edwin J Feulner Jr (Chairman)
Professor Stephen Haseler (Secretary)
Professor Antonio Martino

Director
Gerald Frost

Editor
Andrew McHallam

Secretary
Emma Kent

THE INSTITUTE FOR EUROPEAN DEFENCE & STRATEGIC STUDIES
13/14 Golden Square, London W1R 3AG

Telephone: 071-439 8719
Facsimile: 071-439 2034

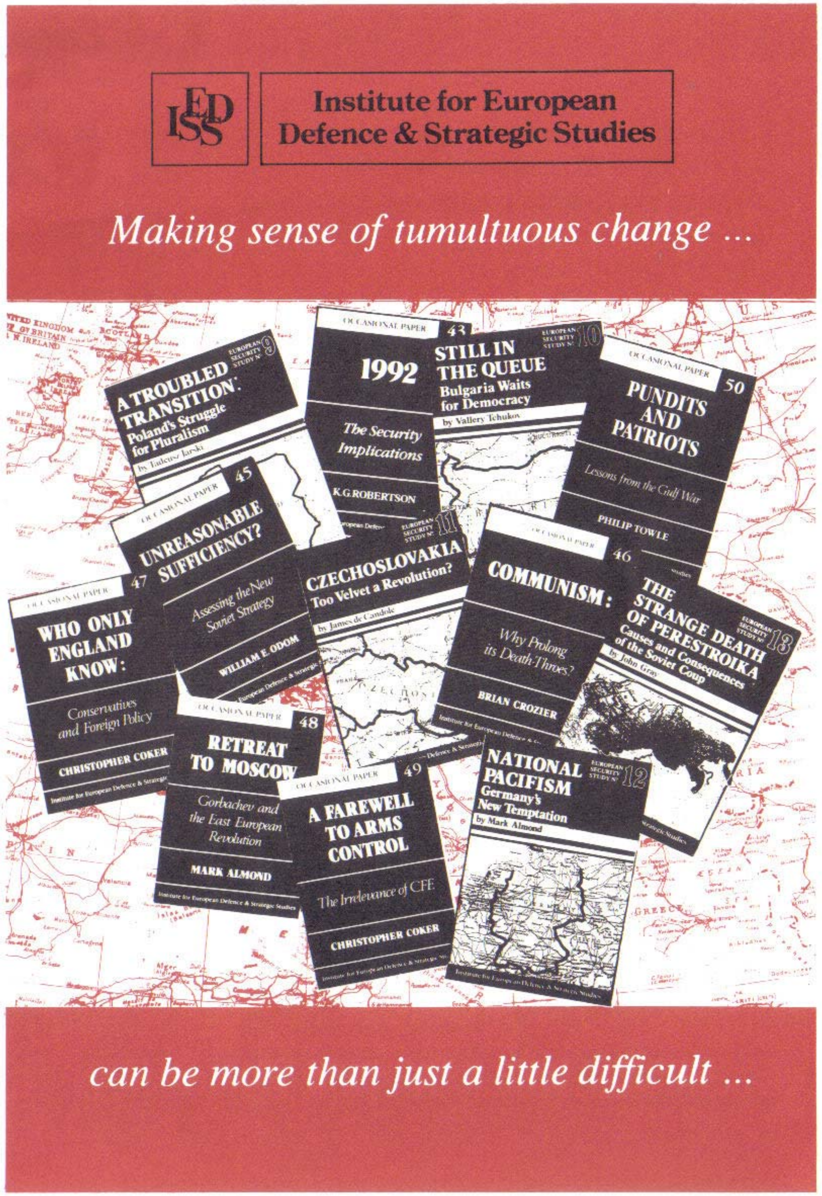
IEDSS
Institute for European Defence & Strategic Studies
Making sense of tumultuous change …
A TROUBLED TRANSITION: Poland's Struggle for Pluralism
1992 The Security Implications K.G.ROBERTSON
STILL IN THE QUEUE Bulgaria Waits for Democracy by Valery Tchukov
PUNDITS AND PATRIOTS Lessons from the Gulf War PHILIP TOWLE
UNREASONABLE SUFFICIENCY? Assessing the New Soviet Strategy WILLIAM E. ODOM
CZECHOSLOVAKIA Too Velvet a Revolution? by James de Candole
COMMUNISM: Why Prolong its Death-Throes? BRIAN CROZIER
THE STRANGE DEATH OF PERESTROIKA Causes and Consequences of the Soviet Coup by John Gray
WHO ONLY ENGLAND KNOW: Conservatives and Foreign Policy CHRISTOPHER COKER
RETREAT TO MOSCOW Gorbachev and the East European Revolution MARK ALMOND
A FAREWELL TO ARMS CONTROL The Irrelevance of CFE CHRISTOPHER COKER
NATIONAL PACIFISM Germany's New Temptation by Mark Almond
can be more than just a little difficult …

PUBLICATIONS LIST

OCCASIONAL PAPERS

Published 1981-5

1 **NATO TODAY: Curing Self-Inflicted Wounds**
Angelo Codevilla ISBN 0 907967 00 0

2 **GREAT BRITAIN AND NATO: A Parting of the Ways?**
David Carlton ISBN 0 907967 01 9

3 **THE LAW OF THE SEA TREATY: Some Crucial Questions for the UK**
Simon Webley ISBN 0 907967 03 5

4 **ETHICS AND NUCLEAR ARMS: British Churches and the Peace Movement**
TE Utley and Edward Norman ISBN 0 907967 04 3

5 **EUROPE WITHOUT AMERICA: Could We Defend Ourselves?**
Philip Towle ISBN 0 907967 05 1

6 **EUROPE'S SIBERIAN GAS LINE: Economic Lessons and Strategic Implications** Gordon Crovitz ISBN 0 907967 10 8

7 **PEACE STUDIES: A Critical Survey**
Caroline Cox and Roger Scruton ISBN 0 907967 15 9

8 **CHEMICAL WARFARE: The Growing Threat to Europe**
Manfred Hamm ISBN 0 907967 25 6

9 **IDEALISM, REALISM AND THE MYTH OF APPEASEMENT**
Jeane Kirkpatrick ISBN 0 907967 25 6

10 **THE STRATEGIC DEFENCE INITIATIVE: Some Implications for Europe**
Werner Kaltefleiter ISBN 0 907967 45 0

11 **NATO'S STRATEGY: A Case of Outdated Priorities?**
Patrick Cosgrave and George Richey ISBN 0 907967 40 X

12 **SDI: The Case for the Defence** Alun Chalfont ISBN 0 907967 SS 8

13 **THE SOVIET CONNECTION: State Sponsorship of Terrorism**
Jillian Becker ISBN 0 907967 60 4

14 **NEGLECT AND BETRAYAL: War and Violence in Modern Sociology**
David Marsland ISBN 0 907967 65 S

15 **WORLD STUDIES: Education or Indoctrination?**
Roger Scruton ISBN 0 907967 70 1

Published 1985 - 87

16 **HEIRS OF CLAUSEWITZ: Change and Continuity in the Soviet War Machine**
CN Donnelly ISBN 0 907967 71 X

17 **PERCEPTION AND REALITY: An Opinion Poll on Defence and Disarmament**
Commentaries by Clive Rose and Peter Blaker ISBN 0 907967 72 8

18 **ANTI-AMERICANISM: Steps on a Dangerous Path**
Stephen Haseler ISBN 0 907967 74 4

19 **LEGALISED LAWLESSNESS: Soviet Revolutionary Justice**
Richard Pipes ISBN 0 907967 73 6

20 **THE HELSINKI AGREEMENT: Dialogue or Delusion?**
Jonathan Luxmoore ISBN 0 907967 76 0

21 **PRESERVING THE DETERRENT: A Missile Defence for Europe**
Michael Ruhle ISBN 0 907967 78 7

22 **LIABILITY OR ASSET? A Policy for the Falkland Islands**
Robert Miller ISBN 0 907967 80 9

23 **THE SPETSNAZ THREAT: Can Britain be Defended?**
Michael Hickey ISBN 0 907967 81 7

24 **THE NEUTRALIST TENDENCY: Defence and the Left in Britain and Germany** Geoffrey Lee Williams ISBN 0 907967 82 5

25 **TERRORIST OR FREEDOM FIGHTER? The Cost of Confusion**
William McGurn ISBN 0 907967 83 3

26 **CENTRAL AMERICA: Can Europe Play a Part?**
Hugh Thomas ISBN 0 907967 84 1

27 **MOSCOW'S AFGHAN WAR: Soviet Motives and Western Interests**
Radek Sikorski ISBN 0 907967 85 X

28 **ARMS CONTROL: Has the West Lost its Way?**
Robin Brown ISBN 0 907967 86 8

29 **NON-OFFENSIVE DEFENCE: A Strategic Contradiction?**
David Gates ISBN 0 907967 88 4

30 **THE NEW CITY REPUBLICS: Municipal Intervention in Defence**
David Regan ISBN 0 907967 87 6

31 **BRITAIN'S SECURITY POLICY: The Modern Soviet View**
Robbin Laird and Susan Clark ISBN 0 907967 89 2

Published 1988 - 91

32 **THE UN: Assessing Soviet Abuses**
Juliana Geran Pilon and Ralph Kinney Bennett ISBN 0 907967 90 6

33 **GORBACHEV: Can the Revolution be Remade?**
George Urban ISBN 0 907967 91 4

34 **LESS IMPORTANT THAN OPULENCE: The Conservatives and Defence** Christopher Coker ISBN 0 907967 92 2

35 **THE CURE THAT MAY KILL: Unintended Consequences of the INF Treaty** Angelo Codevilla ISBN 0 907967 93 0

36 **MPs AND DEFENCE: A Survey of Parliamentary Knowledge and Opinion Commentary** by Philip Towle ISBN 0 907967 94 9

37 **SOVIET FOREIGN POLICY UNDER GORBACHEV: New Political Thinking and its Impact** Gerhard Wettig ISBN 0 907967 95 7

38 **BONN AND MOSCOW: A Partnership in Progress?**
Robbin Laird ISBN 0 907967 97 3

39 **LIGHT DIVISIONS IN EUROPE: Forces of the Future?**
David Gates ISBN 0 907967 98 1

40 **SCANDINAVIA: New Focus of Soviet Pressures**
Boleslaw A Boczek ISBN 0 907967 99 X

41 **THE SECRET SERVICES: Is There a Case for Greater Openness?**
Michael Mates ISBN 0 907967 07 8

42 **COMING IN FROM THE COLD: The Evolution of French Defence Policy** Geoffrey Lee Williams ISBN 0 907967 09 4

43 **1991: The Security Implications** KG Robertson ISBN 0 907967 11 6

44 **THE PERCEPTION MONGERS: Reflections on Soviet Propaganda**
George Bailey ISBN 0 907967 12 4

45 **UNREASONABLE SUFFICIENCY? Assessing the New Soviet Strategy** William E Odom ISBN 0 907967 13 2

46 **COMMUNISM: Why Prolong its Death-Throes?**
Brian Crozier ISBN 0 907967 17 5

47 **WHO ONLY ENGLAND KNOW: Conservatives and Foreign Policy**
Christopher Coker ISBN 0 907967 18 3

48 **RETREAT TO MOSCOW? Gorbachev and the East European Revolution** Mark Almond ISBN 0 907967 21 3

49 **A FAREWELL TO ARMS CONTROL: The Irrelevance of CFE**
Christopher Coker ISBN 0 907967 23 X

50 **PUNDITS AND PATRIOTS: Lessons from the Gulf War**
Philip Towle ISBN 0 907967 24 8

EUROPEAN SECURITY STUDIES

1 **TURKEY IN TRANSITION: The West's Neglected Ally**
Kenneth Mackenzie (1984) ISBN 0 907967 20 5

2 **BRITAIN'S UNDEFENDED FRONTIER: A Policy for Ulster**
The report of an Independent Study Group (1984) ISBN 0 907967 30 2

3 **GREECE UNDER PAPANDREOU: Nato's Ambivalent Partner**
John K Loulis (1985) ISBN 0 907967 50 7

4 **EUROPE'S NEUTRAL STATES: Partners or Profiteers in Western Security?** Stephan Kux (1986) ISBN 0 907967 75 2

5 **MALTA ON THE BRINK: From Western Democracy to Libyan Satellite**
Enzo Rossi ISBN 0 907967 79 5

6 **DECLINE WITHOUT FALL: Romania Under Ccausescu**
Mark Almond (1988) ISBN 0 907967 96 5

7 **DESCENT INTO CHAOS: Yugoslavia's Worsening Crisis**
Marko Milivojevic (1989) ISBN 0 907967 08 6

8 **IMPATIENT FOR FREEDOM? The Baltic Struggle for Independence**
Jan Arveds Trapans (1990) ISBN 0 907967 14 0

9 **A TROUBLED TRANSITION: Poland's Struggle for Pluralism**
Tadeusz Jarski (1990) ISBN 0 907967 16 7

10 **STILL IN THE QUEUE: Bulgaria Waits for Democracy**
Vallery Tchukov (1991) ISBN 0 907967 19 1

11 **CZECHOSLOVAKIA: Too Velvet a Revolution?**
James de Candole (1991) ISBN 0 907967 22 1

12 **NATIONAL PACIFISM Germany's New Temptation**
Mark Almond (1991) ISBN 0 907967 26 4

13 **THE STRANGE DEATH OF PERESTROIKA Causes and Consequences of the Soviet Coup** John Gray (1991) ISBN 0 907967 27 2

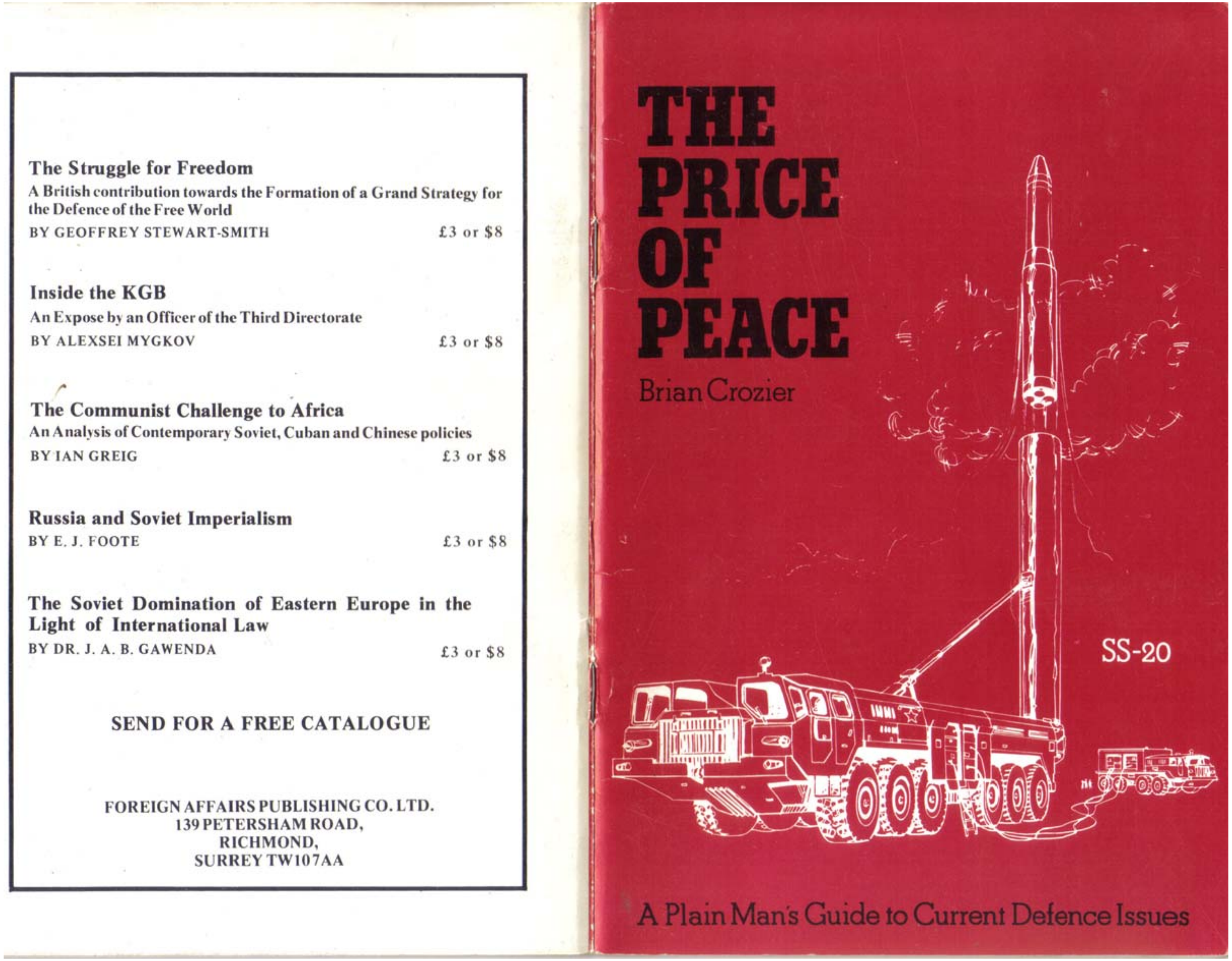

The Struggle for Freedom
A British contribution towards the Formation of a Grand Strategy for the Defence of the Free World
BY GEOFFREY STEWART-SMITH £3 or $8

Inside the KGB
An Expose by an Officer of the Third Directorate
BY ALEXSEI MYGKOV £3 or $8

The Communist Challenge to Africa
An Analysis of Contemporary Soviet, Cuban and Chinese policies
BY IAN GREIG £3 or $8

Russia and Soviet Imperialism
BY E. J. FOOTE £3 or $8

The Soviet Domination of Eastern Europe in the Light of International Law
BY DR. J. A. B. GAWENDA £3 or $8

SEND FOR A FREE CATALOGUE

FOREIGN AFFAIRS PUBLISHING CO. LTD.
139 PETERSHAM ROAD,
RICHMOND,
SURREY TW10 7AA

THE PRICE OF PEACE

Brian Crozier

SS-20

A Plain Man's Guide to Current Defence Issues

Below : *Mobilmachung* produced by the Young European Federalists for the European Parliament elections of 1979 – a crucial source on the PEU.

Mobilmachung
Die Habsburger Front
EIN SCHWARZBUCH DER JUNGEN EUROPÄISCHEN FÖDERALISTEN

Below : MAUE declaration for the European Parliament elections, June 1979.

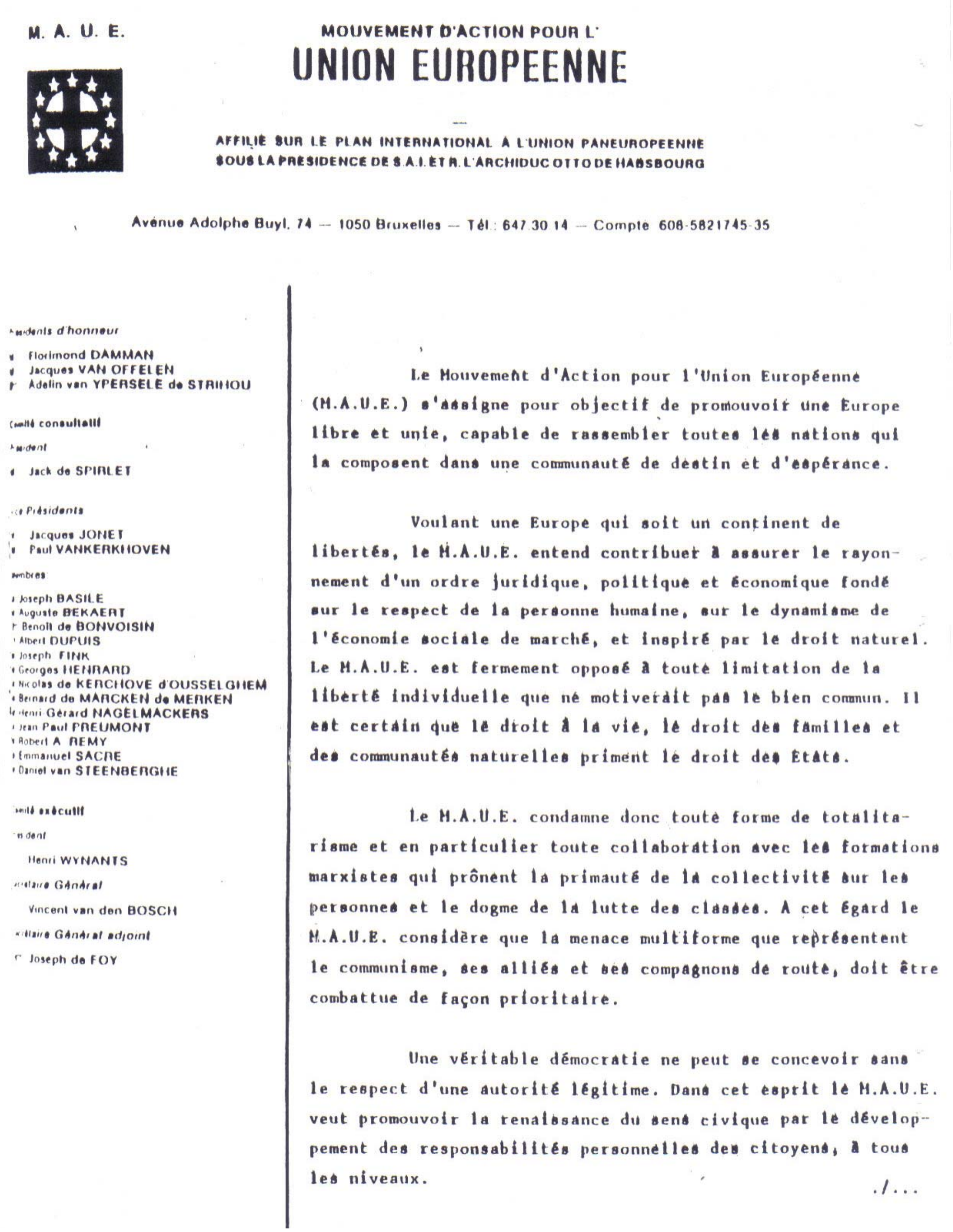

M. A. U. E.

MOUVEMENT D'ACTION POUR L'
UNION EUROPEENNE

AFFILIÉ SUR LE PLAN INTERNATIONAL À L'UNION PANEUROPEENNE
SOUS LA PRÉSIDENCE DE S.A.I. ET R. L'ARCHIDUC OTTO DE HABSBOURG

Avenue Adolphe Buyl, 74 — 1050 Bruxelles — Tél.: 647.30.14 — Compte 608-5821745-35

sidents d'honneur

Florimond DAMMAN
Jacques VAN OFFELEN
Adelin van YPERSELE de STRIHOU

mité consultatif

sident

Jack de SPIRLET

ce Présidents

Jacques JONET
Paul VANKERKHOVEN

mbres

Joseph BASILE
Auguste BEKAERT
Benoît de BONVOISIN
Albert DUPUIS
Joseph FINK
Georges HENRARD
Nicolas de KERCHOVE d'OUSSELGHEM
Bernard de MARCKEN de MERKEN
Henri Gérard NAGELMACKERS
Jean Paul PREUMONT
Robert A. REMY
Emmanuel SACRE
Daniel van STEENBERGHE

mité exécutif

dent

Henri WYNANTS

étaire Général

Vincent van den BOSCH

étaire Général adjoint

Joseph de FOY

Le Mouvement d'Action pour l'Union Européenne (M.A.U.E.) s'assigne pour objectif de promouvoir une Europe libre et unie, capable de rassembler toutes les nations qui la composent dans une communauté de destin et d'espérance.

Voulant une Europe qui soit un continent de libertés, le M.A.U.E. entend contribuer à assurer le rayonnement d'un ordre juridique, politique et économique fondé sur le respect de la personne humaine, sur le dynamisme de l'économie sociale de marché, et inspiré par le droit naturel. Le M.A.U.E. est fermement opposé à toute limitation de la liberté individuelle que ne motiverait pas le bien commun. Il est certain que le droit à la vie, le droit des familles et des communautés naturelles priment le droit des Etats.

Le M.A.U.E. condamne donc toute forme de totalitarisme et en particulier toute collaboration avec les formations marxistes qui prônent la primauté de la collectivité sur les personnes et le dogme de la lutte des classes. A cet égard le M.A.U.E. considère que la menace multiforme que représentent le communisme, ses alliés et ses compagnons de route, doit être combattue de façon prioritaire.

Une véritable démocratie ne peut se concevoir sans le respect d'une autorité légitime. Dans cet esprit le M.A.U.E. veut promouvoir la renaissance du sens civique par le développement des responsabilités personnelles des citoyens, à tous les niveaux.

./...

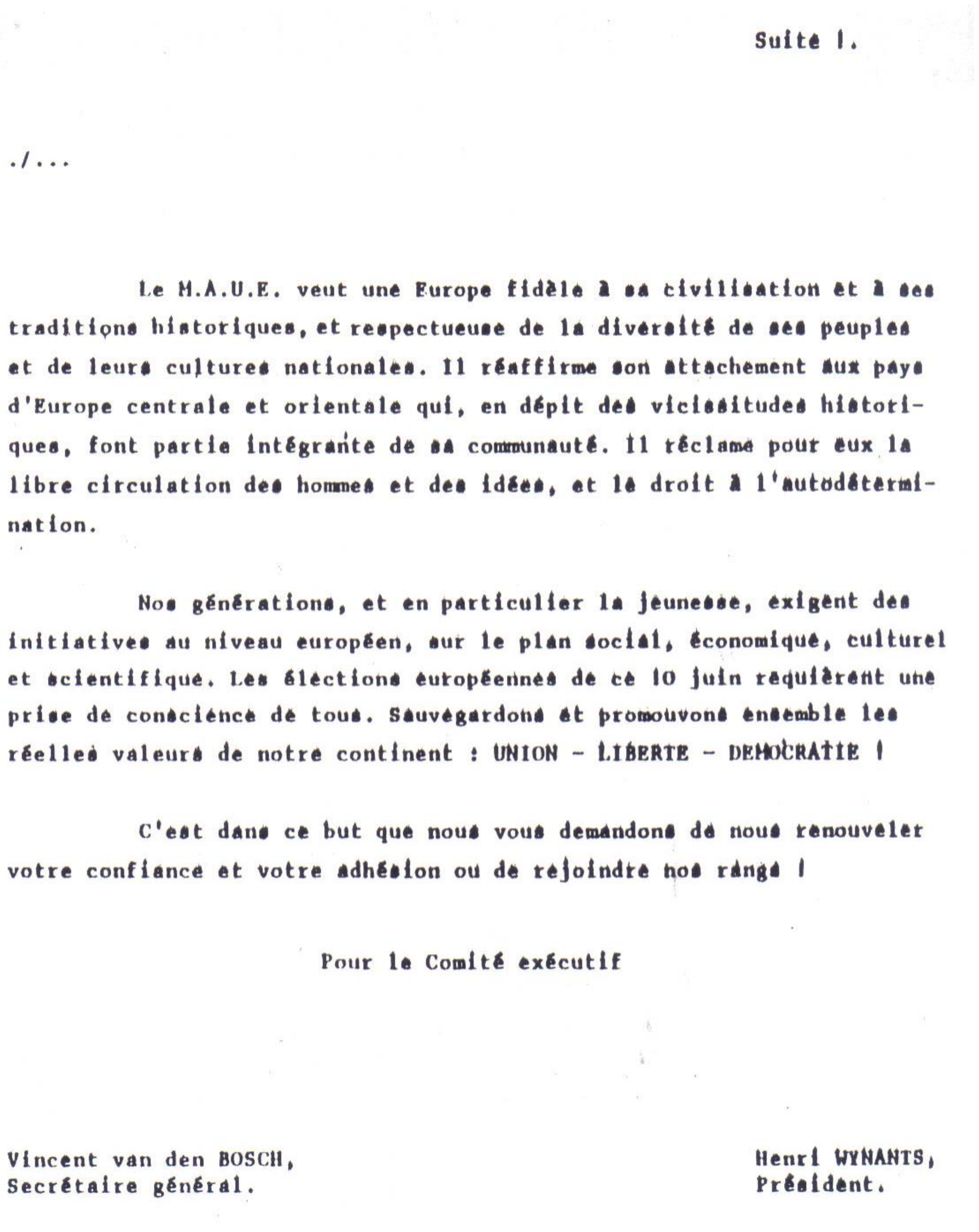

Suite 1.

./...

Le M.A.U.E. veut une Europe fidèle à sa civilisation et à ses traditions historiques, et respectueuse de la diversité de ses peuples et de leurs cultures nationales. Il réaffirme son attachement aux pays d'Europe centrale et orientale qui, en dépit des vicissitudes historiques, font partie intégrante de sa communauté. Il réclame pour eux la libre circulation des hommes et des idées, et le droit à l'autodétermination.

Nos générations, et en particulier la jeunesse, exigent des initiatives au niveau européen, sur le plan social, économique, culturel et scientifique. Les élections européennes de ce 10 juin requièrent une prise de conscience de tous. Sauvegardons et promouvons ensemble les réelles valeurs de notre continent : UNION - LIBERTE - DEMOCRATIE !

C'est dans ce but que nous vous demandons de nous renouveler votre confiance et votre adhésion ou de rejoindre nos rangs !

Pour le Comité exécutif

Vincent van den BOSCH,
Secrétaire général.

Henri WYNANTS,
Président.

Below : MAUE bulletin, May 1980, after the death of Damman.

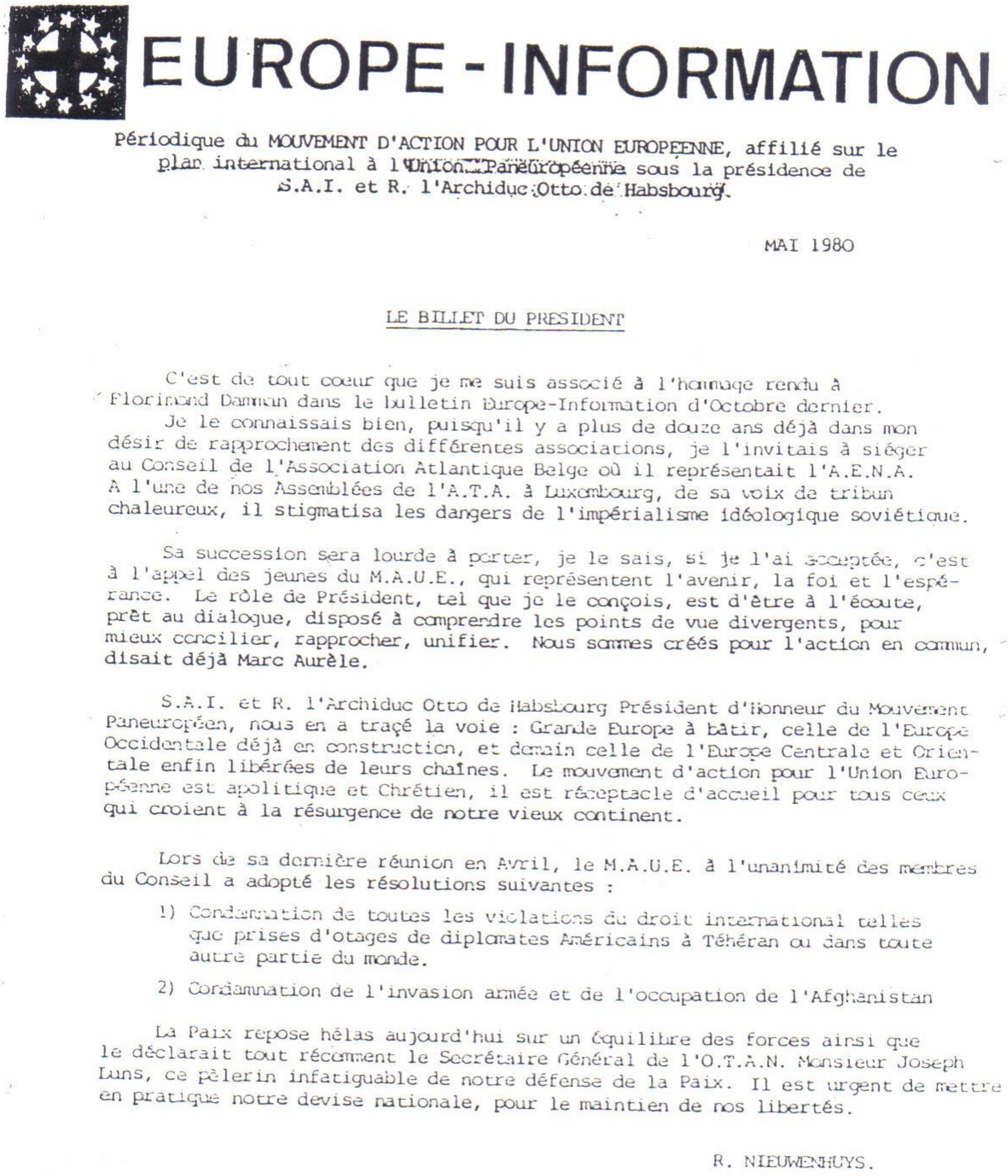

EUROPE - INFORMATION

Périodique du MOUVEMENT D'ACTION POUR L'UNION EUROPEENNE, affilié sur le plan international à l'Union Paneuropéenne sous la présidence de S.A.I. et R. l'Archiduc Otto de Habsbourg.

MAI 1980

LE BILLET DU PRESIDENT

C'est de tout coeur que je me suis associé à l'hommage rendu à Florimond Damman dans le bulletin Europe-Information d'Octobre dernier.

Je le connaissais bien, puisqu'il y a plus de douze ans déjà dans mon désir de rapprochement des différentes associations, je l'invitais à siéger au Conseil de l'Association Atlantique Belge où il représentait l'A.E.N.A. A l'une de nos Assemblées de l'A.T.A. à Luxembourg, de sa voix de tribun chaleureux, il stigmatisa les dangers de l'impérialisme idéologique soviétique.

Sa succession sera lourde à porter, je le sais, si je l'ai acceptée, c'est à l'appel des jeunes du M.A.U.E., qui représentent l'avenir, la foi et l'espérance. Le rôle de Président, tel que je le conçois, est d'être à l'écoute, prêt au dialogue, disposé à comprendre les points de vue divergents, pour mieux concilier, rapprocher, unifier. Nous sommes créés pour l'action en commun, disait déjà Marc Aurèle.

S.A.I. et R. l'Archiduc Otto de Habsbourg Président d'Honneur du Mouvement Paneuropéen, nous en a tracé la voie : Grande Europe à bâtir, celle de l'Europe Occidentale déjà en construction, et demain celle de l'Europe Centrale et Orientale enfin libérées de leurs chaînes. Le mouvement d'action pour l'Union Européenne est apolitique et Chrétien, il est réceptacle d'accueil pour tous ceux qui croient à la résurgence de notre vieux continent.

Lors de sa dernière réunion en Avril, le M.A.U.E. à l'unanimité des membres du Conseil a adopté les résolutions suivantes :

1) Condamnation de toutes les violations du droit international telles que prises d'otages de diplomates Américains à Téhéran ou dans toute autre partie du monde.
2) Condamnation de l'invasion armée et de l'occupation de l'Afghanistan

La Paix repose hélas aujourd'hui sur un équilibre des forces ainsi que le déclarait tout récemment le Secrétaire Général de l'O.T.A.N. Monsieur Joseph Luns, ce pèlerin infatiguable de notre défense de la Paix. Il est urgent de mettre en pratique notre devise nationale, pour le maintien de nos libertés.

R. NIEUWENHUYS.

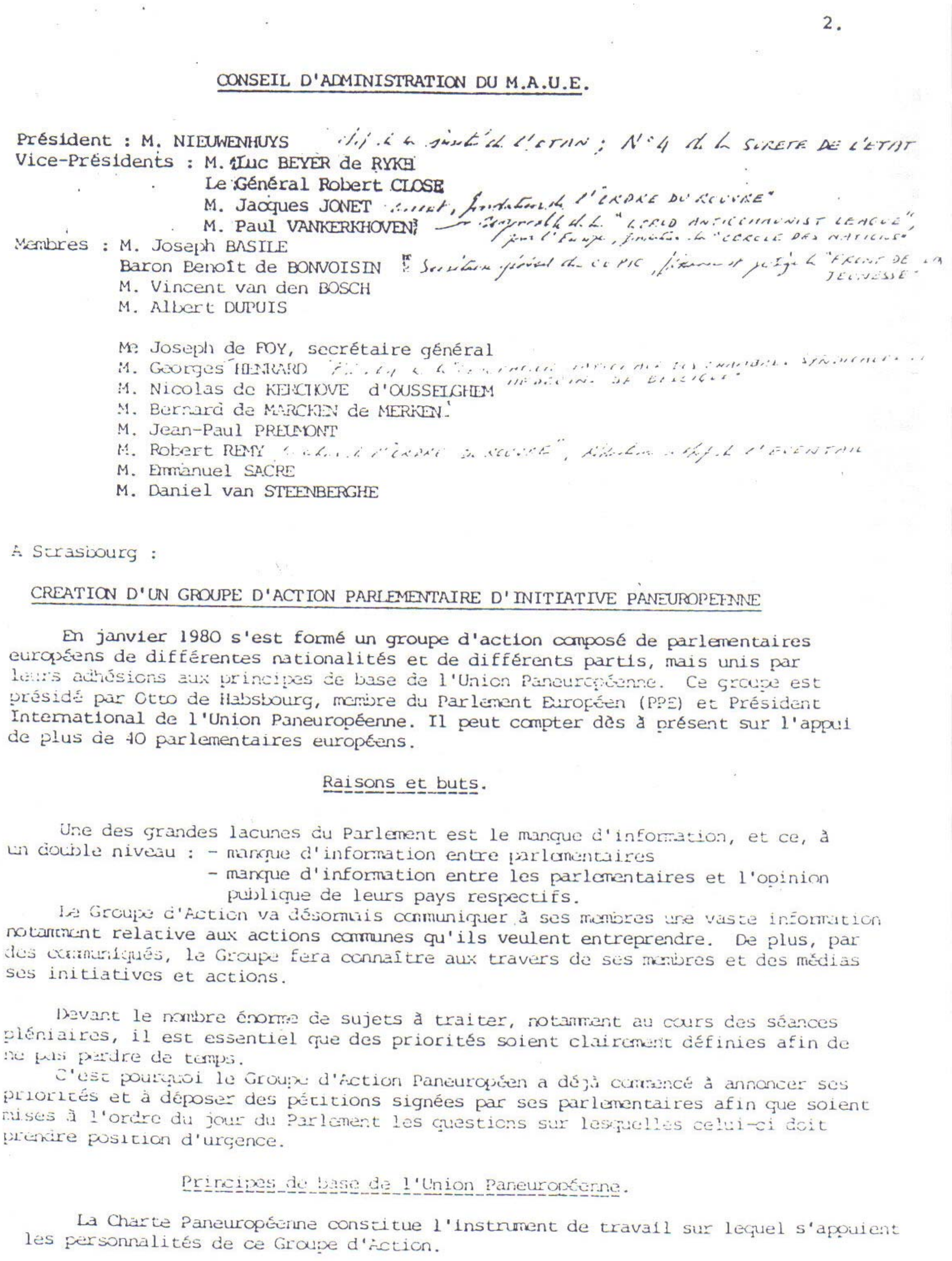

2.

CONSEIL D'ADMINISTRATION DU M.A.U.E.

Président : M. NIEUWENHUYS chef de la sûreté de l'ETAT ; N°4 de la SURETE DE L'ETAT
Vice-Présidents : M. Luc BEYER de RYKE
Le Général Robert CLOSE
M. Jacques JONET avocat, fondateur de l'ORDRE DU ROUVRE"
M. Paul VANKERKHOVEN → responsable de la "WORLD ANTICOMMUNIST LEAGUE", pour l'Europe, fondateur du "CERCLE DES NATIONS"
Membres : M. Joseph BASILE
Baron Benoît de BONVOISIN → Secrétaire général du CEPIC, finance et protège le "FRONT DE LA JEUNESSE"
M. Vincent van den BOSCH
M. Albert DUPUIS

Me Joseph de FOY, secrétaire général
M. Georges HENRARD [illegible] CHAMBRES SYNDICALES [illegible] MEDECINS DE BELGIQUE"
M. Nicolas de KERCHOVE d'OUSSELGHEM
M. Bernard de MARCKEN de MERKEN
M. Jean-Paul PREUMONT
M. Robert REMY membre de l'ORDRE DU ROUVRE", rédacteur en chef de l'EVENTAIL
M. Emmanuel SACRE
M. Daniel van STEENBERGHE

A Strasbourg :

CREATION D'UN GROUPE D'ACTION PARLEMENTAIRE D'INITIATIVE PANEUROPEENNE

En janvier 1980 s'est formé un groupe d'action composé de parlementaires européens de différentes nationalités et de différents partis, mais unis par leurs adhésions aux principes de base de l'Union Paneuropéenne. Ce groupe est présidé par Otto de Habsbourg, membre du Parlement Européen (PPE) et Président International de l'Union Paneuropéenne. Il peut compter dès à présent sur l'appui de plus de 40 parlementaires européens.

Raisons et buts.

Une des grandes lacunes du Parlement est le manque d'information, et ce, à un double niveau :
- manque d'information entre parlementaires
- manque d'information entre les parlementaires et l'opinion publique de leurs pays respectifs.

Le Groupe d'Action va désormais communiquer à ses membres une vaste information notamment relative aux actions communes qu'ils veulent entreprendre. De plus, par des communiqués, le Groupe fera connaître aux travers de ses membres et des médias ses initiatives et actions.

Devant le nombre énorme de sujets à traiter, notamment au cours des séances plénières, il est essentiel que des priorités soient clairement définies afin de ne pas perdre de temps.

C'est pourquoi le Groupe d'Action Paneuropéen a déjà commencé à annoncer ses priorités et à déposer des pétitions signées par ses parlementaires afin que soient mises à l'ordre du jour du Parlement les questions sur lesquelles celui-ci doit prendre position d'urgence.

Principes de base de l'Union Paneuropéenne.

La Charte Paneuropéenne constitue l'instrument de travail sur lequel s'appuient les personnalités de ce Groupe d'Action.

Below : PEU leaflet produced by MAUE for the European Parliament elections, May 1984

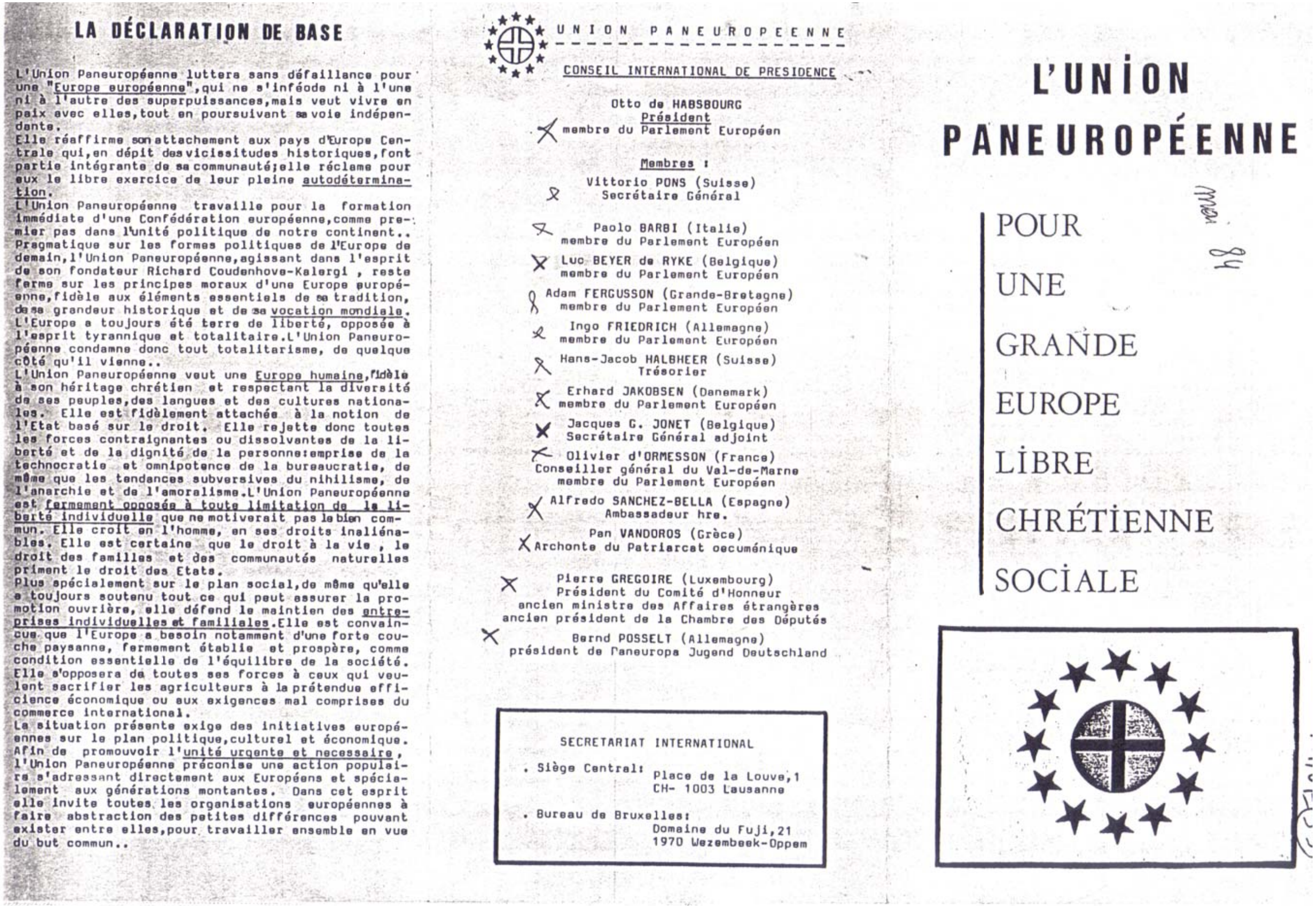

LA DÉCLARATION DE BASE

L'Union Paneuropéenne luttera sans défaillance pour une "Europe européenne", qui ne s'inféode ni à l'une ni à l'autre des superpuissances, mais veut vivre en paix avec elles, tout en poursuivant sa voie indépendante.

Elle réaffirme son attachement aux pays d'Europe Centrale qui, en dépit des vicissitudes historiques, font partie intégrante de sa communauté; elle réclame pour eux le libre exercice de leur pleine autodétermination.

L'Union Paneuropéenne travaille pour la formation immédiate d'une Confédération européenne, comme premier pas dans l'unité politique de notre continent.. Pragmatique sur les formes politiques de l'Europe de demain, l'Union Paneuropéenne, agissant dans l'esprit de son fondateur Richard Coudenhove-Kalergi, reste ferme sur les principes moraux d'une Europe européenne, fidèle aux éléments essentiels de sa tradition, de sa grandeur historique et de sa vocation mondiale.

L'Europe a toujours été terre de liberté, opposée à l'esprit tyrannique et totalitaire. L'Union Paneuropéenne condamne donc tout totalitarisme, de quelque côté qu'il vienne..

L'Union Paneuropéenne veut une Europe humaine, fidèle à son héritage chrétien et respectant la diversité de ses peuples, des langues et des cultures nationales. Elle est fidèlement attachée à la notion de l'Etat basé sur le droit. Elle rejette donc toutes les forces contraignantes ou dissolvantes de la liberté et de la dignité de la personne: emprise de la technocratie et omnipotence de la bureaucratie, de même que les tendances subversives du nihilisme, de l'anarchie et de l'amoralisme. L'Union Paneuropéenne est fermement opposée à toute limitation de la liberté individuelle que ne motiverait pas le bien commun. Elle croit en l'homme, en ses droits inaliénables. Elle est certaine que le droit à la vie, le droit des familles et des communautés naturelles priment le droit des Etats.

Plus spécialement sur le plan social, de même qu'elle a toujours soutenu tout ce qui peut assurer la promotion ouvrière, elle défend le maintien des entreprises individuelles et familiales. Elle est convaincue que l'Europe a besoin notamment d'une forte couche paysanne, fermement établie et prospère, comme condition essentielle de l'équilibre de la société. Elle s'opposera de toutes ses forces à ceux qui veulent sacrifier les agriculteurs à la prétendue efficience économique ou aux exigences mal comprises du commerce international.

La situation présente exige des initiatives européennes sur le plan politique, culturel et économique. Afin de promouvoir l'unité urgente et necessaire, l'Union Paneuropéenne préconise une action populaire s'adressant directement aux Européens et spécialement aux générations montantes. Dans cet esprit elle invite toutes les organisations européennes à faire abstraction des petites différences pouvant exister entre elles, pour travailler ensemble en vue du but commun..

U N I O N   P A N E U R O P E E N N E

CONSEIL INTERNATIONAL DE PRESIDENCE

Otto de HABSBOURG
Président
membre du Parlement Européen

Membres :

Vittorio PONS (Suisse)
Secrétaire Général

Paolo BARBI (Italie)
membre du Parlement Européen

Luc BEYER de RYKE (Belgique)
membre du Parlement Européen

Adam FERGUSSON (Grande-Bretagne)
membre du Parlement Européen

Ingo FRIEDRICH (Allemagne)
membre du Parlement Européen

Hans-Jacob HALBHEER (Suisse)
Trésorier

Erhard JAKOBSEN (Danemark)
membre du Parlement Européen

Jacques G. JONET (Belgique)
Secrétaire Général adjoint

Olivier d'ORMESSON (France)
Conseiller général du Val-de-Marne
membre du Parlement Européen

Alfredo SANCHEZ-BELLA (Espagne)
Ambassadeur hre.

Pan VANDOROS (Grèce)
Archonte du Patriarcat oecuménique

Pierre GREGOIRE (Luxembourg)
Président du Comité d'Honneur
ancien ministre des Affaires étrangères
ancien président de la Chambre des Députés

Bernd POSSELT (Allemagne)
président de Paneuropa Jugend Deutschland

SECRETARIAT INTERNATIONAL

. Siège Central: Place de la Louve, 1
CH- 1003 Lausanne

. Bureau de Bruxelles:
Domaine du Fuji, 21
1970 Wezembeek-Oppem

L'UNION PANEUROPÉENNE

mai 84

POUR
UNE
GRANDE
EUROPE
LIBRE
CHRÉTIENNE
SOCIALE

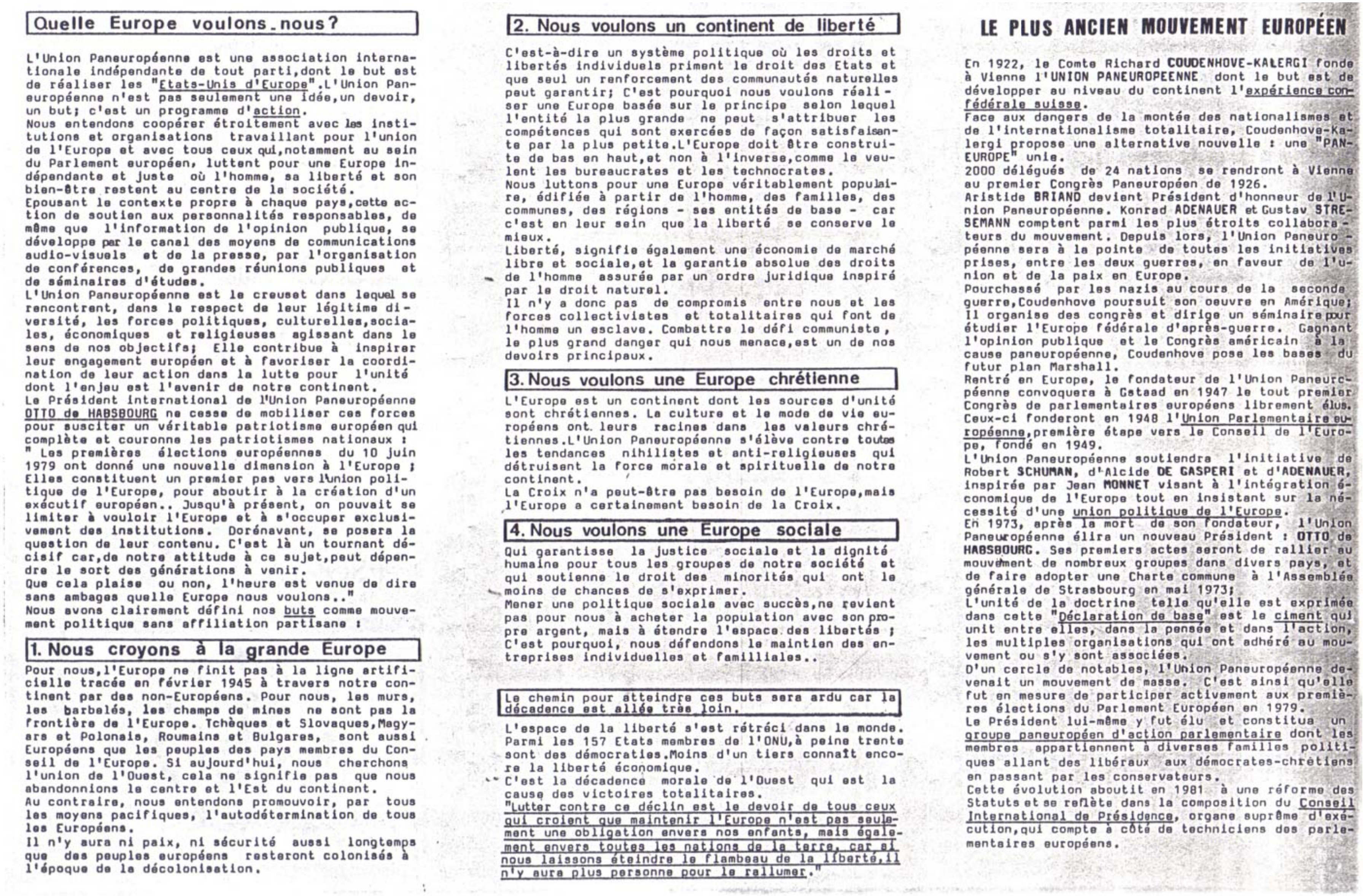

Quelle Europe voulons-nous?

L'Union Paneuropéenne est une association internationale indépendante de tout parti, dont le but est de réaliser les "États-Unis d'Europe". L'Union Paneuropéenne n'est pas seulement une idée, un devoir, un but; c'est un programme d'action.
Nous entendons coopérer étroitement avec les institutions et organisations travaillant pour l'union de l'Europe et avec tous ceux qui, notamment au sein du Parlement européen, luttent pour une Europe indépendante et juste où l'homme, sa liberté et son bien-être restent au centre de la société.
Épousant le contexte propre à chaque pays, cette action de soutien aux personnalités responsables, de même que l'information de l'opinion publique, se développe par le canal des moyens de communications audio-visuels et de la presse, par l'organisation de conférences, de grandes réunions publiques et de séminaires d'études.
L'Union Paneuropéenne est le creuset dans lequel se rencontrent, dans le respect de leur légitime diversité, les forces politiques, culturelles, sociales, économiques et religieuses agissant dans le sens de nos objectifs; Elle contribue à inspirer leur engagement européen et à favoriser la coordination de leur action dans la lutte pour l'unité dont l'enjeu est l'avenir de notre continent.
Le Président international de l'Union Paneuropéenne OTTO de HABSBOURG ne cesse de mobiliser ces forces pour susciter un véritable patriotisme européen qui complète et couronne les patriotismes nationaux :
" Les premières élections européennes du 10 juin 1979 ont donné une nouvelle dimension à l'Europe ; Elles constituent un premier pas vers l'union politique de l'Europe, pour aboutir à la création d'un exécutif européen.. Jusqu'à présent, on pouvait se limiter à vouloir l'Europe et à s'occuper exclusivement des institutions. Dorénavant, se posera la question de leur contenu. C'est là un tournant décisif car, de notre attitude à ce sujet, peut dépendre le sort des générations à venir.
Que cela plaise ou non, l'heure est venue de dire sans ambages quelle Europe nous voulons.."
Nous avons clairement défini nos buts comme mouvement politique sans affiliation partisane :

1. Nous croyons à la grande Europe

Pour nous, l'Europe ne finit pas à la ligne artificielle tracée en février 1945 à travers notre continent par des non-Européens. Pour nous, les murs, les barbelés, les champs de mines ne sont pas la frontière de l'Europe. Tchèques et Slovaques, Magyars et Polonais, Roumains et Bulgares, sont aussi Européens que les peuples des pays membres du Conseil de l'Europe. Si aujourd'hui, nous cherchons l'union de l'Ouest, cela ne signifie pas que nous abandonnions le centre et l'Est du continent.
Au contraire, nous entendons promouvoir, par tous les moyens pacifiques, l'autodétermination de tous les Européens.
Il n'y aura ni paix, ni sécurité aussi longtemps que des peuples européens resteront colonisés à l'époque de la décolonisation.

2. Nous voulons un continent de liberté

C'est-à-dire un système politique où les droits et libertés individuels priment le droit des États et que seul un renforcement des communautés naturelles peut garantir; C'est pourquoi nous voulons réaliser une Europe basée sur le principe selon lequel l'entité la plus grande ne peut s'attribuer les compétences qui sont exercées de façon satisfaisante par la plus petite. L'Europe doit être construite de bas en haut, et non à l'inverse, comme le veulent les bureaucrates et les technocrates.
Nous luttons pour une Europe véritablement populaire, édifiée à partir de l'homme, des familles, des communes, des régions - ses entités de base - car c'est en leur sein que la liberté se conserve le mieux.
Liberté, signifie également une économie de marché libre et sociale, et la garantie absolue des droits de l'homme assurée par un ordre juridique inspiré par le droit naturel.
Il n'y a donc pas de compromis entre nous et les forces collectivistes et totalitaires qui font de l'homme un esclave. Combattre le défi communiste, le plus grand danger qui nous menace, est un de nos devoirs principaux.

3. Nous voulons une Europe chrétienne

L'Europe est un continent dont les sources d'unité sont chrétiennes. La culture et le mode de vie européens ont leurs racines dans les valeurs chrétiennes. L'Union Paneuropéenne s'élève contre toutes les tendances nihilistes et anti-religieuses qui détruisent la force morale et spirituelle de notre continent.
La Croix n'a peut-être pas besoin de l'Europe, mais l'Europe a certainement besoin de la Croix.

4. Nous voulons une Europe sociale

Qui garantisse la justice sociale et la dignité humaine pour tous les groupes de notre société et qui soutienne le droit des minorités qui ont le moins de chances de s'exprimer.
Mener une politique sociale avec succès, ne revient pas pour nous à acheter la population avec son propre argent, mais à étendre l'espace des libertés ; C'est pourquoi, nous défendons le maintien des entreprises individuelles et familiales.

Le chemin pour atteindre ces buts sera ardu car la décadence est allée très loin.

L'espace de la liberté s'est rétréci dans le monde. Parmi les 157 États membres de l'ONU, à peine trente sont des démocraties. Moins d'un tiers connaît encore la liberté économique.
C'est la décadence morale de l'Ouest qui est la cause des victoires totalitaires.
"Lutter contre ce déclin est le devoir de tous ceux qui croient que maintenir l'Europe n'est pas seulement une obligation envers nos enfants, mais également envers toutes les nations de la terre, car si nous laissons éteindre le flambeau de la liberté, il n'y aura plus personne pour le rallumer."

LE PLUS ANCIEN MOUVEMENT EUROPÉEN

En 1922, le Comte Richard **COUDENHOVE-KALERGI** fonde à Vienne l'**UNION PANEUROPEENNE** dont le but est de développer au niveau du continent l'expérience confédérale suisse.
Face aux dangers de la montée des nationalismes et de l'internationalisme totalitaire, Coudenhove-Kalergi propose une alternative nouvelle : une "PAN-EUROPE" unie.
2000 délégués de 24 nations se rendront à Vienne au premier Congrès Paneuropéen de 1926.
Aristide **BRIAND** devient Président d'honneur de l'Union Paneuropéenne. Konrad **ADENAUER** et Gustav **STRESEMANN** comptent parmi les plus étroits collaborateurs du mouvement. Depuis lors, l'Union Paneuropéenne sera à la pointe de toutes les initiatives prises, entre les deux guerres, en faveur de l'union et de la paix en Europe.
Pourchassé par les nazis au cours de la seconde guerre, Coudenhove poursuit son oeuvre en Amérique; Il organise des congrès et dirige un séminaire pour étudier l'Europe fédérale d'après-guerre. Gagnant l'opinion publique et le Congrès américain à la cause paneuropéenne, Coudenhove pose les bases du futur plan Marshall.
Rentré en Europe, le fondateur de l'Union Paneuropéenne convoquera à Gstaad en 1947 le tout premier Congrès de parlementaires européens librement élus. Ceux-ci fonderont en 1948 l'Union Parlementaire européenne, première étape vers le Conseil de l'Europe, fondé en 1949.
L'Union Paneuropéenne soutiendra l'initiative de Robert **SCHUMAN**, d'Alcide **DE GASPERI** et d'**ADENAUER**, inspirée par Jean **MONNET** visant à l'intégration économique de l'Europe tout en insistant sur la nécessité d'une union politique de l'Europe.
En 1973, après la mort de son fondateur, l'Union Paneuropéenne élira un nouveau Président : **OTTO de HABSBOURG**. Ses premiers actes seront de rallier au mouvement de nombreux groupes dans divers pays, et de faire adopter une Charte commune à l'Assemblée générale de Strasbourg en mai 1973;
L'unité de la doctrine telle qu'elle est exprimée dans cette "Déclaration de base" est le ciment qui unit entre elles, dans la pensée et dans l'action, les multiples organisations qui ont adhéré au mouvement ou s'y sont associées.
D'un cercle de notables, l'Union Paneuropéenne devenait un mouvement de masse. C'est ainsi qu'elle fut en mesure de participer activement aux premières élections du Parlement Européen en 1979.
Le Président lui-même y fut élu et constitua un groupe paneuropéen d'action parlementaire dont les membres appartiennent à diverses familles politiques allant des libéraux aux démocrates-chrétiens en passant par les conservateurs.
Cette évolution aboutit en 1981 à une réforme des Statuts et se reflète dans la composition du Conseil International de Présidence, organe suprême d'exécution, qui compte à côté de techniciens des parlementaires européens.

Below : from a MAUE bulletin, after the European Parliament elections of 1984.

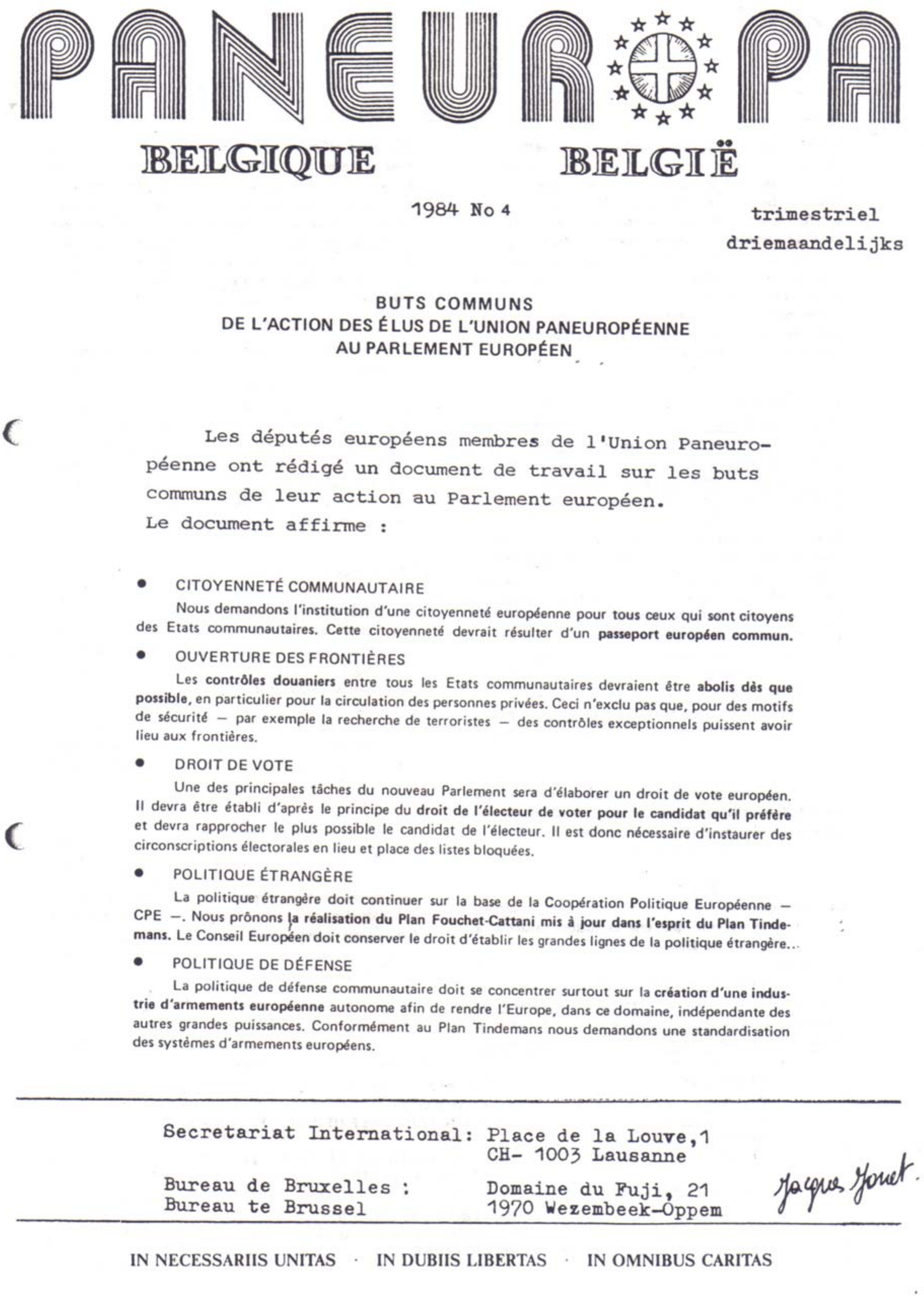

PANEUROPA

BELGIQUE BELGIË

1984 No 4

trimestriel
driemaandelijks

BUTS COMMUNS DE L'ACTION DES ÉLUS DE L'UNION PANEUROPÉENNE AU PARLEMENT EUROPÉEN

Les députés européens membres de l'Union Paneuropéenne ont rédigé un document de travail sur les buts communs de leur action au Parlement européen.
Le document affirme :

- CITOYENNETÉ COMMUNAUTAIRE

  Nous demandons l'institution d'une citoyenneté européenne pour **tous ceux qui sont citoyens** des Etats communautaires. Cette citoyenneté devrait résulter d'un **passeport européen commun.**

- OUVERTURE DES FRONTIÈRES

  Les **contrôles douaniers** entre tous les Etats communautaires devraient être **abolis dès que possible**, en particulier pour la circulation des personnes privées. Ceci n'exclu pas que, pour des motifs de sécurité – par exemple la recherche de terroristes – des contrôles exceptionnels puissent avoir lieu aux frontières.

- DROIT DE VOTE

  Une des principales tâches du nouveau Parlement sera d'élaborer un droit de vote européen. Il devra être établi d'après le principe du **droit de l'électeur de voter pour le candidat qu'il préfère** et devra rapprocher le plus possible le candidat de l'électeur. Il est donc nécessaire d'instaurer des circonscriptions électorales en lieu et place des listes bloquées.

- POLITIQUE ÉTRANGÈRE

  La politique étrangère doit continuer sur la base de la Coopération Politique Européenne – CPE –. Nous prônons **la réalisation du Plan Fouchet-Cattani mis à jour dans l'esprit du Plan Tindemans.** Le Conseil Européen doit conserver le droit d'établir les grandes lignes de la politique étrangère...

- POLITIQUE DE DÉFENSE

  La politique de défense communautaire doit se concentrer surtout sur la **création d'une industrie d'armements européenne** autonome afin de rendre l'Europe, dans ce domaine, indépendante des autres grandes puissances. Conformément au Plan Tindemans nous demandons une standardisation des systèmes d'armements européens.

Secretariat International: Place de la Louve,1
CH- 1003 Lausanne

Bureau de Bruxelles : Domaine du Fuji, 21
Bureau te Brussel 1970 Wezembeek-Oppem

Jacques Jonet.

IN NECESSARIIS UNITAS · IN DUBIIS LIBERTAS · IN OMNIBUS CARITAS

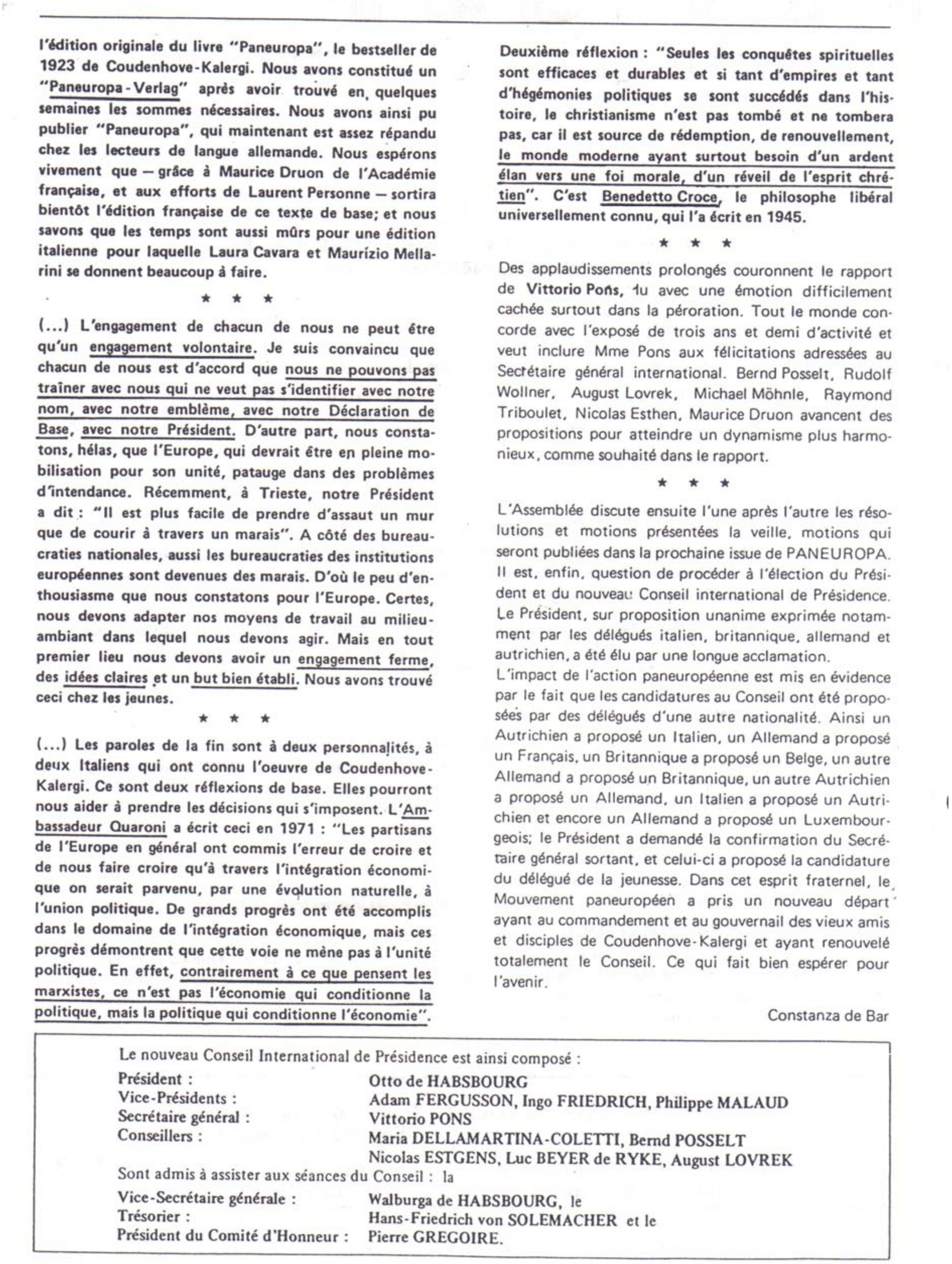

l'édition originale du livre "Paneuropa", le bestseller de 1923 de Coudenhove-Kalergi. Nous avons constitué un "Paneuropa-Verlag" après avoir trouvé en quelques semaines les sommes nécessaires. Nous avons ainsi pu publier "Paneuropa", qui maintenant est assez répandu chez les lecteurs de langue allemande. Nous espérons vivement que — grâce à Maurice Druon de l'Académie française, et aux efforts de Laurent Personne — sortira bientôt l'édition française de ce texte de base; et nous savons que les temps sont aussi mûrs pour une édition italienne pour laquelle Laura Cavara et Maurizio Mellarini se donnent beaucoup à faire.

* * *

(...) L'engagement de chacun de nous ne peut être qu'un engagement volontaire. Je suis convaincu que chacun de nous est d'accord que nous ne pouvons pas traîner avec nous qui ne veut pas s'identifier avec notre nom, avec notre emblème, avec notre Déclaration de Base, avec notre Président. D'autre part, nous constatons, hélas, que l'Europe, qui devrait être en pleine mobilisation pour son unité, patauge dans des problèmes d'intendance. Récemment, à Trieste, notre Président a dit : "Il est plus facile de prendre d'assaut un mur que de courir à travers un marais". A côté des bureaucraties nationales, aussi les bureaucraties des institutions européennes sont devenues des marais. D'où le peu d'enthousiasme que nous constatons pour l'Europe. Certes, nous devons adapter nos moyens de travail au milieu-ambiant dans lequel nous devons agir. Mais en tout premier lieu nous devons avoir un engagement ferme, des idées claires et un but bien établi. Nous avons trouvé ceci chez les jeunes.

* * *

(...) Les paroles de la fin sont à deux personnalités, à deux Italiens qui ont connu l'oeuvre de Coudenhove-Kalergi. Ce sont deux réflexions de base. Elles pourront nous aider à prendre les décisions qui s'imposent. L'Ambassadeur Quaroni a écrit ceci en 1971 : "Les partisans de l'Europe en général ont commis l'erreur de croire et de nous faire croire qu'à travers l'intégration économique on serait parvenu, par une évolution naturelle, à l'union politique. De grands progrès ont été accomplis dans le domaine de l'intégration économique, mais ces progrès démontrent que cette voie ne mène pas à l'unité politique. En effet, contrairement à ce que pensent les marxistes, ce n'est pas l'économie qui conditionne la politique, mais la politique qui conditionne l'économie".

Deuxième réflexion : "Seules les conquêtes spirituelles sont efficaces et durables et si tant d'empires et tant d'hégémonies politiques se sont succédés dans l'histoire, le christianisme n'est pas tombé et ne tombera pas, car il est source de rédemption, de renouvellement, le monde moderne ayant surtout besoin d'un ardent élan vers une foi morale, d'un réveil de l'esprit chrétien". C'est Benedetto Croce, le philosophe libéral universellement connu, qui l'a écrit en 1945.

* * *

Des applaudissements prolongés couronnent le rapport de **Vittorio Pons,** lu avec une émotion difficilement cachée surtout dans la péroration. Tout le monde concorde avec l'exposé de trois ans et demi d'activité et veut inclure Mme Pons aux félicitations adressées au Secrétaire général international. Bernd Posselt, Rudolf Wollner, August Lovrek, Michael Möhnle, Raymond Triboulet, Nicolas Esthen, Maurice Druon avancent des propositions pour atteindre un dynamisme plus harmonieux, comme souhaité dans le rapport.

* * *

L'Assemblée discute ensuite l'une après l'autre les résolutions et motions présentées la veille, motions qui seront publiées dans la prochaine issue de PANEUROPA. Il est, enfin, question de procéder à l'élection du Président et du nouveau Conseil international de Présidence. Le Président, sur proposition unanime exprimée notamment par les délégués italien, britannique, allemand et autrichien, a été élu par une longue acclamation.

L'impact de l'action paneuropéenne est mis en évidence par le fait que les candidatures au Conseil ont été proposées par des délégués d'une autre nationalité. Ainsi un Autrichien a proposé un Italien, un Allemand a proposé un Français, un Britannique a proposé un Belge, un autre Allemand a proposé un Britannique, un autre Autrichien a proposé un Allemand, un Italien a proposé un Autrichien et encore un Allemand a proposé un Luxembourgeois; le Président a demandé la confirmation du Secrétaire général sortant, et celui-ci a proposé la candidature du délégué de la jeunesse. Dans cet esprit fraternel, le Mouvement paneuropéen a pris un nouveau départ ayant au commandement et au gouvernail des vieux amis et disciples de Coudenhove-Kalergi et ayant renouvelé totalement le Conseil. Ce qui fait bien espérer pour l'avenir.

Constanza de Bar

Le nouveau Conseil International de Présidence est ainsi composé :

Président :	Otto de HABSBOURG
Vice-Présidents :	Adam FERGUSSON, Ingo FRIEDRICH, Philippe MALAUD
Secrétaire général :	Vittorio PONS
Conseillers :	Maria DELLAMARTINA-COLETTI, Bernd POSSELT Nicolas ESTGENS, Luc BEYER de RYKE, August LOVREK

Sont admis à assister aux séances du Conseil : la

Vice-Secrétaire générale :	Walburga de HABSBOURG, le
Trésorier :	Hans-Friedrich von SOLEMACHER et le
Président du Comité d'Honneur :	Pierre GREGOIRE.

Below : Mungo (1985), a vital inside source on the AESP, Violet and Damman.

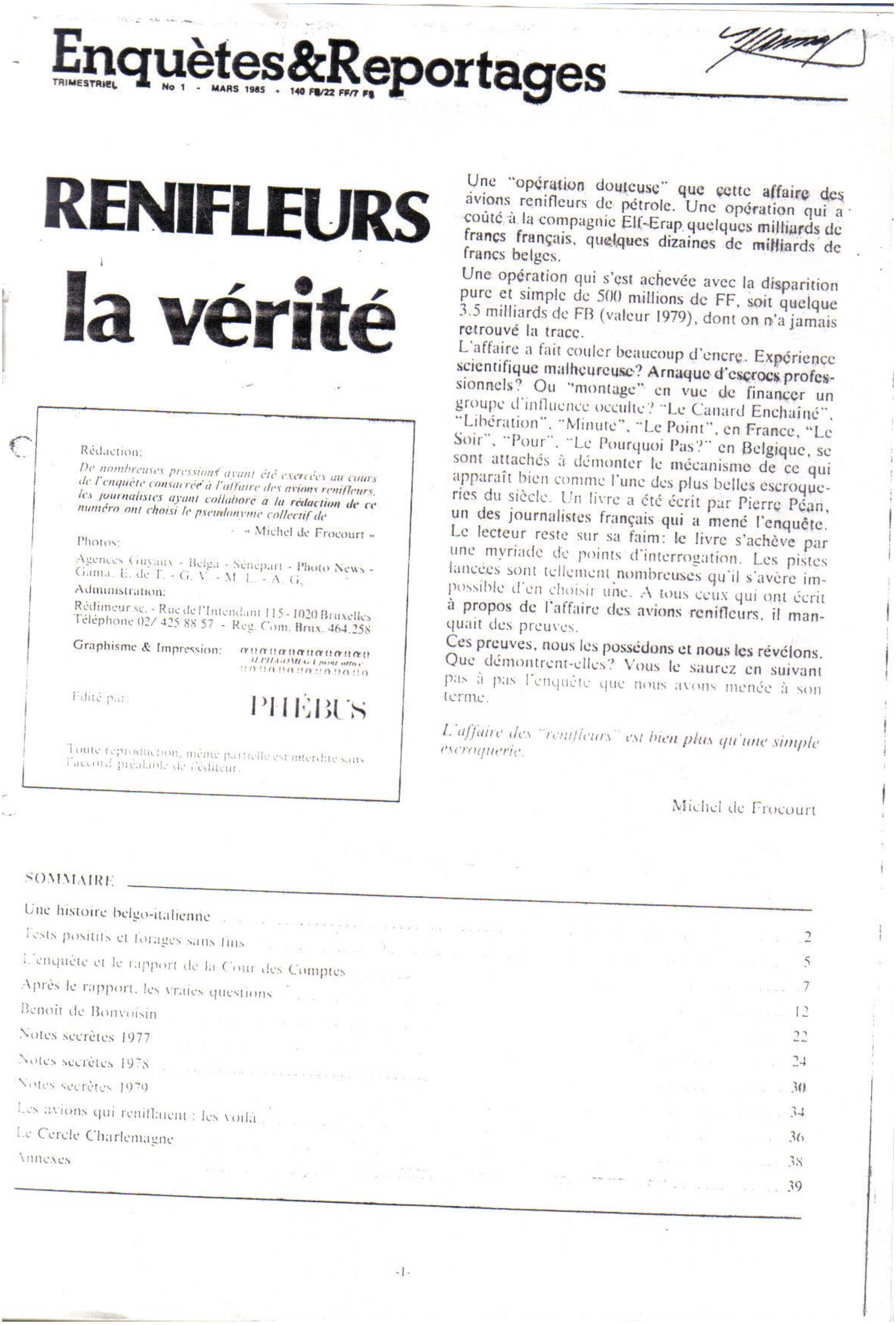

Enquètes&Reportages
TRIMESTRIEL No 1 - MARS 1985 - 140 FB/22 FF/7 FS

RENIFLEURS la vérité

Une "opération douteuse" que cette affaire des avions renifleurs de pétrole. Une opération qui a coûté à la compagnie Elf-Erap quelques milliards de francs français, quelques dizaines de milliards de francs belges.

Une opération qui s'est achevée avec la disparition pure et simple de 500 millions de FF, soit quelque 3.5 milliards de FB (valeur 1979), dont on n'a jamais retrouvé la trace.

L'affaire a fait couler beaucoup d'encre. Expérience scientifique malheureuse? Arnaque d'escrocs professionnels? Ou "montage" en vue de financer un groupe d'influence occulte? "Le Canard Enchaîné", "Libération", "Minute", "Le Point", en France, "Le Soir", "Pour", "Le Pourquoi Pas?" en Belgique, se sont attachés à démonter le mécanisme de ce qui apparaît bien comme l'une des plus belles escroqueries du siècle. Un livre a été écrit par Pierre Péan, un des journalistes français qui a mené l'enquête. Le lecteur reste sur sa faim: le livre s'achève par une myriade de points d'interrogation. Les pistes lancées sont tellement nombreuses qu'il s'avère impossible d'en choisir une. A tous ceux qui ont écrit à propos de l'affaire des avions renifleurs, il manquait des preuves.

Ces preuves, nous les possédons et nous les révélons. Que démontrent-elles? Vous le saurez en suivant pas à pas l'enquête que nous avons menée à son terme.

L'affaire des "renifleurs" est bien plus qu'une simple escroquerie.

Michel de Frocourt

Rédaction:
De nombreuses pressions ayant été exercées au cours de l'enquête consacrée à l'affaire des avions renifleurs, les journalistes ayant collaboré à la rédaction de ce numéro ont choisi le pseudonyme collectif de
« Michel de Frocourt »
Photos:
Agences Guyaux - Belga - Sénépart - Photo News - Gama. E. de T. - G. V. - M. L. - A. G.
Administration:
Rédimeur sc. - Rue de l'Intendant 115 - 1020 Bruxelles
Téléphone 02/ 425 88 57 - Reg. Com. Brux. 464.258
Graphisme & Impression: ALPHA-OMEGA print office
Edité par: PHÉBUS

Toute reproduction, même partielle est interdite sans l'accord préalable de l'éditeur.

SOMMAIRE

Une histoire belgo-italienne
Tests positifs et forages sans fins 2
L'enquête et le rapport de la Cour des Comptes 5
Après le rapport, les vraies questions 7
Benoît de Bonvoisin 12
Notes secrètes 1977 22
Notes secrètes 1978 24
Notes secrètes 1979 30
Les avions qui reniflaient : les voilà 34
Le Cercle Charlemagne 36
Annexes 38
39

-1-

Next page: RI appeal from the *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung*, March 1985.

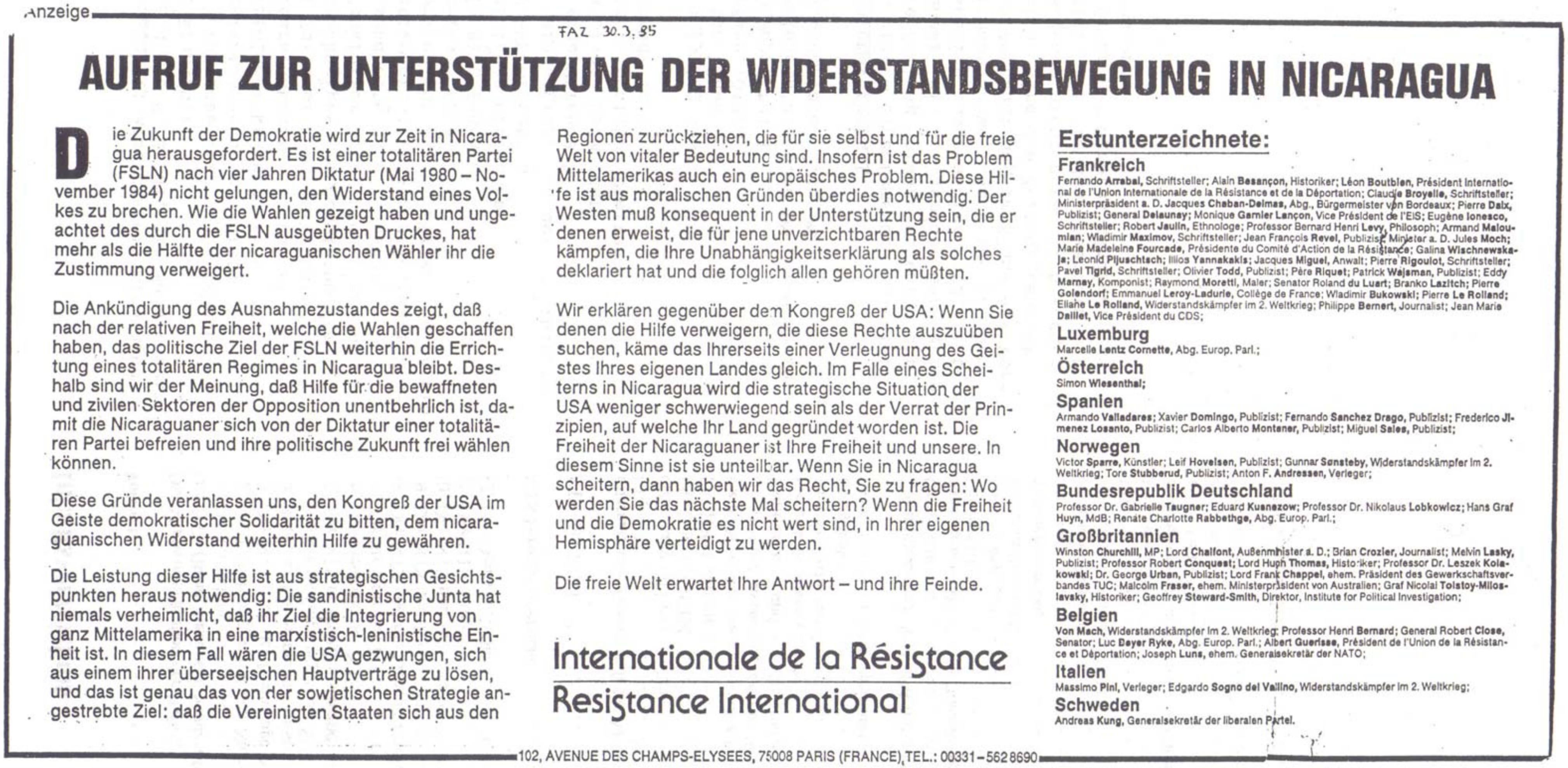

Anzeige

FAZ 30.3.85

AUFRUF ZUR UNTERSTÜTZUNG DER WIDERSTANDSBEWEGUNG IN NICARAGUA

Die Zukunft der Demokratie wird zur Zeit in Nicaragua herausgefordert. Es ist einer totalitären Partei (FSLN) nach vier Jahren Diktatur (Mai 1980 – November 1984) nicht gelungen, den Widerstand eines Volkes zu brechen. Wie die Wahlen gezeigt haben und ungeachtet des durch die FSLN ausgeübten Druckes, hat mehr als die Hälfte der nicaraguanischen Wähler ihr die Zustimmung verweigert.

Die Ankündigung des Ausnahmezustandes zeigt, daß nach der relativen Freiheit, welche die Wahlen geschaffen haben, das politische Ziel der FSLN weiterhin die Errichtung eines totalitären Regimes in Nicaragua bleibt. Deshalb sind wir der Meinung, daß Hilfe für die bewaffneten und zivilen Sektoren der Opposition unentbehrlich ist, damit die Nicaraguaner sich von der Diktatur einer totalitären Partei befreien und ihre politische Zukunft frei wählen können.

Diese Gründe veranlassen uns, den Kongreß der USA im Geiste demokratischer Solidarität zu bitten, dem nicaraguanischen Widerstand weiterhin Hilfe zu gewähren.

Die Leistung dieser Hilfe ist aus strategischen Gesichtspunkten heraus notwendig: Die sandinistische Junta hat niemals verheimlicht, daß ihr Ziel die Integrierung von ganz Mittelamerika in eine marxistisch-leninistische Einheit ist. In diesem Fall wären die USA gezwungen, sich aus einem ihrer überseeischen Hauptverträge zu lösen, und das ist genau das von der sowjetischen Strategie angestrebte Ziel: daß die Vereinigten Staaten sich aus den Regionen zurückziehen, die für sie selbst und für die freie Welt von vitaler Bedeutung sind. Insofern ist das Problem Mittelamerikas auch ein europäisches Problem. Diese Hilfe ist aus moralischen Gründen überdies notwendig. Der Westen muß konsequent in der Unterstützung sein, die er denen erweist, die für jene unverzichtbaren Rechte kämpfen, die Ihre Unabhängigkeitserklärung als solches deklariert hat und die folglich allen gehören müßten.

Wir erklären gegenüber dem Kongreß der USA: Wenn Sie denen die Hilfe verweigern, die diese Rechte auszuüben suchen, käme das Ihrerseits einer Verleugnung des Geistes Ihres eigenen Landes gleich. Im Falle eines Scheiterns in Nicaragua wird die strategische Situation der USA weniger schwerwiegend sein als der Verrat der Prinzipien, auf welche Ihr Land gegründet worden ist. Die Freiheit der Nicaraguaner ist Ihre Freiheit und unsere. In diesem Sinne ist sie unteilbar. Wenn Sie in Nicaragua scheitern, dann haben wir das Recht, Sie zu fragen: Wo werden Sie das nächste Mal scheitern? Wenn die Freiheit und die Demokratie es nicht wert sind, in Ihrer eigenen Hemisphäre verteidigt zu werden.

Die freie Welt erwartet Ihre Antwort – und ihre Feinde.

Internationale de la Résistance

Resistance International

Erstunterzeichnete:

Frankreich

Fernando **Arrabal,** Schriftsteller; Alain **Besançon,** Historiker; Léon **Boutbien,** Président International de l'Union Internationale de la Résistance et de la Déportation; Claudie **Broyelle,** Schriftsteller; Ministerpräsident a. D. Jacques **Chaban-Delmas,** Abg., Bürgermeister von Bordeaux; Pierre **Daix,** Publizist; General **Delaunay;** Monique **Garnier Lançon,** Vice Président de l'EIS; Eugène **Ionesco,** Schriftsteller; Robert **Jaulin,** Ethnologe; Professor Bernard Henri **Levy,** Philosoph; Armand **Maloumian;** Wladimir **Maximov,** Schriftsteller; Jean François **Revel,** Publizist; Minister a. D. Jules **Moch;** Marie Madeleine **Fourcade,** Présidente du Comité d'Action de la Résistance; Galina **Wischnewskaja;** Leonid **Pljuschtsch;** Illios **Yannakakis;** Jacques **Miguel,** Anwalt; Pierre **Rigoulot,** Schriftsteller; Pavel **Tigrid,** Schriftsteller; Olivier **Todd,** Publizist; Père **Riquet;** Patrick **Wajsman,** Publizist; Eddy **Marnay,** Komponist; Raymond **Moretti,** Maler; Senator Roland **du Luart;** Branko **Lazitch;** Pierre **Golendorf;** Emmanuel **Leroy-Ladurie,** Collège de France; Wladimir **Bukowski;** Pierre **Le Rolland;** Eliane **Le Rolland,** Widerstandskämpfer im 2. Weltkrieg; Philippe **Bernert,** Journalist; Jean Marie **Daillet,** Vice Président du CDS;

Luxemburg

Marcelle **Lentz Cornette,** Abg. Europ. Parl.;

Österreich

Simon **Wiesenthal;**

Spanien

Armando **Valladares;** Xavier **Domingo,** Publizist; Fernando **Sanchez Drago,** Publizist; Frederico **Jimenez Losanto,** Publizist; Carlos Alberto **Montaner,** Publizist; Miguel **Sales,** Publizist;

Norwegen

Victor **Sparre,** Künstler; Leif **Hovelsen,** Publizist; Gunnar **Sønsteby,** Widerstandskämpfer im 2. Weltkrieg; Tore **Stubberud,** Publizist; Anton F. **Andressen,** Verleger;

Bundesrepublik Deutschland

Professor Dr. Gabrielle **Taugner;** Eduard **Kusnezow;** Professor Dr. Nikolaus **Lobkowicz;** Hans Graf **Huyn,** MdB; Renate Charlotte **Rabbethge,** Abg. Europ. Parl.;

Großbritannien

Winston **Churchill,** MP; Lord **Chalfont,** Außenminister a. D.; Brian **Crozier,** Journalist; Melvin **Lasky,** Publizist; Professor Robert **Conquest;** Lord Hugh **Thomas,** Historiker; Professor Dr. Leszek **Kolakowski;** Dr. George **Urban,** Publizist; Lord Frank **Chappel,** ehem. Präsident des Gewerkschaftsverbandes TUC; Malcolm **Fraser,** ehem. Ministerpräsident von Australien; Graf Nicolai **Tolstoy-Miloslavsky,** Historiker; Geoffrey **Steward-Smith,** Direktor, Institute for Political Investigation;

Belgien

Von Mach, Widerstandskämpfer im 2. Weltkrieg; Professor Henri **Bernard;** General Robert **Close,** Senator; Luc **Beyer Ryke,** Abg. Europ. Parl.; Albert **Guerisse,** Président de l'Union de la Résistance et Déportation; Joseph **Luns,** ehem. Generalsekretär der NATO;

Italien

Massimo **Pini,** Verleger; Edgardo **Sogno del Vallino,** Widerstandskämpfer im 2. Weltkrieg;

Schweden

Andreas **Kung,** Generalsekretär der liberalen Partei.

102, AVENUE DES CHAMPS-ELYSEES, 75008 PARIS (FRANCE), TEL.: 00331-5628690

1985.

Below : *IGfM* (1987), a crucial source.

Propagandisten des Krieges
Hintermänner der Contra:
„Internationale Gesellschaft
für Menschenrechte“

Dokumentation

Below : Dumont (1989) who infiltrated the AESP under the name Maurice Sartan.

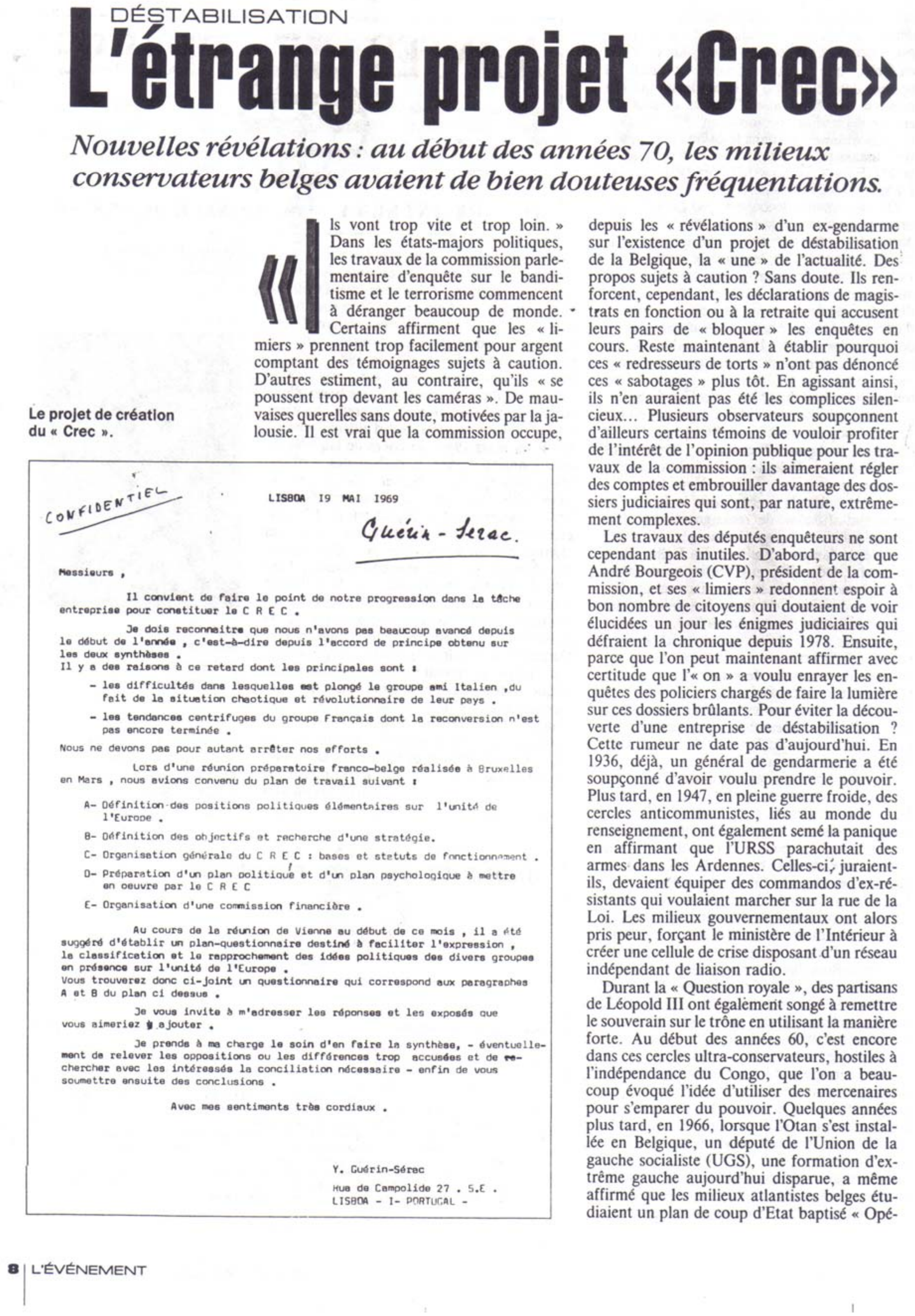

DÉSTABILISATION

L'étrange projet «Crec»

Nouvelles révélations : au début des années 70, les milieux conservateurs belges avaient de bien douteuses fréquentations.

« Ils vont trop vite et trop loin. » Dans les états-majors politiques, les travaux de la commission parlementaire d'enquête sur le banditisme et le terrorisme commencent à déranger beaucoup de monde. Certains affirment que les « limiers » prennent trop facilement pour argent comptant des témoignages sujets à caution. D'autres estiment, au contraire, qu'ils « se poussent trop devant les caméras ». De mauvaises querelles sans doute, motivées par la jalousie. Il est vrai que la commission occupe, depuis les « révélations » d'un ex-gendarme sur l'existence d'un projet de déstabilisation de la Belgique, la « une » de l'actualité. Des propos sujets à caution ? Sans doute. Ils renforcent, cependant, les déclarations de magistrats en fonction ou à la retraite qui accusent leurs pairs de « bloquer » les enquêtes en cours. Reste maintenant à établir pourquoi ces « redresseurs de torts » n'ont pas dénoncé ces « sabotages » plus tôt. En agissant ainsi, ils n'en auraient pas été les complices silencieux... Plusieurs observateurs soupçonnent d'ailleurs certains témoins de vouloir profiter de l'intérêt de l'opinion publique pour les travaux de la commission : ils aimeraient régler des comptes et embrouiller davantage des dossiers judiciaires qui sont, par nature, extrêmement complexes.

Les travaux des députés enquêteurs ne sont cependant pas inutiles. D'abord, parce que André Bourgeois (CVP), président de la commission, et ses « limiers » redonnent espoir à bon nombre de citoyens qui doutaient de voir élucidées un jour les énigmes judiciaires qui défraient la chronique depuis 1978. Ensuite, parce que l'on peut maintenant affirmer avec certitude que l'« on » a voulu enrayer les enquêtes des policiers chargés de faire la lumière sur ces dossiers brûlants. Pour éviter la découverte d'une entreprise de déstabilisation ? Cette rumeur ne date pas d'aujourd'hui. En 1936, déjà, un général de gendarmerie a été soupçonné d'avoir voulu prendre le pouvoir. Plus tard, en 1947, en pleine guerre froide, des cercles anticommunistes, liés au monde du renseignement, ont également semé la panique en affirmant que l'URSS parachutait des armes dans les Ardennes. Celles-ci, juraient-ils, devaient équiper des commandos d'ex-résistants qui voulaient marcher sur la rue de la Loi. Les milieux gouvernementaux ont alors pris peur, forçant le ministère de l'Intérieur à créer une cellule de crise disposant d'un réseau indépendant de liaison radio.

Durant la « Question royale », des partisans de Léopold III ont également songé à remettre le souverain sur le trône en utilisant la manière forte. Au début des années 60, c'est encore dans ces cercles ultra-conservateurs, hostiles à l'indépendance du Congo, que l'on a beaucoup évoqué l'idée d'utiliser des mercenaires pour s'emparer du pouvoir. Quelques années plus tard, en 1966, lorsque l'Otan s'est installée en Belgique, un député de l'Union de la gauche socialiste (UGS), une formation d'extrême gauche aujourd'hui disparue, a même affirmé que les milieux atlantistes belges étudiaient un plan de coup d'Etat baptisé « Opé-

Le projet de création du « Crec ».

CONFIDENTIEL

LISBOA 19 MAI 1969

Guérin - Serac.

Messieurs ,

Il convient de faire le point de notre progression dans la tâche entreprise pour constituer le C R E C .

Je dois reconnaitre que nous n'avons pas beaucoup avancé depuis le début de l'année , c'est-à-dire depuis l'accord de principe obtenu sur les deux synthèses .
Il y a des raisons à ce retard dont les principales sont :

- les difficultés dans lesquelles est plongé le groupe ami Italien ,du fait de la situation chaotique et révolutionnaire de leur pays .
- les tendances centrifuges du groupe Français dont la reconversion n'est pas encore terminée .

Nous ne devons pas pour autant arrêter nos efforts .

Lors d'une réunion préparatoire franco-belge réalisée à Bruxelles en Mars , nous avions convenu du plan de travail suivant :

A- Définition des positions politiques élémentaires sur l'unité de l'Europe .

B- Définition des objectifs et recherche d'une stratégie.

C- Organisation générale du C R E C : bases et statuts de fonctionnement .

D- Préparation d'un plan politique et d'un plan psychologique à mettre en oeuvre par le C R E C

E- Organisation d'une commission financière .

Au cours de la réunion de Vienne au début de ce mois , il a été suggéré d'établir un plan-questionnaire destiné à faciliter l'expression , la classification et le rapprochement des idées politiques des divers groupes en présence sur l'unité de l'Europe .
Vous trouverez donc ci-joint un questionnaire qui correspond aux paragraphes A et B du plan ci dessus .

Je vous invite à m'adresser les réponses et les exposés que vous aimeriez y ajouter .

Je prends à ma charge le soin d'en faire la synthèse, - éventuellement de relever les oppositions ou les différences trop accusées et de rechercher avec les intéressés la conciliation nécessaire - enfin de vous soumettre ensuite des conclusions .

Avec mes sentiments très cordiaux .

Y. Guérin-Sérac
Rua de Campolide 27 . 5.E .
LISBOA - I- PORTUGAL -

8 | L'ÉVÉNEMENT

ration Prométhée ». L'information n'était pas dénuée de fondement mais l'UGS s'était trompée d'heure et de lieu : en effet, c'est en 1967, en Grèce, que le coup d'Etat s'est produit. Et ce sont des colonels d'extrême droite qui ont renversé la démocratie. D'autres projets ont encore défrayé la chronique en 1973, en 1978 et, plus récemment, dans le cadre de l'enquête sur l'assassinat de l'ingénieur commercial de la FN Juan « Tonio » Mendez *(Voir Le Vif/L'Express du 27 novembre 1987 et suivants).*

Des documents découverts par Le Vif/L'Express permettent aujourd'hui d'affirmer qu'à partir de la fin des années 60 et jusqu'à la moitié des années 70, les milieux ultra-conservateurs belges, partisans d'une grande Europe anticommuniste, ont entretenu des contacts discrets avec des hommes de main susceptibles d'effectuer (et de réussir) des opérations de déstabilisation. Basé à Lisbonne sous la couverture « d'Aginter-Presse », ainsi que du mouvement « Ordre et tradition », ce groupe d'extrême droite était dirigé par Yves Guérin-Sérac, l'ancien membre de l'OAS, l'organisation terroriste française hostile à l'indépendance de l'Algérie. « Aginter-Presse » a notamment travaillé pour la Pide, la police politique de la dictature portugaise ; pour la Kyp, le service secret des colonels grecs ; pour le Boss, l'agence sud-africaine de renseignements, ainsi que les policiers espagnols chargés d'éliminer les indépendantistes basques. En Italie, elle a également été mêlée aux tentatives de coup d'Etat fomentées par la loge maçonnique P2. Plusieurs hommes de main d'Aginter-Presse se sont enfuis en Amérique du Sud, où ils ont été recrutés par le « Servicio especial de securitad » (SES) bolivien. Un service spécial dépendant du ministère de l'Intérieur et financé par les trafiquants d'héroïne. En Italie et en Espagne, d'autres ont été mêlés à des assassinats collectifs ressemblant, par certains aspects, aux tueries du Brabant (ils tiraient indistinctement dans la foule).

Au début des années 70, Guerin-Serac entretient des rapports étroits avec un certain Edmond Damman. Ce dernier, militant actif de la cause de l'Europe chrétienne et anticommuniste, est bien introduit dans les milieux conservateurs belges. Il fréquente les membres en vue du Cercle des nations, de la Ligue internationale de la liberté, et d'autres clubs d'où sortiront, par la suite, les cadres du Cepic, l'aile droite du PSC. En outre, il organise des « Dîners Charlemagne » où se presse le Tout-Bruxelles conservateur. Affable, Damman joue les intermédiaires. Il met en rapport des hommes d'affaires honnêtes avec des financiers véreux, de vrais nobles avec des demi-mondaines et de faux princes avec des demoiselles à marier.

Mais derrière sa façade d'homme serviable, Damman, dont le nom sera, beaucoup plus tard, cité dans le scandale des « avions renifleurs » (une affaire d'escroquerie, qui a coûté des milliards de francs au gouvernement français), ne perd rien de ce qui se dit. Il recueille de nombreuses confidences qu'il reproduit quotidiennement sur des fiches Personnalités politiques, militants d'extrême droite, financiers.

AGINTER PRESSE

VERITAS UBIQUE

ALGER — BONN — BUENOS AYRES — BRUXELLES GENÈVE — LA HAYE LISBONNE — LONDRES MADRID — MÉXICO — OSLO

OTTAWA — PARIS — PRETORIA — RIO DE JANEIRO ROME — SAIGON — TAIPEH — STOCKHOLM — TEL AVIV TOKYO — WASHINGTON

AGENCE INTERNATIONALE DE PRESSE

Aginter-Presse était implantée partout.

Est-ce ce fichier, ainsi que les portes qu'il pourrait lui ouvrir, qui intéressait Guerin-Serac ? Il est certain, en tout cas, que Damman et le « patron » d'Aginter-Presse se sont beaucoup vus. Ils ont également échangé une abondante correspondance restée, jusqu'à présent, inédite. Entre 1969 et 1974, les deux hommes ont notamment jeté, avec l'aide « d'amis italiens et français », les bases d'une structure anticommuniste secrète baptisée « Crec ». Une réunion s'est d'ailleurs tenue à Paris, en mars 1969, au cours de laquelle un questionnaire visant a établir des « objectifs », ainsi que des « éléments de stratégie », a été établi. Damman était-il dupé par Guerin-Serac ? Ignorait-il le rôle joué par le chef d'Aginter-Presse dans les nombreux attentats qui ensanglantaient alors l'Europe ? C'est possible. Aveuglé par son anticommunisme, l'ancien de l'OAS considérait, lui, la Belgique comme un « corps infecté ». Il accusait, notamment, une « cellule communiste de la poste » de lire le courrier qu'il échangeait avec Damman et il fulminait contre le gouvernement belge, qui venait de reconnaître la République populaire de Chine. Familier des « coups tordus », le mercenaire voulait en découdre. Y compris en Belgique. Cependant, après la chute de la dictature portugaise, en 1974, Guerin-Sérac a disparu dans la nature. Et nul ne sait si le « Crec » lui a survécu.

Serge Dumont ■

LAURENT/ISOPRESS

André Bourgeois, président de la Commission d'enquête.

ORDRE ET TRADITION

C.F.

Lisboa le 26 mars 1969

Cher Monsieur DAMMAN,

Je vous remercie des aimables lettres des 19 et 20 mars qui m'apportent ici à l'extrême pointe du continent le souffle revigorant d'espérances européennes venues du coeur même de l'Europe !

Je suis également d'avis,si vous me le permettez de le donner,qu'il faut porter le maximum d'effort sur l'Académie et le Collège parce que c'est là que viendront les éléments les plus dynamiques et les plus agissants.Cependant , et vous avez encore raison,pour susciter un climat indispensable il faut toucher une élite plus large et plus diversifiée. Ecarter le Comte pour le remplacer par l'Archiduc est une solution,mais si elle se révèle impossible il est logique à mon sens d'envisager la création d'un autre organisme.

« Ordre et Tradition » servait également de couverture à Guérin-Sérac.

DESINFORMATION

LA LETTRE DE L'INSTITUT D'ETUDES DE LA DESINFORMATION

HEBDO

«La liberté qui capitule ou le pouvoir qui se dégrade n'obtient point merci de ses ennemis» Chateaubriand.

N°131-4 OCTOBRE 1989-Parait chaque mercredi-ISSN 00985-0031

ASSISES DE LA DESINFORMATION *(13-16 NOVEMBRE - NICE)*

Puisque les temps changent, pourquoi s'étonner de voir certaines méthodes changer au même rythme? De nos jours la désinformation ne vise plus seulement certaines élites. Elle essaie d'utiliser l'opinion publique comme levier. Voilà qui donne tout son sens à la manifestation que nous organisons du 13 au 16 novembre à Nice: les premières Assises Internationales de la Désinformation. N'insistons pas sur l'intérêt d'un programme que vous pouvez découvrir de manière précise dans les pages centrales. Mais arrêtons-nous quelques instants sur certaines vérités, toujours bonnes à dire, en particulier sur la nécessité de concevoir la lutte contre la désinformation comme un tout. D'abord parce que le caractère global de la désinformation est amplement démontré. Ensuite parce qu'à partir du moment où celle-ci s'attaque au plus grand nombre, la présence d'un public nombreux a Nice est infiniment souhaitable. C'est la raison pour laquelle nous comptons sur vous pour qu'une fois de plus vous soyez associés à une démarche qui, depuis la création de notre Institut est en partie devenue la vôtre.

EDITORIAL L'ARME OFFENSIVE DE LA GUERRE MODERNE

Il n'y a pas beaucoup plus de dix ans que le mot «désinformation» est entré dans le **Larousse** en dix volumes: cependant, au Moyen-Age, Roland tombait sous ses coups à Roncevaux. Dans le Japon du XVIIIème siècle, le Samouraï Akaï-Gaki n'hésitait pas, pour venger le meurtre de son Daïmio, à affronter l'opprobre en se roulant aux trois-quarts ivre dans le ruisseau. Abusés par cet avilissement apparent, ses ennemis étaient amenés à tenir devant lui des propos qui lui permettraient de les démasquer et d'entraîner dans une vengeance sanglante les 46 Ro-Ninns légendaires, ses compagnons.

L'histoire abonde d'exemples qui nous prouvent que *«induire en erreur, cacher ou travestir les faits en utilisant les techniques de l'information»*, pour reprendre la définition du **Petit Robert** 1989, constitue l'une des plus redoutables tactiques guerrières connues de l'homme. De nos jours, la désinformation prend, à mon sens, deux visages: celui de l'intoxication et celui, plus subtilement flou et peut-être encore plus efficace de la subversion.

L'intoxication consiste à accréditer auprès du public de masse des rumeurs propres à le tromper, le dérouter ou le démoraliser. C'est ainsi que, durant la guerre de 1914, nos grands-parents furent persuadés que tous les soldats allemands coupaient les mains des petits enfants français. Pendant la seconde guerre mondiale, des espions à la solde d'Hitler firent circuler le bruit que l'état-major soviétique serait prêt à collaborer avec l'Allemagne. Il en résulta que Staline, berné, décima le corps de ses officiers en en faisant exécuter la moitié.

Plus près de nous, la presse mondiale désigne sous le nom de *«plus vieux prisonnier du monde»* Nelson Mandela, lequel fêta son soixante-dixième anniversaire, entouré des siens, dans un séjour d'incarcération doré qu'il n'accepte pas de quitter, sauf en des occasions exceptionnelles, afin de ne pas compromettre une image légendaire qui aurait dû revenir à Rudolf Hess. Il a d'ailleurs récemment répondu à l'invitation de Pieter Botha bénéficiant d'une permission, faveur semblant prouver que le système pénal français a fait école dans le monde.

L'Afrique du Sud constitue, du reste, un terrain de choix où poursuivre la guerre idéologique dans laquelle sont passés maîtres les pays totalitaires est-européens assistés par Amnesty International: le procès de six noirs assassins d'un policier, de couleur lui aussi, monopolise les projecteurs des journalistes internationaux alors que les exactions commises par les sbires de Winnie Mandela retiennent à peine plus leur attention que les enfants noirs périssant dans d'atroces souffrances, un pneu enflammé autour du cou. Les «ghettos» de Soweto tirent toujours de leurs yeux des larmes de crocodiles mais aucun d'entre eux, pratiquement, n'a la probité de dire et d'écrire que, désormais, à Prétoria comme à Cape Town, jardins publics, hôtels de luxe, salles de spectacles, sauf quelques exceptions de plus en plus rares, sont ouverts à la population africaine. Encore moins ne prennent-ils la peine de souligner que la République Sud-Africaine, pays le plus évolué et le plus moderne du continent, est équipée somptueusement grâce aux impôts payés par les seuls contribuables blancs, au bénéfice des 25 millions d'habitants qui la peuplent.

Le spectre de l'apartheid doit continuer à isoler du monde occidental libre un continent riche qui, situé entre l'Océan Atlantique et l'Océan Indien, offre une position stratégique attisant les convoitises.

En revanche, la discrétion règne sur le régime policier contraignant les Arméniens, les Lettons, les Lithuaniens, les Estoniens, les Biélorussiens, les habitants de l'Azerbaïdjan et autres colonisés à posséder un «passeport intérieur» pour circuler dans leur propre pays et ce, 70 ans après la révolution bolchevique «libératrice». Il faut évidemment se garder de gâter l'euphorie dans laquelle plongent béatement les laudateurs de la pérestroïka... Ne risquent-ils pas de voir leur confiance ébranlée lorsqu'ils apprendront que **la Pravda** compare *«l'intervention militaire à Pékin à la nécessaire amputation d'une jambe malade»*?

Les tentatives pour couper les relations entre l'Europe de l'Ouest et les Etats-Unis entrent dans le cadre de la lutte souterraine qui sert les intérêts du bloc hégémoniste soviétique: oubliée l'attaque de Pearl-Harbour, dans le droit fil du code de la guerre nippon; par contre, éditoriaux, scénarios de films et de pièces de théâtre perpétuent le souvenir du largage sur Hiroshima de la bombe atomique, événement tragique s'il en est, mais qui, il ne faut pas l'oublier, épargna la vie de milliers de Britanniques et de Français d'Indochine, déjà recensés par les troupes japonaises d'occupation pour être déportés vers des camps de concentration inspirés du modèle «made in Germany».

N'est-il pas de toute première importance d'empêtrer dans les complexes d'une faute infamante, inexpiée, la seule nation capable, pour l'heure, de résister à un affrontement avec l'URSS?

Plus diffuse, la subversion agit sur tous les secteurs de la vie d'un pays, créant un soubassement idéologique où s'engluеront les agents propagateurs qui se recrutent souvent parmi les adversaires à abattre.

Grâce à son efficacité, le pouvoir colonialiste n'en finit pas d'être fustigé pour avoir privé de leur identité les peuples qui lui ont été soumis, alors que appel est fait à la générosité, au sens de la solidarité humaine et au respect des Droits de l'Homme pour que les étrangers qui arrivent dans notre pays, participent à nos consultations électorales, au risque de voir définitivement disparaître l'identité qui est la nôtre. Notre Président de la République s'est même risqué à déclarer, le 18 mai 1987, lors d'un colloque S.O.S. Racisme à la Sorbonne: *«Je veux que l'on puisse venir en France, je veux que l'on puisse bousculer la culture et les usages français...»* Il semble qu'il ait déjà été entendu sur bien des points si l'on en croit la chronique des faits divers des quotidiens français et celles des annales judiciaires.

La justice est le garant du respect de ces «Droits de l'Homme» tant célébrés cette année, au nombre desquels figure la liberté bafouée jusque dans nos rues puisque le fait d'y circuler vous expose à être détroussé ou agressé. Gardienne de lois écrites qui constituent un bastion de défense pour tous les citoyens, elle connaîtra néanmoins les attaques de la subversion qui, à travers elle, visent à saper les fondements d'une société «responsable de tous les maux qui l'affectent» alors que les individus qui la constituent en sont innocents. Conception diamétralement opposée à celle de **Paul de Iarse** qui allait répétant *«le monde serait meilleur si vous l'étiez»*.

Bien qu'un journaliste du **Figaro** ait écrit, le 21 octobre 1987: *«Les assassins servent en quelque sorte de boucs émissaires, ceux qui paient pour la folie de tous»*, les tueurs d'enfants, de jeunes filles et de vieillards suscitent encore la réprobation unanime du vulgum pecus.

Il n'en est pas de même pour les terroristes qui rencontrent non seulement la compréhension de notre intelligentsia mais de tous ceux qui, n'étant pas les victimes, voient dans leur action un combat courageux pour un idéal défendu au péril de leur vie. Précisons cependant que seule leur maladresse éventuelle peut mettre en danger leur existence dans les pays occidentaux: . Le censeur international, l'O.N.U. toujours prompt à condamner l'Occident, réagit faiblement devant l'appel au terrorisme lancé par le Président du Parlement iranien contre les Français, les Américains et les Britanniques *«parce qu'ils sont plus faciles à tuer que les Israéliens»*.

De manière surprenante, des représentants

(suite p4)

ASSISES INTERNATIONALES DE LA DESINFORMATION

AVANT

LUNDI 13 NOVEMBRE 1989

Les nouvelles méthodes de séduction des pays communistes.

Le gorbatchevisme analysé de l'intérieur par de véritables dissidents, la présentation des pays ou des organisations qui servent généralement de cible à la désinformation soviétique, l'étude de tous ceux qui contribuent, volontairement ou non, à cette désinformation en jouant les relais en Occident.

8 h 45 - Réunion des participants et présentation des Assises Internationales de la Désinformation. - Jacques MEDECIN, *Maire de Nice,* **- Daniel TRINQUET,** *Président de l'IED,* **- Animateur : Bernard ASSO,** *Universitaire.* **9 h 15 - Le mythe du gorbatchevisme.** La différence entre les promesses et les réalités. Les Occidentaux veulent-ils être désinformés *?.* **- Brian CROZIER,** *Expert en relations internationales.* **9 h 35 - Projection d'un document sur la désinformation. 10 h 00 - Le gorbatchevisme vu de l'intérieur. - Alexandre ZINOVIEV,** *Ecrivain, auteur de "le gorbatchevisme" l'Age d'Homme, éditeur.* **10 h 25 - Le cas roumain : Ceaucescu, du modèle au rejet. - Mgr Virgil GHEORGHIU,** *Ecrivain.* **10 h 45 - Pause. 11 h 00 - La désinformation par le texte : Alain BESANCON,** *Universitaire.* **11 h 20 - Les cibles privilègiés de la Desinformation.** Table ronde avec **- Georges MOND,** *Directeur du Centre d'information sur la Pologne,* **- Alain BESANCON,** *Universitaire,* **- Françoise THOM,** *Universitaire, auteur de "le moment Gorbatchev",* **- Claude ROUSSEAU,** *Universitaire,* **- Graham M. KINAHAN,** *Universitaire,* **- Jean-Claude MARTINEZ,** *Député Européen,* et le **Général Robert C. RICHARDSON, BERNARD LUGAN,** *Universitaire* et **P. ZAWADSKI,** *Représentant pour l'Europe de la KPN Polonaise.* **12 h 45 - L'Amérique aveuglée ou les ravages de la "gorbymania" outre-atlantique. - Thomas G. MOORE** - *Ex. Conseiller Spécial du Pentagone.* **13 h 00 - Pause.**

15 h 00 - Reprise des travaux. Les méthodes soviétiques de déstabilisation de l'Europe. - Comte Hans HUYN, *Député au Bundestag.* **15 h 20 - Le passé de Gorbatchev - Pierre de VILLEMAREST,** *Directeur du CEI.* **- 15 h 40 - L'église est-elle parfois complice du Socialisme ? L'étude de la théologie de la libération. - Jacques VINDEX,** *Auteur de "les Onagres" Ed. l'Age d'Homme.* **16 h 00 - Projection d'un document : La subversion dans l'église. 16 h 15 - Table ronde : les Onagres.** Ceux qui volontairement ou involontairement se font les complices de l'URSS et de ses alliés. **- Animateur : Jacques BONOMO,** *Journaliste au Figaro Magazine,* avec **- Jacques VINDEX, Jean-François LAMBERT,** *ancien président de la section française d'Amnesty International,* **Guillaume MAURY,** *Journaliste, auteur de "l'Eglise et la Subversion", Ed. Uni,* **Jean-Paul PICAPER,** *Correspondant à Bonn du Figaro, auteur de "Ces Allemands si tranquilles", Ed. Plon,* **Serge SCHWEITZER,** *Universitaire, auteur de "Unesco et Subversion", Ed. Uni,* **Suzanne LABIN.** *Journaliste, auteur de "Payer en dollars, voter en roubles".* **17 h 15 - Pause. 17 h 30 - Le terrorisme, une arme au service de la Désinformation. - Docteur Hans-Josef HORCHEM,** *Directeur de l'Institut de Recherche sur le Terrorisme (Bonn).* **17 h 50 - L'espionnage, une réalité qui explique partiellement les succès gorbatcheviens. - Préfet Jean ROCHET,** *ancien Directeur de la DST.* **18 H 15 - Conclusion générale de la première journée. Comment l'Occident doit-il faire face à la Désinformation soviétique. - Vladimir VOLKOFF,** *Ecrivain.* **18 h 45 - Fin de la première journée.**

MARDI 14 NOVEMBRE 1989

Le rôle de l'Etat.

Etat omnipotent qui se livre à une mainmise idéologique sur ses rouages essentiels comme l'armée, la police ou la justice et qui se mêle de ce qui ne le regarde pas à propos de l'université ou de la vie économique. Analyse de la désinformation qui présente le capitalisme, et non le socialisme comme corrupteur et qui veut que le progrès social soit lié à l'étatisme et à la présence de la gauche au pouvoir.

8 h 45 - Réunion des participants et présentation de la journée. - Animateur : Serge SCHWEITZER, *Universitaire,.* **9 h 00 - Réflexion sur le libéralisme et la puissance de l'Etat. - David HART,** *Editorialiste au Times.* **9 h 15 - Une défense pour quoi faire. La désinformation contre l'armée. - Général Jean DELAUNAY,** *ancien Chef d'Etat-major.* **9 h 35 - L'armée française aujourd'hui.** Depuis VALMY, le mythe de la Nation en armes. **- Général Maurice FAIVRE. 9 h 50 - Projection d'un document. 9 h 55 - La Défense.** Une dimension culturelle oubliée. **- Général Arnaud du FOIARD. 10 h 15 - Pause. 10 h 30 - Etat et justice.** Historique des affaires qui ont marqué notre vie politique récente. **- André GIRESSE,** *ancien Président de la Cour d'Assises de Paris, auteur de "Seule la vérité blesse", Ed. Plon.* **10 h 50 - Police et justice, une mainmise de plus en plus pesante.** Table ronde animée par : **- Joël-François DUMONT,** *Journaliste à FR3,* avec **Dominique MATAGRIN,** *Secrétaire Général de l'Association professionnelle des magistrats,* **- Raoul BETEILLE,** *ancien Conseiller à la Cour de Cassation,* **- Jean ROCHET,** *ancien Directeur de la DST,* **- Roger CHAIX,** *Préfet de police honoraire.* **12 h 00 - L'éducation un rôle dévoyé. - Recteur Yves DURAND. 12 h 20 - Enseignement et illettrisme. Professeur Pierre DEBRAY-RITZEN.** 12 h 40 **- Un exemple précis de désinformation : les manuels scolaires. - Pierre COULANGE,** *Professeur.* **13 h 00 - Pause.**

15 h 00 - Reprise des travaux. Progrès social et étatisme : un exemple d'idée fausse. - Jacques GARELLO, *Président de l'ALEPS.* **15 h 20 - Omniprésence de l'Etat sur le marché du travail. - Bertrand LEMMENICIER,** *Universitaire.* **15 h 40 - Etude d'un phénomène mal connu : pourquoi l'Etat se développe-t-il ? - Jean-Pierre CENTI,** *Universitaire.* **16 h 00 - Pause. 16 h 15 - Le socialisme corruption d'un système. - Pascal SALIN,** *Universitaire.* **16 h 35 - L'Etat et les Collectivités locales. - Gérard BRAMOULLE,** *Universitaire, ancien Adjoint au Maire d'Aix en Provence.* **16 h 55 - Table ronde : Les aspects mal connus de l'étatisme avec : - Christian ATIAS,** *Universitaire,* **- Jean-Yves NAUDET,** *Universitaire,* Yvan **BLOT,** *Président d'Honneur du Club de l'Horloge,* **- Dominique CARIOFILLO,** *Universitaire,* **- Florin AFTALION,** *Universitaire.* **18 h 00 - La preuve que le socialisme n'est pas irréversible : la Grande Bretagne. - Lord Robert CRANBORNE. 18 h 20 - Conclusion. Le renouveau des idées libérales. - Serge SCHWEITZER,** *Universitaire.* **18 h 45 - Fin de la seconde journée.**

ACROPOLIS DE NICE DU 13 AU 16 NOVEMBRE 1989

PROGRAMME

MERCREDI 15 NOVEMBRE 1989

La désinformation au quotidien.

Analyse des grandes peurs qui consistent à rejeter l'idée même de progrès et de la désinformation culturelle qui, dans le sillage de Gramsci contribue au pourrissement de notre société, préalable à l'effondrement des piliers de l'Etat.

8 h 45 - Réunion des participants et présentation de la journée. 9 h 00 - Les ravages du freudisme et du conformisme dans la médecine et l'éducation. - Professeur Pierre DEBRAY-RITZEN. 9 h 20 - La médecine remise en cause. - Professeur Géraud LASFARGUES. 9 h 40 - La drogue : une desinformation dangereuse. - Docteur Henri GIRAUD, *Expert auprès de la Cour de Cassation.* **10 h 00 - La défense de l'environnement, une nécessité qui donne lieu trop souvent à une récupération. Le nucléaire, l'une des grandes peurs de l'occident. Edouard PARKER,** *Directeur d'un Centre d'études prospectives.* **10 h 20 - Démographie : les chiffres que l'on cache. - Jacques DUPAQUIER,** *Démographe, auteur de "l'Histoire de la population française".* **10 h 40 - Pause. 11 h 00 - Droits de l'homme une "morale" politique. - Jean MADIRAN,** *Directeur de Présent.* **11 h 20 - Table ronde : une culture remise en cause. L'utilisation du racisme et de l'immigration à des fins politiques, avec Maître Eric DELCROIX,** *Avocat au barreau de Paris, auteur de la brochure "l'Utilisation de la loi Pleven",* **Jean MOTTIN,** *Conseiller d'Etat honoraire, auteur de "les Immigrés et l'emploi", Ed. Litec,* **Jean SERVIER,** *Universitaire, Islamiste,* **Yves LAISNE,** *Président d'un organisme gestionnaire,* **Henry de LESQUEN,** *Président du Club de l'Horloge.* **12 h 40 - La désinformation, une arme qui attaque l'esprit. Les moyens de lutter contre elle. - Professeur Henri-Pierre CATHALA. 13 h 00 - Pause.**

15 h 00 - Reprise des travaux. L'Art une manière de désinformer en coupant les racines. - Jacques TREMOLET de VILLERS, *Avocat.* **15 h 30 - L'édition un monde sous pression. - Bertrand SORLOT,** *Editeur.* **15 h 45 - Musiques et rock : nouvelle forme d'abrutissement. - Docteur Gérard ZWANG. 16 h 45 - Pause. 17 h 00 - La bande dessinée : la désinformation des adolescents. - Jean- Claude FAUR,** *Editeur,* **Alain SANDERS,** *Journaliste.* **17 h 30 - Science fiction et subversion. - André DELAPORTE,** *Universitaire.* **18 h 00 - Le cinéma : un moyen de communication galvaudé. - Eric LEGUEBE,** *Critique,* **Alain SANDERS,** *Journaliste.* **18 h 45 - La culture une tâche qui n'est pas seulement l'apanage de la gauche. - Pierre MEDECIN,** *Directeur de l'Opéra de Nice.* **19 h 15 - Fin de la troisième journée.**

JEUDI 16 NOVEMBRE 1989

La presse française vue de l'intérieur.

Après avoir analysé différents exemples de désinformation dans les domaines les plus divers, il reste à comprendre les mécanismes qui rendent possible un tel phénomène pour pouvoir dans un deuxième temps agir de manière plus efficace.

8 h 45 - Présentation de la journée. Animateur : Henri-Christian GIRAUD, *Journaliste.* **9 h 00 - Presse et conformisme instellectuel. - Jean CAU,** *Journaliste.* **9 h 20 - Les opérations croisées presse, justice, police. - André DECOCQ,** *Président du MIL.* **9 h 40 - Le poids des mots dans la désinformation. - Jean-Jacques MOURREAU,** *Président des CAR.* **10 h 00 - Maitrise insuffisante de la langue et effet de mode. - Jean RASPAIL,** *Romancier.* **10 h 20 - La puissance du Syndicat du livre CGT et son rôle dans les NMPP. - Françis BERGERON,** *Journaliste.* **10 h 40 - Pause. 11 h 00 - Ecoles de journalistes et syndicats de journalistes.** Une dérive au service de la désinformation. **- Yann CLERC,** *ancien Président du syndicat national des journalistes.* **11 h 20 - Associations de journalistes et maintien d'un esprit corporatiste. - Alain BARON,** *ancien secrétaire général du syndicat CGC des journalistes.* **11 h 35 - La disparition du journalisme d'investigation. Le rôle de l'AFP, source presque unique d'information en France. - Jean-Pierre LEFEVRE,** *ancien Directeur adjoint du contrôle de l'information à l'Agence France Presse.* **12 h 00 - La presse se désinforme-t-elle, elle même ? - Claude POLIN,** *Universitaire.* **12 h 30 - Pause.**

14 h 30 - Reprise des travaux. Animateur : Michel ANFROL, *Journaliste.* **Le poids des radios.** Une liberté apparente plus que réelle et dans certains cas, une dérive non contrôlée. **15 h 00 - Les images subliminales. - Sophie-Laurence ROY,** *Avocat.* **15 h 30 - L'audiovisuel en France.** Le poids de l'Etat. L'art et la manière de truquer. **- Yves ROCCA,** *Magistrat, ancien membre de la CNCL.* **16 h 30 - La presse, un rôle indispensable à condition qu'elle sache rester au service du public.** Réflexion finale : **- Jean-François REVEL. 17 h 00 - Conclusions des Assises. - Jacques MEDECIN,** *Maire de Nice,* **Daniel TRINQUET,** *Président de l'IED.*
17 h 30 - Fin des Assises Internationales de la Désinformation.

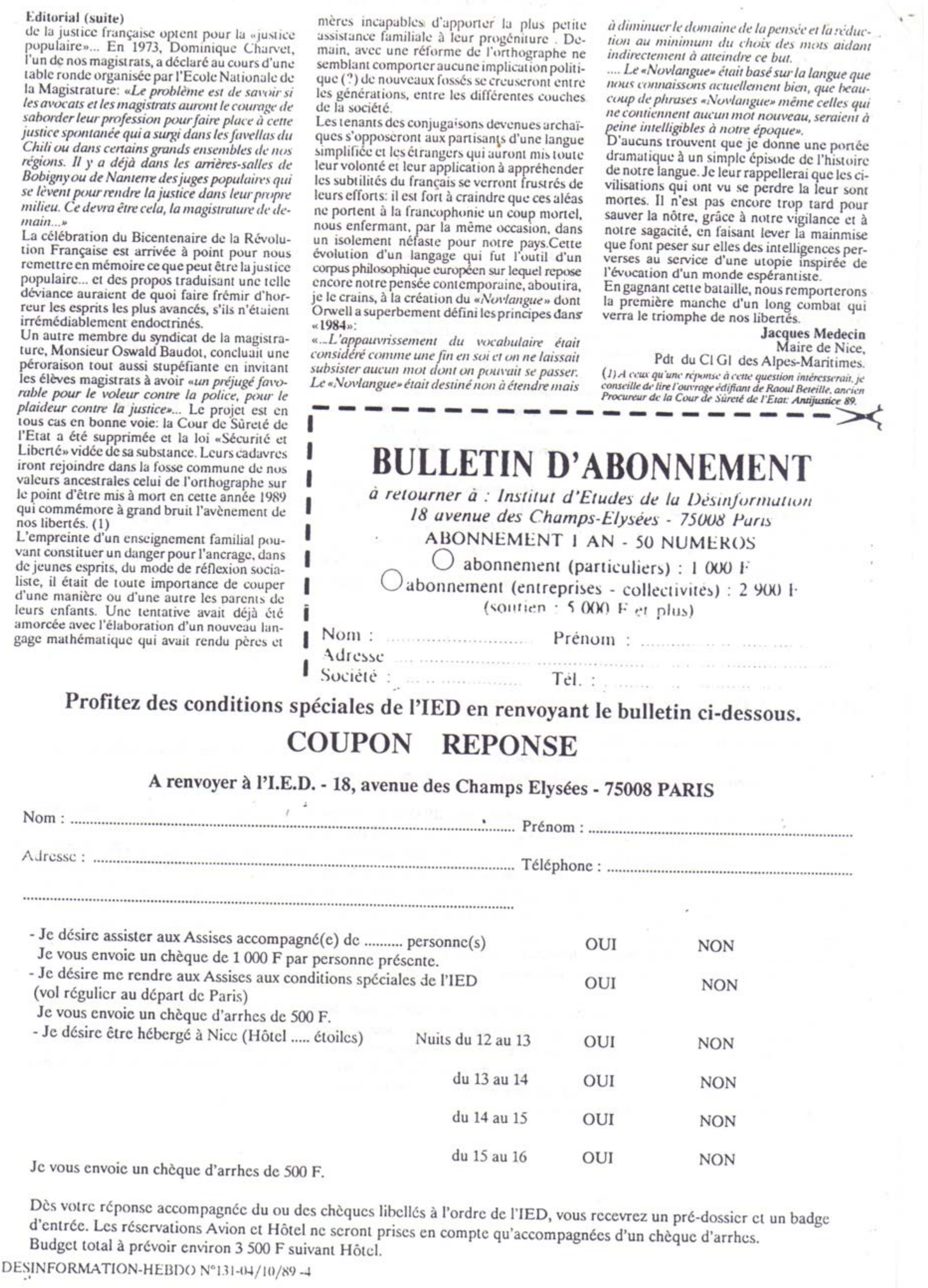

Editorial (suite)

de la justice française optent pour la «justice populaire»... En 1973, Dominique Charvet, l'un de nos magistrats, a déclaré au cours d'une table ronde organisée par l'Ecole Nationale de la Magistrature: *«Le problème est de savoir si les avocats et les magistrats auront le courage de saborder leur profession pour faire place à cette justice spontanée qui a surgi dans les favellas du Chili ou dans certains grands ensembles de nos régions. Il y a déjà dans les arrières-salles de Bobigny ou de Nanterre des juges populaires qui se lèvent pour rendre la justice dans leur propre milieu. Ce devra être cela, la magistrature de demain...»*

La célébration du Bicentenaire de la Révolution Française est arrivée à point pour nous remettre en mémoire ce que peut être la justice populaire... et des propos traduisant une telle déviance auraient de quoi faire frémir d'horreur les esprits les plus avancés, s'ils n'étaient irrémédiablement endoctrinés.

Un autre membre du syndicat de la magistrature, Monsieur Oswald Baudot, concluait une péroraison tout aussi stupéfiante en invitant les élèves magistrats à avoir *«un préjugé favorable pour le voleur contre la police, pour le plaideur contre la justice»*... Le projet est en tous cas en bonne voie: la Cour de Sûreté de l'Etat a été supprimée et la loi «Sécurité et Liberté» vidée de sa substance. Leurs cadavres iront rejoindre dans la fosse commune de nos valeurs ancestrales celui de l'orthographe sur le point d'être mis à mort en cette année 1989 qui commémore à grand bruit l'avènement de nos libertés. (1)

L'empreinte d'un enseignement familial pouvant constituer un danger pour l'ancrage, dans de jeunes esprits, du mode de réflexion socialiste, il était de toute importance de couper d'une manière ou d'une autre les parents de leurs enfants. Une tentative avait déjà été amorcée avec l'élaboration d'un nouveau langage mathématique qui avait rendu pères et mères incapables d'apporter la plus petite assistance familiale à leur progéniture . Demain, avec une réforme de l'orthographe ne semblant comporter aucune implication politique (?) de nouveaux fossés se creuseront entre les générations, entre les différentes couches de la société.

Les tenants des conjugaisons devenues archaïques s'opposeront aux partisants d'une langue simplifiée et les étrangers qui auront mis toute leur volonté et leur application à appréhender les subtilités du français se verront frustrés de leurs efforts: il est fort à craindre que ces aléas ne portent à la francophonie un coup mortel, nous enfermant, par la même occasion, dans un isolement néfaste pour notre pays.Cette évolution d'un langage qui fut l'outil d'un corpus philosophique européen sur lequel repose encore notre pensée contemporaine, aboutira, je le crains, à la création du *«Novlangue»* dont Orwell a superbement défini les principes dans **«1984»**:

«...L'appauvrissement du vocabulaire était considéré comme une fin en soi et on ne laissait subsister aucun mot dont on pouvait se passer. Le «Novlangue» était destiné non à étendre mais à diminuer le domaine de la pensée et la réduction au minimum du choix des mots aidant indirectement à atteindre ce but.

.... Le «Novlangue» était basé sur la langue que nous connaissons actuellement bien, que beaucoup de phrases «Novlangue» même celles qui ne contiennent aucun mot nouveau, seraient à peine intelligibles à notre époque».

D'aucuns trouvent que je donne une portée dramatique à un simple épisode de l'histoire de notre langue. Je leur rappellerai que les civilisations qui ont vu se perdre la leur sont mortes. Il n'est pas encore trop tard pour sauver la nôtre, grâce à notre vigilance et à notre sagacité, en faisant lever la mainmise que font peser sur elles des intelligences perverses au service d'une utopie inspirée de l'évocation d'un monde espérantiste.

En gagnant cette bataille, nous remporterons la première manche d'un long combat qui verra le triomphe de nos libertés.

Jacques Medecin
Maire de Nice,
Pdt du CI GI des Alpes-Maritimes.

---

(1) A ceux qu'une réponse à cette question intéresserait, je conseille de lire l'ouvrage édifiant de Raoul Beteille, ancien Procureur de la Cour de Sûreté de l'Etat: ***Antijustice 89.***

BULLETIN D'ABONNEMENT

à retourner à : Institut d'Etudes de la Désinformation
18 avenue des Champs-Elysées - 75008 Paris

ABONNEMENT 1 AN - 50 NUMEROS

○ abonnement (particuliers) : 1 000 F
○ abonnement (entreprises - collectivités) : 2 900 F
(soutien : 5 000 F et plus)

Nom : .... Prénom : ....
Adresse ....
Société : .... Tél. : ....

Profitez des conditions spéciales de l'IED en renvoyant le bulletin ci-dessous.

COUPON REPONSE

A renvoyer à l'I.E.D. - 18, avenue des Champs Elysées - 75008 PARIS

Nom : .... Prénom : ....
Adresse : .... Téléphone : ....
....

- Je désire assister aux Assises accompagné(e) de .... personne(s) OUI NON
Je vous envoie un chèque de 1 000 F par personne présente.
- Je désire me rendre aux Assises aux conditions spéciales de l'IED OUI NON
(vol régulier au départ de Paris)
Je vous envoie un chèque d'arrhes de 500 F.
- Je désire être hébergé à Nice (Hôtel ..... étoiles) Nuits du 12 au 13 OUI NON
du 13 au 14 OUI NON
du 14 au 15 OUI NON
du 15 au 16 OUI NON
Je vous envoie un chèque d'arrhes de 500 F.

Dès votre réponse accompagnée du ou des chèques libellés à l'ordre de l'IED, vous recevrez un pré-dossier et un badge d'entrée. Les réservations Avion et Hôtel ne seront prises en compte qu'accompagnées d'un chèque d'arrhes.
Budget total à prévoir environ 3 500 F suivant Hôtel.

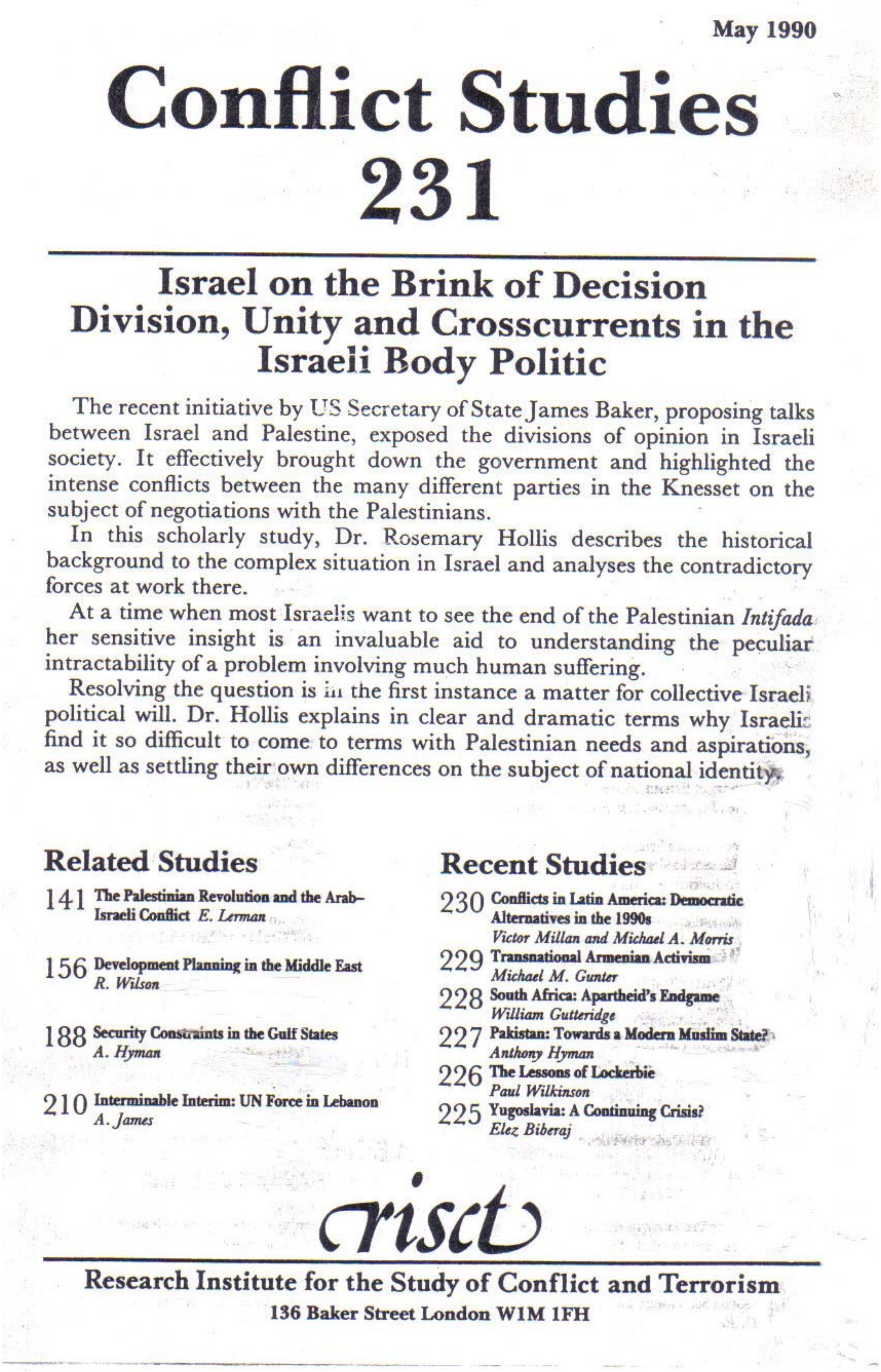

May 1990

Conflict Studies
231

Israel on the Brink of Decision
Division, Unity and Crosscurrents in the Israeli Body Politic

The recent initiative by US Secretary of State James Baker, proposing talks between Israel and Palestine, exposed the divisions of opinion in Israeli society. It effectively brought down the government and highlighted the intense conflicts between the many different parties in the Knesset on the subject of negotiations with the Palestinians.

In this scholarly study, Dr. Rosemary Hollis describes the historical background to the complex situation in Israel and analyses the contradictory forces at work there.

At a time when most Israelis want to see the end of the Palestinian *Intifada* her sensitive insight is an invaluable aid to understanding the peculiar intractability of a problem involving much human suffering.

Resolving the question is in the first instance a matter for collective Israeli political will. Dr. Hollis explains in clear and dramatic terms why Israelis find it so difficult to come to terms with Palestinian needs and aspirations, as well as settling their own differences on the subject of national identity.

Related Studies

141 **The Palestinian Revolution and the Arab–Israeli Conflict** *E. Lerman*

156 **Development Planning in the Middle East** *R. Wilson*

188 **Security Constraints in the Gulf States** *A. Hyman*

210 **Interminable Interim: UN Force in Lebanon** *A. James*

Recent Studies

230 **Conflicts in Latin America: Democratic Alternatives in the 1990s** *Victor Millan and Michael A. Morris*

229 **Transnational Armenian Activism** *Michael M. Gunter*

228 **South Africa: Apartheid's Endgame** *William Gutteridge*

227 **Pakistan: Towards a Modern Muslim State?** *Anthony Hyman*

226 **The Lessons of Lockerbie** *Paul Wilkinson*

225 **Yugoslavia: A Continuing Crisis?** *Elez Biberaj*

rised

Research Institute for the Study of Conflict and Terrorism
136 Baker Street London W1M 1FH

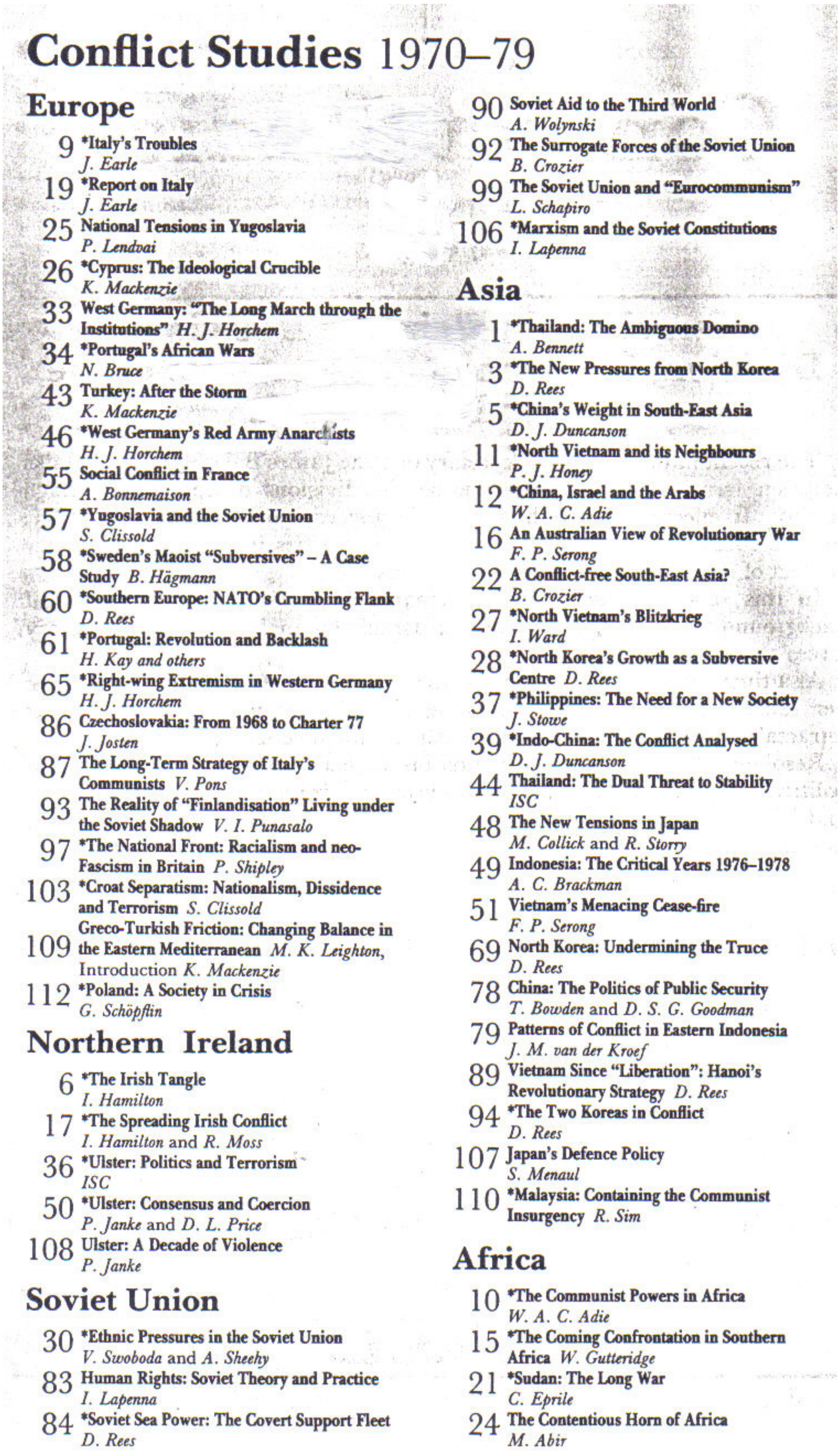

Conflict Studies 1970–79

Europe

9 *Italy's Troubles
J. Earle
19 *Report on Italy
J. Earle
25 National Tensions in Yugoslavia
P. Lendvai
26 *Cyprus: The Ideological Crucible
K. Mackenzie
33 West Germany: "The Long March through the
Institutions" H. J. Horchem
34 *Portugal's African Wars
N. Bruce
43 Turkey: After the Storm
K. Mackenzie
46 *West Germany's Red Army Anarchists
H. J. Horchem
55 Social Conflict in France
A. Bonnemaison
57 *Yugoslavia and the Soviet Union
S. Clissold
58 *Sweden's Maoist "Subversives" – A Case
Study B. Hägmann
60 *Southern Europe: NATO's Crumbling Flank
D. Rees
61 *Portugal: Revolution and Backlash
H. Kay and others
65 *Right-wing Extremism in Western Germany
H. J. Horchem
86 Czechoslovakia: From 1968 to Charter 77
J. Josten
87 The Long-Term Strategy of Italy's
Communists V. Pons
93 The Reality of "Finlandisation" Living under
the Soviet Shadow V. I. Punasalo
97 *The National Front: Racialism and neo-
Fascism in Britain P. Shipley
103 *Croat Separatism: Nationalism, Dissidence
and Terrorism S. Clissold
109 Greco-Turkish Friction: Changing Balance in
the Eastern Mediterranean M. K. Leighton,
Introduction K. Mackenzie
112 *Poland: A Society in Crisis
G. Schöpflin

Northern Ireland

6 *The Irish Tangle
I. Hamilton
17 *The Spreading Irish Conflict
I. Hamilton and R. Moss
36 *Ulster: Politics and Terrorism
ISC
50 *Ulster: Consensus and Coercion
P. Janke and D. L. Price
108 Ulster: A Decade of Violence
P. Janke

Soviet Union

30 *Ethnic Pressures in the Soviet Union
V. Swoboda and A. Sheehy
83 Human Rights: Soviet Theory and Practice
I. Lapenna
84 *Soviet Sea Power: The Covert Support Fleet
D. Rees
90 Soviet Aid to the Third World
A. Wolynski
92 The Surrogate Forces of the Soviet Union
B. Crozier
99 The Soviet Union and "Eurocommunism"
L. Schapiro
106 *Marxism and the Soviet Constitutions
I. Lapenna

Asia

1 *Thailand: The Ambiguous Domino
A. Bennett
3 *The New Pressures from North Korea
D. Rees
5 *China's Weight in South-East Asia
D. J. Duncanson
11 *North Vietnam and its Neighbours
P. J. Honey
12 *China, Israel and the Arabs
W. A. C. Adie
16 An Australian View of Revolutionary War
F. P. Serong
22 A Conflict-free South-East Asia?
B. Crozier
27 *North Vietnam's Blitzkrieg
I. Ward
28 *North Korea's Growth as a Subversive
Centre D. Rees
37 *Philippines: The Need for a New Society
J. Stowe
39 *Indo-China: The Conflict Analysed
D. J. Duncanson
44 Thailand: The Dual Threat to Stability
ISC
48 The New Tensions in Japan
M. Collick and R. Storry
49 Indonesia: The Critical Years 1976–1978
A. C. Brackman
51 Vietnam's Menacing Cease-fire
F. P. Serong
69 North Korea: Undermining the Truce
D. Rees
78 China: The Politics of Public Security
T. Bowden and D. S. G. Goodman
79 Patterns of Conflict in Eastern Indonesia
J. M. van der Kroef
89 Vietnam Since "Liberation": Hanoi's
Revolutionary Strategy D. Rees
94 *The Two Koreas in Conflict
D. Rees
107 Japan's Defence Policy
S. Menaul
110 *Malaysia: Containing the Communist
Insurgency R. Sim

Africa

10 *The Communist Powers in Africa
W. A. C. Adie
15 *The Coming Confrontation in Southern
Africa W. Gutteridge
21 *Sudan: The Long War
C. Eprile
24 The Contentious Horn of Africa
M. Abir

41 *Libya's Foreign Adventures ISC
52 *Southern Africa: End of Empire P. Janke
54 *The Soviet Presence in Somalia B. Crozier
62 Africa's Military Rulers – An Assessment W. Gutteridge
64 *Angola After Independence: The Struggle for Supremacy ISC
73 *Southern Africa: New Horizons P. Janke
77 *Soviet Strategic Penetration of Africa D. Rees
82 *Ethiopia's Embattled Revolutionaries D. Hamilton
85 *Kenyatta's Middle Road in a Changing Africa R. Mans
88 Morocco and the Sahara: Conflict and Development D. L. Price
95 *Marxist Statecraft in Africa: What Future? P. Janke

North America

18 Dissent in America: The Constraints on Foreign Policy E. Ions
20 *Quebec: The Challenge from Within Canadian Correspondent
29 The American Extreme Left: A Decade of Conflict M. I. Popov
80 The Movement: Role of the US Activists F. M. Watson
98 *Canada's Constitutional Crisis R. Mans
114 The Crisis in United States Intelligence D. Rees

Latin America

2 *Peru's Revolution from Above K. Benton
8 *Urban Guerrillas in Latin America R. Moss
14 Uruguay: Terrorism versus Democracy R. Moss
23 Guatemala: From Terrorism to Terror K. F. Johnson
31 *The Santiago Model – 1 Revolution within Democracy? R. Moss
32 *The Santiago Model – 2 Polarisation of Politics R. Moss
35 *Soviet Pressures in the Caribbean B. Crozier
42 Peronism: The Final Gamble K. F. Johnson
47 Brazil: The Road Back from Terrorism R. D. Evans
63 Guerrilla Politics in Argentina K. F. Johnson

Middle East

4 *The New Arab Extremists – A View from the Arab World T. Little
12 *China, Israel and the Arabs W. A. C. Adie
13 *Can Israel Contain the Palestine Revolution? J. Kimche
38 *Since Jordan: The Palestinian Fedayeen ISC
40 South Arabia: Violence and Revolt J. B. Bell
41 *Libya's Foreign Adventures ISC
53 *Oman: Insurgency and Development D. L. Price
59 *Iraq: The Search for Stability A. Kelidar
66 *Jordan and Palestinians: The PLO's Prospects D. L. Price
71 *Stability in the Gulf: The Oil Revolution D. L. Price
74 *Lebanon: The Collapse of a State A. Kelidar and M. Burrell

Aspects of Conflict and Security

7 *The Study of Conflict B. Crozier
45 *Marxism and the Church of Rome H. Leclerc
56 *The Conflict of Information B. Crozier, L. Vladimirov and others
67 *Terrorism versus Liberal Democracy: The Problems of Response P. Wilkinson
68 *Men in the Middle – The UK Police T. Bowden
70 Emergency Politics: The Growth of Crisis Government A. S. Klieman
72 Western Economic Aid to the USSR A. Wolynski
75 *Protest and Violence: The Police Response F. Gregory
76 Security and the Myth of "Peace" B. Crozier
81 *Trotskyism: "Entryism" and Permanent Revolution P. Shipley
90 Soviet Aid to the Third World A. Wolynski
91 The Christian Peace Conference – Human Rights and Religion in the USSR L. Revesz
92 The Surrogate Forces of the Soviet Union B. Crozier
96 *Soviet Military Doctrine and European Defence P. M. Gallois
100 Aspects of Conflict Members of ISC Council and Senior Research Fellows
102 *Nuclear Power: Protest and Violence B. Stockton and P. Janke
104 SALT II: The Eurostrategic Imbalance S. Menaul
105 World Council of Churches' Programme to Combat Racism G. Austin
111 World Shipping at Risk Lord Hill-Norton
113 *Terrorism: International Dimensions P. Wilkinson

(*Out of print, but available as photoprints)

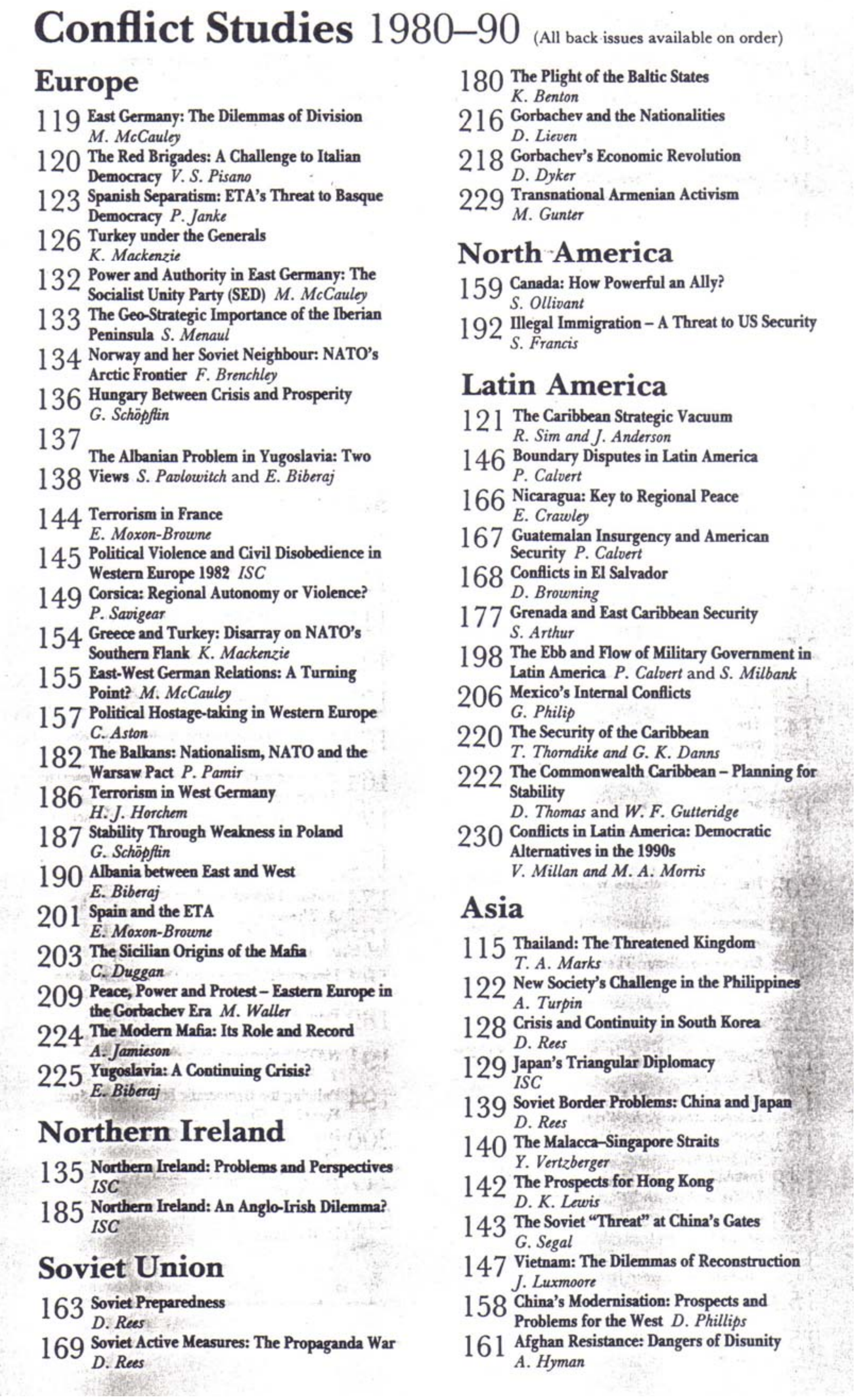

Conflict Studies 1980–90 (All back issues available on order)

Europe

119 **East Germany: The Dilemmas of Division** *M. McCauley*

120 **The Red Brigades: A Challenge to Italian Democracy** *V. S. Pisano*

123 **Spanish Separatism: ETA's Threat to Basque Democracy** *P. Janke*

126 **Turkey under the Generals** *K. Mackenzie*

132 **Power and Authority in East Germany: The Socialist Unity Party (SED)** *M. McCauley*

133 **The Geo-Strategic Importance of the Iberian Peninsula** *S. Menaul*

134 **Norway and her Soviet Neighbour: NATO's Arctic Frontier** *F. Brenchley*

136 **Hungary Between Crisis and Prosperity** *G. Schöpflin*

137

138 **The Albanian Problem in Yugoslavia: Two Views** *S. Pavlowitch* and *E. Biberaj*

144 **Terrorism in France** *E. Moxon-Browne*

145 **Political Violence and Civil Disobedience in Western Europe 1982** *ISC*

149 **Corsica: Regional Autonomy or Violence?** *P. Savigear*

154 **Greece and Turkey: Disarray on NATO's Southern Flank** *K. Mackenzie*

155 **East-West German Relations: A Turning Point?** *M. McCauley*

157 **Political Hostage-taking in Western Europe** *C. Aston*

182 **The Balkans: Nationalism, NATO and the Warsaw Pact** *P. Pamir*

186 **Terrorism in West Germany** *H. J. Horchem*

187 **Stability Through Weakness in Poland** *G. Schöpflin*

190 **Albania between East and West** *E. Biberaj*

201 **Spain and the ETA** *E. Moxon-Browne*

203 **The Sicilian Origins of the Mafia** *C. Duggan*

209 **Peace, Power and Protest – Eastern Europe in the Gorbachev Era** *M. Waller*

224 **The Modern Mafia: Its Role and Record** *A. Jamieson*

225 **Yugoslavia: A Continuing Crisis?** *E. Biberaj*

Northern Ireland

135 **Northern Ireland: Problems and Perspectives** *ISC*

185 **Northern Ireland: An Anglo-Irish Dilemma?** *ISC*

Soviet Union

163 **Soviet Preparedness** *D. Rees*

169 **Soviet Active Measures: The Propaganda War** *D. Rees*

180 **The Plight of the Baltic States** *K. Benton*

216 **Gorbachev and the Nationalities** *D. Lieven*

218 **Gorbachev's Economic Revolution** *D. Dyker*

229 **Transnational Armenian Activism** *M. Gunter*

North America

159 **Canada: How Powerful an Ally?** *S. Ollivant*

192 **Illegal Immigration – A Threat to US Security** *S. Francis*

Latin America

121 **The Caribbean Strategic Vacuum** *R. Sim and J. Anderson*

146 **Boundary Disputes in Latin America** *P. Calvert*

166 **Nicaragua: Key to Regional Peace** *E. Crawley*

167 **Guatemalan Insurgency and American Security** *P. Calvert*

168 **Conflicts in El Salvador** *D. Browning*

177 **Grenada and East Caribbean Security** *S. Arthur*

198 **The Ebb and Flow of Military Government in Latin America** *P. Calvert* and *S. Milbank*

206 **Mexico's Internal Conflicts** *G. Philip*

220 **The Security of the Caribbean** *T. Thorndike and G. K. Danns*

222 **The Commonwealth Caribbean – Planning for Stability** *D. Thomas* and *W. F. Gutteridge*

230 **Conflicts in Latin America: Democratic Alternatives in the 1990s** *V. Millan and M. A. Morris*

Asia

115 **Thailand: The Threatened Kingdom** *T. A. Marks*

122 **New Society's Challenge in the Philippines** *A. Turpin*

128 **Crisis and Continuity in South Korea** *D. Rees*

129 **Japan's Triangular Diplomacy** *ISC*

139 **Soviet Border Problems: China and Japan** *D. Rees*

140 **The Malacca–Singapore Straits** *Y. Vertzberger*

142 **The Prospects for Hong Kong** *D. K. Lewis*

143 **The Soviet "Threat" at China's Gates** *G. Segal*

147 **Vietnam: The Dilemmas of Reconstruction** *J. Luxmoore*

158 **China's Modernisation: Prospects and Problems for the West** *D. Phillips*

161 **Afghan Resistance: Dangers of Disunity** *A. Hyman*

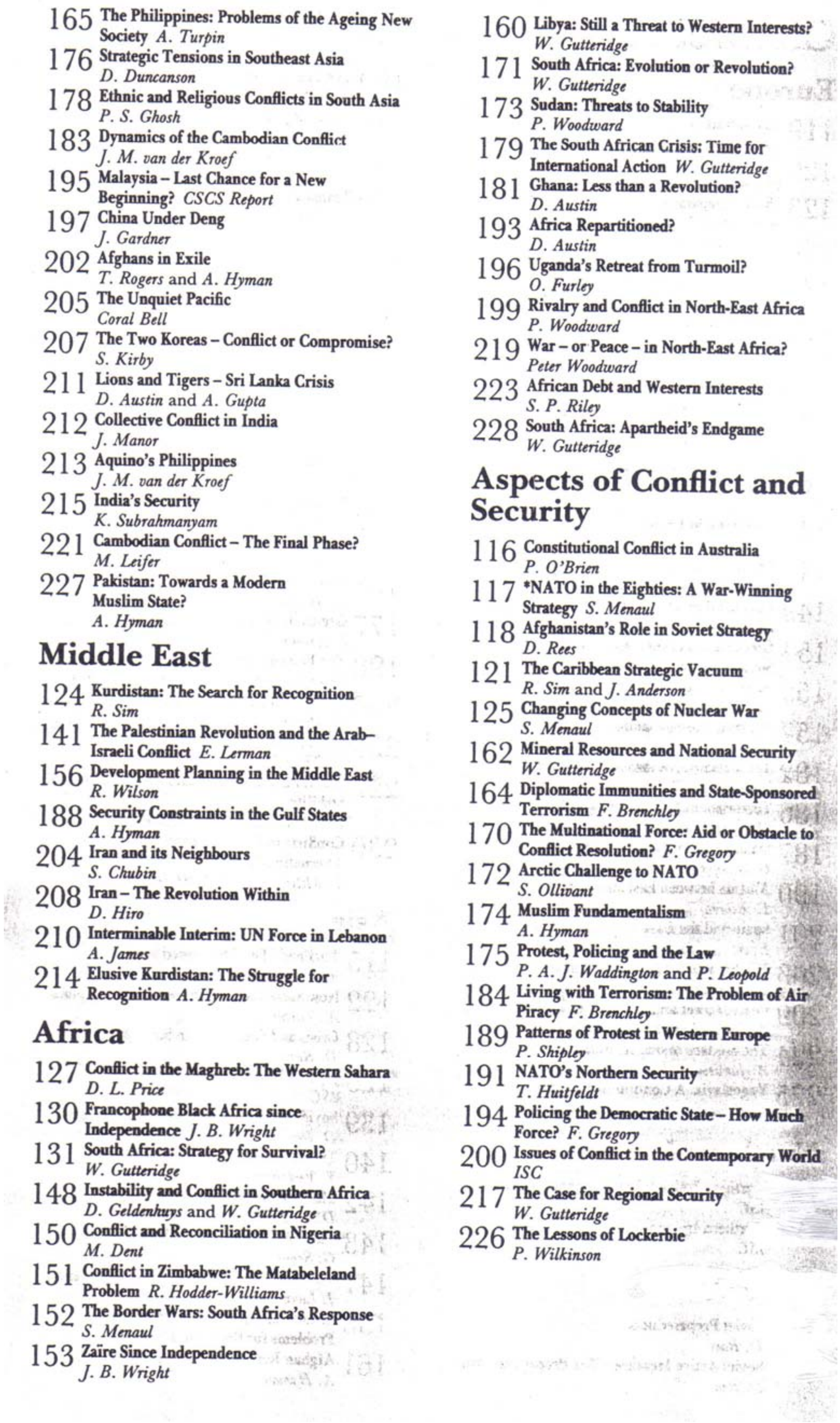

165 **The Philippines: Problems of the Ageing New Society** *A. Turpin*
176 **Strategic Tensions in Southeast Asia** *D. Duncanson*
178 **Ethnic and Religious Conflicts in South Asia** *P. S. Ghosh*
183 **Dynamics of the Cambodian Conflict** *J. M. van der Kroef*
195 **Malaysia – Last Chance for a New Beginning?** *CSCS Report*
197 **China Under Deng** *J. Gardner*
202 **Afghans in Exile** *T. Rogers* and *A. Hyman*
205 **The Unquiet Pacific** *Coral Bell*
207 **The Two Koreas – Conflict or Compromise?** *S. Kirby*
211 **Lions and Tigers – Sri Lanka Crisis** *D. Austin* and *A. Gupta*
212 **Collective Conflict in India** *J. Manor*
213 **Aquino's Philippines** *J. M. van der Kroef*
215 **India's Security** *K. Subrahmanyam*
221 **Cambodian Conflict – The Final Phase?** *M. Leifer*
227 **Pakistan: Towards a Modern Muslim State?** *A. Hyman*

Middle East

124 **Kurdistan: The Search for Recognition** *R. Sim*
141 **The Palestinian Revolution and the Arab–Israeli Conflict** *E. Lerman*
156 **Development Planning in the Middle East** *R. Wilson*
188 **Security Constraints in the Gulf States** *A. Hyman*
204 **Iran and its Neighbours** *S. Chubin*
208 **Iran – The Revolution Within** *D. Hiro*
210 **Interminable Interim: UN Force in Lebanon** *A. James*
214 **Elusive Kurdistan: The Struggle for Recognition** *A. Hyman*

Africa

127 **Conflict in the Maghreb: The Western Sahara** *D. L. Price*
130 **Francophone Black Africa since Independence** *J. B. Wright*
131 **South Africa: Strategy for Survival?** *W. Gutteridge*
148 **Instability and Conflict in Southern Africa** *D. Geldenhuys* and *W. Gutteridge*
150 **Conflict and Reconciliation in Nigeria** *M. Dent*
151 **Conflict in Zimbabwe: The Matabeleland Problem** *R. Hodder-Williams*
152 **The Border Wars: South Africa's Response** *S. Menaul*
153 **Zaïre Since Independence** *J. B. Wright*
160 **Libya: Still a Threat to Western Interests?** *W. Gutteridge*
171 **South Africa: Evolution or Revolution?** *W. Gutteridge*
173 **Sudan: Threats to Stability** *P. Woodward*
179 **The South African Crisis: Time for International Action** *W. Gutteridge*
181 **Ghana: Less than a Revolution?** *D. Austin*
193 **Africa Repartitioned?** *D. Austin*
196 **Uganda's Retreat from Turmoil?** *O. Furley*
199 **Rivalry and Conflict in North-East Africa** *P. Woodward*
219 **War – or Peace – in North-East Africa?** *Peter Woodward*
223 **African Debt and Western Interests** *S. P. Riley*
228 **South Africa: Apartheid's Endgame** *W. Gutteridge*

Aspects of Conflict and Security

116 **Constitutional Conflict in Australia** *P. O'Brien*
117 ***NATO in the Eighties: A War-Winning Strategy** *S. Menaul*
118 **Afghanistan's Role in Soviet Strategy** *D. Rees*
121 **The Caribbean Strategic Vacuum** *R. Sim* and *J. Anderson*
125 **Changing Concepts of Nuclear War** *S. Menaul*
162 **Mineral Resources and National Security** *W. Gutteridge*
164 **Diplomatic Immunities and State-Sponsored Terrorism** *F. Brenchley*
170 **The Multinational Force: Aid or Obstacle to Conflict Resolution?** *F. Gregory*
172 **Arctic Challenge to NATO** *S. Ollivant*
174 **Muslim Fundamentalism** *A. Hyman*
175 **Protest, Policing and the Law** *P. A. J. Waddington* and *P. Leopold*
184 **Living with Terrorism: The Problem of Air Piracy** *F. Brenchley*
189 **Patterns of Protest in Western Europe** *P. Shipley*
191 **NATO's Northern Security** *T. Huitfeldt*
194 **Policing the Democratic State – How Much Force?** *F. Gregory*
200 **Issues of Conflict in the Contemporary World** *ISC*
217 **The Case for Regional Security** *W. Gutteridge*
226 **The Lessons of Lockerbie** *P. Wilkinson*

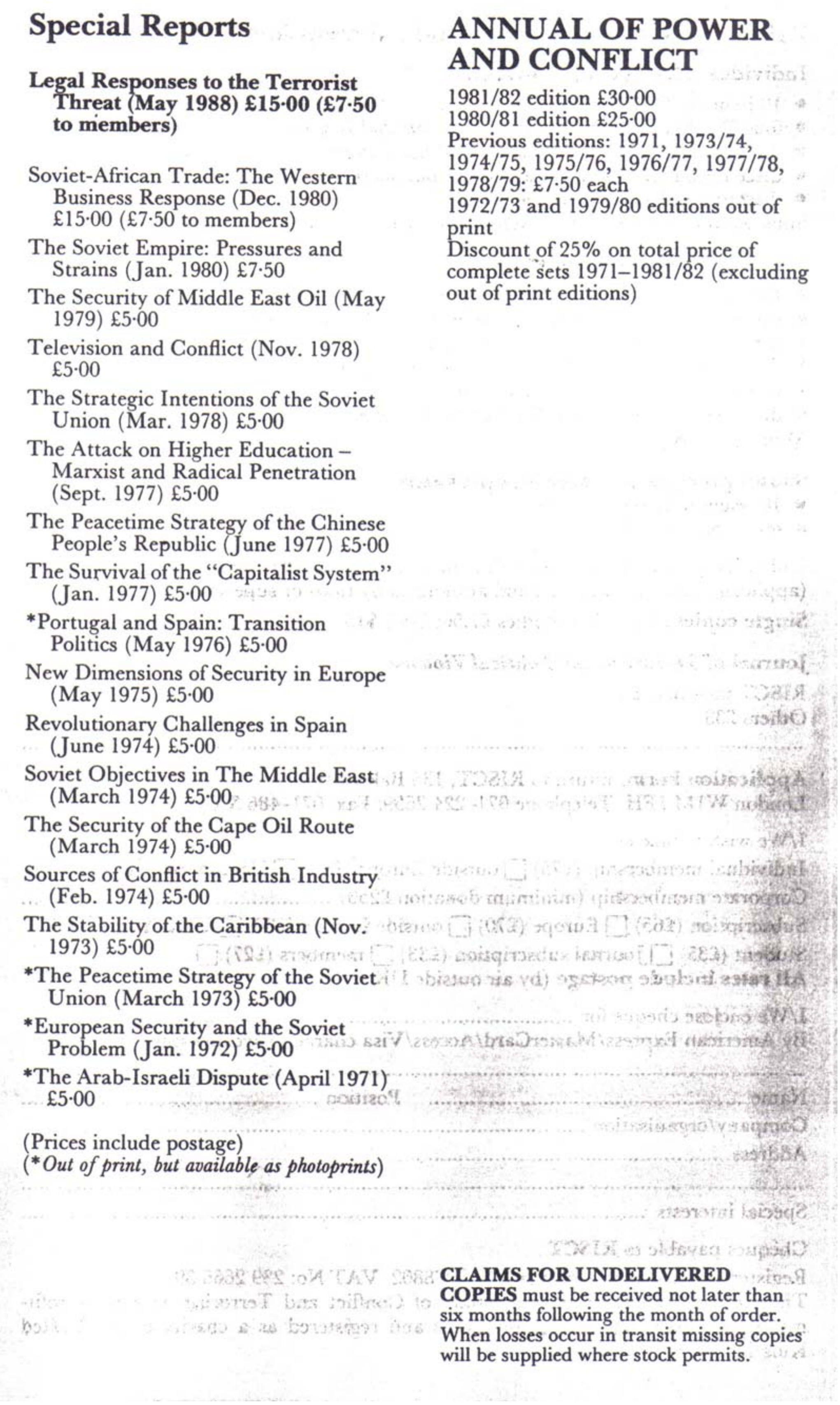

Special Reports

Legal Responses to the Terrorist Threat (May 1988) £15·00 (£7·50 to members)

Soviet-African Trade: The Western Business Response (Dec. 1980) £15·00 (£7·50 to members)

The Soviet Empire: Pressures and Strains (Jan. 1980) £7·50

The Security of Middle East Oil (May 1979) £5·00

Television and Conflict (Nov. 1978) £5·00

The Strategic Intentions of the Soviet Union (Mar. 1978) £5·00

The Attack on Higher Education – Marxist and Radical Penetration (Sept. 1977) £5·00

The Peacetime Strategy of the Chinese People's Republic (June 1977) £5·00

The Survival of the "Capitalist System" (Jan. 1977) £5·00

*Portugal and Spain: Transition Politics (May 1976) £5·00

New Dimensions of Security in Europe (May 1975) £5·00

Revolutionary Challenges in Spain (June 1974) £5·00

Soviet Objectives in The Middle East (March 1974) £5·00

The Security of the Cape Oil Route (March 1974) £5·00

Sources of Conflict in British Industry (Feb. 1974) £5·00

The Stability of the Caribbean (Nov. 1973) £5·00

*The Peacetime Strategy of the Soviet Union (March 1973) £5·00

*European Security and the Soviet Problem (Jan. 1972) £5·00

*The Arab-Israeli Dispute (April 1971) £5·00

(Prices include postage)
(**Out of print, but available as photoprints*)

ANNUAL OF POWER AND CONFLICT

1981/82 edition £30·00
1980/81 edition £25·00
Previous editions: 1971, 1973/74, 1974/75, 1975/76, 1976/77, 1977/78, 1978/79: £7·50 each
1972/73 and 1979/80 editions out of print
Discount of 25% on total price of complete sets 1971–1981/82 (excluding out of print editions)

CLAIMS FOR UNDELIVERED COPIES must be received not later than six months following the month of order. When losses occur in transit missing copies will be supplied where stock permits.

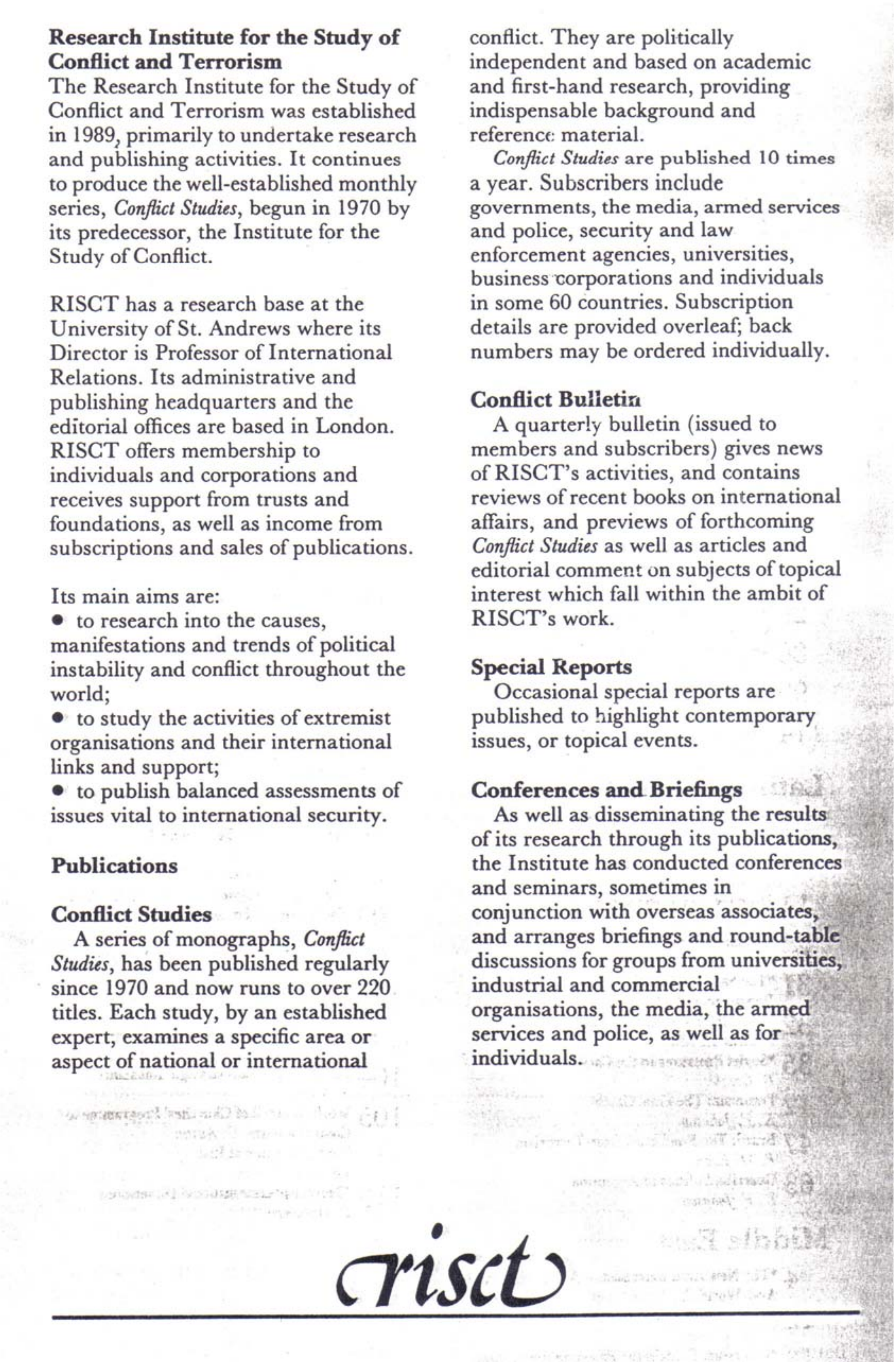

Research Institute for the Study of Conflict and Terrorism

The Research Institute for the Study of Conflict and Terrorism was established in 1989, primarily to undertake research and publishing activities. It continues to produce the well-established monthly series, *Conflict Studies*, begun in 1970 by its predecessor, the Institute for the Study of Conflict.

RISCT has a research base at the University of St. Andrews where its Director is Professor of International Relations. Its administrative and publishing headquarters and the editorial offices are based in London. RISCT offers membership to individuals and corporations and receives support from trusts and foundations, as well as income from subscriptions and sales of publications.

Its main aims are:

- to research into the causes, manifestations and trends of political instability and conflict throughout the world;
- to study the activities of extremist organisations and their international links and support;
- to publish balanced assessments of issues vital to international security.

Publications

Conflict Studies

A series of monographs, *Conflict Studies*, has been published regularly since 1970 and now runs to over 220 titles. Each study, by an established expert, examines a specific area or aspect of national or international conflict. They are politically independent and based on academic and first-hand research, providing indispensable background and reference material.

Conflict Studies are published 10 times a year. Subscribers include governments, the media, armed services and police, security and law enforcement agencies, universities, business corporations and individuals in some 60 countries. Subscription details are provided overleaf; back numbers may be ordered individually.

Conflict Bulletin

A quarterly bulletin (issued to members and subscribers) gives news of RISCT's activities, and contains reviews of recent books on international affairs, and previews of forthcoming *Conflict Studies* as well as articles and editorial comment on subjects of topical interest which fall within the ambit of RISCT's work.

Special Reports

Occasional special reports are published to highlight contemporary issues, or topical events.

Conferences and Briefings

As well as disseminating the results of its research through its publications, the Institute has conducted conferences and seminars, sometimes in conjunction with overseas associates, and arranges briefings and round-table discussions for groups from universities, industrial and commercial organisations, the media, the armed services and police, as well as for individuals.

risct

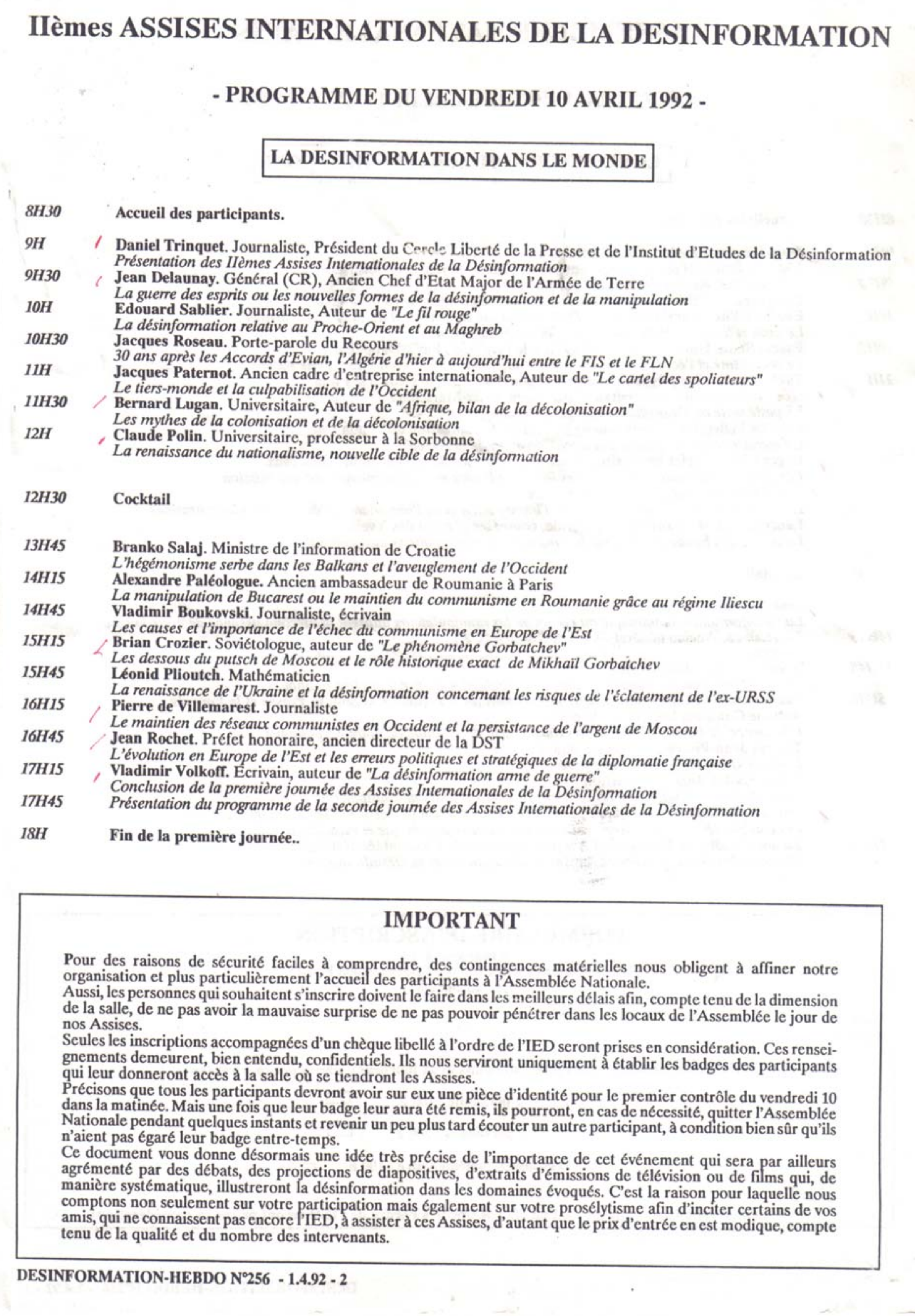

IIèmes ASSISES INTERNATIONALES DE LA DESINFORMATION

- PROGRAMME DU VENDREDI 10 AVRIL 1992 -

LA DESINFORMATION DANS LE MONDE

8H30	**Accueil des participants.**
9H	**Daniel Trinquet**. Journaliste, Président du Cercle Liberté de la Presse et de l'Institut d'Etudes de la Désinformation *Présentation des IIèmes Assises Internationales de la Désinformation*
9H30	**Jean Delaunay**. Général (CR), Ancien Chef d'Etat Major de l'Armée de Terre *La guerre des esprits ou les nouvelles formes de la désinformation et de la manipulation*
10H	**Edouard Sablier**. Journaliste, Auteur de *"Le fil rouge"* *La désinformation relative au Proche-Orient et au Maghreb*
10H30	**Jacques Roseau**. Porte-parole du Recours *30 ans après les Accords d'Evian, l'Algérie d'hier à aujourd'hui entre le FIS et le FLN*
11H	**Jacques Paternot**. Ancien cadre d'entreprise internationale, Auteur de *"Le cartel des spoliateurs"* *Le tiers-monde et la culpabilisation de l'Occident*
11H30	**Bernard Lugan**. Universitaire, Auteur de *"Afrique, bilan de la décolonisation"* *Les mythes de la colonisation et de la décolonisation*
12H	**Claude Polin**. Universitaire, professeur à la Sorbonne *La renaissance du nationalisme, nouvelle cible de la désinformation*
12H30	**Cocktail**
13H45	**Branko Salaj**. Ministre de l'information de Croatie *L'hégémonisme serbe dans les Balkans et l'aveuglement de l'Occident*
14H15	**Alexandre Paléologue**. Ancien ambassadeur de Roumanie à Paris *La manipulation de Bucarest ou le maintien du communisme en Roumanie grâce au régime Iliescu*
14H45	**Vladimir Boukovski**. Journaliste, écrivain *Les causes et l'importance de l'échec du communisme en Europe de l'Est*
15H15	**Brian Crozier**. Soviétologue, auteur de *"Le phénomène Gorbatchev"* *Les dessous du putsch de Moscou et le rôle historique exact de Mikhaïl Gorbatchev*
15H45	**Léonid Plioutch**. Mathématicien *La renaissance de l'Ukraine et la désinformation concernant les risques de l'éclatement de l'ex-URSS*
16H15	**Pierre de Villemarest**. Journaliste *Le maintien des réseaux communistes en Occident et la persistance de l'argent de Moscou*
16H45	**Jean Rochet**. Préfet honoraire, ancien directeur de la DST *L'évolution en Europe de l'Est et les erreurs politiques et stratégiques de la diplomatie française*
17H15	**Vladimir Volkoff**. Ecrivain, auteur de *"La désinformation arme de guerre"* *Conclusion de la première journée des Assises Internationales de la Désinformation*
17H45	*Présentation du programme de la seconde journée des Assises Internationales de la Désinformation*
18H	**Fin de la première journée..**

IMPORTANT

Pour des raisons de sécurité faciles à comprendre, des contingences matérielles nous obligent à affiner notre organisation et plus particulièrement l'accueil des participants à l'Assemblée Nationale.
Aussi, les personnes qui souhaitent s'inscrire doivent le faire dans les meilleurs délais afin, compte tenu de la dimension de la salle, de ne pas avoir la mauvaise surprise de ne pas pouvoir pénétrer dans les locaux de l'Assemblée le jour de nos Assises.
Seules les inscriptions accompagnées d'un chèque libellé à l'ordre de l'IED seront prises en considération. Ces renseignements demeurent, bien entendu, confidentiels. Ils nous serviront uniquement à établir les badges des participants qui leur donneront accès à la salle où se tiendront les Assises.
Précisons que tous les participants devront avoir sur eux une pièce d'identité pour le premier contrôle du vendredi 10 dans la matinée. Mais une fois que leur badge leur aura été remis, ils pourront, en cas de nécessité, quitter l'Assemblée Nationale pendant quelques instants et revenir un peu plus tard écouter un autre participant, à condition bien sûr qu'ils n'aient pas égaré leur badge entre-temps.
Ce document vous donne désormais une idée très précise de l'importance de cet événement qui sera par ailleurs agrémenté par des débats, des projections de diapositives, d'extraits d'émissions de télévision ou de films qui, de manière systématique, illustreront la désinformation dans les domaines évoqués. C'est la raison pour laquelle nous comptons non seulement sur votre participation mais également sur votre prosélytisme afin d'inciter certains de vos amis, qui ne connaissent pas encore l'IED, à assister à ces Assises, d'autant que le prix d'entrée en est modique, compte tenu de la qualité et du nombre des intervenants.

DESINFORMATION-HEBDO N°256 - 1.4.92 - 2

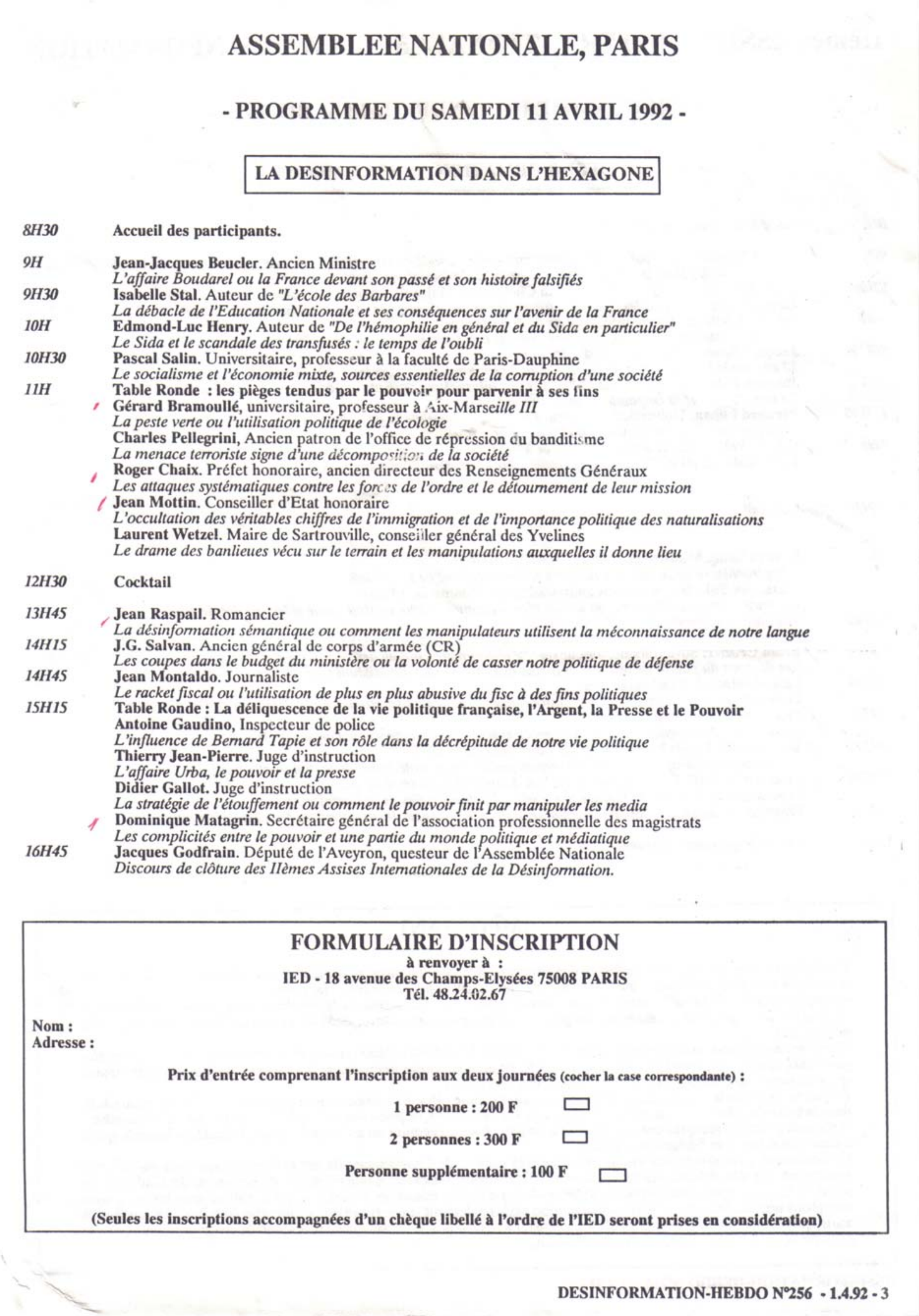

ASSEMBLEE NATIONALE, PARIS

- PROGRAMME DU SAMEDI 11 AVRIL 1992 -

LA DESINFORMATION DANS L'HEXAGONE

8H30 **Accueil des participants.**

9H **Jean-Jacques Beucler.** Ancien Ministre
L'affaire Boudarel ou la France devant son passé et son histoire falsifiés

9H30 **Isabelle Stal.** Auteur de *"L'école des Barbares"*
La débacle de l'Education Nationale et ses conséquences sur l'avenir de la France

10H **Edmond-Luc Henry.** Auteur de *"De l'hémophilie en général et du Sida en particulier"*
Le Sida et le scandale des transfusés : le temps de l'oubli

10H30 **Pascal Salin.** Universitaire, professeur à la faculté de Paris-Dauphine
Le socialisme et l'économie mixte, sources essentielles de la corruption d'une société

11H **Table Ronde : les pièges tendus par le pouvoir pour parvenir à ses fins**
Gérard Bramoullé, universitaire, professeur à Aix-Marseille *III*
La peste verte ou l'utilisation politique de l'écologie
Charles Pellegrini, Ancien patron de l'office de répression du banditisme
La menace terroriste signe d'une décomposition de la société
Roger Chaix. Préfet honoraire, ancien directeur des Renseignements Généraux
Les attaques systématiques contre les forces de l'ordre et le détournement de leur mission
Jean Mottin. Conseiller d'Etat honoraire
L'occultation des véritables chiffres de l'immigration et de l'importance politique des naturalisations
Laurent Wetzel. Maire de Sartrouville, conseiller général des Yvelines
Le drame des banlieues vécu sur le terrain et les manipulations auxquelles il donne lieu

12H30 **Cocktail**

13H45 **Jean Raspail.** Romancier
La désinformation sémantique ou comment les manipulateurs utilisent la méconnaissance de notre langue

14H15 **J.G. Salvan.** Ancien général de corps d'armée (CR)
Les coupes dans le budget du ministère ou la volonté de casser notre politique de défense

14H45 **Jean Montaldo.** Journaliste
Le racket fiscal ou l'utilisation de plus en plus abusive du fisc à des fins politiques

15H15 **Table Ronde : La déliquescence de la vie politique française, l'Argent, la Presse et le Pouvoir**
Antoine Gaudino, Inspecteur de police
L'influence de Bernard Tapie et son rôle dans la décrépitude de notre vie politique
Thierry Jean-Pierre. Juge d'instruction
L'affaire Urba, le pouvoir et la presse
Didier Gallot. Juge d'instruction
La stratégie de l'étouffement ou comment le pouvoir finit par manipuler les media
Dominique Matagrin. Secrétaire général de l'association professionnelle des magistrats
Les complicités entre le pouvoir et une partie du monde politique et médiatique

16H45 **Jacques Godfrain.** Député de l'Aveyron, questeur de l'Assemblée Nationale
Discours de clôture des IIèmes Assises Internationales de la Désinformation.

FORMULAIRE D'INSCRIPTION

à renvoyer à :
IED - 18 avenue des Champs-Elysées 75008 PARIS
Tél. 48.24.02.67

Nom :
Adresse :

Prix d'entrée comprenant l'inscription aux deux journées (cocher la case correspondante) :

1 personne : 200 F ☐

2 personnes : 300 F ☐

Personne supplémentaire : 100 F ☐

(Seules les inscriptions accompagnées d'un chèque libellé à l'ordre de l'IED seront prises en considération)

DESINFORMATION-HEBDO N°256 - 1.4.92 - 3

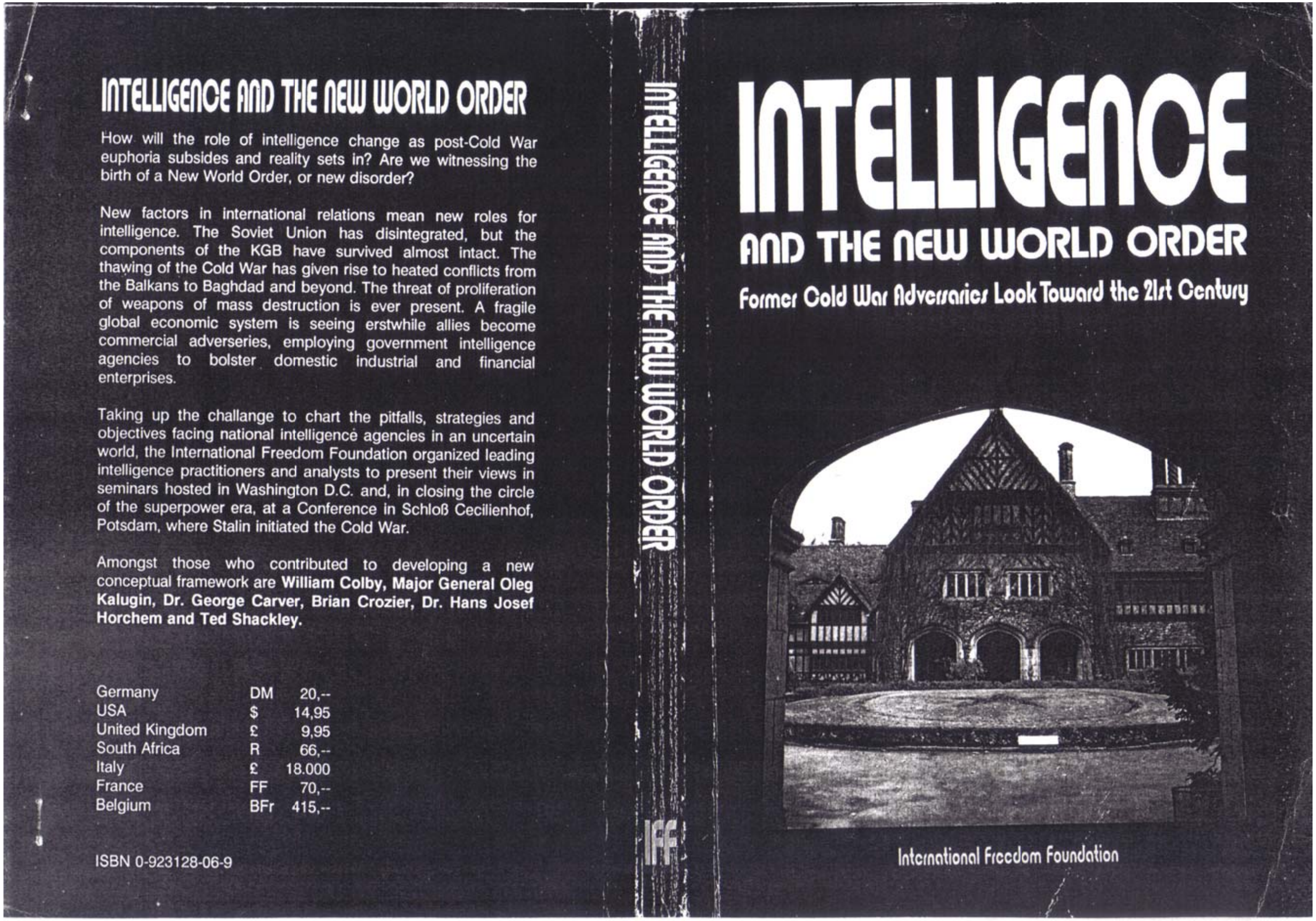

INTELLIGENCE AND THE NEW WORLD ORDER

How will the role of intelligence change as post-Cold War euphoria subsides and reality sets in? Are we witnessing the birth of a New World Order, or new disorder?

New factors in international relations mean new roles for intelligence. The Soviet Union has disintegrated, but the components of the KGB have survived almost intact. The thawing of the Cold War has given rise to heated conflicts from the Balkans to Baghdad and beyond. The threat of proliferation of weapons of mass destruction is ever present. A fragile global economic system is seeing erstwhile allies become commercial adverseries, employing government intelligence agencies to bolster domestic industrial and financial enterprises.

Taking up the challange to chart the pitfalls, strategies and objectives facing national intelligence agencies in an uncertain world, the International Freedom Foundation organized leading intelligence practitioners and analysts to present their views in seminars hosted in Washington D.C. and, in closing the circle of the superpower era, at a Conference in Schloß Cecilienhof, Potsdam, where Stalin initiated the Cold War.

Amongst those who contributed to developing a new conceptual framework are **William Colby, Major General Oleg Kalugin, Dr. George Carver, Brian Crozier, Dr. Hans Josef Horchem and Ted Shackley.**

Germany	DM	20,--
USA	$	14,95
United Kingdom	£	9,95
South Africa	R	66,--
Italy	£	18.000
France	FF	70,--
Belgium	BFr	415,--

ISBN 0-923128-06-9

INTELLIGENCE AND THE NEW WORLD ORDER

IFF

INTELLIGENCE
AND THE NEW WORLD ORDER
Former Cold War Adversaries Look Toward the 21st Century

International Freedom Foundation

Published by the INTERNATIONAL FREEDOM FOUNDATION
German Branch, Postfach 1234, D-2150 Buxtehude, BRD
© International Freedom Foundation, 1992

ISBN 0-923128-06-9

Proceedings of *Assessing U.S. Intelligence Needs for the 1990's*, a series of seminars held in September and October 1991 in Washington, D.C. and *National Intelligence Agencies in the Period of European Partnership*, a conference held on November 15, 1991 in Schloß Cecilienhof, Potsdam, Federal Republic of Germany.

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopy, recording, or otherwise, without the prior permission of the publisher.

Opinions expressed by the authors do not necessarily reflect those of the Foundation. Nothing herein should be construed as an attempt to aid or hinder any bill in any legislature.

Printed in the Federal Republic of Germany

Cover Design: Karkat Verlag

Cover Photograph: Schloß Cecilienhof, Potsdam, Main Courtyard & Entrance to Mueseum

Contents

About the Authors v

Foreword xv
DR. PAUL MÜNSTERMANN

Introduction 1
CARL PETER RUNDE

Post-Cold War Intelligence Requirements 5
BRIAN CROZIER

Intelligence Gathering in the 90s 21
THEODORE SHACKLEY

Intelligence: Sources and Methods 37
JAMIE JAMESON

Intelligence Analysis 53
DR. GEORGE CARVER

Intelligence Challenges in the 90s 73
JOËL-FRANÇOIS DUMONT

Arms Control in the 90s
SVEN KRAEMER 95

Intelligence and Counter-Terrorism
DR HANS-JOSEF HORCHEM 109

Reorganizing Western Intelligence
WILLIAM COLBY 125

Legislative Oversight: Finding the Balance
DAVID HOLLIDAY & HERBERT ROMERSTEIN 131

Restructuring the KGB
MAJ. GEN. OLEG KALUGIN 157

The New KGB
COL. VLADIMIR RUBANOV 165

List of Abbreviations 171

Name and Subject Index 173

About the Authors

Dr. George A. Carver is the John M. Olin Senior Fellow at the Center for Strategic and International Studies, in Washington, D.C., and — concurrently — President of his own consulting firm, C&S Associates, Inc. A Phi Beta Kappa graduate of Yale, Woodrow Wilson Fellow and Fulbright Scholar, he took his doctorate in political theory at Oxford. During a 26 year government career in intelligence, he served as an operations officer, an analyst, and a senior manager — serving for ten consecutive years (1966-1976) on the Management and Executive Committee of four successive Directors of Central Intelligence. From 1966-73 he was Special Assistant for Vietnamese Affairs to three successive Directors and then, from 1973-76, Deputy for National Intelligence to two DCIs. From 1976 until 1979 he was Chairman of the US Intelligence Coordinating Committee in Germany and head of the American civil and military intelligence community there. He also served on President Reagan's November 1980 to 1981 Intelligence Transition Team.

Dr. Carver joined CSIS soon after retiring from government, in August 1979, and founded C&S Associates, Inc. eighteen months later. He is a frequent commentator on television and radio, both in the United States and abroad, has lectured widely to corporate, academic, governmental and general audiences — also in the US and abroad — and has published numerous articles and comments on a broad range of intelligence, security and foreign policy-related topics. As a consultant, he has advised private sector clients in the US and overseas on a wide variety of strategic planning, political risk, security (broadly defined) and business-climate related concerns and problems.

William Colby was Director of Central Intelligence (CIA) from 1973 to 1976. Earlier he had been Chief of the CIA's Far East Division (1963-68) and its Executive Director and Comptroller (1972-73). His intelligence career began during the Second World War where he parachuted into France and Norway to work with resistance forces for the Office of Strategic Services. He served as an attorney on the National Labor Relations Board from 1949 to 1950, and as an associate with the New York based law firm Donovan, Leisure, Newton and Irvine from 1947 to 1949, which he rejoined in 1988. Between 1951 and 1962, Mr. Colby served with the American Embassies in Stockholm, Rome and Saigon. He was Ambassador and Deputy to the Commander of the US-Military Assistance Command in Vietnam from 1968 to 1971, directing American support to the Vietnamese government's Rural Pacification Program.

Mr. Colby received his AB *cum laude* in 1940 from Princeton University where he was elected to Phi Beta Kappa. He received his LLB in 1947 from Columbia University Law School and has been admitted to the New York State, District of Columbia and US Supreme Court Bars. Since leaving the CIA, Mr. Colby has been a consultant on international and domestic political matters to various corporations, governments and investment organizations, has practiced international and American law in Washington, has written two books (*Honorable Men* and *Lost Victory*) and numerous articles, and has lectured and appeared in the media throughout the US and abroad. He is currently Counsel to the Washington law firm Donovan, Rogovin, Huge and Schiller.

Mr. Colby has received numerous high awards and distinctions during his career, including the National Security Medal in 1973, and the State Order of Vietnam in 1972. He is also a decorated World War Two veteran, having received the Silver and Bronze Stars, French Croix de Guerre, the Norwegian St Olaf's Medal and the British Mentioned in Dispatches.

Brian Crozier founded the Institute for the Study of Conflict in 1970, working as its Director until the end of 1979. In addition, he has worked as a journalist and editor for a number of specialist publications, including his position as editor of *The Economist's* "Foreign Report" and columnist for the New York based *National Review*. As a specialist on international communism, Mr Crozier has published a number of books, including: *The Future of Communist Power*, (Methuen 1970); *A Theory of Conflict*, (Hamish Hamilton 1974); *Strategy of Survival*, (Temple-Smith 1978) as well as a number of biographies, among which on General Franco (Eyre & Spottiswood 1968), De Gaulle (Eyre Methuen 1973), and Chang Kai Chek (*The Man who Lost China*, Angus & Robertson 1976).

Amongst his most recent works are, *This War Called Peace* (Co-Authored, Sherwood Press 1984), and *The Gorbachev Phenomenon: Peace and Secret War* (Claridge Press 1990).

Joël-François Dumont, 46, is a senior journalist with the French National Television Corporation FR3. He has, over the past twenty-four years, gained considerable experience of international affairs: first as Brussels-based EC and NATO correspondent, and more recently in his present capacity as a political and diplomatic analyst in Paris. Mr. Dumont is a former Auditor of France's National Institute for Advanced Defence Studies (IHEDN) and a graduate of the Institute of Security Studies of Kiel University, Germany. He is currently also Director of the Center for Intelligence Studies (Europe).

He has published and contributed to a number of studies, among which: *The Peace Movements in Europe and America*, (London, 1985); *Für ein Deutschland in der Zukunft*, (Berlin, 1985); and *La Désinformation Stratégique et les Mesures Actives Soviétiques*, (Paris, 1987).

His premonitory television series *The Limits of Economic Growth* was awarded the Grand Prix of the Biarritz Industrial Film Festival in 1972. As an EC Agricultural Policy specialist, Mr. Dumont received the Cross of Chevalier of the French Order of Merit for Services to Agriculture in 1986.

David Holliday has enjoyed 25 years of experience in State and federal Government as well as in journalism. After finishing his studies at Miami University, Oxford and Ohio in 1957, Mr. Holliday started his career in journalism as Press Secretary to Governor Tim Babcock (Montana) and Governor Stan Hathaway (Wyoming) in 1969. From June 1969 to 1973, he was General Manager at KBLL Radio and television (Montana) and from 1973-76 Capitol Correspondent for KWTV Channel 9 (CBS).

Mr. Holliday's political career began in 1976 as Administrative Assistant to Governor David L. Boren of Oklahoma and between 1978 and 1985 as Chief Assistant for Legislative Affairs to Senator Boren. Between 1985 and 1987, Mr. Holliday served as a Professional Staff Member on the US Senate Select Committee on Intelligence where he was active in the preparation of the Intelligence Authorization Bill and the budget document authorizing appropriations for the US intelligence community, including the CIA, NSA and DIA. Between 1987 and 1991, Mr. Holliday was the Special Assistant to the Chairman and Official Spokesman of the US Senate Select Committee on Intelligence. Currently he is a state government relations specialist with the Distilled Spirits Council of the United States, Inc.

* * *

Dr. Hans-Josef Horchem was the Head of the Office for the Protection of the Constitution (BfV) in Hamburg from 1969 to January 1981. After retiring, Dr. Horchem became a Research Fellow of the Institute for Strategic and International Studies at Georgetown University, and of the Center for Strategic Studies in Tel Aviv. He is currently Director of the Institute for the Study of Terrorism in Bonn.

Between 1955 and 1957, Dr. Horchem served as a Judge in the Rhineland, whereafter he worked for the Federal Office for the Protection of the Constitution in Cologne. In 1968 he attended the NATO Defence College in Rome and in 1978 he served as a special consultant to the Spanish government in anti-terrorist measures. Since 1980 he has acted in an advisory capacity to the Basque government in security measures.

Dr. Horchem has studied law, history and political science at the universities of Mainz and Cologne where he received his doctorate of law. He is the author of a number of works, including: *The Long March through the Institutions* (1973), *West Germany's Red Army Anarchists* (1974), *Urban Guerilla in West Germany* (1976), *Rightist Extremism in the Federal Republic of Germany* (1979), *Extremisten in einer selbstbewußten Demokratie* (1979), and *Die veleorene Revolution* (1988).

* * *

Donald "Jamie" Jameson attended the US Naval Academy where he obtained his BS in electrical and mechanical engineering and Russian language, in 1945. He proceeded to study at Columbia University, obtaining his MA and Certificate from the Russian Institute in 1949, following on with Advanced Graduate Studies in Soviet law, economics, and politics until January 1951. Mr. Jameson's career in the CIA began in 1951 as an officer involved primarily in operations focussed on the Soviet Union and Europe. Serving in Europe, he participated in estimates, assessments, analysis and policy consultation. Between 1973 and 1979 Mr Jameson was employed as a Senior Scientist and Project Director at Tetra Tech Inc., and as Secretary-Treasurer of Tetra Tech International. He directed US government projects in energy and Soviet weapons systems for Tetra Tech which provided technical services in the Middle East, especially Oman, where the company operated in an advisory capacity on oil, water and economic development.

Between 1980 and 1987, Mr. Jameson was elected Vice-President of Research Associates International, Ltd., Arlington VA, a company that does risk assessment and economic feasibility studies, reporting on international events, especially concerning the international oil market. In addition, the company operates an executive protection program for its principal clients in the oil trade.

Mr. Jameson has enjoyed a term of office as the Vice-President of the Jamestown Foundation, a charitable trust set up to help Soviet and East European defectors publish articles and books. Since May 1989, he has worked as a consultant to various companies on economics, feasibility studies for new ventures, the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe. In his capacity as a writer, he has contributed a number of articles to numerous magazines and newspapers, including the *Washington Post*, *Washington Times*, *Chicago Sun-Times*, *Atlantic*, *Signal*, *US Strategic Review*, *Journal of Defense and*

Diplomacy, and others, and has appeared on over fifteen radio and television specials and talk shows in the US and Europe. Other works published by Mr. Jameson include *Securing the Seas*, an Atlantic Council Study on Soviet and US navies, of which he is a co-author.

* * *

Oleg Kalugin is a retired Major General of the Soviet KGB. Born in Leningrad in 1934, his father was an officer in of Stalin's NKVD. He attended Leningrad State University and was recruited by the KGB for foreign intelligence work, serving in the First Chief Directorate. Under cover as a journalist, he attended Columbia State University in New York, conducting espionage and influence operations. He later served as deputy ***rezident*** at the Soviet Embassy in Washington. General kalugin rose quickly in the First Chief Directorate, becoming the youngest General in the history of the KGB, and eventually to become head of Line KR, foreign counter-intelligence.

General Kalugin's internal criticism of cronyism within the KGB caused friction with the First Chief Directorate head Viktor Kryuchkov, and he was later demoted to serve as deputy chief of internal security in Leningrad. He recalls that for the first time in his career he saw the KGB's internal functions had little to do with the security of the state and everything to do with maintaining corrupt Communist Party officials in power. He resigned from the KGB in 1989 and became a public critic.

His vocal attacks on the KGB won him both notoriety and a political following. In 1990 President Mikhail Gorbachev signed a decree stripping General Kalugin of his rank, decorations, and pension; General Kalugin then ran successfully for the Supreme Soviet, or "parliament" of the USSR. From the August 1991 Putsch, General Kalugin became an unpaid advisor to reformist KGB Chairman Vadim Bakatin, who attempted unsuccessfully to dissolve the state security apparatus. General Kalugin's autobiography, *Burning the Bridges*, will be published in 1993.

* * *

Sven Kraemer, a former senior US government official and an expert on defense, arms control and foreign policy.

Mr. Kraemer's 25 years of government service began in 1963 in the Kennedy Administration in the Office of the Secretary of Defense. His career includes an unparalleled 16 years in the White House with the National Security Council (NSC) during the administrations of four Presidents (Reagan, Ford, Nixon and Johnson) and ten National Security Advisors — a period extending from 1967 to 1976 and from 1981 to 1987. His awards include the Secretary of Defense Medal for Meritorious Civilian Service.

From the beginning of President Reagan's Administration until September 1987, Mr. Kraemer was the NSC's Director of Arms Control. In this capacity he helped shape United States arms control policy at the highest national levels including participation in some 40 NSC meetings, representing the NSC on ten arms control interagency groups, and holding special responsibilities in coordinating verification and compliance issues.

Mr. Kraemer has also held senior staff positions in the Congressional branch of government, working with Senator John Tower (R-Tex) and the Republican Policy Committee of the US Senate (1979-80), and with Representative Jack Kemp (R-NY) in the House of Representatives (1987-88). He is currently a consultant to the Department of Defense.

Mr. Kraemer is a graduate of Phillips Academy, Andover, Massachusetts, an Honors Graduate of Harvard College, and the recipient of a Masters degree in political philosophy from the University of California, Berkeley, where he also taught and did additional graduate work.

* * *

Herbert Romerstein investigated Soviet espionage and influence operations for eighteen years as a professional staff member of the US House of Representatives Committee on Internal Security, and the Permanent Select Committee on Intelligence. From 1983 to 1989 he was a senior policy officer for

Diplomacy, and others, and has appeared on over fifteen radio and television specials and talk shows in the US and Europe. Other works published by Mr. Jameson include *Securing the Seas*, an Atlantic Council Study on Soviet and US navies, of which he is a co-author.

Oleg Kalugin ~~is a retired~~ Major General ~~of the~~ Soviet KGB. Born in Leningrad in 1934, his father was an officer in of Stalin's NKVD. He attended Leningrad State University and was recruited by the KGB for foreign intelligence work, serving in the First Chief Directorate. Under cover as a journalist, he attended Columbia State University in New York, conducting espionage and influence operations. He later served as deputy *rezident* at the Soviet Embassy in Washington. General kalugin rose quickly in the First Chief Directorate, becoming the youngest General in the history of the KGB, and eventually to become head of Line KR, foreign counter-intelligence.

General Kalugin's internal criticism of cronyism within the KGB caused friction with the First Chief Directorate head Viktor Kryuchkov, and he was later demoted to serve as deputy chief of internal security in Leningrad. He recalls that for the first time in his career he saw the KGB's internal functions had little to do with the security of the state and everything to do with maintaining corrupt Communist Party officials in power. He resigned from the KGB in 1989 and became a public critic.

His vocal attacks on the KGB won him both notoriety and a political following. In 1990 President Mikhail Gorbachev signed a decree stripping General Kalugin of his rank, decorations, and pension; General Kalugin then ran successfully for the Supreme Soviet, or "parliament" of the USSR. From the August 1991 Putsch, General Kalugin became an unpaid advisor to reformist KGB Chairman Vadim Bakatin, who attempted unsuccessfully to dissolve the state security apparatus. General Kalugin's autobiography, *Burning the Bridges*, will be published in 1993.

Sven Kraemer, a former senior US government official and an expert on defense, arms control and foreign policy.

Mr. Kraemer's 25 years of government service began in 1963 in the Kennedy Administration in the Office of the Secretary of Defense. His career includes an unparalleled 16 years in the White House with the National Security Council (NSC) during the administrations of four Presidents (Reagan, Ford, Nixon and Johnson) and ten National Security Advisors — a period extending from 1967 to 1976 and from 1981 to 1987. His awards include the Secretary of Defense Medal for Meritorious Civilian Service.

From the beginning of President Reagan's Administration until September 1987, Mr. Kraemer was the NSC's Director of Arms Control. In this capacity he helped shape United States arms control policy at the highest national levels including participation in some 40 NSC meetings, representing the NSC on ten arms control interagency groups, and holding special responsibilities in coordinating verification and compliance issues.

Mr. Kraemer has also held senior staff positions in the Congressional branch of government, working with Senator John Tower (R-Tex) and the Republican Policy Committee of the US Senate (1979-80), and with Representative Jack Kemp (R-NY) in the House of Representatives (1987-88). He is currently a consultant to the Department of Defense.

Mr. Kraemer is a graduate of Phillips Academy, Andover, Massachusetts, an Honors Graduate of Harvard College, and the recipient of a Masters degree in political philosophy from the University of California, Berkeley, where he also taught and did additional graduate work.

Herbert Romerstein investigated Soviet espionage and influence operations for eighteen years as a professional staff member of the US House of Representatives Committee on Internal Security, and the Permanent Select Committee on Intelligence. From 1983 to 1989 he was a senior policy officer for the United States Information Agency, where he was Director of the Office to Counter Soviet Active Measures and Disinformation. Mr. Romerstein has lectured and written extensively on Soviet espionage, active measures, and international terrorism. Among his works is *The KGB Against the Main Enemy* (Lexington, 1988), with Stanislav Levchenko.

Vladimir Rubanov is a former Colonel in the Soviet KGB. Upon completing his training as an aircraft engineer he studied "law" at the KGB Higher School and was posted to Veronius as Deputy Chief of Counter-intelligence, focusing on industrial security. In 1982 Colonel Rubanov was posted to KGB headquarters at Lubyanka in Moscow where he continued his duties in counter-intelligence and became chief of the Department for Economics, Science and Security (Directorate T). Critical of waste and abuse and realizing that Soviet militarization was causing the country to slide backward, he wrote an article for the journal *Kommunist* in 1988, which caused President Gorbachev to discharge him from the KGB.

Colonel Rubanov was subsequently hired by Vadim Bukatin, the reformist Minister of Internal Affairs (MVD), serving as executive assistant until December 1990, when Mr. Gorbachev fired Minister Bakatin and replaced him with KGB General and future coup conspirator Boris Pugo. The day after the Putsch, Russian President Boris Yeltsin and Mr. Gorbachev named Mr. Bakatin to head the KGB, whereupon Colonel Rubanov was named Chief of the Analysis Department. After the KGB was partitioned into separate services in November 1991, Colonel Rubanov became Chief of the Center for Information and Analysis of the short-lived Inter-Republican Security Service (MSB) which succeeded the USSR KGB Second Chief Directorate until the Soviet Union Collapsed in December.

Theodore Shackley is a 28 year veteran in intelligence and spent 17 years living or travelling in Europe, Latin America, Asia, Africa and the Middle East. He progressed through the ranks of the CIA as a recruiter and handler of agents and became the CIA's Senior Officer in Miami, Berlin, Laos and Vietnam — running more big stations in times of crisis than any other officer. Prior to retiring in 1979, Mr. Shackley was CIA's Associate Deputy Director for Operations, responsible for worldwide foreign intelligence collection, clandestine counter-intelligence and covert action. He holds a number of foreign decorations and has thrice been awarded the CIA's highest decoration, the Distinguished Intelligence Medal.

After retirement, Mr. Shackley founded Research Associates International of Arlington, Virginia. This firm specializes in risk analysis, threat assessments and executive protection for firms with interests in oil or international trade in manufactured products.

Mr. Shackley is an author of note, and in addition to numerous magazine articles, he wrote *The Third Option*, which is an American view of counter-insurgency operations. He is co-author of a book released in December 1989 entitled *You're the Target*, which instructs corporate executives how to cope with terrorism and crime.

Mr. Shackley has also taught at Georgetown University and regularly lectures at universities and service schools on topics of interest to those who are concerned with national security policy formulation.

Schloß Cecilienhof, Potsdam: (L-R) Joël-François Dumont, Hans Graf Huyn, Jamie Jameson, William Colby, Brian Crozier, Dr. Hans-Josef Horchem, Maj. Gen. Oleg Kalugin, Col. Vladimir Rubanov, Duncan Sellars

Foreword

Dr. Paul Münstermann*

The lapsing importance of the central coordinates in a once bi-polar world has given rise to optimists who believe that foreign intelligence services have become redundant. However, interim events have already dashed such hopes — old threats may have disappeared, only to be replaced by new sources of instability and a growing potential for international conflict.

In the former Soviet Union the centrifugal forces generated by ideological centralism have collapsed, the results of which few wish, or even dare, to imagine. Only around twenty percent of those borders which exist in this region today are traditionally respected. Moreover, growing material poverty and germinating nationalism now combine to generate a highly explosive atmosphere.

Similar scenarios are just as relevant in eastern Europe — conflicts in the Balkan region have already ignited and unchecked military aggression has paved the way to *de facto* political accomplishment.

The threatening factors which existed before the 1991 Gulf War are still very much in evidence throughout the Near and Middle East. Regional problems are still far from being solved while the proliferation of weapons continues with an alarming increase in atomic, biological and chemical weapons arsenals.

North African states are being swept by emergent authoritarian regimes, religious fundamentalism and explosive population growth. This, together with

---

* Dr. Paul Münstermann is the Vice-President of the Bundesnachrichtendienst. Holding a doctorate in law, he is also a graduate of the NATO Defense College and has over 25 years of experience in intelligence work. Dr. Münstermann made an early contribution to the debate on the necessary changes which national intelligence agencies will have to undergo if they are to compete in the new international environment. He specifically called for wide-ranging changes in method and analysis as well as a strengthening in international activity and cooperation, for which he was awarded the French National Order of Merit in the Class of Commander.

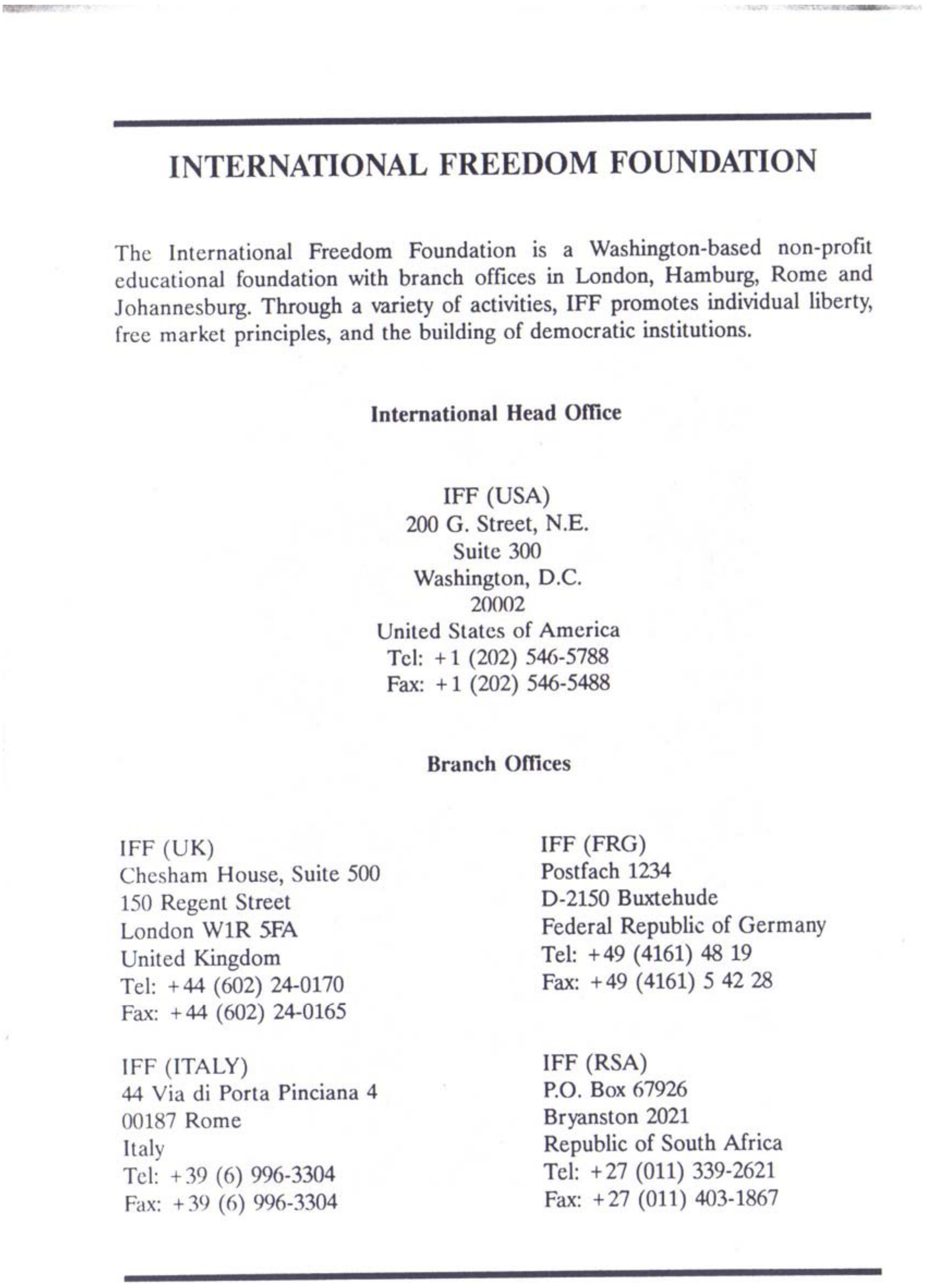

INTERNATIONAL FREEDOM FOUNDATION

The International Freedom Foundation is a Washington-based non-profit educational foundation with branch offices in London, Hamburg, Rome and Johannesburg. Through a variety of activities, IFF promotes individual liberty, free market principles, and the building of democratic institutions.

International Head Office

IFF (USA)
200 G. Street, N.E.
Suite 300
Washington, D.C.
20002
United States of America
Tel: +1 (202) 546-5788
Fax: +1 (202) 546-5488

Branch Offices

IFF (UK)
Chesham House, Suite 500
150 Regent Street
London W1R 5FA
United Kingdom
Tel: +44 (602) 24-0170
Fax: +44 (602) 24-0165

IFF (FRG)
Postfach 1234
D-2150 Buxtehude
Federal Republic of Germany
Tel: +49 (4161) 48 19
Fax: +49 (4161) 5 42 28

IFF (ITALY)
44 Via di Porta Pinciana 4
00187 Rome
Italy
Tel: +39 (6) 996-3304
Fax: +39 (6) 996-3304

IFF (RSA)
P.O. Box 67926
Bryanston 2021
Republic of South Africa
Tel: +27 (011) 339-2621
Fax: +27 (011) 403-1867

Next page: from *The European*, 1-4 April 1993.

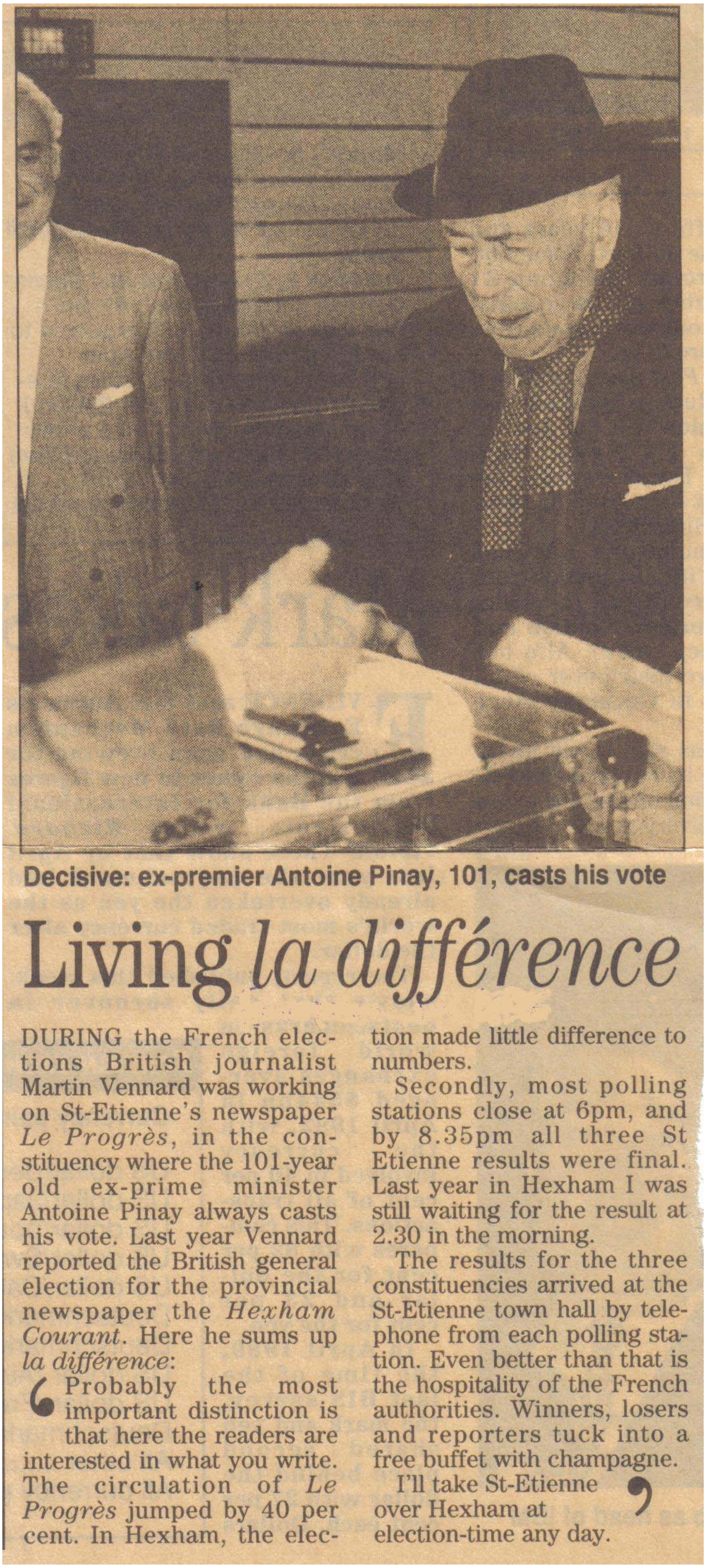

Decisive: ex-premier Antoine Pinay, 101, casts his vote

Living *la différence*

DURING the French elections British journalist Martin Vennard was working on St-Etienne's newspaper *Le Progrès*, in the constituency where the 101-year old ex-prime minister Antoine Pinay always casts his vote. Last year Vennard reported the British general election for the provincial newspaper the *Hexham Courant*. Here he sums up *la différence*:

‘Probably the most important distinction is that here the readers are interested in what you write. The circulation of *Le Progrès* jumped by 40 per cent. In Hexham, the election made little difference to numbers.

Secondly, most polling stations close at 6pm, and by 8.35pm all three St Etienne results were final. Last year in Hexham I was still waiting for the result at 2.30 in the morning.

The results for the three constituencies arrived at the St-Etienne town hall by telephone from each polling station. Even better than that is the hospitality of the French authorities. Winners, losers and reporters tuck into a free buffet with champagne.

I'll take St-Etienne over Hexham at election-time any day.’

ROGUE AGENTS

The Cercle and the 6I in the Private Cold War

The Cercle Pinay was founded in 1952-53 as a confidential forum of European leaders who sought to promote the vision of a Catholic and conservative Europe and to oppose the threat of Communism.

Shrouded in secrecy, the Cercle brought together statesmen such as Antoine Pinay, Konrad Adenauer, Franz Josef Strauß, Giulio Andreotti, Otto von Habsburg, Richard Nixon, Henry Kissinger and David Rockefeller, as well as top figures from the European and American intelligence services.

Following the rise of student counter-culture in the 1960s, the Cercle focused on domestic subversion, using its network of propaganda and intelligence veterans to attack progressive politicians such as Harold Wilson, Willy Brandt, Jimmy Carter and François Mitterrand, and to promote their favoured candidates: Giscard d'Estaing, Margaret Thatcher, Ronald Reagan and Franz Josef Strauß. Throughout the 1960s and 1970s, the Cercle also worked to defend apartheid South Africa and the dictatorships in Spain and Portugal.

After the electoral victory of the Right in 1979-1980, the Cercle and the private intelligence agency, the 6I, targeted Western peace campaigners and the new Soviet regime under Mikhail Gorbachev. Meanwhile, Habsburg played a key part in the fall of the Iron Curtain and then ensured the integration of Eastern Europe into the European Union.

In this final sixth edition of a groundbreaking thirty year investigation, David Teacher lifts the veil of secrecy to reveal the unseen role played by the Cercle and its allies in shaping the world as we know it today.

RITUAL ABUSE

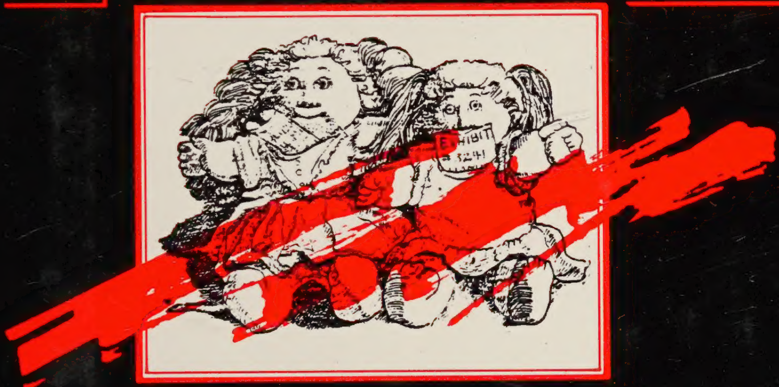
EXHIBIT
1241

Canada's Most Infamous Trial on Child Abuse

BY KEVIN MARRON

$24.95

RITUAL ABUSE

Ritual Abuse is the startling behind-the-scenes story of the most disturbing child custody trial in Canadian history. For eighteen months, investigative reporter Kevin Marron sat in attendance during the trial that filled the quiet community of Hamilton with horror and shocked outrage.

In February 1985, two sisters were placed in foster care by their mother, who feared for their safety. Only days later, the foster mother announced that the children were telling explicit tales of being sexually molested by their unstable young mother, her live-in boyfriend and their violent estranged father. Then came macabre stories of pornography, orgies, cannibalism and ritualistic murder involving many other children—allegations so extreme, so bizarre, so graphic in detail that it seemed impossible that they could have been made up. Finally, in March 1987, Judge Thomas Beckett ruled that the parents in this trial would no longer be granted access to their children, describing the evidence as a "virtual flood of the most lurid, gruesome bloodthirsty stories that any person could possibly imagine."

Now, long after the decision was handed down, evidence from all over North America suggests that what happened in Hamilton may not be an isolated incident but that ritualistic child

(continued on back flap)

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2021 with funding from
Kahle/Austin Foundation

https://archive.org/details/ritualabuse0000marr

RITUAL ABUSE

RITUAL ABUSE

Kevin Marron

SEAL BOOKS
McClelland-Bantam, Inc.
Toronto

RITUAL ABUSE
A Seal Book / April 1988

All rights reserved.
Copyright © 1988 by Kevin Marron.

Cover illustration copyright © 1988 by Jap Kaur Khalsa
No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or by any information storage and retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publisher.
For information address: McClelland-Bantam, Inc.

Canadian Cataloguing in Publication Data
Marron, Kevin
Ritual abuse

ISBN 0-770-42230-6

1. Child abuse. 2. Satanism—Rituals. 3. Child abuse—Ontario—Hamilton. Custody of children—Ontario—Hamilton. I. Title.

HV6625.5.M37 1988 362.7'044 C87-094765-6

Seal Books are published by McClelland-Bantam, Inc. Its trademark, consisting of the words "Seal Books" and the portrayal of a seal, is the property of McClelland-Bantam, Inc., 60 St. Clair Avenue East, Suite 601, Toronto, Ontario M4T 1N5, Canada. This trademark has been duly registered in the Trademarks Office of Canada. The trademark consisting of the words "Bantam Books" and the portrayal of a rooster is the property of and is used with the consent of Bantam Books, 666 Fifth Avenue, New York, New York 10103. This trademark has been duly registered in the Trademarks Office of Canada and elsewhere.

PRINTED IN CANADA

COVER PRINTED IN U.S.A.

DH 0 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

Contents

INTRODUCTION vii

PART ONE—A BACKGROUND OF ABUSE

CHAPTER 1—Setting the Scene 3
CHAPTER 2—Early Years 11
CHAPTER 3—The CAS Gets Involved 27

PART TWO—THE ALLEGATIONS

CHAPTER 4—The Foster Home 51
CHAPTER 5—Children Interviewed and Mother Confronted 60
CHAPTER 6—Pornography Allegations Begin 70
CHAPTER 7—The "Florid" Allegations 84
CHAPTER 8—Satanic Cults 101
CHAPTER 9—The "Plan" and Its Aftermath 119

PART THREE—THE INVESTIGATIONS

CHAPTER 10—Police Involvement 135
CHAPTER 11—Investigation Resumed 146
CHAPTER 12—Psychological Assessments 155

CHAPTER 13—The Assessment Team 167

PART FOUR—THE TRIAL

CHAPTER 14—Child Welfare and the Courts 179
CHAPTER 15—The Children's "Testimony" in Court 186
CHAPTER 16—The Mother's Testimony 199
CHAPTER 17—The Mother's Testimony Continues 214
CHAPTER 18—The Father's Testimony 224
CHAPTER 19—The Boyfriend's Testimony 235
CHAPTER 20—The Judge's Decision 243
EPILOGUE 250
AFTERWORD 260
NOTES 263

INTRODUCTION

This book is about two young girls, who dared to tell their story of sexual abuse and savage rituals. It is a story that seemed beyond belief to the policemen who first investigated it. But the children's stories of sexual molestation, pornography, cannibalism and ritual murder were so detailed and consistent, contained so much knowledge inappropriate to children, and were accompanied by such clear symptoms of distress, that doctors, social workers and eventually the judge concluded that the children were not fantasizing or fabricating, but describing events from their own experience.

To these two sisters, whom I will call Janis and Linda, I dedicate this book. They were both less than eight years old when they first disclosed their history of abuse. A court order protecting their identity prevents me from disclosing their precise ages and some other details. I have never met them, but feel I have come to know them well, after covering the 18-month-long Crown wardship hearing that examined their story in painstaking detail. They are gentle, loving children, who have maintained a certain trust and innocence, in spite of having lived through horrors that are quite beyond the experience or even the imagination of almost any adult. They are now in the care of the state, and it is up to therapists and foster parents to help them cope with their bizarre and traumatic experiences, and, hopefully, grow up to lead normal lives.

Like almost everyone who attended the 150-day hearing in the

Hamilton-Wentworth Unified Family Court, I was shocked and deeply distressed by what we heard of the children's graphic descriptions of horrendous degradation and abuse. I have not led a sheltered life, and as a working journalist I have frequently been exposed to quite horrible examples of human perversity, and have encountered many tragic victims. But I was quite unprepared for the gruesome and sordid details that we heard day after day in that small Hamilton courtroom. The horror of this material was rendered all the more intense by the knowledge that it represented a part of the life experience of two little girls, one of whom is barely out of kindergarten, and that the children's own parents were among the perpetrators of these shameful acts. The traumatic memories will stay with Janis and Linda for the rest of their lives. I, too, feel haunted by the image of their suffering, and can only hope that some good will come of it, as a result of the extraordinary level of publicity, which focused public attention on their case, and the issues that arose from it.

Besides providing some moving testimony on the emotional impact of extreme child abuse, the case raised important questions about the investigation of sexual abuse, and the rights of parents and children in the subsequent court process. The hearing also shed light on the new and frightening phenomenon of ritual abuse. This is the abuse of children as part of the rituals of a cult. It is different from other forms of child abuse in that it appears to be motivated not by passion or frustration, but by the pursuit of some perverse spiritual goal.

The children gave detailed descriptions of graveyard rituals, which suggested that they were the victims of a satanic cult. They described scenes that included cannibalism, pornography and the ritual murder of children and animals. Many elements of their descriptions were strikingly similar to disclosures made by children in various parts of the United States.

Such allegations have been taken seriously by many child abuse experts and police investigators in different communities across North America, while others have treated them with scorn and derision. No-one has yet come up with any satisfactory explanation for the spate of more than 100 similar cases, which could point to the existence of organized or closely related groups engaging in cult activities, or using the trappings of satanism as a means of terrorizing and exploiting children. The Hamilton hearing represented the first attempt by a Canadian court to probe this new aberration, and was, perhaps, the most thorough investigation of such a case undertaken anywhere.

Janis and Linda began making disclosures about sexual abuse in February, 1985, after being placed in temporary foster care by their mother. The mother was herself a former victim of child abuse, who had suffered through a violent and tumultuous marriage to the children's father, an aggressive, hot-tempered man. At the time she put the children in care, the mother was experiencing difficulties in her relationship with her boyfriend, and was afraid she might harm the girls while in her depressed state. In a series of gradual and painful disclosures, the children accused their mother, her boyfriend, and their father of sexually abusing them. They then went on to describe in graphic detail pornographic video-making sessions at a television studio, macabre orgies of sex and violence and graveyard rituals involving cannibalism and the murder of other children.

Representatives of the Hamilton-Wentworth Children's Aid Society, who had concluded that the children were telling the truth, launched a court action under the *Ontario Child Welfare Act* seeking to have the children made wards of the Crown. This court action cited the children's forced participation in cannibalism and ritual murder as grounds for their being in need of protection from their parents. A police investigation, which child welfare workers believed was lax and haphazard, failed to find evidence to support criminal charges against the alleged perpetrators.

It was initially the bizarre allegations that attracted media interest. Child welfare hearings are not normally open to the public, and it was only after hearing submissions from media representatives that the case involved matters of public concern, that the presiding judge, District Court Judge Thomas Beckett, decided to allow reporters for six media organizations to attend the trial. As one of these reporters, representing the *Globe and Mail,* I had no idea, when I took my seat in the courtroom in October, 1985, that the hearing, which was scheduled for ten days, would extend for 18 months. I had no idea that I would hear a horrific and moving story that will probably haunt me for the rest of my life. I also had no idea then of the shocking pervasiveness of child sexual abuse in our society and the devastating impact it has on so many lives.

The hearing came at a time when the public was just becoming alerted to the significance of the problem of child sexual abuse, which has recently been discovered to be a disease of endemic proportions in North America. The extensive media coverage that the case received also fell in the context of a wider public debate on new federal legislation concerning the use of children's evidence in court. The sexual abuse of children presents peculiarly difficult problems for the legislators and the courts because it is a crime that usually takes place within the privacy of the home, and often leaves no physical scars on its victims. In most cases the victims have been molested by a family member, and the sometimes confused and intimidated victim is the only eye-witness to the crime.

The question of how to handle such cases in the courts is a new one, because it was not until the early 1980s that the sexual exploitation of children was recognized to be a widespread problem. Just a few years ago, hardly anyone was aware of its existence. Described by one expert in the field as "the best kept secret,"[1] this phenomenon, which has probably been with us for generations, has not been recognized for a number of reasons. It has remained hidden, first, because abused children are extremely reluctant to disclose that they have been victimized by family members or other trusted adults whom they fear and love; second, because adults have generally not been prepared to believe the few abused children who have attempted to disclose their painful secrets. Children were seldom considered to be credible witnesses and their allegations of abuse were often dismissed as fantasies.

In the 1950s the work of radiologists, who detected bone damage in a large number of young children, made the public aware of the problem of the physical abuse of children. Child protection services grew as a result of this, and psychiatrists began paying more attention to the problem of family violence. Out of this new concern grew an awareness of an even greater problem, as more and more reports of sexual abuse were investigated and found to be valid. The women's movement also helped to make the public more aware of sexual violence against women and children. By the mid-1980s, about two-thirds of the cases of child abuse reported to Canadian child protection agencies involved sexual molestation.

Many psychiatrists and social workers have come to believe that children rarely lie in making such allegations, particularly when they make them against their parents. However, until new legislation was passed in 1987, it remained extremely difficult for children to testify in Canadian criminal courts. No special arrangements were made to prevent young children from being frightened and intimidated by the ordeal of facing their alleged abuser in a formal court process. In order to be sworn to testify in court, children under 14 years of age had to pass a competency test to satisfy a judge that they understood the meaning of the oath. If they did not pass this test, which sometimes involved questions about their religious education, their evidence was heard by the court, but was not given the same credibility afforded to an adult witness.

In a package of measures designed to address the problem of child sexual abuse, the federal government amended the criminal code and the *Canada Evidence Act* in 1987. This legislation created three new offenses: sexual interference, invitation to sexual touching, and sexual exploitation. These will make it easier to prosecute child sexual abuse cases that were previously dealt with under the same sexual assault laws that applied to offenses against adults. The rules of evidence were changed so that it will now be possible for children's evidence to be given the same weight as that of adults, providing the child is found to be capable of communicating and can promise to tell the truth. The new law enables children to testify outside the courtroom, providing the accused is able to view the testimony on a closed-circuit television. Another important change allows for the use in court of videotaped statements made by the child on a prior occasion. If such statements are used, the child still has to be available for cross-examination in court, but does not necessarily have to undergo the ordeal of detailing all of the alleged abuse.

This new legislation was being formulated and debated during the 18 months that the Hamilton case was before the court. Child welfare advocates were pressuring the government to enact the changes, and opponents of the legislation were concerned that the rights of accused people would be compromised by the new laws. While supporters of the legislation drew attention to dramatic increases in the number of validated reports of child sexual abuse, other people expressed alarm about the preponderance of false allegations of abuse that were surfacing in divorce and custody cases.

The Crown wardship hearing that resulted from Janis's and Linda's allegations explored some of the crucial questions in this ongoing debate. How can the credibility of young children's statements be adequately assessed? Is it possible to do this without subjecting the children to the ordeal of testifying? Is it appropriate to use videotaped therapy sessions as evidence in court? The family court, which was not required to follow the same strict rules of evidence as a criminal trial, considered the hearsay testimony of foster parents and social workers, examined the children's credibility through the analyses of expert witnesses, and watched the children in videotaped therapy sessions, without ever forcing them to testify. Some of these novel procedures went further than anything proposed in the new federal laws, which will still require that children testify in some way before their evidence can be used in a criminal trial. But these procedures do involve new methods that some experts would like to see applied in a modified way to criminal proceedings. Even before the Hamilton hearing was over, lawyers, judges and psychiatrists had begun to consider the lessons that could be learned from it.

My initial reaction on hearing about the children's bizarre allegations was that they were preposterous and incredible. I thought they must have been either lying or fantasizing, and I wondered how the doctors and social workers who examined their stories could possibly have taken them seriously. But as I listened to the evidence, it became clear to me that the girls' horrible descriptions of sexual abuse could only have been based on experience, and that their accounts of ritual violence had the same ring of authenticity. Other evidence at the trial tended to strengthen the possibility that the children might have been involved in satanic cult activities.

Even if one dismisses the possibility that the children were describing actual murders that they witnessed, and assumes that they were confused or mistaken about this, their evidence still presents profoundly disturbing questions. Were these children used in rituals that featured sex, sadism and animal mutilation? Were they used in the making of pornographic movies, involving simulated violence and terror? Were they terrorized by the trappings of satanism and simulations of murder and cannibalism, in order to insure their compliance in sexual abuse? Or were they exposed to such traumatic sexual abuse and brutality in their home that their distorted memories of this came out as a lurid, but realistic, horror story? In pondering all these questions we have to think seriously about the level of protection that our society is providing to children, the resources it is allocating to the investigation of such abuse, and the underlying social conditions that have resulted in such perversions of human values.

The length of the case and the estimated $1 million that it cost the taxpayers was a subject of great public concern. Lawyers involved in the hearing became concerned that the children's right to a speedy determination about their future was being eroded by the process that was supposed to be protecting them. The rights of the children's parents to the same speedy determination were also compromised, and the process took a very heavy toll on the girls' emotionally unstable mother, who had to be hospitalized when she collapsed screaming and shaking on the courtroom floor while giving her evidence.

The case also posed broader questions of public policy on the issue of child sexual abuse. Evidence in the trial exposed inadequacies in the level of communication between doctors, day-care workers and child protection workers about the plight of the children before they were taken into care. If that communication had been better, it is possible that the abuse and neglect of these children might have been identified sooner, and they could have been saved from some of their horrifying ordeals. Does this therefore point to a need for more professional education and training in this field and better co-ordination of services? Did the police adequately investigate the children's allegations? Do they have the resources and the training to cope with the ever-increasing number of reported cases of child sexual abuse? Are they able to properly investigate ritual abuse or organized pornography rings?

Editors at the *Globe and Mail,* like those at the five other media organizations that obtained permission to attend the closed hearing, clearly believed that all these issues were important enough to merit daily coverage throughout the 18 months of the hearing. All were confronted with the problem of how to present the sordid and gruesome material that emerged from the trial in a way that would neither sensationalize nor offend, but at the same time reflect the gravity and the very specific nature of the children's allegations. This issue, which provoked anguish and considerable debate in newsrooms, was handled in different ways at different times: at some times the stories were shockingly graphic; at other times they were perhaps lacking in relevant detail. Judge Beckett did, however, several times express his belief that the media had done a responsible job in covering the trial. Other parties, including the Hamilton-Wentworth Children's Aid Society, emphasized the important role that this publicity was playing in focusing public attention on the issues involved.

What newspapers, radio and television could not do, because of the limitations of these media, was to present the full story of the case, explain its full context and explore the vital problems that it addressed. That is the role of this book, and again I am confronted with the dilemma of how to present the material in a way that does justice to the subject, without unnecessarily disturbing the reader with grossly offensive descriptions.

I do not believe it is possible to convey the truly horrendous quality of the children's allegations, or explain why so many people found them to be totally convincing, without including many lurid details, which most sensitive readers will find difficult and deeply disturbing. I was shocked both by the overall import of what the children disclosed and by their specific descriptions of extreme sexual abuse and sadistic violence. Psychiatrists, who have worked with many abused children throughout their professional careers, reported that they spent sleepless nights brooding over the particularly distressful disclosures that these children made. In his final judgement on the case, Judge Beckett referred to the girls' allegations as "a virtual flood of the most lurid, gruesome, bloodthirsty stories that any person could possibly imagine." But, he said, "as distasteful and as upsetting as it may be to have to repeat this material here, I consider it important to do so, because I believe that these allegations that the children made to a large extent form the basis of decision."

The reader will no doubt find some passages in the book extraordinarily disturbing to read. What I can promise, however, is that such passages are not included for any reason other than to inform the reader of the horrors of child sexual abuse, which must not be ignored. If we are aware of the physical and emotional pain that these children experienced, perhaps we can prevent other children from suffering a similar fate.

Doctors have long had to struggle with their personal sense of outrage as they dealt with the victims of what a 19th-century French physician described as "crimes of the home." Another French doctor from the same era said child abuse "is one of the most terrifying problems that can trouble the heart of man."[2]

In 1970 an American surgeon told the National Commission on Pornography and Obscenity: "Lately, I've been in gynecology and obstetrics. It's absolutely frightening to see what's going on. The wards and private rooms are filled with young girls. . . . Their insides are torn to pieces. It is impossible to describe the repair jobs we do. These girls suffer from every kind of sexual abuse."[3]

Yet the statistics suggest that the victims seen by doctors represent just a tiny fraction of the hundreds of thousands of children who endure their pain in a fearful and guilt-ridden silence, and whose scars cannot be detected by a physical examination. Psychiatrists and former victims have documented the crippling effects that the invisible internal injuries of sexual abuse usually have on the future lives of molested children.

"Statistics, for all the horror they imply, can be so vast that we shield ourselves from the individual lives they represent," wrote Ellen Bass, in an introduction to a book of writings by survivors of child sexual abuse. "It is not easy to open oneself to the knowledge that millions of children are raped. Our defenses rush to protect us from experiencing the pain. But we cannot close ourselves off and hope for the best. We are in danger. Our daughters are in danger. Even our sons are in danger. Behind each statistic, there is a child. She may be you. She may be your daughter. She may be your sister. She may be your friend. You cannot protect her until we can protect all children."[4]

In telling the story of Janis and Linda, I have attempted to explain its significance by drawing on material gleaned from interviews and research on child abuse and satanic cults. But the narrative itself is based entirely on court testimony. All the quotes from the children and adults involved in the case are taken directly from court testimony or documents filed as evidence at the hearing. Some details have been omitted to prevent the children from being identified, and for the same reason I have not used the real names of the children, their parents, their mother's boyfriend and other individuals whom the court ordered must not be identified.

In order to present the children's story and the issues raised at the hearing in a logical and readable sequence, I have not followed the order in which evidence was presented at the hearing. The first section, on the mother's background and the children's early lives, is drawn from the evidence of social workers, teachers, day-care staff and doctors, as well as from the mother's own testimony and statements she made to other people that were entered as evidence at the hearing. The section on the children's allegations is based largely on the foster mother's notes and testimony, with additional information that was supplied by other witnesses. The third section, which deals with the investigation of the case, recounts and analyzes the testimony of police, psychiatrists and social workers. The final section contains detailed accounts of the children's videotaped therapy sessions and the testimony of the three people they accused of abusing them—their mother, her boyfriend and their father.

Although this book documents an extreme example of human depravity, it also describes the love and idealism that fortunately survives in the face of all suffering. While the children's stories were shocking, they were also intensely moving. After hearing the girls' disclosures and seeing them in videotaped therapy sessions, I was left not only repulsed by the abuse they had suffered, but also inspired by the fact that these traumatic experiences have not broken the spirit of these children. I was also greatly impressed by the sincerity and commitment of the foster parents, social workers and doctors who have devoted much energy to helping them deal with their pain. I fervently hope that readers of this book will share these insights, address the overwhelming problem of child sexual abuse and help make some changes in our society.

RITUAL
ABUSE

PART ONE

A BACKGROUND OF ABUSE

CHAPTER 1

SETTING THE SCENE

A last-day-of-school atmosphere prevailed on January 22, 1987, as lawyers made their final submissions in Canada's longest-ever child welfare hearing. One of the lawyers, Michael O'Neail, a large, bald-headed fellow, whose conviviality always looked as if it was bursting to break out of his somber legal garb, brought a party noisemaker with him. He blew it, with the slightly surreptitious air of a schoolboy venturing a classroom prank, just after Judge Thomas Beckett, another large, affable man, adjourned the hearing to await his final judgement, and left the bench with an unaccustomedly sprightly gait.

For 17 months the court had been delving into the allegations of two very young children, whose tales of ritual violence, degradation and abuse contained more stark horror and brutality than almost anything anyone present had ever heard, seen, read or imagined. As they probed from the calm and security of a Hamilton, Ontario, courtroom into a grim and violent story of life in Canada's hidden slums, the judge and lawyers had heard about threats on their own lives, allegedly made by the girls' irate father. They had witnessed a dramatic courtroom scene in which the mother, herself a tragic victim of the cycle of deprivation and abuse, ran screaming from the witness stand and fell shaking into a fetal ball on the courtroom floor, believing that the black-gowned lawyer, who was trying to comfort her, was her now-deceased father threatening to hit her again.

But, as the court adjourned to await a final judgement in the case, the talk was mostly about football. The Toronto lawyers, who had been taken to the cleaners when they bet against Hamilton in the 1986 Grey Cup, were now hoping to get their money back on the Giants in the Super Bowl. They were exchanging banter and pieces of paper with the court constable. This had become quite a ritual as the hearing had continued through two Super Bowls, two Grey Cups and two World Series, while two young children waited in foster homes for the court to determine their future.

It is not every day that lawyers specializing in child welfare issues get their pictures in the paper, and some of them were quite excited about the photographs that the *Toronto Star* reporter was taking to go with her wrap-up stories on the case. Michael Hartrick, a witty, urbane young man, who represented the children's notoriously violent and unsophisticated father, was very concerned about his hair. He had had his long red mane trimmed a little after the reporter had mentioned that, when it was blowing in the wind, it gave the impression that he was balding on top. O'Neail, who represented the mother's enigmatic boyfriend at the hearing, was taking great delight in an unreassuring show of mock sympathy for Hartrick's concerns.

John Harper, the lawyer for the Children's Aid Society, a dark-haired, serious man with a brusque but friendly manner, was listening with amusement to Hugh Atwood, the representative of the Ontario Official Guardian, express his pique when told that his assistant was more photogenic than he. He said he thought it must be because he had a few gray hairs, and he was hoping for better things from the sketch artist, who was there for the *Globe and Mail*.

Meanwhile, the *Star* reporter was cajoling the mother's lawyer, Arthur Brown, a slightly pudgy, red-haired man with a ruddy complexion, who, unlike the other lawyers, considered it beneath his dignity to pose for a photograph. He had just put on a large comical-looking fur hat, and the reporter was telling him he would look quite foolish if she had to resort to sneaking a shot of him in that ridiculous hat. His client, Sharon Wells, was taking great delight in this discussion. Though she had shown huge swings of emotion during the 150 days she had sat in the courtroom, she usually enjoyed a simple joke outside the court and often affectionately teased her lawyer, who, she said, was the only person she trusted in the whole world.

Some reporters and court staff watching this exchange were quietly speculating about a change they had noticed in Sharon during the last few weeks of the hearing. She was a small woman, whose shabby dress and disheveled appearance seemed to reflect the disintegration of her life. But she recently appeared to have acquired a new wardrobe, and had started to take more care of herself. She was now quite smartly dressed and was even wearing makeup—and this new guise coincided with a subtle change in her behavior. She suddenly appeared more distant and controlled, where before she had been casual and friendly outside the courtroom, though in a guarded and distracted way. This new image might have been a last-minute attempt to persuade the court that she was a competent and stable person, who would be capable of caring for her children. Perhaps it was an attempt to convince herself of that.

Nobody who followed the case could fail to feel great compassion for Sharon, after witnessing the young mother's courtroom breakdown and hearing her tell her story of the horrendous abuse she suffered as a child and in her tumultuous marriage. One could not help but feel that this slightly built woman, who somehow gave the impression of never having been given a chance to grow, was a victim of a harsh system that was now grinding her down with this relentless, interminable legal process. Everyone in the courtroom was touched when she would show off her Instamatic snapshots of her baby daughter, Melanie, who was born while the trial was already in progress, and then snatched away by the authorities within days of her birth.

Yet it was a sympathy that was mixed with horror and disgust. The court had also seen hours of videotaped play-therapy sessions in which Sharon's young children Janis and Linda screamed, hid in cupboards, played at being little babies who were being cooked in ovens and showed almost unbearable anguish and fear as they told their psychiatrists about grotesque forms of sexual abuse inflicted by their mother and her boyfriend Gary. The handful of observers permitted to attend the closed Crown wardship hearing had been shocked and repulsed by witnesses' accounts of the children's detailed graphic descriptions, not only of ugly, degrading abuse, but also of macabre scenes of violent ritual, including murders and cannibalistic acts, which the girls said their mother and Gary and their father involved them in.

Beyond belief these stories may have been, though the psychiatrists who examined them and many of the people who sat in the court eventually ceased to think so. But where did they come from? What perverse influences could have so warped the minds or life experience of two young girls who were barely out of kindergarten? Why did their mother, who reveled so much in her own role as victim, display no horror or sympathy for the dreadful things her children were relating?

These questions lingered in the minds of people who observed Sharon Wells as she sat in the courtroom, gasping and sighing, shaking her head and wringing her hands, her prominent lips open in a vacant expression, as her unexpectedly piercing eyes darted all around her. People wondered about her as she would rock back and forth in her chair, repeating a prayer that became almost a chant, "God give me strength," while she waited for the judge to decide if she would ever be allowed to see her children again.

Those who puzzled over their mixed and confusing responses to Sharon Wells had less opportunity to study the character of her former husband, Gordon, whose comparatively brief appearance nevertheless deeply impressed all who saw him testify. If ever there was someone whose reputation preceded him, it was Gordon Wells. For months the court had been hearing details of his alleged acts and threats of extreme violence, culminating in Sharon's claim that he had told her he was going to shut the court down and "bring his satanic friends to testify." Even his lawyer, Michael Hartrick, was not being entirely facetious when he said he was scared of him—in fact Hartrick had been one of the people in the court whom Gordon had, according to Sharon, threatened to "blow away."

When he did appear, this brusque, aggressive man exhibited a certain rough charm. He spoke softly most of the time, but in a rapid, clipped manner, seldom finishing a sentence. His long black hair appeared to be carefully brushed back and greased down and he wore a slightly threadbare black velvet jacket over his jeans and work boots. But his eyes glared threats and his brow furrowed menacingly with anger as his voice sometimes rose to a fierce, blustering tone.

Again the questions lingered. Was this man, who made light of the fact that he carried a sawed-off shotgun in the trunk of his car, really just a "mush-ball" on the inside, as his lawyer claimed? Or could he have committed the grisly murders that his daughters alleged? Why could he say no more about his children's bizarre tales than "It's all B.S."? Did he have to give an explanation in the face of quite thin evidence against him? Was he a potential victim of a child-protection philosophy that assumes parents to be guilty solely on the basis of children's statements? Did the state have the right to take away this man's children because they were emotionally threatened by his violent lifestyle?

As Judge Beckett retired to consider his judgement, he was also confronted with the puzzle of what to make of Gary Evans, the young university graduate who had become the boyfriend of the unattractive, hostile and somewhat simple-minded Sharon Wells. Evans was the father of the new baby and the most prominent figure in the two older girls' detailed descriptions of sexual abuse. A soft-spoken, mild-mannered man of West Indian descent, he had told the court that he was not the "type of person" who would harm children in any way, and psychiatric reports had supported this claim. Was he a predatory pedophile who got involved with Sharon in order to molest her little girls, or was he an innocent who had become entangled in a legal web woven from children's fairy tales?

Another possibility that the judge would have to consider was that these small children had been somehow manipulated, that someone had planted strange ideas in their minds—ideas that had been elaborated and distorted through the promptings of prejudiced or gullible social workers and foster parents. Perhaps their foster mother, the grandmotherly Catherine McInnis, who was almost driven to distraction by the girls' fearsome horror stories, was, as their father suggested, "a nut case." Could the foster mother have encouraged their fantasies?

Judge Beckett would also have to think about what to make of the fiasco of the police investigation of the case, which seemed to have been founded on the assumption that the girls' stories were "beyond belief" and not worth taking seriously. The Hamilton-Wentworth Regional Police had found no tangible evidence to support the children's allegations. But what was the judge to make of that, when the officers assigned to the investigation had not even interviewed some of the key people involved the case. Also, they had cajoled the children with their aggressive skeptical interrogations and allowed plenty of time for evidence to be destroyed or removed before they went looking for it.

All these questions, and many more, confronted Thomas Beckett as he walked out of the court to begin the monumental task of sifting through the evidence contained in 142 exhibits and more than 15,000 pages of court transcripts in order to arrive at a judgement as to whether Janis, Linda and Melanie should be made wards of the Crown, and, if so, whether their parents should have any access to them.

When it began in September, 1985, the case of *the Children's Aid Society of Hamilton-Wentworth versus Children X and Y* had been scheduled to last ten days. However, it had soon become apparent that it would take considerably longer because of the detail and bizarre character of the children's allegations and the fact that they were too young to testify. Their statements had been made to a variety of people and been analyzed by a bevy of experts, all of whom would also have to testify.

At that point no-one dreamed how much longer it would take. Certainly not the newspaper, television and radio reporters who gathered in an art deco style downtown office building that housed the Unified Family Court to cover what promised to be a weird and sensational case. Their very presence caused the first of many delays and legal wrangles, as lawyers argued about whether the media should have access to the proceedings, which were closed to the general public in order to protect the identity of the children.

Judge Beckett, who had been active in Liberal Party politics and had gained a considerable reputation as a civil libertarian lawyer before being appointed to the bench, decided that the public had a right to know about a case involving issues of general concern. But he made an order that limited the media coverage to insure that nothing was reported that would identify the children, parents, foster parents or even some of the professionals who worked with the children. In order to avoid turning the case into a "media circus" and because of the limited space in the court, the judge also ordered that only six news organizations could cover the hearing, and that others be allowed to attend only if some of the original six gave up their places in the court. This ruling, which caused great anguish to editors, actually had the effect of insuring that the case had an unprecedented level of daily coverage—newspapers and electronic media, which normally drop in and out of lengthy trials according to the potential news value of the anticipated testimony, felt obliged in this instance to be there continually, fearing that someone else would claim their seats in the court.

The case began to take on a nightmarish complexity, as it proceeded in a stuffy little courtroom, where the indoor environment was measurably more polluted even than the notorious air of the industrial city outside. The new baby was born, and an application to make her a Crown ward was joined with the original case. This meant two new lawyers coming into the hearing, which was moved to a more spacious, but equally stuffy, courtroom in the Hamilton-Wentworth District Court House. Some of the lawyers originally involved in the hearing had to pull out for personal reasons—one to have a baby with whom she had become pregnant at around the time the trial began. The need for new lawyers to catch up with details of earlier testimony required adjournments, as did various side issues and procedural wrangles that crept into the case. The case became, as Judge Beckett put it, "like a living organism" that grew to almost unmanageable proportions as it dragged its feet through the ponderous legal process.

Public concern began to grow over the monstrous length of the case, the huge expenditure of public funds and the danger that traumatized children, and, possibly innocent adults, were suffering because of this protracted legal process. Judge Beckett began to show signs of distress from the public pressure he was under, and his normally patient, good-humored approach sometimes gave way to flashes of temper, in which he used his keen wit to lash out satirically at lawyers engaging in legal wrangles or "interminable cross-examinations."

Just before adjourning the case to await his judgement, Beckett had been provoked into an angry outburst about the "obscene" length of the trial. He railed at lawyers, who, he said, appeared to be wanting to make a career of the trial and seemed prepared to continue interminably a legal process that had been "an act of perverse cruelty to these children."

As was usually the case, a long lunch-break restored the comfortably-proportioned judge to a more affable frame of mind. There was an expression of immense relief on his large, sensitive face as he almost skipped out of the courtroom on that January afternoon. At the age of 62, he had just remarried. After a few weeks of hard work on his judgement, he was hoping to be able to take some time off for a honeymoon.

CHAPTER 2

EARLY YEARS

Childhood experiences are often a dominant influence on people's lives. The way people treat their children is frequently modeled on their own upbringing. This natural human characteristic takes on a tragic dimension for a person whose early experiences were of pain and humiliation and whose only model for parenting was one of brutal abuse.

Sharon Wells was such a person. She was victimized by her own parents and other adults during childhood, just as her own children were abused by her and the people she associated with. She was part of what social workers call "the cycle of child abuse," the process by which exploitative behavior is passed on from one generation to the next. As Judge Beckett noted in his final judgement on the case, "An adult who is abused as a child is predisposed to abuse his or her own children since people tend to repeat what they grew up with."

Slum clearance, development and restoration have now transformed the Toronto inner-city neighborhoods where Sharon Wells grew up. One can trace, in the series of addresses where her family lived, the pattern of migration of Canada's urban poor during the last 20 years, as they were driven ever further from the city center by the wrecker's ball and the needs of a booming real estate market.

It was an exodus that ended in what was to have been the promised land: the efficient high-rise buildings of the outer suburbs. But the milk and honey went only to the developers, as these rapidly deteriorating apartment complexes became isolated enclaves of poverty and crime—the newer and bleaker ghettoes of the dispossessed.

An expensive new town house development now occupies the site of one of the homes where Sharon lived during her abused and deprived childhood. It is now a fashionable district full of art galleries, bookstores, restaurants and boutiques. This development was the subject of a bitter planning controversy in the late 1960s, as citizens' groups fought to preserve a working-class neighborhood. Sharon did not remember the place with nostalgia.

"It was such a bad place to live. We had to move because there was rats and bugs," she said, as she told the court her tragic life history. "They were never really good places. The best place we lived was in North York. But there were still bugs."

Sharon, and thousands like her, escaped the plague of rats by leaving the inner city, and that may have been the only real progress that came from the best intentions of public planners, allied with the perhaps less pure motives of the property developers. Although they did nothing to break the cycle of poverty, they did succeed in sweeping a highly visible social problem off the downtown streets and under a carpet of suburban sprawl.

Low-income housing and welfare rights are no longer such fashionable issues as they were in the late 1960s. The public agenda has moved on to other concerns. Near the top of that agenda is the newly recognized plight of sexually abused children. No-one knew or cared when Sharon silently suffered such abuse 20 years ago in the downtown slums.

In Canada, the 1984 report of the federal government Committee On Sexual Offenses Against Children And Youths, which is usually referred to as the Badgley Commission, concluded, "Child sexual abuse is a largely hiddent yet pervasive tragedy that has damaged the lives of tens of thousands of Canadian children and youths." This committee did a survey of a representative sample of Canadians and found that about 40 percent of the women interviewed said they had been victims of unwanted sexual acts during childhood. The report described the fear, shame and helplessness experienced by these victims, and noted that three out of four of them kept the assault a closely guarded personal secret. The report commented: "Why did so few of the young victims seek assistance? These persons, or the parents of children who have been assaulted or molested, explain in their own words why most of them did not even tell another family member. Two-thirds were too young when these incidents occurred to know that sexual contacts were wrong. If they did know, then they were too ashamed about what happened, or they were too afraid of their assailants to tell others. Among the few who later told a parent about these incidents, all were initially disbelieved."

Sharon Wells was one such victim. As she told her pathetic story to the court, shaking and wringing her hands, pausing often as she began to sob or pant hysterically, everyone who listened was conscious of the dreadful irony—she was also describing what her own children had allegedly suffered at her hands.

Sharon was the fourth of six children. Sharon's mother and father split up soon after their youngest son, Mike, was born.

Sharon's first memory of abuse was from when she was about three or four years old. They were living in a three-storey brick house with an attic, which led out onto the flat roof. Sharon used to go up to the attic to play. There was a back room in the attic, little more than a cubbyhole. Her father kept a telescope up there. They had a boarder living in the house whom the children called "the redheaded woodpecker" because of his red hair.

Judge Beckett gently told Sharon to take her time and relax, as she tearfully told the court of her encounter with the redheaded woodpecker: "We were playing a game: horsey. My mom used to play it with me on her foot. But I wasn't on his foot. I was laughing because I didn't really understand then. But I do now. I got wet. And we were just playing. He just got mean afterwards, and he put me in the cubbyhole, and said if I tell anyone he would. . . . He threatened me. I didn't know. I didn't know. I didn't understand. But I do now."

It was towards the end of the wardship hearing that Sharon gave this testimony, and she apologized to the judge for her lack of composure: "I'm sorry. I listened to all this through this court. I thought I'd be able to sit here, since I already heard it, and it would be easier to sit here and say it."

She also remembered being abused by her father in the same house. He stuck his fingers in her, she said. She didn't tell anyone because "he would kill me. You just don't get him angry at you."

One time he inserted a block in her, and her mother took her to the hospital. She didn't tell anyone about how it got there "because you don't make my dad mad. He hit us kids a lot. He would kick my brother, take the boot to him. My brother come home, and said he got beat up at school. My dad whipped him good. He'll kill you, sure as you sit there.

"One time I needed help to tie up my shoes. I asked him to help me. He just said, 'Don't bug me.' He hauled off, and went wham, and I went flying. We had this boarder called Lorne. I used to like to watch him put insoles in his boots. He said, 'Sharon, some day you'll find happiness.' I just looked at him. He said, 'I hope it isn't after you're dead.' I didn't understand what he said. But I do now."

Sharon said her dad put his fingers in her when he got drunk on weekends—not every weekend, but about ten or fifteen times altogether. She said her mom and dad used to fight a lot and one of the reasons her mother eventually left her father was that she caught him molesting her.

Her mother moved with the children to a rat-infested house in the neighborhood, which was slated for redevelopment. From there, they moved to an apartment over a store, in a seedy, run-down district where the housing had deteriorated too far to be worth renovating. This area remains much the same today, except that the corner store is now owned by a chain. The tavern over which Sharon's family lived for a while now seeks to lure the more daring or desperate into its bleak confines with a neon sign advertising "Three Exotic Dancers."

What Sharon remembers most about the apartment over the store is the broken stair, which you couldn't step on, where she once lost her doll. There were two bedrooms, one for the boys and one for the girls, and her mother slept in the living room on a bed. She does not remember how long they lived there, except that they were there for at least one Christmas because the children sold Christmas trees, which the boys had scrounged by telling someone "a sob story."

They lived over the tavern for about another year and Sharon's most vivid memory of this place was a haunting one. Her father was not living with them but he used to visit. One day Sharon's older sister Sally brought her to the window of the apartment and pointed to a stained paper towel on the ground.

"That's Dad's blood," Sally told Sharon, "Dad fell out the window."

Her mother told her that her dad had jumped out of the window. He had been taken to hospital and recovered. He continued to visit them after that, but he did not sexually abuse Sharon any more.

She remembers being physically abused by her mother. She used to try to protect herself from these beatings by laughing instead of crying. This would enrage her mother, but the more the woman hit her, the more Sharon would laugh. Sharon later wondered if this had somehow distorted her emotionally. She said she scared herself sometimes by laughing when she should have been crying. She could understand, however, why her mother would be driven to administer these beatings: "She didn't know any better. Her mother did it to her. Her mother's mother did it."

From the tavern the family moved to a house on a short narrow street, where many of the buildings are now uninhabitable and boarded up. When she was asked to describe this house to the court, Sharon shook her head with an expression of disgust. "There were lots of bugs," she said. "It had a veranda and a backyard covered with cement.

"My mom has a saying: A place can get messy and can get dirty, and her place is always messy not dirty. From my point of view it was always dirty," she told the court.

She said her mother would tell the children to clean the place. On one occasion her sister Sally was washing dishes to get ready to eat supper, when their mother noticed that the table had not been washed. "She made us put food right on the table. She said, 'If you want to eat off a dirty table . . .' I don't like what happened. There was people there, company there."

When Sharon was about ten years old her mother's latest boyfriend moved in to live with them. This perverse and violent man, Anton Laroche, who would later become her stepfather, was to have a devastating effect on the precarious emotional balance of Sharon and her sisters. Anton and Sharon's mother had a child, Lucille, who was born when Sharon was 13 years old. Anton also had a daughter by a previous marriage who was about Sharon's age.

Even before he moved in, when Sharon and her younger sister Lesley would stay at his house with their mother, Anton would join in the games they played with his daughter, and encourage them to touch him sexually.

When Anton moved in with the family, his nephew also came to stay as a lodger. It was he who first persecuted Sharon. She and Lesley used to share the same bed in the basement, and one night when their mother and Anton had gone out, his nephew, whom the girls called uncle, came down to the basement.

As Sharon described her memory of this incident to the court, she said, "When I think about this it makes me so angry inside. I can't believe it. He had his pants down and he was rubbing against me. I kept my eyes closed so he wouldn't think I'm awake, because I'm so scared. A knock came at the door. Mom caught him going upstairs doing up his pants.

"She kicked him out. That was great. I'm proud of her for kicking him out. But he was eating at the table the next day. She threw the sucker out, and to think he was eating at our table the next day. I can't believe that woman," said Sharon, almost shouting in the silent courtroom, as she relived her rage, "I don't feel I've got the worst mother in the world. But I have a hard time believing it."

On another occasion Sharon was in an upstairs room watching a raccoon who was sitting outside on the windowsill. Her mother was having a party downstairs. Anton's nephew came upstairs, grabbed Sharon and pulled down her pants.

"He started rubbing my bum. I was facing the other way. I remember looking at that raccoon, you know, just watching. He started putting fingers in me. He said, 'I do this to my wife. She likes it. You're going to like it.' I thought, 'Hey, that raccoon has some great power. He could stop it.' I said, 'That raccoon is going to eat you,' and the raccoon just left. He kept rubbing my bum.

"That's not the last time. I just can't understand my mom. I didn't tell her about that. Why should I? The guy said nothing could hurt him, and women like being touched there.

"Once he did it to Lesley. I lied there. I didn't do a damn thing to help her. I should have done something. I didn't do anything. And when I turned sixteen, I left. I didn't stay there and help her. I should have done something. I feel I should have done something to help her. I helped me and my sister bolt the door so Anton wouldn't get in. That's all I did. I just lied there. To this day I don't understand why I didn't help her. Why didn't I jump up and beat him?"

But the cruelest abuse came from Anton himself. "He was sick, sick," Sharon told the court. "I don't know how the Lord can make such sick people."

She had some respite after her mother tried to leave Anton following a chaotic period of bitter fighting between them. But eventually Anton moved into their new home, another run-down building in a seedy section of Toronto. Sharon's brothers shared a little room behind the furnace. The walls were painted black and they had decorated the room with objects such as a fearsome skull with a head of hair, which Sharon remembers with horror. Anton used to babysit the children, and when the others went out to play, he would take Sharon to her brothers' room.

"He used to touch me all over and say, 'It's mine. Your tits are mine.' He used to do nasty things. I was so scared. He was just . . . I don't know . . . I guess maybe . . . I don't know. We'd be out playing. He'd call me in to get a cookie or something. He'd put me on the bed. The room was painted black with a skull. He used to tie my hands to the bed. It was around about the time my mom was pregnant that he really did it more."

Sharon choked on her words as she tried to describe to the court the "nasty things" that Anton used to do to her. She said he would stick things into her. Her own lawyer, Arthur Brown, persistently trying to draw details from her, asked her what things. She tried to speak several times, before she hoarsely whispered, "A carrot and . . .

other things. I know it hurt. I know I can feel it sometimes. It bothers me a lot.

"My friend, who lived two doors beside us, had an uncle. We used to go to his place, and he used to do things like Anton. Touch us down there and play with us. I just felt like, hey, men do that to you. It's allowed. That's the way they care and love you."

Sharon said this man used to give them money, and sometimes they would go to his house for that reason. She worried that this meant that she was a prostitute.

She said the family moved to government housing—"It looked like a barracks, houses after houses, rows of houses, houses here, houses there, all attached together"—but the abuse continued.

School provided some respite from the home environment. Sharon said she used to stay on at school for sports, plays and other activities. She got on to the cheerleading team. She liked being out of the house. The one school activity she used to avoid was the health classes, which involved sex education: "I used to skip off to the washroom. I didn't like it, because I didn't like the slides and stuff they showed us. I didn't want to know about it. I figured I knew all I wanted to know about it, and I didn't want to know any more."

She told the court, "I just didn't understand. I wanted to understand. I'd not let my kids go through what I went through. No way, when people do things like that to you. You don't understand at that age, who I was, what I was, where I was. I just thought these men are allowed to do this to you. When you finally realize this is wrong, you don't want it. You go to your friends, and their uncle is doing the same thing. I wonder, 'Is it right and is it wrong?' A part of me saying, 'It's right,' a part of me saying, 'It's wrong.' I'm so confused.

"The pain doesn't go away. I'm trying so hard to put it in the back of my mind. You try and live day to day, but you can't forget."

Like many victims of child sexual abuse, Sharon Wells escaped from her home at the earliest opportunity. At 16, she left her school and what little protection her home afforded her. She was sexually experienced but ignorant of any of the joy, or even of the pleasure, that can be found in normal adult relationships. Desperately deprived of love and understanding, she deeply distrusted other people, and had little self-esteem.

Sharon's needs were great, but her expectations were low. Her stunted childhood had prepared her for only one role in life, that of the victim of violent and exploitative men. It did not take her long to find one.

When she was asked in court to describe the natural father of her first child, Sharon said, "Ross was like every man. They start out nice and then they turn."

Sharon first met Ross, when she was 15 years old, while visiting her sister Sally in New Brunswick. The older sister had gone there when she fled their abusive home a few years earlier. It was during this visit that Sharon first learned that Sally had also been sexually abused by their father and then their stepfather. Sally urged Sharon to come to live with her as soon as she turned 16, and promised to send her a ticket as a birthday present.

"I was really glad. I was so happy getting out of there," Sharon said, as she described the optimism with which she embarked on her "fresh start," the first of many attempts to somehow magically cleanse a life that had been polluted at its source.

It was summertime when she went to New Brunswick. She enrolled in school and stayed for a year, but she didn't get a certificate and is not sure what grade she was in, though she thinks it was grade ten. She became friends with Ross, who had a job and would take her out and buy things for her. He used to give her money and buy her lunch. She said they got along well together, until her sister went back to Toronto and Sharon moved into a one-room apartment. She became more dependent on Ross, who started to make greater demands on her. She used to record her personal feelings in a diary, which Ross got hold of one day. Sharon would not say what it was in the diary that enraged her boyfriend, but she said it was after this that he started to get nasty and violent with her.

As Sharon told her story in court, her mood would frequently shift from anger and tearful anguish to a childish, giggly, lighthearted state, which wasn't always appropriate to the harsh experiences she described. At times it seemed that she was enjoying having an audience, and delighting in her role as heroine in her own tragedy. It was almost with nostalgia that she described some of the acts of violence inflicted on her, as if she perceived these acts as an expression of love, and her victimization as an endorsement of her own importance to the man who abused her.

Sharon, who had skipped the sex education classes in school, soon became pregnant. She was still only 16 and she was scared. But she was also happy. She wanted to keep the baby, "because I would have someone who was going to love me, and I was going to love them with all my heart and soul."

She wanted to go home to Toronto. She felt that she needed her mother's help and she believed she could stand up for herself at home now. She didn't think Anton would touch her any more. She said it never occurred to her that her stepfather would have by now found a new victim in his own daughter, Lucille. Lucille was Sharon's halfsister, her mother's daughter, and about ten years younger than Sharon. Sharon said she told Ross that she was going back home to her mom to have her baby. He said, "We'll get married and have the baby, and give the baby a name and that." Ross and Sharon both lived with her family until the baby was born, but they were not allowed to sleep together because it was felt that this might be a bad influence on Lucille. They never did get married.

Sharon said Ross used to hit her during her pregnancy but not hard enough that it would leave marks on her. She said that once when they went to the Canadian National Exhibition together, they got into a big fight and he hit her, and then took her money and left her there. He had a chip on his shoulder, she said, because he was very good-looking and women would be attracted to him. She said she would tell him, "It's not fair to me. You're looking at other women, and I'm carrying your child. You're going to marry me, not them."

Ross got a job in a factory, and, after Janis was born, he and Sharon moved into a small apartment. Sharon's 14-year-old cousin lived nearby and used to visit them to see the baby. It was not the safest of neighborhoods, and Sharon used to ask Ross to walk home with the girl when she stayed late at night. She did not exactly trust Ross with other women, but did not dream she had anything to fear from a 14-year-old girl. When she came home one evening to find Ross and her cousin in bed together, Sharon was astonished and outraged. She felt both of them had betrayed her trust and their relationship with her. When she tried to throw Ross out of the apartment, he beat her up badly. She called the police, who arrived in time to hear him say, "I should have killed you." Sharon said that, on the advice of the police, she charged Ross with assault causing bodily harm, and he was sentenced to two years less a day.

Janis was about six months old when Sharon and Ross split up. After a few months Sharon began a relationship with Gordon Wells, who would later adopt Janis as his daughter. Gordon was a friend of Sharon's older brothers, and she had first met him when she was about 14 years old. She remembered being impressed with his good looks and his skill at drawing. Soon after the breakup with Ross, Sharon went to visit her brother and saw Gordon there, lifting weights. At that time Gordon was going out with Sharon's stepsister, Anton's daughter from a previous marriage, but he and Sharon got together at a party. She said that, when she told him about her relationship with Ross, Gordon said, "If that bastard ever touches you again, I'll kill him. Stick with me and I'll protect you from that guy."

Sharon said Gordon did protect her. "There was a time when Ross came. But he went away because Gordon said he'd bury him if he came near me. He meant what he said. He was going to protect me. I felt very safe with Gordon. He had muscles and tattoos. He looked very manly. I was 17." Ross remained on the scene, however, until he was sent to jail.

Janis was admitted to hospital for gastroenteritis when she was nine months old, and it was noted on the hospital record that the baby was dirty when she was brought in by the mother. After Janis was released from hospital, a public health nurse visited Sharon's apartment. The nurse reported to the Metro Toronto Children's Aid Society that the apartment was "a disaster area," with dirty clothes, garbage and food on the floor. Janis's crib was missing some screws and was not safe. When asked about the baby's diet, Sharon said she fed her steak, pork chops and Kentucky Fried Chicken.

Sharon moved before the Children's Aid Society (CAS) could follow up on this report. She denied suggestions made by a CAS lawyer at the wardship hearing that she was attempting to get away from the social work agency when she moved into an apartment in the building where her father lived. It turned out to be her last contact with her father before he died several years later, and it was a negative one. At her dad's insistence she went out one night with a friend of his, who liked her and wanted to see her again. She later stood him up for Gordon, and this enraged her father, who called her a tramp.

Sharon moved in with Gordon. She said he loved Janis and knew that she and Janis were a package deal. She knew he was her brothers' friend and wouldn't do anything to hurt her. They spent a lot of good times together. He drank a lot, but he wasn't nasty, she said. "We'd run around the house, and joke, and put on records. He wasn't that violent. He would talk violent, but he wasn't violent with me before we married."

There was one incident, however, before they were married, that boded ill for their future relationship. They were sleeping together, Sharon said, and she woke up to find his hands around her throat. She said Gordon told her he was asleep and did not remember what happened, but she was not altogether convinced. She said that, as a result, she was always uneasy about sleeping with Gordon.

The picture of Gordon Wells that subsequently emerged from Sharon's testimony at the wardship hearing, divorce depositions and various other statements made in other court proceedings was of a man obsessed with violence: a man who terrorized his wife with threats, and several times came close to killing her. His behavior, as she described it, was so outrageous that it began to take on some elements of black comedy, elements that Sharon sometimes appeared to find quite amusing in retrospect. Gordon was portrayed as a man who would keep a sawed-off shotgun under his bed, clean his nails with a switchblade and trim the Christmas tree with a machete.

When he testified at the wardship hearing, Gordon confirmed many aspects of Sharon's account of their relationship, though he took issue with some of the specific allegations she had made against him. He said she used to bait him and play upon his temper by saying things about Ross. Gordon said his relationship with Sharon was "the complete pits. I could be around anybody, no problems. But, around Sharon, it was like setting off a short stick of TNT."

One of Gordon's tattoos was a depiction of a cartoon character called Hot Stuff—a baby-faced devil figure with horns and a forked tail, carrying a pitchfork. Much would be made of this devil tattoo during the wardship hearing because of suggestions that a satanic cult was involved in the violent graveyard rituals described by the children. The tattooed caricature was given more sinister connotations when linked with some comments attributed to Gordon, such as "God is dead, and I am the devil," and "When I die I will go to the devil."

Sharon and Gordon were married a few months after they began living together in a dilapidated house in an older suburban neighborhood. Sharon was pregnant again, and it was winter. The house wasn't heated properly, and, Sharon said, it was always cold. She became depressed and began to question whether she should have the baby. After counseling from her doctor, she decided not to have an abortion.

Not long after they were married, Sharon made her first attempt to separate from Gordon. She left him and went to her mother's house. But her mother urged her to return to her husband. She told Sharon, "You made your bed. Lie in it."

Sharon returned, but she was afraid of the gun that Gordon kept. It was a pump-action shotgun, and, according to Sharon, Gordon's father had sawed off the barrel for him. Sharon's fears were realized when Gordon got drunk one day, had an argument with her and threatened to blow her head off.

She said she was also uneasy about leaving her husband alone with the baby. She had a job for a while and used to return home tired after work. Gordon would tell her to go to bed and that he would watch Janis. Sharon would do as he suggested, but used to get up and "creep up on him, to see what he was doing to Janis." One day she explained to him that she was very scared because she had been sexually molested as a child.

"He said, 'People like that should be shot, hung up by their feet—something to that effect—and killed, should not just be killed but castrated,'" Sharon recounted. "So from that day on I was more at ease when Gordon would watch Janis."

Sharon said Gordon never hit the children, but he once picked Janis up, when she was a baby, and slammed her against the wall with such force that he might have put her right through it. She said she told him never to do that again.

Around that time, Janis was treated three times for head injuries, either in hospital or by the family doctor, Dr. Harvey Knapp. Dr. Knapp was not alarmed by this, as he maintained that two-year-olds are prone to falling or banging their heads. Any fears he might have had were allayed when it was found that a torsion in the child's foot might be affecting her stability, and a foot brace was prescribed to correct it.

After Linda was born, Gordon legally adopted Janis. Sharon, Gordon and the two children moved into a high-rise apartment building in a newly developed area in the outskirts of Toronto. They planned to start afresh in a nice new place. It was to be a different way of life.

The Children's Aid Society, which had been concerned about Sharon's care of Janis as a result of the public health nurse's report, concluded that the older child's situation had improved as a result of the marriage and the move to the new apartment. The agency closed its file on the family for the time being.

The fresh start, however, turned out to be a disaster. The relationship was rapidly deteriorating, and Sharon partly blamed the new apartment, which she described as a "bad luck place. I started getting moody because we lived on the 20th floor, and there was not a lot I could do. I was just totally bored. I loved my kids and everything, but everything started to get to me."

She and Gordon would get into huge fights over little things. Sharon said she got bothered about things like the way he parted his hair. He was drinking more, and Sharon said she was "super bothered" by all the beer bottles that were left around the apartment. She said that when Gordon had his friends over to visit he would boast to them about what he did in bed with her.

Sharon said she began to feel great anxiety. She started to realize that she shouldn't have married Gordon. She had never loved him, she said, and only married him because Janis never knew anyone else as a father, and because she didn't want to jump from man to man.

"When Gordon thinks I baited him, maybe I did. I took a lot of anger out on Gordon, which I shouldn't have done, and maybe that's what prompted him to do what he did," she reflected, as she gave her testimony in court. "My personal thing that happened to me as a kid was really getting to me. Sometimes I would pick a fight so that I didn't have to sleep with him. Often Gordon ended up sleeping on the couch."

Linda, the new baby, was sickly from birth. She had been treated in hospital for a bladder infection. Sharon was having trouble feeding her, and was convinced that this was the fault of the medication prescribed for the child.

Little more than a month after they had moved into the new apartment, Sharon insisted that Gordon leave. She would later explain to social workers that it was because he was too sexually demanding and had forced her to have intercourse against her will. As he continued to be seen around the building, the welfare worker and the social worker attached to the housing project suspected that the separation was just a ruse to allow Sharon to collect welfare. They began to investigate her, and later felt guilty as they feared this investigation might have caused her mental breakdown a month later.

Sharon would later describe this breakdown as "an anxiety attack"—a term she heard frequently in court as doctors analyzed her voluminous medical record. It happened the same day she had taken Janis to the hospital for treatment for a head injury. She said she found herself shaking and crying. She didn't know what was wrong with her. She called Dr. Knapp. He asked her where the children were, and either called her mother or told her to do so.

Sharon said that at the time she called the doctor Janis was crying for something to eat. "I made Janis a sandwich, and gave Linda her bottle," Sharon recalled. "I crawled to the table because I could not stand up. My legs were totally shaken. I went into the storage room, a cubbyhole, because I was very afraid, afraid of me, afraid I might hurt the kids because of the crying. Then my mom came and told me it was going to be okay."

Dr. Knapp noted in his file, "I feel very sorry for her, but everything is very complex. Out of my league at that time to handle this degree of problem."

Sharon was hospitalized for 35 days, and while she was there she took an overdose of sleeping pills—they were pills that she had had at home and had asked Gordon to bring in for her. She said Gordon was "really nasty" when he came to visit. He called her a mental patient and said she was sick. She took her rings off her fingers and threw them at him.

"I felt nobody gives a damn about me, why should I live. Gordon had brought the pills. At that point in my life I just wanted somebody to give a damn about me. I didn't feel that anybody cared."

CHAPTER 3

THE CAS GETS INVOLVED

Social workers were usually more than a little scared when they were called upon to go into the huge apartment complex where Sharon and her children lived. The stark and forbidding high-rise blocks were devoid of any aesthetic appeal, and the minuscule pieces of green space that the developers had provided were usually strewn with trash. A small token playground, for the hundreds of children living in this "family housing development," was sandwiched between the highway and a parking lot. It afforded a dispiriting view of the back of one of the buildings, where the monotony of concrete and glass was broken only by several large garbage containers and the wire mesh that covered the ground-floor windows.

When Marg Wilson, a social worker with the Metro Toronto Children's Aid Society, drove down the short street that separated the development from its immediate neighborhood, she traveled from the security of a quiet, modestly affluent suburb into an area of poverty, violence and despair. She could read this on the threatening faces of the youths who loitered around the drab entranceway, as she prayed that they would not follow her into the elevator.

This was by no means a new experience, however, for Ms. Wilson, who was a seasoned veteran of social work. She was a tough, shrewd woman, whose casual, slightly offhand manner tended to put people at ease. The image she projected was not that of a prying, middle-class do-gooder, but of a busy, caring person, who could relate to the concerns and problems of her clients.

How much Ms. Wilson, and others like her, were able to do for their clients was determined less by their own personal dedication to the job than by the restrictions imposed by the system in which they worked. Their role in that system was fraught with almost impossible contradictions, which are rooted in society's conflicting goals and priorities as they relate to child abuse and family violence.

The Children's Aid Society that Marg worked for was founded in 1891 by a crusading journalist, as a private organization devoted to the protection of neglected children. Ontario government legislation, introduced two years later, encouraged the establishment of similar organizations across the province, and charged them with the administration of public measures for the prevention of cruelty to children. While these agencies have remained private, they are largely financed and controlled by the Ontario government. This unusual status perhaps reflects an ambiguous attitude on the part of governments toward the delicate issue of state intervention into the traditionally sacrosanct, private realm of family life.

Legislation requires that Children's Aid Societies protect children, where necessary, but at the same time support the integrity and autonomy of the family unit. In 1983 a standing committee of the provincial legislative assembly was told that this sets up "an incredible, inhumane dilemma" for the social worker.

Former Minister of Community and Social Services Frank Drea told the same committee, "A CAS worker who is involved with a high-risk family has to walk a very, very difficult line. On the one hand they are there to prevent or to help. On the other hand at the very same time that they are in the household, they are also collecting evidence by just being there. They are looking around and they are seeing things. This is a very, very difficult line, where they have to be, at the same time, the investigator and the remedy."

Their task is made even more difficult because the government has put increased demands on the social work agencies. New laws require that all suspected cases of child abuse be reported and investigated; the Children's Aid Societies maintain that they have not been granted enough additional funds to do the job properly. Yet, whenever they fail to do all that is required of them, public opinion, now highly sensitive both to child abuse and to human rights, is easily moved to outrage, either over the plight of a child whose abuse has gone undetected, or over a parent who is wrongly accused of abuse.

It was about a month after Sharon's release from the psychiatric ward that Marg Wilson first visited her in Sharon's 20th-storey apartment. Ms. Wilson found the young mother depressed and overwhelmed by her situation. Sharon told her she was unable to cope and very disorganized in her housework. Janis was very demanding, and, according to Sharon, was getting lippy, would pull at the baby, mess her room, throw tantrums, dawdle, hit other children and spit out food.

Linda was sick with diarrhea and vomiting. A public health nurse had already been in the home to assist with this problem; a pediatrician, who felt that Sharon had a problem feeding the baby properly, recommended that she be encouraged to be more tolerant and take more time with her. Sharon said she wanted to be a good mother and didn't want to hit the children, but felt like she wasn't able to get up in the morning and get her work done.

Sharon's mother had always warned her not to trust the Children's Aid, but she was desperate for any kind of support and immediately established a rapport with the sympathetic and practical Ms. Wilson. The social worker made arrangements for a visiting homemaker, and for Sharon to participate in a parenting project that provided guidance to mothers considered to be in danger of abusing their children.

Ms. Wilson had been called upon to visit Sharon because of concerns reported by a social services worker, who became involved with the family when Sharon applied for welfare. Marg knew about Sharon's hospital admission, but she was not aware of the suicide attempt. She was also unaware, until about a year later, of Sharon's prior involvement with the CAS, because that information was filed under Sharon's maiden name. This kind of communication failure was characteristic of the various professional attempts to help the family, as it is in many such cases. Part of the same pattern was the fact that Sharon's physician, Dr. Knapp, was never aware that the CAS was involved in her case, just as he was also ignorant of several occasions when the children were taken to different hospitals for treatment of injuries. In spite of all the best efforts of the conscientious individuals involved, the family's problems were simply too great for any one of them, and their combined interventions were plagued with breakdowns in co-ordination and communication.

Another problem was Sharon's attitude when help was offered; although she appeared willing to seek help, she was perhaps not as forthcoming as she appeared to be, and certainly was not consistent in following through with all the arrangements that were made for her. It was clear when she testified in court that Sharon was often torn and confused by conflicting impulses. Her own account of what happened in her life was often misleading and contradicted by other evidence. A part of her seemed to dearly wish to be a good mother and do everything right for her children, but there was always something else to intervene, something that she didn't understand, or wouldn't talk about. The long succession of sicknesses and injuries suffered by her children left an overwhelming impression that they were being mistreated. Yet it was only because Sharon was so conscientious in seeking medical attention for these problems that they ever came to light.

These ambiguities were all present when Sally, Sharon's older sister, reported a suspected sexual assault on three-year-old Janis. There was no way of knowing whether or not, if the child was sexually molested on this occasion, it was an isolated incident or part of the ongoing pattern of abuse that Janis would talk about a few years later. At the hearing, Sharon's lawyer claimed that the fact she reported this incident showed her desire to protect the children. But there is some question about whether the allegation would have been reported if Sally had not taken the initiative. According to Sharon's first account of the incident, told to Harriet Jensen, the director of the parenting project she was attending, her 14-year-old brother Mike was staying at the apartment, and Sharon went along with Janis's request that she be allowed to sleep with her uncle on two successive nights. By the time Sharon testified in court, this part of the story had been revised, and she said, "I'm not sure how he got into bed with her." In any case, she said, the child told her afterwards that her uncle had touched her in the genital area, which appeared to be sore and red. Sharon said she confronted Mike and he denied it.

Sharon discussed the incident with Sally, telling her that she was worried that her husband would kill Mike if he found out about the incident. She told Sally she was confused and didn't want everybody to know about it. She said she was really torn between her relationship with her daughter and her relationship with her brother. Sally also attended the parenting project and said she would talk to Harriet Jensen. Sharon said her sister told her that she didn't want this to go on in the family for another generation.

Sharon told the court that she received a phone call from Harriet Jensen, who said she had a legal obligation to check out the situation. Ms. Jensen took Sharon and the child to the Hospital for Sick Children, where a doctor found no evidence of damage or sexual abuse. But he told them that this did not prove it didn't happen, since a sexual assault need not leave any physical scars. The doctor advised Sharon to keep her brother and her child apart.

When Sharon received follow-up calls about the incident from the CAS and a social worker at the Hospital for Sick Children, she was angry because "I didn't want the rest of the world to know my business." She told Harriet Jensen, "I don't want anything to do with you, or what you have to offer."

Marg Wilson of the CAS found that Sharon was unwilling to discuss the incident. The social worker reported to her supervisor: "Sharon is backing away from CAS as a result of this incident, but I feel she will come back, if given some breathing space." She recommended that the CAS continue its monitoring and support, as this was a high-risk case. Ms. Wilson arranged for a subsidized day-care place for Janis, whom she described as a disturbed child—she was quite whiney and manipulative, and got on her mother's nerves. She said the child's mother was refraining from disciplining her as she was afraid she might not be able to stop hitting her.

Without any actual evidence that abuse had taken place, there was little that the social worker could do, except hope that Sharon would eventually be willing to see her again. As long as a client was unwilling to co-operate with the CAS, there was nothing the agency could do to help the children, unless it had enough evidence to take legal action.

However, the continuing crises in Sharon's life were such that she needed support. The allegations about her brother Mike had precipitated a big family crisis, when discussion of the issue prompted Sharon's halfsister, Lucille, to disclose that her father Anton had been sexually abusing her for years. This revelation led to a suicide attempt by Sharon's mother.

Sharon returned to the counseling sessions at the parenting project, but told Ms. Jensen that she would not tell her about any more abuse, until she had discussed it with her own doctor. A few days later Janis was taken to hospital with a severe injury to her abdomen and blood in her urine. A hospital report recorded that Sharon went away, leaving her child unattended on a stretcher. Sharon told her doctor that a beam had fallen on the child. She told Harriet that a counter and a television fell on Janis. She said she had bought the three-year-old child, who wore a brace on her foot, some roller skates, and that while she was skating in the living room, she had banged into a counter with a television set on it, and pulled both of them down on top of her.

When Sharon herself went into hospital a couple of weeks later, she told Harriet it was to have an ovarian cyst removed. The CAS was never informed of Sharon's stay in hospital, which was in fact for an abortion. Dr. Knapp had recommended the therapeutic abortion, because Sharon was in a distraught state and unable to cope. He said she had found it very difficult to accept that she was pregnant, and at first claimed it was impossible as she had not had sexual relations with her husband for several months.

She explained to the court that after she and Gordon separated, his best friend Don, who had been best man at their wedding, moved into her apartment because he had had a fight with his girlfriend and didn't have a place to stay. She said it came as a shock to both Gordon and her that she was pregnant. She said Gordon told her, "It's not my kid. I'm not going to raise another kid that's not mine."

Sharon said she was deeply hurt by this response because she thought that Gordon fully accepted his adopted daughter Janis as his own. She said he calmed down later and apologized for his cruel reaction, and they agreed that it would be best for her to have an abortion. She said she subsequently felt extreme guilt, and received psychiatric treatment for depression. It was not clear from Sharon's testimony whether or not Gordon had good reason to doubt that he could have made her pregnant, or if Don had played a role in the matter.

Gordon had moved out and was living with some friends, but he would visit her on weekends, in what Sharon said was an attempt to reconcile their differences. The welfare department took a different view of this and on one occasion withheld Sharon's checks on the grounds that they believed her husband was still living with her. During Gordon's visits, he and Sharon would often get into huge arguments. Gordon would take out his frustrations on the furniture. Sharon said he punched a light once—it went flying into the ceiling and broke. She said one time he picked up a coffee table and threw it at the washing machine. Also, she said he put his fist through doors and walls, and on one occasion hurled his machete into the wall, just missing her head.

When Ms. Wilson next visited Sharon, she found the apartment a mess, with dirty dishes and diapers everywhere. The social worker for the housing project also reported that Sharon's housekeeping was dreadful, and that the place was extremely dirty and infested with cockroaches. A succession of homemakers, sent in by the CAS, made little impact on Sharon's housekeeping abilities. One time when Ms. Wilson arrived for an unannounced visit, she found the children alone in the apartment with dirty clothing scattered around. She found Sharon in a neighbor's apartment. Sharon told her that she was taking diet pills and they made her feel drowsy. She said she felt lethargic, immobilized with depression and overwhelmed with the kids and with housework. Sharon said she was no longer seeing her husband, since he told her that his girlfriend was pregnant. She said that had made her come to her senses.

Doctors at the Hospital for Sick Children continued to be concerned about baby Linda's health. She spent much of her first two years in and out of the hospital, and it was noted that, while she remained below normal weight for her age, she would always gain considerable weight while she was in the hospital. She was therefore diagnosed as suffering from inorganic failure to thrive: a condition of weakness that is usually attributed to inadequate care.

As Linda grew old enough not to depend on her mother to feed her, she began to gain weight, though she remained a frail little child. The pediatrician noted a fine tremor in her hands, which he attributed to stress. Both children continued to suffer from an unusual number of injuries, and Janis was treated for infections. Dr. Knapp said he might have had more cause for concern had he known about the family's history of sexual abuse.

Sharon became preoccupied with a fear that the abortion she had had might have rendered her infertile, and, without disclosing the true reason for these fears, saw Harriet Jensen for some individual counseling sessions. The therapist later testified that Sharon told her, at that time, that she was unable to form satisfactory relationships with adults, and depended on relationships with children to meet her needs for companionship and love. Sharon told Ms. Jensen that she was afraid that when the girls grew up and left home, she would not have the ability to produce more children to replace them.

Sharon claimed that she had invested heavily in being a good mother, didn't leave the children with people she didn't trust, and therefore limited her own social contacts to those where she could include her children. She said she was very critical of adults in her life, and cut them off when they did not fulfill her expectations. She told Harriet, "My dream was to have as many children as I can, to do right by them, to have someone to fall back on when I'm alone."

Ms. Jensen was concerned that the incident with Janis's uncle Mike was not a good prognosis for Sharon's ability either to see the danger of sexual abuse or to stand up for her daughters if they were abused by someone who was close to her. In addition, she was afraid that Sharon had a tendency to seek out the kind of partner who may be attracted to children, or who would turn to children for gratification when frustrated in adult relationships. With all her own problems, Sharon would quickly frustrate such men and leave her children as targets. Ms. Jensen formed the impression, while she was counseling Sharon, that there was a high risk that children in Sharon's care would be sexually abused, because she was not prepared to work through the problems caused by her own childhood abuse. She said the way Sharon would turn to her daughters for nurture, wanting them to meet her adult needs, was a typical setup for a child who gets sexually abused.

As far as Marg Wilson knew, the two children got on well at day-care. That is what their mother told her. The Children's Aid Society social worker was aware that the girls were absent from the day-care on occasion, and got explanations for these absences from Sharon. But she heard nothing from the day-care staff to cause her to have any additional concerns about the children.

The day-care staff did have grave concerns about Janis and Linda, but did not think it necessary to communicate all of these to the Children's Aid Society. They knew that the social work agency was already involved in the case, and was presumably watching the children carefully, as it was the CAS that designated them as being at high risk of abuse. While Ms. Wilson was told about some problems with the children's attendance, she was not made aware of the extent of this problem. She did not know that the girls were absent half of the time that they were supposed to be in day-care; their attendance at the day-care was mainly to protect them from potential abuse at home. Most of the children's absences were unexplained.

"There were not many smiles on their faces. That's something that sort of stood out," the day-care supervisor recalled. She described Janis and Linda, to the court, as pale, unkempt, untidy children. She said Linda's clothes were often too big for her, and the child used to tremble "like a little leaf in the wind." Janis was observed to be a rather willful child, who did not play with other children and was often unpleasant and aggressive with them.

The day-care workers were also disturbed by Linda's persistent odor of dried urine on unwashed clothes. They asked her mother to provide them with second sets of clothing for the child, but Sharon kept forgetting to do this in spite of frequent reminders. When Sharon came to the center, the staff remarked that she often appeared to be unresponsive and "spaced out" on some kind of drug or medication.

One day while Linda was in the washroom, a day-care worker noticed bluish marks on her lower abdomen and thighs, close to her vagina. Having determined that they were not bruises but some kind of dye, the supervisor asked Sharon about the marks and was told that on the previous evening Janis had taken some marker and painted Linda.

A few weeks later, during "circle time," a period when the children were encouraged to tell stories and talk about their own lives, Linda announced that her father had held a knife to her mother's throat the night before. Sharon was asked about this incident, and confirmed that it had taken place, explaining that she was having a very difficult time with her estranged husband.

In November, 1982, Sharon met Gary Evans at a disco bar. If one accepts Sharon's account of their first meeting, it involved what must be one of the most unromantic overtures ever made. Sharon testified that she told Gary, "I have two kids. I'm separated and if you touch me I'll sock you. I'm a package deal. You have to love my kids and you have to love me."

Sharon's relationship with Gary developed slowly. She had been very attracted to him when she first met him. He was a small, slim, dark-skinned young man with a clean, innocent face and carefully coiffured hair. Sharon liked his looks as soon as she spotted him in the crowded disco, and, when she saw him talking to an acquaintance of hers, she had asked to be introduced to him. Sharon and her girlfriend went there for Ladies' Nights, when women patrons could win prizes and were given their first drink free.

Perhaps inhibited by Sharon's warning that he should keep his distance, Gary did not ask to drive her home until the third or fourth meeting, and then Sharon declined the invitation. But they continued to meet at the bar to dance and have a good time. Sharon was quite enchanted with the courteous way this shy, middle-class young man treated her. They became friends and started going out, with the girls, to the beach or Ontario Place. It was, according to Sharon, nine months before she would allow Gary to enter her apartment. She said, “I wanted to make sure he loved me and my kids. The girls liked him. They never complained or anything. I think Janis was more closer to him. Janis always wanted to hold his hand or stuff.”

Sharon felt herself falling more and more in love with Gary. She had never before known such a sensitive person. Sharon would describe him as a very quiet, sweet, beautiful guy, like no-one she had ever met before. She would marvel at the way they could discuss things, without arguing or fighting. She said he was a virgin until they started to have sex together.

It was after they started sleeping together that Sharon discovered that Gary was a very religious person. She illustrated this with a story about how Gary got Janis a bicycle, after Gordon had promised her one but failed to follow through. Sharon said Gary found a bike in the garbage, and said all it needed was a wheel. She said he then looked out of the window and saw a wheel, and explained, “That’s the way God works. He performs miracles like that.”

Gary’s family also impressed Sharon, as they never yelled and screamed at one another, or insulted each other. They were different from any people she had been involved with before. She could never understand what Gary’s father said, because of his fast clipped speech, and she knew that Gary’s sisters would have rather seen him with a black girl; she was amazed that none of them was ever mean to her.

Gary and Sharon were not living together. He would visit her most weekends and would stay over sometimes during the week. They took the children on a couple of camping trips. When they went out together in the evenings, Sharon said they would either leave the kids with a baby-sitter, with Sharon’s mother, with her sister’s boyfriend, or with Gordon.

The question of whether or not Gordon had a good relationship with Gary was a disputed issue at the wardship hearing, as the children’s allegations suggested that they were partners in crime, perhaps members of the same satanic cult. According to Sharon they did not get on at all. Gordon once called her “a fucking nigger lover,” Sharon told the court. “He did not like Gary because Gary was black. He calls him ‘that fucking black bastard, that nigger.’ He would just blow off the handle, and say, 'That nigger should be shot.' I don't know if that was his color, or because he was with me. He always threatened to kill Gary. Even today he threatens that. The last time I saw him he threatened that."

Although she was happy when she was with Gary, Sharon became uneasy about her relationship with the middle-class university student. She explained it this way: "There was a time when I thought my life was going too good for me. I asked Gary to get out of my life. I said, 'You're from a whole different world than me.' His family is such a sensitive family. They care about one another. Different from what I grew up with. The whole atmosphere in his home is different. I felt like a Cinderella sort of thing. I went to his place, and then went back to my place. He'd say, 'I'll get you out of this. You deserve better than this.' I didn't feel I deserved better. I said, 'That's my life. That's the way I live.'"

She asked him to go away, and they agreed to stop seeing one another. Sharon said the children cried when they were told she and Gary were going to separate. Then Gary called her and told her he loved her and wanted to try to make it work. He said he really wanted to make something of her. He said he wanted to see her succeed.

With Gary's encouragement, Sharon was trying to better herself by going to school for upgrading classes. She attended sporadically and dropped out after about six months. She said she derived a lot of strength from children and wanted to pursue a career in early childhood education. She said she had a dream of one day opening her own day-care center.

Meanwhile, Gordon continued to terrorize Sharon with his violent behavior. She charged him with assault after he slammed her against the wall during one of their attempted reconciliations. She later dropped the charges. She also had him charged with dangerous driving, when she claimed he tried to run her over at a shopping plaza after she refused to lend him $10 from her baby bonus money. This charge was also dropped and Gordon signed a letter agreeing that he would not act violently towards her again.

In a divorce application presented to Family Court, Sharon cited these two incidents, and also claimed that Gordon had told her he was getting guns from the United States and would use them to kill the kids, her and himself. When Sharon was convicted of defrauding a bank of about $650, she claimed that Gordon had driven her and the children to the bank, and threatened to kill her if she didn't commit the crime.

"Gordon could be the nicest guy in the world. Just don't get him angry," Sharon later told the wardship hearing.

Sharon described another incident, when she said Gordon hung her over her 20th-storey balcony. He had come over to pick up the children, she said, and they got into a big fight. He was very strong and could lift her with one hand. He had her over his shoulder, and she was punching him, kicking and screaming. Sharon said he told her, "I'm going to kill, you bitch," but she held on to the bars of the balcony and eventually he pulled her back.

Gordon later claimed that on this occasion he had saved Sharon's life; he said she tried to throw herself over the balcony during a violent argument. His version of the story was supported by a note made by Dr. Knapp: "Severe depression. Very suicidal that day. Had a problem with her teacher. Told me she had assaulted her teacher and was going to be charged. Said she had nothing to live for. Almost jumped off a balcony. This was the worst I had ever seen her."

Sharon said she was feeling a lot of pressure in her life at that time. She felt she was being torn in two by Gary and Gordon. She was struggling to keep up with school and to attend a center for handicapped children, where she was doing volunteer work. The distances involved in traveling to and from her remotely located apartment made this even more difficult, she said.

She was hospitalized again after taking an overdose of tranquilizers. When she was released, she was advised to get out-patient psychiatric treatment. She didn't follow up on this because of the distance she would have to travel to get there, she said. They should provide such facilities in the community closer to where the patients live, she told the wardship hearing.

Once again, Ms. Wilson knew about Sharon's stay in hospital, but was never told about the drug overdose. When Ms. Wilson next went to visit, Sharon told her she was too busy to see her, as she was expecting a visit from her husband and Gary. Ms. Wilson went back a week later and was not allowed to enter the apartment. Sharon answered the door, stepped outside and said she had forgotten Ms. Wilson was coming. Ms. Wilson said that, if Sharon was forgetting appointments and not bringing up issues to discuss with her, it was maybe an indication that she no longer needed the services of the CAS. Believing that the children were okay, and knowing nothing about Sharon's suicide attempts or the fact that psychiatrists were pessimistic about her recovery unless she received further treatment, Marg Wilson closed the case in April, 1984.

During the six months after Ms. Wilson closed the CAS file on the case, each child was involved in allegations of sexual assault. In each case it was one of the parents who made the allegations, and in neither was enough evidence found for authorities to do anything other than to continue to "monitor" the family.

In August, 1984, Sharon took Janis to hospital, complaining that the child had been sexually molested at a baby-sitter's apartment. According to Sharon, Janis was afraid she would be beaten if she talked. The child said she had a dream that a man with one eye and half a nose was hurting her. Sharon said the child's genital area was red, and she did not believe that it was a dream. She said she had been out with Gary that night and asked him to drive her and the child to the hospital.

At the Sick Children's Hospital it was found that Janis did have some small abrasions. The police investigated, but did not find there was sufficient evidence for any prosecution. Sharon felt the police did not do a good job. They had gone to the baby-sitter's apartment, and returned to say that there was no black man there. They then asked Gary if he had touched Sharon's children. Sharon was indignant about that, as she was convinced that it could not have been Gary. It was later discovered that there was a man living in the building whose face was half eaten away by a cancerous disease, but there was no evidence of any contact between him and the children.

The Children's Aid Society reopened its file, and social workers tried unsuccessfully to contact Sharon for several weeks. She would not return calls, although she did go into the CAS office during this period to pick up a food voucher from a worker unconnected with the investigation.

Meanwhile, Gordon had been receiving phone calls from a woman, who refused to give her name, but said she was a former girlfriend of Gary Evans and had had a child by him. She said Gary had threatened her life, and was now harming Janis and Linda. Gordon told Sharon about these calls, and, when she asked Gary if he had a previous girlfriend and fathered a child, he denied it.

When Gordon had the children for a weekend visit, he noticed that Linda was rubbing herself a lot and was red in the genital area. Gordon refused to return the four-year-old child to her mother and took her to the hospital instead. A young doctor at the Queensway Hospital examined Linda and found she had a yeast infection, but saw no evidence of bruising. Linda told him that Gary had not hurt her. The doctor did not think there was any need to consult a gynecologist, as there was no evidence beyond a vague phone call in the middle of the night. If he had known that there was a history of sexual abuse in the family, or that the Children's Aid Society was involved, he said, he might have referred the child for a more thorough investigation.

Gordon returned Linda to Sharon, with a prescription and the doctor's recommendation that she get some treatment for the yeast infection. Sharon did not follow up on this recommendation. Gordon was angry that neither the CAS nor the police took any action as a result of his complaint.

Ms. Wilson finally got to see Sharon and the children the next day. After hearing the mother's account of the two incidents, she talked to both children. After talking to Janis she concluded that, while there was no evidence for this incident, the way the child described the alleged molestation suggested that she had been abused in the past. She recommended that Sharon should get Janis into a play-therapy group. Ms. Wilson asked Linda if she had fun with Mommy and Gary, and Linda replied, "Gary said not to talk about it." Ms. Wilson asked her if Gary ever touched her, and Linda giggled and whispered, "No."

"There could be something going on in this home, but there is no evidence to support this," Ms. Wilson wrote in a report, recommending that the family should have continuing help from the CAS.

A few days later Sharon and the children moved to Hamilton. Sharon claimed that the main reason for this was that she did not wish to remain close to the neighbor who she believed was responsible for Janis being sexually abused. She also said she wanted to get away from Gordon and be near Gary, who was attending university in Hamilton.

The fact that both parents reported allegations of sexual abuse was cited by their lawyers at the hearing as evidence that Sharon and Gordon would be unlikely to abuse the children themselves. However, the judge eventually found that the parents did sexually abuse the children, and it is likely from the girls' accounts that this abuse started before Sharon took the children to Hamilton. There are two possible explanations for this apparent inconsistency. One is that other case histories have shown that some people who think they have a right to abuse their own children will not tolerate other people abusing them. The other, which seems more likely to apply to Sharon than to Gordon, is that the allegations were some kind of muted cry for help from people who recognized that they were harming their children but could not control themselves.

The social worker at the housing project was shocked by the state of Sharon's apartment when the family moved out. She said there were holes in every wall and in all the doors. The fridge, screen door and toilet were all damaged and the light shades broken. The walls, which were originally an eggshell color, were now a blackish-gray. The floors were sticky with dirt, and the unit was full of cockroaches.

Sharon said the move to Hamilton was to have been "a new beginning, a different life." She and Gary leased the ground floor of a newly renovated house in an older, slightly run-down neighborhood. It had a basement and a small paved backyard. It was the best accommodation she had ever had, and a complete change from the stifling apartment where the children could never go out to play on their own.

She did not tell Gordon where they were living because, she said, she did not want him to come to the house. She said she told the children their dad would come to visit them, but they said, "Mom, he'll come and wreck our place."

Sharon found a school for the children and a low-paying job for herself, but the live-in arrangement with Gary lasted only ten days. Gary had not wanted Sharon to move to Hamilton in the first place. He was looking for a job, but he didn't want to work in Hamilton, as he didn't like the city. He was also studying and said he found it impossible to work in the house because of all the demands that were placed on him by Sharon and the children. Although Sharon and Gary had decided that they were going to live together, get married and have a baby some day, they very quickly concluded that they were not yet ready for it.

However, Gary continued to spend a lot of time at the house in Hamilton, and would look after the children when Sharon was at work. He often took them to school in the mornings or picked them up in the evenings, and would baby-sit for Sharon on weekends. On some occasions Gary failed to take Linda to school, and later explained to Sharon that he hadn't been able to, as he had "things to do." He said it was easier for him to take her with him, and drop her off at his parents' house while he was looking for work in Toronto.

At one time Linda used to say that she didn't like going in Gary's car. Sharon said she thought this was because she peed on the seat, and Gary got mad at her. Sharon also noticed that Janis would get red in her genital area more often than she used to. She asked Gary if he had touched the girls and he said he hadn't. Sharon said she believed him and trusted him completely. She said the girls never complained about any untoward contact.

Linda's kindergarten teacher in Hamilton had been a little concerned that, although the mother spoke a lot about the child's medical problem, she did not seem to have gone to the trouble of locating a family doctor when she moved to Hamilton. The teacher later became worried that the child was undernourished and seemed to suffer from jerky motor control.

Janis's grade one teacher in Hamilton was Rose Eddy, a nervous little woman in her mid-50s. She sat grumbling to herself as she waited to testify at the wardship hearing, and confronted the court with a look of indignation as she answered the lawyers' questions. She said she remembered Janis as a very pale, thin and lethargic child, who was unusually slow in her reactions. She said Janis often used to cling to her teacher during recess, never smiled and had no spontaneity.

"She used to look as if she hadn't been treated well at home. She looked as though she'd cried all night or weekend," Ms. Eddy said. The teacher formed the impression that Janis was "so miserably unhappy" that there had to be more going on in the home than simply the problems associated with poverty or marital discord.

The teacher noticed what she described as "an unusual sensitivity in her lips," and she said Janis's eyes always looked red and swollen. Ms. Eddy sometimes had the children do an art exercise where they would take a straw and blow through it to spray paint on paper. Janis refused to do this, saying her lips hurt. Ms. Eddy noted that the child's lips were red and swollen.

Ms. Eddy said she didn't question the child about her home life, because "there are certain limits as to how far you are going to snoop in a child's life." But she said she did talk to Sharon, who spoke in a slow slurry way, and "seemed in a little world of her own, tired and unhappy.

"You don't say, 'You're not feeding your child properly,'" Ms. Eddy explained to the court. "You just ask if she is getting enough sleep. Mrs. Wells said she was aware of the problem. She said she would see a doctor about it. She seemed to know the right things to say. She seemed to use the right words. I didn't feel a sincerity there, that she was going to do anything about it. But it was not for me to judge. I wondered whether she was really listening to what I was saying, absorbing the full implication of what I was trying to tell her."

It became apparent to the court why Ms. Eddy looked so uncomfortable about giving her testimony when she began to explain what happened in her class during "rug time," a quiet period after recess, when she encouraged the children to rest on a rug. Ms. Eddy explained reticently, "During these times I had observed some of my children like Janis and Andy Jackson kissing and hugging, french-kissing and touching each other in places, where as adults you would call it sexual play. It went on for a period of time before I realized it was not just kids not knowing what they were doing. Some children are very loving and tend to hug and kiss each other. They were a very loving group of children last year."

Ms. Eddy said it was only after another teacher had noticed Janis and Andy touching one another in the playground, and she had received a complaint from a parent, that she understood that what was going on in her class was "more than just a child's innocent play."

She said a few of the boys and girls were involved in this. She saw Janis once grab at a boy's pants, in his private parts, front and the back. "The boys wanted to put their hands under the girls' dresses. I never got as far as to see what they were doing under there. And the girls naturally responded by putting their hands at the boys' zipper area. I don't think it got as far as the girls getting into the boys' pants. I certainly would have put a stop to that. It went beyond the ordinary children's curiosity," Ms. Eddy said. "Another teacher exclaimed to me in horror, in disbelief, 'Look at what the children are doing in recess!' But it wasn't all this one great big orgy or whatever you call it."

"I said, 'There's lots of room on the rug, move apart.' I told them to close our eyes and keep our hands to ourselves. I really believe that was the end of it—on the rug," said Ms. Eddy.

The Hamilton-Wentworth Children's Aid Society was informed of the Toronto agency's concerns about the children, and a social worker, Lesley Morgan, was assigned to monitor the situation. Ms. Morgan was large-boned and slightly heavyset, but an attractive young woman, with a healthy complexion. She got on well with children, and had a pleasant direct approach to everyone. She was generally well-liked, except by those who came into conflict with her and considered her to be stubborn and aggressive. She was idealistic about her work, and devoted much of her spare time to activities involving the peace movement and women's issues.

Ms. Morgan helped Sharon to sort out some problems she had with her financial affairs at Christmastime, and encouraged her to get involved in an incest survivors' group at the Rape Crisis Centre, where Ms. Morgan worked as a volunteer. Sharon, who subsequently became very bitter towards Ms. Morgan, later told the court that she still appreciates what the social worker did for her at that time: "I can't forget what she did. She was there when I needed her."

Sharon told Ms. Morgan that she would call her if she ever felt she was going to harm her kids, and she joined the group after being assured that anything she said there could not be subsequently used against her by the Children's Aid.

The sessions at the Rape Crisis Centre opened up "a can of worms" for Sharon. As she remembered all that had happened to her as a child, she started to take out her hostility on Gary, and, she said, began to get short-tempered with the children. She was also experiencing financial difficulties, and had received a letter from Gordon's lawyer, demanding that his client be given access to the children. Then at the end of January, 1985, Gary left to work at an out-of-town job.

"I was having a tough time. My life was going pretty fast for me," Sharon said. "I was upset from a phone call from the lawyer that Gordon wanted to have access to the kids again, and I didn't want him to find out where I lived. I had a shortage in my pay. I had $36 to feed the kids for two weeks, because they took OHIP off me mistakenly. I had to walk Linda home in wet pants, in wintertime. I didn't think it was fair. I was upset. I was going to the Rape Crisis Centre trying to deal with a lot of things. I was really upset. Gary wasn't in town, and I was all by myself. Everything got to me. I didn't want to hurt my kids, and I just needed a break. I needed time to get on my feet. My life was running so fast compared to what I was used to."

Sharon said she was scared of herself. She had recurrent dreams, one of which was about diving into a garbage pail full of water. She felt she was going crazy. She had begun yelling and screaming at the kids and she was afraid that if she kept them with her she would hit them. She felt she couldn't call on her mother to take the children, and she certainly didn't want to call Gordon, so she arranged with Lesley to have the girls put in foster care for a month.

Lesley Morgan received a call from Sharon in the early hours of the morning of February 7, 1985, four months after the family had moved to Hamilton. The mother told Ms. Morgan she was suffering "a severe anxiety attack." Ms. Morgan found her sitting against a wall on the living room floor, sobbing hysterically. Sharon said she was afraid that, unless Ms. Morgan took the children that night, she would physically hurt them.

PART TWO

THE ALLEGATIONS

CHAPTER 4
THE FOSTER HOME

Janis and Linda were whisked into another world when they were taken to a foster home in the middle of the night. It was a split-level house in a quiet residential neighborhood. To most people it would seem like a very ordinary suburban household, a clean, quiet, well-regulated home, inhabited by gentle and generous people. But Janis and Linda, who were both less than eight years old, had never experienced the simple security of normal family life.

Catherine McInnis was one of the Children's Aid Societies' most experienced foster mothers. During the previous 15 years, she had provided care to more than 300 children. The CAS had nothing but glowing reports of her work. She was described as having a professional attitude, even though she did the work for altruistic reasons. Social workers often chose her home as a placement for particularly difficult cases, as she was well-known, both for her competence, and for the love and understanding she gave to the children in her care. Many of these children would maintain close ties with her for years after they left her home. She was also scrupulous about keeping notes on all her foster children and reporting any concerns about them that she may have had.

In 1985, and for a few years prior to that, she was a provider of short-term or emergency foster care. This often involved taking in extremely disturbed children without any advance notice. She had also adopted some children, who were now teenagers and young adults. It was because of her years of experience and her gift with difficult children that the CAS persuaded her to open her home to children in need of emergency care. These children would usually only stay for a month or two before either returning home or moving on to a long-term foster home. This meant that, while it was important that the children felt as comfortable as possible in Mrs. McInnis's home, and received the nurturing that they usually desperately needed, she also had to be ready to let them go, and could have no expectations of being able to keep them.

Friends and neighbors saw Catherine McInnis as a model of stability. She and her husband of thirty years lived in a split-level home in a quiet residential neighborhood. They were religious without being fanatics, and the church they attended regularly was of a conservative, nonconformist denomination. At the trial, she would speak little of her husband, who seemed to have minimal involvement with the foster children, but would always refer to him with great respect. She clearly saw him as a model of moral authority and good conscience.

Catherine had an idealized reverence for authority figures in society, particularly the police, and would always make a point of telling children in her care to say "policemen" rather than "cops." Respectability and the appearance of respectability were prime values in Catherine McInnis's life. Nothing could be more distressful for her than the thought that other people might think she was crazy, and she would consider it the ultimate indignity to have two police cars parked in front of her door. She was proud that she had always led an upright life, emphasizing that she had always paid her taxes, and never had so much as a parking ticket—a boast that indicated how she perhaps let her own rhetoric carry her away a little, as she did not drive. She also had a great respect for education, and would often put herself down as being "just a simple housewife."

In spite of the rigidity of Mrs. McInnis's life, a certain eccentricity about her came through clearly in her court testimony and in the diaries where she recorded her observations of the children. Both were replete with little digressions in which she displayed an unexpected wit, an obvious enjoyment of a colorful phrase and a loosely bridled sarcasm. She would draw little pictures in her diary to illustrate things she described, and sometimes during her testimony she would mimic a child's voice as she recounted things that the girls had said to her. An avid gardener, Catherine had an intense love of nature, and would make frequent references to her habit of caring for wild and stray animals—practices that she felt she had almost to apologize for, lest someone would think she was "nuts."

Catherine McInnis projected a wholesome, grandmotherly image. She sat up straight in the witness stand and dressed in a dark serge suit with a white blouse that was fastened at the top by a cameo brooch. She looked like someone who would give advice on moral principles, recipes, folk remedies and household hints, rather than some of the most graphic descriptions of sexual abuse and sadistic violence ever heard in a Canadian courtroom. She did, however, manage to include some proverbial wisdom and household lore during her many asides and digressions, but she didn't flinch from any of the obscene words or sickening descriptions that she was required to relate.

Allegations of child sexual abuse often disturb people in a way that elicits the age-old human response of wanting to shoot the messenger who brings bad news. People find it more comfortable to believe that children are natural liars, or that they have been bewitched, manipulated or brainwashed, rather than accept that the sanctity of the home has been desecrated by acts of perverse cruelty. Therefore, as sexual abuse expert Suzanne Sgroi has noted, those who try to assist sexually abused children "must be prepared to battle against incredulity, hostility, innuendo and outright harassment."[5]

People who knew little of the 18 months of testimony that had been presented to the court would assert confidently that the foster mother had obviously made it all up. Defense lawyers at the trial were sure, at the outset, that they would eventually succeed in breaking her down under long cross-examinations, during which they would probe her for signs of hysteria or religious mania. She was put under such pressure that she did eventually burst into tears on the witness stand, complaining about the intensive questioning and ridicule to which she had been subjected. At the end of the hearing the defense lawyers argued that her testimony was highly emotional, and lacking in credibility, but they were not able, on the basis of the evidence that came before the court, to make that argument as strongly as they might originally have wished.

Catherine McInnis was vulnerable to such criticism, because, unlike some of the other people to whom the children subsequently made disclosures of abuse, she was not a professional and did not respond to the allegations in an objective, unemotional fashion. The children were in her care for 85 days, and it was to her that they first made most of their shocking disclosures. She was constantly exposed to the children's macabre preoccupations, was deeply troubled by them, and came to fear for her own safety and that of the children. Eventually she began to respond in some irrational ways, as she became convinced that everything the children told her was true, and that the police were not taking the allegations seriously.

A psychiatrist, who later examined Mrs. McInnis, described her as obsessional and compulsive, but said she exhibited no sign of the kind of psychiatric disorder that would lead someone to fabricate such bizarre stories. The credibility of her reports was also supported by the fact that the children did make other similar allegations to several different people, and that many of the details of the girls' statements, as reported to Mrs. McInnis, were confirmed in other testimony. While the foster mother knew virtually nothing of the children's background before they came into her care, she reported things that later came out in other evidence, such as Janis's "scary dream" in Toronto, their father holding a knife to their mother's throat, his threats to kill Gary and his so-called picture of the devil.

Other testimony indicated that the foster mother had accurately reported even fairly minor details that had made no sense to her at the time. For example, she said the children told her about their mother giving them "drunk stuff" that made them wobble around, and this was later confirmed by Sharon, who said that she had let the girls drink a little wine at Christmas time and that they had all pretended to be drunk. Apart from those allegations that the girls' parents denied, and for which no external evidence was found, there was nothing that

Mrs. McInnis said the children told her about their past lives that did not correspond with what the court heard from other sources. By the end of the trial, even the lawyers representing the parents ceased to maintain that her accounts were a complete fabrication. Instead, they argued that she may have listened selectively to the children, misinterpreting and distorting what they said.

Mrs. McInnis's solid respectability presented the court with a sharp contrast to the uncomfortable presence of Sharon Wells. Sharon was nearly eight months pregnant by the time Catherine took the witness stand. The father, who was now accused with Sharon of abusing her other children, had already abandoned her. Since the court hearing had begun four months earlier, Sharon had attended every day, dressed almost always in the same large sweater and slacks, looking progressively more unhealthy, distressed and distracted. As the foster mother gave her evidence, Sharon would pout and roll her eyes, make angry gestures with her hands, sigh loudly or mutter to herself. Sometimes she would flounce ostentatiously out of the courtroom, or turn around and try to communicate her disgust to the journalists sitting behind her. Her lawyer, Arthur Brown, tried to calm her down on numerous occasions, and once turned round while the court was in session and baldly told her to "shut up."

Catherine's first impression of Sharon was that she appeared to be "scared out of her wits," when she and the social worker, Lesley Morgan, brought the two children to the McInnis home in the early hours of February 8, 1985. The girls appeared frightened too, and Catherine noticed that Linda's whole body was trembling.

As soon as they had got in the door, Linda said she was hungry and asked for something to eat. She struck Catherine as being a bright, talkative little child, but she seemed, to her, to be as pale as a ghost, and her fair hair was as dry as straw. Catherine saw Janis's thin, sad face as being "the shape of a person sobbing." She noticed that both girls had a whiney way of talking. She said this disappeared within a few weeks of their coming to her home.

Sharon told her that the children were "hyper," and produced a bottle of medication prescribed for Linda, who she said had a chronic bladder and kidney infection, and would wet constantly. She warned

Catherine that she would have "little puddles," and that Linda would wake at night and scream in her sleep. Sharon hugged the children, and told them they would be coming home soon, explaining that she had "some problems with Gary that I need to sort out."

As they left that evening, Lesley Morgan noted Sharon's comment to her that she felt good about leaving the children with Mrs. McInnis, because she seemed to be a very caring, motherly person.

The foster mother began to suspect that there was something seriously wrong with the girls soon after their mother left. She felt that both children smelled bad, and decided that, even though it was late, she had to give them a bath before putting them to bed. Catherine said she noticed a sexual odor on Janis. She told the court: "It was clear to me that someone had ejaculated on her since she was last bathed."

As Catherine bathed them, the children cried and screamed, she said, displaying "unbelievable stark terror." Their vaginas were both inflamed, and they both complained that they had sore bums. Then, when she tucked them in bed, Janis held the sheet up to her neck, and had a wild look in her eyes, as if she was scared to death, Catherine said.

Several weeks later the children would tell Catherine that they had been scared when they first came to her home because they assumed that someone was going to abuse them. Catherine testified that Janis told her "she thought everybody would do all those bad things to her all over again. She thought it would be worse even than at home." It took a long time for the girls to realize that they had nothing to fear from Catherine, her quiet retiring husband and their grown-up daughters, Grace and Mary.

Grace McInnis subsequently testified at the hearing and described how Janis and Linda appeared during their first few days in the home. "They appeared terror-stricken the day after they first arrived," she said. "Janis was always looking over her shoulder, always whispering, always scared of somebody else hearing. If someone else came in the room, she would stop talking. And Linda had this strange stare, a really long stare. It wasn't like any stare I've ever seen from any of the other children in the house."

Grace was a student and did not spend a lot of time at home. Her older sister Mary was there even less. They both saw enough of Janis and Linda to be able to describe their behavior in testimony before the court. They both overheard some of the extraordinary disclosures that the girls made to Catherine and were therefore able to corroborate these in court. But they did not spend much time with Janis and Linda, and it was only with Catherine that the children developed a close, trusting relationship.

Two days after Janis and Linda came to her house, Catherine phoned Ms. Morgan, the social worker, to tell her some of the things she had noticed about the girls. She told the social worker that she had "a funny feeling about these children." Catherine had not known Ms. Morgan before she took Janis and Linda into her home, but they quickly developed a good relationship, based on their shared concern for the children. Ms. Morgan asked Catherine to keep detailed notes on what the children said and inform her if there were any further indications that the girls might have been molested or ill-treated.

Keeping notes was something that Catherine always did, as a matter of routine. All her life she had been in the habit of writing little notes to herself. Whenever her foster children said anything that seemed important or interesting, Catherine would jot it down right away on a scrap of paper, a grocery bag or an old envelope, whatever was handy. Later on she would transcribe these jottings into a notebook. Usually all her notes on any one foster child would not fill more than a page or two of her notebook. She didn't dream, when she started a new book for Janis and Linda, that four months later, she would have filled nearly 200 pages with her observations and notes of things they said.

For the first two weeks she had nothing particular to report. She was getting to know the two children, slowly winning their trust. It was obvious they were far from happy. Although they had seemed to be undernourished when they arrived, the children seemed to have little zest for the good meals Catherine provided, and would sometimes refuse to eat meat. Catherine did not press them about finishing their meals as she might have with other children. She sensed that these girls needed a lot of patience, understanding and love.

While Linda was naturally chatty and would go on all day about this and that, she would sometimes become totally disconnected and sit staring intently at nothing for long periods of time. She continued to shake a lot and wet her bed a few times at night, but she stopped wetting during the day as soon as she came to Catherine's house. At first Janis was extremely withdrawn and sullen, but she gradually began to open up to Catherine. She told the foster mother one night about the "terrible dream" she had when she was in Toronto. It was very scary, she said, and after that they moved to Hamilton, where Gary found them "a terrific place, with no bugs and no holes in the walls."

When Sharon came to take them out on the Sunday of the first week that they were in the foster home, Linda cringed and said she didn't want to go with Gary. Both girls said that they didn't like Gary, but Sharon reminded them that they did.

One evening, after the children had been with Catherine for about two weeks, she said Linda informed her, quite out of the blue, "Gary puts his finger where the pee comes out."

Catherine said the child dropped down on the floor and spread her legs. "I lay down like this, and he puts his finger and wiggles it, and I scream. He does it to Janis too," Linda said, and then lowered her voice, as she added, "You don't tell people you know. He thumps the wall when he has finished."

The next day Linda talked to the foster mother again about Gary sticking his finger in her. She said it would happen on her mother's bed: "Sometimes it hurts. Sometimes it tickles. Gary squeezes the thing he pees with, and then he pees into a towel."

Catherine told Linda she should tell her mother. Linda replied, "My mom knows. She was on the bed."

While Catherine immediately informed Ms. Morgan about this conversation, there was something else that Linda told her the same day that she did not mention. She had thought it was strange, and possibly important enough to make some note of, and jotted the child's words down on a paper bag. But what Linda said was so weird that Catherine found it difficult to deal with, and was afraid she would be ridiculed for taking it seriously.

"Elizabeth got dead. A killer got her. He had a knife. He was a killer," Linda said, as Catherine listened dumbfounded. "Me and Gary, and Mom and Janis and Elizabeth went for a drive. Elizabeth was sleeping. She went in the woods."

As Linda spoke, her usual breathless chattering pace slowed down slightly with apparent fear and bewilderment. Janis was frantically trying to get her to be quiet. Linda continued, "I think maybe she walked. Maybe Mom carried her. She was bad. Mom told us she touched things. Mom went in the trees. Gary and us waited in the car. Mom hurried back from the woods. Gary drived fast. Mom had blood on her finger. Mom was scared after a killer got Elizabeth. Mom said she opened her mouth. I guess her mouth opened when the killer got her."

On the IDA drug store bag, on which Catherine noted Linda's disclosure, she also wrote a note to herself: "Should I tell and be a fool, or be quiet and be a bigger one?"

She decided to put the bag away in a safe place, and not say anything more about it for the time being. It was not until two months later, when she had heard a great deal more from the children, that she became convinced that Linda's story about Elizabeth was not a tall tale or a fantasy, but a child's eye view of a real murder.

CHAPTER 5

CHILDREN INTERVIEWED AND MOTHER CONFRONTED

The Hamilton-Wentworth Children's Aid Society offices are housed in a brick building in a quiet, well-to-do residential district about half a mile from the center of the city. It is a homey-looking place, well-suited for such an agency. Lesley Morgan took the children there on March 1 for an interview with the society's sexual abuse specialist, Tricia Donnelly.

They were introduced to Ms. Donnelly in a playroom, where there were toys, dolls and materials for drawing and painting. The room had a two-way mirror, so that observers behind the mirror could watch the interview. Children felt at ease with Ms. Donnelly. She seemed like a really nice, warm lady, who knew how to talk to kids and liked to play games with them. From an adult's perspective, she appeared a little nervous, reserved and cerebral. She was a very neat, carefully dressed, energetic young woman. She seemed scarcely old enough to be an expert, but had interviewed more than 600 sexually abused children.

The children also met Sergeant David Broom of the Hamilton-Wentworth Regional Police. Ms. Donnelly had asked him to sit in on the interview, as this would help to reduce the number of times the children might have to tell their story, if it turned out this was a case of sexual abuse.

Sgt. Broom was a tall, burly man with a pleasant manner. He sat in a corner of the room, while the specialist interviewed each of the children in turn. The interview was recorded and a transcript of this recording was entered as evidence at the hearing. Linda, whom they saw first, struck them as being a chatty and intelligent child, who showed no fear of being there with these two strange adults. When Ms. Donnelly asked her if she knew Gary, Linda said she did. But she said "Yes" a little more hesitantly when the woman asked if she liked the man. Then she asked the child to tell her about Gary, and Linda said, "No."

"Why?" Ms. Donnelly asked.

"It's bad," Linda replied, and after a poignant pause, she added, "If I tell, Gary's going to spank me."

Ms. Donnelly assured the child that she was safe, and that no one was going to hurt her. She gave the children some dolls to play with. These looked like soft, Raggedy Ann dolls, but they were what are known as Anatomically Correct dolls, which, when undressed, reveal a simplified fascsimile of male and female anatomy. They are widely used in the field of child abuse to assist young children in disclosing sexual assaults. Linda was immediately intrigued by the four dolls—an adult and a child of each sex.

Demonstrating with the dolls, Linda said that Gary "sticks his finger in my pee-hole. It hurts. I don't like it. He does it to Janis too."

Linda gave a few more details, played for a while, and then said, "Mom and Gary suck Janis and me. Sometimes we have to suck each other. Do you want to hear another funny thing?"

"Okay," said Ms. Donnelly.

"I stick my finger in Janis, and she sticks her finger in my pee-hole."

Ms. Donnelly asked, "How did you learn that?"

"Mom taught us how to do it."

"Do what?" asked Ms. Donnelly, anxious to insure that there was no misunderstanding.

"Mom taught us to put our fingers between our own legs," said the child, and then added, putting her mouth to the doll's vagina, "I suck Mommy's pee-hole."

The child continued to talk and play for about an hour, disclosing a few further details similar to those she had already told her foster mother. As Ms. Donnelly was taking her out of the playroom to rejoin Lesley, the child soiled her pants.

Arthur Brown, the mother's lawyer, would later argue that this and other interviews that Tricia Donnelly conducted involved a lot of prompting and prodding of the children. But Judge Beckett said he was very impressed with the way the social worker conducted the interviews and did not accept the lawyer's submission, especially as the lawyer said he was unable to provide specific examples of any leading questions that Ms. Donnelly had asked.

Ms. Donnelly was dealing well with a difficulty that faces anyone interviewing an allegedly abused child. Children seldom find it easy to make such allegations, particularly against their own parents, and therefore require constant reassurance. They are also easily distracted and need to be kept on track by persistent, gentle questioning. The use of visual aids, such as dolls and other toys, while facilitating this process of disclosure, also leaves the interviewer open to charges that she has been encouraging the child to fantasize.

Ms. Donnelly told the court that it is very rare for a child to lie or fantasize about being sexually abused by her own parent, and that in the 600 cases she had seen, she had never encountered such a phenomenon. She said the accompanying physical symptoms of distress served to reinforce her belief that Linda was telling the truth. Police officers and defense lawyers would distort this statement, and other similar assertions by psychiatrists, into the patently absurd proposition that "Children never lie."

The interview with Janis produced fewer disclosures than her younger sister had made, but was very revealing. The child appeared to be very nervous, and would glance anxiously around the room. Ms. Donnelly found her a very easy child to play with. She thought she was intelligent, and drew pictures well and very meticulously.

When she asked Janis about her mother and Gary, Janis said, "I'm afraid," but said she couldn't tell why.

Ms. Donnelly said that the dolls might help her tell about her mom and Gary. Janis responded to this suggestion by asking if the dolls' clothes came off. Then she demonstrated the dolls putting fingers in one another and the two adult dolls having intercourse. Ms. Donnelly asked if there was anything else, and the child said she was afraid to talk any more. Ms. Donnelly asked her what would happen if she talked. Janis began sobbing uncontrollably, and said, "I'll die, I'll die."

Sgt. Broom agreed with Ms. Donnelly that there appeared to be little doubt that the children had been sexually assaulted. Ms. Donnelly advised Lesley Morgan not to bring the subject up with the children, but said she suspected that more details of abuse would emerge later. She said that there is a generally recognized pattern in children's disclosure of abuse. They start by talking about some relatively minor instance of molestation. Then, if they meet with an understanding response from the adults to whom they make the disclosure, they begin to make progressively more detailed and more serious allegations. Critics of this theory maintain that this is because the receptive adult is feeding the child's fantasies and encouraging her to fabricate more and more.

When the girls returned to the foster home that day, Janis appeared to be in a state of panic. Catherine overheard her tell her younger sister, "Linda, you talk too much. You tell everything. I'll tell Mom. You don't tell on Mom. You just tell on Gary."

Linda interjected, "Gary did it to us."

"With the finger. Shut up," said Janis.

"Well, Mom does it too," Linda insisted, as Janis continued her attempts at silencing her with warnings that their mom was going to be mad. Linda was shaking uncontrollably. When she noticed that Catherine had slipped into the room during their argument, she crawled on to her lap and cried frantically for a long time, eventually falling into an exhausted sleep on the floor.

It was on the following day, March 2, that the children's mother was questioned about their allegations. Lesley had told her to come to the CAS offices, and Sharon thought they would be making arrangements for her to get the girls back. Instead she was confronted with another social worker and a big policeman.

Sgt. Broom noted that Mrs. Wells reacted to the allegations with dramatic swings in mood. He said she paced up and down, threatening to sue the CAS, then looked up at the ceiling and said, "God, why me?" He also quoted the mother as saying: "I knew it would come to this. To a point where I would get hurt. Okay, it did happen. I swore it would never happen to my kids."

The sergeant noted that Sharon asked him if the children said she put her finger in them. He was curious about this because he had not mentioned that allegation to her. When he asked why her child would say she was afraid she would die, Sharon began screaming hysterically, "I don't know. Keep my kids. I don't care."

While the policeman and the two social workers were stunned by the force of her hysteria, Sharon suddenly bolted from the office and ran out of the agency, screaming. Ms. Morgan, Ms. Donnelly and Sgt. Broom were slow to follow, and, by the time they did, Sharon had disappeared from sight. They spent about 20 minutes looking for her. Sharon later said she had thought about throwing herself under a bus, but then decided to return to the agency. Ms. Morgan found her there, took her back into the interview room and talked with her for a long time, while Ms. Donnelly and Sgt. Broom monitored part of the conversation through the two-way mirror.

Ms. Donnelly later described watching the distraught mother engrossed in a discussion of her own childhood, sitting with her hands crossed over her abdomen, as if she was physically experiencing pain. She said the mother also told Lesley about her violent marriage, and her good relationship with Gary, whom she described as a virgin.

Sharon said she would charge the foster mother with defamation of character. She asked if there was enough evidence for charges against herself. Then she said, "I'll charge everyone. It will cost, but I don't care. I won't get caught. I don't believe it. If my girls have been sexually assaulted, it happened in foster care. I truly believe that.

"I'm not two people. I'm one. I don't have two personalities.

Gary sometimes thinks I have," she told Lesley. "I feel like you don't do your job right. I shouldn't have trusted you so much. It's not easy to prove you're innocent.

"Why am I the victim and accused? How can I be both the victim and the accused? They don't teach you to defend yourself against that at the Rape Crisis Centre. I can't fight my kids in court. My kids have accused me of sex-abusing them. I remember the first time they saw me put a Kotex on. Now they fight to see who will pull the paper off. I need to see the kids to tell them the truth."

Sgt. Broom compared notes with Ms. Donnelly, and concluded that, while Sharon's statements were strange and suggestive, there was nothing that she had said that constituted an admission of guilt. He found out from Sharon that Gary was working out of town, but was expected at her home at about seven o'clock that evening. Sharon was allowed to return home, and the sergeant waited outside her house for Gary.

However, when the boyfriend had not shown up by 7:30 P.M., Sgt. Broom decided to go home, since his shift was over. He did not get another officer to wait and interview Gary.

This was the first of many indications that this was not a high priority case for the Hamilton police. The failure to interview the main alleged perpetrator at the earliest opportunity, and before his alleged partner-in-crime had a chance to warn him of the allegations, was the first item on what proved to be a long list of police mistakes or omissions. These later served to discredit the police investigation and made it impossible for any court to ever find out the complete truth behind the children's allegations.

Sgt. Broom returned to Sharon's house the next morning, but she would not let him in until she had cleared papers and other things from the floor, and put them in a garbage bag outside. He did not examine this garbage, as he did not have a search warrant. Once he was allowed inside, it did not seem to him that the cleanup had made much of an impression on the messy apartment. He spoke to Sharon and Gary, but they refused to discuss the allegations with him and both declined to submit to lie detector tests.

Later on the same day Sharon visited the children at the foster home. She assured them that they would be going home soon. She clearly wanted to talk to them alone, and, though Catherine was hovering around, would whisper to the girls and accompany them to the bathroom. As Sharon left, Catherine mentioned that she found Linda to be a "bright little thing," and the mother responded with a gesture towards Janis, saying, "She is a little slow. Not retarded. Just slow."

After the visit, Linda said, "We'll soon be going home."

"How can we be sure all that stuff won't happen to us again?" Janis asked her.

Linda replied, "Well, Mom and Gary will stop it. We're used to it now. I hate it when Gary . . ."

"You tell too much, Linda," interrupted Janis. "It's not our business what Mom and Gary do. They'll stop doing it maybe."

Linda said, "I like the treats they give us after they do it."

"What kind of treats?" Catherine asked.

"Lollipops and candy," said Linda.

"Sometimes we get money to go to the store," said Janis. "I like that 'cos I can choose the things that I like."

Later Catherine overheard a conversation between the children as they were getting ready for bed. Janis told Linda, "It's Mom's fault we're in a foster home. But Catherine is nice, eh?"

"Yeah, Jan, nobody hurts us here," replied Linda, who went on to talk about her mother fondling her "regina." She said, "It's so crazy. I don't like it."

"Nobody likes it. But we got to like it, because Mom gets angry if we cry," responded Janis.

Mrs. Wells came by again two days later, frantic to talk to the children. She took them outside and whispered to them urgently.

At bedtime Janis said to Catherine, "You know those things we told you this morning. They were just a dream. I told you it was true, but it was a dream. I'll get a licking for telling that stuff."

Linda responded indignantly, "Really. A dream, eh, Jan. It's true. I don't tell lies, Jan. It's crazy but it's true."

Janis said, "I shouldn't say that stuff. Mom is going to give me a licking. Somebody will tell Mom I told."

The next day Linda again came out with a disturbing disclosure, and Janis again tried to silence her. Linda pointed to a little battery-powered "Glow Bug" night-light, and told Catherine, "Mom has a thing like a little knife with batteries. They stick it in, and sometimes it gets poo on it. They stick it in everyone."

Janis, who was playing on the stairs, said, "Shut up, Lin. She's making up stories, Catherine."

Janis herself later talked about what apparently was a vibrator. She told Catherine: "Mom did all those bad things to us before we even knew Gary. They put that banana thing with batteries way up in my vagina. Sometimes I would scream and they would put a towel in my mouth. Gary didn't live with us then. She put it in my bum too. It moves up and down, and in and out, and it shivers. It has batteries in it, and it hurts.

"I'm so scared of it. It's terrible. Your house is so different. I can't believe how people are in this house. It's so safe. Why did Mom hurt me so much? It hurt to sit down. It hurt to walk. I was so sore and so tired."

"Couldn't you rest when you were finished?" Catherine asked.

"But you're never finished," Janis replied. "Everyone's so nice here. How come you are all so nice?"

The two children completely reversed their previous roles when they went for their second interviews with Tricia Donnelly on March 7, 1985, six days after their first meeting with the child abuse specialist. Janis was forthcoming about disclosing abuse, while Linda was evasive. Ms. Donnelly was not particularly surprised by Linda's lack of co-operation, as it is quite a normal phenomenon for children to become scared by the enormity of the allegations they have made, and the response of their parents. Linda told Ms. Donnelly her mother would spank her if she told about Mom's and Gary's secrets.

Ms. Donnelly later explained to the court about a mechanism known as the accommodation syndrome; this is when sexually abused children usually deal with their own feelings of fear, guilt and helplessness by keeping the abuse secret. According to this theory, the child will accommodate her abuse as a part of her normal experience, and only disclose what has happened to her when she feels safe and secure in a different environment. Because her feelings of fear and guilt have become incorporated into her view of the world, the theory states, she is likely to become frightened after making the disclosure, and will then try to deny or retract it. Child abuse experts often cite this theory in court in order to indicate that delayed disclosures and retractions need not necessarily be seen as discrediting children's stories, as they would in the case of adult victims of sexual assaults.

As soon as Janis saw Ms. Donnelly, she said she wanted to talk because "Mom needs help." When the social worker asked what her mother needed help with, Janis said, "Not to do what she's been doing to me and Linda. We should talk, because we have to get Mom better."

She used the dolls to show Ms. Donnelly all the things that Linda had already described to Catherine. Sometimes she questioned whether she should be saying all this, and Ms. Donnelly reassured her that it was a good thing to do. The child said it was hard to tell, and that if she told all it would take until the next morning. After a while she very proudly told Ms. Donnelly that she felt better, and that she was now able to talk without having the dolls to help her.

"I'll tell you something that's very, very sad," said Janis. "It is very sad about my mom and Gary, and what they do to us."

The children's second interview with the child abuse specialist reinforced a decision that the Children's Aid Society had made a day or two earlier. On March 6, 1985, Janis and Linda were officially "apprehended" by the CAS. Though nothing was actually done that made the children aware of what was going on, this involved initiating court proceedings to have the girls declared "in need of protection" under the *Child Welfare Act*. The CAS obtained an interim court order allowing them to keep the children in foster care pending further hearings. Janis and Linda were told that they would be staying with Catherine for a while longer.

One night as Linda was getting ready for bed, Catherine heard the child singing a sad, tuneless song to herself, with these rambling, improvised lyrics: "I'm getting ready for bed. Nobody can hurt me here. Mommy loves me, but she sticks her fingers in us. And we're going home some day. But she can't hurt me now. I'm getting ready for bed. Nobody hurts us here. We can't go home now, because the boss said, No. I mean the court said, No."

CHAPTER 6

PORNOGRAPHY ALLEGATIONS BEGIN

The children were beginning to look healthier than when they first came into foster care. Linda was still nervous and hyperactive, while Janis was very quiet and often withdrawn. However, Janis appeared to Catherine to have changed significantly from the woebegone little waif who arrived at the foster home six weeks earlier. Catherine observed that she was now beginning to be happy, and had rosy cheeks, while before she had appeared so preoccupied that she seemed to be falling apart at the seams, and so withdrawn that she was "almost like a little robot."

The foster mother had established a warm relationship with the two girls, who felt comfortable about telling her things that they would not disclose to anyone else. Catherine facilitated these disclosures by making an effort to hide her horror and disgust at what she heard, and by not asking questions. As she explained in court, in words that could well be quoted in any manual on child-interviewing techniques, "You know how children are, if they are talking and you ask them something: they just stop talking, or start telling you stories."

Catherine said that from time to time the children would tell her never to tell anyone about what happened in their house, "that it's a secret, not people's affairs, and I must not tell. I must button my lips, and keep it quiet. They just want me to know. I must be quiet so Gary and Mom never find out that they told me. They say Dad would really be mad, if he found out. He would be mad at Mom. He would be mad enough to kill Gary."

The girls did repeat some of what they told Catherine to Ms. Morgan, whom the foster mother frequently invited to the house to discuss the horrible things the children had been saying, or simply to see the terrified state that the girls got into when they made some of their disclosures. Catherine explained to the court that the looks on the children's faces were often so painful that "I used to call the CAS, and say 'I want somebody else to come and see this. I don't want to be the only one to see this kind of thing.' "

There were disturbing indications that the prematurely sexualized Janis was beginning to victimize her younger sister. Catherine had noticed the children on a few occasions rubbing tummies and touching one another in ways that she considered too familiar and altogether inappropriate. Then one night she caught Janis in bed with Linda trying to put her hands between the younger child's legs, while Linda struggled to fend her off. Linda looked relieved when she saw Catherine and complained, "Janis is trying to put her finger in me."

Catherine told Janis not to do things like that again, and warned that, if anyone found out she tried to molest her sister, they would think it was weird and other children wouldn't like her. Linda corrected her on that, and said that it's okay sometimes to put your fingers in your friends. Janis told Catherine that other people still like you if you stick your fingers in them, and mentioned that she had stuck her fingers in some of her friends.

"If I wrote with both hands, I couldn't write it all down," Catherine noted in the diary, which catalogued the children's ever more startling allegations of abuse. Catherine explained to the court that all she had done in her 200 pages of notes was to write down each new thing the children told her, and record conversations that she felt were particularly significant. The children would go over and over the same ground in their discussions, so that all these "gross things" were a constant topic of conversation in her home.

The next ugly revelation came while they were watching television one evening. "I couldn't believe my ears," Mrs. McInnis told the court, as she described how Linda told her: "At my house, I saw myself on TV, with Mom putting her finger in me. And I saw Janis like that too. I saw Gary putting his finger in Janis, and Gary and Mom and everyone doing those things."

The child shivered and shook, Catherine said, as she described how they would use a tape and a thing like a tape recorder, "and when they put the tape in, you see Mom putting her finger in me and Janis."

The girls were due to visit their father, who had just been informed that the children were in foster care, and he had been granted access to them. Janis and Linda warned each other not to tell their dad about what they had been saying. When they returned from this visit, Linda told Catherine, "Dad has a knife."

"I guess it's to kill people," said Janis.

"He held it to Mom's neck once," said Linda. "He doesn't hurt us. He doesn't hurt kids, you know."

Linda went to bed complaining of such a terrible headache that she felt her head would fall off. Then the following day she said something so awful that, Catherine said, "I was shocked right out of my shoes."

"When we are on TV, we don't wear any clothes. They put the bird in me. A real bird with real wings. You know, wings. They put a Kleenex over its head. It was black. They put it in me and Janis. We cried, and they took it out. It hurt. They threw it away after," Linda said.

Catherine said that as Linda was saying this, she noticed on Janis's face "a look of horror that I don't know any words to describe."

In the evening Catherine overheard the children discussing the bird. She heard Linda say, "When they put it in you, you screamed more than me," to which Janis replied, "I really screamed when it was dead, when I knew it was dead."

"It looked awful hanging down between my legs," said Linda.

"It was a dream, Linda. It was only a dream. I thought it was true, but it was only a dream. I'm telling Mom you talked. It's a secret. It's a dream. I dreamed all of that. I'm telling Mom you talked to Catherine. I'm telling Mom that Catherine knows about the bird. I mean that Catherine knows about the dream."

Catherine said the subject of the bird kept coming up in the children's conversation, as they were reminded of it by such things as seeing a bird on television, or in a comic book. She told the court, "The look of agony on the children's faces, when they talked about the bird, is written on my brain in indelible ink. The faces reminded me of pictures I've seen of people who went through the holocaust."

Catherine did also have some ordinary times with the girls, when she felt a great relief that they could for a while just play "I Spy" or "Snakes and Ladders," or listen quietly to a story. But this relief was always mixed with apprehension, as the smallest thing would suddenly spark some traumatic memory. Often they would be playing an innocent game or having a quiet chat, and Catherine would find herself ambushed by a monster that would crawl out of these little girls' consciousness.

Linda would suddenly remember details like how Gary once put "his thing" in her mouth, and it went in too far, and she was sick. Such comments would trigger similar memories in Janis, who said on this occasion that she hated it when the "pee" came in her mouth, because it tasted awful.

Catherine's daughter told the court how, on one occasion, "Mom made salad for lunch with an oil and vinegar dressing. Linda said she wasn't going to eat that, because it looked like the stuff she had to eat off Gary's pee thing. Sometimes it got stuck in the hole."

It was spontaneous statements such as this, in which a preschool-age child displayed a precise knowledge of male anatomy and perverse sexual practices, that would later convince psychiatrists and others of the truth of the children's allegations. The psychiatrists found the descriptions more convincing because of the language that the girls used, and the fact that they would display such natural child-like misconceptions as the notion that what comes from a man's "pee thing" must always be "pee."

There was a tense atmosphere in the small courtroom as everyone present struggled with their painful responses to these disclosures—none more so than Judge Beckett, who watched Mrs.

McInnis intently during her testimony, with a grim expression, bowing his head often and wiping beads of perspiration from his wide forehead. Although the foster mother was displaying no squeamishness about describing the children's words and the gross abuse they had related to her, she did not attempt to disguise her disgust and indignation. There were tears in her voice as she recalled the horror of hearing every day in her own home the girls' continual disclosures of violence and depravity.

One could have heard a pin drop in the court, and one could scarcely imagine what it would have been like in Catherine's living room, when the children's allegations that they were forced to eat feces and drink urine were discussed. As Catherine described it, Linda had abruptly introduced the topic one day by saying, "The subject is that we ate poo."

"I thought my ears were deceiving me. But I knew by the look of her that they weren't," said Catherine, as she referred to her notes in order to relate the subsequent conversation.

"You ate what?" Catherine had asked.

"We ate poo," said Linda.

"Not me," Janis interjected.

"Oh yes you did. You ate poo," Linda replied.

"I forgot. Remember when Mom put it outside to get cold, to get ice on it."

"Yes, and she fed it to me, and it was terrible."

"It's worse when it's hot," said Janis.

"You ate it hot, but Mom fed you part of the poo with ice on it. I wiped it off my teeth with a towel. Gary got me a towel. It sticks to the teeth you know," said Linda.

She said Linda told her, "When Mom made the poo ice in the back yard, she asked Gary to go get it and he wouldn't go. Mom said, 'You fucking bitch ass,' and she went out to get the poo cup. Gary hid Jan and me in the closet."

Catherine apparently felt, from what the girls told her, that this little scene was, perhaps, part of the scenario of a pornographic video in which the children were unwittingly participating. She saw that, in this context, Gary's display of concern for the girls could just have been part of the script. She inserted an editorial comment into her notes: "Somebody was taking pictures of these things, so even the things that seemed kind were brutal."

In making this comment, Catherine showed a natural understanding of a point that has been made by experts in the field of child pornography. The use of children in making pornography is a form of molestation, over and above any sexual abuse that is inflicted on the children at the same time. Researchers have noted that victims often show more distress over the fact that they were used for pornography than over the sexual indignities that they were subjected to while the pornography was made. While a victim can tell herself that the abuse she has suffered is over and done with, she knows that the frozen image of that abuse, in a photograph, film or video, might remain in circulation for years to come. Examples have been cited of teenagers committing robberies in order to recover pornographic pictures of themselves that had been taken by abusers years before.

Although Janis and Linda were too young to have that kind of sophisticated understanding, they did draw these things to Catherine's attention frequently enough to give one the impression that they were, in some way, deeply disturbed by this objective consideration of their abuse.

Resuming her account of the children's disclosures, Catherine said Linda went on to say, "If we don't eat it, she rubs it on our face and hair. Gary doesn't like it. He takes us and gives us a bath. It got all over the tub. Mom gives us pee sometimes."

"I had to drink the pee out of a beer bottle," Janis then told Catherine, who asked her how she knew it was pee, to which Janis responded, "You know by the smell. Mom worried about us crying, because there were people living upstairs, and she put a towel in my mouth."

"At home we eat supper, and then it's always this stuff," said Linda. "I try to run away, but the walls stop me. But we get treats afterwards."

In their frequent references to treats they received after suffering abuse, the children were echoing their own mother's account of her childhood experiences, as well as the reports of a large proportion of the victims of child pornography and sex rings. Children, who are used by adults for sex and pornography, are given money, presents or treats, not only as a reward, which might buy their silence and compliance, but also as an instrument of psychological blackmail—they will feel guilty about collaborating with their abusers, and therefore more reluctant to tell anyone.

A few days later Linda asked Catherine, "Why does Mom tell us it's not true? Mom knows it's true. She's not telling the truth." And, as Catherine recounted this to the court, she exclaimed, "I felt I should tell those suffering little things 'I do believe what you say!' "

Catherine said that Janis used to get very scared when she made these disclosures, and would look behind doors and drapes, and open cupboards to make sure nobody was there: "I thought it was the limit when she opened up the fridge door to see that there was nobody listening who might tell her mother.

"I told them it would never happen here, and it shouldn't happen anywhere. I told them, if it did, they should tell a teacher, the CAS, a Sunday School teacher, the police. I don't know why I told them that, because when I told the police, they wouldn't listen. They didn't believe it," Catherine told the court indignantly.

The note for April 12 read, "The children were having fun today. They played. But, when we went outside they talked about the bird. The story was always the same, almost always word-for-word."

Then, two days later, the foster mother wrote, "It was a quiet day. The girls played school and house. It was unusual that they wouldn't be revealing some dreadful thing that I hadn't heard before." She told the court, "Every day I thought, 'There is nothing more. I have heard the worst.' But there would be more horrors."

Shortly after Janis left for school the next morning, she appeared banging and screaming at the front door. She told Catherine that a car had stopped and someone offered her some candy. Catherine observed that, "If there had been a tiger after her, she couldn't have been more frightened."

For days after this Janis would not go to school alone, and talked constantly about the orange car. Catherine was convinced that Janis knew somebody in the car and that she tried several times to talk about it, but something would stop her. The child told her, "They're going to kill me. I am scared they're going to kill me."

"It was worse than I wanted to absorb somehow," said Catherine as she described more things the children told her about vibrators, bananas stuck in their bum, fruit and a red jelly that they had to lick off their mother's body, and some "red stuff" their mother and Gary put on themselves, that appeared to be different from the red jelly.

"Sometimes Mom puts jelly on her bum, or in her pee-hole, and I get to suck it off," said Linda. "Your Jell-O is good, Catherine, but Mom's jelly looks like pee."

Catherine said she stupidly responded to this by saying, "I see," to which Linda rejoined, "No, you don't see, Catherine. I see. Gary bought me a little flashlight. It's mine, and I get to look up Mom's pee-hole with it and her bum."

For all her horror and disgust at what the girls were telling her, one got a sense from listening to Catherine McInnis's testimony that she really liked these children, that she admired Linda's irrepressible spirit, and loved Janis for her gentleness. The humanity that Catherine displayed in her concern for the children was one of the few elements that gave some solace to those who had to listen to her testimony.

Catherine cried on the witness stand when she had to relate an incident in which the children displayed cruelty to one another. She described how Linda told her, "Mom holds Janis's legs, and I put the battery thing in Janis's poo-hole, and she cries."

"I put in my notes that I have a strong stomach, but I felt sick. Linda kept laughing as she was telling me this story. I felt I had to say something to her. I said, 'You have no right to hurt Janis. It's a dreadful thing to hurt another person, more dreadful to hurt your sister.' Linda said, 'Well, I like watching what they do to Janis.' I said, 'It's not fun, Linda. It's cruel and mean.' Linda said, 'When they've finished, I wipe it off and Mom puts it in the cupboard. I have poo on my hands, and I have to wash them. Then we got a treat. We always get treats.'

"I called the CAS and asked to speak to Lesley. She wasn't there, and that was a good thing. I had reached the end of my rope. I couldn't listen to any more of it, and I was going to ask them to move the children. Then I thought better of it. Just a flash in the pan. I wasn't angry with the children."

Catherine McInnis was finding the situation increasingly hard to accept, and, in their own way, so were the children. Janis and Linda were becoming more urgent in their desire to tell all that happened to them and to have something done about it. Their stay in Catherine's comfortable, normal home had made them realize how much abnormality there was in their previous environment. And Catherine had been telling them that the police and other authorities are meant to stop people treating children so badly. The social workers had explained to them that perhaps their mother was sick, and that by talking about what happened, they could help make their mother better; they could help her to stop harming them, so that they might be able to go back home.

But Linda conceived a more radical solution to their problems. "I wish Dad was a killer, because I want him to kill Gary," she said one day. "He has a knife; I want him to cut Gary's neck. I hate Gary. I want Dad to kill him. Gary puts his fingers in me. I don't want him at my house. I want him out of there."

In relating this conversation, Catherine observed that Linda "had a terrible look on her face. It wasn't just idle chatter. She meant business."

Janis, who had previously been the more reluctant of the two children to talk about what had happened in her home, suddenly launched into a detailed description of what appeared to be pornographic moviemaking sessions. She talked about licking the red jelly and peanut butter off Gary for the TV. She said, "I hate licking Gary's pee thing and all that. I cry, and everybody laughs. I can't remember where the place is. We go there at night. We go to bed, and then get up and go in a car to that place. They laugh. They say 'Channel something TV.' Sometimes we're bare. Sometimes we have some clothes on. They laugh. They have a camera. Mom and Gary and us do these awful things. I cry, and Linda screams, and they take our pictures. And then, after, later at home or at that place, we see all the things we did on TV.

"There is a couch there, and some women and men taking pictures," the child continued. "The next day, it's the same thing. We are hurt again. We both get the fingers and the battery thing. They hurt us, but then they give us lots of treats, and we hold hands and we sing songs. We hold hands, and sing songs, and dance round and round, one leg up and one down. Pictures are taken of everything. Then we go to sleep. Lots of times they wake us at night, and we go to this place for pictures, and we can be on TV. A man talks like in the movies."

Catherine listened to this monologue in silence, and noted down Janis's words soon afterwards, while they were still fresh in her mind. She believed that here, as elsewhere in her notes, she recorded what the children were saying as accurately as possible. She tried to recall all the details, as she felt these might be helpful in investigating Janis's allegations. She explained to the court, "She talked about so much. I couldn't remember it all. But I marked down what I could remember accurately and exactly."

Janis said, "Then we hold hands, and we sing again, twirling and spinning. And then they get the battery thing out. Catherine, it's awful."

"Janis was so eager to talk," Catherine told the court. "But I felt ill, and I couldn't listen another minute. It had to be pretty bad because I'm strong. I went for fresh air. When I came back, she didn't want to say any more. She said, 'Don't tell anyone. It's a secret. It's an ugly secret.'"

Catherine said the child then told her, "You are sweet. You have pretty hands." The foster mother told the court, "I thought, that's strange because I have working hands. I take care of my kids, not my hands."

The next morning Janis told Catherine, "I know where that place is, I think. There is an '11' on the building. I think it's white with some colors."

As Janis described the building and the square sign outside it, Catherine thought she must referring to a CHCH-TV Channel 11 studio in Hamilton, which did have a white sign with a number 11 on it, and a flower-shaped colored logo.

Catherine said the children described "naked bodies and people doing every mortal perverted thing I ever heard tell of, and a lot I didn't." She said she wrote in her diary, "Could there be corruption in high places?" But she hastened to add that this was just her own observation.

She recorded in her notes, "Janis said that the people took all their clothes off. But one man was more modest, because he left his socks on. They were all laughing."

The children drew pictures of the room at Channel 11, describing little mats on the floor, a couch, a camera on a stand with crooked legs, lights hanging on wires. Janis said that, when they were taken there at night, they would go in and turn to the right.

Sgt. David Bowen, the senior investigating officer on the case, later testified, "I was shown Catherine McInnis's notes with the drawings of crosswires over a lamp and mats. I was satisfied those diagrams seemed to reflect portions of the [Channel 11] building. I didn't understand what they meant, until I went in the building. There were spotlights with very thin wires, and a large number of mats shoved up against each other. I accepted that these diagrams showed the inside of the building."

A television company executive later confirmed that if you enter the [Channel 11] building by a side door, you have to turn to the right in order to get to the studio.

Janis told Lesley that her mother had burned down a house at the Channel 11 place. Police reports subsequently obtained by the CAS indicated that there had been a fire, a case of suspected arson, at a building next door to the studio, which was used to store costumes and property. Sgt. Bowen said he was never made aware of Janis's allegation about the fire.

The police began to conduct a surveillance operation at the studio, but soon abandoned it, when they believed that they had discovered that some subsequent allegations made by the children were untrue. Police received conflicting information about the level of security in place at the studio; it was only used occasionally by the television station for certain special productions. A 1984 signout list of people who had access to the studio had been destroyed in January

1985, and Sgt. Bowen was told by commissionaires who guarded the building, that the security was not very sound. But management representatives at the television station responded defensively to the suggestion that anyone could have used the studio for making pornographic movies. They convinced the police that the security was tight enough that no-one could possibly have gained unauthorized entry, and would have had to have great technical skill to operate the equipment.

Subsequent court testimony indicated that some of the equipment could have been operated easily by someone with some basic technical knowledge. It was not necessarily very difficult to beat the security system to gain unauthorized entry into the building. The television company later instituted new security measures as a result of the allegations.

Sgt. Bowen obtained photographs of some, but not all, of the television station employees who had access to the studio. He showed these to Janis, who was frightened and would not look at the pictures. Catherine asked him to go through the pictures with the child again more slowly, but he declined to do this. The Hamilton police also showed pictures of Janis and Linda to a Toronto police task force on pornography, and were told that these children had not appeared in any pornographic material seized by police in the Toronto area. The investigating officers gave no indication that they were aware that this was not a very significant finding, since professionally produced pornography is often sent abroad for processing, and sold in markets as far removed as possible from where it was originally produced.

Authorities in the United States have estimated that the child pornography business is worth from $2 billion to $3 billion a year, and involves more than one million children. The Canadian government's *Report on Sexual Offenses Against Children and Youths* concluded that there was no reliable evidence on the extent of the pornography trade in Canada. It found that detection mechanisms were beset with "crippling problems," but found that on the basis of evidence available, there appeared to be no commercial production of pornography within the country. However, the report warned that law enforcement agencies would soon face a situation of different proportions, with the increasing availability of videotape equipment facilitating the cheap and easy reproduction of child pornography.

The sophisticated nature of the child pornography trade can be seen from a description of how such material is circulated. A 1984 study of child pornography and sex rings stated: "The mail is a major facilitator for the circulation of child pornography. A laundering process is often used: buyers send their responses to another country; the mail received by the overseas forwarding agent is opened, and cash or checks are placed in a foreign bank account; the order is remailed under a different cover back to the United States. This procedure insures that the subscriber does not know where the operation originates, and law enforcement has difficulty tracing the operation."

The same study noted, "Few law enforcement agencies have investigators trained as child pornography investigators, and few of these agencies believe child pornography exists in their own cities or towns."[6]

Sgt. Bowen concluded, on the basis of what he and his partner had learned, that it was "completely impossible" that the pornographic sessions described by the children had taken place at the Channel 11 studio.

Catherine contacted Staff Sergeant John Gruhl. He was a friend, who said he looked upon Mrs. McInnis "as a pretty special person, because of all the children she has taken into the house and done what looked like miracles within the short time she had them."

She asked the staff sergeant to drive her and Janis past the Channel 11 studio. He agreed to do this and drove them by the studio three times, noting that on each occasion the child fell silent as they drove by. Catherine observed that the child "turned as red as blood, and I noticed something I'd never seen before, because she never perspires, a drop of sweat on her lips. She turned her head and glanced, and turned her head. At that time she didn't say anything about anything."

When they got home, Janis told Catherine, "I saw the place with the '11' and the flower." Catherine asked her why she had not told

Sgt. Gruhl, and Janis replied, "I thought he might take me in there. I thought he might drag me in there. Most people are bad. I thought he might be bad. I was scared."

CHAPTER 7

THE "FLORID" ALLEGATIONS

The children spent a weekend with their father at the beginning of May. After this visit Catherine McInnis began reporting a series of lurid and bizarre allegations of murder and ritual violence. A psychiatrist who subsequently examined the children described these as the "florid allegations"—a term that Judge Beckett later adopted in his final judgement.

It was plain to see, both from her notes and courtroom testimony, that the foster mother was shocked and frightened by these allegations. She had struggled with her own initial disbelief in what seemed to be preposterous stories, and then she became convinced that the children were telling the truth. She now had to struggle with the devastating emotional impact of hearing the girls' daily horror stories of sadistic violence. She also put her own credibility on the line by reporting these stories to skeptical people, whose first response would likely be to question her sanity. Under this stress her note-taking and reporting became more erratic, and her judgement less sound.

During the first two months that the girls had been in the foster home they had made a few references to children being killed, and talked about a strange character, whom they called "the Blob." While

Catherine had found the details about Elizabeth being killed disturbing enough to jot down on a paper bag, though not in her notebook, she had generally not paid much attention to such references. "I played them down in my mind," she said, surmising that "someone had told them stories."

The conversation that led Catherine to begin to take these strange stories seriously took place after she returned from attending a friend's funeral. She told the girls she was at a funeral, and Janis asked her who had been killed. She explained to the child that her friend had died, but had not been killed. She described what a funeral is and talked about going to a graveyard.

Janis picked up on the reference to a graveyard, and said, "That's where Gary and Mom buries the people he and Mom kill. He buries them in the woods. He kills them in the woods, and buries them in a graveyard. Mom kills the boys and Gary kills the girls."

"I said, 'That's sad. Were you sad?' " Catherine testified, quoting Janis's unexpected response to this question: "Sometimes, and sometimes not. Some of them were mean to me too. Sometimes I cried, or else I didn't care."

With a trembling voice, which frequently broke into tears or tones of outraged indignation, the foster mother launched into a detailed description of the girls' allegations about child murders and "sexual orgies with the dead and the living at the graveyard and in the woods.

"They break their hands before. They break them back like that," she said Janis told her, holding her right hand with her left and forcing it backwards with a violent gesture. "They rip their faces too. They rip the faces up. They rip the mouth all up.

"Sometimes the man from 11 is there. He takes pictures of how they do terrible things to the kids. Even when they are dead. They stick lots of big things in them, and they put them in the trunk of the car, and take them to the graveyard. There are stones there. They dig a hole and put them in."

The foster mother described how Janis held up ten fingers and said, "They killed that many that way."

In a somewhat disjointed series of notes, Catherine recorded how the child went on to tell her that some of the kids seemed to know they were going to be killed and were crying when they were in the woods, while others didn't know and were sleeping on the way to the graveyard. Sometimes they are choked, and at other times a knife is stuck in their neck, Janis said. From the child's description, this seemed to have taken place in late summer or autumn, as she spoke of leaves falling from the trees. She said everything was photographed. Catherine noted that when Janis told this, she had a look "of stark, unbelievable horror."

Janis referred to a place in Toronto, much like Channel 11, a place where pictures were taken and things done to children and other people. Janis named children who she thought had been killed. She told Catherine about seeing a dismembered hand on the ground. Sometimes, Janis said, she would have to take a child into the woods, pretending that they were going to play, and then her mother or Gary would kill the child. Catherine said Janis described people who had something stuck in their mouths, or a towel tied around their mouths. She said they would be tied up and would have things stuck in their pee-holes.

"I heard about this every day until they left and how they did terrible and awful things to them, and everything would be photographed," Catherine testified.

Catherine recorded in her notes: "Other children besides Linda and Janis were involved at Channel 11 place. Great baths, lots of people in tubs, lots of soap, lots of water splashing. Janis said both she and Linda were there when Elizabeth was killed. Janis said, 'Some were killed in Hamilton. Some are drived here, or go to Channel 11.' When they were in Toronto, it was a long drive to the woods and the graveyard. It seems by what she said, a number are buried in the same area."

Catherine said Janis snuggled up to her, her face a deep crimson, and told her, "I don't know if I feel well or not. I get so scared when I think about it."

In a conversation recorded in Catherine McInnis's notes, Linda asked Janis one morning to tell Catherine about her dream about a graveyard and a killer.

"I dreamed I was in the graveyard. Mom was sticking her fingers in me," said Janis.

"What graveyard? A real one?" Catherine asked.

"Yes, near the woods. A real graveyard where you bury people. It was terrible. I'm scared."

"Did you see the hand, Jan, did you see the cutoff hand?" Linda prompted.

"Oh, Linda!" Janis exclaimed.

"That's where Elizabeth is, our friend Elizabeth," said Linda. "She got dead by a killer."

Janis said, "Gary said he'd kill me if I told. They'll kill me if I tell. They said that."

"When you tell, the killer gets you," Linda confirmed. "Janis, did you see the hand at the graveyard? Did you see the woods in your dream? That's the killing place."

"Yeah, they tie them up and punch leaves in them, in the belly. They stick knives in them. They cut them. They stick big sticks in them. We have to do things too. I take them in the woods. The man from 11 is there, and so is the lady. Sometimes Mom goes back in Gary's car. Gary has a big shovel. Sometimes they cut the neck, ugh. They stick fingers in us too. They take pictures in the woods and the graveyard," said Janis.

She pointed towards her genital area and said, "They stick knives there too. They cut something off."

"What?" asked Catherine.

Janis and Linda did not answer. Janis told Catherine, "Well, they tear the face sometimes, and Mom likes to break their hands all up. Gary too."

"Elizabeth's mother knew. She went phew. She breathed in when she finded out that Elizabeth was killed," said Linda.

"The man from 11 helps Gary dig the graves. They use a flashlight," Janis said.

When Janis came home from school that evening, both children began to talk again about the same gruesome things. Janis said that parts are sometimes cut off dead children and stuck in her vagina. She tried to describe the graveyard, which, she said, had a crooked path and some kind of grating from which smoke or steam came out. Sometimes it seemed they could smell something off the smoke. She drew a picture of the grate. She told Catherine that you can see the word "Love" on the stones. She would spell it LVOE. She talked about a house in the woods, and two other houses nearby, one of which she thought was red brick with a blue roof. Catherine, who was trying to note down every detail that might lead investigators to the graveyard, also recorded that Janis mentioned the colors yellow and brown as she described the houses.

The notes record that Janis said the brown man and Gary dug graves, while someone else stayed in the car in case they had to get away in a hurry. If a car came or anybody came near, they had to grab their knives and run. There was a reference to a building with a hole in the floor. The children said that the brown man and Gary had cameras, and would use a flashlight, holding an umbrella to shield the light. They described stones shining in the moonlight. They said the graveyard was in the country, and spoke of "the dead place" as being up a little road near the graveyard, with a gate at the end. They said, "It's a home where little kids get killed. Not mothers, not fathers, just kids."

"They spoke of the Blob," Catherine read from her notes to the court. "The Blob is Gary's friend. He is huge, like a giant. The Blob comes from somewhere, when he hears screams. He almost got Janis and Linda before they came to Hamilton. Gary drove hard. Gary's friend wanted to kill them. If they tell, they will be killed. Afterwards the Blob and Gary and Mom were friends again. Linda laughed and sang, 'The Blob does not know where we live in Hamilton now. He doesn't know nothing now.'"

She said the girls told her something was stuffed in the mouths of the victims to stop them screaming, but sometimes you would hear a little mumble. Catherine said, "The children always had to take knives and stick them in whoever was being killed. If they didn't, they would be killed themselves. Both mentioned this numerous times."

Janis drew pictures of the graveyard and the two houses. These simplistic child's drawings showing stick people without some of their limbs were filed as exhibits with the court—eloquent testimony to the severe disturbance of these young children, who had not yet learned to read and write. Catherine testified that while doing one of these simple sketches, Janis told her: "There's ten kids, but I can't make ten kids crying."

Janis told the foster mother that there was a long way, and a shortcut from the parking lot to the graveyard, and if you went the long way, there were lots of holes. She said, "The long way is the sad way."

Catherine said the girls wanted to give her a full description of the houses near the graveyard, where children were killed, so she could "get lots of big men, and the police, and go there and knock them down."

Mrs. McInnis said she reported the girls' allegations to the police that day, and on many other occasions: "They believed that there was probably a little bit of diddling around, but the main things they did not believe." She said Sgt. Bowen once told her, "These poor children are fantasizing. It's beyond believing."

She said she told the sergeant, "It may be beyond believing, but it happened to these children."

The response of the police was a source of extreme frustration to Catherine. The two officers who were supposedly investigating the case never came to her house to talk to her, or to interview the children, and had not looked at her notes. They had apparently not followed up on the sexual abuse allegations, and indicated on several occasions that they did not believe the stories about pornography and murder.

Catherine had told Sgt. Bowen several times about a child called Andy, who the girls said used to live across the street from them and who was involved in the sessions at the television studio. They took no steps to locate this child. Eventually Catherine did her own little investigation by getting her daughter to drive Janis and herself down the street where the children used to live, and asking the child to point out Andy's house to her.

She described the police response to this: "I had called the police. I said, 'There's something terrible that has gone on with these children.' Sgt. Bowen said at one time that the children were fantasizing. I said, 'I'll take Janis myself, and find out where these people live.' Later I went into the police station and showed him my notes and the number of the house. I said to Sgt. Bowen, 'These children aren't lying,' and again he said that they were fantasizing."

The police officers cited the low incidence of missing children in Canada as one reason to be skeptical of the children's stories. This explanation gave Catherine little comfort, especially when she came across an article in the *Hamilton Spectator* under the headline, "Child Molesters Prove Well Organized Group." This story referred to "an undeclared war on children," stating that child molesters have their own newsletters, and that 50,000 of the 1.5 million missing children in the United States are believed to have been abducted by strangers.

Catherine described a furious argument she had with Lesley Morgan about the lack of police investigation of the case. She said she asked Ms. Morgan if anything was being done about "any of this mess," and the social worker told her, "You'll have to wait. The police will look after it when they're ready. You have to respect the police."

"I said, 'I can't respect people getting paid to do a job and doing nothing.' I told Lesley it was her turn to go to the police station and stand up and be counted. I told her I was going to take all those old notes I made and rip them up. Lesley said, 'If you tear up those notes, the police will put you in jail.' I said, 'They won't come when they are told someone has been murdered. I've spent months without any time for myself or my family.'"

In her diary Catherine wrote: "No more notes ever, in this world or the next one."

Ms. Morgan went to visit the foster mother and persuaded her not to give up. They went for a drive, and when they returned Catherine repaired the notebook from which she had earlier torn out some pages in her rage and frustration.

The disbelief shown by the police was a major disillusionment for Catherine, who had always maintained an idealistic image of the police force. She felt that society was failing her, and that one of her strongest principles had been taken from her.

"When she broke down in tears saying she didn't know what she would do if anything happened to her own children, she apologized for losing control. She is a person who likes to be in control of things," said Dr. Gail Beck, a psychiatrist who subsequently did an assessment of Mrs. McInnis. "When police did not believe the children were telling the truth, she was feeling very frustrated, not knowing what to do. She was preoccupied with the idea that children were being slaughtered and police don't care."

It required great courage for Catherine to continue to listen to the children's stories as they began to describe revolting scenes of cannibalism. Catherine noted that the children talked about eating flesh at the Blob's house, and sometimes eating flesh at the graveyard. As she described the allegations in the notes, "At the Blob's house, or their house, the flesh would be cooked. He cut the flesh off the children, after they are dead and he cooked it. They always shared it around, and people would get the pieces they liked. He would cut off the head and cook it. Gary took pictures. At the graveyard they would cut off the pee thing, and the two things that hang down, and it would be torn apart, and cut apart, and all shared around. Everybody had some of it.

"It was no wonder that when they first came to my home, the girls would leave food on their plates, refuse roast beef, pork and chicken, and ask for bread," said Catherine.

One of the aspects of the children's disclosures that later helped persuade the psychiatrists that they were telling the truth was the way that everyday things seemed to remind the girls of painful memories and bring these to the surface. This tended to show that Janis and Linda were spontaneously recalling buried experiences rather than fabricating or reciting material that had been implanted in them.

For Catherine it meant that her home was a mine field in which innocent familiar objects would suddenly trigger nightmarish descriptions of disgusting practices. A painting or a little ornament could inspire discussions describing horrendous sexual abuse. Flashlights reminded the girls of the vibrators that were used to torment them; candles made them recall satanic rituals; and boxes conjured up images of coffins. Worst of all for Catherine, who loved gardening and the outdoors, was the way that these girls' terrible experiences had perverted their view of nature itself, so that planting seeds would remind them of burying bodies, and animals had become associated with bestiality and degradation.

Catherine described to the court a conversation with the children that took place early in May, when she had gone into the garden to plant beets and had taken some crumbs to feed to the birds. She said some starlings and crows came flapping around, and Janis told her, "Those birds are not as big as the chickens that Mom and Gary take to the graveyard."

When Catherine asked the child if she was talking about real chickens, she said Janis replied, "Yes. Mom sticks her finger in the chicken, and Gary and the Blob and the Channel 11 man, they put their pee things in the chicken. And then they pull the eyes out of the chickens, and pull the neck off, and the head off. And then they have it bleed into this dish, and we share around the blood. And they make that thing, that star, that sign with the circle around it on something with the blood. They pulled all the feathers off the chicken. That's fucking chicken, Catherine."

The foster mother tried to correct the child by telling her she must mean, "plucking chicken."

She said Linda replied, "No, no, no, Catherine, you are stupid. That's fucking chicken. That's what it is."

Linda told her that they had to eat the chicken, and all the stuff inside, and drink the blood: "It's awful. I branged up and branged up but we have to eat it 'cos if we don't they'll kill us."

This was not the only story that Catherine found so personally repugnant that she did not write it out in her notebook. During her court testimony she also explained a note that referred to the possibility that bodies were buried in existing graves. The note had simply stated, "Are bodies being placed in someone's coffin? Are bodies being placed in recent graves? Are they digging in recent graves and tossing in bodies?"

This was in fact a cryptic reference to another conversation with the children, one that was also prompted by an everyday event. Catherine told the court, "I don't want anyone to think I'm cat crazy because I'm not. I can't stand to think of little animals freezing and starving. I put a shelter out for stray cats. Linda saw this and said that she had been in a box away down in the ground. She said, 'I was in a box away down in the ground in the graveyard. I was in the box, and, after we do what we have to do, we can put our hands up, and somebody would help us get out. I was down in that box. It was open. It was slippy in there. There was something wet in there, and my feet went right through it. There was bone in there, and there was hair in there. I was so scared I just shrieked and shrieked. The stink in there was like shit.' "

On another occasion Catherine was planting pansies in her backyard. She said she was shoveling holes to plant flowers in, when Linda started talking about graves and dead children. She referred to an elevator that slants and goes up and down. This made Catherine wonder if the graveyard was near a quarry. Then Linda told her, "When they bury kids, they lie. The Blob mixes a big soup in a big pot with a wooden spoon. It's a lie. It's lye. They say it's lye. The Blob makes a soup to give the dead kids a drink. After he makes the soup, he pours it on the dead kids. Then he takes some white stuff in a bag. It's like sugar. No, it's like salt. He shakes it over the dead kids. Then they throw in the ground and the dirt and they bury them, and they make a little pile of stones."

Catherine described how the constant exposure to these stories threatened her own sanity and peace of mind. She said, "If once in a while I didn't take a 15-minute reprieve away from the children, I'd find myself talking to my cookbook."

As the children's stories got progressively worse, Catherine had obviously become more and more disturbed, and this was evident from the notes she recorded in her book. At the beginning she had simply recorded the children's statements; now she was starting to insert cryptic comments and editorial remarks. At first she tended not to ask the girls many questions and let them tell their stories in their own words. But Catherine began to believe that she had a responsibility to glean all the details she could from the girls so that their allegations could be investigated. When she ceased being a relatively detached reporter, her notes became more difficult to interpret.

Certain things that the children said disturbed her so much that she did not record them at all except through her own coded reference. The reference to the children being lowered into graves was an example of this. The most serious omissions from the notes related to the children's father. On May 11 the children told Catherine that their father was also involved in the killings, and she wrote in her notebook, "I won't hear. I won't remember. And someone helps too.

"I didn't know what on earth to do, who I could go to," she said. "I was getting all this information, finding out that somebody else is killing people. How on earth am I going to bring anybody else into this, when nobody believes."

She was apparently very afraid of Gordon Wells, whom she had met when he came to pick up the children for the weekend visit. The children had described him as a violent and dangerous man. Catherine realized that the police were not taking her reports of the children's allegations seriously, and she was afraid of risking both their added disbelief and Gordon's anger by reporting the girls' statements about their father. Each time the girls talked about their father, Catherine recorded the conversations with notes like, "Surprises, surprises, surprises," "Secrets," or "The news gets worse."

She told the court that she used bad judgement in not recording the girls' allegations about their father, especially as the CAS was allowing the children to visit him on weekends. She explained that the children had been most insistent that they didn't want their father to know they had implicated him. She said, "I couldn't see embarrassing myself by adding more names, telling them someone else was involved. I didn't tell Lesley because I knew she would go to the police, and I couldn't stand the embarrassment of having them think I was crazy."

Dr. Beck, who later examined Mrs. McInnis, did not conclude that she was crazy or had any form of psychiatric disturbance other than an understandable reaction to the stress to which she was being exposed.

The children would later say that their father had killed three people. However, when they first implicated him in murder, it was as an accomplice in the bizarre climax to the story of the Blob and the Channel 11 man, who the children said were killed and mutilated in the basement of their Hamilton home, and then buried in the backyard. The children's story makes sense as the script of a sick, homemade movie, but it apparently did not occur to any of the adults, who were aware of the children's allegations at the time, to view them in that light.

The police lacked the imagination to grasp the concept that, if two very young children had been forced to participate in violent pornography without understanding what was going on, it would not be inconsistent for them to give lurid and detailed reports of violent acts. In this context it would hardly be surprising if the acts that the children described as real events were beyond belief from an adult perspective. The police could not have considered this possibility—or they would not have called off their investigation of the alleged pornography, when they quickly concluded that the murders did not take place.

Linda told Catherine that the Channel 11 man lived in a penthouse apartment in the housing project where they used to live in Toronto. She thought that he was a superintendent there, and said he had a son called Billy. She said Billy was one of the children who was killed: "They hurt him bad. They took pictures of Billy begging not to be killed." The children said the Channel 11 man's wife, or girlfriend, was Elizabeth, the mother of little Elizabeth, who was also killed.

Catherine said the children described how the Blob, the Channel 11 man and big Elizabeth all "got dead at our house." She said that Janis told her that they all had to stick knives in the Channel 11 man and that Gary "got him good in the neck, and his head was half off." The child then told Catherine that Gary "cut off his pee thing and put it in the garbage, the eyes too."

The children told Catherine that they were also forced to help in the killing of the Blob, and that their father helped too because "Dad is fast with the knife."

Catherine said Linda told her, "It was asgusting, Catherine, it was asgusting, when those people were killed. We had to help take those knives and plunge them into the people. It was asgusting. Of course I was scared. We had to do it, or Mom would kill us."

They said three people were buried in the backyard, and somebody was thrown in the water, fastened to something. They said they watched through a window as Gary ran water from a hose on the paving stones in the backyard all night long so that there wouldn't be any clay on the stones. The court was shown one of Janis's drawings, depicting two figures with a rectangular shape beside them. Catherine said Janis told her, "That's where the Blob is buried, and that's the Channel 11 man."

The police found this story so unbelievable that they did not consider it necessary to search for evidence, though they did hop over the fence at 2 A.M. one morning and examine the paving stones in the small backyard. They concluded that the earth beneath the stones had not been disturbed.

Lesley Morgan, who also heard the same story from the children, was asked in court if she believed that the Channel 11 man and the Blob were still interred in the backyard. She said that the children had told her that they thought the bodies were moved somewhere else afterwards. "The evidence is probably long gone," she said, referring to a police occurrence report in which Sgt. Broom noted that he told the social worker on May 28, 1985, "It is apparent that if there was any evidence that could assist in this investigation, it has long since been disposed of."

Ms. Morgan, a very earnest young woman, who was completely convinced of the children's sincerity, told the court, "Something went on and the children should not return [home], whether or not we can prove there were murders." She said that, if they were to go home, "they will continue to be abused by the same people who were abusing them, except for the Channel 11 man and the Blob."

On the day after they told the stories of the murders in the basement the children had a visit with their mother at the Children's Aid Society. Ms. Morgan noted that the girls were almost out of control after that visit, and Catherine recalled them acting strangely when they returned. She said they wouldn't sit down, and later wept profusely. She said Linda told her, "I was scared Mom will take us out to the graveyard and kill us. I'm scared. My stomach feels stuck. It feels twisted. Just hold me. I'm scared."

Ms. Morgan returned to talk to the children that day, and made a tape of their conversations. On the tape the girls talk about their fear that their mother would kill them at the graveyard with a knife. The court heard Linda say on tape, "I was very, very scared, very, very, very, very, very, very, very scared."

Catherine said the children told her that, when they went to the graveyard, they used to drive by Canada's Wonderland, an amusement park just north of Toronto. She said they spoke about witches, the devil and God, and referred to people wearing masks and costumes. They told her that the Blob sometimes dressed up as a clown. He would always take a book to the graveyard and someone would read from it. They said their father would call out the number "666," a number they often referred to, and always seemed to associate with fear.

As the children continued to talk about the graveyard sessions, it seemed clear to Catherine that some kind of satanic ritual was involved. They said their father's friend would go to the graveyard with a mask and that she would be dressed up. Janis said her mask was torn and she had to paint something on her face. They told Catherine that their father had a sign, and a picture of the devil that he kept behind another picture. They said he wore a mask and a scary costume at the graveyard and would look like the devil. Then they said everyone would spin and twirl around and sing queer songs.

They also told Catherine that their father moves his knife very fast; that he once twisted his boot on someone he had killed, and that he ran over someone in Toronto and killed him. Catherine testified that the girls told her they had to pretend their father didn't come to see them in Hamilton, but he would come.

The children often used to draw a five-cornered star with a circle round it. They also drew an eye symbol and a heart, but would never tell Catherine what these meant. She said they would tell her, "It's a secret."

Catherine said Janis's artwork was often colored with a black crayon. When she was questioned in cross-examination about the children's coloring, she said, "Their favorite color was black. They put red in there for blood to brighten it up sometimes.

"Day after day the children drew the same things, talked about the same things, and that was all they talked about. That was their world," Catherine said.

"It was so sad to see a small girl's artwork tell such a gruesome story. Every night it was something similar. Janis wouldn't bring home some lovely little thing with butterflies and bees and pretty things," Catherine said.

Once, while she was drawing at home, Janis asked Catherine, "How do you draw a picture when they don't have any legs and feet, and the pee thing and head are cut off? How do you draw a dead person when you take them out to be buried in a bowl?"

She produced more of the girls' drawings for the court, together with notes she had made of the children's explanations of them. One of Janis's drawings was a stick figure of a girl with a glum face; she said this was little Elizabeth; she was crying because she didn't want to die. Other stick figures had hands or heads missing; there were heads without bodies and faces that were missing an eye. Catherine said Janis explained that one drawing was a picture of her [Janis] standing by a grave with her throat cut, and blood all over the ground, saying, "I have to say, 'I love you, Mom,' or else I end up here."

A picture that attracted a lot of interest from Arthur Brown, the mother's lawyer, showed a house and something standing beside it, which was labeled a knife, but looked as if it could have been a tree. It appeared that someone had crossed out the word tree, and then substituted knife. A psychiatrist later suggested that it might have represented both to a child. Catherine's explanation that the knife was larger than the house was, "It is possible that the knife stood out in her mind much more than the house did. She knew more about knives than she did about homes."

Another strange exhibit was a duplicated arithmetic question sheet that Janis had brought home from school. There was a series of sums on the paper with boxes provided for the answers. Linda had drawn a little human figure in each box. Catherine said she found this sheet and subsequently explained, "I just drew the kids in the graves."

After several days on the witness stand, Catherine McInnis was asked by John Harper, the Children's Aid Society lawyer, if there were any further allegations made by the children that she had not told the court. She said there were some things that she hadn't mentioned, "just revolting things: about things to do with, say, the dog. One morning, early, before I started doing my housework, I was out on the patio with Linda having a cup of tea. We saw a woman walking a dog. Linda said, 'That's different from the dog my mom had in Toronto.' I said, 'I didn't know you had a dog.' Linda said, 'It was a long time ago. My mom had a dog and she stuck her finger in the dog.' I said, 'He would show his teeth.' She said, 'Catherine, you don't know anything. She didn't put her finger in the dog's mouth. She put it in the dog's bum. Gary and another man put their pee thing in the dog's poo-hole. The dog's dead now.' I said, 'Even a dog is lucky sometimes.'

"Janis said things like this to me too. I didn't put it in my notes, because I tried to tell the police things that were less revolting. It's easier to nail water to the wall than to tell something to the police. To save myself from embarrassment and having somebody think I was crazy, I didn't say too much about the really revolting things. I hoped and prayed they would do something about what they already knew."

She described another allegation where the children were forced to eat bananas that had been used in grotesque sexual acts. She said, "I found it so revolting, I couldn't write it down. Their mother made them do it, and, if they didn't, they would feel the cold blade of the knife pressing into their necks. Even when they brang up and brang up and coughed and spat, they would do it, because if they didn't, *they* would be cut up, and handed around for people to take home on a plate."

Catherine said that sometimes, when Janis was remembering such horrors, her body would shudder, her head would go up a little and her eyes would roll back, half open under thick, swollen lids. She would come out of this state when Catherine wiped her face and wet her lips with a cold cloth. Catherine would cuddle the child and then she would be okay, she said. "These were times when she'd be past tears."

In spite of all the personal difficulty that Mrs. McInnis experienced in listening to the children's disclosures, she was still able to give them the love, care and sympathy that they desperately needed. In this way she was helping to revise the blighted view of human nature that the girls had learned from their harrowing experiences.

CHAPTER 8

SATANIC CULTS

May 16, 1985, was a day of revelation for Catherine McInnis. The revelation came from her television set in the form of a documentary report about the victimization of children by satanic cults. This was the first time that she felt she was not the only person to have heard the kind of horror stories that her foster children had told her. She learned that other people all over North America would be receptive to what these children were saying and sympathetic to her own plight. With this reassurance, however, came the horror of learning that, while there were other similar victims and other similar crimes, what she had been hearing in her living room was possibly part of an evil and powerful conspiracy.

Until then Catherine had never taken any interest in the occult and knew virtually nothing of satanism. From listening to the children she was aware that some kind of ritual had been involved in the gruesome graveyard scenes that they described. From her readings of the Bible she knew that "666" was the number that would identify Satan; this was the mark of the beast according to the Book of Revelation. She noted with concern that the children would write that number in their coloring books, and was also worried by the references to witches and devils, dances, masks and costumes.

Drawing on a wealth of evidence and quoting reputable sources, the program described how links have been found all over North

America between satanism and "perverse, hideous acts that defy belief. Suicides, murders and the ritualistic slaughter of children and animals. Yet so far police have been helpless."

The documentary cited records of more than 15,000 animal mutilations and the discovery of ritual sites where satanic paraphernalia were found; these included pictures of the devil, the inverted five-pointed satanic pentagram, the upside-down cross, the evil eye and references to "666."

After discussing a recent revival of interest in satanism in popular culture, referring to films such as *Rosemary's Baby* and *The Exorcist,* and the preponderance of satanic symbolism in heavy metal rock music, the program went on to explain that devil worshippers generally fall into three categories. The first was the "self-styled satanists," who are usually teenagers who dabble in satanism with the aid of such popular books as Anton LaVey's *Satanic Bible*. The second category was "religious satanists," who are members of LaVey's Church of Satan, or similar organizations that claim to eschew any illegal activity. The third group was "satanic cults," which, the program stated, appear to be "highly secretive groups, committing criminal acts, including murder."

With comments from police investigators, a psychiatrist, alleged victims and relatives of victims, the television report examined some of the characteristics of the kind of abuse that the cults allegedly inflict on children, who have a central role in their rituals. Sexual abuse, pornography and forcing children to eat feces and drink urine were described as key elements in the cults' systematic assault on children's morale and moral values, encouraging them to accept evil and degradation as natural. Child murders were described and it was said that children were forced to stick knives in the victims, and also forced to help kidnap victims by pretending to play with other children in order to lure them away. There were descriptions of cannibalism, and it was said that this and drinking human blood were integral parts of the rituals.

Police officers interviewed on the program said there was ample evidence that such groups exist and engage in these shocking practices. But they are so secretive and well-organized that they have so far defied any police attempts to gather concrete evidence of these activities. One former police chief said, "When you get into one of these groups, there's only a couple of ways you can get out. One is death. The other is mental institutions. Or third, you can't get out."

Enlightened, comforted and alarmed by all this, Catherine immediately phoned the local police. She testified that she talked to "one of the police officers working on the case, or not working on the case, and told him, 'Maybe the children got places mixed up, but I believe them, or I would not repeat what they said.'"

While the Hamilton police were apparently no more impressed with the information contained in the television program than they were with anything else that Mrs. McInnis had reported to them, background knowledge of satanic ritual abuse gleaned from this and many other sources did have a significant influence on social workers and psychiatrists who subsequently dealt with the children. It made them less inclined to dismiss the children's allegations as aberrant fantasies or weird distortions of some sordid but more mundane reality. What the children were saying fell squarely within the framework of the rapidly expanding knowledge of this new, disturbing phenomenon of ritual abuse. While such allegations may be extremely difficult to believe, and are even harder to accept, professionals working in the field of child abuse were beginning to find it impossible not to take them seriously. They were hearing about similar cases all over the continent, and many were encountering them in their own work.

In 1986 Catherine Gould, a clinical psychologist, published a list of symptoms of satanic ritual abuse that she observed in her work with abused preschool-age children in the Los Angeles area. This list of 29 symptoms included several that were relevant to Janis's and Linda's allegations and behavior. Dr. Gould notes that such children have a preoccupation with feces and urine, will talk about feces or urine on the face or in the mouth, will refer to it being smeared in the bathroom and frequently discuss these things at mealtimes. She said a consequent fear of the bathroom may make it difficult to toilet train such children. The list includes aggressive play, in which a child appears to enjoy hurting other children, a fear of ghosts and monsters and a fear of bad people taking the child away, breaking into the house or burning it down, or killing the child.

The symptoms also included references to mutilation, in which the child acts out severing, sawing off, twisting or pulling off body parts. Dr. Gould said these children will talk about animals being hurt or killed. They may also be preoccupied with death, sometimes asking if dead people are eaten, or if their death will occur at the age of six. The psychologist noted: "Questions are distinguishable from normal curiosity about death by their bizarre quality." She also referred to bizarre songs or chants, or ones that follow the "you-better-not-tell theme," numbers or letters always written backwards in the devil's alphabet, discussions about films or photographs being taken. She said children will also talk about scary costumes, and refer to television characters as real people, "because perpetrators take on names like Fred Flintstone so a child's disclosures will be dismissed as television-inspired fantasies."

Roland Summit, a California psychiatrist whose theories on how children disclose sexual abuse are world-renowned in the field and were referred to during the wardship hearing, has studied more than 40 cases that involve these ritual elements. He has noted that "another hallmark of whatever this is, or wherever it comes from, is the insertion of instruments such as sticks into bodies, and the use of narcotics and sedatives, usually used as a liquid, a pink liquid."

Dr. Summit, like several other child abuse experts who have become concerned by these reports, has been careful to avoid coming to any categorical conclusions—although many children in different places have said the same things, this does not prove the existence of satanic cults that are engaged in this kind of abuse. He has cautioned that as long as there is no concrete evidence of the existence of such groups, and no-one has come forward to say that they belonged to cults that committed such atrocities, one must keep an open mind and accept that there may be other explanations.

Although Dr. Summit has expressed an inclination to believe that there is truth in the numerous "dismally consistent" allegations, he has also warned that it may do a disservice to children to slavishly believe that everything they say is true. His concern has been that children's sincerity should be respected, that their disclosures should be heard without prejudice and that they should get the protection and therapy they need. Too often this does not happen, he said, because "these cases throw people into irrational kinds of prejudice. Some people believe it is true, and the world is going to be taken over by satanists. Other says 'It's too spooky, and it can't happen in this country.' They are likely to abandon the children, dismiss the case, and throw it out."

Many therapists in Canada and the United States have also reported detailed accounts of satanic rituals from a different source—adult survivors of child sexual abuse, who, during therapy sessions, remember details of past ritual abuse. Therapists who report such accounts are usually not child psychiatrists, and are therefore not necessarily familiar with the kinds of allegations that children have been making. However, the adults' accounts of abuse inflicted on them a generation ago often contain details of ritual, symbolism and abusive acts that are identical to those reported by children today.

One such survivor, a woman from Victoria, British Columbia, described in a 1980 book, *Michelle Remembers,* how she was subjected to abuse involving a dead bird, and forced to eat what she believed was human flesh during satanic ceremonies. She also remembered being put into a grave, and witnessing the sacrifice of children and the dismemberment of dead bodies. Lawrence Pazder, the psychiatrist who treated her and coauthored the book, has said that he has since worked with eight similar cases.

Victims of child abuse often deal with their traumatic memories by trying to shut them away in a separate compartment in their minds. In some extreme cases this attempt to seal off painful emotions and responses can lead to the development of a split personality. Psychiatrists who treat patients with multiple personality disorders frequently find that the illness is associated with a history of child abuse. A Chicago psychiatrist who noticed a high preponderance of reports of ritual abuse in the history of such patients conducted a survey in 1986 of 250 therapists working in this field, and discovered that about 25 percent of them had patients who said they were exposed to satanic rituals during childhood.

In Hamilton, Ontario, while the wardship hearing was in progress, at least four adults were involved in therapy sessions at which they discussed their memories of satanic ritual abuse. A former police matron in Kamloops, British Columbia, now working as a sexual assault counselor and involved with her tenth ritual abuse case, followed the Hamilton case with great interest and stated, "It is my belief that as more and more therapists acquire the skills to hear children and adults who have been sexually and physically abused, the more they will hear about the happenings of the cult-related assaults, which have a different set of problems for patients and therapists. I am grateful for the case in Hamilton getting out in the open, so that others, who have been assaulted as children in this manner, can get the courage to tell and not fear that they will be killed for doing so."

The many therapists and a handful of police investigators who have become convinced of the existence of secret and sadistic satanic cults tend to see this as a phenomenon that has existed in society since the Middle Ages. History is also invoked by those who maintain that the belief in satanic ritual abuse is a manifestation of a mass hysteria that was spread by gullible people obsessed with children's fantasies. They say that the recent spate of court cases dealing with children's allegations of ritual abuse resemble the witch-hunts of the 16th and 17th centuries in Europe and New England.

No matter what point of view one takes, the historical comparisons reveal striking similarities between the current concerns and the preoccupations of the past. According to historian Jeffrey Russell[7], the ritual murder of children, often accompanied by cannibalism, was one of the most common charges leveled against witches. Just as children were most often seen as the victims of witchcraft, they were also the source of many of the accusations against witches. A case in Salem, Massachusetts, in 1692 was a famous example of this: two small girls, who began exhibiting nervous symptoms after experimenting with divination, were subjected to intense questioning by doctors and other adults, and eventually made accusations against three women.

While many of the so-called confessions of witches were extracted under torture, and merely conformed to a formula predetermined by the inquisitors, there was evidence of some serious judicial attempts to discover the truth about witchcraft. One such hearing was a late 17th-century inquiry at the French court regarding allegations that Black Masses were being performed in aristocratic circles. Evidence was heard at this inquiry about the sexual abuse of children and the brutal murder of newborn babies, whose entrails were used in rituals that also involved cutting a bird's throat and collecting its blood in a goblet.[8]

To some people all this is evidence of the survival through the centuries of child-murdering satanic cults; to others it all represents archetypal human fantasies. Historian Norman Cohn maintains that scholars who consider that witchcraft allegations are indicative of the existence of some such cult are "grosslly underestimating the capacities of the human imagination."[9]

Sigmund Freud, before he discovered or invented the concept of such subconscious urges, recognized what he considered clear evidence of child sexual abuse that had been suffered by his female patients. He was also struck by the similarity between what these women told him and the accounts of the witchcraft confessions of the 16th century. He wrote in a January, 1897, letter to a colleague, "But why did the devil who took possession of the poor things invariably abuse them sexually and in a loathsome manner? Why are their confessions under torture so like the communications made by my patients in psychological treatment?"[10]

In the last few years, there has been a rash of cases all over North America in which adults have been prosecuted or children removed from their homes as a result of allegations from children. These allegations often include bizarre descriptions of murder, mutilation, bestiality, cannibalism and satanic ritual. In at least 40 places in the U.S., authorities have been grappling with children's allegations of ritual abuse. In California and Minnesota, in particular, a spate of highly controversial cases has sharply polarized public opinion.

In Manhattan Beach, California, in 1984, friends of the seven people accused in the notorious McMartin Preschool case took out newspaper advertisements that compared this case with the Salem witch trials; in this case there were accusations against the preschool operators and staff involving the alleged molestation of hundreds of children. The same comparison has been made in connection with a spate of cases in Bakersfield, California, and in Jordan, Minnesota, where 24 people were accused. Bizarre stories of rituals, murder, cannibalism, bestiality, pornography, eating feces and drinking urine, as well as extreme sexual abuse, were recurring themes in these cases, as they were in the other cases in different parts of the United States, and in the Hamilton case. One theory adopted by defense lawyers in most of these cases, and also advanced in Hamilton, is that child abuse professionals all over the continent are in the grip of a kind of mass hysteria that inspires them to coach children into making allegations—allegations that become more and more fantastic under the pressures of intensive questioning.

Ralph Underwager, a psychologist who has testified as an expert witness on behalf of defendants in many such cases in the United States, was sought as a witness by defense lawyers in the Hamilton case. However, he was not available until after the defense case was closed, and Judge Beckett refused to delay the trial in order to wait for his evidence. Dr. Underwager said in an interview that he has been involved in 28 cases where there was a similar progression in the development of allegations over time: "a pattern beginning with an initial statement from young children that somebody touched them, progressing to allegations of fondling, to penetration, to oral-genital contact, to monsters and strange bizarre behaviors, sometimes drug use, ritual behavior and murder of animals. It gets put together in allegations that children were murdered in cultic behavior."

This kind of material is present in the fantasy world of children, Underwager said, and comes out when gullible adults, predisposed to belief in a satanic conspiracy theory, delve into the children's fantasies, producing more and more allegations that they reinforce with their belief: "So you get police officers digging in backyards for bodies, looking for pornography, cultic objects. They have never been found. No empirical data for any of this material has ever been discovered." Mentioning the similarities between the cases in Jordan, Minnesota, and Salem, Massachusetts, Underwager said, "What we are trying to fight is stupidity on such a massive scale." He maintains that "adults who are true believers victimize children by subjecting them to pressure."

What this view fails to explain, however, is why the allegations that children are making in these circumstances are so strikingly similar in so many different and unrelated cases. In Salem the children had indeed been exposed to some voodoo practices by a Haitian nurse, who was the first person they accused, and the 17th-century religious and cultural climate was such that everyone was quite ready to accept that they had been involved in devil worship. But satanism is not a phenomenon that one would expect social workers and psychiatrists to readily give credence to in the late 20th century. It is also hard to understand why they would coach children to make allegations that would heap massive skepticism on their allegations of sexual abuse. Dr. Underwager and others who advance this theory make reference to the richness of children's fantasy world, but have so far failed to provide any detailed explanation of how young children can conjure up, from their imaginations, graphic and detailed accounts of ritual violence, accompanied by sexually explicit descriptions of abuse.

An alternative explanation that is advanced by some people who vigorously support the prosecution of cases like those in California and Minnesota is very disturbing. This theory is that groups of people in society either practice ritual child abuse or use the trappings of ritual to terrorize children, while forcing them to participate in pornography or group sex. This theory has been endorsed by police investigators in many parts of North America. Apart from the allegations of many hundreds of children and adult survivors of sexual abuse, the evidence is slim for any link between child abuse and satanic cult activities. The history and literature of satanic worship does, however, point to a tradition of child sacrifice, and a preoccupation with corrupting and degrading the innocence that children represent.

In recent years there has been considerable evidence of a burgeoning of interest in satanic worship in North America. It has been inspired perhaps by the decline in traditional belief and the need felt by many people for magic solutions to personal problems in an increasingly alienating and materialistic society. There has been a steady growth of such legal and ostensibly harmless groups as The Church of Satan, which boasted more than 10,000 members by the late 1970s. This is the largest of several satanic organizations in North America, and has chapters in Toronto and British Columbia. It was founded in San Francisco by Anton LaVey, a former lion trainer who played the part of the devil in the film *Rosemary's Baby,* one of a number of films that fostered popular interest in satanism during the past 20 years.

While The Church of Satan claims to have no involvement in any illegal activity, another satanic group, The Process, the Church of the Final Judgement, has enjoyed a less savory reputation. This cult made Toronto one of its headquarters in the mid-1970s, and its members occupied a house in the same inner-city neighborhood where Sharon, her brothers and sisters and Gordon Wells grew up. The Process achieved brief notoriety in Canada in 1971 when a Toronto newspaper revealed that this satanist group had been awarded a federal government Local Initiatives Program grant for a social service project in the city. It has since been disbanded, though former members in Toronto have recently been meeting again under the name New Cycle, and there is also believed to be a group of cult members living in Hamilton.

On a religious level The Process was an attempt to reconcile Christianity with satanism; it worshiped four deities, including Christ and Satan. It had an apocalyptic vision of the Last Judgement, and saw motorcycle gangs as an instrument that would bring about this plan of ultimate annihilation. A recent history of the cult, written by a sociologist who was a friend of its leaders, describes it as only indulging in violence at a rhetorical or philosophical level. This study conceded that the cult tended to recruit and appeal to very alienated and disturbed young people, and often had problems with its more sociopathic fringe members.[11] One person who said he was influenced by The Process was Charles Manson, who shared with this cult a preoccupation with the Book of Revelation and the satanic number 666, which was scrawled on the wall at the scene of the murder of Sharon Tate in California in 1969.

Satanic beliefs and practices have nothing in common with traditional pagan witchcraft, which has also seen a revival in the last 30 years, and is now being espoused by many feminists and radicals as a new ecological religion. *The Encyclopedia of American Religions* makes the point that there is distinction to be made between the public groups that adopt a satanist theology and "what are frequently termed the 'sickies.' There are disconnected groups of occultists who employ satan worship to cover a variety of sexual, sadomasochistic, clandestine, psychopathic and illegal activities. From these groups come grave robberies, sexual assaults and bloodletting (both animal and human). These groups are characterized by lack of theology, disconnectedness and short life, and informality of meetings. Usually they are discovered only in the incident which destroys them."[12]

Heavy metal rock music and videos by bands such as Ozzy Osbourne, Motley Crüe, Venom and Slayer celebrate violence and frequently use satanist symbolism. They have helped spur the current high level of interest among teenagers in this aspect of the occult. Richard Ramirez, a 25-year-old serial killer known as the Night Stalker and a self-styled satanist, was heavily influenced by an album called *Highway to Hell*, by AC/DC, a band whose name is seen by its satanist followers as meaning Antichrist/Devil Child. In July, 1984, a Long Island teenager was fatally stabbed 17 times in what his murderers admitted was a satanic cult ritual, and one of the killers, also a teenager, subsequently hung himself in jail.

Paperback copies of LaVey's *Satanic Bible* and *Satanic Rituals* have been found on the shelves of many recent teen suicides. In April, 1987, there were media reports of two such cases, one in Sackville, Nova Scotia, and one in Kitchener, Ontario. The father of the boy in the Kitchener case was quoted as saying that he was told that there are satanist followers in almost every school in the Kitchener area. Charles McLeod, of the Cult Project in Montreal, said in an interview that such a claim is quite realistic and would probably be true of any urban center in Canada. "LaVey's book has probably done far more harm than he has," said McLeod.

A teenager who killed three people in Toronto in 1985 was preoccupied with satanism, and, in the same year, police in Chatham, Ontario, reported concern about the presence of satanist material at the home of a young man suspected of murder in that city. In 1985 in Valleyfield, Quebec, satanic literature was found at the home of a man who killed, dismembered and burned a pregnant woman. A Halifax prostitute was killed in 1986 with a knife on which the number 666 was displayed. Many similar cases have been documented in the United States. Throughout Canada and the U.S. there have been persistent reports in recent years of animal mutilations and vandalism, especially at graves and mausoleums, that have been interpreted as being connected with satanic rituals. In 1986 the small country town of Delhi, Ontario, was put into a panic by some teenagers' disclosures that they had participated in satanic rituals allegedly involving animal sacrifices in a barn. A local priest counseled the youths, who had been frightened by their own experiments in the occult, and the barn was subsequently burned down by an arsonist.

Early in 1987 police in Verdun, Quebec, investigated reports of a satanic gang that, according to McLeod, "supposedly uses a lot of satanist insignia (tattoos, etc.), uses ten-year-old girls in Black Masses and recruits them into child prostitution." McLeod said local people who had publicly protested the activities of this gang were subsequently harassed by someone who painted the number 666 on their houses. The police investigation was inconclusive. McLeod said he was also concerned about a Montreal-based organization called Continental Association of Satan's Hope (CASH), which mails out material promising that satanic magic can bring financial success.

Santeria, a Cuban cult derived from voodoo, has also been associated with the use of children in violent rituals. There have been reports in the Toronto area of rituals involving chickens, which are said to resemble the practices of this cult. A gruesome discovery made at Chicago's O'Hare airport in October, 1984, was drawn to the attention of people investigating the Hamilton case. Police at the airport becamse suspicious of a package that had arrived on a freight flight from Miami. The package was opened and contained what was apparently a dead fetus, a human skull, wooden sticks, some dead birds and two Halloween masks. Miami police were consulted about this discovery and a specialist from Miami told the Chicago police that these were things usually used in Santeria rituals.

There have been some successful prosecutions in the United States of child sexual abuse cases involving ritual elements. In Malden, Massachusetts, there were allegations of sex in "magic" secret rooms—adults dressed as clowns, still and video photography (of which no evidence was found), and stories of ritual slayings of small animals. A jury, however, convicted a day-care center operator, largely on the evidence of sexual abuse, after hearing the testimony of nine children. Jurors subsequently said in interviews with John Novak, of the *Malden Evening News*, that they believed the kids were telling the truth, and that they couldn't have been describing oral sex out of thin air. In Miles, Michigan, the proprietor of a preschool was convicted of abuse involving satanic activity.

The most notable of the successful prosecutions was in Miami, Florida, where the owners of a baby-sitting service in an exclusive suburban neighborhood were accused of multiple counts of child molestation. As in the Hamilton case, there had been allegations of pornography, but a van load of material was spirited away just before a search warrant was executed, and no evidence of pornography was found. Children alleged that they had been drugged and then forced to drink urine and eat feces. They also said they had been sexually abused. Allegations involving costumes and incantations were downplayed at the trial, which resulted in a sentence of six consecutive life imprisonment terms against the male proprietor, and a light sentence for his young wife, who testified against him. It is interesting to note that psychiatrist Lee Coleman, who testified for the defense in this trial, still maintains that there was no evidence against the accused. This is in spite of the fact that the court was overwhelmingly convinced by the testimony of the proprietor's wife, evidence of allegations made by anguished and fearful children and the fact that the proprietor's eight-year-old son suffered from gonorrhea of the throat.[13]

Dr. Coleman, one of the leading lights of the campaign against such prosecutions, challenges the interviewing techniques employed by child sexual abuse specialists. He claims that these techniques are leading and manipulative. This raises a crucial issue—one that the courts are continually forced to grapple with. Roland Summit, who advocates passionately on behalf of sexually abused children, and is often called as a prosecution witness in such cases, maintains that it is necessary to reassure the children that it is good to tell the truth and that they have nothing to fear from doing so. The kind of positive reinforcement that he considers necessary to gain the confidence of a child is seen by Dr. Coleman as a kind of emotional blackmail.

This debate often focuses on two issues, both of which were referred to frequently in the Hamilton case. The first is the myth that children never lie about sexual abuse. Dr. Coleman maintains that this is Dr. Summit's position, and takes every opportunity to ridicule it. Summit has stated that very few children, perhaps two or three in a thousand, have ever been found to exaggerate or to invent claims of sexual molestation. He says he is not advocating slavish belief in children's allegations, but rather that their statements be taken seriously and not automatically dismissed as fantasy as has often happened in the past.

The second of these issues is Summit's child sexual abuse accommodation syndrome, a theory that accounts for the pressures on children not to disclose abuse suffered from a family member, and often retract their truthful disclosures because of feelings of fear or helplessness. Coleman sees this as a "Catch 22": when children disclose, they are telling the truth and when they later say that it was not true, they are lying. Summit's observations about the difficulty that children have in disclosing abuse explain the gradual process by which a child will begin with a relatively simple and minor revelation, and gradually work up to taking about the more extreme and traumatic forms of abuse that they have suffered. This progression, which is present in nearly all sexual abuse cases, is often cited by defense lawyers as further evidence that allegations have been drawn out of children by manipulative interviewers.

All these issues came into play in Minnesota and California. The extravagance of many of the children's allegations, the almost fanatical zeal with which the prosecutions were undertaken, the almost total absence of corroborating evidence, and a polarized and hysterical public reaction to the cases, all contributed to making the cases spectacular disasters that wreaked havoc on the lives of everyone involved in them. In the McMartin case hundreds of children became embroiled in an investigation that became completely unhinged as children started to make more and more bizarre claims—they talked about being taken to exotic locations, caverns, tunnels and, in one case, a house where there were lions in the basement. The children's allegations, which had previously concentrated on sexual abuse at the preschool, had also included ingestion of feces and urine and the murder of babies.

The investigation appeared to have been hopelessly compromised from the very beginning because police had sent out a letter to all parents with children at the school asking them if their children had complained of abuse. A judge had found enough evidence, however, to commit five people for trial after a lengthy preliminary hearing. However, the case had also become the subject of a political controversy. A newly elected Los Angeles district attorney withdrew most of the charges, blaming social workers and their suggestive questioning of children for the collapse of the case.

A similar sequence of events unfolded in Bakersfield, California, where children and parents have continued to make allegations about satanic sacrifices after a series of court cases in which four defendants were convicted and sentenced to a combined 1,000 years in jail. Another related case was dismissed, and charges were dropped against several other defendants. The judge who dismissed the second case, involving 130 molestation counts, took this step after learning that the children, who had alleged satanist human sacrifices as well as sexual abuse, had not been allowed to be examined by defense doctors. This issue surfaced in the Hamilton case when defense lawyers were denied access to the children for psychiatric examination, and their motion for a further independent assessment of the girls was denied. In Bakersfield a 1986 grand jury expressed concern about what they considered obvious mishandling of the children, who were denied interaction with members of their family and had excessive exposure to law enforcement investigators.

In Sacramento, California, allegations of sadistic child pornography were heard when two groups of children testified that they watched other children killed and multilated while cameras were moving. One of these children said he was forced to participate in the murders. But a judge dismissed charges at a preliminary hearing, ruling that a grandmother had, through persistent questioning, led two girls to believe they had been molested. The judge described the grandmother as "totally obsessed with matters sexual." Connections were inevitably made in the media between this finding and attacks made by defense lawyers and witnesses in one of the Bakersfield cases against another grandmother, who had been one of the people who instigated police investigations. This woman had previously been labeled as obsessive about molestation, and was placed in a locked psychiatric ward after threatening to kill her husband. A defense psychiatrist maintained that she "seems to have presented her own time bomb of psychological explosions in response to every real or imagined revelation by the minors."

In Jordan, Minnesota, sexual abuse charges against 22 people were dropped after an investigation failed to find evidence of ritual murder and pornography. The case, which had begun with sexual abuse charges against one man who had a prior criminal record for sexual assault, had expanded to place 15 families under a cloud of suspicion, and remove 25 children from their homes. Children's allegations included sexual games in concert with adults and other children, killing of animals, eating of feces and the murder of children. Investigators had been horrified by the realistic detail of the children's stories; they were considered so striking that police officers concluded that the descriptions of murders must be authentic.

Once again no evidence was found. Some children retracted or changed their stories, and conflicts arose between different agencies that became involved in the case. A report by Minnesota's attorney general concluded that, because of inadequacies in the way the cases were investigated and prosecuted, "it is impossible to determine whether such abuse actually occurred, and if it did, who may have done these acts." The report stated that children were questioned too often, by too many people, with insufficient reporting and exchange of information on the part of investigators. It noted that suspects were seldom interviewed, or their backgrounds investigated prior to charges being laid, and concluded, "The haste with which charges were brought often precluded a search for corroborating physical evidence. Surveillance techniques were not utilized. Search warrants were rarely obtained."

While no-one accused the Hamilton police of proceeding too hastily with their investigation, they were criticized, like their counterparts in Minnesota, for a lack of surveillance, a failure to obtain search warrants in order to interview people at the earliest opportunity and failure to check into the background of alleged perpetrators. Defense lawyers attempted unsuccessfully to suggest that the way the children were interviewed in the Hamilton case was leading and suggestive and the methods used were similar to those used in the American cases.

The failure of many of the ritual abuse cases in the United States not only tended to discredit investigators and child abuse specialists who believe children's accounts of such abuse, but also caused massive disruptions in the lives of the children, whom the authorities had set out to protect. In the light of these experiences, Roland Summit, who has followed these cases more closely than any other expert in the child abuse field, has become wary of the criminal justice system as an avenue for pursuing such potentially explosive allegations. He advised child care workers attending a conference on sexual abuse in Toronto in March, 1987, that it may be better not to reveal allegations of ritual abuse until very thorough investigation and surveillance has been undertaken. He added that such bizarre, though convincing, allegations leave child care workers like the protagonist in a science fiction novel who wants to put the town under guard because of an alien threat: "We may think there's an urgent need for the children to be protected, but we can't promise to provide it."

The Hamilton wardship hearing perhaps provides an answer to Dr. Summit's fears, by showing that it is possible to respond to bizarre stories of ritual abuse in a way that can protect the children while subjecting their allegations to public scrutiny. The allegations made by Janis and Linda were strikingly similar in many ways to those made by other children thousands of miles away. The response of authorities to their story was similar in many respects, but the court case that resulted from all this was fundamentally different. It centered around what solution would be in the best interests of the children, and it provided a forum for a detailed examination of all the facts of the case, without either suppressing the more bizarre aspects of the children's story or chasing off after them into some tangent, where the basic issues of child abuse and neglect could get lost. The 18-month-long hearing was widely criticized for its length and exorbitant cost. It did not provide all the answers to the questions it posed, but it could serve as a model for a cool and levelheaded approach to a volatile issue.

The Hamilton case had the advantage of being a family court hearing, where the emphasis was directed less towards proving or disproving the strange allegations than to deciding what custody and access arrangements would be in the best interests of the children. The *Ontario Child Welfare Act* and the rules of the Unified Family Court, where a district court judge presided over a variety of family and juvenile cases, also allowed for plenty of latitude in dealing with such material as hearsay evidence of children's statements, videotapes of interviews and therapy sessions and expert opinions. With a presiding judge who was clearly personally distressed by the trauma that the children appeared to be suffering and deeply committed to the pursuit of truth in the matter, the hearing soon turned into perhaps the most careful and comprehensive examination of a case of ritual abuse ever undertaken.

CHAPTER 9

THE "PLAN" AND ITS AFTERMATH

It was just after Victoria Day, Firecracker Day as the children called it, that life in the McInnis home was disrupted with an explosion of fear.

The children had spent the holiday weekend with their father. Catherine McInnis admitted when she testified in court that she had used very poor judgement in allowing the children to go off on this visit; she had not informed the Children's Aid Society of all that the children had told her about their father. She had explained her reasons for withholding this information, but could not justify continuing to do so when she knew they were going to be spending three days with a man whom she believed to be a murderer and a satanist.

Gordon Wells had promised to bring his daughters back to the foster home at about 6 P.M. on the Monday evening, and Catherine had begun to worry about them when they had still not appeared by nine o'clock. Their father, however, did phone soon after nine to say that he would have them home in about an hour. Both Catherine and her daughter testified that they felt there was something a little disturbing about his behavior when he arrived with the girls at about 10 P.M. They said he came into the kitchen with a package of sparklers and a bag of cereal he had brought for the children, and then paced nervously about, peering through the door into the living room. Catherine offered him some tea, which he declined, saying he had a toothache. She said she then looked casually out of the door, which he left open, and, as soon as she did this, the man left hurriedly.

After their father left the girls mentioned something about a plan, and then began crying. Catherine said the children said strange things to her that night like, "I love you. I love you. I wish I had a thousand dollars. I don't know what I'd buy you. I love you. You're so good."

Catherine said the girls made similar comments the next morning, and talked to one another about a plan while they were waiting for a visit from Lesley Morgan, the social worker. The foster mother observed that they seemed reluctant to talk to Lesley and acted strangely while she was there. They told Ms. Morgan that they were soon going to live with their father in Toronto. Catherine noted that, while they had previously expressed hatred when they spoke of Gary, their mother's boyfriend, that morning they kept saying things like, "I like Gary. Gary is a nice boy."

When Ms. Morgan left, the children started screaming and crying and holding on to Catherine. She said they asked loudly, "Why does Mom think you're so bad? Why does she hate you? Nobody was ever so good to us. This is such a safe place. Your kids are so nice. Why does Mom hate you?"

Then, to the foster mother's great surprise and consternation, they told her that Gary and their mother and father had all come to Catherine's house a week or ten days before, while Catherine's daughter Mary was having a party. They had come and listened at the windows, the girls said, and Sharon had actually slipped into the house. Catherine said she recalled getting up one morning, at about that time, and thinking it rather strange that the double windows and the screen were wide open.

Catherine testified about the girls' description of this incident, and was unable to resist injecting a little sarcasm into her account: "She came in the bedroom, and she had a big knife. She held it at Linda's neck—something that, by now, Linda should have been used to. She said, 'You have a big mouth. You tell Catherine everything.

You tell one more word, and I will stick this through your neck.' She stuck pins in a Cabbage Patch doll, and said 'That is what I'm going to do to Catherine with the knife.' She took the box that the Cabbage Patch doll came in, and, with a pencil, poked out the eyes and made holes in it. 'That's what I'm going to do to Catherine with the knife. You don't tell anybody about what I do. It's none of your business.'"

The court was shown a green box with a picture of a doll printed on it. The box was punctured by a series of holes on the face and body of the printed doll. Catherine testified that the girls produced this box from their bedroom, and told her again how their mother had threatened, "I'll poke her all over with the knife, where she'll never talk again." Catherine said Linda demonstrated by poking two holes in the leg of the printed outline of the doll.

Catherine testified that as Linda did this she said, "We will have to help kill you. We always have to stick knives in people they kill. We'll just stick a knife in your foot. I don't know why Mom says you're so bad. She said she is going to cut out your mouth, dig out your eyes. I couldn't dig out your eyes, Catherine, but we will have to stick knives in you."

The foster mother said the children then told her about the plan that they had heard their mother, Gary and their father making over the weekend. Their mother was not supposed to be present when they were on an access visit with their father, but they assured Catherine that she had been there, and had made soft chocolate cookies. They told Catherine that the three adults had talked about killing Catherine and her whole family. The girls said the plan was that, when their dad brought them back to Catherine's house after the weekend, Gary and their mother would be hiding in the car. Catherine said the girls told her that everyone in the house was to be killed "and then they'll cut you all up and they'll set fire to the house."

Catherine said that the children warned everyone in the house not to go outside, because they were afraid their father would run them over with his car. The foster mother's own children testified that they had never seen the girls so terrified. Impressed by this show of fear, and knowing much of what the girls had said already, the whole family believed that they were indeed under an imminent threat.

When Catherine was later cross-examined by Arthur Brown, Sharon's lawyer, she explained that some details of what happened that day had escaped her memory: "A plan to carve, and cook, and hand you and your family out to cannibals, doesn't do a lot for your memory. I shook for days. I couldn't write what I wanted to put down."

Mr. Brown ridiculed this fear, noting that there were six people in the house, which was located in a well-populated suburban neighborhood. He said the foster mother should have realized that what the girls described to her was "a completely fantastic childlike scheme."

"I did not see it as a childlike scheme," said Catherine. "Nor did those terrified, shaking children. They were well aware what their mother and father and Gary could do. Six people wouldn't be any match against three people very good with knives."

When Mr. Brown questioned her skeptically about the story of Sharon appearing in the children's bedroom, Catherine responded with heavy sarcasm. Mr. Brown asked how Catherine thought the children's mother might have gained entry to the house, and the foster mother replied: "I think she came in the window. Unless she slithered under the door."

After hearing the girls' story about the plan, Catherine called the Children's Aid Society. Ms. Morgan was not there, and, not wanting to have to tell anyone else about what was happening, Catherine decided to wait until Ms. Morgan was able to come to the house in the evening. She said she didn't call the police because she didn't think they would believe her. When Ms. Morgan arrived, Catherine and the children were so relieved that they ran up the driveway to meet her. When she had been told about the plan, Lesley phoned her supervisor, who then called the police. Eventually a police officer, Sergeant Bruce Elwood, came to the house. Catherine said, "I remember I was so thrilled to think somebody came, and I had a chance to tell someone."

Sgt. Elwood, who was the first police officer to actually interview the children, had not been involved in the case before. He was an experienced officer of the old school, clean-cut, conservative and mild-mannered. He told the court that he responded to the call he received from the Children's Aid Society, but "I found all that I was being told very hard to believe. I was very skeptical of what was being said—children being killed, cannibalism—I found it very hard to believe."

He asked to talk to the children separately, and testified that Linda told him she overheard her mother and father talking about killing the McInnis family. He said, "She kept referring to it as 'the plan.' At one point she saw my notebook, and said, 'My daddy has a notebook like that, and he put the plan into it.' She was talking of friends of hers that had been killed, that were gone.

"I felt I should stay there until I had a better grasp of the situation. They had towels over the sheer [drapes]. Mrs. McInnis said she was not going to bed. It looked like a household where everyone was going to stay up all night. I felt, under the circumstances, I should stay."

He interviewed Janis and he said, "After much coaxing suddenly she seemed to relax, and she began speaking of a graveyard where ten kids were buried, about her father having a mask and a picture of the devil. I was shown a picture that Janis had drawn of a graveyard. She said, 'You pulled into a parking area. You have to go over the bridge through a wooded area. Kids are buried in a circle.' I asked her who the kids were. She said she could write down one of the names. She wrote 'Billy.'"

Janis wrote on an envelope, which she gave to Sgt. Elwood, "Dad kild Karen." The policeman asked her to draw him a sad picture and a happy picture. She drew a picture of a man with one of his hands between the legs of a smaller person. She told him that it showed her dad putting his fingers in her. She had drawn smiles on the faces but then changed them into glum faces, saying, "It's not a happy picture. It's a sad picture."

Sgt. Elwood stayed for several hours talking to the children and Mrs. McInnis. He told the court, "After speaking with the children, I cannot explain or understand how both tell such details of bizarre happenings. I find it very difficult to understand how a young child could be so consistent with the same stories. What impressed me more than anything was how normal childhood conversations would lapse into other subjects without prompting. I find it hard to understand how these children were not telling the truth."

He phoned Sgt. Bowen at about 11:30 that evening and strongly suggested that he should come to the house. He said that Bowen stated that there was nothing he could do that Elwood had not already done, and refused to come. Bowen then phoned Lesley Morgan and told her that he didn't believe anything the children were saying.

Sgt. Elwood phoned Sgt. Gruhl. He said that the McInnises were very level-headed people, who were not known to be alarmist. Sgt. Elwood was not able to stay any longer. Before he left the house, however, he requested that Sgt. Gruhl order the officers on the beat to do some additional patrols of the area that night. He later wrote a strongly worded report in which he recommended further police investigation, and that the children's father and mother and Gary Evans all be advised that the police had been informed of the allegations.

Sgt. Bowen responded sarcastically in his report: "Suddenly now the children report that their father is involved in the mass killing of babies. They prove they are telling the truth by urinating in fear as they tell the story. We do not believe what they say, because of the stories they have told us that are untrue."

He later explained to the court that the untrue stories he was referring to related to the murder of children, and to the man with a son called Billy, who was supposed to be the superintendent of the apartment building where the girls used to live. The police had checked at the building and discovered that the superintendent was not dead, and did not have a son named Billy. They also ran a computer check on missing persons; there were no missing children who had names similar to those mentioned by the girls, and who the girls had claimed were dead. He said he was also skeptical about the alleged plot because "from what we knew about the relationship between Gary Evans and Gordon Wells, we didn't for a minute suspect they would join forces to do anything."

Sgt. Bowen agreed that if he had gone to the McInnis home the night "the plan" was reported, he might have obtained some first-hand information from the children—but he said that he had other priorities that night. He said he and his partner did drive by the McInnis home several times during the night, and saw nothing suspicious. He said he had been busy investigating an assault on a witness in a murder case.

Judge Beckett questioned Sgt. David Broom closely, asking why the girls' father was not interviewed immediately when these new allegations surfaced. "I am curious to know," he said, "why you took from May 23 to July 5 to interview an accused person in a sexual abuse case."

The sergeant replied, "We were required to work on other duties. Maybe the frustration of investigation was dwelling on us at this point."

The judge pursued the issue: "You had a brand-new lead: allegations of sexual abuse, wearing a mask, a picture of the devil. All those allegations are extremely serious, if true. They were made to Sgt. Elwood, an experienced officer whose opinion you would rely upon."

Sgt. Broom responded, "Our superiors told us to stop the investigation for a while."

Catherine told the court: "When Sgt. Elwood left, we just cuddled together in the kitchen like scared rabbits. I had the same feeling as if we were in some remote area like New Guinea, where you don't have protection of any kind."

The next day the Children's Aid Society decided to move the whole family to the Holiday Inn for a few days to insure their protection. Before they left, there was a phone call from Gordon Wells. Catherine said she told him, "Your wife and her boyfriend were in my house last week." She said the girls' father replied, "Oh my wife would never do that." She let Linda talk to her father but had to cut her off when the child started to say, "We're going away on a trip."

The McInnis family stayed in the hotel until they could make arrangements for new security measures at their home. When they returned, however, it would be without the foster children.

At the hotel the girls continued to talk about the murder and cannibalism and the plot to kill the McInnis family. One day in the restaurant Linda had a steak-on-a-bun meal. Catherine and Grace both described how the child took a bit of the meat and then said, "I can't eat her. I can't eat this because she's sad, her face is so sad. She didn't want to die. She is crying. She didn't want to just be meat. They killed her. They'll kill us too. When they feel like it, they'll kill everyone."

On the children's menu at the restaurant there was a cartoon with a picture of someone holding a shovel. Catherine said the children told her, "That's the shovel they take to the graveyard."

Catherine heard from neighbors that a suspicious car had been seen around her house after they left. The police were asked to check this out, but did not find anything that caused them to be concerned.

While they were at the hotel, Catherine came to a painful decision. Her whole family had been badly shaken by the threat on their lives. She was afraid that as long as the children remained in her home they were all in danger, and she felt that the worry would prevent her giving the children the care and attention that they needed. After consulting with her husband and daughters and CAS representatives, Catherine decided that she had to ask that the children be moved to another foster home. She sat down with Linda and Janis and told them, "You know we love you, and we really like you. But because of the danger, and because of the plan you told us about, you have to be moved so that you can be safe somewhere."

Catherine sadly explained to the court how "Janis kept saying, 'I thought you would never tell anyone the things we told you.' I said, 'I have to tell, to make the world safer so that all of those things won't happen to little children.' She seemed to block out the real reason. She was angry at me. She said you just don't want us."

Janis and Linda were moved to a new foster home on May 24, 1985. Catherine never saw them or talked to them again. The girls never subsequently spoke ill of their first foster mother, although they continued to harbor a deep resentment over what they considered a rejection and a betrayal from the only person they had ever trusted.

After they were moved to their new foster home, the children continued to make disturbing disclosures. Their new foster parents, Helen and Stanley Kovaks, were down-to-earth country people, who started off being extremely skeptical of the girls' stories and usually tried to discourage them from talking about such things. For a long time they were afraid to take Linda to visit their friends and acquaintances, fearing that the child would blurt out, "My mom put her finger in me."

The Kovakses wanted to believe that their simple way of life and the caring environment they provided for the girls would soon dispel what they thought were morbid fantasies. But they soon found that, in spite of their disbelief, they were having to wrestle with the suspicion that the children were telling the truth. They were concerned by Linda's lack of modesty, the way she would often lie on the floor and spread her legs widely. One day they were disturbed to discover Janis lying on top of Linda, kissing her younger sister on the mouth and neck.

The foster parents were mystified by the way the younger child associated her father with the devil. She told them, "When he dies he will go to the devil." They were alarmed one day when Linda watched Mr. Kovaks use a knife to cut a melon and remarked, "That's smaller than the knife my dad used to kill little Elizabeth. She's buried in a never-ending graveyard." On another occasion the foster parents were out with the children and they drove by a graveyard. Janis started talking about skeletons, and asked Mrs. Kovaks if she had ever seen bones on shelves.

The incident that convinced Stan Kovaks that the girls might be telling the truth also involved a knife. It was a big curved knife that he used for cutting bush. Janis saw it lying around one day and said, "You wouldn't kill us with that, Uncle Stan?" Mr. Kovaks later testified that he saw sincerity and real terror in the child's face that day. "I knew then they had really gone through something," he told the court. "I figure now a lot of it has happened. It's awful hard to believe."

Stanley Kovaks said Janis had a way of staring that looked as if "someone has scared her half to death, or she's thinking of something that happened." He said Linda did the same thing sometimes: "Her face will screw up. She opens her mouth. Her tongue hangs out, and, if she's eating, she'll have food fall out of her mouth."

Just before she was due to testify at the wardship hearing, several months after the court case began, Mrs. Kovaks sat down with the girls individually and asked them to tell her what they could remember about what had happened to them before. Linda told her that her dad had killed two people and her mom had killed seven people. She spoke about the abuse with the bird, and the killing of Elizabeth. She said that her mom killed children in the basement of their house in Hamilton, laid them on the floor and would then clean up the blood with a cloth. There was a space under the basement steps where Linda said she used to keep her bike so it wouldn't get blood on it. She repeated the allegations of pornography at Channel 11 and talked about the Blob, saying that "he's dead now," and that Daddy killed him.

Janis also talked about the bird and the other sexual abuse allegations. She said her father had killed five girls and her mother had killed five boys. She said, "They took their heads off." She talked about the killing of Elizabeth and murders in the apartment in Toronto, where she said her mother would clean up the mess with paper towels and then throw them in the garbage. Like her sister, Janis spoke about the Blob and the Channel 11 allegations. She drew a picture of the graveyard, and talked about going there with bodies in the back of Gary's car.

"I thought it was hard to believe. But, when a little child tells you the same thing over and over, I believe she has experienced some of it or seen it," Mrs. Kovaks said.

Mrs. McInnis's ordeal was not over when she reluctantly concluded that Janis and Linda should be moved out of her home. A cruel trick of fate embroiled her in a similar case that led the court to conduct a further probe into her sanity and credibility. For several months after she parted with Janis and Linda, Mrs. McInnis had not felt able to take any new foster children. However, when a CAS social worker appealed to her in November, 1985, to take in some very difficult children who were in a state of great distress, she agreed to do so.

The two children, Lorne and Mary, were slightly older than Janis and Linda, but both under ten years old. They had apparently suffered a lifetime of abuse in a transient family that was involved with motorcycle gangs. They had come to the attention of the Children's Aid Society as the family moved from one community to another. Their father, who had served a prison term for assault with a deadly weapon, once threatened the CAS with his biker connections. The Hamilton-Wentworth CAS sent the children to Catherine McInnis because she was particularly adept at dealing with problem children. No-one at the agency could possibly have foreseen that these children would begin to relate, to the foster mother, stories of sexual abuse, murder, cannibalism, sodomy and bestiality that were similar to the allegations made by Janis and Linda.

The startling revelation that the same foster mother was reporting similar bizarre statements from a second pair of children seemed, at first, to present the easy solution that defense lawyers and many observers were hoping for—that the foster mother was obviously crazy. Although the allegations of Lorne and Mary were to be the subject of a separate Crown wardship hearing, some of the evidence in their case was presented to Judge Beckett during the Wells hearing in order to shed light on Mrs. McInnis's credibility.

This trial within a trial showed that the second pair of children made similar statements, sometimes with more detail, to several people besides Mrs. McInnis. Judge Beckett said that after hearing this evidence he was "satisfied Mrs. McInnis was truthful in her evidence concerning this other case." The court did not probe further into the new allegations, to answer the question of whether or not this was another disturbing case of satanic ritual abuse. If it were, it would clearly give credence to Janis's and Linda's stories, and would corroborate, to an alarming degree, the suggestion that there is some kind of satanic cult practicing murder and violent ritual in southern Ontario. However, evidence from an unrelated case was only admissible insofar as it shed light on the credibility of a witness.

There was also another quite feasible explanation for Lorne's and Mary's stories—that these disturbed children had somehow found out about Mrs. McInnis's involvement in the case of Janis and Linda, which was at that time already being publicized by the media, and had engaged in a very sick joke. After Mrs. McInnis had testified about the new foster children's stories, Judge Beckett asked if it had ever occurred to her that she had been set up. She replied that she had wondered about this, but came to believe the children's stories of satanic ritual. "In my wildest imagination I would have never thought that in a lifetime I would have been connected with it again," she said. The judge later told defense lawyers that the issue was Mrs. McInnis's credibility, not her gullibility.

While the allegations that gave rise to these speculations were, in many respects, similar to those of Janis and Linda, there were many crucial differences. The children themselves were very different. For all the dreadful experiences they had to relate, Janis and Linda had maintained a quality of innocence. They seemed to be basically sweet little children, deeply traumatized, but sensitive and sincere. Mrs. McInnis said she also came to like Lorne and Mary, but they were definitely street-wise kids.

Lorne and Mary talked about other children being killed, tortured and cut up with a saw. They spoke about eating raw chicken and drinking its blood, going to a graveyard, wearing masks and costumes, dancing, singing, killing people and sharing out flesh to eat and take home in bowls. They talked about a man with a camera, and described going across the U.S. border from Windsor, Ontario, where they used to live, to find victims. They said the man with the camera liked to kill and eat people, and was called "Camera Man." The children said they had to help lure children into being kidnapped by playing games with them. They also described bestiality and went into graphic details about "sex and slaughter sessions," which, Mrs. McInnis said, contained "brutality beyond description." She said the children told her things "that would curl the paint off the walls."

Catherine observed that, unlike Janis and Linda, these new children "never cried and never showed emotion. They would laugh a rather nervous laugh when they spoke about people begging for their lives, and how scared the children are when they see the saw."

These children did not seem to have anything like the same reticence as Janis and Linda when disclosing the alleged atrocities. Some of the things that Lorne and Mary said appeared glib and childish; however, they contained some grotesque elements that had never surfaced in the Wells children's allegations. Some of the more believable details in Lorne's and Mary's stories were related in a subsequent interview with a police officer. This helped the court reach the conclusion that, whether or not the children were telling the truth, they had indeed told Mrs. McInnis what she said they had told her. Defense lawyers who tried to challenge the foster mother's evidence on this did not later question her credibility in their final submissions to the judge.

Catherine McInnis described to the court the turmoil that these new children's allegations put her in. She said she told her husband one night, "I'm in an awful mess. I don't know what to do. I'm certainly not going to tell everybody this happened to me again." She said her husband told her, "You have to do what's right." She said she consulted Ms. Morgan and explained to her that she was afraid, because "I felt people thought I was crazy for the first time." She asked that Lorne and Mary be removed as soon as possible so they could make their disclosures to somebody else. She asked Ms. Morgan to be discreet about her involvement, because "I didn't want anybody to know that I had children telling me anything as bizarre as this again. I was afraid what people would think."

Lorne's and Mary's allegations were more detailed and specific than those of Janis and Linda in their references to satanism and ritual. In describing what happened at the graveyard, Mary said, "We twirl and dance. Big people swing each other. We sing, 'The devil is good.' We sing how nice Satan is, that he's so good and smart."

They talked about people dressing up as devils and witches, and spoke of the Prince of Power. They described burning candles, and putting needles in a doll before burying it. They said they were made to drink a mixture of blood, wine and urine; this is a known satanist ritual that parodies the Christian Eucharist. The children told the foster mother that a teenage girl involved in these rituals said, "God is a dumbbell, stupid and I hate his guts." They described another person singing, "Jesus humps everyone, poisons everyone." One of the children once told Catherine, "I hate Jesus 'cause I know he's bad. Jesus is ugly."

While it was hard to believe all that these children said, it seemed quite likely that they had been exposed to some quite bizarre practices. In a statement that ominously echoed comments made by Janis and Linda, Mary quoted a man, who, from her descriptions, appeared to be the leader of the group of people engaging in these rituals: "Mike says nobody will ever catch them. They know what they are doing."

Mike may well have been right. It was certainly not the job of Judge Beckett's court to try to catch them. Once the judge had decided that Mrs. McInnis's credibility had not been impugned in any way, the parallel story of Lorne and Mary would no longer play a part in the case of Janis and Linda. However, when Mr. Wells later mentioned that his wife had once taken Janis and Linda to visit an uncle in Windsor, the scene of the other children's alleged abuse, several people involved in the case began to speculate, albeit with flimsy evidence, that there may be some link between these two similar accounts of savage rituals.

PART THREE

THE INVESTIGATIONS

CHAPTER 10

POLICE INVOLVEMENT

The investigation of child sexual abuse involves many sensitive and complex problems, and requires the involvement of specialists in several different fields. It can be seen as a social problem, a crime, a disease, or all three at once. Depending on how the situation is perceived, the goal of an investigation might be protecting the children, preserving the family, punishing the offender or getting medical treatment for the perpetrator and the victim. Usually these goals coalesce, but sometimes they come into conflict. This is why it is generally recognized that good communication and teamwork between social agencies, doctors, police and prosecutors is essential in sexual abuse cases.

Rather than co-operating with one another in investigating the allegations of Janis and Linda, the Hamilton-Wentworth Regional Police and the Children's Aid Society pursued separate goals, reached completely different conclusions and ended up openly hostile to one another. Part of the reason for this lay in the different assumptions and predispositions the investigators each took to the case. Behind such assumptions one can see a difference in training, methods and philosophy. One cause for conflict was that the police only felt responsible for investigating the matter if it could lead to criminal charges, while the CAS had the goal of protecting the children. The social workers and psychiatrists listened to the children's story, analyzed its credibility and assessed it in relation to the girls' history and that of other family members. The police officers looked for physical evidence. They did not find the type of evidence they were looking for, and therefore concluded that the children were not telling the truth. The child care professionals concluded that the children were telling the truth, and were frustrated that the police did not take the children's allegations seriously.

The police and the CAS began their investigations of the Wells case with the best of intentions. A protocol had recently been agreed to in Hamilton-Wentworth that was supposed to insure co-operation and a free exchange of information in such cases. In accordance with that protocol, police were present when the children were first interviewed by the agency's child abuse specialist, and social workers were there when the mother was confronted with the girls' allegations. Information was passed back and forth about the further disclosures that were made in the foster home, and the police responded to these when they were called upon to do so.

At the beginning of the case after attending the specialist's interviews with the children, Sgt. Broom believed that the girls had been sexually abused. But when the mother denied the allegations, Sgt. Broom was in a position where the only evidence to support his belief was the statements of two young girls whose testimony would probably not be accepted in a criminal court, given the rules of evidence that applied at that time. Some questions were raised at the hearing as to whether better police work, even at this early stage in the investigation, might have resulted in evidence being uncovered. Sgt. Broom missed his best opportunity to confront Gary Evans about the children's statements on the day Sharon Wells was first confronted at the CAS.

On March 8, 1985, about nine days after they were first informed of the children's allegations of abuse, police executed a search warrant at Sharon's home. Sgt. Broom went with Sgt. David Bowen, his partner, who had been away the previous week. Bowen was slightly older than Broom, and the senior officer on their two-man team. Although they worked well together, the difference in style and character between the two men was as great as the contrast between Broom's thick dark hair and Bowen's partially bald head. While Broom was reserved and reticent, Bowen was aggressive and opinionated. The older man was perhaps sharper and better educated, but he was not always a good listener and was prone to sarcasm.

According to Sgt. Bowen's testimony at the hearing, the search, which was conducted while Sharon and Gary were absent from the house, produced no evidence. Lesley Morgan, the social worker, testified that police told her they removed some towels, which they thought might be stained with semen, during the raid, but neither of the officers mentioned this in their evidence or referred to it in their written reports.

In his testimony before the court, Sgt. Bowen agreed with lawyers' suggestions that the best course of action on hearing the allegations would have been to move quickly to search the house, so there was no time to dispose of evidence. But he said that Broom did not know that the girls had mentioned being abused with a vibrator until after the March 7 interview, and it was only after that disclosure that a search was deemed necessary. He also agreed that it is normally desirable, where there are two alleged perpetrators, to interview them separately and early on in the investigation.

On March 11 the police closed their investigation of the case, stating in a report that "it is quite evident that both of these children have been sexually assaulted, yet because of their age their evidence in court would be unsworn. Since neither of the suspects have admitted to this offense and there is no corroboration to prove what these children are saying is true, there is not enough evidence at this time to lay any charges."

When the children began making their more serious allegations of pornography and ritual violence, the CAS urged the police to reopen their investigation. Although they did so, it is clear from the statements made to the foster mother and social worker and in police reports that Sgt. Bowen, the senior officer on the investigating team, quickly concluded that the children's stories were "beyond belief." He reached this conclusion without talking to the children, whom his partner had found believable when they made their earlier disclosures.

Judge Beckett stated in his final judgement, "The reluctance of the police who investigated the case to believe more than sexual abuse allegations was understandable—they reflected the natural abhorrence of any normal person at the very thought that children in our community could possibly be involved in such matters."

If natural abhorrence to the alleged crime was the basis for closing a case, few police investigations would ever be undertaken. The police clearly had a duty to investigate any allegation, however bizarre, so Sgt. Bowen and Sgt. Broom did reopen the case. They opened it and closed it five times between March 11 and July 26, on each occasion following up on additional information provided by the CAS and each time failing to find evidence that they considered significant.

As police officers became more incredulous of the children's strange stories, social workers and psychiatrists became more convinced that the children were telling the truth, and began complaining about inadequacies in the police investigation. These complaints were explored during the hearing. The police explained that they had begun a massive surveillance operation when the allegations of pornography were first made but abandoned it when the children's stories got more bizarre and further investigation showed that some of the information provided by the girls was false. The CAS representatives responded that the police officers had not taken the trouble to find out the exact contents of the children's statements. It was not a case of the girls giving wrong information, but the police misunderstanding what they had said.

The exchange of information between the police and the CAS degenerated to the point where the Children's Aid Society had to obtain a court order to obtain police reports on the case, and, when police wanted access to the agency's files, they were told they would have to get a search warrant. The conflict between the two groups was so pronounced that, during the Crown wardship hearing, the CAS lawyer, John Harper, attempted to have the investigating police officers declared as hostile witnesses. He also tried to have senior police representatives cited for contempt of court in connection with an alleged attempt to persuade a court official to disclose what he might have overheard lawyers saying about the case. When Lesley Morgan reported a break-and-entry at her home soon after the police testified in the case, CAS representatives accused the Hamilton-Wentworth police of conducting the break-in to search for compromising material about her or the foster mother. An Ontario Provincial Police investigation of this allegation concluded that it was without foundation, and a private investigator working for the CAS was charged with public mischief.

This grotesque breakdown in communication and co-operation was epitomized by a somewhat comic episode in July, 1985, when police took the children and Lesley Morgan on a trip to Toronto in a quixotic search for evidence of ritual burials. The excursion ended with an exaggerated version of the intense frustration well known to parents who have to take young children for long car rides in hot weather. The children refused to help look for the graveyard where they said the rituals took place, because they were not allowed to go on the rides at Canada's Wonderland. Although the police promised them ice cream cones, and, according to Sgt. Bowen, Ms. Morgan pleaded on her hands and knees with Janis, the girls maintained this hard bargaining position. When the police threatened that they would not be allowed to go home until they found the graveyard, Linda began to identify several unlikely places as the scene of the bloody rituals. A psychiatrist who saw a transcript of a tape recording made by police that day later told the court: "For the last third of this interview I don't think anybody in the car was in their right mind."

Sgt. Bowen and Sgt. Broom taped conversations in the car that day without informing Lesley Morgan. This infuriated the social worker and her superiors at the Children's Aid Society, particularly as the police officers did not tape record a conversation with the children's father on the same day. It seemed to underline CAS workers' suspicions that the police were more intent on trying to catch the children in a lie, or the social worker in some attempt to manipulate the children, than they were in challenging the people the girls had accused.

Sgt. Bowen said the conversations were taped because he doubted the accuracy of Ms. Morgan's perceptions. He said he and his partner forgot to tell her they were making a tape. When he was asked in court if the social worker was under suspicion, he said she was not, but added "she came under suspicion for something else, which has nothing to do with this case." He did not explain to the court that the "crime" of which the police subsequently suspected Ms. Morgan was painting shadows on a city sidewalk to commemorate the anniversary of the bombing of Hiroshima, and that the reason that they suspected her of this offense was that she openly acknowledged that she had done it.

Sgt. Broom was more diplomatic in his explanation to Judge Beckett, who was obviously disturbed by the notion that police should secretly record conversations with a professional person with whom they were supposed to be collaborating, but not bother to do so when they talked to a suspect. "It was a long day. There was no intent to deceive. It was only meant to assist as an investigative tool. I don't know why it was not on with Gordon Wells," Sgt. Broom said.

It was, as Sgt. Broom said, a long day. On the way to Toronto the children began complaining of the heat in the back of the car, and the police officers explained to Ms. Morgan, who sat in the back with the girls, that the air-conditioning was not working. When told that they would be going to stop by their father's house before they went looking for the graveyard, Janis said, "I don't want to go to my dad's home." A little while later she complained, "I'm sick and tired. I don't want to go anywhere." Her sister echoed her sentiments by responding to a question, "I'm not telling you. I'm sick and tired." The irrepressible Linda did start talking to the policemen eventually, and Janis told her to "shut up." Janis was told that her help was needed to find the graveyard, and she replied, "I ain't gonna show anybody nothing, and I don't have to."

The first stop in Toronto was in the center of the city, where the police were looking for an occult store that had a bad reputation, according to an Ontario Provincial Police officer who specialized in cult investigations. They parked in front of where the store should have been, but found that it was no longer in existence. While the two policemen were out of the car looking up and down the street, Janis looked up towards the empty storefront and said, "Oh, 666." Ms.

Morgan could not see the number written anywhere, and asked Janis if she had seen it, but the child changed the subject.

The next stop in an excursion that was becoming quite a frightening ordeal for the children was the housing project where they used to live in Toronto. There the police questioned the children about the character to whom Sgt. Bowen referred as "the infamous Blob." This was a rather confused conversation, because the police officers were under the impression that the Blob and the Channel 11 man were the same person, and that the children had said that the Blob used to be the superintendent in their building. The police had established to their satisfaction that nobody answering the description of the Blob or the Channel 11 man had been superintendent of the building. They were not aware that several different people had acted as assistant superintendents at the project while the children lived there. They were also convinced, as a result of their earlier investigations, that children who Janis and Linda had said were dead were in fact alive, and were in the children's classes at school. But it emerged from the interrogation of the children that day that the police officers did not have a clear grasp of many of the details of the children's allegations.

They drove to the house where the girls' father, Gordon Wells, was living. When the girls saw their father, they ran up to him and hugged him, saying, "We love you, Daddy." The police officers later mentioned to Ms. Morgan that they were surprised at this reaction, but the social worker indicated that it is common for abused children to continue to express love towards an abusing parent.

This was the girls' first contact with their father since the Victoria Day weekend. His access rights had been abruptly withdrawn after the girls' story about the plan to kill the foster parents. Ms. Morgan had talked to him on the phone a few days later. He had denied the allegations and told the social worker, "I'll sue the shit out of you." He was very angry and went on to exclaim, "Gary and her in that goddamn house. Sharon has those kid so screwed up. The kids are mentally unbalanced. They are treating them like a bag of dirt. Of course they're going to have imaginations."

The police had never seen Gordon until they arrived with Ms. Morgan and the children on July 5. He told the police officers that he would not allow them into his house without a search warrant. They attempted to obtain one later in the day, but were unsuccessful. They spoke to Gordon outside the house and asked him about the devil picture. He produced a drawing, which he said he had done ten or fifteen years before, of a sinister face with long dark hair and a black beard. He said that Sharon's sister, whom he described as a Jesus freak, thought it was a picture of the devil. The police officers did not see it that way, but Ms. Morgan said it reminded her of pictures of Satan that she had seen in books. Sgt. Bowen later noted in a report: "Like everything else in this case, horror is in the eye of the beholder."

The police officer noticed that the man had a tattoo on his arm of "a chubby little devil." He told them he was not a satanist and denied the alleged plot to kill the McInnis family on the Victoria Day weekend. Sgt. Bowen later described Gordon Wells as "a bit of a rounder, somewhat violent and short tempered." Although the man did not have a criminal record, Sgt. Bowen said, "I would argue he fits my definition of a criminal: the way he talks, his attitude, his associates, the way he talked about Sharon, very vehement about how much he hated her. He insists he's not a kiddy diddler, and that he was very upset about what happened to his children. He talked in language that you often hear from people from perhaps his social background that he looks down strongly on kiddy diddlers. I don't believe for a minute that he is a satanist. I find no evidence to support this. I believed that he didn't plan to kill the McInnises with his ex-wife and Gary Evans."

Gordon Wells did not seem very smart, Sgt. Bowen observed. When he was asked in court how he came to that conclusion, he said, "By his talking. Smart people don't talk to police."

Sgt. Bowen's view of what happened during the rest of the day was quite different from what the social worker reported. The tape recording, which the police had made because they did not trust the social worker's perceptions, proved to be a considerable embarrassment to them, as it clearly showed that their version of the conversations with the children was incorrect.

Sgt. Bowen said the children emphatically denied the allegations "often and throughout the day," even though Lesley Morgan "produced many and various inducements to get them to talk." He told the court, "Janis specifically said there were no dead children and I believed her. I asked her if the stories of the dead children were true. She asked, 'What happens if it's not true?' I said, 'Nothing.' She said, 'It's all a big story.'"

He told the court that Lesley Morgan subsequently pleaded with the child to tell the truth, falling on her hands and knees and shaking her, saying, "It's very important for other children." Ms. Morgan denied this scene, Sgt. Broom did not see it and Sgt. Bowen did not record it either in his reports or his notes.

Sgt. Bowen also told the court, "When Janis wanted to go to Canada's Wonderland, I wouldn't promise her anything, quite properly so. It was my impression Morgan was saying they could see Wonderland later on." When challenged on this, he was not able to find the relevant quote in the transcript of the tape. Asked to give another example of the social worker's inducement to get the children to talk, he referred to a line in the transcript where Ms. Morgan was quoted as saying, "We're not going home until . . . [inaudible]." He said she had gone on to say something about finding the graveyard.

"We believe, when taking statements from accused or witnesses, you have to let them tell their stories. The CAS, in dealing with children, accept that you manipulate and oppress them until they tell you what you want to hear," said Sgt. Bowen.

The tape recording, which John Harper played to the court during his cross-examination of Sgt. Bowen, showed that the children were upset about not being allowed to go to Canada's Wonderland, and very reluctant to talk about the graveyard. Janis said, "I know, but I don't want to tell you, because I don't want to go there." The older child did begin to talk about the murder allegations: "I know why they killed the Blob, because he's too mean." She started to talk about the graveyard, but Sgt. Bowen interrupted her with a challenging question based on his confusion of the Blob and the Channel 11 man.

Sgt. Bowen had to agree when Mr. Harper suggested, "You didn't let them tell their story?

"You were obviously giving them the wrong facts," said Harper, quoting a passage from the transcript where the sergeant said to Janis, "'You told Catherine that the Blob was the superintendent,' and the child replied, 'No I did not. I didn't tell her that.'"

Referring to another section of the transcript where Janis talked about seeing "the dead kids," Harper said to Bowen, quoting from the transcript, "You directly challenged Janis. 'Did you make up the story about the dead kids?' Janis said, 'No.' Linda suggests that, 'Maybe Mom did.' Janis said, 'No.' When Janis said, 'We went to Channel 11. Mom and Gary and Andy's mom stuck fingers in us,' you challenged them again. Janis said, 'She did. It did happen at Channel 11.' I suggest to you that in spite of persistent and many challenges, and wrong facts put to the children, the children were telling you what they had told others up to this point."

Sgt. Bowen was again forced to agree, and was then further embarrassed by the next quotations from the transcript, which showed him telling the children, "Just show me where the cemetery is, and we'll go straight home," and then saying, "I'll help get you guys up to Wonderland some other time. You can come some other day, and they'll bring you."

"I suggest it wasn't Lesley Morgan who suggested that the children would get to Canada's Wonderland. It was you," said Harper.

Sgt. Bowen replied, "I was trying to leave it as vague as possible, but I understand. I agree I was the first to give in."

"I'm suggesting to you that you purposefully misled this court the other day," the lawyer went on, "indicating many and various inducements, citing Canada's Wonderland when the evidence clearly shows it was you. After the children stood up to many of your challenges, I suggest, Sergeant, on this long hot day, you finally got your denial."

The denial came after a meandering excursion through the countryside with Linda, who scarcely knew left from right, gallantly but quite arbitrarily directing the two policemen on a wild-goose chase in search of the graveyard to which the children had said they were driven at night more than six months before. Janis steadfastly refused to give directions, but did start to draw a picture of the graveyard for the police. She drew the house where she said the Blob lived, but scribbled it out when Sgt. Bowen aggressively told her that she had previously said that the Blob lived in an apartment in Toronto, and asked her, "Are you lying now, or were you lying before?"

In a report the following day, Sgt. Bowen wrote: "We have reached that stage when we've got a denial and they don't believe it. We can't prove or disprove it." He said the children's stories "are probably based on some fact, then exaggerated beyond all truth. But the CAS believe what they said, and have the psychiatrists swearing that children never lie."

One of the psychiatrists who later assessed the credibility of the children's statements said after reviewing the transcript of the police tape recording, "They were asking kids questions there is no way kids of that age could answer, dangling the bribe of a trip to Canada's Wonderland and ice cream cones, then becoming frustrated, and alternating between putting the kids down and putting pressure on them."

CHAPTER 11

INVESTIGATION RESUMED

Hamilton-Wentworth Crown Attorney Dean Paquette was concerned. His review of Sgt. Broom's and Sgt. Bowen's investigation indicated that there were many unanswered questions. "Further investigation is warranted," he said in a letter to the police that listed 40 specific items that he wanted them to check into. He described the allegations as "bizarre and difficult to believe," and went on to state, "The fact that something such as this could take place in this jurisdiction is hard to accept for anyone. All steps should be taken to determine whether or not what the children allege is true, and if true can it be presented in a criminal court of law. To successfully investigate this matter will require innovative police investigation by individuals committed to the task. . . . It is hoped that through full exchange of information between the Children's Aid Society and the Hamilton-Wentworth Regional Police the truthfulness of these allegations can be determined."

Hugh Atwood, the lawyer representing the Ontario Official Guardian at the wardship hearing, referred to this letter in his final submissions when he argued that the court should not consider Sgt. Bowen and Sgt. Broom to be credible witnesses: "The fact that the Crown Attorney for Hamilton-Wentworth had to send a letter to the police outlining the responsibilities in the investigation speaks volumes to Sgt. Bowen's and Sgt. Broom's lack of effort on this case."

In fact, the first item on the list of matters for further investigation exposed what would appear to be a glaring hole in the police work. On August 9, 1985, five months after the police heard convincing allegations from the children that they had been grossly sexually abused by Gary Evans, they were asked to find out where Evans lived and worked and whether he had a criminal record. The police had previously received confusing information from Sharon about where her boyfriend was working, because he was working at two different jobs, one of which required him to travel. She had been vague about where he lived, claiming she did not know his parents' address although she had visited their home, which was also Gary's official residence, many times.

When police officers had tried to talk to Gary at Sharon's home, he told them they were putting his life in jeopardy and that they should investigate the matter further, but refused to say any more to them. As the police officers made no attempt to probe Gary's strange statement, one can only speculate about what kind of involvement this man had that caused him to feel his life was threatened and what it was that he thought they should investigate further. Sgt. Broom told the court that he was mildly surprised that Gary had refused to talk to the police. "I found that unusual, considering the severity of the situation. But in 17 years of dealing with people I've found a lot of odd people on the street."

In response to Paquette's letter, the police officers stated that Gary Evans had no criminal record and gave Paquette the other information requested, noting that Gary's family was very protective. The Crown attorney had also requested that the police do some research on voodoo and examine any possible connection that Evans might have with this Caribbean sect. The police reported that the literature on voodoo contains references to the sacrifice of children and animals, but no references to eating feces, drinking urine or performing sexual acts. They said that Evans left the Caribbean region in early childhood, and that his family was Christian. A warrant to search his room at his family home near Toronto was obtained, and in order to execute it the police said they had to fight their way into the house amidst much screaming and obstruction. They said they found no evidence of pornographic, voodoo or satanist material. They did find several hours of videotape recordings of Christian religious services or lectures, Sgt. Bowen said.

The Crown attorney's list included checks of medical records, further investigations of opinions of doctors and psychiatrists, investigations of people who may have been named in the children's stories and research on the backgrounds of the children's parents and their relationship. The police were asked to question Gordon Wells about whether he had been threatening his ex-wife. They reported that Wells denied any threats, but admitted that he was "ready to kill her" when he found out she was moving to Hamilton.

Gordon Wells admitted to police when they interviewed him on August 13 that he kept a machete in the back of his car. He also told the police that he did not see the children for several months after they moved to Hamilton. This conflicted with information Lesley Morgan had about visits the girls' mother made to Toronto, but, as a result of the breakdown in communication between the police and the CAS, the social worker and the police never exchanged notes on such details. The girls' father also mentioned to the police officers that his ex-wife had a videocassette recorder while she was living in Toronto. No VCR had been found when her Hamilton home was searched in March, 1985. Judge Beckett asked Sgt. Broom at the hearing if he had ever questioned Sharon Wells about the VCR, and the sergeant replied, "I'm not sure we ever covered that."

Paquette asked the police to obtain pictures of all the employees of the television station, in order that they could be shown to the children by "someone with whom they are comfortable and not the police." CHCH television would not comply with this request. Lesley Morgan would later testify that she formed the impression that the television station was more anxious about avoiding being implicated in a scandal than about helping a full investigation of the children's allegations.

The Crown attorney also asked the police to obtain a list of cemeteries around the northern section of Toronto, and to visit these in order to compare them with the diagram made by the foster mother when she listened to the children's stories. Sgt. Bowen and Sgt. Broom subsequently did a quick check on every cemetery they could identify in the area, and found nothing that matched the children's description. They explained in court that they had rushed from one cemetery to another, only stopping for a few moments at each one. They did not include private cemeteries in their search, though there are several in the area.

The police did some research on satanic ritual. Sgt. Broom told the court, "Other people came to us saying there is such a thing. I must believe there is some type of satanic cult that is available on the streets today." Harper had suggested he contact a San Francisco policewoman who specializes in occult investigations, and a sheriff in Toledo, Ohio, where police were attempting to unearth bodies that were supposedly interred by a satanic cult. But, Sgt. Broom said, "that proved to be erroneous."

Sgt. Broom was correct that the Spencer Township, Ohio, investigation into alleged satanic ritual murders of children did not succeed in unearthing bodies, but posts were found that could have been used for binding people, together with a headless doll with a small pentagram ornament nailed to a board, an eight-inch dagger with blood on it and a crucifix mounted upside down. This finding is typical of the kind of tantalizing, but ultimately inconclusive, evidence that has been encountered in attempts to corroborate allegations of satanic ritual crimes.

Ritual crimes pose a peculiar dilemma for law enforcement officers. Dale Griffis, the former police chief from Tiffin, Ohio, says that satanic allegations "put a lot of law enforcement people in limbo. They get nailed either way." If police appear to fail to take allegations seriously, they can be severely criticized, as the Hamilton police have been, but they can also very easily be made to look foolish if they go on a fruitless search for bodies in unlikely places. A sheriff who was convinced that children in Bakersfield, California, were telling the truth was subjected to considerable public ridicule when his attempts to dig for bodies were unsuccessful.

"We are all trying to figure out how to deal with this new element," Larry Dunn, a sheriff's deputy from Port Angeles, Washington, who specializes in training police officers in child sexual abuse investigations, said in an interview. He said the bizarreness of the cases makes them more difficult, as do the fear and control exercised on children to prevent them from talking and the skill that the cult groups seem to have at covering their tracks. He explained that the lack of evidence is often misleading, since children's perceptions can easily be distorted by drugs or by illusions created by adults. He said these cases require more investigation, because "you are dealing with a lot of information that doesn't bear out. It doesn't mean that what the kids are telling you is not true. We're feeling our way right now. It's so different and we just don't have the training.

"We're swimming. A lot of agencies are treading water. We're trying to assess what we're dealing with. I feel that if these groups exist they're way ahead of the game," said Dan Clarke, a police detective from San Bernardino, California. Detective Clarke is one of a small but steadily increasing number of law enforcement police officers across North America who have looked at the alarmingly consistent hallmarks of ritual abuse and concluded that there is a clear possibility that there might be an organized network of satanic cults engaging in torturing and molesting children. He says he is persuaded by "the number of reports coming in, the number of victims, the consistency, that somewhere out there is such a group of people doing that sort of thing." Yet, he admits, it is so hard to believe: "We can accept a person being involved in mass homicide. But, for some reason or other, this is hard to accept.

"It seems to be based on behavior modification of children, a brainwashing type of abuse that takes away anything the children identify with or have faith in," Detective Clarke said in an interview. "There are small indications that it might be an organized movement. We're trying to determine if it's valid. I don't think there is a Crimes Against Children Unit that hasn't run into it." His speculations about the motives for such a group "sound pretty bizarre," the detective admits. "There are people who do it to appease a deity of some sort. Some are really religious. There are other people who are just seeking power and sexual gratification. Behind the whole thing there may be a motive of people trying to change the thinking of youth for a future generation."

All this is completely beyond the experience of traditional criminal investigators, who expect perpetrators to be motivated by greed or passion, and are certainly not used to dealing with crimes where the physical evidence is scarce, the witnesses are confused and frightened children, and the prime resources are psychiatrists and experts in the occult. In the past, when ritual elements have been found in a child abuse case, that aspect of the crime has generally been ignored and suppressed as police concentrated on a prosecution for sexual abuse. The criminal cases in the United States that have concentrated on the more bizarre ritual aspects of children's allegations have usually floundered in a sea of controversy, while the more successful prosecutions of this type of case have tended to downplay the ritual aspects, and often have completely excluded such elements from the evidence presented to the court.

When police officers do believe these strange allegations of ritual abuse, they often find themselves in conflict with their peers, their superiors and prosecutors, and vulnerable to ridicule and attack from defense lawyers, the media and members of the public. Child sexual abuse expert Roland Summit said in an interview, "We have a poor history of dealing with the cases. Once the issue of murder comes up and there are no bodies, it is used to ridicule the investigation and intimidate the kids."

The conflicting views that such allegations inspire among law enforcement officers was illustrated in an ambiguous but disturbing report that came over the Canadian Press wire just a few weeks before Judge Beckett delivered his final judgement in the Hamilton wardship hearing. The report from Edmonton, Alberta, stated:

> Devil worshippers may have been involved in several unsolved child abduction cases in Alberta, says an RCMP constable who has studied satanic cults for the past four years.
>
> "Children have a strong significance in satanic rituals and

there are suggestions they may be used," Constable Jim Brown wrote in a report on the subject.

He said satanists are believed to have been involved in an attempted child kidnapping in Red Deer in the summer of 1985 on one of 13 annual satanic "holy days."

Spokesmen for Edmonton police and for the RCMP's Alberta headquarters in Edmonton discounted the possibility of a cult connection with well-known missing children cases.

There is no evidence to substantiate that a satanic cult was connected with the January 1983 disappearance of six-year-old Tania Murrell, said city police spokesman Lori Nagy.

RCMP Sgt. Wayne Gesy said Tania Murrell is one of five children the police have wanted to find for years.

"I'm not aware of any specific investigation towards any cult," he said.

Brown wrote that satanic cults are likely responsible not only for some child abductions but for a string of other crimes in the Calgary and Red Deer areas since 1982. The other cases include assaults, extortions, animal mutilations, grave robberies and "ritualistic sacrifice of hitchhikers," he said.

His report said satanists are rarely prosecuted in Canada because they go to great lengths to avoid detection.

"You can't get much evidence because satanic cults are so clandestine and cover themselves up well."

Rena Kirkham of Childfind Alberta, a group which tries to locate missing children, said she knows there is a suspected connection between abductions and satanic cults.

"It's definitely possible," she said in an interview. "If you look at the dates some of the children went missing there's a pattern."

Of the five most mysterious disappearances investigated by Childfind, she said, two took place on the day of satanic festivals and two occurred during the same week as satanic festivals.

> Brown, who started probing satanism while investigating animal mutilations in the Red Deer area, said the biggest obstacle in nabbing devil worshippers is that most police officers "think it is all hocus-pocus."
>
> Red Deer RCMP Insp. Larry Pearson said he supports Brown's investigations. "There are lots of things that happen and I don't think they could all be coincidences," he said. "I think the satanists are real. I know they're out there."

The Ontario Provincial Police (OPP) had one intelligence officer who specializes in following up on reports of occult involvement in criminal activity. He does not consider himself an expert in the field, and referred a reporter who was seeking background information on satanic cults to Dale Griffis. Griffis visited Toronto to give a lecture to a university group in the fall of 1986, and said that police in Ontario are increasingly concerned about cult involvement in crime.

Sgt. Bowen contacted the OPP occult specialist in July, 1985, and later testified, "He told me there is no concrete proof of a satanic cult operating in Ontario, although there are a lot of suspicions. He told me that there should be reports of naked people at any satanic rites and the sound of ringing bells. There are no such reports from the children." Sgt. Bowen noted in a police report, "He mentioned some incidents during satanic rites such as killing of a child that should occur and the children are obviously not relating them. It is quite clear no satanic cult is operating here."

The police continued to follow up all the leads that the Crown attorney had asked them to pursue in order to conclude an investigation that Harper said was largely a matter of "going through the motions." Sgt. Bowen and Sgt. Broom talked to many people who claimed to have information on satanists in the Hamilton area. One of these people had what had seemed to be a promising lead about Gary, but that turned out to be a case of mistaken identity. Most of these informants were not very credible. One man talked to the police about his belief that black witchcraft had been involved in a child murder in Hamilton in the early 1980s. This informant, who called himself The Ambassador, also tried to interest local television reporters in his story, but did little to enhance his credibility with them when he phoned to cancel an appointment because he had been unavoidably detained in the psychiatric hospital. A man who called himself Mickey Mouse was also anxious to help anyone who would listen to him. One reporter felt he had a hot lead when an informant promised to direct him to the site of a cult meeting, but was unable to follow up on this as the informant had multiple personalities, and the reporter was never again able to reach the right personality over the phone.

The police replied to the Crown attorney's letter on September 12, 1985: "For a number of reasons we have reached the conclusion that the children are mixing up reality and fiction. This case highlights some of the inherent conflicts between the social welfare philosophy and legal requirements necessary for a criminal conviction. The children's revelations result from leading questions made in the presence of each other. In a treatment atmosphere this may be appropriate, but not in a legal forum. We are drawn to the irresistible conclusion that the children have been assaulted, probably by Sharon and Gary Evans. The only evidence to support this is the vague ramblings of the two girls. They obviously cannot testify. Even if they did so, in a formal court setting in the presence of the abusers, they most likely would deny it happened. In the absence of any other evidence, we find that there is no evidence to support criminal charges."

CHAPTER 12

PSYCHOLOGICAL ASSESSMENTS

It was not enough for the social workers to say they believed the children. They had to show that it was a belief based on professional judgement rather than simple credulity. Then they had to present the evidence on which this judgement was based—the children's allegations—in a way that would convince a court that the children were telling the truth.

A team of two psychiatrists and a social worker from the Hospital for Sick Children played a crucial role in this process. They conducted an analysis of the children's statements that they believed was the most comprehensive of its kind ever undertaken. They concluded that the children were indeed telling the truth. Although Judge Beckett finally decided not to rely on the psychiatrists' conclusions, their report did lay out very clearly the basis upon which a reasonable person might decide that the children should be believed.

This conclusion was reinforced by assessments of the adults involved in the case carried out on behalf of the Children's Aid Society in the summer of 1985 by psychiatrists from Hamilton's Chedoke-McMaster Hospital. Social workers also gathered information on the family's background, attempting to contact day-care staff, teachers and other professionals who had dealt with the children.

Soon after the children were placed in their first foster home, the Children's Aid Society sent them to Dr. Alice Oliviera, a well-respected child psychiatrist, for therapy. After 26 play therapy sessions with the children, Dr. Oliviera concluded that Janis and Linda were describing their own experiences when they talked about sexual abuse, being forced to eat excrement and drink urine and witnessing events that they interpreted as murders. Dr. Oliviera said she did not think it possible that Janis and Linda were fantasizing in making these statements because they were peculiarly unimaginative children.

This opinion was underscored by the findings of a psychologist who conducted a series of personality tests with the children in the summer of 1985. Mani van der Spuy reported that he was struck by their lack of imagination. Janis particularly responded in a very uncreative way to a test in which she was asked to make up a story on the basis of pictures shown to her. Her stories were mostly extraordinarily detailed descriptions of what she saw in the pictures.

Dr. van der Spuy said he formed the impression from Janis's response to the tests that "there is a lot of darkness and sadness in her situation. She feels quite immobilized. She feels everything she has may be taken or destroyed by forces beyond her control." He said Linda's performance in the tests indicated a fragile hold on reality, and a poverty in relationships, feelings and thinking. "I almost get the idea that she experiences life, not in terms of cause and effect, but as a mine field, with here and there an explosion."

Dr. van der Spuy concluded, "I do not believe what they have reported about the past could be taken as fantasy. Their inner fantasy is too poorly developed to have fabricated those reports. Children who are inclined to confabulate may have somewhat pathological fantasies, but have a rich fantasy life."

While the emotional scars left by child sexual abuse are easily discernible on its victims, there is often no physical evidence, or, if there is, it is ambiguous and hard to detect. This seemed to be the case with Janis and Linda. The symptoms of psychological distress were clear for anyone to see, and the accounts of abuse so graphic, detailed and consistent that it was hard to come to any other conclusion but that they had been grossly abused. But a medical examination uncovered no conclusive evidence of physical damage. This lack of definitive medical proof of injury was another factor that made the police reluctant to lay criminal charges in the case.

To the lay person it sounds inconceivable that the kind of sexual assaults that the children described, involving numerous occurrences of abuse with vibrators and other foreign objects, could leave them physically unmarked and intact. Sgt. Broom told the court he believed that sexual abuse occurred because "[although] being a family man I know that children sometimes will lie, what they were saying appeared fairly graphic. They had to have some firsthand knowledge. But I find it difficult to believe the dildo wouldn't leave lasting telltale marks. I also found it difficult that there was no medical evidence of the blackbird's head being inserted."

But this lay understanding of the issue is incorrect, according to medical evidence heard by the court. The commonly held belief that doctors can determine whether or not a child has been sexually abused is a myth that, like the mistaken notion that such abuse is usually inflicted by strangers rather than friends or family members, stands in the way of understanding the nature of child sexual abuse. Unfortunately the fact that it is possible to inflict all kinds of sexual abuse on children without leaving any physical evidence is well known to many pedophiles, which can give them the edge over people who are seeking to protect children.

Angus MacMillan, an expert pediatrician from the Chedoke-McMaster Hospital, explained this to the court. When a child is being molested, he said, she is not necessarily aware of what part of her genitalia is being touched. Any touching in that area can cause intense pain and trauma. Fingers or objects may be inserted into the vaginal opening without penetrating beyond the hymen, and would cause great pain if they touched the hymen. Dr. MacMillan also explained that the hymen is an elastic membrane that is normally perforated with small holes of up to 4 millimeters in diameter. He said research has indicated that it is possible to insert an object with a diameter of up to 20 millimeters through one of these holes without tearing the membrane, thus leaving no physical evidence.

The most important aspect of any examination to determine if children have been sexually abused is, therefore, what the children themselves have to say, Dr. MacMillan explained. Here he endorsed the CAS child abuse specialist's comments by telling the court, "We know that children rarely, if ever, lie about things of this nature. The *Journal of Child Abuse* will accept an article if you can show in detail how children lied about sexual abuse."

However, in the case of Janis and Linda there were also physical indications that they may have been abused, Dr. MacMillan said. He had first examined the children before they went into foster care, because of difficulties they were having at school as a result of Linda's hyperactivity and Janis's emotional problems. At that time he was not looking for any signs of sexual abuse, but rather was concerned that Linda's medical record indicated that she had suffered from a vaginal yeast infection five months earlier. At her age such an infection was, he said, an extreme rarity, and would lead one to consider the possibility of a foreign body being introduced to the vaginal area.

Dr. MacMillan found no physical evidence of recent abuse when he examined Linda at the request of the Children's Aid Society soon after the children had made their allegations of abuse. But his examination of Janis at that time revealed that the child had a particularly wide vaginal orifice. The holes that perforate the hymen are normally no wider than 4 millimeters, but Janis's were 7 millimeters in diameter. It would be possible to insert an index finger, he said, while leaving the hymen intact. This suggested that the orifice had in fact been expanded by perforation by a finger or some other object, he said, but the evidence was not conclusive.

In reviewing the medical history of the two children, Dr. MacMillan noted several injuries and illnesses that he said were warning signs of child abuse. He said he had never seen a child with a history of as many head injuries as Janis, who was treated five times in one year for bruises or cuts on the head. Dr. MacMillan said he also would be very concerned about the fact that Linda was treated for trauma on three occasions in three different hospitals between the ages of 20 months and two years.

Arthur Brown, the mother's lawyer, who usually questioned experts at length, started to quiz the doctor about the allegations concerning the bird. The foster mother had mentioned that she had the impression from the children's descriptions that the bird they were referring to was a grackle. Mr. Brown asked Dr. MacMillan if he was at all familiar with a bird known as a grackle, suggesting that it was quite a large bird and unlikely to be inserted into the girls without causing injury. After asking the lawyer if he was referring to the Common Grackle or some other species, the doctor displayed a fund of ornithological knowledge, and explained with the help of drawings how the grackle, which has a relatively small head, could well be inserted a little way into a child's external genitalia, causing pain and trauma but no injuries.

Dr. MacMillan said his physical findings were compatible with the children being abused by hand, with bananas and with birds. Asked if he found such allegations of bizarre abuse difficult to accept, the doctor somberly told the court, "I have been quite disillusioned by what I find human beings capable of doing. Anything living or dead has been put into the sexual parts of children. I find it all hard to accept."

Other psychiatric professionals called by the CAS were Dr. Gail Beck, who examined the foster mother, and two other psychiatrists who contributed assessments of Sharon and Gordon Wells. Dr. Eva Gede, who examined Sharon, was a small, efficient woman with a somewhat abrupt and aggressive manner. She was asked to do the assessment because she was a specialist in the psychosocial disorders of women, and had a special interest in multiple personality disorders, a problem that it had been felt Sharon might be suffering from. She did not in fact find that Sharon had multiple personalities, but did conclude that she was suffering from another form of mental illness, a borderline personality disorder.

In interviews with the psychiatrist Sharon said the allegations were gross, that she had never heard of such stuff or even imagined it in her wildest dreams. Sharon said she thought it must all have come from the foster mother, and that Mrs. McInnis must be "sick." She said, "I want to get my kids back and find out what the hell went on with them, who did what with them and why. I know it's not me."

Sharon confided in the psychiatrist that she didn't trust adults, felt safe with kids and dreamed of opening a day-care center. She said, "All men have ever done in my life is complicate it." She admitted that she was not the best housekeeper in the world, or the most stable of people, but said she tried to be strong and do what was right for her children. She said the allegations had destroyed her relationship with Gary Evans. "He loved kids, that's what attracted me to him," she said. "It's destroyed something so beautiful and wonderful that we all had, all of us. It hurts because I know how much love there was. He blames me for what's happened, because I got weak and I wasn't strong. He says if I would have been stronger this would not have happened. And he's right. He says I wrecked his life. I think that this has destroyed a perfectly happy family that we could have been."

"It sounds as if he wants your kids more than he wants you," said Dr. Gede.

"We love each other a lot and there was a great family reunion in love between all of us," Sharon said.

Dr. Gede confronted Sharon in her interviews, suggesting that the woman's life was moving from crisis to crisis, that she wasn't able to cope with her problems and that she was looking to her children to give her the kind of nurture and emotional support that she was unable to give them herself. She said that the mother did not know what it takes to be independent: "You wouldn't be here if you did."

"I wouldn't be here if the damn CAS didn't have my kids," Sharon replied.

The psychiatrist told Sharon that she seemed to have made the same mistakes over and over again in her life, to which the young woman replied, "I never made the same mistakes. They were always different mistakes.

"My kids give me a lot of security because my life is dedicated to them," Sharon said. "They're why I'm going on. They're why I'm facing things."

She said she had learned through her experience with the CAS to be stronger, and that they will never get another chance to take her kids again. She pointed out that she had put the children in foster care in the first place: "I could have kept them home. I could have beat them. Who the hell would have known what I did to my kids?

"I just feel like all my life I have had to defend myself," Sharon told the psychiatrist. "This is not a problem. This is a major catastrophe. This could wreck so many lives. I'm accused of child molesting, killing. You tell me what company is going to hire me if this ever gets out, and it's getting out like wildfire. So many people are finding out. If you were a day-care-center person and you found out about these allegations, are you going to hire me? No. Do you see what this has done? I wanted to go back to school. I wanted to work with kids."

Dr. Gede said, "You need a lot from your children."

"Is that so wrong?" Sharon asked passionately.

"A parent is not supposed to need," said the psychiatrist.

"Who says that? It's not as if I sit there and cry every detail out to them. It's just that I feel strong when they're there like that. I don't think it's wrong."

The mother said she felt betrayed because she had thought that the psychiatrist was just going to be determining whether or not she was crazy, not analyzing her whole life. Dr. Gede told her, "You're definitely not crazy. You're not psychotic."

"You've got to be psycho or crazy to be in a cult to kill children," Sharon said, repeating that she had no idea how her children could be saying such things about her.

"There's no smoke where there's no fire. That's the problem," said Dr. Gede.

Dr. Gede observed as a result of this interview that Sharon's "insight into emotionally threatening issues is limited." She said, "I have a gut feeling that Mrs. Wells thinks that, if she gets her children back, Gary will return to her. Their relationship was very much inclusive of the children. She regards competent parenting as providing the absolute basics. She openly admits she needs children, from whom she derives strength, comfort, et cetera. . . . Her dream to own a day-care center, where she would never run out of children, I think, was quite unrealistic. When asked about emotionally uncomfortable or conflicting material, her memory gets hazy. It's also possible that she may be trying to withhold information that would put her in a bad light."

Sharon was asked to undergo a psychological test, which consisted of a long multiple-choice questionnaire known as the Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory (MMPI). This is a standard tool psychologists use to evaluate personality. The psychologist who analyzed Sharon Wells's test results noted that the woman "was capable of some pretty bizarre behavior." The psychologist said, "Traditional psychotherapies with persons with a similar profile is extremely difficult because of their almost total inability to accept responsibility for their actions. This is not a healthy profile, and this person is in need of major psychosocial intervention, but it is unlikely she would agree."

Dr. Gede also analyzed Sharon's hospital records, noting that she had apparently been treated three times for drug overdoses. The psychiatrist put some stress on the fact that during one of these hospital admissions she was described as hostile and paranoid and was treated with an antipsychotic drug. Psychosis is a more serious stage of mental illness where a patient loses contact with reality, and has delusions and, sometimes, hallucinations. Dr. Gede did not conclude that Sharon was psychotic, however, but that she suffered from a borderline personality disorder.

"Her knowledge of stability and security is limited. Her ability to relate to adults is seriously impaired. She is dependent and very needy and unable to have her needs met. She can be impulsive in a destructive and self-destructive manner. She can probably control people who back off from her anger fairly effectively because she is not easy to take on. Her ability to understand children's emotional needs is limited, her relationship with them is self-centered and self-serving. She exploits children emotionally, and does not even know it," said the psychiatrist.

Dr. Gede concluded, "Her capacity for insight and judgement into her own problems is poor. Her psychological defenses include denial, projection and distortion. These defenses are characteristic of the psychotic mental illness and of the most severe personality disorders. . . . She does have a mental disorder that can, at times, produce brief periods of psychosis. With lots of support and counseling she may be able to get by, somehow, from crisis to crisis, as she has done in the past. Since she doesn't have insight into what her problems are, her prognosis is very guarded."

Another assessment of Sharon was done by a psychiatrist hired on her behalf and called as a defense witness. His conclusions about her mental state were similar to Dr. Gede's, though he tried to present them in a better light and was more optimistic about the prospects of successful therapy.

Dr. Naomi Rae-Grant did an assessment of Gordon Wells and concluded that he showed no evidence of a psychotic or neurotic disorder. A psychologist said the father's personality profile was "not a particularly healthy profile." Tests revealed mild disturbance in thinking, with poor concentration, vagueness and some difficulty in relations with authority figures.

Dr. Rae-Grant stated in her report, "His description of his interaction with his estranged wife suggests a pathological relationship in terms of the degree of anger and dyscontrol which he feels Sharon was able to arouse in him. The history of violent, aggressive episodes suggests the possibility of an intermittent, explosive disorder, but further assessment would be necessary to confirm this impression. Mr. Wells's description of his interactions with Janis and Linda suggests genuine concern for and attachment to the children."

The father told the psychiatrist that he had left school at 15 because "they weren't teaching me anything." He said he did not associate much with his family because he had too many arguments with them, and too many things had gone wrong. He said he had a job, and spent his time working, partying and fending for himself: "When you get street-wise, you get out there and take care of things." He said his hobbies were martial arts, weight lifting, art and photography.

Gordon described himself as a man who likes to resolve problems simply: "I should walk in there, bang, bang, bang, get the right answer. I hate problems that drag on. It starts to irritate me. Sometimes I get up and go. I can be in a rotten mood, and don't like to be around anybody. I sit in my room, draw or write until something's done about it, or I can solve it myself."

With Sharon, Gordon said, "I would say, 'Quit bothering me, or something's going to happen.' I lost control a couple of times, quite a few times. She used to bait me all the time, until I would turn around with no warning and do something. She used to say, 'You don't like fighting,' and call me chicken. She would call me a maniac. I used to warn her, 'Don't do it,' or I would be out of control. I didn't want to hit her. I would rather hit the wall than hit her. If somebody bugs me too much, I warn them. Then it's in their own hands. Everyone knows to leave me alone. Don't bait me. Just back off."

Dr. Rae-Grant did not take the confrontational approach that Dr. Gede had adopted in her interview with Sharon.

Gordon said he was now glad to be away from his ex-wife. He said she would not back down in confrontations with him and "used to get a thrill out of seeing me explode." He said, "She could be pleasant as hell, a great actor when she wants to be . . . I seen her in action, lying, she does a good job. I don't trust her. She's too crafty for what she wants."

He described a conversation with Sharon after he heard about the children's allegations. "I've told my wife, 'If it's true, God help you,' 'cause I told her a long time ago that I put the kids on earth to turn around and raise them up and have a life of their own, not for two screwballs to come along and screw it up. And she said, 'Do you think I could do that?' I said, 'I really don't know.' I said, 'Between you and Gary, I don't know. You've gone so far, now, because of your relationship with him, that half the time I don't think you care about the kids.'

"She put so much junk into their heads," he told the psychiatrist. "As far as I'm concerned I'm glad it's all coming out.

"The kids said I was supposed to eliminate the foster mother. I laughed at that one. The kids are so bollixed up because of being pumped too much. I said, 'I'm trying to fight for my kids, not screw them up.'"

Gordon described Sharon before her first psychiatric hospital admission. He said he found her "in the storage closet with the lights turned out, curled up. She said, 'I don't want to hurt the kids.' It was like she was a six-year-old again. Fast forward picture. She went through her whole childhood. You could see the stages she was going through, coming back up to when she was 22."

He said his ex-wife was always a very lousy housekeeper. He said the relationship was "okay till the end. It sort of went downhill. When I switched over to not hitting the kids, she started hitting them for every little thing going."

The children, he said, were looking better when he saw them in May: "They were getting fed better. Linda filled out more. I don't like the fact Sharon put them in there, but they were looking better."

The psychiatrist asked him why he had threatened Lesley Morgan when he talked to her on the phone, and he said he had merely responded to a question she asked by saying, "Do yourself a favor. It will be the first and last time you ask me that question, if you value anything [meaning her job]."

Asked about the so-called picture of the devil, Gordon said, "I drew a picture ten to fifteen years ago as the devil. I went to a show one night, seen it and re-created it. It meant nothing, just something I drew. I'm an artist and I drew it. Everybody's been calling it the devil. Call it what you want. The cop thought it was a big joke. People want to destroy it, and all it is is a picture. It's got nothing to do with satanism or anything else."

Dr. Rae-Grant noted that, during Mr. Wells's videotaped visit with the children, Linda frequently clung to him, hugged him and kissed him, while Janis was ambivalent, extremely angry and resentful, but with some warm feelings. She said the child punched him, pummeled him and took his car keys, but he maintained a calm, caring attitude.

Gordon told the psychiatrist that his children "need to be back with me and a normal home life."

Gary Evans was given an opportunity to be assessed by either Dr. Gede or Dr. Rae-Grant. He talked to them both, but did not show up for the assessments. He later claimed that this was because he thought they would be biased against him. Gary was subsequently assessed by Dr. Clive Chamberlain, a psychiatrist commissioned by Gary's lawyer. Dr. Chamberlain testified as a defense witness. Although Dr. Gede and Dr. Rae-Grant were called as CAS witnesses at the hearing, there was no suggestion that their assessments of the two parents were in any way biased or unprofessional.

As the CAS began to piece together the results of all these assessments, the children's allegations of abuse appeared more credible than the parents' total denial that anything untoward had ever taken place.

CHAPTER 13

THE ASSESSMENT TEAM

The analysis of the children's credibility conducted by the assessment team from the Hospital for Sick Children was an important new development in child sexual abuse investigation. Their report presented a technique for analyzing the credibility of children's prior statements without conducting further interviews with the children. Since it is generally recognized that it is bad for children to have to repeat allegations several times to different people, this method provided a useful new analytical tool. Its use in a court case where the children were not going to be required to testify also promised to open up new possibilities in child welfare law.

This ground-breaking study was first conceived in a meeting on June 25, 1985, at which the case was discussed and Catherine McInnis was asked to read some excerpts from her notes. In attendance were the CAS representatives, Sgt. Broom and two psychiatrists and a social worker from the Hospital for Sick Children. After discussing the case with CAS representatives and hearing Mrs. McInnis's presentation, the hospital team decided not to interview Janis and Linda. They felt they had sufficient data in the notes of the foster mother and transcripts of other interviews with the children. They concluded that further interviews could be disruptive to the girls' therapy, and might be counterproductive, as they could frighten the children into recanting their allegations.

Halina Klajner-Diamond, the social worker from the Toronto hospital, had been involved in about 550 cases of child abuse during her four years at the hospital's Suspected Child Abuse and Neglect Unit. Describing the meeting to the court she said, "Mrs. McInnis came across as very sincere, committed, credible and concerned about the welfare of the children. She was upset and talked about the pressure she was under. She said that people would think she was a kook. My own feelings were, 'This is incredible. I don't want to believe this. I can't believe it.' I kept listening to the details, and became really prepared to believe we should look into this. It shouldn't be dismissed just because I don't want to listen to it."

Dr. Paul Steinhauer, senior staff psychiatrist at the Hospital for Sick Children, said that he went to the meeting with "a bias that this couldn't be true." He described himself as being highly suspicious of the claims of some of his colleagues in the profession, who seem to maintain that anything children say is true.

"At first I was reluctant to listen. It was extremely hard to take, very upsetting," said Dr. Steinhauer. "We have a natural human tendency not to believe those things could go on, to think, 'It can't be true. Nobody could treat children in this way. Things this horrendous couldn't have happened.' I went in with the feeling that, if it did go on, we have a responsibility to help the kids, and not to support the allegations if they are untrue. As the meeting went on I became increasingly sure that there was substantial truth and I spent part of the meeting trying to figure out where that feeling was coming from. So, I was partly listening and I was partly trying to analyze this new thing, what it was that was making me think that this is truthful."

At the end of the meeting Dr. Steinhauer told the CAS representatives, "I think I can analyze those notes in a way that will demonstrate that there are enough factors supporting validity and reliability that I think they may be of some support to your case."

The defense lawyers would later point to this statement as evidence that the hospital team did not approach their analysis of the children's statements from an objective scientific standpoint, but began by believing that the children were telling the truth, and then tried to find evidence to support this belief. This criticism perhaps failed to do justice to the rigor of the analysis that Dr. Steinhauer subsequently undertook. It also displayed some misunderstanding of the scientific method, as even the most objective study must begin with theories and observations.

The argument turned out to be irrelevant to the judge's final decision, as Judge Beckett neatly defused what might have become the most controversial legal issue to arise from the case by stating in his judgement that he gave no weight to the psychiatrists' report. The judge said he was impressed by the report, and did not question the credibility or thoroughness of the psychiatrists' evidence. But he said it was his job, not that of expert witnesses, to decide whether or not the children were telling the truth. This was a shrewd decision because the defense lawyers had vigorously tried to introduce evidence from witnesses who would challenge this report. Judge Beckett had deemed the evidence they wished to call inadmissible because he didn't consider their witnesses to be expert enough to testify. By saying that he was not considering the hospital report, Judge Beckett removed one very strong basis on which his final ruling might be appealed.

In coming to the same conclusion as the assessment team, Judge Beckett gave strikingly similar reasons. He simply observed that analyzing credibility may be a new field for psychiatrists but judges have been doing it for generations and using the same criteria: consistency, detail, inappropriate knowledge of sexual matters and emotional and physical reactions while witnesses related their stories. What the report and the psychiatrists' evidence did for the judge was organize the children's allegations and the factors supporting their credibility in such a way that it was possible for him to examine them for himself and reach the same conclusion about the girls' sincerity.

While the assessment of credibility is an age-old responsibility for judges, it is a comparatively new task for psychiatrists. In treatment situations psychiatrists generally do not concern themselves with whether or not their patients are telling the truth, since their concern is more with the individual's subjective interpretation of reality. What patients have to say is often seen as a symptom of their disturbance, rather than as a description of what has happened to them. According to many child abuse experts, the tendency of psychiatrists not to take what their patients say at face value has prevented the high incidence of incest from being recognized in the past because complaints have always been dismissed as father fixations and infantile sexual fantasies.

The recognition that child sexual abuse is a widespread problem, and the fact that children's disclosures are often the only evidence for this abuse, has made it necessary for psychiatrists and child care workers to find ways of determining when children should be believed. In reaction to the centuries of disbelief in this phenomenon, some professionals maintain that children never lie about parental sexual abuse, but studies and court cases have shown this not to be the case. In all the public controversy that has surrounded the recent increase in concern and litigation about child sexual abuse, how to determine when children are telling the truth is one of the most central and sensitive issues.

The study that the team from the Hospital for Sick Children conducted on the allegations of Janis and Linda has since been discussed in workshops, conferences and articles submitted for publication in psychiatric journals. The study and the subsequent research that came out of it are expected to have a lasting impact on the development of methods for the assessment of children's credibility.

Dr. Steinhauer told the court, "I can't conceive of a case that has been looked at more thoroughly than this one has. We went beyond anything anyone else has done to develop criteria to allow us to look critically at what children were saying." He said the study applied "the most rigorous set of criteria that we know of."

Although the judge felt the criteria were similar to those normally used in court cases, they also involved the application of psychiatric insights into children's behavior. All of the information was subjected to a more scientific analysis than that usually undertaken by a court. Various repeated elements of the children's statements, such as the references to the bird, or eating "poo," were isolated and codified. Then each reference was recorded in a way that details of the girls' accounts and accompanying symptoms could be compared.

Ms. Klajner-Diamond told the court that the team concluded on the basis of the study that "there is no doubt sexual abuse occurred, probably much as depicted. Despite some confusion due to insufficient detail, lack of clarity, there is enough likelihood that the murders and cannibalism have basis in fact that a vigorous investigation should be undertaken. On the basis of this we believe that Linda and Janis were talking to Mrs. McInnis of experiences they have been participants in or observed, that there is no other credible explanation for what the girls have been saying and for their associated behaviors."

When the social worker and the two psychiatrists were later presented with further evidence of additional statements made by the children, they said they became more confident that the murders and rituals actually took place as the girls described them. Dr. Steinhauer testified, "There is no way these kids were not involved in rituals along the lines of those described. I am convinced people were being killed, that they were forced to stick knives in victims. As to whether the flesh they ate was human or not, there is a possibility for error. We found nothing that allowed me to draw any conclusion other than the fact that what the children described was actually experienced."

Dr. William Wehrspann, the second psychiatrist on the team, explained that the psychiatric symptoms of distress that the children displayed when telling their stories were particularly convincing: "There's no way to coach this. In cases proven to be fictitious, they are not present. We're talking real primitive stuff here. These kids literally had the crap scared out of them."

Dr. Steinhauer said the children's stories were consistent with one another over a long period of time, and contained the kind of detail, described from a child's eye view, "that they just couldn't have imagined, or couldn't have been led to say by too-aggressive questioning." He said he was also convinced by the "embedded responses," by which some external stimulus reminded the children of something that their memories had suppressed. Dr. Wehrspann elaborated on this phenomenon by saying, "Nobody's setting this up. They go to a funeral and ask if someone's been killed. They've got killing on the brain."

The psychiatrists noted that the conversations between the children, where Janis tried to get Linda to retract her statements, also served to confirm that the allegations were true. "There is not one denial by Janis where the reader does not end up being more convinced of the truth of material being denied," Dr. Steinhauer observed. He added that the children's apparent ambivalence in their feelings towards their parents and the extreme conflict they showed in making their disclosures are not seen in children who are confabulating: "There's a real conflict going on in the souls of these little girls."

The team from the Hospital for Sick Children did consider in their report the possibility that Mrs. McInnis might have fabricated her accounts of the children's conversations and concluded that she had not.

Dr. Wehrspann, an American who often entertained the court with his colorful turn of phrase, said, "If Catherine McInnis is making this up she's Tennessee Williams, she's Shakespeare. The characters are wonderful.

"This woman is a really good reporter, a very good observer. It's very good quality description. I was impressed with the way she delivered under pressure. When I read over Catherine McInnis's notes, I sat there nauseated with a headache. I don't think you can be human and not read through these notes and have a violent reaction," said Dr. Wehrspann.

The psychiatrist observed that this kind of material would be particularly hard for someone to listen to once they became convinced that what was being described was something that really happened. He explained that it is only to be expected that the foster mother should have started to show symptoms of distress, and that her reports should become blemished with such things as editorial comments and coded references: "Nobody wants to see this, and it's hard to look at this. This weird stuff is really bothering her. She gets a threat to her life and family. She doesn't think the police are willing to support and protect her. It is a very, very traumatic experience. It would be traumatic for any of us. It's important to realize the magnitude of this event in someone's life. We thought she was real upset for legitimate reasons."

Dr. Steinhauer said he was impressed by the foster mother's vigilance, perceptivity and sensitivity to subverbal communication. "Her natural reserve causes considerable discomfort with lurid outpourings of sexual data," he said. "Her indignation and repugnance made it difficult to cope with material which clearly she found morally repulsive. She struggled to overcome a tendency to be judgemental. Basically I find her a very fine foster mother. I have enormous respect for her compassion and strength."

In his court testimony, Dr. Steinhauer said, "I am repelled and discomforted by this material. It was difficult for me. Just the reopening of the thing [in preparation for his testimony] was sufficiently upsetting that I woke up at 3 A.M. and couldn't get back to sleep. She was dealing with this repugnant material on a daily basis. At the Hospital for Sick Kids' meeting I was feeling a bit nauseous at the end of the meeting."

After reviewing the evidence about the second pair of children that Mrs. McInnis had in her home, Dr. Wehrspann said, "Catherine McInnis has overinvested in those stories being true. The children deliver their stories to other people in the same style, with the same characters, giving references to details of where they live, who their friends were. It would be difficult for Catherine McInnis to know these things."

He said he was satisfied that the children were not parroting what Mrs. McInnis had told them, or being coached by her, in making these other reports. He added, "I am very sensitive about how hard it is to get people to change. If people could get people to behave in a way they want so easily, being a psychiatrist or parent would be much easier."

The Sick Children's Hospital report also considered whether the details in the story could be based on a dream or an extended fantasy shared by Janis and Linda, or an attempt to please adults with material they suspected that the adults wanted to hear. The team concluded that, although the children sometimes tried to disguise their descriptions as a dream, the detail and their physical and emotional reactions indicated that they were talking about real experiences. A lack of motive on the part of either the children or the foster mother to fabricate material, and the apparent authenticity of the material, as indicated by their structural analysis, led the team to conclude that it was unlikely that the foster mother had done anything but faithfully record what the children had said. This was also the conclusion that Judge Beckett would eventually reach.

Dr. Steinhauer noted that the conversation about plucking or fucking a chicken was "the sort of thing that people don't make up." He said the girls' descriptions were replete with details that normal children would not make up. For example, he said the description of being lowered into an open grave had "a quality of detail, a quality of horror. You get it from what she sees and what she smells.

"Either these girls have the most unbelievable imaginations, an unbelievable ability to make up these incredibly lurid stories, or they are talking about something that happened to them," said Dr. Steinhauer.

When Arthur Brown cross-examined Dr. Steinhauer about some inconsistencies in the children's stories, such as a certain ambiguity about whether it was their father or mother who had murdered little Elizabeth, the psychiatrist replied, "If you happen to be a small child, and are exposed to multiple murders in the middle of the night, and tell a dozen different people, and people are wearing masks and costumes, you may be confused as to who murdered whom.

"Regardless of what happened," Dr. Steinhauer added, "these are very disturbed girls, and the relationship with their parents and Gary is very much related to the source of their disturbance." He said it would be disastrous to allow these people to have access to the children, when they deny the allegations and inspire the girls with fear. Seeing these people would be "upsetting and traumatic, beyond these children's ability to cope," he said. "One of the biggest tragedies, often worse than abuse, is the efforts by parents in a position of trust to distort children's reality by denying what happened. As long as that much fear is associated with the parents, as long as parents continue to take no responsibility for anything that has happened, it undermines any chance of anyone working successfully with them to change anything."

On the future of the children, Dr. Wehrspann said, "Can you imagine what these children would have to go through before they can trust somebody else? It's going to take a big effort on some adult's part to stick with these children. They started trusting Catherine, and then the threat came and they never saw Catherine again."

Observing that Sharon Wells did at times seek help for herself and her children, Dr. Steinhauer said, "It is possible that this woman is very torn, one part of her wanting the girls to re-experience what she went through, the other part trying to protect them. I would have great concern about Mrs. Wells being any more able to parent another infant more successfully than she has those two children. There is nothing here to suggest optimism that it wouldn't just be a repeat of the same thing."

Michael O'Neail, Gary Evans's lawyer, asked Dr. Steinhauer, "Other than allegations of sexual abuse, have you a basis for assessing the parenting capacity of Gary?"

The doctor responded, "That's like saying 'Other than cancer, what's wrong with the patient?' "

At a meeting on July 29, 1985, the Hospital for Sick Children team presented their preliminary report, which indicated that they believed the sexual abuse allegations and felt that there was enough credibility to the murder allegations to warrant a vigorous investigation. Sgt. Broom and Sgt. Bowen were present but did not appear to be impressed with these findings.

Dr. Steinhauer told the court, "In the first interview, the younger man was reasonably open and hadn't reached any conclusions. In the second meeting the young man didn't open his mouth. The older man seemed to have his mind made up. He was radiating disbelief and disrespect. He took no part in the meeting, except to mutter under his breath. He wasn't interested in what we had to say. I had the feeling that, because these were children, the police tended to dismiss what they were saying as inconsequential. We were giving a highly technical, state-of-the-art analysis, adding to it confirmation from a number of other sources. Bowen was saying, 'We're really not interested in what you are saying.' The police had never seen any of our material at all."

Sgt. Bowen testified that he had tried not to "show an attitude" at the meeting, but was very tired because he had been on night duty. He said he was bothered by a comment made by Dr. Wehrspann, who had told him, he said, that lots of charges had been laid with less evidence than this. Sgt. Bowen said that the psychiatrist suggested that the CAS should see the judge in chambers before the defense lawyers were involved, and try to make him sympathetic to the case.

Dr. Steinhauer contrasted the police unwillingness to believe the children, or to even listen to people who did believe their stories, with the courage displayed by Mrs. McInnis in speaking up on the children's behalf even though she was afraid of ridicule, and eventually began to be afraid for her safety. He was asked if he felt the foster mother was being paranoid in her response to the alleged plot to kill her family, and he responded, "There are times when we, perhaps inappropriately, have felt anxiety about our involvement in so terrible a business.

"I wonder whether in the past things like this have gone on, where people haven't had the courage to bring the information forward," Dr. Steinhauer said.

PART FOUR

THE TRIAL

CHAPTER 14

CHILD WELFARE AND THE COURTS

There is perhaps no subject on which so many people in our society would agree as the need to protect and care for children. While there may be bitter disputes about issues such as abortion, day-care and education, the basic premise that children should receive adequate care and be protected from injury and molestation is universally accepted, irrespective of other social, political or religious beliefs. Even among the most hardened criminals, the child abuser is an object of hatred and contempt.

This universal respect for the basic rights of children is something comparatively new in society. The notion that children are more than the property of their parents, have a distinct status and need special protection in law developed in the 19th century. It was inspired in part by the Romantic movement, which tended to sanctify and sometimes sentimentalize the child, placing particular emphasis on education and the spiritual or emotional growth of the individual. Industrial development began to require an educated workforce and public education programs constituted a first step towards recognizing that the state should play a role in children's lives. The brutal excesses of early industrial society and the breakup of traditional communities led to flagrant cases of cruelty and exploitation of children, and more humane and progressive elements in society responded to this by shaping new child welfare laws and institutions.

While criminal and most civil law has evolved through decrees, statutes and precedents for more than a thousand years, child welfare law is mostly new, and still in a state of flux. When it first developed in the 19th century, the emphasis was on saving children from unsavory backgrounds by placing them in institutions. Institutions were eventually found to be inadequate to serve children's emotional needs, and foster care was seen as a more desirable alternative. Now it is recognized, and in fact stated as a principle in Ontario's new *Child and Family Services Act*, that the best place for a child to be, if at all possible, is in his or her own home. Instead of saving children from the unfit home, social agencies now devote a lot of energy to trying to make the home fit for the child, giving support to the family through therapy, public health nurses, homemakers and other social or educational programs.

The first principle of Ontario's child welfare laws remains, however, the best interests and protection of children. The law provides that, when it is found that children cannot be protected in their own homes, they can be made wards of the Crown, their parents can, if necessary, be deprived of access and all other parental rights, and the children can be kept in foster care, institutional care or put out for adoption. To make such an order, a judge must be satisfied through a hearing that the children are in need of protection, and that this protection can only be insured by separating them from their parents or guardians.

Child welfare proceedings, which are directed to the protection of children, are not governed by the same rules as criminal trials. There is no question here of guilt or innocence, and the judge is mandated to achieve a solution that is in the best interests of the child. Society has decided that in criminal cases the risk of punishing an innocent person is far graver than that of letting a guilty one go free, and has therefore evolved very stringent standards of proof and a series of laws and precedents that protect individual rights and freedoms. But the risk of leaving children unprotected in an abusive home is considered just as serious as that of unjustly depriving parents of their rights.

The judge in a child welfare hearing does not have to make a finding that is beyond any reasonable doubt, but must weigh the evidence and make a ruling based on the balance of probabilities. In a criminal trial, hearsay evidence, secondhand reports of what other people said, is generally excluded. Hearsay evidence, and even expert opinion based on such hearsay, may be admitted in a child welfare hearing, where the children are often considered too young to testify. The emphasis is not on proving that certain specific acts were perpetrated, but on making a decision based on all the circumstances affecting a child's life.

The Hamilton-Wentworth Children's Aid Society was anxious that the police do a full investigation of Janis's and Linda's allegations, and was clearly anticipating some kind of criminal prosecution. Having failed to find strong corroborating evidence that they could take to court, the police and the Crown attorney decided not to lay any charges. In a criminal trial it would have been necessary to rely on the children's evidence. Even if it had been decided that the children were fit to endure the traumatic experience of testifying in court, under legislation in place in 1985 it would have been necessary first to prove that they were competent to testify, and then have additional corroborating evidence, since the law did not consider a child's testimony to be as reliable as that of an adult.

Legislation passed in 1987 has made it easier for children to testify and have their evidence given the same consideration as adult witnesses'. This involves removing the requirements that children face a special competency test, and that their evidence must be corroborated. They still have to satisfy a judge and jury that they can communicate, and that they understand that they have to tell the truth. Child welfare advocates are hoping that the courts will liberally interpret the meaning of the word "communicate" so that Anatomically Correct dolls and other such aids can be used by very young witnesses. The most important consequence of these changes is that children will not face an initial predisposition, which has hitherto been enshrined in law, not to trust children's evidence.

The peculiar problem that children present to the justice system is illustrated by the fact that, while there is a movement towards giving the same credibility to children's evidence as that of adults', it is also being recognized that it is necessary to make special arrangements, such as the use of videotapes or closed circuit television, to save children from the ordeal of actually appearing in a courtroom. Although some jurisdictions in the United States do allow hearsay evidence in special circumstances, this is not accepted in criminal proceedings in Canada. In criminal trials in Canada children, who are easily intimidated and usually have conflicting feelings about disclosing parental abuse, must still face cross-examination from lawyers representing their parents, the people they usually most love and most fear.

The new criminal legislation allows the use in court of statements made by children before the trial, providing these were videotaped and made within a reasonable time after the alleged abuse occurred. This is only permitted if the child is to be available in court for cross-examination. Child welfare advocates are hoping that this will avoid the necessity of children testifying in many cases, and that in practice defense lawyers will often refrain from cross-examining the children.

Judge Beckett was most insistent that Janis and Linda should not be forced to testify or be cross-examined at the Crown wardship hearing. Their therapist stated that it would be extremely damaging for them to be forced to dredge up their traumatic memories again. When Arthur Brown, the mother's lawyer, suggested calling the girls as witnesses, the judge flew into a rage and told the lawyer that taking such a step would be tantamount to subjecting the children to "ritual torture."

In the Hamilton case videotapes were shown to avoid calling the children as witnesses. These videotapes were of therapy sessions rather than investigative interviews and by viewing that kind of material the court was breaking new ground. The judge used the tapes to see for himself what the emotional state of the children was and to have a better basis on which to assess the opinions of their therapist.

The main problem encountered in this novel use of videotapes was that it took a long time for the court to view them. Almost a month at the beginning of the trial was occupied with the court watching play-therapy sessions. It was not until the therapist testified nine months later that the judge was given an insight on the significance of the interactions he had observed on tape.

Another reason for the extreme length of the Hamilton hearing was that the approach the Children's Aid Society took to the case involved presenting every piece of evidence that could conceivably be relevant. The CAS feared that defense lawyers would make a determined effort to discredit the more bizarre and less substantial aspects of the children's stories. The agency therefore sought to prove that, even if the children's allegations were found to be lacking in credibility, there were grounds for making them wards of the Crown on the basis of the violence, abuse and neglect that they had been exposed to in their home environment. Arthur Brown, Sharon's lawyer, consented to the admission of most of the evidence that the CAS proposed to call, on the condition that all other evidence that could have a bearing on the case be introduced. Sixty-one people were called as witnesses.

By the time Mrs. McInnis completed her testimony it was the end of January, 1986, and the hearing had been underway for four months. Some of that time had been taken up with preliminary matters, delays while reports were filed and studied, and short recesses caused by holidays and scheduling problems. The court had heard the evidence of social workers, teachers and day-care staff, as well as that of the foster mother.

Sharon Wells, who had been more than four months pregnant when the hearing began, was due to give birth at the beginning of February, so the court went into recess to await this event. Just days after her baby girl was born, the Children's Aid Society obtained a warrant to apprehend the infant and take her into care. The agency sought to have the baby declared a ward of the Crown on the basis of the abuse and neglect suffered by her two halfsisters. Sharon instructed her lawyer, Arthur Brown, to oppose this. The baby's father, Gary Evans, who had left Sharon shortly after he made her pregnant, retained Michael O'Neail to oppose the wardship application on his behalf.

Since the CAS was relying on the allegations regarding the older children to make its case for guardianship of the baby, it was agreed by all lawyers that the best way to proceed would be to join the trial of the baby's case to the hearing that was already underway. The addition of the new baby to the case complicated the proceedings somewhat from a legal point of view, as new legislation had come into effect since the case of Janis and Linda began. Fortunately for all concerned, although there are several significant differences between the old *Child Welfare Act* and the new *Child and Family Services Act*, they did not have much bearing on the conduct of this case. The new act states as a matter of principle that, while the best interest of children is its paramount objective, support should be given where possible to the autonomy and integrity of the family unit, and that the course of action chosen to protect the child should be the least disruptive one available.

The new statute also leaves less to the discretion of the judge by defining more clearly the grounds that can be used to find that children are in need of protection. The basis for deciding whether or not Janis and Linda were judged to be "children in need of protection" was the *Child Welfare Act* of Ontario, 1980, section 19 (b) xi: "a child whose life, health or morals may be endangered by the conduct of the person whose charge the child is." The *Child and Family Services Act*, 1984, spells out the circumstances under which such a finding can be made. It cites physical harm and sexual abuse, or the risk that either of these will happen in the future, as possible grounds for finding that the children need protection. It also states that a judge may base a finding on the child having suffered or being at risk of suffering "emotional harm, demonstrated by severe anxiety, depression, withdrawal, or self-destructive or aggressive behavior." To make a finding on the basis of emotional harm, the judge must be satisfied that the child's parent or caretaker does not provide, refuses or is unable to consent to services or treatment to remedy or alleviate the harm.

Also spelled out in the act are some of the things that the judge may take into consideration when deciding what is in the best interests of the child. These considerations include the child's physical, mental and emotional needs, and the appropriate care or treatment to meet those needs. The statute cites: "The importance for the child's development of a positive relationship with a parent and a secure place as a member of a family.

"The child's views and wishes, if they can be reasonably ascertained," is another item to be considered by the judge. This was a controversial issue at the trial, as the children clearly indicated that, in spite of all the harm they said they had suffered, they wanted to go home. The lawyers representing the children argued, however, that in spite of this natural, though unrealistic, desire, the children should be made wards of the Crown without any access from their parents.

Although much of the evidence at the hearing and the interest that surrounded it focused on the allegations of ritual abuse, it was by no means solely on this sensational material that the judge's final decision was to be reached. Judge Beckett underlined that point by stating in his final judgement, "It must not be forgotten that this is not a murder case, nor is it a case about cannibalism or satanic cults. It is a case about child abuse and whether these children were subjected to abuse or neglect such as to support a finding that they are in need of protection."

CHAPTER 15

THE CHILDREN'S "TESTIMONY" IN COURT

Watching the children on videotape was a haunting experience. More than 20 hours of taped therapy sessions were shown to the court in order to give the judge an opportunity to see the children without putting them through the ordeal of testifying in court. For day after day, the small group of people who crowded into the stuffy courtroom strained their eyes and their necks as they concentrated on a television screen on a stand beside the judge's bench, just a little too far away for anyone but Judge Beckett to watch with any degree of comfort. Not that anyone could feel at all comfortable watching two very likable little girls display their intense anguish in tormented play, as they struggled with their nightmarish memories. Judge Beckett certainly was not at ease as he leaned forward on the bench and peered at the screen with an intensely pained expression on his pale face.

The children's psychiatrist, Alice Oliviera, had chosen to use a technique known as play-therapy. As Dr. Oliviera later explained, this type of therapy involves letting children play, sometimes joining in their games, and using the themes that come out of this play to help them revise any disturbed and distorted mental constructs they might have about how life is, or how people are. Since the defense lawyers had insisted that the tapes be viewed in full or not at all, the court spent many tedious hours watching the children playing with Play-Doh, dancing, screaming and running around the hospital playroom, or engaging their patient, gentle therapist in games of make-believe.

Janis and Linda appeared on the videotapes as neatly dressed, well-groomed children, boisterous and sometimes unruly, but considerate and affectionate, both to one another and to Dr. Oliviera, with whom they gradually developed a warm relationship. This bond with the therapist was a curious one, at the same time loving, guarded and formal. They never called her by her first name, and clearly regarded her as a figure of authority, yet one who was exceptionally tolerant and permissive. She was a slim, refined-looking middle-aged woman, with a warm rich voice, who entered the children's games without inhibition, and clearly had an easy knack of juggling her attention between the two girls.

They sometimes competed quite strongly for her affection, and would often want to be hugged. Like any normal girl they loved to play house, but the themes of these games were a frightening departure from domesticity. They would pretend that people in the household were being kidnapped and killed. Games that began with pretending to cook a family meal would end in enactments of death and destruction. They liked to pretend to be babies, which gave them an opportunity to cling to Dr. Oliviera and cry despondently. Then they would tell her that the babies were in danger of being killed or kidnapped, scream for her to rescue them and sob hysterically in her arms.

In one session, the girls pretended to be babies who were being cooked in ovens. They climbed into cupboards and screamed for Dr. Oliviera to rescue them. Janis said, "I got cooked up." As the court was shown the tape of the children screaming and swinging on a metal bar inside the cupboard, Sharon Wells watched, anxiously shaking her head and reaching out with her hands as if to try to catch her children. Later in the same session, Janis pretended to phone the police to tell them, "There's this lady that stabs people. This is so impossible I can't even believe it." She smashed the toy phone down and began banging it against the furniture, screaming, "The cop said I don't want to talk to you again." Then she picked up the phone again and shouted, "When are you coming, you stupid cop."

Linda told Dr. Oliviera that her mother and father and Gary had stuck their fingers in her. Janis interrupted to say that her dad didn't do it. She said it was awful and didn't want to talk about it. The girls both evaded any attempt that the therapist made to get them to talk about the bad things that had happened to them. She later testified, "The children only spoke of traumatic events by blurting them out, or in response to a demand perceived from me, always with intense conflict."

Dr. Oliviera noted that Janis was attached to her mother and wished to return to her. The doctor thought it unusual that Linda did not seem to want to go home to her mother. The psychiatrist said, "Janis was carrying a constant conflict between wanting to deal with these terrible events, and knowing that to talk about them would jeopardize her chance of returning to her mother."

These conflicts became particularly acute when the children had supervised visits from both parents. The girls seemed ambivalent during these sessions, which were conducted as part of an assessment of Sharon's and Gordon's parenting capacities. Eight days after the visit with their mother, Janis made her first statements in therapy concerning the allegations she had earlier made to other people. "Okay, I'll talk now," she said. "My mom sticked her finger in us. How's that? That's enough."

The therapist said she understood that this was a hard thing to say, as she understood how much Janis loved her mother. She explained to the child that she was worried that it might happen again.

"That's why you're not taking us home, right?" said Janis, who then told the therapist, "Well, we went to Channel 11 and they stuck their fingers in us."

Dr. Oliviera asked the child if she had seen the people sticking their fingers in at Channel 11. Janis responded, "If you guys understand one little bit, it would be nice and easy for us."

"Little by little, we'll try to figure it out," the therapist told the child.

"No, you gotta figure it out by tomorrow, or today," Janis demanded. When she was later asked if there were other bad things that happened to her, Janis said, "We saw everything that we can . . . I feel like crying right now, but I can't cry."

Janis continued to talk to Dr. Oliviera until she was interrupted by Linda, who said, "Something's going to happen to somebody if you don't stop talking. . . . Somebody will come in this room and take somebody away from somebody else."

"Nobody will do that," said Janis.

"Yes, they will," insisted Linda. "We need all of us in the family. We don't need somebody taken away." The child began to shout angrily, and said she was mad, "because I realize everything . . . everything is happening . . . I'm in trouble . . . everything is wrong."

After another little argument with Janis, Linda said, "And my mom sticked her fingers in us and our dad sticked a couple of fingers in us."

"Dad did? And what about Gary?" asked Dr. Oliviera.

"He did too. And my mommy did it. But nothing is wrong. But something is wrong."

During the next session Dr. Oliviera and Lesley Morgan questioned the children more about their stories, and Janis told them, "It's sad all the things that happened. But you guys never saw it. So that's why you're asking us. You guys should already know by now."

"But, Janis, one of the things that I wondered is how often does it come into your mind now, the bad things that happened?" said the psychiatrist.

"Really often."

"Really often? Like every day, or every week, or . . ."

"Maybe every Saturday or Sunday, but the only thing I want to know is . . . how did it happen?" said Janis. When Dr. Oliviera questioned her further on this concern, she said, "Okay. Now I'll tell you once more. Okay? Okay, I am really apositive that some of these things I should have said no, but they would still do it. And now, what we really want to know is how they done it, and how they started it."

Dr. Oliviera asked Janis if she ever thought of saying no. "I think I said no. Okay," Janis snapped testily, "but we can't stop it, from doing it."

Linda said, "My dad can stop it. He can get his knife out and stick it up."

"And say, 'I am the power of Greyskull,'" said Janis.

"Yeah, with the knife. He can say 'The power of Greyskull.'"

"And do you think that might stop Mom and Gary from doing bad things to you girls?" asked Dr. Oliviera.

"No," said Janis.

"No, it wouldn't stop them?" the therapist repeated.

"Yes, that would," insisted Linda.

"Yes, I think it would, yeah," said Janis.

"Did Daddy know about the bad things?" Dr. Oliviera asked.

"Yes, 'cause he saw," Linda replied, but Janis interrupted saying that this was not true. She told her sister, "We better not say that he done it, 'cause we're not going to talk about it."

In distress, Linda talked about things that were happening to her that were "rude." Dr. Oliviera told her reassuringly, "Sometimes little girls think it's their own fault, what's happened."

"It ain't our fault, dingbat," Linda replied.

"I felt my hypothesis about Linda's feeling guilty was disconfirmed," Dr. Oliviera later testified.

Janis, who had been appearing increasingly disturbed during this exchange, climbed into the closet they had gone into when they played at babies being cooked in ovens. "My mom sticked her fingers in us, but I think that she never knowed us," she said in an hysterical voice, which changed into something like a song or a chant, as she added, "My dad done it too. My dad done it too. My dad, dad done it too."

"Janis, we can't blame our dad," said Linda urgently.

"Why not?" asked Dr. Oliviera.

"And Gary done it too," intoned Janis, still in the cupboard.

"He didn't do it. He didn't. Dad didn't do it, Janis," screamed Linda.

Linda began to sing, "Something's going on. It won't happen. I mean something's going on, and it won't happen. Something's going on and it will happen."

"But Mom sticked her fingers in us," said Janis.

"I'm making cookies. I'm making cookies," said Linda, picking up the Play-Doh, and engaging in one of her favorite make-believe games.

The psychiatrist and the social worker had agreed in a meeting before this session that they should give the children some explanation that they could understand about why their mother might have done what she did to them. They agreed that the best way to explain it was to say that the girls' mother was sick, which they believed was the case. Lesley Morgan spoke to Janis, who was still hiding in the cupboard, "Remember, Janis, when you first came into foster care, and we said Mommy was sick?"

"Yeah."

"Do you remember you said, at one time, I think you said that she was getting better?"

"Yeah."

"Well, we sort of think that maybe Mommy is still sick, and that's why she did those things to you and Linda."

As this videotape was played in court, Sharon had been looking more and more despondent. She had been shaking her head and muttering to herself. At one point, she said, "Shit," dropped her head to her knees with a violent movement and sat for a long time with her head in her hands. When she heard the social worker tell the child she was sick, Sharon got up, waving her hands and shouting at the court, "I wasn't sick like that. She's making it all up. I don't want to listen to that. She's saying to my kids that I'm sick."

Sharon stormed out of the courtroom, and the tape was wound back to Lesley Morgan's explanation, and Janis's response, which was quite similar to her mother's. "I'm not going to listen to any more. Okay? That's enough, okay?" the child said.

"You don't like to hear that your mommy's sick," said Dr. Oliviera.

"She's better," said Janis.

"She's better, is she?" asked Lesley Morgan.

"Yes," Janis replied.

"No, she isn't," said Linda. "She isn't. She's not better."

"If she says she won't do it, can we go home?" asked Janis.

Dr. Oliviera replied, "It's a very hard decision because we know you love her very much."

"Yeah, but if I just told her not to do it, can we?"

"Mommy won't say that she did all those bad things to you, and I think it's hard for us to know that she won't do them again," said the therapist.

"She will. She will," screamed Linda.

"Yeah, we think she will, too," said Dr. Oliviera.

"I wish we can go home, but we can't," said Linda, hugging Dr. Oliviera, who then realized that the child had wet herself in her distress.

Linda looked very upset when the girls arrived for their next session with Dr. Oliviera a week later. "Can we talk?" she asked the doctor.

As was so often the case when one child wanted to talk, her sister tried to disrupt. "I'm going to be the baby, but we're not going to talk about anything right yet," said Janis. She played at being a very unhappy, demanding baby until Lesley took her out of the room, so that Linda would have a chance to talk to Dr. Oliviera alone.

"Something was bothering you on the way here. What were you thinking about, when you were coming here? Were you worrying about your mommy?" Dr. Oliviera asked. The child did not answer and the psychiatrist continued, "Last time we were talking about how hard it is to understand that Mommy loves you and you love Mommy, but Mommy did some bad things."

"She didn't. It was a lie," said Linda.

"Is that right? When did you decide that, Linda? Did someone tell you to say that? Who told you to say it was a lie?"

"My mom."

"Oh, when did she tell you that?"

"When we were with her the other day."

"Did she say you mustn't talk to me?"

"That's right."

"Did Mom say that something bad would happen if you talked to me about all these things?"

"Yeah, something really bad."

"What would happen? What did she say would happen if you talked to me about all these things?"

"Really bad," Linda repeated.

"Yeah?"

"She'll stick another one in us. Another birdie."

"Into you?"

"That's what I said. A black birdie."

"She said she'd stick another black birdie into you?"

"Yeah, and its white wings, and its black head," said Linda, whose fear seemed to subside somewhat until she suddenly pointed to a picture of a bird on the wall of the playroom, and said in a state of extreme agitation, "See that thing, that bird right there. That's what she's gonna stick in us, if I tell you."

It was a very somber group of people who watched these videos in the court. Journalists who are used to encountering all kinds of horror with professional detachment would sit brooding over their coffee during the breaks, and would find the image of these tormented children returning to them at night. For the women, particularly, the references to the bird conjured up unbearably painful images, and it was almost impossible not to identify with these little girls, who tried to drown their traumatic memories in old familiar childhood games.

Arthur Brown, in his closing arguments at the hearing, noted that people who saw the children tended to believe their stories, while people who did not see them remained skeptical. This was an odd argument for the mother's lawyer to advance, and it would appear that the point that he was trying to make was that it was easy to be taken in by these little girls. But Harper, the CAS lawyer, saw this observation as simply underscoring a point that he also had wanted to make, that one only had to see the children on video to realize that the trauma and anguish they showed when they talked about what had happened to them were not things that could be either fabricated or coached.

Lee Coleman, the psychiatrist who has challenged the techniques of therapists and interviewers in many of the American child abuse cases, has stated that one only has to look at tapes of therapy sessions to see how children are manipulated. He said that if the media had been allowed to see these tapes they would have instantly recognized that the children's allegations were phony. All of the journalists who saw the tapes in the Hamilton case, which were shown early in the hearing, started out being highly skeptical of the children's allegations. After watching the children through 20 hours of therapy sessions, they were all prepared to accept that the children could be telling the truth, and that certainly there had been some horrendous disturbance in these young girls' lives.

In the next session that was shown to the court, Linda again talked about the bird, and about being forced to eat "poo" and drink "pee." She said Gary had told her "it was good, when it wasn't." She went on to say, "My dad killed three people, Elizabeth, little Elizabeth." The therapist asked her who the other people were, and Linda said, "They're little children like us, like Janis and me."

Linda appeared relieved that she had talked about these things, but Janis was extremely upset and did everything she could to disrupt her little sister's communications. Dr. Oliviera did not press the children after this session to disclose more of what was obviously so painful and difficult for them to talk about. She concentrated more on helping them to work on their feelings through play and their interaction with her.

In a session on November 1, Dr. Oliviera saw each child separately, and asked them, "What's Halloween like for kids?" Linda talked about kidnapping, and Janis talked about murder.

While Janis played she would occasionally let out what Dr. Oliviera described as "blood-curdling screams, ear-shattering screams." The therapist said she had never heard a child scream like that before, and it suggested to her that "this little girl has a lot inside to scream about."

Dr. Oliviera noted that, although Janis had evidently been exposed to a horrendous family interaction, she was still very attached to her father and mother, and that is what one would expect to see, even in badly physically, sexually and mentally abused children. She testified that the children were told that their father and mother would visit them over the Christmas holiday, and Janis said, "Please, pretty please, I want to go stay one night with Mom and Dad because I miss them. I'll give you a house. First I want to see Daddy and then Mommy. I want to stay one night."

The Christmas visits by the parents were authorized by Judge Beckett. A court order of May 28, 1985, terminated the parents' access rights and since then they had been allowed to see the children only once, shortly before the trial commenced. The purpose of that earlier visit was to allow the psychiatrists who were assessing them to make some observations about their behavior with the children.

The psychiatrist said she found it unusual that Linda didn't want to see her father. She said Linda told her that her father had forbidden her to speak, and she was afraid he would kill her with a knife to the neck because she had seen her father make that threat to her mother.

When Sharon visited with them she demonstrated that she was able to play well with them, and showed a lot of love for them, but was also quite manipulative. When she talked to the girls about visiting their relatives, the children started talking about death and showed a great dislike of all their relatives. Linda said, "I don't like Uncle Fred, because he says you got to eat poo."

"Do you eat poo?" Sharon asked, in a theatrical tone.

Linda and Janis laughed as they gave the negative answer that was clearly expected of them.

Sharon pointed to the bird picture on the wall, to which Linda had referred in the taped therapy session, which Sharon had already seen in court. "Pretty bird, isn't it," the mother remarked. When Linda did not assent to this, Sharon said, "You don't like that bird? Dull colors, eh?"

Sharon told a story about a movie character who shot his eye out. She said this wouldn't have happened if he had listened to his mother, because "mothers always know."

When the therapy sessions resumed after Christmas, Janis told Dr. Oliviera that the visits had been confusing and scary, but added, "My mom didn't hurt me."

In the next session, Dr. Oliviera showed the children a videotape called *Feeling Yes, Feeling No*, designed to help school children deal with sexual advances and assaults by adults. Janis was enthralled and watched it avidly with her mouth open. She wanted to see it a second time and then re-enacted two of the scenes. She said, "This is very important to me."

When she arrived for the next meeting a week later, Janis went straight to the video and put it on. As she watched it she said, "What if someone is touching you and you like it?" Dr. Oliviera told her it is wrong, and Janis replied, "If this happens, children are put in a foster home."

Linda said she was afraid it would happen again if she returned home. The two girls argued about whether it would happen again. Janis was very sad, and sang, "Yucky things in the home, but everything is alright, and God will look after you."

Although she did not feel that her therapeutic goals had been achieved with the children, Dr. Oliviera decided to put their therapy on hold because she thought that the degree of pain and conflict that they were experiencing was irresolvable. Janis knew perfectly well that if she talked, she confirmed reasons not to go home to her mother. The therapist felt it was too difficult for the child to deal with this issue while her fate was in limbo.

Dr. Oliviera told the court that she concluded from the 26 therapy sessions she had with the children that they were describing things that they had experienced, and that they witnessed events that they interpreted as murders. She said the children's stories could not be interpreted as fantasies. She noted that Janis and Linda were "unusually unimaginative children," and said that, even when children have very active, rich fantasy lives, they are generally able to distinguish between what is fantasy and what is reality.

The psychiatrist said she could draw some conclusions on the nature of the children's relationships with their parents and Gary Evans on the basis of the fact that the children made these allegations, irrespective of whether or not they were true: "For children to make these statements about their caretaking figures, the relationships must be grotesquely and bizarrely distorted. It just doesn't happen otherwise that children would say these things about their principal caretakers.

"I feel these children have some very disturbed mental constructs. Our responsibility as a society is to help them revise them so they can lead healthy lives. I feel strongly they should have more therapy," Dr. Oliviera told the court.

She said that such therapy would be impossible as long as the children have any contact with their mother and father or Gary Evans: "The children described experiencing sexual abuse at the hands of these three parenting figures, but had never received any acknowledgment or confirmation from these people that validated their own experience or enabled them to deal with it or understand why it happened, or have any reassurance that it would not happen again, which both had some doubts about; Janis hoping it wouldn't and Linda feeling surely it would. They both understood that there was a prohibition from either mother or father against discussing these issues, and so it was impossible for me to see how they could reach any resolution on these extraordinarily difficult things for a young child to integrate, and move on in their development while in either continual or intermittent contact with people who deny their having happened and prohibit their dealing with these issues."

Michael Hartrick, Gordon Wells's lawyer, asked the therapist if these comments meant that "the father has either got to say, 'Yes, I killed three children,' or he is not going to see his children. If it didn't happen, he's not going to see the children again."

Dr. Oliviera responded, "Something happened. These children believe they saw their father kill children. No explanation at all has been offered which helps the children make sense of their reality. He would have to explain to me why the children would think these things. Either it happened, or something happened, which I could understand that the children could interpret as those events."

Arthur Brown, cross-examining on behalf of the mother, asked whether the children were fit to appear in court to testify. Dr. Oliviera replied, "It is clear that what they said to me was reported in the midst of enormous internal conflict on their part. To have the children in court would be a very frightening experience."

Dr. Oliviera said the children needed a decision on their future soon. The court in fact failed to meet their needs in this respect, as it would be another nine months before Judge Beckett was finally able to deliver his judgement. The therapist said, "The children need as soon as possible to be in a stable living situation which they see as stretching into the future. They need to be able to integrate, and make sense of, the anxiety-provoking, difficult experiences that they report. They need to make sense of the bizarre events in their lives, and to integrate them into a view of themselves as good and lovable children. They have to learn to make sense of the world, its predictability, its benignness."

She warned that if they do not deal with these issues they would have to "seal off an area of experience which had a major impact on them, and is impossible to deal with." She said that in later life these experiences would break through in flashbacks. The consequences of these unresolved childhood traumas would emerge in their own parenting behavior, in an inappropriate interest in sexual experience at too early an age. Their self-esteem, and their sexual and marital relationships would be affected, and young people with such problems are more likely than other people to become prostitutes, Dr. Oliviera said.

Even with treatment, Dr. Oliviera said she was not completely confident that the children would flourish. She told the court: "In the best of circumstances, it is a chillingly large therapeutic task. I still don't know if they will turn out to be okay young women, okay young mothers."

CHAPTER 16

THE MOTHER'S TESTIMONY

In spite of all the shocking and unusual testimony heard during the first 12 months of the trial, no-one in the court was prepared for Sharon's dramatic courtroom breakdown while under cross-examination in October, 1986. The scene stunned everyone who saw it, and aroused widespread sympathy and concern among those who read or saw the sensational media accounts. The image of a young mother being wheeled, strapped to a stretcher, from a court where she had spent more than a year fighting for the return of her children became a sharp focus for public debate about the strange process that was unfolding in the Hamilton court, and the bizarre and disturbing phenomenon that it represented.

On the 114th day of the hearing Sharon Wells began her testimony. She looked like a frightened child as she took her place in the chair beside the judge's bench. Her eyes darted around the courtroom. Her whole body was shaking, and her breathing accelerated to the point where she obviously had difficulty speaking. "I waited for this day, and now I'm scared," she said in a tremulous voice.

"Take your time. Catch your breath," Judge Beckett said soothingly.

Sharon seemed to have difficulty remembering where she lived when Arthur Brown asked his first, very basic question. As the lawyer gently led her into an account of her horrific childhood, the woman seemed to lose her self-consciousness, and began to give very moving and vivid testimony about the consequences of abuse and deprivation. At one point she hesitated to answer a question about her mother and looked over at the reporters, who were writing furiously. "Me and my mom are on good terms right now, and if I start cackling about the way she kept her place she might pounce on me. Are they allowed to print everything?" she asked.

"Try to forget the media are here," Brown told her.

She did seem to forget as she went on with her harrowing story, and seemed sometimes to be reliving the anguish that she had suffered throughout her tragic life. It took her more than a day to describe her childhood, her relationship with Janis's natural father, Ross, and her tumultuous marriage to Gordon.

Near the end of her second day of testimony, Brown began questioning Sharon about her use of a videocassette recorder that Gary rented for several months in 1984. She said the girls watched films on it that Gary had got for his little sister. She listed some of the titles of films they saw: *Care Bears*, *Bedknobs and Broomsticks*, *Goofy Sports*, and *Purple Rain*. She told the court about a film called *Last House on the Left*, which she said she rented for her brother, Mike. That was the same brother who had been accused of sexually assaulting Janis a few years before. Sharon said she was back on good terms with him, though she did not leave him alone with the girls.

"I didn't watch all that movie. I wanted to get Mike a videotape that I thought he would like. I saw a box with a woman running from a house. I figured the house was full of spooks," she explained. "As he watched it, he just called it a sick movie."

Sharon said that the children were playing in their bedroom while Mike was watching the film in the living room, and she was cooking in the kitchen. She said she wandered in and out of the living room and so did the children. She said she would send the girls back into their bedroom whenever she saw them in the room where the television was on, and also "scooted them out" when Mike told her they were watching it. She said she did not know how much of the film they saw, but they did have an opportunity to see some of it.

Brown told the judge that he wanted the court to see the film, as he felt there was a similarity between its subject matter and some of the allegations made to Catherine McInnis. The judge asked when the movie was shown, and Sharon said it was in 1984, and she would have to try and get a record of when she rented it to pinpoint the exact time. Brown said he had not been able to find such reports. The judge said he had not been told where it was shown.

"If the court is confused . . ." Brown began to say.

The judge responded sharply, "The court is not confused. The court is not informed."

Sharon explained that it was in her apartment in Toronto. The judge said he was still not satisfied that the film that Brown proposed to show was properly identified by Mrs. Wells. The lawyer asked his client to tell the court all that she remembered about the film, which, it soon became apparent, was very little.

"Her memory of it is very vague," said the judge. "No story line, just a few pictures: a raped girl, a finger with a ring."

Sharon said, "The reason I remember it is my brother said to me, it's one of the grossest movies he's ever seen, and my brother's seen a lot of movies."

It was already about 4:30 P.M. and the judge asked the lawyers if the morning would be a more appropriate time to watch a gross movie. Hugh Atwood said, "I have trouble enough handling my coffee in the morning." The court agreed to watch the film, and the judge asked Sharon to leave the courtroom while it was being shown.

After viewing the film, Judge Beckett glared at Brown with a look of extreme disgust, and stumbled as he hurriedly left the darkened courtroom. He later wrote in his final judgement, "I must say that her brother's description of the film as being 'sick and gross' was an understatement. The film depicted brutal scenes of murder and dismemberment of two teenage girls."

The film did not provide an instant explanation for the girls' bizarre statements, but it did give everyone who saw it in the court pause to think about what sick images of violence are readily available in society. It was profoundly shocking to realize that this inartistic, humorless celebration of sadistic sexual violence is readily available at video stores and marketed as popular entertainment.

When she resumed her testimony the next morning, Sharon said she had remembered more details about the film. The judge was very skeptical about her further descriptions of the movie. He noted: "It was apparent that, overnight, she had had a very sudden and almost total recall of details of the film. She even remembered the last scene in the movie, a chainsaw murder, about which she had gone to some trouble the day before to tell me that she had not recalled. She was even able to remember precisely what she had cooked for dinner that night.

"Sharon Wells seemed to offer this film as an explanation for some of the children's allegations of murder and dismemberment. However, she failed to mention this film to anyone previous to her testimony in court; not to the CAS, the police or to her own psychiatrist," said the judge. He stated that he did not believe her testimony about the film, especially after hearing evidence called by the CAS that the video store where she said she rented the film did not even have the film at the time she said she got it, and had no record of her ever taking it out.

Sharon testified that Janis knew how to operate a VCR, and that the children also saw videos at her brothers' and sisters' homes, as well as at Gary's and Gordon's. She said that the other films they saw included *Clash of the Titans* and *The Dark Crystal*. She said that in *The Dark Crystal* animated characters go on a journey through winter and dark spaces, and see witches are stirring something in a pot from which heads pop up. She also mentioned a scene in *Clash of the Titans* where a head is chopped off. She said she let the children watch *Poltergeist* on television, and now believes she was wrong in letting them see it. She said she was very careful not to let the children see programs like "Dynasty," which showed people in bed with each other.

Sharon told the court, "I cannot say I'm 100 percent sure Gary didn't sexually abuse my kids. But I can say I'm 100 percent sure I didn't sexually abuse my kids. As God is my witness, I never sexually abused my kids once. I would never put them through the pain I went through."

She said Gary did have the opportunity to abuse them. She said Gary was very upset when she got pregnant with the new baby, and told her she should have an abortion. She said she prayed, and opened the Bible randomly at "A seed will grow for the next generation." She said she took this as a sign that she should keep the child. Sharon testified that she did not think Gary gave a damn about the child, as he had not even wanted to have pictures of the baby, and had never asked her what the baby looked like. She said Gary asked her, "What am I going to tell my next girlfriend about a kid that I had?"

"I see her for one-and-a-half hours, twice a week. I love her. She's my daughter. She's beautiful. I never thought she'd come out so good. She's just beautiful. We play," Sharon said. "She laughs at me when she sees me. I think she knows who I am. I can't be certain."

Sharon claimed to have seen very little of her ex-husband, Gordon, since the court case began, an assertion that, the judge noted, was not supported by a comment she made about the fact that she had not seen Gordon wearing his knife on his belt since the trial began, but had noticed it in his car.

While Sharon vehemently denied any involvement in a plot to kill the McInnises on the May 1985 long weekend, the judge said he found her account of what she did that weekend "left a lot to be desired" and was "to a degree, at least, fabricated."

"What would I gain from killing her?" Sharon asked, "Sure, I was angry in the beginning. I thought she was sick. I thought she should have a one-way ticket up the mountain with a straitjacket. Now I have a different idea of Mrs. McInnis. I sat through her whole testimony. I can't say I think she's an upright, nasty person. I think she thought she was doing right. I think maybe she exaggerated things the children said. I think she perceived what my kids were saying in a different way from what they said it. Sure they said some things to her. I wasn't there. I can't actually say what was said, what went on. I never ever wished her dead. Say I wanted to do that, would I have any chance of getting my kids back if I blew up the McInnises?

"Gary and Gordon are just as the colors they are, black and white. They hate each other," she said. "For the three of us to get together to kill the McInnises, that's farfetched, if you ask me."

Arthur Brown introduced into evidence numerous pictures and coloring books that had belonged to the children, and among these he solemnly produced two Cabbage Patch dolls. Elizabeth, together with her official adoption papers, and Laura, who, Sharon explained, did not have any papers, were formally entered as exhibits. The court clerk marked them as exhibits 119 and 120, placing little tags on the front of each doll, and carefully sat them side by side on top of a row of paper file folders. Little more was said about the dolls or their significance to Sharon's case, but they sat there through the balance of the hearing, symbolizing, perhaps, the two children, the absent protagonists in this protracted tragedy.

Brown continued to question Sharon through five days. He next asked her if she had ever used a vibrator. She responded with almost theatrical tones of disbelief, "I'd never seen one of those up until a couple of months ago. Me and my mom went to a lingerie party. I thought it would be just nightgowns and such like. They had more than nightgowns there. I was embarrassed. They had vibrators and pants that you can eat. I'm serious, they did. Jelly stuff and two little ball things that woman walk around with in the supermarket. I swear to God, never in my life."

She said the children only saw Gary and her in bed on one occasion: "When I have a relationship, I have it in the bedroom with the door shut." Asked if she discussed the facts of life with the children, she said, "I explained about periods, what I know about them.

"I'm the type of person who doesn't like to look at men down there. When Gordon was finished he always put on his underwear, and Gary, when he went to the washroom, put a towel on. When it comes to looking at men, I'm very self-conscious," Sharon testified. She said she used to tell the children "their body's their own. Nobody gets to touch it but them. I always used to ask them, 'Can I wash you downstairs.' If they don't want me to, I would let them do it themselves. I wanted to stress to them that their body's their own. Lots of times I'd put cream on Linda, she would say, 'Mommy that hurts.' I would let her do it herself."

She said she thought that perhaps the children got the idea about her sticking things in them from her using a thermometer to check their temperatures. Brown wanted to file a thermometer as an exhibit, but the judge told him testily that he knew what a thermometer looked like.

She gave an explanation, which the judge found "very strange," for the allegations about the bird. She said, "I had put an old couch on the balcony [in Toronto]. There was a hole in the part you sit on. Some birds made a nest in there. I asked Gordon to help me get the birds out of there, and we were to get rid of the couch, and that's what we did with the birds, we took the old blanket that I had, and we put the birds on the blanket and put them beside the door, and the birds died, and we had to throw them out. Like, they didn't live. We would watch them every morning."

Judge Beckett noted that she had said the birds were black, and concluded, "I found this explanation unbelievable, and I do not accept it. I thought it strange that birds would be nesting on the 20th storey. No other witness was called to corroborate this evidence. It is significant that at no time Mrs. Wells gave this explanation to the CAS or to the police."

Sharon was very hesitant when she was asked for explanations about the alleged killings and mutilations, and offered the possibility that the girls' stories were inspired by the cutting off of the head in the *Clash of the Titans*. The judge observed, "It's interesting to note that Mrs. Wells made no mention of the *Last House on the Left* at this stage in her evidence."

"When asked about the children's allegations about Channel 11, she seemed very uncomfortable and took a long time to explain her answer," Judge Beckett noted. Sharon explained that they often went by the television studio, but "we only looked in it, we have never ever been right inside of it."

Sharon had no explanation for the children's allegations about graveyards, though she said they did ask her about a graveyard that they used to pass on the bus, and she told them that was where the dead people were. She denied any knowledge of satanism or satanic cults. She described the children being scared by people in masks on Halloween.

Judge Beckett stated in his judgement that during the course of her testimony, "she went through many mood swings, often slumped in the chair, sometimes with her head down, not answering questions for long periods of time, sometimes appearing extremely excited and other times flat and almost disinterested."

Sharon told the court, "I'm not going to stop. These are my children. I know I didn't do nothing to them. I'm going to fight until I can't fight no more, until there's no life in me to fight.

"I think I can take care of them, but I think I'll need help. Teach me better than what I've learned. There's so much to kids that I don't know and that I have to learn. I want my kids back. I love them very much. I want them to get to know me, to remember me again. I don't even know if they talk about me," she said. "I gave the CAS two necklaces to give to my kids, to tell them I still love them and am fighting for them."

She also gave what could be taken as a hint that there were other recourses open to her. She told the court that she knew the identity of the baby's foster mother, and knew her car, "But I'm taking the legal road."

The cross-examinations began gently, in a good-humored tone, as Michael Hartrick questioned Sharon about her ex-husband. He had asked her about Gordon's treatment of the children, and she had told him that he never hit Janis in the face. Then she said, "He kicked her toy one time, and broke it, because she smashed his skull ashtray. He kicked her turtle and broke the foot."

Hartrick responded, "We're dealing with a satanism trial here. Is this something we should be worried about?"

Sharon laughed as she replied, "No, it was made of ashtray stuff."

Hartrick turned to the allegations of marital violence, and said, "I suggest that he did not come at you with the machete, but whacked it into the wall."

"We both have different views of what happened."

"I suggest that if he was trying to strike you with the machete he could have done so."

"Yes, he could have. Just like he could have slit my throat with the knife."

"Was the machete something he used regularly, or only on festive occasions, to trim a tree?" asked Hartrick.

"He used it to trim the tree more than once. Other times only when he would show it to his friends."

When Hartrick asked if Sharon took Gordon's threats seriously, she replied, "When he threatened me I believed him. Talking to Gordon now, I think he just shoots his mouth off. There's a lot of people that he said he wanted to kill, that he hasn't done anything about. He even threatened to blow up the income tax people when he didn't get a good return. Well, I'm still here."

"And the income tax people are still here, unfortunately," said Hartrick.

Sharon seemed to take some delight in telling stories about Gordon's exaggerated threats and dramatic acts of violence, and she relaxed under the influence of Hartrick's witty responses.

When the cross-examination resumed again the next morning, she was again highly nervous. Although it was warm in the courtroom, Sharon was shivering, and her teeth were chattering. She put on her coat, folded and unfolded her arms several times and leaned forward, wringing her hands in a frenzied gesture.

The lawyer asked her about her account of the incident where she said Gordon tried to throw her off the 20th storey balcony. He suggested that Gordon was in fact trying to stop her from jumping. She replied, "People can see things differently. That's what I've learned from this trial. Even in some of the videos I've seen with the kids, I can see it one way and you can see it another. It's all in the way somebody looks at something. Me and Gordon had a lot of fights. When he throws the machete and misses my head, I figure he's out to kill me."

Judge Beckett noted that, on the whole, during this cross-examination she seemed to downplay the threats that her husband had made to her. The judge observed that she gave a rather strange answer to a question by Hartrick about whether Gordon worshiped the devil. She took a very long time to answer the question and finally said, "Did he worship the devil? No, not that I know of. He, at times, would say that 'I'm going to come back and haunt you,' because there was times when I would get mad at him and I'd say, 'Well, I wish you were dead,' or something like that and he'd say, 'I can't die. I'll come back and haunt you' sort of thing. But that's as far as I can remember."

Sharon looked frightened as John Harper, the lawyer for the Children's Aid Society, began his cross-examination by explaining to her what perjury is, and then launched into a series of questions about the movie, *Last House on the Left*. He pinned her down about when and where she had rented the film, and then told her he would bring evidence to show that it could not have been rented at that time from the store she had named. He showed her the box that contained the film, which had a vivid illustration of a woman with her hand above her head, a man with a knife in front of her and a man with a chainsaw behind her. Sharon said she did not remember seeing the men, only the girl and the house in the background. She said she didn't read the writing on the box, which described the film as "A story of terror, involving the death of two girls, kidnapped by a gang, an unbearable and brutal climax never before seen."

Harper questioned her aggressively about her memory of the film, suggesting that she was lying when she claimed to have suddenly remembered minute details while the court was viewing the film. "It was what the judge said. I figured I should remember more. That's why I tried to remember more," said Sharon, who stuck to her story that she had seen bits and pieces of the film in 1984 and not viewed it since. "Please don't scream," she asked the lawyer, who was questioning her sharply and rapidly, but in a normal voice.

"When you saw the movie in 1984, were you not sick at the part where the girl was raped in the woods?" asked Harper.

"I don't remember being sick," Sharon replied.

"Were you not sick at the part where one girl's chest was being cut and bleeding? Did it not bother you?" Harper persisted.

"Yes, it bothered me."

"And you told the court the kids were able to see the movie? You didn't think to shut the movie off?"

"I didn't know what the next scene would be."

"You continued to watch it till the end, where the father cut the man with the chainsaw?"

"I didn't know what was in between."

As Harper asked her why she had never mentioned the movie before she testified in court, Sharon's teeth were chattering again. She began exhaling loudly, and screwing up her face in a look of extreme anguish. Harper said, "I notice that you're shivering."

"I'm freezing," she replied, "probably because I just drunk a cold Coke."

The remainder of the day, Sharon's eighth day on the witness stand, was taken up with cross-examination about her childhood, her relationships and her treatment of the children while they were living in Toronto. Harper tried to expose inconsistencies in Sharon's story, points on which she had said things to third parties that differed from what she said in her testimony. He questioned her about the violent incidents with her first boyfriend, Ross Fuller, and asked her if she was sure that he had been jailed for two years as a result of her charging him with assault. She said she was. He suggested that, after Janis was born, she moved around a lot because she was on the run from the Toronto CAS. He questioned her judgement in allowing her brother Mike to sleep with Janis two nights in a row. He criticized her practice of sending the girls to stay with her mother and stepfather, when she was well aware of her stepfather's perverse interest in children.

For the morning of the next day Harper questioned Sharon further about the children and their injuries while they were in Toronto. He probed the view of Gordon that she had given in her earlier testimony, which was more lenient than that implied by allegations she had made against him in the past. Then in the afternoon he returned to the question he had raised earlier about Ross going to jail. Harper said, "I suggest Ross Fuller was never charged by you, never found guilty of assaulting you. I suggest you lied to this court."

"No sir."

"He was convicted of armed robbery in 1979 and sentenced for two years less a day for armed robbery," said Harper.

"I know he was convicted of holding up a Becker's store. But, yes, I must have got it confused," said Sharon.

"You knew about it?"

"Not until my sister showed me the paper, and laughed in my face about it."

"That was in January, 1979, just a few months after, you say, he was sentenced to two years less a day for assault causing bodily harm," Harper said.

"I know he went to court because I laid charges on him," Sharon replied.

"You said you heard the judge sentencing him?"

"Yes, sir, that's what I thought he said. I know that we went to court because I almost got in contempt of court. Maybe I've got mixed up, sir. Maybe I got them confused. I didn't mean to but I did. Maybe I got confused, but I knew . . . my sister laughed in my face. She said your daughter's father is a milkman bandit."

Sharon began to cry, and continued to repeat, "I know she laughed in my face about it. Maybe I got them confused, but I didn't mean to. But I know I went to court with them."

She controlled her mounting hysteria for a moment, and said, "What happened was, okay, I charged him. Then I got with Gordon. Then I was at my sister's. Then he came there to my place and threatened me with a gun."

She began crying again, and waved her hands frantically, as she shouted, "This whole thing is getting to me. I wake up with nightmares. I can't take it no more. Don't come near me. I can't take it no more."

Sharon got up from her chair, and turned her back on Harper. She was now sobbing and shaking convulsively, and said in a distracted but pleading tone, "I'm so confused about so much. I'm trying to . . . I want to get my kids back. I don't know what's wrong with me."

Brown approached her holding out a paper tissue, but she screamed at him, "Don't touch me, please. Don't hit me."

Her lawyer urged Sharon to walk out of the courtroom, but she was now in a state of total panic. She shouted hysterically, "I can't walk. I can't get my kids back. I want them, and I love them, but I'm not ready. I'm just not ready."

As the judge, lawyers and other people in the court watched in a stunned silence, Sharon slumped down onto the courtroom floor against the wall, in a space between the judge's bench and a stand that held the television set on which the court had earlier watched her children's anguished play. Shaking violently and shrieking, she lay there in a fetal position, while Brown asked for an adjournment and Judge Beckett cleared the court. She continued to yell and scream as an ambulance arrived. A few minutes later she was wheeled out of the courtroom, struggling against the leather straps that bound her to a stretcher.

Judge Beckett later stated, "I must say that I found the episode in court shocking, even frightening. As there was evidence given by Sharon Wells herself that the October 16th episode was similar to breakdowns that she had suffered in the past, and which had been witnessed by her children, there can be no doubt that these breakdowns must have had a stunning and fearful effect on the children."

During the three days that Sharon was recovering in a Hamilton hospital, public concerns were aired about the extreme length of the hearing. At a weekend seminar attended by journalists, lawyers and a family court judge, the wardship hearing became the focal point of a discussion on family court issues. "Was this mother the victim of an abusive legal process?" it was asked, and "Has the Hamilton hearing been allowed to get out of control?" These questions were pursued in newspaper articles, and an editorial in the *Hamilton Spectator* directly criticized the judge for his handling of the case.

Such public speculation about a case in progress, while common in the United States, is almost unheard of in Canada, where strict contempt of court laws restrict such discussion. When the court resumed the following week, the judge and lawyers spent several hours in chambers, apparently reviewing some of the newspaper coverage with these prohibitions in mind. No action was taken by the court on this issue, but Hugh Atwood did make a statement in court deploring the *Spectator* editorial, which seemed to take the position that the judge should somehow clamp down on the hearing in a way that would obviously deny the rights of a full judicial process to all parties involved. After the trial the newspaper published an editorial praising the way the judge handled the case.

When the court resumed the following week, Judge Beckett said he had been informed by Brown that Sharon was ready to continue her testimony. The judge said, "I must tell you I'm very uncomfortable. She may very well be physically and mentally ready to resume. But based on what I saw I have very serious reservations about whether she is in a state ready to resume the witness stand."

Harper said he wanted to make a motion that the court should require her to undergo a psychiatric examination before she continued. Brown asked for a moment to consult with his client, saying, "My client probably doesn't understand what's going on here."

"That's the point, isn't it?" said Judge Beckett. "This is not trial by ordeal."

The lawyers discussed whether the judge had the power to order a psychiatric examination, and Judge Beckett settled the issue by saying, "I'm satisfied I have the power. If I don't have the power, I'm going to exercise it anyway."

When the court next convened, Dr. Emil Zamora, the psychiatrist who had first examined Sharon on her arrival in hospital after her courtroom collapse, gave his report on his subsequent assessment of the patient. He gave the opinion that she was fit to testify: "I don't feel she had a psychotic breakdown. She had an adjustment reaction to stress. A dissociative reaction can be very short-lived and is not considered a psychotic breakdown, a nervous breakdown *per se*."

Hospital notes that Dr. Zamora brought to the court stated that Sharon described how, when Arthur Brown approached her in the courtroom, she felt that she saw the face of her deceased father. The psychiatrist said this was an illusion, a distortion of something she saw, rather than a true hallucination. The hospital notes also stated that Sharon recalled feeling frightened on the witness stand, but also angry about the length of the trial, her childhood and the stress she was suffering. It was also noted on the records that she cried hysterically on the day after she was admitted to hospital, saying that she was expecting to get therapy in hospital, and now she was going to be discharged and nothing had changed. The notes also stated "impaired concentration, memory, fatigue, suicidal thoughts—no plans made, has no supports other than lawyer."

Dr. Zamora testified, "Mrs. Wells seems to have a selective component as far as her memory is concerned. There may be some areas she is either willingly or unwillingly blocking out, usually distressing areas. . . . Her life has been very stressful, parts of her life are a blur to her. In court she felt cornered, didn't know what to do."

The hospital notes stated that Sharon was questioning whether there was another person inside her that could in some way have done the things that she was accused of doing. Dr. Zamora said there was not enough evidence to conclude she was suffering from multiple personalities. He said he believed that the woman would not follow through on the suicidal ideas she had entertained. He said, "She would like this to be over, not to have to go through this. But she does recognize she does have to."

Judge Beckett concluded from Dr. Zamora's evidence that Sharon Wells was mentally and physically capable of resuming her testimony. Looking lost and forlorn, the small, pale woman returned to the seat at the front of the court to continue her ordeal. John Harper, a generally composed and aggressive, but not insensitive, man, also looked uneasy as he prepared to resume his cross-examination.

CHAPTER 17

THE MOTHER'S TESTIMONY CONTINUES

Sharon's fear and confusion were evident as soon as she returned to the witness stand. Her startling testimony during the next few days made it clear that it was not just the court process that frightened her, and not only other people that she was confused about.

"Is there something wrong with your voice?" Harper asked, as Sharon responded to his first few questions in a hoarse whisper.

"I think so, sir, my throat's all dry," she responded timidly.

She was even slower in answering Harper's questions than she had been before, and sometimes repeated the questions several times as if struggling to comprehend them.

She said she had recently met Gordon at her mother's house, where her ex-husband was a frequent visitor. She said he told her, " 'I'm going to testify, but I'd better be on and off in four days,' and he went into one of his spastic fits. I didn't want to talk to him about it, because he just goes on and on about this court case. He always takes a fit and rattles on and on."

"You have told us in your previous evidence that Gordon Wells, since this trial had begun, has threatened Gary Evans?" Harper asked.

"Yes, sir, he has."

"Since this trial began has Gordon Wells threatened anyone else in this courtroom?"

"Yes, sir."

"Who?"

"He has threatened his lawyer; he has threatened you, sir; he has threatened the judge, sir; he has threatened my lawyer, sir; he has threatened me, sir."

"And that was in your presence?"

"The only ones he hasn't threatened is the kids' lawyer and Mr. O'Neail, because he figures Mr. O'Neail shouldn't even be here. But that's the truth, sir, I swear it's the truth."

"When was the last time he said that in your presence?"

"That he has threatened?"

"Yes."

"The weekend past. On the weekend, I don't think he threatened you, sir. He just said he's not going to take a lot of crap from you," said Sharon. She said Gordon threatened the judge on that occasion: "He said that he was going to get him off the bench and going to sue him. He shouldn't be up there."

Sharon looked up at Judge Beckett, and added, "And win a million dollars and pay you off, sir. He said, 'If I have a million dollars I can pay them off.' He threatened at one point he was gonna blow his lawyer away, then me away, then Arthur, then the judge. I said, 'If you're going to blow them away, how can you sue them?' and he said he was going to sue them and then blow them away. He also said he was going to fire his lawyer. He's made a lot of threats like that, but some of them make me laugh. I told him, I said, 'You just have to go in and answer the questions.' You're a lawyer doing a job for your client. But I wouldn't want to blow you or anybody away. I wouldn't go to extremes like that, but Gordon has a different point of view than I do.

"That's the way I remember it, sir," said Sharon, describing how, when her ex-husband makes such threats, "his voice gets really deep and his face gets red. He didn't make these threats all this weekend. The main one he focused on was firing his lawyer, and Arthur. I said, 'You can't fire Arthur.' He said he could."

The judge commented in his judgement: "In observing the manner in which she answered these questions, and comparing them to the manner in which she had answered previous questions, I believe that she was telling the truth with respect to her statements about Gordon Wells's threats to bring harm to people in the courtroom. I found Mrs. Wells's testimony concerning recent contacts with Gordon Wells to be troubling. Bearing in mind her testimony concerning their violent relationship, there seemed little reason why they should be having any contact since the children have been in care. But during cross-examinations, she admitted to four or perhaps five occasions that she had contact with Wells since she started her testimony."

The judge told Sharon he was confused about what seemed to be a change in her attitude to Gordon. He asked her if anyone had made threats against her that would in any way affect her evidence in court. She appeared upset and frightened, said she was not as afraid of Gordon as she used to be, but added, "He said that he would blow me away. If he has to bring a gun into the courtroom, he'll just blow me away."

"I had the impression he issued this threat to you because of something you already said, or something you might say," said the judge.

"He's also threatened, he'll get me up for perjury," said Sharon. "I talked to him last weekend, when he phoned at my mother's. He said, 'My lawyer said you said too much, and I think you said too much, and I'm going to get you for perjury.'"

"Has it affected your testimony?" asked the judge.

"I just told the truth."

"I want to know if you feel you need protection."

"I must say I've been pretty nervous at times, but I just try and tell the truth the way I see it," Sharon replied. "I've had it up to here with his threats. I'm at the point where, do what you want, I don't care. I guess in a way his threats concern me, but I'm in such a confused state, where I don't give a damn. I want to get this whole thing done and over with, and get some help for myself because I need it. And Gordon's threats don't make it any easier.

"That's all I can say," Sharon told the judge. "Like there are other things I know about Gordon that I haven't said."

The lawyers all had a fresh opportunity to question the witness after the judge had done so, and it was inevitable that this hint would be probed extensively by Harper. Hartrick, the father's lawyer, tried to preempt that by asking about it himself. He asked Sharon if there was anything about Gordon relevant to the case that she hadn't disclosed. She told him about a big meat hook that Gordon kept. "It was very ugly-looking and scary," she said. "I don't know where he got it. It weighs about 15 pounds. When I was pregnant with Linda he said, 'If anyone comes through the door, just hook them with it. I couldn't even lift it—it's not funny, sir. It was after this Paul guy that Gordon knew came over with a bunch of friends and kicked in Mary's place. They came up to our place, and apparently Donald had threatened Paul with a knife. They come up to our place and they made a lot of threats back and forth. It was after that that he had that meat hook. They came over to our place and threatened us. The guy showed us a scar of his having a knife cut.

"I guess I was scared to mention anything like that," she said. "I guess because of the allegations."

"Has Gordon Wells ever told you what to say or what not to say?" asked Hartrick. Sharon was silent for more than a minute, and the lawyer asked her, "What's the problem?"

"I'm just thinking."

"Has he ever told you what to say?"

"Not that I can remember."

"Has Gordon Wells ever told you what not to say to this court?"

After another long pause, Sharon asked, "About anything?"

"About what not to say in your evidence. Has he ever said don't say this?" asked Hartrick. "Are you nervous about something? Look at me. Just answer my question. I'm not trying to cause you a problem, just trying to find out the truth."

The judge interrupted, "Mrs. Wells, I can see from here that you're shaking. Your head is down. Are you afraid to answer this question?"

"I'm trying to answer it. Has he ever told me not to say something? I can't answer that."

The judge said, "I can see from here you're extremely upset. You're not answering the question put by Mr. Hartrick. I'm bound to ask you if that's fear of something, because if it is the court will see to it you have whatever protection is required. Are you afraid?"

"To answer that question? Yes, I am. I'm afraid. I just . . ."

"Are you afraid somebody will hurt you?" asked the judge.

"Yes."

"See that policeman at the back of the courtroom. Why do you think he's there? So that people don't have to be afraid. There's ways and means. I'll make whatever order is necessary to protect you in whatever way is necessary. Now tell the court why you're afraid."

"I'm afraid of what Gordon might do to me," said Sharon, "because I've seen Gordon, now. He's really coming to a breaking point. It's not you people he's going to come after. It's me. He's made threats to other people, but it's always me he's come after. I'm just afraid. I told him I just don't care what he does. I just told him I don't care, because I'm just at a point of my life when I have so much hatred for everything around me, and Gordon threatens me, and that just makes me worse."

The judge noted that Sharon continued to show sheer terror as Hartrick questioned her about what it was that Gordon had said that she was afraid to tell. She said that she had met him at a donut shop in Hamilton to give him some pictures of the children, and they had a conversation in the parking lot: "He said that he's going to shut down this court case, and, if he has to, he'll bring some of his satanic friends to testify. I never knew that he had people like that. I was just shocked because I didn't know he had friends like that. And I'm confused whether he does know people like that, because, if he does, I'm scared."

Sharon repeated Gordon's threat again, and said, "I'm very scared. I never knew he had friends like that. He said if I told anybody he'd kill me. If he does have satanic people like that he knows, I'm sure that he's capable. He said, if I told anybody, he'd kill me. He said, if I told anybody, he'd totally deny it."

Hartrick said, "He didn't want you to give us some kind of notice that these potential witnesses are going to come and testify."

"What I got out of it was not to tell anyone that he knew people like that, satanic people," said Sharon. She said she did not ask who these satanic friends were: "I wasn't going to keep asking him about it. I guess it's because I'm really afraid of the answer that he might give me."

Special police protection was ordered for Sharon. When the court resumed the following day, there were several plainclothes policemen outside the courtroom, looking very conspicuous in their light-colored raincoats, and there was a high state of nervousness inside. Hartrick resumed his cross-examination of Sharon by suggesting that her statements the previous day about being afraid of Gordon were in conflict with her earlier testimony.

Judge Beckett said, "The statements are not in conflict. When she said earlier she was not afraid, she could have said parenthetically, 'As long as I don't tell.' The fear arises out of telling yesterday. As long as she didn't tell, she was not in fear. I repeat, I interpret her evidence as: I keep my mouth shut, I have nothing to be afraid of."

"I'm afraid now of Gordon," said Sharon. "If he walked in this room now I'd be afraid of him and what he would do to me. I'm very afraid of him."

Hartrick said, "I would submit that you've been giving us little clues in the last few days, comments about Gary Evans, Gordon Wells and yourself, inviting questions to be asked."

"Maybe subconsciously I wanted someone to ask me. Maybe that's what I did, because it's been eating me up inside. I want to know if he's got satanic friends. Do you think I'm going to ask him questions about it? Maybe because it's been tearing me apart for a long time now, wondering what I should do. Okay, maybe I was wanting somebody to ask about it."

"Your own lawyer knew about this?"

"He said we were going to sit on this, and see what we're going to do about this."

Hartrick continued to ask her about her delay in revealing this conversation, but the judge interrupted, "What I saw, yesterday, was raw fear from this witness, which amply explains her reluctance, her long delay in telling the story. If you didn't see it, I'm telling you what I saw was trembling, stark fear. I heard her say her life was threatened. I dare say you wouldn't have told if your life was threatened."

"I'm suggesting to this witness that it's baloney," said Hartrick. "The question I had asked was why she had chosen that point to finally tell us all."

Judge Beckett replied, "After a reading of the transcript, I don't think anybody in this courtroom would say she chose that moment. The moment was chosen for her."

Later Sharon told the court, "If he actually knows satanic people, I don't want him to have access to my kids. I don't want him near them. It's good to know finally he's threatening somebody else. Maybe you might know the fear I've faced for years. At least I've got protection."

Harper began questioning Sharon on her allegations, and asked her about Donald, one of the people involved in the meat hook incident. He had been the best man at Sharon's wedding and had stayed at her apartment for a period of time. Sharon said she didn't know his last name. She said she understood that he had since died in a car accident.

Sharon said that Janis had been threatened by the intruders in the incident involving the meat hook. Harper said, "I suggest you hid the fact of the meat hook from the court because it might relate to what the children were saying about the allegations?"

"About killing? Because a meat hook could kill somebody? Because a meat hook is a dangerous thing?" asked Sharon.

"It might go to show that what the children were saying was true," said Harper.

"Maybe it would have related to it. But it doesn't mean it's true."

"You withheld it because of that?"

"To tell the truth, sir, yes," said Sharon.

Harper suggested that Sharon's mother and her brothers were Gordon's friends. Sharon said, "I knew they weren't his satanic friends. That's my family."

"Do you know it as a fact? Do you know none of them were involved in any satanic cults?" asked Harper, who reminded her about the fact that Gordon used to hang around with her brothers in the days when they had their room painted black and decorated with skulls. He reminded her about Gordon's picture of the devil, and comments he made in the past about the devil. Harper asked why she should have been shocked when he spoke of satanic friends.

"I didn't add up everything like you're doing. I'm sorry I just didn't," said Sharon.

"I suggest to you, you withheld this from the court because once again it was too close to the allegations," said Harper.

"No, sir, I deny this, yes, I do."

Sharon later told Brown that Gordon had said, "When he reaches the breaking point he doesn't care if he goes to jail for ten years, he's going to bring someone down with him. I feel I'm the one who's going to get it."

She said, "I do feel I did the right thing in talking in court. Although I'm scared, I feel at peace of mind."

Brown had a few more questions. He asked Sharon if she had experienced blackouts where she couldn't remember things. She said she had, and she described memory lapses where she could only recall "blotches of what happened."

When Harper had questioned her about Gary and the children's allegations, Sharon said she had difficulty remembering some things, and added, "That's why I questioned myself, and said, 'Could I be two people.' There's a lot of things I don't remember about my life. That's why I'm questioning myself. Should I remember everything? Gary did say that to me once, that when I get angry I'm like two people. Last Thursday and before that, I have been questioning me as a person, who I am. And like, I'm wondering is there a possibility that I could be. Like, I don't know if I am. But there is a possibility and I want to rule it right out, and I want to know if I did, 'cause as Sharon Wells, as far as I can remember I did not do anything like that to my kids. But is there a possibility that I could have? That's what I want to know."

Sharon's nervousness and hesitancy was gone at that time, as she became totally absorbed in speaking out about the fears that were tormenting her. "I've had such a hard life," she said, almost choking on her tears. "I'm not asking for sympathy. But people who have such a hard life, like me, could be two people. I'm wondering, could I be? I want therapy. I need therapy. I want to know."

Harper asked her why her children were so terrified, and she replied, "I don't know, sir. I don't know. All I know is I never did that to my kids. I never sexually abused them, never ate people, never committed rituals and that. I'm so torn in so many different directions right now. I don't even know who I am. I wake up in the morning, and leave to come here, and I don't know who I am. I have to accept that the possibility exists that I may be two people.

"When I was a kid, and I got hurted, I laughed. Now I cry. Is that normal? It opened up a lot of things. I'm confused. Now if I got the kids I'd say to the CAS, 'Please take them, I'm scared. I might hurt them, because I don't know.' Like when I get an anxiety attack, I don't know if I'll hurt them or not. Like I'm scared of me."

Her lawyer watched with a pained expression on his face as Sharon explained, "That's why I cannot get my kids back now, sir, because I want to explore this possibility."

Harper listed all the children's allegations, asking for Sharon's response. She said that she knew that she, Sharon Wells, did not do those things, but speculated again about whether she might be two people. She said she was willing to have "psychiatrists pick at my brain." She said she wished the CAS would compromise, and just agree to keep the children while she found out if she had multiple personalities.

Once again Sharon began to make a tearful speech to the court. Her lawyer looked anguished, but there was no way for him to stop her speaking her mind. She said, "Could any one of you people in this courtroom sit here where I'm sitting, go through what I went through, and not have a doubt in your mind. I want one of you to sit here, and not have a damn doubt in your mind. Thoughts are racing in my mind, feelings racing through me. I don't know why my kids say this stuff. Maybe it got fabricated. I'm sitting here in a chair, fighting for two kids I love very much, and I want to get them back. I know what I'm saying now might have blown my shot to ever have my kids back again. I am willing to explore any possibility, go through anything, to find out who I am. I don't know who I am. If I am another person, and I did do that to my kids, I don't know if I'll be able to live with it, but I'll try."

She paused, and then said that if she found out that she did those things she wouldn't want the children back. She said she would tell the CAS, "Keep them, raise them, love them, because I know the hurt.

"You have to sit where I am sitting, be where I am, to know what I'm feeling," she told the court. "I feel the CAS should give me the chance, and not stop me seeing my kids for the rest of my life, or the rest of theirs. They're there to help people. It's not easy for me to sit up here and say this. I want to feel secure in my heart and mind that I am not two people."

CHAPTER 18

THE FATHER'S TESTIMONY

The court awaited the appearance of Gordon Wells with nervous anticipation. On the day he had been expected to testify he did not show up. His lawyer, Michael Hartrick, had not been able to get hold of him by phone. Hartrick said he would contact him in person, a task that he did not appear to relish because the father had allegedly threatened both to fire him and to "blow him away." Judge Beckett and Hartrick joked about these threats in court when the judge made reference to the possibility that the lawyer might be replaced. "I hope it's *replaced,* your honor," said Hartrick.

However, Gordon was not present when the court next convened, even though he had personally assured the lawyer that he would be there. Hartrick called another witness: Gordon's previous lawyer, Cathy Agnew. She was called to testify about Gordon's picture of the sorcerer, which she know he had given to her but had been lost while she was moving out of her office a year before. She said it was a pencil drawing of a menacing face. It was not a picture of a traditional devil, she said. "I wouldn't be afraid of showing it to my children it to my children, but it's not what I would choose to hang on the nursery wall."

Hartrick told the court that he had been informed that his client did not appear in court that morning because he had been arrested the night before for unpaid traffic tickets and had spent the night in jail.

The following day Gordon Wells made his much-heralded appearance. He was a tall man who walked with a slight stoop. As he took his place on the witness stand, he peered nervously about him through dark eyes, deep set in a furrowed brow. Thick wrinkles formed on his forehead as he grinned in response to Hartrick's opening line, "Welcome to Hamilton, Mr. Wells."

Speaking in clipped tones, he gave details of his background. He said he had a grade eleven education, and a good relationship with his parents as he was growing up, though he didn't get on well with his brothers and sisters. He was born in Toronto, and when asked in what part of the city he grew up, replied, "East, west, wherever I was living." He said he had a stable work record, having held one job for eight and a half years. He said he worked up to 13 hours a day at his present job. He talked about his early relationship with Sharon, and how he had adopted Janis, "because her so-called father wanted to take her." He described Janis's natural father as "a meathead." He said his relationship with Sharon was "the pits" because she used to bait him all the time.

Asked about the meat hook, he said, "Nothing to it. I got it from work, used it for towing cars." About the machete, he said, "I got it when I was 14 and had it ever since. I just kept it around." When Hartrick questioned him about Sharon's allegations about the machete, he replied, "I went up to move the rest of the stuff from my premises. She started baiting me. I turned around and swung it in the wall, like, 'Leave me alone, because I don't want to hurt anyone with it.'"

Gordon said his knife was a buck knife, a skinning knife with a four-inch blade, and not a switchblade. He said switchblades are spring-loaded, whereas his knife locks and has to be pulled out manually. He later admitted that he did once possess a switchblade "years ago, when I was a kid." He said the sawed-off shotgun was a pump-action twelve gauge, which never worked: "I got it ten years ago. Something was wrong with it, and it never did fire. Not that I ever fired it. The spring was loose. I'm a gun collector."

"Did you ever assault Sharon Wells with the knife?" asked Hartrick.

"Not that I can recall."

"With the machete?"

"No."

"Did you ever use the knife in an assaultive way?"

"Just to turn around and say, 'Leave me alone.' About three times. She knows how to bait me. I did it to the point to say, 'What you're doing to me is killing me.'"

The judge asked for a brief delay in proceedings while he filled his pen, and Hartrick said, "His honor is loading his weapon, the worst weapon of all." Gordon laughed, and again large wrinkles appeared on his forehead. He was then asked about his disciplining of the children, and he said he would tap them on the hand or the butt. He admitted that he once put Janis up against the wall, but "if I done it like the way she said, she would have gone through the wall."

He said that, after their move to the new apartment complex, his relationship with Sharon went "downhill all the way. . . . Sharon knows my pressure points. Sometimes I'm not the easiest person to live with." After their separation he said they would often try to make up, but "it seemed to backfire. She'd push me into a corner until I naturally blew up."

Asked if there were good times, he started to talk about Christmas, and then said, "A couple of Christmastimes I was there and at four in the morning her boyfriend phoned and said he was coming over—not Gary, some other guy she was seeing. And she wanted to throw me out. It destroyed my Christmas and the kids'."

He described an incident that occurred soon after they were married: "I hit her but I didn't know I hit her. I punched her out, when she woke me in a half-and-half sleep." He was asked if he had hit her on other occasions, and he explained that, if you hit a woman you should slap her, rather than "hauling off, and drive her one between the eyes." When this prompted some laughter in court, Gordon grinned and added, "Well, you asked me. I done it to her just once. But I didn't know it was her I was doing it to."

Asked about Sharon's relationship with Gary, he said, "I figured it was a wild-goose chase." Hartrick asked him to explain that comment, and he replied, "In my own words? If I did they wouldn't record it. He was just after her for her, and that was it." He said he met Gary on the street after he heard about the children's allegations, and told him, "I didn't exactly appreciate hearing the allegations of what they were supposed to have done to the kids. If that was true, that was it."

"Meaning?"

"He would get what is coming to him."

Gordon said the allegations were "all B.S." Hartrick asked him about his tattoos, and he showed his "little devil" tattoo to the judge. Judge Beckett examined it and described it for the court record: "Almost like a little cherub-type character, a childlike cartoon head, what appears to be two emerging horns, perhaps pointed ears, a three-pronged pitchfork over the right shoulder, red pants or diaper, a tail with a forked prong on the end." The judge asked if anyone else wanted to look at it.

"To them I charge," said Gordon. "It's just a little devil, Hot Stuff, a cartoon character that was popular back then. Janis liked the tattoos."

On the subject of recent contacts with his ex-wife, he said, "Since the trial started we got together. The last five years of our life hasn't been a dream boat. If I got the children, or Sharon, they don't need to come back to see us arguing again. We wanted to get our differences sorted out before." He said he did not have any satanic friends: "I haven't had any connections like that in my life. The only thing I told her is that the courtroom is all wrong. It's gone on way too long, and should be shut down and started again properly. A year-and-a-half to two years to straighten out a simple problem has gone too far."

Gordon told Brown that he had dismantled the shotgun and thrown it away, because "with all the stuff that's gone down, you wouldn't exactly keep a few of them around, would you?" He said he used to keep it in the apartment in Toronto for protection after "we had a little bit of discussion around the premises," and the lives of Sharon and the children were threatened. He said the fact that the gun did not work was irrelevant, since "if no-one knows you, and you walk up to a door and someone sticks a gun in your face, whether it works or not, they ain't gonna stick around and ask questions; they're just gonna leave."

Judge Beckett later observed, "I found that to be an amazing answer by Mr. Wells. I certainly do not believe him when he says that the gun was inoperative. It was he who had cut the gun down. A sawed-off shotgun can only have one function, and that is as an anti-personnel weapon."

"Do you open the door with a gun?" Brown asked Gordon.

"If I know what's coming down. I had it around in case anything did happen. I don't want any harm coming to my family. I had shells around, 12-gauge shotgun shells, but they didn't belong to the gun."

Brown asked him if he ever put the gun to Sharon's head, and he replied, "That's her story. As far as I know nothing like that transpired. I may have done a lot of stuff, but that I didn't do."

The mother's lawyer asked Gordon if he recalled seeing a skull suspended from the ceiling of Sharon's brothers' room during the days when he and Sharon's brothers used to be best friends. He said he did not recall ever seeing anything like that.

Gordon said he had lost a $30,000-a-year job because of the case. "It was mind straining. It had a very physical impact on me. You can't run heavy equipment and keep your mind on the job when something like this is going on," he said. "I told the boss. On the one hand he understood. On the other hand he didn't give a shit and fired me."

He said he had found it hard to separate from his wife, because he loved her. He said he was concerned about the effect of their violent scenes on the children, but "certain things vanish from your mind until you realize things have gone down wrong. I never really lost my temper with anybody else at all. I don't like fighting. I'd rather walk away than do anything." Asked about the holes in the wall, he said, "Let's put it this way. Isn't it better to punch a wall than to lay somebody out, and have criminal charges against you?"

Sharon sat shaking as she listened to Gordon's reply to Brown's question about her "satanic friends" allegation. Gordon said, "I think she's been sitting in the courtroom too long. When she wants to get her way she'll turn around and lie through her teeth. Somebody's going to believe her. If she goes in bawling her eyes out, the judge is going to believe her. She's been putting on an act for two years. She'd been saying, 'Let's work together to get the kids back,' then comes out with this idiotic story. She's been sitting in this courtroom too long, listening to the B.S. that's shoveled in this courtroom. If she bubbles her eyes out long enough she's going to get the kids back. That's a lot of bull. I'm an artist trying to raise my kids. You bring this on my doorstep. I'm not involved in anything like that. As far as I'm concerned this is a simple custody hearing. McInnis is the one that brought that out. You tell me she's sane? You tell me we're crazy?"

He denied threatening people in the court: "I wish I could win the lottery. But I didn't say the other half." When O'Neail asked him if he had referred to Gary as "a fucking black bastard," he said, "I've referred to a lot of people in a lot of ways." As to whether he said "That nigger should be shot," he responded, "If this court case comes out the right way, and he's done things to my kids, what do you think should be done to him? It's got nothing to do with him being black."

"Are you suggesting Sharon Wells was putting on a big act to this court?" asked Harper.

"Yeah, Sharon's noted for a lot of stuff to get what she wants. It wouldn't be the first time she pulled it on me. She lied like hell in family court. She's trying to use every ways and means for me not to get the kids if she doesn't get them.

"She doesn't like what I call open sex. But I don't have to turn around and force someone to do it. I'd wreck my own furniture. It was better than hurting her. I put my fist through walls, but it's better than hitting her," Gordon said.

Gordon said he had no contact with Sharon and the children for two-and-a-half months after they moved to Hamilton in the fall of 1984, following Gordon's allegations about the sexual abuse of Linda and Janis's allegations about the man at the baby-sitter's apartment. Harper asked him why he had failed to check on the children's welfare during this period. He replied, "If you complain and nobody listens to you, you get fed up after a while . . . . I did my part. The police in Toronto and the CAS in Toronto neglected to do theirs. What am I supposed to do, stay on the phone 24 hours and lose my job?"

When Sharon did finally get in touch with him, and let him see the children, Gordon did not try to find out where they lived. He said this was because if he had turned up on her doorstep it would have caused trouble. "She left me, figuring getting away from me. She would have had the police on my back. I don't need any hassle with the police. All I wanted to do was see my kids. I don't care what my wife does. Me and her aren't important any more. It's the kids. That's what I've been trying to punch into her head for the last two years."

As Gordon began to get upset about being questioned on the children's allegations, his brows furrowed with anger. The large wrinkles on his forehead accentuated the look of menace in his eyes. He said he had not attended the court hearing because of his work and because "this court case has got a lot of junk. It's all garbage. I don't need to listen to stuff like that." He asked, "Who put the devil part into their heads? Who put the picture into their heads? I never heard the kids say that. They used to like my tattoos."

When questioned further about the picture of the devil, Gordon said, "I don't draw to scare the shit out of anybody. It's art—nothing more."

Gordon told Harper sharply that he was "dead wrong" in his suggestion that Sharon visited on the long weekend. Harper said, "I suggest you were so angry with Catherine McInnis that you threatened their lives and the children heard you."

"Why would I be that mad at the McInnises, when the judge gave me access? I went in and had conversations with them? Don't you think that's a little absurd? I already had access to my kids. Why should I be mad at the McInnises? Why should I turn around and plot anything?" Gordon said. "No-one knows what goes on behind the closed doors at the foster parents'. She's the one who watches movies about satanism. She's the one that has bars on her windows. Mrs. McInnis is a nut case. You have an outside psychiatrist examine her and you might find out. She's supposed to be a churchgoer and she watches devil pictures on TV. She needs a straitjacket. They brainwashed those kids so bad, they'd come out with anything."

"Is that your answer to the allegations?"

"You got it."

Atwood read Gordon details of the sexual abuse allegations, and the father said, "How are they supposed to know about it? Between Gary and Sharon and the foster parents themselves, something had to go on. Janis and Linda, even if they were looking at *Penthouse,* wouldn't have known what they were looking at. It'd be just a bright picture. They have got to be guilty, or somebody's got to be guilty. They got to get it from some place."

He said he hadn't followed the trial because "I hear enough of this. I sit there and read the junk in the paper. I just get sick of it. I read about it now and again." During a break, however, he did warn the newspaper reporters in a menacing voice, louder and harsher than he had sounded during his testimony, that he would be keeping a sharp eye on what they wrote about him.

"No-one can actually say she done it or not. But she put the children in the CAS. I'm saying she shouldn't have them, because she doesn't deserve them," said Gordon. He told Atwood that his own view on child sexual abuse was that "if you turn around and do that to a child, you've got no rights to live."

Atwood asked Gordon about a statement he had made earlier about the Toronto apartment building having a reputation for kiddy porn. He replied, "I know of the building, and what came down in it. Certain things like that were going on in there. Sharon said people in the building told her. A cop at the station said he knew the building because he patrolled it for violence in the building."

Judge Beckett asked the father for his explanation of the children's allegations, and he replied, "The kids were saying something in confidence. Then Catherine McInnis and Lesley Morgan took the whole thing and blown it out of proportion."

"With what motive?" asked the judge.

"Who knows. You can't say things haven't been greatly fabricated in this court case. They have. The Children's Aid can't afford to lose this court case, because they'd lose face. The girls wouldn't know what satanism meant, wouldn't know what a dead body looked like unless somebody showed it to them."

The judge asked, "You've said that Mrs. McInnis has bars on her windows. How did you know that?"

"Through the grapevine. Certain parties told me. They turned around and went by the place, and seen bars in the windows."

"Who told you?"

"Sharon did. A long time ago."

"When?"

"Seven or eight months ago. Somewhere in there."

"Where?"

"Probably over the phone."

"I get the impression that you talk to each other from time to time. Sharon Wells testified she had four, possibly five contacts with you during the time she testified."

"Could be."

"You're a gun collector?" the judge then asked.

"I was."

"The pump-action shotgun, what make was it?"

"I can't remember."

"Why cut it down? Did you have any knowledge that is not lawful?"

"I did. But I did not use it. Most of the time it was in the trunk of my car."

"I'm curious as to why it was in the trunk."

"Because for a time most of my stuff was in the trunk. I'm the type of person that packs something away and forgets it's there. It must have been in the trunk of my car for years. It never really dawned on me. I just did it for the hell of it."

"I'm curious as to why you would mutilate a shotgun. What purpose would it then have?"

"Most people say, if you cut the barrel, it's better known as a scatter gun. It's just something that I did, then I got rid of it."

"For what purpose."

"No purpose at all. Just something to do at the time. I turned around and seen what it looks like. That's it."

"It wouldn't have any sporting purpose? You wouldn't go shooting with it?"

"There's a spread, so whatever you fire at, if it was birds, instead of getting one bird, probably you'd get two or three different ones."

"Did you ever intend to go hunting birds?"

"My brother was hunting and that. I was going to get into it."

When court resumed, Brown asked Gordon why he believed that the children couldn't have completely made up the allegations. He replied, "It's very simple. When a kid's first born they don't know nothing. When they go to school, they have to be told what's going down. They have to be shown, told, what things mean. That's what's called education.

"Satanism? Cannibalism? Why would Lesley Morgan and Catherine McInnis keep playing on that? Kids don't know anything about that," Gordon added.

Sharon, who had been looking scared and upset through most of Gordon's testimony, started laughing when the next witness appeared, and continued to giggle throughout her brief testimony. The witness was Gordon's mother, a large woman with dyed blond hair, who was wearing a big fur hat, a fur coat and a pink dress, the effect of which was slightly marred by what looked like a coffee stain on the back.

The woman testified that Gordon had been a very good boy, and had attended Sunday school every week. She said his shotgun didn't work and he didn't have any satanic friends. "My son is not evil. He is not a violent person," she said.

The court had earlier heard from Ann and Neil Murphy, the friends with whom Gordon had lived for several years after separating from Sharon. They had actually been called as Sharon's witnesses to testify about the condition of the children on the May, 1985, visits to their father. But the judge concluded that their evidence was purjured. This was significant because Ann was one of the people named by the children as being present at the graveyard rituals. The judge rejected their clumsy attempts to offer an explanation for statements by the children about Ann wearing a mask at the graveyard. This, combined with Gordon's unconvincing denial of the "satanic friends" remark, and the lack of any credible innocent explanation for the children's allegations, created a distinctly sinister impression of Gordon and his associates.

Judge Beckett stated in his judgement: "I found Gordon Wells to be an unreliable and unbelievable witness. I had the opportunity of observing him carefully for a period of three days in the witness stand and was not impressed by him. The fact that he lied to this court on several issues, especially about the statement to Sharon about his 'satanic friends' is, in my view, very significant."

CHAPTER 19

THE BOYFRIEND'S TESTIMONY

Gary Evans was a slightly built, shy, soft-spoken young man, who completely denied all the allegations against him, maintaining that he was not "that kind of person." He offered no explanation for why the girls would fabricate such graphic and detailed accounts of sexual abuse at his hand. He presented a picture of them as normal, healthy little girls, and of Sharon's home as clean and tidy, which conflicted with all other evidence in the case.

It was hard to imagine, if he did not have a sexual interest in Sharon's children or some even more sinister involvement with her, why this well-bred university graduate would form a relationship with this disturbed, hostile, uneducated and distinctly unattractive young mother.

Judge Beckett clearly did not accept his story, and concluded: "I observed Evans closely during his testimony. I have since reviewed his testimony, and have come to the conclusion that he was not telling the truth when he denied sexually abusing Janis and Linda."

A psychologist and a psychiatrist who testified on Gary's behalf did not find any evidence of a propensity to sexually abuse children, but neither could say that they were confident that he had not committed such acts. Ronald Langevin, senior research psychologist at the

Clarke Institute of Psychiatry, testified that Evans had not shown any abnormalities while undergoing an impressive battery of tests, including a phalometric test to measure his erotic responses. The psychologist then admitted that it was possible to fake responses to such tests, and that they are, anyway, subject to a high rate of error. Psychiatrist Clive Chamberlain testified that Gary Evans seemed to be a normal, well-adjusted person, but then conceded that apparently normal people can commit horrendous crimes and that he could not really give an opinion about whether the young man did what was alleged without knowing about other facets of the case.

Dr. Langevin's evidence precipitated a wrangle over the admissibility of expert testimony, and an angry outburst from Judge Beckett. The defense lawyers were desperate to get an expert opinion that challenged the report of the Hospital for Sick Children. Langevin was apparently willing to offer some criticisms of the report, but the problem was that he was not a psychiatrist, and had no experience working directly with sexually abused children.

O'Neail, Gary Evans's lawyer, tried to argue that the psychologist, as an expert in testing and research design, could comment on the structure and the scientific basis of the hospital report. Harper said that the design of psychological tests and research projects is a totally different field to the analysis of children's statements.

Judge Beckett said, "I would welcome an expert with a great deal of clinical experience in dealing with abused children, but in his CV there is nothing that relates to that."

Atwood, representative of the Ontario Official Guardian, said the psychologist might just as well apply his expertise in test design to structural engineering. "He can psychologically test nuts and bolts as much as he wants, but he's not going to make them talk."

After Judge Beckett ruled that the witness was not qualified to give expert opinion on the children's credibility, Brown and Hartrick persisted in trying to get him to answer questions on this issue. The judge eventually became angry with this tactic and said, "I am not going to allow this trial to be turned into some kind of parody, a travesty of the way trials should be run. It seems to me like we're playing scrub ball here, getting witnesses as we go along."

In the testimony about Gary Evans that the psychologist was allowed to give, he said, "My impression is he is a naive man, inexperienced, candid, I believe, in his responses to me. I believe he was being honest."

Atwood, who was displaying some skepticism about Dr. Langevin's conclusions, drew the judge's attention to the fact that one of the questionnaires administered to Gary began by asking, "Have you ever been aroused by inanimate things?"

Gary Evans's mother testified that he had been brought up as an Anglican, had gone to Sunday school and still goes to church. She said there was never any problem between Gary and his younger sisters.

She described to Brown how her house was visited by police, who told her they had permission to search Gary's room: "I asked, 'For what?' They said dead birds, dead bodies, dead kids and things like that. They just destroyed the whole thing. They watched tapes on the VCR in the basement. Daytime soap operas. Three big men sat in there and watched them."

"Were there any religious programs?"

"No, just soap operas."

Mrs. Evans told Harper that her son now has a new girlfriend, but was reticent about telling her name. Harper asked her when Gary had returned the VCR that he and Sharon had subleased from his father. Mrs. Evans became hysterical. "God in heaven give me grace, because I never come in a place like this before, never been in a court," she said. "Don't try to put words in my mouth. I don't know what you're trying to do to my brain. I don't know, I don't know. If I say, I'd be lying."

Gary Evans testified that he had lived with his family near Toronto since coming to Canada from Barbados as a child. He said that he had a B.A. and was now doing postgraduate studies. He said he had held a number of summer jobs while he was in high school, and worked as an ice cream salesman when he was 15. In the fall of 1984, he was completing university in Hamilton, he said, and looking for work. He said he only lived with Sharon for about two weeks, but would look after the children, while she was working, until he found a job in December with a company that did out-of-town contract work.

Gary said his hobbies and interests were sports, track and field, soccer, basketball and photography. He said he took pictures of sports events and would usually take his camera when he went traveling.

He described Linda and Janis as "really nice little kids, playful, just nice kids. They weren't rude or anything, well-mannered, well-behaved." About the condition of the apartment and the children in Toronto, he said, "As far as I'm concerned it was decent living. The kids' rooms were always kept clean. She made their beds, kept them neat, prepared good meals for the kids all the time, made sure they always ate. Their clothes were kept clean. She was always wiping their faces."

Asked about the allegations made in the anonymous phone calls that Gordon had received, he said, "It was all false. I never struck a woman in my life. I'm not that type of person. I never abused children in my life. I'm not that type of person. I never made a woman pregnant before."

Gary said the reason he sometimes did not take Linda to school when he was looking after her was that he was looking for a job, and it was easier to take her with him, or drop her off at his mother's house, than to have to drive back to Hamilton to fetch her from school.

He said he was "totally shocked" when he was told about the children's allegations in March 1985. They were all false, he said. He denied each allegation in turn as O'Neail listed them out to him. He described some of them as very sickening and disgusting, explaining that he was "not brought up in that type of manner." He shook his head when O'Neail asked him about satanism, and said, "I was brought up a good Christian. That's false." And on the question of cannibalism, he said, "I wouldn't eat a person if I had to to survive. That's gross. It turns my stomach.

"It's so unbelievable. The only thing I can see is these kids been misled, and they misinterpreted some things the children said. They never gave us a chance, never talked to us. They took the kids, and said they've been abused and that was that. I'd play with the kids. If I pushed the kids playing, they might say Gary pushed me. They were just two healthy normal kids, healthy, bright energetic kids. There was nothing wrong with them."

Sharon gasped loudly as Gary testified that, when she became pregnant, she had not told him that she was no longer using birth control, and that the only reason he suggested an abortion was that he knew that the CAS would try to take the child away. He said he would like to have access to the baby, but would not be able to take custody yet because of his work and study commitments. He spoke very fervently about his desire to clear his name from a list of known sexual abusers that is kept by the provincial government: "My name is on the sexual abuse register for these false allegations. I don't want to have to plan my life around these false allegations . . . if I have a child in Ontario, they're just going to snatch her. It's ridiculous. I just want to get these accusations removed from my record. They're false and there's no truth to them."

Brown asked him why he was attracted to Sharon, and he replied, "I saw the person she was inside. A very caring person. A very loving person. The fact she had two kids didn't matter to me. It was her."

"Did you have an interest in her so you would have two vulnerable little girls that you could abuse?" asked Brown.

"Not at all. Never in my life. I'm not that kind of person."

"You were naive in sexual matters, a late bloomer. Was your first physical relationship with a lady with Sharon?"

"Yes, it was."

Brown asked if they had discussed child abuse, and Gary replied, "She said she'd never be able to live with me, if I did that. I told her, 'I'm not like that. I've got sisters myself. I wouldn't want any harm to come to them. I would never harm your kids in any way.'"

Harper asked him why he refused to talk to the police. He replied, "I told them I hadn't obtained counsel. The allegations were false. I felt in my best interests to tell them the allegations were false, and, until I obtained counsel, not talk to them." He agreed with Harper that he had an opportunity to talk to Eva Gede, the psychiatrist who assessed Sharon, but he said he felt she was "not an unbiased person." He said he made arrangements to talk to Dr. Rae-Grant, but cancelled them when he decided that "she had me convicted before we sat down."

Judge Beckett noted that this, and other evidence before the court, was in conflict with his claim that he never had a chance to tell his story to the CAS.

Harper questioned Gary's assertion that the foster mother could have got the children to make false allegations against him within three weeks of their coming into her care. He responded, "You can put things into kids' minds very easily. They've messed up these kids. It all started out in the foster care home, and I would say that they have taken the kids and they have, sort of, you know, twisted what the kids might have said, and gotten the kids believing it; got the kids so confused that the kids are actually believing it, and then the kids got to the point where they are saying it, and they don't know what they are saying, and that is the honest truth. These kids have been misinterpreted and they have been messed up."

Judge Beckett quoted this statement in his judgement, and commented, "Gary Evans's recourse to the explanation given above was totally unsupported by any evidence in a situation which cried out for some kind of an explanation. In my opinion it was unacceptable."

Responding to questions from the judge, Gary said he did not remember birds ever nesting on Sharon's balcony, that he had never heard of the movie *Last House on the Left*, and that he had never been told the children were exposed to any kind of movie that they shouldn't have seen.

Dr. Chamberlain, a child psychiatrist experienced in doing court assessments, said he found it hazardous to do an assessment for a child welfare hearing without having a chance to see all parties involved. He said he agreed to do a partial assessment of Gary Evans because he had been told that there had been no comprehensive assessment in the case, and that Evans had not seen a psychiatrist.

Later, in response to questions from Harper, he said he had not been made aware of several of the assessments and reports that were done on the case, and had not seen transcripts of evidence that was presented to the court.

As a result of his examination of Gary Evans, he said, "My impression is that of a well-adjusted young male, somewhat unsophisticated and late in developing sexually, but certainly within normal limits. He does not fit any personality pattern of men who initiate sexual activity with children, or who are likely to be aggressive physically or verbally. His moral standards, as far as I can know them within the limitation of this assessment, should preclude involvement, even passively, in activities such as have been alleged."

He added, "It is possible he was concealing his behavior and not telling the truth. There is no way I can assure myself people are telling the truth, particularly in circumstances like these. I can't read minds. I conducted a very limited investigation. I would have preferred to have talked to a large number of people, all the protagonists, and fit them into the mosaic. I am left with a question in my mind. How can this person, as I see him, become involved in behavior which I've heard happened?" Dr. Chamberlain said.

The psychiatrist said that, having seen Lesley Morgan's assessment of the case and the Hospital for Sick Children report, he felt at a loss as to how he could fit that together with his knowledge of Evans: "Either I have to change my notion of the person I've seen, or change my notion of the validity of the reports, or find some other way to understand it." He said, "I am left then, much like one of the proverbial blind men, touching part of an elephant. My part does not fit reports from others."

Asked about the report from the Hospital for Sick Children, he said, "I have never seen one as carefully crafted and thoughtfully put together. I have no quarrel with it whatsoever." He added, "If the conclusions are that the events reported by the children all happened, I would not draw that conclusion." He said he would have wanted to do a more expanded inquiry before reaching that conclusion.

Brown asked if notes taken by an unsophisticated interviewer were an adequate basis for forming an opinion on children's credibility. Judge Beckett said, "I don't mind telling you now. I wish the whole thing were televised. I'm sure there are better methods. But that didn't happen."

Dr. Chamberlain said, "As I understand it, the assessment was an effort to correct through analysis inconsistencies that were occasioned by an inexperienced interviewer, compensating for an inexperienced interviewer by a fairly sophisticated technique."

He told Brown that he would have liked to have seen the children, but said he recognized that "part of the agony of trying to come to terms with this issue is you've already got children at risk who have suffered a great deal. To have another stranger come in creates problems. I am not a wizard. There's nothing special about me." When Harper told him that the therapist testified that it would be harmful for the children to be interviewed, Dr. Chamberlain said, "I would want the therapist to convince me she was right. Dr. Oliviera is a well-known and excellent therapist. I would certainly be impressed by what she had to say."

In response to a further question from Brown, he said, "It is a mistake to assume that children always tell the truth or that they will lie. I've seen many children represent different realities depending on who they are with. Children say what they say for all sorts of reasons, logical reasons, to feel safe and comfortable. Lying or telling the truth is an adult notion that perhaps shouldn't be applied to children."

"Children tend to be susceptible?"

"People are susceptible."

In a section of Dr. Chamberlain's report read to the court by O'Neail, he stated that he found that Gary Evans did not fit into the two types of personalities who sexually abuse children. But Harper quoted a further sentence that O'Neail had not read: "It goes without saying that normal people can behave in ways different from normal disposition given a situation different from their normal context." Harper asked him, "Are there, in fact, three types?"

Dr. Chamberlain replied, "Sure. Normal people. That is, clinically normal people. All one has to do is reflect on what happened in Germany before and during the Second World War. Quite clinically sound people do unimaginable things under unusual circumstances."

CHAPTER 20

THE JUDGE'S DECISION

Gordon Wells believed Judge Beckett released a written judgement on the case, and did not come into court to give oral reasons for his final decision, because the judge was "chicken." Others who reviewed the 106-page ruling saw it as a fine mixture of caution and toughness.

It did not come as a surprise to many of the people who had followed the case to find that the judge ruled that the two girls and their baby halfsister were in need of protection, or that he had come to the very hard conclusion that their parents should not have any access to them. Nor had anyone expected him to go out on a limb and state that he emphatically believed everything that Janis and Linda had said, concluding that the children definitely had witnessed murders and were the victims of a satanic cult. The evidence to support that kind of finding had not been presented.

The judge might well have concluded that he did not believe any of the children's more bizarre allegations, and still decided to make them wards of the Crown, solely on the basis of the evidence of neglect, psychological damage and sexual abuse. He could have simply dismissed the most troubling aspects of the case as being irrelevant to his ruling. The fact that he did not do this made the judgement an intriguing one. Judge Beckett was cautious in not trying to reach conclusions for which he had insufficient factual basis, but he did pose all of the tough questions that arose from the evidence that was presented to him. His judgement would force those who read it to seriously ponder the almost unthinkable possibilities suggested by the children's strange stories.

It was not that the judge was anxious to delve into this material, which he described as "almost beyond human comprehension." Referring to what he characterized as "a virtual flood of the most lurid, gruesome, bloodthirsty stories that any person could possibly imagine," Judge Beckett said, "the court heard allegations of murder, of cannibalism, of graveyard rituals and acts of bestiality, allegations so horrible, so gruesome, so loathsome that no-one, including myself, wanted to believe any of it. In fact I wanted very much to believe that none of the allegations made by Janis and Linda could be true."

Judge Beckett said that the reluctance of the police to believe the allegations was understandable and reflected "the natural abhorrence of any normal person at the very thought that children in our community could possibly be involved in such matters." He said he did not intend the hearing to become a forum into the adequacy of the police investigation of the case, and, while recognizing that they did not find evidence to support the children's more "florid" allegations, he stated, "That is not to say, of course, that any of these events did not occur: it is only to say that the police found no evidence of it." He said this lack of evidence could not prove either that the children did not have experiences that "prompted childlike misinterpretations or distortions of fact that resulted in their stories.

"We may never know for certain to what extent the so-called 'florid' allegations are based on fact, or what occurrences or experiences the children had that could have prompted them to say such things," Judge Beckett said.

The "rich detail" of the children's stories impressed the judge, "as well as the fact that they related them with obvious reluctance and fear." He said he was struck by the signs of distress that they showed when telling their stories, particularly such symptoms as soiling, wetting, trembling and shaking. He said, "Most particularly, I was impressed with the age-inappropriate knowledge they have, especially of sexual matters.

"The CAS called no evidence with respect to 'satanic cults' and the court does not intend to take any judicial notice of the practices and rites of any such cults," the judgement stated. "Nonetheless, the descriptions of midnight graveyard scenes with dancing and singing, of people with masks, of opening of graves and coffins together with gross sexual activities suggests cult activities."

Judge Beckett said he certainly found many things that the children said difficult to resolve or accept. For example, he said, the evidence about the Channel 11 television studio made him conclude that it had probably not been used for pornography sessions, such as the children described. But, he said, one has to wonder why Janis described the interior so accurately and why she was so frightened when being driven by it.

"Why did the children refer to the number 666—a symbol we know is a biblical reference to the 'beast or the devil'?" Judge Beckett asked. He noted that it had been suggested during the hearing that this reference arose from the fact that one of the children's relatives lived at an apartment building with the street number 666. But the children did not refer to the number in connection with this, the judge said. "On the contrary they connected it with graveyard activities." He also asked, "What experience did the children have to enable them to speak such horrors and why did Janis persistently draw pictures of graveyards? Why were the minds of these children dominated by thoughts of death and of characters like 'the Blob'? Why do they speak of their father with such fear and say that he had killed people, and think they could engage him to kill Gary Evans?"

In posing these questions, the judge remarked that some of the things the children spoke of turned out to be proven later. He said "the man with half a face," for example, turned out to be a real person, and their father did, in fact, have a picture of "the devil" in his room. "Were Sharon Wells, Gary Evans or Gordon Wells involved in cult activities?" Judge Beckett asked. "Clearly on the evidence, I cannot find that they were. But what of the fact that Gordon Wells spoke to Sharon Wells in October, 1986, of his 'satanic friends'? The fact that he would make such a remark does little to allay the suspicions raised by the children's allegations."

On the issue of the children's allegations about a plot to kill the foster parents, the judge observed that evidence indicated that Gordon Wells was prone to making threats of violence, and that it is not difficult to infer that the children might have overheard statements that they interpreted as a plot. Judge Beckett said he was not convinced by the evidence that Gordon Wells was violently antagonistic to both Sharon and Gary, which had been advanced by defense lawyers as proof of the absurdity of the children's story of the alleged plot.

"I am left with the question of where the 'florid' allegations originated," the judge stated. "Was it fantasy? Were the children lying? If the children were fantasizing or lying, the question arises as to where the children got the material to produce their so-called lies or fantasies. I cannot accept that two little children of this age could possibly describe the matters I have described above without some knowledge or some experience in order to create the lies or the fantasies. Such matters surely cannot come out of the minds of young children as native or original thought. But is not the fact that they said such things, that such horrors were in their minds, evidence of a very bizarrely disturbed relationship with their caretakers? Was this not evidence of brutal trauma to their psyche, just as would bruises and broken bones be evidence of physical abuse to their bodies?"

The judge went on to comment: "The world of small children is a narrow one: it is mother, it is father and their families, their school and their playmates. It is in this milieu that a child's mental constructs are molded. What experiences did these children have, while in the care of the adults involved, that would cause them to say what they said and to say it with such fear and terror? To say that they 'lied' or that it was 'fantasy' falls far short of explaining how such things could have been in their minds. It also should not be forgotten that statements by small children must always be viewed from the perspective of a child—what a child says may not be truth but that does not mean it is a lie or fantasy. What may not, in reality, be truth, may be interpreted as truth by a child. For example, a child told to eat meat, which is in reality raw chicken, but is represented to the child by his caretaker as human flesh, would not be 'lying' if he said that he had eaten human flesh; he would just be mistaken.

"But does it really matter, for the purposes of this case, whether the children saw murder or something that they interpreted as being murder? Whether they ate human flesh or ate something they thought was human flesh, whether they were in Channel 11 Telecenter, or whether they were in some place that they believed to be the Telecenter? It is really unimportant in reality as to which it was," Judge Beckett concluded.

The judge had no difficulty, however, in concluding that the children had been sexually abused by all three adults. He said, "I was particularly impressed by the fact that the children did not tell their stories with any degree of pleasure or satisfaction. Quite the contrary—they did not want to tell and often attempted to interfere with each other when one was disclosing. In the telling of these stories, there was far more than consistency that compels me to believe the allegations of sexual abuse, especially the use of graphic detail about sexual matters children of this age could not possibly know otherwise. Young children of this age might indeed find a sexual aid such as a vibrator in their parents' premises, but how would a child know how such an instrument is used? How would a child know that it is necessary to use Vaseline in order to achieve the purpose of the instrument? Where would children get notions of oral sex, not only as between their mother and Gary Evans, but as between those two individuals and the children? How could they describe such events unless somehow it had been part of their experiences?"

Judge Beckett said it was impossible to see how the children could be mistaken in presenting such graphic descriptions, or how such explicit statements could possibly have been misinterpreted. While he said that the girls might have a motive for lying about Gary's involvement in such things, he found it difficult to imagine why the children would make false allegations against their parents, when they loved their parents and knew these allegations were the reason for their not being returned to their home.

With apparent discomfort the judge concluded, "The graphic description of the children being forced to eat feces has a distinct ring of truth about it, loathsome as that thought might be. The children's descriptions of oral sex, particularly with Gary Evans, contain detail and descriptions of sensation and tastes that could not possibly come out of the imaginations of children. As much as I did not and do not want to believe these children were forced into such loathsome activities, I find it impossible on the basis of what these children have said over the past two years to come to any other conclusion."

Judge Beckett found that Gary Evans had grossly and sexually abused the children on numerous occasions. He described Sharon's explanations for the allegations as "somewhat bizarre," and rejected them as "at best, hopeful speculation, and, at worst, a deliberate resort to fabrication in an attempt to deceive the court." He concluded that she too had sexually abused the girls over an extended period of time. The allegations of sexual abuse against Gordon Wells had not been that extensive, but Judge Beckett found that the children had clearly accused their father of sexually abusing them, not only in statements to Mrs. McInnis, but also to Lesley Morgan and Sgt. Elwood. He also noted that Linda had talked in a therapy session about her fear that her father would kill her with a knife to the neck. The judge made the finding that the father had sexually abused the girls, and that, anyway, they needed to be protected from this man, because they saw him as a figure of fear and violence.

"The allegations that these children made cried out for some reasonable and rational explanation from Sharon Wells, Gary Evans or Gordon Wells. None was forthcoming," said the judge. He agreed with Dr. Oliviera that, unless these people were able to either validate or satisfactorily explain the children's belief that the statements they made are true, further contact with these adults could be harmful to the children.

The judgement had taken more than two months to prepare, and the judge made frequent reference to the difficulty he had been faced with. He said, "Perhaps in the history of such cases in Canada, no judge has been faced with such an overwhelming volume of evidence." He referred several times to his extreme personal distaste for dealing with the repulsive subject matter of much of the evidence. He described the decision that he was faced with as "an awesome responsibility for any one person to have." He went on to say, "I can think of no order that any judge could possibly make that can so profoundly affect the lives of the people involved; to take someone's children from them is a power that a judge must exercise only with the highest degree of caution, only on the basis of compelling evidence, and only after a careful examination of possible alternative remedies.

"Certainly no-one can derive any pleasure or satisfaction from the order that I have made," Judge Beckett said, "but by the same token, society cannot tolerate young children being exposed to the abuses that Janis and Linda have suffered, and that the baby would likely suffer if left in the care of their parents."

Judge Beckett's ruling ended with a compassionate statement about the woman who had played such a tragic role during the 18 months that the case was before the court. "Sadly, life has dealt Sharon Wells little happiness, but much sadness and brutality," he said. "She is a pathetic woman who desperately needs help and one can only hope that the system will now turn its attention to her as well, in an attempt to mitigate the horrible experiences of her past and the devastating effect of the order that I have been forced to make."

EPILOGUE

Do children lie? This question was put to almost every expert witness at the hearing, and would almost always come up whenever interested outsiders discussed the case. People continued to ask the question long after the clear and emphatic answer was given by Judge Beckett and most of the witnesses. That answer is "yes, of course children lie. And they can easily be confused, deceived or mistaken."

Adults also lie. Some people, including child abusers, pornographers and members of secretive cults, are especially practiced and skillful at concealing the truth. History has proven over and over again that people are also easily confused and misled, especially if the truth is something that would be troubling to accept. Adult lies and myths are much more complex and impenetrable than children's deceptions. The important thing is to be able to distinguish between lies and falsehood whether they are coming from children or adults.

The question that the Hamilton wardship hearing posed was not whether children in general can lie, but whether Janis and Linda were lying or mistaken when they made a series of detailed, consistent and explicit allegations against adults whom they loved and feared. The answer that came out of more than a year of evidence was that they were not lying, and, though they may have been mistaken about some things, their allegations were apparently based on real experiences. It was never proven exactly what those experiences were, beyond the fact that they were certainly exposed to gross sexual abuse and degradation, but the judge noted that the children's statements suggested that they were involved in cult activities.

Even the least distressing explanation for the children's allegations confronts us with unsettling truths about the nature of our society, and presents us with grave concerns about whether children are receiving adequate protection. The explanation that would be least anxiety-provoking for the average parent would be that the children's more bizarre allegations were fantasies generated by an appallingly horrific history of abuse. If this is the case, all we have to worry about is trying to improve child protection services and watching out for these unnamed perpetrators, and perhaps many similarly dangerous individuals, who may be living in our neighborhood. Perhaps we would want to go further and look for cures for the underlying sickness in society that generates such aberrations, but we would at least be assured that the evil we have already recognized is the evil that we are dealing with—and to some extent learned to live with.

However, evidence does not tend to support the idea that the Hamilton case was a unique aberration. The girls' allegations in this case were remarkably similar to those made by many hundreds of children all over North America. No theories have yet been advanced to adequately show how even the most horrendous forms of sexual abuse might lead children to relate convincing and detailed accounts of ritualistic violence. These accounts almost all involve references to the same specific acts of violence and abuse, and often refer to elements of satanic symbolism, presumably outside the experience of the average seven- or eight-year-old. Most of the children's statements also refer to the use of cameras. In the absence of other credible explanations, we cannot afford to dismiss the possibility that these allegations point to the activities of groups engaged in satanic ritual, or pornography, or both, and that there may be some communication or connection between such groups.

The response of many individuals and agencies who do not want to pursue this line of investigation has been to ask, "Where are the bodies? Where are the pornographic materials that were produced by such groups?" Some people, including police investigators, who believe that human sacrifice is being practiced, respond to the first question with statistics about missing children, and explanations about how skillful these cult groups apparently are at completely destroying all evidence. A more easily acceptable answer is that, if children are being manipulated, terrorized and used as pornographic subjects in rituals involving animals and simulated human sacrifice, there would be no bodies. There have been numerous discoveries of animal remains in conjunction with evidence of rituals. The fact that pornographic materials have not been recovered in connection with individual cases may only be a reflection of how difficult it is to investigate a sophisticated pornography operation.

Roland Summit told a Florida state commission on pornography in November, 1985, "There are thousands of pictures without known children. And there are thousands of photographed children without known pictures. Far from establishing credibility, these two opposing clues tend to nullify one another. Obscene pictures of anonymous children provoke only helplessness, while children who report being photographed in the midst of sexual exploitation trigger a single-minded pursuit of the photographic evidence. The almost inevitable failure to find identifiable photos tends to discredit other aspects of the child's story. Every unproved allegation seems to encourage the hope that nothing the child is saying is true."

The motivations and the practices of cult groups are radically different from conventional criminal activity, and completely outside the experience of most police forces. Police investigators and others who have seriously looked at the problem of child pornography and the phenomenon of ritual abuse all agree that these are areas in which traditional police methods are inadequate. Professional pornography rings are highly sophisticated operations, and their investigation requires large-scale co-ordination of information from many different sources. Evidence is difficult to find and, if this evidence involves ritual material, one must first have the specialized knowledge required to interpret it. Infiltration is either impossible or unethical when it involves dealing with groups that require its members to engage in acts of violence or child exploitation. For the same reason one is unlikely to find informants from within such groups, who would necessarily incriminate themselves by what they disclose. Investigators must therefore rely a lot on victims' accounts together with surveillance and exhaustive checks into suspects and their contacts.

Although the Hamilton hearing certainly did not provide proof that the children were forced to participate in a satanic cult or a professional pornography ring, the suggestions that such organized child exploitation was involved were strong enough that I believe we have to take them seriously. We need more investigation in this area, and we have to provide the police with funds for training and the establishment of special units for this type of investigation.

Any surveillance operation is expensive and labor-intensive, and is not likely to be entered into without credible witnesses. The question of assessing the credibility of child witnesses is therefore crucial. It is extremely difficult not because children are particularly prone to lying, but because there are several factors (such as fear, love, dependency and insecurity) that may cause them to withhold the truth in certain situations, disclose it in others, and often retract an earlier allegation or denial. Studies such as those done in connection with the Hamilton case are helping psychiatrists and social workers to evolve better methods of assessing credibility, and conducting interviews that encourage children to speak without fear but do not contaminate their disclosures with leading questions. Police investigators in this field need to co-operate closely with child care professionals in order to comprehend these sensitive issues.

The polarization of opinions on the issues concerning children's credibility led investigators in many of the cases in the United States first to rely too much on disclosures by child witnesses, and then to completely discount their stories. In Jordan, Minnesota, particularly, it appears that arrests were made too hastily, without adequate research and surveillance, and a multiplicity of interviews with the same children by several different people resulted in some of the children changing their stories and the evidence of others being so contaminated by the investigatory process that it was unusable in court. Several of the defendants in the Jordan case, against whom charges were dropped, attempted to sue police, prosecutors and therapists for allegedly conspiring to fabricate evidence of a sex ring in order to further the career of the Scott County attorney. The United States

Court of Appeals for the Eighth Circuit, which dismissed this suit in February, 1987, clearly found that the conspiracy theory was absurd, but also noted that there were reasonable grounds for arresting the suspects.

The senior judge of the court expressed misgivings about the handling of the case, and stated, "The children's accounts are so startling and egregious, however, that it is difficult to accept the prosecutor's dismissal of the charges against the parents and the other parties charged . . . . The children's accusations, if true, demand the prosecution of the guilty parties. The prosecutor's action in dismissing the charges leaves this shocking and abusive affair in limbo." The judge went on to say that accused people may have been dealt with unjustly and, expressing concern over the difficulty in ascertaining what did happen in Jordan, urged that such perplexing cases be handled cautiously, keeping in mind the rights of both children and parents.

The investigation of the Hamilton case was also impeded by conflicts between the police and social workers over the children's credibility, and a lack of surveillance, research and timely searches. The hearing exposed inadequate communication between different agencies and professionals in Toronto. Such problems could be eliminated, or at least minimized, by better training and education programs for all professionals who deal with children, and the provision of financing for services that would co-ordinate the work of different agencies in the field. There is also a need to clarify the mandates of the police and the Children's Aid Societies in child abuse cases. The CASs now rely on police to do much of the investigation, but police forces do not consider themselves responsible for following up on child welfare cases that do not look as if they will result in criminal charges.

The length of time it took to reach a determination of the children's future raised concerns that their rights and those of their parents were being eroded. The public was also concerned over the million-dollar cost of the court hearing, in which all the lawyers were either financed by Legal Aid or represented public agencies. The case did provide a full examination of the evidence and issues involved, and achieved its aim of giving the children the protection they sadly needed. Having sat through every day of the 18-month hearing, I was not left with the feeling that anyone was to blame for the slow progress of the case. The novelty and extreme complexity of the issues required careful consideration, and the legal system rightly allows all parties to present and question all evidence that may be helpful to their case.

The lawyers involved in the case all agreed that ways have to be found to deal with such cases more quickly in the future. The many legal rulings that were made during the course of the hearing after lengthy arguments will perhaps result in quicker resolution of similar issues in other cases, while lawyers and judges will certainly study the way that evidence was presented in the Hamilton hearing in the hope of finding more efficient ways of handling such material.

The bizarre allegations and the sensational nature of the parents' evidence resulted in the hearing attracting a level of public attention quite unprecedented for a child welfare case. Not only has the case helped to alert the public to the need for more research and investigation into the perplexing issue of ritual abuse, but it has also served to promote awareness about child sexual abuse in general, a problem of epidemic proportions, of which ritual abuse is an alarming new mutation. Protecting children is something that most people in our society see as a high priority. For this reason politicians have placed it high on the public agenda. While members of the public are concerned about such issues, they do not usually trouble themselves much over the details. This is what enables politicians to practice a sleight-of-hand by which they can pay lip service to the public's concern by means of rhetoric and impressively tough legislation, but avoid the commitment of resources that will enable professionals working in the field to insure that the intent of the legislation is fulfilled.

I believe that a realistic response to ritual abuse and other forms of exploitation of children requires financing of innovative investigation and research—at the very least, a commitment by government to give child protection agencies the money they need to do their jobs properly. While reports of child sexual abuse have increased all over the country in the past few years by as much as 300 percent a year in some regions, there has been virtually no corresponding increase in the number of child welfare workers, Crown attorneys and police officers. The new legislation, which could make it easier to prosecute sexual abuse cases, will be of little value unless governments also provide agencies with the staff they need to investigate and take cases to court.

Judge Beckett's decision protected Janis and Linda from further abuse, but not before they had suffered potentially irreparable psychological damage. Their therapy, suspended in the spring of 1986, was resumed after a few months when it became clear that the hearing would continue well into 1987. Their psychiatrist was not optimistic about their prospects of growing up to be happy, well-adjusted adults, breaking the cycle of abuse by protecting their own children from the kind of suffering they and their mother have endured. "They are going to need a great deal of support," Sylvio Mainville, the executive director of the Hamilton-Wentworth Children's Aid Society, said in an interview. "We can only hope and pray to God that they are going to come out of this in a way that they can lead meaningful lives as adults."

The problems that tainted the lives of Janis and Linda have their roots far in the past, and are continuing to grow. The sickness that they suffer from has such a strong hold on our society that it is hard to see how it can be eradicated without a fundamental change in our priorities. The problem is partly one of economics and social policy. It is often argued that child sexual abuse is something that transcends class barriers. Gary and Sharon are an example of that, in that they came from such vastly different economic, cultural and social backgrounds; it seemed that almost the only thing they had in common was an inclination to sexually abuse children. However, it is not true that there is no relationship between child abuse and social class. Concerns mentioned during the hearing about the prevalence of sexual abuse in the Toronto public housing complex where Sharon lived are underscored by the Badgley Commission *Report on Sexual Offenses Against Children And Youths*, which stated that 47 percent of the girls and 33 percent of boys sexually assaulted in metro Toronto between 1979 and 1981 lived in public housing. The report stated:

"Public housing units appear to constitute an easily visible target where a large number of children live in the same location."

Child abuse expert David Finkelhor noted in a 1986 book: "Although abuse is certainly not limited to the lower classes, as the stereotype might suggest, to most researchers it makes sense that the frustrations of poverty, joblessness, lack of education, and inadequate housing contribute to the conditions that increase violence toward children."[14] Finkelhor goes on to make the point that this may not be the case with sexual abuse, as with physical violence towards children. He states that studies and incidence reports do show a higher prevalence of child sexual abuse among low-income families, but this may be because such abuse is more likely to be detected by social agencies that work more with poorer people.

Certainly it would be naive to assume that Sharon's children would have been safe from abuse if she had been housed in a decent building, which was not depressing and inconvenient, rife with violence and criminal activity and crawling with cockroaches—but it might have helped, especially if she received a family allowance that gave her financial independence from the men who had such a devastating impact on her and her children's lives. It would also have been beneficial to her if she lived somewhere close to a day-care center and a mental health center, and if the social worker who was responsible for monitoring the family felt she could make regular visits without risking her own life.

Sharon had been trapped all her life in a cycle of poverty and dependence. She had been brought up to think of herself as a victim, and she was vulnerable to any form of exploitation. Gordon came from a similar environment. One would have no difficulty in characterizing him as "a frustrated, hostile, but powerless figure, who lacks legitimate means of striking back at supposed aggressors." As a description of Gordon, this could be peculiarly apt, since the words are taken from a sociological study of members of a satanist group.[15] This study describes such individuals as not necessarily poor, but usually marginal, deviant people, who desire success but do not understand how they can legitimately achieve it: "A great many of the satanists whom I interviewed reported childhoods marred by strife: they spoke of broken homes, drunken parents, aggressive and hostile siblings."

This corresponds with the observations of Louise Edwards, a British Columbia therapist, who has become increasingly concerned about the relationship between satanic cults and child abuse. She said in an interview that, while satanic cults appear to have memberships that include affluent professional people, they seek to involve alienated individuals whose only power is physical violence. She says such people make perfect victims in that they are often regarded as "lowlife, expendable people: who keeps track of them? Nobody ever complains when anything happens to them."

There can be no doubt that the influence of satanism in society is alarmingly high, and the hold that it has on many young people through heavy metal music is a disturbing trend. Again the connection between powerlessness, alienation and a craving to make an impact through magic, ritual and violence can be seen in this form of teenage pop satanism. In this phenomenon can be seen, perhaps, another form of child abuse—the commercial exploitation of young people by a music industry that profits from the sale of images of horror and despair. This is not because there is any satanist conspiracy or particularly evil intent on the part of the people who make and sell these records. It is simply that the image of evil has become a highly marketable commodity. The same form of exploitation caters to the popularity among young people of horror films that feature graphic portrayals of sadistic sexual violence, usually inflicted on teenage girls. *Last House on the Left*, which shocked everyone who saw it in court, is a fairly typical example of these films, which regularly attract large line-ups at movie theaters and are among the most popular items for rental in video stores.

Child sexual abuse is just one of many frightening realities that it would be more comfortable to ignore. There is overwhelming proof of its pervasiveness, but many people work very hard at denying the seriousness of the problem, in the same way the threats to the environment and the survival of the species are ignored or made light of. In this context, it is not surprising that few people would want to believe young children's bizarre stories of cannibalism and ritual murder.

Ellen Bass wrote in an introduction to a book of writings by survivors of child sexual abuse: "The sexual abuse of children is part of a culture in which violence to life is condoned. Our forests, our rivers, our oceans, our air, our earth, this entire biosphere, all are invaded with poison—raped, just as our children are raped. It is very possible that in 50 years or less, life as we know it will not exist on Earth. Nuclear war could kill us all. Even without an explosion, the radiation emitted in the various phases of mining, milling, and constructing nuclear power plants and weapons is already so abundant that the continuation of our species is in grave danger. It is not odd that men whose desire for profit has superseded their own instinct for survival should so abuse their young."[16]

A police investigator concerned about satanism stated that the phenomenon is frightening because of the all-encompassing motive behind the abuse that is practiced on its victims. He saw this motive as a desire to distort the values and change the thinking of a future generation. We will not know until we have done some further investigation of the allegations of satanic cult involvement in ritual child abuse if this is paranoia or a realistic fear. In looking at the documented cases of child exploitation that surround us, in observing the images of violence and dehumanized sexuality that are part of our everyday cultural landscape, it is not that hard to believe that, conspiracy or no conspiracy, the satanists' goal could easily be achieved without much effort on their part.

In one of her most poignant statements, Janis told her foster mother, "Most people are bad." In about ten years' time, she and her sister will be young adults trying to make their way in society. It would be comforting to believe that by that time some changes will have taken place that will have encouraged her to revise her view of humanity.

AFTERWORD

On July 21, 1987, four months after Judge Beckett delivered his final judgement in the case, an appeals court received some poignant evidence about the children's response to the judge's decision. This was presented to an Ontario Supreme Court judge, who was considering an application from Sharon Wells for interim access to her children pending an appeal of the judgement.

The court was told that when the judgement was first explained to the children on April 3, 1987, Linda said, "I wished on a wishbone and I got my wish. It came true. It came true."

The children's therapist Alice Oliviera described in an affidavit how delighted the two girls appeared upon hearing the news, and hugged their foster parents, Stan and Helen Kovaks. Dr. Oliviera said that, as the children snuggled up to Mrs. Kovaks resting their heads on her bosom, Linda said, "My mom told the judge she didn't do bad things and it was a lie. She did do bad things."

The children told the therapist that they would like the Kovakses to adopt them. Janis said that she would like to buy land next door to the Kovakses home so that she could build a house and always live beside Aunt Helen. Linda said she would even live in the ditch next door.

The Supreme Court judge was clearly so convinced by Dr. Oliviera's affidavit and other written material submitted to him that he dismissed the mother's application for access without asking to hear arguments from the lawyers representing the Children's Aid Society and the Ontario Official Guardian. The judge also ruled that it would not be in the best interest of the 16-month-old baby to be visited by her natural mother. Sharon had been allowed to visit her baby twice a week during the trial, but these visits were terminated when Judge Beckett made his final decision. The appeal court considered the opinions of a social worker who had observed the mother's visits. The social worker said that the baby seemed mildly distressed whenever she was taken to see Sharon, and would cling to her foster mother for one or two hours after the visits. The social worker observed that Sharon would speak to the infant in high-pitched baby talk, and would often refer to herself as "Mom," which, the judge was told, would tend to be confusing to a child who regarded her foster parent as her mother.

Dr. Olivera stated in her affidavit that the Kovakses provided Janis and Linda with a loving, secure and stable environnment. She said it would be "utterly cruel" and "terribly, terribly abusive" to throw them into the limbo of insecurity again. "The most vital need in the world for these two children is to know that they belong to adults that will take care of them for an extended period of time, adults who will protect, nurture them, let them feel they are worthwhile and lovable," the therapist said.

Dr. Oliviera said she told the girls on March 6, 1987, that the judge was very close to making a decision, and both children said that they wanted more than anything else to stay with "Auntie Helen and Uncle Stan." When the therapist asked them how they felt about the possibility that they might not be able to stay with the foster parents, Janis replied that she would kill herself.

After the judge's decision was handed down, the children were told that they could have one last visit with their mother, or else write a goodbye letter. Janis said she would rather write a letter, and she and her sister decided that it would be a good idea to get the letters written right away. But, realizing that the judgement would be appealed and not knowing how else to convey this concept to the girls, the social workers told them that their mother was not yet ready to say good-bye as she had not yet accepted the judge's decision.

"No, she's probably still arguing," said Linda. "But it's no use.

Her time is up. It's no use still arguing. The judge believed she did those bad things to us. She did bad things when she was mad. She has no more chances. Her time has run out."

Janis said, "I don't feel sad about Mom because of the things she done. She lied. She's a liar. You can tell the judge that."

Linda said she was afraid that the judges would "change their minds," and she said that if they did she would run away and hide.

When a representative of the Official Guardian later interviewed the children in order to determine what their wishes were with respect to the appeal, they again repeated their desire to stay with the Kovakses and told the lawyer to ask the judge if they could have their old toys back.

Janis wrote a letter to Dr. Oliviera, saying that she would be sad if she had to go back to live with her mother or father. The letter, which was presented as an exhibit to the appeal court, had all the untidiness and errors in spelling and grammar that one would expect from a child who was not yet ten years old. But Janis also showed a sophisticated understanding that belied her age as she wrote, "If we won't see Mom or Dad, then they can make a new life. Then we can make a new life too."

The determination with which the children appeared to be grasping this opportunity to make a new life gives some cause to hope that their harrowing story may have a happy ending.

NOTES

1. Florence Rush, *The Best Kept Secret* (1980, McGraw Hill, New York).

2. Ambroise Tardieu, quoted in Jeffrey Masson, *The Assault on Truth* (1984, Farrar, Straus and Giroux, New York), page 15.

3. Quoted in Florence Rush, op. cit., page 2.

4. Ellen Bass in Ellen Bass and Louise Thornton (eds.), *I Never Told Anyone* (1983, Harper & Row, New York), page 38.

5. Quoted in Jeffrey Masson, *A Dark Secret* (1986, Farrar, Straus and Giroux, New York), page 25.

6. Ann Wolbert Burgess, *Child Pornography and Sex Rings* (1984, D. C. Heath & Co., Lexington, Massachusetts), page 25.

7. Jeffrey Russell, *A History of Witchcraft* (1981, Thames and Hudson, London).

8. See: Gerhard Zacharias, *The Satanic Cult* (1980, George Allen & Unwin, London), page 114.

9. Norman Cohn, quoted in Margot Adler, *Drawing Down the Moon* (1981, Beacon Press, Boston), page 30.

10. Quoted in Masson, *Assault on Truth,* page 104.

11. William Bainbridge, *Satan's Power: A Deviant Psychotherapy Cult* (1978, University of California Press, Los Angeles).

12. J. Gordon Melton, *The Encyclopedia of American Religions* (1978, McGrath Publishing Co., Wilmington, North Carolina), page 301.

13. Coleman is quoted in Paul and Shirley Eberle, *The Politics of Child Abuse* (1986, Lyle Stuart, Inc., Secaucus, New Jersey). Details of the Miami case are given in Jan Hollingsworth, *Unspeakable Acts* (1986, Congdon and Weed, New York).

14. David Finkelhor, *A Sourcebook on Child Sexual Abuse* (1986, Sage Publications, Inc., Beverly Hills, California), page 67.

15. Edward J. Moody in Irving Zaretsky and Mark Leone (eds.), *Religious Movements in Contemporary America* (1974, Princeton University Press, Princeton, New Jersey), page 360.

16. Ellen Bass, op. cit., page 43.

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Kevin Marron was born in London, England, in 1947 and spent his formative years in Egypt, Bahrain, South Wales and the west of England. After completing secondary school, he taught for a year in Algeria under a voluntary service program. In 1970, he graduated from Cambridge University with an honours BA in English, and came to Canada to do postgraduate studies at McMaster University.

Now a Canadian citizen and living in Hamilton, Ont., Marron has worked as a freelance reporter for the *Globe and Mail* since 1978. Before that he taught at a free school, helped run an alternate community newspaper in Brantford, and edited a weekly newspaper in Dundas. He is now preparing a book about occult groups in Canada.

(continued from front flap)

abuse by satanic cults could be epidemic—and also our 'best kept secret' hidden by traditions that hold the privacy of family life sacrosanct and by adults who refuse to believe the allegations of the victims themselves—because they are only children.

Kevin Marron was on hand as countless expert witnesses took the stand during this politically charged and costly trial. He viewed the chilling videotaped testimony of the sisters "at play" with a therapist, and he recreates the bizarre testimony of the girls' mother—herself a victim of abuse—as she collapsed under oath.

Remarkably, **Ritual Abuse** is more than an account of extreme human depravity—it is also a testament of hope. Marron recounts the sincerity and love of the foster parents, social workers and doctors whose unflagging commitment helped bring to light and redress these shocking acts. He examines the laws designed to protect children and shows how they often work to promote their exploitation. What are the children's rights in abuse cases? What are the rights of the parents? Who is to be believed?

Ritual Abuse is a powerful story that will haunt you long after you turn the final page. It is a no-holds-barred inquiry into the best—and worst—of human nature. It is a necessary book written with honesty and compassion.

KEVIN MARRON is an Ontario-based journalist who writes for the *Globe & Mail* on a variety of topics. This is his first book.

A Seal Hardcover Book from
McClelland-Bantam Inc.
The Mark of Canadian Bestsellers

"Child abuse is just one of many frightening realities that it would be more comfortable to ignore. There is overwhelming proof of its pervasiveness, but many people work very hard at denying the seriousness of the problem. In this context, it is not surprising that few people would want to believe young children's bizarre stories of cannibalism and ritual murder. In looking at the documented cases of child exploitation that surround us, in observing the images of violence and dehumanized sexuality that are part of our everyday cultural landscape, it is not hard to believe that, conspiracy or no conspiracy, the satanists' goal could easily be achieved without much effort on their part."

—Kevin Marron, from **Ritual Abuse**

"A disturbing account of a very bizarre, shocking and controversial trial."

—Edward L. Greenspan, Q.C.

"A brutal tale convincingly told, proving once again that what man can conceive, he will do. Essential reading for all charged with the protection of children."

—Sylvia Fraser

"Kevin Marron creates a poignant and compelling reminder of how important it is that we, as adults, truly listen to children if we are ever to remember and understand their world—even when it seems 'beyond belief' by rational adult standards. Everyone who purports to care about protecting children has something to learn from this important book. I salute Kevin Marron for his obvious caring and commitment to create something positive from this tragedy. Thank you again for the reminder of the challenges which still await."

—Lorna Grant, Executive Director, The Metropolitan Toronto Special Committee on Child Abuse

52495
9 780770 422301
N 0-7704-2230-6>2495

PSYCHIC DICTATORSHIP

IN THE U.S.A.

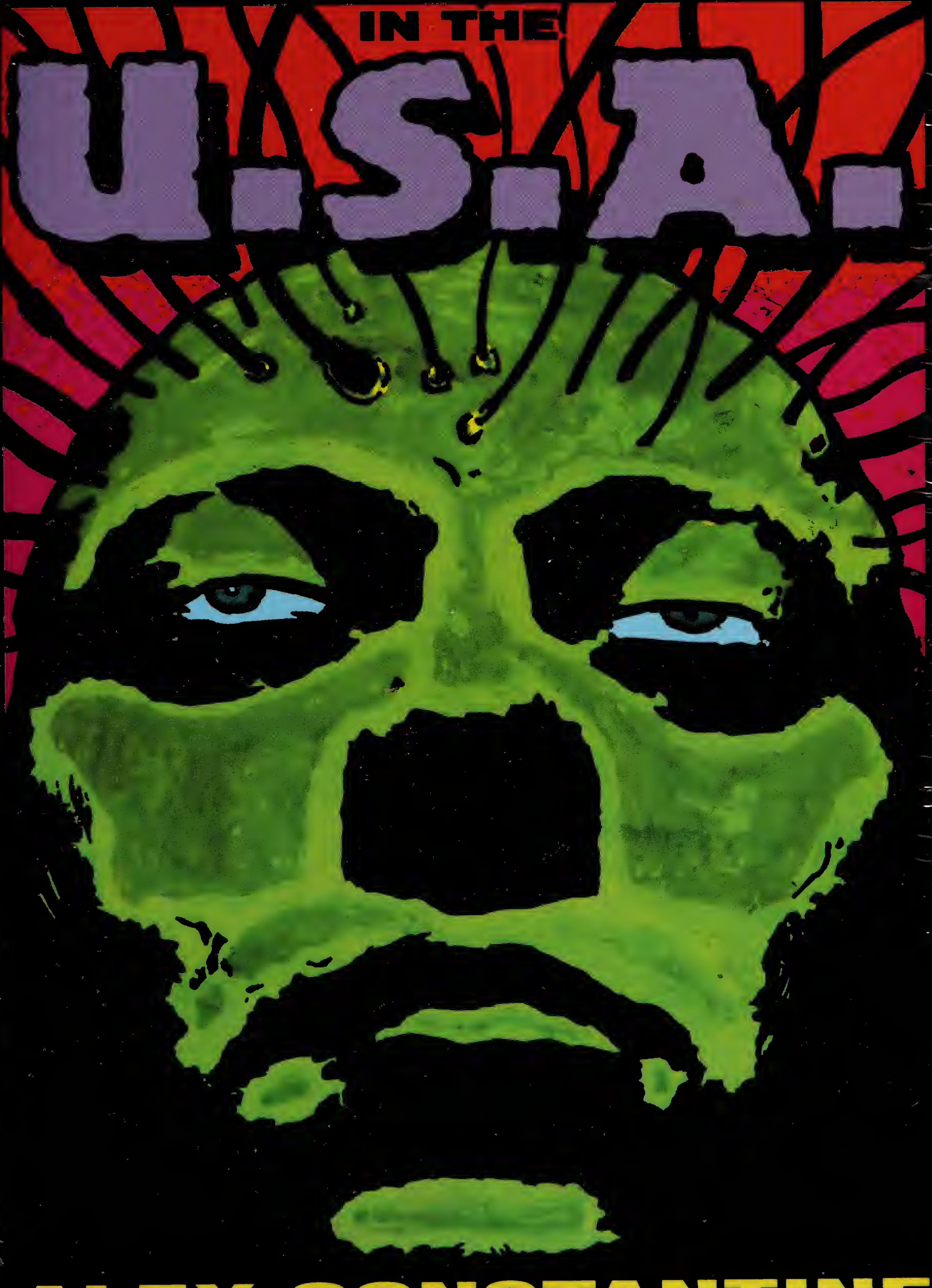

ALEX CONSTANTINE

Psychic Dictatorship in the U.S.A.

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2018 with funding from
Kahle/Austin Foundation

https://archive.org/details/psychicdictators00cons

Psychic Dictatorship in the U.S.A.

by Alex Constantine

Feral House

Psychic Dictatorship in the U.S.A. © 1995 by Alex Constantine

All rights reserved.

ISBN 0-922915-28-8

Published by Feral House
P.O. Box 3466
Portland, OR 97208

Illustration by Frank Kozik
Design by Linda Hayashi

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

For Mae Brussell

The Order of Contents

Acknowledgments *page ix*
Introduction *page xi*

Section One

Telemetric Mind Control

Chapter One
Hearing Voices 1

Chapter Two
Blue Smoke & Lasers 33

Section Two

CIA, Satanism & Cult Abuse of Children

Chapter Three
The False Memory Hoax 52

Chapter Four
Ray Buckey's Press Corps & the Tunnels of McMartin 77

Chapter Five
"What is that Odor?" 97

Chapter Six
A Map of Hell 113

Chapter Seven
The "Fatal Vision" Murders & an American Death Squad 121

Chapter Eight
Family Ties 131

Chapter Nine
A Sordid Tale of Two Cities 151

Section Three

The CIA's Black Budget & Domestic Operations

Chapter Ten
E. Howard Hunt's Death Squads 169

Chapter Eleven
The GOP's Pink Triangle & the CIA 175

Chapter Twelve
Funny Money—Johnny Carson, the CIA and the S&L Crisis 185

Chapter Thirteen
The Swirl & the Swastika 189

Chapter Fourteen
The Holocaust Gallery 213

Acknowledgments

Nobody can do everything. But everyone can do something.
If everyone does something, everything will be done.
—Gil Scott-Heron

No thanks to the CIA, which has attempted for six years to subvert my radio broadcasts and magazine articles by assaulting me with “non-lethal” weapons, an untraceable form of torture perfected by the U.S. government, made something of an art form. A delusion? No. The grim history of American electromagnetic torture is contained herein.

Much sane counsel was given by Sandy Munro, who maintains a secret life comprised of chasing down obscure dirt on covert ops, driven by an awesome sense of justice. Will Robinson and Marilyn Colman, hosts of ”The Lighthouse Report,” aired my political research for five years over KAZU-FM in Monterey, California, rare types who understood my obsession to promote respect for human life in a country that doesn’t. Adam Parfrey, Feral House publisher, provided more wise counsel, the title to this volume and much-needed friendship in the bleakest moments. Child therapists Catherine Gould, Vicky Graham-Costain and Nita Vallens brought me up to date on ritual abuse after a long hiatus from this particular nightmare to take on less stressful research on Nazi death squads, George Bush and the like.

Charles Higham, author of *American Swastika*, spent long Sunday mornings over breakfast filling my ears with eloquent tales of political subterfuge too thick with scandal to see the light of day for years. His best, unfortunately neglected advice: “Write about people who are dead—you’ll have less trouble that way.” The editors of *Hustler* have enthusiastically supported my research, as have Patrick Formey, Martin Cannon and Andy Boehm at Prevailing Winds. Virginia McCullough, a researcher with an incredibly active mind and a memory liuke a steel trap, provided much professional guidance. Ted Gunderson and Jackie MacGauley shared the results of their research freely. Michael Sheppard peeled me off the floor in moments of desperation (pursuing Nazi treacheries can get to one; so can an apartment constantly filled with infra-sound and pulsed microwaves, and the occasional pyromaniac out to stop my wagging tongue once and for all). Dave Armstrong, former editor of *Random Lengths* in Long Beach, was one of the few in the press willing to publish stories on the CIA's domestic excesses. Ron Silver, an actor turned dragon slayer, earned a place in the book. John Lambros, a victim of CIA mind control experiments, contributed a burgeoning file on his tormentors.

The late Mae Brussell's work has proven invaluable, providing the keys to the universe and inspiration to "Brussell Sprouts" in all walks of life, including myself.

Alex Constantine

Introduction

The Deep Politics of Psychocivilization

Rent-a-Tent, Rent-a-Tent...

For the past fifty years a pathological science has evolved in the netherworld of the national security elite. Like a buxom siren, the science of mind control beckons the technocrat with Machiavellian ambitions into assuming the position of a petty god.

He dreams of cybernetic control of whole populations.

At one point in their careers, in fact, most of the upper-tier academics employed in federal mind control research have publicly expressed a yearning for a psychocivilized society. Subjects of the experimentation have glimpsed their dream—a daily regimen of dehumanizing harrassment and even torture from a remote source, usually veiled by hypnotic memories of "alien" contact or the like. The number of human guinea pigs is growing. The experiments have encompassed entire cities. Electromagnetic influence over the brain and body—flashy comic book technology—is a recurring theme in these pages, which attempts to cut through the veil thrown up by the media around the skulking of the CIA and other totalitarian branches of government.

The science of mind control has achieved the scale of a criminal subculture, and left a wide path of chaos and confusion that crosses all international boundaries. The carnage takes place under the noses of the public, obscured by cover stories and dead witnesses and the incredible naivete of most news reporters. The cover stories take variegated forms:

- Brain Studies—On occasion, with startling candor, federally-funded psychiatrists sometimes blurt out to reporters their deepest desires. Dr. Karl Pribram, director of the Neuropsychology Research Laboratory at Stanford University, once boasted, "I certainly could educate a child by putting an electrode in the lateral hypothalamus." Selective stimulation, he said, meant that "I can grossly change his behavior." In *Psychology Today* for October, 1973 M.I.T. Professor Stephan Chorover observed: "Too many contemporary neuro- and behavioral-scientists seem committed to a narrow, unrealistic view of human social behavior. They focus mainly on the possibility of controlling behavior. If this continues, psychotechnology will increasingly become a favorite tool of social and political repression."

- The "Alien" Invasion—a very active cover story for the development of mind control technology. Supposedly (as those weird syndicated UFO television programs keep reminding us) alien scientists have voyaged millions of light years to place CIA implants in the bodies of human subjects. This incredible cover story is widely believed—yet most "skeptics" scoff at the notion that human scientists might want to do the same thing. The aliens have been pounded into the heads of the American consumer by a slue of books penned by military intelligence officers.

- Parapsychology, ESP and Remote Viewing Experiments—the type that made history at Stanford University and UCLA. These are usually astonishingly successful and passed off as proof of the paranormal, when in fact they are augmented by telemetric brain technology, and cannot help but succeed if the microwave transmitter is operating and set to the brain frequency of the percipient. Remote viewing, for example, is possible when an image is beamed to the visual pathways.

Psychic Spying?

Four years ago, officers of the Central Intelligence Agency and the National Security Agency participated in a series of unusual experiments run by Stanford Research Institute (SRI) to verify claims that certain people have psychic abilities. The results SRI reported were astonishing.

The SRI investigators, physicists Harold E. Puthoff (a former NSA research engineer) and Russell Targ, set out to demonstrate to their CIA sponsor that their subjects, noted psychic Ingo Swann and a middle-aged businessman named Pat Price, could describe distant locations merely by knowing which geographic coordinates to "look at." Some parapsychologists call this alleged ability "astral projection," or "out of body experience." Puthoff and Targ prefer the term "remote viewing."

Targ and Puthoff—who have disavowed working for the CIA—have in common credentials in advanced laser technology. Puthoff, a high-ranking Scientologist, is the inventor of the tunable laser. Targ once designed a microwave plasma generator. Twilight Zone studies often front for the development of intrusive machines that interact with the cortex. (CIA critic Ken Lawrence sniffed, "it takes considerable mind-bending to suppose the CIA hired men with these skills to try to read the Kremlin's classified zener cards.")

The remote viewing study, code-named "Project Scanate," makes sense when considered a techno-organic test drive conducted under the "rigorous control" of "the sponsor." The *Washington Post* reported that the Agency admitted transmitting "coordinates" from a monitor in Washington, D.C. to Stanford University. After the experiment, Pat Price, a "psychic" test subjects (yet another Scientologist), was asked to mentally revisit the site. She supplied the following details:

> Top of desk had papers labeled:
> FLYTRAP
> MINERVA
>
> File cabinet on north wall labeled:
> OPERATION POOL
>
> Folders inside cabinet labeled:
> CUEBALL
> 14 BALL
> 4 BALL
> RACKUP
>
> Name of Site vague, seems like Hayford or Haystack Personnel:
> COL. R.J. HAMILTON
> MAJ. GEN. GEORGE R. NASH
> MAJ. JOHN C. CALHOUN

But Mr. Price wasn't nearly satisfied with merely describing a top-secret satellite interrogation station complete with code words used to eavesdrop of Soviet space vehicles (if, in fact, he saw anything at all.) He volunteered to scan "the other side of the globe for a (Soviet) Bloc equivalent, and found one in the Urals," according to the Stanford report on the experiment. He managed to give the map coordinates of the Soviet installation, described it in minute detail, including heliports, radar arrays, railroad tracks, and the observation of an "unusually high ratio of women to men, at least at night."

- Space-Based Defense—As much as half the funding for Star Wars has *disappeared* into classified R&D programs (see "Blue Smoke and Lasers"). All along, Congress was assured by SDI officials that the funds were spent on the programs for which they were intended. Behind the Pentagon's search for the perfect space-based X-ray laser, replete with faked testing and slick public relations, lurked a secret electromagnetic weapons program, and intrigues that proved fatal to 23 British scientists. Otherwise rational Ph.Ds were driven by an inexplicable, overpowering urge to destroy themselves by biting on live wires and driving furiously into brick walls.

Under the increasingly anxious skies of California, SDI development was housed at Lawrence Livermore labs—once the site of "remote viewing" experiments similar to those at Stanford University.

- Non-lethal weapons—goop guns, robotic soldier-ants and acoustic bullets serve as a much-publicized Trojan horse for the proliferation and introduction of electromagnetic pulse weapons, infra-sound guns, plasma generators, killer satellites, computer-aided mental projection, cranial surveillance devices, EM brain-blasters, pulsed-microwave thought transference, cyborgian psychic driving techniques, computer-enhanced subliminal transmissions and other military spin-offs of remote mind control technology.

- Ritual child abuse—since 1963 the CIA and select branches of military intelligence have been intensely involved in the occult underground. Some of the most menticidal of the Mystery Cults participate in psychoactive drug experimentation, the development of harassment techniques, the testing of brain-intrusive devices on unwary human targets, hypno-programming, and so on.

Dr. Catherine Gould, an Encino, California-based child therapist specializing in ritual abuse, found that "mind control is originally established when the victim is a child under six years old. During this formative stage of development, perpetrating cult members systematically combine dissociation-enhancing drugs, pain, sexual assault, terror, and other forms of psychological abuse in such a way that the child dissociates the intolerable traumatic experience."

Ad nauseum.

Mediaeko, the Swedish investigative group, found that the hidden professional body of the mind control fraternity, "wherever it operated internationally, together with the secret police, was to preserve the secrecy of mind control, since they could systematically certify any person who insisted that he or she had been subjected to such abuse. Now, the conviction of being externally-controlled, of being mind-read or subjected to long-term experimentation with radio-signals was due to the psychoses often referred to as persecution mania, paranoia or schizophrenia." The media have led the public at large to accept that such claims are the ravings of classic persecution mania.

But once the curious political researcher learns his way around the covert mind control universe, it unfolds in media reports like a fine-point Oriental mural on torn rice paper. This volume is an encryption guide for reconstructing the picture from scraps of media disinformation of the type that flows from the False Memory Syndrome Foundation.

Introduction

Section One

Telemetric Mind Control

Section One

Telemetric Mind Control

Chapter One

Hearing "Voices"

The Hidden History of CIA and Pentagon Electromagnetic Mind Control Experiments on Involuntary Human Subjects

Ricardo S. Caputo was a very disturbed man, as the *New York Times* blared:

INNER VOICES DEMAND BLOOD:
CONFESSION DIARY IN THE KILLING OF 4 WOMEN

In dozens of sessions with his attorney and psychiatrist, Caputo spoke of hearing "bizarre voices" and "seeing hallucinations" when driven to murderous fits. He described the three personalities inside him. In his diary, the killer wrote of his violent moods, preceded by "broad lines" crossing his vision whenever his emotional state deteriorated and the voices taunted him into a murderous rage.

Desperate, Caputo turned to his brother Alfredo and hired the attorney. Heeding their advice, he surrendered to the Argentine authorities, but "police and judges simply threw up their hands," the *Times* reported, "claiming that since no charges were pending against him, *he could not be arrested,* no matter how many crimes he confessed to." In his diary Caputo described the four killings, the "broad lines" scoring his vision when his emotions swung out of control and the voices harassed him. The "voices," he said, "did not let me have any peace."[1]

An equally repugnant story was told by Carl Campbell, described by his mother as a troubled man haunted by "voices." On May 5, 1991 Campbell strolled to a bus stop in the Pentagon parking lot and emptied five pistol rounds into the chest and abdomen of Navy Commander Edward J. Higgins, an arms control specialist for the DoD. Campbell was taken into custody by federal police and charged with first-degree murder.

Psychologists submitted a report to U.S. Magistrate W. Curtis Sewell in Alexandria. In it, they wrote that Campbell claimed the CIA had "injected" him with a microchip that controlled his mind.[2] In fact, there is a little known technique used by the CIA for injecting a computer chip into the bloodstream, which delivers it to the brain where it catches and lodges.[3] The question is, how did Campbell, ruled mentally incompetent by the court, a gibbering psychotic, become familiar with an obscure procedure for implanting a biomedical telemetry chip?

Early Giants of Remote Mind Control

The CIA's experiments in radio control of the brain are based on the development of the EEG in the 1920s. In 1934 Drs. Chaffee and Light published a pivotal monograph, "A Method for Remote Control of Electrical Stimulation of the Nervous System." Work along the same lines allowed Dr. Jose Delgado of Cordoba, Spain to climb into bull-ring and, with the push of a button, trigger an electrode in the head of a charging bull and stop the beast in its tracks.

Further groundbreaking advances were made by L.L. Vasiliev, the famed Russian physiologist and doyan of parapsychology, in "Critical Evaluation of the Hypnogenic Method." The article detailed the experiments of Dr. I.F. Tomashevsky in remote radio control of the brain, "at a distance of one or more rooms and under conditions where the participant would not know or suspect that she would be experimented with.... One such experiment was carried out in a park at a distance," Vasiliev reported, and "a post-hypnotic mental suggestion to go to sleep was complied with within a minute."[4]

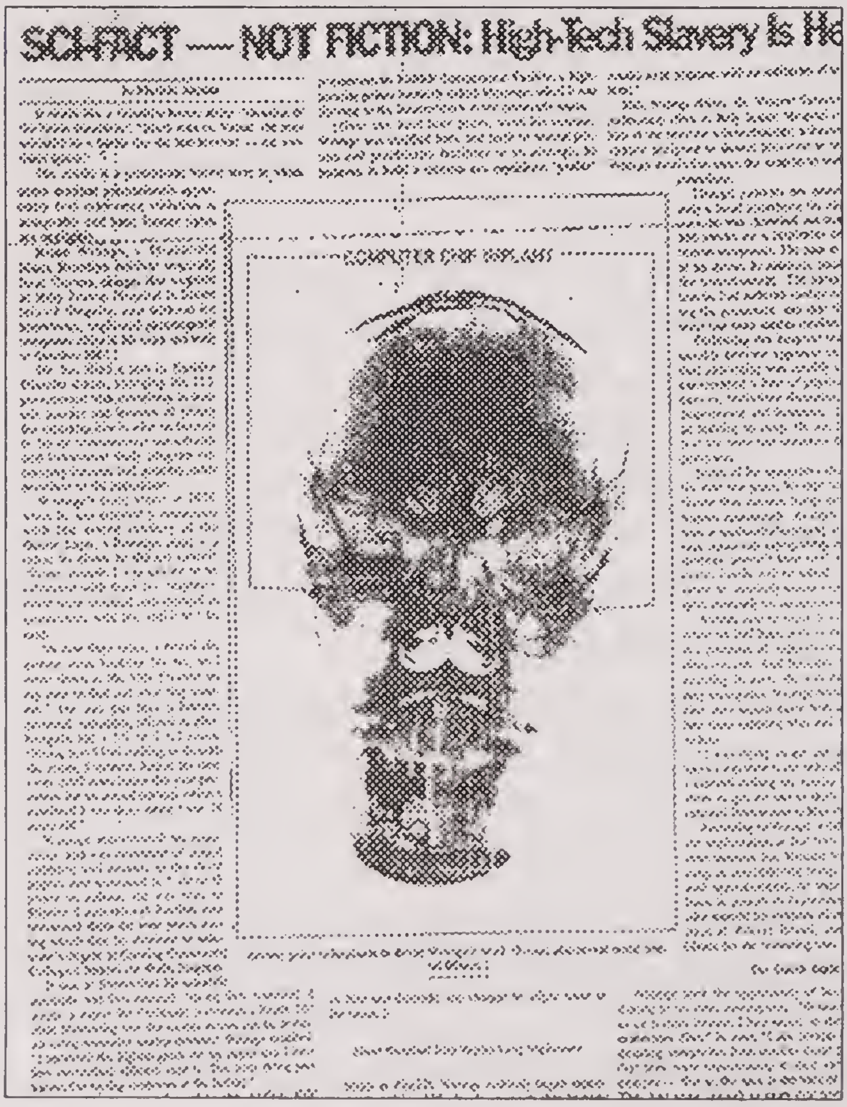

SCI-FACT — NOT FICTION: High-Tech Slavery Is He

By 1956 Curtiss Shafer, an electrical engineer for the Norden-Ketay Corporation, could explore the possibilities at the National Electronics Conference in Chicago. "The ultimate achievement of biocontrol may be man himself," Shafer said. "The controlled subjects would never be permitted to think as individuals. A few months after birth, a surgeon would equip each child with a socket mounted under the scalp and electrodes reaching selected areas of brain tissue." In this psycho-Arcadia, "sensory perceptions and muscular activity could be either modified or completely controlled by bioelectric signals radiating from state-controlled transmitters."[5]

The CIA had already rushed headlong into Shafer's EMR dystopia with the founding of an experimental mind control clinic in Montreal, directed by the notorious D. Ewen Cameron, M.D. on grants from the Rockefeller Foundation and J.D. McConnell of the *Montreal Star.* Another pool of funding was the Gerschickter Foundation, named for Dr. Charles Gerschickter of Georgetown University Hospital, who had tested potent drugs on mental patients and the terminally ill, and bombarded monkeys with radar waves until they passed out at the behest of the CIA.[6]

Allan Memorial was housed in a limestone mansion atop Mount Royal, donated by Sir Hugh Allan and staffed with emigre psychiatrists from war-crushed Europe.

Cameron shared a bloodless, sadistic character with the Nazis he analyzed early in his career. Allan Memorial opened in 1942. Three years later he was invited to Nuremberg to evaluate the mental state of Rudolph Hess. In Germany Cameron could dissect the aberrations of fascist rule. Dr. Harvey Weinstein, a psychiatrist whose father was a guinea pig for Cameron's mind control experiments, writes that Germany was "a laboratory in which the issues of authority, powerlessness, individual motivation and behavior could be examined."[7] And ruthlessly applied in Montreal. Cameron's early revulsion at Nazi violence gave way to a growing elitist sensibility. His scorn for the weak, including his own mentally-crippled patients, qualified him for the carnage to come.

In 1992 retired Colonel L. Fletcher Prouty, formerly a Pentagon liaison to the CIA, told author Dick Russell that Allan Memorial "was pretty well organized." Prouty:

> If you get ahold of a directory for the American Psychiatric Association in around 1956 or 1957, you'll be surprised to find that an enormous percentage of the individuals listed are foreign-born. Mostly they came out of Germany and Eastern Europe in a big wave. They were all called "technical specialists," but really they were psychiatrists. They went into jobs at universities mostly—but many were working on these 'unconventional' mind control programs for U.S. intelligence.... These would go to people like Dr. Cameron in Canada.[8]

Not one of Cameron's patients was ever cured in the Radio Telemetry Laboratory, a makeshift torture chamber assembled in the cellar of his own private Bedlam. The financial underpinnings for the experiments came from Cornell's Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology, a CIA front. Cameron's right-hand man was Leonard Rubenstein, an electrical whiz of Cockney descent who lacked medical bona fides, but passionately exercised a fascination with remote brain control. He foresaw the telemetry lab as the foundation of a sprawling psychopolitical Apparat "that will keep tabs on people without their knowing," as he told a fellow staffer.[9]

Cameron's left hand was Dr. Walter Freeman, who had performed no less than 4,000 frontal lobotomies in 20 years of practice—often on patients suffering only mild depression or paranoia. Dr. Freeman went on to become a respected San Francisco brain specialist.[10]

The psychotronic heart of the laboratory was the Grid Room, with its verticed, Amazing Tales interior. The subject was strapped into a chair involuntarily, by force, his head bristling with electrodes and transducers. Any resistance was met with a paralyzing dose of curare. The subject's brain waves were beamed to a nearby reception room crammed with voice analyzers, a wire recorder and radio receivers cobbled together by Rubenstein.[11] The systematic annihilation, or "depatterning" of a subject's mind and memory, was accomplished with overdoses of LSD, barbiturate sleep for 65 days at a stretch and ECT shocks at 75 times the recommended dosage. Psychic driving, the repetition of a recorded message for 16 hours a day, programmed the empty mind. Fragile patients referred to Allan Memorial for help were thus turned into carbuncular jellyfish.[12]

Yet Cameron, before his death in 1967, was president of the American and Canadian Psychiatric Associations.

His work in brain emissions was balanced elsewhere by experiments in reception. Honeywell, Inc., for instance, launched into "a method to penetrate inside a man's mind and control his brain waves over long distance."[13] The Scientific Engineering Institute in Boston, another CIA cover, was established in 1956 to study radar. In 1962 the SEI set up a "Life Sciences" lab to study the effects of electrodes deep within the brain.[14] At the National Institutes of Health, Dr. Maitland Baldwin beamed radio signals into the brains of lobotomized monkeys. His CIA monitors noted weird excesses: in one experiment, Baldwin decapitated a monkey and transplanted its head to the body of another, then attempted to restore it to life with radar saturation.[15]

At Langley the experiments were presided over by Dr. Stephen Aldrich, a patron of occult research, foreshadowing the use of mind control technology by satanic cults in the 1980s and '90s, according to Julianne McKinney, director of the Electronic Surveillance Project of the Association of National Security Alumni.[16] Dr. Aldrich, a graduate of Amherst and Northwestern, took control of The Firm's Office of Research and Development (ORD) in 1962 upon the departure of Sidney Gottleib. The occasion marked the birth of Operation Often, an investigation of the occult. With Houston sorceress Sybil Leek as their guide, CIA behaviorists studied the arcana of the occult underground.[17]

The SEI contributed a social laboratory to Often in 1972 at the University of South Carolina in the form of a course in rituals of demonology and voodoo.[18]

Aldrich's interest in the occult (shared by scores of others in the intelligence world.[19]) may explain his penchant for remote brain manipulation, based as it is in "psychic" technology. Under the direction of Aldrich, writes John Marks in *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*, ORD technocrats "kept probing for ways to control human behavior, and they were doing so with space-age technology that made the days of MKULTRA look like the horse-and buggy era."[20] Particularly useful to CIA scientists were advances in stereotaxic surgery, simplifying the implantation of electrodes in the brain to wipe out a subject's memories in preparation for hypnotic reconstructive surgery.

In 1965 the *New York Times* learned of obscure electronic experiments quietly funded by the government, and went tabloid with the front-page headline:

MIND CONTROL COMING, SCIENTIST WARNS

Dr. David Krech, a psychology professor at the University of California, warned that "our research may carry with it even more serious implications than the awful, in both senses of the word, achievements of the atomic physicists." When leaks to the press exposed the horror stories, he said, "let us not find ourselves in the position of being caught foolishly surprised, naively perplexed and touchingly full of publicly displayed guilt."[21]

On May 6 Dr. Delgado, the Spanish bulltamer and postwar Yale researcher, closed a lecture on the evolution of the brain at the American Museum of Natural History in New York with the announcement that "science has developed a new electrical methodology for the study and control of cerebral function in animals and humans."[22]

Operation Bloodbath

Encouraged by progress in transforming human beings into cordless automatons, the CIA picked up the pace. Two years before Dr. Krech's admonition, a CIA manual was prepared on the electronic wizardry of Radio-Hypnotic Intracerebral Control (RHIC), originally developed by the Pentagon, according to a 1975 issue of *Modern People:*

> When a part of your brain receives a tiny electrical impulse from outside sources, such as vision, hearing, etc., an emotion is produced—anger at the sight of a gang of boys beating an old

> woman, for example. The same emotions of anger can be created by artificial radio signals sent to your brain by a controller. You could instantly feel the same white hot anger without any apparent reason.[23]

The objective of Project ARTICHOKE, the CIA's umbrella remote mind control program in the 1950s (as reported in innumerable men's magazines) was the creation of a "Manchurian" killer-puppet with a revolver and a memory like a steel sieve, both emptied by electrical stimulation.

The technology existed by the early 1960s to support the contention of former FBI agent Lincoln Lawrence (an alias) and researcher Art Ford in the classic investigation of CIA mind control ops, *Were We Controlled?*, that Lee Harvey Oswald was a hypnogenic assassin—with a malfunctioning electrical implant in his head.

That a political assassin could be directed from afar to strike on cue is not so implausible as it may seem to the uninitiated. The authors' reconstruction holds up as well today as it did in 1968, when the book was published. If only persons involved with the book proved as durable. Lawrence's attorney, the late Martin Scheiman, was gunned down inside the Time-Life Building. A condensation of the book by Damon Runyon, Jr. (an adherent to New Orleans D.A. Jim Garrison's recreation of the Kennedy assassination) was preempted by death. In April, 1968 the celebrated writer suffered a mortal fall from a bridge in Washington, D.C.'s Rock Creek Park.[24]

The CIA circle in the Inferno swelled with odd deaths, disappearances and "suicides."

In 1975 Herman Kimsey, a veteran Army counter intelligence operative and a ranking CIA official until his resignation in 1962, surfaced posthumously in Hugh MacDonald's *Appointment in Dallas:* "Oswald was programmed to kill," Kimsey told MacDonald, "like a medium at a seance. Then the mechanism went on the blink and Oswald became a dangerous toy without direction."[25] Three weeks after the interview, Kimsey perished of heart failure.[26]

Likewise, Oswald crony David Ferrie, a CIA pilot and hypnotist, was found dead in his New Orleans apartment, surrounded by fifteen empty medicine bottles, a seeming suicide. But the coroner's final ruling was that the cause of death was a berry aneurysm. Forensic specialists ventured that the blood vessel had hemorrhaged as the result of a karate blow to back of his head. Raiding police carted off Ferrie's effusive notes on hypnosis and a pile of books on post-hypnotic suggestion. His cohorts went into hiding after his death, but one, Jack Martin, surfaced long enough, according to Walter Bowart in *Operation Mind Control,* "to suggest that Oswald had been programmed by Ferrie to go to Dallas and kill the President."[27]

A shadow cabinet of intelligence officials guided the CIA's remote mind control program. The reigning Big Brother was Richard Helms, then plans director, a product of the Eastern cryptocracy (his grandfather was the first director of the International Bank of Settlements, and past president of the Federal Reserve), and a former United Press reporter, in which capacity he interviewed Adolph Hitler in 1937.[28] In the wake of the Bay of Pigs tragedy, Helms was selected by CIA Director John McCone to run the "dirty tricks" department. Appointed to the position of Director of Central Intelligence in 1966, he left the Agency six years later. Before departing, Helms kept the secrets by ordering the destruction of all files relating to MKULTRA.[29]

He was a Machiavelli with a mission. An avid proponent of telemetry as a form of low-intensity warfare, Helms commandeered a vast research network in pursuit of such subtle depth persuasion techniques as the transmission of strategic subliminal messages to the brains of enemy populations. He advocated the use of high-frequencies to affect memory and even the unconscious. Helms ordered up a scientific cabal to study automata theory.[30] In a memo to the Warren Commission, he made mention of "biological radio communication."[31]

The 1964 memo was prophetic. Helms:

> Cybernetics can be used in *molding of a child's character,* the inculcation of knowledge and techniques, the amassing of experience, the establishment of social behavior patterns... all functions which can be summarized as control of the growth processes of the individual.[32]

Cybernetics technology that responds to thought was in the offing. In his memo, Helms diverted attention from CIA-funded research and development by alluding to the Soviets. But then they had no technology the U.S. did not also have, he conceded.

A subsequent CIA directive, summarized in a brochure on the "Cybernetic Technique" distributed by Mankind Research Unlimited (MRU), a research front in the District of Columbia, gleefully discusses the Agency's development of a "means by which information of modest rate can be fed to humans utilizing other senses than sight or hearing." The Cybernetic Technique, "based on Eastern European research," involves beaming information to individual nerve cells. The purpose, the directive states, is the enhancement of mental and physical performance.[33]

The cyborg was born.

Cyborg Nazis and the MASERS of Pandora

In 1965, upon discovering the microwave dousing of the American embassy in Moscow, the DoD's secretive Advanced Research Projects Agency (ARPA) set up a laboratory at the Walter Reed Army Institute of Research in Washington, D.C. ARPA had already developed a prodigious arsenal of electromagnetic weapons. Dr. Jose Delgado (whose work with radio-waves was underwritten by the CIA and Navy) thought these invisible weapons "more dangerous than atomic destruction." With knowledge of the brain, he said, "we may transform, we may shape, direct, robotize man. I think the great danger of the future is... that we will have robotized human beings who are not aware that they have been robotized."[34] Touching, but Delgado's sudden fit of conscience was belated. America's EM arsenal owes its very existence to his brain transponder experiments, which robotized humans.

But the beaming of the American embassy was an unexpected turn in the Invisible Cold War. What were the Ruskies up to?

The Moscow Signal, Paul Brodeur speculates in *The Zapping of America,* may be a perennial stern warning to the DoD to curb any geopolitical ambitions that EM weapons might inspire. He also interprets the Signal as retaliation for "the threat or fact of unwarranted irradiation of their population by powerful electromagnetic devices that now encircle them and look down on them from outer space."[35]

Baffled officials of the intelligence community consulted experts on the biological effects of the radiation. Dr. Milton Zaret, a leading microwave scientist recruited by PANDORA, recalls that the CIA inquired "whether I thought electromagnetic radiation beamed at the brain from a distance could affect the way a person might act," and "could microwaves be used to facilitate brainwashing or to break down prisoners under investigation."[36] The State Department chose to keep the Signal a secret from embassy employees—and studied the side-effects instead. Ambassador Stoessel's office was situated in the beam's center. He fell prey to a blood disease, bleeding eyes, nausea, and eventually lymphoma. Two other State Department employees, Charles Bohlen and Llewellyn Thompson, have been stricken with cancer. The existence of the Soviet beam was only acknowledged by the U.S. in 1976, in response to a Jack Anderson column.

The State Department declared that the microwave saturation of the embassy activated bugging devices in the walls. But Dr. Zaret has conducted his own tests, simulating the Moscow emissions, and reviewed Soviet medical literature. He concluded that the Moscow Signal was psychoactive: "Whatever other reasons the Russians may have had, they believed the beam would modify the behavior of personnel."[37]

In 1965 the Pentagon's investigation of microwaves was "broadened to include ARPA and code-named Project PANDORA, based at the Walter

Reed Army Institute of Research. PANDORA scientists began by zapping monkeys to study the biological effects of highly concentrated microwave frequencies.[38] Similar studies were conducted at the Veterans' Administration Hospital in Kansas City, the University of Rochester, Brooks Air Force Base in Texas, Johns Hopkins, MIT, the Mitre Corporation, the University of Pennsylvania, and scores of other domestic and foreign research laboratories.

CIA researchers, meanwhile, explored other bands on the EM spectrum. The ubiquitous Dr. Delgado blasted the amygdala and hippocampus of four of his patients with radio waves. He reported that they experienced sundry emotions, sensations, and "colored visions."[39] Scientists at the National Institutes of Health duplicated Rubenstein's medieval telemetry lab at Allan Memorial.[40] And at UCLA, Dr. Ross Adey (who worked closely with emigre Nazi technicians after WW II) rigged the brains of lab animals to transmit to a radio receiver, which shot signals back to a device that sparked any behavior desired by the researcher.[41]

Such gadgets have turned up in startling places.

In *The Controllers,* mind control researcher Martin Cannon argues that the brain transmitters and "stimoceivers" of the 1960s were "similar to those now viewed in (UFO) abductee MRI scans." The press ceased coverage of brain telemetry experiments in the mid-seventies. But

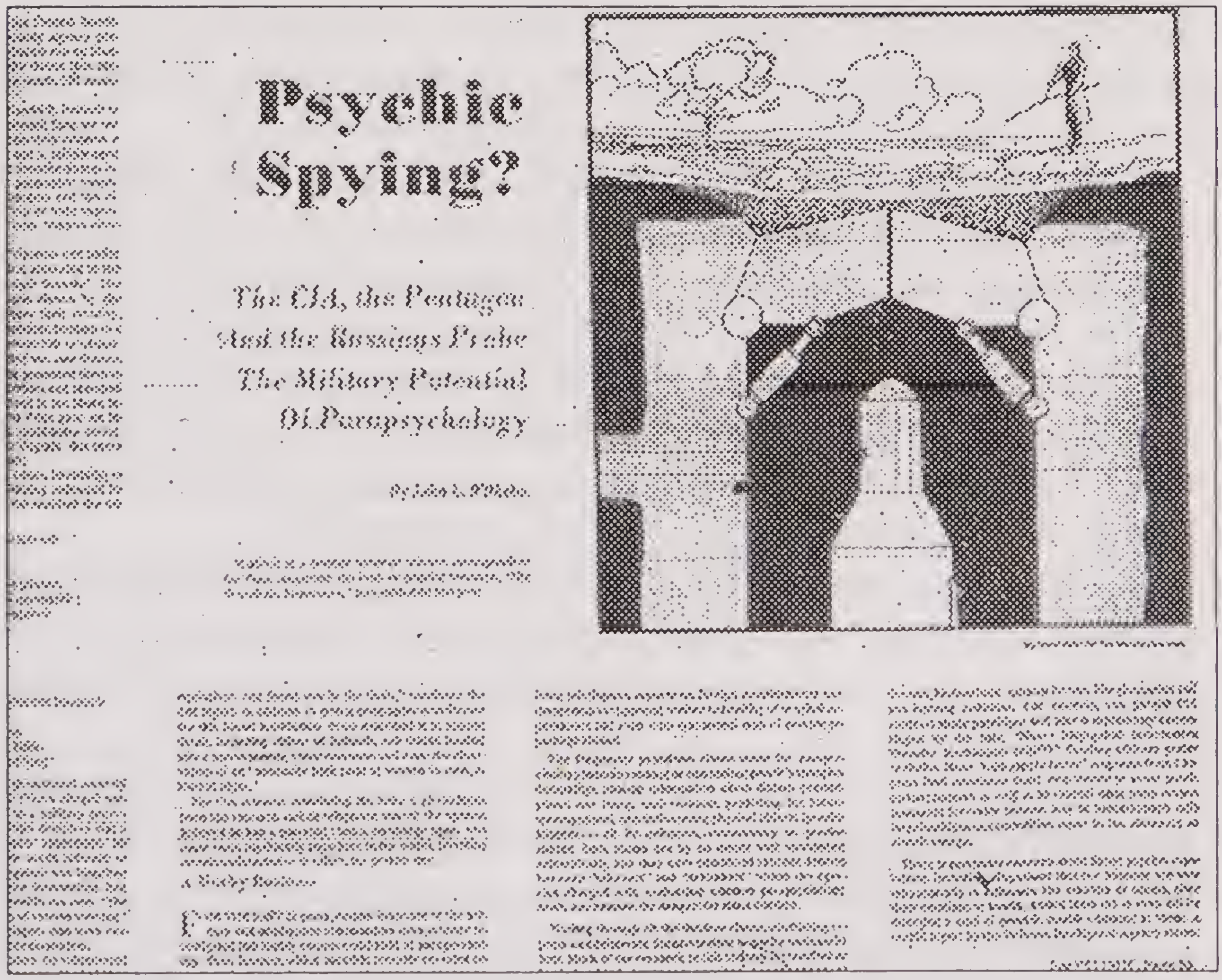

Psychic Spying?

The CIA, the Pentagon
And the Russians Probe
The Military Potential
Of Parapsychology

Washington Post story for August 7, 1977 explained how the CIA beamed signals to Stanford University at the very time researchers there conducted remote viewing experiments. Were images beamed to the heads of the percipients?

Cannon's study of abduction accounts led him to conclude that effects of brain stimulation "can now be elicited with microwaves and other forms of electromagnetic radiation, with and without electrodes."[42]

In the scientific underground the development of microwave weapons suffered inevitable eruptions, making the front pages. Retaliation for the Moscow Signal is the probable background of one flat-toned *LA Times* news brief on England's EM "death ray":

> The official Soviet newspaper Izvestia said that high-frequency radio waves used to power British eavesdropping devices may have killed two Soviet citizens in London. In an article headlined "Rays Bring Death," the newspaper said microwave radiation was used to control sophisticated listening devices implanted in the walls of the diplomatic compound in London.... A senior British Foreign Office official denied any government connection with the deaths.[43]

The U.S. conceived its own electromagnetic "death ray" in 1965. The patent, according to officials of McFarlane, an independent R&D firm, was stolen from them by NASA. The theft was reported in hearings before the House Subcommittee on DoD appropriations, chaired by Rep. George Mahon of Texas. The invention, a "Modulated Electron-Gun X-Ray Nuclear Booster," could be adapted to "communications, remote control and guidance systems, electromagnetic radiation telemetering and death ray applications," according to company literature.

McFarlane submitted the prototype to NASA in 1964, along with detailed plans, circuit drawings and technical data. But NASA's Inventions and Contributions Board dismissed the device as "of no significant value in our aeronautical and space program." The Booster was rejected. A year later NASA proposed to Congress the development of MIROS, a point-to-point orbital "communications system" (any offensive military intention went unspoken), based on principles conceived by McFarlane with acknowledged "death ray" applications."[44]

"Why," a company official asked the subcommittee, "does NASA appear before congressional committees to ask for funds for these very same developments, which they have told us are of no value? Why the double standard?"[45]

Electronic warfare was the invisible axis of the Cold War. The McFarlane design anticipated Star Wars by twenty years, but even then the subject of EM killer satellites was never publicly raised.

The militarization of psychotronics branched into every conceivable direction. Systems Consultants, Inc., the federal proprietary, was founded in 1966 with branch offices in Virginia and "a permanent, professional staff of 250 concentrated on problem solving in the areas of intelligence, electronic warfare, sensor technology and applications."[46] The aforementioned Mankind Research Unlimited is a spin-off of Systems Consultants. MRU advertises that "biological effects" can be "modified by action of energies, or biological force fields." More to the point, MRU maintains that the Soviet Union has "more than twenty centers for the study of biocommunications"—or ESP and related technology "with an annual budget estimated to be over 12 million rubles ($13 million) for 1967." The U.S., an MRU spokesman lamented in a company brochure, lagged far behind. "Mankind Research hopes to counter and reverse this trend so that the full fruits and benefits derived from this research are also made available to the United States."[47]

MRU's primary interests (and so the CIA's) were an open book: "Biocybernetics," "Psycho-Technology Research" and "Behavioral Neuropsychiatry," among other mind-dominating military and intelligence systems.

Vietnam burned in the political background. Students marched. The Nixon camp was poised to assume power and strategic political murders assured they would. The mind control netherworld erupted yet again with the assassination of Robert Kennedy in Los Angeles on June 5, 1968.

"I'll never forget his eyes," Western Union operator Mary Grohs said of Sirhan Sirhan, whom she met an hour before the shooting at the Ambassador Hotel. Others also noticed his eyes. "Dark brown and peaceful," said George Plimpton, one of six men required to wrestle Sirhan into submission as Kennedy lay dying.[48] Sirhan, in the opinion of many prominent researchers, was a hypno-patsy.

"Sirhan's trial was, and will be remembered, as the psychiatric blunder of the century," argues Dr. Eduard Simson-Kallas, senior psychologist of the California prison system when he examined Sirhan.[49] In his March 9, 1973 affidavit, Simson-Kallas reported that he was "appalled at the conduct of mental health professionals involved in this case." He agreed to read the transcripts at Sirhan's request, concluding that psychological findings submitted to the court were "strongly in conflict with the trial's main witnesses." At no point in the evidence did he find that Sirhan was a "paranoid schizophrenic" or "psychotic," as several government psychologists testified. One, Dr. Diamond, has diagnosed Sirhan as a sufferer of "dementia praecox." But if this were true, Simson-Kallas wrote, "Sirhan would have to be incurably insane. That is what the label means. Sirhan was not incurably insane,' or even 'insane.'"

"Whatever strange behavior I showed in court," Sirhan told him, "was the result of my outrage over Dr. Diamond's and other doctor's testimony. They were saying many things about me that were grossly untrue, nor did I give them permission to testify in my behalf in court."

Furthermore, Simson-Kallas insists that "Dr. Diamond was wrong in testifying that the evidence for psychosis was obtained when Sirhan was under hypnosis. The fact is, paranoid schizophrenics are almost impossible to hypnotize." Sirhan dropped into a trance easily. "Psychotics in general are among the poorest subjects for hypnosis. They cannot concentrate, they do not follow instructions and basically do not trust." Sirhan had no such aversion to hypnosis. On the contrary, he once made a trance disk and practiced self-hypnosis as a distraction from Death Row malaise. This required "considerable self-control, which no psychotic has," Simson-Kallas says. "That Sirhan was easy to hypnotize... proves he was not a paranoid schizophrenic."[50]

Sirhan wasn't demented; he was controlled. His inability to recall the murder is either the aftermath of post-hypnotic suggestion or a synapse-deadening radio blast ("Electronic Dissolution of Memory," or EDOM, a CIA technique exposed by Lincoln Lawrence). There are other indications of hynotic—possibly radio-hypnotic—control of Sirhan:

- Thane Eugene Cesar, a "security guard," is widely considered to be the designated assassin. Like all participants in the murders of John and Robert Kennedy, Cesar was politically hard-right. He told Ted Charach, co-producer of *The Second Gun,* an assassination documentary, that he'd been to "American-Nazi conclaves." Cesar held down a fuzzily-defined job at Lockheed, a company on intimate terms with the CIA, and a PANDORA contractor. Jim Yoder, a retired Lockheed engineer, told former FBI agent William Turner that Cesar worked floating assignments in an "off-limits" area operated by the CIA.[51] (Lockheed was also on cozy terms with Richard Nixon's political circle, particularly William Rogers, former secretary of state, who in 1975 urged Henry Kissinger to purge the names of Lockheed agents from a Justice Department probe of bribery allegations.[52])

Sirhan under hypnosis: "PRACTICE, PRACTICE, PRACTICE..." "Practice what?" asked Dr. Diamond. "MIND CONTROL, MIND CONTROL, MIND CONTROL, MIND CONTROL..."[53] The repetition recalls Dr. Cameron's "psychic driving."

- Charles McQuiston, a former Army intelligence officer, applied a technique called Psychological Stress Evaluation to tape recordings of Sirhan. McQuiston concluded that "Sirhan was under some kind of hypnotic influence... kept repeating certain phrases." Again, psychic driving, a pet CIA technique, enters Sirhan's mental profile. "I believe Sirhan was brainwashed under hypnosis by the constant repetition of words like, 'You are nobody, you're nothing, the American dream is gone.'"[54] This is precisely the sort of ego-trashing epistle used in Cameron's classified experiments at Allan Memorial's Telemetry Lab.[55] When Sirhan believed it, McQuiston says, "someone implanted an idea, kill RFK, and under hypnosis the brainwashed Sirhan accepted it." Similar messages have long been radioed to auditory receivers buried in the cochlea or brains of the CIA's experimental subjects.

- Assassination researchers accuse William Bryan, a Los Angeles hypnotist, of programming Sirhan. Bryan was a brainwashing specialist for the Air Force in Korea, and thereafter an adviser to the CIA's mind control program. In L.A. he ran the American Institute of Hypnosis, a therapeutic clinic.[56]

- Sirhan disappeared for three months in 1967. A neighbor of Sirhan's family told the FBI that his mother was "extremely worried" and "she did not know his whereabouts for some time." When Sirhan returned home, he displayed a fascination with the occult. His co-enthusiast was Walter Thomas Rathke, described by a friend as "far-right politically."[57] Rathke trained Sirhan in self-hypnosis with mirrors and candles. In his self-induced trances, psychic driving messages (according to McQuiston) programmed him to empty his revolver on cue. In all, twelve shots were fired.

The only gap in the mind control picture is this: Sirhan's trances were self-induced. Alone in the dark with his mirrors and candles, it's unlikely he provided the "messages" himself. Their source has yet to be determined. Reports by victims of CIA auditory-frequency experiments date them to the mid-sixties, and may explain Sirhan's agitated, robotic speech patterns.

Breaking the ESP Barrier

The "voices" were conceived in a lightning bolt. In 1956 two geophysicists, Holzer and Deal, noticed that naturally-occurring electromagnetic signals in the auditory range were tossed off by thunderstorms.[58] With little variation, most of the EM bursts were metered at 25 to 130 cycles/sec., with a very low attenuation rate. In other words, lightning discharges could be picked up anywhere in the world as "magnetic noise" on the ELF radio dial.

Two years on, Dr. Allan Frey, a biophysicist at General Electric's Advanced Electronics Center, Cornell University (and a contractor for the Office of Naval Research), published a "technical note" in Aerospace Medicine reporting that the auditory system responds "to electromagnetic energy in at least a portion of the radio frequency (RF) spectrum. Further, this response is instantaneous and occurs at low power densities… well below that necessary for biological damage."[59] Frey's subjects "heard" buzzes and knocks when exposed to low frequency radio emissions. In one experiment a radio beam swept over a subject, and with each sweep he "heard the radio frequency (RF) sound for a few seconds and reported it." When Frey modulated power densities, he discovered that even clinically deaf subjects perceived RF sounds. He played with transmitter settings, and was shocked to find that radio beams "can induce the perception of severe buffeting of the head," or prick the skin like needles.[60]

It seems that the brain is a powerful receiver. Frey: "The human auditory system and a table radio may be one order of magnitude apart in sensitivity to RF energy."[61] The area of the brain most sensitive to radio energy was just above the temporal lobe. The vocabulary of RF noises was expanded by modulating the pulse (with "no information placed in the signal"), perceived by the subject as originating from within or slightly behind the head.

Among practical applications of auditory stimulation, Frey proposed "stimulating the nervous system without the damage caused by electrodes."[62]

It was a significant discovery—but met with a wall of yawns from the status-quo scientific community. To his horror, he became the butt of jokes in letters to peer review journals. But PANDORA's technocrats supported his experiments and took the obvious military applications very seriously. Frey's work with microwaves had obvious uses in covert operations. In one experiment, for instance, he synchronized pulsed microwaves with the myocardia rhythm of a frog. Its heart stopped. He microwaved cats and found that stimulation of the hypothalamus had a powerful effect on emotions.[63]

Frey was reluctant to experiment on humans for ethical reasons. But PANDORA was manned by a full complement of Nazi Paperclip imports, and they did not balk at irradiating human subjects.

One of the German scientists employed by the government was Dr. Dietrich Beischer, who exposed some 7,000 Naval crewmen to dangerous levels of microwave energy at the Naval Aerospace Research Laboratory in Pensacola, Florida. Data on exposure limits, he declared at a symposium in Dahlgren, Virginia in 1973, could be "obtained in no other way," given the "exquisitely complex and dynamic nature of the human organism."[64]

Alas, Dr. Beischer, like scores of other scientists engaged in the experiments, died or disappeared in 1977. Among his last personal contacts was Nobel laureate, ESP researcher and fellow PANDORAN Robert O. Becker:

> Just before the meeting, I got a call from him. With no preamble or explanation, he blurted out: "I'm at a pay phone. I can't talk long. They are watching me. I can't come to the meeting or ever communicate with you again. I'm sorry. You've been a good friend. Goodbye." Soon afterward I called his office at Pensacola

> and was told, "I'm sorry, there is no one here by that name," just as in the movies. A guy who had done important research there for decades just disappeared.[65]

The Promethean architects of Psychocivilization guarded the emerging technology jealously. "They" were more likely to be the CIA than the KGB.

An "official" halt to PANDORA's excesses was called in 1970, but the research had turned a historic corner and classified RF mind control testing quickly became a military armed drugs, ECT, torture, brain surgery or most other forms of behavior modification. The CIA and Pentagon concentrated their efforts on electromagnetism. Why the fuss?

A computerized form of telepathy.

"Biocommunication," the dream of Richard Helms, was tested on humans within a few years of his memo to the Warren Commission. The CIA had achieved direct communication between brain and computer by the late sixties, and had demonstrated in the laboratory that computer-assisted automatic learning was possible by pin-pointing neuron clusters in the brain with radio signals.[66] Microwaves easily penetrated the head's protective shielding of bone and membrane. Miniaturization of the receiver linked the mind to a remote computer. Brain waves were unscrambled and deciphered, recorded, beamed to another person—two-way mental communication.[67]

In *Technospies* (1978), author Ford Rowan foresaw the possibilities:

> Computers that can communicate with the brain may help people in all sorts of intellectual tasks. A tiny terminal implanted in a person's brain would give him access to giant computer banks, for instance, and with the miniaturization of computers, an actual computer could be implanted in the brain. From the individual's viewpoint it would become a part of his brain, extending his knowledge and memory immensely.[68]

The mind-reading venture was the culmination of a goal fixed as early as 1951 to Project ARTICHOKE, the CIA's development of behavior control techniques employing drugs, hypnosis, electroshock and extrasensory perception.[69]

Robert Naeslund, by his own account a subject of the experiments, claims to have been implanted unaware while undergoing surgery in 1967. He describes the "brain transmitter" in his head (with X-ray verification) as a device that floods the brain with radio energy, "picks up the sensory functions of the brain... Vision, thoughts, images, hearing, etc. are completely obvious to the person who has the receiver connected to his head." A Stockholm physician consulted by Naeslund told him: "young children were also used for these experiments in order to evaluate thought activity and reactions in children."[70]

The development of remote mind-reading machines in secret academic enclaves picked up with ARPA backing in the early 1970s. Scientists mapped the brain, gigahertzed the nervous system and gauged biohazards at MIT, NYU and UCLA. NASA launched its program. A story on the ARPA brain control effort appeared, not in the corporate press, but the *National Enquirer* for June 22, 1976. The Pentagon did not exactly deny the story. Robert L. Gilliat, an assistant general counsel for the Department of Defense, replied meekly: "The so-called 'brain-wave' machine… is not capable of reading brain waves of *anyone other than a willing participant* in the laboratory efforts to develop that particular device."[71] Presumably, the brain of an unwilling subject was impenetrable to microwaves.

In 1972 an ARPA report to Congress announced, after Helms, that "the long-sought goal (is) direct and intimate coupling between man and the computer." Four years later ARPA reported that thought-wave research had gone beyond communication to enhance memory by downloading information into the brain. Based on these capabilities, the post-PANDORA team set out to upgrade the interpretation of neural signals, and broaden the program to invent realistic tasks of "military significance."[72]

This side of the electronic battlefield, the experiments contributed to medicine the "transmitter-reinforcer," a device that transmits data on a patient's health. Ford:

> The transmitter-reinforcer utilizes space age technology to send accurate readings on the patient's condition to a computer, which digests the data. The computer can monitor many patients simultaneously. If a patient needs a dose of aversion treatment, the computer acts as controller, delivering a tone signal or shock.

The original, clandestine purpose of the "reinforcer" was not lost on authoritarian types in the psychiatric wings. Rowan:

> One study suggested that radio transmitter receivers should be implanted into the brains of patients to broadcast information to a computer which would monitor and control the patients' behavior.[73]

Other "constructive" uses of CIA/PANDORA telemetric brain implants were championed by criminologists. In 1972, Drs. Barton Ingraham and Gerald Smith advocated the implantation of brain transmitters to monitor and manipulate the minds of probationers. "The technique of telemetric control of human beings offers the possibility of regulating behavior with precision on a subconscious level," the authors enthused in a 1972 *Issues in Criminology* article.[74]

Surveillance expert Joseph Meyer of the DoD carried the idea a step further, proposing that electromagnetic mind control devices "surround the criminal with a kind of externalized conscience, an electronic substitute for social conditioning, group pressure and inner motivation." The ideal subject for testing the implants was "the poor and uneducated urban dweller (who) is fundamentally unnecessary to the economy," Meyer said.

Military doctors with hard-right political views were naturally drawn to electronic mind control as the final solution to the "useless eaters" quandary. One Air Force doctor went so far as to recommend, in the *New England Journal of Medicine,* that if a criminal's brain waves did not test "normal" after five years, he should be put to death.[75]

Dr. Louis Jolyon West, formerly a CIA brainwashing specialist and LSD experimenter, proposed establishing a computerized system employing space technology to monitor and control the violence-prone.[76] At UCLA's Neuropsychiatric Institute, under West's direction, a biofeedback device was developed to control sexual deviants that fits the penis. Sexual arousal set off an audible signal that became louder as the device expanded. At the same time, heart beat rate and muscular tension were monitored by telemetric computer.[77] This sort of Orwellian thinking led opponents of West to fear the prospect that computer data on young children could be used as justification for implanting them for state control.[78]

The nagging ethical considerations prompted a report on future applications and possible abuses. Scientists at Lockheed and Stanford Research Institute prepared the report, which postulated the rise of "a technocratic elite" with dominion over intelligence and identification systems to monitor whole countries. Wars would be waged by robots.

Technological advances anticipated by the authors included computer-operated artificial organs, biocybernetic devices to provide "social conversation, entertainment, companionship and even physical gratification," and a "machine-animal symbiant," an animal or human monitor that transmits its perceptions to a central authority. Partially funded by the National Science Foundation, the report recommended the formation of an oversight panel of artificial intelligence specialists to uphold ethical standards.[79]

"Voices" in the Attic

The moral squalor of the government's RF mind control program cried out for oversight, as one case history from the *Los Angeles Herald Examiner* (for March 21, 1979) makes clear:

A SUIT OVER BRAIN SURGERY—
MAN HALLUCINATES, SAY MICROWAVES ARE MURDERING HIM

The subject was Leonard Kille, a talented electronics engineer. Kille was the holder of patents for inventions willed to MIT when his brain was disabled by CIA psychiatrists Vernon Mark of Boston City Hospital and UCLA's Frank Ervin.

Kille was a co-inventor of the Land camera, named for Edwin Land of the Polaroid Corporation, an old boy of the CIA's mind control program. It was Land, in fact, who founded the Scientific Engineering Institute on behalf of the CIA.[81] (The SEI appeared earlier in this account hosting a course on demonology and witchcraft at the University of South Carolina, and planting electrodes in the brains of human subjects.) Land's CIA clique of "behaviorists" apparently drew their moral inspiration from the Death's Head Order of the Waffen SS. At South Vietnam's Bien Hoa Hospital, for example, an SEI team team buried electrodes in the skulls of Vietcong POWs and attempted to spur them into violence by remote control. Upon completion of the experiments, the POWs were shot and cremated by a company of "America's best," the Green Berets.[82]

Kille's story is no less lurid. In 1966 he suspected that his wife was having an affair. She denied it. He didn't believe her and flew into rages. A psychiatrist interpreted his anger as a "personality pattern disturbance," and referred him to Mark and Ervin for neurological tests. They diagnosed him a mild psychomotor epileptic, and his jealousy was obviously "paranoia." (As it happens, his wife *was* carrying on an affair with a boarder.) His psychiatrists described Kille as "uncontrolled," "dangerous." (In fact, Kille's most violent outburst consisted of throwing tin cans at his wife—he missed her.) Kille was hospitalized and pressured into brain surgery. He refused at first, but his wife threatened divorce if he didn't submit to his psychiatrists. The cruel irony was that she divorced him after the surgery anyway to marry her paramour.

In the operating room, four electrical strands running the length of his brain were implanted. Each strand was studded with 20 or so electrodes. It was only *after* surgery that Kille was asked to sign his consent with the strands in place, already zinging his brain.[83]

Internal EEG activity was recorded. The voltage of the stimoceivers was boosted as part of Kille's "treatment."[84]

Dr. Peter Breggin of the Center to Study Psychiatry, a rare ombudsman of psychiatric abuses, investigated the case and found despite the glowing reports of Mark and Ervin that the patient was "totally disabled, chronically hospitalized, and subject to nightmarish terrors that he will be caught and operated on again at the Massachusetts General Hospital."[85]

In 1971 an attendant found him with a wastebasket on his head to "stop the microwaves." A sympathetic doctor at Boston's VA hospital, where he was transferred, ordered for him "a large sheet of aluminum foil so he may fashion a protective helmet for himself. Good luck." The VA doctors were not informed that Kille had been fitted with the electrode strands, and wrote him off as a delusional paranoiac.

"The Mass General and labs… (are) killing all the useful cells in my brain," he confided in a note to a VA doctor when the electrodes burned lesions into his amygdala, another "treatment." It left him permanently paralyzed from the waist down.

Sweet and Ervin controlled his moods with electronic stimulation. They turned him up and turned him down, he said. The "haunting fear" left by Kille's ordeal, a psychiatrist wrote in the *New England Journal of Medicine,* is that "men may be become slaves, perhaps, to an authoritarian state."[86]

A significant step in this direction was taken at Walter Reed Army Hospital of Research in 1973 by Dr. Joseph Sharp. Inside an isolation chamber, Sharp heard words beamed at him in a pulsed-microwave audiogram. (An audiogram is a computerized analog of the spoken voice.) ARPA's Robert O. Becker foresaw in the experiment "obvious applications in covert operations." He imagined a barrage of "voices" driving an enemy insane, and post-hypnotic suggestions radioed to a programmed assassin.

Sure enough, hybrid EMR-hypnosis beams bearing "voices" were tested a year later by Dr. J.F. Shapitz, who proposed: "In this investigation it will be shown that the spoken word of the hypnotist may also be conveyed by modulated electromagnetic energy directly into the subconscious parts of the human brain"—another dream of Richard Helms was about to pass. The "voices," Schapitz wrote, would program the subconscious mind "without employing any technical devices for receiving or transcoding the messages and without the person exposed to such influence having a chance to control the information input."[87]

The Soviets were experimenting along the same lines. Russia's EM mind control state-of-the-art surfaced at the Conference on Psychotronic Research in 1973. Topics on the agenda of the meeting, held in Prague, included:

- Erasure of the Subconscious Mind
- Development of Extrasensory Perception
- The Induction of Paranormal Effects in Dreams
- The Mechanical Equivalent of Neuropsychic Energy
- The Psi Gene

And so on.[88]

The American mind control initiative was every bit as exotic. In Los Altos Hills, California, scientists drawing from the CIA's "black" budget cash cow applied acoustical telemetry in the development of transmitters that create scallops of infra-sound waves in the head, wiping clean all information stored by the brain cells.[89] Brain researcher Wilder Penfield demonstrated that electrical stimulation kicked up lost memories with perfect recall.[90]

True to the traditional interests of The Firm, drugs were sought to make experimental subjects more susceptible to hypno-programming. The guinea-pig was drugged, bathed with pulsed-microwave thought transmissions (the "Voice of God," humanoids from Alpha Centauri, a dead relative, any of the cover stories concocted by post-PANDORA researchers and operatives) and words commenced in the auditory tract.[91]

The "voices" descended on Marti Koskii in the mid-1970s. A welder by trade and a resident of Edmonton, Canada, he charges the CIA, Canadian police and Litton Moffat with "telepathic terrorism":

> First I was prepared-sensitized for microwave telepathy. In my case the "talk" was initially the next-door neighbors.... This went on for approximately four years, twenty hours a week. Also, after this they were capable of some kind of mind reading and discovered the key to the function of various control centres of the body. Now they were able to more or less control my sleep, feelings, sense of taste (saltiness, acidity of food), sexual functions (erection, ejaculation), sense of smell, urination, bowel movement and metabolism.[92]

Koskii dismissed the "voices" visiting him a few hours a day as a "harmless schizophrenia." Not exactly. After the four-year preliminary period, his life was gradually ruined. Carbon dioxide caused him to foam at the mouth, making his work impossible. The "voices" hazed him every waking minute. He was allowed one hour of sleep a day. On one occasion, his heart beat stepped up "faster and stronger till I had a heart attack and had to be hospitalized." Twice, nerves in his lower bodily strata were deadened and his bladder ruptured. He was plagued by impotence and partial loss of memory.

Koskii hasn't a clue why he was chosen, but the motive may be political. "In an elaborate and excruciating experiment that involved hypnosis and supporting special effects," he recalls, "I was presented with a program of indoctrination to convince me criticism of the American society was a 'cancer' and a threat to us all. I was told I was 'unclean' and 'contaminated' with this 'cancer.'"

Experimenting overseas narrowed the odds of exposure. Robert Naeslund describes two independent cases that surfaced in Sweden:

> Rolf Sundwall was anesthetized while in police custody around 1974. Subsequently a strong radio signal entered his body day and night. After about one year, he was admitted to a mental asylum. Circumstances destroyed his life and he died in a fire in his home in 1978.
>
> The insertion of a brain transmitter in Gote Josefsson's head

> was also performed while in police custody in 1975. The pain caused by the frequencies entering Josefsson's head were so strong that he was admitted to Ulleraker Mental Asylum... The court was provided with information regarding the criminal utilization by the police of brain transmitters in Josefsson's case, but refused to have him properly medically examined.[93]

The emphasis on pulsed microwaves stemmed from a 1972 Army study, supposedly concerning Soviet experimentation. Titled *Controlled Offensive Behavior, USSR,* the report mainly concerned itself with the targeting of individuals, not groups, and foreshadowed the government's microwave experiments on heedless human subjects, often political activists, during the Reagan/Bush administrations. The aim of developing microwave anti-personnel weapons and "mind altering techniques," according to the study, was "the total submission of one's will to some outside force."[94]

Pointing fingers at the Soviets is Washington's way of justifying domestic human rights violations. Electromagnetically "controlled offensive behavior" has lurked behind a long line of murders and suicides throughout the western hemisphere.

Sometimes at the doorstep of the intelligence establishment. On February 17, 1989, the *Washington Post* reported:

BANK KILLER TORMENTED BY "VOICES"

concerning Emmanuel Tsegaye, an Ethopian-born bank teller in Bethesda, Maryland. The 33 year-old Tsegaye was the proverbial "disgruntled employee," depressed, suicidal, "tormented by voices that only he could hear." He murdered three coworkers at Chevy Chase Federal Savings, yet Tsegaye, the *Post* noted, "who attempted suicide numerous times and often spoke of hearing disembodied voices, rarely was violent to others."[95] He'd been institutionalized for depression several times, and received treatment at St. Elizabeth's Hospital, long a haunt of CIA psychiatry.

"I used to hear... voices both from space and as... exact repeated words" (a fair description of psychic driving), he wrote in a letter to the judge who committed him in 1984. "I used to hear a person speaking from (the) distance about the things I was thinking." After one suicide attempt, he wrote, "I was depressed, mentally and physically weak... from the voices I used to hear and inadequate sleeps." The "voices" were so real to Tsegaye that he tried several times to tape record them "from the air."

Evidence of gigahertz mind control often passes unnoticed in the background of public spectacles like the Tsegaye carnage. Political and financial conspiracies are just as often at play. The unfortunate Rex Niles, a former Southern California electronics salesman, learned the hard way. Niles was a federal informant in a kickback ring of Pentagon contractors. But before he could produce testimony in court, he fell prey to a malicious MASER attack.[96]

To a *Los Angeles Times* reporter, he complained that noises were keeping him awake at night:

> "You know, in the middle of the night, at 2 in the morning, when they wouldn't allow me to sleep, when they were aggravating my conscious as well as my subconscious mind, I would hear what sounded like large groups of people down on the street—yelling, talking, and they would laugh and throw something that sounded like a bottle breaking on the street. "So I would go to the window, or one time I was dressed because I couldn't sleep, so I went down, and the street was absolutely empty.

Federal "marshals," he said, harassed him with microwave weapons and deprived him of rest to make him appear deranged. His sister testified that helicopters often circled her home, and 250 watts of atmospheric microwaves in the Niles home were gauged by an engineer.

A lifelong friend of Niles insists that her computer "went haywire" when Niles approached it. For the *Times* photographer, he held up an aluminum foil hat—*pierced through with small holes:* "proof that the government is bombarding him with microwaves in an attempt to kill him."

The Microwave Mafia Murders

A particularly nasty flare-up of the mind control underground was the 1978 "disappearance" of Andrija Puharich, owner of the Intelectron Corp., a medical technology firm, and a Merry Prankster on the techno-parapsychological fringe of the CIA.

Puharich was a veteran of MKULTRA. According to journalist Steven Levy:

> The details of his assignment are clouded in a murkiness he has come to wear like some exquisite garment. In any case, his activities have raised the perception among many that under the auspices of the U.S. government, Puharich had been involved in actual experiments in parapsychology and psychedelic drugs. Those with a conspiratorial bent have often assumed Puharich has dark intelligence connections.[96]

He was conversant in psychoactive weapons, and his "pet subjects" were mind control and the telepathic effects of extra low frequency (ELF) waves. Alas, he had breached the CIA's Cone of Silence by speaking openly of "weapons systems... that we have no defense against," as Ira Einhorn, a former cohort, phrased it. "That would be the last thing the CIA—or anyone in the military establishment—would even want us to breathe about." Shortly before Puharich vanished, his Ossining home was torched and destroyed. He told Einhorn that the CIA was responsible.[97]

The harassment of Puharich was reenacted wholesale with the weird deaths of 22 British scientists in the 1980s, otherwise known as the "Star Wars Killings." SDI really had little to do with the homicides. Star Wars, after all, was a cover story for the R&D of electromagnetic weapons. The deception is a premise of *The Zapping of America,* by Paul Brodeur, who, after puzzling over technical and strategic shortcomings of space-based defense, concludes that the program was (is?) "little more than an elaborate smokescreen designed to hide the fact that the United States is developing a directed-energy weapon that uses a high-power microwave pulse."[98]

While the public was permitted an occasional glimpse at Brilliant Pebbles on the evening news, the Pentagon and CIA pursued a sprawling, obscure initiative of its own.

Seven of the murdered scientists worked for Marconi, a subsidiary of General Electric—a fount of EMR brain control technology and microwave radiation projects[99]—and the largest military electronics contractor in the UK.[100]

Two of the deaths can be interpreted as grim warnings to others in the telemetric mind control netherworld. John Ferry, a Marconi executive, was ruled to have committed "suicide" by chewing on live wires. The corpse of Alistair Beckham, a software designer, was found coiled in bare wires—a message to others engaged in EM research and development?

One British engineer has been directly linked to the program. This was Frank Jennings of Plessey Defense Systems, dead of a heart attack.

The American Sons of ARTICHOKE

Until recently, as Naval Captain Paul Taylor wrote in a 1976 essay, "The Electromagnetic Spectrum in Low-Intensity Conflict," most scientists assumed that "a microwave is a microwave."[103] Captain Taylor's survey of covert warfare applications discussed radio frequencies "disruptive to purposeful behavior," and the brain as "an electrically mediated organ." A "speed-of-light weapons effect" could be achieved, he said, with "the passage of approximately 100 milliamperes through the myocardium (leading) to cardiac standstill and death." EM devices with stun or kill settings could sweep across entire armies (or cities).[104] The genocidal "death ray" had arrived.

The Reagan administration used it as a hidden bargaining chip in arms negotiations with the Soviets.[105] But the technology was tested at home on private citizens.

The entire city of Eugene, Oregon was doused in microwave radiation in March, 1978. The *Oregon Journal* reported:

> **MYSTERIOUS RADIO SIGNALS**
> **CAUSING CONCERN IN OREGON**

The signals were recorded throughout the state. Naturally, the federal government was called in "to help solve the problem." [106] One Oregonian who could do without the government's "help" was Marshall Parrott, chief of the state Health Division's radiation control section. Parrott posited that the cause of the microwave pulses "could be any thing from sunspots to our own federal government."[106] Paul Brodeur reports that TRW has proposed constructing a Naval communications system along an existing 850-mile power line with its terminus in Oregon. He attributes the microwave assault on Eugene to the interplay of Naval ELF beams and Soviet jamming.[107] Ranking government specialists blamed the Soviets, but even the FCC has concluded that the signal came from a Navy transmitter in California. Microwaves, the FCC report concluded, were the likely cause of several sudden illnesses among faculty researchers at an Oregon State University laboratory.[108]

Oregonians complained of headaches, fatigue, inability to sleep, reddening of the skin, anxiety, "clicks" in the head and a "buzz" harmonizing with a high-pitched wail.

Andrew Michrowski, a concerned Canadian researcher, wrote to Prime Minister Pierre Trudeau on September 19, 1978, citing a Pacific Northwest Center for Non-Ionizing Radiation study that found the "Soviet" signals *"psychoactive"* and *"very strongly suggestive of achieving the objective of brain control."* An EEG examination of a Eugene resident recorded 6 Hz brainwaves, indicating "irritability." The radiation, Michrowski observed, was "dangerous in the... shadow of planetary-scale brain control that is growing into a reality with each passing week."[109]

A similar ELF experiment raised the mental morbidity rate of Timmons, Ontario.[110]

The callously haphazard testing of EMR "non-lethal" effects around the world inspired researcher Harlan E. Girard, at a 1991 NATO conference, to report that a principal feature of the weapons system "is its ability to produce auditory effects." It is also capable of producing visual hallucinations, described to Girard "by a German artist, on whom this equipment is being tested involuntarily, as having the quality of 35mm slides." The equipment, he said, "can be used to block all sensation." Girard considers long-range mind control "truly *satanic*" in its moral implications. "Considering how recklessly, wantonly and indiscriminately America's new weapons have been used," he said, "physicians attending the dead and dying should consider the patient's own political views and associations before making a diagnosis or conducting an autopsy.[111]

An especially brutal turn in federal mind control experimentation involves children. A Southern California child therapist (requesting anonymity) tells of treating a young patient who'd undergone an obscure brain operation at the aforementioned UCLA Neuropsychiatric Institute at the age of three. The therapist insists that the operation explains his present "psychosis."[112]

Another therapist—specializing in ritual abuse trauma—offered in a phone conversation that she'd ordered X-rays of a 3 year-old patient who, she suspected, had been implanted. An attending physician confirmed that there was a tiny electrical device fitted to the child's brain.

The fact is that the wave of ritual child abuse allegations that swept the country in the 1980s cloaked federal psychotronic and eugenics experiments on young children. As one adult survivor of psychotronic mind control concludes, "covert arms of government… have coined the term 'screen memories' to describe the obfuscational memories impressed by the abusers themselves." The so-called "False Memory Syndrome," he says, "is a scapegoat created by a consortium of federal 'spin doctors' bent on negating the believability and viability of the more than 12,000 unwitting citizens who have been on the receiving end of this technology." The CIA and military establishment "must at all costs disguise their abuse in order to continue experimentation with psychotronics," he argues.

The "false memory" bromide has been popularized largely by organized pedophiles, cultists and hired guns of psychiatry. It has been adopted as the status quo position of the press. But the cover story originated with the CIA's mind control netherworld. "Nazi-inspired scientists," the survivor says, "perform medical tests during the abuse event, such as *implantation of biotelemetric trackinq devices* into nasal cavities and ear canals."

The brain transmitters can be tracked by Global Positioning System satellites. The subject therefore cannot hope to escape the mind control network.[113]

Screen memories of abuse, created by hypnotic or psychotronic visualization, a "novelty effect," are offered by UFO researcher Martin Cannon as a probable explanation for the weirdness surrounding most "alien" abductions. Again the government, shielded by an unbelievable cover story, escapes detection. EM technology (and testing on humans) remains classified.

No doubt, UFOs exist and have traumatized thousands of "contactees" —the military has been building them since the 1940s. To be sure, *U.S.*

News & World Report (April 7, 1950) declaimed:

FLYING SAUCERS—THE REAL STORY
U.S. BUILT FIRST ONE IN 1942
—JET-PROPELLED DISKS CAN OUTFLY OTHER PLANES—

The "sky disks" could already "hover aloft, spurt ahead at tremendous speed, outmaneuver conventional craft," the article reported. The 1942 prototype was elliptical. It had a maximum speed of 400–500 miles an hour, and lifted from the ground almost vertically.[114]

Imagine what "UFOs" can do fifty years later.

Cannon posits that government saucers account for the countless sightings and abductions reported around the world. Screen memories explain the bug-eyed monsters. "All the powers of the espionage empire and the scientific establishment have entered into an unholy alliance," Cannon says, "psychiatrist and spy… microwave specialists and clandestine operators.[115] And then there are the cults. Between ritual molestation and "alien" abductions, there is this common connection. Cannon:

> Some abductees I have spoken to have been directed to join certain religious/philosophical sects. These cults often bear close examination. The leaders of these groups tend to be "ex" *CIA operatives,* or *Special Forces* veterans. They are often linked through personal relations, even though they espouse widely varying traditions. They often use hypnosis, drugs, or *"mind machines"* in their rituals. Members of these cults have reported periods of missing time during these ceremonies or "study periods."[116]

UFOs are stricly terrestrial, as one UFO abductee recognized. She phoned Julianne McKinney at the Microwave Surveillance Project in Washington to report her abduction, aware that it was government-directed. "Her house is being shot at," McKinney says, "and they are harassing her viciously, the target of massive microwave assault"[117] The abuse of psychoactive technology is escalating, unbeknownst to the American public. Recurrent hypno-programmed stalkers, ritual and "alien" outrages and psychotronic forms of political persecution are on the upswing at the hands of the DIA, CIA, FBI, NSA and other covert branches of government. Hired guns in media, law enforcement and psychiatry protect them by discrediting the victims. In effect, an ambitious but meticulously-concealed, undeclared *war* on American private citizens is in progress—a psywar.

And *anyone* is a potential casualty.

Footnotes

1. Nathaniel C. Nash, "Inner Voices Demanding Blood: Confession Diary in the Killings of 4 Women," *New York Times,* March 13, 1994, p. 12.
2. Pierre Thomas and Stephanie Griffith, "Navy Officer Fatally Shot at Pentagon," *Washington Post,* May 31, 1991, p. A-1. Also, "'Voices' Led to Tragedy for 2 Men," *Washington Post,* June 1, 1991, and "Suspect in Pentagon Killing is Found Unfit to Stand Trial," *Washington Post,* December 14, 1992, p. D-3.
3. Mediaeko Investigative Reporting Group, "Brain Transmitters: What They Are and How They are Used," October 1993, Stockholm, Sweden, p. 4: "Liquid crystals which are injected directly into the bloodstream" fasten to the brain.
4. Lincoln Lawrence, *Were We Controlled?,* University Books, New York Park, N.Y., 1967, p. 29.
5. Vance Packard, *The Hidden Persuaders,* David McKay, New York, 1957, pp. 239-40.
6. John Marks, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate: The CIA and Mind Control,* Times Books, New York, 1979, pp. 202-3.
7. Harvey Weinstein, *A Father, a Son and the CIA,* James Lorimer & Co., Toronto, 1988, pp. 89-92.
8. Dick Russell, *The Man Who Knew Too Much,* Carroll & Graf/Richard Gallen, New York, 1992, p. 679.
9. Gordon Thomas, *Journey Into Madness: The True Story of Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse,* Bantam, New York, 1989, pp. 179-80.
10. Peter H. Breggin, "New Information in the Debate on Psychosurgery," *Congressional Record Extensions of Remarks,* March 30, 1972, pp. 3381 and 3387 fn. Dr. Freeman was also honorary president of the Second International Conference on Psychosurgery in 1970, which drew 100 participants and 41 papers from around the world.
11. Thomas, pp. 179-80.
12. David Remnick, "The Experiments of Dr. D. Ewen Cameron," *Washington Post,* July 28, 1985. Reprinted in the *Congressional Record,* U.S. Government Printing Office, August 1, 1985, p. S1008. Dr. Weinstein told the Post that the experiments left his father "a poor pathetic man with no memory, no life." It was "a nightmare that never ends."
13. Lawrence, p. 52.
14. Harlan E. Girard, "Effects of Gigahertz Radiation on the Human Nervous System: Recent Developments in the Technology of Political Control," a paper presented at the NATO Advanced Research Workshop in Coherent and Emergent Phenomena on Bio-Molecular Systems, University of Arizona, January 15-19, 1991.
15. Marks, pp. 201-02.
16. Julianne McKinney, director of the Electronic Surveillance Project of the Association of National Security Alumni, Silver Springs, Maryland. Telephone interview, April 4, 1994.
17. Thomas, pp. 275-78.
18. Ibid., pp. 275.

19. Donald Freed with Dr. Fred Simon Landis, *Death in Washington: The Murder of Orlando Letelier,* Lawrence Hill, Westport, Connecticut, 1980, p. 90: Former CIA operative William Peter Blatty worked for years beside David Atlee Phillips, who "had been much influenced by the secret dialectic of Blatty's opus *The Exorcist."* Blatty, like Phillips and H.L. Hunt, another writer of popular fiction, "and a generation of spies, (were) obsessed with communism and the Devil."
20. Marks, p. 209.
21. Lawrence, pp. 53-54.
22. Ibid., p. 34.
23. Walter Bowart, *Operation Mind Control,* Dell, New York, 1978, pp. 261-64.
24. Russell, p. 677.
25. Hugh MacDonald, *Appointment in Dallas,* Zebra, New York, pp. 107-08. Quoted in Russell, p. 675.
26. Russell, pp. 675-76.
27. Bowart, pp. 192-93.
28. Burton Hersh, *The Old Boys: The American Elite and the Origins of the CIA,* Scribner's, New York, 1992, p. 160. For the early brainstorming of Richard Helms on the creation of a hypno-assassin, see Thomas, p. 252.
29. Russell, p. 459.
30. Ruby Keeler, "Remote Mind Control Technology," *Full Disclosure #15.* For a partial reprint, see Jim Keith, ed., *Secret and Suppressed,* Feral House, 1993, p. 16.
31. Bowart, p. 264.
32. Ibid., p. 256.
33. A.J. Weberman, "MIND CONTROL: The Story of Mankind Research Unlimited, Inc.," *Covert Action Information Bulletin,* No. 9, June 1980, p. 20. The directive is provided by MRU upon request.
34. Walter Bowart and Richard Sutton, "The Invisible Third World War," undated *Freedom,* p. 7.
35. Paul Brodeur, *The Zapping of America: Microwaves, Their Deadly Risk and the Cover-Up,* Norton, New York, 1977, p. 291.
36. Ibid., p. 60.
37. Susan Schiefelbein, "The Invisible Threat: The Stifled Story of Electric Waves," *Saturday Review,* September 1, 1979, pp. 17-18.
38. Ibid.
39. Jose M.R. Delgado, "Intracerebral Radio Stimulation and Recording in Completely Free Patients," *Psychotechnology,* Robert L. Schweitzgebel and Ralph K. Schweitzgebel, eds., Holt, Rinehart and Winston, New York, 1973, p. 195.
40. Thomas, p. 250.
41. Larry Collins, "Mind Control," *Playboy,* January 1990, p. 204.
42. Martin Cannon, *The Controllers: A New Hypothesis of Alien Abductions: "Preliminary Version."* Manuscript available from Prevailing Winds Research, Santa Barbara, California, 1989. See pp. 17-29 for a discussion of radio frequencies trained on "alien" abductees.
43. News brief, *Los Angeles Times,* June 5, 1989, p. 2.

44. Subcommittee on Department of Defense Appropriations, "Hearings Before a Subcommittee on Appropriations," House of Representatives, Department of Defense Appropriations for 1966: Part 5: "Research, Development, Testing and Evaluation," U.S. Government Printing Office, 1965, p. 760.
45. Ibid.
46. Weberman, p. 15.
47. Ibid., p. 16.
48. William M. Turner and Jonn G. Christian, *The Assassination of Robert F. Kennedy: A Searching Look at the Conspiracy and Cover-Up 1968-1978,* Random House, New York, p. 197.
49. Dr. Eduard Simson-Kallas, *Affidavit in Behalf of Sirhan Sirhan Presently Serving Time in San Quentin Prison,* March 9, 1973, p. 23.
50. Ibid., p. 15.
51. Christian and Turner, p. 166.
52. Anthony Sampson, *The Arms Bazaar: From Lebanon to Lockheed,* Viking, New York, 1977, p. 276.
53. Christian and Turner.
54. Ibid., pp. 210-11.
55. For an oblique discussion of psychic driving, see D. Ewen Cameron, Leonard Levy and Leonard Rubenstein, "Effects of Repetition of Verbal Signals Upon the Behavior of Chronic Psychoneurotic Patients," *Journal of Mental Science,* vol. 106: no. 443, April 1960, pp. 742-54.
56. Christian and Turner, pp. 225-26.
57. Ibid., pp. 215-16.
58. R.E. Holzer and O.E. Deal, "Low Audio-Frequency Electromagnetic Signals of Natural Origin," *Nature,* vol. 177: no. 4507, March 17, 1956, pp. 536-37.
59. Allan H. Frey, "Technical Note," *Aerospace Medicine,* December 1961, p. 1140. Frey's data were presented at the Aerospace Medical Association Meeting in Chicago, April 14, 1961.
60. Allan H. Frey, "Human Auditory System Response to Modulated Electromagnetic Energy," *Journal of Applied Physiology,* vol. 17: no. 4, July 1962, pp. 689-92.
61. Ibid., p. 692.
62. Ibid., p. 689.
63. Brodeur, pp. 50-53.
64. Ibid., pp. 256-58.
65. Robert O. Becker and Gary Selden, *The Body Electric: Electromagnetic and the Foundation of Life,* William Morrow, New York, 1985, p. 325.
66. Jose M.R. Delgado, *Physical Control of the Mind: Toward a Psychocivilized Society,* Harpers, New York, 1969.
67. Ibid., pp. 89-93, laying down a methodology for "direct communication with the brain."
68. Ford Rowan, *Technospies: The Secret Network that Spies on You,* G.P. Putnam's, New York, 1978, p. 235.
69. Ibid., p. 235.

70. Robert Naeslund, “Brain Transmitter,” privately-circulated samizdat, Stockholm, October 1982.
71. Brodeur, p. 298.
72. Rowan, pp. 233-35.
73. Ibid., pp. 232-33.
74. Barton L. Ingraham and Gerald W. Smith, “The Use of Electronics in the Observation and Control of Human Behavior and its Possible Use in Rehabilitation and Parole,” *Issues in Criminology,* no. 35, 1972, p. 7.
75. Alan Scheflin, “Freedom of the Mind as an International Human Rights Issue,” *Human Rights Law Journal,* vol. 3: no. 1-4, 1982, p. 20. The paper derives from lectures at study sessions of the International Institute of Human Rights, 1981-82. In the introduction, Scheflin maintains that “research designed to explicitly control the thoughts and conduct of free citizens is now not only a reality but the evidence is clear that this research is growing in scope, intensity and financing.”
76. Peter Schrag, *Mind Control,* Delta, New York, 1978, p. 3.
77. Rowan, p. 231.
78. Ibid., p. 233.
79. Dale F. Med, “Report Says Loving Machine Could Herald 21st Century,” *San Jose Mercury,* August 24, 1973, p. 29. The report was issued at the Third International Joint Conference on Artificial Intelligence at Stanford University.
80. Jean Dietz, “A Suit Over Brain Surgery,” *Los Angeles Herald Examiner,* March 21, 1979, p. A-26.
81. Thomas, p. 265.
82. Ibid.
83. Mind control notes of the late Mae Brussell, repositoried in Santa Barbara, California at Prevailing Winds Research.
84. Dietz.
85. Peter Breggin’s expose appeared in *Rough Times,* vol. 3: no. 8, Nov.-Dec., 1973, and *Issues in Radical Therapy,* August, 1973. Also see, “Two Boston Doctors Paid to Pacify the ‘Violent’—By Cutting Into Their Brains,” *The Real Paper,* May 30, 1977.
86. Details of the operation are from the Dietz article and the notes of Mae Brussell.
87. Becker and Seldon, pp. 319-21.
88. “Psychotronics in Engineering” file, *Joint Publications Research Service,* Arlington, Va., September 6, 1974. A copy of the conference proceedings, according to a note on the file, is “available to U.S, Government recipients only.”
89. Weberman, p. 16.
90. Michael Hutchinson, *Megabrain: New Tools and Techniques for Brain Growth and Mind Expansion,* Beech Tree, New York, 1986, p. 122.
91. Keeler.
92. Martii Koski, letter to “Mr. Ambassador,” August 5, 1980, Edmonton, Alberta, Canada.
93. Naeslund letter.
94. Girard’s 1991 NATO address.

95. Kim Murphy, "A Fearful Fix Grips Figure in Kickbacks," *Los Angeles Times,* March 28, 1988, p. B-1.
96. Steven Levy, *The Unicorn's Secret: Murder in the Age of Aquarius,* Prentice Hall, New York, 1988, pp. 242-43.
97. Ibid., pp. 242-43.
98. Bowart, "Invisible Cold War," and Julianne McKinney, telephone interview, April 4, 1994.
99. Larry Wichman, "Who's Killing the *Star Wars Scientists, Hustler,* June 1989, p. 70.
100. "Darth Vader's Revenge," *Penthouse,* August 1988.
101. Wichman, p. 68.
102. "Doubts surface over 'suicide' of Defence scientist," *Independent,* September 5, 1989.
103. Capt. Paul E. Taylor, MC, USN, "The Electromagnetic Spectrum in Low-Intensity Conflict," *Low-Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology,* Lt. Col. David J. Dean, USAF, ed., American University Press, 1986, p. 256.
104. Ibid., p. 250.
105. Keeler.
106. "Mysterious radio signals causing concern in Oregon," *Oregon Journal,* March 8, 1978, p. 1.
107. Becker and Seldon, p. 323.
108. "EPA Joins Probe of Odd signals," *Chico Enterprise-Record,* March 28, 1978, p. C-3.
109. Andrew Michrowski, letter to "The Right Honourable Prime Minister Pierre E. Trudeau," Ottawa, September 19, 1978. Michrowski notes, "it is 'official policy' at NRC (the National Research Council) to refute any psycho-physiological effects of ELF phenomena."
110. Levy, p. 242.
111. Girard (see fn. 14).
112. Julianne McKinney, Association of National Security Alumni, in correspondence with Catherine Gould, chairwoman of the Los Angeles County Commission for Women's Task Force on Ritual Abuse, February 8, 1993.
113. An Awakened Sleeper Unit, "Secret Service Masers Kill and Make Whores!" *Steamshovel Press,* Spring 1994, pp. 26-27.
114. "Flying Saucers—The Real Story: U.S. Built One in 1942," *U.S. News and World Report,* vol. 28: no. 14, April 7, 1950, p. 13.
115. Cannon ms.
116. Ibid.
117. Julianne McKinney interview, April 4.

Chapter Two

Blue Smoke & Lasers

SDI as a Cover Story for the R&D of Electromagnetic/Cybernetic Mind Control Technology

In 1976 William Bise, director of the Pacific Northwest Center for the Study of Non-Ionizing Radiation in Portland, compiled a report on "Radio-Frequency Induced Interference Responses in the Human Nervous System." Dr. Bise's experiments demonstrated that the irradiation of four of his human subjects in an electromagnetic field of 65-90 microvolts per meter caused impairment of memory and concentration. The Pacific Northwest experiments were a small part of a sprawling research effort, conceived by the Department of Defense toward the development of an arsenal of electromagnetic (EM) weapons, often sweetened in public by military spokesmen as "non-lethal."[1]

True, the biological effects of low-intensity EMR are scarcely more than an annoyance. The famous Taos hum, a baffling low-frequency vexation first reported in 1989 by residents of northern New Mexico, was one of several incidents of urban radio-frequency (RF) saturation. At the time, scientific investigators were unable to explain the low-pitch rumble blamed for a sudden outbreak of headaches, nosebleeds, dizziness and a general feeling of discomfort.[2] (A few years later, it emerged that Los Alamos Labs in Albuquerque had in development EM weapons capable of producing the same effects. The non-lethal defense program is run by John Alexander, an Army veteran, psychic enthusiast and walking *Terrorist's Cookbook* with a doctorate in Thanatology, the study of death.[3])

But "non-lethal'" weapons are potentially no more "humane" than the conventional type—a simple RF pulse can kill as readily, and as painfully, as a fusillade of black talons.

Columnist Jack Anderson mused in 1985: "Can the human mind be short-circuited or even destroyed by extremely low-frequency radio waves? Preposterous as such an idea may seem, scientists on both sides of the Iron Curtain have been conducting secret tests. Reputable scientists say they could be developed into yet another grisly weapon of mass destruction."[4]

Brain researchers told Anderson that American and Soviet scientists were close to perfecting a mechanism that interferes with the electrical signals of the brain with remote transmissions of EM radiation. "This interference," Anderson reported, "could extend to 'switching off' the brain's vital functions—that is, killing the targeted victims."

But scientists with CIA and military contracts have, for forty years, made it apparent they could produce devastating biological effects with EM radiation much earlier than Anderson's sources let on. In the mid-60s, for instance, State University of New York Professors Howard Friedman and Robert O. Becker, the Nobel laureate, and Charles Bachman, a physicist at Syracuse University, studied the effects of EM radiation on 28,642 patients at seven veterans' hospitals.[5] (However churlish, the study was the norm for a government now known to have tested radioactive isotopes on mental patients, and chemical warfare agents billeted from the Golden Gate Bridge.) Scientists at UCLA probed the brain in the 1960s, mapped out the synapses responsive to electromagnetic stimulation. Today, the university oversees experimentation at Los Alamos and Lawrence Livermore labs. Both have developed radio-biological weapons that appear to be a continuation of the brain studies, realizing their dystopian potential. Livermore, of course, has been a central participant in SDI since September 1982 when Edward Teller, the lab's founder, suggested the laser shield concept to Reagan. (The Father of the H-Bomb had coincidentally received 40,000 shares in a company engaged in laser research, later found to have defrauded investors.[6])

Remote mind control is not a recent breakthrough in "non-lethal" technology.

In 1965 the Pentagon's Advanced Research Project Agency set up Project PANDORA, the top-secret search for military applications of microwaves. Seven years later, the Army issued a classified report, noting: "it is possible to field a truck-portable microwave barrier system that will completely immobilize personnel in the open with present-day technology and equipment."[7]

Only recently has the barrier cannon been rolled out of the Pentagon's burgeoning vault of black projects. One NASA report written in 1970 by Thomas Fryer of Ames Research Labs concerned "Implantable Biotelemetry Systems" (the gadgets that turn up with unnerving regularity in the bodies of UFO abductees).

A 1976 DIA report mentions "anti-personnel applications" of pulsed microwaves that carry "sounds and possibly even words which appear to be originating intercranially."[8]

The Reagan administration intensified the push into EM weapons development. Dr. Michael Persinger, a neurologist at Ontario's Laurentian University, found that extremely low frequency fields could induce nausea, depression, panics, etc. Persinger's research was mustered under Reagan's secret, brain-scrambling Project S Sleeping Beauty.[9]

Other experiments were cloaked by the Strategic Defense Initiative—hardly inconsistent for a country with a long history of political scandals rising like a bad smell from the national security branch of government, from the U-2's Soviet adventure to Watergate to uranium testing on urban populations to the landing of cocaine shipments in Mena, Arkansas. Star Wars is, in fact, a cover story.

Paul Brodeur, in *The Zapping of America,* dissects available SDI data at length, concluding:

> "All the talk about death rays and charged particle beams has been little more than an elaborate smokescreen designed to hide the fact that the United States is developing a directed energy weapon that uses a high-power microwave pulse."[10]

If Star Wars is indeed a superficial public relations effort conceived to obscure a massive military push into mind control technology, the evidence must lie just beneath the surface, a colossal shadow R&D effort difficult to completely conceal. Behind the Star Wars front, funds would flow from legitimate to illicit programs, dropping through a hole in the floor.

That's precisely what happened. SDI funding was channeled into hidden research efforts. In early 1993, Aldric Saucier, a scientist for the Army's ballistic defense command with long experience in space research, complained to the House Government Operations Committee that Star Wars was cursed by a chronic diversion of funds. He estimated that as much as *half* of the entire SDI budget had disappeared into classified projects. "Millions of dollars in research awards were shifted from one program to another," he testified. Participants in the covert R&D effort even spoke in code words, referring to the diversions as "taxes" or "I.O.U.'s."

Saucier's blast at Star Wars appeared in the March 9, 1993 *New York Times.* He blew a shrill whistle at the "hundreds of millions diverted to secret programs." Yet Congress was assured that the funds had been used as directed. Dr. Saucier summed up SDI as a "high-risk, space-age national security pork barrel for contractors and top government managers," and a "serious obstacle to a strong national defense because of systematic illegality." He complained of egregious abuses of power, "the substitution of political method for the scientific method."[11]

Slippery accounting aside, if the true aim of SDI is the development of pulsed-microwave weapons, key defense firms would quietly merge to combine the fields of microwave technology and biology, a dangerous liaison in the shadow of Brilliant Pebbles. In fact, corporate shuffling behind SDI *does* reveal the hybrid and the technocracy behind it. A scandalous case in point is the move by Fiat, the most powerful corporation in Italy, into the American circle of competition for SDI contracts. On September 25, 1986, John Maresca, deputy assistant secretary of defense, wrote a memo to Richard Perle, then assistant secretary in charge of international policy, about legal papers drawn up a month earlier setting up "the FIAT Trading Company of North America as FIAT's sole conduit for doing business with DoD," an accord "sufficient to allow FIAT and its subsidiaries to compete for SDI research contracts.... It remains to be seen what reaction Congress will have to the situation."[12]

But the Congressional response was predictable enough. Muommar Ghaddaffi was an outgoing director of Fiat. His shares were abruptly snatched up by the company for $3.1 billion under arrangements made by Germany's Deutsche Bank. Some of the funds were laundered by a Fiat front company used since the early '80s to ship missile parts to Argentina and Libya in violation of an international ban on the transfer of high technology components through Germany's Bayerische Hypotheken and Weschel und Chase Manhattan, as detailed in an affidavit filed by a U.S. Customs agent in the eastern district court of California in 1988.[13]

Under the control of Italy's Agnelli family, Fiat has since the turn of the century been cozy with totalitarian political regimes, Hitler's and Mussolini's among them.[14]

The EM mind control initiative lurking behind the Star Wars cover story would appeal to a man of Fiat chairman Gianni Agnelli's domineering temper. In fact, he positively lusted after after an SDI contract. The Fiat board's divestment of the Libyan interest was intended to reassure critics of Agnelli in Reagan's own administration that the company would not be a security risk.

United Technologies, a heavily-subsidized extension of the Pentagon and a Fiat partner, had already drawn the Italians into the Star Wars sphere. United is the former stomping ground of Knight of Malta Alexander Haig, Clark MacGregor, a campaign manager for Nixon, and Edward Hennessy, a senior VP groomed for corporate control—by Harold Geneen of ITT—who left in 1979 to run Allied Chemical Corp.

Agnelli proposed joining SNIA, a Fiat subsidiary (the very same stung selling classified electronic missile components to Libya and Argentina), with Star Wars. With Ghaddaffi off the board of directors, he paved the way by merging SNIA with Bioengineering International BV, a Dutch-held medical technology firm.

The multi-billion dollar question is this: What does a space-based, anti-ballistic defense system have to do with biotechnology?

The SNIA board of directors was apprised by Chairman Cesare Romiti, according to Alan Friedman in a biography of Agnelli, that the merger was a “diversification from arms to the high-tech medical field.”[15]

Yet SNIA was the subsidiary upon which Agnelli had been pinning his hopes of a role in SDI. SNIA is a space contractor, a producer of orbital transfer and guidance systems. The merger with Bioengineering was altogether inconsistent with space-based defense, but not with the Defense Department’s classified EM weapons program.

It might be argued that the Fiat subsidiaries play a minor role in SDI, a small satellite in a big sky. But a report of the Council on Economic Priorities found that 87% of the SDI contracts awarded in 1983–84 went to only ten major defense firms. Eight of these were selected from among the DoD’s twenty leading private contractors.[16]

Critics of Star Wars give further credence to Brodeur’s argument that the program is a smokescreen. Most major news outlets, Mark Hertsgaard finds in *On Bended Knee,* have been “implicitly critical, if only because [reporting on SDI] exposed unwelcome truths about the system; most tellingly, that it would not work the way Reagan said it would, and that it would cost a fortune to develop. SDI was such an obviously flawed and perilous idea that it provoked considerable unease among influential members of the American academy, Congress and foreign policy and arms control communities…. A survey of National Academy of Science members found top scientists opposed to SDI developments by an eight-to-one margin.”

Reagan’s SDI proposal was conceived in a scientific vacuum. Historian A. Hunter Dupree wrote in a 1986 *Nature* article that the decision to fund SDI “was made without peer review, and no advice from scientists was sought or received.” The funds were allocated, scarce specialists mustered, “without the slightest review or evaluation by the scientific community as to whether the project should be undertaken at all. This dangerous departure from postwar practice is unique.”[17]

To quell opposition, Star Wars officials falsified research data. Four anonymous officials of the Reagan administration admitted in August 1993 that the deception was approved by then Secretary of Defense Caspar Weinberger, according to the *New York Times,* “to persuade the Soviet empire to cripple itself with debt.”[18] This is sheer spin. If the motive was to deceive the Soviets, the Pentagon had no reason to submit falsified test data to closed Congressional briefings. A total of $36 billion has been spent on SDI development, much of the expenditure based on erroneous trials.

After three dismal failures, one test was rigged in June 1984, supposedly to fool the Kremlin. But it was clear in an account given by a project scientist that fudging test data was not an economic warfare gambit. “We would lose hundreds of dollars in Congress if we did not perform it successfully,” the scientist said. “It would be a catastrophe. We put a beacon with a certain frequency on the target vehicle. On the interceptor, we had a receiver. The hit looked beautiful, so Congress did not ask questions.”

The flimflam was inspired by sheer, self-serving financial expediency. SDI technocrats lied to their Congressional paymasters while the public watched panoramic cartoons of Brilliant Pebbles decimating a swarm of nukes on the evening news.

John Tirman, a director of the Winston Foundation for World Peace and an SDI critic, responded by editorializing that the entire program was a "hoax." Tirman: "The very idea of 'Star Wars'—an 'umbrella' that would shield America from Soviet nuclear warheads—was itself a massive deception. No knowledgeable scientist thought for a moment that such a shield was feasible. Yet the Pentagon proceeded with this fraud as if Reagan's fanciful notion had merit. What's more, other faked tests followed in 1990 and 1991, after the Soviet 'threat' had disappeared."[19]

Even the lofty Edward Teller has been charged with falsifying test data on "Super Excalibur," a nuclear-powered X-ray laser built by Lawrence Livermore Labs, in actuality a space-based red herring for the oversight committees to chew on.[20]

In 1988, investigators from a score of federal agencies and Congressional offices searched the premises and interviewed Livermore staffers. "For the first time in the lab's history," the *Los Angeles Times* reported, "key members of its leadership have broken ranks and gone public with tales of internal disarray." Roy Woodruff, formerly the director of Livermore's weapons program, accused Teller of deceiving Washington and the public with false information on the X-ray laser, the "centerpiece of the Strategic Defense Initiative." (Super Excalibur was killed in July 1992 anyway when the Energy Department canceled the tests without making a public announcement.[21] The official explanation was that the Bush administration, by abandoning the X-ray laser, codenamed "Greenwater," was implementing a policy of nuclear test limitations after tens of millions of dollars had been spent.)

Critics of SDI, Woodruff said, "were saying that a system couldn't be based in space because it would require a tremendous energy supply and would be vulnerable to attack." Disinformation on "Greenwater," he said, was intended to curtail scientific objections. "They needed a little magic, and aha! Guess what? A little magic! Very classified so you can't review it or talk about it. No power-supply problem because it uses a hydrogen bomb."

Super Excalibur was fraudulent even in conception as an anti-missile system. "It has little potential for actually defending against ballistic attack," Woodruff emphasized. "It just wasn't that capable a laser. So if the program goals had been met, if indeed we were entering the engineering phase, as Teller said, what we would've had was a weapon that was capable of attacking satellites and defending satellites at great distances. If you have a very big satellite—a neutral particle beam accelerator, a big chemical laser, a garage full of kinetic-kill vehicles—this X-ray laser weapon has the potential to destroy those things." In other words, the weapon was not even an anti-ballistic system, as Teller claimed.[22]

Besides, there was nothing original about Lawrence Livermore's X-ray laser, which smelled suspiciously like the "Modulated Electron-Gun X-Ray Nuclear Booster" patented by the McFarlane Corporation, a private engineering firm, in 1965. The schematics and a prototype of the device were pirated by NASA, according to a McFarlane executive in hearings before the House subcommittee on DoD appropriations the following year. Company literature explained that the orbital laser was suited, among other things, to "electromagnetic radiation telemetering and death ray applications", a design, again, never intended for anti-ballistics.

Teller sold the citizenry a costly bill of goods. Aldric Saucier recalls that he "was present once when Dr. Edward Teller of the University of California National Laboratory said he needed $20 million for more studies of an already-completed experiment on the X-ray laser. Then S.D.I. director Gen. James Abrahamson responded to the effect that he could go ahead."[23]

Teller's interests, beyond capricious misapplications of nuclear technology, include "non-lethal defense." In November 1993, Dr. Teller was a featured speaker at a conference on electromagnetic weapons at Johns Hopkins University in Laurel, Maryland, sponsored by Los Alamos National Laboratory, chaired by the aforementioned Doctor of Death, John Alexander. Another key speaker at the conference was Clay Easterly of the Oak Ridge National Laboratory, addressing the fine points of the "Application of Extremely Low Frequency Electromagnetic Fields to Non-Lethal Weapons."[24]

The military-industrial sector was heavily represented at the conference by McDonnell Douglas, Tracor Aerospace, Martin Marietta, Northrop, Lockheed, Westinghouse and Boeing's defense and space groups.[25]

The major multinational SDI contractors held much more than a passing interest in orbital EM weapons technology capable of controlling and switching off the brain. So does the Pentagon, represented at the EM weapons conference by scientists from the U.S. Army Research Lab, the Special Operations Command, the Marine Corps Intelligence Center and the Advanced Research Projects Agency (ARPA).

Further evidence that Star Wars covers for radio-biological warfare is the staggering mortality rate of scientists involved in the program, particularly the colorful "suicides" of 23 SDI engineers in Great Britain. Harlan Girard, a scientist and subject of continuous microwave harassment by the military for his outspoken criticism of electromagnetic mind control projects, told high-brow attendees of a 1991 NATO conference on emergent technologies that the British technocrats had in common connections to the U.S. Navy.[26] Not improbable. The Navy has funded academic research on distant evoked responses and the brain-manipulating effects of gigahertz radiation on human subjects, in coordination with the

CIA, for decades. (Out of this research came the 10 milliwatt safety standard, set in the early 1950s by Herman Schwan, a repatriated Nazi scientist. Schwan hailed from the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute of Biophysics in Germany, and settled in the U.S. after the war to teach bio-engineering and physical medicine at the University of Pennsylvania.)[27]

The enduring mystery of the Star Wars "suicides" was foreshadowed on July 9, 1986 with the murder-by-bombing of the research director of West Germany's Siemens Co., yet another electronics conglomerate, said to have been negotiating with the Pentagon on an SDI contract. Next to go was a German bureaucrat, a diplomatic liaison to the Strategic Defense Initiative Organization, shot dead, quickly followed by an Italian Star Wars consultant.[28] A leftist brigade of terrorists was held responsible for the murders, but no arrests were made.

A pattern to the killings in Great Britain begins with the fact that seven of the scientists worked for Marconi, a subsidiary of General Electric. At the time, Marconi was under investigation for bribing and defrauding ministers of government. But Britain's MoD found "no evidence" linking the deaths. Blame for the sudden outbreak of suicides among Marconi engineers was laid on stress.[29] (Another unlikely explanation was given for the "hum" in Bristol, home of Marconi, a low-frequency noise like that in Taos, New Mexico, in this instance blamed on "frogs.") Jonathan Walsh. a digital communications specialist at Marconi, was assigned to the secretive Martlesham Heath Research Laboratory under a General Electric contract.[30] (GE has long led the field in the development of anti-personnel electronic weapons, an interest that gestated with participation in Project Comet, the Pentagon-based research program to explore the psychological effects of frequencies on the electromagnetic spectrum.) Walsh dropped from his hotel window in November 1985.

None of the Star Wars "suicides" were specialists in laser research or space-based missiles. All worked in advanced electronics or computer systems with military applications. Many were attached to the Royal Military College of Science, an authority on electronic surveillance, communications and weaponry.[31] They were employed on secret projects. Supposedly Star Wars was an open book. From the start, Reagan invited all friendly nations to contribute to the defense system. Major developments were to be publicized, not squandered in secret laboratories.

As is... oh, for instance... microwave brain telemetering from a remote source. *That* technology was *very* secret. John Alexander wrote in the December 1980 number of *Military Review* that "there are weapons systems that operate on the power of the mind and whose lethal capacity has already been demonstrated."[32] Star Wars was an ideal cover story, because the technology of radio-biological (or "psychic") warfare was in part a spin-off of the advanced physiological monitoring instruments used in space flight.[33]

EM-pulse mind control experimentation takes place inside a fog of secrecy and disinformation. Behind the Star Wars murders, if not an inside job or the work of the CIA, are other likely culprits. Iran, for instance, then at war with Iraq, had highly-placed connections in British intelligence, among them Michael Heseltine, soon to be England's Minister of Defense. Heseltine was the sole shareholder of Royal Ordnance, Inc., a military explosives manufacturer that traded with the Khomeini regime in violation of a ban on on the export of sensitive technology to Third World dictatorships.[34] (Heseltine was also Gianni Agnelli's British supplier in the aforementioned sale of missile components to Muommar Ghaddaffi.)

Iraq was preparing to graduate from conventional to "non-lethal" EM weapons. Khomeini's intelligence operatives may have learned of Iraq's trade with Marconi and the transfer of secret technology through an intelligence source in the British government. Iranian terrorists were already active in the UK. The stresses in the background of the Iran-Iraq war could explain the attacks on electromagnetic weapons designers and programming specialists.

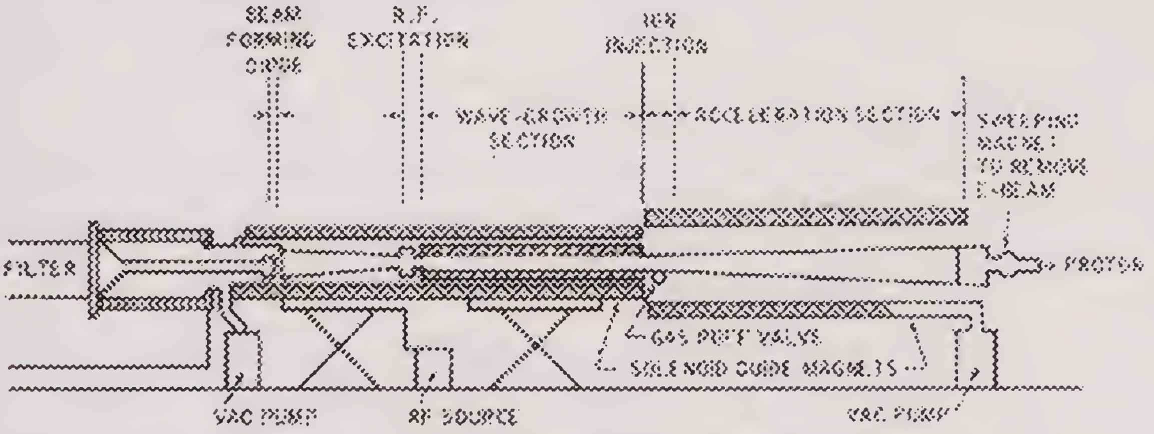
BEAM FORMING DIODE
R.F. EXCITATION
ION INJECTION
WAVE-GROWTH SECTION
ACCELERATION SECTION
SWEEPING MAGNET TO REMOVE E-BEAM
FILTER
PROTON
GAS PUFF VALVE
SOLENOID GUIDE MAGNETS
VAC PUMP
RF SOURCE
VAC PUMP

CREDIT: AVIATION WEEK & SPACE TECHNOLOGY

At top is the diagram of the experimental auto-resonant accelerator that appeared in *Aviation Week & Space Technology* on May 2, 1977. Below is the diagram of the electron beam accelerator shown at the Naval Weapons Laboratory, in Dahlgren, Virginia, on July 10, 1973.

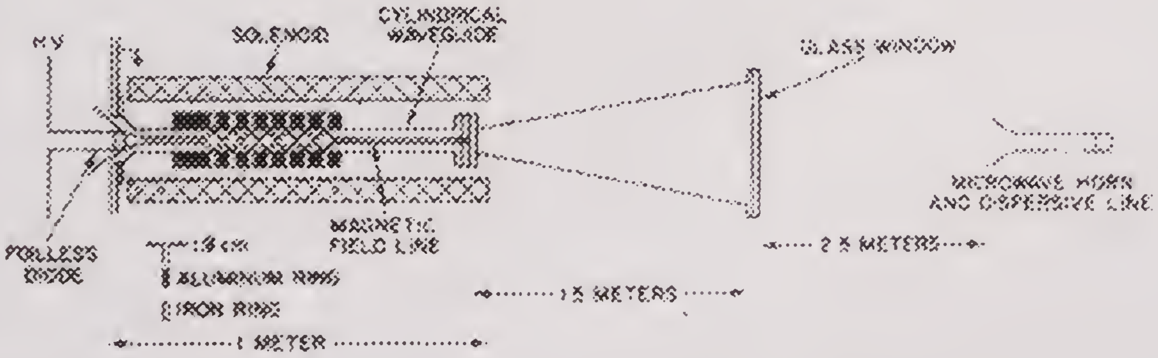
HV
SOLENOID
CYLINDRICAL WAVEGUIDE
GLASS WINDOW
MICROWAVE HORN AND DISPERSIVE LINE
FOILLESS DIODE
ALUMINUM RING
IRON RING
MAGNETIC FIELD LINE
2.5 METERS
1.5 METERS
1 METER

Physicist Paul Brodeur, mystified by Pentagon disinformation regarding SDI, examined a schematic for an "Electron Beam Accelorator" of the type to be incorporated—supposedly—in space-based defense. Brodeur discovered that the weapon was in reality a device capable of generating a powerful EM pulse. All of this is recounted in Brodeur's *Zapping of America*, which features a chapter on mind control technology.

An Iranian backlash was predictable since, according to the *London Times,* "the twin focuses of British and American policy towards the arming of Iraq lay in the identification of Iran as the enemy," with diversions of cash to defense companies in England and the U.S. "supplying Baghdad through the Banca Nazionale del Lavoro (BNL) branch in Atlanta."[35]

The intrigue was heightened by fierce competition among the multinationals for Star Wars contracts. Many of these shared with Fiat and GE sordid histories of selling advanced military technology to repressive military regimes. Saddam Hussein placed a priority on microwave weapons. His strategy of waging "unconventional" warfare was not possible without support from executives of the major defense firms in NATO countries. One of England's closest competitors in the microwave communications business is Thomson-CSF, an electronics conglomerate run by the French government. In the 1980s, Thomson, pitted against Plessey Defense Systems in England, won a lucrative contract with Iraq. Initial payments were made by the infamous BNL, which collapsed in 1989.

In *The Death Lobby,* Kenneth Timmerman describes how Thomson and BNL assisted Iraq's expansion into electronic warfare. "The project was given the code name Saad 13. The $1 billion contact was barely mentioned in the French press and was treated as a virtual state secret in times to come. At one point Thomson even tried to deny it had ever signed such a deal, although thousands of Thomson engineers were involved at different times." The idea, a Thomson vice president said, was to "give the Iraqis a tool for the future. It was certainly the most ambitious project of its kind undertaken in a Third World country."[36]

The carnage among Star Wars scientists was coincident with the rivalry between Marconi and Plessey in Great Britain, and Thomson-CSF in France. Two of the deceased were employees of Plessey: Michael Baker, a digital communications specialist, killed in May 1987 when his BMW careened through a road barrier, and Frank Jennings, an electronic weapons engineer, dead of a heart attack a month later. The British gained the upper hand over France in dealings with Iraq by loaning Saddam Hussein a unit of Special Air Service (SAS) commandos to train his secret police, the Iraqi Special Forces. Timmerman: "In 1985 the French had lost two large contracts to British electronics companies. Marconi signed a contract to supply 'troposcatter' microwave transmitters that Thomson-CSF thought it had won. The transmitters allowed Iraqi forces to dispatch orders from Baghdad to the southern front without relying on telephone lines (and they confounded allied intelligence during Operation Desert Storm.)"[37] Intense competition among defense firms, and illicit trade in secret technology with warring dictatorships, was the backdrop to the British deaths. Conditions were rife for such skullduggery.

So were the microwave devices sold to Iraq. The troposcatter microwave transmitter, with a few modifications, could be transformed into a powerful offensive weapon. Myron Wolbarscht, an ophthalmologist at Duke University and the author of a book on emergent technologies, warns: “Microwave weapons used to disrupt an opponent’s communications could ‘fry’ any soldiers hit by them as well.”[38]

Marconi and Thomson-CSF share a common interest in microwave communications. Devices like the troposcatter are in the same technical genus as the Gyrotron resonance maser, a machine that talks to the brain. An article in *21st Century Science & Technology* outlines the workings of a resonance maser. The device surrounds and penetrates the entire body in an EM flux, and beams into it a microwave communications field. A laser, like the needle of light on a compact disk, reads changes in electrons after passing through the body. A computerized CAT scan sorts the frequencies of the brain and five senses. The maser, with pulsed-power source, fits inside a truck. With it, the encyclopedia claims, “special forces trained in radio-biological warfare could wipe out entire officer corps, divisions and battalions.”[39]

Masers, not lasers, are the hidden thrust of “Star Wars.” The weapon is an extremely sophisticated mind and body machine capable of thought transfer, manipulation of emotions and muscle control. Images, even dreams, can be beamed to the subject. A human or cybernetic controller can carry on a conversation telepathically, and at the same time instill physical sensations, subliminal commands, emotions and visual and aural hallucinations. Computerized EM devices that talk and transmit images to the brain were current when Reagan delivered his first SDI pitch in 1983. Harlan Girard, in his NATO address on emergent technologies eight years later, said: “Experiments had produced some communications equipment that far exceeded the ability to broadcast defeat into the minds of the enemy,” an objective of DoD brass. “It is not only capable of producing auditory hallucinations, but visual hallucinations as well.”[40]

“Is it possible,” asks John Lambros, a prisoner at Leavenworth and mind control experimentee (a claim he corroborates with an X-ray of four strand-shaped foreign objects in his head) “that the particle beam intended for enemy missiles alone might now be intended for human minds?”[41]

The electronic battlefield has been armed for some time. GTE, for instance, has had an electronic weapons division since the 1950s, then headed by William Perry, Clinton’s secretary of defense. And in the 1960s executives of Honeywell, the Franco-American computer firm (and Star Wars contractor), told author Lincoln Lawrence that the company was experimenting with machines that “penetrate a man’s mind and control his brain waves over long distance.”[42]

The Microwave Mafia often rely on the implantation of miniaturized radio receivers. The technique is known as intra-cerebral control and uses radio or ultra-sound. It was developed by the CIA’s MKDRACO and

HATTER brain telemetry projects. The implantation of a micro-receiver in the frontal or temporal lobes by trained teams of operatives is done with an "encaphalator," usually through the sinuses of a drugged subject.[43]

But the current state of the art in Radio-Hypnotic Intracerebral Control (RHIC) depends upon "Personal Radio and Electromagnetic Frequency Allocation," or PREMA, a frequency unique to the subject's brain. A "reading wand" is hidden near the victim, who is scanned by an instrument smaller than a briefcase. Once the "Freak" is determined, the brain becomes a link in a cybernetic system, and the subject (or a group) can communicate, be surveilled, guided, manipulated, harassed or controlled from afar.[44]

The mind-invasive technology lurking behind the Star Wars cover story became the fascination of Brian Wronge, a victim of prison experiments in New York state.[45] Wronge claims that the mind control fraternity has developed a "gallium scan" to map electrical activity of the brain, and in concert with a transmitter linked to the nervous system, beam radio-biological signals to an analog computer or satellite.

Skeptics should note that that implant technology is not strictly the domain of covert federal agencies. On October 17, 1994 the *London Times* ran a story on medical advances in microchip implantation, "Bionic Man Comes of Age," no less futuristic than gyrotronic mind taps or PREMA Freak scanners. "Over the past decade," the *Times* reported, "more than 15,000 people worldwide have had electronic components implanted into their brains. In a procedure confined until recently to the fantasies of science fiction, microchips are now being routinely placed beneath the skull into brain stems. In many cases, these devices are connected to platinum wires, which are then fused and buried in the brain."

Some of the *commercially* available implants can "think": "Through the use of microchip technology, they can interface with the brain, provide complex instructions to mechanical parts and monitor brain activity." In the last ten years, progress in microtechnology has made possible "artificial vision," and paralyzed patients have only to think to produce "a characteristic electrical wave pattern that is detected by sensors implanted in the brain. The sensors then send an electrical signal to a microprocessor chip implanted in the patient's shoulder." The chip responds with electrical instructions to a mass of tiny implants linked to several dozen nodes in the right arm. The paralyzed muscle fibers contract, and the arm lifts.[46]

The monitoring of a patient's vital signs from a remote source, discussed in the *Journal of Biomedical Engineering* in 1993, relies on an advanced VHF telemetry station, another commercially-available system. A computer amplifies and digitizes the signal from an implanted transmitter, analyzes it and displays the data on a personal computer monitor.[47]

But not all commercially-sold brain machines are approved by the AMA. Anyone with a bank account and a score to settle can order by mail the schematics for a crude "Electronic Brainblaster" from a small electronics firm in Alamogordo, New Mexico. The company bills itself as "the national clearinghouse for survival information," and claims that the machine was developed "to produce healing and curative effects." But "we coincidentally discovered that, if you use certain EM coil configurations, wave forms and intensities, a powerfully destructive, deadly-silent and instantaneous weapon is produced!"

The Brainblaster is a true electromagnetic-pulse weapon and—like the EM devices in the Pentagon's "non-lethal" arsenal—interferes violently with brain waves. The heart of the machine, according to company literature, is the formidable "Cycle Slicer": "simple and inexpensive to build… basically a crude, bludgeoning device used primarily to inflict physical pain and cause brain hemorrhaging." With exposure to the Brainblaster's EMFs, "severe behavioral changes, some associated with mental illness, can result. Behavioral changes include bizarre and erratic behavior, increased reaction times, panic, confusion, hyperactivity, manic-compulsive behavior, dizziness, hallucinations, personality disassociations, delirium, incoherence, frenzy, tremors and jerkiness, headache, ears ringing, nausea," and so on. The company recommends testing the Brainblaster on animals, since "the life of one strong, intelligent, and capable Freedom-loving patriot is more important than the lives of many animals." An EM Brainblaster, of course, "can provide the patriot and his loved ones with an effective weapon for destroying the enemies of his family, region, nation or culture."

If a neo-Nazi mail-order house can openly hawk the EM Brainblaster, the comic-book technology at the far end of the classified military technology lag must be breathtaking. Word of remote-viewing devices and cybernetic surveillance systems has leaked to the surface of the national security underground.

And the technology isn't gathering dust. Since the advent of SDI, reports of sadistic EMR harassment of private citizens have escalated. One report filed with the Association of National Security Alumni in February 1992 concerns "a woman in Dayton, Ohio, whose husband is employed at Wright-Patterson AFB as a civilian electronics engineer. Coincidentally, he works in a top secret vault on a project focusing on 'transitional technologies.'" The husband's top-secret work took him to the Industrial College of the Armed Forces (ICAF) in Fort McNair, Virginia in the mid-1980s. While he was away, college administrators insisted that his wife undergo extensive psychological evaluation. She was told that "data obtained from these exams would be used to keep their marriage and family intact, since her husband's job tended to be stress-inducing." She returned home from college and "became the target of massive electronic harassment and may have been drugged on recurrent occasions." She talked to doctors. None of them could explain her physical and psychological pain. Her husband took no interest. She asked him to sweep their home electronically, but he claimed to know nothing about the necessary equipment.

She contacted McKinney's Electronic Surveillance Project in Silver Spring, Maryland, a group that monitors EM harassment, in November 1992. (McKinney's project is a spin-off of the Association of National Security Alumni, an organization that opposes excesses of the intelligence community. Members on the ANSA board have written and lectured widely on America's covert misadventures, including Phillip Roettinger, David MacMichael, Peter Dale Scott, Phillip Agee and Daniel Ellsberg.) "Within two days," McKinney says, "her husband had her forcibly hospitalized in a psychiatric ward at Good Samaritan, claiming that she had established contact with a 'Jonestown'-type network and had become suicidal as a consequence. Her husband cooperated by lying in a court-approved affidavit for purposes of prolonging her hospitalization." During her forced restraint, the hospital ward was "flooded with patients who were complaining of 'hearing voices.'" They were prescribed stupefying drugs and left to their own devices. The electrical engineer's wife has since moved to Columbus, Ohio, but the EM assault on her continues.[48]

In this instance, the subject's torment was linked to a military base, but experimentation and harassment with classified EMR weapons can occur anywhere. The technology itself derives from any academic or commercial military-industrial sector. McKinney speaks of "active involvement on the part of the DoD and certain DoD contractors — the Boeing Corporation being one of many." She alleges that intensive R&D is also underway at Northrop, the Newbury Park, California aerospace firm. She suspects that EM stimulation from a remote source drove Alan Winterbourne, a computer systems engineer, to his killing spree at a Ventura County unemployment office on December 2, 1993.[49] Winterbourne, like the berserker SDI "suicides" in England, was engaged in highly-classified projects. He hinted darkly to his sister Carol, "they're working on terrible things at Northrop that would kill millions of innocent people. Things you can't imagine." Before resigning from Northrop, Winterbourne had complained that his co-workers were harassing him. He suspected that his phone was tapped. The paranoia began after he'd written a letter to his Congressman maintaining that the company was engaged in illegalities, and requested a federal investigation.[50]

McKinney has also found secret EMR weapons development at General Electric, Northern Telecom, TRW and other engines of the Defense Department. The number of firms engaged in mind control R&D is kept small by the need for secrecy. But "non-lethal" technology is increasingly in demand by police agencies. Army officials have taken to touting the new "dual-use" technology—a euphemism for weapons with military and law enforcement applications. (*The Los Angeles Times* noted without so much as a giggle that "experts" believed domestic proliferation of "non-lethal" weapons "could provide jobs for smaller firms.")[51]

But on inevitable occasions, the technology has found its way into the hands of terrorists. In September 1984, for example, the neo-Nazi cadre known as The Order launched the "Reliance Project" EM mind control operation. According to an FBI affidavit reprinted in *The Brotherhood of Murder,* by Thomas Martinez and John Guinther, Order leaders paid $100,000 to "two former government scientists who had been involved in a secret United States scientific experiment dealing with the transmission of electronic signals or waves at particular frequencies which serve to render people more docile and subservient." And "experiments were being conducted that will allow persons with the knowledge to take a lock of hair from another and by some scientific process, project a chemical imbalance in that person."[52]

The hinges of PANDORA's box creak in the wind. The American arsenal of psychoactive weapons, Michael Hutchinson writes in *Megabrain,* is the product of "a vast underground network of bio-electricians busily tinkering away with electromagnetic devices that could potentially change the world."[53] Instead, the technology is applied to "mind control, moving objects with mind power," to "the potential for mentally shutting down computers, missile-guidance systems, satellites." Hutchinson, once a mind control skeptic, concludes that his worst paranoid fantasies were "accepted by electronics experts as facts of life."

The growing importance of EM weapons to the DoD was implied in the promotion of William Perry to Secretary of Defense by Bill Clinton in 1994. Perry was "the favorite of the Joint Chiefs of Staff," noted the *Los Angeles Times.* He was chosen in 1954 by GTE to direct the company's electronic defense lab.[54] Twelve years later he was installed as president of ESL, Inc., an electronics company engaged in some of the Pentagon's murkiest black projects—including Area 51, the secret military base in the sprawling desert wasteland north of Las Vegas. (ESL has since been acquired by TRW, a key Star Wars contractor.)[55]

Periodically, Congress beats the drum for "strategic defense." If SDI advocates have their way, the EM-frustrating Faraday Cage may someday become all the rage, like the backyard bomb shelter of old.

Footnotes

1. Paul Brodeur, *The Zapping of America: Microwaves, Their Deadly Risk and the Cover-Up* (New York: Norton, 1977), p. 299.
2. Matt Creenson, "Taos Hum not just in your head, Survey confirms mystery noises," *Knight-Ridder News Service,* message #20758, AEN News computer network.
3. Armen Victorian, "Non-Lethality: John B. Alexander, the Pentagon's Penguin," *Para/Net,* Cairn, Queensland, p. 40.

4. Jack Anderson, "Exotic Weaponry is Checked," reprint from July, 1985.
5. Lincoln Lawrence, *Were We Controlled?* (New Hyde Park: University Books, 1967), p. 40.
6. "Physicist Teller's Denial in a Story of Free Stock," *San Francisco Chronicle*, June 1, 1983.
7. Brodeur, p. 296.
8. Ibid., p. 295.
9. Joe Vialls, "Real Life Death Rays," *AEN News Computer Network*, 1994.
10. Brodeur, p. 279.
11. "Scientist Said to Assert Fraud in 'Star Wars,'" *New York Times*, March 2, 1992, p. A-1. Also see, John Cushman, Jr., "Whistleblower Wins Study of 'Star Wars' Program," *New York Times*, March 3, 1992, p. A-13, and Aldric Saucier, "Lost in Space," *New York Times*, March 3, 1992, p. A-17.
12. Alan Friedman, *Agnelli and the Network of Italian Power* (London: Harrap, 1988), p. 191.
13. Ibid., p 232.
14. Jeff Madrick, *Taking America: How We Got from the First Hostile Takeover to Megamergers, Corporate Raiding, and Scandal* (New York: Bantam, 1987), pp. 36-39.
15. Friedman, pp. 204-7.
16. Mark Hertsgaard, *On Bended Knee: The Press and the Reagan Presidency* (New York: Farrar Straus Giroux, 1988), p. 285.
17. Ibid., pp. 285 and 295.
18. Phil Reeves, "Star Wars 'Fake' Fooled the World," *London Independent*, August 19, 1993, p. 8 (based on the *New York Times* story).
19. John Tirman, "A Big Hoax to Match a Big Lie," *Los Angeles Times*, August 20, 1993, p. B-7.
20. Robert Scheer, "The Man Who Blew the Whistle on 'Star Wars,'" *Los Angeles Times*, July 17, 1988, pp. 7, 8 and 30.
21. Michael R. Gordon, "Star Wars' X-Ray Laser Weapon Dies as Its Final Test is Canceled," *New York Times*, July 7, 1992, p. A-1.
22. Scheer, p. 11.
23. Saucier.
24. "Updating and Ongoing" section, *Lobster* (UK), Winter-Spring 1994, no. 26, p. 24.
25. "Attendee and Exhibitor Roster," Non-Lethal Defense Conference, Johns Hopkins Applied Research Lab, Laurel, MD.
26 Harlan E. Girard, "Effects of Gigahertz Radiation on the Nervous System: Recent Developments in the Technology of Political Control," a lecture at the NATO Advanced Research Workshop on Coherent and Emergent Phenomena on Bio-Molecular Systems, University of Arizona, January 15-19, 1991.
27. Susan Schiefelbein, "The Invisible Threat: The Stifled Story of Electrical Waves," *Saturday Review*, September 15, 1993, p. 17. Schiefelbein notes that Schwan was "a highly-funded researcher in electromagnetics. His research funds came primarily from the Department of Defense."
28. "Darth Vader's Revenge," *Penthouse*, August 1988.
29. Larry Wichman, "Who's Killing the Star Wars Scientists?" *Hustler*, June 1989, pp. 67-92.
30. Ibid., pp. 88-92.
32. John Alexander, "The New Mental Battlefield," *Military Review*, Vol. LX, no. 12, December 1980. Reprinted in *Psychic Warfare: Fact or Fiction*, John White, ed., (Surrey, UK: Aquarian, 1988), p. 69.

33. Michael Rossman, “On Some Matters of Concern in Psychic Research,” *New Age Blues* (New York: EP Dutton, 1978). Reprinted in White, p. 130.
34. Paul Brown and David Pollister, “Heseltine Link with Iran,” *The Guardian,* December 20, 1993, p. 1.
35. David Watts, “West ‘well served’ by Iran and Iraq at war,” *London Times,* November 10, 1993, p. 3.
36. Kenneth R. Timmerman, *The Death Lobby: How the West Armed Iraq* (New York: Houghton Mifflin, 1991), p. 80.
37. Ibid., p. 340.
38. Art Pine, “Not So Deadly Weapons,” *Los Angeles Times,* May 18, 1993, p. A-1.
39. Copy from John G. Lambros in an unpublished samizdat.
40. Girard (see fn. 27).
41. Lambros.
42. Lincoln Lawrence, *Were We Controlled?* (New Hyde Park, NY: University Books, 1967), p. 52.
43. Ibid.
44. Ibid.
45. T.F. Maitefa Angaza, “SCI-FACT—NOT FICTION: High-Tech Slavery is Here,” *New York City Sun,* December 15, 1993, p. 4.
46.. Simon Davies, “Bionic Man Comes of Age,” *London Times,* October 17, 1994, p. 16.
47. Andreasen, et.al., “Seven-channel digital telemetry system for monitoring and direct computer capturing of biological data,” *Journal of Biomedical Engineering,* September 1993, pp. 435-40.
48. Julianne McKinney, Association of National Security Alumni, Silver Springs, MD, in private correspondence with an Air Force general, February 1, 1993, pp. 1-3.
49. Julianne McKinney, telephone conversation, April 4, 1994.
50. Mark Nollinger, “Rage,” *Wired,* June 1994, pp. 102.
51. Art Pine, “Not So Deadly Weapons,” *Los Angeles Times,* May 5, 1993, p. A-1.
52. Thomas Martinez with John Guinther, *The Brotherhood of Murder* (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1988), p. 230.
53. Michael Hutchinson, *Megabrain: New Tools and Techniques for Brain Growth and Mind Expansion* (New York: Beech Tree, 1986), pp.123-24.
54. Art Pine, “Low-Key Perry Being Asked to Master High-Flying Job,” *Los Angeles Times,* January 25, 1994, p. A-26.
55. Ed Vulliamy, “Dying for an American Dream,” *London Observer,* December 4, 1994.

Section Two

CIA, Satanism & Cult Abuse of Children

Section Two

CIA, Satanism & Cult Abuse of Children

Chapter Three

The False Memory Hoax

Part I: CIA Connections to the Mind Control Cults

Swiss newspapers described the carnage inside the charred farmhouse as a "wax museum of death." Within hours, 27 other members of the Sovereign Order of the Solar Temple were found dead at chalets in Granges, Switzerland and Morin Heights, Quebec. Luc Jouret, the Temple's grand master, the *London Times* reported, "espoused a hybrid religion that owed more to Umberto Eco's novel *Foucault's Pendulum* than to any bible. His followers called themselves 'Knights of Christ.' The crusading codes of the Knights Templar, the rose-and-cross symbolism of the medieval Rosicrucian Order, Nazi occultism and new age mysticism were joined together into a mumbo-jumbo mishmash that seemed more designed for extracting money from disciples than saving souls."

Jouret, born in the Belgian Congo in 1947, set out in youth as a mystic with communist leanings, but his politics apparently swung full circle. He has since been linked to a clutch of neo-Nazis responsible for a string of bombings in Canada. He told friends that he had once served with a unit of Belgium paratroopers.

French-Canadian journalist Pierre Tourangeau investigated the sect for two years. A few days after the mass murder, he reported that the sect was financed by the proceeds of gun-running to Australia and South America. Simultaneously, Radio Canada announced that Jouret's Templars earned hundreds of millions of dollars laundering the profits through the infamous Bank of Credit and Commerce International (BCCI), closed by authorities worldwide in 1991. Montreal's *La Presse* observed: "each new piece of information only thickens the mystery"—but the combination of international arms smuggling and BCCI presented a familiar enough picture of CIA sedition. The Manhattan D.A. who closed the American branch announced that 16 witnesses had died in the course of investigating the bank's entanglements in covert operations of the CIA, arms smuggling to Iraq, money laundering and child prostitution.

The average coffee table would crumple under the weighty BCCI Book of the Dead. Journalist Danny Casalaro and Vince Foster appear in it—grim antecedents to the Solar Temple killings. The cult's connection to BCCI (reported in Europe but filtered from American newspaper accounts) fed speculation among Canadian journalists that followers of Jouret were killed to bury public disclosures of gun-running and money laundering.

But the fraternizing of America's national security elite and the cults did not begin in Cheiry, Switzerland. Jouret's Order of the Solar Temple was but the latest incarnation of mind control operations organized and overseen by the CIA and Department of Defense.

> In a sense, we are in the same ethical and moral dilemma as the physicists in the days prior to the Manhattan Project. Those of us who work in this field see a developing potential for a nearly total control of human emotional status.
>
> —Dr. Wayne Evans
> *Army Institute of*
> *Environmental Medicine*

Scientists in the CIA's mind control fraternity lead double lives. Many are highly respected, but if the truth were known they would be deafened by the public outcry and drummed out of their respective academic haunts.

Martin T. Orne, for example, a senior CIA/Navy researcher, is based at the University of Pennsylvania's Experimental Psychiatry Laboratory. He is also an original member of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation's advisory board, a tightly-drawn coterie of psychiatrists, many with backgrounds in CIA mind control experimentation in its myriad forms. The Foundation is dedicated to denying the existence of cult mind control and child abuse. Its primary pursuit is the castigation of survivors and therapists for fabricating accusations of ritual abuse.

Dismissing cult abuse as hysteria or false memory, a common defense strategy, may relieve parents of preschool children. In a small percentage of cult abuse cases its possible that children may be led to believe they've been victimized.

But the CIA and its cover organizations have a vested interest in blowing smoke at the cult underground because the worlds of CIA mind control and many cults merge inextricably. The drum beat of "false accusations" from the media is taken up by paid operatives like Dr. Orne and the False Memory Syndrome Foundation to conceal the crimes of the Agency.

Orne's forays into hypno-programming were financed in the 1960s by the Human Ecology Fund, a CIA cover at Cornell University and the underwriter of many of the formative mind control experiments conducted in the U.S. and abroad, including the gruesome brainwashing and remote mind control experiments of D. Ewen Cameron at Montreal's Allan Memorial Institute. Research specialties of the CIA's black psychiatrists included electroshock lobotomies, drugging agents, incapacitants, hypnosis, sleep deprivation and radio control of the brain, among hundreds of sub-projects.

The secondary source of funding for Dr. Orne's work in hypnotic suggestion and dissolution of memory is eerie in the cult child abuse context. The voluminous files of John Marks in Washington, D.C. (139 boxes obtained under FOIA, to be exact, two-fifths of which document CIA interest in the occult) include an Agency report itemizing a $30,000 grant to Orne from Human Ecology, and another $30,000 from Boston's Scientific Engineering Institute (SEI)—another CIA funding cover, founded by Edwin Land of the Polaroid Corporation (and supervisor of the U-2 spy plane escapades). This was the year that the CIA's Office of Research and Development (ORD) geared up a study of parapsychology and the occult. The investigation, dubbed Project OFTEN-CHICKWIT, gave rise to the establishment of a social "laboratory" by SEI scientists at the University of South Carolina—a college class in black witchcraft, demonology and voodoo.

Dr. Orne, with SEI funding, marked out his own mind control corner at the University of Pennsylvania in the early 1960s. He does not publicize his role as a CIA psychiatrist. He denies it, very plausibly. In a letter to Dr. Orne, Marks once reminded him that he'd disavowed knowledge of his participation in one mind-wrecking experimental sub-project. Orne later recanted, admitting that he'd been aware of the true source of funding all along.

Among psychiatrists in the CIA's mind control fraternity, Orne ranks among the most venerable. He once boasted to Marks that he was routinely briefed on all significant CIA behavior modification experiments: "Why would they come to him," Martin Cannon muses in *The Controllers,* which links UFO abductions to secret military research veiled by screen memories of "alien" abduction, "unless Orne had a high security clearance and worked extensively with the intelligence services?"

To supplement his CIA income, the influential Dr. Orne has been the donee of grants from the Office of Naval Research and the Air Force Office of Scientific Research. "I should like to hear," Cannon says, "what innocent explanation, if any, the Air Force has to offer to explain their interest in post-hypnotic amnesia."

According to Army records, Orne's stomping grounds, Penn U., was a beehive of secret experiments in the Vietnam War period. The Pentagon and CIA—under the auspices of ORD's Steve Aldrich, a doyen of occult and parapsychological studies—conferred the Agency's most lucrative research award upon the University of Pennsylvania to study the effects of 16 newly-concocted biochemical warfare agents on humans, including choking, blistering and vomiting agents, toxins, poison gas and incapacitating chemicals. The tests were abruptly halted in 1972 when the prison's medical lab burned to the ground.

Testimony before the 1977 Church Committee's probe of the CIA hinted that, as of 1963, the scientific squalor of the CIA's mind control regimen, code-named MKULTRA, had abandoned military and academic laboratories, fearing exposure, and mushroomed in cities across the country. Confirmation arrived in 1980 when Joseph Holsinger, an aide to late Congressman Leo Ryan (who was murdered by a death squad at Jonestown) exposed the formation of eccentric religious cults by the CIA. Holsinger made the allegation at a colloquium of psychologists in San Francisco on "Psychosocial Implications of the Jonestown Phenomenon." Holsinger maintained that a CIA rear-support base had been in collusion with Jones to perform medical and mind control experiments at People's Temple. The former Congressional aide cited an essay he'd received in the mail, "The Penal Colony," written by a Berkeley psychologist. The author had emphasized: Rather than terminating MKULTRA, THE CIA SHIFTED ITS PROGRAMS FROM PUBLIC INSTITUTIONS TO PRIVATE CULT GROUPS, including the People's Temple.

Jonestown had its grey eminence in Dr. Lawrence Laird Layton of the University of California at Berkeley, formerly a chemist for the Manhattan Project and head of the Army's chemical warfare research division in the early 1950s. (Larry Layton, his son, led the death squad that murdered Congressman Leo Ryan, who'd arrived at Guyana to investigate the cult.) Michael Meiers, author of *Was Jonestown a CIA Medical Experiment?*, scavenged for information on the People's Temple for six years, concluding: "The Jonestown experiment was conceived by Dr. Layton, staffed by Dr. Layton and financed by Dr. Layton. It was as much his project as it was Jim Jones's. Though it was essential for him to remain in the background for security reasons, Dr. Layton maintained contact with and even control of the experiment through his wife and children." The African-American cult had at its core a Caucasian inner-council, composed of Dr. Layton's family and in-laws.

The press was blind to obvious CIA connections, but survivors of the carnage in Guyana followed the leads and maintained that Jim Jones was "an employee, servant, agent or operative of the Central Intelligence Agency" from 1963—the year the Agency turned to cult cut-outs to conceal MKULTRA mind control activities—until 1978. In October 1981 the survivors of Jonestown filed a $63 million lawsuit against Secretary of State Cyrus Vance and Stansfield Turner, former director of the CIA, currently a teacher at the University of Maryland and a director of the Monsanto Corporation. The suit, filed in U.S. district court in San Francisco, accused Turner of conspiring with Agency operatives to "enhance the economic and political powers of James Warren Jones," and of conducting "mind control and drug experimentation" on the Temple flock.

The suit was dismissed four months later for "failure to prosecute timely." All requests for an appeal were denied.

Ligatures of the CIA clung to the cults. Much of the violence that has since exploded across the front pages was incited by CIA academics at leading universities.

Small wonder, then, that Ted Goertzel, director of the Forum for Policy Research at Rutgers, which maintains a symbiosis with the CIA despite media exposure, should write that the most susceptible victims of "cryptomnesia" (a synonym for false memories) believe "in conspiracies, including the JFK assassination, AIDS conspiracies, as well as the UFO cover-up." The problem, Goertzel says, "may have its origins in early childhood," and is accompanied by "feelings of anomie and anxiety that make the individual more likely to construct false memories out of information stored in the unconscious mind."

This side of gilded rationalizations, the CIA's links to the cults are no manifestation of "cryptomnesia."

Like Jonestown, the Symbionese Liberation Army was a mind control creation unleashed by the Agency. The late political researcher Mae Brussell, whose study of The Firm commenced in 1963 after the assassination of John Kennedy, wrote in 1974 that the rabid guerrilla band "consisted predominantly of CIA agents and police informers." This unsavory group was, Brussell insisted, "an extension of psychological experimentation projects, connected to Stanford Research Institute, Menlo Park." (She went on to lament that "many of the current rash of 'senseless killings,' 'massacres,' and 'zombie-type murders' are committed by individuals who have been in Army hospitals, mental hospitals or prison hospitals, where their heads have been literally taken over surgically to create terror in the community.")

Evidence that the CIA conceived and directed the SLA was obvious. The SLA leadership was trained by Colston Westbrook, a Pennsylvania native. Westbrook was a veteran of the CIA's murderous PHOENIX Program in South Vietnam, where he trained terrorist cadres and death squads. In 1969 he took a job as an administrator of Pacific Architects and Engineers, a CIA proprietary in Southern California. Three of Westbrook's foot soldiers, Emily and William Harris and Angela Atwood (a former police intelligence informer), had been students of the College of Foreign Affairs, a CIA cover at the University of Indiana. Even the SLA symbol, a seven-headed cobra, had been adopted by the OSS (America's wartime intelligence agency) and CIA to designate precepts of brainwashing.

When the smoke cleared at SLA headquarters in L.A., Dr. Martin Orne was called upon to examine Patricia Hearst in preparation for trial. The government charged that she had participated voluntarily in the

SLA's gun-toting crime spree. Orne's was a foregone conclusion—he sided with the government. His opinion was shared by two other psychiatrists called to appraise Ms. Hearst's state of mind, Robert Jay Lifton and Louis Jolyon West. Dr. Lifton was a co-founder of the aforementioned Human Ecology Fund. The CIA contractor that showered Orne with research grants in the 1960s. Dr. West is one of the CIA's most notorious mind control specialists, currently director of UCLA's Neuropsychiatric Institute. It was West who brought a score of mind control psychiatrists of the ultra-right political stripe to the UCLA campus.

Drs. Orne, Lifton and West unanimously agreed that Patty Hearst had been "persuasively coerced" to join the SLA. She had been put through a grueling thought reform regimen. She'd been isolated and sensory deprived, raped, humiliated, badgered, politically indoctrinated with a surrealistic mutation of Third World Marxism. Ms. Hearst was only allowed human companionship when she exhibited signs of submission. Orne and his colleagues assured that attention was narrowed to their psychologizing, conveniently rendering evidence of CIA collusion extraneous to consideration by the jury.

Another psychiatrist called to testify at the trial of "Tania" surfaced with Dr. Orne in 1991 on the board of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation. (The FMSF board is almost exclusively composed of former CIA and military doctors currently employed by major universities. None have backgrounds in ritual abuse—their common interest is behavior modification.) Dr. Margaret Singer, a retired Berkeley Ph.D., studied repatriated prisoners-of-war returning from the Korean War at the Walter Reed Army Institute of Research in Maryland, 1952–58.)

Singer turned up in 1982 on the book jacket of *Raven*—the CIA's codename for Jim Jones—by *San Francisco Examiner* reporters Tim Reiterman and John Jacobs, a thoroughly-researched account of the People's Temple that completely side-steps CIA involvement. Co-author John Jacobs was supposedly one of the country's leading authorities on CIA mind control, a subject he studied at length for a series published by the *Washington Post.* Reiterman had been the *Examiner* reporter on the Patricia Hearst beat. Yet both writers managed to avoid obvious intelligence connections. Dr. Singer commended the book as "the definitive psychohistory of Jim Jones." *Raven,* she opined, conveyed "the essence of psychological and social processes that Jim Jones, the ultimate manipulator, set in motion." The true "manipulators," of course, were operatives of the CIA, and the public disinformation gambit lauded by Dr. Singer was, according to Meiers, in tune with "a concerted attempt to suppress information, stifle investigations, censor writers and manipulate public information."

The CIA and Pentagon have quietly organized and influenced a long line of mind control cults, among them:

The Riverside Lodge of the Ordo Templis Orientis: Also known as The Solar Lodge of the OTO, which followed the teachings of cult messiah Aleister Crowley, whose fixed gaze on the astral equinox resulted in instructions from his deities to form a religious order. Crowley, high priest of the OTO and a British intelligence agent, gave Winifred T. Smith a charter to open an OTO lodge in Pasadena. The high priest of the lodge was Jack Parsons, a rocket expert and founder of the California Institute of Technology. Parsons, who took the oath of the anti-Christ in 1949, contributed to the design of the Pentagon under subsequent CIA director John J. McCloy. He was killed in a still unexplained laboratory explosion. There is a crater on the moon named after him.

The OTO's Solar Lodge in San Bernardino was presided over by Georgina "Jean" Brayton, the daughter of a ranking Air Force officer in the 1960s. The cult subscribed to a grim, apocalyptic view of the world, and like Charles Manson believed that race wars would precipitate the Big Cataclysm. In the Faustian Los Angeles underworld, the lodge was known for its indulgence in sadomasochism, drug dealing, blood drinking, child molestation and murder.

Candace Reos, a former member of the lodge, was deposed by Riverside police in 1969. Reos said that Brayton controlled the thinking of all cult members. One poor soul, she said, was ordered to curb his sexual urges by cutting his wrists every time he was aroused. Mrs. Reos told police, according to the report, that when she became pregnant, Georgina was angry and told her that she would have to condition herself to hate her child. Reos told police that children of the cult's 43 adult members were secluded from their parents and received "training" that took on "very severe tones."

"There was a lot of spanking involved," she said, "a lot of heavy criticism. There was a lot of enclosed in dark rooms." The teachers, she added, "left welts."

If so ordered, adult cultists would beat their children.

According to a Riverside County Sheriff's report, a six year-old child burned the group's school house to the ground. The boy was punished by solitary confinement in a locked shipping crate left in the desert, where the average temperature was 110 degrees, for two months. The boy was chained to a metal plate.

When police freed him, they were nauseated by the suffocating stench of excrement. The child was smothered in flies swarming from a tin-can toilet.

The Bhagwan Shree Rajneesh Movement: In 1985 the *Portland Oregonian* published a 36-part, book-length series linking the cult to opium trafficking, prostitution, money laundering, arson, slave labor, mass poisonings, illegal wiretaps and the stockpiling of guns and biochemical warfare weapons. The year-long *Oregonian* investigation revealed cult ties to CIA-trained mercenaries in El Salvador and the Far East. Domestically, Rajneesh's secret police force worked with Agency operatives.

Finders: On February 7, 1987 Customs agents raided a child-porn ring in Tallahasee, Florida. Eight suspects and six children were taken into custody. The children, according to a Customs Department memo, behaved "like animals in a public park," and "were not aware of the function and purpose of telephones, televisions and toilets."

The children told police that they were forced to live outdoors and were given food only as a reward. A check on the backgrounds of the adults turned up a police report, "specific in describing 'bloody rituals' and sex orgies involving children, and an as-yet unsolved murder." Customs agents searched a cult safe house and discovered a computer room and documents recording "high-tech" bank transfers, explosives, and a set of instructions advising cult members on moving children through jurisdictions around the country. One photographic album found in the house featured the execution and disembowelment of goats, and snapshots, according to a Customs report, of "adults and children dressed in white sheets participating in a bloody ritual."

An American passport was found. The investigating agents contacted the State Department and were advised to "terminate further investigation."

They investigated anyway, reporting that "the CIA made contact and admitted to owning the Finders ... as a front for a domestic training organization, but that it had 'gone bad.'" The late wife of Marion David Pettie, the cult's leader, had worked for the Agency, and his son had been an employee of Air America, the heroin-riddled CIA proprietary. Yet Pettie denied to a reporter for *U.S. News & World Report* any connection to the CIA. Police in Washington refused to comment. Officials of the CIA dismissed as "hogwash" allegations of any connection to the Finders cult.

MOVE: On May 13, 1985 MOVE's Philadelphia headquarters was firebombed by local police. Not only did the fire consume the cult's home—it devastated the entire neighborhood, leaving 11 dead and 250 homeless. The group was cofounded by Vince Leapheart, aka John Africa, a Korean veteran. His intellectual mentor and source of funding was Donald Glassey, a lecturer at the University of Pennsylvania's School of Social Work. Glassey was an admitted police "informant," but conducted himself like a paid provocateur. He purchased weapons for the cult with cash drawn from city coffers. John Africa, the cult's titular head, claimed to be a messiah, and like Jim Jones to have Godly "healing" powers and "total control" over his followers.

O.T.A.: The Order of the Temple of Astarte in Pasadena, California is a "hermetic" occult organization that practices "Magick in the Western Tradition." The cult is led by Fraters Khenemel, a police officer, and Aleyin, a veteran Green Beret. The cult's everyday language is unusual for a mystical order—one group schedule is laden with words like "operation," "sixteen-thirty hours," and "travel orders." Demonology is among the OTA's primary occult interests.

The police connection recalls the statement of Louis Tackwood, the former LAPD provocateur whose revelations of secret police subterfuge set off a political tempest in Los Angeles in 1973. "You don't know," he told journalist Donald Freed, "but there's a devil worship cult in Pasadena. Actually in Altadena." Tackwood alleged that the cultists were "on the LAPD payroll."

The CIA and Pentagon cooperate in the creation of cults. To be sure, the Association of National Security Alumni, a public interest veterans group opposed to covert operations, considers it a "primary issue of concern" that the Department of Defense has a "perceived role in satanic cult activities, which qualify in and of themselves as very damaging exercises in mind control and behavioral modification."

It is beginning to dawn on the psychiatric community at large that the CIA's mind control clique is a menace reminiscent of Nazi medical experimentation. In 1993, Dr. Corydon Hammond, a professor at the University of Utah's School of Medicine, conducted a seminar on federally-funded mind control experiments. Topics covered by Hammond included brainwashing, post-hypnotic programming and the induction of multiple personalities by the CIA. Hammond contended that the cult underground has roots in Nazi Germany, and that the CIA's cult mind control techniques were based upon those of Nazi scientists recruited by the CIA for Cold Warfare. (Researcher Lenny Lapon estimates in *Mass Murderers in White Coats* that 5,000 Nazis resettled in the U.S. after WW II.) Hammond was forced to drop this line of inquiry by professional ridicule, especially from the CIA's False Memory Syndrome Foundation, and a barrage of death threats. At a recent regional conference on ritual child abuse, he regretted that he could no longer speak on the theme of government mind control.

The psychological community is waking to the threat in its ranks, to judge by APA surveys and personal communications with ranking members of the mental health field, but the world at large remains in the dark. The "mass hysteria" and "false memory" bromides disseminated by the establishment press obscure federal and academic connections to the mind control cults, which are defended largely by organized pedophiles, cultists and hired guns of psychiatry. An ambitious disinformation gambit has led the world at large to side with cultists operating under federal protection. As at Jonestown and Chiery, Switzerland, the denouement of cult activity often ends in the destruction of all witnesses. This cycle of abuse and murder can only be ended by full public awareness of the federal mind control initiative.

Part Two: The CIA, The False Memory Syndrome Foundation & The Politics of Ritual Abuse

The conference session bears a passing resemblance to a 12-Step meeting. Assembled in a Portland religious retreat, members of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF), all accused of child abuse, are encouraged to unload their anguish. Only women take the stage (they leave reporters with a sympathetic impression—men stigmatized by child abuse do not). Pamela Freyd, a Foundation founder, assures these victims of pernicious therapies they are not alone. The Foundation's office in Philadelphia, she says, takes 60 calls on a typical day from distraught adults hounded by their own confused children, rogue therapists and sensation-seeking pack journalists.

The number of dues-paying members (each contributes $100 a year) varies according to the source. The group reported in January 1993 that 1,200 families had made contact in its first year of operation. The same month, the *San Jose Mercury News* declared flatly that "nearly 3,000 families" from across the country had been recruited. The FMSF now claims 5,000 families. *Time* magazine raised the figure to "7,000 individuals and families who have sought assistance."

The Foundation's distinctive handling of statistics is incessant. In April of this year the FMSF claimed 12,000 families have been strained by false child abuse allegations. A month later, the figure dropped to "9,500 U.S. families." Yet the Foundation prides itself on accuracy. One FMSF newsletter advises members to insist the media "report accurate information. The rumors and misinformation surrounding the false accusations based on recovery of repressed memories are shocking." The same author regrets that "65% of accusations of abuse are now unsubstantiated, a whopping jump from 35% in 1976." This figure, once gleefully disseminated by such pedophile defense groups as NAMBLA (North American Man/Boy Love Association) and VOCAL (Victims of Child Abuse Laws) was debunked years ago. It was fabricated by Douglas Besherov of the American Enterprise Institute, a hard right-wing propaganda factory fueled by the Olin Foundation, a CIA funding cover. (Christian conservatives are often accused of propagating ritual abuse "hysteria," yet in the 1992 presidential election the para-conservative wing of the Republican Party slipped into its platform a strategy to put an end to investigations of child abuse.)

The FMSF selectively ignores child abuse data that disagree with their own. Judith Herman, author of *Trauma and Recovery,* reported in the *Harvard Mental Health Letter* that false abuse allegations by children "are rare, in the range of 2–8% of reported cases. False retractions of true complaints are far more common, especially when the victim is not sufficiently protected after disclosure and therefore succumbs to intimidation by the perpetrator or other family members who feel that they must preserve secrecy."

Other statistics shunned by the False Memory Syndrome Foundation include a survey presented at a 1992 psychiatric conference that found that a full 88% of all therapists in a large sampling consider ritual child abuse to be a very real social problem with devastating emotional effects. Another: In 1990 the State University of New York at Buffalo polled a national sampling of clinical psychologists on ritual abuse. About 800 psychologists—a third of the poll—were aware of treating at least one case. Only 5% of all child abuse cases ever enter the courtroom—half of these end with the child in the custody of the abusive parent.

The recovered memory debate was discussed at a 1993 conference on multiple personality disorder. Richard Lowenstein, a psychiatrist from the University of Maryland Medical School, argued that the Foundation is "media-directed, dedicated to putting out disinformation."

Other conference participants contemplated funding sources and "possible CIA connections."

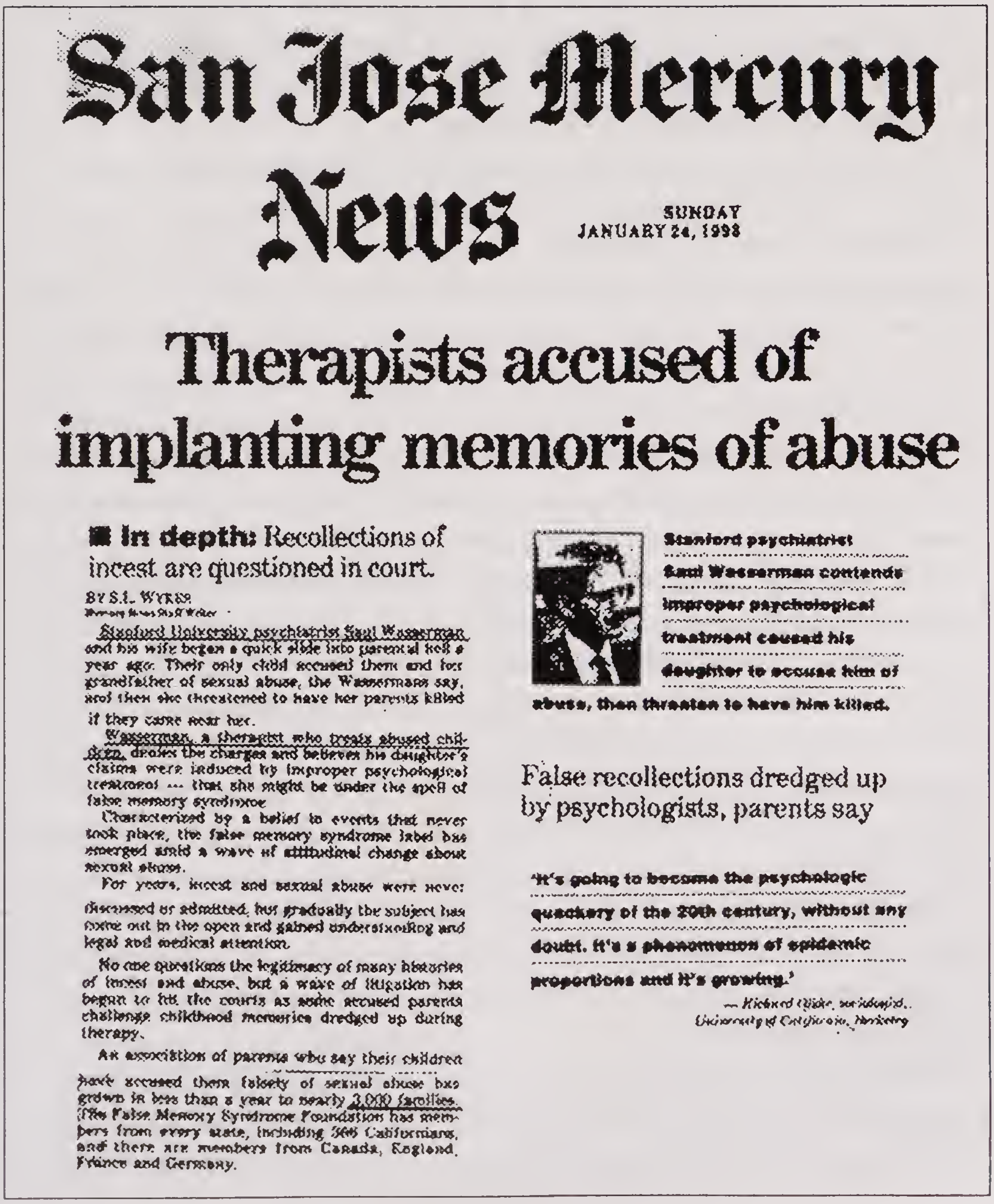

San Jose Mercury News

SUNDAY
JANUARY 24, 1993

Therapists accused of implanting memories of abuse

■ In depth: Recollections of incest are questioned in court.

BY S.L. WYKES
Mercury News Staff Writer

Stanford University psychiatrist Saul Wasserman and his wife began a quick slide into parental hell a year ago. Their only child accused them and her grandfather of sexual abuse, the Wassermans say, and then she threatened to have her parents killed if they came near her.

Wasserman, a therapist who treats abused children, denies the charges and believes his daughter's claims were induced by improper psychological treatment — that she might be under the spell of false memory syndrome.

Characterized by a belief in events that never took place, the false memory syndrome label has emerged amid a wave of attitudinal change about sexual abuse.

For years, incest and sexual abuse were never discussed or admitted, but gradually the subject has come out in the open and gained understanding and legal and medical attention.

No one questions the legitimacy of many histories of incest and abuse, but a wave of litigation has begun to hit the courts as some accused parents challenge childhood memories dredged up during therapy.

An association of parents who say their children have accused them falsely of sexual abuse has grown in less than a year to nearly 3,000 families. The False Memory Syndrome Foundation has members from every state, including 366 Californians, and there are members from Canada, England, France and Germany.

Stanford psychiatrist Saul Wasserman contends improper psychological treatment caused his daughter to accuse him of abuse, then threaten to have him killed.

False recollections dredged up by psychologists, parents say

'It's going to become the psychologic quackery of the 20th century, without any doubt. It's a phenomenon of epidemic proportions and it's growing.'

— Richard Ofshe, sociologist, University of California, Berkeley

The Devil Denuded

The CIA, in fact, has several designates on the FMSF advisory board. They have in common backgrounds in mind control experimentation. Their very presence on the board, and their peculiar backgrounds, reveal some heavily obscured facts about ritual child abuse.

Martin T. Orne, a senior CIA researcher, is an original board member of the Foundation, and a psychiatrist at the University of Pennsylvania's Experimental Psychiatry Lab in Philadelphia. In 1962 his forays into hypno-programming (the elicitation of "anti-social" behavior, dissolving memory and other mind-subduing techniques) were financed by a CIA front at Cornell University. He was also funded by Boston's Scientific Engineering Institute, another front, and a clearinghouse for the Agency's investigation of the occult.

The CIA and Pentagon have formed a partnership in the creation of cults. To be sure, the Association of National Security Alumni, a public interest veterans group opposed to clandestine ops, considers it a "primary issue of concern" that the Department of Defense has a "perceived role in satanic cult activities, which qualify in and of themselves as very damaging exercises in mind control."

The smoothing over of the national security state's cult connections is handled by academic "experts."

A forerunner of the Foundation is based in Buffalo, New York, the Committee for Scientific Examination of Religion, best known for the publication of *Satanism in America: How the Devil Got More Than His Due,* widely considered to be a legitimate study. The authors turn up their noses to ritual abuse, dismissing the hundreds of reports around the country as mass "hysteria." Cult researcher Carl Raschke reported in a March, 1991 article that he coincidentally met Hudson Frew, a *Satanism in America* co-author, at a Berkeley bookstore. "Frew was wearing a five-pointed star, or pentagram, the symbol of witchcraft and earth magic," Raschke says. Shawn Carlson, a contributor to the book, is identified by the media as a "physicist." Yet he runs the Gaia Press in El Cerrito, California, a New Age publishing house with an emphasis on witchcraft and occultic lore. Carlson is also a "scientific and technical consultant" to the Committee for Scientific Investigation of Claims of the Paranormal (a promoter of the "false memory" theory of ritual abuse and UFO abductions), publisher of the *Skeptical Inquirer.*

The FMS Foundation is no less eccentric. Within two years of its founding, it was clear that the Foundation leadership was far from disinterested on the workings of childhood memory, and concealed a secret sexual and political agenda.

FMSF founder Ralph Underwager, director of the Institute of Psychological Therapies in Minnesota, was forced to resign in 1993. Underwager (a former Lutheran pastor) and his wife Hollida Wakefield publish a journal, *Issues in Child Abuse Allegations,* written by and for child abuse "skeptics." His departure from the False Memory Syndrome Foundation was hastened by a remark in an interview, appearing in an Amsterdam journal for pedophiles, that it was "God's Will" adults engage in sex with children. (His wife Hollida remained on the Foundation's board after he left.) As it happens, holy dispensation for pedophiles is the exact credo of the Children of God cult. It was fitting, then, when Underwager filed an affidavit on behalf of cult members tried in France in 1992, insisting that the accused were positively "not guilty of abuse upon children." In the interview, he prevailed upon pedophiles everywhere to shed stigmatization as "wicked and reprehensible" users of children.

In keeping with the Foundation's creative use of statistics, Dr. Underwager told a group of British reporters in 1994 that "scientific evidence" proved 60% of all women molested as children believed the experience was "good for them."

Dr. Underwager invariably sides with the defense. His grandiloquent orations have graced courtrooms around the world, often by satellite. Defense lawyers for Woody Allen turned to him, he boasts, when Mia Farrow accused her estranged husband of molesting their seven year-old daughter. Underwager is a virtual icon to the Irish Catholic lobby in Dublin, which raised its hoary hackles against a child abuse prevention program in the Irish Republic. He was, until his advocacy of pedophila tarnished an otherwise glittering reputation, widely quoted in the press, dismissing ritual child abuse as a hysterical aberration.

He is the world's foremost authority on false memory, but in the courtroom he is repeatedly exposed as a charlatan. In 1988, a trial court decision in New York State held that Dr. Underwager was "not qualified to render any opinion as to whether or not (the victim) was sexually molested." In 1990 his testimony on memory was ruled improper "in the absence of any evidence that the results of Underwager's work had been accepted in the scientific community." And In Minnesota a judge ruled that Underwager's theories on "learned memory" were the same as "having an expert tell the jury that (the victim) was not telling the truth."

Peter and Pamela Freyd, executive directors of the Foundation, joined forces with Underwager in 1991, and their story is equally wretched. Jennifer Freyd, their daughter, a professor of psychology at the University of Oregon, openly leveled accusations of abuse against her parents at an August 1993 mental health conference in Ann Arbor, Michigan.

"My family of origin was troubled in many observable ways," she said. "I refer to the things that were never 'forgotten' and 'recovered,' but to things that we all knew about." She gave her father's alcoholism as an example. "During my childhood, my father sometimes discussed his own experiences of being sexually abused as an 11 year-old boy, and called himself a 'kept boy.'" Peter Freyd graduated to male prostitution as an adolescent.

At the age of 13, Jennifer Freyd composed a poem about her father's nocturnal visits:

I am caught in a web,
A web of deep, deep terror.

she wrote. The diaries of her youth chronicle the "reactions and feelings (guilt, shame and terror) of a troubled girl and young woman. My parents oscillated between denying these symptoms and feelings... to using knowledge of these same symptoms and feelings to discredit me."

"My father," she says, "told various people that I was brain damaged." The accusation was unlikely. At the time, Jennifer Freyd was a graduate student on a National Science Foundation fellowship. She has taught at Cornell and received numerous research awards. The "brain damage" apologia did not wash. Her mother suggested that Jennifer's memories were "confabulations," and faulted therapeutic intervention. Pamela Freyd turned to her own psychiatrist, Dr. Harold Lief, currently an advisory board member of the Foundation, to diagnose Jennifer.

"He explained to me that he did not believe I was abused," Jennifer recalls. Dr. Lief's diagnosis was based on his belief that Peter Freyd's fantasies were strictly "homoerotic." Of course, his daughter furrows a brow at the assumption that homoerotic fantasies or a heterosexual marriage exclude the possibility of child molestation. Lief's skewed logic is a trademark of the Foundation.

He is a close colleague of the CIA's Martin Orne. Dr. Lief, a former major in the Army medical corps, joined the University of Pennsylvania faculty in 1968, the peak of federally-funded behavioral modification experiments at Holmesburg Prison. Dr. Orne consulted with him on several studies in hypnotic programming. His academic writing reveals a peculiar range of professional interests, including "Orgasm in the Postoperative Transsexual" for *Archives of Sexual Behavior,* and an exploration of the possibility of life after death for a journal on mental diseases edited by Foundation fellow Paul McHugh. Lief is a director of the Center for Sexuality and Religion, past president of the Sex Information and Education Council.

And an original board member of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation. Two others, Jon Baron from Penn U. and Ray Hyman (an executive editor of the aforementioned *Skeptical Inquirer*), a professor of psychology at the University of Oregon, resigned from the board after Jennifer Freyd went public with her account of childhood abuse and the facetious attempts of her parents and their therapist to discredit her. They were replaced by David Dinges, co-director—with the ubiquitous Martin

Orne—of the Unit for Experimental Psychiatry at the University of Pennsylvania.

"At times I am flabbergasted that my memory is considered 'false,'" Jennifer says, "and my alcoholic father's memory is considered rational and sane." She does not, after all, remember impossible abuses: "I remember incest in my father's house.... My first memories came when I was at home a few hours after my second session with my therapist, a licensed clinical psychologist working within an established group in a large and respected medical clinic.

"During that second visit to my therapist's office, I expressed great anxiety about the upcoming holiday visit from my parents. My therapist asked about half way into the session, whether I had ever been sexually abused. I was immediately thrown into a strange state. No one had ever asked me such a question. I responded, 'no, but....' I went home and within a few hours I was shaking uncontrollably, overwhelmed with intense and terrible flashbacks." Jennifer asks herself why her parents are believed. "In the end, is it precisely because I was abused that I am to be discredited despite my personal and professional success?"

Pamela Freyd published an open letter defending her husband in Ralph Underwager's *Issues in Child Abuse Accusations* in 1991. It was reprinted in *Confabulations,* a book published a year later. Laced with lubricious sentiment, the book bemoans the "destruction of families" brought on by false child abuse accusations, and maligns "cult-like" support groups and feminists, or "lesbian cults." Executive director Freyd often refers to the feminist groups that have taken up the cause of child abuse survivors as "lesbians," after the bizarre Dr. Underwager, who claims, "these women may be jealous that males are able to love each other, be comrades, friends, be close, intimate."

Pamela Freyd's account of the family history, Jennifer insists, is patently false. In an electronic message from her father, he openly acknowledged that in his version of the story "fictional elements were deliberately inserted."

"'Fictional is rather an astounding choice of words," Jennifer observed at the Ann Arbor conference. The article written by her parents contends that Jennifer was denied tenure at another university due to a lack of published research. "In fact," Jennifer counters, "I moved to the University of Oregon in 1987, just four years after receiving my Ph.D. to accept a tenured position as associate professor in the psychology department, one of the world's best psychology departments.... My mother sent the Jane Doe article to my colleagues during my promotion year—that is, the year my case for promotion to full professor was being considered. I was absolutely mortified to learn of this violation of my privacy and this violation of truth."

Manipulative tactics are another Foundation imprimatur. Lana

Alexander, editor of a newsletter for survivors of child sexual abuse, observes that "many people view the false memory syndrome theory as a calculated defense strategy developed by perpetrators and the lawyers and expert witnesses who defend them."

A legitimizing barrage of stories in the press has shaped public opinion and warmed the clime for defense attorneys. The concept of false memory serves the same purpose as Holocaust denial. It shapes opinion. Unconscionable crimes are obstructed, the accused is endowed with the status of martyr, the victim reviled.

The emphasis on image is obvious in "How Do We Know We are Not Representing Pedophiles," an article written for the February 29, 1992 *FMS Foundation Newsletter,* by Pamela Freyd. In it, she derides the suggestion that many members of the group could be molesters because "we are a good-looking bunch of people, greying hair, well dressed, healthy, smiling; just about every person who has attended is someone you would surely find interesting and want to count as a friend."

Friendly Fire

> *People forget things. Horrible things. Here at the Foundation someone had a repressed memory, or what would be called a repressed memory, that she had been sexually abused.*
>
> —Pamela Freyd
> FMS Foundation Founder

The debate's bloodiest stage is the courtroom. The hired guns of Martin Orne's circle of psychiatrists are constantly called upon to blow smoke at the jury's gallery to conceal CIA mind control operations. This branch of the psychiatric community is steeped in the programming of serial killers, political assassins and experiments on involuntary subjects. Agency psychiatrists on the witness stand direct the press away from the CIA, and the prosecution to a predetermined end.

Orne's influence contributed to the outcome of a high-profile abuse case, the $8 million lawsuit filed by Gary Ramona of Napa, California against child therapist Marche Isabella and psychiatrist Richard Rose. Ramona charged that his daughter Holly's therapists elicited from her flashbacks of sexual molestation that never occurred, decimating his marriage and career as a vice president at Robert Mondavi wineries. His wife and employer, note, immediately believed Holly's accusations. In May of 1994 Ramona received a $500,000 jury award. He hailed the decision as a "tremendous victory."

Nevertheless, Holly Ramona still maintains that she was sexually abused by her father, though no criminal charges have been filed. Holly first confronted her father with the allegations on March 15, 1990, with her mother and Isabella present. She filed a civil action against him in Los Angeles County, but before it went to trial her father's suit got underway in Napa.

The suit turned on the use of sodium amytal to resurrect buried memories. Holly Ramona exhibited telltale symptoms of abuse—fear of gynecological examinations, a phobia of pointy teeth, like her father's—and asked to be treated with sodium amytal. Dr. Rose wrote in his notes that under the influence of the drug, Holly "remembered specific details of sexual molestation." But Orne, who has pioneered in the use of sodium amytal in hypnosis research, cautioned in a court brief that the drug is "not useful in ascertaining 'truth.' The patient becomes receptive to suggestions due to the context and to the comments of the interviewers."

Yet the jury foreman stated for the record that Isabella and Rose *did not* implant false memories of abuse, as Holly's father had complained, but were negligent in reinforcing the memories as Holly described them under the influence of the barbiturate. The court considered it irrelevant whether Holly actually suffered abuse, narrowing the legal focus instead to the chemical evocation of Holly's recollections and her therapist's leading questions.

Left hanging was the question of Ramona's guilt or innocence, not exactly an irrelevant issue. Orne offered no opinion. The "tremendous victory" in Napa, given these facts, begins to look like a manipulation of the court system, especially the use of "expert" testimony.

The therapists did not, contrary to most press reports, bear the full brunt of blame. The jury found that Ramona himself bore 5% of the blame for what happened to him, Holly's therapists 55%, and 45% by the girl's mother and the Robert Mondavi winery.

But the 55% solution is diluted by Holly's memories. Contrary to the impression left by the press, her past has not been explained away. "I wouldn't be here if there

Pamela Freyd, Ph.D

was a question in my mind," she testified in Napa.

False memory had no clinical history or symptomology (repressed memory has both), but the concept had held up in court.

All that remained was to provide a scientific explanation. The Foundation had spread the word that a "syndrome" was winding through society and "destroying families." But what is the origin of false (not inaccurate or clouded or fragmented) memories? What are the symptoms? It remained to supply a cognitive model for false memories of ritual molestation.

One of the most prolific and quotable popularizers of false memory is Elizabeth Loftus, a professor of psychology and law at the University of Washington in Seattle, and an advisory board member of the Foundation. Her dual academic interests have fueled suspicions that the organization is more committed to defending perpetrators than ferreting out the facts. Loftus testified in over 150 criminal cases prior to joining the Foundation, always on behalf of defendants. In 1991 she published a professional autobiography, *Witness for the Defense,* a study of eight criminal trials in which she appeared as an expert witness. In her book, Loftus—billed as "the expert who puts memory on trial"—conceded that her critics deem her research "unproven in real-life situations," and her courtroom dissertations "premature and highly prejudicial."

One book reviewer for the *New York Times* grumbled: "Her testimony would be less controversial if she could distinguish between the innocent and the guilty and reserve her help for the former."

Elizabeth Loftus has two criteria for taking the stand. The first is when eyewitness identification is the sole or primary evidence against the defendant. Secondly, the accused must act innocent—she regrets testifying on behalf of Ted Bundy because the serial killer once smiled at the prosecutor, which she regards as an expression of guilt—and defense attorneys must believe it.

Loftus stood at the Harvard Medical School podium in May, 1994 to inform a conference on false memory of her research, "in which false memories about childhood events were created in 24 men and women ages 18 to 63." Dr. Loftus reported that the parents of volunteers "cooperated to produce a list of events that had supposedly taken place in the volunteer's early life." Three of the events actually took place. But one, a shopping trip, never happened. Some of the volunteers had memories, implanted by suggestion, of wandering lost on the fictitious shopping expedition.

Karen Olio, the author of scores of articles on sexual abuse, complains that Loftus's memory studies "examine only the possibility of implanting a single memory with which most people could easily identify (being lost in a mall, awakened by a noise in the night). The possibility of 'implanting' terrifying and shameful memories that differ markedly from an individual's experience, such as memories of childhood abuse in individuals who do not have a trauma history," remains to be proven.

Psychiatrist John Briere of the University of Southern California has found that nearly two-thirds of all ritual abuse survivors report episodic or complete amnesia at some point after it occurred. The younger the child, the more violent the abuse, the more likely that memory lapses occurred. These findings have been duplicated at the University of California at San Francisco by psychiatrist Lenore Terr, who concluded that children subjected to repeated abuse were more likely to repress memories of it than victims of a single traumatic event.

Clinical psychologist Catherine Gould has treated scores of ritually abused children at her office in Encino, California. At the September 1993 National Conference on Crimes Against Children in Washington, D.C., Gould objected that the studies of Elizabeth Loftus ignore past research on trauma and its influence on memory.

"My concern about Elizabeth Loftus," Gould says, "is that she has stated in print, and correctly so, that her data tells us nothing about the nature of memory of traumatic events. And yet she has failed to protest the misapplication of her findings by groups who are involved in discrediting the accounts survivors are giving of their traumatic history. I believe that Dr. Loftus, like other psychologists, has an ethical responsibility to do everything possible to ensure that her research findings are interpreted and applied accurately, and are not manipulated to serve the political agenda of groups like the False Memory Syndrome Foundation. I question whether she has met this ethical responsibility."

Her study did not live up to its promise. But now that she had "proven" that a false memory could be implanted, friends of the Foundation at the Harvard conference announced they'd identified the neurological and cognitive causes of disorder. Daniel Schacter, a Harvard psychologist and conference organizer, claimed that the "confabulator" selects a fragment of a real memory, "but confuses its true context, and draws on other bits of experience to construct a story that makes sense of it." Dr. Morris Moscovitch, a neuro-psychologist at the University of Toronto, claimed that "brain damage" could also evoke false memories. He noted that mental patients with frontal lobe defects frequently confuse imaginary stories with actual memories.

A superficially plausible revelation was provided by Cornell psychologist Stephen Ceci, who reported on five studies of 574 preschool children. After 10 weeks of repeated questioning, 58% of them concocted a false account for at least one fictitious event.

But like the studies of Elizabeth Loftus, Ceci did not attempt to explain the supposed amnesiac effect of severe trauma on children and adults alike (veterans of WW II and Vietnam have been known to "forget" atrocities of war). Besides, the average preschooler is bound to invent at least one fantasy in 10 long weeks of repetitive questioning. Toddlers aren't known for their consummate adherence to objective reality. An invisible playmate and the Cat in the Hat are not "false memories."

The research results presented at the Harvard conference were not exactly staggering. All that had been proven was that children forget, become confused and make things up.

Seattle therapist James Cronin, one of the Foundation's harshest critics, believes that the false memory concept is promoted by "fact and artifice" to a public "conditioned to the fragmentation of knowledge, intellectual charades, elitism and the sterile abstractions that often pass for university education and expertise. The so-called experts now jumping on the side of false memory and therapist 'bias' are opportunists."

Yet the *New York Times* hailed the Harvard conference as "epic." The conference had given a gracious "scientific nod to the frailty of memory." Victims of aggravated child abuse had nothing to celebrate, but the *Times* reporter was ecstatic. At long last, scientists everywhere had arrived at "a consensus on the mental mechanisms that can foster false memories." A consensus? Actually, the "consensus" of psychologists, at least the 88% mentioned earlier—only a vast majority—believe it to be a very real scourge.

The *Times* story is typical of the scorn the press has shown ritual abuse victims and their therapists.

60 Minutes, for example, publicly exonerated Kelly Michaels, a daycare worker in New Jersey, of charges that she sexually molested dozens of youngsters in 1984. Michaels was sentenced to 47 years in prison for sodomizing the children in her care with kitchen implements, among related charges. Her conviction was overturned in March 1993 when the state appeals court ruled that Michaels had not had a fair trial.

But in its rush to present Michaels as a blushing innocent, the *60 Minutes* research department somehow overlooked a May 1991 *New York Times* story on the abuse trial, and the testimony of four Essex County corrections officers who witnessed Miss Michaels and her father kissing and "fondling" one another during jail visitations. Jerry Vitiello, a jailer, said that "he saw Ms. Michaels use his tongue when kissing his daughter, rub her buttocks and put his hand on her breasts." Similar incestuous liaisons were detailed in the courtroom by three women working in the jail. The bizarre sexual antics of Kelly Michaels—damningly chronicled in *Nap Time* by Lisa Manshel in 1990—were nixed from the one-sided *60 Minutes* account, which made her out to be grist for the meat grinder of wrong-headed child abuse laws.

The Forgettable "Remembering Satan"

The False Memory Syndrome Foundation made its collective debut in "Remembering Satan," a two-part story by Lawrence Wright in the *New Yorker* for April and May 1993. The story (republished in 1994 in book form) concerns a ritual abuse trial in Olympia, Washington that culminated with a 20-year prison sentence for Thurston County Sheriff Paul Ingram, chairman of the local Republican Party. Ingram has since filed motions to withdraw his guilty plea, a move rejected by an appellate court in 1992. Also charged, but not convicted, were Jim Rabie, a lobbyist with the Washington State Law Enforcement Association and a former police detective assigned to child abuse cases, and Ray Risch, an employee of the State Patrol's body-and-fender shop. Wright's conclusion, however, is based on the opinions of False Memory Syndrome Foundation psychiatrists: that accusations made by Ingram's two daughters, and his own confession to police, were fantasies misinterpreted by Ingram himself and his daughters as actual memories.

Wright fumigates any question of abuse with false memory theory. Among the authorities consulted by Wright was Foundation board member Paul McHugh, director of the department of psychiatry and behavioral sciences at Johns Hopkins. Like Margaret Singer, he is a veteran of the Walter Reed Army Institute of Research (1961–64) and moves in political circles. For three years (1986–89), McHugh was chairman of the bio-psychology study section of the National Institutes of Health, and a former member of the Maryland Governor's Advisory Commission.

McHugh is an unshakable skeptic of repressed memories. He told Wright that "most severe traumas are not blocked out by children but are remembered all too well." *Most,* in fact, are. But McHugh's own professional opinion leaves open the possibility that some severe traumas are repressed.

He cites as an example the children of Chowchilla, California, who were kidnapped in a school bus and buried alive. McHugh claims they remembered the horror "all too well." Not exactly. In fact, the FBI's subsequent use of investigative hypnosis was largely the result of the Chowchilla children's failure of memory. After their release, none of the children had a clear recollection of the kidnappers, could not identify them—and neither did the bus driver, Ed Ray, who managed to recite the license-plate number of the abductor's van under hypnosis.

Wright's defense of Ingram turns on the opinion of Richard Ofshe, a Berkeley psychologist, reputed mind control expert and friend of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation. Ofshe has written, Wright explains, "extensively about how the thought-control techniques developed in Communist china, the Soviet Union and North Korea had come to be employed and refined by various religious cults in the United

States." Pointing to mind control in Communist countries is a favorite tactic of the American mind control fraternity to divert attention from the highly sophisticated techniques employed in "democratic" countries (often in the form of experimentation on unknowing subjects). This historical revision is a fine example of "mirror imaging," the CIA technique of vilifying others, and ignoring the Agency's own role in the formation and manipulation of mind control cults. Ofshe has not been directly linked to the CIA, but his work parrots the writings of UCLA's Louis Jolyon West and other psychiatrists with Agency credentials.

Wright somehow failed to mention that Ofshe is sharply at odds with much of the American Psychological Association. He has filed a suit, with Margaret Singer, for $30 million against the APA for engaging in a "conspiracy" to "destroy" their reputations and prevent them from testifying in the courtroom. Both Ms. Singer and Richard Ofshe derive a significant part of their incomes as consultants and expert witnesses on behalf of accused child abusers. Their complaint, filed under federal racketeering laws—tripling any financial damages—claims that members of the APA set out with "repeated lies" to "discredit them and impair their careers."

The Association flatly denied the charges. Two courts quickly dismissed the case. The APA released a statement to the press stating that the organization had merely advised members against testifying in court on the subject of brainwashing with "persuasive coercion" (a concept, after all, used during the Korean war by the CIA to justify barbaric mind control experimentation on American citizens), and had in no way conspired to impair the careers of Ofshe, Singer or anyone else.

Many in Ofshe's own profession believe him to be a world-class opportunist. He is a constant in newspaper interviews and on the talk show circuit, where he claims there is "no evidence" to support ritual abuse allegations. His categorical denial ignore's Ingram's own confession and a number of jury decisions across the country. And then there are, to cite one documented example of evidence from the glut that Ofshe ignores, the tunnels beneath the McMartin preschool, the most widely-publicized case. And a raid on the Children of God compound in Argentina in 1993 turned up videos of ritual abuse and child pornography. Evidence does exist—Ofshe simply refuses to acknowledge the fact. A cult specialist with Ofshe's credentials would surely explore the abundance of evidence if he was a legitimate psychologist. Instead, he chirps a categorical "no evidence," perfectly aware that most mental health professionals will see through him. A credulous public will not.

On the December 3, 1993 *Rolanda* talk show, a woman was interviewed who'd had flashback memories of abuse before consulting with a therapist. Dr. Ofshe appeared on the program, his silver beard groomed, looking every inch the authority. Rolanda asked Ofshe if "a terrible childhood memory, as bad as child abuse, (can) actually be repressed?"

"There is absolutely no reason to think that that is true," Ofshe told her. "And it's not just what I say—this is the sum and substance of everything science knows about how memory works." This, of course, is a transparent lie. Ofshe dismissed repressed memories of abuse as the reigning "psychological quackery of the 20th century."

Dr. Daniel Lutzker, a psychologist at the Milton Erickson Institute, was sitting in the audience—turning crimson with rage at Ofshe's misrepresentations of the psychology of trauma. He stood up and argued that sex abuse can indeed begat buried recollections. "Repressed memories," Lutzker countered, "are not only important, they are the cornerstone of most psychotherapies. The fact is that the more awful the experience, the more likely it is to be repressed!"

Ofshe responded that there was "no evidence" so support such "nonsense."

Grimacing with disbelief, Lutzker said that Ofshe wouldn't make such outrageous comments if he bothered to pick up "any basic textbook on psychotherapy."

"Your making it up!" Ofshe spat. Lutzker stared at him in disbelief.

But the crowning contradiction to Ofshe's "expert" opinions appeared in a September 1994 *L.A. Weekly* article on alien abductions (another phenomenon said by the Foundation to breed "false memories").

"There are a lot of not particularly well-certified people out there," Dr. Ofshe told Dave Gardetta, "using very powerful techniques on people. Visualizing this kind of stuff under hypnosis—abduction, Satan cults, sexual abuse—is the closest thing that anyone can experience short of the experience itself. That's why it's so traumatic to the individuals undergoing hypno-therapy, and why the hypno-therapist today can be seen as a new form of *sexual predator.*"

But one morning, shortly thereafter, Gardetta awoke to find a triangular rash on the palm of his left hand.

"It didn't surprise me," Gardetta wrote. "Things around the house—which sits on a hilltop in a semi-rural area—had been getting weird. A jet-wash noise buzzed some afternoons around the house, its origin impossible to discern. Lights were turning themselves on, and the alarm system's motion sensor was tripping itself every morning between 5 and 6. One early evening, small footsteps crossed the roof. I ran outside to find the electrical wires leading to a nearby telephone pole swaying in the windless dusk."

The mysterious federal mind control fraternity had struck again, leaving behind more memories to be denounced by the "skeptics" of the FMS Foundation—the CIA's answer to the Flat Earth Society.

Chapter Four

Ray Buckey's Press Corps & the Tunnels of McMartin

A fusillade of press reports, OpEd Columns and television documentaries have dismissed the McMartin case as a "witch hunt" born of mass hysteria, coercive therapy, false memories and greed. Yet all seven jurors attending a press conference after the second trial raised their hands when asked who among them believed children had been abused at the preschool. So why the call to public denial from the press?

After the initial flurry of press coverage of the McMartin Preschool molestation case, a number of sympathetic reporters and psychiatrists publicly exonerated Ray Buckey and his co-defendants. This observer's gallery of "skeptics" also deny that ritual abuse is a social problem.

The argument consistently leads to the lament that the McMartin allegations were incited by mass hysteria, an ambitious district attorney and an incompetent child therapist. The hysteria thesis, promoted by a small group of pedophile defense psychologists, mostly, has appeared in publications of stature including the *Los Angeles Times, San Francisco Chronicle, Wall Street Journal, Village Voice, Harper's, New Yorker* and *Newsweek.* The McMartin case was the subject of an Oliver Stone cable feature.

Media boosters of the defense neglect to acknowledge the most damning evidence in the McMartin case. Instead, they explain away superficial, carefully-sifted pieces of the case. In preparation for the trial, 389 toddlers were interviewed—nearly all of them described abuse at the preschool, and do to this day. Some 80 percent had physical symptoms, including blunt force trauma of sexual areas, scarring, rectal bleeding and sexual diseases.

Interestingly enough, skeptics of ritual abuse in the public print often have dubious bona fides themselves. Some even participate secretly in the pedophile and occult undergrounds, most notably a couple of Los

Angeles writers who have written the only two book available on McMartin, taking mental health professionals, police, the press and prosecutors to task for pursuing false allegations of abuse.

The Politics of Child Abuse, by Paul and Shirley Eberle, purports to be something of a definitive investigation. A blurb for the book exults: "This has got to be one of the most devastating political detective stories of all time. The authors smashed open the child abuse witch-hunt so everyone can see it for what it is—the way it really happened, and why. Here is the amazing story, starting with the first spectacular accusations, the marathon pre-trial hearing, the endless series of false accusations."

Since the Eberles' first McMartin book appeared in 1986, they have achieved national status as child abuse experts. In courts of law their work is frequently cited, and they lecture widely to receptive audiences. The Eberles once appeared as featured speakers at a conference held by Victims of Child Abuse Laws (VOCAL), an organization that feted *The Politics of Child Abuse* as positively revelatory.

But Paul and Shirley Eberle can hardly be considered credible reporters. Blurbs in their own pornographic tabloid, *L.A. Star,* failed to mention that in the 1970s the authors once ran an underground tabloid for pedophiles in Los Angeles, *Finger,* which delved heavily into sadomasochistic sex, sex with children and sex acts involving human excrement. *Finger* contained sexual drawings by children and pedophile erotica, including "My First Rape," "She was Only Thirteen," "Sexpot at Five," and "What Happens when Niggers Adopt White Children." One issue featured a cover photo of two naked adults reclining amid a pile of inflated dolls. A letter to *Finger* declaimed: "I'm a pedophile and I think it's great a man is having sex with his daughter.... Would like to see pics of nude girls making it with their daddy, but realize it's too risky to print."

The book's publisher, Carole Stuart of Lyle Stuart & Co., told *Ms.* magazine that the Eberles have been "friends of the family for years."

In *The Politics of Child Abuse,* the Eberles claimed that since the McMartin arrests, "we have been barraged with hundreds of sexual abuse cases, in which many people have been sent to prison for staggeringly long terms on little or no evidence." That the Eberles themselves remain at large would seem to contradict the notion that child abuse laws are stringently over-enforced.

The Eberles attempt to portray *every* abuser as a victim of the justice system:

> We believe that every molestation case in which there has been a conviction should be reopened and reviewed. There is convincing evidence that innocent people have been imprisoned, that naive juries and judges were unable to believe the defendants would be brought to trial if no crime had occurred,

> and defense attorneys have not been allowed to bring all the pertinent facts before the public.

Los Angeles attorney Sally Dichter, in a book review, argued that the Eberles have "nothing to offer to any discipline." The book, she lamented, "is an attempt to vindicate every individual who has been convicted of child abuse." Considering their credentials as child pornographers, of course the Eberles, as Dichter discovered, believe "every molestation case in which there has been a conviction should be reopened and reviewed." Dichter found this point of view unbelievable: "The Eberles seem intent on convincing the reader that child abuse *never* occurs."

The authors' "skepticism" of ritual child abuse is shared by Gerald Larue, professor emeritus of Biblical history and archeology at the University of Southern California. Larue is one of the principals behind the Noah's Ark hoax, which culminated in February 1993 with a two-hour CBS prime-time special, "The Incredible Discovery of Noah's Ark," billed by CBS as a documentary. Scholars immediately denounced it. The network refused to retract.

Satanism in America, a book that Larue co-wrote, attributed the McMartin case to a "satanic panic" incited by wild-eyed "religious fanatics, opportunists and emotionally unstable survivors whose stories simply are not to be believed"—an agonizing irony given Larue's instigation of the Noah's Ark hoax. He argues that the "child abuse hysteria sweeping the country is being fueled by people for whom facts have no meaning. They invent 'facts.'"

Langley Connections and the Rise of the Child Abuse Backlash

Another "expert" who has dismissed McMartin as a classic witch-hunt is Dr. Douglas Besherov, once the director of the National Center on Child Abuse and Neglect. He is also a director of the rabidly right-wing American Enterprise Institute, a Washington D.C. think tank.

To supplement his weighty credentials, Besherov writes for academic social and political quarterlies with long histories of collaborating with the CIA for propaganda purposes. He is a coeval of Irving Kristol, a veteran CIA psychological warfare specialist. In 1976, the Congressional Church Committee hearings revealed that the CIA is deeply entrenched in the American press. Some 400 journalists, it emerged at the hearings, had collaborated with the Agency at least once. CIA propagandists like Besherov and Kristol provide others in the field with a scholastic support base, and mold opinion on campus with such CIA-anchored academic journals as *Encounter* and *The Public Interest,* both edited by neo-con Kristol.

In 1986, *Public Interest* published a monograph by Dr. Besherov entitled "Unfounded Allegations—A New Child Abuse Problem." Besherov opens with the observation of legal scholar Sanford Katz that "the maltreatment of children is as old as recorded history. Infanticide, ritual sacrifice, exposure, mutilation, abandonment, brutal discipline and the near slavery of child labor have existed in all cultures."

Dr. Besherov, left dry-eyed by such conditions, blamed the media and mandatory reporting laws for dragging child abuse out of the closet (where he seems to prefer it) and blowing the severity of the problem out of proportion.

Besherov's influential follow-up article, "Doing Something About Child Abuse: The Need to Narrow the Grounds for State Intervention," was published in 1985 by Irving Kristol and the American Enterprise Institute. In it, Besherov argues that most allegations of child abuse are statistically unfounded. His slipshod use of statistics drove the Child Welfare League of America (CWLA) to publicly find him responsible for leading the public "to believe that child abuse is leveling off or that, as reports increase, the level of substantiation decreases." The CWLA notes that its survey results indicate a "substantial increase in reports," and "a stable rate of confirmation," directly contradicting Besherov's statistical red herring.

Turning to the children removed from their homes by social workers, Besherov states flatly: "According to data collected by the federal government, it appears that up to half of these children were in no immediate danger at home and could have been safely left there."

The government "data" cited by Besherov derive from a study conducted by the National Center on Child Abuse and Neglect. The authors of the study told *New York Times* reporter David Hechler that "the information is not there" to support Besherov's assertion that half of all abused children left in the custody of their parents are in "no immediate danger."

"He has used our statistics in this case to prove a point when (he) simply can't do it," a Center researcher told Hechler. When asked for his response, the AEI scholar refused to comment.

By fabricating statistics, Besherov reveals himself to be a propagandist.

Have unfounded allegations led to a national McCarthyite frenzy, as Besherov contends? "I'm sure there are false allegations," concedes David Finkelhor, a sociologist specializing in child abuse. "I'm sure when people are caught up in false allegations it's terrible." But in criminal cases of all kinds, "there's always the possibility of false allegations, and I don't think they're more severe in the area of child abuse that they are in—I want to say something innocuous—people making false allegations about having had money stolen from them, or false allegations of embezzlement."

Besherov's work has given rise to such *hysteria-producing* diatribes as "False Accusations of Child Abuse: Could it Happen to You?" (*Women's Day,* July 8, 1986), and "Invasion of the Child Savers: No One is Safe in the War Against Abuse" (*Progressive,* September, 1985)—both are adventures in hyperbole, like Besherov's cooked statistics.

"Family abuse," by A.C. Carlson, another protégé of Irving Kristol. appeared in *Reason* magazine, a publication that frequently runs CIA disinformation. Hechler writes that Carlson has gone "even further than Besherov, inflating the unfounded rate beyond belief." Erroneously, in fact, Carlson laments that "the victims pile up," like corpses on a pyre, and commiserates needlessly with "the sky-rocketing number of parents and teachers falsely accused of child abuse."

Ritual abuse "skeptics" with CIA connections are covering up the latest phase in Agency-sponsored mind control experimentation. For thirty years Agency scientists have collaborated with cults (many of them founded by the government) to conceal the development of mind control technology. Jim Jones and the People's Temple were one product of the alliance. McMartin was another. Both episodes have been buried in disinformation. The campaign to mislead the public about ritual abuse is ambitious, rivaling the campaign to conceal the facts in the murder of John F. Kennedy.

The smokescreen is also explained in part by reports implicating the CIA in child prostitution for the purposes of political blackmail—a variation on the age-old sex trap. CIA agents have been directly involved in organized child sex rings. In *Enslaved* (1991), an investigation of the worldwide slavery underground, Gordon Thomas found Agency participation in the kidnap of Latin American children "flown across the border in light aircraft, and sold to child sex rings, or sold so their organs could be used in transplants." Some of the pilots, Thomas discovered, "made two or three flights a day. The more experienced used Beech 18s because of the aircraft's capacity and maneuverability. The majority of the fliers were mercenaries who had flown for the CIA."

Ray Buckey's father, Charles, worked for Hughes Aircraft. There is an old adage that holds "Hughes *is* the CIA." Charles Buckey built the McMartin Preschool. The tunnels unearthed beneath the preschool were dug in 1966—the year the school was built.

Buckey Sr. testified on the stand that there were no tunnels. The media have been completely silent on this score, which brings us to....

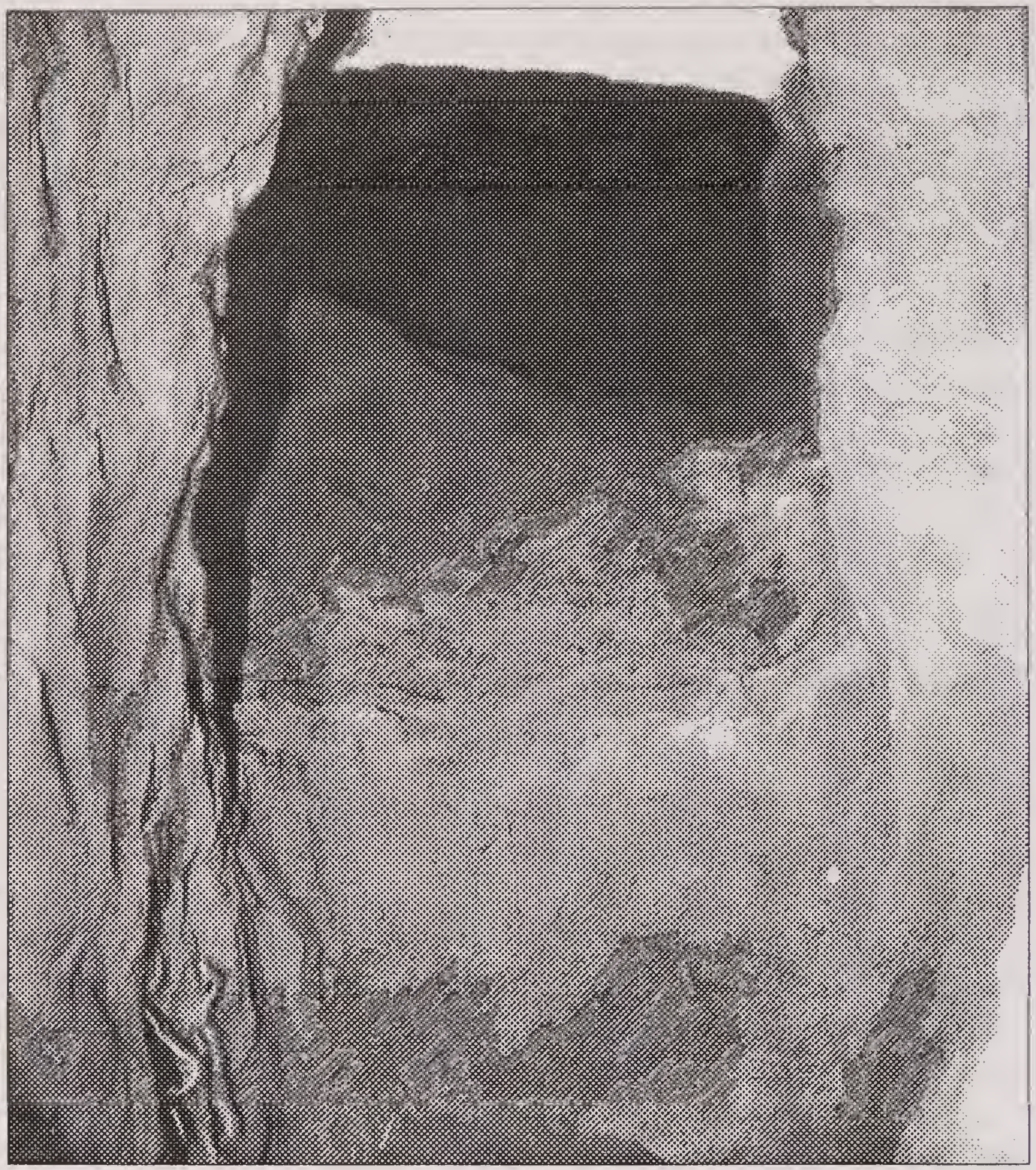

This arch was pounded through a concrete footing in the foundation beneath the McMartin Preschool. Best estimates date the digging of the tunnels to circa 1966, the year the preschool was built by Charles Buckey, father of the key defendent. Photo: Dr. Roland Summit

The Tunnel Cover-Up

El Paso reporter Debbie Nathan, utterly convinced of the defendants' innocence, entered the fray in *The Village Voice,* and has appeared in newspapers across the country, including *The L.A. Weekly, Sacramento Bee, San Francisco Chronicle,* and elsewhere. She has been honored with the Free Press Association's H. L. Mencken Award, and Northwestern University's Medill School of Journalism prize.

She is a leading proponent of the "mass hysteria" thesis, the notion that many child abuse allegations are "unfounded." Her cavalier dismissal is not supported by objective research. Dr. David Chadwick of San Diego's Childrens' Hospital, in the *Journal of the American Medical Association* (May 26, 1989), contends that 8% of all abuse allegations are unfounded, at most, and are "rather easily distinguishable in a careful review."

At times it is difficult to tell whether Nathan is a "skeptic" or an apologist of sexual abuse. "Most pedophilia," she contends, "consists of caressing and fondling. For most children, these experiences appear to be at best confusing, at worst traumatic. But others seem to willingly participate, and some adults recall that while still legally minors they accepted, even *welcomed,* sex with grown-ups."

Nathan doesn't condemn the abuser. After all, "compared to the abuses of a child protection movement gone mad, could incest be any worse?"

Alex Cockburn is a Nathan supporter, and has on occasion gotten caught up in her pro-pedophilic obfuscations, as in this diatribe from *The Nation* for March 8, 1993:

> As a Miami-based anthropologist, Rafael Martinez, consultant to the Dade County Medical Examiner's Office, told Nathan, in traditional Latin American cultures "kissing and hugging is common with children up to three or four years old." It is common for females to kiss children all over the place—including on the genitals.

The practice of kissing children on the genitals may be traditional in some cultures, but it is frowned upon by the Manhattan Beach preschool licensing board.

Alex Cockburn's skepticism toward ritual abuse was summed up in an editorial appearing in the February 8, 1990 *Wall Street Journal,* "The McMartin Case: Indict the Children, Jail the Parents." The son of a British spy, and a loquacious defender of the Warren Commission, Cockburn has such strong feelings about the McMartin case that he once publicly maligned an editor of the *L.A. Weekly* for refusing to print a recommendation that "the tots bearing false witness in the McMartin preschool case be jailed for perjury."

His primary source on the subject of child abuse, Debbie Nathan, is herself something of a false witness. In "What McMartin Started: The Ritual Abuse Hoax" (*Village Voice,* June 12, 1990), Ms. Nathan moaned that "children at McMartin told of being molested in tunnels under the school. None were ever found, but until recently parents were still digging."

In fact, 30 days before Nathan's article appeared, the tunnels were discovered beneath the preschool by scientists hired by the parents, confirming the testimony of the children. The project employed a team of archeologists from local universities, two geologists, a professional excavator, a carbon-dating specialist and a professional photographer to document the dig's progress and findings.

The longest tunnel was six feet beneath the preschool, running eastward 45 feet from the southwest wall, and ten feet along the north wall. The tunnel walls were held in place by support beams and a roof of plywood and tarpaper. A branch of the tunnel led to a nine-foot chamber (the "secret room" described by the children?). Another extended from the preschool to the triplex next door, surfacing beneath a roll-away bathtub. Forensic tests on thousands of objects found at the site—including two hundred animal bones—were conducted.

Until the tunnels were found, the *L.A. Times* covered the dig—with a smirk. The parents and scientists involved were portrayed as crack-pots until the existence of the tunnels was substantiated by experts, at which time the newspaper abruptly stopped reporting the story. The public was left with the false impression that the search had failed.

Critics of the excavation pointed out that District Attorney Ira Reiner had already searched for tunnels. At best, this is a half-truth. Reiner's team tore up a bit of floor tile, but did not even bother to remove the glue that held it in place. The D.A.'s team, as it happens, dug up the lot *next to the preschool,* not underneath.

"Actually," McMartin mother Jackie MacGauley, who supervised the excavation, notes, "we were the first to dig on the property." The search for the tunnels was undertaken with ground-penetrating radar to probe for inconsistencies in the soil. A bell-shaped area of disturbed earth was discovered along the foundation of the west wall.

The tunnel beneath the opposite wall was unearthed (precisely where the children said it would be found all along) beneath the foundation. A passage had been knocked through the concrete. "It was interesting," MacGauley told L.A.'s Pacifica Radio, "because a lot of the child development specialists, psychiatrists and therapists across the country thought that it was some psychological phenomenon that the kids would talk about tunnels. Somehow that idea got 'planted,' and they had all these theories as to why all the kids would talk about something like this. It

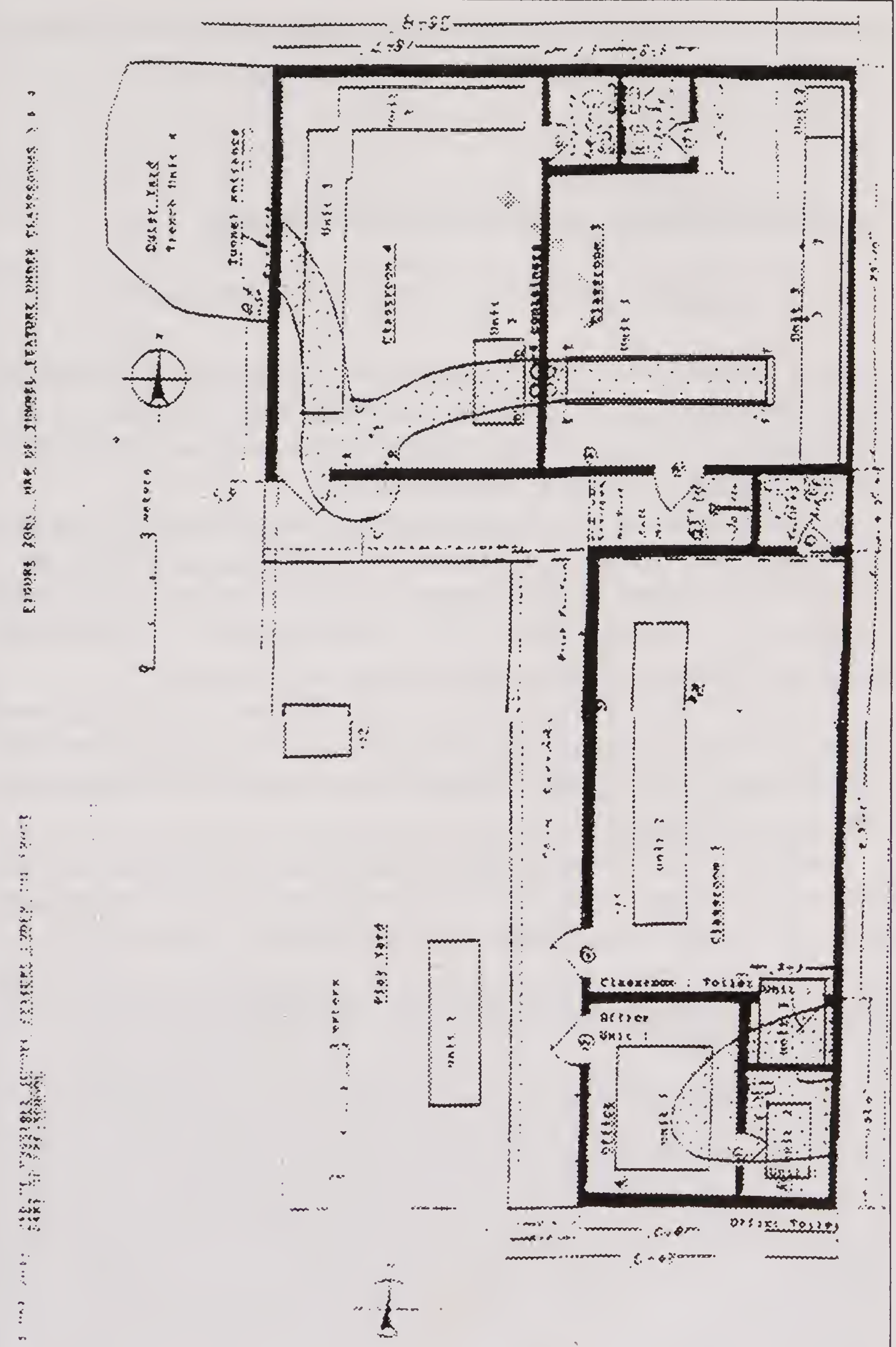
Classroom 4
Classroom 3
Classroom 1
Classroom 1 Toilet
Office
Office Toilet
Play Yard
Outer Yard
Tunnel entrance

Figure 3
McMartin Preschool Site Drawing With Tunnel
From E. Gary Stickel, Archaeological Investigations of The McMartin
Preschool Site, Manhattan Beach, California. Copyright 1993 by
McMartin Tunnel Project. Reproduced by permission.

Library of Congress Catalog Card Number: 76-84003.

A blueprint of the McMartin Preschool with tunnels superimposed.

obviously couldn't be true. And the district attorney at the time just flatly did not believe it, and really didn't want to look."

Neither did the press.

A Cottage Industry of Child Abuse Debunkers

MODERN WITCH-HUNT—CHILD ABUSE CHARGES

bawled a *Wall Street Journal* editorial for February 22, 1993. But the tone of the column was dry and high-toned. Dr. Richard Gardner, professor of clinical psychiatry at Columbia University, cautioned that "a great wave of hysteria" had gripped the country.

In the early 90s, the mass hysteria premise was touted by big city newspapers and magazines of elite stature, all attempting to persuade—with evident bias and inflated "expert" opinion—that false child abuse charges were endemic. This school of disinformation coaxed public opinion with dire exhortations of a child abuse witch-hunt.

In his *Wall Street Journal* comments, Dr. Gardner warned of a great wave of hysteria, "by far the worst" in history, the most devastating "with regard to the number of lives that have been destroyed and families that have been disintegrated."

Gardner's basic argument is that allegations of child abuse are often fabricated by parents embroiled in custody disputes—another explanation not supported by statistics, the ones Gardner ignores. One study found that a mere two percent of all abuse accusations stem from visitation and custody disputes. (Other researchers have placed the percentage slightly higher.)

As for "mass hysteria," one of the earliest promoters of this thesis was Ralph Underwager, co-author with his wife, Hollida Wakefield, of *Accusations of Child Sexual Abuse.* "Few physicians will wish to invest the time and money ($70) to own or even read this book," complained a reviewer for the *Journal of the American Medical Association.* "It is of little value to those who work with abused children except as it may be important to be aware of all points of view. The book will be doubtless be useful to attorneys defending persons accused of sexual abuse of children. It appears to have been written particularly for that audience.... The authors cite over 700 references, but they do not really review this body of literature. When a given reference fails to support their viewpoint, they simply misstate the conclusion."

Since 1974, Dr. Underwager has been the director of the Institute for Psychological Therapies in Northfield, Minnesota. He has since been frequently called upon to provide expert testimony—in the late 80s he spent 60-70% of his professional life shuttling between courtrooms. He is the author of numerous articles debunking the credibility of ritual abuse victims. Dr. Underwager has frequently been cited by Debbie Nathan as a leading authority on the subject. Lisa Manshel, author of *Nap Time,* an account of the New Jersey ritual abuse case, found that "child sexual abuse was not his field of knowledge," but "it was his field of courtroom practice." He proliferated the opinion, 'No one knows how to tell accurately whether a child's been abused' throughout the nation's courts. He has testified in most states, and by satellite in foreign countries, before at least 200 juries.

Dr. Underwager once stated on the stand that he considered it "more desirable that a thousand children in abuse situations are not discovered than for one innocent person to be convicted wrongly."

Dr. Underwager, a founder of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation, is an ordained Lutheran minister. He believes, he once said in an interview appearing in an Amsterdam journal for pedophiles, that sex with children is not only acceptable, but "God's will."

> **Q:** Is choosing pedophilia for you a responsible choice for the individual?
> **Underwager:** *Certainly* it is responsible. What I have been struck by as I have come to know more about and understand people who choose pedophilia is that they let themselves be too much defined by other people. That is usually an essential negative definition. Pedophiles spend a lot of time and energy defending their choice. I don't think a pedophile needs to do that.

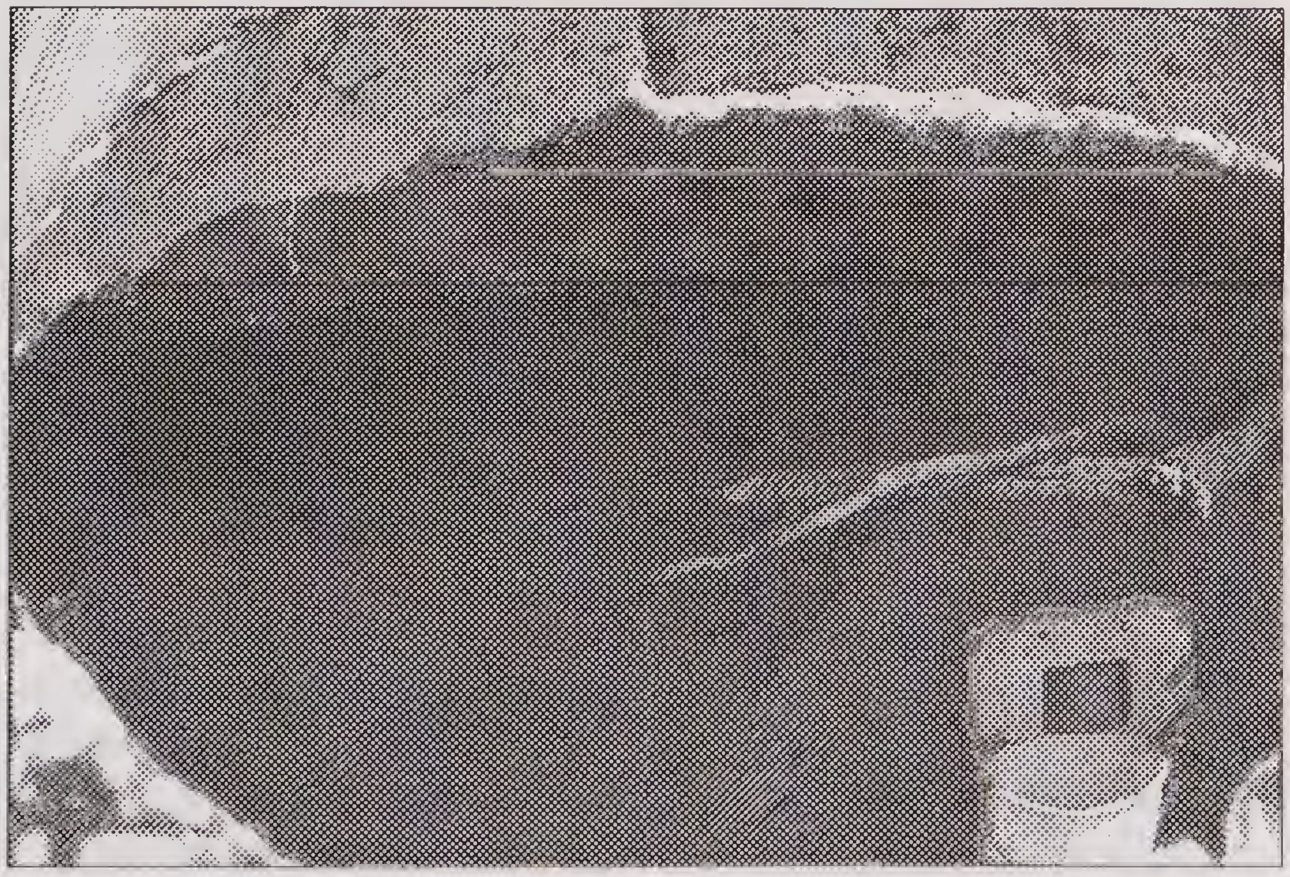

An outside entrance to the tunnels beneath the preschool partially filled in with soil foreign to the site.

Underwager insisted that pedophiles "should attack the concept, the image, the picture of the pedophile as an evil, wicked and reprehensible exploiter of children." Following the interview, Underwager was forced to resign as a founding member of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation (which is largely directed by CIA psychiatrists with backgrounds in mind control experimentation).

The *London Observer* for December 12, 1993 reported that Dr. Underwager denied ever condoning sex with children. He added, however, that "scientific evidence" had demonstrated that "60 percent of women sexually abused as children reported that the experience was good for them." He contended the same could be true for boys involved with pedophiles.

The Descent of Mann

In a five-part series that appeared after the hung jury verdict of Ray Buckey's first trial, *Los Angeles Times* reporter David Shaw found that the newspaper's research files explained little of "the crucial behind-the-scenes role played by screenwriter Abby Mann." Mann's writing staff and circle of disinformationists have shaped public opinion on the McMartin case.

Noel Greenwood, an *L.A. Times* editor, has described the wall of pro-Buckey PR thrown up by Mann and friends as "a *mean, malevolent campaign* conducted by people… whose motives are highly suspect and who have behaved in a basically dishonest… and dishonorable way."

Abby Mann, is an Oscar recipient for a film about the Nazi war crimes trial, *Judgment at Nuremburg* (an oxymoron, since there was precious little justice at Nuremburg, a carefully-managed show trial that culminated with the execution of a small clutch of Nazis, minor prison terms for some—and recruitment of thousands of others by the CIA.)

From the beginning, Mann was a vociferous advocate of the McMartin defendants. "We like to think we are different from Salem," Mann sniffed at the resolution of Ray Buckey's first trial. "I don't believe that anything happened at that school."

Abby Mann has worked diligently, largely back-stage, on behalf of The Buckeys. It was Mann who first interested *60 Minutes* in the McMartin case. The November 2, 1986 broadcast was decidedly biased in favor of Ray Buckey. Defense attorney Danny Davis characterized the segment as "wholly sympathetic to the defense point of view."

60 Minutes led off with the camera panning a long couch and five of the original defendants. Mike Wallace asked: "Do these women look like child molesters?"

New York Times reporter David Hechler noted "gaping holes in the story. Why were no police or D.A.'s investigators interviewed or even mentioned? And if Ira Reiner believed the case was so weak against the five defendants, why did he wait until the five-month preliminary hearing was completed before dropping the charges? These questions were never asked." The innocence of the defendants was assumed by Wallace and crew as a foregone conclusion, and the charges against them were framed as the aberrations of nattering lunatics.

Most of the *60 Minutes* segment on McMartin was taped in Abby Mann's living room.

But heavily-biased media coverage was only one of the strategies quietly enacted by Abby Mann. When Deputy District Attorney Glenn Stevens was caught leaking information on the prosecution's case to Mann, he was forced to resign. No charges were brought against him.

From the *Los Angeles Times:*

> Gaining the confidence of the McMartin defendants, the Manns were ultimately hired as "investigators" for the defense. That and their earlier alliance with former prosecutor Glenn Stevens sparked charges from parents of alleged child molestation victims of a conspiracy to obstruct justice for monetary gain.

After *Los Angeles Times* reporter Bob Williams met Abby Mann, he wrote a flurry of memos charging the coverage of Lois Timnick, the paper's reporter on the McMartin beat, with extreme bias favoring the prosecution. The accusation was investigated by Noel Greenwood, the regional news editor at the *Times.* Greenwood concluded that it was Williams who'd acted with extreme bias, not Timnick. Greenwood's memos state that Williams' memos were "reckless and irresponsible." Williams had "undermined a fellow reporter and seriously harmed the credibility and effectiveness of the *Times.*"

Williams was temporarily suspended without pay. Shortly thereafter, he went to work for Abby Mann.

Williams surfaced next as a consultant to Mary Fischer, whose "A Case of Dominoes" in *Los Angeles* magazine drew upon the argument (first postulated by the child pornographers Paul and Shirley Eberle), that former District Attorney Robert Philobosian initiated the McMartin prosecution for political gain.

Fischer once admitted to the late Wayne Satz, the KABC television reporter who broke the McMartin story, that she wrote the article under the direction of Abby Mann.

"There was never any case at all," Fischer wrote with absolute certainty. "At the very least, it is a blueprint for preying on public fears." Fischer has gone so far as to claim that therapists, parents and children attending McMartin masterminded a "conspiracy" to harass and imprison innocent people. When pressed on one occasion by Carole Hemingway, a Los Angeles talk show host, Fischer was unable to offer supporting evidence of conspiracy (as McMartin parents did), nor could she explain the motives of the conspirators.

Fischer did her utmost to dismiss the medical evidence that molestation took place at the preschool. In October, 1988 the *Los Angeles Times* reported that medical examiners of the original 13 children scheduled to testify found "scars, tears, enlarged body openings or other evidence indicating blunt force trauma consistent with the repeated sodomy and rape they described."

One of the children bled from the anus. Some contracted venereal infections.

Yet Fischer found relevant the findings of a Fresno pediatrician who refused to testify at the first McMartin trial. The 1987 study, summarized by Fischer, concluded that "any kind of irritation—not just sexual abuse—may damage children's genitals." This reader, at least, was left to ponder forms of "irritation" that might leave the McMartin children with chlamydia, confirmed by medical examinations and difficult to explain away.

Fischer's follow-up McMartin story in *Los Angeles* for October, 1993 opined that a "hysterical tone" in press reports on McMartin was established by Wayne Satz, who died of heart failure in 1992, "causing some to speculate it was karma," wrote Fischer, an ersatz and mean-spirited elegy.

"I still don't know how anyone could believe all that bull," Virginia McMartin told her. "Especially with a school as wide open as ours and people coming and going at all times. Or who could actually believe there were *tunnels.*" (The archeological team that led the excavation—ignored by Fischer—could have given her a guided tour.) "It shows the power of the media."

Apparently Abby Mann has a need for Ms. Fischer and the other writers in his employ. A best-selling Hollywood biographer (speaking on condition of anonymity) offers this insight into the career of Abby Mann. "He's incapable of writing scripts himself. It's true," he said, "he can't write. Abby keeps a fairly large stable of ghost writers to produce scripts in his name."

Who is Abby Mann? Mae Brussell, the late Carmel-based political researcher, speculated in a November, 1987 radio broadcast that Mann is a covert operator posing as a Hollywood progressive, plying extensive media connections to influence public opinion. Mann's behind-the-scenes manipulations, ghosts and an exhaustive supply of funds and press contacts support the hypothesis that Abby Mann is a media mole.

Indictment, yet another disinformation effort supposedly written by Abby and Myra Mann, premiered on May 20, 1995 on HBO. The movie was produced by Oliver Stone. As a political researcher, I had taken more than a passing interest in Stone's film *JFK,* and couldn't help but note that the media assault on Stone bore a resemblance to Mann's campaign to discredit the McMartin children. The day after an announcement of the "secret" project already underway appeared in *Variety,* I contacted Stone's office and spoke with Jean Marie Burke, a researcher for Ixtlan Productions, Stone's company in Santa Monica. I informed Ms. Burke that much of the information about McMartin in the corporate media was disingenuous, beginning with the Eberles.

She brightened up. "Oh, the Eberles—I have their books right here!" She went silent when I told her that Paul and Shirley Eberle were child pornographers. I sent her a package of *accurate* information on the case by certified mail, then contacted her boss with a letter informing him simply that he had hold of a bad project, which had already been shot and was in the editing stage. Stone wrote back, asking me to clarify. My response follows:

> Mr. Stone:
>
> McMartin is poorly understood by most people because a disinformation gambit is afoot to discredit the childrens' testimony—a fusillade, in fact, similar to the one you were treated to after *JFK.* You asked me to clarify my objections.
>
> Consider how difficult it was to sort through and communicate the multitude of facts relevant to the killing of John Kennedy. And then recall how a carefully-conceived film on the assassination can be explained away with a glib "no evidence" from an Edward Epstein or Dan Rather. This is the problem I'm up against with McMartin. There is a complex story behind the abuse—it involves CIA mind control experiments, and this is largely what the plants in the establishment press, and fronts like the False Memory Syndrome Foundation, are concealing. (Nine out of ten psychiatrists in both the U.S. and Great Britain from large samplings believe ritual abuse to be a very real social problem. But the media inevitably talks only to the one of ten who deny, and many of those are experimental scientists on the CIA payroll.) You now find yourself on the same side (of the McMartin argument) as Alex Cockburn, you recall the knock-down-drag-out *Nation* debate with a leading progressive who rejects key crimes of government (including the Kennedy assassination, for high-toned, but ultimately silly reasons), *Newsweek,* etc. That alone should make you uncomfortable in the extreme.
>
> One of your researchers brightened up when I mentioned the only two books available on McMartin, both written by Paul and Shirley Eberle. She knew those books inside out. The problem is the Eberles published child pornography in the 1970s—garishly packaged in an underground rag called *Finger*—featuring adults having sex with children, children with excrement smeared on them, children in lewd positions and

posing provocatively. This ludicrous pedophile sheet ran stories with such unsavory testimonials as "She was Only Thirteen," "What Happens when Niggers Adopt White Children," "My First Rape," and so on. Don't bother to read the McMartin books, if you haven't already. Each page is full of factual errors and conscious distortions. Your movie will perpetuate the Eberles' disinformation. But the *LA Times* will love it. (Buffy Chandler told a source of mine, in a moment of rage at her family, that her parents (the owners of the L.A. Times) funded weird genetic experiments years ago. This is no more bizarre than some of the things done in pre-schools around the country, and may explain the newspaper's change of attitude after the initial reporting.)

But Noel Greenwood, a *Times* editor, knew what he was talking about when he said there is a "mean-spirited campaign" in play to slant the truth about McMartin.

Abby Mann is a key proponent. His attorney threatened to sue if I didn't retract my comments when an early version of my research appeared several years ago. I did not retract. In fact, the newspaper, *Random Lengths* in Long Beach, backed me. Others appearing in the story threatened me. They did not sue. Why not? They made such a noise. Now they are the sources of your movie, still making noise about "innocence abused," and it's hollow.

They contend there is no evidence that children were abused at McMartin. On the contrary, there is an abundance of evidence. But the DA had no real intention of gathering it. Neither did the press. Same as *JFK,* eh?

The CIA connection to cults around the country began in 1963. The story was told by a Berkeley psychologist in a thesis entitled "The Penal Colony," which was presented at a psychiatric conference in San Francisco by Congressional aide Joe Holsinger after Leo Ryan was killed at Jonestown. The hybrid was conceived because people were asking questions about experiments at McGill, the University of Pennsylvania, John Hopkins, UCLA, Honeywell, and other haunts of the CIA's MKULTRA mind control fraternity. Jonestown was one product of the association. Another, more recent example was the Solar Temple killings in Switzerland. The British press reported that this cult was running arms to Australia and South America, and laundering the proceeds at BCCI. The American press couldn't find this information. What does this tell you?

Buckey Sr. testified that he did not have tunnels dug beneath the preschool. Why would anyone do that? Five scientists have

> put their reputations on the line to confirm that there are tunnels. One, a carbon-dating specialist, opined that the tunnels were excavated in 1966. That was the year the preschool was built. It was built by Charles Buckey. He lied on the stand. The kids gave fairly accurate descriptions of the tunnels. Did Abby?
>
> Regards,
> Alex Constantine

Despite this protest, and threats of a boycott of HBO from children's advocacy groups around the country, *Indictment* aired anyway. The movie simply reinforces the many misconceptions the public has been force-fed since Abby Mann became involved in the case.

The Most Hated Man at the L.A. Times

In January, 1990, after the anti-climactic, deadlocked verdict of the second trial, the *Los Angeles Times* ran a four-part series by media critic David Shaw, trashing the paper's own coverage of the McMartin case. Shaw described press coverage as a "media feeding frenzy" ranking with exposes of Gary Hart, Oliver North and Dan Quayle.

"More than most big stories," Shaw explained, "McMartin at times exposed basic flaws in the way the contemporary news organizations function. Pack journalism. Laziness. Superficiality." Daily newspaper coverage, he argued, was contaminated by "cozy relationships with prosecutors," and a competitive furor "that sends reporters off in a frantic search to be the first with the latest shocking alllegation."

Shaw's McMartin series won the *Times* its 18th Pulitzer, but few reporters attended the champagne party thrown in his honor. "Most people don't like him," *Times* staffer Lee Dye told a reporter for *Los Angeles* magazine. "He really is disliked at the *Times*," said restaurant critic Ruth Reichl. Bill Boyarsky, another staffer, says "everyone around me hates him."

The harshest opinion of Shaw came from the late Glenn Binford, the paper's late night editor at the city desk, who refers to Shaw as "an oily little prick." The nickname stuck. "Even the late Dial Torgerson," reported *Los Angeles,* "a droll, dry-witted newsman's newsman ... adopted the moniker, though it was uncharacteristic of Torgerson to disparage anyone."

Reporters for the "Metro" section particularly harbor a keen disdain for David Shaw.

Why is so much animosity directed his way? Most of Shaw's colleagues at the *Times* feel that he receives special treatment. He is contracted to write a mere four stories a year. He moonlights as the monthly

"Dining Out" columnist for *GQ* magazine. As the official ombudsman of the *Times,* one reporter complains, "Shaw plays favorites and purposefully ducks anything that may really irritate his superiors, tending instead to aim at those with no actual power."

Two of his primary targets were staff writer Lois Timnick and Cathleen Decker, whose McMartin coverage was hardly "frantic" or "superficial." Shaw's depiction of them as reportorial McCarthyites is not borne out by a review of the newspaper's McMartin coverage, and the air around Times Mirror Square has, since his series appeared, been thick with acrimony.

A week before Shaw received the Pultizer, Timnick (who has since stopped talking to him) threatened to organize an office "suicide party" if he won. When he did walk away with an award, the Pulitzer committee stated that it was given to Shaw not on the merits of his writing, but because the *Times* permitted him to criticize the paper's own coverage of a landmark trial.

Shaw was born on an Air Force base in Dayton, Ohio. He was educated at Pepperdine and UCLA. His career took off when, as a reporter for the *Long Beach Independent Press-Telegram,* he published a scalding investigative story on Max Rafferty, the Republican opponent of Alan Cranston for a Senate seat. Shaw's five-part series killed Rafferty's political prospects with allegations of draft dodging. Shaw received an award from the Los Angeles Press Club for the story and a job offer from the *Times.*

That was 19 years ago. He was informally assigned to "the sex beat." Shaw plied his investigative skills with titillating exposes of massage parlors and strip clubs. His piece on a nightspot featuring live sex with a dog threw the newsroom into turmoil—this is the same commentator who later dismissed most press coverage of McMartin as "sensational" and "superficial."

Shaw defines himself publicly as a "liberal," but he frequently expresses right-wing sentiments, and his writing can be fairly summed up as propagandistic. He chose to write on McMartin, *Los Angeles* magazine reported, "because he needed an excuse to stay in town. 'My wife was eight months pregnant, and I was looking for a story that would keep me in L.A. so I would be here for the birth."

"Experts" on the McMartin debacle—Shaw, the Eberles, Dr. Underwager, Abby Mann and others—have, in violation of their own admonitions, retried it in the press. Ray Buckey is supposed to be as innocent as Ceasar's wife. If so, why do Buckey's supporters ignore critical evidence? Why the statistical fabrications? Why lament repeatedly that the case took five years to try when dragging it out was a conscious defense strategy? Why ignore the tunnels and the bones?

And, most troubling off all, why has so much effort been put into propagating mass deception on Buckey's behalf?

Chapter Five

"What is that Odor?"

Mystery Fumes, the Poisoning of the Los Angeles County Commission for Women's Ritual Abuse Task Force & the Los Angeles Times

Introduction: Cults, Chemo-Terrorism and the CIA

After the deadly March 1995 subway gassing in Japan, 1200 police and military troops raided the "sixth santium" of Aum Shinri Kyo, one of the country's 17,000 religious cults, in the shadow of Mount Fuji. Sporting chemical gear, they cut their way into the Kamikuishiki warehouse with circular saws and oxyacetylene torches. On the first floor, police stumbled upon a "Perfect Salvation Initiation," a yogic ritual that employed electrical skull caps to deliver four-to ten-volt shocks to the novitiate in an attempt to open his chakras, the body's centers of spiritual energy. Among the healing rites practiced by the sect was the imbibing and vomiting of whole gallons of water, electric jolts and the "Christ Initiation," an arduous regimen of enemas and scalding hot baths.

Former members of the sect, according to a *Los Angeles Times* report, "paint a chilling picture of psychological indoctrination… sleep deprivation, mind control techniques and enforced isolation from the outside world. Access to family and friends—even newspapers and TV—is prohibited"[1] The cultists exhibited an alarming degree of mind control. Police freed a screaming woman from a stainless steel pod, and fifty cult members were found sprawled unconscious in a chapel on the second floor, six others in a drug-induced coma.[2]

Police announced that the stockpile of noxious chemicals discovered at the compound was the source of the nerve gas released in a Tokyo subway, killing ten people and injuring 5,000, with 70 in critical condition. Sadly enough, the neurotoxic effect of the gas is likely to be severe. Medical research has shown that acute exposure to toxic levels of sarin (a poison developed at chemical laboratories in Nazi Germany as a war gas) produces prolonged changes in brain function.[3] It was the first use of a chemical warfare agent on a large group of people by a non-military group[4] (though the apocalyptic sect is believed to have had a hand in an unexplained sarin "leak" in the Japanese Alps in 1994 that left eight dead and sickened 212.[5] "Birds dropped from the sky," one abashed correspondent wrote from Tokyo. "Dead dogs and cats lay in the gutters, and dead carp and yabbies floated to the surface of an ornamental pond"[6]).

It was not the first time that a cult has been accused of waging chemical warfare on unsuspecting civilians. In Los Angeles, for example, a series of mysterious attacks on members of the local County Commission for Women's Ritual Abuse Task Force in 1992 led to complaints of nausea, blurred vision, dizziness, headaches and elevated blood pressure. Eight of these cases had been independently confirmed by blood tests—yet, incredibly, *Los Angeles Times* coverage made light of the victims, blaming the outbreak of symptoms on the fertile imaginations of professional paranoiacs.[7] After all, allegations of abuse at McMartin Preschool in Manhattan Beach had been debunked. The expert opinions of "reputable" academics had shown that organized cult activity in southern California was non-existent, the zaniest of "urban legends." Hadn't they?

Surely the task force was laboring under another bout of cult "hysteria." The *Times* reassured the community that, once again, a few fevered brains had made monsters where none existed. The newspaper adhered to its position even when Dr. Catherine Gould, chairwoman of the Ritual Abuse Task Force, fired off a letter of rebuttal, pointing out that the allegations were backed up by blood-test reports verifying that members of the group had, contrary to the *Times* report, been exposed to organophosphate poisons.[8]

The *Times* did not print the letter. Dr. Gould, a licensed clinical child therapist, countered that she had found it shocking a major metropolitan newspaper would "deliberately bypass the available data in favor of a series of emotional charges which essentially amount to a chorus of 'it couldn't be true.'" She also bemoaned the newspaper's "pattern of biased and inaccurate reporting" on ritual child abuse, a tendency to side with perpetrators of Satanic Ritual Abuse (SRA) and promote the small minority of psychologists—only one out of ten, in fact—who deride recovered memory therapy and have largely succeeded at discrediting therapists who work with children abused by mind control cults.[9]

This small but highly "skeptical" school constitutes the pool of academic psychologists available to defense attorneys. They have received much play in the press, champions of the false memory theory of ritual abuse—though most are not licensed to practice child therapy. Ubiquitous in the media, this circle of academic psychologists includes Drs. Richard Ofshe, Margaret Singer and Elizabeth Loftus of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation, all of whom have made lucrative careers testifying on behalf of accused pedophiles. The therapists who actually *treat* the young victims are not sought out by reporters. This inequity, biased in favor of the False Memory Brigade, amounts to blanket censorship of all qualified professionals on the subject of ritual abuse. The press has thus become the sole domain of a small minority of defense psychologists.

Lopsided media coverage of ritual abuse amounts to a virulent form of disinformation. The perps and their hired guns in academia have a monopoly on the molding of public opinion. They are not representative, but they are quoted time and again by the press.

Their bona fides are often in CIA mind control experimentation. These include UCLA's Louis Jolyon West (LSD experiments) and Berkeley's Margaret Singer (brainwashing studies), both "experts" on cults. Dr. Ofshe, who turns up constantly in the newspapers to call recovered memory therapy a "quack" science, writes monographs on mind control strongly influenced by Dr. West's academic writing. Dr. Martin Orne, an original board member of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation, studied hypnotic persuasion at the University of Pennsylvania for CIA and Naval Intelligence paymasters.

What the *Los Angeles Times* neglected to tell its readership is that CIA behavior control scientists and the cults have formed an alliance.

The Agency uses the cults to further the techniques and technology of mind control.[10] In exchange, the CIA provides behind-the-scenes legal assistance and public relations. A perpetrator of ritual abuse, when nabbed, is often treated to friendly press coverage. In contrast, ritually abused children and their therapists have been targetted for harrassment because they threaten perps, cults and the Agency alike with exposure. Competent psychologists are, in the public print, made to appear greedy, incompetent opportunists practicing a medieval science based on quack theories of memory. Stories critical of those in the field of ritual abuse often bear an uncanny resemblance to a CIA disinformation campaign—and that, if the truth be known, is no accident.

Despite public pronouncements to the contrary, the CIA is still very actively engaged in mind control research. Communities around the world have been converted into laboratories. Cults in their midst are led by operatives practiced in the techniques and technology of behavior manipulation.

And media disinformation conceals the work of this mind control fraternity.

How the Times Suppressed the Medical Evidence

"In January of 1992," Dr. Gould recalled in her letter to the *Times,* "I became aware of a strange pattern of illnesses (affecting) both Los Angeles therapists treating ritual abuse patients, and individuals engaged in support and advocacy work on behalf of ritually abused children and adults." The afflicted complained not only of a general malaise that might be expected to accompany a demanding career, but also of such unusual symptoms as numbness in the face and extremities, blurred vision, muscle tremors and weakness, memory loss and even "incontinence."

The first to complain of symptoms saw a physician, who diagnosed her as suffering from diazinon poisoning. (Diazinon, like the sarin unleashed in Japan, is an organophosphate.[11]) Independently, another member of the task force had a blood test performed at Kaiser Hospital in Los Angeles, and was handed the same diagnosis. A third member of the group, an SRA survivor, was examined at the Glendale Adventist Medical Center and told that she had "organophosphate poisoning." Yet another member, a therapist suffering a constellation of toxic symptoms, bought a pesticide detection kit. She tested samples of food from the kitchen one evening when she discovered that her home had been broken and entered. A half dozen of the food samples proved positive for pesticide poisoning.

The therapist (requesting anonymity) claimed in a letter to the task force, "our home has been broken into several times, even during the day when witnesses were on the property. Neighbors inform us of continual nighttime surveillance. We have been followed several times by a variety of vehicles. On at least three occasions the interior of our home has been splattered with blood, and two birds have mysteriously died."[12]

Concerns were raised at the panel's March, 1992 meeting that some people engaged in helping ritual abuse survivors escape cult influence might be victims of pesticide poisoning. By that time, a number of therapists suffering from symptoms of organophosphate poisoning had contacted their physicians.

Satanic cult survivors on the task force also exhibited symptoms of toxification, including a young woman and incest survivor—referred to here as M—who received the following recorded message from her sister shortly after taking a blood test:

> I talked to mom this morning—she's very upset! She said she had a phone call yesterday about a meeting and that she wanted to tell you that any files, any medical reports that you go or that anyone else goes looking for will not be found, We know what you're up to and you're not going to get away with it. I repeat, anything you look for—medical files, reports—will not be found. Don't do this.... I'm telling you this to beware—you're

> treading on thin ice—mom told me to tell you you'd better be careful. You'd better watch who you talk to. Watch what you say, because you're marked and you know that. We know what school (your child) goes to. You'd better be there for him. You'd better watch out for him. Anything can happen. Have a nice day!

Medical reports from clinics across the county vouch for members of the task force who reported toxic effects. Still, the *Los Angeles Times* took the position that they were suffering paranoid aberrations.

The adamant editors of the *Times* turned up their noses not only to the medical reports, but also to a number of letters from other therapists of ritually abused children in Los Angeles—they, too, exhibited symptoms of organophosphate poisoning.

One mother of two, after leaving a local cult, contacted Gould's task force in November, 1992 about the *Times* story: "I was alarmed, since I had all the symptoms last year, as had my children." Another mother wrote to say that in February, 1985 she'd discovered that her youngest daughter had been sexually abused in a day-care center in the San Fernando Valley. Her daughter's intense emotional trauma persisted, though she frequented a therapist for over a year.

Then the toxic siege began...

> In 1988 I started to experience physical problems. I was severely tired much of the time. It felt as if I had been drugged. Soon after that I started to have occurrences of tachycardia (rapid heart beat), headaches, shortness of breath, loss of memory, blurry vision, sweats, and at times I noticed a strange odor in my clothing, not to mention the female problems I was having. Doctors tested me every which way and yet every test was negative. They told me I was suffering from stress. I argued that I felt drugged, that I had some kind of chemical imbalance. They insisted it was stress, and I was referred to various stress programs, given tapes to listen to and forced to leave a very lucrative job. In July 1989, I was put on disability. Today I am considered permanently disabled. Early in 1992 it was suggested to me that I might be a victim of pesticide poisoning. Truth is I didn't believe it. I was afraid my doctor would think I was crazy. I eventually did go to him and asked his opinion. I was surprised at what he told me in a phone conversation the next day. He had consulted with two other doctors, and it was their opinion that I was suffering from chronic pesticide poisoning.[13]

Having amassed a bulky file of medical documentation to establish that members of the task force had been poisoned, Dr. Gould was still reluctant to contact the local press until she'd gathered enough evidence to convince even the most obstinate skeptic. In Los Angeles, the legal victory of Ray Buckey on molestation charges, after a five-year travail of public debate, had prompted a heated backlash against child therapists.

The task force was still collecting medical evidence and discussing possible courses of action when Stephanie Sheppard, a cult survivor, broke ranks and phoned the *Times* and a local television station to "blow the lid" off the group's "psychotic" belief they'd been poisoned.

Ms. Sheppard's admission was made to therapist David Neswald prior to a meeting of the panel. Dr. Neswald recalls that Sheppard "apparently mistook me for Dr. Papanek and called me out to the hallway to speak privately."[14] The agonizing irony in the confusion of identity is that Dr. Paul Papanek has long been a medical champion for the spraying of technical-grade malathion (an organophosphate and known neurotoxin) in densely-populated Southern California neighborhoods, a practice he commends as safe and effective to rid the region of periodic medfly infestation, despite growing evidence that the insecticide has adverse, often severe effects on human health.

A mother of two, referred to here as N.R., once sought advice from the task force when she suspected her two daughters had been abused. She struggled with an undiagnosed illness for a year before it occurred to her that the cause might be toxification. She phoned the task force office and was referred to Stephanie Sheppard, then acting as "contact person" on questions concerning poisons. Sheppard, the woman complained, "proceeded to question me at length," and gave several "lectures about how all of these symptoms I was having could be from other causes, including 'getting old' (I am forty)." N.R. became "very suspicious of her intentions and did not wish to talk to her again."[15]

After a routine blood test, Ms. R.'s doctor received not one, but three phone calls from Stephanie Sheppard. She asked how the tests had come out, and informed him that she seriously doubted anyone on the task force had been poisoned. When Stephanie rang N.R., "I told her that I had found out that she had called my doctor and that I was very angry. Her voice took on a tone that was obviously aimed at shaming me for questioning her. I told her in a strong voice not to call again and I hung up." Alarmed, she called the clinic, only to discover that Stephanie had called there repeatedly for a copy of the blood test results. (As it happens, the test proved negative. This means little, though, because Mrs. R. learned later that it was a test capable of detecting only high levels of toxicity from *recent* exposure.)

Ms. R. complained to the task force that her doctor had "no experience with ritual abuse. Now she certainly has a first-hand experience of cult attempts to sabotage all exposure of their violent harassment techniques. I am totally outraged." She characterized Stephanie Sheppard's intrusions as "a total red alert" to "infiltration."

But the quickest cuts, the harshest treacheries, were yet to come—from the *Los Angeles Times.*

British journalist Piers Brendon, in *The Life and Death of the Press Barons,* found in the course of researching the book in 1983 that "as an integral part of the country's power structure, the *Times* tends to overlook its public responsibilities."[16] But then, dodging responsibility is something of a tradition in the press, Brendon observed: "The First Amendment was drafted on the understanding that newspapers would be voices crying in the wilderness. It did not matter how raucous or even how deceitful they were."

The very paragon of this principle is the *Los Angeles Times.*

Catherine Gould is cautious of the press. She and other therapists working with ritual abuse victims have been repeatedly besmirched for shattering the spell of public denial woven by the media around any mention of ritual child abuse or cult mind control.

"We considered it too early to make any kind of definitive determination about the nature or extent of the poisonings," Dr. Gould says, "and had in no way thought to publicize our concerns at this time." She was still collecting medical reports when the *Times* came a-calling.

A cursory treatment of the story was written up by staff reporter Aaron Curtiss and appeared on December 1, 1992. It was founded solely on allegations, not hard evidence. Curtiss promised the group a follow-up story based on the medical data they'd collected. Gould agreed to give him the blood test results.

But the *Times* pulled a switch. Curtiss phoned Gould to say he'd been pulled off the story. It was instead assigned to John Johnson, the author of an earlier, heavily-biased pooh-poohing of ritual abuse that appeared in the *Times* on April 23, 1992.[17] Dr. Gould was still aching with resentment at the paper for printing Johnson's condescending denial of underground cult activity in Los Angeles. Gould told Curtiss that

Stephanie Sheppard

she saw no purpose in working with Johnson. Curtiss passed on Gould's concerns to his editor.

The next day Curtiss called to say that his editor had agreed that Gould could give the medical reports to the *Times* and expect fair treatment. He assured her that the information would be accurately reflected in the story written by Johnson. Thus assuaged, she turned over the medical reports.

Quite suddenly, without explanation, Curtiss went incommunicado. Gould phoned the *Times* repeatedly over the next ten days—Curtiss refused to either take or return her calls. Gould had a cold sensation in the pit of her stomach that the paper would cover up the poisonings.

"I was appalled," Gould later wrote to editors of the *Times,* "when the article appeared on the front page of the 'Metro' section with none of the available data included. The article represents a breach of ethics on the part of John Johnson and the *Los Angeles Times,* and a breach of promise made by a staff member."

The *Times* story that appeared on December 13, 1992 glossed over the medical evidence entirely, depicting the task force as a collection of paranoiacs who "claimed they are slowly being poisoned by those who want to silence them." The paper noted that there were "43 reported victims of the alleged poisoning," but "so far, there is no proof that anyone was poi-

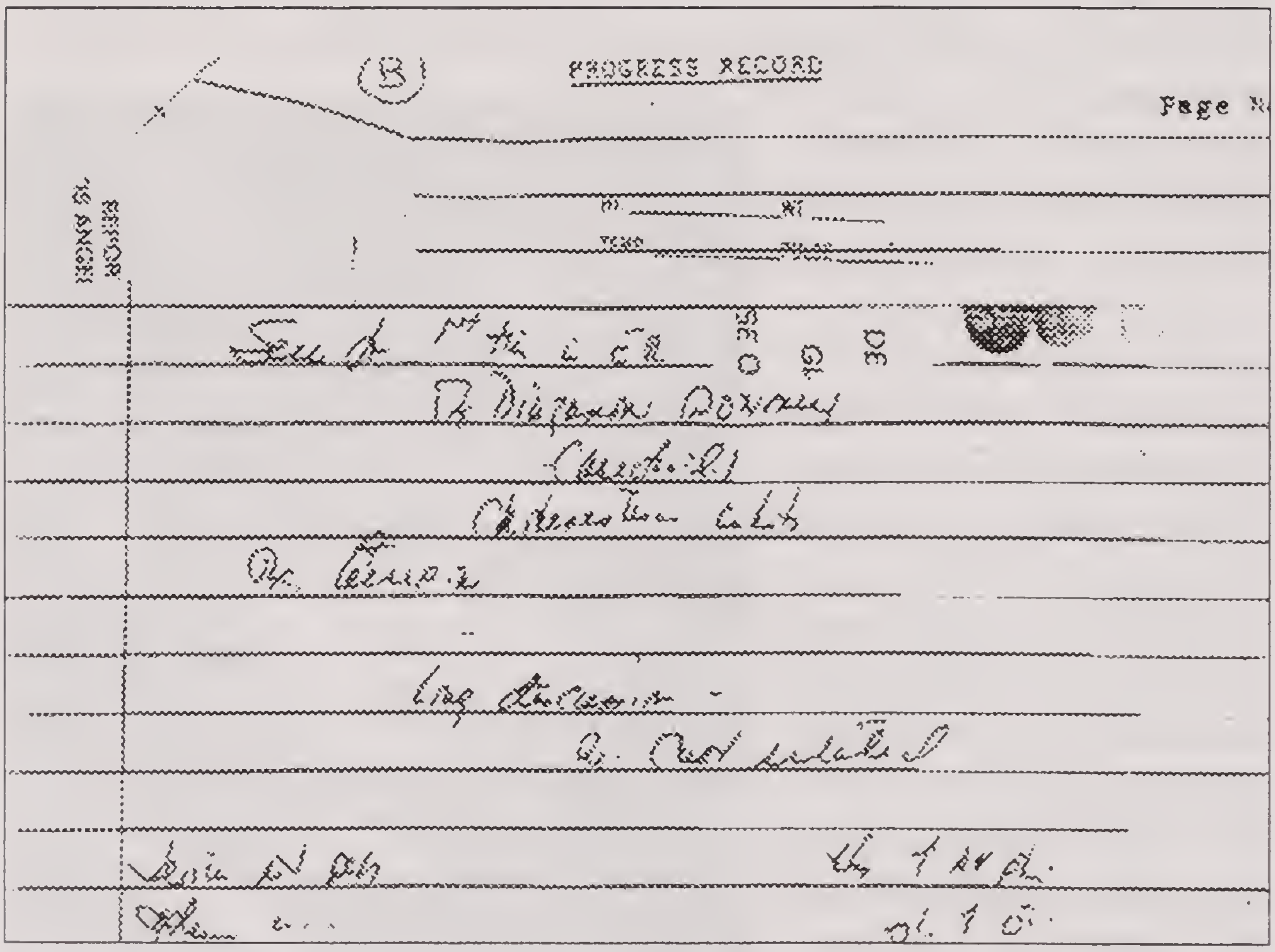

(B)

PROGRESS RECORD

Page

Dx Diazinon Poisoning

long discussion

The first task force member to report toxic symptoms, a therapist, consulted her physician and discovered that she was suffering "Diazinon posioning (Insecticide)." Diazinon is classed as an organophosphate toxin. The doctor's notes mention a "long discussion regarding cults." The treatment, prescribed here, atropine, is used to counter the effects of chemical warfare agents.

soned and skeptics abound." Johnson cited as an example Paul J. Papanek, chief of the county's toxins epidemiological program and the most reviled public official in Los Angeles County—the very "authority" who has repeatedly sanctioned malathion spraying in Southern California despite overwhelming medical data, a multitude of case histories, and strident city hall testimony indicating that the pesticide is harmful to humans.

Dr. Papanek "attended a recent task force meeting and branded as 'outrageous' the poisoning claims." He sharply faulted the commission for not attending to "common sense rules of evidence." On the heels of this "controversy," nameless authorities had "begun an investigation into the activities of therapists and an acupuncturist linked to the poisoning claims by task force members."

Other "skeptics" were "turning up the heat for answers." Johnson reported, among them Tom O'Connor, executive director of the Board of Psychology. "Are they diagnosing diazinon poisoning?" O'Connor asked. "That's beyond the scope of their license. This sounds like some sort of mass hysteria."

Another categorical denial came from Stephanie Sheppard, who "said she checked out the claims of pesticide poisoning and found no facts to back up the allegations."

The *Times* had only to cite the medical reports supplied by Catherine Gould to silence these critics of the task force. The spurning of the blood tests reduced the story to a transparent smear, probably to discredit Gould and other therapists treating victims of ritual abuse. The deliberate distortions of most news reports on cult conditioning of children inspired San Francisco therapists Bruce and Dale McCulley, at the Seventh International Conference on Multiple Personality in Chicago in 1990, to object in a paper entitled "Disinformation, Media Manipulation & Public Perception" that "media misreporting of ritual abuse blurs public perception of the issue, and contributes to the continued vulnerability of children to this most heinous form of abuse.... If there is anything more bizarre than the atrocities revealed by ritual abuse victims, it is the ludicrous explanations advanced by the professional disinformationists."

More "Mass Hysteria" & the Magical Mystery Fumes Molecule

The abysmal ethics of the *Times* in its handling of the task force poisonings extended to the paper's reports on a related story, the logic-defying "Mystery Fumes" case in Riverside, California. The half-dozen accounts of the case published by the newspaper were the exclusive domain of staff writer Tom Gorman.

In February, 1994 six emergency room attendants at Riverside

Hospital fainted after inhaling an "ammonia-like" odor discharged by the blood of Gloria Ramirez after drawing a sample with a syringe. "In the ensuing confusion," Gorman reported, "two people unaffected by the fumes tended to her as she went into full cardiac arrest. Within minutes, the 31-year-old woman—suffering from cervical cancer and weakened by nausea—died." State health officials and toxic specialists had no idea what prompted the incident, and Gorman reported that the Riverside Fire Department's hazardous materials squad found nothing peculiar in air samples taken from the emergency room.[18] (Five months later, however, Gorman reversed himself and reported that a chemical compound derived from ammonia *had* been found in the air samples.[19])

Dr. Huberto Ochoa, director of the emergency room staff, noticed white crystal spikes in the syringe used to draw blood from the dying Gloria Ramirez. "I'd never seen anything like it," he said. OSHA technicians detected an unidentified derivative of ammonia in Ramirez's body bag.[20] Nevertheless, one state hygienist blamed "stress" or "anxiety." This explanation, however, failed to account for the profound memory loss of Maureen Welch, a respiratory therapist. The strain of overwork seemed a lame explanation for the gangrenous knees of Dr. Julie Gorchynski after her blood had been contaminated, killing the supply of oxygen to her bones. She also suffered from breathing difficulties, muscle spasms and other symptoms reported two years earlier by members of the task force. In fact, the *New York Times* noted, medical professionals held that 'the toxic substance that felled the emergency room workers may have been an organophosphate, a chemical used in pesticides and military nerve gas."[21] (On the West Coast, the heirs of General Otis Chandler never once raised the possibility that Gloria Ramirez may have been exposed to organophosphates, quite possibly to avoid linking Dr. Gould's task force with the mystery fumes case in the minds of readers.)

"I had chemical burns in my throat and nose," Gorchynski told reporters, "lungs working at half capacity, biopsies showing dead knees, a drop of enzyme levels and crystals in my blood as well. It's all medically documented."[22] But the *Los Angeles Times*—which had ignored medical data in its reporting on the poisonings of ritual abuse task force members—also neglected to discuss Julie Gorchynski's medical examinations.

The *Times* wasn't the only local news outlet to spin a cloud of disinformation around the mystery fumes case. Dean Edell, a local talk show doctor for KFI, an AM radio station in Los Angeles, dismissed the incident as "mass hysteria."[23]

This diagnosis outraged Dr. Ross Kussman, Gorchynski's physician, who called in to explain that the hospital personnel displayed symptoms of toxicity.

"It doesn't fit the grounds for mass hysteria," Kussman said. "Julie became very ill from the toxin, developed pancreatitis and hepatitis, which are known to kill bone tissue." Dr. Edell scoffed, as though this diagnosis was the most preposterous abuse of medical science he'd ever heard. What poison could possibly account for Gorchynski's litany of symptoms, he asked.

"*Organophosphates* are well known to cause pancreatitis," Dr. Kussman offered. He explained that pancreatitis, in turn, is a known precursor of bone necrosis, the condition afflicting Dr. Gorchynski's knee. Edell asked why health authorities hadn't come to the same conclusion.

"Because," Kussman returned, "the county was uncooperative in helping us find out where it came from." (Gorchynski also claimed that county authorities were "stonewalling" her.)

"Trust me," Edell snorted with psychic confidence, "there ain't no fumes!"

This appeared to be the official position of the *Times* as well. Gorman parroted the statements of state health officials when, two weeks later, they too attributed the swooning at Riverside Hospital to "mass hysteria" (failing to point out, however, that this is formally considered to be a "diagnosis-by-exclusion"—meaning that if no other cause is detectable, mass hysterics could account for a spread of physical symptoms.[24])

At any rate, this explanation didn't wash well in the public print. But before the sighs died down another diagnosis was offered by Riverside County Coroner Scotty Hill. The coroner released a report from Lawrence Livermore labs—a few days before ballots were cast in Hill's run for reelection—concluding that the noxious fumes discharged by Gloria Ramirez were created internally from the bodily absorption of the pain remedy DMSO, chemically transformed by her unique bio-chemistry into dimethyl sulfate, a chemical warfare agent.[25]

But the DMSO theory had as many gaping holes in it as "mass hysteria." "DMSO is commonly used," Dr. Kussman pointed out, "and they're saying now that everyone who uses it emits a nerve gas?"

The Ramirez family denied that the patient had ever used DMSO. Besides, said Ron Schwartz, an attorney in the case, "the coroner's office is still saying that she died of cervical cancer, but now they're saying she created a chemical warfare agent that didn't hurt her. That doesn't make sense to me."

The *Los Angeles Times* neglected to report a second outbreak of mystery fumes that further decimated the DMSO hypothesis. After initial treatment at Riverside Hospital, two of the poisoned hospital employees were transferred to Parkview Hospital, according to a local television news report.[26] "What few people know," an excited reporter announced from Parkview, "is that four of the workers who treated them here were ill themselves. A poison expert examined the four new patients—he said the same symptoms at two different hospitals argues against a DMSO reaction, and points to an entirely different poison."

Lawrence Livermore chemists also overlooked an outbreak of mystery fumes in Bakersfield a week after the Riverside poisonings. The emergency room at Mercy Hospital was evacuated after doctors inserted a breathing tube in the trachea of a 44-year-old woman struggling with shortness of breath. As at Riverside, emergency room personnel noticed a gaseous cloud rising from the patient. They complained that a potent chemical odor originating with the patient's blood left them with burning eyes, nausea and headaches. [27]

The growing list of tenuous explanations contributed to suspicions of a cover-up. These were augmented by the announcement that the syringe used to draw blood from Gloria Ramirez had been thrown away.[28] And in the course of lawsuits filed by the Ramirez family, Dr. Gorchynski and nurse Sally Balderas, attorneys for Riverside County filed a court motion to destroy all of the evidence gathered from the contaminated emergency room. As it was, entire barrels of evidence had been kept secret from the Ramirez family. They and others filing suit therefore had no chance to have the contents of the barrels examined by toxicologists. An attorney for Sally Balderas complained that he had not been notified that the county wanted to destroy the evidence, or even that a hearing had been scheduled. Judge Richard Van Frank refused to give the county its way, ruling that interested parties work out a plan for the evidence before the hearing continue.[29]

Coverage of the mystery fumes case by the *Los Angeles Times* did not extend to the evidentiary hearing. The residents of L.A. were not told that the very "stonewalling" officials charged with investigating a case of mass poisoning wanted to burn every scrap of evidence to minimize "storage costs."

By suppressing significant details (medical evidence documenting a toxic assault on the ritual abuse task force, or symptoms of organophosphate poisoning in the mystery fumes case) the *Times* plays an insidious game. The newspaper has clearly distorted the chemo-terrorism of cults in the Southern California with a disinformation gambit that shields the culprits and defames victims (Gloria Ramirez?) for breaking out, talking to reporters, striking back or otherwise interfering with domestic CIA mind control operations.

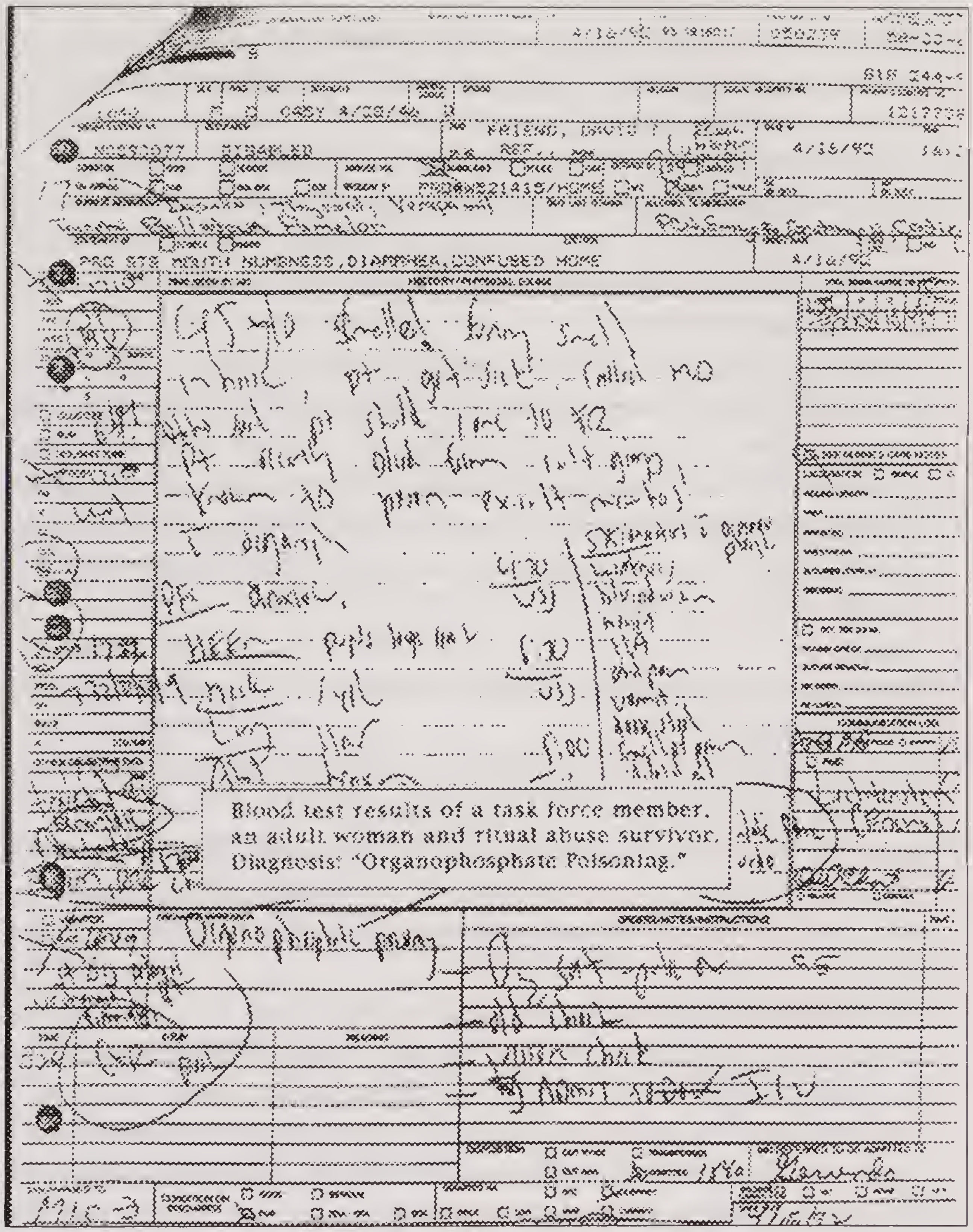

Blood test results of a task force member, an adult woman and ritual abuse survivor. Diagnosis: "Organophosphate Poisoning."

Blood test results of a task force member, an adult woman and ritual abuse survivor. Diagnosis: "Organophosphate Poisoning."

Footnotes

1. Teresa Watanabe and Carol J. Williams, "Japan Sect Uses Pain to Impel Faith," *Los Angeles Times,* March 25, 1995, p. A-1.
2. Jonathan Annells, "Temple of Doom," *London Times,* March 26, 1995, p. 1.
3. B. Boskovitch and R. Kusic, abstract to "Long-Term Effect of Acute Exposure to Nerve Gases upon Human Health," in *Mass Mind Control of the American People,* compiled and edited by Elizabeth Russell-Manning, published by Russell-Manning, San Francisco, 1992, p. 90.
4. There have been scores of military gassing incidents. In 1969, for instance, the accidental release of nerve gas in Okinawa hospitalized 25 Americans (see Sterling Seagrave, *Yellow Rain,* M. Evans, New York, 1981, p. 260-61). Non-military accidents are not all that uncommon. In 1976, the explosion of a factory owned by a subsidiary of Hoffman-LaRoche discharged a cloud of fumes that sickened and disfigured children of Seveso, Italy for life (see John G. Fuller, *The Poison that Fell from the Sky,* Random House, New York, 1977).
5. Annells.
6. Ben Hills, "Police, Scientists Still Baffled by Japan Nerve Gas Deaths," *The Age* (Australia), August 20, 1994.
7. John Johnson, "County Panel Scrutinized for Satanic Claims," *Los Angeles Times,* December 13, 1992, p. B-1.
8. Catherine Gould, letter with medical verification to the *Los Angeles Times,* December 17, 1992. Copies are available from Dr. Gould in Encino, California, or from the L.A. County Commission for Women's Ritual Abuse Task Force in Los Angeles.
9. Randy Noblitt, "Multiple Choice: Which of the Following is Most False: (A) The Memory, (B) The Syndrome. (C) The Foundation?" *Newsletter of the Society for the Investigation, Treatment and Prevention of Ritual and Cult Abuse,* vol. 1, no. 3, Fall/Winter 1993-94, pp. 3-5. The percentage of psychologists who believe recovered memory therapy to be effective is about 88%. The proportion is the same in Great Britain, according to one survey released last year. On January 1, 1995, the *Sunday London Times* reported that "the first expert investigation into 'recovered memory syndrome' in Britain reveals that nine out of ten psychologists believe the technique of searching for buried sexual trauma can produce accurate memories."
10. Jonathan Vankin, in *Conspiracies, Cover-Ups and Crimes* (1992), cites a lecture by Joe Holsinger, an aide to late Congressman Leo Ryan, at a psychology conference in Berkeley, noting: "the possibility is that Jonestown was a mass mind control experiment by the CIA." Holsinger offered as evidence "The Penal Colony," an essay written by a U.C. Berkeley psychologist. "The Berkeley author of the article... believes that rather than terminating MKULTRA (the Agency's mind control program), the CIA shifted its programs from public institutions to private cult groups, including the People's Temple" (p. 176).
11. Shirley Briggs, *Chemical Classes of Pesticides,* Hemisphere Publishing Co., 1972, Washington, D.C., p. 213. Immediate effects of organophosphate poisoning include behavioral disturbances, muscle twitching, headaches, nausea, dizziness, anxiety,

memory loss, weakness, tremor, abdominal cramps, blurred vision, slowed heartbeat and incontinence.

12. Anonymous attachment, Dr. Gould's letter to the *Los Angeles Times.*
13. Letter to Myra Riddell, then chairwoman of the L.A. County Commission for Women's Ritual Abuse Task Force, December 15, 1992. On file in the task force archives.
14. David W. Neswald, letter to Dr, Myra Riddell, task force chairwoman, December 10, 1992. Neswald found Ms. Sheppard's behavior "rather suspect."
15. N.R. in a letter to the task force, November 30, 1992.
16. Piers Brendon, *The Life and Death of the Press Barons,* Atheneum, New York, 1983, p. 232.
17. John Johnson, "Satanism: Skeptics Abound," *Los Angeles Times,* April 23, 1992, p. A-1.
18. Tom Gorman, "Family Claims Woman was Victim, Not Cause, of Fumes," *Los Angeles Times,* March 3, 1994, p. A-3.
19. Tom Gorman, "6-Month Probe Fails to Solve Mystery of Hospital Fumes," *Los Angeles Times,* August 16, 1994, p. A-21.
20. Tom Gorman, "Victims of Fumes Still Ill, and Still Seeking Answers," *Los Angeles Times,* April 14, 1994, p. A-1.
21. B. Drummond Ayres Jr., "Elaborate Precautions Taken for Autopsy in Mystery Fumes Case," *New York Times,* February 25, 1994, p. A-17.
22. Tom Gorman, "'Mystery Fumes' Doctor to File $6-Million Claim," *Los Angeles Times,* August 7, 1994, p. A-1.
23. Dean Adell program, KFI-AM, Los Angeles, August 8, 1994.
24. Kussman.
25. Tom Gorman, "Lab Suggests Mystery Fumes Answer," *Los Angeles Times,* November 4, 1994, p. A-1.
26. Mystery fumes update, late evening news broadcast, KNBC-TV, Los Angeles, November 26, 1994.
27. "Fumes Again Sicken People," *Los Angeles Times,* February 28, 1994, p. A-3.
28. Tom Gorman, "Syringe Used in Fumes Case Lost," *Los Angeles Times,* April 22, 1994, p. A-3.
29. Pat Murkland, "Bid to Destroy Fumes Evidence Lost," *Corona (Calif.) Press-Enterprise* , January 12, 1995, p. B-1.

Chapter Six

A Map of Hell

Devil Cult Mayhem—A Global Perspective

BRAZIL: In July 1992 a surly mob in Rio de Janeiro was dissuaded by state troopers with machine guns from lynching the wife of a small-town mayor accused of sacrificing a six year-old boy. The woman, her daughter and three male suspects who confessed to the killing were escorted from the police station under armed guard.

CANADA: As of 1977, Victoria had a black witchcraft population of about 1,000. Five of the cells were branches of the Canadian Church of Satan. Many of the witches were "prominent business people," according to a story in the *Victorian,* "and a substantial number (were) newspaper people."

In Montreal, a group known as the Continental Association of Satan's Hope (CASH) advises prospective members to "turn your fantasies into reality and discover for yourself the infernal power of mighty Satan."

ENGLAND: Newspapers in the UK insist that ritually abused children are suffering "false memories"—despite a survey by the British Psychological Society, published in January 1995, stating flatly that nine out of ten therapists believe that ritual abuse is real. The Society also found that the mental health community overwhelmingly endorsed recovered memory therapy. The prevalence of ritual abuse in Great Britain is difficult to pin down, but in June 1994 a research team at Manchester University released a study estimating that nearly 1,000 children were victims of organized sexual abuse over a four-year period. "Another 86 were allegedly subjected to ritual abuse," the *Daily Telegraph* reported, "in the same period up to 1991." The study encompassed every police force and child service organization in the country. Yet only a small minority of abusers were convicted.

Despite the assurances of Britain's False Memory Society, press accounts of cultic outrages appear at a regular pace. *The London Times* ran a news brief on June 26, 1993 reporting succinctly that "two men found dead in a fume-filled car surrounded with flowers at Fareham, Hampshire, were due to appear in court today." Both men had been "accused of offenses involving schoolboys and an animal."

In 1994 Princess Diana's brother, Earl Spencer, let on, in the House of Lords no less, that devil worshipers had been holding ceremonies on the estate where she was raised. "We have had everything from fences being pulled down and burned, animals killed, devil worship and motor-bike racing." Spencer claimed that "things" had been left behind by the devil worshippers. "It's just a diversion," he said, "I don't think it's serious."

In Leeds, the Sorcerer's Apprentice "magick" shop offers books on the occult, leather bullwhips, idols, spell-kits, pentacles, altar drapes, chalices and embalming fluid. Chris Bray, the shop's proprietor, boasts a clientele roster of some 300 self-avowed Satanists.

Mind control, torture and politics converged in the death of a Labor councilor in Manchester, a self-proclaimed sadomasochist and Satanist, who boasted of his involvement in the murder of several young men. The politician, Chris Rogers, was stabbed to death by cult leader Colin Henry, as reported in the *Guardian* for February 2, 1994. Dr. Gill, a psychiatrist, said that Henry feared his mentor, who he believed had "mental powers to manipulate him."

GERMANY: In *Magicians of the Golden Dawn,* Ellic Howe allows that "the belief in Crowley's authority survives even today in certain German and Swiss groups, notably at Stein near Zurich, where the Ecclesia Gnostica Catholica, a branch of the Order of the Templars of the Orient (OTO), still performs his Gnostic mass.

The Third Order of the Golden Dawn, vestiges of the original organization's inner order, is said to be highly political and still active in England, Switzerland and Germany.

GREECE: In December 1993 a pair of Greek military conscripts confessed to kidnapping, murder, rape, and the grisly murders of two women in Satanic rituals. Six others in the cult were charged with complicity in human sacrifices and black magic rites. On December 30, the *Daily Telegraph* reported, "the sect was discovered to have head-quarters on the northern outskirts of Athens after one of four women being readied for sacrifice at Christmas reported the rituals to police."

HONDURAS: The establishment of U.S. military bases in the 1980s gave rise to a high incidence of child prostitution. Newspaper articles from Honduras complained bitterly of the off-duty diversions of servicemen. *America* magazine ran a story in 1987 on a series of Satanic murders of children in the town of Comayagua, near the Palmerola military base. No arrests were made.

MALAYSIA: The dismembered corpse of Mazlan Idris, a Pahang legislator, was found in his country home in 1993, surrounded by black magic paraphenalia. In nearby fields, police found the remains of other victims.

THE NETHERLANDS: Unaccountable reports of child abuse in Oude Pekela, the proverbial sleepy village, population 8,000, near the German border, began to surface in May 1987 when two children, ages 4 and 5, exhibited physical symptoms of sexual assault including, in one case, persistent bleeding from the anus. The examining physicians reported "large-scale ritualistic abuse." Some fifty children may have been involved. The children disclosed "watching a videotape and seeing their friends on the screen" engaging in lewd acts, a tactic used to overcome the children's resistance and fear. Then parties were held, and the children were instructed to undress. They remembered sitting on the floor naked, being forced to lick the genitals and breasts of adults and walking around in circles with little leather belts tied around their penises. They also told of swimming in pools where their heads were dunked under water, of being washed with "colored shampoo."

Other substances given them included drugs, sometimes applied by injection or balloons placed over their mouths, and "feces rubbed on them." The children were ordered to hit a black child. This, they were instructed, was not a bad thing to do. Interviewers asked the children whether the victim of this moral exercise might have been a doll. They denied it, although some of them offered that they had played with decapitated dolls. When interviewed in groups, they often corrected each other and added significant details. One psychiatrist reported that many of the children discussed being abducted on several occasions. The children were approached by men and women on bicycles or in cars, dressed as clowns. The abductees were rendered compliant to the sexual abuse with drugged candy, ice cream and lemonade.

PANAMA: Jack Anderson's February 27, 1992 column reported, "U.S. military officials in Panama have uncovered a Satan-worshiping ring of about 20 American teenagers at an Air Force base there." The military attempted to contain the story, but Panamanian sources said "the cult was discovered by parents just in time to prevent a mass suicide the teenagers had planned. The teenagers were students at Corundu Junior High, a Defense Department school on Panama's Pacific coast. They ranged in age from 13 to 15, and most were children of military personnel at Howard Air Force Base."

SOUTH AFRICA: In Johannesburg, doctors contemplated sex-change surgery for a toddler with sex organs mutilated in a witchcraft ritual. The child was discovered in a Soweto field. His thumbs had been cut off and someone had attempted to gouge out his eyes.

UNITED STATES:

Alabama: In April 1986 cattle were mutilated by cultists in Gunterville and cattlemen were threatened.

Arizona: Confirmed cult activity near Tucson, and a long litany of cattle and goat sacrifices.

California: On December 19, 1987 in the town of Lancaster, Andra Reynolds stabbed her four year-old boy to death, then turned herself into the 700 Club hot line. "She had some problems," a neighbor told the *Los Angeles Herald.* The child suffered multiple stab wounds. Two open Bibles were found on either side of the body, which was sprawled on his mother's bed. Two full-grown dogs and three puppies had been drowned in the bathtub.

In February 1984, five residents of Newport Beach stole off with body parts from a mausoleum.

To curb the rise in animal sacrifices, the Los Angeles City Council approved an ordinance banning occult-style killings. A spokesman for the Department of Animal Regulation estimated that as many as 300 animal sacrifices had occurred in L.A. in the previous year, with reports coming in from every community in the city. Councilman Richard Alatorre said that he feared "these incidents are only the tip of the iceberg."

Connecticut: In Wilton, a satanic cult desecrated churches and threatened to murder young children.

Florida: In West Palm Beach, a gang of youths known as the Legion of Doom passed a death penalty on anyone who married outside the group. The Legion boasted 15 to 20 members who "played at Satanism," according to the *New York Times.* A search of the Legion HQ after the murder of 18 year-old Troy Collins produced a bloody chain, a baseball bat with hair on it and bloody clothing. Some play. The walls were decorated with Satanic inscriptions. Four adults were charged with the beating death of Mr. Collins.

Day-care center operator John Shaver of Fort Lauderdale was charged by police in 1990 with taking nude photographs of children in his care. As 14 of the children began medical and psychological exams, a hotel maid discovered him with his right wrist slashed. Child pornography was found in his home. Three of the children attending Shaver's day-care center were found to have gonorrhea.

In Stuart, Florida, Montessori school principal James Toward pleaded guilty to child abuse charges and received a 15-year sentence. His secretary, Brenda Williams, was convicted to six years.

Illinois: In 1980 a self-proclaimed witch in Chicago beat her roommate, who was left alone for six days to die. Four years later four Chicago area cultists were, according to police, believed to have been responsible for 18 murders. The victims were slashed, their body parts used in rituals.

Du Page County: In 1986 a series of murder trials of four men belonging to a Satanic cult was held. The prosecution charged that the men raped, killed and mutilated up to 18 young women, including Carole Pappas, wife of former Chicago Cubs pitcher Milt Pappas.

Also in 1986, a police officer was shot by hit men for the owner of "an unorthodox church." A *Chicago Tribune* article reported that the owner of the church was "a City Hall big shot." The hit men told police that they were on their way to Bridgeport to beat up a pastor when the officer intervened.

Maine: Desecration of churches a real problem.

Massachusetts: A cultist in Fall River ripped the head off of a prostitute with his bare hands in 1981. Cape Cod has been plagued by reports of repugnant cult activity since the early 1970s. The naked and mutilated bodies of four young women, their hearts cut out, were exhumed from shallow graves near the Cape in 1971.

In September 1984 parents in Malden worried about their daughter's inability to urinate. After a police investigation, a woman, her son and daughter were picked up on charges of child rape. Other children told of being forced to take part in animal sacrifices. Gerald "Tookey" Amirault was accused of dressing as a clown and abusing children in a "magic room." Amirault was sentenced to 30 to 40 years, and the women received terms of 20 years each.

In 1987 a Christmas creche was burned in Boston. A dead sparrow and a beef tongue were found nailed to the creche.

Missouri: In Carl Junction, the southwest corner of the state adjoining Arkansas and Kansas, several cults are said to be active. Favorite ceremonial sites are the dozens of abandoned lead and zinc mines scattered throughout the region. In December 1987 a boy was given 60 blows to the head. His body was found in a cistern. Three classmates arrested for the murder confessed that they'd been exposed to a local devil cult

Montana: Serial killer Stanley Baker confessed to eating the heart of one of his victims. He was recruited from a Wyoming campus by a cult based in California known as the "Four P" movement. The Four P's subscribe to a hybrid of Nazi beliefs and occultic lore. The cult has been known to sacrifice victims on an altar decorated with dragons. Baker, who has shown no remorse, formed his own cult of prison inmates.

New Jersey: Church and graveyard desecrations in several towns.

New York State: Police raided a Bronx apartment in 1980 and rescued 62 caged animals intended for sacrifice.

At West Point military academy, 58 children claimed to have been ritually abused by their preschool teachers, forced to play "Marry the Devil," swallow excrement, etc. The Army, parents alleged, launched an ambitious cover-up. Investigators insisted that abuse took place, but the case was plagued by a lack of material evidence and was dismissed. Some of the children contracted venereal diseases.

Jeanette Martin, an unlicensed day care operator in White Plains, was accused of molesting children and urinating on them. The defense claimed that child questioning techniques were tainted and charged that the children only gave "bizarre" accounts of abuse after coercion. Eighteen children testified in an 11-month trial. One perp was convicted on felony charges and received a 25-50 year sentence.

Ohio: In Cincinnati a loosely-organized circle of black magicians made their presence known in the late 1960s by leaving pierced sheep hearts in public parks—meant, white witches in Cincinnati feared, as a curse on the city.

Oregon: A nine year-old boy told friends that he wanted to grow up to be like his mother—a high priestess who "eats babies." The boy recruited 24 children into his cult of child witches.

In December 1987, in Roseburg, three Christian day-care centers were the source of allegations resulting in the sentencing of a minister, and his wife and son.

Rhode Island : Two boys were murdered within a week in late 1987. William Sarento, 21, was charged with the killings—ordered, he said, by Satan.

Texas: In Houston, a man was caught *in flagrante delecti* with an eight-year-old boy in the midst of a Satanic initiation ceremony in October 1980. An infant's body was discovered in a black box owned by a teenaged Devil devotee four years later.

In Fort Worth a babysitter received a 70-year prison sentence without probation for killing a two year-old child in her registered day-care center. The child was killed after the sitter repeatedly struck the baby's head against a blunt object.

Hard on the 1989 police raid on the Matamoros cult, the *Houston Post* reported that the name of a suspect in the case, Rick Block, had turned up in documents seized from the Southern Air Transport C-123K cargo plane downed by the Nicaraguan Sandinistas, kicking off the Iran-Contra revelations.

Near Austin, Daniel and Francis Keller, operators of a day-care center, were convicted in November 1992 for aggravated sexual abuse of a 3-year-old girl. Molestation aside, three children from the center alleged they'd had "giant germs" implanted in their bodies and been forced—at gunpoint—to participate in the making of pornographic movies.

Washington: Animal sacrifices and mutilations. Cult members were observed near ritual sites.

Chapter Seven

The "Fatal Vision" Murders & the Nomenclature of an American Death Squad

The Army's Body-Bag Heroin Connection and a Triple-Murder in Vietnam Era North Carolina

Dr. Jeffrey MacDonald's prospects appeared far from grim. At 26, the Princeton graduate had attained the rank of captain in the Army Medical Corps at Fort Bragg, ten miles northwest of Fayetteville, North Carolina. He was a talented physician; his contributions to emergency medicine have been adopted by paramedic and trauma units across the country. Acquaintances maintain that he doted on his family. Colette, his wife, was pregnant with her third child when her life ended and his was coldly dismantled.

On February 17, 1970 Colette MacDonald and Kimberly, age 5, and Kristen, 2, were bludgeoned and stabbed to death. Military police responding to MacDonald's call for help found him unconscious with multiple stab wounds, one of which, examining physicians later testified, collapsed a lung. He was hospitalized for ten days. Despite the severity of his injuries, the government concluded they were "superficial" and "self-inflicted." MacDonald was charged, tried and acquitted in 1970 at an Army hearing. He was retried in the summer of 1979, found guilty, acquitted by an appellate court a year later, and sentenced yet again by Supreme Court decision in 1982. He is currently serving three life terms in a medium-security prison in Sheridan, Oregon.

The official account of the killings was packaged as a mass-market book, a critically-acclaimed popularization of the government's case against MacDonald. Before Joe McGinniss vilified Edward Kennedy in *The Last Brother,* which promptly backfired (one *Washington Post* reviewer described the biography as "shoddy, slimy and unrelievedly rotten"), he was the celebrated author of *Fatal Vision,* widely considered to be the authoritative account of the brutal triple homicide. *Fatal Vision,* MacDonald insists, was equally disingenuous, larded with long sections of imaginary dialogue and erroneous conjecture about his involvement in the killings. Unfortunately, the widespread critical condemnation of McGinniss for the Kennedy biography wasn't retroactive. The press asked no questions about the author's earlier production.

Did MacDonald, for example, really suffer "malignant narcissism" and acute "amphetamine psychosis"—two core premises of the book—rendering him capable of killing his own family? The drug theory, at least, is ruled out by periodic blood tests administered at the hospital where MacDonald worked. These proved negative, as did the blood test taken after the murders. His medical examination before surgery on the collapsed lung found no drugs or alcohol in his system.

MacDonald's defense attorney, Michael Malley, offers that "McGinniss simply made up this theory"—as he would later fabricate details about the life of Edward Kennedy.

In *Fatal Vision,* McGinniss promotes the government's unlikely revelation that MacDonald's knife wounds were self-inflicted, a false lead for the authorities to follow. Of course his 17 stab wounds—one life-threatening—could be viewed as confirmation that the family was, as MacDonald claimed, attacked by knife-wielding intruders.

Who is Joe McGinniss? It has not occurred to the press gang (which has done much to burnish his reputation) to ask. In the Kennedy book, the mass-market journalist admits, without explanation or detail, that his source was "FBI wiretaps" for the allegation that Ted's brother John defeated Hubert Humphrey for the Democratic nomination in West Virginia by promising to "bribe local sheriffs and other election officials" with funds from Chicago mobsters. Melinda Stephens, a friend of Jeffrey MacDonald and editor of a newsletter about the case, contends the author collaborated with the government's prosecutors "to present false statements about the evidence" in an attempt to mold public opinion. In both books, McGinniss gleans incriminating information from federal sources.

Fatal Vision is, like the Kennedy biography, a political hit piece. The small but vocal ranks of MacDonald supporters believe he is a surrogate for shadowy figures in the intelligence community with connections to public office and the Pentagon, imprisoned to obscure their crimes. The paperback indictment of MacDonald has reinforced the public perception of MacDonald's guilt, and kept dormant one of the most unconscionable scandals in American military history.

Three suspects in the murders have confessed. MacDonald's version of events has been confirmed by some 40 witnesses. *Fatal Vision* is myopic in its exclusion of any evidence that might clear MacDonald. McGinniss's claim to impartiality eroded completely in his flat refusal in

1980 even to look at the 1200-page report compiled by MacDonald's defense attorneys. This report, taken together with the sworn depositions of witnesses, press accounts and interviews with investigators, combine in a case sharply at odds with the government's.

Jerry Potter, co-author of a recent reinvestigation of the MacDonald case, *Fatal Justice* (Norton, 1995), contends "every piece of evidence that the government brought against Jeffrey MacDonald at trial can be destroyed by their own hidden documents. And every piece of evidence found at the crime scene that would have helped him was suppressed." Moreover, evidence that MacDonald was framed, as he has maintained consistently since his conviction, manifests the identities of the actual assailants of MacDonald's family, and their motive.

"Malignant narcissism," drugs and "rage at the female sex" aside, another perspective of the case begins with a young criminology student and police informant from Nashville, Tennessee—Helena Stoeckley.

In 1968 Stoeckley, whose information on the narcotics underground resulted in over 200 arrests in the Fort Bragg area (though she was ruled not credible by Judge DuPree, who presided over the MacDonald case), was transferred by her police contact, Lieutenant Rudy Studer, to the office of Detective Everette Beasley, a new cop on the narcotics squad. Beasley didn't know it, but Stoeckley had fallen in with a circle of Vietnam vets running heroin into the Fort Bragg area.

On one occasion, Stoeckly told Beasley, "drugs, primarily heroin, were being smuggled into this country in the body cavities of casualties returned by air from Vietnam. She named Ike Atkinson as the ring leader." Atkinson was assigned to Seymour-Johnson Air Force Base in Goldboro, North Carolina. He was "in the service," Stoeckley said, "but subsequently got out and continued his business in drugs with the same contacts."

In a 1985 deposition, Beasley stated that a shaken Helena Stoeckley contacted him after the murder of Jeffrey MacDonald's family. She told him that she had been in the MacDonald house in the early morning hours of February 17th. She also provided him with details about the drug operation. The recipients of the heroin, she said, had contacts in Vietnam who placed it in the bodies of war casualties. The bodies were re-stitched and shipped to Johnson Air Base and other installations around the country. When the bodies arrived in the U.S., they were met by a military contact and the heroin were removed. The bodies were then sent on to their final destinations.

"The person who met the bodies at the respective air bases knew which bodies to check, based on a predetermined code," Beasley says. "Helena told me that the people who handled the assignments in Vietnam, and those who met the planes in the United States, were military personnel."

She also told him that the couriers made their pick-ups at Fort Bragg. Distribution was handled by enlisted men, civilians, police officers. "Local attorneys and Army officers as high as generals were part of the operation. She stated that she would name and identify the people if given immunity by the U.S. government."

Beasley believes the workings of the drug operation were part of the "bomb-shell" she promised to drop at the trial of Jeffrey MacDonald. But the government would not offer her immunity. (Facing a conviction for participation in the killings, she admitted later, Stoeckley overdosed herself with drugs before appearing at MacDonald's trial. She was reeling under the influence when she recanted on the stand, and was dismissed as a witness.)

If granted immunity, Stoeckley's testimony would have surely drawn national attention to an obscure chapter of the war in Southeast Asia. Had she lived, Stoeckley might well have toppled an international drug empire.

During the war in Vietnam and after, small contingents of American soldiers settled in Thailand to enter the world heroin trade. Among the Yank opium gangs was a syndicate of G.I.'s known as the Black Masonic Club, led by Leslie "Ike" Atkinson, nicknamed "Sergeant Smack." They called Jack's American Style Bar in Bangkok, a favorite watering hole for Black G.I.s on furlough and a notorious drug dispensary, their home.

Atkinson was identified by Helena Stoeckley as the leader of the umbrella group linked to the MacDonald killings. Atkinson had no role in the killings, but a sub-group in Fayetteville reportedly did. One of this group, Cathy Perry, confessed to the FBI in 1984 that she took part in the killings. The word "cult" surfaced much earlier.

In December 1970, Perry confided to a friend that she had "killed several persons." She complained that "the Black Cult" had pressured her to do "things" against her will.

On the East Coast, said Stoeckley, the heroin was unloaded at Fort Bragg and Johnson-Seymour Air Force Base. The heroin was distributed along the eastern and southeastern states. According to a 1973 issue of *Time,* casualties of war were indeed used as couriers. The opiate was stuffed into coffins, body-bags and internal organs. The *Time* report described the scandal as "the most vicious case of war-profiteering" in American history.

Military police, looking into the black market in stolen supplies and narcotics, periodically snagged an enlisted man or petty officer. Pressured to plea bargain, they often named senior officials. One team of drug agents filed reports at military bases around the country. Eye-witnesses at Norton Air Force Base in California agreed to roll over under immunity and testify that incoming bodies, stuffed with as much as 50 pounds of heroin each, were surgically relieved of the contraband. *Wall Street*

Journal reporter Jonathan Kwitny reports in *The Crimes of Patriots,* published in 1987, that "corrupt U.S. and Vietnamese officials" arrested for complicity in the heroin pipeline turned evidence on "senior U.S. officers."

"These reports checked out," Kwitny affirmed (leaving the identities of said officials a lingering mystery).

The Army acted quickly—not by rounding up the ring leaders, but by dismantling the investigative team and packing them off to combat duty in Vietnam. Skittish military officials, alleges Ted Gunderson, former agent-in-charge of the FBI's Los Angeles office and a long-time MacDonald supporter, only pursued low-level couriers in the drug transfers. "High-ranking Army officers," he says, "were in charge of this drug ring (and) have never been identified. Informants have advised that the Army investigation of the operation was controlled and manipulated to conceal its magnitude and the extent of (official) participation."

This gruesome successor to Air America began to fall apart in 1972 when federal agents were tipped off that 20 kilos of heroin could be found aboard a KC-135 bound for Delaware's Dover Air Force Base. The plane was ordered to land in Maryland, and the agents searched the transport. The search proved futile until one agent noticed that a body in the cargohold had been freshly stitched. The agents arrested Thomas Southerland, an Army veteran from North Carolina. His bail was set at $50,000. The jury was informed that Southerland was an operative in an international opium ring.

The DEA soon made the arrest of Ike Atkinson, currently serving a forty-year prison sentence. Federal authorities are convinced that he still has $85 million cabbaged away in offshore accounts. (Atkinson has since changed his name. He has told fellow prisoners that he was used in CIA mind control experiments. He was, apparently, a pawn, not a true Insider. Federal documents released under FOIA have since established that the Agency used the military as cover for experiments in behavior modification.) The stiff sentence is inconsistent with the fate of James Smedly, who directed the Thai end of the operation. Smedley spent two years in a Bangkok prison and was released to enter a guilty plea in a Raleigh, North Carolina courthouse. He walked away with a reprimand and parole. Jasper Myrick, a courier, did not fare so well—he was arrested in Bangkok and sentenced to 33 years in a maximum-security cell.

In Fayetteville, an accused drug dealer, Spider Newman, consented to turn state's evidence on his suppliers. The case was heard in federal court. During a break in the trial, Newman disappeared. His body was found in his car, behind his home. He'd been shot in the head. Police ruled the death a suicide.

But in 1970 the Atkinson syndicate was still operating undetected. Some of the local distributors feared and loathed one Dr. Jeffrey MacDonald. The primary aim of any murder investigation is the establishment of motive. The prosecution, and later McGinniss, smeared MacDonald by falsely attributing the murders to amphetamine abuse. Actually, according to testimony that surfaced in the 1970 military trial, addicts on base considered MacDonald a threat because he actively opposed drug use, and attempted to get to the bottom of the supply. As an Army drug counselor, he routinely treated soldiers who were down-and-strung-out at Fort Bragg, among them a boyfriend of Cathy Perry (whose murder confession has long been shunned by the prosecution's office) named Warmbrod. MacDonald couldn't help but notice the rising glut of hard narcotics at Fort Bragg. One study concluded there were 800 to 1,000 heroin addicts at the Fayetteville base alone. MacDonald pressured those in his treatment program to name sources of supply. Army Major Jim Williams, a drug counselor who worked closely with MacDonald, testified at the Article 32 hearing that his colleague had waded into perilous waters.

"I became very concerned not only for my health but for Dr. MacDonald's," he testified.

But MacDonald was increasingly disturbed by the prevalence of narcotics on the base. He persisted in his one-man crusade against the warnings of Major Williams. Major Williams's concern gave way to alarm. He felt that MacDonald was "way over his head."

Among the details that Stoeckley gave Beasley in 1970 were the names of police officers entangled in the body-bag operation. One of them was Lt. Rudy Studer, the informant's former contact. Shortly after the MacDonald murders, Studer was promoted to Captain, Chief of Detectives. The promotion was short-lived, however. Studer was soon forced to resign after "misappropriating" pornographic material seized in a police raid. Stoeckley said Studer supplied her with heroin for sale in Fayetteville. His partner in the drug trade was allegedly William Ivory of the Army's Criminal Investigations Division (CID).

This was a very pertinent bombshell because Ivory, the agent on duty the night of the murders, directed the search of MacDonald's home, and was placed in charge of the CID investigation—despite his age, 26, and the fact that he had absolutely no experience directing a murder probe. His immediate background was a stint as MP, investigating traffic mishaps and interrogating drug suspects. Ivory was clearly not qualified to head an investigation of this magnitude.

MacDonald's defense attorneys have probed Ivory's acquaintance with members of the Atkinson drug syndicate. In February 1991, MacDonald wrote in a letter to his attorney, Harvey Silverglate, that "Ivory perjured himself at the Article 32 trial over when his relationship began with Helena Stoeckley. We now know from recent informants in the CID that Ivory knew her pre-February 17th (prior to the murders), and secretly had her in a safehouse two days later for an 'interview.'"

In other words, the same military official who indicted MacDonald had an undefined working relationship with a confessed participant in the murders. Afterwards, an investigative turf war was waged between the FBI and CID. The Bureau was shut out. Ivory took over the investigation.

Consistently, the same military personnel entangled in the body-bag connection figured prominently in the MacDonald killings, as Ivory did in the subsequent investigation.

Detective Studer's partner, Lt. Sonberg, disappeared immediately after the murders. It was bruited around the Fayetteville police department that he had double-crossed a ring of drug dealers. A police informant, Joseph Bullock, has stated to Fayetteville police that on more than one occasion he'd witnessed Studer and Ivory exchanging envelopes at a local Dunkin' Donuts shop. Shortly after talking to police, Bullock was ambushed in his home and, like Spider Newman, received a fatal bullet in the head.

City officials fingered by Stoeckley in the body-bag drug syndicate also had a direct role in the prosecution of Jeffrey MacDonald. "Helena once mentioned the name Proctor to me," Beasley recalled in a signed statement. James Proctor, a prosecuting attorney in the MacDonald case, was the former son-in-law of Judge DuPree, a certain conflict-of-interest in a case this sensitive

Alan Mazorelle, a drug courier named by Stoeckley, "was in the Army," stationed at Fort Bragg, and took part in the killings. She said Mazorelle was dealing drugs quite heavily by this time. He married, produced a daughter, but spent most of his time away on "military business," shuttling between military bases, mixing with smugglers and avoiding the MPs. Mazorelle once boasted to friends that he was assigned to the CID. Of all the underworld figures with whom she dealt, Stoeckley feared him most. "Mazorelle would kill you in a minute," she said.

Her dread was shared by Mazorelle's daughter, who alleges that he prided himself on homicides made to appear to be accidents. She told investigative reporter Ted Schwartz that her father was fascinated with mind control. He had learned hypnosis, and through it attempted to divide her into two distinct personalities. Schwartz's investigation of Mazorelle confirmed that he was active in cult activity. Beasley maintains that he compiled extensive intelligence files on all of Stoeckley's associates, "but this information has since disappeared from the Fayetteville police files," he said. Beasley discovered that the files had vanished in 1979. "During the MacDonald trial I was given a subpoena to bring these records to trial. It was then I discovered they were gone," he says.

Among them the file of Greg Mitchell, a G.I. placed by Stoeckley at the crime scene, one of several mysterious "Fatal Vision" casualties. His wife recalls that Mitchell once explained to her how drugs were smuggled into the country in the body cavities of soldiers killed in Vietnam. Mitchell was questioned by the FBI in 1982. Shortly thereafter he told friends he was leaving the country to evade arrest for "serious crimes," notably the murder of MacDonald's wife and children. Two reliable witnesses, Ann Sutton Cannady and Juanita Sisneros, found the words:

"I KILLED MACDONALD'S WIFE AND CHILDREN"

scrawled by Mitchell in red paint on a farmhouse wall. Unfortunately, Mitchell's travel plans were canceled by sclerosis of the liver. Sclerosis, normally a lingering illness, was *also* the instantaneous cause of Helena Stoeckley's death seven months later. Before she died, Stoeckley complained to friends that "two men in suits" were tailing her. Neighbors have since confirmed that a couple of well-dressed strangers parked for long periods in front of her apartment, according to Potter and Bost in *Fatal Justice.*

"Shockingly," Ted Gunderson gradually realized, as his own investigation for MacDonald's defense team led him from one witness to the next, "the group MacDonald described existed, was drug- and violence-oriented, was seen going to and coming from the house, was seen in bloody clothing, and fits his descriptions."

MacDonald passed a polygraph. He submitted to five independent forensic examinations. The government's own lab specimens link Fort Bragg's body-bag ring to the crime scene, including a long synthetic blonde strand corroborating MacDonald's contention that Stoeckley wore a blonde wig the night of the murders. A bloody syringe found in his home was "lost" by the prosecution.

In fact, Government files released since the trial verify that William Ivory, the CID investigator and alleged body-bag drug courier, misplaced or destroyed most of the evidence corroborating Dr. MacDonald's version of events. The defense team never knew that Stoeckley's bloody boots and clothing were turned over to the Army CID by a friend of Helena Stoeckley. Or that blood samples conforming to Greg Mitchell's type were taken from the MacDonald house, as were seven fingerprints of persons unknown—discarded because "they kept getting mixed up with the known prints." And federal prosecutors violated federal rules of evidence by bluntly refusing to provide MacDonald's attorneys with the addresses of witnesses required in preparation for trial. They were only given the list of addresses after the Fourth Circuit Court of Appeals ordered the prosecution to relinquish them.

Twenty-five years ago, MacDonald's life was turned upside down. All evidence that could reverse a conspicuous case of malicious prosecution is systematically rejected upon appeal—very comforting to the coterie of military officers and public officials connected by CID investigators, Stoeckley, Perry, Mitchell and others to the importation of heroin from Southeast Asia by casualty-courier to Fort Bragg.

But another motive was rough-sketched in 1987 by Melinda Stephens, a tenacious supporter of Jeffrey MacDonald, in *I Accuse: The Torturing of An America Hero,* a self-published debunking of the government's case. The suspects described by MacDonald "all existed," she observes, "all knew each other and all had a motive to kill... drugs. The Army had a motive for covering up their crimes, stemming from the fact that they were government informants involved in illegal LSD experiments at Fort Bragg." Her source of information was Major Jim Williams, MacDonald's colleague and the witness at the 1970 hearing who testified that he feared MacDonald had carried his investigation of drugs on the base too far, and had thereby exhorted disaster. Williams also stated on the record that the confessed "Fatal Vision" killers were "government informants."

As noted, Ike Atkinson has alleged that he was used in a CIA mind control operation involving brain telemetry.

All of this is consistent with CID Investigator William Ivory's recruitment of Dr. James A. Brussel, a mental health commissioner for the state of New York. Brussel has claimed to be an agent of the CIA and an adviser to the CID's counter-espionage division. He also, according to Potter and Bost, was "an innovative researcher into novel methods for controlling inmates in psychiatric institutions. Lamenting the frustrations of managing unruly patients and the cost of housing them in the late 1940s, Brussel and an associate instituted electric shock experiments on the brains of female inmates." Dr. Brussel's early ECT "treatments" were performed on 50 female mental patients, in some cases at the rate of 40-50 sessions per patient. Brussel also experimented with amphetamines and methedrine on depressed patients. He was recruited by Ivory in 1971 as a *secret* consultant to the government.

Yet another CIA mind control researcher brought into the MacDonald case was the infamous William Kroger, author of *Hypnosis and Behavior Modification* (1963), with a preface by MKULTRA's Martin Orne and H.J Eysenck. Kroger's work for the Agency involved hypnosis as an espionage tool. Of particular interest to Kroger was the development of a drug-assisted, hypnotic means of programming intelligence operatives to carry out an assignment and obscure any memory of it. Whether these mind control specialists had a direct role in the killings is not clear, but the confessions of Helena Stoeckley and Cathy Perry both mention dim recall of events of February 17, 1970, as if they'd dreamed the killings.

They have provided MacDonald's defense team with a wealth of details, confirming that the only "Fatal Vision" in the case is the government's own. McGinniss's version of events has had the effect of drawing attention from the body-bag connection and the CIA's attempts, in violation of repeated Congressional injunctions, to commandeer the mind.

Fatal Vision is their cover story.

Chapter Eight

Family Ties

The Mephistophelian World of The Children of God

The fatal speedball seizure of River Phoenix on Halloween night, 1993, coincided in the media with the apocalyptic fire storm in Malibu and the death of Federico Fellini. In early September, newspapers in London and Buenos Aires headlined a story that directly concerned River Phoenix but, after the initial burst of coverage, was conspicuously absent from the American press—a raid on the Pilar, Argentina compound of the Family of Love, formerly the Children of God sect.

Police confiscated videos and magazines of children engaged in sex acts with adults. Also seized was a book for children, *The Life of Little David,* a Bible parody and tale of sexual initiation as told by "Sister Sarah." In one home video, naked young girls danced with silk scarves. Some 136 children were taken into protective custody, and 68 adults were detained for interrogation. The *London Times* reported that the children were "living in compartmented cells and answered questions like automatons. Whenever one of them tried to say something, another would look at him and he would fall silent, terrified." One cult house functioned strictly as a punishment facility, imprisoning some 50 adolescents.

Somos magazine reported on September 13, 1993 that the group's compound in Pilar is situated on "five kilometers of land hidden by high walls, constructed like a fortress off the Pan American highway." When Argentine authorities flew over the estate in a private plane, they discovered three observation posts on the roof. With binoculars, Police Commissioner Hugo Gabutti spotted three *rondina* units, or armed guards, on the roof. "They operated in a military fashion," Gabutti said, "looked and acted military. The security measures taken by the sect are incredible. They have received military training to protect themselves from outsiders."

Police in Buenos Aries were quickly inundated by "hundreds of telephone calls from the public requesting a special investigation,' according to the daily *Clarin.* After the raids, the *New York Times, Time, Espanol,* NBC and CNN all chimed in with prominently-placed features on the Family.

The investigation rapidly spread to Paraguay, Peru, Colombia and Venezuela. NBC's *Prime Time Live* interviewed disaffected Family members and flashed sexually-explicit videos: "We have had to edit them carefully," warned senior correspondent Fred Francis. The videos bore witness to intercourse with minors, "hooking for Jesus" and evangelical "sex orgies in rows of groaning bunk-beds." All over Latin America, *Clarin* reported on September 12, "Satanic and esoteric rites have been the subject of complaints concerning the sect." Silvina Cangaro, an interior decorator and former Family member, spoke to *Gente,* Argentina's answer to *People,* of her recruitment: "When I became a member, I immediately took part in Satanic rites. After I left the group and complained to the police, I received many death threats."

The *Times* of London reported on September 3 that video tapes seized by police—and broadcast on Argentina's nightly news—depicted "abhorrent Satanistic acts… in uncensored extracts of the videos after late-night news programs on Wednesday."

David "Moses" Berg, founder of Children of God, opened the door to esoteric religions and promiscuity in the 1970s, when in a letter to disciples he endorsed spiritism, witchcraft and astrology, according to W. Douglas Pritchett, who has compiled a book-length bibliography on the sect. Berg deified himself and proclaimed, "God is a pimp!" He claimed to have had sexual encounters with "goddesses," to have visited hell.

Ruth Gordon left the congregation in 1977, summing them up as a "pseudo-Christian" sect that dabbles in the occult. Other former disciples have described Berg as "Satanic," a charge first made by former members in 1973. Devil worshiper or not, he has long been a pugnacious anarchist, declaring "war" in 1968 "on the hypocritical old bottles of the religious system who were lined up on the back seat, and I cast in my lot with outlaws, drug addicts, maniacs, and the younger generation."

The allegations of former sect children were corroborated by the medical evidence—despite widespread and deceptive syndicated news stories like the one released by Reuters on September 5 claiming that "physical examinations carried out on the children turned up no signs of abuse." There followed a lull in the American press, a virtual news black-out.

Meanwhile, developments in the case continued to appear prominently in Latin American and European newspapers. On September 11 the *Manchester Guardian* reported that medical examinations of cult children *did* in fact find boys with "rectal bruises and excoriations," girls nine years old with "torn hymens and flayed vulvas": "Physical examination of children in Argentina's Family of Love sect has produced evidence of sexual injuries, according to a prosecutor in the case. "Those examinations, combined with psychological tests of the children and documents seized in the raids, are the basis for charges laid against the sect." Psychological profiles of the children detail characteristics of dementia and a trend of mental and psychological degeneration. Joyanne Treadwell Berg, 29, granddaughter of the sect's founder, told a magazine in Buenos Aires of her cousin Mene's sexual torment by leaders of the cult. "When my grandfather initiated her," Ms. Berg said, "he abused her sexually. She rebelled and endured all kinds of punishment. They used to hit her, tie her up in bed. They wrapped barbed wire around her body. They hit her so much—then they spread the news that she was mentally ill."

The Family fought back with denials that children had been harmed, accusing police of "religious persecution," of "stealing" and "torturing our children with physical examinations," as the Paraguayan branch of the sect maintained at a demonstration in Montevideo—itself under scrutiny for kidnapping and child abuse. Around the world, angry Children held outraged signs aloft:

"ARGENTINA ABUSES CHILDREN LIKE ME!"
"THE GESTAPO STOLE OUR CHILDREN!"

Gideon Scott, the "house shepherd" in Leicaster, England told reporters: "Nothing could be further from the truth than the wild allegations that our members abused or neglected their children. We do not promote or encourage sexual activity between adults and minors."

The group has long claimed to be the target of political oppression, especially when routed by police. Political martyrdom was a fundamental teaching of Moses Berg, the reclusive "prophet" who foretold the coming of the Anti-Christ in the form of a powerful dictator and the ascension of a One World Government. This, of course, is far-right religious programming—disseminated by Pat Robertson.

The cult's disavowals were echoed by Daniel Mujica, president of Argentina's Superior Council of Catholic Education, who said the allegations were inflated by the press. "The media are trying to make a big thing out of nothing," he said. "The sect isn't doing anything illegal." But his disavowals ran counter to the evidence: investigators in several countries have laid hands on a small library of photographic adventures in pedophilia printed by the Children. Most of the group's more lurid literary efforts were destroyed in 1987, including *The Davidito Letter,* written by Sara Davidito, a nurse in charge of group child care instruction. On October 10, 1993 the *Houston Chronicle* reported, "she writes of and is pictured having oral sex with the child. There are pictures of the child masturbating and being placed in a copulatory position with a small girl.

"The nurse writes of the boy sitting by while three couples, including his mother, have group sex. She describes giving him 'swigs of wine' so he would 'get happy,' then climbing into bed with him and asking if he was 'in the mood.'" Abigail Berry, a former member born inside the group, says she was coerced at age 13 into a carnal relationship with a minister. She can quote from *The Davidito Letter* by heart, and considers it "the child care manual for the Children of God."

The Family has a reputation as the ultimate in sackcloth-and-ashes millenarian cults, but sex with children has been a constant. A pamphlet written by Berg for his adherents twenty years ago, *My Little Fish,* had in it a photo of an unidentified adult stroking the penis of a boy of about three years in age. *Heaven's Girl,* an illustrated primer for teen-age girls, told the adventure of a young heroine who, while out flirty-fishing, is brutally gang-raped but perseveres to convert her attackers to Christianity.

Hooking for Jesus, sect leaders argue, was halted in 1987, when Berg instituted the great "Reformation and Revolution." They say that AIDS was a factor in the discarding of the Family's salacious sexual doctrine, provoking an argument from the *Houston Chronicle* on October 10, 1993. The "reformation" was extreme, though possibly not as complete as described by Family members. A January 1990 letter from Maria Berg's second-in-command ordered female members to require their "fish" to wear condoms. It also contained a section on "Which outsiders to still have sex with!" and advised them to restrict outside sexual activities to men in the "well-known" category.

Berg's disciples insist that the Argentine arrests are the latest instance of authoritarian jackboots tramping on their religious freedoms. Christie

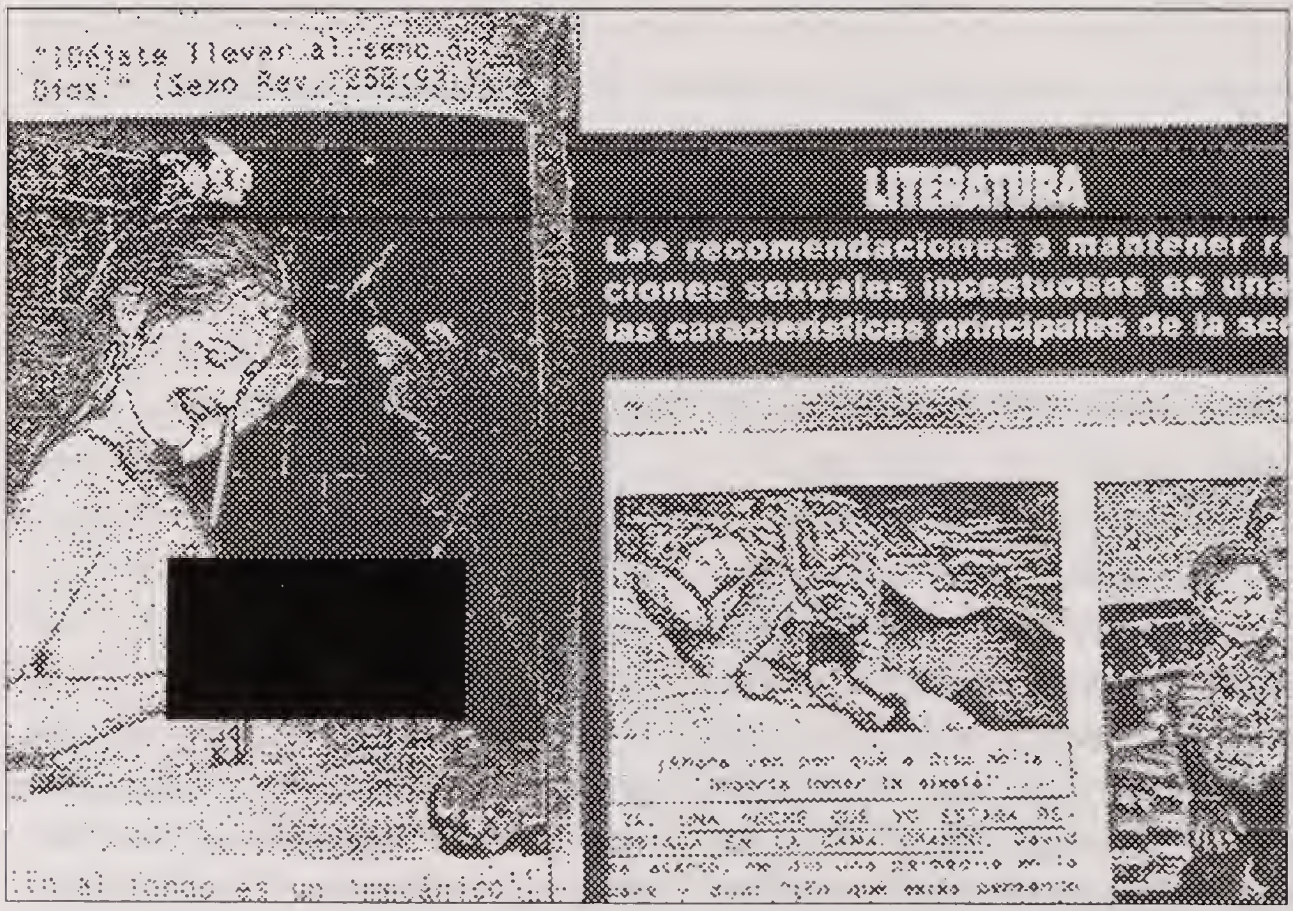
LITERATURA
Las recomendaciones a mantener r
ciones sexuales incestuosas es una
las características principales de la se

A selection of the child porn confiscated from the COG's Argentina compound in 1993.

Richards, a sect leader in Cleveland, Ohio maintains that "flirty-fishing" is "something we totally stopped." Ostensibly, Berg has proscribed sexual proselytizing, but former Children only shake their heads. Berg himself has, in a "Mo" letter to his congregation, warned that "sexual freedom must never be indulged in or practiced openly in the presence of visitors, strangers or uninitiated relatives or friends."

Julia Berg, his granddaughter, has quit the sect. She now lives in a mountain canyon two hours from Los Angeles, where she looks back with anger on her life in the COG. Women in the community, she says, "including pregnant girls, were ordered to do 'flirty-fishing' at night to bring in new members." She says that she learned by the "love of God" to conceal from outsiders the sexual teachings of Moses Berg.

Political Sugar-Daddies

The Children of God have gathered alms from powerful admirers. Chief Inspector Juan Carlos Rebello, who led police in the COG raids, said "we found evidence suggesting that the Family was funded by influential businessmen worldwide." One Argentine magazine found that some financial supporters of the cult were "well-known and powerful people," and pondered whether Berg's disturbed mental state "is being exploited by a network of powerful people to sexually control an army of children." Julia Berry, the prophet's own kin, has said that it was her "privilege" to be paired sexually with "very important men—men from the government." The Children of God, she said, "always had very powerful friends.... I met presidents from around the world. The children's chorus gave us an image of purity and innocence. It was a seduction."

According to the *Washington Post* for June 2, 1993, "the Family's leadership follows a policy of lying to outsiders, is steeped in a history of sexual deviance and has even meddled in Third World politics." Edward Probe, a Canadian who once edited Family publications, worked in the Philippines from 1986 to '88. He told the *Post* that "Family officials openly sympathized with right-wing military officers who tried to overthrow the government: What we were doing was supplying all the moral support." One former member from Costa Rica told Argentina's *Gente* magazine on September 9 about her life inside the cult: "My father used to have certain privileges inside the organization," she said. "He was considered a very important person for public relations. His paternal grandfather, the criminal lawyer, Guillermo Padilla, was a close friend of Chile's military dictator Pinochet, and Juan Carlos, the king of Spain." Pinochet and Carlos became financial and political benefactors of the cult.

The Family, according to David Hubert, a former member, contends that sexual evangelizing was used to curry political favor. "They would target special people," he told the *Washington Post,* "in the media, lawyers, in the government."

The guiding inner-circle of the Family is known as the Royal Family, and blue-bloods have in fact been sought out by Berg. In the 1970s, the prophet's "official representative" and second-in-command was Barbara Convair, the Italian duchess of Zoagli and Castelvari, rechristened Queen Rachel. Then in her twenties, the "ravishing, long-haired No. 2 leader" was rumored to have been a Berg consort. In 1973 she married Duke Emanuel Convair, a sect member, who invited the Family of Love to his estate, a wine-producing farm near Florence. The Duke graciously donated a vineyard to the cult. Germany's *Stern* reported in 1977 that a school on the estate trained women in the ancient art of religious prostitution. When *Time* asked her about the allegation, she denied it... but insisted: "There is nothing wrong with a sexy conversion. We believe sex is a human necessity, and in certain cases we may go to bed with someone to show people God's love."

In Bromley, south London, a recruit's millionaire father donated an abandoned factory, adapted as the Family's headquarters in England.

And they could not resist the call of the Holy Land, migrated to Egypt, and were expelled in November, 1985. Egyptian law, it seems, forbids the unorthodox sexual and religious practices of the cult. In 1977 the Children of God found a new messiah in Colonel Muommar Ghaddaffi, who offered them sanctuary from police investigations in California and New York. Louis Lefkowitz, the attorney general of New York, had charged them with kidnapping, brainwashing, imprisonment, enslavement, prostitution, incest and rape. But the U.S. Justice Department unexpectedly dropped the case, concluding, "'brainwashing' and 'mind control' do not constitute violations of federal law.... We have also concluded that the possibility of drafting effective federal criminal legislation in this area is unlikely." The New York attorney general's fraud division also lost interest in the case. "When it came time to prosecuting the group," reported the *Los Angeles Times,* then Atty. Gen. Lefkowitz sidestepped the issue with the claim that the Children "were protected by the First Amendment—a baffling rationale that later aroused suspicion the report was issued mainly to placate influential parents who had lost children to the sect. Lefkowitz, now retired, says he *doesn't recall* the matter."

The Justice Department probe hardly amounted to a bloody inquisition, but the Children cried religious persecution and fled the country. They left behind some nagging questions, foremost among them: Who murdered one of the Children in 1976, the body discovered with crushed internal organs at a medieval Belgium fortress? And who killed Berg's son, found in the same condition in Switzerland a few years earlier? Berg accused unnamed "enemies" of the Children for the murders. His critics blamed the sect. The public statements of some of Berg's followers fed their suspicions. In Canada, the Children declared on a national network that they were capable of lies, theft, murder, *anything* if so ordered by Berg. In 1972 a COG defector told NBC that she had been trained to commit criminal acts, including murder.

In Libya, Colonel Ghaddaffi was enamored with the cult. He provided them sanctuary, counsel, and even penned a song, addressed to "all industrial countries," performed at Children of God songfests around the world:

Do as I do.
I pray to God.
I'm very happy
Because I found the road
With Allah, Allah, Allah.

You hate Negroes.
You do not pray.
You have lost your way.
You're life is a falsehood
Without Allah, Allah, Allah.

The Children rechristened the budding psalmist "Godhaffi." Moses Berg enthused in *New Nation News,* a sect newsletter: "There has not been another worldly political leader in modern times as this young prophet of the seemingly impossible. There has hardly been such a godly world political leader since the days of his own prophet Mohammed... Jesus." Berg portrayed Ghaddaffi—now a deity—as "the savior who will ignite the young and rescue them from those twin forces of evil, godless Communism and American materialism."

Berg's politics were shared by messiah Ghaddaffi. Muommar Ghaddaffi was a product of the Libyan secret service, a branch of government assembled by Adolph Eichmann, Otto Skorzeny, Heinrich Muller and other engineers of the Final Solution who, like Berg, enjoyed the protection of totalitarian Middle Eastern despots. (Besides the Children of God, Ghaddaffi was also the patron of the infamous Paladins, a coterie of Nazi mercenaries from West Germany. Founded by Colonel Skorzeny, Hitler's commando chief, and the CIA, the Paladin group was responsible for a 1973 airport bombing in Rome that claimed thirty-two lives. They have linked up with death squads in Latin America and terrorists in Europe, South Africa and elsewhere.)

But the Libyan leader's fascination with the Children of God quite possibly ran through religion and politics to unconventional sex. His personal life is rarely discussed. He is said to be sexually eccentric, another trait he shares with Moses Berg.

Berg and his "prophet of the impossible" also found common ground in violent opposition to Israel. Reclusive, eccentric Moses David held a peculiar set of political beliefs for a demigod. One of his commentaries insisted that a small group of international Jews lurk behind a worldwide conspiracy. Berg assailed Jews again in a 1982 "Mo letter," and "their stooges, the Negroes... the curses of the world," the source "of everything that's evil." Berg claimed that his hatred of Jews and blacks sprang from a higher authority—"I'm a racist because GOD is!" he exulted in one of his delirious "Mo" letters.

In 1978 the COG changed its name to the Family of Love (and so continued to operate in Argentina after the Children were banned). By this time they boasted some 250,000 converts in 60 countries. The sect currently estimates that its ranks number about 300,000.

In the United States the political pull of the sect extended to the Bush administration. A chorale of Family children kicked off a Christmas show in 1992 for Barbara Bush in the East Room of the White House, for which they received certificates of appreciation signed by President Bush. The sect also sang for Bush after he toured the ravages of Hurricane Andrew in south Florida. (It wasn't the first time Bush's name arose in connection with a child prostitution cult. At the 1988 national Republican convention in New Orleans, Larry King of Omaha—a ranking GOP figure and convicted credit union rip-off artist—sang the National Anthem. In 1990, Nebraska state senator Schmit set out to investigate King and his circle of political operatives and business tycoons, alleged to have operated a national child prostitution network that catered to wealthy patrons. Shortly thereafter, Schmit received an anonymous phone call warning him off.)

The Family's political clout tends to put a damper on judicial investigations. Julia Berg recalls that adults in the Buenos Aries chapter "talked very openly about sex in front of children." At the age of 13, she alleges she was forced into a sexual relationship with a local pastor, and after leaving the Children attempted to press for his prosecution. But the judicial system, she says, flatly ignored her. After a police raid in 1989, Berry requested that a court-appointed physician examine her. The judge complied, but the doctor refused, explaining that he didn't want her "traumatized" by the examination—an ordeal, she says, incomparable to the trauma of molestation. "The doctor wouldn't accept my word that I wanted the examination." Family officials like to point out that "not once have we been found guilty of any kind of child abuse." This is true even in cases backed by solid evidence. The suggestion is that they are blameless, but another interpretation is that strings are pulled by well-heeled patrons to stifle public disclosure.

Police came away from the 1989 raid with cocaine, pornographic video tapes and childrens' books with condoms adhering to the pages. No Family members were prosecuted. Likewise, investigations in Brazil and Spain also fell apart. In May 1992 police in Australia swept into six Family communes, removing 142 youngsters. A key witness for the prosecution recanted his testimony and charges were suspended. Another case in Melbourne awaits trial. In June 1993 French authorities raided 12 of the sect's homes, but the court ultimately returned 40 children to their parents. Another raid in Spain also unraveled. Likewise, the September '93 raids in Argentina led nowhere. In December it was determined that a federal judge had no jurisdiction the case, and the sex abuse charges were dropped.

The Family is most assuredly not suffering religious persecution for their admittedly "controversial sexual beliefs," as the cult leadership often claims.

"Who Killed River Phoenix?"

The fatal overdose of River Phoenix on Halloween leaves hanging a host of questions concerning his death. Why is it, for instance, that three days later medical examiners announced that autopsy tests were inconclusive—but ruled out foul play? If the cause of death was unknown, how could the coroner possibly dismiss the possibility of murder? Toxicology tests revealed that the morphine levels of the cocaine and heroin ingested by Phoenix were respectively lethal. The day after he overdosed, the question reverberated on Hollywood streets: "Who killed River Phoenix?"

The conclusion that Phoenix died of an accidental overdose seems premature. No needle marks were found. The identity of his supplier is known. He is not some shadow melting back into narco-obscurity. Five witnesses, according to unconfirmed reports, accompanied Phoenix to a West Hollywood apartment at 10:40 p.m., on October 30, before departing for the Viper Room. One homosexual Los Angeles tabloid reported that the drug dealer who gave Phoenix the fatal dose "has been seen back in action at the club." If so, why wasn't he so much as questioned by police?

Media interest in the Family was eroded by false reports that Argentine prosecutors had been hamstrung by a lack of medical evidence. In fact, the death of River Phoenix coincided with investigations of the Family spreading across Latin America. The last thing the cult needed was a popular junkie film star shattering the news vacuum in the U.S. media by expanding, in some Hollywood fanzine, on his sexual initiation in a cult with notorious international political connections.

In fact, River Phoenix had a reputation for talking too much.

In the press, the Phoenix family has distanced itself from Berg's flock, emphasizing their separation from the Children of God. "We were flower children," John Phoenix told *People* magazine in September, 1987: "We were full of faith and loved everybody." John Phoenix was so deeply rooted in the cult that he was named "Archbishop of Venezuela" by the group. Rainbow Phoenix, River's sister, told *Life* in August, 1987 that she debuted as a performer at South American shopping plazas. "We used to sing and hand out pamphlets," she said. "But after two years in Venezuela, the family wanted out of the cult." Arlene Phoenix, River's mother, complained, "the guy running it got crazy. He sought to attract rich disciples through sex. No way."

The veneer of bohemian innocence was shattered in 1991 when, in *Details* magazine, River recalled his childhood in the cult. He admitted in this interview that he had intercourse at age four and sex with other children until the age of 10.

River Phoenix violated the cult's stricture of secrecy by discussing his early sexuality with reporters. Two years later, on All Hallow's Eve, at the most critical period in the Family's history, he was poisoned with a drug overdose. Had he lived, River Phoenix could have proven to be a dangerous liability to the cult, confirming reports of sexual abuse and child prostitution circulating throughout South America, but largely snubbed by the domestic press. Moses Berg's Family sleeps with powerful political allies.

Did one of them have reason to silence River Phoenix?

The Family Responds:

Note: The Family disputed many of the allegations made in the preceding story in *Paranioa* magazine Spring 1995. A point-counterpoint response to the cult by Alex Constantine follows the Family's comments.

My name is Phil and I've belonged to the organization, The Family, for over 20 years. I was in the former movement, too, known as the Children of God. I read your article with interest, and from what I understand of the "tone" of it, it is your intention to present an "alternative view" of the situation and circumstances surrounding the death of River Phoenix, which doesn't normally surface in mainstream media coverage. You seem to view River's death as being shrouded in mystery that might involve a type of "cover-up."

My reason for writing you is simply to ask: "How much do you really know about The Family?" My intention is to offer a better insight into our organization. We've opened our doors and had many visits to our communities by academics, sincere journalists, professionals, law enforcement officials, social workers, etc. who've wished to "see for themselves" what we are like. There's nothing we are trying to hide!

You present The Family as a dangerous "cult" and "sinister organization" with its tentacles sucking on politicians, powerful financial figures, and able to manipulate whomever it will. Is this your personal and professional opinion as well? Or is this an article that will "sell a copy" and fascinate its readers? If the case is the latter, let's hope that the readers will take it with a grain of salt and let it flow in one ear and out the other. As a Family member, I find it quite erroneous and I've counted 10 such gross misinterpretations of tnuth and/or wrongly quoted "out of context" statements.

Speculations of The Family being "some sort of intelligence tool" and escaping criminal prosecution through the efforts of influential friends and backers" and, finally, "whether River Phoenix had been contacted by, or was going to be contacted by, the Argentine prosecutors investigating the Family." And If so, "did the cult want him silenced?" My response is: Would these speculations of yours hold any water in a court of law? The Family is not any sort of intelligence tool; nor is it secretly and clandestinely backed by political or financial figures; and we detest the notion that we as an organization would ever even conceive of "silencing someone" to escape the law or justice! Honestly, I can't find anything in The Family that would lend itself to such an allegation or even permit such intentions to exist.

The Family does not permit any substance abuse or abuse of its members and children. Such abuse is against our very basic tenets. We are opposed to any and all forms of violence—and these are not permitted in our communities.

As you also said: If only for the memory of River Phoenix, that cult's most famous abuse victim, it's time to ask "Why?" I, too, would like to ask you "why?" *if* any law enforcement agency, prosecutors, or whoever want to assert any type of action against The Family, we'd like to know why and based on what evidence or charges?

I've enclosed some material regarding The Family. I hope it [provides] a better or more conclusive view of our organization and its founder, as well as our true beliefs and practices:

OUR ORIGINS. The Family traces its origins to the Jesus Revolution of the late 1960s. Our founder, Father David, started a ministry of hippies in southern California, many of whom were subsequently delivered from drugs and chose to work with him to reach and help others. The group grew and was given the name The Children of God (COG) by the media. By 1978, the COG had become established in scores of countries. However, when reports of abuse of authority by some COG officials began to surface, Father David dissolved the COG and invited those interested to join him in a new fellowship, which over the years became known simply as The Family.

OUR BASIC BELIEFS. Our basic beliefs and doctrines are the same as those of millions of Christians the world over. We hold the Bible to be the divinely inspired Word of God, that Jesus is the only begotten Son of God, and that through His death on the cross redemption was brought to mankind. Salvation is a gift given freely by God to anyone who sincerely acknowledges their need for a savior and asks for Christ's forgiveness. We are persuaded by Scripture that we are living in the last generation prior to Christ's visible return to Earth.

Two of our beliefs which many mainline Christians do not agree with have fueled much of the controversy about out fellowship. We hold that Father David is a prophet of God for this generation, and that loving heterosexual relations between consenting adults is not a sin in the eyes of God, provided that it is with the agreement of all involved, and hurts no one.

Our children are safe from abuse. Although much has been made of our sexual beliefs and practices, our children have not been abused. We acknowledge that our sexual beliefs are controversial, but we emphasize that we do not promote nor condone any behavior that is unloving or perverted, let alone illegal. Sex is a very minor part of our lives. But rather than adopt the hypocritical double standard of much of today's secular society and even many professing Christians, we prefer to be honest and state our sincerely held religious convictions on the subject.

Our children are not permitted to engage in any sexual activity that is improper or illegal, and our teens are strongly encouraged to refrain from sexual relations until they are of legal age. If various American polls are to be believed, Family teens are much less active sexually than the average American teenager.

We cannot emphasize strongly enough that we do not tolerate any form of abuse of children within our communities. Sexual contact is prohibited between anyone over the age of 21 with anyone under 21. Offenders are expelled from our fellowship. In spite of the most determined efforts of our detractors to smear us with charges of child abuse, our members have always been completely exonerated by authorities who have examined our children and communities.

QUOTATIONS TAKEN OUT OF CONTEXT. Many of tbe quotations from letters written by Father David were taken out of context in these recent articles. Over a period of 23 years, 35,000 pages of Father David's writings have been published. As he is by nature an outspoken iconoclast, it is inevitable that some of his statements can be misconstrued....

Some articles have also quoted excerpts from a few of the more than 50,000 other pages of literature we have published throughout the years. Many of the controversial publications in question have long since been removed from our commumities, and in no way reflect the current practices of our membership.

The report about the discovery of 300 videocassettes in the La Herencia house does not coincide with the 251 video cassettes submitted. None [erotic videos] were found during the raids.

Another remarkable development is that after three months of having the phone lines of their multiple residences tapped, it was not possible to seriously associate any part of the conversations recorded with the exercise of the mentioned prostitution, nor were detected any possible rendezvous, encounters or invitations for the actual practice of the same.

At any rate, it is necessary to point out that the presence of the torn hymen is not sufficient to ascertain the concrete occurrence of the charge of the abuses claimed, especially considering these same young girls themselves stated that they in no way suffered abuse [as] hymen tears and damages may be the result of causes other than intercourse. There has not been the slightest shred of evidence to prove that any of the corruptive acts described above have actually occurred to any of the minors named in this proceeding.

> The Ruling: All Charges Revoked, All Detained Adults Freed, All Children Returned to their Parents, All Family Properties Restored.
>
> —from the San Martin (Buonos Aires) Court of Appeals, December 13, 1993 ruling on The Family

> I'm real impressed with the children, particularly. They strike me as being among the most emotionally well-grounded of any group of young people that I've ever been around.
>
> —Bart Cox, Assistant Attorney General of Texas

> The Family teenagers... have the benefit of living in a drug-free environment and they've had the beneflt of being given a fairly strong moral code, so that they have something to face life as an adult.
>
> —Rev. Dr. J. Gordan Melton, Institute for the Study of American Religion

> When you hear the word 'cult,' you have some preconceived ideas. But all I saw was a well-built home that was very well protected against fire and nicely decorated.
>
> —Gary Looman, North York (Canada) fire prevention captain

We must remember the past. History shows us the struggle for freedom has always been between memory and forgetting, remembering the past, but working for the future. We permitted the demonization of the Branch Davidians. The reason people won't fund an independent investigative panel on Waco, is because this was a "cult"! People say, "There was evil there, sin. A threat to our religion, a threat to our established institutions, to our government, to our way of life." Everything that I work in, in terms of fundamental human rights and freedoms and peace, is terribly infected by the capacity for demonization in modern society.

We speak constantly in terms of "cults," but once the word "cult" is pronounced, most people can't think beyond that; the religious group becomes something inherently evil. The well has been poisoned and you can't drink out of it. As concerns The Family, it's absolutely appalling to observe what is happening to them around the world. It's clear beyond question that it involves inter-governmental coordination and communication, and the cooperation and participation of groups that call them selves "anti-cult" groups, who want to protect, as they see it, the population worldwide. Organizations like C.A.N., the Cult Awareness Network—which I've observed in several contexts now—have close relationships with law enforcement.

The Family is a very small, highly integrated group, numbering in a handful of thousands, spread all over the world. Since 1990, the attacks on them have been constant in Spain, Argentina, Australia, France and Peru. Argentina is perhaps the most flagrant case, with [over a] hundred children taken from their families, and scores of adults imprisoned. All of these cases have finally totally dissipated. There are some still in progress, but there is not a single case in which a single court or government agency has established a single incident of child abuse. All of these cases have ended—the ones that have ended—not only with a vindication of the church conduct, the parental conduct and the condition of the children, but with criticism or condemnation of government action as being ideologically based rather than factually based, reflecting inadequacy in investigation.

The trauma is something not talked about—the trauma of those children! Hundreds and hundreds of children all over the world were taken away from their parents. I think of those little kids in Waco, you know what the trauma on them was—they're dead! Suppose a little child had lived, might not that episode consciously and inescapably have been a dominant factor for the remainder of his life, affecting his perception of society and his interrelationships?

> The government of the United States, including the State Department, has shown awareness, international presence and suspicion regarding The Family. Interpol has involved itself with several Family members, in response to police input. The religious community must address this phenomena of the capacity of governments to brutalize small, unpopular religious groups who can be demonized when called "cults," and then action is taken against them without evidence. If a conventional crime is committed, it should be addressed, without calling a whole group a "cult" and condemning it and arresting all the adults, taking away all the children, keeping them in institutions, while they wonder where their mommies and daddies are.
>
> —Former U.S. Attorney General Ramsey Clark,
> in an address given to the Committee for
> Religious Liberty of the National Council of
> Churches, June 10, 1994.

Family Values—Alex Constantine's Rebuttal

In *Paranoia* 6, a spokesman for the Family, Phil Edwards, rebuts recent news stories written by "self-styled" critics of the cult, "without the interest of journalism or news reporting where investigative reporting, gathering of facts and analysis go into producing a written article." *Sic!* As a matter of fact, in preparation for a 1994 article on the cult for *Hustler* magazine, I collected every scrap of information I could find, primarily from European and South American newspapers. I went so far as to have publications from across Latin America translated after the Argentine raid on Family compounds, and culled all the information available from the UCLA research library's 11 million holdings. The claim that critics of the Family are making things up is as humorous as it is facile. He is relying on public naivete to promote an image of the group, a mere "handful of thousands" (elsewhere Edwards boasts of 9,000 members) as blushing innocents with a fierce devotion to gospel and "controversial" but widely-misunderstood "sexual beliefs."

The cult has a long history of lying its way out of tight situations, and Edwards is simply following this protocol for dealing with the press. River Phoenix himself publicly acknowledged that he'd been initiated to the cult's "sexual beliefs" at the age of four. Yet Edwards insists the cult does not "promote or condone any behavior that is unloving or perverted, let alone illegal." Perhaps he has not been informed that the Family's "sexual beliefs," as detailed in the cult's own publications, are proscribed by law in every civilized country on earth. What Edwards means to say is that the Family does not *openly* promote sex with children—he would undoubtedly argue that children's books with condoms stuck to the pages, seized in a raid on a Family compound in 1990, were planted there by disingenuous heathens from the press.

Edwards doesn't much care for the word "cult" to describe the Family. I'd prefer "doomsday sect" or "criminal syndicate" myself, so at least on this score we agree. On every other major point that Edwards makes, it is demonstrable from a thorough gathering of facts that he is relying on traditional, tried-and-true cult tactics for dealing with critics in the press—flagrant disinformation and smears.

To illustrate: The group has long claimed to be the target of political repression, especially when routed by police. Political martyrdom was a fundamental teaching of cult founder David Berg, the reclusive "prophet" who foretold the coming of the Anti-Christ and the rise of a "One World Government." This, of course, is far-right religious programming, the same dogma (excuse me, gospel) disseminated by the 700 Club.

But the Family is decidedly not suffering religious persecution for their "controversial sexual beliefs." On the contrary, if the group was harried by authorities—as were, say, the Black Panthers, Angela Davis, Allard Lowenstein or Danny Casalaro—the group could not boast that "our members have always been completely exonerated by authorities."

Exoneration even comes when there is solid evidence of wrong-doing. Last year, litigation concerning the Family in Australia was aborted after a *secret* Cabinet decision was made to overrule Dr. John Patterson, the Secretary of the Department of Health. Newspapers in Australia reported that preempting the secret judicial proceeding—in which Dr. Patterson had been "gagged"—was a "political" decision. Patterson was dumbfounded because his department had considered the evidence of child abuse strong enough to make a case for imposing legal measures to protect the 86 children it represented.

Phil Edwards, in his capsule history of the cult, misrepresented the cult's reasons for changing its name. "When reports of abuse of authority by some COG officials began to surface, Father David dissolved the COG and invited those interested to join him in a new fellowship, which over the years became known simply as The Family." The true story points up how tolerant even the most repressive political regimes have been of the cult's excesses. Years ago, Argentine authorities outlawed the Children of God. The cult simply changed its name to the Family and was therefore permitted, by some sort of oblique political reasoning, to remain in Argentina. Some crackdown.

Even the 1994 raid on 10 Family houses in the elite northern district of Buenos Aires came only after police had been swamped by complaints from the public over a three-year period of stubborn inaction.

Somos magazine reported on September 13, 1993 that the group's compound in Pilar is situated on "five kilometers of land hidden by high walls, constructed like a fortress off the Pan American highway." When Argentine authorities flew over the estate in a private plane, they discovered three observation posts on the roof. With binoculars, Commissioner Hugo Gabutti spotted three contingents of *rondinas,* or armed guards. "They operated in military fashion," Gabutti said, "looked and acted military. The security measures taken by the sect are incredible."

Appended is some of the child pornography seized in the Argentine police raid—including photographs of young children engaged in sex with adults. The kiddy porn should put to rest the ersatz claim made by Edwards that "we do not tolerate any form of abuse of children." Nonsense. When the police entered Family homes in well-heeled Buenos Aries suburbs, they discovered children who "seemed like Martians, autistic," according to the *London Times* for September 5, 1993. "They were living in compartmented cells and answered questions like automatons." The police came away with "videos showing the children, some of whom had been separated from their parents at age 12, performing various sexual acts with adults and each other." One cult house functioned strictly as a punishment facility to imprison some 50 adolescents.

Yet Edwards, in his transparent apologia, maintains that the cult's detractors “smear us with charges of child abuse.” T’ain’t so. It is because members incriminate themselves so thoroughly that the Family has fallen into disrepute.

The group’s spokesman argues falsely that the only evidence of molestation found in the Argentina raid was a single torn hymen. This, Edwards claims, “is not sufficient to ascertain the concrete occurrence of the charge.” I would agree—if it was only a matter of one rent hymen. But on September 11, 1993, the *Guardian* reported that medical examinations turned up “boys with anal wounds and girls as young as nine and 11 with torn hymens and flayed vulvas.” The physical evidence was backed by psychological evaluations and documents seized in the raids, including freshly-printed birth certificates for children kidnapped by the group in Peru. Yet, as usual, the cult “denied all the charges, and claimed it is being subjected to religious persecution.” In Montevideo, Berg’s followers assembled at the Argentine consulate to wave banners declaring “Police Stole Our Children Like the Gestapo.” One Family leader accused the justice system of “torturing our children with physical examinations.”

Another criticism hotly denied by the group is its affiliation with influential patrons. The Argentine journal *Gente* reported shortly after the arrests that “many well-known personalities around the world were involved as main figures of political and financial support of the sect. Among them is Libya leader Muommar Kaddafi, and the Chilean dictator Augusto Pinochet.”

Such connections led the magazine to ponder whether Berg was being “exploited by a network of powerful people to sexually control an army of children.” Another of the cult’s patrons is King Juan Carlos of Spain—adored by Franco as the son he never had—whose sexual appetite is legendary. In Italy, the Duke of Castelvari permitted the cult to use his estate, according to *Time* magazine, to train “good-looking disciples in the arts of seduction.” Joyanne Berg, the granddaughter of the cult’s prophet, claims “it was my ‘privilege’ to sleep with important men. I met many presidents from around the world.” George Bush had the Family to the White House for a Christmas celebration, so I have to wince when Edwards bemoans “the capacity of governments to brutalize small, unpopular religious groups,” and denies political connections.

(The nagging irony is, as a dissident political researcher, I have, on many occasions, been brutalized by the government and its hired guns. I have often been followed, harassed, beaten and even tortured. Why? Because I write, among other things, about CIA connections to the mind control cults. So who should write to complain about my research but the Family—with a Pennsylvania Avenue return address, no less.)

This fine, upstanding religious organization argues that many of Father David Berg’s more outrageous comments have been quoted “out of context” and “misconstrued” by such heathens as myself. This is the same Berg who in 1982 published a book that described his preschool stepson engaging in sex with a nanny, interspersed with quotes from the prophet himself about how God expects children to enjoy intercourse with adults. (*The Age,* an Australian newspaper, reported on April 30, 1994 that a raid there found explicit literature on cult premises warning children that "they would be taken away if they revealed their sexual practices to outsiders.") Berg once, when accused of harboring anti-Semitic feelings, opined boldly that "God himself is anti-Semitic." Berg's belief system was clearly pedophilic *and* fascistic. Out of context or not, his own published statements damn him more than any critic of the cult, and such expressions of perversion and race hatred are impossible to misconstrue.

Even more disturbing are reports from around the world that the cult's leadership engages in Satanism, which frequently fronts for CIA mind control activity. Scholar Douglas Pritchett compiled an exhaustive, book-length bibliography on the Family in 1985, noting that "Mo" Berg has advocated witchcraft and claimed to have slept with goddesses. He once boasted that he had copulated with an incubus. The raids in Argentina were followed by reports from around the world that Family children had been drawn into Satanic rites. The charges in Buenos Aries included "sexual abuse, deprivation of liberty," and the use of children in "abhorrent Satanistic acts."

The *London Times* story reported there was evidence "the Family was funded by businessmen worldwide and that children were kidnapped in one place and taken to another so that they would be difficult to trace." Mind control cults with a religious facade often operate at this level of disregard for human rights—and are allowed to get away with it.

Phil Edwards is a slippery religious huckster straight from the pages of Flannery O'Connor. His rebuttal to press reports on the Family is a weak attempt to convince the public that his sect is a victim of the establishment, when in fact it is a behavior-modified, morally-diseased appendage of it.

That cults are dangerous has been proven time and again. That they are often fronts for intelligence activity is indisputable (as anyone who has dug into researching CIA mind control experimentation knows full well). Edwards has made a sentimental appeal for sympathy with a lot of pious talk about political martyrdom. Pathetic. I have watched in horror time and again as otherwise intelligent people have fallen for the whining of cult leaders and the CIA's hired guns in academia and the media, and it is a painful thing to observe.

But it is infinitely more painful for the true victims, particularly children, who are traumatized for life by the sadistic intrusions of mind control, and forced by public denial to swallow their rage at the transparent deceptions of cult apologists like Mr. Edwards.

Chapter Nine

A Sordid Tale of Two Cities:

The Conspiratorial Republican Elites of Omaha, Nebraska and Wilmington, North Carolina

Few newspapers reported it, but Omaha had become a hotbed of scandal. In October of 1989, Police Chief Robert Wadman, his shirt-sleeves still smoldering, cleared out of town. He left behind a growing awareness of his entanglement in a clique of well-heeled conservatives led by Lawrence E. King, an upper-tier Republican and the disgraced director of the looted Franklin Credit Union. Larry King, a name once tossed around freely at the White House, kicked off both the 1984 and '88 GOP conventions with his rousing basso rendition of the National Anthem. He nurtured Washington connections until the day Franklin was raided by federal agents.

The credit union was closed in 1988 after it was discovered that King had spirited away $39 million. The state legislature launched a probe, and the Franklin Committee soon found itself immersed in a nightmare of political corruption that trailed off to the Reagan-Bush White House, Republican political circles, the CIA and a national child prostitution network.

A February, 1989 report released by the committee relates a conversation between James Flanery, a reporter for the *Omaha World-Herald* assigned to the Franklin story, and Carol Stitt, director of the Foster Care Review Board, that took place shortly after the raid on King's credit union. Flanery complained that the FBI stopped cooperating with him after it was discovered that King was shipping guns and currency to Nicaragua for the CIA. Flanery considered resigning due to "the possibility of a White House connection," and King's ties to "a number of big people." Flanery told Stitt that he was edgy talking on the phone. "His editor was distressed," Stitt said. He had "edited" Flanery's copy, expunging political connections.

Among King's co-conspirators in Washington was the infamous Craig

Spence, a former ABC reporter and the proprietor of a call-boy service in Washington, D.C. The *Washington Times* ran a series on Spence in June, 1989, reporting that he had established a sexual blackmail operation on behalf of the Central Intelligence Agency. His lavish parties were attended by such luminaries as William Casey, Ted Koppel and Eric Severeid. Paul Balach, a ranking adviser to Labor Secretary Elizabeth Dole, immediately resigned under a cloud, admitting that he had received blackmail threats from one of Spence's male prostitutes. Five months after the series appeared, Spence was found dead in a Boston hotel room, an apparent suicide.

The King scandal might well have blackened scores of political reputations if not for the body count. Spence's suicide was soon followed by the plane-crash deaths of Gary Caradori, chief investigator for the Franklin Committee, and his son in July, 1990. A National Transportation Safety Board brief reported that Caradori radioed that the cockpit compass had swung erratically. His transmission was cut short by an in-flight break-up that scattered the wreckage of his Piper PA-32R across a wide swath of Ashton, Illinois. The Transportation Board ruled that a damaged wing stabilizer had failed and separated from the aircraft.

Other bizarre fatalities soon followed: two important material witnesses "died in their sleep." Four others were shot dead. One was strangled, another dropped from a window. Harmon Tucker, school superintendent and a suspected molester, was found dead in Georgia, his cadaver bearing ritual marks.

At the center of the carnage stood Lawrence King, Jr. In March of 1990 a federal magistrate ruled that the powerful conservative Republican was mentally incompetent, an opinion founded on the report of Dr. Dorsey Dysart, chief psychiatrist of the Federal Medical Center in Springfield, Missouri. Dr. Dorsey diagnosed King as a delusional paranoiac of a "grandiose type." The doctor held that in his condition, "the intellectual system of grandiosity leads to disorganization of thought processes." King was therefore ruled too delicate to withstand a lengthy trial, and a growing political scandal withered from public view.

The prosecution of Lawrence King culminated in a sentence totaling 15 years for the looting of Franklin Credit Union, but he is permitted to serve his sentences *concurrently,* a very liberal sentence considering the magnitude of the crime.

The conviction handed down by Judge Van Pelt, a political team-player, applied solely to gross financial misconduct. His grand jury "found probable cause to believe that King… used money or items of value to 'entice, inveigle, persuade, encourage or procure' men in their late teens or early twenties to engage in acts of prostitution." But the grand jury's "belief" was never addressed in the courtroom. By suppressing the male prostitution charges, Van Pelt re-enacted a role familiar to him. In 1984, for instance, Van Pelt was accused by 43 residents of Cairo, Nebraska of covering up the murder of political activist Arthur Kirk by a state police SWAT team.

Among the melange of well-off Nebraskans linked to King was multimillionaire Warren Buffett, a ranking shareholder in the *Washington Post* and Cap Cities/ABC, not to mention the financial leviathans American Express, Wells Fargo and Salomon Brothers. All told, his wealth has been appraised at an excess of $4 billion. Buffett hosted Larry and Alice King's tenth wedding anniversary party, and Buffett's wife was a volunteer at Franklin Credit Union. Buffett has tried to distance himself from the scandal, but he couldn't hide the fact that King sponsored a fund-raiser for Buffett's son in his run for commissioner of Douglas County, Nebraska..

John DeCamp, a former CIA operative and Nebraska state senator, alleges in *The Franklin Cover-Up,* the fullest account of the case to date, that Oliver North cavorted with King and his circle of rich Republicans. The connection to North was publicized by the *New York Times,* which noted that King contributed $25,000 to Citizens for America. The CFA booked speaking engagements for North. "King was a founding member and one of its largest contributors," DeCamp notes. He contends that King, as Franklin's director, laundered cocaine cash for the Nicaraguan counter-revolution at the behest of CIA operatives. In fact, King hobnobbed so frequently in Washington that he rented a second home off Embassy Row for $55,000 a month.

Another notable link to King was Ronald Roskens, the former chancellor of the University of Nebraska. The notes of deceased Franklin Committee investigator Caradori report that Roskens was "terminated by the state because of sexual activities reported to the regents and verified by them." A year later, Roskens was appointed by President Bush to direct the Agency for International Development, a major CIA cover. By 1992 the House Operations Committee chaired by Rep. John Conyers, Jr. (D-Michigan), called for the dismissal of Roskens. A 107-page staff report alleged that Roskens' "abuse of the public trust during his crucial first year in office had gone unchecked" until AID's inspector general and Congressional oversight "forced a change in his pattern of behavior." The report also noted that AID had "more high-ranking employees convicted of federal crimes during the past two years than any other agency or department of the federal government."

The twice-disgraced Roskens quit his post in November, 1992 to promote the foreign policy proposals of the Interaction Council (a group that includes Gerald R. Ford, Mikhail Gorbachev and former French leader Valéry Giscard d'Estaing).

George Bush surfaced once again in connection with King's syndicate of eminent satyrs, specifically Harold Andersen, former publisher of the *Omaha World-Herald.*

According to DeCamp, "Harold Andersen moves in the upper circles of the U.S. intelligence community." When Andersen's reputation began to suffer as a result of his friendship with King, "his friends at the Nebraska Society of D.C. staged an awards dinner in Washington to polish his image." Bush sent a testimonial memo in praise of the adviser to the U.S. State Department.

Omaha's upper-crust is a small, tightly-knit cast of characters overlapping a small, tightly-knit cast of characters in Washington, D.C. According to *Birmingham Post-Herald* reporter Andrew Kilpatrick, Harold Andersen is "an old friend of Buffett's." The multi-billionnaire has also linked up with Bush, rather conspicuously, when they withdrew from a formal ceremony on November 28, 1990 for a private conversation. "We may never get the details," Kilpatrick writes. "But the discussion was about business, not politics."

Of Andersen's Beltway alliances, the most revealing is Robert Keith Gray. "Said to be Harold Andersen's 'closest friend in Washington,'" according to DeCamp, "Gray is also reportedly a specialist in homosexual blackmail operations for the CIA." The blackmail ring was, a vice squad official told DeCamp, established by Roy Cohn, the skulking ultra-conservative homosexual pimp. "Cohn's job was to run the little boys," the official told DeCamp.

Gray is one of Washington's most notorious Republican operatives, a fierce insider and public relations tycoon. The child prostitution charge against him gained credibility when Gray's name surfaced in the internal inquiry of the short-lived Congressional page-boy scandal. The probe was abruptly killed when a lobby of Washington homosexuals clamored its opposition. Susan B. Trento, Gray's biographer, reported that Congress was "discouraged from pursuing any further investigations in these areas in general." Lucky Robert Keith Gray.

In 1992 the Franklin Committee released a 91-page final report, stating that the investigation changed course when Gary Caradori produced for the committee a video-taped statement from Alisha Owen, who claimed to have been a witness and victim of sexual abuse. "She named persons of prominence in Omaha... involved in the abuse." She alleged that Chief Wadman had fathered her child.

And she offered to prove it, signing a voluntary agreement in January 1990 to submit to a lie detector test. The FBI refused to administer it. An independent agency did. She passed. Two other juvenile witnesses passed as well. Wadman countered by repeatedly telling the press that DNA tests proved his innocence. But an Omaha reporter who has followed the case from the start advises: "Forget about the DNA-blood tests... they never happened."

This powder-keg was dropped on the table of the committee, which was soon "haunted" by the possibility of a backlash of the sort that followed the McMartin preschool molestation case.. Would the public support Owen? Would there be attacks on her and the witnesses who stepped forward to confirm the allegations? Would Chief Wadman and his co-defendants apply pressure to bury the investigation?

Given the sensitivity of the probe, the committee decided to conduct it as quietly as possible, at least until indictments were handed around. But before witnesses could be induced to testify, bootleg copies of the Owen tapes were leaked to the press. State Senator Loran Schmit and his colleagues on the panel found themselves in the eye of a whirlwind fed by heated public speculation and gossip.

Michael McKnight, a reporter for Omaha's WOW-TV, later told Owen that the station purchased the video tape from agents of the FBI. The station had also purchased Caradori's taped interviews with witnesses Troy Boner and Dan King from the FBI. The tapes had been given to the Bureau by members of Schmit's committee.

From the Franklin Committee's final report:

> The act of broadcasting the tapes was exceeded in arrogance and irresponsibility only by the news media efforts to convene impromptu panels of self-proclaimed experts to talk about whether the stories in the tapes were 'believable' or not. We were bewildered as to how the investigation was furthered, or the public interest served, by such circus events. Did it not occur to anyone in authority within the news media that none of these "experts" had first-hand knowledge of anything.... They had nothing to offer except meaningless opinions. It occurred to us that these so-called "expert opinions about whether a story was true or not were just that, opinions.... A public debate of this nature is counterproductive... and polarizes the community.... Media hosts interviewed "experts" who had seen the tapes, and who criticized Caradori's questioning techniques. In fact, the investigation turned toward Caradori with charges that he unnecessarily led or coached the witnesses, or perhaps induced them to lie, or coordinated their stories for some undisclosed gain, perhaps book or movie rights.

The committee began to feel a force beyond their control running away with the case, moving it silently toward a predetermined end. Somehow, King had the wisdom to remove pornographic material from his home and office. He cabbaged it away in the trunk of his car. The FBI, however, confiscated a pornographic video featuring "local children"—yet no attempt was made to locate them.

Somehow or other, the invisible hand always bested the committee. A raid on the home of *World-Herald* columnist Peter Citron produced "a vast quantity of pornographic material." Citron pled no contest before a grand jury convened in March, 1990. The prosecution failed to introduce evidence against his cohort Alan Baer because it vanished, as did computer disks seized by police listing the names and addresses of every child he'd photographed.

The thieving wraith of the evidence room struck again after the legislative committee subpeonaed video-taped interviews of Alisha Owen and other witnesses from the FBI and Nebraska State Patrol. The FBI synopsis of the tapes, prepared for the attorney general, contained testimony that never appeared in the tapes. Owen complained that Troy Boner's deposition had been shed of corroborating details. "In one instance," the Franklin Committee's final report noted, "there was no break in the tape yet Boner's shirt was different from the previous one."

The evidence-devouring ghost had an ally in Owen's first legal counselor, Pam Vuchevich. When the abuse revelations surfaced into public view, Alisha Owen was serving a prison sentence for passing bad checks. On March 9, 1990 the FBI and state patrol searched her cell and removed evidence she'd assembled to support her grand jury testimony. The FBI drew up an inventory, but when the articles were returned some were missing. They had been scratched off the list. Ms. Vuchetich was dismissed, and charged with two counts of abusing attorney-client privileges. Two weeks later however an FBI agent appealed to the Omaha Bar Association on behalf of Ms. Vuchetich, and the charges were tossed out of court.

To judge by the 177 phone calls she made to the FBI in early 1990, Vuchetich betrayed more than a client's confidence. In April, 1990 she prodded Alisha Owen to lie that she conspired with Mike Casey, an Omaha reporter, to fabricated the sex scandal as raw grist for a TV movie. Owen refused.

Meanwhile, Paul Bonacci, one of some 80 child witnesses, recalled for Frances Mendenhall, a reporter at the *Nebraska Observer,* his descent into Omaha's sexual underground. In 1979 Bonacci met a man named Walter Carlson at an Independence Day picnic. Carlson took the boy home, where they watched cartoons, pornographic videos and eventually had sex. Bonacci was eleven years old.

He met Citron, the *World-Herald* gadfly, at a public park. Bonacci says that he was flown to California, Colorado, New York, Minnesota and elsewhere at the behest of the mercurial Larry King, and prostituted to politicians and wealthy businessmen.

Like other children drawn into King's circle, Bonacci tells a grim story:

> **Mendenhall:** Did you believe that they would kill somebody?
> **Bonacci:** They did.

> **Mendenhall:** Who did they kill?
> **Bonacci:** It was in California.... We picked up Nicholas who went out with us and when we got there, I don't know where we landed at or where we were at, they had me tied and drugged up. They took us out to a place and all I can remember is that there was a Kern River or something that went by, there was a bridge that had a name on it. It was near there that we would wait. And they had this little boy that was in a cage.... First they told us we better do what they told us. They told us we'd better do what they wanted or they'd kill us too. So we did everything they told us.

The children were used like sexual "rag dolls," Bonacci said, by a group of adults, among them Larry King. The incident took place in Bakersfield. Bonacci claimed that the orgy was attended by local cultists.

In a complaint filed with the U.S. District Court of Nebraska, Bonacci describes how, at twelve years-old, he was forced to attend "sexual parties" and "sadistic rituals" attended by influential citizens of Omaha. He was beaten on February 13, 1981 "for refusing to participate in a sadistic ritual." He was, according to the complaint, "burned with cigarettes during sadistic orgies." With no exit from his predicament, and shaken by the suicide of another child participant in these functions, Bonacci too tried to kill himself. He told Alan Baer, an official of J.L. Brandeis & Sons, a local department store, that he wanted out. In July, 1983, says Bonacci, Baer ordered a drive-by shooting to eliminate the possibility of exposure.

Bonacci estimates that he participated in 25-30 group sex rituals between 1979 and 1984.

Taped testimony from both Owen and Bonacci deals at length with former Omaha Police Chief Robert Wadman, whose beating heart kept time with the pulse of a secret Omaha. Chief Wadman mixed well with King's melange of Promethean tycoons, CIA procurers and Beltway politicians. In 1962 he began his law enforcement career, his father's vocation, with the San Diego Police Department. He was 21. Wadman left the force in 1968 for a stint at Utah's Brigham Young University. He turned up next in San Luis, Arizona, assigned to the DEA, according to his resume.

In 1976 he he was selected as chief of police in Utah, and two years later state deputy commissioner of public safety—an ironic position considering his part in the 1979 slaying of an unarmed civilian. Jerry Springer, whose only offense was a refusal to enroll his children in a public school, had been lured outside his home by Wadman and two sidekicks posing as reporters. Springer ran, the officers shot him in the back. Springer's widow sued, retaining Gerald Spence as her legal counsel, and received an undisclosed settlement. Wadman resigned and was asked to leave the state.

The Springer episode dogged him in Omaha. For two years the police union fought his appointment as chief. He met Alisha Owen, then 15, at a party in August, 1983. Also present were Larry King, Alan Baer and Harold Andersen. En route to the party, a friend promised cocaine and alcohol. When Owen arrived, King's guests were watching a pornographic video. "She observed a young boy... sitting on Harold Andersen's lap," according to Caradori's notes.

A month later, she attended another of King's parties, where she says she was forced into a sexual encounter with Chief Wadman, ala Caradori:

> He [Wadman] indicated to Alisha that he knew she wasn't a virgin and he felt her breasts. He told her that she had nice breasts. He felt her genitals and un-zipped the zipper of the jumpsuit she was wearing. She asked him to stop and he grabbed her wrist very tightly and twisted her wrist. He then removed her clothing and asked her if she knew what fellatio was. He said that he would show her what it was. He then instructed her to perform oral sex. Robert Wadman's pants and underwear were down.

Owen began to cry. She told Caradori that she went to the bathroom and vomited. Paul Bonacci was not called to testify that he had witnessed Wadman and Owen engaging in sex. Troy Boner recanted his testimony, but later admitted that FBI agents had threatened to kill members of his family if he testified against Wadman.

From *A Carefully-Crafted Hoax,* a book written by Owen's sympathizers in Omaha:

> Alisha Owen's perjury trial began on May 17. Judge Raymond Case of Plattsmouth was brought out of retirement to preside over the trial in the Douglas County District Court.... The prosecution spent the majority of its time in painting Owen as a promiscuous tramp. But the charges against her were for perjury.... The outcome of the trial should not have been in doubt. Before it even began, Judge Case ruled against several of the defense's pretrial motions and consistently refused to allow important items to be introduced as evidence (for example the tapes of Boner and King). There was much in the way of evidence the jury was not allowed to see.

Owen was sentenced to 9–15 years in prison for alleging that Chief Wadman was the father of her child. Before the sentence was overturned on appeal for retrial, she served more time in solitary confinement than any other woman in the history of Nebraska.

Wadman, not one to let a prime opportunity drift by, filed a $4,000 suit against Amanda, Alisha's *five year-old daughter,* supposedly to recoup the expense of a blood test. Wadman's itemized expenses include a first-class flight to Chicago and four days of missed work. But a charge of filing false paperwork was filed by Owen's attorney. Chief Wadman, it seems, had actually been on vacation in Arizona, and his counter-suit was thrown out of court. He paid $25 in court costs.

But by this time Wadman had resigned and moved to Aurora, Illinois. Aurora's Mayor Pierce selected Wadman for chief in September 1989. The local *Beacon-News* reported on June 6, 1991 that he was selected after "a lengthy national talent search conducted by the International Association of Chiefs of Police." Wadman once again reigned as top cop, but announced his resignation nineteen months later. He repeatedly declined to comment on his reason for stepping down, but Aurora Mayor David Pierce cited the Omaha scandal as a decisive influence. Wadman told the *Beacon-News* that the "false allegations" of Alisha Owen had undermined his authority. The paper reported falsely that "genetic testing has shown that Wadman was not the child's father."

One Aurora cop told the *Beacon-News:* "I'm not sorry to see him go. My only regret is that he's not going today."

Meanwhile, the pornographic photos and tapes seized in the Citron raid began to prove an embarrassment to some of Omaha's most prominent citizens. At first, the police department denied having the child pornography until one officer admitted it at Citron's 1993 federal trial. In the photos are the faces of King, Wadman, Andersen, Baer and others engaged in criminal acts, according to the Nebraska Leadership Conference, a non-profit citizens' group supportive of the children in the case. The police, caught suppressing the photos, refused to make them public, then decided to destroy them. Lawyers and investigators flew to Omaha, and a federal judge ordered the police to hand over the evidence. Citron was convicted. Andersen resigned as newspaper publisher. Alan Baer, the department store official, is rumored to be hiding somewhere in California.

Wadman surfaced next in North Carolina. Despite his record, Wadman was selected in 1991 above 200 other applicants for the position of police chief.

But it wasn't long before fallout from the Omaha case burned him once again.

In January 1993, Ron Lee Silver stepped off a train from Hollywood. Frustrated with his prospects as an actor, he moved to Wilmington, which boasted several newly-formed film companies. Coincidentally, he had passed the long rail ride from California reading John DeCamp's book on the Franklin affair, and was already aware of Wadman's notoriety.

Driven by a sense of outrage, Silver says, he appeared at a Wilmington City Council meeting on January 5, 1993 to argue for the recall of Chief Wadman. The *Wilmington Morning Star,* which is owned by the *New York*

Times, reported two days later that Ronald Silver "met a reception ranging from skeptical to hostile." But, as the paper noted, the aspiring actor was not the first to berate Wadman: "A growing faction of the Wilmington police department believes Mr. Silver's story might be true." Alas, "the resurrection of these allegations could bring internal discontent to levels Chief Wadman has not faced yet."

Silver asked that the city council conduct an investigation of past pedophilia and child prostitution charges.

Wilmington Mayor Don Betz had hired Wadman. He flew into a rage, blustering that he hadn't fought for two years in Vietnam, "in cold water eating cold food," to permit this blatant "abuse of free speech" to continue. Betz abruptly ended the meeting. The following day, Chief Wadman countered that the accusations were "a pack of lies" that could only affect his police work. "Every allegation has been made by people clearly identified as a supporter of Lyndon LaRouche," Wadman argued.

Silver's city council appearance made headlines, polarized public opinion. Supporters of the Chief claimed that Silver was a trouble-maker who had nothing better to do than pester "the Chief."

The local media rallied to Wadman's defense. A *Morning Star* editorial on January 8 attacked Silver, rejecting the charges against Wadman with a smirk:

> **PATHETIC FANTASIES AREN'T SO HARMLESS**
>
> Wilmington Police Chief Bob Wadman, who looks like a human being, is actually a seven-eyed alien from the planet Emmo. He has makeup done at the movie studio. "Mr. Wadman" (Zorgo is his real name) is high priest of an intergalactic cult whose goal is to seduce Earth's Christian children into unspeakable practices that will cause them to give birth to talking yams.

Public interest was stimulated by the headlines and the release of DeCamp's book in Wilmington. The *Star* reported that "local bookstores are selling copies as fast as they can get them," but assured readers that the book only "rehashes discredited testimony," and declared falsely that "followers of political extremist Lyndon LaRouche have been linked to the effort to discredit Mr. Wadman."

Silver was unprepared for the counter-charges and his sudden role as citizen-reformer. Disgruntled police officers began calling him with their own horror stories concerning the chief. There was talk that Wadman had been ham-stringing local police efforts to stem the flow of drugs into Wilmington.

So it seemed peculiar to Silver when the local media rushed to the Chief's defense.

Wadman claimed publicly that Silver had threatened his life.

Furthermore, he accused Investigator D.P. Pridgen of the Wilmington police force of plotting secretly with Silver to defame and "murder" members of his family. In a letter to Pridgen, the chief claimed that the "death threats" were a direct consequence of the loud city council session. In an internal WPD complaint filed on March 5, Pridgen noted that Wadman was "trying to gather enough information… to have Silver arrested." Further, Wadman "badgered, harassed and intimidated" Pridgen in a failed attempt to link Silver with a crime.

On a local radio talk show Silver emphatically denied the accusation he'd threatened Wadman. The hostess of the program repeated the charge that Silver was a "kooky," possibly dangerous conspiracy theorist bent on defaming an honorable city official:

> **Interviewer:** Hey there, good morning!
> **Silver:** I'm Ron Silver, the subject of your call-in show today.... Let's talk about two undisputed facts. One, [Chief Wadman] has been punished for misconduct. And the other is that he claims I have threatened his family. It has even evolved into "a group of people" who threatened his family. When I heard that, I tried to get in touch with the police and cooperate since I was a "criminal suspect." I agreed to take a lie detector test. They wouldn't talk to me. The Chief has fabricated all of this. He bases his misconduct on fabrications and lies. No one has threatened his family that I know about, and I certainly haven't.

Silver denied that he had any connection whatsoever to Lyndon LaRouche, nor had anyone he knew. "Where are they, these fantasy LaRouchians coming out of the woodwork to haunt the poor chief?"

> **Interviewer:** Mister Silver, what is your vendetta against Chief Wadman?
> **Silver:** I have no "vendetta." I went before the council to exercise a political right. It was my duty as a citizen. I believe that he isn't qualified.

Silver's interrogator accused him next of "trying to make a quick buck." He said that he hadn't made a dime. Then why was he doing this? Silver replied that it was a matter of conscience. "Your chief has a history. The FBI synopsis lists him on no less than 40 pages in the Franklin investigation. It isn't over."

The morale of Wadman's foot soldiers struck bottom. This undercurrent of discontent at the station house swelled into a wave of insurrection.

Nobody knew who on the police force was behind The *Wadville Herald,* a raunchy newsletter parody with one subject: "Chief Bobby

Wad," and his loyalists, or "Wadsters." One issue featured lyrics to the tune of Jimmy Buffet's "Fins":

He came down from Illinois
It took him three days to get trained,
Lookin' for a piece who's quiet,
Can't get caught again.

Another song lyric crowed,

Well, my name is Bobby, but they call me The Wad.
Ask me what I want—I want a young kid's bod.
Don't want them too old, want them while they're still growin',
A cute young thing like Alisha Owen.

Under "The Meaning of Wad," the editor of the *Wadville Herald* supplied the following definitions: "common viper," "vermin," "evil pedophile," "an illusion or fraud," "abnormal animal," "pompous," "dull" and "ludicrous failure."

The title-page for a biography of Wadman, garnished with swastikas, entitled *Mein Wadman Kampf,* portrayed the chief as "a pedophilic, occultic dictator."

The Chief apparently did not inspire much loyalty in the rank-and-file.

Meanwhile, the Wilmington City Council was looking into Chief Wadman's past—and meeting secretly to discuss the Omaha powder-keg and the charges leveled at him. City Manager Bill Farris attempted to stop the secret discussions, and was summarily asked to resign. "The councilmen who wanted Mr. Farris to resign gave differing reasons," the *Star* reported on February 4, "ranging from differences over philosophy and financial policy to concerns about the police force." Beyond that, no specific explanation was given.

The Chief met the resistance head-on, applying talents honed in the Nebraska cover-up.

On February 2, Investigator Pridgen was ordered to Internal Affairs. He was interrogated by Lt. Pulley and Captain Thomas, both loyal to Chief Wadman. They asked Pridgen a few questions about his extracurricular contacts, then sent him back to work.

Shortly thereafter, Lt. Pulley entered Pridgen's office. "The Chief doesn't think you are answering the questions honestly," Pulley said.

"I did," Pridgen insisted. "Am I being accused of something?"

The lieutenant handed him a questionnaire to answer in written statements. The first: "Have you ever given any information to Ron Silver concerning any child sex abuse case?" Pridgen answered no. The remaining questions concerned any information he might have passed to Silver.

Since Pridgen had never met him, he felt the interrogation meaningless. He complained to Captain Thomas that "the people I associate with are Christian and respectable people," not "trouble-makers." But Chief Wadman was determined to find a conspiracy. The next day, Pridgen was ordered to Captain Thomas's office. "The Chief doesn't feel you are being honest," Thomas said.

"What part of NO did the Chief not understand?" Pridgen snapped. He was sent back to Internal Affairs. "I was told the Chief of Police Robert Wadman had filed a complaint against me. I asked for a copy of the complaint and was advised they were not required to give me a copy." Pridgen was charged with compromising the investigation of Ron Silver, who has not been charged with any criminal offense.

"I was harassed, falsely accused, intimidated with punishment and continued harassment," Pridgen wrote in his grievance. "When I was overseas in India and questioned by… radical anti-American communist rebels, I was treated with greater dignity." Wadman, he charged, had abused his authority and launched an "inquisition" based on fabricated charges. Information needed by Pridgen to defend himself was withheld in violation of departmental directives. "I have been refused, willfully, intentionally, deliberately, thoughtfully, maliciously, a copy of the allegations against me," Pridgen complained. He gradually awoke to the realization that Chief Wadman had "something to hide." "It is not a recognized method of investigation to continue to harass and intimidate and distort," Pridgen complained.

On March 5, the *Morning Star* reported that the Chief, concerned about "death threats," had launched an investigation of the whistleblowers.

A newspaper OpEd piece backed Wadman: "CHIEF, NOT MALCONTENTS, DESERVES CITY'S SUPPORT." The editorial applauded his performance, noting, "police foul-ups and cover-ups are down." Most dismaying, the editors sighed, was J.D. Causey, a city councilman who "seems to take seriously the loony accusations made against Mr. Wadman by people who have hounded him across the country." The "loony accusations" amounted to reading a book and discussing it openly, provoking a backlash as Wadman's reputation came home to roost.

When one city councilman tipped Silver that he was being followed, he packed his bags and moved to Nebraska to look more deeply into Wadman's past.

Back in Wilmington the tide of public opinion turned on Wadman when the Southern Christian Leadership Conference, the largest Christian organization in the country, sent lawyers to publicly retract support for him. The Police Benevolent Association did likewise, demanding that Wadman be indicted. On April 5, he was suspended for a week without pay for leaning on Pridgen and another officer. Silver appeared at the next council meeting to deny that he threatened Chief Wadman and offer to take a lie detector test. The council listened, but made no comments and adjourned silently.

Undeterred, the *Morning Star* again sided with the Chief in Wilmington's "police scandalette." The town was assured that Wadman's sins, distilled by one OpEd page minimalist from a closed hearing, were "relatively minor." After all, "the Chief says he and his family have been threatened. Understandably angry and worried about what his tormentors might do next, he apparently overreacted." After all, Wadman's indiscretions were "akin to neglecting to read a suspect his Miranda rights."

But the Wadman case continued to heat up, according to Silver. "The Chief is being investigated by the FBI for bribing a police officer," Silver says. "Several officers have stepped forward to say that I never threatened his family, that they did the investigation and the city attorney (Tom Pollard) had the information but covered it up."

Chief Wadman's turbulent career drew to an end, but the inevitable was postponed by the blindly jingoistic maneuvers of his cronies, operating with all the finesse of an Elizabethan secret society.

In July 1994 Wadman was yet again forced to turn in his badge and epaulets.

Section Three

The CIA's Black Budget & Domestic Operations

Chapter Ten

E. Howard Hunt's Death Squads

David Atlee Phillips, the underground government's savant of psychological operations, once claimed to have learned about Devil cults from E. Howard Hunt and his CIA partner, William Peter Blatty of *Exorcist* fame.[1]

Of his roots, Hunt writes in his memoirs, "Captain James Hunt served in the Revolutionary Army and was a landholder of means in northern Manhattan. It is after him that Hunt's Point, now New York's municipal area, is named." E Howard's Victorian forebear, Leigh Hunt, the radical political essayist, served two years in a British prison for his subversive broadsides. Henry "The Orator" Hunt was a convict as well. He went on to become a minister of Parliament.[2] Hunt's grandfather held a series of political offices in New York State, including, consistently enough, commissioner of prisons.

"While I was myself a prisoner," Hunt once lamented, "I was often to reflect on the irony of my fate."[3]

E. Howard's father was a 32nd-degree Freemason—that is, a "Sublime Prince of the Royal Secret." Together with William Donovan of the Office of Strategic Services (OSS), he was founder of the elite Buffalo Athletic Club, a member of the Banker's Club, the Drug and Chemical Club and, under Donovan's tutelage, founder of the New York chapter of the American Legion.[4]

Hunt's deceased wife, Dorothy de Gautiere, was secretary to Averell Harriman, the Skull & Bones ambassador, when the aristocratic pair met in Paris. "She told me that she had spent the war years in Berne, Switzerland," Hunt recalled later, "working for the Treasury Department's Hidden Assets Division, the section that sought Nazi assets abroad. At the end of the war, she was sent to Shanghai to open the Treasury office there, and had served as technical adviser on a Dick Powell film, *To the Ends of the Earth,* the story of Treasury's involvement in international narcotics traffic."[5]

Their honeymoon was cut short by CIA orders to join Frank Wisner's Office of Policy Coordination (OPC). Early on, the OPC roll-call was made up almost entirely of Nazis recruited by the CIA, with a domestic power base that included John J. McCloy, Harriman, and James Forrestal. Hunt was assigned to the Political and Psychological Warfare staff to develop training courses on covert operations. He conferred often with the CIA's Dr. James Burnham, who once wrote an article for *Life* magazine praising rule by elites, and through him met William F. Buckley. The brainy and garrulous Buckley would be the first on Hunt's recruitment list when he opened the Agency's station in Mexico City.[6]

In the early fifties, Hunt trained Cuban exiles. They knew him as their cultivated patron, "Eduardo." His reputation within the CIA was less than resplendent, however.

"Listen to his music, not his words," Phillips once warned.[7]

Henrik Kruger, in *The Great Heroin Coup,* chronicled Hunt's forays into drug trafficking in collaboration with the Chinese Triads providing support to the Kuomingtang. In the far east he "served" with William Pawley, Lucien Conein, Mitch WerBell and Paul Helliwell, the same cabal of ultra-Rightists who founded the Latin American branch of the World Anti-Communist League.[8]

In Mexico, Hunt's job had been to sow anti-Communist fever. In his cleansed and self-serving memoirs, Hunt tells of disrupting Communist meetings with stink bombs and itching powder. More subtle PsyOps included the planting of a story in the Mexican press that falsely quoted a Leftist leader disparaging the "cultural inferiority" of Mexican peasants.[9]

In the 1950s the Pentagon transformed Guatemala into a counterinsurgency base to control the central parts of Latin America. The instrument of the decimation of democratic rule in Guatemala was a CIA operation called Operation Diablo—a blood purge directed by Hunt and David Atlee Phillips. E. Howard Hunt and Tracy Barnes, Allen Dulles's closest aide, ran newspaper commentaries claiming that Arbenz, the Guatemalan leader, was a closet Communist. To succeed Arbenz, Hunt freed the murderous Castillo Armas from prison. Frank Sturgis and Jack Youngblood took charge of training the death and destruction squads, and on June 18, 1954 the "Army of Liberation," led by Armas, crossed the border from Nicaragua into Guatemala. Unmarked CIA planes provided air cover. The CIA's proxies seized control of the government, and in August declared martial law. On cue, the military appropriated 800,000 acres of land from the peasants. Thousands of them were ruthlessly slaughtered. Hunt thus proved himself a capable handler of death squads, a talent that held him in good stead when Operation 40, a Cuban assassination team, was placed under his supervision in 1960.[10]

Hunt worked well with a menagerie of ogres. In May 1961 the dictator of the Dominican Republic was murdered. Political researcher Donald

Freed wrote: "Documents would indicate that President Kennedy learned of the plan to kill Trujillo only after the debacle of the Cuban invasion in April 1961." Kennedy's adviser Richard Goodwin ordered the CIA to not supply weapons for the dictator's assassination. Nonetheless, on May 30, 1961, Trujillo was ambushed and gunned down with carbines furnished by Langley. Among those on the CIA payroll and the death squad detail were Hunt and Sturgis.[11]

Hunt had extensive connections to organized crime, especially the national syndicate said to have been run by Seymour Weiss of the Standard Fruit Company (the sponsor of the Guatemalan coup) and Mafia kingpin Carlos Marcello. In 1958, Hunt organized an "anti-Communist" conference in Guatemala. The conference chairman was Antonio Valladores, Marcello's attorney in New Orleans. Also present at the meeting was Maurice Gatlin, whose office at 544 Camp Street was, in the CIA shell-game investigated by Jim Garrison, a base of operations for the Kennedy assassination.[12]

As might be expected, the Hunt cabal in the Nixon White House reeked of felony. Hunt was a close ally to Bernard Barker, a Bolivian bagman. The Cuban "Defense" Fund of Dr. Manuel Artime was a conduit for hush money to the Watergate burglars.[13] In the 1980s, Artime surfaced as the mentor of Ramon Milian Rodriquez, the money-laundering, "freedom-fighting" gallivant of Iran-Contra fame. Another of Hunt's allies in Nixon's Plumbers unit was Robert Mardian, a fierce neo-fascist Armenian and assistant attorney general in charge of the security division of the Justice Department under John Mitchell. J. Edgar Hoover once referred to Mardian as "that Lebanese Jew."[14] Co-felon James McCord was once described by Hunt as "self-centered, devious and sanctimonious... a weakling determined to save himself at all costs."[15]

Hunt's chain of unholy alliances peaked with the covert operations of the Nixon administration. As Hunt told it, psychiatric care for his daughter Lisa—whose memory was mysteriously *wiped clean* in 1970—forced him to "retire" from the CIA. On recommendation from Richard Helms, Hunt took a job with Robert R. Mullen, a former press aide to Dwight D. Eisenhower. The Mullens public relations firm had established and operated the Free Cuba Committee. Hunt's fellow cold warriors included Douglas Caddy, a Young Americans for Freedom founder and an attorney for General Foods. Robert Bennett, a former Miami operative for the Permindex assassination team, handled the Hughes Tool Company account.[16]

The sort of public relations Hunt engaged in came to light when Louis Tackwood, a former LAPD provocateur, exposed Hunt's Squad 19 plan to incite a riot at the 1970 Republican convention in San Diego. Nobody was over Hunt, said Tackwood, "but the top dogs."

Tackwood: "He was in Dallas when they got Kennedy. He left out of there for the Caribbean." James McCord was "in on the concentration camp thing."[17]

The stamp of Howard Hunt's demonic imagination was most clear in the overthrow of Chile in 1973. David Phillips, Hunt's psychopathic protege, handled PsyOp chores, drawing on methods developed by the CIA in Vietnam: a campaign of highly-publicized atrocities (blamed on leftists) progressing in stages of psychological terrorism, culminating in mass beheadings and mutilations. Witnesses have described rivers clogged with headless corpses and piles of bodies set aflame.[18]

Hunt, we hardly knew ye.

Footnotes

1. Donald Freed and Dr. Fred Landis, *Death in Washington,* Lawrence and Hill, 1980, p. 90.
2. E. Howard Hunt, *Undercover,* Berkeley, 1974, pp. 7-8.
3. Ibid., p. 14.
4. Hunt, p. 9. The American Legion, according to George Seldes, was "a natural for fascist action. When Alvin Owsley was Legion commander he was prepared to seize Washington. 'The Fascisti in are to Italy what the American Legion is the the United States,' he said in 1922." Several Legion conventions, Seldes wrote, "invited Mussolini, honored him, sent him medals. And high-ranking Legion officials, including one of its founders, actually plotted to seize the government." In 1963, E. Howard and his CIA-Mafia clutch would, ironically enough, accomplish exactly that.
5. Hunt, p. 51.
6. Hunt, pp. 68-69.
7. Peter Wyden, *Bay of Pigs: The Untold Story,* Touchstone, p. 32.
8. Henrik Kruger, *The Great Heroin Coup,* South End Press, p. 16.
9. Raymond Bonner, *Waltzing with a Dictator,* Times Books, 1987, p. 37fn.
10. Freed and Landis, pp. 42-43.
11. Freed and Landis, p. 49.
12. Peter Dale Scott, *Crime and Cover-Up: The CIA, the Mafia, and the Dallas-Watergate Connection,* Westworks, 1977, p. 16. A number of those in attendance were operatives of the Information Council of the Americas, a front that drew support from large firms in New Orleans, including Standard Fruit.
13. Bernard Fensterwald, Jr., *The Assassination of JFK,* Zebra, 1977, p. 513.
14. Hunt, p. 161.
15. Hunt's caption to a picture of McCord.
16. Scott, p. 26. Hunt, p. 142.
17. Citizens Research and Investigation Committee, *The Glass House Tapes,* Avon, 1973, p. 172.
18. Freed and Landis, pp. 108-13.

Chapter Nine

The GOP's Pink Triangle & the CIA

The true story of gay Republican power-brokers and the CIA's Neil Livingstone, an influential covert operator who inhabits a grim netherworld of GOP pimps, kidnappers, cocaine, arms smuggling, blackmail, pedopile rings and Nazi collaborators.

In January 1993 a privately-commissioned squad of American and British mercenaries were arrested in Luxembourg, Germany for the bungled kidnap of two young American emigres. Donald Feeney, a veteran of Fort Bragg, North Carolina's "elite" Delta Force, and James Brian Grayson, the father of one of the kidnapped children (buffeted in a tempestuous custody dispute), were nabbed scrambling from the scene of the abductions. They were stopped by authorities in an attempt to return to the U.S. with the children, 10 year-old Elizabeth Pittman, and Anna Grayson, age 5.

They can expect certain history-book notoriety for a daring, if ultimately disgraceful covert operation masquerading as a Sylvester Stallone film production about Viking warriors.

The kidnap-for-hire team, trained by the CIA and mustered under the nondescript company banner of Corporate Training Unlimited (CTU), blew into Reykjavic, Iceland in a flurry of movie-industry posturing. Reykjavic police charged that the "crew," led by Don Feeney, drugged Erna Eyjolfsdottir and stole off with her children.

The cadre gained the mother's confidence by recruiting her to the bogus production company. Jacqueline Davis, managing director of CTU, posed as the party's location manager. She made the acquaintance of the girls' mother, and hired her as "Kim Bassinger's personal assistant." Don Feeney adopted the guise of "Mario Cassare," a flamboyant film director. Feeney's wife Judy and his partner James Canavan flew in to join Davis at the Hotel Holt posturing as Stallone's personal staff. Stationed at posh lodgings in Reykjavic, Feeney's "tug-of-love" operatives lavished a total of

$35,000 on hotel suites, overseas fax messages and telephone calls to Hollywood—a gaudy smokescreen for the kidnappings, complete with local front-page publicity.

But the plot crumbled when a local newspaper received a tip that the film project was fraudulent.

Davis sequestered the girls' mother at the Holt and slipped her a "painkiller." She fell asleep... and woke to discover that the "crew" had stolen off with her children. She phoned police. Feeney and Grayson were about to board a plane for London with Anna when they were detained by authorities and arrested.

Judy Feeney, Davis and Canavan made it to Luxembourg, and police there rounded them up. Both children were returned to their mother. Feeney and Grayson were held by Reykjavic police on two counts of kidnapping. They were tried and convicted to two years in an Icelandic prison.

The notion of training paramilitary mercenaries for custody-dispute kidnap operations was conceived in 1985, according to CTU "chronicler" Neil Livingstone in *Rescue My Child,* an in-house public relations effort, "after Don and four other ex-Delta Force operatives polished off a case of Budweiser."

Four accounts of Corporate Training's "daring overseas rescues" are detailed in Livingstone's book, which appeared in 1992. It has been translated into eight languages. One of the company's kidnaps inspired an NBC movie-of-the-week, *Desperate Rescue,* starring Muriel Hemingway, and the network has announced plans to produce nine sequels. In eight years, Corporate Training has conducted seven successful snatch-back operations in Tunisia, Jordan, Ecuador and elsewhere around the world.

CTU bills itself as one of the nation's premier "boutique-sized security firms." The company's paramilitary training camp in North Carolina offers a variety of programs to corporate clients, police and federal agencies. Corporate "security" training courses offered by CTU include "Terrorist Operations," "Hostage Survival," "Surveillance and Counter-Surveillance," and "Explosive Devices." According to the course outline, the "Safe Haven" class instructs one in "How to prepare your office, home and vehicle to act as a secure area in the event of a criminal/terrorist attack."

The curriculum, despite CTU's disinfected image, could conceivably be construed as training in covert and mercenary warfare.

Corporate Training is based in Fayetteville, North Carolina, home of the Green Berets, the 82nd Airborne and—behind spiraling towers of concertina wire—the secretive Delta Force, a compound that denies access to all but military initiates and visitors from the Pentagon.

But the company's inauspicious origins and paramilitary public relations obscure connections to a frightening underworld on the ultra-right fringe, summed up by a company motto:

"KEEP AMERICAN CHILDREN AMERICAN."

Company founder Don Feeney, a veteran of Fort Bragg's Special Forces A-Team, grew up in Red Hook, New York, a largely Italian district. He joined the Army at 17, earned his wings and a place in Delta Force. He was sent on the failed 1980 mission to free American hostages in Iran. Assignments in the Middle East included a stint in Beirut and the organization of a cadre to rescue five American missionaries held hostage in the Sudan.

Feeney and his "tug-of-love mercenaries" trained for half a year at the CIA training camp known as "The Farm," in the wooded outskirts of Williamsburg, Virginia. "Their movements were restricted," Livingstone writes in *Rescue My Child,* "and they were allowed to venture outside only when a Soviet satellite wasn't making a pass overhead" Perhaps his training prepared Feeney to survive "Operation Eagle Claw," the doomed April, 1980 Desert One raid on Teheran.

Feeney also took part in the Richmond Prison sortie in the October, 1983 Grenada invasion, led by H. Norman Schwarzkopf. Media hype notwithstanding, Granada was one of the most ill-fated rescues in military history. One internal Pentagon document, published in *Defense Week,* found the mission "fraught with confusion... critical failures of military communication and faulty tactics." Intelligence officers Richard Gabriel and Paul Savage submitted a report describing Grenada as "a case study in military incompetence."

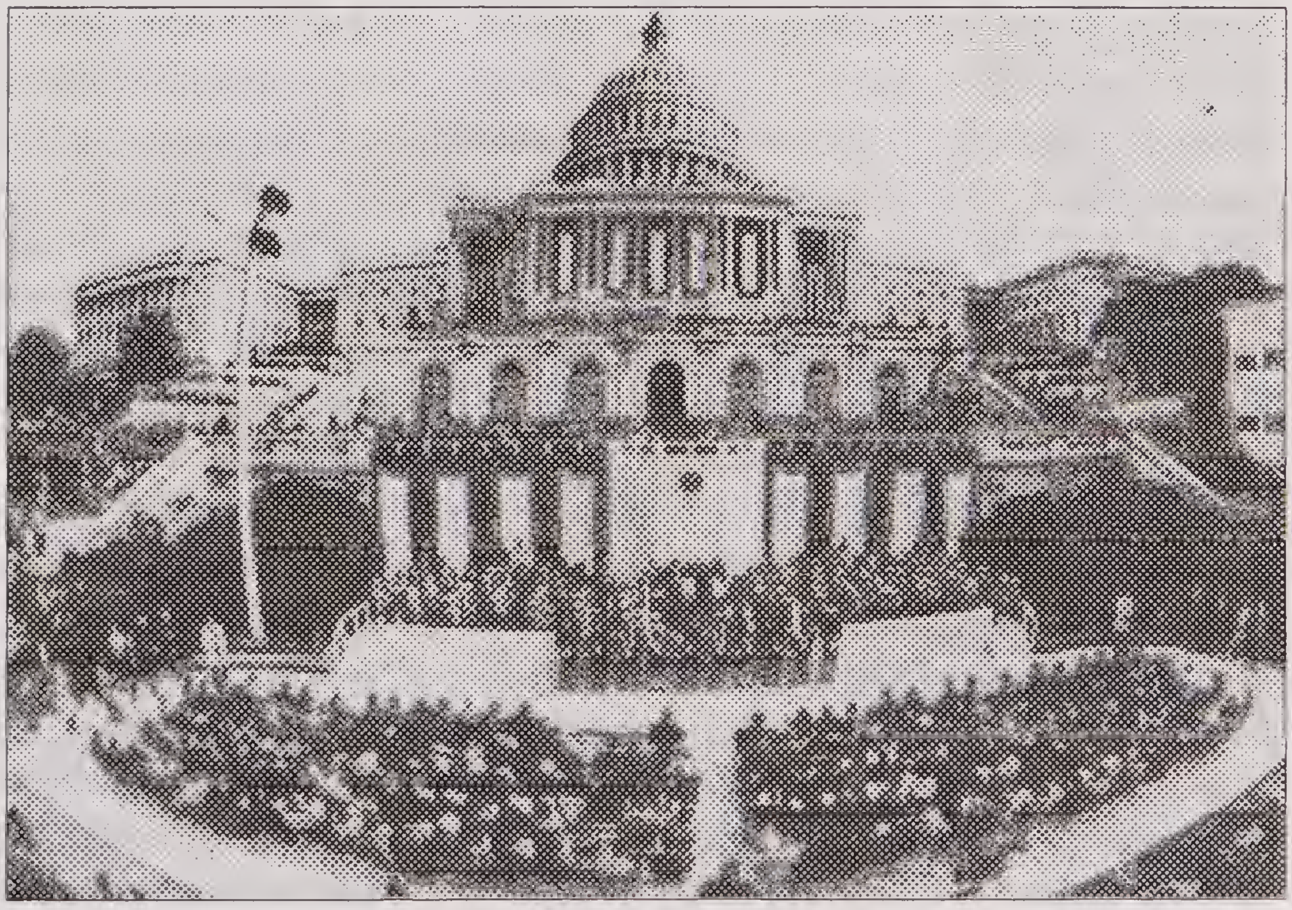

Republican power broker and CIA operative Robert Keith Gray was co-chairman of Reagan's gaudy inaugural ball, a recollection of imperial pageantry (and vapid megalomania).

Feeney's Blackhawk copter was blasted out of the sky. He survived—only to be thrown out of Delta Force a year later for refusing disciplinary action after an audit turned up financial irregularities in his Middle East assignment. He was stripped of his pension. Feeney organized CTU to keep a hand in the soldier-of-fortune set, and staffed the company with Deltoid soldiers of ill-fortune.

His closest partner was Dave Chatelier, a retired CIA agent with a 20-year background on the "dark side of the house" (covert operations in Eastern Europe). In 1975, Chatelier was transferred to Fort Bragg and assigned to the creation of an Army anti-terrorist team. Ultimately, the team came to be known as Delta Force.

Chatelier's contribution to CTU was a 60-acre farm, which was transformed into a mercenary training camp offering courses in "Explosive Devices," "SWAT (Special Weapons and Tactics)" and "Introduction to Terrorism."

CTU spokesman Neil Livingstone participated in the planning of the Reykjavic disaster. The kidnap may have been a dismal failure, but Livingstone isn't. He is an ominous by-product of the CIA, one of the most powerful intelligence operatives in the country, a designate to corrupt foreign leaders and international arms dealers. And he inhabits a criminal world of male prostitution involving minors, rendering dubious the company blurb: "Fortunately for a few mothers there is a court of last resort: the ex-Delta Force commandos of CTU."

Livingstone, an "expert" on international terrorism, is a frequent expert guest on television news programs, in which capacity he once publicly defended the CIA's assassination manual.

The research departments at the network news bureaus can't be accused of digging too deeply into Neil Livingstone's past. He entered the grim world of espionage as a foot soldier in the Agency's heroin-infested proprietary, Air America. Livingstone was recruited by James Cunningham, founder of the airline—and a key figure in Edwin Wilson's treasonous off-the-shelf arms sales to Muammar Ghaddaffi. One biographer referred to Wilson, currently serving a life sentence for his black market escapades, as "an aberration of modern intelligence."

So is Neil Livingstone.

As a junior executive at Gray & Co., a Washington, D.C. public relations firm largely manned by right-wing CIA and military intelligence personnel, he climbed the corporate ladder instantly by interfering in a Congressional investigation into a homosexual sex and drug ring. The enterprise was operated by Robert Keith Gray, CEO of the firm, whose client roster has included Charles Keating, BCCI, Adnan Khashoggi, Richard Berendzen and Duvalier's Haiti. Gray was also a member of Reagan's first presidential campaign team, and a suspect in the missing Carter briefing books affair.

Livingstone was brought into the firm by Charles Crawford, head of Gray & Co.'s international division. Crawford is a politically hard-right product of the Army Counter-Intelligence Corps (CIC) and the national security operatives of the Reagan-Bush period. Under Crawford, the International Division served as a branch office of the National Security Council and Oliver North's "Enterprise." He has a long and sordid history in covert ops: as a CIC agent, Crawford assisted the escape of "special refugees" (fugitive, Nazi-collaborating Ustashi agents) from the U.S.-occupied zone of Germany along the Vatican's Nazi ratline escape routes.

At Gray & Co., Livingstone entered a hidden pocket of Washington politics. Reporter Susan B. Trento discovered that "Gray's button-down world of Republican politics, conservative business clients, and high society events turned into weekend sex parties with young men where drug use was common."

This was the world that surfaced briefly in the Congressional page-boy scandal. Carl Shoffler, a retired D.C. police officer—he and four others arrested the Watergate burglars—and a witness in the investigation of the House cocaine and call-boy ring, wrote that Gray "has used and supplied narcotics... thrown wild sex orgies at Rehoboth Beach... was affiliated with the infamous Ed Wilson... was used by the CIA. As a result of his past connections in the aforementioned areas and his close association with Ronald Reagan, his conduct has to be suspect in light of the fact that he ended up with the foremost lobbying firm presently operating in D.C."

When word filtered through the Beltway grapevine that the Ethics Subcommittee hearings, chaired by Congressman Stokes, would focus attention on a cocaine ring in the House using Congressional pages as couriers, Livingstone was called to testify. The probe revealed that the services of male prostitutes had been provided to leading politicians by the Diamond Shamrock Corp.—a client of Robert Keith Gray & Co. Diamond Shamrock—a major producer of Agent Orange during the Vietnam War—is chaired by a former official of the Immigration and Naturalization Service.

But the Congressional investigation of the page-boy scandal was quashed after Livingstone's stonewall testimony concerning Gray's involvement in homosexual prostitution.

The Stokes Committee found that backstair political intrigues were rife—unfortunately, House investigators were instructed to cease any further inquiry into the male prostitution and cocaine ring. In the end, two Congressmen received reprimands.

One Congressional investigator told John DeCamp, a former CIA operative and Nebraska state senator, that the call-boys were run by the CIA, and the hearings adjourned prematurely because the prostitution ring involved "kids."

In the wings of the Stokes probe, Carl Shoffler was questioned frantically by Neil Livingstone and an ally, Tom Fortuin, counsel to Robert Keith Gray and former law partner to Roy Cohn, the late ultra-right homosexual Red-baiter, to determine how much the police knew of Gray's circle of drug-dealing, gay CIA Republicans.

Like Livingstone, Gray had worked closely in Edwin Wilson's arms network in the 1970s. Their cover was a CIA proprietary called Consultants International. Frank Terpil, a partner of Wilson, told *Secret Agenda* author Jim Hougan that the three of them "directed sexual blackmailing operations" out of Tong Sun Park's George Town Club in Washington, D.C. Terpil stated in a letter to Hougan that one of Wilson's Agency jobs was to sexually compromise Congressmen to keep them under thumb. Some legislators, it seems, "could be coerced by living their sexual fantasies in the flesh (with) a remembrance of these occasions permanently recorded via selected cameras."

The CIA's role in the scandal was submerged in the headline-grabbing page-boy revelations. But the origins of the Washington sex-and-drug operation predate Wilson and Gray, according to DeCamp. He investigated the male prostitution ring in preparation for his book on the Omaha child abuse scandal, which implicated in organized child abuse a circle of affluent Republican Nebraskans with connections to Reagan and Bush, and turned up an interesting bit of history.

The call-boy ring was started by Roy Cohn, whose associate Tom Fortuin would run backstage interference with Livingstone to kill the congressional hearings. A District of Columbia vice squad official told DeCamp that "Cohn's job was to run the little boys. Say you had an admiral, a general, a congressman who did not go along with the program. Cohn's job was to set them up, then they would go along. Cohn told me that himself." (Confirmation that Roy Cohn was a pimp to homosexuals in high places came with the publication of Anthony Summer's colorful biography of J. Edgar Hoover, and the revelation that young male prostitutes were procured by Cohn for Bible reading, rubber-glove trysts with the late FBI director.)

Gray and Wilson inherited the homosexual sex-and-drug network during the Nixon era, and by then it had branched out and grown, amoeba-like. The page-boy scandal was a small part of the CIA's sexual blackmail apparatus. In fact, *60 Minutes* once reported that critics of Hill & Knowlton, then chaired by Robert Keith Gray, accused the Washington PR firm "of being an unelected shadow government." The male prostitution network presided over by Gray was featured in a 1982 article in *The Deep Backgrounder,* a newsletter edited by former CIA official Victor Marchetti, entitled "Reagan Inaugural Co-Chairman Powerful 'Closet Homosexual.'" Livingstone's loyalty to Gray is not the most propitious bona-fide for a "mercenary" in Corporate Training Unlimited's "tug-of-love" kidnap operation.

Nor were the death's head cufflinks Livingstone sported in Guatemala, where he was once employed as a registered agent of Dominga Moriera, an ultra-conservative presidential candidate. Gray's fixer in the Page-Boy scandal was rewarded for his stonewalling performance before the Stokes Committee by a promotion to senior vice president in charge of the International Division.

Livingstone's status in the country's most powerful PR firm allowed him to employ veteran CIA operators, including Rob Owen of Iran-Contra fame. Livingstone and Owen, in fact, collaborated on a public relations campaign for the Cuban-American Foundation. And it was Neil Livingstone who directed Owen to draw up a proposed contract with the Nicaraguan Contras on behalf of Oliver North.

Livingstone had long moved in intelligence circles. He had known former CIA Director Robert Gates since they were students at William and Mary College. Carter Clews, an international arms expert, worked with Livingstone at Gray & Co.—until a newspaper article in Spain exposed his role in the bribery of parliamentarians and undercover support to the fascist Popular Alliance Party, with its symbiotic ties to the Mussolini family. It also emerged that Gray & Co. had partaken in Iran-Contra by smuggling arms from Israel via Spain to Nicaragua. The company also engaged in secret contract negotiations for the defense firm of McDonnell Douglas.

The *Washington Post* followed up with a story denuding Gray and Livingstone as the brains behind the Spanish fiasco. Livingstone was forced to resign. But, in the shadow of Robert Keith Gray, he had blossomed into one of the most powerful intelligence operators in the country—a registered agent of Israel, one of the three trustees of Solidarity in Poland, an "expert" on terrorism at the conservative Center for Strategic and International Studies "and a leading light of Corporate Training Unlimited."

The revelations of Robert Keith Gray's involvement in sexual blackmail operations came with the publication of *Power House,* a biography by Susan B. Trento, in 1992. The book forced his resignation from Hill & Knowlton. Gray was succeeded as chairman by Howard Paster, a Democratic insider. Paster left the CIA-dominated company two months later to take the position of Bill Clinton's director of legislative affairs. But the CIA's male prostitution network survived the political pratfalls of Gray and Livingstone to surface periodically in the upper-tiers of the Republican Party.

Lawrence King, a 300-pound pedophile from Nebraska, Gray's home state, was alleged in 1984 to have operated a branch of the call-boy business in partnership with Harold Andersen, then publisher of the *Omaha World Herald,* and a close friend of Gray's. King, a baritone, sang the National Anthem at the 1984 and 1988 Republican conventions.

King enjoyed Republican society and took his conservative politics seriously. In 1987 he donated $25,350 to Citizens for America, an organization that arranged speaking tours around the country for Lt. Col. Oliver North.

In October 1988, King's Franklin Community Credit Union was raided by the FBI and IRS. A month later the Treasury Department filed suit to recover the $34 million that had disappeared from Franklin's vaults under King's management.

Before his arrest, King had commuted often to Washington, D.C. He was a business partner in a call-boy operation run by the late Craig Spence, whose antics were the subject of a week-long series published by the *Washington Times* in July 1989. The *Times* reported that Spence, a former ABC reporter, was said to have been running a CIA blackmail operation: Spence's Victorian Mansion on Wyoming Avenue, where he often threw parties for Washington's power elite, was "planted with electronic bugs and video recording equipment that, according to homosexual call-boys and others who routinely visited the house, was used to make incriminating tapes to blackmail guests." The parties were attended by the likes of William Casey, Ted Koppel, John Mitchell and Eric Severeid. A political tempest threatened when Spence's credit card receipts implicated Reagan and Bush appointees, but few names reached the public print.

Four months after the story broke, Spence was found dead at the Ritz-Carlton Hotel in Boston. Police ruled his death a suicide.

Another ramrod in the CIA's male prostitution network was Ronald Roskens, former chancellor of the University of Nebraska. Lawrence King had been one of his closest "advisers." Roskens was fired from the position in 1989 when his involvement in homosexual orgies was reported to the university's board of regents and verified by them. A year later, President George Bush called Roskens to Washington to head the Agency of International Development (AID), commonly utilized as a cover in CIA operations overseas. AID also disburses $7 billion in non-military foreign aid, and thus wields enormous geopolitical power.

In 1992 a 107-page congressional report was issued by Rep. John Conyers Jr., urging Bush to fire Roskens, who had "abused the public trust" for private gain until AID's inspector general "forced a change in his patterns of behavior." His "patterns," according to the *Washington Post* for October 2, 1992, included "taking thousands of dollars from outside organizations, including some that do business with AID."

This is the milieu in which Neil Livingstone travels. He has long nurtured a penchant to open a corporate intelligence front of his own, and in the child-snatching CTU he can flex his wings as a covert operator. Until his next misadventure blows up into another Washington scandal, Livingstone's will doubtless be a familiar face gracing the network news with his "expert" opinions on terrorism, and airing his para-military propaganda in CIA-backed publications like *Soldier of Fortune.*

Chapter Twelve

Funny Money—Johnny Carson, the CIA, and the S&L Crisis

Years before the public was made aware of the name Charles Keating, hints of impending financial disaster loomed in the back pages of the major dailies. In October 1982, the same month that President Reagan signed deregulation of the nation's thrift industry into law, the Commercial Bank of California in Beverly Hills announced a $2.5 million loan loss.

A founder of the bank, legendary NBC *Tonight Show* host Johnny Carson paid $1,950,000 for his shares of Commercial stock, and became the CEO. But the bank's financial troubles weren't all that preyed on Carson's mind. Tim Hoffman, an informant in the joint FBI/DEA investigation of John DeLorean, had informed agents that the auto maker had a partner in the cocaine trade—a certain well-known talk show host.

The alleged partnership was not as far-fetched as it might have seemed. Carson was a close friend of DeLorean. According to SEC registers, the comedian also owned 250,000 shares in DeLorean Motors, a $500,000 investment. Carson's assignee on the DeLorean board of directors was Carson's best friend and financial adviser, Henry Bushkin, a known mob associate.

After the arrest of John DeLorean in the ABSCAM sting, Howard Weitzman, DeLorean's attorney, told reporters that developments in the investigation had been closely followed by then U.S. Attorney General Edwin Meese III. Meese's cohort, J. Peter Grace, a leading light of Reagan's deregulation campaign, retained DeLorean on his payroll as a consultant, and was a director of DeLorean's company. Attorney General Meese, announced Weitzman, had made key decisions in building a case against DeLorean on charges of cocaine trafficking. DeLorean insisted that he'd been set up." He was, in fact, a cut-out, the designated fall guy, and the jury believed the cover story. But the Justice Department was desperate to staunch public exposure of others involved in the laundering operation.

Washington columnist Jack Anderson published a transcript of an audio tape after the arrest, in which De Lorean attempted to renege in a cocaine deal set up by the FBI. "When he tried to back out," Anderson wrote, "the FBI's undercover informant threatened to bash in his daughter's head."

The ClA's Bank of the Stars

The ABSCAM trap had originally been set for one William Morgan Hetrick, described by authorities as one of the foremost cocaine distributors on the west coast, and by his attomey as "a man who may border on genius." Hetrick was arrested with DeLorean on October 19, 1982. A pilot and operator of a private flying service in the desert community of Mojave, Hetrick had served four years in Vietnam, and went on to work with Nugan Hand Bank in Australia—the notorious CIA fiduciary with ties to the international mafia and third world dictators. The bank was looted by its CIA directors—foreshadowing the fate of the country's S&Ls—and collapsed after the lurid suicide of a founder, leaving a $50 million hole in the Australian economy. Although the bank was an independent business run by former CIA operatives, it provided cover for the Agency's underground arms/drugs network. (One of Nugan Hand's clients, Ferdinand Marcos, entered the American S&L scene by purchasing Redwood Savings in San Francisco. A Marcos cohort took over San Francisco's Oceanic Bank, and hired a former CIA Manila station chief to run it.)

DeLorean's intelligence connections were almost turned to his advantage in court. The *Los Anqeles Times* reported: "The Drug Enforcement Administration, the CIA (and) the FBI were ordered to turn over documents to DeLorean in advance of the trial... for private inspection by the court." Also named in the judge's orders were Army intelligence, the National Security Council, the Internal Revenue Service, U.S. Customs, several departments within the Justice Department, the State Department, several field offices of the FBI, the Defense Intelligence Agency and the Pentagon.

Unfortunately for DeLorean's attomeys, when they asked to review documents concerning contacts between the U.S. and British goverments during the sting, the judge refused, insisting that "communications between sovereigns are meant to be confidential."

As a cover and base of operations for the DeLorean arrest, federal agents posed as crooked bankers for Eureka Federal Savings in the San Francisco Bay area. The president of Eureka was Kenneth Kidwell, a familiar face on the Nevada casino circuit, and a volatile eccentric in the stodgy Califomia banking establishment. Kidwell was the protagonist in a series of bizarre events. One evening police spotted his car weaving on the road. They suspected he was drunk. The offficers searched him and turned up a .38 strapped to his leg and a .357 magnum. The pistols were loaded with armor-piercing, teflon-coated bullets. The police said that Kidwell had tried to talk his way out of the arrest by flashing a gold deputy sheriff's badge conferred upon him by a ranking offficial of the San Mateo Sheriff's Offfice. Some banker. The ultimate irony was that Eureka, the FBI's cover in the DeLorean sting, was saddled with some $32 million in delinquent loans—170 of them—to organized crime figures.

A key informant in the DeLorean sting was James Hoffman, who often boasted to his neighbors of daring covert exploits in Latin America, according to DeLorean biographer Hillel Levin. Hoffman proposed the cocaine deal to DeLorean and later turned evidence against him. Thus did DeLorean become the sacrificial cut-out.

Hoffman had, in turn, been fingered by Robert Durand, his partner in an Oregon airline used to smuggle cocaine from Bolivia into the U.S. The drug profits were laundered at Commercial Bank of Beverly Hills.

Commercial Bank began to flounder when the board's drug and organized crime connections caught the attention of federal regulators. FBI and DEA investigators refused to buy Hoffman's tip that Johnny Carson was involved in money laundering with DeLorean and the CIA, a charge that Carson publicly denied. But there was a surfeit of financial chicanery at Commercial, enough to prompt the FDIC to impose a $10 million lawsuit against bank officials, who had extended loans to clients "associated directly or indirectly with organized crime." In 1983, Carson's Beverly Hills thrift filed bankruptcy papers.

Among the dubious loans made by Carson financial adviser Henry Bushkin was $450,000 to Jack Catain of the Angelo Bruno crime family in Philadelphia. The FDIC couldn't help noticing that Bushkin was also an officer of Catain's TMX Marketing, a retail distributor of car alarms in Westwood, California. Catain eventually sold TMX to the North Ireland Development Angency, which subsidized the DeLorean Motors plant.

Shortly after DeLorean's arrest, several of the principals had a run of misfortune. Colin Chapman, DeLorean's partner in the car business, had a heart attack and died. Alan David Saxon, an officer of "Carson's Bank," apparently committed suicide. Saxon, who was known to travel frequently to places like Switzerland and Brazil, told friends that he feared he would be killed for his knowledge of the bank's business connections. Following Saxon's demise, investigators discovered that $60–80 million was "missing" from the coffers of Commercial Bank. The Los Angeles Police Department immediately cremated Saxon's body. Soon, two new directors of the bank reported that their lives had been threatened.

They took up shooting practice at the Beverly Hills Gun Club.

Chapter Thirteen

The Swirl and the Swastika:

NutraSweet & the Military-Medical-Industrial Complex

> *I recognized my two selves, a crusading idealist and a cold, granitic believer in the law of the jungle.*
>
> —Edgar Monsanto Queeny,
> Monsanto chairman, 1943–63,
> *The Spirit of Enterprise, 1934*

The FDA is ever mindful to refer to aspartame, widely known as NutraSweet, as a "food additive," never a "drug." A "drug" on the label of a Diet-Coke might discourage the consumer. And because aspartame is classified a food additive, adverse reactions are not reported to a federal agency, nor is continued safety monitoring required by law.[1] NutraSweet is a non-nutritive sweetener. The brand name is a misnomer. Try NonNutraSweet.

Food additives seldom cause brain lesions, headaches, mood alterations, skin polyps, blindness, brain tumors, insomnia and depression, or erode intelligence and short-term memory. Aspartame, according to some of the most capable scientists in the country, does. In 1991 the National Institutes of Health, a branch of the Department of Health and Human Services, published a bibliography, *Adverse Effects of Aspartame,* listing no less than 167 reasons to avoid it.[2]

Aspartame is an DNA derivative, a combination of two amino acids (long supplied by a pair of Maryland biotechnology firms: Genex Corp. of Rockville and Purification Engineering in Baltimore.[3]) The Pentagon once listed it in an inventory of prospective biochemical warfare weapons submitted to Congress.[4]

But instead of poisoning enemy populations, the "food additive" is currently marketed as a sweetening agent in some 1200 food products.

In light of the chemo-warfare implications, the pasts of G.D. Searle and aspartame are ominous. Established in 1888 on the north side of Chicago, G.D. Searle has long been a fixture of the medical establishment. The company manufactures everything from prescription drugs to nuclear imaging optical equipment.[5]

Directors of G.D. Searle include such geopolitical actuaries as Andre M. de Staercke, Reagan's ambassador to Belgium, and Reuben Richards, an executive vice president at Citibank. Also Arthur Wood, the retired CEO of Sears, Roebuck & Co., from the clan of General Robert E. Wood, wartime chairman of the America First Committee.[6] America Firsters, organized by native Nazis cloaked as isolationists, were quietly financed by the likes of Sullivan & Cromwell's Allen Dulles and Edwin Webster of Kidder, Peabody.[7]

Until the acquisition by Monsanto in 1985, the firm's chairman was William L. Searle, a Harvard graduate, Naval reservist and—a grim irony in view of aspartame's adverse effects—an officer in the Army Chemical Corps in the early 1950s, when the same division tested LSD on groups of human subjects in concert with the CIA.[8]

The chief of the chemical Warfare Division at this time was Dr. Laurence Laird Layton, whose son Larry was convicted for the murder of Congressman Leo Ryan at Jonestown ("Come to the pavilion! What a legacy!"). Jonestown, of course, bore a remarkable likeness to a concentration camp, and kept a full store of pharmaceutical drugs. (The Jonestown pharmacy was stocked with a variety of behavior control drugs: qualudes, valium, morphine, demerol and 11,000 doses of thorazine—a better supply, in fact, than the Guyanese government's own, not to mention a surfeit of cyanide.[9]

Dr. Layton was married to the daughter of Hugo Phillip, a German banker and stockbroker representing the likes of Siemens & Halske, the makers of cyanide for the Final Solution, and I.G. Farben, the manufacturer of a lethal nerve gas put to the same purpose.[10] Dr. Layton, a Quaker, developed a form of purified uranium used to set off the Manhattan Project's first self-sustaining chain reaction at the University of Chicago in 1942 by his wife's German-born uncle, Dr. James Franck. At Dugway Proving Ground in Utah, Dr. Layton concentrated his efforts, as did I.G. Farben, on the development of nerve gasses.[11]

Dr. Layton later defended his participation in the Army's chemical warfare section: "You can blow people to bits with bombs, you can shoot them with shells, you can atomize them with atomic bombs, but the same people think there's something terrible about poisoning the air and letting people breathe it. Anything having to do with gas warfare, chemical warfare, has this taint of horror on it, even if you only make people vomit."[12]

Nazis and chemical warfare are recurring themes in the aspartame story. Currently, the chief patent holder of the sweetener is the Monsanto

Co., based in St. Louis. In 1967 Monsanto entered into a joint venture with I.G. Farben-Fabriken, the aforementioned financial core of the Hitler regime and the key supplier of poison gas to the Nazi racial extermination program. After the Holocaust, the German chemical firm joined with American counterparts in the development of chemical warfare agents and founded the "Chemagrow Corporation" in Kansas City, Missouri, a front that employed German and American specialists on behalf of the U.S. Army Chemical Corps.[13]

Dr. Otto Bayer, I.G.'s research director, had a binding relationship with Monsanto chemists.[14] In the postwar period, Dr. Bayer developed and tested chemical warfare agents with Dr. Gerhard Schrader, the Nazi concocter of Tabun, the preferred nerve gas of the SS. Dr. Schrader was also an organophosphate pioneer, and tested the poison on populated areas of West Germany under the guise of killing insects.[15] (Schrader's experiments reek suspiciously of the ongoing aerial application of malathion—developed by Dr. Schrader, a recruit of the U.S. Chemical Warfare Service when Germany surrendered—in present-day Southern California.[16])

Another bridge to I.G. Farben was Monsanto's acquisition of American Viscose, long owned by the England's Courtauld family. As early as 1928, the U.S. Commerce Department issued a report critical of the Courtauld's ties to I.G. Farben and the Nazi party.[17]

Incredibly, George Courtauld was handed an appointment as director of personnel for England's Special Operations Executive, the wartime intelligence service, in 1940.[18] A year later, with the exhaustion of British military financial reserves, American Viscose, worth $120 million, was put on the block in New York. The desperate British treasury received less than half that amount from the sale, brokered by Siegmund Warburg, among others.[19] Monsanto acquired the company in 1949.[20]

The Nazi connection to Monsanto crops up again on the board of directors with John Reed, a former crony of "Putzi" Hanfstangl, a Harvard-bred emigre to Germany who talked Hitler out of committing suicide in 1924 and contributed to the financing of Mein Kampf.[21] Reed is also chairman of Citibank and long a confederate of the CIA. According to a lawsuit filed by San Francisco attorney Melvin Belli, Reed was an instigator, with Ronald Reagan, James Baker and Margaret Thatcher, of the "Purple Ink Document," a plan to finance CIA covert operations with wartime Japanese gold stolen from a buried Philippine hoard.[22]

Other covert warfare connections to Monsanto include Dr. Charles Allen Thomas, chairman of the Monsanto board, 1960–65. Dr. Thomas directed a group of scientists during WW II in the refinement of plutonium for use in the atomic bomb. In the postwar period Monsanto operated Tennessee's Oak Ridge National Laboratories for the Manhattan Project.[23] (Manhattan gestated with the Oak Ridge Institute for Nuclear

Studies, where lethal doses of radiation were tested on 200 unwary cancer patients, turned them into "nuclear calibration devices" gratis the AEC and NASA, until 1974.[24]) Nazi scientists and a 7,000-ton stockpile of uranium were delivered to the Project by its security and counterintelligence director, Col. Boris Pash, a G-2 designate to the CIA's Bloodstone program—and the eminence grise of PB/7, a clandestine Nazi unit that, according to State Department records, conducted a regimen of political assassinations and kidnappings in Europe and the Eastern bloc.[25]

Monsanto Director William Ruckelshaus was an acting director of the FBI under Richard Nixon, a period in the Bureau's history marred by COINTELPRO outrages, including political assassinations. Nixon subsequently appointed Ruckelshaus to the position of EPA director, a nagging irony given his ties to industry (he is a director of Browning-Ferris and Cummins Engine Co.). CIA counterintelligentsia on the Monsanto board include Stansfield Turner, a former Director of Central Intelligence, and Earle H. Harbison, an Agency information specialist for 19 years. Harbison is also a director of Merrill Lynch, and thus raises the spectre of CIA drug dealing. In 1984 President Ronald Reagan's Commission on Organized Crime concluded that Merrill Lynch employed couriers "observed transferring enormous amounts of cash through investment houses and banks in New York City to Italy and Switzerland. Tens of millions of dollars in heroin sales in this country were transferred overseas." Merrill Lynch invested the drug proceeds in the New York bullion market before making the offshore transfers.[26]

As might be expected in view of Monsanto's Nazi, chemical warfare and CIA ties, NutraSweet is a can of worms unprecedented in the American food industry. The history of the product is laden with flawed and fabricated research findings, and when necessary to further the product along, blatant lies—the basis of FDA approval and the incredulity of independent medical researchers. Senator Metzenbaum described the FDA as "the handmaiden" of the drug industry in 1985, but she comports under all regimes. In the Clinton administration, for example, Mike Taylor was graced with the position of deputy director of the FDA. Taylor is a cousin of Tipper Gore, Vice President Albert Gore's wife, and once an outside counsel to Monsanto. (Gore voted with Senate conservatives in 1985 against aspartame labeling.)

Under the tutelage of the Clinton administration, one Chicago reporter quipped, the FDA strictly enforces one "unwritten" violation of law"—failure to bribe.

Granitic Believers

G.D. Searle, the pharmaceutical firm that introduced NutraSweet, worked symbiotically with federal and Congressional officials, bribed investigators when violations of law were exposed, *anything* to move aspartame to market. As far back as 1969, an internal Searle "strategy memo" concluded the company must obtain FDA approval to outpace firms competing for the artificial sweetener market. Another memo in December 1970 urged that FDA officials were to be "brought into a subconscious spirit of participation" with Searle.[27] To that end, with enormous profits at stake, the pharmaceutical house set out on a long struggle to transform the Pentagon's biochemical warfare agent into "the taste Mother Nature intended."

The official story is that aspartame was discovered in 1966 by a scientist developing an ulcer drug (not a "food additive"). Supposedly he discovered, upon carelessly licking his fingers, that they tasted sweet. Thus was the chemicals industry blessed with a successor to saccharine, the coal-tar derivative that foundered eight years later under the pressure of cancer concerns. Aspartame found early opposition in consumer attorney James Turner, author of *The Chemical Feast* and a former Nader's Raider. At his own expense, Turner fought approval for ten years, basing his argument on aspartame's potential side effects, particularly on children. His concern was shared by Dr. John Olney, professor of neuropathology and psychiatry at Washington School of Medicine in St. Louis. Dr. Olney found that aspartame, combined with MSG seasoning, increased the odds of brain damage in children.[28]

Other studies have found that children are especially vulnerable to its toxic effects, a measure of the relation between consumption and body weight. The FDA determined in 1981, when the sweetener was approved, that the maximum projected intake of aspartame is 50 milligrams a day per kilogram of body weight. A child of 66 pounds would consume about 23 milligrams by imbibing four cans of Diet-Coke. The child might also conceivably down an aspartame-flavored snack or two, nearing the FDA's projected maximum daily intake.[29] Dr. William Partridge, a professor of neuroendocrine regulation at MIT, told *Common Cause* in August 1984 that it wouldn't be surprising if a child—"confronted with aspartame-containing iced tea, chocolate milk, milk shakes, chocolate pudding pie, Jello, ice cream and numerous other products"—consumed 50 milligrams in a day.

Internally, aspartame breaks down into its constituent amino acids and methanol, which degrades into formaldehyde. The FDA announced in 1984 that "no evidence" has been found to establish that the methanol by-product reaches toxic levels, claiming that "many fruit juices contain higher levels of the natural compound."[30] But *Medical World News* had already reported in 1978 that the methanol content of aspartame is 1,000 times greater than most foods under FDA control.[31]

NutraSweet, the "good stuff" of sentimental adverts, is a truly insidious product. According to independent trials, aspartame intake is shown by animal studies to alter brain chemicals affecting behavior. Aspartame's effects on the brain led Richard Wurtman, an MIT neuroscientist, to the discovery, as recorded in *The New England Journal of Medicine* (no. 309, 1983), that the sweetener defeats its purpose as a diet aid, since high doses may instill a craving for calorie-laden carbohydrates. One of his pilot studies found that the NutraSweet-carbohydrate combination increases the "sweetener's effect on brain composition." Searle officials denigrated Wurtman's findings, but the American Cancer Society has since confirmed the agonizing irony—after tracking 80,000 women for six years—that "among women who gained weight, artificial sweetener users gained more than those who didn't use the products," as reported in *Medical Self Care* (3–87). (Since his battle with G.D. Searle, Wurtman founded Interneuron Pharmaceuticals, Inc., the producer of a sports drink that enhances athletic performance, and a weight-loss drug marketed in over 40 countries. Wurtman's share of the company, established in 1989, was worth $10 million by 1992.[32])

Even more daunting are the findings of Dr. Paul Spiers, a neurophychologist at Boston's Beth Israel Hospital, that aspartame use can depress intelligence. For this reason, he selected experimental subjects with a history of consuming it but unaware that they might be suffering ill effects. The subjects were given NutraSweet in capsules of the FDA's allowable limit. Spiers was alarmed to discover that they developed "cognitive deficits." One of the tests required recall of square patterns and alphabetical sequences, becoming increasingly more difficult. The test is challenging, but most people improve as they learn how it is done. The aspartame users, however, did not improve. "Some frankly showed a reverse pattern," Spiers reported.[33]

Aspartame has been shown to erode short-term memory. At the May, 1985 hearings on NutraSweet, Louisiana Senator Russell Long related a bizarre anecdote:

> SENATOR LONG: I have received a letter recently from a person who is well known to me and whose word is impeccable, as far as I am concerned. This person told me that she had been dieting and she had been using diet drinks with aspartame. She said she found her memory was going. She seemed to be completely losing her memory. When she would meet people whom she knew intimately, she could not recall what their name was, or even who they were. She could not recall a good bit of that which was going on about her to the extent that she was afraid she was losing her mind.... In due course, someone suggested that it might be this NutraSweet, so she stopped using it and her memory came back and her mind was restored.

Senator Howard Metzenbaum replied that he had received "a number of letters from doctors reporting similar developments.... There have been hundreds of incidences of people who have suffered loss of memory, headaches, dizziness, and other neurological symptoms which they feel are related to aspartame."[34] Senator Orrin Hatch, a hidebound arch-conservative and NutraSweet advocate, downplayed criticism of the sugar substitute. "Some people have lost their memory after drinking a variety of things," he argued. "The bottom line is this: the studies supporting aspartame's approval have been examined and reexamined. More than enough sound, valid studies exist to demonstrate aspartame's safety."

Hatch of Utah, reports the *Wall Street Journal,* has "given his strong support of the pharmaceutical industries."[35] So have the "Hatchlings." David Kessler, FDA commissioner under presidents Bush and Clinton, was once an aide to Orrin Hatch. His former campaign manager and aide, C. McClain Haddow, was sentenced to prison for conflict-of-interest charges arising from his work as a Reagan administration health official. And Thomas Parry, Hatch's former chief of staff, has carved a sumptuous life for himself as a Republican fund-raiser and lobbyist with clients in the pharmaceutical industry. All told, Parry represents 30 clients, including Eli Lilly, Warner-Lambert, and Johnson & Johnson, not to mention ranking defense firms and the Bahamas government. Parry's pharmaceutical clients have enriched Senator Hatch's campaign coffers, and in turn Hatch lavishes his attentions on them.[36]

By the time Orrin Hatch was stumping for NutraSweet in the U.S. Senate, the Center for Disease Control in Atlanta had received 600 letters complaining of NutraSweet's adverse effects. The National Soft Drink Association (NSDA) had them too: "there have been hundreds of reports from around the country suggesting a possible relationship between their consumption of NutraSweet and subsequent symptoms including headaches, aberrational behavior, slurred speech, etc." FDA Commissioner Arthur Hull Hayes, appointed by Ronald Reagan in April 1981 (moving the *New York Times* to observe that "some industry officials consider Dr. Hayes more sympathetic to their viewpoints than past holders of the office"), considered such complaints "anecdotal."

Of course, like scores of other ultra-conservatives roaming the executive branch in the 1980s, the ethics of Arthur Hull Hayes were entirely malleable—not only did he approve a product based on studies that were "scientifically lacking in design and execution," according to a report issued by *Science Times* in February 1985, but upon leaving the FDA he took the post of senior medical consultant for Burson-Marsteller, the public relations firm retained by G.D. Searle.[37]

Burson-Marsteller, a huge public relations conglomerate, swelled in the 1980s by leveraging smaller competitors—including Black, Manafort, Stone & Kelley, a lobbying firm best known for influence-peddling along the Beltway—presently outsizing even the Hill & Knowlton empire. Typical in the aspartame story are Burson-Marsteller's links to the intelligence community and right-wing operatives of the GOP. Thomas Devereaux Bell, Jr., an executive officer of the firm, is the former chairman of the Center for Naval Analyses in Alexandria, Virginia. Bell was also the executive director of Ronald Reagan's Inaugural Ball Committee (ushering in the likes of Licio Gelli of Italy's notorious P-2 lodge). Bell's career in Washington began in 1971 as a deputy director of Richard Nixon's Committee to Re-Elect the President. He went on to serve as an administrative aide to Senator William Brock and the Reagan transition team.[38]

At the FDA, Hayes used aspartame as a political statement that the Reagan administration was embarking on a grand voyage of conservative "regulatory reform," sluicing through treasonous liberal constraints on "free enterprise." Despite what one FDA scientist described as 'very serious' questions concerning pivotal brain tumor tests, Hayes eagerly approved aspartame for use in dry foods in July 1981.[39]

Three FDA scientists advised against the approval of aspartame, citing G.D. Searle's own brain tumor tests, because there was no proof that "aspartame is safe for use as a food additive under its intended conditions of use."[40]

Hayes has since declined to answer any questions about his decision, which ignored the recommendations of the FDA's own board of inquiry. He relied instead on a study conducted by Japan's Ajinomoto, Inc.—a licensee of G.D. Searle. Hayes acknowledged in his 1981 decision that he had only consulted a preliminary report of the Japanese evaluation, and only skimmed it. More serious, Hayes violated federal law by basing approval on the Japanese test, as it had not been reviewed by the FDA board.[41]

Who is Arthur Hull Hayes? He was no disinterested bureaucrat. True to the biochemical theme of the aspartame story, Dr. Hayes served in the Army Medical Corps in the 1960s. According to the *Washington Post,* Hayes was assigned to Edgewood Arsenal at Fort Detrick, Maryland, the Army's chemical warfare base of operations, "one of a number of doctors who conducted drug tests for the Army on volunteers… to determine the effect of a mind-disorienting drug called CAR 301,060." According to a declassified 1976 report prepared by the Army Inspector General, Hayes had planned a research study to develop the mind-altering CAR 301,060 as a crowd-control agent. In 1972 Hayes left Edgewood Arsenal, and a new plan for the experiments was drawn up by Edgewood physicians. The 1976 report notes that similar tests had been conducted before Hayes took charge.[42]

Also at the center of the effort to land FDA approval of NutraSweet stood Donald Rumsfeld—"Rummy" to his friends—chairman of G.D. Searle upon leaving the Ford administration in 1977. Rumsfeld, the product of a wealthy Chicago suburb, was a Princeton graduate and a Navy pilot during the Korean conflict. He entered politics as a Congressional House aide attending night classes at Georgetown University Law School, which is closely aligned with the CIA.[43]

Rumsfeld campaigned ambitiously for Richard Nixon, who drafted him to direct the Office of Equal Opportunity on May 26, 1969. He quickly established an office to spy on his employees in a holy crusade to flush out "revolutionaries" said to be granting federal funds to politically subversive organizations — a throwback to McCarthy's tantrums.[44]

Rumsfeld also figured in Nixon's notorious Power Control Group, spearheaded by Charles Colson and John Ehrlichman.[45] Gerald Ford named Rumsfeld executive chief of staff upon the resignation of Al Haig.

In 1986 he was named chairman of the Institute for Contemporary Studies, a neo-conservative "think tank" (read propaganda mill) established in 1972 by Edwin Meese and Caspar Weinberger. ICS has sponsored such opinion-shaping projects as a study of expansions in "entitlement programs" and their erosive effects on the economy, and a book on the uses of coercion by Communist regimes.[46]

Rumsfeld, at 43, became the country's youngest secretary of defense. For many years he has been a vocal proponent of chemical weapons.[47] He is chairman of the Rand Corp.[48] In 1988 he dropped a presidential bid, and was named a v.p. of Westmark Systems, led by past CIA Director Bobby Ray Inman. Rumsfeld was one of Westmark's founding directors. He shared the board with Joseph Amato, a former vice president at TRW (and a colleague of Inman's at the National Security Agency), and Dale Frey, chairman of the General Electric Investment Corp.[49]

Rumsfeld, a veteran political operative, was an adept at the vulgar art of public relations. He was recruited by G.D. Searle because he had "a Boy Scout image," according to one company official.[50] A house politician was precisely what Searle needed to compensate for the damage done by independent researchers concerned about the toxic effects of aspartame. In March 1976 an FDA task force brought into question all of the company's testing procedures between 1967 and 1975. The task force described "serious deficiencies in Searle's operations and practices which undermine the basis for reliance on Searle's integrity." The final report of the FDA task force noted faulty and fraudulent product testing, knowingly misrepresented findings, and instances of "irrelevant or unproductive animal research where experiments have been poorly conceived, carelessly executed or inaccurately analyzed."[51]

Richard Merrill, the FDA's chief counsel, petitioned Samuel K. Skinner, U.S. attorney for the northern district of Illinois, for a grand jury investigation of Searle's "willful and knowing failure" to submit required test reports, and for "concealing material facts and making false statements" in reports on aspartame submitted to the agency.[52] Yet industry analysts, interviewed by the *Wall Street Journal* six months after Rumsfeld's appointment as chairman, noted a rapid turnabout in Searle's fortunes as a result of his direction.[53]

Searle denies that Chairman Rumsfeld ever had any contact with the FDA, or the Carter and Reagan administrations, to lobby for aspartame.[54] But the *Wall Street Journal* article reported in 1977 that Rumsfeld "keenly understands the importance of a public image. So he has been mending fences with the FDA by personally asking top agency officials what Searle should do to straighten out its reputation." Westley M. Dixon, Searle's vice chairman, told the *Journal* that without Rumsfeld "we wouldn't have gotten approval for Norpace," a drug investigated by the FDA in 1975.[55]

The grand jury investigation of Searle disintegrated in January, 1977 when the FDA formally requested that Samuel Skinner, U.S. attorney and a protege of Illinois Governor James Thompson, investigate the firm for falsifying and withholding aspartame test data. A month later, Skinner met with attorneys from Searle's Chicago law firm, Sidley & Austin. Jimmy Carter ascended to the presidency a few weeks later. He announced that Skinner would not be asked to remain in office, but the outgoing Republican wasn't found wanting for employment. He informed reporters that he had already "begun preliminary discussions" with Sidley & Austin.[56]

G.D. Searle and Sidley & Austin are Siamese Twins. They are financially and politically one. Edwin Austin, a senior partner in the law firm, was appointed to the Illinois Supreme Court in 1969. The Searle family drew upon his services extensively, and he taught Sunday school in Wilmette, a Chicago suburb, as did Dr. Claude Howard Searle, whose father co-founded the pharmaceutical house.

The firm is grafted to the beating heart of the Republican party. Morris Leibman of Sidley & Austin was for many years chairman of the American Bar Association's "Standing Committee on Law and National Security," a position that won him Reagan's Medal of Freedom in 1981.[57]

John E Robson, head of Sidley & Austin's Washington office, was appointed executive vice-president of Searle & Co. in 1977, the same year Skinner was named a partner in the law firm. Robson, too, was active in Republican politics. He was the first general counsel of the Department of Transportation, and at the behest of Gerald Ford in 1975 chairman of the Civil Aeronautics Board.[58]

He moved on to Searle, and stayed with the company until it was bought outright by Monsanto in 1985. Howard Trienens, a law clerk to the late Chief Justice Vinson in the early 1950s, was a G.D. Searle director and worked for Sidley & Austin since 1949.[59] Archconservative California Governor George Deukmejian joined Sidley & Austin's Los Angeles branch upon leaving office in 1991, and is reportedly making a "very comfortable" living. He has a keen "sense" for bringing in corporate clients, a partner in the firm told the *Los Angeles Times,* many of them past contributors to his campaign fund. Deukmejian's business connections have given him a reputation as a Sidley & Austin "rainmaker," but the L.A. city council has questioned his ethics in promoting a contract with Sumitomo Corp. on a metropolitan railway project.[60]

Searle aside, Sidley & Austin has served some of the most notorious special interests in the country. The firm lobbied overtime, for instance, on behalf of Charles Keating's Lincoln Savings & Loan, and provided counsel on tax issues and dealing with federal authorities. The firm assisted Keating when Lincoln was foundering, and curried political favor to keep the S&L operating despite massive debts. As a result, the firm was forced to settle with Lincoln depositors in 1991, agreeing to cover an excess of $40 million in claims.[61]

Sidley & Austin also represented the AMA when a group of drugstore chains sued seven drug makers—including Searle—for price-fixing and antitrust violations. The lawsuit, filed in October 1993, amounts to billions of dollars in compensation.[62]

Skinner recused himself from the Searle prosecution four months before leaving office—in a memo to subordinates asking that the matter be kept "confidential to avoid any undue embarrassment"—a stall that nearly allowed the statute of limitations to expire. William Conlon, a senior U.S. attorney, inherited the case. He eased off citing case load pressures and gave a deaf ear to complaints of delays from the Justice Department, which urged that a grand jury be convened to prosecute Searle for falsifying NutraSweet test data. In January, 1979 Conlon too joined Sidley & Austin.[63]

The 33-page letter from Merrill to Skinner charged Searle with criminal fraud in its animal rest results. In 1984 Common Cause asked Dan Reidy of the U.S. attorney's office how the investigation had stalled. Reidy replied that because it was a grand jury investigation, he was "bound by law to secrecy." A Searle spokesman exploited the demise of the grand jury to claim there was "no validity to the charges," that the company had been "exonerated." Philip Brodsky, an investigator for the FDA, expressed surprise that Searle hadn't been indicted. "I thought surely they would prosecute them," he said.[64]

Eleven years later, Senator Metzenbaum issued a press release charging Skinner with stalling the criminal investigation as he prepared to leave office. Metzenbaum and his staff demanded an FBI investigation of Skinner's mishandling of the case. In December, 1988 the conflict-of-interest bombshell blew up in the face of newly-elected George Bush, who was about to appoint Skinner to the position of transportation secretary.[65]

Like most of the Machiavellians in the NutraSwseet story, Samuel Knox Skinner kept company with hard-right Republicans. He entered Republican Party politics as a campaign volunteer for Barry Goldwater.[66]

In 1975 he was appointed by President Ford to the office of federal prosecutor in Chicago. Sidley & Austin promoted him to senior partner after only one year with the firm. Skinner was the director of George Bush's presidential campaign in Illinois. On occasion he was berated for his involvement with the state's Republican apparatus: in 1987, for instance, the *Chicago Sun-Times* linked him with a circle of lawyers close to Governor Thompson who were awarded lucrative assignments handling the financial affairs of financially-crippled insurance companies. Skinner was a leading light of the Illinois Fraud Prevention Commission—he targeted welfare cheats (as opposed to white-collar criminals in the drug industry) —and President Reagan's Commission on Organized Crime. In December 1991 he left Transportation to take the position of President Bush's chief of staff.[67]

"A Shocking Story"

Had Skinner pressed on with the investigation, aspartame's manufacturer would have been forced to explain a long history of fabricated laboratory tests and slippery dealings with federal regulators, not to mention the public. Dr. Alexander Schmidt, a former FDA commissioner, said of the original Aspartame Task Force investigation: "What was discovered was reprehensible… incredibly sloppy science." A 1980 public board of inquiry opined that the company's testing procedures were "bizarre."[68]

Searle's decision to market aspartame culminated with the falsification of test results to obtain FDA approval. In November 1969, officials of the firm hired Dr. Harry Waisman, a researcher for the University of Wisconsin, to test for brain damage in Rhesus monkeys. Seven monkeys were fed aspartame for periods up to one year. In the end, though, the evaluation flopped because the technicians failed to perform the intelligence tests and autopsies required to determine brain damage. When questioned about the false data by the FDA, Searle officials claimed to have had no direct control over the study. But the protocol for the study was written by a Searle pathologist *after* it had begun. And according to Dr. Gross, "frequent high-level communications took place between Searle executives and Dr. Waisman prior to and during the study."[69]

To make matters worse, Dr. Waisman died in March, 1971 in mid-study. Searle submitted the toxicity test to the FDA on October 12, 1972. It bore Dr. Waisman's name as coauthor. Richard Merrill noted: "Dr. Waisman was the expert in the field and his name would carry great weight," but complained to Skinner that Searle took "great literary license" in drafting the report, "which covers up the admitted inadequacy of the design, control and documentation of this study."[70]

Searle submitted some 150 test reports, yet Dr. Martha Freeman of the

FDA Bureau of Drugs noted in a 1973 memo, "the information provided is inadequate to permit an evaluation of the potential toxicity of aspartame."[71] The FDA task force set up by Dr. Schmidt in 1975 reviewed 25 studies on seven products manufactured by G.D. Searle, a total of 500 pages and 15,000 exhibits.[72] Searle was held to be the author of "reports that the FDA believes contain false information" and "concealed facts resulting from having drafted Dr. Waisman's 'pilot' monkey study so that it would appear to be a valid, thorough scientific study," and not a forgery.

In 1975 Searle submitted a battery of cancer test results entitled "The Willigan Report," which contained a statistical table that excluded four malignant mammary tumors detected by Dr. Willigan and incorporated in his data. The malignancies were made to appear benign. Searle dismissed the misrepresentation as a computer "programming error" undetected by supervising statisticians. Dr. Gross interviewed all concerned with the tests. He concluded in a statement to Metzenbaum's committee in August 1985 that "to accept the Searle explanation is to believe that the unfavorable mammary malignancy data were innocently omitted from the summary table four separate times by three different individuals."[73] The Waisman and Willigan Reports were prepared by Searle Labs, as were 88% of the safety evaluations conducted by 1981.[74]

They are typical of the shoddy documentation upon which FDA Commissioner Hayes based his decision that aspartame would not constitute a public health risk. Although two members of the 1975 task force considered the tests to be criminal frauds, Hayes and Searle declared the results valid. In an appeal to Hayes's decision, James Turner said: "the entire argument that since the studies are no longer considered fraudulent by FDA they are therefore scientifically valid is an example of a rhetorical shell game that, if successful, can only bring discredit and ridicule on the FDA."[75]

Dr. Gross, the chief scientist on the FDA task force, told the CBS *Nightly News* staff in January 1984 that Searle made "deliberate decisions" to cloak the toxic effects of aspartame. "They took great pains to camouflage the shortcomings of the study," Gross said, "as I say, filter and just present to the FDA what they wished the FDA to know. And they did other terrible things. For instance, animals would develop tumors while they were under study—well, G.D. Searle would remove these tumors from the animals," surgically masking the cancerous effects of aspartame.[76]

Yet one 1986 *New England Journal of Medicine* article claimed that non-compulsive aspartame intake has "no sinister effects." Dr. Woodrow Monte told CBS, "every time a truly impartial team of scientists have looked at NutraSweet, it has been turned down." Dr. Monte, director of the nutrition laboratory at Arizona State University, held that these studies "show *extreme* dangers over the long term."[77]

Dr. Monte was rewarded for his comments by a fusillade from the press. On February 23 Dan Dorfman, a business news reporter for WCBS in New York, broke a story that several CBS employees had invested in put options on NutraSweet that pay off if the stock price drops.[78] Dr. Monte and his attorney had purchased the options as well. It emerged that the CBS staffers had purchased them on the advice of stock market newsletters printed prior to the nightly news report. The investments were not illegal, nor did they reap a profit. Searle's stock was not affected by the publicity, and the investors took a loss. Nevertheless, the *Wall Street Journal* ran a front-page story condemning the "inside trading." Reed Irvine's Accuracy in Media picked up the cudgel against Dr. Monte and the CBS employees as if they'd committed a shocking Wall Street swindle.[79] Accuracy in Media, formed in 1969, is an intelligence operation abetted by the CIA. The rabidly right-wing organization was cofounded by Bernard Yoh, a counter-insurgency adviser under the notorious Edward Lansdale in Vietnam, and a fount of CIA funds to military intelligence units in the Delta region. Board member Elbridge Durbrow was once a foreign service "diplomat," and advised commanders of Maxwell Air Force Base in Alabama. Another AIM board member, Frank Trager, has conducted research for the Pentagon and CIA, and churns out pamphlets on international business and intelligence operations. Major financial contributors to AIM have included the late Richard Nixon, "Bebe" Rebozo, Edward Scripps, the wretched Dr. Edward Teller and former Treasury Secretary William E. Simon.[80]

Accuracy in Media is a strident advocate of the chemical industry, which provides it with generous funding. The media "watchdog" has long waged a campaign on behalf of dioxin, denouncing the "Agent Orange scare" as the creation of delirious, anti-business liberals. Among the leading manufacturers of Agent Orange for the Vietnam war effort was Monsanto, preparing—at the very moment AIM took aim at detractors of NutraSweet—to buy G.D. Searle.

The Good Stuff

Dr. Monte cautioned in 1987 that he didn't want to sound like a "conspiracy theory" hound, but the aspartame chronology clarifies its commercial emergence. The FDA board of inquiry advised against the sweetener on September 30, 1980. On January 21, 1981—the day after Reagan's inauguration—Searle submitted "ten new studies." Dr. Monte was skeptical. "It is impossible that they could have conducted those studies in four months," he said. "Obviously they'd previously done those studies but hadn't officially submitted them, although much of the information in those studies was informally presented to the board of inquiry." With the "new tests" in hand, Hayes dissembled as though critical, overriding evidence had proven the safety of aspartame.[81]

James Turner, representing the Community Nutrition Institute in Washington, D.C., said that Arthur Hull Hayes, to arrive at his decision that aspartame is safe, firewalked a path "through a mass of scientific mismanagement, improper procedures, wrong conclusions and general scientific inexactness." Two FDA officials declared in 1985 that Hayes was determined to clear all obstacles to NutraSweet approval. One FDA bureaucrat reported that "people at the top" were closed to questions concerning the quality of the tests submitted by Searle.[82]

In July, 1984 a broad investigation of NutraSweet's adverse effects was conducted by the FDA and the Centers for Disease Control. Federal health officials said at the outset that they believed no harm would emerge from the data to indict aspartame. Robert McQuate, Ph.D., science director of the National Soft Drink Association, predicted with mystical confidence that the study would "provide further evidence that aspartame is a safe ingredient."[83]

Dr. McQuate didn't fret the goring of his biochemical ox. In November the CDC announced that no "serious, widespread" side-effects had been found.[84] It was "unlikely," said CDC officials, that "complainers" could establish a link between NutraSweet and their maladies––the very same bromide once tossed to victims of radiation experiments. Reported side-effects of aspartame fell into two distinct categories: central nervous system (65%) and gastrointestinal disorders (24%).[85] Yet the CDC claimed erroneously that no consistent reaction pattern had been found.[86] Robert Shapiro, then president of NutraSweet, used the occasion to enthuse that the survey "clearly established the safety" of the sugar substitute.[87]

Nevertheless, the CDC recommended a new set of studies because aspartame users continued to complain of ill effects. Based on the ersatz assurances of the CDC report, PepsiCo announced that it would drop saccharin and begin sweetening its diet drinks entirely with aspartame.

The decision would have been approved by Wayne Calloway, then CEO of PepsiCo and a director of the multinationals Citicorp, General Electric and Exxon. In 1983 soda bottlers, organized around Pepsi, had petitioned the FDA for a delay in approval of NutraSweet for soft drinks until further evaluation verified its safety—interpreted by market analysts as a ploy to drive down the price of the sweetener. They soon abandoned the effort to block approval (and all health concerns they might have had). "We believe saccharin is safe," Pepsi USA President Roger Enrico lied, but "we wanted the taste improvement."

PepsiCo, already drawing on a tenth of Searle's 7.5-million pound annual production of aspartame, signed an agreement with G.D. Searle to boost purchases a whopping 500 percent.[88] (Like other corporate pushers of aspartame, Pepsi has long maintained ties to the intelligence community. One product of the relationship was a Pepsi plant in Vientiane, Laos with a laboratory outfitted for heroin production. Alfred McCoy, in *The*

Politics of Heroin in Southeast Asia, documents the efforts of Richard Nixon to promote the plant's construction in 1965, and the CIA's continuing subsidization of the plant. McCoy complained to Pepsi officials that the facilities were but a cover for the importation and refinement of morphine, but it continued to operate unhindered.)

Yet another report was filed by Reagan's General Accounting Office in July 1987, this one on the FDA's handling of NutraSweet. The GAO concluded that the agency had observed proper procedures and conducted valid studies. But the report noted that the FDA had followed guidelines for food—not drug—testing, despite the recommendation of the agency's own biologists favoring drug tests, which are considerably more stringent. This recommendation was overruled by FDA officials.[89]

Another blemish in the study was bared by Dr. Louis Elsas, director of medical genetics at Emory University in Atlanta. "They never asked the right questions about what it does to brain function in humans," he told the *Washington Post.* Half of the scientists polled expressed reservations about the safety of NutraSweet. One-fifth reported "major concerns." Monsanto quibbled in a press release that these critics had themselves never conducted aspartame safety research. A score of independent scientists have. They found side effects.

Senator Metzenbaum berated Searle's flawed and fabricated tests at the August 1, 1985 Senate hearings. "The FDA," he said, "is content to have the manufacturer of aspartame, G.D. Searle, conduct these studies. How absurd."

He also faulted the AMA: "*The Journal of the American Medical Association* recently published a report on aspartame which, with some significant disclaimers, stated it was safe for most people. I wish that this report could ease my concerns. It does not. It merely restates the FDA position which relies solely on the tests conducted by G.D. Searle. As I have indicated these tests are under a cloud. In addition, the concerns raised recently by the scientists... were not even included in the report." In defense of the tests, executives of G.D. Searle argued that the sweetener has been approved by foreign regulatory agencies and the World Health Organization. But H.J. Roberts, an internal medicine specialist in West Palm Beach, Florida, reviewed the foreign studies and found that "the vast majority of these agencies accepted company-sponsored research without ever having done independent confirmatory studies."[90]

Deficiencies in testing were aggravated by a lack of laboratory training at Searle. One of the pivotal safety studies involved fetal damage, but the FDA task force found that the medical researcher in charge was "inexperienced in conducting studies of this nature and yet given full responsibility." They were appalled to discover that his sole credential was a field study of the cottontail rabbit for the Illinois Wildlife Service, yet at Searle he'd been assigned to laboratory training and supervision. When asked about his curriculum vitae in fetal research, he replied that he'd once attended a seminar on the subject, and the company had provided him with a stack of reference works.[91] (Yet G.D. Searle, in its 1981 Annual Report, billed itself as "a research-based pharmaceutical company.")

Corporate control of NutraSweet testing continues at Monsanto, torturing the ethics of academic medicine. In August, 1987 the University of Illinois, a recipient of Monsanto's largesse, issued a study exonerating aspartame of causing seizures in laboratory animals. Dave Hattan, a safety regulator for the FDA, responded that the study only confirmed the need for testing on humans. At independent labs, he insisted, aspartame provoked seizures.[92]

Industrial support tends to contaminate test data. Dr. Elsas, in a 1988 letter to the *New England Journal of Medicine,* advocated unbiased review of clinical research. "The NutraSweet Co.," he said, "may have had an interest in protocols that would find that their product had no untoward effects."[93]

Monsanto reportedly granted one NutraSweet researcher a $1.3-million honorarium.[94] The same hired gun willing to manipulate lab results will have no qualms publicly defending a tainted pharmaceutical, like the diabetic specialist who objected that a Senate hearing on aspartame, which called him as a witness, might arouse "groundless" public anxiety.[95]

Victims and health activists have attempted in the courts to put a stop to the marketing of NutraSweet, to no avail. In 1985 a coalition of consumer groups were handed a ruling by the federal Circuit Court of Appeals for the District of Columbia that the FDA had followed proper procedures in approving aspartame for soft drinks. A year later the *Washington Post* reported that the Supreme Court refused to consider the case "despite critics' arguments that the product, sold under the brand name NutraSweet, may cause brain damage."[96]

Likewise, the medical establishment has thrown up an impenetrable wall to aspartame critics. Dr. Roberts, author of a brief study, "Aspartame-Associated Confusion and Memory Loss: A Possible Human Model for Early Alzheimer's Disease," found it impossible to publish the monograph in a peer review medical journal. This was peculiar, he thought, "considering the increasing magnitude of Alzheimer's disease, and the relevance of my observations to newer biochemical findings and avenues of research." He can "personally vouch for the enormous difficulty in getting published articles concerning reactions to aspartame products," a trend in censorship with "ominous overtones." The options, Dr. Roberts says, are "generally limited to 'burying' the findings in a small-circulation journal (such as the bulletin of a county medical society), reporting the results as a letter to the editor, or (unfortunately, most often) discarding the project."[97]

Silence surrounds the most odious conspiracies.

Footnotes

1. "Sweet Talk," Science and the Citizen column, *Scientific American,* July, 1987, p. 15.
2. "Adverse Effects of Aspartame—January '86 through December '90," Current Bibliography series, National Library of Medicine pamphlet, National Institutes of Health, U.S. Department of Health and Human Services, 1991.
3. "Pepsi Switches Sweeteners—Aspartame Winning Diet Cola Market," *Washington Post,* November 2, 1984, p. A-1.
4. Mae Brussell, World Watchers #842, KAZU-FM, Monterey, Calif., January 25, 1988.
5. *Moody's Industrial Manual,* 1975, p. 2606.
6. *G.D. Searle's 1981 Annual Report.* Also, Arnold Foster and Benjamin R. Epstein, *Cross-Currents,* Doubleday & Co. (New York: 1956), p. 153.
7. Nancy Lisagor and Frank Lipsius, *A Law Unto Itself: The Untold Story of the Law Firm of Sullivan & Cromwell,* William Morrow (New York: 1988), pp. 137-38, 163.
8. John Marks, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate: The CIA and Mind Control,* Times Books (New York: 1979), pp. 58, 67 & 212. Marks writes that incapacitating "large numbers of people fell to the Army Chemical Corps, which also tested LSD and even stronger hallucinogens. The CIA concentrated on individuals."
9. John Peer Nugent, *White Night: The Untold Story of What Happened Before—and Beyond—Jonestown,* Rawson, Wade (New York: 1979), pp. 143 & 177.
10. Michael Meiers, *Was Jonestown a CIA Medical Experiment: A Review of the Evidence,* Mellen House (Lampeter, UK: 1988), p. 42.
11. Ibid., p. 43.
12. Ibid., pp. 42-43. For a sanitized account of Dr. Layton's career, see Min S. Yee and Thomas N. Layton, *In My Father's House: The Story of the Layton Family and the Reverend Jim Jones,* Holt, Rinehart and Winston (New York, 1981).
13. National Council of the National Front of Democratic Germany and the Committee of Anti-Fascist Resistance Fighters of the German Democratic Republic, *The Brown Book: War and Nazi Criminals in West Germany,* Verlag Zeit im Bild, 1965, pp. 33-34.
14. Dan J. Forrestal, *Faith, Hope & $5,000: The Story of Monsanto,* Simon and Schuster (New York: 1977), p. 159.
15. *Brown Book,* p. 34.
16. Tom Bower, *The Paperclip Conspiracy: The Hunt for the Nazi Scientists,* Little, Brown & Co. (Boston: 1987), pp. 93 & 95.
17. Howard W. Ambruster, *Treason's Peace: German Dyes and American Dupes,* Beechhurst Press (New York: 1947), p. 144.
18. Nigel West, *MI6: British Secret Intelligence Service Operations, 1909-1945,* Random House (New York: 1983), p. 92.
19. Jaques Attali, *A Man of Influence: The Extraordinary Career of S.G. Warburg,* Adler & Adler (Bethesda, Maryland: 1987), p. 167.
20. Forrestal, p. 121.
21. Anthony Cave Brown, *The Last Hero, Wild Bill Donovan,* Vintage (New York: 1982), pp. 210-211. Also, Ernst Hanfstangl, *Unheard Witness,* J.R. Lippincott (New York: 1957).

22. "Search for the Tiger's Treasure," *Las Vegas Sun,* December 26, 1993, p.1.
23. *Moody's Industrial Manual,* 1968, p. 4080.
24. "Radiation and the Guinea Pigs," *Guardian,* March 3, 1994, p. 3. Also see, "Nuclear Scientists Irradiated People in Secret Research," *New York Times,* December 17, 1993, p. A-1.
25. Christopher Simpson, *Blowback: America's Recruitment of Nazis and its Effect on the Cold War,* Wiedenfeld & Nicholson (New York: 1988), pp. 26, 152-53. Col. Pash, a former high school gym teacher from Hollywood, was an officer of the Office of Policy Coordination under Frank Wisner. His unit, Simpson writes, "known as PB/7, was given a written charter that read in part that 'PB/7 will be responsible for assassinations, kidnapping, and such other functions as from time to time may be given it... by higher authority.'" Pash was a member of the Russian Orthodox Church, a veteran of the Russian Civil War. Monsanto's Clinton Engineering Works in Oak Ridge became the Manhattan Project's headquarters in 1943, and was "manned almost entirely by experienced officers and agents of the CIC." See Ian Sayer and Douglas Botting, *America's Secret Army: The Untold Story of the Counter Intelligence Corps,* Franklin Watts (New York: 1989), pp. 71ff. & 346.
26. Robin Thomas Naylor, *Hot Money and the Politics of Debt,* Simon & Schuster (New York: 1987), p. 289.
27. "Statement from Adrian Gross, Former FDA Investigator and Scientist," *Congressional Record,* August 1, 1985, p. S10835.
28. Florence Graves, "How Safe is Your Diet Soft Drink?" *Common Cause,* July/August, 1984.
29. Ibid.
30. "FDA Finding on Aspartame," *New York Times,* January 14, 1984, p. 28.
31. Article in *Medical World News,* 1978, cited in I.N. Love, "NutraSweet Isn't that Sweet," *Gentle Strength Times,* October 1987, p. 3.
32. "Dick Wurtman's Ideas Aren't So Crazy After All," *Business Week,* December 14, 1992, p. 60.
33. "A Sour View of Aspartame," *San Francisco Chronicle,* August 25, 1987.
34. "Amendment No. 60" (debate), *Congressional Record,* May 7, 1985, p. S5516.
35. "Lobbyist's Cozy Ties with Ex-Boss Sen. Hatch Include Client Referrals, Political Fund-Raising," *Wall Street Journal,* February 18, 1993. Eli Lilly contributed $17,500 to Hatch's campaign chest between 1985 and 1988. Sen. Hatch filed a friend-of-the-court brief on behalf of Eli Lilly in a 1989 patent case. Other pharmaceutical houses enjoy his political favors. Lobbyist Thomas Parry remains a key adviser to Sen. Hatch: "Nobody gets better care than his former chief of staff," reported the *Journal.*
36. Ibid.
37. Jane E. Brody, "Sweetener Worries Some Scientists, "*Science Times,* February 5, 1985.
38. *Who's Who in Industry and Finance,* 97th ed., MacMillan (Wilmette, Il.: 1991), p. 583.
39. "Food and Drug Administration Food Additive Approval Process Followed for Aspartame," *GAO Report B-223552,* June 18, 1987.
40. "GAO Investigating NutraSweet Approval," UPI, reprinted in the *Congressional Record,* August 1, 1985, p. S10823.

41. Graves.
42. "Head of FDA Tested Drugs on Volunteers," *Washington Post,* June 26, 1983, p. A-4.
43. Austin H. Kiplinger, *Washington Now,* Harper & Row (New York: 1975), pp. 36-37.
44. Daniel Guttman and Barry Willner, *The Shadow Government: The Government's Multi-Billion-Dollar Giveaway of its Decision-Making Powers to Private Management Consultants, "Experts," and Think Tanks,* Pantheon, (New York: 1976), pp. 63-90.
45. Bruce Oudes, ed., *From: The President—Richard Nixon's Secret Files,* Harper & Row (New York: 1989), p. 173.
46. James A. Smith, *The Idea Brokers: Think Tanks and the Rise of the New Policy Elite,* Free Press (New York: 1991), p. 282.
47. Sterling Seagrave, *Yellow Rain: A Journey through the Terror of Chemical Warfare,* M. Evans and Co. (New York: 1981), p, 258: "After a meeting with President Nixon, Representative Gerald Ford attacks politicians who criticize the Pentagon CBW efforts, saying the critics seem to favor 'unilateral disarmament.'"
48. Christopher Palmeri, "Act Three," *Forbes,* October 26, 1992, p. 88.
49. "Westmark Systems Expands Board, Hires 3 New Vice Presidents," *Wall Street Journal,* February 11, 1988, p. 33.
50. Graves.
51. Graves.
52. "Hon. Samuel K. Skinner," *Congressional Record,* Congressional Printing Office, Washington, D.C., August 1, 1985, pp. S10827 & S10835.
53. Graves.
54. *Congressional Record,* August 1, 1985, p. S10823.
55. Graves.
56. "Critics Cause Bush Cabinet Search to Stumble," *Los Angeles Times,* December 22, 1988.
57. Herman Kogan, *Traditions and Challenges: The Story of Sidley & Austin,* R.R. Donnelley & Sons (Chicago: 1983), p. 266.
58. *Who's Who in America,* 48th ed., 1994.
59. Ibid.
60. "Deukmejian Thrives in Private Life, Law Work," *Los Angeles Times,* January 3, 1992, p. A-1.
61. "Chicago Law Firm Agrees to Pay Up to $34 Million in Lincoln S&L Case," *Los Angeles Times,* May 21, 1991, p. D-5; and "Sidley & Austin, RTC Said to Reach Pact," *Wall Street Journal,* October 31, 1991, p. B-4. The basis of the suit was a memo written on May 10, 1988 by Margery Waxman, a partner in Sidley & Austin's Washington office, to Charles Keating. In it, she said "pressure" had been applied to M. Danny Wall, then chairman of the Home Loan Bank Board, "to work toward meeting your demands and he has so instructed his staff."
62. "Suit Accuses 7 Drug Makers of Price-Fixing," *Los Angeles Times,* October 15, 1993, p. D-1. Other pharmaceutical houses accused of conspiring to fix prescription drug prices included Smith-Kline Beecham, Ciba-Geigy Corp., American Home Products, Schering-Plough and Glaxo.
63. Ida Honorof, "FDA Coverup of Hazards of NutraSweet," *Report to Consumers,* Vol. XVIII, No. 401, December, 1987. Also, 'Two Ex-U.S. Prosecutors' Roles in Case

Against Searle are Questioned in Probe," *Wall Street Journal,* February 7, 1986, p. 4. Ironically enough, William Conlon won an appointment to the Illinois State Board of Ethics in 1982 (Kogan, p. 359).

64. Graves.
65. *Los Angeles Times,* December 12, 1988.
66. "Sam Skinner: A Pragmatist in a Storm," *Wall Street Journal,* December 6, 1991.
67. "Samuel Knox Skinner," *New York Times,* December 23, 1988.
68. Graves.
69. "Statement from Adrian Gross, Former FDA Investigator and Scientist," *Congressional Record,* August 1, 1985, p. S10835.
70. *Congressional Record,* August 1, 1985, p. S10831, and "Statements from Adrian Gross," p. S10838.
71. "FDA Handling of Research on NutraSweet is Defended," *New York Times,* July 18, 1987, p. 50.
72. H.J. Roberts, M.D., *Aspartame (NutraSweet): Is it Safe?,* Charles Press (Philadelphia: 1990), p. 10.
73. *Congressional Record,* August 1, 1985, p. S10828.
74. Ibid., p. S10834.
75. Graves.
76. "Sweet Suspicions," three-part *CBS Nightly News* series, January 1984. Transcript printed in the *Congressional Record,* August 1, 1985, p. S10826.
77. Ibid.
78. Raymond Bonner, "Searle Stock Query Held 'Smokescreen,'" *New York Times,* February 29, 1984, p. D-5.
79. William Safire, "Sweet and Sour," *New York Times,* June 1, 1984, p. A-31.
80. Louis Wolfe, "Accuracy in Media Rewrites the News and History," *Covert Action Information Bulletin,* Number 21 (Spring 1984), pp. 24-37.
81. I.N. Love, "NutraSweet Isn't that Sweet," in *Gentle Strength Times,* October 1987, p. 3.
82. Graves.
83. "Complaints on Aspartame Lead to Nationwide Investigation," *Los Angeles Times,* July 5, 1984, p. H-1.
84. "Federal Agency Sees Little Risk in Sweetener," *New York Times,* November 2, 1984, p. A-22.
85. *Los Angeles Times,* July 5, 1984.
86. *New York Times,* November 2, 1984.
87. "U.S. Study of Aspartame Finds no Serious Effects," *Washington Post,* November 2, 1984, p. A-18.
88. "Pepsi Switches Sweeteners," *Washington Post,* November 2, 1984, p. A-1.
89. "Most Scientists in Poll Doubt NutraSweet's Safety," *Washington Post,* August 17, 1987, p. A-23.
90. Roberts, p. 238.
91. *Congressional Report,* May 7, 1987, p. S5500.
92. "New Findings Back Use of Sweetener," *New York Times,* August 1987, p. 30. The *Times* showed a marked prediliction to slant news reports in favor of the

sweetener, to the point of distorting information.

93. "Researchers Differ Over Long-Range Effects of Sweetener," *Los Angeles Times,* November 3, 1988, p. H-1.
94. Roberts, p. 244.
95. Roberts, p. 248.
96. "High Court Rejects Sweetener Review," *Washington Post,* April 23, 1986, p. C-7.
97. Roberts, p. 246-47.

Chapter Fourteen

The Holocaust Gallery

How the CIA Stole Jewish Art Treasures Looted by the Nazis

By all accounts James Kronthal had the makings of a ranking CIA official. He had attended New York's prestigious Lincoln School with Nelson Rockefeller. At Yale, he rejected the advice of his father that he major in business and studied art history instead. He joined the rowing crew and Phi Beta Kappa. Upon earning his degree in 1934, he found employment at the prestigious Frankfurt, Germany banking house of Speyer & Co. (the Kronthal's were blood relations of the Speyer family). Shortly thereafter, he established a network of middlemen to market artwork confiscated by the Nazis from Jewish collections. Kronthal was an eager Quisling, an advisor to Himmler and Goebbels. In fact, their intervention once pried him loose from the Gestapo after he was snared on charges of pedophilia.

His favors to the Nazi Party enriched him, but he was increasingly troubled by Nazi brutality and returned to the States to pursue a graduate degree at Harvard. There he befriended James Jesus Angleton, then a Law School freshman and a decade later the CIA's highest ranking Soviet specialist. After the raid on Pearl Harbor, Kronthal and Angleton offered themselves to the Office of Strategic Services (OSS). Kronthal was assigned to Switzerland's Berne Station under Allen Dulles, whose family, like the Speyers, had conducted business with the Nazis as Hitler ascended to power.

After the war Kronthal was assigned to the recovery of art plundered by the Nazis. Millions of paintings and antiques had disappeared. Some of these had made their way to Switzerland and flooded the galleries, sold to finance the rearmament of Germany in the 1930s—with Kronthal's assistance—and the postwar ambitions of leading Nazis. By 1942 galleries of Zurich, Madrid, Laussanne, New York and elsewhere were glutted with plundered artwork, sold at a fraction of their true worth. .

Sol Chaneles, former chairman of the Department of Criminal Justice at Rutgers University, notes that "countless objects can probably be found today in the homes of friends and relatives of Nazi and Nazi authorized art dealers where they were stored 'temporarily.' But the Nazis kept precise, detailed records of their pillage. Incomplete though they are, the records that survive list some 12 million individual items." A postwar inventory by the U.S. Army's Monuments, Fine Arts and Archives Division (MFA&A) counted 16 million pieces, but to date a full inventory has not been attempted.

Following the Anschluss—Germany's annexation of Austria on March 13, 1938—Hitler oversaw the wholesale confiscation of Jewish property, including the great art collections of barons Louis and Alphonse de Rothschild, the priceless paintings and rare volumes of the library belonging to Baron Butmann, and many more. Hitler's invasion of Czechoslovakia in May, 1939 involved the seizure not only of Jewish-owned art, but also the library of Prague University, the holdings of the Czech National Museum, the palaces of the Schwartzenbergs and Collerdos, and the Lobkowicz collections, which included Flemish painter Brueghel's masterpiece, *Hay Harvest.* The best of this loot was shipped to Germany, as were the Habsburg crown regalia from Vienna and the Bohemian crown jewels from Prague.

Raping nations of their cultural heritage not only demoralized conquered states—the reflected glory of pillaged landmarks of civilization lent the Third Reich an aura of grandeur. Having promised the Austrian city of Linz, where he'd attended school, a museum, Hitler demonstrated in the Polish campaign of 1939 how highly the acquisition of precious art rated in his strategic military operations. SS units accompanying the invading Nazi troops, provided with detailed information about the location of dozens of works of art, captured the famous altar by Veit Stoss in Cracow, relocated by the Nazis to Berlin, and the legendary Czartoryski collections of coins and relics, Limoges enamels, and engravings by 15th-century artist Albrecht Durer.

An unknown number of invaluable European artifacts have been stored in American bank and Treasury Department vaults since the war, classified a "national security" secret by the CIA. Only 200,000 of the items on the MFA&A inventory have been returned as restitution, primarily to wealthy German families and countries crushed by the Nazis. The CIA kept its share. A rare exception were the Hungarian crown jewels, found in a German salt mine as WW II wound down, returned in 1978 by order of President Jimmy Carter.

Kronthal succeeded Allen Dulles as head of the Berne station in 1947 under the newly formed CIA, an extremely powerful position that put him in charge of most covert operations in Western Europe. (In the immediate postwar period, most of the CIA's recruits were staunch Nazis, among them Otto Skorzeny, Martin Bormann, Joseph Mengele and Klaus Barbie. In the moral vacuum of cold war realpolitik, they were employed in the importation of drugs, the instigation of foreign coups, the arming of terrorists and death squad training.) Kronthal was given nearly complete authority in the handling of the plundered cultural wealth of Europe.

Unfortunately, Kronthal's pedophilic urgings rendered him vulnerable to blackmail by the Soviet NKVD intelligence service under Lavrenti Beria, and comprehensive information on CIA activities in Europe soon flowed from Berne to Moscow Center. In 1952 Kronthal returned to Washington to assist in the reorganization of the Agency. A year later he met secretly with his former Berne handler, Allen Dulles, the newly appointed Director of Central Intelligence. The subject of discussion is not known. The next day, Kronthal's housekeeper entered his bedroom to find him dead, an apparent suicide.

"The death was quickly hushed up," according to late CIA operative William Corson. The Washington police force was called in "to cover up what the CIA wanted hidden.... A chemical analysis failed to determine the cause of death or the contents of the vial found next to Kronthal's body."

Among the secrets that Kronthal took with him were details of the network established by the nascent CIA for recovering art stolen from the Jews of Europe.

Another was the way the U.S. freely helped itself to the confiscated art. As early as 1941, the Treasury Department had laid claim to German assets. A cover story was circulated that the booty was intended as a buffer against inflation in postwar Europe and South America. Secretly, according to Christopher Simpson, author of *Blowback,* the early CIA (signed into existence by Truman in 1947) drew from Treasury's vaults of spoils to finance covert operations abroad.

The first transfer of "black currency" from the "Exchange Stabilization Fund" to the CIA was laundered through a miz-maze of bank accounts to influence Italian politics in 1947. The nexus in the handling of the loot was Cardinal Francis Spellman (the "Back Door to the Vatican" and a notorious pedophile), who claimed that the $10 million windfall was a donation to the Church's holy war on Communism. The profits of Jewish genocide thus ended up, Simpson wrote, with "clerics and other leaders who were themselves closely tied to Fascist rule."

In 1963 a newspaper in Graz, Italy caught wind of the transfers and reported that "valuables of gruesome origin, and worth millions, have vanished without a trace. Other millions of mysterious origin showed up in the possession of former leaders of the Nazi Party and the SS. Even more bloodstained money is now said to have been spent on an obscure rescue mission of which a high Vatican official was reputed to be the leader."

A rare instance of restitution occurred early in the war by spies of the

Special Liaison Unit, an Anglo-American group established in Bermuda. W.S. Zuill, editor of Bermuda's *Royal Gazette,* wrote in 1973 that the intelligence operation had been set up to intercept traffic between the U.S. and Europe. "Large numbers of experts and linguists moved into the Princess and Bermudiana hotels and their work exposed German spies already 'in place' in the United States," he reported. "Art treasures stolen by the Nazis in France and shipped through neutral ports to be sold in New York for Hitler's war machine were confiscated. In one case, the American Export Lines ship *Excalibur* carried valuable paintings in a sealed strong room. When the captain refused to open it, the British burned it like safecrackers, took the paintings and stored them in the Bank of Bermuda vaults until they could be returned to the Paris owner, who got all 270 of these Impressionist works back intact, to his own considerable astonishment."

Another caché of stolen paintings, rivaling any collection in the world, was discovered on April 7, 1945 by a contingent of officers of the Army's 90th Division, stored by the Nazis in a vault 2,100 feet underground. The vault lay at the bottom of Kaiseroda mine, near Merkers, Germany's geographical center. A huge hoard of treasure was discovered at the bottom of the mine, including gold valued at an excess of $238,000,000. About 400 tons of paintings and sculpture were found in a tunnel chiseled in the dry subterranean salt rock. The art had been looted from 15 German museums, including works by Rembrandt, Titian, Renoir and Durer. The art was priceless, but the most interesting piece discovered in the bowels of Kaiseroda was a 3,000 year old statuette of Nefertiti, the Egyptian queen, the most valuable work of art in all of Germany. Also found were the Goethe collection of Weimar and two million books confiscated in Berlin.

The art caché was sufficiently interesting to entice General Eisenhower, then the Supreme Commander of the Allied Expeditionary Forces, to Merkers, accompanied by General Omar Bradley and General Patton. Patton counted the stars on the uniforms of his companions as the elevator plummeted through the mineshaft. A half-mile beneath the surface, the party stepped into the gloom. Eisenhower was awed by the stacks of paintings lining the tunnel walls. But Patton, not exactly a connoisseur, was bored by the whole affair. Most of the paintings, he grumped in his memoirs, "were the type normally seen in bars."

The hoard was inventoried and loaded into 32 trucks for transfer to Munich for storage. The convoy was accompanied by five infantry and two machine gun platoons, ten anti-aircraft units and air cover. Yet a rumor has persisted for many years that one of the trucks managed to slip off in the night with a full load of gold or artwork.

Francis Taylor, wartime director of New York's Metropolitan Museum of Art, argued vehemently that "the contents of the Merkers mine should be treated as booty," and liberated by the U.S. Army. "The controversy over the Merkers' treasures raged," Chaneles wrote in *Art & Antiques* in

1987, "amidst persistent rumors that both senior U.S. officers and OSS personnel were involved in theft from the Munich repository. Thousands of ounces of gold are apparently missing along with hundreds of millions of dollars in cash and untold numbers of valuable works of art. All the records pertaining to the Merkers inventory and military intelligence reports concerning theft by U.S. Army officers and OSS personnel were later classified by the CIA, and so they remain to this day."

Patton died six months after his inspection of the Merkers mine, the cause of death an embolism resulting from a traffic accident. This was the same day he had informed General Hobart Gay that he wanted the "bastards" behind the theft turned over the the Criminal Investigation Division. "I don't want anybody ever to say that sonovabitch Patton had stolen any part of it," he told Gay. The share of the plunder that disappeared under guard of Patton's Third Army was worth $5 billion in today's currency. It has never been recovered.

At a salt mine in Alt Aussee, another 100,000 paintings, many by old masters, were discovered by the Allies. Also found were a fortune in prints, drawings, sculptures and books. About 7,000 of the paintings had been chosen by Hitler for transfer to the museum he planned on opening in Linz, Austria.

In June, 1990 some of the priceless works from the Alt Aussee mine surfaced in Whitewright, Texas, near the Oklahoma border. "It was one of the world's greatest art thefts," according to Florentina Mutherich, former deputy director of Munich's Institute for Art History. Joe Meador, an art lover and Army officer of the 87th Armored Field Artillery Division in 1945, was widely considered to be the culprit. The division had been ordered to guard the art, including a medieval manuscript, *The Four Gospels,* bound in gold and silver, which was among the disappearing works and "rare beyond belief," according to London art historian Richard Camber in the *New York Times.* Meador also absconded with the gold crucifixes of ostentatiously pious ninth and tenth century German emperors, and a small silver reliquary inlaid with gems. The pelf was recovered by West Germany's Cultural Foundation of the States, which paid a "finder's fee" of $3 million to an American dealer's attorney for the pieces, with a proviso that the American's name remain anonymous.

The loot has, like a multitude of bad pennies, surfaced in some unexpected places: the famed *Boy Blowing Bubbles* by Jean Baptiste Chardin, for instance, turned up in the possession of the Metropolitan Museum of Art. In 1987 at least five paintings hanging at the Met were identified as Nazi confiscations. Other paintings at the Metropolitan snatched from the Holocaust and European occupations, as reported by the *New York Times* on November 24, 1987, included *Man with a Bulbous Nose* by Adrian Brouwer, "Young Woman Reading" by Fragonard, and Eugene Delacroix's *Lion Attacking a Snake.*

The Metropolitan bought the paintings from Wildenstein & Company in New York, a Jewish art dealer. The history of the acquisitions was cleverly obscured: the museum neglected to mention the Delacroix in its catalog of holdings, and a historical account of the Fragonard glossed over seizure by the Nazis. However, one catalog entry did mention that Chardin's *Boy Blowing Bubbles* once hung in the "Fuhrer Museum" at Linz, and a forty year old museum publication reports that the painting still bore "the labels of the Einsatzstab Rosenberg, the German looting organization."

Officials of the Metropolitan have since claimed that the Chardin was legally purchased from the heirs of Fritz Mannheimer, a Jewish banker who fled Stuttgart when Hitler assumed power and settled in Amsterdam. (The Nazis destroyed Mannheimer's Dutch bank, whereupon he perished of a heart attack. From his creditors the SS purchased the collection at a fraction of its worth, threatening to confiscate it as enemy property if they refused the offer.)

Dr. Chaneles offers another explanation: "Leading art dealers and galleries in the occupied nations collaborated with the Nazi art experts. In Paris, Wildenstein's facilities served as a depository for objects eventually transferred to Hitler, Goering and Bormann. The company prospered immensely during the war."

Jeremy Epstein, an attorney for Wildenstein & Co., countered that allegations of Nazi collaboration were "ridiculous," since the family fled Europe before the war and lost scores of paintings to the Germans. He failed to mention, however, that before the Wildensteins decamped, Roger Dequoy, an employee, was entrusted with management of the gallery.

The Germans were given preference in the acquisition of paintings stored there. Martin Bormann, "Hitler's Mephistopheles," authorized the purchases, made in Hitler's name with stolen funds. Far from bullying the art dealers and cultural authorities of Paris, Hitler was uncharacteristically solicitous to assuage the resentment of the French people. Two weeks after the occupation, Field Marshal Wilhelm Keitel issued an order to safeguard the art treasures of Paris, "especially the Jewish property," until Hitler's representatives could examine the art and cart off the pick of the lot.

Met officials should have been better informed, because it was Francis Taylor, museum director, who in 1944 founded and led the MFA&A art recovery unit under an Executive Order signed by Roosevelt. Taylor's ranking field agents were assigned to the OSS (under Kronthal) and they became privy to intelligence on Nazis dealing in looted art on the black market.

Taylor's organization soon abandoned any aim of making restitution to victims of Nazi atrocities, however, and much of the art was spirited away to American vaults. The seizure of the art by the U.S. prompted Sumner Crosby, a French scholar serving with Taylor in the OSS art recovery operation, to resign from the unit in September 1945. "He learned," writes

Robin Winks in *Cloak & Dagger,* "that the United States Government was bringing from Germany art objects for storage and display.... Crosby and many others viewed this decision as a slap in the face to the various MFA&A officers in Germany, and they also suspected it was an effort to appropriate for American art galleries the very objects d'art that had just been rescued from Nazi hands."

The collected cultural spoils of Germany had piqued the interest of American politicians and military leaders. President Truman sent a representative from the National Gallery to the Army's art repository in Weisbaden (the former headquarters of Goering's Luftwaffe) to make arrangements to ship 202 of the collection's finest paintings to Washington. The officers at Weisbaden were appalled. They sent a protest to Gen. Lucius Clay, the high commissioner of Germany's American zone, decrying Truman's order as morally untenable.

Walter Farmer, an architect from Cincinnati and the ranking American officer at the Weisbaden collection point, wrote to his wife: "This is the first time that America has stolen the cultural heritage of another country. We are no less and no better than the Germans."

Taylor's "Art Commandos" retained as a consultant Ernst "Putzi" Hanfstangl, director of a Munich's Alte Pinakothek Museum, formerly one of a group of art experts who advised Hitler on Jewish-owned galleries and private collections worth plundering. "Putzi" was an American born, transatlantic socialite and Nazi spy. He'd attended Harvard with Roosevelt, resettled in Germany, and partially financed Hitler's early political career with funds from wealthy friends on Wall Street. Hitler's first printing press was purchased by Hanfstangl with American money.

"Putzi" returned to the U.S. in the mid 30s, covering as an art dealer, and established a network of Nazi cells in travel bureaus across the country. Among them was the New York branch of the Hamburg-American steamship line, directed by George Bush's maternal grandfather, George Herbert "Bert" Walker. Hamburg-American financed scores of Nazi propaganda efforts in 1930s America. The company was seized by the American government in 1942 under the Trading with the Enemy Act. Hanfstangl, threatened with deportation, was taken under wing by then Assistant Secretary of War John J. McCloy (a postwar CIA director), and quartered at Fort Myer, headquarters of the Washington garrison, comfortably housed as an honored guest of the government.

After the war, Hanfstangl resettled in Germany to assist the CIA/MFA&A art "restitution" program as director of Alte Pinakothek. In exchange, paintings taken from the museum by the U.S. were returned. The paintings had originally been given to Hanfstangl as Nazi plunder during 1943–44.

The Fine Arts unit was disbanded in 1951. Untold thousands of paintings were turned over to German officials, many of them Nazi Party veterans accused or convicted of wartime atrocities.

Current Affairs $12.95

WARNING!

Psychic Dictatorship in the U.S.A. is sure to shatter the casual reader's most comfortable delusions.

Bombing minds rather than bodies is the warfare of the new millennium. Alex Constantine's explosive book uncovers the terrifying extent of electromagnetic and biotelemetric mind control experimentation on involuntary human subjects in America today. Funded under the euphemism of "Non-Lethal Technology," the Pentagon has developed the ability to transmit voices, and inflict pain, madness, even death, with the push of a button.

Hard to believe? Believe it! Official sources have publicly admitted to the existence of such technology.

Psychic Dictatorship tracks the use of cults by intelligence organization as "cover" for arms sales, mind control and even child abuse to create assassins with multiple personality syndrome. The late actor River Phoenix was the most conspicuous victim of the Children of God cult, which preached sex between adults and children while collaborating with South American dictators.

Psychic Dictatorship's wide-ranging contents veer from the esoteric to the everyday. A stunning chapter investigates the history and effects of the artificial sweetener Nutrasweet, and its role in the dumbing of America.

Alex Constantine is the author of *Blood, Carnage and the Agent Provocateur* (about the L.A. riots) and a forthcoming book about the role of Non-Lethal Technology in the O.J. Simpson case. Mr. Constantine also contributes to *L.A. Weekly, Hustler, and Prevailing Winds* magazine, and provides radio commentary for KAZU-FM in Monterey, California.

"The best political conspiracy researcher and the most important investigative work in the country." —Will Robinson and Marilyn Colman, producers of the late Mae Brussell's *World Watcher International*, political conspiracy program, KAZU-FM.

ISBN 0-922915-28-8

51295>

9 780922 915286

Illustration by Frank Kozik
Design by Linda Hayashi

A Feral House book

Joachim Hagopian

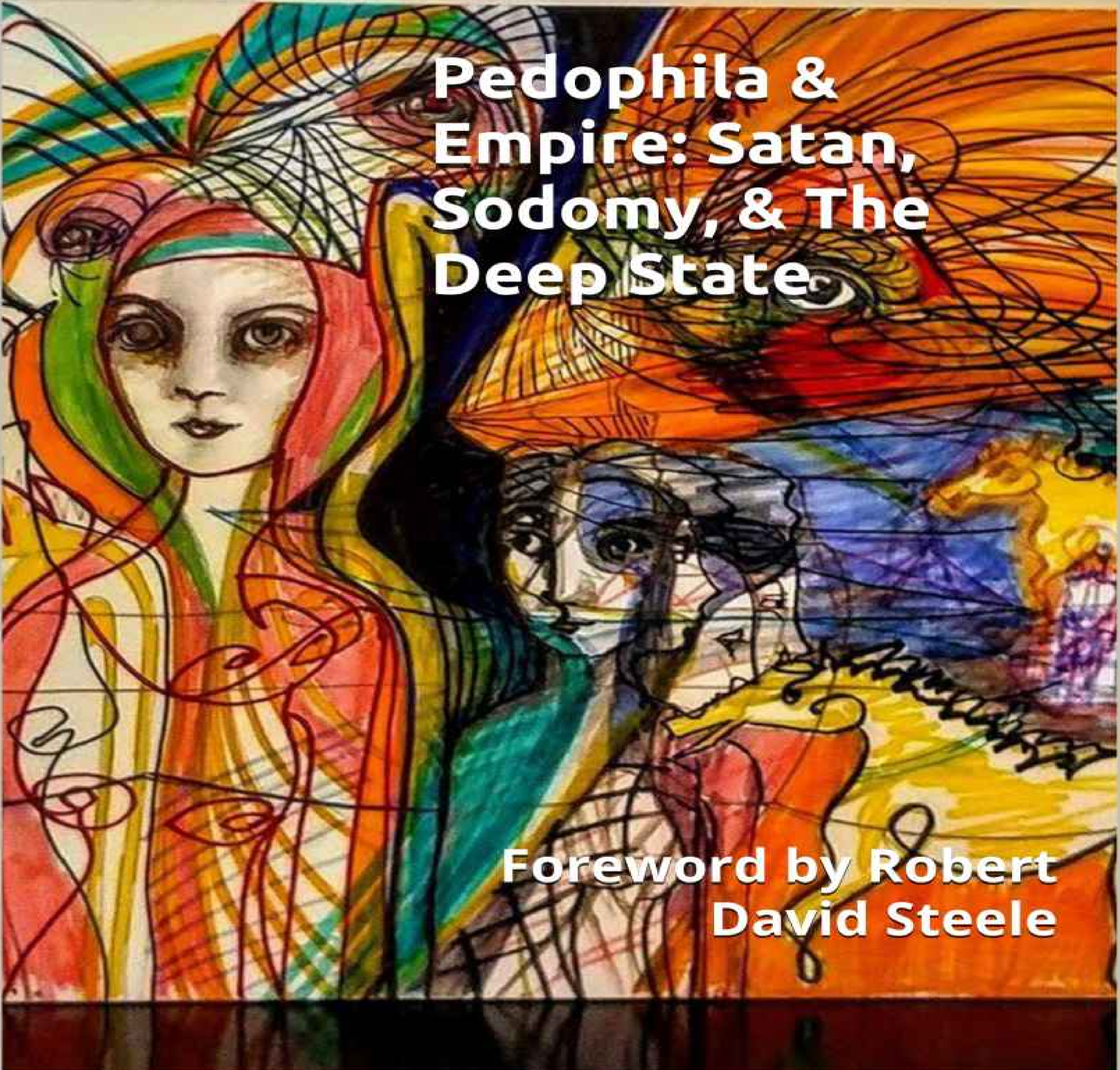

Pedophila & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Foreword by Robert David Steele

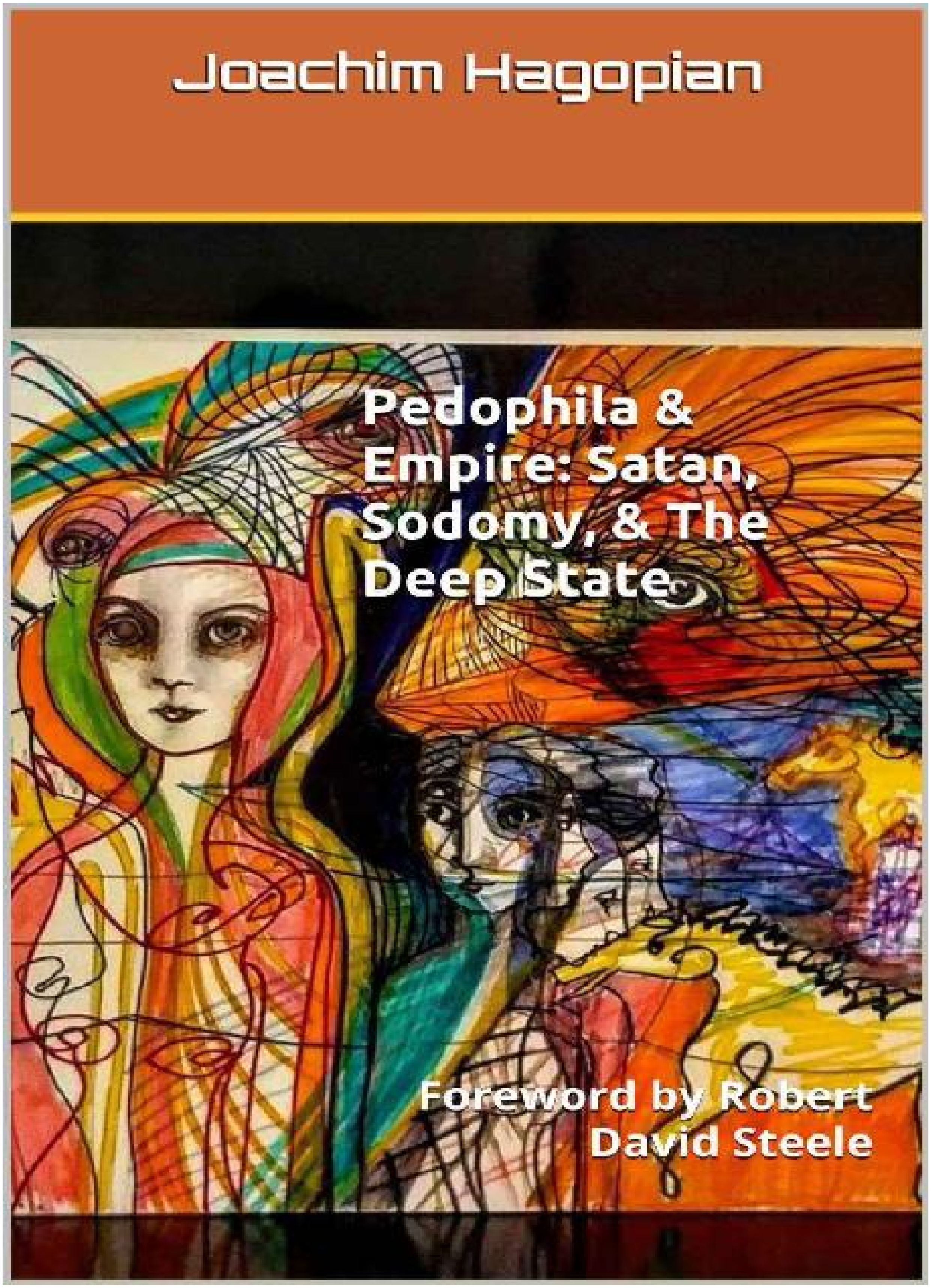

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophila & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Foreword by Robert David Steele

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & the Deep State

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission

http://www.noramaccoby.com/

Robert David Steele

Foreword

Although I have been a spy for my country – a clandestine operations officer or case officer for the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) – and am very familiar with blackmail, bribery, and the assorted perversions that common at all levels of society from the wealthiest elite to the basest rogues in the gutters and slums – it was not until recently that I have realized that every aspect of our government, economy, and society is controlled by a Satanic elite using a Deep State construct to manage all people, all corporations, all property, all land, and even all social conventions including the legalization of homosexuality and (had Hillary Clinton been elected) the legalization of bestiality and pedophilia.

The Deep State begins with the Rothschild family and their centuries-old genius in bribing monarchs and later parliaments and other forms of legislature into allowing them to literally own and control the central banks of all countries. The Federal Reserve in the USA is neither federal nor a reserve. It is a “front” for the Rothschild family and their assigns. In combination with the City of London and Wall Street, the central banks are the means by which every political-legal, socio-economic, ideo-cultural, techno-demographic, and natural-geographic condition is controlled Of, By, and For a tiny elite – 1% of 1%.

The Rothschild family is joined by the Black Pope, the Superior General of the Society of Jesus (the Jesuit order), and other elements of the Vatican (the Catholic Church) often far beyond the control of the White Pope, the nominal head of the Catholic Church. In the case of the Jesuits, their power has come from being the confessors and counselors to monarchs and mandarins for centuries, in one of the most complex sustained clandestine operations of global scope ever achieved, and from their control of trade in drugs and gold alongside the East India Company and its now infamous Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank controlled by the Rothschilds.

The Freemasons and the Knights of Malta are among the two most important secret societies that serve as transnational – which is to say, without national allegiance of any kind – consiglieri and “fixers” able to achieve any desired outcome at any level of any organization.

Using a mix of bribery and blackmail, the elite control every government, generally by sustaining a “two-party tyranny” that blocks seventy percent of the eligible voters – and candidates from small parties or candidates who wish to be independent – from ballot access. The politicians, together with senior bureaucrats hand-picked to be

Freemason or Knights of Malta or merely hired hands, and most particularly, senior executives of the secret intelligence services able to spy on and then blackmail politicians, judges, and celebrities, comprise “the best of the servant class” in this construct. Mind control, begun and used in the 1950’s and far advanced today, is the special purview of the secret intelligence services.

Pedophilia is generally understood to be about the rape of children by adults – children as young as two to four years old. Many children abused by pedophiles have been kidnapped and sold into slavery, and many have also been bred – from birth to sale – for pedophilia.

In the USA, although the Catholic Church and it pedophile priests – roughly ten percent of the total priestly population – have been known to a major enabler and cover-up of pedophilia – pedophilia is in fact very widespread across all demographic and religious groups, but generally trending at the elite level where it is considered a “privilege” of elite status, one that can be enjoyed with impunity as long the Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI) and 18,000 individual law enforcement jurisdictions continue to dishonor all of us by ignoring this scourge. One law enforcement organization, the Los Angeles County Sheriff’s Department – with arguably the highest percentage of elite pedophiles in the county within its jurisdiction – actually has a pedophilia symbol on its badge.

Pizzagate and Pedogate, rooted in the discovery by a Romanian taxi driver of many emails to and from John Podesta that contain clear references to pedophilia in all its forms – from art to swimming parties with children by name as “special guests” – helped expose pedophilia to a much broader audience of Internet-savvy citizens. It’s impact on public consciousness has been far greater than the Boy’s Town scandal in Nebraska documented in Nick Bryant’s book

The Franklin Scandal: A Story of Powerbrokers, Child Abuse & Betrayal (Trine Day, 2012), or the Boston Catholic Church scandal covered by the movie "Spotlight." While somewhat reminiscent of the White House and Congressional pedophilia scandals centered on Speaker of the House Dennis Hastert (R-IL-14), for the first time the public began to realize that pedophilia is pervasive across both the Republican and the Democratic political leadership.

The arrest and conviction of Jeffrey Epstein, a Mossad agent and fake billionaire whose assignment has been to lure as many US politicians, judges, and celebrities as possible to his "Lolita Island" in the Caribbean (or "no name" hotels in Washington, DC and New York City) so as to get them on video tape doing terrible things to children of both sexes, was a major but largely covered up window into how pedophilia pervades every aspect of Wall Street as well as Washington and Hollywood.

Now here is what is not yet being properly covered:

First, that close to one million children a year go missing across the USA every year.

Second, that beyond pedophilia lie Satanic murder rituals in which children who have been kidnapped or bought into slavery or exported from Haiti by the Clinton Foundation and its surrogates and others, are tortured and murdered with impunity.

Third, that the drinking of adrenalized child's blood – blood is adrenalized when the victim is tortured and terrified before death – think of the Chinse boiling dogs alive to adrenalize the blood and "improve" the flavor of the meat – is the ultimate pedophile "high." Silicon Valley's Peter Thiel is on record as receiving transfusions of children's blood. This is legal – and a stark confirmation of what the elite have known for centuries.

A final form of child exploitation appears to be rooted in the secret US Government programs substituting children for chimpanzees and black people as subjects for medical experimentation and long-range space missions – disposable children!

How we treat children, in my view, defines us as a society. I am gravely concerned by the decades long endeavor of the elite to dumb-down and fatten-up the population, weaponizing food and medicine to produce millions of people who are less able to think critically, less able to move with agility, and less able to be effective citizens in what should be, but is not, a democracy.

Around the world pedophilia is a scourge. The United Kingdom stands out as the worst of the Western countries, where members of the Royal Family and Parliamentary leaders including a former Prime Minister are clearly deeply immersed in both sodomizing children as well as murdering them and drinking their blood. Many other countries, such as Saudi Arabia, treat children as commodities that can be abused and traded and murdered with impunity.

I find it particularly troubling that the annual report on human trafficking by the US Department of State is so mediocre, lacking in substantive data and being more of a comic book narrative than a serious report. Indeed, it can be said that not only is the USA among the worst in terms of practice, it is also – along with the UK – the top funder of human trafficking and trade in body parts and bone marrow transplants and other forms of mutilating and exploiting the soon to be dead bodies of children. Separately, the enslavement of children, women, and men – generally of color – is thriving.

There are a number of published books on pedophilia and the author is to be commended for not only have extraordinary linked endnotes – the mark of both a responsible academic and a serious investigative journalist – but he has also compiled a bibliography of major works spanning the range from child abuse to slavery to sexual torture to Satanic ritual murder to the use of children's blood, body parts, and bone marrow as anti-aging tonics for the elite who can kill others with impunity that they might be refreshed.

This is the real world. It is time we all understood that this is the real world. Public understanding of the scourge of pedophilia in all its forms is a useful starting point for restoring dignity, integrity, and justice to our various governments and institutions. The Deep State – from central banks to pedophilia networks – must be put to death.

RD St (ROBERT)

Robert David Steele

Robert David Steele is a former Marine Corps infantry officer and former spy for the Central Intelligence Agency who went on to create the Marine Corps Intelligence Activity, the for-profit company Open Source Solutions, Inc., and the non-profit Earth Intelligence Network. He is the founder of the modern Open Source Intelligence (OSINT) movement and the lead pioneer in the broader field of Open Source Everything Engineering (OSEE). In January 2017 he was recommended for the Nobel Peace Prize. In May 2017 he founded #UNRIG, and was soon joined by Dr. Cynthia McKinney as a co-founder. #UNRIG seeks to destroy the Deep State, restore integrity to the US Government, and thereby eliminate pedophilia, among other ills. He is both a Commissioner for the International Tribunal of International

Justice, and the top Amazon reviewer for non-fiction, reading in 98 categories. He strongly supports a Truth & Reconciliation approach toward the elite, seeking only to restore integrity to the matter in politics, economics, and culture.

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & the Deep State

By Joachim Hagopian

Preface

Foreword by Robert David Steele

Section One: Introduction to Pedophilia

Chapter 1: Pedophilia: The Mental Illness, the Sex Crime and Elite's Political/UN Lobby to Normalize /Legalize

Chapter 2: Pedophilia Bloodlust for Children: Antiquity to Today

Chapter 3: History of Pedophilia Scandals since the 1980's to Present

Section 2: Pedo Foxes Guarding the Henhouse: The Child Kidnapping Network

Chapter 4: Today's Fertile Ground of War Zones for Child, Organ and Arms Trafficking

Chapter 5: The Broken Child Welfare System: CPS, Group Homes, Runaways, Missing Children's Network and the Courts

Section 3: The Satanic Sacrifice of Innocents and the Global Child Sex Trafficking Network

Chapter 6: Government MK Ultra/Monarch Program: Trauma-Induced Mind Control and Sexual Abuse for Super Soldier Assassins, Spies and Sex Slaves

Chapter 7: Satanic Bloodlust as 'Fountain of Youth' Feeding Off Children; Blood Marrow, Organ Harvesting and the

Lifeblood Gold - Adrenalchrome

Chapter 8: PedoGate and Trump’s Anti-pedophilia/Anti-trafficking Policy

Section 4: Pedophilia, NASA Space Program and Extraterrestrials

Chapter 9: Children – Both Kidnapped and Grown from Stem Cells – for Medical Experimentation and “20 Year and Out” Secret Space Colonization Missions

Epilogue

Illuminati Dumbing Down and Depopulation Agenda, Global Populist Movement Resistance and Truth and Reconciliation Commission Seeking to Expose the Satanic Elitist Cabal

Afterword TBD

References with Links

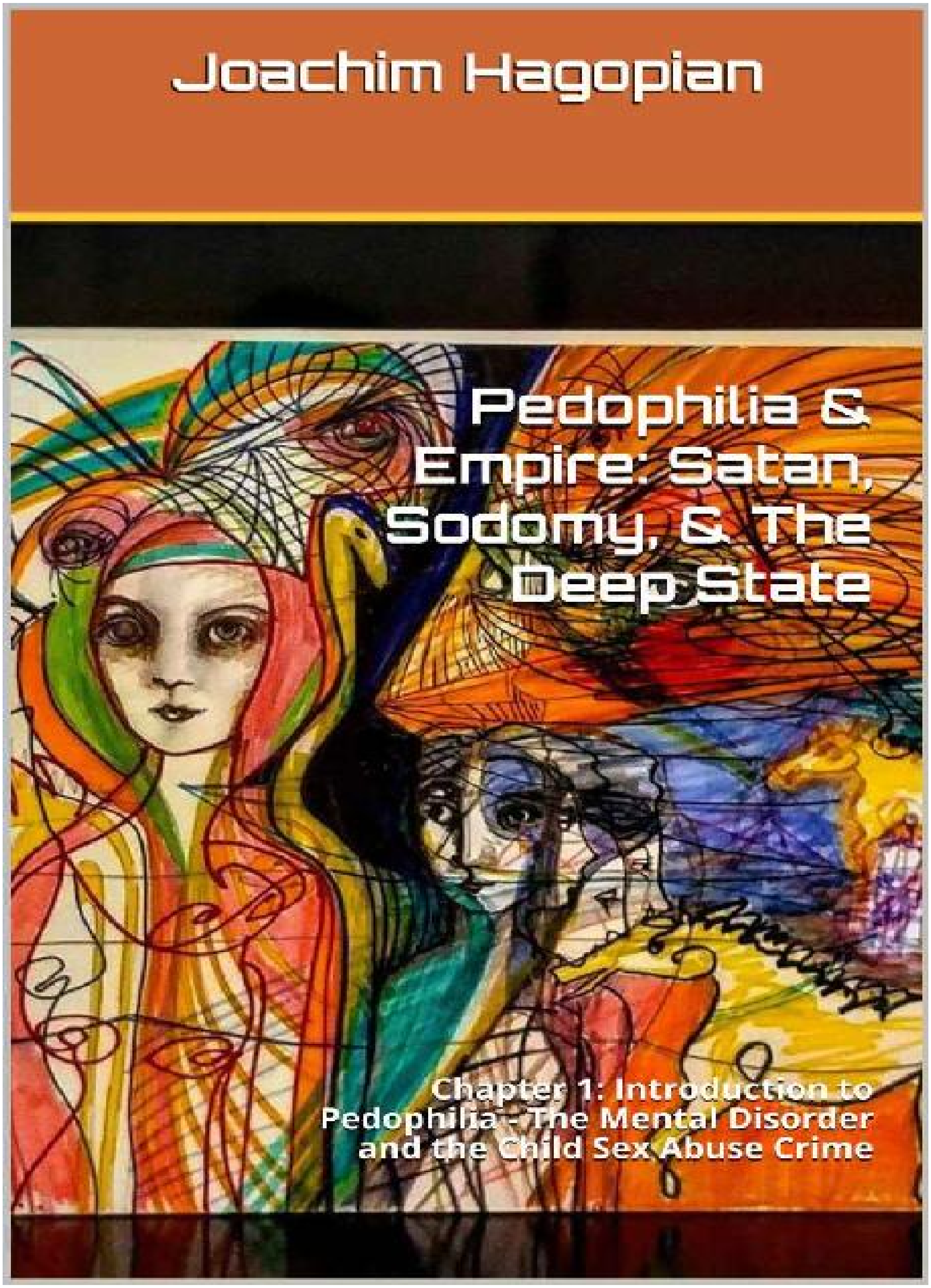

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 1: Introduction to Pedophilia - The Mental Disorder and the Child Sex Abuse Crime

Chapter 1: Introduction to Pedophilia - The Mental Disorder and the Child Sex Abuse Crime

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission

http://www.noramaccoby.com/

Few other words in the English language conjure up such strong value judgments and emotions as the word pedophilia. The word originates from the Greek “paidos” meaning “child” and “philia” signifying “loving.”[1] Because so many common misconceptions exist over what pedophilia is,[2] and since it’s the central controversial topic of this book, the first order of business needs to define what pedophilia actually is, and attempt to shed light on its most frequent misperceptions. Confusion abounds over whether pedophilia constitutes a mental disorder, a psychological condition or malady, or sexual orientation, and how pedophilia as a disorder should be distinguished from the near universally regarded act of child molestation as a legal crime in virtually every nation on earth.[3]

Considered a psychiatric disorder by the American Psychiatric Association (APA) dating back to 1952 with the first edition of its Diagnostic and Statistical Manual (DSM) on Mental Disorders, pedophilia has been included in all four revisions since. According to the latest 5th edition (DSM-5), what was listed in prior DSM’s as pedophilia is now Pedophilic Disorder, falling into the designated paraphilia class of atypical sexual disorders, is the diagnosis assigned to adults who have sexual desire for prepubescent children (deemed 13 years or younger). According to the DSM, the three criteria that must be met in order to diagnose an individual with Pedophilic Disorder are:[4]

- An individual who has had arousing fantasies about, urges for, or behaviors with a prepubescent child or children.

- The individual has acted out these sexual desires, or is experiencing significant distress or difficulty as a result of these desires.
- The Individual is at least 16 years of age, and minimally five years older than the child or children.

By using the words “acted out” in the second criterion above,[5] this generic definition is highly ambiguous since it fails to distinguish between those who act out their sexual desires and impulses through criminal behavior abusing children and those who are attracted to young children but do not act out their desires or urges physically with children. Acting out desires through masturbating and sexually fantasizing about children is not a crime, nor fraternizing and associating with other likeminded pedophiles (unless both are convicted felons). Another ambiguity in the definition of pedophilic disorder fails to distinguish a pedophile who fantasizes while watching child pornography, which itself is a crime, and a pedophile who bodily violates a child sexually. Both are pedophiles committing two separate crimes but obviously the child molestation is a far more severe criminal act that would ostensibly carry a harsher sentence.

However, viewing or engaging in the production or distribution of photos and videos graphically depicting children being brutally molested in the $20-50 billion child pornography industry is definitely a criminal offense.[6] And obviously for the incredible amount of money being made, there must be lots of child porn downloaders committing crimes to feed their sick pedophilic addiction. Inappropriate sexual touching of a child obviously constitutes felonious child abuse. Also a pedophile that profiles children as a predatory stalker awaiting the opportunity to sexually act out prior to the act of molestation is also itself considered a crime. Needless to say, buying and selling children and humans as well as trafficking across state and international borders[7] are despicable crimes and the ones that Illuminati government networks largely operate and control.[8]

So the discerning differential key and society's ultimate challenge to ensure the protection of children is separating the pedophile who acts out criminally as a child predator from others who keep their desires of attraction to their own inner thoughts and are not expressed either through child pornography nor direct contact with children. Since the latter pedophiles are neither criminals nor predators, they do not pose a threat to society. Obviously through the most judiciously legal and fair means, the pedophilic predator perpetrating crimes against children needs to be identified, segregated and removed from society for the sake of securing children's safety. Sexually violent pedophiles (SVP's) that are repeat offenders who clearly cannot control their compulsions to act out against prepubescent children, fully fit the criteria as mentally disordered criminals in need of treatment while posing a clear danger to children for civil commitment at a long-term mental institution.[9]

But when a ruling class has been free to rape and murder children for centuries at will with total impunity,[10] while child sex predators from mostly an underclass are the only pedophiles scrutinized, demonized and put away for life, this obviously is neither a just nor satisfactory solution. Largely to appease growing public alarm and wrath over rampant child sexual abuse globally,[11] the current hypocritical two-tier policy of granting carte blanche for the worst offenders systematically destroying thousands of children's lives each year[12] while a lynch mob vigilante force amongst the panic stricken public is gunning for overkill against those unable to afford dream team legal representation like billionaire Jeffrey Epstein is unacceptable.[13] A decade ago Epstein lawyers browbeat and pummeled down then weak and unethical US prosecutor then rewarded current US Labor Secretary Alexander Acosta to issue the billionaire his sweetheart deal - a get-out-of-jail card,[14] after raping dozens of underage girls while working for Mossad to incriminate dozens of high profile politicians like the Clintons in a blackmail scheme to maintain Zionist control over Washington.[15] That's hardly the answer either. Yet up till now, that's status quo business at the top of the pedo predatory food chain.

A half dozen years ago, 100,000 of the 500,000 registered sex offenders in the United States were reportedly missing and unaccounted for, that's one in five convicted rapists remaining at large,"[16] free to strike again harming yet more innocent victims. And similar or worse situations apparently exist in the UK,[17] Australia[18] and worldwide where no registered list of pedophiles even exist.[19] Despite registries' introduction in the US two decades ago, controversy still lingers over whether state sex offender data banks made public actually defeat their intended purpose. Critics contend that they are the prime driving force causing offenders to go missing while abuse advocates maintain they do increase public child safety. Several studies suggest that sex registration is effective in lowering recidivism but public notification may be increasing crime.[20]

There are several types of pedophiles based on the object of their attraction:[21] those who favor boys only, those attracted to girls only, or those who are attracted to both boys and girls. A common myth holds that a pedophile who abuses boys is a homosexual.[22] Many offenders abuse children of both genders and some are attracted to adult women as well. The designated exclusive type pedophile is only attracted to young children whereas non-exclusive pedophiles are attracted to both children and adults. A number of pedophiles assume "normal" lives, hiding their deep dark secret from even their spouses and families. Still other pedophiles only engage in incest with family members – most often their own children, or stepchildren. Incestuous parents are not always pedophiles either. They may seek sexual gratification with a child in closest proximity for lack of an adult sex partner.[23]

Hebephilia[24] is yet another type of paraphilia that the DSM-5 workgroup tried pushing through as an extension of pedophilia attraction, but reserved for children in pubescence aged 13-14, although some publications maintain a wider 11-14 age range.[25] In any event, it was adamantly opposed by too much resistance within the psychiatric and psychology fields that are unwilling to declare a mental disorder for having sex with puberty aged kids that culturally and biologically are developing sexually faster these days having already arrived at childbearing years. The *Psychiatric Times* lambasted the DSM committee for even considering the proposal, citing the sexual allure of the Calvin Klein ads using models in puberty as well as a reminder that the historic age of sexual consent around the world (even the US) until recent times had been 14 as reasons not to classify it as a mental disorder.[26] The article author, Dr. Allen Frances, openly admits that adult [men] lusting after 13- and 14-year old adolescent girls is perfectly normal, though still a crime to physically act on.

If hebephiliac was listed in DSM-5 as a mental disorder, forensic psychiatry that provides expert witness court testimony in child molestation trials would have been directly impacted, potentially putting hebephiles away for life in mental institutions. Adults having even consensual sex with a 17-year old is committing a statutory rape crime in most US states. Thus prison time for adult defilers of early adolescents is still the legal consequence, with or without the hebephilia diagnosis. In the end, due to such stiff opposition and heated controversy, the DSM workgroup chose to forego making “hebephiliac disorder” yet another official diagnostic entry. But in another article Dr. Frances alludes to some sneaky fine print in DSM-5 pertaining to a pedophilia definition that includes arousal from “prepubescent or early pubescent children.”[27] This mental disorder loophole imposes the forensic concern of having to commit sexually violent pedophiles (SVP’s) [i.e., a convicted rapists of early adolescents] confined to a mental institution the rest of their lives. Dr. Frances objects on both ethical and constitutional grounds that according to him in nearly all cases the rape offender of a pubescent aged adolescent does not suffer from a mental sexual disorder and therefore does not warrant a lifetime sentence in an insane asylum, believing it would be a travesty of justice. Of course with far more conviction, the same can be said for the raped pubescent girl or boy, regardless of the offender’s length of stay at either a prison or mental institution.

The American Psychiatric Association committee that published the DSM-5 in 2013 also came under heavy fire when it initially described Pedophilic Disorder as “a sexual orientation,”[28] or “sexual preference,” immediately interpreted by many conservatives as a transparent attempt by the liberal left to legalize and normalize the act of pedophilia, a salient topical and pressing issue[29] that will be addressed in the next chapter. Despite APA’s poor choice of words initially, in no way is pedophilic disorder simply a lifestyle choice or volitional preference. Understandably, critics charged the APA with intentionally trying to normalize, decriminalize and otherwise minimize the heinous criminality perpetrated by pedophilic disordered child rapists. The APA was forced to quickly change its online DSM wording, but too late for hardbound press, replacing the word “preference” with the word “interest,” accompanied by a public statement retracting its questionable choice of diction as “an error,”[30] and reiterating the serious nature of child molestation and child sex abuse as a felony crime committed by pedophile offenders.

A common misperception is to believe that pedophilia is the same as child molestation.[31] Pedophilia is the deviant condition of being attracted to young children, not the criminal act in and of itself. But here is perhaps the least understood fact of all - not all pedophiles are child rapists. Some never act out their desires through physical contact with minors. A leading pedophilia researcher, Dr. James Cantor, believes that a large majority of pedophiles never offend against children.[32] Another researcher, Dr. Hubert Van Gijseghem, states that many experts maintain that only 20% of sexual abusers are pedophiles.[33] If these experts are correct, many law abiding pedophiles are being wrongly persecuted by millions in society out of ignorance who simply lack accurate information and truth. It’s always easier to possess strong empathy for child victims than it is for adults who are different, misunderstood and unjustly scapegoated. A support organization and website called Virtuous Pedophiles helps pedophiles who agree that harming children sexually is reprehensible and support each other’s resolve not to act on their attraction. They resist the temptation and many of them pose no threat or danger to children.[34] From the website - “Yet we are despised for having a sexual attraction that we did not choose, cannot change, and successfully resist.”

As alluded to by both research findings and the quote above, pedophilia is an unalterable condition, a biological predisposition that one is born with. Hence, the consensus amongst researchers is that pedophilia is indeed a sexual orientation from birth, similar to homosexuality, which up until a few decades ago was also deemed a mental disorder.

Pedophilic disorder manifests as an onset in males at puberty.[35] Though according to US Justice Department, 96%

of pedophile offenders reported to law enforcement in 1999 were male,[36] other studies have found that as many as 20% of the offenders of young boys were actually female and 5% offending girl victims were women.[37] Child sexual molestation perpetrated by adult women also tends to be less reported since society grants the nurturing bond of maternal love a far wider parameter when it comes to physical contact with children, reinforced by the common misperception that virtually all child rapists must be men.

Another factor making boy victims of adult women far more sensationalized in the media and different from girls molested by men is illustrated in the classic teacher-boy child relationship - the common myth that a 13 or 14 year old male is not a victim at all, but just the opposite - a fortunate beneficiary experiencing his “rite of passage” compliments of the mature “hot babe” who shows him the sexual ropes.[38] This theme’s often been exploited by the “Mrs. Robinson affair” in films like “The Graduate” and “The Summer of ’42” as well as illuminated by the infamous 20 year old case of former teacher Mary Kay Letourneau’s scandalous affair and marriage with her onetime 12-year old student turned longtime husband and father of her two youngest children, now their young adult daughters.[39]

On the other hand, male survivors of early child sexual abuse in a very real way have a more difficult time coping with sexual trauma.[40] The “macho male” conditioning that pressures males to always feel the need to be in control as the “stronger” of the two sexes, never allowing themselves to be vulnerable or shed tears for fear of being perceived as weak, this societal brainwash acts as heavy gender baggage that makes successfully working through sexual trauma all that much more of a challenge, compounded by the reality that males are far less apt to even seek help through support groups or therapy,[41] much less even confide in disclosing past abuse to others. Older abused boys and men are far more prone to acting out their internal anger and shame through violence toward self through suicide, or becoming drug addicts, or violence directed toward others, ending up in prison, potentially committing even rape and murder in a maladjusted desperate attempt to regain a feeling of control over their body and lives. Fear of being judged gay or a child molester keeps males from admitting they've ever been sexually abused.

With a mental health career spanning over a quarter century, I can vouch for the emotional scars causing child abuse victims to typically struggle with chronic low self-esteem, shame, self-loathing and self-blame, suicidal impulses, and severe lack of trust issues carried over into adulthood that manifest through major barriers in forming healthy intimate love relationships as well as creating work related problems.[42] The longitudinal effects of unresolved childhood trauma become a lifetime sentence and never-ending burden that victims take to their early graves twenty years ahead of their non-abused peers.[43] Even 17 years after a single sexual assault, one in six adult victims were found to still suffer from PTSD symptoms of flashbacks, nightmares and anxiety years later.[44] An extremely young fragile child victimized by sexual trauma at such an early developmentally formative, critical stage can rarely fully recover.

A cursory glance at the rising suicide rates across all generations, but especially amongst children, the highest in 30 years,[45] along with institutional trauma settings such as hospitals, women's shelters, courts and prisons, all give sobering pause, contemplating the devastating impact that child sexual abuse around the world ravages. Meanwhile, because this same world has failed so miserably to protect our children, each child rapist has been allowed to keep destroying hundreds of more innocent lives – 260 on average – before getting caught.[46] With children our future, we absolutely must stop this egregious, self-replicating cycle from exponentially destroying the fate of humanity that’s now hanging in the balance. Our pretending this global epidemic threatening the future of humanity doesn’t really exist by simply keeping our heads in the sand because child rape is just too emotionally overwhelming and shocking to even think about is no excuse. Our silence or running away only makes us part of the problem. The purpose of this book is to inform, educate and ultimately empower us to take constructive and decisive action together so that we can collectively end these horrific crimes against children.

The following paragraphs address a few more important statistical facts about pedophilia. Somewhat surprising findings are that near one in four (23%) pedophilic offenders are under 18, meaning that their victims were at least five years younger, and near half at 40% of offenders of victims under age 6 were juveniles themselves and 39% of the reported cases involving victims aged 6-11 were committed by juveniles.[47] With the typical male offender already molesting children by age 15, three out of four convicted pedophile rapists are under the age of 35. Highly correlated with the breakdown of the American nuclear family unit,[48] as far back as the mid-1980’s a dramatic spike was observed in the number of cases involving kids raping kids.

Younger child victims are very rarely molested by strangers (under age 6 only 3% and 6-11 only 5%) as 89% of all child sexual assault cases involve acquaintance relationships such as caretakers or family members.[49] Another important fallacy to understand is even though a small number of child abuse victims become pedophilic perpetrators, an overwhelming percentage of both male and female pedophiles were sexually abused as children.[50] On a related note, in a 1991 survey of state prison inmates in America, those convicted of raping children were significantly more apt to be child victims themselves than those sexual offenders that victimized adults.[51]

That same 1991 state prisoner survey showed that whites comprised 70% of America's state prison population convicted of child molestation whereas only 40% of those convicted of violent crimes against adults were white. Again from that same study, 2 out of 3 of all the convicted rapists reported that they had included children as their victims as well. The 1991 survey also found that about 10% of violent offenders against child victims received either a lifetime or death sentence yet the average sentence of 11 years for child rapists was less time than the average sentences received by rapists of adults.[52] So raping a child results in less punishment than raping an adult. Again, confirmation that in America less value is placed on the life of an unprotected child than adults. Is it any wonder we're amidst a global epidemic of trafficked in child pedophile victims?

The FBI contends that only 1-10% of all the incidents involving child molestation even get reported to law enforcement.[53] Though an exact percentage cannot be determined, based on anonymous survey studies, an estimated 3-5% of the general population are believed to be pedophiles.[54] Contrast that figure with the percentage of US presidents and Congress members who are pedophiles and that number shoots upwards from a third to a half as estimated by several recent government insiders, though many result from being ensnared by a CIA/Mossad run deceptive pedophile blackmail system that's also been operating worldwide now for numerous decades.[55]

Speaking of Washington's dirty trick politics, in the face of the controversial Pizzagate scandal that broke last year,[56] and many other confirmed documented scandals involving pedophilia and prominent government leaders in recent decades,[57] the now unavoidably recognized major human problem of child sex trafficking and its global implications as a widespread epidemic, make it incumbent upon this ambitious endeavor to offer a sound and accurate introduction to this all profoundly important subject matter that provides a clear and basic understanding of what pedophilia and its worldwide ramifications engender.

After the historic path of homosexuality moving from longtime mental disorder to today's social acceptance as a mere "sexual preference,"[58] and APA's embarrassing "oops" moment in 2013 attempting to likewise slip in pedophilic disorder as a "sexual orientation" and preference, their cultural parallels are now visibly working overtime to destigmatize and normalize pedophilia. With that in mind, a brief look at homosexuality's metamorphosis is relevant. Since 1973's DSM-2, homosexuality was officially removed[59] as a psychiatric mental disorder,[60] having gradually come to be viewed as a normal variant within the normative range of human sexuality, believed to also be predetermined biologically from birth. Its wide acceptance today, especially among younger generations, means that LGBT members can honestly be who they are, no longer forced to live in the closeted shame pretending to be someone they're not fearing harassment and persecution. Though some religions and individuals persist in holding onto sectarian or personal beliefs and moral judgement that engaging in homosexual acts constitute an abnormal, pathological sin, as of June 26th, 2015, the US Supreme Court granted the same legal marital rights to homosexual couples previously reserved only for traditional heterosexual marriage.[61]

As a longtime clinician and licensed Marriage Family Therapist, I agree that homosexuality should not be viewed as sexual deviancy or as a pathological disorder merely because the majority of humans are heterosexual, and that sex between two consenting adults - hetero or gay, is nobody else’s business. In my opinion gay couples or any LGBT combo thereof should be afforded the same basic legal rights and social privileges as married men and women, again affirmed two years ago by the Supreme Court.

But beyond that level of social equality and legal justice, I also maintain that people are entitled their own personal opinion as well as freedom of expression regardless of their particular pro or con position on homosexuality, despite the fact that these days, we’ve seen our First Amendment free speech rights usurped and destroyed by militant Politically Correct Gestapo thought police[62] quietly deployed and backed by the deep state New World Order agenda aggressively attacking our national sovereignty,[63] constitutional rights, our individual sovereignty, religious rights, our family as a sovereign institution along with our parental rights. Everyone, regardless of position, whether socially accepted by consensus or not, has the right to think and speak his or her mind. Sadly, already in the early twenty-first century, America’s disappearing freedoms one by one are being eliminated.[64]

Clearly the ruling elite’s overt agenda, using its go-to formula to divide and conquer[65] is busily creating such dissention, disunity, conflict and turmoil on this planet in order to establish dire enough conditions to facilitate a one world government[66] and one world religion[67] promising to “save us all” in order to completely enslave and control the global masses under a tyrannical centralized system of feudal totalitarianism. As such, the elite’s design is also to ensure that homosexuality, the entire LGBT PC agenda and pedophilia are incessantly infused into one “social justice” movement in the mind of the masses. Following the “success” in recent decades of the elite’s massive social engineering experimentation on humanity,[68] nefariously miseducating and manipulating generations of both males and females with massively blurred gender role and identity confusion,[69] we’re now witnessing a similar propaganda media blitz intending to normalize pedophilia as simply another “benign” life choice, deceptively on the heels of the LGBT movement.[70] Chapter 2 will delve much deeper into this all important topic.

Meanwhile, as mainstream media continues to lie and deny the existence of a global pedophilia epidemic and its extensive child sex trafficking networks operating worldwide,[71] taking delight in calling Pizzagate fake news,[72] the public isn’t buying it, coming to realize that many of our most powerful figures in government[73] on both sides of the Atlantic,[74] in the courts, corporations, banks, military, law enforcement, the intelligence community, communications media and the saturated entertainment industry[75] are either practicing pedophiles of the Luciferian persuasion[76] or are heavily compromised and controlled through the demonic elite’s extensive pedophile blackmail system.[77] The aim of this book is to fully expose this pedophile elite’s very dark, perverse web as the most expedient means to urgently protect our children while bringing down the pedo-crime cabal once and for all.[78]

According to research compiled over two decades ago, it was estimated that 20% of girls and 10% of boys had been sexually victimized as minors.[79] A more recent finding asserts that now one in three girls and one in five boys is sexually molested.[80] Multiple reports are now coming in from around the world, in places like Africa,[81] India[82] and Europe,[83] all confirming that child sexual abuse is surging,[84] including online child pornography,[85] to become a worldwide epidemic today. We must take a decisive stand now to stamp out this growing scourge, first by educating ourselves as to the extent and pervasiveness of the problem, and second by becoming proactive activists committed to positive change that includes taking steps to protect children from further exploitation and abuse, helping victims of all ages heal, while eradicating this malignant network of child rapists operating behind a millennium of sealed off impunity and previously impenetrable power.[86] Through Truth and Reconciliation Commissions, we can unveil the truth to usher in a peaceful revolution that will forever end the pedo-blackmail system that has controlled our politicians over this last century.

As a mental health clinician, I worked closely with hundreds of minors who are mostly incest pedophile victims turned courageous survivors. Drawing from my gratifying years of experience helping to heal emotional wounds of their trauma, I possess a lifelong passion and commitment to do what I can do to help one person at a time to heal this planet from centuries of criminal abuse perpetrated on our most vulnerable and defenseless population. As a therapist I spent way too many trips going to children's court only to not be heard while fighting to protect my child clients from further abuse by a thoroughly broken child welfare system that's failed to keep kids safe for far too long,[87] at times knowingly and willfully endangering youth to suffer additional mistreatment and horror that haunts them for the rest of their lives.

In the same way as a cadet and academy graduate I never endorsed West Point's failed leadership training program that merely produces the most avid order followers and robotic enforcers,[88] as a mental health therapist I never endorsed the sanctity of the Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of mental disorders as "every diagnostician's so called bible."[89] It's neither an accurate nor fair account of classifying mental illness nor categorizing mental disorders, but merely an artificial social and political construct elevated to an undeserving pedestal status, given far too much credence to pseudo-science dogma for sole benefit of the medical and psychiatric establishment and institutionalized hierarchical corruption.[90] In this morally bankrupt system, a few degrees and credentials provide the power differential license to exploit and harm others. Armed with their educational brainwash, far too many psychiatrists, psychologists and therapists are trained to systematically psycho-pathologize and misjudge those perceived in any way “different,” “deviant,” “abnormal,” “pathological,” “crazy,” “insane,” “negative,” or “bad,” as a subgroup of so called mentally ill humans to recklessly conduct unscientific and inhumane experimentation on as their human guinea pigs,[91] with unproven theories and ineffectual dogmatic practices, prescribing harmful, even lethal drugs that straightjacket emotions, and smother symptoms and ultimately the very life out of their patients, never getting to the underlying, buried causes of dis-ease. Overmedicated America has more citizens dying from opioid overdoses than from cars and guns.[92] So Big Pharma’s been spreading its global reach overseas to Eastern Europe, testing new drugs on a whole new population of human guinea pigs to save costs and cut yet more corners on safety.[93]

Moreover, 10 clinicians assessing the same client presenting the same problems/symptoms invariably will come up with 10 different diagnoses based upon each’s own preconceived notions and familiar biases as interrater reliability is zero.[94] What does this tell you? Psychology and psychiatry are not like the natural sciences or even medical science where in the lab and under the microscope certain scientific laws and formulas are precisely consistent, easily replicated, proven and confirmed. But when it comes to the complexity of the human mind, based on a few minutes or even a few hours of behavioral observation, clinically assessing and diagnosing is about as unscientific and subjective as you can get.[95] Consequently, clinicians misdiagnose patients most of the time, and since their entire treatment rests on an accurate diagnosis, patients are mistreated with the wrong drugs that do damage (since psychiatrists are generally owned by Big Pharma as glorified drug pushers).

On top of this blanketed pigeonholing system that gets it wrong so much of the time operating exclusively from a DSM “bible”[96] that with each revision adds scores of “newly discovered” mental disorders so that more human guinea pigs can be drugged for profit,[97] every single psychiatric diagnosis is based solely on a formulaic assessment interview and limited observable behavior (with most shrinks in my experience typically spending all of five to ten minutes per patient). External human behavior is derived from a whole host of internal dynamics based on an interplay of thoughts and feelings drawn from multilayered factors that include sensory input and processing, early childhood conditioning, any past trauma personality, individuality, learned experience, genetics, situational determinants and biochemistry that together at any given moment can act as various causative agents. But relegating everything to a quick biochemical fix is a hit and miss operation that utterly fails to grasp the complexities of the human mind and spirit. The half empty lens of abnormality and impairment is the wrong approach. The glass as half full perspective offers a more positive, strength based, integrative and holistic focus that assists clients build a stronger social support system and produces far better outcomes and prognoses.

Worst of all, the pervasive stigmatization,[98] particularly prone in Western societies, being mislabeled[99] as mentally ill is so far reaching, ethically and morally unjustified and emotionally crippling, it renders whatever small merit the failed psychiatric diagnostic system as not worth the colossal damage caused to millions of people branded with mental illness. That this “convenient” diagnostic classification system has been insidiously co-opted, financially exploited, thoroughly corrupted and diabolically controlled by the cancerous giant pharmaceutical industry[100] known as Big Pharma represents an abhorrent WMD abomination against humanity. It's a total betrayal of the Greek physician and original oath author Hippocrates' axiom "first, do no harm."[101] Finally, pertaining to those afflicted with pedophilia disorder, currently there exists neither an effective drug nor an effective cure,[102] remedy or treatment that eliminates the typically overwhelming compulsions driving so many pedophiles to repeatedly reoffend.

Short of the barbarity of lobotomies (performed rarely if ever now)[103] and surgical castration which ended in 1975, and even chemical castration though female hormonal injection has proven ineffective,[104] none of these treatments alter the hardwiring of the mind that controls what a pedophile is most attracted to, so the fact remains that no treatment has yet been discovered that to any significant degree reduces the high recidivism rates of this condition.[105] According to the California Department of Corrections, over half of all convicted child rapists in the California penal system end up raping more children within a year after their prison release, and within the first two years 77.9% are back behind bars.[106] One statistic even states that over 90% of convicted pedophiles will be arrested again for the same offense after their prison release.[107] Many researchers like Dr. Kantor and his colleague Dr. Michael Seto concur, citing a much lower recidivism rate of just 10-15% for convicted first time offenders.[108] The *Harvard Medical Publications* website reported that one review specifies a much wider range of 10-50%, due to research variance in how recidivism is defined, pointing out that some studies use any previous offense followed by a molestation conviction as recidivism whereas others more aptly choose in their data base only repeated sexual child abuse offenses.[109]

With no actual successful treatment that effectively controls a convicted offender's temptations yet developed to date, I say better to err on the side of precaution and prevention for the sake of saving more children from a life of suffering and despair. Another way of putting it, the danger of high risk pedophiles addictively, habitually acting out their sexual impulses, desires and fantasies by continuing to molest children far outweighs reoffending pedophiles' individual rights to freedom even if they've served their time. Recall the finding that the average convicted pedophile keeps raping children 260 times until he or she gets caught and removed from harming more children.[110]

The fact that so many pedophiles keep repeating their crimes relentlessly until they do get busted and incarcerated means that as a society sooner than later we must urgently do a far better job identifying, apprehending, convicting and removing pedophile criminals from all access to children. From the Illuminati government leaders to the judges to the police to the child protective services to the schoolteachers, priests and pastors, to the coaches, the caregivers down to the incestuous family adults, it's always the pedophile-foxes guarding the defenseless youth henhouses. This is how the global pedophile operation has been allowed to flourish through the ages. But the masses are finally beginning to wake up now. And we will no longer tolerate this evil system devouring and destroying millions of innocents.

For those pedophiles whose condition is less severe and have always managed to control their sexual impulses and never inappropriately touched a child, they need to be commended for maintaining a perfect record of self-control against the odds. It's important to know and understand the plight and struggle of the innocent pedophile too. Despite not harming any kids, just because they are pedophiles who have no choice over their attraction for children, society embodied by the uneducated masses lacking awareness and understanding, is all too eager to play judge and jury in lynch mob mentality to punish them for crimes they never committed. They must hate their life predicament, and often hate themselves because they're so reviled by the culture they live in. As innocent law abiding citizens, their fate is to endure life from the shadows of shame and secrecy with love never fulfilled.[111]

Researchers need to determine how these pedophiles who never hurt children effectively cope with their affliction and begin utilizing their identified strengths and coping skills to treat other pedophiles to discern if true rehabilitation is even possible. Of course those pedophiles with more severe symptoms no doubt will be unable to utilize the same coping skills and interventions that have proven effective for those with less severe cases.

Before closing this introductory chapter, a couple more important points bear brief mentioning here. The plethora of hard facts presented were all based on pedophiles who decades ago had been caught, convicted and serving prison sentences for their crimes against children. During the ensuing years since, child sexual abuse has skyrocketed globally. Additionally, the offenders from those studies and their numbers compiled so long ago were all extracted from the then prison population. US inmates - both then and now - reside in a nation that contains only 5% of the world population yet incarcerates 25% of the planet's prison population[112] with inordinate numbers (59%) of people of brown and black color,[113] preponderantly from lower socioeconomic classes and backgrounds. In contrast, the bulk and thrust of this book's focus centers nearly exclusively on pedophilia amongst the 1% elite population that virtually owns and controls this entire planet, including the international crime cabal government responsible for operating the global trafficking network, raping and murdering hundreds of thousands of child sex slaves each year.

This presentation is intended to shed light on the dark hidden sinister world of the elite. The planet’s most powerful child rapists tell a wholly different story that warrants our attention in the remaining chapters that unveil the diabolical misuse of children to enhance both their physical vitality and strengthen their satanic power ruling over the earth and humanity. At the end an epilogue will lay out the strategic plan that we empowered citizens of the world can implement, designed to both bring down the evil crime cartel and its heinous operation destroying our children. Through both educated awareness and mindfully committed action, light overtakes darkness and goodness prevails over evil.

---

[1] Online Etymology Dictionary, http://www.etymonline.com/index.php?allowed_in_frame=0&search=pedophilia.

[2] “Four Misconceptions about Pedophiles,” *CBC*, Firsthand, March 10, 2016, http://www.cbc.ca/firsthand/features/four-misconceptions-about-pedophiles.

[3] “Child protection from violence, exploitation and abuse: sexual violence against children,” UNICEF, https://www.unicef.org/protection/57929_58006.html.

[4] David Porter, “Pedophilic Disorder DSM-5 302.2 (F65.4),” *Theravive*, https://www.theravive.com/therapedia/pedophilic-disorder-dsm--5-302.2-(f65.4).

[5] Fred S. Berlin, “Pedophilia and DSM-5: The Importance of Clearly Defining the Nature of a Pedophilic Disorder,” *The Journal of the American Academy of Psychiatry and the Law*, 42(2014): 404-07.

[6] Marie Baleo, “The Digital Pedophiles among Us,” *Alternet*, December 16, 2015, http://www.alternet.org/media/digital-pedophiles-among-us.

[7] William Craddock, “Feds Make Record Gains on Human Trafficking as Global Networks Broken up,” *Zero Hedge*, February 16, 2017,

http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2017-02-16/feds-make-record-gains-human-trafficking-global-networks-broken.

[8] Joachim Hagopian, “Ruling Elite’s Pedophile Bloodlust for Children: From Antiquity to Today,” *The Millennium Report*, April 28, 2017, http://themillenniumreport.com/2017/04/ruling-elites-pedophile-bloodlust-for-children-from-antiquity-to-today/.

[9] Megan Testa and Sara G. West, “Civil Commitment in the United States*,”* *Psychiatry* 10(October 2010): 30-40, https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC3392176/.

[10] Joachim Hagopian, http://themillenniumreport.com/2017/04/ruling-elites-pedophile-bloodlust-for-children-from-antiquity-to-today/.

[11] Ludovica Iacchino, “Child Sexual Abuse: Top 5 Countries with the Highest Rates,” *IB Times*, February 13, 2014, (https://uk.news.yahoo.com/child-sexual-abuse-top-5-countries-highest-rates-161245483.html).

[12] David McGowan, *Programmed to Kill: The Politics of Serial Murder* (Bloomington, Indiana: iUniverse, Inc, 2004), 39-40, https://archive.org/stream/DavidMcGowanProgrammedToKill_201603/David-McGowan-Programmed-to-Kill_djvu.txt.

[13] Martin Gould, “Pedophile Jeffrey Epstein is Accused of Luring an Underage Girl into his Elaborate Sex Trafficking Enterprise under the Guise of using his Wealth and Connections to Get her into a Prestige NYC College,” *Daily Mail*, January 27, 2917, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4164082/Pedophile-Jeffrey-Epstein-accused-new-sex-traffick-case.html.

[14] Brandy Zadrozny, “Trump Nominee: Lax Deal for Billionaire Pedo Jeffrey Epstein Was ‘A Good Thing,’” *The Daily Beast*, March 22, 2017, http://www.thedailybeast.com/trump-nominee-lax-deal-for-billionaire-pedo-jeffrey-epstein-was-a-good-thing.

[15] Sam Greenhill, The Prince and the Paedophile: How Andrew Enjoyed Sensual Massages at Sex Offender Friend's Florida Mansion... and Duke Invited Him into the Heart of the Royal Family,” *Daily Mail*, January 2, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2894970/The-Prince-paedophile-Andrew-enjoyed-sensual-massages-sex-offender-friend-s-Florida-mansion-Duke-invited-heart-Royal-Family.html#ixzz4lIUw9HkT.

[16] Peter Lord, “Palumbo Says there are 500,000 Registered Sex Offenders in U.S. and 100,000 are Unaccounted for*,” Politifact*, March 3, 2011, http://www.politifact.com/rhode-island/statements/2011/mar/03/peter-palumbo/palumbo-says-there-are-500000-registered-sex-offen/.

[17] Alexandra Topping, “Hundreds of Convicted Sex Offenders are Missing, New Figures*,” The Guardian*, March 10, 2015,

https://www.theguardian.com/society/2015/mar/10/hundreds-of-convicted-sex-offenders-are-missing-new-figures-show.

[18] Miles Kemp, “Paedophiles are Dropping off Child Sex Offender Register, Prompting Sonya Ryan to Raise Alarm,” *The Advertiser*, March 21, 2017, http://www.adelaidenow.com.au/.../paedophiles-are-dropping-off-child-sex-%20offender-register-prompting.../b7660a8db7b18e94955dd278cd0369ef.

[19] Elisabeth Pasqualiini, “Sex Offender Laws Expanding Internationally,” *Avvo.com*, November 21, 2012, https://www.avvo.com/legal-guides/ugc/sex-offender-laws-expanding-internationally.

[20] Charles Montaldo, “Does Sex Offender Registration Deter Crime,” *ThoughtCo.com*, May 19, 2015, https://www.thoughtco.com/does-sex-offender-registration-deter-crime-973192.

[21] David Porter, “Pedophilic Disorder DSM-5 302.2 (F65.4*),” Theravive*, https://www.theravive.com/therapedia/pedophilic-disorder-dsm--5-302.2-(f65.4).

[22] Karl Tipple, “The Secret Epidemic*,” menstuff.org*, http://www.menstuff.org/issues/byissue/abusedboys.html.

[23] Patricia Love, “The Emotional Incest Syndrome,” *Semantic Scholar*, https://pdfs.semanticscholar.org/ac7d/a3a1406cb161c1b.

[24] Jesse Bering, “Pedophiles, Hebephiles and Ephebophiles, Oh My: Erotic Age Orientation,” *Scientific American*, July 1, 2009, https://blogs.scientificamerican.com/bering-in-mind/pedophiles-hebephiles-and-ephebophiles-oh-my-erotic-age-orientation/.

[25] “What is Hebephilia?” Psychology Today, https://www.psychologytoday.com/basics/hebephilia.

[26] Allen Frances, “Hebephilia is a Crime, Not a Mental Disorder,” *Psychiatric Times*, December 15, 2011, http://www.psychiatrictimes.com/articles/hebephilia-crime-not-mental-disorder.

[27] Allen Frances, “DSM 5 Rejects ‘Hebephilia’ Except for the Fine Print,” *Psychology Today*, May 3, 2012, https://www.psychologytoday.com/blog/dsm5-in-distress/201205/dsm-5-rejects-hebephilia-except-the-fine-print.

[28] Gilian Gertz, “Pedophilia and the American Psychiatric Association: Mental Illness vs. Aberration,” *Decoded Science*, November 17, 2013, https://www.decodedscience.org/pedophilia-american-psychiatric-association/39531.

[29] Selwyn Duke, “Shocking Times: Movement for Pedophile ‘Rights’ Marches on,” *The New American*, September 28, 2015, https://www.thenewamerican.com/culture/item/21664-shocking-times-movement-for-pedophile-rights-marches-on.

[30] Cheryl Wetzstein, "APA to Correct Manual: Pedophilia is Not a 'Sexual Orientation,'" *Washington Times*, July 31, 2013, http://www.washingtontimes.com/news/2013/oct/31/apa-correct-manual-clarification-pedophilia-not-se/.

[31] "Four Misconceptions about Pedophilia," based on documentary "I, Pedophile*," CBC Firsthand*, Toronto, Ontario, Canada, March 10, 2016, http://www.cbc.ca/firsthand/m/features/four-misconceptions-about-pedophiles.

[32] "Four Misconceptions about Pedophilia," http://www.cbc.ca/firsthand/m/features/four-misconceptions-about-pedophiles.

[33] Tim Rymel, "What do we Know about Pedophiles?" *The Good Men Project*, August 23, 2015, https://goodmenproject.com/ethics-values/what-do-we-know-about-pedophiles-twr/.

[34] Virtuous Pedophiles, http://www.virped.org/.

[35] Ender Wiggin, "Pedophilia as a Sexual Orientation," *Pedophiles about Pedophilia*, August 2, 2016, https://medium.com/pedophiles-about-pedophilia/pedophilia-as-a-sexual-orientation-d414e0780f6d.

[36] "Child Molester Statistics," *Yello Dyno*, http://www.yellodyno.com/html/child_molester_stats.html.

[37] Tom Geoghegan, "Are there Women Paedophiles?" *BBC News Magazine*, April 29, 2009, http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/uk_news/magazine/8022861.stm.

[38] Carolyn Susman, "Female Pedophilia is Rare, Difficult to Fathom," *Chicago Tribune*, January 14, 2004, http://articles.chicagotribune.com/2004-01-14/features/0401130368_1_offender-teenage-boys-pedophilia/2.

[39] Hilary Weaver, "Mary Kay Letourneau and Former Student End Their 12-Year Marriage," *Vanity Fair*, May 30, 2017, http://www.vanityfair.com/style/2017/05/mary-kay-letourneau-and-vili-fualaau-separate.

[40] Karl Tipple, http://www.menstuff.org/issues/byissue/abusedboys.html.

[41] Jamie Doward, "Men much less likely to Seek Mental Health Help than Women," *The Guardian*, November 5, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2016/nov/05/men-less-likely-to-get-help--mental-health.

[42] Richard Boyd, "The Impact of Child Sexual Abuse," *EnergeticsInstitute.com*, 2010, http://energeticsinstitute.com.au/impact-of-child-sexual-abuse/.

[43] Carina Storrs, "Is Life Expectancy Reduced by a Traumatic Childhood?" *Scientific American*, October 7, 2009,

https://www.scientificamerican.com/article/childhood-adverse-event-life-expectancy-abuse-mortality/.

[44] Cameron Boyd, “The Impacts of Sexual Assault on Women,*” Australian Institute of Family Studies*, April 2011, https://aifs.gov.au/publications/impacts-sexual-assault-women.

[45] Sabrina Tavernise, “U.S. Suicide Rate Surges to a 30-Year High,” *The New York Times*, April 22, 2016, https://www.nytimes.com/2016/04/22/health/us-suicide-rate-surges-to-a-30-year-high.html.

[46] “Child Molester Statistics,” http://www.yellodyno.com/html/child_molester_stats.html.

[47] “Child Molester Statistics,” http://www.yellodyno.com/html/child_molester_stats.html.

[48] Gretchen Livingston, “Fewer than Half of U.S. Kids Today Live in a ‘Traditional‘ Family,” *Pew Research Center*, December 22, 2014, http://www.pewresearch.org/fact-tank/2014/12/22/less-than-half-of-u-s-kids-today-live-in-a-traditional-family/.

[49] “Child Molester Statistics,” http://www.yellodyno.com/html/child_molester_stats.html.

[50] Karl Tipple, http://www.menstuff.org/issues/byissue/abusedboys.html.

[51] “Child Molester Statistics,” http://www.yellodyno.com/html/child_molester_stats.html.

[52] “Child Molester Statistics,” http://www.yellodyno.com/html/child_molester_stats.html.

[53] “Child Molester Statistics,” http://www.yellodyno.com/html/child_molester_stats.html.

[54] Judith V. Becker and Jill Stinson, “Pedophilic Disorder,” *Springer.com*, www.springer.com/cda/content/document/cda_downloaddoc.

[55] “Exclusive VL Interview with DHS Insider,” *victuruslibertas.com*, February 16, 2017, http://victuruslibertas.com/2017/02/exclusive_interview_with_dhs_insider/.

[56] Joachim Hagopian, Pizzagate: Podesta Pedo Perps and Clinton’s International Child Sex Trafficking Ring Exposed,” *sott.net*, December 2, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/335512-Pizzagate-Podesta-pedo-perps-and-Clintons-international-child-sex-trafficking-ring-exposed.

[57] James Corbett, “Political Pedophilia: An Open Source Investigation,” *James Corbett Report*, April 16, 2015, https://www.corbettreport.com/political-pedophilia-an-open-source-investigation/.

[58] “Sexual Orientation and Homosexuality,” American Psychological Association, http://www.apa.org/topics/lgbt/orientation.aspx.

[59] Neel Burton, “When Homosexuality Stopped being a Mental Disorder,” *Psychology Today*, September 18, 2015, https://www.psychologytoday.com/blog/hide-and-seek/201509/when-homosexuality-stopped-being-mental-disorder.

[60] Gregory M. Herek, “Facts about Homosexuality and Mental Health,” UC Davis Psychology, http://psychology.ucdavis.edu/rainbow/html/facts_mental_health.html.

[61] Jeremy Diamond and Arina de Vogue, “Supreme Court Rules in Favor of Same sex Marriage Nationwide,” *CNN*, June 27, 2015, http://edition.cnn.com/2015/06/26/politics/supreme-court-same-sex-marriage-ruling/.

[62] James White, “Political Correctness: The Art of Killing Free Speech,” *North West Liberty News*, January 1, 2016, http://northwestlibertynews.com/political-correctness-using-the-herd-to-silence-free-speech/.

[63] Mike Harris and Preston James, “The Khazarian Mafia’s Globalist Agenda to Destroy Every Nation’s Sovereignty,” *Veterans Today*, November 2, 2015, http://www.veteranstoday.com/2015/11/02/the-khazarian-mafias-globalist-nwo-agenda-to-destroy-every-nations-sovereignty/.

[64] Richard Eskow, “So Long, Liberty: 10 Ways Americans have Lost their Rights,” *Alternet*, October 27, 2014, http://www.alternet.org/civil-liberties/so-long-liberty-10-ways-americans-have-lost-their-rights.

[65] Joachim Hagopian, “Divide and Conquer: The Globalist Pathway to New World Order.” *Global Research*, October 23, 2015, http://www.globalresearch.ca/divide-and-conquer-the-globalist-pathway-to-new-world-order-tyranny-from-a-geopolitics-perspective/5483935.

[66] “The Globalist Agenda,” *globalistagenda.org*, http://www.globalistagenda.org/.

[67] Michael Snyder, “The Reason the Elite Hate Trump so Much: He is Opposed to the One World Agenda of the Globalists*,” Zero Hedge*, February 10, 2017, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2017-02-10/reason-elite-hate-trump-so-much-he-opposed-one-world-agenda-globalists.

[68] Kirk Cameron and Paul Cameron, “Homosexuality Exploding among the Youth,” *World Net Daily*, March 17, 2017, http://www.wnd.com/2017/03/homosexuality-exploding-among-youth/.

[69] Joachim Hagopian, “The Elite’s Social Engineering Endgame: A Battle between the Sexes where Humanity Loses,” *sott.net*, May 30, 2016,

https://www.sott.net/article/319288-The-elites-social-engineering-endgame-A-battle-between-the-sexes-where-humanity-loses.

[70] David Bass, “After the Gay Agenda, the Pedophile Agenda*,”* *newgenevaopc.org*, February 2, 2014, http://newgenevaopc.org/?page_id=413.

[71] Joachim Hagopian, “Pizzagate Turned PedoGate Leads to Momentum Surge in Busting Global Child Sex Trafficking Rings,” *sott.net*, February 27, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/343780-Pizzagate-turned-PedoGate-Leads-to-Momentum-Surge-in-Busting-Global-Child-Sex-Trafficking-Rings.

[72] Mike Wendling, “The Saga of ‘Pizzagate’: The Fake Story that Shows how Conspiracy Theories are Spread,” *BBC Trending*, December 2, 2016, http://www.bbc.com/news/blogs-trending-38156985.

[73] Alex Newman, “Dr. Phil Interview Exposes Global Elite Pedophiles,” *New American*, March 30, 2017, https://www.thenewamerican.com/usnews/crime/item/25713-dr-phil-interview-exposes-global-elite-pedophiles.

[74] “Six Case Studies that Point to a Massive Pedophilia Ring at the Highest Levels of Power*,” The Last American Vagabond*, November 11, 2016, http://www.thelastamericanvagabond.com/outside-the-box/six-case-studies-massive-child-pedophilia-ring-highest-power-levels/.

[75] Sonya van Gelder, “Suppressed Pedophilia Allegations Reveal Culture of Satanic Ritual Abuse,” *Wake Up World*, February 28, 2015, https://wakeup-world.com/2015/02/28/suppressed-pedophilia-allegations-reveal-culture-of-satanic-ritual-abuse-hampstead/.

[76] Henry Makow, “The Satanic Cult that Rules the World,” *henrymakow.com,* May 6, 2017, https://www.henrymakow.com/the_satanic_cult_that_rules_th.html.

[77] Joachim Hagopian, “PedoGate Update: The Global Elite’s Pedophile Empire is Crumbling - but will it ever Crash?” *sott.net*, March 21, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/345836-PedoGate-Update-The-Global-Elites-Pedophile-Empire-is-Crumbling-But-Will-it-Ever-Crash.

[78] Joachim Hagopian, “As Treasonous Bush-Clinton-Obama Pedo Cabal Dynasty Gets Exposed, Desperate Elite Steps up War against Humanity,” *sott.net*, March 31, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/346940-As-Treasonous-Bush-Clinton-Obama-Pedo-Cabal-Dynasty-Gets-Exposed-Desperate-Elite-Steps-Up-War-against-Humanity.

[79] Judith V. Becker and Jill Stinson, “Pedophilic Disorder,” *Springer.com*, www.springer.com/cda/content/document/cda_downloaddoc.

[80] “Sexual Abuse of Boys,” *menstuff.org*, http://www.menstuff.org/issues/byissue/abusedboys.html.

[81] Dickson, “Surging Rate of Child Sexual Abuse*,” Leadership*, June 28, 2017, http://leadership.ng/2017/06/28/surging-rate-child-sexual-abuse/.

[82] Nita Bhalla, “Child Sex Crimes Remain Taboo as Cases Surge in Conservative India,” *Reuters*, May 16, 2017, http://www.reuters.com/article/us-india-children-sexcrimes-idUSKCN18C26Z.

[83] Alan Travis, “Reported Child Sexual Abuse has Risen 60% in last Four Years, Figures Show, *The Guardian*, April 9, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2015/apr/09/reported-child-sexual-abuse-has-risen-60-in-last-four-years-figures-show.

[84] Kimberly Key, “Why is Child Abuse on the rise?” *Psychology Today*, November 10, 2016, https://www.psychologytoday.com/blog/counseling-keys/201611/why-is-child-abuse-the-rise.

[85] Dave Lee, “Online Child Abuse Reports Surge, Says US Watchdog,” *BBC News*, July 18, 2014, http://www.bbc.com/news/technology-28359143.

[86] Joachim Hagopian, http://themillenniumreport.com/2017/04/ruling-elites-pedophile-bloodlust-for-children-from-antiquity-to-today/.

[87] Joachim Hagopian, “The Failures of America’s Foster Care System,” *Global Research*, July 19, 2014, http://www.globalresearch.ca/the-failures-of-americas-foster-care-system/5392130.

[88] Joachim Hagopian, *Don’t Let the Bastards Getcha Down, redredsea.net*, http://www.redredsea.net/westpointhagopian/index.html.

[89] Lucy Johnstone, “Time to Abolish Psychiatric Diagnosis?” *Mad in America*, January 1, 2013, https://www.madinamerica.com/2013/01/time-to-abolish-psychiatric-diagnosis/.

[90] Bruce E. Levine, “Too Corrupt, Too Insane, and Too Ridiculous to Be Reformed? Even Establishment Psychiatrists Now Distancing Themselves from Their Own Profession*,” bruceelevine.net,* April 16, 2014, http://brucelevine.net/too-corrupt-too-insane-and-too-ridiculous-to-be-reformed-even-establishment-psychiatrists-now-distancing-themselves-from-their-own-profession/.

[91] Joachim Hagopian, “The Evils of Big Pharma Exposed,” *Global Research*, January 18, 2015, http://www.globalresearch.ca/the-evils-of-big-pharma-exposed/5425382.

[92] Julia Lurie, “Drugs Kill more People than Cars or Guns,” *Mother Jones*, September 19, 2016, http://www.motherjones.com/politics/2016/09/opioid-charts-explainer/.

[93] Ben Hirschler, “Special Report: Big Pharma’s global Guinea Pigs,” *Reuters*, May 6, 2011, http://www.reuters.com/article/us-pharmaceuticals-trials-

idUSTRE7450SV20110506.

[94] Ahmed Aboraya, Cheryl France, Colin John, Ahmed El-Missiry, and Eric Rankin, “The Reliability of Psychiatric Diagnosis Revisited,” *Psychiatry* 3 (January 2006): 41-50, https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC2990547/.

[95] Michael W. Kraus, The Psychology of the ‘Psychology Isn’t a Science’ Argument,” *Psychology Today*, August 14, 2013, https://www.psychologytoday.com/blog/under-the-influence/201308/the-psychology-the-psychology-isnt-science-argument.

[96] Hope Reese, “The Real Problems with Psychiatry,” *The Atlantic*, May 2, 2013, https://www.theatlantic.com/health/archive/2013/05/the-real-problems-with-psychiatry/275371/.

[97] Jan Eastgate, “Inventing Disorders: For Drug Profits,” *Citizens Commission on Human Rights*, http://www.cchr.org/cchr-reports/inventing-disorders/introduction.html.

[98] Patrick W. Corrigan and Amy C. Watson, “Understanding the Impact of Stigma on People with Mental Illness,” *World Psychiatry* 1 (February 2002) 16-20, https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC1489832/.

[99] Sami Timimi, “No More Psychiatric Labels: Why Formal Psychiatric Diagnostic Systems should be Abolished,” *International Journal of clinical and health Psychology*, 14 (September 2014), http://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S169726001400009X.

[100] Rijul Kshirsagar and Priscilla Vu, “The Pharmaceutical Industry’s Role in U.S. Medical Education,” *In-Training*, April 3, 2016, http://in-training.org/drugged-greed-pharmaceutical-industrys-role-us-medical-education-10639.

[101] Robert H. Shmerling, “First, Do No Harm,” *Harvard Health Publications*, October 13, 2015, http://www.health.harvard.edu/blog/first-do-no-harm-201510138421.

[102] “Pessimism about Pedophilia,” *Harvard Health Publications*, July 2010, http://www.health.harvard.edu/newsletter_article/pessimism-about-pedophilia.

[103] Tanya Lewis, “Lobotomy: Definition, Procedure and History*,” Live Science*, August 28, 2014, https://www.livescience.com/42199-lobotomy-definition.html.

[104] David Porter, https://www.theravive.com/therapedia/pedophilic-disorder-dsm--5-302.2-(f65.4).

[105] “Pessimism about Pedophilia,” *Harvard Health Publications*, July 2010, http://www.health.harvard.edu/newsletter_article/pessimism-about-pedophilia.

[106] “Child Molester Statistics,” http://www.yellodyno.com/html/child_molester_stats.html.

[107] “Child Molester Statistics,” http://www.yellodyno.com/html/child_molester_stats.html.

[108] Laura Kane, “Is Pedophilia a Sexual Orientation?” *The Toronto Star*, December 22, 2013, https://www.thestar.com/news/insight/2013/12/22/is_pedophilia_a_sexual_orientation.html.

[109] “Pessimism about Pedophilia,” http://www.health.harvard.edu/newsletter_article/pessimism-about-pedophilia.

[110] “Child Molester Statistics,” http://www.yellodyno.com/html/child_molester_stats.html.

[111] Ender Wiggin, https://medium.com/pedophiles-about-pedophilia/pedophilia-as-a-sexual-orientation-d414e0780f6d.

[112] Adam Liptak, ”Inmate Count in U.S. Dwarfs other Nations,” *The New York Times*, April 23, 2008, http://www.nytimes.com/2008/04/23/us/23prison.html.

[113] Janice Williams, “White Men vs. Black Men Prison Statistics 2016: Why are More African American Males Incarcerated?” *IB Times*, October 15, 2016, http://www.ibtimes.com/white-men-vs-black-men-prison-statistics-2016-why-are-more-african-american-males-2426793.

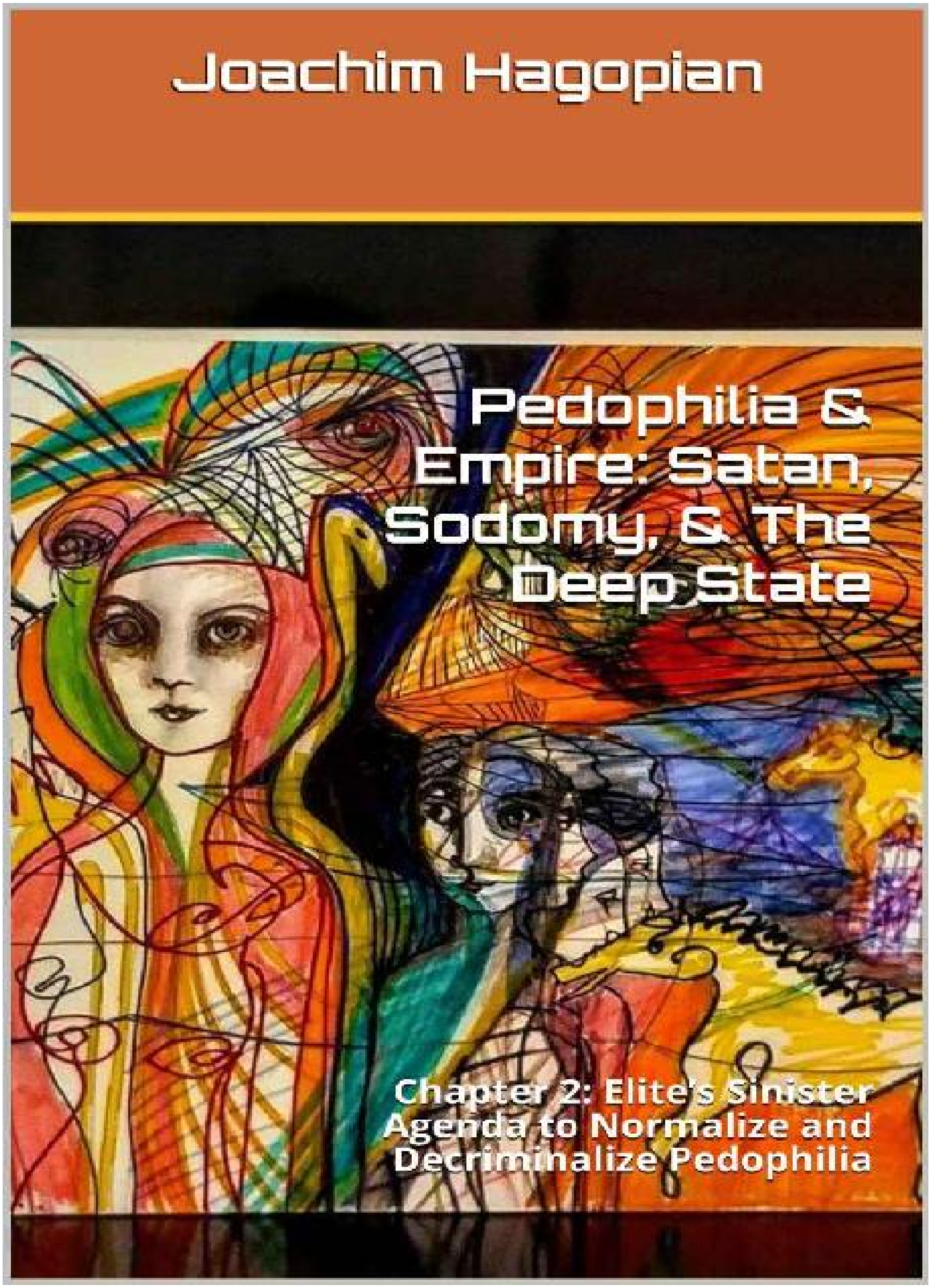

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 2: Elite's Sinister Agenda to Normalize and Decriminalize Pedophilia

Chapter 2: Elite’s Sinister Agenda to Normalize and Decriminalize Pedophilia

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission

http://www.noramaccoby.com/

“Some psychiatric leaders who were instrumental in removing homosexuality from the American Psychiatric Association’s list of mental disorders in 1973 have been fighting to remove pedophilia as a disorder as well, not to justify the abuse of children but rather to say that being sexually attracted to children is not a mental disorder.”

Michael L. Brown,[i]

author of *A Queer Thing Happened to America*[ii]

The first chapter of this book alluded to how the psychiatric field utilized its latest edition of the DSM “bible” to attempt to normalize raping children, initially calling pedophilia a sexual orientation following the footsteps forged by homosexuality as a onetime deviant mental disorder turned sexual orientation morphed into the widely accepted normative sexual choice that it enjoys today. As early as 1998, the American Psychiatric Association (APA) made its objective explicitly clear, maintaining that the negative impact of child sex abuse when adults have sex with children was “overstated”[iii] and that:

The vast majority of both men and women reported no negative sexual effects from their child sexual experiences.

As a longtime clinician working with victims of pedophiles, that is not my observation or experience at all. The traumatic effects of child sex abuse emotionally and interpersonally may last a lifetime, and its effects sexually likely do as well. In my humble opinion, for at least two decades the APA has a proven track record of being far more interested in the well-being and care of child rapists than victimized children. Bottom line, protecting child molesters is a priority over protecting children. But then this powerful organization has also played an integral part in the CIA's MK Ultra and Monarch mind control programs as well, where young children are systematically sexually traumatized to intentionally induce dissociative states and alter personalities.[iv] An infamous example of the APA-MK overlap was the sadistic Dr. Ewen Cameron, who served as both the APA president while running the unlawful, inhumane MK Ultra program experiments using LSD on unsuspecting victims and abusing children.[v]

At a July 2013 pedophilia conference held at UK's prestigious University of Cambridge, research experts concluded:

Paedophilic interest is natural and normal for human males. At least a sizeable minority of normal males would like to have sex with children… Normal males are aroused by children.[vi]

There you have it, the psychiatric profession embraces pedophiles as typical "normal" males. If that's not enough to prove that psychiatrists care more about child rapists than children, more evidence is written right into the various state laws as in California and New Jersey. A California law actually prohibits mental health counselors from trying to get a pedophile to change his behavior or speak negatively about it,[vii] according to the attorney who is currently suing the state of California to change the law that clearly is detrimental to the safety and welfare of innocent children. The idea that therapists can be negatively sanctioned for attempting to change the criminal behavior of a client, who poses a serious threat to children, makes absolutely no sense at all. But then that’s the inverse, upside down world we’re now living in these days.

Aside from the “expert” advice of psychiatrists and psychologists forging their way, the elite - comprised of so many pedophiles - with unlimited resources, possesses a myriad of other approaches, venues and arsenal weapons at its disposal, to methodically persuade and gain wider social acceptance necessary to legalize child molestation. Ultimately the elite’s subversive mission or game-plan is first unleashing the “experts” out to “educate” the public, backed heavily by the media echo chambers declaring “no harm, no foul,” while saturating the airwaves with movies, TV and music with the running theme that “it’s only normal,” so the Washington pedophiles can then justify a vote to decriminalize and thereby free themselves from any chance of ever paying for their horrific crimes. And by that time deep state’s Federal Reserve will have tanked the economy to manipulate an angry public into blaming Trump,[viii] so he’ll be out and pedo Pence will be in.[ix] Already smelling blood, just before the VP kills and drinks it, Pence already betrayed Trump setting up his own political action committee to launch his backstabbing future presidential coup.[x]

The notion that pedophilia is a permanent, immutable condition inherited from birth[xi] is a slippery slope that some believe may relinquish self-responsibility for abusing children, which moves toward potentially normalizing and decriminalizing pedophilia, with the precedent of homosexuality already in place. A growing number of researchers believe that most child molesters are not pedophiles and that a sizeable yet unknown percentage of pedophiles live a celibate lifestyle never touching or harming children.[xii] It’s important to realize that satanic pedophiles amongst the elite will use these latest findings to their advantage. Changing societal mores leading toward increasing leniency, normalcy and decriminalization will only justify their continuing to feed off the flesh and blood of children for rejuvenated strength, longer life and enhanced power practiced since ancient times.[xiii] Ritualized sacrifice of young innocents through systematic rape, torture and wholesale slaughter perpetrated by the Illuminati elite has secretly flourished to this day with total impunity.

But by the day, the recent exposure of the massive PedoGate scandal[xiv] is looming larger,[xv] and the planetary controllers are becoming increasingly nervous and desperate to legalize their pervasive violation and bloodlust toward children in order to evade criminal indictment and impending incarceration. President Trump[xvi] and Attorney General Sessions[xvii] have put them on notice. And for that reason, the deep state is amassing all its sinister forces to bring Trump and Sessions down before the pedophilic elite can be brought to justice. They'd rather destroy the earth first than relinquish their demonic power. We are currently amidst an epoch battle of the ages and survival of the human species and planet hang precariously in the balance.

This chapter will focus on the multi-level front offensive geared to change the public's mind and attitude toward pedophilia, deploying insidious, subversive ways to frenetically shape culture and opinion towards gradually accepting adult sex with underage children as a normative choice and civil right, just like homosexuality. In recent decades through massive social engineering,[xviii] the LGBT agenda[xix] coalesced and fused together in Political Correctness,[xx] has opened the door wide open for the creeping pedophilia agenda. The war for your mind is being fought on many fronts every single day, so beware.

Meanwhile, in response to the deep state West's "blame it on Putin and Russia" lie[xxi] that the left has used in vain to try and bring down Trump[xxii] and instigate World War III,[xxiii] the very prudent president that the Russians have known as their only leader this century[xxiv] - Vladimir Putin, had this to say in his Christmas message to the world last year:

> *The excesses and exaggerations of political correctness in these [Western] countries indeed leads to serious consideration for the legitimization of parties that promote the propaganda of pedophilia.*[xxv]

As mentioned in the first chapter, clearly the globalist agenda and their Western minions is to utilize weaponized social engineering, the LGBT movement and Political Correctness to propagandize and brainwash the Western masses away from their traditional Christian and family roots in order to normalize pedophilia. As usual Russian President Putin was spot on.

It was reported just a few days ahead of the two world leaders Putin and Trump meeting for the first time in Hamburg on July 7th that the shrewd Russian leader issued a stern warning to the American president to begin "exposing pedophiles in Washington DC," or else Russia will. Moscow's foreign minister Sergei Lavrov released this statement:

> *The foundation of support for pedophilia within US politics is a global issue that must be eradicated . This level of unethical corruption must be stopped, and we have the means to expose it if the US Government is unwilling*.[xxvi]

Thus, clearly the Russian Federation has had enough of Washington's never-ending lies and false accusations, straight out of the mouths of so many compromised pedophiles like McCain, Graham, Schumer and Pelosi,[xxvii] and knows that the cesspool inside Western politics must be wiped clean. The two hour meeting in Germany was said to have been successful with both leaders establishing a rapport to work together with a focus on the future rather than the past.[xxviii] Though no press mentioned pedophilia was on their itinerary per se, by the Russians making it an off-table priority underscores the need for pedophilia so heavily concentrated in Western governments led by the United States to be rooted out. With a wink and a nod from the hordes of guilty insiders operating within the power centers of Washington,[xxix] London,[xxx] Brussels,[xxxi] and Rome's Vatican,[xxxii] where for decades pedophilia has flourished the most with the most impunity because the pedo-elite meticulously set up its insulated bribery-blackmail system to exercise absolute control over their Western puppets.[xxxiii] This evil broken system has got to be taken down.

And that's why over four decades ago in the United Kingdom a coalition merged between homosexual and pedophile rights as the beta test forerunner of what was to come.[xxxiv] Either though deceptive means of controlling politicians through pedophilia and sexual blackmail, or whether so many of the West's political leaders are natural born sexual deviants who diagnostically fit the compulsive mental disorder as full blown child raping pedophiles, from presidents[xxxv] to prime ministers,[xxxvi] [xxxvii] from speakers of the house[xxxviii] to powerful senators,[xxxix] [xl] congress members[xli] [xlii]and MP's,[xliii] court judges,[xliv] [xlv] military generals[xlvi] [xlvii] to police chiefs[xlviii] [xlix] and police commissioners,[l] [li] a significant and inordinate percentage of these top Illuminati puppets in Western nations are pedophiles.[lii] [liii] And though 99.9% of their grotesque criminality has always remained above the law for centuries, managing to squelch every major police investigation and circumvent indictments due to their insulated power that shields and protects them from exposure and incarceration, I believe those days are coming to an end. Putin and Trump have the opportunity to work together to finally drain the global pedo-swamp, make our children safer and bring peace to this world. That’s if the elite’s deep state doesn’t blow up the world first.

The countless pedophile scandals involving satanic ritual child sexual abuse and subsequent cover-ups committed by top leaders in virtually all the Western governments over the last few decades alone serve as overwhelming, conclusive and undeniable evidence that virtually all the leaders on the world stage are high powered child molesters[liv] that oversee the black ops-CIA-UN-mob controlled child sex trafficking as well as the drug and arms smuggling operations worldwide.[lv] But pulling their puppet strings at the top of this Luciferian pedophile food chain[lvi] are the 13 Illuminati family bloodlines that really run this devil’s dominion planet.[lvii] These include the Rothschilds,[lviii] Rockefellers[lix] and the British Windsor’s (part of the Merovingian “seed of Satan” gang).[lx]

Though satanic ritual abuse and sacrifice go back to ancient times, a quick laundry list of their most infamously brazen, modern, fully documented pedophile scandals can start with the satanic sexual abuse at daycare centers in the 1980’s that included the McMartin,[lxi] West Point and the Presidio cases,[lxii] two enormous scandals that went straight to the Reagan and Bush White Houses - the Franklin scandal[lxiii] and the CIA run Finders scandal,[lxiv] both breaking in the mid to late 1980’s.

The never-ending Catholic Church pedo-epidemic[lxv] spanning centuries as well as the globe[lxvi] leads straight to the Vatican popes. Ratzinger was busted for covering up the church scandal and forced into retirement.[lxvii] Then under Francis’ watch there was a 2014 scandal hardly anybody ever heard of involving a Polish archbishop who collected over 100,000 child pornography photos, 160 videos of child abuse as well as a record abusing dozens in kids in Poland and Dominican Republic. While on house arrest awaiting trial, he “mysteriously” died.[lxviii] But this last week the depraved debauchery at the Vatican broke wide open. As if Pope Francis’ right hand pedophile recently charged with the biggest Catholic child abuse scandal in Australian history wasn’t incriminating enough,[lxix] the priest under another of the pope’s top aides, the cardinal leading the Pontifical Council to “clean up” sex abuse in the church, was just caught in a police raid hosting a gay cocaine orgy at his Vatican pad.[lxx] With Rome’s amidst an internal turf war right now and Pope Francis’ Jesuits in a Vatican takeover, a recently fired holdout loyal to Ratzinger in retaliation called the cops on the cocaine snorting gay boys. With the Church steeped in child trafficking, a Vatican insider predicts that Francis will resign during an upcoming trip home to Argentina shortly.[lxxi]

Then there’s the infamous UK entertainer Jimmy Savile case, whose rapes span a half century involving as many as 500 victims[lxxii] when the kiddie lover wasn’t pimping group home kids off to British royalty, PM’s and MP’s.[lxxiii] Two decades ago Belgium was rocked by the deadly 1996-97 Dutroux scandal and its high end cover-up,[lxxiv] followed by the DynCorp-UN-US State Department child sex abuse slavery rings busted in 1999 Bosnia and elsewhere to this day.[lxxv] Then the thousands of missing, tortured, sexually abused and murdered North American aboriginal children (and women)[lxxvi] along with the 8 million children around the globe who disappear every year, many trapped in sexual slavery trafficking rings.[lxxvii] Tony Blair[lxxviii] and George W. Bush[lxxix]regimes’ are notorious for their pedophile sex ring cover-ups. Jeffrey Epstein’s Lolita Express and Sex Slave Island pedo blackmail operation involved both Clintons and possibly Trump among others,[lxxx] [lxxxi] the Dennis Hastert pedophile case,[lxxxii] the Penn State Coach Jerry Sandusky case,[lxxxiii] the Pentagon-NSA-CIA child pornography cover-up,[lxxxiv] UK’s satanic Hampstead scandal,[lxxxv] the pedophile infested Hollywood scandals and its exposed satanic ritual abuse,[lxxxvi] and finally right up to the DC/DNC’s Pizzagate[lxxxvii] turned worldwide PedoGate.[lxxxviii]

But there’s more. How can we forget the massive underground operation run by CIA-military black ops inflicting sexual trauma induced dissociative disorder, programming kids of all ages since the post-WWII CIA Nazi Paperclip era to this day, producing multiple generations of MK Ultra and Monarch[lxxxix] mind controlled victims as child sex slaves,[xc] demonically controlled sex slave entertainment superstars,[xci] super soldier assassins,[xcii] spies,[xciii] drug runners[xciv] and even Manchurian mind-controlled US presidents.[xcv] [xcvi] All this evil raping of children is every bit real! It’s all even been covered even by mainstream press,[xcvii] despite these days not hearing a peep about either the current pedo-epidemic[xcviii] or Trump’s child trafficking busts[xcix] since taking office except when ridiculing[c] believers in Pizzagate/PedoGate as “fake news.”[ci] The elite’s running scared that the scandal of the millennium will bring the entire cabal crashing down. That’s why the globalists are frantically trying to ensure their house of cards economy,[cii] Trump impeachment[ciii]/assassination[civ] and world war explode first.[cv] With luxury subterranean contingency plans,[cvi] as transhumanists with years of supplies, they believe they can survive anything.

All these high crimes and sordid atrocities are interrelated and interconnected, and establish the pedophilia epidemic as indisputable fact, regardless of lame stream lies of denial, all involve the same child sex predators ad nauseam, comprised of US-Western government agency personnel who are pedophile puppets owned and controlled by the Illuminati Satan-worshipping, child raping and child murdering elite. And these are merely the most notorious cases that the system was not quite successful enough to cover up. The extent of the dark, heinous evil being perpetrated by this worldwide criminal enterprise is still largely unknown. But with the Illuminati government-owned thread as the connecting dot that runs through every wicked one of them, the pedophile epidemic operated by the international crime cabal in Washington, London, Brussels and Vatican must be exposed and brought down. This book is intended to facilitate and help jump start that process.

We can go back to the 1970's and 1980's in the United Kingdom as just one example of early proof of how embedded the child molesters and pedophile supporters are and were in the London government.[cvii] Along with the Vatican and US, Queen Elizabeth and her MI5 and MI6 minions have long played a leading role in global child/human trafficking.[cviii] Some of the biggest names in UK politics are and were above the law child rapists.[cix] For over a decade, from 1974 to 1984, the Paedophile Information Exchange (PIE),[cx] an infamous UK organization of self-identified child rapists[cxi] who promoted lowering the age of sexual consent in Britain to just four years of age, by invitation openly infiltrated and co-opted the National Council for Civil Liberties (NCCL),[cxii] a major activist NGO currently known as Liberty, whose leadership figures during that decade have since risen to the highest positions in UK politics. Back in 1975 *The Guardian* chronicled the partnership forming between NCCL and PIE in a headline heralding the move as if promoting civil rights for gays and pedos is progress for us all: “Child-lovers win fight for role in Gay Lib.”[cxiii]

Back in early 2014 when four of these onetime NCCL leaders as career public servants and political figures were sitting atop the British government and throne, the *Daily Mail* began publishing a series of incriminating articles exposing the fact that four prominent government leaders decades earlier had sought out the pedophile organization PIE to form a working partnership of likeminded left leaning activists promoting both gay and pedophile rights. Longtime leader of the Labour Party and Parliament fixture since 1982, Harriet Harman, and her MP husband Jack Dromey as NCCL officers, back in the day attempted to water down child pornography laws.[cxiv] They welcomed PIE founder and Chairman Tom O'Carroll to not only become an NCCL member but also a speaker at their spring 1977 conference. The couple vehemently denied their involvement with the pedophile organization, claiming the *Daily Mail* was guilty of launching a campaign to smear their good name.[cxv] Jack Dromey insists that he only attacked PIE for its vile nature, never embracing it. Yet his past actions speak louder than his feeble 2014 words.

Still another high profile power player currently with a gig as the first openly gay advisor to Queen Elizabeth is Lord Justice Adrian Fulford,[cxvi] who founded a group called Conspiracy against Public Morals that also pushed for pedophile rights, even sharing the same mailing address as PIE. Fulford worked with both NCCL and PIE organizing support rallies protesting outside the court buildings where pedophiles like Tom O'Carroll and a half dozen other PIE members were tried and convicted for child pornography and child molestation. The lobbying group Fulford founded distributed pamphlets urging that children would be liberated from the oppression of both the state and their family if they were legally allowed to have sex with adults. Guilty of loyally promoting the organization that lobbied to reduce the age of sexual consent to just four years old, when asked about his pedophilia support, typical of public figures caught in a scandal, one of the most senior judges in the UK suddenly had a lapse of memory:

I have no memory of having been involved with its foundation or the detail of the work of this campaign.

For someone who insists he never supported PIE, it's odd that the PIE newsletter would go out of its way to thank the then barrister for a rousing 1979 speech he made on the pedophiles' behalf.

While Patricia Hewitt was the NCCL secretary general for a decade from 1974-1983, archive records show a document published in her name only, advocating to lower the age of sexual consent in special cases to just 10 years old, and to 14 nationally, and also to legalize incest.[cxvii] After receiving a written request from the PIE chairman in 1975 to consider PIE's recommendations to reduce the age to just four, Hewitt responded:

> *We have found your evidence… most helpful and I think it has certainly been taken into account by the people preparing our evidence*.[cxviii]

And the NCCL pedo lovers' evidence from one of their 1976 documents horrendously states:

> *Childhood sexual experiences, willingly engaged in, with an adult result in no identifiable damage*.[cxix]

The woman whose name appears on that document ended up from 2005 to 2007 serving in Tony Blair's pedo-infested Labour Party government as the nation's health secretary of all things. Whose health? Certainly not innocent little British children's. Then in 2010 as an MP along with three of her colleagues, one of whom served as Blair's defense secretary Geoff Hoon (1999-2005), Patricia Hewitt was busted in a £3,000 a day pay-to-play operation and suspended by her own Labour Party, amidst scandal ultimately deciding to quit politics.[cxx] To her partial credit though, of the four power players who so enthusiastically and publicly pledged their support to pedophilia back in the 70's and 80's, in 2014 Hewitt was the only one coming closest to an apology, expressing regret over her past decisions, although she still claimed it was NCCL's executive decision, not hers, pushing to lower the age of consent to 10.[cxxi]

UK Prime Minister Tony Blair Labour Party government was populated by pedophiles in his key cabinet posts. A UK intelligence investigation - codename Operation Ore - identified 7,250 suspects as potential pedophiles nationwide, hundreds occupying government positions while Blair was prime minister.[cxxii] America's counterpart under the pedophiles-R-US regime of Bush and Cheney was Operation Avalanche,[cxxiii] implicating an incredible 35,000 potential suspects under investigation, but only 100 were charged. The war criminals Blair and Bush[cxxiv] thwarted and protected their pedos at the top, Blair issuing D-Notices, both essentially using gag orders that sealed off all records from the media using their manufactured war in Iraq as the all-too-familiar, flimsy "national security" cover-up excuse. Despite their overt gross obstruction of justice, one of Blair's closest aides Phillip Lyon was arrested for child pornography.[cxxv] After 9/11 mastermind[cxxvi] and pedophile Dick Cheney,[cxxvii] President George W. Bush's next in line to the US throne was GOP Speaker of the House Dennis Hastert, who himself was later busted for raping teenage boys as a wrestling coach.[cxxviii]

Another flagrant Blair pedophile cover-up involved Freemason, UK defense minister (from 1997-99 just prior to Blair's corrupt choice Hoon), and NATO Secretary General (1999-2004) - Lord George Robertson.[cxxix] The Lord used his unholy power of influence to secure guns for known pedophile and mass child murderer Thomas Hamilton after Hamilton had earlier been denied. Then in 1996 Hamilton fired off multiple deadly rounds at the Scottish village Dunblane's middle school massacre where 16 children and their teacher were shot dead prior to Hamilton turning one of the four guns Robertson provided on himself. Blair squelched the investigation that would likely have uncovered the major child sex ring that Hamilton had set up for Robertson and other British elite. The link between Dunblane's exclusive boarding school, the Queen Victoria School, and pedophile VIP's is just now coming to light again in an ongoing inquiry this year.[cxxx]

Similar to Washington, with the UK government swarming with hardcore pedophiles or conscripted by blackmail design, the rising stars of Hewitt, Harman, Dromey and Fulford may well have been aided by their pro-pedophilia stance "boldly taken" early in their careers. After all, the Pedophile Empire rewards its own as a means of both self-replication, self-protection and maximized control. Demonstrated loyalty to the pedo cause by advocating decriminalization of pedophilia in the 1970's could not have gone unnoticed by UK's pedophile royalty.[cxxxi] [cxxxii] The gay pro-pedo judge ends up queenie's personal advisor and the other three ride Blair's ascent to thin air heights within his Labouring Pedo Party. Remember, pedophiles always promote and protect their own kind.

Liberal British mainstream press apologists in 2014 offered the lame rationale that the wayward judge and NCCL trio of pro-molester proponents that ran the civil rights group in the 70's were innocently caught up in the fervor of the youthful liberation revolution at the time, unwittingly standing side by side tolerating pedophiles aligned with them.[cxxxiii] But these four rising stars were highly intelligent privileged individuals with legal backgrounds in their late twenties and early thirties who knew exactly what they were doing - embracing the rights of adults having sex with kids. And they all were duly rewarded.

Journalist Sonia Poulton pointed out in March 2014 the hypocrisy of so much negative attention being paid upon the four pro-pedos from the 70's and 80's when in recent years she's interviewed dozens of molested victims who have named their parliamentary rapists, some still in government and some not, and after reporting these crimes to the police, absolutely nothing has been done to bring any of them to justice.[cxxxiv] This frozen stall is deliberate so the guilty can remain free. Even after MP Tom Watson confronted PM David Cameron on the spot in the House of Commons, convincing UK's leader to agree to launch an investigation in October 2012, finally doing something about this pervasive, shameful blight on the corrupt UK government, yet to this day as in America, not one high profile politician's been arrested.[cxxxv]

Since the so called Cameron "investigation" never got off the ground, in July 2014 Home Secretary Theresa May initiated the Independent Inquiry into Child Sex Abuse (IICSA) to take testimony from child abuse victims.[cxxxvi] But the pedophiles keep ensuring they remain immune from any and all accountability so their crimes only continue. In September 2015 the IICSA announced that all the data that had been gathered from abuse victims and witnesses was conveniently deleted from its database due to an "accidental" glitch. The obvious self-sabotage was just another successful ploy to cover-up the rampant pedo epidemic in the UK. Sonia Poulton lamented how she only observes the same unindicted politician-rapists aligning themselves ever closer with focus groups, high powered lawyers and academia (not unlike the four NCCL-PIE players decades earlier) to push for reducing the age of consent so they can continue raping children and escape justice.

Today's mobilized effort to normalize and legalize child rape is moving faster because a growing segment of the global population now knows more than ever about the elite's criminal operation. The establishment's concerted attempt to protect their own pedophile interests over protecting innocent children is blatantly clear. Elitist criminal scum look upon their victims as expendable throwaways, the same way

New World Order’s Illuminati chairman and globalist guru Henry Kissinger views us all as “useless eaters”[cxxxvii] and Hillary as “deplorables.”[cxxxviii] As always, the guilty still operate above the law as they continue sodomizing and destroying generation after generation of children’s lives. But the tide’s finally turning, and now’s the time to take a stand.

From their cozy mansions, the Illuminati elite watching that PIE phenomenon unfold years ago when an open lobbyist group representing their demented kind was actively pitching the UK government to decriminalize and normalize pedophilia way back when, no doubt had to be a celebrated moment of encouraged optimism. Pedophilia was and still is opportunistically riding on the coattails of progress advancing homosexual rights since being gay was no longer a crime (as of 1967 in UK) nor a mental illness (DSM-2 removed it in 1973). Garnering support from a sympathetic leftist press, prominent academia figures and college student unions alike, buoyed by NCCL’s decade long loyal support, all collectively embracing pedophilia rights, helped recruit over 200 PIE members by its second year in existence.[cxxxix] The pedo-elite had to view this burgeoning development as a successful first beta test run towards decriminalization. From the ruling elite pedophiles’ 1975 vantage point, the future of pedophilia must have looked promising, not that they ever really worried that their living above the law would ever catch up to them.

With PIE’s inroads in 1975, the elite agenda promoting normalization of child molestation as a legal and viable lifestyle choice must have appeared fairly close at hand. From the wider mid-70’s macro-perspective, the elite’s CIA created cultural and sexual revolution in the West was at its crest, steeped in the leftist counterculture movement pushing drugs and sexual promiscuity amongst the younger generations’ “do your own thing” hedonism along with out of the closet homosexuality.[cxl] Elitist social engineering manifested the CIA sponsored and anointed Gloria Steinem to lead the feminist movement,[cxli] and the blurring of gender roles, androgyny[cxlii] and the LGB birth was launched (T came later). Additionally right on cue, the divorce rates began climbing significantly, and mothers as heads of single parent family households were starting to emerge as well.[cxliii]

By 1975, the ruling elite was targeting a slew of enemies lined up in its crosshairs, designated for systematic destruction - a sovereign, relatively well informed, educated, post-Vietnam/Watergate citizen populace with a distrust toward authority,[cxliv] still in possession of a relatively critical thinking mind. Two other enemies were the sovereign institutions of marriage and family, still represented by a relative stable marriage rate and traditional American nuclear family still a majority.[cxlv] A productive enough national economy was able to still support a robust, largely affluent, upwardly mobile middle class majority.[cxlvi] All these positive US trademarks as "land of the free" givens had long symbolized America as a strong sovereign independent nation and world power. But by the mid-70's, the global elite had already decided that the American people had had their heyday and it was time to destroy these made in the USA standard beacons of light and Yankee ingenuity.

By globalist design, America was still reeling from its first lost war in history,[cxlvii] a war it was not intended to win.[cxlviii] With the two Vietnams reunified under the victors' Communist rule in 1975, the elite's next manufactured war that America was again never intended to win was its long "war on drugs,"[cxlix] the war that turned our nation into a permanent welfare state with a growing underclass comprised mostly of disenfranchised minorities largely stuck in urban city ghettos and barrios.[cl] The Bush-Clinton-CIA drug cartel running an international cocaine smuggling operation pumped tons of the white poison into America's inner cities[cli] and gave rise to gang turf warfare in both America and Latin America,[clii] ripped apart countless American families, inflicting its heaviest toll on families of color, resulting in fatherhood absenteeism lost to newly built privatized prisons.[cliii] [cliv] The elite's war against America decimated its once vibrant middle class and nearly destroyed its forsaken poor.[clv]

Meanwhile, throughout this postmodern period of hardship and upheaval for the global masses, pedophilia as an accepted social norm has only made small creeping progress. Subsequently, to speed up the process, overt signs are now appearing everywhere, designed coercively to manipulate and mold public opinion into becoming pedophile-friendly. To those pedophiles who don't abuse children, as a society we should make treatment and social support groups more amenable. But for child rapists and molesters masquerading as our planetary masters, as soon as possible they need to be removed from all access to both children and humanity, and forced to undergo treatment for their dually diagnosed psychopathy and pedophilic disorder.[clvi] To allow literally a handful of severely mentally ill individuals control and destroy what's left of the earth is pure madness.

Decades ago the UK police claimed that PIE members were sexually abusing children on an "industrial scale," and soon enough many in the organization ended up convicted sex offenders doing time in prison. And though its membership roster numbered about 1,000 in 1983, the year prior to disbandment, the traditional values of the British people had resoundingly rejected pedophilia from becoming an acceptable norm. UK's age of consent remained at 16, and the elite's beta test failed. Perhaps the last straw arrived when early anti-pedophile crusader PM Geoffrey Dickens publicly accused senior diplomat Sir Peter Hayman a pedophile and PIE member in 1981. The nail in the PIE coffin was when a Briton who was both a PIE member and also a KGB agent received a 38 year sentence in November 1982.[clvii] Less than two years later PIE was history.

After their failed experiment was over, the pedophile-elites were forced to go back to the drawing board to come up with a whole new strategy, this time deploying on multiple fronts to convince everyday people to accept the insanity that child rape is an okay, normal behavior. And in recent years the globalists have pushed back aggressively against public resistance.

Today we hear "you're a bigot if you don't support homosexuality." Tomorrow we'll hear "you're a bigot if you don't support pedophilia." This of course has been the longtime elite agenda. Actually writing for *Salon* two years ago, Todd Nickerson as the leftist rag's pedo poster boy already has.[clviii] According to Todd, those still having a problem with accepting pedophilia are bigots. Nickerson's series of articles are designed to educate a largely prejudicial society in order to facilitate increasing understanding and acceptance. But as soon as controversial, openly gay, now former *Breitbart* editor-alt right public speaker Milo Yiannopoulos uttered an off the cuff statement in an interview touting the merits of a man-boy pederast relationship (older male in a homosexual tryst with an adolescent male minor), Todd's two year presence on *Salon* was suddenly removed.[clix] While the pedophile was silenced, the so called "painless" pedophile victim Milo abruptly lost his book deal, his Breitbart job and seemingly his career. All this occurred last February just days after the Berkeley campus police complied with a stand down order most likely issued by the mayor,[clx] in effect permitting Soros-hired leftist thugs to riot at will in order to cancel Milo's speech.[clxi] So much for free speech at the birth of the free speech movement.[clxii] It appears Political Correctness has reared its ugly head once again. Or has it? Milo celebrated his Fourth of July publishing and releasing his own book *Dangerous* and three days later it's the #3 Amazon bestseller the same day he files a $10 million lawsuit against his former publisher Simon & Schuster.[clxiii]

In his articles on *Salon*, Nickerson draws numerous conclusions that are faulty, self-serving and seriously dangerous to your child's health. He comes right out and says it, "Pedophiles are no different from gays, and thus deserve civil rights."[clxiv] Sounds like PIE reborn, four decades later. Another gem: "pedophiles don't harm children, society does."[clxv] Todd's contention - as the self-appointed "gentle teacher" who obtains consent from his young child friend/victim (which in reality at age 5, 8, 13 or 15, does not exist), simply wanting to sexually pleasure his little friend/victim, sex would actually be "healthy for the child," claiming no victims at all. But it's society that makes it so sinful and shameful, and that's what harms children, not the adult having sex with them. This twisted logic that a child molester, however gentle, doesn't harm a child is aimed at destigmatizing the child rapist, and instead blame an ignorant, harshly judgmental society for the child abuse. This is so much brainwashing bullshit, and a huge giant step towards normalization, the creeping pedo con job way. Another Nickerson grandiose delusion is he insists that little kids want and need pedophiles. Yep, he believes little children want sex and actually come onto him all the time, but as a "virtuous pedophile," he turns them down, if only to run to the bathroom to relieve his horniness for a five-year old he's been hired to babysit who he's certain lusts for him as much as he for her. Sex between a loving pedophile and a child he believes is a win-win, healthy situation. The guy's a narcissistic sicko.

It's interesting that the conservative *National Review* actually came out with an article defending *Salon* for the pedophile post.[clxvi] With the left-right tag team owned by the same pedophile elite bent on normalizing child molestation, it's all being carefully choreographed to make a socially engineered imprint on the masses. Once the *Review* gave *Salon* the nod, in the next segment Nickerson came out playing the victim's violin:

> *With regard to angry respondents to my article, the greatest amount of flak has come from the far right, who smeared Salon for daring to allow me to speak, as if silencing pedophiles somehow equates to fighting sexual abuse*.

The pedophile's article was entitled, "I'm a pedophile, you're the monsters: My week inside the vile right-wing hate machine."[clxvii] Again, anyone who speaks out against pedophiles is a hate speech spreading bigot out to silence him from having sex with little kids, if only the laws were changed to make it legal. Via *Salon*, elite's decriminalization/normalization propaganda has been delivered to bend and shape our minds. But in the wake of Pizzagate turning into PedoGate,[clxviii] and the unveiling of the pedophile empire parasitically praying on 8 million missing children every year,[clxix] and Trump and his attorney general's vow to start locking child rapists up, suddenly Mr. Nickerson's nowhere to be found. But the relentless mind control programming must go on…

As a noteworthy side note, the organizers behind last February's Berkeley campus riots are linked to NAMBLA,[clxx] which stands for the North American Man/Boy Love Association.[clxxi] Many leftist social justice groups maintain loose coalitions with other likeminded groups. In the US and Canada, NAMBLA is the counterpart to UK's defunct PIE, and an out of the closet organization founded in 1978 that consists of pedophile members actively advocating adult males having "consensual" pedophilic and pederast relationships with male children of any age. The group is lobbying for abolishing all age consent laws and freeing imprisoned child molesters convicted of non-coercive sex with children. An undercover policeman infiltrated the group in 1995 and determined that its membership rolls numbered 1,100.[clxxii] For the most part, NAMBLA has been ostracized by the LGBT community and in recent years its membership has decreased significantly. Many former members are now active in online websites although NAMBLA reportedly maintains operations in New York and San Francisco.

Though NAMBLA apparently never attracted political movers and shakers like the four PIE supporters who rose to lofty influential heights within the UK government, of course inside the American government there are already loads of pedophiles subversively pushing the same derelict agenda to legalize and normalize. But in contrast to UK, they've managed to keep a fairly low profile. However, in 2015 former US House Majority Leader Tom DeLay made news claiming that he had managed to secure a memo from the Obama Justice Department that listed the agenda to legalize a dozen "perversions":

They're now going to go after 12 new perversions. Things like bestiality, polygamy, having sex with little boys and making that legal.[clxxiii]

DeLay announced this bombshell just four days after the Supreme Court made gay marriage legal. The former GOP honcho also added that the Justice Department already has an aggressive strategy in place to go after any churches or religious organizations that may attempt to oppose these incredibly sick sexual behaviors. Though this accusation sounds unbelievable, knowing that Satan worshipping pedophiles rule the world, none of this should come as such a shock. It's just more evidence that those in power will sink to shameless depths of depravity in their lust for absolute power and control.

LGBT lover Barack Obama with his federalized Common Core state bribe[clxxiv] and mass education dumb down,[clxxv] insists five-year old kindergarteners are ready for sex education.[clxxvi] This sexualized enculturation of children as standard inoculation[clxxvii] is the mental equivalent to the elite's weaponized campaign mandating poisonous vaccines that devastate children and their families around the world.[clxxviii] All this warm and fuzzy Orwellian stuff, mandating kids' exposure to perversion and death, is the eugenics endgame of a warped, inversed society that's harmful to children's early conditioning and psychological development.[clxxix] And throughout our culture today, it's rampantly spreading like an out of control cancer, subversively intended to totally usurp parental rights that rightfully give them the responsibility and authority to teach their own kids about sexuality at a time when they deem age appropriate and far more healthy for their children.[clxxx]

On a related topic, Obama's VP Biden has to be a pedophile, based on dozens of videos showing him on full display lasciviously pawing and compulsively groping every little girl within reach.[clxxxi] It's more than evident that old Joe Biden's got a serious problem, becoming totally inappropriate with cameras rolling in front of millions who see him in action, the dirty old man just cannot for the life of him keep his hands off little girls, nor his pervert lips from whispering dirty sweet little nothings in their ears. In one video, it's all too obvious that future Attorney General Sessions knows that Biden's a molester as he irritatingly slaps Biden's hand away from a small girl he protectively ushers away from the disappointed fondler.[clxxxii]

Speaking of objectifying little girls as sex objects to fondle and marvel at, the beauty pageants for four and five year olds adorned in heavy makeup and scantily clad outfits exuding a twisted adult's idea of sexuality is another distorted, sick brainwash imposed on young children that's highly detrimental to their developmental health,[clxxxiii] and of course eye candy for the pedo crowd. Again, by insidious, endless repetition the agenda is inculcating the subliminal message that it’s okay for adults to have sex with little children, if it’s done properly by a self-appointed expert - like the “child loving” pedophile Todd Nickerson. All this is demented propaganda. The toxic brainwash of our young is as close as an iPad or TV away, 24/7 poisoning the minds and lives of our children as creeping pedophilic mass mind control.[clxxxiv]

Yahoo showcases an illustrative piece written by a mother who is joyously turning her nine year old daughter into a sex object of adornment for Halloween, not so much for her child’s delight as her own, admitting it’s a couple years premature for her daughter’s own natural inclination to be sexy.[clxxxv] Yet in the next breath mom contradicts herself several times claiming how normal it is for her “tween” to “explore her sexuality.” How about how abnormal and hideously perverse it is for a parent to sexualize her 9-year old kid, turning her into a little showpiece harlot while acknowledging the horde of pedophile pervs out there just waiting to pounce on her. Again, the classic child beauty pageant syndrome where mothers compulsively dress up their little girls like hookers and publicly put them on display, not so much for the health and well-being of the little girl, but for the vicarious kinky gratification of the selfish parent. But as the champion of twisted social media warriors everywhere, *Yahoo Parenting News* approves, so it must be normal.

Demonstrating solidarity with the pedophilia normalizers, *Twitter, Yahoo* and no doubt *Google, Facebook* and *Reddit* as social warrior bastions and “fake news” gatekeepers[clxxxvi] are doing their part to “pedophilize” America by militantly taking up the cause of pushing pedophile rights. Prominent *Twitter* user Sarah Nyberg was outed as the transsexual pedophile formerly known as Nicholas by another *Twitter* user.[clxxxvii] So *Twitter* suspended the account of the exposer of truth while Sarah the victim was barraged by dozens of fellow social justice warriors rallying to her cause. A journalist at the *Houston Press* and *Cracked.com* even sent the pedophile a photo of his daughter just to cheer her up by apparently turning her on.

This creeping movement towards normalized legal pedophilia has also been aided along the way by passage of a series of laws in the last decade that blur the lines further.[clxxxviii] In many states 13- and 14-year old girls are now authorized to receive abortions without parental consent or any police involvement. The "Romeo and Juliet" laws springing up around the nation[clxxxix] empower underage girls to freely engage in consensual sex with potential older male adult predators (as long as the age gap is less than 5 years). A bill that would have forced rape and incest victims to report the crime to law enforcement prior to attaining an abortion was voted down.

Between the so called experts - the psychiatrists and psychologists - insisting that pedophilia is a natural born sexual orientation like homosexuality and heterosexuality,[cxc] backed by a number of likeminded professors from the academia world in full agreement, and "virtuous pedophiles" like Todd Nickserson, pedophile victim Milo Y.'s pro-pederast statement, and unvirtuous pedophiles personified by NAMBLA and the Obama administration, all seem to be simultaneously getting behind the singular theme that consensual pedophilic relations don't necessarily cause harm to children. Add reinforcing research results from a 1987 Dutch study claiming that a sample of boys in pedophilic relationships felt positive about them and a more recent Northwestern meta-study from 1998-2000 asserting that pederast relationships when entered voluntarily are "nearly uncorrelated with undesirable outcomes," and we have a collective totality from all these trends and unfolding developments in the West paving the way towards normalization and decriminalization of pedophilia.

It should be pointed out that there is no current consensus amongst the scientific community that maintains pedophilia is a sexual orientation or neurological predisposition just because new research receiving lots more press these days “suggests” so.[cxci] The “I was born this way” mindset can become a convenient excuse unintentionally propagated by experts leaning toward the nature etiology as the cause. However, this view is challenged and opposed by a number of mental health professionals who are adherents of the belief that pedophilia is more a learned condition, potentially caused or exacerbated by any number of biological, developmental or environmental factors such as childhood abuse, early childhood experience, cognitive distortions, poor impulse control, lack of social skills, isolation, absence of an adequate social support system, psychopathy.[cxcii] Pedophilia as a mental disorder does not preclude offenders from taking moral responsibility for their actions.[cxciii] This could merely be a deceptive ploy attempting to silence children as the real victims by turning perpetrators into grossly misunderstood, wrongfully persecuted victims of a fate they never chose or can control, ultimately blaming society for only increasing child abuse by others’ harsh punitive treatment and stigmatization toward pedophiles. An irrefutable counterargument to the “I was born this way” deference is simply asking the question, if some individuals were born with homicidal thoughts, would it grant them the right to commit murder?

The only agreed upon assumption shared by both the “nature vs. nurture” camps is that more research is necessary to learn the true etiology of this mental disorder. The movement pushing pedophilia as a fixed, involuntary, biological condition is being used as a convenient rationale to promote the false notion that like heterosexuality and homosexuality, it’s simply a birthright that should be accepted as another normalized variant on human sexuality. This slippery paraphilic slope will then lead to bestiality/zoophilia, then after that it will be necrophilia’s turn, as society’s descends deeper into Luciferian hell.

Another example is how acceptance of pedophilia has seeped into US military policy and doctrine under the amoral leftist commander-in-chief Obama. The directives from the Pentagon ordered US troops in Afghanistan to respectfully ignore the Afghan bacha bazi (boy play) custom where Afghan allied commanders regularly sexually abuse young Afghan boys and girls.[cxciv] American GI’s reported that they were supposed to pretend they weren’t hearing the screams at night coming from little boys being raped within earshot even on US military bases by Afghan pedophiles because it would undermine local credibility and authority of the leaders the US was training and placing in charge. When an incident occurred with a Green Beret sergeant roughing up an Afghan commander for his sexually abusing children, it was the American warrior with a conscience who was punished, not the pedophile.[cxcv]

Leave it to the liberal left hipster crowd of Sweden to take acceptance of pedophilia and sexual deviance to a whole new level of lunacy. The progressive Scandinavian nation’s Liberal Youth League recently made official its endorsement of necrophilia (sex with dead corpses), polygamy, child pornography and incest.[cxcvi] Add to this list of “progressive” tolerance the youth party’s already embraced pro-position on bestiality and you have the embodiment of today’s upside down world of anything goes perversion. Sodom and Gomorrah never left. It’s in Sweden.

The pedophilic ruling elite’s biggest weapons of mass destruction are polluting the minds of the masses through entertainment industry and MSM propaganda,[cxcvii] nefariously engaging in mind control to normalize pedophilia as yet another legal lifestyle choice and social justice birthright.[cxcviii] The social justice warrior class, so easily manipulated by the billion$ from George Soros, are targeted as unsuspecting mind control victims, thoroughly brainwashed by the flood of leftist propaganda that elitist pedophiles utilize to win over clueless hipster generations that are amassing in July to riot with intent to overthrow by any means necessary the only anti-child sex abuse president the US has had.[cxcix] The enemy of both the American people and Trump is running scared with a "him or me" mentality, which is why the elites are working overtime to incite a second civil war and mind control the masses into believing pedophilia crimes are normal and harmless.

The father of American propaganda, Edward Bernays,[cc] wrote in 1928 nearly a century ago in his seminal book *Propaganda*:

> *The conscious and intelligent manipulation of the organized habits and opinions of the masses is an important element in democratic society. Those who manipulate this unseen mechanism of society constitute an invisible government which is the true ruling power of our country. We are governed, our minds are molded, our tastes formed, and our ideas suggested, largely by men we have never heard of… It is they who pull the wires that control the public mind*.[cci]

Like the Orwellian semantics game as another weaponized device within the propaganda machine, pedophilia has become the euphemistic term now deceitfully being redefined as "attraction to minors," conveniently deployed new language to sanitize the down and dirty truth of child rape, sodomy and exploitation that constitute criminal pedophilic acts and child pornography.[ccii] Changes in language and meaning play a significant role in modifying public opinion, perception and belief. An organization calling itself B4U-Act, comprised supposedly of mental health professionals, began in 2003 renaming pedophiles “minor attracted people” in its inexorable drive to normalize and legalize child rape.[cciii]

Unfortunately in today’s culture we have is a hipster crowd of “new age” moral relativists who espouse an “anything goes” philosophy. They’ve removed the entire concept of right versus wrong right out of our vocabulary and consciousness. Yet this damaging, anything but “truth-bomb” is contaminating young impressionable minds, especially when instilled early, potentially becoming irreparable. If one grows up without a strong moral foundation, minus any sense of right and wrong, one is far more apt to make unhealthy choices both detrimental to oneself as well as to others.[cciv] But then that’s the elite’s whole point. The moral relativism of our times embodies contrite expressions like “who’s to judge?” or “that’s your truth, someone else’s might be different,” “everything is relative,” “if it feels right, do it” or “life is made of shades of gray, and there are no black and white absolutes.”[ccv] All these perspectives convey a similarly common world view that clouds and obscures the fundamental issue of right and wrong, subtly juxtapositioning pedophilia to be promoted as an amenable, inalienable individual right and choice.

As the mainstream purveyors of “fake news,” *CNN*, *CBS*, *Associated Press*, the *Washington Post* and *New York Times* et al are news outlets whose job is at all cost to protect the pedophiles by never reporting pedophilia a global epidemic, much less that it’s controlled and operated by the pedo-elite and their pedo-puppet minions in government and entertainment. Despite Trump and company appears to be making it a priority to bust global child sex trafficking networks,[ccvi] arresting over 3,000 suspects in his first three months as president,[ccvii] lame stream continues to deny and lie as if all those past undisputed child abuse scandals never ever happened. In February this year the CIA that runs *WaPo*[ccviii] even hired Pizzagate suspect himself John Podesta as a featured columnist.[ccix]

Another notorious attempt by the six oligarch owned and controlled mainstream media giants to upgrade the criminal image of the pedophile was a *New York Times* op/ed piece from October 2014 entitled “Pedophilia: A Disorder, Not a Crime” written by a Rutgers law professor, another pedo apologist from ivory tower academia.[ccx] After running through the usual pity party pseudo-science postulates of a condition that happens to pedos as victims, despite the poor efficacy of treatment, the author does make one valid point at the very end:

Acknowledging that pedophiles have a mental disorder, and removing the obstacles to their coming forward and ***seeking help****, is not only the right thing to do, but it would also advance efforts to protect children from harm*. [Boldface mine]

Turning from media to entertainment, most of the Hollywood moguls and many of today’s biggest superstars in the film, television and music industry are pedophiles,[ccxi] or, like so many politicians, are compromised ones by sexual blackmail. Because entertainment icons are the prime conduits of mass mind control, wielding the power to influence and control potentially billions of people on this planet, they too are systematically targeted, mind controlled[ccxii] and misused and abused especially for resisting[ccxiii] their diabolical purpose to spew out satanic perversion and pornography designed to make pedophilia seem clean and acceptable by comparison. Anything wicked goes, in fact they’re pit in competition for who can come off as the most wicked in Satan’s Hollywood.

Former child actors like Corey Feldman[ccxiv] and Elijah Wood have been vocal of the rampant, notorious abuses suffered by young vulnerable child actors.[ccxv] Feldman's best friend was the now deceased Corey Haim who was violently raped at age 11 and died of drug overdose at age 38.[ccxvi] The powerfully moving documentary "An Open Secret"[ccxvii] chronicles the plight of victimized children in Hollywood[ccxviii] and how their sexual predators lurking throughout the industry use alcohol and drugs to intoxicate to then sodomize vulnerable victims. Both Open Secret and Corey Haim graphically illustrate how being sodomized by rapists who remain free taunts and gnaws at victims, often turning to drugs and alcohol to self-medicate and cope with their post-traumatic demons that never leave, only to have their lives tragically cut short way ahead of their time, 20 years on average.[ccxix] How dare those pedo-loving APA shrinks lying through their teeth in 1998, claiming no ill effects from childhood sexual abuse!

To the child abusing publicists, photographers, directors, producers[ccxx] and other adult actors, kids are fair game. Because the news media industry, the television industry, the film industry and the music industry are all pretty much owned by the same mass media moguls, it becomes easy for those who own and control Hollywood to remain above the law,[ccxxi] especially when police are often pedophiles themselves or under strict control of the perps sitting atop the Sodom and Gomorrah cesspool.

Then with the briefest glimpse of any typical programming content from TV, film, music[ccxxii] and video gaming, one can readily see the graphic sex and violence saturating every entertainment medium, including more in our face satanic imagery,[ccxxiii] and it becomes blatantly evident that those who run Hollywood are operating from the demonic dark side.[ccxxiv] An anything goes depravity and perversion are depicted throughout every so called artistic medium within the industry. At great risk brave entertainment insiders and whistleblowers are beginning to emerge exposing demonic child sacrifice on altars.[ccxxv] In recent decades a growing number of films have featured pedophilic relationships followed by typically favorable reviews from papers like the *NYT,* generally validating or leaning towards pedophilia as a viable life choice within the naturally complicated world of human desire and sexual intimacy.[ccxxvi] The aim of the Hollywood propaganda machine is to pump out subliminal if not overt messages to present pedophilia as increasingly more commonplace and acceptable.

The enormously successful and powerful Disney Company (parent to *ABC*) has marketed its multiplicity of products and venues primarily for children's consumption for the last 90 years. But during the last couple decades, the old 33 degree Freemason's Walt Disney Company has become highly suspect for its constant encrypted hidden sexual themes promoting homosexuality and pedophilia galore. In 1998 40% of its employees were leaked out by CEO Michael Eisner to be gay, no doubt a sizeable majority by now.[ccxxvii] Whereas for many years the incessant gay cues were subtle and usually hidden, this year's remake of "Beauty and the Beast" includes its first openly gay kissing scene in Disney cinematic history. Now that Disney's gayness is finally graphically out of the closet, this year's Beast has turned into Baphomet himself, complete with large horns, symbolizing Satan.[ccxxviii] The message to children [and adults] - love Satan and the world's riches will be yours.

The Disney Company is no longer the home of family values, anything but. A book exposé entitled *Disney: The Mouse Betrayed*[ccxxix] reveals that Disney has a major pedophile problem in its midst amongst employees working in all facets of the business, from its animation department to costumes at the Disney studio, Disney World in Florida and Disneyland in Southern California.[ccxxx] Countless Disney workers have been arrested for sexually abusing children. And the company has a law enforcement reputation for willfully obstructing the ongoing investigations. Additionally, Disney also owns one of the largest soft porn distributors, apparently maintaining exclusive contracts with the industry's most prominent porn stars.

Just as in 1776 with Rothschild money, Illuminati founder Adam Weishaupt targeted both family and religion as primary obstacles to worldwide domination and control,[ccxxxi] so too is Disney now being used as a subversive, weaponized Trojan horse spreading constant subliminal messages designed to undermine and destroy both family and religious values.[ccxxxii] Hyper-sexualization of young girls and age-inappropriate sexual innuendo have become running Disney themes in all their movies and products for some time now. The latest example is the Disney toy that's one big phallic penis, perfect for early indoctrination targeting future pedophile victims.[ccxxxiii] Needless to say, the innocence of the Bambi years died decades ago.

Now that I have unveiled the elite's demonic design to make pedophilia both a normalized life choice and legal right, removing it as a serious mental sickness and egregious crime that it is, the next chapters will expose the elite's bloodlust for sodomizing and sacrificing children from ancient times to the present, led by Catholic Church as the Synagogue of Satan that for centuries has enabled and shielded pedophiles around the world.

---

[i] Michael L. Brown, "Is Pedophilia Next?" *Askdrbrown.org*, September 23, 2015, https://askdrbrown.org/library/pedophilia-next.

[ii] Michael L. Brown, *A Queer Thing Happened to America: And What a Long Strange Trip It's Been* (Concord, NC: EqualTime Books, 2011), https://www.amazon.com/Queer-Thing-Happened-America-Strange/dp/0615406092/ref=sr_1_1?ie=UTF8&qid=1445972230&sr=8-1&keywords=queer+thing+happened+to+america.

[iii] Jack Minor, "'Gay' Laws Set Stage for Pedophilia 'Rights,'" *World Net Daily*, July 18, 2013, http://www.wnd.com/2013/07/gay-laws-set-stage-for-pedophilia-rights/.

[iv] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, *Deeper Insights into the Illuminati Formula* (Seattle: CreateSpace Independent Publishing Platform, 2010), https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol2/part09.htm.

[v] Jennifer Wirth, "The CIA Subjected Unwitting People to These Twisted Experiments," *allday.com*, http://www.allday.com/the-cia-subjected-unwitting-people-to-these-twisted-experiments-2180823100.html.

[vi] Andrew Gilligan, "'Paedophilia Is Natural and Normal for Males," *The Telegraph*, July 5, 2014, http://www.telegraph.co.uk/comment/10948796/Paedophilia-is-natural-and-normal-for-males.html.

[vii] Jack Minor, http://www.wnd.com/2013/07/gay-laws-set-stage-for-pedophilia-rights/.

[viii] Michael Snyder, "The Next Stock Market Crash will be Blamed on Trump but It's the Fed's Fault," *ZeroHedge*, May 30, 2017, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2017-05-30/next-stock-market-crash-will-be-blamed-trump-it-will-be-feds-fault.

[ix] Joachim Hagopian, "PedoGate Update: The Global Elite's Pedophile Empire is Crumbling - But Will It Ever Crash?" *sott.net*, March 21, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/345836-PedoGate-Update-The-Global-Elites-Pedophile-Empire-is-Crumbling-But-Will-it-Ever-Crash.

[x] Gary Bentley, "Pence is Clearly Laying the Ground Work for Taking over for Donald Trump," *The Ring of Fire*, May 21, 2017, https://trofire.com/2017/05/21/pence-clearly-laying-groundwork-take-donald-trump/.

[xi] Kyle Edwards, "Pedophilia, Preemptive Imprisonment, and the Ethics of Predisposition," *Practical Ethics*, January 21, 2013, http://blog.practicalethics.ox.ac.uk/2013/01/pedophilia-preemptive-imprisonment-and-the-ethics-of-predisposition/.

[xii] Diana Tourjee, "Most Child Sex Abusers are Not Pedophiles, Expert Says," *Vice*, April 5, 2016, https://broadly.vice.com/en_us/article/mgmzwn/most-child-sex-abusers-are-not-pedophiles-expert-says.

[xiii] Joachim Hagopian, "The Ruling Elite's Pedophile Bloodlust for Children: From Antiquity to Today," *The Millennium Report*, April 28, 2017, http://themillenniumreport.com/2017/04/ruling-elites-pedophile-bloodlust-for-children-from-antiquity-to-today/.

[xiv] Joachim Hagopian, https://www.sott.net/article/345836-PedoGate-Update-The-Global-Elites-Pedophile-Empire-is-Crumbling-But-Will-it-Ever-Crash.

[xv] "The Mountain of Evidence for a Massive International Pedophile Ring Protected by Police and Intelligence Agencies," *The Millennium Report*, December 13, 2016, http://themillenniumreport.com/2016/12/the-mountain-of-evidence-for-a-massive-international-pedophile-ring-protected-by-police-and-intelligence-agencies/.

[xvi] Joseph Curl, "Sex Trafficking Arrests Soar under Trump: MSM Completely Ignores," *The Daily Wire*, March 7, 2017, http://www.dailywire.com/news/14176/sex-trafficking-arrests-soar-under-trump-msm-joseph-curl.

[xvii] Dr. Eowyn, "Attorney General Jeff Sessions: Fight against 'Evil' Pedophiles a Top Priority," *Fellowship of the Minds*, June 7, 2017, https://fellowshipoftheminds.com/2017/06/07/attorney-general-jeff-sessions-fight-against-evil-pedophiles-a-top-priority/.

[xviii] David Barnhizer, "'Linguistic Cleansing' as Social Engineering," *Law Next*, September 28, 2015, http://lawnext.org/linguistic-cleansing-as-social-engineering/.

[xix] "LGBTTTT AGENDA: Debasing American Society and Corrupting the Planetary Civilization," *State of the Nation*, May 3, 2016, http://stateofthenation2012.com/?p=37135.

[xx] Jeff Deist, "'Political Correctness' is about Control, Not Etiquette," *ZeroHedge*, December 28, 2015, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2015-12-28/political-correctness-about-control-not-etiquette.

[xxi] Tyler Durden, "Putin: 'Russian Meddling Is a Fiction Democrats Invented to Divert Blame for Their Defeat,'" *ZeroHedge*, May 30, 2017, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2017-05-30/putin-russian-meddling-fiction-democrats-invented-divert-blame-their-defeat.

[xxii] Rowan Scarborough, "Democrats Cling to Intel Dossier Riddled with Fiction in Desperate Attempt to Take down Trump," *The Washington Times*, April 23, 2017, http://www.washingtontimes.com/news/2017/apr/23/christopher-steeles-donald-trump-dossier-conflicts/.

[xxiii] Chuck Ross, "Dem Senator Says Russian Hacking May have been 'An Act of War,'" *The Daily Caller*, March 2, 2017, http://dailycaller.com/2017/03/02/dem-senator-says-russian-hacking-may-have-been-an-act-of-war/.

[xxiv] Aleksey Yaroshevsky, "Prominent Russians: Vladimir Putin," *RT Russiapedia*, http://russiapedia.rt.com/prominent-russians/leaders/vladimir-putin/.

[xxv] Baxter Dmitry, “Putin: The ‘New World Order’ Is Normalizing Pedophilia in the West,” *Your News Wire*, December 27, 2016, http://yournewswire.com/putin-new-world-order-pedophilia-west/.

[xxvi] Jay Greenberg, “Putin Warns Trump: ‘Expose Elite Pedophiles or I will Begin Naming Names,’” *Neon Nettle*, July 3, 2017, http://www.neonnettle.com/news/2349-putin-warns-trump-expose-elite-pedophiles-or-i-will-begin-naming-names-.

[xxvii] Joachim Hagopian, “Pizzagate Turned PedoGate Leads to Momentum Surge in Busting Global Child Sex Trafficking Rings,” *sott.net*, February 27, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/343780-Pizzagate-turned-PedoGate-Leads-to-Momentum-Surge-in-Busting-Global-Child-Sex-Trafficking-Rings.

[xxviii] “Trump-Putin Talks Marks First Step in Defusing Tensions over Syria, Ukraine,” *Sputnik*, July 8, 2017, https://sputniknews.com/analysis/201707081055354084-putin-trump-syria-ukraine/.

[xxix] Baxter Dmitry, “FBI: 30% of Washington DC Part of Elite Pedo Ring,” *Your News Wire*, February 6, 2017, http://yournewswire.com/fbi-washington-pedo-ring/.

[xxx] John Hall, “’Powerful Elite’ of at Least 20 Establishment Figures may have been Part of Paedophile Ring that Abused Children for Decades,” *Daily Mail*, July 8, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2684262/Powerful-elite-20-establishment-figures-paedophile-ring-abused-children-decades.html.

[xxxi] Thomas Burrows, “Former Child Sex Slave Sold into Belgian Aristocratic Paedophile Ring where Boys and Girls were Tortured and Killed Reveals the Horrors of Her Five Years of Abuse,” *Daily Mail*, January 19, 2017, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4136536/Former-child-sex-slave-sold-Belgian-recalls-abuse.html#ixzz4WEAw3uPB.

[xxxii] Katherine Frisk, “Origins of the Largest Catholic Pedophile Bust in History,” *Veterans Today*, July 2, 2017, http://www.veteranstoday.com/2017/07/02/origins-of-the-largest-catholic-church-pedophile-bust-in-history/.

[xxxiii] Edward Morgan, “’CIA and Mossad behind Washington DC Pedophile Ring’ - Department of Homeland Security Insider,” *We Are Change*, February 20, 2017, http://prepareforchange.net/2017/02/20/cia-and-mossad-behind-washington-dc-pedophile-ring-department-of-homeland-security-insider/.

[xxxiv] Christian Wolmar, “Looking back to the Great British Paedophile Infiltration Campaign of the 1970’s,” *Independent*, February 27, 2014, http://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/politics/looking-back-to-the-great-british-paedophile-infiltration-campaign-of-the-1970s-9155610.html.

[xxxv] Henry Makow, “Illuminati Sex Slaves Paint Horrifying Picture,” *henrymakow.com*, August 16, 2015, https://www.henrymakow.com/000683.html.

[xxxvi] Matt Agorist, “Police Chief Confirms Former Prime Minister Raped Dozens of Children and Government ‘Covered it up,’” *The Free Thought Project*, February 19, 2017, http://thefreethoughtproject.com/breaking-fmr-uk-prime-minister-heath-pedophilia/.

[xxxvii] Makia Freeman, “Satanic Pedophilia Network Exposed (Just like in the USA),” *The Freedom Articles*, February 12, 2016, http://freedom-articles.toolsforfreedom.com/satanic-pedophilia-network-exposed-australia/.

[xxxviii] Matt Agorist, “Former House Speaker Says Child He Raped Should Pay Back Hush Money since He Broke His Silence,” *The Free Thought Project*, January 22, 2017, http://thefreethoughtproject.com/hastert-hush-money-child-rapist/.

[xxxix] David Benkof, “Are Three Democratic Senators Confirmed Pedophiles?” *The Daily Caller*, November 3, 2015, http://dailycaller.com/2015/11/03/are-three-democratic-senators-confirmed-pedophiles/.

[xl] Jay Greenberg, “PedoGate: US Senator Arrested on Pedophile Charges,” *Neon Nettle*, March 16, 2017, http://www.neonnettle.com/news/1979-pedogate-us-senator-arrested-on-pedophile-charges.

[xli] “A Partial List of Democratic Pedophiles,” *Free Republic*, March 6, 2008, http://www.freerepublic.com/focus/f-news/1980959/posts.

[xlii] Mike Cernovich, “Ben Sasse and #Never Trump’s Pedophile Problem,” *Danger and Play*, May 5, 2016, https://www.dangerandplay.com/2016/05/05/ben-sasse-and-nevertrumps-pedophile-problem/.

[xliii] Nico Hines, “How Thatcher’s MI5 Chief Protected a Pedophile Member of Parliament,” *Daily Beast*, July 23, 2015, http://www.thedailybeast.com/how-thatchers-mi5-spy-chief-protected-a-pedophile-member-of-parliament.

[xliv] Henry Makow, “When Pedophile Judges Fear Exposure,” *Rense.com*, May 7, 2008, http://www.rense.com/general81/rxk.htm.

[xlv] Larry Welborn, “Ex-Judge Kline Gets Prison,” *Orange County Register*, February 20, 2007, http://www.ocregister.com/2007/02/20/ex-judge-kline-gets-prison/.

[xlvi] Joachim Hagopian, “”One US Marine Colonel’s Wife’s Revelations: Sins of the Pedophile Cabal,” *American Empire Exposed*, June 17, 2017, http://empireexposed.blogspot.co.id/2017/06/one-us-marine-colonels-wifes.html.

[xlvii] Kalee Brown, “Ex-US General and VP of Military Contractor with Ties to Child Sex Trafficking Charged with Rape of a Child,” *Collective Evolution*, April 20, 2017, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2017/04/20/ex-us-general-vp-of-military-contractor-with-ties-to-child-sex-trafficking-charged-with-rape-of-a-child/.

[xlviii] Martin Evans, “Former Police Chief Jailed for Paedophile Offences Dies in Hospital,” *The Telegraph*, December 16, 2016, http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2016/12/15/former-police-chief-jailed-paedophile-offences-dies-hospital/.

[xlix] Abby Simons, “William Jacobs: The Minneapolis Pedophile No One Stopped,” *Star Tribune*, September 10, 2012, http://www.startribune.com/william-jacobs-the-minneapolis-pedophile-no-one-stopped/169053916/.

[l] Katie Mansfield, “Top Police Officers in IPCC Probe over Shambolic Westminster Paedophile Ring Investigation,” *Express*, November 16, 2016, http://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/733134/operation-midland-police-ipcc-westminster-paedophile-ring-investigation.

[li] “Hank Abraham,” *Law and Order Wiki*, http://lawandorder.wikia.com/wiki/Hank_Abraham.

[lii] Sean Adl-Tabatabai, “FBI: Rumors about Clinton Pedophile Ring are True,” *Your News Wire*, November 18, 2016, http://yournewswire.com/fbi-clinton-pedophile-ring-true/.

[liii] Christina Boyle, “Britain Investigates Alleged VIP Pedophile Ring from the 70’s and 80’s,” *Los Angeles Times*, December 23, 2014, http://www.latimes.com/world/europe/la-fg-britain-pedophile-allegations-20141223-story.html.

[liv] “Presidents, Popes, Queen, Elite Illuminati Pedophilia and Child Sacrifice,” *The Millennium Report*, December 28, 2016, http://themillenniumreport.com/2016/12/presidents-popes-queen-elite-illuminati-pedophilia-and-child-sacrifice/.

[lv] Carl Grinde, “Bush, Clinton, CIA, Cocaine, Crack and US Governmental Drug Dealing,” *carlg.org*, December 2012, http://www.carlg.org/engcia.html.

[lvi] Malachy, “Elitist Institutions – The Networks for Global Control,” *ClimateChanged.co.uk* , May 14, 2016, http://climatechanged.co.uk/elitist-institutions-networks-global-control/.

[lvii] Fritz Springmeier, “13 Bloodlines of the Illuminati,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/bloodlines/.

[lviii] Fritz Springmeier, “The Rothschild Bloodline,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/bloodlines/rothschild.htm.

[lix] Fritz Springmeier, “The Rockefeller Bloodline,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/bloodlines/rockefeller.htm.

[lx] Fritz Springmeier, “The Merovingian Bloodline,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/bloodlines/merovingian.htm.

[lxi] “McMartin Preschool Case – What Really Happened and the Cover-up,” *ritualabuse.us*, https://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/articles/mcmartin-preschool-case-what-really-happened-and-the-coverup/.

[lxii] Joachim Hagopian, “Military Pedophilia Scandals at Daycare Centers,” *American Empire Exposed*, June 6. 2017, http://empireexposed.blogspot.co.id/2017/06/military-pedophilia-scandals-at-daycare.html.

[lxiii] “The Franklin Cover-up Scandal,” *What Really Happened*, http://www.whatreallyhappened.com/WRHARTICLES/Franklin/FranklinCoverup/franklin.htm.

[lxiv] “The Story of the CIA's ‘Finders’ Abduction Operation,” *educate-yourself.org*, July 2005, http://educate-yourself.org/cn/ciadrugsabusemurder.shtml.

[lxv] Harriet Fraad, “What Really behind the Catholic Church’s Sexual Abuse Problem,” *Alternet*, May 19, 2010, http://www.alternet.org/story/146920/what%27s_really_behind_the_catholic_church%27s_sexual_abuse_problem.

[lxvi] “Catholic Church Sex Abuse Scandals around the World,” *BBC News*, September 14, 2010, http://www.bbc.com/news/10407559.

[lxvii] Alexander Stille, “What Pope Benedict Knew about Abuse in the Catholic Church,” *The New Yorker*, December 16, 2016, http://www.newyorker.com/news/news-desk/what-pope-benedict-knew-about-abuse-in-the-catholic-church.

[lxviii] Katherine Frisk, http://www.veteranstoday.com/2017/07/02/origins-of-the-largest-catholic-church-pedophile-bust-in-history/.

[lxix] Thomas Burrows and Brianne Tolj, “Vatican Finance Chief is Charged with 'Multiple' Sex Offences: Cardinal who is Third Highest Figure in Catholic Church is Ordered to Leave Rome and Appear in Australian Court over Historic Claims,” *Daily Mail*, June 30, 2017, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4649004/Cardinal-George-Pell-summoned-sex-abuse-investigation.html.

[lxx] Julian Robinson, “Vatican Police ‘Break up Drug-Fueled Gay Orgy at Home of Secretary of one of Pope Francis's Key Advisers,’” *Daily Mail*, July 5, 2017, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4667098/Vatican-police-break-gay-orgy-apartment.html.

[lxxi] Leo Zagami, “Pope Francis: You are Fired,” *leozagami.com*, July 2, 2017, http://leozagami.com/2017/07/02/pope-francis-you-are-fired/.

[lxxii] Terrence McCoy, “How BBC Star Jimmy Savile Allegedly Got away with Abusing 500 Children and Sex with Dead Bodies” *The Washington Post*, June 27, 2014, https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/morning-mix/wp/2014/06/27/how-bbc-star-jimmy-savile-got-away-with-allegedely-abusing-500-children-and-sex-with-dead-bodies/?utm_term=.4fe53932da43.

[lxxiii] Brandon Turbeville, “The Prince and the Pedophile: Charles’ Connections to Pedophilia Networks,” *Activist Post*, November 16, 2012, http://www.activistpost.com/2012/11/the-prince-and-pedophile-charles.html.

[lxxiv] “The Mountain of Evidence for a Massive International Pedophile Ring Protected by Police and Intelligence Agencies,” http://themillenniumreport.com/2016/12/the-mountain-of-evidence-for-a-massive-international-pedophile-ring-protected-by-police-and-intelligence-agencies/.

[lxxv] “A Summary of Human Trafficking by the United States and the United Nations,” *newsofinterest.tv*, September 14, 2010, http://www.newsofinterest.tv/politics/human_trafficking/index.php.

[lxxvi] Roe Bubar, JoAnne Cook and Pat Sekaquaptewa, “A Victim Centered Approach to Crimes against American Indian and Alaska Native Children,” *Tribal Court Clearinghouse*, August 2008, http://www.tribal-institute.org/lists/ChildrensCriminalCode.htm .

[lxxvii] “Sex Slavery/Trafficking: Frequently Asked Questions,” *soroptimist.org*, http://www.soroptimist.org/trafficking/faq.html.

[lxxviii] “Did PM Tony Blair Cover up Paedophile Scandal?” *sott.net*, October 10, 2012, https://www.sott.net/article/253318-Did-PM-Tony-Blair-cover-up-paedophile-scandal-List-of-child-sex-offenders-in-British-government.

[lxxix] Jay Greenberg, “Bush Covered up Elite Washington DC Pedophile Ring during Presidency,” *Neon Nettle*, March 19, 2017, http://www.neonnettle.com/features/799-bush-covered-up-elite-washington-d-c-pedophile-rBing-during-presidency.

[lxxx] Brandy Zadrozny, “The Billionaire Pedophile who could Take down Donald Trump and Hillary Clinton,” *Daily Beast*, June 30, 2016, http://www.thedailybeast.com/the-billionaire-pedophile-who-could-bring-down-donald-trump-and-hillary-clinton.

[lxxxi] Gordon Duff, “Exclusive: Trump, Acosta – Epstein Pedophile Plea Deal,” *Veterans Today*, March 19, 2017, http://www.veteranstoday.com/2017/03/19/exclusive-investigation-trump-acosta-epstein-pedophile-plea-deal/.

[lxxxii] Selwyn Duke, “Dennis Hastert, who Abused Teenage Boys, is just Tip of Iceberg,” *The New American*, April 28, 2016, https://www.thenewamerican.com/usnews/crime/item/23079-dennis-hastert-who-abused-teenage-boys-is-just-tip-of-iceberg.

[lxxxiii] “Penn State Pedophilia Case,” *the #pizzagate wiki*, http://pizzagate.wiki/Penn_State_Pedophilia_Scandal.

[lxxxiv] Vandita, “The Child Porn Pentagon-NSA-CIA Link ’They’ Don’t Want You to Know,” *anonhq.com*, January 14, 2017, http://anonhq.com/the-child-porn-pentagon-nsa-cia-link-they-dont-want-you-to-know/.

[lxxxv] Joe Quinn, “The Story of Alisa and Gabriel Dearman and Pedophilia in High Places,” *sott.net*, February 9, 2015, https://www.sott.net/article/292461-The-story-of-Alisa-and-Gabriel-Dearman-and-pedophilia-in-high-places.

[lxxxvi] Daniel Nussbaum, Elijah Wood: Hollywood Full of ‘Organized’ Child Sex Abuse,” *Breitbart*, May 22, 2016, http://www.breitbart.com/big-hollywood/2016/05/22/elijah-wood-hollywood-protecting-pedophiles-ranks/.

[lxxxvii] Joachim Hagopian, “Pizzagate: Podesta Pedo Perps and Clinton’s International Child Sex Trafficking Ring Exposed,” *sott.net*, December 2, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/335512-Pizzagate-Podesta-pedo-perps-and-Clintons-international-child-sex-trafficking-ring-exposed.

[lxxxviii] Joachim Hagopian, https://www.sott.net/article/343780-Pizzagate-turned-PedoGate-Leads-to-Momentum-Surge-in-Busting-Global-Child-Sex-Trafficking-Rings.

[lxxxix] Ron Patton, “The Evolution of MK Ultra Project Monarch Nazi Mind Control,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mindcon02.htm.

[xc] “The Selection and Preparation of the Victim,” *orgoneblasters.com*, http://www.orgoneblasters.com/mindcontrol-choosingthevictim.htm.

[xci] Freeman, “Celebrities under Mind Control,” *freemantv.com*, July 1, 2013, http://freemantv.com/celebrities-under-mind-control-release-the-stars-weird-stuff/.

[xcii] Russ Dizdar, “Satanic Super Soldiers: The Sinister Reality of Trauma Based Mind Control,” *Paranoia Magazine*, http://www.paranoiamagazine.com/2013/06/satanic-super-soldiers-the-sinister-reality-of-trauma-based-mind-control/.

[xciii] Will Filer, “NSA Mind Control and Psyops,” *apfn.org*, http://www.apfn.org/apfn/MC.htm.

[xciv] “The Illuminati,” *asis.com*, http://asis.com/stag/starchiv/illumin.html.

[xcv] David Kupelian, “Yes, Barack Obama Really is a Manchurian Candidate,” *World Net Daily*, October 29, 2008, http://www.wnd.com/2008/10/79411/.

[xcvi] “Fritz Springmeier CIA Bill Clinton Mind Control,” YouTube Video, 1:59, posted by infamous on August 13, 2011, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Zt7r_XFMT_M.

[xcvii] Jay Syrmopoulos, “Mainstream Media Finally Exposes Elite Pedophile Rings in a Horrifying Episode of Dr. Phil,” *The Free Thought Project*, March 22, 2017, http://thefreethoughtproject.com/elite-pedophile-ring-exposed-dr-phil/.

[xcviii] Joachim Hagopian, https://www.sott.net/article/345836-PedoGate-Update-The-Global-Elites-Pedophile-Empire-is-Crumbling-But-Will-it-Ever-Crash.

[xcix] Liz Crokin, “Why the MSM is Ignoring Trump’s Sex Trafficking Busts,” *Townhall*, February 25, 2017, https://townhall.com/columnists/lizcrokin/2017/02/25/why-the-msm-is-ignoring-trumps-sex-trafficking-busts-n2290379.

[c] Ben Nuckols, “Conspiracy Theorists: ‘Pizzagate’ Shooting is just a False Flag,” *Associated Press*, December 9, 2016, https://www.apnews.com/a959c054e4d349a08ea40ed32e0a7c65.

[ci] Cicilia Kang, “Fake News Onslaught Targets Pizzeria as Nest of Child Trafficking,” *The New York Times*, November 21, 2016, https://www.nytimes.com/2016/11/21/technology/fact-check-this-pizzeria-is-not-a-child-trafficking-site.html.

[cii] Caroline Mortimer, “Great Recession Fears as Bankers Warn Next Global Crash could Arrive ‘with a Vengeance,’ *Independent*, June 25, 2017, http://www.independent.co.uk/news/business/news/global-financial-crash-central-bankers-warn-back-with-a-vengeance-china-debt-gdp-ratio-a7807811.html.

[ciii] Tim Marcin, “US Support for Trump’s Impeachment is Way Higher than his Latest Approval Rating,” *Newsweek*, July 3, 2017, http://www.newsweek.com/support-donald-trumps-impeachment-higher-latest-approval-rating-631212.

[civ] Deroy Murdock, “No Facet of the First Amendment Shields Those who Promote the Murder of the President of the United States,” *National Review*, March 25, 2017, http://www.nationalreview.com/article/446110/trump-assassination-threats-investigate-prosecute.

[cv] Neal Baker, Tom Gillespie and Mark Hodge, “Could World War III Actually Happen? How Chemical Warfare and Nuclear Weapons

Could,” *The Sun*, July 7, 2017, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/2070034/world-war-3-chemical-nuclear-weapons-global-conflict/.

[cvi] Daniel Bates, Hiding in secret underground bunkers, eating wild birds and pets and saving secretaries but not wives: How government elites planned to survive a nuclear attack, *Daily Mail*, June 19, 2017, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4618354/How-government-elites-plan-survive-nuclear-attack.html.

[cvii] T. Carter, “Pedophilia and politics: The Dark Truth,” *poletical.com*, December 1, 2016, http://www.poletical.com/pedophilia-and-politics-uk-us-child-abuse.php.

[cviii] Dave Hodges, “Prince Charles, Queen Elizabeth and Pappy Bush are Leaders in Child Trafficking,” *The People’s Voice*, July 14, 2014, http://www.thepeoplesvoice.org/TPV3/Voices.php/2014/07/02/prince-charles-queen-elizabeth-and-pappy.

[cix] Malachy, “The Pyramid of Perverts,” *climatechanged.co.uk*, May 12, 2016, http://climatechanged.co.uk/the-pyramid-of-pedos/.

[cx] Tom de Castella & Tom Heyden, “How did the Pro-Paedophile Group PIE Exist Openly for 10 Years?” *BBC News*, February 27, 2014, http://www.bbc.com/news/magazine-26352378.

[cxi] “P.I.E. – Paedophilia Information Exchange,” *theukdatabase.com*, https://theukdatabase.com/councillorspolitical-party-affiliated/westminster-scandal-114-secret-files-on-paedophile-cases-missing/more-than-10-politicians-on-list-held-by-police-investigating-westminster-paedophile-ring/the-civil-servant-in-the-home-offices-pie-funding-inquiry-and-his-academic-articl es-on-boy-love/p-i-e/.

[cxii] Robert Booth and Helen Pidd, “Lobbying by Paedophile Campaign Revealed,” *The Guardian*, February 26, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2014/feb/26/lobbying-paedophile-campaign-revealed-hewitt.

[cxiii] Tom de Castella & Tom Heyden, http://www.bbc.com/news/magazine-26352378.

[cxiv] Robert Booth and Helen Pidd, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2014/feb/26/lobbying-paedophile-campaign-revealed-hewitt.

[cxv] “Harriet Harman tells Newsnight: PIE Row is a ‘Smear Campaign,’” *The Telegraph*, February 25, 2014,http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/labour/10659726/Harriet-Harman-tells-Newsnight-PIE-row-is-a-smear-campaign.html.

[cxvi] Martin Beckford, “Court Judge and the Child Sex Ring: Adviser to Queen was Founder of Paedophile Support Group to Keep Offenders out of Jail,” *Daily Mail*, March 8, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2576451/High-

court-judge-child-sex-ring-Adviser-Queen-founder-paedophile-support-group-offenders-jail.html.

[cxvii] Georgia Graham, “Patricia Hewitt Called for Age of Consent to be Lowered to Ten,” *The Telegraph*, February 28, 2014, http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/labour/10666875/Patricia-Hewitt-called-for-age-of-consent-to-be-lowered-to-ten.html.

[cxviii] Robert Booth and Helen Pidd, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2014/feb/26/lobbUying-paedophile-campaign-revealed-hewitt.

[cxix] James Fielding and James Murray, “’We Can't Prove Sex with Children does them Harm’ Says Labour-linked NCCL,” *Sunday Express*, March 2, 2014, http://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/462604/We-can-t-prove-sex-with-children-does-them-harm-says-Labour-linked-NCCL.

[cxx] Rebecca Lefort, “Four Labour MP’s Implicated in ‘Cash for Influence’ Scandal,” *The Telegraph*, March 21, 2010, http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/labour/7490787/Four-Labour-MPs-implicated-in-cash-for-influence-scandal.html.

[cxxi] Patricia Hewitt, “Patricia Hewitt’s Full Statement on the Paedophile Information Exchange,” *The Telegraph*, February 27, 2014, http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/10666511/Patricia-Hewitts-full-statement-on-the-Paedophile-Information-Exchange.html.

[cxxii] “Did PM Tony Blair Cover up Paedophile Scandal?” https://www.sott.net/article/253318-Did-PM-Tony-Blair-cover-up-paedophile-scandal-List-of-child-sex-offenders-in-British-government.

[cxxiii] US Justice Department, Attorney General Prepared Remarks at Operation Avalanche Press Conference, August 8, 2001, https://www.justice.gov/archive/ag/speeches/2001/080801childpornography.htm.

[cxxiv] Cesar Chelala, “Bush and Blair Should be Tried for War Crimes,” *Japan Times*, March 16, 2016, http://www.japantimes.co.jp/opinion/2016/03/20/commentary/world-commentary/bush-blair-tried-war-crimes/.

[cxxv] “UK Parliamentary Clerk Charged,” *CNN*, August 30, 2002, http://edition.cnn.com/2002/WORLD/europe/08/30/norway.pornography/.

[cxxvi] Hsaqib, “Dick Cheney was the Real Master-Mind of 9/11 Attacks, Says one Conspiracy Theory,” *The Passive Voices*, September 10, 2012, https://passivevoices.com/2012/09/10/dick-cheney-was-the-real-master-mind-of-911-attacks-says-one-conspiracy-theory/.

[cxxvii] Cathy O'Brien, *Trance Formation of America: The True Life Story pf a CIA Mind Control Slave* (La Vegas: Reality Marking, Inc., 1995), 164-171, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mindcon08.htm.

[cxxviii] Victoria Cavaliere, "Prosecutors Say Ex-House Speaker Hastert Sexually Abused Boys," *Reuters*, April 9, 2016, http://www.reuters.com/article/us-crime-hastert-idUSKCN0X603R.

[cxxix] Michael James, "Tony Blair Caught Protecting an Elite Paedophile Ring," *whale.to*, March 5, 2003, http://www.whale.to/b/tony.html.

[cxxx] Ben Borland, "Claims of VIP Paedophile Ring at Scots Boarding School Aired at Abuse Inquiry," *Sunday Express*, April 30, 2017, http://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/798285/Dunblane-killer-Thomas-Hamilton-paedophile-ring-QVS.

[cxxxi] Jon Stone, "Royal Family Member was Investigated as Part of Paedophile Ring before Cover-up, Ex-Cop Says," *Independent*, March 23, 2015, http://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/politics/royal-family-member-was-investigated-as-part-of-paedophile-ring-before-cover-up-ex-cop-says-10126864.html.

[cxxxii] Christopher Bucktin, "Friends of Prince Andrew's Paedophile Pal Jeffrey Epstein 'Spared Child Sex Charges,'" *Mirror*, July 8, 2015, http://www.mirror.co.uk/news/world-news/friends-prince-andrews-paedophile-pal-6030730.

[cxxxiii] Stephen Glover, "The Left Argue that a Sexual Free-for-all in the 70s Explains their Tolerance of Child Sex Abusers. What Twisted Bunkum," *Daily Mail,* February 27, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/debate/article-2568920/STEPHEN-GLOVER-The-Left-argue-sexual-free-70s-explains-tolerance-child-sex-abusers-What-twisted-bunkum.html.

[cxxxiv] Sonia Poulton, "Paedophile MP's are Mocking British Law," *Sunday Express*, March 2, 2014, http://www.express.co.uk/comment/expresscomment/462601/Paedophile-MPs-are-mocking-British-law.

[cxxxv] Selwyn Duke, "The UK Government Pedophiles who Got away with Spiritual Murder," *The New American*, March 25, 2015, https://www.thenewamerican.com/world-news/europe/item/20520-the-u-k-government-pedophiles-who-got-away-with-spiritual-murder.

[cxxxvi] John Vibes, "Government Conveniently Deleted Entire Database of Evidence Documenting Pedophile Rings," *The Free Thought Project*, October 19, 2015, http://thefreethoughtproject.com/government-investigators-apologize-deleting-evidence-paedophile-ring/.

[cxxxvii] Wesman Todd Shaw, "Henry Kissinger – Architect of the New World Order," *Hub Pages*, June 28, 2017, https://hubpages.com/politics/Henry-

Kissinger-Architect-Of-The-New-World-Order.

[cxxxviii] Cal Thomas, “Hillary’s ‘Deplorable’s and the Left’s Contempt for Traditional Americans,” *Fox News*, September 13, 2016, http://www.foxnews.com/opinion/2016/09/13/cal-thomas-hillarys-deplorables-and-lefts-contempt-for-traditional-americans.html.

[cxxxix] Tom de Castella & Tom Heyden, http://www.bbc.com/news/magazine-26352378.

[cxl] Joe Atwell and Jan Irvin, “Manufacturing the Deadhead: A Product of Social Engineering…,” *Gnostic Media*, May 17, 2013, http://www.gnosticmedia.com/manufacturing-the-deadhead-a-product-of-social-engineering-by-joe-atwill-and-jan-irvin/.

[cxli] Stuart Jeanne Bramhall, “Did the CIA Use Gloria Steinem to Subvert the Feminist Movement?” *stuartjeannebramhall.com*, October 13, 2015, https://stuartjeannebramhall.com/2015/10/13/did-the-cia-use-gloria-steinem-to-subvert-the-feminist-movement/.

[cxlii] Kimberly Chrisman-Campbell, “A Brief History of Unisex Fashion,” *The Atlantic*, April 14, 2015, https://www.theatlantic.com/entertainment/archive/2015/04/when-unisex-was-the-new-black/390168/.

[cxliii] Carolyn M. Moehling, “The American Welfare System and Family Structure: An Historical Perspective,” October 2004, aida.econ.yale.edu/~cmm54/americanwelfare1004.pdf,

[cxliv] “How Americans View Government,” *Pew Research Center*, March 10, 1998, http://www.people-press.org/1998/03/10/how-americans-view-government/.

[cxlv] “The Decline of the Traditional Family,” *Boundless Sociology*, https://www.boundless.com/sociology/textbooks/boundless-sociology-textbook/family-12/recent-changes-in-family-structure-94/the-decline-of-the-traditional-family-533-3394/.

[cxlvi] Aidan Regan, “The Truly Stagnant Class in American Society are Young Men from Low-Income Backgrounds,” *Dublin European Institute*, February 8, 2017, http://europedebate.ie/stuck-middle-misconceptions-american-social-mobility/.

[cxlvii] Michael Peck, “The Real Reason America Lost the War in Vietnam: Japan,” *The National Interest*, March 25, 2017, http://nationalinterest.org/blog/the-buzz/the-real-reason-america-lost-the-war-vietnam-japan-19899?page=show.

[cxlviii] Jerry D. Morelock, “Strategy for Failure: America’s War in Vietnam,” *History Net*, April 14, 2017, http://www.historynet.com/strategy-failure-americas-war-vietnam.htm.

[cxlix] Michael K. Williams, “The War on Drugs is a War on People,” *CNN*, September 22, 2016, http://edition.cnn.com/2016/09/22/opinions/war-on-drugs-michael-k-williams/.

[cl] Julilly Kohler-Hausmann, “Guns and Butter: The Welfare State, the Carceral State, and the Politics of Exclusion in the Postwar United States,” *The Journal of American History* 102, no.1 (June 2015): 87-99, https://academic.oup.com/jah/article/102/1/87/686676/Guns-and-Butter-The-Welfare-State-the-Carceral.

[cli] Larry Chin, “The Bush-Clinton Empire and Criminal Succession,” *Intrepid Report*, September 26, 2016, http://www.intrepidreport.com/archives/19227.

[clii] Simon Worrall, “How the Cocaine Trade Affects Everyone’s Lives,” *National Geographic*, August 12, 2015, http://news.nationalgeographic.com/2015/08/150812-cocaine-drugs-cartel-narcotics-mexico-ngbooktalk/.

[cliii] John McWhorter, “How the War on Drugs is Destroying Black America,” *Cato’s Letter*, Winter 2011, https://www.cato.org/pubs/catosletter/catosletterv9n1.pdf.

[cliv] Michaela Pommells, “Study: More People of Color Sentenced to Private Prisons than Whites,” *Huffington Post*, February 21, 2014, http://www.huffingtonpost.com/michaela-pommells/study-more-people-of-colo_b_4826086.html.

[clv] Robert Freeman, “It’s Official: Rich Declare War on the Middle Class,” *Common Dreams*, November 14, 2010, https://www.commondreams.org/views/2010/11/14/its-official-rich-declare-war-middle-class.

[clvi] “Do Psychopaths Rule the World?” *pathocracy.net*, http://www.pathocracy.net/.

[clvii] Murunbuch, Geoffrey Prime, GCHQ and the Paedophile Information Exchange,” *Spotlight*, December 21, 2013, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/12/21/geoffrey-prime/.

[clviii] Tim Constantine, “Pedophiles: The Next Normal,” *The Washington Times*, May 19, 2016, http://www.washingtontimes.com/news/2016/may/19/tim-constantine-pedophiles-next-normal/.

[clix] “Salon Deletes Articles Defending Pedophilia from Site,” *World Net Daily*, February 21, 2017, http://www.wnd.com/2017/02/salon-deletes-articles-defending-pedophilia-from-site/.

[clx] ZeroPointNow, “FBI Allegedly Investigating Mayor of Berkeley, CA For Inciting Riot And Ordering Police to Stand Down - CNN Doing Damage Control,”

ZeroHedge, February 2, 2017, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2017-02-02/fbi-allegedly-investigating-mayor-berkeley-ca-inciting-riot-and-ordering-police-stan.

[clxi] Raven Clabough, “Soros Funded Group behind Violent UC Berkeley Protests, *New American*, February 6, 2017, https://www.thenewamerican.com/usnews/item/25322-soros-funded-group-behind-violent-uc-berkeley-protests.

[clxii] Will Bunch, “You Know What Berkeley Needs? A Free Speech Movement,” *The Inquirer Daily News*, April 21, 2017, http://www.philly.com/philly/blogs/attytood/You-know-what-Berekely-needs-A-Free-Speech-Movement.html.

[clxiii] Jocelyn McClurg, “Milo Yiannopoulos Sues Simon & Schuster for $10 Million over Canceled Book Deal,” *USA Today*, July 7, 2017, https://www.usatoday.com/story/life/books/2017/07/07/milo-yiannopoulos-sues-simon-schuster-10-million-over-canceled-book-deal/460054001/.

[clxiv] Mike Cernovich, “The Media Push to Normalize Pedophilia Begins,” *Crime & Federalism*, October 16, 2015, http://www.crimeandfederalism.com/2015/10/the-media-push-to-normalized-pedophilia-begins.html.

[clxv] Reginald Harper, “Salon Writer: I Will Engage in Sex Play with a Child… I Will Never Deny That,” *medium.com,* October 2, 2015, https://medium.com/@harperreginald1/salon-writer-todd-nickson-in-his-own-words-why-pedophiles-are-better-qualified-than-you-to-teach-21781e6329b4.

[clxvi] Mike Cernovich, http://www.crimeandfederalism.com/2015/10/the-media-push-to-normalized-pedophilia-begins.html.

[clxvii] Todd Nickerson, “I’m a pedophile, you’re the monsters: My week inside the vile right-wing hate machine,” *Salon*, September 30, 2015, https://archive.is/xVLcB.

[clxviii] Joachim Hagopian, https://www.sott.net/article/343780-Pizzagate-turned-PedoGate-Leads-to-Momentum-Surge-in-Busting-Global-Child-Sex-Trafficking-Rings.

[clxix] Karin Lehnardt, “48 Interesting Facts about Missing People,” *Fact Retriever*, February 25, 2017, https://www.factretriever.com/missing-people-facts.

[clxx] Peter Hasson, “Documents Tie Berkeley Riots to Pro-Pedophilia Group, NAMBLA,” *The Daily Caller*, April 28, 2017, http://dailycaller.com/2017/04/28/documents-tie-berkeley-riot-organizers-to-pro-pedophilia-group-nambla/.

[clxxi] “North American Man Boy Love Association,” https://www.nambla.org/

[clxxii] “North America Man/Boy Love Association,” *Wikipedia*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/North_American_Man/Boy_Love_Association.

[clxxiii] Bill Hoffman, “Tom DeLay: Justice Department Wants to Legalize 12 ‘Perversions,’” *Newsmax*, June 30, 2015, http://www.newsmax.com/Newsmax-Tv/Tom-DeLay-Justice-Department-perversions/2015/06/30/id/652929/.

[clxxiv] Alex Newman, “Obama Bribes States to Adopt National Education Curriculum,” *The New American*, December 27, 2012, https://www.thenewamerican.com/culture/education/item/14036-obama-bribes-states-to-adopt-national-education-curriculum.

[clxxv] “Common Core’s Real Goal? ‘Dumbing Down People,’” *World Net Daily*, April 21, 2015, http://www.wnd.com/2015/04/common-cores-real-goal-dumbing-down-people/.

[clxxvi] Terrence P. Jeffrey, “Obama: Sex Ed for Kindergarteners ‘is the Right Thing to Do,’” *CNS News*, August 30, 2013, http://www.cnsnews.com/news/article/.

[clxxvii] Rod Dreher, “The West Hates Children, Doesn’t It?” *The American Conservative*, July 3, 2017, http://www.theamericanconservative.com/dreher/west-hates-children-benedict-option/.

[clxxviii] Mike Adams, “There are Far More Vaccine-Damaged Children in America than Chemical Weapons-Damaged Children in Syria,” *Natural News*, April 7, 2017, http://www.naturalnews.com/2017-04-07-far-more-vaccine-damaged-children-in-america-than-chemical-weapons-damaged-children-in-syria.html.

[clxxix] Carolyn C. Ross, “Overexposed and Under-Prepared: The Effects of Early Exposure to Sexual Content,” *Psychology Today*, August 13, 2012, https://www.psychologytoday.com/blog/real-healing/201208/overexposed-and-under-prepared-the-effects-early-exposure-sexual-content.

[clxxx] Daniel Leddy, “Mandatory Sex Education in Schools Violates Parents’ Rights,” *Staten Island Advance*, September 6, 2011, http://www.silive.com/opinion/danielleddy/index.ssf/2011/09/mandatory_sex_education_in_sch.html.

[clxxxi] Jeannie DeAngelis, “Handsy Joe Biden on Non-Consensual Sexual Contact,” *American Thinker*, March 1, 2016, http://www.americanthinker.com/blog/2016/03/handsy_joe_biden_on_nonconsensual_sexual_contact.html.

[clxxxii] Ron Johnson. “Creepy Joe Biden Busted Again for Feeling up Children on C-SPAN,” YouTube video, 9:11, Posted March 19, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=TIXdNQrDaaQ.

[clxxxiii] Martina M. Cartwright, “Child Beauty Pageants: What are We Teaching our Girls?” *Psychology Today*, August 12, 2011, https://www.psychologytoday.com/blog/food-thought/201108/child-beauty-pageants-what-are-we-teaching-our-girls.

[clxxxiv] Sue Palmer, Why the iPad is a Far Bigger Threat to our Children than Anyone Realizes: Ten Years Ago, Psychologist Sue Palmer Predicted the Toxic Effects of Social Media. Now She Sees a Worrying New Danger,” *Daily Mail*, January 27, 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/femail/article-3420064/Why-iPad-far-bigger-threat-children-realises-Ten-years-ago-psychologist-SUE-PALMER-predicted-toxic-effects-social-media-sees-worrying-new-danger.html.

[clxxxv] Cecily Kellogg, “I Have No Problem with my Tween Wearing Sexy Halloween Costumes,” *Yahoo News*, October 13, 2015, https://www.yahoo.com/news/i-have-no-problem-with-1276818474164278.html.

[clxxxvi] “Google and Facebook Are Not Really Private and Shouldn’t Do as They Please with Alex Jones and NaturalNews.com,” *The Daily Bell*, February 25, 2017, http://www.thedailybell.com/news-analysis/google-and-facebook-are-not-really-private-and-shouldnt-do-as-they-please-with-alex-jones-and-naturalnews-com/.

[clxxxvii] Mike Cernovich, http://www.crimeandfederalism.com/2015/10/the-media-push-to-normalized-pedophilia-begins.html.

[clxxxviii] Steiff, “We are on the Road to Normalizing Pedophilia,” *RedState.com*, January 11, 2016, http://www.redstate.com/streiff/2016/01/11/road-normalizing-pedophilia/.

[clxxxix] Linda Lowen, “Romeo and Juliet Laws: What They Mean for Teens,” *Thought.co*, March 6, 2017, https://www.thoughtco.com/romeo-and-juliet-laws-what-they-mean-3533768.

[cxc] Jon Henley, “Paedophilia: Bringing Dark Desires to Light,” *The Guardian*, January 3, 2013, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2013/jan/03/paedophilia-bringing-dark-desires-light.

[cxci] Steven Rosenfield, “Are Some Men Born Pedophiles? New Science Says Yes, but Sexologists Say Not so Fast,” *Alternet*, February 21, 2013, http://www.alternet.org/are-some-men-born-pedophiles-new-science-says-yes-sexologists-say-not-so-fast.

[cxcii] Office of Department of Justice Programs, “Chapter 2: Etiology of Adult Sexual Offending,” Susan Faupel, https://www.smart.gov/SOMAPI/sec1/ch2_etiology.html.

[cxciii] Mytheos Holt, “’Born This way’ is No Excuse for Pedophiles,” *The Federalist*, September 28, 2015, http://thefederalist.com/2015/09/28/born-this-way-is-no-excuse-for-pedophiles/.

[cxciv] Selwyn Duke, “Obama’s Military Told Soldiers to Ignore Afghan Sexual Abuse of Boys,” *The New American*, September 24, 2015, https://www.thenewamerican.com/world-news/asia/item/21644-obama-s-military-told-soldiers-to-ignore-afghan-sexual-abuse-of-boys.

[cxcv] Corey Dickstein, “Congressman: Army Must Immediately Reinstate Green Beret who Hit Admitted Afghan Rapist,” *Stars and Stripes*, March 2, 2016, https://www.stripes.com/news/congressman-army-must-immediately-reinstate-green-beret-who-hit-admitted-afghan-rapist-1.397193.

[cxcvi] Paul Joseph Watson, “Swedish Liberal Youth Party Wants to Legalize Necrophilia and Child Porn,” *D.C. Clothesline*, July 18, 2017, http://www.dcclothesline.com/2017/07/18/swedish-liberal-youth-party-wants-to-legalize-necrophilia-child-porn/.

[cxcvii] William F. Jasper, “The Queering of America,” *The New American*, July 17, 2015, https://www.thenewamerican.com/culture/faith-and-morals/item/14947-the-queering-of-america.

[cxcviii] “Hollywood and Corporate Media are Crusading to Normalize Pedophilia,” *Living Resistance*, February 22, 2017, http://livingresistance.com/2017/02/13/hollywood-corporate-media-crusading-normalize-pedophilia/.

[cxcix] “Huge Riots Coming in July: Summer of Rage,” Video on *Investment Watch Blog*, Paul Joseph Watson, 7:15, May 21, 2017, http://investmentwatchblog.com/huge-riots-coming-in-july-summer-of-rage-set-to-boil-over-as-militant-leftists-plan-to-overthrow-trump/.

[cc] Richard Gunderman, “The Manipulation of the American Mind: Edward Bernays and the Birth of Public Relations,” *The Conversation*, July 9, 2015, http://theconversation.com/the-manipulation-of-the-american-mind-edward-bernays-and-the-birth-of-public-relations-44393.

[cci] Edward Bernays, *Propaganda*, (Brooklyn: Ig Publishing, 2004), 37, https://www.amazon.com/Propaganda-Edward-Bernays/dp/0970312598.

[ccii] “It’s True: Hollywood and Mainstream Media are Trying to Normalize Pedophilia,” *awarenessact.com*, http://awarenessact.com/its-true-hollywood-and-mainstream-media-are-trying-to-normalize-pedophilia/.

[cciii] Jack Minor, “’Gay’ Laws Set Stage for Pedophilia ‘Rights,’” *World Net Daily*, July 18, 2013, http://www.wnd.com/2013/07/gay-laws-set-stage-for-pedophilia-rights/.

[cciv] Michael A. Austin, “Rejecting Moral Relativism,” *Psychology Today*, January 23, 2012, https://www.psychologytoday.com/blog/ethics-everyone/201201/rejecting-moral-relativism.

[ccv] Selwyn Duke, https://www.thenewamerican.com/culture/item/21664-shocking-times-movement-for-pedophile-rights-marches-on.

[ccvi] Alexa Erickson, “Another Pedophile Ring Busted, 900 Arrests, 300 Kids Saved & Corporate Media Ignores it,” *Collective Evolution*, May 9, 2017, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2017/05/09/another-giant-pedophile-ring-busted-900-arrests-300-kids-saved-corporate-media-ignores-it/.

[ccvii] Sean Adl-Tabatabai, “Former SEAL: 3000 Elite Pedophiles Arrested – Media Silent,” *Your News Wire*, April 30, 2017, http://yournewswire.com/navy-seal-3000-pedophiles-arrested/.

[ccviii] Jeffrey St. Clair and Alexander Cockburn, “The CIA and the Press: When the Washington Post Ran the CIA’s Propaganda Network,” *Counterpunch*, November 30, 2016, https://www.counterpunch.org/2016/11/30/the-cia-and-the-press-when-the-washington-post-ran-the-cias-propaganda-network/.

[ccix] Joe Concha, “Washington Post Hires John Podesta as Columnist,” *The Hill*, February 23, 2017, http://thehill.com/media/320823-washington-post-hires-john-podesta-as-columnist.

[ccx] Margo Kaplan, “Pedophilia: A Disorder, Not a Crime,” *The New York Times*, October 5, 2014, https://www.nytimes.com/2014/10/06/opinion/pedophilia-a-disorder-not-a-crime.html?_r=0.

[ccxi] Nancy Flory, “Hollywood’s Dark Secret: Pedophilia, Child Actors and Those who Escape,” *The Stream*, May 31, 2016, https://stream.org/hollywoods-dark-secret-pedophilia-child-actors-got-away/.

[ccxii] “Roseanne Barr: “MK Ultra Mind Control Rules in Hollywood,” Roseanne Barr, Interview by Abby Martin, Posted on YouTube March 23, 2013, 13:06, Posted on *Vigilant Citizen* on April 1, 2013; also transcript interview by Larry King, https://vigilantcitizen.com/latestnews/roseanne-barr-mk-ultra-mind-control-rules-in-hollywood/.

[ccxiii] “When Insiders Expose the Ugly Side of the Entertainment Industry,” *Vigilant Citizen*, June 2, 2010, https://vigilantcitizen.com/vigilantreport/when-insiders-expose-the-ugly-side-of-the-entertainment-industry/.

[ccxiv] Chris Spargo, “’I was Molested and Passed around’: Corey Feldman Describes his Ordeal at the Hands of Hollywood Pedophile Ring and Says Corey Haim was just Eleven Years old when He was First Raped,” *Daily Mail*, May 26, 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3611046/I-molested-passed-Corey-Feldman-details-horrors-Hollywood-pedophile-ring-reveals-Corey-Haim-just-11-raped-leading-life-drugs.html.

[ccxv] Mark Oliver, “10 Disturbing Stories about Hollywood’s Pedophile Problem,” *ListVerse*, February 26, 2017, http://listverse.com/2017/02/26/10-disturbing-stories-about-hollywoods-pedophile-problem/.

[ccxvi] Chris Spargo, “Corey Feldman Defends Sharing Corey Haim Rape Story in Explosive Hollywood Pedophile Interview and Criticizes Late Actor's Parents for Refusing to Speak out against Their Son's ‘Abusers,’” *Daily Mail*, 27 May 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3612911/Corey-Feldman-defends-sharing-Corey-Haim-rape-story-explosive-Hollywood-pedophile-interview-criticizes-late-actor-s-family-refusing-speak-against-son-s-abusers.html.

[ccxvii] Amy J. Berg, “An Open Secret,” Filmed in 2011, YouTube video, 1:40, Posted September 11, 2016, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=4eeGX4SlF1s.

[ccxviii] Jonas E. Alexis, “Angelina Jolie is Scared to Expose Pedophiles in Hollywood,” *Veterans Today*, December 1, 2016, http://www.veteranstoday.com/2016/12/01/angelina-jolie-is-scared-to-expose-pedophiles-in-hollywood/.

[ccxix] Joseph Brownstein, “Childhood Trauma may Shorten Life by 20 Years,” *ABC News*, October 6, 2009, http://abcnews.go.com/Health/MindMoodNews/cdc-study-childhood-trauma-shorten-life-20-years/story?id=8758968.

[ccxx] Annette Witheridge, “Bombshell Documentary about Hollywood Pedophile Ring Preying on Child Actors that's been Linked to X-Men Director Bryan Singer Premieres in New York,” *Daily Mail*, November 15, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2836062/Bombshell-documentary-Hollywood-pedophile-ring-preying-child-actors-s-linked-X-Men-director-Bryan-Singer-premiers-New-York.html.

[ccxxi] Gordon, “Six Jewish Companies Control 96% of the World’s Media,” *tapnewswire.com*, October 17, 2015, http://tapnewswire.com/2015/10/six-jewish-companies-control-96-of-the-worlds-media/.

[ccxxii] Sydney Cobb, “Literal Lyrics? The Effects of Sex, Violence and Misogyny in Popular Music,” *Desert News*, April 21, 2016, http://www.deseretnews.com/article/865652703/Literal-lyrics-The-effects-of-sex-violence-and-misogyny-in-popular-music.html.

[ccxxiii] Jo Piazza, “Pop Artists Turning to Satanic Imagery to Drum up Controversy, Sales, Experts Say,” *Fox News*, April 19, 2012, http://www.foxnews.com/entertainment/2012/04/19/music-artists-turning-to-satanic-imagery-to-drum-up-controversy-sales-experts.html.

[ccxxiv] Sasha Spencer, “Insider Exposes Hollywood’s Satanic Underside,” *henrymakow.com*, May 31, 2015, https://www.henrymakow.com/possessed_humans_and_aliens_co.html.

[ccxxv] Matt Agorist, “Hollywood Insider Speaks Out, Claims a Global Pedophile Ring Controls Hollywood,” *Waking Times*, May 19, 2017, http://www.wakingtimes.com/2017/05/19/hollywood-insider-speaks-claims-global-pedophile-ring-controls-hollywood/.

[ccxxvi] “40+ Powerful Movies about Pedophilia,” *Ranker*, http://www.ranker.com/list/best-pedophilia-movies-list/all-genre-movies-lists.

[ccxxvii] Peter Labarbera, “Video Proof: Disney has been Promoting Homosexuality since the 1990’s,” *lifesitenews.com*, March 3, 2017, https://www.lifesitenews.com/blogs/video-proof-disney-has-been-promoting-homosexuality-since-the-1990s.

[ccxxviii] Dr. Eowyn, “The Beast in Disney’s New ‘Beauty and the Beast’ is Baphomet,” *Fellowship of the Minds*, February 1, 2017, https://fellowshipoftheminds.com/2017/02/01/the-beast-in-disneys-new-beauty-the-beast-is-baphomet/.

[ccxxix] Peter Schweizer and Rochelle Schweizer, *Disney: The Mouse Betrayed: Greed, Corruption and Children at Risk* (Washington DC: Regnery Publishing, 1998), https://www.amazon.com/Disney-Mouse-Betrayed-Corruption-Children/dp/B007MXPB7A.

[ccxxx] Wayne Jackson, “Disney: The Mouse Betrayed,” *christiancourier.com*, July 9, 2017, https://www.christiancourier.com/articles/41-disney-the-mouse-betrayed.

[ccxxxi] “The 1776 Agenda of the New World Order – Ordered by a Rothschild – Designed by a Jesuit,” *wewhoopposedeception.com*, October 7, 2013, https://wewhoopposedeception.wordpress.com/2013/10/07/the-1776-agenda-of-the-new-world-order-ordered-by-a-rothschild-designed-by-a-jesuit/.

[ccxxxii] Lenon Honor Films, “The Early Works of Disney 4,” YouTube Video posted by Miss Conceptions 1 on September 29, 2009, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Fjgh11cqMpk&list=PLQP_nrGpRMtFNtuVV--Zb5k-vxsjrVxnG&index=4.

[ccxxxiii] Dr. Eowyn, “Disney Movie Merchandise is a Penis-Shaped Bubble Wand for Kids,” *Fellowship of the Minds*, June 23, 2017, https://fellowshipoftheminds.com/2017/06/23/disney-movie-merchandise-is-a-penis-shaped-bubble-wand-for-kids/.

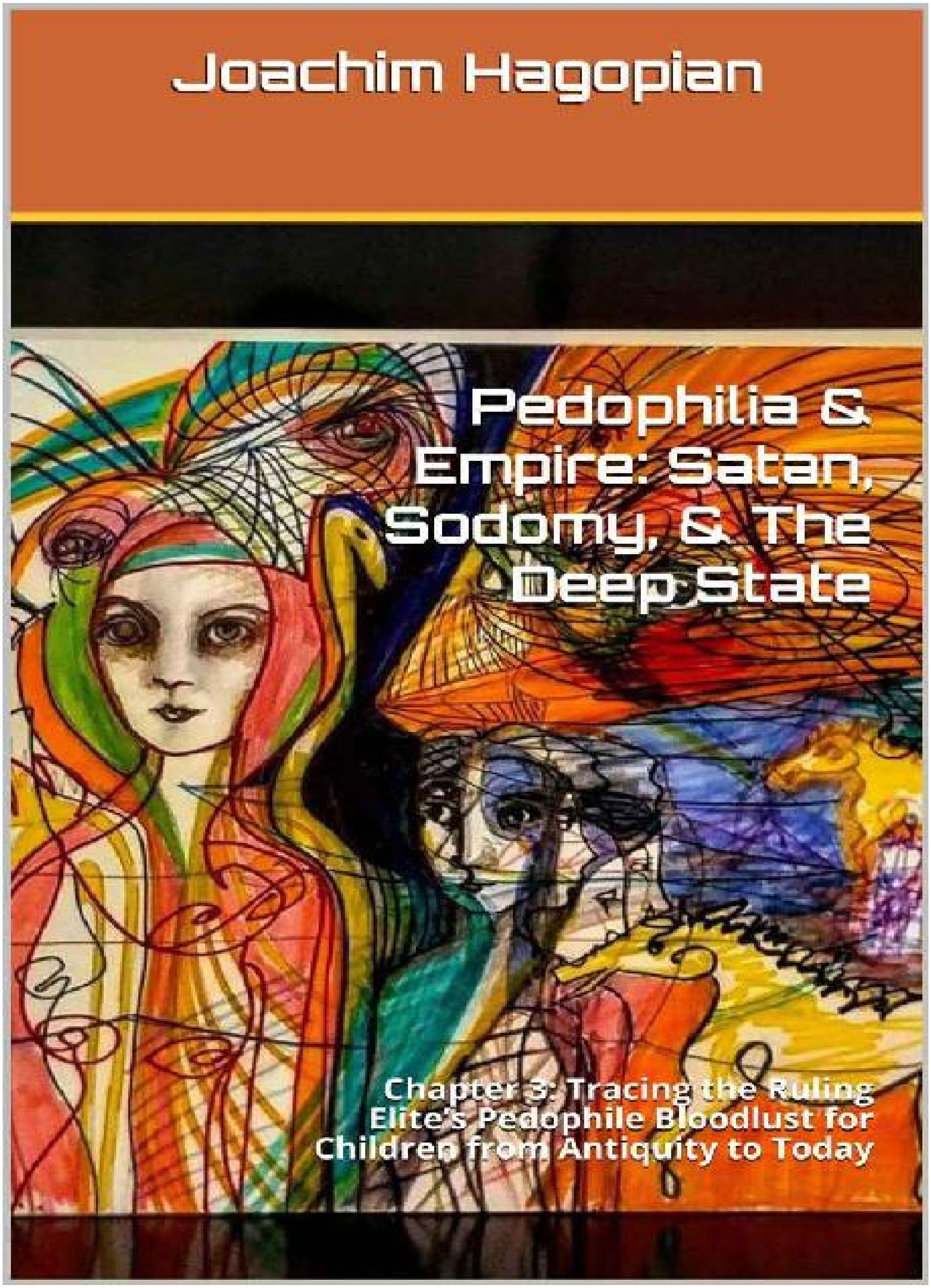

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 3: Tracing the Ruling Elite's Pedophile Bloodlust for Children from Antiquity to Today

Chapter 3: Tracing the Ruling Elite’s Pedophile Bloodlust for Children from Antiquity to Today

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission

http://www.noramaccoby.com/

Many of the planetary controllers are blood feasting pedophiles, parasitic monsters literally and predatorily feeding off the 8 million children gone missing each year around the world.[1] Global child sex trafficking networks generate huge profits, run by the world’s most powerful individuals. A 2014 International Labor Organization report estimates that two thirds of the annual profits from forced labor come from sexual slavery that amounts to $99 billion USD each year.[2] And of that $99 billion, most is produced off the blood, sweat, tears and flesh of helpless underage child sex slaves caught up in global trafficking rings operated by this same diabolical global elite. At the top of this planet’s rulers are 13 family bloodlines that include the Rothschilds and Rockefellers as well as European royalty,[3] controlling thousands of compromised, bribed and blackmailed puppet politicians, bankers, judges, CEO’s, military generals, entertainers, top level spies and police chiefs.

Blackmailed pedophile politicians,[4] [5] many of whom are well known elected representatives occupying critically important positions in virtually every national government, particularly in the West, have remained insularly protected and immune from investigation and prosecution.[6] Why? Because those running these global child sex networks internationally control both them as well as law enforcement and the high courts.[7] Pedophiles are disbursed amongst such elitist think tanks as the Council on Foreign Relations, the Trilateral Commission, the Bilderbergers as well as various covert organizations like Yale's Skull and Bones Society, 33rd degree and higher Freemasonry and the secret Jesuits. The bottom line is too many of these "upstanding" members lead two distinct lives, one being their public life upholding their respected reputation as so called public servants, and the other being their secret dark life as satanic worshipping, bloodthirsty child rapists and killers. Pizzagate and the Podestas and Clintons,[8] the Weiners and Jeffrey Epstein are merely the tip of the iceberg[9] to this pedophilic black holed world that's ruled over this planet for eons of time.

With last year's Pizzagate turned this year's Pedogate scandal exposing these malevolent cockroaches like never before,[10] 2017 finds this diabolical elite frantically heading for the hills, buying up private islands[11] and submerging underground,[12] while aggressively acting out above ground with false flags every other week[13] and by the day desperately pushing humanity off doomsday cliff, closer to world war and global economic collapse.[14] Faking staged events has become an unholy racket of government theater.[15] With attention of the public masses distracted and forced into preoccupation with everyday signs that our world appears to be fast falling apart, desperate monsters fearing loss of control are banking on their sins against our children being drowned out by the elite's manufactured storm of earthly chaos, shock and awe noise and escalating terror of ongoing violence, war and ultimate global destruction.[16]

While the pedophilia epidemic currently has us never closer to bringing the hordes of guilty child rapists finally to justice,[17] it's no accident that we've also never been closer to self-annihilation as a human species.[18] Before the psychopathic criminals who only have contempt for humanity are taken down, they're determined to first destroy Trump and Putin as well as the rest of us,[19] drastically reducing the world population by their divide and conquer,[20] fast kill methods[21] of war and violence using their "Russians did it" fabrication as their false pretense.[22] If the Illuminati controlled deep state cannot break or destroy the proposed allied partnership forged by Trump and Putin to truly fight against globalism, the deep state created ISIS terrorists and the child rapists and killers as the planetary overlords of chaos and destruction, expect to only see more subterfuge, false flags and destabilizing violence globally inflicted on humanity through economic collapse and world war. Over their dead bodies, the last thing those ruling this earth want is peace and prosperity for us humans.

This chapter analyzes and exposes through history the very dark, sinister, most egregious atrocities against humanity - the despicably sick, voracious appetite planetary controllers have had for children's flesh and blood.[23] Like the demonic vampires they are, the blood of the innocent literally becomes the lifeblood that rejuvenates their own vitality, strength and bloodlust to demonically and compulsively feast on yet more of their targeted defenseless prey. The elite has long known the veracity of the latest scientific breakthroughs and discoveries confirming the incredible dividends gained from consuming young people's healthier blood that restores vitality, aids them reverse the aging process to enhance their quest to live forever. It's only being made more public at this time as part of the elite's deceitful strategy to condition the masses into accepting the controllers' ancient practice of exploiting children for their flesh, blood and internal organs,[24] paralleling their quest to normalize and legalize pedophilia as just another variation of this same demonic agenda. The remainder of this chapter focuses on this systematic child rape, murder and blood sacrifice throughout history from ancient times to the present.

Ancient Practice of Human and Child Sacrifice

Over the centuries many cultures from virtually every corner of the globe have been guilty of the shameful practice of child and/or human sacrifice.[25] Based on recently uncovered evidence, ancient Greece may be the latest civilization discovered to have conducted child sacrifice.[26] A teenage boy's remains were found last August in an identified location commonly reserved for animal sacrifice to Zeus. Other known ancient cultures that regressed into sacrificing fellow humans in the Middle East are the Egyptians, the Mesopotamians, the Babylonians, the Canaanites, the Ammonites, the Israelites, the Carthaginians in North Africa,[27] in Europe the Etruscans (from Italy's Tuscany region)[28] and the Celts of the British Isles,[29] in Pacific Asia the Chinese,[30] the Japanese,[31] the Koreans[32] and Hawaiians,[33] and in Central and South America the Aztecs, the Mayans and the Incas.[34] Indeed child sacrifice may appear to be a common practice that at times increases during the descending collapse of various civilizations throughout history.

In recent decades undeniable archeological/scientific evidence is emerging that clearly demonstrates that extraterrestrial civilizations from other galaxies migrated to the earth and interbred with existing human populations over hundreds of thousands and perhaps even millions of years, shattering the status quo myths of both religions and conventional pseudo-science that falsely insist human origins are limited to just 5,000-10,000 years ago.[35] [36] Other technologically advanced so called intelligent alien species may have retained their earthly presence through the ages in both physical genetic hybrid form as well as purely supernatural entities that actually possess a parasitic, vampiric, survival need to feed off the adrenalized blood of the young innocents.[37] Be they powerful Illuminati subhuman types or lowly demonic supernatural forces, both thrive on the flesh and blood of defenseless children. This profoundly disturbing truth is explored in much deeper analysis in a later chapter.

In addition to the secret satanic practice of Illuminati today preying on the blood sacrifice of children, the ancient custom can also be currently found in places like India and Africa where children's purity and innocence are believed to make the perpetrators more potent, younger and healthier, [38] exactly the same pretext that motivates Western Satan worshippers. Coming full circle, this entire book focuses on evidence that satanic sacrifice of children currently practiced by cults and secret societies throughout Europe and North America and beyond, hidden in plain sight along with interlocking global child sex trafficking rings, is tragically being carried out all over this planet. And its long history sadly reminds us only that it has never stopped.

The Jews' ancient biblical forebears, the Israelites, burnt children alive at the altar of Moloch. From the Old Testament comes the Israelite warrior Jephthah who proclaims if granted victory over his enemy, he'll sacrifice the first "whatsoever" that comes from his house to greet him upon his return.[39] It just so happened to be his virgin daughter and unlike with Abraham, this time God didn't intercede and the Semitic child was sacrificed around 1125 BC. The Old Testament fails to mention exactly how she was sacrificed.[40] But according to prescribed methods for animal sacrifice, Jephthah or the temple priest would slit the daughter's throat, drain her blood, cut off her arms, legs and head, cut up her torso in sections while smearing blood around the altar and burning her flesh… pretty gruesome. Additionally, several other Jewish kings in the Old Testament sacrificed their children by burning them alive. Jews in Carthage in 300 BC who worshipped Baal were also offing their kids. The practice of abducting a non-Jewish stranger, bringing him to their Jerusalem temple, cutting his body up and sacrificing a gentile every seven years was first documented by Greek philosophers and historians Apion and Democritus in 168 BC, well over a century before Christ.[41]

This next section addresses a little known, abhorrent chapter in Jewish history, exposing incidents involving bloodthirsty religious fanatics, engaging in ritualistic human sacrifice to drain blood for religious holidays.

Ritualized Jewish Blood Sacrifice (from Middle Ages – 21st Century)

Since the Middle Ages in Europe, traditionally at times of Passover, celebrating Israelites freedom from slavery in Egypt,[42] most frequently led by local rabbis, there have been Jews who have periodically abducted and ritualistically murdered Christian children. There are literally hundreds of documented cases.[43] In Prague in 1067 six Jews killed a three year old child, puncturing his body to drain his blood that was then given away to other Jews in another city.[44] Less than 80 years after King William Norman first brought Jews to Great Britain in 1066, in the year 1144 in Norwich, Jews apprehended their first Christian child named William and crucified him on the eve of the Passover ritual in symbolic replication of killing the king of the Christians. But the child’s relative was educated monk Thomas of Monmouth who wrote a book about his murdered nephew in an effort to alert all parents.[45] In 1290 in Oxford another Jew was caught after a ritual murder of a gentile, resulting a month later in England banning all Jews for the next four centuries. Spain later followed banishing all its Jews from its borders in 1492.

Though early on Jews were generally brought into Western Europe as the kings’ tax collectors and considered monarchy property,[46] legally well-represented by the best attorneys money could buy, the Jewish child murderers were rarely found innocent.[47] The deniers are quick to claim that the Jews found guilty were tortured into confessing their crimes.

But by law at a later time given the opportunity to recant when not under duress, most didn’t, often going to their execution still boasting about what they’d done, proudly viewing themselves as loyal martyrs for their Jewish faith, rather than feeling remorse or upset over being falsely accused.

Jews accused and brought to trial for murder and found guilty methodically repeated the same ritualistic crime, sequentially circumcising their child victims, then systematically torturing and crucifying them to drain their blood used in Passover rites ceremony.[48] The Christian blood was as an ingredient mixed with wine for Passover unleavened bread. Blood was also used in healing potions as well as for cabbalist curses. Rabbis were always present in these murders to ensure the extracted blood and flesh were kosher which permitted it to be bottled and sold as a black market commodity, not unlike today’s Israelis as the prime movers in control of the international human organ trafficking operations.[49]

The most infamous of these ritualized cases in Europe occurred in Trent, northern Italy in 1475. The murdered boy was Simon of Trent who until a few years ago was a celebrated saint; that is until the Vatican succumbed to the Jewish thought control PC police. Over twenty of these Jewish murdered children were made saints. Based on historic court records and two sets of standard operating procedure confessions by the accused Germanic speaking Jews, a recent scholarly review written by Ariel Toaff analyzing all available evidence concludes that Simon was murdered on the Passover eve for the expressed purpose of religious ritual sacrifice.[50]

Yet the term “blood libel” is the customary Jewish practice and seemingly automatic response that flatly denies that any of these crimes ever once took place, despite even

Jewish historians and scholars admitting that these atrocities did in fact occur.[51] One such brave critic is respected writer-journalist Israel Shamir who astutely makes the valid point that as a matter of state policy, more innocent Palestinian children have been brutally murdered by Jews in recent years than the sum total of all Christian victims since the Middle Ages.[52] If given the fact that Jews in cold blood have been methodically murdering non-Jews en masse in recent years, why is it so hard to believe that Jewish extremists over many centuries targeted and killed less children for being non-Jews? Being a persecuted European minority steeped in rigid Talmudic tradition that degrades non-Jews to lowly animal status, the underlying psychological and historic dynamics are sufficient to provide motive for the crimes.[53] University of Jerusalem Professor Ehak Spinzak stated that Talmudic extremists “believe that it’s God’s will to commit violence against goyim” (gentiles).[54] With wholesale denial that ritual murders of Christian children ever took place, the tiresome “anti-Semitic” catch-all label cannot dismiss the mountain of evidence.

Talmudic Judaism and Cabbalism Meld into NWO Satanic Practice

The Jews in charge of the temples at the time of Jesus Christ’s ministry were the Pharisees who also wrote Talmudic Law. Seeing how the Jewish leaders were moneychangers exploiting their own people with usury and corruption,[55] Jesus actually threw a tizzy fit inside their not so holy temple, upending coffers and tables, rightfully calling it a “a robber’s den,”[56] and refers to fake believers (be they Jews or Christians) practicing their religion in a “synagogue of Satan.”[57] It wasn’t until this dramatic clash that rebel Jesus posed such a serious threat to corrupt authorities that ultimately sealed his fate.[58] With the Federal Reserve the private central banks run largely by Jews getting richer by printing fiat money out of thin air to charge interest and collect taxes to payback interests on bankers' nonstop wars, now $20 trillion in the red,[59] our debtor nation and haplessly bled citizens are still usury slaves. Sadly in 2000 years, times have not changed at all,[60] and, with humanity on the brink of total self-destruction, conditions in our times have only grown worse.

Between the third and sixth centuries, "learned" rabbis recorded in Hebrew their oral teachings and laws they claim were handed down to them by Moses, calling their finished product the Talmud, the holy book for people of the Jewish faith that supersedes the Old Testament. Yet the Talmud is extremely hateful and racist, touting blatant Jewish supremacism. Direct quotes from the Talmud readily tell the story.[61] Jews are ordered to view non-Jews as animals (Yebamoth 98a) and beasts (Baba Mezia 114b).[62] Even the best of the "goyim" should be killed (Soferim 15). Talmudic law encourages Jews to deceive gentiles, any way to take advantage for a Jew's self-gain at non-Jews' expense,[63] even resorting to murder and committing adultery if it can be rationalized as best for the nation of Israel.

Moreover, the Torah, considered Jewish Written Law,[64] apparently embraces pedophilia:

If a grown up man has intercourse with a little girl, it is nothing, for having intercourse with a girl less than three years old is like putting a finger in the eye (Ketubot 11b).[65]

… Intercourse with a boy under nine years old is not considered a significant sexual act… (Ketubot 11b).

A decade ago when Israeli soldiers were on another bloodbath killing spree against Palestinians in Gaza, Sephardi chief rabbi Mordechai Eliyahu wrote a letter to the prime minister advocating indiscriminate murder of civilian women and children.[66] Unfortunately far too many in the Knesset agree and the ethnic purging as official apartheid policy has been allowed to drag on year after bloody year with total impunity… despite a growing consensus of disapproval from other nations that never amounts to any real consequence to Israel. Another prominent rabbi, Ovadia Yosef, the spiritual advisor to the Shas, a religious fundamentalist party and chief coalition partner in the Israeli government,[67] echoed the Talmud dogma, claiming "the sole purpose of non-Jews is to serve Jews."

Perhaps the most raw, unadulterated account by one brutally honest, reprehensible Jewish American who four decades ago braggingly exposed the ultimate power and arrogance that the Jewish elite aka mafia wields in America through complete control over the media, banking, entertainment, academia and political bribery business disclosed in one 1976 interview with a 29-year old congressional aide of New York Senator Jacob Javits. Harold Rosenthal's gleeful, boastful pride, bitter contempt and hatred toward non-Jews for their dupability and sheer ignorance permeates his every scathing utterance. Essentially Rosenthal admits that his "chosen people" riding atop the global power pyramid answer to only one god - Lucifer[68]. Because he reveals far more in-depth truth than his fellow chosen brethren care to have on public record, several months later Rosenthal met an abrupt end as a suspected murder victim of a Mossad hit thinly veiled as an attempted Israeli airliner hijacking.

Three weeks after Israel and the neocons, with a little help from their Saudi friends, pulled off the bloodiest false flag in history in 2001,[69] boldly out in the open was former Israeli Prime Minister Ariel Sharon arrogantly declaring:

We, the Jewish people control America, and the Americans know.[70]

And just to show how preferential the US is to Israel, the elite think tank responsible for all US wars in the last century - the Council on Foreign Relations, requires every member to be an American citizen except two, current Israeli Prime Minister Benjamin Netanyahu and former Israeli Prime Minister Ehud Olmert.[71]

The Talmudic tradition is Judaic law and Cabbalism is hidden Jewish mysticism practiced for millenniums and forwarded into modernity by the Ashkenazi Jews of central and western Russia and Eastern Europe [and now Israel], also known as the Khazars.[72] This form of Judaism dates directly back to the warlike Babylonian ruler Nimrod (later renamed Marduk)[73] and his 2,000 year old Temple of Baal or Bel (meaning “lord”) where child sacrifice was common custom, located in the presently recaptured Syrian city of Palmyra, destroyed along with ancient Roman ruins by ISIS a couple years ago.[74] [75]

The Babylonian deity Baal subsequently evolved into the Greek deity Osiris, representing the birth of ancient pre-Christian pagan religions in the Middle East and Greece. And each of these deities unmistakably shares underpinnings of the fallen angel Satan. An estimated 97.5% of today’s Jewish State population claiming to be of Hebrew descent,[76] are actually Ashkenazi Jews descended from the Turkish-Mongol Khazars, reclaiming their “roots” in the Jewish homeland,[77] all share ancestors who never once set foot in the Holy Land of the Middle East. In fact, the DNA of the native Palestinians being exterminated are the true Semites.[78] So much of the Jewish story as part of the greater human story is built on lies, cover-ups and hoax. A growing number of researchers and analysts have referred to the Khazarian mafia running the international crime cabal that’s used interchangeably with the Satanic Cult of the All Seeing Eye.[79] A mix of some evil non-Jews and some evil Jews working together for Satan are in the process of culling the human herd down from 7.5 billion people presently to just a half billion of us left shortly.

[80] Their agenda puts 14 out of 15 of us in their eugenics crosshairs.[81]

A year ago in New York City and later London (and in "1000 other cities" to come) a near five story high replication of the famous Baal arch was constructed as part of the Rockefeller created United Nations UNESCO's World Heritage site,[82] also supported by the financially endowed Harvard University Masonic Lodge. The Baal arch as the temple gateway served as a portal to the worshipping altar of the pagan god that many today believe represents Satan.[83] Paganism as practiced by a plethora of ancient cultures has been defined as a religious system based on the worship of the fallen angels.

After constructed exhibitions in New York and London, for the third time the Babylonian archway was once again on full prominent display earlier this year for the opening of the fifth annual World Government Summit held in Dubai, attended by 4000 world leaders from 130 nations.[84] Among the notable globalists paying homage to the satanic fallen angel was UN Secretary General Antonio Gutteres,[85] IMF Director Christine Lagarde (two months earlier awarded another 5-year term as IMF head despite avoiding a year in prison for her conviction approving a large taxpayer payoff bogus to French billionaire),[86] and Elon Musk who in Dubai was busily advocating the merger between humans and machines and touting globalist socialism. Sovereign nation destroyer Obama attended the first of these NWO conferences back in 2013. For three days in mid-February 100 speakers pontificated their one world "utopian" government and their elitist design to promote globalism, multiculturalism, statism, Big Government, social engineering, and UN Agenda 21 and Agenda 2030 sustainability.[87] At these NWO kumbayas like this one, the Bilderberg meetings and Bohemian Grove soirees, the elite's busily plotting our demise right before our eyes.

Judaism’s “Dirty” Stepchild: 17th- 18th Century Sabbatean-Frankist Movement

There exists a little known sub-branch of Judaism that the Orthodoxy would prefer to bury in its revisionist, subversively repackaged design on human history. The Jewish establishment of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries declared the renegade Sabbatean-turned-Frankist movement heresy in back-to-back centuries in order to formally distance itself from the then flourishing, “embarrassing” Jewish offshoots taking hold.[88] Though the movement’s followers were supposed to have died out shortly after the deaths of their messianic leaders SabbataiZevi (1626-1676)[89] and Jacob Frank (1726-1791),[90] their ideology, values, beliefs and practices definitely did not, and today they very much remain alive and are in fact thriving. Our upside down Orwellian world is presently living in an age of deceit,[91] where so called good is actually evil and lies are constantly broadcast as truth.[92] Now posing as the satanic Cult of the All-seeing Eye, its demonic influence is visible everywhere in today’s world through gradual successful infiltration in recent centuries into all domains of earthly power and control.[93]

Sabbatai Zevi was of Spanish Jewish descent originally from Smyrna, Greece until banned as a false prophet from his hometown at age 25. Zevi promptly found a new residence in nearby Salonika, rapidly rising to prominence there as an ordained Sephardic rabbi and cabbalist claiming to a receptive audience that he was the long awaited Jewish Messiah.[94] Sabbatai Zevi generated a devout following that was most active within the Ottoman Empire of modern day Turkey, although his reach spread quickly into much of Europe, at its peak claiming a million Jewish followers.[95]

At the height of his fame and influence at age 40, ten years prior to his death, the Sultan Mehmed IV gave the imprisoned Zevi the choice, die or convert to Islam.[96] So the charismatic con man chose to avoid martyrdom by saving his own neck as a Muslim in name only. The sultan then bestowed the title "Keeper of the Gate" on Zevi who began a close working relationship with the Shia Bektashi Sufis.[97] According to renowned researcher and author Gershom Scholem, the Sabbatean movement was "the largest and most momentous messianic movement in Jewish History,"[98] captivating over half the world's Jewry at the time.[99] But on the low, Sabbatai continued practicing his own heretic guru-esque style of hedonistic, orgiastic, ritualized, "feel good" Judaism.

The year that a Jew named Columbus "discovered" a New World to conquer and colonize for the flag he sailed under - Spain in 1492,[100] was also the same year and nation that kicked out all its Jews. The subsequent Jewish migration to Ottoman territory that opened its borders to the newcomers,[101] brought a large influx of Jewish immigrants to where Sabbatai Zevi's family settled. The prevailing culture and climate a century and a half later that Zevi was born and raised in was steeped in religious oppression and "end of the world" anxiety for Jews during Europe's Inquisition. When in 1648 Sabbatai's doomsday prediction failed, he declared himself the new messiah.[102]

His radical departure from run-of-the-mill Judaic stoicism, promising not only redemption but an alternative lifestyle of secret magic bestowing wisdom and power, the gift of prophecy, direct communication with God (Zevi himself) and his angels,[103] and a sensual smorgasbord of unbridled sexual liberation and carnal ecstasy.[104] Sabbateanism "freed up" humans from their inescapable trap of sin-based, guilt-ridden fear and dread of God's moral judgment and eternal wrath. Zevi preached that as imperfect beings, the way to the divine is following the path of sinful bliss (i.e., doing the opposite of what is "good" and "righteous").[105]

By 1**666**, the year the Satan worshipper became a closeted Jew in Muslim clothing also was his second bust at predicting the end of the world. But just the same, his hedonistic brand of religion caught on bigtime in popularity, spreading through both Europe and the Near East.

Unlike the highly chauvinistic rabbinic Judaism that prohibited women from attaining positions of public stature and religious or state authority,[106] Sabbatai's runaway rebellious sect embraced women for full membership and active enlistment in its messianic prophetic ranks, which back in the 16 and 1700's was unheard of, greatly adding to its popularity and appeal. Because Zevi's widespread influence and messianic message extended beyond Turkey and Greece to Eastern Europe especially, his hardcore Sabbatean adherents lasted well into the 19th century, though his diehard faithful gradually dwindled in numbers after his death.[107] Many of his followers also converted with him in name only to Islam (known as Dönmeh), others returned to conventional rabbinic Judaism. But Sabbatai's particular brand of anti-Talmudic religion amassed quite an appeal for its time, formally rejecting normative Jewish law, openly embracing Cabbalistic mysticism with messianic fervor of redemption that many Jews avidly sought through his unorthodox, radicalized approach to Judaism.

But within a few short decades in the vacuum created by his death, the prominence of Sabbateanism was to be resurrected and given new, even more invigorated life by another charismatic messianic Jewish con man named Jacob Frank, who boldly sold himself as not only the reincarnate of Sabbatai Zevi but the biblical patriarch Jacob as well.[108] Hailing from Podolia, Poland (now in Ukraine), Jakub Lejbowicz may have been the son of a rabbi and a Zevi devotee,[109] even as a young boy in Poland rejecting the Talmud,[110] and later priding himself on being an "untutored man." As a traveling merchant, Jacob Frank lived a good part of his young adult life in Turkey amongst a Sabbatean stronghold where his Polish-Ashkenazi Jewish ethnicity had the Turkish locals calling him Frank, a name that Jacob willingly allowed to stick. It was at this time that he is believed to have also converted, like his predecessor before him, to Islam Sabbatean-style.[111]

Frank was everything Zevi was, except he took evil up a notch or two, preaching, “Since we can’t all be saints, let’s all be sinners.”[112] He was a master at reverse psychology, claiming the best way to imitate God, is to violate every conceivable boundary and taboo under the sun. Ritualized orgy-fests featuring wife swapping, incest and pedophilia were his commandments.[113] Sabbatean-Frankists practiced witchcraft and animal as well as human sacrifices.

At age 29 he returned to Poland where he gathered quite a following of Sabbateans. The ambitious upstart openly defied all traditional Jewish law, proclaiming himself part of the holy trinity, posing a direct threat to local conservative Talmudic rabbis who sought to have him and his followers excommunicated.[114] Frank contacted the Roman Catholic bishop that presided over all religions in Poland,[115] calling for a disputation where the anti-Talmudist leader presented his case as a believer in Jewish Zohar cabbalism that doesn’t conflict with the Christian holy trinity doctrine. The bishop ruled in Frank’s favor, ordering the burning of all copies of the Talmud in Poland.[116] But a year later, the bishop died and without his ally, the outraged rabbis persecuted Frank and his tribe with a vengeance, despite Frank obtaining an edict issued by Poland’s Augustus III protecting his growing Sabbatean clan.

In dramatic response to his stiff rabbinic opposition, Jacob Frank declared himself the direct successor of Sabbatai Zevi, assuring his burgeoning flock that he was receiving his revelations straight from heaven.[117] In line with Frank’s political strategy to align himself behind the power of the Roman Catholic Church as a defensive buffer against his Jewish establishment enemy and avoid the gallows, he arranged a second disputation with the rabbis again under the auspices of the Catholic Church.[118] But by this time the Christian arbiters had become suspicious of the antinomian Frankist movement and its purported reputation promoting adultery, incest and pedophilia.[119] Frank had always gone out of his way to be publicly crude and brash, often boasting of his sexual prowess and debauchery. It appeared his sexual self-aggrandizing had finally caught up with him.

The skeptical Church authorities required more concrete evidence beyond just words that Frank and his devotees were righteously motivated for conversion to Catholicism.[120] So to curry favor, the renegade zealot ordered mass baptism and in 1759 he and 500 Frankist Jews were baptized. This shrewd move facilitated Polish nobility to becoming his and his baptized converts’ godparents, with Augustus himself agreeing to be Frank’s godfather. Over the next three decades in Poland, the Frankists swayed close to 30,000 Jews to become baptized Christians.[121]

Despite the official holy water bath, the Catholic Church remained unconvinced of Frank’s “spiritual” sincerity due to his strange doctrines, promiscuous deviance and rumored religious orgies, and in 1760 Jacob Frank was arrested for heresy and imprisoned at a monastery for the next thirteen years.[122] However, becoming a jailed martyr only helped his diabolical cause, for his popularity only grew and the satanic infiltration of the Catholic Church and European royalty was underway and taking root.

The wide phenomenon of the “crypto Jews” (from Greek word “kryptos” meaning hidden) whereby Jews posing as religious converts,[123] especially during the anti-Jewish Inquisition, reformation and renaissance periods (from the

15th-17th centuries), crypto Jews infiltrated other religions (i.e., the Sabbateans to Islam and Frankists to Christianity). Yet secretly they retained their hidden Jewish identity and religious doctrine; also co-related is the Jewish propensity of frequent name changing (albeit partly due to avoiding anti-Semitic persecution).[124] But the demonic subversion of secret societies permeating top echelons of global power across the diaspora in finance, government, big business, mass media, communication arts and academia by both crypto Jews and Jewish globalists alike cannot be denied.[125]

Returning to the dangerous Satanist and false messiah Jacob Frank, he saw himself above all previous religious patriarchs, including his own inspiration Sabbatai Zevi, faulting him for an unsuccessful search for God, much less his shortcoming for failing to actually be God. In Frank's warped world, all laws supporting the existing order had to be abolished.[126] Frank's perverse thinking was that nothing short of overthrowing and destroying society could possibly save humankind. Only anarchy and revolutionary destruction of every religion and positive belief system would clear the deck for rebuilding life cast in Luciferian "light." He believed the religious baton had passed from Judaism to Islam and now it was his turn for his "true believers" to outwardly turn to Catholicism while secretly worshipping him as the true messiah and living God.[127]

Invading Russians eventually freed Frank from prison in 1773,[128] the same year the Satanist Frank met with fellow Satanists - Jesuit trained Adam Weishaupt[129] and banker gangster Meyer Amschel Rothschild, of the Khazarian-descended,[130] wealthiest Jewish family in the world. Funding would flow to both Weishaupt and Frank once Weishaupt agreed to accept Frankist doctrine and the satanic grand plan was thus launched by the unholiest trinity ever.[131] Three years later in Bavaria Weishaupt would formally resurrect the ancient Order of Illuminati that on May

1st this year is 241 years old.[132] The three conspired to secretly and methodically take over the world by subterfuge, deception and devilry. Chief financier would be Europe's wealthiest family, corrupter and infiltrator of Freemasonry,[133] the Catholic Church and governments would be the Illuminati Weishaupt and Frank would continue subverting and conquering the big three religions as well as the political aristocratic domain.[134]

Jacob Frank lived out the last 18 years of his life in opulent luxury, the last few years in a castle in the German city of Offenbach just south of Frankfurt,[135] the benefactor of Frankfurt resident Rothschild, plus crown support from royal courts of Poland, Russia and Austria, as well as his thousands of loyal followers. Frank took the title Baron, whether legitimately given him by Austrian archduchess[136] and Queen Maria Theresa or not.[137] Gradually Frank's daughter Eva took over his powerful sect as his incestuous "holy mistress," although she too lived above her means and with her wealth drying up after the Napoleonic Wars, she died in 1816.

But the poisonous die had been cast. The Frankist Cabbalistic secrets were combined with the philosophical ideals of Enlightenment to lay fertile groundwork for conflict, revolution and bloodshed.[138] Frankist infiltrators populated the Hapsburg dynasty. The Freemasons, Illuminati and Frankists were secret allies in movement through European nobility.[139] Intermarriage amongst prominent families consolidated power. Frank's nephew Moses Dobruschka changed his name and entered Hapsburg society as a Freemason.[140] As the Satanists collectively wheeled and dealed, faithful to their mission to create chaos out of sin, massive revolt, conflict and world upheaval followed. Rothschild-Frankist-Freemason-Jesuit members were actively behind the American and French Revolutions,[141] Marxism,[142] Zionism,[143] the Bolshevik Revolution,[144] pro-incest

Frankist Freud,[145] and the archduke assassination triggering WWI.[146] Since virtually every war has been ignited by a conspired false flag event, involving secret satanic societies, it would be a safe bet that the Frankist-Freemason-Illuminati-Jesuit-Rothschild nexus is the All-seeing Eye mastermind.[147]

Slowly but surely over the next couple centuries, their secret plan and vision has come to near full fruition. With Frankist Satanist and other secret society plants saturated in the world of politics, big business, finance, media and entertainment, they're now vying for full implementation of their New World Order,[148] complete with one world government,[149] one world religion[150] and one world army,[151] just a world war and collapsed world economy away.[152]

Many Jewish scholars and writers that only learned of Zevi and Frank from recent books about their life and movement are quick to discard these two messianic cult leaders because, from their Jewish perspective, each converted to an "enemy" religious camp and thus are viewed as irrelevant footnotes, "black sheep" heretic losers leaving an unwanted, shameful stain on Jewish history.[153] What these armchair critics dismissively fail to realize is that Zevi and Frank's "anything goes because I'm your [satanic] god" ideology and subversive perversion that has co-opted and infiltrated not only three major religions but Freemasonry, and the elite's power structure is the embodiment of the Illuminati Satanist cult that controls virtually everything on earth. So writing these two guys off as forgotten nobody's proves only that ignorance is anything but bliss.

The Rothschilds financed the Sabbatean-Frankist movement and, along with a dozen other family bloodlines, are the New World Order's gold card members atop Satan's private club, controlling all Western governments (and a lesser extent Eastern ones as well) and the entire Western criminal financial enslavement system that's ready to crash,[154] global child sex trafficking and human organ trafficking networks worldwide,[155] the globalized mass media empire's demonic mind control brainwashing as well as the globalized war machine currently plunging humanity into World War III.[156] So it's more than foolish to underestimate the powerful impact that these two so called "footnotes" have had on human history.

Talmudic Heresy Traditions Converge with Freemasonry to Deliver Luciferian Bloodlust of Pedophile Sex Rings

Turning to Zevi and Frank's indispensable NWO ally, the Freemasons' own encyclopedia makes perfectly clear who the Masons worship:

The promise of life is Osiris. The great doctrine, the great revelation of all the true Mysteries, is that Osiris lives: but he is known by other names. We also, as Masons, look forward to union...with Osiris...To be united with him forever.[157]

Perhaps the most infamous of the Freemasons - Albert Pike, once said, "Masonry is identical to the ancient Mysteries."[158] Pike also reveals the plain truth that the light of his lord is not God but Lucifer himself:

Lucifer, the Light-bearer! Strange and mysterious name to give to the Spirit of Darkness! Lucifer, the Son of the Morning! Is it he who bears the Light, and with its splendors intolerable, blinds feeble, sensual, or selfish souls? Doubt it not![159]

So the light that every Masonic initiate seeks in actuality is Luciferian darkness.[160] The constant theme by which all these pagan satanic cults operate is through deceit, twisting and inversing everything to obscure truth. Its presence in today's Orwellian doublespeak world is in our face at every turn.[161]

As Egyptian pagan god Luciferian worshippers, the Masonic Lodge is also obviously a pagan religion, incorporating all the Luciferian and cabbalistic rituals, doctrines, symbols and occult philosophies rooted in secret Egyptian deity worship.[162] The most well-known Masonic symbol - the square and compass, prominently displayed on Masonic lodges and temples around the world,[163] is strikingly similar to the highest symbol of the occult, the Jewish six-pointed hexagram star found on both Israel's national flag and virtually every Jewish synagogue.[164] As if that's not glaring enough, the Jewish six-pointed star is also called the Star of Moloch, the satanic god by which children are sacrificed, the same god Hillary's staff references in an email.[165]

Like the sexual imagery on full display in Egyptian pagan worship and ancient Jewish mythology, Freemasonry is also flooded with phallic imagery in both the obelisk architecture as well as Masonic hexagrams and triangles.[166] And the finishing piece to this satanic hexagram story is that the only reason it's on the Israeli flag and has come to symbolize Jews is because Mayer Amschel Bauer centuries ago decided to change his name to Rothschild and post the hexagram outside his door,[167] later making it his family coat of arms. Why would Jews choose as their national flag anything even remotely to do with a satanic god that sacrifices children?[168] In keeping with the Frankist chaos and conflict mantra, the Rothschilds,[169]the Zionist founders and the Rockefeller funded United Nations spearheading the birth of the Jewish State in 1948 were no real friends to the Jews.[170] Their loyalty lies much closer to Satan.[171]

The Old Testament refers to the Canaan god Moloch, but other ancient cultures like the Israelites and Egyptians also worshipped Moloch and practiced child sacrifice,[172] and today it's still being worshipped and practiced through secret occult societies and religious sects like Freemasonry, Sabbatean-Frankism, Illuminati and the Jesuit Order that all share the same fallen angel Lucifer. [173] Such close parallels between Masonry, Talmudic Judaism and Sabbatean-Frankism as offshoots from the same source, the pagan Egyptian Star deity that shares the same secret occult ties as Skull and Bones and the Illuminati all have one thing in common - they all worship Lucifer and answer to Satan.[174]

Freemasonry and the Jewish State bearing direct homage to Egyptian pagan roots also manifest through shared statues, [175] motifs, art and architecture. Hebrew University and Israel's Supreme Court building both feature the Egyptian obelisks and Masonic design.[176] Another illustrative example is the Masonic memorial that includes a large Egyptian pyramid showcased on a boulevard in the city of Eilat, Israel.[177] Finally, the founder of the modern Illuminati order and Freemason dabbler and infiltrator Adam Weishaupt was bankrolled in the late 1700's by Mayer Amschel Rothschild, and much of the occultic Egyptian and Masonic-themed architecture[178] and motifs located throughout Israel and springing up across the planet today, [179] all by satanic design, have been funded by that wealthiest Jewish banker family synonymous with New World Order Satanism. A look at the physical layout of America's own capital city Washington DC is also rife with Freemasonic Luciferian symbols.[180]

Pretty much all the top level Masons who have ever written about their secret organization and its history, near unanimously praise Lucifer.[181] Biblically speaking, Lucifer and Satan represent the same fallen angel that Freemasons, Frankists, Illuminati, Jesuits, all worship as their god, in contrast relegating Jesus to "inferior god,"[182] "just another man" status.[183] As we explore Freemasonry and its worship of Lucifer, it's important to distinguish between the highest levels that do worship Lucifer and Satan (and the 33 degree Masons that run the world), and the vast majority of lower degree Masons who do not worship Satan nor run the world.

Lower degree Masons simply don’t have access to the sinister truth of their superiors. Again, there are many good Masons like there are many good Jews just like there are good lower level FBI and CIA agents. It’s the ones at the top that are the evildoers.

Understanding Freemasonry symbols and examining Masons’ writings, it becomes more than clear that they do in fact worship Satan.[184] Albert Churchward, another Masonic writer, points out that the common Masonic symbol of the triangle with the upward pointed apex represents Set, Osiris’ Egyptian pagan god brother as well as one of the infernal names for Satan. This same satanic triangle on the back of every single US dollar bill,[185] the larger pyramid triangle just below the smaller all-seeing eye triangle is also the earthly triangle symbolizing what 33 degree Masonic author George Steinmetz calls “the perfect or divine man.”[186]

Another singular thread through all these pagan religions maintains that human mortals in these secret clubs that bestow power can become God. Well known twentieth century author-mystic and 33 degree Mason Manly P. Hall wrote,[187] “Man is a God in the making…” Yet another Masonic writer Joseph Fort Newton proclaims,[188] “… to the profoundest insight of the human soul - that God becomes man that man may become God.” So the Masonic allegiance is to the pagan Egyptian god Osiris that’s synonymous with the Lucifer/Satan god, certainly not the monotheistic one God worshipped by every major religion – like the Christians, Torah worshipping Jews, Muslims, Hindus, Buddhists, Taoists, Shintoists and on and on.

Like the six-pointed star as a central iconic symbol, the 5-pointed pentagram star is yet another significant link that Freemasonry shares with Satan.[189] The Masons use two 5-pointed stars - the one with just one point upward representing the “good” Lucifer and the star with the two-points upward the “evil” Satan. All it takes is a 33 degree clockwise or counterclockwise turn to shift the good one-point star into the evil satanic two pointed pentagram. And with the 33 degree Masons so actively bent on destroying our world, there’s no coincidence in their symbolism.

Touching on the history of Freemasonry, the oldest Masonic lodge dating back to 1599 is located in Edinburgh, Scotland, complete with its 6-pointed star etched into sandstone above its entrance.[190] Stonemason guilds existed in Scotland and England during the Middle Ages, but the oldest meeting minutes still existing come from Scottish lodges in 1599. The official Grand Lodge of England began in London in 1717, which is the date formally credited for Freemasonry’s founding.[191]

The famous 1782 Congress of Wilhelmsbad held at Meyer Amschel Rothschild’s German castle was a who’s who amongst Satanists because,[192] per Rothschild’s edict,[193] it invited all the secret organizations in Europe numbering 3 million members together for the first time. Wilhelmsbad also marked the first occasion where Jews were admitted as Masonic Lodge members per the Rothschild-Frank-Weishaupt contract drawn several years earlier. After the 1782 conference the Illuminati dominated Freemasonry as it was no longer seen as a competitor but a conjoined secret partner forging the same sinister schemes. Weishaupt set about using his Illuminati and Jesuit Order to control the Vatican. Assassinations of the king of France and emperor of Austria were voted on and planned. In March 1792 a Masonic Jew killed the Austrian emperor. That same month Sweden’s king also went down.

Many of America’s founding fathers were Masons, including George Washington, Ben Franklin, Paul Revere, John Hancock, James Monroe and first Chief Justice John Marshall.[194] This list of great Americans speaks to life’s complexity that one may belong to an evil organization yet still be good. Indeed one third of the US presidents and many of the top European leaders have been high degree Masons.[195] Back in December 2011 the EU and Freemason honchos got together to plot Europe's future.[196] No doubt an NWO favorite - multiculturalism - and the mass migration debacle to come, designed to destroy the continent, must have been high on their agenda.[197] The Freemasonry organization currently boasts over 6 million members worldwide.[198]

Political instability through subversive cloak and daggery plotting wars, murders, overthrows, blackmails, betrayals, all perpetrated by Satanists, have been plaguing this planet for eons of time. Regardless which particular brand of Satanism is practiced, the Talmudic, Cabbalistic or Sabbatean-Frankist Jewry, Freemason[199], Malta or Jesuit, Skull and Bones[200] or Illuminati,[201] CFR[202] or Trilateral Commission,[203] Bilderberger[204] or Club of Rome,[205] all are fast track avenues to the top of the psychopathic food chain, where debauchery like pedophilia and incest is the required norm, their common denominator being the worship of Satan.[206]

The Rothschilds and Rockefellers and their ilk preside over Satan's secret societies. A few photos from a 1972 Rothschild Illuminati Ball are quite revealing.[207] Another fitting gesture is eyewitnesses who have dined at the Rothschild family estate in England insist that a place at the dinner table is ritualistically and faithfully set for their favorite invited guest and god Satan.[208] Initiates of all the satanic organizations whose members are running the world amok have all taken oaths swearing to never divulge the truth behind their evil deeds and secrets.[209] Those who've gone public or exposed the diabolical truth risk death.

With Satanists reigning full control over all earthly affairs, incisive author and observer Henry Makow succinctly sizes up our present predicament:

Society is totally subverted**.** Government, education, entertainment and the news media, think tanks, foundations, NGO’s, professional associations and major charities are totally in the hands of the central banking cartel. Intelligence agencies report to the central bankers. They and Masonic secret societies are a central part of the mechanism of control. Society is helpless to address its real problem: the untenable concentration of wealth, power and cultural influence in the hands of Cabbala-believing bankers secretly intent on culling or enslaving us. Mankind is being put into a coma based on sex and money. The last thing the bankers want to do is awaken the cattle from their slumber.[210]

Today’s Satanic Bloodlust: Ritualized Rape, Torture and Murder Involving Blood-Drinking, Flesh-Eating Elitist Pedophiles

As an extension from ancient times, the folklore legend of vampires in Romania and Bulgaria that author Bram Stoker made famous in Dracula (based on the real life of Vlad the Impaler) stems from sucking the blood of young victims as the elixir to eternal life.[211] In recent years Hollywood’s romanticized obsession over vampirism and zombies is no accident, methodically promoting a glorified image of consuming human blood as the lifeblood sustenance that leads to eternal life. To notable extent in the same way mainstream media has overtly attempted to normalize pedophilia, aided by popular culture, vampirism has also been casually presented as if it’s a mere life choice, a cult bonding likeminded fetish aficionados, though the “vampires” themselves would maintain that their compulsion for sucking and drinking blood is not a volitional act but an actual physical craving and absolute need, just like any other highly addictive substance.[212] Likewise through the ages, satanic blood drinking and pedophilia have acted as mainliner drugs in the ritualistic blood sacrifice of children.

The fact that actual traumatized victims secrete the stress hormone adrenaline into their bloodstream and body moments leading up to death chemically acts as an addictive drug for the murdering Luciferian elite that engages in cannibalism and imbibes on blood.[213] [214] Numerous accounts from courageous survivors detailing their horrid satanic abuse have come forth over the years providing lots of credible, convincing testimony. A woman calling herself Kendall recently appeared on the Dr. Phil Show describing her many years of captivity within a child sex slavery ring where Illuminati figures raped and forced her to eat body parts of sacrificed children. In 1989 while a guest on the Oprah Winfrey Show, Vicki Polin disclosed that she was an incest survivor trapped in a Satanic Jewish cult where ritualized abuse occurred in her synagogue.[215] Her “upstanding” Midwestern family was part of the secret Frankist Movement, dedicated to following the worst, most depraved Cabbalist traditions while worshipping Satan.

Franklin scandal victim Paul Bonacci testified that on July 24th, 1984,[216] he witnessed a child sacrifice killing of a young boy he was forced at gunpoint to have sex with at the infamous pedophile summer camp Bohemian Grove,[217] where the elite regularly gather to pay homage to their version of Baal in the 40 foot stone owl statue they call Moloch.[218] Bonacci even identified bizarre journalist-author Hunter Thompson as an attendee making a snuff film.[219] The night before Gonzo’s “suicide” in early March 2005, Thompson told a friend, “They're gonna make it look like suicide. I know how those bastards think.”[220] Hunter was working on a 9/11 story about how the WTC towers really came down. Often those who know too much and want to reveal what the controllers don’t want people to know, die suddenly in a “suicide” cover-up.

And obviously for blackmail control over the politician puppets, pedophilia, cannibalism and murder are often caught on film.[221] The planetary controllers deploy Mossad and the CIA to regularly entrap elitist stooges through pedophilia rings. Mossad used convicted child sex offender billionaire Jeffrey Epstein and his Sex Slave Island to get the dirt on scores of powerful scum still in power in Washington.[222]

With Pizzagate/PedoGate exposing the global child sex trafficking rings that have been operating for many decades,[223] [224] pedophile scandals are being uncovered on a near weekly basis in the United Kingdom [225]and Europe, [226] Australia, [227] Canada, [228]and America involving a massive interlocking global operation.[229] [230] And raping children, blood draining and drinking, and murdering child victims have been a permanent fixture since ancient times. This presentation has encapsulated that long horrifying history that has led to this current epidemic. But we are finally turning the corner now on this despicable human blight, and the momentum is swinging towards growing public awareness and outrage, pushing for accountability and justice for our children.

The next section documents one eyewitness who was exposed to this satanic pedophile empire, had the conscience and courage to talk about it, and then just recently paid for it with his life.

One Illuminati Whistleblower’s Recent Firsthand Account of Ritualized Child Sacrifice and His Suspicious Death

Dutch entrepreneur Ronald Bernard was interviewed earlier this year based on his extended involvement in the international crime cabal’s darkest domain.[231] He openly disclosed that for five years he operated at the top levels of power in Iraq and elsewhere, directly involved in currency exchange, money laundering enormous amounts of cash across borders. His work included interfacing with central banks, national governments, various deep state players like the CIA and Mossad, transnational oil corporations and US-Israeli-Saudi backed terrorist organizations, all the while maintaining as low a profile as possible to avoid detection. As a money handler employed in illicit global smuggling operations involving drugs, weapons and global child sex trafficking, up close and personal Bernard encountered the Luciferian world of the globalist crime cabal, at the heart of the US war making Empire machine, witnessing child pedophilia and children being ritualistically sacrificed.

Mr. Bernard explained how his blind ambition and lust for money led him on a path toward becoming a psychopath, but when he saw little kids being raped, tortured and murdered, his long buried conscience quickly shot to the surface. He astoundingly realized how the Luciferian worshippers all around him at the top of the predatory food chain detested human beings and in fact life itself. It sickened Ronald to see how his peers had literally sold their soul to the devil in exchange for all the riches, decadent luxury and sexual depravities big money and power buy. But like every organized crime syndicate, once you’re in, it’s extremely difficult getting out. After refusing to play the game any longer, and enduring torture on multiple levels, he underwent a protracted period of living hell, experiencing a total breakdown of both his mental and physical health, ending up in a hospital ICU. An out of body experience and cathartic spiritual transformation granted him the courage as an Illuminati whistleblower to speak out, revealing his riveting, harrowing story. His account fully exposes the demonic barbarity of the soulless beast that is the hidden satanic cult currently running this world.

Sadly, after moving to the United States and marrying an American, in late August 2017 Illuminati whistleblower

Ronald Bernard was found dead after taking a walk in a rural area of Sebring, Florida. He called authorities stating he was lost and his life was in danger. Several hours later his body was discovered face down in shallow water.[232] Revealing the dirty laundry of the planetary controllers rarely comes without grave consequence.

Satanic Snuff Films and Cannibalism

I must warn the reader that the content and imagery evoked from a graphic description of two snuff films seen by an individual who wrote about what he'd viewed years later is extremely disturbing.[233] For the faint of heart, too disturbing. The films obviously left an indelible imprint that would never be forgotten. It seems like a very real glimpse into the dark world of Illuminati Satanists caught on film in action, cutting the throats of two toddlers, draining their blood, and then two cooks on camera instructing how to prepare and cook human flesh for dinner guests wearing masks that cover their eyes. It's so shocking it seems like a devil's cooking show from a Fellini movie.

The next scene is at the dining table with assembled guests and host couple. All are Satanists. The host has recently hired a young man for an executive position in his company, and he and his wife are the special guests. They're filmed eating the two children. The new employee and his wife are nervous but the ten other diners at the table remain jovial. After the meal comes dessert and a wine toast followed by the host lecturing his new hire on treating the general public like peasant and cattle, emphasizing how different they the elite are from the "sub-human" animals that they detest and can barely tolerate. Finally the servants come out with two trays that they take the covers off to expose the toddler's heads. The young man and his wife convulse with shock and the husband vomits. They just passed their initiation into the "good life" of the upper crust Illuminates.

The second film is even more disturbing. A young homeless pregnant woman has been taken in by the Illuminati under the pretense of receiving support from a social charity service. She has been set up in an apartment and provided medical care for her child’s birth. The film features the same host who has invited the young mother to dine with the same satanic friends including the young couple from the last film. The mother wants to see her baby but the host claims she’s being taken care of by a nurse and wants to get to know her without the child distraction. They end up serving the mother her own baby’s flesh. The idea amongst these psychopathic monsters is the more evil the act, the more you’ll be rewarded by Satan. When the tray of her child’s head is displayed, the woman of course begins flipping out uncontrollably. Though the film ends there, the young mother was murdered shortly afterwards.

The reason the two murder scenes were made available for the writer to view is the Illuminati member tasked with making the films showed it to him. Though the filmmaker was a Satanist himself, he had become upset with the child sacrifices and was trying to get the leadership within the Illuminati committee to be purged. So he’d kept copies of the snuff films and showed them to people he was unauthorized to give access to. He had renounced his Satanism and become a Christian but when higher ranking members learned he’d let others watch the films, he too was murdered.

Skeptics can easily scoff that this story could well be fictional, and of course that’s true. But knowing that little children are brutally murdered and filmed, and Satanists do regularly eat children’s flesh, this account appears both realistic and credible. Take it for what it’s worth. It’s included here at the end of this bloodlust chapter to leave a graphically sober and jarring impression, so that motivation and determination to halt this heinously insane savagery can build and spread the world over. We must stop the slaughter of our children!

---

[1] Karin Lehnardt, “48 Interesting Facts about Missing People,” *Fact Retriever*, February 25, 2017, https://www.factretriever.com/missing-people-facts.

[2] Belinda Luscombe, “Inside the Scarily Lucrative Business Model of Human Trafficking”, *Time Magazine*, May 20, 2014, http://time.com/105360/inside-the-scarily-lucrative-business-model-of-human-trafficking/.

[3] Robin Loxley and Michael Sunstar, *Satanic Illuminati Bloodlines*, (online book), https://archive.org/stream/SatanicIlluminatiBloodlines#page/n0/mode/2up.

[4] Roger Landry, “Ultimate Control: Politicians, Pedophilia & Blackmail”, *The Liberty Beacon*, July 11, 2016, http://www.thelibertybeacon.com/ultimate-control-politicians-pedophilia-blackmail/.

[5] “MI5 ‘Blackmailed Pedophile Politicians’ over Belfast Boys’ Home Abuse, Inquiry Hears,” *RT*, May 31, 2016, https://www.rt.com/uk/344959-belfast-abuse-mi5-inquiry/.

[6] Joachim Hagopian, “Power, Pedophilia and the US Government,” *Veterans Today*, February 7, 2015, http://www.veteranstoday.com/2015/02/07/power-pedophilia-and-the-us-government/.

[7] Michael White, “The Westminster Child Abuse ‘Cover-up’: how much did MPs know?” *The Guardian*, May 7, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2015/mar/17/westminster-child-abuse-paedophile-ring-failure.

[8] Joachim Hagopian, “Pizzagate: Podesta Perps and Clinton’s International Child Sex Trafficking Ring Exposed,” *Sott.net*, December 2, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/335512-Pizzagate-Podesta-pedo-perps-and-Clintons-international-child-sex-trafficking-ring-exposed.

[9] Joachim Hagopian, “Breaking Sex Scandal from Weiner’s Laptop may be the Smoking Gun that will Bring down the Clintons for Good,” Sott.net, November 4, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/333069-Breaking-sex-scandal-from-Weiners-laptop-may-be-the-smoking-gun-that-will-bring-down-the-Clintons-for-good.

[10] Joachim Hagopian, “Pizzagate Turned PedoGate Leads to Momentum Surge in Busting Global Child Sex Trafficking Rings,” Sott.net, February 27, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/343780-Pizzagate-turned-PedoGate-Leads-to-Momentum-Surge-in-Busting-Global-Child-Sex-Trafficking-Rings.

[11] Mark Hodge, “Billionaire Tech Tycoons are Frantically Buying Up Islands and Pimped-out Bunkers Amid Fears of Nuclear War,” *The Sun*, January 25, 2017, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/2702812/billionaire-tech-tycoons-are-frantically-buying-up-properties-on-remote-islands-amid-fears-america-and-europe-will-be-ravaged-by-nuclear-war/.

[12] Michael Salla, “Secret Space Program Battle over Antarctic Skies during Global Elite Exodus,” *Exopolitics*, June 16, 2016, http://exopolitics.org/secret-

space-programs-battle-over-antarctic-skies-during-global-elite-exodus/.

[13] Dane Wigington, “False Flag Chemical Weapons Attack Pushes World War III while Global Geoengineering Omnicide Continues,” *Geoengineering Watch*, April 5, 2017, http://www.geoengineeringwatch.org/false-flag-chemical-weapons-attack-pushes-wwlll-while-global-geoengineering-omnicide-continues/.

[14] Bryan Walsh, “Why Doomsday is Closer than you Think,” *Time Magazine*, January 26, 2017, http://time.com/4650303/doomsday-clock-nuclear-war-donald-trump/.

[15] Jack Murphy, Want a Job as a Crisis Actor for the Next False Flag?” *The Truth Seeker*, October 30, 2016, http://www.thetruthseeker.co.uk/?p=150530.

[16] Larry Chin, “The Trump/Syria Conundrum: Will Trump Deliver Deep State’s World War?” Global Research, April 12, 2017, http://www.globalresearch.ca/the-trump-syria-conundrum-will-trump-deliver-deep-states-world-war/5584702.

[17] Michael Depinto, “AG Sessions to Pelosi: Expect Pedophile Investigations to Begin,” *Freedom Outpost*, March 4, 2017, http://freedomoutpost.com/ag-jeff-sessions-to-pelosi-expect-pedophile-investigations-to-begin/.

[18] Paul Mason, “Nuclear War has Become Thinkable Again – We Need a Reminder of What it Means,” *The Guardian*, July 14, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2017/apr/17/nuclear-war-has-become-thinkable-again-we-need-a-reminder-of-what-it-means.

[19] Andrew M. Lobaczewski, “Political Ponerology: The Genesis of Evil,” *Ponerology*, http://www.ponerology.com/evil_2b.html.

[20] Joachim Hagopian, “The Globalist Pathway to New World Order Tyranny,” *Global Research*, October 23, 2015, http://www.globalresearch.ca/divide-and-conquer-the-globalist-pathway-to-new-world-order-tyranny-from-a-geopolitics-perspective/5483935.

[21] Joachim Hagopian, “Globalists’ New World Order: Soft and Hard Kill Methods. An Unknown and Uncertain Future,” *Global Research*, http://www.globalresearch.ca/the-globalists-new-world-order-soft-and-hard-kill-methods-an-unknown-and-uncertain-future/5451356.

[22] Joachim Hagopian, “How to Overcome the Elite’s Divide and Rule Control over a Divided Nation and World,” *LewRockwell.com*, February 07, 2017, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2017/02/joachim-hagopian/overcome-elites-divide-rule/.

[23] John Vibes, “Puppet Masters Spiritcooking? Mainstream Media Reports Elites can Ingest the Blood of Children to Prevent Aging - Seriously,” *Sott.net*, January 07, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/338946-Spiritcooking-Mainstream-media-reports-elites-can-ingest-the-blood-of-children-to-prevent-aging-Seriously.

[24] Ethan Huff, "Cannibalism, Vaccines and Animal-Human Hybrid DNA: Dave Hodges Interviews Mike Adams About The Planned Destruction of The Human Race," *Natural News*, April 13, 2017, http://www.naturalnews.com/2017-04-13-cannibalism-vaccines-and-animal-human-hybrid-dna-dave-hodges-interviews-mike-adams-about-the-planned-destruction-of-the-human-race.html.

[25] Paul Jongko, "10 Ancient Cultures That Practiced Ritual Human Sacrifice," *Toptenz.net*, July 29, 2014, http://www.toptenz.net/10-ancient-cultures-practiced-ritual-human-sacrifice.php.

[26] Jason Daley, "Did the Ancient Greeks Engage in Human Sacrifice?" *Smartnews*, August 12, 2016, http://www.smithsonianmag.com/smart-news/did-ancient-greeks-engage-human-sacrifice-180960111/.

[27] "Occult Zionism VI: Moloch and Baal," *Infrakshun*, https://infrakshun.wordpress.com/tag/ammonites/.

[28] Natalia Klimczak, "Dark Side of Etruscan Life Revealed in Discovery of Shacked Skeleton," *Ancient Origins*, November 10, 2016, http://www.ancient-origins.net/news-history-archaeology/dark-side-etruscan-life-revealed-discovery-shackled-skeleton-006986.

[29] Lisa L. Spangenberg, "Did the Celts or Druids Perform Human Sacrifice?" *digitalmedievalist.com*, https://www.digitalmedievalist.com/opinionated-celtic-faqs/human-sacrifice/.

[30] Ilaria Maria Sala, "Archeologists have Found Proof that an Ancient Chinese Dynasty Used Foreign Slaves," *Quartz*, June 22, 2017, https://qz.com/1011851/archaeologists-have-found-proof-that-the-ancient-chinese-shang-dynasty-used-foreign-slaves/.

[31] Noritake Tsuda, *The Open Court*, (New York: Macmillan & Co., 1918), "Human Sacrifices in Japan," p. 760-767, opensiuc.lib.siu.edu/cgi/viewcontent.cgi?article=3320...

[32] "Ancient Human Sacrifice found in South Korea," The Japan Times, May 17, 2017, https://www.japantimes.co.jp/news/2017/05/17/asia-pacific/science-health-asia-pacific/ancient-human-sacrifice-found-south-korea/.

[33] Sarah Kaplan, "The Darker Link between Ancient Human Sacrifice and Our Modern World," *The Washington Post*, April 5, 2016, https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/morning-mix/wp/2016/04/05/the-darker-link-between-ancient-human-sacrifice-and-our-modern-world/?utm_term=.06d30d1e91f3.

[34] Christopher Minster, "The Ancient Maya and Human sacrifice," *ThoughtCo*, June 18, 2017, https://www.thoughtco.com/the-ancient-maya-and-human-sacrifice-2136173.

[35] “Scientists have Found an Alien Code in Our DNS: Ancient Engineers,” *Ancient Code*, https://www.ancient-code.com/scientists-have-found-an-alien-code-in-our-dna-ancient-engineers/.

[36] John Stokes, “Scientists Find Extraterrestrial Genes in Human DNA,” *rense.com*, January 11, 2007, http://rense.com/general74/d3af.htm.

[37] Makia Freeman, “Satanic Pedophile Network Exposed in Australia (Just Like in the USA),” *The Freedom Articles*, February 12, 2016, http://freedom-articles.toolsforfreedom.com/satanic-pedophilia-network-exposed-australia/.

[38] Warren Manger, “Where Human sacrifices are still taking place throughout the world,” *Mirror*, July 3, 2015, http://www.mirror.co.uk/news/world-news/human-sacrifices-still-taking-place-5999139.

[39] Carol A. Valentine, “Human Sacrifice, the Talmud, and the Moloch Problem,” *Come and Hear*, http://www.come-and-hear.com/editor/br_3.html.

[40] Matt Hale, “How and Why Jews Have Sacrificed Non-Jewish Children as Part of Their Religion,” *Gawronski Info* (a blog site), October 14, 2013, https://rafzen.wordpress.com/2013/10/14/how-and-why-jews-have-sacrificed-non-jewish-children-as-part-of-their-religion/.

[41] Matt Hale, https://rafzen.wordpress.com/2013/10/14/how-and-why-jews-have-sacrificed-non-jewish-children-as-part-of-their-religion/.

[42] Becky Pemberton, “When did Passover 2017 End and why the Second Passover, Pesach Sheni, Celebrated is?” *The Sun*, April 17, 2017, https://www.thesun.co.uk/living/3149569/passover-2017-second-pesach-sheni-when/.

[43] Arnold S. Leese, *Jewish Ritual Murder* (London: IFL Printing and Publishing Company, 1938), http://holywar.org/txt/RitualMurder/jrm_toc.html.

[44] Matt Hale, https://rafzen.wordpress.com/2013/10/14/how-and-why-jews-have-sacrificed-non-jewish-children-as-part-of-their-religion/.

[45] Matt Hale, https://rafzen.wordpress.com/2013/10/14/how-and-why-jews-have-sacrificed-non-jewish-children-as-part-of-their-religion/.

[46] “Jewish History Sourcebook: The Expulsion from Spain, 1492 CE,” *Fordham University*, http://sourcebooks.fordham.edu/jewish/1492-jews-spain1.asp.

[47] Sven Longshank, “The Jewish Ritual Murder of White Christian Children,” *Daily Stormer*, http://smoloko.com/?p=17326.

[48] Sven Longshank, http://smoloko.com/?p=17326.

[49] Joachim Hagopian, “Israel is The Organ Harvesting and Human Trafficking Global Ringleader, With Complicit Help from US and Turkey,” *Sott.net*, May 14,

2016, https://www.sott.net/article/318286-Israel-is-the-organ-harvesting-and-human-trafficking-global-ringleader-with-complicit-help-from-US-and-Turkey.

[50] Ariel Toaff, *Blood Passover*, 2007, www.israelshamir.net/BLOODPASSOVER.pdf

[51] “Encyclopedia Judaica: Blood Libel,” *Jewish Virtual Library*, http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/blood-libel.

[52] Israel Shamir, “Bloodcurdling Libel,” *The Writings of Israel Shamir*, http://www.israelshamir.net/English/blood.htm.

[53] Don Talbot, “Quotes 'With Attitude' From the Jewish Talmud,” *Rense.com*, April 3, 2002, http://www.rense.com/general21/tal.htm.

[54] Don Talbot, http://www.rense.com/general21/tal.htm.

[55] “Why Jesus Was Really Killed: Challenging the Money Changers,” *Washington’s Blog*, April 20, 2014, http://www.washingtonsblog.com/2014/04/jesus-money-changers-modern-banks.html.

[56] Adjams, “Why did Jesus use Violence to Cleanse the Temple?” *Love Your Enemies*, April 24, 2007, https://loveyourenemies.wordpress.com/2007/04/24/jesus-cleansing-the-temple/.

[57] “What is the 'Synagogue of Satan' (Revelation 2:9; 3:9)?” *cgg.org*, https://www.cgg.org//index.cfm/fuseaction/Library.sr/CT/BQA/k/114/What-Is-Synagogue-Satan-Revelation-29-39.htm.

[58] “What is the synagogue of Satan in Revelation?” *Got questions*, https://www.gotquestions.org/synagogue-of-Satan.html.

[59] Tyler Durden, “The US is about to Hit $20 Trillion in Debt: Here's How It Affects You,” *Zero Hedge*, May 15, 2017, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2017-03-15/us-about-hit-20-trillion-debt-heres-how-it-affects-you.

[60] Jason Hommel, “Usury Enslaves,” *Rense.com*, January 15, 2004, http://www.rense.com/general47/usury.htm.

[61] “Jewish supremacism,” *Metapedia*, http://en.metapedia.org/wiki/Jewish_supremacism.

[62] S. Acharya, “Jewish Talmudic Quotes - Facts Are Facts,” *Rense.com*, July 26, 2009, http://rense.com/general86/talmd.htm.

[63] Ted Pike, “Talmud Encourages Jews to Deceive,” *Rense.com*, October 11, 2010, http://www.rense.com/general92/talmud.htm.

[64] "Judaism: The Written Law – Torah," *Jewish Virtual Library*, http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/the-written-law-torah.

[65] "Judaism in its Own Words – Who is Human? Who is Not?" *Bible Believers*, https://www.biblebelievers.org.au/judaism.htm.

[66] Matthew Wagner, "Eliyahu Advocates Carpet Bombing Gaza," *Jerusalem Post*, May 30, 2007, http://www.jpost.com/Israel/Eliyahu-advocates-carpet-bombing-Gaza.

[67] Khalid Amayreh, "Major Rabbi Says Non-Jews are Donkeys, Created to Serve Jews," *The Peoples Voice*, October 18, 2010, http://www.thepeoplesvoice.org/TPV3/Voices.php/2010/10/18/major-rabbi-says-non-jews-are-donkeys-cr#more14340.

[68] Arthur Cristian, "Understanding the Synagogue of Satan, Zionism, Talmudism, Babylonian Cabbalism," *Love for Live*, January 18, 2008, http://loveforlife.com.au/content/08/01/18/understanding-synagogue-satan-zionism-talmudism-babylonian-cabbalism.

[69] "These 3 Groups Are Responsible for 9/11 and the Fake 'War on Terrorism'" *The Event Chronicle*, September 11, 2016, http://www.theeventchronicle.com/911/3-groups-responsible-911-fake-war-terror/.

[70] Kevin Barret, "Burying Sharon - and "We Jews control America"," *Veterans Today*, January 11, 2014, http://www.veteranstoday.com/2014/01/11/burying-sharon/.

[71] "Initial List of Council on Foreign Relations Members," *Bible Believers*, https://www.biblebelievers.org.au/cfrall3.htm#Initial%20List%20of%20Council%20on%20Foreign%20Relations%20Members.

[72] Kate Yandell, "Genetic Roots of the Ashkenazi Jews," *The Scientist*, October 8, 2013, http://www.the-scientist.com/?articles.view/articleNo/37821/title/Genetic-Roots-of-the-Ashkenazi-Jews/.

[73] Bryce Self, "Nimrod, Mars and The Marduk Connection," *Idolphin*, November 4, 1985, http://www.ldolphin.org/Nimrod.html.

[74] Don Melvin, Schams Elwazer and Joshua Berlinger, "ISIS Destroys Temple of Bel in Palmyra, Syria, U.N. Reports," *CNN*, September 1, 2015, http://edition.cnn.com/2015/08/31/middleeast/palmyra-temple-damaged/.

[75] "ISIS destroys Roman Monument in Palmyra," *Associated Press/CBC News*, January 20, 2017, http://www.cbc.ca/news/world/isis-palmyra-theatre-monument-destroyed-1.3944290.

[76] Preston James, "Time to Start Defending Christianity (Part IV)," *Veterans Today*, April 12, 2017, http://www.veteranstoday.com/2017/04/12/time-to-start-

defending-christianity-part-iv/.

[77] Tabitha M. Powledge, “Are Modern Jews Converted Khazarian Pagans? More Evidence of Middle Eastern Roots,” *Genetic Literacy Project*, September 23, 2014, https://geneticliteracyproject.org/2014/09/23/are-modern-jews-converted-khazarian-pagans-more-evidence-of-middle-eastern-roots/.

[78] William Hanna, Israel’s Persecution of Palestinians and the Reality of Present Day ‘Anti-Semitism,’” *Global Research*, February 17, 2015, http://www.globalresearch.ca/israels-persecution-of-palestinians-and-the-reality-of-present-day-anti-semitism/5431642.

[79] Preston James, “The Hidden History of the Incredibly Evil Khazarian Mafia (Updated),” *Veterans Today*, March 8, 2015, http://www.veteranstoday.com/2015/03/08/the-hidden-history-of-the-incredibly-evil-khazarian-mafia/comment-page-1/.

[80] “World Population: Past, Present, and Future,” *Worldometers*, http://www.worldometers.info/world-population/.

[81] “The Georgia Guidestones,” *Radio Liberty*, http://www.radioliberty.com/stones.htm.

[82] Anders, “NWO: 1.000 Baal Temples Worldwide! “They Call me Satan and Some Lucifer. But My Name is Still Baal – and People Worship me Today as in the Dawn of Mankind”,” *New.Euro-Med.dk*, April 11, 2016, http://new.euro-med.dk/20160411-nwo-1-000-baal-temples-worldwide-they-call-me-satan-and-some-lucifer-but-my-name-is-still-baal-and-people-worship-me-today-as-in-the-dawn-of-mankind.php.

[83] Michael Snyder, “A Gateway Could Be Opened When the Temple of Baal Is Erected in Times Square,” *Charisma News*, March 29, 2016, https://www.charismanews.com/opinion/56116-a-gateway-could-be-opened-when-the-temple-of-baal-is-erected-in-times-square.

[84] Alex Newman, “At “World Government Summit,” Top Globalists Drop the Mask,” *The New American*, February 17, 2017, https://www.thenewamerican.com/world-news/asia/item/25404-at-world-government-summit-top-globalists-drop-the-mask.

[85] Michael Snyder, “This Week The ‘Arch Of Baal’ Was Displayed For The Third Time In Honor Of ‘The World Government Summit’,” *Blacklisted News*, http://www.blacklistednews.com/This_Week_The_%E2%80%98Arch_Of_Baal%E2%80%99_Was_Displayed_For_The_Third_Time_In_Honor_Of_%E2%80%98The_World_Government_Summit%E2%80%99/56911/0/38/38/Y/M.html.

[86] Kim Willsher, Larry Elliott and Dominic Rushe, “Christine Lagarde avoids jail, keeps job after guilty verdict in negligence trial,” *The Guardian*, December 19, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2016/dec/19/christine-lagarde-avoids-sentence-despite-guilty-verdict-in-negligence-trial.

[87] Alex Newman, “The Real Agenda Behind UN “Sustainability” Unmasked,” *The New American*, July 9, 2012, https://www.thenewamerican.com/rio-20/item/12008-the-real-agenda-behind-un-%E2%80%9Csustainability%E2%80%9D-unmasked.

[88] T. Allen Greenfield, “About the Frankists,” *Porges*, http://www.porges.net/Frankists.html.

[89] “Sabbatai Zevi,” *Wikipedia*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sabbatai_Zevi.

[90] “Jacob Frank,” *Wikipedia*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Jacob_Frank.

[91] Henry Giroux, “Neoliberal Violence in the Age of Orwellian Nightmares,” *Counter Punch*, November 24, 2014, https://www.counterpunch.org/2014/11/24/neoliberal-violence-in-the-age-of-orwellian-nightmares/.

[92] John Pilger, “The Revolutionary Act of Telling the Truth,” *Information Clearing House*, September 30, 2015, http://www.informationclearinghouse.info/article43008.htm.

[93] Geoffrey Grider, “Why is the Illuminati All Seeing Eye of Horus Suddenly Everywhere You Turn,” *nowtheendbegins.com*, May 30, 2014, http://www.nowtheendbegins.com/illuminati-seeing-eye-horus-suddenly-everywhere-turn/.

[94] “History of the Jews in Thessaloniki,” *Wikipedia*, August 11, 2017, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_the_Jews_in_Thessaloniki.

[95] “Turkey’s Donmeh Jewry and Their Sabbatean Roots,” *The Millennium Report*, March 17, 2016, http://themillenniumreport.com/2016/03/turkeys-donmeh-jewry-and-their-sabbatean-roots/.

[96] Reb Yakov Leib HaKohain, “A Critical Re-Assessment of Sabbatai Zevi,” *Donmeh-West*, http://www.donmeh-west.com/re-evaluation.shtml.

[97] “Pan-Jewish History,” *Panjewish*, https://panjewish.org/denominations/history/.

[98] David Livingstone, “The Illuminati,” *Conspiracy School*, http://www.conspiracyschool.com/illuminati.

[99] “Part 2: Power Elite, Masons, Illuminati,” *911nwo*, April 3, 2017, http://911nwo.com/?p=2130.

[100] Sabamya Jaugu, “Christopher Columbus and the History of Colonial Destruction. An African Perspective,” *Global Research*, October 21, 2014, http://www.globalresearch.ca/christopher-columbus-and-the-history-of-colonial-destruction-an-african-perspective/5409040.

[101] “Jews in the Ottoman Empire and Turkey,” *Projetaladin*, http://www.projetaladin.org/holocaust/en/muslims-and-jews/muslims-and-jews-in-history/jews-in-the-ottoman-empire-and-turkey.html.

[102] “Bad Prophecies of the End,” *Profitingmuch*, https://profitingmuch.org/m/bad-prophecies-of-the-end/.

[103] “Part 2: Power Elite, Masons, Illuminati,” *911nwo*, April 3, 2017, http://911nwo.com/?p=2130.

[104] Gad Nassi, “Secret Muslim Jews Await their Messiah: Shabbetai Tzvi,” *Sefarad*, http://sefarad.org/lm/009/nassi.html.

[105] Richard Evans, “The Kabbalah is a Hoax,” *henrymakow.com*, September 5, 2010, https://www.henrymakow.com/whats_wrong_with_the_kabbalah.html.

[106] Ada Rapoport-Albert, “Sabbateanism,” *Jewish Women’s Archive*, https://jwa.org/encyclopedia/article/sabbateanism.

[107] “Sabbateans,” *Religion Wiki*, http://religion.wikia.com/wiki/Sabbateans.

[108] David Livingstone, http://www.conspiracyschool.com/illuminati.

[109] “Jacob Frank,” *New World Encyclopedia*, http://www.newworldencyclopedia.org/entry/Jacob_Frank.

[110] “Jacob Frank,” *Jewish Virtual Library*, http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/jacob-frank.

[111] “Top Secret Judaism Exposed Part II,” *Expand our Mind*, November 11, 2016, http://expandourmind.com/2016/11/11/top-secret-judaism-exposed-part-ii-2016-11-11/.

[112] Soldier Of Truth, “Sex Cult of Frank, Weishaupt, and Rothschild,” *YouTube*, May 28, 2015, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=MPVbBPasjoU.

[113] David Livingstone, “The Holiness of Sin: Freud, the Frankfurt School and the Kabbalah,” *Conspiracy School*, September 19, 2013, http://www.conspiracyschool.com/blog/holiness-sin-freud-frankfurt-school-and-kabbalah.

[114] Gershom Scholem, “Shabtai Zvi & Jacob Frank and the Frankists,” *Sites.Google.com*, https://sites.google.com/site/comuneiro/home/shabtai-zvi-jacob-frank-and-the-frankists.

[115] “Top Secret Judaism Exposed Part II,” *Expand Our Mind*, November 11, 2016, http://expandourmind.com/2016/11/11/top-secret-judaism-exposed-part-ii-2016-11-11/.

[116] Pawel Maciejko, “Frankism,” *The Yivo Encyclopedia*, http://www.yivoencyclopedia.org/article.aspx/Frankism.

[117] “Jacob Frank,” http://www.newworldencyclopedia.org/entry/Jacob_Frank.

[118] Gershom Scholem, https://sites.google.com/site/comuneiro/home/shabtai-zvi-jacob-frank-and-the-frankists.

[119] Anders, “Through Frankism, Spiritual Inspiration of NWO, Lucifer Is the Real Ruler of the US and its NWO Lapdogs: ‘The Holy Sin,’” *new.euro-med.dk*, March 9, 2015, http://new.euro-med.dk/20150309-through-frankism-spiritual-inspiration-of-nwo-lucifer-is-the-real-ruler-of-the-us-and-its-nwo-lapdogs-the-holy-sin.php.

[120] “Jacob Frank,” http://www.newworldencyclopedia.org/entry/Jacob_Frank.

[121] “Jacob Frank,” *Wikipedia*, July 10, 2017, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Jacob_Frank.

[122] “Jacob Frank,” http://www.newworldencyclopedia.org/entry/Jacob_Frank.

[123] “Crypto-Judaism,” *Wikipedia*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Crypto-Judaism.

[124] The Dearborn Independent, “The Gentle Art of Changing Jewish Names,” *Jrbooksonline.com*, November 12, 1921, http://www.jrbooksonline.com/intl_jew_full_version/ij70.htm.

[125] Michael Sunstar and Robin Loxley, *Satanic Illuminati Bloodlines*, *Archive.org* (online book), https://archive.org/stream/SatanicIlluminatiBloodlines/SatanicIlluminatiBloodlines_djvu.txt. PDF

[126] David Livingstone, “The Illuminati,” *Conspiracy School*, http://www.conspiracyschool.com/illuminati.

[127] David Livingstone, http://www.conspiracyschool.com/illuminati.

[128] “Jacob Frank,” http://www.newworldencyclopedia.org/entry/Jacob_Frank.

[129] “Sex Cult of Frank, Weishaupt, and Rothschild,” *YouTube* video, 17:56, posted on May 28, 2015, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=MPVbBPasjoU.

[130] “Part 2: Power Elite, Masons, Illuminati,” *911nwo.com*, April 3, 2017, http://911nwo.com/?p=2130.

[131] David Livingstone, “The Shabbatean Frankists,” *Conspiracy School*, http://www.conspiracyschool.com/illuminati.

[132] “The Illuminati- Founders of the New World Order,” *erenow.com* (a blog site), https://erenow.com/common/the-most-evil-secret-societies-in-history/2.html.

[133] World Government, “A History of the New World Order - Part I,” *Michael Journal*, October 1, 2002, http://www.michaeljournal.org/articles/world-

government/item/a-history-of-the-new-world-order-part-i.

[134] "Jacob Frank," *Jewish Virtual Library*, http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/jacob-frank.

[135] "Jacob Frank," http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/jacob-frank.

[136] Harris Lenowitz, "Full text of "The Collection of the Words of the Lord Jacob Frank"," *Archieve.org*, https://archive.org/stream/TheCollectionOfTheWordsOfTheLordJacobFrank/TheCollectionOfTheWordsOfTheLordJacobFrank_djvu.txt.

[137] Robert Mock MD, "The Sabbatean Jews and their Affect on Global Politics," *Bible Searchers*, July 29, 2004, http://www.biblesearchers.com/reflections/2004/augustkerry.shtml#Alliance.

[138] David Livingstone, http://www.conspiracyschool.com/illuminati.

[139] Robert Mock MD, "Jacob Frank and the Jewish Alliance with the Illuminati and the Rothschilds," *Bible Searchers*, July 29, 2004, http://www.biblesearchers.com/reflections/2004/augustkerry.shtml#Alliance.

[140] David Livingstone, http://www.conspiracyschool.com/illuminati.

[141] David Livingstone, http://www.conspiracyschool.com/illuminati.

[142] Karl Marx, "Under the Sign of The Scorpion," *Bibliotecapleyades*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/signscorpion/signscorpion03.htm.

[143] Anders, "Jesuits 1890 – Masters of Jewish Elite – Created Zionist Tool: Antisemitism. Jewish NWO Elite Infiltrating and Using Masonry to Destroy Christianity and the West," *new.euro-med.dk*, February 26, 2015, http://new.euro-med.dk/20150226-jesuits-1890-masters-of-jewish-elite-created-zionist-tool-antisemitism-jewish-nwo-elite-infiltrating-and-using-masonry-to-destroy-christianity-and-the-west.php.

[144] David Livingstone, "The Shabbatean Frankists," *Conspiracy School*, http://www.conspiracyschool.com/illuminati.

[145] David Livingstone, "The Holiness of Sin: Freud, the Frankfurt School and the Kabbalah," *Conspiracy School*, September 19, 2013, http://www.conspiracyschool.com/blog/holiness-sin-freud-frankfurt-school-and-kabbalah.

[146] "The World's Biggest False Flag OP," *Aangirfan*, June 20, 2014, http://aanirfan.blogspot.co.id/2014/06/28-june-worlds-biggest-false-flag-op.html.

[147] "42 False-Flag Attacks Officially Admitted To," *Washington's Blog* on *What Really Happened*,

http://www.whatreallyhappened.com/WRHARTICLES/42falseflags.php#axzz4fMKBiCDA.

[148] Milton William Cooper, “Secret Societies,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, December 1, 1989, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_cooper8.htm.

[149] Ken Adachi, “The New World Order (NWO) An Overview,” *Educate-Yourself*, June 27, 2015, http://educate-yourself.org/nwo/.

[150] Michael Snyder, “12 Times Pope Francis Has Openly Promoted a One World Religion or a New World Order,” *End of The American Dream*, July 31, 2016, http://endoftheamericandream.com/archives/12-times-pope-francis-has-openly-promoted-a-one-world-religion-or-a-new-world-order.

[151] Joachim Hagopian, “Towards a Global Military Fighting Machine: One World Government Protected by a One World Military,” *Global Research*, June 18, 2015, http://www.globalresearch.ca/towards-a-global-military-fighting-machine-one-world-government-protected-by-a-one-world-military/5456678.

[152] Chris Hamilton, “Why the World Economy is Likely to Collapse (In 1 Simple Chart),” *Zero Hedge*, January 24, 2017, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2017-01-24/why-world-economy-likely-collapse-1-simple-chart.

[153] Shaul Magid, “Jacob Frank and the Heresy We Forgot,” *Forward*, June 1, 2011, http://forward.com/culture/138272/jacob-frank-and-the-heresy-we-forgot/.

[154] Michael Snyder, “11 Facts That Prove That the U.S. Economy in 2017 is in Far Worse Shape Than it was In 2016,” *The Economic Collapse*, April 23, 2017, http://theeconomiccollapseblog.com/archives/11-facts-that-prove-that-the-u-s-economy-in-2017-is-in-far-worse-shape-than-it-was-in-2016.

[155] Joachim Hagopian, “Israel is the organ harvesting and human trafficking global ringleader, with complicit help from US and Turkey,” *Sott.net*, May 14, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/318286-Israel-is-the-organ-harvesting-and-human-trafficking-global-ringleader-with-complicit-help-from-US-and-Turkey .

[156] Norman Solomon, “Trump Plunges toward World War III,” *Consortium News*, April 10, 2017, https://consortiumnews.com/2017/04/10/trump-plunges-toward-world-war-iii/.

[157] “Masonic Roots: Christ, Solomon, or Baal?” *Media Monarchy*, February 20, 2015, http://mediamonarchy.com/2015/02/masonic-roots-christ-solomon-or-baa/.

[158] “Rituals of Freemasonry: The Worship of Lucifer, SATAN Part 1 of 5,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_brotherhoodss01a.htm.

[159] “Lucifer is the god of Freemasonry,” *Amazing Discoveries*, http://amazingdiscoveries.org/S-deception-Freemason_Lucifer_Albert_Pike.

[160] “Luciferian Roots of Dark Freemasonry,” *Overlords of Chaos*, http://www.overlordsofchaos.com/html/freemasonry_4.html.

[161] Sandy Grant, “‘Post-truth’: Orwell would Spot the Doublespeak in the Word of 2016,” *Times Higher Education*, December 1, 2016, https://www.timeshighereducation.com/comment/post-truth-orwell-would-spot-the-doublespeak-in-the-word-of-2016.

[162] Philip Jones, “Lucifer Rising,” *rense.com*, May 13, 2009, http://rense.com/general85/lucifer.htm.

[163] Texe Mars, “Freemasonry and Judaism Worship the Same Egyptian Gods,” *Power of Prophecy*, http://www.texemarrs.com/042012/freemasonry_judaism_same_gods.htm.

[164] “The Six-Pointed Star, The Mark of the Beast, Part II,” *watch.pairsite.com* (a blog site), http://watch.pairsite.com/mark2.html.

[165] Dr. Eowyn, “Hillary Aide Talks about Animal Sacrifice to Demon Moloch in WikiLeaks Email,” *Fellow Ship of The Minds*, August 8, 2016, https://fellowshipoftheminds.com/2016/08/08/hillary-aide-talks-about-animal-sacrifice-to-demon-moloch-in-wikileaks-email/.

[166] “Freemasonry Proven to Worship Satan, as its Symbols Venerate The Sex Act-Study of Symbols Part 5,” *Cutting Edge*, http://www.cuttingedge.org/free16.htm.

[167] “Central Role of The Rothschild Dynasty in the Evil Agenda for World Government,” *Overlords of Chaos*, http://www.overlordsofchaos.com/html/jewish_conspiracy_45.html.

[168] Carol A. Valentine, “Human Sacrifice, the Talmud, and the Moloch Problem,” *Come and Hear*, http://www.come-and-hear.com/editor/br_3.html.

[169] “The Rothschild Bloodline,” *The Watcher Files*, http://www.thewatcherfiles.com/bloodlines/rothschild.htm.

[170] Anders, “The New World Order Is Modern Pharisaism. Is Its Sudden Antizionism Hegelian Tactics?” *euro-med.dk*, June 11, 2010, http://euro-med.dk/?p=15883.

[171] Arjun Walia, “The United Nations Exposed Who Is in Control,” *Collective Evolution*, February 26, 2013, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2013/02/26/the-united-nations-exposed-who-is-in-control/.

[172] Carol A. Valentine, “Human Sacrifice, the Talmud, and the Moloch Problem,” *Come and Hear*, http://www.come-and-hear.com/editor/br_3.html.

[173] “Luciferian Satanic Illuminati Kabbalist Sabbatean Frankists - CULT OF THE ALL SEEING EYE,” *Energy Enhancement*, http://www.energyenhancement.org/Luciferian-Satanic-Sabbatean-Frankists-Kabbalist-Illuminati-CULT-OF-THE-ALL-SEEING-EYE.htm.

[174] “Luciferian Satanic Illuminati Kabbalist Sabbatean Frankists - CULT OF THE ALL SEEING EYE,” http://www.energyenhancement.org/Luciferian-Satanic-Sabbatean-Frankists-Kabbalist-Illuminati-CULT-OF-THE-ALL-SEEING-EYE.htm.

[175] “Freemasonry Now Publicizing Its Control of Israel,” *Cutting Edge*, http://www.cuttingedge.org/news/n2012.cfm.

[176] “Sinister Sites – Israel Supreme Court,” *The Vigilant Citizen*, June 24, 2009, https://vigilantcitizen.com/sinistersites/sinister-sites-israel-supreme-court/.

[177] Texe Marrs, ““Freemasonry and Judaism Worship the Same Egyptian Gods,” *Power of Prophecy*, http://www.texemarrs.com/042012/freemasonry_judaism_same_gods.htm.

[178] Anders, “Supreme Court in Jerusalem: The Throne of the Masonic Rothschild Antichrist,” *new.euro-med.dk*, May 1, 2014, https://new.euro-med.dk/20140501-supreme-court-in-jerusalem-the-throne-of-the-masonic-rothschild-antichrist.php.

[179] Richard Cassaro, “Awakening Our Third Eye - Freemasonry’s Ancient ‘Universal Religion’” Revealed,” *RichardCassaro.com*, September 19, 2011, http://www.richardcassaro.com/tag/freemasons-symbols.

[180] “The Secret History of America’s Capital,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/esp_sociopol_washingtonDC.htm.

[181] “Freemasonry Proven to Worship Lucifer Part 3 of 5,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_brotherhoodss01c.htm.

[182] “Open Letter to All Freemasons but Especially to Those Who Consider Themselves Christian,” *Cutting Edge*, http://www.cuttingedge.org/free10.html.

[183] Dr. John Weldon, “What Does the Masonic Lodge Teach Its Members About Jesus?” *Jashow*, https://www.jashow.org/articles/masonry/masonic-lodge/what-does-the-masonic-lodge-teach-its-members-about-jesus/.

[184] “Freemasonry Proven to Worship Lucifer Part 3 of 5,” https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_brotherhoodss01c.htm.

[185] HeathCliff, “Illuminati Dollar: One Dollar Bill Fully Explained is a Study Disclosing the True Meaning of the Symbolism on the One Dollar Bill. Has it really to do with the Illuminati?” *Lionsground*, July 2, 2015, https://lionsground.com/illuminati-dollar/.

[186] “Freemasonry Proven to Worship Lucifer Part 3 of 5,” https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_brotherhoodss01c.htm.

[187] “Freemasonry Proven to Worship Lucifer Part 3 of 5,” https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_brotherhoodss01c.htm.

[188] “Freemasonry Proven to Worship Lucifer Part 3 of 5,” https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_brotherhoodss01c.htm.

[189] “Freemasonry Proven to Worship Lucifer Part 3 of 5,” https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_brotherhoodss01c.htm.

[190] Amanda Ruggeri, “Conspiracy Theories Abound about the Freemasons. But Scotland’s True Masonic History, while Forgotten by Many for Centuries, Remains Hidden in Plain Sight,” *BBC*, December 13, 2016, http://www.bbc.com/travel/story/20161209-secret-history-of-the-freemasons-in-scotland.

[191] “History of Freemasonry,” *Msana*, http://www.msana.com/historyfm.asp.

[192] Eric A. Samuelson, J.D, “The 1782 Congress of Wilhelmsbad: The Illuminati Takeover,” *Bible Believers*, November, 2006, https://www.biblebelievers.org.au/wilhelms.htm.

[193] Terry Melanson, “Masonic Congress of Wilhelmsbad,” *Conspiracy Archive*, July 6, 2015, http://www.conspiracyarchive.com/2015/07/06/masonic-congress-of-wilhelmsbad/.

[194] “Famous Masons,” *Masonic Lodge Whatcom*, http://www.masoniclodgewhatcom.com/famousmasons.html.

[195] “List of Presidents of the United States who were Freemasons,” *Wikipedia*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_Presidents_of_the_United_States_who_were_Freemasons.

[196] Mosesman, “Flashback: European Union Leaders Met with Leaders of Freemasonry in Europe!” *Socio-Economics History Blog*, February 13, 2014, https://socioecohistory.wordpress.com/2014/02/13/flashback-european-union-leaders-met-with-leaders-of-freemasonry-in-europe/.

[197] IWB, “Islam Academic: Migrants Want Eurabia, Globalists Using Migrants to Destroy the West,” *Investment Watch Blog*, August 15, 2016, http://investmentwatchblog.com/islam-academic-migrants-want-eurabia-globalists-using-migrants-to-destroy-the-west/.

[198] Eric Goldschein and Robert Johnson, “The Most Powerful Freemasons Ever,” *Business Insider*, September 15, 2011, http://www.businessinsider.com/powerful-masons-2011-9?IR=T&r=US&IR=T.

[199] Lucifer is the god of Freemasonry,” http://amazingdiscoveries.org/S-deception-Freemason_Lucifer_Albert_Pike.

[200] Lewis Alper, “An Evangelical Christian Looks at Bush’s Skull and Bones Initiation,” *Counter Punch*, November 26, 2005, https://www.counterpunch.org/2005/11/26/an-evangelical-christian-looks-at-bush-s-skull-and-bones-initiation/.

[201] “Illuminati Whistleblower Reveals: ‘They All Worship Lucifer,’” *Disclose tv*, http://www.disclose.tv/news/they_all_worship_lucifer_reveals_illuminati_whistleblower/125733.

[202] Joachim Hagopian, “One World Governance and the Council on Foreign Relations. ‘We shall have World Government … by Conquest or Consent,” *Global Research*, August 18, 2016, http://www.globalresearch.ca/one-world-governance-and-the-council-on-foreign-relations-we-shall-have-world-government-by-conquest-or-consent/5541363.

[203] Gene Berkman, “The Trilateral Commission and the New World Order,” *antiwar.com*, January 1993, https://www.antiwar.com/berkman/trilat.html.

[204] Leo Hohmann, “Elites Preparing Last Phase of New World Order?” *World Net Daily*, August 26, 2015, http://www.wnd.com/2015/08/elites-preparing-last-phase-of-new-world-order/.

[205] “The Club of Rome,” *Jeremiah Project*, https://www.jeremiahproject.com/new-world-order/the-club-of-rome/.

[206] Robert Gaylon Ross Sr., “The Elite Conspiracy,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_globalelite24.htm.

[207] “Revealing Pictures from 1972 Rothschild Illuminati Ball,” *Vigilant Citizen*, September 17, 2013, https://vigilantcitizen.com/latestnews/pictures-rothschild-family/.

[208] “The Rothschild Bloodline: One of the 13 Satanic Bloodlines that Rule the World,” *The Event Chronicle*, March 20, 2016, http://www.theeventchronicle.com/satanic-bloodlines/rothschild-bloodline/#.

[209] John Austin, “Did WikiLeaks Prove the Illuminati Exists? Secret US Government Rockefeller Talks Revealed,” *Express*, December 2, 2016, http://www.express.co.uk/news/weird/739230/Julian-Assange-Wikileaks-David-Rockefeller-Henry-Kissinger-Illuminati.

[210] Anders, “Man Plays God IV. Rothschild´s 4. Reich: CO2-driven Slaughterhouse For “Useless Eaters´” Money and Freedom,” *euro-med.dk*,

September 14, 2009, http://euro-med.dk/?p=10569.

[211] Marc Lallanilla, “The Real Dracula: Vlad the Impaler,” *Live Science*, October 24, 2014, https://www.livescience.com/40843-real-dracula-vlad-the-impaler.html.

[212] John Edgar Browning, “There are tribes of 'vampire' people in New Orleans,” *Business Insider*, May 27, 2015, http://www.businessinsider.com/there-are-tribes-of-vampire-people-in-new-orleans-2015-3?IR=T&r=US&IR=T.

[213] Jess Zimmerman, “Why Animals That Died Scared Taste Bad,” *Mother Board*, October 31, 2015, https://motherboard.vice.com/en_us/article/8q8984/why-animals-that-died-scared-taste-bad.

[214] Makia Freeman, “Satanic Pedophilia Network Exposed in Australia (Just like in the USA),” *The Freedom Article*, February 12, 2016, http://freedom-articles.toolsforfreedom.com/satanic-pedophilia-network-exposed-australia/.

[215] Kolly Vades, “Vicki Polin, Jewish Satanic Ritual Abuse Survivor,” *YouTube* video, posted on August 10, 2015, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=LoMDDQVI06E&feature=youtu.be.

[216] Occult Agenda, “Conspiracy of Silence” Documentary, 1994,” *YouTube* video, posted April 26, 2012, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=vBSIDQt5Dwc.

[217] Aaron Kesel, “Pedophile Rings are Enormous and Pervasive among the World's Elites,” *Sott.net*, July 7, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/322016-Pedophile-rings-are-enormous-and-pervasive-among-the-worlds-elites.

[218] Richard Kallberg, “5 Secrets of the Owl: Part 1 - Links to the Ancients,” *The Narrow Gate Web*, July 20, 2016, https://thenarrowgateweb.com/2016/07/20/secrets-of-the-owl-part-1-links-to-the-ancients/.

[219] “Peculiar Ties Connect Boys Town to CIA,” *Jesus is Savior*, http://www.jesus-is-savior.com/Evils%20in%20Government/boys_town_abuse.htm.

[220] “Hunter S. Thompson Murder So Called ‘Suicide,’” *Thompsonmurder.com*, http://www.thompsonmurder.com/.

[221] “PedoGate: A Special Report on the Washington, D.C. Pedophilia Scandal,” *The Event Chronicle*, December 28, 2016, http://www.theeventchronicle.com/cabal-exposed/pedogate-special-report-washington-d-c-pedophilia-scandal/#.

[222] Maureen Callahan, “The ‘Sex Slave’ Scandal that Exposed Pedophile Billionaire Jeffrey Epstein,” *New York Post*, October 9, 2016,

http://nypost.com/2016/10/09/the-sex-slave-scandal-that-exposed-pedophile-billionaire-jeffrey-epstein/.

[223] Joachim Hagopian, “Pizzagate: Podesta Pedo Perps and Clinton's International Child Sex Trafficking Ring Exposed,” *Sott.net*, December 2, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/335512-Pizzagate-Podesta-pedo-perps-and-Clintons-international-child-sex-trafficking-ring-exposed.

[224] Joachim Hagopian, “Pizzagate turned PedoGate Leads to Momentum Surge in Busting Global Child Sex Trafficking Rings,” *Sott.net*, February 27, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/343780-Pizzagate-turned-PedoGate-Leads-to-Momentum-Surge-in-Busting-Global-Child-Sex-Trafficking-Rings.

[225] “Massive Online Pedophile Ring Busted by Cops,” *NBC News*, http://www.nbcnews.com/id/42108748/ns/us_news-crime_and_courts/t/massive-online-pedophile-ring-busted-cops/#.WZvHTFFLflU.

[226] Tom Embury-Dennis, “Massive Paedophile Ring Uncovered by Police in Norway after Arrest of 51 men,” *Independent*, November 23, 2016, http://www.independent.co.uk/news/world/europe/norway-paedophile-ring-police-arrest-51-men-a7432441.html.

[227] Allison Hillman, “Rabbit Hole Exposed as Australian Pedophile Ring Emerges, Ties Point Directly to Top U.S. Officials,” *Conservative Daily Post*, December 11, 2016, https://conservativedailypost.com/rabbit-hole-exposed-australian-pedophile-ring-emerges-ties-point-directly-u-s-network/.

[228] Nate Brown, “Hundreds Arrested as Canadian Police Smash Worldwide Pedophile Ring in 2013,” *The Christian Truther*, November 22, 2016, https://christiantruther.com/podcast/hundreds-arrested-canadian-police-smash-worldwide-pedophile-ring/.

[229] World Tribune Staff, “Unreported: 1,500 Pedophile Arrests Made Nationally since Trump Took Office,” *World Tribune*, February 26, 2017, http://www.worldtribune.com/unreported-1500-pedophile-arrests-have-been-made-nationally-since-trump-took-office/.

[230] Catherine Frompovich, “Global Pedophilia Rings Exposed and Arrested - Where’s U.S. Press Coverage?” *Activist Post*, February 15, 2017, http://www.activistpost.com/2017/02/global-pedophilia-rings-exposed-arrested-wheres-u-s-press-coverage.html.

[231] “The Psychopaths of the New World Order, Part 4 - Ronald Bernard Interview Analyzed,” *End Times News Report*, *YouTube* video, 36:01, posted on May 19, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=hYZIODJ999s.

[232] “Ronald Bernard, Dutch Banker Who Exposed Illuminati, Found Dead,” *Wiki News*, *YouTube* video, 2:58, posted on August 30, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rK_pqekJXSQ.

[233] “Cannibalism in The Illuminati,” *Birth of a New Earth*, March 7, 2014, http://birthofanewearth.blogspot.co.id/2014/03/cannibalism-in-illuminati.html.

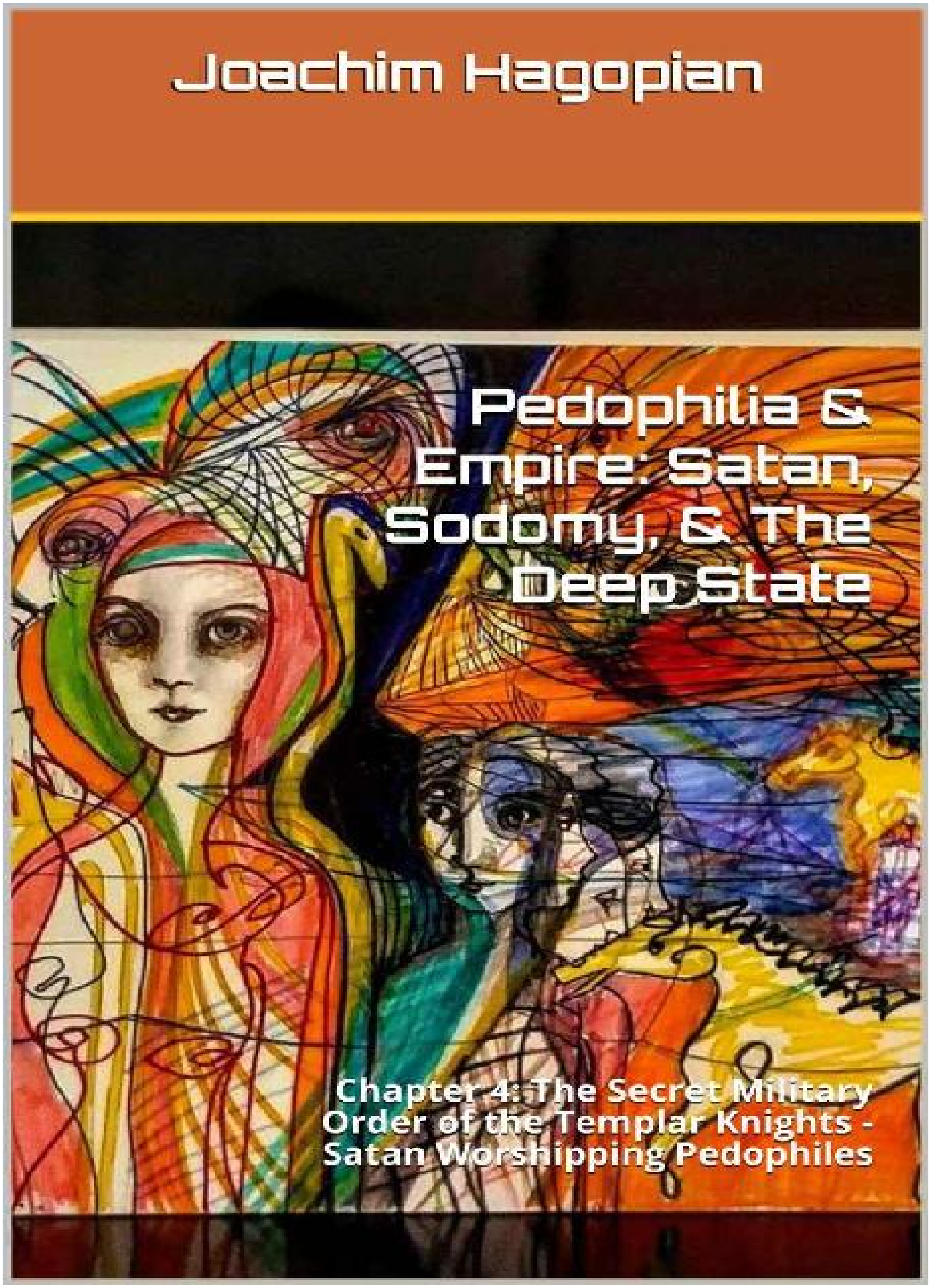

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 4: The Secret Military Order of the Templar Knights - Satan Worshipping Pedophiles

Chapter 4: The Secret Military Order of the Templar Knights - Satan Worshipping Pedophiles

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission

http://www.noramaccoby.com/

The sprawling mighty Roman Empire owned and controlled the Holy Land (and the entire Mediterranean region) even prior to it becoming “holy,” but from internal corruption and economic collapse it crumbled in 476 AD, inviting land grabbing invaders from the north.[1] Christianity had already been divided in 330 AD by Christian convert and Roman Emperor Constantine I into a Western Latin branch still presided over by Rome’s Catholic pope,[2] and an Eastern Orthodox branch that Constantine relocated to “New Rome,” otherwise known as Constantinople (now Istanbul). Instead of using the official language of the western Catholic branch which was always Latin, the new Eastern Roman Empire that included most of Eastern Europe, Asia Minor and the eastern Mediterranean in the Middle East adopted as its official language Greek, and marked the birth of the enduring Byzantine Empire. Thus the course of world history was taking a major turn.

In the 7th century with the rise of Mohammed and Islam, a Muslim Arab Caliphate seized possession of the Byzantine southern provinces of Syria and Egypt, and by 638 AD the Holy City of Jerusalem.[3] Just prior to that, the Persians had a 15 year stint (614-629 AD) occupying Jerusalem.[4] Due to Palestine’s location as both a three continent geo-center and the overlapping epicenter of the three major religions Judaism, Christianity and Islam, it was coveted turf that throughout history has constantly been invaded and occupied by dozens of warring tribes and nations. Once the

Holy Land was taken, expansionist Muslim Arabs pushed westward by sea and by land, even threatening conquest of Constantinople as well. Ultimately after launching two failed sieges on the Byzantine capital ending in 718 AD, a period of relative calm and truce prevailed in the region…[5] that is until the Macedonian Dynasty between 920 and 976 AD when Byzantine Christian forces rose up to retake northern Syria and Greater Armenia,[6] the first nation to declare Christianity its state religion back in 301 AD.[7] A number of Armenians were among the Byzantine emperors that consolidated Christian holdings in the Balkans and Middle East as the Eastern Roman Empire lasted nearly a millennium before being overrun by the expanding Ottoman Turk Empire.[8]

But since 638 AD, the Holy Land had remained under Muslim rule, with the Jews, Christians and Muslims living side by side in Jerusalem in relative peace and calm under mostly tolerant Islamic control.[9] But malevolent forces were at work near the end of the 11th century in Western Europe that would permanently upset the Holy Land’s culture of peace and religious tolerance. Surviving in an ultra-violent world where aristocratic lords and kings imposed death feuds and wars on their feudal subjects, constantly clashing with other clans and kingdoms, day-to-day life in the post-Dark Age was hardly giving way to any better life in the Middle Ages.[10] Since the fall of the Roman Empire, there was no monetary currency system. The peasant class was born and died owned as feudal subjects, human commodities completely controlled by nobility in an enslavement system that was both violent and inhumane. In medieval Europe the growing economic disparity between peasant Christian masses as landless serfs and the uneasy, contentious partnership of aristocratic nobility and entrenched Roman Catholic hierarchy planted seeds of unrest and upheaval amidst so much despair and abject poverty. Seething tension and conflict had been brewing for centuries within the psyche of the peasant masses, activated especially when a series of droughts struck Europe in the late 11th century.[11] Life was cheap, food was scarce and death hung everywhere in the air. In Western Europe this was the dire setting both culturally and economically on the eve of the 12th century.

In contrast to the miserable plight of Europe's Christian masses, life in the Byzantine Empire and in particular the Muslim controlled East with its developed mercantile system,[12] free flowing currency spurred on by the lucrative spice trade promoting economic and cultural wealth and prosperity, envy, ignorance and bigotry was growing in Western Europe.[13] Conditions were ripe for scapegoating any group of a different persuasion, specifically targeting the Islamic infidels. Rather than recognize the root of their misery falling squarely on the profound inequality and injustice born into a fixed feudal system based on bondage perpetrated by the 1% religious-aristocracy class (striking an uncanny parallel to today),[14] it's always easier to allow the brainwashing oppressors - the church and state - to readily point to a scapegoat, an identified, designated enemy possessing a different religion or skin pigment than get honest and confront the true cause of misery.

The unfolding dark clouds were ideal for creating the perfect storm then crystalizing as the Christian Crusades, ignited in 1095 at the Council of Clermont in France by a fiery orator in Pope Urban II, whose exaggerated lies intentionally manipulated a "holy war," (where have we seen this before?),[15] falsely alleging that Muslims were viciously attacking Christians in Jerusalem and Palestine and desecrating Christianity's sacred ground. And that was all the unhappy, strife-ridden, angry, desperate, bigoted Christians needed to hear.

Meanwhile, the Eastern Roman Empire was slowly losing ground to the recent Muslim converts, the nomadic Seljuk Turks that had migrated from the steppes of Central Asia. The Byzantine Emperor's major military defeat in 1071 at the eastern outpost Battle of Manzikert in Armenia set the stage in the short term for increasingly bold Turkish raids deeper into Mesopotamia and Anatolia (now eastern Turkey) and the ensuing clash of civilizations,[16] and in the longer term manifesting nearly a millennium later with last century's first genocide against those same Christian Armenians (1915-17).[17] To make matters worse, also in the same year of 1071, it was anything but all quiet on the western front as well. Byzantium's final presence in Italy was lost to invading Normans.[18] While the Turks captured the ancient city of Nicaea in Asia Minor drawing ever closer to the capital Constantinople, smelling blood off their recent Italian triumph, the advancing Normans decided to also launch an attack on Constantinople. Though the official fall of the Byzantine Empire would be held off until the mighty fortress walls of New Rome came tumbling down in 1453 by Ottoman Turks,[19] four and a half centuries earlier in 1095, the Eastern Roman Empire found itself being hit from all sides by multiple enemies, both Muslim and Christian alike.

Also smelling blood, in response to Byzantine Emperor Alexius I's request to the Catholic pope for mercenary assistance to stem the tide of territorial gains by the Turks,[20] the power hungry, ambitious Pope Urban II seized upon the opportunity to potentially reunite both branches of Christianity under his sole authoritarian rule by declaring the larger holy war in the Middle East.[21] In so many words he proclaimed, "Save your soul and go kill some Muslims," instead of themselves as many warring knights and peasants had been accustomed to doing. To the poor serfs who already had it rough, a guaranteed "free" ticket to heaven fighting for God sounded pretty good. Urban's words had a gargantuan immediate as well as lasting impact, changing the course of history forever.

To Europe's Christian peasant masses, it was really a no-brainer - continue suffering in status quo misery or blame everything on the Muslims, and begin killing them for God's guaranteed ticket to heaven (per the pope who to them was their earthly God). Blaming the true villain - members of the church and state ruling class was a dicey proposition, certain to result in either instant imprisonment or death punished to an afterlife of eternal hell and damnation. It's always been the same, from ancient times to the present, the master-of-deceit ruling class deploys its age-old divide and conquer, kill or be killed WMD con game on the manipulated ignorant masses and bingo! Just like clockwork, they fall prey to deception every single time. And sadly, nothing has changed as it's still going stronger than ever today.

And so thousands upon thousands of Christians became Crusaders marching to the Holy Land to liberate it from the designated enemy. As they moved through the Eastern Roman Empire closer to the Middle East, whenever the marauding Christians encountered Jews or Muslims along the way, they simply killed them and stole what they could.[22] A lawless hungry lynch mob mentality characterized the unholy caravans swarming in waves towards the "Holy Land." But reassured by Pope Urban that all their sins would be forgiven and that their reservation in heaven had already been booked as long as they kill for their Christian God, the desperately duped masses bloodthirstily did what they were manipulated to do.

After a five week siege of Jerusalem in the summer heat,[23] the Holy City was overrun by famished, determined invaders from the north, culminating three years of fierce bloodletting combat resulting in thousands, perhaps millions of dead

Christians, Muslims and Jews, chapter one's senseless carnage came to a tumultuous close in 1099 as the first of seven (or eight depending on historian) more Crusades to follow. Byzantine Emperor Alexius lived to regret asking for help from the Catholic pope as he'd been hoping on a few extra mercenaries to clean house in his own backyard, not the endless throngs of Crusading Catholics that raped, killed, burned and pillaged their way through his empire. As dire as it was for Byzantium prior to the First Crusade, afterwards it was left in even worse shape. The warlike Turks were still on the warpath grabbing more turf, but even the important Byzantine port city Antioch wound up in the greedy hands of a Norman invader that betrayed his oath not to steal Eastern Roman Empire land from fellow Christians. And to top it off, it was the Norman son in Antioch of the land-grabbing Norman father in Italy both laying claim to Byzantine territory not theirs… so much for the concept of Christian brotherhood.

Then to illustrate how the victorious Christian Crusaders were so far removed from the original compassionate teachings of their supposed Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, Desmond Seward's *The Monks of War* chronicles events of the three day Holy City conquest:

> *Jerusalem was stormed in July 1099. The rabid ferocity of its sack showed just how little the Church had succeeded in Christianizing atavistic instincts. The entire population of the Holy City was put to the sword, Jews as well as Moslems, 70,000 men, women and children perished in a holocaust, which raged for three days. In places men waded in blood up to their ankles and horsemen were splashed by it as they rode through the streets.*[24]

Crusade apologists always make sure to add that the slaughter was merely standard policy, as if that makes it any less evil.[25]

Less than 20 years after the Christians claimed their Holy Land grand prize, Turkish forces were already at it again, regaining a foothold in Mesopotamia, and appeared soon knocking on Jerusalem's door once again.[26] That was all it took to conjure up renewed barbarism and bloodlust among the Christian diehards to want to go kill some more Muslims, thus spawning the Second Crusade. But unlike the first, this time they'd additionally be armed with a special Christian military order of knighthood to help defend, conquer and ostensibly ensure that Jerusalem remain under imperialistic Western Catholic control in the "holy war" that the planetary controllers have never stopped manipulating and exploiting to this very day.[27]

The latest round of zealotry culminated in 1118 with the founding of the Order of Templar Knights to protect the next major pilgrimage to the Holy Land.[28] The safe passage of Crusaders was the false premise used to found this new Christian military order. The first Christian military Order of the Knights of Hospitallers, later known as the Knights of Malta, were already established and pope endorsed in 1113 for that very same purpose.[29] The nine noblemen of wealthy means deceptively calling themselves the "Poor" Knights of Christ and the Temple of Solomon,[30] better known later as the Order of the Knights of Templar, actually had something entirely different in mind. The King of Jerusalem granted their authorization to literally set up camp on top of the ancient King Solomon temple ruins. Their new Order had the knights religiously poking around for any recoverable relics, artifacts and otherwise magic bullets that would bestow upon them an added advantage in their quest for power and supremacy that also happened to include a war not only on Islam but Christianity as well.[31] The original founders of the Templar Order were never loyal to Jesus Christ or Christianity to begin with. But that incredibly significant reality will be addressed shortly.

Speculation still abounds over whether the Templar Knights might have discovered the famous Ark of Covenant or Holy Grail that may well have been hidden in a secret cavern below the excavated Solomon Temple.[32] Apparently they did stumble upon something big though, something so esoterically mysterious and enticing that it changed their world-view forever.[33] And this could have been the beginning of the end that fated their alleged downfall less than two centuries later. Scholars have concluded that the Templar Knights pursued secret knowledge contained in the mystical Jewish traditions of the Cabala and as such, actively sought out Cabalists for consultation in both Jerusalem and Europe.[34]

News of their prized newfound “wisdom” and/or magically powerful possessions uncovered in the Jerusalem ruins, despite the details remaining hidden, combined with the official endorsement of Pope Innocent II in 1129, attracted noblemen from all over Europe clamoring to sign up for what the Templar Order was offering.[35] The Templar Knights were fully blessed by the pope in 1139, once they underwent the mere formality of swearing to an oath of strict allegiance only to the pope that undoubtedly the inner Templar brethren had no intention of keeping. A revealing passage from the book *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*:

> *In 1139, a papal bull was issued by Pope Innocent II - a former Cistercian monk at Clairvaux and protégé of Saint Bernard. According to this bull the Templars would owe allegiance to no secular or ecclesiastical power other than the Pope himself. In other words, they were rendered totally independent of all kings, princes, and prelates, and of all interference from both political and religious authorities. They had become, in effect, a law unto themselves, an autonomous international empire.*[36]

As a historical backdrop to the Templar Order, a brief digression here is necessary. Jews have survived a very long history of horrendous prejudice and persecution, countless purges and pogroms throughout the ages. So of course it’s no wonder that to survive, many of Jewish descent have been forced to flee, convert or go underground, and remain incognito to others in their surrounding local environment. Hence the term crypto-Jewry (mentioned in the last chapter in connection with Sabbatai Zevi and Jacob Frank being messianic crypto-Jew Satanists) as the phenomenon whereby in order to ostensibly avoid mistreatment and harm,[37] thousands of chameleon-like Jews have been forced, felt compelled or some chose to change their names and/or convert to other religions such as Christian or Islam, yet secretly retained their original Jewish identity and religion handed down from one generation to the next.

During the Dark Ages of the 5th-7th centuries, for nefarious, subversive reasons, crypto-Jews from the Merovingian bloodline chose to convert to Christianity in order to infiltrate and marry into European royalty to reach top positions of power in both church and state.[38] The Merovingian clan proudly and boldly traces its ancestry back to King David, King Solomon, Jesus Christ and Mary Magdalene, while remaining steeped in the Jewish mystical tradition of Cabalism. It was the crypto-Jews who masterminded and financed both the Crusades and later the Renaissance. The ambitious Pope Urban II who ignited the 200 years of Crusade atrocities was the sixth French crypto-Jewish pope from this same Merovingian lineage.[39] Not by accident, so were all the original founding Knights of Templar, including their chief sponsor St. Bernard who authored the Rule of Knights Templar and his popular propaganda piece “In Praise of the New Knighthood.”[40] And there was good reason the founding knights assembled in Jerusalem and requested fellow crypto-Jew the King of

Jerusalem King Baldwin II to set up headquarters adjacent the Solomon Temple ruins. The knights who excavated the ancient underground caverns and chambers below the temple were convinced that it was their Merovingian Jewish birthright to reclaim their families’ lost treasures belonging to ancestors that hid priceless relics and secret Cabalist knowledge prior to fleeing Palestine for Europe right after the Middle East was engulfed by the Roman Empire conquest.[41]

Despite being eight centuries ahead of *The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion* released in Russia in 1905,[42] as crypto-Jewish infiltrators of the Christian religion and incendiaries of the Christian vs. Muslim unholy wars, the Templar Knights and their sponsors were strategically positioned to implement Protocol #7:[43]

Throughout all Europe, and by means of relations with Europe, in other continents also, we must create ferments, discords, and hostility. Therein we gain a double advantage.

Whether the Protocols are a hoax or not,[44] whether written by an anti-Semite out to demonize Judaism and the Jews,[45] or a transparent attempt to attract and recruit more anti-Jewish bigots, or whether it really is the work of ambitious Jewish Zionist leaders plotting their world takeover in the latter 19th century, the accuracy with which it describes in detail the methodical Satanic conspiracy led by the planet’s ruling elite speaks for itself. With a couple of simple word juxtapositions, replacing the words “Jews,” “elders” or “Zion,” with the word “elite,” “Illuminati” or “Satanists” and the word “goyim” or “Gentiles” with “humanity,” or “us,” it perfectly divulges the ruling elite’s takeover plan of this planet. And regardless of whether Satanists are crypto-Jews, Jews, or non-Jews, or whatever subgroup they might fall into, Satanists have made it their enduring age-old agenda to divide and destroy all religions in their larger war against humanity. With utter contempt and hatred, they loathe our Creator, all life, love, peace and all people who are good, who possess a conscience and a heart and everything they lack. So by exposing a small evil minority of crypto-Jews and their inflammatory, devastating impact on all human history including Jews, truth can never be attacked or dismissed as pure anti-Semitism. Regardless of religion, ethnic race or nationality, evil is as evil does.

That said, crypto-Jews' subversive infiltration into every realm of the global power pyramid, from ancient times to the present, has never adhered to the teachings of Jesus Christ. Instead as Cabalist practitioners**,** they were always aligned far more closely with occult black magic,[46] all the while secretly worshipping their fallen angel Lucifer. That's why throughout history as infiltrating false prophets and agents provocateur summoning dark demonic forces within their secret society rituals, they have consistently sown the seeds of deception through divisive teachings, false doctrine and dogmatic extremism in order to subversively manipulate and incite political and religious upheaval and mass movements of violence that explode on an epic scale.

As such, crypto-Jews have been the architects of the Crusades,[47] the French Revolution, Marxism,[48] the Bolshevik Revolution and Armenian genocide as part of the first of two world war bloodbaths - the biggest in human history,[49] [50] giving rise to history's deadliest tyrants Hitler,[51] Stalin and Mao, and finally onto the Anglo-American-Zionist movement wreaking out-of-control havoc to this very day. Zionist crypto-Jews having converted to the Synagogue of Satan, made a secret deal with a few other Satanists like Prescott Bush, the Rothschilds, Rockefellers and the international bankers as the usual suspects,[52] investing in Hitler and World War II, justifying the loss of 60 million lives for a Jewish State using as their bargaining chip the sacrificial lambs exterminated in concentration camps - the non-Zionist Jews.[53] This was the Satanists’ way of continuing the Crusades right into the 21st century,[54] indefinitely using their “divide and conquer” clash of civilizations as their M.O - ethnically cleansing Palestinians to make room for the Greater Israel Project.**[55]** The astute geopolitical analyst and author Henry Makow succinctly sizes it up this way:

Israel has little to do with the Jewish people. Zionism, Communism, Feminism, Nazism, are all creations of the same satanic cabal. These ‘isms are all means to the final goal, a neo feudal global dictatorship.[56]

And speaking of evil, the Merovingian Illuminati bloodline still lives on today in the crypto-Jews known the world over as both the Dutch and British royals,[57] both descendants of the House of Orange. Queen Elizabeth,[58] Prince Philip and Prince Charles are full fledge Illuminati Satan worshippers who indisputably protected longtime fellow Satanist, the child murdering rapist Jimmy Savile who for over a half century supplied children to the royals and UK VIP rapists.[59] Pedophilia permeates the royal family inbreeding. So does Nazism.[60]

The royals plotted and murdered Princess Diana and her Muslim lover about to become her fiancé,[61] all the while remaining in deep up to their Baphomet horns in satanic ritual sexual abuse of children and their globalized child sex trafficking network. The British royals decapitated Diana’s bodyguard-lover Barry Mannakee in a motorcycle “accident” and upon hearing Diana had died,[62] Queen Elizabeth’s first words were “someone must have greased the brakes” because once before the brakes in Diana’s Audi had been tampered with.[63] When the princess began her affair with Dodi Fayed who Islamophobe Prince Philip referred to as “an oily bed hopper,”[64] Diana was warned of befalling a similar fate as her former bodyguard. Knowing firsthand how evil the British royals actually are and that her life was in serious danger, Diana confided to friends about her in-laws, “they are not human,”[65] which goes right along with David Icke’s longtime contentions[66] (and a whole bunch of others like Helen Mirren and Lady Gaga)[67] that the royal family is a reptilian alien hybrid.[68] The bottom line is very strong evidence clearly shows that Diana was murdered by the royal family, afraid she would expose their Satan worshipping dirty laundry. So they assassinated her knowing as royals they are both legally and literally able to live completely above the law.

Queen Elizabeth and Prince Philip were the last known witnesses to see ten Native American children alive who disappeared while attending their Catholic school picnic outing with the royal couple back in 1964 British Columbia.[69] Over 50,000 aboriginal children from Canada have gone missing over the years, most often attending Catholic schools likely caught up in predatory global child trafficking networks. Closer to Her Majesty’s home, in March this year 800 bodies of children were uncovered in underground chambers below an Irish Catholic girls home for unwed mothers,[70] reminiscent of recent finds being dug up in countless sites like the pedophile paradise of UK’s Jersey Island where Savile and his royal friends came to play and abuse, with thousands of adult survivors coming forth to disclose the painful damage they sustained while living under the “care” of infamous children’s homes.[71] Over many centuries now the throwaway children from group homes and orphanages destroyed by a child welfare system that funnels and feeds for profit a fresh supply of young blood to the monster predators running this world have been a dietary mainstay for the parasitic Illuminati bloodlines.

This all sounds unbelievable until you look at the astounding numbers of children gone missing worldwide each year – 8 million and growing by the year. A reported

350,800 missing children from Ireland, Spain and Canada alone have been discovered at countless Catholic mass grave sites.[72] Additionally, as of November 2013 an incredible 10,077,574 sex abuse cases have been filed against Catholic pedophile priests.[73] The Satanists of royal ilk and the Satanists within the Catholic Church have been deceitfully conspiring against both children and humanity while working directly with fellow Illuminati Satanist puppets deeply entrenched in government, international banking, and the corporate world as the evil movers and shakers and planetary controllers behind every war and economic collapse throughout modern enslavement history. To sustain and increase their power and control over their devil's dominion, they've literally needed a constant fresh supply of child victims. By maintaining top to bottom control of every agency designed to protect children by planting pedophiles at the top levels of the child welfare system, the courts, law enforcement, the media, education and the government, an insulated system of predatory foxes all guarding the young blood henhouse has been allowed to both flourish and increase its number of victims each year.

For a very long time these Satanists and their private coven, epitomized by all their overlapping multi-memberships in so many secret Satan worshipping societies - the Illuminati, Knights Templar-turned-Freemasonry, Malta Knights, Skull and Bones, CFR, Trilateral Commission, Bilderbergers to Bohemian Grove have all been hidden in plain sight. But now their global conspiracy of human genocide against us and our children is being exposed at a never before seen, unprecedented rate. By unveiling the truth, we can wrest power and control away from these murderous vampires. What they've been most afraid of is an informed, outraged masses that have caught on to their despicable high crimes and are demanding justice. And now for the first time in history, we've uncovered massive, overwhelming evidence to possess the opportunity to take back our planet by finally holding the evildoers accountable for millenniums' worth of ugly past sins committed against humanity.

Turning our focus back to more historical "evidence" of how we got here, back to the Second Crusade. By the time the Seljuk Turks had captured the Christian stronghold Edessa in Mesopotamia in 1144, not a moment too soon had the new religious army the Templars raised sufficient funds and material support to enable zealous "onward Christian soldiers" to launch their Second [bloody] Crusade in 1145.[74] Despite all the pomp and fanfare, the knights of Jerusalem could do little to assist the floundering Christian armies of the King of France and Emperor of Germany, each never coordinating their offensives, arriving in Asia Minor separately and both getting their asses militarily romped by the surging Turks. The only Christian gain was nowhere near the Holy Land but back in Europe where Lisbon became liberated from the Muslim Moors. Otherwise the two year campaign turned out to be a complete disaster.[75] So much for the knights from the now two infamous Catholic military orders saving the day, both the Templars and the order that would later be known as the Knights of Malta. As a murdering ruthless mob, the Christians fared better without them in the First Crusade.

Meanwhile, the defeat distracted the Knights of Templar from their war making long enough to begin building scores of Commanderies all over Europe, particularly in France, Italy, Portugal and Spain, constructing fortresses, cathedrals, bridges, improving roads, building entire church communities, vineyards and shelters for the Crusaders' safe passage, even developing their own fleet of ships.[76] Famous for its white tunic and eight-pointed blood red cross symbolizing martyrdom, the Templar Order Knights grew to its peak size of 20,000 in the 13th century (160,000 total including non-knights),[77] gaining the military strength to seize control over a considerable land mass in Europe extending south to the Kingdom of Jerusalem in the Middle East that had largely come under Arab or Turkish control. It seemed they were far more skilled at increasing their land holdings mostly in Europe than protecting Crusaders or Christian Holy Land. The Order consisted of nobleman knights, non-noble sergeants that did the grunt work and chaplains. Every knight that joined the Order relinquished all his worldly possessions, quickly becoming an ongoing source of revenue. Plus the Templar Knights enjoyed social prestige, hobnobbing with Europe's most powerful royalty, constantly showered with gifts of castles and contributions, all tax-free.[78] For a while it seemed these guys were blessed and could do no wrong.

Yet despite the utter failure of the Second Crusade fiasco and the Malta and Templar Knights inability to change the dismal outcome for the Christians, whenever Templar Knights did finally get around to waging combat, so much has been written about their heroic, larger-than-life exploits. Numerous accounts describe their work ethic on the battlefield of fierce fighting to the death most often resulting in victorious conquests that overnight caused their knightly reputation to soar to legendary cult-like status.[79]

One typical example claims that a decade after the Templar Order was outlawed by the king of France and disbanded by the pope, evidence supports the contention that about 7,000 Templars managed to escape and relocate to friendlier territory in Scotland. The famous Battle of Bannockburn in 1324 was made even more famous when depicted as the grand finale of Mel Gibson's film "Braveheart."[80] Legend has it that the mere appearance of a sudden wave of Templar Knights coming off a hillcrest riding at full speed on horseback in support of Scottish foot soldiers outnumbered 3:1 was all it took for the advanced English army to panic and flee the battlefield, leaving all their equipment, money, and weapons behind. This is the kind of embellished fantasy and maybe truth that's intrigued generations for nearly a millennium about the Templars, inspiring the chivalry of Camelot's King Arthur Knights of the Round Table and search for the Holy Grail.[81]

But my question is, beyond all this inflated hoopla, in view of the debacle that characterized pretty much every Crusade beyond the first as the only one that achieved its military objective and that was accomplished without the Malta or Templar Knights, how effective militarily were these two legendary knight orders if they lost every single major military campaign in the Crusades they fought in? Okay, technically one other Crusade avoided outright military rout only because no actual fighting took place. Without the pope's endorsement (granting license to any king to declare a Crusade), the Sixth Crusade was smartly ended through negotiation in 1229 by excommunicated Arabic speaking Holy Roman Emperor Frederick II as part of a 10-year truce that for a few years put Jerusalem back in Christian control (yet not its holy sites).[82] Of course no sooner had the decade long peace come to an end, right on cue the pope rallied his Christian troops for yet another 7th blunder of the Crusade world.[83] If measured strictly in terms of wars won and lost, the knights batted 0 for 7, not exactly a record any warrior would proudly claim, much less attain legendary status… which begs a second question, in whose eyes were these guys so fabulously heroic and militarily skilled? I'd say heavily biased Christian revisionists and war glorifying romanticists known for taking humongous leaps of deceit and liberty at fudging the truth.

Here's another one handed down from Pope Urban legend folklore. One of the Templar Knights' so called Muslim opponents, tagged with the killer name "the Assassins," otherwise known as the Nizari Ismailis,[84] developed a respect for their fellow warriors' combat skills from the north.

This heretical, undersized, fanatical Islamic Shiite renegade order was allegedly equally feared for its deadly strike force and guerilla warfare tactics using stealth and deception to target and smite its enemies as history's first Islamic suicide bombers if you will. On one occasion the Assassins paid tribute (or perhaps a peace offering) of 3,000 pieces of gold to the Templars.[85] But in between battles when they weren't slitting each other's throats, the Assassins and Templar Knights were known to mix it up and rub elbows together. With some of the Templars born and raised in the Middle East and fluent in Arabic, both these militias had reputations for working hard and playing harder as party animals. The knights were known to over-imbibe alcohol per the then popular expression "to drink like a Templar."[86] Dating back to Marco Polo's claim that the mystical Assassin Muslim Order smoked hashish and that their Arabic name Hashashins was possibly derived from the Arabic word hashishi has triggered debate that still persists to this day over whether the Assassins (and Templars by association) used a little hashish in between battles to connect better with Allah.[87]

It's been historically proven that the Templar Knights frequently made secret alliances with various Muslim factions. They aligned with the Assassins to take control of Tyre and conspired with the Muslim Emir of Damascus in a plot against their "fellow Christian" military Order of Hospitallers.[88]

Whatever the Templar Knights gained along the way militarily, politically and financially, they lost spiritually as once allegedly devoted loyal defenders of the Catholic faith (though the founders were crypto Jews steeped in Cabalism). Before long, success had gone to their heads, hearts and apparently their loins. During their initiation ceremony, knights were required to renounce Jesus and God as their Lord and Savior by literally spitting, pissing, hissing and trampling on the sacred cross while literally kissing each other’s ass or that of a goat or cat or penis of their Grand Master,[89] swearing an undying loyalty to each other as brother-in-arms, and that many initiation ceremonies in Italy and France included permission to be lovers-in-arms.[90] But clearly sworn allegiance and loyalty was most binding towards their patron deity, the mysterious head or skull known as Baphomet, whose image by the 19th century morphed into a grotesque horned goat-headed, bearded satanic god sporting female breasts, an LGBT nightmarish version of the devil incarnate. Scholars contend that a minority of knights openly engaged in homosexual relations. Despite its acceptance amongst their Order brethren, by the 12th century, homosexuality in medieval Europe was equated with sodomy, considered an ungodly “unnatural act” of the first order, clearly violating both biblical as well as criminal law punishable by death.[91]

Homosexual rituals imposed on all newcomers during Skull and Bones’ (and other secret society and military brotherhood) initiation ceremonies are directly patterned after the Templars. So are the modern Illuminati black arts occult and satanic practices. The knights’ taboo brand of religion also had them faithfully sworn to celibacy with women, yet okay apparently amongst some to conveniently relieve their horny masculine urges between themselves. But evidence shows that wasn’t enough, so their passionate merrymaking expanded to such taboo indulgences as bestiality,[92] sacrificing young children[93] and committing pedophilia with boys recruited into the Order as young as 11.[94] [95]

Through their devilish god Baphomet, it appears these spiritually lost and misguided soldiers of fortune chose to sell their soul to the devil for the sake of attaining unparalleled wealth and power.[96] Making a quick buck and engaging in an orgy of sensual ecstasy while bowing down to a worshipped head called Baphomet confirms they more than dabbled in dark demonic forces. It seems throughout history virtually every secret society invariably succumbs under this same intoxicatingly degenerate spell, lusting insatiably for power, pleasure and riches in exchange for worshipping Satan. The more times change, the more things stay the same.

Calling upon their supernatural forces for guidance and knowledge, the other worldly Baphomet beast introduced usury banking practices to the earthlings, accepting traveling Crusaders' real assets for paper issued credit,[97] for the first time in history offering credit loans with high interest rates to wary, conned Christian travelers who accepted a piece of paper unbacked by gold or tangible assets in exchange for all their own gold and tangible assets… not unlike the bankers' Jekyll Island USA takeover with the 1913 Federal Reserve/Income Tax con.[98] A class of very rich bankers emerged as the Templar Order came to own more land and wealth than the monarchy kingdoms. Of course their usury scam making profit out of paper thin air was seized upon a couple centuries later by the likes of Mayer Amschel Rothschild, who refined the art of swindling to new unprecedented heights,[99] establishing the modern central banking monstrosity still operating today as the bankrupt, debt-based slavery control system teetering on the brink of self-implosion.[100]

Despite the fame and glory of the Templar and Malta Knights' collective efforts to save their Holy City from falling into infidels' hands, after unifying the Arabs and learning his sister had been captured and taken prisoner, in 1187 the Kurdish Moslem warrior on a mission - Salah Ed-Din (known as Saladin to Westerners) - defeated the Christians at the critical Battle of Hatten and moved on to recapture Jerusalem after near nine decades under Christian control.[101] But unlike the Christians a century earlier, Salah Ed-Din chose to be merciful and not slaughter the Christian residents nor desecrate their holy shrines. Upon hearing the shocking news of another failed Crusade that lost the crown jewel Jerusalem, the pope allegedly keeled over and died on the spot, but apparently not before declaring the Third Crusade to avenge the loss of the Holy Land.[102] Within a couple months the revengeful English King Richard the Lionhearted was the first of the royals to grab the gauntlet gung ho for Round 3. Meanwhile, through his battlefield glory Salah Ed-Din had ascended to become the master of Syria, Palestine and Egypt ruling over a united team of Islam that the Christians were literally just dying to beat.

On another not so insignificant note, to further contrast the difference between how Muslims and Christians generally treat captured enemies and their leaders he had just conquered, Salah Ed-Din kept his enemies alive, treating them humanely. In the case of King of Jerusalem POW Guy Lusignan, in 1188 Salah Ed-Din let him go free on the condition that under oath,[103] Guy would never take up arms to resume fighting Muslims again. So immediately upon release, the first thing the Guy does is find a priest so he can be told that an oath with an infidel is invalid and doesn’t need to be honored.

Do you see a pattern here? Down through the annals of human history, it’s never truly been the “big bad bogey man” - the Muslims, or Putin and the Russians as the aggressors, mass murderers and liars as the government and Western media brainwash always promotes. Time and time again the historical facts point to leaders of the Christian Western civilization that have been the violent bloodthirsty villains throughout modern history. And this sobering reality has been a constant right up to this day.[104] Except with the ruling elite’s war on Christianity in full force now, it’s no longer fair to blame New World Order death and destruction on Christians. The running theme of this entire chapter and book is how Illuminati Satanists have for centuries been hidden in plain sight in the ruling elite bloodlines,[105] and through malevolent secret societies have infiltrated and taken control over the Catholic Church, international banking, corporate institutions and the globalized Anglo-American-Zionist crime cabal government. But more on the Catholic takeover later.

For many years the Order of Solomon's Temple had not been taking its orders from Rome but exclusively from their heady genie deity named Baphomet, and as a result, under the interdimensional, demonic entity's guidance, secret knowledge and control, the Order had acquired unprecedented strength and power throughout Europe, directly challenging the hitherto tyranny of both church and state that were nervously taking notice.[106] But by the late 13th century the Christians were running out of Crusade excuses after repeated bloody thrashings, the haughty, arrogant Templars had worn out their welcome in Jerusalem and were kicked out of Palestine for good. With Salah Ed-Din's capture of Jerusalem for the final time in 1187, the Order's functional role in the Holy Land was doomed. Eventually they were forced to retreat to their final port city Acre, where after coming under siege and attack in August 1291 by overwhelming Muslim forces,[107] and with Europe tired of losing, the Crusades were finally brought to a shameful close. Already considered has-beens, support for the Templars was fast drying up. Forced to retreat to the island of Cyprus, weak and vulnerable,[108] the majority of Templar Knights returned home to Europe with Paris their final headquarters just as the French crown moved in for the kill.

Already in deep debt to Templar loans for waging protracted war against rival England,[109] France's King Philip IV whose most recent request for credit had been soundly rejected, in 1307 felt so threatened by the Templars that he sent a dozen spies to infiltrate the Order to gather sufficient evidence to end up justifying a Friday the 13th of October arrest of 2,000 knights in France for heresy based on uncovered sexual debauchery and betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church. The Order's Grand Master and 51 other Templars who had recanted their initial confessions, in 1314 were summarily burnt at the stake,[110] two years after the pope dissolved the Templar Order.[111] But the bulk of the knights' wealth and priceless relics had mysteriously disappeared just prior to King Philip's attempted looting, leaving the king barely able to refurbish his own army along with a few former Templars while subsidizing the Templar's chief rival order the Knights of Malta. Other remaining Templar survivors and their alleged missing assets apparently found safe refuge in Scotland and in short-time began resurfacing as burgeoning Masonic lodges.[112] The Templars and Freemasons in ideology and practice are virtually synonymous.

In 2001 previously misfiled documents known as the Chinon Parchment were uncovered within the Vatican archives by Vatican medieval paleographer Barbara Frale, who authored a book published a decade later divulging the ”full story” about the controversial secret order.[113] The recent evidence shows that a second confession of crimes was obtained through the pope's inquiry while Templars were not under duress or torture. Many writers, both Catholics and Masons, have always insisted that the first confession of debauchery and demonic worship attained through torture was therefore false.[114] But the Vatican scholar who wrote the recent book unveiling the papal discovery confirmed the homosexual and pedophilic practices as well as the idol worship of Baphomet. Yet Frale's media spun press conferences misleadingly minimized these depravities.[115] Despite the obvious crime of heresy committed by satanic practicing Templars, Vatican Pope Clement V in 1307 absolved them of their crimes based solely on their confession, yet the following year charged them with 127 offenses. 700 years later the pope in power,[116] forced in 2013 to unprecedentedly resign his crown (not done in 600 years) over his criminal part in the pedophilia scandal cover-up, just prior to his papal exit, the Rat-zinger also “forgave” the pedophilic Templars.[117]

At the same time that the Templars had gone both gay and astray, far away from their Christian God, just as so many Catholic priests have historically followed suit to this day, child sexual abuse committed by Dark Age Catholic priests and monks was rather commonplace. Vatican archives confirm the church had been covering up priestly child rapists since the early days of the Middle Ages. [118] Peasant children were known to be sodomized and then found crucified in the fields or by the road perpetrated by frocked pedophilic murderers, purposely set up for local Jews to be falsely blamed for engaging in blood sacrifice discussed in the preceding chapter.[119] What was left of the Templars and its secret occult ideology firmly took root in Scotland and evolved into the Freemasons also covered in the last chapter. Next up is a critical examination of the Templars’ bitter Catholic archrival even more dangerously enduring secret society - the military knights from the Order of Malta.

---

[1] Nick Squires, “What led to the fall of the Roman Empire?” *The Telegraph*, April 8, 2011, http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/worldnews/europe/italy/8438599/What-led-to-the-fall-of-the-Roman-Empire.html.

[2] “Byzantine Empire,” *History.com*, http://www.history.com/topics/ancient-history/byzantine-empire.

[3] Frank E. Smitha, “Arabs Conquer Mesopotamia, Syria and Palestine,” *Fsmitha.com*, http://www.fsmitha.com/h3/islam08.htm.

[4] “Palestine’s Incredible History,” *High on Adventure,com*, http://www.highonadventure.com/Hoa98aug/Jeruslm/history.htm.

[5] “Arab–Byzantine Wars,” *Wikipedia*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Arab%E2%80%93Byzantine_wars.

[6] “From 867 to the Ottoman Conquest,” *Encyclopædia Britannica*, https://www.britannica.com/place/Byzantine-Empire/From-867-to-the-Ottoman-conquest.

[7] N.S. Gill, “What Was the First Christian Nation?” *ThoughtCo*, June 17, 2017, https://www.thoughtco.com/what-was-the-first-christian-nation-119939.

[8] Owen Jarus, “History of the Byzantine Empire (Byzantium),” *Live Science*, December 20, 2013, https://www.livescience.com/42158-history-of-the-byzantine-empire.html.

[9] Najib Saliba, “Christians and Jews under Islam,” *Alhewar.com*, http://www.alhewar.com/Saliba_Christians_and_Jews_Under_Islam.htm.

[10] J. Arthur McFall, “First Crusade: People’s Crusade,” *Historynet.com*, December 6, 2006, http://www.historynet.com/first-crusade-peoples-crusade.htm.

[11] “Shock: The First Crusade and the Conquest of Jerusalem,” *Aljazeera*, December 7, 2016, http://www.aljazeera.com/programmes/the-crusades-an-arab-perspective/2016/12/shock-crusade-conquest-jerusalem-161205081421743.html.

[12] Kallie Szczepanski, “What Effect Did the Crusades Have on the Middle East?” *ThoughtCo*, June 13, 2017, https://www.thoughtco.com/crusades-effect-on-middle-east-195596.

[13] As’ad AbuKhalil, “The Legacy of the Crusades in Contemporary Muslim World,” *Aljazeera*, December 28, 2016, http://www.aljazeera.com/indepth/opinion/2016/12/legacy-crusades-contemporary-muslim-world-161224124349711.html.

[14] Ken Spiro, “The Crusades,” *Simple to Remember.com*, http://www.simpletoremember.com/articles/a/the_crusades/.

[15] “The Dark History of the Templars,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/templars/knights_templars01.htm.

[16] Barry C. Jacobsen, “Mighty Byzantium’s ‘Terrible Day’: Manzikert and The Birth of Turkey,” *The Deadliest Blogger*, May 6, 2017, https://deadliestblogpage.wordpress.com/2017/05/06/mighty-byzantiums-terrible-day-manzikert-and-the-birth-of-turkey/.

[17] “The Armenian Genocide,” *Imaging Genocide*, http://genocide.leadr.msu.edu/the-armenian-genocide-2/.

[18] “Alexius I Comnenus,” *Rdsinc.com*, http://www.rdsinc.com/pdf/samples/sp691771.pdf.

[19] “Byzantine Empire, “*History.com*, http://www.history.com/topics/ancient-history/byzantine-empire.

[20] “Alexius I Comnenus,” http://www.rdsinc.com/pdf/samples/sp691771.pdf.

[21] “The Dark History of the Templars,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/templars/knights_templars01.htm.

[22] J. Arthur McFall, “First Crusade: People’s Crusade,” *Historynet.com*, December 6, 2016, http://www.historynet.com/first-crusade-peoples-crusade.htm.

[23] Michael D. Hull, “First Crusade: Siege of Jerusalem,” *Historynet.com*, December 6, 2016, http://www.historynet.com/first-crusade-siege-of-jerusalem.htm.

[24] Pope John, “The Knights Templar Yesterday and Today,” *Archive.org*, https://archive.org/stream/TheKnightsTemplarYesterdayAndToday/TheKnightTemplars_djvu.txt.

[25] Michael D. Hull, http://www.historynet.com/first-crusade-siege-of-jerusalem.htm.

[26] Cox, Sir George W., “Crusades, Saladin Takes Jerusalem from the Christians,” *History World*, http://history-world.org/saladin_takes_jerusalem.htm.

[27] Href Mailto and Leela Jacinto, “Islam vs. Christianity in a Holy War?” *ABC News*, January 15, http://abcnews.go.com/International/story?id=79706.

[28] “The Dark History of the Templars,” https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/templars/knights_templars01.htm.

[29] David Hatcher Childress, “The Knights Templar,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_masonsknightstemplar05.htm.

[30] David Hatcher Childress, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_masonsknightstemplar05.htm.

[31] “The Dark History of the Templars,” https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/templars/knights_templars01.htm.

[32] David Hatcher Childress, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_masonsknightstemplar05.htm.

[33] “The Dark History of the Templars,” https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/templars/knights_templars01.htm.

[34] “The Dark History of the Templars,” https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/templars/knights_templars01.htm.

[35] “The Knights Templar and the Illuminati,” *Thenwwrdor Blogspot* (a blog site), http://thenwwrdor.blogspot.co.id/2016/08/the-knights-templar-and-illuminati.html.

[36] “Mystery, Babylon the Great Part II,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/cienciareal/babylon02.htm.

[37] “Crypto Jews, Conversos, Marranos & Anusim,” *Geni.com*, https://www.geni.com/projects/Crypto-Jews-Conversos-Marranos-Anusim/8486.

[38] “Mystery, Babylon the Great: Catholic or Jewish?” *Bibliotecapleyades*, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/cienciareal/babylon2.htm.

[39] “Mystery, Babylon the Great: Catholic or Jewish?” http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/cienciareal/babylon2.htm.

[40] “The Dark History of the Templars,” https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/templars/knights_templars01.htm.

[41] Mark Pinkham, “The Origin of the Knights Templar - Descendants of Jewish Elders?” *Ancient Origins*, December 31, 2015, http://www.ancient-origins.net/history/origin-knights-templar-descendants-jewish-elders-005078.

[42] Victor E. Marsden, “The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion,” *Archieve.org*, https://archive.org/stream/TheProtocolsOfTheLearnedEldersOfZion/ProtocolsOfTheEldersOfZion#page/n68/mode/1up.

[43] “The Symbolic Snake - ’People’s Rights’ - Liquidation of the Goyim - ‘Sovereign Lord of the World’ - Universal Economic Crisis – ‘Ours They will not Touch…’ - Secret Masonic Agents,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_zion07.htm.

[44] “A Hoax of Hate: The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion,” *ADL*, https://www.adl.org/education/resources/backgrounders/a-hoax-of-hate-the-protocols-of-the-learned-elders-of-zion.

[45] “Protocols of the Elders of Zion,” *Holocaust Encyclopedia*, https://www.ushmm.org/wlc/en/article.php?ModuleId=10007058.

[46] Henry Makow, “The Cult that Hijacked the World,” *Stop the Crime*, http://www.stopthecrime.net/Henry-Makow---Illuminati----(2008).PDF.

[47] “The Dark History of the Templars,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/templars/knights_templars01.htm.

[48] John Emerich Edward Dalberg-Acton, “Illuminati, Jesuit & Jewry’s Attack on France, Her People, Culture and God,” *Overlords of Chaos*, http://www.overlordsofchaos.com/html/illuminati_11.html.

[49] Vladimir Moss, “Bolshevism and The Jews,” *Orthodox Christian Books*, March 21, 2011, http://www.orthodoxchristianbooks.com/articles/371/bolshevism-jews/.

[50] “Why won’t Israel Acknowledge the Armenian Genocide? Because the Donmeh Crypto-Jewish Leadership of Turkey was Responsible,” *The Millennium Report*, November 9, 2015, http://themillenniumreport.com/2015/11/why-wont-israel-acknowledge-the-armenian-genocide-the-donmeh-jewish-leadership-of-turkey-was-responsible/.

[51] “The Hidden Elite, Satanic Sabbatean Frankist Rothschilds, Vatican Bank, Czar, Russia, Stalin, Marx, Hitler, Mao, Gallipoli, Attaturk,” *Energy Enhancement*, http://www.energyenhancement.org/THE-HIDDEN-ELITE-SATANIC-SABBATEAN-FRANKIST-ROTHSCHILDS-VATICAN-BANK-CZAR-RUSSIA-STALIN-MARX-HITLER-MAO-GALLIPOLI-ATTATURK.htm.

[52] Michael Collins Piper, “Bush, Rockefeller, Rothschild & Hitler,” *American Free Press*, January 23, 2013, http://americanfreepress.net/bush-rockefeller-rothschild-hitler/.

[53] “The Zionist Jewish Role in Causing World War II,” *rense.com*, December 9, 2003, http://www.rense.com/general45/zzo.htm.

[54] Henry H. Lindner, “The Origins of the Judaic/Zionist War in the Middle East and of America’s ‘War on Terrorism,’” *Henrylindner.net*, http://henrylindner.net/Writings/middleeast.html.

[55] Israel Shahak, “’Greater Israel’: The Zionist Plan for the Middle East,” *Global Research*, June 22, 2017, http://www.globalresearch.ca/greater-israel-the-zionist-plan-for-the-middle-east/5324815.

[56] By Henry Makow, “Zionists Betrayed Non-Z Jews to Holocaust,” *henrymakow.com*, March 22, 2013, https://www.henrymakow.com/091202.html.

[57] Michael Tsarion, “Power of the Templars,” *The Female Illuminati*, http://www.femaleilluminati.com/article-2.html.

[58] Fritz Springmeier, “Merovingian Bloodline and The Black Nobility,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, June 28, 2000, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_blacknobil07.htm.

[59] David Icke, “Jimmy Savile … Doorway to the Cesspit,” *David Icke*, November 2, 2012, https://www.davidicke.com/article/132420/74874-jimmy-savile-doorway-to-the-cesspit.

[60] “Prince Philip: Is this the Sickest Man in the UK?” *hangthebankers.com*, November 14, 2012, http://www.hangthebankers.com/prince-philip-is-this-the-sickest-man-in-the-uk/.

[61] “How to Murder a Princess: The Death of Diana,” *YouTube* video by Jay Myers, 2017, 36:02, posted on July 5, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=9fFkk2ulJjc.

[62] Holly Christodoulou, “Who is Barry Mannakee? Princess Diana’s Bodyguard who Died in a Motorbike Accident,” *The Sun*, August 6, 2017, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/4092744/barry-mannakee-princess-diana-bodyguard-death-motorbike-accident-conspiracy.

[63] Rory O'Connor, “Queen Elizabeth's Reaction to Princess Diana's Fatal Car Crash Claim in New Documentary,” *Express*, June 1, 2017, http://www.express.co.uk/showbiz/tv-radio/811117/Princess-Diana-Spencer-Lady-Queen-Elizabeth-Prince-William-Royal-Death-Windsors-Channel-5.

[64] “Fayed’s Lawyer Suggests Prince Philip called Dodi ‘an Oily Bedhopper,’” *Daily Mail*, January 16, 2008, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-508593/Fayeds-lawyer-suggests-Prince-Philip-called-Dodi-oily-bedhopper.html.

[65] Lukas Magnuson, “Did Princess Diana Believe that Royal Family were Involved in the Illuminati,” *Disclose tv*, http://www.disclose.tv/news/Did_Princess_Diana_believe_that_Royal_Family_were_involved_in_the_Illuminati/114202.

[66] Jon Austin, “David Icke Explains his Infamous Theory why ‘Queen is a Shape-Shifting Reptile,’” *Express*, February 17, 2017, http://www.express.co.uk/news/weird/768800/David-Icke-queen-shape-shifting-lizard.

[67] Harriet Sime, “The Royals are ‘Aliens,’ Says Dame Helen Mirren because the World they Live in is beyond our Understanding,” *Daily Mail*, February 13, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2951832/The-royals-aliens-says-Dame-Helen-Mirren-world-live-understanding.html.

[68] Baxter Dmitry, “Lady Gaga: Prince Charles ‘Is Not Human’,” *News Punch*, December 8, 2016, https://newspunch.com/lady-gaga-prince-charles-not-human/.

[69] “The Strange Story of The Queen and The Children Who ‘Disappeared’ From Native Residential Schools,” *Indian in The Machine Wordpress* (a blog site), March 1, 2011, https://indianinthemachine.wordpress.com/2011/03/01/the-strange-story-of-the-queen-and-the-children-who-disappeared-from-native-residential-schools/.

[70] Jamie Grierson, “Mass Grave of Babies and Children Found at Tuam Care Home in Ireland,” *The Guardian*, March 3, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2017/mar/03/mass-grave-of-babies-and-children-found-at-tuam-orphanage-in-ireland,

[71] Thomas Burrows, “Jersey Abuse Case Reopened with Threat of Leaked Documents,” *International Men’s Organisation*, October 10, 2014, http://www.internationalmensorganisation.info/jersey.htm.

[72] “Catholic Mass Grave Sites of 350,800 Missing Children Found in Ireland, Spain, Canada,” *Adoptionland.org*, https://adoptionland.org/p/3443/catholic-mass-grave-sites-of-350800-missing-children-found-in-ireland-spain-canada/.

[73] Judy Byington, “Catholic Mass Grave Sites of 350,800 Missing Children Found in Ireland, Spain, Canada,” *Child Abuse Recovery*, June 7, 2014, http://childabuserecovery.com/catholic-mass-grave-sites-of-350800-missing-children-found-in-ireland-spain-canada/.

[74] Hue McCulloch, “The Failure of the Second Crusade,” *CLIO*, https://cliojournal.wikispaces.com/The+failure+of+the+Second+Crusade.

[75] Cox, Sir George W., “Saladin Takes Jerusalem from the Christians,” *History World*, http://history-world.org/saladin_takes_jerusalem.htm.

[76] Alan Butler, “Templar Architecture: Practicality and Praise,” *Templar History*, March 31, 2010, http://blog.templarhistory.com/2010/03/templar-architecture-practicality-and-praise/.

[77] “The Dark History of the Templars,”https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/templars/knights_templars01.htm.

[78] David Hatcher Childress, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_masonsknightstemplar05.htm.

[79] John Baron, “Whatever Happened to the Knights Templar?” *The Guardian*, June 27, 2011, https://www.theguardian.com/uk/the-northerner/2011/jun/27/whatever-happened-to-the-knights-templar.

[80] David Jones, “The Amazing Knights Templar,” *New Dawn Magazine*, April 8, 1997, http://www.newdawnmagazine.com/articles/the-amazing-knights-templar.

[81] “Legends of King Arthur & the Knights Templar,” *Knights Templar Order*, http://www.knightstemplarorder.org/templar-king-arthur-holy-grail/.

[82] J. Rickard, “Sixth Crusade, 1228-1229,” *History of War*, March 24, 2001, http://www.historyofwar.org/articles/wars_crusade6th.html.

[83] J. Rickard, “Seventh Crusade, 1248-1254,” *History of War*, March 24, 2001, http://www.historyofwar.org/articles/wars_crusade7th.html.

[84] Jefferson M. Gray, “Holy Terror: The Rise of the Order of Assassins,” *History Net*, February 24, 2010, http://www.historynet.com/holy-terror-the-rise-of-the-order-of-assassins.htm.

[85] David Hatcher Childress, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_masonsknightstemplar05.htm.

[86] Nesta Webster, “The Knights Templar, the Assassins, the Johannite Heresy, and Satanism,” *Meta Religion*, http://www.meta-religion.com/Secret_societies/Groups/Knights_templar/knights_templar.htm.

[87] Brent Swancer, “The Mysterious Secret Society of Assassins,” *Mysterious Universe*, November 16, 2015, http://mysteriousuniverse.org/2015/11/the-mysterious-secret-society-of-assassins/.

[88] David Livingstone, “The Norman Conquest,” *Conspiracy School*, http://www.conspiracyschool.com/holy-grail.

[89] Tracy R Twyman, “Pacts with the Devil: Baphomet Series #1,” *Quintessential Publications*, October 16, 2009, http://quintessentialpublications.com/twyman/?p=638.

[90] Anne Gilmour-Bryson, “Sodomy and the Knights Templar,” *Journal of the History of Sexuality*, Vol. 7, No. 2 (Oct., 1996), pp. 151-183, http://www.academia.edu/9214266/Sodomy_and_the_Knights_Templar.

[91] David Morton, “Sex in the Middle Ages: 10 Titillating Facts You Wanted to Know but were Afraid to Ask,” *oddee.com*, April 20, 2009, http://www.oddee.com/item_96646.aspx.

[92] David Livingstone, “The Norman Conquest,” *Conspiracy School*, http://www.conspiracyschool.com/holy-grail.

[93] Tracy R. Twyman, “Baphomet: The Secret of the Templar Fortune,” *Quintessential Publications*, http://quintessentialpublications.com/twyman/?page_id=167.

[94] Tracy R. Twyman, “Pacts with the Devil: Baphomet Series #1,” *Quintessential Publications*, October 16, 2009, http://quintessentialpublications.com/twyman/?p=638.

[95] Tracy Twyman interviewed by Jesse Waugh, “Tracy Twyman - Baphomet: The Temple Mystery Unveiled,” *YouTube* video, posted on March 3, 2016, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=WptAdmjFKn0.

[96] “Who is Baphomet?” *Vigilant Citizen*, December 13, 2011, https://vigilantcitizen.com/hidden-knowledge/whoisbaphomet/.

[97] Tracy R. Twyman, “The Secret of the Templar Fortune,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_moneymisterymagick02.htm.

[98] Edward Griffin, “The Creature from Jekyll Island, The Federal Reserve,” *Big Eye*, http://www.bigeye.com/griffin.htm.

[99] Dr. John Coleman, “The Rothschild Dynasty,” *Antimatrix.org*, http://antimatrix.org/Convert/Books/Coleman/Rothschild_Dynasty/Rothschild_Dynasty.htm.

[100] Michael Snyder, “March 2017: The End of a 100 Year Global Debt Super Cycle Is Way Overdue,” *The Economic Collapse Blog*, February 27, 2017, http://theeconomiccollapseblog.com/archives/march-2017-the-end-of-a-100-year-global-debt-super-cycle-is-way-overdue.

[101] “Unification: Saladin and the Fall of Jerusalem,” *Aljazeera*, December 21, 2016, http://www.aljazeera.com/programmes/the-crusades-an-arab-perspective/2016/12/unification-saladin-fall-jerusalem-161219060659446.html.

[102] Austin Cline, “Third Crusade & Aftermath 1187 - 1197: Timeline of the Crusades,” *ThoughtCo*, August 25, 2016, https://www.thoughtco.com/third-crusade-and-aftermath-4078666.

[103] Austin Cline, https://www.thoughtco.com/third-crusade-and-aftermath-4078666.

[104] Gerald A Perreira, “Indeed, Western Civilization Is in a War,” *Counter Currents*, July 22, 2016, http://www.countercurrents.org/2016/07/22/indeed-western-civilization-is-in-a-war/.

[105] Kevin Barrett, “The World Order - How It Works,” *Veterans Today*, July 24, 2017, http://www.veteranstoday.com/2017/07/24/world-order/.

[106] David Hatcher Childress, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_masonsknightstemplar05.htm.

[107] “The Fall of Acre - 1291,” *Templar History*, March 31, 2010, http://blog.templarhistory.com/2010/03/the-fall-of-acre-1291/.

[108] “History of the Order,” *Nola Templars*, http://www.nolatemplars.com/history_of_the_order.htm.

[109] Tracy R. Twyman interview, “Baphomet: The Mystery of Mysteries Unveiled,” *Redice.TV*, October 17, 2013, https://redice.tv/news/baphomet-the-mystery-of-mysteries-unveiled.

[110] “Vatican Book on Templars’ Demise,” *BBC News*, October 5, 2007, http://news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/world/europe/7029513.stm.

[111] Barbara Becquiot, “Rise and Fall of the Knights Templar (Part II),” *Bonjour Paris*, April 10, 2013, https://bonjourparis.com/history/rise-and-fall-knights-templar-part-ii/.

[112] “The New World Order: The Knights Templar and the Illuminati,” *Thenwwrdor*, http://thenwwrdor.blogspot.co.id/2016/08/the-knights-templar-and-illuminati.html.

[113] Barbara Frale, “The Templars: The Secret History Revealed,” *Amazon*, May 1, 2011, https://www.amazon.com/Templars-Secret-History-Revealed/dp/1611450195.

[114] Nesta Webster, “The Knights Templar, the Assassins, the Johannite Heresy, and Satanism,” *Meta Religion*, http://www.meta-religion.com/Secret_societies/Groups/Knights_templar/knights_templar.htm.

[115] Tracy Twyman interviewed by Jesse Waugh, “Baphomet: The Temple Mystery Unveiled,” *YouTube* video, posted on March 3, 2016, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=WptAdmjFKn0.

[116] Sara Flounders, “The Pope, Pedophilia and the Class Struggle,” *Global Research*, April 25, 2010, http://www.globalresearch.ca/the-pope-pedophilia-and-the-class-struggle/18874.

[117] Philip Pullella, “Knights Templar win Heresy Reprieve after 700 Years,” *Reuters*, October 12, 2007, http://www.reuters.com/article/us-vatican-templars-idUSL093422320071012.

[118] Antony Thomas, “Secrets of the Vatican,” *Frontline*, http://www.pbs.org/wgbh/frontline/film/secrets-of-the-vatican/transcript/.

[119] John L. Palmer, “The Knights Templar and Church Pedophiles in Medieval Europe,” *Grigorfedan*, http://grigorfedan.com/main/The_Knights_Templar_and_Church_Pedophiles.

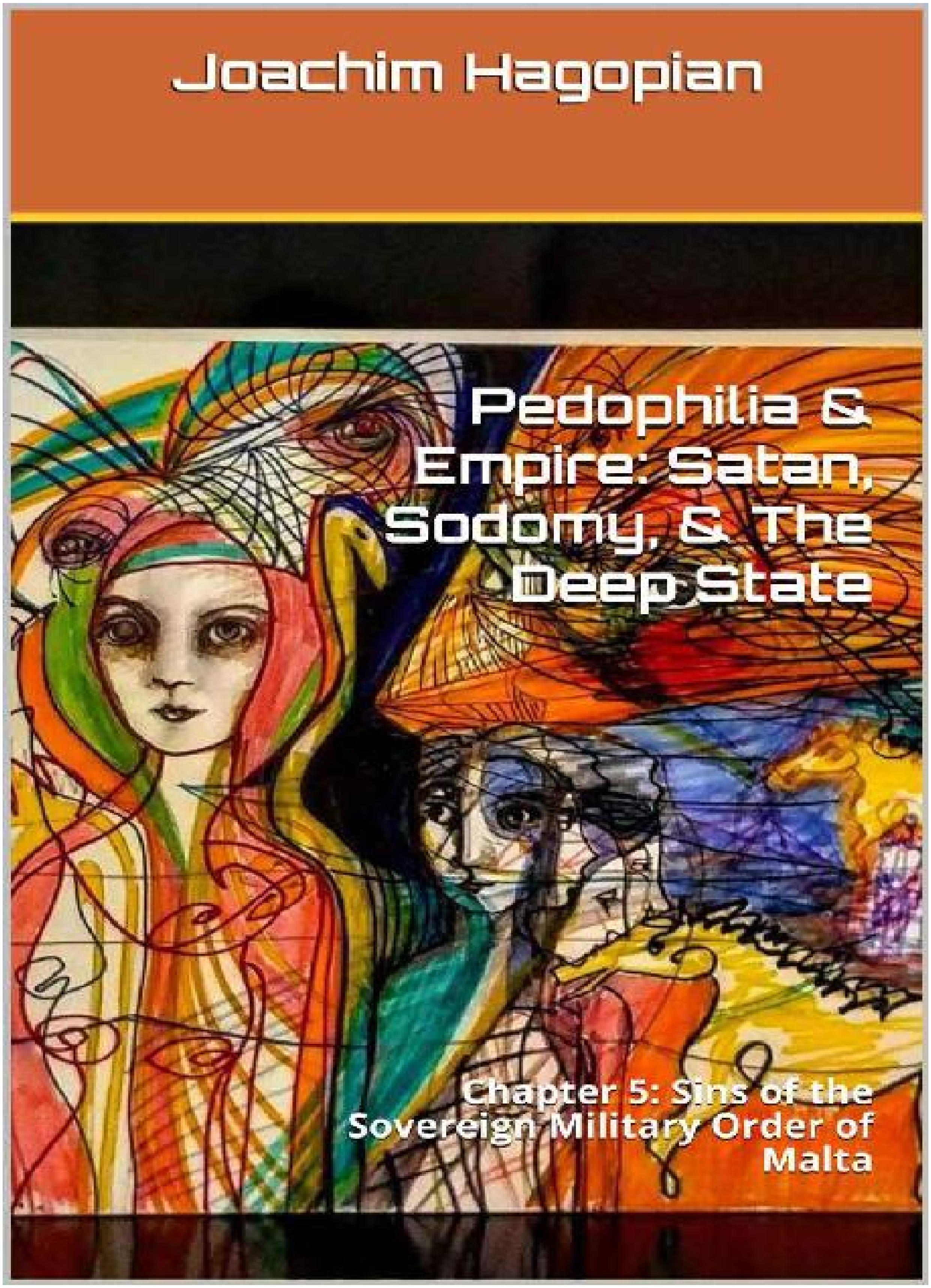

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 5: Sins of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta

Chapter 5: Sins of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission

http://www.noramaccoby.com/

The birth of the Order of St. John was in 1048.[i] A community in Amalfi of merchants and Catholic monks from the Order established a church, convent and the Hospital of St. John in Jerusalem in 1085 to care for the sick among the Christians visiting and living in the Holy Land. In 1099, the final year of the First Crusade, the Sovereign Military Order of St. John of Jerusalem or the Order of Hospitallers was formalized, officially recognized by the pope in 1113 and by 1126 the Knights of St. John expanded their services as the second secret military Christian order designated to defend devotees traveling from Europe during the Crusades.[ii] So this competitive rival to the Templar Order as the other major secret Christian militia has a more enduring, and impactful sinister history than the mysterious Templar Knight legends.

Aside from Philip's indebted French crown, the Knights of Malta had the most to gain from the Templars' disbandment,[iii] by default opportunistically taking full advantage of the vacuum created by assuming both unrivaled military and banking power throughout Europe and the Holy Land beginning in the 14th century.[iv] And as a result, over the near millennium of its existence, the Maltese Knights' strength and control as the Vatican's most public and official military order has increased dramatically both in power and influence. The Jesuit Order founded in the 16th century covered next is also a Vatican militia that is even more secretly guarded and dangerous. John J. Robinson in his book *Born in Blood: The Lost Secrets of Freemasonry* contends that the Malta Knights and Pope Clement V had colluded to allow King Philip to indulge in his witch hunt to destroy the Knights Templar.[v]

Due to Turkish forces taking control over Jerusalem in 1291, the Hospitaller Knights had to relocate their operation and hospital to the island of Cyprus where the Order began building a naval fleet. But instability on Cyprus led to shifting their center in 1310 to another Greek island Rhodes also located in the Mediterranean Sea.[vi] However, a couple centuries later in 1523 after a six month siege, the Order of St. John knights also lost its foothold on Rhodes to the Ottoman Empire's advancing Turkish Sultan Suleiman, forced to eventually retreat to the island of Malta in 1530. For the next 268 years the Order maintained its Malta headquarters and sovereignty over both the islands of Malta and Gozo.[vii] More sea battles and sieges defending their turf followed against the pressing Ottoman Turks throughout the 16th century. The Order lost its islands yet again when in 1798 French Emperor Napoleon invaded and left the military order without a home territory. At this point without a sovereign territory, the Jesuit Order took advantage of Sovereign Military Order of Malta's (SMOM) diminished power by subordinating it under Jesuit control,[viii] though both ostensibly pledge sworn to death blood oath loyalty to their common superior- the pope.

For such an allegedly fierce fighting force that subversively gained increasing political strength over the span of centuries, the Malta Knights lost considerable ground militarily over the millennium, ultimately in 1834 finally relocating to its permanent sovereign home within the city limits of Rome where it remains today. After Napoleon's defeat, the British maintained the island of Malta as a possession until its independence in 1964, becoming the Republic of Malta though choosing to stay a British

Commonwealth nation.[ix] In lieu of a treaty between the Order and the Republic of Malta over reclaiming Malta's Fort St. Angelo under permanent extraterritorial sovereignty, a 99-year lease was signed in 1998. Thus on paper only the Order of Malta remains a sovereign nation, still in search of a territory.

Ever since 1446 when the pope granted the Knights of Malta sovereignty that permitted independence to possess ambassadors and extensive non-taxable property in every nation on the European continent,[x] the Order of Malta internationally and politically was viewed and treated by other nation states as a separate yet equal sovereign nation, subservient only to the pope who must approve the lifetime elected "Sovereign Prince" as the Grand Master to rule over the Order's Council. The native populations in Rhodes and Malta where the knights occupied and ruled for centuries had absolutely no say in how their own island states were governed. But then after living under monarchial feudalism for centuries, they probably rarely even noticed… not unlike citizens of the world today also having grown complacently accustomed to living under plutocratic crime cabal enslavement. Famous German writer Johann Goethe's quote comes to mind: "None are more hopelessly enslaved than those who falsely believe they are free."[xi]

In any event, the Knights of Malta's contribution to the wave after wave of ill-conceived Christian invasions of the Middle East lasting 200 years cost millions of lives, and the Christian forces led militarily by the Malta and Templar Knights may have actually killed as many fellow Christians and Jews as they did Muslims.[xii] For all it was worth in cost, two centuries of virtual nonstop war, afforded Christian military control over the Holy City just one 88 year stretch. But once achieving their initial Crusade "victory," every Crusader invasion thereafter resulted in abysmal failure at untold, agonizing sacrifice and suffering. And the sad irony is that life for Christians in Jerusalem was far better living under their so called enemy than it ever was under Christian control. Jews and Christians alike in the Middle East were treated far more humanely and tolerantly by Muslim Arabs, [xiii] minus the hatred, bigotry, bloodshed and lies that instigated and fueled the holy wars. With the royal bloodlines competing treacherously against factions from some of those same bloodlines that had infiltrated the powerful Catholic Church, even Rome's two Christian militias constantly competed, bickered, and fought against each other.[xiv] Really the debacle of the Crusades were doomed from the outset.[xv]

But the real tragedy is that those same secret Christian societies - the Knights of Malta and the Templar-turned-Freemasons,[xvi] and the Jesuit Pope's Vatican and ruling bloodlines, today are no longer waging war against each other. Now united together, they've channeled all their venomous evil into a war still raging not just against Islam, but against all of humanity,[xvii] the natural earth and the earth's children. We are all Satan's enemy and in the name of their befallen god, they are desperately recoiling from the light of truth that we the people possess. Considered armed and dangerous to their very core existence, the globalists both hate and fear us, knowing we are now finally onto them in the name of truth and God, fighting to slay the demonic dragon in our midst.

There is a major history lesson as well as wake-up call here that unfortunately through elite deep state propaganda gets lost on Westerners' dumbed down short attention span (measured at only 8 seconds now),[xviii] at least that's what they're still desperately counting on, that we the masses remain so truth-starved, clueless, and docile that we never grasp either history lessons or the truth. Hence, through their nonstop 24/7 brainwash barrage, the planetary controllers always easily manipulate the global masses into blind acceptance and acquiescence that a perpetual state of war on earth is simply the unavoidable consequence of our present human condition. That presumption is yet another lie. It is only because we allow perpetual war, conditioned to impotently and passively believe we have no say or control, that it continues unabated. In recent years the war drum propaganda determined to make a World War III enemy out of Putin is one gargantuan fabrication that deep state is still determined to pull off with its exhaustive “hacked election” meme.[xix] The real war is against humanity and the elite’s desperation to cover up their pedophilia epidemic explains why they can’t possibly let go of their worn-out “the Russians did it” delusion.[xx] The globalists know if they cannot plunge us into world war soon, they will be toast, stripped and exposed as naked, decrepitly diseased child rapists they are, and that their long dominion controlling this earth through their diabolical crime cabal is inevitably crashing down now.[xxi] Do I hear an “Amen?”

This is why we need to see through the deception they’ve laid all around us. If you visit the Knights of Malta website, you may initially be fooled, perhaps even be impressed by the Order’s charity efforts and medical missions sanctimoniously displayed in over 120 nations around the world from last century to the present.[xxii] It’s their glossy propaganda portfolio to the world, their cover to deceive the true evil they propagate, obscuring their bottom line mission held by every secret society for over a century - to deliver New World Order tyranny through totalitarian one world government and one world religion that in actuality goes by the name of Satanism.[xxiii]

Under the auspices of Catholicism, the Knights of Malta are deceitfully running a cultural war on behalf of Christianity directed against Muslims, exactly like the Crusades, using the neocon conspired 9/11 and “war on terror” as their fake pretext. Bush Jr called his response to 9/11 a “crusade, this war on terrorism,"[xxiv] explaining how the Islamic terrorists "hate our freedoms"[xxv] right after he and Cheney committed 9/11 false flag treason[xxvi] so they could war on Middle East Muslims while pushing anthrax[xxvii] and their pre-written Patriot Act to take our freedoms away patterned after the cold war Soviet totalitarianism. That's demonic deception the satanic way.

Renowned journalist Seymour Hersh has asserted that SMOM draws its members from the highest levels of US deep state including the Pentagon, secret services, and counterparts in friendly allied nations. While speaking at perhaps the foremost prestigious one - Georgetown University's Foreign Policy School, Seymour Hersh explained the Knights of Malta this way:

They do see what they're doing… It's a crusade, literally. They see themselves as the protectors of the Christians. They're protecting them from the Muslims [as in] the 13th century. And this is their function.[xxviii]

Some Malta Order facts… for over 900 years it's been a closed fraternal order whose members are initiated by invitation only. To be a knight one must be Catholic, have served in the military service, and the higher ranks are most definitely upper crusty, requiring proof of aristocratic family coat of arms handed down from father to son unbroken for at least 300 years.[xxix] Nearly half[xxx] of its 13,500 present members are of European nobility.[xxxi] The Grand Master, appointed for life and approved of by the pope, is typically of exclusive Illuminati bloodline lineage possessing head of state status with secular rank of prince and ecclesiastical equivalent to a cardinal. The military order was also granted sovereign nation status with its own Constitution despite no territorial claim beyond its Rome headquarters. The Order benefits from permanent observer status at the UN, maintains diplomatic relations with 106 countries[xxxii] and its members enjoy diplomatic immunity,[xxxiii] thus possessing a license of impunity to live above the law. As a sovereign “nation,” this convenient loophole freely permits illegal transfer of money across international borders with zero oversight.[xxxiv] Members swear loyalty to this sovereign Order/”nation” and their supreme boss the pope over and above their own nations, which minimally amounts to a conflict of interest[xxxv] and potentially a betrayal of their own countries’ constitutions, essentially making them traitors. But that’s the whole idea, as a covert enemy to all nations’ sovereignty, SMOM’s mission is one world government (like pretty much all secret societies).[xxxvi] It’s a New World Order snake pit linking the Vatican to royalty and fascist dictatorships around the globe through an underground web of fellow criminal secret societies. As such, it is closely affiliated with Freemasonry, particularly Italy’s fascist P2 masonic lodge as well as the Illuminati.[xxxvii] And they all secretly practice Satanism, which by its hidden demonic nature includes pedophilia and both child and human sacrifice.[xxxviii]

In 1927 the Knights of Malta Order opened up its exclusive membership to Roman Catholic American males of high wealth and prominence. One such early American invitee who co-founded the US SMOM branch was DuPont Treasurer, General Motors Chairman and onetime head of the Democratic National Committee John Raskob. In 1934 Raskob the US traitor led an unsuccessful attempt to overthrow the sitting US President in Franklin D. Roosevelt.[xxxix] Thanks to an American patriot - the heroic General Smedley “war is a racket” Butler, the coup was thwarted but the treasonous conspirators were never properly investigated nor arrested.[xl] This shameful, little known chapter in US history illustrates the kind of fascist criminal elements and activities that the Malta Knight Order promotes, raw naked power that subversively undermines and blatantly violates all international and national sovereign laws in favor of brutal centralized authoritarian control. With the recent forced resignation of a former DNC chair and the DNC today facing more criminal subterfuge charges,[xli] bent on pursuing by any means available a similar mission to overthrow yet another US president.[xlii] Sadly and pathetically for lawless America, times have changed very little.

Still another example of how the SMOM as a sovereign entity functions within the larger sphere of international clandestine operations, because it can issue its own passports (along with stamps and coins), during CIA's Operation Paperclip the Maltese Order served as a Vatican-Nazi ratline supplying false identity passports to US enemy war criminals and brutal concentration camp scientists to circumvent Nuremberg prosecution.[xliii] The Order of Malta Knights along with the pope,[xliv] the Vatican, Dutch[xlv] and British royalty[xlvi] and a host of American internationalist kingpins like John D. Rockefeller,[xlvii] Henry Ford as well as General Motors,[xlviii] Prescott Bush,[xlix] and the Dulles brothers[l] all treasonously admired and supported Hitler and the Nazis. And with popes and Malta Order's penchant for supporting fascist dictators around the world, that nefarious elitist thread continues today. Additionally, just like the Knights of Templar Order, according to the Project for the Exposure of Hidden Institutions (PEHI), the ultra-secret Order of Malta Knights has also been implicated in occultism, and as such, "a number of prestigious members" have been linked to such satanic practices as pedophilia, vampirism and cannibalism.[li]

In order to understand what the Knights of Malta are all about and what these "prestigious members" actually stand for, a quick perusal of past and current membership is most illuminating. The list of Maltese Knights[lii] reads like a who's who of all the earth's down and dirty movers and shakers over the last 100 years (and beyond).[liii] The Talmud worshipping patriarch of the Jewish Illuminati Rothschild bloodline, Mayer Amschel Rothschild from Bavaria,[liv] became a closeted Catholic Jesuit[lv] and Malta Knight who financed both the Vatican and fellow Jesuit crypto-Jew Illuminati "founder" Adam Weishaupt in the 18th century[lvi] (though the true Illuminati origins date back to at least Spain in 1492 with the Alumbrados)[lvii] That Rothschild is the earliest listed Malta Knight is telling enough as the family banking dynasty's tentacles soon owned both the Bank of England housed in the City of London (the independent sovereign corporation called the Crown apart from England or its capital London)[lviii] as well as controlling interests of the Vatican Bank, not to mention financing both sides to every major war ever fought over the last few centuries. Aside from that, the Rothschild Empire controls the European Central Bank, the privately owned foreign cartel the "US" Federal Reserve,[lix] the World Bank, the International Monetary Fund and the Bank of International Settlements.[lx]

After commandeering Britain's Bank of England by crashing its stock market in 1812,[lxi] it was Mayer Amschel's son Nathan who accurately boasted:

I care not what puppet is placed upon the throne of England to rule the Empire on which the sun never sets. The man who controls Britain's money supply controls the British Empire, and I control the British money supply.[lxii]

Since Nathan was but one of five Rothschild sons, each securing a banking monopoly over different European nations' capitals including the US, coupled with the consolidation of wealth and power that globalization has enabled over the last century,[lxiii] Nathan Rothschild's above statement would today be far more accurate simply substituting the word "world" for "Britain." It's been reported that only three nations' banks on this planet have yet to be conquered under the Rothschild domain - Iran, Cuba and North Korea.[lxiv] A couple more amazing facts: the Rothschild fortune is said to equal the totality of wealth owned by the entire 7.5 billion world population[lxv] and that the richest 1% own more than the rest of us 99%.[lxvi] So the glaring and growing disparity between the elite handful and the global population would logically follow that the earth's richest family worth an estimated half a quadrillion dollars[lxvii] (whose vast hidden assets are distributed amongst enough heirs to avoid appearing on Forbes' annual "rich list") that owns the world's most gold and controls its rigged market[lxviii]would have to be an early invitee into every secret private club, if not the kingpin boss of every Luciferian society ruling this planet. And plenty of evidence indicates that the Rothschilds' higher power does not come from God but Satan himself.[lxix]

Other infamous Knights of Malta notables from this last century are a bunch of Nazis that include Hitler enabler and supporter Franz von Papen,[lxx] Hitler's financiers Fritz Thyssen and Prescott Bush,[lxxi] Hitler WWII Axis partner fascist Italian dictator Benito Mussolini, Hitler's SS leader and satanic worshipping black occultist Heinrich Himmler.[lxxii] Hitler's Eastern front intelligence head, sadistic war criminal General Reinhard Gehlen, as a Malta Knight received SMOM's highest award and through Paperclip was recruited to direct West Germany's first secret service. [lxxiii] The CIA utilized Gehlen's knowledge of Russia who, more than any other intel operative, was responsible for starting the Cold War.[lxxiv]

Hitler and Himmler were so enamored with the organized infrastructure of the secret Catholic militia orders that they patterned their own Nazi government after the fanatical assassin order of Jesuits (covered in the next chapter).[lxxv] Prior to World War II, Pope Pius XII was the infamous Hitler buddy in the Vatican who squelched Catholic opposition to the Nazis and, as an anti-Semite, turned his back on the Jewish holocaust.[lxxvi] Get the picture? The Nazis, the Vatican, the Malta Knights, the CIA and Western fascists in power created America's postwar Russian Commie bogeyman that's still being used as their sorry ass excuse for launching World War III. Again, only the names, faces and dates change while history stays the same.

General "Wild Bill" Donovan and Allen Dulles, both WWII OSS leaders and postwar architects of the CIA as well as obedient Malta Knights,[lxxvii] along with Allen's brother Secretary of State John Foster Dulles[lxxviii] (whose son Avery was a Jesuit Cardinal till his 2008 death) through their Operation Paperclip[lxxix] worked hand in hand with every Malta Knight's blood sworn superior, the Nazi friendly pope, his Vatican and Nazi war criminals to covertly funnel safe passage of 1,600 German scientists and engineers to the United States[lxxx] and 10,000 Nazi military personnel to South America[lxxxi] as a means of escaping trial and death at Nuremberg. And for his obedience in laying the groundwork to save so many sadistic Nazi killers, Hitler's Pope Pius XII in 1944 rewarded Malta man Wild Bill the Grand Cross of the Order of St. Sylvester, the Vatican's highest award.[lxxxii] Subsequently, virtually every CIA director in US history has been a Malta Knight, starting with its first director Dulles, John McCone, William Casey, George Tenet, William Webster, John Deutch, William Colby[lxxxiii] (who like Defense Secretary James Forrestal in 1949[lxxxiv] was likely murdered for pushing too hard for alien disclosure) and Leon Panetta (also Jesuit educated)[lxxxv] just to name a few. These early CIA Malta Knight scoundrels were responsible for employing the likes of Nazi Dr. Mengele to develop CIA's top secret, highly illegal and inhumane MK Ultra/Monarch mind control programs[lxxxvi] now operating worldwide through drugs, torture, hypnosis and sexual trauma training multiple generations of super soldier assassins, spies, sex slaves and of course Manchurian Candidate presidents like Clinton[lxxxvii] and Obama.[lxxxviii] So not for one second should we believe that the sugarcoated hospital work saving the poor people of the world is all that the satanic Order has been up to over this last century.

Not surprisingly, longtime Federal Bureau of Investigation kingpin, transvestite-pedophile[lxxxix] and COINTELPRO[xc] blackmailer-mastermind J. Edgar Hoover was also a Knight of Malta.[xci] Having so many heads of US intelligence and law enforcement as active key members of the pope's "intelligentsia" machine easily operating under the veil of total secrecy provides the "ideal" cover by which to commit espionage, government coups, terrorism attacks and trigger wars, all by elitist design to consolidate global power and control into fewer hidden bloodline hands. And who would believe that the benevolent Holy Pope made them do it? After all, with the pope's blessing, the Knights of Malta generously export their heartwarming charities and humanitarian causes to the lowly masses in need from every corner of the globe.

This sleight of hand deception has ensured that such public Illuminati faces rise to the top through the backdoor method as US history's only unelected vice president Nelson Rockefeller[xcii] and his international crime cabal boss brother, the finally deceased David Rockefeller[xciii] teamed up with fellow NWO architect and Trilateral Commission co-founder, the also recently dead Zbigniew Brzezinski,[xciv] along with Illuminati boss, credibly accused homosexual rapist[xcv]-MK sex slave handler[xcvi]-NWO guru,[xcvii] the still croaking Henry Kissinger[xcviii] as the leading members of virtually every secret society known to Satan, also card carrying, never leave home without it, globetrotting, power-broking, proud-to-be Malta Knights. Over many decades they have nefariously colluded and confabulated with the pope and such Malta Order European royalty luminaries as Queen Elizabeth, Dutch Queen Beatrix and their hubby princes to fast forward their collective New World Order vision.[xcix]

Queen Elizabeth’s family, the House of Windsor, only went Anglo in the face of raging anti-German sentiment during WWI. The real family name, the House of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha,[c] are crypto-Nazis as members of both Prince Philip[ci] and Queen Elizabeth’s families, especially her uncle the onetime King of England, were loyal Hitler supporters.[cii] The English royals date back to the English Templars that reinvented themselves as Freemasons.[ciii] This ruling hierarchy all ties together as the popes, the Vatican, the Malta Knights, the Jesuits, along with European royalty and Black Nobility (royal bloodlines seeking to regain lost monarchies)[civ] as well as the CIA all share a long history of peddling and installing fascist dictatorships. Hell, dictatorship and New World Order fit together like a hand in glove. With all these Malta VIP’s beholding to the pope, for centuries the earth’s policy ringleaders have been able to subversively rule, control and destroy the world at will through pedophilia, war and their theft-based financial system of global population enslavement.

It was the Sovereign Military Order of Malta Knights that created Britain’s Royal Institute of International Affairs in 1919 and America’s Council on Foreign Relations in 1921.[cv] As the world’s financial power, the City of London’s core secret societies include SMOM, the Pilgrims Society[cvi] with branches in both England and America, the Freemasons’ parent company headed by Queen Elizabeth - the Order of the Garter,[cvii] and finally atop the Illuminati pyramid’s Committee of 300 (aka the Olympians), a 1727 historical offshoot of the British Empire’s first monopoly - the British East India Company.[cviii] By the end of World War II the CFR had created the United Nations as another trial run at one world governance after post-WWI's League of Nations flopped under the orchestrated onset of WWII.[cix] Of course the Malta Order keeps its all seeing eye on the UN with "observer status" membership.[cx]

Nearly every modern US president and even their fathers are/were Malta Knights as in Hitler financier-US traitor Grandpa Prescott[cxi] and his treasonous kin, pedophile[cxii] [cxiii] NWO Presidents George H.W.[cxiv] and George W.[cxv] [cxvi] along with the family underachiever Jeb Bush, 9/11 mastermind[cxvii] VP pedophile Dick Cheney,[cxviii] and their Democratic NWO partner-in-crime,[cxix] serial rapist predator[cxx] and fellow pedophile criminal Bill Clinton[cxxi] along with child fondler (and no doubt pedo) VP Joe Biden.[cxxii] Other presidents include pedophile Gerald Ford,[cxxiii] bestiality porn addict[cxxiv] and underage callboy to the White House President Ronnie Reagan,[cxxv] Dwight D. Eisenhower[cxxvi] and even the last US "good guy" president and alleged pedophile JFK[cxxvii] have all been Knights of Malta. US presidents, Knights of Malta, mind control and pedo sex rings go together.[cxxviii]

Of course too many to count, high powered Council on Foreign Relations members[cxxix] like current and former CFR presidents Richard Haass[cxxx] and Peter G. Peterson.[cxxxi] Holding dual Israeli citizenship[cxxxii] and Maltese membership pledging utmost loyalty to both Tel Aviv and the Catholic pope, as the 14-year head of the premier globalist NWO think tank dictating US foreign policy over the last century,[cxxxiii] by default perennial Bilderberger[cxxxiv] Richard Haass' loyalty to America has to be last on his list of priorities. Following CFR's marching orders are the prominent foreign relations puppet-senators John Danforth,[cxxxv] Pete Domenici,[cxxxvi] Jeremiah Denton,[cxxxvii] Cuban born now Morgan/Rockefeller banking lobbyist[cxxxviii] Mel Martinez,[cxxxix] 33 degree Mason Bob Dole,[cxl] [cxli] Ted Kennedy[cxlii] (along with father Joe),[cxliii] Opus Dei fanatic Rick Santorum, [cxliv] [cxlv] and Diane Feinstein[cxlvi] all are or were Knights. Other California politicians in this private Maltese club include former LA city mayor Richard Riordan,[cxlvii] former governor Arnold Schwarzenegger and Congressman Darrell Issa.[cxlviii]

Then there are Malta Knights who were key henchmen in such illegal operations as Reagan-Bush's Contra arms-for-drug pusher Lt. Col. Oliver North,[cxlix] [cl] or "Israel first-US last" dual citizens[cli] Bush-Cheney neocon fixture former UN Ambassador John Bolton[clii] and fellow neocon neocon 9/11 conspirator DHS head and pre-9/11 Patriot Act author Michael Chertoff. Chertoff shared writing the treasonous Patriot Act with its main architect, fellow Malta Jesuit Georgetown law professor Viet Dinh,[cliii] an alleged relative of South Vietnam's onetime US installed then US assassinated Catholic dictator puppet Ngo Dinh Diem.[cliv] Then there's daddy Bush partner-in-crime, Carlyle CEO-deep state VIP Frank Carlucci.[clv] The Maltese Order of course is saturated with criminal US defense, state and treasury department secretaries as well as high-brow think tank honchos and central bankster gangsters.[clvi]

The Order of Malta Knights also recruited two former NYC mayors - anti-2nd Amendment fanatic Michael Bloomberg[clvii] and 9/11 co-conspirator-public transvestite Rudy Giuliani.[clviii] [clix] Incidentally, with so many crisis actor-staged Islamic lone gunman mass shootings in America,[clx] ex-mayor Bloomberg is simply following his Malta Knighthood-Vatican orders that supports the strictest gun restriction legislation that will lead to complete elimination of civilian gun ownership in the US.[clxi] It seems those most fervently demanding to infringe on our constitutional gun rights domestically are the most gung ho about bombing other countries internationally,[clxii] waging war around the world… which brings us to the Malta Order's US military warriors. Aside from General Eisenhower, the following warmonger generals are Malta Knights: the protagonist loser of the Maltese-CIA drug war (aka Vietnam War) William Westmoreland,[clxiii] [clxiv] the ever-ambitious "I'm in control here" Alexander Haig (immediately following Reagan getting shot),[clxv] William Boykin,[clxvi] Stanley McChrystal and Admiral William McRaven (both also Opus Dei according to very credible journalist Seymour Hersh)[clxvii] and retired Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff (I went to school with for three years at West Point)[clxviii] Martin Dempsey.[clxix] Then speaking of wars, there's Blackwater mercenary founder the Maltese Christian Crusader Erik Prince and former Pentagon Inspector General turned Blackwater exec (and also Opus Dei) Joseph Edward Schmitz.[clxx]

Then as if those aforementioned peace hater-killers from the US aren't Luciferian enough, the Order of Malta seeks out for membership likeminded fascist tyrants around the world. Over the years the demons in the Catholic Church have regularly teamed up with the US crime cabal players to prop up bloodthirsty dictators as totalitarian "useful idiot" tools to expedite Illuminati's New World Order mission. Then when they've been used up, swiftly the Vatican-US war machine replaces them by either death or imprisonment. Illuminati boss Kissinger has played his hand in both the rise and fall of most or all - Shah of Iran, Ngo Dinh Diem, Pol Pot, Manuel Noriega, Ferdinand Marcos, Osama bin Laden, Muamar Gaddafi, and Saddam Hussein just to name more than a few.[clxxi]

Examples of Malta Knight recruitment amongst these murderous despots include Kissinger and his CIA-Maltese-neo-Nazi nexus pulling off yet another coup – their first infamous 9/11 in 1973, installing Chilean General Augusto Pinochet.[clxxii] Aside from Pinochet, other colorful Latin American dictators as favorite Malta Knight inductees are Argentina's Juan Peron,[clxxiii] even Jesuit trained US "nemesis" Cuban tough guy, the late Fidel Castro, alleged to be of

Jesuit creator Black Nobility Farnese family bloodline,[clxxiv] [clxxv] [clxxvi] former Nazi Austrian President Kurt Waldheim[clxxvii] and weasel-like, infamous pedophilia cover-upper-war criminal UK Prime Minister Tony Blair.[clxxviii] Finally, we have the Bourbon bloodline reinstalled after dictator Franco's death in 1975 with Spain's Jesuit trained King Juan Carlos holding black court as the Malta King of Jerusalem, Middle East and North Africa while his son took over for him in Spain in 2014. King Carlos[clxxix] is the patriarch descendant heading the Templars of Aragon claiming direct lineage to the Merovingian Illuminati bloodline.[clxxx] Do you see a Hegelian "problem-reaction-solution" pattern here" All the key players typically from ancient Ptolemaic bloodlines involved in international coups, covert subversion, perennial drug wars, global terrorism and fascist subterfuge like Vietnam, Contra, 9/11, Iraq and Afghanistan are working undercover and consistently rewarded by the pope's Malta Order.

To realize how important Jerusalem is to the Catholic hierarchy (that includes the pope, King Carlos and Queen Elizabeth II), historically as Jesus' old stomping grounds, both symbolically and literally, the Vatican owns over 60% of the land inside the city of Jerusalem.[clxxxi] Thus, the Crusades never really ended as the Catholic power elite is still hell bent on removing every Muslim trace in Palestine, and for that matter the Jews as well, from "their Holy Land." On behalf of the Vatican as the new Holy Roman Emperor, King Carlos oversees this quest to revive Rome's "Latin Kingdom of Jerusalem" for "the Vicar of Christ." But according to a number of Jews, the Third Hebrew Temple must still be built on the King Solomon's Temple Mount in Jerusalem by human hands as the End Days go-ahead to set the stage for their Messiah's return.[clxxxii] This one spot on earth where for centuries the big three religions each have converged to contentiously lay claim as their own precious and scared turf acts as the epochal proverbial clash of civilizations as well as the convenient excuse to perpetuate the planetary controllers' always profitable endless wars.

Among the Catholic-Satanist High Priest crowd within the Malta Knight Order comes Archbishop Bernard Francis Law who ran a child sex trafficking ring out of his Boston Archdiocese until he resigned in December 2002[clxxxiii] after getting busted by the *Boston Globe* journalists featured in the Oscar winning 2015 film "The Spotlight."[clxxxiv] Moving down the Atlantic Coastline from Boston to New York City, similar to J Edgar's heavy-handed role in the FBI, from 1939 to 1967 fellow pedophile-Malta Knight Francis Cardinal Spellman dictatorially ruled over both Big Apple's Catholic Archdiocese but also as Grand Protector and Spiritual Advisor[clxxxv] of the Malta Order ruled with iron fist over all US Maltese operations.[clxxxvi] [clxxxvii] The closeted tyrant had the *New York Times* cowering even years after his death from daring to print the hypocritical truth about how Catholic kingpins love young choir boys in all the wrong ways. Spellman and his CIA Malta henchmen Dulles and McCone have been implicated as heavies in the John F Kennedy assassination for the president's refusal to expand the war in Vietnam (among a several reasons taken up in the next chapter that unveils the power of the Jesuit Order).[clxxxviii]

Then there are powerful US Supreme Court Judges who are also Opus Dei members like Chief Justice John Roberts, Samuel Alito, Clarence Thomas and the murdered (for knowing too much) alleged pedophile[clxxxix] Antonin Scalia.[cxc] [cxci]Turning to Maltese moneylenders, the front and center globalist finance puppeteers are well represented in former Federal Reserve chairmen Alan Greenspan[cxcii] and Paul Volcker (who also double dutied as super elitist Pilgrim Society VP).[cxciii] Heading up Malta's corporate team is JFK co-conspirator Ford then Chrysler's Lee Iacocca (for concealing bullet hole evidence),[cxciv] Conrad Hilton and son Barron[cxcv] of the Hilton Hotel chain[cxcvi] and Monsanto founder-planet destroyer John Francis Queeny.[cxcvii] The Malta Order couldn't kill presidents, start wars and kill millions without their mass media propagandist-moguls such as Time and Life Magazines publisher, CFR and Skull and Bones-er and JFK assassination cover-upper Henry Luce and fellow accomplice wife Clare Boothe Luce,[cxcviii] the News Corporation/Fox disinfo Mockingbird magnate Rupert Murdoch[cxcix] and eugenics fanatic and *CNN* patriarch Ted Turner,[cc] [cci] longtime media intellectual-columnist and former CIA operative and Skull and Bonesman William F. Buckley,[ccii] and Builderberger-CFR-Jesuit coadjutor and MSM TV fixture Charlie Rose.[cciii] [cciv] [ccv] Then of course for PR purposes comes the Order's entertainment section that includes Hollywood director Frank Capra,[ccvi] sex slave handler-pedophile Bob Hope,[ccvii] [ccviii] notorious Satanist, serial child rapist and pimp Jimmy Savile,[ccix] Frank Sinatra since the crooner and the knights are both known for maintaining close ties to the mob,[ccx] country western singer Ricky Skaggs,[ccxi] Walt's brother Roy E. Disney.[ccxii]

If you haven't figured it out yet, other than perhaps one or two from the fringe PR section, the Maltese Order exclusively invites only the crème-de-la-crème scum-de-la-earth to their private parties to plot their next assassination, terrorist false flag event or imperialistic war that right on Hegelian cue leads to their coveted NWO fascist police state takeover[ccxiii] while happily cutting up and devouring the latest fresh batch of just trafficked in flesh and blood children. This is neither exaggeration nor conspiracy theory, it's the cold dark grimmest of realities that we can no longer afford to ignore and keep our heads in the sand because it's just too disturbing to face. If we're ever going to put a stop to this abominable disgrace, we must directly confront this evil brutality and slaughter and blow up this international child rapist killing machine once and for all – before it kills us.

But just to throw us off their wicked bread crumb trail, again no doubt for purposes of positive publicity, the motley Malta crew every now and then throws in a few figures considered to be good guys and international figures, like the anti-apartheid heroes Nelson Mandela,[ccxiv] and Desmond Tutu.[ccxv] Even former Congressman Ron Paul has been listed as a Knight of Malta[ccxvi] although researching it further for incontrovertible evidence is nonexistent. One site attempting to make a case that Ron Paul's a freemason is at best weak.[ccxvii] A stronger case shows veteran GOP/media consultant Pat Buchanan may well be a controlled opposition plant.[ccxviii] [ccxix] Even progressive dissent guru Noam Chomsky [ccxx] [ccxxi] and pioneering alt news rabble-rouser Alex Jones (who admits family members have been CIA operatives)[ccxxii] are speculated to be a Malta Knights.[ccxxiii] Jones' InfoWars website[ccxxiv] never even mentions the nefarious Malta Order in any of their thousands of articles over the years. The one time an article was actually posted was an *AP* piece marking Malta's 900th anniversary.[ccxxv] That's about as benignly milquetoast and unrevealing as you can get. Meanwhile, Malta Knight Buchanan has been a guest on AJ's show.

Now to understand what all of the above planetary controllers are doing on behalf of who owns them, and what their obligations are, they must all undergo blood sworn oaths of strictest allegiance to the pope to complete their initiation ceremony. Let's take an eye-opening look at this unbelievable oath that commits every one of these illustrious Knights of Malta swearing their lifelong loyalty and obedience to Rome's pontiff.[ccxxvi] From two separate officially confirmed sources - Congressional Record of 1913 and Library of Congress,[ccxxvii] comes the text of the sworn blood oath that is standard protocol for every initiate to commit to obeying for life in the Malta Order, the Jesuit Order, Knights of Columbus Order and every other secret Catholic society. All incoming members are duty-bound till death do them part to deploy graphically violent methods in their sworn vow to eliminate every so called potential enemy of the pope as their supreme commander, and that includes by their definition the over 6 billion of us humans on this earth who happen not to be Catholic:

I do further promise and declare that I will, when opportunity presents, make and wage relentless war, secretly and openly against all heretics, Protestants and Masons, as I am directed to do to extirpate them from the face of the whole earth; and that I will spare neither age, sex, or condition, and that will hang, bum, waste, boil, flay, strangle, and bury alive these infamous heretics; rip up the stomachs and wombs of their women, and crush their infants' heads against the walls in order to annihilate their execrable race. That when the same cannot be done openly, I will secretly use the poisonous cup, the strangulation cord, the steel of the poniard, or the leaden bullet, regardless of the honor, rank, dignity, or authority of the persons, whatever may be their condition in life, either public or private, as I at any time may be directed so to do by any agents of the Pope or superior of the Brotherhood of the Holy Father of the Society of Jesus.

In confirmation of which I hereby dedicate my life, soul, and all corporal powers, and with the dagger which I now receive I will subscribe my name written in my blood in testimony thereof; and should I prove false or weaken in my determination, may my brethren and fellow soldiers of the militia of the Pope cut off my hands and feet and my throat from ear to ear, my belly opened and Sulphur burned therein with all the punishment that can be inflicted upon *me on earth and my soul shall be tortured by demons in eternal hell forever.*

Sounds like venomous S&M hate spewing straight out of the mouth of Satan himself. It would be laughable if it weren't true that all the royal Illuminati bloodlines that every US president in history shares the same genetic linkage with the British Windsor's, are all committed to honoring this same undying oath that devotes their exclusive loyalty to the pope alone, not to God, not to Jesus, not to their nation nor their family or humanity, but elevates only the pope to their satanic pedestal as their one and only earth god. And the fact that royalty, presidents and the most powerful shadow government figures in the world for many decades have been taking this blood sworn oath to be faithful only to the pope, and no one or nothing else, what does that say about their intentions towards the rest of us on this planet? In their eyes those of us not amongst the Catholic faithful are deemed heretics who need to be exterminated sooner than later. This information gives renewed impetus and explanation to the rulers' existing depopulation agenda.

The part where the oath demands relentless war waged against Freemasons as their eternal enemy is total bullshit. Near half of the powerful Malta Order members just cited are also 33 degree Masons. For instance, Allen Dulles, J Edgar Hoover, Henry Kissinger, Ronald Reagan, George HW Bush, Bill Clinton and Tony Blair are all high degree Masonic Malta Knights.[ccxxviii] While Queen Elizabeth is the Sovereign Head of the Order of St. John, the Protestant arm of the Knights of Malta,[ccxxix] her husband Prince Philip is a 33rd degree Mason who wants to be reincarnated as a killer virus that will reduce the world population.[ccxxx] [ccxxxi] Again, all the powerful secret societies want most of us dead and for the minority of genocidal survivors their tyrannical enslavement totally controlled by a one world government master and one world religion called Satanism.

A longtime goal of the Freemasons has been to infiltrate and take over the Vatican, ultimately destroying both the Catholic Church and Christianity.[ccxxxii] How Satanists have specifically seized control over the papacy will be further discussed in chapter seven. At one point in 1903 Cardinal Rampolla, a closet mason, came very close to being selected pope.[ccxxxiii] But by the close of Pope Paul VI's Second Vatican Council in 1965, the papacy had already been thoroughly invaded by Freemasons. And more recently, an infested Masonic network within the Vatican promoted Jorge Bergoglio to become history's first Jesuit pope for good reason - Pope Francis has hinted at his temporal status as an 80-year old pontiff,[ccxxxiv] also implying he may be the final Catholic pope as reinforced by prophecy,[ccxxxv] and more than hinted at establishing a one world religion.[ccxxxvi] Francis' call in recent months to purge Freemasons out of the Church and from the Order of Malta Knights in particular[ccxxxvii] in the aftermath of firing the Maltese Grand Master in January,[ccxxxviii] alludes to the masonic foothold deeply entrenched inside the current Vatican. Considering that an already well established Masonic network operating within the church crowned Francis pontiff in 2013, you can rest assure that the first Jesuit pope isn't seriously interested in extirpating either Satan or Freemasonry from either his church or his satanic brand of one world religion any time soon.

A superficial historical analysis might cite the Malta Order's medieval competition with its archrival Templar Order Knights and the rooted close link shared between the Templars and Masons[ccxxxix] ostensibly predisposing Freemasons to consider the Maltese Order their competitor and common enemy and vice versa. But let's cut to the chase, the one commonality shared by every single one of these secret society ideologues at the highest degrees and vows is their sworn undying loyalty and obedience to satanic pagan gods.[ccxl] And due to the degenerate filth operating at the top of today's Catholic Church, with the pope seemingly answering to Satan, more than enough evidence emanates directly from inside the unholy Vatican itself to sadly corroborate this veracity. But as alluded to earlier, more on Satan's conquest over Rome later.

Probably the most blatant evidence that Freemasons and the Knights of Malta Order are in fact tainted blood brothers, blasting this entire myth that they're sworn enemies is Italy's most powerful Masonic lodge otherwise known as P2. Aside from the remarkable overlap membership between Rome's P2 (Propaganda Due) masonic lodge and Rome's Malta Knights, the pragmatics of an Italian marriage of convenience won out between the mafia and the boot nation's boot-licking fascist elite.[ccxli] Their criminally subversive joint activities with the Vatican are also linked to the CIA and NATO's infamously bloody Gladio false flag terrorist operations waged against the communist party that also included bank robberies, bank fraud and assassinations.[ccxlii] Moreover, the P2, the Malta Order and Vatican are all implicated in the murder of Pope John Paul I in 1978 just 33 days after he was elected pope.[ccxliii] From the late 1940's to the 1990's, the CIA, military intelligence, mob, P2, Malta and Jesuits working together as a secret army brought terror to Italy and Europe, and, more recently in the mid-1990's, with MI6-CIA-NATO's Gladio B operations spreading to Turkey using Islamic proxy terrorists.[ccxliv] Both covert and overt wars, international terrorism, and illegal smuggling of arms, drugs, body parts and sacrificial children have become the huge deadly business of Rome's Vatican, Rothschild and royalty's City of London and Washington's US Empire as the Satanic headquarters, of course presided over by none other than the fallen Lucifer himself.

Be it in Europe, Turkey, the Middle East war zones, or for that matter anywhere on earth, this is the global trade that

Belgian entrepreneur, banker and former Illuminati associate Ronald Bernard spoke of earlier this year.[ccxlv] The nexus of organized crime, secret societies (i.e., Illuminati, Freemasonry, Malta Order, Opus Dei, and Jesuits), the Vatican, the global intelligence community and their crime boss puppet-stringed government leaders, all covertly work hand-in-hand to money launder trillions of dollars through central banks, doing their dirty bidding in the name of Satan. Once Bernard was exposed to the satanic blood sacrifice of children, the aphrodisiac of unlimited power, wealth and sex with beautiful women no longer held the same compelling allure. But because the 61-year old Illuminati whistleblower's graphic emotional account of how big business operates deep inside a Luciferian underworld leaked too much truth out, he recently paid for it with his life. Ronald Bernard died under mysterious circumstances while out hiking on a recent August afternoon in Florida.[ccxlvi] His death is clearly a warning for others who like him may wish to come clean, revealing the sins of the planetary controllers… all the more reason to offer Truth and Reconciliation Commission for insiders to safely come forth with their testimony.

Yet another ultra-right wing, notorious secret Catholic society of ill repute is Opus Dei, a hardcore anti-Communist, Islamophobic organization that includes both Catholic clergy as well as Catholic laypersons.[ccxlvii] It was founded in 1928 by a conservative Spanish priest named Josemaria Escriva (1902-1975) who openly supported oppressive fascist dictatorships led by the likes of Franco as his spiritual advisor and admirer and apologist for Hitler. Opus Dei was heavily represented in both the Franco tyranny making up over half his cabinet[ccxlviii] as well as in the bloody Pinochet regime that included an Opus Dei member serving as Chile's foreign minister.[ccxlix]

Yet in 2002 Pope John Paul II rushed through to prelature status Opus Dei, and then Escriva’s canonization to dubious sainthood faster than any other saint in church history up to that time.[ccl] What does that tell us? With its mission to fervently support strong arm tyrants, which the last three popes – John Paul, Ratzinger and Francis are all guilty of, endorsing the Opus Dei movement automatically includes endorsing its overactive role in the massive Catholic pedophile cover-up.

The dangerous rise of Opus Dei has run a parallel course with the ascent of its infiltrating members being amongst the most powerful bishops and cardinals in Rome sitting on the Vatican’s governing council Curia. Likewise Opus Dei’s following amongst the clerical ranks out in the missionary field has also surged in the Americas, Africa and Philippines.[ccli] Its numbers worldwide stand at 80,000 with 2,000 priests and 3,000 members in the US.[cclii] It holds assets worth about $3 billion. But like those in Scientology, many of its members renounce their membership calling it a cult that forcibly distances followers from their families and rigidly controls every aspect of a person’s life, and in exchange for income confiscation, each member is issued a modest monthly stipend that requires every expenditure to be closely accounted for.[ccliii]

Like the Order of Malta, its members have also expanded as covertly operated seepage into all the highest levels of corrupt powerful institutions far beyond Rome, extending to the European Union, NATO and Washington, including the Supreme Court, FBI, CIA and mainstream media.[ccliv] As a relevant aside, America’s most damaging spy in US history, Robert Hanssen, was a daily Catholic churchgoer and Opus Dei devotee who as a career FBI agent for over 20 years managed to give away America’s top secrets to Russia without getting caught.[cclv]

During the 1980's with former CIA director then Vice President George H.W. Bush's illegal Contra operation, the CIA, Opus Dei and Knights of Malta along with Sun Myung Moon were all covertly funneling money through such agencies as the World Anti-Communist League and AmericiCares in support of death squads (that Reagan affectionately called "freedom fighters") in Nicaragua, Guatemala and El Salvador.[cclvi] With Bush senior's brother Prescott Jr on its advisory board and its top funding source[cclvii] and founder HW's old Yale roommate Robert Macauley, AmeriCares was closely linked to a privatized social service agency that the Reagan-Bush administration lavishly praised called the Covenant House run by known pedophile and AmeriCares VP Father Bruce Ritter. A CIA linked business partner of the US backed former Nicaraguan dictator Anastasio Somoza (a West Point graduate) headed the Covenant House pilot program in Guatemala.

With Macauley, pedo-prez GHW Bush, Prescott Jr, pedo-Ritter and the Somoza partner all five Malta Knight members, according to intelligence sources of former Nebraska State Senator John DeCamp instrumental in exposing and writing *The Franklin Cover-Up*, AmeriCares and the Covenant House were alleged to procure Latin American children in a major child sex trafficking ring.[cclviii] A couple more SMOM players, former Treasury Secretary William Simon[cclix] and the late globalist guru Brzezinski sat on AmeriCares' board of directors while HW's Quaker oatmeal wife Barbara Bush was AmeriCares' "ambassador-at-large." As a Malta non-Catholic, Macauley was the first "infidel" to receive the Order's top prize, the Cross of the Commander award.[cclx] But his AmeriCares and SMOM resurfaced yet again[cclxi] in the aftermath of the infamous Sandy Hook false flag.[cclxii]

Note how this insulated criminal joint operation between velvet glove AmeriCares and secret Catholic military Malta

Order and the CIA stinks foul of fascist cronyism, nepotism and pedophilia trafficking to perfectly illustrate the ultra-prevalent theme of the predator fox infiltrating and feasting inside their guarded henhouse. Again, this is their tried and true method of how Satan worshipping child raping war criminals never have to answer for their horrendous assaults against humanity. Their penchant for illegal war making around the globe provides unlimited access to drug-weapons-organ-child trafficking as their most diabolic and evil line of work and play.

An ultra-conservative religious group financed by cult leader Sun Myung Moon (in addition to funding AmeriCares) is the Council for National Policy (CNP), boasting powerful religious and political members.[cclxiii] CNP is also a strong AmeriCares backer. President of the American Association of the Knights of Malta and a CNP player J. Peter Grace[cclxiv] helped found the charitable CIA front organization AmeriCares.[cclxv] Years earlier Grace made his American company a safe haven for Nazis in America, placing them on his board of directors or on his payroll as consultant - the notorious IG Farben chemist-director Otto Ambros, responsible for killing hundreds of Jews at Auschwitz. High profile CNP evangelist Pat Robertson is also one of AmeriCares largest contributors. When AmeriCares’ pedophile head “Father” Bruce Ritter was busted molesting kids from his youth organization, a former CEO of one of the nation’s top public relations firms Hill and Knowlton was rushed in pro bono to defend Ritter and AmeriCares, after all, it served as the perfect humanitarian front for George H W Bush’s international child trafficking and drug operations. Hill and Knowlton is the same fraudulent, unscrupulous outfit that staged the imposter pretending to be a 15-year old Kuwaiti hospital volunteer testifying with crocodile tears before Congress in 1990 the boldface lie that she had witnessed 312 Kuwaiti babies grabbed from their incubators and mercilessly dumped on the floor to die by Saddam Hussein's death squad soldiers.[cclxvi] The imposter turned out to be the Kuwaiti US ambassador's daughter. And the Hill and Knowlton CEO at the time that was brought in to "smooth over" the Ritter scandal was none other than Robert Keith Gray, a partner-in-crime with two CIA operatives that notoriously ran homosexual blackmail operations.[cclxvii]

The late John DeCamp who wrote the book on the Franklin pedo scandal, asserts that Gray's blackmail schemes were simply an extension of the infamous Roy Cohn's CIA linked illicit "Bronx boys" operation, a New York City pedophilia sex ring servicing politicians, high ranking military officers, and prominent court judges for blackmail hardline anticommunist Zionist control.[cclxviii] Cohn was both Senator Joe "Red Scare" McCarthy's lawyer as well as consigliere to every Italian and Jewish mobster kingpin in New York. And for 14 years prior to dying of AIDS in 1986, Cohn was also both the Trump family lawyer and the Donald's personal mentor.[cclxix] Cohn at one time led a John Birch Society organization called Western Goals Foundation that evolved into the Council for National Policy. Contained within Cohn's pedophilia ring may have even included the satanic cult that Son of Sam David Berkowitz referred to in his conversations with investigator Maury Terry.[cclxx] Though cast as the "lone gunman" devil, strong evidence corroborates that Berkowitz was a member of the Process Church of the Final Judgment that may have participated in the series of infamous murders in the New York area in the 1970's. The Process originated in London and over the years has been branded a notorious reputation akin to the Manson family.[cclxxi] Berkowitz told Terry that his Satan worshipping cult actually supplied children for sex to wealthy pedophile parties in upscale Westchester County, Long Island, Manhattan and Connecticut, and that one of those homes in Connecticut was none other than Roy Cohn's.[cclxxii]

That satanic cults interface and mix with satanic super-rich for hired assassination might explain the gruesome murder of a Wisconsin priest named Father Alfred Kunz. The Catholic priest was found with his throat slashed from ear to ear after he had been investigating child sex rings in the Catholic Church.[cclxxiii] On the March 1998 night that active CNP member and fellow priest Charles Fiore took over Kunz' Catholic Family Hour radio show to further expose evidence that he and Kunz had gathered, the Satan signatured murder of Father Kunz took place sending a blood-curdling warning that Fiore would be next.[cclxxiv] Powerful Luciferians possess both the means and the motive to take out potential threats like Fathers Kunz and Fiore or anyone else like Ronald Bernard who dare lift the veil exposing the demonic forces behind child rape and blood sacrifice networks - be they linked directly to the Church of Satan or the Church of Catholicism, since they serve the same master.

Along with his connection to the CNP, Roy Cohn's extensive experience working and playing kinky with 33rd degree Mason and Malta Knight J Edgar Hoover,[cclxxv] the CIA and reactionary anticommunist fascists while running pedophilia blackmail operations spawned a number of other blackmail schemes. Disguised by its façade of "family and religious values," the Council for National Policy and its tentacles that include the CIA, Opus Dei and the Malta Order represent at its diabolical occult core a satanic bedrock of deviant, perverse subculture. With help from their Luciferian friends in high places, the CIA, the Mossad, MI5 and MI6 have been running these sexual blackmail pedo operations for many years.[cclxxvi]

Murdered double agent superspy for both MI6 and Mossad Robert Maxwell[cclxxvii] had a daughter Ghislaine who posed as Jeffrey Epstein's girlfriend and procurer of his underage girls running a later blackmail operation that enticed the likes of the pedophile Clintons and Queen Elizabeth's pedophile son

Prince Andrew among many others.[cclxxviii] And as a onetime Epstein buddy, Trump is more than likely yet another compromised politician. Again, child trafficking pedophile victims for the elite's demonic consumption effectively controls the public policymakers prior to them ever being selected presidents to do the dutiful bidding of their Luciferian controllers, and secret societies Opus Dei, the Malta Knights, the Jesuits, the Templar-Freemasons, the Illuminati and the Skull and Bones have long been integral cogs in the Luciferian wheel.

Still another scandal linking the Catholic secret societies Opus Dei and Malta Knights to CNP and dirty Washington politics is the DC pedophile-call boy sex/spy ring out of the Watergate, Sheraton and Ritz Carlton hotels run by convicted felon,[cclxxix] CNP member and now reemerging GOP lobbyist Jack Abramoff[cclxxx] during the Bush-Cheney years. For knowing too much, the DC Madame was very likely murdered in 2008 to ensure a tight lid be kept on her little black book that would incriminate scores of high level sexual predators in Washington scandals stay buried.[cclxxxi] Meanwhile, the year prior in 2007 George W. Bush fired eight US attorneys probing his and Abramoff's DC sex ring in a blatant attempt to further thwart investigation and obstruct justice.[cclxxxii] Insiders state that disgraced CNP affiliated Republican Congressman Mark Foley's forced resignation after being caught for years sending sexually explicit emails to young underage congressional pages was just the "tip of the iceberg" during the Bush-Cheney regime.[cclxxxiii]

The Secret Service unvetted White House imposter reporter-former callboy himself Jeff Gannon who was suspiciously allowed access to not only attend press conferences to ask ass kissing pro-Bush questions from 2003-2005 but also invited to at least a dozen George W. Bush White House sleepovers.[cclxxxiv] Gannon is alleged to be the alias grownup version of 12-year old Iowa paperboy Johnny Gosch who was abducted in 1982[cclxxxv] into a daddy Bush pedo-ring run by Lawrence King of the Nebraska Franklin scandal.[cclxxxvi] Gosch was kidnapped by Satanist-pedophile-Monarch mind control programmer Lt. Colonel Michael Aquino.[cclxxxvii] It seems that Gannon and Abramoff allegedly procured young boys for politicians and high profile media figures' late night poker parties at the DC hotels,[cclxxxviii] financed by AIPAC and Netanyahu specifically for blackmail purposes[cclxxxix] to ensure that MSM and US Congress votes in favor of fighting Middle East wars for the Greater Israel Project.[ccxc]

The US territorial possession - the Northern Marianas Islands Commonwealth throughout the 1990's was rampant in a child sex slave trafficking ring that forced underage girls into prostitution and sweat shops in Saipan.[ccxci] But rather than stop it, now convicted pedophile then Speaker of the House, Dennis Hastert,[ccxcii] and the 3rd most powerful House member GOP Whip Tom DeLay made sure that US laws applied to the US territory that would have stopped the sex trade and pedophilia were sabotaged in committee and never voted on by the House. Lobbyist Jack Abramoff supplied thousands of tax paid dollars so that congressional perverts like DeLay and Hastert could make several trips to the Marianas to seal the deal and keep the lid on the scandal and abuse prolonging it right into the Bush administration. Abramoff's lobbying firm, a CNP participant, wrote the rebuttal to a Marianas teenage victim witness for Congressman Ralph Hall to present on the House floor. CNP member Tom DeLay even paid money to Hall to help squelch the sex abuse scandal in the Pacific and Hall's former staff assistant was a CNP member. The Council for National Policy has demonstrated a consistent policy of obstructing evidence and covering up international child sex trafficking and high profile pedophilia crimes.[ccxciii]

As long as we’re on the topic of US sponsored child trafficking and Christian pedophilia with international Maltese collusion, another example typifies such heavy-handed American interventionism applied in a most vile way is Chile’s Colonia Dignidad operated by German Nazi pedophile Paul Schaefer who as a boy was also active in Hitler’s Youth movement.[ccxciv] Schaefer’s Colonia included every heinous activity imaginable, from satanic ritual sexual abuse, child sex trafficking, torture and murder involving every nefarious outside agency and operation from Paperclip, the CIA, MK Ultra mind control brainwashing and assassination to AmeriCares, the Knights of Malta and the Vatican.

Facing pedophile charges back in Germany in 1959, the occultist Christian minister managed to successfully escape his homeland troubles in January 1961 with assistance from the Vatican-Nazi ratline to start life anew in the remote central Chilean wilderness at the foothills of the Andes 200 miles south of the capital Santiago.[ccxcv] With insider contacts, the conservative Chilean president granted him access to an isolated, rural farm. Schaefer’s cult following in Germany attracted some gullible (and some not) Christian followers to emigrate with him, incredibly even including some of the children involved in his pending charges, telling parents they were attending a short one day outing, only to never be heard from in Europe again.[ccxcvi] Under the guise of running an agricultural Christian commune based on Schaefer’s alleged anti-Communist and supposed Baptist principles, the Colonia residents unwittingly became conscripted slaves. While men and women were kept apart in a forced labor camp and prohibited from engaging in sex, cult leader Schaefer was free to rape and sodomize children at will. His Colonia Dignidad had absolutely nothing to do with either dignity or religious principles.[ccxcvii]

A consortium of South American intelligence services comprised the CIA's Operation Condor engaged in assassination, kidnappings and torture on foreign soil, including American, ostensibly as a counterterrorism measure. Kissinger and the CIA used Condor in an effort to implant fascist puppets in every Latin American country. Colonia Dignidad was a bizarre violent cult run by a pedophile Nazi Satanist with covert connections to an already existing Nazi ratline network running from the Vatican to South America (Paperclip vestige) extending through Operation Condor to very high places in governments in the Americas.[ccxcviii] A dozen years after Schaefer's arrival in Chile, Malta Knights Henry Kissinger and soon-to-be CIA director Bush led a successful coup to overthrow the democratically elected Chilean president Salvador Allende on 9/11/73 in order to install their fellow Malta Knight tyrant General Augusto Pinochet.[ccxcix] With assistance from the dictator's Chilean secret service as well as CIA personnel, Colonia quickly evolved into a modern day concentration camp for torture of "disappearing" Chilean dissidents.[ccc] A key CIA operative acting as the liaison between the US-Chilean governments, specifically between the CIA and Chilean secret police as a paid employee of both was one Iowa born Michael Townley,[ccci] instrumental in overthrowing Allende and as a CIA double agent assassin later convicted with several anti-Castro Cuban exiles in the bombing murder of Allende's former defense minister Orlando Letelier living in Washington DC in September 1976.[cccii]

Pinochet had placed a hit on Orlando Letelier, and sent Michael Townley with a fake passport to Washington DC to kill the outspoken critic of the Chilean junta regime. CIA director George H. W. Bush was given foreknowledge of the hit and deferring to the CIA-Malta-Condor agenda to promote fascism, Bush was complicit in letting the murder take place on US soil.[ccciii] Bush's right hand man, deputy CIA director General Vernon Walters, another Malta Knight, met with Pinochet's murderous secret police jefe General Manuel Contreras on several occasions during the mid 1970's,[ccciv] establishing a cozy relationship and even hiring him as a paid CIA asset.[cccv] Three years after the Allende coup, on his way to work Letelier's car blew up, killing him instantly along with his aide an American passenger and injuring her husband in the backseat.[cccvi] Bush went out of his way to conceal evidence, releasing false statements to the press clearing the Chilean government and sabotaging at every turn the FBI's car bomb investigation.[cccvii]

Fellow Malta fascists stick together, so columnist William F. Buckley[cccviii] lied when he wrote:

U.S. investigators think it unlikely that Chile would risk with an action of this kind the respect it has won with great difficulty during the past year in many Western countries, which before were hostile to its policies.[cccix]

If that's not incriminating enough, author of *Death in Washington: The Murder of Orlando Letelier* (1980), Donald Freed unveiled that William's brother James Buckley, also a fellow Skull and Bones Malta Knight,[cccx] met with assassin Michael Townley in New York just a week before Townley murdered Letelier.[cccxi] The bigger picture emerges of yet another subversive deadly plot of US state sponsored terrorism[cccxii] carried out on US soil for the sake of the CIA-Malta agenda to deliver NWO fascism to every corner of the globe. Thus that little trifling incident on Massachusetts Avenue was quickly forgotten so that Malta men - the Buckley boys, Kissinger, Bush, Walters and Pinochet - could all continue their next clandestine scheme as if the DC assassination had never even happened.

Pinochet-CIA assassin Townley with his Chilean wife also participated in another car bombing attack in September

1974 assassinating exiled Chilean General Carl Prats and his wife.[cccxiii] Townley stands accused of torturing to death Spanish-Chilean diplomat Carmelo Soria in 1976 as last year Chile's Supreme Court requested Townley and two others be extradited to face murder charges in Santiago.[cccxiv] In Italy the American assassin was convicted in absentia of attempted murder of former Chilean VP Bernardo Leighton who suffered irreversible brain damage resulting from gunshots fired at him and his wife in 1975 Rome.[cccxv] Michael Townley is also suspected of murdering Chile's famous Nobel Prize winning leftist poet Pablo Neruda.

Some have suggested Townley to be a mere wannabe CIA secret agent man.[cccxvi] But regardless, the Bush and the CIA used him and his lethal services to further their fascist cause and aim, so the point is mute. Townley was a frequent Colonia camp visitor and prime Schafer collaborator establishing interrogation and torture protocol, complete with soundproof underground torture chambers.[cccxvii] After doing five years in US prison for the Letelier assassination, the FBI placed Townley in its witness protection program to avoid extradition and escape justice for his multiple murders and international terrorism.[cccxviii] Receiving federal protection speaks for itself… definitely, a company man of US Empire, Inc., as a free man quietly reaping his reward in retirement now at age 75.

Meanwhile, under Pinochet Chile's Colonia was operating as a full scale internment labor camp, a foreign rendition torture center and an experimental lab replication of the CIA MK Ultra/Monarch mind control program for Bush and Kissinger. Evidence exists of children from Germany being trafficked in to Chile to maintain the Colonia population since no sex other than pedophilia was allowed on the compound. Also local native Chilean children from the adjacent area attending the Colonia school apparently were also abducted and abused.[cccxix] Shadowy elements operating deep within the German, Chilean and American governments were in direct support of Colonia Dignidad. For years under the Maltese eye of protection, the “charismatic” one eyed camp leader was knowingly allowed to sexually molest children while playing prison commandant overseeing occult satanic torture and murder of imprisoned Chilean political prisoners. The Colonia Dignidad community was residence to some 350 resident captives at one point. Once the Schaefer pedo scandal began surfacing in the late 1990’s, the population had shrunk to 198 by 2002.[cccxx]

Finally with Pinochet’s 27-year dictatorship 7 years removed and 25 kids reporting to staff at the Colonia free clinic and school that Schafer was molesting them, in 1997 the pedophile once again managed to magically escape the law (through friends in high places and Nazi underground network) until 8 years later he was apprehended in Argentina not far from Buenos Aires.[cccxxi]

The big picture has emerged to confirm that the CIA, Mossad, West German and Chilean secret services were all caught red-handed with their hands in the Colonia black ops cookie jar, steeped in drugs, ritualistic child sex abuse, torture, murder and mind control of kidnapped children as well as enslaved adults.[cccxxii] Pinochet’s secret service ties were linked to CIA Gladio Operations in Italy and Europe as well. Also similar to other Mossad-CIA blackmail operations in America and Caribbean, wheeler dealer Schaefer enticed numerous powerful businessmen, politicians, police chiefs, and German Embassy diplomats to parties where illicit sex and child abuse were photographed and filmed that Schaefer kept in secret files.[cccxxiii] This is how the elite puppet masters regularly control their elite puppets. Moreover, having become close friends with Pinochet himself, running a “religious charitable” enterprise that expanded into a major import-export business meant that Schaefer never had to pay any taxes.[cccxxiv] The pedophile even ran a Colonia lab that was developing chemical and biological weapons[cccxxv] according to former Chilean secret service agents who were trained by Schaefer himself in torture methods using drugs and electroshock.[cccxxvi] Similar to every international child sex ring involving the rich and powerful, the Colonia child rapist who forced one or two boys to sleep with him every night, using drugs if they resisted,[cccxxvii] relied on his influence and close connections to top Illuminati global players to keep the truth concealed for as many years as he did.

In the late 1970's when Chile and Argentina, both run by generals, were nearing the brink of all-out war, Pinochet even had a secret, under-the-table nuclear weapons deal going with Israel in cahoots with apartheid South Africa. A central figure in the Pinochet government machinations with ties to both Colonia and Israel was Sergio Melnick, a Chilean Jew who was Pinochet's Secretary of Planning.[cccxxviii] Chile's Colonia was just one Illuminati beehive where numerous NWO players inadvertently got caught and partially exposed. Pinochet had over 1200 other concentration camps and torture centers as well.[cccxxix] And the thousands of Illuminati "beehives" around the world rarely if ever see the light of day.

The US government has a long history through the CIA and military special operations of committing atrocities on every continent.[cccxxx] Globally Washington jointly continues to operate countless secret torture centers with dozens of other fascist tyrannical police state nations the US installs and protects,[cccxxxi] regularly imprisoning political dissidents, suspected so called insurgents, indiscriminately violating all domestic and international laws and Geneva Convention accords, to inflict unthinkable amounts of pain, suffering and murder on targeted victims that we never hear about it.[cccxxxii] We know illegal torture continued after the atrocious Bush-Cheney regime,[cccxxxiii] Obama just took it further underground.[cccxxxiv] And Trump went publicly gung ho to bring back the inhumane insanity[cccxxxv] that never works anyway.[cccxxxvi] So much of everything today operates in total secrecy. The Abu Ghraib's[cccxxxvii] and Guantanamo Bays[cccxxxviii] are everywhere but as top secret clandestine CIA-black ops, they remain unreported, including extrajudicial black sites even on American soil.[cccxxxix] Since at last count three years ago the US has supported fascists, druglords and terrorists in 35 countries,[cccxl] we know that number must be considerably higher now. Extrajudicial assassination by US killer drones of civilians both American and foreign are also perpetrated regularly under the public radar.[cccxli] Colonia Dignidad again is just another tip of another shameful Empire iceberg. Secret societies and shadow governments operate with near total impunity as they always have.

In absentia in 2004 with Schaefer still at large, he was tried, convicted and sentenced to 20 years in a Chilean prison.

According to Chilean journalist Hans Strange, who conducted an exhaustive investigation of the case:

> *It was known since 1964 that the members of the commune were being subjected to torture; it was known since 1977 that political prisoners were tortured; and the child abuse was known about since the 1970's.*[cccxlii]

Similar to Mexico's Father Maciel case covered in chapter seven, after more than six decades as a practicing pedophile with no real consequence, Schaefer spent the last five years of his life incarcerated prior to his 2010 death at the ripe old age of 89. For nearly four decades the child rapist and his Gestapo henchmen were allowed to abuse thousands of children and adults in Chile, murdering at least 100 victims before the concentration camp was ultimately "liberated" and shut down.[cccxliii] The largest weapons arsenal ever found in private hands in Chile's history was discovered at the

Colonia, serving as yet more confirmation that Schaefer was subsidized by the Santiago government and supported by the US, Germany and Israel.[cccxliv] Strangely enough, after a quick name change and makeover, Villa Baviera was reopened and still operates today as both an agricultural community as well as a bizarre tourist attraction. A 2015 film entitled “The Colony” starring Emily Watson featured Colonia Dignidad’s dark and shameful story,[cccxlv] only made possible by Maltese support from four governments - Chile, the US, Germany and Israel.

Earlier this year a power struggle was won by Pope Francis over the Malta Grand Master Matthew Festing, forcing his resignation and in turn tarnishing the Order’s reputation as a sovereign entity.[cccxlvi] Though on the surface the squabble was over condoms, symbolizing the conservative wing of the Church in conflict with the pope’s liberal stance of offering condoms for everyone in the Third World. At the behest of fellow traditionalist US Cardinal Burke,[cccxlvii] a close friend and ally to Trump’s just canned advisor Steve Bannon,[cccxlviii][cccxlix] last December Festing fired the Malta Grand Chancellor for distributing condoms in Africa and Myanmar.

The sacked chancellor appealed to the Vatican Secretary of State Cardinal Parolin who advised Francis to intervene, especially after Festing told the Vatican and pope that the chancellor matter was an internal affair to be handled by his own sovereign Order, in so many words, to back off. Pope Francis promptly reinstated the chancellor and ousted the Festing instead, only the fourth time in a near millennium a Grand Master for life has been terminated and the first since 1799.[cccl] Matthew Festing forgot that his Order takes orders from his boss the pope. In April the Malta Order council selected the same Italian for a second time as lieutenant to the Grand Master to assume temporary one-year command over the internally disordered Order prior to choosing the next Grand Master.[cccli] For nearly three decades the Knights of Malta have been ruled by two Grand Pubahs hailing from England.[ccclii] The first, Andrew Bertie, serving from 1988 till his 2008 death, as a cousin of Queen Elizabeth, is a testimonial to the queen's influence over both the Maltese Order and her 53 nation Commonwealth that is one fifth of the earth's total land-mass.[cccliii]

Speculation abounds turning this recent showdown reflecting internal conflict within the Catholic Church as more than just liberal vs. traditional factions vying for upper hand power, maintaining that a much deeper schism has engulfed the Church against an array of challengers competing for New World Order power. One argument insists that the Malta Order representing the Khazarian mafia's old wealth was recently caught in New York attempting to grab control over the global financial system[cccliv] (which last time I checked, they already own) while another theory postulates that Trump and the Maltese are Freemasons in an open insurrection opposing the globalist Jesuit pope backed by his Rothschild-Clinton-Bush-Soros-deep state minions.[ccclv] But the popular pope is the front man for virtually all the NWO globalists and their secret societies, all pushing aggressively for the same long plotted one world religion,[ccclvi] one world economy and one world government[ccclvii] as the orchestrated "fix" to all of today's most pressing problems like the global warming/climate change hoax.[ccclviii] It appears more likely to be yet more sleight of hand subterfuge designed to cover up the criminality of their breadcrumb laden trail.

The next chapter addresses yet another secret Catholic military order that perhaps is the Vatican's most powerfully dangerous and treacherous creation of all – the benign sounding Society of Jesus, better known as the Jesuit Order and feared as the pope's secret intelligence service and army of assassins.

---

[i] "Order of Malta: 1048 to the Present Day," *Sovereign Order of Malta*, https://www.orderofmalta.int/history/1048-to-the-present/.

[ii] "History of the Knights of Malta," *Knights of Malta.com*, http://www.knightsofmalta.com/history/history.html.

[iii] Anonymous Patriots, "Who Really Owns the Military-Industrial Complex? Part II: Cutting the Gordian Knot of all Time," *State of the Nation*, April 3, 2016, http://stateofthenation2012.com/?p=34965.

[iv] David Livingstone, *Terrorism and the Illuminati*, (Charleston, SC: BookSurge, LLC, 2007) p. 93.

[v] John J. Robinson, *Born in the Blood: The Lost Secrets of Freemasonry*, (Lanham, MD: M. Evans and Company, 1989) p. 172.

[vi] "Order of Malta: 1048 to the Present Day," https://www.orderofmalta.int/history/1048-to-the-present/.

[vii] Guy Stair Sainty, "The Order of Malta, Sovereignty, and International Law," http://library.gayhomeland.org/0010/EN/EN_Souvereignity_and_international_Law_G_S_Sainty.htm.

[viii] Anonymous Patriots, http://stateofthenation2012.com/?p=34965.

[ix] "One World Nations Online: Malta," http://www.nationsonline.org/oneworld/malta.htm.

[x] Guy Stair Sainty, "The Order of Malta, Sovereignty, and International Law," http://library.gayhomeland.org/0010/EN/EN_Souvereignity_and_international_Law_G_S_Sainty.htm.

[xi] Nicholas Boyle, "Johann Wolfgang von Goethe," *Encyclopedia Britannica*, https://www.britannica.com/biography/Johann-Wolfgang-von-Goethe.

[xii] "Crusades and Crusaders," *Medieval Warfare*, http://www.medievalwarfare.info/crusades.htm.

[xiii] John L. Esposito, *Islam: The Straight Path*, (New York/Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1988) 37, http://www-personal.umich.edu/~vika/TeachPort/islam00/eHistory World International, sposito/chapt2.html.

[xiv] David Hatcher Childress, "History of the Knights Templar," *New Dawn Magazine*, January-April 1997, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_knightstemplar01.htm.

[xv] George W. Cox, “Saladin Takes Jerusalem from the Christians,” History World International, http://history-world.org/saladin_takes_jerusalem.htm.

[xvi] Jordan Tirrell-Wysocki, “Freemasons – The Descendants of the Knights Templar?” DVC Papers Middlebury College, http://community.middlebury.edu/~beyer/dvc/DVCpapers/Freemasons.doc.

[xvii] Milton William Cooper, *Secret Societies: A Sinister Agenda Exposed*, (Munich: BookRix GmbH & Co. KG, 2013), p. 12, http://www.grailwerk.com/docs/illuminati.htm.

[xviii] Leon Watson, “Humans Have Shorter Attention Span than Goldfish, Thanks to Smart Phones,” *The Telegraph*, May 15, 2015, http://www.telegraph.co.uk/science/2016/03/12/humans-have-shorter-attention-span-than-goldfish-thanks-to-smart/.

[xix] Tyler Durden, “These Democrats Seem to Really Want a War with Russia,” *ZeroHedge*, March 26, 2017, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2017-03-26/these-democrats-seem-really-want-war-russia.

[xx] Eric Zuesse, “Breaking: Seymour Hersh Cracks ‘RussiaGate’ as CIA-Planted Lie, Revenge against Trump,” *Global Research*, August 2, 2017, http://www.globalresearch.ca/breaking-seymour-hersh-cracks-russiagate-as-cia-planted-lie-revenge-against-trump/5602295.

[xxi] Joachim Hagopian, “As Treasonous Bush-Clinton-Obama Pedo Cabal Dynasty Gets Exposed, Desperate Elite Steps up War against Humanity,” *The Millennium Report*, April1, 2017, http://themillenniumreport.com/2017/04/as-treasonous-bush-clinton-obama-pedo-cabal-dynasty-gets-exposed-desperate-elite-steps-up-war-against-humanity/.

[xxii] “Humanitarian and Medical Works,” *Sovereign Knights of Malta*, https://www.orderofmalta.int/humanitarian-medical-works/hospitaller-mission/.

[xxiii] Milton William Cooper, p. 12, http://www.grailwerk.com/docs/illuminati.htm.

[xxiv] James Carroll, “The Bush Crusade,” *The Nation*, September 2, 2004, https://www.thenation.com/article/bush-crusade/.

[xxv] George W. Bush, text of President Bush speech to nation, *Washington Post*, September 20, 2001, http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-srv/nation/specials/attacked/transcripts/bushaddress_092001.html.

[xxvi] “All You Need to Know about 9/11 to Prove it was an “Inside Job,” *Global Research*, September 13, 2011, http://www.globalresearch.ca/all-you-need-to-know-about-9-11-to-prove-it-was-an-inside-job/26517.

[xxvii] Tom Engelhardt, “The Forgotten Anthrax Attacks of 2001,” *TomDispatch.com*, December 18, 2005, http://www.tomdispatch.com/post/43459/.

[xxviii] “Knights of Malta Militants in a Holy Crusade?” *Nyhetsverket*, March 18, 2013, http://www.nyhetsverket.se/nyhet/24867/KNIGHTS-OF-MALTA-MILITANTS-IN-A-HOLY-CRUSADE.

[xxix] “Knights of Malta,” *Bibliotecapleyades,* https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_malta01.htm.

[xxx] Roberto Suro, “Knights of Malta (and US) Picking New Chief,” *The New York Times*, April 7, 1988, http://www.nytimes.com/1988/04/07/world/knights-of-malta-and-us-picking-new-chief.html.

[xxxi] Nicole Winfield, “At 900 Years, Knights of Malta Confront Modernity,” *Associated Press*, February 5, 2013, http://www.sandiegouniontribune.com/.

[xxxii] “Linking Diplomacy with Aid,” *Sovereign Knights of Malta*, https://www.orderofmalta.int/diplomatic-activities/.

[xxxiii] Milton William Cooper, *Behold A Pale Horse*, (Flagstaff, AZ: Light Technology Publishing, 1991) p. 88.

[xxxiv] David Livingstone, “The Vatican and the O.T.O.,” *Conspiracy School*, December 20, 2015, http://www.conspiracyschool.com/blog/vatican-and-oto.

[xxxv] Milton William Cooper, p. 89.

[xxxvi] “Blackwater Knights of Malta in Iraq,” *Bibliotecapleyades,* October 1, 2007, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_blackwater12.htm.

[xxxvii] “Blackwater Knights of Malta in Iraq,” https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_blackwater12.htm.

[xxxviii] Kalee Brown, “Dutch Financial Whistleblower Admits he was Forced to Sacrifice Children at Elite Parties,” *Collective Evolution*, April 29, 2017, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2017/04/29/dutch-financial-whistleblower-admits-he-was-forced-to-sacrifice-children-at-elite-parties/.

[xxxix] John Burl Smith, “The Business Plot,” *Indybay*, November 8, 2009, https://www.indybay.org/newsitems/2009/11/08/18628134.php.

[xl] Jules Archer, *The Plot to Seize the White House*, (New York: Skyhorse Publishing, 2007), p. 198, http://www.wanttoknow.info/plottoseizethewhitehouse.

[xli] Michael Sainato, “DNC Faces another Class Action Lawsuit after $1 Million in Bonuses Given out,” *Observer*, May 15, 2017, http://observer.com/2017/05/dnc-class-action-lawsuit-field-organizers-convention-bonuses/.

[xlii] Tyler Durden, “The Republic has Fallen: The Deep State’s Plot to take over America has Succeeded,” *ZeroHedge*, May 24, 2017, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2017-05-23/republic-has-fallen-deep-states-plot-take-over-america-has-succeeded.

[xliii] “Blackwater Knights of Malta in Iraq,” https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_blackwater12.htm.

[xliv] John Cornwall, “Hitler’s Pope,” *Vanity Fair*, October 29, 2013, https://www.vanityfair.com/style/1999/10/pope-pius-xii-199910.

[xlv] Bruno Waterfield, “Dutch Prince Bernhard ‘was Member of Nazi Party,’” *The Telegraph*, March 5, 2010, https://www.bilderberg.org/bernhard.htm#lied.

[xlvi] Kurt Nimmo, “The British Royal Family Supported Hitler and the Nazis,” *Global Research*, May 23, 2014, http://www.globalresearch.ca/the-british-royal-family-supported-hitler-and-the-nazis/5383589.

[xlvii] Richard Sanders, “Facing the Corporate Roots of American Fascism: Rockefeller Associates,” *Press for Conversion*, March 2004, http://coat.ncf.ca/our_magazine/links/53/rockefeller.html.

[xlviii] Michael Dobbs, “Ford and GM Scrutinized for Alleged Nazi Collaboration,” *Washington Post*, November 30, 1998, http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-srv/national/daily/nov98/nazicars30.htm.

[xlix] Aaron Jackson, “Prescott Bush: The Nazi-Bush Connection,” *Exposing the Truth*, April 15, 2013, https://www.exposingtruth.com/the-nazi-bush-connection/.

[l] David Talbot, “David Talbot on how the First CIA Director Collaborated with Nazis,” Interview by Ken Klippenstein, *Reader Supported News*, October 20, 2015, http://readersupportednews.org/opinion2/277-75/33041-focus-david-talbot-on-how-the-first-cia-director-collaborated-with-nazis.

[li] Joël van der Reijden, “Exposure of Hidden Institutions,” *FourWinds10.com,* August 9, 2005, http://www.fourwinds10.com/siterun_data/government/new_world_order/news.php?q=1212443957.

[lii] “Knights of Malta, Pilgrim Society, etc.,” *scribd.com*, https://www.scribd.com/doc/4952208/Knights-of-Malta-Pilgrim-Society-etc.

[liii] “Initial Membership List of the Knights of Malta,” *biblebelievers.org*, http://www.biblebelievers.org.au/kmlst1.htm.

[liv] John Coleman, *The Rothschild Dynasty*, (Delhi: Facsimile Publisher, 2015) DOI: 10**:** 9333313427 The Rothschild Dynasty

[lv] “The Rothschilds are Jesuits,” *Covert Geopolitics*, April 8, 2015, https://geopolitics.co/2015/04/08/the-rothschilds-are-jesuits/.

[lvi] “Blackwater Knights of Malta in Iraq,” https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_blackwater12.htm.

[lvii] “What is the Jesuit Order?” *Mystery Babylon Watch*, http://mysterybabylon-watch.blogspot.co.id/2011/03/what-is-jesuit-order.html.

[lviii] Shenali D. Waduge, “Three Corporations Run the World: City of London, Washington DC and Vatican City,” *Sinhalanet*, May 31, 2014, http://www.sinhalanet.net/three-corporations-run-the-world-city-of-london-washington-dc-and-vatican-city.

[lix] G. Edward Griffin, “Secretive Creation of the Federal Reserve System,” interview by Victor Thorn and Lisa Guliani, *WING TV* (April 2, 2004), http://educate-yourself.org/cn/gedwardgriffininterview02apr04.shtml.

[lx] “Does the Rothschild Empire Still Control World events?” *Australian National Review*, December 8, 2014, http://www.australiannationalreview.com/rothschild-empire-control-world-events/.

[lxi] Shenali D. Waduge, http://www.sinhalanet.net/three-corporations-run-the-world-city-of-london-washington-dc-and-vatican-city.

[lxii] “Does the Rothschild Empire Still Control World events?” http://www.australiannationalreview.com/rothschild-empire-control-world-events/.

[lxiii] Shalmali Guttal, “Globalisation,” *Development in Practice* 17: 4/5 (August 2007), p. 523-531 (https://www.jstor.org/stable/25548249)

[lxiv] “Does the Rothschild Empire Still Control World events?” http://www.australiannationalreview.com/rothschild-empire-control-world-events/.

[lxv] Isaac Davis, “The Fabulous Wealth of the Rothschilds,” *Darkmoon*, February 4, 2017, https://www.darkmoon.me/2017/the-fabulous-wealth-of-the-rothschilds/.

[lxvi] Khaleda Rahman, “Richest 1% of the World's Population will Own More than the other 99% Put Together by Next Year unless Rise of Inequality is Checked, Oxfam Warns,” *Daily Mail*, January 19, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2915748/Richest-1-world-s-population-99-year-unless-rise-inequality-checked-Oxfam-warns.html.

[lxvii] Isaac Davis, https://www.darkmoon.me/2017/the-fabulous-wealth-of-the-rothschilds/.

[lxviii] “The Rothschilds, World Kingpins, Worth $500 Trillion! They Own Reuters, AP, and Fix the Price of Gold…” *ToBeFree*, May 10, 2010, https://tobefree.wordpress.com/2010/05/10/the-rothschilds-world-kingpins-worth-500-trillion-they-own-reuters-ap-and-fix-the-price-of-gold%E2%80%A6/.

[lxix] Dr. Eowyn, “The Satanic Rothschild,” *Fellowship of the Minds*, February 19, 2011, https://fellowshipoftheminds.com/2011/02/19/the-satanic-rothschild/.

[lxx] Alan Lamont, “The Knights of the Holy See, the Jesuit Order, Himmler Franz, von Papen, the Papacy and Adolf Hitler,” *The Jesuit Vatican New World Order*, March 27, 2012, http://vaticannewworldorder.blogspot.co.id/2012/03/franz-von-papen-chancellor-of-germany.html.

[lxxi] “Bush Bank Tied to Nazi Funding,” *Associated Press*, October 17, 2003, http://www.washingtontimes.com/news/2003/oct/17/20031017-110534-8149r/.

[lxxii] Alan Lamont, http://vaticannewworldorder.blogspot.co.id/2012/03/franz-von-papen-chancellor-of-germany.html.

[lxxiii] David Livingstone, *Black Terror White Soldiers: Islam, Fascism and the New Age* (Seattle: Create Space Independent Publishing, 2013) p. 309, Livingstone - Black Terror White Soldiers.pdf

[lxxiv] David Livingstone, p. 324, Livingstone - Black Terror White Soldiers.pdf

[lxxv] Alan Lamont, “Adolph Hitler: The Hidden New World Order Revealed,” *The Jesuit Vatican New World Order*, March 25, 2012, http://vaticannewworldorder.blogspot.co.id/2012/03/adolf-hitler-undercover-jesuit-above.html.

[lxxvi] John Cornwell, “Hitler’s Pope,” Vanity Fair, October 29, 2013, https://www.vanityfair.com/style/1999/10/pope-pius-xii-199910.

[lxxvii] Steve Kangas, “The Origins of the Overclass,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, 1999, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_cia06.htm.

[lxxviii] Alan Lamont, “Jesuit Order All Roads Lead to the Black Pope,” *The Jesuit Vatican New World Order*, November 1, 2012, http://vaticannewworldorder.blogspot.co.id/2012/11/jesuit-order-all-roads-lead-to-black.html.

[lxxix] “Knights of Darkness: The Sovereign Military Order of Malta,” *Covert Action Information Bulletin*, Winter 1986, http://www.mosquitonet.com/~prewett/caqsmom25.1.html.

[lxxx] Maureen Callahan, “Behind the Secret Plan to Bring Nazi Scientists to US,” *New York Post*, February 1, 2014, http://nypost.com/2014/02/01/behind-the-secret-plan-to-smuggle-nazi-scientists-to-america/.

[lxxxi] Paul Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile* (Seattle: Create Space Independent Publishing, 1981) p. 181, https://archive.org/details/Martin_Bormann_Nazi_in_Exile

[lxxxii] “Knights of Malta Facebook,” https://archive.org/stream/KnightsOfMaltaFacebook/Knights-of-Malta-Facebook#page/n23/mode/2up.

[lxxxiii] Zalin Grant, “William E. Colby: A Highly Suspicious Death,” Pythia Press, http://www.pythiapress.com/wartales/colby.htm.

[lxxxiv] Richard M. Dolan, “The Death of James Forrestal,” *Richard M. Dolan Press*, March 8, 2001, https://www.richarddolanpress.com/the-death-of-james-forrestal.

[lxxxv] Secret Societies who Run the World,” https://aplanetruth.info/2017/03/20/fe-book-sneak-peak-rulers-who-rule-secret-societies-freemasons-and-knights-of-malta/.

[lxxxvi] Ron Patton, “The Evolution of Project MK Ultra-Project Monarch Nazi Mind Control,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mindcon02.htm.

[lxxxvii] “Fritz Springmeier CIA Bill Clinton Mind Control,” YouTube video, 1:59, posted August 13, 2011, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ZTyler Durden, t7r_XFMT_M.

[lxxxviii] David Kupelian, “”Yes Barack Obama Really is a Manchurian Candidate,” *World Net Daily*, October 29, 2008, http://www.wnd.com/2008/10/79411/.

[lxxxix] “Did Israel Control J. Edgar Hoover with Pedophilia?” *Renegade Tribune*, June 19, 2017, http://www.renegadetribune.com/israel-control-j-edgar-hoover-pedophilia/.

[xc] Brian Glick interview, “Cointelpro Revisited - Spying Disruption,” *What Really Happened*, http://www.whatreallyhappened.com/RANCHO/POLITICS/COINTELPRO/gjp3.html.

[xci] Ronald Kessler, “FBI Director’s Dirty Files: Excerpt from Ronald Kessler’s ‘The Secrets of the FBI,’” *The Daily Beast*, August 2, 2011, http://www.thedailybeast.com/fbi-director-hoovers-dirty-files-excerpt-from-ronald-kesslers-the-secrets-of-the-fbi.

[xcii] Gary Allen, *The Rockefeller File* (New York: ’76 Press, 1976), https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/rockefeller_file/rockefeller.htm#Contents.

[xciii] Tyler Durden, “The True Legacy of David Rockefeller,” *ZeroHedge*, March 21, 2017, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2017-03-21/true-legacy-david-rockefeller.

[xciv] Anders, "Zbigniew Brzezinski: Evil Spirit of 5 US Presidents - And Biggest Threat to World Peace," *Euro-Med*, February 7, 2010, http://euro-med.dk/?p=13551.

[xcv] Kay Griggs, transcript of interview by Rick Strawcutter, 1998, http://hugequestions.com/Eric/DesperateWives/Desperate-Wives-1_transcript.html.

[xcvi] "Heinz Alfred (Henry) Kissinger: Over 40 Years of MK-Ultra Pimpin," *intheknow7's blog*, May 15, 2010, https://intheknow7.wordpress.com/2010/05/15/hk-mk-pimp/.

[xcvii] Wesman Todd Shaw, "Henry Kissinger - Architect of the New World Order," *Bibliotecapleyades*, November 12, 2012, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_kissinger04.htm.

[xcviii] Fred Branfman, "America Keeps Honoring One of its Worst Mass Murderers: Henry Kissinger," *Alternet*, April 16, 2013, http://www.alternet.org/news-amp-politics/america-keeps-honoring-one-its-worst-mass-murderers-henry-kissinger.

[xcix] Fritz Springmeier, "Merovingian Bloodline and the Black Nobility," *Bibliotecapleyades*, June 28, 2000, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_blacknobil07.htm.

[c] Dominic Selwood, "How German is the Queen?" *The Telegraph*, June 24, 2015, http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/queen-elizabeth-II/11693813/How-German-is-the-Queen.html.

[ci] Harry Mount, "Philip at a Nazi Funeral and the Day his Sister had Lunch with Hitler: TV Documentary Reopens Painful Chapter of Duke's Family Past," *Daily Mail*, July 20, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3167585/Philip-Nazi-funeral-day-sister-lunch-Hitler-TV-documentary-reopens-painful-chapter-duke-s-family-past.html.

[cii] Karina Urbach, "Former King Wanted England Bombed and an Anglo-German Alliance, Archives Reveal," *The Conversation*, June 8, 2015, http://theconversation.com/former-king-wanted-england-bombed-and-an-anglo-german-alliance-archives-reveal-42666.

[ciii] Anonymous Patriots, http://stateofthenation2012.com/?p=34965.

[civ] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies and their Power in the 20th Century*, Chapter 16 "The Black Nobility" (Grand Canary, Spain: Ewertverlag S.L., 1995), https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/secretsoc_20century/secretsoc_20century.htm#Contents.

[cv] "The Rothschilds are Jesuits," https://geopolitics.co/2015/04/08/the-rothschilds-are-jesuits/.

[cvi] "Knights of Malta, Pilgrim Society, etc.," https://www.scribd.com/doc/4952208/Knights-of-Malta-Pilgrim-Society-etc.

[cvii] David Livingstone, "The Round Table," *Conspiracy School*, http://www.conspiracyschool.com/round-table.

[cviii] John Coleman, *Conspirator's Hierarchy: The Story of the Committee of 300*, (Carson City, Nevada: Bridger House Publishers, 1992), https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_committee300_00.htm.

[cix] Terry Melanson, "The Council on Foreign Relations and the New World Order," *Conspiracy Archive*, December 21, 2013, http://www.conspiracyarchive.com/2013/12/21/the-council-on-foreign-relations-cfr-and-the-new-world-order/.

[cx] "The Vatican and the Jesuits," *Bibliotecapleyades*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/vatican/esp_vatican37.htm.

[cxi] Ben Aris and Duncan Campbell, "How Bush's Grandfather Helped Hitler's Rise to Power," *The Guardian*, September 25, 2004, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2004/sep/25/usa.secondworldwar.

[cxii] Anthony Tyler, "American Pedophilia: Prerequisite of a Wealthy Elitist," *The Last American Vagabond*, July 27, 2017, http://www.thelastamericanvagabond.com/conspiracy/american-pedophilia-prerequisite-wealthy-elitist/.

[cxiii] Cathy O'Brien, *Trance Formation of America* (Nashville: Reality Marketing, Inc., 1995) https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/transforusa/transformation09.htm#CHAPTER 15 - NO MORE BEATING AROUND THE BUSH.

[cxiv] Martin Hill, "Defense Contractor NBC Honors Ailing War Criminal George H.W. Bush with Freemasonic "33 photo" Propaganda Tribute*," LibertyFight.com,* December 27, 2012, http://libertyfight.com/2012/GHWBush_not_respectable_and_had_better_repent.html/.

[cxv] Joe Monoco, "Is George W. Bush a Homosexual? New Evidence Ties this into the Anthrax Murders," *Conspiracy Zone*, April 8, 2009, http://theconspiracyzone.podcastpeople.com/posts/22472.

[cxvi] Cathy O'Brien, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/transforusa/transformation11.htm#CHAPTER 25 - BUSH BABY.

[cxvii] Kevin Ryan, "War Crimes and 9/11 - Why Dick and Don Are Suspects," *Washington's Blog*, June 4, 2014,

http://www.washingtonsblog.com/2014/06/war-crimes-911-dick-don-suspects.html.

[cxviii] Cathy O’Brien, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/transforusa/transformation06.htm#CHAPTER 4 - THE MOST DANGEROUS GAME.

[cxix] Joachim Hagopian, http://themillenniumreport.com/2017/04/as-treasonous-bush-clinton-obama-pedo-cabal-dynasty-gets-exposed-desperate-elite-steps-up-war-against-humanity/.

[cxx] Robert Morrow and Roger Stone, “The MSM sure does not Want to Talk about Bill Clinton’s Rapes & Violent Sex Assaults or Hillary’s Criminal Terror Campaigns,” *Lew Rockwell*, January 6, 2016, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2016/01/roger-stone/clintons-criminals/.

[cxxi] Dan Bates, “The Cozy Relationship between Billionaire Jeffrey Epstein and Bill Clinton, who Flew in the Pedophile's Private Jet and once Praised his ‘Insights and Generosity,’ Detailed in New Book by James Patterson,” *Daily Mail*, October 6, 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3825882/The-cozy-relationship-billionaire-Jeffrey-Epstein-Bill-Clinton-flew-pedophile-s-private-jet-praised-insights-generosity-detailed-new-book-James-Patterson.html.

[cxxii] “Shocking Videos Surface of Sexual Deviant and Pedophile Joe Biden,” *Fury News*, December 26, 2016, http://www.fury.news/2016/12/watch-shocking-videos-surface-sexual-deviant-pedophile-joe-biden/.

[cxxiii] Cathy O’Brien, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/transforusa/transformation05.htm#CHAPTER 1 - MY INTRODUCTION TO HUMANITY.

[cxxiv] Cathy O’Brien, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/transforusa/transformation07.htm#CHAPTER 9 - RONALD REAGANS AMERICAN DREAM:A PANDORAS BOX OF NIGHTMARES.

[cxxv] “White House Call Boy Ring,” YouTube video, 1989, posted October 15, 2011, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=fxO1WbImphQ.

[cxxvi] “Movers and Shakers of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta: Dwight D. Eisenhower,” August 31, 2008, http://moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.co.id/2008/08/dwight-d-eisenhower.html.

[cxxvii] Uri Dowbenko, 1999, “Mind Control: The Ultimate Terror,” review of *Thanks for the Memories: The Memories of Bob Hope and Henry Kissinger’s Mind-Controlled Sex Slave* by Brice Taylor, *Educate Yourself*,

http://educate-yourself.org/mc/nwomcbturireview.shtml.

[cxxviii] "Presidents, Popes, Queen, Elite Illuminati Pedophilia and Child Sacrifice," *Millennium Report*, December 28, 2016, http://themillenniumreport.com/2016/12/presidents-popes-queen-elite-illuminati-pedophilia-and-child-sacrifice/.

[cxxix] Joachim Hagopian, "One World Governance and the Council on Foreign Relations: 'We Shall have World Government… by Conquest or Consent,'" *Global Research*, August 18, 2017, http://www.globalresearch.ca/one-world-governance-and-the-council-on-foreign-relations-we-shall-have-world-government-by-conquest-or-consent/5541363.

[cxxx] "Abstract on Who Really Runs and Controls All," Towards A Better Understanding (*TABU* blogsite), November 3, 2015, https://tabublog.com/2015/11/03/abstact-on-who-really-runs-and-controls-all/.

[cxxxi] "Initial Membership List of the Knights of Malta," *biblebelievers.org*, http://www.biblebelievers.org.au/kmlst1.htm.

[cxxxii] Dan Eden, "List of Politicians with Israeli Dual Citizenship," *Facebook*, June 22, 2011, https://www.facebook.com/notes/we-are-all-vittorio-arrigoni/list-of-politicians-with-israeli-dual-citizenship-/175479365845092/.

[cxxxiii] "The Conspiracy to Rule the World - An Interactive History, Part Two: #29 The Council on Foreign Relations," *Wake up New Zealand*, http://www.wakeupkiwi.com/The-Conspiracy-to-Rule-the-World-2.shtml#CFR.

[cxxxiv] Daniel Estulin, """Breaking the Silence: Bilderberg Exposed," *Bibliotecapleyades*, September 2005, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_bilderberg_10.htm.

[cxxxv] Alan Lamont, "Invisible Empire: Knights of Malta, Jesuit Papacy and 9/11," *The Jesuit Vatican New World Order*, July 14, 2012, http://vaticannewworldorder.blogspot.co.id/2012/07/invisible-empire-knights-of-malta.html.

[cxxxvi] Joel van der Reijden, "Supranational Society: Master List of 1,300 NGO's and the Top 400 People in Them," *Globalization and Covert Politics*, August 9, 2005, https://isgp-studies.com/ngo-list-foundations-and-think-tanks-worldwide.

[cxxxvii] "Knights of Malta Facebook," *Archive.org*, https://archive.org/stream/KnightsOfMaltaFacebook/Knights-of-Malta-Facebook#page/n251/mode/2up.

[cxxxviii] Cora Currier, "Charting the Cozy Connections between JP Morgan and the Senate Banking Committee," *Pro Publica*, June 13, 2012, https://www.propublica.org/article/charting-the-cozy-connections-between-jp-morgan-and-the-senate-banking-comm.

[cxxxix] "Movers and Shakers of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta: Mel Martinez," September 1, 2008, http://moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.co.id/2008/09/mel-martnez.html.

[cxl] "The Masonic Grades of The Knight of Malta and The Knight Templar are the Rosicrucian Upper-Degrees of Freemasonry," *Hidden Codes* (blog site), http://www.hiddencodes.com/malta.htm.

[cxli] "Hall of Honor Portrait Gallery," *The Scottish Rite of Freemasonry*, https://scottishrite.org/development/giving/donor-recognition/hall-of-honor/hall-of-honor-portrait-gallery/#nogo.

[cxlii] "The Connection with Secret Societies," *The Web Matrix* (blog site), http://thewebmatrix.net/disclosure/secretsocieties.html.

[cxliii] "Movers and Shakers of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta: Joseph Kennedy, Sr.," http://moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.co.id/2008/08/joseph-kennedy-sr.html.

[cxliv] "U.S Presidents & Leaders Vowed & Pledged to Roman Catholic Knights of Malta (SMOM)," Towards A Better Understanding (*TABU* blogsite), https://tabublog.com/2015/12/09/u-s-presidents-leaders-vowed-pledged-to-roman-catholic-knights-of-malta-smom/.

[cxlv] "Movers and Shakers of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta: Rick Santorum, http://moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.co.id/2008/09/rick-santorum.html,

[cxlvi] "Knights of Malta, Pilgrim Society, etc.," https://www.scribd.com/doc/4952208/Knights-of-Malta-Pilgrim-Society-etc.

[cxlvii] "Knights of Malta, Pilgrim Society, etc.," https://www.scribd.com/doc/4952208/Knights-of-Malta-Pilgrim-Society-etc.

[cxlviii] Anonymous Patriots, http://stateofthenation2012.com/?p=34965.

[cxlix] David G. Guyatt, "Former CIA/DIA Deep-Cover Agent "Chip" Tatum Reveals More Disturbing Details about High-Level Control of Global Drug-Running and Money-Laundering Operations, Part 2," *Nexus Magazine*, June-July 1997, http://www.voxfux.com/features/cia_bush_drug_trafficking_murder_pt1.html.

[cl] "U.S Presidents & Leaders Vowed & Pledged to Roman Catholic Knights of Malta (SMOM)," Towards A Better Understanding (*TABU* blogsite), https://tabublog.com/2015/12/09/u-s-presidents-leaders-vowed-pledged-to-roman-catholic-knights-of-malta-smom/.

[cli] Dan Eden, https://www.facebook.com/notes/we-are-all-vittorio-arrigoni/list-of-politicians-with-israeli-dual-citizenship-/175479365845092/.

[clii] "Knights of Malta, Pilgrim Society, etc.," https://www.scribd.com/doc/4952208/Knights-of-Malta-Pilgrim-Society-etc.

[cliii] Alan Lamont, "Papal Orders of Knighthood," *The Jesuit Vatican New World Order*, October 24, 2012, http://vaticannewworldorder.blogspot.co.id/2012/10/papal-orders-of-knighthood-history-of.html.

[cliv] "LBJ: Kennedy White House Killed U.S. Ally," *World New Daily*, September 23, 2003, http://www.wnd.com/2003/09/20931/.

[clv] Mark Ames, "The Really Creepy People behind the Libertarian-Inspired Billionaire Sea Castles," *AlterNet*, June 1, 2010, http://www.alternet.org/story/147058/the_really_creepy_people_behind_the_libertarian-inspired_billionaire_sea_castles.

[clvi] "Knights of Malta, Pilgrim Society, etc.," https://www.scribd.com/doc/4952208/Knights-of-Malta-Pilgrim-Society-etc.

[clvii] Frank Miniter, "How Bloomberg Censored John Lott," *America's 1st Freedom* (blog site), September 5, 2016, https://www.americas1stfreedom.org/articles/2016/9/5/how-bloomberg-censored-john-lott/.

[clviii] Kevin Ryan, A Closer Look at 9/11 Legend Rudy Giuliani," *Washington's Blog*, November 26, 2016, http://www.washingtonsblog.com/2016/11/giuliani.html.

[clix] "Rudy Giuliani in Drag Smooching Donald Trump," YouTube video, 2000, 0:46, posted April 14, 2006, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=4IrE6FMpai8.

[clx] Joe Wright, "10 Ways to Spot a False Flag Mass Shooting," *Activist Post*, September 10, 2015, http://www.activistpost.com/2015/09/10-ways-to-spot-a-false-flag-mass-shooting.html.

[clxi] Carol Glatz, "Gun Control: Church Firmly, Quietly Opposes Firearms for Civilians," *National Catholic Reporter*, January 14, 2011, https://www.ncronline.org/news/justice/gun-control-church-firmly-quietly-opposes-firearms-civilians.

[clxii] Harriet Agerholm, "Map Shows Where President Barack Obama Dropped 20,000 Bombs," *Independent*, January 19, 2017, http://www.independent.co.uk/news/world/americas/us-president-barack-obama-bomb-map-drone-wars-strikes-20000-pakistan-middle-east-afghanistan-a7534851.html.

[clxiii] Jon Phelps, "The 'Black' Pope: The Most Powerful Man in the World?" transcript of interview by Rick Martin, *whale*, April 15, 2000, http://www.whale.to/b/pope.html.

[clxiv] "Blackwater – Knights of Malta in Iraq," *Bibliotecapleyades*, October 1, 2007, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_blackwater12.htm.

[clxv] Harold Jackson, "Alexander Haig Obituary," *The Guardian*, February 20, 2010, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2010/feb/20/alexander-haig-obituary.

[clxvi] Sandy Simpson, "General Jerry Boykin and His Ties to the Knights of Malta and Rick Joyner," *Deceptioninthechurch.com* (blog site), July 21, 2011, http://www.deceptioninthechurch.com/boykin.html.

[clxvii] Stephen C. Webster, "High Ranking Members of US Military Part of 'Knights of Malta,' 'Opes Dei.' Reporter Claims," *Raw Story*, January 21, 2011, http://www.rawstory.com/2011/01/highranking-members-military-part-knights-malta-opus-dei-reporter-claims/.

[clxviii] Joachim Hagopian, *Don't Let the Bastards Getch Down*, 2012, http://www.redredsea.net/westpointhagopian/index.html.

[clxix] Rob Hilson, "The Pope is the World's Defensive Coordinator," *Vatican New World Order*, May 10, 2012, http://vaticannewworldorder.blogspot.co.id/2012/05/pope-is-worlds-defensive-coordinator-by.html.

[clxx] "Blackwater – Knights of Malta in Iraq," https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_blackwater12.htm.

[clxxi] Venturino Giorgio Venturini, "Heinz Alfred 'Henry' Kissinger Was a Courtier to Atrocity," *Counter Currents*, August 5, 2017, http://www.countercurrents.org/2017/08/05/heinz-alfred-henry-kissinger-was-a-courtier-to-atrocity/.

[clxxii] Greg Grandin, "Plumbing for Pinochet," *The Nation*, January 3, 2002, https://www.thenation.com/article/plumping-pinochet/.

[clxxiii] "Blackwater – Knights of Malta in Iraq," https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_blackwater12.htm.

[clxxiv] "Knights of Malta, Pilgrim Society, etc.," https://www.scribd.com/doc/4952208/Knights-of-Malta-Pilgrim-Society-etc.

[clxxv] Alan Lamont, Ptolemaic Papal Bloodlines," *Vatican New World Order*, December 21, 2011, http://vaticannewworldorder.blogspot.co.id/2011/12/ptolemaic-papal-bloodlines-orsini_21.html.

[clxxvi] Leuren Moret, "The Story of Fidel Castro and the Jesuits Connection" interviewed by Desiree Rover, YouTube video, September 12, 2014, 13:27, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=RRfZijo-b90.

[clxxvii] Jonathon Kandell, “Kurt Waldheim Dies at 88; ex-UN Chief Hid Nazi Past,” *The New York Times*, June 14, 2007, http://www.nytimes.com/2007/06/14/world/europe/14iht-waldheim.3.6141106.html.

[clxxviii] Mike James, “Alleged Pedophiles at Helm of Britain’s War Machine, Massive Cover-up,” *Propaganda Matrix*, http://www.propagandamatrix.com/alleged_pedophiles.html.

[clxxix] Anonymous Patriots, http://stateofthenation2012.com/?p=34965.

[clxxx] Fritz Springmeier, “Merovingian Bloodline and the Black Nobility,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, June 28, 2000, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_blacknobil07.htm.

[clxxxi] Anonymous Patriots, http://stateofthenation2012.com/?p=34965.

[clxxxii] Rivkah Lmbert Adler, “Will God or the Messiah Build the Third Holy Temple?” *Breaking Israel News*, July 27, 2015, https://www.breakingisraelnews.com/45847/will-god-or-the-messiah-build-the-third-holy-temple/#vWmjghPVRm0rChvs.97.

[clxxxiii] Michael Rezendies, “’Spotlight’ Journalists Didn’t Foresee Impact of Church Investigation,” *Boston Globe*, November 20, 2015, https://www.bostonglobe.com/metro/2015/11/20/journalists-who-broke-church-sex-abuse-scandal-could-not-have-foreseen-impact/iIMZJD8RfLZXxKBVqh8h4K/story.html.

[clxxxiv] Andrew Pulver, “How Did Spotlight Beat the Revenant to the Biggest Oscar Win of All,” *The Guardian*, February 29, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/film/2016/feb/29/how-did-spotlight-beat-the-revenant-to-the-biggest-oscar-win-of-all.

[clxxxv] “Movers and Shakers of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta: Cardinal Francis Spellman,” http://moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.co.id/2008/08/francis-spellman.html.

[clxxxvi] Michelangelo Signorile, “Cardinal Spellman’s Dark Legacy,” *nypress.com*, May 7, 2002, http://www.nypress.com/cardinal-spellmans-dark-legacy/.

[clxxxvii] David Livingstone, “The Vatican and the O.T.O.,” *Conspiracy School*, December 20, 2015, http://www.conspiracyschool.com/blog/vatican-and-oto.

[clxxxviii] Brian David Andersen, “The Jesuit Conspiracy,” *henry makow.com*, April 21, 2008, https://www.henrymakow.com/hi_henry_how_many_divorced.html.

[clxxxix] Fiona Barnett, “Bohemian Grove, Pedo Hunting Parties and Rent Boy Ranch,” *PedophilesDownUnder.com*, February 22, 2016, https://pedophilesdownunder.com/tagThe Complete History of Monsanto: /justice-antonin-scalia/.

[cxc] Betty Clermont, “Opus Dei Influence Rises to the Top in the Vatican,” *Daily Kos*, April 6, 2014, https://www.dailykos.com/stories/2014/4/6/1290024/-Opus-Dei-Influence-Rises-to-the-Top-in-the-Vatican .

[cxci] Jon Rappoport, “Another Look at Supreme Court Justice Scalia’s Death,” *Jon Rappoport’s Blog*, https://jonrappoport.wordpress.com/2017/01/03/another-look-at-supreme-court-justice-scalias-death/.

[cxcii] “The Vatican and the Jesuits,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/vatican/esp_vatican37.htm.

[cxciii] Charles Savoie, “The Silver Stealers: An Initiative to Protect Private Property Rights of American Citizens, Part 5” *silverbearcafe.com*, http://www.silverbearcafe.com/private/01.11/silverstealers-6.html.

[cxciv] Bill Hughes, *The Secret Terrorists* (Albany, Oregon: Truth Triumphant, 2002), Chapter 8, http://www.seawaves.us/na/web4/secretterrorists.html#CHAPTER_8_.

[cxcv] Movers and Shakers of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta: Barron Hilton,” http://moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.co.id/2008/08/william-barron-hilton.html.

[cxcvi] Movers and Shakers of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta: Conrad Hilton,” http://moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.co.id/2008/09/conrad-n-hilton.html.

[cxcvii] E. Hanzai, “The Complete History of Monsanto, ‘The World’s Most Evil Corporation,’” *Waking Times*, June 20, 2014, http://www.wakingtimes.com/2014/06/20/complete-history-monsanto-worlds-evil-corporation/.

[cxcviii] Jon Eric Phelps, “A Summary of the Book: ‘Vatican Assassins’ Wounded in the House of my Friends,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/vatican/esp_vatican05.htm#inicio.

[cxcix] Katherine Frisk, “Scalia, the Illuminati, the Jesuits and the Vatican,” *Veterans Today*, February 29, 2016, http://www.veteranstoday.com/2016/02/29/scalia-the-illuminati-the-jesuits-and-the-vatican/.

[cc] Ben Johnson, “Video: Ted Turner Reduce Population Size by Five Billion People,” *Life Site News*, June 7, 2012, https://www.lifesitenews.com/news/video-ted-turner-reduce-population-by-five-billion-people.

[cci] “The Rise and Weakness of the Order of Malta,” *The Unhived Mind*, September 13, 2013, http://theunhivedmind.com/UHM/the-rise-and-weakness-of-the-order-of-malta/.

[ccii] Movers and Shakers of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta: William F. Buckley,” http://moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.co.id/2008/08/william-f-buckley-jr.html.

[cciii] Charlie Rose, YouTube interview by Luke Rudkowski, “PBS Charlie Rose Questioned Attending Bilderberg Meetings: USA 2008, Spain 2010, Switzerland 2011,” 3:02, posted on September 27, 2012, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=IsfmOguTNyU.

[cciv] “Charlie Rose The Week,” *PBS*, http://www.pbs.org/charlierosetheweek/about/.

[ccv] “Knights of Malta, Pilgrim Society, etc.,” https://www.scribd.com/doc/4952208/Knights-of-Malta-Pilgrim-Society-etc.

[ccvi] Alan Lamont, “Knights of Malta,” *Vatican New World Order*, May 12, 2012, http://vaticannewworldorder.blogspot.co.id/2012/05/knights-of-malta-initial-membership.html.

[ccvii] Zen Gardner, “Bob Hope – Illuminati Pimp,” *henrymakow.com*, March 11, 2016, https://www.henrymakow.com/bob_hope_-_uso_mind_control_se.html.

[ccviii] Movers and Shakers of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta: Bob Hope,” http://moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.co.id/2008/09/bob-hope.html.

[ccix] David Icke, “Knight of Malta Jimmy Savile Accused of being a Sexual Predator by Five Women who Claim he Abused Them when They were Underage Girls,” *David Icke.com*, October 1, 2012, https://www.davidicke.com/article/178504/73219-knight-of-malta-jimmy-savile-accused-of-being-a-sexual-predator-by-five-women-who-claim-he-abused-them-when-they-were-underage-schoolgirls.

[ccx] Alan Lamont, “The Sovereign Military Order of Malta,” *Vatican New World Order*, June 5, 2012, http://vaticannewworldorder.blogspot.co.id/2012/06/sovereign-military-order-of-malta-also.html.

[ccxi] “Rick Joyner and the Knights of Malta,” *pawcreek.org* (blog site), October 26, 2009, http://www.pawcreek.org/rick-joyner-knights-malta/.

[ccxii] “Initial List of the Knights of Malta,” *biblebelievers.org* (blog site), https://www.biblebelievers.org.au/kmlst1.htm.

[ccxiii] Joachim Hagopian,”Authoritarian control and Mass Murder in America the Hegelian Dialectic Way,” *Lew Rockwell*, June 16, 2016, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2016/06/joachim-hagopian/power-elite-run-us/.

[ccxiv] Movers and Shakers of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta: Nelson Mandela,” http://moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.co.id/2008/09/nelson-mandela.html.

[ccxv] Knights of Malta Jesuits Plans for World Takeover,” Towards A Better Understanding (*TABU* blog site), November 26, 2015,

https://tabublog.com/2015/11/26/knights-of-malta-jesuits-plans-for-world-takeover-world/.

[ccxvi] “Initial List of the Knights of Malta,” *biblebelievers.org* (blog site), https://www.biblebelievers.org.au/kmlst1.htm.

[ccxvii] “Ron Paul: Race, Ritual and Scottish Rite,” *thesecretsun.blogspot.com*, http://secretsun.blogspot.co.id/2012/01/ron-paul-race-ritual-and-scottish-rite.html.

[ccxviii] “Blackwater - Knights of Malta in Iraq,” https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_blackwater12.htm.

[ccxix] Movers and Shakers of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta: Pat Buchanan,” http://moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.co.id/2008/08/pat-buchanan.html.

[ccxx] “Initial List of the Knights of Malta,” *biblebelievers.org* (blog site), https://www.biblebelievers.org.au/kmlst1.htm.

[ccxxi] “Vatican Jesuits Control Both Sides of the American –Led ‘War on Terror,’” *seawapa.org* (blog site), http://seawapa.org/js/terror.html.

[ccxxii] “Who Is Alex Jones?” *spirituallysmart.com* (blog site), http://www.spirituallysmart.com/Jones-CIA.htm.

[ccxxiii] “Initial List of the Knights of Malta,” *biblebelievers.org* (blog site), https://www.biblebelievers.org.au/kmlst1.htm.

[ccxxiv] https://www.infowars.com/.

[ccxxv] “Peculiar 900-Year Old Order of the Knights of Malta Celebrates Anniversary with Vatican Mass,” *Associated Press*, February 10, 2013, https://www.infowars.com/peculiar-900-year-old-order-of-the-knights-of-malta-celebrates-anniversary-with-vatican-mass/.

[ccxxvi] “The Oath of the Knights of Columbus, Knights of Malta and Rhodes Scholars is Based on the Oath of the Jesuits,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_malta02.htm.

[ccxxvii] Timothy Youngblood, “The Society of Jesus (The Jesuit Oath),” *masters-table.org* (blog site), http://www.masters-table.org/forinfo/jesuit%20oath.htm.

[ccxxviii] “The Connection with Secret Societies,” *thewebmatrix.net* (blog site), http://thewebmatrix.net/disclosure/secretsocieties.html.

[ccxxix] “The Pope’s Knights,” *amazingdiscoveries.org* (blog site), http://amazingdiscoveries.org/S-deception-Pope_Malta_Queen.

[ccxxx] Jeremy James, “Freemasonry and the British Monarchy: Why the Queen of England Pretends to be a Christian,” *scribd.com*, May 9, 2012,

https://www.scribd.com/doc/93049534/Freemasonry-the-British-Monarchy-and-Queen-Elizabeth-II.

[ccxxxi] Prince Philip quotes, “Did I Say That?” *The Guardian*, June 21, 2009, https://www.theguardian.com/lifeandstyle/2009/jun/21/quotes-by-prince-philip.

[ccxxxii] Michael Hichborn, “’Satan must Reign in the Vatican, The Pope will be His Slave,’” *Lepanto Institute*, October 6, 2015, http://www.lepantoinstitute.org/uncategorized/satan-must-reign-in-the-vatican-the-pope-will-be-his-slave/.

[ccxxxiii] David Livingstone, “The Vatican and the O.T.O.,” *Conspiracy School*, December 20, 2015, http://www.conspiracyschool.com/blog/vatican-and-oto.

[ccxxxiv] “Pope Francis Hints that he may not be around in 2019,” *Crux*, April 9, 2017, https://cruxnow.com/vatican/2017/04/09/pope-francis-hints-may-not-around-2019/.

[ccxxxv] “Pope Francis will be the last Pontiff Irish St. Malachy Predicted,” *Irish Central*, May 3, 2017, https://www.irishcentral.com/roots/history/st-malachy-predicted-pope-benedicts-successor-will-be-last-pope-190715001-237789421.

[ccxxxvi] Michael Snyder, “12 Times Pope Francis has Openly Promoted a One World Religion or a New World Order,” *InfoWars*, August 1, 2016, https://www.infowars.com/12-times-pope-francis-has-openly-promoted-a-one-world-religion-or-a-new-world-order/.

[ccxxxvii] Christina Sarich, “The Pope Orders Purge of Freemasons from Knights of Malta,” *The Mind Unleashed*, January 25, 2017, http://themindunleashed.com/2017/01/pope-orders-purge-freemasons-knights-malta.html.

[ccxxxviii] Harriet Sherwood, “Vatican Condom Row: Pope Prevails as Knights of Malta Chief Resigns,” *The Guardian*, January 25, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2017/jan/25/vatican-condom-row-pope-prevails-as-knights-of-malta-chief-resigns.

[ccxxxix] “Knights Templars Saga: From Templars to Freemasonry,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/templars/knights_templars02.htm.

[ccxl] “The Illuminati: Modern Manifestation of the Ancient Cult of Evil,” *Overlords of Chaos* (blog site), http://www.overlordsofchaos.com/html/secret_societies__ancient_luci.html.

[ccxli] David Guyatt, “Holy Smoke and Mirrors: The Vatican Conspiracy,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, August-September 2000, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/vatican/esp_vatican16.htm.

[ccxlii] Paul L. Williams, *Operation Gladio: The Unholy Alliance between the Vatican, the CIA and the Mafia* (Amherst, New York: Prometheus Books, 2015), https://www.docdroid.net/O8RyvNp/fgdg.pdf.

[ccxliii] “Pope Paul I: Murder at the Vatican,” *theunredacted.com*, March 25, 2016, https://theunredacted.com/pope-john-paul-1-murder-at-the-vatican/.

[ccxliv] Tom Secker, “Gladio B: The Origins of NATO’s Secret Islamic Terrorist Proxies,” *wideshut.co.uk*, November 3, 2013, http://wideshut.co.uk/gladio-b-the-origins-of-natos-secret-islamic-terrorist-proxies/.

[ccxlv] Kalee Brown, “Dutch Financial Whistleblower Admits he was Forced to Sacrifice Children at Elite Parties,” *Collective Evolution*, April 29, 2017, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2017/04/29/dutch-financial-whistleblower-admits-he-was-forced-to-sacrifice-children-at-elite-parties/.

[ccxlvi] Baxter Dmitry, “Ronald Bernard, Dutch Banker who Exposed Illuminati, Found Dead,” News Punch, August 24, 2017, https://newspunch.com/dutch-banker-illuminati-dead/.

[ccxlvii] “Opus Dei and the War on Birth Control: Neo-fascism within the Catholic Church,” *Alternet*, February 20, 2012, http://www.alternet.org/newsandviews/article/804698/opus_dei_and_the_war_on_birth_control%3A_neofascism_within_the_catholic_church/.

[ccxlviii] Frank Morales, “Opus Dei: The Vatican-Pentagon Connection,” blog site, https://isis117528.wordpress.com/opus-dei-the-vatican-pentagon-connection-how-opus-dei-controls-the-usa-the-multinational-corporations-the-vatican-swiss-banks/.

[ccxlix] Paul David Collins, “The Kunz Murder,” *Conspiracy Archive*, March 31, 2008, http://www.conspiracyarchive.com/2015/01/17/the-deep-politics-of-god-revisited/.

[ccl] John Martin, “Leopards in the Temple: Opus Dei, Escriva, and John Paul’s Rome,” *The Remnant Newspaper*, June 30, 2002, http://www.odan.org/media_leopards_in_the_temple.htm.

[ccli] Book review, Robert Hutchinson, *Opus Dei: Their Kingdom Come* (London: Transworld/Doubleday, 1997), *Irish Resistance Books*, http://www.irishresistancebooks.com/reviews/opusdei.htm.

[cclii] Frank Morales, https://isis117528.wordpress.com/opus-dei-the-vatican-pentagon-connection-how-opus-dei-controls-the-usa-the-multinational-corporations-the-vatican-swiss-banks/.

[ccliii] Sharon Clasen, “How Opus Dei is Cult-Like,” *Opus Dei Awareness Network*, http://www.odan.org/tw_how_opus_dei_is_cult_like.htm.

[ccliv] Matthew Fox, “The Dark Legacy of Pope Benedict XVI,” *Huffington Post*, April 22, 2013, http://www.huffingtonpost.com/matthew-fox/the-dark-legacy-of-pope-benedict-xvi_b_2720313.html.

[cclv] Lee Penn, “Opus Dei and the DaVinci Code – Part II,” *SCP Journal*, http://www.scp-inc.org/publications/journals/J2902/opus2.php.

[cclvi] “Le Cercle: Puppetmasters,” *VISUP* (blog site), May 29, 2016, http://visupview.blogspot.co.id/search?q=Le+Cercle%3A+Puppetmasters+.

[cclvii] “Profile of Mr. Prescott S. Bush, Jr.,” *sourcewatch.org*, http://www.sourcewatch.org/index.php/Prescott_Sheldon_Bush,_Jr..

[cclviii] Paul David Collins, http://www.conspiracyarchive.com/2015/01/17/the-deep-politics-of-god-revisited/.

[cclix] “Group Watch: Knights of Malta,” *Vox News*, November 1991, http://www.voxfux.com/features/knights_of_malta_facts.html.

[cclx] Matthew Phelan, “Seymour Hersh… and the Men who Want him Committed,” *whowhatwhy.org*, February 23, 2011, https://whowhatwhy.org/2011/02/23/pulitzer-prize-winner-seymour-hersh-and-the-men-who-want-him-committed/.

[cclxi] Andrew W. Griffin, “Sandy Hook: Links to AmeriCares, Knights of Malta?” *Red Dirt Report*, January 21, 2013, http://www.reddirtreport.com/dust-devil-dreams/sandy-hook-links-americares-knights-malta.

[cclxii] Jim Fetzer and Mike Palecek (Eds.), *Nobody Died at Sandy Hook* (Moon Rock Books, 2015), www.rense.com/general96/NobodyDiedAtSandyHook_final.pdf

[cclxiii] Eric Jewell, “The Unholy Alliance – Christianity and the NWO, Part 1,” *Rense.com*, February 25, 2002, http://www.rense.com/general20/unholy.htm.

[cclxiv] “Movers and Shakers of the Sovereign Military Order of the Knights of Malta: J. Peter Grace,” http://moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.co.id/2008/08/j-peter-grace.html.

[cclxv] Paul David Collins, http://www.conspiracyarchive.com/2015/01/17/the-deep-politics-of-god-revisited/.

[cclxvi] John Stauber and Sheldon Rampton, “How PR Sold the War in the Persian Gulf,” in *Lies, Damn Lies in the Public Relations* (Monroe, Maine: Common Courage Press, 1995), *PR Watch*, http://www.prwatch.org/books/tsigfy10.html.

[cclxvii] Paul David Collins, http://www.conspiracyarchive.com/2015/01/17/the-deep-politics-of-god-revisited/.

[cclxviii] Paul David Collins, “The Ghost of Roy Cohn,” *Conspiracy Archives*, August 24, 2014, http://www.conspiracyarchive.com/2014/08/24/the-ghost-of-roy-cohn/.

[cclxix] Olivia Nuzzi, “Trump’s Mobbed up, McCarthyite Mentor Roy Cohn,” *Daily Beast*, July 23, 2015, http://www.thedailybeast.com/trumps-mobbed-up-mccarthyite-mentor-roy-cohn.

[cclxx] Paul David Collins, http://www.conspiracyarchive.com/2015/01/17/the-deep-politics-of-god-revisited/.

[cclxxi] “The Process: A Strange and Terrible Journey, Part 1,” *VISUP* (blog site), May 25, 2013, http://visupview.blogspot.co.id/2013/05/the-process-strange-and-terrible.html.

[cclxxii] Paul David Collins, http://www.conspiracyarchive.com/2015/01/17/the-deep-politics-of-god-revisited/.

[cclxxiii] Chuck Nowlen and Tim McLaughlin, “Exorcist: Vengeful Satanists Killed Kunz,” *The Capital Times*, April 17, 1998, http://host.madison.com/archives/topics/crime-and-courts/alfred-kunz/exorcist-vengeful-satanists-killed-kunz/article_f9d4d0f8-693e-11e1-96a4-0019bb2963f4.html.

[cclxxiv] Paul David Collins, http://www.conspiracyarchive.com/2015/01/17/the-deep-politics-of-god-revisited/.

[cclxxv] “The Secret Life of J. Edgar Hoover,” *The Zone of Truth* (a blog site), http://nstarzone.com/HOOVER.html.

[cclxxvi] “Huge Exclusive Interview with DHS Insider,” *The International Reporter*, February 17, 2017, https://theinternationalreporter.org/2017/02/17/pizzagate-upates-17th-february/.

[cclxxvii] Martin Dillon, excerpt from *The Assassination of Robert Maxwell: Israel’s Superspy* (London: Robson Books Ltd., 2003), http://www.martindillon.net/work4.htm.

[cclxxviii] Ken Silverstein, “The Salacious Ammo that even Donald Trump Won’t Use in a Fight against Hillary Clinton,” *Vice News*, January 30, 2016, https://news.vice.com/article/the-salacious-ammo-even-donald-trump-wont-use-in-a-fight-against-hillary-clinton-bill-clinton.

[cclxxix] Paul David Collins, http://www.conspiracyarchive.com/2015/01/17/the-deep-politics-of-god-revisited/.

[cclxxx] Ginger Gibson, “Convicted Felon Jack Abramoff Registers to Return to Lobbying,” *Reuters/US News and World Report*, June 23, 2017, https://www.usnews.com/news/us/articles/2017-06-23/convicted-felon-jack-abramoff-registers-to-return-to-lobbying.

[cclxxxi] Leah Gillis, “Will D.C. Madam’s Infamous ‘Little Black Book’ Emerge?” *whowhatwhy.org*, February 12, 2016, https://whowhatwhy.org/2016/02/12/22242/.

[cclxxxii] “Bush Fired US Attorneys to Cover up D.C. Pedophile Ring,” *Common Sense Evaluation*, March 18, 2017, http://www.commonsenseevaluation.com/2017/03/18/bush-fired-u-s-attorneys-to-cover-up-d-c-pedophile-ring/#sthash.wEW3rm2G.7L1FV2sZ.dpbs.

[cclxxxiii] Niles Lathem, “Sick New Foley Emails; Had Virtual Sex with Teen between Votes,” New York Post, October 4, 2006, http://nypost.com/2006/10/04/sick-new-foley-e-mails-had-virtual-sex-with-teen-between-votes/.

[cclxxxiv] Carl Herman, “All-Time Most Ridiculous ‘Crisis Actor’: President Bush’s Gay Male Prostitute, Jeff Gannon, Acting as White House ‘Objective Professional Media’ to Pimp US Wars of Aggression,” *Washington’s Blog*, December 20, 2015, http://www.washingtonsblog.com/2015/12/time-ridiculous-crisis-actor-president-bushs-gay-male-prostitute-jeff-gannon-acting-white-house-objective-professional-media-pimp-us-wars.html.

[cclxxxv] Charlene Fassa, “Noreen Gosch Speaks about - Jeff Gannon, Johnny Gosch and the Attempted Theft of her Book ’Why Johnny Can’t Come Home,’” *Rense.com*, August 18, 2005, http://www.rense.com/general67/gannn.htm.

[cclxxxvi] Paul M. Rodriguez and George Archibald, “Homosexual Prostitution Inquiry Ensnares VIPs with Reagan, Bush: ‘Call Boys’ Took Midnight Tour of White House,” *The Washington Times/Want to Know Info*, June 29, 1989, https://www.wanttoknow.info/890629washingtontimesfranklin.

[cclxxxvii] Joachim Hagopian, “Lt. Colonel Michael Aquino, MK Ultra/Monarch Mind Control Programs and Pedophilia in the Military,” *American Empire Exposed* (a blog site), May 28, 2017, http://empireexposed.blogspot.co.id/2017/05/lt-colonel-michael-aquino-mk_28.html.

[cclxxxviii] Paul David Collins, http://www.conspiracyarchive.com/2015/01/17/the-deep-politics-of-god-revisited/.

[cclxxxix] Stew Webb, “AIPAC and Abramoff Operated Child Sex Blackmail Ring,” *stewwebb.com* (a blog site), February 3, 2014, http://www.stewwebb.com/2014/02/03/aipac-and-abramoff-operated-child-sex-blackmail-ring/.

[ccxc] Israel Shahak, “’Greater Israel’: The Zionist Plan for the Middle East,” Global Research, March 3, 2013, http://www.globalresearch.ca/greater-israel-the-zionist-plan-for-the-middle-east/5324815.

[ccxci] Dengre, “1999 Teen Sex Scandal: Hastert & the GOP vs. ABC News & Brian Ross Update,” *Daily Kos*, October 6, 2006, 1999 Teen Sex Scandal:

Hastert & the GOP vs. ABC ... - Daily Kos.

[ccxcii] Selwyn Duke, “Dennis Hastert, who Abused Teenage Boys, is Just Tip of the Iceberg,” *The New American*, April 28, 2016, https://www.thenewamerican.com/usnews/crime/item/23079-dennis-hastert-who-abused-teenage-boys-is-just-tip-of-iceberg.

[ccxciii] Paul David Collins, http://www.conspiracyarchive.com/2015/01/17/the-deep-politics-of-god-revisited/.

[ccxciv] Alex Hannaford, “What Happened in Colonia? Inside the Terrifying Nazi Cult that Inspired Emma Watson’s New Film,” The Telegraph, July 2, 2016, http://www.telegraph.co.uk/films/2016/07/01/what-happened-in-colonia-inside-the-terrifying-nazi-cult-that-in/.

[ccxcv] Phil Davison, “Paul Schafer: Nazi Colonel who Established an Anti-Semitic Colony in Chile after the War,” *Independent*, May 23, 2010, http://www.independent.co.uk/news/obituaries/paul-sch-fer-nazi-colonel-who-established-an-anti-semitic-colony-in-chile-after-the-war-1981014.html.

[ccxcvi] “I Found the Devil in Colonia Dignidad,” *taboodada.wordpress.com* (a blog site), August 6, 2012, https://taboodada.wordpress.com/2012/08/06/633/.

[ccxcvii] Becky Branford, “Secrets of Ex-Nazi’s Chilean Fiefdom,” *BBC News*, March 11, 2005, http://news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/4340591.stm.

[ccxcviii] “Nazis Trained and Supported Chile’s Operation Condor Activities,” *telesur*, December 17, 2016, http://www.telesurtv.net/english/news/Nazis-Trained-and-Supported-Chiles-Operation-Condor-Activities-20161217-0004.html.

[ccxcix] “Kissinger and Chile: The Declassified Record,” The National Security Archive, http://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB437/.

[ccc] Lauren McMah, “Inside Chile’s Bizarre Nazi Torture Cult,” *news.com.au*, August 3, 2016, http://www.news.com.au/travel/world-travel/south-america/inside-chiles-bizarre-nazi-torture-cult/news-story/42aa14930c107a5e13a6dded88a242c6.

[ccci] John Simkin, “Famous Crimes: Michael V. Townley,” *Spartacus Educational*, September 1997, http://spartacus-educational.com/JFKtownleyM.htm.

[cccii] Robert Parry, “When the Terrorists were ‘Our Guys,’” *Consortium News*, February 22, 2008, http://www.consortiumnews.com/2008/022108a.html.

[ccciii] Robert Parry, “George H. W. Bush, the CIA and a Case of State Terrorism,” *Mint Press News*, September 22, 2016, http://www.mintpressnews.com/george-h-w-bush-cia-case-state-terrorism/220698/.

[ccciv] John Dinges, “The Untold Story of Manuel Contreras and the CIA,” *autoblog.net*, August 12, 2015, https://aulablog.net/2015/08/12/the-untold-

story-of-manuel-contreras-and-the-cia/comment-page-1/.

[cccv] Robert Parry, http://www.mintpressnews.com/george-h-w-bush-cia-case-state-terrorism/220698/.

[cccvi] Jon Schwartz, “The Assassination of Orlando Letelier and the Politics of Silence,” *The Intercept*, September 22, 2016, https://theintercept.com/2016/09/21/the-assassination-of-orlando-letelier-and-the-politics-of-silence/.

[cccvii] Robert Parry, http://www.mintpressnews.com/george-h-w-bush-cia-case-state-terrorism/220698/.

[cccviii] “Movers and Shakers of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta: William F. Buckley,” http://moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.co.id/2008/08/william-f-buckley-jr.html.

[cccix] John Simkin, http://spartacus-educational.com/JFKtownleyM.htm.

[cccx] “Movers and Shakers of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta: James Buckley,” http://moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.co.id/2008/08/james-l-buckley.html.

[cccxi] John Simkin, http://spartacus-educational.com/JFKtownleyM.htm

[cccxii] Joachim Hagopian, “Western State Sponsored Terrorism: False Flags Spreading Islamophobia, Race and Religious Wars and New World Disorder,” *Lew Rockwell*, December 25, 2015, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2015/12/joachim-hagopian/new-world-disorder-2/.

[cccxiii] Mary Helen Spooner, “The Literary Assassin,” *Notes on the Americas*, https://notesontheamericas.wordpress.com/tag/michael-townley/.

[cccxiv] “Chile Asks US to Extradite Suspects in 1976 Murder of a Diplomat,” *Reuters*, May 18, 2016, http://www.reuters.com/article/us-chile-crime-extradition-idUSKCN0Y8296.

[cccxv] “Michael Townley,” *Alchetron*, https://alchetron.com/Michael-Townley-863288-W.

[cccxvi] Jon Dinges, https://aulablog.net/2015/08/12/the-untold-story-of-manuel-contreras-and-the-cia/comment-page-1/.

[cccxvii] Peter Levenda, *The Unholy Alliance: A History of Nazi Involvement with the Occult* (New York: Bloombury Publishing, 2002) p. 318

[cccxviii] John Simkin, http://spartacus-educational.com/JFKtownleyM.htm.

[cccxix] Bruce Falconer, “The Torture Colony,” *American Scholar*, autumn 2008, https://theamericanscholar.org/the-torture-colony/.

[cccxx] “Villa Baviera,” *wikivisually.com*, https://wikivisually.com/wiki/Colonia_Dignidad.

[cccxxi] Julian Robinson, “Victims of Paedophile Sect Led by One-Eyed German Nazi who Oversaw Daily Torture and Abuse of Child Slaves over Three Decades in Chile Hope to Finally See Justice with Legal Bid,” *Daily Mail*, April 27, 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3561040/Victims-paedophile-sect-led-one-eyed-German-Nazi-oversaw-daily-torture-abuse-child-slaves-three-decades-Chile-hope-finally-justice-legal-bid.html.

[cccxxii] “Child Abuse Charity, CIA Child Torture, Colonia Dignidad and Paul Schafer Schneider,” *Aangirfan*, July 6, 2013, http://aangirfan.blogspot.co.id/2013/07/child-abuse-charity-cia-child-torture.html.

[cccxxiii] Marcelo Mackinnon, “Inside Chile’s Colony of Terror,” *Oh My News*, February 1, 2007, http://english.ohmynews.com/articleview/article_view.asp?no=342888&rel_no=1.

[cccxxiv] Phil Davison, http://www.independent.co.uk/news/obituaries/paul-sch-fer-nazi-colonel-who-established-an-anti-semitic-colony-in-chile-after-the-war-1981014.html.

[cccxxv] Ramona Wadi, “Pinochet’s Chile: A Playground for Complicit Foreigners,” *Mint Press News*, October 30, 2014, http://www.mintpressnews.com/pinochets-chile-playground-complicit-foreigner/198347/.

[cccxxvi] “Former Nazi Pedophile Nabbed in Argentina,” *dw.com*, November 3, 2005, http://www.dw.com/en/former-nazi-pedophile-nabbed-in-argentina/a-1515223.

[cccxxvii] Marcelo Mackinnon, http://english.ohmynews.com/articleview/article_view.asp?no=342888&rel_no=1.

[cccxxviii] “The Patagonia Theft (Part 4) - A Centuries Old Secret Agenda – The Notorious Colonia Dignidad,” *Deep High* (a blog site), March 16, 2011, http://deep-high.blogspot.co.id/2011_03_01_archive.html.

[cccxxix] Ramona Wadi, http://www.mintpressnews.com/pinochets-chile-playground-complicit-foreigner/198347/.

[cccxxx] Steve Kangas, “A Timeline of CIA Atrocities,” *Global Research*, May 17, 2016, http://www.globalresearch.ca/a-timeline-of-cia-atrocities/5348804.

[cccxxxi] Rebecca Gordon, “How the US Military Came to Embrace Extrajudicial Killings,” *The Nation*, July 18, 2016, https://www.thenation.com/article/how-the-us-military-came-to-embrace-extrajudicial-killings/.

[cccxxxii] “Torture and Prison Abuse,” *Global Policy Forum*, https://www.globalpolicy.org/us-un-and-international-law-8-24/torture-and-prison-abuse.html.

[cccxxxiii] Marjorie Cohn, “Torture Report Confirms Team Bush War Crimes,” *Truthout*, December 15, 2014, http://www.truth-out.org/news/item/28003-torture-report-confirms-team-bush-war-crimes.

[cccxxxiv] Julio Sharp-Wasserman, “How Outraged is the Obama Administration about Torture?” *Truthout*, January 5, 2015, http://www.truth-out.org/news/item/28361-how-outraged-is-the-obama-administration-about-torture.

[cccxxxv] Rebecca Gordon, “Donald Trump has a Passionate Desire to Bring back Torture,” *The Nation*, April 6, 2017, https://www.thenation.com/article/donald-trump-has-a-passionate-desire-to-bring-back-torture/.

[cccxxxvi] “Torture Does Not Work,” *Nature*, http://www.nature.com/articles/s41562-017-0077.

[cccxxxvii] Alex Kingsbury, “Recalling the shame of Abu Ghraib,” US News and World Report, May 20, 2008, https://www.usnews.com/news/iraq/articles/2008/05/20/recalling-the-shame-of-abu-ghraib.

[cccxxxviii] “The Continuing Shame of Guantanamo Bay,” *The Guardian*, January 10, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/us-news/2017/jan/10/continuing-shame-of-guantanamo-bay,

[cccxxxix] Joachim Hagopian, “Totalitarian Rule in America: False Flags, Secret Prisons, Extrajudicial Assassinations, Media Censorship, the rounding up of Alleged Terrorists…,” *Global Research*, March 1, 2015, http://www.globalresearch.ca/totalitarian-rule-in-america-false-flags-secret-prisons-media-censorship-the-rounding-up-of-alleged-terrorists/5434238.

[cccxl] Nicholas J.S. Davies, “35 Countries where the US has Supported Fascists, Drug Lords and Terrorists,” *Salon*, March 9, 2014, http://www.salon.com/2014/03/08/35_countries_the_u_s_has_backed_international_crime_partner/.

[cccxli] Rebecca Gordon, https://www.thenation.com/article/how-the-us-military-came-to-embrace-extrajudicial-killings/.

[cccxlii] “Child Abuse Charity, CIA Child Torture, Colonia Dignidad and Paul Schafer Schneider,” http://aangirfan.blogspot.co.id/2013/07/child-abuse-charity-cia-child-torture.html.

[cccxliii] Lauren McMah, http://www.news.com.au/travel/world-travel/south-america/inside-chiles-bizarre-nazi-torture-cult/news-story/42aa14930c107a5e13a6dded88a242c6.

[cccxliv] “I Found the Devil in Colonia Dignidad,” https://taboodada.wordpress.com/2012/08/06/633/.

[cccxlv] “Colonia (film),” *Wikipedia*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Colonia_(film).

[cccxlvi] Alcuin Bramerton, “In Knights of Malta Land Is Spritual Fascism in Retreat?” *alcuinbramerton.blogspot.com*, August 28, 2017, http://alcuinbramerton.blogspot.co.id/2017/02/in-knights-of-malta-land.html.

[cccxlvii] Austin Ivereigh,”Knights of Malta Chief Says it was Burke who Asked Official to Resign,” *Crux*, February 15, 2017, https://cruxnow.com/analysis/2017/02/15/knights-malta-chief-says-burke-asked-official-resign/.

[cccxlviii] Jason Horowitz, “Bannon Finds he has Friends in the Vatican,” *The New York Times/The Buffalo News*, February 7, 2017, http://buffalonews.com/2017/02/06/bannon-finds-friends-vatican/.

[cccxlix] Bob Fredericks, “Bannon Is Out at the White House,” *New York Post*, August 18, 2017, http://nypost.com/2017/08/18/steve-bannon-is-out-at-white-house/.

[cccl] Nick Squires, “Knights of Malta Reinstate German Aristocrat who had been Sacked by British Grand Master in Row that Prompted Vatican Intervention,” *The Telegraph*, January 29, 2017, http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2017/01/29/knights-malta-reinstate-german-aristocrat-had-sacked-british/.

[cccli] Josephine McKenna, “Knights of Malta Elect New Leader as Vatican Seeks to Bury Feud,” *The Telegraph*, April 29, 2017, http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2017/04/29/knights-malta-elect-new-leader-vatican-seeks-bury-feud/.

[ccclii] “List of Princes and Grand Masters of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta,” *Wikipedia*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_Princes_and_Grand_Masters_of_the_Sovereign_Military_Order_of_Malta.

[cccliii] Anonymous Patriots, http://stateofthenation2012.com/?p=34965.

[cccliv] Benjamin Fulford, “The Long Awaited Arrests of the Cabalists are Supposed to Start this Week,” *conspireplanet.blogspot.com*, February 6, 2017, http://conspireplanet.blogspot.co.id/2017/02/ben-fulford-says-long-awaited-arrests.html#!/2017/02/ben-fulford-says-long-awaited-arrests.html.

[ccclv] Nick Donnelly, “Pope Ordered Card. Burke to Clean out Freemasons from the Knights of Malta,” *CatholicCitizens.org*, January 11, 2017, https://catholiccitizens.org/news/69506/pope-ordered-card-burke-clean-freemasons-knights-malta/.

[ccclvi] Michael Snyder, “12 Times the Pope has Openly Promoted a One World Religion or a New World Order,” *End of the American Dream*, July 31, 2016, http://endoftheamericandream.com/archives/12-times-pope-francis-has-openly-promoted-a-one-world-religion-or-a-new-world-order.

[ccclvii] Tom Bawden, “Pope Francis Calls for a New System of Global Government to tackle Climate Change,” *Independent*, June 19, 2015, http://www.independent.co.uk/environment/pope-francis-calls-for-new-system-of-global-government-to-tackle-climate-change-10330124.html.

[ccclviii] Joachim Hagopian, “The Global Warming Hoax, Paris Climate Accord and NWO Global Governance,” Lew Rockwell, April 25, 2016, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2016/04/joachim-hagopian/global-warming-hoax/.

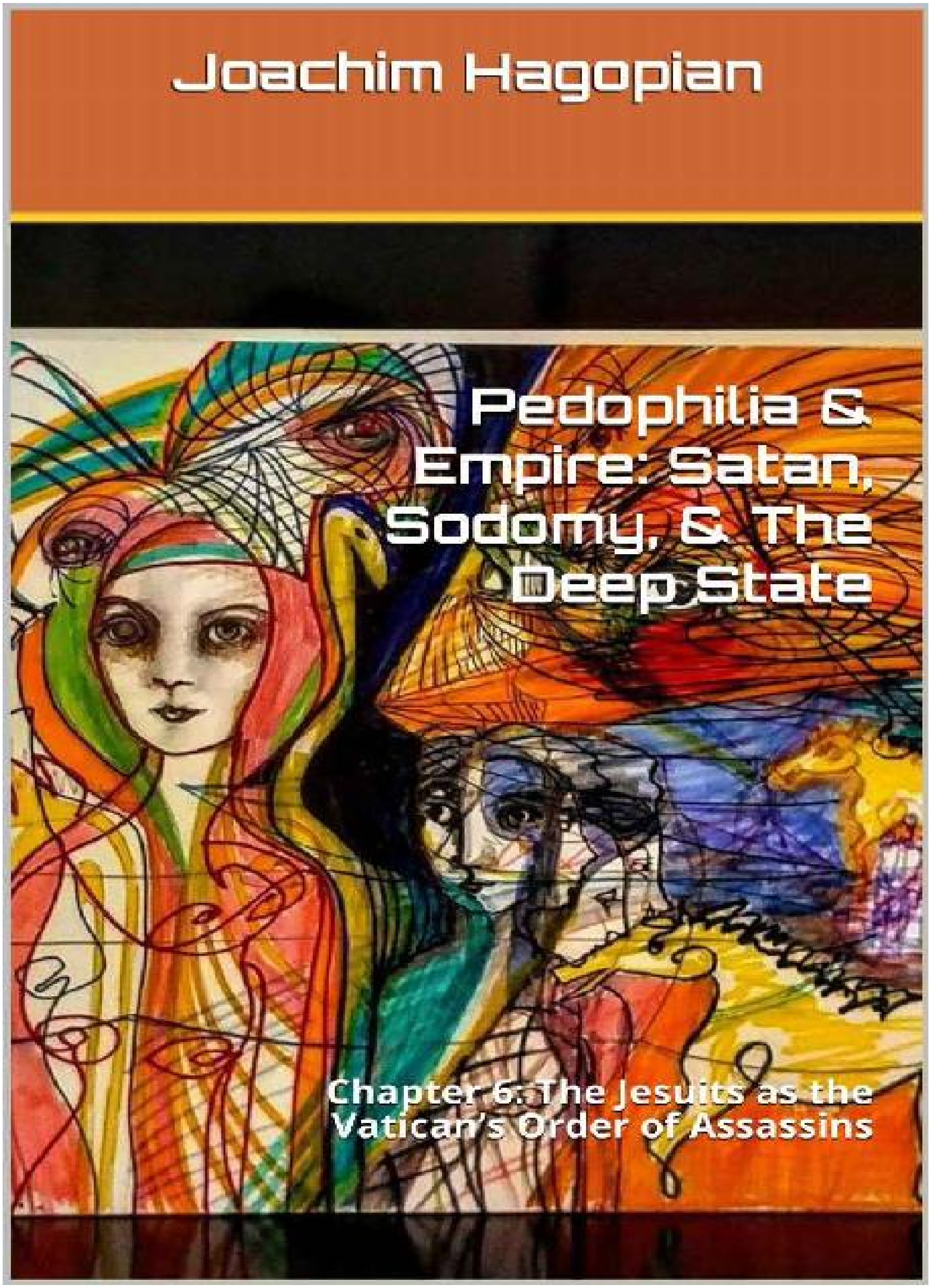

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 6: The Jesuits as the Vatican's Order of Assassins

Chapter 6: The Jesuits as the Vatican’s Order of Assassins

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission

http://www.noramaccoby.com/

Prior to examining the next chapter addressing the pope and Vatican roles in their Roman Catholic hierarchical stake in Satan’s rule over the earth and the NWO’s worldwide operation pedophilia, much has been made of the Jesuit Order controlling Pope Francis as the first Jesuit pope.[i] The Jesuit black pope[ii] and his legions in the Jesuit Order are said to control the “white” pope, the Knights of Malta, Opus Dei, Knights of Columbus and the dozens of other secret societies including the CIA, Freemasons, the Illuminati and their satanic family bloodlines. The devil’s earthly pecking order starts with Lucifer (translated “the light-bearer”)[iii] who became Satan the fallen angel, and all of Satan’s demonic, other worldly, interdimensional forces deceitfully deployed as both anti-God and anti-human WMD’s. Summoning dark demonic supernatural forces through black occult rituals dating back to the birth of Cabala in Babylon during the 6th century BC are still being used today for world domination by Satan’s devoted puppets, a handful of powerful sub-humanoid creatures David Icke and many others maintain are descendants of reptilian ET hybrids.[iv]

A most divisive, pervasive online debate pits as the power pyramid kingpins the Jesuit Order[v] vs. Jews[vi] represented collectively by the likes of R & R [Rothschild and Rockefeller] bankers, six mass media propaganda moguls,[vii] and anti-Semitic police and briber-blackmailers like AIPAC, B'nai B'rith and ADL, and Netanyahu and his transnational Zionist club of Greater Israel all making it a crime to speak the truth,[viii] in a pointless exercise of one-upmanship in blame game demonization. These two groups of villainous control freaks – the most powerful Jews and Jesuits - are both running this world as one and the same entity. Under their unifying umbrella Satanism, Satanists deceptively wear various brand name labels, very few being out-of-closet Satanists.

A fact based history of the Jesuit Order shows that the 16th century founders were Crypto Sephardic Jews who were Illuminati disciples in Spain calling themselves the Alumbrados, whose Talmudic cabalistic occult beliefs elevate men “enlightened” by secret knowledge to earthly god status.[ix] The Luciferian worshippers known as the Alumbrados were outlawed in Spain,[x] and one of their soldiers crippled in battle for life, one Ignatius of Loyola during the Inquisition while healing from his war wound decided to reinvent himself and his satanic beliefs, infiltrating Catholicism and proclaiming himself the first Jesuit supreme general in Jesus’s [or more aptly Satan’s] army he named the Society of Jesus, not unlike the greedy private central banksters deceptively calling themselves the US federal reserve early in the last century.[xi] Declaring war on Protestant Reformation, the Catholic Church backed his Counter Reformation military order for “Jesus.”

Sitting atop this demonic human predator food chain is an interbred Roman papal bloodline system operating under the Synagogue of Satan that goes by a host of names - the Jesuits, the Malta Knights, the Illuminati, the royal Windsors and Black Nobility, the Freemasons, the Skull and Bones, the Council on Foreign Relations, the Committee of 300, the Club of Rome, the Trilateral Commission, the Pilgrim Society, Bilderbergers, the Bohemian Grove child sacrifice on-the-altar boys, the list can go on and on. But bottom line, as the planetary controllers, ultimately they all do the bidding of their demonic god Lucifer. The Jesuit general as the black pope and his Jesuit Order work together with the current now Jesuit white pope, the Vatican, ancient Illuminati family bloodlines,[xii] and all the above listed secret elitist societies that include as their puppets the CIA, global intelligence community and virtually every government and military on earth. For centuries this handful of Satanists have been enslaving humanity in perpetual war, racial, religious and class divide, economic hardship and depravation in order to maintain its status quo power and control through mass deception and divide and conquer manipulation.[xiii] The big three religions were invented as a divide and conquer device to ensure control over the masses.[xiv]

This chapter lifts the veil of the Jesuit Order or Society of Jesus founded in 1534 by crypto-Jew Ignatius of Loyola (1491-1556), whose society was recognized by the pope in 1540.[xv] Within a year after Ignatius' 1491 birth, Jews were legally expelled from Spain. Ignatius grew up during the bloody Inquisition (1478-1834) when up to 68 million victims lost their lives in the name of God, and even more were tortured and imprisoned.[xvi] Born into this trauma when over half the Iberian Jewish population was forced to leave, die or convert, roughly 50,000 Jews elected baptism to remain in Spain as Roman Catholic converts known as conversos to avoid further persecution and death.[xvii] If Christians were killing Jews because they were Jews, to avoid death many converted. But how sincere would be their devotion and commitment to a religion whose violent adherents were busily killing off fellow Jews? Not very. But the Inquisition and pure blood laws in Europe specifically targeted Jewish converts deemed less than 100% faithful to Christianity, which had to be nearly all.

As a young man prior to becoming the first official Jesuit superior general, Ignatius had been a member of Spain's Illuminati Luciferian branch - the Alumbrados that preached that humans are capable of becoming divine gods in both wisdom and power through disciplined pursuit and practice of secret occult knowledge.[xviii] Initially during the first three decades of his Jesuit Order, Ignatius openly welcomed his fellow crypto-Jewry into his secret militant Catholic fold.[xix] As a successful and ambitious merchant and banking class, seeking freedom from persecution, many Marranos families (crypto Jewish converts in Spain) infiltrated Christian gentile society by strategically interbreeding with European nobility and, like Ignatius, also rising to stardom through the Catholic Church hierarchy. Over the millennium numerous popes, kings and queens in Europe have been and still are crypto Jews.[xx]

Ignatius was born and lived his entire life during the dark and dangerous Spanish Inquisition. Up to a million Muslim Moors (Moriscos) and 200,000 Jews (Marranos) in Spain converted to Catholicism under centuries of blood purity laws and mob violence barbarity.[xxi] Suspected of secretly retaining their original faiths, whether they were or weren't, many became victims of yet more brutal persecution. Spain hurt itself inducing a brain drain of 800,000 Jews who fled the anti-Semitic nation during the Inquisition. In 2012, the Madrid government attempted to make amends by offering Spanish citizenship to those whose Jewish Sephardic ancestors had left.[xxii] However, this free entry back into Spain centuries later was not extended to the hundreds of thousands of Islamic Moors who also escaped for their life and understandably Muslims have demanded reciprocity.

A sizeable percentage of crypto-Jewry in Europe must have developed an intense, seething hatred towards their Christian executioners issuing wave after wave of purging pogroms, murdering and imprisoning millions of Jews, Muslims and Protestants, eventually banning all non-Christians. Thus engrained early in Ignatius' psyche, he ultimately sought ways to survive by adopting a chameleon-like appearance, showing one side outwardly as a wise and benign spiritual leader that inwardly concealed another far sinister darker side entirely. Thus through tactics of deception, infiltration and unrelenting subversion, Jesuits were trained to gain the upper hand that eventually would lead to victory and opportunity for revenge and retribution against all enemies, be they Christian oppressors or loathsome Protestant or Muslim infidels. In this way, despite setbacks, the Jesuits persevered, gradually infiltrating and overtaking the Catholic Church.[xxiii]

Forming a Catholic society that superficially espouses the love of Jesus proved an effective ticket for Ignatius' worldly power ascension. In order to avoid risk of prejudice, Jewish Jesuit founders Ignatius and Francis Borgia took a hardline stance against fellow Jews using an attack dog approach. In 1593 the Order issued a law prohibiting Jews from entering the Society of Jesus, and removed those Jesuits already members that hadn't yet completed their final vow.[xxiv] But after 30 years of open enrollment, many crypto Jews that had attained their final fourth vow remained. To save themselves, their M.O. was to viciously turn on their own kind at least publicly. Surviving the Inquisition spawned the no-brainer rationale of sacrificing a few of your own to save your own skin. Secretly they would spend years plotting revenge to both perceived and real enemies, be they "fellow" Catholic oppressors, or Protestant, Jewish or Muslim infidels. Loyalty and expedience demanded a capacity to cunningly, fluidly change colors, living by the credo that ends always justify the means.[xxv] In their violently twisted world, personal safety and security could only be achieved through subversively gaining unlimited godlike power and control on earth, fanatical, disciplined application of the mindset "kill or be killed," and freedom from oppression and ruin could best be earned through assuming the role of oppressor-killer as secret benefactors of Luciferian wisdom and devotees of crypto-Satanism.

Some scholars contend that the Society of Jesus evolved directly from the defunct Templar Order (recall that they too were founded by cabbalistic crypto-Jews). After being disbanded by the pope two centuries earlier, a number of Templar Knights in Spain were absorbed into two Spanish military orders, that of Calatrava and the still active Order of Montesa,[xxvi] eventually emerging in 1541 as the Jesuit Order co-founded by St. Francis Borgia, the third Jesuit "black pope," and great grandson of Spain's King Ferdinand II of Aragon on his mother's side and great grandson of Borgia white Pope Alexander VI.[xxvii] The Borgias have long been a powerful Illuminati papal family of mixed Spanish-Jewish bloodline.[xxviii] The militantly extremist, subversive nature of the Jesuit Order quickly became its trademark, explicitly laid down by the founder's cunning, wolf-in-sheep's-clothing represented by Ignatius' unethical instruction below:

> *Nor will it contribute a little to our advantage, if, with caution and secrecy, we foment and heighten the animosities that arise among princes and great men, even to such a degree that they may weaken each other. But if there appear any likelihood of reconciliation, then as soon as possible let us endeavor to be the mediators, lest others prevent us.*
>
> *Finally, Let all with such artfulness gain the ascendant over princes, noblemen, and the magistrates of every place, that they may be ready at our beck, even to sacrifice their nearest relations and most intimate friends, when we say it is for our interest and advantage.*[xxix]

Devoted Catholics "in the know"quickly explain the letters IHS in the Jesuit logo as simply meaning Jesus in shorthand originating from the Greek letters "iota", "eta" and "sigma." Others who examine deeper equate Catholicism as a dark sinister offshoot of Babylonian and Egyptian paganism, and to them the IHS stands for the Egyptian deity triad of Isis (female protector representing the well-endowed black magick power of the eldest daughter of the most ancient Egyptian god Saturn), Horus (the son of Isis symbolizing god of the sky, kings, power and wisdom) and Set (god of the desert, disorder, war, often represented by Lucifer; killer of Isis' husband Osiris, uncle to Horus whom he battled and lost his Egyptian kingdom) derived from the same pagan Egyptian deities also worshipped by the Luciferian Templars and Freemasons.[xxx] Like the Illuminati, Freemasons, the Templars and the Malta Knights, the Jesuits are steeped in black arts and all of these secret societies worship under the same demonic false god within their Synagogue of Satan.

To reach the "professed" status of a fully ordained Jesuit priest having taken the Fourth [and final] Vow (beyond the Jesuit brother as temporal coadjutor), literally decades of additional study and prayer are required. Education [i.e., propaganda] was and is the prime component to the Jesuit mission designed as the Catholic Church's potent answer to the Protestant Reformation movement sweeping through Europe, diminishing the Church of Rome's authoritarian power. And within a century after the pope endorsed the Jesuit Order, by 1640 over 500 Jesuit institutions of higher learning were already established.[xxxi] Jesuit schools and universities have continued proliferating throughout Europe, America and the entire world indoctrinating 3 million Jesuit students worldwide. Over the centuries the Jesuit Modus Operandi has been infiltration and control of worldly affairs through spying, blackmail, assassination, and covert military black ops and intelligence operations.[xxxii]

The cunning nature of Ignatius taught his army of Jesuit priests to gain the upper hand and confidence of nobility for confessions, using acquired vital information to their advantage. Jesuits would manipulate their followers into having their sins absolved by banishing all Protestants as heretics.[xxxiii] They became masters at pitting groups against another and placing themselves as needed arbiters. Their skillfully aggressive tactics toward a pliable population quickly paid off. Initially during its first century the popular new Order's ranks swelled so that by 1710 they were 19,000 strong. By 1749 there were 22,000 Jesuits.[xxxiv]

But also by mid-century, the Jesuits' ruthless, contentious power grab and constant infiltrating, undermining and stirring up conflicts had kingdoms and governments alike banning the Order altogether, starting in Portugal in 1759, France following in 1764, Spain, and even Sicily and Naples by 1767, Austria by 1774 and Russia in 1786.[xxxv] With the Society of Jesus outlawed virtually everywhere but Rome, the anti-Jesuit domino effect forced the notorious Jesuit assassins to retreat and align with more tolerant Protestant Britain and Prussia since southern Europe and its New World colonies had all had enough of Jesuit troublemaking.[xxxvi] The Illuminati Hapsburg-Jesuit control over Europe was finally waning with the 18th century Bourbon reemergence, particularly in Spain under King Carlos III who took a strong moral stand against both the barbaric Inquisition and the treacherous Jesuits.

Jesuits in Spain and Portugal's New World colonies of Latin America were accused of fomenting insurrection, stealing both wealth and land from the crown,[xxxvii] providing ample additional motivation to abolish the Society of Jesus. The subversive Order was never a welcomed presence in the United States either. Other than Britain, over the centuries virtually every European country banished the malevolent Jesuits one time or another. From 1555 to 1931 a count of 83 nations, city-states and cities expelled the Jesuits.[xxxviii]

So much mounting pressure was on the Vatican to do something to stop the aggressive Jesuit usurper, in February 1769 Pope Clement XIII (1693-1769) was set to dissolve the

Jesuit Order but fell ill the night before and died, his final words, “I am dying… it is very strange to attack the Jesuits.”[xxxix] Then incredibly, his successor Pope Clement XIV (1705-1774) by papal bull ended the Jesuit Order in 1773. But a mere year later his last words on his deathbed were:

> *Alas, I knew they [i.e., the Jesuits] would poison me; but I did not expect to die in so slow and cruel a manner.*[xl]

With the pope legally shutting down the Jesuit operations worldwide, as a sneaky alternative means continuing the Jesuit mission of world takeover, three years later and two months prior to America’s Declaration of Independence in 1776, yet another crypto Jew, Jesuit trained Adam Weishaupt secured Rothschild financing to found their new Bavarian branch of Illuminati. Author of *The Secret Terrorists and the Enemy Unmasked* Bill Hughes explains yet another application of how the Jesuits infiltrate likeminded secret societies:

> *Weishaupt established the [modern version of the] Illuminati specifically to be a front organization behind which the Jesuits could hide. After being [formally] abolished by [Pope] Clement XIV in 1773, the Jesuits used the Illuminati and other organizations to carry out their operations. Thus, the front organizations would be blamed for the trouble caused by the Jesuits.*[xli]

Two years later the Vatican in an Edict of 1778 declared war on the US constitutional republic, calling America an abomination of sin that must be destroyed by any means possible.[xlii] The Jesuits’ extreme reputation advocating violent overthrow and cutthroat treachery had worn thin in both Europe and America. Shunned virtually everywhere, the Jesuits were forced to secretly align with Freemasons in Prussia and Britain.

Meanwhile, joining a growing consensus, Emperor Napoleon Bonaparte (1769-1821) recognized the Jesuits for what they were:

The Jesuits are a military organization, not a religious order. Their chief is a general of an army, not the mere father abbot of a monastery. And the aim of this organization is: POWER. Power in its most despotic exercise. Absolute power, universal power, power to control the world by the volition of a single man. Jesuitism is the most absolute of despotisms: and at the same time the greatest and most enormous of abuses.[xliii]

But as soon as Napoleon was defeated in 1814, the imprisoned Pope Pius VII upon his release promptly restored the Jesuit Society. Reacting to the news, in 1816 former President John Adams (1735-1826) wrote his friend Thomas Jefferson stating:

Their restoration is indeed a step toward darkness, cruelty, perfidy, despotism, death . . . I do not like the appearance of the Jesuits. If ever there was a body of men who merited eternal damnation on earth and in hell, it is this Society of Loyola's.[xliv]

US Revolutionary War ally French General Marques de Lafayette (1757-1834) saw the writing on the wall about the Jesuits:

It is my opinion that if the liberties of this country - the United States of America - are destroyed, it will be by the subtlety of the Roman Catholic Jesuit priests, for they are the most crafty, dangerous enemies to civil and religious liberty. They have instigated MOST of the wars of Europe.[xlv]

The Jesuit forte has always been infiltration and revenge, dating back to the collusion between Pope Clement V and France's King Philip to abolish the Templar Order in 1312. The ideological affinity for Gnosticism and the occult that the Jesuits[xlvi] hold in common with the Templars originated in their own traceable roots linked to the enduring Templar influence.[xlvii] The Jesuits inherited the Templar rivalry against the Malta Knights that also played a hand in the demise of the Temple Order. So the revengeful motive to subordinate the Maltese was inherently built in. Then later in 1773 when another round of suppression issued by Pope Clement XIV was enforced in most of Europe dissolving the Jesuit Order, revenge toward Clement came in the form of the poison cup.[xlviii] The Society of Jesus made secret deals with Protestants in England in order to survive the continent's widespread Jesuit ban[xlix] and eventually the Jesuits seized control of the Vatican once England defeated Napoleon in 1814 and ever since they've never relinquished their unequalled power in Rome but only extended it across the globe.[l]

Less than a half century later another war to instigate and exploit came along. During the American Civil War the pro-Jesuit pope in power - Pope Pius IX - along with Rothschild bankers strongly supported the South in its secession fight against the North, writing a letter to Jefferson Davis designed to incite rebellion amongst Catholic northerners to join the Confederate cause against Lincoln in another holy war.[li] The Catholic Church had always profited from and subsidized the slavery trade and the Jesuit Order historically opposed liberty movements using its divide and conquer method to destabilize sovereign governments in Mexico, Spain and France. In its effort to break apart the American Republic, the Vatican had propagated lies that President Lincoln was born a Catholic, had been baptized by a priest, and become a demonized heretic and apostate that by canon law should be killed. And because murder endorsed by the pope who literally called himself infallible was not considered a sinful crime at all, the Vatican clearly intended to inspire a fanatical Catholic assassin to kill for God, not unlike the Crusades. In fact, Jesuit assassins had plotted an ambush of Lincoln in Baltimore, but privy to the plot, the president foiled their plan traveling hours ahead of his original schedule.

As an Illinois attorney in 1853, Abe Lincoln represented a priest named Charles Chiniquy in Urbana, Illinois who had dared to confront the Jesuit archbishop of Chicago's corruption and criminal activity. A conspiracy of slander to frame and destroy Chiniquy was promoted by an unscrupulous Jesuit priest but Lincoln, with the help of a last minute witness, was able to successfully expose the nefarious plot.[lii] Charles Chiniquy left the Catholic Church, ended up Lincoln's confidante and advisor on the subsequent threat of the Jesuits' violent retribution, and ended up writing the exposé *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome* where he presents an irrefutable case that the Jesuits were responsible for assassinating Lincoln using their fanatical Catholic patsy John Wilkes Booth to do their bidding.[liii] Chiniquy passionately warned Lincoln in person that Jesuit conspirators were determined to take him out, reminding the president of a number of other previous historical assassinations - the two Pope Clements, Admiral Coligny, Henry III, Henry IV and William of Taciturn, all committed by Jesuits.[liv] Two more victims of the Jesuit assassins were back to back Russian czars Alexander I and II during the 19th century for expelling the Society of Jesus from Russia. During the Civil War, Alexander II also supported President Lincoln and the United States, directly opposing the Jesuits, England and France's efforts to divide America.[lv]

Lincoln co-conspirators Mary Surratt and her Jesuit son John Surratt[lvi] had a couple priests living in Mary's DC residence holding regular meetings amongst Catholic clergy up to ten in the home, confirming a direct link to the Jesuit Order and the Vatican. It turned out that every arrested assassination conspirator was Catholic. John Harrison Surratt managed to escape to a Montreal where two Catholic priests took him in and with others arranged his transport to Europe under false identity where Surratt enlisted as a Papal Zouave, the pope's own infantry force from 1861-1870 to defend the Papal States in military resistance to a unified Italy.[lvii] Surratt was arrested in his Zouave uniform in Egypt and sent back to the US to face trial for both murder and conspiracy to kidnap Lincoln, resulting in a hung jury. He was then retried for engaging in rebellion but the case was mysteriously dropped.[lviii] Despite overwhelming evidence of Surratt's guilt, more than likely the Jesuit controlled Vatican interceded to protect him from punishment, unlike his mother and three other accomplices who after a military tribunal were swiftly hung within three months after Lincoln was shot.[lix] In contrast, John Surratt's civilian trial released him as a free man able to live out his life until his natural death in 1916 at the ripe age of 72.

Additionally, in a recovered letter from 1864 John Wilkes Booth wrote to another conspirator less than a year before Lincoln's death words that eerily resemble the Extreme Jesuit Oath (which almost word for word is the exact same blood sworn oath taken by Knights of Malta and Knights of Columbus) prescribing specific weapons used to subdue their enemies, "the poisoned cup, the strangulating cord, the steel of the poniard or the leaden bullet."[lx] Booth's letter makes reference to "the [poisoned] cup failed us once and might again," indicating one past failed attempt (besides the Baltimore incident) to kill the president. Moreover, one of the conspirators was a pharmacist very familiar with "poisoned cup" potions. Also while Booth attended Abe's second inauguration, he carried and planned to use a knife ("poniard") for murder but ultimately settled a few months later on a .44 caliber "leaden bullet."[lxi]

Over one stretch in time, from 1841 to 1865, the Jesuits were successful in assassinating three out of four US presidents in Benjamin Harrison, Zachary Taylor, James Buchanan (all through poisoning) and Abraham Lincoln with only Buchanan surviving.[lxii] Tired of losing its leaders to Catholic assassins, the US government broke off relations with the Vatican in 1867. In all up to seven presidents have likely been murdered by Jesuit-Illuminati henchmen.[lxiii] Andrew Jackson was fortunate enough to have an assassin's gun jam and defeated the Rothschild central banking scheme that Harrison, Taylor, Buchanan and Lincoln also resisted but each but one paid for it with their life. Lincoln refused to pay for war with banksters' loans and came up with Treasury printed Greenbacks as his novel solution and Kennedy set in motion a plan to strip the Federal Reserve of the power to supply money returning it back to the US Treasury Department, and both were likely killed for it.[lxiv]

After refusing to provide air support in the Cuban Bay of Pigs disaster, John Kennedy then further pissed off the military industrial complex recalling advisors from Vietnam that would have averted war in Southeast Asia.[lxv] Then he signed his own death warrant firing his evil CIA Director Allen Dulles[lxvi] and was preparing to overhaul the CIA.[lxvii] And Kennedy's plan to clip the Feds' wings threatened the Rothschild-Rockefeller-Morgan private central banks was three strikes and he's out. Prior to his murder, JFK spoke of the monolithic shadow government commonly referred to today as deep state. Knowing their history, President Kennedy was likely talking foremost about the Jesuits as well as the Malta Order, the Masons, the CIA and the bloodline bankers when he stated:

For we are opposed around the world by a monolithic and ruthless conspiracy that relies primarily on covert means for expanding its sphere of influence - on infiltration instead of invasion - on subversion instead of elections - on *intimidation instead of free choice - on guerrillas by night instead of armies by day. It is a system which has conscripted vast human and material resources into the building of a tightly-knit, highly efficient machine that combines military, diplomatic, intelligence, economic, scientific and political operations. Its preparations are concealed not published. Its mistakes are buried, not headlined. Its dissenters are silenced, not praised. No expenditure is questioned, no rumor is printed, no secret is revealed.*[lxviii]

The link between the central banking system, the Jesuits and assassinations aren't just limited to killing presidents. Evidence indicates that the Jesuits sank the Titanic to eliminate formidable competition openly opposing their agenda of a Federal Reserve System and their preplanned world war.[lxix] It's been documented that the British Jesuit Provintial met with and ordered the ship captain, a Jesuit temporal co-adjutor, to purposely sink the ship. After building the Titanic, Jesuit JP Morgan invited the three most important, powerful adversaries on the ship's 1912 maiden voyage across the Atlantic - Benjamin Guggenheim, Isador Strauss (Macy Department stores) and John Jacob Astor, the wealthiest man in the world.[lxx] At the last minute JP canceled and all three of his guests perished along with 1520 other murdered victims. The Federal Reserve Act of 1913 moved forward unencumbered by opposition while the bulk of Congress had already left for the Christmas break and the Jesuit elite enslaved America.[lxxi] The Federal Income Tax also passed that year was more globalist gravy theft. According to plan, less than a year later World War I was triggered.

This wholesale slaughter of human beings using cloak and dagger subversion has been repeatedly perpetrated on the world stage as both Jesuit oath honored tradition and historical fact diabolically right up to this present day. Fast forward over a half century later to former Jesuit priest Alberto Rivera's (1935-1997) observations:

The higher I went in the Jesuit Order, the more corruption I saw within the institution. I was invited to attend a secret black mass by high-ranking Jesuits [including Superior General Pedro Arrupe] in a monastery in the northern part of Spain. When I knelt to kiss the ring of a high official, I saw a symbol on that ring that made my blood run cold. It was a Masonic symbol [the compass and the square]! A thing I hated and I had been told to fight against it . . . I found out the Jesuit General was also a Mason and a member of the Communist Party in Spain.[lxxii]

Spaniard Alberto Rivera converted to Protestant Christianity by the late 1970's and for the rest of his life bravely went public exposing the sinister Jesuit agenda to rule the world through infiltration, systematically crushing any and all resistance by any and all means necessary.[lxxiii] After one "poisoned cup" attempt to permanently silence nearly killed him, four years later the assassins from Jesuit hell neutralized another poisoned cup fatality at age 61 for daring to reveal the full satanic lowdown on the Jesuit and Catholic criminal organizations.[lxxiv]

Meanwhile ex-Catholic Bishop Canadian Gerard Bouffard took up the truth gauntlet where Rivera left off, also confirming that the Jesuits and Vatican are Luciferian NWO rulers of this world. [lxxv] The former bishop who was the communication liaison between the pope and the Rome Jesuits stated that the infamous Jesuit superior general otherwise known as the black pope is actually the white pope's puppet master and that white Pope Francis controls the Illuminati. As of last October for the first time in history the black pope and white pope are both Jesuits, also for the first time are both from South America. Venezuela’s Arturo Sosa Abascal replaced Adolfo Nicolás Pachón as Pope Francis’ secret boss.[lxxvi] The Vatican secretly plays the good cop-bad cop game - while the “white pope” publicly prays for world peace, behind the scenes the “black pope” is busily inciting and exporting more war, conflict and terrorism to every corner of the globe.

As a Vatican insider, former Bishop Boussard corroborates the mounting evidence diligently compiled by both researchers and observant men throughout history that conclude that hidden in plain sight behind their benign “godly” robes are the most despicably dark and vile planetary controllers that have ever walked this earth. The now born again Christian Broussard maintains that having already infiltrated virtually all religions and governments, the Jesuit Order’s main objective is now controlling world leaders in order to foment global conflict into world war destruction to finish off the United States, the Middle East, Israel, Christianity, Islam and Judaism with most of the world, clearing Satan’s path toward totalitarian tyranny of one world government. In Gerard Boussard’s own words:

People can't imagine how evil and how much destruction they have caused and will cause while, at the same time using the perfect cover of hiding behind black robes and professing to be men of God… I know firsthand that the Vatican controls and monitors everything in Israel with the intention of destroying the Jews… They destroy everything from within and want to bring about the destruction of the Catholic Church, as well, in order to usher in a one world religion based on Satanism. This is also seen in the way priests worship in the Mass, actually worshipping the dead. Also, signs of Satanism are seen in many outward symbols, customs and vestments displayed by the Church.[lxxvii]

The Jesuit Order has been forced to pay off enormous amounts in lawsuits awarded child abuse victims at its many schools. A half decade ago in the Northwest and Alaska a huge settlement of $166.1 million was reached to compensate over 400 sexually molested Native Americans, the third highest settlement in Church history.[lxxviii] Only two Southern California Archdioceses had to pay out more, $660 million to 508 victims in LA and $200 million to 144 victims in San Diego.[lxxix] And like all the Catholic abuse charges, protection of Jesuit priests by Jesuit higher-ups over the well-being of more child victims seems standard policy. Case in point, Donald McGuire who when parents reported to another well-known priest in San Francisco that McGuire had abused their 16-year old son, the Chicago Jesuit authorities sent the pedophile through a brief psychiatric hospitalization program before sending him back to prey on other children for the next nine years.[lxxx] Though ever typical, this reprehensible non-response actually violated California state law requiring those who work with children to be mandated reporters of sexual abuse of minors to law enforcement. Eventually McGuire was convicted in federal court of sexually assaulting two boys and is now serving a 25-year prison sentence.

Similar to the Order of Malta Knights with its charity hospital work around the world, the Jesuit website advertises such holy platitudes like “we seek to ‘find God in all things,’” dedicating “ourselves to the [Ignatius coined phrase] ‘greater glory of God’ and the good of all humanity.”[lxxxi] And with 16,378 current members listed as of 2016, today the Jesuit Order is the largest Catholic male religious order.[lxxxii] Though its peak membership in 1977 of over 28,000 followers has fallen dramatically in recent decades, its seemingly invisible power has only strengthened.

From the 1534 outset, Ignatius of Loyola emphasized indoctrinated education and propaganda as a key strategy to expanding growth and spreading power internationally. The proof of his successful strategy is embodied in the 28 American Jesuit colleges and universities that have become a primary drafting pool for high powered government posts and offices.[lxxxiii] The widespread Jesuit education tentacles extend to 189 institutions of higher learning in 40 countries and another 362 secondary schools in 55 nations dispersed around the world.[lxxxiv]

As a sign of increasing Jesuit power in the 21st century, a subversive invasion by Jesuits into Washington's deep state oligarchy has creeped into focus. The astounding number of US presidents, vice presidents, congressional members (now comprising over 10% of today's 115th Congress),[lxxxv] high court judges and key cabinet heads who are graduates of Jesuit institutions is incredible.[lxxxvi] Jesuit trained and educated Donald Trump attended the Jesuit Fordham University for two years prior to transferring to Ivy League University of Pennsylvania.[lxxxvii] For near half a millennium now the Jesuits have shrewdly been operating schools that educate the ruling class elite. So within that historical context, no real surprise here.

Though in American history only two Catholics served as either president or vice president - Malta member JFK[lxxxviii] and child fondling dirty old Maltese man Joe Biden,[lxxxix] in contrast, just in the last decade alone, the US Supreme Court has undergone a monumental radical shift from a virtual all Protestant court near the turn of this century[xc] to now a Catholic majority with an Opus Dei implant sitting atop as Chief Justice John Roberts along with Opus Clarence Thomas with another third now Jewish. Cutting a secret deal with Pope John Paul II in an overreaching ploy to break up the Soviet Empire in 1980, after 113 years Malta Knight Ronald Reagan reestablished diplomatic relations with the Vatican as the first American president to purposely surround himself with obedient pope-serving Maltese vassals.[xci]

A parallel course this century has similarly unfolded in the top US military ranks with two back-to-back Chairmen of the Joint Chiefs of Staff devout papal-obedient Irish Catholics. Martin Dempsey is a Malta Knight[xcii] and his successor General Joseph Dunford attended Catholic high school and colleges at St. Michael’s College as an undergrad and the top Jesuit institution Georgetown for his graduate study.[xciii] None of this is a random fluke. Deep Jesuit state infiltration in Washington over just the last few years should be a major eye-opening Luciferian NWO wake-up call. And the correlational pedophilia pandemic led by the Synagogue of Satan Catholic Church wielding complete blackmail puppet control is also no accident.

Infiltration of governments and militaries of the world is but one effective Jesuit strategy seizing global control. Owning the controlling shares to the Bank of America as the 2nd largest US bank and a large stakeholder in Wells Fargo the 3rd largest is another.[xciv] At one time the pope owned three large American banks. [xcv] In fact the Catholic Church claims ownership of the Western world from Europe to the Americas.[xcvi] Just as the Rothschild dynasty has been granted the title of guardians of the Vatican Treasury[xcvii] with an unprecedented earthly fortune amounting to half a quadrillion bucks[xcviii] (more than half of the earth’s entire wealth),[xcix] the Luciferian worshipping family[c] also bankrolls the world’s financial center, City of London’s Bank of England cabal and the Queen’s vast holdings.[ci] But rest assure the Jesuits have infiltrated the world’s wealthiest organizations owned by the world’s wealthiest families like the Rothschild, Morgan and Rockefeller families.[cii] Together they’ve been working overtime to undermine America’s Constitution to destroy our freedom, national sovereignty and America itself.

A short list of top Fortune 500 companies controlled by Jesuit interests include American Airlines, TWA, Anheuser Busch, AT&T, Bell Atlantic, Boeing, Cigna, Coca-Cola, Daimler Chrysler, Exxon, Ford Motor Company, General Electric, Hewlett-Packard, Home Depot, May Company, McDonald's, Motorola, Philip Morris, Price-Waterhouse, Rite Aid, RJR Nabisco, Sony Corp. of America, Texaco, United Parcel Service, and Walt Disney Company.[ciii] With all these corporations in the Jesuit back pocket pouring millions into politician coffers through legal bribery, Rome's Society of Jesus easily controls its Washington puppets. The Vatican owns billions of shares in huge transnationals like Gulf Oil, Shell, General Motors, Bethlehem Steel, General Electric, International Business Machines, and TWA. Keep in mind the Church of Rome's vast fortune is all tax free as well. When the Catholic hierarchy pretends to worship Jesus who shunned materialism and wealth while the Catholic Church itself is the biggest financial power on earth, in the face of the ever widening gulf separating the 1% rich and the 99% poor, the institution's moral depravity and hubris is grotesque and obscene.[civ]

A final word on secret societies bears mention here, be they official Catholic militia orders or non-Catholic organizations like the Masonic and Illuminati orders that are less obscure about worshipping their true "god" Lucifer. All have the same nefarious mission[cv] to deceptively infiltrate other religions, denominations, other secret societies, large businesses, government agencies (whether elected or appointed), militaries, think tanks, and educational institutions for the exact same common purpose - to increase their power in order to bring about one world government and one world "religion" (called Satanism) through global destabilization and destruction by way of military war,[cvi] manmade disease (i.e., biological[cvii] and/or chemical warfare[cviii]), climate change (manmade based on hoax[cix]), habitat loss,[cx] famine[cxi] and economic collapse.[cxii]

Media and governments warn these catastrophic problems and mounting threats are unavoidably real even though they're orchestrating by the numbers every one of these pending disasters. For countless decades they've been dogmatically pushing the Malthusian lie that the earth's resources cannot possibly sustain the current and future global populations[cxiii] and therefore the ruling elite covertly justifies its coldblooded policy of depopulation through a combination of both slow kill and fast kill methods.[cxiv] Thus, the planetary controllers have willfully and systematically degraded our natural environment to dangerously toxic levels that induce disease and illness as viable slow death eugenics.[cxv] This planned debilitation of humans' physical and mental health and well-being combined with 24/7 mind control programming through effects of mass media and propagandized public education have been misused to intentionally dumb down the global population[cxvi] so that citizens of the world are too stupid to figure out that we are all being targeted as casualties of war, a human genocidal war waged by a select handful of a sub-human species comprised of deranged psychopathic murderers who detest us so much that they want 90-95% of us on this planet dead sooner than later. Just last month Pope Francis called for an emergency meeting with world leaders on November 2-4 to discuss how they can accelerate their agenda to kill us.[cxvii] After all, their credo has always been the "ends justify the means," and their endgame scenario[cxviii] a thoroughly culled and controlled half billion pop of robotic slaves, so they're fiendishly working overtime in a race against time. They desperately fear that every single day more and more of us humans who still have functioning brains are figuring out, mostly through the internet, the elite's mass murdering agenda. The rulers are deathly afraid we will rise up, throwing off centuries of shackled chains and, as NWO devil incarnate George HW Bush once envisioned out loud, we "will chase [him and his fellow Satanists] down the street and lynch [them]."[cxix]

One final point seems relevant here. A century after the crypto-Jews established the Jesuit Order using infiltration, deception and subversion as their infamous modus operandi, recall that a couple more ambitious crypto Jews came along in the 17th and 18th centuries claiming similar cabalistic roots while ascending to fake messiah heights as the Sabbatean-Frankist movement flourished in Europe and Eurasia utilizing the exact same M.O. as its means to godlike power. The amalgamation of the Luciferians ruling the planet today represents a remnant of Sabbatean-Frankism along with the rest of the secret societies discussed. With the lowdown exposing the far-reaching evil possessed by so many of these pathological players, the next chapter deals with how as Satanists, the popes, the Vatican and their covert armies have all played a major criminal role in today's pedophilia epidemic that also oversees international trafficking of illegal drugs, weapons, human organs and children around the globe as spoils of their manufactured wars for both satanic bloodlust and trillions in profit. And as guilty as they all are as child rapists and killers, they're equally guilty of misusing their unbridled power to cover up with near total impunity their massive sins against both our innocents specifically as well as humanity at large.

---

[i] Caleb K. Bell, "Why the First Jesuit Pope Is a Big Deal," *Religious News Service*, March 14, 2013, http://religionnews.com/2013/03/14/why-the-first-jesuit-pope-is-a-big-deal/.

[ii] "The Most Powerful Man in the World? The black pope?" *Warning Illuminati* (a blog site), https://warningilluminati.wordpress.com/the-most-powerful-man-in-the-world-the-black-pope/.

[iii] “Flame/Lighted Torch (Lucifer the Light Bearer),” *whale.to*, http://www.whale.to/c/lucifer_the_light_bearer.html.

[iv] Jeff Roberts, “The Biggest Secret: Do Reptilian-Human Hybrids Run Our World?” *Collective Evolution*, October 17, 2013, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2013/10/17/david-ickes-theory-of-the-reptilian-human-hybrid-apocalypse/.

[v] “The Rothschilds are Jesuits,” *Covert Geopolitics*, April 8, 2015, https://geopolitics.co/2015/04/08/the-rothschilds-are-jesuits/.

[vi] “List of Banks Owned by the Jewish Rothschild Family,” European Independent Media Center, September 2, 2013, https://europeanmediacentre.wordpress.com/2013/09/02/list-of-banks-owned-by-the-jewish-rothschild-family/.

[vii] “Six Jewish Companies Control 96% of the World’s Media,” *tapnewswire.com*, October 17, 2015, http://tapnewswire.com/2015/10/six-jewish-companies-control-96-of-the-worlds-media/.

[viii] David Cole and Faiz Shakir, “This Piece of Pro-Israel Legislation is a Serious Threat to Free Speech,” The Washington Post, July 24, 2017, https://www.washingtonpost.com/opinions/this-piece-of-pro-israel-legislation-is-a-serious-threat-to-free-speech/2017/07/24/0752d408-7093-11e7-8f39-eeb7d3a2d304_story.html?utm_term=.f5212d25aeb4.

[ix] “Leuren Moret: Jesuits (‘Society of Jesus’) originated in Babylon; are Satanic, Rebranded Knights Templar Seeking One World Government,” *fourwinds10.com*, October 27, 2014, http://fourwinds10.com/siterun_data/religion_cults/news.php?q=1414595672.

[x] “What Is the Jesuit Order?” *Mystery Babylon Watch* (a blog site), http://mysterybabylon-watch.blogspot.co.id/2011/03/what-is-jesuit-order.html.

[xi] “America’s Number One Enemy: The Federal Reserve,” *Humans Are Free*, May 2017, http://humansarefree.com/2017/05/americas-number-one-enemy-federal.html.

[xii] Fritz Springmeier, *13 Bloodlines of the Illuminati* (Atlanta: Pentracks Publications, 2005), http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/bloodlines/.

[xiii] Joachim Hagopian, “How the New World Order ‘Globalists’ are Dividing Americans,” *Global Research*, October 28, 2015, http://www.globalresearch.ca/how-the-new-world-order-globalists-are-dividing-americans/5483941.

[xiv] Lewis Mumford, “Social Control,” *unique-design.net* (a blog site), http://www.unique-design.net/library/control.html.

[xv] Mike Bellinger, “Resident Evil: The Jesuit Threat to Humanity,” *voxfux.com*, http://www.voxfux.com/features/jesuits1.html.

[xvi] Dave Armstrong, “Were ‘50-68 Million’ People Killed in the Inquisition?” *Patheos*, August 21, 2015, http://www.patheos.com/blogs/davearmstrong/2015/08/50-68-million-killed-in-the-inquisition.html.

[xvii] Brian Chalmers, “The ‘Jewish Question’ in 15th and 16th Century Spain Historian Sustains Spanish Inquisition Myths,” book review of *The Origins of the Inquisition in Fifteenth Century Spain*, by Benzion Netanyahu (New York: Random House, 1995), http://www.ihr.org/jhr/v16/v16n1p-2_chalmers.html.

[xviii] “What Is the Jesuit Order?” http://mysterybabylon-watch.blogspot.co.id/2011/03/what-is-jesuit-order.html.

[xix] “Exposing Talmudic-Jewish-Masonic Conspiracy,” *zaidpub.com* (a blog site), March 16, 2017, https://zaidpub.com/2017/03/19/exposing-talmudic-jewish-masonic-conspiracy-how-the-jews-took-over-the-roman-catholic-church-through-the-jesuit-order/.

[xx] “Exposing Talmudic-Jewish-Masonic Conspiracy,” https://zaidpub.com/2017/03/19/exposing-talmudic-jewish-masonic-conspiracy-how-the-jews-took-over-the-roman-catholic-church-through-the-jesuit-order/.

[xxi] “After the Reconquista,” *Wikipedidia*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Limpieza_de_sangre.

[xxii] Soeren Kern, “Muslims Angry over Spanish Citizenship for Jews,” *Gatestone Institute*, December 21, 2012, https://www.gatestoneinstitute.org/3509/spanish-citizenship-jews.

[xxiii] “Exposing Talmudic-Jewish-Masonic Conspiracy,” https://zaidpub.com/2017/03/19/exposing-talmudic-jewish-masonic-conspiracy-how-the-jews-took-over-the-roman-catholic-church-through-the-jesuit-order/.

[xxiv] “Exposing Talmudic-Jewish-Masonic Conspiracy,” https://zaidpub.com/2017/03/19/exposing-talmudic-jewish-masonic-conspiracy-how-the-jews-took-over-the-roman-catholic-church-through-the-jesuit-order/.

[xxv] Mike Bellinger, http://www.voxfux.com/features/jesuits1.html.

[xxvi] “The Order of Montesa,” *theknightstemplar.org*, http://www.theknightstemplar.org/order-of-montesa/.

[xxvii] Bill Gilbert, unpublished manuscript *Renaissance and Reformation*, Chapter 18: “Spain from Ferdinand and Isabella to Philip II,” 1992, http://vlib.iue.it/carrie/texts/carrie_books/gilbert/18.html.

[xxviii] "Who are the Men behind the Puppeteers?" *Covert Geopolitics*, https://geopolitics.co/2012/07/20/powerful-bloodlines-behind-the-dark-cabal/.

[xxix] "Catholic Confidential: Deplorable Jesuit Secrets Revealed," *worldslastchance.com* (a blog site), https://www.worldslastchance.com/end-time-prophecy/catholic-confidential--deplorable-jesuit-secrets-revealed.html.

[xxx] "Isis Symbols," *whale.to*, http://www.whale.to/c/isis.html.

[xxxi] "Saint Ignatius of Loiola "Co-Founder and 'First Leader of the Jesuits,'" *Bizkaia Talent*, https://www.bizkaiatalent.eus/en/pais-vasco-te-espera/algunos-vascos-a-traves-de-la-historia/san-ignacio-fundador-jesuitas/.

[xxxii] David Guyatt, "New World Order and Elite Think Tanks," *Vatican New World Order*, November 1, 2012, http://vaticannewworldorder.blogspot.co.id/2012/11/new-world-order-elite-th-in-k-tanks-by.html.

[xxxiii] F. Tupper Saussy, *Rulers of Evil* (New York: Harper Collins, 2001) p. 63, www.granddesignexposed.com/pdf/ROEpdf.pdf

[xxxiv] "The Jesuits," *Amazing Discoveries*, February 11, 2010, http://amazingdiscoveries.org/R-Jesuits_history_political_power_Pope.

[xxxv] "Curse of the Corporation," *mindserpent.com*, http://www.mindserpent.com/American_History/introduction/intro_017.html.

[xxxvi] William F. Wertz, Jr. and Cruz del Carmen Moreno de Cota, "Spain's the American Carlos III and System," *Schiller Institute*, https://www.schillerinstitute.org/fid_02-06/2004/king…

[xxxvii] Christine Vogel, "The Suppression of the Society of Jesus, 1758-1773," *ieg-ego.eu*, December 3, 2010, http://ieg-ego.eu/en/threads/european-media/european-media-events/christine-vogel-suppression-of-the-society-of-jesus-1758-1773.

[xxxviii] "The Jesuit Order - The Society of Jesus," *zaidpub.com*, https://zaidpub.com/catholic-jesuit-and-knights-of-malta-pdf-files/the-jesuit-order-the-society-of-jesus/.

[xxxix] Alan Lamont, "Vatican, the Jesuits and the New World Order," *Vatican New World Order*, April 7, 2012, http://vaticannewworldorder.blogspot.co.id/2012/04/vatican-jesuits-and-new-world-order.html.

[xl] "Catholic Confidential: Deplorable Jesuit Secrets Revealed," https://www.worldslastchance.com/end-time-prophecy/catholic-confidential--deplorable-jesuit-secrets-revealed.html.

[xli] Bill Hughes, *The Secret Terrorists and the Enemy Unmasked* (Eustis, Florida: Truth Triumphant, 2004), p. 23, https://www.scribd.com/doc/35530756/Bill-Hughes-The-Enemy-Unmasked.

[xlii] Alan Lamont, http://vaticannewworldorder.blogspot.co.id/2012/04/vatican-jesuits-and-new-world-order.html.

[xliii] “Quotes about the Jesuit Order from Famous People,” *scribd.com*, https://www.scribd.com/doc/30408550/Quotes-About-the-Jesuit-Order-From-Famous-People.

[xliv] “Quotes about the Jesuit Order from Famous People,” *scribd.com*, https://www.scribd.com/doc/30408550/Quotes-About-the-Jesuit-Order-From-Famous-People.

[xlv] “Catholic Confidential: Deplorable Jesuit Secrets Revealed,” https://www.worldslastchance.com/end-time-prophecy/catholic-confidential--deplorable-jesuit-secrets-revealed.html.

[xlvi] “What Is the Jesuit Order?” http://mysterybabylon-watch.blogspot.co.id/2011/03/what-is-jesuit-order.html.

[xlvii] “The Templars and Gnosticism,” *Temple of Mysteries* (a blog site), http://www.templeofmysteries.com/the-knights-templar/the-templars-and-gnosticism/.

[xlviii] Valerie Pirie, “Pope Clement XIV,” *pickle-publishing.com*, http://www.pickle-publishing.com/papers/triple-crown-clement-xiv.htm.

[xlix] Ian Paisley, “The Jesuits and Their Strategy to Destroy Britain,” *European Institute of Protestant Studies*, March 11, 2000, http://www.ianpaisley.org/article.asp?ArtKey=jesuits.

[l] “The Vatican and the Jesuits,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/vatican/esp_vatican37.htm.

[li] Kenneth Hoeck, “The Jesuit Connection to the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln,” *truthontheweb.org*, November 1999, http://www.truthontheweb.org/abe.htm.

[lii] Kenneth Hoeck, http://www.truthontheweb.org/abe.htm.

[liii] Charles Chiniquy, Fifty Years in the Church of Rome (London: Protestant Literature Depository, 1886), http://www.biblebelievers.com/chiniquy/

[liv] Kenneth Hoeck, http://www.truthontheweb.org/abe.htm.

[lv] “The Jesuit Order - The Society of Jesus,” https://zaidpub.com/catholic-jesuit-and-knights-of-malta-pdf-files/the-jesuit-order-the-society-of-jesus/.

[lvi] Brian David Anderson, “The Jesuit Conspiracy,” *henrymakow.com*, April 21, 2008, https://www.henrymakow.com/hi_henry_how_many_divorced.html.

[lvii] Michael E. Miller, “’Assassins!’ A Confederate Spy was Accused of Helping Kill Abraham Lincoln. Then he Vanished,” *The Washington Post*, April 13, 2017, https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/retropolis/wp/2017/04/13/assassins-a-confederate-spy-was-accused-of-helping-kill-abraham-lincoln-then-he-vanished/?utm_term=.dbb4bffbd9a8.

[lviii] Burke McCarty, *The Suppressed Truth about the Assassination of Abraham Lincoln* (Washington DC: Lock Box, 1922), p. 230, http://www.spirituallysmart.com/lincoln11.htm

[lix] “End of the Assassins; Execution of Mrs. Surratt, Payne, Herrold and Atzeroth,” *The New York Times*, July 8, 1865, http://www.nytimes.com/1865/07/08/news/end-assassins-execution-mrs-surratt-payne-herrold-atzeroth-their-demeanor.html?pagewanted=all.

[lx] “The Jesuits are a Military Religious Order of the Roman Catholic Church,” *biblebelievers.org*, https://www.biblebelievers.org.au/jesuits.htm.

[lxi] Kenneth Hoeck, http://www.truthontheweb.org/abe.htm.

[lxii] “The Jesuit Heart Attack Gun,” *reptiliandimension.wordpress.com* (a blog site), February 16, 2016, https://reptiliandimension.wordpress.com/2016/02/16/the-jesuit-heart-attack-gun/.

[lxiii] Henry Makow, “Rothschilds Murdered at least Seven US Presidents,” *henrymakow.com*, March 9, 2017, https://www.henrymakow.com/002009.html.

[lxiv] Michael Sickler, “Abraham Lincoln and John F. Kennedy: Two Great Presidents of the United States Assassinated for the Cause of Justice,” *michaeljournal.org* (a blog site), October 1, 2003, http://www.michaeljournal.org/articles/politics/item/abraham-lincoln-and-john-f-kennedy.

[lxv] Robert F. Kennedy, Jr., “John F. Kennedy’s Vision of Peace,” *Rolling Stone*, November 20, 2013, http://www.rollingstone.com/politics/news/john-f-kennedys-vision-of-peace-20131120.

[lxvi] Edward Curtain, “Allen Dulles’ ‘Indonesian Strategy’ and the Assassination of John F. Kennedy,” *International People’s Tribunal*, book review of Greg Poulgrain, *The Incubus of Intervention: Conflicting Indonesian Strategies of John F. Kennedy and Allen Dulles*, June 12, 2016, http://www.tribunal1965.org/en/allen-dulles-indonesian-strategy-and-the-assassination-of-john-f-kennedy/.

[lxvii] Matt Novak, “The Story behind that JFK Quote about Destroying the CIA,” *Gizmodo's Paleofuture*, March 10, 2017, https://paleofuture.gizmodo.com/the-

story-behind-that-jfk-quote-about-destroying-the-ci-1793151211.

[lxviii] John F. Kennedy, “The President and the Press: Address before the American Newspaper Publishers Association,” April 27, 1961, *John F. Kennedy Presidential Library and Museum*, https://www.jfklibrary.org/Research/Research-Aids/JFK-Speeches/American-Newspaper-Publishers-Association_19610427.aspx.

[lxix] “The Titanic was Sunk Deliberately to Create the Federal Reserve,” *conspiracyblog.com*, http://theconspiracyblog.com/conspiracies/u-s-government/federal-reserve-treasury-dept/534-the-titanic-was-sunk-deliberately-to-create-the-federal-reserve.

[lxx] Paul O’Donnell, “How Much was Titanic Victim John Astor Worth?” *CNBC*, April 16, 2012, https://www.cnbc.com/id/47062167.

[lxxi] “Federal Reserve – The Enemy of America,” *apfn.org*, http://www.apfn.org/apfn/reserve2.htm.

[lxxii] “Catholic Confidential: Deplorable Jesuit Secrets Revealed,” https://www.worldslastchance.com/end-time-prophecy/catholic-confidential--deplorable-jesuit-secrets-revealed.html.

[lxxiii] “Jesuit Infiltration,” YouTube video, interview of Alberto Rivera, 36:39, posted on March 6, 2013, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=1V75En7Keq4.

[lxxiv] Dr. Alberto Rivera, Ex-Jesuit Priest,” *spirituallysmart.com* (a blog site), http://spirituallysmart.com/alberto.html.

[lxxv] Greg Szymanski, “Confessions to the Jesuits No. 39: Christians Need to Know the Dangers of Jesuit Freemasonry,” *greganthonysjournal.wordpress.com* (a blog site), December 16, 2010, https://greganthonysjournal.wordpress.com/2010/12/16/confession-to-the-jesuits-no-39-christians-need-to-know-the-dangers-of-jesuit-freemasonry/#more-112.

[lxxvi] Christopher Lamb, “Latin American Moment for Catholicism after Jesuits Elect Venezuelan ‘Black Pope,’” The Tablet, October 14, 2016, http://www.thetablet.co.uk/news/6271/0/latin-american-moment-for-catholicism-after-jesuits-elect-venezuelan-black-pope-.

[lxxvii] Greg Szymanski, “Ex-Guatemala Bishop – Jesuits are Spiritual Controllers of NWO,” *rense.com*, September 25, 2006, http://rense.com/general73/ener.htm.

[lxxviii] “Jesuits to pay $166 Million to Settle Sex Abuse Claims,” *Associated Press/CBS News*, March 25, 2011, https://www.cbsnews.com/news/jesuits-to-pay-166m-to-settle-sex-abuse-claims/.

[lxxix] Randal C. Archibald, “San Diego Diocese Settles Lawsuit for $200 Million,” *The New York Times*, September 8, 2007,

http://www.nytimes.com/2007/09/08/us/08church.html.

[lxxx] Peter Jamison, “Let Him Prey: High-Ranking Jesuits Helped Keep Pedophile Priest Hidden,” *San Francisco Weekly*, May 25, 2011, https://archives.sfweekly.com/sanfrancisco/let-him-prey-high-ranking-jesuits-helped-keep-pedophile-priest-hidden/Content?oid=2181662.

[lxxxi] “The Jesuits,” *Jesuits.org*, http://jesuits.org/aboutus.

[lxxxii] “Society of Jesus,” *Wikipedia*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Society_of_Jesus.

[lxxxiii] “Colleges and Universities: The Great 28,” *Association of Jesuit Colleges and Universities*, http://www.ajcunet.edu/institutions/.

[lxxxiv] “List of Jesuit Educational Institutions,” *Wikipedia*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_Jesuit_educational_institutions.

[lxxxv] “Jesuit College Alumni Comprise 10% of 115th U.S. Congress,” *Association of Jesuit Colleges and Universities*, http://www.ajcunet.edu/press-releases-blog/2017/1/3/jesuit-university-alumni-comprise-10-of-115th-us-congress.

[lxxxvi] Alan Lamont, “The New World Order Union of Jesuit Alumni,” *Vatican New World Order*, June 9, 2012, http://vaticannewworldorder.blogspot.co.id/2012/06/world-union-of-jesuit-alumni-search.html.

[lxxxvii] Christopher J. Hale, “What Tim Kaine, Donald Trump and Pope Francis,” Time Magazine, July 23, 2016, http://time.com/4420430/tim-kaine-catholic-abortion/.

[lxxxviii] “Religious Affiliations of Presidents of the United States,” *Wikipedia*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Religious_affiliations_of_Presidents_of_the_United_States.

[lxxxix] “List of Vice Presidents of the United States by Religious Affiliation,” *Wikipedia*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_Vice_Presidents_of_the_United_States_by_religious_affiliation.

[xc] Ephrat Livni, “The Historic Shift of the US Supreme Court’s Religious Makeup (Plus or Minus a Gorsuch),” *Quartz*, May 3, 2017, https://qz.com/588519/why-its-so-difficult-to-build-a-hydrogen-bomb/.

[xci] Greg Szymanski, “Vatican, Witchcraft and Top US Officials,” *rense.com*, November 9, 2006, http://rense.com/general74/vattt.htm.

[xcii] Rob Hilson, “The Pope is the World’s Defensive Coordinator,” *Vatican New World Order*, May 10, 2012,

http://vaticannewworldorder.blogspot.co.id/2012/05/pope-is-worlds-defensive-coordinator-by.html.

[xciii] “Get to Know Us Alumni,” Joseph Dunford interview, *St. Michael’s College*, http://www.smcvt.edu/pages/get-to-know-us/alumni/dunford-joseph.aspx

[xciv] Amanda Dixon, “America’s 10 Biggest Banks,” *Bankrate.com*, June 26, 2017, http://www.bankrate.com/banking/americas-top-10-biggest-banks/#slide=1.

[xcv] Sherman H. Skolnick, “The Pope’s Three Banks... in America,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, July 12, 1999, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/vatican/esp_vatican61.htm.

[xcvi] “How the Roman Catholic Church Claimed Ownership of the Entire World,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, December 14, 2015, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/vatican/esp_vatican159.htm.

[xcvii] “The Rothschilds are Jesuits,” https://geopolitics.co/2015/04/08/the-rothschilds-are-jesuits/.

[xcviii] “The Rothschild Family is Worth $500 Trillion,” *Investment Watch Blog*, June 1, 2017, http://investmentwatchblog.com/the-rothschild-family-is-worth-500-trillion/.

[xcix] Isaac Davis, “Rothschild Family Wealth is Five Times That of World’s Top 8 Billionaires Combined,” *Waking Times*, January 20, 2017, http://www.wakingtimes.com/2017/01/20/rothschild-family-wealth-five-times-worlds-top-8-billionaires-combined/.

[c] Dr. Eowyn, “The Satanic Rothschild,” *Fellowship of the Minds*, February 19, 2011, https://fellowshipoftheminds.com/2011/02/19/the-satanic-rothschild/.

[ci] “Owners of the Empire - The Vatican, the Crown and the District of Columbia,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, January 18, 2014, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_globalelite177.htm.

[cii] “The Rothschilds are Jesuits,” https://geopolitics.co/2015/04/08/the-rothschilds-are-jesuits/.

[ciii] “America will soon Lose its Constitution,” *Pacific Institute*, http://www.pacinst.com/america.htm.

[civ] Alexander Light, “The Catholic Church is the Biggest Financial Power on Earth,” *Humans Are Free*, March 2012, http://humansarefree.com/2012/03/christian-church-is-biggest-financial.html.

[cv] Anders, “Pope Francis – Head of Masonic One-World Religion,” *new.euro-med.dk*, May 19, 2016, http://new.euro-med.dk/20160519-pope-francis-head-of-

masonic-one-world-religion-and-patron-of-islam-commandment-of-baptism-just-as-imperialistic-as-islam.php.

[cvi] Patrick Knox, “Global Threat: Why World War 3 could Happen in 2017 – Threats from North Korea, Syria, Putin and ISIS are Worse than during the Cold War,” *The Sun*, August 31, 2017, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/2503419/world-war-3-2017-north-korea-syria-putin-isis-cold-war-missile/.

[cvii] Jan van Aken and Edward Hammond, “Genetic Engineering and Biological Weapons,” EMBO Reports, June 4, 2003, https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC1326447/.

[cviii] K. Ganesan, S.K. Raza and R. Vijayaraghavan, “Chemical Warfare Agents,” *Journal of Pharmacological Bioallied Science*, July-September 2010, https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC3148621/.

[cix] Joachim Hagopian, “The Global Warming Hoax, Paris Climate Accord and NWO Global Governance,” *Lew Rockwell*, April 25, 2016, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2016/04/joachim-hagopian/global-warming-hoax/.

[cx] Russel McLendon, “11 Startling Stats about Earth’s Disappearing Wildlife,” *Mother Nature Network*, October 27, 2016, https://www.mnn.com/earth-matters/wilderness-resources/blogs/11-startling-stats-about-earths-disappearing-wildlife.

[cxi] “Four Countries Face Famine Threat as Global Food Crisis Deepens,” *Reuters*, March 31, 2017, http://www.reuters.com/article/us-global-food-famine/four-countries-face-famine-threat-as-global-food-crisis-deepens-idUSKBN1721JZ.

[cxii] Nafeed Ahmed, “”Brace for the Oil, Food and Financial Crash of 2018,” *Insurge Intelligence*, January 5, 2017, https://medium.com/insurge-intelligence/brace-for-the-financial-crash-of-2018-b2f81f85686b.

[cxiii] Anthony Watts, “Overpopulation: The Fallacy behind the Fallacy of Global Warming,” *Watts up with That?* January 5, 2014, https://wattsupwiththat.com/2014/01/05/overpopulation-the-fallacy-behind-the-fallacy-of-global-warming/.

[cxiv] Joachim Hagopian, “The Globalists’ New World Order: Soft and hard Kill Methods. An Unknown and Uncertain Future,” *Global Research*, May 23, 2015, http://www.globalresearch.ca/the-globalists-new-world-order-soft-and-hard-kill-methods-an-unknown-and-uncertain-future/5451356.

[cxv] “Why does the World Shadow Government destroy its own Home (Planet)?” *Cosmic Convergence*, May 24, 2012, http://cosmicconvergence.org/?p=900.

[cxvi] Joachim Hagopian, “The Dumbing Down of America – by Design,” Global Research, August 14, 2014, http://www.globalresearch.ca/the-dumbing-down-of-america-by-design/5395928.

[cxvii] “Vatican Calls Meeting to Discuss Global Depopulation Agenda for New World Order,” *Alternative News Network*, August 7, 2017, http://www.alternativenewsnetwork.net/vatican-calls-meeting-to-discuss-global-depopulation-agenda-for-new-world-order/.

[cxviii] Brandon Smith, “Understanding Evil: From globalism to Pizzagate,” *Zero Hedge*, December 8, 2016, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2016-12-08/understanding-evil-globalism-pizzagate.

[cxix] Robert Morrow, “Jeb Bush, Oliver North and the Murder of the CIA Drug Smuggler Barry Seal in 1986,” *Daily Kos*, April 4, 2013, https://www.dailykos.com/stories/2013/04/03/1199001/-Jeb-Bush-Oliver-North-and-the-Murder-of-CIA-Drug-Smuggler-Barry-Seal-in-1986.

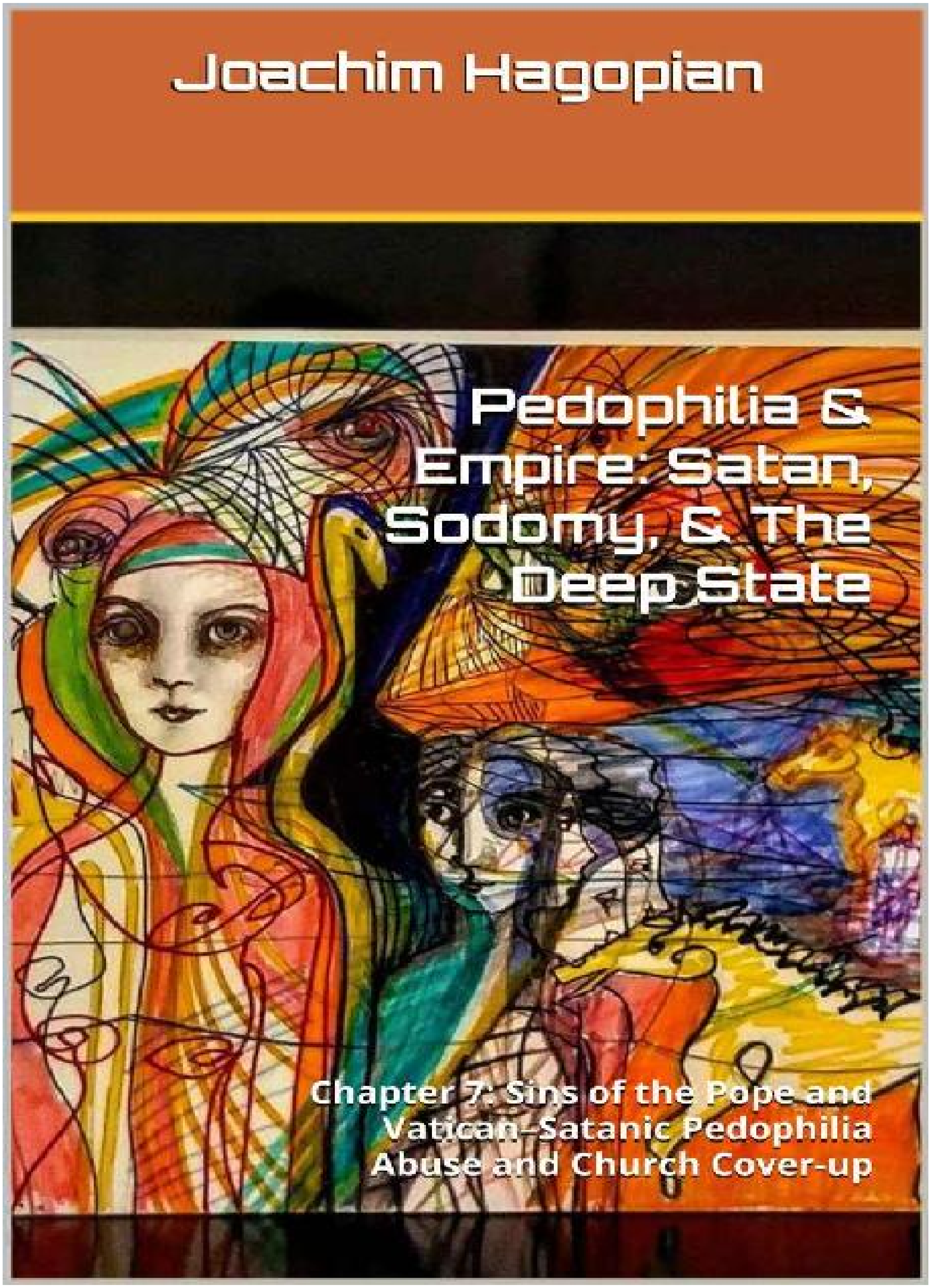

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 7: Sins of the Pope and Vatican–Satanic Pedophilia Abuse and Church Cover-up

Chapter 7: Sins of the Pope and Vatican–Satanic Pedophilia Abuse and Church Cover-up

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission

http://www.noramaccoby.com/

A unifying theme of the pope, Vatican and secret societies like the Jesuit and Malta Orders is their despicable way they've all historically protected their child rapists within their corrupt satanically controlled church. Over the last quarter century the pedophilia scandal has exposed the evil of monumental proportions long embedded within the institution of Catholicism. And with still breaking headlines, the Church's pedophilia epidemic is a plague that the Catholic Church will never fully recover from. Pope Francis as history's last Catholic pope is busily ensuring that fated globalist outcome,[1] using every chance he gets to usher in his own brand of one world religion with him and it as the necessary "New Age" replacement for Christianity.[2] But neither he nor our world leaders can convince educated and informed citizens of the world that Satan doesn't rule over the whole lot of them. Bottom line - anyone who derives power from sodomizing and murdering defenseless little children is Satan incarnate.

Rather than get lost in all the morbid details of the over ten million individual reported cases of child rape committed by thousands if not millions of priests, bishops, cardinals and probable popes, a singular focus on one particularly disturbing case bears witness to elucidating how the pope and Vatican have typically dealt with pedophilia amongst their own clergy.[3] The infamous case of Marcial Maciel Degollado (1920-2008) vividly illustrates how those in power have willfully covered up and succumbed to $atan's values and not God's,[4] permitting the sins of one charismatic long known pedophile in their midst who happened to be the most successful fundraiser in Catholic Church history.[5] The founding priest of the wealthily widow-endowed Catholic order - Legionaries for Christ - was a Roman Catholic hustler from Mexico who for over half a century led a secret, perversely dark double life.

Father Maciel the gentle, benevolent, "devoutly" religious, "all-wise" man is said to have sexually preyed upon anywhere from 20-100 children (though no doubt plenty more) over the course of his lengthy Catholic career. After abusing children decade after decade, at age 56, Maciel told a 19-year old woman he wanted to settle down and raise a family with her, and ended up fathering three sons (two biological), the two older ones unspared as future rape victims.[6] Outside his secret family, Maciel also sired a daughter who later surfaced as an adult. His young surrogate wife was totally gullible and believed her imposter husband when he said he had to be called away on assignment working for the CIA, regularly leaving his family behind to greedily tend to his booming biz as a Catholic con man pedophile. His 1941 founded movement began swelling in wealth due to his predatorily targeting rich widows like the wives of a former Venezuelan president and Mexican industrialist, reaching a net worth at its zenith in 2004 of a whopping $650 million.[7] [8]

Eventually in 1990 his 70-year old perverted life still ascending its meteoric climb within the greedy Catholic Church suddenly became a lot more complicated when his victim accusers began emerging. By 1997 nine of his abuse victims - most of whom Maciel's seminary students back in Mexico - had gone public.[9] The first to start making waves was a young boy from his seminary who grew into a conflicted adult priest compelled to come forth to try and stop the out of control predator. Only the Vatican and Pope

John Paul II seeing only dollar signs wouldn't listen or respond. Even four years after public allegations had been lodged against Maciel, Pope John Paul was still raving how the pedophile was "an efficacious guide to youth."[10] For many years while in charge of investigating pedophilia in the church during John Paul's watch, Cardinal Ratzinger knew Maciel was still raping children but continued publicly lauding history's biggest church moneymaker.[11] Finally as Pope Benedict, after over a decade and a half of multiple victims reporting his abusive crimes, there grew far too much evidence to continue sweeping Maciel's sins under the rug, so in 2006 the pope was forced to take action, gently placing his 86-year old pervert pastor out to pasture to live "a reserved life of prayer and penitence."[12] A year and a half later it took death to finally stop him from harming more children. Though the father promised he'd leave a generous inheritance for his "secret" family, true to his deceitful sleazy character, he didn't, prompting his sexually abused biological son to attempt to make a deal to stay quiet for a cool $26 million. But the Legion of Christ refused, and a contentious lawsuit followed.[13]

Of course when asked about this grotesque case of Vatican enabling a monster to remain on the loose for over half a century, in 2015 Pope Francis finally addressed the elephant in the room pretending he barely even knew of the case, even having the nerve to praise his two predecessor popes for how they "judiciously handled" the troublesome pedophile case.[14] Pope Francis is no different from all his predecessors, proving that he also buries the truth. His "all words and no action" response to the epidemic in his church is failing to help victims nor is he stopping further abuse.[15] Earlier this year the only rape survivor on the Vatican's Papal Commission on the Protection of Minors resigned in protest after Francis defied commission recommendations aimed at halting the church blight. In one hypocritical breath the pope claims a zero tolerance policy making profuse apologies for the damage his church has caused,[16] and then in the next moment he backstabs victims by reversing notorious pedophiles’ sentences from being defrocked to a lifetime of prayer and penance.[17] Meanwhile, an Italian criminal court just convicted one of his re-frocked pedo priests for sodomizing five children as young as 12. The liberal-minded pope emphasizes mercy to rapists while further violating victims by blatantly refusing to do them any justice, ensuring the wrong message is sent to his legions of still frocked pedophiles still raping kids around the world.

Pope critics maintain that the pontiff is merely placating and grandstanding when he so often engages in lofty anti-child abuse rhetoric yet fails to back up his nice sounding words and sentiments with any real action to make things better. The current pope is merely an actor whose job is simply to placate the wounded while disingenuously conveying “a righteous tough new stand” against church pedophiles that he has no intention of holding accountable. Yet all the pope really needs to do to enact effective change is add one little amendment that would alter pedophilia in his church forever.[18] By design, current canon law has always maintained the policy of secrecy and protectionism favoring the guilty. The unanimous recommendation from everyone serious about cleaning house of the long rampant church wickedness is simply to tack on these words of action to existing canon law:

All church personnel are obliged to report suspected abuse to the civil authorities.

As a therapist in the US and mandated reporter of child sexual abuse, I can vouch that all mental health professionals as well as medical and educational personnel by law in America decades ago were made legally obligated mandated reporters of any suspected sexual child abuse encountered both in or outside the therapeutic setting.[19] And for over 20 years the Vatican has chosen to consistently thumb its nose at the repeated recommendation of Catholic Bishops Conferences held in Ireland, Great Britain, the United States and Australia, all urging the Church to follow suit, under canon law to mandate similar sex abuse reporting requirements to law enforcement.[20] With just his signature alone, the pope has the absolute authoritative power to amend canon law to make mandatory reporting a done deal. But as long as Francis continues only paying lip service, knuckling under pressure from his pedophilic Curia, just buying more time with empty platitudes and meaningless promises while refusing to make the most glaringly obvious breakthrough change needed, it remains status quo business as usual for all the pedophiles being so obviously protected by the current pope and Vatican. In 2014 even the globalist United Nations Committees on the Rights of Children requested Francis to impose mandated reporting and the pope replied that it would interfere with the independence of sovereign states,[21] which is a totally irrelevant, bogus excuse to avoid doing the too obvious righteous thing, evoking the irrelevant reality that both the Vatican and Order of Malta Knights remain immune from any and all outside legal authority, in and of itself a gross miscarriage of justice.

Anyone can see that the real reason why the pope continues to refuse changing canon law - the church’s top echelon of power is crawling with sick, wicked Satan worshipping child rapists whose intentions are to continue inflicting damage on young kids just because the criminals in charge have a license for impunity. It’s the same reason why the Jimmy Saviles, the Edward Heaths, the Clintons and Podestas of the world live out their own perverted evil lives destroying countless others, all the while escaping justice. America still awaits Trump to make good on his vow to lock Hillary up,[22] along with all the rest of his countless broken campaign promises, just like his “same as the old boss” predecessor Obama.[23]

Another diabolical strategy coming from the Vatican legal department to effectively avert justice for tens of thousands of lifelong traumatized victims of pedophilia is for local church archdioceses to maliciously divert funding streams from victim abuse settlement allocation for upkeep and maintenance of obscenely fine trimmed lawns at church cemeteries.[24] This shows just how low the Catholic institution will go in criminal audacity to legally claim bankruptcy and deny financial compensation to legions of harmed victims. Meanwhile the Vatican is literally sitting on tons of gold and the Roman Catholic corporation is the richest in the entire world. According to anti-Catholic activist Jack Chick:

The Catholic Church is the biggest financial power, wealth accumulator and property owner in existence. She is a greater possessor of material riches than any other single institution, corporation, bank, giant trust, government or state of the whole globe.[25]

The Catholic institution is the largest,[26] most expansive and richest organization in the world controlling one fourth of the world’s gold supply. [27] So this shameless, bogusly deceitful ploy used by dozens of archdioceses across the US in recent years to throw a serious impediment kink into the legal machine effectively prolongs and stalls lawsuits in court from ever reaching settlement as a convenient highly effective means of denying compensation to tens of thousands of deserving victims.[28] Rome’s global objective is to create roadblocks in the court system rendering it impossible for rape victims to justly be awarded damages. The Church will spend millions to ensure that those they’ve damaged for life get nothing while falsely pretending to not have enough money to compensate those they harm. The hubris and psychopathic soullessness of these Satan worshipping low lifes are nothing short of an assault on our children, our humanity and good people everywhere.

Under the pretext of “religious freedom,” back in 2007 then Milwaukee Archbishop Timothy Dolan sought and received Vatican approval to divert $57 million to suddenly caring for mausoleums and cemeteries as the thinly veiled excuse to then file bankruptcy rather than rightfully caring for the injured human beings his church has wounded.[29] [30] Years later in 2015 his secret Vatican deal was uncovered and successfully challenged in court. Under his watch, the notorious Milwaukee archdiocese had at least 45 priests charged with pedophilia, one raping nearly 200 deaf boys. In view of the declared bankruptcy, in August 2015 the Milwaukee archdiocese announced a secretly agreed upon mediation amount of $21 million designated to compensate 330 victims, leaving 240 other victims out in the cold with nothing, in effect, pitting victim against victim.[31]

With an average victim settlement of $300,000 across America, the average Wisconsin disbursement has allocated only $50,000 per claimant for little more than half the Milwaukee victims and zero for the rest as the lowest, least equitable compensation of any archdiocese throughout the United States.[32] Moreover, from 1980 to 1995 a considerable number of civil suits were filed in Wisconsin. But Dolan and the Vatican pressured the State Supreme Court in 1995 to rule that the church could no longer be sued for sex abuse.[33] Thus, in states like Wisconsin, the courts have colluded with the Catholic Church to unjustly thwart fair compensation for victims. Adding insult to injury, because the Milwaukee case had dragged on for nearly a decade, bankruptcy lawyers ended up receiving twice the amount as the victims.

Earlier this year two Montana dioceses, one with 72 sex abuse victims and the other with over 400 are electing to follow suit and file bankruptcy in response to compensation claims.[34] This official church response - re-victimizing those whom the church has already severely injured, is no less than an overt ungodly, diabolical manipulation. But then since overwhelming evidence has demonstrated for some time now that Satan rules over the Vatican and the Catholic Church, this reprehensible move comes as no surprise but one more telling sign revealing who the Catholic Church truly serves, and it's definitely neither God nor its 1.2 billion followers.

The same ex-Milwaukee archbishop Timothy Dolan was subsequently rewarded a promotion to Cardinal representing America's largest Archdiocese in New York City, undoubtedly for being the first to apply the church bankruptcy loophole that would otherwise deny rightful victims their proper due while saving billions for the already filthy rich Vatican. When Pope Benedict resigned, Dolan's dedication for "selling his soul to the devil's church" even elevated him to vie as a viable candidate to be the next pope. Timothy Dolan's back in the news again, still maniacally finagling his Church of Satan, I mean Catholicism, in pursuit of yet more ways to screw over abuse victims, this time in New York State. From 2007-2015 he and his Church have spent over $2.1 million to effectively quash the state's Child Victims Act. [35] The corporate merger of the state-Catholic tag team has been fully operational over this last decade to ensure the victims' bill dies in Albany where it will never even be put to vote. Passing it would raise the statute of limitations to file sex abuse civil suits from age 23 all the way up to age 50 and felony criminal cases up to the 28th birthday.

Because victims often delay even considering taking on the additional stress and burden of having to relive and endure a childhood rape case through long drawn out court proceedings against an assailant from the mighty Catholic Church, especially when still young, reopening not-so-old wounds and trauma as a sexually abused minor turned young adult is too much for too many, only to later find that by mid-20's their statute of limitation has already run out. To circumvent that all too common fate amongst hapless victims, this Child Victims Act of New York would afford more time for survivors turned legal claimants to emotionally and psychologically prepare for the hardship of pursuing charges in a court of law. This calculated sabotage by the church and New York senators preventing passage of the bill is just one more sinister way the Vatican's able to skirt its moral and fiscal responsibility to make amends to those they've harmed who are most in need.

Because state statutes for child victims abused in the last century have all but run out, justice will never be served for millions of now older abuse survivors in America and around the world. Only four states have done what New York has refused to do, extend their statute windows for victims to file beyond the previous state law. But already in two of those four states that briefly permitted molestation survivors an additional small extension of only three years to file, time ran out in 2016 in both Minnesota and Hawaii.[36] Plus to ward off payouts on anticipated new lawsuits, the Minneapolis archdiocese also filed bankruptcy status back in 2015. The highest priority of so many "bankrupted" dioceses claiming no more funds has been to deny victim compensation and support - a sad and cruel joke considering the enormity of the Vatican's hidden wealth, and forecloses any possibility of justice for last century's victims. Advocating for victim abuse law extensions may appear a just and worthy cause were it not for the big money doled out by Dolan and his Vatican to kill laws from ever getting passed, resulting in the current impasse at the New York state senate. At this point educating and protecting our young about the degenerate satanic Catholic Church now seems a far more productive and prudently wise choice.

Still more sinister collusion between church and state has been uncovered in the UK that indicates the partners-in-crime have diabolically ganged up on child sex victims they've harmed by deploying yet another legal loophole. Since 2012 in order to shamefully deny 693 victims as young as 12 financial court damages, a government agency is claiming the minors gave consent and therefore are being denied fair compensation.[37] This outrageous twist of both logic and the law is allowing child rapists in the Catholic Church and the UK government to escape justice, denying victims financial awards for damages despite solid evidence that pedophile crimes were committed against children. No child can ever give consent to be sexually abused, that's why adults engaging in sexual acts with underage children is a crime and against the law in the first place. But in order to save money in settlement cases by clearly circumventing existing law, now that the legal precedent has been set, this latest egregious tactic being exploited by psychopathic scum across the pond may spread to America and other places in the world when it should immediately be stopped dead in its tracks. But both government and the Catholic Church are proven joint criminal operators possessing an extensive history of impunity when it comes to getting away with harming innocent victims.

To gain insight into just how depraved the crumbling moral foundation of the Catholic Church and its leaders have become, it's worth noting the work of longtime Jesuit priest, bestselling author, exorcist (that the movie of the same name profiled) and courageous Vatican whistleblower the late Malachi Martin. In his 1990 book, *The Keys of This Blood*, Martin exposes his own Roman Catholic Church for all its vile evil while serving in Rome on June 29, 1963, when a satanic ritual was actually held inside the Vatican's St. Paul's

Chapel, a mere week after Pope Paul VI [1963-1978] was elected the new pope:

> *Most frighteningly for [Pope] John Paul [II] [1978-2005], he had come up against the irremovable presence of a malign strength in his own Vatican and in certain bishops' chanceries. It was what knowledgeable Churchmen called the 'super force.' Rumors, always difficult to verify, tied its installation to the beginning of Pope Paul VI's reign in 1963. Indeed Paul had alluded somberly to 'the smoke of Satan which has entered the Sanctuary'… an oblique reference to an enthronement ceremony by Satanists in the Vatican. Besides, the incidence of Satanic pedophilia-rites and practices - was already documented among certain bishops and priests as widely dispersed as Turin, in Italy, and South Carolina, in the United States. The cultic acts of Satanic pedophilia are considered by professionals to be the culmination of the Fallen Archangel's rites.*[38] [39]

This bombshell of an admission about sizes up the Catholic brand of Satanism practiced at the Vatican and its widespread pedophilia practiced around the globe by thousands of protected child rapists wearing priestly garb, for centuries perpetrated against our most defenseless human population. Pope Paul VI called for a "New World Order," surrounding himself with infiltrated Freemasons.[40] Under his watch, Satanists were let out of the closet at the Vatican. The church had been covering up pedophilia as long as priests have been sodomizing children, which Vatican archives confirm has been as far back as the early Middle Ages, when both the Templar and Malta Knights were in their glorious heyday no doubt joining in on the demonic action.[41]

With the Vatican working secretly in direct cahoots with royal Illuminati bloodlines and the international crime cabal government, pedophilia has been the singular epicenter gristmill that's proliferated both Satan's tangible rise and growing power on this earth.[42] Our abused children are literally being fed to the demons as sacrificial lifeblood for their demonic sustenance and very survival. Today's pedophilia epidemic, the defiling of our innocents en masse, their ritualistic torture, drinking of their adrenalized blood, and their satanic mass sacrifice, attract and empower the most potent supernatural, diabolically driven, inter dimensional forces from hell that fuel all war, pestilence, poverty, murder, greed, avarice and deception currently plaguing our planet like never before.

Passivity, denial, and escapism are as much our enemy as the rapists and killers of our children, for the latter can only persist if enabled by the former. Meanwhile, as further cold hard evidence of this shocking reality, Pope Francis' right hand man - Cardinal George Pell - as the highest ranking prelate in church history is now facing pedophile charges back in his native Australia.[43] And within a couple days after he left Rome, police were busting a cocaine tooting homosexual orgy at the Vatican home of priests employed on the papacy council to reduce pedophilia in the Catholic Church…[44] yet more proof that the fox guards the underage henhouse as the rapists' guaranteed ticket to impunity.

While Father Malachi reported in a 1996 interview that per an internal Vatican document, 1-2% of all Catholic priests are practicing Satanists involved in satanic ritual sexual abuse of children,[45] last year Pope Francis admitted that 2% of his priests, bishops and cardinals are pedophiles.[46] However, it's been determined that from 1950-2010, 7% of all the priests in Australia (that's 1 in 14) were reported to be pedophiles.[47] In one order that began services in Australia in 1947, a Knights of Malta offshoot calling itself the Order of St. John of God Brothers had an incredible 40.4% of their clergy accused of being child molesters.[48] Rarely have any Australian priests ever been arrested and gone to prison. Perhaps the country's worst case offender may have sexually assaulted up to 1,000 children before his conviction for molesting 52 children.[49] As of 1994 the 82-year old has been serving a 28 year sentence. But for every guilty priest doing time, literally thousands of traumatized child victims have either been ignored or punished, and too often plagued the rest of their lives by demons delivered years earlier by their rapist priest.

The BishopAccountability.org website that tracks pedophile cases and cover-ups states that 5.6% of priests in America from 1950-2013 are/were child rapists.[50] [51] That's more than 1 in 19. Considering that the power differential between priests' authority operating in Third World nations and their child victims is far more pronounced, the rates of pedophilia in the developing world have to be far worse. Then on top of that, as in all sex crimes, 20 incidents of pedophilia rape go unreported for every one case that does reach the historically complicit authorities.[52] Knowing the actual pedo crime rate is far higher than the alarming rates reported in Australia and America, the Pope, his Vatican and secret military orders as supposed spiritual and moral authorities have hypocritically spearheaded the global epidemic raging out of control today, and with the world's top power players sworn to following the pope's lead, is it really any wonder?

Since so much evidence singles out the pope as a central figure in this grand scale human tragedy being played out in this 21st century, let's take a brief look at Pope Francis' own shady track record where a litany of unanswered questions still linger, begging for the light of truth to be shed. The one time that Gorge Bergoglio the cardinal was interviewed in 2010 about his past history in Argentina, investigators concluded that his responses were highly evasive, strongly indicating he was less than honest in holding back self-incriminating information.[53] Additionally, it's been determined that Bergoglio personally intervened in at least five separate cases where he aided,[54] abetted and otherwise protected guilty pedophiles from prison, allowing his clergy to rape more children prior to offenders' ultimate arrest and conviction. In contrast, when victims' families sought his help to apprehend perpetrators from further abusing children, Bergoglio flatly refused to meet with them or assist then in any way.

Moreover, as the Proventil head of the Catholic Jesuits in Argentina during the military junta dictatorship's "dirty war" back in the 1970's and 80's, the pope-to-be demonstrated a blatant policy that supported the military's abduction,[55] torture and murder by junta death squads responsible for thousands of missing Argentinian citizens. Documents show that Bergoglio even betrayed fellow Jesuit priests, turning in their names along with six of their parishioners from the poor slums to the junta.[56] After enduring months of torture in captivity, two priests managed to survive but their half dozen innocent followers remain among the disappeared as blood on Bergoglio's hands. Evidence clearly shows that the future pope made a secret deal with his junta dictators, in exchange for cooperating, calling their deadly US backed regime "patriotism," in effect supporting their democide, Bergoglio's payoff made him a rising star within the Catholic Church as necessary "grooming" for his present Vatican gig as the New World Order Jesuit wolf in sheep's clothing.

The latest stream of truth leaking out are accusations from a former Argentine junta official now living in Spain who provided sworn testimony insisting that the current pope "is a prime mover" in the massive global child sex trafficking network, and has been for quite some time.[57] During the insider's tenure within the junta dictatorship that lasted from 1976-1983, Bergoglio is charged with running a child trafficking ring through his Jesuit Catholic orphanages, exploiting and abusing children whose parents were murdered. Cases are on record where rounded up pregnant mothers were allowed to give birth only to be slain and their newborns automatically fed into Bergoglio's global trafficking network.

With so much over-the-top debauchery and sin now exposing the Catholic Church on a regular basis like never before, who can actually dispute Father Malachi's disturbing claims made two decades ago that Satan is controlling the world's largest Christian church? At 53%, 1.2 billion Catholics comprise the majority of Christians[58] belonging to the planet's largest religion Christianity at 2.2 billion people.[59] But despite still being the largest religious denomination in the world, in recent years believers have become non-believers in droves as 60% of Catholics today are over 65 years of age.[60] Pope Francis and his Church are drowning in a cesspool controlled by Luciferian pedophiles.[61] Every single day more of us with eyes wide open are recognizing the evildoers' "eyes wide shut."[62] All of these confirmed facts indisputably demonstrate that pedophilia is the ruling elite's Achilles Heel, and the best chance humanity will ever have at taking back our mother earth before 90-95% of us die as the elite's depopulation targets.[63]

Under Satan's not so secret banner, clearly a coalition of evildoers in charge have been victimizing children for centuries. Various alt media factions argue over which group is actually in control or the worst offender, the Freemasons, the Pope, Vatican, Jesuits, Malta Knights, the Templars, the Illuminati Satanists, the CFR, Trilateral Commission, the Bilderbergers, the Skull and Bones-ers, Committee of 300 and on and on it goes… and then there's "the Jews." Because a minute fraction of "the Jews" tend to hold court in the entertainment, media and banking worlds so much,[64][65] and through crypto-Jew infiltration of the Jesuits,[66] Freemasons,[67] governments and other religions as well as pervasive bribery and blackmail Israel and AIPAC hold near absolute sway and control over compromised US politicians and US Empire foreign policy,[68] [69] many in the so called truth movement angrily point fingers at a handful of the most powerful Jews on earth as the true culprit most deserving to roast in hell.[70] Many specifically call out and blame the Ashkenazi Khazarian Jews that comprise 80-90% of today's world Jewish population having zero genetic lineage or rights to claim Palestine or any part of the Middle East as their sacred homeland since their ancestors likely never set foot there.[71] Despite vociferous opposition, some of the latest findings continue pointing to an Ashkenazi origin located in northeastern Turkey, not the Middle East.[72] In any event, "blaming the Jews" as the root of all evil is way too simplistic, not to mention too easily dismissible as so much venomous, anti-Semitic rhetoric.

There's plenty of justifiable blame for centuries of wrongdoing to go around, and let's face it, all these evil demented psychopaths wouldn't hesitate to throw their own mothers under an approaching bus if it meant avoiding both truth and justice from ever catching up to them. For millenniums they've been masterminds at utilizing the blame game to divide and conquer us, sliced and diced in every which categorical way,[73] manipulating Americans today into such a hateful frenzied division not seen since the Civil War. Charlottesville was nothing more than just another provocateur staged drama designed to ignite race war,[74] a preplanned violent kickoff to Soros' summer of chaos,[75] i.e., another episodic deep state race war trigger pulled a la the "Charleston massacre" two years ago.[76] So rather than face off against each other as duped, divided and conquered fools, we need to unite against our true enemy, all the Satan worshipping elitist groups and their despicable crimes against all of us, our common humanity and our precious children. Every one of the aforementioned Illuminati criminals is guilty as sin. To split hairs quibbling over who's the most evil or guilty seems a pointless, unproductive waste of time and energy… time and energy that would be far better served forming a Truth and Reconciliation Commission to pick the hanging rotten fruit closest to the ground as the most feasible, expedient method to uncovering the deepest dark truth and holding those most guilty accountable.

Next addressed is the mountains of secular evidence chronicling one child sex abuse scandal after the next just since the 1980’s in both America and Europe that also reveals the worldwide cover-up of these egregious crimes against our children right up to last year’s Pizzagate. The next chapter confirms the cold hard facts spottily and sparsely covered by reluctant mainstream news outlets as well as confronts MSM’s total denial and silence around today’s pedophilia epidemic currently raging out of control on this planet. This willful complicit deception incriminates the mainstream whores of the propaganda ministry as complicit obstructionists of truth and justice because they too are child raping bedfellows shamelessly hiding within their puppet masters’ den of demons.

---

[1] “Pope Francis History’s ‘Final’ Pontiff?” *World Net Daily*, March 13, 2013, http://www.wnd.com/2013/03/pope-francis-historys-final-pontiff/.

[2] Makia Freeman, “Positioning Himself to Be Head of Planned One World Religion?” *The Freedom Articles*, June 23, 2015, http://freedom-articles.toolsforfreedom.com/pope-positioning-one-world-religion/.

[3] Judy Byington, “Catholic Mass Grave Sites of 350,800 Missing Children Found in Ireland, Spain, Canada,” *Child Abuse Recovery*, June 7, 2014, http://childabuserecovery.com/catholic-mass-grave-sites-of-350800-missing-children-found-in-ireland-spain-canada/.

[4] Jason Berry, “Did Second Most Powerful Man at Top Catholic Order Sexually Abuse Teenage Boy?” *The Daily Beast*, June 11, 2016,

http://www.thedailybeast.com/did-second-most-powerful-man-at-top-catholic-order-sexually-abuse-teenage-boy.

[5] Jason Berry, “Money Paved Way for Maciel's Influence in the Vatican,” *National Catholic Reporter*, April 6, 2010, https://www.ncronline.org/news/accountability/money-paved-way-maciels-influence-vatican.

[6] Kevin Clarke, “Can't Make this Stuff up Dept.: Marcial Maciel, the CIA agent,” *America Magazine*, March 5, 2010, https://www.americamagazine.org/content/all-things/cant-make-stuff-dept-marcial-maciel-cia-agent.

[7] Jason Berry, “How Fr. Maciel Built his Empire,” *National Catholic Reporter*, April 12, 2010, https://www.ncronline.org/news/accountability/how-fr-maciel-built-his-empire.

[8] Jason Berry, http://www.thedailybeast.com/did-second-most-powerful-man-at-top-catholic-order-sexually-abuse-teenage-boy.

[9] Gerald Renner and Jason Berry, “Head of Worldwide Catholic Order Accused of History of Abuse,” *Hartford Courant*, February 23, 1997, http://www.courant.com/news/connecticut/hc-marcial-maciel-02-1997-story.html.

[10] Andrew Sullivan, “The Vatican's Watergate: Follow the Money,” *The Atlantic*, April 8, 2010, https://www.theatlantic.com/daily-dish/archive/2010/04/the-vaticans-watergate-follow-the-money/188415/.

[11] Jason Berry, “Ratzinger Altered Canon Law to Soften Maciel Punishment, Book Argues,” *National Catholic Reporter*, Mar 24, 2012, https://www.ncronline.org/news/vatican/ratzinger-altered-canon-law-soften-maciel-punishment-book-argues.

[12] Jason Berry, http://www.thedailybeast.com/did-second-most-powerful-man-at-top-catholic-order-sexually-abuse-teenage-boy.

[13] Anna Schecter and Brian Ross, “Top Catholic Priest Accused of Sexually Abusing His Own Sons,” *ABC News*, June 21, 2010, http://abcnews.go.com/Blotter/top-vatican-priest-accused-sexually-abusing-sons/story?id=10968647.

[14] “Pope Francis Addresses the Fr. Marcial Maciel, Legion of Christ Founder, scandal for the first time,” *Regain Network*, March 16, 2015, https://regainnetwork.org/2015/03/16/pope-francis-addresses-the-fr-marcial-maciel-legion-of-christ-founder-scandal-for-the-first-time/.

[15] Joanne McCarthy, “Irish Survivor Marie Collins's Resignation from a Papal Commission on Child Protection Exposes the Vatican,” *The Herald*, March 4,

2017, http://www.theherald.com.au/story/4506195/child-sexual-abuse-will-be-blot-on-pope-francis/.

[16] Philip Pullella, “Pope Tells Bishops to have Zero Tolerance for Sexual Abuse,” *Reuters*, January 4, 2017, http://www.reuters.com/article/uk-pope-abuse/pope-tells-bishops-to-have-zero-tolerance-for-sexual-abuse-idUSKBN14O17O.

[17] Isobel Frodsham, “Pope Cuts Penalties for Paedophile Priests - Including One let off with just a Lifetime of Prayer for Abusing Five Young Boys,” *Daily Mail*, February 25, 2017, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4259164/Pope-quietly-trims-sanctions-sex-abusers-seeking-mercy.html.

[18] Joanne McCarthy, http://www.theherald.com.au/story/4506195/child-sexual-abuse-will-be-blot-on-pope-francis/.

[19] “Mandatory Reporters of Child Abuse and Neglect,” *Child Welfare Information Gateway*, August 2015, https://www.childwelfare.gov/pubPDFs/manda.pdf.

[20] Stephanie Kirchgaessner, “’It is Devastating’: Abuse Survivor Quits Vatican Child Protection Body,” *The Guardian*, March 1, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2017/mar/01/abuse-victim-marie-collins-quits-vatican-child-protection-body.

[21] Kieran Tapsell, “On Abuse: Francis yet to Make Critical Clerical Changes,” *National Catholic Reporter*, July 28, 2017, https://www.ncronline.org/news/accountability/abuse-francis-yet-make-critical-clerical-changes.

[22] “Trump's Promises before and after the Election,” *BBC News*, August 22, 2017, http://www.bbc.com/news/world-us-canada-37982000.

[23] Michael T. Snyder, “23 Obama Quotes That Turned out to be Broken Promises or Cold-Hearted Lies,” *Activist Post*, November 19, 2003, http://www.activistpost.com/2013/11/23-obama-quotes-that-turned-out-to-be.html.

[24] Mark Silk, “Cardinal Dolan’s Cemetery Deal Smacked down,” *Religion News*, March 13, 2015, http://religionnews.com/2015/03/13/cardinal-dolans-cemetery-deal-smacked/.

[25] “America Will Soon Lose Its Constitution,” *Pacinst*, http://www.pacinst.com/america.htm.

[26] Alexander Light, “The Catholic Church is the Biggest Financial Power on Earth,” *Human Are Free*, http://humansarefree.com/2012/03/christian-church-is-biggest-financial.html.

[27] William H. Kennedy, “Satanism, Ritual Abuse and Pedophilia in the Roman Catholic Church,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, April 4, 2010,

https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_brotherhoodss34.htm.

[28] “Dioceses Pay Settlements, Struggle with Bankruptcy over Sex Abuse,” *Cruxnow.com/Associated Press*, November 15, 2016, https://cruxnow.com/ap/2016/11/15/dioceses-pay-settlements-struggle-bankruptcy-sex-abuse/.

[29] Ian Millhiser, “Catholic Church Claims It Can Refuse to Pay Victims of Sex Abuse because of Religious Freedom,” *Think Progress*, March 11, 2015, https://thinkprogress.org/catholic-church-claims-it-can-refuse-to-pay-victims-of-sex-abuse-because-of-religious-freedom-10a1605db0e8/.

[30] Jon Swaine, “Cardinal Dolan Asked Vatican to Hide Millions from Sexual Abuse Victims,” *The* Telegraph, July 2, 2013, http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/worldnews/northamerica/usa/10155673/Cardinal-Dolan-asked-Vatican-to-hide-millions-from-sexual-abuse-victims.html.

[31] Marie Rohde, “Milwaukee Archdiocese’s Settlement Plan Stuns Sex Abuse Victims,” *National Catholic Reporter*, August 5, 2015, https://www.ncronline.org/news/accountability/milwaukee-archdioceses-settlement-plan-stuns-sex-abuse-victims.

[32] Marie Rohde, https://www.ncronline.org/news/accountability/milwaukee-archdioceses-settlement-plan-stuns-sex-abuse-victims.

[33] Serge F. Kovaleski, “Complex Struggle: Prelate’s Record in Abuse Crisis,” *The New York Times*, May 16, 2010 http://www.nytimes.com/2010/05/17/nyregion/17dolan.html.

[34] “Diocese Filing for Bankruptcy to Settle Sex Abuse Claims,” *Cruxnow/Associated Press*, April 1, 2017, https://cruxnow.com/church-in-the-usa/2017/04/01/diocese-filing-bankruptcy-settle-sex-abuse-claims/.

[35] Hemant Mehta, “NY GOP, Pressured by Religious Groups, Won’t Pass Bill to Help Sex Abuse Victims,” *Patheos*, June 22, 2017, http://www.patheos.com/blogs/friendlyatheist/2017/06/22/ny-gop-pressured-by-religious-groups-wont-pass-bill-to-help-sex-abuse-victims/.

[36] Amanda Holpuch, “Windows Closing for Clergy Sex Abuse Victims to Sue Catholic Church,” *The Guardian*, April 13, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2016/apr/13/catholic-church-sex-abuse-minnesota-hawaii-victims-lawsuit.

[37] Olivia Rudgard, “Child Sexual Abuse Victims Denied Compensation ‘because they Consented,’” *The Telegraph*, July 18, 2017, http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2017/07/17/child-sexual-abuse-victims-denied-compensation-consented/.

[38] “Malachi Martin Affirms Satanism Practiced in the Vatican,” *Bibliotecapleyades*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/profecias/esp_profecia10.htm.

[39] Malachi Martin, *The Keys of this Blood* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1991), p.632.

[40] David Livingstone, *Black Terror White Soldiers: Islam, Fascism and the New Age* (US: Sabilillah Publications, 2013), p.163.

Livingstone - Black Terror White Soldiers.pdf - Conspiracy School

[41] “The Shocking Truth Why Pope Benedict Resigned,” *PBS Frontline*, *YouTube* video, 2013, 1:19:38, posted on December 20, 2016, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ztisTKy2KTE.

[42] Preston James, “35 Things the Ruling Cabal Does Not Want You to Know,” *Veterans Today*, September 2, 2013, http://www.veteranstoday.com/2013/09/02/35-things-the-ruling-cabal-does-not-want-you-to-know/.

[43] Sharon Verghis, “The Case of Cardinal Pell Raises Hope of Reform among Australian Victims of Clerical Abuse,” *Time Magazine*, July 12, 2017, http://time.com/4848627/cardinal-pell-sex-abuse-catholic-pope-australia/.

[44] Julian Robinson, “Vatican Police ‘Break up Drug-Fueled Gay Orgy at Home of Secretary of One of Pope Francis's Key Advisers,’” *Daily Mail*, July 5, 2017, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4667098/Vatican-police-break-gay-orgy-apartment.html.

[45] H. Kenedy, “The Vatican Findings of Malachi Martin - Lucifer’s Lodge Found!” *Bibliotecapleyades*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/vatican/esp_vatican52.htm.

[46] Hannah Roberts, “One in 50 Priests is a Paedophile: Pope Francis Says Child Abuse is ‘Leprosy’ Infecting the Catholic Church,” *Daily Mail*, July 13, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2690575/Pope-Francis-admits-two-cent-Roman-Catholic-priests-paedophiles-interview-Italian-newspaper.html.

[47] Kristen Gelineau, “7 percent of Australian Catholic Priests Accused of Abuse,” *Associated Press*, February 6, 2017, https://www.apnews.com/65a9f253800c47d399baee9f8254684b/7-percent-of-Australian-Catholic-priests-accused-of-abuse.

[48] Michael Cook, “Clerical Sex Abuse in Australia: Can you Believe the Statistics?” *Mercatornet.com*, February 9, 2017, https://www.mercatornet.com/above/view/clerical-sex-abuse-in-australia-can-you-believe-the-statistics/19332.

[49] “The Dark History of Ballarat’s Worst Pedophile Priest,” *The Courier*, April 13, 2017, http://www.thecourier.com.au/story/4596451/the-dark-history-of-ballarats-worst-pedophile-priest/.

[50] Kathy Shaw, “Abuse Tracker,” *Bishop Accountability*, August 31, 2017, http://www.bishop-accountability.org/AbuseTracker/.

[51] Emily Webb, “World,” *Daily Herald*, February 6, 2017, http://www.heraldextra.com/print-specific/brief-package/world/article_d2146835-84d5-578f-b8b4-3a396213a2ed.html.

[52] “Pessimism about pedophilia,” *Harvard Mental Publications*, July, 2010, https://www.health.harvard.edu/newsletter_article/pessimism-about-pedophilia.

[53] Uki Goni and Jonathan Watts, “Pope Francis: Questions Remain over his Role during Argentina's Dictatorship,” *The* Guardian, March 14, 2013, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2013/mar/14/pope-francis-argentina-military-junta.

[54] Nate Brown, “Jesuit Pope Francis is Coming Out; Backsliding on Pedophile Crackdown, Catholic Official Says,” *The Christian Truther*, March 14, 2017, https://christiantruther.com/exposed/jesuit-pope-francis-coming-backsliding-pedophile-crackdown-catholic-official-says/.

[55] Whitney Webb, “Pope Francis’ Dark Past As Agent of U.S.-Backed Argentine Military Junta,” *Mint Press News*, July 1, 2017, https://www.mintpressnews.com/pope-francis-dark-past-agent-u-s-backed-argentine-military-junta/229324/.

[56] Sharon Churcher and Tom Worden, “Special Report: The Damning Documents that Show New Pope Did Betray Tortured Priests to the Junta,” *Daily Mail*, March 16, 2013, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2294580/Special-report-The-damning-documents-new-Pope-DID-betray-tortured-priests-junta.html.

[57] Jay Greenberg, “Pope Francis Named as ‘Prime Mover’ in Child Trafficking Ring,” *Neon Nettle*, July 18, 2017, http://www.neonnettle.com/news/2424-pope-francis-named-as-prime-mover-in-child-trafficking-ring.

[58] “How Many Roman Catholics are there in the World?” *BBC News*, March 14, 2013, http://www.bbc.com/news/world-21443313.

[59] Mary Pascaline, “How Many Christians Are There In The World This Christmas Season? Christianity Still the World's Largest Religion In 2016,” *International Business Times*, December 12, 2016, http://www.ibtimes.com/how-many-christians-are-there-world-christmas-season-christianity-still-worlds-2458588.

[60] Donald Wittmer, “Why Such Empty Pews?” *Catholic Journal*, August 1, 2017, http://www.catholicjournal.us/2017/08/01/why-such-empty-pews/.

[61] Dr. Eowyn, “Pope Francis’ Vatican: A Cesspool of Pedophiles and Homosexuals,” *D.C. Clothesline*, August 23, 2017, http://www.dcclothesline.com/2017/08/23/pope-francis-vatican-a-cesspool-of-pedophiles-and-homosexuals/.

[62] Anmol Titoria, “7 Reasons why ‘Eyes Wide Shut’ is Stanley Kubrick’s Most Underrated Film,” *Taste of Cinema*, July 4, 2017, http://www.tasteofcinema.com/2017/7-reasons-why-eyes-wide-shut-is-stanley-kubricks-most-underrated-film/.

[63] “Agenda 21: Depopulation of 95% of the World by the Year 2030 is Now Underway - This is How The Elite Is Going to Dramatically Reduce the Global Population!,” *News Prepper* (a blog site), March 21, 2017, http://www.newsprepper.com/agenda-21-depopulation-95-world-year-2030-now-underway-elite-going-dramatically-reduce-global-population/.

[64] Joel Stein, “Who Runs Hollywood? C'mon,” *Los Angeles Times*, December 19, 2008, http://articles.latimes.com/2008/dec/19/opinion/oe-stein19.

[65] Gordon, “Six Jewish Companies Control 96% of the World’s Media,” *Tap News Wire*, October 17, 2015, http://tapnewswire.com/2015/10/six-jewish-companies-control-96-of-the-worlds-media/.

[66] George Salamon, “Wall Street and Jewish Ethical Identity,” *Jewish Currents*, May 14, 2014, http://jewishcurrents.org/wall-street-jewish-ethical-identity/.

[67] Anders, “Jesuits 1890 – Masters of Jewish Elite - Created Zionist Tool: Antisemitism. Jewish NWO Elite Infiltrating and Using Masonry to Destroy Christianity and the West,” *new.euro-med.dk*, February 26, 2015, http://new.euro-med.dk/20150226-jesuits-1890-masters-of-jewish-elite-created-zionist-tool-antisemitism-jewish-nwo-elite-infiltrating-and-using-masonry-to-destroy-christianity-and-the-west.php.

[68] “Exclusive: High-Level NSA Whistleblower Says Blackmail Is a Huge - Unreported - Part of Mass Surveillance,” *Washington’s Blog*, July 21, 2014, http://www.washingtonsblog.com/2014/07/nsa-blackmailing-world.html.

[69] Philip Giraldi, “Israel's Dirty Little Secret,” *The UNZ*, June 20, 2017, http://www.unz.com/pgiraldi/israels-dirty-little-secret/.

[70] “How the Israel Lobby Controls US Foreign Policy in the Middle East,” *Para-Political Journal*, June 26, 2017, https://parapoliticaljournal.com/2017/06/26/how-the-israel-lobby-controls-us-foreign-policy-in-the-middle-east/.

[71] Eran Elhaik, “The Missing Link of Jewish European Ancestry: Contrasting the Rhineland and the Khazarian Hypotheses,” *Oxford Academic*, December 14, 2012, https://academic.oup.com/gbe/article/5/1/61/728117/The-Missing-Link-of-Jewish-European-Ancestry.

[72] “No Levantine Ancestry for Ashkenazic Jews,” *Khazar DNA Project* (a blog site), June 21, 2017, https://khazardnaproject.wordpress.com/2017/06/21/no-levantine-ancestry-for-ashkenazic-jews/.

[73] Joachim Hagopian, “How the New World Order “Globalists” Are Dividing Americans,” *Global Research*, October 28, 2015, http://www.globalresearch.ca/how-the-new-world-order-globalists-are-dividing-americans/5483941.

[74] Scott Lively, “Elites Got a Two-fer in Charlottesville Chaos,” *World Net Daily*, August 16, 2017, http://mobile.wnd.com/2017/08/elites-got-a-two-fer-in-charlottesville-chaos/.

[75] Stefan Stanford, “Charlottesville Mayor Declared City ‘A Capital Of The Resistance’ To President Trump Back In February As Globalists Push America Towards Martial Law And Chaos,” *All News Pipeline*, August 14, 2017, http://allnewspipeline.com/Pushing_Towards_Martial_Law_End_Times.php.

[76] Joachim Hagopian, ““Wag the Dog” Mass Killing, Race Wars and Gun Confiscation Obscure Sleight of Hand TPP Passage,” *Global Research*, June 20, 2015, http://www.globalresearch.ca/wag-the-dog-mass-killing-race-wars-and-gun-confiscation-obscure-sleight-of-hand-tpp-passage/5457114.

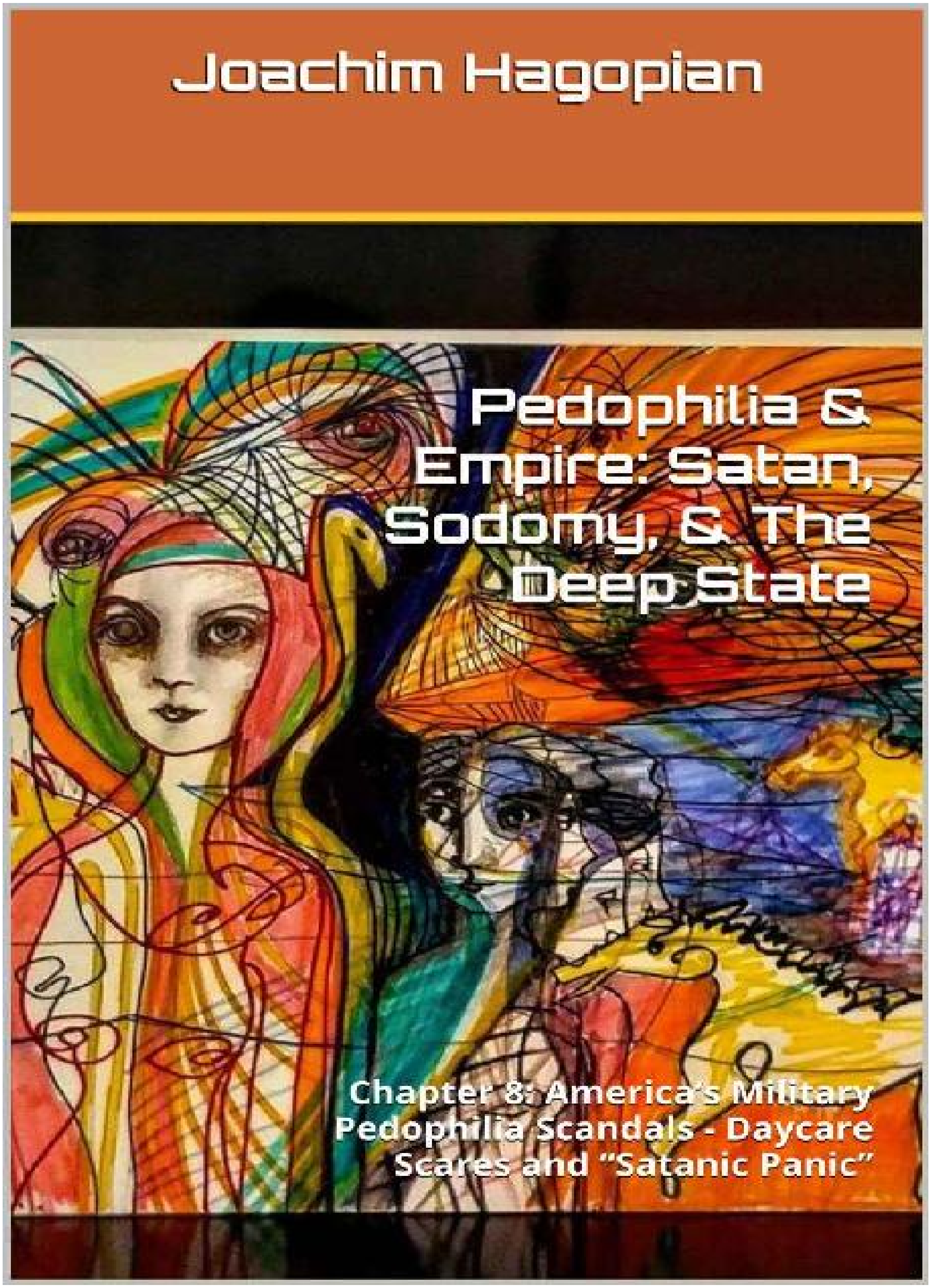

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 8: America's Military Pedophilia Scandals - Daycare Scares and "Satanic Panic"

Chapter 8: America’s Military Pedophilia Scandals - Daycare Scares and “Satanic Panic”

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission

http://www.noramaccoby.com/

The Overview

Now that the perversely destructive hand of the Catholic Church has been exposed through its widespread child sex abuse and fascist war making partnering with the Rothchild bankers and Anglo-American Empire, the next focus will turn to well-documented pedo scandals perpetrated by the crime cabal government mainly through its military and CIA operations. Though we know pedophiles have undoubtedly been abusing children as long as low-life human beings (or perhaps I should say bloodline hybrids) have occupied this planet, this chapter will address major scandals that began emerging in the 1980’s at various daycare facilities across America. An account of the most significant cases will be presented as incontrovertible proof that pedophiles at the top of the power rung committing horrendous sex crimes against our underage population have been grossly underreported and squelched for a very long time. Dissecting scandal after scandal should give the reader a perception of clarity that pedophile sex abuse networks have been operating continuously uninterrupted for many decades. The sampling covered here is not a series of discrete, isolated cases by any stretch, but simply the tip of a long running iceberg where a few happened to accidentally get exposed to the public, and even reluctantly covered by various mainstream news outlets.

For over four decades the elite's concentrated pushback vis-a-vis mainstream media to deflect, minimize, dispel or deny the inordinately high incidence of international pedo rings and horrific pedo crimes has willfully promoted the false notion that these scandals are both extremely rare and relatively inconsequential, invariably rendered as overblown, "nothing to see here" hype. The biggest case in point is how MSM so brazenly mishandled last year's so called Pizzagate cover-up,[i] rushing to defend the "poor little picked on, maliciously maligned" pizza shop owner who *GQ Magazine* happened to crown the 49th most powerful individual in America's most powerful city DC.[ii] With the *NY Times*,[iii] *Washington Post*[iv] and every major MSM outlet rushing to his defense insisting that an army of vicious internet slanderers[v] were ganging up on pizzeria extraordinaire James Alefantis fabricating a horrendous story out of thin air that even alt news pioneer Alex Jones was reduced to becoming an apologist,[vi] only shows why the DC kiddie peddler is the 49th most powerful player in Washington.

Despite compiling more than enough circumstantial evidence based on hundreds of *WikiLeaks* released John Podesta emails[vii] and sick Alefantis Instagram photos and his even sicker captions including afterhours "entertainment" of pedo performances at the "family friendly" Comet Pizza,[viii] all indicating more than high probability that a Clinton-Obama-Podesta-Alefantis child sex ring is operating out of our nation's capital, zero police or legal action has resulted. Predictably, neither the DC police nor the FBI have bothered to follow up investigating any of this since they're simply pawns of *GQ*'s "top 49 powerhouse clique," of which Hillary, Obama, the Podesta boys and their pizza loving James are all perennials.[ix] [x] [xi]

Instead the power establishment declared the internet claims as pure "fake news" conjured up by a frenzied online army of overzealous conspiracy nuts[xii] responsible for causing another whacked out lone gunman to take law into his own hands and investigate said allegations for himself against Comet Ping Pong, firing off a couple rounds inside the joint just to show the world he meant business. It was all flimsily veiled as yet more poorly staged drama spun to “prove” just how dangerous the internet lynch mob spewing out fake news can be.[xiii] Thus, Pizzagate became the perfect opportunity for yet another Hegelian inspired deep state, master stroked false flag to conveniently create the “fake news” problem, giving “just” cause to roll out its engineered reaction - another wacko “lone gunman” brandishing his automatic weapon (as more remindrance to ban guns[xiv]) while endangering the public, and thus conveniently provide the perfect pretext to warrant the deep state solution - urgently implement sweeping internet censorship legislation[xv] with ultimate aim to remove all dissident alternative voices from public access.[xvi] This is the endgame scenario in every totalitarian regime throughout history, to permit dissemination of only official false narrative lies and propaganda as “news” to an oppressed, misinformed, tightly controlled population.

With the Google,[xvii] Facebook,[xviii] Twitter,[xix] YouTube[xx] whores all falling into subservient line as extensions of Mockingbird CIA-NSA[xxi] [xxii] centralized fascist control,[xxiii] access to the truth is methodically being eliminated… all for the sake of “protecting” the public from the dangerous consequences of “fake news.” Despite the elite’s desperation to cut off the truth from the people ASAP, we citizens of the world already know that deep state’s propaganda ministry called the *New York Times*, the *Washington Post*, *CNN*, *Fox News*, *ABC*, *Time Magazine* and corporate owned media all read off the same centralized script as the real source of fake news. But because so many MSM lies have been thoroughly exposed[xxiv] for lame stream media ever to recover from, few people now even bother to still take *CNN* et al serious as a credible news source. A poll from last May revealed 2 out of 3 Americans believe mainstream news is the actual fake news.[xxv]

Despite mainstream media's brazen, over-the-top efforts at damage control to regain so much lost credibility, stuck now living in an all too obvious Orwellian age of deception, the earth's rulers will never be successful at stamping out the truth. The jarring, enormously disturbing reality that roughly one third of all US government personnel occupying prominent positions of power within Congress, the judiciary and executive branches are child raping, murderous Satanists[xxvi] (or through blackmail compromised and controlled dupes)[xxvii] bent on (or minimally complicit in) committing human genocide [xxviii] may be too shocking to be believed by most Americans. But for those of us with eyes still wide open, there's more than enough glaring, incriminating evidence. One of the aims of this book is to illuminate what humanity is currently and perilously up against prior to apocalyptic ruin. Time is running out on planet earth unless we immediately arm ourselves with the truth and fight back like there's no tomorrow.

A running theme throughout this presentation should become clear to the reader. After uncovering irrefutable facts chronicling each pedophilia scandal, the government minions and their MSM presstitutes invariably go to work with aggressive pushback measures designed to obscure, muddle and otherwise conceal the darker truth from ever seeing the full light of day.[xxix] [xxx] [xxxi] Deep state's stonewalling tactics using deceit and denial are thoroughly dissected here to uncover how powerful child rapists, like the pedophile hordes within the Catholic Church, have always remained above the law, never fully investigated nor prosecuted because they're systematically protected and buffered by a built in, top down impenetrable wall of pure

Luciferian evil. Meanwhile, elite sexual predators, their subordinate protectors and their paid media apologists and propagandists automatically dismiss and deny the mountains of overwhelming evidence. You will see this exact same sinister pattern criminally played out over and over again, effectively keeping the lid on egregious sins passed down through the ages - sodomizing the innocents in ritual sacrificial rites of torture and murder, bleeding their lifeblood and literally drinking and eating their stolen life force that provides sustenance and power to demonic interdimensional forces in order to continue ruling and taking over the earth.

Our dark journey begins with the satanic ritual abuse (SRA) scandals discovered at several, mostly military daycare centers across America during the 1980’s, and the criminal system’s countermeasures to summarily cover up and minimize exposure of the same brutal savagery that’s been seamlessly practiced in the name of Satan for countless millenniums.

Satanic Ritual Abuse at McMartin Pre-School

The first major pedophilia scandal in the United States to break with international headlines took place in 1983 at McMartin Pre-School in Manhattan Beach, California,[xxxii] a small upscale seaside city a few miles south of the Los Angeles airport. The McMartin case stands out as the longest, most expensive criminal trial in US history, draining California taxpayers of $15 million[xxxiii] in a grotesque travesty of justice. But with a quick review of the facts, it was far more a travesty of justice for the children and their families than the guilty perps. Once the case broke open in the press, after the initial shock and disbelief, the media and public gradually turned against the “unbelievable” kids’ and their parents’ and “enablers’” “wild” claims. MSM liars always protect child rapists, twisting and perverting reality so that the victimized children and their parents are the ones on trial in the court of public opinion. A prime example of this is the ridicule and scorn heaped on the poor kids who insisted that they'd been escorted through underground tunnels underneath the daycare that were later discovered after the case was dismissed and therefore never considered as evidence.[xxxiv] In another obvious move to withhold the truth, the *LA Times* and MSM reporters were pulled off the case the instant the tunnels were discovered, vindicating the children's claims. Victims reported that their abusers constantly reminded them of death threats against both them and their parents should they tell the truth while being forced to witness live turtles, rabbits and other animals sadistically killed, only to have 77 animal bones later dug up on the property after the trial, again never legally taken into account. Several children were even medically diagnosed with STD's. But all this vital information was never introduced in the courtroom.

Initially the highly sensationalized spectacle gripped the nation in shock that such unthinkable evil could actually exist. The multi-member McMartin-Buckey family that owned and operated the daycare were among five defendants charged with committing 207 counts of child sex abuse. To make matters worse, in 1985 an HBO production allegedly written by Oscar winning writer Abby Mann (notorious for using ghost writers) and his wife Myra, co-executive produced with Oscar winning director-screenwriter Oliver Stone called "The Indictment: The McMartin Trial" was heavily slanted in favor of the guilty pedophiles.[xxxv] Acting as a media mole protecting the satanic ritual child abuse ring operating in Los Angeles, the Manns based their script on a book about the McMartin case entitled *The Politics of Child Abuse*[xxxvi] written by a married couple who were known child pornographers - Paul and Shirley Eberle[xxxvii] as yet more foxes guarding their henhouse.

Seven tortuous years after it began, the case was tossed out of court in 1990 with either acquittals or a hung jury for all accused. After critical evidence disappeared, combined with so much crucial evidence withheld from the trial, and gross legal errors seemingly intended to undermine the prosecution, combined with seven grueling years of hostile media coverage and a skeptical public lambasting the child victims and their parents, the disgraceful debacle went nowhere. The bottom line why justice was never served was, had the rabbit hole of evil been uncovered, big name LA politicians, entertainers and athletes would have been found guilty of satanic pedophilia. It turns out the Buckeys were mainly the pimping suppliers of child victims for the local Luciferian elite.[xxxviii]

A number of suspicious deaths associated with the McMartin case point to probable foul play and a massive cover-up. The stakes were so high, people died mysteriously and by design, the prosecutors' case was completely botched. A young healthy former police officer and recent father turned private investigator Paul Bynum just prior to testifying about underground tunnels suddenly showed up suspiciously "suicided" with a bullet hole in his head. In 1983 a mother Judy Johnson first discovered her two year old son arrived home from school with a bleeding anus, took him to her doctor who referred the boy to a specialist that confirmed he'd been sodomized, which initiated the police investigation.[xxxix] But Judy was subsequently vilified by the press as mentally ill and paranoid, and just three years into the investigation was alleged to have died from alcohol poisoning. Back in 1976 police officer Paul Bynum had been assigned a rape-murder case, the victim being singer Bill Medley's ex-wife Karen Klaas who died an hour after dropping her child off at McMartin Preschool. In 1984 her widowed husband Gerald Klaas drove off an Oregon cliff and died a month after indictments in the McMartin case were handed down.[xl]

With the McMartin case, the precedent was painfully established of what would become a repeated pervasive pattern of horrendous re-victimization of both abused children and their families in so many pedophile cases to follow where child rapists are consistently set free. The justice system not just in the US but virtually every country is so corrupt and poisoned that it protects elite pedophile murderers at the expense of children's precious lives. By diabolical design, the same sad, tragic, pathetic outcome has been replicated in virtually every case in Europe, Australia and the entire world. It's high time we citizens of this earth hold the guilty accountable and face the evil in our midst.

West Point Daycare Scandal

A decade after I graduated from the United States Military Academy, at least two staff members working at the West Point Child Development Center were allegedly torturing and sodomizing little children one to six years of age. But because West Point is such an "honorable and venerable" historic institution, so closely tied to America's beloved war heroes and enjoying to this day its squeaky clean, sterling image and reputation (that my own unique firsthand experience completely debunks and obliterates), the satanic ritual abuse of young children at West Point during the mid-1980's hardly showed up at all in the press, merely a passing, fleeting blip on the screen that the vast majority of Americans never even knew existed - by design of course. In fact, despite writing my own West Point story exposing the lies, corruption and abject failure to produce strong, moral leadership from the brass factory on the Hudson for over a half century now,[xli] even I was totally unaware of this largely unknown scandal until I began researching and writing articles about Pizzagate late last year.[xlii]

In July 1984 parents of a 3-year old girl contacted the West Pont military police stating that their child was sexually assaulted at the West Point Child Development Center, the on post daycare center serving preschool aged child dependents of both military personnel (totaling 120 children) and civilian employees (comprising another 30 kids). A medical doctor at the West Point hospital observed that the little girl’s vagina had been lacerated.[xliii] When the Army’s Criminal Investigation Division (CID) learned the accused suspects were civilians, the case was immediately transferred over to the FBI, which in late July 1984 began investigating the 40 employee facility serving 150 children who were infants to kindergarteners. At least 11 children (and likely dozens more) were sexually molested as well as physically abused with burns and bruises at the Military Academy daycare by at least two female civilian staff acting as teacher’s aides who were suspended with pay.[xliv]

The forthcoming accusations alleged that satanic ritual abuse was being perpetrated by members of a devil-worshipping cult between 1983 and 1984 that included animal sacrifice and physical abuse inflicted on young children. Subsequently, interviewed children were reporting that they were forced to eat shit and drink piss, and had feces smeared on their bodies during satanic ritual abuse.[xlv] Many also alluded to being driven away from the daycare center, stripped naked and exploited for child pornography photographs. The West Point Child Development Center building number where the satanic pedophile abuse occurred was 666, later changed by Academy officials to 673 due to 666 being the mark or number of the beast.[xlvi]

When the children began verbalizing and showing signs of sexual abuse to their parents, and the parents brought their concerns to the Center staff, the military police, FBI, medical and West Point authorities, their accusations were summarily disbelieved, ignored and categorically denied. Parents were told that the two accused staff members had both passed lie detector tests.[xlvii] FBI investigators showed up at the parents' homes for questioning without tape recorders or even bother taking notes, casting dispersions on the parents' childrearing capabilities. From the outset of the supposed investigation, it was clear that the authorities involved were more concerned with squelching and containing the truth than finding it out.

Medical doctor Captain William R. Grote, whose 3-year old child was sexually violated, became so upset over how the Academy mishandled the evidence and parents' concerns that he refused a promotion to major in June 1985 and soon afterwards resigned his officer commission. In his words:

I cannot accept promotion in a system that at first refused to acknowledge and now refuses to deal with the victims of extensive child abuse that occurred at the West Point Child Development Center.[xlviii]

Despite an "exhaustive" FBI investigation lasting over a year conducted by a team of 60 FBI agents, in the end, as of 1985, neither the US Army nor West Point nor Southern District of New York US Attorney's office indicted or arrested anyone for the horrific crimes being committed.[xlix] Nor has the government or military admitted guilt that any crimes ever even took place when the physical and psychological evidence piling up was monumental.

Though Dr. Grote was among the first parents to file a lawsuit against the Academy, he chose not to pursue the subsequent civil suit filed by parents that eventually was settled in May 1991.[l] Eerily similar to the shameful outcome of the botched McMartin case in California, after the same seven painful, agonizing years for the abused children and victimized parents, they were forced to witness the perpetrators get off scot free because both criminal cases refused to accept irrefutable evidence and were ultimately dropped. This reprehensible misconduct by our judicial system constitutes nothing short of double the criminality carrying double the abusive punishment. And as with virtually all government pedophilia crimes, to this day both the satanic abusers and satanic elements operating within the government remain guiltily unaccountable.

In response to West Point parents' civil suit, two years before it was settled, an independent team from the University of Pennsylvania was called in to gather its own evidential findings since the FBI investigation was intentionally so shoddily mishandled. And based on the sealed report, a financial settlement into the millions was reached, obviously indicating complicit admission that substantial abuse did in fact occur involving at least nine of the children. After seven horrific years, the West Point civil suit was finally decided, awarding nine families a settlement of $1.2 million, totaling $2.7 million to be disbursed over time to the abused children with final allotment upon reaching adulthood, ranging from $25,000 to $625,000 for each victim… small consolation for the hell that they were forced to endure.[li]

Dr. William Grote, who by the time of the settlement was maintaining a private civilian medical practice in New Jersey, had this to say about the sordid affair's outcome:

> *Unfortunately, money can't … undo the trauma incurred by scores of children at West Point … because people with responsibility didn't exercise that responsibility. What the hell is a settlement? … They could have caught these people doing it at the time that they were doing it. We have a tendency to think that everything that's evil and bad is on the other side of the Pacific or the Atlantic. And that's not the case.*[lii]

Prior to becoming the New York City mayor, Rudy Giuliani was the US Attorney at the time in charge of the case at West Point.[liii] He quickly swept it under the damage control carpet, colluding with top Academy military brass and the Pentagon, complicit in allowing the satanic ritual abuse to not only take place, but continue even after initial parental complaints were filed. Clearly West Point, the Army and US federal government placed their own criminal self-interests ahead of the children in harm's way in order to minimize negative publicity and avoid what would be worldwide media attention drawn to the case had Giuliani and the military fulfilled their legal and moral obligation calling for grand jury indictments, arrests and trial prosecution.

This pure evil proved a precursor of what was to come, when 10 years later NYC Mayor Giuliani as a treasonous insider knew of the twin tower attacks **prior** to the 9/11 false flag event, and shortly afterwards was caught on camera lying about it.[liv] And then a decade ago while Giuliani was running for US president as a GOP candidate, more of his shady character was yet again fully on display. He publicly defended and employed in his consulting firm a disgraced priest accused of sexually molesting teenage boys.[lv] As a result of being investigated by a grand jury in 2002, stemming from pedophilia charges dating back to 1975, with statute of limitations run out, the Catholic Church chose to retain Giuliani's friend and Long Island diocese monsignor, but prohibited him from performing priestly duties or appearing in public as a priest. So as long as he's out of his priestly garb, apparently he gets to remain on both the Vatican and Giuliani's payrolls while continuing to molest children. By the way, his two source income allows this alleged pedophile with another priest to co-own waterfront Manhattan property worth a half million dollars. In the real world of church and state, pedophilia apparently pays off.

Current West Point Superintendent General Bob Caslen (West Point Class of 1975) at the time of the sexual abuse scandal was an Army major and a bit of an Army apologist:

> *You had a bunch of kids who had some kind of abuse and the concerns of the parents seeking assistance fell on deaf ears. The medical treatment for the satanic abuse was not meeting the bill. It was far beyond what (the Army) could handle.*[lvi]

But with unlimited resources available to the Army, obviously West Point nor the Pentagon made little to no effort to genuinely respond to the needs of the victims and their families because their bottom line agenda all along was clearly damage control and ASAP expediency and be damned with the very real and legitimate needs of their dozens of victims.

After interviewing more than 950 potential witnesses including scores of children 2 to 6 in age, in late October 1985 over a year into the investigation, by way of a letter to the West Point superintendent, Giuliani made his backdoor announcement of a no indictment sham, claiming that while “indications” of pedophilia abuse may have been present, there remained “insufficient substantive evidence to prosecute.”[lvii] Two years later in 1987 Giuliani had the gall to insist that his “detailed” investigation only showed “one or two children” were abused. Clearly another government cover-up was quietly foisted on America.

In response, a longtime area resident spent the next three years organizing a support group for the victims’ families and mobilizing local protests calling for the Justice Department to reopen the investigation. When it was all said and done, she was quoted:

> *When I saw the headlines of the child pornography ring at West Point, it cut me to the heart. I know West Point is only*

> *surface beauty. They were outright cruel to the parents.*[lviii]

The disheartened activist realized the clincher proving beyond any doubt that Washington was guilty of a whitewashed cover-up arrived in the form of a letter from Justice Department attorney Mary C. Spearing on behalf of the department’s National Obscenity Enforcement Unit stating unequivocally:

> *Unfortunately, no new evidence, revelation or hint of wrongdoing or negligence surfaced during our review.*[lix]

Immediately following the financial settlement in 1991, the local newspaper in Middletown, New York, *The Times Herald Record*, published an extensive, fair article chronicling the sad tragic story, featuring input from a number of the West Point parents. The title of the piece was “A Legacy of Pain: Settlement Doesn’t Ease Abused Children’s Fears.” The opening sentence revealed that the 3-year old girl who seven years earlier initiated disclosure of the abuse, at age 10 could not go to the bathroom alone without her mother guarding the door. The effects of the sexual trauma experienced years earlier is trauma she may have to bear for life. The abuse victim asked her mother if she would be able to have children when she grew up. The mother lamented:

> *This happened seven years ago, and it’s not any better. She’s constantly asking, `What if we’re out in the store, Mommy, and we see these people? Are they going to hurt me?’… But this is constantly on her mind because she knows these people are not in jail for what they did… These people stole our children. (She’s) nothing like she used to be. She’s a very angry little girl. She doesn’t trust anyone. She’s nothing like she was before this happened. It’s never going to be over for them, or for us.*[lx]

The catastrophic damage to very young victims of pedophile inflicted sexual trauma is a lifelong affliction that many never recover from.[lxi] It irreversibly changes everything in the lives of both abused children as well as their families. And it wasn't just the sicko Satanists perpetrating this seemingly permanent hell on the victimized families, but West Point and the federal government were equally abusive and criminally negligent and guilty as well. Years later one mother still struggles to cope with the crippling effects on her daughter:

As far as I'm concerned, the government gave them a license to go out and abuse other children. I have to explain to my daughter these people are still out there. And she still has nightmares. She's afraid they're going to come through the window at night to get her.[lxii]

After willfully suppressing massive amounts of medical and psychological evidence coming from dozens of victimized children and witnesses, the US government and Pentagon elected to protect an organized satanic cult that was likely part of the larger nationwide network affiliated with and run by the CIA and military intelligence. The feds' bogus claim of lack of evidence of course also protected West Point's pristine reputation as well as their own despicable CYA asses. Their criminal self-interests were obviously far more important than the interests and well-being of vulnerable, defenseless young children brutally tortured and satanically raped, singlehandedly proving that soulless psychopaths are in charge.

What makes the West Point case even more shocking and egregious is that in August 1983, 11 months prior to sex abuse ever being reported, an abusive Army sergeant stationed at the Academy who was the boyfriend of a mother actually murdered her 22-month old son and was quietly given a dishonorable discharge as his two-for-one get out of Army and get out of jail card. The colonel in charge of West

Point Child Protection wrote a letter to West Point superintendent Lt. General Willard Scott Jr. stating:

> *The community has received a devastating message - West Point and the Army take child abuse lightly and do not consider it a major offense.*[lxiii]

A West Point graduate and pediatrician Dr. Pat Jones stationed at the Academy whose 15-month old daughter was sexually molested remarked:

> *The guy that murdered the 22 month-old baby was let off Scot free. They just kicked him out of the Army to prevent any publicity. I tried to resign from the alumni association I feel ashamed for even being from that place.*[lxiv]

Thus, the disgraceful stage at West Point had already been fatefully set, allowing it to deteriorate from bad to worse less than a year later when the scandal broke that permitted satanic pedophiles to remain unpunished and free to harm others.

A couple years after the West Point scandal erupted, the most infamous satanic ritualized sexual abuse in the military surfaced in San Francisco’s Presidio where Satanist pedo ringleader Lt. Colonel Michael A. Aquino was heavily implicated. With the bigger agenda to continue at will getting away with raping and murdering small children, historically very few if any perpetrators have ever been caught and brought to justice, especially when they happen to be powerful international crime cabal players.

The Presidio Daycare Scandal

The US Army’s military post known as the Presidio had been the 6th Army headquarters[lxv] for forty years when the child abuse scandal broke out in November 1986. Eight years later the Western Pacific Coast Army base would be closed when in 1994 the historic San Francisco landmark adjacent the Golden Gate Bridge was transferred over to the National

Park Service Golden Gate Recreation Area as an extension of Golden Gate Park.[lxvi] But on Friday November 14th, 1986 a three-year old boy attending the Presidio Child Development Center (CDC), the daycare and after school facility for young children of families stationed at the post, began exhibiting signs of stress and trauma, later that day informing his mother that one of his teachers had touched his penis and stuck a pencil up his anus.[lxvii] Over the next several days the parents notified the CDC staff, the boy's father Capt. Mike Tobin spoke with the Army chaplain and immediately the Army's Criminal Investigation Division was contacted.

Like the West Point case, blatant warning signs existed of major trouble brewing prior to the first child ever reporting abuse. The Presidio's Child Development Center had a child support services coordinator arrested for assaulting a female employee, who a year earlier had reported abusive treatment of children at the center nearly six years before the Tobin boy's accusation. Apparently the inter-staff assault was a case of "she said-he said" and was dropped for lack of evidence. The then Presidio chief of juvenile investigations contends that that same female employee had accused other staff at the Center of touching children's genitals.[lxviii]

During her four years at the Presidio Center, the whistleblower also reported staff physically abusing children, including the then CDC director hitting a child in the mouth and drawing blood. But rather than respond appropriately to her continued complaints, nothing was ever done to rectify the worsening situation. The mounting stress caused the female staff member to eventually quit, claiming she "ended up having a nervous breakdown" over her ordeal.[lxix] Despite the grossly poor management that created a toxic environment only encouraging further abuse of the children, an ensuing investigation in response to the one employee's numerous concerns and complaints determined that at least three Center personnel had been threatened with loss of job if they spoke the truth about what was occurring. When child sex abuse allegations were raised, the provost marshal told juvenile investigations chief Ed Albanoski that there was nothing to look into and on no uncertain terms to back off, that the situation would be handled internally within the Center staff chain of command. Despite the Army's official complicity and gross negligence, intuitively the stymied investigator retained the military police report No 00193-82/MP1026-82-047, dated February 4th, 1982, nearly five years prior to the Tobin boy's revelations.[lxx]

At the end of the day, the internal chain of command sought to retain both the corporal punishing director and the violent support services coordinator, leaving the child abuse at the Presidio to only grow from bad to worse. One can easily see the strikingly identical, parallel pattern of increasing abuse at both the East and West Coast military daycares - the unheeded child murder at West Point and observed physical assaults and sexual abuse at the Presidio prior to the start of any formal investigations. In fact, instead of drumming the child services coordinator out after his display of violence toward the one staff member trying desperately to stop the abuse, as is typical within the hierarchical military milieu, gross incompetence only gets rewarded. A year later the US Army Forces Command was officially showering him with the following laudatory praise:

Doing an excellent job as the Child Support Services Coordinator. The staff training program he developed utilizing the Military Child Care modules is model for the Army.[lxxi]

But there were more red flags to come. Over a year and a half before the Tobin child first complained of abuse in November 1986, an Army captain's daughter explained to her parents a red spot on her hand was the result of a staff member holding her and other kids’ hands till they pulled away from the burning heat caused by a magnifying glass. A day after the father confronted this same service coordinator, he was told that “it's your daughter's word against hers [staff’s], so we can't do anything.”[lxxii] Wisely after that, the captain took his child out of the daycare. Recall that Satan worshipping staff at the West Point daycare were reported to have similarly burned child victims there as well. A pattern of satanic ritual abuse practiced at one location will often resemble or be identical to the same torture methods deployed elsewhere, strongly suggesting a structured nationwide satanic network of sadistic criminal abuse. Again, ancient satanic rites and practices burning children have been handed down through the millenniums.

In June 1986, five months ahead of the CID investigation, another eye-opening precipitating event unfolded when a mother who had just dropped her daughter off at the daycare observed while leaving a staff putting her hands alternately inside a child’s pants touching her genital area and then inside her top tickling the child. After reporting this to the assistant director, she was told that the staff “was just playing innocent tickling games” with the little girl.[lxxiii] Still concerned, the mother went to the child services coordinator and shared what she witnessed with him. He later that same day called to say he would “write something up in her personnel file.” After following up with the captain in charge of supervising the Center’s civilian employees, the persistent concerned parent was reassured that the CID was looking into the matter, but in the end, again “not enough evidence” to conclusively judge any wrongdoing had taken place. And a year later the concerned mother’s worst nightmare materialized when she learned that her own daughter was among those molested.

In spite of the murder less than a year before the breaking West Point scandal and the repeated incidents of both physical and sexual abuse regularly occurring at the Presidio almost a half-decade prior to that scandal, these dire, foreboding warning signs failed to stop more sinister crimes to come. Again just like pedophilia scourge in the church, the US military had long established its own flagrantly complicit cover-up pattern, from war atrocities regularly committed in Operation Speedy Express[lxxiv]at scores of Vietnamese villages like the My Lai massacre a decade and a half earlier,[lxxv] to consistently protecting child abuse offenders at military posts throughout the 1980's. The Army chain of command knowingly tolerates if not encourages rampant criminality, from murder to severe child abuse, in every case allowing it to flourish and fester for years on end prior to reaching the crisis stage. This longstanding "arrangement" characterized by a systemic seal of secrecy and concealment is nothing new, just highly symptomatic of our corrosively corrupt, pathologically driven government fast descending toward absolute tyranny and fascist control of yet another totalitarian state, not unlike cold war Soviet Union.[lxxvi]

Had appropriate corrective steps from the outset been taken at these military posts in the 1980's, trauma that likely lasts a lifetime for thousands of damaged children would have been averted. But then from the very start, protecting the innocent was never the priority over protecting the perpetrators, reputations and the government and military's own self-interest.

With near 1,000 US military bases spread across the planet,[lxxvii] worldwide human trafficking rings within a humongous commercial sex industry continue to thrive, providing a steady traffic supply of exploited young women and underage girls [and boys] as abuse victims for American military personnel.[lxxviii] Out of the global trafficking trade's enormous $150 billion a year profit, two thirds or $99 billion is generated from the sex slave industry alone.[lxxix] The UN

2016 Global Report on Trafficking Persons found that more nations (106 out of 193) have trafficked victims trapped inside their borders than don't.[lxxx] With the most recent statistics showing that one fourth of all human trafficking victims are children, and 1.8 million kids are trafficked into slavery yearly,[lxxxi] the total number of current child slaves in this world has to be considerably more than the decade old estimate of 13 million children.[lxxxii] Clearly child sexual abuse has become an out of control scourge on this earth. And with 200,000 US armed forces dispersed[lxxxiii] on every continent occupying at least 160 nations,[lxxxiv] like most evil enterprises upon exposure, the US Empire's seedy role involving the military and CIA steeped in child sex trafficking has only subversively moved deeper underground.

Understanding this pervasive pedophilia epidemic from the broader perspective, it's been the black ops military intelligence laboratories (referred to as "milabs"), most often subterranean bases both domestic and abroad - that have always been the primary secret US government locations where the MK Ultra/Monarch trauma-induced mind control programs (also used for so called military "alien" abduction)[lxxxv] deliver ongoing systematic child rape, torture and murder, from the early days of Nazi Dr. Mengele's experiments in the 1950's all the way to the present.[lxxxvi] Thus, the two largest US institutions entrusted with the duty to protect American citizens - the US federal government and US military - have been the worst offenders, premeditatedly destroying the lives of millions of American children [and adults] along with their families, led by a diabolical Illuminati network of satanic secret societies in charge that Nazi admiring Satanist Lt. Col. Aquino exemplifies.[lxxxvii] But more on him and his Monarch mind control black projects await as the next chapter's prime topic.

For a very long time the elitists in control, busily breeding their “super race,” have always held the average, everyday working class Americans in total contempt and disdain,[lxxxviii] as hereditarily inferior, considering us “deplorables” and “useless eating” expendables per infamous child raping pedophiles Hillary Clinton[lxxxix] and Henry Kissinger.[xc] Marked for extermination, it’s essential that citizens around the world sooner than later realize that all our elite owned governments are part of this demonic global system that is anything but friend and protector. In fact, with democide (government killing its own citizens) - not war - the biggest global killer in modern history (at 262 million, 6 times the deaths from combat),[xci] simultaneously an globalist diabolical conspiracy to gain absolute power and control over every living human on this depopulated planet is moving in for its final solution kill.[xcii] We must accept this cold hard reality that today we are all in the elite’s WMD crosshairs if we are to survive the coming slaughter.

Returning to the Presidio and the 3-year old sexually abused Tobin boy, after he was interviewed on videotape during the morning of November 21st, 1986 by the CID, in the afternoon he was examined by a medical doctor at San Francisco’s General Hospital Child Adolescent Sexual Abuse Referral Center (CASARC) and it was confirmed that the young child had been anally raped.[xciii] Despite a flurry of meetings at the Presidio in reaction to the medical findings that sexual abuse did in fact occur, the Army proceeded to drag its heels, taking almost two weeks to form a strategy response group and nearly a month before informing other parents whose children had been in the pedophile teacher’s class. The identified 35-year old perpetrator, Gary Hambright, had been an ordained Southern Baptist minister in Takoma, Washington prior to moving to San Francisco in 1977 to become a part-time teacher.

During the course of the near yearlong CID investigation, a total of sixty children between ages 3 and 7 were classified as abuse victims. Normally under state law daycare facilities are immediately closed as soon as abuse is suspected, but in the cases of federally run Presidio and West Point, they were allowed to remain open resulting in even more children being molested. It was business as usual at the Presidio daycare for a full year after evidence of abuse first surfaced while the West Point facility was never closed.[xciv] The Army strategy meeting in December included the Presidio officer command, FBI, the US Attorney's office and CASARC members. The letter that went out later that month to the 242 parents whose children attended Hambright's class falsely specified that only one alleged incident had occurred, intentionally deceiving parents into believing that it was only one single isolated case.[xcv] Meanwhile, again just like at West Point, Hambright and other Center staff continued working, very likely abusing yet more children. It wasn't until the following April only after the Tobins and a few other parents forced the Army to notify all the parents in a second letter that the sexual abuse was more widespread than initially reported. But by this time the children were talking and parents were becoming increasingly upset and alarmed, learning that so many of their children had been abused, and not just by Hambright.

Exactly the same horrifying details of satanic ritual abuse emerged at the Presidio as in both the West Point and McMartin cases. The children were forced to drink urine and eat feces. They had blood smeared on their bodies, were taken off grounds to two private homes on post and one residence off post in San Francisco, they had guns pointed at them with death threats to them and their families if they tell, and at least five confirmed cases of chlamydia were documented.[xcvi] A preliminary AIDS test came back positive for one boy. And though subsequent testing indicated he did not contract the disease, escalating fears in the parents constituted yet more torture. And those fears were not unfounded as less than three years after the investigation began, on November 8th, 1989 Gary Hambright did die of AIDS.[xcvii] The time of disease onset listed on his death certificate was "years," so the deceased pedophile could have still infected their sons and daughters with the HIV virus. The terrified parents were not yet out of the woods, suffering additional anxiety on top of all the abuse and setbacks heaped on them from the unscrupulous federal [in]justice system that diabolically failed them and their damaged children.

Again, just like the West Point case before it, the military, the FBI and US attorneys willfully conspired to sabotage the case with minimal guilt and culpability. The lead prosecutor was a district court judge's daughter with zero experience in pedophile cases. Her alleged motive (no doubt per her superiors' instructions) was to gather just enough evidence to convict just the one identified abuser of committing one single sex crime against just one victim as her "best chance" to win in court, completely disregarding scores of other abused children (one FBI document indicated 102 suspected victims),[xcviii] allegedly lacking confidence that she could present strong enough evidence to secure a successful guilty verdict, or so the official story goes. Just like McMartin and West Point, the reality is the feds once again conspired to ensure the case was botched to protect the guilty. Despite the Army deliberately undermining and beleaguering the case at every turn, totally devoid of bringing any justice to the abused children and their families, instead the feds focused exclusively on their M.O. of damage control, just wanting the case to go away ASAP. Finally, almost two months after the Tobin boy's revelation in November 1986, the prime and only suspect Gary Hambright was arrested on January 5th, 1987 on charges of committing sodomy, oral copulation and a lewd and lascivious act on just one child.[xcix] The HIV infected pedophile would die of AIDS less than two years later.

Adding insult to injury, little more than two months later the district court judge dismissed the case, allowing Hambright to go free. The federal judge refused hearsay evidence of statements the Tobin boy initially made to both his family and the nurse and doctor that first examined him and concluded that the three year old was too young to be a qualified witness.[c] “Mistakenly” banking on the judge accepting the crucial hearsay evidence from the victim’s mother who was a nurse and the father a West Point graduate and nuclear engineer, the US attorney told the judge that she had another dozen children making the same claims as the Tobin boy.

To further weaken the case, the CID investigator that interviewed the 3-year old had never interviewed victims under the age of 8 before, nor ever videotaped interviews. On top of that, he bungled the case with leading and loaded questions, implanting the idea that “Mr. Gary was bad and should be spanked.”[ci] Once again the abysmal pattern unanimously holds, like the Catholic Church, the judicial system - the US government and US military alike, work consistently together on behalf of protecting the satanic pedophile rings rather than do what’s right for the victims.

Clearly seeing that they were never getting a fair shake from the authorities, the Tobins began organizing a counterstrategy with other parents whose children were also molested. To directly sabotage them, the US Army command quickly began reassigning parents to far reaching points in order prevent any potential solidarity that as an embarrassing weapon could be used against the government conspirators. Relieved that the case was dismissed, the Presidio’s ranking officers refused to meet with the upset parents, purposely delaying a second letter going out alerting all daycare parents that more than one child may have been abused.[cii] When two mothers tried to meet with Lt. Col. Walter Meyer, director of personnel and community activities, he refused because his audacious priority that day was to tape a video claiming, “Despite what you may believe, this is a model daycare center.” Turns out that Meyer was stonewalling from having to send that letter out, using his quibbling over the number of identified victims, insisting that “only 32” were raped as opposed to the more accurate count of 37. Finally, over five months after the Tobin boy’s disclosures, with the signatures of a dozen parents, a second letter dated April 29th went out to all the facility’s parents warning that a far more significant number of children were likely victimized. And of course they were correct, out of nearly 100 children examined for physical or psychological signs of abuse, at least 60 were identified as victims.[ciii]

The most vocal core amongst the parents were from the professional officer corps, who were able to afford daycare facilities elsewhere in San Francisco and were pulling their children out of the Presidio center. During the course of the investigation, Presidio CDC attendance dropped drastically from 250 to just 180 kids.[civ] But the Tobins and others realized that many of the parents were enlisted personnel who were either afraid of speaking out for fear of their career or the high cost of daycare services in the city was too expensive. In keeping with damage control, throughout this entire protracted crisis at the Presidio and the ensuing torment endured by the abused children and their parents, did the US military, its CID investigators, the US attorneys or the FBI ever bother mentioning the numerous abuse accusations on the post from the previous half dozen years, nor did they breathe a word about the concurrent scandals unfolding at West Point and more than a dozen other US military daycares worldwide.[cv] There is irrefutable evidence that the feds in their cover-ups have only maintained a longstanding record of protecting Satanist pedophiles operating among them for numerous decades now.

Unsurprisingly, also willfully hidden from the parents' knowledge were clear signs that an organized satanic cult had been actively operating at the Presidio throughout the 1980's. Earlier in the decade military police had discovered in one of the concrete bunkers behind the Military Intelligence (MI) building that the reinforced structure that once housed artillery cannons had painted in large bold red letters the words "Prince of Darkness."[cvi] What are the odds that the San Francisco "Prince of Darkness," Michael Aquino, was working in the Military Intelligence building just yards away? Next to those painted words was printed "Die" and blackened paint covered what appeared to be names in red. Another wall had the number 666 and occult drawings painted. At the center of the bunker were burnt logs. On the wall facing the MI building a huge pentagram inside a circle was drawn. At the rear wall where the least light shone lay a crude satanic altar complete with white and black candle drippings and half used incense sticks. Clearly it was a makeshift meeting place where satanic occult rituals were conducted. In another bunker not far away, a large picture of Satan with horns and red eyes was drawn.

Years before the Presidio scandal broke the same juvenile investigator Ed Albanoski one day had received two strange emergency calls that a man dressed all in black was running holding a little girl's hand followed moments later by another call reporting screams heard from the same general vicinity.[cvii] The search led to a gardener's shack in the park bordering the Presidio land where noises were heard inside. The MP's kicked open the door and found music blaring from a radio, a mannequin with a gun pointed towards the door, a large pentagram drawn on the floor in the middle of the room, a bunk on one side of the room and a bunch of dolls' heads hung from the ceiling, a very bizarre scene that again confirmed satanic ritual activity. In the several days following the MP's even staked the shack out but nothing turned up. But what was absolutely certain is that a satanic coven or larger network was actively operating on the post but the provost marshal once again stepped in ordering Albanoski and his crew to "just forget about it."

One married couple with a three year old daughter attending the daycare in Hambright's class noticed back in September and October 1986 – a full two months prior to the Tobin boy accusation - that their little girl was suffering nightmares and wetting herself when frightened, behaviors she had never exhibited before. Once they heard about the Tobin boy in January and Hambright's arrest, they began suspecting she also was abused. The parents took their daughter to a therapist and in February the child opened up, stating she was sexually abused by Gary Hambright and a man named "Mikey" and a woman named "Shamby," whose identities were yet unknown.[cviii] Then as fate would have it, a half year later on August 12th, 1987, the Adams-Thompsons were shopping with their little girl at the post PX store. The daughter suddenly panicked when she spotted Michael Aquino and began grabbing her father's leg, blurting out, "That's Mikey and he's a bad man!" When they were leaving the daughter identified Aquino's wife as Shamby. As soon as they arrived home they called the FBI.

The next day the Adams-Thompson daughter identified Hambright from a photo lineup and furnished remarkable details of Hambright having driven her off post to Mikey and Shamby's house, where for an almost four-year old she described in incredible detail being abused in a room with all black walls that was later observed to be soundproof, and the two men dressed up like women and Shamby dressed like a man.[cix] [cx] She also reported being photographed and filmed while being fondled by Hambright in a bathtub in the Aquinos' home.[cxi] The FBI drove her to 2430 Leavenworth Street and the girl was able to point out the residence where the Aquinos lived. Armed with a search warrant on August 14th, the FBI and San Francisco police entered the home and confiscated videotapes, cassette tapes, 29 photos depicting costumes and masks, two photo albums, notebooks with names and addresses as evidence that the home appeared to be the center of a satanic pedophile ring.[cxii] The indignant couple claimed their home was "raided" in a "witch hunt."

Aquino's flimsy ready-made alibi was that he was attending the National Defense University in Washington DC. But he also admitted that he made trips frequently back home to San Francisco. The report of abuse by a satanic colonel created such a stir in the press that the Army quickly reassigned him out of the way to the US Army Reserve Personnel Center in St. Louis.[cxiii]

With the father of the little girl who Identified the Aquinos as her abusers also the assistant chaplain at the Presidio, Aquino claimed that Capt. Larry Adams-Thompson was riding his high horse on a Christian vendetta to ruin him because Aquino was a high priest in the satanic church, and in retaliation the colonel actually attempted to generate court martial proceedings against the father of the child that Aquino abused for "conduct unbecoming an officer"… if ever there was a pot calling the kettle black, this would be it.[cxiv]

Throughout the decades of uncovered crimes that Aquino committed, he has always played the "innocent victim" card, blaming his years of alleged "persecution" on bigoted Christians with an axe to grind against Satanists. As a vain publicity hound at heart, he has readily appeared on national talk shows in attempts to defend himself as well as answered countless online rebuttals to "set the record straight.” On one forum, in response to written input from the Presidio’s former Chief of Juvenile Investigations Ed Albanoski further implicating Aquino, the infamous lieutenant colonel was prompted to write two lengthy accounts of his side of the story.[cxv]

Because the abuse in the Aquino home occurred within city limits, the SFPD took over the case spending from August 1987 to June 1988 investigating the high priest and priestess of the Temple of Set before turning over their findings to the city’s district attorney office. But as in every other case involving Aquino, no indictment, no arrest and no trial were forthcoming. The US attorney in charge of the case as chief prosecutor - Joseph Russeniello - supposedly acting in adversarial position against the accused Aquino. Of course it always helps when Russeniello happens to be a fellow partner-in-crime involved in the same US illegal drug running operation, the Contra affair,[cxvi] led by the infamous Maltese knighted trio VP President George H. W. Bush, Governor Bill Clinton and their fall guy Lt. Col. Oliver North. “Suicided” journalist Gary Webb[cxvii] [cxviii] also reporting for the *San Jose Mercury* broke the Contra scandal implicating Russeniello as a cocaine distributing money launderer. Aquino’s indisputable ties to fellow military officer Oliver North and Offutt Air Force Base where Aquino had been a Project Monarch mind control programmer, and the Franklin Scandal are incontrovertible.[cxix] Again, just another reminder how Malta Knight Satanists have been international ringleaders in child sex trafficking, drug trafficking, arms trafficking and organ trafficking. And the child raping, murdering kingpin - George Bush Sr. - has been this same crime family cabal patriarch.[cxx]

Meanwhile, more foul play at the Presidio was suspected when a $500,000 fire broke out in the building next to the classrooms housing the daycare records during the middle of the night on the autumnal equinox, a major satanic calendar event, September 22nd, 1987.[cxxi] The Army fire department claimed the cause was faulty wiring, but arson was suspected. Obviously Aquino and the rest of his child raping Satan worshippers did not want authorities to gain access to records that could put them behind bars where they belong. Almost as payback, the daycare building itself three weeks later was set ablaze destroying four classrooms, one where Gary Hambright taught. Due to a second fire causing $50,000 in damage, the Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms was called in and both fires were confirmed acts of arson. A half year later a $2.3 million new daycare facility was constructed and opened.

Eight days after the first fire on September 30th, and a half year since the first case against Hambright was dismissed, he was re-indicted on 10 counts of lewd and lascivious conduct on 10 children and two counts of oral copulation, announced at a press conference by Attorney Russoniello, who added that the charges carry a maximum penalty of 96 years and a $3 million fine.[cxxii] The lone gunman theory to feds' cover-ups was once again upheld, with co-conspirator Russoniello stating no other arrests would be made due to lack of evidence, which was total bullshit. Reinforcing what the kids and their parents already painfully knew, that a number of other child rapists were getting off scot free, Hambright later made the statement:

I cannot understand why these allegations and falsehoods have been, directed solely at me.[cxxiii]

Understandably the parents were upset because overwhelming evidence indicated at least six times the number of children had been physically, sexually and emotionally injured by the extensive satanic ritual abuse by multiple perpetrators. Though medical records showed that many children were missing hymens, had rectal lesions, and suffered from anal and genital trauma as well as chlamydia, they weren't included on the indictment, only the Tobin boy's medical evidence.[cxxiv] Even victims with proof of medical damage were never interviewed. Because the at least half dozen children afflicted with venereal disease apparently had the wrong culture taken at the Army hospital lab, that critical evidence was conveniently thrown out.[cxxv] The prosecutors explained that only 10 children were selected in the re-indictment because they were deemed the best witnesses despite the fact that over 60 children had been identified as abuse victims. It was yet another low blow and slap in the face to the children and their families.

Yet the situation only grew more demoralizing when in February 1988 the US attorneys requested that charges be removed on four children due to problems with their testimony.[cxxvi] The presiding Judge William Schwarzer, a Harvard educated, 9th district court appointee nominated by pedophile President Gerald Ford,[cxxvii] [cxxviii] during the first legal go-round against Hambright had refused all hearsay evidence. But this time due to the indictment's alleged "vagueness," Schwarzer eliminated all counts of charges but one. Then the Tobin boy's therapist recommended that he as the final possible witness, no longer take the stand (although an *AP* article reported that the boy's parents "were no longer willing to participate in the trial set for April 4th").[cxxix] In any event, the case against Hambright at every turn was seemingly undermined by judge, prosecution and top military brass alike. Thus, the very people whose professional job was to ensure that justice for the victims be served, by intentional design, failed miserably. And so the sole identified child rapist among many was a free man yet again. This sad outcome was chalked up to the US attorneys' inexperience handling child abuse cases and their failure at the outset to seek expert consultants. Yet another excuse was the overlapping city and federal jurisdictions that confused and obscured the case. The US attorneys claimed they were limited to what transpired on federal land at the Presidio only. Those off post home visits to Aquino's torture chamber were not even on the table for consideration as evidence since the San Francisco DA office refused to file charges. When orders comes from the top, all pervs go free.

Psychologist Diane Ehrensaft pointed out in the *American Journal of Orthnopsychiatry* the over-the-top evidence that the court willfully ignored:

> *The severity of the trauma for children at the Presidio was immediately manifest in clear cut symptoms***.** *Before the abuse was exposed, parents had already noticed the following changes in their children: vaginal discharge, genital soreness, rashes, fear of the dark, sleep disturbances, nightmares, sexually provocative language, and sexually inappropriate behavior. In addition, the children were exhibiting other radical changes in behavior, including temper outbursts, sudden mood shifts, and poor impulse control. All these behavioral symptoms are to be expected in preschool children who have been molested.*[cxxx]

But no matter the feeble excuses for failing to hold the pedophiles accountable at the Presidio, history provides a far more sinister explanation, repeatedly showing that institutions like the federal government and the US military, just like the Catholic Church, serve only its own evil self-interest - shielding pedophiles in control at the highest levels from ever being brought to justice, including even pathetic, "low level" rapists like Gary Hambright. The grim, sobering reality that the power-broking leader of a satanic church and career mind control-torture expert - Lt. Col. Aquino, has long been the kingpin of a northern California satanic ritual abuse ring that's harmed hundreds of defenseless kids, has been permitted to flourish to this very day.[cxxxi]

While on the East Coast the little known satanic pedophilia case at West Point was unethically contained by the likes of Rudy Giuliani and the Pentagon, amidst the far more open, politically progressive climate of San Francisco, the disgrace of military child abuse on the West Coast would eventually attract far more publicity. In October 1987 the local newspapers began running articles, especially once Col. Aquino the Satanist was outed and under investigation. In self-defense, Michael Aquino took to television airwaves as Geraldo Rivera interviewed both Aquino and former FBI chief Ted Gunderson in 1987[cxxxii] and later still facing accusations in February 1988 on the Oprah Winfrey Show.[cxxxiii] Based on multiple accounts from countless victims, tons of evidence proves Aquino's guilt as a pedophile, torturer and MK Ultra/Monarch mind control programmer, despite the murderous Satanist never spending even one day in jail for his thousands of crimes. And though next to no convictions have resulted in any of his criminal satanic ritual abuse enterprises, in June 1988 the parents of 23 abused children from the Presidio scandal filed a $55 million civil suit for damages resulting from the Army's gross negligence and sexual abuse.[cxxxiv] Apparently later an undisclosed multimillion dollar settlement was reached.[cxxxv]

For all his unpunished crimes, Michael Aquino actually had the audacity as plaintiff to file an unsuccessful lawsuit against the Army in January 1988, seeking to amend his criminal investigation report, clear his otherwise "good" name, and collect damages for what he contended were false statements against him.[cxxxvi] The CID charged the lieutenant colonel with "conspiracy, kidnapping, sodomy, indecent acts or liberties with a child, false swearing, intentional noncompliance with Article 30 Uniform Code of Military Justice, maltreatment of a subordinate and conduct unbecoming an officer." After Aquino's lawsuit, on September 28th, 1990, the Army CID's commanding general kept the following charges against Aquino a matter of public record that the military court subsequently concurred:

There was probable cause to title Aquino with offenses of indecent acts with a child, sodomy, conspiracy, kidnapping, and false swearing.[cxxxvii]

This permanent blemish left at least on paper as a footnote to Aquino's otherwise "outstanding" military career was the basis behind his forced retirement[cxxxviii] from active reserve status in 1990[cxxxix] (though Aquino disputes this).[cxl] However, because he's been so valued an asset in US intelligence as a mind control expert and additionally holds so much potential blackmail dirt on the elite's rampant pedophilia, Lt. Col. Aquino maintains he was allowed to remain in uniform for another 16 years as a reserve officer on reserve status. In other words, in response to the overwhelming facts piling up over the years proving Aquino is a rabid child raping, murdering maniac, the government elected to assuage his satanic wrath by merely slapping his hand publicly in order to continue utilizing his "expertise" in the New World Order quest for absolute mind control tyranny over the global population. He never served a day in jail because once again "the national security" card has sealed the tons of evidence against him. Yet to this day as the forever "maligned," self-proclaimed victim, the Satanist is still evoking "satanic panic" as his persecutor. His 2014 paperback *Extreme Prejudice: The "Satanic Abuse" Scam* sells for $20 on Amazon.[cxli] But more on this satanic high priest-military officer-MK Ultra programmer-pedophile-septuagenarian in the next chapter.

For all of Aquino's victimized kids through the years whose childhood was traumatically stolen from them barely after it began, they remain plagued and haunted the rest of their lives. Children reflexively internalize guilt that causes them to blame themselves for the horror that's been perpetrated on them.[cxlii] Self-loathing, self-hatred and shame typically haunt and terrorize them for decades to come in adulthood, impairing abuse victims' capacity to develop healthy intimate adult relationships. Survivors of the Presidio scandal continued suffering from abuse long after evidence was buried as the case shamefully grinded to a halt. Even with the abuse behind them, one 4-year old girl told her mother at the dinner table that she wanted to kill herself with a knife. Another 6-year old girl playing with clay at school all of a sudden began stabbing it, yelling "Mr. Gary is bad and I'm bad because I let him do it!" Nightmares and flashbacks commonly persist for years and decades to come. Just like the West Point parents who heard the same worn out, sugarcoated advice, "It's over, you should just move on," a mother with two of her four daughters sexually abused, both having suffered from chlamydia answered:

Three weeks ago, our youngest daughter was having nightmares and our other daughter was closing out the whole world, going to her room and sitting there, with no radio, no TV, no nothing. Tell me it's over.[cxliii]

Aside from West Point and the Presidio, the fact remains that during the 1980's at least 15 other Army, Navy and Air Force installations in the US (i.e., Fort Dix, Fort Hood, Fort Jackson, Fort Leavenworth, Fort Meade) and abroad (Germany, Panama)[cxliv] [cxlv] - an estimated over 10% of all 300 US military daycares around the world daily taking care of nearly 100,000 young children have had documented cases of ongoing sexual abuse.[cxlvi] This serves as indisputable proof that a systemic, well-oiled global pedophile machine has been operating around the world for numerous decades raping in plain sight with complete impunity. Keep in mind that during this same time period of the 1980's, pedophile George HW Bush (after Reagan got shot a month into his two terms) acting for all intents and purposes as US president (for three terms) and his CIA were trafficking in kids from

Boy’s Town into the White House as well as from Central America using fellow pedophile Father Ritter’s AmeriCares as his “charity” cover while pedophile Father Maciel and his fellow pedo priests were spreading their sinful seeds to every corner of the globe in the name of Satan. In recent decades, the Luciferian grip of ritualized sexual abuse and child sacrifice has only grown far more sophisticated, extensive and profitable perpetrating unthinkable atrocities against children worldwide.

Thirty years later with millions more children since gone missing forever, many having also been brutally defiled by Satan’s grip, with here and now evidence aggressively thrust in our face virtually every single day that child rapists and murderers in high places are still getting away with their sins against humanity, we have finally begun turning the corner exposing these demonic criminals and currently have them on the run. There is no turning back now, we must dig deeper and uncover their filthy truth if we are ever to be able to stop the horrifying abuse and bloody slaughter of our young. For both the millions who have been lost as well as the beautiful children still able to gift us their cherished innocent smiles and joyous laughter living amongst us now, we owe them our fiercely committed protection of them no matter the cost, to secure justice for all the children through the ages if we as a human species are to ever overcome this despicable blight on humanity committed by an evil few, ultimately to survive and thrive on our only home - our sacred planet earth, so that at long last all children are able to live safely in peace and love the way that God intended.

Deep State Pushback Suppressing Pedophile Evidence – Then and Now

The sociological phenomenon of so called “mass hysteria” generated during the 1980’s and 90’s, nimbly labeled "satanic panic," is taken up in a *Vox* article from last October,[cxlvii] prompted by the then media "clown scare" coverage[cxlviii] without so much as a mention of Pizzagate that was just taking off on the internet. The hit piece from *Vox* suggests another irrational resurgence of Satan-phobia hitting the USA once again, targeting an anxiety-ridden America, attempting to back up its claim by citing cases from the 1980's of hyper-sensitized parents, therapists, law enforcement, prosecutors and journalists, all putting words in the mouths of the babes, resulting in a rash of false and wildly "bizarre" accusations and convictions, punishing innocent adult victims to decades behind bars.

As another blast from the past reminder, the *Pacific Standard* put out another hit piece in September 2015 also ridiculing the true believers in satanic ritual abuse (SRA), exposing the Satanist fear mongers and "witch hunts" pursuing "imaginary" evil.[cxlix] Another weapon used to scorn and shame the "satanic panic" crowd is a 1980 best seller called *Michelle Remembers* that fueled the decade long "contagion" written by an alleged adult SRA survivor who through four years of therapy and a miscarriage began recovering buried lost memories of her horrified childhood at the hands of Church of Satan followers.[cl] The woman ended up marrying her therapist and together they wrote a book that was later alleged to be debunked as fiction. The *Standard* article's subtitle reads "how quack psychology helped pundits invent satanic panic of the 1980's and 90's." The *Washington Post*, the Jeff Bezos' Mockingbird controlled rag,[cli] the one that hired John Podesta as columnist to spread pedo cover-up lies,[clii] weighed in with a July 2015 headline "how the daycare child abuse hysteria of the 1980s became a witch hunt."[cliii] Again, lame stream media has a job to do, ridicule and demean the labeled "conspiracy theorists" as "nuts" who actually believe that satanic ritual abuse is real.[cliv] Controlling public opinion and perception is key to keeping the pedo lid sealed tightly from public consciousness and awareness. But even more important is the lame stream task of concealing all evidence of the pedophilia scourge[clv] so long been embedded at the highest reaches of earthly power, protecting the child rapists who not only own and operate MSM but the entire world and the global trafficking rings as well.[clvi]

A quarter century after the McMartin child abuse debacle, the recent *Vox, Standard* and *WaPost* articles cited the infamous case as cornerstone evidence of how "innocent" lives are being ruined when false memories are "manufactured," and how it infamously jumpstarted the 80's "satanic panic." By calculated design, just as the mainstream press made sure to sway and control public opinion during the McMartin investigation and trial, the *Vox, WaPost* and *Standard* treatment of the case make the guilty perpetrators out to be victims, and not the long suffering sodomized children and their families viewed by the perps and their mainstream minions as mere expendables. The hit pieces' central point showcases case after case in a feeble attempt to demonstrate how unjustly blamed "phantom" Satanists that never were ended up causing satanic panic hysteria to spread like wildfire out of control, all designed to condition the public now to summarily dismiss actual cases of ritualized satanic abuse against children as false and untrue. The clear MSM message is that any and all present and future cases that surface [like Pizzagate/PedoGate], claiming children have been ritualistically raped and sacrificed should be taken with a grain of salt and disbelieved as the hyped up consequence of overly-imagined, overly-coached, malleable toddlers and young children who again may well be putting more innocent people behind bars, or so the MSM dogma would have us believe.

So let’s take a look at the hard evidence of the 1980’s. A scientific study conducted by researchers at the University of New Hampshire analyzed actual data of US daycare facilities during the three year period from January 1983 through December 1985, and concluded that 500-550 reported and substantiated cases of sexual abuse of children at daycare facilities across America were confirmed involving 2,500 victims.[clvii] So in spite of “satanic panic” and media exaggeration and lies, there was more than enough documented hardcore evidence that sexual abuse did in fact occur during the mid-1980’s. And in 13% of these confirmed cases, that’s over 70 known child sex abuse cases within just a 3-year period that included “invocation of religious, magical or supernatural symbols of activities,” supporting the reality that satanic ritual abuse was and is definitely perpetrated against children. And if it was going on over three decades ago, Satanists are sure as hell still ritualistically torturing, raping and killing today.

But aside from the standard denial publicity, deep state’s sinister answer to this “satanic panic” phenomenon went on the offensive and in 1992 delivered the so called “False Memory Syndrome.”[clviii] The CIA scientists from their Monarch mind control program quickly crafted a counteroffensive hoax in response to the 80’s satanic panic,[clix] in the early 90’s elucidating how over-reactive therapists, parents, police and prosecutors were unintentionally, or intentionally, misleading both children and adults into recalling buried lost memories of sexual trauma that never actually occurred, a la the supposed *Michelle Remembers* scenario, resulting in countless innocent caregivers, teachers, parents and otherwise hapless adult victims falsely blamed and imprisoned.

As a licensed therapist in Los Angeles for many years working closely with children, adolescents and young adults who were victims of pedophilia, my own direct experience confirms the empirical research that shows that kids almost never make up sex abuse from purely overactive imaginations. That said, there are occasional cases of misguided therapists who have overly embraced the recovered repressed memory bandwagon that has harmed clients, families and the innocent accused, digging up false memories from long lost childhood. But compared to the hundreds of thousands of cases involving memories of very real substantiated sex abuse, the “false memory” cases are dwarfed. I found that one pendulum-swinging bandwagon simply replacing another does far more harm when memories of real abuse are customarily discarded as fake. Obviously memories of sexual abuse, incest, pedophilia, use of hypnotherapy for ascertaining the truth are all far too complex to allow biased, extremist positions to interfere, prejudge or sway perceptions either way as they invariably cloud accurate assessment, clinical diagnosis and discernment of truth. And regardless of statutes of limitation, the profound implications and consequences of false memories and false accusations should never be taken lightly nor be based on preconceived notions or prejudices.

But when memories of sexual abuse either recent or long past are real and accurate, they too should never be flippantly dismissed based on any preconceived biases. This allows guilty child rapists to go free, condemning true victims to undeserved punishment for life by both the offender and offending system. To gain a more fully educated perspective on this global pedophilia epidemic, a reminder again of a few cold hard facts are in order here. By nature, pedophilia crimes are among the most compulsive and addictive, and extremely difficult to effectively treat psychologically as the recidivism rates tend to be off the charts. Child rapists will generally continue to rape until they’re eventually caught and physically isolated and removed from children. Studies have shown that the average pedophile will victimize children 260 times during **his** lifetime ("his" being 96% male), and 90% of convicted pedophiles will become repeat offenders. In fact over half of convicted child sex offenders are back in prison within the first year after release and less than one in four remain out of prison after two years.[clx] So allowing child rapists to go free literally means hundreds more children are being harmed by the same offender. And with just 1-10% of child molestation even being reported to authorities, pedophiles are allowed to strike again and again before their horrendous crimes ever get reported much less result in conviction and imprisonment.

Though the majority of victims of child sexual abuse do not later become offenders, a portion of them do.[clxi] The disturbing consequence of continuing to protect offending pedophiles combined with systemic failure to protect children translates into the global epidemic only growing larger today. And over time, with multiple generations of victims potentially becoming future child rapists, the current epidemic exponentially expands accordingly. With generational ritualized abuse perpetrated and passed down by Illuminati families, further exacerbated by covert partnership with CIA-military MK Ultra/Monarch programs, the cycle of child sexual abuse becomes exponentially self-replicating. The 73.8 million children (17 and younger) in the US[clxii] and 1.9 billion kids in this world today (14 and younger)[clxiii] remain unprotected by the elitist system that shields those pedophiles in power from any and all consequences.

Compounding this children-at-risk problem, out of the near half million registered child sex offenders living amongst the US population, 9 out of 10 child sexual predators remain unregistered and still at large.[clxiv] Additionally, over a dozen years ago then founding president of the National

Center for Missing and Exploited Children Ernie Allen stated on national TV that:

> *An estimated 80 to 100,000 of them* [registered sex offenders] *are missing. They're supposed to be registered, but we don't know where they are and we don't know where they're living.*[clxv]

What we do know is that 12 years later a lot more offenders are currently missing from the registered rolls and that child rapists most often rape again, so with that many dangerous molesters on the loose, thousands of more children are being sexually assaulted by registered child predators. And again, that's not even counting the powerful pedos who have all along customarily lived above the law. That's why it's so crucially imperative that this blight on humanity finally be properly addressed and no longer conveniently swept under the rug, pretending it's not really happening or it's simply too ugly and awful to deal with and face. Looking the other way or remaining ignorant is anything but bliss, and only adds to this gargantuan problem, permitting it to spread further like the diabolical cancer it is.

Though valid in limited cases, the strategic broad stroke brush behind promoting False Memory Syndrome, calculatingly put forth by an impeccably credentialed foundation of covert CIA mind control scientists as "ideal" pushback authorities designated to impede and squelch evidence of pedophilia and Satanism, unfortunately achieved the overall desired effect, muddying up the waters, making victims' claims - both young and old - far more suspect, automatically less credible and much more arduous to prove in a court of law.[clxvi] As a consequence, countless guilty child rapists have used this get-out-of-jail card as a successful legal defense strategy and thereby manage to escape justice. The CIA's counteroffensive intended to thwart "satanic panic" from spreading worked like a charm to protect pedophiles and child sex slave rings, effectively subverting and covering up the very real satanic ritual abuse in the 1990's that undercover has been flourishing to this day, by simply dismissing the very real satanic ritual abuse as overreaching, hyped up "satanic panic" based on false memory.

Prominent APA member since 1973 and notable psychologist Elizabeth Loftus, who serves on the advisory board of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation,[clxvii] the proven CIA front,[clxviii] a couple decades ago was brought up on charges of willful deception and unethical conduct before the APA ethics board prior to Loftus' APA resignation a month after two women filed complaints against her.[clxix] According to APA by-laws, this was a clear violation as the APA ethics committee stipulates that complaints filed while an APA membership is still active ensures that any existing claims against them will be reviewed. Yet the APA committee chairperson tasked with reviewing the complaints happened to be a fellow expert co-witness at the time testifying for the same defense team representing an accused abuser in a repressed memory case, which is also a clear conflict of interest. So even the APA "ethics" committee actions proved unethical, especially when the committee quickly refused to investigate already filed charges. Plaintiffs in the two repressed memory cases where Loftus had been witness and later wrote in publications misstatements about the two lawsuits were the same two women who later felt compelled to register ethics complaints about Loftus. In a *Psychology Today* interview, Elizabeth Loftus chose to pontificate distorted, disparaging remarks against the two women who in a court of law had successfully proven their cases against incest abusing parents. As a research psychologist never having any clinical experience treating sexual trauma victims, Loftus overstepped her boundaries, deceitfully coming off sour grapes after her testimony in both cases had failed to either disprove the veracity of the victims' abuse memories or win over either court. Loftus' black and white position that all repressed memories are suspect, unreliable and to be disbelieved is simply wrong as each case needs to be judged on its own merit.

A closer look at this CIA front organization – the False Memory Syndrome Foundation (FMSF) – has founding members themselves as pedophiles and CIA MK Ultra mind control research scientists.[clxx] And with CIA tightly controlling the Mockingbird press to this day, it has wielded phenomenal power over both America's media and the court system to minimize public awareness of satanic ritual pedophilia and its extensive worldwide trafficking rings, all part of the insulated, protective apparatchik long in place, as yet more child predators guarding the henhouse. An article from the Columbia Journalism Review two decades ago states:

Rarely has such a strange and little-understood organization had such a profound effect on media coverage of such a controversial matter. The [False Memory Syndrome] foundation is an aggressive, well-financed PR machine adept at manipulating the press, harassing its critics, and mobilizing a diverse army of psychiatrists, outspoken academics, expert defense witnesses, litigious lawyers, Freud bashers, critics of psychotherapy, and devastated parents.[clxxi]

The FMSF founder, Ralph Underwager, as an admitted pedophile proclaimed in an interview that it is "God's Will" that adults partake in sex with children.[clxxii] The former Lutheran minister was forced to resign in 1993. Before his downfall, he was so esteemed in the courtroom defending those accused of pedophilia that Woody Allen's attorneys employed Underwager to testify on Allen's behalf when actress Mia Farrow, Allen's common law wife at the time, accused the director of raping their 7-year old adopted daughter Dylan Farrow, who later in her own words publicly outed Woody Allen as a sexual pedo predator.[clxxiii]

Then there’s the scandal exposing FMSF executive directors, psychologists Peter and Pamela Freyd. Their daughter Jennifer went public years later disclosing that her alcoholic pedophile father sexually molested her.[clxxiv] Peter Freyd was then defended by his wife who attempted to sabotage their daughter’s career as a psychology professor in the 1980’s. Despite this despicable truth, these pedophiles hiding behind their “scientific” façade and credentials as “expert witnesses,” have committed irreparable harm to thousands of actual child abuse victims in courts of law when their charges and testimony fell on deaf ears and legions of perps like Woody Allen have never brought to justice.

From the late great investigative reporter and author David McGowan comes his 2004 seminal breakthrough *Programmed to Kill: The Politics of Serial Murder*:

> *It should come as no surprise, then, that long-time CIA and intelligence complex operatives turn up on the FMSF Advisory Board. Perhaps the most public member has been Dr. Louis Jolyon "Jolly" West, a legendary figure in CIA mind control circles operating out of UCLA. Another is Dr. Martin Orne, an authority on torture who currently works at the University of Pennsylvania's Experimental Psychiatry Lab. Still another false memory luminary is Margaret Singer, professor emeritus at the University of California-Berkeley*. [clxxv]

Thus as Pedophile Empire gatekeepers, the CIA controlling both mainstream media and America’s court system functions to protect the powers-that-shouldn’t-be, helping to spread their sex trafficking tentacle reach to every corner of the globe. A November 1987 *San Francisco Chronicle* article covering the Presidio scandal noted that San Francisco police intelligence officer and nationally recognized cult expert Sandi Gallant specified that at least 60-70 “solid” cases of satanic ritual sexual abuse existed nationwide at that time.[clxxvi] From that same article another expert, clinical psychologist Catherine Gould, who counseled dozens of children claiming they’d been ritualistically abused, is quoted, “Independently, the victims are describing incredibly similar circumstances.” In stark contrast to the power establishment’s false reality dutifully promoted by MSM’s “satanic panic” and FMSF, totally denying the existence of child raping, sacrificing Satanists, a growing consensus of actual legal, medical and psychological professionals working directly with victimized children from around the world have maintained that thousands of children and adult accounts gathered from multiple continents all corroborate to a stunning degree the same basic Satanism practices that have survived since Babylonian times.

Therefore, it is more than predictable that the MSM truth suppressing machine would drag out its old 1980’s “satanic panic” vintage tagline as renewed defense against last October’s incriminating *WikiLeaks’* dump of Podesta emails[clxxvii] prompting thousands of internet citizen sleuths to jump on the pedo-trail, piecing together dozens of circumstantial clues to the Pizzagate story,[clxxviii] linking both Podesta brothers, both Clintons, Obama, the DNC, the Seth Rich murder[clxxix] and of course Comet Ping Pong pizzeria to the satanic worshipping Washington DC branch of the global child sex trafficking network. To head the citizen journalists off at the pass, the shrewdly calculated strategy of concealing pedophilia operations by waging a widespread disinformation media campaign[clxxx] and reintroducing dismissive, negative buzzword labels like “satanic panic” is reminiscent of another earlier CIA fabrication, branding those daring to challenge and debunk deep state’s official false narrative lies, starting with the JFK assassination cover-up, as tin foil hat wearing “conspiracy theorists.”[clxxxi]

But with a vast majority of Americans now fully convinced that mainstream news is completely “fake stream news,” with near zero credibility,[clxxxii] over time their “conspiracy nut” label has worn mighty thin and fast becoming null and void. Same with their “Russians did it” meme.[clxxxiii] In spite of the facts, it hasn’t stopped deceivers desperate to withhold their massive child raping operations from the public into utilizing their “fake news” label as weaponized censorship to feebly defend themselves. Thanks in large part to the internet, as pedophile Hillary[clxxxiv] admits, her pedo establishment is “losing the information war.”[clxxxv] Hence, its truth silencing agenda.

What’s conspicuously absent from the one-sided MSM hit pieces are the actual cases where Satanists have in fact committed horrific violent sexual crimes against small children. In addition to the already cited mid-1980’s study, just to further prove the point, scores of confirmed documented convictions in US criminal cases throughout the 1980’s and 90’s alone involving satanic ritual abuse have been compiled on one website.[clxxxvi] But by select omission, the MSM propaganda articles are purposely misleading, remiss in their gross failure to acknowledge the very sobering, disturbing reality that satanic cults and networks are operating worldwide,[clxxxvii] [clxxxviii] abducting, harming and murdering kids, cutting them up,[clxxxix] drinking their blood, eating their flesh,[cxc] and ritualistically burning young victims alive on satanic altars,[cxci] just as their ancient forebears practiced millenniums ago before the same child sacrificing god Moloch.[cxcii] After all, it’s not like Moloch worshipping satanic secret societies ever went away.[cxciii] Today they’re more apparent than ever. All through the ages, Satanic worshipping pedophiles never ceased committing vile crimes. Right at this very moment, at the top of the predator food chain, they’re still getting away with ritualized torture, rape and murder of our children.

Unspeakable crimes involving the near 1 million US children and 8 million kids globally gone missing each year is happening at the astounding rate of every four seconds, every single day 24/7,[cxciv] just to feed the insatiable appetite lust of the demonic forces wreaking ever-more havoc on this planet in these increasingly dark, turbulent times. But according to today’s demonically controlled MSM lie machine, fully complicit in covering up the widespread egregious atrocities, PedoGate’s merely the figment of a bunch of whacked out conspiracy nuts’ imaginations. But from the avalanche of confirmed evidence,[cxcv] we now absolutely know that’s not true.

Because six oligarchs are in charge of every aspect of the corporate controlled media,[cxcvi] a cultivated, programmed amnesic short attention span is exactly what the pedophiles who run this world are counting on - out of sight, out of mind, especially in the wake of the PedoGate floodgate. Suppressing the news that an unprecedented number of pedophile arrests and trafficking rings have been busted in 2017 just since Donald Trump’s become president is part of the elite’s hidden agenda to keep pedophilia out of public awareness at all cost. The planetary controllers have never wagged their dog tail so hard, using every sleight of hand diversion, chicanery, fakery and false flag deception, like the recent Charlottesville fiasco promoting race war [again],[cxcvii] or Europe’s ongoing Gladio-like terrorism,[cxcviii] or the WWIII ultimatums in response to North Korean missile launches,[cxcix] and the virulently engineered killer hurricanes attacking America and Caribbean,[cc] using anything and everything in their formidable arsenal to divert and distract the public eye away from the elephant in the global room - the elite’s child rape trafficking rings exposed like never before. From the Vatican[cci] to Iceland,[ccii] pedophiles stay in the daily headlines, and the Illuminati emperors are without their clothes, having been caught in the criminal act, bare-boned and grotesquely naked, after centuries of uninterrupted defiling of childhood innocence, the panicking, demonic, subhuman cockroaches are desperately on the run now.

To counterpoint and negate the emerging Pizzagate turned PedoGate scandal, irresponsible, blatant falsehoods and denials typify the MSM spin factory working overtime to crank out propaganda like last October's *Vox* article.[cciii] Bottom line, in case after case a consistent widespread pattern of sexual abuse and cover-up graphically illustrates the official policy of the US government/military to look the other way as standard operating procedure, while criminally committing obstruction of justice to ensure that rampant torture, rape and murder of innocent children stretching to every corner of the earth continue ad nauseam. With those running this deadly freak show members of the same Satan worshipping, child sacrificing tribe, their crime cabal system's been meticulously set up so that the same pedo club foxes are always in charge "guarding" the pedo club henhouses.[cciv] Satanists have strategically stacked the deck, infiltrating and saturating the communications media, child welfare, education, religion, law enforcement, the courts and political system from the global to the national, down to state, county and local municipal levels, all making sure that the elite's mass consumption of young flesh and blood is secretly kept business as usual. But those days are forever gone now. The cat has been let out of the bag and there's no turning back. The people are finally finding out the sick truth and the pedophiles ruling this world are finally now in the process of going down. But frantically engineering world war and imploding the global economy, in desperate self-defense, they're determined to strike first and take us all down. It's now do or die time on planet earth.

Sadly there is plenty more disgusting evidence of rampant pedophilia within the military ranks yet to be addressed in coming chapters. For many decades raping children is common amongst members of the US armed forces, as well as private military contractors[ccv] and the United Nations’ so called “peacekeeping” forces deployed around the world.[ccvi] In all these settings and domains, both domestic and abroad, the so called “security forces” that are supposed to be protecting the people are abusing them, and granted carte blanche immunity by child raping superiors in their chain of command. Their role is hugely critical in global human trafficking. Hence, rampant worldwide sex crimes allow our most vulnerable population to be repeatedly preyed upon, always avoiding arrest and prosecution due to the same systemic, blanket-wide policy of complicity and criminal protection from the scum atop the power pyramid, globally operating extensive, interlocking child sex slave trafficking rings with total impunity. But “times are a-changing” as the original troubadour who made his own Faustian deal with the devil once admitted on *60 Minutes*.[ccvii]

The next chapter analyzes the CIA and military intelligence role in the Empire’s MK Ultra Monarch mind control programming generations of super soldier assassins, sex slaves, and spies deploying ritual sexual abuse, torture and sacrifice of children on a massive systemic globalized scale. Pedophile Lt. Col. Michael Aquino as a satanic mind control programmer and career psychological warfare officer again plays a key, front and center role in this demonic matrix.

---

[i] Joachim Hagopian, “Pizzagate: Podesta Perps and Clinton’s International Child Sex Trafficking Ring Exposed,” *sott.net*, December 2, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/335512-Pizzagate-Podesta-pedo-perps-and-Clintons-international-child-sex-trafficking-ring-exposed.

[ii] Reid Cherlin, Rob Fischer, Jason Horowitz and Jason Zengerle, “The 50 Most Powerful People in Washington,” *GQ Magazine*, 2012, https://www.gq.com/gallery/50-most-powerful-people-in-washington-dc.

[iii] Cecilia Kang, “Fake News Onslaught Targets Pizzeria as Nest of Child Trafficking,” *The New York Times*, November 21, 2016, https://www.nytimes.com/2016/11/21/technology/fact-check-this-pizzeria-is-not-a-child-trafficking-site.html.

[iv] “’Pizzagate’ Shows how Fake News Hurts Real People,” *The Washington Post*, November 25, 2016, https://www.washingtonpost.com/opinions/pizzagate-shows-how-fake-news-hurts-real-people/2016/11/25/d9ee0590-b0f9-11e6-840f-e3ebab6bcdd3_story.html?utm_term=.a98040db6df2.

[v] John Woodrow Cox, Marc Fisher and Peter Hermann, “Pizzagate: From Rumor, to Hashtag, to Gunfire in D.C.,” *The Washington Post*, December 6, 2016, https://www.washingtonpost.com/local/pizzagate-from-rumor-to-hashtag-to-gunfire-in-dc/2016/12/06/4c7def50-bbd4-11e6-94ac-3d324840106c_story.html?utm_term=.d6a9dcf0dd98.

[vi] “Alex Jones Apologizes to James Alefantis (Pizzagate),” *Alex Jones Show*, YouTube video, 5:43, posted on March 26, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=tfuRSJgi0NQ.

[vii] “The Podesta Emails; Part One,” *WikiLeaks*, https://wikileaks.org/podesta-emails/press-release.

[viii] “Massive Repository of Indisputable PizzaGate Evidence,” *The Millennium Report*, December 3, 2016, http://themillenniumreport.com/2016/12/massive-repository-of-indisputable-pizzagate-evidence/.

[ix] Raha Naddaf and Greg Veis, “The 50 Most Powerful People in D.C.,” *GQ*, August 8, 2007, https://www.gq.com/story/fifty-most-powerful-dc-washington-political-aides-journalists.

[x] Reid Cherlin, Rob Fischer, Jason Horowitz and Jason Zengerle, https://www.gq.com/story/fifty-most-powerful-dc-washington-political-aides-journalists.

[xi] Reid Cherlin, Rob Fischer, Jason Horowitz and Jason Zengerle, https://www.gq.com/gallery/50-most-powerful-people-in-washington-dc#49.

[xii] Ben Nuckols, “Conspiracy Theorists: ‘Pizzagate’ just a False Flag,” *Associated Press*, December 9, 2016,

https://apnews.com/a959c054e4d349a08ea40ed32e0a7c65/Conspiracy-theorists:-'Pizzagate'-shooting-just-a-false-flag.

[xiii] Joachim Hagopian, "Was the Pizzagate Almost Shooting a Deep State False Flag? If Not, it sure was Conveniently Used to further Demonize Alt News as 'Fake News,'" *sott.net*, December 6, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/335872-Was-the-Pizzagate-almost-shooting-a-deep-state-false-flag-If-not-it-sure-was-conveniently-used-to-further-demonize-alt-media-and-fake-news.

[xiv] Dave Hodges, "Insiders Warn of More False Flags to Confiscate Guns," *Activist Post*, December 28, 2012, https://www.activistpost.com/2012/12/insiders-warn-of-more-false-flags-to.html.

[xv] Tyler Durden, "Obama Quietly Signs the 'Countering Disinformation and Propaganda Act' into Law," *Zero Hedge*, December 26, 2016, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2016-12-24/.

[xvi] Joachim Hagopian, "'Politically Correct': The War on Free Speech, Free Press, Free Internet and the Truth. What is the Endgame?" *Global Research*, July 26, 2017, https://www.globalresearch.ca/politically-correct-the-war-on-free-speech-free-press-free-internet-and-the-truth-what-is-the-endgame/5552146.

[xvii] Robert Epstein, "The New Censorship: How did Google Become the Internet Censor and Master Manipulator, Blocking Access to Millions of Websites?" *U.S. New & World Report*, June 22, 2016, https://www.usnews.com/opinion/articles/2016-06-22/google-is-the-worlds-biggest-censor-and-its-power-must-be-regulated.

[xviii] Jeff John Roberts, "A Look at Government Censorship in the Age of Facebook," *Fortune*, May 2, 2017, http://fortune.com/2017/05/02/censorship-facebook-tufekci/.

[xix] Kalev Leetaru, "How Twitter's New Censorship Tools are the Pandora's Box Moving Us towards the End of free Speech," *Forbes*, February 17, 2017, https://www.forbes.com/sites/kalevleetaru/2017/02/17/how-twitters-new-censorship-tools-are-the-pandoras-box-moving-us-towards-the-end-of-free-speech/#75e4cbbcc1e4.

[xx] Tyler Durden, "YouTube has Quietly Begun Censoring Journalists who Criticize Government," *Zero Hedge*, September 15, 2016, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2016-09-15/youtube-has-quietly-begun-censoring-journalists-who-criticize-government.

[xxi] Arjun Walia, "Declassified CIA Documents Show Agency's Control over Mainstream Media and Academia," *Collective Evolution*, May 11, 2017, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2017/05/11/declassified-cia-documents-shows-agencies-control-over-mainstream-media-academia/.

[xxii] James F. Tracey, "The CIA and the Media – 50 Facts the World Needs to Know," Global Research, December 1, 2016, https://www.globalresearch.ca/the-

cia-and-the-media-50-facts-the-world-needs-to-know/5471956.

[xxiii] Tyler Durden, “Top German Journalist Admits Mainstream Media is Completely Fake: ‘We All Lie for the CIA’” *Zero Hedge*, March 28, 2016, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2016-03-28/top-german-journalist-admits-mainstream-media-completely-fake-we-all-lie-cia.

[xxiv] Wes E. Messamore, “25 Fake News Stories from the Mainstream Media,” *Independent Voter Network*, November 21, 2016, https://ivn.us/2016/11/21/25-fake-news-stories-mainstream-media/.

[xxv] Jonathan Easley, “Poll: Majority Says Mainstream Media Publishes Fake News,” *The Hill*, May 24, 2017, http://thehill.com/homenews/campaign/334897-poll-majority-says-mainstream-media-publishes-fake-news.

[xxvi] Daniel Newton, “Top Journalist: One Third of Government are Involved in Satanic Pedophile Rings,” *Neon Nettles*, August 3, 2017, http://www.neonnettles.com/features/1092-top-journalist-one-3rd-of-government-are-involved-in-satanic-pedophile-rings.

[xxvii] Edward Morgan, “’CIA and Mossad behind Washington DC Pedophile Ring’ - Department of Homeland Security Insider,” *Prepare for Change*, February 20, 2017, http://prepareforchange.net/2017/02/20/cia-and-mossad-behind-washington-dc-pedophile-ring-department-of-homeland-security-insider/.

[xxviii] Relampago Furioso, “Is Genocide on the Elite Agenda?” *returnofkings.com* (a blog site), February 21, 2017, http://www.returnofkings.com/115243/is-genocide-on-the-elite-agenda.

[xxix] Sinead O’Carroll, “Claims Police Protected High-Profile Figures by Covering up Child Sex Abuse,” *The Journal.ie*, March 16, 2015, http://www.thejournal.ie/child-abuse-cover-up-1995756-Mar2015/.

[xxx] Nico Hines, “How Thatcher’s Government Covered up VIP Pedophile Ring,” *The Daily Beast*, March 6, 2015, http://www.thedailybeast.com/how-thatchers-government-covered-up-a-vip-pedophile-ring.

[xxxi] James Corbett, “Pedophiles in Politics: An Open Source Investigation,” *The Corbett Report*, January 11, 2015, https://www.corbettreport.com/pedophiles-in-politics-an-open-source-investigation/.

[xxxii] Alex Constantine, “McMartin Preschool Revisited,” *Virtual Government – CIA Mind Control Operations in America*, (Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House Publications, 1997) p. 45-48, McMartin Preschool Case – What Really Happened and the Coverup,” *ritualabuse.us*, https://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/articles/mcmartin-preschool-case-what-really-happened-and-the-coverup/.

[xxxiii] Robert Reinhold, “The Longest Trial – A Post Mortem; Collapse of Child Abuse Case: So much Agony for so Little,” *The New York Times*, January 24,

1990, http://www.nytimes.com/1990/01/24/us/longest-trial-post-mortem-collapse-child-abuse-case-so-much-agony-for-so-little.html?pagewanted=all.

[xxxiv] Alex Constantine, https://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/articles/mcmartin-preschool-case-what-really-happened-and-the-coverup/.

[xxxv] Joyce Millman, "'Indictment' Handles McMartin Case with Hands of Stone," *SG Gate*, May 19, 1995, http://www.sfgate.com/news/article/.

[xxxvi] Paul and Shirley Eberle, The Politics of Child Abuse (Fort Lee, New Jersey: Lyle Stuart, 1986), https://www.amazon.com/Politics-Child-Abuse-Paul-Eberle/dp/0818404159.

[xxxvii] Alan Dreyfus, "The Pedophiles of Washington DC," *1776 Again*, August 6, 2015, http://www.1776again.com/2015/08/06/the-pedophiles-of-washington-dc/.

[xxxviii] Alex Constantine, https://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/articles/mcmartin-preschool-case-what-really-happened-and-the-coverup/.

[xxxix] Ross Cheit, "Unlearned Lessons of the McMartin Preschool Case," *The Witch Hunt Narrative*, March 31, 2014, https://blogs.brown.edu/rcheit/2014/03/31/unlearned-lessons-of-the-mcmartin-preschool-case/.

[xl] Alex Constantine, "McMartin Preschool Revisited," *educate-yourself.org*, 1996, http://educate-yourself.org/tg/mcmartinpreschoolrevisited1996.shtml.

[xli] Joachim Hagopian, *Don't Let the Bastards Getcha Down*, unpublished manuscript, 2012, http://www.redredsea.net/westpointhagopian/prologue.htm.

[xlii] Joachim Hagopian, https://www.sott.net/article/335512-Pizzagate-Podesta-pedo-perps-and-Clintons-international-child-sex-trafficking-ring-exposed.

[xliii] Duha, "Giuliani: Child Molestation Case Skeleton in his Closet," *Daily Kos*, November 2, 2007, https://www.dailykos.com/stories/2007/11/1/404584/-.

[xliv] Robert D. McFadden, "Allegations of Child Abuse at West Point Center," *The New York Times*, September 24, 1984, http://www.nytimes.com/1984/09/24/nyregion/allegations-of-child-abuse-studied-at-west-pt-center.html.

[xlv] Linda Goldston, "Army of the Night," *San Jose Mercury News*, July 24, 1988, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[xlvi] Gregory K. Beale, "Why is the Number of the Beast 666?" *The Gospel Coalition*, February 11, 2015, https://www.thegospelcoalition.org/article/why-is-the-number-of-the-beast-666.

[xlvii] Robert D. McFadden, http://www.nytimes.com/1984/09/24/nyregion/allegations-of-child-abuse-studied-at-west-pt-center.html.

[xlviii] Duha, https://www.dailykos.com/stories/2007/11/1/404584/-.

[xlix] Douglas Cunningham and Alan Snel, “A Legacy of Pain: Settlement Doesn’t Ease Abused Children’s Fears,” Middleton, NY *Times Herald Record*, June 11, 1991, from “Day Care and Child Abuse Cases,” *ritualabuse.us*, https://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/articles/day-care-and-child-abuse-cases/.

[l] Douglas Cunningham and Alan Snel, https://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/articles/day-care-and-child-abuse-cases/.

[li] Douglas Cunningham and Alan Snel, https://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/articles/day-care-and-child-abuse-cases/.

[lii] Douglas Cunningham and Alan Snel, https://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/articles/day-care-and-child-abuse-cases/.

[liii] Duha, https://www.dailykos.com/stories/2007/11/1/404584/-.

[liv] Kevin Barrett, “CNN’s Smerconish Threatens Giuliani over ‘9/11 Inside Job,’” *Veterans Today*, August 23, 2016, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2016/08/23/smerc911/.

[lv] Avni Patel and Brian Ross, “Giuliani Defends, Employs Priest Accused of Molesting Teens,” *ABC News*, October 23, 2007, http://abcnews.go.com/Blotter/story?id=3753385&page=1.

[lvi] Douglas Cunningham and Alan Snel, https://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/articles/day-care-and-child-abuse-cases/.

[lvii] “No Cases to be Filed in Abuse Complaints,” *The New York Times*, October 25, 1985, http://www.nytimes.com/1985/10/25/nyregion/no-cases-to-be-filed-in-abuse-complaints.html.

[lviii] Douglas Cunningham and Alan Snel, https://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/articles/day-care-and-child-abuse-cases/.

[lix] Douglas Cunningham and Alan Snel, https://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/articles/day-care-and-child-abuse-cases/.

[lx] Douglas Cunningham and Alan Snel, https://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/articles/day-care-and-child-abuse-cases/.

[lxi] Laura K. Kerr, “Is it Possible to Recover from Rape and Sexual Abuse? Yes and No,” *laurakkerr.com* (a blog site), https://www.laurakkerr.com/2014/11/23/recover-rape-and-sexual-abuse/.

[lxii] Douglas Cunningham and Alan Snel, https://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/articles/day-care-and-child-abuse-cases/.

[lxiii] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[lxiv] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[lxv] "Sixth US Army, 1946-1980," www.franciscodacosta.com/articles/media/SixthArmy.pdf

[lxvi] "Presidio of San Francisco: History and Culture," *NPS.gov*, National Park Service, https://www.nps.gov/prsf/learn/historyculture/index.htm.

[lxvii] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[lxviii] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[lxix] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[lxx] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[lxxi] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[lxxii] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[lxxiii] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[lxxiv] Nick Turse, "A My Lai a Month," *The Nation*, November 13, 2008, https://www.thenation.com/article/my-lai-month/.

[lxxv] Trent Angers, "Nixon and the My Lai Massacre Coverup," *New York Post*, March 15, 2014, http://nypost.com/2014/03/15/richard-nixon-and-the-my-lai-

massacre-coverup/.

[lxxvi] John G. Messerly, “Yes, America is Descending in Totalitarianism,” *Institute for Ethics and Emerging Technologies*, January 8, 2017, https://ieet.org/index.php/IEET2/more/Messerly20170108.

[lxxvii] David Vine, “The United States Probably has more Foreign Military Bases than any other People, Nation or Empire in History,” *The Nation*, September 14, 2015, https://www.thenation.com/article/the-united-states-probably-has-more-foreign-military-bases-than-any-other-people-nation-or-empire-in-history/.

[lxxviii] “United States: Address Role of US Military in Fueling Global Trafficking,” *Equality Now*, https://www.equalitynow.org/action-alerts/united-states-address-role-us-military-fueling-global-sex-trafficking.

[lxxix] Baher Kamal, “Sexual Slavery, that Big Business,” *Wall Street International Magazine*, March 28, 2017, https://wsimag.com/economy-and-politics/24602-sexual-slavery-that-big-business.

[lxxx] “Trafficking in Persons,” *United Nations Office on Drugs and Crime*, http://www.unodc.org/unodc/data-and-analysis/glotip.html.

[lxxxi] Namita Bhandare, “Trafficking is the Fastest Growing Black Market Trade and it’s all around us,” *Hindustan Times*, December 2, 2016, http://www.hindustantimes.com/columns/trafficking-is-the-fastest-growing-black-market-trade-and-it-s-all-around-us/story-lfLzW7pRpmEwqrU7RPjuPJ.html.

[lxxxii] Karin Lehnardt, “56 Little Known Facts about Human Trafficking,” *factretriever.com*, https://www.factretriever.com/human-trafficking-facts.

[lxxxiii] Jeff Desjardins, “Nearly 200,000 US Troops are Currently Deployed around the World – Here’s Where,” *Business Insider*, March 20, 2017, http://www.businessinsider.com/us-military-personnel-deployments-by-country-2017-3?IR=T&r=US&IR=T.

[lxxxiv] David Vine, https://www.thenation.com/article/the-united-states-probably-has-more-foreign-military-bases-than-any-other-people-nation-or-empire-in-history/.

[lxxxv] Helmut Lammer, “New Evidence of Military Involvement in Abductions,” *rense.com*, http://rense.com/ufo/newevabduct.htm.

[lxxxvi] Ron Patton, “The Evolution of Project MK Ultra-Project Monarch Nazi Mind Control,” *bibliotecapleyades.com*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mindcon02.htm.

[lxxxvii] William H. Kennedy, *Satanic Crime: A Threat in the New Millennium* (Morrisville, North Carolina: Lulu Enterprises, Inc., 2006) p. 10, http://studylib.net/doc/8344721/satanic-crime--a-threat-in-the-new-millennium.

[lxxxviii] Paul Buchheit, “The Vicious Cycle of Disdain for Poor Americans,” *truth-out.org*, May 15, 2017, http://truth-out.org/buzzflash/commentary/the-vicious-cycle-of-disdain-for-poor-americans.

[lxxxix] Kyle Olson, “Hillary Threw Americans into ‘Bucket of Losers’ in Wall Street Speech,” *The American Mirror*, October 7, 2016, http://www.theamericanmirror.com/wall-street-speech-hillary-threw-americans-bucket-losers/.

[xc] Wesman Todd Shaw, “Henry Kissinger – Architect of the New World Order,” *bibliotecapleyades.com*, November 12, 2012, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_kissinger04.htm.

[xci] R.J. Rummel, *Death by Government* (New Brunswick, New Jersey: Transaction Publishers, 1994), https://www.hawaii.edu/powerkills/NOTE1.HTM.

[xcii] Robert Zubrin, "The Population Control Holocaust," *The New Atlantis*, Number 35, Spring 2012, pp. 33-54., http://www.thenewatlantis.com/publications/the-population-control-holocaust.

[xciii] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[xciv] “Army will Close Child-Care Center,” *Associated Press/The New York Times*, November 16, 1987, http://www.nytimes.com/1987/11/16/us/army-will-close-child-care-center.html.

[xcv] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[xcvi] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[xcvii] Linda Goldston, “Presidio Child Abuse Figure Dies of AIDS,” *San Jose Mercury News*, January 5, 1990, http://stopbaptistpredators.org/article/gary_hambright.html.

[xcviii] Linda Goldston, http://stopbaptistpredators.org/article/gary_hambright.html.

[xcix] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[c] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[ci] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[cii] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[ciii] "Army will Close Child-Care Center," http://www.nytimes.com/1987/11/16/us/army-will-close-child-care-center.html.

[civ] "Army will Close Child-Care Center," http://www.nytimes.com/1987/11/16/us/army-will-close-child-care-center.html.

[cv] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[cvi] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[cvii] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[cviii] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[cix] Copy of San Francisco Police Department Incident Report, August 13-14, 1987, http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino05.htm.

[cx] Dave McGowan, "The Pedophocracy, Part III: Lt. Col. Michael Aquino and the Presidio Child Development Center," August 2001, http://educate-yourself.org/cn/The-Pedophocracy-Part-III-Dave-McGowan-aug2001.shtml.

[cxi] Jeffrey Steinberg, "Satanic Subversion of the U.S. Military," *Executive Intelligence Review*, July 2, 1999, http://www.larouchepub.com/other/2005/3233aquino_profile.html.

[cxii] Jeffrey Steinberg, http://www.larouchepub.com/other/2005/3233aquino_profile.html.

[cxiii] Jeffrey Steinberg, http://www.larouchepub.com/other/2005/3233aquino_profile.html.

[cxiv] Dave McGowan, http://educate-yourself.org/cn/The-Pedophocracy-Part-III-Dave-McGowan-aug2001.shtml.

[cxv] Michael A. Aquino, “Aquino Email Correspondence,” January 18, 1999-August 7, 1999, *outpost-of-freedom.com*, http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino04.htm.

[cxvi] Alexander Cockburn and Jeffrey St. Clair, *Whiteout: The CIA, Drugs and the Press* (New York: Verso Books, 1998), p. 1-28, http://www.nytimes.com/books/first/c/cockburn-white.html.

[cxvii] Charlene Fassa, “Webb ‘Suicide’ Looking more like Murder,” *rense.com*, December 19, 2004, http://www.rense.com/general60/move.htm.

[cxviii] Greg Grandin, “’The New York Times’ Wants Gary Webb to Stay Dead,” *The Nation*, October 10, 2014, https://www.thenation.com/article/new-york-times-wants-gary-webb-stay-dead/.

[cxix] Ron Patton, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mindcon02.htm.

[cxx] Jorge Salazar, “George H.W. Bush: A Pedophile Sex Ring Leader,” *Independence Day*, January 19, 2015, http://www.independenceday.pro/george-h-w-bush-pedophile-sex-ring-and-blackmail-of-congress/.

[cxxi] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[cxxii] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[cxxiii] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[cxxiv] Dave McGowan, http://educate-yourself.org/cn/The-Pedophocracy-Part-III-Dave-McGowan-aug2001.shtml.

[cxxv] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[cxxvi] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[cxxvii] “Judiciary Mourns Passing of William W. Schwarzer, Distinguished Judge of the Northern District of California,” United States Court for the Ninth Circuit, Public Information Office, February 1, 2017, cdn.ca9.uscourts.gov/datastore/ce9/2017/02/01/Schwarz...

[cxxviii] “Leslie Lynch King, Jr. (later known as Gerald R. Ford),” *whale.to*, http://www.whale.to/b/ford1.html.

[cxxix] “S.F. Presidio Abuse Case Falls Apart,” *Associated Press/Los Angeles Times*, February 18, 1988, http://articles.latimes.com/1988-02-18/news/mn-43705_1_child-molestation-charge.

[cxxx] Dave McGowan, http://educate-yourself.org/cn/The-Pedophocracy-Part-III-Dave-McGowan-aug2001.shtml.

[cxxxi] Dave McGowan, http://educate-yourself.org/cn/The-Pedophocracy-Part-III-Dave-McGowan-aug2001.shtml.

[cxxxii] Michael Aquino and Ted Gunderson interviewed by Geraldo Rivera on *Geraldo Rivera Show,* 1987, YouTube video, 7:06, posted on September 28, 2008, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=0muY2VmyDPI.

[cxxxiii] Michael Aquino interviewed by Oprah Winfrey on *Oprah Winfrey Show*, 1988, YouTube video, 7:01, posted on September 17, 2012, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=4NmN_or-ASU&t=46s.

[cxxxiv] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[cxxxv] Alex Constantine, “Michael Aquino Revisited,” *aconstantineblacklist.blogspot* (an online blog site), August 21, 2007, http://aconstantineblacklist.blogspot.co.id/2007/08/michael-aquino-revisited-was-he-guilty.html.

[cxxxvi] “Michael A. Aquino, Plaintiff-Appellant, v. Michael P.W. Stone, Secretary of the Army, Defendant-Appellee, 957 F.2d 139 (4th Circuit 1992),” *Justia US Law*, http://law.justia.com/cases/federal/appellate-courts/F2/957/139/2044/.

[cxxxvii] “U.S. Army’s Memorandum in Support of Defendant’s Motion for Judgment of the Record,” http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino02.htm.

[cxxxviii] Anthony Forwood, “The ‘Conspiracy’ against Michael Aquino – Satanic Pedophile,” *Exposing the Truth* (an online blog site), February 11, 2014, http://exposinginfragard.blogspot.co.id/2014/02/the-case-against-michael-aquino-satanic.html.

[cxxxix] “Michael A. Aquino, Plaintiff-Appellant, v. Michael P.W. Stone, Secretary of the Army, Defendant-Appellee, 957 F.2d 139 (4th Circuit 1992),” *Justia US Law*, http://law.justia.com/cases/federal/appellate-courts/F2/957/139/2044/.

[cxl] Michael Aquino, “The 1986-87 Presidio ‘Satanic Ritual Abuse’ Events,” September 17, 2008, https://xeper.org/maquino/nm/PSFSummary.pdf

[cxli] Michael Aquino, *Extreme Prejudice: The Presidio "Satanic Abuse" Scam* (CreateSpace Independent Publishing, 2014), https://www.amazon.com/Extreme-Prejudice-Presidio-Satanic-Abuse/dp/1500159247.

[cxlii] Elisabeth Sylvia Heidi Mundorf, "Child Abuse Survivors' Experience of Self over the Course of Emotion Focused Therapy for Trauma: A Qualitative Analysis," University of Windsor PhD. Dissertation, 2013, scholar.uwindsor.ca/cgi/viewcontent.cgi?article=5948&...

[cxliii] Linda Goldston, http://web.archive.org/web/20130118004343/http://web.archive.org/web/20050301093215/http://www.outpost-of-freedom.com/aquino01.htm.

[cxliv] Dave McGowan, http://educate-yourself.org/cn/The-Pedophocracy-Part-III-Dave-McGowan-aug2001.shtml.

[cxlv] Paul Szoldra, "FBI Launches Investigation into Alleged Child Sexual Abuse at Fort Meade Army Base," Business Insider, November 8, 2013, http://www.businessinsider.com/fort-meade-child-abuse-investigation-2013-11?IR=T&r=US&IR=T.

[cxlvi] "Army will Close Child-Care Center," http://www.nytimes.com/1987/11/16/us/army-will-close-child-care-center.html

[cxlvii] Aja Romano, "The History of Satanic Panic in the US – and why it's not over yet," *Vox*, October 30, 2016, https://www.vox.com/2016/10/30/13413864/satanic-panic-ritual-abuse-history-explained.

[cxlviii] Bess Lovejoy, "What do the Scary Clowns Want?" The New York Times, October 15, 2016, https://www.nytimes.com/2016/10/16/opinion/sunday/what-do-the-scary-clowns-want.html?_r=0.

[cxlix] Dan Shewan, "Conviction of Things not Seen: The Uniquely American Myth of Satanic Cults," *Pacific Standard*, September 8, 2015, https://psmag.com/social-justice/make-a-cross-with-your-fingers-its-the-satanic-panic.

[cl] Lawrence Pazder and Michelle Smith, *Michelle Remembers* (New York: Pocket Books, 1980), https://www.amazon.com/Michelle-Remembers-Smith/dp/0671694332.

[cli] Carey Wedler, "The CIA, Washington Post, and Russia: What You're not being Told," Zero Hedge, December 20, 2016, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2016-12-20/cia-washington-post-and-russia-what-youre-not-being-told.

[clii] Lily Dane, "WaPo Hires John Podesta as a Columnist, Flushing Last Remaining Credibility down the Toilet," *Activist Post*, February 28, 2017,

https://www.activistpost.com/2017/02/wapo-hires-john-podesta-columnist-flushing-last-remaining-credibility-toilet.html.

[cliii] Maura Casey, “How the Daycare Child Abuse Hysteria of the 1980s Became a Witch Hunt,” *Washington Post*, July 31, 2015, https://www.washingtonpost.com/opinions/a-modern-witch-hunt/2015/07/31/057effd8-2f1a-11e5-8353-1215475949f4_story.html?utm_term=.b70793ae73ab.

[cliv] Ben Nuckols, “Conspiracy Threorists: ‘Pizzagate’ just a False Flag,” *Associated Press*, December 9, 2016, https://apnews.com/a959c054e4d349a08ea40ed32e0a7c65/conspiracy-theorists-pizzagate-shooting-just-false-flag.

[clv] Liz Crokin, “Why the MSM is Ignoring Trump’s Sex Trafficking Busts,” *Townhall*, February 25, 2017, https://townhall.com/columnists/lizcrokin/2017/02/25/why-the-msm-is-ignoring-trumps-sex-trafficking-busts-n2290379.

[clvi] Joachim Hagopian, “PedoGate Update: The Global Elite’s Pedophile Empire is Crumbling – But will it ever Crash?” *sott.net*, March 21, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/345836-PedoGate-Update-The-Global-Elites-Pedophile-Empire-is-Crumbling-But-Will-it-Ever-Crash.

[clvii] David Finkelhor and Linda Meyer Williams, “Sexual Abuse in Daycare: A National Study,” University of New Hampshire Family Research Laboratory, March 1988, https://www.ncjrs.gov/pdffiles1/Digitization/113095NC...

[clviii] False Memory Syndrome Foundation website, http://www.fmsfonline.org/index.php.

[clix] Alex Constantine, “The False Memory Hoax,” *educate-yourself.org*, January 1996, http://educate-yourself.org/mc/falsememoryhoax1996.shtml.

[clx] “Statistics Child Molesters,” Yellow Dyno Protecting Children from Child Predators website, http://yellodyno.com/Statistics/statistics_child_molester.html.

[clxi] Kelly Richards, “Misperceptions about Child Sex Offenders,” *Trends and Issues in Crime and Criminal Justice*, No. 429, September 2011, http://www.aic.gov.au/publications/current%20series/tandi/421-440/tandi429.html.

[clxii] Forum on Child and Family Statistics website, *childstats.gov*, https://www.childstats.gov/americaschildren/tables/pop1.asp.

[clxiii] “The World has Reached Peak Number of Children,” *gapminder.org*, http://www.gapminder.org/news/world-peak-number-of-children-is-now/.

[clxiv] “The National Sex Offender Registry,” Child Rescue Network website, http://childrescuenetwork.org/know-the-facts/the-national-sex-offender-registry/.

[clxv] Chris Hawke, "'Jessica's Law' Eyes Sex Offenders," *CBS news*, March 31, 2005, https://www.cbsnews.com/news/jessicas-law-eyes-sex-offenders/.

[clxvi] Dave McGowan, http://educate-yourself.org/cn/The-Pedophocracy-Part-III-Dave-McGowan-aug2001.shtml.

[clxvii] "Elizabeth Loftus," Wikipedia, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Elizabeth_Loftus.

[clxviii] Alex Constantine, http://educate-yourself.org/mc/falsememoryhoax1996.shtml.

[clxix] Alex Constantine, "APA Fraud: Ethics Complaints Filed Against Elizabeth Loftus, Board Member of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation, a CIA Mind Control/Pedophile Front," *Constantine Report*, January-February 1996, http://www.constantinereport.com/ethics-complaints-filed-against-elizabeth-loftus-board-member-of-the-false-memory-syndrome-foundation-a-cia-mind-controlpedophile-front/.

[clxx] "Six Case Studies that Point to Massive Pedophilia Rings at the Highest Levels of Power," *thelastamericanvagabond.com* (a blog site), November 11, 2016, http://www.thelastamericanvagabond.com/outside-the-box/six-case-studies-massive-child-pedophilia-ring-highest-power-levels/.

[clxxi] Mike Stanton, "U-Turn on Memory Lane," *Columbia Journalism Review*, July-August 1997, http://web.archive.org/web/20071216011151/http:/backissues.cjrarchives.org/year/97/4/memory.asp.

[clxxii] "A Brief Overview of the Founding Members of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation," *bibliotecapleyades.com*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_tavistock04a.htm.

[clxxiii] Nicholas Kristof, "Dylan Farrow's Story," *The New York Times*, February 1, 2014, https://www.nytimes.com/2014/02/02/opinion/sunday/kristof-dylan-farrows-story.html.

[clxxiv] "A Brief Overview of the Founding Members of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation," https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_tavistock04a.htm.

[clxxv] Dave McGowan, http://educate-yourself.org/cn/The-Pedophocracy-Part-III-Dave-McGowan-aug2001.shtml.

[clxxvi] Edward W. Lempinen, "Satanism Linked To Scores of U.S. Child Abuse Cases," *San Francisco Chronicle*, posted on *Ritual Abuse Pages*, "Day Care and Child Abuse Cases," https://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/articles/day-care-and-child-abuse-cases/.

[clxxvii] "The Podesta Emails," https://wikileaks.org/podesta-emails/.

[clxxviii] Yoichi Shimatsu, “PizzaGate is a Giant Step for Investigative Journalism – Part 1,” *State of the Nation*, December 17, 2016, http://stateofthenation2012.com/?p=60696.

[clxxix] Tyler Durden, “Murdered DNC Staffer Seth Rich Shared 44,053 Democrat Emails with WikiLeaks: Report,” *Zero Hedge*, May 16, 2017, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2017-05-16/.

[clxxx] Ellen Lacter, “Common Forms of Misinformation and Tactics of Disinformation about Psychotherapy for Trauma Originating in Ritual Abuse and Mind Control,” *childabusedata.blogspot* (an online blog site), February 10, 2016, http://childabusedata.blogspot.co.id/2016/02/common-forms-of-misinformation-and.html.

[clxxxi] George Washington, “In 1967, the CIA Created the Label ‘Conspiracy Theorists’… to Attack Anyone who Challenges the "Official" Narrative,” *Zero Hedge*, February 23, 2015, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2015-02-23/1967-he-cia-created-phrase-conspiracy-theorists-and-ways-attack-anyone-who-challenge.

[clxxxii] Jonathan Easley, http://thehill.com/homenews/campaign/334897-poll-majority-says-mainstream-media-publishes-fake-news.

[clxxxiii] William Binney and Ray McGovern, “More Holes in Russia-gate Narrative,” *Consortium News*, September 20, 2017, https://consortiumnews.com/2017/09/20/more-holes-in-russia-gate-narrative/.

[clxxxiv] “Dr. Steve Pieczenik – Hillary Clinton May Face Charges in Pedophilia Ring,” *The Still Report* 1313, YouTube video, 5:49, posted on November 3, 2016, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=KPiJdATpEaM.

[clxxxv] “Hillary Clinton: The US is Losing ‘an Information War,’” *The Daily Conversation*, YouTube video, 1:11, posted on March 3, 2011, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=m1p-E2xmpjA.

[clxxxvi] Karen Curio Jones, “Satanism and Ritual Abuse Archive,” *konformist.com* (an online blog site), 2000, http://www.konformist.com/vault/sra.htm.

[clxxxvii] Preston James, “Australian 60 Minutes Exposed the Worldwide Satanic Pedophile Network,” *Veterans Today*, November 13, 2016, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2016/11/13/australian-60-minutes-exposed-the-worldwide-satanic-pedophile-network/.

[clxxxviii] “Spies, Lords and Predators,” *Australian 60 Minutes*, YouTube video, 53:17, posted on March 17, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=bezVbPCK5Q8.

[clxxxix] Henry Makow, “Hillary Clinton is a Satanist – Illuminati Defector,” *henrymakow.com*, March 4, 2016, https://www.henrymakow.com/illuminati_defector_mary_anne.html.

[cxc] "Mainstream Media Exposed its own Cannibalism… and more," *Covert Geopolitics*, March 13, 2017, https://geopolitics.co/2017/03/13/mainstream-media-exposed-its-own-cannibalism/.

[cxci] David Icke, *The Biggest Secret* (Ryde, England: Bridge of Love Publications, 1999), Chapter 15, "Satan's Children," *whale.to*, http://www.whale.to/c/biggest_secret_15.html.

[cxcii] Joachim Hagopian, "Ruling Elite's Pedophile Bloodlust for Children: From Antiquity to Today," *The Millennium Report*, April 28, 2017, http://themillenniumreport.com/2017/04/ruling-elites-pedophile-bloodlust-for-children-from-antiquity-to-today/.

[cxciii] Katherine Frisk, "The United States of America is a Satanist Country," *Veterans Today*, March 29, 2016, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2016/03/29/the-united-states-of-america-is-a-satanist-country/.

[cxciv] Karin Lehnardt, https://www.factretriever.com/missing-people-facts.

[cxcv] Joachim Hagopian, https://www.sott.net/article/345836-PedoGate-Update-The-Global-Elites-Pedophile-Empire-is-Crumbling-But-Will-it-Ever-Crash.

[cxcvi] Ashley Lutz, "These 6 Corporations Control 90% of the Media in America," *Business Insider*, June 14, 2012, http://www.businessinsider.com/these-6-corporations-control-90-of-the-media-in-america-2012-6?IR=T&r=US&IR=T.

[cxcvii] "Charlottesville: The Race War Agenda is gaining Steam," *The Vigilant Citizen*, August 14, 2017, https://vigilantcommunity.com/views/there-is-a-race-wars-agenda-and-it-is-gaining-steam/.

[cxcviii] Shawn Helton, "Shades of Gladio? London Attacker 'Known' to MI5 – Police Terror Drill Days Before," *21st Century Wire*, March 24, 2017, http://21stcenturywire.com/2017/03/24/shades-of-gladio-london-attacker-known-to-mi5-police-terror-drill-days-before/.

[cxcix] Gregory Elich, "Trump's War on the North Korean People," *Counter Punch*, September 19, 2017, https://www.counterpunch.org/2017/09/19/trumps-war-on-the-north-korean-people/.

[cc] Dane Wigington, "Controlling Hurricanes: Harvey, Irma, and now Jose?" GeoEngineering Watch, September 11, 2017, http://www.geoengineeringwatch.org/controlling-hurricanes-harvey-irma-and-now-jose/.

[cci] Leo Zagami, "High Ranking Vatican Priest Accused of Pedophilia in Washington DC," *leozagami.com* (an online blog site), September 15, 2017, http://leozagami.com/2017/09/15/high-ranking-vatican-priest-accused-of-pedophilia-in-washington-dc/.

[ccii] Amanda Erickson, “How a Convicted Pedophile Brought down Iceland’s Government,” *The Washington Post*, September 16, 2017, https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/worldviews/wp/2017/09/16/how-a-convicted-pedophile-brought-down-icelands-government/?utm_term=.db7eb99f495d.

[cciii] Aja Romano, https://www.vox.com/2016/10/30/13413864/satanic-panic-ritual-abuse-history-explained.

[cciv] F. William Engdahl, “Foxes Guard Facebook Henhouse,” *New Eastern Outlook*, December 22, 2016, https://journal-neo.org/2016/12/22/foxes-guard-facebook-henhouse/.

[ccv] Alex Jones and Paul Joseph Watson, “Dyncorp and Halliburton Sex Slave Scandal won’t go away,” *prisonplanet.com*, January 1, 2006, https://www.prisonplanet.com/articles/january2006/010106sexslavescandal.htm.

[ccvi] Alex Newman, “CFR: To Deal with Child Raping UN Troops, UN Needs more Power,” *The New American*, September 9, 2015, https://www.thenewamerican.com/world-news/africa/item/21544-cfr-to-deal-with-child-raping-un-troops-un-needs-more-power.

[ccvii] Bob Dylan interviewed by Ed Bradley, *CBS 60 Minutes*, “Bob Dylan Admits he Sold his soul to the Devil,” YouTube video, 0:41, posted on December 16, 2011, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ftdeb4ejQSg.

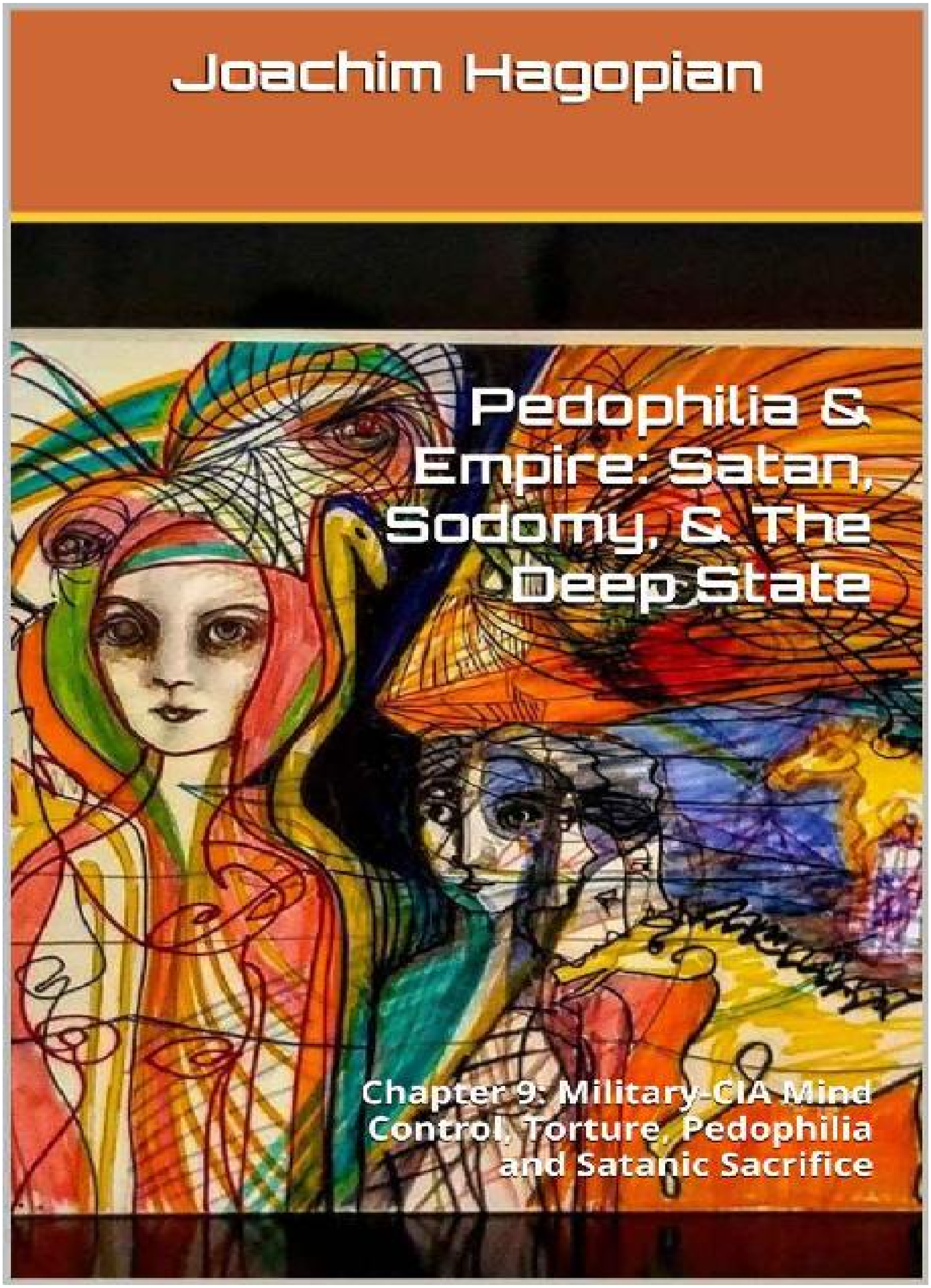

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 9: Military-CIA Mind Control, Torture, Pedophilia and Satanic Sacrifice

Chapter 9: Military-CIA Mind Control, Torture, Pedophilia and Satanic Sacrifice

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission

http://www.noramaccoby.com/

Scratch the surface history of US military intelligence and CIA covert operations to their so called black projects and pedophilia rears its ugly head at every turn. But it wasn't until the 1970's that their grotesque human rights violations were unveiled in a book authored by State Department insider John Marks called *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate: The CIA and Mind Control* based on then recent declassified CIA documents.[1] Other disturbing, firsthand accounts emerged with CIA whistleblowers Vincent Marchetti and Philip Agee[2] in combination with sobering revelations arising from the Senate Church Committee investigating CIA improprieties and overreaches.[3] Because so much of the CIA's dubious atrocities committed around the world have already been covered extensively elsewhere,[4] the briefest chronology of the infamous intelligence agency should suffice here.

Typically any national leader in this world who wants to do right by his or her people and be independent of America's raping and pillaging by the likes of parasitic World Bank and IMF loans[5] along with invading Western multinational corporate giants is targeted by the CIA for subversion and insurrection by CIA-paid and trained opposition, and removed from power by coup, assassination and most often replaced by CIA backed military dictatorships.[6] This horrific pattern across the globe is history endlessly repeated. US Empire has overthrown scores of sovereign governments[7] and against all international law imposed its imperialistic death grip on virtually every country on this planet. Only two nations on this earth are still holdouts refusing to succumb to the Rothschild central banking cabal[8] - Iran[9] and North Korea.[10] No surprise they're both targeted as longtime US enemies that Empire's constantly threatened to bomb into oblivion, which would be the second time for North Korea.[11] [12] Now you understand why. This telling fact speaks volumes, revealing everything you need to know about New World Disorder and the CIA's primary function to bring it about.

The fact that the Rothschild cartel maintains central banks in every country on earth but two, means that it controls or minimally partners with all other nations including both Russian and Chinese oligarchs, dispelling the entire myth of the West versus East dichotomy. Despite the brainwash since World War II that the Russians are eternal enemies of the United States and Europe,[13] the ultimate truth is the New World Order encompasses Illuminati elite busily pushing Oz-like levers of control from behind both the Western and Eastern "Curtain." These artificial political divisions have always been conveniently manufactured false props promoting two "opposing" ideologies along political-military lines (i.e., Western "free enterprise" "democracies" vs. Eastern "Communist" "totalitarian dictatorships"). The reality is these two opposite systems never existed beyond the abstract and are largely homogenized into one and the same, run by the same global elite. The elitist power structure owning and controlling our planet transcends arbitrary geographical borders, making this so called West vs. East factionalism into two enemy camps forever implanted in our brains pure bullshit, perpetrated by the same usual suspect - the Luciferian, war making, pedophilic elite just to keep ongoing "order out of chaos" tensions alive and well. After all, the masses are far more easily manipulated and controlled when indoctrinated into always fearing and hating the vilified “bogeyman.”[14] The same can be said for “Islam” being the Christian enemy. From the get-go Middle Eastern “terrorists” were secretly created and supported by the Western elite.[15] All our so called enemies are fabricated inventions of the planetary controllers to propagate their endless war of terror in order to keep their polarized, divided and conquered world into fixed enemy camps fighting each other.[16] We’ve all been lied to for a very long time.

But rather than focus on the elite’s international destabilization agenda as a prerequisite to tyranny of a one world government, this chapter will examine in detail the US government’s trauma-induced mind control program that regularly involves sodomizing, sacrificing, abducting and trafficking children globally. The CIA has been deployed chiefly as a private clandestine army for Luciferian worshipping planetary controllers, i.e., the owners of the world’s private central banking system, largest transnational corporations, and through bribery and blackmail, virtually all the national governments.[17] [18] And from the CIA’s genesis in 1947 to the present, it has exclusively served the interests of its masters - the ruling elite.

There are critics of the US intelligence community that refer to it as the US president’s private army.[19] But because so much of both its CIA and military operations have been conducted in sealed tight secrecy with absolute zero oversight, knowledge or control from either the president or Congress,[20] that view is inaccurate. Though black budget operations appear to be run by an independent rogue force, in reality they’re merely a controlled manifestation of the hidden satanic hand that rules this world.

Take for instance the highly controversial Majestic-12(also called MJ-12, MAJI, the Majority Agency for Joint Intelligence[21]), the government inner circle created by a

President Truman executive order in 1947 after the UFO Roswell crash in order to oversee all top secret space phenomena that includes extraterrestrials and black ops programs.[22] Formed on the heels of the 1947 National Security Act that spawned the CIA, MJ-12 was comprised of a dozen exclusive members, half from top government intelligence and the military, and half from the scientific community. Near a half century apart, two powerful Washington insiders, both MJ members, were likely assassinated for the very same reason - daring to defy MJ-12 secrecy by allegedly pushing too hard on ET disclosure - Secretary of Defense James Forrestal in 1949[23] and former CIA director William Colby in 1996.[24] [25] As early as 1954, MJ-12 began excluding even President Eisenhower from this ultra-secret intel loop.[26] And in his 1961 presidential farewell address, recognizing the growing danger posed by an unchecked military industrial complex, Eisenhower warned America of its grave threat to our future liberties.[27] Unfortunately Americans neither paid heed to Ike's warning nor three months later his successor's prophetic revelation exposing the shadow government[28] that soon enough murdered him,[29] leaving the perps free to usher in Washington's increasing lack of transparency, perpetual state of war and the methodical rollout of their burgeoning New World Order.[30]

Bottom line, for centuries Illuminati bloodline rulers[31] behind the British-American Empire (after all, the US is still a British colony[32]) have been funding both sides to virtually every war, conflict and revolution they instigate,[33] insidiously promoting an ideology of cultural Marxism and anti-free market monopolism,[34] while secretly financing and supporting history's biggest genocidal offenders - Lenin,[35] Stalin,[36] Hitler,[37] Mao,[38] along with smaller scale tyrants - the Shah of Iran,[39] Pol Pot,[40] Muammar Gaddafi,[41] Saddam Hussein,[42] Manuel Noriega[43] and Augusto Pinochet.[44]

Historically, the Council on Foreign Relations as the elite's US foreign policy gatekeeper exercises far more authority over the CIA than the selected figurehead sitting in the White House.[45] In fact, along with the CFR, all the secret societies mentioned in previous chapters - the Anglo-American Pilgrims Society,[46] Skull and Bones,[47] the Jesuit Order, the Malta Knights, Freemasons,[48] Trilateral Commission,[49] Bilderbergers[50] and the entire Illuminati network[51] all work fiendishly together issuing marching orders to the CIA, Mossad and MI6 to wage their fascist global war against democracy, freedom, peace, truth and justice. One cursory look at the CIA's beginning and subsequent track record more than proves it.

Again the CIA was formed in 1947 directly evolving out of World War II's Office of Strategic Services (OSS). What does it tell you when the OSS head "Wild Bill" Donovan and first CIA Director Allen Dulles arranged to protect thousands of Nazi war criminals from all accountability,[52] and with help from the Malta Knights provided our supposed enemy with new personal identities along with high paying jobs heading up America's most top secret agencies? Through Operation Paperclip, they secretly relocated up to 5,000 scientists and engineers from Germany to America as spoils of war in competition "against" secretly funded US cold war enemy the Soviet Union.[53] As the longest running CIA director ever, American traitor Dulles was fired by JFK who had vowed to abolish the agency[54] only to have Dulles since become the prime suspect in JFK's assassination.[55] It's also been determined that 9,000 high ranking Nazi war criminals were also safely transported to South American destinations in Brazil, Argentina and Chile.[56] Through joint CIA-Vatican ratlines extending from the Old to New Worlds, thousands of Nazi criminals were illegally relocated and secretly granted safe haven to escape justice. So with a grand entrance like that, who needs enemies when the CIA already established itself as one to the American people?

So right out starting gate, the CIA has always maintained nefarious intentions. Instead of fulfilling its designated purpose for even existing - serving as an information gathering source to ostensibly benefit the security of all Americans[57] (which it intentionally and consistently has failed [58]), US intelligence services have brutally acted as the world's fascist destabilizer for the ruling elite, promoting worldwide confrontation, conflict and war. To everyone else's detriment over the last seven decades, the CIA has only profited the military industrial complex and the banksters, subversively fomenting nonstop coups and wars. Additionally, as an integral part of the current deep state quagmire and diabolical swamp[59] that Donald Trump was expressly mandated by vote to drain,[60] US intelligence not only continues controlling both news media[61] [62] and film industry[63] as key sources of now legalized mass propaganda,[64] it also regularly orchestrates US state sponsored terrorism[65] [66] against American citizens on US soil.[67] [68] No wonder the war hero president Eisenhower fatefully warned us of our dire future while his predecessor Harry S. Truman who originally signed off establishing the Central Intelligence Agency lived to regret it, confiding in his biographer Merle Miller in the early 1970's:

> *I think [the creation of the CIA] was a mistake. And if I'd known what was going to happen, I never would have done it.*[69]

Yet another brave one of its own, as agency Angola station chief in the 1970's, John Stockwell is the highest ranking whistleblower to go public before Congress with CIA secret war crimes that he estimated back in 1987 to be the murder of 6 million Third World citizens.[70] Stockwell summarized his former company's M.O. this way:

It is the function of the CIA to keep the world unstable, and to propagandize and teach the American people to hate, so we will let the establishment spend any amount of money on arms.[71]

Speaking of hate, during WWII Nazi doctors had already been experimenting extensively with mind control research at the concentration camps testing barbiturates and mescaline.[72] Even prior to the close of the Second World War, the US busily had designs to harness German scientific “talent” committing the most despicable human atrocities, shielding Nazi criminals from Nuremberg trials by granting them long term job security while placing them in charge of America’s nuclear and aerospace industries as well as covert federal black operations research and criminal programs.[73]

The most infamous, sadistic Nazi doctor of them all, Dr. Josef Mengele, the “Angel of Death,” who killed thousands at Auschwitz as part of his diabolical experiments,[74] underwent a series of colorful name changes concealing his true identity, from Dr. Black[75] to Dr. Green to Dr. Greenbaum,[76] while developing the most heinous methods in North America for brutally stealing young innocents’ minds and souls. Mengele was granted a free pass via the Nazi-CIA ratline to travel at will globally to multiple locations in South America, the United States and even to old stomping grounds in Europe. Using a dozen or so furnished aliases, the antithesis of the good doctor was repeatedly sighted and continued maintaining contact with MK survivors from across the US and Canada, stretching incredibly to Vietnam and Russia.[77] Even his home addresses in Sao Paulo, Brazil and New York State, 30 miles north of the Big Apple were known. Yet for more than three decades, the Angel of Death “mysteriously” evaded capture, no doubt with lots of help from his friends in high places, protecting him well into his golden years, until 1979 when he allegedly suffered a stroke while swimming at a Brazilian resort and drowned.[78] On at least two occasions Israeli intelligence had tracked Mengele down, but “oddly enough” each time the head of Mossad ordered his field agents to drop the case.[79]

Another evil mad scientist credited as the architect of the MK Ultra and Project Monarch mind control programs begun by Dulles in April 1953 was Dr. Sidney Gottlieb.[80] Like Mengele, this monster was also responsible for a number of innocent people’s deaths. Slipping LSD into the drinks of unsuspecting human guinea pigs was his specialty among others. In 1952 an American in Paris, not Gene Kelly, but a year after that film’s release a 22-year old artist named Stanley Glickman whose Canadian girlfriend was away sat alone at a café when he was invited across the street to join a group of Americans. These straight-laced acquaintances shared conservative views that the liberal-minded artist objected to, and an argument ensued. Just as the annoyed Glickman was ready to leave, the American with a club foot insisted he buy a peace offering drink to make amends for the heated irritation that had just erupted. By the time club foot returned, he’d already spiked the drink with LSD. And within minutes the life of the promising young artist was spinning out of control.

Stanley never painted again, suffered from hallucinations, was given electroshock, and ended up telling his girlfriend to leave him rather than be dragged down by his derailed, highly troubled life.[81] Extremely strong circumstantial evidence indicated that the club footed poisoner was Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, a relatively young psychiatrist at the time who within a year would be authorized by the CIA head to officially abuse hundreds if not thousands more unsuspecting victims like Glickman in their MK Ultra drug experimentation. Proving that crime does pay [as long as you’re connected], within no time at all Gottlieb was running the MK Ultra program for the next 22 years, ruining millions more lives. A sad postscript to the former artist in Paris, upon learning years later that it was the CIA that drugged him and sent him spiraling, through family and a friend’s support, Glickman ultimately sought legal representation, especially when he learned that the MK program architect was the club footed culprit who gave him the drink that ruined his life.[82] The evidence against Gottlieb and the government was overwhelming. But then Stanley’s health rapidly deteriorated and at 62 he died in 1992. His family pursued his case against the government, but to no avail. Yep, national security always protects the guilty at the expense of the rest of us.

Yet another hapless victim whose life was tragically ruined by Sidney Gottlieb was germ warfare researcher Frank Olson.[83] The 43-year old civilian Army and CIA employee was attending a company function at a Maryland retreat in 1953 when Dr. Gottlieb provided Olson and four other employees his favorite icebreaker, LSD cocktails. Twenty minutes later just as the psychedelic effects set in, they were informed that they were experiencing an acid trip. Understandably upset, Olson left the gathering a forever changed man. Shortly after the incident, he threatened to quit over the deceptive harm Gottlieb had caused him. The CIA sent him to see a psychiatrist in New York City and while staying overnight in his hotel room, just nine days after the hallucinogen altered his mind, he allegedly jumped out of a 13 story window to his death. Calling it a suicide and claiming that a company colleague actually witnessed Olson jump out the window, the CIA explained away Olson’s ill-fated end as a sudden onset of suicidal symptoms related to severe depression. Olson’s 38-year old widowed wife, left alone to raise their three small children under 10, had no other choice but to reluctantly accept this cruel outcome.

But during the post-Watergate Church Committee hearings two decades later, the family learned that the CIA had unethically given LSD to Frank Olson just days before his suspicious death. Despite the CIA still insisting Olson suicided, the pedophile US president at the time, Gerald Ford,[84] and his pedophile CIA director George HW Bush,[85] both steeped in mind control criminality and satanic sex abuse, decided buying off the family with a $750,000 hush funded bribe would be their best damage control option.[86]

Nearly a quarter century after Olson's death, testifying before Congress in 1977, Gottlieb was still justifying his despicably monstrous behavior evoking "national security" as his entitlement:

Harsh as it may sound in retrospect, it was felt that in an issue where national survival might be concerned, such a procedure and such a risk was a reasonable one to take.[87]

Then in the 1990's a couple decades after that slap-in-the-face lie, Frank's son had his father's body exhumed and learned that blunt force head trauma prior to his fall was what likely caused his father's death,[88] thus confirming either way, that Gottlieb and his CIA in fact killed Frank Olson. With Richard Helms ensuring that the CIA's most self-incriminating evidence was destroyed by 1973 in order to eliminate all liability and blowback, as always the agency's countless murders and abuse were conveniently swept under the rug and covered up.

Projects Bluebird, Artichoke and MK Ultra were early highly illegal, secret forerunners to the Monarch program that PSYOPS expert Michael Aquino and his contemporaries inherited in the late 1960's and massaged with their own demented technological innovations. Artichoke lives on today at Guantanamo and hundreds of illegal secret CIA black site "enhanced" torture chambers around the world still using "truth drugs" and sensory overload.[89] These programs from the 1950's were guilty of misusing LSD and other drugs to exploit and abuse thousands of nonconsenting US adults and children as human guinea pigs, including unsuspecting bar patrons, hooker-lured johns[90] as well as tapping an unlimited supply source of US military personnel, prison inmates and public health populations (with a racist proclivity for victimizing people of color), vulnerable foreign nationals and captured foreign spies throughout North America, Europe and Far East settings.[91] So a longstanding pattern's been in place - the same planetary rulers that secretly finance and support the biggest murderers in human history (Hitler, Stalin and Mao) also sponsor Nazi satanic ritual abuse and mind control experimentation on hapless American citizens.

Of course using fellow human beings in the name of "science" as convenient guinea pigs is nothing new. Minus legal consent, the same evil perpetrators were infecting poor black sharecroppers in Alabama with lethal doses of syphilis for four decades straight in the disgraceful Tuskegee experiment, doing the same with Guatemalans in the 1940's,[92] using racist eugenics laws to force sterilization on thousands of unsuspecting Puerto Rican, Native American and African American and incarcerated women even recently in California,[93] the Army maliciously releasing cancer-causing radioactive gas clouds from black neighborhood rooftops in St. Louis in the mid-1950's,[94] and for decades testing above ground atomic weapons, willfully harming both the native populations in the South Pacific Marshall Islands[95] as well as Americans downwind from sites in Nevada and Utah.[96] In September 1950 when I was a six month old baby living at Mare Island naval base, a stone's throw from San Francisco, from Frisco Bay a Mare Island US Navy vessel sprayed biological warfare microbes into the air just to see how a million of us residents would react.[97] Time and time again, the US government premeditatedly harms its own citizens, killing thousands in the process, yet obviously doesn't give a shit. The list of coldblooded murderous atrocities the racist elite has egregiously perpetrated on us so called “inferior” expendables, has been without limit, conscience or consequence. That pathetic and sad reality must change.

Meanwhile, today’s daily dose ingesting fluoride,[98] vaccines,[99] GMO[100] processed “dead” food[101] and geoengineering metals raining down[102] on dangerously toxic, morbidly obese, unhealthy Americans[103] is no different. From the get-go the elite’s known it’s harming the masses. By design, the planetary controllers want us dying slow profitable deaths for the ghastly bloated, Rockefeller monopolized US healthcare industry[104] comprising 18% of America’s total GDP (one and a half times more expensive than the world’s runner-up the Netherlands).[105] The globalists’ current depopulation agenda has 90-95% of us humans targeted for extermination within the next several years.[106]

As an additional component of this diabolical endgame agenda, innocent victims of US state sponsored domestic and foreign terrorism are increasing.[107] The latest staged mass casualty event in Las Vegas on October 1st, allegedly the deadliest shooting spree on US soil in American history (58 dead and near 500 injured),[108] [109] [110] surpassing last year’s record-breaker the Orlando false flag,[111] provides skyrocketing proof the globalists are fast and furiously unleashing their WMD arsenal - a soft and hard kill combo[112] - on earth’s current population, maniacally causing the planet’s sixth mass life extinction,[113] and the earth’s first known anthropomorphically caused extinction. Seemingly, the behind-the-scenes puppet master controllers are both homicidal and suicidal.

As the elite’s foot soldiers and executioners, the FBI, CIA and military intelligence are the behind-the-scenes engineers and handlers of so much of this senseless carnage.[114] From the globalist POV, mass firearm possession in America as a constitutional Second Amendment right is what's holding up the formal rollout of the long plotted one world government tyranny. So their Hegelian "problem-reaction-solution" formula[115] comes in the form of "too many guns causing too much gun violence," so naturally deep state's ultimate solution is gun control leading to enforced confiscation. In nations where strict gun control laws have been enacted, England, Ireland, Canada and Australia, the homicide rates actually increased immediately afterwards and then generally flatten out, indicating a resounding failure to reduce rates of gun violence.[116] [117] America's problem isn't so much easy access to guns as our culture is so thoroughly saturated, conditioned, desensitized and mind controlled into accepting violence and war as a viable normative option. The elite's longtime willful sociocultural engineering through 24/7 mass media propaganda manipulating and programming Americans towards conflict and violence poses the far bigger problem.[118]

History has shown disastrous consequences when guns have been banned altogether. Immediately preceding every single genocide from the last century, the offending national governments passed laws outlawing gun ownership amongst the soon-to-be targeted genocidal populations.[119] As a result, in Turkey during WWI, one third of all Armenians, a million and a half, were massacred.[120] After 1929 when guns were banned in the Soviet Union, 40 million fellow Russians were purged by dictator Josef Stalin. Up to 13 million Jews, Poles, dissidents and homosexuals were rounded up and murdered by Nazis during the half dozen years following Germany's 1938 gun law confiscation. After gun control was established in China in 1935, up to 60 million dissidents were exterminated by Communist Mao Zedong.[121] The same dire outcomes were repeated in

Guatemala after 1964, Uganda after 1970, Cambodia during the mid-1970's, and in 1994 Rwanda.

Further effects of the depopulation agenda involve manufacturing the recent weaponized superstorm hurricanes through Tesla scalar technology destroying our ionosphere while attacking large population centers across America and the Caribbean.[122] [123] Harvey, Irma and Maria arrived also as the vengeful response aimed against Trump for derailing the elite's coveted UN Paris Agreement[124] based on the fake science hoax of a manmade carbon footprint.[125] Recently the globalists are facing defeat on multiple fronts, and with pedophilia its Achilles heel refusing to go away, their proxy war ally ISIS getting wiped out in the Middle East,[126] the Brexit and Catalan vote for independence as prelude to EU's disintegration,[127] [128] with each passing day now the ruling Satanists are growing more desperate and frantic to retain control over both their false narratives and crumbling power, so we're witnessing an aggressive full scale genocide attack against humanity, marking virtually all of us for earthly extinction.

But back to how we got here to this cataclysmic precipice, and the CIA's contributing role with its black operations timeline, specifically the infamous MK Ultra program's early 1950's arrival. MK was bent on honing CIA's clandestine skills collecting research on drug experimentation, working early with Big Pharma to test LSD and a number of other "truth enhancing," mind control substances;[129] also "refining" its massive behavior modification agenda through barbaric torture methods that include sexual trauma, system and sensory overload techniques such as sleep deprivation, exhaustion, isolation, starvation, altered pain thresholds, persuasion, humiliation, use of electroshock, lobotomies, and inducing sickness under deplorable inhumane conditions that violate all international and Geneva convention rules and laws.[130] In recent years a multiplicity of these sick variations of hi-tech torture methods have been developed and put to use all over the world.[131] This has been permitted because back in the early 1950's the precedent was set. The CIA and military intelligence made a secret pact with the US Department of Justice allowing free reign in moral turpitude regarding use of unethical, illegal standards in its human guinea pig experimentation.[132] And ever since it's been lawless gangbusters on steroids.[133]

Thus from the get-go, black ops was born in "shady deal" secrecy that over time has only grown exponentially shadier and darker with little to no oversight or control from any branch of government. This rogue element operating within the US shadow government with zero accountability enjoys complete impunity and concealment.[134] It generates a vast, bottomless pit of funding wealth from various highly illegal, highly lucrative criminal enterprises – international drug trafficking from the 1940's to the present,[135] [136] global child sex slave trafficking,[137] arms trafficking[138] and money laundering. And that's not even counting our hard earned tax dollars brazenly allocated for annual misuse against our self-interests nor the $8.5 trillion the never audited Pentagon has failed to account for.[139]

The British-American Empire originally operating through the East India Company has been history's biggest international drug peddler for a bunch of centuries now starting with 18th century Asian opium trade.[140] The British financed its colonial rule over India through the heroin trade exporting opium from India to China, igniting the Opium Wars of the 19th century that devastated China.[141] And now under similar circumstances, the phony pretext of a war on terror rambles on for 16 years in Afghanistan as American history's longest running, no-win-by-designed war, US Empire is still exploiting the ravaged nation (known as the graveyard of empires) for its bountiful record opium harvest[142] and precious mineral extraction.[143] From one century to the next, Anglo American predators remain an imperialistic drug pushing fixture.

With the CIA-military intelligence-Pentagon operating out of Washington, the Malta-Jesuit-Vatican out of Rome, and the central banking launderers out of the City of London,[144] the controllers' current international crime cabal is the #1 drug pusher, the #1 illicit arms smuggler, the #1 baby sodomizer/trafficker and, with Israel's assistance, the #1 human organ-bone marrow harvester on this planet.[145] These are the simple lowdown facts that confirm Satanists are ruling and fast destroying both us and our world. But fortunately their run is being challenged like never before.

Early barbaric techniques and applications from unethical CIA research were only further developed and enhanced during Lt. Col. Michael Aquino's long tenure as a PSYOPS/mind control expert and Monarch trauma-inducing programmer.[146] Use of hypnosis, electroshock, mental and physical torture, drugs, radiation exposure, and rape are a handful of common brainwashing techniques and trauma weapons used to induce in hapless victims Multiple Personality Disorder, now called Dissociative Identity Disorder.[147]

Throughout his four decade long career as a high satanic priest wearing an Army intelligence officer uniform, Michael Aquino has been at the forefront of the CIA-military intelligence MK Ultra program,[148] although in interviews he smugly reminds us that the illegal CIA MK operation ended while he was still in high school, which "official" records specify was the year he graduated in 1964.[149] But the very same month Aquino graduated in June '64 the head of CIA's MK Ultra program and Technical Services Staff, Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, simply changed the MK name to MK Search.[150] A decade later CIA Director Richard Helms allegedly destroyed all MK Ultra documents by 1973 just prior to his resignation.

[151] What Aquino won’t say is that overwhelming evidence of MK research persisted well beyond 1973, using MK Ultra mind control techniques morphing into name changing sub-programs and projects like Monarch. Yet Lt. Col. Aquino insists that not only was he never part of the MK Ultra program, but has the audacity to claim that Project Monarch is nothing more than an “urban legend.”[152] [153] Bottom line, as a psychopathic propaganda specialist and satanic high priest, lying is a professional skill set that comes with the turf and obviously comes very natural to Mr. Aquino.

In a 2007 Extreme Abuse Survey soliciting respondents who were ritual abuse survivors, 234 from the US and 83 from Canada admitted that they had been used in government mind control experimentation, and of the total 1,471 respondents, over half were born after 1964.[154] The majority of 147 answered “yes” to the survey question asking in 2007 - a mere decade ago - if they were still being abused by mind control handlers against their will. So despite whatever program name changes or alleged terminations, it’s undeniable that the government abuse and its torture and trauma methods to this day remain ongoing, only far more advanced in technology. There exists very strong evidence confirming that MK Ultra mind control and its twin variant, the Monarch trauma-based mind control program, have only thrived during Aquino’s entire tenure as a US Army mind control expert, and unfortunately is still very much active today.[155]

The significance of the mind control program named after the Monarch butterfly relates to its capacity to learn where it was born (i.e., its roots) that generation after generation it passes on through genetics to its offspring.[156] Nazi Illuminati scientists glommed onto prizing genetics as their surefire formula for producing the “perfect” Master race. Since knowledge and intelligence are inherited genetically, the key for mind control researchers was locating parents of the Illuminati persuasion where secret special occult knowledge could be passed onto their children with the ability to dissociate. Occultists from the West sought ancient secret practices from Indian yogis and Tibetan monks where dissociation skills could be learned and passed down through generations. Intergenerational Illuminati families learned to perversely evoke this capacity in their children through abusive torture and pedophilia.

The idea is to viciously and systematically induce such extreme and severe trauma on programmed children from age one and a half up (also applied to adults though not as effectively) in order to cause the personality to have to break off or dissociate from reality, in effect fracturing and splitting it into either a secondary or alternate personas in the slave’s psyche, that’s then programmed and activated at will by the handler’s gestures and trigger code-words.[157] The core personality then becomes unaware of its alters, thus able to pass lie detector tests and for years and even a lifetime trapped as an on cue tool of enslavement serving the diabolical interests of Illuminati Satanists. For survival sake alone, mind control victims must compartmentalize trauma in order to be able to function daily as the torture and sexual abuse otherwise become too much for the fragile human mind to handle. Inducing amnesia becomes the sinister system’s prescribed coping mechanism for trauma overload and shock.

Through dissociation the state of unawareness of other alter personalities benefits and protects abusers from exposure while creating disparate Jekyll and Hyde personalities in victims that can range from saint to programmed monster. While a slave’s front personality displayed daily to the outside world may be all smiles, appearing “normal” and well-adjusted, it hides the altars that bear the brunt of hurt, anger, anguish and fear. But in mind control victims Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD) that typically results from experiencing severe trauma is carefully insulated and masked by systematic programming. And if young victims are driven to complete insanity, i.e., not amnesic enough to sufficiently block out and bury their excruciating pain and suffering, they're simply quietly disposed of as unusable, highly expendable system rejects, either murdered or done away with in ritual sacrifice, or programmed to suicide.[158]

Extensive personality assessment of mind controlled infants has always played a huge role in determining each child's strengths, skills and aptitudes as well as weaknesses and deficits,[159] which in turn determine the specific semi-annual "treatment" goals of the mind control programming and ultimately the professional function the slave will later serve.[160] On the West Coast this early Monarch programming was chiefly developed and led by Dr. Mengele the Angel of Death himself while Dr. Ewen Cameron ruled rollout on the East Coast.

Inherited from Mengele's Nazi concentration camp experiments were scientific records detailing how far the torture and trauma of a child can go prior to causing death. 1950's reports of mind control training at the China Lake Naval Weapons Center near Death Valley California describe batches of babies in the thousands locked in cages that deliver high voltage shocks as trauma used to split personalities.[161] After days of mercilessly being shocked in cages, each young child is then brutally raped to ensure that disassociation occurs. As if that's not traumatic enough, workers in black robes regularly engage in ritual child sacrifice ceremonies in front of the hundreds of caged children forced to witness their young peers being stabbed to death on a marble altar.[162] The government pedophiles hired to torture little kids on such a mass assembly line scale were/are mostly civilian, many of whom come from intergenerational Illuminati families where these despicable atrocities are family tradition.

The science of flashing colored lights as trance inducers intricately timed with the electric shocks inside the cages accompanied by auditory mind control messages such as “Love me, love me not,” imprinting the dualistic, binary messaging that characterizes the mind control process of polarized extremes and life uncertainty from one moment to the next as integral programming components that facilitate forming dissociative alters. Multi-generational Illuminati family member Cisco Wheeler, whose programmer was Dr. Mengele in the California desert, recounted a ritual where the Angel of Death would walk down the row of caged children with a daisy in his hand, plucking the petals in synch with the “love me, love me not” mantra and as the last petal fell to the ground with the “love me not” cadence, he would murder the child in front of him right there on the spot.[163] This perversely sick method was the doctor’s way of “trauma bonding” with the spared children. Though the 5-year old Cisco at the time couldn’t know it, as an Illuminati slave whose great uncle was General Earle Wheeler, the drug pushing commander of the Vietnam War, she was being programmed by Mengele and his assistant her father to also become a mind control programmer.

Three standard torture scenarios are systemically utilized to traumatically create multiple personalities: 1) being literally locked in a small space, pit or cage with spiders and snakes (creatures that universally produce phobias), 2) forced to kill, cut up and eat other children, and 3) forced immersion in feces, urine and blood.[164] These and many other horrific traumas by age 4 or 5 are repeatedly thrust upon innocents to induce DID. Being deprived of food and water, placed in solitary confinement while kept in the dark for many hours or days is also very common. Programmers are big on near death experiences, coming just short of drowning kids in water and burying them alive in sand as a couple more of their favorites. From his concentration camp days, Mengele perfected the “scientific art” of near death torture, suspending victims either in ice cold water or upside down for protracted periods of time causing the brain to reverse pain-pleasure sensory feedback. This particular torture technique - being hung upside down, is used to program beta sex kitten slaves to inversely experience and desire sadistic rape as pleasure.

Sexual abuse is regularly inflicted on a child within the satanic ritual context for more powerful, dramatic effect. For instance, the child rapist’s semen ejaculation is the “black magick” that seals the deal, the climactic ending of that programming session.[165] Another ritualistic aspect is timing the trauma on a child’s birthday so that each and every year thereafter reliving the programmed trauma becomes regularly reinforced. In short, every kind of twisted, sick, sadistic shit imaginable and unimaginable goes into this methodic torture and trauma done to extremely vulnerable young children.

The China Lake MK site is but one remote, secret military installation in the desert much like Nevada’s Area 51, the epicenter “Dreamland” of black ops devilry in the West.[166][167] Though mind control sites range from Ivy League facilities (Harvard, Columbia and Cornell) to Montreal’s McGill University to large state mental hospitals across the US and Canada (St. Elizabeth near DC a favorite CIA assassin breeding ground[168]), the bulk of today’s massive daily satanic ritual abuse and child sacrifice are carried out at scores of top secret underground Military Intelligence locations called milabs. Numerous military posts have long been armed guarded havens for mind control programming.[169] But also every kid’s utopia - Disneyland and Disney World - for years have also been providing the perfect stage set props and cover for afterhours MK programming. Walt Disney himself was an upstanding Illuminati Freemason.[170] Similarly, mob controlled Las Vegas is a hotbed for satanic activity and mind control programming. A few miles outside the Vegas strip slave auctions have been regularly scheduled where blue-eyed 11-year old girls go for over $50 thousand. Overseas centers in Europe that include both a heavy-handed CIA as well as Jesuit Catholic presence where mind control programming is prevalent are located in Germany and Switzerland (also home of CERN, a potential “interdimensional portal”[171]) - the German Black Forest, Frankfurt and Berlin as well as Swiss cities Zurich and Basal, known Illuminati bastions.[172]

In addition to his seminal work exposing the satanic system of bloodline families, Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler also wrote a book entitled *The Illuminati Formula Used to Create an Undetectable Mind Controlled Slave*, a comprehensive account of Monarch mind control that specifies in detail how mind control operations are run.[173] Babies and small children were/are transported by plane, train and automobiles to the secret government torture labs. With children recruited from a number of sources, Springmeier’s unveiling the China Lake pedo-torture chamber refers to the unholy partnership between the federal intelligence agencies and the Catholic Church, a running theme of the worldwide pedophilia epidemic:

> *The Jesuits were active in this part of the child procurement. Catholic adoption agencies (which are many), nuns who get pregnant, third world parents, and parents who will sell their children were all sources of children for programming. When one thinks about how many corrupt people there are and how many towns and cities are on the West Coast, and how many children are produced by Satanic breeders, illegal aliens and other parents who’d rather have the money than children and the reader begins to realize how procuring batches of 1,000 or 2,000 children was no problem for the Illuminati working through intelligence agencies such as the CIA, NIS, DIA, FBI, and FEMA.*[174]

From the vast unlimited pool of the near million missing kids every year in the US and 8 million worldwide[175] - runaway kids from broken homes, vulnerable children trapped in this nation’s long broken and too often maleficent Child Protective Services system that oversees foster care and residential group homes, global refugee centers, children’s relief organizations, Catholic schools, the Illuminati family network, the source list is really endless for the perpetrators to prey on victims for mind control, satanic sacrifice and rape. It’s Big Brother’s Big Business bonanza on the grandest Luciferian stage. A later chapter will be devoted to the global child trafficking infrastructure.

Next we’ll examine one of Michael Aquino’s many specialties - standard operating equipment and protocol in mind control programming. Cattle prods or cattle prod wands ranging from 10,000-20,000 DC Volts as well as stun guns ranging from 120,000-200,000 volts have long been standard issue for Monarch practitioners.[176] The satanic high priest Aquino has even brazenly carried his stun gun cane in public that he used to program and control his slaves. And then Queen Elizabeth’s staff has a stun gun tip mounted on it. Cattle prods are usually applied to the buttocks or other muscled areas like just below the shoulder blades while stun guns during programming are most often used at the base of the slave’s skull for either punishment or dissociative purposes after given instructions. High voltage electrical shocks are employed regularly to erase chunks of memory (short or long term) from the brain for programming/reprogramming purposes.

Yet another piece of standard equipment may include electronic bark collars used for obedience and silence training as well as worn by sex slaves when forced into bestiality with wolves and aggressively trained dogs that typically bite the collar when mounting their victims.[177] Again, very sick shit. And to enhance effectiveness of mind control programming, hypnotic cues and drugs are also regularly incorporated into this demonic procedural protocol. At programming outset, a hypnotic drug accompanies a metal band worn around the slave's head delivering 100,000 volt currency into the brain for 5-10 seconds, causing the body to violently shake similar to electroconvulsive shock therapy. Hypnotic commands are then given and another shock for "good measure" may be applied for 10 more seconds to ensure the programming instructions remain embedded deep into the victim's mind. This entire session may last only 15 minutes and be conducted anywhere the programmer and his/her briefcase goes, containing the electronic band device and the programmer's binder that includes the slave's access codes, triggers, cryptic keys and programs.

In recent years the enormous diabolical MK operation's been vastly aided in the most sinister ways by advancing technology. Be it thousands of internet sexual predators trolling online across the world 24 hours a day for easy access to hunt down their next underage victims, or miniscule microwave chip implants hidden and embedded in mind control victims' bodies,[178] or little known, highly sophisticated psychotronic[179] and electromagnetic weaponry[180] that's augmented and, to a considerable degree, replaced some of the more conventional electroshock techniques as a means of torture and inducing amnesia. Now ELF devices can even plant thoughts in people's minds without microchips. A relative new technology misapplied with demonic intentions is directed energy now being deployed to artificially sodomize victims or apply electric shock torture to men's genitals.[181] Our age of automaton machines replacing human beings is no different in the mind control realm as harmonics has largely made programmers obsolete for implanting codes, keys, cues and triggers into slaves.

Be they Western or Eastern, the-powers-that-shouldn't-be are using microwave radio frequencies to remotely exercise mass mind control over large segments of the global population.[182] [183] How sophisticated and advanced these cutting edge technologies really are, we "mere mortals" may never know. But the general rule of thumb is the leaked info of scraps and tidbits we do manage to attain, is many decades behind what black ops has currently already developed and operationally implemented.[184]

Brice Taylor, a former mind control slave who began recalling her buried tortuous past and lived to write about it after years of healing, was privy to a wholly different world than ours. Her own words from a couple decades ago:

The technology gleaned by the American leaders, medical professionals and scientists was and still is in the form of bio-electromagnetic frequency medicine, genetic engineering, mind control, brain research, near-death experimentation, paranormal/psychic experimentation, remote viewing, time and space travel and other advanced research that make our everyday human understanding look antiquated.[185]

The elite's bloodline offspring undergo extensive multifunctional programming that also includes systematic sexual abuse and torture as well, but with a noticeably different twist and effect. For obvious reasons, physical signs of abuse are less apparent in those groomed to be members of the upper crust elitist strata.[186] Mind control hierarchy often has them employed to help program other slaves in a relentless self-replication to do harm. But be it a low level mind controlled "peon" slave or an elite slave puppet programmed and chosen by controllers to be the next "leader of the free world," satanic Illuminati puppet masters always remain on top and rigidly in control.

From day one in their sick Luciferian world, Illuminati members are hardwired, conditioned and brainwashed to believe that they are so far superior to the human masses of regular everyday ilk, that their purebred “nobility” inbreeding, hidden occult knowledge and special mind control programming places them infinitely apart from the rest of us earthlings. Their dogmatic brainwash holds the delusional (yet sacred to them) belief that they are born to play God on this earth, replete in their “divine wisdom and power” to “do what thou wilt”… [as] the whole of [their] Law” per the preaching of their Illumined idol and fellow Luciferian himself Aleister Crowley.[187] The elite seizes upon cultural relativism and amoral subjectivity as a broad stroke rationalization and license that permit the “anything goes” philosophy, that “ends always justify the means” in the clawing ascent to godly status and hereditary entitlement.[188]

Fashioned to view themselves as members of a special super race, imprinted in them early on is only contempt for the average human life, and really all life forms, always gravitating towards the Luciferian dark side to affiliate with likeminded “special” others. Yet members of the satanic Illuminati network are also typically seen and lauded as “pillars” of the community, both civic and church leaders, successful professionals in law, medicine, and education, the town councilman (or US president), church deacon, the PTA president, the Boy Scout headmaster. The army of Monarch slaves within the intelligence community are provided convincing covers complete with “legitimate” dossiers for each of their alters.[189] Appearances are meant to be highly deceiving as what you see is rarely if ever what you get with them.

Like Lucifer himself, the Illuminati elite are cunning masters of deception and are ultra-skilled and careful at covering their tracks.[190] And while so many may appear to us as upstanding, God fearing, moral citizens, within their dark secret satanic world, they regard the rest of humanity as subhuman, vastly inferior objects to be thoroughly exploited, denigrated, tortured and killed, literally relegated as mere sources for their food and sadist entertainment consumption. Thus, trauma induced mind controlled slaves are meticulously programmed to lead double Jekyll and Hyde lives, no matter where they fit on the elite's totem pole.

Fritz Springmeier asserted that half the therapists in his area in Oregon treating Monarch victims are multiples themselves working for the other side.[191] Fritz also maintains that woman's advocacy groups and helplines along with so called Christian charity organizations offering support for satanic ritual abuse victims in many cases are actually an Illuminati false front. Their interlocking secret network makes it very difficult for mind controlled, satanic cult members to leave and rather than risk secrets revealed to the public, murder is commonplace. Death threats, continued harassment and rape are still weapons the Illuminati cult holds over those strong enough to risk death by leaving.[192]

As expert infiltrators, agent provocateurs are sent out on undercover missions to discredit, smear and create scandals within opposing organizations. And because Satan's hold on mass propaganda is so pervasive, professionally paid shills have notoriously saturated independent and social media to undermine the credibility of alternative news outlets with bogus "fake news" lists. Banning the truth is of highest priority in every demonic totalitarian regime. Like their Luciferian brothers the Jesuits and Freemasons, Illuminists are masterful infiltrators at every level and sector. By their demonic design, imposters have been disbursed everywhere to spread lies, confuse the public and obscure and silence the truth.

Illuminati sodomizers are adept at making their abuse so unbelievable, that even when child victims defy threats and warnings and dare reveal the truth to outsiders, especially if they report they were forced to eat another child's flesh or feces, or drank their urine or blood, and that the abusers were Mickey Mouse or Count Dracula, which satanic pedophiles often will wear outrageous occult or Disney costumes for that very sinister purpose, it's all over for the poor child. High Satanic Priest and pedophile programmer Michael Aquino appeared on the Oprah Winfrey Show in full Vincent Lugosi regalia.[193] Recall from last chapter that "Mikey" Aquino was reported by one of his Presidio victims while abusing her to have dressed up like a woman while his wife was dressed like a man. All too often children's SRA disclosures aren't taken serious, cast aside as the verbal ramblings of "overactive imaginations." The child is then sent right back to the abusers, severely punished with even more brutal rapes and in turn ostracized by their Illuminati family and larger community. Abused children who muster the courage to tell the truth too often learn early on the very harsh lesson that honesty doesn't pay, which in their satanic world is all too painfully true.

As a member of a multigenerational Illuminati family growing up in the small Delaware town Arden, within shadow distance of the infamous DuPont family bloodline (speaking of inbred insanity[194]), the courageous activist Jay Parker rejected his parents' dogmatically insane evil. Parker states that when he grew up in Arden back in the 1960's, 90% of the town's residents were Illuminati pedophiles.[195] Jay describes a common trauma-induced, satanic rite of passage, foisted on him at age six when his best friend was ritualistically raped and died three days later from septic shock in 1963. At great risk to himself, Jay went to a friend's home down the street to his token Christian neighbors to report the traumatizing murder in hopes that they would notify the local authorities. The friend’s father did report the crime to the police, but afraid of the town’s powerful Illuminati majority, the police said there was nothing they could do.

Unfortunately this is an all too common outcome as the tight-knit satanic network has infiltrated positions of authority throughout law enforcement, the courts and government across this nation and world from local to state, federal to international levels. After his friend’s death, Jay’s parents quickly took him to a psychiatrist, of course a fellow Illuminati who electroshocked him into amnesia to clear away all short term memory of his best friend’s death. On another occasion a year later Jay was placed in a deep hypnotic, drug induced Monarch trance, only to be “awakened” holding an axe and told that while unconscious, he had just hacked off the arms and legs of the sacrificed 14-year old girl in front of him fast bleeding to death, gurgling and choking on her own blood.[196]

Jay Parker’s shockingly abusive experiences are the kind of outrageously sick, maniacal torture rituals that mind control victims are regularly subjected to. As mentioned earlier, children are often kept in cages, deprived of food and water for extended periods, forced to drink their own urine and eat their own feces. And standard satanic ritual abuse requires them to participate in the killing of other sacrificed children, cannibalizing their flesh, and drinking their blood, by demonic rite of passage making them one of them.

As a five-year old, Parker underwent the common “buried alive” traumatizing ritual where he was lowered into a pit with a casket while his father looming above him dressed in hooded robe as fire and brimstoned God condemned little Jay as never included in the Book of Life. This particular ritual is geared to convincingly brainwash young impressionable mind control victims to identify with, accept and embrace the dark side as their only hope for salvation. When Illuminati Monarch victims or, for that matter, the human masses as mass mind control victims are programmed to worship a false idol god as their oppressor, as in Lucifer, or mind controlled entertainment superstars from music, TV/film, sports industries, or even political leaders as objects of idol worship, then the elite's already triumphed in its evil-over-good endgame. Seeing through their deception is among our greatest challenges.

Once amnesic memories from their haunting past begin surfacing, and Monarch victims have managed to defy their programmed suicide script, what follows are years of deprogramming and healing of their unconscious mind. After 1999 Jay Parker began his road to recovery and now advocates a particular healing therapy called Emotional Freedom Techniques (EFT) involving what he calls energy psychology.[197] This treatment modality utilizes a combination of acupressure in 9 tapping points from one's hand, head, to breastbone and underarm where past emotional disruptions can be released while acknowledging the negative emotions and crippling experiences but countering them through repeated phrases promoting self-acceptance and healing. This emotive therapy is a relatively simple integrative, holistic mind-body-spirit approach.

According to Jay Parker, at least 34 million Americans are Illuminati Satanist pedophiles, all programmed mind control operatives serving the elite.[198] Arizona Wilder, another victim-survivor gone public, trained as an Illuminati goddess for her psychic ability in satanic occult rituals to draw and manage demonic interdimensional forces, stated over a decade ago that there are likely 10 million mind controlled slaves in the US.[199] In any event, worldwide there are no doubt multi-generations numbering in the tens of millions that have been and are victims of trauma-based mind control, trained as obedient slaves mindlessly carrying out various nefarious functions as controlled and manipulated cogs in the diabolical wheel for the Illuminati elite.

Monarch survivor Paul Bonacci victimized in the egregious Nebraska Franklin scandal (covered in a future chapter), endured nearly two decades of horrific abuse that included drugs, satanic rituals, rape, torture and murder.[200] [201] In 1999 Paul testified in a civil suit that 17 years earlier Michael Aquino had ordered the kidnapping of 12-year old paperboy Johnny Gosch in West Des Moines, Iowa.[202] Bonacci was forced to lure the boy into the getaway vehicle to become yet another MK victim. Along with scores of other Omaha victims that were frequently abducted from the famous Boys Town Catholic orphanage and brought to nearby Offutt Air Force Base for trauma-based programming, Bonacci and his peers were sodomized by high profile politicians that included George HW Bush in a massive scandal that led directly to both the Reagan-Bush White House.

In 1984 Paul Bonacci was also flown from Offutt AFB, making a pit stop in Vegas to pick up eccentric journalist “Gonzo” Hunter Thompson and onto McClellan Air Force Base in northern California, and finally driven to the elite summer camp for powerful pedophiles - Bohemian Grove, where he was forced at gunpoint to participate in a snuff film that included child rape and another young boy murdered.[203] Gonzo may have later also been murdered as a potential threat disclosing what he knew of these systemic atrocities regularly committed in such high profile places.[204]

Nebraska photographer Rusty Nelson, employed by up and coming Republican Party star Lawrence King, the pedophile Satanist kingpin behind the Franklin scandal, reported seeing King hand a suitcase full of cash and bonds over to a man identified as Michael Aquino in a posh Minneapolis hotel.[205] King told Nelson that Lt. Col. Aquino was part of the Contra arms for cocaine operation with Lt. Col. Oliver North run by the then drug pushing Vice President George H. W. Bush.

Aside from Jay Parker, in recent decades a number of very brave, strong women such as Cathy O'Brien,[206] Kathleen Sullivan,[207] Brice Taylor,[208] Arizona Wilder,[209] Carol Rutz,[210] Fritz Springmeier's co-author Cisco Wheeler[211] and many more have also emerged from the dark shadows after reclaiming their horrific long lost memories of years of enslaved abuse at the hands of Illuminati Satanists like Lt. Colonel Michael Aquino and so many famous and powerful VIP's. Two mind control survivors and former child slaves, Cathy O'Brien and Christine DeNicola,[212] provided sworn testimony at a 1995 congressional hearing that demonstrated MK Ultra was active at least until the mid-1980's, and that both victims identified Aquino among their programmers. Christine's testimony states that another of her programmers from 1974-76 was the infamous Dr. Green aka Dr. Mengele.[213] Because at times her mind control henchmen failed to lock her cage at night in a room next to the doctor's office, as a 13 and 14-year old she was able to access Mengele's programming files and used her photographic memory to record and reproduce a long list of Monarch programs.[214]

After recognizing Lt. Col. Aquino on TV after his Oprah Winfrey appearance in 1989 and scores of sexually abused children identifying him as their pedophile rapist in subsequent filed police reports across the country, additionally at least three witnesses under oath provided testimony also singling out the 38-year career Army officer as their notorious MK Ultra/Monarch programmer and sadistic abuser. Dozens of mind control survivors independently describing the same satanic rituals and torture methods perfectly corroborate the CIA's own documents released through Freedom of Information requests. The massive amounts of empirical evidence cannot simply be dismissed nor discounted. Mind control afflicting millions of demonically programmed government slaves doing the dirty bidding of Satanists ruling our planet is an undisputable, cold hard fact.

Government whistleblower Cathy O'Brien teamed with a former CIA officer Mark Phillips credited with arranging her 1988 escape and helped to deprogram the former deep state slave.[215] Sadly, Cathy's hero and life partner Mark Phillips just died this past September 6th.[216] In recent decades both O'Brien and Phillips had boldly gone public disclosing how as a Monarch victim O'Brien was horribly abused as a little girl, starting with her own perverted Freemason, child pornographer father. Circulating naked photos of Cathy through the mail caught the lascivious eye of local Michigan politician and pedophile Gerald Ford, already steeped in drug trafficking, child pornography and the Michigan mob, and later ascending as American history's only nonelected VP and president.[217] Protected by the 1947 National Security Act, Cathy's incestuous father was granted immunity in exchange for selling his own daughter into a life of government-run slavery - the Monarch mind control program. Together O'Brien and Phillips co-wrote the landmark 1995 book *Trance-Formation of America* detailing her many years of abuse and torture.[218]

Pedo Prez Gerald Ford [219] was surrounded by fellow pedophiles, CIA Director George HW Bush, Ford's Chief of Staff Donald Rumsfeld (if not overtly a child rapist, definitely a complicit enabler)[220] and assistant Dick Cheney, all central figures in DC's "good ol' boys" crime club network. A few years later they would comprise the same neocon nucleus that treasonously committed 9/11,[221] murdering 3,000 fellow Americans as their "new Pearl Harbor"[222] in order to launch their preplanned "endless war on terror,"[223] which of course is still ongoing today. As a young white slave, Cathy endured near three decades of sexual assault perpetrated on triggered cue by the world's biggest child raping powerbrokers, owned by longtime West Virginia Senator Robert Byrd who passed her out on loan to the likes of Ronald Reagan,[224] Henry Kissinger, George H.W. Bush, former Canadian Prime Minister Pierre Trudeau[225] as well as the Clintons who O'Brien dually served as both their "presidential sex model" (referring to programmed sex service slaves given US presidents and other top elitists), as well as a Clinton cocaine drug courier. As the lustful lesbo witch she is, hungry Hillary sexually assaulted Cathy.[226]

As mentioned another brave, intelligent former slave and survivor gone public with books about her horrendous experience is Brice Taylor (actual name Susan Ford).[227] Like Cathy O'Brien, Brice's own daughter also named Kelly was also a Monarch program conscript. Brice Taylor's story is told in her autobiographical exposé called *Thanks for the Memories* (1999) with her owner the "revered" comedic legend Bob Hope and her primary handler none other than Henry Kissinger.[228] Like Cathy, Brice was not only in constant demand as a presidential model, referred to as the "million dollar baby," from early childhood to adulthood as enslaved sex toy to Presidents John F. Kennedy, Lyndon Johnson, Richard Nixon, Gerald Ford, Ronald Reagan and George H.W. Bush.[229]

But Brice Taylor was also a multi-purpose slave, trained to possess a photographic memory. She would be granted access to various secret files and then by rote retain them in her head as a "mind-file," the term her programmer Henry Kissinger used. Long ago the Illuminati pecking order designated Kissinger as its Council CEO, the select group near the top of the power elite pyramid.[230] One example of the brutal depravity and sickness Brice, Cathy and countless others endure involves the "most dangerous game," similarly depicted in the film "Hunger Games," as a naked slave given a head start to then be mercilessly hunted down by a predator and savagely raped and potentially killed. Taylor endured this fate on Bob Hope's Jordan Ranch at the hands of the particularly sadistic and cruel Satanist George H.W. Bush.[231] Taylor's decades of slavery varied from being a presidential model to information courier to drug courier to spy and even assassin.

Within the Monarch mind control slave system, a small rotating circle exists between slaves and their masters. While still in high school in the 1970's on her family's summer vacation to Wyoming's Grand Tetons, Cathy O'Brien was brought along to pacify the sadistic whims of Ford's White House Chief of Staff Dick Cheney, who used his oversized, weaponized penis to savagely rape and bloody her as her turn to "play" the dangerous game. In the Rocky Mountain wilderness the naked teenager was hunted down like an animal only to be raped and tortured by her demented, dick-flogging captor Dick.[232]

Cathy's high school graduation "gift" from her sick father was literally selling her off to her new master, the all-powerful Democratic West Virginia Senator Richard Byrd. Her father's payoff was an enormous defense contract that instantly made him a super wealthy man with his demented criminality securely protected by the old standby "national security interests." Daddy's pimping and selling his daughter off to the most powerful satanic evildoers on earth proved to be a very lucrative enterprise.

A few years later while in her mid-twenties during the early 1980's, Cathy O'Brien's owner Senator Byrd sent her for more mind control torture training at Fort Campbell, Kentucky where she met her newly assigned programmer Michael Aquino.[233] Cathy concurs with longtime Bay area activist Mae Brussell that Aquino is a "professed neo-Nazi" enamored with Heinrich Himmler's occultism so much so as to inspire Aquino’s satanic church named Temple of Set.[234] That said, O’Brien maintains that her programmer’s only displayed “satanic power” came in the form of his high voltage stun guns he used on her regularly. According to Cathy, Aquino’s mind control programming was administered with “high tech” efficiency, quickly erasing her previous handler’s influence. Describing Aquino’s functional role:

> *… Programming me according to Byrd’s specifications as his “own little witch” for sadistic sex, covert CIA drug muling, blackmail, and prostitution operations.*[235]

There would soon be more programming torture sessions with Aquino on other military posts and a NASA flight center all in the state of Alabama. The NASA indoctrination gave Aquino access to the latest techniques at the time, like “sensory deprivation tanks, virtual reality, flight simulators, and harmonics.” Aquino also began utilizing all the latest mind control modalities on Cathy’s daughter by age two, with sexual assault and stun gun torture shattering her mind prior to her base personality even having a chance to form.[236] To this day both mother and daughter carry the physical and emotional scars of Aquino’s “handiwork,” with her daughter institutionalized much of her life in mental hospitals.

Cathy’s master Byrd showed up at the NASA site to impart more twisted and demented preferences to be programmed into his sex slave. While in Alabama, Byrd and Aquino also collaborated coming up with the idea to use Cathy to make two instructional porno videos for newbie programmers with a pair of local cops moonlighting as film pornographers, one flick entitled “How to Divide a Personality,” the other film called “How to Create a Sex Slave.”[237] Very sick people in charge of our planet.

Because military intelligence officer Lt. Col. Aquino circulated in and out of multiple career assignments amongst a myriad of governmental agencies, universities, military and civilian programs, both secular and sectarian settings, he was the ideal mind control programming expert to act as liaison, pimping mind control slaves through deep state's vast twisted matrix of federal civilian and military criminal organizations and occult groups.[238]

After being prostituted out to the African American country music singer Charlie Pride by her local handler, a country western circuit ventriloquist, upon learning about this her twisted white master Senator Byrd took out his racist wrath on Cathy, as if it were her fault, whipping and bloodying her to a pulp. Finally to stop the bleeding, he ordered her to take a cold shower. But moments later while Cathy lay dazed and injured on the bathroom floor, Aquino then happened to show up with Cathy's traumatized toddler daughter crying hysterically. Jarred instantly alert upon hearing her daughter's frantic screams, Cathy opened the bathroom door to observe the monster Byrd molesting her overly-traumatized two-year old daughter and the other lustful monster Aquino fiendishly disrobing to join in.[239] This is just one episode amongst millions who every single day somehow endure amongst many who don't the endless nightmare of nonstop unimaginable suffering inflicted on victims of high powered government run sex slave trafficking operations.

Several years later after George W. Bush Jr. took his turn thrashing up Cathy's bruised and battered daughter's body so bad while Dick Cheney sadistically raped Cathy again, in a déjà vu of the preceding Byrd-Aquino scenario, on trauma overload, Cathy grew so distraught that she became unresponsive to her handlers' cues, in a non-functional state to "entertain" the visiting Mexican president scheduled the very next evening.[240] With figurehead Reagan the sitting president at the time, the Illuminati crime cabal spearheaded by the George HW and sons' drug cartel,[241] was busy working with the president from Mexico on a joint secret Juarez-El Paso open border drug smuggling, south to north mainline drug corridor. Cathy O'Brien was in such bad shape emotionally, she had to be rushed to the Monarch go-to programmer Michael Aquino again for some last minute emergency repair. He took her to his old satanic pedo stomping grounds at the Presidio and using a few hypnotic cues, put her into deep trance, placed her in a sensory deprivation tank, and essentially patched her up as damaged, yet still usable goods. Cathy was approaching 30, which for many becomes the dreaded drop off point, when their sex slave expiration date as an expendable commodity kicks in, and they're often killed or programmed to suicide. But due to last minute Aquino black magick, the next night in a Malibu, California mansion, Cathy played hostess delivering her scripted welcome message and fulfilled her sexual duty pleasing the Mexican prez, and just like that, Bush's Juarez deal, like his dual-running cocaine Contra affair, was greenlighted.

Cathy O'Brien's shocking claims have never been legally challenged by any of her unpunished, famous pedophile criminals beyond Washington's feeble denial. In the same way CIA directors Bush senior "ended" CIA's Project Mockingbird in 1976 (after being exposed by the Church Senate committee)[242] and Richard Helms "ended" MK Ultra in 1973,[243] after exposure by former slaves, both Mockingbird and MK Ultra only submerged deeper into deep state's underground swamp.[244] The true reality is that the CIA has never stopped controlling the US-Western press since the Cold War 1950's,[245] and along with Mockingbird, mind control slavery and pedophilia trafficking rings are bigger than ever now.[246] Just like Barry Soetoro aka Obama signed an executive order officially outlawing the Cheney-

Bush-Rumsfeld CIA enhanced torture rendition program, it actually continued under an obscure fine print window.[247] Government criminality has an inevitable way of seeping deeper into underground oblivion, out of sight and out of mind, yet remains more active than ever, submerged safely away from public radar beneath the visible tip of the proverbial iceberg.

A longstanding SOP pattern of deception in our Illuminati run shadow government is to publicly and officially say or do one thing, and then covertly, secretly do another. Don't think for one minute that for seven long decades now the CIA's MK Ultra or its Monarch variants hasn't been covertly churning out multi-millions of generational armies of "super soldiers," presidential sex models, brainwashed, mind controlled superstars,[248] child breeders and sacrificial child lambs, be they serving the elite's agenda as unleashed trained assassins,[249] terrorists, shooting spree mass murderers, spies, entertainment propagandist tools or sex slaves,[250] abused, tortured and ritualistically slaughtered babies and young children at one end, and at the other easily discarded, once used up, like onetime allied dictators turned neutralized expendables, all victims under the same controlling twisted thumb of the Luciferian elite.[251]

As a highly organized hierarchical tag team, the CIA is a front for the Illuminati, and historically the CIA in turn is highly proficient at setting up fronts.[252] Military posts including numerous deep underground military bases where perverse, wholesale crimes are far more easily concealed, along with a number of NASA facilities, university research centers and hospitals are common MK Ultra and Monarch programming breeding grounds. A wide array of system operatives recruit children from pedophile parents threatened with prison sentences or send sex slaves as honey traps for blackmailing parents, especially ministers.

For centuries millions more have been born into this demonic world to Illuminati parents.

Mind control victims who’ve outlived their purpose, or regain lost memories and want to leave or risk exposing the criminal operation, are routinely murdered. Also programmers often subliminally insert suicide cues and commands for expendables to self-destruct.[253] With every resource at its built-in fox-guarding henhouse disposal, Satan worshipping planetary controllers literally consume a considerable portion of the world’s 8 million missing kids each and every year. With the pedophile elite’s bloodlust appetite for children so brutal and voracious, it feeds and invigorates not only its own power and strength but also enlivens and supplies surging energy, strength power as well as portal access entry for demonic interdimensional forces seeking human host possession.

Malevolent mad scientist labs or more aptly the underground milabs are Aldous Huxley’s brave new world factories producing alphas (initial programming that includes installing photographic memory), betas (sex slaves), deltas (assassins), thetas (psychic killers able to cause aneurisms), gammas (trained deceivers), and Omegas (suicide programming).[254] Just as the Nazi elite sought to develop the perfect Aryan race, Operation Paper Clip’s Nazi roots still permeate the present Illuminati MK Ultra/Monarch machine,[255] utilizing brutal barbarism with the most scientifically advanced breakthroughs still searching for the master race.[256] Largely unbeknownst to the public, the controllers are deploying transhumanism and AI technology to refine their methodologies and techniques that enhance and maximize human intelligence, strength and a wide array of specialized skills and talents.

In addition to hypnosis, drugs, torture and creating multiples as means of enhancing memory and brain function, a more recent method of brain stem scarring has also been discovered to increase intellectual prowess. Just as weight lifting tears muscle tissues that when mended become strengthened, scarring the reticular formation of the brain stem was found to strengthen and increase brainpower. Though many slaves are injured or die in the process, entire generations of mind controlled, electronically scarred brain stemmed "whiz kids"[257] are now in place employed and conducting high level supercomputer research in universities, hi-tech giants and defense department agencies like DARPA, NSA and CIA, all working to promote New World Order MK Ultra micro-level control over the unsuspecting macro-masses. According to Arizona Wilder, an even darker, far more sinister picture has emerged within the 14-level underground military base underneath Area 51 where she claims to have witnessed DNA from various animals cloned with human DNA to produce tragic outcomes of monstrous mutants.

Vietnam veteran and retired Special Forces Captain John McCarthy once told the late activist-author Michael Ruppert:

MKULTRA is a CIA acronym that officially stands for "Manufacturing Killers Utilizing Lethal Tradecraft Requiring Assassinations."[258]

A brief list of extremely likely MK/Monarch programmed assassins[259] includes JFK "lone gunman" assassin Lee Harvey Oswald,[260] RFK "lone gunman" assassin Sirhan Sirhan,[261] satanic cult murderer Charlie Manson,[262] mobster Whitey Bulger,[263] Reagan's would-be assassin John Hinckley Jr.,[264] John Lennon's assassin Mark David Chapman,[265] Waco cult founder David Koresh,[266] Oklahoma City bombing patsy Timothy McVeigh[267] and Catholic anti-abortion clinic murderer John Salvi[268] comprise the shortlist of MK Ultra/Monarch "super soldier" assassins, trained specifically either to be patsies or to carry out heinous acts of violence for the shadow government crime cabal. Many so called “lone wolf” psychos used as stooges blamed in regularly staged mass killing spree terrorism on both US and European soil are programmed mind control alumni. Recent alleged Vegas shooter senior citizen Stephen Paddock could be the latest programmed assassin/patsy.[269] What’s too obvious is Paddock was not acting alone. Only deep state possesses both the means and motives to carry out these horrific events on such a global scale, as brazenly transparent and sloppily executed these false flag operations are.

An even longer list of suspected MK Ultra/Monarch entertainer slave victims (primarily actors and musicians), many of whom suffer from program-induced Dissociative Identity Disorder, include sex icon Marilyn Monroe,[270] another blonde sex goddess ex-Church of Satan member Jane Mansfield, “Cuckoo’s Nest” writer Ken Kesey,[271] serial rapist Bill Cosby,[272] Truther comedienne Roseanne Barr,[273] and musicians Kurt Cobain,[274] Michael Jackson,[275] LaToya Jackson,[276] Britney Spears,[277] Whitney Houston,[278] Miley Cyrus,[279] Mariah Carey,[280] Beyoncé Knowles,[281] Rihanna,[282] Taylor Swift,[283] Katy Perry,[284] Lady Gaga,[285] Justin Bieber,[286] actress Amanda Bynes,[287] actors Shia Lebeouf,[288] the twinning Corey’s the late Corey Haim and Corey Feldman,[289] comedian Katt Williams[290] and golfer Tiger Woods.[291]

Demonically mind-controlled, sexually-charged female singer “sex kittens” slaves[292] are typically elevated to superstar status (regardless of talent level) if they make for highly influential social engineering pawns[293] to spread to younger generation global masses a scripted lowest common denominator message and theme that incessantly touts sexual promiscuity, gender confusion, chaotic violence and diabolical perversion through subliminal as well as overt satanic imagery and sound, in effect acting as Illuminati transmitters of satanic mass mind control. Media propaganda constitutes mind control on a mass consumption 24/7 basis. Fallen Hollywood kingpin Harvey Weinstein's predatory exploits finally caught up to him. But the rancid smell of pedophilia reeks in Tinsel Town and the layers of hypocrisy unraveling now will lay bare lots of Harvey's to come.[294] After all, Lucifer's been controlling Hollywood[295] long before the CIA grabbed the horny reins.[296] Their marriage made in Hell promises to be the next showstopper. But that topic will have to wait for a future chapter.

Author and scholar Henry Makow makes the astute observation:

> *Society is being subjected to the same type of trauma-based programming using constant war and atrocities that include Auschwitz, Hiroshima, the Kennedy assassinations, Sept. 11 and Abu Ghraib. We are being collectively desensitized on the one hand, and programmed to focus on sex, violence, trivia and empty social rituals on the other.*[297]

In what's referred to as the 1992 Greenbaum speech,[298] author, researcher and psychologist Corey Hammond summarized the purpose of MK Ultra and Monarch programs:

> *My best guess is that they want an army of Manchurian Candidates, tens of thousands of mental robots who will do prostitution, child pornography, smuggle drugs, engage in international arms smuggling, do snuff films, and all sorts of other very lucrative things. These Manchurian Candidates will do the bidding of their masters, so that eventually the megalomaniacs at the top believe they can create a Satanic Order that will rule the world.*[299]

A quarter century later, they more than got what they wanted. After delivering his alarming message, Dr. Hammond never pursued research or even spoke of the

Monarch program ever again,[300] strongly suggesting death threats likely silenced this shocking reality from ever reaching mass public awareness. The powers-that-shouldn't-be know full well that if the people knew what evil their leaders were committing, as Bush senior once admitted, they'd all be hunted down and strung up on the nearest lamp post. Now that we know, it's time to act.

Amongst the elite, their satanic brainwash has them convinced they're the only ones on this earth entitled to living "the good life," and with access to secret occult knowledge, highly advanced technologies that include transhumanism[301] and nanotechnology, they insist eternal life is in the offing and within their grasp,[302] regardless of how inhospitable or uninhabitable they've turned our ecological habitat at the earth's surface. With luxury living in subterranean cities and highways down below and active space colony havens up above, delusional or not, their long in place survival contingency plans exist whether they trigger a nuclear holocaust for the rest of us or not.

Author of Illuminati in America John Coleman concludes:

> *Given the ghastly mind-control experiments constantly being conducted by the CIA, and its past connections to fiendish monsters like Dr. Cameron and Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, it does not take much to conclude that the CIA follows satanic roads.*[303]

Investigative reporter Anton Chaitkin maintains that the Monarch trauma-induced program is nothing more than:

> *The production of a horde of children in whom the soul is crushed, who would spy, whore, kill and commit suicide*.[304]

"Scientifically refined" satanic ritual abuse has been perpetrated for seven straight decades now on generation after generation of our most vulnerable population, we're talking tens if not hundreds of millions of innocent human lives starting in infancy lost and ruined along the way. Every single day our youngest innocents are being fed into this pedophile machine. Systemic victimization of children from every corner of the globe is today's "brave new world" nightmare a la Luciferian-style. As demonic hosts for too many years, the planetary controllers have been parasitically feasting off our kids fresh off assembly line slabs at milab[305] slaughterhouses, compliments of intel USA. Through these CIA-MI mind control factories,[306] the satanic calendar that calls for gorging equinox/solstice holidays ensures a fresh daily batch of our innocents are devoured by power demons living both on and off the planet, only adding strength to their globalized control. Their Luciferian system that's created this Hell on earth for so many must be blown up and the scourge of systemic pedophilia erased before the Satanists completely destroy our precious, sacred, only home we have. The day of reckoning is here and now. We have no choice but to slay the demonic dragon.

---

[1] John Marks, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate: The CIA and Mind Control* (New York: Times Books, 1979), The Search for the Manchurian Candidate The CIA and Mind Control pdf

[2] Christopher R. Moran, "Turning against the CIA : Whistleblowers during the 'Time of Troubles,'" History, Volume 100 (No. 340), p. 251-274, ISSN 0018-2648, Turning Against the CIA - Warwick WRAP - University of Warwick pdf

[3] "US Senate Church Committee Reports," Washington: AARC Research Center Public Library Contents, 1975-76, http://www.aarclibrary.org/publib/contents/church/contents_church_reports.htm.

[4] Steve Kangas, "A Timeline of CIA Atrocities," *Global Research*, October 13, 1997, https://www.globalresearch.ca/a-timeline-of-cia-atrocities/5348804.

[5] "John Perkins: Economic Hit Man – Summary of Confessions of an Economic Hit Man," *WanttoKnow.Info*, https://www.wanttoknow.info/johnperkinseconomichitman.

[6] “10 of the Most Lethal CIA Interventions in Latin America,” *Telesur*, September 18, 2016, https://www.telesurtv.net/english/analysis/10-of-the-Most-Lethal-CIA-Interventions-in-Latin-America-20160608-0031.html.

[7] William Blum, “Overthrowing other People’s Governments: The Master List,” *williamblum.org*, https://williamblum.org/essays/read/overthrowing-other-peoples-governments-the-master-list.

[8] “Complete List of Banks Owned and Controlled by the Rothschild Family,” *humansarefree.com*, November 2013, http://humansarefree.com/2013/11/complete-list-of-banks-ownedcontrolled.html.

[9] Pete Papaherakles, “Rothschilds Want Iran’s Banks,” *American Free Press*, February 10, 2012, https://americanfreepress.net/rothschilds-want-irans-banks/.

[10] Michael Snyder, “Guess How Many Nations in the World do not have a Central Bank?” Zero Hedge, June 10, 2015, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2015-06-10/guess-how-many-nations-world-do-not-have-central-bank.

[11] Bruce Cumings, “Americans Once Carpet-Bombed North Korea. It’s Time to Remember that Past,” *The Guardian*, August 13, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2017/aug/13/america-carpet-bombed-north-korea-remember-that-past.

[12] Michel Chossudovsky, “Who are the War Criminals? Truman’s 1951 ‘Fie and Fury’ against the People of North Korea,” *Global Research*, October 15, 2017, https://www.globalresearch.ca/who-are-the-war-criminals-trumans-1951-fire-and-fury-against-the-people-of-north-korea/5613423.

[13] Richard Walker, “Washington’s Anti-Russia Campaign,” *American Free Press*, March 10, 2015, http://americanfreepress.net/washingtons-anti-russia-campaign/.

[14] “Manipulation of the People - The Rudiments of Propaganda,” *realitymaps.com* (an online blogsite), September 2003, http://www.realitymaps.com/2003/09-manipulation.html.

[15] Garikai Chengu, “America Created Al Qaeda and the ISIS Terror Group,” *Global Research*, September 19, 2014, https://www.globalresearch.ca/america-created-al-qaeda-and-the-isis-terror-group/5402881.

[16] Joachim Hagopian, “Divide and Conquer: The Globalist Pathway to New World Order Tyranny,” Global Research, October 23, 2015, https://www.globalresearch.ca/divide-and-conquer-the-globalist-pathway-to-new-world-order-tyranny-from-a-geopolitics-perspective/5483935.

[17] Wes Penre, “The Black Nobility,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, January 13, 2004, http://tapnewswire.com/2017/10/rothschilds-crime-syndicate-black-hearted-

venetian-khazar-nobility-that-think-they-are-assigned-by-satan-to-rule-over-humanity/.

[18] "Real World Order: Who Rules the World?" *realworldorder.net*, http://www.realworldorder.net/.

[19] David W. Brown, "10 Things you didn't Know about the President's Secret Army," *Mental Floss*, September 6, 2016, http://mentalfloss.com/article/30033/10-things-you-didnt-know-about-presidents-secret-army.

[20] Michael E. Salla, "The Black Budget Report: An Investigation into the CIA's Black Budget and the Second Manhattan Project," Center for Global Peace/School of International Service, American University, November 23, 2003, http://www1.american.edu/salla/Articles/BB-CIA.htm.

[21] "Majestic 12," *crystalinks.com*, http://www.crystalinks.com/mj12.html.

[22] "Majestic-12 - The Ultimate Secret," *bibliotecapleyades.net*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mj12_32.htm.

[23] Richard Dolan, "The Death of James Forrestal," *Richard Dolan Press*, March 8, 2001, https://www.richarddolanpress.com/the-death-of-james-forrestal.

[24] "Why Was Former CIA Director William Colby Assassinated?" Steven Greer interview transcript, *archive.org*, August 8, 2004, https://archive.org/details/WhyWasFormerCiaDirectorWilliamColbyAssassinated.

[25] Zalin Grant, "Who Murdered the CIA Chief?" *Pythia Press*, 2011, http://www.pythiapress.com/wartales/colby.htm.

[26] Anthony C. Hayes, "The Presidents and UFOs: A Secret History from FDR to Obama," Baltimore Post-Examiner, October 19, 2015, http://baltimorepostexaminer.com/presidents-and-ufos/2015/10/19.

[27] Dwight D. Eisenhower, "Military-Industrial Complex Speech," Presidential Farewell Address transcript, *The Avalon Project*, January 17, 1961, http://avalon.law.yale.edu/20th_century/eisenhower001.asp.

[28] "JFK Secret Societies Speech," YouTube video, 19:43, April 27, 1961, posted October 24, 2012, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zdMbmdFOvTs.

[29] Edward Curtain, "Allen Dulles 'Indonesian Strategy' and the Assassination of John F. Kennedy," *Global Research*, June 12, 2016, https://www.globalresearch.ca/allen-dulles-indonesian-strategy-and-the-assassination-of-john-f-kennedy/5530268.

[30] David Icke, "The New World Order does Exist It's Official," *bibliotecapleyades.net*, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_nwo04.htm.

[31] Fritz Springmeier, *Bloodlines of the Illuminati* (Westminster, Colorado: Ambassador House, 2002), http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/bloodlines/.

[32] Holly Greig, “The United States Remains a British Colony,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, July 29, 2010, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_globalbanking92.htm.

[33] “Real World Order: Who Rules the World?” http://www.realworldorder.net/.

[34] Roosh V., “How a Small Cabal is Using Socialism and Cultural Marxism to Consolidate World Power,” *rooshv.com* (an online blog), July 7, 2016, http://www.rooshv.com/how-a-small-cabal-is-using-socialism-and-cultural-marxism-to-consolidate-world-power.

[35] Anthony C. Sutton, *Wall Street and the Bolshevik Revolution* (New York: Buccaneer Books, 1975), Wall Street and the Bolshevik Revolution pdf

[36] Robert Pye, “Anomalies in History – World War II: How a Global Elite Controlled Both Sides,” *scribd.com*, https://www.scribd.com/doc/14474077/World-War-Two-How-a-Global-Elite-controlled-Both-Sides.

[37] “Wall Street Funded both Communists and Nazis,” *Transmissions*, October 2, 2012, http://transmissionsmedia.com/wall-street-funded-both-communists-and-nazis/.

[38] Jay Dyer, “Western Support for Communism: CFR, OSS, Soviets and Asia,” *jaysanalysis.com* (an online blog), February 27, 2013, https://jaysanalysis.com/2013/02/27/western-support-for-communism-cfr-oss-soviets-and-asia/.

[39] James Perloff, “Iran and the Shah: What Really Happened,” *The New American*, May 12, 2009, https://www.thenewamerican.com/culture/history/item/4690-iran-and-the-shah-what-really-happened.

[40] Jack Colhoun, “On the Side of Pol Pot: U.S. Supports Khmer Rouge,” *Covert Action Magazine*, summer 1990, *Third World Traveler*, http://thirdworldtraveler.com/US_ThirdWorld/US_PolPot.html.

[41] Jay Syrmopoulos, “Declassified Emails Reveal NATO Killed Gaddafi to Stop Libyan Creation of Gold-backed Currency,” *The Free Thought Project*, January 14, 2016, http://thefreethoughtproject.com/declassified-emails-reveal-natos-true-motive-topple-gaddafi-stop-creation-gold-backed-african-currency/.

[42] Matthew M. Aid and Shane Harris, “Exclusive: CIA Files Prove America Helped Saddam as he Gassed Iran,” *Foreign Policy*, August 26, 2013, http://foreignpolicy.com/2013/08/26/exclusive-cia-files-prove-america-helped-saddam-as-he-gassed-iran/.

[43] John Coleman, Diplomacy by Deception (U.K.: Bridger House Publishers, 1993), Chapter 8, "Panama: The Naked Truth," http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/diplomacy_deception/diplomacy_deception08.htm.

[44] "Untold Story of Henry Kissinger's Involvement in Chile's 1973 Coup," *Sputnik News*, December 16, 2016, https://sputniknews.com/politics/201612161048668493-chile-coup-us-kissinger/.

[45] "A Nation Deceived: Council on Foreign Relations Sponsorship of Covert Activities at Home and Abroad," *bibliotecapleyades.net*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_cfr_09.htm.

[46] Joel van der Reijden, "The Pilgrims Society: A Study of the Anglo American Establishment," *Institute for the Study of Globalization and Covert Politics*, July 17, 2008, https://isgp-studies.com/pilgrims-society-us-uk.

[47] Steve Byas, "Skull and Bones Files at Bush Library to be Released," *The New American*, May 9, 2016, https://www.thenewamerican.com/usnews/item/23131-skull-and-bones-files-at-bush-library-to-be-released.

[48] "Rituals of Freemasonry: Freemasonry Proven to Worship Lucifer," *bibliotecapleyades.net*, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_brotherhoodss01c.htm.

[49] Trilateral Commission: World Shadow Government," *bibliotecapleyades.net*, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_trilat05.htm.

[50] Daniel Estulin, "Extracts - The True Story of the Bilderberg Group," *bibliotecapleyades.net*, September 22, 2007, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_bilderberg_23.htm.

[51] Henry Makow, *The Illuminati The Cult that Hijacked the World* (Winnipeg: Silas Green, 2008), Illuminati - The Cult That Hijacked The World - Biblioteca Pléyades pdf

[52] "Pivotal Role of Allen Dulles in Shielding Nazi War Criminals," *Alliance for Human Research Protection*, http://ahrp.org/pivotal-role-of-allen-dulles-in-shielding-nazi-war-criminals/.

[53] "Operation Paperclip Casefile… and American Rip-offs," *bibliotecapleyades.net*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mj12_29.htm.

[54] Jon Schwartz, "In 1974 Call to Abolish the CIA, Followed in Footsteps of JFK, Truman," *The Intercept*, February 23, 2016, https://theintercept.com/2016/02/22/in-1974-call-to-abolish-cia-sanders-followed-in-footsteps-of-jfk-truman/.

[55] Carol Adl, “New Book Claims Former CIA Director Allen Dulles Ordered the Hit on JFK,” *Your News Wire*, October 17, 2015, http://yournewswire.com/new-book-claims-former-cia-director-allen-dulles-ordered-the-hit-on-jfk/.

[56] Allan Hall, “Secret Files Reveal 9,000 Nazi War Criminals Fled to South America after WWII,” *Daily Mail*, March 19, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2117093/Secret-files-reveal-9-000-Nazi-war-criminals-fled-South-America-WWII.html.

[57] “CIA Vision, Mission, Ethos and Challenges,” *cia.gov*, https://www.cia.gov/about-cia/cia-vision-mission-values.

[58] Tom Engelhardt, “America Spends $68 Billion a Year on 17 Major Intelligence Agencies. So why do we Keep getting Caught off Guard?” Mother Jones, October 1, 2014, http://www.motherjones.com/politics/2014/10/america-intelligence-off-guard-isis-arab-spring/.

[59] Raul Ilargi Meijer, “How to Drain the Swamp,” *Zero Hedge*, March 9, 2017, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2017-03-09/.

[60] Conor Lynch, “Draining the Swamp – of Brainpower: Trump’s Corrupt Administration is Fueled by Anti-Intellectualism,” *Salon*, July 22, 2017, https://www.salon.com/2017/07/22/draining-the-swamp-of-brainpower-trumps-corrupt-administration-is-fueled-by-anti-intellectualism/.

[61] James F. Tracy, “CIA and the Media – 50 Facts the World Needs to Know,” *Global Research*, December 1, 2016, https://www.globalresearch.ca/the-cia-and-the-media-50-facts-the-world-needs-to-know/5471956.

[62] “CIA Controls Mass Media… like The New York Times, Time Magazine and Much More,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, February 16, 2015, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_cia30.htm.

[63] Jay Dyer, “Hollywood and the CIA: A Dark Marriage Revealed,” *21st Century Wire*, January 28, 2015, http://21stcenturywire.com/2015/01/28/hollywood-and-the-cia-a-dark-marriage-revealed/.

[64] Michael B. Kelly, “The NDAA Legalizes the Use of Propaganda on the US Public,” *Business Insider*, May 21, 2012, http://www.businessinsider.com/ndaa-legalizes-propaganda-2012-5/?IR=T.

[65] Joachim Hagopian, “Western State Sponsored Terrorism: False Flags Spreading Islamophobia, Race and Religious Wars and New World Disorder,” *Lew Rockwell*, December 25, 2015, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2015/12/joachim-hagopian/new-world-disorder-2/.

[66] “FBI Organizes almost all Terror Plots in the US” *RT*, August 22, 2011, https://www.rt.com/usa/fbi-terror-report-plot-365-899/.

[67] Jon Swaine, “Barack Obama ‘has Authority to use Drone Strikes to Kill Americans on US Soil,’” *The Telegraph*, March 6, 2013, http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/worldnews/barackobama/9913615/Barack-Obama-has-authority-to-use-drone-strikes-to-kill-Americans-on-US-soil.html.

[68] “’False Flags’ are Legal Propaganda Produced by the Department of Defense,” The Millennium Report, January 18, 2016, http://themillenniumreport.com/2016/01/false-flags-are-legal-propaganda-produced-by-the-department-of-defense/.

[69] Merle Miller, *Plain Speaking: An Oral Biography of Harry S. Truman* (New York: Berkley Books, 1974), p. 285.

[70] John Stockwell, transcript of lecture entitled “The Secret Wars of the CIA,” October 1987, “America’s Third World War,” *Information Clearing House*, http://www.informationclearinghouse.info/article4068.htm.

[71] Bradlee Dean, “CIA – 70 Years of Propaganda and Corruption,” World News Daily, February 2, 2017, http://www.wnd.com/2017/02/cia-70-years-of-propaganda-corruption/.

[72] Eric T. Karlstrom, “Part VI. Mind Control: History and Applications,” *911nwo.com*, December 2012, http://911nwo.com/?p=2160.

[73] “Pivotal Role of Allen Dulles in Shielding Nazi War Criminals,” http://ahrp.org/pivotal-role-of-allen-dulles-in-shielding-nazi-war-criminals/.

[74] Ken Adachi, “Mind Control the Ultimate Terror,” *educateyourself.com*, http://educate-yourself.org/mc/.

[75] S. Douglas Woodward, *Power Quest Book Two: The Ascendancy of Antichrist in America* (Kindle: Book Ministry, 2013), www.dougriggs.org/Ch9_PowerQuest_BookTwo_Woodward.pdf

[76] Ron Patton, “Project Monarch: Nazi Mind Control – The Evolution of Project MKULTRA,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mindcon02.htm.

[77] Carol Rutz, “Josef Mengele Sightings,” *mydmci.net* (an online blog), http://my.dmci.net/~casey/JosephMengelesurvivorsightings.htm.

[78] Stephen F. Dachi, “CSI Sao Paolo – the Search for the Angel of Death,” *Association for Diplomatic Studies and Training*, http://adst.org/2012/08/csi-sao-paolo/.

[79] “Why Israel never Brought Josef Mengele to Justice,” *Mosaic Magazine*, September 8, 2017, https://mosaicmagazine.com/picks/2017/09/why-israel-never-brought-josef-mengele-to-justice/.

[80] Mark Frauenfelder, “World’s Worst Excerpt – The Maddest Mad Scientist: The CIA’s Dr. Sidney Gottlieb,” *boingboing.net*, July 21, 2005, https://boingboing.net/2005/07/21/worlds-worst-excerpt.html.

[81] Mark Frauenfelder, https://boingboing.net/2005/07/21/worlds-worst-excerpt.html.

[82] Russ Baker, “US Government Experiments on Americans – LSD and MKULTRA,” *Business Insider*, June 2, 2011, http://www.businessinsider.com/us-government-experiments-on-americanslsd-and-mkultra-2011-6/?IR=T.

[83] Kim Zetter, “April 13, 1953: CIA Oks MK-ULTRA Mind-Control Tests,” *Wired*, April 13, 2010, https://www.wired.com/2010/04/0413mk-ultra-authorized/.

[84] Cathy O’Brien and Mark Phillips, *Trance Formation of America* (Reality Marketing, Incorporated, 1995), https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/transforusa/transformation05.htm#CHAPTER 1 - MY INTRODUCTION TO HUMANITY.

[85] Cathy O’Brien and Mark Phillips, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/transforusa/transformation10.htm#CHAPTER 23 - WHIRLED VISION.

[86] Kim Zetter, https://www.wired.com/2010/04/0413mk-ultra-authorized/.

[87] Mark Frauenfelder, https://boingboing.net/2005/07/21/worlds-worst-excerpt.html.

[88] Kim Zetter, https://www.wired.com/2010/04/0413mk-ultra-authorized/.

[89] HP Albarelli Jr. and Jeffrey Kaye, “Cries from the Past: Torture’s Ugly Echoes,” *Truthout*, May 23, 2010, http://truth-out.org/archive/component/k2/item/89725:cries-from-the-past-tortures-ugly-echoes.

[90] Maia Szalavitz, “The Legacy of the CIA’s LSD Experiments on America,” Time Magazine, March 23, 2012, http://healthland.time.com/2012/03/23/the-legacy-of-the-cias-secret-lsd-experiments-on-america/.

[91] HP Albarelli Jr. and Jeffrey Kaye, http://truth-out.org/archive/component/k2/item/89725:cries-from-the-past-tortures-ugly-echoes.

[92] Larry Schwartz, “10 of the most Evil Medical Experiments Conducted in History,” *AlterNet*, August 20, 2014, https://www.alternet.org/10-most-evil-medical-experiments-conducted-history.

[93] Kathryn Krase, “History of Forced Sterilization and Current US Abuses,” *Our Bodies Ourselves*, October 1, 2014, http://www.ourbodiesourselves.org/health-info/forced-sterilization/.

[94] Emily Anne Epstein, “Revealed: Army Scientists Secretly Sprayed St. Louis with ‘Radioactive’ Particles for Years to Test Chemical Warfare Technology,” *Daily Mail*, September 29, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2210415/Revealed-Army-scientists-secretly-sprayed-St-Louis-radioactive-particles-YEARS-test-chemical-warfare-technology.html.

[95] Robert Barsochinni, “US Vaporized Marshall Islands, Performed Human Experimentation on Natives,” *Washingtons Blog*, April 29, 2015, http://www.washingtonsblog.com/2015/04/us-vaporized-marshall-islands-performed-human-experimentation-on-natives.html.

[96] Norman Solomon, “50 Years Later, the Tragedy of Nuclear Tests in Nevada,” *Common Dreams*, January 5, 2001, https://www.commondreams.org/views01/0105-06.htm.

[97] Kevin Loria, “Over and over again, the Military has Conducted Dangerous Biowarfare Experiments on Americans,” Business Insider, September 25, 2016, http://www.businessinsider.sg/military-government-secret-experiments-biological-chemical-weapons-2016-9/?r=US&IR=T.

[98] Gary Null, “Killing us Softly,” *Global Research*, December 5, 2013, https://www.globalresearch.ca/fluoride-killing-us-softly/5360397.

[99] Joseph Mercola, “Vaccines have Serious Side Effects – The Institute of Medicine Says so!” *mercola.com*, September 27, 2011, https://articles.mercola.com/sites/articles/archive/2011/09/27/vaccines-are-dangerous-says-the-government.aspx.

[100] Jeffrey M. Smith, “Genetically Modified Foods (GMOs) may Pose National Health Risk,” *WanttoKnow.Info*, https://www.wanttoknow.info/gmoinyourfood.

[101] Joseph Mercola, “Heat-Induced Acrylamide may be a Primary Hazard of Processed Food,” *mercola.com*, July 17, 2013, https://articles.mercola.com/sites/articles/archive/2013/07/17/acrylamide.aspx.

[102] Ilya Sandra Perlingieri, “Chemtrails: The Consequences of Toxic Metals and Chemical Aerosols on Human Health,” *Global Research*, May 7, 2010, https://www.globalresearch.ca/chemtrails-the-consequences-of-toxic-metals-and-chemical-aerosols-on-human-health/19047.

[103] Alex Henderson, “10 Reasons Americans are Morbidly Obese,” *Salon*, August 1, 2014, https://www.salon.com/2014/08/01/10_reasons_america_is_morbidly_obese_partner/.

[104] Makia Freeman, “Western Medicine is Rockefeller Medicine – All the Way,” *The Freedom Articles*, October 17, 2014, http://freedom-articles.toolsforfreedom.com/western-medicine-rockefeller-medicine/.

[105] Jason Kane, “Health Costs: How the US Compares with other Countries,” *PBS News Hour*, October 22, 2012, http://www.pbs.org/newshour/rundown/health-costs-how-the-us-compares-with-other-countries/.

[106] Roosh V. “The End Goal of Western Progressivism is Depopulation,” *rooshv.com*, November 18, 2015, http://www.rooshv.com/the-end-goal-of-western-progressivism-is-depopulation.

[107] Joachim Hagopian, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2015/12/joachim-hagopian/new-world-disorder-2/.

[108] Robert David Steele, “Las Vegas Massacre: A Hybrid False Flag, Treason or an Act of War?” *American Herald Trib une*, October 6, 2017, https://ahtribune.com/las-vegas-massacre/1938-hybrid-false-flag.html.

[109] Dr. Eowyn, “The Dead and Injured of Las Vegas Shooting Massacre,” *Fellowship of the Minds*, October 7, 2017, https://fellowshipoftheminds.com/2017/10/07/the-dead-and-injured-of-las-vegas-shooting-massacre/.

[110] Edward Curtain, “The Las Vegas Massacre: The Media Narrative is Deceptive,” *Global Research*, October 7, 2017, https://www.globalresearch.ca/the-las-vegas-massacre-the-media-narrative-is-deceptive/5612247.

[111] Kevin Barrett (ed.), *Orlando False Flag: The Clash of Histories* (Lone Rock, Wisconsin: Sifting and Winnowing Books, 2016), https://www.amazon.com/Orlando-False-Flag-Clash-Histories/dp/0996143033.

[112] Joachim Hagopian, “The Globalists' New World Order: Soft and Hard Kill Methods. An Unknown and Uncertain Future,” *Global Research*, May 23, 2015, https://www.globalresearch.ca/the-globalists-new-world-order-soft-and-hard-kill-methods-an-unknown-and-uncertain-future/5451356.

[113] Damian Carrington, “Earth’s Sixth Mass Extinction Event Under Way, Scientists Warn,” *The Guardian*, July 10, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/environment/2017/jul/10/earths-sixth-mass-extinction-event-already-underway-scientists-warn.

[114] Arjun Walia, “US Intelligence Officer: ‘Every Single Terrorist Attack in US was a False Flag Attack,” *Collective Evolution*, May 15, 2015, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2015/05/15/us-intelligence-officer-every-single-terrorist-attack-in-us-was-a-false-flag-attack/.

[115] Joachim Hagopian, “Authoritarian Control and Mass Murder in America the Hegelian Dialectic Way,” *Lew Rockwell*, June 16, 2016, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2016/06/joachim-hagopian/power-elite-run-us/.

[116] Ryan McMaken, “Gun Control Fails: What Happened in England, Ireland, Canada,” *Mises Wire*, December 10, 2015, https://mises.org/blog/gun-control-fails-what-happened-england-ireland-and-canada.

[117] Justin King, “The Facts that Neither Side Wants to Admit about Gun Control,” *Mint Press News*, October 5, 2015, http://www.mintpressnews.com/the-facts-that-neither-side-wants-to-admit-about-gun-control/207152/.

[118] John W. Whitehead, “The Military-Entertainment Complex’s Culture of Violence Turns Deadly,” *Counter Punch*, October 5, 2017, https://www.counterpunch.org/2017/10/05/96400/.

[119] Dave Hodges, “Back to the Future: What History Teaches about gun Confiscations,” *The Common Sense Show*, December 29, 2012, http://www.thecommonsenseshow.com/2012/12/29/back-to-the-future-what-history-teaches-about-gun-confiscations/.

[120] Stella Morabito, “What you should Know about the Armenian genocide,” *The Federalist*, April 24, 2015, http://thefederalist.com/2015/04/24/what-you-should-know-about-the-armenian-genocide/.

[121] Tony Rennell, “Madman who Starved 60 Million to Death: Devastating Book Reveals how Mao’s Megalomania Turned China into a Madhouse,” *Daily Mail*, July 22, 2011, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2017839/Madman-starved-60-million-death-Devastating-book-reveals-Maos-megalomania-turned-China-madhouse.html.

[122] Dane Wigington, “Cooling Towers, Climate Engineering and Hurricane Harvey, is there a Connection?” *geoengineeringwatch.org*, October 4, 2017, http://www.geoengineeringwatch.org/cooling-towers-climate-engineering-is-there-a-connection/.

[123] “Hurricane Harvey was Weather Warfare Directed against the American People by the U.S. Government,” *The Millennium Report*, September 27, 2017, http://themillenniumreport.com/2017/09/hurricane-harvey-was-weather-warfare-directed-against-the-american-people-by-the-u-s/.

[124] Irmageddon: Who Geoengineered Superstorm Irma and why?” *State of the Nation*, September 8, 2017, http://stateofthenation2012.com/?p=83275.

[125] Joachim Hagopian, “The Global Warming Hoax, the Paris Climate Accord and NWO Global Governance,” *Lew Rockwell*, April 25, 2016, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2016/04/joachim-hagopian/global-warming-hoax/.

[126] Chris Hughes, “ISIS Face being Wiped out as Terror Group’s Global war Chest Loses £ 50 a Month,” *Mirror*, June 29, 2017, http://www.mirror.co.uk/news/world-news/isis-face-being-wiped-out-10710993.

[127] John Lichfield, “Lamps out over Europe as Brexit Marks the End of the European Union,” *Independent*, June 24, 2016, http://www.independent.co.uk/voices/brexit-what-does-it-mean-for-eu-future-referendum-result-europe-lamps-going-out-a7099476.html.

[128] James Badcock and Hannah Strange, “Catalonia Referendum Violence Plunges EU into Crisis as 90pc of Voters back Independence,” The Telegraph, October 2, 2017, http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2017/10/01/eu-crisis-catalonian-referendum-descends-violence/.

[129] W. Henry Wall Jr., “How the CIA’s Mind-Controlled Experiments Destroyed my Healthy, High-Functioning Father’s Brilliant Mind,” *AlterNet*, August 8, 2012, https://www.alternet.org/drugs/how-cias-lsd-mind-control-experiments-destroyed-my-healthy-high-functioning-fathers-brilliant.

[130] John Leach, “Psychological Factors in Exceptional, Extreme and Torturous Environments,” *Extreme Physiology and Medicine*, June 1, 2016, https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC4890253/.

[131] “’Stress and Duress’ Techniques Used Worldwide,” *pantheon.hrw.org*, June 1, 2004, http://pantheon.hrw.org/legacy/english/docs/2004/06/01/usint8632.htm.

[132] HP Albarelli Jr. and Jeffrey Kaye, http://truth-out.org/archive/component/k2/item/89725:cries-from-the-past-tortures-ugly-echoes.

[133] “Timeline of Secret Government Projects,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, November 3, 2002, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/esp_cointelpro06.htm.

[134] Gary Younge, “The CIA has Brought Darkness to America by Fighting in the Shadows,” *The Guardian*, March 9, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2014/mar/09/cia-america-fighting-shadows.

[135] Douglas Valentine, “CIA and the Drug Business,” *Consortium News*, September 10, 2015, https://consortiumnews.com/2015/09/10/cia-and-the-drug-business/.

[136] Peter Dale Scott, “CIA Funding: Never Constrained by its Congressional Budget,” *whowhatwhy.org*, December 12, 2014, https://whowhatwhy.org/2014/12/12/cia-funding-never-constrained-congressional-budget/.

[137] Mohsen Abdelmoumen, “Robert David Steele: CIA Uses 1000 of US Overseas Bases to Facilitate the Smuggling of Drugs, Cash, Gold, Guns, and Small Children for the Elite,” *American Herald Tribune*, February 20, 2017, https://ahtribune.com/in-depth/1518-robert-david-steele.html.

[138] Damien McElroy, “CIA ‘Running Arms Smuggling Team in Benghazi when Consulate was Attacked,’” *The Telegraph*, August 2, 2013, http://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/worldnews/africaandindianocean/libya/10218288/CIA-running-arms-smuggling-team-in-Benghazi-when-consulate-was-attacked.html.

[139] “Report Reveals $8.5 Trillion Missing from Pentagon Budget,” *Global Research*, June 5, 2015, https://www.globalresearch.ca/report-reveals-8-5-trillion-missing-from-pentagon-budget-2/5453618.

[140] Amitav Ghosh interview, “’Opium Financed British Rule in India,’” *BBC News*, June 23, 2008, http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/south_asia/7460682.stm.

[141] Sabastien Roblin, “The War that Made Asia: How the Opium war Crushed China,” *The National Interest*, February 17, 2017, http://nationalinterest.org/blog/the-buzz/the-war-made-asia-how-the-opium-war-crushed-china-19476.

[142] “Drug War? American Troops are Protecting Afghan Opium. U.S. Occupation Leads to All-Time High Heroin Production,” *Global Research*, November 13, 2013, https://www.globalresearch.ca/drug-war-american-troops-are-protecting-afghan-opium-u-s-occupation-leads-to-all-time-high-heroin-production/5358053.

[143] Michel Chossudovsky, “More American Troops to Afghanistan, to Keep the Chinese out? Lithium and the Battle for Afghanistan’s Mineral Riches,” *Global Research*, September 18, 2017, https://www.globalresearch.ca/more-american-troops-to-afghanistan-to-keep-the-chinese-out-lithium-and-the-battle-for-afghanistans-mineral-riches/5605456.

[144] Tom Burgis, “Dark Money: London’s Dirty Secret,” *Financial Times*, May 12, 2016, https://www.ft.com/content/1d805534-1185-11e6-839f-2922947098f0.

[145] Joachim Hagopian, “Israel is the Organ Harvesting and Human trafficking Global Ringleader, with Complicit help from US and Turkey,” *sott.net*, May 14, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/318286-Israel-is-the-organ-harvesting-and-human-trafficking-global-ringleader-with-complicit-help-from-US-and-Turkey.

[146] Ron Patton, “The Evolution of Project MKULTRA - Project Monarch Nazi Mind Control,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mindcon02.htm.

[147] Stephen Lendman, “MK-ULTRA – The CIA’s Mind Control Program, *rense.com*, February 16, 2010, http://rense.com/general89/mkultra.htm.

[148] Ron Patton, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mindcon02.htm.

[149] Maia Szalavitz, http://healthland.time.com/2012/03/23/the-legacy-of-the-cias-secret-lsd-experiments-on-america/.

[150] John Marks, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate: The CIA and Mind Control* (New York: WW Norton and Company, 1979), Chapter 12 “The Search for the Truth.” https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/manchurian/marks12.htm.

[151] Kim Zetter, https://www.wired.com/2010/04/0413mk-ultra-authorized/.

[152] Michael A. Aquino interview transcript, “The Devil’s Advocate: An Interview with Dr. Michael Aquino,” *disinfo.com*, September 28, 2013, http://disinfo.com/2013/09/devils-advocate-interview-dr-michael-aquino/.

[153] Michael A. Aquino interview by Sean Stone, “MindWars and the Temple of Set with Michael Aquino,” *Buzzsaw*, YouTube video, 0:58, posted on March 6, 2015, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=J0EN65XLv94.

[154] “History of CIA Mind Control Experimentation,” *Child Abuse Recovery*, September 5, 2013, http://childabuserecovery.com/history-of-cia-mind-control-experimentation/.

[155] Ann Diamond, “MK-Ultra – is Government still Torturing Innocent People?” *henrymakow.com*, February 11, 2015, https://www.henrymakow.com/2015/02/Toronto-man-claims-MK-Ultra.html.

[156] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, *The Illuminati Formula Used to Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave* (On Demand Publishing, 2004), Chapter 1 “The Selection and Preparation of the Victim,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/chapter01.htm.

[157] Ron Patton, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mindcon02.htm.

[158] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, Chapter 2 “The Traumatization and Torture of the Victim,” https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/chapter02.htm.

[159] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/chapter01.htm.

[160] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/chapter02.htm.

[161] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/chapter02.htm.

[162] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/chapter02.htm.

[163] Cisco Wheeler transcript of interview by Wayne Morris, “Radio Interview with Cisco Wheeler, Former Illuminati Mind Control Programmer,” *CKLN Mind Control Series*, January 11, 1998, http://educate-yourself.org/mc/ciscowheelerinterview11jan98.shtml.

[164] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/chapter02.htm.

[165] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/chapter02.htm.

[166] “America’s Top Secret Bases,” *bibliotecaplyades.net*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_underground07.htm.

[167] “Groom Lake Air Force Base – Area 51,” bibliotecapleyades.net, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/offlimits/esp_offlimits_3.htm.

[168] Anton Chaitkin, “British Psychiatry: From Eugenics to Assassination,” EIR, Vol 21, No. 40, October 7, 1994, British Psychiatry: From Eugenics to Assassination - Executive

[169] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, “Appendix Two: The Programming Sites,” http://whale.to/b/sp/app2.html.

[170] Gregg Prescott, “The Disney Agenda,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_mediacontrol125.htm.

[171] Tom Towers, “Another Dimension: Jaw Dropping Photos Taken above CERN’s Large Hadron Collider Lead to Wild New Conspiracy Theories and ‘Prove Portals are Opening,’” *The Sun*, June 28, 2016, https://www.thesun.co.uk/tech/1358274/jaw-dropping-photos-taken-above-cerns-large-hadron-collider-lead-to-wild-new-conspiracy-theories-and-prove-portals-are-opening/.

[172] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, http://whale.to/b/sp/app2.html.

[173] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/mindcontrol_index.htm#menu.

[174] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/chapter02.htm.

[175] Pat Flanagan, “International Missing Children’s Day: Eight Million Kids Disappear around the World Every Year,” *Irish Mirror*, May 25, 2014, http://www.irishmirror.ie/news/world-news/international-missing-childrens-day-eight-3606225.

[176] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, Chapter 6 “The Use of Electronics and Electricity,” https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/Chapter06.htm.

[177] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/Chapter06.htm.

[178] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/Chapter06.htm.

[179] Psychotronic Weapons – Brain Manipulation from a Distance,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/ciencia/ciencia_psychotronicweapons10.htm.

[180] Mojmir Babacek, "Psychotronic and Electromagnetic Weapons: Remote Control of the Human nervous system," *Global Research*, January 31, 2013, https://www.globalresearch.ca/psychotronic-and-electromagnetic-weapons-remote-control-of-the-human-nervous-system/5319111.

[181] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/Chapter06.htm.

[182] Cheryl Welsh, "EMR Electromagnetic Radiation Weapons as Powerful as the Atomic Bomb," *bibliotecapleyades.net*, February 2001, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/scalar_tech/esp_scalartech33.htm.

[183] Liam S. Whittaker, "10 Methods of Mind Control," *CS Globe*, March 21, 2013, http://csglobe.com/10-methods-of-mind-control/2/.

[184] Richard Boylan, "Top Secret – US Government Anti-Gravity Fleet is Operational Today," *metatech.org*, http://www.metatech.org/wp/ufos/secret-government-anti-gravity-fleet/.

[185] Zen Gardner, "Bob Hope Illuminati Pump," *henrymakow.com*, March 11, 2016, https://www.henrymakow.com/bob_hope_-_uso_mind_control_se.html.

[186] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/chapter01.htm.

[187] Debra Kelly, "10 Unsettling Teachings of the Eccentric Aleister Crowley," *Listverse*, May 6, 2015, https://listverse.com/2015/05/06/10-unsettling-teachings-of-the-eccentric-aleister-crowley/.

[188] Eric T. Kalstrom, "The Illuminati, Skull and Bones, and 'The Plan,'" *google.com*, 2006, book review of William Guy Clark's *Pawns in the Game* and Anthony C. Sutton's *America's Secret Establishment: an Introduction to the Order of Skull and Bones*, https://sites.google.com/site/911newworldorderfiles/illuminatiskullandbonesandtheplan.

[189] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/chapter05.0.htm.

[190] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/chapter05.0.htm.

[191] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/chapter05.0.htm.

[192] Cisco Wheeler transcript interview, http://educate-yourself.org/mc/ciscowheelerinterview11jan98.shtml.

[193] Michael Aquino interviewed by Oprah Winfrey, *Oprah Winfrey Show*, "Michael Aquino on Oprah," YouTube video, 06:59,

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DtolGsgoNXk.

[194] Mark Hay, “The Mental Illness behind the Foxcatcher Murder,” *Vice*, November 18, 2014, https://www.vice.com/en_us/article/9bzmdv/the-mental-illness-behind-the-foxcatcher-murder-425.

[195] “Illuminati Family Member Speaks out about Ritual Child Abuse and Deprogramming Techniques that Work,” Jay Parker interviewed by Vinny Eastwood, *Vinny Eastwood Show*, video, 2:00, March 27, 2015, http://www.thevinnyeastwoodshow.com/2015-archives/illuminati-family-member-speaks-out-about-ritual-child-abuse-deprogramming-techniques-that-work-jay-parker.

[196] Jay Parker interviewed by Alfred Webre, “Jay Parker: How 34 Million Satanic/Illuminati Americans Keep Earth in Turmoil,” YouTube video, 1:19, posted on May 4, 2013, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=euOKBjMkk6I.

[197] Gary Craig, “How to do the EFT Tapping Basics - The Basic Recipe,” *emofree.com*, https://www.emofree.com/eft-tutorial/tapping-basics/how-to-do-eft.html.

[198] Jay Parker interview, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=euOKBjMkk6I.

[199] Arizona Wilder speech, “Arizona Wilder on Reptilian Rulers,” YouTube video, 0:10, posted on January 11, 2009, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=7yc51WGKTfg&feature=youtu.be.

[200] “Hunter Thompson, Bush and Jeff Gannon and Much More…,” *Los Angeles Indy Media*, March 3, 2005, http://la.indymedia.org/news/2005/03/123303.php.

[201] “Conspiracy of Silence,” 1994, YouTube video, 1:00, posted on February 1, 2013, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ttT6FrMosBk.

[202] Charlene Fassa, “Noreen Gosch Speaks about – Jeff Gannon, Johnny Gosch and the Attempted Theft of her Book ‘Why Johnny Can’t Come Home,” *rense.com*, August 18, 2005, http://rense.com/general67/gannn.htm.

[203] “Paul Bonacci, Bohemian Grove, Elitist Pigs and Pedophile Murdering Lust,” YouTube video, 14:52, posted on April 30, 2013, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=1KgkiruMB4g.

[204] “Hunter S. Thompson Murder so called Suicide,” *thompsonmurder.com*, http://www.thompsonmurder.com/.

[205] Ted L. Gunderson, “The Gunderson Report: Child Sexual Abuse,” *educateyourself.org*, April 2001, http://educate-yourself.org/cn/gundersonreportchildsexualabuse.shtml.

[206] Cathy O’Brien, excerpts from *Trance Formation of America: The True Life Story of a CIA Mind control Slave*, 1995, *bibliotecapleyades.net*,

http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/bb/obrien.htm.

[207] Kathleen Sullivan, “Some Notes on George Bush,” *web.archive.org*, June 12, 1997, http://web.archive.org/web/19980424210601/www.brotherblue.org/libers/obrien2.htm.

[208] Uri Dowbenko, “Mind Control: The Ultimate Terror,” book review of Brice Taylor’s *Thanks for the Memories: The Memoirs of Bob Hope and Henry Kissinger’s Mind Controlled Sex Slave*, 1999, http://educate-yourself.org/mc/nwomcbturireview.shtml.

[209] Arizona Wilder, “The Illuminati Millennium Rituals,” *whale.to*, http://www.whale.to/b/wilder1.html.

[210] Carol Rutz, “A Nation Betrayed: A 10-Page Summary,” *wanttoknow.info*, https://www.wanttoknow.info/nationbetrayed10pg.

[211] Cisco Wheeler transcript interview, http://educate-yourself.org/mc/ciscowheelerinterview11jan98.shtml.

[212] Christine DeNicola, written testimony before Congress, 1995, extract from Marshall Thomas’ *Monarch the New Phoenix Program*, *archive.org*, https://archive.org/stream/MonarchTheNewPhoenixProgram_441/Monarch_djvu.txt.

[213] Carol Rutz, https://www.wanttoknow.info/nationbetrayed10pg.

[214] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, *Deeper Insights into the Illuminati Formula*, (ebook, 1996), p. 64, http://loveforlife.com.au/content/09/01/20/deeper-insights-illuminati-formula-fritz-springmeier-and-cisco-wheeler.

[215] Cathy O’Brien, “Trance Formation of America,” *trance-formation.com*, http://trance-formation.com/.

[216] Cathy O’Brien, http://trance-formation.com/in-loving-memory-of-mark-phillips/.

[217] Henry Makow, “Illuminati Sex Slaves Paint Horrifying Picture,” *henrymakow.com*, August 16, 2015, https://www.henrymakow.com/000683.html.

[218] Cathy O’Brien and Mark Phillips, *Trance Formation of America* (Reality Marketing, Incorporated, 1995), https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/transforusa/transformation.htm.

[219] Cathy O’Brien and Mark Phillips, “Chapter 1 My Introduction to Humanity,” https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/transforusa/transformation05.h

tm#CHAPTER 1 - MY INTRODUCTION TO HUMANITY.

[220] Transcript of Representative Cynthia McKinney's Exchange with Defense Secretary Donald Rumsfeld, Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff Richard Myers, and Under Secretary of Defense (Comptroller) Tina Jonas, March 11th, 2005, *newsofinterest.tv*, http://www.newsofinterest.tv/video_pages_flash/politics/people/cynthia_mckinney/mckinney_rumsfeld.php.

[221] Allen L. Roland, "Face of the Monstrous Lie of 9/11 is Dick Cheney," *Veterans Today*, September 10, 2011, https://www.veteranstodayarchives.com/2011/09/10/face-of-the-monstrous-lie-of-911-is-dick-cheney/.

[222] Paul W. Rea, "The Zealots of Dominance: The Neocon Factor in 9/11," *911truth.org*, http://www.sf911truth.org/neocons.pdf.

[223] Michel Chossudovsky, "9/11 and the 'War on Terror,'" *Global Research*, September 13, 2017, https://www.globalresearch.ca/9-11-and-america-s-war-on-terrorism/24975.

[224] Henry Makow, https://www.henrymakow.com/000683.html.

[225] Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/transforusa/transformation05.htm#CHAPTER 1 - MY INTRODUCTION TO HUMANITY.

[226] Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips, Chapter 14 "Clinton Coke Lines," https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/transforusa/transformation08.htm#CHAPTER 14 - CLINTON COKE LINES.

[227] Uri Dowbenko, http://educate-yourself.org/mc/nwomcbturireview.shtml.

[228] Brice Taylor, *Thanks for the Memories: The Memoirs of Bob Hope and Henry Kissinger's Mind Controlled Sex Slave* (Brice Taylor Trust, 1999), https://www.amazon.com/Thanks-Memories-Memoirs-Kissingers-Mind-Controlled/dp/0966891627.

[229] Uri Dowbenko, http://educate-yourself.org/mc/nwomcbturireview.shtml.

[230] Uri Dowbenko, http://educate-yourself.org/mc/nwomcbturireview.shtml.

[231] "The Bush Family," *aangirfan.blogspot*, (online blog site), June 21, 2013, http://aangirfan.blogspot.co.id/2013/06/the-bush-family.html.

[232] Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips, Chpater 4 "The Most Dangerous Game," https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/transforusa/transformation06.htm#CHAPTER 4 - THE MOST DANGEROUS GAME.

[233] Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips, Chapter 6 "US Military and NASA Mind Control Training,"

https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/transforusa/transformation06.htm#CHAPTER%206%20-%20UNITED%20STATES%20MILITARY%20&NASA%20MIND-CONTROL%20TRAINING.

[234] "Mae Brussell's Research about Child Abuse – Sanctioned, Tolerated and Buried by the USA," http://www.whale.to/b/brussell4.html.

[235] Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/transforusa/transformation06.htm#CHAPTER%206%20-%20UNITED%20STATES%20MILITARY%20&NASA%20MIND-CONTROL%20TRAINING.

[236] Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/transforusa/transformation06.htm#CHAPTER%206%20-%20UNITED%20STATES%20MILITARY%20&NASA%20MIND-CONTROL%20TRAINING.

[237] Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/transforusa/transformation06.htm#CHAPTER%206%20-%20UNITED%20STATES%20MILITARY%20&NASA%20MIND-CONTROL%20TRAINING.

[238] Ron Patton, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mindcon02.htm#16._.

[239] Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/transforusa/transformation06.htm#CHAPTER%206%20-%20UNITED%20STATES%20MILITARY%20&NASA%20MIND-CONTROL%20TRAINING.

[240] Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips, Chapter 25 "Bush Baby," https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/transforusa/transformation11.htm#CHAPTER%2025%20-%20BUSH%20BABY.

[241] David Malmo-Levine, "George H.W. Bush: Biggest Drug Lord Ever," *Cannabis Culture*, May 16, 2017, http://www.cannabisculture.com/content/2017/05/16/george-h-w-bush-biggest-drug-lord-ever.

[242] "Newly-Declassified Documents Show that a Senior CIA Agent and Deputy Director of the Directorate of Intelligence Worked Closely with Owners and Journalists with Many of the Largest Media Outlets," *Washington's Blog*, February 27, 2017, http://www.washingtonsblog.com/2017/02/cia-one-main-peddlers-fake-news.html.

[243] Arjun Walia, “MK ULTRA: CIA Admits Behavioral Engineering on Humans,” *Collective Evolution*, January 19, 2013, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2013/01/19/cia-admits-behavioral-engineering-on-humans-mk-ultra/.

[244] Richard Stratton, “Government Mind control Agent Talks: MK-ULTRA, the CIA, and LSD,” *whowhatwhy.org*, April 29, 2016, https://whowhatwhy.org/2016/04/29/government-mind-control-agent-talks/.

[245] Tyler Durden, “Top German Journalist Admits Mainstream Media is Fake: ‘We all Lie for the CIA,” *Zero Hedge*, March 28, 2016, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2016-03-28/.

[246] Uri Dowbenko, “Mind Control Slavery and the New World Order,” *Nexus Magazine*, Vol. 6, No. 2, February-March 1999, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mindcon22.htm.

[247] Rebecca Gordon, “US Torture didn’t End when Bush left Office,” *The Nation*, December 15, 2014, https://www.thenation.com/article/us-torture-didnt-end-when-bush-left-office/.

[248] “Roseanne Barr: MK ULTRA Mind Control Rules in Hollywood,” Vigilant Citizen, April 1, 2013, https://vigilantcitizen.com/latestnews/roseanne-barr-mk-ultra-mind-control-rules-in-hollywood/.

[249] Ann Diamond, “MK-Ultra: Is Government still Torturing Innocent People?” *henrymakow.com*, February 11, 2015, https://www.henrymakow.com/2015/02/Toronto-man-claims-MK-Ultra.html.

[250] Freeman, “Celebrities under Mind Control,” *Freemantv.com*, July 1, 2013, https://www.henrymakow.com/2015/02/Toronto-man-claims-MK-Ultra.html.

[251] Ron Patton, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mindcon02.htm.

[252] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/chapter01.htm.

[253] Ron Patton, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mindcon02.htm.

[254] Tom A. Hidell, “What is Monarch Mind Control?” *illuminatirex.com* (online blog site), https://www.illuminatirex.com/monarch-mind-control/.

[255] Ron Patton, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mindcon02.htm.

[256] “Origins and Techniques of Monarch Mind Control,” Vigilant Citizen, December 12, 2012, https://vigilantcitizen.com/hidden-knowledge/origins-and-techniques-of-monarch-mind-control/.

[257] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, Chapter 8 “The Science of Body Manipulation and Programming,” https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol/chapter08.htm.

[258] Uri Dowbenko, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mindcon22.htm.

[259] Ron Patton, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mindcon02.htm.

[260] H.P. Albarelli, “CIA Mind Control Experiments and Lee Harvey Oswald,” *sott.net*, January 25, 2010, https://www.sott.net/article/272072-CIA-mind-control-experiments-and-Lee-Harvey-Oswald.

[261] Ross Baker, “RFK Assassination Legal Case Update,” *whowhatwhy.org*, April 5, 2013, https://whowhatwhy.org/2013/04/05/rfk-assassination-legal-case-update/.

[262] Michelle George, “How the CIA Used Manson to Debunk Entire 60’s Hippie Movement,” *Neon Nettle*, October 26, 2016, http://www.nnettle.com/features/450-how-the-cia-used-charles-manson-to-debunk-entire-60-s-hippie-movement-.

[263] J. Francis Wolfe, “10 Real Victims of the CIA’s MKULTRA Program,” *Listverse*, May 28, 2015, http://listverse.com/2015/05/28/10-real-victims-of-the-cias-mkultra-program/.

[264] Eric Jewell, “History of MK Ultra,” *Red Ice Creations*, February 28, 2003, http://www.redicecreations.com/specialreports/mk-ultra.html.

[265] Tony Rennell, “Was John Lennon’s Murderer Mark Chapman a CIA Hitman? Thirty Years on, there’s an Extraordinary New Theory,” *Daily Mail*, December 4, 2010, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1335479/Was-John-Lennons-murderer-Mark-Chapman-CIA-hitman-Thirty-years-theres-extraordinary-new-theory.html.

[266] Ron Patton, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mindcon02.htm.

[267] David Hoffman, “McVeigh: The Manchurian Candidate,” *ParaScope*, January 1997, http://www.whale.to/b/hoffman.html.

[268] “John C. Salvi III,” *Muderpedia*, http://murderpedia.org/male.S/s/salvi-john.htm.

[269] Clyde Lewis, “The Lone Wolf Club,” *Ground Zero* (online blog site), October 2, 2017, http://www.groundzeromedia.org/102-lone-wolf-club/.

[270] “The Hidden Life of Marilyn Monroe the Original Hollywood Mind Control Slave,” *Vigilant Citizen*, https://hollywoodsubliminals.wordpress.com/project-

monarch/sex-kitten/.

[271] J. Francis Wolfe, http://listverse.com/2015/05/28/10-real-victims-of-the-cias-mkultra-program/.

[272] Prince Ray, “Bill Cosby, Part III,” *In Search of Black Assassins* (online blog site), December 1, 2015, https://mindcontrolblackassassins.com/2015/01/12/bill-cosby-part-iii-sammy-davis-jr-sharon-tate-satanism-black-satanic-cabal/.

[273] “Roseanne Barr: MK ULTRA Mind Control Rules in Hollywood,” https://vigilantcitizen.com/latestnews/roseanne-barr-mk-ultra-mind-control-rules-in-hollywood/.

[274] Bernie Suarez, “Operation Chaos? Courtney Love Reveals Kurt Cobain Murdered by CIA,” *The Sleuth Journal*, October 29, 2015, http://www.thesleuthjournal.com/operation-chaos-courtney-love-reveals-kurt-cobain-murdered-by-cia/.

[275] Charles, “Was Michael Jackson another Illuminati Slave?” *henrymakow.com*, March 12, 2016, https://www.henrymakow.com/was_michael_jackson_another_il.html.

[276] Prince Ray, “LaToya Jackson, Trance Formation and MK Ultra,” *In Search of Black Assassins* (online blog site), October 21, 2011, https://mindcontrolblackassassins.com/?s=LaToya+Jackson+MK+Ultra.

[277] Freeman, http://freemantv.com/celebrities-under-mind-control-release-the-stars-weird-stuff/.

[278] Prince Ray, “Whitney Houston, Trayvon Martin, the Mossad and the Proof of the Crime is the Cover-Up,” *In Search of Black Assassins* (online blog site), April 1, 2012, https://mindcontrolblackassassins.com/2012/04/01/whitney-houston-trayvon-martin-the-mossad-the-proof-of-the-crime-is-the-cover-up/.

[279] Henry Makow, “Miley Cyrus and the Abduction of Western Schoolgirls,” *henrymakow.com*, May 7, 2014, https://www.henrymakow.com/2014/05/miley-cyrus-and-the-abduction-of.html.

[280] “Mariah Carey on TRL,” video, July 19, 2001, 4:24, *mediaexposed.tumbler.com* (online blog site), http://mediaexposed.tu.mblr.com/post/8152626302/mariah-carey-in-a-complete-programmed-state-of.

[281] Freeman, “Top 10 Signs of Monarch Mind Control Featuring Beyonce,” *Freemantv.com*, November 6, 2014, http://freemantv.com/top-10-signs-monarch-mind-control-featuring-beyonce/.

[282] “Rihanna’s Mind Control Perfume Ad,” *Vigilant Citizen*, February 11, 2011, https://vigilantcitizen.com/latestnews/rihannas-mind-control-perfume-ad/.

[283] “Decoding Taylor Swift’s ‘22’ and the BMA Ritual Exposing the Theater of Witchcraft,” The Open Scroll Blog (online blog site), May 25, 2013, http://theopenscroll.blogspot.co.id/2013/05/decoding-taylor-swifts-22-and-bma.html.

[284] Anders, “Satan at Large in NWO I. Mind Controlled Monarch-Sex Kittens: ‘I Sold my Soul to the Devil’ – and Won Hundreds of Millions of Youths Won for Him,” *new.euro-med.dk*, February 3, 2014, http://new.euro-med.dk/20140203-satan-at-large-in-nwo-i-mind-controlled-monarch-sex-kittens-i-sold-my-soul-to-the-devil-and-won-hundreds-of-millions-of-youths-won-for-him.php.

[285] Jay Dyer, “Lady Gaga ‘Raped’ – Victim of Mind Control?” *JaysAnalysis.com*, December 3, 2014, https://jaysanalysis.com/2014/12/03/lady-gaga-raped-victim-of-mind-control/.

[286] Isaac Weishaupt, “Justin Bieber: The next Illuminati MK ULTRA Mind Control Victim,” *IlluminatiWatcher.com* (online blog site), February 22, 2015, http://illuminatiwatcher.com/justin-bieber-the-next-illuminati-mk-ultra-mind-control-victim/.

[287] “Amanda Bynes - Serious Mental Issues like Britney Spears (Mind Controlled),” *mediaexposed.tumbler.com*, http://mediaexposed.tumblr.com/post/31647660030/amanda-bynes-serious-mental-issues-like-britney.

[288] “What is Happening to Shia LaBeouf?” *Vigilant Citizen*, July 5, 2014, https://vigilantcitizen.com/latestnews/happening-shia-labeouf/.

[289] “Wake Up Part 23,” YouTube video featuring Corey Feldman and Corey Haim, 12:32, posted September 30, 2013, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=A59dUV1k9wY.

[290] Prince Ray, “Somewhere over the Rainbow, Katt Williams, Kurt Cobain and the CIA MK-ULTRA – Finders,” *In Search of Black Assassins* (online blog site), January 2, 2013, https://mindcontrolblackassassins.com/2013/01/02/somewhere-over-the-rainbow-katt-williams-kurt-cobain-the-cia-mk-ultra-finders/.

[291] “Tiger Woods, Professional Athletes and MK Ultra,” *fourwinds10.com*, http://www.fourwinds10.com/siterun_data/health/mind_control/news.php?q=1260894466.

[292] “Project Monarch” ‘Sex Kitten’ (Beta Programming)” *hollywoodsubliminals.wordpress.com* (online blog site), https://hollywoodsubliminals.wordpress.com/project-monarch/sex-kitten/.

[293] Joachim Hagopian, “The Elite’s Social Engineering Endgame: A Battle between the Sexes where Humanity Loses,” *sott.net*, May 30, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/319288-The-elites-social-engineering-endgame-A-battle-between-the-sexes-where-humanity-loses.

[294] Rex Murphy, “And the Oscar for Moral Hypocrisy goes to… Hollywood,” *National Post*, October 13, 2017, http://nationalpost.com/opinion/rex-murphy-and-the-oscar-for-moral-hypocrisy-goes-to-hollywood.

[295] Matt Agorist, “Hollywood Insider Speaks out, Claims a Global Pedophile Ring Controls Hollywood,” *The Free Thought Project*, May 19, 2017, http://thefreethoughtproject.com/hollywood-insider-speaks-out-claims-global-pedophile-ring-controls-hollywood/.

[296] Jay Dyer, “Hollywood and the CIA: A Dark Marriage Revealed,” *21st Century Wire*, January 29, 2015, http://21stcenturywire.com/2015/01/28/hollywood-and-the-cia-a-dark-marriage-revealed/.

[297] Henry Makow, https://www.henrymakow.com/000683.html.

[298] Corey Hammond, transcript of “Greenbaum Speech,” “Hypnosis in MPD: Ritual Abuse,” June 25, 1992, *whale.to*, http://whale.to/b/greenbaum.html.

[299] “Another Side of the Music Industry: Monarch Mind Control,” *Collective Evolution*, October 8, 2013, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2013/10/08/monarch-mind-control-popular-music/.

[300] “The Historic and Powerful Greenbaum Lecture,” *wanttoknow.info*, https://www.wanttoknow.info/mind_control/mind_control_hypnosis_ritual_abuse.

[301] “Transhumanism: How the Elite Plan to Live Forever,” *Technocracy News & Trends*, October 27, 2015, https://www.technocracy.news/index.php/2015/10/27/transhumanism-how-the-elite-plan-to-live-forever/.

[302] Adam Leith Gollner, “The Immortality Financiers: The Billionaires who want to Live Forever,” *The Daily Beast*, August 20, 2013, https://www.thedailybeast.com/the-immortality-financiers-the-billionaires-who-want-to-live-forever.

[303] Uri Dowbenko, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mindcon22.htm.

[304] David Livingstone, “The Age of Aquarius,” *Conspiracy School*, http://www.conspiracyschool.com/age-aquarius.

[305] Helmut Lammer, “Preliminary Findings of Project MILAB,” *ufoevidence.org*, http://www.ufoevidence.org/documents/doc1776.htm.

[306] Eve Lorgen, “The Milab Experience – Our Origins and Keys to Recovering our True Memory,” *evelorgen.com* (online blog site), July 15, 2015, http://evelorgen.com/wp/category/articles/military-abduction-milabs-and-reptilians/.

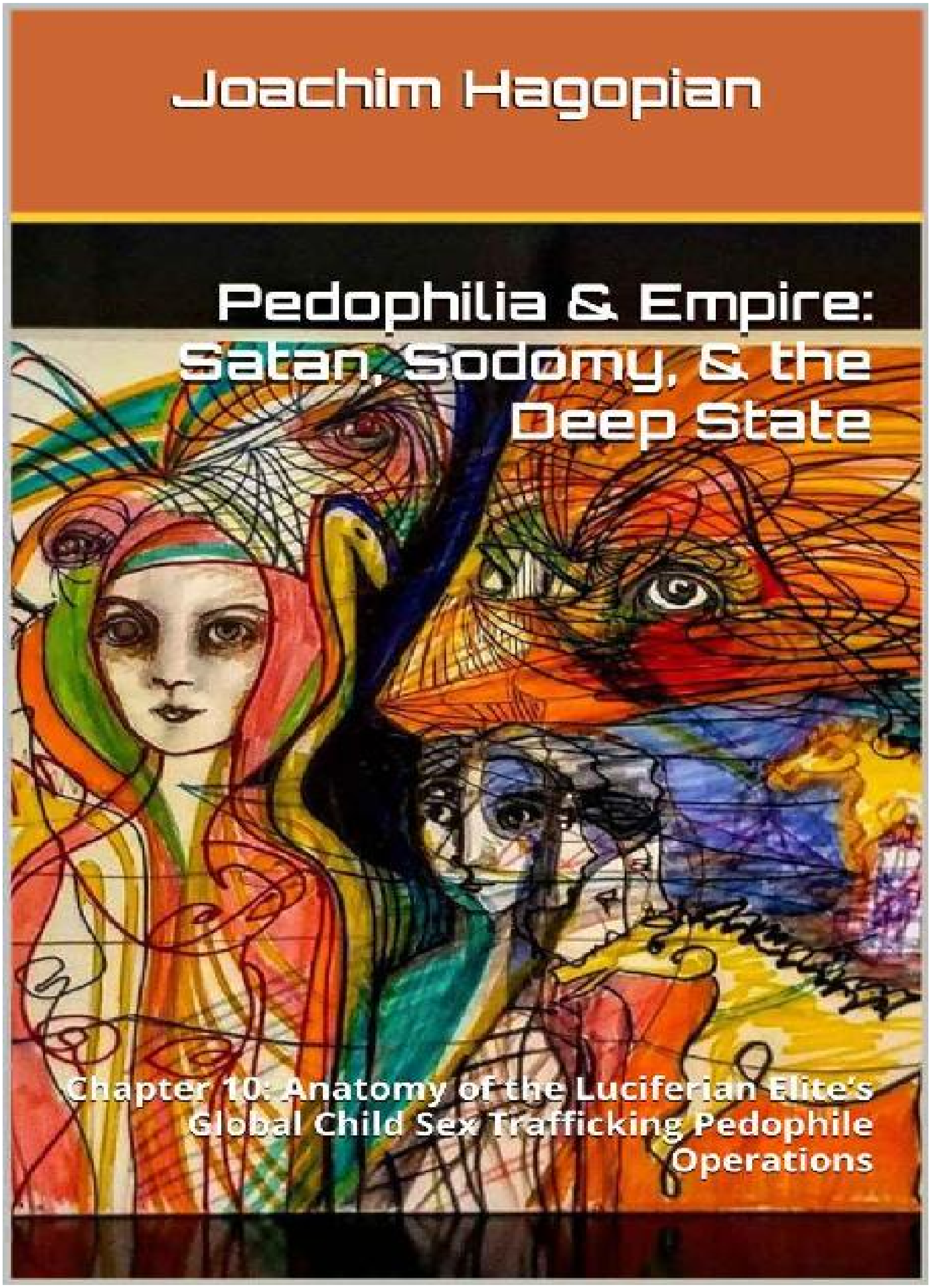

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & the Deep State

Chapter 10: Anatomy of the Luciferian Elite's Global Child Sex Trafficking Pedophile Operations

Chapter 10: Anatomy of the Luciferian Elite’s Global Child Sex Trafficking Pedophile Operations by Joachim Hagopian

Forty-year Monarch mind control sex and spy slave-survivor, longtime CIA insider whose job title was “Special Operations Advisor to the Director of Central Intelligence,” and also a medical doctor, the remarkable Sue Arrigo provides a compelling firsthand account of her tortuous life inside the CIA.[1] Her exposé uncovering the infamous agency’s central role in global child sex trafficking, as incredible as it may sound, is feasibly corroborated by tons of supplemental verifiable evidence. And though her own sister, a psychologist in Taiwan, claims Sue is a paranoid schizophrenic whose stories are not to be believed, coming from a military family and father whose career was in military intelligence, discrediting Sue as mentally ill falls clearly in the self-serving interest of both the sister protecting her own professional reputation as well as the US government. In the same open forum, Dr. Sue refutes her sister’s allegations making the cogent point that they separated in youth when the sister moved with her father to Taiwan and has had next to no contact ever since and that Sue’s long involvement in the CIA by requirement forced her to keep that confidentially hidden even from her own mother.[2] So with that caveat out of the way, here are some of Dr. Arrigo’s extraordinary, yet highly disturbing revelations.

As a gifted young child of three she became a trauma induced multiple and by age 12, Sue Arrigo was sent to have sex with General Westmoreland as a means of learning why he wasn’t winning the Vietnam War. Arrigo was a child sex slave servicing presidents starting from LBJ, then Nixon, Ford, VP Rockefeller (as well as his brother David), Reagan, Bush senior, Clinton to Bush junior as well as every Director of Central Intelligence from Richard Helms to George Tenant.[3] The only president that she was not forcibly intimate with was Jimmy Carter during her forty years as a government slave. Her psychic abilities made her a highly skilled asset as a remote viewer. Thus her unique talent and expertise placed her in constant demand for four decades. From 1993 to 2004 Sue worked in the Office of Naval Intelligence training naval officers in remote viewing. She states that she was able to work with the US Navy brass to keep our naval fleets from participating in the booming global sex slave trade.

Children in war zones susceptibly fall prey to abduction and trafficking every single day. Women are customarily raped in combat zones all the time, often abandoning their babies at birth. Never missing an opportunity, the predatory CIA quickly moves in helping to finance children's orphanages in US Empire war ravaged nations, tapping the fresh supply of "cute" parentless kids for the pedo-pipeline.[4] Dr. Sue Arrigo maintains that masquerading as "humanitarian relief," the CIA funds major orphanages, often working jointly with UNESCO, along with the Rockefeller Foundation and other front organizations to set up in effect concentration camps for homeless kids in nations where the US and CIA provoke wars. In the early 1990's as a CIA operative, Sue witnessed in the former Yugoslavian Republic the CIA construction of three orphanages and Rockefeller money pouring in for four more.[5] A week after the Rockefeller reps left, in came the wave of CIA "talent scouts," explaining to the nuns that they were setting up a comprehensive program with large adoption agencies in the United States to find good homes for children at orphanages bursting at the seams from so many rape babies and dead parents caused by US-NATO bombing raids. Pulled from the rubble, many kids were still suffering from trauma shock, making the job of CIA mind control torturers that much easier and quicker for developing multiple personalities.

CIA scouts would bring along a psychologist to test the orphaned children using the excuse that they were testing for postwar adaptability when they were tapping for special trauma based skills like their capacity to dissociate, their intelligence, photographic memory, psychic abilities, and sex kitten charm. The CIA would take kids out on “special outings” so they could assess how much charm children displayed while forced to give blow jobs to local officials on the pretext that they might “win” a trip to America - as a sex slave of course.[6] They’d grab dozens and even scores at a time, another tipoff they were up to no good. Under the guise of charity foundations posing as CIA trafficking fronts, in cahoots with corrupt officials at the UN, Girl Scouts of America and the Catholic Church, the predatory CIA aggressively recruit victims for their child trafficking rings in the US.

Those that shined in this system are/were groomed to later return to their native lands and take over as readymade puppet leaders of foreign governments.[7] This long term investment has been going on for some time. The OSS and CIA toward the end of World War II and afterwards were pulling Jewish and Slavic kids out of war zone camps even when they had parents just to be mind control guinea pigs in America. The self-replicating, Luciferian system has been built to last for centuries.

Having personal access to CIA archive records, Dr. Arrigo learned of the CIA’s long history starting right after WWII training foreign children to be spies. First as dissociative mind controlled child musical prodigies sent back to Eastern Bloc nations to spy on cold war embassies, then pushed out of airplanes over North Korea and onto infiltrating North Vietnam and back to full circle in the Balkans.[8] Once sent behind enemy lines, these poor kids were never heard from again and because in every instance the CIA cover had already been blown, the enemy quickly scooped them up and killed them. Yet in each case even after the CIA knew their covert operation had been detected, the agency continued sending wave after wave of these expendable children to their sure deaths. The Luciferian controllers wouldn't want their coldblooded private army any other way. And for all their blood soaked failures, these worthless espionage programs produced zero information, just like CIA's ineffective worldwide black site torture operations still going on.[9]

As a CIA operative Sue Arrigo was initially dispatched to Yugoslavia before the war to purchase a plot of land near railroad tracks that would become the Balkan War's Auschwitz for children. She knew it would merely be a holding tank for thousands of kids to be shipped off around the globe as CIA sex slaves, so she purposely returned to the States emptyhanded.[10] A month later her replacement was sent and of course he purchased a 14-acre tract of land where dorm after dorm was built to house 5,000 kids. The brand new facility just sat empty for six months waiting for the CIA to light the match that would ignite the bloody conflict pitting mostly Muslim against Muslim. During the ensuing war, Sue learned that it swelled to holding 12,000 young children. It really was a concentration camp, complete with barbed wire fences and control towers armed with machine gun toting guards. So the big CIA moneymaker for pedophile kingpins like the Bushes and the Clintons became a smashing success. From 1992 to 1999 over a million kids were processed into an international sex ring and sent by rail to the sea where they were packed in inhumane conditions on slave ships sailing to America to their child raping slave-owners. Because they were so abused and neglected, some children would succumb en route across the ocean, reminiscent of the horrific tragedy of the African slaves, except these are thousands of traumatized kids suffering and dying in modern times right up to today. Right now this despicable shit’s still going on! It’s imperative we must come together and stop this brutal human affliction.

Sue Arrigo explains how upon reaching harbor ports, ships carrying human cargo use the code-word phrase “by the way” to signal to dockworkers which ships to inspect and which not. Ships illicitly transporting human slaves are customarily unloaded first. US port authorities across the nation of course have all been bought off to play their accommodating, look the other way role to ensure that child slaves discreetly get unloaded as quickly as possible from cargo containers into dock warehouses, a distance away from the regular cargo traffic loading and unloading areas mainly due to the intense foul stench of urine and feces that are the giveaway to this heinous criminal operation.[11] “Spoiled goods” is code word for dead bodies on board. An expected percentage of child slave deaths is routinely calculated and accounted for, intended to further traumatize surviving children. Most often a few miles out from port child corpses are dumped overboard, often weighed to sink to the bottom of the sea, out of sight, out of mind.

Powerful pedo slave owners have specially built vans waiting at the ports, all Chevrolet manufactured with special specifications in Atlanta to include easy drainage capacity and soundproof insulation. Each vehicle transports anywhere from 20 to 100 children.[12] Kids are routinely drugged before disembarking ships so they can be quietly herded like cattle, transferred and contained from one from one closed off prison to the next, except once on dry land, in transit cattle have the luxury of vents, windows and breathing space on the way to their slaughterhouse.

Arrigo states that the CIA and UN regularly work together in war zones like Bosnia all over the world to “enslave the children and not rescue them.” Because the first assigned UN Peacekeeping Force Commander in Bosnia, Canadian General Lewis MacKenzie, actually was there to try and keep peace, the CIA trained about 30 child soldiers to attack his headquarters.[13] But Sue Arrigo called the general and forewarned him, and because the CIA recorded their conversation, it was called off. Sue was then sent to the CIA basement for a severe beating as her punishment. MacKenzie was complicit in his failure to report the CIA’s criminal operation, cowardly taking the easy way out. When Sue attempted to report what the CIA was doing to kids to the UN herself, they wouldn’t listen, claiming that the protocol required the general to report such illicit activity. Just like the kids she tried to save, Sue was hopelessly trapped and surrounded by evildoers.

Under the fake, overused pretense of “humanitarian intervention,” the CIA-MI-NATO led breakup of the Balkan nation bloodily erupted as the Bosnian (1992-95) and Kosovo (1997-98) Wars with deployment of CIA-Saudi jointly financed US proxy war ally Osama bin Laden’s Mujahedeen terrorists (soon to be relabeled al Qaeda).[14] Fresh off the victorious battlefields against the Soviet army in opium-rich Afghanistan, the CIA created Islamic jihadists were then teamed up with CIA-backed Kosovo Liberation Army to help move drugs through war-torn Eastern Europe to Western Europe and onto America.[15] Together with the drug trafficking, the fellow criminal enterprises of child sex trafficking and organ harvested trafficking[16] was soon flourishing throughout the Balkan region as coveted moneymaking spoils of war. As another partner-in-crime in this Clinton-NATO Balkan operation was the private military contractor, the notorious DynCorp Corporation. Joined by key corrupt State Department personnel, the United Nations peacekeeping forces and organized crime, this unholiest alliance trafficked in young women and as underage girls and boys from Eastern Europe, Russia and Eurasia. The DynCorp-UN collaboration and cover-up in the 1990’s CIA sex trade is covered in thorough detail in the next chapter.

To corroborate what Dr. Sue Arrigo maintains the CIA was doing in the 1990’s - supplying the elite with child sex slaves, CIA whistleblower John Kiriakou who served two years in prison for spilling the beans on the illegal Bush-Cheney-CIA enhanced torture methods, just publicly disclosed how as a CIA agent it was his duty to deliver child sex slaves to pedophile VIPs.[17] So multiple sources are all saying the same thing. Just as with drugs, arms and body parts, the CIA is the main dealer in selling children as well.

Once the new millennium White House shift took over, the Bush 2-Cheney neocons proved “same as the old boss” Bush 1 and Clinton. Right after their preplanned 9/11, US Empire was at it again, exploiting their “new Pearl Harbor”[18] to full advantage using their war machine-on-steroids to simultaneously invade Afghanistan and Iraq while (per General Wesley Clark) “taking down 7 countries in 5 years.”[19] As those costly quagmire wars dragged right into the seamless Obama regime, the CIA and Soros’ color revolutions (otherwise known as Arab Spring) began popping up to spark yet more regime change proxy wars,[20] murdering and displacing millions of mostly Muslims from ravaged homelands in Syria, Libya, Ukraine, Yemen, Somalia, Sudan and beyond.[21]

In Libya in 2011 the same pattern that “balkanized” Yugoslavia was brutally replicated by the same prime suspects with virtually the same results.[22] An aggressive NATO-US bombing intervention, again unleashing al Qaeda terrorists to wreak further havoc[23] to destroy Gaddafi’s plan to unite Africa under his gold backed dinar instead of the US petrodollar, plunging once prosperous, oil-rich, emerging independent regional leader of a nation overnight into violently plundered failed state status…[24] as Luciferian Hillary's mission accomplished.[25] Evidence of collusion involving al Qaeda/ISIS,[26] the Vatican, various "humanitarian" NGOs like USAID and CIA again resurfaced, forcing exploited Libyan migrants into human trafficking rings.[27] George Soros, the global kingpin of US hedge fund speculators, uses his massive billions to fund NGOs that are now directly involved in human sex trafficking as well as financing terrorism.[28]

And the latest bombshell is Soros' top hedge fund manager in the US finance capital New York City has been running a sex slave operation from his own Manhattan penthouse sex dungeon. According to a $27 million lawsuit filed by three Florida models, two of whom were former Playboy bunnies, 62-year old Howard "Howie" Rubin lured the women to New York through two female employees also named in the lawsuit who'd make initial contact on Instagram and Whatsapp.[29] Rubin purchased his $8 million penthouse apartment for the special purpose of raping and beating beautiful women as his very own sex slaves and then go back home to his wife and kids on the Upper East Side. The sexual predator had his two model-type employees do his bidding, both similarly roughed up before being hired to act as his slave procurers. The same brutal tactics are deployed as in any large scale sex trafficking operation, using procurers, money and a high rolling good time as bait and switch to entice and trap the preyed upon, drugged and powerless victims.

Once the slaves were flown to the Big Apple, they'd taxi to the penthouse where one of his accomplices would suddenly confront the women needing to sign non-disclosure agreements.[30] Next Rubin would wine and dine them with polite, respectful conversation at a posh Manhattan restaurant. But once they returned to Rubin's apartment, he'd slip a drug into their drink, gag and bound them and then violently assault them in his secret sex dungeon. Similar to the audio recording making the internet rounds several months ago of a voice identical to alleged pedophile John Podesta screaming at the top of his lungs at a poor traumatized little kid to call him "daddy,"[31] one of the Rubin plaintiffs was so severely beaten by Howie demanding that she call him "daddy" that she passed out.[32] Another sick quote while continuing to punch the woman was, "Howie is the daddy. The daddy has to beat his baby." Just before attacking them, two of the three victims state that Rubin yelled, "I'm going to rape you like I rape my daughter." One of the woman maintains she was raped with a cattle prod. Again, many of the same methods Rubin used to torture his victims come straight out of the CIA Monarch mind control playbook, strongly suggesting the possibility that the billionaire's secret dark side may be rooted in Illuminati upbringing or MK Ultra brainwash programming.

Rubin managed to cover up his reprehensible crimes by paying them $5,000 each time in hush money along with whatever medical expenses were accrued.[33] Though thus far only three women have filed suit, Rubin likely victimized others as well. This alleged sex slave violence that began in 2016 must have occurred just months after Rubin left Soros' Mortgage-Back Securities Fund that he'd been managing during the seven years prior to 2015. Following a few short weeks on the heels of a fellow rapist's colossal downfall in Hollywood, Harvey Weinstein's years of sadistically misusing his raw, brutish power to also humiliate, terrorize, degrade and control his female victims brought about his own self-undoing.[34] And then just days ago perennial A-list actor Kevin Spacey suddenly got brave enough to cowardly hide behind the normative status of homosexuality to come out in his feeble attempt to escape judgment as yet another predatory pedophile.[35] And just like Harvey before him, Spacey's "House of Cards" has fallen as a parade of more victims are emerging from the shadows.[36] Turns out his Spacey Foundation mentoring young children hungry for acting careers may be a cover for his boy toy trafficking gig.[37] Recall that Kevin was also a Lolita Express frequent flyer down to Epstein's sex slave island. The rapists' days of ruling Hollywood are over as the parade of sexual predators become "flavor of the week" karmic payback.

The days when these kind of crimes and atrocities historically perpetrated by violently aggressive oppressors regularly hurting and violating others with lesser power are finally being exposed. This heinous behavior will no longer be tolerated or accepted like it has for so long. Unlike before, those who willfully harm others because they've always gotten away with it will now begin paying a far more serious consequence. And as the wake-up call of truth descends upon the barbarians, the new day that's dawning is empowering the meek and less powerful to come forth and speak up, seeking long overdue justice and accountability, regardless of life position, station or power differential. And this dynamic is no more embodied than in the systematic rape, torture and murder of kids.

But we still have a long ways to go. Victims of US wars fleeing for their lives often wind up as refugees in nearby surrounding nations - especially Turkey (with 2.8 homeless Syrians), Lebanon (over 1 million Syrians) and Jordan (two thirds of a million),[38] but also Egypt, Italy, Greece and the Balkans as massive migratory transit zones. These countries in recent years have absorbed millions of Middle Eastern and African refugees, the largest human migration since history's deadliest war - WWII, and at 65.6 million, currently more people on earth are displaced than any prior time in human history.[39] These desperate, extreme conditions manufactured by the elite are ideal for their hired vultures to have “easy pickings” separating children from their parents.[40] The CIA, US Military Intelligence, Mossad and MI6 typically coordinate these large scale child procurement black ops worldwide. From off the street, the seediest, low life abductors from various NGOs and CIA front company operatives parasitically converge on hundreds of overcrowded, inhumane refugee camps and, for the right price, the predators pluck children from the chaotic crowds and funnel them straight into the sex slave pipeline.[41] Or destitute parents fall victim to the con game that selling their daughters as child brides promises a better life for them.[42] The Islamic State terrorists, also created by elitist CIA design, routinely kidnap and enslave women and children for their brutal debauchery and sadistic torture as well.[43] Rich Gulf State predators openly shop for sex slaves in Syria, Egypt and Turkey. Abduction for child soldiers is another common practice.[44] Nations in south central Asia are nearly just as bad, in India, Sri Lanka, Bangladesh, Pakistan and Nepal.[45] Tourism for pedophiles protected and sanctioned by US State Department and CIA is covered next as another big business taking place in Asia where children forced into sex slavery are servicing scummy foreigners, especially in Myanmar, Philippines, Cambodia, Laos, Vietnam and Thailand.[46]

2004’s day after Christmas tsunami in the Indian Ocean, so catastrophic killing nearly a quarter million people, was seized upon by soulless pedophiles preying on defenseless children. Relief workers reported that an inordinate number of young Swedish boys mysteriously went missing in Thailand’s southern Phuket Province, especially known for sex tourism and human trafficking.[47] Meanwhile, in places like India, Saudi Arabia and United Arab Emirates blue eyed blonde boys are a most sought after preference. In Indonesia’s Aceh Province where the tsunami damage was most severe, police believe orphaned and separated children were abducted and moved by traffickers to other islands and nearby Malaysia. Nearly 100 out of the 565 total people missing were under 13. Similarly, right after Bali's 2002 car bombing, a sudden spike in missing orphaned children again occurred due to suspected foreign pedophiles. Former naval intelligence officer and veteran investigative journalist Wayne Madsen wrote a series of scathing articles examining this phenomenon of missing Asian children amidst an infestation of foreign child sex predators that regularly travel or have taken up residence in the Far East.[48]

Many of these pedophiles from America, Europe and Australia are public servants working within their national government agencies. An official from Australia's Department of Foreign Affairs and Trade was recalled back to Australia after an incident with an Indonesian boy in 1984, but remained an employee with diplomatic immunity and passport for almost another dozen years before he resigned.[49] After leaving his government post, he returned to Indonesia and was openly living with underage boys when he was busted yet again, but this time his government tenure wasn't there to bail him out of trouble. After receiving a 13-year prison sentence the day before, he hung himself in his Bali jail cell. Two Australian teachers who were child rapists were allowed passports to flee Cambodia and Thailand to escape justice. The Australian embassy in Cambodia has a reputation for regularly covering up cases of accused diplomats raping local children.

In his first term in office pedo boy George W. Bush signed into law tough anti-trafficking legislation only to pay lip service to it thereafter. The get tough on pedo-peddling was merely an excuse to pour money into making it easier for child rapists to rape. The State Department embassy in Bangkok, second largest in Asia to Tokyo, has long held a scandalous reputation protecting their predators posing as

State Department employees. The CIA station in Bangkok is also second to Tokyo in size, and closely works together to maintain overseas pedo operations. A 2007 Madsen article profiles the then current US ambassador to Thailand Ralph ("Skip") Boyce, a career State Department diplomat stationed in many Asian countries including serving as the former ambassador to Indonesia.[50] Wherever he was, Boyce repeatedly allowed pedophiles to thrive under his watch despite coming under heat for willfully placing Thai children in harm's way to known predators. Both his consul general and his American Citizens Services chief squelched pedophile investigations of the Bangkok embassy by Thai police. After a multiple decade career, Boyce finally retired in December 2007. But the pedophilia problem in the State Department and US government remains systemic.

Robert Finnegan, former *Jakarta Post* English editor, maintains he was physically threatened on embassy premises by security officers for asking questions regarding then Indonesian Ambassador Boyce's apparent tolerance towards pedophilia. Finnegan revealed that Boyce hired two Indonesian nationals, one a CIA asset, to procure underage children for sex with embassy personnel.[51] For outing him, Boyce had Finnegan's journalist visa revoked, forcing him to return to the States despite having an Indonesian wife. The State Department uses diplomatic immunity as carte blanche license to break laws raping children all over the world. Jakarta embassy sources anonymously confirmed Finnegan's revelations that State Department policy keeps circulating pedophiles throughout Asian countries. One embassy worker in Phnom Penh openly living with a young boy from Cambodia and another from Laos was transferred to the small Muslim nation Brunei. When the government discovered his living arrangement, the US shipped him off to Dhaka, Bangladesh, another pedo-magnet. Meanwhile, per SOP the CIA maintains pedo dossiers on hundreds if not thousands of State Department personnel for blackmail purposes.

Chief procurer of little boys in Bangkok for the embassy diplomatic corps was John Mark Karr, an American schoolteacher once married to a 13-year old and busted in 2001 for child pornography back in the States, but jumped bail to evade the law and for the next several years floated from pedo haven to pedo haven – Costa Rica, the Netherlands, Honduras, South Korea, until he wound up in Bangkok teaching English at several international schools to foreign and wealthy Thai children.[52] But it appeared his sexual improprieties with children had finally caught up to him when the Bangkok police arrested him in 2006. Then a most bizarre twist of events suddenly, suspiciously freed Karr. The pedophile was sent back flying un-handcuffed on business class to the United States greeted by huge headlines that he was the admitted killer of little 6-year old Jon Benet Ramsey back in 1996 Colorado. In retrospect, it appears that was simply a contrived federal ploy to extricate him from his Thai jail cell but more importantly distance him from the pedophiles he was running amuck with at the Bangkok embassy that Karr was alleged to be supplying with small children. Then in October 2006 since no DNA evidence matched Karr's, he was set free yet again, despite his "false confession" and despite the child porn charges a half decade earlier that made him a fugitive. Miraculously those charges were thrown out because his old porn filled computer confiscated back in 2001 had suspiciously grown legs and disappeared from the Sonoma County, California evidence room.

In 2008 Karr was allegedly arrested for domestic violence toward a supposed girlfriend at his parent's Atlanta home. Then in 2010 he resurfaced as a transgendered woman with a wacky Jon Benet cult he called the Immaculates, cyberstalking and threatening to kill one of 30 alleged procurers of his Jon Benet lookalikes.[53] These days the unpunished serial pedophile is allegedly a woman in order to make for easier access to 6-year old girls as his potential cult recruits. All of this could be smoke and mirrors to obscure the bottom line that Karr back in Thailand was living in a very upscale Bangkok neighborhood (despite foreign media claims he lived in seedy, pimp and drug dealing squalor) in extreme close proximity to the Danish and Austrian embassies, the Thai-German Cultural Center and Goethe Institute and Joint US-Thai Military Assistance Group. Wayne Madsen tracked Karr's residence down and found that he was living amongst foreign diplomats, cultural mission staff and US Special Forces personnel, and most likely being wined and dined by fellow residents that shared his hankering for little kids.[54] Under the auspices of both the CIA and State Department, it's been confirmed that Karr provided children for sexual liaisons with visiting American VIPs that included Congress members.[55] Because John Mark Karr had the damaging goods on so many of his elite clientele, he was whisked away out of Thailand using the Jon Benet lie.

While the CIA, State Department and NGOs are all paid big bucks to ostensibly fight pedophilia and child trafficking, they along with a complicit MSM actually protect child rapists like Karr and engage in character assassination and slander against good people who actually dedicate their lives to protecting at risk children. Madsen extensively covered what happens to the true child advocates on a mission to rid these safe havens from pedophiles when they become too successful, showcasing two American crusaders independently working in pedo-infested Pattaya, an infamous sex resort on the Thai south coast. Each child advocate – Sean Parlaman and Father Ray Brennan were heroes who paid with their lives after being maliciously targeted by the pro-pedophile establishment.[56] Peril befalls the righteous do-gooders including truth tellers from the press wanting to expose this pervasive criminality in the pedophilia empire.

While Wayne Madsen was investigating this story, former editor of the *Japan Times Weekly*, longtime respected journalist and child activist in Asia as well, Yoichi Shimatsu told him:

Reporters asking too many questions about pedophiles in Southeast Asia are likely to end up with a bullet in their head.[57]

Because so much money is generated through child sex enslavement, the strategy of powerful child raping profiteers is/was accusing activists actually saving children of being pedophiles. This diabolical scheme has tragically proven all too effective. So the elite goes out of its way to protect the guilty slime while destroying the saints most dedicated to protecting children. Though the devil's earthly dominion may seemingly reward the Luciferians, the tables are turning.

But then there's Howard Gutman, Hillary's ambassador to Belgium in Brussels, another pedo paradise, allowed to repeatedly act out engaging in sex with underage boys. But his pedophile boss squelched the investigation of Gutman and his security detail involving 8 separate cases, consistently shielding them from further exposure and arrest, keeping the ambassador on his job till the end of his term.[58] Of course this should come as no surprise, considering word has it Hillary Clinton's sex video with her lover Huma Abedin both engaging in a lesbo threesome with an underage girl at Epstein's Sex Slave Island discovered last fall on the pedo-jailbird Anthony Weiner's laptop[59] is now about to go public via *WikiLeaks.*[60] For many decades this kind of flagrant government debauchery and cover-ups have been so rampant throughout the world, only confirming a much wider pedophilia trafficking network long held in place by the Washington-London-Rome-Brussels axis-of-evil ensuring child rapists in powerful places continue getting away with destroying children's lives. But it appears those days may be over.

Russian intelligence sources just released breakthrough news that three months ago Trump made a deal with the Saudi Crown Prince Mohammed bin Salman to help remove money laundering backers of terrorism as part of the Bush-Clinton crime family pedophilia scourge purge currently underway.[61] Already 10 Saudi princes and 38 ministers have been arrested, among them one of the richest men in the world Prince Bin Talal.[62] During last month's visit to Russia, Saudi King Abdulaziz is alleged to have informed Putin that Trump ordered the NSA controlled by the US military faithful to Trump and America to gather all evidence against the treasonous deep state that of course includes the likes of the Bushes, Clintons, Obama and George Soros so they can all be rounded up and charged with sedition, plotting to overthrow the sitting US president. Special Forces have allegedly been contacting pedophiles in Hollywood and Washington informing them that their victims are coming forth and will be protected. Thus, we've already seen the first dominos falling, Weinstein, Spacey, perhaps Hillary is next. John Podesta's brother Tony is rumored to be in US marshals' custody after attempting to leave the country.[63] Mass arrests of major Luciferian players may finally be coming. But don't start celebrating "ding dong the witch is dead" quite yet.

Whereas millions of tax-paid dollars are allocated annually to the State Department to combat child sex trafficking, its consistent track record only shows that no action is ever taken to uphold and enforce sodomy laws, apprehend child sex offenders nor protect children.[64] Another big recipient for anti-trafficking funds is the US Agency for International

Development (USAID), a longtime notorious cover for the CIA.[65] The watchdog group Judicial Watch just sued to uncover how US tax dollars have been misappropriated by USAID financing multibillionaire George Soros' initiatives whose cultural Marxist agenda and trademark is inciting global insurrection and destabilization.[66] It's hardly a secret that Soros and the CIA represent New World Order wrecking balls covertly promoting Luciferian sodomy against children.

The 1976 founder of longtime favorite USAID NGO Chermonics International, Gerald Murphy, in 1993 was quoted in the *New York Times* boasting:

I've always wanted a way to do two things: one, have my own C.I.A., and two, be helpful to people.[67]

Though USAID awarded him a half million bucks to support its field missions, Wayne Madsen rightly points out that nothing says it went for its intended purpose to combat trafficking child sex slaves.

A privately owned NGO called Creative Associates working near Soros' old stomping grounds Albania received close to a million and a half from Soros-linked USAID, granting almost another half million ($443,000) to a Swiss charity agency called Terre Des Hommes to also fight against trafficking in Albania.[68] Yet this same outfit was busted for running a children's village in famine-stricken Ethiopia that for years attracted and enabled pedophile employees to abuse their positions of power and trust.[69] Another benefactor of the CIA-USAID funding pipeline, the Asia Foundation, has an anti-trafficking program operating in five pedo-infested Vietnamese provinces. What does it tell you when "following the money" only leads to where pedophilia's actually gotten worse?

A case in point will illustrate how members of the rich and powerful pedo-club gravitate to child trafficking havens set up by the CIA, US State Department and USAID programs, and then if busted get bailed out. Wealthy Russian businessman Alexander Trofimov was caught by Cambodian police on his joint US invested Snake Island resort in Sihanoukville Province in possession of more a dozen child sex slaves, becoming the largest pedophilia case in the nation's history.[70] Domaines Barons de Rothschild owns a Sokha Beach playground down the street on this same island so notorious for child trafficking. Having gained a reputation as the pedophilia hub of Southeast Asia, since 2004 Cambodia's been attempting to clean up its act.

Convicted of raping 15 girls, Trofimov was sentenced to 17 years. But at the behest of the Cambodian king acting on behalf of the Phnom Penh government and increasing pedo club pressure, the child raping slave-owner was released from jail after serving only a 4-year slap on the hand. Wanted for serial raping underage girls as young as 8 back in Russia during 2003-04, Cambodia [and the pedo club] then proceeded to ignore Moscow's extradition requests.

After being spotted still slithering on and around Snake Island, the Russian pedophile was arrested again living with another 11-year old girl's family in June 2012. Only under immense public pressure mounting internationally did the Phnom Penh government finally acquiesce, realizing it had no choice but to deport the serial predator.[71] The actual Stanislav Molodyakov, having used Trofimov as his fake name in Cambodia, was subsequently tried and convicted in Russia for luring and raping dozens of schoolgirls in his Moscow mansion promising them modeling careers. In 2015 he finally was sentenced to 11 years in prison.[72] If anything, this lurid tale shows that Cambodia has hardly cleaned up its act, no doubt succumbing to Washington's "all talk, no action" lead. It also shows that in the secret Luciferian world, the elite goes out of its way to protect its own.

After years of “killing field” terror and war under Cambodian Pol Pot’s genocidal regime during the 1970’s, the poorest nation in Southeast Asia was again victimized by an invasion of foreign national sharks during an 18-month period devouring near half (45%) of Cambodia’s entire land mass in 2007-08.[73] One of these sharks was Stanislav Molodyakov who established his elitist pedo resort on Snake Island. Predatory Russian developers literally burnt the homes of the native islanders to the ground, violently forcing them off their property to construct the Russian rapist’s $300 million palace as part of a sprawling $1 billion joint US resort investment. Where have we heard that before? A la Jeffrey Epstein’s Caribbean sex slave island. Such wholesale raping and pillaging of their homeland had 150,000 Cambodians facing eviction.

While Cambodia was being carved up for sale on a platter to powerful foreign interests, many being rich foreign pedophiles, a telling, very much related incident occurred on November 9th, 2008. A helicopter crash in southern Cambodia in nearby Svay Rieng Province took place killing all occupants on board including the pilot, co-pilot, a Cambodian army general and General Hok Lundy, the nation’s police chief.[74] This “accident” occurred just after General Lundy had told Deputy US Secretary of State John Negroponte that he was no longer welcomed in Cambodia. On the heels of the worst pedophile case in nation’s history, the wife of the former king and mother of current king had pressured Cambodia’s police chief to start cracking down on the rampant child sex trafficking ravaging their country. Up till then the general himself had long been steeped in the human smuggling business. Just 5 days prior to the crash, the Wayne Madsen Report acknowledged that both US and French intelligence operating out of their respective Phnom Penh embassies were aiding and abetting the systemic rape of preteens by foreign pedophile traffickers.

Current special prosecutor, 9/11 cover-up conspirator and NWO stooge[75] investigating the bogus Trump-Russian collusion, Robert Mueller as then FBI director made a late January 2008 trip to Phnom Penh to open up a brand new FBI office in the capital and discuss Cambodia's cooperation with America's fake "war on terror," meeting with his counterpart General Lundy.[76] Previously Lundy had repeatedly been refused US visas for his known participation in trafficking young Cambodian children. But after the FBI director's trip to Cambodia's capital and meeting with Lundy in person, suddenly the general was granted his visa as a VIP Washington guest. No doubt the visa came as a reward for cooperating with USA's rampant pedophile abuse, most notably operating out of the Phnom Penh Embassy by CIA and State Department personnel.

George W. Bush's then Deputy Secretary of the US State Department John Negroponte has a brother named Nicholas Negroponte who is the head of MIT's Media Lab, another CIA front responsible for installing a computer for each child and a satellite link tower at one of the nearby orphanages. US dollars were flowing into the orphanage as long as staff looked the other way when its boys and girls aged 8-14 were made available for sex parties for Negroponte's diplomatic and VIP visiting pedophiles. But when the staff began complaining about the abuse, all funds were suddenly withdrawn and the pedophiles made sure the computers were erased once the money stopped.[77]

The Negropontes in fact were using the orphanage kids for child pornography, uplinking photos and video files through deep encryption back to the US for wider elite distribution. A teacher at the orphanage said:

Nick [Negroponte] was a frequent visitor and one of the orphanage sponsors who arranged the weekend pajama parties in the city whenever foreign VIPs arrived.[78]

These sick fucks heading our government are raping and exploiting in the worst ways children all over the world. The MIT Media Lab, CIA and State Department are deep in child pornography, sodomizing children and trafficking.

Yoichi Shimatsu asked whether 26-year old computer whiz kid-info activist Aaron Swartz' hacking of MIT files and potentially discovering Nicholas Negroponte's child porn and worldwide pedophilia operations in Africa and Asia might have been the actual cause of Aaron's death, or murder, and not the narrative standby "suicide."[79] Certainly it would explain why the feds were gunning for such overkill punishment that didn't fit the crime – 35 years behind bars for simply trying to make information free to everyone in the world. Of course the permanency of the old "suicided" muzzle as a "cleaner" means of preventing the world from finding out about a sick pedo Empire's pussy, demonic Achilles heel seems a far more plausible explanation with what's at stake than suicide.

Yoichi has this to say to MIT's Media monster Nicholas:

> *Nicholas Negroponte, you have no place to hide in Southeast Asia or Africa, not any longer. You are under watch and will be relentlessly tracked down, not just for child porn and pimping children but now as an accomplice to murder. Your only way out is to turn over the video files along with the entire list of names, and you had better do it sooner than later because the powerful pedophiles on that list are going to silence you to cover their own tracks.*[80]

To keep their Luciferian operations going, the CIA actively pressures local media in this case Southeast Asia to not dare mention, much less publicize, the pedophilia epidemic against their children perpetrated by the US government, even using the National Endowment for Democracy (NED) to provide hush money.[81] As long as the Cambodian orphanages were working with General Lundy in procuring sex slaves for the US Empire’s trafficking network, everything was fine, but once they balked, grave consequences followed. When the corrupt, pro-pedophilia cop Lundy suddenly switched gears and did a 180 while the US-Cambodian sex industry was booming, upsetting the US pedophilia applecart led directly to the general’s November 2008 “accidental” demise, sending a clear message to all in Cambodia they better not mess with Empire’s multibillion dollar sex trade.

As the main perpetrators and protectors of global pedophilia, time and time again both the State Department and CIA have been designated to “fight” against it. The CIA that principally runs child trafficking operations worldwide, the Balkans and Pacific Asia just two blatant examples, is allotted an unlimited funding stream of black ops bucks to “stop” the very crime it most egregiously commits on an epic scale.

How the global pedo network operates is the classic Hegelian Dialectic in action.[82] The Bushes and Clintons took turns publicly acknowledging how the lawlessness of the jungle is out of control and we need to get tougher on crime as their identified problem. Then comes the predictable reaction to their identified problem, the discovery that an increasing number of runaway, missing and unsupervised children falling through the cracks as victim to predators and killers alike. But always the seedy derelicts off the street, local drug pushers and violent gang members are the targeted culprits - not the CIA or State Department - lurking and lingering around America’s bus stops, railway and bus stations, schools and playgrounds. The all too obvious solution is passing even tougher new anti-crime laws and expanding and militarizing police forces to adequately address this urgent crisis needing to “protect our children.” So behind catchy slogans like “leave no child behind” and shitloads of boondoggle programs come hundreds of newly built privatized prisons filled up with persons of color from the barrios and ghettos on nonviolent drug offenses.[83] Additionally, billions of our taxpayer dollars are poured into beefing up law enforcement, violent crime task forces and enacting unprecedented comprehensive anti-trafficking measures and policies, all with the hidden agenda to expand and conceal their raping and trafficking of millions of children.

Following Bush's anti-trafficking law, one among hundreds of bureaucratic creations is the Human Smuggling and Trafficking Center (HSTC). In May 2008 Bush's US Attorney General Michael Mukasey described HSTC as a:

> *Joint venture of government experts from the prosecutorial, law enforcement, policy, intelligence, and diplomatic areas teamed to combat trafficking in persons, migrant smuggling, and clandestine terrorist travel.*[84]

This state sponsored Hegelian "solution" was designed on paper to appear so righteous as a constructive, much needed intervention to help reduce global child sex trafficking rings. Yet Wayne Madsen explains how its actual purpose is just the opposite - setting up an impenetrable, walled off apparatchik to facilitate expansion of the elite's child sodomy operations, spending ever more tax dollars to effectively safeguard and conceal their already in-place trafficking network from exposure and accountability. After all, Bush junior didn't want on his hands another Franklin scandal that exposed papa Bush as a flaming pedophile. In Wayne's words:

> *This center combines U.S. foreign service personnel with CIA agents, the deadly combination that has seen U.S. diplomatic outposts, particularly in Southeast and South Asia, used to provide cover for pedophile VIP visits for purposes of sex tourism and pedophile U.S. diplomats.*[85]

http://www.conspiracyplanet.com/channel.cfm?channelid=137&contentid=4451&page=2

An entire boondoggle cottage industry has bureaucratically mushroomed in the last decade and a half at tax paid expense to include not just the Defense and State Departments using CIA fronts, but even the US Health and Human Services, Homeland Security and the Justice Departments all going global, milking the “save our children” gravy train, like a cancer wasting our tax dollars on fine tuning their child trafficking infrastructure through “networking” in nations where enslaved children predominantly originate and transit. Madsen details this massive expanding operation specifically networking with Thailand, Canada, Mexico, Russia, Croatia, Czech Republic, Poland, Malawi, Tanzania, Austria, Bulgaria, Hungary, Nepal, Indonesia, China, Georgia, Latvia, Romania, Kyrgyzstan, Azerbaijan, Albania, Kazakhstan, Senegal, Nigeria, Gabon, Gambia, Uganda, Madagascar and Malaysia.[86] With our hard earned bucks, in the name of stopping trafficking and sodomizing children, their Satanic tentacles have only spread further and deeper to every corner of the globe to increase and strengthen the efficiency and insular impunity of their global child killing machine.

The same CIA covers and USAID recipients keep showing up over and over again with the same dubious players that expose their close-knit system of cronyism, nepotism and criminal corruption. Health and Human Services funds a 24-hour hotline called the National Human Trafficking Resource Center (NHTRC).[87] Its prime contractor is Lockheed Martin, the suspected Vegas child trafficking shooter’s old employer that’s the number one US defense contractor and its subcontractor is the Covenant House. Remember Bush senior and Reagan’s favorite charity? The Covenant House run by convicted pedophile former Catholic priest Bruce Ritter was heavily active in Central America procuring children for the pedo pipeline (covered earlier in Chapter 5). CEOs linked to CIA activities in Asia from such Fortune 500 heavyweights as Lockheed and insurance giant AIG (that US taxpayers bailed out) typically end up board directors of charities like the infamous Covenant House and notorious CIA-linked, “faith-based” aid organization World Hope International (WHI),[88] a $1.3 million recipient of USAID funds for its “anti-trafficking” efforts in Cambodia. The CIA linked WHI was also granted $300,000 from USAID for its “traffic busting” in Laos. WHI is also connected to the infamous Jim Jones and the Jonestown, Guyana tragedy,[89] Cuban refugee camps in the US as well as the Sabra and Chatila Palestinian refugee camps in Lebanon where in 1982 Israeli led forces massacred yet more Palestinian victims[90] with its never-ending genocidal apartheid policy.[91] UK’s Labor Party leader Jeremy Corbin just ruined Israeli Prime Minister Netanyahu’s dinner celebration of the Balfour Declaration centennial, snubbing the war criminal as the latest indicator that despite US Empire complicity Israel is fast becoming a nation pariah within the world community.[92]

Direct links also exist between World Vision and two known CIA Monarch mind control assassins - John Lennon’s Mark David Chapman and Reagan’s would-be John W. Hinkley, Jr. Mark Chapman once worked at a World Vision refugee camp in Arkansas while Hinkley’s dad was WHI’s chairman of the board.[93] And the same day Reagan was shot Hinkley’s brother was scheduled to dine with another of George HW’s sons Neil Bush and his wife.[94] After all, the Bush and Hinkley families go way back as indelible ties that bind both friendship and joint business together. You see in Luciferian circles, it’s a very small world.

Though numerous small humanitarian organizations perform admirable work assisting victims in disaster stricken nations around the globe, virtually all the biggest NGOs and USAID programs, including the Red Cross, AmeriCares (another pedo procurer covered in the earlier Malta chapter), Covenant House, World Vision, Knights of Malta (whose malfeasance earned an entire chapter 5), Catholic Relief Services, CARE International, Save the Children, UNICEF, any UN presence as well as the infamously criminal Clinton Global Initiative are guilty of contributing to the pedo epidemic's global trafficking network.[95]

The parasitic gougers in Haiti after the January 2010 7.0 earthquake while Secretary of State Hillary was busily selling off 20% of America's uranium deposits to Russia[96] and $29 billion worth of advanced fighter jets to Saudi Arabia[97] destined to murder over 12,000 Yemeni civilians (mostly women and children),[98] Bill led the UN Haitian humanitarian relief campaign that made $13.5 billion disappear, lining the Clinton Foundation and friends' coffers while less than 1% actually went to the shattered, poorest nation in the Western Hemisphere.[99] Hillary's US ambassador to Haiti wrote a revealing post-quake assessment declaring "The Gold Rush is on!"[100]

The cash grabbing Clintons mined the desperate impoverished nation for not only dollars but children as well. A year after the earthquake, Bill and Hillary were further incriminated when in 2011 Hillary went out of her way to protect convicted child kidnapper Laura Silsby, caught red-handed attempting to cross the border into Dominican Republic with 33 Haitian kids she tried passing off as orphans that actually had parents.[101] The Clintons immediately retained "a lawyer" for Silsby who turned out to be wanted in Costa Rica and El Salvador for child trafficking himself, freely admitting he'd worked with US Army intelligence, the DEA and Homeland Security. Then while the Pizzagate scandal was blasting the internet world just following Hillary's epic defeat last November, researcher Monica Petersen in her late 20's investigating the Clinton's child trafficking involvement in Haiti, suddenly showed up “suicided” as yet another potential Clinton graveyard casualty.[102] Needless to say, Hillary’s State Department and her over 10,000 NGOs in a feeding frenzy struck gold in Haiti harvesting their bumper crop of little kids to defile.

Over 300,000 Haitians died in the killer quake, placing 32,000 kids in 760 orphanages on the island.[103] Yet 4 out of 5 Haitian children living in an orphanage have at least one of their parents still alive. But poverty, discrimination, disability and lack of social services cause most of the 8 million children in orphanages worldwide to not be united with their living parents, along with Empire’s pedo agenda. Making matters worse is the fact that orphanages are a magnet for pedophiles and trafficking operations. As alluded to earlier, the State Department, CIA, USAID and thousands of NGO “charities” are crawling with child predators that exploit these vulnerable children for obscene profits and perversions. Chief Executive Georgette Mulheir of the London based charity Lumos told *Reuters*:

> *When people hear the word ‘orphanage’, they imagine that it’s a good thing or they imagine that it’s necessary. They do not imagine that so many orphanages are actually trafficking, beating, sexually abusing and starving children.*[104]

A case in point in Haiti of another pedophile still at large protected by a corrupt system is Michael Geilenfeld, founder and executive director since the 1985 of St. Joseph Family Homes for Boys in Port-au-Prince. His “calling” had him drifting from one pedo haven to the next in the name of “helping” [himself to] little boys - India, Cambodia, Laos, Vietnam, California, El Salvador. The man leaves a trail of accusations dating back to 1987 in Boston, 1990 in both US and Haiti, 1995 in Detroit, 1997 in UK and Haiti, 1999 in Haiti, 2006-07 in Haiti and US,[105] and in Haiti in 2014 and again in 2015. He finally was detained for 237 days in

September 2014 but a judge in April 2015 without even victims' testimony dismissed charges and released him yet again.[106] Based on the latest 2015 allegations, a warrant for his arrest was once again issued in late October that year. A week later in November Haitian authorities closed his 30-year old orphanage and two other of his facilities.[107] But the slippery former brother from the Order of St. Teresa apparently evaded the law and has been nowhere to be found ever since. Despite an army of victims spilling a trail of tears over three decades long alleging Geilenfeld's guilt, the man seems immune from any real consequence, which begs the question who is helping him.

In 2011 Hillary's "Gold Rush" ambassador was given formal notice of Michael Geilenfeld's lengthy checkered past which by authority of the Protect Act of 2003 makes suspected sex crimes committed in foreign countries prosecutable by law in the United States. Yet Geilenfeld was allowed to travel freely back and forth, even coordinating several dance tours across America featuring his Haitian boys, generating additional popular and financial support.[108] Legally appearing to possess nine lives, in 2013 this alleged pedophile even successfully sued and was awarded a $14.5 million settlement by a federal jury in 2015 in a defamation suit brought against a Maine child advocate activist who drew public attention on the internet to the gross injustice of him remaining free.[109] In 2016 the Maine defendant was able to win on appeal that overturned the earlier decision for lacking federal jurisdiction. But with the 65-year old Geilenfeld now a two year fugitive still at large dodging justice and extradition back to Haiti, based on his First Amendment rights being violated, the Maine activist is now seeking to dismiss the lawsuit refiled against him in lower state court.[110]

For years Geilenfeld's primary funding source has been another deep pocketed, faith-based non-profit NGO out of

North Carolina calling itself Hearts with Haiti, also a co-plaintiff in the defamation suit. Despite three decades of accusations and Haiti's pending extradition orders, Hearts with Haiti chooses to stand by its pedophile fugitive rather than the dozens if not hundreds of his Haitian victims. Hearts with Haiti has as much heart for Haiti as the take-the-money-and-run Clintons. What a twisted, pathetic world we live in when a chronic serial child rapist not only remains free but nearly became a millionaire as well, while a child advocate having researched the case and interviewed Geilenfeld victims is the one on trial.

Thousands of these slimeballs are out there globally hunting and hurting children leaving lifetime emotional scars and trauma. And because they're high on the predatory food chain, their sins go unpunished. One more case of another American pedophile that raked in lots of dough before getting caught from a location rivaling Thailand as the pedo-sex tourism capital of the world - Brazil.[111] Meet Rick Schair from Atlanta who ran a business called "Wet-A-Line," advertising "ecological fishing expeditions" in the Amazon jungle near Manaus.[112] He catered to the pedophile elite amongst the top tier masonic Royal Order of Jesters, hooking them up with indigenous child sex slaves. Just to show you how entrepreneurial this guy is, Rick has an hour-long infomercial video on Amazon.com featuring his yacht Amazon Santana and his 20 pound "Amazon Peacock Bass."[113]

In July 2011 a Brazilian police sting operation busted Schair when he and 20 of his pedo-patrons, all but one Jesters that included a New York Supreme Court judge and a police chief, were caught with girls as young as 12. Jester molesters had been investigated for running a child trafficking ring in New York State with Brazilian links.[114] One of Schair's defense witnesses at his trial happened to be the federal prosecutor Larry Mackey[115] of MK Ultra patsy Timothy McVeigh from the Oklahoma City false flag bombing.[116] It takes little dot connecting to realize the unholy trinity between the Jesters, their child sex tourism opportunist, and their link to the elite's global child trafficking operation that they share in common with an OKC inside-job insider. And there lies Lucifer's lair.

All of this human tragedy from wars to migration crises to setting up pedo sanctuaries through CIA and NGOs is diabolically planned years in advance by the controllers. Manufacturing Zionist-US Empire wars in conjunction with the likes of George Soros, the CIA and their myriad of on-the-ground supporting players directed from the Washington war room, supported by both City of London's financial control center and Rome's "religious" advisement and vast global resource tentacles, all covertly intersect to make the globalized child sex slavery network their fine-tuned, well-oiled Luciferian machine turned standard international protocol.

Again, it's built in, entrenched foxes guarding the predatory henhouse that permeate all levels of government, military, courts, law enforcement, entertainment and news media, corporate global finance and education. With pedophile puppet masters controlling the pedophile puppet strings of blackmailed, compromised and controlled Western politicians, courts and law enforcement, their diabolical infrastructure has afforded them living above the law continuing to rape and kill our innocents for centuries. Now that they've been exposed like never before, it's past time we finally hold them accountable.

Once a child is kidnapped, abducted or sold, while in transit each financial exchange brings a series of destinations and slave ownerships, some temporary, others longer term, but each abusive station along the way extracts an increasingly devastating toll on the child's health and well-being.

Meanwhile, both the price of the child and the price to the child continue to rise. Using drugs, cages, and methods of psychological and physical torture, handlers and owners brutally rape and torment their child victims into robotic, semi-despondent submission and malleable compliance,[117] a loose facsimile to CIA trauma induced mind control torture programs operating in North America. But a broken spirit and will is the tragic result with death never far behind.

According to former longtime slave Dr. Sue Arrigo:

> *A child in the sex slave system has a useful expected lifetime of two years. They fail to thrive in that setting. They die of disease, neglect, abuse and giving up. The kids are killed if they are seriously hurt, refuse to work, or become too jaded to attract customers. They are almost never freed by their owners because they could talk. It is a dead end occupation usually.*[118]

If a child lasts two years, from a decade old statistic in a large US city like New York, an owner of a child sex slave can net profit on average about $300,000 per child. The going price in 2007 for a sick, used kid as most expendable damaged goods on the auction block could sell for $500 but a fresh healthy blue-eyed virgin for $50,000.[119] A child picked up by scum artists in war zones runs about $2,000 USD. The fee for buyers just for admittance into these underground auction houses cost $10,000. Similar to its drug peddling business, the CIA level of involvement as pipeline coordinators only deals in the boatloads and trainloads, enormously large volumes for a fast turnover business. The CIA also has long term interests, owning and operating thousands of “safe house” brothels around the globe, pimping millions of child sex slaves for obscene profits. As a sex slave CIA operative with a conscience, courage and finesse, Sue Arrigo would often risk her life shutting down the large volume auction houses. But Sue would have to wait till after the CIA sold the children off to the auction houses before she could intercede in busting their operation because had she dared shortchange the CIA out of its cut, she would’ve promptly been killed. Dr. Arrigo explains that the CIA and its “corporate bosses like the Rockefellers and the Bushes” make about $1,000 off each child’s head sold to auctioneers, $300 allocated to the CIA and $700 to their corporate bosses, about twice their profit share from selling drugs.

Arrigo adds that the kids with the most smarts and/or looks, about 5% are skimmed off the top by the Luciferians in charge like the Bushes and used as either spies or corporate sex slaves or both.[120] They’re typically pimped out on high priced loans to influential politicians as house boy and girls to ensure the puppets in Congress are happy and blackmail-able for control. Congressional house slaves also become convenient spies keeping tabs on the political puppets for the likes of the Bushes and Clintons and their bosses the Rockefellers and Rothschilds. At the highest echelons of power, gifted child sex slaves that possess remote viewing capability and can accurately forecast stock prices can earn their bloodline bosses up to $1 million a day. The high stakes of oil deals worth billions can easily have Saudi sheiks and princes forking over a million bucks for a night with a young presidential model. It’s a status thing knowing their child slave for a night is being regularly shared by US presidents. These kids on the upper rung are the “lucky ones” as they’ve a halfway decent shot at reaching adulthood, though their emotional scars and baggage are typically lifelong.

At the age of three, Dr. Sue Arrigo’s violent father, a career military intelligence officer, allegedly sold his daughter into the CIA Monarch mind control program.[121] Similar to intergenerational Illuminati families, fathers who are career military officers often subject their own children to the horrific abuse of mind control. Military brats are viewed as prized commodities mined for their pedigree status as ideal mind control candidates at age two or three. This fact speaks volumes that a favorite crème de la crème source for slave harvesting is military officer families, since they're engrained with a dementedly skewed sense of duty and hierarchical discipline that apparently absolve fathers of guilt and misgivings despite knowing they're inflicting systematic torture and rape on their own sons and daughters. But then when they are often their kids' first pedophile owner and master, it's no different from the Illuminati breeding operation. Presidential models often are/were recruited from the "fine upstanding" homes and families of military commanders, examples being Brice Taylor and Cisco Wheeler. It's all pretty sick shit but then Satanism has found a receptive home in the United States armed forces. Just ask the Luciferian maestro himself Michael Aquino. Thank God 98% of our servicemen and women are decent folk stuck in a diabolical system.

By sinister design, the planetary rulers have used Empire wars to overrun and flood Europe (and to lesser extent North America) with millions upon millions of refugees, fomenting religious and race war tensions as part of its control agenda to create such extreme havoc and global upheaval in order to systematically take down the West as a precondition to their one world government totalitarianism.[122] The influx of 50,000 unescorted Latin American children suddenly flocking to Obama's open border doorstep[123] a couple years ago was also the result of a covert CIA-DHS-globalist operation for the same purpose, ultimately to stir up ethnic divisions within America and reap the bountiful harvest of thousands of helpless, vulnerable children sucked into the pedophile pipeline. Border Patrol agents were ordered to stand down while constitutional states' rights in Texas and

Arizona were usurped and rendered powerless to police their own borders.

An unending cycle, a schematic flow of unfolding events is unleashed - CIA engineered wars beget engineered migration crises beget engineered spikes in child trafficking beget engineered ritualized orgies of Luciferian sodomy beget engineered earthly demonic takeover - all part of the elite's arsenal of weaponized tools turned spoils of war serving the dual function of child flesh and blood supply and demand while through nonstop crises and war tightening the tyrannical grip of absolute control over a haplessly trapped world population. This is their endgame and it's up to us to spoil it by making their end our endgame for them.

In each of the Empire's military occupied countries, major interlocking child sex trafficking rings form the global network supplying the pedophile elite with fresh shipments of foreign child slaves in addition to the homegrown, "test tubed," Monarch-bred Illuminati type already locked and loaded inside North America. By the way, around the globe 2 to 4 million kids each year are trafficked internally within a nation's border.[124] This colossal system is structurally held together and maintained by every integral working part, from the crucial intergovernmental to the inter-military to the legal, financial, religious, educational to the media, transportation and organized crime components, all are actively participating in this massive planet-wide Luciferian operation. A relative small handful of demonic psychopaths in charge of each of these interlocking spheres of international power, wealth and control are actually running this massive day-to-day global trafficking network that serves children on a platter to an even smaller number of ruling puppet masters sitting atop this planet's predatory food chain.

Again it periodically bears reminding that there are good guys within the intelligence services, the military ranks and even a few sprinkled across governments and Hollywood, though few to none are found at or near the top of this power pyramid. Clearly not everyone in the CIA, FBI or Pentagon is a serial pedophile killer or complicit enabler/supporter, though the higher up on the pecking order, the more they are. All these hierarchical organizations are purposely structured to compartmentalize to the nth degree, so that the bigger picture and information flow is only privy and disseminated to those on a strict need to know basis. Just as there are lower level Catholic priests and Freemasons who are good, decent people, same applies across the boards to those in government, the military, intelligence and law enforcement communities. No doubt many in these professions caught in bad situations suffer cognitive dissonance whenever they encounter reality that contradicts their own conscience, internal belief system or schemas. They'll either repress ensuing internal conflicts, deny reality or gradually come to realize continuing to work in settings where they're merely a complicit cog in the Luciferian wheel can no longer be acceptable. The lower one is on the power pole, the easier it becomes to remove oneself. The corollary makes it extremely difficult with far more at stake. Whistleblowers bravely take their own life into their hands.

The next chapter will continue the overview analysis of the CIA-military end of pedophilia and the child trafficking network that includes exposing private US civilian contractors' and the UN's supplementary but critical roles in this gargantuan planet-wide criminal operation.

---

[1] Sue Arrigo, "Secrets of the CIA's Global Sex Slave Industry (1)," *Conspiracy Planet*, http://www.conspiracyplanet.com/channel.cfm?

channelid=137&contentid=4451&page=2.

[2] “A Short Trip to Spookyville,” *Covert History* (a blog site), June 2, 2007, http://coverthistory.blogspot.co.id/2007/06/short-trip-to-spookyville-dr.html.

[3] Sue Arrigo, http://www.conspiracyplanet.com/channel.cfm?channelid=137&contentid=4451&page=2.

[4] Sue Arrigo, http://www.conspiracyplanet.com/channel.cfm?channelid=137&contentid=4451&page=2.

[5] Sue Arrigo, http://www.conspiracyplanet.com/channel.cfm?channelid=137&contentid=4451&page=2.

[6] Sue Arrigo, http://www.conspiracyplanet.com/channel.cfm?channelid=137&contentid=4451&page=2.

[7] Sue Arrigo, http://www.conspiracyplanet.com/channel.cfm?channelid=137&contentid=4451&page=2.

[8] Sue Arrigo, http://www.conspiracyplanet.com/channel.cfm?channelid=137&contentid=4451&page=2.

[9] Rupert Stone, “Science Shows that Torture doesn’t Work and is Counterproductive,” *Newsweek*, May 18, 2016, http://www.newsweek.com/2016/05/20/science-shows-torture-doesnt-work-456854.html.

[10] Sue Arrigo, http://www.conspiracyplanet.com/channel.cfm?channelid=137&contentid=4451&page=2.

[11] Sue Arrigo, http://www.conspiracyplanet.com/channel.cfm?channelid=137&contentid=4451&page=2.

[12] Sue Arrigo, http://www.conspiracyplanet.com/channel.cfm?channelid=137&contentid=4451&page=2.

[13] Sue Arrigo, http://www.conspiracyplanet.com/channel.cfm?channelid=137&contentid=4451&page=2.

[14] Peter Dale Scott, “Bosnia, Kosovo and now Libya: The Human Costs of Washington’s On-Going Collusion with Terrorists,” *The Asia Pacific Journal*, August 8, 2011, http://apjjf.org/2011/9/31/Peter-Dale-Scott/3578/article.html.

[15] “1996-1999: Albanian Mafia and KLA Take Control of Balkan Heroin Trafficking Route,” and “1996 and After: Al-Qaeda Revives Bosnia Connections through Saudi Government Charity; US Fails to Shut Charity Down,” *History Commons*, http://www.historycommons.org/timeline.jsp?timeline=complete_911_timeline&startpos=100&complete_911_timeline_al_qaeda_by_region=balkans.

[16] Marija Ristic, “From Kosovo’s Organ Harvesting Controversy to Special Court, *Balkan Insight*, January 21, 2011, http://www.balkaninsight.com/en/article/timeline-kosovo-organ-harvesting.

[17] “CIA Agent Blows the Whistle ‘We Supply Elite Pedophiles with Children,” YouTube video, 2:20, posted on October 30, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=JnrfmaFYDrA.

[18] “Context of ‘March 3, 1999: New Pearl Harbor Needed to Change US Military Policies, Says Expert,’” *History Commons*, http://www.historycommons.org/context.jsp?item=a030399newpearlharbor.

[19] Wesley Clark interviewed by Amy Goodman transcript, “Global Warfare: We’re Going to Take out 7 Countries in 5 Years,” *Democracy Now/Global Research*, March 2, 2007, https://www.globalresearch.ca/we-re-going-to-take-out-7-countries-in-5-years-iraq-syria-lebanon-libya-somalia-sudan-iran/5166.

[20] Stuart Jeanne Bramhall, “The Arab Spring: Made in the USA,” *Dissident Voice*, October 25, 2015, https://dissidentvoice.org/2015/10/the-arab-spring-made-in-the-usa/.

[21] Wayne Madsen, “America’s Disastrous Proxy Wars: Syria is the Latest,” *Strategic Culture*, October 17, 2015, https://www.strategic-culture.org/news/2015/10/17/america-disastrous-proxy-wars-syria-latest.html.

[22] Peter Dale Scott, http://apjjf.org/2011/9/31/Peter-Dale-Scott/3578/article.html.

[23] Steven Sahiouni, “From Al Qaeda Terrorist to CIA ‘Freedom Fighter:’ One Man’s Journey from Europe to Libya,” *Mint Press News,* June 14, 2017, http://www.mintpressnews.com/al-qaeda-terrorist-cia-freedom-fighter-one-mans-journey-europe-libya/228842/.

[24] “Ten Things about Gaddafi they don’t Want you to Know,” *Global Research*, July 15, 2017, https://www.globalresearch.ca/libya-ten-things-about-gaddafi-they-dont-want-you-to-know/5414289.

[25] “Hillary Clinton on Gaddafi: We Came, we saw, he Died,” Hillary Clinton interview, YouTube, 0:11, posted on October 20, 2011, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Fgcd1ghag5Y.

[26] Erin Banco, “Drug and Human Trafficking in ‘Lawless’ Libya is Funding ISIS,” *International Business Times*, July 16, 2015, http://www.ibtimes.com/drug-human-trafficking-lawless-libya-funding-isis-2010322.

[27] “Italian Prosecutor: Evidence NGOs Colluding with Human Traffickers,” *Tesfa News*, April 23, 2017, https://www.tesfanews.net/italian-prosecuter-ngo-colluding-human-traffickers/.

[28] William F. Engdahl, “’Undesirable NGOs’ Fund ISIS-Linked Refugee Boats to EU,” *Williamengdahl.com*, April 5, 2017, http://www.williamengdahl.com/englishNEO5Apr2017.php.

[29] Jennifer Smith, “Top Investment Fund Manager for George Soros who was Featured in Liar's Poker ‘Ran Human Trafficking Enterprise in which he Raped, Electrocuted and Imprisoned Women in NYC Sex Dungeon,’ Lawsuit Claims,” *Daily Mail*, November 3, 2017, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5046477/Top-investment-fund-manager-raped-beat-women.html.

[30] Jennifer Smith, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5046477/Top-investment-fund-manager-raped-beat-women.html.

[31] “Leaked Audio John Podesta Torturing a Child Part 3: The Original Examined,” YouTube video, 10:50, posted on February 16, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=69Uq-ZtHc7o.

[32] Jennifer Smith, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5046477/Top-investment-fund-manager-raped-beat-women.html.

[33] Jennifer Smith, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5046477/Top-investment-fund-manager-raped-beat-women.html.

[34] Marlow Stern, “Harvey Weinstein is Finished. Which Accused Hollywood Predator will be next?” *The Daily Beast*, October 9, 2017, https://www.thedailybeast.com/harvey-weinstein-is-finished-which-accused-hollywood-predator-will-be-next.

[35] Ira Madison III, “How Kevin Spacey’s ‘Coming out’ Grossly Conflates Pedophilia and Homosexuality,” *The Daily Beast*, October 30, 2017, https://www.thedailybeast.com/how-kevin-spaceys-coming-out-grossly-conflates-pedophilia-and-homosexuality.

[36] Richard Wheatstone, “Spacey Scandal: What are the Kevin Spacey Allegations and who has Accused him so far? From Anthony Rapp to Claims of London Attacks,” *The Sun*, November 5, 2017, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/4806252/kevin-spacey-sexual-assault-allegations-anthony-rapp-london-attacks/.

[37] Rachel Blevins, “After He Flew with Bill Clinton on ‘Lolita Express’ Kevin Spacey Started Group to Groom Child Stars,” *Free Thought Project*, October 31, 2017, http://thefreethoughtproject.com/kevin-spacey-foundation-targeted-children-film-industry/.

[38] Elena Fiddian-Qasmiyeh, “Syrian Refugees in Turkey, Jordan and Lebanon Face an Uncertain Future,” *The Conversation*, January 3, 2017, http://theconversation.com/syrian-refugees-in-turkey-jordan-and-lebanon-face-an-uncertain-2017-70747.

[39] Charlotte Edmond, “The Number of Displaced People in the World just Hit a Record High,” *World Economic Forum*, June 20, 2017, https://www.weforum.org/agenda/2017/06/there-are-now-more-refugees-than-the-entire-population-of-the-uk/.

[40] “The Cover is Blown off the Ongoing Worldwide C.I.A. Black Pedo-Operation,” *State of the Nation*, 2012, http://stateofthenation2012.com/?p=60679.

[41] Martin Jay, “Child Slavery, Prostitution and ‘Survival Sex’ Rages among Syrian Refugees in Lebanon due to no Jobs for Adults Policy and UN Denial,” *Daily Mail*, June 12, 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3637872/Child-slavery-prostitution-survival-sex-rages-Syrian-refugees-Lebanon-no-jobs-adults-policy-denial.html.

[42] Uzay Bulut, “Turkey: The Business of Refugee Smuggling, Sex Trafficking,” *gatestoneinstitute.org*, April 3, 2016, https://www.gatestoneinstitute.org/7756/turkey-refugees-sex-trafficking.

[43] David Barnett, “Women who are Captured by ISIS and Kept as Slaves Endure more than just Sexual Violence,” *Independent*, November 29, 2016, http://www.independent.co.uk/news/world/middle-east/isis-sex-slaves-lamiya-aji-bashar-nadia-murad-sinjar-yazidi-genocide-sexual-violence-rape-sakharov-a7445151.html.

[44] Emily Cadei, “Refugees: ‘Jihadi Pipeline,’” *ozy.com*, March 20, 2015, http://www.ozy.com/fast-forward/refugees-jihadi-pipeline/40017.

[45] Sharon Buchbinder, “Sex, Lies and Crime: Human Trafficking in the Middle East,” *The Islamic Monthly*, Aril 27, 2015, https://www.theislamicmonthly.com/sex-lies-and-crime-human-trafficking-in-the-middle-east/.

[46] “In Brief Southeast Asia,” *Global Study on Sexual Exploitation of Children in Travel and Tourism*, Southeast Asia - ECPAT International.

[47] Wayne Madsen, “Association of Southeast Asian Nations PedoGate-America’s Most Insidious Scandal,” *Wayne Madsen Report*, October 22, 2007, http://www.the5thestate.asia/2011/09/asean-pedogate.html.

[48] Wayne Madsen, http://www.the5thestate.asia/2011/09/asean-pedogate.html.

[49] Wayne Madsen, http://www.the5thestate.asia/2011/09/asean-pedogate.html.

[50] Wayne Madsen, http://www.the5thestate.asia/2011/09/asean-pedogate.html.

[51] Wayne Madsen, “Another Confirmation about Pedophile US Diplomats in SE Asia,” *Wayne Madsen Report*, September 1, 2009, http://arthurzbygniew.blogspot.co.id/2009/09/thailand-pedophilia-us-diplomats.html

[52] Wayne Madsen, http://www.the5thestate.asia/2011/09/asean-pedogate.html.

[53] Ed Barnes, “John Mark Karr Re-Emerges to Form a JonBenet Cult,” *Fox News*, May 24, 2010, http://www.foxnews.com/us/2010/05/24/john-mark-karr-emerges-form-jonbenet-cult.html.

[54] Wayne Madsen, http://www.the5thestate.asia/2011/09/asean-pedogate.html.

[55] Wayne Madsen, http://arthurzbygniew.blogspot.co.id/2009/09/thailand-pedophilia-us-diplomats.html.

[56] Wayne Madsen, http://www.the5thestate.asia/2011/09/asean-pedogate.html.

[57] Wayne Madsen, http://www.the5thestate.asia/2011/09/asean-pedogate.html.

[58] S.A. Miller, “Hillary’s Sorry State of Affairs,” *New York Post*, June 11, 2013, http://nypost.com/2013/06/11/hillarys-sorry-state-of-affairs/.

[59] Joachim Hagopian, “Breaking Sex Scandal from Weiner’s Laptop may be the Smoking Gun that will bring down the Clintons for Good,” *sott.net*, November 4, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/333069-Breaking-sex-scandal-from-Weiners-laptop-may-be-the-smoking-gun-that-will-bring-down-the-Clintons-for-good.

[60] “Bombshell: Hillary Clinton ‘Pedophile Sex Tape’ about to be Released,” YouTube video, *philosophers-stone.co.uk*,

[61] Sorcha Faal, “Deep State” Bloodbath Moves to Saudi Arabia as Trump-NSA Forces Continue Rampage,” *WhatDoesItMean.com*, November 5, 2017, http://www.whatdoesitmean.com/index2426.htm.

[62] Tyler Durden, “In Shocking Purge, Saudi King Arrests Billionaire Prince Bin Talal, Dozens of others in Cabinet Crackdown,” *Zero Hedge*, November 5, 2017, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2017-11-04/shocking-purge-saudi-king-arrests-billionaire-prince-bin-talal-others-anti-money-lau.

[63] “Confirmed: Tony Podesta is in US Marshal’s Custody,” *defenseusa.club*, November 6, 2017, http://defenseusa.club/2017/11/06/confirmed-tony-podesta-us-marshals-custody/.

[64] Wayne Madsen, http://www.the5thestate.asia/2011/09/asean-pedogate.html.

[65] Wayne Madsen, “Special Report: Federal Government Wastes Money on Do-Nothing Programs to Combat Child Sex Slavery,” *Wayne Madsen Report*, November 14-16, 2008, https://deeppoliticsforum.com/forums/archive/index.php/t-9481.html.

[66] Cheryl K. Chumley, “Judicial Watch Sues for George Soros funding Records,” *The Washington Times*, June 1, 2017, http://www.washingtontimes.com/news/2017/jun/1/judicial-watch-sues-george-soros-funding-records/.

[67] Wayne Madsen, https://deeppoliticsforum.com/forums/archive/index.php/t-9481.html.

[68] Wayne Madsen, https://deeppoliticsforum.com/forums/archive/index.php/t-9481.html.

[69] Audrey Gillan, “Charity’s Haven for Famine Children Destroyed by Paedophile Scourge,” *The Guardian*, July 22, 1999, https://www.theguardian.com/uk/1999/jul/22/ethiopia.

[70] Samean Yun, “Cambodia: Russian Pedophile Pardoned on Government’s Request,” *Eurasia Review*, December 26, 2011, http://www.eurasiareview.com/26122011-cambodia-russian-pedophile-pardoned-on-government-request/.

[71] Ben Woods, “Trofimov to Stand Trial in Russia for Child Sex Crimes,” *The Cambodia Daily*, November 7, 2013, https://www.cambodiadaily.com/archives/trofimov-to-stand-trial-in-russia-for-child-sex-crimes-46706/.

[72] Ben Woods, “Pedophile Molodyakov Guilty in Russia,” *The Cambodia Daily*, August 4, 2015, https://www.cambodiadaily.com/archives/notorious-pedophile-molodyakov-guilty-in-russia-90577/.

[73] Adrian Levy and Cathy Scott-Clark, “Country for Sale,” *The Guardian*, April 26, 2008, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2008/apr/26/cambodia.

[74] Wayne Madsen, “Cambodian Police Chief Linked to Human Trafficking Dies in Helicopter Crash ,” *Wayne Madsen Report* , November 11, 2008, https://deeppoliticsforum.com/forums/archive/index.php/t-9481.html.

[75] “13 Shocking Facts about special Prosecutor Robert Mueller,” *Washington’s Blog*, November 1, 2017, http://www.washingtonsblog.com/2017/11/10-shocking-facts-special-prosecutor-robert-mueller.html.

[76] Wayne Madsen, https://deeppoliticsforum.com/forums/archive/index.php/t-9481.html

[77] Wayne Madsen, “Special Report: The US Security Umbrella for Child trafficking in Southeast Asia,” *Wayne Madsen Report*, February 15-17, 2008,

http://arthurzbygniew.blogspot.co.id/2009/09/thailand-pedophilia-us-diplomats.html.

[78] Yoichi Shimatsu, “Was Aaron Swartz Killed by an MIT Satanic Child Porn Ring?” *rense.com*, January 15, 2012, http://rense.com/general95/swartz.html.

[79] Yoichi Shimatsu, http://rense.com/general95/swartz.html.

[80] Yoichi Shimatsu, http://rense.com/general95/swartz.html.

[81] Wayne Madsen, http://arthurzbygniew.blogspot.co.id/2009/09/thailand-pedophilia-us-diplomats.html.

[82] Joachim Hagopian, “Authoritarian Control and Mass Murder in America the Hegelian Way, *Lew Rockwell*, June 16, 2016, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2016/06/joachim-hagopian/power-elite-run-us/.

[83] Ben Norton, “Bill Clinton Continues to Defend 1994 Crime Bill that Fueled Racist Mass Incarceration,” *Salon*, May 14, 2016, https://www.salon.com/2016/05/13/bill_clinton_continues_to_defend_1994_crime_bill_that_fueled_racist_mass_incarceration/.

[84] Wayne Madsen, https://deeppoliticsforum.com/forums/archive/index.php/t-9481.html.

[85] Wayne Madsen, https://deeppoliticsforum.com/forums/archive/index.php/t-9481.html.

[86] Wayne Madsen, https://deeppoliticsforum.com/forums/archive/index.php/t-9481.html.

[87] Wayne Madsen, https://deeppoliticsforum.com/forums/archive/index.php/t-9481.html.

[88] Alex Constantine, “Pastor Eastlack Joins the CIA and the Return of the Cheney Clique,” *Constantine Report*, http://www.constantinereport.com/pastor-eastlack-joins-the-cia-the-return-of-the-cheney-clique/.

[89] Matthew Butler, “Jonestown Massacre: The 9/11 of the War on alternative Spirituality,” *The Conscious Reporter*, December 14, 2014, http://consciousreporter.com/conspiracy-against-consciousness/jonestown-massacre-911-war-alternative-spirituality/.

[90] Franklin Lamb, “Thirty-Five Years after the Sabra-Shatila Massacre where’s ‘The Resistance’? *Counterpunch*, September 15, 2017, https://www.counterpunch.org/2017/09/15/thirty-five-years-after-the-sabra-shatila-massacre-wheres-the-resistance/.

[91] Wayne Madsen, https://deeppoliticsforum.com/forums/archive/index.php/t-9481.html.

[92] Joachim Hagopian interview transcript, "'Jeremy Corbyn is taking a Courageous Stand against Netanyahu and Apartheid Israel,'" *Muslim Press*, October 31, 2017, http://www.muslimpress.com/Section-interview-60/108525-jeremy-corbyn-is-taking-courageous-stand-against-netanyahu-and-apartheid-Israel.

[93] Wayne Madsen, https://deeppoliticsforum.com/forums/archive/index.php/t-9481.html.

[94] Russ Baker, "Bush Angle to Reagan Shooting still Unresolved as Hinkley Walks," *whowhatwhy.org*, August 16, 2016, https://whowhatwhy.org/2016/08/16/bush-angle-reagan-shooting-still-unresolved-hinckley-walks/.

[95] Wayne Madsen, "EU: A Powerhouse Pedophile Hierarchy," *InfoWars*, June 30, 2016, https://www.infowars.com/the-eu-a-powerhouse-pedophile-hierarchy/.

[96] William F. Jasper, "Who's in Putin's Pocket – Clinton or Trump?" *The New American*, August 3, 2016, https://www.thenewamerican.com/usnews/politics/item/23786-who-s-in-putin-s-pocket-clinton-or-trump.

[97] Joy Overbeck, "Hillary Clinton, International Arms Dealer," *Townhall*, September 24, 2016, https://townhall.com/columnists/joyoverbeck/2016/09/24/hillary-clinton-international-arms-dealer-n2222907.

[98] "UN Blacklists Saudi-Led Military Coalition for Killing Yemini Children," *Tasmin News Agency*, October 6, 2017, https://www.tasnimnews.com/en/news/2017/10/06/1538113/un-blacklists-saudi-led-military-coalition-for-killing-yemeni-children.

[99] Richard Knox, "5 Years after Haiti's Earthquake, where did the $13.5 Billion go?" *NPR*, January 12, 2015, http://www.npr.org/sections/goatsandsoda/2015/01/12/376138864/5-years-after-haiti-s-earthquake-why-aren-t-things-better.

[100] Ekaterina Blinova, "'Lock her up': Untold Story of Hillary Clinton's Disgrace in Haiti," *Sputnik News*, November 23, 2016, https://sputniknews.com/politics/201611231047766459-clinton-haiti-earthquake-disgrace/.

[101] William Craddock, "The Clinton-Silsby Trafficking Scandal and how the Media Attempted to Ignore/Cover it up," *Zero Hedge*, January 25, 2017, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2017-01-25/clinton-silsby-trafficking-scandal-and-how-media-attempted-ignorecover-it.

[102] Yoichi Shimatsu, "The Clinton Imbroglio in Haiti-Balkan Black Magic – Pizzagate 10," *rense.com*, January 20, 2017,

http://www.rense.com/general96/pizza10.htm.

[103] Lin Taylor, “Many Haiti Orphanages Run by Child Traffickers, says JK Rowling’s Charity,” *Reuters*, September 27, 2016, http://www.reuters.com/article/us-haiti-orphans-jkrowling/many-haiti-orphanages-run-by-child-traffickers-says-j-k-rowlings-charity-idUSKCN11X1QO.

[104] Lin Taylor, http://www.reuters.com/article/us-haiti-orphans-jkrowling/many-haiti-orphanages-run-by-child-traffickers-says-j-k-rowlings-charity-idUSKCN11X1QO.

[105] Istwa Nou Ayisyen, “Stop Sexual Abuse in Haiti,” *istwanouayisyen.com* (a blog site), https://istwanouayisyen.com/.

[106] David McFadden, Haiti Officials Look into new Allegations of US Man,” *AP/Daily Mail*, November 1, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/wires/ap/article-3298092/Haiti-officials-look-new-allegations-against-US-man.html.

[107] David McFadden, “Haitian Officials Close Orphanage whose Founder Sued Maine Activist over Molestation Charges,” *Associated Press*, November 5, 2015, http://www.pressherald.com/2015/11/05/haitian-officials-close-orphanage-whose-founder-sued-maine-activist-for-molestation-claims/.

[108] Jay Price, “Missionary in Haiti, Arrested on Abuse Charges, Stirs Strong Emotions in Triangle, and Beyond,” *The News and Observer*, September 20, 2014, http://www.newsobserver.com/news/local/counties/wake-county/article10065956.html.

[109] Paul Kendrick, “Haiti Pedophile: One more Testimony of Michael Geilenfeld’s Victims,” *dossiergeilenfeld.blogspot.com* (a blog site), June 14, 2011, http://dossiergeilenfeld.blogspot.co.id/2011/06/haiti-pedophil-one-more-testimony-of.html.

[110] David Sharp, “Man who Accused Orphanage Founder Seeks Lawsuit Dismissal,” *US News and World Report*, October 20, 2017, https://www.usnews.com/news/best-states/maine/articles/2017-10-20/man-who-accused-orphanage-founder-seeks-lawsuit-dismissal.

[111] Louise Ridley, “Rio Child Sex Trafficking ‘Epidemic’ could Rocket during the 2016 Olympics – here’s why,” *Huffington Post*, August 13, 2016, http://www.huffingtonpost.co.uk/entry/rio-olympics-2016-child-sex-trafficking_uk_57a9a7efe4b089961b85468b.

[112] “American Accused of Sex Trafficking in Amazon,” *AP/CBS News*, July 11, 2011, https://www.cbsnews.com/news/american-accused-of-sex-trafficking-in-amazon/.

[113] “Amazon Peacock Bass” documentary video with Rick Schair, 1:00, https://www.amazon.com/Amazon-Peacock-Bass-Rick-Schair/dp/B000M2NIY6.

[114] Sandy Frost, “Brazilian Fishing Trip Depositions: ‘Masons’ Pictured having Sex with Teen Prostitutes,” *sandyfrost.newsvine.com*, May 25, 2008, https://digitizedrevolution.wordpress.com/2008/05/26/sandy-frost-brazilian-fishing-trip-depositions-masons-pictured-having-sex-with-teen-prostitutes/.

[115] “Leaders in Litigation Recipient – Part 8 – Larry Mackey: The Tireless Advocate,” *wkw.com*, 2015, https://www.wkw.com/for-attorneys/leaders-in-litigation/larry-mackey/.

[116] Roger Charles, “Exclusive: Oklahoma City Bombing Breakthrough, Part 1 of 2,” *whowhatwhy.org*, April 22, 2015, https://whowhatwhy.org/2015/04/22/exclusive-oklahoma-city-bombing-breakthrough-part-1-of-2/.

[117] Sue Arrigo, http://www.conspiracyplanet.com/channel.cfm?channelid=137&contentid=4451&page=2.

[118] Sue Arrigo, http://www.conspiracyplanet.com/channel.cfm?channelid=137&contentid=4451&page=2.

[119] Sue Arrigo, http://www.conspiracyplanet.com/channel.cfm?channelid=137&contentid=4451&page=2.

[120] Sue Arrigo, http://www.conspiracyplanet.com/channel.cfm?channelid=137&contentid=4451&page=2.

[121] Sue Arrigo, http://www.conspiracyplanet.com/channel.cfm?channelid=137&contentid=4451&page=2.

[122] Vaclav Klaus interview transcript, “EU Elites Aim to Destroy European Society as we Know it,” *Valdai Club*, January 23, 2017, http://valdaiclub.com/a/highlights/klaus-eu-elites-aim-to-destroy-europe/.

[123] Joachim Hagopian, “America’s ‘War on Drugs’ has Triggered a ‘Humanitarian Crisis’ in Central American Children Converging at the US Border,” *Global Research*, July 8, 2014, https://www.globalresearch.ca/americas-war-on-drugs-has-triggered-a-humanitarian-crisis-in-central-american-children-converging-at-the-us-border/5390491.

[124] “Child Trafficking Statistics: US and International,” http://arkofhopeforchildren.org/child-trafficking/child-trafficking-statistics.

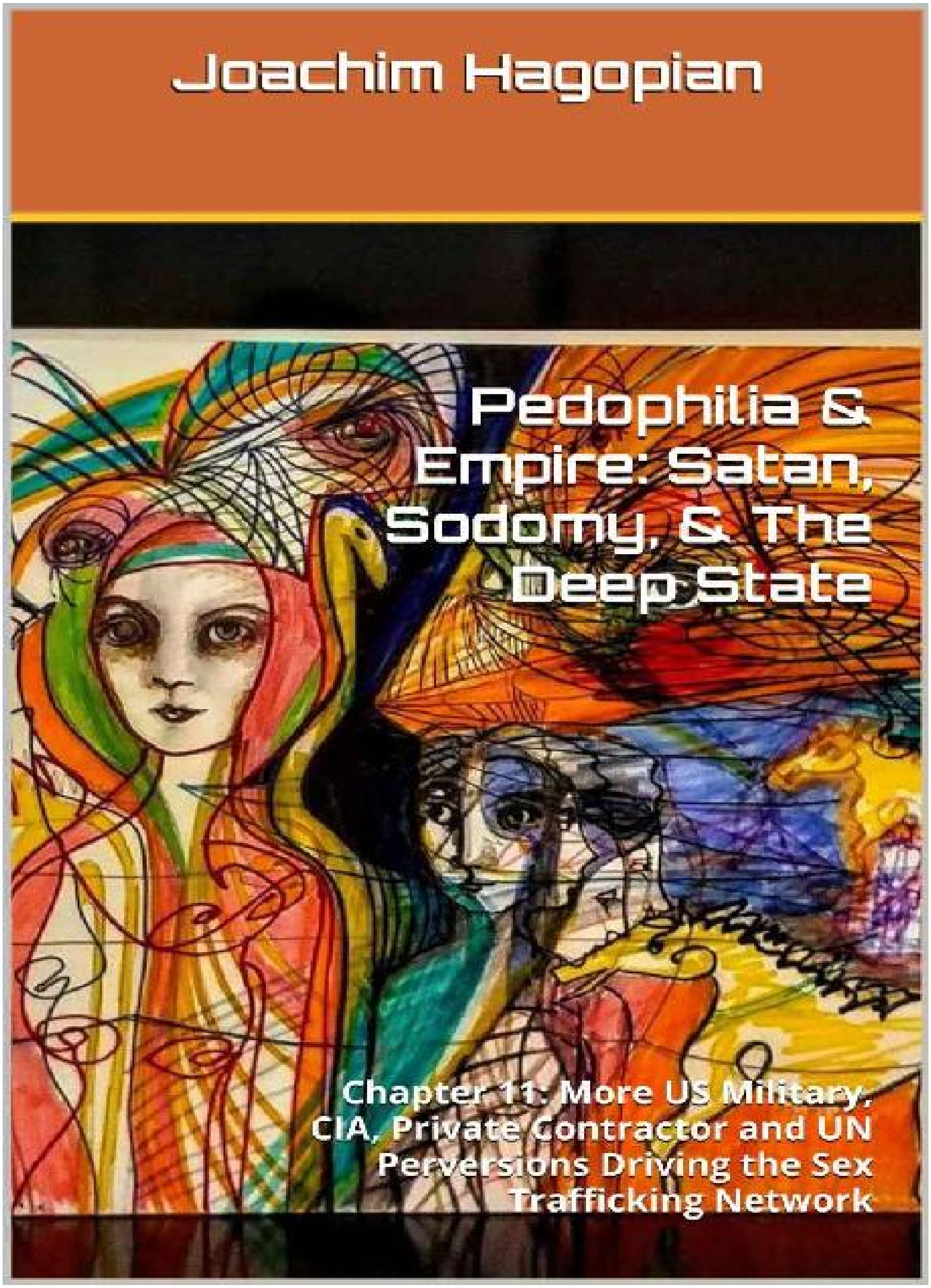

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 11: More US Military, CIA, Private Contractor and UN Perversions Driving the Sex Trafficking Network

Chapter 11: More US Military, CIA, Private Contractor and UN Perversions Driving the Sex Trafficking Network

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission

http://www.noramaccoby.com/

One Brave Marine Colonel’s Wife’s Disturbing Observations Confirm the Luciferian Network

Seemingly without end, pedophilia in the US military constantly keeps resurfacing. In addition to exposing the CIA and US State Department embassies across the Far East for their blatant abuse of Asian children servicing visiting American VIP pedophiles and hosting US diplomatic perverts, former naval intelligence officer Wayne Madsen also uncovered a vast network of his fellow naval officers in the 1980’s running a stateside child pornography ring, extending from San Francisco and Oregon to Chicago and DC that Secretary of Navy John Lehman covered up.[1] This naval pedo-operation occurred on George HW Bush’s watch as VP and president, in addition to the infamous Franklin scandal (to be covered in Chapter 13) that trafficked in children from Nebraska’s world famous Catholic Boys Town orphanage for “midnight tours at the White House.”[2]

Not to be outdone, when it came Junior’s turn at prez, George W. had his own version of White House “midnight tours” in gay prostitute and multiple internet porn site operator Jeff Gannon whose real name is James D. Guckert. While posing as a fake White House reporter from 2003 till he got busted in 2005, Gannon clocked in over 200 White House appearances, at least 14 sleepovers and 32 visits on days when no press conference was even scheduled.[3]

Among Gannon’s numerous gay sites and personas (aside from Bush lover), “Bulldog” was invented to cater to homosexual US Marines.[4] Bush’s intimate link to Gannon and convicted lobbyist Jack Abramoff as procuring pimps in an AIPAC sponsored child trafficking and prostitution blackmail ring carried out at DC’s finest hotels - Watergate, Ritz Carlton and the Sheraton[5] provided more than enough evidence to confirm that Washington’s child sex trafficking remained active throughout the entire four decade long Bush-Clinton crime family dynasty right up to today’s Pizzagate-turned-Pedogate scandal. In December 2006 Bush fired eight US attorneys to ward of his own pedo scandal from going public. As a backdrop to all this sordid criminal activity and cover-up comes the disturbing testimony of a wife married to a US Marine Corps colonel who confessed to her his and his nation’s countless dark, down and dirty sins that fortunately for us his patriotic, God-fearing wife could not keep secret.

Kay Griggs, former spouse of retired Colonel George Raymond Griggs, exposed the plethora of perversions and multiple illegalities of US military intelligence operations around the globe through her ex-husband’s criminal exploits as part of the elite’s assassination squad.[6] Colonel Griggs disclosed to her his intimate ties to Henry Kissinger, both Bush senior and junior, Caspar Weinberger, William Colby, Paul Wolfowitz, Dick Cheney and Donald Rumsfeld, as well as dozens of America’s top military brass. In 1998 Kay Griggs described in detailed interviews totaling near 8 hours in length the dark inner world of US Empire’s dirty politics, including the illicit gun running, international drug smuggling, illegal money laundering, systemic pedophilia and rampant homosexuality that goes on regularly at the highest reaches of the US government.[7] Much of Kay Griggs’ bombshell disclosures are verified by either history or subsequent confirmed research, dovetailing consistently with how the Illuminati secret societies operate at the highest echelons of power in government geopolitics, military, banking, education and the corporate world.

Kay’s personal story as a member of an upstanding prominent Virginia family in the Virginia Beach-Norfolk area has deep connections to the US military, military intelligence, her Protestant Christian roots and her local community. Griggs’ first 20-year marriage was to John Garland Pollack III, grandson of a former Virginia governor. Her son from that marriage wed into the wealthy Blum family, a known member of the Pilgrims Society that runs regularly with the Rockefellers.[8] This is the “high society” that combined with her second marriage, Kay continued peripherally circulating and rubbing elbows with all her life, though she would never identify herself as an elite per se, more a traditional-minded, old fashioned patriotic gal who loves Jesus Christ, her family and country above all else in this world… all three longtime targeted enemies of the Illuminati gang[9] her Marine Corps husband was so closely associated with and took direct orders from.

The Pilgrims Society, an American-British elitist organization in which the US branch was founded in 1902, is considered the Eastern Establishment closely related to the most prominent banking families whose members are always educated at the top Ivy League institutions Harvard, Yale and Princeton.[10] Throughout its existence the Pilgrims Society has financed a number of fascist regimes, including such reigns of terror as Spain’s Franco, Italy’s Mussolini, Germany’s Hitler, Soviet Russia’s Stalin and Red China’s Mao, as well as the Japanese Imperial Empire. Under the misnomer of the free enterprise system, its anti-competition, globalized monopoly is anything but free, and true ideology more akin to British Fabianism, Cecil Rhodes and Marxism. A largely unknown globalist New World Order secret society, the Pilgrims possess deep state ties branching out from London, Washington and Brussels.

Notable past and present US members include the likes of David Rockefeller, Henry Kissinger, Zbigniew Brzezinski, current CFR president Richard Haas, Generals Alexander Haig and David Petraeus, former Reagan and Bush Defense and State Secretaries Caspar Weinberger and George Schultz, Vietnam War architect Robert McNamara, Clinton’s former CIA director James Woolsey, and former Federal Reserve chairman Paul Volcker. As an old wealth bastion of Anglo-American Empire Establishment, the Pilgrims Society operating on both sides of the Atlantic is especially steeped in deep state intelligence and shadow government neo-conservatism. For well over a century concentrated wealth, global power and control are synonymous with the Anglo-American Pilgrims Society.[11]

In her interviews Kay states that her husband Colonel Griggs, a practicing daily alcoholic, used his wife as his confessional during the first three years of their 11 year rocky marriage starting in the late 1980’s. While under the influence, he openly would regularly admit to all his past sins in the name of dutiful service to his country as a military intelligence officer deployed in covert operations around the globe working for the ruling elite.[12] George Griggs’ early military career had him honing his assassination skills in the deadly CIA Phoenix Program during the Vietnam War,[13] the same one that Lt. Michael Aquino cut his teeth (or fangs) on.[14] A few years later Griggs participated in Operation Gladio, the US-NATO joint terrorist operations conducted in Western Europe, Turkey and Lebanon.[15]

Kay learned how the inside world of elite cronyism politics and perverse secret society networks brutally rule this planet through US-NATO Empire’s foreign policy trademarks

- neocolonialism, war and terrorism.[16] She names three consecutive top US Marine Corps generals who served as Joint Chiefs of Staff members from 1987-1999 who were also leaders of her ex-husband's covert homosexual-bisexual brotherhood – Generals Alfred Gray, Carl Mundy and Charles Krulak.[17] Kay Griggs also reveals by name a handful of other mostly bisexual generals and government dignitaries who regularly participated in orgies, pedophilia and homosexuality around the world. Kay even outed Illuminati chairman Henry Kissinger for forcing anal sex on young American soldiers in Cambodia during the Vietnam War, then threatened to have his victims killed if they told.[18]

Kay Griggs spoke of the very same rites of passage for initiates amongst both the Marine Corps officer ranks earning full bird colonel status as well as the Cap and Gown secret society at her husband's Princeton University alma mater, Yale's counterpart to Skull and Bones.[19] The initiation ceremonies of all three secret societies are purposely designed to humiliate and degrade fresh newly selected inductees each year, forcing them to take turns from inside an open casket performing acts of fellatio and be on the receiving end of anal sex as part of their sworn to secrecy ritual in return for fast track Faustian keys to the kingdom that catapult their careers as Empire movers and shakers.[20] Those refusing to undergo this Luciferian designed for blackmail control program don't receive the same favor up the ladder to success, in the same way that one must be a compromised if not a pedophile killer to end up as a top tier puppet to the planetary controllers. The common theme in all these occult, dancing-with-the-devil inductions, be it members joining the elite military brotherhood or Eastern Establishment or 33 degree Freemasonry as future presidents and puppet heavyweights, all are sworn to secrecy (or death) for the same perverse, blackmail-able acts and reasons to ensure lifelong control, loyalty and elitist cohesion.

The military brotherhood ceremony starts off with downing oceans of booze to loosen up initiates for what comes next. Alcohol as an inhibitor-breaker and the intense pressures of obedience within the US military hierarchical chain of command effectively induce submission and acquiescence, breaking down whatever personal moral or repugnant resistance to anal sex and homosexuality one may initially pre-possess.[21] It's both an act of intimate male bonding as well as experiencing the humiliation as initiates assuming the weaker position to anally accept raw male power and control literally and brutally thrust upon and in them by their "superiors." It likens back to Nazi Germany with many gay officers in the SS. Like Aquino, sometimes the ceremonial leader even wears a Nazi uniform.[22] When all is said and done, inductees become both controllable and controlling automatons, part of a secret brutal government killing machine. Kay states her belief that these grown men's emotional development is stuck in adolescence, never quite maturing to adulthood.[23] Though there is probable truth to her supposition, the power and control differential lies at the root of this ritualized male intimacy and closeted, humiliating degradation.

Also keep in mind that many of these initiates have undergone similar ritualized mind control experience occurring at various earlier stages in their life, often beginning in childhood as Illuminati's "chosen" preppie super soldiers, traversing upwards through the ticket-punching process to the top of the Illuminati food chain.[24] But instead of pledging loyalty and allegiance to God, country and Constitution, which all who serve in government and military must do, even if merely going through the motions, very early on they are engrained and conditioned to strictest loyalty first and foremost to their secret

Luciferian, all male, elitist membership[25] promising lifetime power, money, speedy promotion and lifelong protection and impunity from all accountability.[26] The idea is they are so special that their secret membership guarantees them living above the law throughout their lifetime. As a side note, while Yale's Skull and Bones Society broke tradition a quarter century ago accepting females into its inner circle,[27] elitist schools like Harvard as well as the US military "brotherhood" remain holdout bastions of male bonding.

For the sake of compliance in all their state-ordered bloody transgressions committed throughout their high powered careers, all under "national security" protection, elitist members are assured their sins will always remain secret and go unpunished, a primary perk that's an absolute necessity for their inner club sanctum's very survival. It begs the question how many of America's top leaders are completely controlled by blackmail through secret acts of pedophilia and homosexuality?[28] Be it volitional or chemically induced through deception, alcohol or drugs, insiders maintain that to reach the top, every single leader must submit to this Luciferian rite of passage.

This process, minus the sexual perversion component, to a striking degree parallels the rigorous four-year military leadership training program offered at the three US service academies - West Point, Annapolis and the Air Force Academy. As a West Point graduate from the Class of 1973, I was a onetime roommate[29] of two current CFR members[30] who were both Army rising stars, Generals John Abizaid,[31] the longest running commander of both the Iraq and Afghanistan Wars in charge of CENTCOM from 2003-2007, and Karl Eikenberry,[32] Ambassador to Afghanistan (2009-2011) immediately following his stint as Afghanistan War commander (2005-2007). In the West Point class directly behind me were three more luminaries, General David Petraeus,[33] [34] also a regular Bilderberger attendee and onetime CIA director (2011-12) until his fall from grace in November 2012 resulting from his exposed extramarital affair with his young biographer and fellow academy grad from 1996 Paula Broadwell.[35] Also hailing from the Class of 1974 is recent retired Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff (2011-2015) General Martin Dempsey,[36] and architect of today's Orwellian surveillance system,[37] US history's longest tenured NSA Director General Keith Alexander (2005-2014).[38]

Having been educated and trained in leadership at the same military institution of higher learning as all these Empire warlords, as firsthand witness I can attest to the piss poor quality leadership that's emerged from West Point for over half a century, bemoaning an abysmal track record of losing all of America's nonstop wars.[39] But that's not due to just poor leadership but also by the globalist design to always maintain a manufactured enemy for the benefit of the military industrial complex.[40] With the agenda of global destabilization the priority, perpetual unwinnable wars remain good business for both profit and global control.[41]

West Point as the Brass Factory on the Hudson takes the supposed "best and brightest," and "cream of the crop" (oft heard expressions) from America's high schools and prep schools (and to a limited extent, from the world), systematically strips them of their previous identity through a dehumanizing mind control disciplinary hazing system, then begins incrementally rewarding them based on demonstrated compliance and rule enforcement.[42] In effect, this system is predicated on building egos back up shaped and controlled by a rigid authoritarian hierarchy that merely churns out the "best" followers as Machiavellian robots who for X number of years are evaluated and promoted simply based on how well they do what they're told as order followers.[43] This mechanical, corrupted, by-the-step seniority system both rewards mindless mediocrity and generates psychopathy producing only the best followers - not leaders, strategically and ambitiously navigating up the ladder playing the amoral game of cutthroat politics, ass kissing ingratiation and paper-pushing bureaucracy. Because the rules of today’s monolithic power matrix are identical throughout every corrupt institutional domain, leadership across the boards - not just the military but in government, finance, business, law, law enforcement and education, by design produces only psychopaths. To gain entrance to this exclusive club at the top, you must be a fellow psychopath.[44] This morally bankrupted Luciferian system wouldn’t have it any other way.

Ultimately those who have minds of their own, who may still retain some semblance of inner conscience, integrity, creativity, a natural humane capacity for dynamic quality leadership, either by choice leave the academy during their first two years or their first chance five years out upon completing their post-grad commitment.[45] In recent decades after receiving their half million dollar free ride on tax paid scholarship, the officer retention rates or return on federal investment amongst “the best and brightest” is abysmally low because of horrendous attrition rates,[46] by default, leaving only inferior leaders as “superiors.” Hence, this psychopathic game of seniority spawning today’s admirals and generals is generally devoid of either conscience or morality. With universal principle of “like attracts like,” psychopaths at the top will only allow fellow psychopaths to join their private elitist club. The story of Kay Griggs’ ex who spent almost forty years following orders as a well-paid, highly protected, mind controlled assassin exemplifies these soulless sub-humans atop America’s power pyramid. Only Col. George Griggs as a used and abused assassin must have had at least a tinge of guilty conscience, since he was compelled to drown himself in liquor every day and compulsively use his wife as his confessional.

George Raymond Griggs came from a family of modest means, likely an MK Ultra victim at pubescence separated from his two parents who moved from New Jersey to California, placing young George under the care of his uncle, a military intelligence officer. Griggs would not see his parents for another eight years. In the meantime, he was enrolled in Hun School, a wealthy private prep academy located in Princeton, New Jersey. It was there that Griggs met his lifelong mentor Charles Caddock, the assistant headmaster who George would retain close correspondence with until Charles' death in 1985. Charles Caddock was a homosexual who became the bodyguard and mentor to three royal House of Saud princes, Mohammed bin Faisal (1937-2017), Saud bin Faisal (1940-2015) and Turki bin Faisal (1945-) on loan for US education from Saudi Arabia during the 1950's.[47]

It was at Hun School that George, along with the royals, may have been first introduced to pedophilia by their pederast mentoring headmaster Caddock, all reputedly playing male bonding games running naked in the woods together. Interestingly, based on Kay Griggs relayed account from her husband, two of America's premier scientists of the 1950's were invited to the local Princeton parties.[48] Albert Einstein apparently took time off from calculating his relativity and quantum physics theories to show up and blow off steam sexually victimizing young Hun schoolboys. And J. Robert Oppenheimer, the father of the atomic bomb, was known to frequent the Princeton Cap and Gown sex parties.[49] Kay Griggs' husband also confessed to later running naked through the redwood forest as a Marine Corps officer at Bohemian Grove,[50] engaging in homosexual pedophilia "games" where known child sacrifice takes place as part of a decadent, elitist, Satan worshipping tradition.[51]

Among Charles’ high powered fellow gay friends was a student advisor/programmer Alexander Robinson who also had a US Marine military intelligence background and acted as liaison to the Saudi royal family.[52] Wealthy, oil-rich families from Saudi Arabia have held a longtime tradition engaging in pedophilia, linked directly to the massive global child sex trafficking rings operating today that transport enslaved young children captives from Europe, North America and Asia to the Middle East for pedophile sheiks and princes to use up and throw away.[53] Though questionable whether the Hun experience was the first time that either George or his schoolmate princes were sexually molested by homosexual predators, what seems certain is that Griggs was an MK Ultra mind control victim sexually abused by his programming handlers Caddock and Robinson.

Kay Griggs points out the parallels between alleged Kennedy “assassin” Lee Harvey Oswald and her husband, adding how they even look alike. Like Oswald while still young, George Griggs had been targeted for mind control training to become a government super soldier assassin.[54] Even Presidents Clinton (Masonic sponsored Order of DeMolay in youth,[55] Rhodes scholar, CFR, Bilderberg, Trilateral Commission),[56] Bush Jr. (Skull and Bones)[57] and Obama[58](CIA bred[59] Bilderberg attendee[60]) as young lads were very likely mind controlled and groomed to assume top puppet power positions as adults.[61] The colonel’s wife believes that those who control the government are grooming emotionally weak boys with strong attachments to their mothers and weak or absent fathers as future power pyramid occupants, carefully profiled individuals who will most easily be brainwashed and controlled.[62] This system that spawns puppet leadership funnels an inordinate number of Ivy Leaguers through its mind control factory, methodically shaped and molded for top government posts.

George Griggs entered Princeton University on full scholarship in 1955 where he was a school cheerleader, soon enough invited into Princeton's secret Cap and Gown society. Among his fellow Princeton grads also selected to join the Cap and Gown society and attending the same sex parties as Kay's husband were:

Murdered CIA director (1973-1976) William Colby,[63] [64] Knight of Malta CIA deputy director (1978-1981) and Secretary of Defense (1987-1989) under Reagan-Bush as well as Carlyle Group chairman (1992-2003) Frank Carlucci.[65] [66] [67] It was insiders Carlucci and George H.W. Bush, former CIA director (1976-77), VP (1981-1989), first "out of the closet" NWO president (1989-1993)[68] and member of virtually every major Illuminati society,[69] who were both meeting with their partner the Saudi bin Laden family on the very morning of 9/11 at DC's Ritz Carlton Hotel.[70] Another active Cap and Gown-er on that fateful day was Bush Junior's fellow co-conspirator and Secretary of Defense Donald Rumsfeld, a '54 grad who Col. Griggs especially admired.[71]

An earlier infamous Princeton alumnus and US traitor was co-founding CFR member Allen Dulles, also a Knight of Malta and Freemason, US history's first and longest running CIA director (1953-1961) and prime suspect in the JFK assassination after being fired two years earlier.[72] [73] Two more recent CFR-Pilgrims Society-Bohemian Grove attendees"[74] currently still peddling the carbon tax based on the bogus "manmade" CO2 climate change hoax are Reagan and Bush senior's Secretaries of State (1982-1989) George Schultz[75] and (1989-1992) James Baker.[76] Back in the day they're also said to have partied down at Col. Griggs' Cap and Gown pedophile gigs. Schultz was considered a "close friend,"[77] and also a Bechtel president[78] and career company man predatorily neck deep in CIA, chemical weapons, and Saudi oil with his fellow

Princeton princes. The Ivies, CIA/military intelligence and Illuminati as a common thread stay constant.

Whether collegiate George knew it yet or not, as an ROTC student on scholarship majoring in the French language, he was being systematically programmed for a career in military intelligence, graduating from the prestigious elite institution in 1959 when he accepted a second lieutenant commission in the US Marine Corps.[79] Under the umbrage of his ROTC training as a French major, 19-year old Griggs was sent off to Rome in 1956 to attend NATO Defense College. Decades later, Col. Griggs would be in charge of NATO PSYOPS in the Mediterranean. Marine Intelligence officer Griggs was a carefully groomed, highly skilled assassin in US Special “black ops” Operations, in wartime first in 1966-67 as a captain deployed in Vietnam’s Phoenix [assassination] Program and later sent to kill repeatedly on every corner of the globe. When his wife questioned him about murdering others for a living, like every brainwashed henchman Griggs insisted it was not murder, not when simply obeying an order from superiors to kill the designated enemy and not when it was professionally executed with complete emotional detachment.[80]

Years later in the early 1980’s as Chief of Staff of the US Task Force in Lebanon, Col. Griggs allegedly assassinated a British double agent spy who happened to be American University in Beirut’s President Malcolm Kerr, because Kerr allegedly objected to US undercover operations taking over and residing in Kerr’s university dormitories.[81] Kay went on to explain that throughout Griggs’ tour of duty in Lebanon, he was cheating on his first wife involved in an affair with an American CIA double agent married to an Arab man who fatefully became Kerr’s successor as university president. Col. Griggs was also part of the covert Bekaa Valley operation in Lebanon, alleged to be privy to pre-knowledge of the US Marine barracks explosion that killed 241 US soldiers in 1983.[82] Other corroborative evidence supports the contention as Mossad apparently knew of the preeminent attack but chose to let it happen in order to enflame US-Arab relations.[83]

Kay Griggs also explained in 1998 that the US was currently waging covert military operations in the Balkan War in Bosnia to train assassins, illegally sell weapons, move drugs and launder money.[84] Covered later in this chapter is the criminal collaboration between the Clintons, NATO, the UN, US military, DynCorp[85] and the mob conjointly trafficking in children and women from other countries into sexual bondage as well as setting up the burgeoning black market trade for organ harvesting and trafficking. Brutally cutting out organs from live, often involuntary war zone donors is the heinous dirty business of prime culprits Israel and the US.[86]

Another key aspect of Col. Griggs' specialty was profiling and training young boy assassins that involves pedophilia, blackmail, and promises of US citizenship in 5 years along with steady "super soldier" employment. The US Special Ops possess training sites around the globe preparing teams of boy assassins undergoing mind control brainwashing as Empire's robot killers.[87] Innocent young foreign nationals primarily from poor Third World countries are typically profiled, recruited and "groomed" to psychologically "turn" targeted boys into coldblooded killers. Robert Kennedy's alleged assassin - the Syrian born Sirhan Sirhan, is believed to have been a programmed Manchurian candidate, set up to take the rap in 1968 for neutralizing RFK as yet another deep state threat,[88] like his older brother, Martin Luther King Jr. and Malcolm X before him. All have been proven to be inside jobs committed by the same Illuminati forces complete with their FBI/CIA handlers and targeted stooges. Little has changed in the power base that runs this world since.

Lake Pontchartrain in Louisiana where expatriated Cubans involved in the Bay of Pigs operation and JFK assassination were trained[89] is a major covert training camp in the US for manufacturing these boy assassins. But US Empire possesses these type training camps worldwide in places like the Philippines, Indonesia, Colombia and Panama. During the 1970's the infamous Cheney-Bush neocon Paul Wolfowitz is said to have worked with Griggs training young assassins in the Indonesian jungle. And Kay Griggs met several of these young boys from places like India, Romania, Dominican Republic and Haiti who were pedophile rape victims under mind controlled contract to the US government for contract killing, in exchange for dutifully sending money to impoverished mothers back home.[90] These boy assassins also fit the same formulaic dynamic - possessing a strong maternal bond minus a paternal influence that's then paternally fed the surrogate, mind control brainwash as "special and gifted" members of an elite force whose work is deemed critically important for national security interests that will always remain shielded and above the law. She loops her husband in with these vulnerable foreign child victims along with the likes of Lee Harvey Oswald, Timothy McVeigh and Jeffrey Dahmer who she maintains were all preyed upon by this perverse government assassin program. In Kay's words:

> *[The military profiles for] strong mother, weak father, no father, poor. Because these guys are looking for security, so they will stay in the military and do anything for that security*.[91]

Another key point that Kay repeatedly emphasizes throughout her interviews is that so much of the government's international movement of drugs, weapons and money laundering (though not stated, organ and child sex trafficking as well) involves a joint partnership between US black ops and the mob. Typically upstanding Yale and

Harvard grads become crooked owners of the largest US ports that with mafia ties control the cargo gateways as an integral part of the international crime syndicate.[92] Recall how Dr. Sue Arrigo similarly described the US ports' illicit trafficking operations.

Kay Griggs cites longtime shapers of US foreign policy brothers Eugene and Walter Rostow, and Eugene's son Nicholas in charge of the Boston Port Authority as pivotal in bringing in drug shipments.[93] Kay implicated Walter Roscow and former Massachusetts Governor Bill Weld (1991-97) in "drug business" in Mexico for years while Weld was once a Bill Clinton nominee for ambassador to Mexico. Having served in virtually every presidential administration since Eisenhower, the Rostows provided the reputable Eastern Establishment cover for trafficking in drugs to the US and outgoing arms to Middle Eastern countries and beyond. Since Walter and Eugene were both aggressively strong Vietnam War proponents and considered international trade experts,[94] and since the CIA and US military both played such a key role during the war in the drug trade from Southeast Asia, Griggs' assertions seem plausible. While acting as Bush senior's chief legal advisor on his National Security Council, Nicholas Rostow gained a reputation for ultra-guarded secrecy, withholding documents from Congress and the public pertaining to Bush's clandestine Iran Contra scandal and illegal arms sales to both Iran and Iraq.[95]

Much of the cabal's global crime network not only involves organized crime, but its assassination tactics, its blood sworn secrecy oaths (or face blackmail or death), and the pure parasitic psychopathy that doesn't flinch an eye committing wholesale slaughter of countless human beings comprise one big happy crime family empire run by the likes of the Bushes and Clintons. After all, Luciferians actually get off on the blood and guts they cause to be spilled worldwide.

And so it should come as no surprise that virtually all our world government leaders (politicians, top cabinet and ministry posts, high court judges), and the higher-ups in the military, the CIA/FBI, Mossad and MI6 all work hand in hand with the drug cartels and mobsters to conduct their day-to-day criminal operations throughout the globe. It's one big, elaborately run, filthy cesspool operation controlling virtually everything on this planet, perpetrated by a miniscule handful of soulless, Lucifer worshipping aficionados who place themselves as gods entitled to live above all human laws as elite members of the same private secret pedophile club. In case you haven't figured it out, which by this point no doubt you have, that fact is the singular running theme throughout this entire book.

But since Pizzagate broke late last year, their cover has now been busted wide open and their high crimes can no longer be kept secret. President Trump and Attorney General Jeff Sessions have both repeatedly vowed to lock up pedophiles. Within several weeks after GOP House Whip Steve Scalise, the third most powerful Republican in Congress, also stated in a public announcement that he's coming after the pedophiles, he likely took a bullet for it last June.[96] All three now appear to be targeted for assassination as deep state threats. This explains the 2-year desperate DNC and media obsession[97] over the false Trump-Russian meme[98] as their transparent "wag the dog" distraction[99] away from their Achilles heel – their age old pedophilia empire. Sabotaging a potential Trump-Putin alliance and any further exposure of the Clinton-Wasserman-Awan criminal operation[100] are also motives for the DNC "Russians did it" mantra. Meanwhile, another avoidance at-all-cost is uncovering the murderer(s) behind Seth Rich's untimely death[101] that could implicate John Podesta who's on record wanting "to make an example" of whistleblowers leaking DNC documents to *WikiLeaks*[102] that started the Pizzagate ball rolling. But clearly exposure of the crime cabal’s full culpability and cover-up of pedophilia as the scandal of the millennium is deep state’s worst nightmare come true. And right now the walls of lies are rumbling, crumbling and tumbling down on the pedo-perps like never before.

Back to the Griggs’ revelations, in the late 1980’s the divorcee Kay quickly became enamored with the handsome, intelligent Marine colonel she rented part of her Virginia home to, who happened to drive the same model Saab as she, also was fluently bilingual speaking the same French language, and appeared to lead an exciting life as a debonair world traveler in vitally important service to his nation.[103] Plus like George Griggs, Kay’s uncle was also a Princeton grad turned ROTC Military Intelligence Marine officer. With love for men in uniform as her family tradition, and convinced by her faith that it was the divine hand of God that had interceded in bringing them together, after only two months of knowing each other, the divorced pair Kay and George both impulsively opted to take the marital plunge together.

But once she became Mrs. Griggs, George’s alcoholism and loose lips plunged her into his dark sinister world of criminal debauchery and sexual psychopathy. Not only did she begin learning all the sordid details of his dirty business as a mind controlled government assassin, but as a bruised and battered wife and victim of her husband’s episodic domestic violence, Kay Griggs also suffered broken bones, repeatedly had guns pointed at her and her life threatened.[104] Her eventual 1999 divorce and medical records confirm the roller coaster ride of terror through her near dozen years trapped in marital hell.

As a wife of a career military officer who ran in very high circles with all the top generals and Washington VIP’s, and a woman who never took her marriage vows lightly, Kay embarked on playing the dutiful, loyal Marine colonel's wife. While becoming the repository of shocking secret information that reveals the inner workings of a ruthless, criminal and diabolical US Empire, Kay had also fallen for the common marital illusion that despite her husband's highly visible warts and flaws, she desperately believed her love could change and heal him, curing his violently deranged torment by bringing him to Christ, and away from the Satanic Illuminati clique that controlled him.[105]

A critical turning point in their marriage occurred while dining with her husband one night at the Camp Lejeune, North Carolina officers club. Kay became the unwitting witness to a bunch of topless dancers as the club's hired entertainment (at taxpayer expense) for the mostly married male patrons.[106] After observing one of the girls escorting two married officers out of the club, Kay Griggs boldly grabbed her camera from her purse and captured the scene for posterity in photos that accompanied a letter to the officers club manager and commanding post general's wife. Trying to destroy the evidence, her husband beat her up that night but her quick thinking had safely hidden the camera. Kay's courageous act to confront the local military establishment on its moral depravity proved successful in removing the topless dancers from the officers club. But amongst the generals within her husband's brotherhood, it also flagged Kay as a serious "troublemaker" and potential threat to their fiercely guarded status quo perversions and dark deadly secrets. Worst of all, it deemed her the enemy.

Not only did her husband step up his violent abuse after that incident, but over the next several years the weaponized military intelligence apparatchik began relentlessly targeting her for harassment. Frequently her car was tampered with, her home was broken into with items moved about, just enough to play mind games but not enough evidence to prove any actual crimes. Local police would always send a detective who was a 20 year ex-Marine out to Kay's home, only to condescendingly conclude that she was crazy in attempting to "falsely" report the military's subtle acts of intimidation and terror.[107] But her persistent fight for justice only led to death threats.[108] Then in December 1995 her husband vanished altogether, though as a military spy-assassin, it wasn't the first time.

With her life in grave jeopardy, for life insurance leverage, Kay wisely secured her husband's diary, full of detailed incriminating secrets revealing his longtime involvement in nefarious government crimes and sexual perversions. At one point frantically searching for her husband, she ended up notifying General Jim Joy that she had the full lowdown on both him and his sick brotherhood.[109] Under severe duress and overt attack now, she fled her home for Washington DC under the protection of senior White House correspondent, the legendary Sarah McClendon (1910-2003),[110] who for the next six months took her under her wings as an emergency house guest. According to Kay Griggs, the savvy, feisty veteran White House reporter since FDR ultimately saved Kay's life, advising her to go public in 1996 with her shocking story as the best means to stay alive. In 1998 this led to the two hour edited version "Sleeping with the Enemy" (though a later YouTube posting compiled near 11 hours of Griggs interviews with that same title[111]) and the near 8 hour unedited series of interviews[112]with Rev. Rick Strawcutter in Michigan.[113]

The following year Kay managed to divorce Col. Griggs.[114] But the divorce court was stacked heavily against her from the start, presided over by a civilian judge who was a former Army Judge Advocate General (JAG) lawyer. Kay explained that the US courts have been infiltrated by ex-military JAG's assigned military divorce cases to ensure that "dirty government secrets" remain concealed, especially in nasty divorce court proceedings with axe-to-grind wives against abusive husbands and the military. Kay explained that the government was bent on ruining her financially and psychologically, and revealed how anyone - either military personnel or their spouses, who dare publicly object to evildoing and pose a risk to disclose damaging secrets, are customarily done away with - committed to insane asylums or literally murdered. Kay is certain her Marine Corps hubby assassin bumped off his first wife.[115] We know from the past that even high powered whistleblowers who threaten to blow the lid off crime cabal government secrecy - like JFK or Defense Secretary James Forrestal,[116] are assassinated. In Forrestal's case after being involuntarily committed to Bethesda Naval Hospital mental ward, he was violently thrown out of his 16th floor hospital window in 1949. His only "crime" was insisting on sharing the UFO truth with the American public.

After the inside job of 9/11[117]perpetrated by these same Zionist criminals that her ex-husband lauded and worked for, assisted by Israeli and Saudi governments, it had become more than clear to Kay that if the same evil cabal is willing to cold-bloodedly murder thousands of fellow Americans, we are all in their crosshairs. So in 2005 Kay Griggs resurfaced, deciding to do an interview update with Jeff Rense,[118] naming more criminals in the Bush regime responsible for 9/11 that her ex-spouse intimately knew and was friends with. The courageous whistleblower wife, now in her mid-70's is living a quiet life in seclusion in the same Virginia home she shared with her Marine colonel husband, who as of 2005, was retired from the service, remarried and residing in New Hampshire.[119]

More recent requests attempting to interview Kay apparently have gone for naught.[120] Now in her golden years, she may be choosing to stay private, having already unloaded all she knows. In the past she learned firsthand that telling the truth automatically places one's life in danger. So at this point she may be done with taking on more risk. Perhaps she may have also been told that if she continued disclosing Empire crimes, she'd definitely meet with an untimely violent end. Fortunately for us, two decades ago she laid bare the naked ugly truth, bravely leaking an extremely vividly dark yet extraordinarily clear picture that's been subsequently confirmed over and over again by overwhelming corroborative evidence. Her warnings urgently compel us to take action against the planetary controllers. If not, the child raping and killing Illuminati bloodlines[121] and their legions of pedo puppets and hired guns are turning our earth into a living hell, centrally controlled by their one world government, one world religion (worshipping Lucifer) and their New World Order's absolute tyranny.

And Those Military Perversions Continue…

In keeping with this Satanic brotherhood of influential US military officers who more than dabbled on the dark side, and long before Col. George Griggs or for that matter young Satanist Lt. Michael Aquino entered the Army officer corps in 1968 to spread his Luciferian brand throughout the armed forces, there was Office of Naval Intelligence officer L. Ron Hubbard of Scientology infamy who, prior to founding his own bizarre cult in 1947, teamed up with NASA rocket scientist Jack Parsons as fellow disciples of Aleister Crowley's Ordo Templis Orientis (OTO).[122] They both reputedly signed on as firm believers in Satan's power, complete with using Crowley's prescription for drugs and black magick to evoke dark spirits in occult rituals to help do their bidding. And it was Crowley who openly advocated pedophilia as a means of channeling demonic forces to increase one's personal power and earthly strength.[123]

And if our military higher-ups and their lame now former commander-in-thief Barry Soetoro haven't been diddling children themselves, they possess a lengthy record of covering up pedophilia and condoning those who do. Case in point - in 2012 a Pentagon-issued 75-page Army manual was made mandatory reading and compliance for all American soldiers serving combat tours in Afghanistan while specifically blaming them for the violent attacks being committed on them by supposed friendly, US trained Afghan security forces for being “too insensitive” to their Islamic culture.[124] The manual prohibits US troops from bringing up certain taboo topics like pedophilia, much less criticizing or opposing it. Because the practice of Afghan adult males engaging in sex with little boys apparently has been a common cultural norm and custom there for centuries, US troops are supposed to look the other way in deference to “multiculturalism” tolerance and acceptance should they encounter pedophiles abusing children in Afghanistan… more blatantly blurred wrong vs right boundaries from apologetics rearing their ugly globalist head.

It should be noted that retired Marine General John Allen, Trump’s current Homeland Security chief, was the top US military commander in Afghanistan at the time and to his credit, refused to sign off on that pro-pedo Army manual, unlike Obama, his Secretary of Defense (Jesuit educated former CIA director) Leon Panetta[125] and my West Point Class of ’74 peer, then Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, Irish Catholic Malta boy Gen. Martin Dempsey.[126]

That 2012 Army manual was issued just after Marine Lance Corporal Gregory Buckley Jr. phoned home from Afghanistan for the final time before he was murdered by another green-on-blue attack,[127] the term used to describe the influx of Afghan security forces turning their weapons on the US troops training them. During that particular year 2012, 44 Americans in uniform lost their lives by that very method, accounting for 15% of 2012’s combat deaths among coalition forces in the Afghanistan War.[128] According to

Gregory Buckley Sr., shortly before his son’s death, the anguished corporal complained to his father, making direct reference to little boys being sodomized within earshot:

> *At night we can hear them screaming, but we’re not allowed to do anything about it.*[129]

Acclaimed professor and author Amitai Etzioni criticized both the George Bush and Barack Obama administrations for “continuing to ignore massive pedophilia in Afghanistan.”[130] He noted that in 2001 when the US illegally invaded the graveyard of empires, “pedophilia had been largely suppressed” by the then Taliban government. Yet under the 16 years of America’s imperialistic military occupation propping up Kabul’s ineptly corrupt US installed puppet government, pedophilia’s been allowed to flourish (just like the opium bumper crops[131]) for over a decade and a half now.

In an April 2010 *PBS Frontline* episode entitled “The Dancing Boys of Afghanistan,” Afghan journalist Najibullah Quraishi stated:

> *In an Afghanistan ravaged by war and poverty, an ancient tradition has been secretly revived: Young boys sold by their families to wealthy merchants and warlords, taught to dance and entertain, and used for sex.*[132]

Wealthy pedophiles in Afghanistan typically either abduct young homeless boys off the street or prey on the poorest families buying them from destitute parents. The underage boys are forced to dress up in women’s clothing, providing entertainment, copulation and social status for status competing molesters. If a child should resist, he is simply killed by his master. After covering last chapter’s despicable pedophilic practices of the US government in its mind control program and Washington’s long operating massive child sex trafficking network, a striking parallel exists between powerful elite pedophiles in Afghanistan and their pedophile counterparts in North America and Europe… birds of a feather.

Though the practice of “bachi bazi” (translated “boy play” being anything but play for the boy) has always remained unlawful on the Afghan books, since US removal of the Taliban government from power in late 2001, it has never been enforced because Washington is fully complicit in its pedophilia endorsement since so many of the child rapists are among America’s puppets serving as either US trained Afghan security force commanders and government officials in Empire’s constant lost cause of trying to keep territory from Taliban control. And with at least a third to near half in Washington practicing pedophiles themselves, of course it’s no surprise that US policy encourages sodomy of boys as young as 11 in Afghanistan when they’re busily committing the same egregious atrocities en masse against kids right here in America.

Etzioni wrote:

My review of numerous dispatches from Afghanistan found no sign that U.S. diplomats and generals are doing anything to get the Afghan government to protect these children.

In vain Etzioni urged psychopath Obama[133] to deliver the following ultimatum to the Kabul government:

We shall neither finance nor protect a regime that refuses to act against large-scale sexual abuse of children.[134]

Yet in the end the Obama regime only enforced its unethical, spineless non-intervention policy.

A couple years ago, Washington’s complicit support of Afghanistan’s pedophilia strictly prohibiting US soldiers from interceding came to a dramatic head when it was revealed that West Point graduate Green Beret Captain Dan Quinn and Sergeant 1st Class Charles Martland were punished for paying a visit to confront an Afghan police commander after he brutally sodomized a local young boy.[135] Additionally the boy's mother was beaten by that same Afghan pedophile after she initially reported to the Americans that her son had been abducted, chained to the pedo's bed and kept as his sex slave for two weeks. When Quinn explained how the US trained Afghan police commander must adhere to a higher standard of conduct and in response the child rapist kept laughing in their face, the two Americans shoved the pedophile to the ground, roughing him up, bruising his ego more than slight marks left on his wretched, sorry-ass body.

But nonetheless when the Afghan commander reported the incident to US authorities, the captain and sergeant were promptly picked up the next day and relieved of their duty. When an officer is relieved of his command, his career is essentially over. So Cpt. Quinn was in effect forced to leave the Army while the Special Forces sergeant had to fight to remain in the service. The civilian Quinn asserted a very poignant observation about US hypocrisy:

The reason we were there is because we heard the terrible things the Taliban were doing to people, how they were taking away human rights. But we were putting people into power who would do things that were worse than what the Taliban did - that was something village elders voiced to me. [136]

Had public outrage over news that the military's shameful response was to kick Sgt. Martland out of the Army not created such a public relations nightmare for Obama and his Pentagon, the bronze star decorated warrior with a conscience who'd honorably served his nation for 11 years would've been involuntarily discharged. But last year after spending the last half decade in total limbo since that incident, the Army finally was compelled to reverse its position.[137]

While US government and its mainstream media whores desperately continue covering-up the global pedophilia epidemic, pretending it doesn't exist, an internal memo within the Ottawa government obtained by the *Canadian Press* earlier this year paints a far more honest and sobering picture. An internal briefing note to Canada's public safety minister openly admits that the nation's law enforcement agencies are unable to keep up with the skyrocketing online child pornography industry of "epidemic proportions" (memo's words).[138] With insiders essentially alluding to their inability to protect vulnerable children north of our border, you can bet the situation in America is at least equally dire or likelier even more out of control.

Look at the Pentagon alone. Not only do they issue pro-pedo orders to its troops, but our supposed top military leaders acting as our nation's first-line defenders are pedophiles themselves, vast numbers busted consuming and downloading on their government issued computers "unbelievable amounts" of child pornography. As far back as over a half dozen years ago, a whopping 5,200 cases were initially uncovered and then to this day remain systematically covered up.

In addition to busting the Catholic Church pedo scandal wide open in 2002, the *Boston Globe* broke the Pentagon story in January 2011 determining that the Defense Department had failed to complete its internal investigation of 1,700 more cases out of the total of 5,200 initially submitted by the Immigrations and Customs Enforcement (ICE) agency way back in 2006.[139] The DoD Inspector General in early 2011 assured the *Globe* that its ongoing, "very thorough" investigation would leave no stone unturned regarding the 1,700 still uninvestigated "stonewalled" cases. We're talking hundreds if not thousands of Pentagon employees, all with above top secret clearances paying with our tax paid dollars during their work hours to gawk at their government issued computer screens graphically displaying children getting raped, additionally setting themselves up as easy blackmail targets while risking our national security. And what does the Inspector General do but sit on this shocking reality for over a half decade. For all the IG's "thorough work," when everything was said and done, all of two DoD employees, both private defense contractors at that, were prosecuted.[140] There's something horribly wrong with this picture.

So you may ask has the Pentagon porn problem finally been fixed? As recently as last year, the Pentagon's Defense Security Service Director Daniel Payne proclaimed, "The amount of porn I see [on government devices] is just unbelievable."[141] So with that disturbing confession **10 long years** after 5,200 cases of Pentagon porn were discovered, the Pentagon security director himself admits the amount he's still finding is "unbelievable." What does that tell us? It clearly confirms that Luciferian worshipping pedophiles in the seat of US military power are hardcore pedo addicts still getting their sick jollies off at the expense of thousands and thousands of ruined children's lives, and still getting away with their sordid, unaccountable, felonious crimes. This is but a symptom of the demonic perversions in Washington and indeed the criminal satanic cabal running this entire world.

And it's no different in Rome, Brussels, London or Hollywood either. The scandalous United Kingdom government long involved in pedophilia up to its Savile-loving, oversized royal ears, and "accidentally on purpose" lost over 100 enormous sized files on its "ongoing" child rape investigations.[142] All the major Western governments including the Vatican have been repeatedly proven guilty as sin sodomizing little kids on an epic scale and then proven equally guilty engaging in nonstop cover-up. The dark ugly truth is that the Luciferian elite controlling this planet is comprised of child rapist-murderers despite whatever feeble cover-up and denial attempts they continue to spin. But these diabolical gatekeepers will never fully stop exposure of their horrendous crimes against our children and humanity. The earth controllers' atrocities have now reached critical mass, the point of no return with too much gaping, overwhelming evidence oozing forth daily for the perpetrators to effectively sweep under public radar anymore. Their Achilles heel is now staring us in our face and it's past time we finally do something about it.

While more than a few noteworthy cases of mid-level officials entrusted with defense of our nation have been busted as criminal pedophiles, the power behind global child sex trafficking still remains untouchable. But as more low to mid-level arrests are made, especially once a Truth and Reconciliation Commission materializes, ferreting out those at the top in charge of the global operations is now within our grasp. In the meantime, last year the US State Department's Director of Counterterrorism, Daniel Rosen, was caught and convicted twice committing sex crimes, first for stalking and voyeurism targeting his female neighbors and then in 2015 for soliciting sex and sodomy from a Fairfax County police sting operation officer posing as a 14-year old girl.[143]

In another case America's top nuclear scientist, Dr. David O'Brien, responsible for monitoring global nuclear activity at Patrick Air Force Base's Technical Applications Center, was convicted of using his Air Force computer to download videos of children as young as 3 being sexually abused and tortured.[144] Watchdog investigator Lori Handrahan writing regularly for *Medium.com* compiled a slew of serious cases involving armed forces personnel convicted of pedophilia crimes that raise a threat to our children as well as both our national and international security.[145]

Though insider voices from within the matrix drop occasional truth bombs, America's MSM scarcely if ever covers them in its vain effort to keep America's "silent majority" forever silent, kept in the dark and the last to know. One such rare display of honesty arrived in a 2015 *BBC* interview when the assistant director of the FBI's Criminal Investigation Division, Joseph Campbell, openly admitted:

The level of pedophilia is unprecedented right now.[146]

Over two years ago, well before the Pizzagate/PedoGate scandal captured the internet world, a high level FBI insider was stating that America's problem of child pornography and child sexual exploitation was reaching an "almost epidemic level." At this point, only those still stuck in the dinosaur age watching their nightly fake stream television news remain oblivious to what's going on. The rest of us are awakening or already wide awake in the clear light of day recognizing that child raping Luciferians control our planet and that our greatest responsibility is to protect and bring overdue justice to our children – past, present and future. It's not an exaggeration to say that survival of both the human species and our earth hang precariously in the balance.

Another shameful black mark on the US military - as of 2015 there are more convicted pedophiles sitting in military prisons than rapists of adults as child sex offenders now constitute the largest inmate population.[147] When asked to comment on why so many child rapists are behind military bars than any other type criminal, the pat Defense Department answer is because the military judges and juries find pedophile crimes so intolerable they systematically enforce much longer sentences.[148] Yet the exact opposite is true, compared to civilian courts, far longer imprisonment time is imposed on civilian child molesters than soldiers who rape kids.

State and federal laws for sex crimes against children carry mandatory minimum sentences while the military courts walled off from public scrutiny grant pedophiles in uniform secret plea bargain deals often resulting in a far briefer prison sentence. Also, whereas convicted civilian sex offenders once out of prison are routinely monitored on state and federal registries publicly posting their home addresses, child rapists in the military have their privacy tightly guarded as if more important than public safety. The standard military response to Freedom of Information Act (FOIA) requests is to customarily deny information. The US Constitution permits any citizen free access to public courts and requests for legal files in order to maintain open accountability. But in stark contrast, the military court system is cloaked in guarded secrecy where even if FOIA information is granted, it takes months or even years to obtain.

In short, without any oversight, the military justice system appears to go out of its way to protect the rights of its pedophiles far more than their own child dependents in military families. A reminder that in the military daycare scandals at both West Point and the Presidio, not one perpetrator was ever prosecuted and served time for molesting and raping hundreds of children attending those facilities. The confirmed higher incidence amongst military veterans of compulsive sexual behaviors that include pedophilia,[149] combined with increasing rates of child abuse in military families observed since 2008, including a 14% spike in 2014 alone,[150] underscores the rising risk of children growing up in military families falling victim to increasing military pedophiles in its ranks.

Another case in point to illustrate how the military justice system favors pedophiles over the well-being and safety of military kids, especially if the pedophile's a full bird colonel. Meet Col. Daniel Hunter, the Camp Lejeune, North Carolina operations officer till last summer and highly decorated 36 year active duty Marine Corps officer, accused in July 2016 of sexually assaulting a six-year old daughter of one of his subordinates four times in a two week period.[151] A civilian or even a soldier of lower rank charged with such a serious offense would normally be locked up in prison while awaiting trial, but not Colonel Dan. Known to be a heavy drinker with his own wife admitting he's an alcoholic, the colonel was even accused of offering alcohol to his 6-year old victim, her twin sister and their 10-year old sister. After a four month investigation, in November last year Hunter was formally charged with sexual assault of a minor. But it wasn't until an adult female friend of the colonel and his wife reported in January this year that a drunken Hunter allegedly sexually assaulted her before the colonel was finally sent to the brig. The 10-day court martial trial in September found him guilty of sexually assaulting the six-year old girl, discharged him from the service and sentenced him to only five and a half years in prison. Obviously that's an extremely light punishment compared to the mandatory minimum of fifteen years if he were a civilian.

Yet another US Marine Corps lifer (24 years on active duty status) and not-so-dandy Dan was caught directing dozens of live online videos of children forced to engage in sex acts with each other. A couple years ago 44-year old Chief Warrant Officer Daniel E. DeSmit, father of three, spent $36,000 during a six year period viewing and producing vast amounts of internet child pornography for fellow pedophile consumption.[152] The Naval Criminal Investigative Services (NCIS) found DeSmit's emails describing his preference for prepubescent girls as "the best experience" and bragging of his vacation exploits in Thailand having sex with 8 and 9-year olds. Despite the military judge sentencing him to 144 years in prison for multiple counts, the child rapist will only do 20 behind bars thanks to a secret pretrial plea-bargained agreement that military law kept hidden from even the judge. With good behavior, DeSmit could wind up serving just a third of his sentence – about 7 years. In civilian court, the judge can override too lenient pretrial arrangements but not so in the military. On top of that, the US Air Force even with FOIA requests, does not release pretrial agreements. When *AP* requested the investigative report from NCIS, as is typical in military cases, it was turned down. Only after appeal was the report made available.

While in recent years the Pentagon’s been busy trying to put out fires raging with its sexual assault epidemic amongst our fighting men and women,[153] most of the adult-to-adult sex crimes are homosexual rape of men (though it’s not so much about sexual preference as vicious raw power and rageful, violent control).[154] The fact remains 14,000 out of the 26,000 reported sexual assaults within the military in 2012 involved male victims, which is pretty remarkable since male victims report rape even less frequently than the one in three women who do.[155] I’ve written extensively on this ugly topic exposing rape in the military, and no more is it out of control than at our nation’s prestigious, “cream of the crop” service academies like my alma mater West Point, though the Air Force Academy spawns more rapists (per student population) than any other institution of higher learning in the entire United States, more than Penn State and more than West Point and Annapolis combined.[156] That’s a very telling, very grim reality when so many of our leaders in charge of fighting our nation’s wars are actual rapists.

Speaking of West Point, it's recently come under a wave of harsh criticism for its apparent corruption and lowered moral standards, triggered by a controversial social media photo posted by an Army second lieutenant. The pic shows the defiant 2016 West Point graduate as a cadet holding his hat to the camera with the words inscribed "Communism will win" as a supposed gesture of support for the defiant NFL football kneelers over the national anthem protest.[157] In response, a West Point instructor's scathing letter to the WP superintendent then went viral enflaming even more controversy. Adding insult to injury, my alma mater has now just disgracefully rewarded war criminal and pedophile George W. Bush with the Sylvanus Thayer Award, "given to a citizen… whose outstanding character, accomplishments, and stature in the civilian community draw wholesome comparison to the qualities for which West Point strives."[158] Does that make you puke or what? But then when virtually every US president in the last half century have been accused of being pedophiles by a number of credible Monarch sex slave victims, the lack of moral standards in the US military and West Point should come as no shocker at all. Case closed - our government and military are run by Luciferians.

In recent years the Pentagon has had its hands full facing increasing pressures from Congress to fix its rape problem or else turn over its military justice system (aka the good old boys club) to civilian jurisdiction and authority, which would instantly inject a modicum of currently nonexistent transparency and no doubt produce more equitable and just outcomes. In 2013 the vice chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff blatantly lied in his Senate testimony causing the crucial vote to change the system to fail by only a few votes.[159] A bipartisan Senate majority is actually in favor of modifying existing reporting procedures but not quite enough for the needed 60 votes.[160] Currently victims must report crimes to their chain of command boss who then decides whether to prosecute or not, rather than to an independent body of qualified legal experts of military lawyers. For years now the top military brass has resisted change, scrambling feverishly to implement cosmetic changes in massive gender education and sensitivity training programs to project the illusion that its self-policing efforts have paid off and improved its despicable track record. But with the military sexual assault rates still remaining high and nearly the same, in recent years even less victims are now willing to come forth due to the largely condoned hostile recrimination. Just as the Pentagon unethically enforced its "look the other way" policy amidst rampant pedophilia in Afghanistan, its pedophilia epidemic now raging within its own ranks eclipsing the number of rapists of adults with even more child rapists appears to have caught both Congress and the Defense Department off guard, and once again looking the other way. This current situation is horrendously unacceptable.

Again, this pathetic reality cumulatively just adds more mounting evidence that the US military is an infested cesspool sanctuary not-so-secretly brimming with protected pedophiles. Just ask another infamously unpunished pedophile colonel - Luciferian high priest Michael Aquino.

As Church of Satan founder Anton LaVey's onetime "left-hand" man,[161] Michael A. Aquino proudly boasts that his open worship of Satan never once posed any problem or threat to the equal opportunity US Army.[162] In fact, hailing as the Army's own prince of darkness leading and recruiting fellow servicemen and women into his own Temple of Set coven,[163] as the go-to expert on satanic dark forces and occult religions, in 1992 the US Army requested Aquino to literally write the book on his brand of Satanism he calls Setism. That book is the official Department of Army Handbook for Chaplains, and listed under "other groups," Aquino authored the “Temple of Set” section,”[164] widely circulated to every Army chaplain and Army base on this planet for the sake of educating, fostering and promoting acceptance of all officially designated religions, extending respect, equal status and legal religious rights to those openly worshipping Set aka Satan as an alternative option. Of course in addition to Setism, also officially included are Satanism and Wicca whose founding principles are also largely rooted in rejection of monotheistic religion. Just like the Vatican, is it any wonder that our armed forces and Pentagon are also rife teeming with satanic pedophiles, lustfully jerking off to children being sodomized and ritualistically sacrificed in snuff film porn? Sorry folks, this is our sad, pathetic reality we must squarely face today if there’s ever going to be a child-safe tomorrow.

The fact is the FBI, CIA and military intelligence (in cahoots with Mossad, MI6 and other foreign intel agencies) are the Luciferian elite’s principal handlers – per their marching orders busily destroying America and Europe while orchestrating both state sponsored global terrorism[165] as well as state sponsored global child sex slave trafficking,[166] in addition to the other highly lucrative international trafficking of illegal weapons,[167] body parts[168] and drug smuggling operations.[169] War zones are always ripe, fertile ground for providing the predatory, bloodthirsty elite enormous moneymaking opportunity through these illegal demonic enterprises. Just behind counterfeit, pirated goods that include illicit arms ($923 billion-$1.13 trillion USD annually), drugs ($426-652 billion) and human trafficking ($152.1 billion of which at least $99 billion come from the sex trade) rank as the world’s most profitable, diabolical businesses.[170] As another shady partner-in-crime in these Luciferian cesspool operations, the underworld mafia always skims its cut off the top, but our corrupt governments, the CIA and world’s largest Rothschild owned money laundering banks are the primary cabal players illicitly divvying up the trillions of dollars made every single year. Yep, that trillions. After all, war means easy money and increasing power for soulless planetary controllers – both in profits made and bloodshed spilled.

Since the Vietnam War drug smuggling and stolen oil provide sufficient profit motive for nonstop US war. As an example, America is still fighting its longest running war in its history in Afghanistan where 90% of the world's heroin is now produced, 40 times the amount prior to US invasion.[171] That's why the US and British coalition forces are still deployed in that "cash cow" war zone in order to safeguard the poppy fields that annually generate an added $50 billion surplus bonus.[172] So what if they're causing an unprecedented epidemic of opioid deaths around the world?[173] All the better say the Luciferians in charge. In addition to the $59 billion already on the 2015 books allocated as the annual black ops budget paid for by US taxpayers,[174] by far the largest source of its unlimited spending revenue comes from the illicit global drug and slave trade markets financing such black ops programs[175] as DARPA research, top secret DUMBs, milabs (as sacrificed children killing zones), and the covered up trauma-torture mind control, aerosol geoengineering and secret space programs[176]… all using highly advanced, other worldly technologies as pure evil military WMD's threatening the survival of every life form on this planet.

Generating $100 billion worth in obscene annual profits is the wholesale trafficking of almost one million babies and children across international borders each and every year.[177] In this postmodern slavery age, sadly there are far more slaves now suffering in this world than any other time in human history, up to 46 million,[178] near four times the total number of African and their descendant slaves from 1525-1866.[179] And at the epicenter of all these most heinous criminal operations on earth is the owning, sodomizing and systematic slaughter of countless innocent children as Lucifer's favorite, crown jeweled Big Business.

Even the much maligned (deservedly in some cases, most not) President Trump gets it:

You go back 1,000 years, where you think of human trafficking, you go back 500 years, 200 years, 100 years, human trafficking, they say -- think of it, what they do - human trafficking is worse now, maybe, than it's ever been in the history of this world.[180]

And Trump's head of Homeland Security General Kelly got it back in 2014:

Tens of thousands of sex workers, in many cases adolescents, come into the United States every year through these [international criminal] networks to serve the sex industry.[181]

What they both know but aren't ready to publicly admit is that shadow government factions like the CIA and Kelly's own military are at the forefront of these international criminal operations.

Regarding the Vegas massacre, after all the multiple shooter eyewitness accounts at different hotels, always changing timeline discrepancies, mysterious witness deaths, all cell phones and IPads taken on the night of 10/1 wiped clean by FBI and massive pre-event MGM (parent company of Mandalay Bay Hotel) stock selloffs (not unlike 9/11) are among the way too many anomalies clearly pointing to yet another flagrantly staged false flag.[182] With unfolding developments ever since the "suicided" patsy Stephen Paddock allegedly did his damage, the shooter is now said to have been a CIA operative, after confirmation emerged that he was a licensed pilot and owner of two planes. In Florida he also was a Morton Thiokol employee from 1985-88 when the company responsible for the faulty O-ring on the shuttle booster rocket failed causing the infamous deadly 1986 Challenger disaster.[183] Afterwards Morton Thiokol shares flatlined and was subsumed by America's largest defense contractor Lockheed Martin. Years later Paddock went back and purchased a home in a gated community in nearby Melbourne, Florida in 2013 and sold it two years later. Paddock moved on to work as an accountant also at Raytheon and several other DoD black budgets.[184]

But the current internet buzz now in overdrive is fueled by evidence the so called "lone gunman" flew to Phoenix where he's speculated to have arranged a gun cache pickup that he transported in a credit card rental back to Nevada days prior to the shooting, earlier than reported.[185] Further conjecture over his Paradise Ranch business in nearby Henderson, Nevada being a front organization that flies children from the Philippines to "transitional homes" on the West Coast is leading an army of online sleuths to the overhasty conclusion that Stephen Paddock was a CIA/ATF gun running/drug smuggling/child trafficker.[186] According to many so called conspiracy theorists, the man who lavishly paid hookers to indulge his rape fantasies was deemed a loose cannon knowing too much about clandestine government operations… becoming the perfect Oswald patsy. As Paddock's only company on record started in 2004, Paradise Ranch is claimed to be "a joint venture with the Philippine Children's Fund of America," a charity headquartered in Sacramento, California. PCFA historically supplies disaster relief to needy children in the Philippines, originally opened in 1991 serving Amer-Filipino child victims left behind after the Mount Pinatubo volcano closed US Clark Air Force Base in Angeles City.[187]

Like so many districts adjoining US military bases, Clark had gained a seedy reputation for prostitution and child trafficking. However, Paddock's Paradise Ranch in Nevada may have zero connection with the Philippine Paradise Ranch that actually does partner with the PCFA. But news has now broken that Paddock's brother Bruce was arrested on child pornography charges in North Hollywood, California a few short weeks after the October 1st massacre,[188] the apparent culmination of an ongoing FBI investigation begun prior to the Vegas shooting. Bruce Paddock is said to be singing like a jailed songbird, disclosing that brother Stephen was running "a child trafficking empire,"[189] vindication for the conspiracy crowd. Bruce is seeking immunity for squealing like a pig in exchange for all he knows. This development comes weeks after the VOAT folks had already concluded that Paddock was a CIA child trafficker… especially since his life partner grew up in the Philippines. Internet dot connectors are going hog wild, though the alleged Paddock Paradise Ranch link to the Philippines may still be a bit premature and tenuous.

With 1.3 million United States armed forces occupying over 90% of the world's nations (177 in all),[190] US Military Intelligence, CIA, organized crime, State Department and Defense Department along with a relative small minority of US soldiers, UN troops and private military contractors all collectively run massive child sex slave trafficking operations in and around many of the near 1000 US military bases worldwide.[191] And they're most active in abducting, abusing and moving massive numbers of children across international borders where US troops are most concentrated in deployment. These entail the active war zone hotspots[192] like Syria, Afghanistan, Iraq, Libya, Yemen, Somalia, South Sudan and Ukraine, along with longtime traditional Euro-allies Germany, Italy, UK and Spain as well as South Korea[193] and Okinawa Japan. Other smaller yet sizeable US military contingents are dispersed in Poland, Kuwait, United Arab Emirates, Qatar, Jordan, Israel, Bahrain, Turkey, Saudi Arabia, Djibouti, Guam,[194] and the

Philippines, that is until its gutsy, politically savvy President Rodrigo Duterte recently had the nerve to order “Yankee go home!”

Apparently the Philippine leader had enough of the CIA supporting ISIS in his southern island of Mindanao aimed at a regime change and drumming up drug business in Duterte’s antidrug war.[195] After drawing closer ties to China and Russia, in November 2016 the Filipino maverick said he wants all remaining US troops numbering about 600 removed by November 2018.[196] With not many foreign leaders daring to stand up to the US Empire as the world bully-policeman-executioner, CIA assassination is always not far from Rodrigo’s mind.[197]

… With a Little Help from their NWO Friends - Private Civilian Defense Contractors and UN “Peacekeepers’” Perversions

An exponential number of unscrupulous private civilian contractors busily bilking billions in recent years from American taxpayers, replacing the now outsourced US military, thanks largely to Bilderberger Pilgrim himself General David Be-Tray-US-Petraeus,[198] have also repeatedly been caught red-handed trafficking and raping child slaves in their global orbit. One such notorious hired mercenary company is Blackwater aka Xe aka Academi,[199] owned and operated by Erik Prince who’s become an unofficial backdoor Trump foreign policy advisor[200] and brother to his holy roller rich sister who’s our Secretary of Education - Betsy DeVos - currently destroying the once constitutionally secularized public education system.[201] But rushing off to fight secret wars to illegally kill unarmed civilians in foreign countries isn’t Blackwater’s only crime, the infamous company has long been implicated in child sex trafficking as well.[202] Similar to allegations made by respected journalist Seymour

Hirsh,[203] a former Blackwater employee seeing for himself firsthand asserts that Erik Prince fashions himself:

A Christian crusader tasked with eliminating Muslims and the Islamic faith from the globe.

The former private contractor contends that Prince willfully dispatched likeminded zealots to the Iraq war zone to:

Take every available opportunity to murder Iraqis.

Recall back in 2007 that four Blackwater guards (deployed in Iraq to protect State Department personnel) cold-bloodedly massacred 14 Iraqis. Those four are currently doing serious time (30 years to life) for their crime.[204] But after two years in appeals court, in August 2017 a three judge panel recently overruled on a technicality their 2015 sentences, ordering a new trial for each of the murdering convicts.[205] As if killing unarmed civilians en masse wasn't enough, charges that Blackwater regularly engaged in gun smuggling and child trafficking and child prostitution were contained in two affidavits filed in 2009 by ex-employees who maintain anonymity due to their lives being threatened.[206] They claim that others prior to testifying in previous grand juries against Blackwater were murdered. Despite such serious and highly likely true allegations, the US government continued rewarding Blackwater with a new million dollar contract the following year.[207] But Washington paying only lip service to anti-trafficking laws is nothing new,[208] especially since it's been the very same Western government cabal that's been guilty of regularly committing child trafficking and systematic raping and murdering of innocent children all along.

Halliburton, Dick Cheney's former company renamed KBR (Kellogg, Brown and Root) shortly after he became vice president,[209] as if a name change would hide the fact that nobody noticed that once Illuminati Cheney[210] went from

CEO to this nation's VP suddenly Halliburton was riding high on multibillion dollar, no-bid gravy train contracts in all the US war zones - near $40 billion in Iraq alone[211] as well as Afghanistan and soon enough America too, converting old closed down US military posts into future FEMA concentration camps for US citizens.[212] But there exists one too obvious reason why all these shady global mercenary predators keep changing their names. It's no different from why Mujahedeen became al Qaeda that morphed into ISIL, ISIS, Islamic State and Daesh,[213] and Jabhat al-Nusra suddenly became Jabhat Fatah al-Sham,[214] to confuse and obscure the truth that they are all doing Lucifer's work, wanting to avoid constantly getting busted for their massive maiming and killing, raping and enslaving children and women, and wreaking destructive havoc everywhere on earth that they operate.[215] [216]

The old expression "you can change your name, but not your stripes" comes readily to mind. Again, it's a matter of perspective as to who the real terrorists are. The terrorists behind the terrorists are always American[217] – as much as the US military occupiers waging secret wars around the world in over 134 nations are,[218] or the drone attackers safely sitting in offices half a world away[219] or the American bombers always dropping their lethal payloads,[220] or the private US contractors who on foreign soil are also doing far more harm than good. The up to 30 million dead at the hands of US Empire just since WWII,[221] the even more wounded and millions more family victims of those dead and wounded, all too painfully know exactly who the real terrorist is, having slaughtered over a million times more humans than all the so called Islamic terrorist groups the US ever created combined, despite delivering more than enough incentive to becoming US hating terrorists. But then that's all part of the demonic globalist agenda, not only to keep the "war on terror" going indefinitely by recruiting a constant fresh supply of avengers seeking payback, but ultimately to spread as much instability, conflict, hatred and violence to every corner of the earth as satanically possible.[222]

Aside from the likes of Blackwater and Halliburton, there is one US private contractor that in particular stands out as the worst worldwide offender that we so far know about, bringing repeated terror to women and children in every distant land it’s been deployed - the pedophile-will-travel cavalcade known as DynCorp. And as tag team partner-in-crime, the Rockefeller globalist creation the United Nations has proven just as perversely guilty as the so called UN “peacekeeping” forces are anything but. Like Col. George Griggs and his ilk, men trained in arms to kill tend to be the biggest child rapists and global trafficking murderers on earth, especially in unstable war zones where the US Empire carries both a sick wartime culture and tradition of “anything goes.”

DynCorp International began in 1946 as an aviation company evolving and expanding over the decades into operations support and training, security and intelligence, international development, and maintenance of both aerial and land vehicles,[223] generating 96% of its $3 billion a year revenue from the US government.[224] In recent decades its infamous theatre of operations include such global hotspots as Afghanistan, Angola, Bolivia, Bosnia, Colombia, Haiti, Iraq, Kosovo, Kuwait and Somalia. Everywhere DynCorp goes, it seems its pedophile employees have played a hand in raping young children in operation of global sex slave trafficking rings.

After Bill Clinton’s NATO bombs obliterated parts of Bosnia, Serbia and Kosovo in the mid and late 1990’s in the globalist fracture and destroy method of “balkanizing” the former Yugoslavia (a favorite US Empire pastime as well as Greater Israel Project divide and conquer strategy, replicated subsequently in places like Libya, Iraq and Syria among others[225]), by 1999 DynCorp was fully entrenched in Bosnia, ostensibly to provide security and aircraft maintenance services. A DynCorp aircraft mechanic with a moral conscience named Ben Johnston reported that his co-workers were raping girls as young as 12 as victims of a child sex trafficking ring.[226] [227] A DynCorp supervisor even made a video of his raping two women. Johnston was soon fired for his whistleblowing but countered with a RICO racketeering lawsuit. In June 2000 an internal investigation was finally launched. When all was said and done, a handful of DynCorp child rapists were quietly fired and sent home but not one arrest or prosecution followed.

The reason is obvious. Should any of the guilty face prison time, for shorter sentences they would certainly make plea bargain arrangements that would implicate what they know of their higher-ups' involvement. And these global networks of pedophile trafficking rings are overseen and operated by some of the most powerful people on the planet – like the Rothschilds, Rockefellers, Clintons and Bushes. Thus, pedophiles even at the lowest levels, if connected to the elite and their governments, remain protected from punishment and the guilty invariably go free. But as some of the bigger players fall from the tree such as Hollywood's barbaric mogul Weinstein, more will be exposed and humanity will ultimately turn the corner. And that day is fast approaching.

After Nebraska police officer Kathryn Bolkovac went to work in Bosnia as a contracted UN International Police Force human rights monitor whose position was arranged by UN contractor DynCorp, she also independently brought this same depraved crime operation to her supervisors' attention and was unlawfully canned by DynCorp.[228] Kathryn had discovered that high ranking officers within DynCorp, the US military, the UN peacekeeping forces and the US State

Department were working hand in hand to forge documents and facilitate with Serbian mafia the illicit transport of sex trafficked young women and underage girls into Bosnia.[229] At great risk to her own safety, Kathryn Bolkovac also courageously filed a successful wrongful termination suit, and after co-writing a book,[230] her story was featured in the 2010 film "The Whistleblower" starring Rachel Weisz.[231] Directly related in this same region is the booming illegal operation of organ harvesting and trafficking. Predatory child and organ trafficking rings flourishing in all the global war zones translate automatically into Illuminati Big Business.

Kelly Patricia O'Meara delivers a powerful indictment against DynCorp and the UN in her incisive account for *Insight Magazine*:

Dyncorp forged documents, trafficked women, aided illegal cross-border transports and tipped off sex club owners about imminent raids. Bolkovac also described how UN police, NATO troops and humanitarian, NGO employees were "regular customers."] Bolkovac uncovered evidence "of girls being beaten and raped in bars by their pimps while peacekeepers stood and watched." Even one UN policeman who was meant to be investigating the sex trade: "paid £700 to a bar owner for an underage girl who he kept captive in his apartment to use in his own prostitution racket." Ultimately, the company fired the eight employees for their alleged involvement in sex trafficking and illegal arms deals. Madeleine Rees, the head of the UN Human Rights Commission office in Sarajevo, was: "… in no doubt that trafficking in women started with the arrival of the international peacekeepers in 1992.[232]

Again Dr. Sue Arrigo's revealing observations (detailed in the last chapter) of how the CIA and UN peacekeeping forces from the 1992 Bosnian get-go were in total collusion -

trafficking children out of the Balkans - provides strong corroborative testimony. In the face of President George W. Bush’s lip serviced “zero tolerance” policy against human trafficking issued in 2002, amidst the child sex abuse scandals in Bosnia and around the world by the likes of DynCorp, Halliburton and Blackwater, and the continued contracts brazenly granted to these most guilty offenders, finally in 2005 the Pentagon was pressured to develop a proposal prohibiting private defense contractors from engaging in sex trafficking.[233] But then the military industrial complex lobbyists promptly squashed it, in effect, giving the greenlight to resume business as usual continuing US government sponsored child sexual slavery trafficking rings.

Status quo means child rapists and traffickers working for DynCorp, the UN, the State Department and any USAID NGOs as foreign nationals all enjoy diplomatic immunity[234] and therefore a license to continue sodomizing and trafficking child and women sex slaves. Once exposed, the criminals at worst get sent home. Not one child rapist was ever jailed or prosecuted. These sad, telling facts only prove that powerful pedophiles are running the global child sex network with complete impunity.

That also explains why in 2005 when the heroic former Georgia Congresswoman Cynthia McKinney grilled then Defense Secretary Donald Rumsfeld on why the US continues to award multibillion dollar contracts to known pedophile companies like DynCorp, the flabbergasted war criminal Rummy hemmed and hawed unable to answer.[235] Despite all the horror stories surrounding DynCorp through the years, it remains among the top dozen defense contractors to this day, and as recently as last December, was awarded a new $94 million contract with the US Navy.[236] Cynthia McKinney also nailed Rumsfeld on his $2.3 trillion admission of unaccounted for taxpayer dollars on

9/11 eve[237] ($1 billion of which DynCorp lost training Iraqi police[238]; but the all-time unaccounted for waste total has now risen to a whopping $10 trillion[239]) whose records were conveniently lost the very next day when false flag insider WTC lease owner Larry Silverstein gave the order to "pull" Building 7 for a preloaded demolition.[240] That decision to pull led to a $4.6 billion insurance payout for "easy money" Larry[241] after his barely-on-fire, 47-story WTC 7 collapsed at free fall speed in an unbelievable 6.5 seconds,[242] a full 23 minutes **after** the *BBC* reporter had already jumped the gun on her scripted pre-announcement.[243] The Washington cabal's house of card crimes just keep free falling under the crushing weight of its own ceaseless lies.

Yet another shameful incident involving DynCorp occurred in June 2009 when the boss in charge of DynCorp training Afghan police recruits hired underage Afghanistan boys to engage in lap dances for drug-taking DynCorp employees at a company soiree.[244] As previously noted, in this pre-Islamic Afghan tradition bacha bazi serves underage boys 8-15 years old dressed in scantily clad girls' clothes wearing makeup to dance for older men who then take bids buying the boy for anal sex.[245] But in this case instead of the pedophiles being Afghan men protected by an age old custom, the pedophiles were once again more American mercenaries from DynCorp protected by Hillary, caught engaging in pedophilia only because *WikiLeaks* released a cable exchange between the Kabul interior minister and the State Department confirming the scandal and cover-up. Again, the sexual perversion was allegedly videotaped, and again, a few hands got slapped and ordered to go home without arrest.

In an intercepted email to Hillary from her chief of staff and go-to scandal fixer Cheryl Mills, she describes some of the action:

DynCorp employees putting dollar bills in the boy's waistband, just as a stripper would a stripper's garter.[246]

Secretary of State Clinton and Mills, who defended Bill against impeachment, actively downplayed to conceal the incident as they customarily do. Of course worthy of another reminder as fellow pedophiles the Clintons rescued convicted child kidnapper Laura Silsby in Haiti in 2010, arrested for attempting to traffic 33 Haitian children across the border.[247] Laura now works for the company that issues Amber Alerts for missing children. Again, all bread crumb trails lead to the same perps guarding the children's henhouse each and every time. That's how they've managed to get away with raping and trafficking kids for so long without a real consequence. But times are-a-changin'.

Take for instance, a notable recent DynCorp vice president from 2012-2015 - one James Grazioplene, a West Point grad from the class of 1972 (a year ahead of me) who later earned a couple stars as a general, was charged in April 2017 with six counts of repeatedly raping at least one minor in 1983 and 1989.[248]After retiring from the Army in 2005, he worked in the Pentagon as director of force development in the Joint Warfighting Capabilities Assessment. For this high-up Pentagon pedo to suddenly 30 years later get arrested, he had to have pissed off somebody even higher up on the power food chain since he's a retired general and because record shows everyone who rapes at DynCorp or in the US Army always gets a free pass, much less face prosecution for a three decade old crime.

DynCorp and the US Army just can't seem to keep their hands off children. In addition to harming the public health of the Colombian people with poison aerial spraying, 54 underage girls in one town near the post where both US military and DynCorp workers were stationed from 2003 to 2007 were gang raped by both private contractors and US soldiers.[249] Additionally, the sexual assaults were filmed and disgustedly sold as pornography. Though the Army claimed an investigation would take place, they lied as diplomatic immunity/impunity was once again the outcome with no arrests nor punishment ever handed down to the dozens of pedophiles.

Another horrific offender that goes around the world regularly raping children with impunity is the United Nations as an integral part of the global child trafficking system. In April 2017 *AP* reported that 134 UN "peacekeepers" from Sri Lanka were busted for operating a child sex trafficking ring between 2004 and 2007 in Haiti with the only consequence that they too were sent home otherwise unscathed and unconsequenced.[250] Between 2004 and 2016, over 150 allegations of sexual assault in that same Clinton raped nation were committed by UN troops from Bangladesh, Brazil, Jordan, Nigeria, Pakistan, Uruguay and Sri Lanka. Records show that UN soldiers imposed "transactional sex" on 225 Haitian women and children, meaning that for the needy to obtain food, medicine and clothing, they must submit to rape.[251] UN peace-destroyers from Pakistan even sodomized a young mentally handicapped boy for five years.

We've repeatedly seen how the Clintons, the State Department, the CIA, companies like DynCorp (also heavily present in Haiti and every war zone) and swarms of predatory NGO "charities" work together with corrupt local government officials and organized crime elements to run their global, well-greased, sodomizing machine. With so much buffered protection, these heinous crimes virtually always go unpunished and, just like hordes of pedophile priests, the monsters remain free to violate more defenseless victims elsewhere around the globe. For many decades the pattern has been a pervasive constant.

UN whistleblower Anders Kompass has uncovered horrific abuses by UN troops forcing victims into bestiality, raping children as young as nine and engaging in mass murder in the Central African Republic. In 1987 a large pedophile ring and child pornography photo studio in possession of over 1000 photos were discovered in the basement of the Belgian UNICEF headquarters in the pedophile paradise Brussels.[252] In that scandal the UNICEF Belgian office head Jozeph Verbeek and 13 other derelicts were arrested including a former British Justice Ministry official.

A 2005 UN internal report listed the following nations where UN abuse scandals were observed - Sierra Leone, Liberia, Bosnia, Cambodia, East Timor and the Democratic Republic of the Congo (DRC).[253] A cursory look at just one of these war zone hotspots reveals the same global dynamic in all of these ravaged nations. With decades of ongoing war in the embattled DRC, a multitude of notorious perpetrators, among them USAID and UNICEF tasked with reintegrating child victims while UN mission peacekeeping forces ostensibly support the Congolese army against neighboring invading Ugandan and Rwandan militias covertly led by CIA and DIA operatives.[254] But both sides are rampantly guilty of raping children and women as a weapon of war and equally guilty of child trafficking for both sex and child soldier labor. The root of these longstanding hostilities is over Congo’s mineral rich turf filled with blood diamonds and gold, copper, col-tan and cobalt, and powerful Western parasites greedily, violently stealing natural resources from another poor, thoroughly exploited Third World nation victimized by the elite’s artificially induced cover of divide and conquer conflict amongst a host of competing diabolical players and interests. But all of these brutal actors share one thing in common – by design they are all predatory foxes playing out their sinister roles as mere cogs incessantly caught raiding the Luciferian pedo-wheel henhouse.

In the dozen years since the 2005 UN report, there have been over 2,000 more documented cases of UN soldiers sexually abusing children and women.[255] In an Ivory Coast town a Save the Children poll determined that 8 out of 10 girl minors stated that they were regularly raped by UN troops.[256] Just like the US offenders in and out of uniform stationed abroad, neither the UN nor the rapists' nations of origin hold the violent criminals accountable due to diplomatic immunity. So there exists zero incentive for these horrendous sex crimes to abate much less cease. These heinous atrocities perpetrated by UN peacekeeping missions worldwide just keep going on and on without an end in sight. And it's all because a very corrupt globalist system continues to support, cover-up, protect and perpetrate rampant global pedophilia and sexual exploitation of women and children on a global scale.

In July 2016 the insidious infestation of the elite's multipronged globalized strategy to normalize raping children took another giant step closer to fruition. The United Nations "Human Rights Council" is first of all led by Saudi Arabia, the most egregious human rights offender on the planet,[257] still practicing the stoning of women[258] to death for adultery,[259] raping trafficked child sex slaves galore,[260] and honor killings for rape victims.[261] And women are put in prison for leaving their home unescorted by a male chaperone,[262] or running for their life out of a burning building without their "headscarves and abayas."[263] Saudi women are just now for the first time being allowed to drive a car.[264] But last year led by Saudi Arabia the UN Human Rights Council voted 23-18 (with 6 nations abstaining) in favor of appointing a UN czar[265] to globally enforce the normalization of homosexuality, transgenderism and pedophilia as human rights.[266] The globalist UN agenda pushing radical sexuality as an international human right is designed to subversively preempt religion. It’s ludicrous since the LGBT cause has never been an international human right whereas freedom of religion certainly has been a universal right for many years. Though this “new age” crusade is being promoted under the guise of protecting LGBT rights, in actuality its covert objective is clearly to demonize and outlaw traditional sexual morality as a “hate crime.”[267] Through the Rockefeller-created United Nations, the elite’s institutionalized power being overtly misused to nefariously promulgate pedophilia as a simple victimless, adult life choice has come to represent yet another among countless deceitful ploys to justify and protect its systemic sacrifice of the innocents.

Meanwhile, fortunately for humanity thousands of victims and whistleblowers have been courageously exposing this demonic, twisted yet intricate interlocking dynamic behind these widespread sex trafficking operations at the highest reaches of global power. The cabal’s most guilty culprits include international governance by the UN, national and continental governments (US, EU, UK and virtually every other nation’s governing leadership), military forces from the US, NATO, UN and many other countries, the international intelligence community led by Mossad, MI6, CIA and FBI (now operating globally under counterterrorism domain), international organized crime, international and national law enforcement and judicial court systems down to state/provincial and local municipal levels as well as child welfare systems, top Fortune 500 energy and arms industries, and of course all the biggest central banks for illegal money laundering. All these most prominent pedophile players parasitically feed off missing children’s flesh and blood as bloodthirsty, insatiable Illuminati monsters controlling our planet. Keep in mind that these same governing entities control all illegal international arms and drug smuggling industries as well as the enormously lucrative globalized organ harvesting-trafficking trade. Though there may be countless good human beings serving in all these organizations, far more than the relatively miniscule Luciferian minority in control, only the demonic puppet soldiers at the top and the powerful family bloodline puppet masters behind them comprise the scourge that’s committing wholesale slaughter of our children while fast destroying both us and our planet. Now that we know the dark truth, it’s time to take action to protect our children and mother earth while we still can.

Chapter 12 explores what happens to the throwaway children falling through the cracks in this diabolical system when the CIA’s Finders scandal is dissected from the late 1980’s just a few short miles away from the Boys Town rape victim midnight tours at the pedophile Bush White House. The Franklin scandal will then be covered in Chapter 13.

---

[1] Wayne Madsen, “Gannon-Gate Threatens to Expose a Huge GOP Pedophile and Male Prostitution Ring,” *Wayne Madsen Report/Insider Magazine*, http://www.insider-magazine.org/Gannongate.htm.

[2] “The Franklin Coverup Scandal,” *whatreallyhappened.com*, https://www.whatreallyhappened.com/WRHARTICLES/Franklin/FranklinCoverup/franklin.htm.

[3] Carl Herman, “All-time most Ridiculous ‘Crisis Actor’: President Bush’s Gay Male Prostitute, Jeff Gannon, Acting as White House ‘Objective Professional Media’ to Pimp US Wars of Aggression,” *Washington’s Blog*, December 20, 2015, http://www.washingtonsblog.com/2015/12/time-ridiculous-crisis-actor-president-bushs-gay-male-prostitute-jeff-gannon-acting-white-house-objective-professional-media-pimp-us-wars.html.

[4] Michael Dietz, “Becoming Jeff Gannon,” *AlterNet*, April 22, 2005, https://www.alternet.org/story/21829/becoming_jeff_gannon.

[5] Dave Hodges, “Bush Fired US Attorneys to Cover-up DC Pedophile Sex Ring,” *Common Sense Show*, March 18, 2017, http://www.commonsenseevaluation.com/2017/03/18/bush-fired-u-s-attorneys-to-cover-up-d-c-pedophile-ring/.

[6] M.K. Styllinski, https://infrakshun.wordpress.com/2014/04/22/satans-little-helpers-viii-weimar-magick-and-cherry-marines/.

[7] Kay Griggs interviewed by Rick Strawcutter, “Illuminati Wife Tells All – Part 1 of 4,” YouTube video, 1998, 6:29, posted on July 25, 2015, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=plxijxfg7v0.

[8] Joel van der Reijden, “Kay Griggs Investigated: Did the Covert Operations and Sexual Abuse Clique of Husband Colonel George Griggs Really Exist? All the Names Military and Civilian,” *Institute for the Study of Globalization and Covert Politics*, November 5, 2011, https://isgp-studies.com/kay-griggs-colonel-george-griggs-child-sexual-abuse-military.

[9] Milton William Cooper, *Behold a Pale Horse* (Flagstaff, Arizona: Light Technology Publications, 1991), “Secret Societies/New World Order Part 1 of 3,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_cooper8.htm.

[10] Joel van der Reijden, “The Pilgrims Society: A Study of the Anglo-American Establishment, *Institute for the Study of Globalization and Covert Politics*, July 17, 2008, https://isgp-studies.com/pilgrims-society-us-uk#pilgrims-us-21st-century.

[11] Charles Savoie, “The Silver Stealers! They’re also the Gold Grabbers! Pilgrims Society,” *silverstealers.net*, January 2011-2017, http://silverstealers.net/tss.html.

[12] Kay Griggs interview, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=plxijxfg7v0.

[13] T.P. Wilkinson, “Mass Murder as Political Marketing – The Phoenix Program and U.S. Foreign Policy,” *Global Research*, August 13, 2014, https://www.globalresearch.ca/mass-murder-as-political-marketing-the-phoenix-program-and-u-s-foreign-policy/5395859.

[14] Joachim Hagopian, Lt. Colonel Michael Aquino, MK Ultra/Monarch Mind Control Programs and Pedophilia in the Military,” *American Empire Exposed* (a blog site), May 28, 2017, http://empireexposed.blogspot.co.id/2017/05/.

[15] Daniel Ganser interview transcript, “Operation GLADIO and the Strategy of Tension,” *The Mind Renewed*, January 4, 2016, http://themindrenewed.com/transcripts/792-int-70t.

[16] Anthony Mustacich, “Imperialism, Cold War, and the Contradiction of Decolonization,” *Global Research*, May 12, 2013, https://www.globalresearch.ca/imperialism-the-cold-war-and-the-contradictions-of-decolonization/5334692.

[17] Joel van der Reijden, https://isgp-studies.com/kay-griggs-colonel-george-griggs-child-sexual-abuse-military.

[18] “Mrs. Kay Griggs on how the Government Works,” Kay Griggs interview transcript with Eric Hufschmid, *phpBB*, June 19, 2015, http://survivorbb.rapeutation.com/viewtopic.php?f=179&t=968.

[19] David Richards, “Perverse Masonic Initiations Pervade Society,” *henrymakow.com*, November 8, 2011, https://www.henrymakow.com/hazing.html.

[20] Kay Griggs interview, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=plxijxfg7v0.

[21] Kay Griggs interview, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=plxijxfg7v0.

[22] M.K. Styllinski, “Satan’s Little Helper VIII: Weimar, Magick and Cherry Marines,” *Infrakshun* (a blog site), April 22, 2014, https://infrakshun.wordpress.com/2014/04/22/satans-little-helpers-viii-weimar-magick-and-cherry-marines/.

[23] Kay Griggs interviewed by Rick Strawcutter, “The Kay Griggs Interviews Part 3 of 4,” YouTube video, 1998, 2:00, posted on February 9, 2011, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yaZUEEPNwiU.

[24] Ron Patton, “The Evolution of MKULTRA – Project Monarch Nazi Mind Control,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_mindcon02.htm.

[25] Milton William Cooper, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_cooper8.htm.

[26] Colin Todhunter, “The Global Elite’s Crimes against Humanity,” *Counter Punch*, May 25, 2015, https://www.counterpunch.org/2015/05/25/the-global-elites-crimes-against-humanity/.

[27] Nadine Jolie Courtney, “The Most Exclusive Clubs of the Ivy League,” *Town & Country Magazine*, August 9, 2016, http://www.townandcountrymag.com/society/money-and-power/news/g2223/ivy-league-clubs/.

[28] “DHS Insider: Pedogate Exposes CIA-Mossad Deep State,” DHS insider interview, *henrymakow.com*, February 17, 2017, https://www.henrymakow.com/2017/02/Pedogate-Exposes-CIA-Mossad-Deep-State.html.

[29] Joachim Hagopian, *Don’t Let the Bastards Getcha Down* (unpublished manuscript), 2013, “Plebe Year- Still a Beanhead,” http://www.redredsea.net/westpointhagopian/chapt3a.htm.

[30] “Council on Foreign Relations Membership Roster,” *cfr.org*, October 31, 2017, https://www.cfr.org/membership/membership-roster-a-f.

[31] “John Abizaid,” *Wikipedia.org*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Abizaid.

[32] “Karl Eikenberry,” *Wikipedia.org*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Karl_Eikenberry.

[33] “David Petraeus,” *Wikipedia.org*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/David_Petraeus.

[34] Joachim Hagopian, “The Poster Boy and his Toxic Leadership,” http://www.redredsea.net/westpointhagopian/chapt9a.htm.

[35] Joachim Hagopian, “The Political Downfall of General David Petraeus: From War Hero to Convicted Felon? Petraeus’ Plea Bargain,” *Global Research*, March 4, 2015, https://www.globalresearch.ca/the-political-downfall-of-general-david-petraeus-from-war-hero-to-convicted-felon-petraeus-plea-bargain/5434813.

[36] “Martin Dempsey,” *Wikipedia.org*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Martin_Dempsey.

[37] Shane Harris, “The Cowboy of the NSA,” *Foreign Policy*, September 9, 2013, http://foreignpolicy.com/2013/09/09/the-cowboy-of-the-nsa/.

[38] “Keith B. Alexander,” *Wikipedia.org*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Keith_B._Alexander.

[39] Joachim Hagopian, “Why the United States always Loses its Wars,” *Global Research*, February 13, 2015, https://www.globalresearch.ca/why-the-united-states-always-loses-its-wars/5430986.

[40] Joachim Hagopian, “Divide and Conquer: The Globalist Pathway to New World Order Tyranny,” *Global Research*, October 23, 2015, https://www.globalresearch.ca/divide-and-conquer-the-globalist-pathway-to-new-world-order-tyranny-from-a-geopolitics-perspective/5483935.

[41] Lily Dane, “Blood Money: These Companies and People Make Billions of Dollars from War,” *Global Research*, March 25, 2015, https://www.globalresearch.ca/blood-money-these-companies-and-people-make-billions-of-dollars-from-war/5438657.

[42] Joachim Hagopian, http://www.redredsea.net/westpointhagopian/chapt3a.htm.

[43] Thomas E. Ricks, “Leadership vs. Followership: What does West Point Produce?” *Foreign Policy*, April 30, 2009, http://foreignpolicy.com/2009/04/30/leadership-vs-followership-what-does-west-point-produce/.

[44] Joachim Hagopian, “’Masters of Manipulation’: Psychopaths Rule the World,” *Global Research*, May 24, 2014, https://www.globalresearch.ca/masters-of-manipulation-psychopaths-rule-the-world/5383706.

[45] James Fallows, “Why our Best Officers are Leaving,” *The Atlantic*, January 2011, https://www.theatlantic.com/magazine/archive/2011/01/why-our-best-officers-are-leaving/308346/.

[46] Bruce Fleming, “How West Point and Annapolis are like East Berlin,” *The Berlin Review of Books*, June 5, 2013, http://berlinbooks.org/brb/2013/06/how-west-point-and-annapolis-are-like-east-berlin/.

[47] Joel van der Reijden, https://isgp-studies.com/kay-griggs-colonel-george-griggs-child-sexual-abuse-military.

[48] Joel van der Reijden, https://isgp-studies.com/kay-griggs-colonel-george-griggs-child-sexual-abuse-military.

[49] Joel van der Reijden, https://isgp-studies.com/kay-griggs-colonel-george-griggs-child-sexual-abuse-military.

[50] “Secrets of Bohemian Grove,” *American Patriot Friends Network*, http://www.apfn.org/apfn/grove.htm.

[51] Paul Bonacci interview, Paul Bonacci after the Killing Describes Surroundings Bohemian Grove,” YouTube video, 5:00, posted on February 28, 2016, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=bHKrKSKAOSY.

[52] Joel van der Reijden, https://isgp-studies.com/kay-griggs-colonel-george-griggs-child-sexual-abuse-military.

[53] Jamie Glazov, “The Saudi Pedophile Chronicles,” PJ Media, February 19, 2010, https://pjmedia.com/blog/the-saudi-pedophile-chronicles/.

[54] H.B. Albarelli, “CIA Mind Control Experiments and Lee Harvey Oswald,” *sott.net*, January 25, 2010, https://www.sott.net/article/272072-CIA-mind-control-experiments-and-Lee-Harvey-Oswald.

[55] “Famous Non-Masons,” *masonicinfo.com*, http://www.masonicinfo.com/famousnon.htm#Clinton.

[56] “Bill Clinton under Mind Control,” YouTube video, 1:47, posted March 21, 2012, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Js6rklLv-4E.

[57] Hermes, “George W. Bush is a Victim of Mind Control,” *Illuminati News*, July 17, 2005, http://www.illuminati-news.com/gwb-mc-victim.htm.

[58] “Barack Hussein Obama: The Quintessential Manchurian Candidate,” *State of the Nation*, May 25, 2016, http://stateofthenation2012.com/?p=38767.

[59] Wayne Madsen, “The Story of Obama: All in the Company (In Three Parts),” *Wayne Madsen Report*, August 18, 2010, https://www.infowars.com/bombshell-barack-obama-conclusively-outed-as-cia-creation/#content.

[60] “Obama’s Secret Meeting with Bilderberg,” Mark Dice, YouTube video, 3:20, posted on June 10, 2015, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=tfyIXqDRT8Y.

[61] Jake Martinez, “Was Obama Pre-selected & Groomed to be Our U.S. President and Take Down America to Usher in the NWO due To his CIA,

Communist and Muslim Connections and Influences? You Decide," *The Liberty Beacon*, September 8, 2017, http://www.thelibertybeacon.com/was-obama-pre-selected-groomed-to-be-our-u-s-president-take-down-america-to-usher-in-the-nwo-due-to-his-cia-communist-and-muslim-connections-influences-you-decide/.

[62] "Mrs. Kay Griggs on how the Government Works," http://survivorbb.rapeutation.com/viewtopic.php?f=179&t=968.

[63] Zalin Grant, "Who Murdered the CIA Chief?" *Pythia Press*, 2011, http://www.pythiapress.com/wartales/colby.htm.

[64] Joel van der Reijden, https://isgp-studies.com/kay-griggs-colonel-george-griggs-child-sexual-abuse-military.

[65] "U.S. Presidents and Leaders Vowed and Pledged to Roman Catholic Knights of Malta," *Towards a Better Understanding* (a blog site), December 9, 2015, https://tabublog.com/2015/12/09/u-s-presidents-leaders-vowed-pledged-to-roman-catholic-knights-of-malta-smom/.

[66] Victor Thorn, "Illuminati: The Carlyle Group," *Babel Magazine*, October 6, 2002, http://worldmessenger.blogspot.co.id/2008/04/illuminati-carlyle-group.html.

[67] "The Frank C. Carlucci Page," *smokershistory.com*, http://www.smokershistory.com/Carlucci.htm.

[68] Bart R. Kessler, "Bush's New World Order: The Meaning behind the Words," *bibliotecapleyades.net*, March 1997, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_nwo72.htm.

[69] "Top Ten Secret Societies," *Illuminati Rex*, https://www.illuminatirex.com/secret-societies/.

[70] Michel Chossudovsky, "George W. Bush: "My Dad was Meeting with the Brother of Osama on September 11", 2001. Does that Make him a Terror Suspect?" *Global Research*, March 17, 2015, https://www.globalresearch.ca/george-w-bush-my-dad-was-meeting-with-the-brother-of-osama-on-september-11-2001-does-that-make-him-a-terror-suspect/5436650.

[71] Mark F. Bernstein, "Rumsfeld's Princeton," *Princeton Alumni Weekly*, October 6, 2004, http://www.princeton.edu/paw/archive_new/PAW04-05/02-1006/features2.html.

[72] Eric T. Karlstrom, "Allen Dulles: America's Greatest Spymaster and Traitor; Illuminati Agentur," *911nwo.com*, March 26, 2016, http://911nwo.com/?p=4335.

[73] Edward Curtain, "Allen Dulles' 'Indonesian Strategy' and the Assassination of John F. Kennedy," *Global Research*, June 12, 2016,

https://www.globalresearch.ca/allen-dulles-indonesian-strategy-and-the-assassination-of-john-f-kennedy/5530268.

[74] "The Dark Secrets of Bohemian Grove," *North Star Zone,* http://nstarzone.com/BOGROVE.html.

[75] Scott Thompson and Nancy Spannaus, "George Pratt Shultz: Profile of a Hit Man," *Executive Intelligence Review*, December 10, 2004, https://www.larouchepub.com/other/2004/site_packages/econ_hitmen/3148shultz1.html.

[76] Daniel Greenfield, "James Baker Now Peddling a Carbon Tax," *Front Page Magazine*, February 10, 2017, http://www.frontpagemag.com/point/265761/james-baker-now-peddling-carbon-tax-daniel-greenfield.

[77] Joel van der Reijden, https://isgp-studies.com/kay-griggs-colonel-george-griggs-child-sexual-abuse-military.

[78] Teddy Wood, "Bechtel the Evil," *People's World*, June 20, 2003, http://www.peoplesworld.org/article/bechtel-the-evil/.

[79] Joel van der Reijden, https://isgp-studies.com/kay-griggs-colonel-george-griggs-child-sexual-abuse-military.

[80] Kay Griggs interviewed by Jeff Rense, YouTube video, August 3 and 17, 2005, 3:06, posted on October 17, 2015, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=74n26P4NwkA&t=2839s.

[81] Greg Szymanski, "The Evil Lurking Within," *educate-yourself.org*, July 25, 2005, http://educate-yourself.org/cn/lurkingevilwithin25jul05.shtml.

[82] Joel van der Reijden, https://isgp-studies.com/kay-griggs-colonel-george-griggs-child-sexual-abuse-military.

[83] Joseph Sobran, "More Real History Revealed: Did Israel Deliberately Allow 241 American Marines to Die? (1983 Marine Barracks Bombing)," *Northerntruthseeker* (a blog site), October 7, 2010, http://northerntruthseeker.blogspot.co.id/2010/10/more-real-history-revealed-did-israel.html.

[84] "Mrs. Kay Griggs on how Government Works," http://survivorbb.rapeutation.com/viewtopic.php?f=179&t=968.

[85] Elizabeth Vos, "DynCorp, the Private Military Corporation at the Heart of Foreign Policy Scandal," *Disobedient Media*, March 24, 2017, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/03/dyncorp-the-private-military-corporation-at-the-heart-of-foreign-policy-scandal/.

[86] Joachim Hagopian, "Israel is the Organ Harvesting and Human Trafficking Global Ringleader, with Complicit Help from US and Turkey," *sott.net*, May 14, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/318286-Israel-is-the-organ-harvesting-and-human-trafficking-global-ringleader-with-complicit-help-from-US-and-Turkey.

[87] Kay Griggs interview part 3 of 4, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yaZUEEPNwiU.

[88] Jeff Schechtman, "Sirhan: A 'Manchurian Candidate' in the RFK Assassination?" *whowhatwhy.org*, February 19, 2016, https://whowhatwhy.org/2016/02/19/sirhan-a-manchurian-candidate-in-the-rfk-assassination/.

[89] Daniel Hopsicker, "Barry Seal, the Dallas Get-away Plane, and the JFK Assassination," *Mad Cow*, November 22, 2013, http://www.madcowprod.com/2013/11/22/barry-seal-the-dallas-get-away-plane-the-jfk-assassination/.

[90] "Kay Griggs Quotes," *whale.to*, http://www.whale.to/b/griggs_q.html.

[91] "Kay Griggs Quotes," http://www.whale.to/b/griggs_q.html.

[92] Joel van der Reijden, https://isgp-studies.com/kay-griggs-colonel-george-griggs-child-sexual-abuse-military.

[93] Joel van der Reijden, https://isgp-studies.com/kay-griggs-colonel-george-griggs-child-sexual-abuse-military.

[94] "Mrs. Kay Griggs on how Government Works," http://survivorbb.rapeutation.com/viewtopic.php?f=179&t=968.

[95] Joel van der Reijden, https://isgp-studies.com/kay-griggs-colonel-george-griggs-child-sexual-abuse-military.

[96] "Was Rep. Scalise Shot for Exposing Human Trafficking Operations?" *intellihub.com*, June 15, 2017, https://www.intellihub.com/was-rep-scalise-shot-for-exposing-human-trafficking-operations/.

[97] Daniel Lazare, "The Scandal Hidden behind Russia-gate," *Consortium News*, May 11, 2017, https://consortiumnews.com/2017/05/11/the-scandal-hidden-behind-russia-gate/.

[98] Justin Raimondo, "The Evidence that Russia Hacked the DNC is Collapsing," *Zero Hedge*, March 26, 2017, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2017-03-25/evidence-russia-hacked-dnc-collapsing.

[99] Darius Shahtahmasebi, "Is the Media's Obsession with Trump and Russia a Distraction from Bigger Issues?" *AntiMedia*, May 17, 2017, http://theantimedia.org/media-trump-russia-distraction/.

[100] Paul Sperry, "Debbie Wasserman Schultz is a Threat to National Security," *New York Post*, August 9, 2017, http://nypost.com/2017/08/09/debbie-wasserman-schultz-is-a-threat-to-national-security/.

[101] Trent Lapinski, "Seth Rich is a Whistleblower," *medium.com*, May 23, 2017, https://medium.com/@trentlapinski/seth-rich-is-a-whistleblower-b348767699eb.

[102] "'Complete Panic' at all Levels of DNC over Murder Investigation Involving Hillary Clinton and John Podesta," *Mad World News*, May 22, 2017, http://madworldnews.com/murder-hillary-clinton-john-podesta/.

[103] Kay Griggs interview, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=plxijxfg7v0.

[104] Greg Szymanski, http://educate-yourself.org/cn/lurkingevilwithin25jul05.shtml.

[105] Greg Szymanski, http://educate-yourself.org/cn/lurkingevilwithin25jul05.shtml.

[106] Kay Griggs interview, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=plxijxfg7v0.

[107] Kay Griggs interview part 3 of 4, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yaZUEEPNwiU.

[108] Greg Szymanski, "The Evil Lurking Within," *rense.com*, July 31, 2005, http://www.rense.com/general67/evil.htm.

[109] Joel van der Reijden, https://isgp-studies.com/kay-griggs-colonel-george-griggs-child-sexual-abuse-military.

[110] Todd S. Purdum, "Sarah McClendon, Reporter at White House, Dies at 92," *The New York Times*, January 9, 2003, http://www.nytimes.com/2003/01/09/us/sarah-mcclendon-reporter-at-white-house-dies-at-92.html.

[111] "Kay Griggs – Sleeping with the Enemy," compilation of Kay Griggs interviews, YouTube video, 10:50, posted October 17, 2015, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=NWbaTxTqGgc.

[112] Kay Griggs interviews (in 4 parts), 7:18 (total), https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rMDy8HCo5iw.

[113] Erica Blake, "U.S. Yanks Lenawee Minister's Radio Show Strawcutter: He Ran Radio Free Lenawee from a Room in his Church," *Blade*, http://www.nrcdxas.org/articles/adrianpirate.html.

[114] Greg Szymanski, http://www.rense.com/general67/evil.htm.

[115] Kay Griggs interview part 3 of 4, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yaZUEEPNwiU.

[116] Richard Dolan, “The Death of James Forrestal,” *Richard Dolan Press*, March 8, 2001, https://www.richarddolanpress.com/the-death-of-james-forrestal.

[117] *911Truth.org* website, http://911truth.org/.

[118] Kay Griggs interviewed by Jeff Rense, YouTube video, August 3 and 17, 2005, 3:06, posted on January 13, 2015, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=b4kFYg1A6uo.

[119] Greg Szymanski, http://www.rense.com/general67/evil.htm.

[120] Joel van der Reijden, https://isgp-studies.com/kay-griggs-colonel-george-griggs-child-sexual-abuse-military.

[121] Fritz Springmeier, *The Top 13 Illuminati Bloodlines, Volume One* (self-published, 1995), *bibliotecapleyades.net*, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/bloodlines/.

[122] M.K. Styllinski, https://infrakshun.wordpress.com/2014/04/22/satans-little-helpers-viii-weimar-magick-and-cherry-marines/.

[123] “Mind Control Programming,” *The Impious Digest*, February 22, 2015, http://impiousdigest.com/monarch-mind-control-programming/all/1/.

[124] Jack Minor, “Army Acknowledges Pedophilia Part of Islam,” *World Net Daily*, December 15, 2012, http://www.wnd.com/2012/12/army-acknowledges-pedophilia-part-of-islam/.

[125] “Leon Panetta, Former U.S. Defense Secretary and CIA Director, to Speak at Santa Clara University Commencement,” *Santa Clara University news and Events*, April 11, 2013, https://www.scu.edu/news-and-events/press-releases/2013/april-2013/leon-panetta-former-us-defense-secretary-and-cia-director-to-speak-at-santa-clara-university-commencement-june-15.html.

[126] Rob Hilson, “The Pope is the World’s Defensive Coordinator,” *Vatican Assassins*, May 2, 2012, www.vaticanassassins.org/2012/05/02/notice-the-pope-i….

[127] Joseph Goldstein, “U.S. Soldiers Told to Ignore Sexual Abuse of Boys by Afghan Allies,” *The New York Times*, September 20, 2015, https://www.nytimes.com/2015/09/21/world/asia/us-soldiers-told-to-ignore-afghan-allies-abuse-of-boys.html?_r=0.

[128] Howard Koplowitz, “What is a ‘Green-on-Blue’ Attack? Killing of US Major General Harold Greene is just Third Insider Attack in 2014,” *Business Insider*, August 5, 2014, http://www.ibtimes.com/what-green-blue-attack-killing-us-major-general-harold-greene-just-third-insider-attack-1649920.

[129] Joseph Goldstein, https://www.nytimes.com/2015/09/21/world/asia/us-soldiers-told-to-ignore-afghan-allies-abuse-of-boys.html?_r=0.

[130] Amitai Etzioni, “U.S. Continue to Ignore Massive Pedophilia in Afghanistan,” *Huffington Post*, https://www.huffingtonpost.com/amitai-etzioni/us-continues-to-ignore-ma_b_11307442.html.

[131] Michel Chossudovsky, “The Spoils of War: Afghanistan’s Multibillion Dollar Heroin Trade,” *Global Research*, June 14, 2005, https://www.globalresearch.ca/the-spoils-of-war-afghanistan-s-multibillion-dollar-heroin-trade/91.

[132] “Introduction: The Dancing Boys of Afghanistan,” *PBS Frontline*, April 20, 2010, http://www.pbs.org/wgbh/pages/frontline/dancingboys/etc/synopsis.html.

[133] Joachim Hagopian, “’Masters of Manipulation’: Psychopaths Rule the World,” *Global Research*, May 24, 2014, https://www.globalresearch.ca/masters-of-manipulation-psychopaths-rule-the-world/5383706.

[134] Amitai Etzioni, https://www.huffingtonpost.com/amitai-etzioni/us-continues-to-ignore-ma_b_11307442.html.

[135] Lucas Tomlinson, “Army Kicking our Decorated Green Beret who Stood up for Afghan Rape Victim,” *Fox News*, August 21, 2015, http://www.foxnews.com/politics/2015/08/20/army-kicking-out-decorated-green-beret-who-stood-up-for-afghan-rape-victim.html.

[136] Joseph Goldstein, https://www.nytimes.com/2015/09/21/world/asia/us-soldiers-told-to-ignore-afghan-allies-abuse-of-boys.html?_r=0.

[137] “Soldier who Beat Afghan ‘Paedophile’ Keeps his Job,” *Sky News*, April 29, 2016, http://news.sky.com/story/soldier-who-beat-afghan-paedophile-keeps-job-10262721.

[138] Jim Bronskill, “Canadian Police Unable to Keep up with Child Porn ‘Epidemic’: Memo” *The Globe and Mail*, July 4, 2016, https://beta.theglobeandmail.com/news/british-columbia/canadian-police-unable-to-keep-up-with-child-porn-epidemic-memo/article30751112/.

[139] Bryan Bender, “Pentagon Lagged on Pursuing Porn Cases,” *The Boston Globe*, January 5, 2011, http://archive.boston.com/news/nation/washington/articles/2011/01/05/pentagon_lagged_on_pursuing_porn_cases/.

[140] Matthew Phalen, “Did we Finish Looking into those 1,700 Pentagon Child Porn Cases?” *Black Bag Gawker*, July 22, 2014, http://blackbag.gawker.com/uh-did-we-finish-looking-into-those-1-700-pentagon-chi-1609060355.

[141] Aliya Sternstein, “Feds have Found ‘Unbelievable’ Amounts of Child Porn on National Security Computers,” *Nextgov Newsletter*, May 2, 2016, http://www.nextgov.com/defense/2016/05/feds-have-found-unbelievable-amounts-child-porn-national-security-computers-solution/127944/.

[142] Rajeev Syal, “Tebbit Hints at Sex Abuse Cover-up as Pressure over Missing Files Intensifies,” *The Guardian*, July 6, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2014/jul/06/norman-tebbit-theresa-may-cover-up-child-abuse-dossier.

[143] Andrew Blake, “Daniel Rosen, Former State Department Official, Convicted in Second sex Crimes Case,” Washington Times, September 27, 2016, http://www.washingtontimes.com/news/2016/sep/27/daniel-rosen-former-state-dept-official-convicted-/.

[144] Lori Handrahan, “America’s Top Nuclear Scientist Trading in Child Rape and Torture,” *Medium.com*, November 19, 2014, https://medium.com/@LoriHandrahan2/david-obrien-americas-top-scientist-responsible-for-monitoring-global-nuclear-activity-eadef087ecb5.

[145] Lori Handrahan, “Military Staff Trading in Child Rape and Torture,” *Medium.com*, November 5, 2014, https://medium.com/@LoriHandrahan2/the-military-and-child-porn-5995c9aa4d2c.

[146] Barbara Boland, “FBI: ‘Epidemic’ Levels of Pedophilia, Child Sex Trafficking,” *Washington Examiner*, July 30, 2015, http://www.washingtonexaminer.com/fbi-epidemic-levels-of-pedophilia-child-sex-trafficking/article/2569241.

[147] “Child Sex Offenders Largest Group in Military Prisons,” *RT*, November 18, 2015, https://www.rt.com/usa/322616-military-prison-pedophilia-transparency/.

[148] “How the US Military’s Opaque Justice System is Shielding Child Sex Abusers and Drastically Reducing their Prison Sentences,” *AP/Daily Mail*, November 18, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3323321/Opaque-military-justice-shields-child-sex-abuse-cases.html.

[149] Philip H. Smith, Marc N. Potenza, Carolyn M. Mazure, Sherry A. McKee, Crystal L. Park and Rani A. Hoff, “Compulsive Sexual Behavior among Military Veterans: Prevalence and Associated Clinical Factors,” *Journal of Behavioral Addictions*, December 2014, 3(4), p. 214-222, https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC4291826/.

[150] Missy Ryan, “The Number of Child Abuse Cases in the Military Hits a Decade High,” *The Washington Post*, September 2, 2015, https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/checkpoint/wp/2015/09/02/the-number-of-child-abuse-cases-in-the-military-hits-a-decade-high/?utm_term=.7a6f1a55a881.

[151] James LaPorta and Rory Laverty, “Woman Claims War Hero Raped her after he was Arrested for Raping Girl,” *The Daily Beast*, September 13, 2017, https://www.thedailybeast.com/did-war-hero-strike-again-after-he-was-arrested-for-rape.

[152] “How the US Military’s Opaque Justice System is Shielding Child Sex Abusers and Drastically Reducing their Prison Sentences,” http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3323321/Opaque-military-justice-shields-child-sex-abuse-cases.html.

[153] Joachim Hagopian, “Sexual Assault against Women in the U.S. Armed Forces,” Global Research, March 23, 2014, https://www.globalresearch.ca/sexual-assault-against-women-in-the-us-armed-forces/5374784.

[154] Nathaniel Penn, “Son, Men don’t Get Raped,” *GQ Magazine*, 2014, https://www.gq.com/long-form/male-military-rape.

[155] “The Criminal Justice System: Statistics, *RAINN*, https://www.rainn.org/statistics/criminal-justice-system.

[156] Joachim Hagopian, “Sexual Assault in the U.S. Military,” Global Research, February 14, 2015, https://www.globalresearch.ca/sexual-assault-in-the-u-s-military/5431157.

[157] Mark Meckler, “Former West Point Prof Exposes Corruption and Cheating – Wonders if the Academy should even Exist,” *Patheos*, October 12, 2017, http://www.patheos.com/blogs/markmeckler/2017/10/former-west-point-prof-exposes-corruption-cheating-wonders-academy-even-exist/.

[158] Erik Edstrom, “Duty, Honor, Atrocity: George W. Bush Receives a Character Award at West Point,” *Tom Dispatch*, October 22, 2017, http://www.tomdispatch.com/post/176341/tomgram%3A_erik_edstrom%2C_teaching_revisionist_history_101_at_west_point/#more.

[159] Kirsten Gillibrand, “The Pentagon Deliberately Misled Congress on Sex Assault Cases. Do Lawmakers Care,” *Washington Post*, May 26, 2016, https://www.washingtonpost.com/opinions/the-pentagon-deliberately-misled-congress-on-sex-assault-cases-do-lawmakers-care/2016/05/26/de14d118-2129-11e6-9e7f-57890b612299_story.html?utm_term=.df734eb016bc.

[160] “Senator Gillibrand Renews Push to Change how Sexual Assaults are Reported in ‘Broken Military Justice System,’” *New York Daily News*, May 24, 2016, http://www.nydailynews.com/news/national/sen-gillibrand-demands-military-change-sexual-assault-policies-article-1.2648279.

[161] Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler, *Deeper Insights into the Illuminati Formula* (e-book, 1996), Appendix 1 – Programmers/Researchers, *bibliotecapleyades.net*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/mindcontrol2/appendix01.htm.

[162] Michael Aquino interviewed by Oprah Winfrey, *Oprah Winfrey Show*, YouTube video, 6:59, posted April 21, 2014, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DtolGsgoNXk.

[163] Jeffrey Steinberg, “Satanic Subversion of the US Military,” *Executive Intelligence Review*, August 26, 2005, http://www.larouchepub.com/other/2005/3233aquino_profile.html.

[164] Extracts from U.S. Army Chaplains Handbook, *alleeshadowtradition.com*, U.S. Army Chaplains Handbook - Temple of Set.

[165] Joachim Hagopian, “Western State Sponsored Terrorism: False Flags Spreading Islamophobia, Race and Religious Wars and New World Order,” *Lew Rockwell*, December 25, 2015, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2015/12/joachim-hagopian/new-world-disorder-2/.

[166] Sue Arrigo, “Secrets of the CIA’s Global Sex Slave Industry,” *conspiracyplanet.com*, June 17, 2007, http://www.conspiracyplanet.com/channel.cfm?channelid=137&contentid=4451.

[167] Martin Berger, “The Illegal Arms Trade is being Run by Washington and CIA,” *New Eastern Outlook*, February 7, 2016, https://journal-neo.org/2016/07/02/the-illegal-arms-trade-is-being-run-by-washington-and-cia/.

[168] Joachim Hagopian, “Israel is the Organ Harvesting and Human Trafficking Global Ringleader, with Complicit Help from US and Turkey,” *sott.net*, May 14, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/318286-Israel-is-the-organ-harvesting-and-human-trafficking-global-ringleader-with-complicit-help-from-US-and-Turkey .

[169] Joel van der Reijden, “A History of CIA Drug Trafficking: How Drug Cartels and Drug-Dealing Death Squads have been the CIA’s Best Friends for Decades,” *Institute for the Study of Globalization and Covert Politics*, August 27, 2016, https://isgp-studies.com/cia-heroin-and-cocaine-drug-trafficking.

[170] Avinash Tharoor, “Report: Global Drug trafficking Worth a Half Trillion Dollars,” *Talking Drugs*, April 21, 2017, http://www.talkingdrugs.org/report-global-illegal-drug-trade-valued-at-around-half-a-trillion-dollars.

[171] “Afghan Opium Production 40 Times Higher since US-NATO Invasion,” *Mint Press News*, August 31, 2016, http://www.mintpressnews.com/afghan-opium-production-40-times-higher-since-us-nato-invasion/219974/.

[172] Alexander Light and Paul Joseph Watson, “Overwhelming Evidence that the CIA is Smuggling Drugs for Decades,” *Humans Are Free*, February 2015, http://humansarefree.com/2015/02/overwhelming-evidence-that-cia-is.html.

[173] German Lopez, “Drug Overdose Deaths Skyrocketed in 2016 – And Traditional Opioid Painkillers weren’t the Cause,” *Vox*, September 5, 2017, https://www.vox.com/policy-and-politics/2017/9/5/16255040/opioid-epidemic-overdose-death-2016.

[174] Brandy Zadrozny, “Read the Pentagon’s $59 Billion ‘Black Budget,’” *The Daily Beast*, March 6, 2014, https://www.thedailybeast.com/read-the-pentagons-dollar59-billion-black-budget.

[175] Isaac Davis, “The Illegal Drug Trade: An Essential Component of Geopolitics,” *sott.net*, February 12, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/342411-The-illegal-drug-trade-An-essential-component-of-geopolitics.

[176] “The Cover is Blown off the Ongoing Worldwide C.I.A. Black Pedo-Operation,” *State of the Nation*, December 25, 2016, http://stateofthenation2012.com/?p=60679.

[177] “Child Trafficking Statistics: US and International,” *arkofhopeforchildren.org*, updated July 30, 2017, http://arkofhopeforchildren.org/child-trafficking/child-trafficking-statistics.

[178] Annie Kelly, “46 Million People Living as Slaves, Latest Global Index Reveals,” *The Guardian*, June 1, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/global-

development/2016/jun/01/46-million-people-living-as-slaves-latest-global-index-reveals-russell-crowe.

[179] Henry Louis Gates Jr., “Slavery, by the Numbers,” *theroot.com*, February 10, 2014, http://www.theroot.com/slavery-by-the-numbers-1790874492.

[180] “General Kelly in 2014: Human Trafficking and Drug Cartels are most Concerning Threat Facing U.S.,” *Zero Hedge*, August 1, 2017, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2017-08-01/general-kelly-2014-human-trafficking-and-drug-cartels-most-concerning-threat-facing-.

[181] “General Kelly in 2014: Human Trafficking and Drug Cartels are most Concerning Threat Facing U.S.,” http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2017-08-01/general-kelly-2014-human-trafficking-and-drug-cartels-most-concerning-threat-facing-.

[182] Jim Fetzer, “Fired by Jeff Rense for Disputing Las Vegas Fantasies,” *jamesfetzerblogspot* (a blog site), October 20, 2017, http://jamesfetzer.blogspot.co.id/2017/10/fired-by-jeff-rense-for-disputing-las.html.

[183] “Las Vegas Shooter, Stephen Paddock, Worked for Lockheed Martin Predecessor, Lived in Florida,” *Brevard Times*, October 2, 2017, http://news.brevardtimes.com/2017/10/las-vegas-shooter-stephen-paddock.html.

[184] Clyde Lewis, “Amnesia Las Vegas,” *groundzeromedia.org*, October 16, 2017, http://www.groundzeromedia.org/1016-amnesia-las-vegas/.

[185] “Stephen Paddock’s Mysterious Trip to Phoenix – Las Vegas Shooting Investigation Part 14 – Phoenix Video,” *Phoenix Informer*, October 17, 2017, https://phoenixinformer.com/54253/stephen-paddocks-mysterious-trip-to-phoenix-las-vegas-shooting-investigation-part-14-phoenix-video/.

[186] Baxter Dmitry, “Las Vegas Shooter Stephen Paddock Ran a CIA Child Trafficking Ring,” *Your News Wire*, October 21, 2017, http://yournewswire.com/las-vegas-paddock-child-trafficking/.

[187] “Philippine Children’s Fund of America,” website home page, 2013, http://www.pinoykids.org/.

[188] Alex Lasker, “Report: Las Vegas Shooter Stephen Paddock’s Brother Arrested for Child Porn,” *aol.com*, October 25, 2017, https://www.aol.com/article/news/2017/10/25/report-las-vegas-shooter-stephen-paddocks-brother-arrested-for-child-porn/23255643/.

[189] Jay Greenberg, “Las Vegas Ran a Child Trafficking Empire, according to Brother,” *Neon Nettle*, October 25, 2017, http://www.nnettle.com/news/3007-las-vegas-shooter-ran-a-child-trafficking-empire-according-to-brother.

[190] Jeff Desjardins, "Nearly 200,000 Troops are Deployed around the World – here's why," *Business Insider*, March 20, 2017, http://www.businessinsider.com/us-military-personnel-deployments-by-country-2017-3/?IR=T.

[191] David Vine, "Women's Labor, Sex Work and U.S. Military Bases Abroad," *Salon*, October 9, 2017, https://www.salon.com/2017/10/08/womens-labor-sex-work-and-u-s-military-bases-abroad/.

[192] Daniel Brown, "The U.S. has 1.3 Million Troops Stationed around the World – Here are the Major Hotspots," *Business Insider*, August 31, 2017, http://www.businessinsider.sg/us-military-deployments-may-2017-5/?r=US&IR=T.

[193] Trisha Marczak, "CIA Prostitution Scandal Highlights Wider Military Culture," *Mint Press News*, April 26, 2012, http://www.mintpressnews.com/cia-prostitution-scandal-highlights-wider-military-culture/24745/.

[194] Lindsey Posmanick-Cooper and Holly M. Rustick, "An Analysis of Human Trafficking Indicators on Guam," *Pacific Asia Inquiry*, 6(1), fall 2015, An Analysis of Human Trafficking Indicators on Guam - University of …pdf.

[195] William Engdahl, "The CIA's Cloddish ISIS Attack on Duterte," *New Eastern Outlook*, May 30, 2017, https://journal-neo.org/2017/05/30/the-cia-s-cloddish-isis-attack-on-duterte/.

[196] Nick Penzenstadler, "Philippines' Duterte to U.S. over Aid: 'Bye Bye America,'" *AP/USA Today*, December 17, 2016, https://www.usatoday.com/story/news/world/2016/12/17/philippines-duterte-us-over-aid-bye-bye-america/95557384/.

[197] "Philippine President Duterte Fears CIA Assassination, Blames US for ISIS Presence," *Mint Press News*, May 25, 2017, http://www.mintpressnews.com/philippine-president-duterte-fears-cia-assassination-blames-u-s-isis-presence/228179/.

[198] Joachim Hagopian, "The Political Downfall of General David Petraeus: From War Hero to Convicted Felon?," *Global Research*, January 14, 2015, https://www.globalresearch.ca/the-political-downfall-of-general-david-petraeus-from-war-hero-to-convicted-felon/5424627.

[199] Jason Ukman, "Ex-Blackwater Firm Gets a Name change, Again," *The Washington Post*, December 12, 2011, https://www.washingtonpost.com/blogs/checkpoint-washington/post/ex-blackwater-firm-gets-a-name-change-again/2011/12/12/gIQAXf4YpO_blog.html.

[200] Heather Digby Parton, "How much do we know about Blackwater Founder Erik Prince - and his Secretive Role in Shaping Trump's Foreign Policy?" *Salon*, April 19, 2017, https://www.salon.com/2017/04/19/how-much-do-we-know-

about-blackwater-founder-erik-prince-and-his-secretive-role-in-shaping-trumps-foreign-policy/.

[201] Janet Reitman, “Betsy DeVos’ Holy War,” *Rolling Stone*, March 8, 2017, http://www.rollingstone.com/politics/features/trump-education-secretary-betsy-devos-a-win-for-the-christian-right-w470605.

[202] Carol D. Leonnig and Nick Schwellenbach, “Despite Allegations, no Prosecutions for War Zone Sex Trafficking,” *Center for Public Integrity*, July 17, 2010, https://www.publicintegrity.org/2010/07/17/2609/despite-allegations-no-prosecutions-war-zone-sex-trafficking.

[203] “Seymour Hersh: Military Branch Being Run By ‘Crusaders’” *Huffington Post*, January 21, 2011, https://www.huffingtonpost.com/2011/01/21/seymour-hersh-military-crusaders_n_812363.html.

[204] Nicky Woolf, “Former Blackwater Guards Sentenced for Massacre of Unarmed Iraqi Civilians,” *The Guardian*, April 14, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/us-news/2015/apr/13/former-blackwater-guards-sentencing-baghdad-massacre.

[205] “Federal Court Overturns Former Blackwater Guard's Murder Conviction,” *The Guardian*, August 4, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/us-news/2017/aug/04/nicholas-slatten-iraq-blackwater-conviction-overturned.

[206] Alex Constantine, “Blackwater Chief Accused of Murder, Gun-Running and Child Prostitution,” *Constantine Report*, August 5, 2009, http://www.constantinereport.com/blackwater-chief-accused-of-murder-gun-running-and-child-prostitution/.

[207] Alex Constantine, “CIA Gives Blackwater New $100 Million Contract,” *Constantine Report*, June 2010, http://www.constantinereport.com/cia-gives-blackwater-firm-new-100-million-contract/.

[208] Carol D. Leonnig and Nick Schwellenbach, https://www.publicintegrity.org/2010/07/17/2609/despite-allegations-no-prosecutions-war-zone-sex-trafficking.

[209] Eric Garris, “Parent Company Name Removed from Halliburton Corporate HQ, Renamed KBR,” *antiwar.com*, December 12, 2003, https://www.antiwar.com/blog/2003/12/12/parent-company-name-removed-from-halliburton-corporate-hq-renamed-kbr/.

[210] Henry Makow, “Illuminati Sex Slaves Paint Horrifying Picture,” *henrymakow.com*, August 16, 2016, https://www.henrymakow.com/000683.html.

[211] Angelo Young, “Cheney's Halliburton Made $39.5 Billion on Iraq War,” *International Business Times*, March 20, 2013,

http://readersupportednews.org/news-section2/308-12/16561-focus-cheneys-halliburton-made-395-billion-on-iraq-war.

[212] "Halliburton Confirms Concentration Camps already Constructed - FEMA," *bibliotecapleyades.net*, April 14, 2010, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_FEMA21.htm.

[213] Alexander Panetta, "ISIS, ISIS, Daesh: A Primer on Why the Terrorist Group's Name Keeps Changing," *CTV News/The Canadian Press*, November 18, 2015, http://www.ctvnews.ca/world/isis-isil-daesh-a-primer-on-why-the-terrorist-group-s-name-keeps-changing-1.2664776.

[214] Martin Chulov, "Al-Nusra Front Cuts Ties with al-Qaida and Renames Itself," *The Guardian*, July 28, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2016/jul/28/al-qaida-syria-nusra-split-terror-network.

[215] Alex Jones and Paul Joseph Watson, "Dyncorp and Halliburton Sex Slave Scandal Won't go away," *prisonplanet.com*, January 1, 2006, https://www.prisonplanet.com/articles/january2006/010106sexslavescandal.htm.

[216] Michael W. Chapman, "ISIS Genocide of Yazidis: 'Girls as Young as 9 were Raped, as were Pregnant Women,'" CNS News, October 7, 2016, https://www.cnsnews.com/news/article/michael-w-chapman/isis-genocide-yazidis-girls-young-9-were-raped-were-pregnant-women.

[217] Garikai Chengu, "America Created al Qaeda and the ISIS Terror Group," *Global Research*, September 19, 2014, https://www.globalresearch.ca/america-created-al-qaeda-and-the-isis-terror-group/5402881.

[218] Nick Turse, "America's Secret War in 134 Countries," *The Nation*, January 16, 2014, https://www.thenation.com/article/americas-secret-war-134-countries/.

[219] Ewen MacAskill and Ed Pilkington, "Obama's Drone War a 'Recruitment Tool' for Isis, say US Air Force Whistleblowers," *The Guardian*, November 18, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2015/nov/18/obama-drone-war-isis-recruitment-tool-air-force-whistleblowers.

[220] R.J. Rummel, *Statistics of Democide: Genocide and Mass Murder since 1900* (Charlottesville, Virginia: University of Virginia, 1997), "Chapter 13: Death by American Bombing and other Democide," https://www.hawaii.edu/powerkills/SOD.CHAP13.HTM.

[221] James A. Lucas, "US has Killed more than 20 Million People in 37 'Victim Nations' since World War II," *Global Research*, November 27, 2015, https://www.globalresearch.ca/us-has-killed-more-than-20-million-people-in-37-victim-nations-since-world-war-ii/5492051.

[222] Joachim Hagopian, "Divide and Conquer: The Globalist Pathway to New World Order Tyranny," *Global Research*, October 23, 2015,

https://www.globalresearch.ca/divide-and-conquer-the-globalist-pathway-to-new-world-order-tyranny-from-a-geopolitics-perspective/5483935.

[223] DynCorp International website, “About Us Overview,” https://web.archive.org/web/20120106092451/http://www.dyn-intl.com/overview.aspx.

[224] Jacob Siegel, “The Real Winner of the Afghan war is this Shady Military Contractor,” *The Daily Beast*, April 24, 2014, https://www.thedailybeast.com/the-real-winner-of-the-afghan-war-is-this-shady-military-contractor.

[225] Mahdi Darius Nazemroaya, “Plans for Redrawing the Middle East: The Project for a ‘New Middle East,’” *Global Research*, November 18, 2006, https://www.globalresearch.ca/plans-for-redrawing-the-middle-east-the-project-for-a-new-middle-east/3882.

[226] Elizabeth Vos, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/03/dyncorp-the-private-military-corporation-at-the-heart-of-foreign-policy-scandal/.

[227] Kelly Patricia O’Meara, “US: DynCorp Disgrace,” *Insight Magazine/CorpWatch.org*, January 14, 2002, http://www.corpwatch.org/article.php?id=11119.

[228] Elizabeth Vos, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/03/dyncorp-the-private-military-corporation-at-the-heart-of-foreign-policy-scandal/.

[229] Elizabeth Vos, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/03/dyncorp-the-private-military-corporation-at-the-heart-of-foreign-policy-scandal/.

[230] Kathryn Bolkovac, *The Whistleblower: Sex Trafficking, Military Contractors, and One Woman's Fight for Justice* (New York: St. Martin’s Press, 2011), https://www.amazon.com/Whistleblower-Trafficking-Military-Contractors-Justice/dp/0230108024/ref=sr_1_1?ie=UTF8&qid=1291604474&sr=8-1.

[231] “The Whistleblower,” 2010, *IMBd*, http://www.imdb.com/title/tt0896872/plotsummary.

[232] Kelly Patricia O’Meara, http://www.corpwatch.org/article.php?id=11119.

[233] Cam Simpson, “U.S. Stalls on Human Trafficking: Pentagon has yet to Ban Contractors from using Forced Labor,” *Chicago Tribune/ Information Liberation*, December 27, 2005, http://www.informationliberation.com/?id=9754.

[234] UN High Commissioner for Human Rights in Bosnia Condemns UN Complicity in Sex Trade,” *History Commons*, February 9, 2003, http://historycommons.org/entity.jsp?entity=madeleine_rees_1.

[235] “Cynthia McKinney Grills Donald Rumsfeld,” *C-SPAN,* FY 2006 Defense Department Budget House Armed Services Committee, YouTube video, 9:16,

posted on January 26, 2011, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yMG65jYlDU8.

[236] Jay Clemens, “DynCorp Wins $94M Contract to Support DoD Missions in Asia, Oceania,” *GovConWire*, December 22, 2016, http://archive.is/yh37x.

[237] Aleen Sirgany, “The War on Waste,” *CBS News*, January 29, 2002, https://www.cbsnews.com/news/the-war-on-waste/.

[238] Josh Rogin, “Report Faults State Department, DynCorp for Missing $1 Billion,” *Foreign Policy*, January 25, 2010, http://foreignpolicy.com/2010/01/25/report-faults-state-department-dyncorp-for-missing-1-billion/.

[239] Claire Bernish, “$10 Trillion Missing from Pentagon and no one - not even the DoD - Knows Where it is” *Activist Post*, March 27, 2017, https://www.activistpost.com/2017/03/10-trillion-missing-pentagon-no-one-not-even-dod-knows.html.

[240] “Larry Silverstein - Controlled Demolition - He Admits they Pulled WTC-7” YouTube video, 2001, 11:00, posted on February 8, 2013, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ZeuQqP-NLnE.

[241] “Silverstein: WTC Leaseholder May Collect Up To $4.6B,” *Forbes*, December 6, 2004, https://www.forbes.com/2004/12/06/1206autofacescan06.html#18bc261b5647.

[242] “WTC7 Gallery of Evidence,” *Architects and Engineers for 9/11 Truth*, http://www2.ae911truth.org/wtc7.php.

[243] Sophie McAdam, “9/11: How did the BBC Know about WTC7’s Collapse 23 Minutes before it Happened?” *True Activist*, September 11, 2015, http://www.trueactivist.com/911-how-did-the-bbc-know-about-wtc7s-collapse-23-minutes-before-it-happened/.

[244] Jon Boone, “Foreign Contractors Hired Afghan ‘Dancing Boys,’ WikiLeaks Cable Reveals,” *The Guardian*, December 2, 2010, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2010/dec/02/foreign-contractors-hired-dancing-boys.

[245] John Nova Lomax, “WikiLeaks: Texas Company Helped Pimp Little Boys to Stoned Afghan Cops,” *Houston Press*, December 4, 2010, https://archive.is/MRgJN#selection-1367.0-1367.70.

[246] Marcus Oliveira Spiegelma, “Hillary Clinton and DynCorp: The Untold Story of the 15-year-old Belly Dancer,” *medium.com*, November 7, 2016, https://medium.com/@elBuho/hillary-clinton-and-dyncorp-the-unknown-story-of-the-15-year-old-belly-dancer-2587b2552a54.

[247] William Craddock, “The Clinton-Silsby Trafficking Scandal and how the Media Covered it up,” *Disobedient Media*, January 25, 2017, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/01/the-clinton-silsby-trafficking-scandal-and-how-the-media-covered-it-up/.

[248] “Retired Army 2-Star Charged with Six Counts of Rape,” *Army Times*, April 14, 2017, http://archive.is/ExPUg#selection-1739.165-1739.250.

- [249]Greg Grandin, “ US Soldiers and Contractors Sexually Abused at least 54 Children in Colombia between 2003 and 2007,” *The Nation*, April 7, 2015, https//www.thenation.com/article/us-soldiers-and-contractors-sexually-abuse-at-least-54-children-colombia/.

[250] William Craddock, “U.N. Child Abuse Scandal is latest In History of Sex Crimes Committed by Officials, Peacekeepers,” *Disobedient Media*, April 17, 2017, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/04/u-n-child-abuse-scandal-is-latest-in-history-of-sex-crimes-committed-by-officials-peacekeepers/.

[251] Alex Newman, “Sex Abuse by UN ‘Peace’ Troops Becoming Global Scandal,” *The New American*, June 18, 2015, https://www.thenewamerican.com/world-news/north-america/item/21090-sex-abuse-by-un-peace-troops-becoming-global-scandal.

[252] Paul Lewis, “Child Sex Scandal Roils UNICEF Unit,” The New York Time, June 25, 1987, http://www.nytimes.com/1987/06/25/world/child-sex-scandal-roils-unicef-unit.html.

[253] Owen Bowcott, “Report reveals Shame of UN Peacekeepers,” *The Guardian*, March 25, 2005, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2005/mar/25/unitednations.

[254] “Index of Countries on the UN Security Council’s Agenda: Democratic Republic of Congo,” *Global Policy Forum*, https://www.globalpolicy.org/security-council/index-of-countries-on-the-security-council-agenda/democratic-republic-of-congo.html.

[255] Paisley Dodds, https://apnews.com/e6ebc331460345c5abd4f57d77f535c1utm_campaign=SocialFlow&utm_source=Twitter&utm_medium=AP.

[256] Alex Newman, https://www.thenewamerican.com/world-news/north-america/item/21090-sex-abuse-by-un-peace-troops-becoming-global-scandal.

[257] Christopher Ingraham, “Why one of the World’s Worst Human Rights Offenders is Leading a U.N. Human Rights Panel,” *The Washington Post*, September 28, 2015, https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/wonk/wp/2015/09/28/why-one-of-the-worlds-worst-human-rights-offenders-is-leading-a-un-human-rights-panel/?utm_term=.daa122c52e73.

[258] “Stoning in Saudi Arabia,” *Live Leak* video, March 5, 2016, 3:57, https://www.liveleak.com/view?i=598_1457227209.

[259] “Death Penalty Data Base: Saudi Arabia,” *Cornell Center on the Death Penalty Worldwide*, April 4, 2011, http://www.deathpenaltyworldwide.org/country-search-post.cfm?country=saudi+arabia.

[260] “Saudi Pedophiles are Buying Syrian Children in Jordan Border,” *awdnews.com*, September 13, 2015, http://www.awdnews.com/top-news/video-saudi-pedophiles-are-buying-syrian-children-in-jordan-border.

[261] “The High Rape Scale in Saudi Arabia,” *Women Stats*, January 16, 2013, https://womanstats.wordpress.com/2013/01/16/the-high-rape-scale-in-saudi-arabia/.

[262] Caroline Schaeffer, “5 Facts of Life for Women in Saudi Arabia Call Into Question Late King's Legacy of ‘Women's Rights,’” *ijr.com*, January 27, 2015, http://ijr.com/2015/01/239101-death-saudis-king-legacy-advocate-women-questioned/.

[263] Rana Harbi, “Saudi Women Take on Oppressive Guardianship System,” *Al-Akhbar*, March 10, 2014, http://english.al-akhbar.com/node/18955.

[264] Jared Malsin, “Saudi Arabia Will Finally Allow Women to Drive,” *Time Magazine*, September 26, 2017, http://time.com/4958442/saudi-arabia-women-to-drive-movement-cars/.

[265] “UN Agrees to Appoint Human Rights Expert on Protection of LGBT,” *UN New Centre*, July 1, 2016, http://www.un.org/apps/news/story.asp?NewsID=54385.

[266] Dave Hodges, “The UN is Normalizing Pedophilia – The Deep State is Free to Prey upon your Children,” *The Common Sense Show*, June 14, 2017, http://www.thecommonsenseshow.com/2017/06/14/the-un-is-normalizing-pedophilia-the-deep-state-is-free-to-prey-upon-your-children/.

[267] Alex Newman, “UN Unleashes LGBT Czar to Promote Homosexuality, Transgenderism,” *The New American*, July 6, 2016, https://www.thenewamerican.com/world-news/europe/item/23579-un-unleashes-lgbt-czar-to-promote-homosexuality-transgenderism.

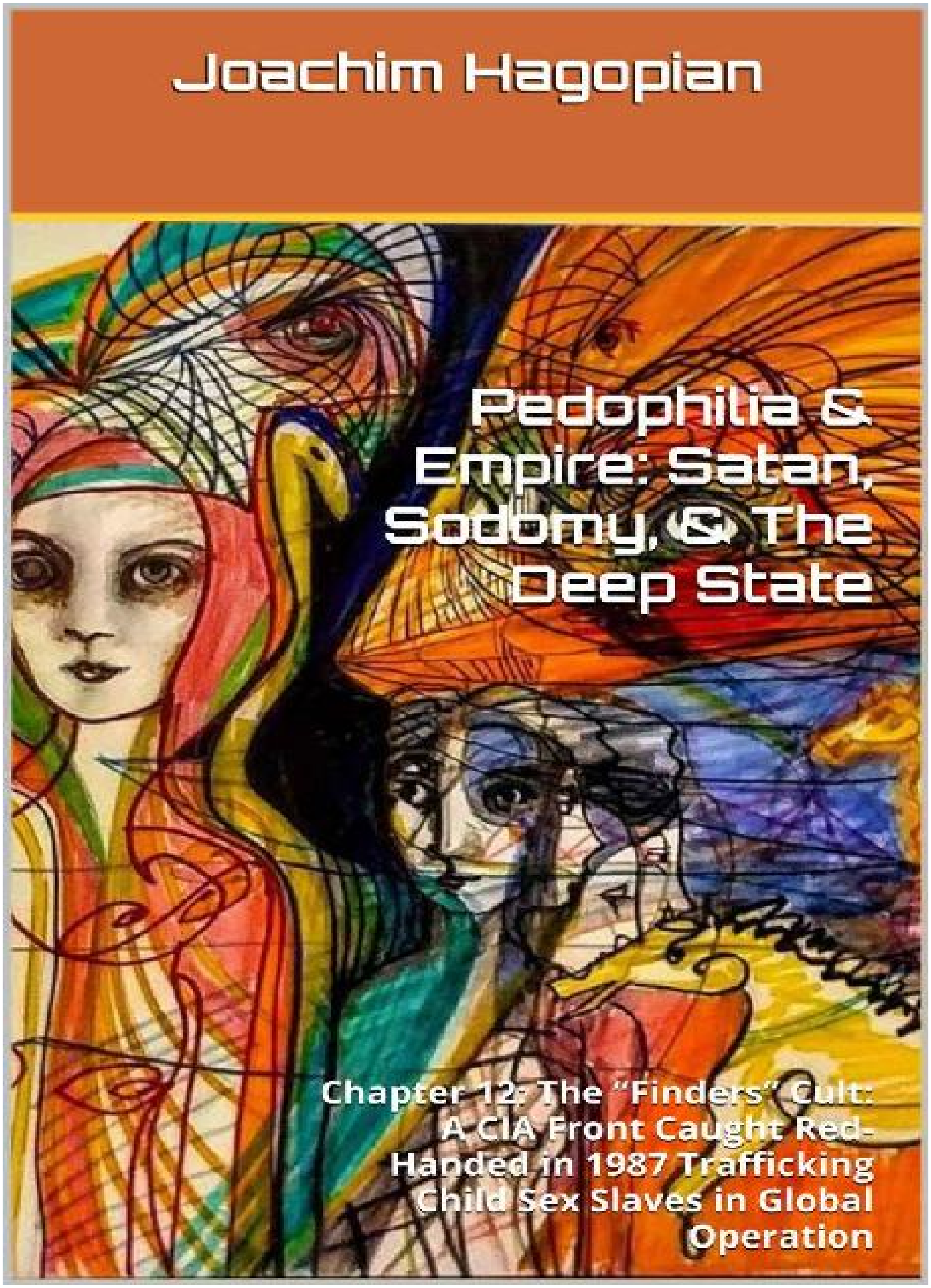

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 12: The "Finders" Cult: A CIA Front Caught Red-Handed in 1987 Trafficking Child Sex Slaves in Global Operation

Chapter 12: The “Finders” Cult: A CIA Front Caught Red-Handed in 1987 Trafficking Child Sex Slaves in Global Operation

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission

http://www.noramaccoby.com/

Little is known or been written about an enormously significant event that took place just over three decades ago involving a bizarre cult called the Finders. This presentation will examine all available documented evidence that includes recent, never before released public records from the police and US Customs investigations.[1] Other than a couple conspicuous mainstream media articles from February 1987 and a final follow-up in 1994, the critical importance of this “mysterious” group sometimes called “Finders Keepers” and its operation have largely been lost to the public. Despite the name - Finders Keepers - denoting procurers or finders of children kept as pedophile slaves, the CIA front that trafficked children for the elite has by careful design remained an obscure, strange footnote in history. But this gross omission conveniently disregards the compelling evidence acting as tangible proof that the Finders was a CIA front organization caught in the act of abducting and moving very young children across both US state lines as well as international borders, functionally serving as a first conduit link to the highly organized child sex slave trafficking pipeline controlled by the most powerful evildoers on earth. And it’s no accident that this scandal centered in Washington DC was operating at the exact same time and place as the very much related Franklin scandal occurring throughout the Reagan-Bush years of the 1980’s. The Franklin scandal is directly linked to the Vice President and

President-to-be, pedophile drug lord and international child pusher George H.W. Bush,[2] and will be taken up in full detail in Chapter 13.

Both of these two scandals, the Finders and Franklin from 30 years ago, along with the temporally co-occurring high profile daycare scandals already covered in Chapter 8, are the pedo-forerunners having direct relevance and connection to today’s Pizzagate turned PedoGate scandal. During the ensuing three decades the worldwide child trafficking network at least in the United States simply submerged a little more underground, but never ever stopped flourishing. Chapters 4-7 dealt with the centuries old sodomy committed regularly by the Catholic Church that willfully kept their sex crimes tightly under wraps until this century. Chapters 10 and 11 further exposed the ongoing globalized child trafficking network typically entrenched in combat zones during the 1990’s Bosnia and Kosovo Wars as well as the more recent CIA-State Department-USAID run pedophile havens for the booming child sex tourism industry most blatant in Pacific Asia. And of course this century’s nonstop Empire wars in the Middle East and Ukraine provide yet more fertile ground for illegal movement of guns, drugs, body parts and children around the globe.

So be mindful that to this very day the global pedophile Empire has never ceased operating but as the cancerous blight it is has only spread its expansive predatory tentacles to every corner of the globe, every year abducting more missing children, and raping, torturing and killing yet more innocents every single day. But thankfully 2017 is the pivotal year that the world population is finally beginning to catch on for the first time the absolute urgency of challenging this mammoth criminal enterprise. Mass awareness offers humanity the chance to not only further expose the puppet master pedophiles and their puppet minions, but also finally hold their cabal accountable for their continual atrocities. With our growing collective effort to shine light on this dark scourge now beginning to pay off, we finally have our best chance to reduce and purge the elite's sexual slavery and Satanic ritual abuse of our innocents off the face of this earth.

A Chronology of Irrefutable Hardcore Evidence

On February 4th, 1987 two white men in their 20's, each dressed in coat and tie, were seen at a Tallahassee, Florida park playground with six white children aged 2 to 6 covered with insect bites and appearing very unkempt and improperly cared for.[3] An anonymous tipster contacted the city police to report the apparent child neglect and potential abuse. The police officer dispatched on the scene questioned the two men who claimed they were teachers traveling to Mexico to start a school for brilliant children. When asked about the children's parents, the one adult willing to respond became evasive after stating the children "were being weaned from their mothers."[4] When the police officer informed the two men that they were under arrest for suspicion of multiple counts of child abuse, the man refusing to answer questions fell to the ground feigning unconsciousness. At that point, after tentatively identifying themselves as Michael Houlihan (whose real name was later determined to be James Michael Holwell[5]) and Douglas Ammerman (who had no ID on him), both failed to cooperate any further in answering police questions. Later at the station Holwell pulled out two business cards with each of his two names on one side and the statement written on the other alluding to know his constitutional right to remain silent. In the park their nearby 1980 blue Dodge van displayed Virginia license plates. Upon closer inspection, police found a foul-smelling mattress in the back of the van along with maps, books, letters, 20 floppy computer disks, a device that can be hooked into a telephone line for computer transmissions,[6] a US passport and a pack of condoms. After all eight persons were taken into police custody, a spokesperson described the half dozen kids as “hungry… and pretty pathetic.”[7]

A female witness alleged to have carried on a 5-7 minute conversation with one of the men at the park later came forth and testified that she believed the man she spoke to was on drugs. In the middle of winter in northern Florida she said that he had asked her if she knew of another local “park with a swimming pond,” presumably to bathe the visibly filthy children.[8] After the oldest child, a six-year old girl named Mary Houlihan, possibly Michael’s biological daughter, reaffirmed that they were being transported to a school in Mexico, informing the police that they had been living at a commune in DC later determined to be the Finders, and that the cult leader referred to as “the game caller” (later identified as one Marion Pettie) would not allow the children to sleep in the house with the adults but relegated to living in outside tents.[9] Mary claimed that they were only given food as a reward. They were also kept out of school and appeared unfamiliar with such basic household items as television sets, telephones, typewriters, staplers and even toilets. This anomaly stands in stark contrast with the adult Finders. In early 1987 prior to the internet and private citizens even owning personal computers, the Finders members possessed numerous computers, and were highly skilled at utilizing the latest state of the art technology. This night and day difference between adults and children clearly attests to the lowly status of the young kids as subjugated, abusively exploited sex slaves. Though Mary was the only child able or willing to verbalize responses to police questions, the children were inadequately able to even identify themselves by name or the names of their two male custodians, which increased law enforcement suspicions that the two adults had kidnapped the children.

One day after the arrest the Tallahassee Police Department contacted US Customs and the Washington Metropolitan Police Department (MPD) to assist determining both adult abusers' and the children's identities and learn more about the Finders group that they represented. US Customs was included due to the expressed intention of crossing the international border into Mexico as well as suspected violations of the Child Protection Act of 1984.[10] And since within the US Customs Department a Child Pornography and Protection Unit was already in place, that federal agency along with the FBI also became involved. Based on initially seized evidence, the two men were suspected of "supplying children for the production of child pornography." Adding weight to these charges, an examining physician found that the two eldest children - Mary and a five-year old boy named Max - had been sexually abused. Additionally, Mary had become somewhat agitated prior to the physical examination when asked if she'd been inappropriately touched by adults.

The joint US Customs-intercity police investigation not only centered on the already firmly established physical evidence of gross neglect, sexual abuse and crossing state lines with abused trafficked children, but also sought to determine if the children had been kidnapped and reported missing.[11] The Florida arrest gave probable cause to attain search warrants for two Finders locations in Washington, a duplex townhouse in NW DC where members lived and a nearby warehouse where alleged Finders' businesses were conducted in NE DC that apparently also doubled as a place of lodging for some. Search warrants were also secured to inspect a number of Finders' properties (totaling 600 acres) that included a 90 acre farm owned by leader Marion Pettie located 90 miles outside DC via state highway 666 in the sleepy, little quaint town of Culpeper, Virginia in rural Madison County.[12] Also true to demonic Illuminati-like organizations, a local attorney in town representing a former Finders member in a messy divorce case received threatening, profane letters of harassment from Finders, had his tires slashed, and was forced to obtain a legal restraining order just to get the cult to cease aggressions.[13]

Assigned US Customs special agent Ramon J. Martinez joined the Washington Metro police lead detective James Bradley who had already begun investigating Finders in December 1986 and with fresh search warrants they inspected the two DC Finders' properties.[14] Two months earlier an informant had divulged that the Finders cult regularly engaged in "blood rituals and sexual orgies involving children, and an as yet unsolved murder."[15] Officer Martinez conducted a search of the Finders residence in NW Washington (three short miles from the future Pizzagate epicenter Comet Ping Pong) and found several individuals on the premises but only one a Finders member – Stuart Silverstone, located in a computer room filled with computers, printers and Finders documents that all proved very incriminating, confirming suspicions that the cult was in fact directly involved in global child sex trafficking and sexual abuse of children. Straight from Martinez' US Customs report:

Cursory examination of the documents revealed detailed instructions for obtaining children for unspecified purposes. The instructions included impregnation of female members of the community known as Finders, purchasing children, trading, and kidnapping. There were telex messages using MCI account numbers between a computer terminal believed to be located in the same room, and others located across the country and in foreign locations. One such telex specifically ordered the purchase of two children in Hong Kong to be arranged through a contact at the Chinese Embassy there.[16]

Also found were papers expressing an acute interest in:

> *'Bank secrecy' situations… high-tech transfers to the United Kingdom, numerous properties under the control of the Finders, a keen interest in terrorism, explosives, and the evasion of law enforcement.*[17]

Also hugely significant is the fact that within hours of the Tallahassee incident, Martinez discovered the confidential arrest records of the two Finders and six children taken into custody the night before.[18] This unequivocally proves that intelligence insiders (i.e., the CIA) privy to on-the-ground actions in Florida tipped off the Finders in real time that instantly relayed warnings around the globe. A sophisticated worldwide computer network immediately had broadcast instructions advising "participants to move 'the children' and keep them moving through different jurisdictions, and instructions on how to avoid police attention."[19] In the immediate aftermath of the Tallahassee arrests, Lt. Lee Hart from the Culpeper police department where the Finders leader Marion Pettie owned real estate, stated that Pettie "would go to Andrews Air Force Base and get a military plane flight to China."[20] This telling statement reveals that Pettie enjoyed an intimate relationship with intelligence forces that included both the CIA as well as the US military and was doing business with Red China procuring two children in Hong Kong at that time.

The Finders was definitely not the operation of some 1960's, pie-in-the-sky, hippie commune holdout as initial press had concluded based on the government's official false narrative[21] but a highly advanced CIA government proprietary criminal operation. The Finders' mastermind Marion Pettie also rented rooms out in his house to foreign nationals, one allegedly a Tianjin, China born grad student at Georgetown University[22] (the same school that longtime CIA operative Dr. Sue Arrigo refers to as CIA U[23]). Was this

Chinese national residing at Finders' residence and the Finders' purchase order of two kids in Hong Kong arranged through the Red Chinese embassy a pure matter of coincidence? Seems highly doubtful.

On the next day February 6th, Martinez joined Metro detective Bradley at the Finders warehouse location. There they found loads more documents describing "explicit sexual conduct between members," including an enormous collection of photos believed to be both nude Finders adults and nude children, at least one depicting "a child 'on display' and appearing to accent the child's genitals." A photo album exhibited "a series of photos of adults and children dressed in white sheets participating in a 'blood ritual.'"[24] Apparently photos taken on Pettie's Madison County farm showed two goats - often the symbol for Satan[25] - being ceremonially executed, disemboweled, skinned, dismembered (including a male goat's testes and a female goat's womb containing dead babies), and one photo of a crying, traumatized child being presented the goat's head by an adult Finder.[26] Throughout ancient occult history, the goat's head has long represented Baphomet, yet another Satanic practice symbol for the devil.

Similar to the computer room at the residence, the warehouse also stored stacks of documents and files pertaining to Finders activities around the world. To name just a few that Martinez noted: Costa Rica, the Bahamas, London, Germany and other European locations as well as the Soviet Union, Japan, Hong Kong, China, Russia, North Korea, Malaysia and Africa.[27] Other file labels observed were named according to project, members' names and locations. A couple of notable examples were labeled "Palestinian" and "Pentagon Break-In." Intelligence files were gathered on individual private families seemingly unrelated to Finders members other than the Finders would answer ads for babysitters and tutors and glean "as much information as possible about the habits, identity, occupation, etc., of the family." Immense amounts of data on various childcare organizations was also collected. This massive intelligence gathering data only makes perfect sense for a CIA front whose primary mission is child victim procurement and global child sex trafficking. Pettie was the "Game Caller" calling the shots on his trafficking network graphically displayed not only in countless documents but also on wall maps of the world in every Finders location.

Back in 1987 both the Northwest residence and the Northeast warehouse had installed large sophisticated satellite systems. Each location also included a hot tub Jacuzzi and sauna,[28] no doubt for "relaxing" with the kids (not unlike the *WikiLeaks* release of last year's Podesta/DNC emails[29]). The Finders warehouse contained a large library, two kitchens and a video room that served as a "training area for children" and "indoctrination center." The organization possessed the capacity and equipment to make their own videos, and based on volumes of nude photos, their own child porn videos as well.[30] Additionally in the residential section of the warehouse there was also an altar set up for occult rituals. Several more US passports were collected during the search. Bizarrely in this same section were stored jars containing urine and feces,[31] disgustingly popular ingredients for satanic rituals with children. Recall that in both mind control torture as well as the satanic rituals at daycare facilities, kids were forced to eat shit, drink piss and have excrement smeared on them as standard occult operating procedure. Over the next three to five days the Washington Metro Police Department was tasked with sorting, reviewing and logging all the confiscated evidence.

Apparently through a leak at the Tallahassee Police Department, the press in both Florida and the nation's capital were tipped off and snooping around asking questions as Martinez left the warehouse location.[32] As the authorities carried scores of large plastic bags out of the warehouse as gathered legal evidence, reporters were quick to notice all the:

> *… Color slides, photographs and photographic contact sheets. Some showed naked children involved in what appeared to be 'cult rituals,' bloodletting ceremonies of animals and one photograph of a child in chains.*[33]

And the very next day on February 7th, just three short days after the Tallahassee arrest, while Ramon Martinez was signing his 5-page US Customs report, the *Washington Post* was also breaking the big sensational story with the following headline "Officials Describe 'Cult Rituals' in Child Abuse Case." Unlike nowadays with *WaPo*'s blind denial and conspicuous silence on any pedophile ring still operating in our nation's capital,[34] three decades ago the CIA owned and controlled MSM rag[35] openly asserted that something satanically sinister was lurking within the Finders confines. The 1987 article reported that prior district court records indicated that a police source reported that the 40 adult membership of the Finders cult conducted "brainwashing" techniques at the warehouse as well as at the duplex. The source claimed that cult recruitment promised "financial reward and sexual gratification" as well as "explore Satanism." A court affidavit from the source also maintained that members of the group used children in "rituals" and that "the children's grandparents feared for their safety."

But despite all this clear evidence of child pornography, Satanic ritual child sexual abuse, and global child sex trafficking, from the get-go the writing was already on the wall because less than a week after the two pedophile traffickers were in custody in Florida, the CIA controlled DC Metro Police Department and CIA controlled *Washington Post* were declaring that the Finders were not criminals. *WaPo*'s February 10th headline read "D.C. Police Finders Odd, not

Criminal."[36] The day before at a press conference the DC Police Chief Maurice T. Turner, Jr. told the world the boldface lie that:

> *The lifestyle of the so-called Finders organization may differ from the societal norm, but so far the Metropolitan Police Department has not uncovered any evidence of criminal wrongdoing by members of the group.*

Again, what we have here are the complicit stooges readily in place simply doing what they're told - reading from a preplanned script written by the perps in charge of the worldwide trafficking network conveniently covering up their own heinous crimes. And lo and behold, those "three to five days" that the DC Metro Police would purportedly analyze the piles of confiscated evidence turned into more than three to five weeks. Not until March 31st, 1987 was Customs Officer Martinez contacting MPD's lead detective Bradley to assess evidential findings and presumably resume the joint investigation with a meeting arranged for April 2nd or 3rd. But when Martinez showed up, that lead MPD investigator was nowhere to be found. Instead his surrogate was instructed to only "discuss the case on a strictly 'off the record' basis."[37]

Martinez was told that after all the Finders members' passports were handed over to the State Department, the DC police were told that they were all legal and that since no improprieties warranted any further action, they were returned to the Finders. Incredibly, this whitewashed response belied the fact that the Finders passport records showed that they had made frequent trips to Moscow, North Korea, China and North Vietnam throughout the cold war era from the late 1950's through the mid 1970's.[38] In other words, despite Finders being allowed to freely travel behind enemy lines during wartime years fraternizing and making business deals with America's so called Communist enemies, the State Department [and CIA] obviously had no problem with their espionage activities. This fact indicates yet more blatant evidence the Finders was a covert CIA operation. This unbelievable turn of events was just the beginning. Officer Martinez' final report described what the Washington Metro Police spokesman told him next:

The individual further advised me of circumstances which indicated that the investigation into the activity of the Finders had become a CIA internal matter. The MPD report has been classified secret and was not available for review. I was advised that the FBI had withdrawn from the investigation several weeks prior and that the FBI Foreign Counter Intelligence Division had directed the MPD not to advise the FBI Washington Field Office of anything that had transpired. No further information will be available. No further action will be taken.[39]

So just like that, the Finders investigation was suddenly closed. Once again evoking the "national security" card, the Department of Justice ordered the immediate shutdown of the joint police-Customs-FBI investigation and was conveniently turned over to the CIA as a sensitive "internal security matter."[40] All the blatant crime evidence was suppressed and denied, the half dozen abused children were returned to their two freed adult perps and the CIA-Finders operation was back in business.

Despite the indisputable proof that the Finders was an obvious CIA front trafficking and abusing children worldwide, because they were pawns serving the likes of pedophile kingpin George H.W. Bush[41] and his evil ilk, the Finders were allowed to go scot free and resume operations as if nothing had ever happened. Despite angry protest by the Tallahassee police, the pedophile kidnappers in custody were promptly released from jail.[42] That is simply the power of the pedophile Empire in action that existed in 1987 as it still exists today.

But because in this last year the pedophiles have been stripped naked again, caught in the act against children like never before, simply whitewashing tons of evidence surfacing daily under the MSM carpet and pretending the Luciferian mob running this planet isn't raping and killing our children en masse will no longer wash. The guilty this time around are finally paying for their crimes. With all the sexual predators now falling one by one from their no longer safe perch,[43] the Weinsteins, Spaceys, the Charlie Roses, John Conyers and the Al Frankens are all going down.[44] This is just the beginning - debaucherously hardened pedophiles atop their crumbling, wretched crime cabal will undoubtedly be next.

Because rumors of the foul truth surrounding the Finders as a CIA pedo-front lingered on for years afterwards, one more mainstream media attempt to gain full closure to put to rest any vestige of what actually occurred arrived seven years later in a 1994 article from *US News and World Report* designed to finish the job suppressing the ugly inconvenient truth once and for all.[45] No sooner did the piece admit the litany of evidential findings of child sexual abuse years earlier, albeit cloaked behind the qualifier merely suggesting abuse may have taken place, the next sentence delivers the entire message payload:

None of the allegations was ever proved, however.[46]

Of course it wasn't – all evidence was immediately squelched and forevermore sealed tight from any further public exposure. But again, the pedo-cat had already been let out of the bag, no matter how hard the pedo-power-crazies try to gloss over their crimes ever since. Like it always does, the corrupt and totally controlled Washington Metro Police Department predictably followed its marching orders, “admitting” that Marion Pettie and his gang may appear a bit “eccentric,” but they were never criminals. The article goes on to explain that a couple of Congress members in 1994 wanted to reopen the case, believing that criminal evidence had in fact been overtly covered up.[47] But of course nothing ever came of their inquiry. *US News* reported that Pettie in 1994 described the Finders as a “communal, holistic-living and learning arrangement,” all harmlessly benign. After the 1987 fallout that resulted in many of the women and mothers leaving the group, by 1994 the number of Finders had fallen by half to 20.[48] Pettie stated his members did “freelance journalism, research and ‘competitor intelligence’ for a variety of mostly foreign clients,” but never for governments. And despite admitting that his late wife was a CIA employee and his son worked with the CIA front Air America, notorious for smuggling opium into the US from the Golden Triangle during the Vietnam War,[49] Pettie insisted he had no ties to the CIA, claiming he sent his wife in to spy on the CIA.[50] Recall also that the Finders were actively doing business with North Vietnam. And Pettie also has stated in his interview that over the decades he rented rooms out to intelligence and counterintelligence personnel, including foreign operatives. And law enforcement has disclosed that a number of Finders members have been listed in the FBI’s classified counterintelligence files.[51]

The CIA has even admitted that “a few Finders members” were employed by a company that trained CIA personnel in computer software. However, standard CIA protocol calls for CIA or one of its numerous proprietary companies to customarily provide the agency’s in-service training, rarely if ever outside private entities with “no ties” as Pettie claims.[52] Despite the CIA and Pettie’s feeble denials overtly attempting to distance each from the other, far too glaring proof has shown that for many decades Finders was an active CIA front operating a global child sex trafficking network.

Per US Customs in the US government's own conclusive words:

> *During the course of the [Finders] search warrants, numerous documents were discovered which appeared to be concerned with international trafficking in children, high tech transfer to the United Kingdom, and international transfer of currency.*[53]

Again the London link to central banking is alluded to in the financing of a worldwide child sex trafficking operation as documented by US Customs Special Agent Ramon Martinez 30 years ago. But most importantly, this confirmed reality was the US government's own foregone conclusion based on initially available, highly incriminating and increasingly overwhelming evidence that clearly demonstrates the CIA-Finders' criminal guilt.

An incisive *Voxfux* article with unnamed author drew this all too accurate conclusion:

> *The story of the Finders cult is the story of the development of child/assets to be used to entrap politicians, diplomats; corporate and law enforcement officials; to sell child/victims to wealthy perverts to raise money for covert operations, to train some of the child/victims to be professional operatives and assassins of a totally cold, multiple personality, mind control nature.*[54]

Longtime mind control sex slave, spy, remote viewer and CIA operative Dr. Sue Arrigo's knowledgeable, credible contention is that the Finders kids were the throwaways of the CIA throwaways from its MK Ultra mind control program.[55] Murdered CIA director for his "loose lips" William Colby once explained to Sue Arrigo that Finders was a CIA front program recruiting and training expendable children as targeted procurers of peers to push CIA drugs, arms and fellow sex slaves as a cost-effective measure designed to cut down liability of an inordinate number of CIA KIA's.

Career G-man and Memphis, Dallas and Los Angeles FBI station chief Ted Gunderson had this to say about the "eccentric" cult:

The Finders are a CIA front established in the 1960's. It has top clearance and protection in its assigned task of kidnapping and torture-programming young children throughout the US. Members are specially trained government kidnappers known to be sexual degenerates who involve children in Satanic sex orgies and bloody rituals as well as murders of other children and slaughter of animals.[56] *They are then used in their Satanic Ceremonies for body parts, as sex slaves, and some are auctioned off.*[57]

To further expound on what Ted Gunderson, post-FBI private investigator, found in the evidence of the Finder's criminal operation, *educate-yourself.com* editor Ken Adachi adds:

The kidnapping of children for purposes of prostitution, pornography, high tech weaponry experimental abuse, mind control abuse, child slave labor for underground alien-controlled facilities, white sex slavery, and the satanic ritual murder of untold ***thousands of American children*** *snatched from the streets and playgrounds of America by agents working for the CIA is the principle reason for the existence of a covert CIA operation called 'The Finders.' The Finders is one of the most alarming and despicable covert operations against America's children that Gunderson's investigations helped to uncover, but it's only one of many covert Gestapo-like acts committed against American citizens by government agents under directives issued, not by Congress or the President, but rather by international Satanists collectively known as the Illuminati, who control the Secret or Inner government of the United States as well* *as every other major government in the world. The ‘Finders’ operation began in the 1960's and continues kidnapping children to this very day.*[58]

Finders was nothing less than a CIA front organization caught red-handed specializing in international terrorism, worldwide child procurement and global child sex trafficking while practicing Luciferian ritual sexual abuse, mind control and systematic torture of children… all highly illegal, nefarious criminal activities independently confirmed and corroborated by hundreds of other well-documented sources. The child victims were supplied by both childbearing Finders breeders as well as through global abduction and the clandestine slave trade. The Finders delivered readily disposable children to be sodomized by the pedophile elite as well as those serving the elite. Beyond any question or doubt, Finders was protected by Washington’s powerbrokers, including US presidents and Congress, financed by the City of London and as such, enjoyed globalized outreach support, protection and concealment in virtually every State Department embassy throughout the world.

The same names keep popping up ad nauseam – the CIA, the FBI, the Bushes, the Clintons, the royals and their same secret societies, the CFR, the Pilgrims, the Skull and Bones, the Knights of Malta, the Freemasons, and on and on it goes. The dots are no longer dots needing to be connected but emboldened ratlines spread from Washington to London to Brussels to Rome, literally from one end of the earth to the other. The so called ruling elite are cannibalistic, Luciferian worshipping sodomizers and soulless child killers and that sadly is neither sensationalized exaggeration nor more internet fear porn. Time to face the cold hard reality of how the planetary controllers have both maintained and increased their earthly power.

Still not quite convinced yet? Next comes the biggest pedophile scandal ever recorded in American history - the infamous Franklin scandal that operated a trafficking ring straight from Omaha’s Catholic Boys Town orphanage directly to the pedophile Bush White House during the 1980’s and early 1990’s, fully covered in the next chapter.

Endnotes

---

[1] “’The Finders’ Cult: The Missing ‘#Pizzagate’ Links? Part 1 of Many,” *thegodofrage.wordpress.com*, October 25, 2017, https://thegodofrage.wordpress.com/2017/10/25/the-finders-cult-the-missing-pizzagate-links-part-1-of-many/.

[2] David Malmo Levine, “George H.W. Bush: Biggest Drug Lord Ever,” *Cannabis Culture*, May 16, 2017, http://www.cannabisculture.com/content/2017/05/16/george-h-w-bush-biggest-drug-lord-ever.

[3] Ramon J. Martinez, “Report of Investigation,” *United States Customs Service Documents*, February 7, 1987; February 12, 1987; April 13, 1987, *medium.com*, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[4] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[5] Victoria Churchville and Mark Fisher, “D.C. Police Finders Odd, Not Criminal,” *The Washington Post*, February 10, 1987, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/local/1987/02/10/dc-police-finders-odd-not-criminal/7571c820-de20-4800-9781-711a8351f52f/?utm_term=.9b556c82e98c.

[6] Saundra Saperstein and Victoria Churchville, “Officials Describe ‘Cult Rituals’ in Child Abuse Case,” *The Washington Post*, February 7, 1987, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1987/02/07/officials-describe-cult-rituals-in-child-abuse-case/11f05df1-48e0-41f7-b46d-249c0bd2bc39/?utm_term=.c416c4dbf616.

[7] Saundra Saperstein and Victoria Churchville, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1987/02/07/officials-describe-cult-rituals-in-child-abuse-case/11f05df1-48e0-41f7-b46d-249c0bd2bc39/?utm_term=.c416c4dbf616.

[8] “’The Finders’ Cult: The Missing ‘#Pizzagate’ Links? Part 1 of Many,” *godofrage.wordpress.com*, October 25, 2017,

https://thegodofrage.wordpress.com/2017/10/25/the-finders-cult-the-missing-pizzagate-links-part-1-of-many/.

[9] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[10] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[11] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[12] Kenn Thomas and Len Bracken "The Finders' Keeper: An Interview with Marion Pettie," *Steamshovel Press,* Issue #16, 1998, *archive.com,* https://archive.org/stream/ConspiracyOfSilenceTranscriptFranklinCoverUp/Finders-Document-35_djvu.txt.

[13] Victoria Churchville and Mark Fisher, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/local/1987/02/10/dc-police-finders-odd-not-criminal/7571c820-de20-4800-9781-711a8351f52f/?utm_term=.9b556c82e98c.

[14] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[15] Saundra Saperstein and Victoria Churchville, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1987/02/07/officials-describe-cult-rituals-in-child-abuse-case/11f05df1-48e0-41f7-b46d-249c0bd2bc39/?utm_term=.c416c4dbf616.

[16] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[17] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[18] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[19] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[20] "'The Finders' Cult: The Missing '#Pizzagate' Links? Part 6 of Many," *thegodofrage.wordpress.com*, November 25, 2017, https://thegodofrage.wordpress.com/2017/11/25/the-finders-cult-the-missing-pizzagate-links-part-6-of-many/.

[21] Saundra Saperstein and Victoria Churchville, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1987/02/07/officials-describe-

cult-rituals-in-child-abuse-case/11f05df1-48e0-41f7-b46d-249c0bd2bc39/?utm_term=.c416c4dbf616.

[22] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[23] Sue Arrigo, "Secrets of the CIA's Global Sex Industry, Part 2," Cathy Fox blog on child abuse, March 17, 2017, https://cathyfox.wordpress.com/2017/03/17/secrets-of-the-cias-global-sex-slave-industry-2-by-sue-arrigo-md/.

[24] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[25] Sara Coughlin, "Why is the Devil also a Goat?" *Refinery29*, April 4, 2017, http://www.refinery29.com/baphomet-sabbatic-goat-satanic-symbol-meaning.

[26] Victoria Churchville and Mark Fisher, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/local/1987/02/10/dc-police-finders-odd-not-criminal/7571c820-de20-4800-9781-711a8351f52f/?utm_term=.9b556c82e98c.

[27] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[28] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[29] "Regarding Farmers L Update and Welcome Mat," *WikiLeaks*, DNC/John Podesta emails, October 8, 2015, https://wikileaks.org/podesta-emails/emailid/46736.

[30] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[31] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[32] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[33] Saundra Saperstein and Victoria Churchville, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1987/02/07/officials-describe-cult-rituals-in-child-abuse-case/11f05df1-48e0-41f7-b46d-249c0bd2bc39/?utm_term=.c416c4dbf616.

[34] Marc Fisher, John Woodrow Cox and Peter Hermann, "Pizzagate: From Rumor, to Hashtag, to Gunfire in D.C.," *The Washington Post*, December 6, 2016, https://www.washingtonpost.com/local/pizzagate-from-rumor-to-hashtag-

to-gunfire-in-dc/2016/12/06/4c7def50-bbd4-11e6-94ac-3d324840106c_story.html?utm_term=.ec3601d817af.

[35] Jeffrey St. Clair and Alexander Cockburn, “The CIA and the Press: When the Washington Post Ran the CIA’s Propaganda Network,” *CounterPunch*, November 30, 2016, https://www.counterpunch.org/2016/11/30/the-cia-and-the-press-when-the-washington-post-ran-the-cias-propaganda-network/.

[36] Victoria Churchville and Mark Fisher, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/local/1987/02/10/dc-police-finders-odd-not-criminal/7571c820-de20-4800-9781-711a8351f52f/?utm_term=.9b556c82e98c.

[37] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[38] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[39] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[40] “The CIA Traffics in Drugs, Child Ritual Sexual Abuse, and Global Murder,” *voxfux.com*, http://www.voxfux.com/features/cia_child_sex.html.

[41] “Paedophiles in Power – A Conspiracy of Silence and Cover-up (in the US),” *Gumshoe News*, February 6, 2015, https://gumshoenews.com/2015/02/06/paedophiles-in-power-a-conspiracy-of-silence-and-cover-up-in-us/.

[42] “The CIA Traffics in Drugs, Child Ritual Sexual Abuse, and Global Murder,” http://www.voxfux.com/features/cia_child_sex.html.

[43] “The Sex Scandal Snowball Effect – This is Getting Huge,” YouTube video, 6:01, posted on November 13, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=UxmL5bRl7LU.

[44] “The Weinstein Effect,” *Wikipedia*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Weinstein_effect.

[45] Gordon Witkin, Peter Cary and Ancel Martinez, “Through a Glass very Darkly: Pedophile Networks and the CIA,” *US News and World Report*, December 19, 1993, *sott.net*, https://www.sott.net/article/242819-Through-a-Glass-Very-Darkly-Pedophile-Networks-and-the-CIA.

[46] Gordon Witkin, Peter Cary and Ancel Martinez, https://www.sott.net/article/242819-Through-a-Glass-Very-Darkly-Pedophile-Networks-and-the-CIA.

[47] Gordon Witkin, Peter Cary and Ancel Martinez, https://www.sott.net/article/242819-Through-a-Glass-Very-Darkly-Pedophile-Networks-and-the-CIA.

[48] Eddie Dean, “Finders’ Keeper,” *Washington City Paper*, May 24, 1996, https://www.washingtoncitypaper.com/news/article/13010819/finders-keeper.

[49] Rachel Blevins, “Real Life Air America: CIA Exposed Running a Covert Drug Smuggling Airline,” *Free Thought Project*, June 19, 2017, http://thefreethoughtproject.com/air-america-cia-secret-airline/.

[50] Kenn Thomas and Len Bracken, https://archive.org/stream/ConspiracyOfSilenceTranscriptFranklinCoverUp/Finders-Document-35_djvu.txt.

[51] Gordon Witkin, Peter Cary and Ancel Martinez, https://www.sott.net/article/242819-Through-a-Glass-Very-Darkly-Pedophile-Networks-and-the-CIA.

[52] Dave McGowan, “Finders Keepers,” *whale.to*, June 2000, http://www.whale.to/b/mcgowan2.html.

[53] Ramon J. Martinez, https://medium.com/@PizzagateWiki/steemit-archive-project-the-finders-documents-2c1c1074abd7.

[54] “The CIA Traffics in Drugs, Child Ritual Sexual Abuse, and Global Murder,” http://www.voxfux.com/features/cia_child_sex.html.

[55] Sue Arrigo, https://cathyfox.wordpress.com/2017/03/17/secrets-of-the-cias-global-sex-slave-industry-2-by-sue-arrigo-md/.

[56] Ted Gunderson, “The Finders’ Keeper: An Interview with Marion Pettie,” *scribd.com*, https://www.scribd.com/document/308897976/CTRL-the-Finders-Keeper-An-Interview-With-Marion-Pettie#browse-all-btn.

[57] Noreen Gosch, *Why Johnny Can’t Come Home* (West Des Moines, Iowa: Johnny Gosch Foundation), 2000, p. 189.

[58] Ken Adachi, “The Ted Gunderson Files,” *educate-yourself.com*, http://educate-yourself.org/tg/.

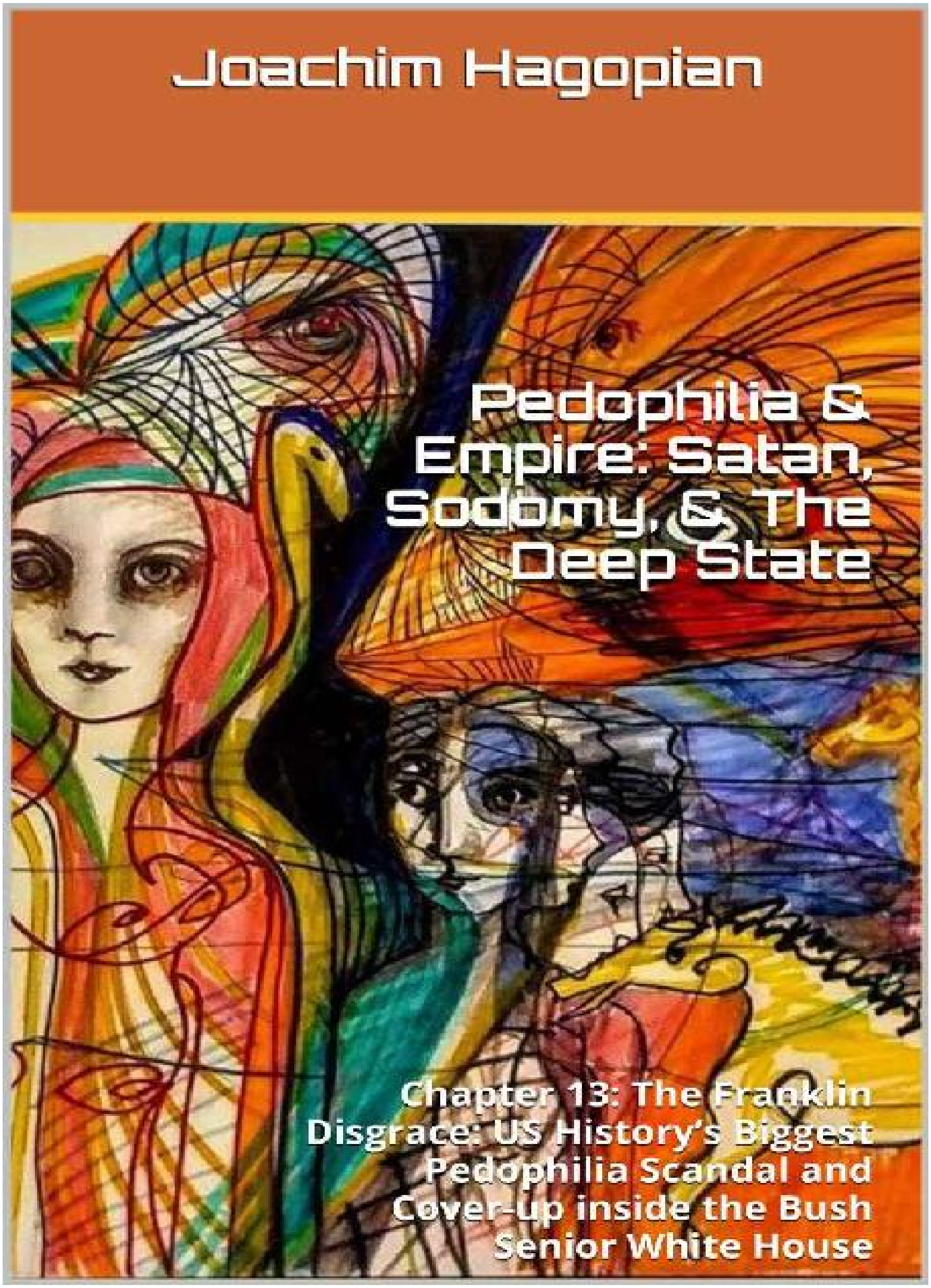

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 13: The Franklin Disgrace: US History's Biggest Pedophilia Scandal and Cover-up inside the Bush Senior White House

Chapter 13: The Franklin Disgrace: US History’s Biggest Pedophilia Scandal and Cover-up inside the Bush Senior White House

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission

http://www.noramaccoby.com/

The most thoroughly documented evidence proving America’s global pedophilia network operating at the highest levels of the US government is the infamous Franklin scandal, uncovered in a June 29, 1989 mainstream newspaper article by the *Washington Times*,[1] also reported by Tom Brokaw on *NBC’s Nightly News,*[2] and fully exposed in the truth revealing British documentary “Conspiracy of Silence,”[3] despite it being literally pulled at the last minute from its original scheduled Discovery Channel airing on May 3, 1994.[4] After it was listed in the TV Guide for a 10PM viewing, it was abruptly cancelled and all copies of the Yorkshire Television video were suddenly bought up with a half million dollar production company payoff.[5] Had it not been for a single rough-cut copy anonymously sent to attorney John DeCamp a year after all videos were supposedly destroyed, the powers-that-shouldn’t-be would’ve successfully blacked out this explosive documentary from ever being seen by anyone. That’s how pervasive and absolute the sinister controllers’ power at the top is. And as it is, its television broadcast ban has persisted to this very day, but thanks to DeCamp and the internet, it’s still widely available.

A just deserts irony rings true here - after the government’s own top secret Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA) invented the internet,[6] among other reasons as a potential tool for controlling the masses, similar to pedophilia, the internet has now fast become the elite's international crime cabal's own self-undoing.[7] Thankfully for us, truth can never be erased, at least not completely.

The Franklin scandal was also thoroughly chronicled in two very well-researched bestselling books, the first in 1992 called *The Franklin Cover-up: Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska* written by the same aforementioned attorney, the late longtime Nebraska state senator John DeCamp,[8] and the other even more detailed account published in 2011 entitled *The Franklin Scandal: A Story of Powerbrokers, Child Abuse and Betrayal* by journalist Nick Bryant.[9] Even CIA Mockingbird controlled propaganda ministry[10] rags like the *Washington Post*[11] and the *New York Times*[12] back in 1989 and 1990 ran articles covering the momentary blip on the public radar screen, documenting American history's biggest, all but forgotten pedophile scandal. Of course the only reason for this amnesia is the massive top-down textbook cover-up.

Despite this brief wide exposure by a diverse array of MSM outlets, Bush senior ensured that within a month in the summer of '89 the entire story got buried and ever since over the next three decades was hardly ever heard from again. Yet its uncovered, incontrovertible facts remain irrefutable and undeniable, once again illustrating how the most powerful people on this planet as Lucifer worshipping child rapists and murderers consistently get away with the most ungodly, egregious, shockingly despicable crimes in the history of humankind. Yet despite Trump's victory last November "ending" the dynasty run of the Bush-Clinton-Obama crime family spree[13] as outed international drug lords[14] [15] and pedo-pimps,[16] [17] [18] Washington remains a fortified, entrenched deep state pedophile-saturated swamp currently committing treason against a sitting US president.[19]

While Trump’s military buildup, warmongering rhetoric and Zionist move to Jerusalem debacle may disastrously plunge humanity off the Armageddon cliff,[20] all the while the deep state against him has committed treason many times over.[21] Why Trump’s enemies have attacked him with such unprecedented vengeance may well be because, unlike all his predecessors, Trump could actually be going after the pedophile elite.[22] All the latest buzz of sealed indictments numbering well over 4,000 (as of late November 2017),[23] Trump’s Winter Solstice signed executive order arresting and freezing assets of human rights/trafficking violators[24] and Gitmo expansion to make room for plane loads of new inmate arrivals suggesting the Podestas, Clintons and Bushes are next,[25] have lots in alt-news happily celebrating the new year, but seeing is believing. But if true, it explains why deep state’s been so desperately determined to destroy Trump before he destroys deep state.

In any event, during the course of this last year, criminals both in and out of government have been stripped naked, exposing their grotesque orgiastic debauchery and predatory bloodlust, and God willing, they’ll all finally be paying for their treasonous high crimes against both humanity and our children. But their criminal accountability depends entirely on you and me to first accept this vile sickening reality of what they’ve been doing and then resolutely take constructive action to remove this long embedded, festering cancer. Never before have we the citizens of the world ever possessed such great opportunity and power to rid the planet of the monsters who’ve singlehandedly hijacked and arrested the very evolution of our human species.[26] And prior to the .01% of the world’s population of evildoers completely destroying the earth’s eco-system as our only home,[27] the time to take action has also never been more urgent than right now. With no exaggeration, survival of our planet literally hangs in the balance.

Focusing on the basic historical facts behind the Franklin scandal as perversely tragic as they are, Chapter 13 will serve as the classic eye-opener to understanding the anatomy of the US child sex trafficking network and pedophilia in high places’ prototypical cover-up. It’s been operating unimpeded and growing for nearly four straight decades now, but only recently has it been unveiled like never before. The Franklin truth bomb only demonstrates that despite its earlier exposure, during the ensuing decades the ruling elite puppet masters behind the child sex trafficking network have only stepped up their global criminal operation. At 46 million and counting, both human slavery and child sex slavery today shamefully stand at an all-time high in the history of Homo sapiens walking this earth.[28] Likewise, the pedophilia Empire has never been more gargantuan a beast and a metastasized worldwide epidemic than it is at this very moment. That’s why the light of truth exposing this dark, demonic and perverse world in our midst can instantly become the fully lit beacon that effectively unites humanity and sets us free to purge once and for all this age old blight of bloodsucking, soulless sodomizers from their too long entrenched earthly power and control. Only until we successfully eliminate this pedophilia scourge and its Luciferian blackmail system of political and economic control and deception can humanity usher in anage of transparency, peace, prosperity and justice on a never before seen scale. But let’s first learn the very important, harsh and bitter pill of a lesson from the pedophilia primer of the ages - the Franklin scandal.

Before proceeding, at the outset a distinction must be made that media accounts of this scandal invariably use inaccurate, misleading terminology to describe child sex slaves as call boys and child prostitutes, and instead of identifying these pedophilia crimes as a child sex trafficking operation, it’s typically referred to as simply child prostitution. By definition, prostitution connotes a mutually agreed upon transaction of financial gain for one party in exchange for volitionally provided bodily services to another. Conscripted, abducted, drugged and tortured abused child sex slaves who earn virtually zero money as rape victims, criminally and brutally exploited by both pimps and perpetrators alike, through sexual trauma and financial profit going near exclusively to adult criminals - not the child victims, should never be misconstrued as child prostitution, even when a monetary exchange between pimp and perpetrator does occur. Unfortunately to this very day, law enforcement mistreats trafficked child victims of sexual slavery (“trafficked” meaning forced without consent) as criminals and so called child prostitutes, and even worse is still in the business of incarcerating child victims for extended periods.[29]

Thus, too frequently police only further tack on yet more abuse and both they and the media are still rampantly guilty of causing added damage and suffering by using words that cruelly mislabel victims as criminals. Even a 17-year old minor who “by choice” engages in sex for money is a victim, especially when economic and cultural factors so often present are considered. Young homeless runaways on the streets who are hungry for their next meal may feel forced to use their body as their only way to survive. Another common example typically encountered abroad is an orphaned eldest child facing the burdensome responsibility of taking care of younger siblings where few options exist amidst hordes of adult Western male predators hungrily on the prowl for sex with children, especially in pedo-sex tourism havens like Thailand, Philippines, other Asian countries and impoverished Third World nations around the globe.[30] Improving economic conditions, implementing and enforcing child rape laws, cleaning up government corruption, and providing education and understanding the larger context and the important distinction between child victimization and child prostitution[31] all would go far towards eliminating both this prevalent, unacceptable condition and distortedly inaccurate, unjust bias and unfair misperception.

With that caveat out of the way, let’s begin examining the Franklin child abuse scandal up close. The central adult figure is decorated Vietnam War veteran, 17-year Nebraska state senator, author and longtime attorney John DeCamp who represented several of the child victims in court as a well-intentioned protagonist. Years earlier after meeting his Vietnamese wife while serving as a Green Beret captain in Southeast Asia, as a Nebraska state senator in 1975 John was responsible for airlifting 2,800 orphaned children out of the war ravaged nation and finding homes for them in North America.[32] Initially as the Franklin story broke and rumors surfaced of child abuse in the late 1980s, DeCamp was highly skeptical. But the more he learned, the more he grew committed to ferreting out the truth in support of the child victims, eventually agreeing to legally represent several of the abused. The husband and father of four managed to traverse the high stakes minefield at great risk to both himself and his family, enduring death threats and on more than one occasion forced to relocate his wife and children out of harm’s way. But until his recent passing this last July at age 76, the inimitable John DeCamp persevered, ultimately unveiling the horrific abuse and grossest injustice perpetrated on hundreds of Nebraska children through his hard fought and not always successful quest for justice along with his blockbuster exposé, summarizing the Franklin debacle this way:

It’s a web of intrigue that starts in our holy of holies, Boys Town Nebraska, one of the most respected institutions in the United States, and spreads out like a spider web to

Washington DC right up to the steps of the nation's capital, steps of the White House. It involves some of the most respected and powerful and richest businessmen in this country - and the centerpiece of the entire web is the use of children for sex, drug dealing, drug couriers, and the compromising of politicians and businessmen in this United States of America.[33]

The Franklin scandal centered in Omaha, Nebraska and in particular on the famous now 100-year old Roman Catholic orphanage Boys Town.[34] This is the same orphanage idyllically featured in the 1938 film classic "Boys Town," starring Mickey Rooney as the angry, rebellious juvenile reformed by the spiritual wisdom and righteousness bestowed on him by Boys Town founder Father Flanagan, played by Spencer Tracy in a saintly Oscar winning performance.[35] But less than four decades later, Boys Town was anything but saintly, becoming the primary pipeline source for abducted child sex slaves trafficked to Washington DC[36] and elsewhere to be sodomized by the likes of Vice President turned President George H.W. Bush and sexually exploited by other sick political big wigs like Dick Cheney and former New Hampshire Governor-US Senator John Sununu.[37] Yep, big Dick's scandalously caught up in yet another coldblooded Luciferian scheme more than a decade before his masterminded signature devilry of 9/11. But more on Dick and the infamous Georges later.

Speaking of fellow demons, the main character in the Franklin drama was Lawrence E. King Jr, the charismatic ringleader that ran a vast child trafficking network exploiting hundreds of orphaned boys and local Omaha youth of both genders, some even younger than 10,[38] to VIP parties in Omaha, Washington, Chicago, New York City, New Orleans, Dallas, Des Moines, Kansas City, San Francisco and a number of other locations across the nation. The once young African American Democrat and George McGovern supporter from Omaha who everyone affectionately called Larry King strategically and opportunistically switched political parties to become a rising GOP star singing the national anthem at both the 1984 and 1988 Republican Presidential Conventions.[39] Lawrence King placed all his marbles in running with the 1% haves from the GOP elite, tirelessly participating in countless party fundraisers and, as the entertainer-charmer of the first order, he hosted social gatherings big and small, singing his way into the pocketbooks of the wealthiest, most powerful circles in Washington DC, his home state Nebraska and entire country.

His meteoric ascendancy from his humble roots resulted from his psychopathic charisma and ostentatious flair for ambition, hobnobbing not only with the rich and powerful Omaha-Lincoln crowd but branching out and expanding nationwide to even well beyond the capital. Networking with likeminded others within a secret satanic brotherhood of fellow derelict pedophiles while on the surface appearing the benevolent, do-gooder man about town, a pillar in both the Omaha community as well as nation, King ensured he was on the board of directors of some of the largest children's organizations like the Head Start Foundation, on the executive committee of the Camp Fire Girls and president of the Girls Club.[40] For all he brought to the GOP table, King was rewarded with the position of vice chairman of the National Black Republican Council (NBRC) a direct subset of the GOP. And of course the "child lover" was selected as NBRC's Youth Advisor.[41]

Philanthropically embracing children became the Kingpin's cover for abusing them, supplying fresh young innocents to defile for insatiable consumption by wicked, dirty old rich white men attending Lawrence's fancy soirees that only added to both his appeal and demand. Throughout the 1980s King grew so cozily chummy with the likes of Ronald Reagan and George Bush that he'd call them up just to ask

America’s presidents for friendly favors. Never brought to justice for his countless sadistic child sex crimes and murders, this devil worshipper was granted more than his share of Luciferian favors by the nation’s Luciferian elite – and still is.

In 1970 the brand new 25-year old general manager Larry King took over the failing Franklin Community Federal Credit Union and managed to nurse it back to life, making inroads connecting with Omaha’s wealthy establishment that provided the necessary funding to keep the struggling financial institution afloat, mostly catering to local lower income African American families.[42] During his first decade at Franklin, Larry King worked toward cultivating a close working partnership with nearby Boys Town, holding a number of the famous charity’s amply endowed accounts. Employing a number of Boys Town residents in his credit union to do various odd jobs like filing or sweeping the floor seemed like a natural win-win for everyone involved.

But King’s trailblazing path to materializing his all-American success story was not what it appeared, paved with satanic pedophilic ritual, murder, sodomy, torture, blackmail, fraud, extortion, embezzlement and a subsequent White House protected cover-up. Yet for all his felonious crimes, Larry King never served even one day behind bars for his diabolical enslavement, trafficking and brutal, sadistic rape and torture of his hundreds of child sex slaves over the years, nor for pimping them off to the US president and other Washingtonian elite. It was only after years of living obscenely above his means on his $16,200 Franklin Credit Union salary per year[43] that any legal action was finally taken against him. While the flamboyant King’s best buddy George HW was making his successful bid to become the next president of the United States, the “rising star” sang the national anthem a second straight time at his convention, taking more photo-ops with the fellow pedophile president-to-be.

But just like how the “Conspiracy of Silence” doc disappeared, Bush conveniently pulled all his arm-in-arm photos with King off the internet and to this day are still nowhere to be found. Bush senior tasked longtime GOP dirty trickster Karl Rove with removing the King stain from the Bush family crime business. Rove in turn deployed the late Michael Connell (who later died suspiciously in a plane crash) to expunge all photographic trace of the King-Bush nexus from the internet.[44] A few years later the high level GOP consultant and IT guru Connell was subpoenaed and set to appear in court over a couple of George W. Bush Jr’s scandals; Connell’s part in rigging the outcome of W’s second stolen presidential election in 2004[45] [46] as well as W’s cover-up of his own shady pedophile blackmail sex ring (i.e., like father, like son) where junior fired a bunch of US attorneys hot on the investigative trail to uncover it.[47] Connell was believed responsible for thousands of missing emails pertaining to the eight terminated attorneys closing in on Jr’s sex ring[48] and, just prior to showing up in court to answer for his role in his boss’ sins, he too was suddenly met with an untimely fate flying home to Ohio for Christmas on December 19, 2008 just two miles from the Akron airport. Karl Rove is actually on record threatening Connell shortly before his death and twice Connell as the diehard loyal Bush consultant and pilot thrown under the Bush crime bus was warned not to fly his recently tampered plane.[49]

In just under two decades at Franklin Credit Union, Lawrence King had embezzled $40 million and on the very same day his buddy Bush was elected 41st US president in November 1988, the FBI and IRS raided King’s office arresting the garish pedophile. Upon discovering two discrepant accounting book records, fraud and embezzlement charges were levied against the general manager.[50] This led to a

Nebraska state senate probe that in turn opened up questions that had been swirling for years around Larry King over accusations he was running a secret satanic child sex slave trafficking ring. Rumors and reports lingered for half a decade stemming from children courageously coming forth to disclose King's pedo-crimes being perpetrated against them. Eyewitnesses reported that King was directly involved in at least one satanic child sacrifice murder.[51] But like virtually every other pedophile scandal, victims' initial charges of satanic ritual abuse are invariably dismissed as too bizarre, disturbing and unbelievable to take seriously, especially when children are verbalizing that they're being forced against their will to board private jetliners to Washington to attend plush parties to be served on a sexual platter for some of the richest, most famous and powerful pedophiles on the planet.

Among the first children to report Larry King to the authorities, describing in detail his sexual abuse operation, was 14-year old Eulice "Lisa" Washington (who also went by adopted foster parents' name Nelly Webb) whose testimony was independently supported by her twin sister Tracey (Kimberly Webb). Both girls were placed in the abusive foster care home belonging to Jarrett and Barbara Webb, Jarrett a King employee on the credit union board of directors and his wife Barbara, King's cousin.[52] The physically and sexually abused Lisa and Tracey kept running away from their foster home, bringing them to the attention of child protective services. Eulice began opening up in 1985 disclosing that on multiple occasions their foster parents and Larry King would force her sister and her along with a large number of children from Boys Town to board private planes headed for Washington, Chicago and numerous other municipal destinations. Lisa said she was ordered to sit on top of a table either completely nude or wearing a scantily clad negligee "looking pretty and innocent,” forced to perform sex (sans penile penetration) with party-going perverts, all prominent politicians and businessmen.[53] Younger bodyguards with openly displayed handguns escorted the older pervs.

Lisa said she met George HW Bush attending several of these functions, starting at the Dallas 1984 GOP convention, as well as affairs held in DC and Chicago. On a pre-election campaign swing to the Windy City in October 1984, Lisa stated she observed then Vice President George Bush handing money to Larry King, and then leave with a Boys Town African American boy named Brent.[54]

In 1985-86 Boys Town child welfare worker Julie Walters interviewed Lisa several times compiling a highly incriminating, explosive 41-page document sent to Andrea L. Carener of Nebraska Social Services. Lisa and Tracey reported that Jarrett Webb began sexually abusing them at age nine and ten.[55] Despite Lisa subsequently passing all four lie detector tests and every child protective agency from the county to the state level finding the girls’ accusations fully credible, the Washington County Nebraska judge dismissed all sex abuse charges against the foster parents Jarrett and Barbara Webb.[56] Blindly tossing out mounting, clear-cut evidence would become the pervasive signature trademark of this scandal-ridden cover-up.

With the vast majority of King’s victims in his sex ring from Boys Town, the Omaha police never took the child allegations seriously, merely going through the motions to inform only the head of the famous orphanage Father Val Peter, who failed to loop anyone else at Boys Town in on the alarming scandal.[57] Later Val Peter would claim that he conducted his own internal investigation and was unable to find any evidence of abuse, insisting that interviewed alleged witnesses denied any and all wrongdoing.[58] What’s all too obvious is that Father Val Peter and perhaps a few selected individuals within the Boys Town administration were minimally guilty of complicity as scores of their children for years would regularly go missing for days at a time while King trafficked them to DC and at least a dozen other locations around the nation. That in and of itself would immediately raise a red flag of utmost concern for responsible adults mandated to protect and care for their children. Yet even though the Boys Town-to-DC sex slave pipeline was ongoing throughout the decade, no further inquiry was ever pursued by orphanage officials. This glaring fact appears as overwhelming evidence that Val Peter who was close friends with Larry the Kingpin knew exactly what was going on. But in keeping with the traditional Catholic Church crime history through the ages, pedophilia has always been allowed to flourish unimpeded within its unholy ranks.

President George Bush welcomed Father Val Peter to the White House promoting his so called faith based initiative,[59] the same one that fellow pedophile and convicted sex offender Father Ritter embraced with his CIA front the Covenant House that was alleged to have been part of the trafficking of children, drugs and arms from and to South and Central America during this same Iran Contra era (see Chapter 5 on Knights of Malta). The CIA, Knights of Malta and AmeriCares worked hand in hand with Bush and his brother Prescott Jr., Cheney, Peter Grace and Ritter along with the likes of their obedient grunts Oliver North, Michael Aquino and Larry King. From DeCamp's *Franklin Cover-up*:

> *Direct ties of Larry King to persons and institutions active in the Iran Contra are a matter of public record. In 1987, according to the World-Herald, King donated $25,350 to Citizens for America [CFA], a group that sponsored speaking tours for Oliver North and the Contra leaders. CFA was a key public relations group for Iran Contra; King was a founding member and one of its largest contributors.*[60]

King himself was interviewed on Omaha radio station KKAR claiming that he “was trying to bring North to Nebraska.” Additionally, one’s of Larry King’s security guards has sworn that he witnessed Lt. Col. North attending at least one of King’s parties with children present. DeCamp goes on to state:

> *The first investigative reporter to ever look at Franklin, the World-Herald’s James Flanery, told associates that King was “running guns and money into Nicaragua,” and that the CIA was heavily involved. (Flanery was soon taken off the story and shipped out of state for a year.)*[61]

It’s always been a small satanic circle that runs and operates the global child sex slave network in every scandal through every decade, always the same guilty handful of players, from pedo-presidents and pedo-Congress to pedo-CIA operatives and pedo-military officers to pedo-priests and pedo secret societies - the CFR, the Maltese, Skull and Bones, Freemasons and Illuminati among others. This tight knit crew represents one big child-raping Luciferian crime family operating from out of its DC-New York Wall Street-Hollywood US headquarters in conjunction with the City of London Corporation-Brussel’s EU/NATO-Rome’s Vatican nexus to its far reaching, child-preying tentacles extending to every single corner of the globe, all guilty as sin.

In 1986 Paul Bonacci had also been registering complaints to school authorities and the Omaha police about the rampant sexual abuse at the hands of Larry King and company.[62] At the age of 3, Paul had been placed into the sinister CIA MK Ultra mind control program, and beginning in the early through mid-1970s endured systematic mind control training at Omaha’s nearby Offutt Air Force Base, ending up with well over a dozen known alter personalities as a diagnosed Dissociative Disorder victim induced through sexual trauma and torture.[63] A conscripted sex slave by age

8, as is always the case from DC to Hollywood, Paul Bonacci became one among countless boy toys passed around by lascivious pedo club members, for Paul starting in Omaha.

MK Ultra had targeted Omaha multimillionaire businessman Alan Baer for blackmail sex with their fully trained 11-year old mind controlled sex slave Paul. Baer immediately seized the bait, laying claim to Paul for frequent acts of sodomy. Bonacci described how at lavish drug-sex orgies he was forced to have sex with Baer, but soon after was farmed out to Harold W. Anderson, CFR member[64] and former editor turned CEO of Nebraska’s largest daily newspaper, the Omaha World-Herald owned by multibillionaire Warren E. Buffet, and a year later to World-Herald entertainment journalist Peter Citron. Citron would soon be arrested for his violent pedophilic acts and subsequently “suicided” after drinking drain cleaner.[65]

Though Buffett’s newspaper men were rabid pedophile offenders shielding their King led criminal operation from all accountability, not surprisingly Larry King was also close friends with the famous Omaha mogul who happens to be one of the richest men on earth - Warren E. Buffett. Much to the powerful globalist’s regret, Warren Buffett hosted the tenth year anniversary wedding party for Larry King and his wife Alice in 1979.[66] Buffet’s wife Susie was even a volunteer at Franklin. Larry held a fundraiser when their son Howard Buffett ran for Douglas County Commissioner. Of course Buffett’s mutual interests with Larry weren’t just limited to their shared social circle. Through his World-Herald the multibillionaire’s media prowess fiercely protected the pedophiles while viciously slandering the child victims. Finally, Buffett’s financial investment ties to King’s Franklin Credit Union also ran indelibly deep. First Tier Bank as Franklin’s parent company was not only the financial institution that co-laundered King’s dirty drug and child trafficking cash flow business, but was also the morphed creation of its emeritus board of director Mr. Buffett.[67]

By December 1980 Paul Bonacci met CIA-GOP affiliated slave master Larry King who Paul claimed was holding satanic rituals sexually abusing and murdering children.[68] Paul asserted that both King and Baer were Satanists[69] who soon began trafficking Bonacci and other children as drug couriers moving Bush-CIA Contra cocaine picked up on the California's West Coast to bring back to America's heartland for wider distribution.[70]

Paul Bonacci specified how Larry King classified selling his young boy victims as two separate slave commodities to his mouth-watering degenerates based on their particular sexual age preference:

> *One is called Bodies by God and they had the call boys. And there was another group that was started by Larry King which is called the Golden Boys which was kids that were usually under the age of approximately ten* .[71]

After reporting sexual abuse to her therapist while undergoing psychiatric hospitalization, another child victim Loretta Smith was interviewed in June 1988 by dispatched Omaha Police Officer Irl Carmean.[72] Loretta said she was first photographed nude at the age of nine by child pornographers. Invited to a party by her older friends, she met an adult male who convinced the prepubescent to come back to his place for "a modeling shoot." As a friend of the Webb foster children Lisa and Tracey Washington, Loretta attended events at the local Omaha Girls Club chapter where Larry King was the predatory president. Loretta explained that she and the Washington sisters would go on Girls Club field trips to professional photography studios escorted by both male and female Girls Club adult staff that threatened her and her family if she did not pose nude.

Loretta disclosed that by age 10 and 11, she was forced to participate in devil worshipping rituals with both minors and adults present, identifying Larry King as the Luciferian cult leader using drugs and sex as part of the satanic ritual activities.

Despite promising Loretta he would return to ask more about her pedophilic victimization, Officer Carmean never had any further contact with Loretta whose psychiatrist spoke to Carmean's supervisor also assuring that Officer Carmean would be interviewing Loretta again. But because the Omaha Police Department was compromised and corrupted with its police chief part of King's inner pedophile ring, no further Omaha police investigation ever took place. However, as Loretta Smith became more comfortable with the hospital personnel, she went into greater details about how the satanic cult run by King operated over a period of many months using marijuana and heavier drugs to manipulate their child victims into first trusting the perpetrators before introducing them to the hardcore satanic ritual abuse that in addition to child pornography, rape and sodomy also included animal mutilation, human sacrifice and cannibalism.[73] With such astounding criminal depravities revealed, a number of mental health professionals repeatedly contacted the Omaha police department for further investigation but to no avail.

By 1988 the number of minors and young adults boldly coming forth to disclose widespread abuse had grown to seven victims accusing Larry King of years of systematically raping, torturing and drugging them, hooking victims on cocaine and heroin, while trafficking and pimping them out for sodomy at King sponsored political functions and afterhours orgies across the country. Additional allegations were made accusing King of buying and selling child sex slaves on the black market at slave auctions around the country. According to Larry King victim Paul Bonacci, one was held inside a barn in Lincoln, Nebraska and others are outside Las Vegas as well as in Toronto, Canada.[74]

One underage girl described her horrifying experience at one of the King orgies where she was forced to stand naked while being auctioned off as a piece of meat to the highest bidder who would soon be raping her.[75] Another victim recalled in 1981 or 1982 being taken to a farm in Elkhorn, Nebraska where a 10-year old boy was witnessed being repeatedly beaten and sodomized by King's Satan worshippers.[76] While the boy lay screaming and bleeding from his rectum, one of the men picked up a pitchfork, ultimately plunging it into the victim and killing him as spectators busy laughed throughout this heinous slaughter. Moreover, the Franklin sex ring perpetrators and their satanic blackmail operation often shot snuff films of both their sex abuse and murders. One King client took a young boy out of state and forced the victim to give him oral sex. Just as the pedophile reached orgasm he shot the boy in the head, captured on film to be distributed for profit amongst more sickos.

Denver's National Center for the Treatment of Dissociative Disorders published its findings from a 1991 study in *The Journal of Child Abuse & Neglect*. All 37 Franklin scandal victims responding to the study's survey diagnosed with Dissociative Disorder that had been tortured and sexually abused as children in the 1980s revealed that they also received death threats, witnessed animal mutilations, and were forced to ingest drugs. Additionally, 83% of them indicated that they had witnessed at least one adult or child sacrifice.[77]

By 1987 head of the Nebraska Foster Care Review Board (FCRB) Carol Stitt, prominently featured in the British documentary "Conspiracy of Silence," had gathered more than convincing evidence of rampant sexual abuse involving

King’s national sex trafficking ring, sending letters and reports to alert Nebraska state Governor Kay Orr as well as the state Attorney General Robert Spire, expecting them to launch a major investigation to correct this shameful blight on the state. But all her reports appeared to fall on deaf ears. Carol also forwarded reports to the Nebraska legislature in hopes that state senators would take the initiative to look into the shocking matter. But they too were slow to respond, mobilizing an investigative committee only after King’s November 1988 arrest. Finally the following month on December 19th the FCRB was able to present its mounting evidence to the state committee. Afterwards committee chairman Loran Schmit responded:

The information brought tears to my eyes. I do not cry easily and I was not the only person that was moved.[78]

Decades later as a longtime fierce protector of abused children in the Nebraska state foster care system, after 29 years as the director of the state’s Foster Care Review Board, suddenly in January 2012 Carol Stitt was forced out of her job by a corrupt board of directors.[79] Using a bogus technicality, she was ousted for attending a political rally back in 2006 for revered former University of Nebraska football coach Republican Tom Osborne, a supposed violation of the Hatch Act that prohibits federal employees from engaging in political activity. Though a state employee, technically the federal government partially funded her office through Health and Human Services (HHS). Her removal was nothing short of a subversive plot to rid a staunch pedophile watchdog from potentially running unwanted interference against Nebraska’s still notorious child sex ring trafficking operation.[80]

As to perhaps why after the Franklin scandal the state is still the pedophile capital of America’s heartland, a closer glimpse at Nebraska’s current junior Senator Ben Sasse may go far in explaining. Only by using his amply endowed out-of-state coffers was Ben Sasse able to beat Tom Osborne in the primary for the 2012 US Senate seat. Sasse's primary outside funding source, the Club for Growth, is an extremist group keen on eliminating private sector regulations governing parochial schools and child protective services, two domains especially in the Cornhusker state where lack of accountability and pedophilia are notoriously off the charts.[81] Plus in 2006 Ben Sasse was working as the HHS undersecretary for planning and evaluation when Stitt attended that political rally for Osborne who ended up Sasse's primary opponent in 2012. On top of that, before his HHS stint, from 1996-98 then Rep. Sasse was in charge of the pedo-scandal-ridden House program hiring and supervising young underage boys as Congressional pages while now convicted pedophile felon Dennis Hastert was Speaker of the House and fellow pedophile Rep. Mark Foley was caught sexually hitting on boys and Rep. Jim Kolbe was taking them on three day camping trips down into the Grand Canyon.[82]

Sasse actively helped cover-up Hastert and his colleagues' out of control pedo-abuse that finally forced the program to be shut down in 2011. Thus, Sasse's own established political record has made him fair game for being labeled a "pedophile enabler."[83] Additionally, according to a member of the Sasse family, the clan has a known history of physical and psychological abuse[84] and as Attorney General Ashcroft's chief of staff, without even a law background, the Nebraska politician helped rewrite the illegal, inhumane CIA torture renditions for the war criminal Bush-Cheney administration. After *WikiLeaks* released its CIA computer hacking vault in March this year disclosing more invasive CIA improprieties, Senator Sasse called for Julian Assange's immediate extradition and life imprisonment. Despite being a Republican, Sasse remains a diehard fanatic forever pushing the Trump-Russian fabrication.[85] To the T his past behavior consistently fits the nefarious deep state profile immersed in the Nebraska-to-Washington pedophile pipeline. So with a current senator like Sasse, is it any wonder Nebraska still has a major pedophilia crisis?

Returning to the Franklin scandal, from the very outset of Carol Stitt's sexual abuse reports, the cover-up was already well underway. State Attorney General Spire obviously lied telling Stitt his office was already looking into the matter. Clearly all the Nebraska prosecutors were part of the cover-up, following orders to withhold evidence to protect the guilty. Despite overt suppression of the growing complaints against King and his criminal child sex blackmail operation, in August 1989 Senator Loran Schmit heading the state probe appointed two new investigators after a lackluster first one.[86] The chosen new lead investigator was former state police trooper Gary Caradori, whose most recent investigative work at the time involved finding missing children.[87] His assistant Karen Ormiston was a colleague at his private investigation firm. They interviewed scores of suspected victims and began presenting their findings to the senate committee which led to a special state grand jury in Lincoln, also in part prompted by the committee's legal counsel John DeCamp after submitting a 1990 memo naming the five most prominent Omaha citizens outright as pedo-perp prime suspects – Larry King, Alan Baer, Robert Wadman, Harold Anderson and Peter Citron.[88]

Just before the newly formed state grand jury even scheduled Larry King to have to testify, and one day prior to President George Bush's arrival to speak at an Omaha fundraiser that King had purchased a ticket to attend, no doubt in compliance with White House demands, on February 7, 1990 US Magistrate Judge Richard Kopf suddenly ordered King to be taken out of state to a federal medical facility in Springfield, Missouri for psychiatric evaluation, in effect, killing two birds with one stone.[89] Of course predictably Judge Kopf ruled King mentally incompetent to stand trial and another judge whisked him away again out of state to the Minnesota Mayo Clinic for treatment for the next five months as a “pretrial detainee.” King obviously meets diagnostic criteria as a classic psychopath and full blown pedophile likely among other mental diagnoses, but the convenient label given him was “probable paranoid delusional disorder.” Thus, the fixed system protecting him ensured that at no time would the pedo-kingpin have to answer for his rape, torture, murder and interstate child sex and drug trafficking, that all ran too close for Bush’s comfort.

Little more than a year after the *Washington Times*’ “call boy tour inside the White House” headline, in July 1990 the lead Franklin investigator Gary Caradori flew to Chicago with his 8-year old son to ostensibly catch the major league all-star baseball game at Wrigley Park, but more importantly to pick up critical photographic evidence that would be the smoking gun to effectively convict the powerful pedophiles caught in action on camera by Rusty Nelson, King’s hired personal photographer and blackmail evidence procurer.[90] From Chicago after taking physical possession of the photos from Nelson, an elated Gary Caradori excitedly phoned both his wife and his co- investigator informing them:

I got what I came after. I got ‘em by the balls. I've got pictures. I will take them to the game and bring them back to Nebraska.

But just when the case was about to be blown wide open causing dozens of the most powerful pedophiles in America including the sitting US president to go down in murderous flames, the FBI assassination squad ensured that it was the courageous father and his son holding the crucial evidence that would go down in murderous flames.[91] Per on-the-ground eyewitnesses, their twin engine plane was blown apart in midair caused by a bomb planted by the FBI, resulting in wreckage debris strewn across Nebraska cornfields for miles. And of course the murdering FBI agents on the ground quickly rushed to their crime scene in order to remove all the evidence that included Caradori’s briefcase and a bunch of incriminating photos… however, not before the local sheriffs at the crash site spotted the scattered child pornographic photos. The FBI in Lincoln swiftly invaded Caradori’s office along with forcing his childless widow to turn over investigative files at their home, thus stealing all incriminating, smoking gun evidence linking the sitting US president to his murderous pedophilia-drug network.

Painstakingly reviewing all the taped Caradori interviews of the victims that the Nebraska state committee and state and federal grand juries had viewed, John DeCamp caught legal authorities having tampered with evidence, editing out specific key portions of interviews where victim witness accounts corroborated each other. That’s how criminally low into the depths of the gutter that America’s morally depraved, conniving justice system had sunk.[92] Yet despite DeCamp’s proof-positive revelations exposing the state’s cover-up criminality, the hordes of guilty pedophiles from Omaha to Washington to this day remain either free men still operating above the law or silenced as cover-up liabilities by suicide and/or suspicious death.

In the aftermath of the tragic Caradori setback, a move to hire DeCamp’s mentor the former CIA Director William Colby to head the investigation was then quashed by a 4-3 senate committee vote.[93] Colby had been a longtime close friend and boss of state Senator John DeCamp when they first worked in the Phoenix program together in Vietnam. DeCamp went to his friend Colby’s Maryland home for advice when the cover-up was stymying the investigation at every turn. Colby’s advice to his anguished friend:

> *What you have to understand, John, is that sometimes there are forces and events too big, too powerful, with so much at stake for other people or institutions, that you cannot do anything about them, no matter how evil or wrong they are and no matter how dedicated or sincere you are or how much evidence you have. This is simply one of the hard facts of life you have to face.*[94] *Sometimes evil does triumph, and there's nothing you can do about it, at least not the way you want to. You're dealing with something too big, too powerful. It goes too high, involves too much, and if you keep playing around with it, you're going to get yourself killed. Get away.*[95]

After John DeCamp replied that he couldn’t just walk away knowing such evil was being perpetrated with complete impunity from Washington to Lincoln, Colby then advised:

> *The only thing I can tell you then, is to tell the story. Write it up. Get the national and international press interested in it. Maybe they will do something.*[96]

So DeCamp set forth writing his powerful exposé indicting the murderous pedophiles in power. But in recent decades while the pedophilia epidemic has surged, the complicit mainstream media has remained silent, sweeping everything under their filthy fake news carpet. A few years after William Colby uttered these chilling sentiments about what he knew too well, in April 1996 his mysterious “drowning” death is speculated to be the result of Colby’s reported plan to expose the CIA for sexually abusing and misusing children for political and diplomatic blackmail as part of its mind control program.[97] And in 1990 Nebraska, instead of placing the ex-CIA director as the next lead investigator after the Caradori murder, a central figure in the investigation stated that the state legislative committee grew cold feet and couldn’t have selected a more incompetent choice as the next replacement chief investigator, local attorney Kirk Naylor.[98]

Incredibly, a week after investigator Caradori’s murder, the Nebraska state grand jury in Lincoln soon followed by the federal grand jury in DC completely disregarded the mountains of evidence, never even calling King to the witness stand, dismissed the inquests calling the entire Franklin affair “a carefully crafted hoax.”[99] Senate committee chairman Loran Schmit was extremely disheartened that the forces of evil were able to defeat his mission to uncover the truth and lay out all the evidence for the grand juries to indict and prosecute the guilty parties, concluding that the justice system is so corrupt where truth becomes falsehood and right becomes wrong.[100] Sadly, that is exactly the objective of Luciferians, through cunning deception and pure evil they are extremely skilled and adept at inversely twisting everything around.[101] We can clearly see that with the Bush-Clinton-Obama dynasty’s New World Order.

According to *Veterans Today* editor Gordon Duff, Satanist George HW Bush ordered his National Security Advisor Donald Gregg “to silence those involved,” turning to the usual suspects - assassination squads within the US intelligence community - the CIA and FBI to neutralize all threats to seal the truth in an airtight cover-up under the familiar excuse of “national security.”[102]

So rather than use the Caradori hit as the driving force propelling the probe to dig deeper to uncover the real culprits behind this gargantuan skullduggery that nearly three decades ago would’ve blown this entire lid off the pedophilia scourge, perhaps out of fear the majority within the Nebraska state committee purposely undermined the Franklin inquiry, succumbing to the powerful, corrupt evil cabal successfully obstructing the truth from ever being revealed to the American public. And as a result, how many more millions of innocent kids’ lives have since been ruined and cut short because the Franklin cover-up was allowed to go forward, remaining intact right up to this day. As always, the same old evildoers once again got away with a slew of coldblooded murders sewing up yet another highly effective pedophile cover-up. This worn out scenario always carries the same sad outcome… till now! There is no turning back, no matter how much deception is spun by the fake news liars, we now know what the Luciferian controllers are and have been doing to our children.

In his search to follow the money, Gary Caradori had also learned that King’s Franklin Credit Union was being used by the White House and CIA to launder dirty money during George Bush’s notorious Iran Contra scandal.[103] Photographer Rusty Nelson later gave sworn testimony that he witnessed at a plush Minneapolis hotel Larry King handing off a briefcase full of cash to Monarch mind control programmer and fellow pedophile ringleader - the Luciferian Lt. Colonel Michael A. Aquino.[104] Nelson stated that King admitted that King and Aquino were involved in the Iran Contra affair, the same notorious scandal run by another Bush stooge named Lt. Col. Oliver North. Private investigator Roy Stevens corroborated that “there is reason to believe that the CIA is directly implicated” in the Franklin scandal.[105] From the Bush unauthorized biography:

> *King provided the CIA with information garnered from his alleged activities as a "pimp" for the high and mighty.*[106]

As addressed in previous chapters, Michael Aquino of course is the same Army military intelligence officer implicated in Johnny Gosh's 1982 Iowa kidnapping disappearance per Paul Bonacci[107] as well as the government's go-to supreme mind control programmer per former sex slave Cathy O'Brien and the central culprit behind the Presidio military daycare's satanic ritual sex abuse scandal (see daycare and mind control chapters 8 and 9). As a typical example of how King fudged his bank books for Reagan and Bush, King hosted a $1 million reception for then Housing and Urban Development Secretary Sam Pierce at the 1984 Republican convention in Dallas. Though the lavish political fundraiser actually cost $300,000, another $700,000 was used as slush money laundered through King's credit union for the CIA's Central American guns-for-cocaine operation.[108]

Author Nick Bryant pointed out in his book just how corrupt the US legal system in this case was:

> *With access to thousands of documents that were sealed by two grand juries, as well as the sealed testimony of one, I demonstrated that state and Federal grand jury processes in Nebraska played an integral role in the cover-up.*[109]

Just when it appeared dozens of the guilty parties in this lurid sex ring that ran straight to the White House were identified with overwhelming evidence to indict and prosecute the offenders, with lethal vengeance a weaponized wall of violent opposition was unleashed. Loran Schmit was threatened in an anonymous phone call to not proceed with his investigation, told that it involved the nation's top level Republican establishment that won't tolerate any inquiry moving forward.[110] Later Schmit confessed:

I have gotten phone calls threatening me. I've been told to leave it alone or my kids were going to be orphans.[111]

The child victims as key witnesses were also aggressively targeted, intimidated, harassed and threatened with bodily harm by Omaha police, the FBI, the FBI proxy intimidators recruited from the Kansas City mob and various anonymous enemies of the truth.[112] Ultimately ratcheting up pressure to silence all the young witnesses once and for all, several suddenly began showing up dead.[113]

Another major pedophile villain in this tragic story was Omaha Police Chief Robert Wadman and his criminal OPD henchmen who threatened child witnesses outright with lengthy jail time should they persist in exposing their abuse.[114] Years after DeCamp's *Franklin Cover-up* book came out, in Ogden, Utah the Mormon Wadman had the audacity to sue John DeCamp for libel but lost his case because the known truth was law enforcement comprised both the sexual predators as well as obstructionists of justice in their aggressive crime cover-up.[115] Used to being threatened with lawsuits, DeCamp was definitely not in the least bit intimidated but fully confident that everything he'd written about the case was factual, sharing with a friend his pat response to all previous hot-air threats:

Go ahead and sue me, because if it's in that book, I can prove it! And I long for the day to expose all or any of you in any bigger way than I already have…[116]

It was Wadman as the Omaha police chief who impregnated 14-year old Alisha Owen who bore his child (initially raped at age 12),[117] then subsequently endured four and a half years of wrongful imprisonment suffering a reputation as the community Jezebel for being the sexually abused victim who insisted on telling the truth, never once recanting her remarkable yet totally honest, steadfast claims against Omaha's most powerful pedophiles.[118] Aside from Alisha who also called Wadman a Satanist,[119] three other young people accused Wadman of sexual abuse.[120]

In addition to rungs of law enforcement and mafia thugs heavily stacked against the child victims, the local media viciously launched a potently wicked publicity campaign also attacking the victims, smearing their reputations as unstable, sexually promiscuous, drug addicted, trailer trash delinquents who were never credible witnesses to begin with.[121] Once the adult intimidators harassed, terrified and manipulated the scorned, betrayed young people to begin retracting their earlier allegations, the media had a field day incessantly driving home its fixated bone of contention that none of these kids could be trusted and that the entire affair was their made up hoax and witch hunt against innocent "pillars" of the Omaha community. These same malicious, deceitful weaponized M.O. tactics are repeatedly deployed against child victims in virtually every pedophilia scandal, always to undermine and destroy credibility. Also recall that in the aftermath of all the "satanic panic" sex abuse scandals of the late 1980s came the pedophiles' answer - the False Memory Foundation (covered in an earlier chapter). A bunch of pedophile CIA mind control psychiatrists provided pushback promoting their bogus "false memory syndrome" designed to plant seeds of doubt in the profoundly disturbing accusations leveled against America's powerful pedo-elite.[122]

In 1990 as Gary Caradori taped solid corroborating evidence from witnesses, suddenly "anonymous sources" began leaking to the *Lincoln Journal* and the *Omaha World-Herald* how victim witnesses Troy Boner and Danny King had failed their polygraph tests, which was untrue.[123] The FBI was the primary source illegally sabotaging the case against the pedophiles. And as if all these extreme, over-the-top, gross injustices and smear tactics weren’t posing a severe enough threat, fear and warning to the young victims, the two last remaining witnesses who stood their ground refusing to back down from their initial charges, Paul Bonacci and Alisha Owen, were both slapped with false perjury charges, then promptly prosecuted, convicted and imprisoned.[124] It proved highly effective as in the spring of 1990 the two other key witnesses to the case, Danny King and Troy Boner both recanted their earlier testimony,[125] especially when Troy’s younger brother who wound up with a bullet in his head was ruled an “accidental suicide.”[126]

Franklin victims Bonacci, Owen and Boner are shown in interviews throughout the “Conspiracy of Silence” documentary. Sadly the tortured Troy Boner, with his accusations wavering back and forth throughout the film, was thoroughly plagued by malicious persecutors within law enforcement and organized crime. A decade later Troy frantically checked into a New Mexico hospital screaming, “They’re after me, they’re after me because of this book!” referring to DeCamp’s Franklin exposé.[127] That night Troy was sedated but when nurses checked on him early the next morning, they found him sitting lifeless in a chair bleeding from the mouth already dead. Despite being promised the autopsy report, neither former FBI career man turned PI Ted Gunderson nor did anyone else ever receive any public information about this young man’s cause of death. Chalk it up to yet more withheld evidence indicating another Franklin casualty amongst dozens as foul play victims of the killing pedo-elite machine.

The Nebraska grand jury ignored hardcore evidence against the perps, and went after Paul Bonacci and Alisha Owen, indicting them for perjury. Alisha was held in solitary confinement for nearly two years,[128] placed on trial as an adult and falsely convicted of perjury, receiving an unheard of 15-year sentence as the pedophile rape victim who remained resolutely brave and strong enough to never stop telling the truth. Astoundingly as the innocent victim, Alisha’s punishment, a decade and a half prison sentence, equaled that of the Luciferian child sex ring-leading monster himself. Child raping, torturer-murderer Larry King served only 9 years.[129] Enslaved rape survivor Alisha Owen ended up egregiously losing her childhood and her virginity as well as more than four long years of her young life wasting away inside a prison cell in one of the most unjust and shameful travesties of justice ever committed by the US judicial system. The diabolical power players went out of their way to make an example out of her, letting other victims know what will happen if they refuse to bend or break. But Alisha’s integrity and perseverance outlasted the evildoers’ excessive, inhumane persecution. As an exemplary prisoner, she was paroled and freed in 2000, near the same time as King.[130] She and Paul Bonacci along with their lawyer John DeCamp are the courageous heroes in this sordid, heinous, very dark chapter in American history.

Another mini-scandal within the larger Franklin debacle was the secret firing of the University of Nebraska (U of N) President Ronald Roskens.[131] Investigator Caradori learned that he had been terminated in July 1989 because of his pedophilic activities inside his Nebraska state owned residence. Prior to becoming U of N president, pedophile Roskens was president of University of Nebraska at Omaha, where Larry King sat on the advisory board while Roskens had accounts at Franklin. The birds of a feather theme is rampant in pedo scandals. A few months later in early 1990 fellow pedophile Bush quickly offered Roskens a prestigiously powerful new gig as president of the US Agency for International Development (USAID). Like Bush, just a year later Roskens became a 33rd degree mason,[132] and as were a number of the Omaha pedophiles sodomizing children in King’s slave ring, Ronald Roskens was an upstanding member voted the 1980 King of the Ak Sar Ben, the Nebraska masonic organization whose name is derived from spelling the state backwards. Warren Buffet who owns 21 million shares in satanic-pedo-linked Disney Company,[133] is also a longtime Ak Sar Nen member.[134] It all fits with the satanic ritual sex abuse reported by the Franklin victims.

From earlier chapters we’ve learned that USAID often acts abroad as a CIA front,[135] guilty of either funding front companies involved in the child sex trade or directly pimping child orphans to American VIPs and foreign dignitaries throughout State Department embassies as well as funneling child sex slaves into the international trafficking pipeline. What better setup than to have the pedo trafficking CIA prez George Bush rescuing a nearly outed closeted homosexual pedophile from academia at the height of the Nebraska scandal by strategically placing him as head of USAID to help the Bush crime agenda to move drugs, guns, body parts and children around the globe. But at USAID the CIA linked Ronald Roskens couldn’t keep himself out of trouble there either, caught dipping his greedy little dirty fingers into the Enron and other companies’ cookie jar bribes while engaged in official business travel, committing federal conflict of interest violations.[136]

Again like fellow Nebraskan Warren Buffet, Roskens is a New World Order globalist pushing the NWO population control-eugenics agenda, under Bush and Rosken’s watch caught illegally sterilizing 20 million black women in Brazil.[137] What we find time and time again throughout these scandals is the reality that the worldwide sex slave network’s success of never being held accountable for its crimes rests on fellow pedos guarding their global trafficking henhouse. All these interlocking agencies headed by cherry-picked fellow pedo clubbers are prime crime players critical to the day-to-day pedophilic operations, collectively serving as a buffer shielding the sex slave network from potential exposure and accountability. But in Roskens' case, his blatant habit of living above the law kept catching up to him despite the US president bailing him out.

Also in keeping with another longstanding pedo-pattern, there existed multiple warning sign cracks pre-dating the Franklin scandal that something had gone terribly wrong in Omaha's Boys Town. Back in the early 1970's, right after Lawrence King took over at Franklin, Monsignor Robert Hupp reported to his superior at the time, Omaha's archdiocese bishop, that sexual abuse at Boys Town was prevalent, including a priest's actual child murder and cover-up.[138] Recall the sergeant at West Point murdering a boy prior to that daycare scandal and then given a discharge as his get out of jail card. Later to shut Hupp up, he was assigned to head Boys Town himself until 1983. His successor Father Val Peter was at the least complicit in the abuse and seemingly neck deep in the cover-up.

Forced to resign and leave the Boys Town premises, a longtime orphanage patron invited the retired Hupp to move into his cottage in Wisconsin. A reporter for the Omaha World Herald, the same paper that protected the pedo-perps and slandered the innocent victims, volunteered to drive the monsignor to the out-of-state cottage. Upon arrival, the journalist prepared what was to be the last supper for the one Catholic Church official that originally broke the silence on the Boys Town abuse as Hupp allegedly died peacefully in his sleep a few hours later during that first night away from his beloved Boys Town.[139]

All evidence proves unequivocally that Lawrence E. King systematically tortured, raped and drugged kids for years, on his privately leased jet planes regularly making hundreds of trips to the nation's capital and numerous other cities, pimping dozens of enslaved children in tow, each time providing trafficked in sex for high powered pedophile orgies attended by top members of both Republican and Democratic parties alike from the late 1970s throughout the 1980s. Per the *Washington Times*, Larry King's DC point man and chief pimping partner-in-crime throughout was onetime *ABC* Vietnam War correspondent turned GOP lobbyist-homosexual pedophile Craig Spence.[140] It was Spence who was caught as the infamous after midnight White House tour guide. Both King and Spence would stop at no expense to lavishly "entertain" the Beltway elite at drug-filled parties hosted at both King and Spence's private luxury DC residences. King rented a $5,000 a month townhouse on Embassy Row. Pulitzer nominated journalist Paul Rodriguez for the *Times*' call boy investigation was able to locate pedophiles using the services run by King and Spence by tracking down credit card vouchers. Rodriguez discovered a number of notable Beltway VIPs having sex with mostly underage boys:

> *Among the client names contained in the vouchers - and identified by prostitutes and escort operators - are government officials, locally based US military officers, businessmen, lawyers, bankers, congressional aides and other professionals…*[141]

Unprecedented were Secret Service agents accompanying Washington Metro Police in the raids of male escort offices, and as such, the Secret Service made sure that a box containing the names and phone numbers of the highest level Bush administration officials was withheld from the rest of the collected police evidence in order to protect Bush and his higher-up pedophiles. However, the *Times* did publicly out two of the 200 prominent DC players amongst the johns using the call boy services. According to journalists-authors Webster Tarpley and Anton Chaitkin’s unauthorized Bush biography:

> *The Number Two in charge of personnel affairs at the White House, who was responsible for filling all the top civil service posts in the federal bureaucracy, and Secretary of Labor Elizabeth Dole’s chief of staff, were two individuals publicly identified as patrons of the call boy ring.*[142]

Craig Spence lived a lavish lifestyle with running cameras installed in every room of his blackmail mansion. His bread and butter fortune had been built on enticing unwitting others into sexual blackmail and extortion. When pressed about who gave him the White House key, Spence hinted that the tours were authorized by “top level” White House officials, including President Bush’s National Security Advisor Donald Gregg,[143] who Bush had placed in charge of the Franklin cover-up. Though Gregg denied any connection with Spence, he lied. Just a couple months prior to the *Washington Times* article, Spence had hosted an extravagant dinner affair in honor of Gregg at the ritzy Four Seasons Hotel. Spence’s guest list that night included Attorney General John Mitchell, CIA Director William Casey and ABC News broadcast journalist Ted Koppel.

Just over a month after the *Times* outed him as the midnight tour guide, Craig Spence’s fate already cast doom. He was arrested in August 1989 on weapon and drugs charges. Spence’s CIA dealings ran deep. While in prison Spence started talking, admitting he’d been working for years in high level espionage and sexual blackmail operations with none other than George Bush’s longtime CIA buddy, the infamous Bay of Pigs veteran Felix Rodriguez.[144] It was agent Rodriguez who is alleged to have accompanied the Bolivian Army in the hunt and murder of Che Guevara.[145]

Needless to say, Spence's dirt on top Washington VIPs could have brought down the entire cabal and that level of liability equates to an automatic death warrant. Spence even boasted that his past sins prior to the Franklin scandal made his DC pedophile operation look like child's play. Predictably for knowing and telling too much, in November that same year Spence was found "suicided" in his hotel room at the Boston Ritz Carlton, laying on his bed still wearing his tuxedo. Days prior to his demise, he told a friend:

I may be disappearing soon. It will be sudden. It may appear to be a suicide, but it won't be.[146]

With the blatant Franklin cover-up's wholesale murder of well over a dozen innocent kids and the guilty's dead men don't tell tales piling up, and the Nebraska state inquest losing whatever legitimacy it had once chief investigator Caradori was out of the way, the Bush pedophile ring indelibly forever linked to his presidency got buried in all the murdered corpses. America's biggest, most shameful pedophilia scandal ever exposed in its history was already history, fast morphing into complete obscurity during the decades that followed. But last year's Pizzagate turned PedoGate changed everything, raising the specter of unresolved injustice begging for renewed scrutiny on this sordid unfinished business that directly connects to today's pedo-epidemic. But this time with the George Bushes and the Clintons' mile high body count,[147] [148] and their Luciferian death and destruction machine in our face, there's no turning back.

Though the most egregious crimes imaginable all went unpunished, in 1998-99 Paul Bonacci was represented in a Lincoln, Nebraska federal courtroom by the tenacious attorney John DeCamp in a civil suit filed against Lawrence King charging him with violating Bonacci's civil rights. Judge Warren Urbom awarded Paul a million dollar settlement in damages[149] based on highly credible, convincing testimonial evidence that included the abducted Iowa paperboy's mother Noreen Gosch's riveting court disclosures.[150] It was vindication for Paul as the truth was finally heard in a federal court of law despite the evildoers' previous victory at totally suppressing all consequences for their horrific crimes.

Judge Urbom rightfully concluded in his decision:

> *Between December 1980 and 1988, the complaint alleges, the defendant King continually subjected the plaintiff to repeated sexual assaults, false imprisonments, infliction of extreme emotional distress, organized and directed satanic rituals, forced the plaintiff to 'scavenge' for children to be a part of the defendant King's sexual abuse and pornography ring, forced the plaintiff to engage in numerous sexual contacts with the defendant King and others and participate in deviate sexual games and masochistic orgies with other minor children. The now uncontradicted evidence is that the plaintiff has suffered much. He has suffered burns, broken fingers, beating of the head and face and other indignities by the wrongful actions of the defendant King. In addition to the misery of going through the experiences just related over a period of eight years, the plaintiff has suffered the lingering results to the present time. He is a victim of multiple personality disorder, involving as many as fourteen distinct personalities aside from his primary personality. He has given up a desired military career and received threats on his life. He suffers from sleeplessness, has bad dreams, has difficulty in holding a job, is fearful that others are following him, fears getting killed, has depressing flashbacks, and is verbally violent on occasion, all in connection with the multiple personality disorder and caused by the wrongful activities of the defendant King.*[151]

Author of the *Franklin Betrayal* Nick Bryant has stated:

> *Given the unbelievable amount of abuse that Alisha Owen and Paul Bonacci have endured from perpetrators and also law enforcement, I find it truly astounding that they've been able to forge lives for themselves.*[152]

Unlike so many other Franklin victims, Alisha and Paul have both managed to forge happily married family lives that include gainful employment.[153] They and other survivors are the true heroes out of this dark, abominable chapter in American history. Now 50 years old with harsh wounds behind him, today Paul is living a quiet life with his wife and children in a state far outside Nebraska. Despite Paul Bonacci never collecting a single dime from Larry King despite King's release from prison not long after the legal judgment was filed, that in itself is appalling considering King has been a free man for many years now.

Upon release from prison, the guilty multiple felon reportedly went right back to work for powerful Republicans that continue protecting him to this day.[154] The now 73-year old pedo-trafficking Kingpin, responsible for the biggest pedophilia scandal in US history, currently resides in the DC suburb of Reston in northern Virginia. For her part in the illegal Franklin operation, King's first wife Alice served time for tax evasion and now resides in Texas along with their son who runs a car dealership. Lawrence E. King has since remarried and been employed at a couple local DC car dealerships, enjoying a comfortable retired life now, incredibly sitting on the board of directors at a nonprofit charity called Opera Nova that brings opera and the arts to local children.[155] It's as if his sordid criminal past never even happened or ever really caught up to him. Recognized as a standup guy in the DC swamp community, King additionally serves as a board member atop a number of other distinguished DC civic and social organizations and foundations. Despite the federal court ruling against him and never serving time for his heinous pedophile crimes, this child raping Luciferian never ever had any of his wages garnished and even worse, has been allowed to work with children all these years. Amazingly enough, to this day this demon continues to be well-protected by the same Bush-Clinton-Obama deep state crime cabal guilty of torturing, drugging, sodomizing, and murdering children en masse around the globe every single day. To ad nauseam, the pedophile elite never fails to protect its own monsters from hell.

The tragic, all too common globalized pattern of the elite preying on our most vulnerable population has a majority of victims residing in orphanages (most often Catholic), group homes, foster care placements, the streets, war zones and refugee camps, exploited by deceitful procurers (frequently deploying already enslaved peers to lure them as in the waiting van from the 1982 Iowa Johnny Gosch case). The pedophile network has become so concentrated that within 48 hours, 2 out of 3 runaway youth in America are approached by child sex traffickers.[156] All over this world it's the parasitic foxes preying on and guarding their child pipeline henhouses, easily gaining access and trust of highly susceptible at-risk victims. As mentioned in previous chapters, there exist numerous so called charity organizations around the globe working closely with children from within CIA front companies, the child "protective" welfare system, international adoption agencies, to global war zones and refugee camps collectively feeding off the innocents. Predatory wolves dressed in sheep's clothing may look like you and me – from UN, USAID, Red Cross, "White Helmet"[157] charity workers to our local schoolteachers, coaches, priests, social workers, scout leaders, babysitters, upstanding "community pillars" by day and Illuminati Luciferian killers by night, as in the

Omaha case, a fast-talking “benevolent and beloved” community leader who always enjoyed lending a hand helping [himself to] the local orphans.

Sadly, the Nebraska Franklin scandal is just the tip of the iceberg, momentarily laying bare pedophilia in the highest places. But taking orders from President George H.W. Bush and his shadowy minions, the complicit media, law enforcement, and the courts all quickly fell in line and the Franklin story died. Yet numerous other accounts provide corroborating testimony exposing pedophilia amongst the elite. The Omaha-to-Washington pipeline was/is but one among countless conduits pumping children to the pedophiles in Washington. Stew Webb,[158] a respected *Veterans Today* colleague of mine while I was a featured *VT* columnist, has a 32 year history as a federal whistleblower exposing the high crimes of the Bush-Clinton dynasty machine. His digging led to breaking the S&N, HUD and Denver airport scandals and contributed supplemental evidence to the Iran-Contra affair.[159] With his former father-in-law Leonard Millman, a longtime Daddy Bush partner-in-crime and Denver Illuminati kingpin, Stew was able to access the crime filth up close and personal on the globalized cabal. Based on his own firsthand experience, Webb repeatedly calls the Bushes out as practicing pedophile Satanists.

Intel from insider sources informed Stew Webb that as both vice president and then president George HW Bush ran a Congressional pedo-blackmail operation called the “Brownstone Operation and Operation Brownstar.”[160] Just one angle of it is referred to as the Franklin scandal. But again that’s just addressing one pipeline source among many. Bush finagled a taxpayer funded program that brought children in droves for daytime tours to the White House. Orphanages from all over the country, not just Boys Town, would arrange public visits to the White House. So children from group homes across America were regularly funneled into the waiting pedophile hands belonging to scores of sleazy compromised politicians. According to his sources, Stew wrote:

> *Daddy Bush, Dick Cheney, John Sununu would be standing in line to greet the children and their caretakers as they came to the Vice President's Home and or the White House for their specially invited tour at US Government expense. Bush, Cheney and Sununu would ask, "What's your name", and later just before dinner time, a call from the White House came into the hotel where the children were staying to the Caretakers inviting Little Billy, Mary, Johnny, Timmy, and Pam to the White House State dinner that evening.*[161]

Once permission was attained from the child caregivers, selected kids would be escorted to a waiting limousine, be given a Coke laced with what's called a Voodoo drug, a shrub plant extract from remote areas of South America in powder form called Scopolamine.[162] A person under its influence becomes hyper-obedient and memory of events once its effects wear off tend to be erased. The limo would then transport the kids to various locations where parties were being held. It might be Larry King's house or Craig Spence's home or the openly gay Massachusetts Congressman Barney Frank's Brownstone. As Congress' first openly gay representative, Barney was among influential Democratic regulars partaking full bipartisan advantage of DC's unending flow of underage boys. Frank was ultimately outed living with a house boy who operated a gay prostitution ring right out of their shared residence.[163] Craig Spence once tried in vain to recruit Frank's entrepreneurial "call boy" to his own blackmail operation. The already-in-progress political shindigs would always arrange high class call girls furnished by another likely murdered DC Madame (for also knowing too much) supplying attending partygoers from the House and Senate and foreign dignitaries with

Voodoo laced alcoholic beverages to ensure they were sufficiently intoxicated and manageable for what would come next. About that time Bush, Cheney and Sununu would arrive escorting the targeted children. The prostitutes would then leave and the pedo-party would begin. The kid's caregivers would be contacted at their hotels and told that the children had fallen asleep and that they will be staying overnight at the White House and returned before lunchtime the next morning.[164] Thus as drugged captives, the defenseless children were helpless little prey while the cameras were rolling to catch notable politicos also falling easy prey under Bush's Luciferian control.

Apparently the Voodoo drinks weren't foolproof enough as several months later kids back at their orphanages happening to watch the 6 o' clock news recognized President Bush on their television screens and, pointing to their private parts, informed staff that "he put his thing in me."[165] At some point shortly thereafter, *People Magazine* was contacted and a team of journalists were dispatched to follow up with investigating the orphanages that participated in the federal program, investing a million dollars on this bombshell story that confirmed pedophiles Bush, Cheney and Sununu were responsible for raping and sodomizing them. Stew Webb stated that he spoke to *People Magazine* journalists who confirmed the story's veracity, but that Bush and company had once again ensured it would never make it to print.[166] Media blackouts suppressing and censoring the truth are always standard fare as MSM upper management acts as complicit whores in virtually all pedophilia cover-ups.

As is typical of pedophilia sex rings, the Brownstone aka Franklin operation served the dual function of both catering to the perverse debauchery of sick Luciferian pedophiles at the top of the predatory food chain as well as serving as a convenient means of attaining blackmail control over powerful puppets at top levels of the government, the military, law enforcement, the judicial system, Wall Street, mainstream media and entertainment. From the 1950s right up to the 1980s in cahoots with gay pedophile FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover's COINTELPRO, Donald Trump's ruthless mentor - the gay powerhouse attorney Roy Cohn - also led an East Coast pedo-ring blackmail operation.[167] CIA agent Edwin Wilson began partnering with Cohn on these child homosexual pedophile blackmail rings as early as the 1950s, expanding their turf operation to DC in the 1970s.

Former CIA agent Frank Terpil confirmed Wilson's agency role in domestic child sex rings:

> *Historically, one of Wilson's Agency jobs was to subvert members of both houses [of Congress] by any means necessary... Certain people could be easily coerced by living out their sexual fantasies in the flesh... A remembrance of these occasions [was] permanently recorded via selected cameras.... The technicians in charge of filming… [were] TSD [Technical Services Division of the CIA]... The unwitting porno stars advanced in their political careers, some of [whom] may still be in office.*[168]

So using children as pedo-bait for blackmail operations has been around at least since the early 1950s and no doubt earlier. These various sex rings are not unlike the more recent Jeffrey Epstein-Ghislaine Maxwell Sex Slave Island operation of the 1990s up till Epstein's 2005 arrest (covered in next chapter). From Paperclip to MK Ultra mind control, the US government CIA-FBI pedophilia trafficking network has been an established fact for a very long time in the United States, Europe and many parts of the world. And again, going public with how the CIA has been misusing children as pedo-bait is most likely what got John DeCamp's close friend former CIA Director William Colby bumped off.

Credited founder of the Illuminati - Adam Weishaupt - with full Rothschild backing in 1776, touted sexual blackmail and covert infiltration as secret weaponized cornerstones of Illuminati's future success and demonic rise to world power.[169] And with an estimated one third of those in the US government today guilty of engaging in pedophilia as sexual blackmail,[170] the global child sex trade/trafficking network has only exponentially skyrocketed during this century. Government scientist insider Dr. Pete Peterson claims that 86% of US Congress are members of the North American Man-Boy Love Association (NAMBLA).[171] If true, then obviously way more than half our nation's so called top leaders are cabal-controlled pedophiles.

Keep in mind that led by this same Bush-Clinton family dynasty, none of these past scandalous events and developments are ever truly isolated, random or independent of each other but solely the causal, common-threaded consequence of an ongoing diabolical, centralized mechanism exercising increasing tyrannical power and absolute Luciferian control over this planet. Massive abuse and sacrifice of our innocents are simply their means to an end. But as their Achilles heel, we now have the opportunity to make it the means to their end as sexual predators increasingly face the wrath that comes from their ugly truth being exposed like never before, followed immediately by their karmic payback as ultimate belated justice delivered.

Vox News succinctly summarizes Bush 41's child slavery operation and his less than perfect cover-up this way:

It is a fact that during the 1980s, child sexual services were provided by top Republican officials to key bureaucrats and diplomats but most importantly, there is a chilling proximity of all of these events and personalities, to the President of the United States at the time, George H.W. Bush. And there have been victims who claim that the President himself *engaged in the activities. It is a tale of child sex, murder, espionage, blackmail, and huge payoffs. And all the players are involved. From the White House to the CIA to the media barons to the Republican elite - right down to the orphanages where they procured their victims.*[172]

Right where senior Bush left off, the global operation was seamlessly handed over to the Bill and Hillary White House and their raping and plundering first in the 1990s Balkans, more recently in the Caribbean on Epstein's St. James Island and then in earthquake-Clinton ravaged Haiti. Obviously the child sex slave pipeline has only flourished as each pedophile president took figurehead turns as Pedo-Empire CEO, Inc. The global child trafficking network never for a single day ceased operating all these years from one decade and president to the next but only expanded to every corner of the globe, with more child abductions yearly, more wars, more victims, more trafficking venues and more perversions at the top of the predator food chain.

Next stop on board Satan's Lolita Express is Sex Slave Island from the 1990s to 2005 pedo-slave master Jeffrey Epstein and his Mossad-CIA version of sexual blackmail operation trapping big names that might soon fall… if any of the Trump hype on his deep state countercoup is at all true.

Endnotes

---

[1] Paul M. Rodriguez and George Archibald, "Homosexual Prostitution Inquiry Ensnares VIPs with Reagan, Bush," *Washington Times*, June 29, 1989, https://www.wanttoknow.info/890629washingtontimesfranklin.

[2] "The White House Call Boy Ring – 1989," YouTube video, 4:59, posted on October 15, 2011, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=fxO1WbImphQ.

[3] "Conspiracy of Silence – Full Banned Documentary (1994)," YouTube video, 59:53, posted on April 26, 2012, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ggxiBWv4xYE.

[4] Arthur Christian, "Video Documentary: Conspiracy of Silence - 1994 - 55 Minutes - Child Sex Scandal at Boys Town Nebraska Involving Larry King,"

loveforlife.com, May 14, 2011, http://loveforlife.com.au/content/11/05/14/video-documentary-conspiracy-silence-1994-55-minutes-child-sex-scandal-boys-town-ne.

[5] "Conspiracy of Silence: Transcription of Unaired Documentary on the Franklin Cover-up," *alamoministries.com*, http://www.alamoministries.com/content/english/newsreleases/conspiracyofsilence.html.

[6] Paul Szoldra, "The Government's Top Scientists Built some of the most Amazing Technology we use today," *Business Insider*, January 25, 2016, http://www.businessinsider.com/darpa-creations-2016-1/?IR=T/#most-of-the-functions-of-computing-we-often-take-for-granted-originated-with-darpa-back-in-the-1960s-1.

[7] "Deep State Collapsing, CIA being Defanged, Shadow Government Defeat Inevitable," *The Millennium Report*, December 2, 2017, http://themillenniumreport.com/2017/12/deep-state-collapsing-c-i-a-being-defanged-shadow-government-defeat-inevitable/.

[8] John W. DeCamp, *The Franklin Cover-up: Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska* (Lincoln, Nebraska: AWT Inc., 1992), https://www.amazon.com/Franklin-Cover-up-Satanism-Murder-Nebraska/dp/0963215809.

[9] Nick Bryant, *The Franklin Scandal: A Story of Powerbrokers, Child Abuse & Betrayal* (Waterville, Oregon: TrineDay, 2011), https://www.amazon.com/Franklin-Scandal-Story-Powerbrokers-Betrayal/dp/1936296071.

[10] Jeffrey St. Clair and Alexander Cockburn, "The CIA and the Press: When the Washington Post Ran the CIA's Propaganda Network," *CounterPunch*, November 30, 2016, https://www.counterpunch.org/2016/11/30/the-cia-and-the-press-when-the-washington-post-ran-the-cias-propaganda-network/.

[11] Rick Atkinson, "Omaha's Hurricane of Scandal," *The Washington Post*, April 1, 1990, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/lifestyle/1990/04/01/omahas-hurricane-of-scandal/f762dad7-c72c-415e-a17c-bd4ece10fa44/?utm_term=.c7c899b5b214.

[12] William Robbins, "A Lurid, Mysterious Scandal Begins taking Shape in Omaha," *The New York Times*, December 18, 1988, http://www.nytimes.com/1988/12/18/us/a-lurid-mysterious-scandal-begins-taking-shape-in-omaha.html?pagewanted=all.

[13] Joachim Hagopian, "As Treasonous Bush-Clinton-Obama Pedo Cabal Dynasty gets Exposed, Desperate Elite Steps up War against Humanity," *sott.net*, March 31, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/346940-As-Treasonous-Bush-Clinton-

Obama-Pedo-Cabal-Dynasty-Gets-Exposed-Desperate-Elite-Steps-Up-War-against-Humanity.

[14] David Malmo-Levine, “George H.W. Bush: Biggest Drug Lord Ever,” *cannibusculture.com*, May 16, 2017, http://www.cannabisculture.com/content/2017/05/16/george-h-w-bush-biggest-drug-lord-ever.

[15] Jonathan Marshall, “The Clinton-Colombia Connection,” *Consortium News*, May 19, 2016, https://consortiumnews.com/2016/05/19/the-clinton-colombia-connection/.

[16] “Bill Clinton was Frequent Flier on Pedophile’s Private Jet ‘Lolita Express,’” *RT*, May 14, 2016, https://www.rt.com/usa/343048-clinton-epstein-lolita-express/.

[17] “The Clinton Pedophilia Connection,” Steve Pieczinik on YouTube video, 2:43, posted November 1, 2016, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=12zVlaZyX3Q.

[18] “RWW News: Liz Crokin Says a Hillary Clinton Sex Tape Will Finally Prove That Pizzagate Is Real,” YouTube video, 2:37, posted on November 3, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=QODs234yvK4.

[19] Stefan Stanford, “Ominous Harbinger Of Peril Ahead Hints At Deep State Plan To Take Down President Trump - Would That Trigger Civil War?” *allnewspipeline.com*, December 15, 2017, http://allnewspipeline.com/Julian_Assange_Warns_On_Deep_State_Plan_To_Take_Down_Trump.php.

[20] Soraya Sepahpour-Ulrich, “Trump’s Doomsday Jerusalem Speech,” *Foreign Policy Journal*, December 15, 2017, https://www.foreignpolicyjournal.com/2017/12/15/trumps-doomsday-jerusalem-speech/.

[21] “Treason: Shadow Government in “All Out War” to bring down President Trump (and his Supporters),” *Natural News*, February 17, 2017, https://www.naturalnews.com/2017-02-17-treason-shadow-government-in-all-out-war-to-bring-down-president-trump-and-his-supporters.html.

[22] Joachim Hagopian, “Washington and America Implode at the hands of a treasonous Obama-Led Shadow government,” *sott.net*, March 4, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/344356-Washington-and-America-Implode-at-the-Hands-of-a-Treasonous-Obama-Led-Shadow-Government.

[23] “UPDATED 9:41 AM Tuesday: 4,289 SEALED Federal Indictments/Cases in all 94 Federal Districts: Historic!” *Hal Turner Radio Show*, November 27, 2017, http://halturnerradioshow.com/index.php/news/u-s-national-news/1679-now-4-289-sealed-federal-indictments-cases-in-all-94-federal-districts-historic.

[24] David Nova, “Trump Executive Order To Freeze Financial Accounts of Human Traffickers,” *Deus Nexus*, December 22, 2017, https://deusnexus.wordpress.com/2017/12/22/trump-target-accounts/.

[25] Al Duncan, “Can the Deep State Remove Donald J. Trump from Office? Part 2,” *News with Views*, January 2, 2018, https://newswithviews.com/can-the-deep-state-remove-donald-j-trump-from-office-part-2/.

[26] “How the World really Works,” howtheworldreallyworks.info, http://howtheworldreallyworks.info/.

[27] Jo Confino, “How Technology has Stopped Evolution and is Destroying the World,” *The Guardian*, July 11, 2013, https://www.theguardian.com/sustainable-business/technology-stopped-evolution-destroying-world.

[28] Kevin Bales, “Modern Slave Trade: How to Count a ‘Hidden’ Population of 46 Million,” The Conversation, June 7, 2016, http://theconversation.com/modern-slave-trade-how-to-count-a-hidden-population-of-46-million-60275.

[29] Lane Anderson, “How Abused Teen Girls are Treated like Criminals – and how to Help,” *Desert News*, August 12, 2015, https://www.deseretnews.com/article/865634305/How-abused-teen-girls-are-treated-like-criminals-2-and-how-to-help.html.

[30] Laura Marquez, “Southeast Asia a Haven for Pedophiles,” *ABC News*, August 17, 2006, http://abcnews.go.com/US/story?id=2325416.

[31] Deanna Davy, “Understanding the Complexities of Responding to Child Sex Trafficking in Thailand and Cambodia,” *International Journal of Sociology and Social Policy*, 2014, 34 (11/12), pp.793-816, http://www.emeraldinsight.com/doi/full/10.1108/IJSSP-10-2013-0103.

[32] Henry J. Cordes, “John DeCamp Remembered as one of Nebraska’s most Accomplished, Controversial Lawmakers,” *Omaha World Herald*, August 1, 2017, http://www.omaha.com/news/legislature/john-decamp-remembered-as-one-of-nebraska-s-most-accomplished/article_021ad479-591f-55f0-b1f5-923f4083c728.html.

[33] John DeCamp, *The Franklin Cover-up: Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska* (Lincoln, Nebraska: AWT Inc., 1992), https://archive.org/stream/ConspiracyOfSilenceTranscriptFranklinCoverUp/Conspiracy%20of%20Silence%20Transcript%20Franklin%20%20Cover%20Up-17_djvu.txt.

[34] “The Work Will Continue,” Boys Town official website, “Boys Town’s First 100 Years,” 2017 video, 27:52, http://www.boystown.org/100/Pages/documentary.aspx.

[35] “Boys Town (1938),” *IMDb*, http://www.imdb.com/title/tt0029942/.

[36] Nick Bryant, “The Franklin Scandal: A Story of Powerbrokers, Child Abuse & Betrayal,” *trineday.com*, http://www.trineday.com/paypal_store/product_pages/Franklin.html.

[37] “George Bush Pedophile Sex Ring and Blackmail of Congress,” *Covert Geopolitics*, January 14, 2015, https://geopolitics.co/2015/01/14/george-bush-pedophile-sex-ring-and-blackmail-of-congress/.

[38] Tim King, “America's Greatest Child Sex Scandal: Boys Town in Lincoln, Nebraska,” *Salem-News.com*, December 29, 2012, http://www.salem-news.com/articles/december292012/boys-town-scandal-tk.php.

[39] Michael Hughes, “Lawrence E. King, Jr. Overachiever,” *Veterans Today*, February 8, 2015, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2015/02/08/lawrence-e-king-jr-overachiever/.

[40] Harrison Koehli, “Men who Hate Women: The Franklin Scandal and the Truth about our Leaders,” sott.net, October 10, 2011, https://www.sott.net/article/236161-Men-Who-Hate-Women-The-Franklin-Scandal-and-the-Truth-About-Our-Leaders.

[41] Michael Hughes, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2015/02/08/lawrence-e-king-jr-overachiever/.

[42] Michael Hughes, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2015/02/08/lawrence-e-king-jr-overachiever/.

[43] Rick Atkinson, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/lifestyle/1990/04/01/omahas-hurricane-of-scandal/f762dad7-c72c-415e-a17c-bd4ece10fa44/?utm_term=.c7c899b5b214.

[44] Gordon Duff, editor’s note, Michael Hughes, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2015/02/08/lawrence-e-king-jr-overachiever/.

[45] Bob Fitrakis, “The Ghost of rigged elections Past: New Revelations on the Death of Michael Connell,” *Free Press*, December 11, 2013, https://freepress.org/article/ghost-rigged-elections-past-new-revelations-death-michael-connell-0.

[46] Michael Parenti, “The Stolen Presidential Elections,” *michaelparenti.org*, 2007, http://www.michaelparenti.org/stolenelections.html.

[47] “Bush Fired US Attorneys to Cover-up D.C. Pedophile Ring,” *humansarefree.com*, http://humansarefree.com/2017/11/bush-fired-us-attorneys-to-cover-up-dc.html?utm_source=feedburner&utm_medium=feed&utm_campaign=Feed%3A+HumansAreFree+%28Humans+Are+Free%29.

[48] “Michael Connell,” Wikipedia, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Michael_Connell.

[49] James Renner, “Point of Impact,” *Cleveland Scene*, January 21, 2009, https://www.clevescene.com/cleveland/point-of-impact/Content?oid=1534616.

[50] Michael Hughes, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2015/02/08/lawrence-e-king-jr-overachiever/.

[51] “Roskens ‘Sleaze Factor’ at U.S. AID could be Bad News for Bush Campaign,” *EIR*, October 18, 1991, www.larouchepub.com/eiw/public/1991/eirv18n40-1991101.

[52] Webster Tarpley and Anton Chaitkin, *George Bush, the Unauthorized Biography*, (Washington, DC: Progressive Press), 1992, http://tarpley.net/online-books/george-bush-the-unauthorized-biography/chapter-21-omaha/.

[53] Webster Tarpley and Anton Chaitkin, http://tarpley.net/online-books/george-bush-the-unauthorized-biography/chapter-21-omaha/.

[54] Webster Tarpley and Anton Chaitkin, http://tarpley.net/online-books/george-bush-the-unauthorized-biography/chapter-21-omaha/.

[55] Charles Lee, “Lest we Forget: A Story of Child Abuse, Satanism & Injustice,” *Collective Evolution*, April 2, 2015, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2015/04/02/lest-we-forget-a-story-of-child-abuse-satanism-injustice/.

[56] Webster Tarpley and Anton Chaitkin, http://tarpley.net/online-books/george-bush-the-unauthorized-biography/chapter-21-omaha/.

[57] “The Franklin Child Abuse Scandal – Stunning Cover-up of Child Prostitution Ring for Wealthy Elitists and Political Leaders,” *altereddimensions.net*, March 5, 2016, http://altereddimensions.net/2016/the-franklin-child-abuse-scandal-potential-boys-town-pedophile-cover-up-child-prostitution-ring.

[58] “Conspiracy of Silence: Transcription of Unaired Documentary on the Franklin Cover-up,” http://www.alamoministries.com/content/english/newsreleases/conspiracyofsilence.html

[59] Alex Constantine, “Duncan & Blake ‘Suicides’ Solved: The Omaha/Des Moines Allegations, MediaBistro.com Data Mining & the CIA,” *AlexConstantine.blogspot.com*, February 29, 2008, http://alexconstantine.blogspot.co.id/search?q=father+val+peter+franklin+cover-up.

[60] John W. DeCamp, *The Franklin Cover-up: Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska* (Lincoln, Nebraska: AWT Inc., 2nd edition, 1996), pp. 173-74, http://archive.org/stream/TheFranklinCover-upByFormerGreenBeretJohnDecamp/the_Frankklin_cover-up_-_ebook_djvu.txt.

[61] John DeCamp, http://archive.org/stream/TheFranklinCover-upByFormerGreenBeretJohnDecamp/the_Frankklin_cover-up_-_ebook_djvu.txt.

[62] Ted Gunderson, “The Gunderson Report: Child Sexual Abuse,” *educate-yourself.org*, April 2001, http://educate-yourself.org/cn/gundersonreportchildsexualabuse.shtml.

[63] “Franklin Scandal-Deposition of Paul Bonacci,” YouTube video, 1:12:50, posted on December 18, 2015, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=_4MfKDTmwAw.

[64] Charles Lee, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2015/04/02/lest-we-forget-a-story-of-child-abuse-satanism-injustice/.

[65] Brandia, “Making some Sense of the Franklin Sex Abuse Scandal… well Sort of,” *Snohomish County Reporter*, August 29, 2014, http://snocoreporter.com/making-some-sense-of-the-franklin-sex-abuse-scandal-well-sort-of/.

[66] Alex Constantine, http://alexconstantine.blogspot.co.id/search?q=father+val+peter+franklin+cover-up.

[67] Alex Constantine, http://alexconstantine.blogspot.co.id/search?q=father+val+peter+franklin+cover-up.

[68] Brandia, http://snocoreporter.com/making-some-sense-of-the-franklin-sex-abuse-scandal-well-sort-of/.

[69] Charles Lee, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2015/04/02/lest-we-forget-a-story-of-child-abuse-satanism-injustice/.

[70] “America’s Greatest Child Sex Scandal: Boys Town in Lincoln Nebraska,” *Salem-News.com*, December 29, 2012, http://www.salem-news.com/articles/december292012/boys-town-scandal-tk.php.

[71] Ralph Lopez, “Major Documentary on Highest-Level Child Sex-Abuse is Suppressed,” *Digital Journal*, August 14, 2014, http://www.digitaljournal.com/news/world/major-documentary-on-highest-level-child-sex-abuse-is-suppressed/article/396661.

[72] Charles Lee, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2015/04/02/lest-we-forget-a-story-of-child-abuse-satanism-injustice/.

[73] Charles Lee, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2015/04/02/lest-we-forget-a-story-of-child-abuse-satanism-injustice/.

[74] Ted Gunderson, http://educate-yourself.org/cn/gundersonreportchildsexualabuse.shtml.

[75] Ralph Lopez, http://www.digitaljournal.com/news/world/major-documentary-on-highest-level-child-sex-abuse-is-suppressed/article/396661.

[76] "FBI Covers up Child Abuse, Murder in Nebraska," *EIR*, July 27, 1990, https://www.larouchepub.com/eiw/public/1990/eirv17n30.

[77] Dennis Moore, book review of Nick Bryant's *The Franklin Scandal, East County Magazine*, May 23, 2010, https://www.eastcountymagazine.org/book-review-franklin-scandal.

[78] Charles Lee, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2015/04/02/lest-we-forget-a-story-of-child-abuse-satanism-injustice/.

[79] Wayne Madsen, "FBI Killed Franklin Scandal Investigator and His Son," *Wayne Madsen Report*, *rense.com*, June 23, 2014, http://www.rense.com/general96/fbikilled.html.

[80] "Sold for Sex: Trafficking in Nebraska," *NET News*, YouTube video, 29:30, posted on January 30, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=etao-pHnjUs

[81] Wayne Madsen, "Meet the Neocons' Newest American Hero: Ben Sasse," *Strategic Culture*, March 21, 2017, https://www.strategic-culture.org/news/2017/03/21/meet-neocons-newest-american-hero-ben-sasse.html.

[82] Wayne Madsen, https://www.strategic-culture.org/news/2017/03/21/meet-neocons-newest-american-hero-ben-sasse.html.

[83] Mike Cernovich, "Ben Sasse and #Never Trump's Pedophile Problem," *Danger and Play*, May 5, 2016, https://www.dangerandplay.com/2016/05/05/ben-sasse-and-nevertrumps-pedophile-problem/.

[84] Wayne Madsen, http://www.rense.com/general96/fbikilled.html.

[85] Wayne Madsen, https://www.strategic-culture.org/news/2017/03/21/meet-neocons-newest-american-hero-ben-sasse.html.

[86] Charles Lee, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2015/04/02/lest-we-forget-a-story-of-child-abuse-satanism-injustice/.

[87] Dennis Moore, https://www.eastcountymagazine.org/book-review-franklin-scandal.

[88] John DeCamp, *The Franklin Cover-up: Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska* (Lincoln, Nebraska: AWT Inc., 1992), p.25, http://www.whatreallyhappened.com/WRHARTICLES/Franklin/FranklinCoverup/franklin.htm.

[89] Nick Bryant, *The Franklin Scandal*, *wikispooks.com*, January 1, 2008, https://wikispooks.com/wiki/Document:The_Franklin_Scandal.

[90] Wayne Madsen, http://www.rense.com/general96/fbikilled.html.

[91] Wayne Madsen, http://www.rense.com/general96/fbikilled.html.

[92] Ralph Lopez, http://www.digitaljournal.com/news/world/major-documentary-on-highest-level-child-sex-abuse-is-suppressed/article/396661.

[93] Wayne Madsen, http://www.rense.com/general96/fbikilled.html.

[94] John DeCamp, *The Franklin Cover-up: Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska*, Forward Second Edition (Lincoln, Nebraska: AWT Inc., 1996), http://stateofthenation2012.com/?p=21936.

[95] John DeCamp, speech transcript at Schiller Institute on February 2, 1994, *EIR*, 21 (10), March 4, 1994, https://www.larouchepub.com/eiw/public/1994/eirv21n10.

[96] John DeCamp, https://www.larouchepub.com/eiw/public/1994/eirv21n10.

[97] Wayne Madsen, http://www.rense.com/general96/fbikilled.html.

[98] Wayne Madsen, http://www.rense.com/general96/fbikilled.html.

[99] "Nebraska Grand Jury Protects Child Abuse," *EIR*, August 3, 1990, https://www.larouchepub.com/eiw/public/1990/eirv17n31.

[100] Ralph Lopez, http://www.digitaljournal.com/news/world/major-documentary-on-highest-level-child-sex-abuse-is-suppressed/article/396661.

[101] David J. Stewart, "Satanists are taking over Everything!" *lovethetruth.com*, August 2016, http://www.lovethetruth.com/nwo/satanists_taking_over.htm.

[102] Gordon Duff, editor's note, Michael Hughes, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2015/02/08/lawrence-e-king-jr-overachiever/.

[103] Wayne Madsen, http://www.rense.com/general96/fbikilled.html

[104] Court transcript testimony from Bonacci vs. King civil case, US Federal District Court of Nebraska, February 25, 1999, appendix from John DeCamp's *The Franklin Cover-up*, http://www.whale.to/b/aq3.html.

[105] "Roskens 'Sleaze Factor' at U.S. AID could be Bad News for Bush Campaign," www.larouchepub.com/eiw/public/1991/eirv18n40-1991101.

[106] Webster Tarpley and Anton Chaitkin, http://tarpley.net/online-books/george-bush-the-unauthorized-biography/chapter-21-omaha/.

[107] Noreen Gosch, “Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder: The Story that ‘20/20’ would not tell,” *EIR*, February 4, 2000,

www.larouchepub.com/eiw/public/2000/eirv27n05-2000020.

[108] Wayne Madsen, http://www.rense.com/general96/fbikilled.html.

[109] Tim King, http://www.salem-news.com/articles/december292012/boys-town-scandal-tk.php.

[110] “Conspiracy of Silence: Transcription of Unaired Documentary on the Franklin Cover-up,” http://www.alamoministries.com/content/english/newsreleases/conspiracyofsilence.html.

[111] Nick Bryant, https://wikispooks.com/wiki/Document:The_Franklin_Scandal.

[112] Wayne Madsen, http://www.rense.com/general96/fbikilled.html.

[113] Charles Young, “Still Evil after all these Years,” *CounterPunch*, September 10, 2012, https://www.counterpunch.org/2012/09/10/still-evil-after-all-these-years/.

[114] Harrison Koehli, https://www.sott.net/article/236161-Men-Who-Hate-Women-The-Franklin-Scandal-and-the-Truth-About-Our-Leaders .

[115] Alex Constantine, “Accused Statutory Rapist Robert Wadman’s ‘Libel’ Suit against John DeCamp Flops,” *Constantine Report*, July 31, 2008, https://www.constantinereport.com/accused-statutory-rapist-robert-wadmans-libel-suit-against-john-decamp-flops/.

[116] Phil Jayhan, “John DeCamp Wins Lawsuit Filed by Robert Wadman for Libel in ‘The Franklin Cover-up,” *Let’s Roll Forums*, August 1, 2008, http://letsrollforums.com//john-decamp-wins-lawsuit-t17623.html?s=06ae3253a799ce00b5c917aee6cebe5b&amp.

[117] Noreen Gosch, www.larouchepub.com/eiw/public/2000/eirv27n05-2000020.

[118] Alex Constantine, https://www.constantinereport.com/accused-statutory-rapist-robert-wadmans-libel-suit-against-john-decamp-flops/.

[119] Charles Lee, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2015/04/02/lest-we-forget-a-story-of-child-abuse-satanism-injustice/.

[120] Brandia, http://snocoreporter.com/making-some-sense-of-the-franklin-sex-abuse-scandal-well-sort-of/.

[121] John DeCamp, https://archive.org/stream/ConspiracyOfSilenceTranscriptFranklinCoverUp/Conspi

racy%20of%20Silence%20Transcript%20Franklin%20%20Cover%20Up-17_djvu.txt.

[122] “False Memory Syndrome: Mind Control and Pedophilia,” *steemit.com*, September 11, 2017, https://steemit.com/pizzagate/@whitedeer9217/false-memory-syndrome-mind-control-and-pedophilia.

[123] Nick Bryant, https://wikispooks.com/wiki/Document:The_Franklin_Scandal.

[124] Charles Lee, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2015/04/02/lest-we-forget-a-story-of-child-abuse-satanism-injustice/.

[125] John DeCamp, *The Franklin Cover-up*, https://s3.amazonaws.com/bk1/bk2/the-franklin-coverup.pdf.

[126] “Conspiracy of Silence: Transcription of Unaired Documentary on the Franklin Cover-up,” http://www.alamoministries.com/content/english/newsreleases/conspiracyofsilence.html.

[127] John DeCamp, *The Franklin Cover-up*, 2004-05 updates and developments, https://archive.org/stream/TheFranklinCover-upByFormerGreenBeretJohnDecamp/the_Frankklin_cover-up_-_ebook_djvu.txt.

[128] Ralph Lopez, http://www.digitaljournal.com/news/world/major-documentary-on-highest-level-child-sex-abuse-is-suppressed/article/396661.

[129] Charles Young, https://www.counterpunch.org/2012/09/10/still-evil-after-all-these-years/.

[130] M.C. Moewe, “’If you Dare to come forward, dare to talk, Watch what Happens,” *Daily Kos*, August 5, 2014, https://www.dailykos.com/stories/2014/8/4/1319089/--If-You-Dare-to-Come-Forward-If-You-Dare-to-Talk-Watch-What-Happens .

[131] “Roskens ‘Sleaze Factor’ at U.S. AID could be Bad News for Bush Campaign,” www.larouchepub.com/eiw/public/1991/eirv18n40-1991101.

[132] “Hall of Fame: Ronald Roskens,” DeMolay International website, https://demolay.org/halloffame/bio.php?id=37.

[133] Anthony Tyler, “American Pedophilia: Prerequisite of a Wealthy Elitist,” *thelastamericanvagabond.com*, July 27, 2016, http://www.thelastamericanvagabond.com/conspiracy/american-pedophilia-prerequisite-wealthy-elitist/.

[134] Fritz Springmeier, “The Disney Bloodline - The Skill of Lying, the Art of Deceit,” bibliotecapleyades.net, spring 2003, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/bloodlines/disney1.htm.

[135] “Roskens ‘Sleaze Factor’ at U.S. AID could be Bad News for Bush Campaign,” www.larouchepub.com/eiw/public/1991/eirv18n40-1991101.

[136] “Roskens ‘Sleaze Factor’ at U.S. AID could be Bad News for Bush Campaign,” www.larouchepub.com/eiw/public/1991/eirv18n40-1991101.

[137] “Were 20 Million Afro-Brazilian women Sterilized?” *blackwomenofbrazil.co*, January 5, 2015, https://blackwomenofbrazil.co/2015/01/05/were-20-million-afro-brazilian-women-sterilized-with-recent-controversy-in-kenya-we-re-visit-the-sterilization-controversy-of-the-late-1980s-in-brazil/.

[138] Wayne Madsen, http://www.rense.com/general96/fbikilled.html.

[139] Wayne Madsen, http://www.rense.com/general96/fbikilled.html.

[140] “The Washington Child Sex Ring Coverup,” *Vox News*, http://www.voxfux.com/features/bush_child_sex_coverup/franklin.htm.

[141] Paul M. Rodriguez and George Archibald, https://www.wanttoknow.info/890629washingtontimesfranklin

[142] Webster Tarpley and Anton Chaitkin, http://tarpley.net/online-books/george-bush-the-unauthorized-biography/chapter-21-omaha/.

[143] “George Bush: World Class Monster,” *Vox News*, http://www.voxfux.com/features/bush_world_class_criminal.html.

[144] “George Bush: World Class Monster,” http://www.voxfux.com/features/bush_world_class_criminal.html.

[145] Barry Wigmore, “The Truth about Modern Legend Che Guevara, by the Man who Hunted him down,” *Daily Mail*, October 9, 2007, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-486423/The-truth-modern-legend-Che-Guevara-man-hunted-down.html.

[146] John Mintz, Martha Sherill and Elsa Walsh, “The Shadow World of Craig Spence,” *Washington Post, July 18, 1989,* http://www.voxfux.com/features/bush_world_class_criminal.html.

[147] “Bush Body Count,” *History Bud*, http://historybud.com/tag/bush-body-count/.

[148] “Chilling Similarities between Seth Rich Murder and ‘Clinton Body Count’ Victims,” *World Net Daily*, May 16, 2017, http://www.wnd.com/2017/05/chilling-similarities-between-seth-rich-murder-and-clinton-body-count-victims/.

[149] Judge Urbom’s Memorandum of Decision in Paul A. Bonacci vs. Lawrence E. King case, United States District Court for the District of Nebraska, filed February 22, 1999, http://www.highstrangeness.tv/articles/king.php.

[150] Court transcript testimony from Bonacci vs. King civil case, US Federal District Court of Nebraska, February 25, 1999, appendix from John DeCamp's *The Franklin Cover-up*, http://www.whale.to/b/aq3.html.

[151] Judge Warren Urbom decision in Bonacci vs. King case, "Full Text of the CIA 'Finders' File," *archive.org*, https://archive.org/stream/ThisIsTheCiafindersFile/Finders_djvu.txt.

[152] Dennis Moore, https://www.eastcountymagazine.org/book-review-franklin-scandal.

[153] Dennis Moore, https://www.eastcountymagazine.org/book-review-franklin-scandal.

[154] Lilian Mustelier, "Ronald Reagan Guilty of Treason and War Crimes," *highstrangeness.tv*, http://www.highstrangeness.tv/articles/reagan.php.

[155] Opera NOVA webpage/Larry King, archived December 21, 2016, http://archive.is/w712A.

[156] "Statistics," *HEATwatch.org* website, http://www.heatwatch.org/human_trafficking/statistics.

[157] Patrick Hennigsen, "An Oscar for a Propaganda Flick," *Consortium News*, March 3, 2017, https://consortiumnews.com/2017/03/03/an-oscar-for-a-propaganda-flick/.

[158] "Stew Webb Federal Whistleblower – 32 Years" website, http://www.stewwebb.com/.

[159] Larry Chin, "The Bush-Clinton Empire and Criminal Succession," *Intrepid Report*, September 26, 2016, http://www.intrepidreport.com/archives/19227.

[160] Stew Webb, "George Bush Pedophile Sex Ring and Blackmail of Congress," *Covert Geopolitics*, January 14, 2015, https://geopolitics.co/2015/01/14/george-bush-pedophile-sex-ring-and-blackmail-of-congress/.

[161] Stew Webb, https://geopolitics.co/2015/01/14/george-bush-pedophile-sex-ring-and-blackmail-of-congress/.

[162] David G. Guyatt, "Former CIA/DIA Deep-Cover Agent 'Chip' Tatum Reveals more Disturbing Details about High-level Control of Global Drug-Running and Money-Laundering Operations, Part 2," *Vox News*, June-July 1997, http://www.voxfux.com/features/cia_bush_drug_trafficking_murder_pt1.html.

[163] Michael Brendan Dougherty, "The One Thing No One is Mentioning in their Barney Frank Tributes: The Prostitutes," *Business Insider*, November 29, 2011, http://www.businessinsider.com/the-one-thing-no-one-is-mentioning-in-their-barney-frank-tributes-the-prostitutes-2011-11/?IR=T.

[164] Stew Webb, https://geopolitics.co/2015/01/14/george-bush-pedophile-sex-ring-and-blackmail-of-congress/.

[165] Stew Webb, https://geopolitics.co/2015/01/14/george-bush-pedophile-sex-ring-and-blackmail-of-congress/.

[166] Stew Webb, https://geopolitics.co/2015/01/14/george-bush-pedophile-sex-ring-and-blackmail-of-congress/.

[167] Sherman de Brosse, "An Early Brownstone Operation – Sex and Blackmail Ring," *shermsays.blogspot.com* (a blog site), July 29, 2009, http://shermsays.blogspot.co.id/2009/07/early-brownstone-operation-sex-and.html.

[168] Sherman de Brosse, http://shermsays.blogspot.co.id/2009/07/early-brownstone-operation-sex-and.html.

[169] William Guy Carr, *Pawns in the Game* (San Diego: Dauphin Publications, 1978), "Introduction – The International Conspiracy," *bibliotecapleyades.net*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/pawns_inthegame/pawns_00.htm.

[170] "Shock Report: One Third of US Government Comprised of Satanic Pedophiles," *truthaseeker.ca*, September 12, 2017, http://www.truthseeker.ca/2017/09/shock-report-one-third-of-us-government.html.

[171] "David Wilcock – The Downfall of the Cabal," YouTube video, 1:24, posted December 12, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=9HrDSh-Wo7g.

[172] "The Washington Child Sex Ring Coverup," *Vox News*, http://www.voxfux.com/features/bush_child_sex_coverup/franklin.htm.

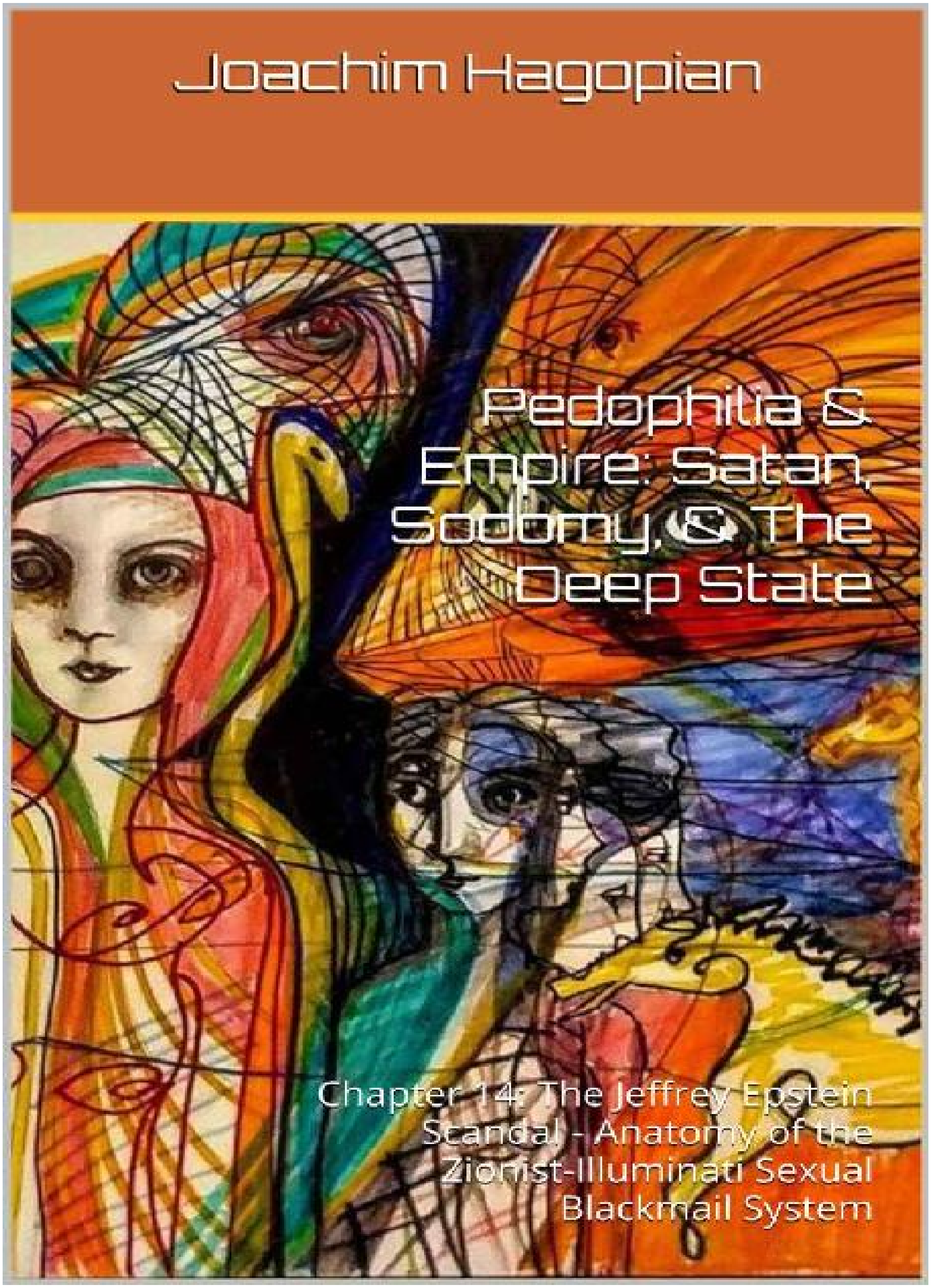

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 14: The Jeffrey Epstein Scandal - Anatomy of the Zionist-Illuminati Sexual Blackmail System

Chapter 14: The Jeffrey Epstein Scandal: Anatomy of the Zionist-Illuminati Sexual Blackmail System

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission

http://www.noramaccoby.com/

Whereas the painful lesson from the Franklin scandal graphically demonstrates how pedophiles at the top can bury their most heinous crimes from any real consequence, the Jeffrey Epstein story reveals how agents from a foreign government can hijack and control the US government. What will be presented here is the anatomy of a sexual blackmail operation orchestrated by Israel's Mossad as a means of gaining and maintaining control over America's foreign policy and top leaders so that the US Empire ultimately fights Israel's wars for the Greater Israel Project.[1] Through AIPAC bribery and Mossad blackmail, virtually every US politician in Congress including the president is and has been a puppet of the Zionist Jewish State.[2] The evil international cabal made up of Zionists and various Illuminati elements including the Vatican, all worship the same anti-God Lucifer, and have been misusing and abusing our children as blackmail bait for centuries. Again, back in the 18th century, the credited founder of the Illuminati Adam Weishaupt knew that infiltrating high places and sexually compromising VIP puppets through blackmail would be a central strategy in expanding its power and control over the devil's earthly dominion.[3] And based on today's power politics, Weishaupt more than attained his prophetic vision.

This chapter will focus on how Israel invested in a complete unknown, a Jewish American college dropout, overnight granting him the title of hedge fund mystery man as promoted in the Zionist controlled *New York Magazine*,[4] owning multiple mansions for the covertly licensed purpose of pursuing both his own kinky perversions raping young underage girls while enticing notable puppet figures to indulge in their pedophilic fantasies as thoroughly compromised and subsequently owned tools for Israel and the Zionist Khazarian mafia.[5] The Rothschild's central bankster system funding this Illuminati mafia scheme wouldn't have it any other way.[6]

This perfectly explains why Jeffrey Epstein was given a sweetheart's slap on the hand after getting caught red-handed raping scores of female victims as young as 12 and 13 over a period of many years. It also goes far in explaining why the current White House occupant is a Zionist puppet wrecking ball himself,[7] currently being used to plunge humanity off the Armageddon doomsday cliff moving the Jewish State capital to Jerusalem.[8] So sit back and take in this adulterated story of the cabal's political blackmail machine and how one Jeffrey Epstein and his child sex slave trafficking ring has played such a significant role in the ruling elite's global control apparatchik, unfortunately changing human history none for the better.

The early family background on Jeffrey Epstein is rather sparse. Born near Brooklyn's Coney Island in 1953 to a middle class Jewish American family with a father who worked for the city's parks department, Epstein and his younger brother Mark were indoctrinated that "their way out" of their "lowly" middle class Jewish working class affluence and relative obscurity was through education.[9] So what does the young Jeffrey do? He becomes a college dropout - twice, never finishing at either Cooper Union or NYU's Courant Institute of Mathematical Sciences. Yet without so much as a college degree, from age 20-22 Epstein somehow procured a job as a 7th grade math and physics teacher at the posh private elitist Dalton School in Manhattan. From the get-go, such early rapid upward mobility without a degree to transcend his humble Brooklyn roots strongly suggests an elitist “who-you-know” operation.

According to his propaganda fluff pieces as Wall Street’s “billionaire mystery man” propped up by both *Vanity Fair*[10] and *New York Magazine* shortly before his pedophilia arrest, the legendary urbane genius is said to have bedazzled one of the Wall Street parents at Dalton to refer him to a well-connected friend Ace Greenberg, CEO of the high-end Manhattan investment company Bear Stearns.[11] So the 23-year old Brooklyn whiz kid suddenly rose from preppie schoolteacher-college dropout to a top firm hedge fund investment broker and by age 27 was promoted to partnership at Bear Stearns. His legendary status as magic money man aka tax evasion expert had him a mere year later boldly quitting to start up his own J. Epstein Trust Company in 1981. At about that time it’s been reported that Epstein was recruited and given an estimated $1 billion advance to form his shell company by clothing retail magnate (L Limited and Victoria’s Secret) Leslie Wexner working directly with the Mossad’s so called Clothing Retail Network to set up a sexual blackmail operation.[12]

Over the next few years, Epstein’s image would be crafted as the maverick Manhattan mystery man, the King Tut of financial strut, still in his 20s braggadocio proclaiming it beneath him to accept clients who weren’t billionaires. This carefully fabricated hype surrounding this secretive billionaire charmer had him allegedly making billions for the rich and famous through his purported genius with numbers. Yet his success was never linked to more than one known customer. Turns out all the hype was nothing more than “a carefully crafted hoax” (ironically the exact same words used to obscure and bury the very real Franklin scandal). In actuality, back in the early 1980s Jeffrey Epstein met his only known client - sugar daddy Leslie Wexner and the rest is history. As *Gawker* boldly pointed out a decade ago:

Epstein's wealth is built on a "bizarre relationship" with single acknowledged client, Abercrombie & Fitch creator Leslie Wexner, one of America's most successful retailers.[13]

Persistent rumors swirled around Epstein’s meteoric rise from out of nowhere stemming from a protracted secret tryst as Mr. Leslie’s young bootlicking lover.[14] And before long, Wexner was converting an unoccupied private school in Manhattan into the largest private residence in all of New York City and then virtually gifting it to the young Brooklyn upstart for giving Les such good bootlicks. And it was only after the grooming Wexner had already created his protégé Epstein as the “mysterious,” high flying, overnight billionaire financial advisor and close friend to Bill Clinton and Ghislaine Maxwell, socialite daughter of media mogul-Mossad-MI6 double agent Robert Maxwell, did Les Wexner finally settle down and marry a woman at the ripe old age of 56.[15]

Wexner’s ties to Israel and Mossad became more than apparent when a document entitled “Wexner Analysis: Israeli Communication Priorities 2003” was uncovered, outlining a PR campaign promoting the Iraq war invasion demonizing Saddam Hussein - dead or alive - as the false link to terrorism with emphasis that Israeli foreign policy interests are identical to US foreign policy interests.[16] The report serves as confirmation that Wexner and his charity organization called the Mega Group provided the cover as a Zionist Mossad front actively influencing and dictating US war policy in the Middle East. Wexner’s Mega Group consists of about 20 fellow Jewish American financial titans who use their Zionist power to manipulate and control Washington into fighting illegal wars for Israel against the Islam religion and people in Iraq, Afghanistan, Syria, Libya, Yemen, and eventually Iran, using their US-Israeli creation of al Qaeda/ISIS terrorists as proxy war allies to justify their prefabricated US “endless war on terror.”[17] Wexner and company worked hand in hand with the neocons and Israeli first dual citizens behind the Project for a New American Century calling for their “new Pearl Harbor” 9/11 to justify US-Israeli global hegemony.

And in May 2008 George W. Bush rewarded Zionist Wexner by inviting him as an official member of his honorary delegation accompanying the US president in a state visit to Israel to celebrate its 60th anniversary.[18] For years prior Wexner had been providing Epstein with the Mossad link that included introducing Ghislaine Maxwell as his sometime girlfriend and blackmail operation pimp while the hedge fund magician ostensibly “moves Wexner’s billions around the globe.”[19] As chief Mossad blackmailer, it wasn’t long before Epstein found his way to invited memberships in such exclusive elitist private clubs as the powerful Trilateral Commission and Council on Foreign Relations.[20] Thus, in large part through the Zionist Mossad-Epstein sex ring operation, blackmail control over US politicians and US Empire foreign policy was ensured for their “endless war on terror” on the multiple warfronts to come.

Another puff piece from the *London Sunday Times* quoted a New York social observer trying to wittily describe the “complicated” Jeffrey Epstein:

He’s Mr. Enigmatic. Nobody knows whether he’s a concert pianist, property developer, a CIA agent, a math teacher or a member of Mossad.[21]

Obviously all smoke and mirrors, except his literal, right-on-the-money CIA-Mossad connection. Additionally, veteran former CIA case officer and US Marine Corps intelligence officer Robert David Steele has gone public emphatically maintaining Epstein was/is a Mossad operative set up as a “made” financier to work on behalf of Israel in a global blackmail operation.[22] Seemingly overnight Jeffrey Epstein possessed massive amounts of real estate properties that included the largest residence in America’s largest city as well as a shoreline estate in Palm Beach, Florida a mile from Trump’s Mar-a-Lago, his notorious 70-acre “Virgin” Island getaway compound, a sprawling 7,500 acre New Mexico ranch and a Paris apartment.[23]

By far the two biggest targets in the scandalous Jeffrey Epstein blackmail operation were former President Bill Clinton and his presidential wannabe wife Hillary who, according to flightlog records, flew on Epstein’s private Boeing 727 - the “Lolita Express,” Bill on 26 confirmed flights[24] and Hillary at least a half dozen times.[25] Also the fifth in line to the British throne - Prince Andrew - was yet another high flying frequent Lolita flyer.[26]

Three years ago *Gawker* obtained flightlogs dating back to the late 1990s through the mid-2000s,[27] placing Bill Clinton repeatedly after ditching secret service on board Epstein’s jets, always flying with a bunch of underage girls listed in Epstein’s infamous black book under “massage.” The Clintons both separately and together flew on Epstein’s planes with several girls determined to be as young as 12 providing sexual favors for the financier’s most powerful and influential friends.[28] Among the more notable Clinton trips around the globe with Epstein, in 2002 the former president traveled with an entourage for an entire week to Africa on a so called anti-poverty/anti-AIDS mission, also accompanied by the recently disgraced pedophilic predator actor Kevin Spacey.[29] Among the women on board for that African tour were key Epstein employees serving as handlers of his sex slave victims - Ghislaine Maxwell and Sarah Kellen, along with soft porn actress-masseuse Chauntee Davies.

Because of this additional incriminating evidence indicating that yet another American president has turned out to be another private pedophile club member, in conjunction with an already long trail of mysterious deaths surrounding scores of suspicious “suicides” and murdered associates connected to the endless Clinton scandals,[30] in vain the Bush-Clinton-Obama Deep State has gone to desperate, flimsily executed lengths to conceal and ignore both this political dynasty and power couple’s massive criminal history.[31] Yet to this very day there exists volumes of documented proof high up in both the Justice Department and FBI obstructing justice at every turn by dismissing and destroying the overwhelming evidence to persistently let these guiltiest of treasonous offenders off the hook,[32] only administering a token punishment to their fall guy buddy Epstein. After his 2006 arrest and 2008 conviction, the so called billionaire financier as the child molesting ringleader of a major sex trafficking ring set up as a Mossad blackmail operation was granted the sweetheart deal of a lifetime. To this day high stakes cabal money and power have bought Epstein and his slew of accomplices complete impunity from any real justice ever being served.

Despite Jeffrey Epstein’s 2008 conviction on just two felony counts soliciting for prostitution of an underage victim and despite avoiding prosecution for committing hundreds of felonious crimes that would land anyone else in federal prison for twenty to life, Epstein was allowed to freely leave jail for 16 hours a day six days a week and only return for overnight sleepovers at his plush private Palm Beach County jailhouse wing for a mere thirteen months of an eighteen month sentence.[33] To avert prosecution and serving hard time in either state or federal prison for his conviction, the plea deal ensured that Epstein’s sleepovers at his cushy local jailhouse - unheard of throughout the annals of law history - would provide minimal discomfort and disruption for the pampered, silver-haired pedo fox. Testimony of up to thirty-five of his hundreds of underage victims willing to provide eyewitness testimony against Epstein and his powerful pedophile pals were all conspicuously denied their day in court – by Luciferian design.

The ruling criminal elite behind the US government instead made certain that all the child rapists and pimps got off Scot-free. And ever since 2008, per his plea bargain agreement, Epstein has always escaped both prosecution and any real punishment by being allowed to simply pay hush money to at least thirty more of his victims as his army of well-paid attorneys right up to this very day are still busily negotiating lawsuit settlement after settlement, handing out millions to his rape victims in some cases dating back a quarter century after the crime fact. This blanket-wide, most reprehensible policy of completely shielding both the pedophile and all his pedophile customers from all prosecution has successfully protected worldwide clandestine Mossad-CIA pedo blackmail operations globally and, as a result, allowed them to flourish to this day.

Though through the Mossad and CIA the pedophile elite used Epstein as their point man as far back as the 1980s, it wasn't until a Florida stepmother contacted Palm Beach Police in 2005 reporting that her 14-year old daughter had been forced to have sex with the 52-year old financier before sparking a yearlong investigation culminating in his 2006 indictment.[34] Under the auspices of providing massages, Epstein was paying teenage procurers to drive underage girls to his Palm Beach mansion where he ordered them to strip down to their panties while giving him his three daily massages. The majority of girls reported that while they massaged him, he would regularly masturbate, and some maintain he penetrated them with his penis, fingers and/or vibrator. In spite of the devious Epstein prior to even being investigated making frequent $100,000 donations to the Palm Beach Police Department as attempted bribery insurance,[35] once the yearlong police investigation turned over its incriminating evidence, the state attorney’s office was caught stonewalling the case. As early as 2006, the Palm Beach police chief accused the state’s attorney’s office of preferential treatment when seeking lesser charges and dragging its heels to arrest Epstein. That’s because from the outset it was all too obvious that the hidden Illuminati-Zionist hand was busily at work dictating from behind the scenes what would unfold at every twisted, sinister turn.

In late December 2014 then 31 years old underage victim Virginia Roberts-Giuffre filed a lawsuit against not only Epstein but also accused Epstein’s lead attorney, close friend and frequent Lolita Express flier Alan Dershowitz of having sex with her a half dozen times in various settings,[36] on board the 727 as well as on sex slave island among the sex offender’s other stateside owned estates.[37] All Dershowitz would admit was once vacationing with his wife at Epstein’s Florida mansion. But the fact that Dershowitz’s name appeared numerous times on the infamous flightlogs to the Virgin Island mansion[38] had the notorious powerhouse attorney who’s turning 80 this year scrambling to defend both his reputation and legacy. Despite Giuffre’s attorneys dropping a defamation suit against Dershowitz in 2016, his sex crime accuser and her lawyers steadfastly dispute Dershowitz’s feeble denials, and a heavy dark cloud of controversial doubt still hangs over the aging lawyer so famous for his aggressive courtroom tactics.[39]

And strangely enough, the diehard liberal Dershowitz who’s always been such a loyal Hillary-Obama supporter has suddenly switched gears and been fiercely defending Trump during Deep State’s “fake Russian collusion” inquisition to overthrow the sitting president.[40] Why? Because Trump certainly has the dirty goods on Dershowitz who wants to avoid going down in Trump’s alleged pending major pedo roundup. But more on that later.

Virginia Roberts-Giuffre filed charges, bravely going public with her detailed account of how in 1999 Ghislaine Maxwell recruited her as a 15-year old Trump Mar-a-Lago employee, over the next three years pressuring her into a life of sexual bondage as one of Epstein's sex slaves, forced to not only have sex with Epstein but his high roller friends like Alan Dershowitz as well as British royal Prince Andrew.[41] Virginia Giuffre stated in her court papers that she had sex with Andrew three times in New York, London and on Epstein's Caribbean Island. In 2015 fear of reprisal from the billionaire and his crime cabal friends had her fearing for her life.[42] According to Virginia's aunt, just prior to the court allegations in Florida, Virginia fled to hide out in Colorado. Giuffre is reportedly happily married to an Australian man with three children now.

Roberts-Giuffre's court filing specified that Jeffrey Epstein made sure his underage sex slaves provided detailed descriptions of all their sexual encounters with the world's most famous and powerful politicians, businessmen, foreign dignitaries and world leaders in order to potentially blackmail them.[43] This of course along with collected hardcore evidence from the hidden cameras has long been the Modus Operandi deployed by the planetary controllers to buy insurance for longevity in getting away with their most despicable, vile crimes on earth while totally controlling their puppet slave class that remains forever under their dictating thumb.

Prior to Epstein, among other US slave masters deploying this same shady, despicable, Luciferian game misusing children as pedo bait to entrap and compromise duped puppets were none other than the half century G-man pedophile transvestite himself - J. Edgar Hoover and Trump's mentor ruthless attorney Roy Cohn… two early diabolically intertwined kingpins, each running their sexual blackmail schemes with Israeli links.[44] [45] Of course for decades the

Cohn and Hoover perversions were kept under thinly veiled wraps.[46] Hoover himself was controlled by the mob that made sure to keep tabs on the FBI director's kinky little, not-so-secret habits. Hence, Hoover in turn protected the mafia by pretending and denying that it ever existed. And America's cesspool that's been growing for a very long time has morphed into today's Deep State swamp.

Right after *Politico* published its 2014 New Year's Eve bombshell making Virginia Roberts-Giuffre's Florida lawsuit public,[47] from the World Economic Forum in Davos, Switzerland, Prince Andrew vehemently denied having sex with underage girls. Flanked by the President of the Royal Academy of Engineering Professor Dame Ann Dowling, the Earl of York was loyally defended, called a "true beacon as an ambassador for UK trade and enterprise."[48] Because a photo in 2010 had surfaced of Andrew accompanying the registered sex offender soon after Epstein's release from his Palm Beach jail cell, the prince's association with the convicted pedophile embarrassed the royal family enough to force Andrew to step down from his official role as ambassador for UK trade and publicly cut the child sex trafficker off. But the prince's close ties with his pimping procurer and pedophile herself Ghislaine were never severed and they remain the best of friends.[49] No charges have ever been brought against her or any British royals because their pedophilic ways have always allowed them to live comfortably above the law.[50]

Whenever public figures are caught in scandals, their mantra is always to simply deny, deny, and more deny, ensuring they bring out all their heavy guns vilifying the accusers while accolades of greatness get showered on the "unfairly maligned" accused. Similar to the Vatican, for decades the royals of the British Commonwealth and European aristocracy have busily fought and suppressed exposure of their connection to global child sex slavery trafficking.[51] Case in point - as far back as 1964 10 Native American children attending an abusive Catholic school in British Columbia disappeared, last seen in the charge of Queen Elizabeth and husband Prince Philip that they have yet to answer for.[52] Just prior to their murderous hit on Diana,[53] it's been speculated that Princess Di was planning to expose the British royal family for being the Satan worshipping pedophiles they are.[54] So it's no surprise that the queen's second, less ugly looking son would remain immune from all consequence.

Returning to the "good" Harvard law professor, when Dershowitz' name surfaced as a frequent flyer on the Lolita Express, in an immediate interview with *American Lawyer* he insisted he's always been a faithful husband of 28 years to his wife who he claimed always traveled with him.[55] Yet while flying with Epstein, the flightlog records clearly show his wife not once ever accompanied him. Another blatant discrepancy was his statement that Epstein was a mere "professional" acquaintance, nothing close to being a personal friend. Because the philanthropic Epstein was a financial donor to Harvard, and since Clinton's former Treasury Secretary, yet another Lolita flyer Larry Summers,[56] was such a close personal friend of Epstein's, while Summers was Harvard president, Dersh claims his only "job related" association with Epstein was raising money for his and his boss' venerable Ivy League institution… such a blatant pack of CYA damage control lies!

Records totally contradict this bogus contention indicating that Dershowitz knew and flew with the billionaire pedophile on numerous occasions as early as 1997. The fast talking lawyer when interviewed by *Gawker* explained that he suddenly recalled in 1997 flying to Epstein's friend's birthday party also attended by (Mossad linked) former Israeli Prime Minister Shimon Peres and ex-astronaut-Senator John Glenn. Such sharp selective recall proves he didn't teach at Harvard all those years for nothing. Yet the Dersh unequivocally lied again denying he ever had sex with any young woman. Sounds vaguely familiar to yet another infamous frequent Epstein flyer named Bill.

Regarding that brief, "strictly professional" acquaintanceship between Epstein and Dershowitz, during Epstein's "pre-pedophile" arrest days back in 2003, attorney-author Dershowitz in a *Vanity Affair* interview unabashedly boasted:

I'm on my 20th book… The only person outside my immediate family that I send drafts to is Jeffrey.[57]

That first name basis sounds not nearly so professional as personal and chummy. Yet when *Gawker* confronted him on this apparent discrepancy, Dershowitz backslid, admitting:

Epstein was a friend with whom I talked about ideas. We never discussed women or his social life.[58]

Yet they flew together a bunch of times surrounded by scantily clad little girl sex slaves on board while en route to Orgy Island. But like "honest" Bill, Dershowitz "never did have sex" with any of those girls, say Jeffrey's favorite pedo-pals.

Despite such strong evidence that he too participated in Epstein sex crimes, Alan Dershowitz was allowed to lead the best legal dream team Mossad blackmail money could buy. Despite all the proven facts surrounding this case, the Dershowitz dream team successfully "convinced" the US Attorney for the Southern District of Florida to neither charge Epstein nor any of his pimp co-conspirators with sex trafficking underage girls across state lines, and of course nor dare prosecute any of the other frequent flying VIP child molesters.[59] Through the notorious non-prosecution deal, Dershowitz, Prince Andrew, the Clintons and the rest of the famous pedophiles in effect were all guaranteed legal immunity. Though Dershowitz' name was conspicuously absent from all sweetheart deal documents protecting all above-the-law perps, the civil case that victim Virginia Roberts-Giuffre filed did accuse Dersh-bagging his own immunity, a blatant conflict of interest violation.

In revenge against Roberts-Giuffre's accusations, Dershowitz promptly countersued vowing to have her attorneys disbarred. Amidst all the controversy, in defense of Mr. Pro-Israel, a Times of Israel gala in NYC including Shimon Peres rewarded Alan Dershowitz with the "Defender of Israel" award.[60] You can see how the Zionist-Mossad wagons were circling to desperately defend their own… criminal operation. But Virginia Roberts' attorneys Brad Edwards and Paul Cassell beat Dershowitz to the punch, firing off a defamation suit of their own.[61] In the end, both sides agreed to drop their litigation against each other in April 2016.[62]

However a short time later, Giuffre and her legal team were at it again, filing another lawsuit this time against only Ghislaine Maxwell for defamation of character against Virginia for Maxwell publicly calling Giuffre "a liar" after outing Maxwell's criminal involvement in the Mossad blackmail operation.[63] As Epstein's longtime girlfriend and closest partner-in-crime, Maxwell recruited Giuffre at age 15 as a Trump Mar-a-Lago $9 an hour towel girl. For the first time, the judge in the case even ruled that Epstein would be required to take the witness stand, testify and answer questions under oath from his victims' attorneys.[64] Though the Virginia Roberts-Giuffre case against Ghislaine was set to go to trial in May 2017, as so often occurs at the last minute, an undisclosed, out of court settlement was reached, [65] confirming more Mossad-Epstein-Maxwell-Deep State hush money effectively silenced the now somewhat wealthy Virginia Giuffre. Of course after all her years of trauma and stress trying to seek justice in a broken, unjust system, no amount of money can compensate for what she has endured. And so on and on this corrosively corrupt legal game goes, the pedo-perps continue dodging every bullet, never paying for their crimes but only for their continued freedom at only a drop-in-the-bucket price to them and their unlimited coffers.

Ghislaine Maxwell, Sarah Kellen, Lesley Groff, and Natalya Malyshev are among the handful of women that the jet setting financier employed from 1997 to 2006, working to recruit underage girls as the victims' pimping handlers. Maxwell and Kellen were also accused of having sexually abused their sex slaves but the infamous federal plea bargain granted them full immunity from all charges. Additionally, Maxwell allegedly forced victims to engage in lesbian acts with her as well as stored child pornography photos of her victims on her computer.[66] Yet apparently due to the Maxwell family name and its deep Mossad connection, she was given a free pass and to this day remains a free woman never held accountable for her major criminal role in the Mossad blackmail operation.

Taking a closer look at that family name and Ghislaine's father in particular, considerable circumstantial evidence suggests the heavily indebted billion dollar pension swindler faked his own death and fled to unknown parts somewhere in South America.[67] To avert complications resulting from an autopsy showing a murdered victim in November 1991, most likely Maxwell's paid double found floating in the Canary Island water without saltwater in his lungs (ruling out drowning as cause of death), the irascible clever crook could have arranged through his high-end ties with Israel a quick Jewish Mount Olive burial. Daddy Maxwell also mentioned on more than one occasion just prior to his alleged death how he was planning to pull a disappearing act in order to escape the fraud charges and debtor's prison fast closing in on him. With his stolen fortune and new identity, ample speculation portends that double agent Maxwell smart may have helped fund his daughter and Epstein's perverted criminal Mossad operation.[68] His larger-than-life Jewish State funeral reflected his Zionist importance.

Another Epstein victim turned employed victimizer and criminal accomplice is Nadia Marcinkova, who at one time worked as the sex trafficker's Gulfstream G-H pilot. Epstein refers to Nadia as his own "Yugoslavian sex slave" [69] after having literally purchased her at age 14 from her parents in the Balkans.[70] Pedo-boy also hired Nadia as his sometime plaything used for lesbian dildo strap-on entertainment while Nadia raped underage girls, per one graphic legal affidavit, all for masturbating boss' perverse pleasures.[71] It turns out that Nadia and the Hebrew speaking, alleged 9/11 lead terrorist Mohammad Atta were both trained to fly airplanes at the same time and place - Lantana Airport near Palm Beach, reportedly used for CIA and Mossad operations including drug smuggling from the nearby Bahamas and Caribbean into Florida.[72] Like all of Epstein's hired hands, Nadia was never ever questioned by the police, receiving full immunity with Epstein's plea bargain. Going by her other surname Marcinko and holding FAA licenses, Nadia has since reinvented herself as a clean-cut, wholesome internet aviatrix active on YouTube and Facebook as a flight instructor pilot with quite a celebrity following.[73] She's still flying free as a bird because she knows too much as both victim and perp about the Mossad blackmail game.

Another major scumbag in the Epstein child sex trafficking ring is one Jean-Luc Brunel, the model agency owner of MC2. According to a former bookkeeper at Brunel's agency, young underage girls from South America, Europe and the former Soviet republics were personally delivered to Epstein as MC2 models via Brunel who was a frequent guest at Epstein residences.[74] Per the flightlog manifests, Brunel and his underage girls, many of whom did not speak English, often traveled on Epstein's planes. The MC2 bookkeeper confirmed that in 2005 Brunel and his model agency received a million dollars from Epstein. Though holding an 85% share of the agency, Brunel works mostly in the capacity as a model scout for MC2 around the world. Jean-Luc Brunel has a longtime criminal reputation in the fashion industry for drugging and raping underage girls as featured in a *60 Minutes* segment from 1988.[75] Even then he was known to be a procurer of underage girls for the right price. Despite all his known predatory crimes, Epstein's longtime French friend has never been arrested nor been subpoenaed to testify in the Epstein case. His "charmed" life flagrantly living above the law also strongly suggests pedophile protection from the planetary controllers.

The lawsuits against Epstein just keep coming. Three of his sex trafficking rape victims known in their recent litigation against the registered sex offender as L.M., E.W. and Jane Doe, just last October 2017 were awarded a settlement of $1 million, $2 million and $2.5 million respectively.[76] But for a whole decade two other plaintiffs represented by the same attorney Brad Edwards, have also been trying to challenge Epstein's impunity in a lawsuit charging the federal prosecutors led by Trump's current Secretary of Labor Alexander Acosta for violating the Trafficking Victims Protection Act.[77] It was Acosta in 2007 who allowed the plea bargain agreement for the human trafficking kingpin without informing the plaintiff victims. Their civil rights were violated when prosecutors chose not to try Epstein nor his accomplices for human trafficking and committing hundreds of despicably heinous sex crimes.

Former Epstein chief prosecutor and current US Secretary of Labor Alexander Acosta as the southern Florida district US attorney from 2005 to 2009 oversaw making that sickening sweetheart deal for convicted pedophile Epstein.[78]

Subsequently when the then two underage minors learned of Epstein’s virtual non-sentence nearly a year later, they took Epstein and his prosecutors to federal court charging that their rights had been violated under the 2004 Crime Victims’ Rights Act that requires prosecutors to inform victims of any plea bargained arrangement prior to conviction and sentencing.[79] Obviously had they been lawfully looped in, they never would’ve agreed to Epstein’s cushy deal. Uncovering letters between Acosta’s US Attorney’s office and Epstein’s legal defense team, the victims’ lawyers accurately contend that a conspiracy to conceal vital information not to prosecute took place between the government and Epstein attorneys.

After signing off on such a sweet arrangement for a sex slave trafficker and child rapist hundreds of times over, then reacting to the flak once word of the ridiculous deal publicly caught traction, attorney Alexander Acosta defensively wrote in a 2011 letter:

Our judgment in this case, based on the evidence known at the time, was that it was better to have a billionaire serve time in jail, register as a sex offender and pay his victims restitution than risk a trial with a reduced likelihood of success.[80]

Acosta’s bogus rationale claiming the risk that Epstein might walk if brought to trial is at best a feeble attempt to justify his accomplice role while willfully subverting justice to let Epstein do exactly what Acosta claims he was most afraid of - letting the pedophile trafficker walk. The wimpy Alexander described the many months of negotiations prior to the September 2007 non-prosecution agreement as:

A yearlong assault on the prosecution and the prosecutors. I use the word assault intentionally, as the defense in this case was more aggressive than any which I, or the prosecutors in my office, had previously encountered.[81]

The pit-bullish Dershowitz gang included Kenneth Starr, chief investigator from the Clinton-Lewinsky soap opera who when self-advantageous never fails to evoke the religious high moral ground yet in the next breath claims he's more than happy to have gotten a pedophile-trafficker off.[82] [83] Other hotshot aces in the hole were Florida trial lawyer Roy Black and star attorney Gerald Lefcourt among others.[84] Dershowitz and Lefcourt's letter to Acosta's office prior to their successful plea bargain emphasized Epstein's super close ties to Bill and Hillary Clinton, touting how the billionaire pedophile "co-founded" the infamous Clinton Foundation,[85] accused by philanthropy law expert Charles Ortel of being "the largest unprosecuted fraud in history**.**"[86] Speaking of which, a whistleblower at a Swiss bank has revealed that Jeffrey Epstein used his Swiss bank account to send Bill Clinton $3.5 million shortly after his pedophilia probe began in 2005.[87]

When presidents are outed in any blackmail pedophile operation as Clinton's predecessor Bush senior was in the Franklin scandal a decade and a half earlier, powerful pedophiles always get away with raping their child sex slave victims. Not once have they been properly charged or prosecuted. And for his part as a good little lawbreaking Deep State robot, less than a decade later Alexander Acosta would be rewarded with an invitation to join the Trump administration cabinet as America's labor secretary. It appears obvious that Acosta was ordered by the powers-that-shouldn't-be to accept the plea bargain deal authored by Epstein's infamous lead lawyer Dershowitz.[88]

Aside from dictating the detailed terms of this plea bargain agreement in this complete mockery of justice, the billionaire defense team also explicitly instructed Acosta to break the law by not notifying the victimized plaintiffs about their dirty little secret deal. So a compromised Acosta knowingly violated existing laws as it was almost a year later before the two girls finally learned of this gross travesty of justice. Per the *Palm Beach Post*, Acosta's lame excuse subsequently given for not informing the victim plaintiffs was that the "prosecutors feared Epstein and his high-powered attorneys were trying to circumvent the deal."[89] That absurd nonsense makes absolutely no sense at all if you're literally gifting the rapist a get out of jail card. No doubt the Luciferian pedophile elite, the smugly protected Epstein and his dream team were gloating over their victory.

Current prosecutors set to defend Acosta's sweetheart deal have introduced argument that the two victim plaintiffs were complicit in the Epstein crimes since they were later paid by Epstein as still teenagers to procure other underage girls, thereby disqualifying them from protection under the Victims' Rights Act.[90] The morally wrong side of every court motion always seizes upon and exploits any and all legal loopholes rather than consider and weigh both legal as well as ethical perspectives together. Their fake god Lucifer wouldn't have it any other way.

Was Acosta's crucial criminal role in the Epstein case rewarded ten years later by the planetary controllers when sworn in as secretary in charge of all labor that includes forced sexual labor involving global human sex trafficking? Was his selection given his dominion over child sex slavery just more evidence of foxes guarding the henhouse? To this day the ruling pedo elite's nexus of placing controlled puppets in the highest places incudes Epstein's web of intimately tied connections between the Mossad, the CIA, the Clintons, the British royals, Hollywood, President Trump, his labor secretary and countless other far-reaching tentacles. But more on Trump's undeniably close link to Jeffrey Epstein a little later.

The presiding judge in another three year old current pending case - Palm Beach County Circuit Judge Donald

Hafele, unsurprisingly also appears to be protecting Epstein. In 2015 a lower court dismissed attorney Brad Edwards' case against Epstein on a technicality that later was overturned by a Florida Supreme Court decision in February 2017.[91] Edwards is charging Jeffrey Epstein with "malicious prosecution" stemming from Epstein's 2009 lawsuit that Edwards contends was intended to intimidate him and his two clients who were victims in the 2008 Epstein conviction.

But in December 2017 Judge Hafele not only agreed to delay the trial until March 2018 in order to give Epstein's attorneys more time to prepare, in and of itself a decision favoring the pedophile, the judge also announced that when it comes to:

> *… Graphic, sexual questions, the likelihood is that I will not allow them into evidence*.[92]

To not permit evidence of a graphic sexual nature in a case involving an already convicted pedophile's crimes is totally absurd. But then justice not once has ever been served when it comes to the world's most powerful pedophiles ever receiving fair punishment for their countless sordid crimes against children… never. That pathetic reality must change.

Trying to appear fair and objective, the Palm Beach County judge rationalized the trial delay till spring 2018 with the following statement:

> *Under the circumstances of this unusual and relatively complex case, the court finds that there are simply too many significant, lengthy motions that are pending and need to be heard prior to December 5, 2017, the date that the trial was originally scheduled to commence.[93]*

On the positive side, the Palm Beach County courtroom with Judge Hafele presiding will be the trial setting where for the first time in his criminally perverse, wicked life, the now 65-year old, kiddie diddling senior citizen might actually have to answer for his crimes after all.[94] Additionally, Judge Hafele is permitting evidence and testimony from not only the three victims from last October's settlement but also from Virginia Roberts-Giuffre and others that Brad Edwards has also represented in previous lawsuits.[95] Additionally, the jury will hear about the infamous 2007 plea bargain deal, the contents of which have never been released. Though Bill Clinton, Prince Andrew and even Donald Trump are listed as potential witnesses, Edwards's lawyer said they likely will not be called in to testify.[96] Strangely, Alexander Acosta's name has yet to come up as a witness, yet he was responsible for breaking the law that permitted Epstein to go unprosecuted resulting in the subsequent miscarriage of justice. That alone may be both telling and troubling although the unlawful Acosta deal is at the heart of the other current pending case.

Existing federal laws then and now specify that human traffickers who commit aggravated sexual abuse, which the Epstein guilty parties repeatedly perpetrated, stipulate a lifetime prison sentence.[97] Aside from child sex trafficking, engaging in sex with girls aged 12-17 falls under federal offense codes that normally carry minimum sentences of ten to fifteen years in prison. Yet when sexually abusing underage girls gets the US gymnastics team doctor up to 175 years in prison while the Mossad operative gets his hand slapped,[98] something's definitely wrong with that picture. Despite enslaving and raping hundreds of child victims, if you're an elitist 1%-er financed by Mossad, the Greater Israel Project and US Empire,[99] you get off completely and are issued a standard get-out-of-jail card. The mere slap on Jeffrey's wrist a decade ago allowing all his perps involved in his criminal operation to walk away Scot free is the grossest, most obscene travesty of justice imaginable.

The current pending case in Florida Southern District federal court involving the original two victim plaintiffs' civil suit initially filed by attorney Brad Edwards back in July 2008 upon learning of the secret non-prosecution deal will award no financial damages to the victims but will determine if the victims' rights were violated. And if the judge rules in favor, it could reopen the criminal case for long overdue prosecution. Ten years after the fact, by design shamefully stonewalled in a quagmire of the corrupt legal system always aiding, abetting and protecting high profile pedophiles, through tenacious attorney Brad Edwards, these same two longstanding victims are still awaiting justice against their virtually unpunished abuser.

In retaliation for their lawsuit, Jeffrey Epstein filed a 2009 countersuit against Edwards,[100] [101] bogusly claiming that Edwards was attempting to exploit an easy funding source for Edwards' law firm founded by the infamous Fort Lauderdale attorney Scott Rothstein who in November 2009 was caught operating the state of Florida's biggest Ponzi scheme ever.[102] The now disgraced and barred multi-felon Rothstein is serving a 50-year sentence for fraud after conning a slew of investors out of $1.4 billion claiming they could buy into Rothstein's wealth of phantom settlements from supposed whistleblower, sexual harassment and other cases.[103] [104] The scam operation resulted in over two dozen convictions of fellow attorneys, bankers, cops, mobsters, friends and relatives. In 2012 Epstein was forced to drop his vindictive suit against Edwards for lack of evidence that Edwards himself had any involvement whatsoever in Rothstein's mega-criminal enterprise.[105]

Also ensnared in the Rothstein scandal was former Florida Governor Charlie Crist in an apparent biofuel company scam he partnered with the Ponzi kingpin, according to investigative journalist Timothy Holmseth.[106] Moreover, back in 2009 Holmseth began unearthing a major international baby sales and child sex trafficking operation in Florida involving Rothstein and his seedy associates, in criminal cahoots with the FBI, CIA, the Florida Department of Children and Family Services, Florida Attorney General Pam Bondi, US embassies abroad using fake church dossiers and medical records along with a host of other major players.[107] So one has to wonder, is it purely a bizarre coincidence that in 2008 while Brad Edwards represented the two underage victims who were never informed of Dershowitz and Acosta's illicit secret deal to protect Mossad operative Epstein that Edwards for a brief time happened to be working at Scott Rothstein's law firm in view of Rothstein's criminality that include Rothstein's own direct links to child trafficking? Food for thought.

So the stage has been set. Edwards' current lawsuit against Epstein for malicious prosecution is scheduled for trial in March 2018 with the claim that the billionaire pedophile sought the bogus earlier lawsuit against him out of revenge for Edwards filing the 2008 case in federal court seeking prosecution on behalf of the two plaintiffs for violating the Crime Victims' Rights Act.[108] This is the separate case that Brad Edwards and Paul Cassell have been pursuing in federal court for a decade on behalf of Jane Doe's 13 and 14 once they learned they weren't consulted prior to Epstein's sweetheart deal made back in September 2007.[109] Last August 2017 the two attorneys Edwards and Cassell submitted their final pleas to US District Judge Kenneth Marra in hopes that the 2007 plea deal will be thrown out so that a new investigation can be launched and the case reopened for prosecution. Last September the federal prosecutors got their chance to defend and justify Acosta's actions ten years earlier. The stakes in this rare case against the federal government are sky high. In their argument to uphold the 14-year old Crime Victims' Rights Act, Edwards and Cassell wrote that if the judge dismisses their lawsuit:

> … *Then the government will never have to give* ***any*** *information in* ***any*** *case to* ***any*** *victim.*[110]

And that would render the Crime Victims' Rights Act null and void. Yet if the law was upheld by Judge Marra's decision, Miami hotshot lawyer and member of Epstein's dream team Roy Black insists that his former client's due process would be robbed.[111] How about the virginity and innocence of childhood that scores of underage girls had violently robbed by the rapist who hardly paid for his crime, and the stolen rights of the two victims who were shut out of the secret shady deal that Black and company illegally made with Acosta? How about their rights Mr. Black?

Strengthening the case, previous plea bargain deals have been tossed out later for the exact same reason, failure to inform the victims, except those cases were the result of oversights. Epstein's case was premeditated as Dershowitz explicitly directed Acosta to not let the victims know. Again, per Edwards and Cassell's written court papers:

> *The undisputed facts of this case prove that, rather than forthrightly discharging its obligations to numerous child sexual assault victims, the government chose to enter into a secret deal with the man who had victimized them.*[112]

Acosta's prosecutor team even flagrantly lied in a letter sent to the victims in January 2008, four full months after the plea agreement was signed, bogusly claiming that the case was still under investigation. With the sweetheart deal of a lifetime already a done deal, Acosta's team wrote:

> *This can be a lengthy process and we request your continued patience while we conduct a thorough investigation.*[113]

If Judge Marra makes the only moral and legal correct decision to order federal prosecutors to reopen the investigation and potentially move the case finally to prosecution and trial, correcting the feds' egregious behavior over a decade earlier, it would establish a national precedent but most importantly be a fatal blow to the international pedo crime cabal. Apparently still stalling for time, Judge Marra has yet to make his momentous decision. Meanwhile, the world is watching and waiting.

If the so called US justice system was actually a real justice system, it would throw out the horrendous 2007 non-prosecution/immunity deal and finally try Epstein on child sex trafficking charges as well as raping and sodomizing hundreds of young girls in addition to throwing out the immunity deal to Epstein's pimping accomplices and the dozens of powerful pedophile patrons caught on camera and prosecute all of them for their countless child sex crimes. And then go after the Mossad, Israel, and the CIA-Vatican-Rothschild deep state alliance that essentially runs the global pedophilia trafficking network. But in all of human history, the ruling elite's puppets have never been brought to justice, much less their ruling handlers. Trump's so called war on the pedophilic deep state must produce results. Again the mantra "seeing is believing" comes readily to mind.

The fact remains that not one big name pedophile has ever been historically indicted, much less ever served serious time. The worst child sodomizing offenders at the top of the pedo-food chain are chronically allowed to live out their long lives till their natural deaths despite the tons of incriminating evidence flimsily concealed protecting them. Their years of Satanic beastly crimes are simply tolerated so that the Sir Jimmy Saviles[114] (biggest pedophile in UK history as celebrated legendary entertainer and pimp for the royals) and Sir Edward Heaths[115] (former UK prime minister) of the world don't have to be bothered with facing any real consequences for all their ungodly sins during their lifetimes. And in the case of Epstein, the Podestas, the

Clintons and Bushes, if this longstanding unbroken status quo prevails, those monsters will never be held accountable either, despite repeatedly raping, murdering and destroying millions and millions of children's lives.

The pedophilia cabal that from the get-go financed Epstein's Mossad-CIA linked blackmail operation continues into a second decade merely paying off dozens of his underage victims in order to avoid prosecution that would ultimately force full public exposure of the Illuminati-Zionist elite's diabolical machination that maintains absolute global control over all its pedophile puppets in high places. Because far too much is at stake here, the planetary controllers' Luciferian strategy is to simply keep feeding unlimited hush money to continue successfully silencing Epstein's never ending supply of past victims - anything to prevent the dark ugly truth about their massive global blackmail control system from ever seeing the full light of day. So it's up to us citizens of the world to get informed by arming ourselves with the truth and quickly reach critical mass demanding that justice finally be served. The pedo crime cabal has gotten away with it for way, way, way too long now.

In October and November 2016 just prior to the presidential election, psychiatrist and longtime intelligence operative within the US State Department Steve Pieczenik publicly stated that both Bill and Hillary Clinton are pedophiles having made multiple trips on their buddy's Lolita Express to his Caribbean sex slave island.[116] Pieczenik explained that both the FBI and NYPD possess the necessary evidence discovered on disgraced ex-congressman and fellow convicted pedophile Anthony Weiner's laptop that fully exposes the Bush-Clinton-Obama Deep State perversions, corrosive cronyism and treasonous high crimes long embedded in Washington,[117] since JFK's assassination over a half century ago. Weeks prior to the election, Steve accused Obama and Clintons of pulling off a tyrannical coup and Pieczenik's group of insiders countering it with a "soft coup" of their own via the information war on the internet along with all the *WikiLeaks'* releases.

His second appearance on YouTube comments on the then breaking Clinton sex scandal as further evidence of their counter-coup's success. Weiner, his wife and longtime Hillary aide Huma Abedin, and Clintons all made trips to Epstein's "Orgy Island." In addition to her plethora of high crimes, turns out Hillary has a well-documented history as a sexual predator of underage girls as well.[118] She was caught on video with her longtime lover Huma having sex with a young girl. Law enforcement officials investigating serial rapist Bill Clinton also have the goods on Bill's pedophilia proclivities. For months if not years reports have maintained that authorities are fast closing in on the former president and his partner-in-crime wife. Yet the world still waits for their turn behind bars.

Epstein is the most infamous case in recent years incriminatingly linking the Clintons, Anthony Weiner, his estranged wife Huma[119] and our current president. After Epstein was investigated in 2005, indicted in 2006, illegally granted the deal of the century in 2007 and convicted in 2008, the sex ring ringleader was forced to register as a sex offender.[120] His compound on his private Caribbean island Little St. James was the getaway destination for countless high profile pedophiles who "partied" having sex with child slaves with hidden blackmail cameras always running in every room. In addition to the Clintons and Weiners, Alan Dershowitz, Prince Andrew and Oscar-winner Kevin Spacey are all known to have traveled on Epstein's private Boeing 727.[121] Other notable Lolita Express-Sex Slave Island partakers include a motley crew of former Israeli Prime Minister (1999-2001) Ehud Barak, physicist Stephen Hawking, rocker Kurt Cobain's widow Courtney Love and actor Chris Tucker. Just one year after his legal hand slap, in 2010 Epstein and his girl Maxwell were both invited to daughter Chelsea Clinton's wedding.[122] So much for the disinfo propaganda insisting that the Clintons abruptly cut off all contact with the registered sex offender once he was arrested in 2006. Like Prince Andrew, old pedo ties to Jeffrey Epstein die hard.

With more lawsuits still showing up on the books, yet another new civil case was filed against Epstein and his fellow child sex traffickers that was scheduled for a pretrial conference on March 9th, 2017.[123] But that case likely faded from the media resulting in yet another sleazy quiet undisclosed payoff. Police and judicial records document that Epstein had unlawful sex with at least 40 or more girls under age 18 and has been allowed to simply pay dozens of them off with confidentially sealed financial out-of-court settlements.[124] Estimates including Epstein's teenage victims who have chosen to forego legal action number into the hundreds. But the insulated systemic protection supplied by our morally bankrupted legal system shielding Epstein and his high powered pedophile friends like the Clintons from justice for decades on end may potentially be coming to an end.

Recall that Trump promised at the second 2016 presidential debate that when he was in the Oval Office, he'd put Hillary Clinton behind bars, receiving highest marks from millions of debate scorekeepers.[125] On another occasion, Trump alluded to "a lot of legal problems coming up" for Bill over his past Epstein liaisons.[126] Yet once winning the election, the president suddenly backed off, claiming that Hillary "has been through enough."[127] There can be no disputing the fact that Donald Trump and the Clintons were both in tight with the same convicted pedophile buddy Epstein, and clearly ran with the same highbrow New York-Palm Beach crowds.

A 2003 *New York Magazine* article reported that Trump attended a dinner party at Epstein's Big Apple mansion honoring Bill Clinton.[128] Both Trump and Epstein are on record financially donating on more than one occasion to the Clinton machine. And Trump has taken a series of chummy photographs together with the Clintons, one on a boys club golf outing with Bill that included former NYC mayors Rudy Giuliani and Michael Bloomberg,[129] as well as other choice family album pics with the Trumps and Bill Clinton arm and arm and the Donald yukking it up with the Clintons appearing the best of friends not all that many years ago.[130][131]

If President Trump drops the ball on his promise to drain the swamp, starting with the two biggest swamp rats of them all - Bill and Hillary Clinton, we will all definitely know whose side he's really on, and that he's nothing more than a compromised fellow swamp rat himself. And if the Clintons' shady, murderously treasonous, criminal pedophile past doesn't finally catch up to them and land them both in jail, of course it will only mean that "birds of a feather flock together" and status quo continues to permit the earth's most powerful evildoers to enjoy their entire lifetimes living above the law. Trump loyalists will be hard put to defend and explain their crowned champion should he fail to hold the Clintons and their Deep State crime cabal bent on destroying both him and the United States fully accountable.

But also since becoming president, in recent months rumors are a-buzzing over Hillary and McCain often pictured wearing boots and leg casts, allegedly concealing their law enforcement issued ankle bracelets while under house arrest.[132] Meanwhile, one or both of the Podesta brothers are in ill health and reported to be in custody, possibly already awaiting a military tribunal at an expanded wing of Guantanamo Prison.[133] Per last year's Trump signed

December 21st executive order[134] declaring a national emergency, the president is said to have declared an all-out war against the army of Deep State traitors, allegedly rounding up and arresting countless suspects on treason, human rights violations including trafficking while seizing their assets.[135] All this speculative hype including the thousands of sealed indictments has given renewed hope to millions of Americans praying that the rottenest, baddest apples at the top of the predator food chain are fast being delivered to their long-awaited prison cellblocks with their names on them on the newly expanded Guantanamo Row.[136]

But before we get too carried away with our fantasies and wishful thinking, a closer look at the personal history between President Trump and Jeffrey Epstein might explain and even determine the outcome of whether the swamp is actually getting drained. It's public knowledge that the current president was a longtime close friend of pedophile Epstein. In a 2002 *New York Magazine* issue, Trump gave this glowing report on his pedo-pal:

I've known Jeff for fifteen years. Terrific guy… he's a lot of fun to be with. It is even said that he likes beautiful women as much as I do, and many of them are on the younger side. No doubt about it - Jeffrey enjoys his social life.[137]

From this brief but highly revealing account, it's pretty obvious the Donald knew back in 2002 that his longtime bud was in fact a pedophile three whole years before Epstein ever got caught.

What we do know from both media and police records, Epstein's infamous black book contains 14 personal phone numbers belonging to Donald Trump, including his ex-wife Ivana and daughter Ivanka as well as his then future wife Melania.[138] The list of names in his phone book reads like a who's who amongst the mega-elite. To name drop a few:

Prince Bandar of Saudi Arabia, war criminal Tony Blair, former Utah governor and GOP presidential candidate Jon Huntsman, Senator Ted Kennedy, globalist guru-war criminal Henry Kissinger and major political donor heavyweights David Koch and Pepe Fanjul. Under the bizarre heading "Jeffrey" were more power players: Lolita Express flyers Ehud Barak and Alan Dershowitz, John Kerry, former senator turned lobbyist George Mitchell, another VIP lobbyist Thomas Quinn and the late globalist kingpin David Rockefeller[139] as well as another Lolita Express flier Naomi Campbell, Richard Branson, Michael Bloomfield and Dustin Hoffman.[140] Queen Elizabeth, Saudi King Salman as well as Edward and Evelyn de Rothschild are also listed.[141] No doubt the Mossad and Greater Israel Project would love to have all these top-end elitists in their back pocket.

Also records demonstrate that Trump has made phone calls to Epstein, dined and partied at both of the pedophile's Florida and Manhattan mansions, that Epstein has been a regular visitor at Trump's Mar-a-Lago, that is until Trump learned that Epstein sexually assaulted an underage girl at Trump's resort, according to attorney Brad Edwards.[142] Also per a 2009 deposition, Jeffrey's younger brother Mark stated that Trump has also flown on Epstein's infamous plane.[143] The Donald and pedo-pal Epstein of course are mutual friends with fellow alleged pedophile Prince Andrew. From a January 2016 *Vice News* article:

> *Epstein and Maxwell were repeat guests at Mar-A-Lago. In 2000, they hung out there with Prince Andrew, who arrived for vacation on Trump's private plane. That same year, the Palm Beach Post reported that Trump, Epstein, Prince Andrew, and Maxwell were all at a tennis tournament/celebrity event at Mar-A-Lago.*[144]

But the Donald-Jeffrey association may go far deeper, darker and more incriminating than just that. Another bizarre twist hit Trump in the run-up to his 2016 election when yet another alleged underage victim going by the pseudonym Katie Johnson first filed an April lawsuit in California that was thrown out. But then a few months later in June she filed another in New York against both Epstein and then presidential candidate Trump. Johnson accused Trump of raping her repeatedly when she was only 13.[145] One of Epstein's recruiters of underage girls calling herself Tiffany Doe also claimed that there exists corroborating evidence that Tiffany not only furnished Oklahoma runaway Katie Johnson as barely a teen aspiring model fetched fresh from 42nd Street Port Authority to a Trump attended Jeffrey party at the Wexner soon-to-be Epstein's sex mansion where Katie alleges she was raped in violent sexual roleplays by Trump at several of his pedo buddy's soirees in 1993 and 1994. Her account of events from her lawsuit states:

The recruiter suggested that she might become a model if she met the right people at a fashionable party. That was a typical approach used by Epstein's recruiters, who leveraged his high-level contacts with fashion, modelling, photography, travel, political and entertainment figures to entice girls, tweens and teens, according to court records.[146]

Johnson contends that Trump knew she was 13 in 1993 when he raped her at four different parties she attended.[147] At the final party, again an extraction from her lawsuit describes the encounter:

Defendant Trump tied Plaintiff to a bed, exposed himself to Plaintiff, and then proceeded to forcibly rape Plaintiff. During the course of this savage sexual attack, Plaintiff loudly pleaded with Defendant Trump to stop but with no effect. Defendant Trump responded to Plaintiff's pleas by violently striking Plaintiff in the face with his open hand and screaming that he would do whatever he wanted.[148]

At two of these four parties Katie Johnson alleged that Jeffrey Epstein also raped her, once after Trump did his damage. From her lawsuit account Johnson maintains that Epstein penetrated her:

> *… anally and vaginally despite her loud pleas to stop. She stated that Epstein attempted to strike her on the head with his closed fists, while he angrily screamed that he [Epstein], rather than Trump, should have been the one who took the girl's virginity.*[149]

Pettily and egomaniacally enraged over ending up with "sloppy seconds," pig Epstein's sense of entitlement thinking nothing of callously and brutally destroying children's lives provides a psychopathic glimpse into the elite's monstrously demonic, pathological world. As is standard treatment in child abuse cases, per the Johnson lawsuit, both Trump and Epstein separately warned her that if she ever revealed what they did, she and and her family would be "physically harmed if not killed."[150]

Of course when the Katie Johnson bombshell surfaced briefly in 2016 along with all the other charges of sexual harassment from alleged victims, Trump categorically denied any and all sexual impropriety accusations. His spokesman Alan Garten's initial claim was that Trump had no relationship with Epstein, then when confronted with conflicting evidence, Trump "barely knew" him.[151] But with sex allegations still lingering over Trump during his first year as president, in light of an alleged 2016 hush money payoff over a 2006 affair with an adult film actress while married, in October 2017 his White House Press Secretary insisted:

> *All the women who have accused President Trump of sexual harassment are lying.*[152]

With the pretrial hearing of the Katie Johnson case scheduled in mid-December 2016, New York City US District

Judge Ronnie Abrams asserted that she would require both Trump and Epstein to appear in person to testify in her courtroom. But just four days before Election Day, Katie Johnson's sex suit was suddenly dropped, allegedly because she had made up the story.[153] Of course all along the Trump supporters claimed that Johnson was hired by Hillary while the Hillary crowd immediately suspected that Johnson had been secretly paid off or that her life had been threatened. Word subsequently has it that the true reason the lawsuit was cancelled was Katie Johnson's life was indeed threatened by Trump operatives.[154]

Based on a long shared history, we also know that both Trump and Epstein are sexual predators who are sue-happy litigants that do not hesitate to use aggressive threats and the legal system to intimidate and neutralize their adversaries. And it was during a television appearance on *The View* in 2006 that the Donald with his then 24-year old daughter Ivanka claimed if she wasn't his biological kin, he'd be dating her.[155] That along with countless other lecherous statements[156] such as speculating in 1994 over his one-year old daughter's future breasts[157] or the numerous provocative photos of teen Ivanka sitting on daddy's lap,[158] suggesting latent incestualized leanings regardless of whether ever acted on. All of this together seems to indicate and fit a sexual predator profile of a man who habitually and automatically sexualizes females as mere play objects.

Then the plot recently thickened when in response to the Alabama Senate election where sexual allegations of pedophilia were levied against the GOP candidate Roy Moore, Ivanka stated:

There's a special place in hell for people who prey on children.[159]

Then in a December 2017 *Vanity Affair* interview, the feuding White House sacked Steve Bannon poignantly retorted:

What about the allegations about her dad and that 13-year-old?[160] [Referring to Katie Johnson]

Meanwhile, investigative journalist Wayne Madsen chimes in offering the perfect way for Trump to make good on draining the swamp after declaring January human trafficking awareness month:

Trump should start his anti-trafficking campaign by seizing Jeffrey Epstein's planes and Little St James Island. But then, Jeff may release the pics, audio & video of the Wexner mansion from 1994.[161]

Of course Madsen and Bannon are both referring to the civil lawsuits filed in 2016 against both Epstein and then presidential candidate Trump. Aside from the Katie Johnson case, another alleged victim known in court documents as Maria has also accused both the notorious registered sex offender and sitting current president of sodomizing and raping her at the tender age of 12 in 1993 at that same Wexner owned, soon to be Epstein owned pedo party property.[162] Several months earlier Maria had been kidnapped at age 11 on March 19, 1993 in front of a Waterbury, Connecticut pizza shop. Confidential witnesses who knew the Puerto Rican preteen believe that her abductors were part of a child sex trafficking ring supplying children to wealthy pedophiles [like Epstein], a stone's throw away in nearby New York City.[163]

When Madsen attempted to gain a copy of the Waterbury police report on Maria's abduction, the police department referred him to the city's administrative gatekeeper who denied both an interview and access to police records. In 2003 the arrest and conviction of a former mayor for pedophilia caught abusing a pair of Puerto Rican cousins 8- and 10-years old (not unlike Maria in both age and ethnicity) apparently has caused town officials to become extremely guarded and uncooperative regarding inquiries into past cases involving Waterbury and child sex crimes.[164] Turns out the current Waterbury mayor was the pedophile mayor’s police chief. The mafia connections and steep corruption in both the city and state led to conviction of the former Connecticut governor also from Waterbury in 2004. The local politicians’ link to pedophilia and child sex trafficking spooked city officials from even talking about Maria’s disappearance and subsequent victimization as an abducted and trafficked child sex slave. It was the FBI and federal authorities that busted the crimes committed by Waterbury politicians while the city attempted in vain to hide and cover-up its rather long criminal history of pedo skeletons in its closet.

At the time that Katie and Maria filed their lawsuits in 2016, despite initial interest from major media outlets to cover their critically important stories, Madsen contends that MSM was intimidated by Trump Organization legal threats and chose not to report.[165] Of course MSM is in deep with deep state pedophilia and that in and of itself would sufficiently explain why virtually no coverage was given. Whatever the reason, silence descended on the media and the Trump pedophilia issue.[166] But Madsen maintains that Trump henchmen were able to identify Maria and her location and both Maria and Katie received death threats should they pursue their lawsuits against the president-to-be.[167]

For many decades in America lack of moral courage and integrity at the corporate mainstream Mockingbird level has always prohibited any real serious investigation when the media is highly complicit in the pedophilia epidemic itself. The power to harass and destroy the reputations and lives of victims, whistleblowers and honest journalists in order to at all cost conceal the truth from public disclosure is both life threatening and foreboding in a nation that once guaranteed in its Constitution the First Amendment rights of a free press. But in this Luciferian Deep State swamp, sadly those days appear long gone.

Upon release from his jailhouse sleepovers and house arrest, back in the Big Apple in early 2011 a flippant, cocky Jeffrey Epstein wanted to inform the world that he's not the demonized sick pervert he's been made out to be, in his mind he's simply a misunderstood, much maligned victim of society's ignorance. In a transparently warped attempt to reeducate us about him being a harmless "Level 3 sex offender" (deemed highest at-risk to reoffend) who never presented a serious threat nor damaged any of his scores of accusers, Epstein insists that he is not a sexual predator:

I'm not a sexual predator, I'm an 'offender.' It's the difference between a murderer and a person who steals a bagel.[168]

After his sordid criminality, to dare maintain the brazen audacity to pretend his atrocious rape crimes with girls as young as 12 and his child sex trafficking blackmail operation was nothing but the harmless indiscretions of a bagel thief is the epitome of psychopathic arrogance and delusional grandiosity characteristic of a privileged and protected prince among his Luciferian masters.

During the ensuing decade since Epstein's conviction, the seedy truth has continued slowly trickling out, exposing the dark, twisted, perverse sex slave trafficking operation that Epstein and his bevy of co-conspirators recruited child victims as sex slaves from poor neighborhoods in Florida, New York, South America, Europe and Russia, including three 12-year old girls from France as a birthday gift.[169] Incredibly, his procuring pimp co-conspirators and scores of powerful pedo patrons were all granted immunity.[170] For well over a decade Epstein and his hired handlers freely trafficked victims to his sex slave island and his other residential palaces to serve the elite's pedophile crowd listed in the billionaire's infamous black book.[171] Contained therein are names of scores of the most powerful politicians from presidents to prime ministers, royalty, judges, CEOs, bankers and entertainers, all for blackmailing purposes so that the Luciferian planetary controllers through US Empire and Israel could continue unchallenged their absolute authority and control over the geopolitics chessboard. But their reign of terror and destruction is fast coming to an end now that the truth - piece by piece - has been more fully exposed than at any previous time in human history. The crime cabal is going down! Hollywood as its cultural media brainwashing epicenter of the predatory Luciferian cesspool is covered in the next chapter.

---

[1] Israel Shahak and Michel Chossudovsky, "'Greater Israel': The Zionist Plan for the Middle East," *Global Research*, March 3, 2013, https://www.globalresearch.ca/greater-israel-the-zionist-plan-for-the-middle-east/5324815.

[2] James Petras, "Israel Buys the US Congress: Sabotaging the US-Iran Peace Negotiations," *Global Research*, November 1, 2013, https://www.globalresearch.ca/israel-buys-the-us-congress-sabotaging-the-us-iran-peace-negotiations/5356541.

[3] William Guy Carr, *Pawns in the Game* (Willowdale, Ontario: Gadsby-Leek Co., 1955), "The International Conspiracy Introduction," *bibliotecapleyades.net*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/pawns_inthegame/pawns_00.htm.

[4] Landon Thomas, Jr., "Jeffrey Epstein: International Moneyman of Mystery," *New York Magazine*, 2002, http://nymag.com/nymetro/news/people/n_7912/.

[5] Preston James, "The Hidden History of the Incredibly Evil Khazarian Mafia," *Veterans Today*, March 8, 2015, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2015/03/08/the-hidden-history-of-the-incredibly-evil-khazarian-mafia/.

[6] Alexander Azadgan, “A Brief Summary of the Rothschild’s Crime Syndicate’s in the Middle East and Elsewhere,” *katehon.com*, September 13, 2016, http://katehon.com/article/brief-summary-rothschild-crime-syndicates-activities-middle-east-and-elsewhere.

[7] Timothy Fitzpatrick, “Trump Controlled by Mossad,” *fitzinfo.wordpress.com*, October 29, 2016, https://fitzinfo.wordpress.com/2016/10/29/trump-controlled-by-mossad/.

[8] Belinda Robinson, “”’He’s Declaring War on 1.5 billion Moslems’ Iran, Pope, Russia and China Warn Trump over Jerusalem,” *Express*, December 7, 2017, https://www.express.co.uk/news/world/888734/World-War-3-Donald-Trump-anger-Muslims-declare-Jerusalem-capital-Israel-Turkey-Iran-warn.

[9] Vicky Ward, “The Talented Mr. Epstein,” *Vanity Fair*, March 2003, https://web.archive.org/web/20150612144453/http://www.vanityfair.com/news/2003/03/jeffrey-epstein-200303.

[10] Vicky Ward, https://web.archive.org/web/20150612144453/http://www.vanityfair.com/news/2003/03/jeffrey-epstein-200303.

[11] Vicky Ward, https://web.archive.org/web/20150612144453/http://www.vanityfair.com/news/2003/03/jeffrey-epstein-200303.

[12] Shaurya Arya, “Bill Clinton Raping 13-year old: Russia in Possession of Secret Israeli Intelligence Video, Report,” *Morning News USA*, October 17, 2016, https://www.morningnewsusa.com/bill-clinton-raping-13-year-old-russia-possession-secret-israeli-intelligence-video-23113179.html.

[13] Nick Denton, “Teen Loving Epstein’s Own Client,” *Gawker*, July 2, 2008, http://gawker.com/5021581/teen-loving-epsteins-own-client.

[14] “Epstein, Abercrombie, Sex Slaves, US Military, Mossad,” *Aangirfan.com*, January 26, 2015, http://aanirfan.blogspot.co.id/2015/01/epstein-abercrombie-sex-slaves-us.html.

[15] Nick Denton, http://gawker.com/5021581/teen-loving-epsteins-own-client.

[16] Bob Fitrakis, “The Wexner War,” *Free Press*, August 1, 2003, https://freepress.org/article/wexner-war.

[17] Israel Shahak and Michel Chossudovsky, https://www.globalresearch.ca/greater-israel-the-zionist-plan-for-the-middle-east/5324815.

[18] Eli Lake, “Bush Visit may Boost Olmert,” *The Sun*, May 13, 2008, http://www.nysun.com/foreign/bush-visit-may-boost-olmert/76303/.

[19] Landon Thomas Jr., http://nymag.com/nymetro/news/people/n_7912/index1.html.

[20] Landon Thomas Jr., http://nymag.com/nymetro/news/people/n_7912/index1.html.

[21] Bob Fitrakis, https://freepress.org/article/wexner-war.

[22] Robert David Steele interview, "Robert Steele: The Republican Party will Self-Destruct within Two Years," *forbiddenknowledgetv.net*, January 23, 2017, http://forbiddenknowledgetv.net/robert-steele-the-republican-party-will-self-destruct-within-2-years/.

[23] Spencer Peterson, "Every Property Owned by Sleazy Financier Jeffrey Epstein," *Curbed*, January 9, 2015, https://www.curbed.com/2015/1/9/10004040/jeffrey-epstein-property-real-estate-holdings.

[24] Richard Pollack, "Exclusive: Bill Clinton still Silent about Flights on Pedophile's Sex Plane," *The Daily Caller*, November 19, 2017, http://dailycaller.com/2017/11/19/exclusive-bill-clinton-still-silent-about-flights-on-pedophiles-sex-plane.

[25] "Source: FBI has Evidence Hillary Visited 'Orgy Island,'" *World News Daily*, November 4, 2016, http://www.wnd.com/2016/11/source-fbi-has-evidence-hillary-visited-orgy-island/.

[26] Kaja Whitehouse and Priscilla DeGregory, "'Sex Slave' Wants Epstein to Explain how Prince Andrew Met her," *New York Post*, March 9, 2017, https://nypost.com/2017/03/09/sex-slave-wants-epstein-to-explain-how-prince-andrew-allegedly-met-her/.

[27] "Epstein Flight Manifests," contributed by John Cook, *Gawker.com*, https://www.documentcloud.org/documents/1507315-epstein-flight-manifests.html.

[28] Tyler Durden, "Former Secret Service Agent Threatens to Reveal Details about Bill Clinton and Epstein's 'Lolita Express,'" *Zero Hedge*, November 25, 2017, https://www.zerohedge.com/news/2017-11-24/former-secret-service-agent-threatens-reveal-new-details-about-clinton-epstein-conne.

[29] Nick Bryant, "Flight Logs Put Clinton, Dershowitz on Pedophile Billionaire's Sex Jet," *Gawker.com*, January 22, 2015, http://gawker.com/flight-logs-put-clinton-dershowitz-on-pedophile-billio-1681039971.

[30] "The Clinton Body Count," *What Really Happened*, http://www.whatreallyhappened.com/RANCHO/POLITICS/BODIES.php#axzz56Lmyfxbb.

[31] Joachim Hagopian, “As Treasonous Bush-Clinton-Obama Pedo Cabal Dynasty Gets Exposed, Desperate Elite Steps up War against Humanity,” *sott.net*, March 31, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/346940-As-Treasonous-Bush-Clinton-Obama-Pedo-Cabal-Dynasty-Gets-Exposed-Desperate-Elite-Steps-Up-War-against-Humanity.

[32] Gregg Jarrett, “Did the FBI and the Justice Department, Plot to Clear Hillary Clinton, Bring down Trump?” *Fox News*, December 16, 2017, http://www.foxnews.com/opinion/2017/12/15/gregg-jarrett-did-fbi-and-justice-department-plot-to-clear-hillary-clinton-bring-down-trump.html.

[33] J.K. Trotter, “Billionaire Pervert Jeffrey Epstein and his Famous Friends: A Primer,” *Gawker*, January 22, 2015, http://gawker.com/billionaire-pervert-jeffrey-epstein-and-his-famous-frie-1679246399.

[34] Abby Goodnough, “Questions of Preferential Treatment are Raised in Florida Sex Case,” *The New York Times*, September 3, 2006, http://www.nytimes.com/2006/09/03/us/03epstein.html.

[35] Jenna Sauers, “The Sex-Trafficking Model Scout,” *jezebel.com*, August 4, 2010, https://jezebel.com/5603638/meet-the-modeling-agent-who-trafficked-underage-girls-for-sex.

[36] Timothy Fitzpatrick, https://fitzinfo.wordpress.com/2016/10/29/trump-controlled-by-mossad/.

[37] Stephanie Linning, “Young Woman at the Center of Prince Andrew Scandal says the FBI have Videos of her having Sex with Jeffrey Epstein and ‘Powerful Friends’ while she was Underage,” *Daily Mail*, February 8, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2944101/Sex-slave-centre-Prince-Andrew-case-claims-FBI-videos-associates-Jeffrey-Epstein.html.

[38] “All Aboard the ‘Lolita Express’: Flight Logs Reveal the many Trips Bill Clinton and Alan Dershowitz took on Pedophile Jeffrey Epstein’s Private Jet with Anonymous Women,” *Daily Mail*, January 23, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2922773/Newly-released-flight-logs-reveal-time-trips-Bill-Clinton-Harvard-law-professor-Alan-Dershowitz-took-pedophile-Jeffrey-Epstein-s-Lolita-Express-private-jet-anonymous-women.html.

[39] Barry Meier, “Alan Dershowitz on the Defense (his own),” *The New York Times*, December 12, 2015, https://www.nytimes.com/2015/12/13/business/alan-dershowitz-on-the-defense-his-own.html?_r=0.

[40] Alan Dershowitz interview transcript/video, interviewed by Tucker Carlson, “Dershowitz Calls Special Counselor Mueller Good News for Trump: ‘He’s Going to Find no Crime,” *Real Clear Politics*, May 20, 2017, https://www.realclearpolitics.com/video/2017/05/20/dershowitz_calls_special_counsel_mueller_good_news_for_trump_hes_going_to_find_no_crime.html.

[41] Paul Thompson, "U.S. Woman who Claims she was Forced to have Sex with Prince Andrew Sues British Socialite for Denying that she Recruited her to be a Sex Slave," *Daily Mail*, September 22, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3245036/Virginia-Roberts-claimed-sex-Prince-Andrew-sues-British-socialite-Ghislaine-Maxwell-denying-claims-recruited-sex-slave.html.

[42] Caroline Graham, "Abused as a Child. Dabbling with Drugs. And now Virginia Roberts's Jeffrey Epstein Girl says… I am in Fear of my Life," *Daily Mail*, January 10, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2904911/Abused-child-Dabbling-drugs-Virginia-Roberts-s-aunt-reveals-Jeffrey-Epstein-girl-says-fear-life.html.

[43] Josh Gerstein, "Woman who Sued Convicted Billionaire over Sex Abuse levels Claims at his Friends," *Politico*, December 31, 2014, https://www.politico.com/blogs/under-the-radar/2014/12/woman-who-sued-convicted-billionaire-over-sex-abuse-levels-claims-at-his-friends-200495.

[44] "Did Israel Control J. Edgar Hoover with Pedophilia?" *Renegade Tribune*, June 19, 2017, http://www.renegadetribune.com/israel-control-j-edgar-hoover-pedophilia/.

[45] Paul David Collins, "The Ghost of Roy Cohn," *Conspiracy Archive*, May 7, 2007, http://www.conspiracyarchive.com/2014/08/24/the-ghost-of-roy-cohn/.

[46] Ronald Kessler, "Did J. Edgar Hoover Really Wear Dresses?" *History News Network*, July 22, 2002, http://historynewsnetwork.org/article/814.

[47] Josh Gerstein, https://www.politico.com/blogs/under-the-radar/2014/12/woman-who-sued-convicted-billionaire-over-sex-abuse-levels-claims-at-his-friends-200495.

[48] "Prince Andrew Backed by Eminent Engineer in Rare Public Appearance Following Virginia Roberts Sex Claim," *Independent*, February 3, 2015, http://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/prince-andrew-backed-by-eminent-engineer-in-rare-public-appearance-following-virginia-roberts-sex-10020815.html.

[49] Guy Adams, "Why are the Rich and Powerful so in Thrall to Ghislaine Maxwell? Despite Court Papers Linking her to a Tawdry 'Sex-Slave' Scandal involving Prince Andrew and Billionaire Paedophile Jeffrey Epstein she still has Amazing Social Connections," *Daily Mail*, January 10, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2904115/Ghislaine-Maxwell-s-link-sex-scandal-court-papers-involving-Prince-Andrew-Jeffery-Epstein-don-t-stop-having-amazing-social-connections.html.

[50] Amanda Williams, "Mystery Royal 'was part of Suspected Paedophile Ring being Investigated by Scotland Yard but the Inquiry was Shut down for National Security Reasons,'" *Daily Mail*, March 22, 2015,

http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3006218/Mystery-royal-suspected-paedophile-ring-investigated-Scotland-Yard-inquiry-shut-national-security-reasons.html.

[51] “Presidents, Popes, Queen, Elite Illuminati Pedophilia and Child Sacrifice,” *Millennium Report*, December 28, 2016, http://themillenniumreport.com/2016/12/presidents-popes-queen-elite-illuminati-pedophilia-and-child-sacrifice/.

[52] Seawolf 1957, “The Queen of England and the Children who ‘Disappeared,’” *Daily Kos*, July 3, 2010, https://www.dailykos.com/stories/2010/7/4/881519/-The-Queen-of-England-And-The-Children-Who-Disappeared.

[53] Jay Myers, “The Murder of Princess Diana,” YouTube video, 36:02, posted on July 8, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=9fFkk2ulJjc.

[54] David Icke, *The Biggest Secret: The Book That Will Change the World* (Ryde, England: Bridge of Love Publications, 1999), Chapter 19: The Goddess and the King, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/biggestsecret/bigsec/biggestsecret19.htm.

[55] Nick Bryant, http://gawker.com/flight-logs-put-clinton-dershowitz-on-pedophile-billio-1681039971.

[56] Nick Bryant, http://gawker.com/flight-logs-put-clinton-dershowitz-on-pedophile-billio-1681039971.

[57] Vicky Ward, https://web.archive.org/web/20150612144453/http://www.vanityfair.com/news/2003/03/jeffrey-epstein-200303.

[58] Nick Bryant, http://gawker.com/flight-logs-put-clinton-dershowitz-on-pedophile-billio-1681039971.

[59] Nick Bryant, http://gawker.com/flight-logs-put-clinton-dershowitz-on-pedophile-billio-1681039971.

[60] Philip Weiss, “Dershowitz Story is also an Israel Story,” *Mondoweiss*, January 6, 2015, http://mondoweiss.net/2015/01/dershowitz-story-israel/.

[61] Andrew M. Durhren, “As Dershowitz Takes Actions to Refute Allegations, Lawyers Sue for Defamation,” *The Crimson*, January 6, 2015, http://www.thecrimson.com/article/2015/1/6/dershowitz-motion-lawsuit-defamation/.

[62] Lucy Westcott, “Alan Dershowitz Defamation Suit Settled, Sex Accusations called a Mistake,” *Newsweek*, April 11, 2016, http://www.newsweek.com/alan-dershowitz-defamation-suit-dropped-446348.

[63] Martin Gould, “Jeffrey Epstein's ‘Sex Slave’ Virginia Roberts Wins Round in Defamation Lawsuit against British Socialite and Alleged ‘Pimp’ Ghislaine Maxwell who ‘Passed her around for Sex’ and Trained her to be ‘Everything a Man Wanted,’” *Daily Mail*, May 12, 2017, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4466874/Virginia-Roberts-suing-Ghislaine-Maxwell-defamation.html.

[64] Dareh Gregorian, “Billionaire Perv Jeffrey Epstein must Testify in Lawsuit Brought by one of his Victims,” *New York Daily News*, June 24, 2016, http://www.nydailynews.com/news/national/billionaire-perv-jeffrey-epstein-testify-victim-lawsuit-article-1.2687207.

[65] Josh Gerstein, “Suit over Billionaire’s Underage Sex Abuse Settles,” *Politico*, May 24, 2017, https://www.politico.com/blogs/under-the-radar/2017/05/24/jeffrey-epstein-sex-abuse-lawsuit-238793.

[66] Nick Bryant, http://gawker.com/flight-logs-put-clinton-dershowitz-on-pedophile-billio-1681039971.

[67] “Is Maxwell Still Alive Part 1,” *The Truth Seeker*, December 12, 2002, http://www.thetruthseeker.co.uk/?p=464.

[68] “Sexual Deviant Jeffrey Epstein and the Mossad High Roller Pedophile Ring,” *nodisinfo.com*, February 16, 2015, https://nodisinfo.com/sexual-deviant-jeffrey-epstein-mossad-high-roller-pedophile-ring/.

[69] Conchita Sarnoff, “Jeffrey Epstein, Billionaire Pedophile, Goes Free,” *The Daily Beast*, July 20, 2010, https://www.thedailybeast.com/jeffrey-epstein-billionaire-pedophile-goes-free.

[70] Jenna Sauers, https://jezebel.com/5603638/meet-the-modeling-agent-who-trafficked-underage-girls-for-sex.

[71] John Carney, “Meet Nadia Marcinkova, Star Girl of the Raunchiest Part of Epstein Scandal,” *Dealbreaker*, July 28, 2006, https://dealbreaker.com/2006/07/meet-nadia-marcinkova-star-girl-of-the-raunchiest-part-of-epstein-scandal/.

[72] “Jeffrey Epstein, Mossad and 9/11,” *Aangirfan,* January 25, 2015, http://aanirfan.blogspot.co.id/2015/01/jeffrey-epstein-mossad-and-9-11.html.

[73] Christine Negroni, “Global Girl & Girlfriend of Sex Offender Epstein Same Person Flight School Says,” *christinenegroni.blogspot.com*, January 26, 2015, http://christinenegroni.blogspot.co.id/2015/01/global-girl-girlfriend-of-sex-offender.html.

[74] Jenna Sauers, https://jezebel.com/5603638/meet-the-modeling-agent-who-trafficked-underage-girls-for-sex.

[75] Jenna Sauers, https://jezebel.com/5603638/meet-the-modeling-agent-who-trafficked-underage-girls-for-sex.

[76] Conchita Sarnoff, "Jeffrey Epstein Paid $5 Million to Three Sex Trafficking Victims," *The Daily Caller*, October 4, 2017, http://dailycaller.com/2017/10/04/jeffrey-epstein-paid-5-million-to-three-sex-trafficking-victims/.

[77] Conchita Sarnoff, "When the Trafficking Victims Protection Act Fails," *Huffington Post*, November 7, 2011, https://www.huffingtonpost.com/conchita-s-sarnoff/when-the-trafficking-vict_b_948843.html.

[78] Brandy Zadrozny, "Trump Nominee: Lax Deal for Billionaire Pedo Jeffrey Epstein was 'A Good Thing,'" *Daily Beast*, March 22, 2017, https://www.thedailybeast.com/trump-nominee-lax-deal-for-billionaire-pedo-jeffrey-epstein-was-a-good-thing.

[79] "Could Billionaire Sex Offender Jeffrey Epstein Face new Criminal Charges? Two Alleged 'Sex Slave' Victims are Fighting to Overturn 2008 Plea Deal," *Daily Mail*, July 19, 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3696759/Could-billionaire-sex-offender-Jeffrey-Epstein-face-new-criminal-charges-Two-alleged-victims-fighting-overturn-2008-plea-deal-guaranteed-wouldn-t-prosecuted-federal-court.html.

[80] Christopher Brennan, "Labor Secretary Nominee Alexander Acosta gave 'Sweetheart Deal' to Sex Offender Jeffrey Epstein," *New York Daily News*, February 16, 2017, http://www.nydailynews.com/news/national/labor-pick-acosta-gave-sweetheart-deal-sex-offender-epstein-article-1.2975065.

[81] Michele Dargan, "Jeffrey Epstein Attorney Roy Black Denies Allegations in Letter by ex-U.S. Attorney Alexander Acosta," *Palm Beach Daily News*, March 30, 2011, http://www.palmbeachdailynews.com/news/jeffrey-epstein-attorney-roy-black-denies-allegations-letter-attorney-alexander-acosta/hqzeQNswBXtcG0qUwd3efM/.

[82] Barry Meier, https://www.nytimes.com/2015/12/13/business/alan-dershowitz-on-the-defense-his-own.html?_r=0.

[83] Andrew Krieg, "Moralist Ken Starr Explains his Help for Billionaire Pervert Jeffrey Epstein," *Justice Integrity Report*, February 8, 2015, http://www.justice-integrity.org/791-ken-starr-explains-his-help-for-billionaire-pervert-jeffrey-epstein.

[84] Brandy Zadrozny, "The Billionaire Pedophile who could Bring down Donald Trump and Hillary Clinton," *Daily Beast*, June 30, 2016, https://www.thedailybeast.com/the-billionaire-pedophile-who-could-bring-down-donald-trump-and-hillary-clinton.

[85] Malia Zimmerman, "Billionaire Sex Offender Epstein once Claimed he Co-founded Clinton Foundation," *Fox News*, July 6, 2016,

http://www.foxnews.com/us/2016/07/06/billionaire-sex-offender-epstein-once-claimed-co-founded-clinton-foundation.html.

[86] "Clinton Foundation Went for 'Biggest Fraud Ever Investigated' – Analyst," *Sputnik*, January 6, 2018, https://sputniknews.com/interviews/201801061060560083-clinton-foundation-probe-analysis/.

[87] "Billionaire Pedophile Jeffrey Epstein Sent Bill Clinton $3.5 Million from Secret Swiss Bank Account," *radaronline.com*, February 10, 2015, https://radaronline.com/exclusives/2015/02/jeffrey-epstein-secret-clinton-donation/.

[88] Paula McMahon, "Billionaire Sex Offender's 'Sweetheart Deal' Violated our Rights, Victims tell Feds," *Sun Sentinel*, January 2, 2016, http://www.sun-sentinel.com/news/fl-jeffrey-epstein-victims-civil-20151230-story.html.

[89] Jane Musgrave, "Fight to Reopen Teen Sex Case against Jeff Epstein may set Precedent," *Palm Beach Post*, August 26, 2017, http://www.mypalmbeachpost.com/news/crime--law/fight-reopen-teen-sex-case-against-jeff-epstein-may-set-precedent/hxt8lQgkABEc59vrbz8teK/.

[90] Paula McMahon, http://www.sun-sentinel.com/news/fl-jeffrey-epstein-victims-civil-20151230-story.html.

[91] Jane Musgrave, "Trial Date set for Lawsuit against Billionaire Sex Offender Epstein," *Palm Beach Post*, July 7, 2017, http://www.palmbeachpost.com/news/crime--law/trial-date-set-for-lawsuit-against-billionaire-sex-offender-epstein/VJbBnxT9PK4AXk0mbLchBK/.

[92] Rachel Blevins, "Judge Protects Billionaire Pedophile, won't Allow Damning Evidence in Child Rape Trial," *Free Thought Project*, December 6, 2017, http://thefreethoughtproject.com/judge-protects-billionaire-pedophile-wont-allow-damning-evidence-child-rape-lawsuit/.

[93] Jane Musgrave, "Judge Delays, Tries to Reign in X-Rated Civil Trial of Jeffrey Epstein," *Palm Beach Post*, November 29, 2017, http://www.mypalmbeachpost.com/news/crime--law/judge-delays-tries-rein-rated-civil-trial-jeffrey-epstein/CmoG1vhJenQwhdL4ufW0IK/.

[94] Jane Musgrave, http://www.palmbeachpost.com/news/crime--law/trial-date-set-for-lawsuit-against-billionaire-sex-offender-epstein/VJbBnxT9PK4AXk0mbLchBK/.

[95] Jane Musgrave, http://www.mypalmbeachpost.com/news/crime--law/judge-delays-tries-rein-rated-civil-trial-jeffrey-epstein/CmoG1vhJenQwhdL4ufW0IK/.

[96] Jane Musgrave, http://www.mypalmbeachpost.com/news/crime--law/judge-delays-tries-rein-rated-civil-trial-jeffrey-epstein/CmoG1vhJenQwhdL4ufW0IK/.

[97] “Human Trafficking and Slavery,” *findlaw.com*, http://criminal.findlaw.com/criminal-charges/human-trafficking-and-slavery.html.

[98] “Ex-USA Gymnastics Doctor Jailed for up to 175 Years in Sex Abuse Case,” *france24.com/Reuters*, January 24, 2018, http://www.france24.com/en/20180124-usa-gymnastics-team-doctor-larry-nassar-jailed-175-years-sexual-assault.

[99] George Washington, “Banana Republic: One System of Justice for the Powerful (Like Clinton) … and Another for Everyone Else,” *Zero Hedge*, July 6, 2016, https://www.zerohedge.com/news/2016-07-06/banana-republic-one-system-justice-powerful-clinton-%E2%80%A6-and-another-everyone-else.

[100] Jane Musgrave, http://www.mypalmbeachpost.com/news/crime--law/judge-delays-tries-rein-rated-civil-trial-jeffrey-epstein/CmoG1vhJenQwhdL4ufW0IK/.

[101] “Exhibit C: Epstein vs. Edwards Undisputed Statement of Facts,” JEFFREY EPSTEIN, Plaintiff, vs. SCOTT ROTHSTEIN, individually, and BRADLEYJ EDWARDS, individually, *scrbd.com*, April 8, 2011, https://www.scribd.com/document/253183256/JEFFREY-EPSTEIN-Plaintiff-vs-SCOTT-ROTHSTEIN-individually-and-BRADLEYJ-EDWARDS-individually.

[102] “Evolution and Collapse of the Biggest Ponzi Scheme in Florida History,” *NBC Dateline* video, March 3, 2017, https://www.nbcnews.com/dateline/video/the-evolution-and-collapse-of-the-biggest-ponzi-scheme-in-florida-history-889471043771.

[103] Michael Mayo, "Five Years on, Rothstein’s Ponzi still Resonates,” *Sun Sentinel*, October 31, 2014, http://www.sun-sentinel.com/news/fl-rothstein-mayocol-b110214-20141031-column.html.

[104] Dan Christensen, “President Trump on Witness list in Palm Beach Lawsuit involving Billionaire Pedophile,” *Florida Bulldog*, March 14, 2017, http://www.floridabulldog.org/2017/03/trump-on-witness-list-lawsuit-pedophile/.

[105] Jane Musgrave, “Billionaire Sex Offender Drops Suit against Scott Rothstein and one of his Partners,” *Palm Beach Post*, August 17, 2012, http://www.palmbeachpost.com/news/crime--law/billionaire-sex-offender-drops-suit-against-scott-rothstein-and-one-his-partners/Fzusj9yXeAMhC0uGoDig5K/.

[106] Timothy Holmseth, “Forged Documents appear in Court case Connected to Scott Rothstein’s Biofuel Company,” *writeintoaction.com*, February 17, 2014, http://writeintoaction.com/Scott%20Rothstein%20Company%20Forged%20Documents.html.

[107] Timothy Holmseth, “FBI Informant Formally Warns Trump of Mike Pence,” *haleighcummingsdotme.wordpress.com*, December 26, 2017, https://haleighcummingsdotme.wordpress.com/2017/12/26/fbi-informant-warns-president-trump-of-mike-pence-and-pam-bondis-ties-to-pedogate/.

[108] Jane Musgrave, http://www.mypalmbeachpost.com/news/crime--law/judge-delays-tries-rein-rated-civil-trial-jeffrey-epstein/CmoG1vhJenQwhdL4ufW0IK/.

[109] Jane Musgrave, http://www.mypalmbeachpost.com/news/crime--law/fight-reopen-teen-sex-case-against-jeff-epstein-may-set-precedent/hxt8lQgkABEc59vrbz8teK/.

[110] Jane Musgrave, http://www.mypalmbeachpost.com/news/crime--law/fight-reopen-teen-sex-case-against-jeff-epstein-may-set-precedent/hxt8lQgkABEc59vrbz8teK/.

[111] Jane Musgrave, http://www.mypalmbeachpost.com/news/crime--law/fight-reopen-teen-sex-case-against-jeff-epstein-may-set-precedent/hxt8lQgkABEc59vrbz8teK/.

[112] Jane Musgrave, http://www.mypalmbeachpost.com/news/crime--law/fight-reopen-teen-sex-case-against-jeff-epstein-may-set-precedent/hxt8lQgkABEc59vrbz8teK/.

[113] Jane Musgrave, http://www.mypalmbeachpost.com/news/crime--law/fight-reopen-teen-sex-case-against-jeff-epstein-may-set-precedent/hxt8lQgkABEc59vrbz8teK/.

[114] James Fielding, “Jimmy Savile was part of Satanic Ring,” *Express*, January 13, 2013, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/370439/Jimmy-Savile-was-part-of-satanic-ring.

[115] Nico Hines, “The Mysterious Case of the ‘Pedophile’ Prime Minister, Sir Edward Heath,” *The Daily Beast*, October 5, 2017, https://www.thedailybeast.com/the-mysterious-case-of-the-pedophile-prime-minister-sir-edward-heath.

[116] “The Clinton Pedophilia Connection,” Steve Pieczenik YouTube video, 02:23, posted on November 1, 2016, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=12zVlaZyX3Q.

[117] Selwyn Duke, “NYPD Source: Weiner Laptop has enough Evidence “to Put Hillary… Away for Life,” *The New American*, November 3, 2016, https://www.thenewamerican.com/usnews/crime/item/24549-nypd-source-weiner-laptop-has-enough-evidence-to-put-hillary-away-for-life.

[118] “NYPD Blows Whistle on new Hillary Emails: Money Laundering, Sex Crimes with Children, Child Exploitation, Pay to Play, Perjury,” *True Pundit*, November 2, 2016, https://truepundit.com/breaking-bombshell-nypd-blows-whistle-on-new-hillary-emails-money-laundering-sex-crimes-with-children-child-exploitation-pay-to-play-perjury/.

[119] Joachim Hagopian, “Breaking Sex Scandal from Weiner’s Laptop may be the Smoking Gun that will bring down the Clintons for Good,” *sott.net*, November 4, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/333069-Breaking-sex-scandal-

from-Weiners-laptop-may-be-the-smoking-gun-that-will-bring-down-the-Clintons-for-good.

[120] Maureen Callahan, “The ‘Sex Slave’ Scandal that Exposed Pedophile Billionaire Jeffrey Epstein,” *New York Post*, October 9, 2016, https://nypost.com/2016/10/09/the-sex-slave-scandal-that-exposed-pedophile-billionaire-jeffrey-epstein/.

[121] Geoff Earle, “Bill Clinton Jumped aboard Disgraced Sex Offender Jeffrey Epstein's ‘Lolita Express’ Plane for Junkets 26 Times in just Three Years,” *Daily Mail*, May 13, 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3589628/Report-Bill-Clinton-jumped-aboard-disgraced-sex-offender-Jeffrey-Epstein-s-Lolita-Express-plane-junkets-26-TIMES-just-three-years.html.

[122] Shepard Ambellas, “St. James Island Exposed: The Elites Best Kept Secret, until now,” *intellihub.com*, January 5, 2015, https://www.intellihub.com/st-james-island-exposed-elites-best-kept-secret-now/.

[123] Archived document of filed case vs. Epstein et al, January 26, 2017, http://archive.is/02etB.

[124] “Bill Clinton Identified in Lawsuit against his former Friend and Pedophile Jeffrey Epstein who had ‘Regular’ Orgies at his Caribbean Compound that the former President Visited Multiple Times,” *Daily Mail*, March 19, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2584309/Bill-Clinton-identified-lawsuit-against-former-friend-pedophile-Jeffrey-Epstein-regular-orgies-Caribbean-compound-former-president-visited-multiple-times.html.

[125] “Trump Vows to get Special Prosecutor to Investigate Clinton,” 2016 presidential debate, YouTube video, 02:22, posted on October 9, 2016, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=thaNhEAKF_U.

[126] “Trump States Bill Clinton has a lot of Problems Coming up with Epstein Island CPAC 2015,” YouTube video, 03:00, posted on February 24, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=wPnpjw34o94.

[127] Tyler Durden, “Trump won’t Pursue Charges against Hillary: ‘She’s been through enough,” *Zero Hedge*, November 22, 2016, https://www.zerohedge.com/news/2016-11-22/trump-wont-pursue-charges-against-hillary-shes-been-through-enough.

[128] Maureen Callahan, https://nypost.com/2016/10/09/the-sex-slave-scandal-that-exposed-pedophile-billionaire-jeffrey-epstein/.

[129] Sam Weinman, “Once upon a Time when Bill Clinton needed a Golf Haven, he turned to Donald Trump,” *Golf Digest*, November 4, 2016, https://www.golfdigest.com/story/once-upon-a-time-when-bill-clinton-needed-a-golf-haven-he-turned-to-donald-trump.

[130] Josh Gerstein, "New Photos show Bill Clinton Yukking it up with Trump, Melania, and Swimsuit Model," *Politico*, September 9, 2016, https://www.politico.com/story/2016/09/new-photos-bill-clinton-trump-melania-227945.

[131] Maureen Dowd, "When Hillary and Donald were Friends," *The New York Times*, November 2, 2016, https://www.nytimes.com/2016/11/06/magazine/when-hillary-and-donald-were-friends.html.

[132] Dr. Eowyn, "Are Hillary's and John McCain's Orthopedic Boots actually Ankle Bracelets?" *Fellowship of the Minds*, November 7, 2017, https://fellowshipoftheminds.com/2017/11/07/are-hillarys-and-john-mccains-orthopedic-boots-actually-ankle-bracelets/.

[133] Dr. Eowyn, "QAnon: John Podesta in Ill Health; Tony Podesta in Custody," *Fellowship of the Minds,* February 5, 2018, https://fellowshipoftheminds.com/2018/02/05/qanon-john-podesta-in-ill-health-tony-podesta-in-custody/.

[134] "Executive Order Blocking the Property of Persons Involved in Serious Human Rights Abuse or Corruption," *whitehouse.gov*, December 21, 2017, https://www.whitehouse.gov/presidential-actions/executive-order-blocking-property-persons-involved-serious-human-rights-abuse-corruption/.

[135] Victoria Guida, "Trump Targets Human Rights Abusers with Executive Order," *Politico*, December 21, 2017, https://www.politico.com/story/2017/12/21/trump-targets-human-rights-abusers-executive-order-russia-255032.

[136] Michael Snyder, "Deep State Takedown in Progress: Is Trump about ready to start Arresting Top Democrats and Bringing them to Justice," *InfoWars*, December 29, 2017, https://www.infowars.com/deep-state-takedown-in-progress-is-trump-about-to-start-arresting-top-democrats-and-bringing-them-to-justice/.

[137] Landon Thomas, Jr., http://nymag.com/nymetro/news/people/n_7912/.

[138] Brandy Zadrozny, https://www.thedailybeast.com/the-billionaire-pedophile-who-could-bring-down-donald-trump-and-hillary-clinton.

[139] Ken Silverstein, "The Salacious Ammo that even Donald Trump won't use in a Fight against Hillary Clinton*," Vice News*, January 30, 2016, https://news.vice.com/article/the-salacious-ammo-even-donald-trump-wont-use-in-a-fight-against-hillary-clinton-bill-clinton.

[140] Maureen Callahan, https://nypost.com/2016/10/09/the-sex-slave-scandal-that-exposed-pedophile-billionaire-jeffrey-epstein/.

[141] Andrew Krieg, http://www.justice-integrity.org/791-ken-starr-explains-his-help-for-billionaire-pervert-jeffrey-epstein.

[142] Dan Christensen, http://www.floridabulldog.org/2017/03/trump-on-witness-list-lawsuit-pedophile/.

[143] Dan Christensen, http://www.floridabulldog.org/2017/03/trump-on-witness-list-lawsuit-pedophile/.

[144] Ken Silverstein, https://news.vice.com/article/the-salacious-ammo-even-donald-trump-wont-use-in-a-fight-against-hillary-clinton-bill-clinton.

[145] Brandy Zadrozny, https://www.thedailybeast.com/the-billionaire-pedophile-who-could-bring-down-donald-trump-and-hillary-clinton.

[146] Wayne Madsen and Andrew Krieg, "Welcome to Waterbury: The City that holds Secrets that could Bring down Donald Trump," *Justice Integrity Project*, January 9, 2018, http://www.justice-integrity.org/1445-welcome-to-waterbury-the-city-that-holds-secrets-that-could-bring-down-trump.

[147] Wayne Madsen and Andrew Krieg, http://www.justice-integrity.org/1445-welcome-to-waterbury-the-city-that-holds-secrets-that-could-bring-down-trump.

[148] Wayne Madsen and Andrew Krieg, http://www.justice-integrity.org/1445-welcome-to-waterbury-the-city-that-holds-secrets-that-could-bring-down-trump.

[149] Wayne Madsen and Andrew Krieg, http://www.justice-integrity.org/1445-welcome-to-waterbury-the-city-that-holds-secrets-that-could-bring-down-trump.

[150] Wayne Madsen and Andrew Krieg, http://www.justice-integrity.org/1445-welcome-to-waterbury-the-city-that-holds-secrets-that-could-bring-down-trump.

[151] Josh Gerstein, "The one Weird Court Case Linking Trump, Clinton, and a Billionaire Pedophile," *Politico*, May 4, 2017, https://www.politico.com/story/2017/05/04/jeffrey-epstein-trump-lawsuit-sex-trafficking-237983.

[152] John Wagner, "All of the Women who have Accused Trump of Sexual Harassment are Lying, the White House says," *Washington Post*, October 27, 2017, https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/post-politics/wp/2017/10/27/all-of-the-women-who-have-accused-trump-of-sexual-harassment-are-lying-the-white-house-says/?hpid=hp_rhp-top-table-main_pn-anger-325pm%3Ahomepage%2Fstory&utm_term=.793f7b90622f.

[153] Ryan Parry, "Troubled Woman with a History of Drug use who Claimed that she was Assaulted by Donald Trump at a Jeffrey Epstein Sex Party at age 13 Made it all up," *Daily Mail*, November 7, 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3914012/Troubled-woman-history-drug-use-claimed-assaulted-Donald-Trump-Jeffrey-Epstein-sex-party-age-13-FABRICATED-story.html.

[154] Wayne Madsen and Andrew Krieg, http://www.justice-integrity.org/1445-welcome-to-waterbury-the-city-that-holds-secrets-that-could-bring-down-trump.

[155] "Donald Trump Nearly Casually Remarks about Incest with Daughter Ivanka," *The View*, YouTube video, 01:11, posted on December 10, 2015, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DP7yf8-Lk80.

[156] Adam Withnall, "Donald Trump's Record of Unsettling Comments about Daughter Ivanka," *Independent*, October 10, 2016, http://www.independent.co.uk/news/world/americas/us-elections/donald-trump-ivanka-trump-creepiest-most-unsettling-comments-a-roundup-a7353876.html.

[157] Meg Wagner, "Donald Trump Comments on 1-year-old Daughter's Breasts in Disturbing 1994 Interview," *New York Daily News*, April 7, 2016, http://www.nydailynews.com/news/politics/trump-comments-1-year-old-daughter-breasts-article-1.2591961.

[158] Kimberly M. Aquilina, "Did Ivanka Trump give her Daddy a Lap Dance?" *Metro*, October 6, 2016, https://www.metro.us/games/did-ivanka-trump-give-donald-a-lap-dance/zsJpje---0couQleJHl9sA.

[159] Max Greenwood, "Doug Jones Quotes Ivanka Trump Criticizing Roy Moore in new Ad," *The Hill*, November 21, 2017, http://thehill.com/homenews/campaign/361322-doug-jones-quotes-ivanka-trump-criticizing-roy-moore-in-new-ad.

[160] Jeremy Stahl, "The Big Steve Bannon Profile in *Vanity Fair* Makes him Sound very Steve Bannon-y," *Slate*, December 21, 2017, https://slate.com/news-and-politics/2017/12/the-big-steve-bannon-profile-in-vanity-fair-makes-him-sound-very-steve-bannon-y.html.

[161] Joachim Hagopian, "Pizzagate turned PedoGate Leads to Momentum Surge in Busting Global Child Sex Trafficking Rings," *sott.net*, February 27, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/343780-Pizzagate-turned-PedoGate-Leads-to-Momentum-Surge-in-Busting-Global-Child-Sex-Trafficking-Rings.

[162] Wayne Madsen and Andrew Krieg, http://www.justice-integrity.org/1445-welcome-to-waterbury-the-city-that-holds-secrets-that-could-bring-down-trump.

[163] Wayne Madsen and Andrew Krieg, http://www.justice-integrity.org/1445-welcome-to-waterbury-the-city-that-holds-secrets-that-could-bring-down-trump.

[164] Wayne Madsen and Andrew Krieg, http://www.justice-integrity.org/1445-welcome-to-waterbury-the-city-that-holds-secrets-that-could-bring-down-trump.

[165] Wayne Madsen and Andrew Krieg, http://www.justice-integrity.org/1445-welcome-to-waterbury-the-city-that-holds-secrets-that-could-bring-down-trump.

[166] Leslie Savan, "The Rape Allegations against Trump: If Jane Doe Breaks her Silence, will the Media Break Theirs?" *The Nation*, November 2, 2016,

https://www.thenation.com/article/the-trump-allegations-as-jane-doe-breaks-her-silence-will-the-media/.

[167] Wayne Madsen and Andrew Krieg, http://www.justice-integrity.org/1445-welcome-to-waterbury-the-city-that-holds-secrets-that-could-bring-down-trump.

[168] Amber Sutherland, "Billionaire Jeffrey Epstein: I'm a Sex Offender, not a Predator," *New York Post*, February 25, 2011, https://nypost.com/2011/02/25/billionaire-jeffrey-epstein-im-a-sex-offender-not-a-predator/.

[169] Conchita Sarnoff, https://www.thedailybeast.com/jeffrey-epstein-billionaire-pedophile-goes-free.

[170] Brandy Zadrozny, https://www.thedailybeast.com/the-billionaire-pedophile-who-could-bring-down-donald-trump-and-hillary-clinton.

[171] Nick Bryant, http://gawker.com/flight-logs-put-clinton-dershowitz-on-pedophile-billio-1681039971.

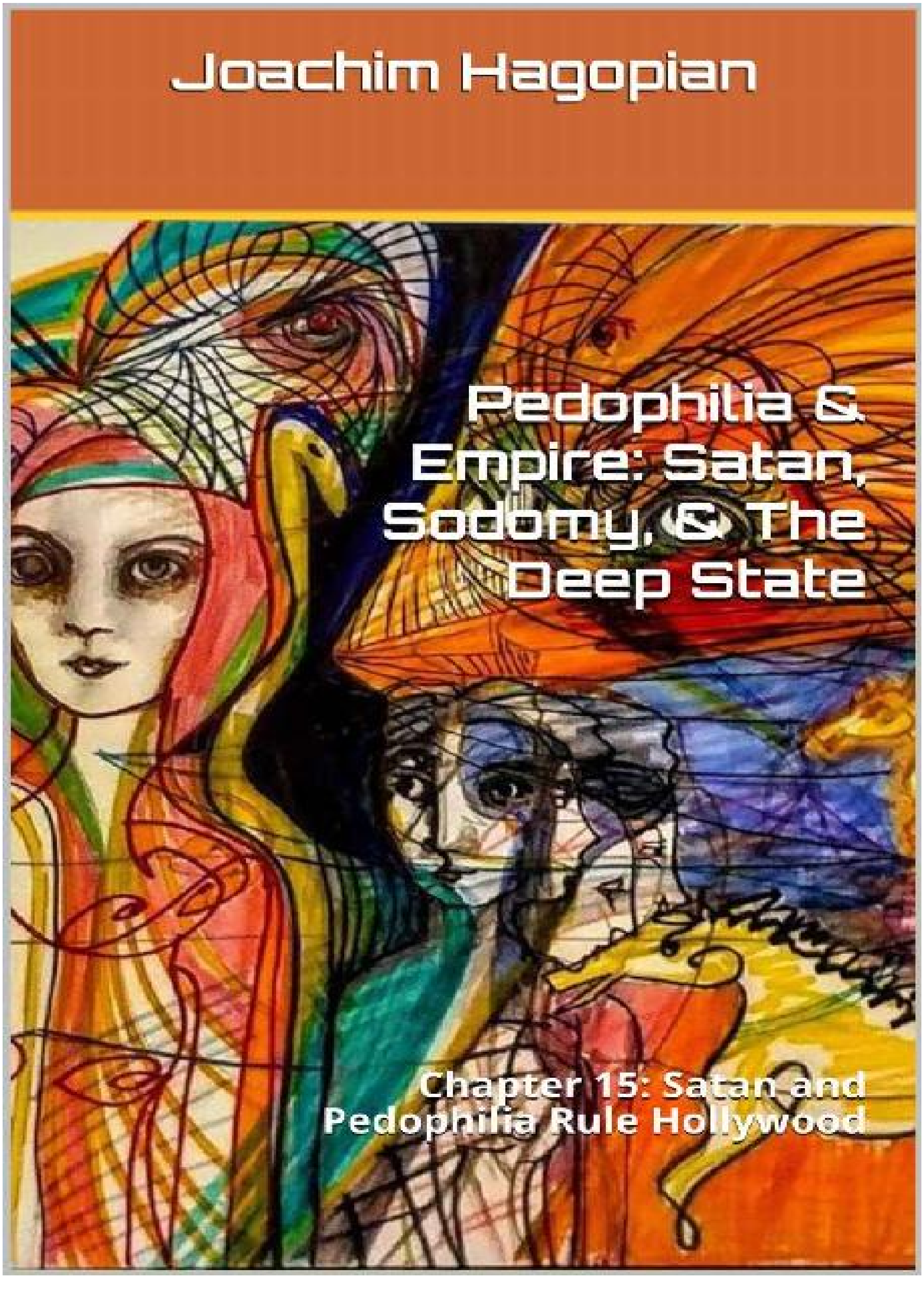

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 15: Satan and Pedophilia Rule Hollywood

Chapter 15: Satan and Pedophilia Rule Hollywood

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission

http://www.noramaccoby.com/

Rod Serling was the early television pioneer and visionary who created one of the best television shows in history - “The Twilight Zone.” His creative thread starting in 1959 through the early 1960s brought to American families glued weekly to their television sets plentiful philosophical food for thought to ponder our mysterious universe until next week’s equally evocative episode. One show in particular divulged how suburbanite America can easily be taken over by planting seeds of fear and suspicion that quickly morph into extreme paranoia and murderous violence by an unseen outside invasive force targeting America in an episode entitled “The Monsters Are Due on Maple Street.”[1] The underlying theme and message are delivered throughout the show’s half-hour plotline but summarized in the imitable, wise and sobering afterthoughts by the series creator himself:

The tools of conquest do not necessarily come with bombs and explosions and fallout. There are weapons that are simply thoughts, attitudes, prejudices - to be found only in the minds of men. For the record, prejudices can kill - and suspicion can destroy - and a thoughtless frightened search for a scapegoat has a fallout all of its own - for the children - and the *children yet unborn. And the pity of it is — that these things cannot be confined - to the Twilight Zone.*[2]

This incisive morsel of truth offered the public nearly six decades ago during television's golden age can just as easily speak to and be applied to the humans living today. But instead of the unseen alien invaders insidiously destroying us, preying on our vulnerabilities, fears and vices, it's the planetary controllers, the ruling elite bent on dividing and conquering us in every way imaginable to the point of utter self-destruction.[3] Deceptive manipulation of staged world events as presented through mainstream media's sleight-of-hand lens,[4] with carefully coordinated collusion from the Hollywood propaganda machine, is busily shaping and determining our very values, beliefs, and perceptions of reality, now on a global scale. But a dark and demonic Luciferian worshipping elite is our invasive alien enemy currently out to destroy us, and there's no more powerful weapon being used against us than the barrage of movies, television, music, and video game filth and garbage spewing out of the entertainment capital of the world - pedophilia controlled Hollywood. This presentation will unveil the child raping wizard known as Hollywood, frantically pulling the levers and strings behind the Oz-like screen, in a vain attempt to keep us ignorant in the dark, distracted, possessed and controlled by Lucifer's earthly power and dominion.

And no single person has been more instrumental in his persistent efforts to inform and educate the public about the current Hollywood pedophilia crisis than the former child star and victim-survivor Corey Feldman. Though rumors and public awareness date back to the entertainment industry's founding studio moguls as full blown Satanists, complete with their "casting couch" and sordid array of stories depicting powerful predators sexually exploiting women and children in Tinsel-Town for more than a century,[5] Corey

Feldman has hardly been noticed or listened to since he first began sounding the alarm over a decade ago. He has remained virtually a lone voice in the wilderness, drowning in a sea of open secret perversions, smug contempt and narcissistic iniquities.

Only when heavyweight producer and belligerent sexual thug Harvey Weinstein's chronic history of bullying and raping finally caught up to him late last year, enjoined by the industry's longtime hypocritical, shameful complicity,[6] vomited all over world headlines did ears finally perk up to pay slight more attention to Corey as the lone voice in the Sodom and Gomorrah wilderness. Just as last chapter's notorious pedophile Jeffrey Epstein has avoided prosecution and actual real prison punishment for his hundreds of egregious sex crimes, until last fall Weinstein has also slithered out of facing accountability for all his countless predatory sex crimes[7] by also simply paying off his multiple victims with hush money and signed non-disclosure agreements.[8] Similarly, the sex crimes committed by US Congress members have also come under the gun recently for its blatantly shameful policy of silencing victims with tax paid secret payoffs and nondisclosure protection.[9]

Last October Emmy award winning writer Jack Cashill pointed out that while it took over 13 years to expose the Weinstein crimes in Hollywood, the media has been sitting on the fact that for a much longer time powerful Tinsel-Town men have been preying on young boys with MSM's complicit silence "for fear of offending the LGBT lobby."[10] But that's just the surface layer excuse. The much deeper one cuts to the Luciferian power structure core that's been controlling this world while feasting off babies and small children for centuries with complete impunity, and maintaining its above-the-law status quo by ensuring that its public face puppets installed in high places are compromised through sexual blackmail.

As an encapsulated microcosm revealing the perverse dynamics of the surrounding macrocosm that is and has always been the Hollywood cesspool, the Corey Feldman story reveals the sad and pathetic reality of literally thousands, perhaps millions of innocent young victims who’ve been sexually exploited and abused in Hollywood by the creepiest parasitic Cretans on earth over the past 100 years. The fact that it’s forever remained an unchallenged “open secret” is atrocious, but not unlike the sins of the church, government and royalty that have also been swept under the rug for eons.

The child actor starring in some of the biggest teen films from the 1980s - “The Goonies,” “Gremlins,” “Stand by Me,” “License to Drive,” “The Lost Boys” - for years has been warning us about “the problem.” Feldman sounded off on a 2011 *ABC Nightline* episode:

I can tell you that the No. 1 problem in Hollywood was and is and always will be pedophilia. That's the biggest problem for children in this industry... It's the big secret.[11]

And he and his best friend the late Corey Haim should know. They met at 14 years of age when they co-starred together in “The Lost Boys.” While making the film “Lucas,” a 13-year old Corey Haim was approached on the set by an adult male claiming that the Hollywood norm was older guys always showed the younger boys in the business the sexual ropes, rationalizing that “all guys do it” as some sort of twisted Hollywood rite of passage. According to a number of inside sources including former actor Dominick Brascia last November 2017, that “older man” who sodomized Corey Haim was 19-year old perennial “bad boy” Charlie Sheen, who costarred with the young Corey Haim in “Lucas.”[12] With the rape said to occur in a bullying, pressured way initiated by Sheen, Haim submitting at 13 can hardly be considered consensual, and obviously both illegal and predatory in nature. Of course the now HIV infected Sheen categorically denied the original *National Enquirer* headlines.

It was reported that right after the sex in 1986, Sheen coldly rejected Corey Haim. Years later prior to his death Corey told friends that when Haim was in his 20s he and Charlie Sheen had consensual sex a second and final occasion. But by that time Corey Haim was already over Charlie the big star calling him “a loser.” Though Corey Feldman has never publicly confirmed that Sheen was the pedophile who first raped his best friend, he did admit it was “a Hollywood superstar,”[13] which of course Charlie went on to becoming before his own reckless fall from grace, and Feldman has never had anything positive to say about Sheen, alluding to causing harm to Feldman’s close associates.

When Corey Feldman and Corey Haim were later starring in a reality show together in 2006, Feldman asked his best friend:

Why don't you just tell them the truth finally and get it out?

Feldman said that the 34-year old Corey Haim’s torturous reply was:

Because he'll kill me. He will kill me.[14]

Corey Haim was convinced his rapist, most likely the notorious HIV infected sex-aholic train wreck Charlie Sheen, would place a professional hit on him to have him murdered. This very sad and telling statement explains why victims historically don’t publicly identify their perpetrators in this insulated, who-you-know town where local police departments are bribed into protecting the most powerful local criminals. As is this book’s running theme, pedophilia among the elite is simply accepted business as usual and all victims be damned, after all they’re expendables with no power at all. That’s the way it’s always been… until perhaps now as the tide appears to be finally turning.

But pedophilia, barely hidden in plain sight, has been peddled and practiced from the earliest days of Hollywood's silent and talking pictures. The name "Hollywood" itself originated with the Druidic tradition of the holly tree as the witchcraft wand that casts its occult spells on the public through the magical motion pictures projected off the big silver screen.[15] Much has been written about the early 20th century founding Hollywood studio moguls being Cabbalist Jews and closeted practicing Satanists.[16] Satan, sodomy and pedophilia go together as this book title alludes, and no more have they been blended into one permanent fixture than in Hollywood. An anonymous studio executive has referred to pedophilia as "a time-honored tradition in this town."[17]

A brief look at the career of the industry's most famous child star in movie history - Shirley Temple - epitomizes how pedophilia has long been embedded as a transparent constant. Starting at the age of 3 in 1931, Shirley's little assets were mined for the prurient interests of middle aged pedophiles who quickly became her most rabid fans while she was featured as a pint-sized harlot in a 3-5 aged all-child cast series of "Baby Burlesks" films from 1931-33.[18] A revealing 13-minute documentary plumbs the plethora of pedophilic themes permeating Shirley Temple's earliest productions.[19] And the exploitive pornographic elements followed her subsequent feature films when she emerged as Hollywood's biggest box office star for four straight years during the 1930s Depression era. Later Vladimir Nabokov's #1 bestselling novel and popular film "Lolita," depicting a pedophilic obsessive love affair as its central plot, directly stole scene after scene from the child prodigy's earlier sex-laden filmography. Like Disney Pictures,[20] the Shirley Temple products also transmit a subliminal yet not-so-secret, hidden-in-plain-sight sexual agenda designed to contaminate and warp the formative, impressionable unconscious minds and values of generation after generation of children in both America and the world while primarily intending to appeal to the titillating perverted interests of lurking pedophilic predators.

Shirley Temple Black recounted in her autobiography a meeting in 1939 at MGM Studios with producer Arthur Freed when he exposed himself to the 11-year old star while MGM head Louis B. Mayer was simultaneously groping Shirley's mother in his office.[21] Ostensibly the one-on-ones had to do with casting Shirley Temple as Dorothy in "The Wizard of Oz," which of course went to Judy Garland who later blamed Mayer as the pedophile who molested her repeatedly and ruined her life.[22] Shirley Temple Black admitted that on multiple occasions in her youth, she encountered pedophilic advances from the biggest producers, directors and actors in Hollywood, among them David Selznick, Samuel G. Engel and George Jessel.[23] Likely she withheld her darkest Hollywood tales from public disclosure. Then at the invitation of NWO globalist Henry Kissinger, Shirley Temple Black worked in the US State Department in various capacities from 1967-1992 while married to a former naval intelligence officer. Shirley was the subject of much speculation as a mind controlled Illuminati operative and in 2014 at age 85, no doubt she took countless pedo-cabal secrets to her grave.

Fast forward to anti-pedophile crusader Corey Feldman and his family roots coming from a highly dysfunctional Jewish American family. Corey's two narcissistic parents parasitically bled their young breadwinner dry since he was 7, stealing millions from him so that the emancipated youth had to start from scratch with no money at age 15. Beginning in a McDonald's commercial at age three, for the next dozen years Corey Feldman quickly grew into his parents' conveniently exploited cash cow, failing to either protect or love Corey as every child needs from his parents.

Instead Corey’s mother was a narcissistic former Playboy model who suffered from depression and drug addiction while his father was a musician who got high with his young son.[24]

Former child star Alison Arngrin who played Nellie on the iconic 1980s TV hit series “Little House on the Prairie” has stated:

In Hollywood, there are parents who will practically prostitute their kids in the hope they can make money and get ahead. It is a horrible trap that the kids are in.[25]

Deprived of a normal childhood and healthy adult role models who truly cared for him, Corey Feldman fell increasingly susceptible to outside family influence. A two bit actor in his 20s named John Grissom hired by Corey’s father as the child star’s personal assistant began sexually molesting Corey at age 14, regularly supplying him with alcohol, marijuana and pills.[26] As the sexual abuse increased and became more widespread, Grissom soon introduced cocaine and heroin to the troubled teenager. Amongst the predation network of Hollywood hangers-on, Corey Feldman and Corey Haim were passed around as boy toys to the pedo shark friends lurking at every turn within the entertainment community. Since his book publisher required the use of pseudonyms to prevent potential lawsuits and in so doing, protect the guilty, Corey referred to Jon Grissom in his autobiography as "Ron Crimson”:

I had taken some pills, some concoction that Ron had made up… Ron came over and sat down next to me, a triple-X magazine in his hands … Ron started touching me, reaching across my thigh to the crotch of my pants… When I woke up, he was on me, touching me, tugging on the zipper of my pants. I realized it was happening again.[27]

Feldman stated that pedophile Grissom still displays photos of two Coreys as sex trophies on his Facebook page, adding:

He still taunts it and flaunts it.[28]

Pedophilic predators in Hollywood never choose their prey randomly. Again Alison Arngrin specifies that:

They are typically very careful when choosing. They look for kids whose parents are maybe going through a divorce, are very naïve, suffering with addiction problems, or are simply crazy stage parents who will look the other way.[29]

From a *Fox News* article a half decade ago:

There are also parents who don't want to rock the boat, even after finding out their child was abused. A source told FOX411 that a member of a well-known band recently found out that his underage child was having sexual relations with another successful industry figure 25-30 years her senior. The incident was brushed under the rug out of fear of ruining the reputation of the perpetrator and his colleagues.[30]

Amidst the Weinstein scandal last fall, as a guest on the *Dr. Oz Show*, Corey Feldman outed two other pedophiles as his sexual tormenters - convicted pedophile and child talent manager Marty Weiss who was among the perps exposed in the acclaimed 2014 documentary “An Open Secret.” Marty Weiss’ job was searching for boy talent for both Nickelodeon and Disney and besides Feldman, he found 11-year old Evan Henzi to sexually abuse 30-40 times from age 12-15.[31] Finally after years of trauma, Evan bravely pressed charges resulting in the Weiss conviction. However, a plea deal meant upon sentencing (one year and five months), the serial pedophile was immediately released from prison after only serving 6 months given credit for time awaiting trial. Such travesty of justice only doubles the victim’s suffering whose reaction was:

I’m angry at the legal system. I blamed myself and felt guilty. Going back to the beginning, I realized that was not the case and it was just me trying to believe that everyone was good in the world and knew better than me. Now that I’m older, I know it was just sick. You don’t have sex with an 11-year-old kid.[32]

Feldman’s other outed perp on the Oz show was Alphy Hoffman, son of a major casting director at a top Hollywood studio who happened to run an informal teen club for child actors called Alphy’s Soda Pop Club.[33] Hoffman’s teen parties were largely adult unsupervised and a magnet for slimy industry pedophiles taking full advantage of an “easy pickings” situation.

Because Corey Feldman for all his courage and fortitude has received multiple death threats, including one from an A-lister who notoriously uses his threats as his calling card, this perp remains one of three other individuals that Feldman alleges are major pedophiles whose identities are still withheld.[34] Feldman clarified that he knows of the A-lister’s abuse but maintains that he never himself was victimized by him. Corey has chosen not to disclose his name fearing the safety of both his wife Courtney Anne Mitchell and as his 13-year old son Zen Scott Feldman who Corey as a protective parent will not permit his kid to be in show business.

At one point Corey Feldman reached out to Michael Jackson who also had his childhood robbed and the two quickly bonded. Corey insists that Michael never took advantage of him and that Michael provided the healthiest adult male relationship Corey ever had while growing up. But when Jackson was misinformed that Feldman was planning to release a negative portrayal of the superstar in Corey’s upcoming autobiography, hounded by sex abuse charges, the paranoid Michael Jackson abruptly, prematurely severed their once close friendship.[35]

Because from age 16-18 Feldman was arrested on drug charges while struggling with addiction and sexual abuse, his acting roles as an adult began quickly drying up. Once Corey Feldman cleaned himself up, reinventing himself to form his own rock band, eventually he began talking about pedophilia in Hollywood. But no one took him seriously. Repeatedly on national television even in recent years such mainstream media mainstays as Barbara Walters in 2013 accused Corey of denigrating the industry[36] and last year Matt Lauer badgered him over never releasing his pedophiles' names.[37] Of course like fellow sexual predator Charlie Rose, Lauer himself was soon outed and dismissed by *NBC* for what turns out to be years of his sexual harassment against women.

Corey Feldman wanted to name names in his 2013 memoir *Coreyography,* but his publisher refused. Matt Lauer also kept chastising Feldman for not going to the police when in fact Cory has repeatedly reported all the crimes and perps' identities to the police, as early as 1993 when interviewed by the Santa Barbara police regarding the Michael Jackson witch hunt investigation. Corey stated that he gave every pedophile's name to law enforcement but to no avail as nearly all his perps are still walking around as free men employed in an industry that doesn't care about abusing children as long as it's allowed to continue operating with complete impunity.

For years Corey Feldman disclosed that there exists a not-so-secret club of pedophiles that have remained untouched and still working regularly as producers, directors, actors, publicists, managers, casting directors, photographers, assistants and in virtually every trade capacity within the Hollywood industry, forever preying on children and adolescents. He maintains that a child sex ring has long flourished in insulated secrecy protecting the sodomizing power players from any and all consequences, exactly the same way that so many pedophile politicians, priests and royalty have also gotten away with their egregious crimes.

After Feldman’s buddy Corey Haim was sodomized at 13, Haim never fully recovered, taking to alcohol and drugs while very young to numb himself from the ongoing pain, shame and trauma, tragically dying at the premature age of 38 due to complications from pneumonia, but undoubtedly more so from his years of sexual abuse as a once teen actor heartthrob.[38] Decades later in 2006 while nearly broken and already considered over-the-hill in their mid-30s, “The Two Coreys” were once again reunited and featured as an *A&E* reality show series that turned into a zoo-like public spectacle. In one memorable episode each pathetically accuses the other of never supporting or coming to his aid when they were both being passed around and horribly abused.[39] Though sadly each’s claims had never been taken seriously and their pedophilia ring of known sodomizers were left unimpeded to continue abusing the next generations of Hollywood kids, despite their anguished public plight increasingly still “an open secret,” few within the industry dared to back up the Coreys’ disturbing contentions. As mentioned earlier, a former child actress who boldly did was Alison Arngrim, stating on *Fox News* in 2011:

This has been going on for a very long time, it was the gossip back in the ‘80s. People said, ‘Oh yeah, the Coreys, everyone’s had them.’ People talked about it like it was not a big deal. I literally heard that they were ‘passed around.’ The word was that they were given drugs and being used for sex. It was awful - these were kids, they weren’t 18 yet. There were all sorts of stories about everyone from their, quote, ‘set guardians’ on down that these two had been

> *sexually abused and were totally being corrupted in every possible way.*[40]

Yet the ugly truth in plain sight was ignored. While the epidemic of pedophilia perps committed by Catholic priests was showcased in the Oscar winning 2015 film “Spotlight,”[41] depicting how the sensational *Boston Globe* headlines initially broke the horrendous sex abuse scandal within the Catholic Church in 2002,[42] the same egregious crimes committed in Hollywood were always met with a “ho hum” response in the jaded, sexually promiscuous, “anything goes” entertainment industry. But to the actual victims, it was never ho hum but an indelibly imprinted, lifelong torture plaguing them right to the end. Addicted for years to both prescription and illegal drugs, Corey Haim made the other Corey promise should Haim die first that Feldman would expose the scourge that afflicts so many vulnerable young actors and entertainers in Hollywood.[43] And since his best friend’s death in March 2010, Corey Feldman has made it his personal mission in life to publicly reveal this shameful epidemic that’s long gripped the entertainment capital of the world. But unfortunately his warnings were never properly heeded, nor given their due diligence to eradicate this despicable blight, that is until the Weinstein disclosures revealing the widespread victimization of adult women. But in contrast, today no adult woman disclosing she’d been raped would ever be subjected to the same level of ridicule, doubt and scorn heaped upon Corey Feldman.

Corey Haim’s death at such an early age typifies the hapless fate of so many former Hollywood child stars. The myth that they fail to adjust and thrive past their youth because they somehow cannot transition to adulthood is what Hollywood’s powerful pedophiles who used and abused them as children would rather the public believe. Drug and alcohol abuse invariably becomes a symptom of those suffering from child sexual abuse. The notion that child stars in their heyday are bursting with talent and star power but when they grow up suddenly lose all their acting skills and creative talent to continue earning a living is ludicrous. The Hollywood pedo-machine by its very brutal nature exploits children, after using and abusing them, simply chews them up and spits them out as has-beens at 18. Co-founder Anne Henry of the BizParentz Foundation that assists and protects children in the entertainment industry estimates that at least 75% of those child actors who “went off the rails” suffered from child sexual abuse.[44] And the list grows longer of former child stars who tragically die far too young.[45]

Revelations of the #Me Too crowd are rushing in droves to publicly out powerful male predators like Harvey Weinstein who never held accountable for decades because female victims knew they’d never be believed and their careers would come to a crashing halt. In the prevailing age of deception where total lack of transparency and rampant corruption rule, it was never safe for victims with lesser power to dare accuse their perpetrators of their monstrous crimes. But fortunately those days may finally be over. Now that the culture of silence has ultimately been lifted protecting powerful predators in the form of serial rapists and chronic sexual harassers routinely victimizing adult women, the next phase of disclosure and tip of the iceberg currently being ushered in is confronting the hordes of guilty destroyers of children’s lives who’ve forever gotten away with the most heinous crimes of all, predation on our most innocent and defenseless population. In this emerging age of truth and accountability with 15 accusers, Kevin Spacey was among the first big pedophile stars to go down,[46] of course already blemished by his part in the exposed Epstein scandal. While attending his fellow pedos Bill Clinton and Jeffrey Epstein’s Lolita Express African AIDS tour in 2002, Kevin Spacey subsequently bragged in his social circles how he paid off parents of African boys he defiled, even writing it off as a tax deduction.

In the wake of the Harvey Weinstein exposure, sex abuse victim Corey Feldman gained 30,000 more followers on Twitter overnight, imploring him to identify his perpetrators and emboldening him to pursue his lifelong crusade against child molesters in Hollywood.[47] At the crest of the Weinberg controversy last November, Corey Feldman once again submitted his own abuse report based on direct observations and personal experience to LAPD decrying the longtime existence of an established pedophile ring operating within the entertainment community. Corey's words on a 2011 *Nightline*:

> *I was surrounded by them* [pedophiles]*when I was 14 years old. Surrounded. Literally. Didn't even know it. It wasn't until I was old enough to realize what they were and what they wanted, and what they were about. … Oh my God, they were everywhere, like vultures*.[48]

Upon receiving Corey's report, the LAPD pretended to initiate its first inquiry ever into Feldman's charges but a mere day later stated it was closing its mock investigation due to statute of limitations running out on Feldman's claims, i.e., business as usual pretending an organized child sex ring does not exist in Hollywood. And once again, powerful predators at the top of the food chain get protected at more children's expense. Corey has publicly lamented in prior interviews how unlike other states such as New York, the pedo-elites ensure that existing California law on statute of limitations applied to the world's entertainment pedophile epicenter conveniently shields the criminals when pedophilia victims age out at 40.[49] Despite turning 47 in July 2018, Corey Feldman is currently spearheading a petition to eliminate statute of limitation laws across America for pedophilia crimes. Of course that would represent an enormous breakthrough against the pedo-cabal. So don't hold your breath.

A week later *Newsweek* interviewed Corey with the sensationalized article title that seems designed to intentionally further undermine his growing credibility: "Corey Feldman: 'Demonic' Force Motivated Him to Expose Alleged Pedophiles in Hollywood."[50] Yet his explanation of why he must do what he is doing is very much grounded in an all too credible reality:

> *I believe that pedophilia in Hollywood is the symptom of a huge network motivated by dark forces. People cover up stories like this for power, for greed, and they choose to ignore victims because they don't want to have to think about what they did or didn't do that led to kids being in harm's way.*[51]

Corey has also launched a campaign funding drive to raise $10 million in order to produce a fictionalized feature film that tells his story exposing the sickos in Hollywood like never before. Feldman did not want to do a documentary partly because an excellent, emotionally heartfelt portrayal of pedophilia in Hollywood has already been covered by Oscar nominated Emily Berg in her 2014 documentary exposé "An Open Secret."[52] The film profiles five victimized former child actors and their litany of perpetrators, documenting the untold damage incurred by suffering victims, immersing the audience in a rarified agonizing glimpse into the permanently scarred lives affected by child sex abuse. Of course those in power in Hollywood led by the guilty attempted at every turn to sabotage the film's success from ever getting released and distributed in theaters, film festivals, cable networks as well as the internet. While Emily Berg had earned an Oscar nomination for her 2006 documentary "Deliver Us from Evil," exposing pedophilia within the Catholic Church, when she dared exposing pedophilia in Hollywood’s own backyard, she got the cold shoulder of overt censorship and couldn’t even find distribution.[53] Co-producer Matthew Valentinas makes the poignant argument:

Animals have more protections and rights on a film set than children do.[54]

While child victims have no rights, child rapists remain protected. Likewise, a truth teller faces lawsuits from the guilty. Emily Berg was threatened with lawsuits by the trade union SAG-AFTRA because the film demonstrates how convicted pedophiles in the Hollywood industry are regularly allowed to continue working with children.[55] In light of the Harvey Weinstein scandal, the film’s producers of “An Open Secret” made it freely available on the internet but again were met with open resistance from the “Hollywood Elite,” (i.e. the pedo perps who own and run the entertainment industry). Another of the film’s producers Gabe Hoffman explained that with a 94% approval rating from the film critics website *rottentomatos.com*,[56] the film was openly welcomed by the Cannes, LA, Toronto and London film festivals. But after the greenlight was given by mid-level festival executives, two weeks later the higher-ups reneged on the invitation at every festival, because the Hollywood pedophile machine pressured officials to refuse showing “An Open Secret” or else.[57]

Through interviews with abuse victims, Berg’s film exposes the network of working homosexual pedophiles thriving in the film industry while exploiting and preying on underage boy actors, focusing on the criminality perpetrated by the three founders of the Digital Entertainment Network (DEN). The company was led by tech entrepreneur Marc Collins-Rector, his younger boyfriend Chad Shackley and Disney child star (*The Mighty Ducks, First Kid*) Brock Pierce, who as one of DEN’s VPs at 17, was earning a quarter million dollars a year.[58] In a remarkably short time they raised $65 million to begin providing streaming online content featuring the fictional exploits of a sexually confused teenager who moves in with his older brother and his boyfriend into their mansion in the hills that in real life was the DEN trio’s Encino residence.

In “An Open Secret” the former child stars explain in cringing detail that throughout the late 1990s and early 2000’s Rector and his well-connected Hollywood friends were gaining quite the reputation for throwing huge pool parties predominantly attended by industry homosexual pedophiles and targeted underage male actors. As is predatory standard operating procedure, the adult perps would heavily drug the teenage boys before committing sexual assault.

The biggest name associated with these child raping orgies was the director of such acclaimed blockbusters as “The Usual Suspects” (starring fellow predator pedophile Kevin Spacey) and the “X-Men” series - Bryan Singer.[59] But as long as this A-lister bigwig kept churning out multimillion dollar box office hits like the first two X-Men grossing over $700 million, somehow offering enough wiggle room for Singer to weasel out of lawsuits from multiple victims he allegedly wined and dined, then drugged and raped, which once again only proves that if you live in high enough places, you stay unreachable. With a number of accusers, Singer reputedly has a habit of brutally sodomizing teenage boys on a regular basis. Bryan Singer’s most publicized case was pursued by former child actor and model Michael Egan featured in “An Open Secret.”

But in December 2017 yet another lawsuit has been filed against the famous director for forcing a 17-year old boy to perform oral sex on him prior to anally raping the minor aboard a yacht party in 2003.[60] The usual threats were made should the victim ever come forth. Once the litigation was announced, the volatile director was promptly fired from his current project “Bohemian Rhapsody,” a Freddie Mercury biopic. This came after Singer reportedly threw an object at the lead actor while another actor quit over tense conflicts with the high-strung, oft-accused predator who clearly has a problem keeping his dick from boys’ orifices. Like Spacey, his success went to his head thinking he was too important and powerful to go down. Like Kevin, he was wrong.

Despite the once bigtime director Bryan Singer being a regular on the shameful druggie-boy toy pool party circuit,[61] hosted by the likes of convicted pedo Marc Collins-Rector, lawsuits piling up against him have barely affected his career nor his unlawful predatory compulsions. However, it was proven in a court of law in Hawaii that his buddy Rector wrecked the rectum belonging to Michael Egan amongst other boys. Along with several other victims Egan sued Rector claiming that Rector forced him to have sex at gunpoint threatening to shoot him in the head if he continued resisting.[62] Rector was a fugitive for a while before being caught in England and extradited back to the US to face trial and conviction.

Even though two fellow DEN investors and fellow boy lovers both named in Egan’s lawsuit having widely known reputations within the industry for child sexual abuse, in the end neither Bryan Singer nor producer Gary Goddard were prosecuted. Instead, rather than Singer going to jail, it was Egan who went, branded with a 2-year prison sentence over an unrelated fraud investment charge.[63] Punishment for daring to attempt to hold powerful child rapists accountable? You be the judge. Meanwhile, well known actor Anthony Edwards bravely wrote an emotional piece at *medium.com* last November outlining how Gary Goddard posing as his mentor, teacher and “friend,” sodomized him at age 14.[64]

You may be asking yourself is pedophilia in Hollywood getting any worse. BizParentz Foundation’s Anne Henry says that the problem that Feldman alluded to has only grown more alarming in recent years:

Pedophiles and predators in Hollywood are just as rampant today, if not more so. The entertainment industry is much larger than it was in their [Feldman and Haim’s] *day. Think how many cable channels there are. In Corey's day, there were channels 2-13. We also have the Internet today, which allows predators to virtually stalk and contact child actors in a more personal way.*[65]

Corey Feldman’s current assessment concurs, pedophilia is becoming more rampant in Hollywood:

It’s more now than ever because nowadays you can use the internet to create fake profiles and fake accounts. They reach out to little kids on Twitter, they reach out to little kids on Facebook, and they say, ‘I’m a big producer and I can help you.’ With social media we have more access than ever to everybody. It’s a growing problem, not a shrinking problem.[66]

As another example of how the industry notoriously and chronically looks the other way, meet convicted pedophile writer-director Victor Salva, who in 1988 three full decades ago, was found guilty of five counts of oral copulation with a child under 14, lewd and lascivious conduct and procuring a child for pornography.[67] A 1986 Salva film short had so impressed famed director Francis Ford Coppola that he produced the pedophile’s first feature length film that same year - “Clownhouse.” It was then that Victor Salva began sexually abusing Nicholas Winters, the 12-year old boy starring in Salva’s film. The director prohibited the boy’s mother from the set, claiming Nicholas couldn’t work with his mother watching. The mother grew suspicious and confronted her son, who admitted:

I have a secret and I can’t tell anyone.[68]

Police raided the pedo-director’s home and found pornographic material that included a homemade video of Salva engaging in oral sex with his child star. Despite the earlier conviction, Salva served only 15 more months of a three year sentence before being released in 1989 and weaseling his way right back into business with an industry welcoming him again with open arms. The Winters family sued Coppola’s production company for $5 billion and wound up with only $100,000. From prison, Salva had written a screenplay that he later was greenlighted to direct - the 1995 film “Powder” distributed by Disney’s Hollywood Pictures.[69] Despite Disney knowing yet hiring this criminal pervert and now twice convicted pedophile, Salva was never in any way hindered from the project, regularly hanging out with underage children hired as extras, allowing them to sit in his director’s chair and frequently lunching with them [and likely on them]. Thus, for three straight decades in Hollywood, this child rapist’s career has remained untouched by his criminal past and been allowed to continue prospering while working nonstop directly with children, directing his latest feature “Jeepers Creepers 3” released in October 2017.[70] Bottom line, if perps make money for the Hollywood studios, they stay employed regardless of how many children’s lives get destroyed in the process.

Another shameful story is Hollywood casting director James Murphy, responsible for scouting and hiring children in some of the most successful films in the last 15 years including “School of Rock” and “Super 8.” Before his career in Hollywood, while living in Seattle, an obsessed Murphy “fell in love” with a little boy in a nearby elementary school, kidnapping him disguised as a woman in 1996 and taking him to New York City where he was spotted by a hotel clerk who recognized him from “America’s Most Wanted.”[71]

Murphy was arrested on kidnapping and molestation charges and did time as a convicted pedophile. But just five years after the Seattle abduction, he was at it again, this time working as a Hollywood casting director choosing child actors for big movies. Eventually his sordid past caught up to him, again no help from an industry caught looking the other way to allow another serial predator access to working with hundreds of vulnerable kids.

Bob Villard became Leonardo DiCaprio and Toby Maguire’s manager along with scores of other child actors over the years. Yet prior to those two even beginning their careers, in 1987 Villard was arrested for child pornography but the prosecution blew the case and the pedophile was set free.[72] For the next 14 years Villard continued working in Hollywood until his criminal pastime, collecting photos of underage boys, finally did put him behind bars in 2001. But an incredibly short time later, in 2005 the molester was caught yet again sexually assaulting a 13-year old potential client he’d been lusting after. Hollywood shamefully allowed this pedophile to sexually act out and get caught three times after damaging countless victims prior to finally prohibiting him from working again in the field.

A final case in this ever-so-brief sampling of working pedophiles in Hollywood who fall into the “catch and release” file, comes Jason Michael Handy. But keep in mind that hundreds more convicted pedophiles are also “handy” even today, still lurking at every level of the business to molest, rape and sodomize more kids every chance they get. And even worse is the fact that perhaps a thousand times that number are/were/will be working in the entertainment industry but their sex crimes have yet to be noticed or caught… or if deemed big enough, they simply continue secretly buying off their victims with hush money and non-disclosure agreements.

But back to Mr. Handy, who in his private journal identified himself as a “pedophile, full blown.” Using a telephoto lens, this peeping pedophile snapped over a thousand pictures of little girls frolicking at an elementary school across the street from his home.[73] As a Malibu church volunteer, he worked regularly with 6-year old kids. But as a production assistant at Nickelodeon, one of the biggest producers of children’s television programs, he was granted unlimited access to children both on and off the set. Introducing himself as a bigtime Nickelodeon producer to underage girls both off and online, Handy promised two girls stardom with careers in television that he soon molested, forever shattering their hopes and dreams if not lives. In 2004 the predator was convicted on two felony counts, a lewd act on a child and distributing child pornography as well as a misdemeanor for child sexual exploitation. After his prison time, in 2009 Jason Michael Handy moved east to North Carolina where he was forced to register as a convicted sex offender.[74] But a decade after his first conviction, the serial pedophile was again charged with three more counts of indecent liberties on a child and two sex offender violations. You have to wonder how many lives this pervert ruined of victims who never reported his crimes.

Turning to long overdue rude reckonings revisited upon two aging A-listers, Roman Polanski and Woody Allen have yet to legally pay for their alleged sex crimes. Prior to Weiner or WeinGate’s sea changing wave, or more like still breaking tsunami, an amnesic minute ago hypocritical Hollywood was busily rallying behind the “gross injustice” for decades hanging over the “much maligned” filmmaker Roman Polanski for his “indiscretion” so many years ago when the then 44-year old director admitted to drugging and raping a 13-year old American girl that ever since has him living as a fugitive on the run from US law.[75]

Of course the Hollywood community may also have extended sympathy for the director for 8 years earlier losing his 8-months pregnant actress wife Sharon Tate in the tragic bloody 1969 Laurel Canyon murders at the satanic hands of the CIA-linked Charles Manson clan.[76] While Sharon and her unborn child and others were being brutally stabbed to death, the pedophile A-lister was still filming what would become a horror classic about the devil growing inside Mia Farrow after Church of Satan founder Anton LaVey playing Satan himself had impregnated Rosemary in “Rosemary’s Baby.”[77] Veteran journalist Randy “Rocket” Cody emphatically claims that Roman Polanski was a member of the same Hollywood satanic coven he asserts Warren Beatty and Jack Nicholson were the “shot callers” that stabbed Polanski’s wife and unborn child to death in a satanic blood sacrifice.[78]

Right after pleading guilty in 1977 to raping Samantha Geimer (formerly Gailey) at Jack Nicholson’s house (who was away at the time), the infamous director Polanski fled America before he was issued a lengthy 50 year prison sentence, after the judge had changed his mind to renege on an extremely light plea bargain deal.[79] As both a French-Polish dual citizen, over the next four decades the admitted pedophile has successfully evaded the law and been allowed to freely work, travel, accept accolades from a pedo-friendly, pedo-saturated industry and live unobstructed in luxury in various homes in Europe. But worst of all the serial pedophile was free to rape more minors.

Then just when it appeared he too was completely immune from the law, after Polanski’s arrival in Zurich, Switzerland in September 2009 to accept a distinguished international award for outstanding lifetime achievement in the film industry, under US pressure the Swiss police suddenly arrested him.[80] While awaiting a decision from Swiss authorities on his US extradition, Polanski was briefly jailed though soon allowed house arrest in his Swiss chalet home while the Bern government decided whether or not to comply with the US extradition request. Ultimately in July 2010, the Swiss justice minister announced that Polanski would not be extradited back to America.[81] So the child rapist dodged yet another bullet.

Just as the Weinstein headlines were surfacing, Polanski smugly told *The Hollywood Reporter* last October that his 1977 rape case was "over," claiming he paid for his crime serving time briefly in 1977 and again in 2009.[82] But the truth of the matter is, Roman Polanski not only illegally avoided years behind bars for his admitted US pedophilic crime, he also escaped added time as an international fugitive and has never faced any other subsequent charges or prosecution as a serial pedophile. It's come out that he allegedly raped a number of other underage victims. In the meantime, no doubt mindful of this, in August 2017 the presiding Los Angeles judge is keeping the 1977 Geimer case still open despite the victim's request to dismiss it, for her merciful sake pleading the judge to leave it behind.[83]

Immediately after his brief detainment in Zurich in 2009, over 100 film industry notables including alleged fellow pedophile Woody Allen, Martin Scorsese, David Lynch, Alejandro Gonzalez Inarritu, Wong Kar Wai, Harmony Korine, Stephen Frears, Alexander Payne, Michael Mann, Wim Wenders, Tilda Swinton, Julian Schnabel, and Pedro Almodovar all signed a petition demanding Polanski's release from custody.[84] Meanwhile, despite five more women coming forth in recent years to accuse Roman Polanski that they too were sexually assaulted as underage girls, with one exception all occurring during the 1970s, and one claiming to be only 10-years old at the time, other than his high profile 1977 conviction, Roman Polanski denies he molested any other victims.[85] British actress Charlotte Lewis who made a film with Polanski in 1986 claimed in

2010 that in 1982 (a half decade **after** he admitted raping the 13-year old) at age 16, the serial pedophile forced himself on her as well.[86]

Last year a former German actress accused Polanski in 1972 (prior to his California case) of bringing the then 15-year old back to his chalet outside of Bern on the promise of an acting role in his next movie prior to proceeding to rape her.[87] After apologizing for his crime, he cast her in a small role in the film "Che?" but then allegedly raped her a second time at a house in Rome. In November 2017 the victim's hopes of her day in court were thwarted, again due to statute of limitation laws, this time in Europe. So once again due to the unbroken history of a broken legal system that globally protects powerful pedophiles, all investigations into this director's serial sex crimes have been dropped and the 84-year old Polanski remains a free man to live out the rest of his days on earth outside America in peace and serenity, unlike his multiple victims.

Regarding the other high profile pedo-case involving another famously renowned octogenarian director, the 2014 open letter confession of Woody Allen's alleged victimized daughter Dylan Farrow in the *New York Times*[88] and a recent *CBS* interview weighing in with her side of the 1992 molestation incident[89] both took a New York minute to hardly make a splash before too soon forgotten. Dylan graphically disclosed her father's sexual abuse perpetrated when she was 7 inside her Connecticut home:

I was taken to a small attic crawl space in my mother's country house in Connecticut by my father. He instructed me to lay down on my stomach and play with my brother's toy train that was set up. And he sat behind me in the doorway, and as I played with the toy train, I was sexually assaulted. As a 7-year old I would say, I would have said he *touched my private parts. Which I did say. As a 32-year old, he touched my labia and my vulva with his finger.*[90]

To dodge this legal bullet over a quarter century ago, Woody Allen opportunistically used his celebrity clout and sequence of events to categorically dismiss his longtime partner Mia Farrow's original molestation claims. Allen labeled Mia as the scorned wife reacting vengefully upon discovering nude Polaroid photos of another Farrow daughter - then 21-year old Soon-Yi with legs spread apart sitting on a couch taken by Woody at his stepdaughter's suggestion.[91] And the epic battle over custody of their three shared children was launched. The judge not only gave full custody of their three kids to Mia but prohibited contact between all of them except monitored visitation with his son Ronan (then named Satchel).

It's also noteworthy to add that in 1993 the Connecticut state attorney's office lead investigative prosecutor believed that Allen did sexually abuse Dylan with "probable cause" to prosecute. But Mia Farrow and he did not want to further impose more trauma on the 7-year old with a trial, sadly giving Allen a free pass with the decision not to prosecute.[92] To this day Dylan Farrow still lives with the sex abuse trauma and laments and regrets that she too was denied her day in court. Meanwhile, the 82-year old director continues making movies with full backing of the Hollywood elite, box office audiences and adoring loyal fans. But from Dylan's POV, witnessing decades of her father's consistent lying and denials has hurt her to the core. With young children of her own, today Dylan Farrow is working tirelessly to help prevent child abuse in her support of other abuse victims.

Her brother Ronan Farrow has come to his sister's defense, believing his father Woody Allen did sexually assault his two year older sister.[93] As the journalist instrumental in breaking the Harvey Weinstein story,[94] Ronan personally knows from his own painful family history how his father’s PR spin machine used historically by powerful male predators as a weapon against courageous young victims daring to speak the truth, are always put through the fire of relentless campaign smears, character assassination and a hellish nightmare of judgment and condemnation. He witnessed this firsthand with both his mother and sister when branded “crazy, coached, and vindictive” Jezebels.[95]

As a journalist in recent years while covering the Bill Cosby cover-up just prior to Cosby’s denial bubble popping, Ronan encountered the complicity and collusion of the mainstream media shielding and protecting big name pedophiles and sexual abusers in MSM’s good ol’ boys [and girls] network.[96] Access to stars depends on the symbiotic partnership between the star machine and the press. Thus delving into too personal or controversial ground is considered taboo and off limits. A typical example is his own sister’s story. *The New York Times* limited her “confession” to 936 words within Pulitzer Prize winning journalist Nicholas Kristof’s article full of caveats that initially ran on Kristof’s blog site. In contrast, shortly afterwards the *NYT* provided the accused twice as much print space centrally positioned in prime section without caveats.

Journalist Ronan Farrow initially opposed his sister going public with her story, reviving old painful memories, but something he would later regret. In a May 2016 *Hollywood Reporter* article, he wrote:

I believe my sister. This was always true as a brother who trusted her, and, even at 5 years old, was troubled by our father's strange behavior around her: climbing into her bed in the middle of the night, forcing her to suck his thumb - behavior that had prompted him to enter into therapy focused on his inappropriate conduct with children prior to the allegations… I've approached the case as an attorney *and a reporter, and found her allegations to be credible. The facts are persuasive and well documented… The only final legal disposition is a custody ruling that found Woody Allen's behavior 'grossly inappropriate' and stressed that 'measures must be taken to protect [Dylan].'*[97]

With all the commotion stirred up by the Weinstein #Me Too movement, Woody's old pedophilic tendencies came back to once again bite him in his scrawny little ass. Stars from Woody Allen's past movies including Colin Firth, Greta Gerwig and Mira Sorvino have lined up to publicly apologize and distance themselves, expressing regret over ever working with the infamous director.[98] Meanwhile Timothée Chalamet, the star of Allen's current film "A Rainy Day in New York," announced all his earnings from the movie will go to women's advocacy groups. But Allen's closest allies and friends like Diane Keaton have recently rushed to his defense. In a late January 2018 tweet Keaton says she still believes Allen and urges watching an old 1992 *60 Minutes* interview where Allen publicly defends himself.[99] Another tweet from controversial actor Alec Baldwin cruelly likens Woody's incest victim Dylan to the character in *To Kill a Mockingbird* who makes up the lie that she was raped by an innocent man.[100]

Yet another rich and famous entertainer who escaped paying for his long buried pedo-crimes is the seminal rock n' roll legend and Eagles front man Don Henley. Back in his heavy drug days amidst his many mind-altering stupors, Henley made it a regular habit to repeatedly rape teenage girls. On a November night just before Thanksgiving 1980, Don called up his procuring madam to round up some new young flesh for his illegal carnal addiction.[101] With an unlimited supply of cocaine, Quaaludes, marijuana and alcohol, the rocker drugged and raped a 15-year old runaway and a comatose 16-year old who shortly afterwards went into violent convulsions. Henley kept taking Polaroids throughout the night’s debauchery that the 15-year old smartly managed to slip under her clothes in spite of the arriving parade of paramedics, assigned order followers in suits and follow-up detectives. Just another rock n’ roller’s drug-infested orgy gone bad… all neatly cleaned up by his well-paid accomplices - entertainment handlers and legal fixers, spending lots of money colluding with corrupt law enforcement officials to effectively cover-up another batshit rocker’s messy crime scene.

After the convulsing 16-year old victim was released from the hospital and detoxed off of drugs at a local shelter, a year later she was found dead near the 101 freeway. Her friends and staff from the shelter claim that her demise was not caused by an accidental suicide as authorities so quickly ruled. The famous drummer boy even had the nerve to later pen a get-even song against the “bubble-headed beach blonde,” aka LA’s KABC channel 7 anchor Christine Lund for snooping into his “Dirty Laundry” business where newscasters seeking the ugly truth don’t belong, incredibly making himself richer as the self-proclaimed “victim.”[102]

In the meantime, the 15-year old runaway given cash and a one way bus ticket to leave town also ended up getting clean and in northern California went off to college, graduated, eventually married and now has children. Her husband, an up and coming state politician, is supporting the former runaway with the Polaroids’ plans to take Henley, his former manager Irving Azoff and former record label mogul David Geffen to court in 2018 allocating all future court settlement proceeds toward assisting sexually abused youth.[103] Don Henley of course joins hundreds of egomaniacal, high flying drug- and sex-crazed musicians, actors and politicians whose royalty lifestyle went to their heads always enabling them full impunity to destroy countless, nameless young lives sent to their early graves. But the dawning age of truth and accountability may just also be the age of karmic comeuppance for some of these heavy hitting aging pedophiles.

Another dark, lurid tale hidden deep in the Luciferian crime vault also from over a quarter century ago comes none other than the coke snorting, Mena Airport smuggling former governor[104] and pedo-prez Bill Clinton[105] (whose name somehow creeps into every chapter of this A-Z pedo-encyclopedia). Turns out that the late great comedian from the mid-1980s to early 90s, the notorious screamer comic Sam Kinison was assassinated, not the chance victim of a 1992 highway mishap on the way to Vegas as the media would have us believe. Nope, Sam and his wife were growing awfully nervous and agitated knowing that Bill and Sam’s drug habit was responsible for the overdose death of yet another underage statutory rape victim after Sam partied hardy with the Arkansas guv just prior to Bill’s POTUS run.[106] Uneasy over the Kinison liability, the demonic evildoers came up with their solution, get the dead girl’s teenage boyfriend to believe Sam supplied the drugs that killed her before raping her, and then sic the revengeful ex as the “killer on the road, his brain squirming like a toad” to avenge and neutralize Sam Kinison. And just like that, unencumbered by another potentially “messy” situation to interfere with their ambitious future lives, in November that same year Bill and Hillary were given the nod to merrily traipse off to the White House and the rest is their criminal history. And hapless Sam’s still alive, terrified widow who survived the crash has kept her mouth shut ever since.

On a positive note, as of late largely thanks to the Weinstein scandal, Corey Feldman has been joined by a small but growing chorus of fellow truth-telling actor whistleblowers openly talking about their own observations and encounters with pedophilia. Perhaps the most well-known former child actor turned adult actor now 37 who has helped expose pedophilia in Hollywood is Elijah Wood. In May 2016 in a

Sunday Times interview he made major international headlines. Fresh upon arrival from Iowa and starring in his first role at age 8, the protagonist from the “Lord of the Rings Trilogy” whose acting career now spans nearly three decades reflected on his work environment as a child actor in the 1990s:

> *Clearly something major was going on in Hollywood. It was all organized. There are a lot of vipers in this industry, people who only have their own interests in mind. There is darkness in the underbelly… From my reading and research, I’ve been led down dark paths to realize that these things probably are still happening. If you’re innocent, you have very little knowledge of the world and you want to succeed, people with parasitic interests will see you as their prey. What bums me about these situations is that the victims can’t speak as loudly as the people in power. That’s the tragedy of attempting to reveal what is happening to innocent people: they can be squashed, but their lives have been irreparably damaged.*[107]

Wood explained how he avoided Tinsel-Town’s dark pedo-underbelly thanks to his mother focusing more on his being raised “a good human” than making it at all cost as a child star:

> *I never went to parties where that kind of thing was going on. This bizarre industry presents so many paths of temptation. If you don’t have some kind of foundation, typically from family, then it will be difficult to deal with.*[108]

After catching heat for being so rudely bold to suggest UK’s Jimmy Savile scandal is comparable to Hollywood’s child sex scandal, Elijah Wood was forced to retract some of his earlier comments, admitting that he never directly had experience in his career with pedophilia but was merely responding to the emotionally gripping documentary he’d recently viewed,[109] “An Open Secret.” Writer Jack Cashill conjectured that

Wood may have abruptly changed his tune in order to have saved his own career.[110]

Child actor Todd Bridges who starred in the 1980s sitcom series “Diff’rent Strokes” went public in 2010 disclosing that his manager who also was a family friend sexually abused him at the age of 11 on four occasions.[111] Todd managed to resist the fifth attempt and later physically attacked his molester when he showed up at his family home, joined by his mother, a child abuse victim herself, who ran to the kitchen for a knife after hearing her son yell, “He touched me!” Bridges was abused while his sitcom was highly popular, but as is so common, never told a soul. In 1983 a controversial two-part “Diff’rent Strokes” episode took on the topic pedophilia that brought up intense feelings of seething anger, shame and pain in Todd who kept it bottled up inside, later battling drugs as well.

In 2012 both Bridges and Feldman teamed up as outspoken child actor advocates to successfully campaign for California legislation requiring fingerprinted background checks for all child talent managers, photographers, and publicists that regularly have unsupervised access to children in the entertainment business.[112] During a November 2017 appearance on the Dr. Oz show, the now 52-year old discussed how Hollywood predators routinely groom their targeted prey in order to gain victims’ trust prior to moving in for their kill.

Actor James Van Der Beek, a young star from the 1990s “Dawson Creek” series, took to a couple of revealing tweets last October describing his encounters with older established Hollywood predators:

I’ve had my ass grabbed by older, powerful men, I’ve had them corner me in inappropriate sexual conversation when I was much younger. I understand the unwarranted shame, *powerlessness & inability to blow the whistle. There’s a power dynamic that feels impossible to overcome.*[113]

In response to Weinstein, respected two time Oscar winning writer-director Paul Haggis suggested that Hollywood does indeed have a major pedophilia problem in its midst, believing that insiders are and were covering for pedophiles too.[114] And last October another Oscar winner Reese Witherspoon disclosed that she was sexually assaulted as an underage girl but alluded to it being just the beginning of more predatory encounters to come:

[I feel] true disgust at the director who assaulted me when I was 16 years old and anger at the agents and the producers who made me feel that silence was a condition of my employment. And I wish that I could tell you that was an isolated incident in my career, but sadly it wasn’t. I’ve had multiple experiences of harassment and sexual assault and I don’t speak about them very often.[115]

In the last couple years Jon Robberson has emerged from the Hollywood snake pit as a whistleblowing insider that has intimately worked within all facets of the entertainment industry that includes feature films, television and commercial programming at all the major studios and networks for 16 years.[116] Like actors Feldman and Wood, he has gone on public record asserting that a satanic pedophile ring controls Hollywood. He concludes that pedophilia is “running rampant in Hollywood,” which he refers to as a “satanic death cult,” remarking that:

The highest upper echelons of Hollywood, executive VPs of development, producers, mega-power agents and the international bankers fund all this stuff.[117]

Robberson has stated that the Hollywood pedo-cabal hooks child and adolescent aged actors on drugs and then involves them in parties with cameras rolling to engage in decadent activities like “multi-partner homosexual [orgies], bloodletting, and animal dismemberment” for blackmail purposes (not unlike the Epstein operation from the last chapter):

Once they’ve got the goods on you on video, they own you.[118]

Jon Robberson maintains that the ruling Hollywood pedophiles then use their leverage to force compromised, blackmail-able, hungry actors into being owned and controlled by their Luciferian masters. Though homosexuality and pedophilia have long been embedded in Hollywood, during his time working in Tinsel-Town over the past 16 years during this 21st century, Robberson has witnessed a homosexual pederast pedophilic takeover of the entire entertainment industry.[119]

In order to get where they are today, pretty much all the male stars in show business must obediently submit to literally taking it up the ass by the ruling Hollywood devils.[120] The obligatory “casting couch” extends today to virtually every man, woman and child as their only path to the top. This corrupt and vile system also explains why the creative talent rising to the top of the heap in recent years has suffered and fallen off to a new low because those who sell their soul for fame and fortune no longer require talent as their strongest suit. They must simply play their submissive roles as malleable, totally manipulated and controlled Satanic tools transmitting their industry’s prevailing perversions and debauchery to a waiting audience of adoring, highly influenced fans around the world.

The price of Hollywood superstardom is selling your soul to the devils that run Tinsel-Town, calling upon interdimensional demonic forces while participating in Satanic ritual sodomizing, cutting up and eating the hearts of innocent sacrificed children. In order to make it really big, virtually all the most famous stars in the movie, television and music industries must submit to the most disgusting and degrading acts of perversion and sleaze imaginable. That's why they all tow the line. And if one dare speak the truth to expose this demonically controlled system, they're immediately thrown to the wolves. All of a sudden their careers and reputations are ruined with bad publicity, deemed "crazy," "on drugs," "gay," amidst sudden brushes with the law, or even suicided or premature death, rarely if ever heard from again. Just ask comedians Kat Williams[121] and Dave Chappelle,[122] or Will Smith and wife Jada Pinkett[123]… "step out of line, the man come and take you away."[124]

Bob Dylan, Katy Perry, Rihanna, Beyoncé,[125] Jay-Z,[126] Lady Gaga[127] and other famous luminaries are on record one way or another copping to making their unsacred deal, signing their Luciferian contract. Jon Robberson articulates the two deal option for entertainers who more than anything else desire unlimited fame and fortune, the 10-year agreement most common to the rock star crowd and the popular 20-year plan typically opted by movie stars. Without Robberson alleging that high profile musicians on the dead 27 Club list[128] (among them Amy Winehouse, Kurt Cobain, Jimi Hendrix, Jim Morrison, Janis Joplin) all made pacts with the devil, nor the many famous celebrities who died less than a year from their 37th birthday (Princess Di, Marilyn Monroe, Bob Marley, Vincent Van Gough, Corey Haim, Sam Kinison, John Kennedy Jr.),[129] but the sheer, inordinate number within these "died too young" clubs reaching such urban legend status should not be entirely ignored. The Luciferian dealmaker may not always be the one who dies as a blood sacrifice of close kin is perhaps more common as alluded to in the Polanski-Tate case.

The bold Hollywood insider Robberson also addresses the disturbing topic of baby breeders who give birth to infants for the sole purpose of being murdered in satanic ritual sacrifice. Jon asserts that parents from multigenerational Illuminati witchcraft families enter into a covenant with a Luciferian priest who impregnates their 12-year old daughter who then is quietly relocated to where a Wiccan midwife helps birth the child leaving no paper trail or birth certificate.[130] When the baby is but a few days to a couple months old, expendable newborns are then tossed on to a heated stone Moloch altar only to sizzle to death in satanic ritual just like the days of ancient Babylon. Robberson disclosed that he is aware of these Hollywood Luciferian murder sites in secret locations in Malibu as well as the California desert.

Related is the Illuminati-CIA-military nexus also reputedly possessing a myriad of underground facilities and tunnels beneath a number of key mind control-sex trafficking centers like LA west side's Getty Museum,[131] nearby Disneyland and Florida's Disney World[132] as well as scores of DUMBs like under Area 51 in the Nevada desert.[133] At these top secret locations the ruling elite deploys black ops research to further develop super advanced technologies (some through back-engineering of alien spacecraft)[134] as well as conduct diabolical experimentation that at times carry disastrous results, all of course withheld from public disclosure for sinister purposes. Moreover, much of today's big budget sci-fi films coming out of Hollywood feature technology that the ruling controllers already secretly possess.

Currently a converted Catholic, the former "High Wizard" of the World Church of Satan for 26 years, Zachary King recently spoke to a packed audience at a Toronto conference on spiritual warfare.[135] The veteran of many Satanic rituals performed for the Hollywood elite says he “lost count” of the number, but points to the sheer hypocrisy when:

> *You see these celebrities and these movie business executives thanking Jesus at the Oscars, but it’s all lies. What you don't see is them drinking the blood of an infant they've just raped and sacrificed while they were begging Lucifer to ‘bless them’with more fame and riches* .[136]

Zachary King maintains that the vast majority of the Hollywood superstars are in fact “child killing pedophiles who worship Satan,” explaining that most have either “killed or raped children” during a “Satanic sacrifice.”[137] Having been sexually abused himself at age 11, prompting him at age 13 to join a satanic coven and sell his soul to the devil, King is now motivated to fully expose the pedophilia epidemic running rampant throughout the entertainment industry. He said that the war against pedophilia can only be fought with spiritual warfare and cannot be defeated by physical means alone, specifying that:

> *If the people work together, they can put an end to the misery so many children are going through. Perhaps some may be spared altogether from the life myself, and so many others, have had to endure at the hands of Satanic oligarchs that control our world.*[138]

The Luciferians running the entertainment industry not only are out to micromanage and control their world famous actors and musicians to do their demonic bloody bidding as powerbroker puppets just like their owned politicians, but they’re also out to control the global masses consuming their mass produced, sleazy entertainment faire. As a propaganda machine Hollywood has been churning out a product that is an integral brainwashing mind control vehicle to increasingly manipulate, influence and shape the global masses’ values, mores, beliefs, behaviors and perception of reality. Through largely an unconscious process of osmosis, worldwide audiences subliminally absorb constant underlying messages subtly or unsubtly embedded in amoral and immoral thematic lessons calculatingly crafted and projected by Hollywood. Through relentless 24/7 repetition comes belief and credibility, however false or sinister the content of the message might be.

More so than at any other time in human history, the planetary controllers have malevolently exploited the ill effects of mass media in this push-button, multimodal, electronic age as an effective means of exercising ever-expanding influence, centralized power and increasing control over the digitally addicted global population.

For numerous decades the mental health community has definitively proven beyond any doubt that:

Music videos [TV, films, video games] *socialize young people by communicating ideas about expected behavior, relationships, and male and female roles.*[139]

Glorifying violence to willfully make it not only an acceptable norm but a desirable form of masculine expression as a tangible measure of male prowess and brute strength has been used as the mass media industry constant to successfully condition and entice multigenerational misguided young men (and now women) to sign up, fight and die in endless elitist wars perpetrated by Wall Street bankers and the military industrial complex for as long as Hollywood's been creating movies.[140] Similar to the CIA's Mockingbird control over MSM[141] relegating it to its current role as a national propaganda "fake news" ministry,[142] a brigade of CIA, NSA, FBI and MI operatives are deployed in Hollywood to control the studio production line that ensures the truth exposing the lies, corruption and evil is effectively censored and fails to reach the people while only Deep State approved disinformation and false narratives get disseminated.[143]

On the topic of CIA's control over Hollywood, the always brutally honest fireball comedienne Roseanne Barr told *RT* back in 2013 that CIA rules Hollywood:

Hollywood is the one that keeps all of this power structure. They perpetuate the culture of racism, sexism, classism, genderism and keep it all in place. They continue to feed it, and they make a lot of money doing it. They do it at the behest of their masters, who run everything. It's a big culture of mind control, MK Ultra rules in Hollywood.[144]

Hence, the government owned YouTube, Facebook, Twitter and Google resort to increasing censorship[145] to ban the most honest and accurate online news outlets and videos on McCarthy-like "fake news" lists[146] as the New World Order's thinly veiled cover for suppressing the truth that by process of elimination leaves only the MSM presstitutes and Hollywood propagandists as the exclusive purveyors of Deep State lies and deception. The Hollywood propaganda machine propagates a divide and conquer strategy based on racism, sexism and bigotry, fear and deception.[147] Totalitarianism is achieved only after a controlled citizen populace is completely denied access to the truth. Welcome to the Orwellian world where "in a time of universal deceit, telling the truth becomes a revolutionary act"[148] and a truth teller an enemy of the state.

As one very revealing example of this ongoing global crisis targeting truth tellers, journalists around the world who expose what's really going on today have never been at greater risk of incarceration and assassination than right now.[149] The internet as the only venue left where an open and free press still exists for the people, is fast coming under what ex-spy Robert David Steele calls Google Gestapo control as Deep State desperately moves in for its kill, suppressing the dissident voice.[150] But fortunately alternative solutions are currently in process and we the people's access to the truth will never be hut down.[151]

Hollywood's overly excessive, obsessive focus depicting such negative, dark themes of supernatural, occult and demonic evil forces is no accident. It's by calculated NWO design not only to generate big box office bucks, the horror genre also lowers the masses' sense of morality and ethics.[152] According to the cathartic theory, the appeal of scary flicks is derived from vicariously offering emotional discharge of pent up fear that on an unconscious, deeper level would otherwise pose too threatening and overpowering anxiety for any average individual to consciously bear. The moviegoer's sense of relief is the hook.[153]

The controlled titillation emoted while passively watching suspensefully engineered horror movies as escapist entertainment may seem harmless and mundane at the surface level. But a deeper analysis conveys a relentless stream of hidden subliminal messages propagating distorted and depraved values within a larger, increasingly dangerous world controlled by power demons pushing their supernatural occult agenda. A steady 24/7 diet of debaucherously filthy sleaze and blood and gore saturation is intended to desensitize and numb humans to extreme levels of violence, perversion and the pain of others.[154] The evil power structure, long hidden in plain sight, constantly normalizing gratuitous sex, death and slaughter of innocent life, is designed to brainwash and condition the global masses into wholesale acceptance, submission and fear as further means of seizing absolute control over the earth's entire human population.

Furthermore, the increasing overtly demonic messages and images transmitted 24/7 from the Hollywood film, TV, music and video game industries spearheaded by MK Ultra

Monarch mind controlled sex kitten superstars date back to blonde goddesses Marilyn Monroe[155] and Satanist Jane Mansfield.[156] But with today's parade of jaded lost souls exemplified by the likes of Cabalist Madonna, sex slaves Britney Spears, Lady Gaga, Katy Perry, Miley Cyrus, Rihanna and Beyoncé and so many celebrities in tight with Pizzagate spirit cooking Luciferian priestess Marina Abramovic,[157] the elite agenda is crystal clear.[158] These beta programmed Monarch sex kittens all directly market their songs and videos straight to children, oozing with sexual Luciferian overtones and [porno]graphic imagery.[159] An over-the-top example is former Disney star Miley Cyrus' video for her song "BB Talk," with her legs spread wide open while wearing a diaper and baby bonnet sucking on a milk bottle nipple singing "fuck me."[160] With a role model like that idolized by countless little girls across this planet, any imitation at all and they instantly unwittingly become pedophilia bait. But then that's the whole idea behind it.

A presentation exposing Hollywood's penchant for pedophilia and perversion wouldn't be complete without historically recognizing the enormous diabolical contributions of such Illuminati luminaries as Walt Disney and Hugh Hefner. Disney was another Masonic-Illuminati pedophile fanatic with a split public vs. private Dr. Jekyll and Hyde personality. Beginning in the 1920s when the cartoonist first established his fledgling company, Disney worked tirelessly to fashion a positive outer image to the world that evolved into the benevolent "Uncle Walt" who "loved" children through his legendary masterful storytelling, providing a "safe, wholesome" place for the creative imaginations of children throughout the world with both his famous animation classics and family fun theme park playgrounds Disneyland and Disney World. But underneath this masquerading warm and fuzzy exterior persona resided a troubled, tortured, conflicted, hardened soul immersed in the dark energy of subliminal perversion and fascist New World Order elitism.[161] Because he had so much to hide, even those who knew him well claim they hardly knew him at all.

Born the bastard son of a washerwoman in a 1901 Spanish village that called the unwed mother “La Bitcha” impregnated by a married doctor who died soon after Walt’s, or more accurately, Jose’s birth.[162] The mother took her illegitimate son to Chicago to live with her brother where a priest promptly arranged a shadow adoption. So from the very beginning of his life, Disney was prone to hiding skeletons in his family closet. At the age of one, Walt was adopted by a stern Midwestern couple Elias Disney, an especially cruel, physically and emotionally abusive father and a distant and cold mother Flora. As a result, young Walt grew up liking animals and trains more than people. As a way out of his painful childhood, Walt Disney immersed himself in the secret ancient teachings of Rosicrucian Gnosis,[163] as a teenager joining the Order of DeMolay, a fraternal organization sponsored by the Freemasons.[164] Recall from Chapter 4 that Jacques DeMolay was the final grand master of the Catholic secret society the Knights Templar before his arrest in 1307 and burning at the stake in 1314 for his Order’s renouncing betrayal of Jesus.

The heralded animation pioneer was deeply steeped and schooled in both Babylonian and Egyptian occultism, Druidic witchcraft tradition, the masonic doctrine as well as Edward Bernays’ art of deception, power of propaganda and mind control.[165] Ever notice the obsessive preponderance of potions and witches’ brews, hexes and spells and reverent deference to occult rituals as a recurring theme in so many of his Disney movies? Much has been written about his other trademark, promoting sex through masking sexualized pedophilic imagery and messages embedded subliminally throughout his films. For instance, in “The Little Mermaid” the castles are clearly phalluses and in a cartoon Mickey Mouse's girlfriend Minnie is seen snorting cocaine.[166] Analytical observers have pointed out literally hundreds more of these not so hidden examples of disturbingly inappropriate content being absorbed by children.

Commencing in the 1930s all male employees at Disney were required to wear ties, be clean shaven with no facial hair, and strictly prohibited from using profanity or they'd be fired on the spot. While Disney enforced legalistic morals, cleanliness and soberness for his workforce, the boss always wore his trademark mustache, drank booze daily at the office and compulsively washed his hands many times a day on an hourly basis (psychologically from guilt over being unclean).[167] The prevailing dark Illuminati forces and Disney's own masonic leanings resonating within him merged to form a mutually self-serving Luciferian pact. As the ambitious head of his burgeoning empire, Disney nurtured a cozy working relationship as an FBI paid informant with America's top law enforcement kingpin and fellow pedophile J Edgar Hoover, helping name names on Hoover, attorney Roy Cohn and Senator Joe McCarthy's Commie blacklist.[168] Disney was also very close friends with pedophile prez Ronald Reagan and Illuminati jester Bob Hope, owner of presidential sex slave Bryce Taylor.

Filmmaker and author Kenneth Anger has called Disney a "dirty old man,"[169] writing in his book *Hollywood Babylon II*:

> *Some animators stated that the boss* [Walt Disney] *seemed to have fallen in love with the boy.*[170]

"The boy" was child actor Bobby Driscoll. "Uncle Walt" took a particular pedo-fetish hankering for his young "Treasure Island" star, maintaining a convenient local apartment for secret trysts to regularly sodomize the young adolescent.[171] Disney's owned boy toy was reportedly used and abused, then discarded, plunging Driscoll down the worn-out pathway to former child star oblivion replete with drug addicted homelessness and by age 31 his final RIP unmarked gravestone as yet another Hollywood pedophile casualty. Driscoll himself remarked:

> *… Dropped like garbage when I was no longer a cute little kid and I didn't appeal to [Walt] anymore.*[172]

Both Disney and the Illuminati establishment went to great lengths to create and maintain the myth of the legendary man that in reality was based on lies. But woe any truth tellers popping the Disney bubble. Walt's biographer Leonard Mosley wrote:

> *The Disney flacks were capable of exerting heavy pressure on editors and proprietors or, through the advertising pages, against anyone who inferred Walt Disney was not the epitome of well-scrubbed and benevolent perfection.*[173]

Additionally, CIA MK Ultra mind control programming found a likeminded home remaining alive and well to this day in the world of Disney, be it through underground tunnels built below all its global theme parks to the hapless children who go missing each year from them, undergoing trauma induced dissociative disorder through drugging, torturing and raping (covered in Chapter 9).[174] During the 1960s antiwar movement, US military bases were coming under increasing scrutiny and the decision was made to use Disneyland as a major Illuminati base of mind control operations for all its sordid clandestine criminal activities. *13 Bloodlines of Illuminati* author Fritz Springmeier wrote:

> *Under the disguise of entertaining the world, they carried out money laundering, child slavery laundering, and mind-control.*[175]

The Disney-Deep State nexus that Uncle Walt established with J Edgar Hoover and the CIA led to MK Ultra programming at all the Disney Theme Parks around the world where CIA contractors built an extensive underground world of tunnels, torture chambers and mind control programming centers beneath Disneyland and other parks but especially under Florida’s much larger Disney World.[176]

Plus the Disney films proved a perfect CIA mind control fit. Again Springmeier in his book *Illuminati Formula to Create a Mind Control Slave:*

… Disney movies and the other shows are so important to the programmers. They are the perfect hypnotic tool to get the child’s mind to dissociate in the right direction… Most of the Disney films are used for programming purposes. Some of them are specifically designed for mind control.[177]

After the man awarded the most Oscars in cinematic history at 22 died at the age of 65 in 1966, the accolades poured in. Journalism professor Ralph S. Izard contended that the values depicted in Disney films are “considered valuable in American Christian society,” which include “individualism, decency... love for our fellow man, fair play and toleration.”[178] That of course is the common public image of Disney’s legacy of work. But contrast that with Walt’s core reality. Per Springmeier’s account devoting a chapter to Disney in his *13 Bloodlines of the Illuminati*:

Behind Disney’s good front lies hard porn, snuff films, white slavery, Illuminati mind-control, and the seduction of several generations into witchcraft.[179]

Needless to say, Disney the conglomerate only continued to expand its level of nefarious operations into establishment media, buying the ABC television network and ESPN sports channel and establishing its own Disney Channel. Revenue from Disney’s current media empire nearly equals its profit from its theme parks, resorts and film studios combined.[180] Disney has also acquired a number of film production companies in its growing list of subsidiaries that include

Touchtone, Weinstein’s Miramax, and Hollywood Pictures.[181] With Disney Company indisputably the largest media-entertainment conglomerate in the world now, with the 2017 Forbes Fortune 500 rank at #52,[182] the latest proposed acquisition is Twentieth Century Fox for $52.4 billion.[183] Thus the Disney power to influence, shape and control the minds of millions if not billions across this planet is undisputable.

But the pedophilia and hidden Illuminati agenda have also become increasingly evident, starting with the inordinate number of steadily employed pedophiles that Disney hires who keep getting busted in record numbers. 35 Disney workers have been arrested in Florida alone for various pedophilia crimes.[184] A prominent Disney executive and longtime director of Disney music publishing, 58-year old Jon Heely, was arrested in December 2017 on three counts of child abuse.[185] One of the victims abused for four years was first molested at age 11, another at age 15. And just like his Uncle Walt, the pedophile’s lives the lie, claiming on his Twitter bio that he is all about “Disney concerts and living to glorify God in all things.” Still another eye-opening fact that belies the fake wholesome image is that one of Disney Company’s subsidiaries happens to be America’s largest producer of adult porn films.[186]

It is also no accident that from its Mouseketeer factory The Mickey Mouse Club (starting with the 1950s Annette Funicello),[187] Disney’s been cranking out an endless parade of CIA mind controlled superstars, particularly since the 1990s delivered the bumper crop of Illuminati puppet favorites such as singers Justin Timberlake, Britney Spears and Christina Aguilera, and on a lesser scale heartthrob actor Ryan Gosling and actress Keri Russell.[188] Meanwhile, from the Disney Channel comes a prolific stable that’s spawned the likes of good girl Hannah Montana turned bad girl Miley Cyrus[189] followed by Selena Gomez and Demi

Lovato. Other notable Disney child star alumni gone bonkers, drugged and MK'd are Lindsay Lohan[190] and Shia LaBeouf.[191]

The standard Disney formula covertly grooms Illuminati sex kitten operatives starting as aspiring showbiz kids eager to project the Disney brand of squeaky clean, God-fearing goodness, only to morph overnight into Illuminati sex nymphos perennially in heat just as their adult careers get catapulted to new heights of fame and notoriety. The Disney assembly line machine manufacturing this ongoing stream of wayward pied pipers first hooking then leading the multitudes of impressionable young children as gushing loyal fans around the world into NWO's hedonistic underworld is achieved through Hollywood (and CIA's) magic wand of mass mind control. After all, success of the Luciferian controllers' endgame is essentially contingent upon breeding a docile, dumbed down, celeb worshipping, pleasure seeking human species devoid of intelligence, and especially devoid of any spiritual foundation or moral compass. In the New World Order, only dehumanized, controllable robots are allowed; humans who still think critically will be the first to be purged.[192]

And from the opposite end of the Illuminati spectrum comes the king of soft porn, another dark side occult magician and NWO designated pied piper granted the Luciferian mission to lead America's (and world's) descent into deeper sexual decadence and pedophilic perversions - Playboy entrepreneur Hugh Hefner.[193] From his orgy-stained Playboy Mansion nestled in the hills a stone's throw from Hollywood, for well over a half century Hugh Hefner has been a sex icon entertaining celebrities, Hollywood pedophile moguls, politicians and finance titans, peddling through his media empire promiscuity, hedonism galore, pedophilia and all the debauchery of ancient Rome and Sodom and Gomorrah combined.

A brief look at Hefner's pedophilia past will shed further light. Hugh Hefner in the 1970s published a lesser known magazine called Sugar and Spice. In 1975 when Brooke Shields was just 10 years old Hefner featured nude photos of her in his pedophile magazine.[194] Hef was also personally present for a nude photo session with 11-year old French actress Eva Ionesco. Sexualizing prepubescent girls in photos and distributing child pornography are pedophile crimes. Yet no legal consequence ever took place. These facts reveals that from way back, over 40 years ago, Hugh Hefner exposed himself by his own unlawful actions that he is a pedophile.

As if that's not revealing enough, Hefner's 1953 launching of his *Playboy Magazine* was financed by the CIA (similar to Gloria Steinem's *Ms. Magazine* nearly two decades later).[195] From Chapter 9 we learned that the CIA through both its MK Mind Control operations and its systematic child raping as an integral component to manufacturing a multigenerational army of dissociated child sex slaves and its pimping role as chief handlers in the global child sex trafficking trade, and Hefner's lofty Hollywood perch as a pedophile and "free sex" guru for over six decades, and it all begins to make a lot more sense.

A valet that worked for the Playboy entrepreneur for a couple years in 1978-79 stated that Hefner always had cameras installed in his mansion for potential blackmail purposes.[196] And with all the orgies that were so commonplace over the years inviting so many celebrities and VIPs, Hefner got the dirty goods on countless high profile individuals captured on film in debaucherously compromising situations with not only hookers but mind controlled child sex slaves. In this regard, his Hollywood Playboy Mansion became a West Coast version for the CIA as Jeffrey Epstein's "Orgy Island" was for the Mossad.

Since the CIA helped Hefner found Playboy Enterprises, MK Ultra sex slaves were part of the Mansion agenda and blackmail operation as well. As an MK slave handler, the perverted pedophile got involved in deep shit with lots of heinous activities. While performing research on the Hef and his mansion's history, Playboy publishing staff stumbled upon some blueprints and photo archives. It turns out that "the Rape Mansion" as it came to be called, has an entire underground tunnel system built in the 1970s running underneath the property to other famous actors' homes such as Jack Nicholson, Warren Beatty, James Caan and Kirk Douglas among others.[197] A staff member stated that Hefner sealed the tunnels in 1985 after marrying Playmate Kimberly Conrad. The CIA, Hefner and his famous Hollywood pals like Nicholson and Beatty are alleged to have trafficked young women and underage girls, many of whom over the years disappeared, likely sold into slavery or snuffed in snuff films.[198] Other higher profile Hefner commodities like Playmates Dorothy Stratton and Paige Young and Playboy model Anna Nicole Smith were MK sex slaves who were either murdered or suicided for becoming unruly threats.[199] But once again with the Illuminati-Freemason-Luciferian network long in place in Hollywood, owning and controlling all levels of law enforcement both local and national, police serve to provide the necessary cover for their murderous operations.

Former-CIA operative and whistleblower Laurel Aston stated that Hefner was very much connected to the CIA:

Hefner is a CIA programmer, CIA sex slave handler and pimp. Hefner was also a part of running MK Ultra super assassins and ops.[200]

Also a number of Hef's women have admitted he was homosexual and regularly had sex with men and rarely with women.[201] Hefner could only relate to women as exploited sex objects that bolstered his playboy image but was closer to men. Often the world's most famous sexually liberated playboy would watch others have sex.

Implicating the hedonist prince of darkness further, like the traceable genealogy of most US presidents, Hugh Hefner's family also links back to one of the 13 Illuminati bloodlines. It turns out that Hefner directly traces his lineage back to the ancient Dionysian Cult from the Aryan-Anglo-Saxon Dragon Illuminati bloodline.[202] Moreover, Playboy Mansion murals have openly displayed his close association with his Dionysian Cult. The Playboy Mansion's biggest yearly shindig celebrates "A Midsummer's Night Dream" (linked to the pagan satanic summer solstice holiday) that evolved straight from the elite's Royal Luciferian Circle that includes Hefner's Archdruid Dragon bloodline. Like Uncle Walt, Hefner also partook in the secret Rosicrucian doctrine fashioning himself as the modern day Puck, a mythological medieval demon figure. The Rosicrucian cult has an ancient tradition of heavy involvement in mind control and trance inducement akin to the CIA MK Ultra mind control methodology. Since 1953 Hefner has covertly used his Playboy Empire as a CIA mind control base of operations.

That Hefner died last fall at the age of 91 just as law enforcement was purportedly closing in to arrest him while he frantically sought immunity in exchange for singing like a songbird naming big name pedophiles for a plea bargain deal raised speculation he may have been murdered.[203] It's also been reported by a number of sources that a plaintiff named Sheri Denise Allred back in 2009 filed a lawsuit accusing Hefner of sexually molesting her when she was only 5 years old.[204] Sheri alleged that Hugh Hefner was deep into a Hollywood pedophile sex ring. It's recently been reported that in August 2017 (the month before Hefner's death) that the case was reopened due to other complaints against the late playboy. Sheri's garbled Los Angeles

Superior Court complaint for damages is poorly drafted and contains seemingly off the wall, at times unintelligible references.[205]

Sheri Allred repeatedly mentions a hat covering her head “where everyone in the world can hear her thoughts and transfer thoughts to her hat from god.” MK Ultra have EEG skull caps that do in fact detect one’s brainwaves. Considering she is most likely an MK Ultra mind controlled sex slave victim subjected to powerful drugs like LSD, systematic torture and sexual abuse, resulting in dissociative disorder, her accurately identifying Hefner as the leader of the Dionysian Cult and referencing herself as Venus de Milo from Greek mythology, doesn’t seem so farfetched.[206] Additionally, given the context that she was indoctrinated with MK’s standard Walt Disney themes and occult dogma, undergoing recovery of repressed memories with the typical amnesic gaps, all trademark indicators of the Illuminati MK brand of programming, her bizarre written account may not be so bizarre after all. Recall also that the MK torturer-abusers purposely count on a child or adult victim’s seemingly wild-eyed nightmarish claims to be misconstrued as purely fabricated fantasy or delusional psychosis. And with the CIA False Memory Foundation and the “Satanic Panic” label well in place since the 1990s, the Deep State criminal denial machine has easily deflected and dismissed the ramblings of seemingly non-credible accounts as pure fictional imagination (See Chapter 2).

Yet the more we learn of the diabolical Luciferian plot and the very real mind control apparatchik operating on a global scale, together with the worldwide child sex trafficking network orchestrated largely by the CIA using front companies involving human rights charities, State Department, USAID, Red Cross, UN, US military and private contractors, all the Luciferian secret societies, the Catholic Church, the mafia, family adoptions, the broken child welfare, educational and legal systems… and how global war zones provide both the cover and resources for international trafficking of illegal weapons, drugs, money laundering, body parts, and small children, the more tangibly real this massive level of evildoing manifests. The notion that “benign” Uncle Walt and perennial playboy Hef were occultist pedo-ringleaders in a global system gone rotten centuries ago suddenly seems highly plausible.

The fact that Hugh Hefner has been deceased since late September 2017 no doubt provided sufficient cause to suspend an apparent police investigation, particularly in view that the Hollywood pedo-elite historically owns and controls all Southern Californian as well as federal law enforcement agencies. Rather than inquire into an ultra-messy murderous affair implicating their own complicity and the international crime cabal perpetrators, once again in the interests of protecting the elite, predictably it appears authorities have chosen to let sleeping dogs lie.

Incidentally, according to rock journalist Randy “Rocket” Cody among others, last year’s suicided rockers and close friends - Chris Cornell and Chester Pennington - were both assassinated as celebrity ritual sacrifices by the satanic MK Ultra killing cabal for daring to expose the cabal’s pedophilia trafficking network headquartered in Washington and Hollywood.[207] [208]

Even world renowned director Steven Spielberg has shown telling signs that he too may be part of this sinister Hollywood pedophile cabal. Spielberg’s original “Raider of the Lost Ark” screenplay had his Indiana Jones character raping an 11-year old girl with the final film cut modifying their age difference to Jones’ 24 and his rape victim 15.[209] Actor Crispin Glover has directly accused Spielberg of being a pedophile with a penchant for little boys, even winning a lawsuit against the director. The notorious pedo organization

North American Man Boy Love Association NAMBLA has posted numerous links to Spielberg, particularly in connection with the famous director's Peter Pan version called "Hook." By age 21 Spielberg was given finances to write and direct his first movie, a 27-minute short without dialogue filled with a homosexual pedophilic theme called "Ambin'," later the name of his first production company, jumpstarting Spielberg's career with an unprecedented 7-year television contract, making boy wonder the youngest director ever given a long term Hollywood contract. Since Tinsel-Town has been taken over by Luciferian homosexual pedophiles,[210] it might explain his meteoric rise at that tender young age.

The ruling elite's obvious agenda is to keep the citizen masses uniformed and ignorant while its Hollywood media machine continues polluting, warping and contaminating the minds of younger generations in order to completely obscure right from wrong, embrace and spread perversions as diabolically manufactured social engineering, relentlessly pushing the in-our-face LGBT agenda[211] promoting mass gender bending, blurred gender confusion and massive sexual identity chaos amongst our children as young as toddlers.[212] At the same time, the planetary controllers' concerted efforts through their political and media puppets working to lower children's legal age for sexual consent is another blatant ploy to make pedophilia a legalized lifestyle choice and societal norm (See Chapter 2). And in that same vein, the pedo-elite through movies, TV, music and mandatory sex-ed disinfo propaganda are fiendishly toiling overtime to satanically sexualize and pervert our youth.[213] Had Hillary Clinton been elected president, documented evidence in Obama's Attorney General Lynch's Justice Department confirms that pedophilia and bestiality were set to be made legal on the heels of gay marriage after the first known gay president.[214] [215]

Meanwhile, also by Illuminati design, the Luciferian elite has been insidiously undermining and relentlessly attacking, with the ultimate aim of destroying, the nuclear family along with parental rights, Christianity as America's dominant religion, the freedoms guaranteed under our no longer upheld Constitution and our sovereignty as a strong independent nation, replacing them with a fascist one world government and one world Luciferian religion as their longtime agenda.[216] To accomplish this dire sinister end, a false flag intended to ignite World War III[217] (like the recent failed missile attack on Hawaii[218]) and collapsing the global economy are in the works.[219] In wag the dog fashion, the Illuminati are then counting on the pedophilia epidemic necessarily take a backseat when humanity is forced into a 24/7 war crisis survival mode, thereby permitting the international pedo-crime cabal to retain its power and control. We must continue to expose to dispose the pedophilia empire.

Through his vast research and meticulous preparation for his final film "Eyes Wide Shut,"[220] the late great Hollywood director Stanley Kubrick caught the true essence of the planetary overlords' destructive agenda,[221] and by revealing their inner secrets like never publicly displayed before, it may have cost him his life.[222] Just four days after the writer-director's final cut, a full hour longer than the film's eventual theatrical release, an otherwise very healthy 70-year old Kubrick suddenly died mysteriously of an alleged heart attack.[223] The bold Oscar winning actress Nicole Kidman just recently opened up about the renowned director, disclosing in her revealing words that while working on the 1999 film, Stanley Kubrick taught her:

… *How the world works and who is really in control behind the scenes. Stanley told me the world is run by pedophiles. He studied secret societies his whole life, he was fascinated by them, and he said the elite, the top secret societies, they* *are full of men with a certain predilection. They are tied together, sort of bonded, by pedophilia. They all know each other's dark secrets. There is no way out for any of them. It's a lifetime bond. Even if one of them wanted to go straight, repent, so to speak, he can't. His peers will bring him down. They are in it until death, driving the world to ruin. That's how Stanley explained it.*[224]

Nicole Kidman gave even more reason for a Kubrick assassination:

Stanley's next film was going to be about psychopathic pedophiles. He said he was going deeper down the rabbit hole.[225]

So nearly two decades before the Pizza-turned PedoGate phenomenon, the world public learning about the pedo-elites via the filmmaking genius of our time had to be stopped… not unlike the abrupt end of another genius from comedy George Carlin whose dark revelations may have gotten too close for elitist comfort.[226]

No doubt an essential component to the "psychopathic pedophiles"' "driving the world to ruin" is through man's rapid descent into utter moral degradation. The elite's grand scale mind control strategy is manipulating the world population to degenerate into living a Sodom and Gomorrah lifestyle guided by no moral or ethical standards, compass or conscience at all. Then not a single soul will bother objecting to Luciferian adults' ritualistic torturing, drugging, sodomizing and sacrificing our youth on a massive scale. Owned and controlled by powerful pedophile kingpins as the world entertainment epicenter for portraying and peddling such extreme levels of sexual debauchery and Luciferian sleaze,[227] Hollywood has long been the ruling elite's most potent propaganda weapon for decriminalizing sodomy against small children. And as much as the DC swamp needs draining, so does this entire filthy cesspool known as

Hollywood, free from the parasitic maggots bent on bringing us all down sooner than later.

Applying the pedophilia epidemic to yet another branch of escapist entertainment - the multibillion dollar sports industry - the next chapter examines how child sexual abuse and global sex trafficking permeate the field of sports at all levels, and how links between Hollywood, the sports industry, governments, Fortune 500 corporations, banking and religion all work hand-in-hand in interlocking criminality of the highest order.

Endnotes

---

[1] “The Monsters Are Due on Maple Street,” *wikipedia.com*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Monsters_Are_Due_on_Maple_Street.

[2] Michael Sebastian, “How to Spot Pop Culture Indoctrination,” *returnofthekings.com*, April 8, 2015, http://www.returnofkings.com/59994/how-to-spot-pop-culture-indoctrination.

[3] Joachim Hagopian, “How the New World Order ‘Globalists’ are Dividing Americans,” Global Research, October 28, 2015, https://www.globalresearch.ca/how-the-new-world-order-globalists-are-dividing-americans/5483941.

[4] Dylan Charles, “4 Examples of Mainstream Media Fabricating News to Push for War,” *Waking Times*, November 4, 2015, http://www.wakingtimes.com/2015/11/24/4-examples-mainstream-media-fabricating-news-world-war/.

[5] Pamela Hutchinson, “Moguls and Starlets: 100 years of Hollywood’s Corrosive, Systemic Sexism,” *The Guardian*, October 19, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/film/2017/oct/19/moguls-and-starlets-100-years-of-hollywoods-corrosive-systemic-sexism.

[6] Nick Allen, “Hollywood Accused of Hypocrisy over Harvey Weinstein Sexual Harassment Allegations,” *The Telegraph*, October 12, 2017, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2017/10/07/hollywood-accused-hypocrisy-harvey-weinstein-sexual-harrassment/.

[7] David Hudson, “[The Daily] Weinstein and Co.,” *criterion.com*, October 12, 2017, https://www.criterion.com/current/posts/5034-the-daily-weinstein-and-co.

[8] Nitasha Tiku, “How to Pierce the Secrecy around Sexual Harassment Cass,” *Wired*, December 4, 2017, https://www.wired.com/story/how-to-pierce-the-

secrecy-around-sexual-harassment-cases/.

[9] Ashley Collman, “Rep. Jackie Speier Claims $15 Million in Taxpayer Money has been used to Settle Sexual Harassment Claims against Members of Congress in the past 10 to 15 Years,” *Daily Mail*, November 15, 2017, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5085129/Congress-sex-harassment-claims-settled-tax-money.html.

[10] Jack Cashill, “Weinstein was easy, Hollywood Pedophiles won’t,” *World News Daily*, October 11, 2017, http://mobile.wnd.com/2017/10/weinstein-was-easy-hollywood-pedophiles-wont-be/.

[11] Steven Baker and David Wright, “Actor Corey Feldman Says Pedophilia No. 1 Problem for Child Stars, Contributed to Demise of Corey Haim,” “Nightline,” *ABC News*, August 10, 2011, http://abcnews.go.com/Entertainment/corey-feldman-pedophilia-problem-child-actors-contributed-demise/story?id=14256781.

[12] Jessica Finn, “Charlie Sheen ‘Categorically Denies’ Raping 13-year-old Corey Haim on the set of the Movie Lucas after Claims made by a Friend of the late Child-Actor,” *Daily Mail*, November 8, 2017, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5062721/Charlie-Sheen-sodomized-Corey-Haim-13-set-Lucas.html.

[13] Martha Ross, “Corey Haim Rape Claims: A-List Superstar was Perpetrator,” *San Jose Mercury News*, September 20, 2016, https://www.mercurynews.com/2016/09/20/corey-haim-rape-claims-a-list-superstar-was-perpetrator/.

[14] McKenna Aiello, “Corey Feldman Made a ‘Promise’ to Corey Haim to Expose Alleged Sexual Abuse,” *E News*, January 5, 2018, http://www.eonline.com/news/904158/corey-feldman-made-a-promise-to-corey-haim-to-expose-alleged-sexual-abuse.

[15] “Jordan Maxwell – Hollywood Magic,” YouTube video, 06:21, posted on February 6, 2010, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Emsc3DcEqD0.

[16] Hollywood Sex Scandals go back to its Jewish Founding Fathers,” *Realist Report*, November 11, 2017, http://therealistreport.com/hollywood-sex-scandals-go-back-to-its-jewish-founding-fathers/.

[17] Marine Fiola, “Top 10 Disturbing Stories about Hollywood’s Pedophile Problem,” *medium.com*, October 21, 2017, https://medium.com/the-greatest/top-10-disturbing-stories-about-hollywoods-pedophile-problem-c246ab356c91.

[18] Charlotte Alter, “Before the Good Ship Lollipop, Shirley Temple Did ‘Baby Burlesks,’” *Time Magazine*, February 12, 2014, http://time.com/12851/before-the-good-ship-lollipop-shirley-temple-did-baby-burlesks/#.

[19] "Hollywood Pedophilia: Shirley Temple & "Baby Burlesque," YouTube video clip from "The Lolita Riddle Nabokov and Shirley Temple," 12:53, posted on August 22, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=IFEw-EGhoKo.

[20] "The Perverted Walt Disney Empire," *The Conspiracy Zone*, http://theconspiracyzone.podcastpeople.com/posts/32979.

[21] Mike Miller, "Shirley Temple and Hollywood Pedophilia," *henrymakow.com*, May 15, 2017, https://www.henrymakow.com/2017/05/shirley-temple-and-hollywood.html.

[22] Michael S. Rosenwald, "'I'll Ruin You': Jusy Garland on being Groped and Harassed by Powerful Hollywood Men," *Chicago Tribune*, November 14, 2017, http://www.chicagotribune.com/entertainment/movies/ct-judy-garland-harassment-20171114-story.html.

[23] Mike Miller, https://www.henrymakow.com/2017/05/shirley-temple-and-hollywood.html.

[24] Hollie McKay, "Experts: Pedophiles in Hollywood even Bigger Problem than in Corey Feldman's Day," *Fox News*, October 30, 2013, http://www.foxnews.com/entertainment/2013/10/30/experts-pedophiles-in-hollywood-even-bigger-problem-than-in-corey-feldmans-day.html.

[25] Hollie McKay, http://www.foxnews.com/entertainment/2013/10/30/experts-pedophiles-in-hollywood-even-bigger-problem-than-in-corey-feldmans-day.html.

[26] Kate Feldman, "Corey Feldman Claims Actor Jon Grissom Molested him in '80s as part of 'Pedophilia Ring,'" *New York Daily News*, November 2, 2017, http://www.nydailynews.com/entertainment/corey-feldman-claims-actor-john-grissom-molested-80s-article-1.3607482.

[27] Kate Feldman, http://www.nydailynews.com/entertainment/corey-feldman-claims-actor-john-grissom-molested-80s-article-1.3607482.

[28] Chris Baynes, "Corey Feldman Names Actor who 'Abused him as a Child' during Dr. Oz Show," *Independent*, November 3, 2017, https://www.independent.co.uk/arts-entertainment/films/news/corefy-feldman-jon-grissom-child-abuse-claim-dr-oz-show-paedophiles-hollywood-sex-scandal-a8034946.html.

[29] Hollie McKay, http://www.foxnews.com/entertainment/2013/10/30/experts-pedophiles-in-hollywood-even-bigger-problem-than-in-corey-feldmans-day.html.

[30] Hollie McKay, http://www.foxnews.com/entertainment/2013/10/30/experts-pedophiles-in-hollywood-even-bigger-problem-than-in-corey-feldmans-day.html.

[31] Emily Blackwood, "The Young Singer Who Exposed Hollywood Pedophile Marty Weiss After Suffering Years Of Abuse As A Child," *Your Tango*, January 13, 2018,

https://www.yourtango.com/2018309802/who-evan-henzi-new-details-singer-sexually-abused-marty-weiss-hollywood-pedophile.

[32] Benjamin Lee, “Controversial Documentary an Open Secret Reveals Paedophilia in Hollywood,” *The Guardian*, May 22, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/film/2015/may/22/an-open-secret-documentary-reveals-paedophilia-in-hollywood.

[33] Tufayal Ahmed, “Who is Alphy Hoffman? Corey Feldman Reveals Name of Third Alleged Child Abuser,” *Newsweek*, November 14, 2017, http://www.newsweek.com/who-alphy-hoffman-corey-feldman-reveals-name-third-alleged-child-abuser-710384.

[34] Tufayal Ahmed, “Who Abused Corey Feldman? ‘Goonies’ Actor is living in Fear Hollywood A-Lister Suspected of Pedophilia may Kill him,” *Newsweek*, November 10, 2017, http://www.newsweek.com/who-abused-corey-feldman-goonies-actor-living-fear-hollywood-lister-suspected-708270.

[35] “Corey Feldman Explains His Falling Out With Michael Jackson Amid Sexual Abuse Allegations!” *Perez Hilton*, September 26, 2016, http://perezhilton.com/2016-09-26-corey-feldman-michael-jackson-friends-apology-dr-oz-video.

[36] “Barbara Walters Faces Backlash after Corey Feldman Clip Resurfaces,” *Fox News*, October 18, 2017, https://pagesix.com/2017/10/18/barbara-walters-faces-backlash-after-corey-feldman-clip-resurfaces/?_ga=2.251254726.1779798712.1518523406-1217506542.1506291838.

[37] “Corey Feldman Leaves Matt Lauer Speechless” YouTube video, 10:08, posted on December 2, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=YLFX2oWK2-c.

[38] Joanne Cavanaugh and Edward Hyatt, “When did Corey Haim Die, what did he say about Sex Abuse and what are the Charli Sheen Rape Allegations?” *The Sun*, November 11, 2017, https://www.thesun.co.uk/tvandshowbiz/4726890/corey-haim-actor-death-films-corey-feldman-abuse/.

[39] “Corey Feldman and Corey Haim Discuss Their Abuse – ‘The Two Coreys,’ ” *A&E*, YouTube video, 02:00, posted August 13, 2011, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=BlZxPPzjlb0.

[40] Dorothy Cummings McLean, “Police Close Investigation into Hollywood Pedophilia, Citing Statute of Limitations,” *Life Site News*, November 9, 2017, https://www.lifesitenews.com/news/police-open-investigation-of-hollywood-pedophilia-in-response-to-child-acto.

[41] David Usborne, “Spotlight: Oscars Best Picture Winner tells the Story of The Boston Globe's Finest Moment,” *Independent*, March 1, 2016,

http://www.independent.co.uk/arts-entertainment/films/features/spotlight-oscar-nominated-film-tells-the-story-of-the-boston-globes-finest-moment-a6837561.html.

[42] “Church Allowed Abuse by Priest for Years,” *The Boston Globe*, January 6, 2002, http://www.bostonglobe.com/news/special-reports/2002/01/06/church-allowed-abuse-priest-for-years/cSHfGkTIrAT25qKGvBuDNM/story.html.

[43] McKenna Aiello, http://www.eonline.com/news/904158/corey-feldman-made-a-promise-to-corey-haim-to-expose-alleged-sexual-abuse.

[44] Oliver Thring, “Hollywood’s Evil Secret,” *The London Sunday Times*, May 22, 2016, https://www.thetimes.co.uk/article/hollywoods-evil-secret-mxsb5f3zl.

[45] “Child Actors who Tragically Died too Young,” *ranker.com*, https://www.ranker.com/list/30-child-actors-who-died-young/celebrity-lists.

[46] Maria Puente, “Kevin Spacey Scandal: A Complete list of the 15 Accusers,” *USA Today*, November 7, 2017, https://www.usatoday.com/story/life/2017/11/07/kevin-spacey-scandal-complete-list-13-accusers/835739001/.

[47] Emily Gaudette, “Corey Feldman: ‘Demonic’ Force Motivated Him to Expose Alleged Pedophiles in Hollywood,” *Newsweek*, November 17, 2017, http://www.newsweek.com/corey-feldman-pedophile-abuse-corey-haim-714996.

[48] Dorothy Cummings McLean, https://www.lifesitenews.com/news/police-open-investigation-of-hollywood-pedophilia-in-response-to-child-acto.

[49] Dorothy Cummings McLean, https://www.lifesitenews.com/news/police-open-investigation-of-hollywood-pedophilia-in-response-to-child-acto

[50] Emily Gaudette, http://www.newsweek.com/corey-feldman-pedophile-abuse-corey-haim-714996.

[51] Emily Gaudette, http://www.newsweek.com/corey-feldman-pedophile-abuse-corey-haim-714996.

[52] “An Open Secret,” 2015 documentary, YouTube video, 1:39:36, posted on September 12, 2016, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=t8uccDBgkpA.

[53] Maureen Callahan, “Will People now Believe Corey Feldman about Hollywood Abusers?” *New York Post*, October 18, 2017, https://nypost.com/2017/10/18/will-people-now-believe-corey-feldman-about-hollywood-abusers/.

[54] Holly Millea, “Amy Berg Uncovered Hollywood’s Worst Kept Secret,” *Elle*, November 14, 2014, https://www.elle.com/culture/movies-tv/news/a19842/true-detective/.

[55] Ronnie Scheib, “Film Review: An Open Secret,” *Variety*, November 16, 2014, http://variety.com/2014/film/reviews/film-review-an-open-secret-1201358006/#.

[56] “An Open Secret,” 2015 documentary, https://www.rottentomatoes.com/m/an_open_secret.

[57] Alex Thomas, “Hollywood Executives Specifically Tried to Kill Documentary Exposing Pedophiles,” *D.C. Clothesline*, October 22, 2017, http://www.dcclothesline.com/2017/10/22/hollywood-executives-specifically-tried-to-kill-documentary-exposing-pedophiles-watch-it-now/.

[58] Holly Millea, https://www.elle.com/culture/movies-tv/news/a19842/true-detective/.

[59] Jenna Marotta and Dana Harris, “The Brian Singer Timeline: A History of Allegations and Defenses, from Troubled Films to Sexual Assault Claims,” *IndieWire*, December 8, 2017, http://www.indiewire.com/2017/12/bryan-singer-sexual-assault-rape-allegations-timeline-1201903868/2/.

[60] Hannah Parry, Abigail Miller and Chris Spargo, “X-Men director Bryan Singer Sued for ‘Raping a 17-year-old Boy and Forcing him to Perform Oral Sex on him’ while on a Yacht Party in 2003,” *Daily Mail*, December 8, 2017, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5158061/Bryan-Singer-sued-raping-17-year-old-boy.html.

[61] Jordan Sargent, “The Sad Truths behind the L.A. Party Scene that Took down Bryan Singer,” *defamer.gawker.com*, April 24, 2014, http://defamer.gawker.com/the-sad-truths-behind-the-l-a-party-scene-that-took-do-1567145397.

[62] Michael Egan vs. Bryan Singer case, 4th US District Court of Hawaii, April 16, 2014, *documentcloud.org*, https://www.documentcloud.org/documents/1202887-egan-vs-singer-complaint.html.

[63] Ted Johnson, “Michael Egan, Bryan Singer’s Accuser, Sentenced to Two Years in Prison for Investment Fraud,” *Variety*, December 8, 2015, http://variety.com/2015/biz/news/bryan-singer-michael-egan-sex-abuse-1201656874/.

[64] Anthony Edwards, “Yes Mom, there is something Wrong,” *medium.com*, November 10, 2017, https://medium.com/@anthonyedwards/yes-mom-there-is-something-wrong-f2bcf56434b9.

[65] Hollie McKay, http://www.foxnews.com/entertainment/2013/10/30/experts-pedophiles-in-hollywood-even-bigger-problem-than-in-corey-feldmans-day.html.

[66] Seth Abramovich, “Corey Feldman on Elijah Wood Hollywood Pedophilia Controversy: "I would Love to Name Names,” *The Hollywood Reporter*, May 25,

2016, https://www.hollywoodreporter.com/news/corey-feldman-elijah-wood-hollywood-897403.

[67] Amy Zimmerman, “The Pedophile Director Embraced by Hollywood,” *The Daily Beast*, October 3, 2017, https://www.thedailybeast.com/the-pedophile-director-embraced-by-hollywood.

[68] Amy Zimmerman, https://www.thedailybeast.com/the-pedophile-director-embraced-by-hollywood.

[69] Amy Zimmerman, https://www.thedailybeast.com/the-pedophile-director-embraced-by-hollywood.

[70] Amy Zimmerman, https://www.thedailybeast.com/the-pedophile-director-embraced-by-hollywood.

[71] Marine Fiola, “Top 10 Disturbing Stories about Hollywood’s Pedophile Problem,” *medium.com*, October 21, 2017, http://nglilir.ga/10-disturbing-stories-about-hollywoods-pedophile-problem/2/.

[72] Mark Oliver, “10 Disturbing Stories about Hollywood’s Pedophile Problem, *listverse.com*, February 26, 2017, http://listverse.com/2017/02/26/10-disturbing-stories-about-hollywoods-pedophile-problem/.

[73] Dawn C. Chmielewski, “Child Sexual Abuse Cases Attract Attention,” *Los Angeles Times*, January 8, 2012, http://articles.latimes.com/2012/jan/08/business/la-fi-ct-hollywood-molesters-20120109.

[74] Ryan Faughnder, “Convicted Hollywood Sex Offender Faces New Charges,” *Los Angeles Times*, October 8, 2014, http://www.latimes.com/entertainment/envelope/cotown/la-et-ct-convicted-hollywood-sex-offender-20141008-story.html.

[75] Maureen Callahan, “Why does Hollywood keep Defending Roman Polanski,” *New York Post*, October 5, 2017, https://nypost.com/2017/10/05/why-does-hollywood-keep-defending-roman-polanski/.

[76] Edward Morgan, “How The CIA Used Charles Manson To Debunk Entire 60’s Hippie Movement,” *Prepare for Change*, February 20, 2017, https://prepareforchange.net/2017/02/20/how-the-cia-used-charles-manson-to-debunk-entire-60s-hippie-movement/.

[77] Martha Ross, “The Tragic Hollywood Story of Sharon Tate, Charles Manson’s most Famous Victim,” *The Mercury News*, November 20, 2017, https://www.mercurynews.com/2017/11/20/the-tragic-hollywood-story-of-sharon-tate-charles-mansons-most-famous-victim/.

[78] Randy “Rocket” Cody,”Linkin Park, Charles Manson and the Baby Killers,” *themetalden.com*, November 22, 2017, http://themetalden.com/?p=62392.

[79] Jonathan Romney, “Roman Polanski: The Truth about his Notorious Crime,” *Independent*, October 4, 2008, http://www.independent.co.uk/news/people/profiles/roman-polanski-the-truth-about-his-notorious-sex-crime-949106.html.

[80] Esther Addley and Kate Connolly, “Roman Polanski Arrested in Europe 31 Years after Fleeing Trial,” *The Guardian*, September 27, 2009, https://www.theguardian.com/film/2009/sep/27/roman-polanski-arrest-switzerland-custody.

[81] Urs Geiser, “”Polanski will not be Extradited to the US,” *Swissinfo.ch*, July 12, 2010, https://www.swissinfo.ch/eng/polanski-will-not-be-extradited-to-the-us/15389712.

[82] Scott Roxborough, “Roman Polanski Comments on Rape Case: ‘It’s Over,’” *The Hollywood Reporter*, October 2, 2017, https://www.hollywoodreporter.com/news/roman-polanski-comments-rape-case-1044796.

[83] Ashley Cullins, “Roman Polanski’s Rape Case Moves Forward as Judge Denies Motion to Dismiss,” *The Hollywood Reporter*, August 18, 2017, https://www.hollywoodreporter.com/thr-esq/roman-polanskis-rape-case-continues-as-judge-denies-motion-dismiss-1031007.

[84] Peter Knegt, “Over 100 in Film Community Sign Polanski Petition,” *Indie Wire*, September 29, 2009, http://www.indiewire.com/2009/09/over-100-in-film-community-sign-polanski-petition-55821/.

[85] Jessica Schladebeck, “A Fifth Woman Accuses Roman Polanski of Sexual Abuse, Demands h be Booted from the Academy,” *New York Daily News*, October 21, 2017, http://www.nydailynews.com/news/national/woman-accuses-roman-polanski-sexual-abuse-article-1.3578901.

[86] Jessica Schladebeck, http://www.nydailynews.com/news/national/woman-accuses-roman-polanski-sexual-abuse-article-1.3578901.

[87] Christopher Brennan, “Roman Polanski Avoids Teen Rape Investigation as Prosecutors back down,” *New York Daily News*, November 9, 2017, http://www.nydailynews.com/news/world/polanski-avoids-teen-rape-case-prosecutors-back-article-1.3621225.

[88] Dylan Farrow, “An Open Letter from Dylan Farrow,” *The New York Times*, February 1, 2014, https://kristof.blogs.nytimes.com/2014/02/01/an-open-letter-from-dylan-farrow/.

[89] Sopan Deb, “Dylan Farrow Accuses Woody Allen on Sexual Abuse in a TV Interview,” *The New York Times*, January 18, 2018, https://www.nytimes.com/2018/01/18/movies/dylan-farrow-woody-allen.html.

[90] Sopan Deb, https://www.nytimes.com/2018/01/18/movies/dylan-farrow-woody-allen.html.

[91] William M. Reilly, "Woody: Soon-Yi Suggested Nude Snapshots," *UPI*, March 22, 1993, https://www.upi.com/Archives/1993/03/22/Woody-Soon-Yi-suggested-nude-snapshots/3405732776400/.

[92] Melinda Henneberger, "Connecticut Prosecutor won't File Charges on Woody Allen," *The New York Times*, September 25, 1993, http://www.nytimes.com/1993/09/25/nyregion/connecticut-prosecutor-won-t-file-charges-against-woody-allen.html.

[93] Ronan Farrow, "My Father, Woody Allen, and the Danger of Questions Unasked," *The Hollywood Reporter*, May 11, 2016, https://www.hollywoodreporter.com/news/my-father-woody-allen-danger-892572.

[94] Ronan Farrow, "From Aggressive Overtures to Sexual Assault: Harvey's Weinstein's Accusers tell their Story," *The New Yorker*, October 23, 2017, https://www.newyorker.com/news/news-desk/from-aggressive-overtures-to-sexual-assault-harvey-weinsteins-accusers-tell-their-stories.

[95] Ronan Farrow, https://www.hollywoodreporter.com/news/my-father-woody-allen-danger-892572.

[96] Ronan Farrow, https://www.hollywoodreporter.com/news/my-father-woody-allen-danger-892572.

[97] Ronan Farrow, https://www.hollywoodreporter.com/news/my-father-woody-allen-danger-892572.

[98] "Diane Keaton Defends Woody Allen: 'I Continue to Believe him," *The Hollywood Reporter*, January 29, 2018, https://www.hollywoodreporter.com/news/diane-keaton-defends-woody-allen-i-continue-believe-him-1079921.

[99] "Diane Keaton Defends Woody Allen: 'I Continue to Believe him," https://www.hollywoodreporter.com/news/diane-keaton-defends-woody-allen-i-continue-believe-him-1079921.

[100] Ryan Parker, "Alec Baldwin Compares Dylan Farrow to Character Who Lied about Her Rape in 'To Kill a Mockingbird,'" *The Hollywood Reporter*, January 28, 2018, https://www.hollywoodreporter.com/news/alec-bladwin-compares-dylan-farrow-character-who-lied-her-rape-kill-a-mockingbird-1079172.

[101] "Blind Item #1 – He Made Millions Raping Young Girls," *CrazyDaysandNights.net* (a blog site), November 12, 2017, http://www.crazydaysandnights.net/2017/11/blind-item-1-he-made-millions-from.html#.

[102] “Blind Item #1 – He Made Millions Raping Young Girls,” http://www.crazydaysandnights.net/2017/11/blind-item-1-he-made-millions-from.html#.

[103] “Blind Item #1 – He Made Millions Raping Young Girls,” *CrazyDaysandNights.net*, November 12, 2017, http://www.crazydaysandnights.net/2017/11/blind-item-1-he-made-millions-from.html#.

[104] David Benjamin, “Exposed: Clinton’s Trafficked Massive CIA Shipments of Cocaine when Bill was Governor of Arkansas,” *choiceandtruth.com*, May 15, 2016, http://www.choiceandtruth.com/2016/05/exposed-clintons-trafficked-massive-cia-shipments-of-cocaine-when-bill-was-governor-of-arkansas.html.

[105] “The Clinton Pedophilia Connection - Steve Pieczenik,” YouTube video, 03:57, posted on November 4, 2016, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DDC4CGIHuew.

[106] “Today’s Blind Items – Sex, Drugs & Death – Hollywood, Politics & the Bohemian Grove,” *crazydaysandnights.net*, November 14, 2017, http://www.crazydaysandnights.net/2017/11/todays-blind-items-sex-drugs-death.html.

[107] Oliver Thring, https://www.thetimes.co.uk/article/hollywoods-evil-secret-mxsb5f3zl.

[108] Oliver Thring, https://www.thetimes.co.uk/article/hollywoods-evil-secret-mxsb5f3zl.

[109] Olivia Blair, “Elijah Wood Hounded after his Suggestions Hollywood had Sex Abuse Scandal Comparable to Savile,” *Independent*, December 2, 2016, http://www.independent.co.uk/news/people/elijah-wood-jimmy-savile-hollywood-child-sex-abuse-scandal-paedophiles-a7452041.html.

[110] Jack Cashill, http://mobile.wnd.com/2017/10/weinstein-was-easy-hollywood-pedophiles-wont-be/.

[111] Jayme Deerwester, “’Diff'rent Strokes’ Star Todd Bridges Recounts being Molested to ‘Dr. Oz,’” *USA Today*, November 16, 2017, https://www.usatoday.com/story/life/tv/2017/11/16/diffrent-strokes-star-todd-bridges-recounts-being-molested-dr-oz/872347001/.

[112] Debbie Emery, “Todd Bridges and Corey Feldman Backing Bill to Protect Child Actors from Sexual Predators,” *Radar Online*, April 18, 2012, https://radaronline.com/exclusives/2012/04/todd-bridges-corey-feldman-bill-protect-child-actors-sexual-predators/.

[113] Matt Young, “Abuse of Young Boys Rife in Hollywood after Cocaine Fueled Parties held by Gang of Hollywood Paedophiles,” *news.com.au*, October 20, 2017, http://www.news.com.au/entertainment/celebrity-life/abuse-of-young-

boys-rife-in-hollywood-after-cocaine-fuelled-parties-held-by-gang-of-hollywood-paedophiles/news-story/d17e1e1b924183cd70e41862e343ae7e.

[114] Rosemary Rossi, “Paul Haggis Asks Hollywood, ‘Were People Covering for Pedophiles, Too?’” *The Wrap*, October 22, 2017, https://www.thewrap.com/paul-haggis-asks-hollywood-were-people-covering-for-paedophiles-too/.

[115] Gwilym Mumford, “Reese Witherspoon Alleges Sexual Assault by Director when she was 16,” *The Guardian*, October 17, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/film/2017/oct/17/reese-witherspoon-alleges-sexual-assault-by-director-when-she-was-16.

[116] Kyle Mantyla, “Jon Robberson: A Satanic Pedophile Ring Blackmailed Robin Williams into Making ‘Patch Adams,’” *Right Wrong Watch*, May 16, 2017, http://www.rightwingwatch.org/post/jon-robberson-a-satanic-pedophile-ring-blackmailed-robin-williams-into-making-patch-adams/.

[117] Kyle Mantyla, http://www.rightwingwatch.org/post/jon-robberson-a-satanic-pedophile-ring-blackmailed-robin-williams-into-making-patch-adams/.

[118] Kyle Mantyla, http://www.rightwingwatch.org/post/jon-robberson-a-satanic-pedophile-ring-blackmailed-robin-williams-into-making-patch-adams/.

[119] “Hagmann & Hagmann - 25 June 2015 - Jon Hollywood Insider - Hollywood Is a Satanic Death Cult, *Hagmann & Hagmann Report*, YouTube video, 5:26:47, posted on July 12, 2015, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=A66DX13sLWg.

[120] Roosh Valizadeh, “Dos the Hollywood Elite Use Rituals and Blackmail to Keep its Stars in Line?” *returnofthekings.com*, May 3, 2016, http://www.returnofkings.com/86217/does-the-hollywood-elite-use-rituals-and-sexual-blackmail-to-keep-its-stars-in-line.

[121] “Katt Williams: We are against the Illuminati at our own Detriment,” *Vigilant Citizen*, April 9, 2013, https://vigilantcitizen.com/latestnews/katt-williams-we-are-against-the-illuminati-at-our-own-detriment/.

[122] “When Insiders Expose the Ugly Side of the Entertainment Industry,” *Vigilant Citizen*, June 2, 2010, https://vigilantcitizen.com/vigilantreport/when-insiders-expose-the-ugly-side-of-the-entertainment-industry/.

[123] Roosh Valizadeh, “Dos the Hollywood Elite Use Rituals and Blackmail to Keep its Stars in Line?” *returnofthekings.com*, May 3, 2016, http://www.returnofkings.com/86217/does-the-hollywood-elite-use-rituals-and-sexual-blackmail-to-keep-its-stars-in-line.

[124] “For What It’s Worth” by Buffalo Springfield, *genius.com*, https://genius.com/Buffalo-springfield-for-what-its-worth-lyrics

[125] Tina Marie Griffin, “Beyoncé says she’s Demon Possessed. I Agree,” *counterculturemom.com*, January 3, 2016, https://counterculturemom.com/beyonce-says-shes-demon-possessed-i-agree/.

[126] “10 Musicians who Sold their Soul to the Devil,” *juicenothing.blogspot.com* (a blog site), September 9, 2015, http://juicenothing.blogspot.co.id/2015/09/10-musicians-who-sold-their-soul-to-the-devil.html.

[127] “Lady Gaga: ‘I Regret Selling my Soul to Illuminati Dark Forces,” *anonymous.com*, September 24, 2017, https://anonymous.com.pt/lady-gaga-i-regret-selling-my-soul-to-illuminati-dark-forces/.

[128] “Members of the 27 Club,” *Ranker*, https://www.ranker.com/list/members-of-the-27-club/famous-celebrity-deaths-list.

[129] “Famous People who Died at Age 37,” *who2.com*, http://www.who2.com/famous-people-died-at-age-37-years-old/.

[130] “Pedogate: Breeder Babies, Satanic Child Trafficking Exposed by Former Hollywood Insider – Jon Robberson interviewed by Dave Hodges, *Common Sense Show*, March 26, 2017, http://totalrehash.com/pedogate-breeder-babies-satanic-child-trafficking-exposed-by-former-hollywood-insider-jon-robberson-interview-css-offical-new-logo2/.

[131] Steven Kelly, “Elite Satanists Prepared for Doomsday,” *henrymakow.com*, February 14, 2016, https://www.henrymakow.com/2016/02/Elite%20Satanists-Prepared-for-Armageddon%20.html.

[132] Lizzy Dening, “What Lies Beneath: Going Underground to Uncover Disney’s Deepest Secrets,” *Daily Mail*, January 7, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/travel/article-2533335/The-secrets-Disney-World-Florida-Going-underground-Orlando.html.

[133] James Casbolt, “Underground Bases… Missing Children, Extra-terrestrials,” bibliotecapleyads.net, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_underground25.htm.

[134] “Suppressed/Secret Technology,” *whale.to*, http://www.whale.to/b/technology.html.

[135] Jay Greenberg, “Satanic ‘High Wizard’: Most Hollywood Elites are ‘Satan Worshipping Pedophiles,” *Neon Nettle*, November 2, 2017, http://www.neonnettle.com/features/1232-satanic-high-wizard-most-hollywood-elites-are-satan-worshipping-pedophiles-.

[136] Jay Greenberg, http://www.neonnettle.com/features/1232-satanic-high-wizard-most-hollywood-elites-are-satan-worshipping-pedophiles-.

[137] Jay Greenberg, http://www.neonnettle.com/features/1232-satanic-high-wizard-most-hollywood-elites-are-satan-worshipping-pedophiles-.

[138] Jay Greenberg, http://www.neonnettle.com/features/1232-satanic-high-wizard-most-hollywood-elites-are-satan-worshipping-pedophiles-.

[139] Sarah L. Ashby and Michael Rich, “Video Killed the Radio Star: The Effects of Music Videos on Adolescent Health,” *Adolescent Medicine Clinics*, Vol. 16, Issue 2, p. 371-393, https://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/16111623.

[140] Joachim Hagopian, “The Glories of America’s Wars: ‘Made in Hollywood’ by the Pentagon’s Propaganda Machine, *Global Research*, June 18, 2014, https://www.globalresearch.ca/the-glories-of-americas-wars-made-in-hollywood-by-the-pentagons-propaganda-machine/5387521.

[141] James Tracy, “The CIA and the Media: 50 Facts the World Needs to Know,” *Global Research*, August 25, 2015, https://www.globalresearch.ca/the-cia-and-the-media-50-facts-the-world-needs-to-know/5471956.

[142] Joachim Hagopian, “Fake News and the War on Freedom and Truth,” *Lew Rockwell*, November 26, 2016, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2016/11/joachim-hagopian/fake-news/.

[143] Tom Secker and Matthew Alford, “Documents Expose how Hollywood Promotes War on behalf of the Pentagon, CIA and NSA,” *medium.com*, July 4, 2017, https://medium.com/insurge-intelligence/exclusive-documents-expose-direct-us-military-intelligence-influence-on-1-800-movies-and-tv-shows-36433107c307.

[144] Arjun Walia, “Roseanne Barr: ‘MK Ultra Rules in Hollywood,” *Collective Evolution*, August 21, 2013, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2013/08/21/roseanne-barr-mk-ultra-rules-in-hollywood/.

[145] Alanna Ketler, “Facebook, Google and YouTube Censorship at an all-time high – what ever happened to Free Speech,” Collective Evolution, March 1, 2018, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2018/03/01/facebook-google-youtube-censorship-at-an-all-time-high-what-ever-happened-to-free-speech/.

[146] George Eliason, “Unpacking the Shadowy Outfit Behind 2017’s Biggest Fake News Story,” *Consortium News*, January 28, 2018, https://consortiumnews.com/2018/01/28/unpacking-the-shadowy-outfit-behind-2017s-biggest-fake-news-story/.

[147] Julie Bush, “Hollywood is the most Successful Propaganda Machine of all Time,” *medium.com*, November 17, 2016, https://medium.com/adventures-in-the-peen-trade/bad-artists-bb8dbbde2f87.

[148] “In a Time of Universal Deceit — Telling the Truth is a Revolutionary Act,” *quoteinvestigator.com*, February 24, 2013, https://quoteinvestigator.com/2013/02/24/truth-revolutionary/.

[149] Saba Aziz, “Record High 262 Journalists Imprisoned in 2017: CPJ,” *Aljazeera*, December 13, 2017,

https://www.aljazeera.com/news/2017/12/record-high-262-journalists-imprisoned-2017-cpj-171213085027930.html.

[150] Robert David Steele, "How the Deep State Controls Social Media and Digitally Assassinates Critics," *American Herald Tribune*, November 7, 2017, https://ahtribune.com/culture-media/1992-deep-state-social-media.html.

[151] J.D. Heyes, "New Alternatives to Twitter, Google, Facebook Rapidly Emerging: These Sites won't Censor you," *Natural News*, November 29, 2016, https://www.naturalnews.com/056184_social_media_censorship_alternatives.html.

[152] "Demonic Satanic Mind Control Using Pedophilia, Torture, Drugs and Hypnotism to Create Demonic MK Ultra Sub-Personalities," *energyenhancement.org*, http://www.energyenhancement.org/Demonic-Satanic-Mind-Control-using-Pedophilia-Torture-Drugs-and-Hypnotism-Demonic-MKUltra-Sub-Personalities.htm.

[153] Sharon Begley, "Why our Brains Love Horror Movies: Fear, Catharsis, a Sense of Doom," *Daily Beast*, October 25, 2011, https://www.thedailybeast.com/why-our-brains-love-horror-movies-fear-catharsis-a-sense-of-doom.

[154] " Violent Media Numb Viewers to the Pain of Others." Science Daily, February 20, 2009, www.sciencedaily.com/releases/2009/02/090219202831.htm.

[155] "Marilyn Monroe: Mind Control Sex Slave," *mediamonarch.com*, June 9, 2013, http://mediamonarchy.com/2013/06/marilyn-monroe-mind-controlled-sex-slave/.

[156] Nicole Canfield, "Hollywood Actress Jayne Mansfield a Celebrity Satanist?" *exemplore.com*, March 6, 2018, https://exemplore.com/misc/Jayne-Mansfield-Bombshell-Old-Hollywood-Actress-and-Satanist.

[157] "Your Favorite Celebrities are Spirit Cookers, Satanists, and Friends with Satanist Marina Abramovic," YouTube video, 26:09, posted May 25, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=XZdRNSuA5Xk.

[158] "Project Monarch: 'Sex Kitten' (Beta Programming)," *Hollywood Subliminals* (a Blog site), https://hollywoodsubliminals.wordpress.com/project-monarch/sex-kitten/singers/.

[159] Whitney Webb, "Pedophile Ring Exposed: Hollywood, the Vatican, and the 1% 'Elites,'" *The Millennium Report*, October 25, 2017, http://themillenniumreport.com/2017/10/the-global-pedophile-ring-exposed-hollywood-the-vatican-and-the-1-elites/.

[160] "Miley Cyrus – BB Talk," YouTube video, 04:31, posted December 11, 2015, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DfwJA0f0UTg.

[161] Fritz Springmeier, *Bloodlines of the Illuminati* (Westminster, Colorado: Ambassador House, 1998), “The Disney Bloodline,” http://www.lovethetruth.com/books/13_bloodlines/disney.htm.

[162] Tony Phillips, “The Secret Song: ‘Coco’ and Persistent Rumors of Disney’s Birth,” *Signature*, December 1, 2017, http://www.signature-reads.com/2017/12/the-secret-song-coco-and-persistent-rumors-of-disneys-birth/.

[163] Moe, “Walt Disney: The Gnostic Masonic Rosicrucian,” *gnosticwarrior.com*, March 28, 2015, https://gnosticwarrior.com/walt-disney.html.

[164] “Famous Non-Masons: Walt Disney,” *masonicinfo.com*, http://www.masonicinfo.com/famousnon.htm.

[165] Richard Gunderman, “The Manipulation of the American Mind: Edward Bernays and the Birth of Public Relations,” *The Conversation*, July 9, 2015, http://theconversation.com/the-manipulation-of-the-american-mind-edward-bernays-and-the-birth-of-public-relations-44393.

[166] Fritz Springmeier, http://www.lovethetruth.com/books/13_bloodlines/disney.htm.

[167] Fritz Springmeier, http://www.lovethetruth.com/books/13_bloodlines/disney.htm.

[168] Chris Pleasance, “How Walt Disney Helped ‘Blacklist’ his own Staff as Communists at the Height of the Cold War is Revealed in FBI File,” *Daily Mail*, September 25, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3248533/Special-agent-Mickey-Mouse-Walt-Disney-s-close-relationship-J-Edgar-Hoover-FBI-revealed.html.

[169] Katrina Onstad, “A Life of Anger,” *The Guardian*, October 27, 2006, https://www.theguardian.com/film/2006/oct/27/londonfilmfestival2006.londonfilmfestival.

[170] Kenneth Anger, *Hollywood Babylon II* (New York: Dutton, 1984), p. 192.

[171] Fritz Springmeier, http://www.lovethetruth.com/books/13_bloodlines/disney.htm.

[172] Joseph Sciambra, “The Child Star of Disney: A Tale of Perversity, Tragedy and Death,” *josephsciambra.com*, http://josephsciambra.com/the-child-stars-of-disney-a-tale-of-perversity-tragedy-and-death/.

[173] Leonard Mosely, *Disney’s World* (New York: Stein and Day, 1985), p. 10, https://www.amazon.com/Disneys-World-Biography-Leonard-Mosley/dp/0812885147.

[174] Fritz Springmeier, http://www.lovethetruth.com/books/13_bloodlines/disney.htm.

[175] Fritz Springmeier, http://www.lovethetruth.com/books/13_bloodlines/disney.htm.

[176] Fritz Springmeier, http://www.lovethetruth.com/books/13_bloodlines/disney.htm.

[177] "Another Side of the Music Industry: Monarch Mind Control," *Collective Evolution*, October 8, 2013, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2013/10/08/monarch-mind-control-popular-music/.

[178] Ralph S. Izard, "Walt Disney: Master of Laughter and Learning," *Peabody Journal of Education*, July 1967, 45 (1), p. 36-41, https://www.jstor.org/stable/1491447.

[179] Fritz Springmeier, http://www.lovethetruth.com/books/13_bloodlines/disney.htm.

[180] Forbes Fortune 500, *fortune.com*, http://fortune.com/fortune500/disney/

[181] Fritz Springmeier, http://www.lovethetruth.com/books/13_bloodlines/disney.htm.

[182] Forbes Fortune 500, http://fortune.com/fortune500/disney/.

[183] Cynthia Littleton and Brian Steinberg, "Disney to Buy 20th Century Fox Assets for $52.4 Billion in Historic Hollywood Merger," *Variety*, December 14, 2017, http://variety.com/2017/biz/news/disney-fox-merger-deal-52-4-billion-merger-1202631242/.

[184] Joachim Hagopian, "The Glories of America's Wars: 'Made in Hollywood' by the Pentagon's Propaganda Machine," Global Research, June 18, 2014, https://www.globalresearch.ca/the-glories-of-americas-wars-made-in-hollywood-by-the-pentagons-propaganda-machine/5387521.

[185] Tyler Durden, "Veteran Disney Executive Arrested on Child Sex Abuse Charges," Zero Hedge, December 9, 2017, https://www.zerohedge.com/news/2017-12-09/disney-executive-arrested-child-sex-abuse.

[186] Braddon Mendelson, "Disney Acquires Porn Company," *The Skunk*, June 23, 2013, https://theskunk.org/2013/06/disney-acquires-porn-company/.

[187] Joseph Sciambra, http://josephsciambra.com/the-child-stars-of-disney-a-tale-of-perversity-tragedy-and-death/.

[188] Frida Garza, "10 Very Compelling Reasons why everyone from 'The Mickey Mouse Club' is in the Illuminati," *complex.com*, April 2, 2015,

http://www.complex.com/pop-culture/2015/04/the-mickey-mouse-club-famous-members/.

[189] "Another Side of the Music Industry: Monarch Mind Control," http://www.collective-evolution.com/2013/10/08/monarch-mind-control-popular-music/.

[190] "Lindsay Lohan's Strange Accent: Another Telling Sign of Mind Control Slave," *Vigilant Citizen*, November 3, 2016, https://vigilantcitizen.com/latestnews/lindsay-lohans-strange-accent-another-telling-sign-mind-control-slave/.

[191] Paul Joseph Watson, The Alex Jones Channel, "Breaking: Shia LaBeouf is an MK Ultra Mind Control Victim," YouTube video, 04:49, posted on January 27, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=f5YF_xPwALs.

[192] Gordon Muir, "United Nations - U.N. Agenda 21 depopulation of 95% of World by Year 2030 is now Underway, Signed and Approved by 200 World Leaders at the Rio, Brazil Earth Summit in 1992," *surviveunagenda21depopulation.com*, http://www.surviveunagenda21depopulation.com/.

[193] Joe Imbriano, "The True Legacy of Hugh Hefner: The Founder of American Immorality and the King of Filth," *The Fullerton Informer*, October 2, 2017, https://thefullertoninformer.com/the-true-legacy-of-hugh-hefner-the-founder-of-american-immorality-and-the-king-of-filth/.

[194] "Was Hugh Hefner a Paedophile?" *freeandfearless.org.uk*, November 13, 2017, https://www.freeandfearless.org.uk/hugh-hefner-paedophile/.

[195] Prince Ray, "The Homicide of Sandy Bland, the Omegas & down the Rabbit Hole," *Black Assassins*, https://mindcontrolblackassassins.com/tag/hugh-hefner/.

[196] Dana Schuster, "Hefner's Former Valet Reflects on 'Pig Nights' with Hookers and Hef," *New York Post*, September 30, 2017, https://nypost.com/2017/09/30/hefners-former-valet-reflects-on-pig-nights-with-hookers-and-hef/.

[197] Rupert Hawksley, "So, Jack why were there Secret Tunnels to the Playboy Mansion?" *The Telegraph*, March 31, 2015, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/culture/film/film-news/11505950/playboy-mansion-jack-nicholson-secret-tunnels.html.

[198] Randy "Rocket" Cody, "Chester Bennington – Was he Killed in a Snuff Film," *themetalden.com*, November 20, 2017, http://themetalden.com/?p=62333.

[199] Randy "Rocket" Cody, "Linkin Park, Black Magic & CIA Predictive Programming," *themetalden.com*, December 17, 2017,

http://themetalden.com/?p=63420.

[200] “Hefner and Trump; Gay People; CIA Mind Control,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, October 1, 2017, http://aanirfan.blogspot.co.id/2017/09/hefner-and-trump-gay-people-cia-mind.html.

[201] “Hefner and Trump; Gay People; CIA Mind Control, http://aanirfan.blogspot.co.id/2017/09/hefner-and-trump-gay-people-cia-mind.html.

[202] Prince Ray, “Bill Cosby Part IV, Selma, the Illuminati Movie, Rise of the Black Lesbianic, Dick Gregory & Huey Newton,” *mindcontrolblackassassins.com*, January 27, 2015, https://mindcontrolblackassassins.com/2015/01/27/bill-cosby-part-iv-selma-the-illuminati-movie-rise-of-the-black-lesbianic-satanic-cabal-dick-gregory-huey-p-newton/.

[203] “Police: ‘Pedophile’ Hugh Hefner was Murdered,” David Zublick’s *America Talks*, YouTube video, 37:15, posted October 1, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=3PotGJeYDRQ.

[204] “’Reincarnated’ Woman Sues Hefner for $3 Billion,” *TMZ*, July 9, 2009, http://www.tmz.com/2009/07/09/reincarnated-woman-sues-hefner-for-3-billion/.

[205] Sheri Denise Allred Los Angeles Superior Court Complaint filed in July 2009, http://www.aolcdn.com/tmz_documents/0709_hugh_hefner.pdf.

[206] Prince Ray, https://mindcontrolblackassassins.com/2015/01/27/bill-cosby-part-iv-selma-the-illuminati-movie-rise-of-the-black-lesbianic-satanic-cabal-dick-gregory-huey-p-newton/.

[207] Randy “Rocket” Cody, http://themetalden.com/?p=63420.

[208] “’Yes, 100 pc I believe both Chris Cornell and Chester Bennington were Murdered,’” Randy “Rocket” Cody interviewed by Monica K. Lerintiu, *Romania Journal*, August 29, 2017, http://www.romaniajournal.ro/exclusive-yes-100-i-believe-both-chris-cornell-and-chester-bennington-were-murdered/.

[209] “The Dark Side of Steven Spielberg & Hollywood,” YouTube video, 40:21, posted February 20, 2018, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=7C7mL6oOZFo.

[210] Matt Agorist, “Hollywood Insider Speaks out, Claims a Global Pedophile Ring Controls Hollywood,” *The Free Thought Project*, May 19, 2017, http://thefreethoughtproject.com/hollywood-insider-speaks-out-claims-global-pedophile-ring-controls-hollywood/.

[211] Joachim Hagopian, “The Elite’s Social Engineering Endgame: A Battle between the Sexes where Humanity loses,” *sott.net*, May 30, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/319288-The-elites-social-engineering-endgame-A-battle-between-the-sexes-where-humanity-loses.

[212] Camilla Turner, “Teach Toddlers about Transgender Issues, National Union of Teachers Say,” *The Telegraph*, April 12, 2017, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/education/2017/04/17/teach-toddlers-transgender-issues-national-union-teachers-say/.

[213] “Our Children Are Being Satanically Sexualized by the Pedophile ‘Elites,’” *humansarefree.com*, April 2014, http://humansarefree.com/2014/04/our-children-are-being-satanically.html.

[214] Robert David Steele interviewed by Sheila Zilinsky, *Weekend Vigilante,* 53:17, December 5, 2017, http://www.weekendvigilante.com/former-u-s-spy-drops-bombshell-will-make-hair-stand-end/.

[215] Aleks Eror, “This Man has Proof that Obama is Gay,” *Vice*, October 11, 2012, https://www.vice.com/sv/article/5gavex/this-man-has-proof-that-obama-is-gay.

[216] Claudia Thompson, “Freemasonry the Ultimate Goal of the Illuminati,” *religiouscounterfeits.org*, http://www.religiouscounterfeits.org/Freemasonry_Goal.htm.

[217] Kate Sheridan, “When will we have another World War? History says soon according to new Mathematics Study,” Newsweek, March 1, 2018, http://www.newsweek.com/when-will-we-have-another-world-war-history-says-soon-according-new-822398.

[218] “Hawaii False Flag to Start WWIII?” *The Daily Conspiracy*, January 17, 2018, https://thedailyconspiracy.com/2018/01/17/hawaii-false-flag-to-start-wwiii/.

[219] Dan Falvey, “Warnings Global Financial Crash may be Imminent as US Stock Market Hits Two Year Low,” *Express*, February 5, 2018, https://www.express.co.uk/finance/city/914478/financial-crash-us-stock-market-trading-dow-jones-Nasdaq-global-money.

[220] “Eyes Wide Shut (1999),” *IMDb*, http://www.imdb.com/title/tt0120663/.

[221] Adam Gorightly, “An Interpretation of Kubrick’s Eyes Wide Shut,” *konformist.com*, May 2000, https://www.konformist.com/flicks/eyeswideshut.htm.

[222] Carl James, “The Stanley Kubrick Conspiracy – Part 6: Eyes Wide Shut,” *The Truth Seeker’s Guide* (a blog site), February 10, 2014, http://thetruthseekersguide.blogspot.co.id/2014/02/the-stanley-kubrick-conspiracy-part-6.html.

[223] Troy D. McLachlan, “Stanley Kubrick and the Saturn Death Cult,” *The Saturn Death Cult*, http://saturndeathcult.com/crimes-of-the-saturn-death-cult/stanley-kubrick-and-the-saturn-death-cult/.

[224] “Nicole Kidman: ‘Stanley Kubrick Said Pedophiles Run the World,’” *SGT Report*, February 25, 2018, https://www.sgtreport.com/articles/2018/2/25/nicole-kidman-stanley-kubrick-said-pedophiles-run-the-world.

[225] “Nicole Kidman: ‘Stanley Kubrick Said Pedophiles Run the World,’” https://www.sgtreport.com/articles/2018/2/25/nicole-kidman-stanley-kubrick-said-pedophiles-run-the-world.

[226] Bronte Baxter, “Is George Carlin Dead because he spoke of the New World Order?” *brontebaxter.wordpress.com*, June 24, 2008, https://brontebaxter.wordpress.com/2008/06/24/is-george-carlin-dead-because-he-spoke-of-the-new-world-order/.

[227] David Thorn, “Hollywood Babylon: The Entertainment Industry’s Dark Side,” *American Free Press*, January 7, 2013, http://americanfreepress.net/hollywood-babylon-the-entertainment-industrys-dark-side/.

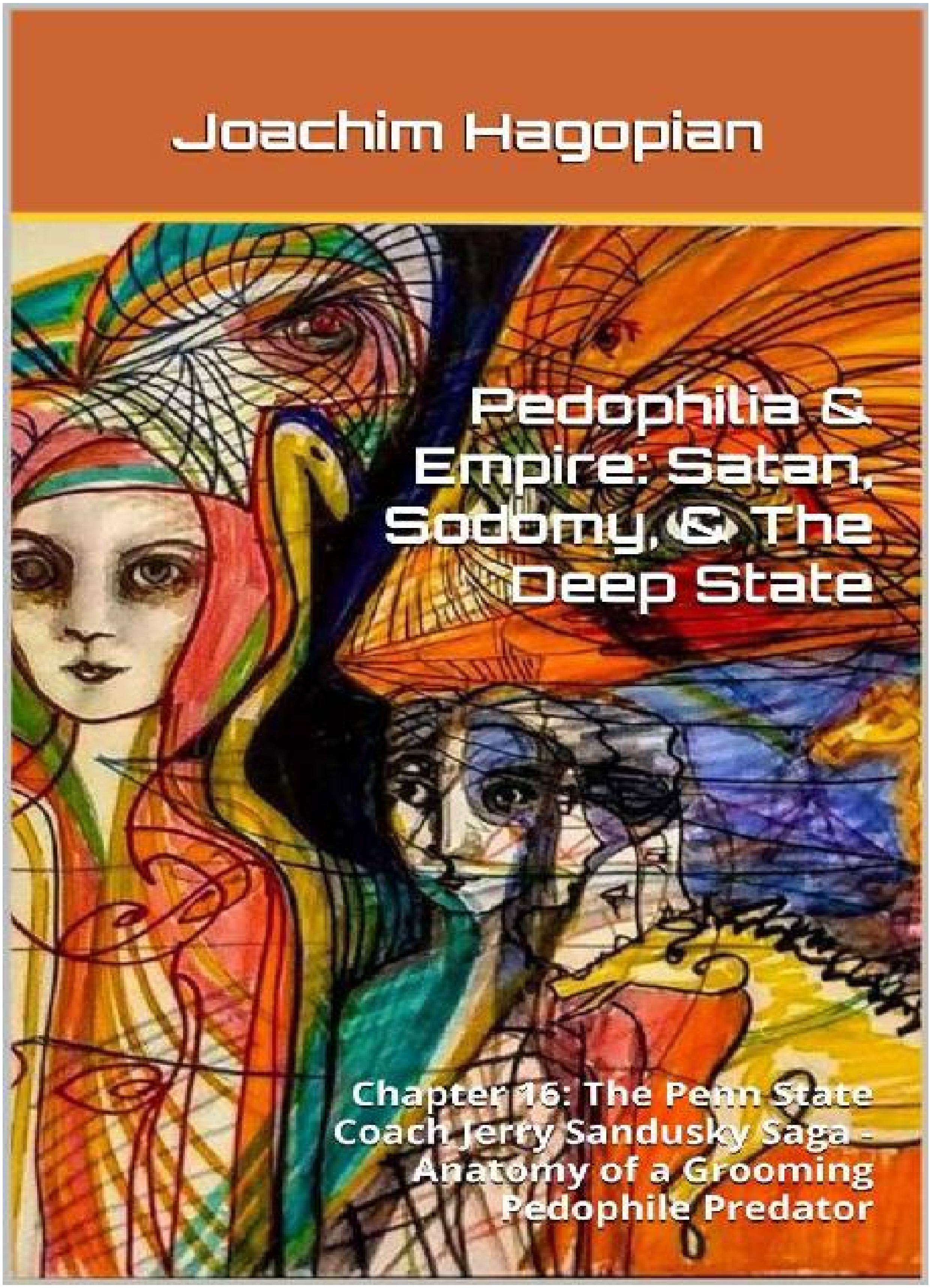

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 16: The Penn State Coach Jerry Sandusky Saga - Anatomy of a Grooming Pedophile Predator

Section 4: Pedophilia Saturates the World of Sports

Where big money and power rule, so does pedophilia. No human arena on this earth is immune, the multibillion dollar industry of Big Sports of course no exception. From complicit owners, financiers and governing bodies of both professional sports worldwide as well as amateur sports at all levels, from Olympics to college football to national team sports like soccer (football outside US), and girls/women’s gymnastics and swimming, one by one all have been rocked by unprecedented major pedophilia scandals in recent years. And by far the biggest single sports event in the United States, the NFL Super Bowl, also offers child sex traffickers their busiest moneymaking day of the year. What does all this say about America’s favorite pastime, from their living rooms across the nation fixated on the boob tube, passively spectating the bread and circus gladiators, while Luciferian elitists raking in billions are ravenously raping hundreds of children for their after-game dessert? It’s a sick world that literally feeds off children to provide such demonically controlled decadence when our most defenseless population is being savagely served on the elite’s hedonistic pleasure menu. Just as in Hollywood, politics, religion, and the military, Lucifer’s diabolical machine knows no limits extending its unthinkable perversions to every avenue of human commerce, endeavor and amusement.

This section of the book will detail how pedophilia has corruptively invaded the world of sports, in a plethora of venues, beginning with the pedophilia scandal that painfully shook and shattered Happy Valley, still dividing Pennsylvania State University and the State College community today.[1] How the school’s beloved head football Coach Joe Paterno and top administrative officers covered up the pedophilia crimes of his assistant coach for decades with absolutely no regard for countless child victims is fully laid bare and exposed in this chapter. Also uncovered is how the Coach Sandusky scandal maintained ties connecting the New York-Philadelphia-DC pipeline that extends to the most prominent political elite operating the Eastern Seaboard child sex trafficking network.

Previous chapters have explored the inner workings and dynamics of the global child sex trafficking network, chiefly orchestrated by CIA pimps operating covertly through CIA front organizations like the US State Department, USAID and hundreds of charitable organizations, aided and abetted at every turn by top government officials like pedo-presidents and pedo-prime ministers along with secret societies from Freemasonry and Illuminati to those belonging to the Catholic Church led by the pope and his fellow Vatican Luciferians. We've caught glimpses of how this mammoth worldwide pedophilia operation is used as a blackmailing machine vis-a-vis the Zionist-Mossad Epstein Orgy Island operation selecting, grooming and ultimately owning and controlling the Luciferian system's most powerful leaders… and how these most powerful leaders like the demonic worshipping pedophilic families the Bushes and Clintons and their criminal cabal directly oversee the global sex trafficking operations.

And now through the crimes of longtime Penn State University football Coach Jerry Sandusky, we will delve deeper down the rabbit hole to glimpse the anatomy of how individual pedophiles carefully select and groom their child victims and how they are subsequently able for decades to continue getting away with heinously preying on defenseless children. But lastly, in each of this section's two chapters, our focus on pedophilia within the sports world will explicitly illuminate how each institutionalized scandal is neither randomly isolated nor operates in a vacuum independent of each other. Each and every one of them are part of the larger interconnected, systemic Luciferian whole that interlocks top levels of international and national governing bodies, organized crime, corporate media, religion, central banking and private industry.

Chapter 16: The Penn State Coach Jerry Sandusky Saga - Anatomy of a Grooming Pedophile Predator Enabled by a Legendary Head Coach, a Powerhouse Football Team and Respected University that Shamefully Values Winning over Children’s Safety

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission
http://www.noramaccoby.com/

74-year old Jerry Sandusky is now the life imprisoned grandson of Polish immigrants and a Polish American father who was the director of a children’s sports center for over 30 years in the family’s hometown of Washington, located in southwestern Pennsylvania not far from America’s steel capital Pittsburgh. Unless he lives to be 98, Sandusky is destined to die in prison for his diabolical sins against children. For his father’s contribution to providing recreational sports activities to local youth for multiple generations in Washington, Pennsylvania, likely enhanced by his son’s coaching stature as longtime defensive coordinator for the prestigious Penn State Nittany Lions football team, Arthur Sandusky was voted into the Pennsylvania Sports Hall of Fame in 1989,[2] seven years before his death. With Jerry Sandusky’s mother an Irish Catholic homemaker from a small coal mining town, by all appearance sake, Jerry enjoyed a wholesome, clean-cut upbringing within the quintessential all-American small town suburban setting, though in Sandusky’s 1999 autobiography *Touched*,[3] the convicted serial pedophile described himself growing up “an awkward, shy” kid. Residing upstairs on the second floor of the Brownson House, the youth center run by his father constantly supplying a wide array of sports for local children, in high school Jerry Sandusky exceled at football, basketball and baseball before attending nearby Penn State University where he emerged as the starting defensive end from 1963-65, nurtured by then assistant coach Joe Paterno.[4]

Other than a brief stint in the Army at the tail end of WWII, Jerry's longtime boss Coach Joe Paterno never held a job outside of football. The ex-Brown University quarterback straight out of the Ivy League took to coaching America's most popular game. In 1950 at the behest of his former Brown turned Penn State Coach Rip Engle, Paterno arrived in Happy Valley as a 24-year old assistant coach.[5] While Sandusky played under him in the mid-60s, in 1966 new head coach Paterno made Sandusky his graduate assistant. With the exception of yearlong stints as assistant coach at Juniata College and Boston University in 1967-68, the famed Penn State head coach hired the young Sandusky in 1969 as his assistant linebacker coach, officially commencing Sandusky's 32-year tenure as Paterno's longest running assistant coach.

Joe Paterno's legendary record at Penn State piling up 409 wins from 1966-2011 distinguished "JoePa" as major college football's all-time winningest coach in US history.[6] With a total of 61 consecutive years as a Penn State coach, and the longest running coach of a single team with the most wins ever as a head coach that included 5 undefeated seasons, two national championships, 24 bowl wins and roughly two of his every three years rankings in the top 10, Sandusky's boss for over three decades, is indisputably recognized as America's greatest college football coach in a rich history of the sport dating back to near a century and a half.

And as the right hand assistant to America's greatest coach ever, Sandusky enjoyed Emeritus status after his official 1999 retirement seemingly right up to his November 2011 pedophilia indictment, able to freely utilize all Penn State athletic facilities in post-retirement.[7] Ostensibly this privilege was granted to Jerry Sandusky as recognition for playing such a crucial role in Penn State's gridiron prowess for all but two seasons of Paterno's near half century mark as the Penn State head coach, perennially ranked among the nation's top five teams in defense, in large part due to Sandusky's defensive specialty and expertise. Known as "Linebacker U," with Penn State's dominant success came multiple head coach job offers to earn millions elsewhere - at Marshall, Temple, Maryland[8] and a final offer at Virginia in 2000.[9] But Sandusky's loyalty to both his Penn State home and his legendary boss compelled the defensive specialist to turn them all down.

Though loyalty to his home State and a football legend sound admirable, the bottom line, real reason Sandusky remained at Penn State is far more sinister. As a serial pedophile and chronic sexual predator, the years that Coach Sandusky meticulously invested to establish his familiar hometown roots and glory offered him a much needed, protective safety net and convenient steady stream of victims with his founding the charitable nonprofit organization the Second Mile in 1977 to help at-risk youth.[10] But instead of providing a safe nurturing home environment for troubled kids as a vital social service outsource, the constant flow of foster care placements at Second Mile were systematically targeted, only placing kids at further risk of abusive harm as the renowned Penn State coach's easy prey. At its height with an annual budget into the millions servicing tens of thousands of disadvantaged children,[11] Sandusky carnivorously used his Second Mile group home residents and its numerous programs and camps to help himself to seconds, thirds and fourths, plucking child after child from his very own pedo-pipeline feeding his diabolically insatiable appetite for younger boys.

Sandusky also strategically ensured that Penn State as his heavily endowed employer merge its mutual interests with his own Second Mile charity in a convenient marriage that facilitated Sandusky’s full access to funding resources, university athletic facilities and ongoing co-sponsorship services leading ultimately to compromised corruption and soon enough a built-in mutually self-serving interest to conceal child sex crimes. Countless honorary board members, top officials and wealthy donors were indelibly affiliated with both.[12] [13] Sandusky and his “invisible” crime boss partners still-at-large engineered their pedophilic enterprises whereby should the pedo-coach ever become exposed and go down in flames, so would Penn State, paralleling the typical sexual blackmail dynamics of compromised public politicians, thereby guaranteeing Sandusky’s protection and assured cover-up.[14] And as the pedophilia operation played out for decades, Penn State’s top brass headed by compromised, coaching god Joe Paterno would have to follow suit, pretending Jerry wasn’t sodomizing little boys while looking the other way for nearly a half century, protecting the pedophile in order to preserve both the school’s venerable reputation and football program’s continued success and national dominance.

Over the ensuing years at Penn State, child rapist Jerry Sandusky and his wife Dotty raised six adopted children (all boys but one) and countless foster kids at State College.[15] Misusing his own children as yet another easiest available source for victims, for years the Penn State coach incestually abused at least one of his own sons Matt[16] and likely another Jeffrey arrested in 2017 on 14 counts of child sex abuse and, like father, like son, is currently serving a 3.5-7 year prison sentence (only his son’s sexual proclivity is underage girls instead of little boys).[17]

Matt Sandusky was born in 1978 to an alcoholic abusive biological father and a mother that divorced when he was six, living then moving with his mom Debra and younger brother and sister into his maternal grandparents' home with a physically abusive grandfather.[18] As disadvantaged youth 7-year old Matt and his year younger brother Ron Heichel were referred to Sandusky's charity Second Mile. But it wasn't long before Matt was quickly snatched up from the predator coach's pedo-pipeline. Sandusky singled out Matt and began stalking and grooming him, at first wining and dining him with gifts and invitations to attend both home and away Penn State football games and practices, given so much positive attention from the famous big man on campus.[19] Those were the grooming months leading up to the sexual abuse that began at age 8.[20] Without his mother's permission the celebrity coach would often show up at will and take Matt out of school.[21] Matt suffered in silence through seven more years of rape and molestation at the hands of Jerry Sandusky.

The severely abused, troubled 16-year old teenager ditched school one day with a friend and headed for their usual hangout, an old barn where inside they encountered a parked truck. They got in and while smoking cigarettes, for childish kicks, impulsively foolishly placed a lit piece of paper inside the glove compartment that caused a fire to spread and burn down the barn.[22] After the unintended arson incident, while Coach Sandusky was in California preparing to play Oregon in the 1995 Rose Bowl, he personally phoned the juvenile court judge requesting Matt's placement in his foster home, separating Matt from his biological family. Sandusky also sent a former Penn State player Matt knew to personally present the juvenile court and sexual predator's ultimatum, forcing Matt to choose between juvenile lockup and adult prison at 18 or the Sandusky foster home. Trapped between a rock and a hard place, Matt chose the hard place – his abuser's home.

What's extraordinary is that while her son was yanked ("stolen" from his mother's point of view) from her home, Centre County Children's Services authorized Matt's mother to become a foster parent for her nephew placed inside her home.[23] So Debra Long was deemed a fit enough parent to take care of a child not hers, yet unfit to take care of her own biological child she'd raised since birth, all because a famous, stalking control freak-pedo-predator pulled a few strings to gain closer, easier access to his child prey. According to Matt's brother Ron, up till the barn burning incident, the two Heichel brothers were extremely close and inseparable, though Ron always knew the renowned coach favored Matt while totally ignoring him. But once Matt was sent to live in the Sandusky foster home, everything changed. In 1995, just four months after living with his abuser, Matt attempted suicide. Jerry Sandusky's first words out of his mouth to Matt at the hospital taunted:

You couldn't even kill yourself right.[24]

Matt's school based probation officer Terry Trude grew so concerned about Matt's safety while briefly living under the Sandusky roof that she was prompted to write a letter to the judge recommending that Matt be transferred to a different foster home:

The probation department has some serious concerns about the juvenile's safety and his current progress in placement with the Sandusky family.[25]

After raising her son the first 16 years of his life only to lose him to a pedophile who'd been abusing him from age 8 to 15, while living with the predator coach, Matt's biological mother Debra Long was permitted only a half day visit per month with her son. She vociferously fought and clashed with Children Services that never bothered to listen to her concerns. As the lone voice and first to express worry over Sandusky's predatory nature as far back as 1994, even prior to Matt's failed suicide attempt, Debra accused Jerry Sandusky of stalking and controlling her son.[26] One day she point blank asked Matt if Sandusky ever touched him inappropriately and Matt told her he "didn't want to talk about it." When his brother Ron would call the Sandusky house to try and speak to Matt, Dottie Sandusky would answer telling him he was no longer Matt's brother.[27] In response to the opposition from both the boy's biological mother and probation officer, the predator next seized opportunity to cement his relationship with Matt, effectively cutting him off from his own biological family by permanently adopting him upon reaching his 18th birthday to become the youngest of Jerry and Dottie's six adopted kids.

Years later even when his adopted father was being investigated and Matt was questioned by police as well as the 2009 grand jury, he kept his chronic victimization secret, denying he was ever abused in order to protect his abuser. While still a young boy, Matt had long resigned himself to being the chronic rape victim as a necessary tradeoff to being accepted into an otherwise esteemed, stable, affluent family household where plentiful food was always on the table.[28] During the 2012 trial, Jerry Sandusky was still preying on Matt's conflicted sense of family loyalty, pressuring and rehearsing with the then 34-year old married father of three, this time being "groomed" as a key defense witness to deny any and all abuse charges against his adoptive father.[29] It wasn't until Matt was sitting in the courtroom right there with his unified Sandusky family all in loyal support of their perverted patriarch observing the emotional testimony of Victim #4 (whom Matt knew) bravely reporting his horrendous abuse identical to Matt's own, that he finally decided he could no longer live the lie.[30]

Matt's reticence to disclose his long term abuse is extremely common amongst young victimized boys and adolescents.

Sexually abused male victims frequently are so traumatized with shame, guilt and confusion, for years they often avoid telling others, even their mothers. Gender roles for young males in American culture does not equate to being a victim.[31] Manhood and victimhood simply do not intermesh. Males also are far less apt to seek help out of fear of being stigmatized as weakness. When boys are perpetrated by an adult male, it often brings up feelings that threaten their sexual identity, i.e., fear of being gay. Homophobia is still rampant despite the LGBT movement, and being judged gay by peers often keeps young male victims locked into going it alone, suffering the abuse in silence.

But at 33 with a family of his own, for his own survival Matt Sandusky had come to realize that he must come clean and begin finally telling the truth. So he defected, approaching the prosecution team halfway through the trial to admit he'd lied in he past but was now willing to disclose his painful, tortuous history in court, in effect checkmating his infamous, abusive dad from taking the witness stand in his own self-defense. News by way of a recent police recording of Matt's sexual abuse was released to the public the same day the jury began its twenty hour two day deliberation. And once the defense attorneys learned Sandusky's own son was willing to testify against his father, the serial pedophile's fate was sealed with a guilty verdict on June 22, 2012.[32]

Switching sides to dare speak the truth instantaneously estranged Matt from his adoptive mother Dottie and his five siblings, all still feebly claiming Jerry's innocence.[33] And ever since, Matt Sandusky's credibility and honor have been challenged and attacked to the point that he and his immediate family have been harassed and threatened numerous times, incurring the venomous wrath of legions of diehard Paterno Penn State supporters. During an hour long Oprah Winfrey interview in 2014, Matt expressed regret about disclosing his seven years of abuse, because it put his wife and kids in danger:

> *I can handle people attacking me; I handled the abuse… I can take it. My wife is an innocent. My children… they're innocent.* [34]

Matt said that one of his adopted brothers even admitted to him that he too was molested, and encouraged Matt if he were a victim to go to the police. But that brother later turned on Matt, accusing him of lying and betraying the Sandusky family. Betrayed first by his predator father, Matt felt betrayed a second time by the Sandusky family, yet on Oprah still acknowledged his loyalty and indebtedness to them:

> *They cared about me, they loved me. I owed that family everything. Everything I was and am I owed to them.*[35]

This is the kind of torn ambivalence he has lived with for most of his life. As both therapy as well as delivering to the world his inside story as an abuse survivor, Matt authored the book *Undaunted.*[36] He has become a courageous public advocate using his own harrowing experience to speak out against the rampant child sexual abuse epidemic gripping both this nation and world and with his second wife Kim today heads the child advocacy foundation called Peaceful Hearts.[37]

In retrospect, in December 2011 a vindicated Debra Long lamented:

> *If they'd have listened, these boys* [Sandusky Victims 1-10] *didn't have to be abused. They would have found the problem back then, and a whole lot of kids wouldn't be victims now. We couldn't get anything done. It was Jerry Sandusky. He started The Second Mile home. He could've done nothing wrong.*[38]

The pedophile coach’s total number of rape victims may never be known, but with virtually an unlimited supply of kids spanning four decades at his disposal, and the final toll of pedo-casualties perhaps into the hundreds, no wonder Coach Sandusky chose to stay put in his insulated PA comfort zone, safely shielded by a famous boss and administration that valued winning football games over vulnerable children’s lives. Between taking refuge within the enabling Penn State University system and his readymade Second Mile charity programs delivering a constant fresh supply of young meat to ravage, behind his cultivated, saintly, altruistic image, the devilish Sandusky created a pedo-farm paradise for himself, that is until his despicable crime spree bubble finally popped in November 2011. Meanwhile, firmly ensconced and adoringly embraced by his State College community, the pedo-monster also made sure he was a “faithful” church-goer every Sunday at his local St. Paul’s Methodist Church,[39] describing his family as “old-fashioned” led by his always “stand by her man,” supportive wife.[40] The worst perverts so often hide behind religion and their “wholesome” Americana roots.

Jerry Sandusky calculatingly used his “big goofball” persona as the coach who never quite grew up to strategically grant him a license to regularly engage in roughhouse, “boys will be boys” horseplay in order to lay the initial grooming groundwork to establish increasing level of physical contact with his too many to count susceptible victims.[41] Sandusky and fellow pedos of his ilk, be it in Hollywood, State College, DC or anywhere, purposely hone in to carefully select kids without involved parents, either divorced or in process of divorce, or troubled youth already institutionalized within the child welfare system, having been abused and neglected as the most vulnerable child population to parasitically feed on. The next formulaic step as a sexual predator is to methodically shower targeted youth with positive attention, affection and gifts, in Jerry’s case taking them to Penn State or Steeler or Eagles football games, meeting the teams’ players, offering them a once in a lifetime childhood dream. Befriending and mentoring disadvantaged youngsters became this predator’s public face and persona, attending their sporting events and gaining both their trust and confidence in order to set the stage to transgress beyond the legal threshold of physical contact, into the dark taboo world of criminal child sexual exploitation.

If the intermediary steps to increase level of contact cunningly prove effective without a glitch, the coach’s standby M.O. after working out with his young victims at his always available Penn State athletic facilities was to introduce taking showers together where he would move in for his kill, either on campus regularly committing sexual assault and sodomy or once abused within the comfort and confines of his basement home, “hiding in plain sight” in what’s come to be a most familiar theme in virtually every predator’s dirty lowdown playbook. It became common knowledge within the athletic department and around campus that Coach Sandusky was mighty cozy and intimate with his underage male youth from Second Mile as a number of Penn State “staff members and football coaches regularly observed Sandusky showering with young boys.”[42] Getting naked and showering with young boys from his charity apparently was perceived as no big deal due to his “goofball knucklehead” image and prominent longstanding position as Paterno’s right hand man. For years at a time it safely shielded him from all accountability. And incredibly, apparently no one ever saw any urgency to notify superiors about Sandusky’s highly disturbing, inappropriate behavior, though sealed records of victims’ depositions indicate some staff and coaches over the years did take notice and reported it to Coach Paterno.[43] But he never failed to just sit on it. That all-important issue will soon be addressed.

In similar vein as suspected sexual predator Charlie Sheen coaxing 13-year old actor Corey Haim on their movie set to being sodomized as a perverse rite of passage with older guys "breaking" in the younger Hollywood boys, the "big kid" coach who never grew up opportunistically most often made his sexual advances within the safe, familiar confines of the university locker rooms. Should any of the boys he abused mention to parents or concerned adults about improprieties taken in the showers, the coach and his complicit cover-uppers (i.e., Paterno and Penn State's top administrative officers) would invariably resort to the "boys being boys" cover story, evoking "innocent horseplay" as Sandusky's apologetic fallback line and then thereafter cool any further efforts to sexually abuse those particular kids. Sandusky was highly skilled at not only preying on children but also preying on adults responsible for those children.[44] He became just as adept at confusing, deceiving and charming his way out of potential criminal entanglements that arose when kids did talk about their bizarre shower episodes with the "touchy, feely" predator coach.

In Sandusky's own autobiographical words from his 2000 book *Touched*,[45] the big prankster readily admitted:

> *I live a good part of my life in a make-believe world. I enjoyed pretending as a kid, and I love doing the same as an adult with these kids. Pretending has always been part of me.*[46]

Playing make believe as an adult came in extremely handy for Sandusky being able to live with himself, pretending for decades at a time that he wasn't really a predatory monster shattering countless young lives with his molestations and brutal anal rapes… quite the make believer he was and still is. In fact, true to his form, he proudly declared:

> *I'll never regret being called a 'great' pretender.*[47]

And to this very day the “great pretender” is still pretending that he’s innocent… talk about living in a make believe world! The court of appeals judge didn’t buy it as the convicted pedophile’s request for a new trial was soundly rejected in October 2017.[48]

If little Jerry himself was traumatically abused by his own father or another adult male inducing dissociative disorder, his “pretend world” hypothesis might make a little more sense. But no concrete evidence has ever come forth indicating that Sandusky was a sexual abuse victim as a child. Exploiting to full advantage his elevated celebrity status within the State College community as well as his playful, accepted “big kid” persona to all who knew him, on multiple occasions the serial pedophile found himself routinely talking his way out of potential legal trouble.

Journalist Malcolm Gladwell in the *New Yorker* along with others has asserted the irony that Joe Paterno actually disliked his longest running coach Jerry Sandusky, barely tolerating the “impulsive knucklehead” and constantly perturbed by his right hand man always surrounding himself with a parade of young kids.[49] As the no-nonsense disciplinarian who 24/7 walked, talked and thought football, workaholic Coach Paterno wanted to fire Sandusky on numerous occasions. But according to Paterno’s biographer Joe Posnanski, JoePa eventually learned to accept Sandusky’s softer, more emotional, bear-hugging, goofball approach as providing a much needed counterbalance to his own stoic, crusty, hardball taskmaster exterior.

Again, writer Malcom Gladwell points out:

What could be better, for his [Sandusky’s] *purposes, than a boss with eyes only for the football field, who dismissed him as an exasperating, impulsive knucklehead? Pedophiles cluster in professions that give them access to vulnerable children - teaching, the clergy, medicine. But Sandusky’s*

> *insight, if you want to call it that, was that the culture of football could be the greatest hiding place of all, a place where excessive physicality is the norm, where horseplay is what often passes for wit, where young men shower together after every game and practice, and where those in charge spend their days and nights dreaming only of new defensive schemes.*[50]

Respected and admired by sports fans and journalists across the nation, Jerry Sandusky was mistaken for a saint instead of the monster he is. Fellow pedophile monster President George HW Bush paid homage in 1990, awarding Sandusky's Second Mile charity as the 294th of Bush's bogus 1000 Points of Light.[51] Afterwards the always opportunistic clownster coach grabbed the microphone yelling, "It's about time George!"[52] Explaining the incident in his autobiography, Sandusky wrote:

> *I had reverted back to the days of my mischievous youth. I had always professed that someday I would reap the benefits of maturity, but my lifestyle just wouldn't let me. There were so many things I had done in my life—so many of them crazy and outlandish. . . . My time on this earth has always been unique. At the times when I found myself searching for maturity, I usually came up with insanity.*[53]

Now we know where his book tile originated, the "touched" child predator knew his criminally destructive actions were that of an out of control, insane madman masquerading behind his cultivated "good natured knucklehead," deceitful saintly image.

Presidential wannabe, 1980 PSU grad and Catholic secret society Opus Dei linked Senator Rick Santorum[54] also kissed pedo-monster's ass, rewarding Sandusky in 2002 with the "Congressional Angels Adoptions" award for all his tireless charity work.[55]

A book extract from the sexual predator's own son Matt Sandusky reveals the classic grooming methodology of this serial pedophile:

> *Jerry* [Sandusky] *groomed children in a textbook way. He grew close to them, gaining their trust and even gaining their parents' trust, by being nice, helpful, and giving. The touching started in seemingly innocent ways: a little horsing around (as Jerry was to call it), a little wrestling, an arm slung over the shoulders, hugs, a hair wash or soap fight in the showers, swatting the rear end, giving the stomach raspberries that make children laugh so hard, and tickling (Jerry always claimed he was The Tickle Monster). At first it would be a hand on the knee while seated next to him in the car, and then it would be a hand on the thigh.... Child sex offenders are masters at grooming children for sexual purposes, leading them like the Pied Piper down the slippery slope that starts out with seemingly normal human affection and nurturing.*[56]

To gain even a closer glimpse into this dark pathological world of the master groomer himself, exposing how Sandusky's pedo-assembly line operation worked, a cursory examination of public records is all that's needed. We need look no further than the investigative findings of a 162-page report compiled by former FBI director Louis Freeh's law firm, hired by the Penn State Board of Trustees just after the coach's arrest in November 2011.[57] On the afternoon of May 3rd, 1998, Jerry Sandusky placed a phone call to the home of one of his Second Mile clients. As of late the stalking predator coach had taken an acute interest and been courting this underage lad as yet another potential victim, known years later at the coach's trial as Victim #6 among 10 that finally put the rapist away for the next 30 to 60 years.

On that May day in 1998, Sandusky invited the 11-year old boy to the Penn State athletic facilities to work out on the exercise machines. After picking the boy up that night, during their workout in his characteristic roughhouse manner, Sandusky wrestled with the boy as a male bonding gesture, then kissed the boy on the top of his head, uttering the words “I love you.” At this critical juncture in Sandusky’s grooming operation with this targeted victim, the pedophile was boldly probing and literally testing the waters, asking the youth if he wanted to take a shower. The boy agreed, initially turning on the showerhead several feet away from Sandusky who then instructed him to use the same warmed up shower. Again the boy complied. With each incremental step, the predator was emboldened to take it to the next level, just to see how his targeted victim would react. The Freeh report details what happened next:

> *While in the shower, Sandusky wrapped his hands around the boy’s chest and said, ‘I’m gonna squeeze your guts out.’ The boy then washed his body and hair. Sandusky lifted the boy to ‘get the soap out of’ the boy’s hair, bringing the boy’s feet ‘up pretty high’ near Sandusky’s waist. The boy’s back was touching Sandusky’s chest and his feet touched Sandusky’s thigh. The boy felt ‘weird’ and ‘uncomfortable’ during his time in the shower.*[58]

Sensing the boy’s awkward reaction to the shower encounter, Sandusky laid low over the next several days, leaving a phone message three days later asking the boy if he wanted to work out again. After not receiving a call back, persistent Sandusky the predatory stalker came around showing up at the boy’s home nine days later to sniff out and further assess the situation.

But on the night of the May 3rd incident, noticing her son’s hair was still wet upon arrival home, the 11-year old’s mother inquired and after learning of the suspiciously bizarre shower sequence, she promptly contacted the boy’s therapist who recommended she report the incident to the

University Police Department. So when Sandusky arrived at the boy's home on May 12th, as part of an impromptu sting operation set up by the Centre County district attorney, listening in from a nearby location just 15 feet away was university police detective Ronald Schreffler as well as a State College police detective. Again from the Freeh inquiry:

Schreffler overheard Sandusky say he had gone to the boy's baseball game the night before but found the game had been cancelled. The boy's mother told Sandusky that her son had been acting 'different' since they had been together on May 3, 1998 and asked Sandusky if anything had happened that day. Sandusky replied, 'we worked out. Did [the boy] say something happened?' Sandusky added that the boy had taken a shower, and said 'maybe I worked him too hard.' Sandusky also asked the boy's mother if he should leave him alone, and she said that would be best. Sandusky then apologized.[59]

A few days later, the mother asked Sandusky to come by the house again; the police were once more in the next room. She questioned him more closely about what had happened in the shower. Sandusky asked to speak with the son and the mother replied that she did not feel that was a good idea as her son was confused and she did not want Sandusky to attend any of the boy's baseball games. Sandusky responded, 'I understand. I was wrong. I wish I could get forgiveness. I know I won't get it from you. I wish I were dead.'[60]

When the boy's mother asked Sandusky directly if he had touched her son's "private parts" in the shower, the perv's answer was "I don't think so… **maybe**."[61] Yet listening intently a few feet away, apparently all the two detectives heard was what appeared to be a genuine apology from a "remorseful" coach due to an apparent misunderstanding. And the "wish I was dead" statement was simply taken as deeply felt regret over unintentionally alienating the boy and his concerned parent. Despite Sandusky's admission that he "maybe" touched the boy's private parts, it wasn't deemed strong enough evidence to indicate sexual abuse had occurred. So we're supposed to believe that the two detectives' agreed upon conclusion was that no abuse took place despite the pedophile's confession that he may have touched the 11-year old's penis? To actually buy that their interpretation of said conversation is "reasonable and understandable" based on the perceived heartfelt charm of a cunning, deceitful predator successfully extricating himself from further criminal suspicion is absolutely ridiculous.

Yet in hindsight [and possibly CYA regret] 13 years later, detective Schreffler stated on record that he believed he did have enough evidence at the time to charge Sandusky minimally with corruption of a minor.[62] But after presenting his findings to then Centre County District Attorney Ray Gricar, the DA concluded that the case against Sandusky lacked sufficient evidence to prosecute and that was that. Incidentally, seven years after the DA said "no case," Ray Gricar went missing in 2005. And now with his body never found, his case still remains an unsolved mystery.[63] But the 2011 arrest and 2012 prosecution of Sandusky has triggered a wild resurgence speculating over the DA's fate, compounded when his laptop and ruined hard drive found separately in and near the Susquehanna River along with a book on how to remove hard drive data recovered from his home. Otherwise all leads in the case have gone cold. And one month after the 30-60 year prison sentence was issued for the notorious pedophile that the missing DA for some unknown reason let off the hook 14 years earlier, Ray Gricar was declared legally dead.[64]

In actuality in early May 1998, Coach Sandusky was caught red-handed in the early stage of victim selection, concluding that his target was not vulnerable enough to pursue any further. But had that 11-year old youth not opened up to his alarmed mother but chose to keep the incident to himself, within weeks Sandusky would have crossed the line upping the ante to molest the child in the shower that would ultimately lead to sodomy. Oral sex and sodomy were always the predatory coach's common endpoint objective and unfortunate fate befalling the vast majority of his victims who remain unnamed and unknown because they never reported their abuse to adult authorities and were left to suffer through their trauma in silence. Typically these are the victims who end up most severely damaged, often self-medicating in a failed attempt to bury their past, in the process turning into drug addicts only to live out their conflicted, unhappy, self-destructive adult lives that all too frequently send them to early graves. Experiencing sexual abuse as a child too often becomes a lifetime curse that shortens lives by at least two decades.[65] Child victims are so guilt-ridden with shame and confusion, they invariably blame themselves, believing they aren't worthy of positive outcomes in life. As a licensed therapist who worked closely with a number of pedophile victims for many years in Los Angeles, I can attest to child sexual abuse victims' hardship and suffering.

But fortunately due to a caring, inquiring mother in May 1998, this particular 11-year old was saved, both getting the police involved as well as first calling the boy's therapist, psychologist Alycia Chambers, for a session the very next day after the shower incident. Alycia reassured the nervous parent that she was not overreacting at all. The Freeh investigation noted:

Later that day, Chambers met with the boy who told her about the prior day's events and that he felt 'like the luckiest kid in the world' to get to sit on the sidelines at Penn State football games. The boy said that he did not *want to get Sandusky in ‘trouble’ and that Sandusky must not have meant anything by his actions. The boy did not want anyone to talk to Sandusky because he might not invite him to any more games.*[66]

Chambers wrote a report on the case and gave it to the University Police Department and Child and Youth Services. She thought that Sandusky’s behavior met the definition of a ‘likely pedophile’s pattern of building trust and gradual introduction of physical touch, within a context of a ‘loving,’ ‘special’ relationship.’ But Jerry Lauro, the caseworker assigned to the incident by the Department of Public Welfare in Harrisburg, disagreed. He thought that the incident fell into a ‘gray’ area concerning ‘boundary issues.’ The boy was then evaluated by a counsellor named John Seasock, who concluded, ‘There seems to be no incident which could be termed as sexual abuse, nor did there appear to be any sequential pattern of logic and behavior which is usually consistent with adults who have difficulty with sexual abuse of children.’ Seasock didn’t think Sandusky was grooming. Someone, he concluded, should talk to Sandusky about how to ‘stay out of such gray area situations in the future.’[67]

Later Lauro would claim he never had access to the Chambers report and had he read it, he stated he would not have stopped the investigation.[68] In May 1998 detective Schreffer and caseworker Lauro met with Coach Sandusky who admitted to showering with other boys in the past. Another boy was subsequently interviewed who relayed the exact same come-on sequence in the shower, demonstrating a clear predatory pattern of more than suggestive sexual deviance.

For the founder of a multimillion dollar children’s charity organization in his 50s to regularly get naked and shower with his organization’s clients and it not raise a red flag for police detectives and child abuse professionals alike seems highly implausible, especially when a well-qualified psychologist accurately suspected he was indeed a pedophile. Once again the charming sodomizer appears to have worked his deceitful black magic, assuring Schreffer and Lauro “Honest to God, nothing happened,” that “there was nothing sexual” about his hugging or showering with the boy.[69]

Or on a whole different level, perhaps the bigger picture and real reason no one was willing to make waves in 1998 was the daunting challenge to dare upset the Penn State “football is king” religion proving too formidable and intimidating an obstacle for both the local police and the DA to tackle. Additionally, there’s plenty of evidence that bigger forces were at play, like ties to an Eastern child sex trafficking ring headed by an organized crime-political machine nexus serving the New York-Philadelphia-Washington DC pipeline.[70] When this larger context of how the global child sex abuse network operates is taken into account, and that Sandusky and company were also being aided and abetted by both current and former Pennsylvania state governors directly linked to East Coast child sex trafficking,[71] which will be further explored later in this chapter, seems a far more plausible explanation as to why the Sandusky pedo-operation was given the go-ahead to continue flourishing for another 13 years. But more on this all-important angle later.

In any event, by Sandusky’s own admission that he “maybe” touched young victims’ genitals while bear-hugging little boys from behind and picking them up so that the aroused pedophile’s likely erection was merely centimeters from each boy’s butthole, and repeating this lewd act as a regular shower ritual with other little defenseless boys in his charity, how could all this possibly not be ruled sufficient evidence of corrupting a minor, minimally mandating further investigation leading to a most probable prosecution outcome? To accept this unbelievable hypothesis that this red herring could be so misconstrued by a team of supposedly well-trained and experienced child sex abuse investigators as just inappropriate boundary issues by a big, well-meaning goofball jock who simply doesn’t know any better is totally ludicrous and preposterous. To believe that these so called professionals were fooled by the lovable, charming serial pedophile in birthday suit disguise seems an incredible stretch. Daresay there was a cover-up from the outset because much bigger pedo-fish were pulling the strings at every turn behind the scenes.

So in all, two male police detectives and two male professional mental health counselors, all assessing the exact same case facts unanimously concluded the incident fell safely into the “gray area” without sufficient cause to warrant further concern or investigation, despite the opposing, astutely accurate conclusion drawn by the most qualified PhD level female psychologist Alycia Chambers. She presented the lone dissenting but **correct** clinical conclusion way back in 1998 identifying Sandusky as a “likely pedophile” over a dozen long years ahead of dozens more victims being harmed prior to the child rapist’s eventual arrest.

Throughout this entire investigative process, all the Penn State higher ups were closely kept abreast of each phase of the inquiry.[72] And after Sandusky met and passed his final interview “probe” with Schreffer and Lauro, the 130-page

PSU-State College joint police report was apparently deemed lacking sufficient evidence to move the case forward. News of Centre County District Attorney Ray Gricar's decision not to indict was instantly relayed to the Penn State University police chief who supervised the investigation. Never mind the obvious conflict of interest that the lead investigator happened to be Sandusky's friend and neighbor. [73] Needless to say, when the campus police chief notified Penn State President Graham Spanier, his senior vice president for business and finance Gary Schultz, the university athletic director Tim Curley and Coach Joe Paterno that the investigation was officially closed, the PSU head honchos collectively breathed their sigh of relief.

Amazingly, it turns out that neither Sandusky's boss nor the admin trio ever spoke to Sandusky about the 1998 incident, nor about his "poor boundaries," nor prohibit him from bringing Second Mile kids on campus to shower with him at the school's athletic facilities.[74] Nor was even Penn State's Board of Trustees ever informed of the 1998 incident.[75] Instead their "do-nothing" culture of silence no doubt sent the direct message to their pedophile coach whose office was right next to Paterno's that JoePa and his boys had the perp's back, blatantly granting the derelict full license to continue showering with and abusing underage boys on the Penn State campus. But the admin foursome weren't done looking the other way just yet, in the years ahead they had much more enabling, lying and criminal protecting to do.

All four of Penn State's top leaders including Joe Paterno would later perjure themselves under oath years later while giving grand jury testimony, unanimously to a man pretending they were unaware of the 1998 incident.[76] The grand jury investigator explicitly asked Coach Paterno in 2011:

Other than the [later 2001] *incident that Mike McQueary reported to you, do you know in any way, through rumor or direct knowledge or any other fashion, of any other inappropriate conduct by Jerry Sandusky with young boys?* [Paterno replied] *I do not know of anything else that Jerry would be involved in of that nature, no. I do not know of it.* [77]

And right to the bitter end, preoccupied over his legacy, merely a week prior to his January 2012 death, Joe Paterno's last public statement he took to his grave was yet another boldface lie, uttering:

I had 'no inkling' that Sandusky might be a sexual deviant. [78]

Even before the May 1998 shower incident, Paterno informed Sandusky that he was no longer in the running to become Penn State's next head football coach, and according to the Freeh report, the 1998 shower incident and Sandusky's retirement a year later had nothing to do with each other.[79] Skeptical sportswriters point out the extreme unlikelihood that the longtime defensive coordinator responsible for coaching two national championship teams to suddenly retire at only age 54 after a 32-year career paved with such glory seems most unlikely. The speculative word has it that Sandusky's reputation as a serial pedophile was wide enough known in the inner circle of the college football world that when Penn State imposed a forced retirement on him, other than a University of Virginia offer in 2000, no other job offers came through because the pedophile had already been labeled too great a liability.[80] Meanwhile, the Freeh report cites Paterno's handwritten notes reasoning that Sandusky's continued commitment to his Second Mile activities (which Joe obviously knew included pedophilia showers) precluded him from serious consideration.[81] After all, the pressing demands of a Penn State head coach as successor of the winningest coach in college football history entrusted to uphold the "win-at-all-cost" Penn State tradition would be a 24-hour a day, 7 days a week job that Paterno realized Sandusky the knucklehead could never adequately fulfill, not to mention knucklehead's not-so-hidden pastime liability as a serial pedophile.

Instead, Paterno and Penn State leaned over backwards making a series of more than generous concessions in negotiating Sandusky's retirement package that included an exceptional, unheard of severance of $168,000, plus Emeritus rights to continual lifetime use of all athletic facilities including his own office and uninterrupted access to all showers, as well as continued Penn State partnership with his Second Mile.[82] In short, pedophile Jerry was granted carte blanche privileges that the higher-ups all knew would inevitably result in Penn State's continued misuse as a safe haven for raping more of his Second Mile throwaway boys. As recently as 2009, right up to when a grand jury was finally convening to investigate Sandusky, the former coach was still allowed kids as young as 9-years old to attend his overnight football camps on the Penn State campus.[83] Months after the four Penn State bigwigs' lying testimony before that same grand jury, as late as October 2011, a mere month before his arrest, Sandusky was still permitted to work out at Penn State facilities. He was also still listed on the university website as "assistant professor emeritus of physical education" right up to his November

2011 indictment.[84] And then even a month after his arrest, he was still in possession of all his campus keys. So much for safeguarding the at-risk children in the serial pedophile's crosshairs.

For Paterno, Spanier, Schultz and Curley not to realize that their one-sided arrangement with the pedophile's overly generous retirement package as much as guaranteed heaps more trouble ahead for both Penn State University as well as each of them, carrying 100% certainty it would lead to all four mighty men's downfall, they must've felt overly confident and absolutely secure that unholy powers greater than them would most assuredly shield and protect their cover-up crimes from all future accountability. After all, every major pedophilia operation in this world never, not once, has failed to protect the guiltiest at the top. We've observed this exact same nonstop pattern as the constantly repeated theme throughout this book. This entrenched, built-in pecking order impunity goes far to explain why Sandusky and his PSU foursome grew so recklessly careless and arrogant, believing their pedophilia cover-up was a done deal, misjudging that their cover-up, protected by their elitist friends at the top of the power pyramid, was impenetrable. All five were likely counting on the pedophile-saturated Bush-Clinton-Obama crime family dynasty to protect them right to the end as well.

But let's not get ahead of ourselves. Despite appearing totally oblivious to the 1998 incident that the Penn State leaders should have heeded as a grave, foreboding warning sign that something diabolically afoul was criminally lurking right under their noses [as if they didn't already know], two years later in 2000 a shocked janitor named Jim Calhoun told a co-worker and his supervisor that he walked in on Sandusky giving a blow job to a little boy in the same Lasch building showers, but neither university officials nor law enforcement were ever notified.[85] Penn State's culture of silence permeated up and down the chain of command as the janitors were afraid to tell their bosses for fear of being fired. Then less than a year after that, still another shower room incident in that same Lasch building surfaced yet again, except this time it proved both far more incriminating and problematic for Penn State. On February 9th, 2001, former Nittany Lion quarterback turned graduate assistant Mike McQueary on a Friday evening at about 9:30PM walked into the Lasch building athletic facility and claimed that he witnessed in the showers Sandusky sexually abusing a young boy about 10-12 in age.[86]

McQueary's June 2012 courtroom trial testimony as star witness for the prosecution was vehemently challenged not only by Sandusky's defense attorneys but forevermore by the corps of hardcore Paterno-Penn State disciples still grieving their beloved JoePa's death several months earlier in January.[87] McQueary's account of the 2001 incident maintained he heard slapping sounds as in skin-to-skin contact but also contended that he observed in a mirror Sandusky standing directly behind a young boy whose hands were braced against the shower wall. The rabid army of McQueary attackers have had a field day, first seizing upon the initial erroneous date of said incident being more than a year off on March 1st, 2002.[88] Next they cite the testimony of defense witness Dr. Jonathan Dranov, a State College medical doctor and close McQueary family friend who insisted that Mike told him just hours after the incident that no sex had occurred, only that Sandusky and a boy were seen in the shower together, that it sounded suggestively sexual and made Mike feel very uncomfortable.[89] A couple days later in a meeting with a dozen of his players, McQueary allegedly disclosed that as a child sexual abuse victim himself, Mike knew what he heard and saw in that locker room constituted criminal child sex abuse.[90]

For more than a half dozen years the legendary coach’s loyal legions from Penn State Nation have been on the warpath fanatically defending their hero JoePa to the ends of the earth. They’re quick to point out that McQueary’s description of the 2001 event radically shifted over the years, from nonsexual in 2001 to - at both grand jury and trial - witnessing both visually and auditorily full blown sodomy, convincing skeptics that McQueary was heavily coached and encouraged to embellish his original story from a decade earlier.[91] Known around campus as “Big Red” for his bright red hair, Mike McQueary received multiple death threats, his personal life and character scrutinized and harshly judged, and his assistant coaching job at Penn State abruptly terminated, which under the whistleblower act, he later sued for damages, receiving a $12 million dollar settlement.[92] Critics of the 6’5” athlete question why in 2001 he didn’t just try and stop the then 57-year old Sandusky from abusing the youth. At the trial McQueary insists that he did stop the crime by loudly slamming his locker shut, prompting Sandusky to cease his assault, reportedly causing both criminal and victim to separate and establish direct eye-to-eye contact with him.[93] Diehard Paterno loyalists also throw in the question if McQueary was so certain he’d witnessed a pedophile in action, why a few months later would he attend a charity golfing event sponsored by Sandusky. Others crucify McQueary for not reporting what he witnessed immediately to the police. Yet in the same breath, those same Paterno fanatics conveniently excuse their hero-god of never, not once, ever contacting the police, and over the decades he repeatedly heard and knew that his right hand man was a boy lover.

After a sleepless night, the following morning on Saturday February 10th, McQueary called to arrange an emergency meeting with his boss. According to Mike McQueary, he told the head coach that what he saw firsthand was “way over the lines and extremely sexual in nature.”[94] Upon learning the shocking news, a dismayed and dejected Paterno slumped back in his chair, hands partially covering his face while “his eyes appeared to well up with tears.” A 2011 state police report citing McQueary’s recollection of that conversation in Paterno’s kitchen that early morning specifies that Joe told Mike that “this was **the second complaint** of this nature he had received about Sandusky.”[95] This telling remark no doubt refers to the 1998 incident and confirms that Paterno knew about Sandusky’s shower habit with young boys long before his denying it under oath at the 2010 grand jury, reconfirming once again that Paterno was a liar trying to save his own skin and legacy. The police report also stated per McQueary that Joe told him that his wife Sue Paterno shared with Joe that Sandusky’s wife Dotty once confessed to her that “Jerry doesn’t like girls,” again proving Paterno knew about Sandusky’s deviant sexual appetite for little boys.

Testifying before the grand jury in 2011, and contradicting McQueary’s far more explicit testimony, under oath Head Coach Paterno expressed ambiguous language stating that McQueary had reported that he had seen Sandusky fondling or “doing something of a sexual nature” to a boy.[96] Paterno insisted that he had followed proper protocol by reporting the incident to his immediate supervisor, athletic director Tim Curley, who with VP Shultz then met with McQueary and Paterno. Mike McQueary answers his critics maintaining that his meeting with Shultz, who oversaw campus police operations, automatically took him off the hook from notifying local police, presuming that Schultz would contact them, which of course he never did. Curley and Schultz then notified Penn State President Graham Spanier. The excerpt below from the Freeh report explains how the top Penn State leaders formulated their own bogus story to save their own lying asses:

> *Spanier said that the men gave him a ‘heads up’ that a member of the Athletic Department staff had reported to Paterno that Sandusky was in an athletic locker room facility showering with one of his Second Mile youth after a workout. Sandusky and the youth, according to Spanier, were ‘horsing around’ or ‘engaged in horseplay.’ Spanier said that the staff member ‘was not sure what he saw because it was around a corner and indirect.’… Spanier said he asked two questions: (i) ‘Are you sure that it was described to you as horsing around?’ and (ii) ‘Are you sure that that is all that was reported?’ According to Spanier, both Schultz and Curley said ‘yes’ to both questions. Spanier said that the men agreed that they were ‘uncomfortable’ with such a situation, that it was inappropriate, and that they did not want it to happen again.*[97]

Funny how these men less than three years earlier learned the pedophile was caught showering with two other Second Mile kids, yet they never said anything about “not wanting it to happen again.” Only after this far more serious, incriminating shower accusation by an assistant coach is made do they finally get around to taking a slightly firmer stance to “not want it to happen again.” To protect themselves, Paterno, Spanier, Schultz and Curley, the four stooges and great enabling pretenders for the greatest pedo-pretender of them all, repeatedly lied through their teeth using their same old worn-out “horseplay” excuse. Bottom line, their total inaction and nonstop silence the first time around in 1998 led directly to the 2001 incident along with many more never exposed. Ultimately the

Commonwealth of Pennsylvania's legal system was compelled to convict the three Penn State leaders of their longtime habit of looking the other way, criminally sacrificing innocent kids by allowing a known pedophile to continue showering and sodomizing them at their facilities.[98]

Moreover, and this is the biggest incriminator of all outing Paterno's heartless criminality, the Freeh investigation uncovered emails that demonstrated that the Penn State administration was ready to report this 2001 incident to the police. But after athletic director Curley met with Joe Paterno on February 26th, 2001, the following day they changed their minds. Freeh stated at his 2012 press conference:

> *As Mr. Curley consulted with Mr. Paterno, however, they changed the plan and decided not to make a report to the authorities. Their failure to protect the February 9, 2001 child victim, or make attempts to identify him, created a dangerous situation for other unknown, unsuspecting young boys who were lured to the Penn State campus and football games by Sandusky and victimized repeatedly by him. Further, they exposed this child to additional harm by alerting Sandusky, who was the only one who knew the child's identity, about what McQueary saw in the shower on the night of February 9, 2001.*[99]

It was Curley's 23 word email below after meeting with Paterno on February 26th that prompted the Penn State honchos to uphold their vow of silence and not go to the police:

After giving it more thought and talking it over with Joe yesterday, I am uncomfortable with what we agreed were the next steps.[100]

"Next steps" being not reporting the incident to law enforcement nor the Board of Trustees but like always keeping it their dirty little secret. Just over two months prior to Paterno's death from lung cancer, after Sandusky's November 2011 arrest and Paterno being fired as head coach in a phone call from Board of Trustees vice chairman, knowing Paterno was forever in deep shit, a lamented Joe finally admitted on November 9th, 2011:

With the benefit of hindsight, I wish I had done more.[101]

Instead, Joe Paterno's interventions were always minimal to none, merely once reporting allegations to school administration, and never to law enforcement. But taking into account the fact that he willfully talked others out of reporting the McQueary accusations to the police, in retrospect, was Paterno's wish to have "done more" to save innocent kids from further abuse or simply to save himself and his own legacy? His consistent actions clearly speak far louder than any regretful, apologetic words. The cold hard facts remain that neither JoePa nor his three stooges who followed his lead ever did bother to contact any police department despite multiple complaints strongly implicating Sandusky' guilt as a serial pedophile from way back. And for all their proven complicity and willful, premeditated, conspiratorial cover-up, all three admin officers were only charged and convicted with mere misdemeanors - endangering the welfare of children,[102] each serving a token of roughly two months jail time. Had Joe not been dying, he too would’ve likely been charged and found guilty as well, especially since he was caught convincing others not to notify law enforcement.

All four of these less than honorable men knowingly permitted dozens more child victims to be abused and further sacrificed over the ensuing years in order to protect the reputation of both its legendary coach and prestigious public university. After all, it was far more important to preserve the wealthy university’s $4.6 billion surplus,[103] or the godlike status and pristine honor of America’s winningest coach, or his uncompromising academic standards (in both 2009 and 2011 ranked #1 academically out of top 25 football teams)[104] or the school’s outstanding academic standing (with a 90% student-athlete graduation rate always among nation’s best),[105] or last but certainly not least, protecting Penn State’s staggering $73 million annual revenue generated by its storied, gloriously all-important football dynasty[106] that JoePa singlehandedly built (albeit with a little help from his longtime pedo-friend Jerry).

On another level entirely, there’s sufficient evidence indicating that this scandal’s tentacles reach far bigger and wider than the pathological acting out of one sick assistant coach. In the same vein as the Mossad engineered Epstein honey trap, this case could well be yet another sexual blackmail operation designed to compromise and gain absolute underhanded control over prominent public figures’ every action. But more on this scandal’s dark-sided underbelly later.

If the preceding facts haven’t convinced you yet that Joe Paterno was calling the shots with his CYA top buddies in his back pocket, and that they’re not all guilty of a longtime criminal cover-up, more recent evidence has emerged to indicate that “PapaJoe” was shielding and suppressing his assistant coach’s child rape crimes as early as 1971. Independent of each other, revelations of two more alleged victims have surfaced to reveal that when they were minors back in the 1970s, Sandusky was sexually assaulting them too, one in 1971 and another in 1976.

A 2013 civil lawsuit was filed by Penn State against its former insurance company - Pennsylvania Manufacturers’ Association (PMA)[107] for only reimbursing the school $29.9 million out of the $93 million that Penn State has already been forced to pay out to rape victims thus far.[108] PMA has withheld funds from Penn State since evidence has emerged showing that Paterno and his administration were already well aware of Sandusky’s liability as early as the early 1970s but never reported it to PMA. However, the presiding Judge Gary Glazer has ruled in favor of Penn State, insisting that the earliest cases were never reported to Penn State’s top management,[109] though there is growing evidence that Coach Joe knew about them. Other contested issues in this complicated case between the university and its past insurer will likely go to trial.

With the current litigation initiated by Penn State to determine who will end up footing the costly bill (approaching $100 million in damages), PSU or its insurer, millions are still being paid out for the multitude of lawsuits filed thus far by at least 33 (and counting) alleged Sandusky victims.[110] In response to PSU filing its suit against PMA, the insurance company used sealed depositions by alleged victims to mount its defense evidence against Penn State. The judge in his filing used footnotes citing these depositions as evidence of abuse allegations.

Judge Glazer wrote in the order:

> *PMA claims… in 1976, a child allegedly reported to PSU's Head Football Coach Joseph Paterno, that he (the child) was sexually molested by Sandusky*.[111]

"Exhibit I" is a 13-page Q&A transcript of an October 2014 deposition regarding an incident that occurred in 1976 when Coach Sandusky sexually assaulted an alleged victim named "John Doe 150" while the 14-year old attended a football camp at Penn State.[112] John Doe 150 asserts that Sandusky stuck his finger up his rectum in the showers with several other boys present. After informing adults and drawing little to no response, the underage kid bravely approached Coach Paterno and explained what had happened to him the day before. Paterno's coldhearted response to this sexually traumatized child was:

> *I don't want to hear about any of that kind of stuff. I have a football season to worry about.[113]*

And Paterno just walked away without uttering another word, not caring a rat's ass about the poor kid who kept this shameful secret to himself without telling another soul for the next 20 years. This document shows that the Penn State head coach knew back in 1976 that he had an assistant coach who was sexually abusing children and did absolutely nothing about it. This document pertaining to the civil lawsuit was released in July 2016 as evidence that clearly supports PMA's decision not to reimburse Penn State for damages in settlement suits since the head coach was fully aware of abuse but didn't even lift a finger to stop his rapist's finger fucking little kids. The two child victims from the 1970s both claim that after Sandusky molested them, they informed Coach Paterno who without hesitation viciously rebuffed them.

Further, as implicit admission of guilt, to date Penn State has doled out $93 million to the near three dozen victims as of 2017,[114] among them an alleged 1971 victim who received an undisclosed amount of hush money in his out of court compensation settlement. This most revealing transaction is a matter of public record. The accuser now in his early 60s as the oldest known Sandusky victim also has a witness he told shortly after he was raped who in support of his friend went public on *CNN* backing up the victim's claims. The child abuse survivor from 1971 states that when he was a 15-year old foster kid, the 27-year old Jerry Sandusky anally raped him in a Penn State bathroom.[115] Prior to the assault, Sandusky had picked the State College teenager up hitchhiking, bought him beer and gave him marijuana to smoke. The victim-survivor stated that the sexual attack was initiated while he was pissing in a urinal:

I felt his presence behind me. I felt his left knee on the back of my knee, and his arms went around me, grabbing my … He said, 'Let me help you with this.'[116]

As a reflex, the victim's head snapped backwards hitting Sandusky in the jaw, causing both of them to fall to the floor where the larger predator grappled to overpower the adolescent and forcibly sodomize him. When the boy's foster mother saw his bloodied head, he reluctantly told her about his sexual trauma. His parents owned a local bowling alley and knew some high level Penn State officials with whom his foster dad insisted that the boy disclose the details of his sexual assault. After the victim explained what had happened, he says all hell broke loose when the two Penn State men who introduced themselves on the phone as Jim and Joe abruptly launched a blistering attack, accusing the hapless teenager of making the whole story up.

They were asking me my motive, why I would say this about someone who has done so many good things. Stop this right *now! We'll call the authorities.*[117]

Though he had no idea who Jim was, right away he recognized the other voice belonged to the legendary head coach, having heard him a million times with his distinctive, embedded Brooklyn accent. As a direct or indirect result of his sexual abuse at the hands of Jerry Sandusky, over the years the victim has struggled with anger issues, alcoholism, survived a heart attack and other serious health threats, but decided to bravely step forward to anonymously talk to *CNN* about his plight for justice. He states that he has lost friends in the Sandusky aftermath still embroiling his community, and becomes visibly upset with JoePa fanatics vehemently defending his unjustified honor, and bitterly resents how his hometown has mistreated child victims like himself. After going public with his rape disclosure and Paterno’s cold, dishonorable, aggressive response, he anticipated major blowback:

*State College is a disgusting place, the way they treat crimes against kids. We are living in a very sick atmosphere... I am looking for a wave of s*** to come down on me like I've never seen before. I know that's going to happen. It's going to be a very bad outcome for me. That's just the way Penn State fans are.*[118]

So it appears that within the first two years of Jerry Sandusky’s 32 year run as a Penn State coach, i.e., from the virtual get-go, Joe Paterno and company were well aware that they were dealing with a bona fide pedophile on their staff. Over the next 40 years, nearly Paterno’s entire reign of power as head coach, he and Penn State premeditatedly permitted this monster to continue destroying hundreds of innocent boys’ lives in perhaps yet another example of selling your soul to the devil for fame and glory.

In addition to these two cases from the 1970s, the contesting insurance carrier PMA also alleges that records show that in the 1980s Sandusky continued abusing children, citing cases in both 1987 and 1988 when two different assistant coaches witnessed the pedo-coach engaging in sexual contact with children.[119] Penn State graduate assistant Matt Paknis on that same ’87-’88 coaching staff went public claiming it was common knowledge that Sandusky was sexually abusing children as well as inappropriately touching even the players and that Head Coach Joe Paterno was most definitely aware of it.[120] In November 2011 Paknis stated on a radio sports talk show:

> *Joe knows everything, Joe knows everything — everything that goes on at that campus, everything that goes on clearly in the football program… Not only did he cover it up, but there’s no way that this wasn’t apparent.[121]*

Paknis went on to explain that potentially scandalous news stories involving the Nittany Lion football program were routinely covered up by Paterno. In answer to the big question over whether JoePa knew of Sandusky’s longtime criminal behavior, without hesitancy Matt Paknis responded:

> *Absolutely! I mean, fights, behavior problems, anything like that never reached the local paper. It was a controlled environment. There’s no question.[122]*

Further corroboration supporting the veracity of Paknis’ accusations is illustrated in a separate 1988 Sandusky sexual assault incident that was detailed in a child abuse report submitted to the Penn State athletic director.[123] Clearly this court documented evidence from 1987-88 when Paknis was on staff demonstrates that both Coach Paterno and at least one member from the school’s top level management did in fact know that “goofball Jerry” was a raving, out-of-control child rapist, which means the university’s insurer at that time should not be held responsible for reimbursing the school. Yet strangely, Judge Glazer asserted in his order that these earlier allegations from the 1970s and 80s never “went further up the chain of command at PSU.” Considering Paterno ruled the roost at Penn State for 46 years and the athletic director as clearly a higher-up was also privy to the ongoing Sandusky sexual abuse, that in and of itself seems high enough up the chain of command flagpole to make Penn State liable.

After dodging two notorious shower scene bullets from 1998 and 2001 that would’ve ultimately exposed the pedophile and his powerful enablers years earlier, finally in late 2008 another Victim (#1 at the trial) named Aaron Fisher emerged that eventually led to Sandusky’s downfall triggering his 2009 grand jury investigation.[124] Aaron met Sandusky at one of his Second Mile summer camps when he was 11-years old, the prime age of boys Sandusky typically targeted for abuse. The pervert coach often became obsessed with his victims, initially showering attention, gifts and invitations on them prior to literally showering with them to claim his next predatory kill. Soon Aaron was spending weekends at the Sandusky home. But gradually Sandusky’s pursuit for more young flesh turned obsessively aggressive.

When Aaron was a high school freshman, the predatory Paterno assistant decided to volunteer as a part-time football coach at Aaron’s Central Mountain High School in Lock Haven, 30 miles from Penn State University, just to gain access to routinely pull Aaron out of class. Because of his revered celebrity status, the pedophile could show up at any time and leave campus with his targeted victim without so much as letting his mother know. Identical to the aggressive antics used to groom Matt Sandusky, Aaron was also brutally victimized in the Sandusky basement that abused boys have claimed to be soundproof. It was in the basement where all of Jerry Sandusky’s fun and games were. But eventually Aaron Fisher would claim:

Fun and games turned to horror.[125]

Aaron found himself hiding in school bathrooms in desperation to avoid the stalking pedophile. One time the sicko was trailing the boy’s school bus on the way home, when Aaron was dropped off, Sandusky told him to get in his car but the boy took off running. The madman drove his vehicle on the opposite side of the street into oncoming traffic in hot pursuit of his young victim who ducked down a nearby alleyway to escape.[126] The stalker then parked his car in front of his house waiting. Though his mother Dawn Daniels Hennessy knew her son was being tormented by this perverted nutcase, as is typical of sexually abused boys, the teen resisted disclosing his trauma. When he began acting out and she grounded him as much to keep Sandusky away, the coach showed up demanding that he’d “take care of it.” Dawn’s immediate response was, “No way, he’s my son.”[127] Aaron’s mom grew more frantic, convinced that the high-powered, beloved coach in her community was sexually abusing her son. Finally when the anguished boy asked her about looking Sandusky up on the internet website that lists sex offenders or “sexual weirdos” as Aaron described his abuser, she then contacted his high school on November 18, 2008, reporting that she’d become more than suspicious of Sandusky’s abusive relationship with her 15-year old son. In her words:

> *I called the school principal and the guidance counselor and said, if nothing else, he’s taking my son out of classes. He’s leaving the school with him… So I asked them to call him into the office and ask* [my son] *how he felt. They did call him to the office that day and I remember the principal was in tears and she said, ‘You need to come here right away.’*[128]

Actually it was two full days later when they finally got around to speaking with Aaron who at last broke down, informing them that Sandusky had been sexually abusing him for the last two or three years.[129] But the teenager’s worst fears materialized when, according to Aaron, the guidance counselor and principal's response was:

They said we needed to think about [reporting the allegation]*, that he has a heart of gold and wouldn't do something like that. So… they didn't believe me.*[130]

When his mom got there, the tormented kid kept screaming:

See, they don't believe me!

Aaron Fisher and Dawn Daniels Hennessy were extremely devastated that his school was so reluctant to report the abuse, violating the mandated child protection laws.[131] Yet three years later state Attorney General Linda Kelly would go out of her way repeatedly commending the school for complying with the reporting law.

Like virtually all pedophilia scandals, initial allegations of abuse by child victims are rarely if ever believed or taken seriously, particularly if the accused is a well-respected man of position and clout. Again, the pedophile was protected by his benevolent, do-no-wrong image within the greater community. Pedophiles, especially if they're celebrities, never fail to take full advantage of exploiting the given that their victims are never initially believed.

As another example of not seeing reality for what it is, one evening during the 2006-07 wrestling season the high school wrestling coach walked in on Sandusky and Aaron laying suspiciously close together on the floor facing each other in the weight room.[132] A startled, surprised but quick thinking Sandusky passed it off like he was showing Aaron a wrestling move. The high school coach thought it quite odd since the large wrestling room was right next door but thinking to himself on the way home:

Well, it's Jerry Sandusky. He's a saint, and what he's doing with these kids is fantastic.[133]

And another clue in plain sight was conveniently brushed aside and missed that could have revealed the darker unholy truth.

In November 2008 right after Aaron told his school principal that he was sexually abused by the famous Penn State coach, the Central Mountain High football team held a meeting and banned Jerry Sandusky from the campus.[134] It was leaked that Aaron was the cause, and suddenly students and parents were cruelly accusing him of lying about Sandusky in order to cash in at Penn State's expense. He was harassed and overnight became the town pariah. But by the time news came out that the pedo-coach was under grand jury investigation in March 2011[135] and then later that year in November indicted, followed by Coach Paterno losing his job, Aaron was the scapegoat being viciously blamed, his life threatened by the Lock Haven lynch mob mentality. Central Pennsylvania is Penn State country and to this day Aaron Fisher is still not believed and vilified in his own hometown.

Unhappy with his school's response in 2008, fortunately that same day Aaron's mother took her son to Clinton County Children and Youth Services and in 2009 a determination was affirmatively made that sexual abuse was "indicated,"[136] prompting the Center County District Attorney Michael Madeira to call for a grand jury investigation into the allegations. But because the DA's wife is a biological sister of one of Sandusky's adopted sons, and still maintained cordial relations with the Sandusky family, Madeira recused himself.[137] This move positioned the then state Attorney General Tom Corbett busily running for governor at the time to take over, transferring the grand jury proceedings to the state level. In November 2010 Republican candidate Corbett was elected the new Pennsylvania state governor. Of the eight victims that provided testimony at the 2012 Sandusky trial, Aaron Fisher was the youngest witness as an 18-year old brand new high school graduate and among those testifying, the most recently abused victim.

Aaron Fisher was also the first tip of the iceberg abuse, prompting the DA office to finally call for a grand jury investigation. Recall the 1998 incident was closed by then DA Gricar. However, as apparently the sole witness to come forth while subjected to increasing harassment over the next 42 long months, with the upcoming November 2010 gubernatorial election, state politics shamelessly hung the boy out to dry. Aaron was told more victims had to emerge as the Attorney General's office kept promising Aaron's therapist psychologist Michael Gillum from Clinton County Children & Youth Services that any minute the axe would be falling on Sandusky but year after year it didn't. For political reasons, Aaron had to wait another 18 tortuous months as his Lock Haven turned into locked in Hell.

Only after Pennsylvania Attorney General Tom Corbett (1995-97; 2005-2011) morphed into Gov. Corbett in January 2011 were seven other victims along with Coach McQueary's long lost allegations finally, "suddenly discovered," ultimately moving the case closer to indictment.[138] Another anomaly that sticks out like a sore thumb, from the time Corbett professed first learning about the Sandusky investigation in March 2009 all the way to his sworn-in ceremony as state governor in January 2011, his AG office boasted in 42 different press releases how his commissioned Child Sex Predator Unit resulted in hundreds of pedophile arrests, yet in all that time not one mention is made of Jerry Sandusky.[139] Also worth noting is virtually every one of Sandusky's 10 victims were being sexually molested while Corbett was attorney general yet during his entire decade as the state's top prosecutor, only Aaron Fisher surfaced as Victim #1. These two very revealing facts are the basis for Wayne Madsen justifiably tagging Corbett as a "pedophile enabler.” More on the high-powered PA politicians that allowed Sandusky to continue abusing boys later.

Finally on November 4th, 2011, the 23-page grand jury presentment was “leaked” to the media, leading to Sandusky’s arrest and prosecution.[140]

Without referring per se to Aaron Fisher’s near four years of post-disclosure mistreatment, his therapist of four years Michael Gillum stated:

> *The victimization of this young man, with the way he was groomed and set up for the betrayal, is the worst I’ve seen in 20 years of practice.[141]*

The abuse heaped on Aaron while waiting so long for the case to finally get prosecuted amounted to double punishment for committing no other crime than being an innocent kid victimized and betrayed by a monster disguised in saint’s clothing, and then re-victimized and betrayed all over again by a hostile community growing more hostile and threatening every passing year. Aaron said the years after reporting the crimes were much harder and far worse on him than the years he endured Sandusky’s abuse.[142] Growing more anxious and desperate, the boy began cutting on himself and contemplated suicide:

> *I thought maybe it would be easier to take myself out of the equation. Let somebody else deal with it.[143]*

Just as in the Omaha, Nebraska scandal where the victims were singled out and severely punished, the same pattern of re-victimization is always a constant in every single pedophilia scandal. Victims’ initial allegations are never believed by authorities, especially when powerful figures are accused.

But just four months after the June 2012 Sandusky conviction, Aaron Fisher revealed his personal identity beyond central Pennsylvania to the rest of the world with the release of a book he co-authored with his mother and therapist called *Silent No More* published by a division of Random House.[144] Both the Sandusky legal defense team and the statewide pro-Penn State-Paterno crowd viciously attacked Aaron in the press as a complete fraud, claiming his repressed memories of abuse were falsely procured by his opportunistic therapist,[145] and that their civil suit against Penn State and sensationally timed book were solely motivated by "out to make a quick buck" greed.

After receiving financial compensation in the millions, then posting on his Facebook page two separate ill-advised photos of his girlfriend and him laying on a bed covered with cash bills, Aaron in his pic was defiantly flipping the bird, only adding fuel to his critics' venomous fire, undermining his reputation and cause for justice.[146] That said, a portion of his book's proceeds allegedly went to child sex abuse charities and like Matt Sandusky, Aaron has become a public speaker on the infamous Pennsylvania pedo-scandal drawing much needed attention and awareness to the worldwide child sexual abuse problem.[147]

Throughout this long, drawn out legal process, the GOP AG Corbett turned Gov. Tom Corbett was justifiably accused of intentionally stalling the case for political purposes until January 2011 after he was safely sworn into office in the governor's mansion. Meanwhile throughout this lengthy process, he had assigned just one state police investigator to the biggest scandal in college football history while deploying a platoon of 15-20 investigators to take down opponents in his state legislature.[148] Moreover, after AG Corbett was grandstanding during a 3-year delayed grand jury investigation, Gov. Corbett sat on the PSU Board of Trustees creating a serious conflict of interest breach. After allowing the serial pedophile coach to remain free for years hurting more youngsters, the shameless pedo-enabling governor had the gall to tell to the PSU trustees just before voting to fire Coach Paterno:

Remember that little boy in the shower…[149]

The gov’s hypocrisy and duplicity is boundless. His flagrant mishandling of the Sandusky scandal cost him a second term in office. Speaking of boundless conflict of interest involving Tom Corbett and yet more board members, over the years The Second Mile board members padded Corbett’s election campaign coffers to the hefty tune of $640,000 in exchange for granting a $3 million state grant to Second Mile just four months before Sandusky was arrested,[150] clearly bribe money aimed to go lax on the charity while self-servingly delaying its founder’s prosecution.[151] Corbett’s voted in replacement - State Attorney General Kathleen Kane agreed, claiming politics played a role in how the outgoing AG used the Sandusky case as a political football to his full advantage while more kids were being raped over the Luciferian Pennsylvania coals.

Also evidence of more GOP conflict of interest – the Republican magistrate judge, a Second Mile donor and volunteer, granted an arraigned fellow Republican Sandusky charged on 40 child sex abuse counts to walk without coughing up a penny on a $100,000 unsecured bail, living freely back home next to an elementary school without so much as an ankle bracelet. This ultra-lenient judge also benefited from a fundraiser for her 2007 election sponsored by the Second Mile chairman.[152] This deeply pervasive pattern of conflict of interest corruption and rampant cronyism committed by both donors and recipients alike at Second Mile and Penn State as well as by state politicians served to tactically circumvent both truth and justice.

Once the headlines of the grand jury indictment, arrest and subsequent prosecution of Joe Paterno’s onetime heir-apparent successor circulated around the globe, every organization remotely connected to Penn State attempted to distance itself, slamming both the pedophile coach as well as his powerful enablers, starting with the school's own Board of Trustees that had allegedly been kept in the dark over both the 1998 and 2001 shower room incidents. After the Board of Trustees held an emergency meeting immediately followed by a press conference on November 9, 2011, four days after the grand jury report was made public, the board's vice-chairman and CEO of US Steel Corp. read his dramatic script declaring Coach Joe Paterno retroactively fired and wouldn't finish the season, negating JoePa's previously announced retirement at season's end,[153] 2,000 students spontaneously poured out into the streets - not to grieve the many long suffering child victims - but in supportive protest, solidarity and grief for their beloved, now unemployed but very complicit coach. The demonstration turned violent when two television vans were overturned and police in riot gear moved in to unleash tear gas into the angry mob.[154] While Joe led his adoring crowd gathered in front of his home that night in a Penn State football cheer, he and his family's hearts were sickened, betrayed by the backstabbing trustees that they had considered their lifelong friends.[155]

But then less than four months earlier, knowing his shit was about to hit the fan, the "honorable" Joe Paterno transferred full ownership of his home to his wife for only $1 just to keep it away from being devoured by future lawsuits over his criminal part in the pedophile cover-up.[156] If the legendary coach was truly honorable and honestly never knew his assistant was a raping beast, why would he resort to such extreme measures in such close time proximity to his beast's conviction? Knowing he had so much to hide and fearing his coaching legacy couldn't be saved, six months before the cancer then spreading through his lungs would kill him, pragmatic Joe figured he at least would save for his family heirs his home purchased in 1966 for a mere $9,000[157] that had skyrocketed in value to near $600,000.

University students were reacting in shock and horror over Paterno's abrupt termination after 61 years of dedicated service to winning Penn State football, only made more vitriolic when realizing how they lost their precious JoePa coldly let go over a phone call.[158] When such a short time later Joe Paterno was diagnosed with lung cancer and died within weeks, his sudden passing so soon after he was rudely canned turned him into a martyr. And ever since his loyal legions have desperately clung to his dying words of vowed innocence, claiming his blue blood ignorance never quite grasped the fact that his assistant was a sexual deviant. But blind faith loyalty to a false god rarely produces happy endings… though the PapaJoe loyalists were out in full force worshipping their hero at 107,000 Happy Valley strong on September 17, 2016, a half century to the day after the legend coached his very first Penn State game.[159] Meanwhile, all the critics were appalled by PSU's gall.[160]

In a transparently desperate plea for leniency to avoid the death penalty, in anticipation that the nation's governing collegiate athletic body, the NCAA, would any minute be coming down hard on the university, Penn State removed the Joe Paterno statue at the Beaver Stadium entrance in July 2012, a month after Sandusky's conviction.[161] The interim Penn State President Rodney Erickson justified the Paterno statue unceremoniously placed in mothballs, believing it would be an impediment to the healing process of sex abuse victims everywhere.

And two days later the NCAA issued its unprecedented sanctions. While PSU avoided the "death penalty" of the football team disbandment, it was hit with a $60 million fine with an additional $13 million more going to the Big Ten Conference, both to be allocated for child abuse charities.

But by far viewed as the lowest blow came complete erasure of Paterno's last 111 Penn State victories after the 1998 season. This penalty also automatically removed the coaching legend's title as America's winningest coach, although after a settlement was reached in January 2015 following two Pennsylvania politicians challenging the severe NCAA sanctions, JoePa's wins were restored.[162] But not before NCAA President Mark Emmert took his swipes charging the school with placing "hero worship and winning at all costs" over and above "integrity, honesty and responsibility," as if these virtues actually exist in the NCAA. Capped as a passing footnote, with George HW's youngest son Marvin P. Bush sitting on the board of directors of both the NCAA[163] and the twin towers security firm on 911,[164] and the Bush crime family's confirmed history as overlords of the global child sex slave trafficking trade,[165] the NCAA can hardly be viewed a bastion of "integrity, honesty and responsibility." But Emmert's holier-than-thou performance under the circumstance called for his pious indignation:

> *The fundamental message here, the gut-check message is, do we have the right balance in our culture? Do we have, first and foremost, the academic values of integrity and honesty and responsibility as the drivers of our university? Or are we in a position where hero worship and winning at all costs has subordinated those core values?*[166]

Additionally, the university was initially banned from postseason bowl games for the next four years, placed on probation for the next half decade and forced to reduce its annual scholarship awards from 25 to 15, leaving it till the end of the decade to regain its full 85 man scholarship roster. But per the later negotiations, these measures were also softened. The NCAA encouraged Nittany Lion football players without punishment to jump ship and go elsewhere, which 15 of them did.[167] On a significant related note, while Paterno's assistant coach was convicted of 45 counts of child abuse, 163 of Paterno’s players from 2002-2008 were also convicted or pleaded guilty to 45 criminal counts.[168] So one might fairly conclude that under the Paterno and Penn State leadership, a culture of moral laxity permeated the football program that was rightfully crippled with harsh consequences.

But in recent years under new leadership, the Penn State football team has exceeded all rebounding expectation with 22 victories over the last two seasons alone, making it a national championship playoff contender and a ranked top 10 team again.[169] The gridiron powerhouse is obviously back. But the battle over the Paterno legacy still rages on with unanswered moral questions still lingering. Has the 99,000 student university population really learned its lessons when its alumni consistently vote in only new board of trustee members as unanimous Joe-bot reconcilers fervently rejecting the Freeh investigation findings?[170]

Upon release of his investigative report on the Sandusky scandal, Louis Freeh held a press conference in July 2012, a month after Jerry Sandusky was found guilty on 45 of 48 counts of victimizing children over a 15-year span from 1994-2009. Aside from supporting the mountains of criminal evidence gathered against Sandusky by both law enforcement and the state attorney general’s office grand jury presentment, the most significant other Freeh report finding was the fact that the top leadership at Penn State University, including JoePa himself, operated with complete criminal disregard, lack of support and lack of protection for Sandusky’ countless victims. In Freeh’s words:

Spanier, Schultz, Paterno and Curley never demonstrated, through actions or words, any concern for the safety and well-being of Sandusky’s victims until after Sandusky’s arrest.[171]

As of June 2017, Penn State announced that 45 alleged Sandusky victims have laid claims, again matching the convict's numerical criminal count, with at least 33 of the abused already having been financially compensated. To date, Sandusky crimes have fiscally cost Penn State a whopping $220.2 million.[172] In November 2016 federal officials fined Penn State another $2.4 million for failure to report campus crimes and warn children eminently in danger.[173] Conducting its own investigation, a US Department of Education report concluded that the university ignored numerous legal obligations under the 1990 Clery Act, summing up the stipulated violation:

> *In short, a man who was about to be charged with violent crimes against defenseless minors was free to roam the Penn State campus, as he pleased.*[174]

Another troubling facet of the Penn State scandal was the legally protected secrecy and complete lack of transparency resulting from the institution's exemption to release public records. A free press cannot gain access to public records of a public state university that maintains zero public oversight. This fact totally contradicts both first amendment free speech rights as well as the Right-to-Know Law. Journalists requesting reports, emails, and documents pertinent to the Sandusky investigation were met with a wall of resistance, claiming that neither the school nor its police department are subject to the Right-to-Know Law.[175] Out of 50 states, only one other besides Pennsylvania allows universities receiving public funding to be exempted from open records laws and that legalized concealment must cease if Penn State's inbred culture of secrecy and silence is ever to be eradicated. On top of that, as is notoriously common in scandalous criminal cover-ups, suddenly key documents, files and records went missing at Sandusky's Second Mile Foundation.[176] Apparently documentation from entire years mysteriously disappeared from 2000-03, which coincides with the critical 2001 shower room incident when no police contact was ever made.

Despite the standard wall-of-resistance cover-up protecting the guilty in every single known pedophilia scandal throughout history, per *radar.com* even after the Sandusky conviction corrupt federal agencies that normally cover up the elite’s sex crimes, like the FBI, in addition to the US Postal Service, were still conducting ongoing investigations into the scandal, having interviewed at least one eyewitness maintaining that he observed both the pedophile coach and a prominent Penn State donor on a plane having sex with an underage boy.[177] Even MSM giant *CBS News* reported that investigators were interviewing 6-7 more potential victims that may have received the coach’s seductive letters crossing state lines with promises of trips and gifts.[178] Additionally, since at least one of Sandusky’s computers was found containing child pornography, a determination of whether the pedophile shared kiddie porn with others was also in process. As of August 2012 these two federal agencies were continuing to follow leads, interviewing other potential witnesses to dig deeper into more incriminating evidence pointing to a larger child sex ring. Yet *CBS*, *Radar,* nor any other news agency has followed up with any of these investigative results, which strongly suggests it has been suppressed by the powers-that-shouldn’t-be… or that no further evidence was found. Yet based on so many solid source connections, all confirming the existence of a larger sex ring operation, that latter outcome is highly implausible.

These developments only add further credence to the testimony supporting the bold allegations of one former child sex slave named Greg Bucceroni that not only were child victims trafficked across state lines, they were being shared and sexually assaulted by other adults besides Jerry Sandusky, specifically by other powerful pedophile boosters in exchange for sizeable donations to Second Mile and Penn

State endowments.[179] Bucceroni specifically refers to a tristate child sex ring that trafficked underage youth like himself across state lines, in this case pimped out at Sandusky fundraisers to the coach's wealthy charity donors. It's also worth noting that during Sandusky's trial, Victim #4's testimony disclosed that Sandusky trafficked him across state lines to Florida's Outback Bowl in 1998 and again the following year to the Texas Alamo Bowl for the coach's final game[180] before his alleged forced retirement.[181]

Moreover, Greg Bucceroni asserts that the trafficking network involved known pedophiles, child pornographers and traffickers working conjointly with known mafia figures and well known political elites.[182] Greg's 2012 revelations have since been substantiated by a number of credible sources that include WikiLeaks' emails, other media accounts, FBI documents and a 1982 New York State Select Committee on Crime hearing.[183]

Many Penn State supporters have faulted excessive blame targeting their university that by conspicuous omission permitted Sandusky's Second Mile nonprofit to remain largely off the hook, absolved from its own criminal misconduct and reckless endangerment with its gross failure to protect its child clients from its founder's sexual perversions.[184] By legal and ethical mandate, Second Mile was responsible for the care and well-being of the disadvantaged youth it was entrusted to protect and serve, yet it failed miserably. Outside of its psychologist CEO Jack Raykovitz's forced resignation after 28 years on the job less than a week after Paterno was fired, unlike Penn State, Second Mile was largely spared from any further scrutiny, inquiry or investigation.[185] The charity's board of directors learned that Sandusky was under investigation in 2009 but chose to publicly remain silent while Sandusky was forced to retire from the charity he founded 32 years earlier.[186] *AP* reporters Matt Moore and Michael Rubinkam on May 25, 2012 wrote:

Longtime CEO Jack Raykovitz came under fire for failing to inform the charity's board about 2001 [McQueary's] *and 2008* [Aaron Fisher's] *abuse allegations against the retired coach. Infuriated board members told AP in December that had they been kept in the loop, they could have taken steps to better protect children a decade ago.*[187]

Like the top Penn State personnel, reason and motivation that the Second Mile CEO would knowingly allow more children from his organization to be further victimized is if he's a mere cog in the larger pedo-operation wheel. Prosecutor Joe McGettigan's opening statement at the trial makes the point:

The Second Mile, no matter what its reported purpose, was a victim factory for the defendant, an assembly line for adolescent children to be abused, sodomized, and anally raped.[188]

Pittsburgh radio talk show host and sports journalist Mark Madden wrote an article in April 2011 more than a half year ahead of the coach's arrest accurately predicting the November 2011 grand jury revelations. But during that first week in November 2011 as a radio guest on a Boston station, Madden had even more astounding information to relay:

I hear there's a rumor that there will be a more shocking development from the Second Mile Foundation — and hold on to your stomachs, boys, this is gross, I will use the only language I can — that Jerry Sandusky and Second Mile were pimping out young boys to rich donors. That was being investigated by two prominent columnists even as I speak.[189]

Similar to the Franklin scandal’s victimized Boys Town residents, when piecing together all available evidence from so many corroborating sources, it seems indisputable that the Second Mile child sex “factory assembly line” wasn’t just to service the charity’s founder, but to traffic and pimp Second Mile victims to wealthy donors, VIPs and high class friends at Second Mile, Penn State, the Pennsylvania state house and beyond.

On November 28, 2011 veteran journalist William Keisling wrote:

> *When the pedophile sex scandal becomes public, the case is quickly referred to Pennsylvania Attorney General Tom Corbett. Corbett and his close allies would time and again obstruct and cover up the sex ring—for more than fifteen years … A prominent figure* [Sandusky] *would be sacrificed, but the VIP sex and prostitution ring would be concealed and protected for years. This was done not only to protect Corbett’s political allies, but also to protect Corbett’s own political fortunes and ambitions.*[190]

By elitist design, Joe Paterno became the next public victim to be sacrificed in order to divert media attention away from the Second Mile sex ring and its pedophile club members. Keisling boldly exposes the operation:

> *Over the coming years, at every turn,* [York County Police Commissioner Grofcsik] *and others would say the Pennsylvania Attorney General’s office, and Tom Corbett, stood in the way of stopping VIPs from having sex with children. Later, court officers would openly boast of enjoying sex with children, and praise Corbett for protecting their illicit activities.*[191]

In a June 2012 interview right in the middle of the Sandusky trial, William Keisling had this to say:

Corbett was the obstacle. These are the worst sorts of people doing the worst sorts of things. These are not good people. Tom Corbett got money from TSM, plus he gave money to them. What does it say that Corbett's attorney general's office had the case for three years and did nothing about it? It's systemic corruption. These people are morally bankrupt.[192]

As a natural consequence to being so closely associated with the infamous pedophile coach playing the elite's fall guy role, and despite the charity's free pass from any further inquiry, the Second Mile eventually folded in July 2016,[193] but all sordid criminal activity perpetrated by its employees, board members, donors and officials virtually went both unexamined and unpunished.

Again, the caveat bears mention here that most of the foundation's workers through its four decades are decent people and many youth have been helped by the organization. But the multimillion dollar charity that onetime boasted the likes of pedophile Monarch mind control slave owner Bob Hope[194] and fellow pedophile President Jerry Ford[195] as its honorary board of directors possesses a long history of criminality extending far beyond either both professional neglect, careless disregard for children or obstruction of justice by withholding "lost" records. Evidence has also been uncovered that Sandusky and his Second Mile were both deeply involved in a child sex trafficking ring, with the derelict coach pimping out his Second Mile youth to his charity's wealthiest donor friends in high places, with direct links to the Harrisburg state government all the way to DC and beyond.[196]

Because this scandal is no different from the rest covered in this book, you can safely believe that every effort's been made by the powerful diabolical forces responsible for the global child sex trafficking network to keep the Sandusky scandal localized and contained, exclusively limited to the Penn State University-State College area as if this was merely a one man freak show operation, a mere isolated anomaly and fluke. But like every other major pedophilia scandal on record, it’s always just the tip of an exposed, mostly covered-up iceberg. But when mainstream media sources like *CBS* and the *Huffington Post* link Sandusky’s Second Mile to a larger child trafficking ring, even if cloaked behind “rumor mill” speculation, this all important lead is worth examining further.[197] But when corroborated by multiple other reliable sources, along with an elementary understanding of the elite’s pedophilia cabal based on documentable proven past history, a crystalized bigger picture emerges exposing how our most vulnerable kids in the child welfare system (and around the globe) are systemically thrashed and trashed as expendable pipeline throwaways for Luciferian sickos at the top of the planet’s demonic food chain to both literally and lustfully feast on and destroy.

Though with his 30-60 year prison sentence, for all intents and purposes, Jerry Sandusky the serial pedophile is finally out of commission for the rest of his life, there’s no doubt that some of his most powerful Second Mile donors that bought, sold and sodomized young children were and still are part of the larger child trafficking ring operating in the tristate Pennsylvania-New York-New Jersey to Washington DC area as part of the global trafficking pipeline.

It was by calculated design that Sandusky’s Second Mile Foundation virtually avoided any negative publicity while so much was dished on Penn State and its complicit enablers, by both the grand jury and Freeh investigations for obvious reason - to protect exposure of the larger globalized pedo-network. Just as the over-lenient judge at Sandusky’s arraignment cut the dangerous serial pedophile loose to remain a free man because she was connected financially and was a volunteer at his charity, and thus compromised due to her conflict of interest, a number of dual serving high level Penn State operatives were also closely affiliated with the Sandusky foundation. And like Jerry, his rich donors from the elitist pedophile class also share a vested interest in their philanthropic foundations and endowments as a viable means of gaining both shielded and easy access to vulnerable children.

It appears that this covertly intertwined nexus between Sandusky's university and his charity sheltered an insulated private pedo-club of fellow child rapists and assorted pedo-enablers serving on the board of directors as both foundation and university higher-ups as well as major charity donors. Other club members linked to Second Mile and Sandusky's trafficking ring are powerful judges, prosecuting attorneys, state and federal legislators that includes virtually every Pennsylvania governor, as well as organized crime bosses, all directly tied to their child trafficking network. Yet by careful meticulous design, their active participation in the pedophilia operation that Sandusky played a minor but pivotal role in as a cog within the larger demonic global machine was never adequately investigated. Penn State ensured that its records were legally shielded from public access while years of Second Mile records were conveniently removed and eliminated to protect the most guilty, powerful pedo-players. This systematic cover-up of the larger pedophilia network servicing VIP sickos on the Eastern Seaboard has yet to be made fully explicit to the public. But for many years evidentiary pieces to this crime cabal puzzle have remained in place, and over time, fewer missing pieces are removing any speculative guesswork to form a far more completed, clear, confirmed picture.

A mini-Penn State pedophilia scandal at a famous elite prep school a couple hundred miles away from Happy Valley in

Brooklyn known as Poly Prep was running its sinister course in lockstep with the Sandusky scandal.[198] This incredible parallel horror story started unfolding when another serial pedophile football coach named Phil Foglietta began coaching at Poly Prep the same year Paterno took over as head coach at Penn State - 1966. And just like at Penn State, for decades (a quarter century), school administrators knowingly tolerated and routinely covered up the coach's beastly crimes abusing hundreds of underage boys in order to protect the elitist prep school's reputation and funding sources where Meryl Streep and Jon Bon Jovi send their kids.[199] The same year Sandusky's grand jury investigation was launched in 2009, a federal lawsuit was filed against the complicit prep school for sweeping the sins of its deceased Coach Foglietta under the rug. And the same year Sandusky was finally convicted in 2012, a court settlement was ultimately reached at Poly Prep. But 2012 was also the same year that child abuse survivor Greg Bucceroni made allegations connecting the dots between Sandusky's Penn State trafficking ring and Foglietta's at Poly Prep, laid out in detail in an explosively revealing September article in the *New York Daily News*. At the height of the Sandusky debacle in 2012, Greg Bucceroni wrote in an email to the Poly Prep administration:

> *(Between) 1977-1980 I was a child prostitute associated with a tristate (NYC-NJ-PA) pedophile ring. (During the) summer of 1979 I was brought to the State College area by Ed Savitz for the purpose of child prostitution with Jerry Sandusky at a Second Mile fundraiser. Due to time constraints, Sandusky became unavailable and I was introduced to Phil Foglietta by Ed Savitz and Jerry Sandusky. Foglietta was introduced to us as Coach Phil who coached youth football in NYC. Foglietta agreed to pay $200 for child sex and followed us back to a Philadelphia hotel, myself (sic)*

and another child prostitute then engaged Coach Phil in child sex.[200]

Greg Bucceroni also said that a friend of his who was raped by Sandusky, later committed suicide, which especially motivated him to divulge his own story outing the longtime predator and his part in the child trafficking network once the 2011 news broke of the coach's arrest.[201] Bucceroni maintains that he was a trafficked child victim in a sex ring involving the late Philadelphia businessman Ed Savitz, who died of AIDS in 1993. Greg also outed several other influential participants - University of Pennsylvania's Wharton School of Business Professor Lawrence Scott Ward, still serving a lengthy prison sentence for trafficking child pornography, Philly philanthropist and slumlord Samuel Rappaport who died in 1994,[202] currently incarcerated Coach Sandusky and never charged Coach Foglietta who died in 1998.[203]

With far more evidence gathered on international pedophilia trafficking operations emanating from Washington DC's Pizzagate turned PedoGate scandal in late 2016,[204] last December *Disobedient Media* journalists Elizabeth Vos and William Craddock interviewed the now 52-year old Greg Bucceroni, posting a stunning in-depth piece tying the Sandusky trafficking ring to the national Franklin scandal,[205] and further illustrating one of this book's key points - all of these interconnected pedo-operations are financed, supported and overseen by the same invisible Luciferian forces, from the local ground level up to the massive movement and victimization of millions of sexually abused children ongoing every year throughout this world. Tragically, more slaves on this planet exist now than ever before in human history,[206] and the vast majority are sexually preyed upon young women and children.[207]

Greg Bucceroni reported first meeting Ed Savitz, “a youth advocate,” at his old stomping grounds, a community event sponsored by the South Philadelphia Boys Club.[208] Savitz was a well-connected businessman from an upper crust family, an Ivy League U. of Penn grad and a regular Democratic Party donor bigwig frequenting political campaign rallies in 1976 for the future Democratic Philadelphia Mayor turned Governor Ed Rendell, then running for the “lowly” steppingstone office of Philadelphia District Attorney.[209] As a City of Brotherly Love native, Greg Bucceroni said that Savitz and his cohort, the filthy rich city slumlord-fellow pervert Samuel Rappaport, were regular pedo-partners-in-crime, recruiting their underage prey mainly through their favorite charity - the South Philadelphia Boys Club.[210]

Invariably influential pedophiles select troubled youth that are the most vulnerable, accessible, and least in a position to provide potential blowback or credibility to any future claims. At-risk youth from lower socioeconomic backgrounds are always fair game to prominent derelicts who predatorily entice their victims through money and drug offers most often under the auspices of charity organizations. Bucceroni has consistently stated that Philly DA and later Mayor Rendell was well-aware of Savitz’s perversely sick habits, like paying Greg and other underage boys to defecate and urinate in his mouth just for his deviant kicks.[211] During the late 1970s and early 1980s, Savitz had the means to pimp young boys out to the perverted likes of Sandusky, the coach’s high-end patrons and powerful political luminaries like soon-to-be congressional House Speaker Dennis Hastert.[212]

Pimp Savitz’s pedo-cohort Samuel Rappaport was also a business partner of notorious Richard Basciano, the Times Square pornography titan specializing in child pornography and snuff films catering to heinously sick habits of the pedo-elite. Basciano was also a known crime partner to mobster Robert DiBernardo, a 1986 murder victim for crossing infamous New York City crime boss John Gotti.[213] Porno king Basciano ran DiBernardo's Star Distributors out of the Big Apple that supplied child pornography nationwide. The Washington Metropolitan Police Department investigated Star Distributors and determined that child pornography and child sex trafficking were two closely linked, moneymaking mob enterprises.[214] Savitz, Rappaport and Basciano were simply the middle men between organized crime and corrupt politicians peddling child pornography and trafficked child sex slaves. Additionally, a number of press releases established an enduring friendship between high powered politician Ed Rendell and child porn/snuff film distributor Richard Basciano who of course was also a frequent contributor to Rendell's various political campaigns.

Greg Bucceroni also told *Disobedient Media* that high-powered, suspected pedophile lobbyist Tony Podesta of Pizzagate infamy was friends with Savitz and Basciano, seen together at various philanthropic events.[215] And to come full circle, per a four part fluff piece in the *Washington Post*'s Arts & Living section, as Rendell's chief election strategist for his 2006 gubernatorial campaign, Tony and his wife Heather Podesta are very close friends with Ed Rendell.[216] Bet their common interest in child sex slave trafficking won't be featured any time soon in the CIA owned and controlled *WaPo*.[217] And to complete the bigger crime circle linking Rendell to the pedophile Clintons, Ed's ex-wife Midge was appointed by Bill as a federal district judge in 1994.[218]

The Clintons assisted convicted child kidnapper and would-be trafficker Laura Silsby caught attempting to smuggle 33 Haitian children at the Dominican Republic border right after the devastating 2010 earthquake.[219] At the same time Ed Rendell was implicated in a similar incident illegally trafficking 12 more children from the poorest nation in the

Western Hemisphere.[220] Even Secretary of State Hillary’s fixer and scandal-suppressor Patrick F. Kennedy had to intervene to reel in “Fast Eddie” who was getting too much public notice in his zest for personally escorting kids from Haiti. Recall that at the same time Hillary had her hands full sending Kennedy to call off an FBI investigation of her US Ambassador to Belgium Howard Gutman for his pedophile crimes with young boys in Brussels[221] while she was busy giving away one fifth of our nation’s supply of uranium to Russia.[222]

With his dirty little fingers in too many pedo-pies, amidst yet another scandal, Governor Rendell had to resign as a board director of the Hong Kong based company Imperial Pacific operating in the Pacific island of Saipan, known for money laundering and trafficking underage girls.[223] The bottomless rabbit hole pit that is the oozing deep state swamp surrounding the Clinton-Bush crime family,[224] the Podesta brothers, Wasserman (and her Awan brothers),[225] Rendell and his Democratic National Committee,[226] which incidentally Rendell was chairman of from 2008 to 2009, is so steeped in global pedophilia operations, an entire book can be written on it. Come to think of it, one already has.

Further clues incriminating former DNC chairman (1999-2001), Democratic governor (2003-2011) and diehard Clinton supporter Ed Rendell link to pedophilia comes from Greg Bucceroni. Recall that convicted pedophile and Greg’s pimp Ed Savitz was a major donor and friend of the governor whose tough guy appearance and language resembles more a Mafioso figure than a polished public servant puppet. But then perhaps that rough edge came from his longtime close association with organized crime. He made no bones about his close friendship with mobster Louis De Naples, Jr.[227] Also lending credence to Greg’s claim that pedophile “Fast Eddie” Savitz ran with high profile politician “Fast Eddie” Rendell, Savitz’s brother Sam and Rendell are or have both served on the same Philadelphia board at the Kimmel Center for the Performing Arts[228] and in 2006 the governor honored Sam Savitz's wife Selma for her "Volunteer of the Year" award.[229] Bucceroni has stated consistently that as Philadelphia District Attorney (1978-1986), Rendell was well aware of Savitz's disgusting criminal habits. In fact, during Rendell's first year as Philadelphia DA, he cut "Fast Eddie" Savitz a sweetheart deal after his first of three pedophilia arrests in exchange for a visit to a rehab center, expunging the derelict's criminal record that freed Savitz to go out and do more damage.[230]

What clearly emerges from police investigations, the Franklin scandal as well as Bucceroni's firsthand accounts is that a well-organized national network of child trafficking operations existed 40 years ago. Also consistent with other verifiable records, the CIA, Mossad, KGB, MI6 and the entire global intelligence community has long been actively deployed in sexual blackmail operations using minors as kiddie bait to gain control over public figures and government assets (for the textbook anatomy of blackmail operations, see Chapter 14 the Jeffrey Epstein scandal).[231] The veracity of Greg Bucceroni's far reaching claims as a child abuse victim, part of a tristate sex ring operating in the late 70s and early 80s, is overwhelmingly backed by subsequent confirmed police and state government crime force documentation, more recent pedophilia scandals as well as a plethora of other solid media sources.

In 1979 the trafficked 13-year old Bucceroni was being regularly abused by his well-connected pimp Ed Savitz who knew Jerry Sandusky through his Second Mile fundraisers and sporting events.[232] Greg stated that his stepfather a year later in 1980 filled out a Second Mile application for services that Greg and Savitz hand delivered to Sandusky, but the instant that Greg later beat up Savitz after an attempted rape, his chance of program enrollment vanished.

After three sex crime arrests, serial pedophile Savitz would eventually get busted in a sting operation on multiple counts of child sexual abuse, precipitated by soliciting oral sex from two 15-year olds, and subsequent confiscation from his homes in 1992 of 5,000 photos of his child victims (including nude pics of Greg) and a fetish collection of 312 trash bags of soiled boys’ underwear and carefully stashed away pizza boxes literally full of boys’ shit.[233] But just 9 days before his scheduled trial, a year later in 1993 the perverted wacko died of AIDS, and as a public health menace nearly caused an AIDS panic in his City of Brotherly Love.[234]

A month after Sandusky’s conviction while the Penn State scandal was still blazing across international headlines, Greg Bucceroni was also interviewed by the courageous late journalist-author Victor Thorn of *American Free Press* who also further exposed the larger pedo-network connection.[235] Rare to nil was any news coverage showing the direct linkage of Sandusky’s Second Mile Foundation to the greater tristate and national pedophile trafficking network. Even the Louis Freeh report published that same month in July focused its exclusive blame on Sandusky and his Penn State enablers, staying overtly clear of implicating powerful politicians, judges, CEOs, bankers, law enforcement officials, doctors, and lawyers who are and were card-carrying pedo-club insiders affiliated with Second Mile, Penn State and the internationalized pedophile network. Invariably in scandal after scandal, child rapists from this insulated upper crust, elitist strata on the predator food chain remain anonymously immune from any and all accountability. Case in point - aside from the chronic buzz of alt-right wishful thinkers,[236] have any members of the most notorious pedophile crime family dynasty - the Bushes and Clintons - ever been arrested?… despite the never ending predictions.

At the time of his 2012 interview, Greg Bucceroni was employed as a school police officer by the Philadelphia school district as well as a volunteer at the city’s District Attorney’s office. He expounded on his trips to The Second Mile (TSM) fundraisers:

> *In 1979 and 1980—when I was 13 and 14 years old - a well-connected pedophile named Edward Savitz took me on trips from Philadelphia to TSM fundraisers. I knew the minute I got there it was a breeding ground because of Savitz’s involvement. While [Jerry] Sandusky interacted with wealthy donors, the other men were sizing-up kids. I felt like a cheap whore because I was in these naked pictures that Savitz was passing around. Savitz* [had] *talked about taking kids from Philly to the Second Mile and introducing them to men - soliciting them to ‘his friends.’ They exchanged and swapped kids like baseball cards. It was a feeding frenzy. I felt like a prostitute or a go-go dancer at a bachelor party. I felt dirty, used and cheap.*[237]

The parallels are too striking to ignore between the Sandusky scandal and America’s largest pedophilia scandal, the Franklin-Omaha Boys Town debacle (Chapter 13) that directly linked the Bush Senior White House. First and foremost, throughout the 70s, 80s and into the early 90s they were both simultaneously co-occurring, both preying on an unlimited supply of underage children from two highly praised charity organizations - Boys Town in Nebraska and Second Mile in Pennsylvania. And equally significant is the fact that both longtime perps Larry King and Jerry Sandusky were covertly tolerated, supported and covered-up for far too long by powerful criminals at both federal and state levels protecting the elite’s larger pedophilia operations.

One common link of an alleged protector in both the PA and NE state scandals is one Graham Spanier. Is it coincidence that Spanier as the president of Penn State from 1995-2011 knowingly let Sandusky abuse underage boys for decades and that his last job prior to arriving at PSU was chancellor at the University of Nebraska at Lincoln from 1991-1995, a stone's throw from the Omaha epicenter during the Nebraska scandal's final years.[238] So we have Spanier moving from one statewide pedophilia ring to the next. Coincidence? I don't think so.

But here's the kicker. Spanier was also a very close friend and associate with another U. of Nebraska-Lincoln chancellor turned president, the disgraced Franklin scandal player Ronald Roskens after being fired in 1989 for getting caught entertaining naked young underage boys at his state owned residence. And then fellow pedophile President George HW Bush, also steeped in the Nebraska scandal, even deeper in its cover-up, immediately hired Roskens to run USAID, a frequent CIA cover for the global child sex trafficking network.[239] Is all this coincidence? Again, hardly. And as long as we're on the subject of Daddy Bush, yet another common linkage between Nebraska and Pennsylvania pedophilia is the pedo-prez himself GHW Bush, who ran with and paid homage to both scandals' beastly protagonists, major GOP fundraiser Larry King[240] and Jerry Sandusky whose pedo-foundation was #283 on Bush's 1,000 Points of Light.

Just two days after the Sandusky scandal broke, having done his investigative homework, on November 7, 2011 former US Naval Intelligence and CIA field officer as well as private investigator Brent Goodwin had this to say about Penn State President Graham Spanier and his former University of Nebraska friend and colleague Ronald Roskens:

Spanier and Roskens are both 'closeted' gay men who are sexually aroused by young boys. They are classic pedophiles. Ronald Roskens has ties to former Franklin Credit Union president and convicted felon/child molester

Larry King, as well as a long list of known pedophiles throughout the United States. Several of Spanier's 'military friends' were recently charged in an international pedophilia scandal at the Department of Defense. Spanier and Roskens were also close friends and longtime associates of convicted child molester Dr. Daniel Schrein.[241]

Only after all the evidence of Sandusky's monstrous crimes were made public knowledge did Spanier finally admit he was "troubled" by the scandal at his university. This man's personal history explains exactly why his understated response throughout his 14 year PSU tenure was one big non-response.[242] With human sexuality the banished Penn State prez's chosen academic career focus, his 1973 PhD sociology dissertation featured topic was premarital sex that included a subsection on wife swapping. He later wrote another paper embracing wife swapping as a healthy interpersonal choice.[243] Yet the so called sex expert claims he never knew Sandusky was a pedophile. Not only did Spanier tolerate child sexual abuse but it's been proven in a court of law that he went out of his criminal way to shield the predator coach.

Additionally, in November 2000 Spanier officially endorsed several days of frolicking decadence on his campus with a Penn State festival called "Cuntfest," complete with large banners draped from academic buildings broadcasting "Cuntfest."[244] When asked by incensed legislators if it was immoral for a publicly funded university to sponsor such controversial events, Spanier's smug answer was:

It depends on what your definition of immoral is.

Again by sinister design, the notion of moral relativism is intended to blur the lines between right and wrong[245] as the New World Order's strategy is to normalize pedophilia (see Chapter 2).[246] If the Luciferian elite can make sex with little kids seem normal and okay, who’s going to complain if anyone knows they’ve been doing it for millenniums?

Then there’s the case of child abuse victim Paul McLaughlin, sexually molested from age 11 to 15 in the late 70s and early 80s by noted Penn State child development professor John “Jack” Neisworth, famous for writing the encyclopedia on autism.[247] As part of his therapy in 2001, McLaughlin taped a phone conversation confronting his abuser who admitted to performing oral sex on him. But when he took the recording to Penn State President Spanier, Paul reported:

> [Spanier] *told me that as far as he was concerned it was hearsay,* [explaining] ‘Neisworth *has an impeccable record. He has never been accused of anything.’ They were more interested in protecting the school. They didn't seem to have any interest in protecting children at all.*[248]

Five years later the “impeccable” former Penn State pedo-professor was charged with multiple counts of child abuse in the state of Maryland. Not that that would make any difference in the mind of pedophile enabler Spanier. His actions have always been consistent - protecting the pedophile.

And then after Spanier was fired from his Penn State gig in 2011, he took a top secret job covertly working for the US government as a national security consultant.[249] What is it with these fired, pedo-scandalous ex-college presidents from notorious child trafficking states immediately getting scooped up by Washington in high powered federal positions of such clandestine importance? Or as the always astute journalist-writer Jon Rappoport reasons and questions:

> *Because Spanier kept his mouth shut about Sandusky’s crimes against children, this proved he was no snitch and the government could trust him to keep its secrets, too*?... *Is there an agency we’ve never heard of, whose job is to*

protect high-level pedophiles from investigation and prosecution?... *Was Spanier brought to PSU because of his close ties to a far-reaching pedophile network in Nebraska?*[250]

One last bombshell of a fact to ponder, during Joe Paterno's final coached Penn State game on October 29, 2011 - just days from away his oust, guess who was sitting cozily next to the soon-to-be terminated Penn State prez in his plush private press box watching the game with various PSU board of trustees?[251] The already grand jury investigated, less than a week away from indictment - the pedophile coach himself Jerry Sandusky. Clearly this telling scene is the giveaway outing Spanier, Sandusky and their implicated, closest trustee buddies as part of a larger national pedophilia network.

Bridging the Franklin-Sandusky national network made graphically clear is child abuse survivor Greg Bucceroni's eyewitness testimony, confirming the broader scope of the existing pedo-network that was most definitely flourishing four decades ago. Greg maintains that he met the Franklin scandal ringleader and GOP superstar Lawrence (aka Larry) King when the infamous child trafficker hosted:

… Taking kids from the South Philly Boys Club to Washington D.C.[252]

Bucceroni recalls a Ronald Reagan fundraiser where Ronnie wasn't present (kind of like his entire vacated presidency after his VP nearly assassinated him barely a month into office),[253] [254] but with other big names showing up, Greg was served with the other kids as after party dessert:

[It took place] in a townhouse somewhere in Washington DC [likely at the White House "midnight tour guide" Craig Spence's pad]. *When we got there, there were kids from other areas* [like Nebraska]*. There was food, watching porn and alcohol and marijuana. We were introduced to guys, like*

a meet-and-greet. [Remember Cheney's meet-and-greet?] *Afterwards, there was a post-party. Certain people were there... we negotiated a price, did whatever we did, then would go back in and do other sexual deviant acts.*[255]

Numerous overly familiar themes run deep throughout Bucceroni's firsthand accounts. Greg stated that Ed Savitz gave him $40 that night to service the future, third-in-line to the US presidency and longest running GOP House Speaker Dennis Hastert (1999-2007), who always was a stayover regular for after-party kiddie sex, in between mingling with his two high profile child sex traffickers Savitz and King. Of course in recent years the disgraced ex-congressman has done some time mingling with fellow prison inmates for attempting to bribe $3.5 million worth of hush money to his past pedophilia victims he abused while a high school wrestling coach.[256] Gotta watch out for those coaching pervs. In December 2017 just three months out of prison, the presiding Illinois judge who called Hastert a "serial child molester" barred the 75-year old from ever being left alone with minors.

Also just like the few honest Nebraskan state legislators such as John DeCamp, Loran Schmit and Ernie Chambers who at every turn were stymied, outnumbered and mostly defeated by the formidable conspiracy of guilty players bent on maintaining their criminal cover-up, led by President Bush himself, neutralizing and even assassinating truth seeking investigators who got in their way,[257] it appears as though the same ugly tactics and unfortunate outcome are unfolding in the Pennsylvania scandal as well.

In 2012 the first party Democrat and woman elected as Pennsylvania's attorney general as well as Corbett's successor Kathleen Kane successfully campaigned and won on the promise to uncover why the Sandusky disgrace dragged its heels so long before bringing the perp to justice, hinting she would go after the guilty, behind-the-scenes players who largely remain unidentified and most responsible, many of whom are linked to Second Mile, Penn State and the Harrisburg state house.[258] In so doing, since taking office in 2013 she threatened to expose the pedophilia operation that extends far beyond the Penn State coach to the notorious interstate trafficking network that's long thrived in the Quaker State. But in Pennsylvania an anti-pedo crusader easily becomes a top priority target to the powerful criminals, hence various corrupt judges, state legislators and prominent attorneys who have so much to hide but even more to lose launched an all-out war to ruin her before she could ruin them and their pedophilia operations.

To add insult to injury, a couple years ago, a Pennsylvania pedo-enabling judge ruled in favor to reinstate Jerry Sandusky's pension allotment of near five grand a month withheld since his June 2012 conviction for sexually abusing 10 boys, so as of January 2016 the jailbird for life was suddenly $211,000 richer with 6% accrued interest.[259] Meanwhile in stark contrast, because the state's top prosecutor Kane was bent on removing pedophiles from power, the state Supreme Court quickly clipped her wings, disbarring her. Next her hidden and not so hidden enemies conjured up a bogus case of perjury and obstruction of justice in a kangaroo court to unjustifiably convict her, forcing her 2016 resignation, while today she still awaits appeal that for now keeps her out of prison.[260]

It supposedly started when Kathleen allegedly leaked grand jury information about the Sandusky grand jury prosecutor Frank Fina's apparent mishandling of corruption charges against public officials.[261] But in actuality, Kane was going after powerful, politically connected, wealthy pedophiles that run the state's child porn-sex trafficking network, protected by the courts and judges that have conspired to destroy Kathleen Kane.[262] The deposed Attorney General outed Frank Fina and a number of her corrupt attack dog adversaries - judges, district attorneys, and state police officials at one time ostensibly assigned to investigate Sandusky and his child sex ring, yet all the while hedging and colluding in massive cover-up.

Kane posted a series of their racist, sexist, scandalously pornographic, pedophilic suggestive images found in their emails, forcing some into early retirement.[263] But as of April 2018, Fina and company are at it again, just receiving the go-ahead from a judge that originally threw their latest libel case out claiming Kathleen merely exercising her freedom of speech was lawful.[264] But the Fina crowd finagled the state appeals court to overrule the judge's decision, forcing him to pick and choose what former AG's statements about her opponents can be contested as libelous in court. After disbarring her, convicting and sentencing her to at least a year in prison, forcing her as the state's top prosecutor to resign, clearly this latest pile-on overkill to kill Kathleen Kane's future is intent on sending the very loud and clear message to anyone else who may dare try to expose and bring to justice members of the powerful pedo-cabal club.

Several years ago even fellow Democrat Governor Tom Wolfe joined the enemy camp, pressuring her to resign. Pedophiles and their complicit enablers have always included both Democrats and Republicans, especially in the state of Pennsylvania. Investigative reporter Wayne Madsen has exposed a number of key state politicians, judges and attorneys with active membership in this pedophile enabler club determined to ruin Kathleen Kane.[265] Madsen also lists all the state's pro-pedo peddling governors, starting from the 1970s to the present, from Republicans Richard Thornburgh, former Homeland Security Director Tom Ridge, Mark Schweiker, and the biggest pedo-enabling governor of them all, former AG Sandusky "prosecutor" - Tom Corbett to

Democrats Milton Shapp, Bob Casey, Sr., pedo-trafficking-linked Ed Rendell, to today's Tom Wolf, all are or were pedophile-friendly and highly protective of prominent child rapists operating inside Pennsylvania.

In a state where the historic body politic has been in bed with very young boys for a long time, an anti-pedophile public servant like Kathleen Kane hardly stood a chance, and the post-Sandusky era only confirms that. Sadly just like in Nebraska, outnumbered and overpowered, it appears as though Pennsylvania is following suit, where the bad guys self-protecting their personal stake in the larger pedo-cabal are again outgunning and outlasting another honest public servant daring to challenge the evil status quo.

Another over-the-top sign that Pennsylvania lawmakers are either pedophiles or minimally compromised pedophile enablers is the state senate's defeat of HB 1947 two years ago that would have abolished the statute of limitations for child sex abuse crimes in all criminal cases and extended the statute for civil cases from age 30 to 50.[266] Clearly the pedo powerbrokers in the Harrisburg government along with protecting the ecclesiastical pedo-interests of Catholic archdioceses do not want pedophiles to be held accountable for their egregious crimes. The bill's righteously angry yet resolutely determined sponsor Rep. Mark Rozzi, a child sexual abuse victim himself, had this to say:

Today I want my message to be clear. I don't care who you are. I don't care what institution it is. I don't care when the abuse took place. If you abused children, we are coming for you. If you're an institution that protected and actively managed predators, we are coming for you. If you're a legislator who decides it's more important to protect pedophiles and the institution that protected them, we are coming for you.[267]

Groundbreaking journalist and respected author Nick Bryant (*The Franklin Scandal*) concisely summed up the common linked essence of both the Nebraska and Pennsylvania scandals:

> *The reality is that many perpetrators are not shady men in dirty threadbare trench coats living in seedy hotels, but are in fact, 'pillars of our community.'*[268]

In recent years Pennsylvania has been riddled with scandal after scandal, many breaking concurrently with Sandusky's in 2011. An example is Milton Hershey School, America's largest and wealthiest free boarding school for impoverished children with $7.5 billion in assets and 1,850 students.[269] One of the school' house parents was caught possessing 700 images and 40 videos of child pornography. The year before in 2010 the school settled a $3 million suit brought on by five abuse victims at the hands of a son of a part-time house parent. And in 2006 and 2007 a male and a female teacher were arrested for having sex with their students.

Then there was the infamous "kids for cash" case where a Pennsylvania children's court judge was slipped a million dollars in bribe money by a builder of juvenile detention facilities in exchange for sending children by the droves passing through his courtroom to fill up his child prisons.[270] In August 2011 Judge Mark Ciavarella was sentenced to 30 years behind bars. The state supreme court was forced to overturn 4,000 juvenile offenders' convictions for violating their due process from 2003-2008. Filling the lockup detention centers with first time offenders as young as 10 turned into a get-rich-quick racket that both Judge Ciavarella and fellow Judge Michael Conahan accepted payments of over $2 million before getting busted.

Another horrific case that played a large part in Russian President Putin's decision to halt all adoptions of Russian children to America[271] was 7 year old Nathaniel Michael

Craver who in 2003 with his twin sister were adopted by a Pennsylvania couple that abused and murdered the boy.[272] To save themselves from the death penalty, the parents claimed the child suffered from Fetal Alcohol Syndrome and Reactive Attachment Disorder, maintaining that the little boy’s self-injurious behavior did him in. Due to brain injury and failure to thrive, Nathaniel died in August 2009 with 80 body wounds, 20 of them head wounds. But instead of homicide, the Cravers were convicted only of child endangerment and released after 18 months of time served with a 3.5 year probation. This outrageous, next to no sentence was vehemently challenged by a Russian Investigative Committee since the Russian adoptee clearly was brutally murdered.

Reputed to be the most prolific child sex offender in US history, a PA pediatrician straight out of Temple University med school practiced his first 10 years in the pedo-friendly state prior to moving to Delaware in 1994.[273] Dr. Earl Bradley was arrested in December 2009 on 471 charges of child rape of 103 girls from 3 months to 15-years old. While parents were in the waiting room, the pedophile was drugging his young patients with chemically laced lollipops while filming his brutal crimes against children, up to 7,000 of them, hundreds becoming victims over a 15 year period. In December 2012 a $123 million lawsuit was settled and he’s serving 164 year sentence. The monster’s office building was torn down so that the townspeople are spared from daily remembrance of his crime scene damage.

Already covered earlier was the strange 2005 disappearance of DA Ray Gricar who threw out the 1998 case against Sandusky. But another prosecutor died mysteriously in Lancaster County Pennsylvania. This unsolved mystery involved the young Baltimore assistant city attorney Jonathon Luna, found dead in a shallow creek with 30 stab wounds to the body in December 2003.[274]

Last but not least, PA and its University of Pennsylvania are the dubious home to the False Memory Syndrome,[275] the pedo-elite's calculated counteroffensive answer to the so called "satanic panic" of the 1980s and early 90s. Founded by pedophile scientists employed by the CIA's MK Ultra and Monarch mind control programs, the False Memory Foundation was strategically launched as a sweeping broad stroke to discredit, obscure and dismiss abuse claims and testimony of actual sex abuse victims, a readymade go-to defense weapon deployed as legal aid in virtually every pedophile courtroom.[276]

The Luciferian elite diabolically behind the vast global pedophilia cabal and sex trafficking network knew it must suppress growing public awareness recognizing the mounting threat of the worldwide satanic child sex abuse epidemic and consigned the University of Pennsylvania think tank (and Hillary-for-president endorsed alma mater of President Trump[277]) to propagate the so called "fallacy" of retrieving buried memories. In 1991, 80% of the media coverage of child sexual abuse cases reasonably accepted the veracity of victims' recovered memories but just three years later once the False Memory Syndrome (FMS) was introduced and propagated by mass media, the PA Ivy League mind control factory churning out the confabulated FMS propaganda by 1994 effectively manipulated 80% of the corporate media coverage to switch sides, thereafter routinely questioning victims' claims as false accusations.[278] Leave it to Pennsylvania to lead the demonic pack of pedo-wolves to suppress the demonic truth.

Right up to this very day Pennsylvania has a major problem. Hiding in plain sight in the sleepy little farm communities across the state are revelations that pedophilia and sex slave trafficking are still ever-so-deeply embedded.[279] The Keystone State possesses a long shameful history[280] of breeding corrupt politicians and judges who overtly go out of their way to protect the pedophiles, who work hand-in-hand with entrenched organized crime and engage in ceaseless cover-up of one sex abuse scandal after the next.[281] Is it any wonder that incisive author and mind control expert Fritz Springmeier declared that:

Pennsylvania has by far the highest number of child-trafficking organizations.[282]

Hundreds of young boys ranging in age from 8 to 15 have withheld telling adults about Sandusky's and his fellow pedophiles' secret sexual advances traumatizing them repeatedly, cruelly trapped in their lonely, confused and heavily conflicted, dark, despairing worlds, often for years at a time. While their celebrated perpetrator and his elite friends remained safely shielded in insulated impunity, egregiously heralded as a children's saint and "pillars of the community," their victims have suffered in silence. Over many decades, countless abuse victims too ashamed or too scared to disclose, resigned to continued abuse, until the coldblooded predators moved on to their next conquest destroying more young souls. The infamous pedophile's grooming system worked to the serial predator's longtime advantage protecting him from all accountability from the 1970s through the first decade of this century, that's 40 long years before the leaky cracks in the "open secret" dam finally began showing gaping holes, eroding, crumbling, and eventually bursting.

Aside from paralleling the Franklin scandal, the Jerry Sandusky case also shares many of the same eerily marked trappings of England's creepiest and most outrageous of all cases – the Jimmy Savile story[283] (taken up in Chapter 18), where famous celebrities are lauded over many decades for their children's charity work while exploiting their positions engaging in the most beastly acts of child rape imaginable, all the while protected by their heroic public image and corrupted inner circle insiders fully aware of the monstrous crimes being perpetrated.

The pretense of conveniently looking the other way for numerous decades was led by the powerful, idolized Coach Paterno himself in collusion with the Penn State president, vice president and athletic director that under their collective watch knowingly sanctioned yet more heinous, unspeakable acts committed against scores of more defenseless children. Similar to Savile's longtime employer the state run *BBC* that remained complicit over far too many years protecting the Luciferian pedophile in its midst,[284] eventually Penn State's corrupt gatekeepers could no longer keep Sandusky's hardcore criminal habit secretly concealed as more victims kept emerging to confess and collectively implicate their most unholy sins.

Because college football during the modern era has morphed into such unholy Big Business, for all intents and purposes evolving into a mere extension of the professional National Football League, elite schools like Penn State, USC and Alabama supported by millions of dollars' worth of revenue and annual endowments from well-connected Board of Trustees and wealthy alumni associations, conditions have turned overly ripe for corruptively spawning this pervasive unholy culture of silence, brushing continued rapes of children under the proverbial carpet despite overwhelming evidence mounting against Sandusky who, unimpeded, was given carte blanche license to routinely sodomize young boys in Penn State locker rooms for virtually Paterno's entire near half century head coach career at State. Just as pedophilia in Hollywood has "forever" remained an "open secret," so has Coach Sandusky's predilection for violently preying on vulnerable boys on and off the Penn State campus. The Big Business of winning at all cost simply means that protecting its revered status and coveted reputation as an elitist moneymaking powerhouse automatically takes precedence over protecting and preserving intact the innocence of hundreds of shattered childhoods. Countless young lives became casualties to the monstrous crimes of one parasitic coach, enabled by the criminal complicity of his legendary boss and equally complicit school administration with ties extending to the state government and well beyond to both the national and international body politic.

Thus the domain of higher education within the realm of “professional” sports, like the notoriously tainted institutions of religion, politics and mass media entertainment, has also degenerated and succumbed to the vile perversions so rampantly practiced and operated by the Luciferian club of planetary controllers. Indeed no strata of power on this earth is free from the ruling elite’s ghastly crimes against both children and humanity.

But before moving on to some of the other major pedophilia scandals within the sports industry, it’s worth a reminder that Penn State is just one American university that happens to be the highest profile institution of higher learning out of many thousands in the US and world that was caught criminally enabling and covering up an infamous pedophile employee’s crimes for far too many years. But the bigger reality is pedophilia has been a dirty little secret quietly taking place behind the scenes off the public radar at hundreds of thousands of educational institutions both at the collegiate but especially the primary and secondary school levels where the younger student body populations offer an unlimited pool of targeted children abused by teachers and coaches around the country and world every single day, or are plucked into the deadly pedophilia pipeline. Thousands of lives are forever altered in the worst possible way every day that another innocent child on this planet is brutally violated.

It's currently a global systemic pandemic crisis whether the pedophile is a famous politician, prince, actor, athlete, coach or not. Of course most pedophiles are not celebrities or members of the elite but typically the guy next door (since a significantly high percentage of pedophiles are male) - the local teacher, clergy, policeman, coach, Boy Scout leader, childcare worker, babysitter, nanny, social worker, charity worker, doctor, nurse, Disney worker, father, stepfather, uncle, family friend and on and on it goes. Those employed whose jobs come into daily contact working in closest proximity with kids giving them most access to potential victims are where the pedophiles congregate and are most heavily concentrated. Though the selected focus of this book centers primarily on unveiling the globalized network of centralized, massively scaled pedophilia operations run by the Luciferian elite, it's important to maintain the broader perspective that the vast majority of pedophilia crimes being committed every day may or may not be part of this worldwide network but nonetheless are actively present, hiding in plain sight in virtually every single town, city and country on this earth.

The next chapter will cover the other major sports pedophilia scandals victimizing underage girls in US gymnastics and swimming teams as well as underage boys in UK and European junior soccer leagues. The topic of Super Bowl Sunday as the biggest child sex trafficking day of the year will lastly be addressed in this section before tackling the epidemic unfolding in Europe and every other corner of this earth.

---

[1] Will Hobson, "Six Years later, Penn State is still at War over the Sandusky Scandal," *The Washington Post*, December 28, 2017, https://www.washingtonpost.com/graphics/2017/sports/penn-state-six-years-after-sandusky-scandal/?utm_term=.9211c01ce863.

[2] "Arthur Sandusky – Meritorious Service," Washington-Greene County Chapter of Pennsylvania Sports Hall of Fame, https://www.webcitation.org/63Oz1EtFK?url=http://www.wash-greenesportshall.org/1989/SANDUSKY.htm.

[3] Jerry Sandusky, *Touched: The Jerry Sandusky Story* (New York City: Sports Publishing, 2000), https://www.amazon.com/Touched-Jerry-Sandusky-Story/dp/1582612706/ref=sr_1_1_twi_har_2?s=books&ie=UTF8&qid=1521950986&sr=1-1&keywords=9781582613574.

[4] "Jerry Sandusky," *biography.com*, https://www.biography.com/people/jerry-sandusky-20857249.

[5] "Joe Paterno," *biography.com*, https://www.biography.com/people/joe-paterno-9434584.

[6] "Joe Paterno," *Wikipedia*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Joe_Paterno.

[7] Larry Brown, "Jerry Sandusky's 1999 Retirement: Evidence Points to him being Forced out," *larrybrownsports.com*, November 15, 2011, http://larrybrownsports.com/college-football/jerry-sanduskys-1999-retirement-forced-out/98643.

[8] Bob Flounders, "Jerry Sandusky was Penn State Football's Defensive Coordinator for Decades," *Patriot-News*, March 31, 2011, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2011/03/jerry_sandusky_was_penn_state.html.

[9] Cork Gaines, "Jerry Sandusky was Offered the Head Coaching Job at the University Of Virginia in 2000," *Business Insider*, November 10, 2011, http://www.businessinsider.com/jerry-sandusky-head-coach-uva-after-leaving-penn-state-2011-11/?IR=T.

[10] Sara Ganim, "Report: Former Coach Jerry Sandusky used Charity to Molest Kids," *Patriot-News*, November 6, 2011, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2011/11/report_former_coach_jerry_sand.html.

[11] Malcom Gladwell, "In Plain Sight," *New Yorker Magazine*, September 24, 2009, https://www.newyorker.com/magazine/2012/09/24/in-plain-view.

[12] Ed Mahon, "Ties between Penn State, The Second Mile Run Deep," *McClatchy DC*, November 21, 2011, http://www.mcclatchydc.com/news/crime/article24719269.html.

[13] Luke O'Brien, "Second Mile Is ... Penn State: School Paid $25 Million to Company Run by Chairman of Sandusky's Charity," *deadspin.com*, November 18, 2011, https://deadspin.com/5860893/5860893/second-mile-is--penn-state-school-paid-25-million-to-company-run-by-chairman-of-sanduskys-charity.

[14] Winsup Custer, “Jerry Sandusky, Second Mile Foundation and Penn State Locker Room,” *CPW News Service*, November 8, 2011, http://winsipcuster.blogspot.co.id/2011/11/jerry-sandusky-second-mile-foundation.html.

[15] Jack McCallum, “Last Call Jerry Sandusky, the Dean of Linebacker U, is Leaving Penn State after 32 years to Devote himself to a Different kind of Coaching,” *Sports Illustrated*, December 20, 1999, https://www.si.com/vault/1999/12/20/271564/last-call-jerry-sandusky-the-dean-of-linebacker-u-is-leaving-penn-state-after-32-years-to-devote-himself-to-a-different-kind-of-coaching.

[16] Mike Argento, “Matt Sandusky: Adopted, Abused, and now Sharing his Painful Story,” *York Daily Record*, June 22, 2017, https://www.ydr.com/story/opinion/columnists/mike-argento/2017/06/22/matt-sandusky-he-didnt-ask/412914001/.

[17] “Sandusky’s Son Sentenced to Prison for Sexual Abuse of Girls,” *AP/Chicago Tribune*, December 8, 2017, http://www.chicagotribune.com/sports/breaking/ct-sandusky-son-prison-abuse-20171208-story.html.

[18] Jeff Pearlman, “The Resilient Soul of Jerry Sandusky’s Son,” *bleacherreport.com*, http://bleacherreport.com/articles/2366793-the-resilient-soul-of-jerry-sanduskys-son

[19] Mike Argento, https://www.ydr.com/story/opinion/columnists/mike-argento/2017/06/22/matt-sandusky-he-didnt-ask/412914001/.

[20] “Jerry Sandusky Case: Matt Sandusky’s Biological Mom Raised Concerns about the Former PSU Coach as far back as 1994,” *CBS News*, June 27, 2012, https://www.cbsnews.com/news/jerry-sandusky-case-matt-sanduskys-biological-mom-raised-concerns-about-the-former-psu-coach-as-far-back-as-1994/.

[21] “Jerry Sandusky Case: Matt Sandusky’s Biological Mom Raised Concerns about the Former PSU Coach as far back as 1994,” https://www.cbsnews.com/news/jerry-sandusky-case-matt-sanduskys-biological-mom-raised-concerns-about-the-former-psu-coach-as-far-back-as-1994/

[22] Jeff Pearlman, http://bleacherreport.com/articles/2366793-the-resilient-soul-of-jerry-sanduskys-son.

[23] Sara Ganim, “Jerry Sandusky, Adopted Son had ‘Rocky’ Relationship,” *Patriot-News*, March 25, 2012, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2012/03/jerry_sandusky_adopted_son_had.html.

[24] Charley Hannagan, “Jerry Sandusky's Son: How he Groomed me to Sexually Abuse me,” *syracuse.com*, April 1, 2016, http://www.syracuse.com/news/index.ssf/2016/04/jerry_sanduskys_son_how_he_groomed_me_to_sexually_abuse_me.html.

[25] "Jerry Sandusky Case: Matt Sandusky's Biological Mom Raised Concerns about the Former PSU Coach as far back as 1994," https://www.cbsnews.com/news/jerry-sandusky-case-matt-sanduskys-biological-mom-raised-concerns-about-the-former-psu-coach-as-far-back-as-1994/.

[26] Sara Ganim, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2012/03/jerry_sandusky_adopted_son_had.html.

[27] Sara Ganim, "Jerry Sandusky case: Matt Sandusky says he, too, was Abused by his Adoptive Father," *Patriot-News*, June 22, 2012, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2012/06/jerry_sanduskys_son_says_he_to.html.

[28] Charles Thompson, "Son and victim: Matt Sandusky Describes his Life and Times with Jerry Sandusky," *Patriot-News*, July 17, 2014, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2014/07/son_and_victim_matt_sandusky_d.html.

[29] Jeff Pearlman, http://bleacherreport.com/articles/2366793-the-resilient-soul-of-jerry-sanduskys-son.

[30] Charles Thompson, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2014/07/son_and_victim_matt_sandusky_d.html

[31] Karyl McBride, "Why Boys do not tell about Sexual Abuse," *Psychology Today*, November 12, 2011, https://www.psychologytoday.com/us/blog/the-legacy-distorted-love/201111/why-boys-do-not-tell-about-sexual-abuse.

[32] Jeff Pearlman, http://bleacherreport.com/articles/2366793-the-resilient-soul-of-jerry-sanduskys-son.

[33] Snejana Farberov, "'We are not in Denial': Jerry Sandusky's Family Rally around the Convicted Child Molester and Proclaim his Innocence after Explosive Oprah Interview with his Adopted Son Matthew," *Daily Mail*, July 19, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2698043/Jerry-Sanduskys-family-rally-convicted-child-molester-proclaim-innocence-explosive-Oprah-interview-adopted-son-Matthew.html.

[34] Snejana Farberov and Lydia Warren, "'I Thought maybe that was just the way he was with his Family.' Matt Sandusky Reveals True Horror of his Years of Abuse at the Hands of Father Jerry to Oprah but says he Still Regrets Speaking out against him," *Daily Mail*, July 18, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2696845/Jerry-Sanduskys-adopted-son-Matthew-details-football-coach-groomed-sexual-abuse-emotional-tell-interview-Oprah.html.

[35] Snejana Farberov and Lydia Warren, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2696845/Jerry-Sanduskys-adopted-son-Matthew-details-football-coach-groomed-sexual-abuse-emotional-tell-interview-Oprah.html.

[36] Matt Sandusky, *Undaunted: Breaking my Silence to Overcome the Trauma of Child Sexual Abuse* (Los Angeles: RothCo Press, 2015), https://www.amazon.com/Undaunted-Breaking-Silence-Overcome-Trauma/dp/1941519873/ref=cm_cr_arp_d_product_top?ie=UTF8.

[37] Peaceful Hearts Foundation website, *peacefulheartsfoundation.org*, http://www.peacefulheartsfoundation.org/.

[38] "Jerry Sandusky Case: Matt Sandusky's Biological Mom Raised Concerns about the Former PSU Coach as far back as 1994," *CBS News*, June 27, 2012, https://www.cbsnews.com/news/jerry-sandusky-case-matt-sanduskys-biological-mom-raised-concerns-about-the-former-psu-coach-as-far-back-as-1994/.

[39] "The Religion and Political Views of Jerry Sandusky," *hollowverse.com*, https://hollowverse.com/jerry-sandusky/.

[40] Jerry Sandusky, p. 99, https://www.amazon.com/Touched-Jerry-Sandusky-Story/dp/1582612706/ref=sr_1_1_twi_har_2?.s=books&ie=UTF8&qid=1521950986&sr=1-1&keywords=9781582613574

[41] Malcolm Gladwell, https://www.newyorker.com/magazine/2012/09/24/in-plain-view.

[42] "Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky," compiled by Freeh, Sporkin & Sullivan, LLP, July 12, 2012, p. 39, *"Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky"* (PDF).

[43] Marc Tracy, "Joe Paterno Knew of Sandusky Abuse in 1976, According to Court Testimony," *The New York Times*, July 12, 2016, https://www.nytimes.com/2016/07/13/sports/ncaafootball/joe-paterno-jerry-sandusky-sex-abuse-penn-state-1976-court-documents.html.

[44] Malcolm Gladwell, https://www.newyorker.com/magazine/2012/09/24/in-plain-view.

[45] Jerry Sandusky, https://www.amazon.com/Touched-Jerry-Sandusky-Story/dp/1582612706/ref=sr_1_1_twi_har_2?.s=books&ie=UTF8&qid=1521950986&sr=1-1&keywords=9781582613574.

[46] Malcom Gladwell, https://www.newyorker.com/magazine/2012/09/24/in-plain-view.

[47] Ann O'Neill and Wayne Drash, "Jerry Sandusky's 'Make Believe World,'" *CNN*, November 20, 2011, https://edition.cnn.com/2011/11/19/us/sandusky-memoir-profile/.

[48] Charles Thompson, "Jerry Sandusky Loses Bid for New Trial on Sex Abuse Conviction; Attorney Vows to Continue Fight," *Patriot-News*, October 19, 2017, http://www.pennlive.com/news/2017/10/jerry_sandusky_loses_bid_for_n.html.

[49] Malcom Gladwell, https://www.newyorker.com/magazine/2012/09/24/in-plain-view.

[50] Malcom Gladwell, https://www.newyorker.com/magazine/2012/09/24/in-plain-view.

[51] "A Comprehensive Timeline of the Penn State Child Sex Abuse Scandal," *deadspin.com*, November 15, 2011, https://deadspin.com/5859823/a-comprehensive-timeline-of-the-penn-state-child-sex-abuse-scandal.

[52] Malcom Gladwell, https://www.newyorker.com/magazine/2012/09/24/in-plain-view.

[53] Malcom Gladwell, https://www.newyorker.com/magazine/2012/09/24/in-plain-view.

[54] Stephanie McCrummen and Jerry Markon, Rick Santorum's Journey to Devout Catholicism, View of Religion in Governance," *The Washington Post*, March 19, 2012, https://www.washingtonpost.com/national/rick-santorums-journey-to-devout-catholicism-view-of-religion-in-governance/2012/03/16/gIQAj4NzNS_story.html?utm_term=.1fd77ce5b21b.

[55] Joel Connelly, "Santorum: 'Angel' Award for Penn State's Sandusky," *Seattle Pi*, November 9, 2011, https://blog.seattlepi.com/seattlepolitics/2011/11/09/santorum-angel-award-for-psus-sandusky/.

[56] Matt Sandusky, excerpt from *Undaunted: Breaking my Silence to Overcome the Trauma of Child Sexual Abuse* (Los Angeles: RothCo Press, 2015) http://www.d2lblog.com/2016/03/16/an-excerpt-from-matt-sanduskys-new-book-undaunted/.

[57] "Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky," *Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky* (PDF).

[58] "Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky," p. 42, *Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the*

Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky (PDF).

[59] “Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky,” p. 45, *Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky* (PDF).

[60] “Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky,” p. 45, *Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky* (PDF).

[61] Dom Cosentino, “Alleged Victim’s Mother: Jerry Sandusky Admitted it ‘to my Face’ 13 Years ago,” *deadspin.com*, November 8, 2011, https://deadspin.com/5857440/5857440/5857440/alleged-victims-mother-jerry-sandusky-admitted-it-to-my-face-13-years-ago.

[62] Paula Reed Ward, “Retired Detective Describes 1998 Sandusky Investigation,” *Pittsburgh Gazette*, December 18, 2011, http://www.post-gazette.com/home/2011/12/18/Retired-detective-describes-1998-Sandusky-investigation/stories/201112180175.

[63] Wallace McKelvey, “Ten Years Later, Ray Gricar's Disappearance Still Haunts many,” *Patriot-News*, April 14, 2015, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2015/04/ten_years_later_ray_gricars_di.html.

[64] Sara Ganim, “Ray Gricar Mystery: 2012 Story Examines Gricar's Fiercely Private Life, Ladies’ Man Reputation,” *Patriot-News*, April 12, 2015, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2015/04/looking_back_at_ray_gricar_on.html.

[65] Joseph Brownstein, “Childhood Trauma may Shorten Life by 20 Years,” *ABC News*, October 6, 2009, http://abcnews.go.com/Health/MindMoodNews/cdc-study-childhood-trauma-shorten-life-20-years/story?id=8758968.

[66] “Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky,” p. 42, *Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky* (PDF).

[67] Malcom Gladwell, https://www.newyorker.com/magazine/2012/09/24/in-plain-view.

[68] “Report: Sandusky ‘Likely Pedophile,’” *ESPN/AP*, March 26, 2012, http://www.espn.com/college-football/story/_/id/7731763/report-jerry-sandusky-

called-likely-pedophile-1998.

[69] “Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky,” p. 47, *Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky* (PDF).

[70] Elizabeth Vos and William Craddock, “Victim’s Testimony Reveals Establishment-Connected East Coast Trafficking Network,” *Disobedient Media*, December 4, 2017, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/12/victims-testimony-reveals-establishment-connected-east-coast-trafficking-network/.

[71] Wayne Madsen, “Is Pennsylvania the Center of the Pedophile Mafia?” *Intrepid Report/WMR*, January 7, 2016, http://www.intrepidreport.com/archives/17208.

[72] “Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky,” p. 47, *Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky* (PDF).

[73] Franco Ordonez and Mike Dawson, “PSU Police Chief was Sandusky’s Neighbor, Ordered 1998 Case Closed,” *Centre Daily Times*, December 11, 2011, http://www.centredaily.com/news/local/education/penn-state/jerry-sandusky/article42807327.html.

[74]“Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky,” p. 50, *Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky* (PDF).

[75] “Remarks of Louis Freeh in Conjunction with Announcement of Publication of Report Regarding the Pennsylvania State University,” *scribd.com*, July 12, 2012, https://www.scribd.com/document/99901024/Freeh-Report-Release.

[76] Charles Thompson, “Unsealed Documents Show Strategy for Preserving Cynthia Baldwin's Testimony in Alleged Sandusky Cover-up Case,” *Patriot-News*, December 18, 2013, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2013/12/documents_show_prosecutors_str.html.

[77] Sara Ganim, “CNN Exclusive: Joe Paterno may have Known of Earlier Jerry Sandusky Abuse Claim, Police Report Reveals,” *CNN*, September 11, 2017, https://edition.cnn.com/2017/09/09/us/penn-state-paterno-sandusky-police-report/.

[78] Sara Ganim, https://edition.cnn.com/2017/09/09/us/penn-state-paterno-sandusky-police-report/.

[79] “Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky,” *Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky* (PDF).

[80] Larry Brown, http://larrybrownsports.com/college-football/jerry-sanduskys-1999-retirement-forced-out/98643.

[81] “Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky,” p. 57, *Report of the Special Investigative Counsel Regarding the Pennsylvania State University Related to the Child Sexual Abuse Committed by Gerald A. Sandusky.*

[82] Mike Dawson, "Freeh Report: Jerry Sandusky’s Retirement Benefits Played a Role in Sex Crimes,” *McClatchy Newspapers*, July 16, 2012, http://www.mcclatchydc.com/news/nation-world/national/article24732811.html.

[83] Matt Hinton, “Jerry Sandusky, the Monster that no one wanted to see,” *CBSsports.com*, June 23, 2012, https://www.cbssports.com/college-football/news/jerry-sandusky-the-monster-no-one-wanted-to-see/.

[84] Michael McCann, “Did Joe Paterno Break the Law?” *Sports Illustrated*, November 9, 2011, https://www.si.com/more-sports/2011/11/09/joe-paterno.

[85] “Penn State Scandal Fast Facts,” *CNN*, November 28, 2017, https://edition.cnn.com/2013/10/28/us/penn-state-scandal-fast-facts/.

[86] Ian Simpson, “Witness in Trial Tells of Sandusky in Shower with Boy,” *Reuters*, June 12, 2012, https://www.reuters.com/article/us-usa-crime-sandusky/witness-in-trial-tells-of-sandusky-in-shower-with-boy-idUSBRE85B03Q20120612.

[87] Sara Ganim, “Jerry Sandusky Trial: Mike McQueary has taken Sandusky Backlash well, his Brother Says,” *Patriot-News*, June 13, 2012, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2012/06/jerry_sandusky_trial_mike_mcqu_3.html.

[88] Dom Consentino, “PSU Assistant who Says he Saw Jerry Sandusky Raping a Boy Turned out to be Pretty Credible after all,” *deadspin.com*, June 12, 2012, https://deadspin.com/5917885/psu-assistant-who-says-he-saw-jerry-sandusky-raping-a-boy-turned-out-to-be-pretty-credible-after-all.

[89] Mike Pendergrast, “Penn State Confidential: What did Mike McQueary Hear and See?” *BigTrial.net*, August 21, 2017, http://www.bigtrial.net/2017/08/penn-state-confidential-what-did-mike.html.

[90] Don Van Natta, “Mike McQueary Says he was Abused,” *ABC News/ESPN*, March 4, 2014, http://abcnews.go.com/Sports/mike-mcqueary-abused/story?id=22768329.

[91] John Ziegler, “The Definitive Case that Mike McQueary's Story is not to be Believed,” *framingpaterno.com*, September 6, 2012, http://www.framingpaterno.com/definitive-case-mike-mcquearys-story-not-be-believed.

[92] “Judge Adds $5M to Mike McQueary’s $7M Verdict against Penn State,” *Chicago Tribune*, November 30, 2016,

http://www.chicagotribune.com/sports/college/ct-penn-state-abuse-spt-20161130-story.html.

[93] Matthew Kemeny, “Jerry Sandusky Trial: Mike McQueary says he ‘wasn't Thinking Right’ after seeing Sandusky in Shower with Boy, *Patriot-News*, June 12, 2012, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2012/06/jerry_sandusky_trial_mike_mcqu.html.

[94] Sara Ganim, “Mike McQueary told Joe Paterno he Saw something ‘Extremely Sexual' between Jerry Sandusky, Young Boy,” *Patriot-News*, December 16, 2011, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2011/12/mcqueary_says_he_sat_at_patern.html.

[95] Sara Ganim, “Joe Paterno may have known of earlier Jerry Sandusky Abuse Claim, Police Report Reveals,” *CNN*, September 11, 2017, https://edition.cnn.com/2017/09/09/us/penn-state-paterno-sandusky-police-report/.

[96] Michael McCann, https://www.si.com/more-sports/2011/11/09/joe-paterno.

[97] Malcom Gladwell, https://www.newyorker.com/magazine/2012/09/24/in-plain-view.

[98] Camila Domonoske, “3 Ex-Penn State Officials get Jail Time for Failure to Report Sandusky Abuse,” *NPR*, June 2, 2017, https://www.npr.org/sections/thetwo-way/2017/06/02/531243225/3-penn-state-officials-sentenced-to-jail-time-for-failure-to-report-sandusky.

[99] “Remarks of Louis Freeh in Conjunction with Announcement of Publication of Report Regarding the Pennsylvania State University,” https://www.scribd.com/document/99901024/Freeh-Report-Release.

[100] Charles Thompson, “50 years ago, Joe Paterno Coached his first Game at Penn State: Is it safe to Celebrate?” *Patriot-News*, August 31, 2016, http://www.pennlive.com/news/2016/08/50_years_ago_today_joe_paterno.html.

[101] “Remarks of Louis Freeh in Conjunction with Announcement of Publication of Report Regarding the Pennsylvania State University,” https://www.scribd.com/document/99901024/Freeh-Report-Release.

[102] Ray Sanchez and Julian Cummings, “Former Penn State President Spanier Gets Jail Time in Sandusky Case,” *CNN*, June 3, 2017, https://edition.cnn.com/2017/06/02/us/penn-state-administrators-sentenced/. “

[103] Sally Jenkins, “Joe Paterno’s First Interview since the Penn State-Sandusky Scandal,” *The Washington Post*, January 14, 2012, https://www.washingtonpost.com/sports/colleges/joe-paternos-first-interview-

since-the-penn-state-sandusky-scandal/2012/01/13/gIQA08e4yP_story.html?utm_term=.9aab97989f3b.

[104] Sally Jenkins, https://www.washingtonpost.com/sports/colleges/joe-paternos-first-interview-since-the-penn-state-sandusky-scandal/2012/01/13/gIQA08e4yP_story.html?utm_term=.9aab97989f3b.

[105] “Penn State Student-Athletes Deliver Record-Tying 90 Percent Graduation Rate,” *psu.edu*, November 8, 2017, http://news.psu.edu/story/492973/2017/11/08/academics/penn-state-student-athletes-deliver-record-tying-90-percent.

[106] David Jones, “Penn State Football is a $53 Million Dollar Gravy Boat we all Slosh in,” *Patriot-News*, July 15, 2012, http://blog.pennlive.com/davidjones/2012/07/penn_state_football_is_a_53_mi.html.

[107] Sarah Jorgenson and Madison Park, “Claim: Joe Paterno was told of Sandusky Abuse as early as 1976,” *CNN*, May 6, 2016, https://edition.cnn.com/2016/05/06/us/penn-state-paterno-sandusky/.

[108] Charles Thompson, “Penn State's Costs in the Jerry Sandusky Scandal have hit $220 Million; where'd the Money go?” *Patriot-News*, April 7, 2017, http://www.pennlive.com/news/2017/04/who_got_paid_in_the_jerry_sand.html.

[109] Charles Thompson, “Why is a Fresh Allegation about Jerry Sandusky and Joe Paterno hitting the Streets now?” *Patriot-News*, May 6, 2016, http://www.pennlive.com/news/2016/05/heres_what_the_judge_said_abou.html.

[110] Charles Thompson, http://www.pennlive.com/news/2017/04/who_got_paid_in_the_jerry_sand.html.

[111] Sarah Jorgenson and Madison Park, https://edition.cnn.com/2016/05/06/us/penn-state-paterno-sandusky/.

[112] Marc Tracy, https://www.nytimes.com/2016/07/13/sports/ncaafootball/joe-paterno-jerry-sandusky-sex-abuse-penn-state-1976-court-documents.html.

[113] Marc Tracy, https://www.nytimes.com/2016/07/13/sports/ncaafootball/joe-paterno-jerry-sandusky-sex-abuse-penn-state-1976-court-documents.html.

[114] Charles Thompson, http://www.pennlive.com/news/2017/04/who_got_paid_in_the_jerry_sand.html.

[115] Sara Ganim, “Sandusky Victim: Joe Paterno told me to Drop Abuse Accusation,” *CNN*, May 8, 2016, https://edition.cnn.com/2016/05/06/us/jerry-sandusky-victims-paterno-penn-state/.

[116] Sara Ganim, https://edition.cnn.com/2016/05/06/us/jerry-sandusky-victims-paterno-penn-state/.

[117] Sara Ganim, https://edition.cnn.com/2016/05/06/us/jerry-sandusky-victims-paterno-penn-state/.

[118] Sara Ganim, https://edition.cnn.com/2016/05/06/us/jerry-sandusky-victims-paterno-penn-state/.

[119] Sarah Jorgenson and Madison Park, https://edition.cnn.com/2016/05/06/us/penn-state-paterno-sandusky/.

[120] Larry Brown, “Ex-Penn State Assistant: Joe Paterno Knows Everything; Jerry Sandusky Was Always Grabbing the Players,” *larrybrownssports.com*, November 14, 2011, http://larrybrownsports.com/college-football/penn-state-assistant-joe-paterno-knows-everything-jerry-sandusky-grabbing/98729.

[121] Larry Brown, http://larrybrownsports.com/college-football/penn-state-assistant-joe-paterno-knows-everything-jerry-sandusky-grabbing/98729.

[122] Larry Brown, http://larrybrownsports.com/college-football/penn-state-assistant-joe-paterno-knows-everything-jerry-sandusky-grabbing/98729.

[123] Jeremy Roebuck and Susan Snyder, “Source: Penn State Settled Claim Paterno Knew about Sandusky in 1976,” *philly.com*, May 6, 2016, http://www.philly.com/philly/news/20160506_New_documents_allege_Paterno_knew_about_Sandusky_as_far_back_as_1976.html.

[124] John Clarke, “’The Fun and Games Turned to Horror’: Sandusky's ‘Victim 1’ Reveals his Identity and Tells of Ordeal at Hands of Pedophile Coach,” *Daily Mail*, October 19, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2219971/Jerry-Sandusky-case-First-victim-Aaron-Fisher-reveals-identity-recalls-terrifying-car-chase.html.

[125] John Clarke, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2219971/Jerry-Sandusky-case-First-victim-Aaron-Fisher-reveals-identity-recalls-terrifying-car-chase.html.

[126] John Clarke, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2219971/Jerry-Sandusky-case-First-victim-Aaron-Fisher-reveals-identity-recalls-terrifying-car-chase.html.

[127] Dom Cosentino, https://deadspin.com/5857440/5857440/5857440/alleged-victims-mother-jerry-sandusky-admitted-it-to-my-face-13-years-ago.

[128] Dom Cosentino, https://deadspin.com/5857440/5857440/5857440/alleged-victims-mother-jerry-sandusky-admitted-it-to-my-face-13-years-ago.

[129] Kevin Johnson, “Pa. Reviewing Original Sandusky Allegation,” *USA Today*, October 7, 2013, https://www.usatoday.com/story/news/nation/2013/10/07/pa-reviewing-original-sandusky-allegation-/2940009/.

[130] Sara Ganim, "'They didn't Believe me': Jerry Sandusky Victim's Allegations Ignored in Hometown of Lock Haven," *Patriot-News*, November 3, 2012, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2012/11/jerry_sandusky_victims_allegat.html.

[131] Kevin Johnson, https://www.usatoday.com/story/news/nation/2013/10/07/pa-reviewing-original-sandusky-allegation-/2940009/

[132] Charles Thompson, "Jerry Sandusky Trial: Man, 18, Known as Victim 1, Looks Alleged Abuser in the Eye on Witness Stand," *Patriot-News*, June 13, 2012, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2012/06/jerry_sandusky_trial_man_18_kn.html.

[133] Charles Thompson, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2012/06/jerry_sandusky_trial_man_18_kn.html.

[134] Sara Ganim, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2012/11/jerry_sandusky_victims_allegat.html.

[135] Sara Ganim, "Jerry Sandusky, Former Penn State Football Staffer, Subject of Grand Jury Investigation," *Patriot-News*, March 31, 2011, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2011/03/jerry_sandusky_former_penn_sta.html.

[136] "'The Victimization of this Young Man is the Worst I've seen in 20 years of Practice': Therapist Tells how Sandusky Victim Number one Continues to Suffer from Abuse Six Months after Tormenter was Jailed," *Daily Mail*, December 9, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2245434/Sandusky-victim-number-Aaron-Fisher-reveals-continuing-ordeal-months-tormenter-jailed.html.

[137] Sara Ganim, "Review: Jerry Sandusky Victim 1's Book Dives into Politics of Sandusky Investigation," *Patriot-News*, October 23, 2013, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2012/10/review_jerry_sandusky_victim_1.html.

[138] Sara Ganim, "Gov. Corbett Plays Unique Role on Penn State's Board of Trustees," *Patriot-News*, January 21, 2012, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2012/01/gov_corbett_plays_unique_role.html.

[139] Victor Thorn, "PSU Cover-up: Connecting the Dots," *American Free Press*, June 22, 2012, http://americanfreepress.net/web-exclusive-psu-cover-up-connecting-the-dots/.

[140] Grand Jury Report on Alleged Penn State Sex Abuse, November 4, 2011, www.documentcloud.org/documents/264894-sandusky-grand-jury-report.

[141] “’The Victimization of this Young Man is the Worst I’ve seen in 20 years of Practice’: Therapist Tells how Sandusky Victim Number one Continues to Suffer from Abuse Six Months after Tormenter was Jailed,” *Daily Mail*, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2245434/Sandusky-victim-number-Aaron-Fisher-reveals-continuing-ordeal-months-tormenter-jailed.html.

[142] Shawn Vestal, “Jerry Sandusky Victim says Reporting Crimes was Harder than Abuse,” *The Spokesman-Review*, May 14, 2014, http://www.spokesman.com/stories/2014/may/14/shawn-vestal-sandusky-victim-says-reporting/.

[143] Joseph Rhee, Jerry Wagschal and Linh Tran, “Sandusky Victim 1 Steps Out of Shadows, Says Justice Took Too Long,” *ABC News*, http://abcnews.go.com/US/sandusky-victim-reveals-identity-justice-long/story?id=17511612.

[144] Aaron Fisher, Dawn Daniels and Michael Gillum, *Silent No More: Victim 1's Fight for Justice against Jerry Sandusky* (New York City: Ballantine Books, 2012), https://www.amazon.com/Silent-No-More-Justice-Sandusky/dp/0345544161.

[145] Mark Pendergrast, “Memory Issues in the Jerry Sandusky Case,” *bigtrial.net*, November 13, 2017, http://www.bigtrial.net/2017/11/memory-issues-in-jerry-sandusky-case.html.

[146] John Ziegler, “Aaron Fisher's Family Posts Facebook Photo of him Laying in Cash and giving Middle Finger,” *framingpaterno.com*, July 13, 2015, http://www.framingpaterno.com/aaron-fishers-family-posts-facebook-photo-him-laying-cash-giving-middle-finger.

[147] Jeremy Roebuck, “Aaron Fisher, ‘Victim 1’ in the Sandusky Sex-Abuse Case, now Lectures to help others ,” *philly.com*, May 3, 2015, http://www.philly.com/philly/news/Victim_1_finds_his_voice.html.

[148] Sara Ganim, “Gov. Corbett Plays Unique Role on Penn State’s Board of Trustees,” *Patriot-News*, January 21, 2012, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2012/01/gov_corbett_plays_unique_role.html.

[149] Sara Ganim, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2012/01/gov_corbett_plays_unique_role.html.

[150] Luke O’Brien, “Past and Present Board Members of Sandusky's Charity Gave $201,783.64 to Gov. Corbett’s 2010 Campaign,” *deadspin.com*, November 16, 2011, https://deadspin.com/5859802/5859802/past-and-present-board-members-of-the-second-mile-gave-a-combined-20178364-to-gov-corbetts-2010-campaign.

[151] Borys Krawczeniuk, “Kane says Corbett ‘Probably’ Played Politics with Sandusky Case,” *The Times Tribune*, September 27, 2012, http://thetimes-tribune.com/news/kane-says-corbett-probably-played-politics-with-sandusky-case-1.1379529.

[152] “Judge in Jerry Sandusky Case may have Benefited from Second Mile,” *Los Angeles Times*, November 16, 2011,

http://latimesblogs.latimes.com/nationnow/2011/11/jerry-sandusky-judge-leslie-duchtot.html.

[153] Joe Paterno Fired Immediately as Penn State Football Coach, Board of Trustees Announces,” *Patriot-News*, November 9, 2011, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2011/11/joe_paterno_is_out_as_penn_sta.html.

[154] Sean Gregory, “The Firing of Joe Paterno: Why the Penn State Unrest was Senseless,” *Time Magazine*, November 10, 2011, http://newsfeed.time.com/2011/11/10/the-firing-of-joe-paterno-why-the-penn-state-unrest-was-senseless/.

[155] Charles Thompson, “Penn State Trustees who Fired Joe Paterno, long the Target of Alumni Enmity, are Condemned in Jay Paterno's Book,” *Patriot-News*, July 23, 2014, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2014/07/penn_state_trustees_who_fired.html.

[156] Mark Viera and Pete Thamel, “Paterno Passes on Home to His Wife for $1,” *The New York Times*, November 15, 2011, https://www.nytimes.com/2011/11/16/sports/ncaafootball/in-july-paterno-transferred-ownership-of-home-to-his-wife-for-1.html.

[157] Sally Jenkins, https://www.washingtonpost.com/sports/colleges/joe-paternos-first-interview-since-the-penn-state-sandusky-scandal/2012/01/13/gIQA08e4yP_story.html?utm_term=.9aab97989f3b.

[158] Emma Carmichael, “The Strange Details of the Phone Call that Made Joe Paterno's Termination Official,” *deadspin.com*, November 10, 2011, https://deadspin.com/5858258/5858258/the-strange-details-of-the-phone-call-that-made-joe-paternos-termination-official.

[159] Travis Johnson, “Penn State Paid Tribute to Joe Paterno, despite Criticism and Protest, *Business Insider/AP*, September 17, 2016, http://www.businessinsider.com/ap-despite-criticism-penn-state-honors-paterno-during-game-2016-9/?IR=T.

[160] David Pincus, “Sports has a Penn State Problem,” *Huffington Post*, September 7, 2016, https://www.huffingtonpost.com/entry/sports-has-a-penn-state-problem_us_57d06d5be4b0f831f706938f.

[161] Michael O’Keefe, “Penn State Tears down Statue of Joe Paterno, NCAA to Announce Sanctions against the University,” *New York Daily News*, July 23, 2012, http://www.nydailynews.com/sports/i-team/penn-state-orders-removal-paterno-statue-football-stadium-article-1.1119556.

[162] Erik Brady, Rachel Axon and Steve Berkowitz, “With Penn State Wins Restored, Joe Paterno the Winningest Coach again,” *USA Today*, January 16,

2015, https://www.usatoday.com/story/sports/ncaaf/bigten/2015/01/16/ncaa-joe-paterno-wins-restored-penn-state-settlement/21867685/.

[163] Winsup Custer, http://winsipcuster.blogspot.co.id/2011/11/jerry-sandusky-second-mile-foundation.html.

[164] Margie Burns, "Bush-Linked Company Handled Security for the WTC, Dulles and United," *Common Dreams*, February 4, 2003, https://www.commondreams.org/views03/0204-06.htm.

[165] Joachim Hagopian, "As Treasonous Bush-Clinton-Obama Pedo Cabal Dynasty Gets Exposed, Desperate Elite Steps Up War against Humanity, *sott.net*, March 31, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/346940-As-Treasonous-Bush-Clinton-Obama-Pedo-Cabal-Dynasty-Gets-Exposed-Desperate-Elite-Steps-Up-War-against-Humanity.

[166] Gene Wojciechowski, "Not 'Death,' but something like it," *espn.com*, July 23, 2012, http://www.espn.com/college-football/story/_/id/8191931/college-football-ncaa-punishes-penn-state-nittany-lions-culture-deceit-arrogance.

[167] Patrick Vint, "The 2012 Penn State Football Exodus: Where are they now?" *sbnation.com*, June 22, 2013, https://www.sbnation.com/college-football/2013/6/22/4454466/penn-state-transfers-where-are-they-now.

[168] Paula Lavigne, "Has Penn State's on-Field Progress Led to off-Field Problems?" *espn.com*, July 27, 2008, http://www.espn.com/espn/otl/news/story?id=3504915.

[169] Adam Rittenberg, "Winning puts Penn State in Position for Record Recruiting Class," *espn.com*, February 1, 2018, http://www.espn.com/college-football/story/_/id/22267713/winning-puts-penn-state-nittany-lions-position-record-recruiting-class.

[170] Will Hobson, https://www.washingtonpost.com/graphics/2017/sports/penn-state-six-years-after-sandusky-scandal/?utm_term=.9211c01ce863.

[171] "Remarks of Louis Freeh in Conjunction with Announcement of Publication of Report Regarding the Pennsylvania State University," https://www.scribd.com/document/99901024/Freeh-Report-Release.

[172] Charles Thompson, http://www.pennlive.com/news/2017/04/who_got_paid_in_the_jerry_sand.html.

[173] Jessica Finn, "Pedophile Jerry Sandusky's son, 41, is Charged with Sexual Assault of a Child after 'having Sex with his Girlfriend's 15-year-old Daughter and Asking the Girl's Sister for Nude Photographs," *Daily Mail*, September 15, 2017, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4889664/Jeff-Sandusky-son-Jerry-pleads-guilty-child-sex-abuse.html.

[174] Jessica Finn, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4889664/Jeff-Sandusky-son-Jerry-pleads-guilty-child-sex-abuse.html.

[175] You-Jin Han, “Shut out at Penn State,” *Reporters Committee for Freedom of the Press*, winter 2012, https://www.rcfp.org/browse-media-law-resources/news-media-law/news-media-and-law-winter-2012/shut-out-penn-state.

[176] “Files from Jerry Sandusky’s Charity are Missing, Officials say,” *Los Angeles Times*, November 17, 2011, http://latimesblogs.latimes.com/sports_blog/2011/11/jerry-sandusky-sex-abuse-files-missing1.html.

[177] “Feds Question another Man about Possible Sandusky Sex Ring,” *radaronline.com*, August 11, 2011, https://radaronline.com/exclusives/2012/08/another-man-questioned-fbi-possible-sandusky-child-porn-ring/.

[178] “Feds Probe Possible Sandusky Child Porn Ring,” *CBS/AP*, August 10, 2012, https://www.cbsnews.com/news/feds-probe-possible-sandusky-child-porn-ring/.

[179] Elizabeth Vos and William Craddock, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/12/victims-testimony-reveals-establishment-connected-east-coast-trafficking-network/.

[180] “The Penn State Scandal, Piece by Piece,” *Pittsburgh Post-Gazette*, http://blogs.post-gazette.com/scandal/timeline.php.

[181] Michael-Hurley, https://nesn.com/2011/11/jerry-sandusky-rumored-to-have-been-pimping-out-young-boys-to-rich-donors-says-mark-madden/.

[182] Elizabeth Vos and William Craddock, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/12/victims-testimony-reveals-establishment-connected-east-coast-trafficking-network/.

[183] Elizabeth Vos and William Craddock, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/12/victims-testimony-reveals-establishment-connected-east-coast-trafficking-network/.

[184] Lori Falce, “Penn state Files Paperwork to Sue The Second Mile,” *Centre Daily Times*, September 5, 2017, http://www.centredaily.com/news/local/education/penn-state/jerry-sandusky/article171259657.html.

[185] Jeff Frantz, “Leader of Second Mile Children's Charity Resigns over Jerry Sandusky Sex Abuse Scandal, *Patriot-News*, November 14, 2011, http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2011/11/ceo_of_the_second_mile_steps_d.html.

[186] Sara Ganim, “Second Mile Opts to Keep Sandusky Investigation Quiet as he Leaves Charity: Special Report, Part 2, *Patriot-News*, August 12, 2012,

http://www.pennlive.com/midstate/index.ssf/2012/08/second_mile_jerry_sandusky_2.html.

[187] Victor Thorn, “The Men who Covered-up for Jerry Sandusky,” *American Free Press*, July 30, 2012, http://americanfreepress.net/the-men-who-covered-up-for-jerry-sandusky/.

[188] Victor Thorn, http://americanfreepress.net/the-men-who-covered-up-for-jerry-sandusky/.

[189] Michael-Hurley, https://nesn.com/2011/11/jerry-sandusky-rumored-to-have-been-pimping-out-young-boys-to-rich-donors-says-mark-madden/.

[190] Victor Thorn, http://americanfreepress.net/the-men-who-covered-up-for-jerry-sandusky/.

[191] Victor Thorn, http://americanfreepress.net/the-men-who-covered-up-for-jerry-sandusky/.

[192] Victor Thorn, http://americanfreepress.net/the-men-who-covered-up-for-jerry-sandusky/.

[193] “Jerry Sandusky’s Second Mile Charity Asks Permission to go out of Business Claiming Lack of Funds in Wake of Sex Abuse Scandal,” *Daily Mail/AP*, January 12, 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3395906/Charity-founded-Jerry-Sandusky-asks-OK-close.html.

[194] Uri Dowbenko, “Mind Control: The Ultimate Terror,” book review of Brice Taylor’s *Thanks for the Memories: The Memoirs of Bob Hope’s and Henry Kissinger’s Mind-Controlled Sex Slave*,” *educate-yourself.org*, 1999, http://educate-yourself.org/mc/nwomcbturireview.shtml.

[195] Cathy O’Brien, “Sex, Lies and Mind Control,” *whale.to*, http://www.whale.to/b/brien2.html.

[196] Michael-Hurley, “Jerry Sandusky Rumored to have been ‘Pimping out Young Boys to Rich Donors,’ says Mark Madden,” *nesn.com*, November 10, 2011, https://nesn.com/2011/11/jerry-sandusky-rumored-to-have-been-pimping-out-young-boys-to-rich-donors-says-mark-madden/.

[197] Chris Greenberg, “Penn State Scandal: Jerry Sandusky Rumored to Have ‘Pimped’ Boys to Donors,” *Huffington Post*, November 10, 2011, https://www.huffingtonpost.com/2011/11/10/penn-state-scandal-rumors-sandusky-pimping_n_1086099.html.

[198] Eric L. Lewis, “At Poly Prep, A Pedophile in Plain Sight,” *The New York Times*, January 13, 2013, https://www.nytimes.com/2013/01/13/opinion/sunday/at-poly-prep-a-pedophile-in-plain-sight.html.

[199] Eric Lewis, “see no Evil, Hear no Evil, Speak no Evil,” *Esquire*, November 17, 2016, https://www.esquire.com/news-politics/a50346/poly-prep-philip-foglietta/.

[200] Christian Reid, http://www.nydailynews.com/sports/i-team/self-described-child-prostitute-connects-jerry-sandusky-poly-prep-sex-abuse-scandal-coach-phil-foglietta-article-1.1163303#ixzz2C72Yedmh.

[201] Elizabeth Vos and William Craddock, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/12/victims-testimony-reveals-establishment-connected-east-coast-trafficking-network/.

[202] Natalie Kostelni, “1994: Rappaport, Not your everyday Slumlord,” *bizjournals.com*, August 5, 2002, https://www.bizjournals.com/philadelphia/stories/2002/08/05/focus13.html.

[203] Christian Reid, “Self-Described ‘Child Prostitute’ Connects Jerry Sandusky to Poly Prep Sex Abuse Scandal and Coach Phil Foglietta,” *New York Daily News*, September 20, 2012, http://www.nydailynews.com/sports/i-team/self-described-child-prostitute-connects-jerry-sandusky-poly-prep-sex-abuse-scandal-coach-phil-foglietta-article-1.1163303#ixzz2C72Yedmh.

[204] Joachim Hagopian, “Pizzagate Turned PedoGate Leads to Momentum Surge in Busting Global Child Sex Trafficking Rings,” *sott.net*, February 27, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/343780-Pizzagate-turned-PedoGate-Leads-to-Momentum-Surge-in-Busting-Global-Child-Sex-Trafficking-Rings .

[205] Elizabeth Vos and William Craddock, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/12/victims-testimony-reveals-establishment-connected-east-coast-trafficking-network/.

[206] Bill Federer, “More Slaves Today than at any Time in History,” *World News Daily*, February 14, 2016, http://www.wnd.com/2016/02/more-slaves-today-than-at-any-time-in-history/.

[207] “11 Facts about Human Trafficking,” *DoSomething.org* website, https://www.dosomething.org/us/facts/11-facts-about-human-trafficking,

[208] Daniel Rubin, “Penn State Scandal Drags up Bad Memories for Philadelphia Man,” *philly.com*, December 1, 2011, http://www.philly.com/philly/columnists/20111201_Daniel_Rubin__Penn_State_scandal_drags_up_bad_memories_for_Philadelphia_man.html.

[209] Elizabeth Vos and William Craddock, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/12/victims-testimony-reveals-establishment-connected-east-coast-trafficking-network/.

[210] Elizabeth Vos and William Craddock, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/12/victims-testimony-reveals-establishment-connected-east-coast-trafficking-network/.

[211] Victor Thorn, “Victim Claims Sandusky Sex Scandal Connected to Philadelphia Pedophile Network,” *American Free Press*, July 22, 2012, http://americanfreepress.net/web-exclusive-interview-victim-claims-sandusky-sex-scandal-connected-to-philadelphia-pedophile-network/.

[212] Elizabeth Vos and William Craddock, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/12/victims-testimony-reveals-establishment-connected-east-coast-trafficking-network/.

[213] Sam Roberts, “Richard Basciano, Times Square Pornography Magnate Dead at 91,” *The New York Times*, May 6, 2017, https://archive.fo/8vbah.

[214] Elizabeth Vos and William Craddock, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/12/victims-testimony-reveals-establishment-connected-east-coast-trafficking-network/.

[215] Elizabeth Vos and William Craddock, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/12/victims-testimony-reveals-establishment-connected-east-coast-trafficking-network/.

[216] Manuel Roig-Franzia, “Heather Podesta, a Storm in the Summer Lobbyist,” *Washington Post*, August 24, 2009, http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/content/article/2009/08/23/AR2009082302381.html.

[217] Joseph Farah, “Jeff Bezos, Amazon, Washington Post and the CIA,” *World News Daily*, June 2, 2017, http://www.wnd.com/2017/06/jeff-bezos-amazon-washington-post-and-the-cia/.

[218] Victor Fiorillo, “Midge and Ed Rendell are finally getting a Divorce,” *Philadelphia Magazine*, September 6, 2016, https://www.phillymag.com/news/2016/09/06/midge-ed-rendell-divorce/.

[219] William Craddick, “The Clinton-Silsby Trafficking Scandal and how the Media Covered it up,” *Disobedient Media*, January 25, 2017, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/01/the-clinton-silsby-trafficking-scandal-and-how-the-media-covered-it-up/.

[220] Alex Spillius, “Obama Administration Embroiled in Illegal Removal of Haitian Children,” *The Telegraph*, February 28, 2010, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/worldnews/northamerica/usa/7338739/Obama-administration-embroiled-in-illegal-removal-of-Haitian-children.html.

[221] S.A. Miller, “Hillary’s Sorry State of Affairs,” *New York Post*, June 11, 2013, https://nypost.com/2013/06/11/hillarys-sorry-state-of-affairs/.

[222] Andy Hoffman and Will Kennedy, “How Putin’s Russia Gained Control of a US Uranium Mine,” *Bloomberg News*, April 24, 2015, https://www.bloomberg.com/news/articles/2015-04-23/how-putin-s-russia-gained-control-of-a-u-s-uranium-mine.

[223] Elizabeth Vos and William Craddock, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/12/victims-testimony-reveals-establishment-connected-east-coast-trafficking-network/.

[224] Joachim Hagopian, "As Treasonous Bush-Clinton-Obama Pedo Cabal Dynasty Gets Exposed, Desperate Elite Steps Up War against Humanity," *sott.net*, March 31, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/346940-As-Treasonous-Bush-Clinton-Obama-Pedo-Cabal-Dynasty-Gets-Exposed-Desperate-Elite-Steps-Up-War-against-Humanity.

[225] Kalee Brown, "The DNC IT Scandal is Unfolding and its Crazier than Fiction as Staffer is Arrested for Bank Fraud," *Collective Evolution*, July 28, 2017, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2017/07/28/the-dnc-it-scandal-is-unfolding-its-crazier-than-fiction-as-staffer-is-arrested-for-bank-fraud/.

[226] Daryl McCann, "The Deep Swamp: It's Clinton, not Trump, who's Drowning in it," *The Spectator*, November 11, 2017, https://www.spectator.co.uk/2017/11/the-deep-swamp/.

[227] "Rendell Reacts to DeNaples Developments," *timesleader.com*, YouTube video, 0:00:55, posted on April 15, 2009, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=VPUeQgaYfBk.

[228] Kyle Scott, "Greg Bucceroni is on Dr. Phil and the Cover of the Daily News Today," *crossingbroad.com*, September 28, 2012, https://www.crossingbroad.com/2012/09/greg-bucceroni-is-on-dr-phil-and-the-cover-of-the-daily-news-today.html.

[229] Ruth Rovner, "From Sewanee to Black Bottom Singers Belt out the Tunes," *mainlinemedianews.com*, April 29, 2009, http://www.mainlinemedianews.com/entertainment/from-sewanee-to-black-bottom-senior-singers-belt-out-the/article_869d39fb-29c4-584e-a640-4b5af8dfc538.html.

[230] Wayne Madsen, http://www.intrepidreport.com/archives/17208.

[231] "Prince Andrew, Missing Boy, CIA, Mossad, MI6," *Aangirfan*, February 1, 2015, http://aanirfan.blogspot.co.id/2015/02/prince-andrew-missing-boy-cia-mossad-mi6.html.

[232] Christian Reid, http://www.nydailynews.com/sports/i-team/self-described-child-prostitute-connects-jerry-sandusky-poly-prep-sex-abuse-scandal-coach-phil-foglietta-article-1.1163303#ixzz2C72Yedmh.

[233] Wayne Madsen, http://www.intrepidreport.com/archives/17208.

[234] Daniel Rubin, "Fast Eddie Remembered," *philly.com*, December 1, 2011, http://www.philly.com/philly/blogs/inq-blinq/Fast-Eddie-Remembered.html.

[235] Victor Thorn, http://americanfreepress.net/web-exclusive-interview-victim-claims-sandusky-sex-scandal-connected-to-philadelphia-pedophile-network/.

[236] Roy Edroso, “Mueller’s Indictments get Rightbloggers Salivating for Arrest of Hillary Clinton,” *The Village Voice*, October 31, 2017, https://www.villagevoice.com/2017/10/31/muellers-indictments-get-rightbloggers-salivating-for-arrest-of-hillary-clinton/.

[237] Victor Thorn, http://americanfreepress.net/web-exclusive-interview-victim-claims-sandusky-sex-scandal-connected-to-philadelphia-pedophile-network/.

[238] Jon Rappoport, “Is Penn State Pedophilia Tied to the Franklin Coverup?” *Jon Rappoport’s Blog*, August 13, 2012, https://jonrappoport.wordpress.com/2012/08/14/is-penn-state-pedophilia-tied-to-the-franklin-coverup/.

[239] “Roskens 'Sleaze Factor' at U.S. AID could be Bad News for Bush Campaign,” *EIR*, October 18, 1991, www.larouchepub.com/eiw/public/1991/eirv18n40-1991

[240] Michael Hughes, “Lawrence E. King Jr: Overachiever,” *Veterans Today*, February 8, 2015, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2015/02/08/lawrence-e-king-jr-overachiever/.

[241] Victor Thorn, http://americanfreepress.net/web-exclusive-psu-cover-up-connecting-the-dots/.

[242] “PSU President Spanier only "Troubled" about Major Scandal at his School!” *personal.psu.edu*, http://www.personal.psu.edu/glm7/m1134.htm.

[243] Diane Dimond, “Graham Spanier: Penn State’s Next Indictment?” *The Daily Beast*, August 24, 2012, https://www.thedailybeast.com/graham-spanier-penn-states-next-indictment.

[244] Victor Thorn, “The Men who Covered-up for Jerry Sandusky,” *American Free Press*, July 30, 2012, http://americanfreepress.net/the-men-who-covered-up-for-jerry-sandusky/.

[245] David Noebel, “New Age Ethics,” *allaboutworldview.org*, https://www.allaboutworldview.org/new-age-ethics.htm.

[246] Jay Syrmopoulos, “Normalization of Pedophilia: Court won’t Charge Man with Rape—Claiming 11yo Victim ‘Consented,’” *Free Thought Project*, September 30, 2017, http://thefreethoughtproject.com/normalization-pedophilia-court-charges/.

[247] Jim Avila, Lauren Pearle and Lauren Effron, “Victim Says Penn State Officials ‘Rejected’ his Claims that a University Professor Allegedly Molested him,” *ABC News,* November 15, 2011, http://abcnews.go.com/US/victim-penn-state-officials-rejected-claims-university-professor/story?id=14960575.

[248] Jim Avila, Lauren Pearle and Lauren Effron, http://abcnews.go.com/US/victim-penn-state-officials-rejected-claims-university-professor/story?id=14960575.

[249] Emily Heil, "Graham Spanier's Gig as a Federal Employee is a Mystery, *Washington Post*, July 27, 2012, https://www.washingtonpost.com/blogs/in-the-loop/post/graham-spaniers-gig-as-a-federal-worker-is-a-mystery/2012/07/26/gJQAbAx5BX_blog.html.

[250] Jon Rappoport, "Is Penn State Pedophilia Tied to the Franklin Coverup?" *Jon Rappoport's Blog*, August 13, 2012, https://jonrappoport.wordpress.com/2012/08/14/is-penn-state-pedophilia-tied-to-the-franklin-coverup/.

[251] Victor Thorn, http://americanfreepress.net/web-exclusive-psu-cover-up-connecting-the-dots/.

[252] Elizabeth Vos and William Craddock, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/12/victims-testimony-reveals-establishment-connected-east-coast-trafficking-network/.

[253] "Author Roger Stone's Latest Conspiracy Theory: George H.W. Bush behind Reagan Assassination Attempt," *CBS Philly*, January 28, 2016, http://philadelphia.cbslocal.com/2016/01/28/author-roger-stones-latest-conspiracy-theory-george-h-w-bush-behind-reagan-assassination-attempt/.

[254] Russ Baker, "Bush Angle to Reagan Shooting Still Unresolved as Hinckley Walks," *whowhatwhy.org*, August 16, 2016, https://whowhatwhy.org/2016/08/16/bush-angle-reagan-shooting-still-unresolved-hinckley-walks/.

[255] Elizabeth Vos and William Craddock, https://disobedientmedia.com/2017/12/victims-testimony-reveals-establishment-connected-east-coast-trafficking-network/.

[256] "Ex-Speaker Hastert Barred from being Left alone with Minors," *New York Post/AP*, December 12, 2017, https://nypost.com/2017/12/12/ex-speaker-hastert-barred-from-being-left-alone-with-minors/.

[257] John DeCamp, "Selected Excerpts from *The Franklin Cover-Up, Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska,"* (Lincoln, Nebraska: AWT Inc., 1992), *educate-yourself.org*, https://educate-yourself.org/cn/franklincoverupexcerpt.shtml.

[258] Wayne Madsen, http://www.intrepidreport.com/archives/17208.

[259] Wayne Madsen, http://www.intrepidreport.com/archives/17208.

[260] Craig R. McCoy, "With Jail on Hold, Former Pa. AG Kathleen Kane Appeals Perjury Conviction," *philly.com*, January 17, 2018,

http://www.philly.com/philly/news/politics/state/kathleen-kane-appealsperjury-prison-pennsylvania-20180117.html.

[261] Craig R. McCoy, "Federal Judge gives go-ahead to Lawsuit against Former Attorney General Kane," *philly.com*, April 4, 2018, http://www.philly.com/philly/news/breaking/federal-judge-civil-suit-frank-fina-lawsuit-former-attorney-general-kathleen-kane-20180404.html.

[262] Wayne Madsen, http://www.intrepidreport.com/archives/17208.

[263] Wayne Madsen, http://www.intrepidreport.com/archives/17208.

[264] Craig R. McCoy, http://www.philly.com/philly/news/breaking/federal-judge-civil-suit-frank-fina-lawsuit-former-attorney-general-kathleen-kane-20180404.html.

[265] Wayne Madsen, http://www.intrepidreport.com/archives/17208.

[266] Elizabeth Eisenstadt-Evans, "Child Sexual Abuse: Is Pa. Pro-Child or Pro-Predator?" *Lancasteronline.com*, July 25, 2016, http://lancasteronline.com/features/faith_values/child-sexual-abuse-is-pa-pro-child-or-pro-predator/article_937c4c24-526d-11e6-a22b-2bb787a6a44f.html.

[267] Elizabeth Eisenstadt-Evans, http://lancasteronline.com/features/faith_values/child-sexual-abuse-is-pa-pro-child-or-pro-predator/article_937c4c24-526d-11e6-a22b-2bb787a6a44f.html.

[268] Nick Bryant, "Sexual Abuse's Second Shame," *USA Today Magazine*, January 2012, http://quixoticjoust.blogspot.co.id/2012/01/.

[269] Bob Fernandez, "How Child Porn Case Led to Hershey School," *philly.com*, October 30, 2011, http://www.philly.com/philly/hp/news_update/20111030_How_child-porn_case_led_to_Hershey_School.html.

[270] "'Kids for Cash' Judge gets 28 Years in Pennsylvania Bribery Case," *The Guardian/AP*, August 11, 2011, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2011/aug/11/kids-for-cash-judge-pennsylvania.

[271] "Putin Bans U.S. Adoption of Russian Orphans due to Pedophile Epidemic," *The Millennium Report*, June 16, 2017, http://themillenniumreport.com/2017/06/putin-bans-u-s-adoption-of-russian-orphans-due-to-pedophile-epidemic/.

[272] "Nathaniel Craver (né Ivan Skorobogatov)," *Advocates for Children in Therapy*, http://www.childrenintherapy.org/victims/craver.html.

[273] Mike Hellgren, "$123M Settlement: Pediatrician Molests Patients after Drugging them with Candy," *CBS Baltimore*, December 10, 2012,

http://baltimore.cbslocal.com/2012/12/10/123m-settlement-pediatrician-molests-patients-after-drugging-them-with-candy/.

[274] Tricia Bishop, “5 Years later, Prosecutor’s Death still a Mystery,” *Baltimore Sun*, November 30, 2008, http://www.baltimoresun.com/news/maryland/bal-md.luna30nov30-story.html.

[275] False Memory Syndrome Foundation website, http://www.fmsfonline.org/.

[276] “A Brief Overview of the Founding Members of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_tavistock04a.htm.

[277] Rachel Dicker, “Newspaper at Donald Trump’s Alma Mater Endorses Hillary Clinton,” *US News & World Report*, October 19, 2016, https://www.usnews.com/news/articles/2016-10-19/donald-trumps-alma-mater-endorses-hillary-clinton.

[278] Russ Winter, “’False Memory’ Narrative Used by Pedophiles to Gaslight Victims,” *The New Nationalist*, January 22, 2018, http://www.newnationalist.net/2018/01/22/false-memory-narrative-used-by-pedophiles-to-gaslight-victims/.

[279] Brianne Ostrander, “Prostitution, Human Trafficking Bradford County's Secret Problem,” *US News & World Report/AP*, March 31, 2018, https://www.usnews.com/news/best-states/pennsylvania/articles/2018-03-31/prostitution-human-trafficking-countys-secret-problem.

[280] “Bedford Springs, Bedford, PA” *BedfordSprings.net*, April 22, 2009, http://bedfordsprings.blogspot.co.id/.

[281] Lewis Hine, “Pennsylvania and Child Abuse,” *dutroux.blogspot.com*, November 13, 2011, http://dutroux.blogspot.co.id/2011/11/pennsylvania-and-child-abuse.html.

[282] Lewis Hine, http://dutroux.blogspot.co.id/2011/11/pennsylvania-and-child-abuse.html.

[283] John Twomey and Mark Reynolds, Scandal of Jimmy Savile’s 50 Years of Sex Abuse,” *Express*, January 12, 2013, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/370258/Scandal-of-Jimmy-Savile-s-50-years-of-sex-abuse.

[284] Shari Miller, “’BBC Staff Ignored up to 1,000 Attacks on Children by Predatory DJ Jimmy Savile’ According to New Damning Report Lifting the Lid on Entire Scandal,” *Daily Mail*, January 19, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2542097/BBC-staff-ignored-1-000-attacks-children-predatory-DJ-Jimmy-Savile-according-new-damning-report-lifting-lid-entire-scandal.html.

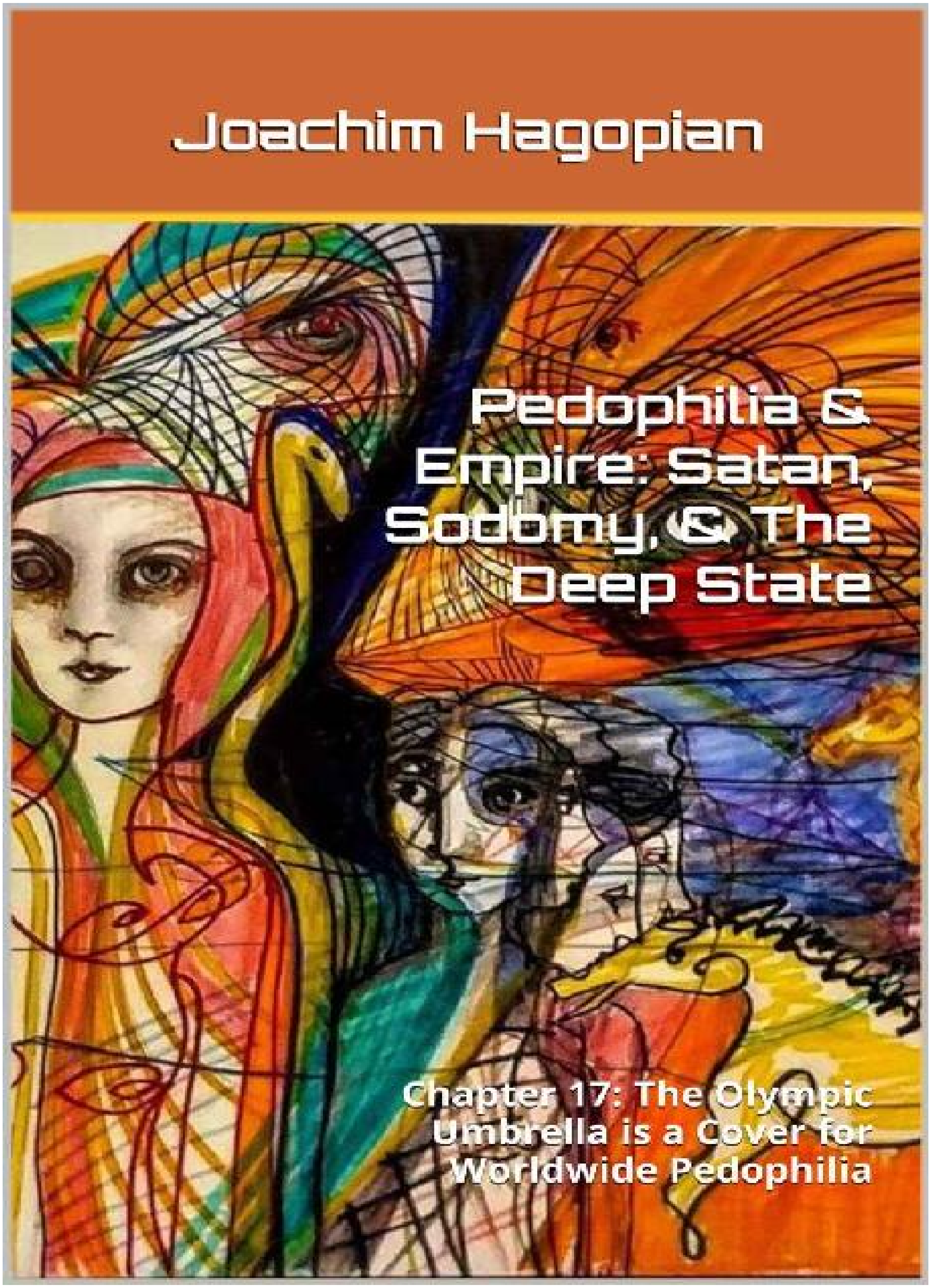

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 17: The Olympic Umbrella is a Cover for Worldwide Pedophilia

Chapter 17: The Olympic Umbrella is a Cover for Worldwide Pedophilia Operations Child Athletes, Pedophile Coaches and the Exploited Power Differential

Joachim Hagopian

***Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission* http://www.noramaccoby.com/**

98% of the sexual abuse of underage minors playing sports is perpetrated by their coaches and teachers.[1] One study review shows that anywhere from 2-8% of young athletes are sexually molested with girls more often victims than boys,[2] but then males report abuse significantly less frequently than females and up to 90% of all sexually abused children don't report sex crimes at all.[3] Results from a 2015 US Department of Education study determined that 7% of all middle and high school students were subject to physical sexual abuse by coaches, teachers or other school personnel[4] while a *Psychology Today* article cites 7% of all minor and young adult athletes are sexual assault victims.[5]

Due to the unique special relationship between a coach and his child athletes, where the power differential is so pronounced with child athletes wanting to impress and please their coach vying for more playing time and successful athletic performance that potentially could lead to future scholarships or stardom, the number of sexually abused children in sports who choose not to report their abuse to parents and authorities is higher than the general population of sexually abused kids. Additionally, blowback for victims who bravely choose to disclose that a popular, respected coach abused them can be highly severe (recall Sandusky victim Aaron Fisher). Teammates, fans and community often reject accuser(s), resulting in being singled out, bullied, ridiculed, harassed and further abused.[6]

For the distinctive reasons applied to the specific context of sports pedophilia, the actual number of abused underage athletes is likely greater than the 2-8% from available reported incidence. Despite these initial research findings, noted lead researcher David Finkelhor at the University of New Hampshire's Crimes against Children Research Center contends that no large-scale studies to date have ever been conducted to ascertain the accurate number of youth and adolescents sexually molested by coaches.[7] With the median age of the abusing coach at 34 years old, upwards of 96% of these pedophilia crimes against children in sports are being committed by men.[8]

Even prior to the 2011 headlines exposing Penn State Coach Sandusky, amateur sports involving children as sex abuse victims were already plagued with a number of increasingly prevalent, well publicized pedophilia scandals.[9] In recent years the increasing influx of underage girls participating in sports, the traditional predominance of male coaches of female athletes typically oblivious or insensitive to understanding their psychological development, especially the fragile self-image of young girls new to sports, combined with the elevated status of coaches within the youth sports culture, all these trending factors have collectively led to skyrocketing rates of child sex abuse scandals within the sports world.[10] By the very definition of the word "coach," meaning to instruct, support, develop and direct, confers authority that rewards obedience. Moreover, athletic performance largely depends on the particular dynamics involved in a close, trusting relationship between athlete and coach.

Executive Director Dan Libowitz of Northeastern University's Sports and Society weighs in on the coach as a powerful mentor:

Isn't that why you choose a certain coach? The thinking is, this coach is better for the child development of your kid. Whether it's at camp at age 10 or college at age 18, these coaches become huge in the development of youth. Everyone’s thinking this is the best place for my kid.[11]

But unsuspecting parents automatically assume that a coach taking a special interest to nurture and develop their son or daughter’s athletic talents naturally has that young person’s best interest at heart.[12] And because the vast majority of youth coaches do, and are deservedly esteemed role models and pillars of the community, child athletes easily fall prey as vulnerable targets to the ones who aren’t, the grooming pedophile coaches like Jerry Sandusky. Predatory coaches often ingratiate themselves to both parents and administrators alike in order to meticulously cultivate the “do-gooder” image as their protective safety net and potential barrier to overpower and weaken victim credibility. Furthermore, coaches feeding both parents’ and children’s lofty dreams of future stardom and athletic scholarship tend to inhibit abuse disclosure to outside authorities, be it law enforcement or to even parents themselves.

Three-time 1984 Olympic gold medal swimmer Nancy Hogshead-Makar, a civil rights attorney and Champion Women (and girls) founder,[13] characterizes the unhealthy, abusive dynamic repeated thousands of times between coach and young athlete when boundaries get blurred and violated:

Power of this magnitude is easily abused and fosters a sickness that can turn victims into pariahs… A coach abuses a young female athlete, and when it is discovered, team members rally to protect the popular coach, upon whom they've hung their hopes of athletic success. The problem

> *becomes the victim, who is pressured to leave while the coach remains.*[14]

Nancy addresses another all too common pattern:

> *The abuse is discovered, but the family wants to shield the victim from the shame of exposure or police involvement, and the club doesn't want the bad PR. So the coach is allowed to quietly leave the club, only to be hired again to repeat the abuse.*[15]

The third and most common scenario is when sexual abuse goes unreported. When successful coaches (like at Penn State) are so lauded and renowned, buffered and armed with such sterling reputations shared by both their community and athletes alike, underage victims may fear the abuse and rejection that would be forthcoming if they dare unveil the ugly truth. In a state of shock, feeling powerless, alone, overwhelmed, confused, ashamed and scared, child athletes can conclude that it’s their fault, or that their only option is to tough it out, learn to “stomach” the abuse, suffer in silence and otherwise repress their sexual trauma, convinced that abuse is but a sacrificial requisite to being a team sport athlete, or the paid cost of striving to reach their lifelong dream to make the Olympics, achieve professional stardom or earn that coveted, much needed college scholarship. Many withdraw and simply drop out of sports altogether without a word. Or if the traumatic shock is strong enough, the victim’s mind dissociates, forming an alter ego separate from the primary personality.[16]

When coaches focus so much on conditioning young athletes’ physical bodies to peak performance, appreciating the aesthetic beauty and grace of fine-tuned athletic excellence while sharing athletic locker room facilities where undressing and showering are normal daily routines, regularly traveling together for competition, perhaps more than any other single profession, male coaches gain exclusive access spending inordinate amounts of unsupervised time with their underage female and male athletes - virtually every afternoon and weekends for months and even years at a time. This professional lifestyle uniquely grants coaches ample opportunity for shared intimacy between coach and athlete that for pedophilic predators becomes too sexually stimulating and tempting to avoid criminal exploitation. A coach innately possessing pedophilic or hebephiliac tendencies and urges, potentially compounded by lack of moral development and/or unmet sexual needs, combined with a child athlete’s craving for positive attention and approval from a powerful adult authority figure, frequently exacerbated by lack of parental involvement, all these co-occurring factors can compel a coach to transgress professional boundaries and sexually offend. It’s why so many minors participating in sports today are at higher risk of sexual abuse than either they or their unsuspecting parents can even imagine.

As far back as 1995, a Canadian study found that near one in four (22.8%) of the athlete respondents on Canada’s national teams admitted that while under age 18 they had sexual intercourse with their coach or a person in a position of authority within their sport.[17] That same University of Winnipeg study determined that sex abuse amidst the national Canadian teams was pervasive across all sports. Responding to today’s plethora of pedo-scandals that permeate the entire sports spectrum, lead researcher Dr. Sandra Kirby in that Canadian study has stated:

It’s [sexual misconduct] *not new, but in sports it seems we are doomed to be shocked and appalled all over again.*[18]

The frequency of child sexual abuse in sports in Australia is apparently even more alarming. An Australian study of its national “elite” athletes and its regional “club” athletes under 18 indicated that 41% of the female athletes and 31%

of the male athletes as minors have been sexually abused.[19] The fact that near half of Australia's best female athletes and a third of its best male athletes as underage victims are customarily subjected to sexual molestation is astoundingly atrocious and totally unacceptable. With numbers that high operating within national Olympic organizations in so called "civilized, developed" Western nations like Australia and Canada and the larger publicized scandals so rampant in America, the Luciferian reach of the pedo-cabal is once again criminally implicated.

Moreover, studies have determined that the more talented and skilled underage athletes are, the more prone to sexual assault they become.[20] Katherine Starr, founder of the nonprofit advocacy group Safe4Athletes[21] and an underage Olympian swimmer abused by her coach, states that:

> *The more you're involved in your sport, the deeper the hooks* [of abuse] *get. Relationships with a coach are the first relationships athletes have with an adult outside of their parents. This creates deeper pathways, and the hooks go deeper.*[22]

The male-dominated, rarified air of elite Olympic coaches already possessing impressive track records for demanding excellence from their athletes are looked upon as authoritarian gods within popular sports culture (i.e., Penn State's Joe Paterno). Pushing their athletes and teams to the limit and demanding total obedience and submission, pathologically controlling coaches can look upon their athletes as mere possessions, telling them what to eat, when to go to bed, dictating their social activities, controlling to the extreme virtually every aspect of their young lives, including prohibiting or limiting access to overinvolved, so called "helicopter" parents. This over-controlling, disciplinarian, micromanaging style of longtime US Gymnastics coaches Bela and Martha Karolyi restricted parents from their Texas Olympic training camp,[23] the now infamous former Olympic training site where sexual abuse on an industrial scale was perpetrated by their team doctor Larry Nassar. Some of the gymnast victims have gone public verbalizing their contention that their “abusive” authoritarian coaching couple that transformed US women’s gymnastics into a powerhouse condoned Nassar’s abuse, though the coaches claim they were completely unaware.[24] But more on the horrendous US Gymnastics Team scandal later.

Researchers Celia Brackenridge and Sandra Kirby found that young athletes are most vulnerable to sexual abuse when they are knocking on the door to bigtime success at higher competitive levels:

> *Athletes may be more susceptible to the grooming process which precedes actual sexual abuse when they have most at stake in terms of their sporting careers, that is when they have reached a high standard of performance but are just below the elite level.*[25]

Young athletes at the threshold of high achievement competitively striving for scholarships, Olympic gold or reaching the gateway to professional stardom have the most to lose by reporting abuse to authorities. In far too many cases, they risk losing everything in life they’ve worked so hard for as well as risk alienation and harassment from teammates, sports officials and fans alike that remain blindly loyal to powerful perpetrating coaches. So underage victims too often suffer in silence, rationalizing their wrongful violations into normalized acceptance as part of the enduring sacrifice required in order to achieve success at the higher levels in their chosen sport that engulfs their entire world. One former athlete abused from age 12 to 16 described what it was like living with her coach’s abuse driven by their extreme power differential:

> *He threatened to take all that away. That my teammates would lose everything, too. Everything would be my fault. He threatened his own life if I wouldn't, in his words, be his girlfriend. And that was kind of, at that point I didn't really resist anymore.*[26]

Aside from the Sandusky Penn State train wreck, this early century's biggest sports scandals reflected off the public radar and awareness are the extraordinarily high rates of sexual abuse in Canada and Australia, overshadowed by scandals of Olympic certified male coaches and team personnel routinely abusing underage girls performing at elite levels on both the US Swimming and US Gymnastics national teams. But far more than variation among individual sports, this widespread problem is reaching endemic status in all amateur sports that by its very nature is inherently global and systemically wider in scope than any of us can either measure or know. All we're aware of is that the rate of child sexual abuse appears to be skyrocketing across the entire spectrum of amateur sports.[27]

The Olympic Organization: A Corrosively Corrupt Pedophilia Haven

Prior to delving into the specifics surrounding each of the two humongous sports scandals in women's/girls' swimming and gymnastics, a cursory look at the organizational infrastructure of the Olympics movement sheds much needed light on how a long embedded history of pedophilia and its overt cover-up has been promulgated not just in the US, Canada and Australia, but worldwide within the far-reaching tentacles of the Olympic ranks.

At the apex of this structural power pyramid ruling over amateur athletics worldwide that taps the estimated 44 million child athletes[28] is the top political governing body - the International Olympic Committee (IOC) headquartered in

Lausanne, Switzerland. Its executive board members consist of such notorious powerful elitists as IOC's "honor member" - the infamous war criminal-NWO guru Henry Kissinger, the IOC president from 2001-2013-turned-current honorary president - Belgian Count and Jesuit educated[29] former orthopedic surgeon Jacques Rogge,[30] along with 100 active members and 41 honorary members largely comprised of European and Middle Eastern royalty that include Illuminati aristocracy bloodlines, prominent former politicians, CEOs, top level bureaucrats and rewarded past Olympic athletes (about 40%),[31] including infiltrators from such powerfully subversive secret societies as Freemasonry, Malta Knights and the Jesuits.[32] It's worth noting that an inordinate number of IOC members are also career lawyers and judges. Similar to VIPs from the United Nations as a New World Order creation, the IOC is saturated with global movers and shakers fitting the bill indelibly linking them to the global pedophilia cabal that moves the sex trafficking network and violently shakes the innocence out of child victims. It also bears mentioning that although not every IOC member is a pedophile or pedophile enabler, similar to US Congress and other powerful geopolitical organizations, an indeterminable, relative high percentage is.

The Belgian Jacques Rogge relieved Spain's bloody tyrant Franco's onetime Sports Minister, Juan Antonio Samaranch as the IOC president who, like his fascist boss's history-making longevity as Europe's longest-lived dictatorial regime, ruled the Olympic roost for over two decades (1980-2001).[33] As the newly elected IOC president, Rogge's first item of business on his 2001 agenda was implementation of the Youth Olympic Games for children aged 14-18.[34] Intended or not, this enormous expansion subsidizing children's competition worldwide under the Olympics name opened the floodgate to huge pedophilia scandals in the US Gymnastics and US Swimming teams among others.

Meanwhile, credited with increasing IOC revenue from $100 to $900 million, Jacques Rogge's dozen year IOC tenure has been seriously marred by the pedo foothold allowed under his watch to seep into the Olympics Movement with scandal after scandal of criminal cover-ups still rocking national sports teams today.

Rogge's elected successor in 2013 and current IOC president, a 64-year old German named Thomas Bach, retains Europe's monopolizing control over the Olympics as 8 of its last 9 total presidents have hailed from Europe, although Kuwaiti Sheik Ahmad Al-Fahad Al-Sabah apparently held court over a large bloc of IOC voting members responsible for "engineering Bach's victory."[35] Since Thomas Bach's private business catered to his Arab nation customers, seeking a political alliance with a powerful Arab sheikh high-up the Olympics' political food chain proved both personally and professionally lucrative and self-serving for the current IOC president. It didn't hurt also to be the protégée of one Horst Dassler whose father founded Adidas and used his marketing company to bribe countless sports officials, paying out $100 million for the multimedia rights to broadcast World Cup soccer, the World Track and Field Championships and the Olympics.[36] Both the IOC and its affiliate the Federation of International Football (soccer in North America) Association (FIFA) as the world's two largest international sports organizations sponsor the world's two largest international sporting events, the Olympics and the World Cup, both racked by a nonstop history of corruption and pedophilia scandals.

Meanwhile, IOC President Bach's chief Kuwaiti ally, oil-rich Sheikh Ahmad Al-Fahad Al-Sabah was forced to resign in May 2017 as both a FIFA Council member as well as an Executive Committee member of the Asian Football Confederation (AFC) for his criminal role in the international soccer federation's ongoing, deepening corruption scandal.

Straddling atop the world's two largest sports organizations, Sheikh Ahmad continued sitting as President of the Olympic Council of Asia (OCA) and the Association of National Olympic Committees (ANOC).[37] Yet per recent release of US Justice Department documents, Sheikh Ahmad is guilty of making shady bribery deals as a power play to gain control over the AFC.[38] But this is nothing new. A WikiLeaks released US embassy cable stated that he was "widely perceived as being corrupt."[39] But Sheikh Ahmad's lofty leadership position and kingpin dealmaker in both the IOC and the ruling Kuwaiti royal family from US Empire's close Gulf State ally kept him from jail and prosecution. After all, royalty always comes with the entitled privilege of living above the law.

However, the Justice Department also implicated the sheikh's right hand man as yet another bribery co-conspirator - Husain Al Mussalam.[40] While Massalam was already the director general of the Olympic Council of Asia (OCA) and vice-chairman of international relations within the Kuwait Football Association (KFA), this right hand crook was also promoted as the first vice president of the world swimming federation FINA, also rife with corruption and pedophilia scandals. But in July 2017 yet more damaging evidence emerged when a recording of Mussalam proposing an arrangement of his earning a 10% "commission" for bribery deals made with sponsors worth $40-50 million was leaked to *The Times of London* and Germany's *Spiegel* online.[41] For the two Olympic honchos' blatant criminality, their nation's hand was slapped, banning Kuwait from the 2016 Rio de Janeiro Olympics and the 2018 World Cup in Russia.

The legal problems for the world soccer federation began in earnest in 2010 when out of nowhere but cash payouts another little obscure Gulf State Qatar suddenly, surprisingly won its bid or more aptly its bribe into hosting the 2022 World Cup. With the favored US so accustomed to bullying its way, the sore loser decided it had had enough.[42] So in 2011 the FBI and Justice Department, neither known for their moral high ground, began looking into years of accumulating evidence confirming the FIFA corruption bonanza along with its gross failure to internally police its own pack of greedy wolves. In May 2015 the US Justice Department collaborating with Swiss police arrested seven senior soccer officials and the FIFA-gate scandal was born, spawning multiple bribery, racketeering, wire fraud conspiracy, extortion, money laundering, obstruction of justice and tax fraud charges indicting 42 FIFA executives in all,[43] incriminating mostly South Americans, but also Americans such as FIFA's North and South American Executive Committee member turned FBI informant Chuck Blazer, along with the likes of Kuwaitis Sheikh Ahmad and Massalam (though neither were ever indicted nor served jail time). Based on the corrupt rags to riches tax evader Blazer's blazingly incriminating evidence supplied to the FBI before dying in 2017, 23 FIFA officials and marketing executives copped guilty pleas over bribes that for many years have regularly determined which nation hosts the coveted World Cup and which television companies were allowed to cover it.[44]

A recent flap over who's going to host the 2026 World Cup flared up when President Trump tweeted on April 27, 2018:

The U.S. has put together a STRONG bid w/ Canada & Mexico for the 2026 World Cup. It would be a shame if countries that we always support were to lobby against the U.S. bid. Why should we be supporting these countries when they don't support us (including at the United Nations)?[45]

The irony of it all when organizations like FIFA school the world on ethics that prohibit governments from exerting “undue influence” on host selection, considering FIFA’s long history of choosing where the World Cup is played based on which country bribes them with the biggest payoff. But apparently FIFA draws the line with bullying presidents threatening consequences against those nations daring to back the only other bidder - in this case Morocco, which happens to already have committed backing from Russia, France, Belgium and Luxembourg, several Caribbean, most Middle Eastern countries and virtually all of Africa.[46] The 2026 winner will be announced on June 13, 2018.

The unchecked hubris, total lack of ethics and insular lack of transparency designed to shield perpetrators from oversight and accountability within the multi-tiered, bureaucratic Olympic organizations are completely over-the-top. Though the 2015 Justice Department charges applied to senior FIFA officials, it could just as easily describe the goings-on at all levels of the Olympic Movement organizations, from the IOC to the US Olympic Committee (USOC), International Association of Athletics Federation (IAAF), regional and continental associations, to FINA, and a host of other world sports federations, the over 200 national Olympic Committees down to each national sports team. From the filed Justice Department charges report, paragraph 75:

The corruption of the enterprise became endemic. Certain defendants and co-conspirators rose to power, unlawfully amassed significant personal fortunes by defrauding the organizations they were chosen to serve, and were exposed and then either expelled from those organizations or forced to resign. Other defendants and co-conspirators came to power in the wake of scandal, promising reform. Rather than repair the harm done to the sport and its institutions, however, these defendants and co-conspirators quickly engaged in the same unlawful practices that had enriched their predecessors.[47]

Same as the old boss syndrome that characterizes the history of the human race.

In February 2018 even a Panamanian import-export company that manufactured uniforms tried cashing in on the gravy train, pleading guilty of fraud after planning to pay a half million dollar bribe to the subsequently arrested Costa Rican federation president.[48] While FIFA boss from Equator was convicted for money laundering in 2016 and is serving a 10-year prison sentence,[49] Brazil and Paraguay’s that were convicted in a Brooklyn federal court in December 2017 still await their sentences, with another FIFA head from Peru acquitted. Additionally, a Swiss banker from Argentina dirty laundered over $25 million dollars to the now deceased Argentine FIFA president[50] who happened to be the right hand man of five-term elected Swiss FIFA President Sepp Blatter, who was forced after 17 gluttonously scandalous FIFA years to resign in disgrace in late 2015, banished from FIFA for the next 8 years (though after appeal later reduced to half a dozen).[51]

From the Zurich headquarters, in April 2018 the current Swiss attorney general announced his office is still open to gathering more corroborative evidence from his counterparts around the world regarding his own ongoing criminal investigation into FIFA. The AG stated that there are still dozens of pending cases that include a probe into 81-year old Blatter’ alleged impropriety of “disloyal management” based on a questionable payment in 2011 made to his then heir-apparent European Association (EUFA) boss that somehow avoided the legal parameter of a criminal bribery charge, despite the exchange of 2 million Swiss francs.[52] Backstage at a 2013 awards show, the then 76-year old Blatter apparently couldn’t hold his “blatter,” impulsively latching onto the nearest sex object, grabbing the ass belonging to Hope Solo, the twice Olympic gold medal World Cup champion US goalie.[53] This of course came two years ahead of his dethroning, which explains why Hope may have waited to disclose this tidbit to the world during the height of the *#metoo* movement in November 2017.

In recent years these never ending scandalous incidents represent merely the tip of an Olympic glacial iceberg meltdown. The bottom line, the IOC and its entire Olympic Movement that includes FIFA, FINA, FIG (the gymnastics world federation) and all the other governing sports bodies are all corrosively, irreparably corrupt and scandal-riddled on an unprecedented, industrial scale.[54] Prime case in point where shady corporate, sports and politics worlds meet, take South Korean Lee Kun-hee, head of mighty Samsung electronics.[55] A decade ago he was busted for paying off politicians and judges in 7-figure bribes. Convicted of $7.5 million tax evasion and gross fiscal misconduct, he was sentenced to three years in prison and an $80 million fine. But because crime does pay when you're the richest man in South Korea who pays off the right people, the then South Korean president Lee Myung-bak pardoned the corporate criminal in order to use Lee Kun-hee's IOC kingpin status[56] to finagle hosting the nation's PyeongChang 2018 Winter Olympics.

Lee Kun-hee was too ill to participate in the Winter Games pageantry in February, so his son and now head of Samsung Lee jae-yong filled in. But like father, like son, he too was caught buying illegal favors and sentenced to five years in prison. Then lo and behold, less than 24 hours before the South Korean Olympics opening ceremony, he won his get-out-of-jail-card on appeal.[57] What are the odds of that? Right on cue, Lee jae-yong was there in person representing Samsung as the too big a sponsor to be denied, propping up the morally decayed, pathetically shameful Olympic Games. And to come full circle on this thoroughly cruddy, muddy merry-go-round, the Samsung pardoner ex-president Lee

Myung-bak was just arrested in April 2018 on bribery, embezzlement and other charges, taking dirty money from Lee Kun-hee, the country's spy agency and others.[58] Meanwhile, also in April 2018, Lee Myung-bak's successor Park Geun-hye was sentenced to 24 years behind bars for her turn at Seoul's corruption turnstile.[59]

This over-the-top sleaze comes as a result of a near century of US Empire neocolonialism. After all, what can be expected from a US puppet where Empire divided and killed millions of Koreans and to this day holds the two nations hostage in order to gain propaganda mileage, still aggressively occupying a current garrison of 35,000 US troops[60] and a missile defense system aimed directly at not just North Korea but China and Siberian Russia dually perceived as an offensive capability deployment.[61]

In yet another most recent development in this never ending criminal saga of Olympic moral turpitude, an email exchange between son of disgraced ex-president of the International Association of Athletics Federation (IAAF) Lamine Diack and Samsung was recovered in a recent police raid whereby Lamine's offspring Papa Massata Diack requested $9.5 million to secure the 2018 PyeongChang Winter Games bid for South Korea.[62] The IOC ethics committee was already compelled in 2015 to dump Papa's papa Lamine Diack, the Senegalese honorary IOC member[63] after his IAAF was caught accepting bribes to look the other way with dirty drug testing amongst athletes.[64] This came after the Diack senior was deposed as IAAF head in 2011 for accepting millions from the notorious $100 million dollar bribe man himself Horst Drassler.[65] Again, like father, like son, the longstanding Olympic tradition of illicit cash flow giveaways between corrupt corporate generations and corrupt Olympic generations along with political pardons is simply how this cesspool world of the elite works.

With the stench of this moral degradation and decadence oozing throughout the world of politics, business and sport, is it any wonder the Olympic Movement's trying desperately to prop itself up disguised as the shining unified kumbaya world umbrella when in reality it's the Olympic bribery-fraud-pedophilia movement? Where moral corruption begins, criminal corruption follows, and where criminal corruption leads, pedophilia cover-ups are never far behind. So whistle while you work as down the pedo-rabbit hole we go.

As the supreme global sports' governing body, the International Olympic Committee atop the power pyramid overseeing each Olympic sport's world governing federation, each region's governing association and each nation's Olympic Committee, the IOC bears the brunt of responsibility first in turning a blind eye for too many years to both the rampant fraud and corruption as well as for the longest time pretending a pedophilia problem never existed throughout its ranks. The IOC is equally guilty for its long embedded opposition to enacting any anti-abuse policies to protect both its child and adult athletes from further sexual exploitation and harm. To say that those in charge up and down this Olympic crime cartel umbrella have acted with malfeasance, directly contributing to the current global pedophilia epidemic, is a gross understatement. "Olympics, Inc." is an integral part of the international pedophilia cabal, where once again protecting the Olympic brand while generating billions of dollars in revenue from its sporting events and television rights is deemed far more important than safeguarding children's health and well-being - another shameful constant observed throughout this book.

The next rung of criminal negligence and culpability for ruining so many scarred child athletes' lives belongs to the 206 National Olympic Committees (NOCs include every UN member nation plus various territories), chief culprit among them the US Olympic Committee (USOC) that oversees all of America's national sports teams with headquarters in Colorado Springs commanding an average annual revenue of a cool $230 million.[66] Below the USOC are 47 national governing bodies (NGBs) that cover each Olympic and Pan American sport, many of which are also located in Colorado Springs. Two of these 47 NGBs that are the most notorious pedophilia bastions, the US Swimming and US Gymnastics teams in turn fall under their respective world federations FINA and FIG (International Gymnastics Federation, the world's oldest international sport organization founded in 1881).[67]

The near four dozen NGBs operate as fundraising sources lending the status of the Olympics label to offer memberships to thousands of athletic clubs and coaches across the country in order to attract the best athletes from very young ages, groomed to participate in the Youth Olympics in sports where younger athletes tend to excel, like gymnastics, swimming, skating and Taekwondo martial arts.[68] These certified Olympic coaches and their clubs at the local levels make up the bottom rung of the Olympic pyramid infrastructure, working directly with 11 million American kids dreaming of Olympic stardom. In addition to the recent US Swimming and US Gymnastics scandals, because soccer is this planet's most popular international sport and IOC and FIFA govern it, acting in an Olympic guardianship role over all its umbrella organizations on down to the junior soccer leagues, they bear shared responsibility for the hundreds if not thousands of boys in youth leagues in England alone that have been brutally sodomized by predatory coaches taken up in the next chapter. The sheer size and scope of these largest sports scandals are still being exposed today.

While national teams and junior leagues in America and Europe have been shaken to the core in recent years with these major scandals involving Olympic certified coaches sexually abusing underage female and male athletes for numerous decades, the glaring fact remains that their world governing bodies from the IOC, USOC, FIFA, FINA, FIG to the many NGB organizations have been simultaneously engulfed in colossal cases of criminal cover-up of both child sex crimes as well as corruption on an off-the-chart, industrial scale. This rampant lawlessness within all the global sports world's governing entities indicates incontrovertible evidence that the gargantuan Olympic Movement's infrastructure tied so closely to royalty and corporate politics is also tied to the global pedophilia network.

Major Pending Child Sex Abuse Cases in US Taekwondo, US Volleyball and Olympic Sports Scandals Overview

As of May 4, 2018 a brand new lawsuit has just been filed in Denver federal district court, accusing two brothers in Olympic Taekwondo, former coach Jean Lopez and three-time Olympic medalist Steven Lopez, along with the US Olympic Committee and US Taekwondo National Governing Body of "sexual abuse, exploitation, and trafficking" of four female Taekwondo athlete plaintiffs resulting from when they were underage girls and young woman over a span of more than 20 years.[69] Significantly, the civil suit also identifies both the USOC and USA Taekwondo as additional co-defendants for failing to protect the victims from two known Olympic sponsored sexual predators profiteering from international competitions for financial gain. In all 40 women have accused the pedo-defendants of sexual abuse. Court filed allegations specify criminal culpability extending to the two additional defendants:

> *Starting in 1996-97 and continuing until 2018, [the] USOC and USA TKD knowingly participated in a venture to*

transport and traffic plaintiffs … around the globe to be used for the sexual benefit [of the Lopez brothers, along with unnamed coaches and officials who] *will be uncovered during discovery in this case.*[70]

This unprecedented legal case opens the floodgate for further litigation if the Denver judge permits it to proceed as is, due to implicating the larger Olympic hierarchy that includes both the US national committee and sport NGB beyond the known serial perpetrators as part of an international child sex trafficking ring. The court filed documents contend that:

By 2006, USA TKD had received written and verbal complaints that Jean Lopez and Steven Lopez were routinely sexually exploiting, assaulting, and raping multiple female athletes that were entrusted into the protection… of the USOC and USA TKD. The USOC knew or was willfully blind that the Lopez brothers represented a clear and present danger to young female athletes.[71]

Aside from the two perps and their NGB, the suit cites USOC's liability and complicity for knowingly promoting and bankrolling this criminal operation down to paying the coaches' salaries and all travel costs involved in international competitions over the two plus decade duration. Moreover, the litigation is also calling out the US Olympic Committee for its guilt in effectively covering up the pedophilic crimes:

Ignoring repeated reports of sexual misconduct, the USOC has prioritized commercial success over safety by ignoring and then covering up complaints, deferring and diverting investigations, and continuing to financially support NGBs that tolerate or even facilitate sexual abuse by coaches and others.[72]

The Protecting Young Victims from Sexual Abuse and Safe Sport Authorization Act passed by Congress in early 2018 is geared to holding these sporting institutions far more accountable than in times past for long neglecting child safety in favor of shielding offending coaches and officials, offering victims more legal access to challenging the US Olympic Committee's responsibility to ensure all its personnel are in compliance with Safe Sport specifications and child safety policies.[73] This landmark case opens up liability to the pedo-enabling head honchos atop the massive Olympics organizational pyramid, not just for sex crimes committed by its pedophiles but for exploiting its child athletes as abuse victims within the much larger international crime cabal that operates the planet's child sex trafficking network.

Though the primary focus of this chapter features the two biggest scandals in US Olympic sports - swimming and gymnastics, pedophilia lurks in every sport at every level. The scandal in youth soccer in England will be covered in the next chapter and section that addresses scandals beyond America and around the globe. But it's worth a reminder again that a highly important lawsuit is ongoing charging the US Olympic Committee and USA Taekwondo for child sex trafficking and civil suits over pedophilia scandals are currently pending in other sports as well such as junior US Volleyball.

The volleyball scandal is similar to other sports scandals in that a longtime "renowned and respected" coach accused by at least a half dozen victims[74] by the mid-1990s of criminal sexual transgressions allegedly perpetrated during the 1980s was still coaching and held an elite position in the sport right up until earlier this year. For decades Rick Butler has been considered America's most powerful coach in youth volleyball. But one of his victims, Sarah Powers-Barnhard, a current Jacksonville, Florida youth volleyball coach herself, filed a 2016 civil suit against the AAU for continuing to allow the serial sexual predator to coach at-risk minors.[75] As coaches she even had to face off against her abuser in the 2016 National AAU Youth Volleyball Championships before a nationwide audience at the Wide World of Sports and Orange County Convention Center in Orlando, describing it as “torture.” Sarah’s case is still pending in a Florida court.

Despite the AAU policy that bars coaches accused of sexual misconduct from its membership rolls, until February 2018 in response to Sarah’s lawsuit and increasing public pressure, the AAU finally joined the Junior Volleyball Association as well as US Volleyball NGB in ultimately banning the 63-year old Butler for life.[76] This came after Sarah and other former players have been raising allegations against their abusive former coach for over 20 years, compelling Olympic USA Volleyball to ban Butler in 1995 only to reinstate him five years later in an administrative capacity because he happens to own the Illinois based Sports Performance Volleyball Club that trains elite national players and has won nearly 100 national championships.[77] Under increasing outside pressure from victims gone public and at least two pending lawsuits, finally USA Volleyball has permanently banned him from the sport as of January 2018.

Since the Harvey Weinstein #*metoo* revelations broke in late 2017, a new age has dawned when powerful sexual predators are being held more accountable by their now more listened to accusers. In May 2018 several of Rick Butler’s victims turned survivors gave their personal testimony before an Illinois Senate panel in support of extending statute of limitation laws in sexual abuse cases, especially where abusers like Butler silence the abused by threatening defamation of character lawsuits against their victims.[78] Also addressed in the hearing was mandated reporting laws and efforts to make the system more accommodating for accusers to come forth and be judiciously heard. Sarah Powers-Barnhard and Julie Romias testified about their abuse, Julie accusing Butler of sexually molesting her while on international trips and, as is typical, threatened the teen with violence if she ever spoke out. Sarah stated Butler began raping her when she was 16, adding that he made her watch porno films so she could “learn” from them.[79] In February 2018 a mother of another Butler abuse victim filed a $10 million class action lawsuit against him, Butler’s wife and his elite sports club.[80] Christine Tuzi claims she was raped at 16, forced to have unprotected sex “hundreds of times” and was impregnated by age 19. Immediately following her abortion, Butler coerced her into masturbating him back at his hotel room.

Among the top kingpins in youth volleyball having coached four Olympic medalists, the child sex predator misused his power and influence to abuse aspiring young elite talent and got away with it for many years through harassment and intimidation threats, all the while avoiding criminal charges to this very day. The class action suit’s attorney told the Illinois legislators at the hearing that the Butler case is part of the much larger “epidemic in youth sports,” alluding to the rampant child sexual abuse raging out of control both nationally and internationally. Additionally, abuser Rick Butler also has longstanding deep ties to the pedophilia enabling Michigan State University, the same one paying a half billion dollars out to its pedophile victims at the hands of former doctor Larry Nassar. Turns out the MSU’s current women’s volleyball coach is a former employee and protégée at Butler’s elite sports facility.[81] MSU Coach Cathy George has also publicly defended the serial child rapist’s reputation. Again, linkage between longstanding pedophiles and pedophile enablers at MSU and Olympic and amateur sports strongly suggest a larger pedophilia network operating amongst birds of a feather flocking together in the same private elitist pedo club. But at least this serial child rapist from volleyball has finally been banned for good and the pending lawsuits will offer financial compensation to a few of his victims. But Rick Butler will likely never serve a day in prison for his hundreds of crimes. Statute of limitations or protection from his pedo club?

Pedophilia cover-ups of operations on a lesser known scale may still yet be exposed showing the pervasive nature amongst countless smaller national Olympic Committees from other countries as well as among the various world sports federations that oversee Olympic sports where underage athletes compete, starting at the local community youth level as well as the international Youth Olympics and on up to the elite national and international levels.

Either abolishing or completely overhauling this gluttonous monstrosity of the global sports criminal cabal from the top on down is absolutely required if corruption and pedophilia are ever to be thoroughly rooted out. Because the US Olympic Committee along with FINA, FIG and FIFA federations are among the largest financially endowed, most powerful and guiltiest of major pedophilia scandal cover-ups abusing thousands of known American and British child athletes over recent decades, the US Swimming and US Gymnastics scandals will be the primary focus covered next in full detail starting with an overview.

At the crest of 2017’s USA Gymnastics Team scandal, a comprehensive article written by journalists Will Hobson and Steven Rich published in the *Washington Post* last November entitled “Every Six Weeks for more than 36 Years: When will Sex Abuse in Olympic Sports End?” reported that:

> *More than 290 coaches and officials associated with the United States’ Olympic sports organizations have been publicly accused of sexual misconduct since 1982, according to a Washington Post review of sport governing body banned lists, news clips and court records in several states. The figure spans parts of 15 sports and amounts to an average of eight adults connected to an Olympic organization accused of sexual misconduct every year – or about one every six weeks – for more than 36 years.*[82]

And of course that’s just one newspaper’s review of just several states’ reported cases. Just think how many cases have gone unreported over the years in all 50 states and you immediately come to the realization that the indisputable fact is it must be going on every single day. And this is only taking into account coaches and officials within the Olympic umbrella in the US only, not the rest of the world or the much larger non-Olympic sports venues in public and private school systems, the Little League or Pop Warner, informal pickup games at the local neighborhood playground or community athletic field. The bottom line here is, as you read this very sentence, every single second of every single day on this earth, countless children are being sexually abused in every conceivable life arena. And with that sobering, disturbing thought, let us proceed with the largest known Olympic sports pedophilia scandals and their longstanding cover-ups, beginning with the US national swim team.

Pedophilia and the USA Swimming Scandal and Its Shameful Cover-up

No doubt there have been thousands of incidents of pedophile swim coaches forcing themselves sexually on vulnerable underage athletes. Therefore, to highlight the USA Swimming scandal, a sample of a few of the most publicized, notorious cases along with the governing body's response (or lack thereof) will be presented.

Because throughout human history a certain percentage of the adult population, predominantly male and "guesstimated" to be between 3 and 5%,[83] have always been predisposed to sexual attraction toward children, as a result a minority of children and child athletes have always been victimized by pedophiles and pedophile coaches. In distant times past with nominal public awareness and little to no resources available, child victims were far less apt to report sexual abuse and of course even today far more victims still don't notify authorities than the smaller number that do. This reality should be kept in mind while considering the high profile cases that we do know about.

Among the first accounts of an American swimmer publicly disclosing that her coach sexually abused her dates back to the mid-1960s with long distance record holder Diana Nyad alleging that her International Hall of Fame Coach Jack Nelson raped her in his home when she was only 14-years old in 1964.[84] At least five or six more times over the course of the next several years Diana Nyad maintains that the 1956 Olympian swimmer and onetime world record holder from Fort Lauderdale, Florida attempted to penetrate Diana in his office, his car and hotel room, insisting on each occasion while sexually assaulting her he'd verbalize how much he loved her. At 22 years of age, Diana finally confided in a teammate, who also admitted Nelson had sexually abused her as well. Together they brought the matter to their previous private prep school Pine Crest where their coach first molested them and was still employed. His contract was not renewed at the elite prep school later that same year but the school administrator decided against reporting their allegations to the police, though years later he'd tell the press he stood by Diana Nyad's accusations as a credible source.

But just four years later Jack Nelson was busily coaching the US women's swim team at the 1976 Olympics and during his highly accomplished career spanning over four decades, Nelson coached 30 state high school championship teams, six national championship teams, 40 Olympians, five Olympic medal winners, was named the 1993 Fort Lauderdale "man of the year" and for three decades held a city contract running the instructional coaching program at the esteemed Fort Lauderdale Aquatics Center, home of the International Swimming Hall of Fame.[85] And because he was such a well-liked, famous charmer of a coach (not unlike Sandusky), he managed to dodge Nyad's nagging accusations as his pedo past only began creeping up on him not long before dementia did him in five days short of his 83rd birthday in November 2014. Nelson was never charged with any crime since his do-no-wrong image, impressive coaching record, Florida state statute of limitations and his corrupt, pedophile-enabling US Swimming NGB all effectively shielded him from accountability.

Aside from allegations first publicly aired on a 1989 talk show against her renowned six time hall of fame coach, Diana Nyad found fame in her own right swimming 27 miles around Manhattan Island, breaking the old record by nearly an hour.[86] And until 1997 she was the world record holder as the only person to swim 102.5 unaided ocean miles over a two day period from Bahamas to Florida. Nyad never publicly mentioned the rapes again until her own 2003 International Hall of Fame induction ceremony speech at Nelson's Fort Lauderdale Aquatic Center. As an NPR and ABC sports broadcast correspondent and journalist, Diana Nyad also wrote her autobiographical memoir that Nelson's attorney quickly dismissed as motivation to cash in on her so called “bogus” sexual abuse claims.

Jack Nelson was not only an accused child rapist himself, he also had a history of employing and protecting fellow derelicts and pedophiles as hired swim coaches at his Fort Lauderdale Aquatics Center private school. Brazilian coach Alexandre Pussieldi was both sexually and violently abusive toward underage boys and young men. One of his assault victims filed a police report, claiming that Coach Pussieldi placed a hidden camera in a vent in order to record swimmers taking showers that rented rooms from the coach, even discovering video footage of himself and another young man.[87] Another one of Nelson’s swimmers that he later hired would be publicly defended as a coach in good standing despite previous convictions as a steroid and ecstasy drug dealer who under oath once stated that he had helped a friend incinerate and dispose of a murder victim’s dismembered corpse. Despite his creepy dark past, the late Jack Nelson is still enshrined in Fort Lauderdale’s International Swimming Hall of Shame… oops Fame or more apt Infamy.

To provide a backdrop of how the USA Swimming National Governing Body has become so powerful in recent years, it doesn’t hurt to have Olympic history’s all-time winningest gold medal champion Michael Phelps as its 21st century poster boy capturing gold 23 times over the last four Olympics.[88] And though Michael hasn’t touched the controversial subject of pedophilia in US Swimming, as a victim of depression himself, he has lent his support and clout calling on the USOC to aid fellow Olympian athletes’ transition from their sports careers to life after the Olympics.[89] Thanks in large part to his athletic prowess, US swimmers in each of the last four Summer Games have won over a third of America’s total medal count and at 16 during the 2016 Olympics, the US swim team won more gold medals than the next 10 nations combined in the sport and more than all nations competing in all the Games other than five other countries in the world.[90] With that kind of global dominance in recent years, the corporate sponsors' millions keep pouring in – NBC Universal, Marriott, BMW, Omega, the annual total revenue skyrocketing from $2.5 million in 2006 to near three times that amount at $7.27 million in 2016.

US Swimming currently boasts 400,000 members that include 56,000 athletes joining just within a three year stretch from 2010 to 2013. With golden poster boy Phelps, the sport's popularity has soared to new, never before seen heights, inspiring multiple generations of young American (and worldwide) pool-goers to grow up dreaming of being the next Michael Phelps. From a 2014 report out of the 340,568 athlete members in this US Swimming NGB, 317,103 are children.[91] That's near 80% of this Olympic organization is comprised of children. Clearly the history of this Olympic organization's adult leadership entrusted to nurture the growth of all its athletes, but particularly its 4 out of 5 who are the most defenseless, only goes to show that it least cares about their kids' safety and well-being. If you want proof, look no further than how it spends its money.

With the priority of winning gold and making millions at all cost, the consequence of maintaining a systemic protection policy harboring hundreds of child rapists has raised the fiscal bar on US Swimming's legal fees to $7.45 million from 2006-2016, largely in payouts to hundreds of sexually abused minors even surpassing 2016's total revenue.[92] USA Swimming's legal cost is ten times that of US Track and Field over this same decade. That's because pedophiles in US Swimming will sooner act out against child athletes when they feel confident and secure that their criminal transgressions will go unnoticed and unpunished amidst its culture of sexual abuse cultivated by the notorious NGB that regularly adheres to a policy of shielding perps from all criminal responsibility. The sport's history in recent more than decades confirms this fact.

Way back 15 years ago the head of the US Swimming task force on sexual misconduct, Hall of Fame Coach Richard Shoulberg, wrote in an email in August 2003:

I would hate to see our organization ever in the predicament of the current Roman Catholic Church — protecting child molesters![93]

Three months later after seeing his Zero Tolerance Policy for sexual misconduct watered down by the pedo-enablers by USA Swimming's executive board, Shoulberg lamented:

I am disappointed on the outcome of the Board. I feel that there are too many coaches still coaching who have destroyed kids' lives and there will be more coaches in the future who will destroy kids' lives.[94]

Then in 2005, over a dozen years ago, the then USA Swimming president Ron Van Pool in his annual State of Swimming message urgently and boldly sounded the alarm:

USA Swimming is frightfully behind the curve in this process and there are those who would have us continue to lag.[95]

So many years ago a rare minority of important players within USA Swimming were already fearing the worse, recognizing their sport had a serious problem but leadership in the NGB wasn't responsive. Yet in 2010 a half decade after Van Pool's warning when asked in a deposition if he shared his earlier president's expressed concern to make young swimmers safer from sexual abuse as a shared priority, Wielgus answered:

No, I would not…I would say that has never been our number one goal.[96]

Recognizing the unresolved growing pedo-problem amongst Olympic swimming coaches and their leaders' systemic criminal cover-up, even US Congress then became involved. Senior Democratic House member serving on the Committee for Education and the Workforce George Miller expressed his concerns in a letter dated July 9th, 2014 to FBI Director James Comey:

> *US Swimming has failed in a number of instances to fully investigate and take all the necessary steps to protect children when presented with allegations of sexual abuse among its ranks…* [urging Comey to] *fully investigate USA Swimming's handling of both past and present cases of child sexual abuse.*[97]

Of course we know how Mr. Compromised and Controlled Comey's investigations are with his not finding anything in Hillary's thousands of emails "criminal enough " to indict her on,[98] so no surprise that little has been done in the four years since Miller's letter. And then it was a mere year later in July 2015 that Comey's FBI for nearly a year actually sat on knowledge that the US Gymnastics team doctor was molesting young girls, knowingly allowing yet dozens more to be harmed.[99] But then going back to J Edgar's COINTELPRO the FBI's always been steeped in sexual blackmail and pedophilia. And in recent decades its function has been to cover-up pedo-scandals. It was the FBI that assassinated the Franklin scandal Investigator Gary Caradori and his son in order to suppress Bush senior's child raping at the White House (See Chapter 13),[100] not to mention FBI handlers orchestrating all the deadliest false flag terrorism events on US soil.[101] Yet back in 2014 Congressman Miller attempted to seek Comey's help to eradicate the increasing pedophilic plague preying on America's most gifted underage Olympic athletes, after his committee confirmed that:

> *Detailed actionable information* [about sexually abusive coaches] *has been well known to USA Swimming leadership, yet because of inaction, these predators were allowed to prey with impunity.*[102]

Speaking of impunity, this nexus between top sports organizations, the FBI and rampant pedophilia exposes how the elite's pedo-cabal essentially operates - with complete impunity. In February on the heels of the 2018 Winter Olympics, the Southern California News Group (SCNG) got its hands on thousands of pages of incriminating documents consisting of court records, depositions, emails, letters, internal memos, and press articles that confirm decades of maintaining a culture of sexual abuse within USA Swimming. Interviews were obtained of hundreds of abuse survivors, former Olympic athletes, coaches, safe sport advocates, and US Swimming officials including a number of the NGB financial benefactors.[103] What emerged was that for many decades top US Swimming executives, board members, officials and coaches refused to stop the rampant sex abuse being perpetrated by renowned successful coaches. The US national Swimming executive director, Chuck Wielgus, who ruled over the US Swimming NGB in Colorado Springs for two solid decades from 1997 until his death from colon cancer in 2017, did absolutely nothing to protect child athletes.

In at least 11 different cases of victims directly registering complaints against sexually abusing coaches, Wielgus and the director of Safe Sport Susan Woessner opted to not pursue investigations or take any action against high profile coaches and officials.[104] Almost a decade ago in response to congressional pressure to clean up its pedophilia act in 2010, USA Swimming instituted Safe Sport to ostensibly adjudicate abuse claims and introduce protective prevention programs to safeguard against continued abuse. With no prior experience, Susan Woessner was hired to run Safe

Sport for USA Swimming in 2013. Three time gold medalist, anti-abuse advocate and Georgetown educated attorney Nancy Hogshead-Makar said:

Susan Woessner doesn’t have the background for the job. She’s not a lawyer. She’s never worked with victims of abuse (prior to getting the job). She doesn’t have the professional background to do these types of cases. Susan was somebody hired from within USA Swimming who doesn’t have the expertise for the job.[105]

Nancy Hogshead-Makar once asked Woessner point blank why her US Safe Sport refused to investigate an accused former US Olympic team coach and pedophile who served on US Swimming executive board member and onetime US Swimming task force member on sexual abuse. Woessner’s sorry ass response smacked reminiscent of another longtime criminal Hillary Clinton:

What does it matter? He’s no longer coaching young swimmers anymore.[106]

Under the woefully worthless Wielgus-Woessner watch, perhaps thousands of wounded children have been needlessly sacrificed, and most incredibly, instead of behind bars where they belonged, while it took Chuck’s death to finally stop him, Susan Woessner shamefully remained in charge making underage swimmers more unsafe all the way until February 2018,[107] the same month US Olympic Committee CEO and fellow longtime pedo-enabler Scott Blackmun was ousted. The flimsy excuse Woessner cites as her reason to resign was her kiss and tell confession with controversial Coach Sean Hutchison who himself is still immersed as the accused in his own pedo-scandal having allegedly had illicit sex with his onetime underage Olympian Ariana Kukors.[108] Even after just one kiss, the pedo-enabler might have had a slight conflict of interest in wanting to protect Hutchison amidst subsequent Kukors allegations (covered shortly).[109] Rather than admit the blatant truth that Woessner was forced out because of her too long a history keeping US Swimming an (**Un**)Safe Sport, having teamed up in co-conspiracy with prevailing Olympic Swimming leadership, she only pretended she was ending abuse while maintaining a consistent record of protecting the swarms of pedo-sharks in US Swimming waters. Wielgus and Woessner's "looking the other way" is the characteristic trademark common to every pedophilia scandal to date, be it in the sports world or beyond.

But Chuck and Susan aren't alone. Back in the 1980s, three different head coaches from three different US Olympic sports teams along with a US Swimming vice president were all informed that a world famous swim coach began abusing an American swimmer when she was only 12-years old, and did nothing to stop it.[110] During Wielgus' 20-year run in charge of US Swimming, he was looped in on three separate occasions about this same predator's ongoing crimes and also chose to do nothing. But not only did they all look the other way for so many years, but they further rewarded the sick lecher over $40,000 in grants for his owned and operated club, and continued granting him full access to all the USA Swimming facilities, US Olympic and national team events and the Olympic Training Center. Near three decades later only after the serial pedophile pleaded guilty to child rape charges was the Olympic leadership finally forced to ban Coach Rick Curl from the sport… another unsettling reminder paralleling the Sandusky Penn State scandal. Curl's case will be discussed later.

When scandal after scandal gets replayed in the media of yet another pedophile coach getting caught in action, highly paid morons in US Swimming continue to deny, deny and deny, pretending they don't see a problem. Take US Swimming executive board member since 1990, US Swimming president from 1998 to 2002 and FINA vice president – Dale Neuberger. In a January 2011 deposition Dale actually stated with a straight face that he was totally unaware of a single case of sexual misconduct within his US Swimming organization.[111] The audacity to sit and lie through their teeth is the reason the entire Olympics administration needs to either be abolished completely.

No surprise that another core of hardcore resisters to any changes that would flip the switch and protect child athletes instead of the child rapists is the American Swimming Coaches Association (ASCS). The Association's director John Leonard while sitting on numerous US Swimming task forces and committees that determine new guidelines and policies toward sexual misconduct makes his views readily known:

I hate the whole topic.[112]

Because so many longtime coaches have married their swimmers, any reform that restricts coaches from touching or having physical contact with their swimmers has automatically been opposed. Despite coaches so used to having their way with both their sexually exploited athletes as well as their national governing body, under the threat of losing its US Olympics funding (which occurred only because advocacy groups pressured USOC), in September 2013 US Swimming was the last of 47 NGBs to finally make it against the Code of Conduct rules for coaches and even their adult swimmers to date or otherwise engage in romantic or sexual relations.[113] It's no doubt one of those rules put on the books to placate outside interests but never or rarely enforced.

Advocate attorney-Olympian Nancy Hogshead-Makar addresses the longtime normalized practice so accepted in swimming:

When the organization allows for marriages, allows for the 11-year-old to see her 18-year-old teammate who she thinks is a peer, she thinks they are the same, they go to the same

> *meets, they're staying in the same hotel, they are working out together, then she sees that (older swimmer) marrying their coach so she thinks this is true love and doesn't recognize what an inappropriate situation this is.*[114]

Meanwhile, during Chuck Wielgus' two decade reign of power playing out his delegated role colluding with powerful coaches while providing vigil for shielding their Olympian brigade of child rapists from exposure at all cost, no less than 252 swimming coaches and Olympic officials have been arrested and charged by prosecutors or ultimately disciplined for sexual abuse and misconduct of no less than 590 known child athletes under age 18.[115] Despite their denials, all the while board members were well aware of this infestation of pedo-crimes being committed, particularly during numerous US national team trips at competitions around the globe. It's been uncovered that since 2010 US Swimming even keeps an ongoing list of over 30 "flagged" coaches and officials arrested or accused by police of sex crimes that include child rape and child pornography.[116] Yet US Swimming refuses to ban the flagged pedophiles on its list even after their felony convictions. And then even when their perverts are finally banned, for years US Swimming refuses to disclose to the public their identities on its published list of banned coaches.

Here's more alarming evidence of how saturated pedophilia in the US Swimming governing body has become - four of the last six years at least 20 of its coaches have been arrested, charged or convicted of the following sex crimes: rape, statutory rape, sexual assault of a 3-year old and an 8-year old, child pornography and secretly videotaping swimmers undressing in the locker room.[117] Blatantly greedy acquisition of more gold medals that bring more gold hard cash literally feeding off the flesh and blood of thousands of sexually victimized cash cow kids has proven far more lucrative and important to the monsters who own and operate the coveted Olympics brand.

On a related matter the US Swimming insurance company run by current and former US Swimming officials gives yearly kickback "safety rebates" up to three quarters of a million dollars back to US Swimming based on its **non-filing** of civil suit sex abuse cases, in effect offering cashback incentives to squelch pedophilia claims.[118] US Swimming has consistently lagged behind in sabotaging safety reforms long accepted by other sports, refusing to investigate athlete claims even when confronted with incriminating evidence from multiple sources. Bottom line, US Swimming and US Gymnastics NGBs as well as both the US Olympic Committee and the International Olympic Committee are all guilty of criminal cover-up of endemic pedophilia crimes.

Founder of the advocacy nonprofit foundation Safe4Athletes and former Olympian Katherine Starr commented on the longtime US Swimming leader Chuck Wielgus who took in a cool million a year[119] to let pedophiles do their damage:

Wielgus was the gatekeeper and had absolute control of the issue of coach-swimmer sexual abuse. As a result, Chuck could have been a hero and been instrumental to change the dynamic that has haunted so many. But instead he (was) a coward and single-handedly allowed sexually abusive coaching to thrive for decades in the sport, leaving a wreckage of pain that has caused great harm to many swimmers that has lasted a lifetime.[120]

In the aftermath of the US Gymnastics scandal where harm caused by one abuser justifies cleaning house in that sport, earlier this year San Francisco based attorney B. Robert Allard who represents abuse victims reasons that US Swimming should follow suit:

… Certainly it would be appropriate for USA Swimming where we have well over 100 [known abusers]*. We are hereby demanding the immediate removal of USA Swimming's entire Executive Leadership Team, starting with Chief*

Operating Officer Mike Unger, Managing Director Pat Hogan, Executive Director Debbie Hesse, Managing Director Lindsay Mintenko and especially Safe Sport Director Susan Woessner, as well as its Board of Directors. Only then we can ensure that USA Swimming will have leaders in place who take child protection seriously and won't turn a blind eye to childhood sexual abuse because of a desire to preserve image and reputation and consequently monetary interests.[121]

The housecleaning still remains unfinished business as Unger, Hess, Mintenko and the Board of Directors remain fixed in their pedo-enabling positions to this day. Only Woessner and Hogan are gone.

Monterrey, California swim coach, administrator and at one time a leading financial contributor to US Swimming Dia Rianda concludes:

This Safe Sport thing is a complete farce. USA Swimming is all about protecting their brand in any way they possibly can.[122] *I can't sell the Olympic dream anymore because it's* (expletive). *These people are corrupt and anyone who sits there in a leadership position and allows boys and girls to be sexually exploited, to be manipulated, to be exploited in all kinds of ways just to get that gold medal, it's wrong and it has to stop.*[123]

That US Swimming brand in 2016 alone generated near $40 million of which a quarter went to the fat cat, pedo-enabling administrators and "employee compensation and benefits."[124] With that amount of hush money at its disposal to plug the ever-widening cracks in the damn from bursting into a full blown scandal that it's been for decades, the Colorado Springs based US Swimming NGB has spent $132,926 on a local Denver public relations firm called Ground Floor Media specializing in "crisis communication and reputation management." For pedo-infested swim clubs reeling from abuse claims, this damage control company puts out the “bad publicity” fire. The NGB’s strategy was laid out by a memo co-authored by Chuck Wielgus:

> *Our strategy moving forward will have the ultimate goal of improving the overall local swim clubs dealing with sexual abuse scandals* ***perceptions*** *of USA Swimming’s Safe Sport Program efforts.*[125] [Emphasis MINE]

Yet another hefty investment of $212,068 went to DC’s B&D Consulting, a lobbying company also geared to rescuing organizations in trouble, hired for the expressed purpose of “advancing their objectives within increasingly complex policy environments.” In 2013 US Swimming also doled out another $77,627 to a Sacramento lobbying firm in order to defeat California legislators from passing a law that would have allowed extra time for child abuse victims to file civil suits against companies that employ child sex offenders.[126] Longtime former USA Swimming executive board member Mike Saltzstein admitted:

> *I think they were well aware that there were a number of swimmers standing in line if (the legislation) went through. It was no small list of people. It would have been financially devastating.*[127]

Yet far more devastating is the lifelong damage so callously inflicted on thousands of sexually abused young swimmers over the years. Addressing USA Swimming’s leadership, Saltzstein concluded:

> *I’m not sure there’s the institutional incentive, intestinal fortitude, guts, if you will, to do what needs to be done. Their attitude is let’s smooth things over. Let’s hide things.*[128]

Rather than attacking the root of the problem - too many child raping coaches and officials in their organization, and invest in proactive measures that would stamp out such widespread abuse, USA Swimming prefers sinking its millions into paying so called experts to cover-up its dirty business, defending the image of Safe Sport as the front company “protector” of child athletes when it actually serves the function of protecting its pedo-business as usual. Just as the Penn State pedo-enablers chose to look the other way for decades at a time, so have the Olympic Swimming honchos, absolutely knowing underage girls and boys are being brutally raped and molested. Still with rare exception, neither the offenders’ nor their enablers’ criminal actions rarely if ever are publicly acknowledged, challenged, or consequenced other than by outsiders. US Swimming leadership has forever ensured that the system is not about to change from the inside.

Implementing another damage control mechanism, in three states the Swimming NGB has arranged to pay damages for abuse victims prior to cases ever being filed in court, thus circumventing the legal process.[129] Less litigation means less media to generate bad publicity. At all cost USA Swimming continues choosing to repair its crumbling criminal reputation while maximizing its damage control efforts. No matter how much money it invests to distort, lie, falsify and try to cover up the truth, this NGB’s reprehensible strategy is doomed to fail. Like cockroaches exposed to light, the pedophiles and their enablers try to run but they cannot hide. Another telling fact revealing the NGB’s misplaced priorities, in 2016 it lavishly spent a million bucks for its self-aggrandizing Golden Goggles gala and in comparison only $345,470 on Safe Sport under the pretense of cleaning up its pedo-act.[130] US Swimming’s higher-ups have only used Safe Sport to placate growing outside pressures to protect child athletes as a mere front in its feeble attempt to remove the stained image of “foxes guarding the henhouse,” another running theme in every scandal cover-up throughout this book. The guilty can only continue getting away with their heinous crimes against children as long as they keep filling their top positions with fellow pedo-lovers promoted on the condition that they turn a blind eye.

And now to gain a fuller understanding of the egregious suffering put upon thousands of kids in Olympic sports, several cases will be covered to illustrate pedophilic victimization of young talented girls who began swimming early on with such promise only to be brutally blindsided by predatory coaches subsequently shielded to do only more harm by an evil system protecting its own criminals at the expense of its underage athletes. Laura Weiss was an Indianapolis freshman when her high school coach Chris Wheat began sexually abusing her. In her own words:

I had never even kissed a boy. One afternoon after practice, he asked me to come to his office. He closed the door and that was the first time he molested me and I was 14. I considered suicide many times and I can't imagine all the other girls that are probably feeling the same way. He told me I would never be allowed to swim again [if she told anyone]*. So the blame was heavily put on me to keep quiet.*[131]

Frozen in fear, she felt helpless and powerless. Finally, her mother discovered inappropriate text messages sent by her coach. He pleaded guilty to child sexual solicitation and sexual misconduct charges and the registered sex offender was sentenced to a decade in prison but only served 19 months. Light jail time for child rapists in sport is also a very common, big problem. But then that’s also across the boards in Hollywood, Washington DC, Rome, London. Laura Weiss’ conclusion:

I think it’s hard when you see how many girls have been abused and how many coaches have gotten away with it. It’s hard to believe something is going to change.[132]

By age 7 Jancy Thompson had already begun swimming in Bay area pools and with a natural talent and intense work ethic, soon enough she latched on to the American dream hoping to someday swim for her nation's Olympic gold. As a child pool prodigy, her early dedication came at a sacrifice.

When you're growing up as a swimmer and a child you're asked to give up a lot of things. You give up your entire afternoons for training, running, weight training. You're giving up big chunks of time all the time. You give up the normal life of a kid.[133]

By age 11 or 12 she met her swim coach Norm Havercroft who soon began grooming her for abuse by age 15.[134] But first came the promises to make her an Olympian if she followed his strict recipe [she later concluded] for disaster. But both Jancy's mother and father were laissez faire parents believing their daughter was in good hands with her coach showing such acute interest in her innate ability as a swimmer. She was in "good hands" alright, and it wasn't Allstate.

He would touch me, he would put my hands where he wanted me to touch him.

But prior to overt sexual contact, Havercroft began sending pornography, nude photos and videos of himself masturbating, eventually a webcam for cybersex. A full year before her coach began molesting Jancy, a San Jose police sergeant notified USA Swimming that another underage swimmer had reported that Havercroft had sexually abused her.[135] Yet the NGB's silence only allowed the pedophile to harm Jancy and other victims as well.

Her coach was aggressive, denigrating her publicly while sexually molesting Jancy behind closed doors from 1997 to 2002. His brazen power-on manipulation and control over every aspect of her life had her believing the abuse was merely a normal aspect of her athletic training and development as a competitive swimmer. Other than swimming, she had no identity as his enslaved appendage and naïve underage victim. The prolonged abuse took its toll on Jancy:

I was so fearful of him, I would have nightmares at night. [136]

One of her nightmares literally came true. After Havercroft found out that she had dreamed he was pulling her through the water on a dog leash, for Christmas he actually bought her a dog leash and took delight humiliating her, tauntingly laughing as he walked along poolside tugging on her leash. To survive this level of prolonged torment that lasted five years, enduring alone this sexual and psychological trauma, Jancy dissociated, burying the worst of it in her unconscious mind.[137] Like so many chronically abused underage female swimmers trapped in torturously harmful relationships with their controlling pedophile coaches:

It felt wrong but it also felt right. It felt good. Because, I knew it wasn't right but he would tell me that this is good... I love you. I care about you. He would just tear me down emotionally... But then he would build me up at the same time to where I needed him to feel good. I needed him to finish my sentence. I needed him to tell me how I should feel and eventually I was just a shell of a person.[138]

As a sophomore swimmer under scholarship at Arizona State University, Jancy's life had grown so unbearable, she quit swimming altogether, dropping out of college.[139] But leaving swimming and her coach behind was not enough to keep her demons at bay. She felt dead, a walking zombie and shell of a person without an identity, describing it as a deadening death experience. With Post Traumatic Stress Disorder, a floodgate of flashback triggers of past abuse memories surfaced, sending her into deep depression, experiencing anxiety and a psychogenic symptom of excruciating stomach pain. As her next career move in response to the chronic crimes committed against her, Jancy opted for law enforcement, managing to graduate the police academy.[140] But her unresolved past traumas she'd been running away from for so long chased her relentlessly, forcing her to reckon with the years of severe sexual and emotional abuse.

Jancy learned that Havercroft was also accused previously of molesting a girl not even in her teens who later settled out of court. Finally a brave 14-year old's story seeking justice against another longtime predator coach Andy King prompted Jancy's recovery of her past trauma and a committed desire to come clean on behalf of other victims by boldly going public.[141] Through the help of counseling and retaining her attorney Robert Allard, in 2010 Jancy disclosed her accusations against her coach in a civil lawsuit, accusing US Swimming of negligence claiming that the organization's protective policy toward offenders caused her own abuse.[142] Because Jancy had dared to air US Swimming's dirty laundry in public, the Olympic organization went full force opposing her suit, expending $3.8 million to vehemently refute her claims in court.[143] Since the prior police investigation of Havercroft led to no formal charges, at one point, incredibly enough, while on appeal the court had even ordered her liable to pay for her abuser's attorney fees.

However, long before Thompson's 2010 allegations against Havercroft, even prior to her abuse in 1997, ever since the mid-1990s, the US Swimming NGB had received numerous reports detailing this same coach's past sexual misconduct from police, swim parents, other coaches and even a broker from the NGB's own private insurance carrier.[144] Jancy Thompson's story demonstrates the far too common pattern of victims being re-traumatized after acting on their courageous yet painful decision to fight for truth and justice in a court of law, being subjected to having to relive the nightmare all over again at times with disastrous outcomes. After years of re-traumatization, eventually in 2014 Jancy settled out of court for an undisclosed amount. It has been extremely disheartening for her to endure such a stressful protracted ordeal and to this day still not see USA Swimming place her former coach on its public listing[145] of over 150 coaches and officials banned for life.[146] As recent as 2009 Jancy Thompson found out that Norm Havercroft was still allowed to coach swimming in the Los Angeles area.

A notorious, over-the-top case where US Swimming management typically permits prominent pedophile coaches to continue harming children for many decades comes the Rick Curl case. In the early 1980s when Kelley Currin Davies was still 12-years old her Maryland coach, 34-year old Rick Curl, kissed her for the first time, grooming her for the abuse he would perpetrate over the next four years, first befriending her parents to gain their trust, even staying overnight at their family home under the pretext of taking Kelley to early morning practice, and traveling with her across the country for swim meet competitions.[147] The vulnerable little girl was taken full advantage of, falling in love with her predator coach promising she'd become an Olympic star. Finally, while a student athlete on scholarship at the University of Texas, she confided in her three coaches who would all go on to lead Team USA to multiple Olympic Games. One of the coaches, Mike Schubert, said that in 1987 Kelly told him he shouldn't report Curl to the police because she and her parents had signed a nondisclosure agreement as part of a $150,000 court settlement they'd made with the pedophile.[148] The legal action was precipitated only after Kelley's parents read her diary. While rumors of Curl's sex crimes were widely circulating, the known child molester was selected to several national teams and coached Olympic medal winners from four nations at the 2000 Summer Games.

As a rare US Swimming board member vowing to expose pedophiles in his sport, former Olympian insider David Berkoff wrote in a July 2010 email to another board member:

Denying knowledge of Rick Curl, Mitch Ivey and others banging their swimmers! It's a flat out lie. They knew about it because we (coaches and athletes) *were all talking about it in late 1980s and early 1990s. I was told by several of Mitch Ivey's swimmers that he was sleeping with* (a female swimmer) *in 1988… I was told Rick Curl was molesting Kelley Davies for years starting when she was 12 by some of the* (University of) *Texas guys. That was the entire reason I formed the abuse subcommittee. I was sick and tired of this crap. No one was standing up. No one was willing to take on these perverts.*[149]

It took 20 years before former University of Florida coach Mitch Ivey was banned in 2013, only after his misconduct was widely covered in the press. Team USA head coach Mark Schubert alleges that he repeatedly brought Curl's abuse to Chuck Wielgus' attention but as always it went in one ear and out the other. Schubert also reported Curl to the second man in charge, USA Swimming assistant executive director Mike Unger, but again to no avail. Three years after informing Wielgus, the USA Swimming boss was asked at a 2010 deposition if he'd ever heard about Curl's sexual misconduct with any of his swimmers, and of course he flat out lied all the way to his grave:

I have never received any information about that.[150]

Wielgus would use his standby excuse that without a swimmer directly coming forward with a complaint, USA Swimming couldn't do anything. So in 2011 even after Kelley Davies filed a claim against Curl with the NGB that included a copy of Curl's signed settlement agreement from the early 80s, Wielgus and his organization still did nothing. Curl was seen at the 2012 Olympic Trials both at pool deck and VIP section with his issued official USA Swimming credential.[151] Meanwhile, the NGB also saw fit to award Curl's club over 40 grand in grants, three quarters of which came after Schubert notified Wielgus in 2007. In 2012 Kelley Currin Davies even claimed:

> *The fact that Chuck Wielgus and USA Swimming allegedly tried to cover up for Rick Curl by forcing Mark Schubert to accept hush money in return for signing a confidential agreement is outrageous. If USA Swimming has any integrity they would fire Wielgus and the rest of the staff that continues to protect sexual predators.*[152]

And to think that low-life pedo-protector was about to be inducted in 2014's International Swimming Hall of Fame, but only due to a petition signed and submitted by 19 abused swimmers whose coaches Chuck Wielgus shielded was his name withdrawn at the last moment.[153] It wasn't until late 2012 after a *Washington Post* spread outlined Curl's abuse that began 30 years earlier that USA Swimming finally banned Rick Curl, at the time being prosecuted and in May 2013 was sentenced to seven years in prison.[154] In her 40s, Kelley stated in court that her motivation to come forth years after the abuse was to show what damage chronic abuse causes, suffering from anorexia, bulimia, alcoholism that caused her 20-year marriage to end and a host of other mental health problems. Sadly, her and Rick Curl's story is common to thousands more unprotected victims and predators shielded by the insulated Olympic umbrella. Though US Swimming's banned-for-life coaches list is now over 150 and counting,[155] for every name on that list, no doubt scores of unnamed monsters each damaging more child victims over the years without getting caught enough times to finally wind up on that list, totaling many thousands of children whose lives have been forever altered, impaired, and burdened by the beasts who've been guardedly protected by this despicable Olympic sport.

Another recent high profile headline of a swimmer accusing her coach of child sexual abuse is the previously mentioned Ariana Kukors vs. Sean Hutchison case. Emboldened by the #*metoo* movement and prompted to come forth with her own story in the face of the Larry Nassar case, in January 2018 another victimized swimmer Ariana Kukors went to police in her native home state of Washington to claim she was sexual assaulted at age 16 by her decade long coach she'd met at age 13. Investigators searched the 46-year old coach's Seattle apartment in response to Kukor's allegations that he sexually exploited her as a teen and took explicit nude photos of her at age 17.[156] Because of the international swim meets they both attended, Homeland Security is also participating in the ongoing investigation. From the time that the 31-year old Sean Hutchison met the gifted young swimmer, his described behavior fits the classic sexual predator profile, allegedly grooming her from age 13, asking her at 15 if she was wearing underwear as the lead-up to his first physical sexual contact at age 16 that she maintains over time only grew more and more coercively abusive. In her words:

> *He began by having me sit on his lap when we were alone, then progressed to kissing me in elevators, and touching me over my clothes. I'd never been physical with anyone before but I now found myself alone with him, engaging in sexual acts and trying to hide my embarrassment when he sat in the women's locker room and watched me shower.*[157]

As a young girl she felt overpowered by her Olympic coach's male authority, and with him becoming increasingly manipulative and controlling, and emotionally and sexually abusive, for years she felt a hostage forced into living the lie of denial in constant fear of being exposed and confronted by rumors from her friends, teammates and family. Ultimately the penile penetration arrived as his “gift” to her for her 18th birthday, though before that she says every form of sex had already occurred for several years running. In 2011 after a *Washington Post* did a gossip piece spreading the rumored couple’s story around the world, USA Swimming finally, reluctantly had a private investigator call over the phone ask 19 questions that of course she denied, quickly closing the half-assed inquiry concluding no sex had occurred. And to this day, the rising star coach of the 2008 Olympic team remains in complete denial, claiming sex never occurred until after she was of legal age.

Despite enduring the shame and horror of a tormented personal life, her athletic talent carried her to a record breaking performance at the 2009 world championship in Rome. Reaching the pinnacle of success three years later earning a spot on the US Olympic team, the years of abuse had her “sneaking” into the 2012 London Olympics. Her lackluster Olympic performance failed to win a medal largely because she was burdened daily by her exiled coach back home in Washington, who remained in constant jealous contact, demanding each day that she send him nude photos of herself.[158] When the swimming portion of the Summer Games was over, Hutchison made certain the now retired swimmer was on the next flight home, only to be locked away in his 21st floor apartment that only he had a key, still paranoid of rumors about their relationship. Fast becoming a desperate, over-controlling “monster,” she attempted to break away as their increasingly strained relationship grew more volatile till she finally ended it at age 24, but not before learning throughout their twisted marathon affair that Hutch had a crutch, maintaining another girlfriend on the side that he claimed was for “public decoy” purposes.

Currently 28 years old, having taken years to recover from her entangled decade long abuse, Ariana Kukors can now look back on her protracted damaging ordeal with an objectivity she never had during those years held hostage:

It is so painful in this moment to look back on the shell of a person he turned me into. Because in that moment, I was programed to think that I trusted this man. And not only did I trust him but I relied on him to help me achieve my dreams.[159]

Ariana says her reason for coming clean finally in 2018 to speak her truth is her attempt to reach out and potentially save others who may be just as vulnerable to falling victim as she once was:

… For the sake of the little girls and boys whose lives and futures hang in the grasp of a horribly powerful and manipulative person. That they may not have to go through the same pain, trauma, horror, and abuse. That their parents, mentors, and guardians are better able to spot the signs of grooming and realize its tragic consequences before it's too late.[160]

Attorney Robert Allard identifies this all too familiar behavioral pattern that pedophile coaches deploy in pursuit of their prey:

The coach normalizes sex with them. And he uses the carrot of Olympic glory to get what he wants. So yes, it's all about manipulation, it's all about grooming, and it's all about controlling the child's brain to get her to eventually agree to a sexual relationship that she might think is normal.[161]

There are literally hundreds of cases out there of known pedophile coaches having abused underage girls and thousands more unknown. Among the most egregious cases involving a coach that was allowed to move from one location to the next for over three decades harming dozens of girls aged 10-17 because the swimming governing body (that certified him back in the 1970s), at least two police forces, children's protective services, and countless swim clubs all dropped the ball.[162] Former head coach at San Jose Aquatics Club Andy King may be among the most horrific of hundreds of these notorious abuse cases.[163] Among dozens of his victims was a 14-year old East Bay girl who had an abortion after impregnated by the predator coach but never told anyone. Years later in connection with another 14-year old's complaint, San Jose police interviewed her after King had serially molested scores of underage swimmers at multiple swim clubs up and down the West Coast covering a span of 31 years. The San Jose DA prosecutor summarized the case:

> *The red flags should have gone up when King was only massaging girls behind closed doors, traveling alone with girls to away meets, taking girls to dinner, sailing on his boat and buying them gifts. The warning signs were everywhere… [But] unfortunately, King fell through the cracks in the system: Two law enforcement investigations and suspicious conduct observed by swim coaches, parents or boards who did not adequately supervise the defendant.* [164]

For abusing so many girls throughout the 1980s and early 90s in California, in January 2010 the 61-year old King received a prison sentence of 40 years. But because of so many failures in the system that typically protect abusers far better than its victims, the derelict was allowed to relocate to Washington State where in the mid-1990s he continued his sexual assault rampage. Three years into his incarceration, one of his victims from Whidbey Island was awarded $1.5 million in damages in a civil suit brought against her town's park and recreation department after the local police investigation in 2000 failed to make an arrest based on her reported allegations.[165]

Only in the face of the high profile US Gymnastics doctor scandal has US Swimming taken any action against any of its enablers. Along with Safe Sport director Susan Woessner's long overdue forced resignation in February 2018, also announced that same day was Ray Hogan's ouster, another perennial opponent to sex abuse reform.[166] It was Hogan as the managing director for club development who in 2010 removed from the NGB website without approval the US Swimming executive board's 2004 Child Protection Program that included background screening for employees and volunteers.[167] Never intending to implement, Chuck Wielgus didn't bothered hiring a Director of Child Protection as the program was eventually scrapped. At a deposition that same year 2010 when Wielgus was asked who at USA Swimming has the most knowledge about the Child Protection Program, Chuckie boy's bodacious answer was Hogan the very man that killed it.

Pat Hogan was one of the NGB members who married (and later divorced) his child athlete whom he claims he began dating once she turned 18 a year after he began coaching her. Compromised from the start, birds of a feather always flock together. In a related incident that also contributed to Hogan's forced retirement, in 2010 he provided a glowing recommendation for an already accused coach in Orange County California, Everett Uchiyama, to continue working with children at a Colorado Springs country club while the disgraced coach's wife worked for Hogan in Colorado Springs.[168] For all his sabotaging efforts to protect pedophiles, Pat Hogan would retain his job for another 8 years earning a cushy annual salary of $273,653. With that kind of anti-child protection leadership in charge, people like Wielgus, Woessner, Hogan and their ilk (too many still embedded) should've never been hired, much less fired years ago.

Hidden within this Olympic umbrella’s pervasive culture of child sexual abuse is subtle semantic nomenclature habitually and unanimously utilized by officials, coaches and sports personnel, always referring to children competing in their sport as athletes. Longtime sexual abuse prosecutor Victor Vieth tasked with assessing US Swimming’s anti-abuse program articulated this discerning observation:

> *Constantly, it didn’t matter who we were talking to… They always called them ‘athletes.’ We really wanted them to focus on, you’ve got 320,000 children in your organization, and you need to see them first as children before you see them as athletes. There really was the mentality of the possibility that this could be the next gold medal winner at the Olympics, and that mentality was not just among the coaches and the people running the groups; it was among the parents themselves.*[169]

Another gaping systemic loophole protecting pedophile coaches is the lack of a standardized Code of Conduct between the nation’s NGB sport like USA Swimming and its world sport federation, in this case FINA. Accused of molesting 1972 gold medalist Olympian Deena Deardurff-Schmidt from age 11-15, longtime Coach Paul Bergen is still allowed to not only retain his renowned position in the International Hall of Fame but continue to coach underage swimmers in the US and abroad as long as they’re on other national teams.[170] How can a global sport federation like FINA that governs all international swimming teams not have Safe-Sport Specific Codes or policy guidelines that universally apply to protect all child athletes in all nations? But then as long as these obvious loopholes exist, pedophile coaches - like pedophile priests - can just keep floating from one location to the next doing evermore damage.

Yet another big part of the systemic problem is that the US Olympic Committee and its numerous NGBs operating from their centrally located Colorado Springs headquarters remain so resistant to change is they heavily rely on a single go-to Colorado Springs law firm that worships the legalistic mindset of minimizing liability (i.e., protecting its own Olympic umbrella personnel and organizations) rather than protecting child athletes.[171] As long as both the attorneys and Olympic leadership possess a CYA/damage control mentality and focus as the basis of how Olympic organizations do business, children as a secondary priority will always suffer and remain at high risk of abuse. Like US Swimming's top officials, the notorious legal representation delivered by the highly powerful law firm of Bryan Cave also needs an immediate termination notice.

Nancy Hogshead-Makar points the finger at this international law firm Bryan Cave with an office strategically located virtually next door to US Olympic headquarters and most of its NGBs as a huge part of the abuse problem in Olympic sports. In a nutshell:

The problem with the USOC and USA Swimming and a lot of these other NGBs is they get their legal advice from Bryan Cave. Their eye is all on legal liability, as opposed to what would make it safest for kids.[172]

Instead of working to protect child athletes, the firm strongly defended US Swimming's longstanding policy to keep the banned coaches list confidential until a legal challenge with mounting media pressure forced a reverse in policy.[173] Bryan Cave lawyers were also instrumental in arranging with several states hush money payoff settlements with attached non-disclosure agreements for abuse victims as an unscrupulous ploy to circumnavigate the legal system and thus avoid unfavorable publicity for its pedophiles it so vehemently defends and protects. Still another legal tactic protecting pedophiles is taking full advantage of the fact that the majority of child abuse victims with so much to lose never come forth to report their abuse, providing an across the board Olympic policy to summarily dismiss “suspicions” from accusers and witnesses as merely “hearsay.”

Moreover, the same legal “liability” minds have been regularly employed to represent two thirds of the total 47 NGBs as well as serve as the US Olympic Committee’s longtime independent counsel.[174] Demonstrating just how “independent” Cave attorneys are, chronic pedo-enabling USOC CEO Scott Blackmun is a former law partner at Bryan Cave on its executive committee until 2009 who in 2008 defended US Swimming in a case filed by an abuse victim.[175] Again, it’s another example of the inner club of pedo-foxes placed in charge specifically to guard the defenseless child henhouse, a worn-out theme that keeps child rapists safely raping. Their brilliantly warped “legal expert minds” got it all wrong. They rationalize enacting safeguards to protect kids will be construed as an admission that there’s an admitted problem that will only open up Olympic organizations to more liability rather than understand that they save gobs of their greedy cash flow not paying out so much in damages and defending against so many abuse cases, not to mention the efficacy of simply doing the right **moral and legal** thing by protecting children. Seems these “bright” legal minds have been touched by Lucifer’s “light,” yet another scandal constant and central running theme throughout this A-Z pedo-book. Those that work to protect abusers instead of the abused are definitely worshipping the wrong god.

Predictably, the biggest and most vocal opposition to making the sport safer for child athletes comes from the coaches themselves. John Leonard, the executive director of the American Swimming Association of Coaches (ASAC) doesn’t mince words voicing his objection to his coaches being required to attend mandatory training on child sexual abuse prevention:

Educate about what? Does anyone need education to know what a pedophile act is? The only education that needs to take place is parents having the courage to go to the police… The statement was made to me that 'Protecting athletes from sex abuse is a core function of USA Swimming.' That's utter nonsense. The core business of USA Swimming is build, promote and achieve… The core business of the family is to keep our children safe.[176]

And finally for some good news, a huge first step milestone finally moving in the right direction to change the culture of abuse was achieved in Washington DC - of all places - when both the Senate last November and the House in January 2018 passed the Protecting Young Victims from Sexual Abuse and Safe Sport Authorization Act.[177] Little more than a week before the start of the 2018 Winter Olympics in South Korea, bipartisan legislation finally made it mandatory for all amateur sports organizations, including the Olympics and college athletics, to report suspected child sexual abuse within 24 hours to local or federal law enforcement, or a child-welfare agency designated by the Justice Department or otherwise face committing a federal crime for failing to report. For numerous decades therapists, teachers, doctors and childcare workers have long been mandated reporters of suspected child sexual abuse as should every person employed in a job, field or profession that works regularly with minors.

Forever worried over risk of liability, protecting undeserved reputations and maximizing gold medals and profits as their bottom line priorities, heartless, psychopathic sports organization executives, administrators and their legal teams have made it their agenda to knowingly shelter and defend hardened sexual predators in their midst for numerous decades, just like at Penn State and Second Mile, protecting child rapist(s) over the health, safety and well-being of thousands of kids. Now the final holdout refusing to mandate reporting laws falls within the “spiritual and moral” realm of the Catholic Church where the Pope and his Luciferians at the Vatican still resist making their legions of priests and bishops mandatory child sex abuse reporters.[178] Another inconvenience the pedophilia scandals in the sports world are causing for the Catholic Church to squirm is a current Michigan bill aimed at increasing the statute of limitations for child sex abuse victims.[179] After passing through the Michigan senate, the Catholic lobbyists have been out in full force successfully stalling the bill in the state house.[180] Again, proof of worshipping the wrong god.

In February 2017 victims from the USA Gymnastics Dr. Larry Nassar scandal met with Senator Diane Feinstein, helping to pass her sponsored bill that President Trump signed within the year.[181] The law makes mandatory implementation of proactive child athlete safety measures, provides supportive legal and psychological services and includes authorizing litigation for collecting both statutory and punitive damages. Rather than force sex abuse victims to report their allegations to the Olympic national governing body (NGB) with its horrific history of cover-up, this law designates an outside, independent entity - the US Center for Safe Sport for investigation and resolution of all child abuse claims.

As an example of the systemic resistance, after US Safe Sport was forced on the USOC by Congress in 2014, dragging its heels, it took the USOC three years for US Center for Safe Sport to be finally operational, opening its Denver office doors in March 2017 as the so called outside independent investigator responsible for all NGB abuse claims.[182] The exceedingly well-financed Olympic Committee’s feeble excuse for the long delay - “difficulty” coming up with the initial $25 million startup funds. Despite the enormous wealth behind the US Olympic Committee, the fact that the US Center for Safe Sport is both underfunded and understaffed to meet its designated, dauntingly ambitious obligation appears just another set-up for intentional failure to keep its child athletes safe.

If the Safe Sport entity created in 2010 by the US Swimming NGB to ostensibly serve the same function with its abysmal track record is any indicator, the US Center for Safe Sport is doomed to failure. By sinister design, selecting pedo-enablers in key top positions like Chuck Wielgus as the NGB's chief executive and Susan Woessner as the Safe Sport director is yet another illustrative example of the foxes guarding the henhouse, and a definite set-up for failure for changing US Swimming and the Olympics' systemic culture of scandalous abuse and cover-up silence. Woessner's half decade tenure proves the very critical point that Safe Sport is only as effective as the leadership running it. Her agency was never independent but completely subservient to US Swimming's CEO Wielgus and his patented culture of pedo-enabling abuse. It also highlights yet another systemic flaw and major hurdle to tackling child sexual abuse. Up to this point the USOC has granted each NGB the autonomy of opting for its own Safe Sport (or not) that invariably always answers to NGB higher-ups. US Swimming demonstrates that this approach has failed mightily. So the big question is whether the US Center for Safe Sport really is an outside, independent entity apart from the Olympic pedo-enabling umbrella? Before child athlete victims and all child athletes can trust this designated investigator, it needs to prove that it truly is an actual objective pro-child protection organization and not just more of the same masquerading sham.

Instead of bringing all sports worldwide under one Code of Conduct umbrella requiring every national Olympic committee, every sports federation and every regional association along with every NGB in every nation to be required to meet the same stringent safe sport standard aggressively protecting all child athletes globally, currently the bureaucratic morass is a nightmare where nothing is systemically coordinated or standardized. And like so much of what’s dysfunctional and destructive today, it too seems by malefic design to protect the status quo that only continues to shield and perpetuate widespread abuse.

Abuse is abuse, be it on a worldwide scale or within one sport in one country or one sports club, and uniformly enforced anti-abuse measures applied worldwide is the only solution to this global pandemic problem. But because the pedo-cabal on a global scale always prevents holding the pedophiles in high places accountable, at this highly corrosive juncture in human history, to implement this remedy takes on a pie in the sky notion that’s out of touch with today’s cold, hard, ground-level reality. Cleaning house can never be accomplished unless that housecleaning takes place on a planetary-wide scale that necessitates removing from power and control the elite rulers that own and operate this entire international crime cabal system. Ultimately that’s the only answer to what’s been plaguing humanity for millenniums. Addressing that all-important, monumental task (outlined in this book’s Epilogue) is every decent human being’s most pressing challenge on this planet.

Returning to the micro-level analysis, instantly resistance across the boards amongst various national sports governing bodies arose when in 2012 the US Olympic Committee spoke of requiring background checks for all NGBs, all club employees, coaches and volunteers in response to external pressures from Congress and child advocacy groups.[183] The pushback from virtually all quarters within the dysfunctional Olympic umbrella was formidable. Intimidated USOG executives claimed that their power was limited in enforcing policies they knew would be openly resisted and not complied with at the local level. Some NGBs insisted that the “one size fits all” approach doesn’t work for them, and NGBs like US Swimming and US Team Tennis opted to develop their own “customized” programs... but “customized” unfortunately for US Swimming meant succumbing to entrenched pedo-interests. Others would evoke the rationale that the cost of imposing background checks at $20 per person on all its clubs and members would lose sponsors and much needed revenue.

Granted, the nature of both bureaucracy as well as individuals used to operating with complete autonomy is to reactively oppose and defiantly challenge virtually any and all pressure to change. But the above litany of excuses are all lame and totally unjustified since status quo means kids continue suffering abuse in off-the-chart numbers. The so called Olympic umbrella ultimately needs to do what’s right by children - period! And it is the responsibility of its leadership at the top of this pyramid to impose its will and authority on all of its stratified tier levels, entities and affiliates down to the local club and coach level to clean up its filthy act and protect its millions of child athletes within its operations. All these years later this problem still persists because the will at the top of the Olympic food chain has always been either too pedo-carnivorous or too pedo-friendly.

Despite the heavy blowback, under pressure from US Congress, the US Center for Safe Sport was created in 2014 ostensibly to ensure that the Olympic NGBs begin complying with stricter standards for child abuse prevention, more effective detection and independent investigation. Based on the March 2012 revised joint USOC-Safe Sport Handbook, criminal background screening checks were delineated as required standard policy for all 47 NGBs that include down to the local level of every athletic club employee, coach and volunteer over age 18.[184] Even though background checks have long been standard practice since the mid-1990s in youth community athletic programs for children participating in amateur sports (outside the Olympic umbrella), apparently it took till 2014 for the USOC to finally see fit to implement background checks amongst all 47 NGBs.[185] Just how strictly enforced Safe Sport policies are remains highly questionable though, based on so many unsafe sports still not operating on behalf of child athletes' best "safe sport" interests.

In any event, leave it to the known pedo-enablers and pedo-perps within the US House of Representatives to pass a bill by an overwhelming 406-3 margin only after it surgically removes funding for the US Center for Safe Sport, leaving it still in need of funding sources, which as previously noted has posed a serious impediment to it even getting off the ground.[186] One cannot help but ask is this the tactical loophole chosen by a pedo-infested, sexually blackmailed, compromised United States Congress to nefariously sabotage the law from actually protecting children? It bears repeating, the US Center for Safe Sport is far too underfunded and understaffed to realistically and independently investigate the high volume of child sexual abuse cases. And we still don't know if it's truly independent.

Additionally, on the positive side, the 2018 congressional bill judiciously extends the statute of limitation laws to 10 years after turning 18 or **10 years after victims realize that they were abused**.[187] This latter point is enormously significant since child sexual trauma is so often repressed in childhood and memories of abuse are not fully recoverable until victims reach adulthood (despite what the pedophile-ridden False Memory Foundation purports; see Chapter 2). This child protection act also stipulates the legal precedent of empowering victims of sexual abuse as well as child pornography to hold offenders accountable in both criminal and federal civil courts. Additionally, other than a parent or guardian or in an emergency situation, as an added safeguard, the bill also prohibits an adult employee or volunteer belonging to a youth athletic organization to be in a room alone with a minor unless another adult is present.

In addition to required background checks and mandated reporting, another surefire way to lower sexual abuse rates for underage female swimmers in USA Swimming is to hire more women coaches at the higher competitive ranks. Though the total number of 20,000 coaches in US Swimming are close to an even gender split, the disparity at the national team level (considered Olympic pre-trials) is pronounced, only 12% of the coaches for the most recent 2017-18 team are female.[188] Additionally, at those top competitive elite levels, virtually all the head coaches are men. And since over 93% of the banned coaches are also men (near three quarters of them for sexual misconduct), and 94% of pedophilia crimes are committed by males,[189] it makes total sense to kill two birds with one stone - reach gender parity at the elite levels where child athletes are most preyed upon, and thereby keep young female swimmers safer both in and out of the now shark infested water.

In the lead-up to the House passing the mandated child sexual abuse reporting law in late January 2018, recognizing that the pedo-endemic in sports isn't going away, the US House Energy and Commerce Committee informed current USA Swimming President and CEO (since June 2017) Tim Hinchey in writing that his National Governing Body is under investigation along with its other pedo-riddled cohort:

> *The abhorrent abuses associated with USA Gymnastics, as well as allegations in 2014, when 19 swimmers said they were sexually abused by their coaches, may raise concerns about whether your organization has sufficient mechanisms to protect your athletes from abuse and mistreatment. Accordingly, the Committee is seeking information from USA*

Swimming because of the role it plays in overseeing swimming and protecting all of its athletes.[190]

Along with letters sent to USA Gymnastics, USA Taekwondo and Michigan State, the congressional committee also requested that Hinchey and his US Olympic Swimming NGB answer the following three critical questions by February 9, 2018:

When was USA Swimming made aware of sexual abuse allegations in 2014, is USA Swimming aware of any other sexual abuse allegations within the swimming community, and does USA Swimming have policies and procedures in place to properly report, handle, and investigate sexual abuse when it has been reported to them?[191]

With so many in US Congress out and out pedophiles or sexually blackmailed pedophile enablers themselves, it's a bit like the pot calling the kettle black for the House of Representatives to summon the top sporting officials in the US Olympic Committee to a May 23rd, 2018 hearing to answer for "the potentially pervasive and systemic problem of sexual abuse across the US Olympic community," the voiced concern of the two congressional subcommittee co-chairs.[192] But if it puts the Olympic umbrella on notice to clean up its pedo-act or face harsh consequences (a good start would be abolishment), then it's a good thing. But my question is, who's going to clean up Congress, or the entire US pedo-government, or for that matter the international pedo-cabal? Truth and reconciliations commissions as a starter perhaps. In any event, the House Energy and Commerce Committee's Oversight and Investigations Subcommittee is questioning USOC's acting chief executive Susanne Lyons and Kerry Perry, the current President and CEO of USA Gymnastics, USA Swimming's CEO Tim Hinchey, chiefs of both USA Taekwondo and USA Volleyball as well as a representative from US Safe Sport.

Aside from Mr. Hinchey directed to respond in writing to Congress' above questions, otherwise, other than a letter professing to be earnest about cleaning up the abuse in his unholy USA Swimming house,[193] and signing onto a brief to-do list that his board members came up with as their plan of action, the USA Swimming chief has kept a pretty low profile since taking over the mess his deceased pedo-enabling predecessor left him. To Hinchey' credit, immediately upon receipt of a letter from attorney for abuse victims Robert Allard demanding the resignation of two notorious members of US Swimming's pedo enabler club - Woessner and Hogan - Hinchey had them resigning in February. Though still early, other than that biggie, little else of any substantive import has changed. But based on a statement Hinchey made about being open to wanting to hear from abused athlete survivors, 49-year old Sarah Ehekircher stepped up for a meeting with head honcho Hinchey himself on May 1st.[194]

Back in the late 1980s Sarah was groomed by her Houston coach Scott MacFarland and sexually assaulted at age 17.[195] After Woessner's Safe Sport blew off Sarah's coach accusations in 2010, after convincing the US Center for Safe Sport to readdress her case, and a meeting with Hinchey under her belt, Sarah Ehekircher will not only be holding US Swimming and US Safe Sport to task, but she's currently been talking also to congressional investigators at the US House Energy and Commerce Committee about "the Olympic sized problem."[196] Incidentally, as an aside further exposing the sexist, pedo-enabling head of the coaches association John Leonard, beyond each time he opens his mouth to put his foot in it, working under Leonard at ASAC in 2004, Sarah Ehekircher maintains he engaged in hardcore sexual harassment toward her.[197] Her meeting with the USA Swimming director was Hinchey's first test beyond the pedo-enablers' resignations and rhetoric to show whether he's for real or not. After his shameful organization has delivered so much abuse upon abuse to so many unjustly wronged accusers, how Mr. Hinchey handled his May meetings with Sarah and Congress and how he proceeds from here on out will go far in determining whether USA Swimming's entrenched culture of child sexual abuse is still entrenched or not.

Longtime advocate Nancy Hogshead-Makar's response to this year's congressional inquiry into US Olympic sports:

We just heard 160 survivors address their abuser, Team USA's doctor in gymnastics. Knowing the true cost, it is gratifying that Congress is looking within the Olympic sports movement and see another sport with over 100 Larry Nassar-types in a single sport; USA Swimming. That's a much bigger scale of abuse, one worthy of inquiry. In my position as head of an organization that advocates for girls and women in sport, I hear the pain too many swimmers have suffered. There are still too many abusive coaches who are still coaching and still in the Hall of Fame. Almost as bad; ethical coaches who have been blackballed for advocating for athletes, for doing the right thing. They're offended by a culture of coaches that regularly go to strip clubs in the evenings after a day of competition, offended by the sexualization of young girls, but powerless to stop it.[198]

San Francisco attorney Robert Allard stated:

It's about time. USA Swimming's leaders have known for literally decades about dozens of pedophiles no different than Larry Nassar who have been roaming pool decks for prey across this country and did not do a damn thing about it because they were blinded by the massive amounts of money they basically extorted from amateur athletes. Countless lives of young swimmers have been ruined as a result of being sexually abused by these known predators. These leaders have redefined what it means to *‘cover up’ for child molesters. Yet, to our knowledge, not one single USA Swimming employee has received any adverse employment action of any kind and no board member has been removed from office. Personally, I hope heads roll and criminal arrests are made. There are a lot of people sitting in Colorado Springs with considerable blood on their hands. It is high time to clean house and insert a totally new leadership core within this National Governing Body which as presently constituted is corrupt to the core*[199]*.*

And right on cue, one big head atop US Olympics did roll. In its feeble attempt to symbolically clean up its act, succumbing to increasing outside pressures, 8-year US Olympic Committee CEO Scott Blackmun was finally ousted three days after the February closure of the Winter Games for his pedo-enabling track record failing to protect child athletes from pedophile coaches and Olympic officials.[200] The USOC claimed Blackmun quit his lofty post due to health reasons. But excuses like “health problems” or “desire to spend time with family” are typically given when head honchos resign in thinly veiled disgrace from entrenched high perched positions. But as this dawning age of exposing sexual predators gains momentum, jumpstarted by last October’s Hollywood Harvey downfall, at long last historical pedo-bastions of child rapists and their enablers like the Olympics are piece by piece being dismantled. Since the 1990s Blackmun has been a permanent fixture atop the Olympics Movement to suppress efforts to rid pedophilia, serving as the US Olympic Committee’s general counsel, as acting CEO and law partner in USOC’s go-to “legal department” firm Bryan Cave, all prior to his near decade long run as US Olympics Chief Executive Officer from 2010-2018.

Here’s what Olympic anti-pedophilia crusader Nancy Hogshead-Makar had to say about Blackmun’s downfall:

> *Let the Olympic movement take note. The money and USA's total medal count under Scott Blackmun will be forgotten. Blackmun's career will be defined by his unwillingness to protect children and athletes from sexual abuse within club and Olympic sports. Blackmun didn't merely happen to preside during the great Larry Nassar devastation, he created the underlying conditions for Nassar's evil to thrive. Like Blackmun's good friend Chuck Wielgus, Blackmun's legacy will be that he intentionally blocked athletes from getting help when they reported abuse.*[201]

Though the US Gymnastics scandal became Blackmun's last straw that broke his pedo-enabling back, even before his long overdue exit, for years the USOC CEO protected a slew of US Swimming NGB pedophiles. Attorney Robert Allard's turn to weigh in:

In 2013, I, on behalf of the countless swimmers who were molested by their swim coaches, literally begged and pleaded Scott Blackmun to get involved in the governance of USA Swimming which had proven to be rotten to the core and utterly unable and in fact unwilling to protect children from pedophile coaches. In essence he smugly told me to go 'pound sand' and that in his view 'USA Swimming is making a sincere effort, backed by real resources and real people, to address the misconduct that exists not only in their sport, but in society at large.' I later learned that he was close friends and had longstanding business relationships with many high level executives of USA Swimming. Right then and there I knew he was nothing more than a member of the 'good old boys' club and could not be relied upon to create a safer environment for amateur athletes. His departure is very much necessary in order for parents to start having confidence that when they entrust their children to the care of amateur sporting organizations, every effort will be made to protect them from pedophiles. With Blackmun now gone, it is imperative that the USOC put someone in charge who places the safety and welfare of athletes as its first priority.[202]

The Larry Nassar Scandal within the Larger USA Gymnastics Pedo-Debacle and Massive Criminal Cover-up

From the damage control files comes another feeble "too little, too late" gesture in the longtime pedo-enabling USOC,[203] USAG[204] and MSU[205] announcements that that they're funding support services to the hundreds of Dr. Nassar victims in the wake of the US Gymnastics catastrophe. Where were they years ago when abused victims' claims were all falling on deaf ears? Behind this newfound pledge to "protect the children" is a self-serving desire to save themselves by rebuilding their tarnished images. As part of this image enhancement strategy, the US Olympic

Committee is also doubling its funding for the US Center for Safe Sport as the “independent resource” for Olympic abuse prevention and abuse investigation after Congress elected to un-finance Safe Sport when passing its mandated reporting law. In efforts to appear to be cleaning house, the Colorado Springs Olympics leadership also canned a few “bad apples” in Blackmun, Woessner and Hogan along with USA Gymnastics president Steve Penny in March 2017[206] and his entire USAG executive board in January 2018.[207]

But that’s just scratching the surface. While true safe sport and child abuse advocates laud their forced resignations as an essential first step in the right direction, ridding a few powerful figures within the enormous Olympic criminal cartel still leaves hundreds if not thousands of guilty, likeminded pedophile-enablers and pedophiles still actively and deeply entrenched doing further damage to children within the worldwide Olympic umbrella.

Irvine, California attorney John Manly who has represented many of the US Gymnastics victims echoes this sentiment:

> *This is a positive development. It happened because of the courage of the victimized athletes to speak out. However, those responsible for the toxic atmosphere of turning a blind eye to sexual abuse and assault of athletes at the USOC and many sport national governing bodies remain in place. There needs to be a full and independent investigation, overseen by Congress, to hold those responsible accountable for allowing so many athletes to be victimized.*[208]

Dubbed as history’s all-time biggest sex abuse sports scandal ever[209] belongs to USA Gymnastics with its malevolently manipulating team physician Dr. Larry Nassar sexually abusing 265 confirmed female athletes (and one known male gymnast[210]) during a disgraceful quarter century stretch prior to his arrest in December 2016.[211] Nassar also treated and abused hundreds of athletes as a sports medicine doctor at Michigan State University. Both US Gymnastics and Michigan State University as institutions including the US Olympic Committee that governs the USA Gymnastics NGB are all more than guilty of criminal misconduct and criminal cover-up, knowing for years that child athletes were being irreparably harmed. Had it not been for the *Indianapolis Star* newspaper (*Indy Star*) breaking this horrendous sports scandal on September 12, 2016,[212] along with two brave former gymnasts that contacted the paper - Rachael Denhollander and Jamie Dantzscher, who knows if the biggest child sexual assault case in the history of sports would even be known today if left to the pedo-enabling devices of the Olympics organization or MSU?

A medical doctor entrusted to care for young athletes instead violated their trust for decades fondling and fingering female breasts, vaginas and anuses of thousands of victims while his employers as equally entrusted institutions looked the other way in double betrayal of underage girls and their families. The now 54 year old former doctor turned life sentenced Tucson Penitentiary inmate[213] took full advantage of his own world renowned reputation where families sought him out feeling honored and special just to have a medical expert with such impeccable credentials treating their child... or so they thought.

In 1986 while still a medical student at MSU, Larry Nassar was hired by USA Gymnastics as an athletic trainer. Just two years later as a volunteer Nassar began his longtime collaboration working with youth gymnastics coach John Geddert who would eventually rise to become the 2012 US Olympic Gymnastics team coach.[214] Geddert is now under investigation for his part in the criminal cover-up. But more on that deeply pathological pedo-enabler shortly.

Under the pretense of doing medical research as an MSU med student, in 1992 Nassar sexually molested a 12-year old girl in both a gymnastics facility as well as Nassar's apartment.[215] So it's on public record that the Olympic employee pedophile continued committing sex crimes at a minimum for nearly a quarter century. Yet US Gymnastics and MSU both claim they never knew of their employee's serial crimes until 2015 - **one humongously sick lie**. With his first known incident of sexual assault violating a prepubescent girl not even out the starting gate as a medical doctor, it wasn't until 1993 that Larry Nassar received his osteopathic medicine degree as a doctor from MSU.[216] A year later in 1994, Dr. Nassar notched his first future Olympic medalist under his pedo-belt in 12-year old Jamie Dantzscher's first among many molestations over the next half dozen years, all because she was referred to him for lower back pain treatment.[217]

In 1996 just prior to the Summer Olympics in Atlanta, Larry Nassar received a promotion as the national medical coordinator for the USA Gymnastics team. Meanwhile, his rising star collaborator and his wife John and Kathryn Geddert opened their Twistars USA Gymnastics Club.[218] Both the Gedderts and their Twistar Club will also later be charged in civil suits for failing to protect child victims.

1997 was a big year for professional milestones as Nassar's two longtime institutional partners-in-crime elevated him to US Olympics Gymnastics team physician as well as Michigan State University assistant professorship. 1997 was also the year that future Olympic coach John Geddert learned from a parent about his friend and partner's questionable medical treatments that included inappropriate sexual touching.[219] This critical information came to light per a 2017 lawsuit contending that Geddert not only refused to investigate the incident but continued recommending Nassar to other athletes. Keep in mind that a full 15 years before Geddert was the US Olympic team head coach, he knew the doctor was abusing his own underage gymnasts.

Coach Geddert and Dr. Nassar were inseparable, both professionally and socially. It was the future Michigan State University women's gymnastics coach Kathie Klages who first introduced John Geddert to Larry Nassar while all three worked at Great Lakes Gymnastics club together.[220] John Geddert was in Nassar's wedding party in 1996.[221] Yep, as is typical, the pedophile married a grown woman who has somehow managed to keep herself out of the headlines.

The Twistar gym owner Geddert's coaching style operates by fear and intimidation, known for yelling, throwing things in disgust and rage, and bringing his young gymnasts to tears, or withholding water until they perform to his liking.[222] Cut from the same abusive cloth as the Bela and Martha Karlokyi old school of hard knocks and insults, creating the ideal dynamic for the softie groomer Larry to flourish in contrast as the girls' seemingly safe, nerdy but nurturing healer-medicine man, offering much needed refuge from the stoic hell on earth imposed by their whip-cracking taskmasters. The smooth pedo-operator was always supportive and consoling, thus easily able to convince so many of his even shy child victims that his "touchy-feely" approach to his medical treatments was standard state-of-the-art medicine from a highly reputable doctor who they automatically assumed "always knows best." The surrounding punitive, authoritarian, cultural milieu in gymnastics confused young girls too afraid of the consequences should they ever dare to speak up.

Together both Geddert and Nassar ascended the same fast track pathway to success in Olympic US Gymnastics, almost as if their dual destiny was guided by fated external forces (i.e., the pedo-cabal players promoting them). While Nassar spent the next couple decades riding the crest of US Olympic success and soaring popularity of the sport, Coach Geddert became the most decorated gymnastics coach in Michigan history, coaching over 50 national team members including one of 2012’s “Fierce Five” Olympians Jordyn Wieber.[223] Despite being selected as the US gymnastics team head coach for the triumphantly successful 2012 London Games, the turbulent months leading up and right after that Olympics threatened to end Geddert’s so called storied career.

He twice had known physically violent run-ins with females, one a young coach that worked in his gym that he accosted in the Twistar parking lot and another an 11-year old gymnast who claims he “stepped on her toe, grabbed her arm and pushed her into the wall.”[224] The “she said-he said” legal faceoff on both cases finagled him from facing any criminal charges. Turns out at least four police reports have been filed on Geddert for assault since 1986.[225] His long record of rage and violence reflects deep-rooted issues of anger and a controlling, volatile nature that instantly turns abusive, regularly lashing out verbally, emotionally and physically toward vulnerable females, creating the safe haven for his doctor buddy to sexually deliver the final kind of abuse with impunity in a one-two wallop of a crippling poison punch.

A prepubescent Nassar victim who trained as a gymnast at Great Lakes gym commented:

> *Part of what enabled this is John broke little girls’ spirits and bodies, and Larry was there to fix them.*[226]

One of Nassar’s victims treated for back pain in the small training room at Geddert’s Twistar gym stated in the court record:

> *All I remember is him [Nassar] doing the treatment on me with his fingers in my vagina, massaging my back with a towel over my butt, and John walking in and making a joke that I guess my back really did hurt.*[227]

Even with the towel obstructing the pervert's digital penetration, making light of the situation strongly infers knowledge on the coach's part that he knew exactly where his doctor friend's probing fingers were sexually abusing little girls, especially since a parent in 1997 had already complained to him about Nassar. Coach Geddert was known to walk in unannounced in both Nassar's little training room as well as the girl's locker room while they were changing.[228] He made joking comments that if gymnastics didn't work out, there was always a job waiting for them at a local strip club since they could climb a pole so well. He also remarked about their developing bodies, referencing their wearing pink and black leotards that resembled Victoria's Secret models. His sexually harassing commentary in and of itself was a warning sign that children weren't safe.

Girls coached by John Geddert have attempted suicide, been forced to routinely train while injured, risking permanent damage and even paralysis.[229] His sadistically brutal methods, demands and constant temper tantrums, berating his gymnasts to extreme abuse, though not so flagrantly unlawful as Nassar's, but also severely damaging. Yet he too rose to the pinnacle of success as the bigtime gold medal winning Olympic coach. But it wasn't until Nassar's victim impact statements delivered at his sentencing hearings by Nassar's and the coach's victims in January 2018 that John Geddert's name came up loud and clear that he too was a chronic criminal abuser whose karma had finally caught up to him.

One victim Lindsey Lemke proclaimed to the world during her impact statement that Geddert deserved to be behind bars with Nassar. Another victim Makayla Thrush said Geddert many times told her at age 10 that she should kill herself. After his physical and emotional abuse pushed her while not fully recovered resulting in her career ending injury did she eventually try killing herself.[230] Izzy Hutchins felt excruciating pain in her lower right leg. The coach didn't want to hear it, figuring she was just faking to get out of her workout. When Izzy turned to Geddert's wife saying she couldn't walk, he yelled for her to get out of his gym. He followed her into the locker room, his face inches from hers screaming that she was "a fucking spoiled brat." After wiping his spit from her face, a hospital scan later that day showed she'd been suffering for over a month from a broken fibula.

During an exercise another 12-year old girl Baily Lorencen fell 8 feet onto her head, but the coach insisted it was just a muscular injury, failing to mention it to her father when he came to pick her up that night. Unable to get up from the couch several hours later, she was rushed to the hospital with a C2 neck fracture.[231] Two years after that while in back pain she fell on her face doing a tumbling pass, angering Geddert who ordered her to do wind sprints. Later at the hospital she prayed her back was broken just to prove to her sick coach that her injury was real. Her prayer was answered, and even after a year wearing a back brace her L5 vertebrae still remained fractured.

Another gymnast Brittany Aragon said training under Coach Geddert meant you were constantly insulted and humiliated. If her performance wasn't perfect, he'd yell one of his favorite threats - he was going to "beat her like a red-headed stepchild." At 5'3" and 113 pounds, by his standards, she was too heavy. So he'd have her climbing a rope to the ceiling using only her arms, running lap after lap, and hang from a bar lifting her toes to her fingers. In 2012 she overdosed in a suicide attempt on valium leftover from an old injury.[232] While in the hospital, it was Larry Nassar who interceded, writing her saying she would have to formally apologize to her abusive coach in order to get back into the club.

US Gymnastics received a number of complaints about Geddert's tirades and overly punitive coaching style, prompting the organization to hire a private investigator in 2014 to look into his record of abuse.[233] However, not surprisingly USAG gave him a free pass to continue his terror. Geddert is currently under investigation for child abuse and also facing lawsuits. So closely tied to Nassar and also clearly criminally abusive, once the above Nassar-Geddert victims publicly disclosed the coach's abuse at Nassar's sentencing hearing, finally in January 2018 US Gymnastics was compelled once again by outside pressure to suspend him. Immediately afterwards Geddert announced his retirement and his wife took over running his Twistar gym. The coach's story is a painful, shameful bookend to the Nassar tragedy. The lesson - if US Gymnastics coaches and personnel aren't sexually abusing their underage gymnasts, too many are busily abusing them physically, verbally, emotionally and mentally. Cruel sadism masquerading behind old school discipline is also pathologically embedded in the wider world of sports' culture of abuse and silence.

Aside from becoming an MSU professor and USA Gymnastics team physician, 1997 should have also been a red flag for more of Nassar's earlier sex crimes, supported by his two lifelong loyal coaching accomplices who always had his back. A 16-year old high school student injured at an MSU youth gymnastics event claimed after her medical appointment that she was sexually assaulted, and after informing her high school coach, he instructed her to report it to the MSU Coach Kathie Klages.[234] The molested underage gymnast in 1997 was warned by Klages of "serious consequences" should she insist on reporting it further.[235] So now near **two full decades before his arrest**, both the Olympics and MSU gymnastic coaches were fully aware and criminally complicit, knowing they had a serious child sexual predator in their midst (similar to Joe Paterno). But Klages and Geddert both chose to continue raving about their medical saint performing miracles on their innocent little girl athletes that they systematically fed straight into the defilers' evil ungloved clutches.

Like Geddert, Klages has much to hide. Again in that same eventful year of 1997, after asking another gymnast who'd seen Nassar at his office if the doctor had performed procedures that included digital vaginal and anal penetration, when the underage girl said yes, per court documents "Klages told (her) that there is no reason to bring up Nassar's conduct."[236] She also is on record speaking to the mother of another abuse victim and trying to convince her that Nassar's vaginal technique was a proven sound medical treatment. And finally, as recently as December 2017, still standing by her pedo-man, the by then deposed MSU pedo-enabling coach told the mother of a current MSU gymnast that the child pornography found on Nassar's computer was actually planted by the FBI. These incredibly incriminating facts alone portend a much larger pedophilia enabling operation than the familiar "lone gunman" wacko theory. Though karma has yet to fully bite Coach Geddert or Coach Klages in the ass, after 27 years as the MSU gymnastics coach, Kathie Klages' mouth finally caught up to her as well, costing her job in February 2017.[237]

A year later in 1998 Nassar began abusing the 5-year old daughter of his supposed family friends, first exposing his penis but the next year came the molestations that would haunt her to this day.[238] Years later when 13-year old Kyle Stephens finally informed her parents, Nassar convinced them to dismiss her version of events, creating extreme conflict and tragic strain on the entire victimized family.

The following year 1999 when an MSU athlete with a hamstring injury was sexually assaulted, she was rebuked, condescendingly reminded by her cross country coach that

Nassar was “an Olympic doctor” who “knew what he was doing.”[239] In 2000 after a sexually abused MSU softball player informed three college athletic trainers and another MSU staff about what she felt was abuse, she heard the same old worn out song:

> *She was fortunate to receive the best medical care possible from a world-renowned doctor.[240]*

Also in that same year 2000 in Sydney the pedophile would travel for a second of five consecutive Summer Games with the US Gymnastics team abusing his share of underage Olympian athletes along the way, but not before first sexually assaulting 15-year old US Gymnastics team member Rachael Denhollander.[241] Several weeks after the hometown newspaper of the US Gymnastics headquarters, the *Indianapolis Star (Indy Star)*, issued a scathing indictment of the NGB’s notorious history for its widespread sexual abuse in August 2016,[242] it was Rachael Denhollander who bravely went to the MSU police to file her criminal complaint against Nassar regarding the 2000 incident that ultimately brought his pedo-operation finally to a halt. A day later on August 30, 2016, for the final time, MSU suspended the predator from all doctoring duties pending the outcome of the latest police investigation. The following month in September 2016, Michigan State University terminated him as an associate professor of Osteopathic Medicine. Rachael’s action against her abuser is credited with ceasing his near quarter century sex crimes. Rachael astutely understood the toxic dynamic:

> *You don't get someone like Larry Nassar, you don't get a pedophile who is able to abuse without there being a culture surrounding him in that place.[243]*

Though relieved to have put the abuser away for life, she remains unsettled that the larger institutional pedo-enablers around him have yet to be brought to justice:

I am greatly disappointed that we have finished the criminal proceedings without seeing any responsibility taken by the institutions that let this happen.[244]

As far back as 2004, Nassar was discovered soliciting and receiving child pornography - yet another crime of which the sicko would later be convicted.[245] That same year 2004, when a 17-year old scoliosis victim walked into Nassar's office for treatment and after the predator inserted his ungloved fingers into her vagina and massaged her breasts for a few minutes, she too walked out a PTSD sex assault victim for life.[246] After the mother and daughter reported the abuse to the local Meridian Township Police, the first of several law enforcement investigations, Nassar used a power point presentation to con his slick ass out of legal troubles, explaining how it was a valid medical treatment and no charges were made, freeing him up for the next dozen years to resume abusing hundreds if not thousands more underage girls.

In June 2011 and again in January 2014 the US Department of Education's Office for Civil Rights (OCR) received federal Title IX complaints from two of Nassar's MSU student victims asserting that the university failed to respond properly to their sexual assault allegations.[247] OCR found MSU guilty of violating federal guidelines for failing to respond within specified time limits. The refusal by MSU personnel to take appropriate immediate action upon learning of sexual complaints and confusion over protocol regarding who is mandated to file sexual assault reports to various law enforcement agencies among academic departments also resulted in serious noncompliance issues with Title IX policy guidelines, thus the OCR declared the MSU campus a hostile environment for sexual violence against females. After its lengthy investigation, on September 1, 2015 the US Department of Education charged MSU with failing to respond to multiple sexual abuse complaints in both a prompt and equitable manner, causing and contributing to the ongoing "sexually hostile environment."[248] Yet a federal agency declaring that thousands of MSU co-eds were sexually in danger amidst a hostile, unsafe campus had absolutely zero impact on either the serial predator's ongoing crime spree or the university responsible for protecting its student body.

2011 was also the year that the US Olympic Gymnastics head coach John Geddert heard directly out of the mouth of then 15-year old Olympic gymnast McKayla Maroney telling him and others riding in the car back to their hotel that:

Last night, Larry was fingering me.[249]

By that time two decades into his nonstop serial sex crime rampage, fingering little girls' vaginas had long been the doctor's favorite criminal pastime. Though upon hearing this startling admission, McKayla said "people gasped" in the car, nothing further was made of her Olympic-shaking bombshell, least of all by the pedo-enabling guilty coach Geddert. Also sitting in that car was another sexually abused future gold medal gymnast Aly Raisman, who during an April 2018 *NBC Dateline* interview backed up her fellow teammate's shocking claim, saying Coach Geddert "just said nothing."[250]

That's because for the previous 14 years before that incident, Geddert had said nothing, knowing all the while his pervert friend was abusing the very same athletes that he was coaching. That's how much he cared about his athletes. Yet he did nothing to stop the beast. Keep in mind that McKayla dropped this truth bomb over a half decade ahead of the serial pedophile's arrest, prior to hundreds more victims that would have been spared from lifelong harm had Geddert or someone in that car with half a conscience done the only humane, righteous thing. Their collective silence constitutes criminal abuse in and of itself and John Geddert and the rest of his pedo-enablers up and down the Olympic predatory pedo-food chain need to pay for their reprehensible crimes against children. The Olympic culture of pedophilic abuse, complicit silence and criminal cover-up once again won out over any momentary shock or pangs of guilt - if any - that anyone sitting in that car experienced for their subsequent criminal non-action.

McKayla Maroney's first sexual assault occurred two years earlier in 2009 when she first competed for a spot on the US national team, training at the legendary coaching couple Martha and Bela Karolyi's Texas ranch outside Houston. As the national team's physician, the predatory doctor instructed McKayla while slipping his fingers inside the 13-year old's vagina for the first time that it was a legitimate and necessary medical procedure.[251] Afterwards the gymnastics MD further brainwashed the future Olympian at the Karolyi Ranch with this king-sized rationalization. Per McKayla's account:

> *He said that nobody would understand this and the sacrifice that it takes to get to the Olympics. So you can't tell people about this. I actually was like, 'That makes sense. I don't want to tell anybody about this.' I didn't believe that they would understand.*[252]

Like virtually all Nassar's abuse victims, McKayla stayed silently frozen in fear of how to move forward from this heavy burden of sexual trauma dumped on her at the tender age of 13.

In the *NBC Dateline* interview, McKayla Maroney described training at the Karolyi Camp as highly abusive, with her fellow gymnasts referring to it as "Torture Camp."[253] For decades the Karolyis ran a very intimidating training program whereby if anyone dare object or criticize over the way they were treated, they were immediately banished off the team. Parents and visitors were never allowed.

Withstanding daily verbally and emotionally abusive attacks was simply a built-in part of the couple's old school regimen imported from Iron Curtain Romania where they turned Nadia Comaneci into history's first 10 scoring gymnastic celebrity whiz kid legend. Name calling was commonplace, taking the form of being called "fat" when deemed overweight by the coaches' stringent standards. In this highly touted, legally sanctioned concentration camp, Dr. Nassar would play the role of "good cop" as a grooming counterpoint to the Karolyis' harsh, disciplinary "bad cop" style, again reflecting familiar shades of the Sandusky-Paterno dynamic. To get on the girls' good graces, Nassar would frequently sneak in gifts like food and snacks to the hungry athletes kept "starving" on their strict low calorie diet. But his compassionate, seemingly nice guy persona was part of the predator's grooming process.[254] McKayla stated:

They [the Karolyis and their staff] *used to say 'what happens at camp, stays at camp.' And, I mean that right there's a great big red flag.[255]*

What Sandusky was to legendary coach Joe Paterno in his fall from grace, Nassar is to the Karolyis, forever staining their once renowned legacy and impeccable reputation. They too were interviewed by *Dateline* with the chance to defend themselves before their now legions of critics casting dispersions on them. The longtime gymnastics legends are currently being sued by at least two of their former gymnasts.[256] One is Jamie Dantzscher. Years ago the bronze medalist at the 2000 Sydney Games was the first to publicly criticize the Karolyis' cult-like abusive power and caught enormous flak for it, but now completely vindicated.[257]

Another 2005-2010 USA Gymnastics team member abused by Nassar, Mattie Larson, in her lawsuit also accuses the Karolyis for turning "a blind eye to the perpetrator Nassar's sexual abuse of children at the Ranch.”[258] With Mattie’s attorney John Manly referring to the Karolyi Ranch as a “house of horrors,” when the gymnast was 15 dreading to have to leave on a flight the next morning to the official US national team training site, Mattie intentionally bumped her head on the wall to feign an accidental injury just to avoid the abuse awaiting her in Texas by her abusive team doctor and her abusive team coaches.[259] These Olympians believe the Karolyis are less than honest in their denial that they had no clue that a sexual predator was lurking in their midst, given free rein and access to the girls’ bedrooms at all hours of the day or night.

In the same way that the controlling Coach Paterno is said to have known virtually everything that went on with his team and inside the Penn State locker room, allowing his pedo-assistant coach free lifetime access to football athletic facilities (including after retirement) where most of his sex crimes were committed, the same could be said for the over-controlling US Gymnastics taskmasters at their “torture camp” with regards to their version of “good cop” pedophile-employee as well. The parallels between these two horrific scandals are eerily striking. Perhaps that’s because they’re both manifestations of the same global pedophilia network run by the same international crime cabal.

The worst single episode amongst McKayla Maroney’s chronic years of sexual abuse also arrived in 2011, just prior to her disclosing that bombshell to her coach in the car. In fact her telling Geddeck about Nassar had everything to do with the US Gymnastics team’s trip to Tokyo for the world championship.[260] To sleep on the plane, Dr. Nassar gave the 15-year old McKayla a sleeping pill. The next thing she remembers was waking up in the pedophile’s bed in a Tokyo hotel room “getting a ‘treatment.’” It was that incident that McKayla for the first time realized she was not receiving the doctor’s medical treatments at all but was being sexually abused by a highly manipulative, malicious and deceitfully perverted criminal. In her *NBC* interview she explained:

> *I thought I was going to die. He went, like, overboard that night. I was bawling, naked, on a bed. Him on top of me. And I thought I was gonna die.*[261]

The discipline of a highly trained Olympic athlete is schooled in pushing all pain aside, be it physical, emotional and/or sexual, in deference to competition and performance. Despite being brutally fingered and savagely violated just hours earlier, remarkably McKayla came through in top form in Tokyo and was crowned the world gymnastics vault champion.[262] Traces of CIA Monarch mind control torture, inflicted child sexual abuse and forced mind dissociation can be found in the experience of these abused elite child athletes. Amazingly, they are able to compartmentalize and thus temporarily store away their psychic pain to the extent that it fails to interfere with their masterful athletic performance.

In the April *Dateline* broadcast, McKayla Maroney declared that the gymnastics team doctor stunningly molested her “hundreds of times”[263] while over the years also taking hundreds of photos of her to add to his gargantuan child pornography library.[264] In an FBI September 2016 raid on his home, over 37,000 pornographic images were discovered on Nassar’s hard drive depicting children as young as six being raped, molested and digitally penetrated. McKayla believes that Nassar has shared with fellow pedophiles on the internet photos taken of her while the doctor was sexually abusing her.

While for two decades US gymnasts were forced to regularly submit to Dr. FeelBad’s mandatory “treatments” if they wished to remain on the team or compete in the next Olympics, their chronic serial abuser was revered amongst the world’s finest MDs as both an Olympic team doctor and

MSU sports medicine expert. Well-insulated and protected for a quarter century by his powerful institutions, the sexual parasite never ran out of fresh young meat to exploit and ravage. Maroney stated every time she ever saw Nassar, he never once failed to sadistically violate her, ending up "hundreds of times" because the monster was granted 24 hour a day unlimited access to her and her teammates' training camp bedrooms and hotel rooms.

And because Nassar's serial pedophile operation was Olympically sanctioned and shielded by three powerful institutions - the USOC, USAG and MSU - for a span of two and a half decades prior to arrest, the fiendish doctor was allowed to continue harming victims into the thousands, mushrooming into the largest known pedophilia scandal in all of sports history. But it wasn't just a one man operation by a long shot, at minimum it was a four major institutional operation (including the FBI's criminal stonewalling of its year plus investigation) that continued indefinitely to regularly promote, feed and protect the medical monster. Like every single pedophilia scandal, only with help from high places was this central antagonist able to inflict so much damage and pain on so many lives for so many years. Typical mainstream media apologists such as the *Washington Post* carefully frame this scandal as simply "warning signs missed." But that's just another collusive spin to cover up the very real larger pedophilia network operation that involves the planetary pedophile elite.[265]

Speaking of collusion from high places, the heavily edited *NBC Dateline* piece also conspicuously cut out an interview segment where two-time Olympic captain Aly Raisman called out one top Olympic executive - USA Gymnastics Senior Vice President Rhonda Faehn - for her part in the cover-up since Aly herself knows that Faehn was informed by her teammate Maggie Nichols and Maggie's personal coach in June 2015 about the doctor's widespread abuse.[266] Not to be denied, the next day outspoken Aly took to Twitter to announce *NBC*'s blatant interview omission, soon enough naming the culprit who like the rest of the accomplices did nothing once she was told, other than running to her pedo-enabling boss USAG chief executive Steve Penny. Critics of *NBC* maintain the censorship took place in order to protect the network's own corporate self-interest as the official exclusive Olympic television sponsor over the years perennially enjoying some of its highest ratings covering US women's gymnastics events. After all in the Luciferian world, you don't offend or bite the hand that feeds you.

This carefully "edited oversight" is yet another example of just how corrupt major cabal players from the corporate media and corporate sports world nefariously are, constantly colluding as symbiotic partners-in-crime. This kind of subtle deception relegates *NBC* to the status of mere kiddie porn peddler, exploitatively squeezing every last drop of its news media responsibility into flashy, splashy, high rating soundbite headlines… which again reveal the fact that it's never a one man operation but always a much larger, deceptively hidden, globalized pedophilia network.

Last October 2017, the *#metoo* movement inspired McKayla Maroney to bravely emerge from the shadows to announce that she too suffered from Nassar's abuse from age 13 to near her 2016 retirement at age 20.[267] A mere year after the Tokyo trauma, at the 2012 Olympics in London, during the emotionally charged, most critical time of her young life at age 16, performing and earning silver and gold medals on the world stage for her nation, her team doctor was administering his latest dose of chronic abuse on the Olympian known for wearing the scowl at her medal ceremony. Less than a year earlier she had boldly told her Olympic coach and other officials what Nassar had been doing, but her desperate cry for help fell on deaf ears. In retrospect, with all that she must have been experiencing at the time, it’s perfectly understandable why she would exhibit her iconic look of facial disgust. Incredibly, four of the “Fierce Five” gold medal winners at the London Olympics admit they were all sexually abused minors victimized by their team physician.[268]

As psychologically bruised and battered sexual abuse victims are, primed and polished athletes, even child athletes, have it in them the power to transcend their abuse to reach their young lifelong goal, and neither McKayla nor Aly nor Gabby Douglas nor Jordyn Wieber were about to let a slithering sicko criminal playing charlatan doctor in an equally sicko criminal Olympic organization stop them. It’s nothing less than a testimonial to the strength of the human spirit to triumph over evil.

In January 2018 the latest victim-turned-survivor winner to out the predatory Nassar and his predatory Olympic system is the gold medal star of the 2016 Rio Olympics Simone Biles.[269] A corrupt and evil system that so flagrantly misuses and abuses children as sacrificial lambs in its insatiable lust for medals and money is ill prepared for the truth-exposing strength and courage belonging to this latest class of gold medal winners demanding accountability from the rest of the pedophile enabling accomplices still entrenched in power.

At the height of the *#metoo* movement in late 2017, 21-year old McKayla Maroney wisely wrote on her Twitter account:

People should know that this is not just happening in Hollywood. This is happening everywhere. Wherever there is a position of power, there seems to be potential for abuse. I had a dream to go to the Olympics and the things that I had to endure to get there, were unnecessary, and disgusting. [270]

What’s also disgusting are the hypocritical responses from the very organizations that for years protected the serial pedophiles permitting them to do such widespread damage against McKayla and so many others. After US Gymnastics said that it admired McKayla Maroney’s courage, its disingenuous statement blabbered on:

We, like so many others, are outraged and disgusted by the conduct of which Larry Nassar is accused. We are sorry that any athlete has been harmed during her or his gymnastics career.[271]

If US Gymnastics was so “outraged,” then why in Hell didn’t anyone from USAG step in and stop the many years of sexual abuse? Oh yeah, I just said it, because they are all in Hell as Luciferians. The fact is, US Gymnastics attempted to silence McKayla as one of its most famous, potentially vocal Olympians, forcing her back in 2016 as soon as she retired into signing a non-disclosure agreement in exchange for her financial settlement to pay for her much needed therapy and legal bills (both compliments of USAG’s criminality).[272] The NGB’s silencing campaign backfired because McKayla spoke out in October 2017 revealing her years of chronic abuse and then in December 2017 she again went on the offensive filing a lawsuit in California against USAG, USOC and MSU for engaging in a cover-up marathon and gross failure to protect her and others for decades after first learning Nassar was a sexual predator.

Additionally in California, it’s against the law for a confidentiality agreement to take place in a sexual abuse case. Her attorney at the time - feminist opportunist Gloria Allred - set up her illegal arrangement. The bottom line, as part of USA Gymnastics’ continued desperation to preserve its systematic cover-up and irreversibly tainted image, the Olympic governing body paid McKayla hush money to keep Nassar and their organization out of the headlines. That’s hardly looking out for child athletes or being sorry for all the harm it caused. McKayla’s attorney John Manly, representing her and scores of other victim athletes against USAG, USOC and MSU, explained her forced predicament accepting the 2016 payout:

> *I want people to understand that this kid had no choice. She couldn't function. She couldn't work. They* [USA Gymnastics] *were willing to sacrifice the health and well-being of one of the most famous gymnasts in the world because they didn't want the world to know they were protecting a pedophile doctor.*[273]

It took model Chrissy Teigen to offer paying McKayla’s $100,000 fine for breaking her agreement to stay muzzled[274] before USA Gymnastics finally relented from its threat to legally go after her,[275] realizing the horrendous blowback from all the negative publicity that would result should USAG press the issue in court. Just to show its true colors, while US Gymnastics was expressing how sorry it is for its criminal role harming McKayla and so many other child athletes, at the exact same time it was introducing motions in Michigan’s US District Court to dismiss McKayla’s and 92 other victims’ lawsuits against USAG.[276] The Olympic organization’s hypocritical hubris is beyond words.

Michigan State University was also named as an additional defendant in Maroney and others victims’ lawsuits because it too knew about the pedophile’s long history of serial offending while permitting Nassar to continue seeing (and harming) patients even while the perp was being investigated for 19 months by MSU police in 2014-15.[277] The university knowingly allowed at least another dozen more known victims to be molested while his previous sexual misconduct was being investigated by its own policing agency. This highly incriminating evidence surfaced during a joint MSU-FBI inquiry in the spring of 2017. The university uses as its feeble excuse that inquiry after inquiry failed to produce enough evidence for the Ingham County prosecutor's office to charge Nassar, so each time he was permitted to return to work after an ever-so-brief suspension. That brings up another point in this criminal cover-up of gigantic dimensions from a broken legal system that only demonstrates it protects pedophiles. Again, more help from high places that once again only exposes yet another crack in the pedo-cabal wall… more evidence that pedo-foxes in the legal system guarding the pedo-cabal henhouse is a constant throughout every single pedophilia scandal in history.

Reacting to McKayla's disclosure of abuse last October, another of the many pedo-foxes - the US Olympic Committee - chimed in with its phony concern, claiming it was "sickened" by Nassar's abuse and "heartbroken" by McKayla's account. USOC then proceeds to tell the boldface lie of the century:

Each doctor working with our athletes undergoes background checks including an evaluation of medical licensure actions. ***Unfortunately this predator was not identified by any organization during the time in question***.[278]

Background checks on US Gymnastics club employees weren't even initiated until 2007, a full decade and a half after Nassar's first accuser came forth to report his abuse.[279] Additionally, there's so much blatant evidence of gross liability at both MSU and US Gymnastics on the charge of negligent retention during Nassar's two decade plus employment while they both were aware that a growing record of complaints from dozens of victims and parents were accumulating.[280] Documentation of Nassar's reported crimes can be found in multiple law enforcement agencies, the medical licensing board, child protective services,[281] gymnastics clubs, the MSU athletic department, the university administration as well as within both Olympic organizations the USOC and USAG, all the way to the US Department of Education. Yet not one of these “official” entities designated to protect the well-being of minors did a damn thing to stop the nonstop sexual violence unleashed upon thousands of his needlessly wounded victims.

Aly Raisman was spot on with her no-bullshit assessment of Olympic organization leadership:

> *Their biggest priority from the beginning and still today is their reputation, the medals they win and the money they make off of us.*[282]

The governing body’s longstanding cover-up of the doctor’s abuse finally began taking a fatal hit on June 17, 2015. That’s when US Gymnastics could no longer ignore the incoming abuse complaints registered by Nassar’s parade of accusers. Former USA national team member and 2015 world champion gymnast Maggie Nichols and her personal coach Sarah Jantzi reported an incident after Nassar sexually assaulted Maggie while treating her for back pain training at the US Gymnastics Karolyi Ranch.[283] Coach Jantzi overheard 15-year old Maggie talking to her teammate Aly Raisman about the bizarre treatment at the hands of the team doctor.[284] On June 17, 2015 Sarah Jantzi took her concern directly to US Gymnastics senior vice president and women’s program director Rhonda Faehn who then immediately contacted USAG President Steve Penny. Coach Jantzi and Maggie’s mother Gina were then called in to meet with Penny, who assured the mother that US Gymnastics would take the matter to the police and that “her daughter’s **concern**” would be handled judiciously. According to the complaint, Gina felt:

> *Steve Penny discouraged* [Gina and her husband John Nichols] *from reporting Nassar’s conduct to law*

enforcement and pressured them to keep the matter quiet.[285]

Penny was giving them the classic runaround, lying to them at every turn that his organization was contacting law enforcement. But instead of reporting the allegations to police authorities which is mandated by law in both Texas where the abuse occurred as well as Indiana where the liar was lying, the NGB hired its own private investigator still hoping it could smell things out and “fudge” over the evidence.[286] Finally when the investigator interviewed a third gymnast on Friday July 24, 2015, she recommended USAG contact the police.[287] Always so courteous to not want to bother the FBI over the weekend, the NGB waited till the next business day on Monday July 27th before finally speaking to an FBI agent. Of course the FBI was criminal in its handling of the case as well, waiting nearly a full year before interviewing Maggie Nichols and other victims, **allowing Nassar from July 2015 to December 2016 to molest at least another 40 girls and one boy prior to the pedophile’s arrest**.[288] Not only is the FBI guilty of criminal negligence, but stonewalling for so much time smacks of yet another sign of major cover-up and coordinated collusion between the federal government and Olympic organizations and MSU to ensure that the larger pedophilia operation had time to tie up loose ends and seal off any traceable bread crumbs. The goal is to always set it up where only one designated sicko goes down so that the larger sicko network remains spared and unscathed.

So the Olympics gymnastics NGB waited a full five weeks before it finally notified law enforcement. US Gymnastics would then be caught willfully lying, claiming it informed the FBI immediately. This disgraceful organization also failed to notify MSU and the Twistar gym where the Frankenstein monster continued seeing and molesting more underage patients. Perhaps USAG working with its fellow partners-in-crime already knew they knew, so why bother. Over a year later MSU finally fired the pedophile in September 2016.[289] USAG defended itself contending that it was not legally obligated to inform his other employers. Tell that to the last abuse victims Nassar was still molesting at MSU in 2016. Attorney John Manly on this issue:

> *Who allows that? Who allows a physician to be put back in a clinic treating children while under investigation for sexually abusing children?*[290]

A larger, coordinated child sexual abuse network, that's who. In desperado damage control mode, the deceitful audacity of USA Gymnastics seems egregiously boundless, releasing its "conclusive" finding after receiving its hired PI's report:

> *The information that Maggie and later a second athlete provided was important, but* ***did not provide reasonable suspicion that sexual abuse had occurred*** (Emphasis **MINE**)*.*[291]

So even after the complaints in 2015, Penny and his USOG were still blatantly denying Nassar was sexually abusing athletes. Between the unfolding developments further implicating both the pedophile's guilt and the NGB's criminal cover-up guilt along with more damning articles posted by those pesky *Indy Star* reporters revealing the rampant damage over many years throughout the sport perpetrated against its underage athletes by an army of US Gymnastics personnel (as well as non-USAG personnel), the pedophilia scandal could no longer be suppressed. By the time *Indy Star* announced in September 2016 that both former club gymnast Rachael Denhollander and former Olympian Jamie Dantzscher decided to go public, disclosing that each had filed separate lawsuits against both Nassar and USA Gymnastics, the burgeoning scandal was simply too big to continue sweeping under the rug.[292]

After years Jamie Dantzscher's abuse had her suffering from depression, anxiety and self-medicating her pain, in July 2016 for the first time, the 2000 Olympic bronze medal winner finally disclosed her deep dark secret that was behind her painful life. Likewise, ever since her sexual trauma in 2000, Rachael Denhollander felt like damaged goods, like it was all her fault. But ultimately after reading one of the *Indy Star* exposés, she felt strong enough to courageously step forward to tell her harrowing story.

Amidst concurrent investigations by the FBI, MSU police, Department of Education and the Michigan state attorney general's office, still protecting its own reputation as well as its predator, in September 2015 USA Gymnastics facilitated Nassar's quiet retirement as its team physician. In August 2016 Nassar publicly revealed on Facebook that he wasn't at the Rio Summer Games because he retired from US Gymnastics, using the excuse he was running for a seat on his local school board - that is until a month later word got out via *Indy Star* again of his MSU termination in view of ongoing multiple criminal investigations. Meanwhile, his long run of managing to avoid jail finally came to an end when arrested in December 2016 on charges of child pornography and sexual criminal conduct against a child less than 13 years old.[293] Six months after *Indy Star* outed the pedo-monster, his diehard protector who so vehemently had defended him, USAG boss Steve Penny was forced to resign in March 2017, but not before receiving a generous million dollar severance package for all his diehard efforts to criminally uphold the shameful reputation of his Olympic organization.[294] In May 2018 Michigan State University reached a settlement sum of $500 million of which $425 will go to the current 337 claimants of Nassar sexual abuse and the remaining $25 million will be disbursed to any potential future victims.[295]

In the end, when tip of the iceberg child raping scandals ultimately do get exposed, the longstanding pattern is for the same scripted mega-media giants to all quickly place blame exclusively on one sole predatory monster (vis-à-vis Nassar and Sandusky), again to ensure that, by wag-the-dog design, protection of the larger globalized pedophilia crime network remains fully intact, still unknown to the public and immune from all further exposure and accountability. By diabolical design, this systemic one-two policy of non-action and cover-up in turn ensures that the global network of child sexual abuse only continues to grow each year in order to destroy millions more children's lives on an unprecedented, massive, industrialized scale. As interlocking elements, mass media and the sports industry routinely work covertly together in tandem to suppress the deeper, darker truth from ever reaching the light of day, thereby avoiding the risk that their entire evil cabal operation gets exposed wide open - which unabashedly is the explicit aim of this A-Z pedophilia sourcebook. All the glaringly gory details of evidence are there for all to see.

Be it every type of scandal or so called terrorist false flag operation, the official MSM narrative is always deceitfully and formulaically rolled out by the crime cabal to shield the shady truth of its own criminal guilt from the public. But what's making the crime cabal increasingly nervous these days is knowing that on an unprecedented scale, citizens of the world are finally detecting the 24/7 lame-stream news propaganda machine for what it is - the world's largest source of "fake news." The waking masses are coming to realize that for a very long time the planetary controllers, through deployment of divide and conquer tactics deceptively spread through mass media, they manufacture and perpetrate conflict after conflict throughout history, manipulatively and willfully pitting one group against another, bringing war, death and destruction to every corner of our globe. These murderous culprits as members of this same ruling pedophilia cabal are now exposed and frantically running like cockroaches for cover of darkness as we the people shining the searchlight of truth on them are fast approaching critical mass. We will no longer sit idly by in passive ignorance tolerating the wholesale slaughter of our innocents nor destruction of our planet. Now armed with the truth, we're fighting back and they're running scared.

Joined by hundreds of other victim turned survivors, two celebrated insiders are also fighting back - the courageous 22-year old McKayla Maroney and equally courageous 23-year old Aly Raisman, each filing civil suits not just against their molester but also are separately suing the US Olympic Committee, the USA Gymnastics NGB and MSU, for all of them knowing untold numbers of young girls were being systematically victimized for years at a time, yet they chose to do nothing to help or stop the abuse. In Aly's words:

After all this time, they remain unwilling to conduct a full investigation, and without a solid understanding of how this happened, it is delusional to think sufficient changes can be implemented. Meanwhile, thousands of young athletes continue to train and compete every day in this same broken system. I refuse to wait any longer for these organizations to do the right thing. It is my hope that the legal process will hold them accountable and enable the change that is so desperately needed.[296]

Unfortunately in far too many cases, the legal system has been shown to be just as broken. But we are turning the tide. Out of a total of 265 girls and young women victims with 160 having already sued Larry Nassar, 156 of them showed up in person for his sentencing hearings, dramatically confronting their abuser eye-to-eye.[297] It's important to realize that the thousands of Nassar abuse victims each have family members who are also victimized, forced to witness the suffering of their loved ones. One was a mother who lost her daughter to suicide, believing her doctor’s abuse led directly to her spiraling death. From Donna Markham’s testimony:

We got in the car (after a session with Nassar) *and she started bawling and I said, ‘Chelsea tell me what's wrong,’ and she said ‘Mom, he put his fingers in me, and they weren't gloved.’ I said, ‘Chelsea I was right there in the room,’ and she goes, ‘You couldn't see what was going on, mom.’ And she said, ‘He hurt me.’ She quit gymnastics the following year, when she was 13, because she went to a meet here in Lansing... and he* (Nassar) *was there. And she fell off of every apparatus. She did horrible, and she said ‘I can’t do this anymore because every time I see him I just flashback to what happened in his office.’ She made bad decisions. It affected her social life. She started running with bad crowds, she got into drugs, and she never really recovered the person that was my best friend. For my daughter it became a serious, serious bout of depression. So in 2009 she took her own life because she couldn't deal with the pain anymore. It will be 10 years in March that I lost my baby. She was 23 years old. And every day I miss her. Every day. And it all started with him.*[298]

Though every victim’s story is unique, sad, gut-wrenching and tragic, confronting the monster face-to-face in January 2018 was empowering for survivors struggling to overcome their years of pain that this wretched little man in an orange jumpsuit cowering before them inflicted. But confronting their sexual predator to verbalize the profound impact that his abuse had on each of their lives was therapeutic for transitioning from victimhood to empowered survivor.

Recall Kyle Stephens, the little girl forced to endure a half dozen years of ongoing abuse that the parents as family friends with Nassar had trouble believing her belated accusations. The family conflict took a tragic turn once the non-believing father ultimately accepted the fact that his daughter never lied to him about Nassar’s chronic abuse. He was so riddled and tortured with guilt that he ended up committing suicide.[299] In the words of his daughter and only non-medical abuse victim:

> *Without my knowledge or consent I had engaged in my first sexual experience by kindergarten and had joined an overwhelming statistic of sexual abuse victims. You used my body for six years for your own sexual gratification. That is unforgivable. I've told counselors your name in hopes that they would report you. I have reported you to child protective services twice. I gave a testament to get your medical license revoked. You were first arrested on my charges, and now, as the only non-medical victim to come forward, I testify to let the world know that you are a repulsive liar and that those treatments were pathetically veiled sexual abuse. Perhaps you have figured it out by now, but little girls don't stay little forever. They grow into strong women who return to destroy your world. Your Honor, there is no time that Larry Nassar can serve that will give me back those years with my family.*[300]

The fact is no less than 14 Michigan State University officials including the MSU president were informed of Larry Nassar’s chronic child sexual abuse during the preceding 20 years prior to his arrest.[301] After Nassar pleaded guilty to 10 first degree counts of criminal sexual conduct with victims as young as 6 in November 2017, a month later in December he was sentenced to his first 60 years in prison on multiple child pornography charges.[302]

On January 19, 2018, after a 5-hour meeting, the Michigan State University Board of Trustees gave their president Lou Anna Simon their thumbs up,[303] backing her to remain president despite her and over a dozen other university accomplices all caught looking the other way to allow decades of abuse. Their misplaced solidarity of support for child abuse enabling proved short-lived. Less than a week later within hours of Nassar's January 24, 2018 conviction on 7 counts of criminal sexual conduct in the first degree, the first immediate fallout struck their fearless leader with her announced resignation in the face of mounting pressure from students and faculty.[304]

Speaking of enablers, by the end of January 2018, looking to cover its own sorry ass, the pathetic US Olympic Committee demanded that all 21 members of its US Gymnastics board of directors resign (or be disowned as an Olympic NGB) for its "inaction" in the face of the Nassar cover-up.[305]

Meanwhile less than a week later on February 5, 2018, the presiding judge in the Nassar case wasn't buying sicko's claim of remorse after his forced-fed parade of intense impact statements personally delivered by 156 of his victims. Of course Nassar's cause wasn't helped by his 6-page handwritten letter to Judge Rosemarie Aquilina complaining about her forcing him to endure the three day "media show" facing his victims.[306] The pedophile also showed his true colors once again defending his "medical procedures" as true science. So for good measure, realizing he is clueless in recognizing the colossal harm he's done, the judge tacked on another 40-125 years onto his up to 175 year death sentence, punctuated by Judge Aquilina's final comment that his next judge will be God.[307]

In the Nassar aftermath, seems nothing can stop the bleeding as the following month of March saw the twisted pedo-plot only thicken with a second MSU honcho let go, only to also wind up behind bars. Turns out that Larry Nassar's boss who oversaw the MSU sports medicine clinic where he worked so many years is also a flaming sex pervert. Dr. William Strampel was arrested in late March on charges of sexual harassment as well as collecting nude selfies of young women on his work computer.[308] Per the criminal complaint, this 70-year old senior citizen was busily targeting his own female med students barely out of their teens to “harass, discriminate, demean, sexually proposition, and sexually assault,” violating his statutory duty as both a public officer and MSU’s “distinguished” dean of the college of Osteopathic Medicine.

Dr. Strampel came to law enforcement’s attention for his failing to monitor and enforce the stricter protocols imposed on the pedophile Nassar after multiple sex abuse complaints. But discovered on this latest MSU perv’s office computer was at least 50 selfie photos containing a graphic display of university co-eds in the nude, semi-nude, showing their genitalia, sex toys and pornography. The derelict used his powerful position at MSU to coerce targeted female medical students to send him their naked photos online. The now disgraced dirty old man is also accused of grabbing young tail on the dance floor of his school’s annual gala ball as well as at his scholarship dinner. Is this aging sex fiend just part of the larger MSU pedo-society similar to the one found in high academia circles at MSU’s Big 10 rival Penn State? Circumstantial, connecting-the-dots evidence down this pedo-cabal’s rabbit hole seems to indicate yes.

Both MSU and all the US Olympic organizations – USOC, US Gymnastics, US Swimming, US Taekwondo, US Skating, IUS Volleyball, all consistently and repeatedly drop the ball for decades at a time in their gross failure to safeguard thousands of underage athletes because their obvious priority is protecting both themselves and their sexual predators in biggest sports sex scandals in history. Multiple law enforcement investigations also grossly mishandled case after case, allowing hundreds more victims to suffer while preventing more criminals from exposure, and not just coaches or doctors but a pedo club network amongst the ruling elite. Just as in the Sandusky case, when larger institutions flagrantly know egregious crimes against children are being committed for decades yet no action other than protection of pedophiles occurs, the law enforcement-legal system through criminal stonewalling delay tactics further shield the larger network of unexposed, unpunished criminals perched in even higher places. All this speaks volumes confirming the existence of a much larger symptomatic, systemic, cultural plague that historically continues to shield the global pedophilia network from any and all accountability.

The question must be answered - why did they choose to ignore the growing epidemic allowing the sexual abuse to continue so long? Like the Sandusky/PSU/Second Mile pedo-operation that was also permitted to sexually and emotionally scar countless children for decades, besides the one singled out as the Dr. Frankenstein monster, there is also an inner elite private club of VIP pedophile monsters engaging in a far larger Olympic child sex trafficking ring that’s still being covered-up. One pending lawsuit filed as recently as May 2018 deeply implicates the involvement of both the USA Taekwondo NGB as well as the US Olympic Commission in an international child sex trafficking ring operation. Between the two other enormous decades’ long Olympic team scandals in US Swimming and US Gymnastics and the many smaller scale scandals across all the sports, the so called Olympics umbrella is nothing more than a cover for the global child sex trafficking network we already know exists. But even removing Larry Nassar out of the Olympic pedo-equation, USA Gymnastics has always been a safe sanctuary for sexual predators.

It’s important to realize that Larry Nassar is just one sexual predator within USA Gymnastics that harmed many child victims. Unfortunately there are many more Larry Nassars lurking in every Olympic sport. Identical to the other notorious NGB that also harbors countless pedophile coaches in USA Swimming, so goes US Gymnastics. A series of major exposé articles boldly published by *Indy Star* reveals scores of pedophile coaches working within US Gymnastics in recent decades that have sexually abused up to thousands of underage child athletes in its sport as well. Scanning the nation's police files and court case records along with interviewing 115 coaches, athletes and club owners, in December 2016 the enterprising trio of investigative journalists who broke the Nassar story at *Indy Star*[309] had come up with a tally of 368 underage gymnasts who claim in the last 20 years they were sexually abused by a coach, club owner or US Gymnastics official.[310] That's another victim every 20 days and we know that it's a gross undercount since the vast majority of abuse incidents never get reported, especially in a competitive sport where so often the victim is the only one punished for disclosing. University of Pennsylvania researcher-advocate and CEO of CHILD USA Marci Hamilton warned that the actual number of victims is at least three to five times higher than the 368 count.[311]

Just like in US Swimming, top USAG executives have willfully withheld and failed to report widespread allegations to authorities while adhering to policies that protect criminal coaches rather than their athletes.[312] Also following the same identical pattern as its other guilty Olympic counterpart, USA Gymnastics customarily dismisses multiple warnings about predator coaches calling them "hearsay," refusing to follow up on either reporting to law enforcement much less initiate internal investigations, but simply allows serial child molesters to continue their unchecked mobility and freedom to harm more victims.

A handful of high profile cases are presented here. But keep in mind thousands of these cases are known and thousands more remain unknown. One of the more notorious cases involving Coach William McCabe in Georgia shows that US Gymnastics discarded four dire warnings as simply “hearsay” over a seven year period while the rabid serial pedophile repeatedly moved from club to club and state to state preying on countless underage girls.[313] He would openly and brazenly brag about his latest abusive exploits in pursuit of little girls. A gym owner in 1998 complained to US Gymnastics that McCabe “should be locked in a cage before someone is raped.” Less than a year later, the predator was caught striking again. All in vain, a number of alarmed club owners reported McCabe’s out of control abuse to USAG but to no avail.

Lisa Ganser, mother of one of McCabe’s potential next victims wisely took her concerns with the coach’s emails sent to her 11-year old daughter to the nearest FBI office. McCabe was subsequently arrested and charged with multiple counts of sexual abuse to minors, in addition to videotaping girls in the shower and posting it on the internet.[314] He pleaded guilty in 2005 and is currently doing 30 years in the state pen. Confronted with USAG’s stonewalling complicity, Lisa Ganser and her daughter also decided to file a lawsuit against US Gymnastics for its criminal part in knowingly sitting on so much overwhelming evidence that needlessly caused a number of more victims to be molested. This chapter’s unifying theme is that every Olympic organization at every level regardless of sport, totally disregards accusers’ and witnesses’ allegations that systematically protect the predators operating under the Olympic brand name label. And despite this shameful criminal history, other than issuing endless empty platitudes and unfulfilled promises, neither US Gymnastics nor US Swimming nor the US Olympic Committee have still not made safety of its child athletes a priority. Nor have they owned responsibility for their criminal actions.

Then there's UAG's 2010 National Women's Coach of the Year Marvin Sharp who coached Olympians at the national level. Within a year after his award, US Gymnastics received a detailed warning that he was touching kids inappropriately and taking explicit photos of them.[315] Four long years and many victims later, in 2015 only after receiving word that he was taking more explicit pictures of a 14-year old gymnast who'd been his student for three years and was caught shaving her public hair did the NGB finally contact the police. After he was charged in federal court in Indianapolis, that same year he cowardly committed suicide inside his jail cell.[316]

A long list of complaints over the years accumulating on Coach Mark Schiefelbein that US Gymnastics kept hidden away was only obtained through a court subpoena after the coach was arrested when his 10-year old victim's family contacted Tennessee police.[317] He's serving 36 years for 7 counts of aggravated sexual battery and one count of aggravated sexual exploitation of a prepubescent minor. Another pervert coach, James Bell, with another thick complaint dossier locked away in the Indianapolis US Gymnastics vault left a trail of police reports across the country. Forcing himself on top of an underage gymnast starting in 1990 in Oregon and the following year sticking his hand inside the shirt to pinch a 10-year old's developing breast, yet out West this guy still somehow managed to avoid arrest. Bell also had other sexual misconduct allegations filed on him five years prior to his 2003 arrest after a former employer reported him to Rhode Island police for molesting three underage girls. In 2004 he then went on the lam until once again apprehended and charged for sexual abuse in 2015. With this serial pedophile on the loose for well over a decade, one can only imagine how many more victims across the country have been marred for life, all because US Gymnastics stingily holds onto its criminal policy of refusing to report crimes to law enforcement.

If you’re thinking déjà vu here, with USA Gymnastics perps no different from the USA Swimming perps, discerning that the exact same shameless pattern exists in each sport, you’re absolutely correct. Long before Dr. Nassar hit the headlines, a whole slew of US Gymnastics coaches were already known to be raping little girls and as fugitives pillaging their way across the nation while USAG headquarters sat back keeping their records confidentially hidden and secret while far more victims were harmed, refusing to share records with law enforcement until years later after their protected hordes of serial sex predators would eventually get busted. And the issue of coaches with mile long pedo-complaints or even child molesting coaches with court convictions somehow avoiding the US Gymnastics banned coach list runs a parallel identical course with the US Swimming debacle.[318] In every which wrong way, these two criminal NGBs demonstrate the same old, same old, serving as pedophile havens for child rapists. The entire criminal Olympic organization needs to be abolished.

Again, Nancy Hogshead-Makar summarizes what’s wrong with the Olympic brand monopoly on international amateur sports:

> *The Olympic sports movement is a pedophile’s dream set-up. Families are expected to give complete control over to the coach, often times banning parents from watching practices. Emotional abuse is considered ‘motivation,’ and there is almost no coaching oversight from sport governing bodies like US Soccer. To make matters worse, the US Olympic Committee’s official legal position is that the organization doesn’t protect athletes from sexual abuse, that removing pedophiles from the Olympic movement isn’t their job.*[319]

The Chuck Wielgus of US Gymnastics - former USAG head Steve Penny (another forced resignation fatality caused by the Nassar fallout) and his sport have insisted on pretending they're the gold standard of child athlete safety, so full of themselves pontificating how much they care about the well-being of their athletes and the great lengths they go to in order to keep them safe… blah, blah, blah ad nauseam. Their criminal cover-up actions speak much louder than their false, do-nothing words. They too have a long history of using hush money with non-disclosure agreements as a precondition to settling claims and thereby keeping their epidemic abuse tightly under wraps.[320] They too have a long history of engaging in obstruction of justice, withholding incriminating evidence about their army of pedo-predators from both law enforcement as well as at-risk children and their parents as the next potential victims. These longstanding facts belie all their phony hot air bluster. They are the pedo-cabal's guardians at the gate, hired criminal protectors of the Olympic pedophilia network not any different from the rest of the major cabal players.

Here's why Shelley Haymaker, an Indiana attorney representing child abuse victims, says US Gymnastics "sickens" her:

USAG may not have been the hand that ultimately abused these innocent children, but it was [and still is] *definitely the arm.*[321]

Indy Star won a case in a Georgia court in August 2016 to unseal depositions and release of USAG's sexual abuse complaint files on 54 coaches that the NGB had been protecting.[322] Though USA Gymnastics appealed, in October the Georgia Supreme Court upheld the earlier ruling ordering the documents to be made public. Yet as of the beginning of January 2017, the criminal NGB outfit was still fighting and resisting, still bent on containing the growing scandal that Nassar blew wide open.

Despite its desperate stonewalling attempts to plug up the growing cracks in its cover-up dam, systematically silencing the abused with either hush money or simply ignoring them till they go away, while withholding tons of criminal complaints exposing legions of pedo-coaches’ and pedo-Nassar crimes from both law enforcement and the public (spearheaded by the trio of muckraking *Indy Star* journalists), US Gymnastics has found itself in a losing battle, overwhelmed and beaten by the rising tide of forces pushing for the truth to come out.

Pedophilia Lurks in Every Sport

Echoes of the exact same dynamics keep recurring ad nauseam in every Olympic sport - disempowered child victims who rarely get heard are being chronically harmed by longtime powerful abusers protected by their governing parent organizations always “caught” looking the other way for decades at a time, never really holding the perpetrators accountable.

And it’s not just Olympic sports riddled with these pedo-scandals, professional sports hold their shameful share as well. The storied franchise of the high-powered Boston Red Sox Major League baseball team knew of its clubhouse pedophile doing decades’ worth of untold damage to countless kids, with longtime owners Tom Yawkey and his wife on down in the organization knowing yet loyally protecting and keeping this sicko gainfully employed, all the while hiding their shameful dark secret from the rest of the world.[323] For three straight decades from the 1960s until 1991, the Red Sox clubhouse manager was raping young

African American boys off the street from the team's spring training site in Winter Haven, Florida to Boston, and no one said a word until finally the horrific truth was quietly exposed in 1991.

This chapter has addressed the pedophilia scandals in the sports world that we know about (with UK's soccer scandal reserved for the next chapter). But sadly there are likely many more remaining hidden in the closet that we still may never find out about. What we've learned is that no sport from the amateur to the professional level is immune. Pedophilia scandals and their cover-ups are the cancerous scourge that's plagued humanity for far too long. Today's light of truth brings opportunity to end this monstrous plague. Next we explore if sex trafficking of children and young women to all the major sporting events is fact or fiction.

Do Major Sporting Events like the Olympics, World Cup and Super Bowl Cause a Surge in Child Sex Trafficking?

In addition to winning lots of medals and protecting its pedophiles along with its Olympic brand reputation at all cost, based on past actions, the US Olympic Commission and its 47 NGBs' true goal is to make lots of money pimping and sexually abusing its little girl-super athletes within its own international sex trafficking ring. Wait, but that's not all. With top world sporting events like the Olympics, FIFA's World Cup and America's Super Bowl drawing millions of sports fans from around the world to host cities and billions more tuning in to watch on television, might the highly organized global sex trafficking network opportunistically move children and young women to these worldwide events as yet another sports industry dirty little secret hidden in its shameful criminal underbelly? A number of anti-trafficking experts, politicians, media accounts and victims themselves believe it's true. After all, behind arms sales and drugs, human trafficking is this world's third largest criminal industry[324] and alarmingly the fastest growing.[325]

First, it's worth redefining what sex trafficking is as a form of modern day slavery:

> *The recruitment, harboring, transportation, provision, obtaining, patronizing, or soliciting of a person for the purpose of a commercial sex act, in which the commercial sex act is induced by force, fraud, or coercion, or in which the person induced to perform such act has not attained 18 years of age* .[326]

Former 2006 World Cup insider and French national team coach Raymond Domenech expressed his shame connected to a

sport so closely linked to human trafficking :

> *It is truly scandalous. People are talking about women* [and children], *importing them to satisfy the base instincts of people associated with football. It is humiliating enough for me that football is linked with alcohol and violence. But this is worse. It is slaves that will come and be put into houses. Human beings are being talked about like cattle, and football is linked with that.*[327]

Using tourist visas, traffickers and pimps smuggle their sex slaves into host nations masquerading them in large numbers as sports fans. In the source country where the young sex slaves are recruited, the child procurers for these sex trafficking rings typically either abduct or promise poor, unsuspecting young victims well-paying jobs in the host nation of the sporting event.

Jennifer Rohmhildt, an executive director of a Greek anti-trafficking women's advocacy group offers her insight into this global sex trade that automatically exploits underage mostly female victims for peak profits during major international sporting events:

Trafficking is a trap. And an event like the World Cup or the Olympics is the bait. Pushed by poverty, pulled by hopeful dreams of life in the West, and exploited by opportunists, women suspend disbelief and their better judgment and gamble on a better life.[328]

While these worldwide athletic spectacles that generate billions of dollars' worth of revenue increase criminal opportunity to also exploit and profit from a surging supply and demand market for trafficked in human beings as a coldblooded global commodity, more than one third children, they also create a global platform for raising public awareness and bolstering anti-human trafficking efforts. As an example, the UK based charity It's a Penalty partnering with Cathay Pacific, HSBC Bank, the *South China Morning Post* and other affiliates in conjunction with major sporting events has launched a sexual child exploitation awareness and anti-trafficking campaign to inform and educate the public.[329] Loopholes in the laws in Hong Kong have exacerbated the human trafficking problem, but in the words of It's a Penalty's chief executive Sarah Carvahlo:

It is a global issue, it's not just happening in Hong Kong. That's why we've got the support of Australia for the

Commonwealth Games, South Korea for the [2018] *Winter Games and America for the Super Bowl.*

Through its initial efforts with a short film documentary shown on airline flights and at Brazil's 2014 World Cup and 2016 Olympic venues, It's a Penalty has expanded its operations to include providing 24-hotline numbers for reporting child sexual exploitation during all major sporting events, receiving 11,252 calls during Brazil's 2014 World Cup and 5,051 during its 2016 Olympics.[330]

The 2004 Athens Olympics and 2006 World Cup in Germany were among the first of these major international sporting events where during the preceding days leading up to the games an estimated influx of 2,000 trafficked in children and young women were anticipated in Greece[331] and multiple media accounts hyped that number up to 40,000 imported sex slaves in Germany to service the voracious sexual appetites of attending sports fans and global tourists, over 75% being men.[332] With prostitution legal in both of those hosting nations, the speculated estimate in Germany proved to be grossly overinflated with German sex workers (including internally trafficked children) accommodating whatever increased demand may have resulted. But then the 2008 Beijing Olympics in China where prostitution is criminalized also appeared to produce no overt or significant spike in sex trafficking. That said, the number of identified trafficking victims in Greece nearly doubled in 2004 from the year before and a 24% decrease was observed the year after the Olympics.[333] Anecdotally, a young Russian woman abducted and trafficked into Greece for the Olympics stated:

> *I was worn out, literally used up and spat out… During the games I saw hundreds of men… who thought that a good day was watching sport, drinking and having sex. We* [victims of trafficking] *were just part of the entertainment.* *[334]*

The 2010 Winter Olympics in Vancouver located so close to the US border along with Canada's less restrictive immigration laws, Vancouver's normally high demand for commercial sex services and an organized crime presence would all seemingly place children at greater risk for sexual exploitation and child sex trafficking during the Winter Games.[335] But again it apparently didn't. A similar outcome resulted at 2010's World Cup hosted by South Africa despite the false predictions ranging from 40-100,000 trafficked in prostitutes, supported by such risk factors as the area's high crime rates, economic inequality, lack of both anti-trafficking laws and experience hosting major sporting events and relaxed visa laws during the event.[336] During the 2012 London Olympics an increase in the trafficking of children and young women from Eastern Europe, especially Romania, was reported in the media but never verified. Another confirmed phenomenon associated with every Olympic and World Cup host city prior to the major sporting events is the displacement of thousands of usually low income families for stadium and infrastructure development projects that both invite human labor trafficking for site construction as well as increase the poverty level of the displaced population that in turn significantly raises the risk of child sexual exploitation.[337]

Brazil's back-to-back 2014 World Cup followed closely by the 2016 Olympics is a case in point. An estimated quarter of a million poor people were forcibly removed from their homes in the slums or favelas to make way for the major sporting events.[338] With well over a million foreigners attending the World Cup and another million tourists for the Olympics just under half foreign,[339] the nation’s widespread poverty in Rio and beyond unfortunately supplied more than enough human resource to meet the swelling pedophilic demand of the visiting sports-sex tourism crowds attending the two sporting event extravaganzas. No need for sex slaves to be flown in from abroad when they’re already embedded in such abundant supply living just minutes away from the Olympic Village and all the sporting venues. Rio’s elite wealth and exotic tourist beach attractions exist in stark contrast literally next door to the bleak world of abject poverty, daily violence and extreme child sexual exploitation already rampant in the country.

At least a half million children are estimated to be sexually exploited in Brazil, considered the second biggest trafficking nation in the world according to the women’s rights group CAMTRA.[340] Poverty has parents commonly selling off their children to pedophiles and little girls being offered to sexual predators as winning raffle prizes.[341] It’s become normalized, especially in small impoverished villages and towns in the countryside. With 43% of the traffickers women, girls as young as 8- and 9-years old are fair game, especially for truckers along the notorious BR-116 highway that runs from Rio to Brazil’s largest city Sao Paulo where the World Cup and Olympic soccer venues were played. Brazil’s rampant corruption of politicians, local mayors and judges are all among the biggest pedo-profiteers having turned Brazil into both a major source as well as destination nation for child sex slavery and international pedo-haven for the sleazy sex tourism trade linked to the larger global pedophilia network.[342]

Yet another sound argument maintains major sporting events do cause a rise in human trafficking, but it’s long before the games begin, pointing to the plight of the thousands of migrant workers turned slave laborers shipped in to Sochi, Russia for the 2014 Winter Olympics and 2018 World Cup and Qatar for the 2022 World Cup.[343] These enormous construction projects required to create the necessary infrastructure for major sporting events built from the ground up invariably attract forced labor trafficking with labor slaves often trapped in inhumane, dangerous conditions over protracted periods of time incurring a significant death toll.

Frequent assertions have been made that sex traffickers’ biggest payday in the United States is the annual Super Bowl, though during the last decade this contention has been hotly debated and empirically challenged. The 2018 Super Bowl in Minneapolis expected a surplus of a million visiting fans to the city of little more than 400,000 residents. In preparation, the metro police beefed up its presence working with 23 other law enforcement agencies, closely monitored online sex sites, introduced online sting operations as well as checked local hotels and strip club hangouts for potential trafficking victims.[344] While the anti-trafficking group Polaris was staffing its 24-hour hotline, its CEO Bradley Myles told *Reuters*:

> *All this is, is a one-day snapshot into what otherwise is a 365-day problem. The same traffickers that are committing trafficking during the Super Bowl* [are] *going to wake up in the morning on Monday and do the same thing.*[345]

Reuters immediately follows this quote with:

> *Big sporting events, from the World Cup to the Olympics, regularly trigger* ***a panic*** *over an influx of sex-trade workers, with many being victims of human trafficking* (Boldface emphasis mine).[346]

A caveat insertion seems relevant here. Owned, operated and controlled by House of Rothschild money, both *Reuters* and *Associated Press* are the two largest monopolizing international newswire services that daily circulate their newsfeeds to thousands of media outlets throughout the world.[347] Since the Rothschilds' central banking system centered in the City of London as well as every central bank located in every nation on earth but one (the so called "pariah nation" North Korea),[348] as chief financier for the global pedophilia cabal,[349] it's highly implausible that *Reuters* would dare expose the true scope and size of today's global child sex trafficking network. Thus, the above quoted statement could easily be read as a testimonial to not biting the hand that feeds it. *Reuters* would naturally propagate the "myth" that all major sporting events "trigger a panic" over phantom "skyrocketing" levels of child sex trafficking rather than admit the truth that they do create opportunity for increased child sexual exploitation. And though the trafficking increases may not appear off the charts based on the next to no current means available for accurate tracking, the most watched sporting events on our planet do increase profitability of associated legal as well as illegal businesses. And you better believe that the global child sex traffickers as part of an elite, top tier pedo club network would rather have us think more kids brought in to be abused at the Olympics or Super Bowl is all purely overblown, exaggerated media hype rather than anything real or substantial.

That said, a strong vocal critic of the media driven “hype” alleging the influx of sex traffickers surrounding each NFL championship game comes from the Global Alliance Against Traffic in Women, a nonprofit anti-trafficking coalition group operating out of Thailand that’s published a 2011 report called “What’s the Cost of a Rumor?” used as a primer for not buying into the annual Super Bowl hype.[350] It contends that sporting events become police task force opportunities to squander fiscal and manpower resources primarily invested in online sting operations with undercover officers posing as young girl prostitutes and would-be traffickers looking for johns. Then at the end of the day, using this charade for PR purposes, police departments and anti-trafficking task forces then conduct press conferences boasting about their limited trophy arrests that in actuality has virtually no impact on the global human trafficking network operating 365 days a year. Police representatives from past Super Bowl cities unanimously concur that no sudden spikes are observed either in the days ahead, on or right after the Super Bowl with either adult prostitution arrests or sexually exploited minors.[351]

Right after the big game gloss, the focus is then customarily put away for another year. Also the myth erroneously conflating adult prostitution with human sex trafficking gets misused in the mix as an enormous waste of taxpayer dollars mostly for show and tell purposes, opportunistically exploited by self-serving agendas of politicians, law enforcement agencies, sensationalizing media outlets, prostitution abolitionist groups and a few anti-trafficking organizations eager to get their message out any chance they can.

Just prior to the 2017 Super Bowl, a nationwide trafficking sting operation is said to have netted over 750 suspects in 15 states, 29 trafficking pimps and 723 customers jailed in the largest sweep in the 13 years law enforcement's been keeping track of Super Bowl arrests.[352] Over 100 arrests were in Houston alone where the game was played with a grand total of 6 minors and 86 adults rescued nationwide.

Kate Mogulescu, the director of New York based Legal Aid Society that works with trafficking victims has this to say:

> *Police could better spend their resources. Police have other types of investigating resources, including community engagement (and) if the only interaction that victims of trafficking can expect to have with police is by virtue of raids, stings… that creates the biggest barrier.*

So when someone in the know working in the trenches is stating that law enforcement's big nationwide sweeps in its sting operation raids pose the worst barrier to actually helping victims and making a difference in reducing the global trafficking operations, she is saying that it's grossly counterproductive in waging the larger battle to end modern slavery. The few saved victims are typically used as trophy statistics at press conferences to prop up and justify widespread sting operations as law enforcement's only M.O. to combat the human trafficking problem. Police sting operations and raids are worthless in terms of their next to no impact on eradicating the planetary-wide slavery epidemic and its gross failure to help the remaining millions globally still trapped as victims as well as purely from a cost-effective analysis. In every way it's clearly the wrong approach. But then like lots of things, it’s more than likely that way by design.

On a personal level for those slave victims still locked in a world of terror, when cops charge in like gangbusters with guns drawn for battle, the criminals only become more prone toward violently acting out against their victims, endangering their lives all the more. When on high alert, pimps/traffickers reacting to aggressive law enforcement interventions like police raids will increase their beatings, psychological torture and sexual abuse toward their held hostage captives, erratically escalating to more severe levels. Plus the Stockholm syndrome is also commonly present where victims, for survival sake, tend to align, identify and side more with their abusers than the police as the so called rescuers. To trafficked underage abuse victims, law enforcement raids in sting operations cast police increasingly as feared, not to be trusted, adversarial, ever-dangerous threats, hence “the biggest barrier.”

The annual drill of hyped up, misplaced priorities in effect diverts both precious and limited resources as well as much needed attention away from the far bigger problems of gender and economic inequality, global poverty, gentrification and population displacement that by elite design pose underlying causal factors at the growing impoverished local levels giving rise to global human trafficking and child sexual exploitation, not unlike the many by design war zones.[353] And that’s not even including the near zero impact it has on the very real epidemic of human trafficking with 4 out of 5 modern slaves being women (51%) and children (28% with 20% girls, 8% boys),[354] and reaching pandemic crisis as more slaves shamefully exist in today’s world than ever before in human history.[355] In other words, the bottom line is the biggest single beneficiary of these hyped up sting raids is the international pedo-cabal itself, because the day after the Super Bowl, it’s largely back to normal business as usual for another 364 days of the year with its massive worldwide operation remaining totally unaffected, fully intact, still remaining hidden off public radar, yet continuing to flourish and grow every year as never before. Since the big Super Bowl winner is the crime cabal itself, it’s very likely the primary force behind this enduringly ineffectual urban legend ritual and its equally ineffectual sting operations.

You may be asking yourself how this so called urban legend got started. According to the National Center for Missing and Exploited Children, traffickers brought in 10,000 prostitutes to Miami for the 2010 Super Bowl to make an easy quick cash payload.[356] That pronouncement then led to the following year when Texas attorney general soon turned Governor Greg Abbott making the bold claim that the Super Bowl is America’s “single largest human trafficking incident,” which ever since set the stage for this ongoing seasonal debate.[357] A number of anti-trafficking advocacy groups initially agreed with Abbott, since basic supply and demand metrics would logically lead to this same conclusion. Plus shining light on this near taboo topic of pedophilia and child trafficking offered an all too rare and important opportunity to pass up for anti-trafficking/anti-slavery groups. But Abbott’s prediction just before his Dallas Super Bowl that according to *Forbes* resulted in “133 underage arrests for prostitution” out of a city of 1.3 million residents with hundreds of thousands more visitors hardly seems prophetic or true.[358] But just the same, the city was ready.[359]

But wait, if the 133 underage sex slaves arrested as the victims of the bad guy traffickers end up behind bars for prostitution, how would that be then touted as an endorsement of the false notion that the Super Bowl is a slave trafficking magnet? A huge part of the problem is the historically abusive treatment underage victims systemically receive at the hands of America's punitive law enforcement and broken legal justice system that labels them "prostitutes" rather than human and child trafficking victims, methodically thrown in adult prisons or held indefinitely in juvenile detention while awaiting prosecution as adults in what amounts to a horrendously cruel process of re-victimization.[360] Also note the vast difference between the rather grandiose 2010 Super Bowl estimate of 10,000 trafficked in prostitutes compared only a year later to the paltry 133 arrests in 2011. Either way, little good ever ends up the outcome of emotionally reactive, knee jerk responses. Nonetheless, Abbott's pregame proclamation was apparently well-served, like clockwork regularly catching the nation's attention every Super Bowl Sunday thereafter, creating a one day or pregame weeklong national anti-trafficking policy with ineffectual, counterproductive police interventions solely based on a false, never proven hypothesis of one politician's bogus claim. But then that's how corporate media regularly colludes with the international crime cabal to cunningly obscure and shield the global child sex trafficking network from further public scrutiny, accurate awareness and potential accountability.

And every year ever since we hear recurring echoes reverberated at another politician's or police task force press conference that insists on keeping this worn-out urban legend still alive. Just three years ago it was yet another Texas politician's turn to continue propagating the myth when Senator John Cornyn repeated the governor's mantra:

The Super Bowl has one of the highest levels of human sex trafficking activity of any event in the country.[361]

Cornyn’s remark was later clarified by his staff to apply only to the host city. But the latest results from an Arizona State University study released then completely refuted his misleading presumption. The study found no discernable difference between the numbers of sex ads posted at online websites just prior to the 2014 Super Bowl hosted in New York and non-host city Phoenix, the percentages 84% and 80% respectively.[362] Moreover, the myth killer was the number of ads in New York in the host year was less than half of the following year’s total when it wasn’t hosting the game, while Phoenix ads did increase from the non-host year to the host year.[363] Hence, the research results failed to link any connection between the Super Bowl and increased sex trafficking activity. Additionally, this research was methodologically flawed in its attempt to extrapolate a sex ad as evidence of trafficking. Also the saturated presence these days of law enforcement posting online sex ads of would-be traffickers and underage sex workers in its massive nationwide sting operations (that along with sex ads only increase over time) would further contaminate the internal validity of this study. All this shows is that due to the clandestine status and nature of the global criminal sex trafficking network, neither the current measurement mechanisms nor, more importantly, the current political and economic will exists to accurately and precisely measure the increasing population of children being trafficked, raped and murdered around the world. The international pedo-cabal wouldn’t have it any other way.

On a related note, in recent years where so much adult service sex advertising has been widely used online by sex workers, pimps and traffickers in the commercial sex trade, the website Backpage.com was recently shut down by the pedo-enabling FBI in April 2018. At the same time its co-founder was arrested and charged with 93 criminal counts including soliciting prostitution and money laundering.[364] Of course in its abrupt absence, plenty of other adult service websites are busily filling the void.

Linda Smith, a former Congresswoman and president of the nonprofit anti-trafficking organization Shared Hope International[365] was called in as a consultant to assess Indianapolis for its "preparedness" prior to its 2012 Super Bowl. She gave the Indiana capital a D grade, labeling it "a hub city for prostitution" based on the nonstop flow of its transient major sporting event populations constantly passing through.[366] The city is the home of both the NFL Indianapolis Colts and the Olympic pedophilia haven the US Gymnastics national governing body. On top of that, each and every year this apparent trafficking hub is also the host drawing large numbers for the most famous US car racing event the Indianapolis 500 as well as the March Madness Final Four college basketball tournament championship. So if there was any merit to the notion that major sporting events increase child sex trafficking, this busy "prostitution hub" with the D grade would be it. Linda Smith explained:

> *When we look at traffic patterns across the county, most of the girls we speak to have been moved in and out of cities for large sporting events. First off, I told them their city was broken.*[367]

Linda faulted Indianapolis for its treatment of underage trafficking victims as criminals most often tried in court as adults for prostitution. Appraising the city's legal system, it too left much to be desired regarding its policy classifying and prosecuting the crimes of buyers and sellers of children. Linda Smith worked with the governor and attorney general to fast track tougher anti-trafficking legislation passed just in time for the 2012 Super Bowl.[368]

As an adjunctive aside regarding the state of Indiana, it's worth noting that the global elite's company man for president if and when Donald Trump is impeached, taken out and/or removed from office, native Indianan US Vice President Mike Pence as former state governor has a shrouded, muddy history connected to the crime cabal with all his congressional records sealed until December 2022.[369] He has good reason. Though he wraps himself in red, white and blue Christian fundamentalism,[370] the freshman Indiana congressman was a dutiful Bush-Cheney 9/11-anthrax false flag insider,[371] thrusted years later onto the Trump ticket via a visit from Illuminati president Henry Kissinger.[372] Mike Pence has publicly stated, "I will model my vice presidency after Dick Cheney."[373] Additionally, multiple sources have linked him to the Bush-Cheney-Clinton pedophilia network,[374] including engaging in satanic ritual child sexual abuse and child sacrifice.[375] And as home of the USA Gymnastics, Indiana remains a hub for the pedo-network.

Conclusions

If America's top Olympic officials are in any way involved in organized sex trafficking of its child athletes or pre- and postgame sex slaves at its venues, routinely moving them across state and international borders for numerous decades, with at least one pending lawsuit already asserting this very contention with child athletes, it opens up a much wider examination and scrutiny to determine if the International Olympic Committee, the top of the pyramid monopoly franchise controlling world amateur child athletics, may also be a special subset within the larger planetary child sex trafficking network… only this one wears the coveted elite “Olympics brand” label. The power of this pyramid scheme is just as corrupt and no doubt just as pedophilia-saturated as the sexually blackmailed, thoroughly compromised global political system whereby virtually only pedo-puppet leaders of the world like the Bushes, Clintons, Obama, and Trump are preselected by the planetary rulers to do their evil bidding. Concealing his share of underage sexploits, the prospect that wrecking ball Trump’s just another compromised pedo-stooge figurehead installed and controlled by the same Zionist neocon puppet masters will be taken up further in the PedoGate update chapter.

Meanwhile, thoroughly established, irrefutable evidence confirms that this private pedo club of adrenochrome addicted planetary controllers is comprised of major top players from aristocratic and royalty bloodlines, secret societies, central banking, religion, government, the military, intelligence community, organized crime, high courts, law enforcement, child welfare and global charity organizations, media, entertainment and Fortune 500 corporations. All secretly working in synch together as foxes guarding their global pedo-henhouse, they are the globalized pedophilia cabal.

One common thread shared between the pedophilia scandal in Hollywood and all the sports scandals is the predatory groomers’ promise of fame, fortune and glory to entice vulnerable little kids as their victims by stoking and preying on their biggest hopes, dreams and aspirations. Of course another common thread is that this dynamic in the sports and entertainment industries is worldwide today. The globalized interlocking structure of this massive child raping network has its top level partners-in-crime centrally located in global centers around the world - London (banking), Brussels (continental government EU and military NATO), Rome (Catholic Church), Washington DC (military), New York (global governance UN, media and finance) and Los Angeles (media entertainment) all-encompassing national, continental and international hubs of control containing all of the above cabal players. So why wouldn't the pedo-cabal's worldwide amateur sports branch headquartered in Switzerland (IOC) and Colorado (USOC) tapping into 44 million athletic kids globally not be included? The facts as we move down the rabbit hole all indicate it already is.

Beyond question or doubt on top of what we currently know, deductive reasoning and logic would also conclude that top elite echelons within the planet-wide sports industry as birds-of-a-feather must also be active fellow pedo-participants. After all, what intrinsically binds and bonds all of these intertwining, overlapping, corrosively criminal elements is their worship of the same ungodly, demonic power of Lucifer. At this juncture in human history, evidence is far too incontrovertibly overwhelming to continue ignoring Lucifer's current ownership and control over this earthly dominion. At this late hour, ignorance and blindness continue at our own peril and self-destruction.

This chapter has demonstrated that all the international, regional and national sports organizations from top to bottom, global to local, are also steeped in this pedo-pandemic as well. In short, the elite's Luciferian machine that's been ruling over this earth for centuries is in fact the hidden-in-plain-sight pedophilia cabal. Yet with the Pandora's Box of scandals busted wide open over this last quarter century alone for all the world to finally see, on full display under the spotlight these primetime crime players' guilt has been outed and their savagely grotesque, perverse nakedness exposed like never before. For the sake of our defenseless children, now that we know what's been going on right under our noses for so long, it's high time we begin rescuing children from their slaughterhouses and finally hold these satanic evildoing baby killers accountable. Like their pedophilic overlord George HW Bush once confessed (in so many words), "If the people knew what we've been up to, they'd hang us from the nearest lampposts." By George you're right, you old gizzard lizard widower you! Your New World Disorder's coming after you while your cold blood's still pumping from your puny little heartless heart. You and your kin owe us citizens of the world one huge karmic debt to pay off for your lifelong human genocidal crime spree from JFK to 9/11 and far beyond.

And on that note, get ready UK, Europe, Australia and pedo-rings stretching to all four corners of this earth, because now that we the people are finally onto you, we're coming after all you child murdering rapists as well, starting with unraveling your exposed pedophilia cover-ups operating geographically outside America as this book's next section of chapters.

[1] Sylvie Parent and Karim El Himi, “Sexual Abuse of Young People in Sport,” *inspq.qc.ca*, November 2012, https://www.inspq.qc.ca/en/sexual-assault/fact-sheets/sexual-abuse-young-people-sport.

[2] Sylvie Parent and Karim El Himi, https://www.inspq.qc.ca/en/sexual-assault/fact-sheets/sexual-abuse-young-people-sport.

[3] “Child Sexual Abuse Statistics,” *loveourchildrenusa.org*, http://loveourchildrenusa.org/child_sexual_abuse_stats.php.

[4] “Child Sexual Abuse and Sports: Resources,” *CBS News*, June 20, 2015, https://www.cbsnews.com/news/child-sexual-abuse-in-sports-and-schools-resources/.

[5] Deborah Serani, “Sexual Abuse in Sports,” *Psychology Today*, December 1, 2011, https://www.psychologytoday.com/us/blog/two-takes-depression/201112/sexual-abuse-in-sports.

[6] Nancy Hogshead-Makar, “How to Stop Sexual Abuse in Sports,” *Athletic Business*, January 2018, https://www.athleticbusiness.com/athlete-safety/how-to-stop-sexual-abuse-in-sports.html.

[7] Lynn Zinser, “Coaching Gives Abusers Opportunity and Trust,” *The New York Times*, December 10, 2011, https://www.nytimes.com/2011/12/11/sports/culture-of-sports-works-against-children-especially-boys-reporting-abuse.html.

[8] Lynn Zinser, https://www.nytimes.com/2011/12/11/sports/culture-of-sports-works-against-children-especially-boys-reporting-abuse.html.

[9] T.J. Quinn and Greg Amante, “Sex Abuse Pervasive in USA Swimming,” *ESPN*, April 27, 2010, http://www.espn.com/espn/otl/news/story?id=5071820.

[10] Marc Bloom, “When Athletes are one Sex, and Coaches are another,” *The New York Times*, June 13, 1999, https://www.nytimes.com/1999/06/13/health/when-athletes-are-one-sex-and-coaches-are-the-other.html.

[11] Eric Adelson, “Why Sports and Sex Abuse too often Mix,” *The Post Game*, November 29, 2011, http://www.thepostgame.com/features/201111/how-widespread-sex-abuse-sports.

[12] Eric Adelson, http://www.thepostgame.com/features/201111/how-widespread-sex-abuse-sports.

[13] “Champion Women: Advocacy for Girls and Women in Sport,” *championwomen.org*, http://championwomen.org/.

[14] Nancy Hogshad-Makar, “How to top Sexual Abuse in Sports,” *Athletic Business*, January 2018, https://www.athleticbusiness.com/athlete-safety/how-to-stop-sexual-abuse-in-sports.html.

[15] Nancy Hogshad-Makar, https://www.athleticbusiness.com/athlete-safety/how-to-stop-sexual-abuse-in-sports.html.

[16] Mark F. Schwartz, Lori D. Galperin and William H. Masters, “Post-Traumatic Stress, Sexual Trauma and Dissociative Disorder: Issues related to Intimacy and Sexuality,” *National Criminal Justice Reference Service*, March 17, 1995, https://www.ncjrs.gov/pdffiles1/Photocopy/153416NC.

[17] Eric Adelson, http://www.thepostgame.com/features/201111/how-widespread-sex-abuse-sports.

[18] Lynn Zinser, https://www.nytimes.com/2011/12/11/sports/culture-of-sports-works-against-children-especially-boys-reporting-abuse.html.

[19] Tricia Leahy, “Sexual Abuse in Sport,” *Excerpt from Critical Essays in Applied Sport Psychology*, eds. David Gilbourne and Mark B. Andersen, http://www.humankinetics.com/excerpts/excerpts/sexualabuseinsport-excerpt.

[20] Saul Marks, Margo Mountjoy and Madalyn Marcus , “ Sexual Harassment and Abuse in Sport: The Role of the Team Doctor,” *British Journal of Sports Medicine*, 2012, 46, p.905-908, bjsm.bmj.com/content/bjsports/46/13/905.full.pdf.

[21] “Safe4Athletes History,” *safe4athletes.org*, http://safe4athletes.org/about-us/history.

[22] Emalie Marthe, “’He Threatened to take that all away’: When Coaches Sexually Assault Athletes, *Vice*, September 25, 2016, https://broadly.vice.com/en_us/article/qvdpm5/he-threatened-to-take-all-that-away-when-coaches-sexually-assault-athletes.

[23] Will Hobson and Steven Rich, “Every Six Weeks for more than 36 Years: When will Sex Abuse in Olympic Sports End?” *The Washington Post*, November 17, 2017, https://www.washingtonpost.com/sports/every-six-weeks-for-more-than-36-years-when-will-sex-abuse-in-olympic-sports-end/2017/11/17/286ae804-c88d-11e7-8321-481fd63f174d_story.html?utm_term=.4e93c0d81f51.

[24] Rachel Axon and Nancy Armour, “Martha, Bela Karolyi Defend Training Environment, say they didn't know about Abuse,” *USA Today*, April 22, 2018, https://www.usatoday.com/story/sports/olympics/2018/04/22/martha-bela-karolyi-defend-training-environment-usa-gymnastics/540869002/.

[25] Celia Brackenridge and Sandra Kirby, “Playing Safe: Assessing the Risk of Sexual Abuse to Elite Child Athletes,” *International Review for the Sociology of Sport*, June 23, 1997, https://pdfs.semanticscholar.org/a1fe/585a19259091.

[26] Marisa Kwiakowski and Tim Evans, “Ex-Gymnast Speaks out about her Abuse,” *Indy Star*, August 26, 2016, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/investigations/2016/08/26/kid-they-said-wasnt-worth/89339532/.

[27] Andreas Sten-Ziemons, “The Worrying Trend of Sexual Abuse in Sports,” *dw.com*, September 2, 2017, http://www.dw.com/en/the-worrying-trend-of-sexual-abuse-in-sports/a-37481528.

[28] Rachel Sturtz, “Unprotected,” *Outside*, November 2014, https://www.outsideonline.com/2162781/unprotected.

[29] Khaled Diab, “Catholic Schools: What’s in a Name,” *The Guardian*, October 8, 2010, https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/belief/2010/oct/08/catholic-schools-education-principle-pragmatism.

[30] Jere Longman, “Rogge’s Legacy Doesn’t Extend to the Oppressed,” *The New York Times*, September 9, 2013, https://www.nytimes.com/2013/09/10/sports/olympics/departing-ioc-president-missed-opportunities-on-human-rights.html.

[31] “IOC Members List,” *Olympic.org*, https://www.olympic.org/ioc-members-list.

[32] Andrew Jennings, "Meet the IOC, Ideal Candidates for a Perp Walk," *The Nation*, January 22, 2014, https://www.thenation.com/article/meet-ioc-ideal-candidates-perp-walk/.

[33] Russ Kick, "Fascist Photos of Former IOC President Juan Samaranch," *memoryhole2.org*, August 9, 2016, http://thememoryhole2.org/blog/samaranch-photos.

[34] "# 8,000: Mankind is more than this," *astrocohors.com*, January 23, 2018, http://www.astrocohors.com/2018/01/8000-mankind-is-more-than-this/.

[35] Robert Livingstone, "IOC Power Shift as Presidency Changes Hands," *gamesbids.com*, September 10, 2013, https://web.archive.org/web/20130914220752/http://www.gamesbids.com:80/eng/other_news/1216136767.html.

[36] Andrew Jennings, https://www.thenation.com/article/meet-ioc-ideal-candidates-perp-walk/.

[37] "Sheikh Ahmad Al-Fahad Al-Sabah," IOC Members, *Olympics.org*, https://www.olympic.org/sheikh-ahmad-al-fahad-al-sabah.

[38] Andy Brown, "Sheikh Ahmed's Resignation puts Pressure on FIFA and IOC," *The Sports Integrity Initiative*, May 1, 2017, http://www.sportsintegrityinitiative.com/sheikh-ahmads-resignation-puts-pressure-fifa-ioc/.

[39] Andrew Jennings, https://www.thenation.com/article/meet-ioc-ideal-candidates-perp-walk/.

[40] Craig Lord, "FINA Bosses Buffeted by FIFA Corruption as Kuwaiti Heir-Apparent is Accused," *swimvortex.com*, May 2, 2017, https://www.swimvortex.com/fina-bosses-buffeted-by-fifa-corruption-scandal-as-kuwaiti-heir-apparent-accused/.

[41] "Corruption Claim Hit FINA before World Event," *The Straits Times*, July 20, 2017, http://www.straitstimes.com/sport/corruption-claims-hit-fina-before-world-event.

[42] Simon Kuper, “Soccer’s Culture of Corruption,” *The New York Review of Books*, book review of *The Fall of the House of FIFA: The Multimillion-Dollar Corruption at the Heart of Global Soccer* by David Conn (NYC: Nation Books, 2017), http://www.nybooks.com/articles/2017/09/28/soccers-culture-of-corruption/.

[43] AFP, “Panama Firm Pleads Guilty in FIFA Corruption Scandal,” *The Tico Times*, February 22, 2018, http://www.ticotimes.net/2018/02/22/panama-firm-pleads-guilty-fifa-corruption-scandal-2.

[44] David Conn, “How the FBI Won ‘the World Cup of Fraud’ as FIFA Scandal Arrives in Court, *The Guardian*, November 6, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2017/nov/06/fifa-scandal-fbi-new-york-trial-chuck-blazer-sepp-blatter.

[45] Mary Papenfuss, “FIFA Cites Ethics Rules after Trump’s Threatening World Cup Tweet,” *Huffington Post*, April 27, 2018, https://www.huffingtonpost.com/entry/fifa-warns-trump-off-bullying-for-world-cup_us_5ae3bd2ae4b04aa23f233b90.

[46] Paul Kennedy, “Scorecard: Who’s Supporting Whom in World Cup Bid Race,” Soccer America Daily, April 19, 2018, https://www.socceramerica.com/publications/article/77583/scorecard-whos-supporting-whom-in-world-cup-2026.html.

[47] *The USA v. Jeffrey Webb et al*, F.2015R00747 (New York 2015), para. 75,

http://www.justice.gov/opa/file/450211/download.

[48] Andrew Keshner, “Panamanian Business Planned $500G Bribe to FIFA big Eduardo Li, *New York Daily News*,” February 22, 2018, http://www.nydailynews.com/sports/soccer/panamanian-business-planned-500g-bribe-fifa-big-eduardo-li-article-1.3834961.

[49] “Ex-Ecuador Soccer President Convicted in FIFA Graft Case,” *Daily Mail/Associated Press*, November 19, 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/wires/ap/article-3951788/Ex-Ecuador-soccer-president-convicted-FIFA-graft-case.html.

[50] Roger Gonzalez, “Swiss Banker details FIFA Corruption, Cites Bribes to Sepp Blatter Right-Hand Man,” *CBS News*, June 16, 2017, https://www.cbssports.com/soccer/news/swiss-banker-details-fifa-corruption-cites-bribes-to-sepp-blatter-right-hand-man/.

[51] Barry Petchesky, “Sepp Blatter Banned from Soccer for Eight Years,” *deadspin.com*, December 21, 2015, https://deadspin.com/sepp-blatter-banned-from-soccer-for-eight-years-1749048841.

[52] "Swiss Prosecutor Appeals for Cooperation on FIFA Case File," *USA Today/AP*, April 20, 2018, https://www.usatoday.com/story/sports/soccer/2018/04/20/swiss-prosecutor-appeals-for-cooperation-on-fifa-case-file/34032743//

[53] "Sepp Blatter: Hope Solo Accuses Ex-Fifa President of Sexual Harassment," *BBC*, November 10, 2017, https://www.bbc.com/sport/football/41950198.

[54] Andrew Jennings, https://www.thenation.com/article/meet-ioc-ideal-candidates-perp-walk/.

[55] Sam Byford, "King of Samsung: A Chairman's Reign of Cunning and Corruption," *The Verge*, November 30, 2012, https://www.theverge.com/2012/11/30/3709688/samsung-25-years-lee-kun-hee.

[56] "Mr. Kun-Hee Lee, *Olympic.org*, https://www.olympic.org/mr-kun-hee-lee.

[57] "The Release of Samsung's Boss Leaves South Koreans Exasperated," *The Economist*, February 8, 2018, https://www.economist.com/news/business/21736581-appeal-court-agreed-former-president-coerced-him-paying-bribe-release.

[58] Hyung-Jin Kim, "Another Former South Korean Leader Charged with Corruption," *ABC News/AP*, April 9, 2018, http://abcnews.go.com/International/wireStory/south-korean-leader-charged-corruption-54330705.

[59] Matt Stiles, "Ousted South Korean President Park Geun-hye is Sentenced to 24 Years in Prison," *Los Angeles Times*, April 6, 2018, http://www.latimes.com/world/la-fg-south-korea-park-sentenced-20180406-story.html.

[60] Oliver Holmes, "What is the US Military's Presence near North Korea?" *The Guardian*, August 9, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/us-news/2017/aug/09/what-is-the-us-militarys-presence-in-south-east-asia.

[61] Jae-Jung Suh, "Missile Defense and the Security Dilemma: THAAD, Japan's "Proactive Peace," and the Arms Race in Northeast Asia," The Asia-Pacific Journal, April 27, 2017, https://apjjf.org/2017/09/Suh.html.

[62] "Samsung Denies Pyeongchang Olympic Lobbying Allegation," *USA Today/AP*, April 16, 2018, https://www.usatoday.com/story/sports/olympics/2018/04/16/samsung-denies-pyeongchang-olympic-lobbying-allegation/33877893/.

[63] "IOC Statement on Mr. Lamine Diack," *olympic.org*, November 9, 2015, https://www.olympic.org/news/ioc-statement-on-mr-lamine-diack.

[64] Nick DeMarco, “After FIFA/IAAF Corruption – Time for Institutional Change,” *Sports Law Bulletin*, November 13, 2015, https://www.sportslawbulletin.org/after-fifaiaaf-corruption-time-for-institutional-change/.

[65] Andrew Jennings, https://www.thenation.com/article/meet-ioc-ideal-candidates-perp-walk/.

[66] Will Hobson and Steven Rich, https://www.washingtonpost.com/sports/every-six-weeks-for-more-than-36-years-when-will-sex-abuse-in-olympic-sports-end/2017/11/17/286ae804-c88d-11e7-8321-481fd63f174d_story.html?utm_term=.4e93c0d81f51.

[67] “International Gymnastics Federation,” *olympic.org*, https://www.olympic.org/international-gymnastics-federation.

[68] Will Hobson and Steven Rich, https://www.washingtonpost.com/sports/every-six-weeks-for-more-than-36-years-when-will-sex-abuse-in-olympic-sports-end/2017/11/17/286ae804-c88d-11e7-8321-481fd63f174d_story.html?utm_term=.4e93c0d81f51.

[69] Rachel Sturtz and Alex Heard, “Is the USOC Running a Sex Trafficking Ring?” *Outside Online*, May 4, 2018, https://www.outsideonline.com/2303571/us-olympic-committee-trafficking-ring.

[70] Rachel Sturtz and Alex Heard, https://www.outsideonline.com/2303571/us-olympic-committee-trafficking-ring.

[71] Rachel Sturtz and Alex Heard, https://www.outsideonline.com/2303571/us-olympic-committee-trafficking-ring.

[72] Rachel Sturtz and Alex Heard, https://www.outsideonline.com/2303571/us-olympic-committee-trafficking-ring.

[73] Rachel Sturtz and Alex Heard, https://www.outsideonline.com/2303571/us-olympic-committee-trafficking-ring.

[74] Diana Moskovitz, “Lawsuit: Rick Butler Sexually Abused Six Girls, Threatened their Careers to Keep them Quiet,” *Deadspin.com*, February 28, 2018, https://deadspin.com/lawsuit-rick-butler-sexually-abused-six-girls-threate-1823408713.

[75] Christian Red, “Lawsuit against AAU ongoing, but Youth Volleyball Coach Rick Butler Denies Abuse Allegations against him,” *New York Daily News*, April 25, 2017, http://www.nydailynews.com/sports/more-sports/suit-aau-ongoing-volleyball-coach-denies-abuse-allegations-article-1.3100489.

[76] Hannah Leone, “Junior Volleyball Association is latest Group to Ban Aurora Coach Rick Butler,” *Chicago Tribune*, February 12, 2018,

http://www.chicagotribune.com/suburbs/aurora-beacon-news/news/ct-abn-rick-butler-jva-ban-st-0212-20180212-story.html.

[77] Dominique Mosbergen, “Top Volleyball Coach Raped Girls Hundreds of Times, Lawsuit Alleges,” *Huffington Post*, March 1, 2018, https://www.huffingtonpost.com/entry/volleyball-coach-rape-lawsuit-rick-butler_us_5a97ca41e4b07dffeb6fd215.

[78] Bill Lukitsch, “Women Recount Abuse Allegations against Suburban Volleyball Coach Rick Butler in Senate Hearing,” *Chicago Tribune*, May 15, 2018, http://www.chicagotribune.com/news/local/politics/ct-met-illinois-legislature-rick-butler-20180515-story.html.

[79] Dominique Mosbergen, https://www.huffingtonpost.com/entry/volleyball-coach-rape-lawsuit-rick-butler_us_5a97ca41e4b07dffeb6fd215.

[80] Bill Lukitsch, http://www.chicagotribune.com/news/local/politics/ct-met-illinois-legislature-rick-butler-20180515-story.html.

[81] Molly Olmstead, “Report: Michigan State Kept Ties to Youth Volleyball Coach Accused of Sexual Abuse,” *Slate*, April 24, 2018, https://slate.com/news-and-politics/2018/04/michigan-state-youth-volleyball-coach-rick-butler.html.

[82] Will Hobson and Steven Rich, https://www.washingtonpost.com/sports/every-six-weeks-for-more-than-36-years-when-will-sex-abuse-in-olympic-sports-end/2017/11/17/286ae804-c88d-11e7-8321-481fd63f174d_story.html?utm_term=.4e93c0d81f51.

[83] “Pedophilia,” *Psychology Today*, https://www.psychologytoday.com/us/conditions/pedophilia.

[84] Ashley Harrell, “Jack and Diana,” *Broward Palm Beach New Times*, June 14, 2007, http://www.browardpalmbeach.com/news/jack-and-diana-6310159.

[85] Ashley Harrell, http://www.browardpalmbeach.com/news/jack-and-diana-6310159.

[86] Ashley Harrell, http://www.browardpalmbeach.com/news/jack-and-diana-6310159.

[87] Deidra Funcheon, “An Underage Sex Scandal Leads to South Florida Swimming Hall of Fame,” *Miami New Times*, June 5, 2014, http://www.miaminewtimes.com/news/an-underage-sex-scandal-leads-to-south-floridas-swimming-hall-of-fame-6395839.

[88] “Michael Phelps: The Most Decorated Olympian of All Time,” Olympic.org, https://www.olympic.org/michael-phelps.

[89] Haley Draznin, “Michael Phelps calls on US Olympic Committee to do more to Help Athletes Struggling with Depression,” *CNN*, March 30, 2018,

https://edition.cnn.com/2018/03/27/politics/michael-phelps-axe-files/.

[90] Scott M. Reid, “100s of USA Swimmers were Sexually Abused for Decades and the People in Charge Knew and Ignored it, Investigation Finds,” *The Orange County Register*, February 16, 2018, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[91] “When the Athlete is a Child: An Assessment of USA Swimming’s Safe Sport Program,” *GundersenHealth.org*, January 27, 2014, https://www.gundersenhealth.org/app/files/public/3/.

[92] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[93] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[94] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[95] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[96] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[97] Elliott Almond, “FBI, US Swimming Officials Talk on Abuse,” *The Mercury News*, October 22, 2014, https://www.mercurynews.com/2014/10/22/fbi-usa-swimming-officials-talk-on-abuse/.

[98] Joe Martino, “’High Ranking People’ Protected Hillary Clinton from being Indicted – the Truth is Coming out,” *Collective Evolution*, March 19, 2018, http://www.collective-evolution.com/2018/03/19/high-ranking-people-protected-hillary-clinton-from-being-indicted-the-truth-is-coming-out/.

[99] Tyler Durden, “Over Two Dozen Teen Gymnasts Molested by Larry Nassar while FBI Sat on Case,” *Zero Hedge*, February 24, 2018, https://www.zerohedge.com/news/2018-02-04/over-two-dozen-teen-gymnasts-molested-larry-nassar-while-fbi-sat-case.

[100] Wayne Madsen, “FBI Killed Franklin Scandal Investigator,” *rosanneworld.com/Wayne Madsen Report*, June 20, 2014, http://www.roseanneworld.com/2014/06/20/special-report-fbi-killed-franklin-scandal-investigator-wayne-madsen-report/.

[101] Joachim Hagopian, “Western State Sponsored Terrorism: False Flags Spreading Islamophobia, Race and Religious Wars and New World Disorder,” *Lew Rockwell.com*, December 25, 2015, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2015/12/joachim-hagopian/new-world-disorder-2/.

[102] Scott M. Reid, “Congress Investigating USA Swimming’s Handling of Sex Abuse Cases,” *The Orange County Register*, January 26, 2018, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/01/26/congress-investigating-usa-swimmings-handling-of-sex-abuse-cases/.

[103] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[104] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[105] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[106] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[107] Craig Lord, “Mark Schubert: ‘I Told USA Swimming Boss of Abuse Claims ‘Numerous Times,’” *swimvortex.com*, March 5, 2018, https://www.swimvortex.com/mark-schubert-i-told-usa-swimming-boss-of-abuse-claims-numerous-times-in-vain/.

[108] Scott McLean and Sarah Weisfelt, “Top USA Swimming Officials under Fire for Alleged Culture of Abuse,” *CNN*, February 24, 2018, https://edition.cnn.com/2018/02/24/us/usa-swimming-abuse-allegations/.

[109] Scott M. Reid, “USA Swimming Leaders Susan Woessner and Pat Hogan Forced out Following Reporting on Sexual Abuse,” *The Orange County Register*, February 22, 2018, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/22/usa-swimming-leaders-susan-woessner-and-pat-hogan-forced-out-following-reporting-on-sexual-abuse/.

[110] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[111] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[112] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[113] Carly Geehr, “USA Swimming Passes Legislation Restricting Coach-Swimmer Relationships,” *swimswam.com*, September 14, 2013, https://swimswam.com/breaking-usa-swimming-passes-legislation-banning-coach-swimmer-marriages/.

[114] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[115] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[116] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[117] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[118] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[119] Rob Trucks, “Sexual Abuse in Women’s Sports Part II: Gold Medalist Deena Deardurff-Schmidt,” Vice, June 13, 2014, https://sports.vice.com/en_us/article/gv73qj/sexual-abuse-in-womens-sports-part-ii-gold-medalist-deena-deardurff-schmidt.

[120] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[121] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[122] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[123] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[124] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[125] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[126] Scott M. Reid, “USA Swimming Works to Contain Child Sex-Abuse Scandals,” *The Orange County Register*, August 30, 2013, https://www.ocregister.com/2013/08/30/usa-swimming-works-to-contain-sex-abuse-scandals/.

[127] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[128] Alanna Vagianos, “Explosive Report says USA Swimming Covered up Hundreds of Sexual Abuse Cases,” *Huffington Post*, February 19, 2018, https://www.huffingtonpost.com/entry/usa-swimming-sexual-abuse_us_5a8ad81fe4b004fc3194c4b2.

[129] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[130] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[131] “Former Olympic Hopefuls say Swimming Coaches Sexually Abused them,” *Inside Edition*, February 2, 2018, https://www.insideedition.com/former-olympic-hopefuls-say-swimming-coaches-sexually-abused-them-40391.

[132] “Former Olympic Hopefuls say Swimming Coaches Sexually Abused them, https://www.insideedition.com/former-olympic-hopefuls-say-swimming-coaches-sexually-abused-them-40391

[133] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[134] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[135] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[136] “Former Olympic Hopefuls say Swimming Coaches Sexually Abused them,” https://www.insideedition.com/former-olympic-hopefuls-say-swimming-coaches-sexually-abused-them-40391.

[137] “Sexual Abuse in Women’s Sports, Part V: Ex-Swimmer Jancy Thompson,” Jancy Thompson interviewed by Rob Trucks, *Vice*, June 20, 2014, https://sports.vice.com/en_us/article/yp8z97/sexual-abuse-in-womens-sports-part-v-ex-swimmer-jancy-thompson.

[138] Scott McLean and Sarah Weisfelt, https://edition.cnn.com/2018/02/24/us/usa-swimming-abuse-allegations/.

[139] “Sexual Abuse in Women’s Sports, Part V: Ex-Swimmer Jancy Thompson,” https://sports.vice.com/en_us/article/yp8z97/sexual-abuse-in-womens-sports-part-v-ex-swimmer-jancy-thompson.

[140] “Jancy Thompson: Repressing My Memories wasn’t a Choice,” *keepkidssafe.org*, http://keepkidssafe.org/jancy-thompson-repressing-my-memories-wasnt-a-choice/.

[141] “Sexual Abuse in Women’s Sports, Part V: Ex-Swimmer Jancy Thompson,” https://sports.vice.com/en_us/article/yp8z97/sexual-abuse-in-womens-sports-part-v-ex-swimmer-jancy-thompson.

[142] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[143] “Sexual Abuse in Women’s Sports, Part V: Ex-Swimmer Jancy Thompson,” https://sports.vice.com/en_us/article/yp8z97/sexual-abuse-in-womens-sports-part-v-ex-swimmer-jancy-thompson.

[144] Scott M. Reid, “Swimmer Asks USA Swimming to Ban Coach after Sexual Abuse Allegations,” *The Orange County Register*, November 25, 2014, https://www.ocregister.com/2014/11/25/swimmer-asks-usa-swimming-to-ban-coach-after-sexual-abuse-allegations/.

[145] David Adams, “USA Swimming Reportedly Ignored or Concealed 100s of Cases of Sexual Abuse,” *Pedestrian*, February 19, 2018, https://www.pedestrian.tv/sport/usa-swimming-abuse-allegations/.

[146] Kaylen Ralph, “Where are all the Female Head Coaches?” *Glamour*, March 29, 2018, https://www.glamour.com/story/elite-swimming-has-a-coaching-problem.

[147] Yvonne Wenger, “Former Swim Coach Sentenced for Child Abuse,” *The Baltimore Sun*, May 23, 2013, http://articles.baltimoresun.com/2013-05-23/news/bs-md-rick-curl-sentenced-20130523_1_former-swim-coach-rick-curl-curl-burke-swim-club.

[148] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/01/26/congress-investigating-usa-swimmings-handling-of-sex-abuse-cases/.

[149] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/01/26/congress-investigating-usa-swimmings-handling-of-sex-abuse-cases/.

[150] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/01/26/congress-investigating-usa-swimmings-handling-of-sex-abuse-cases/.

[151] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/01/26/congress-investigating-usa-swimmings-handling-of-sex-abuse-cases/.

[152] Craig Lord, https://www.swimvortex.com/mark-schubert-i-told-usa-swimming-boss-of-abuse-claims-numerous-times-in-vain/.

[153] Kelly Whiteside, “Hall of Fame Rescinds Chuck Wielgus’ Invite amid Sexual Abuse Allegations,” *USA Today*, June 2, 2014, https://www.usatoday.com/story/sports/olympics/2014/06/02/chuck-wielgus-usa-swimming-hall-of-fame/9893275/.

[154] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/01/26/congress-investigating-usa-swimmings-handling-of-sex-abuse-cases/.

[155] “List of Individuals Permanently Suspended or Ineligible for Membership,” *usswimming.org*, https://usaswimming.org/utility/landing-pages/safe-sport/banned-member-list---perm.

[156] Levi Pulkkinen, “Seattle Olympian: My Coach Abused me on USA Swimming’s Watch,” *The Seattle Post-Intelligencer*, February 8, 2018, https://www.seattlepi.com/seattlenews/article/Ariana-Kukors-Sean-Hutchison-Coach-Sex-Abuse-12560109.php.

[157] Olivia Messer, “Olympian Ariana Kukors Claims Swim Coach Called Sex a ‘Gift’ for her 18th Birthday,” *The Daily Beast*, February 9, 2018, https://www.thedailybeast.com/olympian-ariana-kukors-swim-coach-called-sex-a-gift-for-her-18th-birthday.

[158] Ariana Kukors, “My Story,” *arianakukor.com*, February 9, 2018, https://www.arianajkukors.com/mystory.

[159] Scott McLean and Sarah Weisfelt, https://edition.cnn.com/2018/02/24/us/usa-swimming-abuse-allegations/.

[160] Ariana Kukors, https://www.arianajkukors.com/mystory.

[161] Scott McLean and Sarah Weisfelt, https://edition.cnn.com/2018/02/24/us/usa-swimming-abuse-allegations/.

[162] *People of the State of California v. Andrew King* Sentencing Statement, *Outside Magazine*, November 19, 2009, https://www.outsideonline.com/node/2245381.

[163] Linda Goldson, “Ex-Swim Coach Andrew King Impregnated 14-year-old, Court Documents say,” *San Jose Mercury News*, November 19, 2009, https://www.mercurynews.com/2009/11/19/ex-swim-coach-andrew-king-impregnated-14-year-old-court-documents-say/.

[164] Linda Goldson, https://www.mercurynews.com/2009/11/19/ex-swim-coach-andrew-king-impregnated-14-year-old-court-documents-say/.

[165] Jennifer Sullivan, “$1.5M Settlement in Woman’s Claim of 1990s Sex Abuse by Swim Coach,” *Seattle Times*, June 3, 2012, https://www.seattletimes.com/seattle-news/15m-settlement-in-womans-claim-of-1990s-sex-abuse-by-swim-coach/.

[166] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/22/usa-swimming-leaders-susan-woessner-and-pat-hogan-forced-out-following-reporting-on-sexual-abuse/

[167] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/16/investigation-usa-swimming-ignored-sexual-abuse-for-decades/.

[168] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/22/usa-swimming-leaders-susan-woessner-and-pat-hogan-forced-out-following-reporting-on-sexual-abuse/.

[169] Will Hobson and Steven Rich, https://www.washingtonpost.com/sports/every-six-weeks-for-more-than-36-years-when-will-sex-abuse-in-olympic-sports-end/2017/11/17/286ae804-c88d-11e7-8321-481fd63f174d_story.html?utm_term=.4e93c0d81f51.

[170] Rob Trucks, https://sports.vice.com/en_us/article/gv73qj/sexual-abuse-in-womens-sports-part-ii-gold-medalist-deena-deardurff-schmidt.

[171] Will Hobson and Steven Rich, https://www.washingtonpost.com/sports/every-six-weeks-for-more-than-36-years-when-will-sex-abuse-in-olympic-sports-end/2017/11/17/286ae804-c88d-11e7-8321-481fd63f174d_story.html?utm_term=.4e93c0d81f51.

[172] Will Hobson and Steven Rich, https://www.washingtonpost.com/sports/every-six-weeks-for-more-than-36-years-when-will-sex-abuse-in-olympic-sports-end/2017/11/17/286ae804-c88d-11e7-8321-481fd63f174d_story.html?utm_term=.4e93c0d81f51.

[173] Will Hobson and Steven Rich, https://www.washingtonpost.com/sports/every-six-weeks-for-more-than-36-years-when-will-sex-abuse-in-olympic-sports-end/2017/11/17/286ae804-c88d-11e7-8321-481fd63f174d_story.html?utm_term=.4e93c0d81f51.

[174] Will Hobson and Steven Rich, https://www.washingtonpost.com/sports/every-six-weeks-for-more-than-36-years-when-will-sex-abuse-in-olympic-sports-end/2017/11/17/286ae804-c88d-11e7-8321-481fd63f174d_story.html?utm_term=.4e93c0d81f51.

[175] David Rieder, “Memo Sent to Congress Demanding USOC CEO Scott Blackmun Resign for Failure to Protect Athletes,” *Swimming World Magazine*, February 22, 2018, https://www.swimmingworldmagazine.com/news/memo-sent-to-congress-demanding-usoc-ceo-scott-blackmun-resign-for-failure-to-protect-athletes/.

[176] Will Hobson and Steven Rich, https://www.washingtonpost.com/sports/every-six-weeks-for-more-than-36-years-when-will-sex-abuse-in-olympic-sports-end/2017/11/17/286ae804-c88d-11e7-8321-481fd63f174d_story.html?utm_term=.4e93c0d81f51.

[177] Lindsay Gibbs, “Congress Passes Bill to Protect Amateur Athletes from Sex Abuse,” *Think Progress*, January 30, 2018, https://thinkprogress.org/congress-bill-abuse-victims-d50642f8723e/.

[178] Stephanie Kirchgaessner, “Catholic Bishops not Obliged to Report Child Abuse, Vatican Says,” *The Guardian*, February 10, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2016/feb/10/catholic-bishops-not-obliged-report-clerical-child-abuse-vatican-says.

[179] “Bill Incited by Nassar Case Concerns Catholic Church,” *Michigan Radio/Associated Press*, February 27, 2018, http://michiganradio.org/post/bill-incited-nassar-case-concerns-catholic-church.

[180] Beth LeBlanc, “House Questions Impact of Post-Nassar Statute of Limitations Bills,” *The Detroit News*, May 8, 2018, https://www.detroitnews.com/story/news/politics/michigan/2018/05/08/house-panel-impact-post-nassar-bills/590183002/.

[181] Alanna Vagianos, https://www.huffingtonpost.com/entry/usa-swimming-sexual-abuse_us_5a8ad81fe4b004fc3194c4b2.

[182] Tim Evans, Marisa Kwiatkowski and Mark Alesia, “Safe Sport Center: Is it the Answer to Athlete Sex Abuse?” *Indy Star*, March 8, 2017, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/2017/03/08/safesport-center-answer-athlete-sex-abuse/98775554/.

[183] Will Hobson and Steven Rich, https://www.washingtonpost.com/sports/every-six-weeks-for-more-than-36-years-when-will-sex-abuse-in-olympic-sports-end/2017/11/17/286ae804-c88d-11e7-8321-481fd63f174d_story.html?utm_term=.4e93c0d81f51.

[184] United States Olympic Committee Handbook, revised March 2012, https://usagym.org/pages/education/safesport/pdfs/.

[185] Will Hobson and Steven Rich, https://www.washingtonpost.com/sports/every-six-weeks-for-more-than-36-years-when-will-sex-abuse-in-olympic-sports-end/2017/11/17/286ae804-c88d-11e7-8321-481fd63f174d_story.html?utm_term=.4e93c0d81f51.

[186] Lindsay Gibbs, https://thinkprogress.org/congress-bill-abuse-victims-d50642f8723e/.

[187] ”US House Approves Legislation Meant to Protect Young Athletes from Abuse,” *Jurist*, January 31, 2018, http://www.jurist.org/paperchase/2018/01/us-house-approves-legislation-meant-to-protect-young-athletes-from-abuse.php.

[188] Kaylen Ralph, https://www.glamour.com/story/elite-swimming-has-a-coaching-problem.

[189] Casey Schwartz, “What Science Reveals about Pedophilia,” *The Daily Beast*, December 7, 2011, https://www.thedailybeast.com/what-science-reveals-about-pedophilia.

[190] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/01/26/congress-investigating-usa-swimmings-handling-of-sex-abuse-cases/.

[191] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/01/26/congress-investigating-usa-swimmings-handling-of-sex-abuse-cases/.

[192] Mike Rowbottom, “USOC and USA Gymnastics Officials called by US House of Representatives to Address "Potentially Systemic" Sexual Abuse,” *Inside the Games*, May 4, 2018, https://www.insidethegames.biz/articles/1064684/usoc-and-usa-gymnastics-officials-called-by-us-house-of-representatives-to-address-potentially-systemic-sexual-abuse.

[193] Mike Chiari, “USA Swimming CEO Issues Statement amid Reports of Rampant Sexual Misconduct,” *bleacherreport.com*, http://bleacherreport.com/articles/2760948-usa-swimming-ceo-issues-statement-amid-reports-of-rampant-sexual-misconduct.

[194] Chris DeSantis, “Tim Hinchey’s Big Moment is coming,” *chrisdcoach.com*, April 24, 2018, http://chrisdcoach.com/blog/2018/4/24/tim-hincheys-big-moment-is-coming.

[195] Irvin Muchnick, “Sarah Ehekircher, Long-Time Coach, tells of her Youth Grooming and Abuse by Scott MacFarland, her ‘Revictimization’ by USA Swimming’s 2010 Investigation, and her Sexual Harassment by American Swimming Coaches Association Boss John Leonard,” *concussioninc.org*, March 6, 2018, http://concussioninc.net/?p=12656.

[196] Irvin Muchnick, “Sarah Ehekircher, Who Just Got Scott MacFarland Booted From Swimming 30+ Years After He Groomed and Abused Her, Is Talking With Congressional Investigators About the Bigger Picture,” *concussioninc.org*, May 13, 2018, http://concussioninc.net/?p=12907.

[197] Irvin Muchnick, http://concussioninc.net/?p=12656.

[198] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/01/26/congress-investigating-usa-swimmings-handling-of-sex-abuse-cases/.

[199] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/01/26/congress-investigating-usa-swimmings-handling-of-sex-abuse-cases/.

[200] Scott M. Reid, "Head of U.S. Olympic Committee Resigns amid Sex Abuse Scandals in Gymnastics, Swimming," *The Orange County Register*, February 28, 2018, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/28/head-of-u-s-olympic-committee-resigns-amid-sex-abuse-scandals-in-gymnastics-swimming/.

[201] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/28/head-of-u-s-olympic-committee-resigns-amid-sex-abuse-scandals-in-gymnastics-swimming/.

[202] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/28/head-of-u-s-olympic-committee-resigns-amid-sex-abuse-scandals-in-gymnastics-swimming/.

[203] Will Hobson and Steven Rich, https://www.washingtonpost.com/sports/every-six-weeks-for-more-than-36-years-when-will-sex-abuse-in-olympic-sports-end/2017/11/17/286ae804-c88d-11e7-8321-481fd63f174d_story.html?utm_term=.4e93c0d81f51.

[204] "USA Gymnastics sets up Fund for Athletes Abused by Larry Nassar," *Michigan Radio/AP*, February 8, 2018, http://michiganradio.org/post/usa-gymnastics-sets-fund-athletes-abused-larry-nassar.

[205] Kate Wells, "MSU Started a $10 Million Therapy Fund for Nassar Victims. Here's how that's going," *Michigan Radio*, March 8, 2018, http://michiganradio.org/post/msu-started-10-million-therapy-fund-nassar-victims-heres-how-thats-going.

[206] "USA Gymnastics Head Resigns amid Pressure over Handling of Abuse Cases," *The Guardian/Associated Press*, March 16, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/sport/2017/mar/16/usa-gymnastics-president-steve-penny-resigns.

[207] Rachel Axon and Nancy Armour, "Entire USA Gymnastics Board Resigns in Wake of Larry Nassar Scandal," *USA Today*, January 31, 2018, https://www.usatoday.com/story/sports/olympics/2018/01/31/entire-usa-gymnastics-board-resigns-usoc-larry-nassar-scandal/1082855001/.

[208] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/02/28/head-of-u-s-olympic-committee-resigns-amid-sex-abuse-scandals-in-gymnastics-swimming/.

[209] Bryan Armen Graham, "Why don't we Care about the Biggest Sex Abuse Scandal in Sports History?" *The Guardian*, December 16, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/sport/2017/dec/16/gymnastics-larry-nassar-sexual-abuse.

[210] Eric Levenson, "This Gymnast is now the first Man to Accuse Larry Nassar of Abuse," *CNN*, March 6, 2018, https://edition.cnn.com/2018/03/05/us/larry-nassar-male-victim/.

[211] “USA Gymnastics Doctor Larry Nassar Abused at least 265 Women and Girls, Court Told,” *The Telegraph*, February 1, 2018, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2018/02/01/usa-gymnastics-doctor-larry-nassar-abused-least-265-women-girls/.

[212] Tim Evans, Mark Alesia and Marisa Kwiatkowski, “Former USA Gymnastics Doctor Accused of Abuse,” *Indy Star*, September 12, 2016, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/2016/09/12/former-usa-gymnastics-doctor-accused-abuse/89995734/.

[213] Jason Pohl, “Larry Nassar at Arizona Prison where Elizabeth Smart Kidnapper and Mafia Hit Man Reside,” *AZ Central*, February 10, 2018, https://www.azcentral.com/story/news/local/arizona/2018/02/10/larry-nassar-arizona-prison-where-elizabeth-smart-kidnapper-and-mafia-hit-man-reside/326417002/.

[214] “Who is Larry Nassar?” *Lansing State Journal*, https://www.lansingstatejournal.com/pages/interactives/larry-nassar-timeline/.

[215] Dan Murphy, “Four new Complaints Filed against Larry Nassar, Including one Dating to ’92,” *ESPN*, April 20, 2017, http://www.espn.com/olympics/story/_/id/19191934/new-complaints-larry-nassar-allege-sexual-abuse-dates-1992.

[216] James Dator, “A Comprehensive Timeline of the Larry Nassar Case,” *SB Nation*, updated May 16, 2018, https://www.sbnation.com/2018/1/19/16900674/larry-nassar-abuse-timeline-usa-gymnastics-michigan-state.

[217] Bill Hutchinson, “Olympic Star says her Gymnastics Dream took Nightmarish Turn after Sexual Abuse by Larry Nassar,” *ABC News*, January 26, 2018, https://abcnews.go.com/Sports/olympic-star-gymnastics-dream-nightmarish-turn-sexual-abuse/story?id=52605067.

[218] James Dator, https://www.sbnation.com/2018/1/19/16900674/larry-nassar-abuse-timeline-usa-gymnastics-michigan-state.

[219] Julie Mack and Emily Lawler, “MSU Doctor’s alleged Victims Talked for 20 years. Was anyone Listening?” *M Live*, February 8, 2018, http://www.mlive.com/news/index.ssf/page/msu_doctor_alleged_sexual_assault.html.

[220] John Barr and Dan Murphy, “Nassar Surrounded by Adults who Enabled his Predatory Behavior,” *ESPN*, January 16, 2018, http://www.espn.com/espn/otl/story/_/id/22046031/michigan-state-university-doctor-larry-nassar-surrounded-enablers-abused-athletes-espn.

[221] John Barr, “USA Gymnastics Suspends Former Olympic Coach with Ties to Larry Nassar,” *ESPN*, January 23, 2018,

http://www.espn.com/espn/otl/story/_/id/22181248/usa-gymnastics-suspends-former-olympics-coach-john-geddert-tied-larry-nassar.

[222] John Barr and Dan Murphy, http://www.espn.com/espn/otl/story/_/id/22046031/michigan-state-university-doctor-larry-nassar-surrounded-enablers-abused-athletes-espn.

[223] John Barr, http://www.espn.com/espn/otl/story/_/id/22181248/usa-gymnastics-suspends-former-olympics-coach-john-geddert-tied-larry-nassar.

[224] John Barr and Dan Murphy, http://www.espn.com/espn/otl/story/_/id/22046031/michigan-state-university-doctor-larry-nassar-surrounded-enablers-abused-athletes-espn.

[225] Majlie De Puy Kamp, “A Gym Built on Fear,” CNN, March 29, 2018, http://edition.cnn.com/interactive/2018/03/investigates/john-geddert-abuse/.

[226] John Barr and Dan Murphy, http://www.espn.com/espn/otl/story/_/id/22046031/michigan-state-university-doctor-larry-nassar-surrounded-enablers-abused-athletes-espn.

[227] John Barr and Dan Murphy, http://www.espn.com/espn/otl/story/_/id/22046031/michigan-state-university-doctor-larry-nassar-surrounded-enablers-abused-athletes-espn.

[228] Majlie De Puy Kamp, http://edition.cnn.com/interactive/2018/03/investigates/john-geddert-abuse/.

[229] Majlie De Puy Kamp, http://edition.cnn.com/interactive/2018/03/investigates/john-geddert-abuse/.

[230] Majlie De Puy Kamp, http://edition.cnn.com/interactive/2018/03/investigates/john-geddert-abuse/.

[231] Majlie De Puy Kamp, http://edition.cnn.com/interactive/2018/03/investigates/john-geddert-abuse/.

[232] Majlie De Puy Kamp, http://edition.cnn.com/interactive/2018/03/investigates/john-geddert-abuse/.

[233] Majlie De Puy Kamp, http://edition.cnn.com/interactive/2018/03/investigates/john-geddert-abuse/.

[234] Kim Kozlowski, “What MSU Knew: 14 were Warned of Nassar Abuse,” *Detroit News*, January 18, 2018, https://www.detroitnews.com/story/tech/2018/01/18/msu-president-told-nassar-complaint-2014/1042071001/.

[235] Matt Mencarini, “3rd Allegation Emerges against Ex-MSU Gymnastics Coach,” *Detroit Free Press*, February 15, 2017,

https://www.freep.com/story/news/local/michigan/2017/02/15/kathie-klages-msu-gymnastics-coach/97958394/.

[236] Matt Mencarini, “MSU Gymnastics Coach Klages Retires amid more Allegations,”

[237] Eric Lacy and RJ Wolcott, “Timeline: Michigan State and its Handling of Sexual Assault Cases*,” Lansing State Journal*, March 27, 2018, https://www.lansingstatejournal.com/story/news/local/2018/03/27/michigan-state-university-timeline/336540002/.

[238] Julie Mack, “’I will never be the same,’ Larry Nassar's Victims Confront him at Sentencing Hearing,” *M Live*, January 17, 2018, http://www.mlive.com/news/index.ssf/2018/01/nassar_sentencing_victims.html.

[239] James Dator, “A Comprehensive Timeline of the Larry Nassar Case,” *SB Nation*, January 19, 2018, https://www.sbnation.com/2018/1/19/16900674/larry-nassar-abuse-timeline-usa-gymnastics-michigan-state.

[240] James Dator, “A Comprehensive Timeline of the Larry Nassar Case,” *SB Nation*, January 19, 2018, https://www.sbnation.com/2018/1/19/16900674/larry-nassar-abuse-timeline-usa-gymnastics-michigan-state.

[241] Tim Evans, Mark Alesia and Marisa Kwiatkowski, “A Blind Eye to Sex Abuse: How USA Gymnastics Failed to Report Cass,” Indy Star, August 4, 2016, https://www.usatoday.com/story/news/investigations/2016/08/04/usa-gymnastics-sex-abuse-protected-coaches/85829732/.

[242] Tim Evans, Mark Alesia and Marisa Kwiatkowski, “Former USA Gymnastics Doctor Accused of Abuse,” *Indy Star*, September 12, 2016, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/2016/09/12/former-usa-gymnastics-doctor-accused-abuse/89995734/.

[243] John Barr and Dan Murphy, http://www.espn.com/espn/otl/story/_/id/22046031/michigan-state-university-doctor-larry-nassar-surrounded-enablers-abused-athletes-espn.

[244] Tracy Connor, “Larry Nassar gets another 40 to 125 Years in Sex Abuse Case,” *NBC News*, February 5, 2018, https://www.nbcnews.com/news/us-news/larry-nassar-gets-another-40-125-years-sex-abuse-case-n844676.

[245] “Lawrence Nassar Sentenced to 60 Years in Federal Prison,” U.S. Attorney’s Office, Western District of Michigan, US Department of Justice, *justice.gov/usao-wdmi*, December 7, 2017, https://www.justice.gov/usao-wdmi/pr/2017_1207_Nassar.

[246] Beth LeBlanc, “2004 Police Report: Teen Felt ‘Uncomfortable,’ ‘Scared’ after Nassar Appointment,” *Lansing State Journal*, January 30, 2018, https://www.lansingstatejournal.com/story/news/local/2018/01/30/meridian-twp-apologize-woman-whose-nassar-complaint-never-sent-prosecutors/1078230001/.

[247] Eric Lacy and RJ Wolcott, https://www.lansingstatejournal.com/story/news/local/2018/03/27/michigan-state-university-timeline/336540002/.

[248] Eric Lacy and RJ Wolcott, https://www.lansingstatejournal.com/story/news/local/2018/03/27/michigan-state-university-timeline/336540002/.

[249] Luis Sanchez, “McKayla Maroney says she told Coach about Larry Nassar’s Abuse in 2011,” *The Hill*, April 22, 2018, http://thehill.com/blogs/blog-briefing-room/384369-mckayla-maroney-says-she-told-coach-about-larry-nassars-abuse-in.

[250] “US Gymnast says she spoke of Sexual Abuse 5 years before Team Doctor's Arrest, *The 42*, April 23, 2018, http://www.the42.ie/us-gymnast-says-spoke-of-sexual-abuse-5-years-before-team-doctors-arrest-3974386-Apr2018/.

[251] “Silent No More,” 2018 *NBC Dateline* documentary, Part 1, April 22, 2018, https://www.nbcnews.com/dateline/video/full-episode-silent-no-more-1216751171891.

[252] Sarah Fitzpatrick and Tracy Connor, “McKayla Maroney says Larry Nassar Molested her ‘Hundreds of Times,” *NBC News*, April 18, 2018, https://www.nbcnews.com/news/us-news/mckayla-maroney-says-larry-nassar-molested-her-hundreds-times-n866926?cid=sm_npd_nn_tw_ma?cid=sm_npd_nn_tw_ma.

[253] “Silent No More,” https://www.nbcnews.com/dateline/video/full-episode-silent-no-more-1216751171891.

[254] “Silent No More,” https://www.nbcnews.com/dateline/video/full-episode-silent-no-more-1216751171891.

[255] “Silent No More,” *NBC Dateline* documentary, Part 3, April 22, 2018, https://www.nbcnews.com/dateline/video/silent-no-more-part-3-1216754755844.

[256] “Silent No More,” https://www.nbcnews.com/dateline/video/silent-no-more-part-3-1216754755844.

[257] Ann Killion, “At last, Gymnast Vindicated for Speaking out against Abuse,” *San Francisco Chronicle*, March 10, 2018, https://www.sfchronicle.com/sports/article/At-last-gymnast-vindicated-for-speaking-out-12743982.php.

[258] Jan Casarez and Laura Nolan, “Karolyis say they Knew nothing of Nassar’s Abuse at their Ranch,” CNN, March 29, 2018, https://edition.cnn.com/2018/03/28/us/karolyi-depositions/.

[259] Morgan Winsor, “Gymnast Mattie Larson says she purposely Injured herself to Avoid Toxic Atmosphere,” *ABC News*, January 25, 2018, https://abcnews.go.com/US/gymnast-mattie-larson-purposely-injured-avoid-toxic-atmosphere/story?id=52600778.

[260] “Silent No More,” https://www.nbcnews.com/dateline/video/silent-no-more-part-3-1216754755844.

[261] “Silent No More,” *NBC Dateline* documentary, Part 2, April 22, 2018, https://www.nbcnews.com/dateline/video/silent-no-more-part-2-1216753731674.

[262] “Silent No More,” https://www.nbcnews.com/dateline/video/silent-no-more-part-3-1216754755844.

[263] Tom Schad, “McKayla Maroney says Larry Nassar Molested her ‘Hundreds of Times,” *USA Today*, April 22, 2018,

[264] Scott M. Reid, “McKayla Maroney alleges in Civil Suit that Team Doctor Larry Nassar took Pornographic Photos of her,” *Orange County Register*, December 20, 2017, https://www.ocregister.com/2017/12/20/mckayla-maroney-alleges-in-civil-suit-that-nassar-took-pornographic-photos-of-her/.

[265] Will Hobson, “Doctor at Center of USA Gymnastics Scandal left Warning Signs at Michigan State,” *The Washington Post*, April 25, 2017, https://www.washingtonpost.com/sports/olympics/doctor-at-center-of-usa-gymnastics-scandal-left-warning-signs-at-michigan-state/2017/04/25/eed48834-2530-11e7-a1b3-faff0034e2de_story.html?utm_term=.ca276706a312.

[266] Asher Fair, “Aly Raisman Reveals what NBC Omitted from her Interview,” *Sportskeeta*, April 26, 2018, https://www.sportskeeda.com/gymnastics/aly-raisman-reveals-nbc-omitted-interview.

[267] Laurel Wamsley, “Olympic Gymnast McKayla Maroney says she Was Molested for Years by Team Doctor,” *NPR*, October 18, 2017, https://www.npr.org/sections/thetwo-way/2017/10/18/558617663/olympic-gymnast-mckayla-maroney-says-she-was-molested-for-years-by-team-doctor.

[268] Liriel Higa, “U.S.A. Gymnastics still Values Medals more than Girls,” *The New York Times*, January 23, 2018, https://www.nytimes.com/2018/01/23/opinion/usa-gymnastics-abuse-nassar.html.

[269] Tom Lutz, “Simone Biles: I was Sexually Abused by USA Gymnastics Doctor Larry Nassar,” *The Guardian*, January 15, 2018,

https://www.theguardian.com/sport/2018/jan/15/simone-biles-larry-nassar-sexual-abuse-allegations-usa-gymnastics.

[270] Tracy Connor, “McKayla Maroney says that Dr. Larry Nassar Molested her in #MeToo Post,” *NBC News*, October 18, 2017, https://www.nbcnews.com/news/us-news/olympic-gymnast-mckayla-maroney-says-dr-larry-nassar-molested-her-n811766.

[271] Tracy Connor, https://www.nbcnews.com/news/us-news/olympic-gymnast-mckayla-maroney-says-dr-larry-nassar-molested-her-n811766.

[272] Bob Hille, “USA Gymnastics ‘Engaged in Systematic Cover-up’ of Predatory Doctor, McKayla Maroney Suit Claims,” *Sporting News*, December 20, 2017, http://www.sportingnews.com/other-sports/news/usa-gymnastics-cover-up-larry-nassar-mckayla-maroney-sexual-predator/hyywh8swwyvx14wruyym2dcum.

[273] Bob Hille, http://www.sportingnews.com/other-sports/news/usa-gymnastics-cover-up-larry-nassar-mckayla-maroney-sexual-predator/hyywh8swwyvx14wruyym2dcum.

[274] Liriel Higa, https://www.nytimes.com/2018/01/23/opinion/usa-gymnastics-abuse-nassar.html.

[275] “USA Gymnastics Statement Regarding McKayla Maroney,” *usagym.org*, https://usagym.org/pages/post.html?PostID=21191&prog=h.

[276] Scott M. Reid, “Maggie Nichols, first Nassar Whistleblower, goes Public,” Orange County Register, January 9, 2018, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/01/09/maggie-nichols-first-nassar-whistle-blower-goes-public/.

[277] Dan Murphy, “Larry Nasser Kept Seeing Patients during 19-month Police Investigation, *ESPN*, December 27, 2017, http://www.espn.com/college-sports/story/_/id/21826452/larry-nassar-kept-seeing-patients-19-month-michigan-state-university-police-investigation.

[278] Tracy Connor, https://www.nbcnews.com/news/us-news/olympic-gymnast-mckayla-maroney-says-dr-larry-nassar-molested-her-n811766.

[279] Tim Evans, Mark Alesia and Marisa Kwiatkowski, “A 20 Year Toll: 368 Gymnasts Allege Sexual Exploitation,” *Indy Star*, December 15, 2016, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/2016/12/15/20-year-toll-368-gymnasts-allege-sexual-exploitation/95198724/.

[280] Michael Klazema, “Why the Larry Nassar Scandal Has Everything to do with Employment Law and Background Checks,” *backgroundchecks.com*, January 26, 2018, https://www.backgroundchecks.com/community/Post/5025/Why-the-Larry-Nassar-Scandal-Has-Everything-to-Do-with-Employment-Law-and-Background-Checks.

[281] Sonia Moghe and Lauren del Valle, “Larry Nassar’s Abuse Victims, in their own Words,” *CNN*, January 17, 2018, https://edition.cnn.com/2018/01/16/us/nassar-victim-impact-statements/.

[282] Liriel Higa, “U.S. Gymnastics still Values Medals more than Girls,” *The New York Times*, January 23, 2018, https://www.nytimes.com/2018/01/23/opinion/usa-gymnastics-abuse-nassar.html.

[283] Tim Evans, Mark Alesia and Marisa Kwiatkowski, “USA Gymnastics Delayed Reporting Larry Nassar for Five Weeks,” *Indy Star*, February 16, 2017, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/2017/02/16/larry-nassar-usa-gymnastics-fbi-child-sexual-abuse/98002452/.

[284] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/01/09/maggie-nichols-first-nassar-whistle-blower-goes-public/.

[285] Lauren Green, “U.S. Gymnast Maggie Nichols says she Was Abused by Larry Nassar, Dissuaded from Coming Forward by USA Gymnastics,” *Sports Illustrated*, January 9, 2018, https://www.si.com/olympics/2018/01/09/maggie-nichols-larry-nassar-sexual-abuse-usa-gymnastics.

[286] Lauren Green, https://www.si.com/olympics/2018/01/09/maggie-nichols-larry-nassar-sexual-abuse-usa-gymnastics.

[287] Liriel Higa, https://www.nytimes.com/2018/01/23/opinion/usa-gymnastics-abuse-nassar.html.

[288] Sarah Midkiff, “Larry Nassar Abused at least 40 People after the FBI Opened an Investigation,” *Refinery 29*, February 5, 2018, https://www.refinery29.com/2018/02/189877/fbi-investigation-larry-nassar-sexual-abuse-continued-40-people.

[289] Tim Evans, Mark Alesia and Marisa Kwiatkowski, “Michigan States Fires Former US A Gymnastics Doctor,” Indy Star, September 20, 2016, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/2016/09/20/michigan-state-fires-former-usa-gymnastics-doctor/90735722/.

[290] Scott M. Reid, https://www.ocregister.com/2018/01/09/maggie-nichols-first-nassar-whistle-blower-goes-public/.

[291] Lauren Green, https://www.si.com/olympics/2018/01/09/maggie-nichols-larry-nassar-sexual-abuse-usa-gymnastics.

[292] Tim Evans, Mark Alesia and Marisa Kwiatkowski, “Former USA Gymnastics Doctor Accused of Abuse,” *Indy Star*, September 12, 2016, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/2016/09/12/former-usa-gymnastics-doctor-accused-abuse/89995734/.

[293] Tracy Connor, “FBI says Gymnastics Doctor Larry Nassar Recorded Abuse on GoPro,” *NBC News*, December 22, 2016, https://www.nbcnews.com/news/us-news/gymnastics-doctor-larry-nassar-hit-new-sex-abuse-claim-n698741.

[294] Liriel Higa, https://www.nytimes.com/2018/01/23/opinion/usa-gymnastics-abuse-nassar.html.

[295] Julie Mack, “$500M Settlement Reached between Michigan State and Nassar Victims,” *M Live*, May 16, 2018, http://www.mlive.com/news/index.ssf/2018/05/do_not_publish_settlement_reac.html.

[296] Natalie Musumeci, “Raisman Sues US Olympic Committee and USA Gymnastics over Nassar’s Abuse,” *New York Post*, March 2, 2018, https://nypost.com/2018/03/02/raisman-sues-us-olympic-committee-and-usa-gymnastics-over-nassars-abuse/.

[297] “Larry Nassar Case: The 156 Women who Confronted a Predator,” *BBC*, January 25, 2018, http://www.bbc.com/news/world-us-canada-42725339.

[298] Sonia Moghe and Lauren del Valle, https://edition.cnn.com/2018/01/16/us/nassar-victim-impact-statements/.

[299] Jay Akbar, “Larry Nassar Weeps as Brave Victim says her Dad Killed himself when he Discovered US Gymnastics Doctor’s Abuse,” *The Sun*, January 17, 2018, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/5361581/larry-nassar-weeps-as-brave-victim-says-her-dad-killed-himself-when-he-discovered-us-gym-coachs-abuse/.

[300] Sonia Moghe and Lauren del Valle, https://edition.cnn.com/2018/01/16/us/nassar-victim-impact-statements/.

[301] Kim Kozlowski, “What MSU knew: 14 were Warned of Nassar’s Abuse,” *The Detroit News*, January 18, 2018, https://www.detroitnews.com/story/tech/2018/01/18/msu-president-told-nassar-complaint-2014/1042071001/.

[302] John Barr and Dan Murphy, “Nassar Surrounded by Adults who Enabled his Behavior,” *ABC News/ESPN*, January 16, 2018, https://abcnews.go.com/Sports/nassar-surrounded-adults-enabled-predatory-behavior/story?id=52387364.

[303] Eric Lacy and RJ Wolcott, “MSU Board of Trustees Continue to Support Simon,” *Lansing State Journal*, January 19, 2018, https://www.lansingstatejournal.com/story/news/local/2018/01/19/msu-board-trustees-still-supporting-simon/1049205001/.

[304] Jen Kirby, “Michigan State University President Resigns in the Wake of Larry Nassar’s Sentencing,” *Vox*, January 24, 2018, https://www.vox.com/2018/1/24/16930916/msu-president-resigns-nassar-sentencing-lou-anna-simon.

[305] Rachel Axon and Nancy Armour, “Entire US Gymnastics Board Resigns in Wake of Larry Nassar Scandal,” *USA Today*, January 31, 2018, https://www.usatoday.com/story/sports/olympics/2018/01/31/entire-usa-gymnastics-board-resigns-usoc-larry-nassar-scandal/1082855001/.

[306] Tyler Lauletta, “Judge Rosemarie Aquilina Read Excerpts from Larry Nassar’s Letter to the Court to the Horror of the Audience,” *Business Insider*, January 24, 2018, https://www.businessinsider.sg/judge-rosemarie-aquilina-reads-larry-nassars-letter-before-sentencing-2018-1/?r=US&IR=T.

[307] Tracy Connor, “Larry Nassar get another 40 to 125 Years in Sex Abuse Case,” *NBC News*, February 5, 2018, https://www.nbcnews.com/news/us-news/larry-nassar-gets-another-40-125-years-sex-abuse-case-n844676.

[308] “Larry Nassar’s Boss Arrested over Nude Pictures of Female Student,” *The Guardian/Associated Press*, March 27, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/sport/2018/mar/27/larry-nassar-william-strampel-gymnastics-abuse-scandal.

[309] “The IndyStar Brings Justice to Nassar Victims,” *USA Today*, January 26, 2018, https://www.usatoday.com/story/news/pr/2018/01/26/indystar-brings-justice-nassar-victims/109845240/.

[310] Tim Evans, Mark Alesia and Marisa Kwiatkowski, “A 20-Year Toll: 368 Gymnasts Allege Sexual Exploitation,” *Indy Star*, December 15, 2016, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/2016/12/15/20-year-toll-368-gymnasts-allege-sexual-exploitation/95198724/.

[311] Tim Evans, Mark Alesia and Marisa Kwiatkowski, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/2016/12/15/20-year-toll-368-gymnasts-allege-sexual-exploitation/95198724/.

[312] Tim Evans, Mark Alesia and Marisa Kwiatkowski, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/2016/12/15/20-year-toll-368-gymnasts-allege-sexual-exploitation/95198724/.

[313] Tim Evans, Mark Alesia and Marisa Kwiatkowski, “A Blind Eye to Sex Abuse: How USA Gymnastics Failed to Report Cases,” *Indy Star*, August 4, 2016, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/investigations/2016/08/04/usa-gymnastics-sex-abuse-protected-coaches/85829732/.

[314] Tim Evans, Mark Alesia and Marisa Kwiatkowski, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/investigations/2016/08/04/usa-gymnastics-sex-abuse-protected-coaches/85829732/.

[315] Tim Evans, Mark Alesia and Marisa Kwiatkowski, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/investigations/2016/08/04/usa-gymnastics-sex-abuse-protected-coaches/85829732/.

[316] Justin L. Mack, “Indy Gymnastics Coach Accused of Child Molesting Found Dead in Cell,” *Indy Star*, September 20, 2015, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/crime/2015/09/20/indy-gymnastics-coach-accused-child-molesting-found-dead-jail/72516232/.

[317] Tim Evans, Mark Alesia and Marisa Kwiatkowski, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/investigations/2016/08/04/usa-gymnastics-sex-abuse-protected-coaches/85829732/.

[318] Tim Evans, Mark Alesia and Marisa Kwiatkowski, “Sexual Predators left off the List of Banned USA Gymnastics Coaches,” *Indy Star*, August 7, 2016, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/2016/08/07/holes-child-abuse-safety-net/88118404/.

[319] Dave Zirin and David Tigabu, “Larry Nassar’s Imprisonment and Lou Anna Simon’s Resignation are not nearly enough,” *The Nation*, January 25, 2018, https://www.thenation.com/article/larry-nassars-imprisonment-and-lou-anna-simons-resignation-are-not-nearly-enough/.

[320] Tim Evans, Mark Alesia and Marisa Kwiatkowski, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/2016/12/15/20-year-toll-368-gymnasts-allege-sexual-exploitation/95198724/.

[321] Tim Evans, Mark Alesia and Marisa Kwiatkowski, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/investigations/2016/08/04/usa-gymnastics-sex-abuse-protected-coaches/85829732/.

[322] Tim Evans, Mark Alesia and Marisa Kwiatkowski, https://www.indystar.com/story/news/investigations/2016/08/04/usa-gymnastics-sex-abuse-protected-coaches/85829732/.

[323] Jeff Passan, “From another Era and another Sport, a Sex Abuse Scandal still Inflicting Pain Today,” *The Post Game*, November 10, 2011, http://www.thepostgame.com/features/201111/another-era-and-another-sport-sex-abuse-scandal-still-inflicting-pain-today.

[324] Katherine Chon and Derek Ellerman, “Soccer with a Side of Slavery,” *The Washington Post*, June 10, 2006, http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/content/article/2006/06/09/AR2006060901477.html.

[325] Ewelina U. Ochab, “The World’s Fastest Growing Crime,” *Forbes*, July 29, 2017, https://www.forbes.com/sites/ewelinaochab/2017/07/29/the-worlds-fastest-growing-crime/#172030733aae.

[326] “Fact Sheet: Human Trafficking,” Office on Trafficking in Persons, November 21, 2017, https://www.acf.hhs.gov/otip/resource/fshumantrafficking.

[327] Katherine Chon and Derek Ellerman, http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/content/article/2006/06/09/AR2006060901477.html.

[328] Victoria Hayes, “Human Trafficking for Sexual Exploitation at Sporting Events,” *College of Kent Law Review*, May 10, 2010, studentorgs.kentlaw.iit.edu/cklawreview/wp-content.

[329] Sam Agars, “Hong Kong Sevens Joins Olympics and Super Bowl in Fight against Trafficking and Sexual Exploitation of Children,” *South China Morning Post*, April 5, 2018, http://www.scmp.com/sport/rugby/hk-sevens/article/2140469/hong-kong-sevens-joins-olympics-and-super-bowl-fight-against.

[330] Sam Agars, http://www.scmp.com/sport/rugby/hk-sevens/article/2140469/hong-kong-sevens-joins-olympics-and-super-bowl-fight-against.

[331] Anne Marie Tavella, “Sex Trafficking and the 2006 World Cup in Germany: Concerns, Actions and Implications for Future International Sporting Events, *Northwestern Journal for International Human Rights*, fall 2008, scholarlycommons.law.northwestern.edu/cgi/viewcont.

[332] Katherine Chon and Derek Ellerman, http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/content/article/2006/06/09/AR2006060901477.html.

[333] Anne Marie Tavella, scholarlycommons.law.northwestern.edu/cgi/viewcont.

[334] Anne Marie Tavella, scholarlycommons.law.northwestern.edu/cgi/viewcont.

[335] Celia Brackenridge, Sarah Palmer-Felgate, Daniel Rhind, Laura Hills, Tess Kay, Anne Tivas, Lucy Faulkner and Iain Lindsay, “Child Exploitation and the FIFA World Cup: A Review of Risks and Protective Interventions,” *Brunel Center for Sport, Health and Well-being*, July 12, 2013, https://www.brunel.ac.uk/__data/assets/pdf_file/00.

[336] Celia Brackenridge, Sarah Palmer-Felgate, Daniel Rhind, Laura Hills, Tess Kay, Anne Tivas, Lucy Faulkner and Iain Lindsay, https://www.brunel.ac.uk/__data/assets/pdf_file/00.

[337] Celia Brackenridge, Sarah Palmer-Felgate, Daniel Rhind, Laura Hills, Tess Kay, Anne Tivas, Lucy Faulkner and Iain Lindsay, https://www.brunel.ac.uk/__data/assets/pdf_file/00.

[338] Ilya Somin, “Brazil Forcibly Displaced Thousands of People to make way for the World Cup,” *The Washington Post*, June 18, 2014, https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/volokh-conspiracy/wp/2014/06/18/brazil-forcibly-displaced-thousands-of-people-to-make-way-for-the-world-cup/?noredirect=on&utm_term=.da9079c01c23.

[339] Rahul Kalvapalle, “Rio de Janeiro Welcomed 1.17 Tourists in Two Weeks,” *marca.com*, August 24, 2016, March 1, 2013, http://www.marca.com/en/olympic-games/2016/08/24/57bda7a0468aeb3e158b4596.html.

[340] Louise Ridley, “Rio Child Sex Trafficking ‘Epidemic’ could Rocket during the 2016 Olympics - Here's Why,” *Huffington Post*, August 13, 2016, https://www.huffingtonpost.co.uk/entry/rio-olympics-2016-child-sex-trafficking_uk_57a9a7efe4b089961b85468b.

[341] Candace Sutton, “The Road near the Rio Olympic Village where Girls as Young as Nine Work as Prostitutes,” *news.com.au*, July 24, 2016, http://www.news.com.au/sport/olympics/the-road-near-the-rio-olympic-village-where-girls-as-young-as-nine-work-as-prostitutes/news-story/10729d252fb5825e8348940483caad79.

[342] “Child Sex Trafficking at the World Cup Brazil 2014, Rio 2016 Olympics,” *wearethorn.org*, July 9, 2014, https://www.wearethorn.org/blog/child-sex-trafficking-world-cup/.

[343] Stephanie Hepburn, “It’s not about the Sex – Human Trafficking and Mega Sporting Events, *Huffington Post*, February 13, 2017, https://www.huffingtonpost.com/entry/its-not-just-about-sexhuman-trafficking-and-sporting_us_58a25412e4b0e172783a9fd7.

[344] Sebastien Malo, “Is the US Super Bowl really the U.S.’s Biggest Trafficking Magnet?” *Reuters*, February 2, 2018, https://www.reuters.com/article/us-football-nfl-superbowl-trafficking-an/is-the-super-bowl-really-the-u-s-s-biggest-sex-trafficking-magnet-idUSKBN1FL6A1.

[345] Sebastien Malo, https://www.reuters.com/article/us-football-nfl-superbowl-trafficking-an/is-the-super-bowl-really-the-u-s-s-biggest-sex-trafficking-magnet-idUSKBN1FL6A1.

[346] Sebastien Malo, https://www.reuters.com/article/us-football-nfl-superbowl-trafficking-an/is-the-super-bowl-really-the-u-s-s-biggest-sex-trafficking-magnet-idUSKBN1FL6A1.

[347] Eustace Mullins, “Eustace Mullins on Rothschild Warmongering,” *rense.com*, April 12, 2006, http://www.rense.com/general70/roth.htm.

[348] Michael Snyder, “Guess how many Nations in the World do not have a Central Bank?” *Zero Hedge*, June 10, 2015, https://www.zerohedge.com/news/2015-06-10/guess-how-many-nations-world-do-not-have-central-bank.

[349] John Vibes, “Media Silent as Allison Mack’s Arrest Exposes Child Trafficking For Billionaire-Backed Sex Slave Ring,” *Free Thought Project*, April 27, 2018, https://thefreethoughtproject.com/allison-mack-accused-trafficking-children-billionaire-backed-sex-slavery-ring/.

[350] Global Alliance Against Trafficking in Women, “What’s the Cost of a Rumour? A Guide to Sorting out the Myths and the Facts about Sporting Events and Trafficking,” *gaatw.org*, November 15, 2011, www.gaatw.org/publications/WhatstheCostofaRumour.

[351] Pete Kotz, “The Super Bowl Prostitute Myth: 100,000 Hookers won’t be Showing up in Dallas,” *Dallas Observer*, January 27, 2011, http://www.dallasobserver.com/news/the-super-bowl-prostitute-myth-100-000-hookers-wont-be-showing-up-in-dallas-6424288.

[352] Sebastien Malo, “US Police Arrest Record 750 Suspects in Super Bowl Sex-Trafficking Stings,” *Reuters*, February 10, 2017, https://www.reuters.com/article/us-usa-trafficking-super-bowl/u-s-police-arrest-record-750-suspects-in-super-bowl-sex-trafficking-stings-idUSKBN15O2MU.

[353] Global Alliance Against Trafficking in Women, www.gaatw.org/publications/WhatstheCostofaRumour.

[354] “Report: Majority of Trafficking Victims are Women and Girls; One-third Children,” UN Office on Drugs and Crime, *un.org*, December 2016, https://www.un.org/sustainabledevelopment/blog/2016/12/report-majority-of-trafficking-victims-are-women-and-girls-one-third-children/.

[355] Helena Horton, “There are more slaves Today than ever before in History of the World,” *Mirror*, October 14, 2014, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/ampp3d/more-slaves-today-ever-before-4435373.

[356] Eleanor Goldberg, “Super Bowl is Single Largest Human Trafficking Incident in U.S.: Attorney General,” *Huffington Post*, February 6, 2013, https://www.huffingtonpost.com/2013/02/03/super-bowl-sex-trafficking_n_2607871.html.

[357] Meghan Casserly, “Sex and the Super Bowl: Indianapolis puts Spotlight on Teen Sex Trafficking,” Forbes, February 2, 2012, https://www.forbes.com/sites/meghancasserly/2012/02/02/sex-and-the-super-bowl-indianapolis-spotlight-teen-sex-trafficking/#cd46a824c617.

[358] Meghan Casserly, https://www.forbes.com/sites/meghancasserly/2012/02/02/sex-and-the-super-bowl-indianapolis-spotlight-teen-sex-trafficking/#cd46a824c617.

[359] Philip Caulfield, “Dallas Hunts Teen Sex Rings before Super Bowl; Big Game said to Attract Thousands of Pimps, Hookers,” *New York Daily News*, February 1, 2011, http://www.nydailynews.com/news/national/dallas-hunts-teen-sex-rings-super-bowl-big-game-attract-thousands-pimps-hookers-article-1.137796.

[360] Juan David Romero, “Why do we Treat Child Sex-Trafficking Victims like Criminals?” *The New Republic*, December 4, 2014, https://newrepublic.com/article/120418/underage-sex-trafficking-victims-are-treated-criminals-us.

[361] Lauren Carroll, “Does Sex Trafficking Increase around the Super Bowl?” *Politifact*, January 29, 2015, http://www.politifact.com/truth-o-meter/statements/2015/jan/29/john-cornyn/does-sex-trafficking-increase-around-super-bowl/.

[362] Lauren Carroll, http://www.politifact.com/truth-o-meter/statements/2015/jan/29/john-cornyn/does-sex-trafficking-increase-around-super-bowl/.

[363] Tracy Caplan, “Victim Advocates and Law Enforcement use Super Bowl to Shine Light on Human Trafficking,” *The Mercury News*, July 25, 2015, https://www.mercurynews.com/2015/07/25/victim-advocates-and-law-enforcement-use-super-bowl-to-shine-light-on-human-trafficking/.

[364] Tom Porter, “Backpage Website Shut down, Founder Charged with 93 Counts by FBI in Sealed Indictment,” *Newsweek*, April 7, 2018, http://www.newsweek.com/sex-ads-website-backpagecom-co-founder-charged-after-fbi-raid-876333.

[365] Shared Hope International website, https://sharedhope.org/.

[366] Meghan Casserly, https://www.forbes.com/sites/meghancasserly/2012/02/02/sex-and-the-super-bowl-indianapolis-spotlight-teen-sex-trafficking/#cd46a824c617.

[367] Meghan Casserly, https://www.forbes.com/sites/meghancasserly/2012/02/02/sex-and-the-super-bowl-indianapolis-spotlight-teen-sex-trafficking/#cd46a824c617.

[368] Sara Galer, “Indiana Legislators OK Tougher Anti-Trafficking Law,” *WTHR 13 News*, January 27, 2012, https://www.wthr.com/article/indiana-legislators-ok-tougher-sex-trafficking-law.

[369] Nikita Vladimirov, “Pence’s Congressional Library Sealed,” *The Hill*, July 13, 2016, http://thehill.com/blogs/blog-briefing-room/news/287613-pences-congressional-library-sealed.

[370] Jamayel Khawaja, “Mike Pence, Finding God, and the Shifting Agenda of Christian Music Festivals,” *The Guardian*, March 21, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/music/2017/mar/21/christian-music-festivals-mike-pence-politics-lifestyle-culture.

[371] Joachim Hagopian, “President Trump: The Anti-Globalist USA Champion or just another Con Man Riding a Trojan Horse?” *Global Research*, Novmber 16, 2016, https://www.globalresearch.ca/president-trump-the-anti-globalist-usa-champion-or-just-another-con-man-riding-a-trojan-horse/5557261.

[372] “What you don’t know about Mike Pence – Wolf in Sheep’s Clothing,” *50shadesofpissedoff.com*, February 10, 2017, https://50shadesofpissedoff.com/2017/02/10/what-you-dont-know-about-mike-pence-wolf-in-sheeps-clothing/.

[373] Maxwell Tani, “Mike Pence: I’d Model my Vice Presidency after Dick Cheney,” *Business Insider*, September 18, 2016,

https://www.businessinsider.sg/mike-pence-dick-cheney-vice-president-2016-9/?r=US&IR=T.

[374] David Vanallen, “Former CIA Officer: Flynn Fired over High-level DC Pedophile List,” *reflectionofmind.org*, February 18, 2017, http://reflectionofmind.org/former-cia-officer-flynn-fired-high-level-dc-pedophile-list/.

[375] “Breaking: Mike Pence Exposed in Indiana PedoGate, Trump Takedown is real, #Storm, #Fireworks, #Whiteerabbit,” *Steemit*, January 3, 2018, https://steemit.com/dakini5d/@dakini5d/breaking-mike-pence-exposed-in-indiana-pedogate-trump-take-down-is-real-storm-fireworks-whiterabbit.

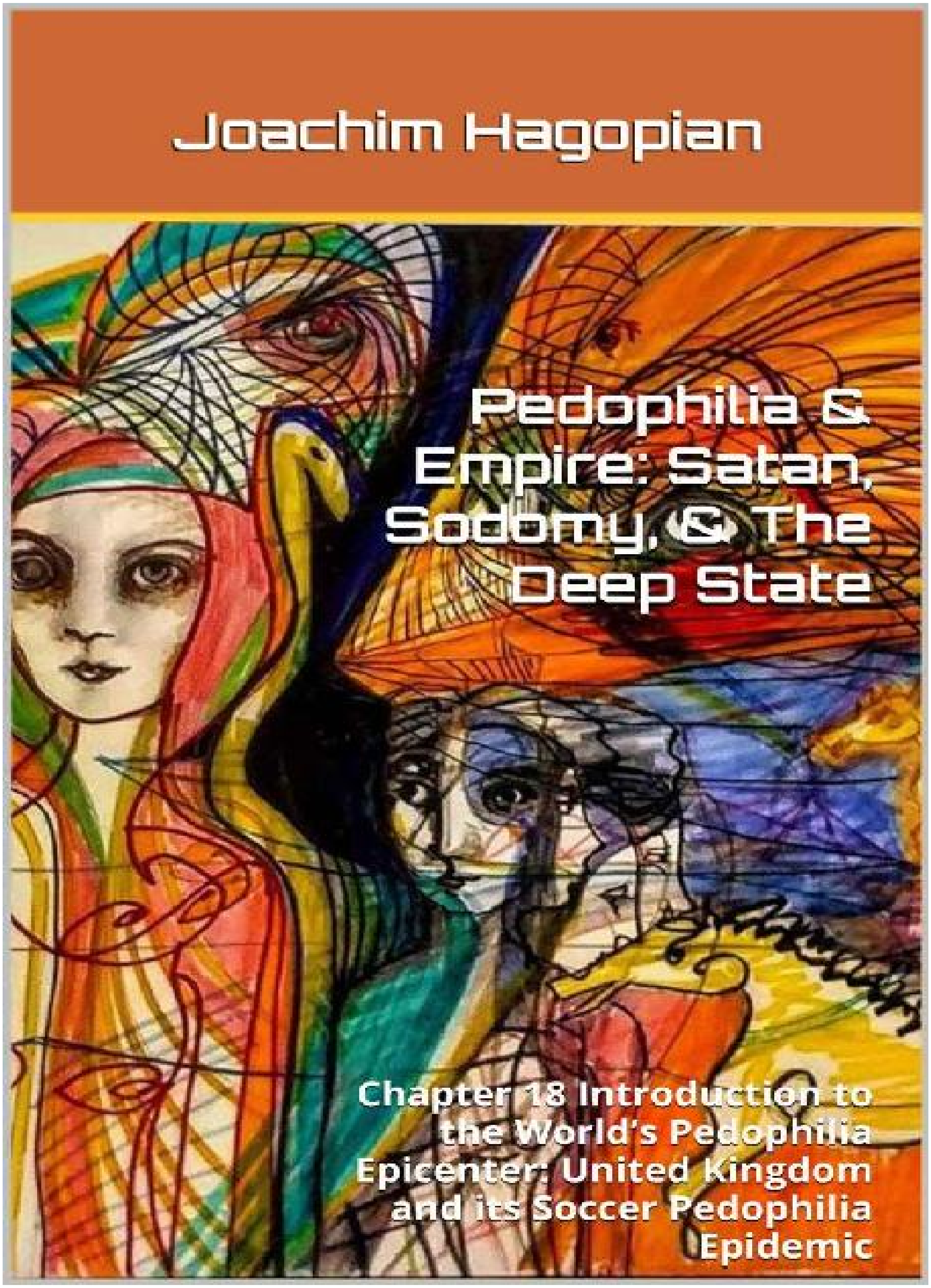

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 18 Introduction to the World's Pedophilia Epicenter: United Kingdom and its Soccer Pedophilia Epidemic

Chapter 18 Introduction to the World’s Pedophilia Epicenter: United Kingdom and its Soccer Pedophilia Epidemic

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission
http://www.noramaccoby.com/

Though each child victim’s story is uniquely tragic in its own devastating way, in far more ways their stories are the same, regardless of sport, perpetrator, nation or time of crime. Sports pedophilia scandals as depicted by mainstream news always casts one abhorrent deviant predator who for many decades exploits both his authority and reputation to get away with chronically abusing multiple generations of children before ultimately being exposed and spending the rest of his life behind bars. The power differential between each authority figure, most often a renowned coach, and his fledgling underage athletes all eagerly vying for playing time, recognition, approval, and a chance to fulfill their dream of success and fame, is the common dynamic behind every single scandal in both the sports and entertainment worlds. In all cases the brave young souls who eventually do come forth to report their sexual abuse go unheard, dismissed and cast aside, only permitting the abuser to continue to abuse for many, more years.

In every case the larger sports organizations - be they Olympic entities or regional and international associations to all the national governing bodies, they are always guilty of protecting the perpetrator(s) at all cost. And other than one singled out monster, the surrounding private elite club of fellow pedophiles and pedophile enabling system associated with each of these horrifying scandals seems to by design always remain relatively unknown and hidden from public view, unexposed and free of all culpability and accountability. Ultimately at the top of this Luciferian power pyramid, too much power, control and money is at stake, thus saving the undeserved reputations and private identities of other guilty parties and more powerful elite pedophiles become far more important than saving the lives of mere expendable children regardless of their growing numbers. And the media is always there to protect the pedo-interests that would otherwise unveil the deeper incriminating connections to the larger global pedophilia network. And in the end, you can plug in and interchange in any given sport the names of the sole MSM designated child raping monster eventually caught and the multitude of his child victims, along with the times and places of each scandal, and without exception, all are characterized by these same definable constants driving each and every tragedy currently being played out on the world stage.

Since the previous section of chapters laid out in full detail the biggest known pedophilia scandals in sports history, at least in America, the one covered next involves the game of soccer (or football) played at the junior club level at the planet's very pedophilia epicenter - the United Kingdom. And true to form, all the same common features listed above are present in this biggest ever British sports scandal as well. Additionally, this chapter launches the next book section examining the slew of pedophilia scandals uncovered in recent years outside the US in the ever fertile pedo-pastures of Europe, Australia and elsewhere.

Barry Bennell is the designated predatory pedophile coach who is the Coach Sandusky of the UK football world still rocking Britain today. Earlier this year the 64-year old Bennell was finally locked away for good after receiving a 31-year prison sentence following his fourth and final conviction for more than four decades of raping hundreds of little boys with big dreams.[1] For a couple decades Barry Bennell was employed by such hugely successful professional football clubs as Manchester City and Crewe Alexandra as both a coach and talent scout who helped develop the skills of a number of junior players that went onto the professional Premier League. With Premier the world's richest (£4.5bn in the 2016-17 season),[2] most watched soccer league,[3] featuring stars peddled by the pedophile, in recent decades the United Kingdom singlehandedly has jumpstarted the current obsession and popularity for the #1 international game of football. Again, just like the Catholic Church and Olympic US national teams in Swimming and Gymnastics, it was far more feasible for the sport's pedophile enablers at the top busily raking in billions to quietly reassign its pedo-coaches to different locations to do more damage rather than take any serious steps to protect child athletes and stop the tightly-under-wraps, rampant abuse from escalating into today's endemic crisis.

In addition to longtime employment as a scout and coach for junior teams at Manchester and Crewe Football Clubs (FCs), as an important side job from 1979 to 1981, no doubt to hone his predator skills, the serial child rapist worked at Taxal Edge residential school.[4] Historically children's group homes in the United Kingdom are pedophilia havens.[5] Raping and pillaging group homes complete with buried corpses[6] have been servicing the likes of Jimmy Savile,[7] PMs[8] and MPs[9] and the royals[10] for over half a century (topics covered thoroughly in the next couple chapters). In fact, Bennell's Taxal Edge co-worker and fellow pedophile is also currently under police investigation. The now 62-year old Bruce McLean worked at Taxal Edge from 1975 to 1978, and later founded the children's charity Adventure Farm Trust in Cheshire, receiving philanthropic support from actor Michael Cane and musician Phil Collins.[11]

As a volunteer football coach who must've known Barry Bennell, they both shared the same hankering for children down to even sharing the same grooming M.O. - escorting victims to Manchester football games and then abusing them afterwards.[12] McLean was arrested for molesting boys in a Cheshire group home in 1995 and in 1997 began a 9-year prison sentence while his cohort Bennell started his own 9-year sentence a year later in 1998. In 2014 the Derbyshire Police arrested McLean again after an investigation of historic child sex abuse involving a boy attending Taxal Edge dating back to the 1970s. And just like clockwork, a year later it was Bennell's turn to return to prison again. McLean represents an important link between Bennell, Manchester and Cheshire FCs, group home charities and a mutually active participation in the wider child sex abuse ring exploiting soccer lads.

The earliest report of Bennell's pedophilia dates back to 1972 when the derelict was only 18 or 19 years old.[13] Yan Nowacki, now 57 years old as Bennell's earliest known victim, claims he was a 13-year old Manchester City player when invited to a sleepover at Bennell's mother's home. While Yan slept he was awakened by the predator still pretending to be asleep groping his genitals and buttocks. The boy immediately sought refuge on the floor where he spent the remainder of his sleepless night untouched yet frozen in the predator's presence. Yan says that the warning signs were there from the start. In the locker room the young coach couldn't keep his hands off his players, religiously applying ointment on boys right up to their inner thighs just centimeters from their crotch.

Another relatively early and most detailed account of them all regarding Bennell's longtime abuse came from future professional baller Andy Woodward. His sexual assaults by Bennell commenced in 1984 when the shy 11-year old and his working class parents were approached by the eventually disgraced Crewe coach and talent scout.[14] Promising a shot at the pros, Bennell invited Woodward to train at the professional Crewe Alexandra club and spend weekends at his nearby residence to improve his skills. And just like the Penn State abuser's basement game room, this serial predator on the other side of the pond made sure his home was similarly decked out as a "child paradise," complete with a pool table, juke box, arcade games and a live pet monkey and a wild puma for entertainment along with all the football accessories and equipment… the perfect groomer's flytrap.

From the very start little did young Andy and his parents realize that he was being taken in by a coldblooded sexual predator. On his first visit the coach gifted him a pair of soccer cleats. Then on his second weekend stayover, Bennell asked Andy to come to his bed where, at the predator's direction, the game of "follow me" was played where they took turns touching each other.[15] By the third visit, the child rapist escalated his criminal advances quickly leading to rape and sodomy over the next four years.

Bennell regularly had two or three, or sometimes as many as a dozen kids staying with him over the weekend for years at a time. That should have been a red flag in and of itself to both the Manchester and Crewe football clubs. When each organization found out, they feebly told Bennell to stop the sleepovers.[16] But as long as the renowned scouting coach continued sending potential stars to the professional Premier League, the serial child rapist's employment always remained in good standing. Crewe's feeble admonishment is no different from the Penn State honchos telling Sandusky not to shower anymore with his victims over a decade before he was finally arrested.

One of Andy's teammates, Anthony Hughes, disclosed that a mini-bus would pick up 11 or 12 boys at a time and take them back to Bennell's home in Derbyshire:

There was plenty of things for us to play with, pinball, a jukebox, computer games. Then he'd put a video on of us playing football and analyze that. But once that finished, that's when he'd put on the porn, S&M type stuff. He had a great big stack of tapes in his house. He'd get us all sitting round watching it while he sat there stroking the back of your neck or putting his arm around your shoulder and stroking your chest and nipples. Or he'd give you a little tickle.[17]

The boys were too young to realize they were all being groomed as abuse victims. While most of them would sleep in bunkbeds at Bennell's house, the predator would select his favorites to join him in his room where rape and sodomy were on his wickedly twisted agenda.

A complainant who estimated being abused 100 times during Bennell's Manchester City years provided testimony to the police on the monster's bedroom assaults:

He was very clever - it was always lights off, music blaring out. I learned how to shut down. When it happened I could literally shut down my emotions. All I know is every time I was abused, part of me closed down. When the tears came out my face, I shut my body down. He'd abuse me and I'd have tears rolling down my cheeks. He didn't give a shit. That hurt. It didn't stop him.[18]

While on a tour to a training camp in North Wales, victims were taken to a large house in the middle of nowhere that they called "the Haunted House."[19] Another grooming tactic Bennell regularly utilized was to force the boys to watch horror films to obviously frighten them, availing opportunity for the sicko to initiate physical contact and predatorily move in closer for "the kill." Bennell would also mysteriously knock on their doors at night to scare them. To terrorize the lot of them, the demented sodomizer even resorted to placing a sheep's head in the bed of one of the boys.

While coaching and scouting talent at Manchester City from 1975 to 1982, a club director described Bennell as a "star maker."[20] A demo of the star maker's power was evidenced when a boy arrived to see the coach about joining City and was brutally sodomized that night. After "the worst day of my life," when the boy threatened to report Bennell the next morning, the "star maker" smugly replied:

> *It wouldn't matter. Nobody would believe you. I've got people playing professional football now that I've done these things to - you're nothing.*[21]

Even prior to Andy Woodward's abuse from 1984 to 1988, there was Ian Ackley who Bennell preyed on as his "main target" while at Manchester City, abusing Ian "hundreds of times" from 1979 to 1983. Note Bennell's chosen favorite victim switched at the same time the coach moved from working for Manchester to Crewe. In 1997 Ian Ackley was even featured divulging his horror story about sexual predator Bennell on the Channel 4 documentary *Dispatches*.[22] Despite boldly speaking out 20 years ahead of Andy Woodward, apparently no one was listening or watching as the British Football Association and the rest of the world seemingly ignored this first whistleblower's painfully shocking truth. Also from the 1997 doc we learn the fact that over two decades ago, before a national audience Charlton first team Coach Les Reed had already recognized there was a major pedophilia problem in the sport and was expressing his dire concerns way back when:

> *The FA needs to come out of the towers at Lancaster Gate and really investigate what is going on.*[23]

An FA spokesman asked to respond to Reed's statement back in January 1997 stated:

The FA has been a prime mover among sporting governing bodies to get an effective screening process which aids child protection.[24]

Now more than two decades later with the biggest pedo-epidemic in United Kingdom's sporting history blown up in its face, the UK Football Association is still desperately floundering, still vowing to change things around, only making yet more feeble broken promises. Again, if the FA was actually doing its job protecting children all along as it claimed in 1997, we wouldn't be where we're at right now. All these years later, FA's history only shows a complete lack of protecting child athletes, and if anything, it has incriminatingly demonstrated even more convincing evidence of a worldwide pedophilia network.

Britain's #1 sexual predator in football possessed nunchucks, a dangerous martial arts weapon with which he forced his victims to hold a newspaper up that he would use to violently tear in half as an overt demonstration delivering intimidation and bodily threat should any victim dare report his crimes.[25] If any boy resisted or complained, the coach would customarily bench the player or kick him off the team entirely, thereby throwing away the dream to reach the higher level. These all too familiar tactics echoed by pedo-coaches in other sport scandals were drummed into the fearful heads of their victims:

I can ruin your football tomorrow. Keep quiet or you're finished.[26]

Barry Bennell once admitted to police that his ideal target of a victim was 13 years of age because in his own words they were:

Pedigree footballers who were athletes and good-looking.[27]

Though he's on record having abused youth as young as 8 or 9, his preference was for older boys up to 15. Again in a police interview:

Nine-year-olds scared me because they were still attached to the [mothers'] apron strings.[28]

At will, the charismatic, larger-than-life soccer ace was able to get away with sexually assaulting his many victims hundreds of times, taking full advantage of both his sterling reputation as a first class talent spotter and the fact that he was spotting boys far less prone to reporting abuse than girls, much less rough and tough footballers entertaining big dreams in the manly sport where young players rarely admit to the submissive victimization of sodomy.

Moreover, amongst the players and club personnel, it was widely known that Barry Bennell was a child molester. Rumors of Barry Bennell's twisted sexual appetite were widely circulating by the late 1970s and early 1980s, amongst both Manchester City club personnel where he coached for 7 years from 1978 to 1985 and later at Crewe from 1985 to 1992.[29] But in the world of jocks, to be labeled an abuse victim is tantamount to being branded "gay" or a "weak sissy boy." It was no secret around the junior league clubs, the pervert coach's players were taunted as members of "the paedophile club."[30] Amongst the players not abused, it became an insider's secret joke, but fearing loss of their dream to go pro, pedophilia was virtually never spoken of beyond the locker room. Another reason why the abuse went on for so long, like in every pedo-scandal, upon reporting abuse, victims are never believed and are only subject to rejection, ridicule and more abuse.

One Manchester City employee admitted:

Suspicions about him [Bennell] were aired on many an occasion.[31]

A former Manchester City youth coach, Steve Fleet, risked losing his job in the late 1970s when he vehemently complained to the City executives that Barry Bennell was placing young boys in their organization at grave risk.[32] Yet knowing Bennell was a hardcore sexual predator, Manchester was relieved to off the pedophile to rival Crewe Alexandra, of course not saying a word about his criminal habit as a liability.

Police documents show that Manchester's senior staff, among them chief scout Ken Barnes, have been "quite evasive" and hard put explaining why Bennell left their organization, other than citing "irregularities." It was Barnes who defended Bennell, calling him a "star maker" when Steve Fleet sternly warned the directors at City about his deviant proclivities. Then in the 1997 Channel 4 documentary *Dispatches*, Ken Barnes even made light of Bennell's criminality that at the time had him sitting in a US prison, joking:

What do you call them? Piddyphiles, is it?[33]

Soon enough Barry Bennell was Crewe Alexandra's problem. And in the role of Manchester's Steve Fleet at Crewe was Hamilton Smith, managing director from 1986 to 1990 who maintains that in the late 1980s, he directly warned Crewe's executive board about Bennell's criminal activities but was completely ignored.[34] Like Manchester, all the higher-ups at Crewe also claim they never had a clue Bennell was a pedophile. Obstinate in their denial right to the bitter end, as recently as March 2018, Crewe released a 925 word statement reneging on its earlier promise to conduct a thorough internal investigation to determine if Crewe had engaged in a cover-up to protect both itself and Bennell.[35] In early March the organization had announced that it would forego launching the earlier promised internal review, citing its feeble excuse that the Cheshire Police (not unlike Alice's Cheshire cat) had allegedly concluded that no one at Crewe ever knew that a pedophile employee was in their midst (where have we heard that before?).

Moreover, the deceitful pedo enabling League Two club even made the bogus claim that the current Crewe president John Bowler, a board member since 1979, denied any recollection that Hamilton Smith reported complaints about the child rapist to him, his board or longtime Crewe football director Dario Gradi.[36] Smith's response promptly called John Bowler out as a "lying bastard."[37]

In the wake of Woodward's bombshell and subsequent additional charges filed in November 2016 against Bennell, the FA banned Dario Gradi as longtime Crewe manager for allegedly allowing Bennell to rape boys at will during the seven years under his watch. The Crewe manager and onetime Chelsea assistant manager was also accused of attempting to "smooth over" a victim's sexual abuse complaint back in 1975 at the hands of now deceased pedophile Chelsea scout Ted Heath[38] (note identical namesake of the child raping UK prime minister[39]). Gradi met with 14-year old pro prospect Eamonn Manners and his father at their home to hear Eamonn explain the sexually inappropriate, unwanted advances Chelsea's scout "Eddie" Heath had heaped on him a few days earlier.[40] Gradi brushed it all off, pretending Eamonn had misunderstood Heath's "good" intentions:

> *Dario said that Eddie loved the boys and the club, which was his life, and had simply got carried away and gone too far.[41]*

With still a CYA Cheshire cat smile on his face, assistant coach Gradi left Eamonn's home and nothing was ever done to stop the serial predator from sexually abusing countless other boys over the next 8 years until Health's death in 1983. Eamonn Manners was expected to turn pro but instead, feeling unprotected and unsafe knowing his child molester lurking about wasn't going anywhere, after several months the disempowered, unheard 15-year old gave up his close at hand achievable dream to play professional football and left the Chelsea team confused, perplexed and angry.

After Andy Woodward's November 2016 confession to *The Guardian*, 57-year old Eamonn decided to forego his confidentiality rights in order to tell his revealing story to the *Daily Mail*, how Gradi swept knowledge of his scout's serial pedophilia under the carpet, just as he did for Bennell at Crewe several years later. In fact, Dario Gradi has spent his entire football career as a pedophile enabler. But then with it common knowledge throughout the Premier League clubs that coaches, scouts and football officials were rampantly molesting its underage players, it was every enabler's systemic duty to simply look the other way, just as at Penn State, USA Swimming, USA Gymnastics, USA Taekwondo, USA Skating, USA Volleyball, in fact all worldwide Olympic sports where big money and big power rule.

Gradi even wrote a letter on Bennell's behalf to the Florida court in 1994 attempting to reduce the convicted pedophile's four year prison sentence, all the while knowing Bennell was a guilty pedophile.[42] Gradi even openly knew and allowed Bennell to have boys stay with him overnight at Bennell's home.[43] As if Gradi's despicably scandalous behavior isn't incriminating enough, additionally it's been reported to *BBC* that an employee at Crewe Alexandra was ordered in 2001 to remove child pornography from Gradi's home computer.[44] Now you know why a complicit UK Football Association exercising damage control, without explanation suspended Gradi as too heavy a liability burden once the scandal broke in late 2016 and has yet to explain its reasons. But they're rather obvious.

Prior to Eamonn Manners’ sexual abuse disclosure, his onetime Chelsea teammate Gary Johnson who went pro also went public with his story. Two weeks after the Woodward interview, the 57-year old former Chelsea first teamer waived his anonymity to talk to the *Daily Mail*, revealing that one of the richest football organizations in the world paid him £50,000 as hush money to stay quiet over the Heath abuse[45]… just like USA Gymnastics did with Makayla Maroney. Made to sign a non-disclosure statement accepting Chelsea’s non-liability as part of the deal, once Andy Woodward broke the pedo-scandal wide open, Gary defied Chelsea’s agreement and reported that the team’s chief scout Ted Heath sexually assaulted him starting at age 13 three or four times a week totaling hundreds of times in the 1970s. Not wanting the negative publicity generated if Chelsea challenged Johnson on his breaking the confidentiality agreement, again just like US Gymnastics, it opted to back down once he went public. In 2014 Gary Johnson even went to the Metropolitan Police to report the abuse only to be told to go back to Chelsea. But when he did, he was given the customary runaround:

> *What makes me so angry is that I went to Chelsea to say I had been abused and they basically said, ‘prove it.’ It made me feel like they thought I was faking it, that's how it felt anyway.*[46]

Virtually every elite team in the Premier League, just as virtually every police department in the United Kingdom, has a long running shady history of shielding its legions of serial pedophiles in high places from all accountability. Yet another linkage of the pedophilia child sex ring is the fact that this particular pedophile in question - Chelsea chief scout pedophile Eddie Heath, actually trained the other Premier League pedophile scout Barry Bennell… the ever-familiar, more “birds of a feather” theme.[47]

After victims of Bennell along with Crewe's member in parliament already blasted Crewe Alexandra for its refusal to look into its criminal past (as if its investigation would have been objective), under increasing pressure, the Crewe football organization continues ignoring its complicit role in covering up its widespread abuse for decades. In March 2018 UK parliament member and chairman of the culture, media and sport select committee, Damian Collins, joined this growing chorus condemning Crewe's refusal to examine its cover-up role, calling it "totally unacceptable," and engendering a complete "lack of trust."[48] Collins has subsequently emphasized the double importance of the UK Football Association to leave no stone unturned in its ongoing inquiry into Crewe and the other city clubs over their overt obstruction of justice and complete mishandling of years of rampant pedophilia within its ranks that's led directly to this current epidemic crisis, including revealing specific reasons for Dario Gradi's recent suspension 15 months after he was prohibited from all football activity back in November 2016.

Yet recently in March 2018 after his 14 month exile, Dario Gradi resurfaced, granted an invitation to attend a testimonial for a fellow Crewe Alexandra colleague, and received a standing ovation,[49] sending the blatantly clear message that Crewe deceitfully protecting its own criminality is highly lauded. Hard to say which is more shameful and disgraced, the pedo-enabling organization or its pedo-enabling former manager.

Once Crewe board member Hamilton Smith warned the club that Bennell was a hardened pedophile, the organization decided to maintain Bennell's employment as long as the child rapist ceased his sleepovers and was not left alone with his players,[50] conditions the repeat offender never obviously complied with. Crewe lied when claiming Bennell departed for "football reasons" in 1992 when in fact he was two days away from parents filing a formal complaint against him, corroborated by the sicko himself admitting he left Crewe over a complaint.[51] The bottom line is Bennell was hired by club after club in city after city - Manchester City, Crewe, Stoke City, Leeds United,[52] Derbyshire, Staffordshire, and Cheshire, followed all the while by his not-so-secret reputation as the pedophile with the voracious boy toy appetite.[53]

The truth that Bennell's "nine lives" as a serial child rapist was connected to a larger pedophilia network explains why he was allowed to repeatedly prey on boys for over four decades before ultimately issued his death sentence earlier this year. Similar to Coach Sandusky and Olympic organization scandals, there is clear evidence that Barry Bennell shared victims with other pedophiles within a child sex ring network.[54]

According to the *Mirror*, Bennell and Manchester based coach and scout Frank Roper and other pedophiles in the soccer world swapped their victims as part of the larger pedo-network.[55] 47-year old Jason Dunford maintains that within an hour after he was dropped from Bennell's squad, his brand new coach-to-be Frank Roper was literally knocking at his door to arrange his turn at molesting the 13-year old boy. After fighting off Bennell's advances at a holiday camp in Wales and then catching the pedo-coach prowling a boys' caravan at a tournament, smelling trouble, Bennell swiftly kicked Jason off his team but not before contacting his pedo-buddy Frank Roper who coached a rival squad affiliated with the Blackpool Football Club and has since been posthumously accused of abusing 31 boys.[56] Jason asserts that:

> *Within an hour of that decision he* [Roper] *had hit the doorbell and the form was there; in those days your parents had to sign a form.*[57]

Confirming that Bennell was working with other pedophiles like Roper from other Premier League clubs, Dunford's steadfast claim that his abusers were part of a larger child sex ring has also been backed up by other victims, coaches and football officials.[58]

In addition to sodomizing Jason Dunford, Frank Roper sexually abused another English football star, the now 53-year old Paul Stewart, who like Woodward has stated that Roper sexually assaulted him on a daily basis from age 11 to 15.[59] A week and a half after Andy's November 2016 bombshell, England's former striker and midfielder Paul Stewart emerged from the shadows to reveal to the world his torture endured on the way to professional stardom, keeping his dark secret to himself for over 40 years. As is common for perpetrators to use death threats, Roper threatened to kill Paul's father, mother and two brothers if he ever breathed a word. To normalize the abuse, his deviant coach told Paul that an opposing coach Barry Bennell was also "doing" his players. The 1991 FA Cup winner with the Tottenham Hotspurs turned to alcohol, cocaine and other drugs to later cope with the chronic effects, breaking down emotionally when he admitted the abuse stopped him from even hugging his wife of 29 years or telling his two daughters and son that he loved them. Again, being raped as a child is a lifelong curse. Paul Stewart lamented:

I want to be able to show affection that has been the worst aspect of it, them not being able to get close to me.[60]

Incidentally in 2003 another Roper victim reported his abuse to Liverpool police but no action was taken and two years later, like both pedophile Heaths, Roper also left this earth without paying for his woeful sins.[61] And just like the Chelsea police with Gary Johnson, this non-response may well be more evidence of police once again protecting the larger pedophilia network as foxes guarding the henhouse.

To CYA, Liverpool Police have since reopened a supposed internal investigation of its own oversighted “negligence.”

Still another longtime youth coach whose name keeps coming up since November 2016 in too many abuse victims’ reported incidents is 65-year old Southampton coach Bob Higgins, subsequently charged with 50 counts of indecent sexual assault of minors from 1971 to 1996.[62] At least two dozen of his former players have accused him of sexual assault, one testifying it was a regular twice a week occurrence. Complainants have testified that they were molested in Higgins’ home, his car, on ferries, at tournaments and camps. Accusers at Higgins’ current criminal trial at Salisbury Crown Court have named four teammates who enjoyed successful professional careers, one being Alan Shearer, former captain of England’s national team.[63] These favorites called “Bob’s boys” were allegedly close to Coach Higgins, some staying overnight at the accused pedophile’s residence, though none of the four former pros have yet to publicly comment on just how intimate their relationship with their former coach was.

So far since the Woodward bombshell, at least ten coaches have been charged with historical sexual abuse, one has since died and seven are either convicted as offending pedophiles, or currently on trial or awaiting sentencing. As one of 17 ongoing city police investigations into this epidemic in early December 2016 just two weeks after the Woodward revelations, Manchester police already identified ten suspects based on reported abuse from 35 victims in its jurisdiction alone.[64]

Still another repeat offender, already jailed in 2002 for a string of pedophilic incidents involving pro baller Derek Bell and others, former junior coach and scout for Newcastle United George Ormond is currently back in court facing 36 more counts of indecent assault, one count of indecency with a child and one for sodomy.[65] Back in the 1970s Derek Bell was abused from age 12 to 16 by George Ormond.[66]

In Ormond's ongoing trial, it was learned that former Newcastle United's manager John Carver was informed in the spring of 1997 while Carver was lead coach of Newcastle's youth program that Newcastle United's Derek Bell made accusations against Carver's assistant coach Ormond.[67] Yet Carver chose to do nothing, allowing Ormond to continue traveling with the team working with his underage players. When asked why he did not take action, Carver explained to the Newcastle Crown Court that he first "needed to digest it." Though Carver was Ormond's boss, he never did digest it enough to even bother confronting his pedophile assistant, allowing him to continue to likely abuse more youth until his departure over a year later. Because neither Newcastle United investigated Ormond nor were the police ever notified to investigate, it was Derek Bell himself who reported Ormond to the police finally in January 2001.[68] Obviously this is yet another clear case of another Premier League team caught up engaging in yet another cover-up.

Meanwhile in Ireland and Scotland, still another case making the current headlines involves 72-year old Jim McCafferty who pleaded guilty to seven offenses molesting boys in the 1980s and while a Celtic FC youth coach in the 1990s.[69] His court sentencing is scheduled in June 2018. This ever-widening shameful scandal rocking the United Kingdom seems to have no end.

Just like all the rest of the pedo-sports scandals, for decades nothing was ever done to stop these known maniacal predators. Identical to the serial child rapists wearing priestly garb, protected by enabling bishops, cardinals and popes, influential soccer coaches and scouts affiliated with professional Premier League teams delivering sexually abused athletes to the pros have also been shielded by club owners, club personnel and sport association executives allowing offenders to quietly drift, free to harm yet more victims, apparently protected by a complicit, asleep-at-the-wheel British Football Association (FA) as well as the thoroughly corrupt, scandal-ridden FIFA as the presiding international football governing body (see Chapter 17 on FIFA). History shows that all Olympic sports worldwide are steeped in the same global pedophilia network and child athlete sex trafficking system.

To stem blowback from the unfolding scandal, in late November 2016 UK's Football Association launched an inquiry into many of its clubs guilty of child negligence, cover-up and obstruction of justice, promising to punish clubs in violation of laws and rules,[70] such as providing hush money in the Chelsea case to Gary Johnson. Within a few days of Woodward's eye opening lowdown, the FA announced:

We are working closely with the police to support their lead investigations and must ensure we do not do anything to interfere with or jeopardize the criminal process.[71]

If history is repeated, the above statement in code word encryption means: "With assistance from UK law enforcement, we will do our best to seal off the truth to ensure that top tiers of the global pedophilia cabal remain protected." If the UK Football Association is genuine, its probe will uncover the nation's "institutional failure to protect children,"[72] the very thing it said it was committed to doing 21 years ago. But if platitudes vowing to clean up its act are anything like USA Gymnastics and USA Swimming (see Chapter 17), expect its abysmal track record as this sport's national governing body and chief cover-upper to only continue to fail its child athletes in obedience to the elite's globalized pedo-network.

As an aside, Chelsea FC owner since 2003 - Russian billionaire oligarch Roman Abramovich’s visa extension was delayed by the UK government in May 2018, requiring him to explain how he made his fortune prior to 2003 as, per the global cabal, London-Moscow relations have soured. So due to his visa denial, in late May Abramovich was forced to miss his Chelsea team defeat Manchester City for the FA Cup title and instead acquire Israeli citizenship having already purchased a large estate outside Tel Aviv.[73] Since Israeli citizens do not need visas for short stays in Britain, for now the mogul is forced to spend less time at his three UK mansions. Meanwhile, any actual consequence that the British FA may levy against his Chelsea FC for its illicit hush fund and its other improprieties remain to be seen.

Though mainstream media’s job is to either pretend a global child sex trafficking network doesn’t exist at all, or when another serial pedophile does get outed in the press and cannot be avoided, the across-the-board MSM scripted focus never deviates from its “lone gunman” fake news narrative, concentrating virtually all its coverage on one identified sexual monster, be it Sandusky, Nassar or Bennell as the standardized, formulaic sleight of hand strategy to distract, divert and cover-up the global elephant in the room - the planetary controllers’ pedophilia network that’s always covertly behind every tip of the iceberg scandal ever exposed. And the Barry Bennell scandal is no different.

That said, Barry Bennell’s egregious criminal record is very telling in that the global network cabal has largely been his enabling protector beginning with his earliest known pedophilia in 1972 all the way up to his 2018 death sentence. With a little less help from the power elite - royalty and other planetary kingpins that allowed him to be convicted and sent to prison on four separate occasions only to get out of jail and resume offending ad nauseam, his highly prolific, near half century crime spree to a great extent parallels the infamous Luciferian himself Sir Jimmy Savile's, which is the main topic taken up in the next ever-revealing chapter.

In the November 2016 *Guardian* article we learned that Andy Woodward and hundreds of others were raped in the pervert Bennell's home, in his car, during tournament trips and youth football camps, even at Andy's own family home whenever the pedophile stayed overnight.[74] His mother would ask Andy why he was always so quiet but the young soccer player couldn't reveal his shameful secret. As if this wasn't excruciatingly insufferable enough, matters quickly turned from bad to worse when, to Andy's horrifying chagrin, at age 14 his wickedly abusive home wrecker began dating Andy's 16-year old sister that the monster over twice her age would soon be marrying in just two years. According to Woodward:

> *It was like a double whammy and he would try to abuse me sometimes even with my sister in the same house. Later, when their relationship became public, he would come round for Sunday dinner every weekend, sitting with my mum and dad and my family, laughing and joking. I was so frightened of him I just had to suffer in silence.*[75]

Imagine the seething anger, dread and hatred Andy must have felt witnessing his rapist having sex with his barely legal aged sister and then watching her marry the monster in 1991:

> *I had to attend that wedding, standing in the church when I really wanted to rip his throat out. It was torture - that's the only word to describe it.*[76]

After enduring four long years of his traumatizing nightmare, then adding insult to injury, forced to accept the reality that his evil pedovore brother-in-law was married to his sister, all this caused the young man's world to insidiously crumble from inside out. Despite Andy's innate athletic skills that carried him to the professional league as a Sheffield United and Bury defender among several other teams, his concentration on the field during his decade long career from 1992 to 2002 persistently suffered and his recurring anxiety, depressive and PTSD symptoms had him injury prone, both physically and psychically. To cover up ongoing panic attacks during a game, Andy would resort to faking a physical injury.[77] By age 29, Andy Woodward's professional career was already washed up due to the debilitating lasting effects from his chronic abuse. It wasn't until the predatory beast was well on his way to destroying both Woodward and his family that Andy finally opened up to disclose his protracted ordeal for the first time, after receiving a knock on his door from the police in 1998.

But first let's examine Bennell's nine lives as a most vile career criminal within the international judicial system beginning with his first arrest a near quarter century after he began sodomizing underage boys. In 1994 while still married to Andy Woodward's sister, Bennell was arrested in Jacksonville, Florida after sexually assaulting a 13-year old English boy attending a soccer camp and did four years in US jail for that offense.[78] The Florida police characterized the pedophile as having "almost an insatiable appetite" for brutally raping young boys.[79] With an already established child rape conviction and reputation as a voracious serial predator under his belt, in September 1997 Bennell was deported from an American prison to face more charges in 1998 back in England. That knock on Andy Woodward's door in 1998 resulted in Andy's anonymous testimony, along with five other Bennell victims aged 9 to 15, to once again temporarily put the pedo-fiend out of commission for a second incarceration lasting nine years.

That same year 1998, Andy's sister left her derelict husband ending their 7-year marriage. Her tormented younger brother finally mustered up the nerve to tell his family about his dark shameful past secret. Though it came as a terrible shock for Andy's sister and their parents to learn that Bennell sexually abused Andy and many other boys for years without their knowing, just getting the truth out and helping to send his abuser to prison where he permanently belongs had Andy Woodward playing the best soccer of his 10-year professional career.[80]

Immediately after the pedophile jailbird got out of prison in 2007, Bennell was somehow able to afford a luxury holiday in the Canary Islands where he enticed a married woman vacationing with her family to begin engaging in an extramarital affair.[81] The devastated husband of the woman he'd spent the last 20 years of his life with whom he shared their 9-year old son and 11-year old daughter maintains that once back home in England, his wife arranged a secret rendezvous with Bennell in London under the pretense of Christmas shopping. A short time later she left a note stating, "I've gone and won't be coming back." Her abandoning her family for Bennell left the kids crying under their beds and the husband suffering a massive heart attack and life-saving triple bypass operation. His now ex-wife apparently became the pedophile's loyal living companion. And both she and the daughter continue visiting the derelict in prison, blindly insisting that he is innocent of all charges (just like the Sandusky wife and kids save one). Of course back in 2007 unaware that Bennell was a child rapist, the jilted hubby went to the press earlier this year to bitterly recall his Canary Island creepy encounter with his version of home wrecker Bennell:

> *He* [Bennell] *was there, lounging around, boasting about his money and his cars and his big house, how he'd been a football coach in the US. He was full of himself. But he only told half the story didn't he? He forgot to mention that he was a paedophile who'd done two stints in jail. He loved*

> *sunbathing, tanning himself up, sitting round the pool, watching the kids. I'd take the kids to the beach but my wife would stay chatting with him.*[82]

The husband added:

> *Before this we were a happy family. I never thought she would go for him. He was an old man, he wasn't even good looking. He had this young lad with him, in his mid-20s, who he said was his career. He'd carry his bags and drive if they went out.*[83]

Strange how fresh out of the joint, an aging sicko "boy lover" who keeps getting locked up for rape could afford a lavish holiday vacationing in the islands with a hired boy toy in tow making time with a soon-to-be adulterous wife… unless he was being sponsored by a larger pedo-network shielding him as in both the Sandusky and Nassar cases. Once released from prison, again like the rest of the designated pedo-monsters, every chance they get, Barry and company are at it again, allowed to continue unabated violating hundreds more victims. The pedo-system, with its revolving door policy, grants pedophiles a repeated free pass to seemingly inflict unlimited harm on society, in this case on young English soccer playing aspirants to the Premier League that betrayed both their trust and their dreams.

A third arrest was made in 2015 after charges were raised of raping a 12-year old attending a youth course in Macclesfield in 1980.[84] Yet incredibly, the now three time convicted pedophile received the lightest sentence of his 43-year old criminal career - just two years. Again, invisible protection from above seems the most plausible possible explanation considering over two decades earlier international law enforcement had already become aware of this child rapist's "insatiable [global] appetite." The slap on the hand and resultant little publicity generated from this

2015 case ultimately prompted an incensed Andy Woodward who'd kept his secret hidden from the public for over three decades to decide it was finally time to courageously reveal the horrible truth about his past in a mid-November 2016 *Guardian* interview.[85]

As if he could simply shed his skin and escape his hellish past, upon release from his third prison stint, Barry Bennell has been passing himself off as Richard Jones,[86] a nondescript name to assimilate into society if there ever was one. But as the expression goes, a pedo-leopard can never change its spots. To this day, Andy Woodward's singular public confession opened up this never ending floodgate of thousands of British men and boys coming forth to report their own sexual trauma as youth playing athletes, similar to the *Boston Globe*'s 2002 scandal-breaking bombshell that exposed the Catholic Church pedophilia on a systemic industrial scale operating worldwide for many scores if not centuries.

By age 43, Andy had spent the prior decade and a half since his pro-career retirement working a dozen years in a police department while psychologically working on himself fulltime to heal the grave emotional scars that have been in his words, "the massive, horrible burden" haunting the previous 32 years of his tormented life:

> *I think the main reason I had to do this was because I've gone through hell, I've gone through problems with my relationships, my poor ex-wives have suffered, my children have suffered, they haven't had the dad that they should, I've had nervous breakdowns. It got to the point now where I've had the therapy now that I felt strong enough, and it's always been in my stomach, I knew what went on at the time, I knew how many victims have been involved in this.*[87]

Though the untold damage and heavy wreckage the serial predator inflicted on Andy, his sister and parents were devastating beyond words, Andy Woodward suspected that “hundreds” (more like thousands) of other victims just like him were also suffering from decades’ worth of this enormously agonizing, life reducing hardship. And he was right. Because he was strong enough to make sufficient progress in overcoming this lifelong trauma from totally destroying his life, he knew he had to divulge, educate and alert the public of this endemic cancer that has spread throughout both his and his homeland’s beloved sport. For his own salvation and the salvation of so many others struggling with these chronic crippling effects of childhood sexual abuse, from his own harrowing perspective, Andy had to lay bare this scourge of pedophilia. In his words:

> *Only now, at the age of 43, I feel I can actually live without that secret and that massive, horrible burden. I want to get it out and give other people an opportunity to do the same. I want to give people strength. I survived it. I lost my career, which was a massive thing for me, but I’m still here. I came through the other side. Other people can have that strength.*[88]

Instinctively the parasitic vultures always know who the most vulnerable, defenseless kids are to hone in and prey on. From the quiet one himself:

> *He would always pick the soft ones with the quiet parents who were less likely to challenge him.*[89] *I was soft-natured, too, and it was the softer, weaker boys Bennell targeted.*[90]

On at least ten occasions a suicidal Andy Woodward was on the verge of killing himself by hanging, carbon monoxide, pills, you name it.[91] But he was lucky, the overwhelming despair and pain experienced by likely victims of the sadistic sodomizer proved too much to bear for at least four identified former Bennell players.[92] The most celebrated was the Welsh star and Wales national manager Gary Speed who hung himself at the age of 42 in 2011.

Along with suicide, alcohol and drug addiction as unhealthy coping mechanisms for self-medicating the psychic pain, anxiety, depression, recurring flashbacks and nightmares are commonplace symptoms lingering even years and decades after the abuse. In so many cases for victims, it’s a lifelong condition that shortens life by an average of twenty years.[93]

Andy Woodward boldly going public with the horrors that Bennell perpetrated on him was the crack in the wall that ultimately broke this scandalous UK dike as hundreds of victims began calling the established national helpline and local police stations to reveal the pedophilic crimes of not just Bennell as the MSM designated monster but hundreds of other monster coaches, scouts and football personnel. As of February 2018, during the ensuing 15 months since Andy Woodward’s *Guardian* interview, 293 other suspects (besides Bennell) have been identified.[94] Within 13 months of the interview, 839 victims have emerged reporting 2,094 incidents involving 334 different clubs. We know that many more sexually abused males are far less apt to report incidents than those who do, so it’s safe to accurately conclude that, like the devil-incarnate from the entertainment field Jimmy Savile, this devil-incarnate from the sports field also brutally assaulted children well into the thousands. With Bennell just one sexual predator amongst thousands, and likely millions worldwide, each abusing a number of victims, and today we currently face the plague of the ages that all of us must reckon with and fight against. No exaggeration, it’s literally life or death time for humanity.

Andy Woodward’s confession outed one of the most prolific serial pedophiles in UK history (perhaps right behind Jimmy Savile), triggering the largest police investigation into sexual abuse in Great Britain’s history.[95] Pedophilia saturating United Kingdom soccer as well as its government, entertainment, and aristocracy class is unparalleled, unprecedented, and on an industrial scale. But outside the victims, the perps, and other insiders within the sport, until recently no one actually knew just how colossal this epidemic really is. And this is just in one sport in one nation alone, albeit the pedophilia epicenter of the entire earth.

But pedophilia scandals in youth football are not just limited to the British alone. A current child sex abuse ring has been discovered within the world’s most popular sport in Brazil, where in April 2018 Andy Woodward was invited as a consultant to assist in combatting that nation’s enormous pedo-epidemic.[96] Also in neighboring Argentina a pedophilia scandal is now growing in soccer as well as other Olympic club sports.[97] Clearly the worldwide pedophilia network has long been tapped into and exploiting the seemingly unlimited source of 45 million kids in the US alone playing organized sports.[98] And as of 2007, 22 million registered youth worldwide are playing soccer alone,[99] offering an ever-expanding pool of potential victims to the evil ones.

Because after November 16, 2016, 86 more Barry Bennell victims joined Andy Woodward admitting he violated and destroyed their childhood innocence as well,[100] days later Liverpool Crown Court was compelled to re-charge the pedophilic scout-coach with yet more sex abuse crimes committed against a dozen young boys between the ages of 8 and 15 from 1979 to 1991 from the Manchester City and Crewe Alexandra clubs alone. The five and a half week trial in January and February 2018 led to Bennell’s fourth conviction, this time on 50 counts carrying a sentence of 31 more years behind bars, placing the current 64-year old in prison until age 95.[101] And having undergone cancer of the tongue already, like Sandusky and Nassar in America, Bennell will die in prison.

In a parallel process with the Nassar court, last February intense, emotional impact statements were heard in Liverpool Crown Court from a half dozen of Bennell's victims confronting their rapist during his sentencing hearing. Former Manchester City youth player Chris Unsworth stated that as an adult he was compelled to undergo vasectomy surgery due to the chronic abuse carried out over a hundred times by perpetrator Bennell, leaving Chris with an "overwhelming fear" he could never protect any children he may have from predators like his former coach:

I could not risk the same horrendous abuse happening to them.[102]

When Judge Clement Goldstone QC sentenced Bennell to 31 years, he described the monster as "sheer evil":

To those boys you appeared as a god... in reality you were the devil incarnate. You stole their childhoods and their innocence.[103]

Outside court a vindicated Andy Woodward commented:

No sentence is long enough for that man and right to the death he didn't show any remorse or say sorry to anyone. I'm proud that I did speak out. If I hadn't have done, we all wouldn't be stood here now today.[104]

Due to the sheer volume of Bennell victims, over seven times the dozen that legally put him away for the next three decades, the 17 still ongoing police investigations may result in Bennell's further prosecution. Scores of his abuse victims are also rightfully filing civil suits against Crewe, Manchester City and numerous other clubs for knowingly harboring serial pedophiles in addition to suits being brought against the UK Football Association as the full criminal culpability and criminality of the larger pedo-network get uncovered. It’s no accident earlier this year that gymnastics victims in America and soccer victims in the United Kingdom have been simultaneously fighting back through their respective justice systems. Finally, the pedophilia crime cabal is reckoning with its Achilles heel and is on the run, desperately using its MSM propaganda machine to squelch and deny the truth. But at this point in history, unlike all the time prior on this earth, the truth will not and cannot be stopped.

As in every other pedophilia scandal to date, overwhelming evidence exists indicating that for years the larger pedo-system was in place not only operating to protect the UK’s soccer scandal’s designated monster but also his peers and their higher-ups in this now familiar Luciferian food chain. It confirms the deeper truth behind every pedo-scandal spanning every sport and beyond - that in every instance the elite power structure that runs this world isn’t just a complicit enabler, it is the very source of this planet’s current pedophilia plague inflicting untold damage to every tentacled corner of the globe.

In November 2016 just as America’s pre-election Pizzagate scandal was reaching fever pitch exposing the Clinton-Podesta-Obama connection to Washington DC’s major child sex trafficking ring, the courageous Andy Woodward became the first professional footballer to come out of the skeleton-filled pedo-closet unveiling the rampant scourge long infesting the most prized British sport of all. Despite their life-altering sexual trauma, heroic victim-turned-survivors like Andy Woodward, as well as Makayla Maroney and Jennifer Raisman from US Gymnastics, manage to achieve ultimate success and fame in their chosen sports, then bravely go public with their shocking dark secrets, thus becoming the empowering voice of millions of abused children worldwide, irreparably harmed and even murdered by the Luciferian killing machine. These courageous souls and all victims who bravely report the ugly truth at great peril to themselves should all be exalted as our modern day heroes.

Joining the growing number of voices for justice last February outside the Liverpool courtroom facing the press were three of Bennell's victims from an organization called Offside Trust, started by ex-professional players in November 2016 that serves to end abuse in sports while supporting victims of child abuse. Steve Walters, Mickey Fallon and Chris Unsworth read their statements aloud. The following impassioned passage was delivered by Chris:

Our justice is your justice, your suffering is our suffering. We stand together and together we have this message to all those who abuse children or turned a blind eye or cover up child sex abuse - your time is up. Our case was about abuse that took place decades ago but child sex abuse is happening today and it is destroying lives. Families are wrecked, relationships are poisoned and some wounds can never be healed. But from this tragedy there is hope. The healing journey of survivors is a difficult road, but one we no longer walk alone. Thanks to organizations like the Offside Trust, survivors are supported. Unspoken truths and frightened whispers have turned into powerful voices.[105]

Though the earth is endemically controlled by sub-human pedovores atop the food chain, nowhere is it more deeply rooted than at its very epicenter - the United Kingdom, where Lucifer's hold in Freemasonry and the occult has secretly flourished for many centuries. And no other pedo-scandal connects the demonic dots more illustratively and empirically than the Jimmy Savile case covered fully in the next chapter.

Endnotes

---

[1] Daniel Taylor, “Barry Bennell Found Guilty of Sexually Abusing Youth Footballers,” *The Guardian*, February 13, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/feb/13/barry-bennell-found-guilty-of-sexually-abusing-youth-footballers.

[2] David Conn, “Premier League Remains World’s Richest Courtesy of Huge TV Revenue Growth,” *The Guardian*, July 12, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2017/jul/11/premier-league-worlds-richest-tv-revenue-growth.

[3] Jack Kenmare, “The Most Watched League in European Football Revealed,” *Sport Bible*, January 17, 2018, http://www.sportbible.com/football/news-take-a-bow-the-most-watched-league-in-european-football-championship-la-liga-20180117.

[4] Sara Kamouni, “Pedophile Football Coach Barry Bennell Worked in a Children’s Home for Two Years – as new Victim Reveals Pinball Machine and Hardcore Porn in Predator’s Lair,” *The Sun*, November 27, 2016, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/2273248/paedophile-football-coach-barry-bennell-worked-in-a-childrens-home-for-two-years-as-new-victim-reveals-pinball-machine-and-hardcore-porn-in-predators-lair/.

[5] Nicholas Watt and Patrick Wintour, “Children’s Homes were a ‘Supply Line’ for Paedophiles, says Ex-Minister,” *The Guardian*, July 8, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2014/jul/08/children-homes-supply-line-paedophiles-lord-warner.

[6] Harriet Agerholm, “Bodies of Hundreds of Children ‘Buried in Mass Grave in Lanarkshire,’” *Independent*, September 10, 2017, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/bodies-hundreds-children-buried-mass-grave-lanarkshire-smyllum-park-catholic-orphanage-a7938716.html.

[7] Josh Halliday, Katharine Viner and Lisa O’Carroll, Jimmy Savile Linked with Haut de la Garenne Children's Home Scandal,” *The Guardian*, October 9, 2012, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2012/oct/08/jimmy-savile-jersey-childrens-home.

[8] Matthew Weaver, “The Main Allegations against Ted Heath,” *The Guardian*, October 5, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2017/oct/05/the-main-allegations-against-ted-heath.

[9] Nico Hines, “How Thatcher’s Government Covered up a VIP Pedophile Ring,” *The Guardian*, March 6, 2015, https://www.thedailybeast.com/how-thatchers-government-covered-up-a-vip-pedophile-ring.

[10] Brandon Turbeville, “The Prince and the Pedophile: Charles’ Connections to Pedophilia Networks,” *Activist Post*, November 16, 2012, https://www.activistpost.com/2012/11/the-prince-and-pedophile-charles.html.

[11] Sara Kamouni, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/2273248/paedophile-football-coach-barry-bennell-worked-in-a-childrens-home-for-two-years-as-new-victim-reveals-pinball-machine-and-hardcore-porn-in-predators-lair/.

[12] Sara Kamouni, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/2273248/paedophile-football-coach-barry-bennell-worked-in-a-childrens-home-for-two-years-as-new-victim-reveals-pinball-machine-and-hardcore-porn-in-predators-lair/.

[13] Richard Moriarty and Annabel Howard, "Ex-Player Reveals Fears he was first Victim of Paedo Footie Coach as he Claims Sex Beast Barry Bennell Abused him as a Schoolboy Aged 13," *The Sun*, November 27, 2016, https://www.thesun.co.uk/sport/2272291/ex-player-reveals-fears-he-was-first-victim-of-paedo-footie-coach-as-he-claims-sex-beast-barry-bennell-abused-him-as-a-schoolboy-aged-13/.

[14] Katrin Bennhold, "Child Sexual Abuse Rocks U.K. Soccer," *The New York Times*, December 13, 2016, https://www.nytimes.com/2016/12/13/world/europe/soccer-uk-sexual-abuse-andy-woodward.html.

[15] Katrin Bennhold, https://www.nytimes.com/2016/12/13/world/europe/soccer-uk-sexual-abuse-andy-woodward.html.

[16] Daniel Taylor, "Barry Bennell Abused Boys Hundreds of Times, Court told," *The Guardian*, January 9, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/jan/09/football-coach-barry-bennell-was-determined-paedophile-court-told.

[17] Jeremy Armstrong, Patrick Hill and Phil Cardy, "Pedophile Barry Bennell's Lair was full of Bunkbeds and Hardcore Porn, Reveals new Victim of Football ex Abuse Scandal," *Mirror*, November 26, 2016, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/new-victim-football-paedophile-barry-9344101.

[18] Daniel Taylor, "Football Coach Barry Bennell had three Boys in Bed at once, Trial told," *The Guardian*, January 10, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/jan/10/barry-bennell-had-up-to-four-football-boys-in-bed-at-once-trial-hears.

[19] Daniel Taylor, "Barry Bennell Abused Boys in Remote 'Haunted House,' Court told, *The Guardian*, January 11, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/jan/11/barry-bennell-abused-boys-in-remote-haunted-house-court-told.

[20] "Football Sex Abuse: Who is Barry Bennell?' *BBC*, February 15, 2018, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-38104681.

[21] Daniel Taylor, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/jan/09/football-coach-barry-bennell-was-determined-paedophile-court-told.

[22] Glenda Cooper, “Boy Soccer Players being put at Risk,” Independent, January 23, 1997, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/boy-soccer-players-being-put-at-risk-1284592.html.

[23] Glenda Cooper, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/boy-soccer-players-being-put-at-risk-1284592.html.

[24] Glenda Cooper, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/boy-soccer-players-being-put-at-risk-1284592.html.

[25] Katrin Bennhold, https://www.nytimes.com/2016/12/13/world/europe/soccer-uk-sexual-abuse-andy-woodward.html.

[26] Katrin Bennhold, https://www.nytimes.com/2016/12/13/world/europe/soccer-uk-sexual-abuse-andy-woodward.html.

[27] Daniel Taylor, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/jan/11/barry-bennell-abused-boys-in-remote-haunted-house-court-told.

[28] Daniel Taylor, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/jan/11/barry-bennell-abused-boys-in-remote-haunted-house-court-told.

[29] Daniel Taylor, “Manchester City ‘Ignored Warnings’ and kept Barry Bennell in Youth set-up,” *The Guardian*, February 15, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2018/feb/15/manchester-city-barry-bennell-warning.

[30] Martyn Ziegler, “Crewe were called ‘the Paedophile Club,’” *The Times*, February 17, 2018, https://www.thetimes.co.uk/article/crewe-were-called-the-paedophile-club-8qlg3xg6h.

[31] Daniel Taylor, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2018/feb/15/manchester-city-barry-bennell-warning.

[32] Daniel Taylor, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2018/feb/15/manchester-city-barry-bennell-warning.

[33] Daniel Taylor, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2018/feb/15/manchester-city-barry-bennell-warning.

[34] Daniel Taylor, “Crewe were Warned about Barry Bennell but he Stayed on, says Former Board Member,” *The Guardian*, November 25, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2016/nov/25/crewe-barry-bennell-former-board-member.

[35] James Drucker, "Crewe 'Burying Heads in Sand' after Reneging on Promise to Conduct Independent Inquiry on Barry Bennell's Crimes," *The Telegraph*, March 2, 2018, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/football/2018/03/02/crewe-burying-heads-sand-reneging-promise-conduct-independent/.

[36] James Drucker, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/football/2018/03/02/crewe-burying-heads-sand-reneging-promise-conduct-independent/.

[37] Daniel Taylor, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2016/nov/25/crewe-barry-bennell-former-board-member.

[38] John Richardson, "Dario Gradi Emerges from 14-Month Exile after Links to Paedo Coach Barry Bennell and gets Standing Ovation at Club Event," *Mirror*, March 3, 2018, https://www.mirror.co.uk/sport/dario-gradi-emerges-14-month-12121594.

[39] Vikram Dodd and Steven Forrest, "Ted Heath would have been Questioned over Abuse Claims, Police say," *The Guardian*, October 5, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2017/oct/05/ted-heath-would-have-been-questioned-over-seven-abuse-claims-police-say.

[40] Ian Gallagher, "'He simply got carried away': How Chelsea explained away the Vile Actions of their Paedophile Scout... according to the Brave Boy, 15, who Alerted them 40 Years ago," *Daily Mail*, December 18, 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4044720/He-simply-got-carried-away-Chelsea-explained-away-vile-actions-paedophile-scout-according-brave-boy-15-alerted-40-years-ago.html.

[41] Ian Gallagher, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4044720/He-simply-got-carried-away-Chelsea-explained-away-vile-actions-paedophile-scout-according-brave-boy-15-alerted-40-years-ago.html.

[42] Richard Spillett, Mike Keegan, Ian Herbert and Adam Crafton, "Barry Bennell 'Swapped Victims with other Paedophiles' in 20-year Reign of Abuse that saw him Prey on up to 114 Young Footballers by 'Grooming them with Trips to Man Utd's Training Ground,'" *Daily Mail*, February 15, 2018, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5395407/Barry-Bennell-guilty-three-child-sex-offences.html.

[43] Eleanor Barlow, "Crewe Boss Dario Gradi 'let Boys to Stay at Coach's House,'" *Mirror*, January 19, 2018, https://www.mirror.co.uk/sport/football/news/alleged-victim-barry-bennell-claims-11878233.

[44] James Drucker, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/football/2018/03/02/crewe-burying-heads-sand-reneging-promise-conduct-independent/.

[45] Matt Lawton, "Chelsea Paid £50,000 to Eddie Heath Sex Abuse Victim Gary Johnson as FA Promise Crackdown on Clubs," *Daily Mail*, December 2, 2016,

http://www.dailymail.co.uk/sport/sportsnews/article-3992030/FA-tough-Chelsea-Eddie-Heath-child-sex-abuse.html.

[46] Matt Lawton, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/sport/sportsnews/article-3992030/FA-tough-Chelsea-Eddie-Heath-child-sex-abuse.html.

[47] Robert Mendrick, “Chelsea Chief Scout Accused of Child Sex Abuse once Trained Barry Bennell, it Emerges,” *The Telegraph*, November 30, 2016, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2016/11/30/chelsea-chief-scout-accused-child-sex-abuse-trained-barry-bennell/.

[48] James Drucker, “Crewe’s Refusal to Conduct Internal Barry Bennell Inquiry is ‘Totally Unacceptable,’ says Damian Collins,” *The Telegraph*, March 14, 2018, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/football/2018/03/14/crewes-refusal-conduct-internal-barry-bennell-inquiry-totally/.

[49] John Richardson, https://www.mirror.co.uk/sport/dario-gradi-emerges-14-month-12121594.

[50] Matt Payton, “Football Sex Abuse Scandal: Crewe Alexandra ‘had been Warned about Coach Barry Bennell,’” *Independent*, November 26, 2016, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/football-sex-abuse-crewe-alexandra-coach-barry-bennell-a7440196.html.

[51] David Taylor, https://www.irishtimes.com/sport/soccer/english-soccer/manchester-city-ignored-warnings-over-barry-bennell-1.3393441.

[52] Ian Herbert, “Barry Bennell: Convicted Paedophile Worked with at least four Professional Clubs,” *Independent*, November 25, 2016, https://www.independent.co.uk/sport/football/news-and-comment/barry-bennell-sexual-abuse-scandal-manchester-city-leeds-stoke-crewe-a7437541.html.

[53] Daniel Taylor, “Barry Bennell: The Predatory Pied Piper who made Stars and Shattered Lives,” *The Guardian*, February 15, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2018/feb/15/barry-bennell-abuse-manchester-city-crewe.

[54] Richard Spillett, Mike Keegan, Ian Herbert and Adam Crafton, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5395407/Barry-Bennell-guilty-three-child-sex-offences.html.

[55] Paul Byrne, “Victim of Vile Barry Bennell says Pervert Passed him on to Paedophile Pal,” *Mirror*, February 16, 2018, https://www.mirror.co.uk/sport/football/news/victim-vile-barry-bennell-says-12039811.

[56] Jack Gaughan and Adam Crafton, “Former Youth Coach Frank Roper Accused of Abusing 31 Young Players,” *Daily Mail*, August 18, 2017, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/sport/sportsnews/article-4803650/Former-youth-coach-accused-abusing-31-young-players.html.

[57] Paul Byrne, https://www.mirror.co.uk/sport/football/news/victim-vile-barry-bennell-says-12039811.

[58] Richard Spillett, Mike Keegan, Ian Herbert and Adam Crafton, “Barry Bennell Passed me on to another Paedophile Football Coach who also Molested me, Claims Victim,” *Daily Mail*, February 17, 2018, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5403211/Bennell-passed-paedophile-claims-victim.html.

[59] Jeremy Armstrong, “Paul Stewart: I was Abused by Coach who Threatened to Kill my Family if I told,” *Mirror*, November 27, 2016, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/paul-stewart-sexually-abused-coach-9313094.

[60] Jeremy Armstrong, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/paul-stewart-sexually-abused-coach-9313094.

[61] Phil Cardy, “Victim of Paedophile Football Coach told Police about Monster 13 Years ago - but Nothing was done,” *Mirror*, December 31, 2016, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/victim-paedophile-football-coach-told-9543707

[62] “Bob Higgins Trial: Coach Abused Teen Twice a Week,” *BBC*, June 1, 2018, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-england-hampshire-44331880.

[63] Steven Morris, “Alan Shearer was Close to Coach Accused of Abusing Boys, Court told,” The Guardian, June 14, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/jun/14/alan-shearer-was-close-to-coach-accused-of-abusing-boys-court-told.

[64] Matt Lawton, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/sport/sportsnews/article-3992030/FA-tough-Chelsea-Eddie-Heath-child-sex-abuse.html.

[65] “Hearing about Bennell Victim’s Ordeal ‘Inspired Player to Speak out about Abuse,’” *The Free Press*, June 14, 2018, http://www.denbighshirefreepress.co.uk/news/national/16288531.Hearing_about_Bennell_victim___s_ordeal____inspired_player_to_speak_out_about_abuse.

[66] David Conn, “Newcastle United Accused of a Cover-up in 1990s by Sex Abuse Victim Derek Bell,” *The Guardian*, December 1, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2016/dec/01/newcastle-accused-cover-up-1990s-abuse.

[67] David Conn, “Ex-Newcastle Manager did not take Action on Abuse Claims right away,” *The Guardian*, June 18, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/jun/18/ex-newcastle-manager-did-not-take-action-on-abuse-claims-right-away-john-carver-trial-george-ormond.

[68] David Conn, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2016/dec/01/newcastle-accused-cover-up-1990s-abuse.

[69] "Wishaw Youth Football Coach and ex Celtic Kitman Admits Child Sex Offences," *Daily Record*, May 22, 2018, https://www.dailyrecord.co.uk/news/local-news/wishaw-youth-football-coach-ex-12575994.

[70] Martin Domin, "FA sets up an Internal Inquiry into Allegations of Sexual Abuse in Football," *Mirror*, November 27, 2016, https://www.mirror.co.uk/sport/football/news/fa-sets-up-internal-inquiry-9344862.

[71] Martin Domin, https://www.mirror.co.uk/sport/football/news/fa-sets-up-internal-inquiry-9344862.

[72] Martin Domin, https://www.mirror.co.uk/sport/football/news/fa-sets-up-internal-inquiry-9344862.

[73] "Russian Oligarch Abramovich Takes Israeli Citizenship: Report," *Moscow Times*, May 29, 2018, https://themoscowtimes.com/news/russian-oligarch-abramovich-takes-israeli-citizenship-report-61610.

[74] Katrin Bennhold, https://www.nytimes.com/2016/12/13/world/europe/soccer-uk-sexual-abuse-andy-woodward.html.

[75] Daniel Taylor, "Andy Woodward: 'It was the Softer, Weaker Boys he Targeted," *The Guardian*, November 16, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2016/nov/16/andy-woodward.

[76] Daniel Taylor, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2016/nov/16/andy-woodward.

[77] Daniel Taylor, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2016/nov/16/andy-woodward.

[78] Dan Warburton and Phil Cardy, "'My Wife Ran off with Football Paedophile Barry Bennell - and Took my Children with her,'" *Mirror*, February 24, 2018, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/my-wife-ran-football-paedophile-12083856.

[79] James Masters and Milena Vaselinovic, "Barry Bennell: 31 Years in Jail for Soccer's 'Devil Incarnate,'" *CNN*, February 20, 2018, https://edition.cnn.com/2018/02/19/sport/barry-bennell-sexual-abuse-sentenced-intl/.

[80] Daniel Taylor, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2016/nov/16/andy-woodward.

[81] Dan Warburton and Phil Cardy, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/my-wife-ran-football-paedophile-12083856.

[82] Dan Warburton and Phil Cardy, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/my-wife-ran-football-paedophile-12083856.

[83]

[84] Rhiannon Hilton, "Former Crewe Alex Coach Sentenced for Child Sex Abuse," *Crewe Chronicle*, May 11, 2015, https://www.crewechronicle.co.uk/news/former-crewe-alex-coach-sentenced-9235124.

[85] Daniel Taylor, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2016/nov/16/andy-woodward.

[86] Daniel Taylor, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/jan/09/football-coach-barry-bennell-was-determined-paedophile-court-told.

[87] Martin Domin, https://www.mirror.co.uk/sport/football/news/fa-sets-up-internal-inquiry-9344862.

[88] Daniel Taylor, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2016/nov/16/andy-woodward.

[89] Katrin Bennhold, "Child Sexual Abuse Rocks U.K. Soccer," *The New York Times*, December 13, 2016, https://www.nytimes.com/2016/12/13/world/europe/soccer-uk-sexual-abuse-andy-woodward.html.

[90] Daniel Taylor, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2016/nov/16/andy-woodward.

[91] Daniel Taylor, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2016/nov/16/andy-woodward.

[92] Patrick Sawer, "Gary Speed was one of Four Men Coached by Barry Bennell who went on to take their own Lives, Court told," *The Telegraph*, January 17, 2018, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2018/01/17/gary-speed-one-four-men-coached-barry-bennell-went-take-lives/.

[93] Carina Storrs, "Is Life Expectancy Reduced by a Traumatic Childhood?" *Scientific American*, October 7, 2009, https://www.scientificamerican.com/article/childhood-adverse-event-life-expectancy-abuse-mortality/.

[94] Daniel Taylor, https://www.theguardian.com/football/2018/feb/15/barry-bennell-abuse-manchester-city-crewe.

[95] Daniel Taylor, Joseph Pierce, Josh Toussaint-Strauss and Ryan Baxter, Barry Bennell: Unmasking of Football Paedophile who Ruined Young Lives - Video Explainer," *The Guardian*, February 15, 2018,

https://www.theguardian.com/football/video/2018/feb/15/barry-bennell-a-football-scandal-video.

[96] Sally Lockwood, “Child Abuse Scandal Reaches Top of Brazilian Football,” *Sky News*, April 29, 2018, https://news.sky.com/story/child-abuse-scandal-reaches-top-of-brazilian-football-11351751.

[97] “Argentina's Child Sex Abuse Scandal Widens in Youth Sport,” *Telesur*, April 4, 2018, https://www.telesurtv.net/english/news/Argentinas-Child-Sex-Abuse-Scandal-Widens-in-Youth-Sport-Clubs-20180404-0019.html.

[98] Jay Atkinson, “How Parents are Ruining Youth Sports,” *Boston Globe*, May 4, 2014, https://www.bostonglobe.com/magazine/2014/05/03/how-parents-are-ruining-youth-sports/vbRln8qYXkrrNFJcsuvNyM/story.html.

[99] Matthias Kunz, “265 Million Playing Football,” *FIFA Magazine*, fifa.com, July 1, 2007, https://www.fifa.com/mm/document/fifafacts/bcoffsu.

[100] Dan Kay, “Scores more Victims come forward as Barry Bennell Convicted of further Offences,” *Liverpool Echo*, February 15, 2018, https://www.liverpoolecho.co.uk/news/uk-world-news/scores-more-victims-come-forward-14294812.

[101] John Harrison, “’Devil Incarnate’ Barry Bennell Sentenced to 31 Years,” *BBC*, February 19, 2018, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-43118069.

[102] John Harrison, “Barry Bennell Sentencing: Victims Speak of Ruined Lives,” *BBC*, February 19, 2018, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-43116870.

[103] John Harrison, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-43118069.

[104] John Harrison, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-43118069.

[105] Richard Spillett, Mike Keegan, Ian Herbert and Adam Crafton, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5395407/Barry-Bennell-guilty-three-child-sex-offences.html.

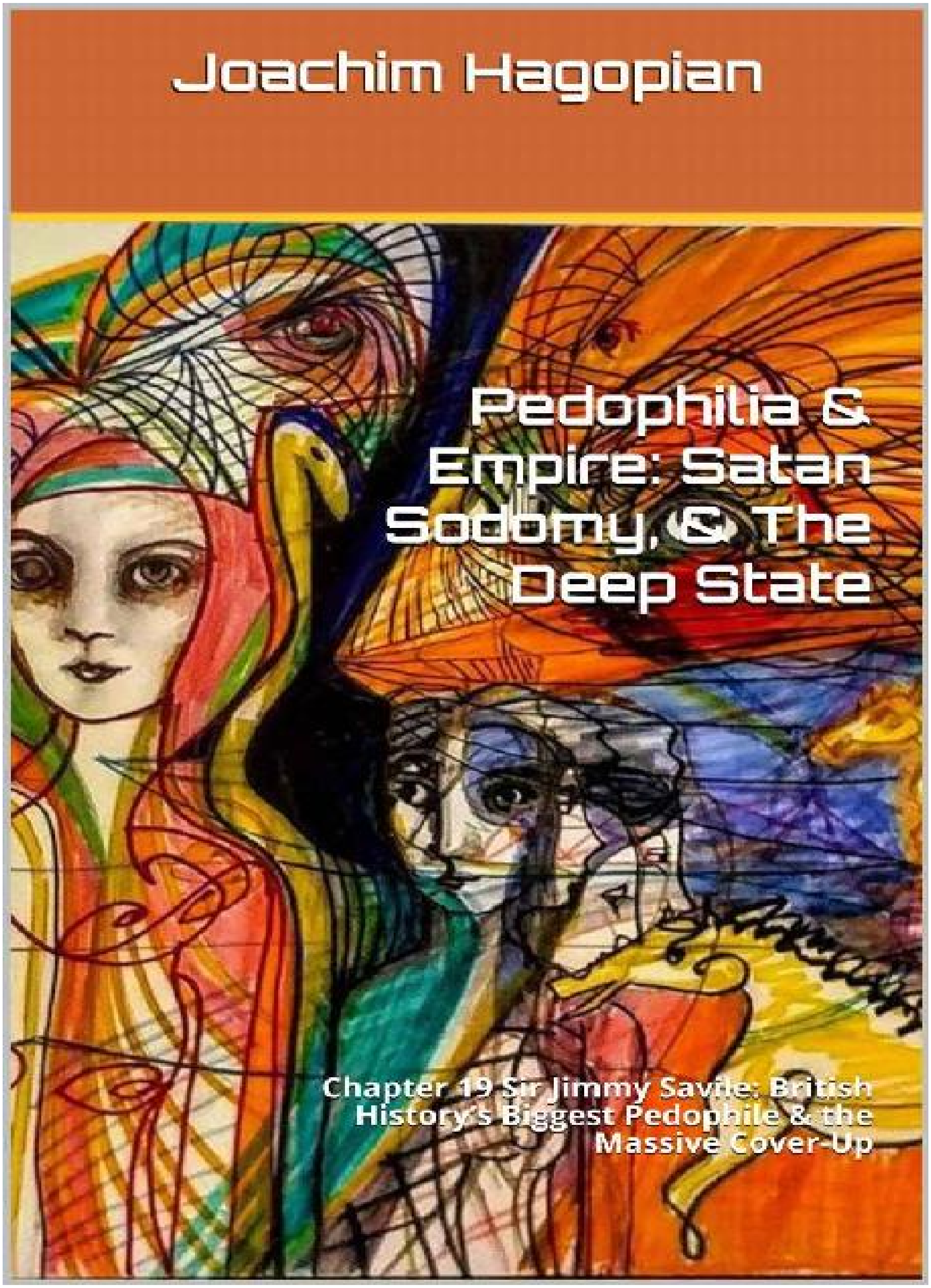

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 19 Sir Jimmy Savile: British History's Biggest Pedophile & the Massive Cover-Up

Chapter 19 Sir Jimmy Savile: British History’s Biggest Pedophile, Sexual Blackmail Kingpin, VIP Pimp, BBC Pedophile Ringleader and the Massive Cover-up

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission
http://www.noramaccoby.com/

And the designated pedophilia monster of the world [conveniently for him discovered after he died] goes to… [Drumroll please] – Sir Jimmy Savile of Great Britain, the pedophilia epicenter of the earth! He epitomizes the sleazy “charismatic” psychopath who finagles his way into the innermost sanctum of the British royals and top United Kingdom politicians as not only their intimate confidante, but their longtime pimp as well. All the while, via the telly for over half a century recognized as a humanitarian fundraiser for children’s charities, Sir Jimmy Savile played his dutifully deceptive public role of eccentric, clownish showman masquerading as a saint for institutionalized, bedridden British children in order to cover up his hidden-in-plain-sight sick crimes as a twisted sexual predator from Hell, covertly getting his rocks off raping both dead corpses and thousands of the most vulnerable, defenseless kids trapped inside British group homes and hospitals with creepiest, unprecedented 24/7 access of any human alive.

A brief intro to James Wilson Vincent Savile (October 31, 1926-Ocober 29, 2011) offers some very telling clues. Savile was the youngest of seven children (with four sisters and two brothers) born on Halloween to working class Roman Catholic parents in Leeds in northern England. Fitting that he always promoted his Halloweenish, ghoulishly creepy image as the wildly unpredictable eccentric prankster-trickster while a not-so-secret lover of dead corpses, Satanist practitioner of ancient occult rituals at the same time pretending to be a devout Catholic would enter this world on Halloween, with its pagan origin the Celtic new year's eve as well as eve of the Day of the Dead and the later Catholic makeover All Saints Day.[1] His mother Agnes' birthday was the day after his on All Saints Day of the Dead.[2] The Celts believed that their favorite deity, the sun god, during the coming winter months was taken prisoner by Samhain, the Lord of the Dead and Prince of Darkness, no doubt something by misdeed that the shady, dark character Savile would secretly identify with and fashion himself after.

Though relatively little has been written about Savile's boyhood, as the seventh and final offspring born to a financially strapped, large family raised during the Great Depression era of the 1930s, Savile has claimed that his arrival was unplanned and unwanted.[3] His father made meager earnings as a bookmaker clerk and insurance salesman.[4] At the age of two, it's been reported that Jimmy Savile nearly died of a life threatening illness, probably pneumonia, with the doctor fearing the worst, leaving a death certificate at his bedside.[5] But as Savile tells it, suddenly the toddler bounced back from the near dead, his sister calling it a miracle. Their mother had rushed off to pray at Leeds St. Anne's Cathedral where she found a pamphlet introducing the Scottish nun Margaret Sinclair who had died three years earlier at age 25, just over a half century prior to the pope in 1978 elevating her to Venerable status.[6] Per Savile, by the time Agnes returned home, little Jimmy had made a complete and instant recovery, attributing his mother's prayers invoking divine intervention from the Scottish factory girl nun as his lifesaver. Along with others, his testimonial was sent to Rome for review in efforts to enshrine nun Margaret Sinclair as a saint. Perhaps his love affair for would-be saint Margaret spilled over five decades later in his “love” for Margaret Thatcher. Their unholy pedophilia alliance is fully covered in Chapter 21.

The Emergency Powers Act conscripted Savile as a teen during World War II to work as a Bevin Boy in the mines but an alleged spinal back injury caused by a mine explosion apparently liberated him from the drudgery and hard labor as a miner.[7] He went on to try his hand as a pro athlete in bicycle racing and wrestling but soon gravitated to popular music and the burgeoning late 1940s dancehall scene. Jimmy Savile credits himself as the world’s very first Disc Jockey in addition to pioneering the novel idea of placing dual turntables next to each other for nonstop record play, though his future employer the *BBC* had instructional documents back in the early 1930s predating his self-credited “invention” long before he was even calling himself a DJ. But truth was never quite so important to Sir Jimmy as self-image enhancement and braggadocio for his grandiose self-promotion feeding the bottomless pit of a highly-conceited ego. As a brutally willful, extremely manipulative psychopath and brazen, in-your-face self-aggrandizer, the world seemed destined to revolve around him and his diabolical needs.

As Savile rose to fame throughout the 1960s and 1970s with such long running *BBC* standard fare as Top of the Pops making its broadcast debut on January 1, 1964 to 2006 and later Jim’ll Fix It from 1975 to 1994 granting children their dream requests come true, at the height of his popularity in the late 70s, the dream magician attracted 20 million viewers and 20,000 letters a week from hopeful kids across Great Britain.[8] Savile quickly became an enduring household name and TV icon in the UK for multiple generations of families. Then using his “tireless” philanthropy for various children’s health causes as a deceitful cover while masquerading as the devoted Catholic saint receiving knighthoods from both the queen and the pope, in actuality all the while he was an evil imposter molesting his way to becoming Britain's most cruel, sadistic child sex maniac of all time, getting his rocks off gravely harming thousands among the most frail and defenseless population of all, the young, infirm and the dead. But he could never have done it without a supporting cast, platform and protective system. But more on that later.

Savile has been quoted casually proclaiming that women "equal brain damage."[9] The perennially unmarried misogynist and violently sexist predator took his hatred predominantly out on the fairer sex, forcing himself on his victims, constantly groping, molesting and raping females his entire adult life, mostly young girls with 82% of his victims reportedly female and 80% children.[10] But he targeted victims of all ages and genders, including boys and adult males as well. Doing Satan's work turned out to be his fulltime preoccupation while his "tireless" charity efforts took a backseat serving as his convenient part-time cover. Savile mercilessly loved inflicting pain on less powerful individuals.

Jimmy Savile's relationship to his mother Agnes was a complicatedly twisted love-hate affair. On the one hand, he projected the image as the devoted son, loyally and faithfully living with and taking care of her at his flat in Scarborough until her death in 1972.[11] He described his mother "the Duchess" as the "only true love of his life, the only woman I ever loved," and the week he spent with her lying dead in open casket was "the best five days of my life," adding:

Once upon a time I had to share her with other people. We had marvelous times. When she was dead she was all mine, for me.[12]

As a necrophiliac, one can only imagine. For the next four decades right up to his own death in 2011, in bizarre, faithful homage, he left his mummy's bedroom unchanged, keeping all her clothes in her closet as is, other than religiously dry-cleaning them once a year.[13]

But on the other hand, in his final, never published interview just three months prior to his death, Savile revealed:

My mother never got round to being proud. If anyone said, 'What is Jimmy like?' she would say, 'I don't know what he's up to, but he's up to something.' She never trusted me as she thought I was going to get nicked and end up in the pokey.[14]

Perhaps his mother's intuition knew that Sir Jimmy was actually a fraud and pathological criminal psychopath who deserved to be in jail. "The Duchess" no doubt saw past his phony saintly facade belying his truly dark and sick nature at his core. It's also worth noting that Agnes Savile apparently raised three sons who later as adults all became sexual predators.[15]

While Sir James Savile became the single, most prolific charity fundraiser[16] at £45million in his country's history,[17] he also degenerated into Britain's most prolific child rapist of all time.[18] By official tally of the UK's largest children's protection charity,[19] the National Society for Prevention of Cruelty to Children (NSPCC), at least 500 victims reportedly suffered at the hands of Jimmy Savile.[20] But other accounts project at least 1,000 victims sexually assaulted on *BBC* premises alone.[21] Considering these numbers include only registered abuse complaints to authorities on record, the actual total of wounded can never be precisely known but undoubtedly reaches into the thousands.

Incredibly for 60 years (1951-2011) while a volunteer porter at Leeds General Infirmary, Savile bragged about volunteering to have unconsented sex with dead corpses and how he made jewelry from glass eyes removed from their bodies.[22] We're talking one extremely demented sick fuck here. More than any other single figure in the history of humankind, Sir Jimmy's six decade long crime spree cavalcade connects all the demonic dots like no other, from the Luciferian royals to the top government movers and shakers to the most infamous serial killers to his far-reaching *BBC* entertainment pedophile ring.

But on more than a half dozen occasions police actually questioned Sir Jimmy Savile as a repeated child abusing suspect but each and every time let him go. The first incident recorded by police occurred in 1955 in Manchester where Savile managed a dance hall.[23] In 1958 in his hometown of Leeds, while employed still as a nightclub manager, a police inquiry had Savile facing jail time for sexual assault charges.[24] A half dozen years ago according to Dennis Lemmon, a former Savile bodyguard now 80-years old, Savile was in an especially agitated and foul mood one night before he was scheduled to appear in court the next day for "interfering with young girls." But as it turned out, soon afterwards Lemmon was informed that the worried derelict had apparently bribed crooked police officers at the last minute into dropping the case. Other reports say he paid off the girls' families. Another early incident of Savile sex abuse involved an underage victim dating back to 1959 when Savile as a Luxembourg Radio DJ raped a 13-year old girl at Lime Grove Studios in London.[25]

Savile would have been 28 or 29 in 1955 with his first known criminal offense. With such a prolific, uninterrupted history of serial offending, there is near 100% certainty that the sexual predator began molesting children well before the mid-1950s. If he was performing sexual acts on corpses soon after he began working as a porter at Leeds Infirmary in 1951 at age 25, then it was almost certain he was sexually assaulting live underage kids up to a decade prior to his first known case. The bottom line, had English law enforcement done its job way back in either 1955 or 1958, over six decades ago, thousands of lives and undoubtedly dozens of suicides would have been spared the permanent scars from his sadistic marathon of abuse committed nonstop over the next half century. But illegal payoffs to corrupt police, aggressive intimidation, thuggish threats and manipulative blackmail as well as protection from elite living above the law in the corrupt British system kept the flaming maniac out of jail his entire life.

As far back as 1965 his entire hometown police force apparently was well aware of Savile's pedophilic predilections. A young constable on bicycle patrol one night spotted one of the DJ's trademark Rolls Royces parked in a secluded spot near Roundhay golf course, fairly close to Savile's penthouse in Leeds overlooking Roundhay Park.[26] The policeman observed Savile in the driver's seat sitting next to a very young girl. When the constable approached asking "what's the matter?" Savile responded:

I'm waiting for midnight when she turns 16.

It was 11:45PM and at first the young cop appeared bewildered until Jimmy winked at him. The policeman then turned to the girl and asked if she was alright, but she only smiled in silence. The cop realized he had just interrupted Jimmy Savile seducing an underage girl and it obviously did not set very well with the Leeds' leading pedo-kingpin who snapped back irritably:

Piss off. If you want to keep your job I suggest you get on your bike and fuck off.

When at the end of his shift, the patrolman began relaying the bizarre encounter to his sergeant, he was cut off:

Shut up, son, he's got friends in high places. If you know what's good for you, you'll leave it there.[27]

Savile was free to continue sexually assaulting children for almost the next half century.

The serial pedophile brags about his illicit exploits from cover to cover in his 184 page 1978 autobiography.[28] In one such lurid tale also in the 1960s, Savile explained he was visited by a senior female police officer in Leeds who asked him if he'd seen a young juvenile runaway, showing him her photo.[29] His answer was, "no but if I run into her, I'll keep her all night first as my reward," then be sure to turn her in the next morning. That night he did run into her at one of his dancehalls and then did exactly what he said he would do. Upon arrival at the station the next day, the policewoman wanted to book him with a sex crime but according to Savile:

> *The officeress was dissuaded from bringing charges against me by her colleagues for it was well known that were I to go, I would probably take half the station with me.*[30]

Already in the 1960s Mr. Big Stuff knew all the crooked cops in town, and as a "local hero," was a major player in the blackmail game. Savile's media career started at Radio Luxembourg in 1958 followed two years later at Tyne Tees Television with his *BBC* professional run commencing in late 1963. His criminal career path as a serial sexual child predator went wherever his career in public life catapulted him. Meanwhile, the more famous he became, the more he brazenly acted out sexually. Throughout the late 1960s and 1970s, police probes into child sex abuse repeatedly had Savile and other *BBC* employees' names coming up again and again.[31] For two weeks in 1969 police interviewed dozens of *BBC* staff and musicians over complaints that on a consistent basis underage victims were routinely being sexually assaulted in dressing rooms at all the *BBC* studios. Yet no charges were ever filed against any suspects - as guilty as Savile and his pals were.

Then came the sad tragic case in 1971 of 15-year old Top of the Pops dancer Claire McAlpine, who via her diary alleged that a number of well-known public figures had taken sexual advantage of her, among them Jimmy Savile, longtime fellow *BBC* DJ Tony Blackburn, the legendary Frank Sinatra and alleged others.[32] Apparently in early 1971 no one believed Claire, and terrified that she may become pregnant, several weeks after reporting abuse falling on deaf ears, she allegedly committed suicide from a drug overdose.

Among the over dozen investigations into Savile's criminal past launched a year after his 2011 death, *BBC*'s whopping £10 million whitewash conducted by retired magistrate judge Dame Janet Smith failed to pursue Claire's accusations knowing some of her alleged perpetrators are still alive. So 60-year old former fellow dancer and friend of Claire's, Kelly Gold, claimed in 2016 she is ready to name names and work with police to bring belated justice for her fallen comrade.[33] In addition to stating that Savile had groped her as well, after their March 1971 Top of the Pops performance, Kelly Gold also maintains that an alleged "world famous" superstar singer ended up at a hotel having sex with Claire. To this day Kelly feels guilty because that night she lied to Claire's mother stating that Claire was staying at her place. Claire McAlpine was the first in a litany of strange and untimely deaths surrounding *BBC* employees as apparent casualties in the Savile-*BBC* pedophile scandal.

Yet more controversial fallout from this unsolved, unresolved McAlpine case was stirred over the February 2016 firing of DJ Tony Blackburn.[34] For the Janet Smith inquiry, *BBC* dug up a memo indicating Blackburn was interviewed over allegedly assaulting Claire in 1971. But Blackburn insists he is both innocent and that no one ever spoke to him about any accusations or improprieties with any underage girls. Dame Smith believed *BBC*'s contention and after 49 years on the job as a top *BBC* DJ, the *British Broadcasting Corporation* abruptly terminated Blackburn’s employment.

From a February 2016 *RT* article covering the *BBC* response to the Dame Smith’s whitewashed report:

> *On Thursday afternoon, Director General of the BBC Tony Hall apologized to the survivors of abuse, saying the broadcaster had ‘parted company’ with DJ Tony Blackburn after his evidence given to the inquiry had been below standard,*[35] [falling] *short of the standards of evidence that such an inquiry demanded.*[36]

The *BBC* had the audacity to think that axing one employee never arrested or charged for what he flatly denies, for allegedly lying that he never was questioned on abuse claims put forth by one underage *BBC* employee near a half century earlier should help absolve this criminal corporation from its mountains of past sins while this same underage *BBC* employee it failed to protect also accused the most prolific child abuser in Britain’s history but the *BBC* elected to keep looking the other way for four straight decades has to be the height of hubris and hypocrisy.

In a newspaper interview shortly following Claire McAlpine’s death, Jimmy Savile publicly denied ever seeing or knowing her.[37] Yet a photo clearly shows both Claire McAlpine and Kelly Gold with Savile and others on the March 1971 set. So when blood is on your hands for permitting thousands of the most horrific crimes imaginable against children on *BBC* premises (up to 1,000 by Sir Jimmy alone),[38] and then firing an employee apparently always in good standing for the past 49-years over possibly not being truthful (but perhaps is) about being questioned on a matter occurring 45 years earlier is then opportunely used by the *BBC* director general as evidence the company is proactively taking corrective measures to make up for all its past complicit crimes and cover-up is the most profoundly absurd line of shit for any sane, rational person to swallow.

With Savile signing off from Top of the Pops (TOTP) in 2006 after a 42 year *BBC* run and 35 years after Savile abused Claire McAlpine, obviously the *BBC* was still choosing to stand by its #1 pedophile. Former appeals court Judge Dame Janet Smith's February 2016 report focusing on Jimmy Savile crimes at the *BBC* proved to be a half-truth whitewash with its covert agenda to let those *BBC* senior executives guilty of horrendous crimes off the hook.

Minimally there is more than enough evidence to prove senior *BBC* officers up and down the corporate ranks are guilty of criminal complicity, knowing rampant abuse was ongoing for years and decades but failed to act to stop it. Moreover, there is plenty of evidence that the *BBC* higher-ups are guilty of for years attempting to cover-up the scandal in order to preserve its reputation and own criminality. And thirdly, Jimmy Savile and his ragtag crew of fellow pedo-DJs and musicians weren't the only pedophiles committing sexual assault on children. Very powerful *BBC* VIPs along with MPs, PMs, high court judges, police chiefs, MI5 and MI6 heads, famous entertainers and royalty were and still are all active pedophiles participating in their still flourishing child raping network.[39]

Yet none of them have ever been arrested, prosecuted or brought to justice. A growing number of citizens around the world are very aware of this fact. It's the pink elephant in the UK's world pedo-epicenter war room. This is why the entire dozen post-Savile so called child abuse investigations are an outrageous hoax being put upon all the good people of Britain as an over-the-top assault on their intelligence. The fact is the most vile evildoers alive are still in control still doing the most vile evil to innocent victims. And as long as they remain in control, justice will never be served and children will never be safe. The remainder of this chapter and others to follow will clearly demonstrate the truth about these pedophiles still in power still successfully evading justice.

Where it was "safe" to do so, that Dame Smith report did accurately disclose the sleazy breeding ground for sexual assault of underage girls at the TOTP studio,[40] "in the corridors, canteens, staircases and dressing rooms of every *BBC* premises."[41] Though led by prolific Savile, he was never acting alone. Rape and assault were commonly committed by many of the *BBC* performing musicians, presenters, roadies, photographers, you name it, this longtime cultural norm routinely practiced at the *BBC* studios particularly in dressing rooms allowed criminals to repeatedly get away with child sex abuse on an industrial scale. As alluded to earlier, it grew so out of hand in both 1969 and again in the early 1970s that it even drew half-assed police responses interviewing victims and perps though zero arrests or indictments were ever made. That's clearly criminal neglect by both *BBC* and the police. For over half a century, the *British Broadcasting Corporation* kept a lock on routinely ignoring victim complaints that extended to multiple intentionally failed police probes.

Then when an occasional whistleblowing celebrity happened to speak out against Savile crimes, even his shocking disclosure was routinely ignored and negatively consequenced. In the Radio 1 *BBC* studio during a 1978 interview subsequently suppressed and never aired, John Lyden, otherwise known at the time as Johnny Rotten from the punk rock band the Sex Pistols, having heard enough substantiated rumors about Savile, called him out:

A hypocrite… into all kinds of seediness… that we're not allowed to talk about.[42]

Instead of being taken seriously to warrant investigating the derelict DJ 40 years ago, Lyden claims *BBC* punished him for trying to honestly do the right thing:

> *If you said anything you'd be off playlists, but that didn't bother me as I was doing a good job of that independently. But firsthand experiences were reiterated to me by young girls who went to Top of the Pops and said he was touchy, feely, creepy, urgh... Doctor Death. I told them to report it but it would have been seen as grassing then. I knew all about it and said so and got myself banned from the BBC. Family values, eh? Turns out I was the only one who had any.*[43]

Also in the late 1970s a Stoke-Mandeville Hospital nurse also spoke up doing right by her patients suffering from spinal injuries who were being sexually attacked by longtime volunteer Savile, reporting his abuse to detective John Lindsey. But according to Lindsey, his police commander responded that there was "insufficient evidence" to proceed with a case against such a major VIP as Savile.[44] Like the *BBC*, police consistently looked the other way because they were ordered to give the famous pervert a free pass.

West Yorkshire Police detectives working the Ripper murder cases in the late 1970s also brought Savile in for questioning.[45] He was implicated by members of the public, his Leeds residence was in close proximity to where bodies were found with bite marks on them, thus leading to an order of Savile's teeth imprints to determine if they matched,[46] and during interviews with the prime suspect-turned-convicted serial killer Peter Sutcliffe, Savile's name and activity in proximity to murder did come up.[47]

Then many years later in 2007 Surrey police investigated Savile in response to a claim of sexual assault during the 1970s by a former resident of Duncroft Approved School for Girls. Though at least five girls had made claims that Savile abused them while attending the school under government Home Office control until 1973, an eventual total of 23 Savile victims surfaced from that student body comprised of intelligent teenage girls with emotional problems claiming that Savile molested them.[48] Yet Crown Prosecution Service (CPS) insists that even with all those alleged victims, not enough evidence existed to charge either the perpetrator or the headmistress Margaret Jones. Jones gave the predator his own flat as the only male allowed overnights on the premises (similar to Broadmoor and Stoke-Mandeville).

One of Savile's abuse victims told the press:

Jimmy treated Duncroft like a pedophile sweet shop.[49]

Yet every time police ever investigated Savile, between them and the CPS, never was there sufficient cause to indict the serial offender, which again only shows that he was repeatedly shielded in total whitewashed cover-ups his entire life.

A year after Surrey opened an investigation against Savile abuse charges that led nowhere, in 2008 Sussex Police followed suit questioning Savile over a complaint stemming from a 1970 incident, only to lead to the same abysmally poor excuse - not enough evidence. Whenever constables interviewed Savile as late as January 2009 over past abuse allegations, Savile's intimidating threats and megalomaniacal power put police on the defensive[50] with never enough evidence to dare charge him.[51] Savile called an old West Yorkshire detective buddy of his to arrange for the Surrey police to interview the 82-year old at his living quarters on the grounds of Stoke-Mandeville Hospital, a total breach of standard police protocol. Yet if he wasn't Sir Jimmy, he would've been locked away for life a half century earlier.

In the more than half dozen times that police actually did question the famous entertainer as a possible suspect, the arrogant Savile defiantly mocked his supposed interrogators knowing he was above the law, protected by his loyal royal friends and prime minister allies who always had his back. Even honest cops trying to do their job to protect children were given the cold shoulder by their superiors. Just like the mafia, Savile the child procurer was “a made man” operating freely within the evil cabal system of organized crime called the British establishment.

Right up to this very day UK law enforcement is notorious for neither ever having the balls nor the will to follow through on any serious pedo-investigations of VIPs, invariably failing to find “hard” evidence to indict whenever members of the establishment are suspects. This pervasive police pattern of indifference towards victims while demonstrating total deference towards protected powerful perps, combined with covert orders and instructions from MI5 or government heads to cease any further inquiry is the consistent historical pattern in both North America as well as Europe when the pedophilic higher-ups cherry-pick their pedo-enabling foxes to be in charge of investigations, centrally controlled in Britain by an always pedo-enabling occupant at Home Secretary office.

For over six decades this kind of criminal collusion by submissive, order-following UK law enforcement allowed the demented lunatic Savile to roam freely throughout the Isles, granted carte blanche from the National Health Service (NHS), with the sex savage completely on the loose, he was able to select virtually any criminal insane asylum, mortuary, children’s hospital, children’s group home or school of his choice, along with the sprawling safe haven confines of his *BBC* conglomerate. Sir Jimmy Savile uniquely possessed at his literal personal disposal an unlimited supply of readymade victims. Dead corpses, debilitated children and adults alike as well as adoring underage fans, mostly girls but boys too, both young and old, as an equal opportunity rapist, no-body was off limits to king predator Sir Jimmy. All were exploited, expendable sex objects filling his ruthless, insatiable need for cruelly satanic dominance and sadistic control, serving his necrophilia-loving, pedophilic carnal desires while fully shielded by diabolical intimate ties to queens, princes and prime ministers, all granting gatekeeper keys to Lucifer’s earthly pedophilia kingdom.

Why? Because Savile supplied child victims to VIPs while working, in his own words, “deep cover” with British and foreign intelligence.[52] Sir Jimmy was intimate with the royals.[53] The DJ opportunistically used his quirky, eccentric, philanthropic celebrity image and persona to amass immense influence and power primarily through ingratiation to royalty and prime ministers, and intimidation, threats and blackmail to everyone else that stood in his way, at will brazenly violating and raping the entire British Kingdom whose ruling masters in return guaranteed him lifetime insurance policy protection and impunity.

The next several chapters unravel the so-vile Sa-vile story in terms of its connecting implications, unmasking his ties to the larger global pedophilia network. As the pimping procurer of child sex slaves[54] raped and murdered by the queen and her princes,[55] prime ministers[56] and parliament members, elite media and entertainment figures, over time the rising fame of the Top of the Pops DJ morphed him into a pivotal player within the ruling elite’s sexual blackmail system. Not unlike the Mossad-made financier-cabalist Jeffrey Epstein, as long as Sir Jimmy continued delivering the sacrificial lambs of UK’s throwaway population of institutionalized children to the earth controlling Luciferian puppet masters, they in turn would guarantee his protection for as long as he lived - to the ripe old age of just two days shy of his 85th birthday.

While Savile's super creepy close relationship to royalty is specifically addressed in Chapter 22, his relations with London government VIPs, security services and taxpayer sponsored *British Broadcasting Company* as his longtime pedophile enabling employer are exposed in this chapter. But because pedophilia is the central binding nexus between the Windsor family, the 10 Downing Street-Westminster government and the *BBC* as the UK's false propaganda machine, separate chapters apart from Savile will follow to unveil the still unfolding, tip-of-the-iceberg royalty and government scandals while the crime cabal flounders desperately in vain to keep them covered up. But as the elite's Achilles heel, fortunately enough of the ugly truth's already permanently out of the bag and there's no going back.

Despite the day after Savile's October 29, 2011 death when the famous "larger than life" entertainer was being widely heralded as a beloved "national treasure"[57] with sanctimonious tributes led by Prince Charles, celebrities and the media alike,[58] within months afterwards in response to a plethora of accusations emerging from his victims across the nation, multiple police investigations reactively sprang up ostensibly to look more closely into his "hidden" monstrous past. A horrified Britain was shocked to learn of Savile's countless crimes carried out at 41 National Health Service (NHS) medical institutions,[59] half at children's hospitals,[60] along with countless children's homes and schools, a highest security mental institution, even a hospice for the terminally ill[61] and in every *BBC* backstage dressing room, victimizing thousands of his defenseless prey ranging from age two to 75.[62] Again, underage girls were his preference with 80% of his victims children and 82% female. In 1976 nearing the height of his fame, with television cameras rolling before a national audience into the millions, Jimmy Savile was allowed to brazenly molest a teenager flagrantly violating the law without drawing any notice or criticism whatsoever other than the poor victim's shocked, flailing on-camera reaction.[63] What does that tell you?

At the 1973 Top of the Pops pre-Christmas show, within minutes after walking off stage still dressed in his Womble costume, back in the dressing room Savile's entourage had just dropped off two of his latest victims excitedly waiting to meet the star. With a sentinel guarding his dressing room door, the pedophile Womble proceeded to savagely rape a 10-year old boy while making a stunned 12-year old girl watch, then the petrified, frozen-in-trauma sodomized boy was forced to witness the girl's turn being sexually assaulted, at the end Uncle Jimmy turned to his prey to say it's "our little secret."[64] After countless episodes like this at *BBC* studios and confirmed evidence of having sex with corpses or infirmed hospital patients of all ages, it's also been revealed that Savile was very likely a not-so-closeted Satanist[65] engaging in satanic murder rituals as an accomplice or co-participant, if not on his own, befriending the most notorious, coldblooded serial killers in British history.

Beyond the 1980s and long past Jimmy Savile's prime as a regular weekly *BBC* entertainer, his numerous homes across the British Isles and three or four Rolls Royces and all his accoutrements of wealth supporting his lavishly opulent lifestyle always remained ostentatiously evident throughout Sir Jimmy's life. As a pimp to royalty, prime ministers, MPs and rock stars, and a centrally embedded figure in Britain's sexual blackmail scheme, his lavish lifestyle right up to his end can best be explained by his sordid, highly lucrative criminal enterprise inside the thriving global pedophilia network. Otherwise, whatever legit income he may have still had as a senior citizen during the final two decades of his sicko life could never have afforded living so high-off-the-hog as he'd long been accustomed for six decades. In short, pedophilia was good to Sir Jimmy, "good while it lasted" as his now removed epitaph once briefly displayed on his desecrated gravesite. Despite some members of his family wanting his body exhumed from his huge triple plot overlooking the sea to be reburied in an unmarked pauper's grave, the £20,000 cost and his estate funds tied up in litigation settlements has kept his body in his original burial place though in an unmarked grave at a Scarborough cemetery.[66]

In the end Savile still possessed his prized £160,000 Rolls Royce that he called "the Beast" where he defiled many young girls, plus five other luxury cars including a Bentley Turbo and Mercedes 500 SL along with his reported eight homes[67] and a will leaving £5 million in two charitable trusts.[68] His estate at the time of his death was worth £4m but £2.5m of it went to both his and his plaintiffs' lawyers, leaving only about £1m to be divvied up amongst 78 victims seeking damages exclusively from the Savile estate.[69]

The raw, naked, despicable reality that a UK "national treasure" has turned out to be both a satanic murdering corpse fucker and biggest child rapist of all-time in Great Britain's long "glorious" history[70] speaks volumes in revealing the true nature of this world as it actually is, in contrast to the totally deceitful brainwashing bullshit we've all been led, taught and subjected to. The Jimmy Savile lesson runs deep to the very core of what's gone most wrong on this planet, teaching us that absolutely nothing in this world is as it seems, that the complete betrayal of truth and morality is more than evident everywhere we look, be it by outward appearance, accepted conventional wisdom, so called good deeds, or so called science, religion or revisionist human history, it's all one humongous pack of sinister lies carefully designed and packaged to effectively dupe and control increasingly dumbed down masses.[71]

Over the millenniums the same bloodline planetary controllers have maintained humanity's truth-suppressing juggernaut by cunning deception, willful manipulation and calculated malevolence.[72] But now through the Jimmy Savile saga, the emperor without his clothes can be fully unveiled, exposing the grotesquely vile, pedophilic evil of this still being played out cautionary tale turned urgent wakeup call nightmare for the ages.

Just like every other pedophilia scandal covered in this book, virtually all the media, government and police inquiries conclude that one deranged beast, in this case Jimmy Savile, acted alone in "grooming the nation" as Metropolitan Police lead investigator Peter Spindler claimed.[73] On January 11, 2013, among the largest ever investigations conducted by the Metro Police in conjunction with UK's National Police Chief's Council (NPCC) based on their Operation Yewtree findings released a joint report entitled "Giving Victims a Voice."[74] But only voices of carefully selected victims got heard, generally revealing only tip of the iceberg, lower levels of abuse. This calculated strategy was geared to protect the self-serving interest of the larger pedophilia cabal that Savile freely operated within, comprised of royalty, the national government, the security apparatus and the MSM *BBC* giant that carefully, collectively shielded him from having to answer for his mountain of heinous crimes while still alive.

As in all pedophilia scandals, by methodically disclosing an incomplete whitewash of half-truths, the elite's pedo-network always remains intact and well-preserved while temporarily appeasing the public's outrage and so called "right to know." This same overly contrived, overused damage control tactic is consistently deployed by the

Luciferian planetary controllers who ritualistically torture, sodomize, butcher, drain and drink adrenochrome-filled blood,[75] and eat cut-out hearts of their sacrificial child lamb prey. By satanic design, these pedo-cabal victims never had a chance to either live or have a voice. They were surgically removed from Operation Yewtree-NSPCC's sanitized, incomplete, grossly distorted version of what actually transpired.

As an illustration of Sir Jimmy's power and fame to suppress his ugly sins, in 1994 the editor of the *Sunday Mirror* Paul Connew had two Savile abuse survivors in their mid-30s who were former residents victimized at Duncroft Approved School for girls in the 1970s, ready and willing to go public with their accusations.[76] Knowing firsthand what a monster Savile was, they were both tired and appalled seeing their abuser receiving such praise and honors from the likes of Margaret Thatcher, the queen and pope, each taking turns bestowing knighthood on their serial rapist. The former editor was certain they were not motivated to seek money as the pair just wanted to set the record straight and see if some semblance of justice could be achieved.

But Paul Connew felt compelled to compassionately warn the two women what they would be up against should their story be published - the ensuing, most certain, highly publicized scandal would result in a contentious libel lawsuit against them, and both a likely non-response from the police as well as a star-struck jury that tends to avoid conviction of enamored celebrities. The husband of one of the accusers convinced his wife to not pursue such public exposure, both to protect her and their children. And with that development, not wanting to move forward alone, for very good reason the other survivor lamented this incisively accurate scenario:

Who will believe me against Jimmy Savile with all his connections to Charles and Diana and Mrs. Thatcher and the Pope? They'll destroy me, even though I'd be telling the truth.[77]

So way back in 1994, a full decade and a half prior to Savile's final known sexual assault, unfortunately the story of his pedophilic abuse never went forward in the press when it came ever so close.

When it was all said and done after six decades of uninterrupted predation against thousands of victims, the detective superintendent from Metropolitan Police's pedophile unit - David Gray, emphasized how Savile must have been mentally preoccupied and obsessed with plotting his next sex offense "every minute of every waking day."[78] But Savile was never operating alone because every 3 minutes of every single day another British child goes missing, totaling 140,000 each year,[79] many of whom wind up in the global pedo-pipeline of enslaved, abused and ritualistically murdered children. And all that cannot be a one man operation.

Yet David Gray went on to bogusly claim that no evidence exists suggesting that the "lone wolf" was ever part of a larger pedophile sex ring,[80] making it out like Savile was some anomalous freak show oddity operating 24/7 365 days a year pedovore for well over a half century completely within his own neatly spun cocoon-like vacuum. Nothing could be further from the truth! This willfully deceitful statement again promotes the constant false narrative of the "lone gunman" syndrome as the standard prototypical cover-up feature present in every single pedophilia scandal as well as virtually every major assassination and false flag "terrorism" event.[81] A favorite tool used in all state sponsored false flags.

Among the pedophilia scandals, think Lawrence E. King, Jeffrey Epstein, Jerry Sandusky, Larry Nassar and Barry Bennell, or Lee Harvey Oswald, Sirhan Sirhan and James Earl Ray as portrayed by the mainstream media. In every single case the press dutifully reports all these high profiled, most prolific pedophiles and assassins always act alone in order to sweep the far bigger reality of a massively globalized, interlocking pedophilia crime cabal network conveniently under the rug. Without exception, every one of their false narratives calls for reading off the same MSM Mockingbird script, just to keep you, me and John Q Public in the dark from ever knowing the far more disturbing, sinister truth.

From the no-brainer file comes the *BBC* launched £10 million "self-investigation" boondoggle into the Savile debauchery with a specific focus of determining if any *BBC* culpability accompanied Savile's crime spree. Led by "respected" former magistrate judge Dame Janet Smith, her inquiry insists that beyond widespread rumor and gossip, no one at *BBC* definitely knew Savile was committing sex crimes,[82] in one fell swoop clearing both all corporate executives and all company personnel that participated in the *BBC* pedophile sex ring as well as the *BBC* criminal cover-up, adding salt to the re-traumatized wounds suffered by thousands of Savile, *BBC* and cabal victims.[83]

Over a dozen major Savile investigations from the Metro-Scotland Yard police to the *BBC*[84] to the NHS,[85] Stoke-Mandeville,[86] Leeds General Infirmary,[87] to Crown Prosecution Service (CPS),[88] Department of Education, House of Commons, a so called national Independent Inquiry into Child Sexual Abuse[89] and on and on they go,[90] all designed to place zero blame, zero responsibility, zero complicity and zero criminal cover-up on the real pedo-network kingpins. By falsely depicting a virtual one man operation, the most powerful pedovors systemically supporting and shielding Jimmy Savile are allowed to get away with their ongoing brutal crimes. The elephant in all their rooms is the global pedophilia cabal. None will dare speak of this truth. But then what else is new? That’s simply the way this Luciferian system works. But a considerable body of largely overlooked facts totally refuting their feeble claims and bogus conclusions about Savile’s reign of terror will be presented.

We’ll start with the serial predator’s own nephew Guy Marsden who supplies irrefutable firsthand evidence that from relatively early on in Savile’s career he was operating within a larger pedophile ring:

Uncle Jimmy took me to his sick parties, (Marsden specifically calling them) *paedophile parties*.[91]

After running away with three friends from their family homes in Leeds when Guy was just 13, Jimmy Savile walked in on a London dive where the runaways were staying. Initially Guy figured his parents put his uncle up to busting him in order to send the local boys straight back home. But much to Guy’s surprise, in 1967 Uncle Jimmy began taking his nephew and buddies to wealthy celebrity mansions where Guy believes that men attending the parties were sexually abusing boys and girls as young as 10. For the next year and a half Marsden witnessed his uncle regularly showing up at these depraved soirees in fancy settings, often accompanied by a priest and children from nearby orphanages and group homes.

A half dozen years ago the now 63-year old Guy Marsden explicitly described how back in the 60s Savile the pimp was already operating within an extensive elitist pedophile network amongst members of London’s high society from the British entertainment industry:

The group of runaways ended up in a fabulous house - believed to belong to a famous pop impresario - with a big *indoor swimming pool. The celebrity home was one of the party venues. At night you would get about 15 or 20 people turning up. There would be music and tables full of food, we couldn't believe it. There was everything we needed and we just hung around. At first we automatically assumed the children lived there, but we soon realized they didn't. They would be brought there, sometimes by Uncle Jimmy, and would stay for six or seven hours until 3 or 4AM. They were just little kids, boys and girls.*[92]

With Savile the procurer working behind the scenes as well as openly with church clergy funneling child victims from care homes into the pedo-elite way back in the swinging sixties while the DJ's influence and power were still on the rise, soon enough the big TV star was pimping kids off to the royal family, UK prime ministers and their Westminster minions working undercover with British intelligence agencies. On behalf of the Luciferian worshipping pedophile cult consisting of English royalty, top politicians and entertainers, assisted by the British MI5 and MI6 security services, (just like their US and Israeli counterparts), all have long been steeped in the business of sexual blackmail operations and pedo-pipeline procurement using the most vulnerable population of expendable, throwaway orphan children from group home charities misused as sacrificial bait and prey consumed by the pedophilic elite.[93]

Sir Jimmy once told *Esquire*:

The thing about me is I get things done and I work deep cover. I've known the Royal Family for a million years.[94]

That about says it all. Working "deep cover" with the royals and MI5, he pimped British kids to UK's VIPs - royalty, politicians and entertainers.[95] Savile's name has come up in virtually every group home scandal where pedophile MPs have regularly committed sex abuse on mostly underage boys across the nation. A list of some that are further fleshed out later are the Elm Guest Home, Jersey's Haut de la Garenne, North Wales' Bryn Estyn care home where Sir Jimmy would show up in his chauffeured limousine with his older brother.[96] MI5 has long been linked to running a honey trap boy brothel blackmail operation out of Kincora boys' home in East Belfast, Northern Ireland, often escorted to parties at nearby mansions to be abused by politicos on both sides of the IRA conflict.[97] Jimmy Savile as much as admitted working as an undercover agent for the security services and has been linked to Kincora as well.[98] So have his fellow pedo-buddies PM Ted Heath and the royal Lord Mountbatten, credited with introducing Savile to the Windsor family in 1966, further followed up in Chapter 22.

Typically the global intelligence community acts as fellow handlers along with the Catholic Church, secret societies like Malta Knights, Freemasons, Illuminati, and "deep cover" Satanists like Savile. A North Wales abuse survivor, now a barrister, has claimed that many of his perpetrators are Freemasons.[99] Infiltrating secret society members among top tier government (from national to local), law enforcement, the courts, business, medicine, academia and entertainment media typically comprise the pedophile network. The global intelligence community of course also functions as the ruling elite's private army of international mercenary assassins and bully boys to protect and serve cabal interests as well as coordinate the global child sex trafficking network.

Still another scandal reputed to have connections to procuring pedophile Savile involve group home kids from Islington transported to parties where VIPs abused them.[100] In the 1990s in an effort to cover-up the pervasive abuse, the head of the Islington Council - Lady Margaret Hodge (nee Oppenheimer[101]) tried to silence an outspoken victim-survivor turned attorney Demetrius Panton, calling him "extremely disturbed" in a *BBC* interview. Panton later forced her in a high court to apologize for her slanderous lie. In 1992 when the *Evening Standard* broke the story behind a hard-hitting series exposing evidence of extensive pedophilia in a number of Islington children's homes, Hodge went on the offensive again calling the article "a sensationalist piece of gutter journalism," for which she again later had to issue an apology. But evil deeds don't go unrewarded by fellow evildoers in power, so in 2003 Margaret Hodge was appointed henhouse guard as minister over all UK children by yet another pedo-enabling, war criminal prime minister Tony Blair,[102] whose government was also heavily infiltrated by pedophiles. And of course Blair was also a friend of both Sir Savile as well as Sir Cliff, and using his convenient D-notices, he protected pedophiles.[103]

Incredibly for six long decades, Jimmy Savile's ties unlawfully procuring victims from group homes for British Establishment VIPs made him privy to the elite's deplorable inside crimes, thus automatically guaranteeing his lifelong protection and impunity to recklessly and arrogantly live above the law, often right out in the open constantly boasting about his powerful protectors.

Savile's explanation on how he was able to acquire documentarian Louis Theroux's home address speaks to his cocksure infallibility:

I can get anything. There's nothing I can't get, and there's nothing I can't do.[104]

After spending the last two weeks with Sir Jimmy filming his documentary in 2000, when Theroux finally led up to pressing him for an answer over the decades of pedophile rumors that had followed him, Theroux began with:

So why do you say in interviews that you hate children when, I've seen you with kids, and you clearly enjoy their *company and you have a good rapport with them?* [105]

After denying he hates them, Savile remarked:

We live in a very funny world. And it’s easier for me, as a single man, to say ‘I don't like children,’ because that puts a lot of salacious tabloid people off the hunt.

With the door open, Theroux then asked:

Is that basically so the tabloids don't pursue this whole ‘is he or isn't he a paedophile’ line?

Saville’s response:

Oh, aye, how do they know whether I am not? How does anybody know whether I am? Nobody knows whether I am or not. I know I'm not.

Savile’s thousands of victims sure know, so does the *BBC* and a number of police departments, not to mention his customers in government and royalty. But a more tactful Theroux countered with:

To me that sounds more, sort of suspicious in a way.

A defensive, irritated yet still cocksure of himself Savile retorts:

Alright look, that's my policy, that’s the way it goes and it's worked a dream. Ho, ho, ho.

In plain sight the infamous predator defied his victims, fans, law enforcement and entire nation, devilishly outfoxing his detractors with his brash, thinly veiled word games of denial and mockery.

But as the crime cabal’s go-to pedo-blackmail specialist, like his American counterpart Jeffrey Epstein, Jimmy Savile always remained confident knowing he was able to live above the law as an untouchable fully protected by royalty, governments, courts, security apparatus (both law enforcement and MI5/6/CIA/Mossad) and the MSM propaganda machine, insulated and immune to any and all allegations from abuse victims, whistleblowers and muckraking journalists. After all, his litigious aggression, intimidating threats and thuggish brutishness had his victims rendered invisible, never really believed nor heard. Would-be truth-tellers are typically smeared, vilified, ridiculed, harassed, or otherwise silenced, even neutralized by either overt or covert assassination. Then there's the ultra-popular method of "being suicided." That part of the Savile saga will be explored in detail in Chapter 20.

So there exists bountiful proof that as far back as the sixties, Savile was a card carrying member of a vast pedophilia network preying on underage girls and boys. Aside from the group home-orphanage pipeline, well-known disc jockeys of the day enjoyed free and easy access to legions of British minors, both male and female, willing to innocently and not so innocently place themselves and their nubile young bodies in harm's way. Diehard fans, groupies or fledgling band members in the 60s and 70 would literally fall into the laps of sexual degenerates working in the music, radio and television industry, willing to do anything for an autograph, hug, positive attention or coveted airplay time to seek fame or simply "rub shoulders" with the rich and famous. The rock & roll age spawned generations of enamored lost souls blindly engaging in idolatry worship of creepy celebrities like Sir Jimmy, his fellow *BBC* and rock star friends all eagerly frothing at the mouth to take full advantage. Apologists for child sexual abuse then chalk it up to the times, an era of sexual liberation on all fronts, the promiscuous, hedonistic "swinging 60s and 70s." Though some teenagers may have been willing, nonetheless they were still kids sexually mauled by a prolific procurer and voracious consumer, forcibly devouring children of every size, gender and age without consent, with a honing preference for the most vulnerable females between 13 and 15.

A man who was once an 11-year old victim of brutal rape perpetrated by Savile and his fellow *BBC* DJ colleague Alan Freeman in 1964 explained to Scotland Yard a year after Savile died during the 2012 Operation Yewtree probe how German actor Victor Beaumont had lured the boy to the celebrity's ritzy Northwest London home.[106] Once locked in the bedroom, Beaumont called the two *BBC* tunesmen and the three sodomizing savages pounced on their defenseless prey. Actor Beaumont died 13 years later at age 64 while Australian born Al "Fuzzy" Freeman kicked the bucket in 2006 at age 79. After years of therapy, the traumatized victim-turned-survivor eventually married, emerging from his boyhood trauma to become a successful businessman, garnering the strength to speak out publicly and anonymously for the first time to protect his family as well as other potential victims in September 2013:

[Beaumont, Savile and Freeman] *showed me no pity and arrogantly thought they could get away with anything…* [Because they could and did]*.*[107]

The Metro Police's half-assed cover-up-their-ass attempt called Operation Yewtree was ostensibly set up to investigate Savile's six decade reign of terror searching out other pedophiles in the Savile *BBC* network of horrors. Yet it has offered up only a handful of relatively low level, mostly low life pedophiles for the sole purpose of placating national public outrage than actually busting wide open the elite's globalized network Savile belonged to as any real effort to actually bring down the pedophile planetary controllers. The idea is to put behind bars a minimal few, semi-notable, rotten fruit hanging lowest on the pedo-vine food chain in order to save and protect the child raping elite atop this demonic child killing cabal.

That Savile was so well-connected, working “deep cover” (his words) as an operative with international intelligence agencies, high level politicians and royalty, supplying the most vulnerable group home children for the sickest members of the elite in a major blackmail operation that was global is never mentioned by mainstream media. But it’s the elephant in the room that every inquiry purposely omits.

Canadian intelligence insider Roderick Russell analyzing Savile’s relationship with British security services draws this conclusion in *Daily Kos*:

> *With these cozy friendships with top politicians and royalty, no wonder Sir Jimmy Savile felt himself to be above the law in England - and the truth is that he was above the law.... Increasingly it seems that Savile was a protected man. One senses that the real question should be the role of the Intelligence/ Security services* [MI5 / MI6 in UK] *and establishment elites in the cover-up.*[108]

A commenter on *aagirfan.com* wrote in to recount his experience as a 12-year old schoolboy when Jimmy Savile came to talk about himself and his charity work, but extemporaneously veered off topic to mention his other line of work:

> *He* [Savile] *said it was great cover for his real work as a spy. He said spies have to have deep cover and England would be part of a grand plan and it was so exciting to be part of this and all of us children must help to bring England and Israel closer together.*[109]

Hence his many trips to Israel as a security advisor and working closely with Mossad chum Uri Geller. More on Savile’s Israel connection later.[110]

As an undercover agent with ties to royalty and government, it’s easy to understand why Savile’s brutal 60 year crime spree was thoroughly protected by the British establishment and international crime cabal. And only after a year had elapsed since he quietly passed away in his sleep was it finally deemed permissible to begin making public his “open secret” career as a vicious serial sexual predator. Ever since October 2012 when Savile’s posthumously unraveled darker life as an evildoer-on-steroids created such a national shock and public uproar, decent people from the United Kingdom started demanding justice for his countless victims as well as the countless other unpunished pedophiles from *BBC* entertainment and the British establishment. And as a result of Operation Yewtree’s investigation of a pedophile network hiding in plain sight while insulated within the safe confines of the government sponsored *BBC* criminal enterprise, a trickling handful of suspected fellow pedophiles have been arrested and a measly fewer actually convicted and imprisoned. But the media focus on Savile’s pervasive abuse and the entire nation being groomed by the most prolific pedophile in its history has remained the prime focus for the last half dozen years, all to obscure and deflect from the real truth that he was simply a relatively minor yet significant cog in the earthly demonic wheel that is the globalized pedophilia network run by its ruling elite. This full exposure becomes the focus of this entire book and in this and coming chapters through unveiling the curtain hiding the world’s pedophilia epicenter in Britain, the horror of the elite’s Achilles heel can finally be laid bare once and for all.

Within days after the Savile bombshell hitting the United Kingdom in the form of an *ITV* production called Exposure – The Other Side of Jimmy Savile that aired on October 3rd, 2012,[111] in its immediate aftermath and fallout Operation Yewtree was rapidly launched seeking a first round of ready-made suspects from the Savile-*BBC* pedo-ring featuring the highly publicized arrests of glam rock star Gary Glitter, comedian Freddie Starr, and former *BBC* producer Wilfred De’ath.[112]

The parade of ensuing arrests by UK police's Operation Yewtree was meant to send the message that the nation's law enforcement was making up for allowing so many decades of Savile abuse to go unpunished. As part of the joint Metropolitan Police probe coordinating efforts from multiple police departments across the nation investigating Savile's connection to the larger *BBC* pedophilia network, rock n' roll glitter man himself Gary Glitter was the first, most infamous and obvious suspect arrested in late October 2012,[113] although despite several pedo-convictions prior, Glitter was not charged until June 2014. For years Paul Gadd (aka Gary Glitter) had been more than chummy with Sir Jimmy, appearing on television with him a number of times. And Glitter was no stranger to pedophilia, having done jail time in 1999 for possessing thousands of child pornography photos, spent Christmas 2002 in a Cambodian jail after being caught assaulting young boys[114] and deported only to then be rearrested again in 2005 in Vietnam, another Southeast Asian sex tourist paradise, engaging in obscene acts with 10 and 11 year old girls, jailed and deported again back home three years later in 2008.

Paul Gadd's 2012 arrest arose within a few weeks after Savile was exposed, prompting thousands of child sex abuse victims to begin coming forth to report not only Savile but pedophiles associated with him and his *BBC* sex ring. One key witness and abuse survivor Karin Ward maintains she observed Glitter sexually assaulting a 13-year old schoolgirl in pedo-pal Savile's *BBC* dressing room while Sir Jimmy groped a 14-year old and another entertainer reportedly still working today was abusing yet another schoolgirl.[115] The crime scene where most of the abuse took place was in the *BBC* dressing rooms where sickos indulged themselves at the expense of their in-over-their-head, adoring child fans. In February 2015 the then 71-year old Paul Gadd's lurid past finally caught up to him for good.[116] He was convicted on one count of attempted rape of an 8-year old, unlawful sexual intercourse with a 12-year old, and four counts of indecent assault against three girls at the height of his fame during the 1970s and sentenced to 16 more years in prison.[117] Though he never stood trial for it, the beast is alleged to have repeatedly raped his own daughter's best friend starting when she was just 8.[118] Two years prior to his death, Savile actually had the gall to publicly defend his child porn collecting, fellow serial pedophile glittery Gadd-fly friend during an interview, insisting "he did nothing wrong."[119]

Second Yewtree arrestee Freddie Starr was at one time an English singer, a very popular comic as well as actor who rose to fame during the 1970s with Jimmy Savile, also often featured as a regular performer on his programs.[120] The incident that caused his charmed life to come crashing down also was alleged to occur in Jimmy Savile's dressing room after he was a guest on Savile's Clunk Click show. According to alleged victim Karin Ward who was 15 at the time, Freddie Starr's "wandering hands" went up her skirt and pinched her buttocks in what she described as "being goosed." Karin has stated that she would never have even bothered reporting the incident to police had it not been for the Savile revelations and Starr humiliating her immediately following his ass groping, calling her a "titless wonder" in front of a bunch of hangers-on laughing and mocking her in the Savile dressing room.[121]

Decades after the humiliating incident Karin Ward was interviewed for two different documentaries that were produced exposing Savile, one by *ITV* that opened the reporting floodgate in October 2012 and another by the *BBC* that was never shown, pulled by BBC senior executives at the last minute in favor of airing two holiday tributes to the dead degenerate.[122] Soon after the *ITV* doc aired, Karin found herself interviewed by the police as Freddie Starr subsequently became Yewtree's second celebrity suspect arrested and released on bail. As to be expected, Freddie denied ever seeing or knowing this girl Karin but film footage of the program episode in question soon emerged confirming that the victim was present in the audience. Incidentally, Karin also testified that while on a camping trip from her Norfolk children's home to the notorious island of Jersey where kids were regularly used and abused by British VIPs, she reported that savage Savile molested her there as well.[123]

Though Operation Yewtree ultimately concluded that insufficient evidence to prosecute comedian Freddie Starr resulted in no formal charges ever filed against him, based on testimony from other alleged victims, a year later in 2013 Starr was rearrested and again a third time, yet strangely never charged.[124] After his fourth arrest, Freddie Starr vowed to bring Operation Yewtree "down on its knees."[125] Though he successfully evaded prosecution, his reputation was completely tattered. Knowing he couldn't take on and expect to win in court against the Met Police behind Yewtree, a vengeful Starr went on the offensive filing a suit against his prime accuser Karin Ward for libel and defamation of character. But in 2015 the presiding judge ruled in the victim's favor and Starr was stuck with a million pound legal bill to cover Karin's attorney fees.[126] Still claiming his innocence with his career and life torn asunder and his health allegedly failing, Starr promptly sold his English property and moved to Spain without paying his debt. In the end, Crown Prosecution Service decided against charging Starr for any crime at all.

It appears the farcical, on again, off again arrest antics were all for show, amounting to a colossal waste of time and manpower at exorbitant taxpayer expense, not to mention causing further despair to already damaged lives. The question lingers, was Starr ultimately spared from standing trial because he could return the damage on others higher up on the pedophilia food chain?

After skipping out, Starr reported to *The Sun* that at times he felt like taking his own life:

I was trapped like a dog. So I thought I'm just going to get on a plane and go to Spain. And this is where I'm going to die… Freddie Starr the entertainer is dead.[127]

But at last report in late 2016, an unshaven, pudgy Freddie rose from the dead and came out of hiding to entertain again, singing Elvis songs at his favorite local karaoke bar in Costa del Sol[128]… speaking of pedos named Elvis,[129] apparently Starr reinvented himself as a white-haired version of another bloated Elvis sighting. Though he claimed to be broke and unable to pay his legal fees back home, he had enough cash to plunk down £133,500 for his swanky pad on the Iberian Peninsula pleasure seeking paradise.

Also arrested during the first week of November 2012 was Wilfred De'ath, a *BBC* producer through the 1960s and 1970s who worked with Jimmy Savile on the radio program *Teen Scene*.[130] De'ath would later be interviewed in the explosive *ITV* documentary "Exposure - The Other Side of Jimmy Savile," stating that in phone contact as well as an in-person meeting in 1964, he saw firsthand evidence that Savile was engaging in unlawful sex with an underage girl estimated between 12 and 14, leaning towards 12.[131] But in October 2012 as part of the Operation Yewtree witch hunt, De'ath found himself accused of sexual assault but the alleged teenage victim as an adult would later withdraw her complaint and, as with Starr, the police never did charge De'ath with any pedophilia crime.

As a fresh grad out of Oxford at age 23, the *BBC* hired Wilfred De'Ath as its youngest ever producer. But in the

1970s the acerbic whiz kid was sued for libel, writing that nine of his contemporaries were “intellectual pygmies.” He lost not only a costly legal battle but his two decade long career at *BBC* as well, sending him in a downward spiral for the next many years living in France as a homeless person, moving back and forth from the streets to jail cells over a series of petty crimes. Self-admittedly leading a riches-to-rags scoundrel’s life, the 81-year oldie still manages to write a column for *The Oldie* about his up and down, colorfully checkered life.[132]

Dave Lee Travis and Jimmy Savile were both highly popular *BBC* DJ colleagues and Top of the Pops presenters, apparently affiliated with the same *BBC* child sex club from the late 1960s into the 1980s. The irony of Travis’ statement paying tribute to his friend Sir Jimmy proved especially accurate for him:

We are all going to be worse off without him around.[133]

As the fourth Operation Yewtree suspect, the former *BBC* Radio 1 morning show DJ host Travis was arrested on pedophilia charges and taken into custody for 12 hours after an early morning raid at his home before his release on bail in November 2012.[134] Travis was eventually acquitted of a dozen charges in a first trial in 2014 as alleged underage victims’ claims that he groped them decades earlier were not persuasive enough for the jury to convict.[135]

However in a second separate trial in September 2014, Travis was found guilty of indecent assault on a young researcher in her early 20s working on the *BBC* production of the Mrs. Merton Show in 1995, receiving a three month suspended sentence.[136] In December 2015 a three judge appeals court panel upheld his conviction,[137] unconvinced that the 1995 victim had lied about her accusation. His victim has explained that the veteran DJ saw her smoking a cigarette in a *BBC* corridor, and jokingly admonished her, “You shouldn't be smoking. Think about your poor little lungs.” She testified in court that he then walked up to her and proceeded to grab and squeeze her breasts for 10-15 seconds, adding that she was frozen in total bewilderment before retreating to safety.[138]

While the 1995 assault victim - comedienne Lucy Porter - who has worked Travis’ “groping my tits” incident into her standup comic routine after becoming a television personality in her own right,[139] all along the aging DJ claims he’s been a wrongfully accused innocent man and victim of a post-Savile witch hunt leaving him in financial ruin. But as of March 2018 a half decade after his initial arrest, the now 72-year old Travis is once again back to work hosting a two hour weekend spot with the new digital station United DJs Radio.[140] Maintaining all along that he’s the one who’s been a victim, the former *BBC* shock jock can’t hide his bitterness:

> *I do have pretty negative and strong feelings about things people have done that have been totally wrong. The unfortunate thing is that nowadays someone only has to say something and that’s enough to stop a person’s career.*[141]

Again, Travis supporters believe the former *BBC* star has been unfairly maligned as a martyr for what they consider trumped up charges in a mockery of justice, succumbing to pressures to justify Operation Yewtree by finding so called pedophiles to pay for Savile’s crimes in a feeble PR campaign to placate a shocked, incensed public… in effect, hanging from the gallows both innocent victims as well as a few low level offenders in order to shield guilty pedophilia kingpins at the top of the British Establishment. Fellow television presenter Noel Edmonds maintains that the royal family and the Thatcher government have been just as guilty for the Jimmy Savile scourge as the *BBC*.[142] Facts backing up his claim will be addressed later in Chapters 21 and 22.

If Travis did grope, and he may well have, clearly grabbing a woman's breasts he didn't know without her consent is rightfully a reprehensible act and legitimate crime. But brutally raping thousands of victims - both young and old in hospitals or on *BBC* premises including sex with dead corpses in the morgue, all with fully complicit knowledge and protection from fellow pedophile top politicians, royalty, MI5/6 and *BBC* executives, in 180 degree contrast, based on this single incident - even if guilty, Dave Lee Travis' behavior isn't even remotely comparable to Savile and others atop United Kingdom's predatory pedophilia network. And to that degree, he and others like him in the post-Savile witch hunt are victims. Meanwhile, above-the-law unreachables atop government and royalty continue satanically raping and murdering kids in droves. This is a total mockery of justice for all humans on earth. Yet nothing changes.

It's obvious the British police targeted Travis as a designated sacrificial victim to doggedly pursue in order to safeguard the bigger pedo-operation of sodomizing Luciferian cannibals that own the pedo-cabal so that they remain free to continue slaughtering both our innocents and humanity. Rather than bring the planetary ruling monsters responsible for this egregious global crisis to true justice, throwing a few minor "victims" under the bus as a convenient, wag-the-dog, stop-gap measure is nothing short of an insult to our intelligence. The lap dogging Scotland Yard/Metro Police in their Operation Yewtree cover-up are puppet controlled whores, proverbial gatekeeping foxes guarding the elite's satanic henhouse, in obedient protective service to their beastly masters - the earth's real pedophile rapists and murderers that continue destroying countless children with complete impunity. Without exception, the top tier of criminal power on earth has always been allowed to live above the law.

Whereas Travis may be a victimized scapegoat, plenty of other *BBC* Radio 1 DJs and longtime presenters clearly are not, and aside from Savile, at 77 years old Chris Denning is currently serving a 13 year sentence for his plethora of pedophilia crimes.[143] Police and court records show that during his marathon DJ-pedo-career from the 60s through the 80s, Denning groomed boys as young as 8 and savagely abused dozens of underage victims in his home, even in Savile's home,[144] at BBC studios, on the road, in hotels, even offering his boys to fellow DJs and introducing others to fellow pedophile rocker Gary Glitter, and on and on it goes.

Get the picture? Savile was never a lone operator as portrayed by mainstream media but a procurer amongst an entire brigade operating within a vast ring of fellow *BBC* and British Establishment pedophiles. Just like Hollywood pedophilia, for decades the *BBC* has been an open secret cesspit. Inside bystanders within the corporation have long known and said nothing because countless *BBC* powerbrokers were also actively involved within the larger British Establishment's pedo-network that of course includes prime ministers, cabinet ministers and parliament members as well as black nobility royal bloodlines. But more on their crimes in coming chapters.

Speaking of royalty, aside from Savile and his horde of *BBC* pedo-pals, another mainstay *BBC* pedophile employee that the corporation long protected is none other than Queen Elizabeth's 2005 official portrait painting artist, the Aussie born "Tie Me Kangaroo Down Sport" singer-child rapist himself Rolf Harris.[145] After a couple dozen complaints surfaced during the post-Savile stampede identifying him as their sexual predator, in 2013 Harris was arrested and in 2014 convicted and sentenced to almost six years imprisonment for committing a dozen indecent assaults against four underage girls as young as 7 from 1968 to 1986.[146] His most frequently abused victim was his own young daughter’s best friend starting when she was only 13, amounting to 7 of 12 counts against him, similar to the other *BBC* musician derelict Gary Glitter.[147] But unlike fellow *BBC* pervert Savile, despite a lenient sentence at least this monster was forced to start paying for his disgusting, shameful sins in this world prior to the next. In the mid-1970s his buddy Savile invited his fellow *BBC* pervert for a pre-bedtime tour at Broadmoor, the country’s most notorious maximum-security mental-health facility just so the lechers could gawk at the women having to undress in the hallway in front of male and female staff.[148] To make it more bizarrely Fellini-esque, Harris went into an impromptu version of his Tie Me Kangaroo Down Sport.

No doubt as a damage control, PR gesture to distance herself and her royal family from the disgraced convicted child sex offender, in 2015 the queen stripped the 84-year old Harris of his coveted CBE award - the Commander of the Civil Division of the Most Excellent Order of the British Empire.[149] Here’s a dot connecting observation – every time the crown bestows knighthood and excellent order memberships on her loyal subjects, you can almost bet they’re pedophiles or pedophile enablers as part of their illicit deviant club. Pedophiles reward their own kind. The queen took her OBE back from Harris immediately after it went public that the vile, remorseless pig sitting in jail had written a vindictive letter containing demented lyrics to a composed song calling his victims whose lives he destroyed “woodworms” crawling out of the woodwork 40 years after the fact to lay claim to his millions.[150] After decades of Rolf Harris also taking devilish delight exploitatively ravaging admiring underage female fans, crawling out from underneath the same *BBC* predator rock as Sir Jimmy, in May 2017 at age 87, the serial pedophile was released from prison.[151]

With all of Great Britain watching, by 2014 Operation Yewtree was growing desperate and needed convictions in the Savile aftermath following a series of arrests resulting in either no charges or trial acquittals for a number of early suspects. The police scam operation finally struck gold, nabbing its first conviction to bring down UK's biggest publicist kingpin when Max Clifford was found guilty in May 2014 on 8 of 11 counts of indecent assault against seven teenage girls aged 14 to 19 from 1966 to 1984.[152] Ironically early into Yewtree, it was Clifford who was telling the press that dozens of stars were contacting him right and left for protection and advice fearing they'd be arrested next over their past child abuse crimes. Little did the PR spin master know that it would be him who would be next, and the first conviction to boot.[153]

Then once incarcerated, many of those same famous predators worried Clifford would use his plethora of dark secrets to write a tell-all book in prison to pay for his legal fees that would expose all his former pals. But instead, the once PR kingpin used his prison time to purposely bankrupt himself in order to deny victim compensations, liquidating his wealth by June 2017.[154] Though he planned to appeal his case in 2018, he never got that far, as his 8-year sentence was abruptly cut short when he apparently suffered a fatal heart attack in his jail cell in December 2017.[155]

Critics of the 2014 verdict in the post-Savile era insist that Clifford's relative "minor improprieties" haplessly turned him also into a witch hunted scapegoat paying for mountains of unpunished sins of Savile and others. The man who once boasted Sinatra, Muhammad Ali and the Chelsea Football Club as his clients[156] and who current music industry mogul Simon Cowell once attributed "hiring Max Clifford" as the best career decision he ever made,[157] the publicity guru must have also held so much inside dirt on Establishment

VIPs from the royals to Westminster that with his sudden passing at 74, Max Clifford may have been the pedo-elite's sacrificial fall guy used as political grist for the damage control mill in yet another installment of "dead men tell no tales."

Another big UK media star disgraced from what he figured was his untouchable *BBC* throne is longtime host and presenter Stuart Hall who turned 88 this year. Arrested as a result of Operation Yewtree in December 2012, Hall pled guilty in May 2013 to sexually assaulting 13 girls, one as young as 9, from 1967 to 1991.[158] He was then convicted and sentenced to a paltry 15 months in prison in 2013 before appeals court judges tacked on another 15 months. This unremorseful pedophile was released from prison in December 2015 and prevented from moving to Spain (unlike unprosecuted other ex-*BBC* fallen star Freddie Starr). And to further demonstrate the aforementioned nexus between Queen Elizabeth and pedophilia, shortly before the perv's arrest, the queen also rewarded yet another "national treasure" turned disgraced *BBC* pedophile with The Most Excellent Order of the British Empire (OBE).[159]

Yet another low life errand boy in this never-ending saga of filth and perversion comes one of Savile's own chauffeurs - Ray Teret, at 73 sentenced in December 2014 to another 25 years behind bars for luring at least 11 underage girls with alcohol and drugs along with his relative mini-celebrity status to brutally rape victims between 13 and 15 years old from 1963 to 1979.[160] Teret was already convicted of sexual assault of a minor back in 1999 but may subsequently be prosecuted for sexual attacks alleged by yet more victims coming forth during the Savile aftermath.

Another Yewtree semi-notable suspect whose home was raided in December 2012 is 68-year old Fred Talbot, the *ITV* This Morning weatherman for sexually assaulting boys while a biology teacher back in the 1970s and 1980s.[161] As the number of victims kept growing to at least ten, eight more months were tacked on in November 2017 to his already 4-year sentence in Scotland in May 2017 for abusing seven more schoolboys on top of an original 5-year prison term received from Manchester Crown Court for molesting two more underage victims.

But other than this handful of relatively little known low-life predators, for all its efforts, Operation Yewtree has been an utter waste and complete failure at placing the most powerful pedophiles in the United Kingdom behind bars. To add insult to injury, more than a few of the identified suspects that were publicly arrested for pedophilia were never prosecuted for lack of evidence. To name a few… A month after Wilfred De'ath's arrest, in December 2012 another former fellow *BBC* Radio 1 producer that worked with Savile in the 1960s and 70s, the then 76-year old Ted Beston was arrested but told in May 2013 he would not face charges.[162] Beston and Savile were close friends collaborating on a series of *BBC* shows - Savile's Travels, the Jimmy Savile Old Record Club and the Double Top Ten Show. Beston is said to have procured underage girls and young women for Savile and was questioned again by police in November 2015 under "Savile related" crimes.[163] More Yewtree scapegoating harassment against a more or less innocent man in order to make up for Savile sins or guilty of complicit aiding and abetting unlawful sex crimes with minors?[164] The now 80 year old has never been charged with a crime.

59-year old comedian Jim Davidson and 53-year old radio DJ Mike Osman were arrested in January 2013 but after nine months were neither charged nor prosecuted.[165] Next came comedian 73-year old Jimmy Tarbuck arrested in April 2013 and cleared a year later.[166] 65-year old *BBC* broadcaster Paul Gambaccini was arrested in October 2013 but after a year on bail was also not charged for alleged lack of evidence.

These men's lives and reputations were harmed and if they committed no crimes, justice was not served even with their investigations clearing them of wrongdoing. But if they did engage in sexual assault of underage minors or aided and abetted those who did, and for whatever reason, dodged the prosecution bullet for "lack of evidence," the UK justice system once again failed the victims… which leads to the next question. Are British police investigators that incompetent? Outside of the one case with Wilfred De'ath's alleged accuser backing out on her earlier complaint, no other alleged victims followed suit as reason not to prosecute those initially arrested.

Either these onetime suspects are innocent and wrongly arrested or police are grossly incompetent in putting together solid enough cases that warrant charges that will stick, or perhaps they were spared, granted reprieves by the ruling elite for staying tightlipped under pressure in not implicating their criminal masters, as Savile did his whole life, loyally never outing or biting the pedo-hands that fed him such as royalty, PMs, MPs and *BBC* heads. In any event, Yewtree's been a horrendous debacle and tremendously shameful waste of time, taxpayer money and personnel, unjustifiably damaging too many people's lives and denying justice for thousands of victims.

In its fourth year alone in 2015 at a hefty price tag of £5m[167] when police budgets across Britain were being cut by 20%, 63 separate police inquiries were probing historic child sex abuse in response to 2,100 victim claims, more than half at over 1,200 committed at one youth detention institution Medomsley.[168] That statistic alone is indicative of how the UK authoritarian state treats its "throwaway" youth as pure expendables used and abused by sickos in its corrosively corrupt child welfare penal system. The massive police operation as a self-serving, face-saving, damage control exercise was nothing more than a grandstanding spectacle and show of force put on by British law enforcement to make up for permitting Savile to freely roam the countryside committing 60 years of, according to *BBC*'s account:

… Over 600 crimes of sexual abuse recorded against Savile in 28 police force areas across the UK.[169]

The National Society for Prevention of Cruelty to Children (NSPCC), "the UK's leading children's charity,"[170] claimed an increase of 128% in child sexual abuse reporting from 2009/10 to 2014/15.[171] As of February 2015, a 71% increase in reported abuse cases since the Savile dam broke in October 2012 was cited by the National Police Chiefs' Council (NPCC) as part of Yewtree, released under its own codename Operation Hydrant.[172] The more investigative codenamed operations they have going, the more police chiefs get to stroke their self-inflated importance as empty gestures overcompensating for their gargantuan failures. In that February press conference, the NPCC boasted that 1433 suspects had been investigated, breaking down their numbers to reveal that 261 were classified as "prominent public persons."[173] Of those 261 so called "bigtime" pedo-suspects from the 1433 total, 135 were in TV, film or radio, 76 were politicians, 43 were in the music industry and 7 in sports. No doubt because so few of these 1433 suspects were ever arrested - only 19 in all,[174] much less prosecuted, much less convicted - 6 in all,[175] much less imprisoned for any length of time, the UK police have little to show for all their failed efforts to put child abusers behind bars, all six of them, and make kids in Great Britain safe.

The fact that such a tiny pathetic handful of pedophiles were actually convicted by Yewtree, a few elderly degenerates caught up in Yewtree's umbrella comprising among the UK's largest national police operations,[176] is yet one more disgrace on top of the already unconsequenced Savile-*BBC* sex ring disgrace. Britain has merely demonstrated good reason to be called the pedophilia epicenter of the world. With rare exception, the tried, convicted and imprisoned pedophile few are minor in prominence and most were handed far too lenient sentences as well. Operations Yewtree and Hydrant proved to be merely a PR stunt turned propaganda circus intended to appease the shocked and outraged nation by dragging on for years at a time pissing in the wind, resulting in millions of wasted tax paid pounds paid in the flesh of thousands of damaged and destroyed lives still waiting for justice.

The Yewtree operations are one colossal scam of the highest order as UK's corrupt law enforcement[177] take orders directly from the so called national security apparatus - MI5/6 and Special Branch, which in turn take orders from royalty and government, which in turn take their orders from the Rothschilds and other subhuman bloodlines ruling the earth through a Luciferian pedo-blackmail control system while unencumbered throughout, they're still daily defiling children across the planet en masse.

Another glaring observation begs this unanswered question. Why has this massive all-nation police probe only yielded a few aging, doddering convicted derelicts who committed damage way back in the 1950s up to the 1980s, as if pedophilia suddenly stopped in the 1990s? Do the authorities think we're that stupid to believe that younger generations of pedophiles ceased abusing children in the 1990s or that pedophilia stopped altogether? Or have their global child raping operations only submerged deeper underground and in recent decades become more tightly insulated and protected? Meanwhile, there is plenty of contra-indicative evidence that child sexual abuse, child pornography and child sex trafficking in recent years have in fact been rising exponentially with an estimated 2 million kids a year being trafficked worldwide[178] amongst 8 million gone missing yearly.[179] Outside North America, the British Isles as a very small nation is the world's largest consumer of child pornography.[180]

It's gotten so out of hand clogging up the British court system that a pilot program has been launched with Sussex police knocking on doors and giving warnings to first-time offenders downloading child porn images so that the police can concentrate more resources on pedophiles posing grave risk of physical contact with children.[181] One police chief is advocating that child porn should no longer be treated as a crime but as a deviant mental health condition meriting treatment. Critics of course slam this controversial approach warning that it may only promote more people turning to child pornography that in turn may set a certain percentage onto the slippery slope leading to physically acting out pedophilic desires on victims. It reflects the current child abuse crisis that law enforcement is overwhelmed to adequately deal with during a digital age that appears to only be contributing more to pedophilia crime.

So why aren't police busting current perps active in pedo-rings in larger numbers? Certainly not because they don't exist. Police will cite lack of resources. At the same time that humans today are being more electronically monitored and controlled than any time in history, one of the very few advantages of this advancing technology is that it should help police more rapidly identify and locate child rapists and murderers. Yet the powerful individuals behind the massive global pedophilia operations are not being arrested and brought to justice, and the reason is all too obvious – they simply are living above the law. That all these child abuse investigations have failed so miserably to catch the more "prominent" pedophiles most responsible in the UK who continue to criminally reoffend without disruption over the last three decades only says that they are all a scam, all for show to placate the angst-ridden public.

The pedophilia order-following foxes masquerading in police uniform and priestly or high court robes are guarding and protecting current pedophile rings still flourishing within the global child trafficking network. Pedophiles and their enablers from the high courts, law enforcement, intelligence services, governments, secret societies, militaries, social services, large charities and MSM have simply walled off the currently entrenched malignancy with “out of sight, out of mind,” sleight-of-hand mass deception. But despite MSM lies, with a growing awareness of Pizzagate turned PedoGate gaining traction in the last couple years finally recognizing the global epidemic crisis,[182] as hard as the cabal tries to cover-up its crime tracks desperate to put the pedo-genie back in the bottle, enough realists with eyes wide open are now seeing through the continuous stream of lies and cover-up, and as a result, in the light of truth, the crumbling pedo-cabal will eventually come tumbling down sooner than later.

By bottom line design, Operation Yewtree was a monumental disaster in terms of exposing and bringing the ruling perps most guilty to justice and attacking the current scourge of worldwide pedophilia afflicting this planet. But then from the very start that was never the intended purpose of this controlled national police operation. Its actual objective was only to obscure and shield the much larger pedophilia network that only on a minor scale includes the *BBC* and is sadly still operating robustly as ever today.

Even pedo-enabler then Home Secretary Theresa May admitted in July 2014 that her office had previously covered up evidence that MPs and senior government officials committed child sex abuse.[183] But in the next breath May then insists that the late MP Geoffrey Dickens never submitted a dossier to Home Office boss Leon Brittan in 1983 but only written letters. She also added that an earlier Home Office investigator found no evidence that the 114 missing sex abuse files allegedly lost were ever “removed or destroyed inappropriately.” Again, placate a skeptical public by first openly admitting to covering up the truth but then follow immediately by defending and clearing her office and predecessors of all wrongdoing. Here’s a loaded question - whose side is she really on?

To further cast clarity on whose side the current prime minister is really on, at the Savile bombshell outbreak during the first week of November 2012, then Home Secretary May rejected a single overarching, super-inquest that would have possessed the necessary muscle to examine all links and tentacles of abuse to both the national and international pedo-cabal network but instead May chose to endorse the already eight separate smaller investigations launched at the time.[184] While a slew of toothless, watered down, narrowly focused mini-inquiries are obviously aimed at protecting the global pedo-machine, the anti-pedophilia child victim advocate MP Tom Watson prophetically warned:

A narrowed-down investigation is the basic building block of [more] *cover-up. Many sickening crimes will remain uninvestigated, and some of the most despicable paedophiles will remain protected by the Establishment that has shielded them for 30 years.*[185]

May’s pedo-enabling strategy has obviously worked so far, for years her supposed “independent” inquiry has gone awry. Moreover, Theresa May proceeded to select two women in a row to head her so called national inquiry into how UK government institutions responded to the massive child sexual abuse scandal and both of her choices were forced to resign over blatant conflicts of interest,[186] i.e., more evidence of foxes caught guarding the pedo-henhouse.

Turns out former magistrate high court judge Baroness Butler-Sloss's brother - Sir Michael Havers - as UK's Justice Secretary for Thatcher's first eight years in office (1979-1986) knew the PM's senior diplomat Peter Hayman was abusing young boys yet chose to do nothing but cover it up.[187] In fact, Havers did his best to ensure that pedophilia allegations were never aired in Parliament. Then May's Sloss replacement – Fiona Woolf, the Lord Mayor of London, was outed as a close friend of Lord Brittan, Thatcher's notorious Home Secretary who, oops, lost the 1983 dossier on Westminster child abuse. Of course Theresa May claimed she didn't know about her two selections' biased backgrounds. Yet she and Woolf were caught colluding in a re-write seven times attempting to distance the Woolf from the pack she lived on the same street with, regularly attending the pedo-accused Sir Leon's dubious parties.[188]

Though the press called Theresa May "incompetent" for her pathetic selections to run an "open" and honest investigation into government pedophilia, May is not stupid and knew exactly what she was doing, trying to whitewash another inquiry by stacking the deck with yet more foxes. To answer criticism stemming from her thinly veiled attempts to facilitate yet another government cover-up of past cover-ups, in February 2015 May ended up recruiting a foreign judge from New Zealand to lead the next "objective" attempt at "getting to the truth."[189] The forever British stonewalling to shield powerful VIP child rapists at all cost is proving endlessly exhausting in the nation that is clearly the world's pedophilic epicenter.

Without explanation other than a feeble Dame Lowell Goddard claiming the investigation's "legacy of failure" was simply "too much" for her and she felt "lonely,"[190] so after a year and a half on the job, she abandoned ship and flew home to New Zealand. Obviously there's much more to the story than that. Perhaps she could no longer ethically take part in the Brits' habitual VIP cover-up. What does it say about a country when its chronically failed inquiries never cease failing? It says that Prime Minister May and those with the real power behind her puppet post are never going to come clean with divulging their true crimes against children. It's called self-preservation. The cabal must survive at all costs to humanity.

A fourth chair, Professor Alexis Jay, took over in August 2016 but less than a year later by June 2017 the two biggest victims groups bowed out, asserting that the inquiry was "not fit for purpose," maintaining that victims from the get-go were "totally marginalized."[191] The largest victims group had already pulled out earlier, accusing May's "Independent" Inquiry into Child Sexual Abuse (IICSA) of being a "stage-managed event," like all the rest all for show and no action. While the colossal £100million fleecing of Briton taxpayers in a fake probe lay in disastrous shambles, at this pathetic point in history, the not-so-great Britain knows only shameful shams and anything but the truth.[192] And in the course of empire rise and falls, currently also a has-been, historically America's right behind its mothership England just as mired in moral depravity and criminal cover-up.[193] No wonder, they're both part of the same global pedo-cabal.

Let's face it. If you're a blood drinking sodomizer from a black nobility bloodline still wreaking havoc on children and this planet on a grand scale, for you Operation Yewtree and May's dirty dozen "independent" inquiries have been a smashing success designed to avoid the truth to keep you out of jail and the headlines. Inasmuch as the massive worldwide child raping, murdering network still remains fully operational and still flourishing, to the elite that only means that Yewtree et al have been triumphantly effective. To this day, top tier pedophiles continue living above the law.

But what the pedo-controllers fear the most is the fact that like never before, every single day more of us are learning about their massive criminal enterprise and ultra-destructive agenda targeting humanity for further abuse and sordid atrocities. Enough of a growing minority within the pliable masses are becoming more savvy, refusing to tolerate or accept the bullshit lies and excuses heaped on us daily.

Perhaps the biggest farcical lies coming out of the wave of various Yewtree sub-operations is Operation Newgreen conducted by Savile's very own West Yorkshire Police (WYP), tasked with policing Sir Jimmy's hometown of Leeds where 68 victims have emerged in the post-Savile era. Because psychopath Savile had long been cozy bedfellows with his likeminded local police buddies, establishing "the Friday morning club" where Savile regularly met socially for tea with his closest chums in blue at his penthouse home,[194] it should come as no surprise that Operation Newgreen would be a total cover-up claiming there was "no evidence" that the most famous Leeds resident was ever protected from arrest or prosecution.[195] Moreover, Newgreen insists that the alleged 68 Savile victims never reported abuse to police while Sir Jimmy was still alive. I wonder why. Recall the earlier 1965 incident with Jimmy and his underage victim sitting in his Rolls parked in Roundhay Park and the police sergeant's response. Ever since, that little episode served as a preview of what was to follow. Blindly loyal to their own prodigal son, West Yorkshire Police have always protected Britain's most prolific pedophile who, gladly paying his protection dues, relished running PR and public announcement campaigns for his local boys in blue - a win-win for morally corrupt depravity at its worst.

Another huge reason police have no record of victims reporting Savile crimes is West Yorkshire Police's nasty habit of "losing" [or more like destroying] their own records,[196] kind of like the Home Office does. This fact has come to light repeatedly. After an honest, retired WYP officer insisted that Leeds Vice Squad conducted an inquiry investigating indecent assault allegations made by two girls against Savile in the 1980s but when no records were located on file to back it up, this discrepant matter was turned over to Metro Police to sort out, not that that'll do any good. Additionally, anonymous letters in 1998 sent to Metropolitan Police stating that Savile was "a deeply committed paedophile" were then forwarded on to West Yorkshire Police and again they too got lost in the shuffle. And perhaps the biggest reason West Yorkshire Police lag so far behind in reported sexual abuse cases and pedophile arrests is because more WYP cops turn out to be pedophiles than any other police force in the nation.[197]

The whitewashed Newgreen report also included this tidbit:

Savile offering his services as an intermediary for the police, should the 'Ripper' wish to make contact.[198]

My how neighborly of Savile considering he and Peter Sutcliffe, one of the deadliest serial killers in UK history, were actually buds who may have been partners-in-crime together. One of Ripper's victims' bodies was found at the edge of Savile's property and another attempted murder took place nearby.[199] The police knew Sir Jimmy used local hookers and even ordered an imprint of the pedophile's teeth since kinky Jimmy was a known biter and two Yorkshire Ripper victims had teeth marks on their bodies. But more on that dynamic duo from hell's incriminatingly intimate relationship and prison bonding in the next chapter.

As if not enough evidence has proven Savile was a known pimp and necrophilia Satanist involved in large scale pedophile rings, an October 2012 article in the *Express* entitled "Jimmy Savile Ruled Paedophile Ring" links Jimmy as the ringleader to the seashore resort town of North Yorkshire where at least two victims allege Savile assaulted them in the late 1960s and late 1980s.[200] Moreover, the article implicates Savile was involved in a child sex ring in nearby Scarborough where the entertainer maintained intimate ties to the repeatedly accused, now dead prominent businessmen and onetime Scarborough mayor Peter Jaconelli.[201] Evidence shows on at least two occasions Savile the child procurer transported underage patients from Rampton without authorization to Scarborough where he and his mayor pal are believed to have sexually abused children.[202] Four years after Jaconelli's death, in 2003 the Scarborough Police were probing the same sex ring connected to Savile and Jaconelli that resulted in the conviction of at least one other offender for molesting two girls aged 9.

Perhaps the most egregiously compelling proof that Savile was a pimping procurer for VIPs arrives as evidence has surfaced confirming that former UK Prime Minister Edward Heath (1970-1974) sexually abused children from the Haut de la Garenne children's orphanage on the infamous island of Jersey. As the planet's top offshore tax haven at $2 trillion with a population of just 100,000 nestled in the Channel Islands just 14 miles off the French west coast,[203] Jersey is the repository of both the world's most hidden wealth and the most horrific pedophilia history of abuse and cover-up – the epicenter of the epicenter. Both Prime Minister Ted Heath and Jimmy Savile were frequent pleasure visitors to the famous tourist island. Heath was a committed pedophile to the extent that he risked his political career attending at least a half dozen meetings of the Paedophile Information Exchange (PIE), the political group in the 1970s and 80s lobbying to eliminate age of sexual consent for children.[204]

Steeped in PIE, child torture, rape and murder, the cabal had Heath by the ca-balls by the time he was made PM in 1970. And within a year Heath was treasonously signing away Britain's sovereignty with a secret mandate kept hidden from British citizens for nearly a half century.[205] Heath simply did what he was ordered by his masters that put him in power as a pedophile controlled puppet usurping English law by subordinating it to the Treaty of Accession to the European Economic Union (EEC), the globalist forerunner evolving in 1993 into the unelected, undemocratic NWO monstrosity called the European Union, the same one that's literally killing nations like Greece, with Italy and Spain not far behind.[206] It wasn't until May 2018 that this subversive deception of the FCO30/1048 document was finally made public, illustrating how for the last 50 years so called national leaders are blackmail controllable pawns assigned to forward the totalitarian agenda of one world government.

Ted Heath's sodomy and killing of missing children that Savile escorted from Haut de la Garenne aboard the prime minister's yacht is supported by dock eyewitnesses that observed fewer boys returning.[207] Pedophilic child killers Savile and Heath have even been outed by a mainstream *Newsweek* article as raping murderers of ill-fated Jersey kids.[208] Other independent corroborating sources have emerged from abuse victims themselves as well as intelligence and national security consultant, barrister Michael Shrimpton, and investigative author-activist David Icke, a full dozen years ahead of Savile's death and over half dozen prior to Heath's demise.[209] Icke's shocking allegations against Savile and Heath went unchallenged in court while the two powerful sickos were still alive because they were true. During the long decades of abuse that likely go back to the late 1930s on the island, whenever the abused children from Jersey care homes dared to complain, they were severely beaten, further abused and locked in cellars serving as barbaric dungeons.[210] And if they carried on too long about wealthy yachtsmen raping them during their group homes' "recreational outings" at sea, if not killed, they were even more severely beaten and punished.

Shrimpton maintains that the pedophile prime minister couldn't risk victims recognizing him as their abuser and thus had a number of his tortured, sodomized older victims 14 and 15-years of age murdered and thrown overboard.[211] After the *Sun* ran a series of articles linking Jimmy Savile to the Haut de la Garenne abuse then under investigation in 2008, Savile threatened to sue the newspaper, vehemently denying that he ever set foot on Jersey Island. The *Sun* then produced a photograph with the infamous sodomizer front and center surrounded by potential victims at Haut de la Garenne.[212] The pedo-kingpin then countered with a super-injunction prohibiting the *Sun* from publishing the incriminating photo. And to this day the Rupert Murdock owned *Sun* has removed all its articles pertaining to the photos and court injunction.

Two years ago it also came to light that a *Jersey Evening Post* article dated July 29, 1967 quoted the disgraced entertainer boldly warning the island's parents to "lock up their daughters" during one of his many visits.[213] Savile had the audacity to boast he was "a villain" on the loose and that Jersey's "sun-bronzed daughters" need to be kept safely hidden away from his perverted evil clutches. Talk about a criminal brazenly not even hiding in plain sight.

Incidentally in a related side note, Jimmy Savile was also in Jersey in 1963, the same year that pedophile politician Lord Boothby thanked his gay lover crime boss Ronnie Kray in a letter dated June 6, 1963:

Thank you for your postcard. I very nearly went to Jersey myself, as I have never been there, and hear from so many people that it is quite delightful.[214]

Is it pure coincidence that two prolific pedophiles Ronnie Kray and Jimmy Savile were both on the same pedophilia infested little island at the same time, one procurer to the next? Back in 1963, aside from a little pedo-R&R, they may also have been expanding their mutual interests in Jersey as prime source for their child sex trafficking pipeline. Historically Jersey had already become Britain's offshore goldmine for VIP abuse. After all, Savile and the Kray brothers knew each other and were friends, attending the same sex parties with DJs, musicians and entertainers going back to the late 1950s.[215] Savile's ties to the mob originated a decade earlier during his dancehall days in northern England. A couple victims claiming to have been onetime girlfriends alluded to Sir Jimmy's underworld ties that even after his death kept them tightlipped.[216] His crude, ruffian Mafioso ways were reflected in his frequent self-reference as the Godfather[217] and frequent reminders how with just a phone call he could have enemies roughed up or worse.[218]

Despite being caught red-handed in a flagrant lie denying he was ever at the notorious Jersey Island crime scene of Haut de la Garenne, nothing further has ever come of the victims' allegations singling out both Savile as well as the murdering prime minister. And at the end of the day, incredulously not enough evidence to indict Savile and company was the false word put out by the corrupt Jersey authorities.[219] But the real reason is all too obvious - Sir Jimmy had far too much dirt on the royals and virtually all the pedophile-infiltrated prime minister governments from Ted Heath, Margaret Thatcher, Gordon Brown,[220] and Tony Blair to David Cameron (pedo-evidence on them primarily reserved for Chapter 23), more than enough to bring down the entire crime cabal in the UK if arrested. His life insurance policy bought his protection for over a half century from the pedos-on high knowing they were supplied a constant flow of fresh victims enslaved in the Luciferian power pyramid blackmail machine.

Per barrister Shrimpton, another explanation as to why Heath was spared exposure and ruin prior to his death in

2005 was that his own Cabinet Secretary Baron Hunt of Tanworth, John Hunt was yet another alleged fellow pedophile whose job was to ensure the PM's high crimes were covered up.[221] That said, Hunt failed to stop David Icke in 1998 from outing the perverted onetime 10 Downing Street resident. But unfortunately back in 1998 not enough people paid any attention to Icke, unable to handle the shocking truth. Due to Hunt's pedo-gatekeeping diligence, like Savile the serial raping murderer Heath and Hunt were both permitted earthly escape in 2005 and 2008 respectively without paying their piper. And for performing his pedo-protecting duty, cabal movers and shakers the queen and pope each rewarded John Hunt the Knight Grand Cross of the British Order[222] and a papal knighthood,[223] as further testimony underscoring the unholy nexus of pedophilia and secret societies, black nobility royalty and the Catholic Church. Of course Catholic Zionist Sir Jimmy was also knighted by the queen in 1990, the same year pedo-enabling Pope John Paul II[224] bestowed papal knighthood on the Satanist as Knight Commander of Saint Gregory the Great.[225] At the height of all the commotion caused by Savile's posthumous 2012 dark side unveiling, talk of the exposed predator as the first ever to be stripped of papal knighthood turned out to be just talk once the initial shock blew over.

For six decades the poor defenseless children of the island of Jersey and Haut de la Garenne were unmercifully preyed upon by powerful Luciferian pedophiles. Because the Jersey government and law enforcement were among the worst offenders in the once WWII German occupied (and heavily influenced)[226] autonomous island nation still a part of the queen's British Isles, ultimately the Jersey head constable Graham Power and deputy police chief Lenny Harper led a police investigation in 2007-08 to finally search for evidence of foul play at the infamous orphanage closed in 1986.[227]

But the local establishment largely consisting of threatened members from the island's pedophile ring hampered investigators' efforts at every turn, including a smear campaign from the *Jersey Evening Post*,[228] culminating in the island's then home affairs minister Andrew Lewis illegally suspending Powers in November 2008,[229] eventually running them both off the island,[230] but not before bones of five children had been dug up on the premises,[231] along with 65 teeth with roots attached and about 100 charred bone fragments once belonging to murdered missing kids.[232] The only reason more skeletal remains were not recovered at the site was many of the missing abused boys had been murdered at sea by prominent VIP yachtsmen like Edward Heath and his procurer Sir Jimmy. If not directly murdered by their hands, it was at their orders, which is still coldblooded murder.

Among the many powerful men accused by former residents of Haut de la Garenne and other children's homes back in the 1960s and 70s was Jimmy Savile. They never reported the abuse to the Jersey constabulary before because they knew they couldn't trust those who were part of the systemic island pedophile ring. But in 2008 when investigators Power and Harper supported by Jersey senator, health minister and strong anti-child abuse advocate Stuart Syvret were finally listening to victims, a number reported that Jimmy Savile as well as Ted Heath were among their abusers. In addition to high crimes on the high seas, Sir Jimmy also attacked victims at both Haut de la Garenne as well as the Sacre Coeur orphanage run by French Catholic nuns.[233]

Two men also reported that actor Wilfrid Brambell who played "the dirty old man" on the *BBC* television series Steptoe and Son (American sitcom counterpart was Sanford and Son starring Redd Foxx) sexually molested them in a backstage room at the Jersey Opera House.[234] A notorious local pedo-procurer for visiting celebs fetched the group home victims to attend opera house performances as “a treat.”[235] One was a child from the Haut de la Garenne and both were 12 and 13 years old at that time in the 1970s when Brambell in his sixties was at the height of his fame. Playing Paul McCartney’s grandfather in the Beatles’ Hard Day’s Night, actor Brambell had a criminal record dating back to 1962 for soliciting underage boys in public restrooms. Apparently he was just playing himself as the dirty old man Albert Steptoe, dying friendless and near broke at age 72 in 1985. Both famous *BBC* entertainers were both frequent island visiting pedophiles in the 70s, so chances are near 100% that Brambell and Savile knew each other. After all, the island has been a pedo-magnet since the WWII German Nazi occupation.

Renovation companies working on the Haut de la Garenne premises through the decades were always customarily instructed by orphanage staff to burn any bones they might encounter.[236] Traces of blood were discovered in the underground dungeon as well as detected in the drainage pipes. It became crystal clear that for many years children had been systematically tortured and killed in the “Jersey House of Horrors,” their bodies incinerated in a large furnace in an effort to eliminate evidence. Yet with all this overwhelming incrimination corroborating well-documented firsthand accounts from nearly 200 victims, the Jersey minister was unconscionably able to shut down Graham Power’s legitimate 2008 probe. Power’s replacement promptly negated all earlier findings, contending that no evidence of abuse was ever found and proceeded to drag out the whitewash for another two years till December 2010 at a hefty tax payer price tag amounting to a £20 million sham.[237]

The Jersey powers-that-shouldn’t-be also harassed and effectively shut down any journalists attempting to uncover the horrific truth as well. Clearly protecting the child rapists, as soon as the Jersey authorities in September 2011 learned that respected American journalist Leah McGrath Goodman planned to write a book about the Haut de la Garenne abuse, they had her immediately deported, later detained at London's Heathrow Airport for 12 hours, in effect under arrest while denying her right to a lawyer or notify family, subsequently banning her from returning to both the UK and Jersey.[238] It took nearly a year and a half later, a submitted petition and assistance from an MP before Leah was finally allowed back into the British Isles. Pretty pathetic, yet that's the sort of absurd extremes murderous regimes resort to when they have so much to hide.

Despite effectively quashing inquiries from both journalists and police alike, the 2008 probe did manage to take 1,776 statements from 192 alleged victims accusing 151 alleged abusers (121 of them still alive[239]), among the 30 dead Savile and Heath.[240] But because so many of the pedophiles are and were such influential wealthy figures high up in both the Jersey and London pedo-filled governments, to date only seven offenders have been successfully prosecuted.

Operation Whistle was the latest Jersey States Police investigation supposedly reexamining the historical abuse on the island,[241] including 13 famous still unnamed pedophile headliners that include celebrities, media personalities, politicians and sports stars.[242] We're still waiting on the outcome of those interested persons due for police questioning back in 2015. If like every other probe, "not enough evidence" and hence we will never hear of any of these high profile pedo-suspects, especially after the recent Sir Cliff Richard case covered in the next chapter.

In a separate inquiry, after compiling testimony for the last three years listening to 200 witnesses describe 553 offenses uncovering island abuse from 1947 to 2004, another £20 million spent on the Independent Jersey Care Inquiry report was finally released after many delays in July 2017. It demanded that the Haut de la Garenne buildings be torn down and warned that children on the island even today are still at risk.[243]

Carrie Modral, the chair of the Jersey Care Leavers' Association, a charity devoted to those who've spent time in the so called child welfare system, raises a poignant observation in October 2012 addressing why the Savile name finally resurfaced on Jersey after he died:

> *But why have the States of Jersey only admitted it about Savile now? Because he's dead and he can't talk or bring down all the other big names. Their view would be that we, the survivors, keep going on about celebrities abusing kids at Haut de la Garenne, so OK, 'Here's one, he's dead and he can't talk.' But Savile was just the tip of the iceberg.*[244]

Never did hear about what happened to those 13 other prominent players under investigation. Will they all be dead before their names go public like Sir Jimmy's? Clearly there remains a powerful super wealthy elite group of pedophiles and complicit enablers on the island with high connections to fellow pedophiles atop the UK government and royalty that's controlled politics in the Jersey States for many generations, persecuting and destroying careers of children's advocates who've attempted to change a long embedded culture of abuse. Courageous individuals challenging the status quo system in efforts to irradiate both the culture of abuse and its bookend twin that Stuart Syvret calls "a culture of cover-up"[245] have had their reputations smeared by the government funded newspaper, were sued, gagged, terminated from jobs and even imprisoned.[246] The pedo-network at Jersey is just as alive and well as the one at

Westminster, mainly because it’s one and the same and its members all live above the law.

So despite mountains of incontrovertible evidence on the infamous Jersey Island, well over 100 identified abusers are still out there roaming free, likely still abusing kids with - outside of the token seven, not a single pedophile more has been brought to justice. Of course it’s no different from America where known pedophile overlords like the Bushes, Clintons and Podestas are still on the loose, and until those British household names of top politicians, entertainers and royal princes go down in pedophilia flames, seeing is believing that anything substantial will ever change. As monstrous as the Sanduskys, Nassars, Bennells and even Saviles are, in the whole scheme of things, all are small fish within a global ocean of pedophile network sharks. The thoroughly corrupt, evil system has always been the protective buffer making the actual Luciferian kingpins behind the world’s child raping machine unreachable and the sorry fact remains that not one dominant VIP pedovor from the political puppet establishment has ever been successfully prosecuted and brought to justice worldwide. And that’s not even including the invisible, planet-controlling pedophiles pulling all the strings who own both this diabolical network and toxic planet.

After Savile had long become a permanent *BBC* fixture on British television throughout the 1970s and 80s, his growing circle of pedophile friends had expanded to popular soap opera stars from the *BBC* set of the longtime running series EastEnders ever since its 1985 debut.[247] In 2013 on the heels of the Savile bombshell, it was reported that the Scotland Yard Police began investigating *BBC* employees who misused their celebrity status to groom potential underage victims engaging in idol worship, seeking autographs at and around the studio. This post-Savile development uncovering an active pedophile ring systemically operating at *BBC* only further confirms that the media giant institution has been harboring a longstanding continuous history of organized child sexual abuse extending far beyond one designated ringleading monster or his handful of marginal fellow *BBC* players.

The Sun quoted an inside source:

Police are shocked at what they have unearthed. Arrests are very likely. This is bigger than anyone imagined. A lot of work has been done over the last few months. Top police bosses have been shocked at what they have unearthed so far and are determined to finish the job.[248]

Yet another questionable *BBC* death among many, a related topic taken up next in Chapter 20, a convicted pedophile who worked as an extra on EastEnders due to be questioned about the *BBC* pedo-scandal involving the soap's cast and crew ended up dead along with his twin brother found asphyxiated with plastic bags over their heads in Spain.[249]

Speaking of EastEnders' derelict deaths, the latest deceased *BBC* actor - Leslie Grantham - like his *BBC* colleague Savile and former UK PM Heath - also escaped this world without arrest or prosecution for his pedophilic crimes to live out his lecherous life of 71 years.[250] But despite his TV stardom peaking in the 1980s, this guy was no stranger to police and criminal court. In 1967 while a young man serving in the British Army in Germany, Grantham was convicted of murder after shooting a taxi driver in a failed mugging attempt and did ten years of a life sentence for that serious crime. While in prison he took up acting and landed his popular role as an early EastEnders villain.

But his kinky lifestyle apparently began catching up to him again when in 2004 he was caught exposing himself on webcam in a lewd sex act.[251] It also was revealed he took drugs on the *BBC* set purchased from another *BBC* staffer later arrested for dealing narcotics to fellow members of their *BBC* pedophile ring. Then in 2009 Grantham was accused of raping an underage girl less than 16 years old culminating in his divorce in 2013 from his Australian actress wife, at which time the former star retreated to Bulgaria. But in recent years he developed lung cancer, and returned to Britain this year to die on June 15th.

The former police officer behind the *ITV* Jimmy Savile Exposure documentary - Mark Williams Thomas - told the *Mirror* within hours after Grantham's death that the actor back in 2012 as part of Yewtree was investigated over "compelling evidence" indicating Grantham repeatedly sexually abused a 14- turned 15-year old schoolgirl in 2009-10.[252] Thomas explained that after the girl contacted him "very, very scared," he informed Metro Police but the girl eventually decided not to pursue the case.

Though that March 2013 *Sun* article claimed that pending *BBC* EastEnders arrests were pending at any time, as is so often the typical trademark of virtually every pedo-cover-up, no follow-up ever occurred on this notorious *BBC* cast and crew investigation nor its never reported outcome during the half decade that's elapsed since. But Leslie Grantham's recent death forced the *BBC* EastEnders pedophile ring once again to briefly resurface in the headlines before the story once again died.

Apparently the longstanding UK history of subservient, order-following police forces and an obedient pedo-controlled, state-owned media corporation acting in cahoots with their higher-up handlers have once again sealed off all information shielding prominent pedophiles at the top as the same old, same old standard outcome in every pedophilia scandal throughout history. Despite the elite effectively burying the *BBC* pedo-scandal with Savile, *Esquire* editor and author Andrew O' Hagan took a longer pre-Savile view of *BBC* pedophilia in a piece published in the *London Review of Books*:

> *Paedophilia is an ethos and institutional disorder that’s thrived in premier entertainment labyrinths.*[253]

The *BBC* claimed that no pedophile ring ever existed at the corporation, concluding that Savile acted alone, claiming that other convicted *BBC* stars like Rolf Harris, Chris Denning and Stuart Hall committed their sex crimes completely independent of Sir Jimmy. Yet within seven months after the Savile bombshell broke, already 152 more allegations were made against 81 other *BBC* employees,[254] in part resulting in over 5 dozen known *BBC* pedophile convictions.[255] Of the over 80 accused, half are current *BBC* staff or contributors. If those numbers aren’t indicative of a *BBC* pedophile ring, I don’t know what is. On top of earlier evidence already presented, combined with these astounding statistics all documented and publicly reported, how can any objective observer possibly conclude that Jimmy Savile sexually assaulted 1,000 victims at the *BBC* studios while operating completely alone without participating within the obvious larger organized *BBC* network? Yet as the media corporation’s lies of denial and cover-up continue to this day, police are still investigating *BBC* stars accused of child sex crimes, the latest announced in March 2018 for alleged sexual assault against a child under 16 in the late 1990s.[256]

The *BBC* director general from 2004 to 2012 was Mark Thompson, who began his career at the *BBC* employed as a production trainee in 1979,[257] right at the peak of prolific *BBC* abuser Savile’s fame and power to harm. But just when the shit was hitting the fan bigtime at *BBC* over the October 2012 Savile pedophilia exposure, after more than three decades at the *British Broadcasting Corporation*, on November 12, 2012 Mark Thompson safely bailed for greener pastures, starting his new job as CEO of the *New*

York Times.[258] After covering up crimes by Savile and the *BBC* pedophile ring committed under his watch during the previous 33 years he'd been a *BBC* employee, upon arrival at his first day of work in New York, Mark Thompson was asked if the pedophilia scandal exploding back home at his last workplace would impact his job at the *Times*, and Thompson's arrogant and highly revealing reply was:

It will not in any way affect my job.[259]

But a look back at how Mark Thompson ascended to the *BBC* throne is worth a peek. A major asset to his career has been his wife Jane Blumberg, like him an Oxford grad but also professor, writer, literary critic and daughter of super scientist Nobel Laureate, the late Dr. Baruch Blumberg known for his pioneering work tackling Hepatitis B.[260] The year prior to Thompson's 8-year *BBC* reign, in 2003 Israel had furiously cut off all contact with the *BBC*, and Thompson's predecessor was terminated. *BBC* journalist Orla Guerin not only covered Israeli victims of the Israeli-Palestinian conflict but featured stories sympathetic to Palestinian victims as well. Yet the Israeli Government Press Office (GPO) called her and *BBC*'s coverage in general "anti-Israeli," highly prejudicial reporting.[261] Mark Thompson was brought in to fix the growing tensions. The highly secretive Balen report released internally at the end of his first year in 2004 was never made public and privy only to the brand new director general and a few of his top senior executives. Because the Balen report had found the *BBC* pro-biased favoring the Palestinians, to this day it remains under lock and key. Hence, within months, director general Thompson and his Jewish wife headed off to Tel Aviv to smooth over relations with then Israeli Prime Minister Ariel Sharon, culminating with the resultant concession to boycott Gaza aid to Palestinians.

When Thompson met with war criminal Ariel Sharon[262] in Israel in 2005, pledging no longer to support Palestinian charities, as head of the British government-sponsored media corporation, that little controversy fomented criticism that he was a card carrying Zionist. Order follower Thompson also promptly axed the fair-minded reporter Orla Guerin as *BBC* Middle East correspondent, reassigning her to Africa. And under Thompson's watch, the *BBC* has been relegated to being a mere mouthpiece for the Israeli lobby.[263] It's even been revealed that the *BBC* maintains a strict glossary of terms of euphemistic words and phrases acceptable to the Jewish State and taboo words and phrases that aren't.[264] The liberal *BBC* has a history of paranoia that its Middle Eastern coverage has been offensive to Israel and leans over backwards to placate the GPO's constant demands to alter and soften *BBC* headlines or incur more Jewish wrath.[265] In short, as with MSM and politics in the US, Israel regularly bullies and controls both its Zionist tool Mark Thompson as well as the wimpy, cabal order-following *BBC*.

That the exposure of the gargantuan *BBC* criminal cover-up of Savile and his *BBC* colleagues' multitude of child abuse crimes would "in no way" affect Thompson's new job at the *New York Times* is disconcerting to say the least. When word came down that Times Company owner Arthur Sulzberger Jr. picked the former *BBC* boss to be their new *NYT* boss, several veteran journalists boldly questioned whether Thompson was the right man for the job at the *New York Times*.[266] Two editors quit in protest for bringing in what more than a few staffers concluded was a pedophile enabler who actively covered up the dark criminal truth hounding the *BBC* for years.

Back in March 2012 director general Thompson was busily blowing smoke up his and his company's ass when he addressed the Royal Television Society in London:

> *The modern BBC does everything possible to report on itself objectively.*[267]

In view of his *BBC*'s massive pedo-cover-up including the decision refusing to air the Savile Newsnight episode exposing Sir Jimmy just four months prior, the above statement is obviously a boldface lie. Despite being employed at *BBC* from 1979 to October 2012 and despite feeble contentions claiming he was never aware of any Savile abuse whatsoever, Mark Thompson was *BBC* director general when it canned that Newsnight exposé outing Savile in favor of two fluff pieces for Christmas 2011 shortly after the beast's death. Yet it was Thompson's successor George Entwistle who played the fall guy going down in flames less than two months after starting his new job.[268] Just as Thompson had no recall of Savile crimes during his marathon tenure at the *BBC*, when asked about the suppression of the Nightnews segment, initially he stated he had no knowledge of the program. Then realizing a flat denial might be construed as a lie, he later admitted he had "a chance meeting" about the *BBC* news program investigating the longtime *BBC* pedophile, though still hedging later when telling the *New York Times*:

> *I wasn't told any specific lines of inquiry and certainly not anything related to the BBC.*[269]

Hard to fathom how the director general didn't even bother inquiring further about the nature of the Newsnight investigation when he first encountered *BBC* journalist Caroline Hawley at a holiday party in December 2011 telling him he must be worried about the Newsnight Savile story. Thompson maintains he told Caroline he was unaware of the Newsnight investigation. The next day he allegedly conferred with his senior management including head of *BBC* news Helen Boaden. Meanwhile, journalist Caroline Hawley asserts that she did explain to her boss that the

Savile investigation was about child sexual abuse, directly contradicting Thompson's claim.[270] When pressed on why he allegedly failed to ask why Savile was being investigated by his own news team, he feebly responded:

> *You can say it's a lack of imagination.*[271]

In a letter from New York in January 2013 addressed to Parliament, Thompson unequivocally insisted that neither the Hawley nor the Boaden conversation:

> *…told me what the investigation had been about.*[272]

It's preposterous to actually believe Thompson was so blasé faire about the *BBC* Savile exposé that he "lacked imagination" to bother inquiring any further. Playing dumb to save his own sorry ass so he could successfully escape to New York unscathed from all the flak subsequently heaped upon his successor in order to take over the *New York Times* only suggests that Mark Thompson is also being heavily protected by his pedo-cabal masters. In the words of the always inimitably incisive journalist Yoichi Shimatsu:

> *By hiring a bald-faced liar rather than a journalist of integrity, Sulzberger risked his own reputation against strong objections from veteran editors who understood the ethical liability of having a new boss who's in league with elite pedophile networks.*[273]

In his rash of interviews at the time, the flustered Mark Thompson bounced shamelessly all over the landscape, scrambling to cover his ass with what he claimed to know, which he maintained was virtually nothing, playing it safe, later backtracking to cover what he thought he'd said, granting himself just enough plausibility of denial to survive in New York if and when his deception ever came back to bite him in his CYA ass:

> *That I might have formed the impression at the time of my conversations with Caroline and Helen that the investigation*

related to allegations of sexual abuse, this was speculation on my part in October 2012 about an impression I might or might not have formed after a pair of brief conversations nearly a year earlier.[274]

Incidentally, in addition to his “unimaginative” nature, (after all, by definition order followers are always unimaginative, especially when expressing thoughts of their own), before making his “great escape,” it’s also on record while he still the director general office, his office was warned two more times in May and September 2012 about sexual predator Savile. But no doubt “unimaginative” Thompson deemed it too “irrelevant” to his getaway transition to the *New York Times*.[275]

Also in September 2012, the London *Sunday Times Magazine* posed a series of probing questions to Thompson attempting to ascertain how much he knew and when.[276] On September 6 a letter from his lawyers outside the *BBC* legal department was sent aggressively threatening the *Sunday Times* with a libelous lawsuit should it even remotely suggest that Thompson and his *BBC* ever engaged in a cover-up. Clueless Thompson once again claimed he never even read the letter but a legal observer claimed if that’s true, Thompson is “just as culpable.” Of course that same merry month of September was also when the New York Times Company was actively courting the pedo-enabler to fly the British coop for the *NYT* henhouse just in time to avoid the heat called accountability. And two months later, he fled.

When successor George Entwistle also came up with the same lame identical excuse, also claiming ignorance that he too was never responsible for canceling the Newsnight segment and did not even know the nature of the program, also refuted by others, back in London his lie didn’t quite wash. With MPs hounding him at parliamentary hearings, a floundering Entwistle attempted in vain to pin the sole blame on Nightnews editor Peter Rippon, who apparently agreed to fall on the sword for his company despite merely following his orders from above to cancel the broadcast.[277] Rippon was the first one fired. But as more deception plainly unfolded, somebody high up on the *BBC* food chain also had to pay the price and since Thompson had already been given his free pass to take flight, it had to be his successor.

When queried on this volatile issue in early November 2012, during his final week in the UK at an Oxford University lecture, Thompson was still playing his "ignorance is bliss" card:

> *Like many other people at the BBC and despite what you may have read, I had heard none of the stories about Jimmy Savile.*[278]

Even when Thompson's extremely questionable word is taken at face value, he was the head honcho, the leader of a giant government funded news organization that's supposed to project an accurate account of what goes on in the world, much less his company. Any decent leader or director general makes it his job and responsibility to know if criminal activity is being carried out or covered up under his or her watch. When it comes to facing the dark truth about one's corporation, oneself, or an infamous past company icon, it always was met with gross *BBC* failures to repeatedly report the truth when opportunities availed themselves before Savile's death, right after his death and far beyond to this day. As the leader of the *BBC*, Thompson chose to consistently lie through his teeth to save his own skin.

Both Thompson and other senior *BBC* personnel have chosen to continue lying, pretending not to know that Savile and other *BBC* staff were committing the most egregious crimes against children for decade after decade after decade. The Corporation's across-the-boards deception has never ceased, culminating when they all lied about why they scrapped the Savile exposé pretending it was strictly for “editorial reasons.”[279] Right to the end while director general Thompson was in charge, he and his management willfully buried the truth dug up by their own enterprisingly competent, brave journalists, then despicably hung them out to dry,[280] choosing to this day to continue living the *BBC* trademark lie.

Nine months after Mark Thompson began his new gig in New York, believing he’d finally shucked his shady past association with his *BBC* pedophile network, outside his luxury Manhattan apartment he was confronted by a Channel 4 news crew asking him about his part in the Jimmy Savile scandal and how much he knew that the Nightnews exposé was about child sex abuse. Because the CEO had already been outed as a liar trying to deny what it was about, apparently Thompson really lost his cool right then and there on the street with the camera rolling. A witness told the *New York Post*:

He was tense and angry and was talking very loudly. They followed him around the corner and he lost his temper and shouted at them. It really caused a scene.[281]

An honest man in his position would be far less apt to have a public meltdown especially with a camera rolling if he had nothing to hide. But a proven liar that can’t escape his deceitful past certainly would.

Just as an organization’s leadership can take credit for its accomplishments during the good times, during the rough times when losses, failures or scandals arise, a company’s leader must also take responsibility for that too, even if not directly involved. But instead Thompson deceitfully played his constant denial card, slithered out of town just ahead of avoiding the runaway train wreck, only to seek safe refuge across the pond, both rescued and rewarded $5 million for his first year alone[282] at another pedophile enabling media giant where he insists the enormous scandal exploding back home that he was in charge of will not affect him in the least at his new post. That has to be foreboding to any news organization with integrity. But outside several ethical public protests and resignations, the *New York Times* demonstrated its lack of integrity.

And lo and behold, it hasn't affected Thompson's *NYT* job performance at all. In the fall of 2016 in the lead-up to the November Trump election, WikiLeaks published Podesta emails online[283] using a coded language commonly used by pedophiles per FBI documentation referring to sex with children,[284] incriminating the Podesta brothers as well as the Clintons and Obama as well.[285] Of course as previous Lolita Express frequent fliers, Bill and Hillary were already outed as pedophiles at Epstein's Orgy Island with incontrovertibly incriminating evidence reportedly in NYPD possession, stored inside convicted fellow pedophile Weiner's confiscated laptop.[286]

Thompson's *New York Times* along with all four other oligarch owned giant media conglomerates (down from 50 in 1983[287]) pumping out over 90% of the news propaganda frantically jumped to the immediate defense of one implicated pizza parlor owner, somehow ranked 49th on *GQ*'s DC VIP power list.[288] So when MSM called the ever-louder internet buzz actually exposing Pizzagate's Washington pedophile ring[289] on Reddit (soon shut down) "fake news,"[290] claiming it was inciting violence (i.e., enter the "lone gunman" stooge firing off a couple rounds inside pizza joint),[291] it became the perfectly contrived excuse to roll out the elite's oppressive agenda to crush 1st Amendment free press rights with McCarthy-esque blacklisted news sites to "justify" legislating increased censorship usurping internet control so that the mainstream fake news ultimately ends up the only news in town (or world for that matter).[292]

Every totalitarian regime in history permits only state run propaganda (like the Soviet gulag era or perhaps *BBC* today) and, minus the internet, that's virtually where we're already at… less than a handful of major news outlets all reading off the same false narrative script. Welcome to today's Orwellian nightmare.

For once, Mark Thompson was true to his word, at the *NYT* he is the same pedophile enabler engaging in pedophilia cover-up that he was at the *BBC*, continuing to pretend that top echelons of government, the media, entertainment, the legal and economic system, charity and child welfare are not running a globalized pedophilia network. With a half dozen years now at the *New York Times*, Thompson is simply another cherry-picked sentinel guarding the elite's pedophile henhouse, rescued from one cover-up scam in UK with valued cover-up experience evading that pedo-scandal to be tactically redeployed to do the same in the US. Remember that in the Luciferian world, the more deception and evil one commits, the more one is rewarded by the earthly powers-that-should-not-be.[293]

The ruling elite controlling this planet are largely comprised of pedophiles and pedophile enablers. Following the money explains why the world's deepest pockets are invariably linked to so much war, trafficking of weapons, drugs, human organs, children and laundered trillions. Illuminati bloodline families like the Rothschilds are notoriously in deep in all of these mot sordid criminal activities.

Meet the only non-executive director of the *BBC*'s new executive board - the Barclay Bank chairman until 2012 and current British Bankers Association head Marcus Agius, married to Edmond de Rothschild's daughter Katherine.[294] Barclays Bank is the most important shareholder in the NM Rothschild bank as well as the Lazard Brothers. Agius is also on the steering committee of the Bilderberg Group and on the advisory board of the City of London, where the queen's Rothschild money is secured. With his extended Illuminati family sharing connections to the Knights of Malta, the Jesuits Catholic Maltese lineage paternally and Jewish Cabbalist roots maternally, Marcus Agius is the Rothschild fixture controlling the *BBC* and all its director general pawns like Mark Thompson.[295]

Incidentally, in early 2012 when the crumbling cracks of the *BBC* scandal were rapidly spreading, Agius was caught fixing derivative rates in a separate fiasco of his own making called the Libor fixed rate scandal that led to his Barclays resignation.[296] Hypocrite *BBC* publishes a headline "Libor Scandal: Can we ever Trust Bankers Again?" while to this very day the scandal's central figure apparently still remains in good standing as the "trustworthy" permanent senior non-executive director on the *BBC* executive board.[297] The article actually quotes Agius who greedily violated the law but was never arrested. Yet to hear it from him, he was the long suffering victim in all his pretentious moral outrage… unbelievable:

> *I was sick to my stomach because I realised just what an appalling thing it was and I realised what a serious implication it would have for the bank*[298].

A more apropos question is can we ever trust Agius or the *BBC* again, because based on their histories, the answer for both would be a definite no, never. After all, they not only represent the cabal, they are the cabal.

Speaking of untrustworthy and also unprosecuted, along with Agius, JP Morgan-Citibank's Jamie Dimon was also among the biggest Libor violating crooks but paid a $13 billion bribery fine to buy off his criminal probe.[299] As a tight-knit crony of both Obama and Rahm Emanuel, Rahm fixed JP Morgan's $16 billion bailout at taxpayer expense during the Wall Street 2008 housing bubble crisis.

Compliments of Agius and Barclays “advisor” Jeb Bush, Lehman Brothers was taken over by Barclays Bank assisted by another $8.5 million US tax dollars padding the Barclays coffers.[300] Of course just like the Americans’ near $29 billion bailout, the UK government had British taxpayers coughing up a staggering £850bn in its boondoggle bank bailout.[301]

You see where all this is going? With total impunity, a predatory inner clique of pedo-vampires and cannibals get to both literally and financially feast off the lifeblood of humanity and their children. And it goes without saying that Mark Thompson and Marcus Agius as two powerful cabal agents serving their bloodline masters are in very tight with one another, not only sharing similar first names and prominent Jewish wives, but both are also Jesuit trained Catholics, thus in boldface connection with every demonic pedo-dot conceivable.[302] See why the cabal saved Thompson’s ass from the *BBC* shitstorm?

The *BBC* rot at the top only continued with its Trust chairman Lord Chris Patten from 2011-2014. The former Conservative MP and minister in the pedo-saturated Thatcher cabinet threw his *BBC* line managers under the bus, describing their behavior amidst the Savile crisis as “frantic faffing about,” claiming they misled him, thus strategically absolving himself of bearing any responsibility despite being Trust chairman since May 2011, a half year before Savile’s death and a full 16 months ahead of the Savile fallout.[303]

The tax paid £3M Pollard report investigated the reasons why the Newsnight segment exposing Savile right after his death was pulled by *BBC* management (that both Patten and Thompson headed) from its December 2011 airing in favor of a pair of already planned holiday Savile tributes.[304] But the Pollard report was also a whitewash refusing to get to the bottom of who actually pulled the plug pretending it was for bogus editorial reasons when it clearly was not. Instead of revealing the truth, the Pollard report concluded the decision not to run the story was made "in good faith" and that no evidence indicated that *BBC* management attempted to suppress the story.[305] Rack up another VIP CYA LIE. Every inquiry into every scandal is a vehicle used to let the guilty off the hook while patronizingly pacifying the public.

But in a secretly taped phone conversation with former *Sky News* executive Nick Pollard who headed the inquiry, journalist Miles Goslett was told by Pollard that he purposely omitted evidence in his report protecting Mark Thompson.[306] What Pollard conveniently left out was the smoking gun, that *BBC* news director Helen Boaden in a phone conversation with Thompson in December 2011, 10 full months before Thompson's *BBC* resignation, Boaden explicitly informed the director general that the Newsnight piece exposed Jimmy Savile's longtime child sex abuse. Thus, in order to protect pedo-enabler Thompson, the Pollard report left out confirmation that golden boy kept lying to escape punishment to secure his CEO status at the *New York Times*, more evidence that the VIP pedo-club protects its own.

When Trust chairman Lord Chris Patten was informed by Pollard that he'd left out the smoking gun against Thompson from his report, Patten proceeded to dismiss it, hedging and even deceiving Parliament, still protecting Thompson and the BBC cover-up.[307] So taxpayers paid £3M for both Patten and Pollard to both withhold crucially incriminating evidence against Thompson and the *BBC*. As Miles Goslett put it:

If the BBC were an honest organisation, it would by now have insisted at the least that the Pollard report be amended accordingly. Until it does so, the cover-up continues.[308]

And predictably, to this very day the *BBC* cover-up continues.

With both the two top leaders of the *BBC* cover-up - Mark Thompson and Lord Patten - remaining unscathed from leading the biggest scandal in *BBC*'s history, Patten's appointed director general and Thompson's successor, George Entwistle was forced to resign after only 54 days, though as chosen fall guy grossly overcompensated with an inflated severance package twice the amount specified in his contract at over £450,000.[309] Using taxpayer money to lavishly enrich outgoing senior management with overly generous parting gifts amidst *BBC* crisis cuts reflects the corporation's years of unchanged culture of greed. Throughout his 8 year run as director general, elitist Mark Thompson notoriously demonstrated total disregard for British taxpayers, again seriously undermining public trust by greedily signing off on excessive senior executive severances, bilking *BBC* license payers out of upwards of £369million, while flagrantly violating charter rules.[310] Thompson was the *BBC* director general during the first six years of an eight year National Audit Office review released in July 2013 specifying that ungodly £369million amount that might even be considered hush money payoffs. When you run with the ruling elite, as Thompson has for decades, you get used to living so high off the hog off the backs of the common people, all the while assured lifetime criminal protection from above.

While Patten's *BBC* Trust website vowed openness and transparency, the Lord's obscene severance packages were buried in lies and secrecy as was the creation of a new position never advertised in open competition that Patten filled with a former cabinet minister as a standardized cronyism appointment.[311]

After the likes of Mark Thompson and Lord Patten’s gross mishandling of the Savile crisis, the UK government forced the *BBC* to make some fundamental changes in its governing structure.[312] After Patten stepped down for alleged health reasons in 2014, Prime Minister Cameron brought in *BBC*’s first woman to chair the Trust. Rona Fairhead was an overt ploy to distance the *BBC* from its scandalous, male-dominated, sexist past.[313] Though Cameron expected Fairhead to head the Trust over the next four years until 2018 during its restructuring into a unitary board that took over in April 2017, in September 2016 new Prime Minister Theresa May gave her fellow high-achieving female an early boot, selecting former Bank of England deputy governor Sir David Clementi in January 2017 to govern the new unitary board.[314] As anti-child abuse advocate MP Tom Watson said, PM May handed the job over to the very man she appointed to create that position. You can bet that with an alumnus from England’s central bank now overseeing the queen’s *BBC* charter, and Rothschild son-in-law Agius a senior executive board member, the Rothschild control over the government airwaves in Britain has never been more deeply entrenched and centralized.[315]

In summary, every single one of the dozens of so called investigations associated with each and every pedophilia scandal covered throughout this book, including the plethora mushrooming from the Savile legacy alone, all amount to nothing more than just another systemic cover-up scam after the next. Infiltrating secret society cannibals atop this demonic food chain from government, security services, police, judges and the mainstream media acting as order-following foxes all guarding their satanic henhouse never fail to always obstruct justice, shut down police probes, lose incriminating evidence and otherwise conceal the truth, in order to ensure that their strings attached puppet masters controlling and protecting them are able to continue at will raping and cannibalizing children without fear of further exposure or consequence. That way every scandal to date - bar none - stays only tip-of-the-iceberg and the world's most powerful child sodomizers and murderers continue unimpeded and uninterrupted in their wholesale slaughter of our innocents on an unprecedented, massively globalized industrial scale.

The bottom line for these bottom feeding subhuman predators' very survival is that the cabal owning beasts must in turn feed their own Luciferian masters – the demonic interdimensional forces summoned and released in satanic occult ritual that drive and possess the cabal pedovors to do their catastrophic bidding on the devil's earthly dominion, destroying what's left of our only planet we humans call home. We must fight the evil with the light of truth as our guide bringing justice, peace and planetary harmony.

The next chapter unveils how the *BBC*, British establishment and their stooge Savile have gone to extreme criminal lengths to ensure that the cabal's pedophilia network avoids full exposure by historically ignoring or smearing victims, whistleblowers and muckraking journalists, and if need be, silencing perceived threats by numerous staged suicides, bizarrely suspicious "accidents" and both covert and overt assassination of more than a dozen *BBC* employees who've likely paid the price for knowing too much. The powers-that-shouldn't be will resort to no limits in order to prevent the ugly truth from ever coming to light that would threaten to bring down their international pedo-crime cabal.

Notes

---

[1] "Legends and History of Halloween," *floramex.com*, http://www.floramex.com/lihallow.htm.

[2] Dan Davies, "The making of a Monster: Can Sordid Sexual Depravity run in a Family? In this Ground-Breaking Analysis, the Writer who has spent ten years Probing the Dark Twisted Mind of Jimmy Savile reveals the Most Deeply

Disturbing Truths of all...,” *Daily Mail*, July 5, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2681719/The-making-monster-Can-sordid-sexual-depravity-run-family-In-ground-breaking-analysis-writer-spent-ten-years-probing-dark-twisted-mind-Jimmy-Savile-reveals-deeply-disturbing-truths-all.html.

[3] Dan Davies, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2681719/The-making-monster-Can-sordid-sexual-depravity-run-family-In-ground-breaking-analysis-writer-spent-ten-years-probing-dark-twisted-mind-Jimmy-Savile-reveals-deeply-disturbing-truths-all.html.

[4] “Sir Jimmy Savile,” *The Telegraph*, October 29, 2011, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/8857428/Sir-Jimmy-Savile.html.

[5] “Sir Jimmy Savile,” https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/8857428/Sir-Jimmy-Savile.html.

[6] “Sir Jimmy backs Saint Calls,” *BBC*, July 11, 2003, http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/uk_news/scotland/3060395.stm.

[7] “Sir Jimmy Savile,” https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/8857428/Sir-Jimmy-Savile.html.

[8] “DJ and TV Presenter Jimmy Savile Dies, Age 84,” *BBC*, October 29, 2011, https://www.bbc.co.uk/news/entertainment-arts-15507374.

[9] Louis Theroux, “Louis Theroux: Looking back on Jimmy Savile,” *BBC*, October 1, 2016, https://www.bbc.com/news/magazine-37517619.

[10] “Jimmy Savile Abuse: Number of Alleged Victims Reaches 450,” *BBC*, December 12, 2012, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-20697738.

[11] “Savile was Devoted to his Mother the Duchess,” *The Times*, October 19, 2012, https://www.thetimes.co.uk/article/savile-was-devoted-to-his-mother-the-duchess-9fxllmg7ntp.

[12] Patrick Hill, “Paedophile Jimmy Savile believed his Mother ‘never Trusted him’ and expected he’d be Jailed,” *Mirror*, February 6, 2016, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/paedophile-jimmy-savile-believed-mother-7277712.

[13] Patrick Hill, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/paedophile-jimmy-savile-believed-mother-7277712.

[14] Patrick Hill, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/paedophile-jimmy-savile-believed-mother-7277712.

[15] Dan Davies, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2681719/The-making-monster-Can-sordid-sexual-depravity-run-family-In-ground-breaking-analysis-

writer-spent-ten-years-probing-dark-twisted-mind-Jimmy-Savile-reveals-deeply-disturbing-truths-all.html.

[16] Anorak, “David Beckham, Jimmy Savile, Ronnie Irani, Maggie Thatcher and Jeffrey Archer: The Five Biggest Charity Boasters,” *Flashback*, February 7, 2013, https://flashbak.com/david-beckham-jimmy-savile-ronnie-irani-maggie-thatcher-and-jeffrey-archer-the-five-biggest-charity-boasters-13459/.

[17] Paul Jeeves, “Ow’s about that! Sir Jimmy Savile Raised £45m for Charity and left another £5m in his Will,” *Express*, December 16, 2011, https://www.express.co.uk/celebrity-news/290206/Ow-s-about-that-Sir-Jimmy-Savile-raised-45m-for-charity-and-left-another-5m-in-his-will.

[18] Tom Pettifor, “’He Groomed the Nation’: Jimmy Savile was UK’s Most Prolific Paedophile, Police Report Reveals,” *Mirror*, January 11, 2013, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jimmy-savile-uks-most-prolific-1529071.

[19] “Exploring the Case for Mandatory Reporting: A Summary of a Roundtable Hosted by the NSPCC,” *nspcc.org*, July 2014, https://www.nspcc.org.uk/globalassets/documents/in…

[20] Antonia Malloy, “Jimmy Savile Abused ‘at least 500 Victims,’” *Independent*, June 2, 2014, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/jimmy-savile-abused-at-least-500-victims-9470888.html.

[21] Daniel Boffey, “Revealed: How Jimmy Savile Abused up to 1,000 Victims on BBC Premises,” *The Guardian*, January 18, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2014/jan/18/jimmy-savile-abused-1000-victims-bbc.

[22] Chris Greenwood and Martin Robinson, “Jimmy Savile got Rape Victim, 16, Pregnant and told her to Threaten Suicide if she was Denied an Abortion,” *Daily Mail*, June 26, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2670444/Jimmy-Savile-abused-corpses-boasted-jewellery-glass-eyes-NHS-report-reveals-shocking-new-details-paedophiles-crimes.html.

[23] Gordon Rayner and Stephen Swinford, “Jimmy Savile spent ‘every Waking Minute’ Thinking about Abusing Boys and Girls,” The Telegraph, January 11, 2013, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9795252/Jimmy-Savile-spent-every-waking-minute-thinking-about-abusing-boys-and-girls.html.

[24] Robert Mendick, “Jimmy Savile: Police Officers Repeatedly Failed Sex Victims,” *The Telegraph*, October 13, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9606494/Jimmy-Savile-police-officers-repeatedly-failed-sex-victims.html.

[25] Jamie Grierson, “Atmosphere of Fear still exists at BBC, Savile Abuse Report Concludes,” *The Guardian*, February 25, 2016,

https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2016/feb/25/jimmy-savile-abuse-bbc-culture-damned.

[26] David Collins, “Cop who Caught Jimmy Savile with a girl was told to ‘Clear off, she turns 16 at Midnight,’” *Mirror*, October 17, 2013, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/audio-jimmy-savile-told-police-2460910.

[27] David Collins, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/audio-jimmy-savile-told-police-2460910.

[28] Jimmy Savile, Love Is an Uphill Battle (London: Hodder & Stoughton, 1978), https://www.amazon.co.uk/Love-Uphill-Thing-Coronet-Books/dp/0340199253 .

[29] James Moncur, “Jimmy Savile’s Autobiography Shock as Pages Reveal Orgies, Naked Groupies and Furious Parents,” *Daily Record*, October 4, 2012, https://www.dailyrecord.co.uk/news/uk-world-news/jimmy-saviles-autobiography-shock-as-pages-1359536.

[30] James Moncur, https://www.dailyrecord.co.uk/news/uk-world-news/jimmy-saviles-autobiography-shock-as-pages-1359536.

[31] Robert Mendick, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9606494/Jimmy-Savile-police-officers-repeatedly-failed-sex-victims.html.

[32] Joseph Curtis and Josh White, “’World Famous’ Singer Seduced Savile Victim, 15, at Centre of Tony Blackburn Sacking Scandal, says her Friend who Vows she'll name him,” *Daily Mail*, February 28, 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3467609/World-famous-singer-seduced-Savile-victim-15-centre-Tony-Blackburn-sacking-scandal-says-friend-vows-ll-him.html.

[33] Joseph Curtis and Josh White, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3467609/World-famous-singer-seduced-Savile-victim-15-centre-Tony-Blackburn-sacking-scandal-says-friend-vows-ll-him.html.

[34] Joseph Curtis and Josh White, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3467609/World-famous-singer-seduced-Savile-victim-15-centre-Tony-Blackburn-sacking-scandal-says-friend-vows-ll-him.html.

[35] “BBC Missed Multiple Opportunities to Stop Savile Abuse – Report,” *RT*, February 25, 2016, https://www.rt.com/uk/333571-bbc-jimmy-savile-report/.

[36] Cole Moreton, “Top of the Pops: How BBC Show was a Breeding Ground for Sexual Abusers including Jimmy Savile,” *Independent*, February 27, 2016, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/top-of-the-pops-how-bbc-show-was-a-breeding-ground-for-sexual-abusers-including-jimmy-savile-a6900816.html.

[37] Paul Bracchi and Sam Greenhill, “A 15-year-old who Killed herself after leaving a Diary naming DJs as Abusers. Disturbing Questions about John Peel. So how many stars were involved?” *Daily Mail*, October 5, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2213621/Claire-McAlpine-A-15-year-old-killed-leaving-diary-naming-DJs-abusers-Disturbing-questions-John-Peel-So-starts-WERE-involved.html.

[38] Daniel Boffey, “Revealed: How Jimmy Savile Abused up to 1,000 Victims on BBC Premises,” *The Guardian/The Observer*, January 18, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2014/jan/18/jimmy-savile-abused-1000-victims-bbc.

[39] Liam-Michael Roberts, “Jimmy Savile and British Establishment’s Paedophile Ring,” *conspiracytruths.co.uk*, http://www.conspiracytruths.co.uk/jimmysavilebbcpaedophile.html.

[40] Cole Moreton, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/top-of-the-pops-how-bbc-show-was-a-breeding-ground-for-sexual-abusers-including-jimmy-savile-a6900816.html.

[41] “Jimmy Savile Pictured on day of his last Attack,” *NZ Herald/Daily Mail*, February 26, 2016, https://www.nzherald.co.nz/entertainment/news/article.cfm?c_id=1501119&objectid=11595685.

[42] Linda Das, “’The BBC Blacklisted me over Savile’: Sex Pistol John Lydon tells what happened when he tried to Blow the Whistle on ‘Creepy’ Jimmy Savile in the 70s,” *Daily Mail*, May 27, 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/femail/article-3612935/The-BBC-blacklisted-Savile-Sex-Pistol-John-Lydon-tells-happened-tried-blow-whistle-creepy-Jimmy-Savile-70s.html.

[43] Linda Das, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/femail/article-3612935/The-BBC-blacklisted-Savile-Sex-Pistol-John-Lydon-tells-happened-tried-blow-whistle-creepy-Jimmy-Savile-70s.html.

[44] Robert Mendick, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9606494/Jimmy-Savile-police-officers-repeatedly-failed-sex-victims.html.

[45] Anna Edwards, “Former Detective makes Shock Claims that Jimmy Savile was Quizzed over Yorkshire Ripper Murders,” *Daily Mail*, November 6, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2228814/Jimmy-Savile-quizzed-Yorkshire-Ripper-murders.html?ICO=most_read_module.

[46] Emma Reynolds and Anna Edwards, “Detectives ‘had a Cast made of Savile’s Teeth’ to Check against Bite-Marks left on Bodies of Yorkshire Ripper Victims,” *Daily Mail*, November 8, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2229786/Jimmy-Savile-Yorkshire-Ripper-Cast-DJs-teeth-check-bites-left-Peter-Sutcliffes-victims.html.

[47] “The Trial: Week One, *execulink.com*, May 5, 1981, http://www.execulink.com/~kbrannen/trial03.htm.

[48] Chris Greenwood and Richard Spillett, “Girls’ School Head won't be Charged over Savile: Headmistress won't be Prosecuted despite Claims she turned a Blind Eye to late DJ using Establishment as a ‘Paedophile Sweet Shop.’” *Daily Mail*, April 29, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3060559/Jimmy-Savile-abused-23-youngsters-Duncroft-School-emotionally-disturbed-teenage-girls.html.

[49] “Jimmy Savile treated School like ‘Paedophile Sweetshop,’” *The Telegraph*, October 17, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9614091/Jimmy-Savile-treated-school-like-paedophile-sweetshop.html.

[50] David Barrett and Robert Mendick, “Did Jimmy Savile Fix his Interrogation?” The Telegraph, January 13, 2013, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9797464/Did-Jimmy-Savile-fix-his-interrogation.html.

[51] “Savile Interview Part 1,” *scribd.com*, January 10, 2009, https://www.scribd.com/document/176323524/Savile-Interview-Part-1.

[52] “Cover-up; CIA, Mossad, MI5, MI6; Savile and Jaconelli; Amsterdam Sex,” *aangirfan.com*, November 7, 2014, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/11/cover-up-cia-mossad-mi5-mi6-savile-and.html.

[53] Richard Kay, “How Savile Seduced the Royals: As it’s Claimed he nearly became Godfather to Harry, how the Predatory DJ Wormed his way into the very Heart of Palace Life,” *Daily Mail*, June 12, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3122130/How-Savile-seduced-royals-s-claimed-nearly-godfather-Harry-predatory-DJ-wormed-way-heart-Palace-life.html.

[54] “Paedophile Pimp for the Royals,” *helpfreetheearth.com*, October 31, 2012, http://www.helpfreetheearth.com/news650_paedophile.html.

[55] “The Royals, Pedophilia & Murder,” SGT Report interview of Jay Myers, YouTube video, posted on July 5, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=elMQ9_quuY8.

[56] David Icke, “The British Establishment… Pedophiles Everywhere,” *bibliotacapleyades.net*, January 18, 2013, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/biggestsecret/esp_icke108.htm.

[57] David Marsh, “How to Become a National Treasure,” *The Guardian*, July 26, 2013, https://www.theguardian.com/media/mind-your-language/2013/jul/26/mind-your-language-national-treasure.

[58] “Jimmy Savile Dead: Prince Charles leads Tributes to TV Legend,” *Mirror*, October 30, 2011, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jimmy-savile-dead-prince-charles-276283.

[59] Tom McTague and Martin Robinson, “Why did NHS stay Silent on Savile? 177 Victims aged from five to 75 at 41 Hospitals after Bosses Missed TEN Chances to Stop Predatory Paedophile… and NO ONE will be held Responsible,” *Daily Mail*, February 26, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2970049/Abuse-grand-scale-Jimmy-Savile-raped-sexually-assaulted-victims-aged-5-75-41-NHS-hospitals-including-60-Stoke-Mandeville-24-year-reign-abuse.html.

[60] Josh Halliday, “Jimmy Savile: Timeline of his Sexual Abuse and its Uncovering, *The Guardian*, June 26, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2014/jun/26/jimmy-savile-sexual-abuse-timeline.

[61] Martin Evans, “Jimmy Savile: Abuse extended to Hospice for the Terminally Ill,” *The Telegraph*, January 6, 2013, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9783638/Jimmy-Savile-Abuse-extended-to-hospice-for-the-terminally-ill.html.

[62] Sarah Knapton, “Jimmy Savile’s Youngest Victim was aged two,” *The Telegraph*, June 2, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/10868480/Jimmy-Saviles-youngest-victim-was-aged-two.html.

[63] Tom Evans, “Horrific Footage of Jimmy Savile Molesting a Woman Live on TOTP,” Daily Record, January 22, 2016, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/489507/Jimmy-Savile-molests-woman-Top-of-the-Pops-video.

[64] Amanda Williams and Sam Tonkin, “Revealed: Jimmy Savile Dressed as a Womble to Rape a 10-year-old Boy and Sexually Assault Girl, 12, in his Dressing Room after Filming 1973 Top of the Pops Christmas Special, *Daily Mail*, February 26, 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3465181/Jimmy-Savile-dressed-Womble-rape-ten-year-old-boy-sexually-assault-girl-12-dressing-room-filming-1973-Pops-Christmas-special.html.

[65] James Fielding, “Jimmy Savile was part of Satanic Ring,” *Express*, January 13, 2013, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/370439/Jimmy-Savile-was-part-of-satanic-ring.

[66] Chris Greenwood, “Fight to move Jimmy Savile’s Grave to Cemetery is Sunk by £20,000 Cost: Paedophile’s Body will Remain in his Huge Triple Plot Overlooking the Sea – and two local Schools,” *Daily Mail*, October 29, 2016,

http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3884038/Fight-Jimmy-Savile-s-grave-cemetery-sunk-20-000-cost-Paedophile-s-body-remain-huge-triple-plot-overlooking-sea-two-local-schools.html.

[67] David Icke, “Pedophile and Child Killing,” *bibliotecapleyades.org,* January 17, 2013, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/biggestsecret/esp_icke108.htm.

[68] Paul Byrne, “Sir Jimmy Savile Leaves £5m to Charity in his Will,” *Mirror*, December 16, 2011, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/sir-jimmy-savile-leaves-5m-97007.

[69] Ekin Karasin, “Lawyers get £2.5million of Jimmy Savile’s Estate leaving just £1million for the Paedophile DJ’s Victims,” *Daily Mail*, July 24, 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3705498/Lawyers-2-5million-Jimmy-Savile-s-estate-leaving-just-1million-paedophile-DJ-s-victims.html.

[70] Paul Peachey, “Savile used Celebrity Status to become Britain’s most Prolific Sexual Predator, Report says,” *Independent*, January 12, 2013, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/savile-used-celebrity-status-to-become-britain-s-most-prolific-sexual-predator-report-says-8448106.html.

[71] Joachim Hagopian, “The Dumbing down of America – by Design,” *Global Research*, August 18, 2014, https://www.globalresearch.ca/the-dumbing-down-of-america-by-design/5395928.

[72] Rishabh Banerje, “These are the 13 Families in the World that apparently Control Everything - From Politics to Terrorism,” *India Times*, March 9, 2018, https://www.indiatimes.com/culture/who-we-are/these-are-the-13-families-in-the-world-that-apparently-control-everything-from-politics-to-terrorism-257642.html.

[73] Martin Robinson, "Jimmy Savile Scandal: Report Reveals he Raped 34 Women and Girls and Sexually Assaulted up to 450," *Daily Mail*, January 11, 2013, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2260589/Jimmy-Savile-scandal-Report-reveals-raped-34-women-girls-sexually-assaulted-450.html.

[74] Peter Walker, "Jimmy Savile Report: Key Findings," The Guardian, January 11, 2013, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2013/jan/11/jimmy-savile-report-key-points.

[75] Adrenochrome – Why Child Ritual Sacrifice is Used by Hollywood, Politicians and the Elite," Jay Myers documentary, 2018, YouTube video, 10:55, posted August 31, 2018, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DV8dbTYr1c8&feature=youtu.be.

[76] Paul Connew, "What Prevented me Exposing Jimmy Savile's Crimes to the World - former Sunday Mirror Editor Paul Connew," *The Drum*, February 27, 2015, https://www.thedrum.com/opinion/2015/02/27/what-prevented-me-exposing-jimmy-saviles-crimes-world-former-sunday-mirror-editor.

[77] Paul Connew, https://www.thedrum.com/opinion/2015/02/27/what-prevented-me-exposing-jimmy-saviles-crimes-world-former-sunday-mirror-editor.

[78] Alexandra Topping, "Jimmy Savile Reports Published," *The Guardian*, January 11, 2013, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2013/jan/11/jimmy-savile-reports-live-blog.

[79] Abi Wilkinson, "A Child is Reported Missing in UK every 3 Minutes," *Mirror*, September 24, 2014, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/child-reported-missing-uk-every-4315460.

[80] Gordon Rayner and Stephen Swinford, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9795252/Jimmy-Savile-spent-every-waking-minute-thinking-about-abusing-boys-and-girls.html.

[81] Gary G. Kohls, "The Assassination of JFK, the 'Lone Gunman' Mythology and the CIA's Weaponizing of 'Conspiracy Theories,'" *Global Research*, November 4, 2017, https://www.globalresearch.ca/the-assassination-of-jfk-the-lone-gunman-mythology-and-the-cias-weaponizing-of-conspiracy-theories/5616466.

[82] Martin Robinson, Emma Glanfield, Katherine Rushton, Claire Elliott and Tom Kelly, "BBC's £10m Whitewash of Savile Scandal: Report 'Clears' TV Chiefs who were Warned about Years of Sick Abuse," *Daily Mail*, January 20, 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3409119/BBC-hiding-paedophile-Official-Jimmy-Savile-report-warns-whistleblowing-WORSE-pervert-DJ-raped-abused-children-virtually-BBC-building.html.

[83] Dame Janet Smith, "An Independent Review into the BBC's Culture and Practices during the Jimmy Savile and

Stuart Hall Years," *The Dame Janet Smith Review*, February 25, 2016, THE DAME JANET SMITH REVIEW REPORT

[84] Roy Greenslade, "National Press Rounds on the BBC, calling Savile Report a Whitewash," *The Guardian*, February 26, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/media/greenslade/2016/feb/26/national-press-rounds-on-the-bbc-calling-savile-report-a-whitewash.

[85] Martin Evans, "Jimmy Savile Scandal: Anger as no one is Blamed for allowing Abuse in Hospitals," *The Telegraph*, February 26, 2015, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/11438450/Jimmy-Savile-scandal-Anger-as-no-one-is-blamed-for-allowing-abuse-in-hospitals.html.

[86] Josh Halliday and Sandra Laville, "Jimmy Savile Abused 60 People at Stoke Mandeville Hospital, Inquiry finds," *The Guardian*, February 26, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2015/feb/26/jimmy-savile-abuse-stoke-mandeville-hospital-inquiry.

[87] Caroline Davies, "Jimmy Savile's Victims were Aged Five to 75 at Leeds hospital, Inquiry finds, *The Guardian*, June 26, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2014/jun/26/jimmy-savile-victims-leeds-general-infirmary-investigators.

[88] Alexandra Topping, "Jimmy Savile Reports Published," *The Guardian*, January 11, 2013, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2013/jan/11/jimmy-savile-reports-live-blog#block-50eff231b57943e43da8f6fb.

[89] Lizzie Dearden, "British Institutions 'Prioritise Reputation of Political Leaders over Children', Warns Child Sex Abuse Inquiry, Independent, April 25, 2018, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/uk-child-sex-inquiry-british-institutions-staff-protect-political-leaders-jimmy-savile-church-a8321416.html.

[90] Corinne Purtill, "The Child Sex Abuse Scandals Engulfing Britain," *PRI/Global Post*, August 4, 2015, https://www.pri.org/stories/2015-03-16/child-sex-abuse-scandals-engulfing-britain.

[91] Chris Brooke, "Uncle Jimmy took me to his Sick Parties: Nephew tells how his Childhood was Stolen at 13," *Daily Mail*, October 5, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2213636/Uncle-Jimmy-took-sick-parties-Nephew-tells-childhood-stolen-13.html.

[92] Chris Brooke, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2213636/Uncle-Jimmy-took-sick-parties-Nephew-tells-childhood-stolen-13.html.

[93] "The Children's Homes Organized Pedophile Rings," *The UK and Ireland Database*, https://theukdatabase.com/uk-child-abusers-named-and-shamed/childhood-abuses/uk-childrens-homes-crisis/the-children-homes-organized-paedophiles-rings/.

[94] Simon Edge, “How Jim really did Fix it,” *Express*, May 8, 2008, https://www.express.co.uk/expressyourself/43798/How-Jim-really-did-fix-it.

[95] “Paedophile Pimp for the Royals,” *helpfreetheearth.com*, October 31, 2012, http://www.helpfreetheearth.com/news650_paedophile.html.

[96] “Jimmy Savile Linked to North Wales Child Abuse Scandal,” *The Telegraph*, November 7, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9660546/Jimmy-Savile-linked-to-North-Wales-child-abuse-scandal.html.

[97] Leslie-Ann McKeown, MI5 ‘used Sexual Abuse of Children at Kincora to Blackmail the Politician Paedophiles,” *Independent*, May 31, 2016, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/kincora-boys-home-historic-abuse-inquiry-to-examine-abuse-claims-a7057116.html.

[98] CIA, Mossad, MI5 and Kincora Boys Home,” *aangirfan.com*, July 8, 2014, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/07/cia-mossad-mi5-and-kincora-boys-home.html.

[99] Jerry Lawton, “’Care Home Paedophiles were Masons,” *Daily Star*, November 2, 2012, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/281072/Care-home-paedophiles-were-masons.

[100] Eileen Fairweather, “Jimmy Savile Sex Abuse: ‘Islington is still Covering up,’” *The Telegraph*, April 6, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/10746412/Jimmy-Savile-sex-abuse-Islington-is-still-covering-up.html.

[101] Kufara Gwenzi, “The Oppenheimer Dynasty,”kufaragwenzi.blogspot.com, March 21, 2008, https://kufaragwenzi.blogspot.com/2008/03/part-4-form-and-structure-of-caucasian.html.

[102] Eileen Fairweather, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/10746412/Jimmy-Savile-sex-abuse-Islington-is-still-covering-up.html.

[103] “Blair Protected Savile,” *tapnewswire.com*, October 24, 2012, http://tapnewswire.com/2012/10/blair-protected-savile/.

[104] “Quotes” from “When Louis Met… Jimmy,” 2000 TV Special documentary, *IMDb*, https://www.imdb.com/title/tt0304938/quotes.

[105] Louis Theroux, https://www.bbc.com/news/magazine-37517619.

[106] Matthew Drake, “Man tells of Agony at the Hands of BBC Paedo Ring involving DJ Alan Freeman and Evil Pal Jimmy Savile,” *Mirror*, September 22, 2013, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/man-tells-agony-hands-bbc-2292125.

[107] Matthew Drake, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/man-tells-agony-hands-bbc-2292125.

[108] Roderick Russell, “Jimmy Savile – Pedophile, Friend of Royalty – and the Cover-up to Pervert Justice,” *Daily Kos*, October 18, 2012, https://www.dailykos.com/stories/2012/10/17/1146091/-Jimmy-Savile-Pedophile-Friend-of-Royalty-and-the-Cover-up-to-Pervert-Justice.

[109] “Savile the Spy,” *aangirfan.com*, October 18, 2012, http://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2012/10/savile-spy.html.

[110] “Yuri Geller and Mossad-CIA Mind Control, Obama, Michael Jackson, Savile, Elvis,” *aangirfan.com*, June 14, 2013, http://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2013/06/yuri-geller-and-mossad-cia-mind-control.html.

[111] Mark Lawson, “Exposure: The Other Side of Jimmy Savile – Review,” *The Guardian*, October 4, 2012, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2012/oct/04/jimmy-savile-television.

[112] Martin Evans, “Operation Yewtree: The Successes and Failures,” *The Telegraph*, February 5, 2015, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/11393099/Operation-Yewtree-The-successes-and-failures.html.

[113] Sam Greenhill, “Gary Glitter Released on Bail after Ten Hours of Questioning as Savile Probe Police Prepare to Swoop on more Celebrities,” *Daily Mail*, October 28, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2224233/Jimmy-Savile-scandal-Gary-Glitter-arrested-whos-next.html.

[114] Hugh Davies, “Cambodia Throw out Gary Glitter,” *The Telegraph*, January 8, 2003, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/worldnews/asia/cambodia/1418206/Cambodia-throws-out-Gary-Glitter.html.

[115] Sam Greenhill and Claire Ellicott, “Gary Glitter ‘raped girl, 13, in Savile's BBC dressing room’… as Jimmy and a third star ‘abused two 14-year-olds,’” *Daily Mail*, October 3, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2212445/Jimmy-Savile-documentary-Gary-Glitter-raped-girl-13-stars-BBC-dressing-room.html.

[116] Rebecca Camber, Inderdeep Bains and Chris Greenwood, “Glitter will Die behind Bars: Final Shaming of Glam Rocker Found Guilty of Sex with 12-year-old Girl,” *Daily Mail*, February 6, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2942017/Glitter-die-bars-Final-shaming-glam-rocker-guilty-sex-12-year-old-girl.html.

[117] Adrian Shaw, “Gary Glitter ‘Crept into Bed and tried to Rape Girl, Eight', Court told,” *Mirror*, January 19, 2015, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/gary-glitter-crept-bed-tried-5006657.

[118] Justine Ackroyd, “I Was Eight when Gary Glitter Abused me. I've carried his Shame for 24 Years, but I’m not Prepared to any longer,” *Mail on Sunday|highbeam.com*, November 14, 1999, https://www.highbeam.com/doc/1G1-109711874.html.

[119] John Hall, “Sir Jimmy Savile Defended Paedophile Pop Star Gary Glitter saying ‘he did nothing Wrong’ and calling Child Porn just ‘Dodgy Films,’” *Independent*, October 1, 2012, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/people/news/sir-jimmy-savile-defended-paedophile-pop-star-gary-glitter-saying-he-did-nothing-wrong-and-calling-8192715.html.

[120] “Operation Yewtree: Freddie Starr held over new Sex Abuse Claims,” *BBC*, February 12, 2014, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-26157647.

[121] “Freddie Starr Loses Libel case against Groping Accuser Karin Ward,” *The Telegraph*, July 10, 2015, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/law-and-order/11730666/Freddie-Starr-loses-libel-case-against-groping-accuser-Karin-Ward.html.

[122] Ian Burrell, “Revealed: Newsnight Emails that Accuse BBC of Jimmy Savile Cover-up,” *Independent*, October 20, 2012, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/revealed-newsnight-emails-that-accuse-bbc-of-jimmy-savile-cover-up-8218971.html.

[123] Eileen Fairweather, “Jimmy Savile: ‘He was the Tip of the Iceberg,’” *The Telegraph*, October 19, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9620223/Jimmy-Savile-He-was-the-tip-of-the-iceberg.html.

[124] Josh Halliday, “Freddie Starr will not be Prosecuted over Sex Offence Allegations, says CPS,” *The Guardian*, May 6, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2014/may/06/freddie-starr-not-prosecuted-sex-offence-allegations.

[125] Frank Furedi, “Yewtree: More Propaganda than Police Investigation,” *Spiked*, February 19, 2014, http://www.spiked-online.com/newsite/article/Yewtree_more_propaganda_than_police_investigation/14686.

[126] “Freddie Starr Loses Libel case against Groping Accuser Karin Ward,” https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/law-and-order/11730666/Freddie-Starr-loses-libel-case-against-groping-accuser-Karin-Ward.html.

[127] “Freddie Starr Filmed Singing Elvis Presley during Karaoke Session at a Bar in the Costa del Sol,” *Mirror*, November 24, 2016, https://www.mirror.co.uk/3am/celebrity-news/freddie-starr-filmed-singing-elvis-9322995.

[128] Ryan Kisiel, “Disgraced Comedian Freddie Starr Resorts to Performing Clumsy Elvis Presley Karaoke for a Handful of Punters close to Costa del Sol Home,” *The Sun*, November 24, 2016, https://www.thesun.co.uk/tvandshowbiz/2250509/disgraced-comedian-freddie-starr-resorts-to-performing-clumsy-elvis-presley-karaoke-for-a-handful-of-punters-near-costa-del-sol-home/.

[129] Iman Khan, “Stop Romanticizing Elvis Presley and start Acknowledging him for what he was,” *Affinity Magazine*, August 21, 2017, http://culture.affinitymagazine.us/stop-romanticising-elvis-presley-and-start-acknowledging-him-for-what-he-was/.

[130] Ginny Dougary, “I've led a very Wicked Life: Wilfred De'Ath, BBC Producer, Thief and Vagrant on going from Riches to Rags,” *Evening Standard*, April 3, 2013, https://www.standard.co.uk/lifestyle/london-life/ive-led-a-very-wicked-life-wilfred-death-bbc-producer-thief-and-vagrant-on-going-from-riches-to-rags-8558009.html.

[131] “Exposure - The Other Side of Jimmy Savile,” *ITV*, October 3, 2012, https://www.dailymotion.com/video/xv03is.

[132] “Wilfred De’Ath,” *The Oldie*, https://www.theoldie.co.uk/about-us/contributors/wilfred-death.

[133] Cole Moreton, “Jimmy Savile, the Big Fixer,” *The Telegraph*, October 30, 2011, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/culture/music/rockandpopmusic/8857759/Jimmy-Savile-the-big-fixer.html.

[134] Chris Greenwood and Tom Kelly, “Dave Lee Travis Arrested over Allegations of Sexual Abuse as Jimmy Savile Probe Widens,” *Daily Mail*, November 15, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2233293/Dave-Lee-Travis-arrested-allegations-sexual-abuse-Jimmy-Savile-probe-widens.html.

[135] Josh Halliday, “Dave Lee Travis Cleared of String of Indecent Assaults,” *The Guardian*, February 13, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2014/feb/13/dave-lee-travis-not-guilty-indecent-assault.

[136] Mark Tran, “Dave Lee Travis found Guilty of Indecent Assault,” *The Guardian*, September 23, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2014/sep/23/dave-lee-travis-guilty-indecent-assault.

[137] Tom Pettifor, “DJ Dave Lee Travis Fails in Bid to have his Sex Attack Conviction Thrown out,” *Mirror*, December 8, 2015, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/dj-dave-lee-travis-fails-6977526.

[138] “Dave Lee Travis ‘Squeezed my Breasts’ Alleges TV Personality in Former DJ’s Trial, *Huffington Post*, September 9, 2014, https://www.huffingtonpost.co.uk/2014/09/09/dave-lee-travis-sexual-assault-trial_n_5789462.html.

[139] Sarah Ryan, “Lucy Porter - Northern Soul,” *Nerve*, October 24, 2013, http://www.catalystmedia.org.uk/archive/reviews/lucy_porter.php.

[140] Patrick Hill and Alex Belfield, “Dave Lee Travis making Shock Radio Comeback - Four Years after Operation Yewtree Conviction,” *Mirror*, January 27, 2018, https://www.mirror.co.uk/3am/celebrity-news/dave-lee-travis-making-shock-11924525.

[141] Patrick Hill and Alex Belfield, https://www.mirror.co.uk/3am/celebrity-news/dave-lee-travis-making-shock-11924525.

[142] Rosa Silverman, “Royals and Thatcher to Blame for Jimmy Savile Scandal, says Noel Edmonds,” *The Telegraph*, November 16, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/11234069/Royals-and-Thatcher-to-blame-for-Jimmy-Savile-scandal-says-Noel-Edmonds.html.

[143] Richard Spillett, “BBC Radio One DJ Chris Denning is Jailed for 13 Years for Sex Attacks on Children as Young as Eight as it is Revealed he took a 14-Year-old to Meet Gary Glitter,” *Daily Mail*, October 7, 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3826806/Paedophile-DJ-Chris-Denning-offered-child-BBC-presenter.html.

[144] “Former DJ Chris Denning Jailed for 13 years over Sexual Abuse of 24 Boys,” *The Guardian*, December 16, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2014/dec/16/former-dj-chris-denning-jailed-sexual-assault-24-boys.

[145] Abe Hawken, “Paedophile Rolf Harris is seen for the first time since his Release Wearing Paint Spattered Trousers outside a Police Station,” *Daily Mail*, June 18, 2017, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4615556/Paedophile-Rolf-Harris-seen-time.html.

[146] Peter Walker, “Rolf Harris Jailed for Five Years Nine Months for Indecently Assaulting Girls,” *The Guardian*, July 4, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2014/jul/04/rolf-harris-jailed-indecent-assault-young-girls.

[147] “Rolf Harris case: Daughter's Former Best Friend gives Victim Impact Statement,” *The Guardian*, July 4, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2014/jul/04/rolf-harris-daughter-friend-victim-impact-statement.

[148] Matthew Weaver, “Jimmy Savile gave Rolf Harris Guided Tour of Broadmoor,” The Guardian, July 1, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2014/jul/01/jimmy-savile-rolf-harris-alleged-tour-broadmoor.

[149] Mark Tran, “Rolf Harris is Stripped of CBE,” *The Guardian*, March 3, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2015/mar/03/rolf-harris-is-stripped-of-cbe.

[150] Olga Craig, “Rolf Harris’s Vile Jail Song: In Shock Letter from Cell, Shamed Star Reveals ‘Country Rock' Lyrics that Damn his Sex Victims as Greedy

‘Wenches’ – then Brags about Cushy Prison Life,” *Daily Mail*, June 13, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3123036/Rolf-Harris-s-vile-jail-song-shock-letter-cell-shamed-star-reveals-country-rock-lyrics-damn-sex-victims-greedy-wenches-brags-cushy-prison-life.html.

[151] Abe Hawken, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4615556/Paedophile-Rolf-Harris-seen-time.html.

[152] Simon Hattenstone, “Max Clifford: The Rise and Fall of the UK’s King of Spin,” *The Guardian*, May 2, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2014/may/02/max-clifford-sex-politics-tabloids-simon-hattenstone.

[153] Jerry Lawton, “Stars Fear PR guru Max Clifford will Spill Sex Secrets after Indecent Assault Convictions,” *Daily Star*, April 29, 2014, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/376527/Stars-fear-PR-guru-Max-Clifford-will-spill-sex-secrets-after-indecent-assault-convictions.

[154] Matthew Steeple, “Maxed Out,” *The Steeple Times*, June 13, 2017, http://thesteepletimes.com/editorial/maxed-out/.

[155] Samantha Bartlett, “Danniella Westbrook Sparks Outrage as she Defends Max Clifford over Sex Crimes,” *Daily Star*, December 11, 2017, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/showbiz/666298/Max-Clifford-dead-news-Danniella-Westbrook-twitter-outrage.

[156] Andy Rice, “You’re (In)famous and in Trouble? Call Max. Max Clifford,” Daily Maverick, December 9, 2010, https://www.dailymaverick.co.za/article/2010-12-09-youre-infamous-and-in-trouble-call-max-max-clifford/.

[157] Simon Hattenstone, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2014/may/02/max-clifford-sex-politics-tabloids-simon-hattenstone.

[158] Tom Rawle, “Stuart Hall’s 15-Month Prison term Doubled after Initial Sentence Considered ‘Inadequate,’” *Express*, July 26, 2013, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/417683/Stuart-Hall-s-15-month-prison-term-doubled-after-initial-sentence-considered-inadequate.

[159] “Stuart Hall Case: National Treasure who had a Guilty Secret,” *The Telegraph*, May 2, 2013, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/10032829/Stuart-Hall-case-national-treasure-who-had-a-guilty-secret.html.

[160] Kim Pilling, “Jimmy Savile Chauffeur Ray Teret Jailed for 25 Years for String of Sex Attacks,” *Mirror*, December 11, 2014, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jimmy-savile-chauffeur-ray-teret-4788347.

[161] Kelly McLaughlin, “Paedophile Weatherman Fred Talbot Moans his Convictions have Cost him his Career, Savings and four Stone in Weight as he's

Jailed for a further eight months for Molesting a Tenth Victim," *Daily Mail*, November 29, 2017, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5129779/Paedophile-Fred-Talbot-jailed-eight-months.html.

[162] Martin Evans, "Savile's former Producer Ted Beston told he will not face Historic Sex Abuse Charges," *The Telegraph*, May 14, 2013, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/10056192/Saviles-former-producer-Ted-Beston-told-he-will-not-face-historic-sex-abuse-charges.html.

[163] James Dunn, "Operation Yewtree Detectives Re-interview Jimmy Savile's Former Producer on Suspicion of Sexual Offences," *Daily Mail*, November 13, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3317649/Operation-Yewtree-detectives-rearrest-Jimmy-Savile-s-former-producer-suspicion-sexual-offences.html.

[164] Moor Larkin, "The Killing of Uncle Ted," The Death of the Life of Jimmy Savile, *jimcannotfixthis.blogspot.com*, March 12, 2016, http://jimcannotfixthis.blogspot.com/search?q=the+killing+of+uncle+ted#!/2016/03/the-killing-of-uncle-ted.html.

[165] Rob Cooper, "'It's been nine Months of Murder': Jim Davidson tells Audience of his Relief in first Live Show since Assault Probe was Halted... and Reveals he turned down £150,000 to go into Celebrity Big Brother House," *Daily Mail*, August 21, 2013, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2398980/Jim-Davidson-wont-face-legal-action-alleged-sexual-offences.html.

[166] "Jimmy Tarbuck Cleared after Police Investigation into Historic Sex Abuse," Daily Mail, March 24, 2014, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/466649/Jimmy-Tarbuck-cleared-after-police-investigation-into-historic-sex-abuse.

[167] Josh Halliday, "Scotland Yard spent nearly £5m on three Child Abuse Inquiries in 2015," *The Guardian*, December 27, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2015/dec/27/scotland-yard-cost-historical-child-abuse-inquiries-2015.

[168] Martin Beckford, "63 Police Inquiries, 2,100 victims... the Child Abuse Dossier that Shames Britain after Horrific Explosion of Historic Sex Cases since Savile," *Daily Mail*, April 5, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3025991/63-police-inquiries-2-100-victims-child-abuse-dossier-shames-Britain.html.

[169] "BBC Charter Review," Media Policy Project Planner, *The London School of Economics and Political Science*, February 25, 2014, http://blogs.lse.ac.uk/media-policy-planner/2014/02/25/the-bbc-charter-review/.

[170] NSPCC website, https://www.nspcc.org.uk/.

[171] "Britain's Uncomfortable Extremes in Dealing with past Sexual Abuse," *The Economist*, March 28, 2016,

https://www.economist.com/britain/2016/03/28/britains-uncomfortable-extremes-in-dealing-with-past-sexual-abuse.

[172] Sandra Laville, “1,400 Investigated in Child Sex Abuse Inquiry, including Politicians,” *The Guardian*, May 20, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2015/may/20/1400-suspects-operation-hydrant-politician-and-celebrity-child-sex-abuse-inquiry.

[173] Kate Ferguson, “More than 1400 VIP Child Sex Abuse Suspects Investigated by Police Including Politicians and Celebrities,” *Daily Record*, May 20, 2015, https://www.dailyrecord.co.uk/news/scottish-news/more-1400-vip-child-sex-5729942.

[174] Martin Evans, “Operation Yewtree: Essex man, 79, Arrested on Suspicion of Sex Offences, *The Telegraph*, October 6, 2015, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/11914855/Operation-Yewtree-arrest-in-Essex.html.

[175] “Britain’s Uncomfortable Extremes in Dealing with past Sexual Abuse,” https://www.economist.com/britain/2016/03/28/britains-uncomfortable-extremes-in-dealing-with-past-sexual-abuse.

[176] Jamie Grierson, “Police Child Abuse Inquiries: Operation Yewtree to Operation Midland,” *The Guardian*, August 4, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2015/aug/04/police-child-abuse-inquiries-operation-yewtree-to-operation-midland.

[177] Neil Darbyshire, “The Shocking Truth about Police Corruption in Britain,” *The Spectator*, March 7, 2015, https://www.spectator.co.uk/2015/03/the-shocking-truth-about-police-corruption-in-britain/.

[178] John DeGarmo, “The Shocking Truth of Child Sex Trafficking,” *Huffington Post*, November 17, 2016, https://www.huffingtonpost.com/entry/the-shocking-truth-of-child-sex-trafficking_us_582de812e4b0eaa5f14d417d.

[179] “Activities in more than 29 Countries around the Globe will Remember Missing Children on May 25,” *International Centre for Missing and Exploited Children*, https://www.icmec.org/press/activities-in-more-than-29-countries-around-the-globe-will-remember-missing-children-on-may-25/.

[180] Lizzie Deardon, “Tech Companies ‘must Stop Paedophiles Uploading Child Sex Abuse Images,’ National Crime Agency says,” *Independent*, June 21, 2018, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/child-pornography-live-streaming-sex-abuse-images-stop-uploads-national-crime-agency-a8410661.html.

[181] Angela Wormald, “Online Paedophiles Avoid Arrest under Controversial new Police Warning Scheme,” *Mirror*, February 7, 2016, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/online-paedophiles-avoid-arrest-under-7327754.

[182] Joachim Hagopian, "Pizzagate turned PedoGate Leads to Momentum Surge in Busting Global Child Sex Trafficking Rings," *sott.net*, February 27, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/343780-Pizzagate-turned-PedoGate-Leads-to-Momentum-Surge-in-Busting-Global-Child-Sex-Trafficking-Rings.

[183] Andrew Gimson, "Top British Politicians Implicated in Child Sex Crimes," Newsweek, July 8, 2014, https://www.newsweek.com/top-british-politicians-committed-child-sex-crimes-257921.

[184] James Lyons, "'Sick Crimes will go Uninvestigated': Fears of Child Sex Abuse 'Cover-up' as Theresa May Rejects calls for Super Inquiry," *Mirror*, November 6, 2012, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/theresa-may-sparks-claims-of-child-sex-1421346.

[185] James Lyons, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/theresa-may-sparks-claims-of-child-sex-1421346.

[186] James Slack, "Theresa May under Fire as Baroness Butler-Sloss Quits Historic Child Abuse Inquiry over Alleged Cover-up of an Establishment Paedophile Ring," *Daily Mail*, July 14, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2692225/Theresa-May-fire-Baroness-Butler-Sloss-quits-historic-child-abuse-inquiry-alleged-cover-Establishment-paedophile-ring.html.

[187] David Barrett and Bill Gardner, "Margaret Thatcher Warned of Paedophile Scandal, Secret Documents Reveal," *The Telegraph*, January 30, 2015, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/11381191/Margaret-Thatcher-warned-of-paedophile-scandal-secret-documents-reveal.html.

[188] Oliver Wright and Paul Peachey, "Theresa May Accused of 'Appalling Incompetence' over Fiona Woolf Affair," *Independent*, October 31, 2014, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/politics/theresa-may-accused-of-appalling-incompetence-over-fiona-woolf-affair-9832114.html.

[189] David Barrett, "New Zealand Judge Lowell Goddard to Chair Child Abuse Inquiry," *The Telegraph*, February 4, 2015, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/law-and-order/11388962/New-Zealand-judge-set-to-chair-child-abuse-inquiry.html.

[190] Ashley Cowburn, "Child Sexual Abuse Inquiry: Dame Lowell Goddard Resigned because it was 'too much,' says Amber Rudd," *Independent*, September 7, 2016, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/politics/child-sexual-abuse-inquiry-dame-lowell-goddard-resigned-because-it-was-too-much-says-amber-rudd-a7230806.html.

[191] "Inquiry into Child Sexual Abuse 'not fit for purpose,' claims Victims' Group," *The Guardian*, June 13, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2017/jun/13/inquiry-into-child-sexual-abuse-not-fit-for-purpose-claims-victims-group.

[192] Rebecca Camber, Jack Doyle, Tim Skulthorpe and Matt Dathan, “Child Abuse Inquiry is in Crisis after a second Lawyer goes as Victims Warn of ‘Devastating Blow’ to the £100million Probe,” *Daily Mail*, September 28, 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3811073/Government-s-child-abuse-inquiry-crisis-lawyer-threatens-quit-way-investigation-run.html.

[193] Jeremy Scahill, “Donald Trump and the Coming Fall of American Empire,” *Intercept*, June 22, 2018, https://theintercept.com/2017/07/22/donald-trump-and-the-coming-fall-of-american-empire/.

[194] David Jones, “Savile’s Police Protectors: They were the Friday Morning Club - Police Friends who met weekly at the DJ's Flat,” *Daily Mail*, October 18, 2013, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2466512/Saviles-police-protectors-They-Friday-Morning-Club--police-friends-met-weekly-DJs-flat.html.

[195] “Jimmy Savile ‘not Protected’ from Arrest, West Yorkshire Police say,” *BBC*, May 10, 2013, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-england-22476937.

[196] “Jimmy Savile ‘not Protected’ from Arrest, West Yorkshire Police say,” https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-england-22476937.

[197] “Police Paedophiles,” *upd.co.uk*, July 17, 2014, http://www.upsd.co.uk/rogue-officers/police-paedophiles/.

[198] “Jimmy Savile ‘not Protected’ from Arrest, West Yorkshire Police say,” https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-england-22476937

[199] Emma Reynolds and Anna Edwards, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2229786/Jimmy-Savile-Yorkshire-Ripper-Cast-DJs-teeth-check-bites-left-Peter-Sutcliffes-victims.html.

[200] James Murray and Mark Branagan, “Jimmy Savile Ruled Paedophile Ring,” *Express*, October 28, 2012, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/354855/Jimmy-Savile-ruled-paedophile-ring.

[201] James Murray and Mark Branagan, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/354855/Jimmy-Savile-ruled-paedophile-ring.

[202] Tim Hicks, “The Dangers of Misguided Loyalty,” *The Real Whitby*, May 25, 2014, http://www.real-whitby.co.uk/jimmy-savile-peter-jaconelli-dangers-misguided-loyalty/.

[203] Leah McGrath Goodman, “Inside the World’s Top Offshore Tax Shelter,” *Newsweek*, January 16, 2014, https://www.newsweek.com/2014/01/17/inside-worlds-top-offshore-tax-shelter-245078.html.

[204] Nick Dorman and Don Hale, “Edward Heath Fixed it for Jimmy Savile to receive OBE and Attended Paedophile Information Exchange Meetings, *Mirror*, August 8, 2015, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/edward-heath-fixed-jimmy-savile-6220604.

[205] Lara Deauville, “We were lied to! Secret Document FCO 30/1048 kept Truth about EU from British for 30 years,” *Express*, May 12, 2018, https://www.express.co.uk/news/politics/882881/Brexit-EU-secret-document-truth-British-public.

[206] “Paul Craig Roberts! The Genocide of the Greek Nation,” Paul Craig Roberts interview, YouTube video, posted on August 25, 2018, 10:36, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=a6enXugs4qc.

[207] Martin Robinson, “Mother Claims she had told Police a Child Vanished after going on Sir Edward Heath's Yacht but Officers were Warned not to Investigate by ‘Someone above,’” *Daily Mail*, August 7, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3187665/Mother-claims-told-police-child-vanished-going-Sir-Edward-Heath-s-yacht-officers-warned-not-investigate-above.html.

[208] Leah McGrath Goodman, “Child Abuse Inquiry on Top Tax Shelter Jersey Island Delayed Again,” *Newsweek*, April 6, 2017, https://www.newsweek.com/jersey-island-child-abuse-tax-shelter-uk-jimmy-savile-child-predators-rape-579698.

[209] David Icke, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/biggestsecret/esp_icke108.htm.

[210] “Jersey: Children were Loaned to Rich Paedophile Yachtsmen,” *The UK and Ireland Database*, https://theukdatabase.com/councillorspolitical-party-affiliated/jimmy-saville-witch-hunt-or-paedophile/jerseychildren-were-loaned-to-rich-paedophile-yachtsmen/.

[211] David Icke, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/biggestsecret/esp_icke108.htm.

[212] Richard Alleyne, “Sir Jimmy Savile: He Raped me as a Teenager Claims Woman,” *The Telegraph*, October 3, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/9583373/Sir-Jimmy-Savile-He-raped-me-as-a-teenager-claims-woman.html.

[213] Sam Christie, “’Lock up your Daughters’: Jimmy Savile’s Sick Warning to Parents as he Visited Jersey Revealed,” *The Sun*, February 29, 2016, https://www.thesun.co.uk/archives/news/272132/lock-up-your-daughters-jimmy-saviles-sick-warning-to-parents-as-he-visited-jersey-revealed/.

[214] “Jimmy Savile, Edward Heath and the Kray Twins,” http://google-law.blogspot.com/2012/11/jummy-savile-edward-heath-and-kray-twins.html.

[215] Anthony T. Stokes, “Death of a Showman: Jimmy Savile 1926-2011,” *The Truth Seeker*, November 1, 2011, http://www.thetruthseeker.co.uk/?p=36860/

[216] Louis Theroux, https://www.bbc.com/news/magazine-37517619.

[217] Louis Theroux, https://www.bbc.com/news/magazine-37517619.

[218] James Saville, “Jimmy Savile and the IRA: Predator Boasted Terrorist Friends could have Enemies Hospitalised,” *Mirror*, October 20, 2012, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jimmy-savile-ira-predator-boasted-1389710.

[219] Richard Alleyne, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/9583373/Sir-Jimmy-Savile-He-raped-me-as-a-teenager-claims-woman.html.

[220] Mike James, “Revealed: British Premier Gordon Brown is a Paedophile,” *The Truth Seeker*, March 14, 2010, http://www.thetruthseeker.co.uk/?p=12346.

[221] David Icke, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/biggestsecret/esp_icke108.htm.

[222] “John Hunt, Baron Hunt of Tanworth,” *wikipedia.com*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Hunt,_Baron_Hunt_of_Tanworth.

[223] “Association of Papal Knighthood in Great Britain,” papalknights.org.uk, http://www.papalknights.org.uk/page4.htm.

[224] Maureen Dowd, “A Saint, he Ain’t,” *The New York Times*, April 23, 2014 https://www.nytimes.com/2014/04/23/opinion/dowd-a-saint-he-aint.html.

[225] Paul Crockerton, “The Dark Knight: Jimmy Savile could be first person ever to be Stripped of Papal Knighthood,” *Mirror*, October 27, 2012, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jimmy-savile-papal-knighthood-could-1402033.

[226] Vitali Vitaliev, “Channel Islanders Showing off their Sites of Shame,” *The Guardian*, January 3, 1999, https://www.theguardian.com/theguardian/1999/jan/03/guardianweekly.guardianweekly1.

[227] Helen Pidd, “Jersey's ‘Secrecy Culture’ led to my Suspension, says Former Police Chief,” *The Guardian*, June 28, 2012, https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2012/jun/28/jersey-secrecy-culture.

[228] Leah McGrath Goodman, “Anarchy in the UK?” *leahmcgrathgoodman.com*, June 29, 2012, https://leahmcgrathgoodman.com/2012/06/anarchy-in-the-uk/#more-1183.

[229] Graham Power, “Former Police Chief Statement to Wiltshire Constabulary,” *voiceforchildren.blogspot.com*, September 7, 2017, http://voiceforchildren.blogspot.com/2017/09/former-police-chief-statement-to.html.

[230] Nigel Bunyan and Gordon Rayner, “Jersey Police Chief Suspended as Claims of Child Murders ‘Ripped up,’” *The Telegraph*, November 12, 2008, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/3446619/Jersey-police-chief-suspended-as-claims-of-child-murders-ripped-up.html.

[231] Ian Cobain, “Jersey Abuse Inquiry: Remains of five Children Found, Police Reveal - but Murder Charges unlikely,” *The Guardian*, August 1, 2008, https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2008/aug/01/jerseyisland.ukcrime.

[232] “Jersey: Children were Loaned to Rich Paedophile Yachtsmen,” https://theukdatabase.com/councillorspolitical-party-affiliated/jimmy-saville-witch-hunt-or-paedophile/jerseychildren-were-loaned-to-rich-paedophile-yachtsmen/.

[233] Steven Morris, “How ‘House of Horror’ Investigation brought Jersey Abuse to Light,” *The Guardian*, July 3, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2017/jul/03/haut-de-la-garenne-house-of-horror-investigation-brought-jersey-abuse-to-light.

[234] Gordon Rayner and Eileen Fairweather, “Jimmy Savile: Steptoe and Son Actor Wilfrid Brambell ‘Abused Boys in Jersey’ Claims Whistleblower,” *The Telegraph*, October 17, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9616121/Jimmy-Savile-Steptoe-and-Son-actor-Wilfrid-Brambell-abused-boys-in-Jersey-claims-whistleblower.html.

[235] Stuart Syvret, “You Dirty Old Man,” *Ex-Senator Stuart Syvret Blog*, July 17, 2008, https://freespeechoffshore.nl/stuartsyvretblog/you-dirty-old-man/.

[236] “Jersey: Children were Loaned to Rich Paedophile Yachtsmen,” *News of the World*, http://www.whale.to/c/jersey7.html.

[237] David Rose, “Bungled Jersey Child Abuse Probe Branded a ‘£20 Million Shambles,’ Daily Mail, October 4, 2009, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1217863/Bungled-Jersey-child-abuse-probe-branded-20million-shambles.html.

[238] Camille Standen, “The Journalist who was Arrested for Investigating a Pedophile Orphanage,” interview of Leah McGrath Goodman, *Vice*, February 27, 2013, https://www.vice.com/en_us/article/xd4954/the-journalist-who-was-banned-from-investigating-jerseys-child-abuse.

[239] Camille Standen, https://www.vice.com/en_us/article/xd4954/the-journalist-who-was-banned-from-investigating-jerseys-child-abuse.

[240] “Jersey: Children were Loaned to Rich Paedophile Yachtsmen,” https://theukdatabase.com/councillorspolitical-party-affiliated/jimmy-saville-witch-hunt-or-paedophile/jerseychildren-were-loaned-to-rich-paedophile-yachtsmen/.

[241] Sam Christie, https://www.thesun.co.uk/archives/news/272132/lock-up-your-daughters-jimmy-saviles-sick-warning-to-parents-as-he-visited-jersey-revealed/.

[242] “Operation Whistle,” States of Jersey Police website, 2015, https://jersey.police.uk/news-appeals/2015/june/operation-whistle/.

[243] Lauren Fruen, “Tear It Down: Notorious Jersey Children’s Home Haut de la Garenne must be Demolished as it Warns ‘Kids are still at Risk,’” *The Sun*, July 3, 2017, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/3939068/jersey-haut-de-la-garenne-home-demolished/.

[244] Eileen Fairweather, “Jimmy Savile: ‘He was the Tip of the Iceberg,’” *The Telegraph*, October 19, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9620223/Jimmy-Savile-He-was-the-tip-of-the-iceberg.html.

[245] Haroon Siddique, “Jersey Care Homs Covered up Abuse,” *The Guardian*, February 26, 2008, https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2008/feb/26/ukcrime.childprotection1.

[246] Leah McGrath Goodman, https://www.newsweek.com/jersey-island-child-abuse-tax-shelter-uk-jimmy-savile-child-predators-rape-579698.

[247] Stephen Moyes, “EastEnders Paedo Probe,” *The Sun*, March 24, 2013, https://www.thesun.co.uk/archives/news/612394/eastenders-paedo-probe/.

[248] Stephen Moyes, https://www.thesun.co.uk/archives/news/612394/eastenders-paedo-probe/.

[249] Jonathon Corke, “Sick Jimmy Savile linked to five Mystery Deaths,” *Daily Star*, June 29, 2014, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/386307/Sick-DJ-Jimmy-Savile-linked-to-five-mystery-deaths-and-calalogue-of-suicides.

[250] Simon Boyle, “Last Picture Emerges of Leslie Grantham looking Frail as Dark New Claims Surface,” *The Irish Sun*, June 15, 2018, https://www.thesun.ie/tvandshowbiz/tv/2720133/last-picture-emerges-of-leslie-grantham-looking-frail-as-dark-new-claims-surface/.

[251] Simon Boyle, https://www.thesun.ie/tvandshowbiz/tv/2720133/last-picture-emerges-of-leslie-grantham-looking-frail-as-dark-new-claims-surface/.

[252] Tom Pettifor, “Leslie Grantham was Investigated over ‘Evidence of Sexual Abuse against Girl’, former Police Officer Claims,” *Mirror*, June 15, 2018, https://www.mirror.co.uk/3am/celebrity-news/former-cops-leslie-grantham-sex-12717194.

[253] Andrew O’ Hagan, “Light Entertainment,” *London Review of Books*, November 8, 2012, https://www.lrb.co.uk/v34/n21/andrew-ohagan/light-entertainment.

[254] Victoria Ward and Jennifer O' Mahony, "More than 152 Allegations made at BBC in last seven months," *The Telegraph*, May 29, 2013, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/culture/tvandradio/bbc/10087858/More-than-152-allegations-made-at-BBC-in-last-seven-months.html.

[255] "BBC: Sex Offenders & Incidents Connected to the BBC," *skepticpeg.wordpress.com*, May 30, 2017, https://scepticpeg.wordpress.com/2017/05/30/sex-offenders-incidents-connected-to-the-bbc/.

[256] Alex Green, BBC Radio Star 'is being Probed over Claim of Sex Offence against Child under 16,'" *Daily Mail*, March 11, 2018, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5487111/BBC-radio-star-probed-sex-offences-against-child-16.html.

[257] "In Their Own Words," *Biased BBC*, https://biasedbbc.org/quotes-of-shame/.

[258] Dominic Rushe, "Mark Thompson starts Work at New York Times as BBC Scandal Grows," *The Guardian*, November 12, 2012, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2012/nov/12/mark-thompson-new-york-times-bbc.

[259] Dominic Rushe, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2012/nov/12/mark-thompson-new-york-times-bbc.

[260] H. Roger Segelken, "Baruch Blumberg, who Discovered and Tackled Hepatitis B, Dies at 85, *The New York Times*, April 6, 2011, https://www.nytimes.com/2011/04/07/health/07blumberg.html.

[261] Keith Dovkants, "The Secret Report at Heart of BBC's Gaza Paranoia," *Evening Standard*, January 27, 2009, https://www.standard.co.uk/news/the-secret-report-at-heart-of-bbc-s-gaza-paranoia-6870301.html.

[262] Richard Becker, "Serial War Criminal, Mass Murderer," *Global Research*, January 13, 2014, https://www.globalresearch.ca/ariel-sharon-serial-war-criminal-mass-murderer/5364664.

[263] Robert Fiske, "Robert Fiske: How can you Trust the Cowardly BBC?" *Independent*, April 16, 2009, https://www.independent.co.uk/voices/commentators/fisk/robert-fisk-how-can-you-trust-the-cowardly-bbc-1669281.html.

[264] Keith Dovkants, https://www.standard.co.uk/news/the-secret-report-at-heart-of-bbc-s-gaza-paranoia-6870301.html.

[265] Amena Saleem, "How Israel Exerts its Influence on the BBC," *Palestine Solidarity Campaign*, November 20, 2015, https://www.palestinecampaign.org/how-israel-exerts-its-influence-on-the-bbc/.

[266] Yoichi Shimatsu, “Pedophile Savile Haunts the New York Times - PizzaGate 7,” *Rense News*, January 3, 2017, https://rense.com/general96/savileNYT.htm.

[267] Matthew Purdy, “As Scandal Flared, BBC’s Leaders Missed Red Flags,” *The New York Times*, November 4, 2012, https://www.nytimes.com/2012/11/05/business/media/mark-thompson-and-bbc-missed-red-flags-in-savile-scandal.html?pagewanted=all&_r=0.

[268] Christopher Hope and Gordon Rayner, “Jimmy Savile: BBC Scrapped Investigation after Newsnight came ‘under Pressure’ from Senior Managers,” *The Telegraph*, October 21, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9624583/Jimmy-Savile-BBC-scrapped-investigation-after-Newsnight-came-under-pressure-from-senior-managers.html.

[269] Dominic Rushe, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2012/nov/12/mark-thompson-new-york-times-bbc.

[270] Mark Sweny and Adam Gabbatt, “Mark Thompson did not know Jimmy Savile was a ‘Pressing Concern,’” *The Guardian*, October 24, 2012, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2012/oct/24/mark-thompson-jimmy-savile-bbc.

[271] Sam Marsden, “Jimmy Savile: Mark Thompson Admits ‘lack of Imagination’ over Newsnight Report,” *The Telegraph*, November 5, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9655940/Jimmy-Savile-Mark-Thompson-admits-lack-of-imagination-over-Newsnight-report.html.

[272] Maureen Orth, “The BBC Blame Game,” *Vanity Fair*, February 15, 2013, https://www.vanityfair.com/news/2013/02/bbc-chief-mark-thompson-jimmy-savile-scandal.

[273] Yoichi Shimatsu, https://rense.com/general96/savileNYT.htm.

[274] Maureen Orth, https://www.vanityfair.com/news/2013/02/bbc-chief-mark-thompson-jimmy-savile-scandal.

[275] Arthur Martin, “Former BBC Chief Mark Thompson’s Office ‘had Two Alerts about Savile Child Abuse Claims,’” *Daily Mail*, October 28, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2224236/Jimmy-Savile-rumours-Mark-Thompsons-BBC-office-TWO-alerts-child-abuse-claims.html.

[276] Maureen Orth, https://www.vanityfair.com/news/2013/02/bbc-chief-mark-thompson-jimmy-savile-scandal.

[277] Lisa O’ Carroll, “BBC Chief: Newsnight's Jimmy Savile Investigation should have Continued,” *The Guardian*, October 23, 2012, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2012/oct/23/bbc-newsnight-jimmy-savile.

[278] Dominic Rushe, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2012/nov/12/mark-thompson-new-york-times-bbc.

[279] “Newsnight Investigation into Jimmy Savile was actually Shelved ‘because it Clashed with Christmas Tributes to the Presenter,’” *Daily Mail*, October 19, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2219998/Jimmy-Savile-Leaked-email-casts-doubt-BBCs-reason-Newsnight-film-Savile-shelved.html.

[280] Jasp Jackson, “BBC Forced out Team behind Savile Exposé, says ex-Newsnight Journalist,” *The Guardian*, July 29, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2015/jul/29/bbc-savile-expose-newsnight-meirion-jones.

[281] Tom Leonard, “Former BBC Director General ‘involved in Angry Exchange outside Home with Channel 4 Crew who asked him about Savile Scandal,’” *Daily News*, August 11, 2013, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2389285/Mark-Thompson-involved-angry-exchange-outside-home-Channel-4-crew-asked-Savile.html.

[282] Arthur Martin, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2224236/Jimmy-Savile-rumours-Mark-Thompsons-BBC-office-TWO-alerts-child-abuse-claims.html .

[283] “The Podesta Emails,” *WikiLeaks*, https://wikileaks.org/podesta-emails/.

[284] “FBI Pedophile Symbols,” *WikiLeaks*, https://wikileaks.org/wiki/FBI_pedophile_symbols.

[285] “John Podesta - #PizzaGate - Child Sex Trafficking - Satanic Occultism - The Deep State's Use of Pedophilia as a Means of Compromising Individuals and Controlling them,” *kundaliniandcelltowers.com*, http://kundaliniandcelltowers.com/podesta-pizzagate-pedophilia.html.

[286] Joachim Hagopian, “Breaking Sex Scandal from Weiner's Laptop may be the Smoking Gun that will bring down the Clintons for good,” sott.net, November 4, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/333069-Breaking-sex-scandal-from-Weiners-laptop-may-be-the-smoking-gun-that-will-bring-down-the-Clintons-for-good.

[287] Eric Sommer, “How Five American Companies Control what you Think,” *RT*, May 14, 2014, https://www.rt.com/op-ed/158920-us-ukraine-media-control/.

[288] Reid Cherlin, Rob Fischer, Jason Zengerle and Jason Horowitz, “The 50 Most Powerful People in Washington,” *GQ*, January 18, 2012, https://www.gq.com/gallery/50-most-powerful-people-in-washington-dc.

[289] Joachim Hagopian, “Pizzagate: Podesta Pedo Perps and Clinton's International Child Sex Trafficking Ring Exposed, *sott.net*, December 2, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/335512-Pizzagate-Podesta-pedo-perps-and-Clintons-international-child-sex-trafficking-ring-exposed.

[290] “’Pizzagate’ shows how Fake News Hurts real People,” *The Washington Post*, November 25, 2016, https://www.washingtonpost.com/opinions/pizzagate-shows-how-fake-news-hurts-real-people/2016/11/25/d9ee0590-b0f9-11e6-840f-e3ebab6bcdd3_story.html?noredirect=on.

[291] Joachim Hagopian, “Was the Pizzagate almost-Shooting a Deep State False Flag? If not, it sure was Conveniently Used to further Demonize Alt Media and ‘Fake News,’” *sott.net*, December 6, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/335872-Was-the-Pizzagate-almost-shooting-a-deep-state-false-flag-If-not-it-sure-was-conveniently-used-to-further-demonize-alt-media-and-fake-news.

[292] Joachim Hagopian, “Deep State's Final Solution: The Death of Alternative News,” *sott.net*, December 12, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/336381-Deep-States-Final-Solution-The-Death-of-Alternative-News.

[293] Phillip D. Collins, “Luciferianism: The Religion of Apotheosis,” *Conspiracy Archive*, January 10, 2006, http://www.conspiracyarchive.com/2014/05/14/luciferianism-the-religion-of-apotheosis/.

[294] Gearóid Ó Colmáin, “Rothschild’s Slaughterships,” *Dissident Voice*, January 24, 2016, https://dissidentvoice.org/2016/01/rothschilds-slaughter-ships/

[295] Yoichi Shimatsu, https://rense.com/general96/savileNYT.htm.

[296] Jill Treanor, “Barclays Scandal Forces out Chairman Marcus Agius,” *The Guardian*, July 1, 2012, https://www.theguardian.com/business/2012/jul/01/barclays-chairman-poised-departure.

[297] “Libor Scandal: Can we ever Trust Bankers again?” *BBC*, May 8, 2013, https://www.bbc.com/news/business-22382932.

[298] “Libor Scandal: Can we ever Trust Bankers again?” https://www.bbc.com/news/business-22382932.

[299] Blair Erickson, “How is a Corrupt Criminal like Jamie Dimon, not in Prison for Fraud?” *Medium*, September 13, 2017, https://medium.com/@blairerickson/how-is-a-corrupt-criminal-like-jamie-dimon-not-in-prison-for-fraud-f3a1e7eb4cf6.

[300] Christopher Bollyn, “Jeb Bush’s Zionist Paymasters: Bloomberg and Rothschild,” *bollyn.com*, July 8, 2015, http://www.bollyn.com/jeb-bushs-zionist-paymasters-bloomberg-and-rothschild-2/.

[301] Andrew Grice, “850bn: Official Cost of the Bank Bailout,” *Independent*, December 4, 2009, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/politics/163850bn-official-cost-of-the-bank-bailout-1833830.html.

[302] Yoichi Shimatsu, https://rense.com/general96/savileNYT.htm.

[303] Peter Oborne, “The BBC rot starts at the top, with the elusive Lord Patten,” *The Telegraph*, February 23, 2013, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/culture/tvandradio/bbc/9889137/The-BBC-rot-starts-at-the-top-with-the-elusive-Lord-Patten.html.

[304] Miles Goslett, “My Bombshell Secret Tape... and a Cynical Cover-up by the Ducking and Diving BBC: Withering Broadside by Writer who Exposed Fatal Flaw in Savile Report,” *Daily Mail*, December 15, 2013, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2523950/My-bombshell-secret-tape--cynical-cover-ducking-diving-BBC-Withering-broadside-writer-exposed-fatal-flaw-Savile-report.html.

[305] Maureen Orth, https://www.vanityfair.com/news/2013/02/bbc-chief-mark-thompson-jimmy-savile-scandal.

[306] Miles Goslett, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2523950/My-bombshell-secret-tape--cynical-cover-ducking-diving-BBC-Withering-broadside-writer-exposed-fatal-flaw-Savile-report.html.

[307] Miles Goslett, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2523950/My-bombshell-secret-tape--cynical-cover-ducking-diving-BBC-Withering-broadside-writer-exposed-fatal-flaw-Savile-report.html.

[308] Miles Goslett, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2523950/My-bombshell-secret-tape--cynical-cover-ducking-diving-BBC-Withering-broadside-writer-exposed-fatal-flaw-Savile-report.html.

[309] Peter Oborne, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/culture/tvandradio/bbc/9889137/The-BBC-rot-starts-at-the-top-with-the-elusive-Lord-Patten.html.

[310] Alasdair Glennie and Paul Revoir, "BBC's 'Outrageous Disregard' for the Licence Payers' Cash: Staff were handed £369m in Payoff Deals while TV Bosses Broke their own Rules says Watchdog," *Daily Mail*, July 1, 2013, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2352483/BBCs-shameful-severance-pay-deals-revealed-How-150-senior-managers-given-vast-pay-offs-came-25MILLION.html.

[311] Peter Oborne, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/culture/tvandradio/bbc/9889137/The-BBC-rot-starts-at-the-top-with-the-elusive-Lord-Patten.html.

[312] Yoichi Shimatsu, https://rense.com/general96/savileNYT.htm.

[313] "BBC Trust Chair Fiona Fairhead to Stand Down," *BBC*, September 14, 2016, https://www.bbc.com/news/entertainment-arts-37352295.

[314] Patrick Foster, "Sir David Clementi to Become new BBC Chairman," *The Telegraph*, January 10, 2017, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2017/01/10/sir-david-clementi-become-new-bbc-chairman/.

[315] "Who Owns the Bank of England?" *tapnewswire.com*, February 27, 2010, http://tapnewswire.com/2010/02/who-owns-bank-of-england/.

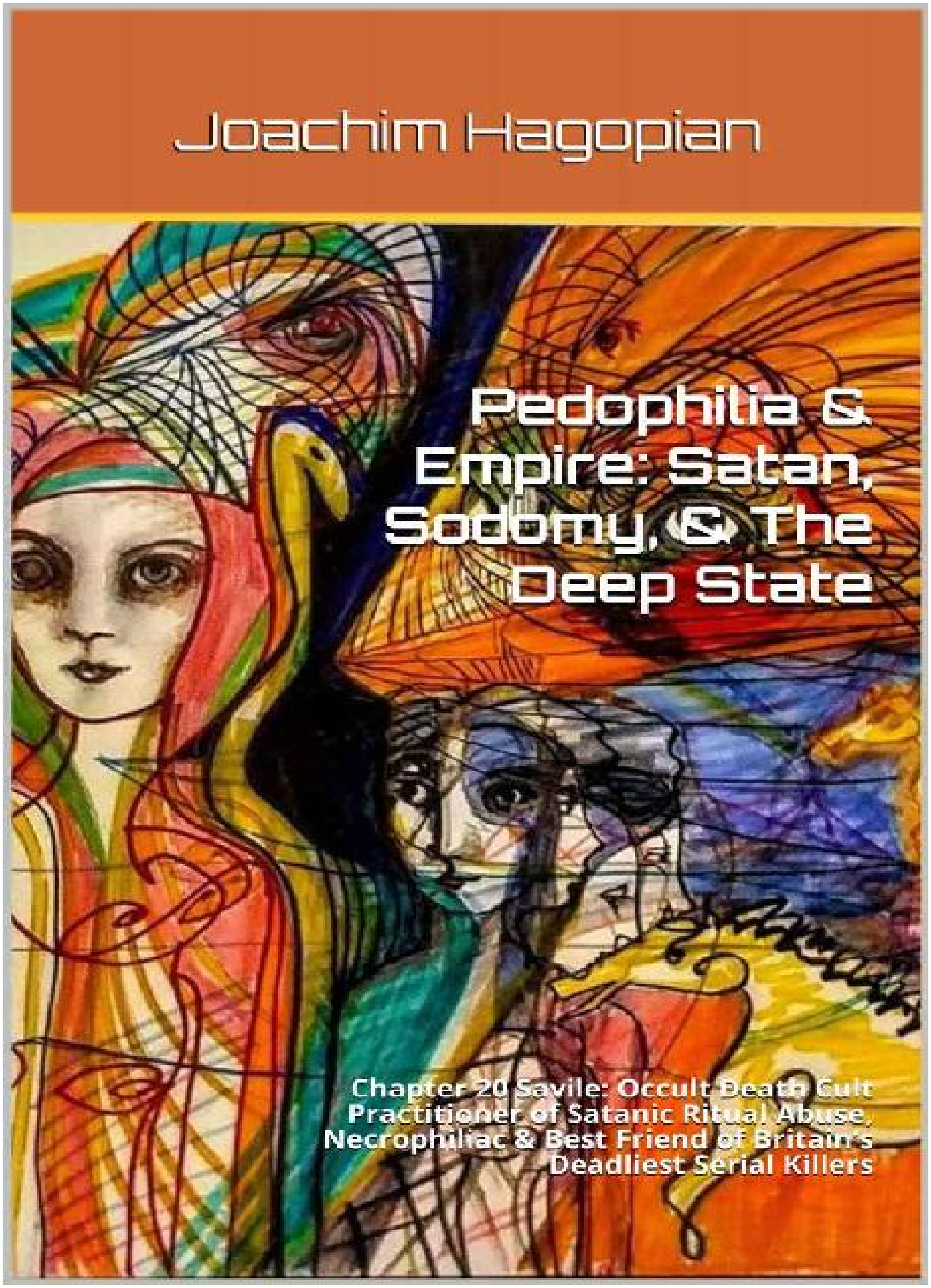

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 20 Savile: Occult Death Cult Practitioner of Satanic Ritual Abuse, Necrophiliac & Best Friend of Britain's Deadliest Serial Killers

Chapter 20 Savile: Occult Death Cult Practitioner of Satanic Ritual Abuse, Necrophiliac & Best Friend of Britain’s Deadliest Serial Killers

Joachim Hagopian

***Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission* http://www.noramaccoby.com/**

Aside from a 1972 sensationalized book on pornography that two-time cabinet minister in the Harold Wilson government Lord Frank Longford authored, based on a just completed fact-finding mission with Jimmy Savile and Cliff Richard,[1] Lord Longford and Sir Jimmy also held in common another strange, obsessive fascination - their creepily close friendships with arguably British history’s worst serial killers - Myra Hindley and her partner in crime Ian Brady.[2] Savile’s close ties with Brady dating back to their killing spree were kept mostly on the low while Longford’s public friendship with Hindley once she was behind bars included his “humanitarian” efforts to rescue her from state bondage that backfired with growing negative media coverage on both Longford and Hindley.[3] Unwittingly, Lord Longford singlehandedly torpedoed Myra Hindley’s hope for parole, not that the coldblooded killer deserved it.

But revealed in 2017, back in 1985 accused but unprosecuted pedophile Leon Brittan serving as Home Secretary in Margaret Thatcher’s pedo-saturated government, approved the pedophilic serial killing duo’s possible prison release as early as 1995 for Hindley and 2005 for Brady.[4] Looks like having so many pedophile friends in high places nearly paid off.

For over a half century the entire British nation has been fixated on the horror of how a young couple in Myra Hindley and boyfriend Ian Brady (who died in August 2017) carried out with such diabolical pleasure and bloodlust the brutally sick Moors murders involving sexual assault, torture and death mostly by strangling of at least two girls and three boys aged 10 to 17 between 1963 and 1965.[5] It's recently come to light through a recovered letter to a journalist, Brady boasted of killing five more children and further research has uncovered the names of a total of seven additional victims tallying a dozen murders.[6] One of their victims, a little 10-year old desperately screaming for her mother was stripped naked by Hindley while Brady took at least 9 photos of their traumatized defenseless prey, all the while tape recording her last few minutes alive that was later replayed at their trial.[7] It was Lord Longford's friend Jimmy Savile who already knew and had bought Brady's child porn photos of young children that likely included their victims even prior to the serial killers' 1965 arrest.[8]

Yet leave it to devout Catholic Lord Longford to use his powerful contacts in government and high courts to tirelessly advocate for coldblooded Myra's prison release during the final 35 years of his life till death do him part in 2001 at age 95.[9] Their bizarre friendship is now the portrayed subject matter in a Golden Globe winning 2018 released film entitled "Longford."[10]

Lord Longford began collaborating with yet another powerful figure - journalist and *Observer* editor Lord David Astor (yep, from one of the world's most famous, wealthiest Illuminati bloodline families[11]) also an avid Myra Hindley freedom fighter. For 20 years Lord Astor and Hindley exchanged letters, and both lords conferred on strategizing ways to help the child killing satanic witch be set free.[12] Her sidekick Brady was the occult alchemist tied to Savile occult rituals at the Moors.[13] Why would two prominent Oxford grad Lords Longford and Astor, the upper crust of upper crust, take up such an unholy cause on behalf of what the press was calling "the most evil woman in Britain?" Like attracts like, that’s why. Despite this odd disparity, the media simply passes it off as two misguided liberals in their senior years seeking redemption through saving one lost soul… hardly. Bottom line, these two serial killers and their beloved, famous, respected friends all likely belonged to the elites’ not-so-secret crime cabal network.

As their loyal friend and supporter, Savile visited each murderer in prison and played songs on his radio show encoded in dedicated message as part of a secret occult system that the three utilized to communicate. A longtime Moors murder investigator has concluded that Brady and Hindley were part of Jimmy Savile’s child sex ring.[14] When Savile was asked publicly about the Moors murders, his outlandishly truthful reply was, “I am the Myra Hindley story.”

As another indicator Myra had friends in high places, her story took a bizarre twist in November 2002, when she likely did not die at age 60 as the media reported. Within a day or two of her so called death, Myra Hindley was spotted and identified by a school nurse after Hindley’s car accidentally bumped into hers.[15] When the nurse exclaimed, “You’re Myra Hindley,” the woman responded, “You can’t say that! You can’t say that!” and jumped back in her car and speedily drove off. Jotting down her license plate number, when the nurse reported the incident to the police, they told her to withdraw her accident report and that it if she knew what was best, it never happened. She went to the local paper and spoke to a journalist who then contacted Lord Longford’s son who also alluded that Myra was still very much alive. No death certificate was ever published and her body was apparently “rushed” to cremation. Then location of her supposed “unknown” ashes several months later were reportedly “found” in - of all places - Saddleworth Moor where all her victims were buried.

Also the same year 2013 was when the Moor was implicated as a longtime satanic site where young boys and girls were ritualistically sacrificed and snuff films were recorded for secret distribution to wealthy Luciferian clientele.[16] Hindley and Brady were part of the earlier cult that was part of the larger satanic pedophile operation that Jimmy Savile, MP Cyril Smith and other British VIPs belonged to, which explains why the pedo-cabal might fake Hindley's death and assist her in assuming a new identity.

Evidence has also emerged that Jimmy Savile was well read in Aleister Crowley's Thelema philosophy that became the cornerstone of Crowley's sex cult OTO. Myra the witch, Ian the alchemist and Sir Jimmy the wizard are believed to have participated in black occult rituals together on Saddleworth Moor, the satanic location where most of their murders occurred and bodies lay buried.[17]

Back in the early 1970s Janie Jones was a singer who ran sex party orgies for *BBC* DJs and executives out of her home with schoolgirl dressed prostitutes supplied by record companies as bribes to entice DJs to play their records over the *BBC* airwaves, caught up in the "payola scandal."[18] The police investigation in an early *BBC* scandal in 1971 must have turned up some pretty explosive incrimination against Savile and others at the *BBC* because the investigative findings have been sealed for 50 years. With 47 years down and three more to go, more dirt on Savile and the *BBC* await.

As part of that payola fiasco, in 1974 Janie Jones was arrested for controlling prostitutes and perverting justice, serving three years in prison where she met Myra Hindley and became another member of her twisted flock of devoted supporters.[19] Upon Janie's release, an angry Jimmy Savile demanded a meeting with her to chastise over her favoring Myra over his boy Ian. Lord Longford, Lord Astor and Janie Jones and others were taken in by Myra's false contentions that she inadvertently fell under Ian’s demonic spell to blame him in her bid for freedom,[20] and Savile, who personally knew both serial murderers, realized Myra was just as wickedly guilty and evil, if not more than her boyfriend. But as a misogynist, Savile always favored friendships with male serial killers over females. After carrying on about 13-year old girls actually “wanting” it in his warped need to justify his raping young girls, Jones said that Savile then went into “bragging that he knew Ian Brady well” and that it was he who deserved her favor.[21]

Yet more satanic linkage to Savile and his ties to the Moors have also surfaced. A man described as a High Priest of Satan named Michael Horgan regularly organized satanic ceremonies at Saddleworth Moor where children 2 to 13 years of age were drugged, ritually tortured, sexually abused and sacrificed in the same satanic pedo-ring connected to Savile, Brady and Hindley.[22] The ceremonial abuse was often filmed for snuff distribution. Eventually Horgan was jailed in 1992 for 10 years. His own stepson, Michael Roberts, recounted the painful trauma that Michael Horgan sadistically put him through, recalling his molestation at the pudgy, filthy fingers of prominent MP pedophile fat boy himself - Sir Cyril Smith who was friends with Horgan, Savile and a bevy of other pedo-linked powerbrokers. Lots more on this obese, queen-knighted, scum-faced royal lieutenant tied closely to the Westminster pedophile abuse scandal-cover-up featured in Chapter 23.

Before leaving the Longford-Hindley-Saddleworth connection behind, one more telling fact - the porno-serial killer-infatuated Lord Longford’s niece is none other than the child porn supporter, Paedophile Information Exchange (PIE) advocate, lower-the-age-of-consent-to-10 supporter Harriet Harman, the longtime Labour Party MP and deputy party leader. Recall from Chapter 2 that when she was legal officer for the National Council of Civil Liberties (NCCL now known as Liberty) from 1978 to 1982, she actively lobbied to legalize child pornography unless it could be proven to harm a child.[23] The NCCL admitted PIE members allowing them to speak at its official functions and use the NCCL platform to promote legalization of incest. As the legal officer for four years, Harman signed documents promoting pedophilia and then when confronted in 2013, flatly denied it, refused to apologize, profusely defended herself against any wrongdoing, claiming to be a victim of a vicious smear campaign, and was willing only to regret PIE's status as an affiliate NCCL partner.[24] Moreover, her Labor MP hubby and party shadow police minister Jack Dromey was NCCL's chairman throughout this period in the late 1970s. Also Harriet Harman is a cousin of pedo-enabling former Prime Minister David Cameron who is a cousin of Queen Elizabeth.[25] Pedophilia enabling - if not pedophiles themselves - obviously runs in the family.

Aside from the Moors abuse and killings and occasionally wearing the number 666 on his marathon runs, even more conclusive evidence indicating that Jimmy Savile was a Satanist is a 1975 incident in a candlelit basement room deep in the bowels of Stoke-Mandeville Hospital. Savile is alleged to have worn a hooded robe and mask during a secret satanic ritual ceremony that involved the beating and raping of a 12-year old girl patient.[26] She was led into an out of the way room where Savile and several other hooded, masked adults joined in to participate in the satanic ritual abuse, frequently repeating "Ave Satanas," Latin for "Hail Satan." The victim recognized Savile because of his distinctive voice and blond hair sticking out from the side of his mask.

Similar to arrangements at Broadmoor and Leeds Infirmary, Savile enjoyed his own living quarters at Stoke-Mandeville where he volunteered as a porter from 1965 to 1988 and sexually assaulted at least 60 patients, volunteers and visitors with nine informal complaints and one formal complaint registered between 1972 and 1985.[27] An 8-year old brain damaged girl in a coma suffered abuse at the demon’s hands. Another 8- or 9-year old whose relatives worked at the hospital was repeatedly raped 10 times at the hospital.

Five years later in 1980 another abuse victim at the time 21-years of age reported that Savile dressed in similar ceremonial wizardly garb this time played the leading role in a satanic ritual after an orgy party held at a wealthy private London residence.[28] The victim described her ordeal to the *Express*:

> *I was brought in to a dark cellar and made to stand in front of three men in a circle, with the man in the middle sitting on a throne-like chair in a bright gown with a cigar in his mouth. A man stood on either side in blue cloaks and masks… I was then taken by the man smoking the cigar, who I recognised as Jimmy Savile, to an altar table where I was stripped of my gown and tied to the altar. Savile then climbed on to the table and raped me. Others around him called out Satan’s name and laughed hysterically and were worked up into a frenzy.*[29]

Both young vulnerable females witnessing firsthand Savile’s savage participation in satanic ritual torture went to the police afterwards but to no avail. UK’s standard police policy has virtually always been to summarily dismiss all sex abuse complaints against VIPs. Years later each young woman independently contacted the same therapist in 1992 and 1993, both struggling with the long term effects from such an emotionally jarring, scarring, eerily similar experience with Savile’s organized satanic ritual abuse ring.

Once famed pediatrician consultant at Stoke-Mandeville for two decades, Dr. Michael Salmon was also a charity organizer and chief medical director for Dreamflight, a charity renowned for annually sponsoring 300 disabled UK children on a flight to Florida's Disney World and Seaworld.[30] Dreamflight's maiden voyage was a 1985 Christmas flight with children on a jumbo jet accompanied by Sir Jimmy Savile. As a twice convicted pedophile guilty of indecent assaults, Dr. Michael Salmon also worked at the *BBC* and also sadistically abused at least 18 underage girls and one boy with the youngest victim only eight years old, also at Stoke-Mandeville and other hospitals from 1975 to 1989.[31] At 81 in December 2016 when already serving an 18-year sentence stemming from the two prior convictions dating back to 1990, the disgraced former celebrated doctor was convicted for a third and final time just two years after his last one. As a consequence, Michael Salmon will die in prison.

As is so common amongst youth charities, Dreamflight has attracted a number of child predators, including Savile, Salmon and another *BBC* entertainer Rolf Harris who regularly attended the charity's pre-flight festivities. One of the doctor's victims specifically recalls a photo hanging on the wall of Salmon's office of his son and Savile posing together after the doctor took him to a Jim'll Fix It broadcast.[32] This confirms the doctor knew Jimmy Savile. Dr. Salmon and Savile shared too many overlapping parallels working at the same hospital during the same lengthy years, linked to the same charity while both were *BBC* employees and serial pedophiles victimizing underage hospital patients at the same place and time.

Additionally, one of Salmon's seriously ill victims at Stoke Mandeville confined to a wheelchair was drugged and gang raped by Salmon and two other men.[33] The girl remembers afterwards being wheeled back to her room by a hospital porter, more than likely Jimmy Savile. This incident with Savile's satanic ritual abuse involving other hospital staff victimizing yet another Stoke-Mandeville girl, point to

Salmon most likely attending that satanic ritual abuse session. These recurring similar events involving both the DJ and the doctor indicate that for years they likely participated in and belonged to the same satanic pedophile ring.

But these uncanny, striking parallels don't stop there. The female face of the *BBC*, news presenter Jill Dando, aware of the Savile-*BBC* pedophile ring, and both her and Jimmy's longtime friend Sir Cliff Richard were also both Dreamflight patrons just months prior to Jill's murder.[34] And Queen Elizabeth's dressmaker Lillian Joyce Burfield and the queen honored Dame Yvonne Trueman, sister of Dreamflight creator and British Airways pilot Derek Pereira, were also both Dreamflight fundraisers as well as Stoke-Mandeville volunteers, all running in the same circles socially and professionally. So many common links appear more than coincidental, fueling high speculation that connects all the dots between already established and confirmed nefarious relationships between the royals, Savile, Harris, Sir Cliff and Jill, child charity work and Stoke-Mandeville Hospital.

A final nail in the elite's dot connected coffin exposing the wider Savile-Salmon-*BBC*-Stoke Mandeville pedophile ring is the fact that the primary funder of Tavistock research on torture-induced mind control and dissociative disorder is none other than a Rothschild who also happened to be a close associate of the disgraced Michael Salmon.[35] Even after he was convicted of drugging and raping children, the late entomologist Miriam Rothschild wrote the introduction to Salmon's 2001 butterfly book. Apparently they both shared an acute interest in butterflies (no doubt over the well-being of children) that extends beyond the Monarch mind control developed at the Rothschild funded Tavistock.

A psychiatrist that studied art therapy practices at Tavistock promoting a style of art depicting sex abused mind control victims called Art Brut happens to run the CrossCurrents Foundation, the major funding source for DC's 49th most powerful VIP Comet Pizza owner (of Pizzagate infamy) James Alefantes's Transformer Art Gallery that along with his pedo-pal lobbyist Tony Podesta collect and showcase this pathological "art."[36] An Art Brut favorite of theirs is former Tavistock abuse victim Kim Nobles whose artwork is prominently featured in both Alefantes' gallery, his Instagram account and Podesta's home depicting sexually traumatized children.[37] For decades the Savile-Salmon-Stoke-Mandeville-Rothschild-Tavistock-DC pedophile network has been globally interconnected through powerful bloodline families, their deep pocket foundations, elitist think tanks, university research centers, major research hospitals and large children's charities as a cherry picked fox guarded pedo-system. And of course all these "benevolent," renowned institutions in turn work hand-in-hand with intelligence services, government institutions, law enforcement, and mainstream media, all heavily infiltrated by secret society membership covertly operating unchallenged and thoroughly protected worldwide as the pedophilia webbed network.

In the 2001 Theroux documentary, Savile the satanic predator even refers to his bed at his Leeds home overlooking Roundhay Park as his "altar"[38] where sacrifices were frequently made.[39] If you view defiling pubescent virgins as sacrificing a child's innocence, then his crime scene bed could well be defined in his twisted, sordid mind as his designated satanic altar. No doubt the Satanist conducted ritual abuse there.

So vile Savile was always planting hide-in-plain-sight clues that only make sense in after-death exposure. He claimed to be Myra's story because they all were practicing the most egregious satanic death and torture rituals that defy every decent human's sensibilities to even fathom much less grasp. There are those who believe he fashioned himself as another demonic wizard like Crowley, utilizing his black magick powers to cast spells on celebrities, *BBC* bosses, politicians, royalty, fans and the entire nation in order to successfully cheat fate and evade exposure.[40] The megalomaniac valued freedom at all cost and the power to be able to do, say or get away with anything that momentarily pleased his whim or fancy, never worrying about paying a consequence. In his words:

> *I am not constrained pretty well by anything. The tough thing in life is ultimate freedom. Ultimate freedom is the big challenge. Now, I've got it. And I can tell you that there's not many of us that's got ultimate freedom.*[41]

During World War II Jimmy Savile was a young man working in the mines of northern England. But as a Mensa member and avid reader of Crowley and the occult, he would freak out his fellow miners. During a TV interview in the 1980s, he boasted:

> *No-one ever did eight hours down the pit and came back as immaculate as they set off with white shirt and everything like that. They were quite convinced I was a witch.*[42]

Jimmy Savile was often photographed in public wearing a wizard's gown, complete with Crowley's 11-pointed star symbolizing his satanic cult.

Yet more evidence that Sir Jimmy the queen's knight was a practicing Luciferian death cult practitioner comes from his activities in Scarborough where he and the former mayor Peter Jaconelli ran a local pedophile ring taken up already in the last chapter. Apparently not all satanic rituals involve the wearing of hooded robes and masks, at least not at the end of certain dalliance rituals. With his likeminded pervs, in an underground chamber Savile is reported to have disrobed and danced naked around a flogging post as part of a secret satanic sex “club” in Whitby, Scarborough, where he lived for many years with his mother.[43] Along with a chamber flogging post, other reported features included a painted pentagram, black candles, restraining shackles and assorted S&M paraphernalia.[44] It’s believed that fellow pedos Savile, Jaconelli and other prominent local figures regularly conducted occult ritual abuse in their subterranean chamber. A local insider stated:

Someone once made a recording of what unfolded and that film is still said to be in existence in DVD form. From what I understand this was not much serious Satanic ritual but celebrities and local dignitaries dancing around naked with a Satanic theme going on.[45]

Serious and hardcore or not, this Scarborough scene sounds awfully familiar, reminiscent of the infamous Bohemian Grove in northern California’s Sonoma County where the elite run around naked in the redwoods at their exclusive, highly guarded summer camp for Luciferian puppet presidents and cohorts. Throughout the world the planetary controllers are bonded by their demonic occult rituals in the form of ceremonial torture, rape and sacrificial murder of children, be it in Scarborough, Scotland’s royal Balmoral Castle,[46] Bohemian Grove,[47] Stoke-Mandeville Hospital or underground milabs.[48]

Another related article from the local publication Real Whitby adds that Savile and “The Club” as the locals called it also partook in satanic ritual abuse ceremonies “on the edge of the moors” just outside Scarborough Borough,[49] perhaps similar to notorious Saddleworth Moor. The four decade run of South Yorkshire Police veteran who retired as acting police chief turned Scarborough Council Leader Councilor Tom Fox is accused of knowing of Savile’s longtime pedo-satanic activities in the area yet turning a blind eye. Of course everywhere the Crowley wannabe wizard went during his confirmed near six decade long crime spree, law enforcement, the *BBC*, government and royalty always had his back because they're all as guilty as Sir Jimmy's sins in their demonic sexual blackmail cesspit.

Jimmy Savile's intimate encounters with satanic killer friends didn't end with Myra Hindley and Ian Brady. Long before he befriended them, he was close to the ruthless pair of pedophile gangsters - the Kray twins, who ran the Jewish mafia out of London's East End during the 1950s and 1960s.[50] Sir Jimmy also often bragged about having pals who were IRA assassins,[51] northern England mobsters and other paramilitary groups as an MI5/MI6 operative and Mossad asset. An insider Brian Palmer responding to an article on the *Coleman Experience* commented:

The police took away masses of paperwork after the death of Jimmy Savile, which was said to have been immediately incinerated, it has been said that a lot of correspondence was in the pile from the ex-Israeli prime minister Menachem Begin whom rumour has it was Savile's main protector.[52]

But a decade after Brady and Hindley were convicted, Savile may well have been a co-participant in the crimes of UK's biggest serial killer - the Yorkshire Ripper who murdered and left two of his victims' bodies on or near Savile's proverbial doorstep and another corpse discarded at Savile Park in Halifax.[53] Till the sicko's death, Savile maintained a longstanding, publicized friendship with Peter Sutcliffe, the Yorkshire Ripper.[54] In northern England around Leeds from 1975 to 1980 Peter Sutcliffe killed at least 13 women, bludgeoned in failed attempts another 7, and was questioned in 17 other attacks on women involving hammers, his favorite lethal weapon aside from his trusty knife and occasional screwdriver.[55] This monster was reportedly once cheated out of some money by a prostitute and her pimp, setting him on his self-delusional Luciferian mission to eradicate as many prostitutes from the earth as possible. In 1981 he was convicted of the 13 murders and punished with 20 concurrent life sentences. A 2013 appeals court ruling dictated that he would never be eligible for parole as the now blind 71-year old paranoid schizophrenic is destined to die in prison as one of the worst serial killers in British history.[56]

While Sutcliffe was serving time at Savile's own Broadmoor high-security psychiatric hospital, thanks to Sir Jimmy, the Ripper enjoyed a morosely twisted celebrity status, especially after Savile tricked former heavyweight boxing champion Frank Bruno into a surprise photo-op shaking hands with the serial killing devil himself as the cunning manipulator smugly looked on.[57]

After a suspended mismanagement of Broadmoor in 1987, the following year Britain's junior health minister Edwina Currie "selected" the totally unqualified volunteer Savile as the task force chairman of the nation's highest security criminal psychiatric hospital.[58] His formal Broadmoor documents included his false title "Dr. Jimmy Savile, OBE, KCSG, LLD."[59] For Britain's Health Minister, Kenneth Clarke, accused of sexually assaulting a teenager[60] and confirmed pedophile protector,[61] to assign the serial predator in such official capacity demonstrates Savile's immense power and reach high up into Britain's Thatcher government (fully covered in Chapter 22),[62] further implicating that a national pedophile enabling network within the UK government was fully operational.

Calling himself "Governor," the celebrated predator was awarded his own plush office at Broadmoor, his own sleeping quarters, gold plated keys, and full run of the institution.[63] Ensuring that his friend Sutcliffe's incarceration was a cushy accommodation, even after he killed and left for dead 20 women, Sir Jimmy immediately lobbied for coed access so his buddy could enjoy sex with female fellow inmates.[64] One of Sutcliffe's nearby cellmates for six years stated that Savile would regularly have tea with the Ripper inside his quarters, locked in spellbound conversation for hours on end.[65] Nurses commented that they heard Savile's belly laughs coming from Sutcliffe's room reacting to the Ripper's sick jokes as the likeminded predators were obviously bonding.[66] The serial pedophile would often boast how he was such a big shot at Broadmoor, able to get 60 violent mentally ill patients, some convicted murderers released.[67] Fortunately, two years after Savile's death, the court made certain that was not going to happen for the Ripper.

But it turns out that Savile and Sutcliffe didn't just meet at Broadmoor. Just like the Moors murderers, back in Savile's hometown of Leeds when the Ripper was still a free man on the loose during his reign of terror, Sir Jimmy was already apparently friends with Sutcliffe.[68] When the murderer was questioned by police, Sutcliffe even mentioned Jimmy Savile by name.[69] Because Ripper victims sustained bite marks on their chests and bodies, the Leeds police even sent for Savile's dental imprint for analysis. With two of the victims' bodies discovered so close to Sir Jimmy's penthouse property and Savile known to have liaisons with local prostitutes, the most famous Leeds resident at one time was considered a suspect and possible accomplice.[70] Additionally, both whackos shared an unquenchable obsession for dead bodies.[71]

Former detective John Stainthorpe worked on the Yorkshire Ripper investigation. Based on tips from the public, the lawman not only confirmed Savile was briefly a suspect, but he also stated:

Child perverts soon become child killers.[72]

Professor David Wilson, head of criminology at Birmingham City University and former prison officer, draws a striking parallel between the known serial pedophile Savile and the known serial killer Sutcliffe:

> *Both inhabited a world where men were encouraged to take what they wanted by force and where girls and women were seen as things to be used and then discarded. They used sex and violence instead of intimacy to express their inner demons - the need to be powerful and to control girls and women.*[73]

The prospect of Savile being a serial killer was so strong that a year after the pedophile’s death another leading criminologist, Dr. Ian Stephen, urged police to investigate Savile as a suspect in cold case murders and missing persons investigations around the nation:

> *It is possible that he* [Savile] *upped the game, that he needed to get that buzz from getting away with it, and the question is does he increase it? There is always that risk with people who are sensation seekers, they sometimes get bored and raise it and the possibilities are there.*[74]

In 2001 while agitated over documentarian Louis Theroux’s questioning about his pedophile rumors and secretly recording Savile bragging about his criminal exploits as a nightclub boss in Leeds, Savile threateningly blurted out:

> *I mean, he was having a go to try and get a bit of salacious TV so of course I suddenly drop into Godfather mode. If he wants to die, he can die. He won't be the first that I've put away.*[75]

This utterance is both an aggressive threat and outright boastful confession to murder. Yet there’s more.

Alleged Savile victim, 46-year old Georgina Martin, maintains that Jimmy Savile began sexually assaulting her when she was just 13, and continued allegedly having his way at least 20 more times over the next three years.[76] Near certain that Savile impregnated her at 16, she contends that her now 29-year old daughter is Savile’s. While the mother and daughter want a DNA test to confirm whether the daughter’s father is Savile, neither claim they seek financial compensation. Georgina stated that as soon as she told Savile she was pregnant, he angrily wanted nothing more to do with her. Another impregnated 16-year old victim was instructed by the infamous rapist to threaten suicide if not granted an abortion.[77]

During Georgina’s three year sexually abusive relationship, Georgina maintains that she learned extremely disturbing information about Savile that police would still find useful:

> *He told me so many warped secrets and let me in on things I now realize are significant to detectives investigating what he did. I have tried to blot it out of my mind, but I can’t. I know more about him than the police know. He was obsessed with death and with the Yorkshire Ripper, Peter Sutcliffe. He would always tell me how he had to be careful, especially with the ‘birds.’ When we went out in his car he would point out spots where dead bodies had been found and claim the Ripper had* ***not been working alone****. He told me he had been questioned by police after the body of a young girl was found near his home covered in* ***bite marks*** [just like Georgina admitted he gave her]. *Jimmy said they had made him hand over a sample bite mark. But he was always bragging about how* ***he was protected*** *and had people who looked after him.*[78] [Emboldened text added for emphasis]

In yet another possible murder at the hands of the “national treasure,” in June 2014 a man claiming he was sexually abused by Sir Jimmy as a boy in the 1960s while living at Roecliffe Manor, a convalescent children’s home in Leicestershire, stated that he saw Jimmy Savile dragging off a girl from the group home that turned up the following day dead.[79] Also two alleged suicides of female patients victimized by Savile at Broadmoor in part can be attributed to Britain’s most prolific pedophile.[80]

As the Jimmy Savile scandal broke in late 2012, stories from firsthand accounts of the Satanist’s love of dead bodies also began circulating. Just weeks after the bombshell of the *ITV* Savile Exposure doc, *BBC* DJ colleague Paul Gambaccini whose office in the 70s was next door to Savile’s, on a Radio 5 interview declared Sir Jimmy was a necrophiliac.[81] He said he’d heard about the claims in the 1980s. Paul cites certain news outlets as hypocrites for bragging they knew of this disturbing side of his pathology ten years earlier but remained silent. Gambaccini then questions how Savile was knighted by the queen when every sir gets vetted by MI5. That all these insiders were all too aware of Savile’s despicably deviant crimes yet poured accolades on him right to the end only goes to show that the VIP pedos in power were simply protecting one of their own.

In his many decades as a porter at Leeds General Infirmary and Stoke-Mandeville Hospitals, Sir Jimmy maintained unsupervised free access to the morgues, at Leeds from the late 1970s to the mid-1990s[82] and at Stoke-Mandeville as early as 1954, just three years into his volunteer position there.[83] His celebrity status and psychopathic nature ensured befriending the hospital chief mortician so that his inordinate amount of volunteer time spent down there hanging with the dead was never in question. It also came out that he bragged about his necro-exploits to other hospital staff. A former Broadmoor nurse maintains that Savile claimed he performed sex acts with the bodies, performing oral sex on them and placing fresh pre-rigor mortis corpses into lewd positions for sick pics. The nurse expounded:

He [Savile] *was saying that* ***they*** *used to put the bodies together, male and female, and he also said that* ***they*** *took* *photographs and also that he got involved in some of the photographs.*[84] (Emboldened for emphasis)

Note the plural pronoun "they," meaning that Savile engaged in these perversions with others, implicating again especially with distribution of photographs, the probability of a wider necrophilia ring. Another witness reported that Sir Jimmy noticed him peering at his bulbous rings on his hand and then boasted:

'D'you know what they are? They are glass eyes from dead bodies in Leeds mortuary where I work and I love working there, and I wheel the dead bodies around at night and I love that.'[85]

A night porter witnessed Savile wheeling a just deceased 4-year old's body into the Stoke-Mandeville morgue. A former therapist said that he had been told that sicko Savile was caught in the act:

Trying to have sexual intercourse with dead bodies in the hospital mortuary.

In a 1990 interview with *Q Magazine*, Savile spoke of his volunteer work as a Stoke-Mandeville porter:

One of my jobs is to take away the deceased. You can look after somebody, be alone with somebody, who has lived a whole lifetime, and I'm just saying goodbye and looking after him. That is a privilege and an honour. Some people get hold of the fact that Jim likes looking after cadavers and say, 'Aha, Jim's a necrophiliac!' I'm not a necrophiliac.[86]

Famous last words… A vicious satanic ritual abuser of children and pimping procurer to the powerful, serial predator of anything that moves, and even the lifeless that can't move, big or small, young or old, male or female, it never mattered as long as his victims were the most vulnerable, infirm and defenseless. Ever on the prowl, he was always ready to pounce. Savile's rapturous best five days ever were admittedly spent alone with his rotting corpse of a mother he called Duchess.[87] Savile's penchant for partnership-in-crime with his best buddies Ian, Myra and Ripper and their mutual fascination for making dead bodies makes him their likely accomplice and co-murderer.

With the binding thread that runs through Satanism, Luciferianism, 33 or higher degreed Freemasonry, the Illuminati, and the other numerous elite secret societies is systematic ritual child abuse, torture and sacrifice. Not surprising is a revealing photo at Sir Jimmy's funeral showing an inordinate number of freemasons in attendance.[88] Demonic infiltrators cherry picked to occupy enough top positions in government, military, media, law enforcement, judiciary, education, entertainment, religion, business, organized crime and social services guarantee that VIP pedophiles continue getting away with child rape and murder. Jimmy Savile was a unique common link straddling virtually all of these interlocking institutional components to UK's pedophilia network. Savile was also a British intelligence operative.[89] In his words:

I am like a sewing machine needle that goes in here and goes in there, but I am also the eminence grise: the grey, shadowy figure in the background. The thing about me is I get things done and I work under cover.[90]

Psychologist Oliver James points out that Sir Jimmy Savile possessed the dark triad of personality characteristics – psychopathy, Machiavellianism and narcissism.[91] Savile utilized his shrewdly keen intelligence to figure out others' weaknesses in his compulsive need to exploit, shock, control and hurt powerless victims. Devoid of emotion other than anger, he had no capacity to feel compassion or empathy toward others. His world revolved completely around him, and his grandiose need to inflate his own self-importance and ruthless power over others universally drove his every action motivated by a self-serving means to an end, using his "tireless" charity fundraising to predatorily access children buffered by a firewall façade of philanthropic benevolence. Savile's quirky "charm" ingratiated himself to VIP elite, facilitating alliances with prime ministers and future kings, predicated by a Luciferian pact based on sexual blackmail secrecy, a conditional, self-serving loyalty to Lucifer and self-preservation, and insulated, above-the-law firewall protection.[92]

The massive compilation of evidence of his "deep cover" damage and depravity that this monster got away with is incredible. His reign of terror was appalling, a nonstop incriminating history of circumstantial pieces to a nightmarish puzzle that together forms a composite whole - a lifetime substantiation that something wicked and foul this way came. His contribution to the British VIP pedophilia network has wreaked untold damage in the depraved business of torturing, abusing and murdering kids' souls and lives, not to mention those ill-fated victims who crossed paths with UK's most infamous, bloodthirsty serial killers that invariably became Savile's best friends. This creepy court jester performer had next to no real or close friends as many who knew him best hardly knew him at all. The famous showboat, eccentric loner possessed far reaching social tentacles that afforded him unbridled access to the royal palaces, the halls of government and every entertainment stage. But the more one digs into the demented, diabolical Jimmy Savile, the more it appears by his closest company that the nation's most prolific serial pedophile was also a serial killer. As pathologically belligerent and twisted as he was in his psychopathically driven Luciferian marathon of a crime spree, consumed by dead corpses, killing and killers, and compulsively mauling young flesh galore, live or putrefying, from plentiful firsthand accounts, it seems fair to conclude that Sir Jimmy, the national treasure, participated in murder with the Ripper, possibly the Moors duo as well as possibly on his own. After all, he himself proudly proclaimed to the world:

I am the Myra Hindley story.

Next comes what happens to those who know too much. Anyone inside the *BBC* [or out] that learned of Sir Jimmy's colossal crimes, the pervasive *BBC* cover-up and Savile's procuring child victims to princes and prime ministers, became a lethal liability threat to the cabal and were silenced one way or another.

Notes

---

[1] "Cliff Richard, Jimmy Savile, Myra Hindley" *aangirfan.com*, September 21, 2015, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2015/09/cliff-richard-jimmy-savile-myra-hindley.html.

[2] Tom Evans, "Moors murders: Jimmy Savile part of 'paedo ring with Ian Brady and Myra Hindley,'" *Daily Star*, September 21, 2017, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/624549/Moors-murders-Jimmy-Savile-Ian-Brady-Myra-Hindley-paedophile-child-killers-Saddleworth-BBC

[3] Duncan Staff, "Dangerous Liaison," *The Guardian*, October 14, 2006, https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2006/oct/14/ukcrime.weekend7.

[4] Tom Evans, "Revealed: Secret Government Plans to Release Moors Murderers Ian Brady and Myra Hindley," *Daily Star*, July 20, 2017, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/631225/Moors-murderers-Ian-Brady-Myra-Hindley-released-plans-Margaret-Thatcher-Leon-Brittan .

[5] Cliodhna Russell, "The Stories of the Five Children Tortured and Murdered by Ian Brady and Myra Hindley," *The Journal*, May 20, 2017, http://www.thejournal.ie/moors-murders-ian-brady-3393430-May2017/.

[6] David Trayner, "Ian Brady and Myra Hindley 'Killed Seven more – and these are their names,'" *Daily Star*, June 12, 2017, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/620737/ian-brady-myra-hindley-funeral-death-moors-murders-victims-Jennifer-Tighe-Susan-Ormrod.

[7] Alan Keightly, "'If I said what she really did, she wouldn't get out of Prison in 100 years': Gloating over their Victim's Grave, the Picture Ian Brady said Proves Myra Hindley enjoyed Killing just as much as him," *Daily Mail*, May 17, 2017, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4516340/Picture-Ian-Brady-said-PROVES-Myra-Hindley-enjoyed-killing.html.

[8] Tom Evans, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/624549/Moors-murders-Jimmy-Savile-Ian-Brady-Myra-Hindley-paedophile-child-killers-Saddleworth-BBC.

[9] Duncan Staff, https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2006/oct/14/ukcrime.weekend7.

[10] “Longford: Official Trailer,” YouTube video, 01:47, posted July 20, 2018, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Fyklb79haec.

[11] Fritz Springmeier, *13 Bloodlines of the Illuminati*, (Ambassador House, 1998), “The Astor Bloodline,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/bloodlines/astor.htm.

[12] Robert McCrum, “Myra Hindley and David Astor: a Complex Relationship Revealed in Letters,” *The Guardian*, October 28, 2012, https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2012/oct/28/myra-hindley-david-astor-letters.

[13] Tom Evans, “Myra Hindley Exposed as a ‘Practising Witch’ whose Occult Links lead to Jimmy Savile,” *Daily Star*, July 30, 2017, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/632592/Moors-murders-Myra-Hindley-witchcraft-Ian-Brady-Jimmy-Savile-Saddleworth-Moor-Manchester.

[14] Tom Evans, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/624549/Moors-murders-Jimmy-Savile-Ian-Brady-Myra-Hindley-paedophile-child-killers-Saddleworth-BBC.

[15] “Spot the Paedo Child Killers and Myra Hindle is still Alive?” *spidercatweb.blog*, February 20, 2016, https://spidercatweb.blog/2016/02/20/spot-the-paedo-child-killers-yes-myra-hindley-is-alive/.

[16] Andrew Dilks, “Satanic Paedophile Rings Linked to Government? Jim’ll 666 it for you,” *disinfo.com*, January 23, 2013, http://disinfo.com/2013/01/satanic-paedophile-rings-linked-to-government-jimll-666-it-for-you/.

[17] Jan Colley and Cathy Gordon, “Twisted Child Killer Ian Brady wanted Classical Music Piece ‘full of Witches, Sorcerers and Monsters’ at his Funeral,” *Mirror*, October 13, 2017, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/moors-murderer-ian-bradys-body-11335419.

[18] Robert Mendick and Laura Donnelly, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9623109/Jimmy-Savile-Secret-of-BBCs-first-sex-scandal.html.

[19] Robert Mendick and Laura Donnelly, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9623109/Jimmy-Savile-Secret-of-BBCs-first-sex-scandal.html.

[20] Alan Keightly, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4516340/Picture-Ian-Brady-said-PROVES-Myra-Hindley-enjoyed-killing.html.

[21] Robert Mendick and Laura Donnelly, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9623109/Jimmy-Savile-Secret-of-BBCs-first-sex-scandal.html.

[22] Patrick Hill, "Pervert MP Cyril Smith was Pals with Satanic Child Sex Monster," *Mirror*, January 19, 2013, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/pervert-mp-cyril-smith-pals-1546290.

[23] James Murray and Jack Fielding, "'We can't Prove Sex with Children does them Harm' says Labour-linked NCCL," *Express*, March 2, 2014, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/462604/We-can-t-prove-sex-with-children-does-them-harm-says-Labour-linked-NCCL.

[24] Martin Robinson, "Letter from Paedophile Group links Harriet Harman and Patricia Hewitt to it AFTER they said it had been Marginalised," *Daily Mail*, March 7, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2575505/Letter-paedophile-group-links-Harriet-Harman-Patricia-Hewitt-AFTER-said-marginalised.html.

[25] "Harriet Harman," *whale.to*, http://whale.to/c/harriet_harman.html.

[26] James Fielding, "Jimmy Savile was part of Satanic Ring," *Express*, January 13, 2013, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/370439/Jimmy-Savile-was-part-of-satanic-ring.

[27] Josh Halliday and Sandra Laville, "Jimmy Savile Abused 60 People at Stoke Mandeville Hospital, Inquiry finds," *The Guardian*, February 26, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2015/feb/26/jimmy-savile-abuse-stoke-mandeville-hospital-inquiry.

[28] James Fielding, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/370439/Jimmy-Savile-was-part-of-satanic-ring.

[29] James Fielding, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/370439/Jimmy-Savile-was-part-of-satanic-ring.

[30] "Stoke-Mandeville Hospital Paedophile Ring – Sir Jimmy Savile, Dr. Michael Salmon, Dreamflight Charity," *goodnessandharmony.wordpress.com*, January 3, 2017, https://goodnessandharmony.wordpress.com/2017/01/03/stoke-mandeville-hospital-paedophile-ring-sir-jimmy-savile-dr-michael-salmon-dr-bruce-bailey-dr-john-narendran-dreamflight-charity/.

[31] Mark Duell, "Paedophile Consultant, 81, who believed he was 'Bomb Proof' is Jailed for four and half years for Sexually Assaulting Girls as young as eight in the same Hospital where Jimmy Saville Abused Children," *Daily Mail*, December 19, 2016, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4048236/Paedophile-consultant-81-believed-bomb-proof-jailed-four-half-years-sexually-assaulting-girls-young-eight-hospital-Jimmy-Saville-abused-children.html.

[32] "Pervert Doctor Tried to Commit Suicide before 1990 Abuse Trial," *Berkhamsted & Tring Gazette*, February 6, 2015, https://www.berkhamstedtoday.co.uk/news/backgrounder-pervert-doctor-had-tried-to-commit-suicide-before-1990-abuse-trial-1-6566491.

[33] Vicky Smith, "Michael Salmon Trial: Children's Doctor 'Drugged and Gang-Raped Seriously Ill Young Girl' in Hospital, *Mirror*, January 6, 2015, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/michael-salmon-trial-childrens-doctor-4928755.

[34] "Rothschild Worked Closely with Convicted Pedophile Doctor from Stoke Mandeville after he was Convicted," *svvordfish.blogspot.com*, August 20, 2018, http://svvordfish.blogspot.com/2018/08/rothschild-worked-closely-with.html.

[35] "Rothschild Worked Closely with Convicted Pedophile Doctor from Stoke Mandeville after he was Convicted," http://svvordfish.blogspot.com/2018/08/rothschild-worked-closely-with.html.

[36] "Rothschild Worked Closely with Convicted Pedophile Doctor from Stoke Mandeville after he was Convicted," http://svvordfish.blogspot.com/2018/08/rothschild-worked-closely-with.html.

[37] Ken Ammi, "Kim Noble's Dissociative Identity Disorder Tortuous Pedophilia Paintings," *True Free Thinker*, http://www.truefreethinker.com/articles/kim-noble%E2%80%99s-dissociative-identity-disorder-tortuous-pedophilia-paintings.

[38] "Quotes," https://www.imdb.com/title/tt0304938/quotes.

[39] Kathryn Snowden, "Louis Theroux Speaks to Jimmy Savile's Victims in New Documentary 16 Years after Landmark Film," *Huffington Post*, February 10, 2016, https://www.huffingtonpost.co.uk/entry/louis-theroux-jimmy-savile-victims-new-documentary-16-years-after-landmark-film_uk_57f0e066e4b00e5804f165b7?guccounter=1.

[40] Patrick Knox, "Jimmy Savile 'Occultist Witch who Worshipped Satanist Aleister Crowley,'" *Daily Star*, September 17, 2016, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/546207/conspiracy-theory-paedophile-jimmy-savile-wizard-satanist-new-aleister-crowley.

[41] Patrick Knox, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/546207/conspiracy-theory-paedophile-jimmy-savile-wizard-satanist-new-aleister-crowley.

[42] Patrick Knox, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/546207/conspiracy-theory-paedophile-jimmy-savile-wizard-satanist-new-aleister-crowley.

[43] Dominic Gover, 'Satanic Jimmy Savile Wore Devil Robes at Scarborough Sex Club,' *International Business Times,* February 25, 2013, https://ixquick-proxy.com/do/spg/proxy.

[44] “Savile: North Yorks Police/Council Cover-up?” Real Whitby, November 5, 2012, http://www.real-whitby.co.uk/savile-north-yorks-policecouncil-cover-up/.

[45] Dominic Gover, https://ixquick-proxy.com/do/spg/proxy.

[46] Mark Watts and Keir Mudie, “VIP Paedophile Ring ‘Abused Boy Inside Buckingham Palace and Balmoral Castle,” *Mirror*, November 29, 2014, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/vip-paedophile-ring-abused-teenage-4721479.

[47] Richard Enos, “Why do the Elites Participate in Child Sacrifice at Bohemian Grove?” *Collective Evolution*, July 6, 2018, https://www.collective-evolution.com/2018/07/06/why-do-the-elites-participate-in-child-sacrifice-at-bohemian-grove/?utm_source=feedburner&utm_medium=email&utm_campaign=Feed%3A+Collective-evolution+%28Collective+Evolution%29.

[48] “MiLabs, Underground Bases, DNA Activation, The Unveiling,” *augtellez.wordpress.com*, https://augtellez.wordpress.com/milabs/.

[49] “Savile – And other Party Animals,” *Real Whitby*, November 11, 2012, http://www.real-whitby.co.uk/savile-and-other-party-animals/.

[50] “Jimmy Savile, the Kray Twins, Ian Brady, Hampstead, Cliff Richard,” *aangirfan.com*, November 5, 2015, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2015/11/jimmy-savile-kray-twins-ian-brady.html.

[51] James Saville, “Jimmy Savile and the IRA: Predator Boasted Terrorist Friends could have Enemies Hospitalised,” *Mirror*, October 20, 2012, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jimmy-savile-ira-predator-boasted-1389710.

[52] “Mossad’s Links to Filthy Britain,” *whale.to*, http://whale.to/c/what_do_we.html.

[53] Emma Reynolds and Anna Edwards, *Daily Mail*, November 8, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2229786/Jimmy-Savile-Yorkshire-Ripper-Cast-DJs-teeth-check-bites-left-Peter-Sutcliffes-victims.html.

[54] George Clarke, “Ripper and Savile’s afternoon Tea: Inside the Sick Pair’s Weird Relationship,” *Daily Star*, August 7, 2016, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/535953/Jimmy-Savile-Peter-Sutcliffe-Yorkshire-Ripper-Broadmoor-friends-Frank-Bruno-handshake .

[55] Josie Griffiths and Sofia Petkar, “Peter Sutcliffe, is the Yorkshire Ripper still in Prison, how old is he and how many Women did he Kill?” *The Sun*, March 25, 2018, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/2431418/peter-sutcliffe-yorkshire-ripper-prison-murder-blinded/.

[56] Andrew Hough, “Britain’s Worst Serial Killers,” *The Telegraph*, July 16, 2010, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/7893975/Britains-worst-serial-killers.html.

[57] Sanchez Manning, “Frank Bruno Reveals how Sick Jimmy Savile Tricked him into Shaking Hands with Serial Killer Peter Sutcliffe,” *Mirror*, November 11, 2012, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jimmy-savile-frank-bruno-reveals-1430910.

[58] Claire Ellicott, “Jimmy Savile ‘was given Key Position at Broadmoor and even personally Selected Hospital's bosses,’” *Daily Mail*, October 28, 2013, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2478143/Jimmy-Savile-given-key-position-Broadmoor-personally-selected-hospitals-bosses.html.

[59] Vicky Smith, “Jimmy Savile: Broadmoor Gang's Sex Abuse Ring Linked to Former DJ as Arrests Expected, *Mirror*, June 8, 2014, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jimmy-savile-broadmoor-gangs-sex-3663459.

[60] “Ken Clarke 'Groping' Accuser found not Guilty of making a False Claim,” *The Telegraph*, July 30, 2015, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/law-and-order/11773588/Ken-Clarke-groping-accuser-found-not-guilty-of-making-a-false-claim.html.

[61] David Barrett, “Kenneth Clarke 'Failed to Act' over Lord Janner and Cyril Smith Child Abuse Tip-offs,” *The Telegraph*, March 8, 2016, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/child-protection/12188024/Kenneth-Clarke-failed-to-act-over-Lord-Janner-and-Cyril-Smith-child-abuse-tip-offs.html.

[62] Stephen Moyes, Alex West and Leigh Holmwood, “Jimmy Savile given the Keys to Broadmoor under Ken Clarke,” *The Sun*, October 13, 2012, https://www.thesun.co.uk/archives/news/986453/jimmy-savile-given-the-keys-to-broadmoor-under-ken-clarke/.

[63] Anna Edwards, “Former Detective makes Shock Claims that Jimmy Savile was Quizzed over Yorkshire Ripper Murders,” *Daily Mail*, November 6, 2012, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2228814/Jimmy-Savile-quizzed-Yorkshire-Ripper-murders.html.

[64] Aaron Tinney, “Jimmy Savile’s Plea to get Sex for the Ripper,” *The Sun*, November 9, 2012, https://www.thesun.co.uk/archives/news/1033419/jimmy-saviles-plea-to-get-sex-for-the-yorkshire-ripper/.

[65] George Clarke, “Ripper and Savile’s Afternoon Tea: Inside the Sick Pair’s Weird Relationship,” *Daily Record*, August 7, 2016, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/535953/Jimmy-Savile-Peter-Sutcliffe-Yorkshire-Ripper-Broadmoor-friends-Frank-Bruno-handshake .

[66] Patrick Henningsen, “Savile’s Travels: How Sir Jimmy was Fingered as Peter Sutcliffe’s Accomplice,” *21st Century Wire*, November 5, 2012, https://21stcenturywire.com/2012/11/05/saviles-travels-how-sir-jimmy-was-fingered-as-peter-sutcliffes-accomplice/.

[67] Vicky Smith, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jimmy-savile-broadmoor-gangs-sex-3663459.

[68] George Clarke, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/535953/Jimmy-Savile-Peter-Sutcliffe-Yorkshire-Ripper-Broadmoor-friends-Frank-Bruno-handshake.

[69] “Yorkshire Murders,” *upsd.co.uk*, February 19, 2013, http://www.upsd.co.uk/yorkshire-ripper/.

[70] Patrick Henningsen, https://21stcenturywire.com/2012/11/05/saviles-travels-how-sir-jimmy-was-fingered-as-peter-sutcliffes-accomplice/.

[71] Patrick Henningsen, https://21stcenturywire.com/2012/11/05/saviles-travels-how-sir-jimmy-was-fingered-as-peter-sutcliffes-accomplice/.

[72] John Hall, “’Child Perverts soon become Child Killers’: Jimmy Savile was Questioned by Police over Yorkshire Ripper Murders, *Independent*, November 7, 2012, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/child-perverts-soon-become-child-killers-jimmy-savile-was-questioned-by-police-over-yorkshire-ripper-8290236.html.

[73] Aaron Tinney, “Savile and the Ripper,” *The Sun*, November 4, 2012, https://www.thesun.co.uk/archives/news/1025333/savile-and-the-ripper/.

[74] Ben Borland, *Express*, October 28, 2012, www.express.co.uk/news/uk/354874/Savile-Did-he-admit-murder.

[75] Ben Borland, “Savile: Did he Admit Murder?” www.express.co.uk/news/uk/354874/Savile-Did-he-admit-murder.

[76] Matthew Drake, “Jimmy Savile’s Secret Daughter: ‘Mum was Abused by Monster - I Fear he is my Father,’” *Mirror*, February 21, 2015, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jimmy-saviles-secret-daughter-mum-5207352.

[77] Chris Greenwood and Martin Robinson, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2670444/Jimmy-Savile-abused-corpses-boasted-jewellery-glass-eyes-NHS-report-reveals-shocking-new-details-paedophiles-crimes.html.

[78] Matthew Drake, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jimmy-saviles-secret-daughter-mum-5207352.

[79] Richard Hartley-Parkinson, “Was Jimmy Savile involved in Death of Young Girl? New Police Probe into Pervert DJ,” *Mirror*, June 27, 2014, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/sickening-extent-jimmy-saviles-full-3769301.

[80] Jonathon Corke, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/386307/Sick-DJ-Jimmy-Savile-linked-to-five-mystery-deaths-and-calalogue-of-suicides.

[81] Larisa Brown, “Savile Sex Scandal Hits Horrific new Low as Former Colleague Paul Gambaccini Claims on Radio Five Live that DJ was a 'Necrophiliac,'” *Daily Mail*, October 23, 2012, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2221922/Jimmy-Savile-necrophiliac-says-colleague-Paul-Gambaccini.html.

[82] Josh Halliday, “Savile told Hospital Staff he Performed Sex Acts on Corpses in Leeds Mortuary,” *The Guardian*, June 26, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2014/jun/26/savile-bodies-sex-acts-corpses-glass-eyes-mortuary.

[83] Steve Robson and David Collins, “Jimmy Savile ‘seen having Sex with Bodies and Wheeling Body of four-year-old in Pram into Hospital Mortuary,’” *Mirror*, February 26, 2015, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jimmy-savile-seen-having-sex-5234283.

[84] Josh Halliday, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2014/jun/26/savile-bodies-sex-acts-corpses-glass-eyes-mortuary.

[85] Josh Halliday, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2014/jun/26/savile-bodies-sex-acts-corpses-glass-eyes-mortuary.

[86] Larisa Brown, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2221922/Jimmy-Savile-necrophiliac-says-colleague-Paul-Gambaccini.html

[87] Patrick Hill, “Paedophile Jimmy Savile Believed his Mother ‘never Trusted him’ and expected he'd be Jailed,” *Mirror*, February 6, 2016, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/paedophile-jimmy-savile-believed-mother-7277712.

[88] “Sir Jimmy Savile the Establishment’s Favourite Paedophile,” *The Truth*, http://www.charliefoulkes.co.uk/truth/savile.html.

[89] “Cover-up; CIA, Mossad, MI5, MI6,; Savile and Jaconelli; Amsterdam Sex,” *aangirfan.com*, November 7, 2014, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/11/cover-up-cia-mossad-mi5-mi6-savile-and.html.

[90] Alison Boshoff, “Jim the Fixer: Is Jimmy Savile just a Fantasist… or is the Truth even Stranger than Fiction?” *Daily Mail*, May 9, 2008, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/femail/article-565179/Jim-fixer-Is-Jimmy-Savile-just-fantasist---truth-stranger-fiction.html#ixzz29NUVHMYp.

[91] Oliver James, “Inside the Mind of Jimmy Savile,” *The Guardian*, June 26, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2014/jun/26/inside-the-mind-of-jimmy-savile.

[92] “Jimmy Savile: Who was Protecting him for Decades, and why?” *thedarknessmustend.blogspot.com*, March 28, 2013, https://thisdarknessmustend.blogspot.com/2013/03/jimmy-savile-who-was-protecting-him-for.html.

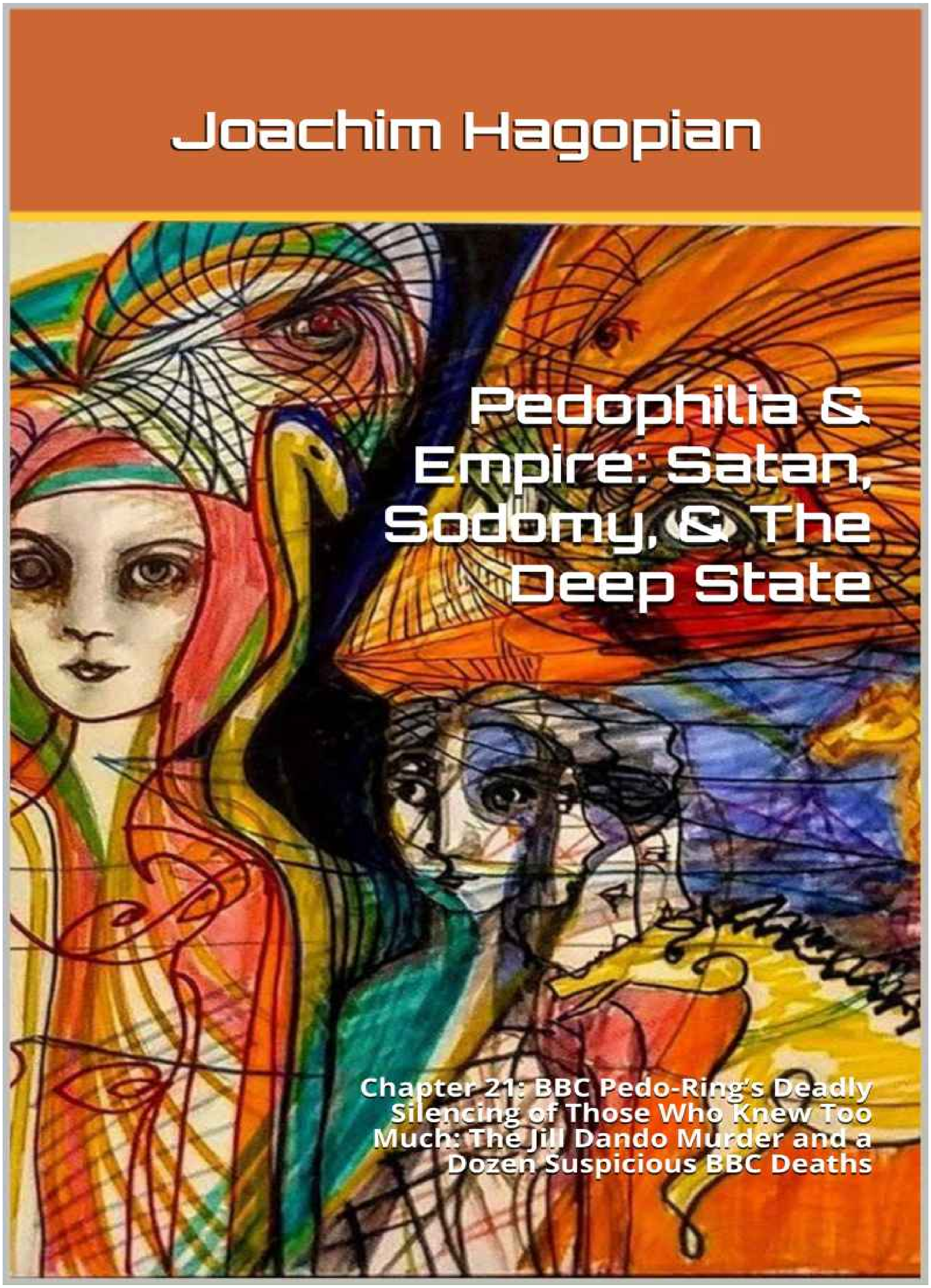

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 21: BBC Pedo-Ring's Deadly Silencing of Those Who Knew Too Much: The Jill Dando Murder and a Dozen Suspicious BBC Deaths

Chapter 21: BBC Pedo-Ring’s Deadly Silencing of Those Who Knew Too Much: The Jill Dando Murder and a Dozen Suspicious BBC Deaths

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission **http://www.noramaccoby.com/**

In addition to colluding police forces and the government’s gross incompetence investigating Savile by intentional design, Savile’s *BBC* sex ring, his VIP pedophilia network and UK police are also equally inept at solving over a dozen high profile murder cases and suspicious deaths surrounding *BBC* personnel. Of course that’s also by sinister design. Again, the explanation is plain to see when heads of UK’s largest police forces and *British Broadcasting Corporation* are controlled by the pedophile infiltrated British Establishment in government and royalty, secretly bound additionally by demonic brotherhood societies like Freemasonry, Knights of Malta, the Jesuits and Luciferian Illuminati.

The next important endeavor is to delve deeply into scrutinizing some of the mysterious deaths and unsolved murders at the *BBC* over recent decades that Britain’s law enforcement just can’t seem to crack. Here is a “short list” of the more than dozen known unexplained or highly questionable deaths and murders of *BBC* employees that repeatedly keep coming up. In addition to the aforementioned suicide of Claire McAlpine from Chapter 18, other more recent cases include Kevin Greening, Kristian Digby, David Smith, Paula Yates, Peaches Geldof, Natasha Collins, Mark Speight, Mike Smith, Rik Mayall, Terry Wogan, Jill Dando and Liz MacKean.

Kevin Greening was a former *BBC* Radio 1 breakfast DJ whose life was cut short on the eve of his 45th birthday on December 29, 2007.[1] Westminster Coroner Dr. Paul

Knapman ruled the cause of death the result of “sexual misadventure” involving drugs and bondage between Kevin and his homosexual partner. The press accounts did not elaborate beyond stating it included gaffer tape and cling film wrapped around Kevin’s torso while wearing a rubber suit suspended in a black leather sling from bedroom scaffolding. It’s either as purported a kinky gay sexual experiment recklessly pushing the thrill envelope beyond the safety zone, or a concocted, bizarrely twisted tale of sinister cover-up designed to offend all conventional sensibilities enough to not prompt further question or investigation. The coroner Dr. Knapman is reportedly infamous as the elite’s go-to cause of death fabricator whose reported primary purpose is to conceal British establishment crimes. But there’s plenty more dirt on him later.

Yet another *BBC* presenter meeting a similar, equally disastrous fate in the realm of solo gay kink comes the alleged “sexual misadventures” of property development millionaire 32-year old Kristian Digby who died on March 1, 2010 of asphyxiation.[2] He too was a high flying thrill seeker but with his partner out of town, he fatally succumbed after wearing a plastic bag over his head when his apparent “sex game went wrong.” If foul play was involved, it’d be easy to pass this one off as simply another careless joyride into hedonism gone awry.

Taking each so called accidental misadventure at face value, it might be considered a stretch to attribute cause of death to the *BBC* pedophilia network. But when taken together, the odds of so many high profile, strange, anomalous, sudden deaths afflicting so many relatively young *BBC* employees seems beyond extremely remote. And knowing that the pedo-cabal has an agenda that reserves no limit to covering up its crimes at all cost, together they cast a long dark, nefarious shadow of suspicion hanging over all these mysterious deaths.

A strong case that fits both means and motive for foul play is another Savile pedophile chauffeur, most likely suicided the day before he was scheduled to face trial on sexual abuse charges in 2013.[3] The 67-year old *BBC* chauffeur David Smith who drove for Jimmy Savile back in the 1980s was a definite liability to the pedo-cabal as a low rung lackey whose insider knowledge could potentially bring some of the top rung pedo-monsters down… so it seems he was conveniently “suicided” on the eve of his court appearance in late October 2013.

This degenerate suddenly wound up dead on the one year anniversary of Operation Yewtree’s first suspect roundup. But then this is Standard Operating Procedure in high stakes Cloak and Daggery 101, eliminate any and all liability in order for the Luciferian child raping murderers to stay in power, to keep raping and murdering our children with impunity. Granted, there is a slim possibility that Smith acted alone, knowing he was facing more serious jail time, opting to snuff himself at the last minute. But the stronger means and motive slant towards execution-style suicide by the powers-that-shouldn’t-be cannot be ignored.

Protecting the *BBC*’s criminality as part of the larger pedo-cabal network can’t be emphasized enough, especially when the precedent has been repeatedly in place from time immemorial. It’s already a well-established fact - an inordinate number of *BBC* employees suddenly drop dead who clearly pose a threat to the wider pedophilia network for knowing too much. By 2013, to silence perceived threats, Deep State political assassination by a “suicided” staged accident or artificially induced heart attack has become all too common.[4] Smith’s “suicide” by foul play is an extremely plausible, realistic explanation, after a long string of “too weird” deaths plaguing *BBC* staff.

With 22 previous convictions dating as far back as 1966 under Smith’s pedo-belt,[5] and having driven Savile around

London town for years, a sure bet is that this repeat offender took many dark secrets to his grave in another flimsily veiled case of “dead men don’t tell tales.”

But how can the UK legal system drop the ball, allowing a known relentless reoffender continue getting caught raping little boys nearly two dozen times? This creature should have been permanently removed and locked away from society to protect children after his second offence, not his 22nd. Of course if he was protected by a VIP pedophilia network, 22 convictions suddenly make a lot more sense. Another anomaly, the *Daily Mail* suicide headline states that Smith was the very first pedophile charged out of the Yewtree starting gate in October 2012.[6]

But how could David Smith have been “the first pedophile” charged in October 2012? Despite his 22 convictions, Smith apparently remained a free man not taken into custody until April 2013. Stemming from an alleged sodomy incident involving a 12-year old boy in 1984,[7] the adult victim happened to watch that *ITV* Savile exposé in October 2012, a full year ahead of Smith’s “suicide,” prompting the victim’s partner to contact police, resulting in Smith’s December 2012 arrest and posted bail. But if the Crown Prosecution Service receiving the case in late December 2012 didn’t charge the prolific pedophile until early April 2013, how could this derelict end up the first suspect legally charged under Operation Yewtree? Recall that derelict rocker Gary Glitter was arrested in October 2012 and was Yewtree’s first suspect. Though a number of early suspects like Glitter were arrested a half year prior to Smith’s April 2013 charge, unlike Glitter, most of those arrested were neither charged nor prosecuted, or later were acquitted at trial.

In 2002 Smith was apparently wanted by the police, but the left hand of UK’s bungling legal system didn’t know what the right hand was doing, failing to realize Smith was already in its system as a prison inmate and not a “fugitive” at all. Also it was the *BBC* that revealed to the press that this low life had 22 prior convictions dating as far back as 1966. Yet the *BBC* apparently went ahead and hired Smith in the 1980s as one of its drivers anyway, very likely aware Smith had a reoffending sexual assault record a mile long while *BBC* insiders from top corporate executives on down either knew of or were active participants themselves in this out of control *BBC* pedophile ring. In fact, in 1984 after Smith met this victim at a local swimming pool and enticed him back to Smith's residence to sexually abuse the 12-year old, the pervert then allegedly assaulted this same victim a second time reportedly driving him home from touring the *BBC* studios at White City Television Centre in West London.[8]

This chain of events demonstrates both police and *BBC*'s blatant criminal culpability. Yet there's no mention in this *Daily Mail* article of any of this police-*BBC* calamitous collusion that more than enabled this hardcore scumbag to do so much damage from age 20 to 67, nearly a half century of known legal convictions with a number of years operating within the *BBC*-Savile pedo-network. If you accept all these article statements as fact, then you know why the cabal system might want to eliminate this man before he could potentially blow the lid off the UK's VIP pedo-club.

Finally, the *Daily Mail* piece specifies Yewtree's three crime investigation categories reported by thousands of victims emerging since the October 3, 2012 airing of the *ITV* documentary, the first crime category involved Savile himself (three quarters of which reportedly have fallen into this category), the second involved Savile and his associates, and the third, pedophilia crimes unrelated to Savile.[9] But the *Daily Mail* then states that this particular case is filed under the third "unconnected to Savile" category. That's highly suspect since they were both *BBC* employees, both serial child rapists, both riding in the same limo for years at a time and no doubt committing the same pedo- crimes within the same *BBC* child sex ring, not unlike another one of Savile's chauffeurs Ray Teret.

Savile had chauffeurs who were hardened pedophiles like himself and no doubt for security sake, he only hired fellow criminals of the same deviant ilk. From the article we also learn that at least one of the assaults occurred shortly after the victim and the Savile chauffeur were together at the *BBC* studio where both Smith and his boss worked. So with both Smith and Savile enormously prolific pedophiles working together during the 1980s when many of Smith's said crimes took place, how could this be reported as a crime "unconnected to Savile?" Does the context "unconnected" mean that Savile's penis specifically did not sodomize the boy in the same way that Smith's did? Or perhaps it means they never sodomized the victim at the same time as in a threesome. As order followers, it appears the Yewtree boys in blue have gone out of their way to minimize the pedo-connection between S&S and their connection to the *BBC*. Hmmm, wonder why? Bet it has everything to do with the same reason that Smith never showed up for his scheduled trial.

In a *Mirror* article published five months after the *Daily Mail* post, David Smith's victim - 42-year old Jason Little - went public with a discrepant account from the earlier *Daily Mail* depiction of police and *BBC*. Where the *Daily Mail* version had both police and *BBC* attempting to distance David Smith abuse from both Savile and the *BBC* pedophile ring, Jason's disclosures in the *Mirror* is clearly at odds with the earlier rendition. Victim Jason Little maintains that his abuse lasted almost three years and that not only was David Smith a *BBC* employee chauffeuring Savile and a number of other *BBC* stars, but he also asserts that Smith took him on trips abroad to Israel and Amsterdam, provided him with a *BBC* pass and introduced him to scores of *BBC* stars at the Television Centre including Jimmy Savile.[10] We also know that Sir Jimmy as an intelligence operative made a number of visits to the Jewish State.[11] Jason also claimed that David Smith sexually assaulted him on a number of occasions inside the *BBC* studio premises as well. We also know that a favorite crime at *BBC* studios was Sir Jimmy's dressing room.

At the time of the *Mirror* article in April 2014, the coroner had just ruled Smith's death a suicide "beyond reasonable doubt" resulting from a drug overdose.[12] Both Jason Little and his friend since childhood, 41-year old Lee Sullivan, another of Smith's alleged sex abuse victims, decided to waive their anonymity rights in an effort to both give hope to other victims and confront the *BBC* for covering up its own pedophile ring in its refusal to admit that David Smith as a *BBC* employee was part of it. Apparently David Smith even owned a vehicle with the license plate "372BBC."

Jason shared his angst over the whitewash:

It makes me sick that the BBC won't admit it. They haven't even bothered to speak to me about Smith.[13]

Jason's friend Lee added:

He [Smith] *has cheated me of justice by killing himself.*

I'd venture to say that the UK Deep State and *BBC* in particular more accurately cheated Lee and Jason from any justice.

Lending more credence that Savile operated within a larger pedophile network were reports from victims stating that they were abused by both Savile and other pedophiles together.[14] Jason and his friend's account sound identical to other victims and witnesses such as Savile's nephew Guy Marsden as well as boys and girls taken from UK children's homes for weekend pedophilia parties at upscale London mansions:[15]

He [Smith] *took me to parties with other men and kids. We were given drugs so they could attack us. Smith also took* *me to a big house outside Amsterdam where I was abused with other children. At the time I didn't know what was happening to me.*[16]

Taking his victim on trips abroad and specifically to pedophilia parties in Amsterdam also implicates Smith and Savile operating within the larger international pedo-network, co-facilitated by intelligence agencies in cahoots with government social services and care home operators. The wider pedophilia network exchanging child pornography, child snuff films and sex trafficking of young boys between the UK and Amsterdam has been confirmed by both Dutch and British law enforcement.[17]

The systematic use of drugs and alcohol given to children as grooming tools to pliably sedate them and blur abuse memories[18] is identical with what routinely occurred like clockwork to trafficked in kids from Nebraska's Boys Town during the 1980s, including Dick Cheney's "meet and greet" escorting victims to plush Washington DC parties attended by the likes of pedophilia overlord President George HW Bush (see Chapter 13). Similarly, the history of exploitive, drug-induced seduction and rape of young boys by British pedophiles within government and *BBC* entertainment industry is pervasive from the 1960s to the present.

Not only did Jimmy Savile periodically molest underage boys (when not violating corpses and teenage girls), but other notorious *BBC* and music industry derelicts active in Savile's *BBC* pedophile ring[19] such as repeating sex offenders DJs Chris Denning and Alan Freeman, 1960s record producer-songwriter-murderer-suicider Joe Meek,[20] and convicted pop maestro Jonathon King,[21] all used drugs to entice their sexual prey. After all, for a very long time, predatory sexual grooming techniques as well as use of drugs for mind control abuse have remained the same the world over. Incidentally, Jonathon King has claimed that the late David Bowie had sex with more underage children than even Jimmy Savile and, as a pederast music insider who likely knows, he accuses the *BBC*, the music industry and police for their sheer hypocrisy in protecting big name superstars like Bowie who also routinely broke the law.[22]

Let's look at another suspicious death of yet another man employed by the *BBC* named Smith who was also privy to Savile's *BBC* pedophilia network - fellow Radio 1 DJ Mike Smith. If the 59-year old had health issues, he kept them tightly under wraps from even his closest friends, like fellow *BBC* Late, Late Breakfast Time co-presenter Noel Edmonds.[23] As Princess Diana's favorite 1980s DJ, Mike Smith also, like Jimmy Savile, hosted Top of the Pops. In the wake of the Savile *BBC* scandal, Smith's unexpected, "mysterious" August 2014 passing was the third high profile *BBC* death that year alone, abruptly dying from so called "complications following heart surgery."[24] Mike Smith admitted that while working at the *BBC*, he too was sexually hit on by other male DJs, alluding to the *BBC*'s out of control culture of sexual predation.

In 1988 Mike Smith was piloting a helicopter with his fellow *BBC* presenter soon-to-be wife Sarah Greene on board when it suddenly lost power for some unknown reason and went down, both barely surviving the crash.[25] Their careers suffered after that and they were scarcely seen on television again. In 2002 Mike Smith became embroiled in a major legal battle with the showbiz agent of his wife's sister Laura Greene. The agent in question - Jon Roseman's biggest client was none other than murdered *BBC* presenter Jill Dando who knew all about the *BBC* pedophile ring. Like Jill's Crimewatch TV show partner Nick Ross, Roseman took to the *Daily Mail* platform to promote his version of events surrounding Jill's demise, buying into a bogus Serbian connection to explain her assassination.[26] The question lingers, was Mike Smith's death the silencing of yet another *BBC* insider who may have known too much?

Then less than two months before Mike Smith was gone, the life of *BBC* Young Ones co-star and longtime popular comedian Rik Mayall came to a strange and sudden end at only 56 years of age. Both Rik's wife and everyone around him who knew him best maintain he was vibrant, happy and healthy right up to his death, with even a post-mortem report producing inconclusive results.[27] His wife Barbara Robbin stated:

We don't know yet what happened. He had a strong heart, so I don't think it was a heart attack…[28] *At least we know it's not his heart as he's just had a check-up and been given the all-clea*r.[29]

Another young TV presenter, journalist and famous media personality who died tragically in 2014 under suspicious circumstance is 25-year old daughter of famed rock musician Sir Bob Geldof, Peaches Geldof. Having recently written just a few days prior to her death that she was happily married with 1- and 2-year old boys she adored, she also mentioned in her final interview how "heroin was such a bleak drug."[30] The prospect seemed remote that she would suddenly snuff herself from an overdose with ten times the amount of heroin in her bloodstream that was alleged to have killed her *BBC* presenter mother Paula Yates in 2000.[31] Without a suicide note, a scant 19 minutes prior to dying, Peaches Geldof posted two photos of her baby sons online. And just hours prior to that, loyal to her mother Paula to the end, Peaches tweeted a photo of Paula holding her shortly prior to her mother's untimely death. The biggest anomaly of all was the tweeted caption under Peaches' photo:

I have the heart of a 90-year old gangster.[32]

Where would that incongruent remark come from?

Another major discrepancy - the police dispatched to the scene who found Peaches' lifeless body initially reported to the press that there was no evidence of drugs.[33] But then police changed their story weeks later insisting that nearly 80 syringes were discovered laying around the house.[34] Though police feebly claim “duty of care” compassionately protecting the family as the sole reason for falsifying the official narrative as an “unexplained death” for nearly a month,[35] it seems far more apt to have been subsequently planted as after-the-fact evidence to protect those allegedly behind the decision to sinisterly have her silenced.

During the last several years of Peaches’ life, she embraced love, marriage, family and especially motherhood. Also recently learning she was part Jewish through her paternal grandmother, and married to Jewish husband musician Tom Cohen whose parents met on a kibbutz, Peaches was gravitating towards Judaism[36] and away from her tendency toward cults like Ordo Templi Orientis (OTO) and scientology, leaving her fast lane, reckless drug lifestyle behind. Her past involvement in OTO, pedophile Alistair Crowley’s satanic sex cult that Peaches had paid homage to having plastered an “O.T.O” tattoo on her arm, seemed in her latter days an increasingly remote if already nonexistent influence.[37]

Many superstars like Jay Z, Beyoncé and Led Zeppelin’s Jimmy Paige are said to be faithful OTO followers. A friend of Peaches, Marilyn Manson, has long admitted to be a hardcore, out of closet, proud Satanist.[38] But then it’s more than evident that the music industry is now overflowing with black occult satanic ritualism and in-our-face mind control.[39] It’s grown so bad that to be successful in the industry these days almost precludes one to swear allegiance to Lucifer.

In November 2013, just four months ahead of her death, Peaches tweeted the names of two deranged mothers that conspired to allow admitted pedophile rock star Ian Watkins from the band Lostprophets to sexually abuse their children, one just a year old baby.[40] It’s worth noting that Ian Watkins and his rock group are managed by a company called QPrime owned by Louis Mensch, husband of ex-Tory MP Louise Mensch.[41] Louise used to work under a friend of Bob Geldof's at EMI, a record company linked to Satanism, mind control and military intelligence. Of course Peaches had a prior history to dabble, if not immerse herself into Satanism as a likely mind control victim. In 2012 Louise Mensch suddenly resigned from parliament, moved to New York while pedophile rocker Watkins was arrested in December 2012.

Having recently given birth to a six month old son at the time of Peaches' controversial tweet outing Watkins and his sex ring, as a protective mother she had elected to expose pedophilia through her Twitter account. But due to a victim identity protection law, inadvertently she had potentially violated the confidentiality of the two child victims since she tweeted their mothers' last names. Despite Peaches' claim that the Welsh court had already publicly listed the names and that other websites had also posted them, as soon as she learned of the liability issue, she removed her post from her Twitter account and apologized, though it failed to stop a legal inquiry looking further into the matter.[42]

Peaches' close *BBC* Radio 1 DJ friend and fellow presenter Fearne Cotton once dated Ian Watkins back in 2005.[43] Fearne's second cousin was longtime senior *BBC* executive and managing director Bill Cotton. And with both Peaches' mother, her father Hughie Green and maternal grandfather all career *BBC* employees who more than likely knew of Savile and his *BBC* child sex ring, Peaches Geldof knew the secret pedo-history and publicly outing a relatively high profile pedophile on Twitter where she had over 161,000 followers demonstrated she was taking a bold stance against pedophilia, exposing the pervasive UK network she undoubtedly had firsthand encounters with in her past. Taking such conspicuous aim against the pedo-epidemic no doubt triggered fear and wrath amongst certain *BBC* and VIP pedophiles that such an outspoken, devoted young mother and popular celebrity could be launching a public crusade against their entire global pedo-cabal. Boxed into the corner, they likely concluded they had to get her before she got them. So just like Princess Diana and Jill Dando, Peaches Geldof prematurely met her Maker as another casualty in the earth's current war raging between the forces for good and evil.

Due to both Peaches and her mother's drug history, by many accounts her alleged murder could easily have been disguised to appear like just another typical fatal celeb overdose, not unlike her own mother Paula Yates's death. The pathologist in the Paula Yates case alluded to morphine depressing her brain and shutting down her respiratory system that killed her, not the heroin.[44] But it was cabal coroner Dr. Knapman who insisted Paula Yates' death was the result of a "heroin overdose" due to "foolish and incautious" behavior after incongruently stating the amount of heroin she snorted wasn't enough to kill the average person.

Speculation immediately followed the breaking news of daughter Peaches' death suggesting that imprisoned Ian Watkins was a powerful Illuminati member revengefully bent on silencing Peaches Geldof as retribution for publicly slamming him and his sordid, demented activities.[45] Or more likely, similar to Jill and Diana, top echelons of the British pedo-establishment took notice and decided to silence another emerging potential threat for knowing too much.

Peaches' father, Sir Bob Geldof, is not the charity, "save the world" saint he's been cracked up to be in British high society and UK press. The triangular custody war between INXS lead singer Australian Michael Hutchence and Geldof's ex-wife Paula Yates versus rival Bob Geldof over Michael and

Paula's own daughter Tiger Lily that Sir Bob used all his knightly power and influence to win, led to such bad blood that many observers conclude that it resulted in murder by two staged suicides.[46] First came Michael's alleged, highly anomalous suicide by hanging in November 1997 followed less than three years later by Paula's "accidental" heroin overdose. Just like Hutchence and Paula, as the outspoken rebellious daughter, Peaches also had a recent falling out in her increasingly strained relationship with Saint Bob in the months preceding her untimely death. See a pattern here?

Meanwhile, knighted by Queen Elizabeth back in 1985 and nominated for the Nobel Peace Prize by unprosecuted pedophile Lord Greville Janner in 1987,[47] in the eyes of the ruling elite, Sir Bob Geldof could do no wrong. And ever since he's been running exclusively in Illuminati circles, surrounded by pedo-cabal presidents, crime-prime ministers and secret societies as a huge fan of war criminals George W Bush and Tony Blair.[48] Even his acclaimed Band Aid, Live Aid and Live 8 series did not serve the poor in Third World Africa as advertised but largely himself as charity funds were misused on militant dictators engaged in genocidal forced migration policies and padding corporate coffers at debtor nations' expense,[49] an earlier variation cut from the same grotesque cloth as the Clintons' Haitian rape and pillage plunder.[50]

In another Clintonesque move, as the supposed antipoverty campaigner, in 2008 Geldof charged an incredible $100,000 for a single speech he made in Melbourne that included his first class airfare and hotel accommodations.[51] With his "rock stardom" on the wane in 2012, when Bob Geldof arrived in Milan, Italy to perform a scheduled concert and found only 45 fans in his audience, the saint left the auditorium refusing to sing.[52] Sir Bob's blatant self-opportunism, bloated self-importance, nouveau elitism, pugnacious, classless arrogance and shameless exploitation of the world's poor for his own personal gain made him an easy target leading to his eventual exposure and fall from knightly grace.[53]

By the time Paula Yates and her rock n' roll bad-boy Michael Hutchence locked horns with Saint Bob, their doomed battle for child custody of Paula's three daughters sired by Geldof and the youngest belonging to Paula and Michael were already lost. As Saint Bob's enemies, they witnessed the dark side of the fallen "angel" emerge, each claiming that Sir Bob boastfully taunted and threatened them repeatedly with:

Don't forget, I am above the law.[54]

… a given privilege that makes for murder by fake suicide against vulnerable, perceived weaker enemies very plausible, fueling speculation suspecting foul play based on the elite's fact-based history, reinforced by the company one keeps.

Speaking of the company Sir Bob keeps, besides pedo- and war-friendly criminals Tony Blair[55] and George W, Geldof is also in tight with his homies Lord Waheed Alli and Lord Peter Mandelson, both gay men linked to the VIP pedophilia ring. As the first openly gay lord and at 34 the youngest life peer compliments of PM Blair, Waheed Alli and his other half Charlie Parsons partnered with Geldof to make a fortune co-owning Planet 24 TV, UK's largest independent production company.[56] Mandelson, a Rothschild steward, was caught downloading child pornography in 2002 under Operation Ore but Labor PM Blair sealed it with a D-notice to protect his two time cabinet secretary.[57] After Parliament, the above-the-law pedophile became an EU Commissioner, a perennial Bilderberger and chief trustee to UK's largest child charity organization the NSPCC (yep, another pedo-fox).[58]

Convicted US blackmailing pedophile felon Jeffrey Epstein listed Lord Mandelson 10 times in his infamous black book.

[59] According to British intelligence operative, French doctors leaked Mandelson being hospitalized after indulging in the “gay sport” felching where a cardboard tube is inserted into the rectum and a furry little hamster is inserted into the butthole for cheap sicko thrills.[60] These are the type of compromised perverts the ruling elite places into power to run our planet. But more on these pedo-cabal puppets in Chapter 25’s Westminster scandal. You now can understand why Sir Bob so freely and smugly throws his “I’m above the law” weight around.

Incredibly whenever Sir Jimmy felt threatened with exposure, he too would immediately resort to uttering this same weaponized line as his cruel reminder that he too reached the “untouchable” zone,[61] as a fully knighted, impugned and protected member of the same planet plunderers club.[62]

At the height of Michael Hutchence and Paula Yates’ embattled custody faceoff against Geldof over Sir Bob’s effort to steal their own biological daughter Tiger Lily, in his final interview just prior to his extremely suspicious death, Michael Hutchence prophetically warned:

Saint Bob, and Wild Boy Rock Star, you pick the one who people are going to believe. One day, the truth will be told. [63]

For Michael Hutchence and wronged victims everywhere, it’s time the truth finally be told. From his Sydney hotel room, Hutchence purportedly argued with Sir Bob over the phone about their impending custody decision, delayed several weeks until the following month of December 1997.[64] Anxious to have Paula and her children including his baby daughter Tiger Lily joining him for Christmas in Australia, and increasingly distraught and exacerbated by drugs over Sir Bob reneging on an earlier agreement and putting the kibosh on Michael’s big family holiday plans, the official narrative maintains that in a fit of alcohol-cocaine-Prozac enflamed depression, the reigning rock star took his own life using his belt and doorknob to hang himself.[65] Paula Yates insisted her man did not commit suicide but died of asphyxiation playing an auto-eroticism game of the alleged David Carradine kind (though it too may be a disguised murder).[66]

But others reminded of Geldof's repeated "above the law" threats after a dozen doorknob hanging "suicides" in recent years, a growing number are questioning this implausible scenario as a staged pretext designed to conceal actual murder by strangulation,[67] especially when a similar falling out pattern emerged later in the untimely supposed drug OD deaths of both Geldof's wife and daughter.[68] Simultaneous celeb "suicides" by doorknob hanging of both designer Ann Spade and chef Anthony Bourdain in June 2018 shortly after Anthony called out sexual predator Harvey Weinstein in the face of increasing exposure of the global pedophilia crisis has given rise to speculation that the Deep State is leaving its cabal calling card assassinations as covert retaliation against truth tellers.[69]

So on flimsy ground back in late 1997, the Sydney coroner refused an inquest or any further inquiry into the Hutchence doorknob hanging, rushing to judgment in favor of suicide and that was that.[70] Grief-stricken Paula descended into self-medicating as no match for the saint to benevolently claim a loving home full of half-sisters for Tiger Lily, setting the stage for Paula's worldly exit less than three years later, by attrition leaving Saint Bob to snatch the youngest daughter from her biological relatives in Australia.[71] Once her mother was gone, 4-year old Tiger Lily's forced estrangement from her father's side of the family soon had her calling Sir Geldof "dad." And after a 5-day vacation in 2006 visiting her real father's family, Saint Bob cut Tiger Lily's grandparents and aunt completely out of his soon-to-be adopted daughter's life altogether. By 2010, unfortunately Tiger's Aussie grandparents were already dead, and Geldof forbid Tiger Lily from attending their funerals or have anything to do with the Hutchence family.[72] But now that the grown up aspiring actress Tiger Lily Hutchence Geldof turned 21 in July 2018, Geldof's hold on her may be slipping just a bit. Much to his chagrin, Tiger Lily has already reestablished contact with her long lost Aunt Tina,[73] who referring to Sir Bob on Australian national television once stated:

I think he's Satan.[74]

Turning to another ill-fated love affair between 42-year old *BBC* presenter Mark Speight and his 31-year old fiancé actress and fellow *BBC* presenter Natasha Collins, they died just months apart a decade ago in 2008.[75] After meeting on the *BBC* TV children's show See It Saw It, they fell in love and were engaged to be married when their tragic fate intervened. When news of Natasha's untimely death surfaced just five days after *BBC* DJ Kevin Greening's bizarre, questionable demise, the media was all over the splashy, bizarre circumstance that led to Natasha's untimely end.

The story goes that the couple decided to indulge in an alleged end-of-holiday drug alcohol binge on January 3rd, 2008, sharing an alleged lethal cocktail of wine, vodka, sleeping pills and cocaine (with a suspicious five times the deadly dose found in her bloodstream).[76] Mark testified they had retired for the night at around 4AM. But at some point, still in a drugged stupor, Natasha managed to get to the bathroom and into the bathtub, slipping into unconsciousness with the hot water still running with over 60% of her body scalded. Stupor or no stupor, one would think scalding water would be painful enough to get out of the bathtub.

By the time Mark discovered her lifeless body at 1PM the next day, it was too late. According to Westminster Coroner

Dr. Paul Knapman, she died from a drug overdose.[77] Police initially interrogated Speight as a possible murder suspect for allegedly supplying her with the illicit drugs that allegedly killed her, but ultimately opted not to charge him. Perhaps he knew too much about his employer's pedo-ring to risk him spilling the beans if charged with a crime.

But just five days after Natasha's inquest attended by a gaunt, depressed Mark Speight, and just three months after his betrothed's untimely death, the popular kids' show presenter of the *BBC* art program SMart was reported missing, then six days later also found dead. His body was reportedly discovered hanging at a strangely remote, unused, locked section within the Paddington Railway Station.[78] Six days before his body was recovered by Paddington security, Mark was allegedly last spotted alive nearby by two police officers on patrol, claiming they briefly spoke to him, describing him as distraught and depressed. At the alleged suicide scene, police encountered a broken belt believed to have been first used before Speight allegedly turned to tying his shoelaces together to hang himself from a bannister. Hard to believe that his belt would break apart while two much thinner, much flimsier shoelaces from his shoes would somehow manage to hold the weight of a grown man's body until death without shredding or coming apart first. Thus as reported in the media, his suicide method appears highly implausible. Also found in the deceased's pocket was an alleged scrawled suicide note and another one in his diary addressed to his parents.

A tragic Romeo and Juliet-ish ending of a doomed romance with no foul play involved was the official conclusion ruled by coroner Dr. Paul Knapman… way too simplistic, smacking of an artificially scripted and delivered official narrative. But when viewed together after covering the slew of mysterious deaths all connected to the *BBC* pedophile ring followed by a cursory look at the highly suspicious, nefarious career of

Westminster coroner Dr. Knapman, who ruled over so many of the *BBC* and Westminster pedophile ring deaths, suddenly Natasha and Mark's cases loom much shadier, darker and increasingly suspect. So far Knapman has been official coroner in Kevin Greening, Paula Yates, Natasha Collins and Mark Speight's inquests. But then by close association, there's an entire cast of shady, supporting cabal characters to uncover.

First we'll start with exploring Natasha Collins and her fiancé Mark Speight's link to the wider *BBC* pedo-network. Already addressed in Chapter 18 was the Operation YewTree conviction of disgraced fellow *BBC* employee and now pedophile free bird Rolf Harris, who frequently worked side-by-side with Mark Speight on various *BBC* kids' projects and programs together. As such, Harris stated at Mark's 2008 memorial:

It was joyful to work with Mark. I realize that I never told him how much I appreciated his programs. You realize you should always tell people what you think, you should tell them that you love them because it might suddenly be too late.[79]

As an admired *BBC* children's program host, Mark Speight also maintained very close ties with Esther Rantzen, longtime *BBC* fixture, presenter and producer of the two decade running show That's Life and founder of the *BBC* ChildLine charity for abused children. Speight often volunteered his free time as an avid campaign fundraiser for ChildLine, Rantzen's 24-hour helpline organization providing a registry of child sexual abuse as well as counseling and support for reporting child abuse victims.[80] However that said, ChildLine also has been openly accused of actually serving as a window-dressing front designed to protect the pedophiles instead of the children in another classic case of the fox guarded henhouse.[81]

Esther Rantzen's helpline was concurrently launched back in 1986 when she and her cousin Sarah Caplan co-founded the ChildLine charity. Sarah's husband, Nick Ross, was the founder and 23-year presenter of *BBC*'s 33-year program staple Crimewatch (that ended in 2017).[82] And his co-presenter from 1995 until her brutal murder in 1999 was broadcast journalist Jill Dando. Lots of evidence indicates that Jill had gathered evidence that was about to expose her own company's pedophile ring. But more on her tragic case along with her dubious cohost Nick Ross later.

The trustee and chief underwriter funding Rantzen's 1986 ChildLine with a half million pound contribution was entrepreneur and philanthropist Sir Ian Skipper[83] with links to Nathan M. Rothschild[84] and Prince Charles.[85] OBE appointed Skipper owned homes in notorious pedophile island of Jersey and Sir Cliff Rischard's island nation of Barbados, both used as billionaires' tax haven write-offs.[86] Interior decorator Conrad Jameson was hired by Skipper to perform work on his estate but soon found out that the trustee of the largest UK children's charity - the National Society for Prevention of Cruelty to Children (NSPCC), was a sexual pervert obsessed with pornography. Jameson threatened to expose Skipper, who then sued Jameson for sexual blackmail but lost the case in 1993.

Another suspicious listing in convicted pedophile blackmailer Jeffrey Epstein's address book was also a ChildLine director who worked with Esther Rantzen on That's Life, but also served as both an MP and Secretary of State for Northern Ireland - Shaun Woodward.[87]

Under the familiar pretense of national security, D-notices forbid public access to governmental affairs deemed top secret as a favorite cabal device constantly misused by Blair's skeleton-filled closet in order to conceal VIP pedophilic perversions. Recall earlier that Tony Blair - aka Miranda - issued a D-notice for 100 years based on a thick

MI5 dossier collecting blackmail evidence on Sir Peter Mandelson.[88] Then there was the felching incident in France.[89] A known Rothschild mole planted inside UK establishment to ensure political control and shield the global pedo-trade as director of UK's leading children's charity the NSPCC,[90] Mandelson also enjoyed young boys vacationing at registered US child sex offender Jeffrey Epstein's Sex Slave Island. And Epstein listed on Mandelson no less than 10 different numbers and addresses belonging to fellow pedophile Sir Peter,[91] not to mention Tony Blair's address in the Mossad's who's who as well.

Also key is VIP pedophile enabler Dame Rantzen's 2006 ChildLine-NSPCC merger securing her role as yet another charity henhouse pedo-guard trustee. One year later the NSPCC was busted using fake abuse stories to generate cash donations[92] while its CEO was skimming a cool £162,000 off incoming gravy for his annual salary[93] that's among the top dozen among all UK charities.[94]

Meanwhile, NSPCC vice president multimillionaire Gerald Ronson's fundraiser wife Gail Ronson claimed "I've never, ever, met him [Epstein]. I swear," despite both their names also written in Epstein's now infamous black book.[95] Gail is related to the late accused pedophile Home Secretary Sir Leon Brittan as is his other cousin foreign secretary under conservative PM John Major - Sir Malcolm Rifkind who vehemently defended pedophile Heath's "besmirched reputation."[96] The longtime resident of pedo-infested Dolphin Square and powerful head of the House of Commons intelligence and security committee, Rifkind falsely claimed in 2015 "nobody pays me a salary" despite officially earning £81,936 annually as an MP chair, forcing his resignation as part of a Channel 4 influence peddling sting.[97] It's one very tightly knit Zionist network with the same infiltrating Jewish foxes all cherry picked as cabal pedo-guards protecting their child murdering Luciferian masters.

Now let’s take a closer look at Nick Ross, husband of *BBC*’s ChildLine co-founder Sally Caplan (Esther’s cousin) and TV partner of murdered Jill Dando. In 2013 a half dozen years after Ross left Crimewatch and 14 years after his co-presenter’s assassination, the so called crime expert actually came out with the following incriminatingly telling statement:

I’d probably watch child pornography to see what all the fuss is about...[98]

Nick Ross was making a flagrant pitch to normalize this heinous sex crime exploiting children that in this computer age of dark web and snuff films, child porn and sex trafficking abuse have become the pedo-cabal’s most lucrative, fastest growing illegal enterprise on the planet.[99] The transparency of the pedo-cabal is at work through the *BBC* and disturbing, revealing comments like that from Nick Ross, who founded the Crimestopper helpline for the public to supposedly call in information to help law enforcement solve crimes. However, his Crimestopper helpline suddenly went dead right after his *BBC* partner’s murder.[100] More dot connecting to follow but back to Esther Rantzen’s helpline organization.

Esther’s choice as ChildLine’s very first chief executive - Valerie Howarth - was the former head of social services in Brent when in 1984 a 4-year old girl under her department’s supposed protection was tortured and brutally murdered by her parents.[101] After learning the girl’s social worker had only seen the child once in the 10 months leading up to the murder, Valerie forgot to pass this vitally crucial, life-saving information onto Brent’s chief executive and social services committee and then conveniently failed to mention this gross if not criminal oversight when she later applied to head Cambridgeshire social services. But the dubious career of this unemployed, failed child protector was actually rescued by Esther Rantzen, placing her in a key position in charge of protecting all of United Kingdom's children, exactly like Blair appointed pedo-protecting, PIE connected Margaret (Oppenheimer) Hodge his minister of all UK children.[102] This pervasive pattern permeates each interlocking cog invariably shielded by a pedophile sentinel guarding the pedo-pipeline henhouse.

If the largest children's charity in Britain - the NSPCC - whose very purpose is to protect its children colludes with UK law enforcement's Operation Yewtree endorsing the official lie that Sir Jimmy acted completely alone and that there was never any police corruption helping him, how can the National Society for Protection against Cruelty to Children really be a friend to UK children? The fact is, it isn't when it's run by the likes of pedophile Sir Peter Mandelson and pedo-lover Dame Esther Rantzen.

Of course Esther's celebrity status and popular acclaim as a famous TV personality and so called child advocate pioneer has not gone unnoticed by the British establishment, earning her the most prominent position the last dozen years as an NSPCC trustee.[103] Rantzen is also a patron of the National Association for People Abused in Childhood (NAPAC). Her accolades and awards are endless, an OBE for her services in broadcasting, a CBE for her services for children. The queen appointed her Dame Commander of the Order of the British Empire (DBE) and on and on her honors go.[104] For all her sterling awards and impeccable accolades, is it fair to conclude that Esther Rantzen is rewarded for protecting pedophilia empire interests more than protecting UK children? With the most vulnerable population inside the UK child welfare system the most targeted and accessible victims preyed upon historically by the British pedophile VIP crowd that Dame Esther runs with, I'd say just like her NSPCC, she's done a pretty horrible job protecting the very kids she pretends she cares most about. And her track record only proves it.

Immediately following an internal NSPCC audit, in August 2018 Dame Esther announced she was suddenly resigning her coveted trustee post that she was so paranoid of losing during the post-Savile aftermath. In a face saving move, the 78-year old claimed her three children sat her down for “a family intervention,” pressuring her to slow down and take it easier in her golden years.[105] But according to a recent smoke and *Mirror* fluff piece, while still ChildLine president and still active in her NSPCC fundraising role, with Sir Jimmy dead and gone, she’s still the undisputed “charity champion” of the British Isles, flaunting her busier than ever schedule with talks of even reviving yet another run of her That’s Life.[106] Though her half century of being in the celebrity charity limelight may have helped some people, the number touted on her ChildLine is 3.2 million, too often outward appearances belie a much darker, hidden past as the Savile saga blatantly proves, especially when it comes to those so closely tied to the *BBC* and British VIP pedophilia network.

Esther Rantzen’s autobiography was released in 2001. As an adulterer for the second time in less tthan three years while in her mid to late twenties, her first as a mistress to a prominent married pedophile politician,[107] Esther then began sleeping with her *BBC* producer in 1969, engaging in an 8-year extramarital affair that led to the breakup of a long term marriage between her *BBC* boss Desmond Wilcox and his wife Patsy, who also worked in the same *BBC* department as Esther the homewrecker.[108] Initially as Rantzen’s co-worker and friend, Patsy brought her home to meet “this fantastic guy I’m married to.”[109] Rantzen spent so much time at Patsy’s family home that Patsy’s children called her “Aunty Esther.” It took nearly eight years of Rantzin cheating behind her friend’s back to eventually get pregnant and finally convince Patsy to give up on her lost cause marriage vows and divorce Desmond so Esther and

Desi could blissfully tie the knot and soon displace Patsy as the new matron living inside the Wilcox family home.

But then like mother, like son. Years later it was Desmond and Esther’s son’s turn to carry on the family tradition, having an affair with a married woman in 2014 resulting in a pregnancy and her leaving her devastated high school sweetheart husband.[110] When both parental role models commit adultery as an indelible family dynamic interwoven into the family history of both parents, it often becomes a common legacy that repeats itself inter-generationally. But let’s skip over that little inconvenient truth and move on to more of Esther’s do-gooder role in her real “that’s life.”

With absolutely zero remorse over destroying a family with three children, in Rantzen’s 2001 book published a year after Desmond died, the homewrecker viciously attacked her onetime friend Patsy, a scorned woman unable to defend herself having died in 1999.[111] One of Esther’s stepchildren Cassandra Wilcox felt compelled to set the record straight in a *Daily Mail* article refuting what she considered Rantzen lies about her mother Patsy. When Desmond left his wife in 1977 to live with Esther at her place, Rantzen claims in her book that Patsy “wanted to live on her own,” suggesting she abandoned her family when in actuality Patsy was so heartbroken by betrayal that she was literally suffering from a serious enough cardiac condition to warrant a two week stay in Charing Cross Hospital, which caused her younger 15-year old twins to temporarily have to move in with their father and Rantzen. Cassandra states that Rantzen misrepresented her mother as selfish, “virtually throwing them [her kids] out of the family house.” But Rantzen’s stepdaughter maintains that “nothing could be further from the truth.” A brief examination of Esther’s life will show that her self-serving, revisionist distortions of reality and less than honest liberties telling her skewed versions of “truth” reveal a lifelong characterological flaw of deception and hypocrisy.

After reading Esther Ranzen's autobiography, Victor Lewis-Smith's response had Rantzen accurately pegged back in 2001, long before the Savile scandal broke, writing in his *Evening Standard* book review:

Throughout Esther's career there's always been a yawning chasm between the image she presents to her public and what appears to me to be a deep-seated private contempt for them.[112]

While the British elite revere and fawn over Esther Rantzin as its legendary establishment darling and another queen honored "national treasure"[113] (like Savile), serious charges have persistently plagued her ChildLine helpline alleged to systematically filter out callers reporting child abuse crimes perpetrated by British VIPs.[114] Moreover, after chummily working side by side with Sir Jimmy at the *BBC* since the 1960s, incriminating accusations have also been levied against Rantzen for knowing about his and other *BBC* pedophiles, yet all the while doing nothing to stop them. What kind of true child abuse advocate would knowingly allow such widespread abuse and do nothing about it? After the Savile bombshell when called on the carpet in October 2012 for her years of inaction, no sooner did she admit to knowing about the "green room gossip," she then actually confessed that "green room gossip is always true."[115]

But in the face of the Savile allegations, rather than take personal responsibility or show any personal regret as her nation's most famous and powerful child abuse advocate that did nothing to stop Savile abuse, she went from one interview to the next busily pontificating how all of Great Britain was fooled, attempting to assuage her own phony guilt (if she even has any) and criminal complicity by her concerted effort to spread the blame to the entire nation for being so bamboozled:

We as a whole nation were to blame.[116]

Meanwhile, anti-child abuse advocate Shy Keenan came forward in 2012 to disclose that she personally warned Rantzen back in 1994 about Savile's widespread abuse, a full 15 years before his final known victim was abused.[117] While Rantzen hosted her *BBC* series That's Life, a program boasting that it exposes corruption and criminality, she could have easily utilized her readymade broadcasting platform, her ChildLine hotline ostensibly set up for sexual abuse victims and her influential power and clout within the establishment to unmask the disturbing truth behind the "open secret" rumors and suspicions she admits she knew about way back when. But instead Rantzen chose not to look into Savile at all, despite acknowledging she'd been told about his abuse while a *BBC* intern back in the 1960s.[118] For decades Dame Esther remained silently complicit, failing to lift a finger to save hundreds of Savile victims from abuse. But then that's the way the system is designed, to protect the perps.

And then when confronted with Shy Keenan's explosively incriminating revelation, Rantzen out and out lied, pretending she never heard of Keenan nor remembered their conversation.[119] Then in the thick of it, when the press confronted her knowing about the Savile rumors and her total lack of response as a supposed child advocate, she was far more terrified and worried about losing her NSPCC trustee job[120] and her "life's work" legacy being destroyed than any abused children. Her response in the *Daily Mail*:

Say what you like about me – just please don't destroy my life's work.[121]

Instead of being honest and forthright, Esther Rantzen chose to hide behind her crocodile tears[122] and such incredibly asinine explanations as the one depicted below from an October 2012 *Telegraph* article:

> *… The fact that Savile had even been blessed by the Pope, and if the Pope can't tell someone's a paedophile, then how could they* [we] *possibly be expected to know?*[123]

Shy Keenan has pointed out that Rantzen even committed perjury while feigning lost charity revenue:

> *In 2015, Dame Rantzen claimed 'under oath' that a 2012 fundraising event was cancelled because of Shy, the evidence shows that the fundraising event took place and Dame Rantzen attended.*[124]

This woman has been caught up in her growing web of lies and deceit, virtually losing all credibility with the public. Yet Dame Esther still remains perched on her throne insulated by the queen's bestowed honors. During former police investigator Mark Williams-Thomas' second *ITV* Exposure installment as a two year follow-up probing how Savile's power allowed him to get away with his heinous half century crime spree, he lastly interviewed Rantzen. After mentioning a charity event that Savile contributed to her ChildLine (more than once she appeared as a guest on his shows) and her thank you letter to the *BBC* pedophile kingpin, she had the audacity to lament:

> *If only a child had rung us* [ChildLine helpline]*… and told us what he'd been doing to them, we could have passed that to the police and done so much good.*[125]

In all the years from 1986 on with her ChildLine fully operational while Britain's worst pedophile in history was still very actively abusing victims, is Rantzen seriously wanting us to believe her ludicrous statement that not one of Savile's hundreds if not thousands of victims over the next near quarter century actually contacted her helpline and reported his abuse? The response to Rantzen's disingenuous "would've-should've-could've" from her army of critics would quickly counter-argue that whenever victims of abuse perpetrated by VIPs like Jimmy Savile did report crimes to her ChildLine workers, their complaints were methodically screened out and never heard again. Claiming to be a lifelong champion of child protection and safety, her half century actions speak far louder than her empty, feeble, fork-tongued words.

Another little Rantzen inconsistency indicating what you see is clearly not what you get… former child actor Ben Fellows reported that in 1990 at age 15, he attended a party in New Forest hosted by *BBC* executives where supposed child advocate Esther Rantzen was also present and fully aware that lots of drugs and alcohol were being given to children while swarms of pedo partygoers, many of whom were *BBC* executives, producers, directors and stars were propositioning Ben and the other kids all night long as their latest forbidden fruit conquests.[126] Rantzen again did nothing on behalf of the endangered children right before her eyes witnessing youth being taken advantage of, sexually exploited and victimized. A drugged Ben Fellows recalled being sexually assaulted by a *BBC* employee who would later work in the children's entertainment department, perhaps manning her ChildLine. The *BBC* kids department has always been a pedo-magnet within *BBC*'s larger child sex ring.

Keep in mind that the *British Broadcasting Corporation* is a tax paid, government sponsored mega media giant, guilty of covering up both Savile's so-vile sins as well as its own inside pedophilia ring. Meanwhile, aside from Savile and the half dozen known *BBC* employed pedophiles Rolf Harris, Paul Gadd, Chris Denning, Jonathon King, Alan Freeman and Stuart Hall covered in Chapter 19, for several decades running, this same complicit company maintained a steady flow of *BBC* employed insiders privy to this massive criminal cover-up suddenly winding up dead under highly suspicious circumstances. But more on the KIAs later. Back to Dame Esther, the inside pedo-enabling fox masquerading as Britain benign, saintly savior to children.

While working at a prep school, a teacher named Alex Standish provided testimony to crown court as well as an episode of Rantzen's That's Life that helped convict several teachers guilty of child sex abuse in 1991.[127] That's all fine and dandy, but when that same tutor turned out to be a pedophile himself, as a favor to him, Rantzen kept that critical piece of information to herself, once again protecting yet another sexual predator (aside from her former MP lover, Savile and the rest of the *BBC* pedo-platoon) while placing innocent children at further risk.

Turns out that Esther as well as the local police where Standish was teaching both knew that he was a child molester but neither informed the school nor the parents of any eminent danger. Then when a newspaper exposed her dirty little secret, she sued the paper for libel and somehow won a favorable court settlement despite the veracity of the article's claim that she had deceived the paper's editor in a phone conversation. Because the police also knew Standish was a child molester, she wiggled out of losing her case before a star-struck jury. But an appeals court lowered the overinflated damages from £250,000 to £150,000.[128]

Though Esther Rantzen may not have been present at another social event held at her own residence in New Forest, Hampshire in August 1993, an invited guest, 63-year old former British Airways engineer Robert Gillings sexually assaulted a 5-year old girl in Rantzen's swimming pool.[129] At the time the victim and her parents were staying at Rantzen's estate. Culminating a series of yearlong abuse, the incident resulted in Gillings receiving an 18-month prison sentence in July 1994.

If the true nature of an individual is accurately reflected in the company one intimately keeps, then Rantzen may not love children as much as she purports. In 1966 at age 26 while a *BBC* researcher, Esther Rantzen began a two year adulterous affair with married Scottish pedophile MP Sir Nichols Fairbairn.[130] A year later the “saintly” serial adulterer embarked on yet another affair with her boss Desmond Wilcox.

NSPCC trustee Esther Rantzen and the current NSPCC chief executive since 2013 Peter Wanless have been the two highest profile figures atop UK’s child protection system. Yet each has a history linked directly to pedophilia and pedophiles. For years prior to his current gig, Wanless was Principle Private Secretary to confirmed pedophile Tory MP and Cabinet Secretary Michael Portillo who was involved in the cover-up of the notorious Westminster child sex ring[131] (fully taken up in Chapter 24). Despite his predatory exposure as a pedophile, the outed Portillo left politics only to reinvent himself at where else but *BBC*, the pedo-friendly broadcasting network as a television presenter.[132] When birds of a feather flock together, they inevitably morph into foxes guarding their child henhouse. Just as in America, all the top positions entrusted to protect children invariably protect the elite’s pedophilia network cabal.

In March 2003 Esther Rantzen and Paedophile Information Exchange (PIE) founder Tom O’Carroll (see Chapter 2) appeared together as panelists on a *BBC* After Dark program discussing pedophilia and child protection,[133] as if there’s any common ground between the two when PIE organization advocates no age of consent for children at all.[134] For someone who claims to dedicate her life to keeping children safe, why has her entire public and private life and record been so intertwined with the likes of those bent on violating and destroying children? Bottom line, Esther Rantzen’s been sleeping with the enemy throughout her entire adulthood.

The *Coleman Experience* claims that a former British intelligence officer disclosed that Esther Rantzen's residence she calls Blood Oaks needs to be dug up for all the bloody dead child corpses literally buried in her backyard, allegedly murdered during satanic sex abuse rituals held at her estate.[135] Rantzen's Jewish family with ties to a diamond fortune also has her making friends with Mossad-CIA agent Uri Geller linked to running a mind control program for gifted children.[136] The Sir Cliff-Sir Jimmy-Geller Zionist pedo-cabal has far reaching tentacles into both Europe and North America and Esther Rantzen and her charity organizations NSPCC and ChildLine appear to be UK's prime gatekeeping apparatus shielding VIP pedophilia operations. And just like her longtime *BBC* friend and colleague Sir Jimmy, Dame Rantzen has utilized her lofty social position and "charity-minded" fame as a deceptive front pretending to save the innocents. But to insiders who know her, her actions, like the VIP establishment she embodies, represent pure evil incarnate.

So what we have on the one hand are the Luciferian pedophile core at the *BBC* supported by the pedo-government and pedo-royalty and their loyal puppet enabling legions, and on the other hand we have *BBC* staff who as insiders have come to know about their company's appalling pedophilia agenda as an open cesspit secret, but more than likely paid for their knowledge and moral conscience with their lives. Even after the smoke has cleared from the post-Savile debacle, the culture of fear at the *BBC* is still running rampant.[137] Those who offered testimony to the Dame Janet Smith report on the *BBC* did so strictly on an anonymous basis, selectively leaving out so much criminally sinister truth, especially about the wider *BBC* pedophile ring and senior management ignoring it. Few former *BBC* employees dare go public for the obvious reason that they wish to remain alive knowing too many individuals have met the same tragic, untimely fate for simply knowing too much ugly truth.

The closest to a *BBC* critic-ex-employee gone public may be the former *BBC* presenter Bill Oddie who alluded to the longtime Savile abuse being “a running sick joke” within the *BBC*, according to Bill, covered up because of Sir Jimmy’s close ties to Prince Charles.[138] But no former or current *BBC* employee has ever gone public divulging the reality that the *BBC* possessed a wider, still active pedophile ring, much less connected to the even wider VIP establishment’s pedo-network. Again, the risk of death is too grave and certain.

And likely a big part of that reason comes from Jill Dando. No single *BBC* death has carried more weighted impact and implications exposing this diabolical filth percolating for over a half century within the *British Broadcasting Company*, with its interlocking ties to both government and royalty than the brutal murder of Jill Dando in April 1999. Having worked her way up the *BBC* corporate ladder since her 1984 hiring, by the mid-1990s, Jill Dando had grown to be the most public face of women at the *BBC*, fronting the programs Crimewatch from 1995 to her death as well as Holiday and the Six O’ Clock News.[139] In recent years it has been revealed that the ever-popular presenter and broadcaster had been approached by a number of her female colleagues at the Corporation complaining about sexual harassment that regularly included groping and sexual assault.[140]

When fellow *BBC* presenter Sally Jones disclosed to the Crimewatch host that Jimmy Savile had attempted to kiss and grope her in an elevator in the late 1980s, Sally said that Jill’s response was that “she had to fend off plenty of unwelcome advances herself,” adding that Savile was “just a dirty old perv.”[141] Sexual harassment accusations in the 1980s had also been made by two other presenters Liz Kershaw and Miriam O’Reilly as well.[142] Though a *BBC* spokesman said their allegations would be looked into, his next statement was the dead giveaway to indicate nothing would ever change at the *BBC*:

> *We have not seen anything to substantiate these claims.*[143]

That's forever been *BBC*'s spouted mantra excuse washing its filthy, blood-soaked hands from the pedophilia epidemic flourishing for decades within its ranks, conveniently claiming never to have any record of a single complaint against Savile or anyone else. Over time, Jill became not only increasingly aware of the prevailing sexist culture at the *BBC* promoting the hostile work environment for women but came to realize it was far more pathologically sinister, foreboding and dangerous for children. According to a retired *BBC* worker who spoke to the *Daily News* in July 2014, Jill Dando was informed by her co-workers that many of the *BBC*'s "big name stars," DJs, directors, producers and executives were participating in a large organized child sex abuse ring.[144] The anonymous source explained:

> *I think she was quite shocked when told about images of children and that information on how to join this horrible paedophile ring was freely available.*[145]

But when Jill tried to get her Crimewatch bosses to investigate, they completely blew her off, clearly not wanting to get involved in any effort to expose or stop it. While in her mid-30s as an ethically-minded, popular host of a program that was supposed to be all about stopping criminal activity, especially involving helpless, abused children, in the mid-1990s Jill went to *BBC*'s senior management with a dossier of identified perps to let the head honchos know what was going on under their noses (as if they didn't already know).[146] A year before she was killed, as a committed child abuse advocate Jill began actively promoting a campaign program to educate children on how to identify potential pedophiles. Jill's onetime colleague stated:

> *She compiled a file of complaints but she was not really an investigative journalist, just a presenter. She passed the information to someone else and they gave it back. No one wanted to know. I do remember that she gave a file to senior management. I don't think she heard any more.*[147]

No one wanted to broach this alarmingly horrific reality because they placed their jobs and personal safety over the fate of abused children. Jill's friend concluded:

> *Nothing had been done and there seemed to be a policy of turning a blind eye.*[148]

And near two decades later in the Savile aftermath the *BBC* was still turning a blind eye in October 2012, flagrantly still lying its ass off claiming that management was totally unaware of any allegations against Savile or anyone else because no formal complaints were ever registered against sexual predators at the *BBC*:

> *The BBC has conducted searches of the its files and has not found any record of allegations of misconduct by Jimmy Savile during his time at the BBC.*[149]

Not only did Jill Dando inform top management in the mid-1990s, but the head of Radio 1 Douglas Muggeridge suspecting abuse way back in 1973 approached Radio 1 press officer Rodney Collins to request that he ascertain if any local newspaper reporters were investigating Savile for pedophilia crimes.[150] To refute *BBC*'s October 2012 lie that no record of Savile abuse exists, Rodney Collins emerged to boldly state that he received feedback from all the major newspapers in 1973 that though they were aware of rumors circulating around the *BBC* program Savile's Travels where the pedophile was abusing underage girls in his traveling caravan, the unanimous consensus was no newspaper had any intention of reporting on it. This means that not only the behemoth *BBC* knew about Savile's abuse but other major newspaper outlets in the UK were also privy to Savile's crimes, yet chose not to investigate or go public either. This fact - across-the-boards complicity suggests an existing wider pedophilia network extending far beyond Savile or the *BBC*.

Rodney Collins dutifully passed on his shamefully dubious findings to his higher-ups, urging them to launch a full scale internal inquiry to determine who knew what and when, confirming as far back as the early 1970s that senior *BBC* management both knew and were covering up child sexual abuse within its ranks. Collins said that not only his boss was aware of allegations but he believes the *BBC*'s managing director later promoted to *BBC's* top dog Director General Sir Ian Trethowan from 1977 to 1982 also knew.[151] Hardly by accident that queen honored Sir Ian was running the *BBC* during Sir Jimmy's peak years as the most prolific pedophile in British history.

That the UK's so called free press as well as the police refused to touch the organized pedophilia network with a 10 foot pole operating way back in the early 1970s only proves that the world's epicenter has knowingly allowed it to flourish for a very long time. Keep in mind at that time the Luciferian child raping murderer Edward Heath was the British prime minister and his #1 child procurer was none other than Sir Jimmy Savile. One can easily see why the press tolerated and condoned the ongoing evil a near half century ago as the complicit MSM still tolerates to this day, which in large part is why the worldwide child raping network has been permitted to reach epidemic proportions today.

A reminder worth noting here is the plethora of sexual complaints being filed with law enforcement that police were repeatedly having to investigate the *BBC* throughout the late 1960s and again in 1971 with the Claire McAlpine sexual allegations and suicide, and then also separately in 1971 over the so called “payola scandal.”[152] A News of the World undercover exposé implicated *BBC* executives, DJs and producers for rigging the pop charts based on cash giveaways and sexual favors at rampant orgies involving young prostitutes dressed as schoolgirls (some underage) sponsored by record companies, culminating in charges filed in 1973 against a record company executive, a *BBC* producer, a theatrical agent, several record promoters and the madam orgy hostess. All of this nefarious illegal activity at the *BBC* was happening more than two decades prior to Jill Dando alerting the *BBC* top brass in the mid-90s. These facts provide irrefutable evidence that the UK’s largest media corporation sponsored by the national government has been consistently engaging in pedophilia while simultaneously waging a nonstop campaign of widespread deception, denial and criminal cover-up over a span of the last half century.

When Jill Dando was discreetly making waves at the *BBC*, the pedo-cabal establishment grew increasingly nervous over her plan to expose the pedophilia network on her live television program platform Crimewatch. Enter the pedo-plot thickener as two intimates were mysteriously sent to meet Jill Dando not long before she died, one the legendary pop star Sir Cliff Richard whom she became very close friends with[153] and the other Doctor Alan Farthing who ended up her fiancé less than three months prior to her murder. Their engagement was announced at a party attended by Sir Cliff Richard as well as her Crimewatch partner Nick Ross.[154] A mere year and a half before her death, Alan and Jill were set up on a blind date to meet at a dinner party by a mutual friend,[155] no doubt linked to intelligence services, **within mere weeks** after August 31, 1997, when the world lost

Princess Diana, its most iconic British heroine possessing the integrity and will that was on the verge of exposing the royal pedophilia filth.[156]

Born just four months apart in 1961, Diana and Jill were two of United Kingdom's most famous, highly recognizable, attractive, extremely popular women, both independently uncovering widespread pedophilia in the royal family, the *BBC* and government. It's quite conceivable if not probable that Jill and Diana came to know each other, conferred and compared notes on their explosive VIP pedophile findings.[157] While Diana was ready to bring down the royal family, Jill was preparing to unveil and, if need be, bring down the *BBC* pedophilia network, both ultimately unearthing the same child raping murderous cabal. While Jill was making an unwanted ruckus attempting to alert senior *BBC* management of its internal pedo-ring, Diana's assassination was being plotted and carried out as a direct threat to the satanic royal order. With both high profile, well-intentioned do-gooders lined up in the fatal crosshairs of British intelligence, the pedo-establishment was growing terrified that if their bombshell of a secret got out to the public it would utterly destroy UK's rulers. Thus, each one was cold-bloodedly picked off and sacrificed little more than a year and a half apart.

No sooner was Diana's plan to bring down the British monarchy's pedo-network averted, the British intelligence agencies got busy again scheming to assess and potentially eliminate their next highly visible threat, the nationally adored *BBC* darling herself, stirring up a hornet's nest unraveling the same pedo-crime cabal Diana discovered. Enter veteran Mossad-MI5 asset-accused pedophile-mind controlled former rent boy superstar himself, Sir Cliff Richard,[158] along with the "good doctor" Farthing to become Jill's fiancé and royal family's future gynecologist.

Security services dispatched both Sir Cliff as her nearest and dearest confidante and compelled Alan Farthing to wine, dine and romance Jill in order to discern just how much dirt she'd dug up on the British pedo-establishment.[159] Cliff Richard was both feeding her selective information while pumping her for all she knew. Prime Minister Tony Blair tapped intelligence services to conjure up a dirty smear campaign on Jill Dando, the plan being to ruin her reputation providing sufficient grounds for her *BBC* termination. But MI5 couldn't locate any past boyfriends or contacts willing to badmouth Jill even for bribe money.

Meanwhile, Jill was alleged to be researching the massive sexual exploitation of young boys by British establishment VIPs, collecting a dossier containing a number of household names.[160] As a cover, she told her *BBC* supervisors that her latest project was examining the sexual health and status of British adolescents. But shortly before Jill Dando's death, it's been reported that she'd heard that one of her intimate friends was implicated in the VIP pedophilia scandal involving *BBC* personnel, royals, MPs, PMs, high court judges, including top entertainers and influential doctors with VIP friends.[161] A betrayed Jill may well have confronted her fiancé Dr. Farthing and/or her trusted pal Sir Cliff, thus inadvertently sealing her fate. It's been reported that Cliff Richard was caught in the middle, feeling pressured to leak to MI5 and Mossad all he'd learned from Jill, but under increasing conflict and stress over the inevitable consequences it would bring, allegedly checking himself into a health clinic over the next several days.[162]

An alleged British insider, Brian Barrough, left a comment posted on the *Coleman Experience* blogsite:

My memory is beginning to slip but let me tell you what I know. Tony Blair received a phone call at approx 11.40am

> *from Paul Condon who was in charge of the Met Police, the name Jill was mentioned as was becoming troublesome.*[163]

Within three days of the call, Jill Dando was dead. With thoroughly compromised, crossdressing[164] war criminal Blair[165] officially alerted, knowing Jill had enough goods on his New Labor pedo-cabinet that would inevitably destroy both his government and career, to save his own skin as well as the pedophilia empire, Brian Barrough believes that Blair had no other choice but to order a rushed hit on Jill Dando.[166] So the criminal cabal sped into high gear to eliminate its latest threat since neutralizing and satanically sacrificing Diana and Dodi inside the Paris tunnel a year and a half earlier.[167]

In March 2014 a former *BBC* staffer (unknown if the same July 2012 *Daily Star* source) also disclosed that Jill Dando had been investigating her friend Matthew Harding's death in a 1996 helicopter crash.[168] Harding was the deputy chairman of the Chelsea Football Club and had confided in his Irish journalist friend Veronica Guerin about his concerns over rampant corruption and money laundering inside his popular sport football, and that was years ahead of the FIFA scandal (covered in Chapter 17). Guerin was then reportedly murdered while working on a Dublin drug probe just a few months before Harding's death. Only four months prior to his own death, in a panic Harding shared his growing fears with Jill that his life was in danger. Of course the accident was conveniently blamed on helicopter pilot error and "confusion."[169] An inside UK government source leaked:

> *Matthew had been nosing around in something he shouldn't and Jill was trying to find out the results of a blood test on the pilot.*[170]

It's been said that Harding was close to Blair and Mandelson until he too learned of their Mossad controlled UK blackmail operation compromising so many British VIP pedophiles.[171]

While Harding died suspiciously under mysterious circumstances, his two journalist friends he confidentially confided in with his insider information - Veronica Guerin and Jill Dando - both wound up murder victims.

Jill Dando and fellow *BBC* presenter Alice Beer both received death threat letters sent four weeks prior to Jill's murder. Yet the police never bothered contacting Alice or Jill, failing to follow up on threats that vowd to kidnap, rape and murder them.[172] Only a total inside job would "overlook" such blatant details.

By the time Jill was killed, she was basically living with her fiancé Alan Farthing in Chiswick. According to police records, on the morning of April 26th, 1999, after cooking breakfast for the doctor, Jill left his home for a brief shopping trip, afterwards traveling back to her own residence in South West London where the alerted killer lie in waiting.[173] Only Farthing and perhaps one or two of Jill's closest friends (like Sir Cliff) would have known she'd be returning to her home at that particular time.

A postal worker delivering mail at Jill's address noticed a man watching him about an hour and a half prior to the shooting. Less than an hour before Jill was dead, a window cleaner also noticed a man standing outside Jill's home talking on a cell phone.[174] A number of witnesses recalled that a blue Range Rover was spotted repeatedly in the area prior to the killing and again leaving the crime scene at high speed afterwards. And despite the multitude of witnesses that caught a fair glimpse of a dark-haired man near 6 feet tall with a Mediterranean or Israeli looking appearance estimated to be about 40 years old wearing a suit periodically talking on his cellphone at or near Jill's address prior to the hit, the police apparently never followed up with questioning them or simply ignored eyewitness accounts in what clearly was an intentionally botched investigation ordered from the top never to be solved.

As Jill was about to place her key in the front door at 11:32AM, the professional assassin stealthily emerged to confront her on her doorstep.[175] Grabbing her arm and pushing her to the ground with his right hand, with his left he placed the barrel of his handgun in direct contact with her head just above her left temple and swiftly fired off a 9mm single, round killing her instantly. The entire deadly encounter lasted all of 20 seconds. Without a drop of blood on him, the well-dressed hitman calmly, briskly walked away.

More than one witness including her neighbor Richard Hughes, heard her startled scream then saw her killer leaving her home.[176] The automatic pistol placed against her head apparently was modified to muffle the gunshot sound. It wasn't for another 14 minutes that another neighbor noticed her slumped body in a pool of blood. The professional hitman speculated to either be an intelligence operative or a hired contract mobster was seen by others running down the street. Perhaps escaping in the Range Rover or slipping into the local underground subway station, the killer vanished, never to be seen again. With witnesses galore and London per capita possessing more installed closed circuit TV cameras than any other city in the world, each Londoner caught on camera on average 300 times a day,[177] it's a shameful abomination and diabolical disgrace that Metro Police have not solved this near 20 year old murder mystery. The world's pedo-capital of the world goes unmatched in its overt contempt for justice.

Chief investigator Hamish Campbell and his team of detectives 20 days into the initial investigation concluded that the key to solving the murder case hinged on the phone contacts made with Jill on the morning of April 26th.[178] The fact that in the last several months of her life, Jill spent next to no time at her own place but was there that morning could have only been known by a select few people, Farthing, Cliff Richard and perhaps one or two others that she may have spoken to just hours before her death. Crime expert John McVicar commented on the then 3-week old police investigation:

> *Detectives are convinced that anyone who wanted to harm her needed to be in contact with Jill herself. And only someone close would be able to call Jill and casually inquire about her plans – as Jill was obviously unaware of what lay in store for her until that final scream.*[179]

Because the investigators appeared to be on track to swiftly solving what should have been an easy case to crack based on so much available evidence, less than a month into the probe after narrowing their focus to Jill's April 26 morning phone contacts, MI5 abruptly yanked Campbell off the investigation, replacing him with Detective Chief Superintendent Brian Edwards.[180] Incredibly, just two weeks later the police inquiry was strangely halted until September. With Britain's biggest manhunt little more than a month into operation, the insane decision to shut down the investigation is pure self-sabotage, only demonstrating how corrupt and determined the British establishment was to ensure that the ugly truth of the UK pedo-empire gets completely squashed. As if this overt obstruction of justice isn't brazenly criminal enough, DCS Edwards suddenly resigned the first week of December and Campbell was placed back "in command." Playing musical director chairs with the probe is yet one more giveaway that the UK police were never actually in charge but totally manipulated and controlled from behind the scenes at every turn by intelligence services determined to keep the case unsolved.

By this time the higher-ups had "reprogrammed" Campbell to toe the line as an obedient order follower and by March

2000, he was mouthing the lone gunman script[181] handed him as standard state protocol for virtually every false flag cover-up ever committed. Already a year into the butchered investigation, reacting to public pressure to find the killer, law enforcement honed in on their man Barry George, falsely arresting him in late May 2000 and little more than a year later the innocent man living just a half mile away with a 75 IQ deemed an expendable target, was found guilty and facing a lifetime sentence for a crime he never committed.[182]

Another anomaly was within an hour after Jill's death, Clarence Mitchell, the MI5-infiltrating *BBC* journalist[183] happened to be the first reporter on the crime scene.[184] Later it was Mitchell recruited by Prime Minister Blair as director of his government's media monitoring unit, i.e., running a media operations campaign of propaganda disinformation doing double duty as spin master first unprecedentedly representing the Blair government in the Madeleine McCann disappearance and then in 2007 representing Maddie's shady parents as their personal PR spokesman. No sooner did he abruptly leave the *BBC* for the Blair appointed civil service post, the UK was rocked by the 7/7 London bombings. Mitchell's remarkable meteoric rise from journalist to public media expert smacks of British intelligence infiltration all the way to the top. What are the odds as a *BBC* reporter of getting the scoop on the Jill Dando assassination[185] a year and a half after being assigned two other big murder cases - the Paris Princess Di aftermath followed shortly by Sydney's Michael Hutchence fake hanging?[186] Always the very first bloke dramatically on the scene at major state executed violent events wherever they are, no doubt as an intel mole assisted by security services. With a nose for "smelling out" state sponsored assassinations and false flag terrorism as they occur, this guy is the "Johnny-come-early" on-the-spot for Britain's biggest news events, not so subtly leaving behind his undercover calling card.

Early on after Jill's murder, rumors began circulating that Alan Farthing may have had a conspiratorial hand or left fingerprints himself on Jill's murder, with claims he actually came face-to-face with the killer but "forgot" to tell police. Like so many squandered leads, after a few hours of questioning, law enforcement appeared to go through the motions taking direct orders from security forces to give the bereaved fiancé a free pass.[187]

Again consistent with the Jimmy Savile case, clearly following orders from above, the Metropolitan Police intentionally blundered the Dando murder probe from beginning to end. Detectives never bothered to interview Jill's neighbors who witnessed 11 potential suspects observed on her street that morning who were never identified.[188] Nor did they even pay attention to two key witnesses who allegedly observed the killer in action, next door neighbor Hughes and the passer-by in a car Barry Lindsey. Barry happened to be driving by the crime scene literally as the shooting was taking place and saw a dark haired, olive complexioned man confronting a terrified Jill Dando standing at her doorstep at the outset of a murder that took only seconds to complete.[189] Lindsey told police that he even heard a muffled single gunshot as he was turning the corner off Dando's street not far away but, already driving away, it failed to register that he'd just witnessed a murder taking place right before his very eyes and ears. Months later when he did report what he saw, Barry Lindsey said the police by that time were only interested in nailing their suspect Barry George. When they showed Lindsey a photo of George and he told them he was not the man he observed in front of Jill's home, the interview was over. The police had already targeted their framed suspect, and his guilt or innocence didn’t matter in the least.

Meanwhile, Barry George languished in a jail cell falsely imprisoned for eight long years before he won on his second appeal a retrial that finally admitted lack of forensic evidence and he was released in early July 2008. One would think that Dr. Farthing and Jill’s family would not rest until the real killer - obviously still at large - was brought to justice. Yet with no further questions asked, they wanted the case immediately closed.[190] Another gross miscarriage of justice resulted when George lost his formal requests for financial compensation for wrongly having eight years stolen from his life. But the judge absurdly ruled he was not quite “innocent enough,” only reinforcing the foregone conclusion that from start to finish this was one royal government hit job done on both Jill and Barry as well as every man, woman and child in Great Britain.

So predictably to this very day, the April 26th, 1999 assassination of Jill Dando remains conveniently “unsolved” for one obvious reason. Like Princess Diana who was ready to take down the British establishment for its murderous, pedophilic ways, Jill was fatally gunned down, also deemed too much of a threat knowing that Savile and the larger *BBC* sex ring were part of a vast gangster network for decades regularly procuring expendable children for the British VIP sickos.

The Scotland Yard insists that after interviewing over 5000 people[191] and amassing 2500 witness statements and 3700 exhibits within the first six months alone,[192] the police exhausted every potential lead that after a year incredulously led nowhere. With mounting pressure to solve this high profile crime as all of Britain was watching and waiting, after a year of nonstop fumbling and stonewalling, the investigators claimed that they had found their man and the rush to judgment was on. Based on a supposed speck of gunpowder residue invisible to the naked eye found (or planted) in Barry George's coat pocket, he was railroaded straight to murder conviction.[193] Scarcely a year after his false arrest, Barry George was sentenced to life in prison. It mattered little that he was the wrong man as police purposely overlooked leads on at least 100 known suspects along with dozens of significant witnesses never interviewed that would have led to solving Jill's murder.[194] The government had the means to solve the crime but never the motive nor the will.

That was never part of the elite's agenda, so key witnesses were wholesale systematically screened out, dismissed or ignored,[195] no doubt like the VIP child abuse victims calling in to Rantzen's ChildLine over the years. More than any other nation on earth, the insulated UK crime cabal system, thoroughly infiltrated by blackmail-controlled pedo-enabling puppets in government, law enforcement, high courts, the media, military, child welfare and charity services ensure that all the puppet masters and their minions continue to live above the law while committing the most egregious, nonstop crimes on earth.

Adding insult to injury, the top cop in charge of investigating the Jill Dando murder, Hamish Campbell, because he'd proven himself such a loyal order follower, was duly rewarded for failing to find the real killer, and tactically redeployed to later head the Savile Operation Yewtree farce. In 2013, after a 40 year career, the last four capped as Scotland Yard's Detective Chief Superintendent at Homicide and Serious Crime Command, following his dictated script to the end, Hamish Campbell had the audacity to claim:

We, the Met police, did everything we could to understand that murder and bring the person responsible to court, and we did that, twice.[196]

But before his retirement, DCS Campbell also ended up in May 2011 assigned as top cop investigating the biggest case in UK since Jill Dando - the Madeleine McCann disappearance in Portugal. After two Home Secretaries denied requests by the McCann parents calling for a review of their missing four year old daughter's alleged abduction on May 3, 2007, PM David Cameron begrudgingly gave in to launch Operation Grange, a reexamination of the case. The same shady players like Hamish Campbell and Clarence Mitchell who were closely associated with the Dando murder investigation were repeatedly enlisted to do the dirty bidding of covering-up British establishment scandals.[197] They were called to duty in the McCann case because it exposes the criminality of both British intelligence as well as the international pedophilia network, whitewashing the involvement of such pedophilia notables as pedo-MP Clement Freud whose estate was in such close proximity to Maddie's disappearance, Clement's pedo-buddies the Podesta brothers as guests in his home at the time,[198] and accused-pedo-neighbor Sir Cliff who also lived nearby. The Madeleine McCann case warrants a chapter of its own in number 26.

In recent years, ex-detective of *ITV* Savile Exposure fame, investigator Mark Williams-Thomas, has launched his own investigation into “operation kill Jill,” commenting on Metro’s shoddy probe:

> *I’ve never reviewed a case where there is so much information that was never followed up… There are eleven unidentified people still unaccounted for in the locality, there are over 100 potential suspects, there is other information naming people and specifically information on how this crime was carried out* .[199]

Though as of August 2018 Thomas claims to know who the real killer is, we’re still waiting on his full disclosure.[200] Meanwhile, both he and law enforcement insist they are working together to solve among Britain’s biggest unsolved murder mysteries. While Metro Police release statements assuring the public that if new information and leads emerge in the Jill Dando case, it will not hesitate to reopen a new investigation. That said, UK law enforcement’s track record has only shown that it has done everything in its power to avoid capturing the real Dando killer, knowing if it does, British pedophilia’s house of cards will undoubtedly come crashing down. No one’s holding their breath waiting for that to happen.

Meanwhile, a hitman by trade surfaced also insisting that he too knows who the professional hitman is among the suspect list in police possession, but refuses to publicly specify the killer’s identity fearing for his own safety.[201]

As fake news subterfuge, a number of other ongoing speculative explanations have been regularly peddled before Britons as sleight-of-hand decoys to answer why Britain’s perennial girl next door and 1997 *BBC* TV Personality of the Year was shot dead at point blank range on her front doorstep in broad daylight. The most persistent theory is a mob hit over Jill Dando uncovering organized crime, but also an IRA revenge attack was circulated, and then there's the one that wouldn't go away - a Serbian warload seeking revenge for the NATO war crime bombing of a Serbian radio station.[202] A decade after Jill's co-presenter's Crimestopper helpline suddenly went dead perfectly co-timed during the critical hours seeking witnesses right after her murder, in January 2009 Crimestopper was at it again spewing more diversionary disinfo. Sounding almost like a joke – you here the one about the drunken Serbian in a West Midlands bar? It was reported that incoming Crimestopper calls were claiming a Serbian national in between downing shots of liquor in a West Midlands pub was bragging to his fellow barflies that he was the real Jill Dando murderer.[203] Then after that preposterous lead went cold, suddenly it was back to the old Serbian connection all over again when a Belgrade widow began claiming that the same Serbian hitman 15 days prior to Jill's hit bumped off her journalist husband as well.[204]

Another bizarre twist to this government plotted Jill Dando assassination chases the *BBC* rabbit hole even deeper into the conspiratorial realm. Crimewatch founder and Jill's co-presenter Nick Ross continued playing a suspicious role as a security services shill after her demise.[205] One more recap seems in order. It was Nick Ross who went on record saying if given half a chance, he'd be checking out child pornography images on the web, alluding to actually doing so as part of his program Crimewatch. Again, his CrimeStopper helpline mysteriously went down right after news that Jill was murdered, an obvious sabotage attempt to prevent her killer from being identified. Then years later his CrimeStopper propaganda venue was the conduit source promoting the bogus Serbian connection again. And with her pedo-complicit cousin Dame Esther Rantzen, Nick Ross' wife Sarah Caplan co-founded *BBC*'s ChildLine accused of screening out called in reports of VIP pedophilia. A so called friend and TV partner like Nick Ross begs the question, who needs enemies?

But there's more on this shady character. On the night of Jill's death, Nick Ross on Newsnight began reporting that retaliatory crimes against judges, lawyers and police are almost unknown,[206] making readymade emphatic statements within hours of Jill's murder categorically denying Crimewatch had anything to do with Jill's bullet hole through her brain.[207] From the get-go this in and of itself is a dead giveaway for planting deception and attempting to manipulate and interfere with both the ensuing investigation as well as public opinion. Every real crime expert knows that just hours after any murder, you cannot definitively rule anything out. Right away this unexpected, premature gesture proves, if not guarantees, Nick Ross is not a crime expert at all but simply a hired stooge working for state security services intent on hiding the truth in favor of pushing misleading, false information. In a blatantly transparent ploy, Ross attempted to willfully steer and manipulate both Jill's murder inquiry and public attention away from his own *BBC* program, away from any *BBC*-government linkage to intelligence agencies, and especially away from the *BBC*'s larger British VIP pedo-network to which he, his wife and cousin-in-law have all been longtime designated gatekeepers.

Fourteen years after Jill's death, in May 2013 Ross was still trying to shape, mold and control public opinion, writing a propagandist op-ed piece for the *Daily Mail* desperately attempting to debunk various conspiracy theories surrounding the Dando murder that he himself played a role in, claiming none had any basis in fact, that it was far from a professional hit but a chance encounter with a bungling amateur,[208] which is actually the furthest thing from the truth or established consensus. But as more people began considering the breaking news coming out that Jill knew about Britain's pedophilia epidemic and was violently silenced for it, the elitist plant Nick Ross was once again doing his order-following duty to frantically ward off the growing population from believing Jill was in fact murdered because his *BBC* was so steeped in pedo-cabal ratlines extending from Sir Jimmy to PMs and MPs, the Queen, her hubby, their sons Charles and Andrew onto Jeffrey Epstein, the Mossad, the Clintons, Podestas and Bushes. And Nick - the "child porn's worth checking out" guy - as a cabal gatekeeping disinfo agent pretending to be the Crimestopper "crime expert" was feebly trying to put out the spreading flames of truth threatening to burn down his cabal that he's no doubt sworn to protect.

Nick Ross even broke the law in an overt attempt to obstruct justice by interfering with the Barry George court outcome. In 2007 stakes to hide the truth were rising so high that Mr. "Crime Expert" took it upon himself to write an open letter to the appeals court judges in a last ditch effort to sway them to deny a framed innocent man his long overdue justice. Ross claimed in his letter he "remains confident that Barry George killed Jill Dando" with his *Daily Mail* headline entitled, "I know Barry George killed my friend Jill."[209] Again, with friends like Nick, Jill didn't need enemies because in her own TV co-host, she'd already met her Judas. Fortunately his desperate, extremist, illicit tactics failed as the innocent man was released the following year.[210]

Still in another *Daily Mail* article written by Nick Ross in August 2015 in the wake of the Ted Heath pedophile allegations, the so called crime expert called for leaving investigations of past prime ministers from so many years ago to historians rather than risk fueling the rise of another satanic panic driven witch-hunt by the public promoted by an over-reactive press.[211] Once again voicing the pedo-apologist POV, Ross is clearly minimizing pedophilia as a public threat to children and clearly does not want the British to find out that their leaders, past and present, are pedophiles or pedo-enablers, again overtly attempting to shield the nation's VIP crime network from further scrutiny and public awareness.

Meanwhile, switching back to Jill's beloved Alan, less than a decade after her death and just days after his fiancé's accused's acquittal, Dr. Farthing's fast track medical career suddenly skyrocketed at the relative young age of 45, when in 2008 he was catapulted from virtual obscurity to appointed next royal family head surgeon,[212] the youngest to serve the royal kingdom in British history.[213] Cherry picked to be Queen Elizabeth's official surgeon-gynecologist, 2008 proved to be a banner year for Dr. Farthing. Once he chose to not reopen the investigation of Jill's murder days after Barry George's prison release, with his role in the Dando affair completed, it appears that the royals duly rewarded him for his services rendered vis-à-vis his silent complicity in his former fiancé's murder. At this juncture he was also free to enter into holy matrimony for a second time, marrying a fellow St. Mary's doctor with whom they share a child.[214] The fateful events surrounding this mysterious, low key MD have fueled speculation that the British crown was paying him off, having already proven he could keep their murderous secrets intact.

But mysterious, highly suspicious deaths just seem to follow this doctor. As head medical surgeon for the royals, Farthing has overseen the births of Prince William and Kate Middleton's three children "delivered" at the Lindo Wing of his St. Mary's hospital in Paddington.[215] But there's added reason the monarchy chose Farthing. The first week of December 2012, Kate Middleton entered King Edward VII

Hospital under the phony pretense that she was suffering from morning sickness two months pregnant with Prince George.[216] In actuality, Prince William and vanity-stricken Kate at 92 pounds arrived there to receive treatment for egg extraction and in vitro fertilization for a surrogate pregnancy to retain her slender delicate figure. As the future king's wife, she need not bother herself bearing the unpleasantries of pregnancy by simply hiring a surrogate to bear the inconvenience of carrying Prince George to full term.

The day after William and Kate left the hospital, December 7th, 2012 should be a day of infamy and shame for the royal family because a nurse on Dr. Farthing's hospital staff, Jacintha Saldanha apparently became the next state executed victim found in her hospital nursing quarters, "hanging" from her scarf in another staged suicide with her feet still touching the floor.[217] A nurse with easy access to drugs would simply not choose to kill herself by such a violent, iffy method of hanging from her wardrobe, much less leave a husband, son and daughter she loved who loved her. It makes no sense at all. But the given reason for her so called suicide is too absurd to be believed: Jacintha committed suicide as a result of growing so humiliated and distraught after taking a call from a couple of idiot radio DJ imposters in Australia posing as the queen and Charles, Jacintha couldn't simply live with herself for shaming the royal family. Yet if that was what drove her to kill herself, during her daily calls back home to India, the wife and mother made no mention of this silly, insignificant incident to her own family. Obviously she was not distraught in the least over the minor buffoonery. The MI5 executioners sunk to an all-time low slaying a nurse unwilling to play along with the royal game of deceitful charade of faking Kate's pregnancy. To once again avoid public scandal, the royals and their minions chose to violently silence another perceived threat as their Modus Operandi. But then the royals can be confident that with their good doctor in charge Farthing, mum's the word.

Regarding the royal surgeon's places of employment at St Mary's hospital in Paddington where he still remains a gynecological consultant[218] as well as the supervising physician of all royal births along with the Royal Brompton hospital in Chelsea, he has been accused of participating in the unlawful removal of children's thymus glands. Until the year Jill was murdered, the British public and parents were completely unaware that the UK National Health Service maintained a clandestine nationwide policy across Britain's hospitals where, without family consent, removing ill-fated children's organs during major surgery was standard practice,[219] not unlike Israel's standard practice of harvesting Palestinian young people's organs in their care and custody.[220] Of course organ trafficking, especially when extracted from children, has become big business in both China[221] and Israel as the cabal hub for illegal organ transplant operations,[222] Big Pharma research[223] as well as occult practice worldwide during satanic ritual child sex abuse and child sacrifice.[224]

Speaking of Farthing's Royal Brompton hospital, the pioneering heart surgeon responsible for the world's first successful heart transplant in 1980, Dr. Magdo Yacoub, ran the children's cardiac unit at the Royal Brompton for decades and in 1995 founded the international children's charity Chain of Hearts. One of his charity's trustees, the once renowned Dr. Phillip Bonhoeffer, was charged with sexually abusing underage children while working as a Chain of Hearts physician in Kenya as well as abusing a 10-year old French boy with sex crimes committed against children from 1995 to 2008.[225]

In 2007 17-year veteran *BBC* newsreader Anna Ford quit her pedophile saturated network in disgust, tired of *BBC*'s "atmosphere of fear"[226] as her cited reason for departure. But in an interview just two days after Jill's 1999 murder, Anna Ford asked Dr. Farthing, "Does it worry you if it may remain unsolved?"[227] That's an extremely odd, puzzling, telling question posed before the deceased even gets buried in the ground and the manhunt for her murderer and investigation among UK's largest barely get underway. As a *BBC* insider, did she know something the rest of us didn't? But then considering it was a state executed assassination to urgently cover up the long infested pedo-epidemic raging atop Britain's diabolical elite, it's a no-brainer to conclude that by calculated design, Jill's murder will never be solved. No wonder Ford asked, she was merely reading from a script prepping the public to neither expect justice nor any closure - ever.

Switching gears to Jill Dando's chummy mystery pal Sir Cliff Richard, the always tanned, leather-skinned singing sensation now 78 this year (same as cabal friend Esther Rantzen) is not the Christian celibate he faithfully claims to be for well over half a century.[228] Sir Cliff was questioned several times by Metro Police pertaining to Jill's murder.[229] Speaking of mum's the word, no doubt Richard knows a lot more than he let on with the police. But then this man is thoroughly protected, armed with Cliff's law where no one can even associate him with pedophilia without a huge lawsuit.

All the more reason for a little bit of history on this legend in our time. He is reputed to have signed the Elm Guest Home ledger as "Kitty."[230] Cliff Richard has reportedly been accused by at least nine alleged victims abused in their youth at the notorious Elm Guest House.[231] For several years this pedo-party palace was a boy brothel made infamous by prominent pedophile politicians, cabinet ministers, police and intelligence chiefs as well as entertainers enjoying sex with young lads supplied from local group homes, something Sir Jimmy Savile is known to have specialized in working “under cover” (Savile’s words) as an MI5 operative.[232] Recall from last chapter that Cliff was also accused of molesting an underage boy in 1985 at the Billy Graham crusade.[233]

Between 1979 and 1982 Carole Kasir and her husband Haroon were the Elm Guest House operators who contracted with pedophiles from the Spartacus Club run by a former Catholic priest to provide their pad full of trafficked in “rent boys” from nearby Grafton Close children’s home for the VIP regulars.[234] Haroon used to brag about Savile being his best friend until Sir Jimmy stopped showing up and snubbed him.[235] Even the local head of Richmond social services was implicated as chief pipeline procurer and fellow Elm House club member. Solicitor for the Richmond Council responsible for the care [and abuse] at Grafton Close home was none other than future MP power player Keith Vaz, a disgraced pedophile and pedo-enabler-protector yet still shamelessly sitting in Parliament.[236] He’s gone from one scandal to the next but the British political system is so corrupt, he remains a fixture. The Richmond council, police and social services were all in deep protecting their pedophilia operations, caught ignoring victim complaints and losing files.[237] Police even gave the council a heads-up before conducting a raid on the Elm Guest House.[238]

In 1990 47-year old Carole Kasir suspiciously died of an insulin overdose as she was working with social worker Mary Moss to divulge her explosive secrets as yet more probable foul play to keep the lid tightly sealed on the VIP pedo-ring.[239] Despite corrupt police raids on Mary’s home confiscating and destroying incriminating evidence that would have been used to convict the powerful pedophile guests, subservient police following orders from their pedo-masters were caught blatantly obstructing justice in order to shield VIPs from accountability. But fortunately the raid did not prevent the social advocates Mary Moss and Christopher Fay from securing and uploading records to show horrendous sexual abuse by a who's who list of British VIPs that include famous cabinet ministers, MPs and lords along with heads of MI5, MI6 and police chiefs.[240]

After retired whistleblowing child protection manager Peter McKelvie compiled overwhelming evidence of pervasive child abuse over the last 20 years, he submitted his report to MP Tom Watson who in October 2012 dramatically confronted PM David Cameron on the House floor, forcing him to launch a half-ass Westminster police probe into prominent UK politicians' historic child sexual abuse.[241] McKelvie estimated that up to 40 members of the House of Commons and Lords were either full blown pedophiles or confirmed pedophile protectors.[242]

Peter McKelvie who has dedicated his entire adult professional life to protecting children and exposing those who harm them, especially from high places, quickly became a target for character assassination by the pedophilia cabal when in 2014 he was hired as a consultant by the national Independent Inquiry of Child Abuse. An October 2015 *Daily Mail* hit piece written by Stephen Wright and Sam Greenhill launched a smear campaign intended to discredit McKelvie's integrity, accusing Peter of making false allegations in an attempted "plot" to destroy the political career of a Tory cabinet minister.[243]

For his career expertise in accessing and exposing the truth on behalf of child victims for so many years, McKelvie was recruited as a consultant member of the Victims and Survivors Consultative Panel for the beleaguered

Independent Inquiry into Child Sexual Abuse. But right after the *Daily Mail* article attacking his credibility, bogusly claiming his plot to ruin a Tory minister's career, in October 2015 Peter McKelvie resigned his position maintaining he would soon be needed as an inquiry witness, stepping down to avoid conflict of interest.[244] But in actuality he was neutered by the destructive powers whose self-interest is to ensure that the full pedophilia truth never gets revealed to the public and ridding McKelvie as a thorn in the cabal's side had to be chalked up as another victory for the VIP child rapists as yet another child advocate is court muzzled.

Several years earlier the West Mercia Police granted McKelvie full access to the diary belonging to prominent deceased civil servant-pedophile-PIE founder Peter Righton.[245] Peter McKelvie subsequently learned of Righton's child abuse dating back to 1957 along with group home roundups procuring trafficked kids to VIP sex parties at locations like Dolphin Square and Elm Guest House. Though Righton died in 2007, thanks to McKelvie, at least the truth about his extensive serial crime history supplying victims to VIPs ultimately did emerge. One reason Peter took his 20 year criminal findings to MP Tom Watson in the 2012 post-Savile aftermath was the fact that the prolific pedophile-VIP pimp Righton had only been given a 1992 slap on the hand for possessing child pornography images.[246] This classic case of another predatory fox guarding the pedo-house consisting of UK's group homes held top positions with Department of Health, National Children's Bureau and the National Institute of Social Work and wrote national policy on childcare for UK social services. Yet McKelvie determined that Righton had a connection in Malta where they were trafficking child victims. Because Peter the real child protection manager had unearthed the international pedophilia network, including Righton's PIE contacts in

Sweden and Norway, McKelvie's seminal investigative work was immediately shut down.

The biggest reason motivating Peter McKelvie to become a whistleblower was the fact that his investigative research and professional experience led him to realize that powerful, famous MPs, Lords and cabinet ministers were molesting and raping UK's throwaway kids for years and never investigated or brought to justice. Peter McKelvie is a hero for following up on leads and uncovering sex abuse committed by a couple of other, still living pedophiles associated with Righton. McKelvie's work helped convict Righton's longtime living partner Richard Alston, brother of diplomat Robert Alston and a former PIE Treasurer and longtime schoolteacher Charles Napier, half-brother of MP John Whittingdale.[247] For decades Napier abused 23 of his students between 1967 and 1983 that eventually led to his arrest and conviction in 2014. Whittendale had to have been aware of his brother's proclivities for abusing young boys and as Home Secretary Brittan's advisor when Leon received the pedophile dossier from MP Geoffrey Dickens in 1983, he also had to have been privy to known Westminster pedophiles.[248] In view of his grandstanding objections to Savile's reign of terror, the question needs to be answered as to what Whittingdale did to safeguard children in harm's way based on his insider knowledge of pedophilia in both his family and workplace.

In 1994 Peter McKelvie's valiant efforts to secure authorization for a proposal that his already established interdisciplinary team consisting of a senior police officer, two seasoned investigative journalists and child social workers from Peter's social services office were turned down in forming a joint task force with law enforcement and then when his boss retired that same year, his office and team were disbanded.[249] Due to so many abuse crimes committed outside his local jurisdiction, Peter McKelvie was forced to turn over his incriminating findings exposing the Westminster VIP pedophiles to various local authorities. And because orders to suppress evidence of child abuse in the UK has always emanated from the top, the prime ministers' Home Office and/or intelligence agencies or higher, police investigations throughout the nation have never gotten off the ground. When victims' accusations were filed in the 1980s right through to this day, it's always been the same old despicable story of next to no arrests and even fewer convictions.

Out of the dozen or so post-Savile Scotland Yard spawned police investigations, from 2012's Operation Yewtree to 2013's Operation Fernbridge launched specifically to probe both past and current allegations surfacing from Elm Guest House, not one VIP pedophile guest guilty of abusing boys was ever brought to justice, and Fernbridge was closed in March 2015.[250] While the still unscathed perpetrators with their stellar reputations intact die off from natural "old age" causes, their younger victims suffering from lifelong effects directly from their abuse are dying in significant numbers at much earlier ages, either taking their own lives or under mysterious circumstances. Chapter 25 delves far deeper into this shameful Westminster marathon scandal and its ongoing cover-up feeding off the lifeblood of innocent children with absolute impunity.

Famous pedophiles at Elm Guest Home at times used phony names to sign in on the guest lists, like Cliff Richard aka "Kitty." Yet with authentic documents still in existence that include household names listed as guests, zero arrests or convictions have been made from the Elm Guest House of Horror.[251] A few years ago Sir Cliff exercised his legal clout and formidable VIP influence to secure a High Court super injunction prohibiting his name from even being associated with the notorious Elm Guest House scandal,[252] and that was before this year's landmark legal victory for the ever-popular, permanently unreachable senior citizen.

As covered in Chapter 19, the Crown Prosecution Service in June 2016 claimed not enough evidence was generated to forward his case to trial. And the rest is history after the *BBC* and South Yorkshire police sensationalized their August 2014 raid on his home and the July 2018 court decision granting Cliff Richard damages for violating his privacy upwards of over four millions pounds and counting to ensure that in the future famous people arrested for pedophilia (or any crime) never show up in newspapers or on TV ever again without news companies risking a fortune. Only after formal criminal charges against known powerful figures are filed will they ever go public in the media. And with so many foxes in government, law enforcement and courts, that will likely never happen.

Of course this latest legal development was designed to seal off protection and impunity for those at the top of the pedo-food chain from ever having to abide by manmade laws. After all, they delude themselves into believing they are gods, beyond all judgment and reproach, so they see it as their natural Luciferian earthly privilege to live like gods above lowly manmade laws. In the United Kingdom, the ruling elite is now virtually unreachable, making certain that the pedo-epidemic raging at our planet's epicenter will only continue thriving to rage on indefinitely at vulnerable children's expense around the world. If you're an MP or a high court judge or royal family member or famous entertainer, you can rape, sodomize, cannibalize and murder children and adults at will until your heart's content. What they fail to realize is if karma fails to catch up to them in this lifetime, then God most certainly will.

To see how we got to this unholy place and time with the beta tested, Teflon man himself, exploring sir pop legend’s humble roots may be incisively useful. Cliff Richard arrived in this world in October 1940 as Harry Rodger Webb in India, a top recruiting source for British intelligence.[253] Harry, his parents and three sisters moved to England in 1948 where his father secured a job with Thorn Electrical Industries (also known as EMI).[254] Electrical and Mechanical Instruments sold music in its heyday throughout the 1960s but was also a major producer of military electronics within UK’s defense industry, establishing a crucial front for British military intelligence operations to covertly expand its cultural reach and influence among the younger British population.[255] Through Tavistock-developed mind control methods, UK’s security services are notorious for recruiting and transforming cute little boys into future sex slaves, spies and assassins. That they are bred to evolve into iconic legendary singers only makes them more invaluable as a cabal controlled tool for the UK-US-Israel axis-of-evil.

Satanic elements merged with military intelligence to transform the counterculture movement into an orgiastic youth drug-fest back in the swinging 1960s.[256] CIA’s concocted mix of MK Ultra mind control, international drug pushing[257] and satanic sex cults like Alistair Crowley’s OTO have been infused and embedded into popular culture through the globalized entertainment industry.[258] Deployment of mind controlled sex slaves in a grand social engineering experiment has been misusing humanity as guinea pigs as part of the false propaganda machine to brainwash and achieve mass mind control. Scientology founder L. Ron Hubbard[259] was once a naval intelligence operative who with Jack Parsons, a leading NASA rocket scientist, embraced Crowley’s demonic sex occult teachings.[260] The subversively fascist and sinister dogma underpinning the CIA manufactured “peace, love and freedom" movement of the sixties also simultaneously promoted the burgeoning rise of modern art as a Cold War artifice used as an anti-Soviet psyops weapon[261] just as the Cold War itself was also an internationalists' New World Order creation.[262]

From both sides of the Atlantic, the US-British intelligence apparatus launched the careers of many superstar artists from the 1950s, 60s and 70s right up to the present as a combined means of both social control and social engineering through promoting the lifestyle mantra of "sex, drugs and rock n' roll," in the short term to neutralize the antiwar movement in Vietnam but in the long term to destroy family, nationalism and moral and spiritual values as barriers to their New World Order.[263] Operation Paperclip and establishing MK Ultra Monarch mind control through drugs, torture and child sexual abuse in order to mass produce sex slaves, assassins and spies was well underway by the 1950s (see Chapter 9). NWO opponents in JFK, RFK and MLK were all systematically eliminated[264] and the "New Age" of Aquarius promoting rampant sexual promiscuity and hedonism in youth generations was ushered in to stay over the long haul. This socially engineered culture of "anything goes" paves the way for pedophilia as sexual deviance, perversion and predation to systematically and ritualistically be practiced by today's elites as an effective means to an end in order to gain increasing acceptance, power and control over the human race. And thus far, unfortunately for children and humanity alike, it's been working like a charm for them according to sinister plan.

In the same vein as drug and mind controlled Elvis Presley, [265] across the pond likewise Cliff Richard was selected and spawned in England as a covert intel operator for both the Mossad and MI5.[266] Thus, the meteoric rise of Cliff, the Beatles, the Rolling Stones and other British Invasion groups of the sixties were all bi-products of Tavistock and British secret service. In America such artists as John Phillips of the Mamas and the Papas, Jim Morrison of the Doors (whose father was an admiral in naval intelligence) and Jimmy Hendrix were products of this same intelligence apparatchik. The late journalist and author Dave McGowan's treatise documenting the CIA's Laurel Canyon Hippie Movement incisively and graphically exposes this mass mind control phenomenon.[267]

And in the UK, it was intelligence services that co-opted the *BBC* and its hardcore pedophile DJs such as Alan Freeman, Jimmy Savile and Chris Dunning to name a few teamed up with pedo-notables from the music industry like producer Joe Meeks, manager Brian Epstein and impresario Jonathon King to corrupt, exploit and abuse British youth throughout the swinging 60s, spawning the age of "anything goes" into faithful practice reminiscent of Crowley's "do what thou wilt."[268] But the perversions that characterized the 1960s and 70s never faded, and if anything, have only grown both more pervasive and more perverse. As yet more confirmation of a wider pedophile network, both Savile and an unnamed "top 1960s pop group" (that some websites claim to be the Beatles[269]) have been exposed in a four page 1964 dossier discovered during Operation Yewtree as visitors to a teen brothel in Battersea, South London where runaway kids from group homes were being systemically pipelined and abused.[270]

During the 1950s and 1960s centered in the East End of London infamous gay pedophile Jewish gangster twins – Reggie and Ronnie Kray - were busy running an extensive sexual pedo-blackmail operation,[271] similar to Donald Trump's mentor, CIA sanctioned Roy Cohn masterminding the New York City to Washington pedo-network during the exact same period.[272] Just as in America, mobsters, satanic cults and intelligence agencies all covertly work hand-in-hand in the increasingly lucrative child sex trafficking trade.[273] For years the Kray brothers regularly provided the conduit linkage between boy brothels funneled from group homes to service hundreds of entertainment luminaries, prime ministers, cabinet ministers, MPs, lords and more queen knighted sirs in one big flourishing underworld pedophilia network.

It was the Kray twins who identified Sir Cliff Richard as one of Lord Robert Boothby's "bum-boys."[274] One powerful central figure partaking services from the Kray syndicate was Lord Boothby, who had an unquenchable taste for little boy flesh like Harry Webb throughout the 1950s. As a prominent Oxford educated Conservative member in Parliament, Lord Boothby was also in tight with Sir Winton Churchill, his top tier government peers as well as the royal family. Lord Boothby is said to have had a sexual relationship with Ronnie Kray.[275] As birds of the same feather, veteran intel agent Anthony T. Stokes maintains that Churchill's original MI5 Sandhurst file described him as:

An idle layabout and a confirmed sodomite who was a menace to the younger boys.[276]

Pretty amazing but not surprising for the world's pedophilia haven Britain to have as its bulldog saint Sir Winston be another pedophile. Churchill's protégé bud Bobby Boothby was also an original founding member of the Bilderberg group in 1954. Truth activist *Abel Danger*'s Field McConnell alleges that the Krays, Boothby and the Bilderberg Steering Committee teamed up beginning in 1954 to operate pedo-entrapment rings at all the Bilderberg hosting hotels.[277] Boothby's linkage to the world's elite no doubt became one more reason why his kinky indiscretions were so often overlooked yet fiercely protected. Not only did Lord Boothby and the Kray twins share the same heinous predilection for "rent boys," and establishing VIP blackmail operations, they also assisted Cliff Richard as an initiate into their secret club's established inside connections that helped launch Cliff's musical career.[278] As a close friend of the Kray brothers, in the early days Cliff frequently performed at their nightclubs. Their relations went deep in a perverted "win-win" for all involved.

But not every kid made it out alive much less become a star. The gruesome Tattingstone suitcase murder of 17-year old Bernard Oliver was suspected to be a victim of the Kray pedophile syndicate.[279] Ten days after leaving his North London home in January 1967, Bernard's dismembered body dissected into six pieces was found in two suitcases laying in a field[280] not far from property owned by the Krays in Suffolk where they trafficked in group home rent boys to VIP sex parties. The dead boy's 15-year old brother recognized him from a gruesome newspaper photo of his brother's cut off head. Bernard's five siblings have been tormented by the grisly tragedy ever since. Two now deceased pedophile doctors wanted for subsequent sex crimes and murders of other underage boys who as fugitives fled the country are believed to be Bernard's killers. Already interviewed by police shortly after Bernard's body was discovered, record producer Joe Meek who frequented the Krays' Suffolk pedo-party scene with fellow attendees *BBC* DJs Savile and Al Freeman went on a paranoid drug binge and fatally shot his landlady then himself with a single gage shotgun.[281] The Kray twins are said to have sealed remaining loose ends with a couple more kills and over a half century later the murder still sadly stays unsolved.

As a testimonial to the Kray-Sir Cliff friendship, even after Reggie and Ronnie were both locked away for life in 1969, Cliff Richard maintained his close ties with his old gangster buddies, signing one of his concert programs with a special nostalgic note to Ronnie.[282] Kray biographer John Pearson furnished a jailhouse letter written by Ronnie in 1969 expressing gratitude for Cliff sending him his support when other celebrity friends were fast disappearing from the recently convicted imprisoned killers, but not loyal Cliff. In Ronnie's own original misspelled words:

> *John, I had a verry nice letter from Cliff Ritchards. I thought it was marvoulas of him to write to me at a time like this. He must be a wonderfull person to go to the trouble at a time like this. Their are still a lot of nice people left around.*[283]

David Litvinoff (Levy) was one of the Krays' prime procurers in their Jewish mob pedophile ring. In fact, as early as 1954 Litvinoff had a reputation as the go-to guy for delivering rent boys. Apparently his friend Lucian Freud thought so. Sigmund Freud's grandson and brother of fellow pedophile-writer-former MP Sir Clement (connected to the McCann abduction)[284] literally painted Litvinoff in a 1954 portrait he originally entitled "The Procurer," selling at Christie's the year Jill Dando died in 1999 for over a million pounds.[285] Another related tidbit - to capture the gritty real life reality of the Kray mafia scene, pedophile scum Litvinoff was hired as a film advisor on the 1968 Mick Jagger gangster flick "Performance," introducing the cast and crew to London's seedy underworld. As a crime boss lieutenant, especially once the Krays went to prison, for decades David Litvinoff was known to freely circulate socially amongst top British and American celebrities as the VIP pedo-pimp managing to accumulate enough wealth to live the last three years of his pathetic life in opulent style at Davington Priory in Kent before allegedly OD'ing on sleeping pills in 1975. Of all people, the current owner of Davington Priory is none other than the unsaintly Sir Bob Geldof where silenced daughter Peaches married Cohen in the Priory estate gardens.[286]

Just like US pedo-operations in all these sordid affairs, drugs and alcohol are regularly used as standard sedating icebreakers to break children’s hymens, anuses and souls as well as their capacity for trauma memory recall.[287] Like Savile, all the mayhem and suffering the Kray brothers, Litvinoff and Boothby and their ilk perpetrated against children were/are forgiven by the ruling elite, fully protected by the deep bonding glue of their systemic blackmail cesspool.

Boothby was a frequent aficionado at the Kray brother orgies and sex parties. The sex maniac even recklessly carried on a longstanding affair with the wife of the UK Prime Minister Harold MacMillan (their youngest daughter reportedly is his biologically).[288] Promiscuous Boothby even carried on a homosexual tryst with gangster Ronnie Kray[289] amidst lots of masochistic sex with scores of underage boys like Harry Webb.[290] Kray biographer John Pearson accessed intimate accounts of some of Lord Boothby’s favorite forms of kink, such as ordering rent boys to shit on a glass table while the aroused pervert below peered upwards all boggled-eyed, lustily mouthwatering his chops.[291] Mind you these are the sick sort of perversions that the rulers of our planet customarily engage for leisure in when not participating in formal occult ritual torture and murderous sacrifice.

In 1964 the *Sunday Mirror* exposed the Boothby-Kray homosexual pedophilia operation.[292] But Labor Party’s Harold Wilson sent in his legal fixer to do crisis damage control, and just like that, the paper had to eat their words on top of paying a £40,000 libel settlement for actually printing the truth, in effect scaring off the media from exposing any future scandals (not unlike today’s Sir Cliff lawsuit). And despite opposing political parties (since pedos infiltrate all major political parties), Harold Wilson by exercising restraint in saving Boothby’s ass was rewarded as the next elected prime minister. This little known scandal provides graphic illustration of how the worst sins of the ruling class have always remained above the law. As untouchables, VIPs and gangsters alike can continue raping kids without the inconvenient truth getting in their way.

With such high stakes of perverse power and protection granted the Kray mafia by the decadent British establishment, young group home lads never stand a chance. Ronnie Kray once threatened a boy:

You will go home with Lord Boothby. You will do exactly what Lord Boothby wants. Or I will hurt you.[293]

Ronnie boy also bought more protection for his "Firm" with a sexual dalliance with yet another prominent homosexual pedophile politician from the Krays' own district - Labor Party chairman and 30-year MP Tom Driberg. The KGB cashed in on Driberg's multiple affairs, blackmailing and enlisting him as a Soviet spy codenamed Lepage[294] while already a confirmed MI5 informer. At one point Driberg was even cast out of the Communist party but remained a devout OTO "do what thou wilt" disciple. In his biography the question is raised:

Can the man who in the 1920s was anointed by Aleister Crowley to succeed him as the Great Beast be the man who in the 1960s tried to persuade Mick Jagger to become a Labour MP?[295]

It has recently come to light that the then British Director of Public Prosecutions Sir Norman Skelhorn blocked Driberg's pedo-espionage case from exposure and ever moving forward legally.[296] Again, another pedo-enabling "fox" knighted by the queen protecting VIPs inside their child raping network.

With such high-end protection, the Krays possessed sufficient muscle to pressure Metropolitan Police Commissioner Sir Joseph Simpson (yep, another knighted fox standing guard at the cabal's henhouse) to look the other way from 1958 to 1968.[297] An S&M dominatrix who ran with the Kray mob assured Ronnie she could handle Simpson because as one of her clients, he was her masochist whipping boy.[298]

The Krays underworld activities may have started out in the usual mafia domain - armed robbery, arson, protection racket extortion, gambling, drugs and prostitution, but in the pedo-epicenter of the world it quickly expanded into sexual blackmail pimping children, especially the preferred Englishman's preference - 10-12 year old blue-eyed blue-blooded white boys. With Metro head Sir Simpson dying in 1968, the Krays' luck finally ran out as in 1969 they were tried, convicted and each issued a lifetime sentence for their gangland murders, one victim shot in a pub for calling Ronnie "a fat poof" and Reggie fatally stabbing another in his flat.[299]

But even from their prison cells, the powerful Kray brothers maintaining close ties with the American mob were still in business providing security protection to VIP entertainers including Frank Sinatra, George Raft, Judy Garland (a child rape and mind control victim herself[300]) as well as Saudi princes.[301] With the media's longtime fascination romanticizing organized crime in both America and the UK, the press fielded stories of a 12-year old fatherless boy named Brad Lane becoming a mini-celebrity idolizing Reggie as his "adopted father" and his #1 faithful prison visitor. Unfortunately Brad died young so in 2009 his mother had her son's collected memorabilia from the gangster twins auctioned off for a hefty £50,000.[302]

Once sent to prison, Ronnie went increasingly psychotic and ended up at his old friend Jimmy Savile's Broadmoor, UK's maximum security prison asylum till his death at 61, while a half decade later brother Reggie stricken with cancer was released a month before his death in 2000 at age 66. By the time Ronnie was shipped off to Savile's roost at Broadmoor, Sir Jimmy was already replacing the twins as UK's pimping kingpin running the always profitable child procurement racket through his expanding MI5-*BBC*-group home pipeline supplying the nonstop demand of kiddie fodder devoured by those same voracious VIP pigs-in-power during the latter decades of the twentieth century.

As SOP spy world folklore, foreign espionage has long involved laying honey traps to gain control targeting unsuspecting politicians and entertainers through sexual blackmail operations. Infiltrating CIA, Mossad, KGB and MI5/6 operatives have been deploying not just female seductresses to lure prominent husbands into adulterous affairs, but increasingly young men and children are regularly offered through Cohn-Kray-Savile-Epstein-spy service sex ring pipelines to own homosexual and pedo-leaning puppets in both high government and show biz.[303]

In 1959 Cliff Richard signed a recording contract with EMI, the Tavistock mind control linked "Electronic Military Intelligence" corporation where his father began working a decade earlier. Ever since signing that 1959 contract on the dotted line and uniquely churning out hits in every decade since, for over sixty years as the pop sensation's handlers - the Mossad and MI5, have been taking full advantage of Sir Cliff's "goodwill" ambassadorship services for the Greater Israel Project[304] no doubt in exchange for security protection against a long stint in prison for his alleged deviant pastime pleasures.

As an anecdotal inference of Cliff's mind control alters, from his own autobiographical account comes:

It was as if I was becoming a different character - almost like the mild mannered Clark Kent... The moment I put on the

> *pink jacket... I was Cliff ... and when I came off the stage I went back to being a shy little boy...*[305]

Of course intelligence agencies have been pervasively deploying Monarch mind controlled superstars to the extent that it's become cliché today. From Beyoncé, Rihanna, Nicki Minaj, Madonna, Lady Gaga, Katy Perry, Britney Spears to Eminem and Lil Wayne, on and on New Babylon ad infinitum go the fashionably sheik, controlled pied piping sex slaves, mesmerizing and enslaving adoring global masses into unholy oblivion as the Luciferian elite's grand planned Trojan horse.[306] Sir Cliff's simply a mind controlled prop hypnotizing the more conservative, Holy Roller geriatric crowd, still captivated by the borderline octogenarian's ass wiggling stage moves so that no one gets left out of this Illuminati cabal's mass mind control operation.

No matter his surface appearance and perennial "choir boy" banality, historic sordid truth just seems to keep haunting Sir Cliff. According to longtime British intelligence operative Anthony T. Stokes, an incident in the spring of 1970 implicated Cliff Richard, then still in his late 20s, as a reported pedophile. An unattended plastic carrier bag was discovered in a large London railway station. Inside the travel bag was a collection of letters and photographs apparently taken at pedophile parties with well-known entertainers and children present.[307] Though Cliff Richard's name was not mentioned, enough is disclosed to leave no doubt as to whose identity was exposed:

> *One* [photo] *in particular showed a pop singer who masquerades under a Christian persona; dressed in women's underwear he was pictured with young boys.*[308]

No sooner was the travel bag picked up, while the railway worker was still filling out the lost and found form, two MI5 agents and a special branch officer suddenly barged in demanding the bag and all its contents.[309] What does this tell us? It indicates that even back in 1970 [and earlier], British and foreign intelligence services were facilitating sexual blackmail schemes utilizing underage children as honey trap bait to target, compromise and control public figures in both entertainment as well as government.

Time for another blast-from-the past shining light on the shadowy, untouchable public figures like Savile and Cliff Richard. Back in the early 1970s, both Cliff and Jimmy were recruited and invited to join Lord Frank Longford's infamous fact-finding mission. With the former two-time cabinet minister in the Harold Wilson Labor government, Lord Longford's crew set out to learn all about pornography (like they didn't already know firsthand) touring the UK to research the sleazy sex industry that included a brief stopover in Denmark to observe the seedy side of Copenhagen strip clubs.[310] Now why would Longford choose a pop singer who claimed to be a devout Christian celibate and a single, never been married radio DJ living at home with his mother unless he knew there was more to their seemingly uninitiated, "sheltered" lives than meets the eye. In any event, the factfinders came up with a best seller that flew off the shelves back in 1972 with the keyword "pornography" strategically emboldened on its front cover. Hungry, sex-starved, sex-craving British citizens wanted to know what all the fuss was about with one in five male Brits at that time admitting to regularly buying (and jerking off to) porno rags[311] flying off adult bookstore shelves also proliferating throughout the Isles in the early 70s.

The "porn trio experts" delivered some juicy, salacious tidbits of prep schoolboy spankings and a Danish transvestite's comical come-on to his Lordship, but otherwise never quite measured up to all the hype.[312] Imagine if their perversions were actually unveiled, revealing their booming underground pedophile ring that would've blown the lid off the entire child raping cabal way back when. Instead of just the Kray brothers being stuck in prison in 1972, half the Parliamentary Houses would in common be joining them behind bars where demented child abusers belong.

In reality both Sir Jimmy and Sir Cliff were MI5/6 and Mossad tools used for many decades as undercover assets regularly paying homage to the Jewish State, making frequent trips in support of the Zionist government. In 2013 the pop legend was ready to dedicate his hit song "Living Doll" to Sara Netanyahu sitting in the audience at his Tel Aviv concert till secret service nixed the plan not wanting the public to know the power couple was in attendance. Though Sir Cliff spent quality time schmoozing with the Netanyahus at their plush stately residence several days earlier,[313] the Christian knight in Zionist armor also found time to visit the holy city of Nazareth a month earlier to attend a charity tennis fundraiser.[314]

Richard was back again in 2017 for another concert performance and again having time to host another kumbaya PR tennis photo-op, this time bringing Jewish and Arab kids together[315] while on the West Bank more Palestinian homes were being bulldozed.[316] Like his friend Sir Jimmy, Cliff Richard devotes much time and energy to charitable causes, which of course is a good thing. But it's always used as leverage, along with his projected squeaky clean image as a "martyred victim," to counter the disturbing claims and negative publicity that have lingered throughout his seven decade long career.

Meanwhile, his cohort Sir Savile masquerading as a "saintly" Catholic pretender, the closeted Satanist-necrophiliac-child rapist-closeted serial killer also made certain to pay homage to Zionism, logging in a number of trips to the Jewish State.

Referring to himself as “the most Jewish Catholic you will ever meet,”[317] while knighted in 1990 by the queen[318] and pope alike,[319] in 1979 Sir Jimmy was also awarded a medal by Israel.[320] The likes of Sir Jimmy and Sir Cliff are embraced and lauded as useful stooges by all three cabal powerhouse centers - the City of London, Rome and Israel.

According to Manchester businessman Benny Sandberg, because Savile was in tight with Egyptian President Anwar Sadat’s wife Jehan and her family, Savile was approached by the Friends of Israel Trust to help forge a dialogue between Prime Minister Menachem Began and Sadat.[321] Thus enlisted as an informal Israeli security advisor, in 1975 Savile accompanied his dispatched Jim’ll Fix It crew to Israel on a 10 day visit to meet with the Jerusalem mayor as well as Israel President Ephraim Katzir. Fondly recalling his visit, Savile seized yet another boastful opportunity to plug his grandiose self-importance:

I arrived at this reception. The president came to me and asked how I was enjoying my visit. I said I was very disappointed: the Israelis had won the Six Day War but they had given back all the land, including the only oil well in the region, and were now paying the Egyptians more for oil than if they had bought it from Saudi Arabia. I said: ‘You have forgotten to be Jewish.’ He said: ‘Would you like to tell my cabinet that?' Next morning, I went to the Knesset; they interrupted a cabinet meeting and I told them the same as I had told him.[322]

Just another indicator that both pedophile Sir Jimmy and “alleged” pedophile Sir Cliff are Zionist pawns working on behalf of the Greater Israel Project is their mutual friendship with confirmed Mossad-CIA agent Uri Geller, the spoon bending phenom from the 1970s endowed with supposed supernatural New Age psychic powers.[323] He was a natural to be recruited and deployed as an undercover intelligence operative for both Mossad and the CIA on overseas missions over a span of the next several decades. And of course with both Geller and Richard steeped in mind control, as the Israeli-British go-between, Mossad handler Uri worked closely with both Lord Longford's "porno experts" Savile and Richard in support of their Greater Zionist causes, which by the way include the global pedophilia blackmail network[324]

Tired of the constant tabloid rumors about his unorthodox personal lifestyle living with a parade of men under the pretense of plutonic relationships, 15 years after the queen knighted him, in 2010 Sir Cliff Richard renounced his British citizenship to become a permanent Barbados citizen where privacy allows him to indulge his prurient interests without nearly the interference and unwanted attention.[325] No doubt he had to pull a few of his many political strings to pull that maneuver off as Barbados doesn't often grant outsiders citizenship. But then when Mossad both owns and owes you favors, and you're in tight with compromised British war criminal and Mossad operative Tony Blair, suddenly doors open while super court injunctions busily close the doors on inconvenient truths. With Tony Blair's alleged gay "cottaging" past,[326] and Sir Cliff's likeminded proclivities, rumors of the unpopular Mr. former prime minister and the pop legend abound, stoked by the frequent visits Tony keeps making to Cliff's humble abodes in Portugal and Barbados as shelter from the storm.[327]

After a couple conscripted "PR girlfriends" briefly put on display a lifetime ago,[328] since 1965 Cliff has steadfastly maintained that he found God, especially after hooking up with MK Ultra operative, 33 degree Freemason and fellow pedo-club kingpin Sir Billy Graham,[329] fervently claiming Christ and celibacy despite that pesky accusation that wouldn't go away stemming from a 1985 incident at the Billy Graham crusade in Sheffield.[330]

Speaking of which, in August 2014 Sir Richard’s world crumbled in horrified shock. From his Portugal mansion, a stone’s throw from pedophile neighbor Clement Freud’s house and the McCann girl disappearance, a weeping Sir Richard watched on live television the *BBC* cameras rolling as South Yorkshire police invaded his Berkshire estate searching for pedophilia evidence in response to allegations of child sexual abuse.[331] An alleged victim while under the age of 16 at the time was accusing the singer of molesting him at Rev. Billy Graham’s 1985 evangelist rally, and in the aftermath of the Jimmy Savile-Operation Yewtree, police and *BBC* were zeroing in on the girl’s underwearing Kitty.[332] Then six months later due to yet more claims of prior Cliff Richard sex assaults at Elm Guest House, the investigation widened as South Yorkshire Police Chief Constable David Crompton wrote in a February 10, 2015 letter to then chairman of the Commons Home Affairs Select Committee Keith Vaz:

This investigation has increased significantly in size since its inception.[333]

As noted earlier, MP Vaz reining over the powerful parliamentary watchdog committee as another pedo-system “fox,” ended up in September 2016 forcibly retiring in disgrace after he was exposed as a pedophile and staunch pedo-protector of his mentor serial pedophile Lord Greville Janner, each respectively high-up in the UK Muslim-Jewish VIP pedo-predator food chain.[334] Back in 1991 when Janner was accused of chronically abusing two victims (that the presiding judge ruled out incriminating testimony), it was his groomed young Indian protégé pedophile MP Keith Vaz on the House of Commons floor vehemently defending his closest political ally, claiming Janner was “the victim of a cowardly and wicked attack.”[335] In that same deceitful speech, Vaz also made a case for **changing the existing**

law to prohibit prominent figures to be accused in open court (emphasis added due to the aforementioned directly related probable future “Cliff’s law” resultant of the July 2018 court decision).

Despite voices of victims finally being heard (but mostly lip service heard) in the post-Savile aftermath, some of the ugly truth came out in the filthy wash when in 2014 dozens of Greville Janner victims came forth to report four decades of his reprehensible crime history violating young boys.[336] But soon enough at the ripe old age of 87 in December 2015, similar to accused yet uncharged Lord Brittan’s last remaining months alive, Janner died prior to facing formal indictment or even police inquiry. But in defense of their pedo-dad, his Jewish family in the coziest of relationships with British press circled wagons using the anti-Semitic card to successfully repress the overwhelming evidence that their patriarch was yet another longtime flaming VIP predator not unlike Jimmy Savile.[337] More on the Lord Janner scandal in Chapter 25.

Is it any wonder that Cliff Richard’s reversal of misfortune suddenly turned the tides in his favor? Though in 2015 it looked pretty bleak for Sir Cliff when growing evidence of his alleged past pedophilia crimes appeared to finally be catching up to him. But what a difference a year makes. In July 2016 Cliff Richard went on the offensive suing both the South Yorkshire Police and the *BBC* for their collusion in the highly publicized police raid on his Berkshire home in 2014 after the Crown Prosecution Service the month prior somehow deemed not enough evidence to charge (which smacks of cover-up in and of itself).[338] Then in May 2017 the police agreed to pay the singer a whopping sum of £400,000[339] and another £300,000 for Sir Cliff’s legal costs.[340] Interesting that in June 2016 while Vaz still chaired the committee in charge of all pending UK legal cases, CPS chose not to formally charge Sir Cliff and then a mere month and a half later, news of Vaz's criminal child abuse history surfaced forcing his resignation from his prominent political henhouse perch. See how the inner club constantly looks out for each other?

The question that begs to be answered is why can't the British "justice" system ever collect enough evidence to successfully get a VIP suspect charged, tried and convicted? Why are no child raping MPs or lords ever sent to prison for their crimes? In short, the system is corrosively and irreparably rigged and needs a complete overhaul of personnel if not more. Another big reason is, as of the 1964 Police Act, all of the UK's chief constables heading the nation's city police forces have to answer to one centralized national source - the Home Secretary.[341] And as long as the Home Secretary "fox" guarding the child henhouse is a pedophile or pedophile enabler in what's become a job prerequisite, no powerful pedophile in the UK will ever be convicted and brought to justice. It has yet to happen.

As of that 1964 structural policing change in Britain, no longer are independent law enforcement investigations permitted and thus a national policy of centralized control and cover-up has become the standard operating norm to suppress all police probes into British establishment pedophile rings. This explains why top end politicians and entertainers who systematically rape children always - bar none - get away with it. The British legal system (and for that matter the US and virtually the entire world) is rigged to protect accused child rapists when members of the elite. This worldwide must change! Bring on the Truth and Reconciliation Commissions.

Sir Cliff and Queen Elizabeth's mutual admiration[342] had her knighting him in 1995 while he was her only selected performer requested to sing at her 2012 Jubilee Celebration marking her 60 year reign.[343] Upon learning from the Crown Prosecution Service that the police had dropped its pedophilia investigation against him in 2016, immediately after wiping his tears of joy and relief, he then went to sing “God Save the Queen” for her birthday celebration at the Lisbon British Embassy.[344] Fitting since she probably did save his ass. Of course it can’t hurt to maintain super close ties with his global pedophilia handlers MI5, MI6 and Mossad,[345] or war criminals Tony Blair and Benjamin Netanyahu, and all rest of the top tier perps in the globalized pedo-network that made certain Sir Cliff remains immune from all consequence since his lawsuit represents their self-interest too.

In July 2018 it was *BBC*’s turn to lose in court. Ostensibly violating Sir Richard’s right to privacy broadcasting the August 2014 police fiasco on national live television, the multibillionaire was awarded another £210,000.[346] £20,000 more was thrown into the plaintiff’s lap as aggravated damages over the *BBC* arrogantly nominating itself for its coverage of the raid for the Royal Television Society’s scoop of the year award. Still yet to be assessed are damages for Cliff’s lost book deals and public appearances which will no doubt also be substantial.

The overkill of a *BBC* reporter staked out overnight waiting for the police to arrive and the *BBC* helicopter flying overhead was over-the-top sensationalism, raising the ante in full tilt damages. *BBC* journalist Dan Johnson had allegedly learned that South Yorkshire Police were investigating Cliff Richard’s alleged pedophilic past and threatened to expose the investigation unless granted a front row seat tipoff so *BBC* cameras and helicopter could exclusively lie in wait for the massively staged morning police raid.[347] Big media meets big law enforcement in the show of morning shows. And so far the tally has cost *BBC* alone £1, 060,000 in compensation to “victim” Cliff,[348] overcome with emotion in tearful relief for all the pain and anguish this poor little rich boy’s been so grievously forced to endure.

The Sun editor Tony Gallagher’s response to the High Court decision:

> *Arrests will go unpublicized. Suspects will assert privacy rights. Police probes impeded. Victory for (alleged) criminals and money-grabbing lawyers. Terrible for media.*[349]

BBC news director Fran Unsworth said even if the *BBC* low-keyed its coverage:

> *… The judge would still have found that the story was unlawful, despite ruling that what we broadcast about the search was accurate.*[350]

Had Cliff Richard been charged and convicted, obviously his counter-lawsuit would never have been possible. But because the judicial process is so corrupted and rigged in the UK, with this latest court decision, the already rigged system just became even more stacked against truth and justice for the common people. This lawsuit and legal judgment are to ensure that the big wig pedophiles at the top of the power pyramid never get identified or arrested, much less ever brought to justice and serve prison time. This court ruling seals the deal for the most powerful on earth to continue living above the law. Rich and famous pedophiles are celebrating in their mansions over this one.

On the one hand, the pedophilia-saturated *BBC* that allowed its internal pedophile ring to flourish for numerous decades under Sir Jimmy and his gang running amok, along with the *BBC*’s continual criminal cover-up and nonstop denial of any wrongdoing, co-opted by a corrupted whitewashed investigation by its own appointed former judge as well as

Operation Yewtree's police probe debacle, the *BBC* deserves to lose a whole lot more than just what amounts to chump change for the world's largest media organization[351] with an annual income exceeding £5 billion.[352] Its choice to deceitfully continue denying pedophilia within its own ranks for so many decades while, in the post-Savile witch hunt, relished in its co-opted police spectacle scoop, pouncing on and exploiting Cliff Richard (innocent or guilty) for cheap thrill ratings and accolades also serve this hypocritical, reprehensible, downright evil media giant right.

But on the other hand, this legal decision sets a dark, foreboding and dangerous precedent that muzzles if not kills what little freedom of speech and the press is still left. After initially maintaining the *BBC* would appeal the decision on "fundamental principle," a month later the government media giant changed its mind, not wanting to "prolong Sir Cliff's distress."[353] More bullshit. This case is a huge setback for the people and children of the United Kingdom. From here on out this Cliff Richard judgment will cause news outlets to not dare pursue controversial stories for fear of incurring major damages for violating suspected public figures' right to privacy.

This 2018 case is not unlike the heavily retracted 1964 *Sunday Mirror* article mentioned earlier that accurately outed pedophiles Lord Boothby and gangster Ronnie Kray's joint government-organized crime operated child sex ring. And it was no accident that UK's 1964 Police Act centralizing all British law enforcement agencies under the pedo-friendly Home Secretary's control and the *Sunday Mirror* article being checkmated in court by a costly libel suit all went down at the exact same time. 1964 was a year the pedo-elite defeated truth and justice and now 2018 is another year that VIP pedophiles are happy. This Cliff Richard court decision is simply more of the same, the pedo-elite successfully pushing back after near exposure of its Achilles pedo-heel in recent years after the Savile scandal broke. The predatory elite’s simply engaged now in successful damage control.

Super rich Sir Cliff Richard claims he spent £4 million defending his reputation to legally go after the *BBC* and police.[354] With police already delivering its public apology and near a million pounds to the queen’s singing knight and the *BBC* paying over a million so far, at the end of the day, they’re expected to run up a tab of £5 million in damages to victim Cliff. As a result, this court decision now poses such enormous liability risk to every news corporation in the world, regardless of size, that extreme caution will be exercised before daring to expose the next super wealthy public figure turned pedophile or murder suspect caught in the act. In effect, this case silences the free press in the United Kingdom for good. Welcome to the totalitarian dystopian nightmare come true where evil planetary controllers get to live like gods above every manmade law while the rest of us condemned and shackled slaves wretch in their purgatory made hell on earth, if not already genocided yet as part of their Agenda 21 eugenics depopulation plan.[355]

The illusion of a free press that in reality no longer exists in the so called “free world” is today’s manifestation of ruling psychopaths secretly bent on holding absolute power by any means necessary, deploying a number of deceitfully draconian methods to their end, one of which is concealing the truth from the public. It invariably occurs in every totalitarian regime-in-the-making,[356] and when that regime is the current globalist precursor now underway promoting West versus East conflict and confrontation as a pathway to world war and one world government tyranny,[357] writing-on-the-wall signs are everywhere.

Increasing censorship in the digital age, all in the name of “national security,” combatting “extremism,” legalized “rights” of the politically correct, and illegalized “fake news” decided by tech giant gatekeepers propagating official state-MSM lies are fueling battlefronts attacking freedom of press and freedom of speech.[358] Consolidating globalized power and control over news outlets, outflow information and truth even on the internet are being centralized into fewer hands.[359] And the censorship makers in China are working with Google Gestapo et al to make it worldwide.[360] Add to this alarming backdrop of oppressive trends and developments the Cliff Richard case and its disturbing implications for exposing future pedophilia crimes - even when accurately reporting the truth, clearly the privileged pedophiles are increasingly armed with protection at the expense of their powerless victims and the public at large.

Additionally, not revealing the identity of an arrested suspect will foreclose any opportunity for other victims to feel empowered enough to brave the stress, liability and re-trauma of coming forth to report crimes against their powerful perps. Its effects are both sobering and grave, placing an enormous barrier now to exposing the crime cabal’s ugliest sins and clearly is a landmark victory for the planet’s most elitist criminals at the top of the predator food chain. Another consequence in-the-making is what’s being referred to as “Cliff’s law,” where the mere reporting of arrested suspects in and of itself constitutes a criminal violation of their privacy rights.[361] The Orwellian prediction that during a time of universal deceit, not only does telling the truth become a revolutionary act, it also becomes a crime.[362]

So the rights of rich and famous criminals able to spend big bucks going after the media - however guilty of egregious crimes - are also able to trample over the public’s right to know the truth and the rights of all victims seeking any semblance of justice. In the highly rigged economic legal system, the rich and powerful continue getting richer and more powerful at an unprecedented rate,[363] reaping more control to rape and pillage our planet at an exponential, dishearteningly feverish pace. Humanity is in rapid descent, regressed into forcibly living in a current neo-feudal slave system compounded by nightmarish Artificial Intelligence-electronic techno control, surveilling every slave's move and thought, making Orwell's *1984* nostalgically appear a walk in the park.[364] That's why sooner than later citizens of the world must unite in solidarity against the miniscule minority behind the global pedo-empire curtain.

Sir Cliff's landmark case is the beta test for the elite to finagle utilizing their so called privacy rights excuse in order to secure their privileged lives forever to remain above the law. As common everyday citizens, where are our lost privacy rights?[365] While we're living in history's most watched and controlled society ever on earth, the ruling elite's privacy rights are the only ones that apparently matter now. Sir Cliff utilized his legal clout after years of built up capital earned from all those trips to Israel as a lifetime Mossad pawn to first make libelous any reporting of "Kitty's" presence at the Elm Guest pedo-party lodge and now across-the-boards suppression of any of his alleged past criminal activity making him unreachable like all his fellow pedo-sirs and pedo-lords within an elitist aristocracy class guaranteed to continue living like gods above the law with complete impunity answering to no one... except God.

The ruling elite set up the *BBC* to take the fall for having gotten caught with its pants down vis-a-vis the Savile disgrace. So this monumental landmark decision was strategically orchestrated to add yet one more insurmountable buffered layer to seal off protection for the earth's top level pedophiles from all further accountability. With this legal triumph, "invincible" planetary controllers may be deluding themselves into actually believing their Achilles pedo-heel is now impenetrable. Lest they be reminded their war on truth is never over nor their defiance of karmic laws. In the end, only truth and justice prevail - not them.

By design Operations Yewtree, Midlands, Fairbridge and a host of other police probes into alleged government pedophiles have all failed miserably to arrest the VIP pedo-establishment.[366] While Sir Cliff celebrated his court victory, the alleged victim named "Nick" was hauled off to jail. Nick had claimed MPs and cabinet ministers tortured and sexually abused him for a decade in the 80s while allegedly witnessing the murder of three underage boys. But this year he was conveniently declared a public liar and slapped with charges of perverting course of justice with his so called false statements.[367] The tide has once again turned against victims in the UK as their "unsubstantiated claims" have been blamed for lack of police operations' arrests resulting from all those post-Savile investigations. Thus, no members of the VIP establishment that we absolutely know have been raping children in droves have been arrested. The earth's pedo-epicenter is showing its true colors and true reason for its label in the latest round of intended death blows to truth and justice. Continuing unabated, the pedophilia cover-up in the United Kingdom reigns supreme.

In the summer of 2018, the UK elite has fought back, discrediting and silencing victims once again in order to retain impunity from any and all punishment. In a legal cesspool system the power to declare victims liars not only lets the perps off the hook, it plants the seed of doubt in every abuse victim brave enough to come forth to file a complaint and endure the horrendous ordeal of re-traumatized hardship seeking systemically denied justice. These offensive, over-the-top moves by the establishment are designed to thoroughly discourage future abuse victims from ever filing formal complaints, realizing their voices will never be heard in a morally depraved, fully bankrupted feudal system beyond repair.

In recent years the pedophilia elite have realized that a growing awareness of Pedogate scandals have been gaining momentum worldwide, influencing perceptions of an increasing number of people to accurately view the VIP establishment as a criminal sicko-infested cabal. This expanding base of informed citizens has made them increasingly nervous and vulnerable to finally being made accountable.[368] So they pushed back with a conjured up high profile pivotal court case under the guise of protecting privacy rights of the rich and powerful, killing a diminishing free press while rendering yet more VIP abuse victims unreliable false claimants. Meanwhile, the mired, “unfit for purpose” government-sanctioned child abuse inquiry dragging on impotently for years gets fined £200,000 in July 2018,[369] the same month alleged VIP abuse victim Nick gets jailed and Sir Cliff wins in court. The inquiry is alleged to have inadvertently emailed out full names of child abuse victims, thus violating their privacy rights in the latest self-injuring blunder seemingly intended to render the floundering charade completely impotent and ineffective at getting to the bottom of the British child raping epidemic. Of course that too is the whole point by design as well.

All those repeatedly lost government pedo-dossiers,[370] [371] systemic failure by police to historically follow up hundreds of thousands of real abuse cases[372] and systemic historical failure by CPS to charge real criminals[373] or lose crucial evidence,[374] and the multitudes of victims who’ve filed accusations in the post-Savile years,[375] against both VIP perpetrators as well as the so called Muslim Asian community gangs unimpededly abusing thousands more underage girls in recent decades, all of these massive systemic failures have created an endemic national crisis[376] in the United Kingdom like never before.[377] Upward estimates nearing a half million UK abuse cases mounted up in a 2-year period between April 2012 and March 2014 alone.

By diabolical intentions, the world's worst pedophilia haven systemically protects powerful child rapists and killers while systematically silencing child victims, regardless of which brand of abuse - the VIP 10 Downing Street-Westminster type or the unchecked, out of control Telford, Rochdale and Rotherham debacle.[378] Compounded by the globalist manufactured divide and conquer mass refugee crisis destroying Europe, the deteriorating conditions in the UK have been spreading virtually throughout the entire Western world with a ripple effect in Eastern nations as both a pedo-tourism magnet[379] and ripe source for unbridled child abduction-sex trafficking.[380] Until the citizens of the world come together in unified solidarity to fight this blight on humanity, the dire conditions for children worldwide are only crumbling from bleakly bad to bleaker worse.

History just keeps repeating itself in an endless recycle, ever-raising the ante with the world's puppet masters deploying their Mockingbird press propaganda to manipulate, shape, dumb down and blind public opinion,[381] along with nonstop application of both their divide and conquer formula[382] and the Hegelian dialectic (problem, reaction, solution) as their foolproof methods to increase authoritarian control over the masses while in one fell swoop snuff out dissent, truth and justice.[383] The current stakes are at an all-time high in recorded history as humanity is under an unprecedented, relentless homicidal assault. With the latest setbacks, exposing the unimpugnable, child raping monsters poses even more a formidable challenge. But living by the cherished tenet that the truth shall set us all free, armed with knowledge of the truth and vastly overwhelming numbers on our side, as sovereign members of the human race we possess the power to hold the subhuman handful of life destroyers fully accountable for all their crimes against our innocents and humanity.

So coming full circle with a summary, a year and a half prior to Jill Dando's murder, it appears intelligence agencies sent Dr. Alan Farthing to become her intimate fiancé and assigned asset Sir Cliff Richard as her intimate confidante. No doubt between them they were able to glean everything she learned about the Savile-*BBC*-British establishment pedophilia network for MI5 and Mossad to know and conclude that she simply posed too much risk to the crime cabal. And very likely she had to be eliminated because she learned of Sir Cliff and/or the doctor's direct involvement in the pedo-crime network. On the fly, the Mossad compromised prime minister placed the hastily constructed hit prior to her dropping the bombshell of all bombshells to the world via live national television.

Clearly the Jill Dando murder was a conjoint Mossad-MI5-mob hit ordered by the highest ranking British elite as a warning to any other journalist or whistleblower who may also be entertaining ideas to expose the filthy truth. The shooting was one more tragic end in a seemingly never-ending series of strange and sudden deaths connected to so many *BBC* employees that were likely privy to the network's pedophilia ring. All the earlier theoretical conjecture explaining her untimely tragic death was simply planting decoyed rabbit holes to muddle and obscure the truth and thereby protect the British pedophilia establishment that is the ungodly trinity of the *BBC*, the UK government and the royal family.

And the British elite's "go-to" guy for propagating all these official false narratives on virtually every controversial death in the United Kingdom is the aforementioned West London Westminster coroner Dr. Paul Knapman. For over 30 years from 1980 to 2011 Dr. Knapman ruled on over 85,000 deaths, 12,500 inquests and over 500 murders[384] explaining fake causes on a myriad of strange, unnatural deaths and assorted, undeclared murders of not only an inordinate number of *BBC* employees but others who also either knew too much or were sacrificed for propaganda purposes in false flag operations promoting the West's warmongering agenda spearheaded by the CIA and friends. Knapman''s "work" was already cited in the suspicious deaths of Peaches Geldof's mother Paula Yates in 2000, the highly probable murders of Natasha Collins and Mark Speight in 2008 as well as *BBC* DJ Kevin Greening's gay bondage death just 5 days ahead of Natasha's.

Dr. Knapman has also repeatedly come under fire for his gross mishandling of a number of inquests involving casualties from major boating and railway accidents. His most grotesque publicized blunder was the Thames riverboat Marchioness collision with a dredger resulting in the deaths of 51 people in 1989. As an alleged convenient means of identifying victims, he simply cut off half the deceased's hands for easier fingerprint access, atrociously insensitive and arrogantly oblivious to the grieving needs of family members.[385] Without even the families' consent, the creepy megalomaniac doctor removed body parts and tissues, not unlike Jill Dando's fiancé Dr. Alan Farthing's routine medical practice. The hands of one young woman were literally lost, misplaced and ultimately destroyed at the bottom of Knapman's morgue refrigerator for four long years prior to its rediscovery, prompting a victim’s mother to respond:

Your mortuary is so dirty that it took four years to find a child's hands. You are a butcher.[386]

Yet this “butcher” is the kind of unscrupulous, uncaring oaf the cabal system knows will carry out its orders with blind tunnel vision obedience.

As an example of how the global crime cabal system works to use Dr. Knapman’s final “expert” word to further its destabilizing agenda for war and terrorism across the planet comes the coldblooded murder of police constable Yvonne Fletcher in the so called Libyan Embassy siege in April 1984 London.[387] With a handful of Libyans protesting in front of the Libyan People’s Bureau at St. James Square that day, shots rang out killing Yvonne instantly. Official conclusion purported by Knapman at the inquest pointed the finger at a Libyan gunman firing 9mm bullets from the embassy.

Yet the most respected senior ballistics expert in the British Army, a former Belfast hospital surgeon and a longtime Home Office pathologist - all three of the nation’s foremost authorities on forensic firearm ballistics specified that the bullet that assassinated Yvonne Fletcher had to have come from the Enserch House, a building with known links to the CIA.[388] Essentially the constable was most likely gunned down mercilessly as a sacrificial lamb, misused to incite anti-Gaddafi demonization the world over as prepping to justify the following year’s 32,000 pounds of ordnance dropped in bombs over Tripoli by US warplanes based in the UK (i.e., all part of a prearranged election year Reagan-Thatcher deal).[389] The cabal could always count on stooges like Knapman for his rubberstamp approval when needed.

Of course leave it to Hillary and company to finish the job offing Gaddafi in 2011 because he was busily uniting Africa behind his own gold-backed currency rather than continue paying subservient homage to the Empire’s exploitive USD.[390] Historically, the Zionist-Anglo-American Empire systematically demonizes and assassinates any and all national leaders around the world daring to operate independent of Rothschild imperialistic central bank control.[391] That’s why out of near 200 countries on earth, only the “pariah” nation North Korea doesn’t have a central bank.[392]

Little more than a half year before Princess Diana’s life abruptly ended, another suspicious yet inconspicuous death occurred in the famous and mysterious Dolphin Square, the vast block of Pimlico flats in central London close to the House of Commons that’s been home to “the famous, the infamous and the notorious” where MPs, lords, generals and foreign and British intelligence operatives frequently reside.[393] VIP orgies at the Dolphin Square complex have always been notoriously common. An alleged eyewitness victim claimed that in the 1990s he and other children were picked up from various group homes and trafficked in by Peter Righton, the aforementioned British bigwig childcare specialist who wrote national policy on child abuse protection as former director of education at the National Institute of Social Work and consultant for the National Children’s Bureau, also happened to be a co-founder of PIE (talk about a fox guarding the henhouse).[394]

Righton was a procuring pedophile with high-end connections who not only committed horrendous sexual abuse himself but trafficked kids to suffer even a worse fate by VIPs until he was eventually convicted of child pornography in 1992 and died in 2007.[395] But over the years victims and witnesses have reported four children were allegedly murdered at sex parties held at the notorious VIP pedo-haven Dolphin Square. One survivor states that when he was 15, Righton took him to a party where once the women left, about 15 adult men began sexually assaulting and torturing the group home children, among the attendees identified were a Tory minister, several MPs and a famous comedian.[396] According to the victim, one of the trafficked children was a 15-year old girl with braces who was taken into one of the three torture chamber bedrooms and never seen again, suspected to have been murdered by a powerful Tory politician.

But in January 1997 another suspicious Dolphin Square death occurred, this time the 56-year old Conservative MP Iain Mills' body found a couple of days after dying allegedly from acute alcohol poisoning according to coroner Knapman. Friends who knew Iain and Meridian residents who were his constituents for almost two decades insist that Iain never even drank alcohol but was only known to socially drink orange juice.[397] Yet his body was surrounded by empty gin bottles. There are those who believe Iain Mills may well have learned firsthand about the widespread child abuse and alcohol-drug infested orgies going on all around him at Dolphin Square,[398] frequented by his fellow MPs and lords as well as business, legal and military VIPs, violently acting out their sexual deviant criminal pathologies on underage children in the Westminster pedo-blackmail ring operating with impunity throughout the 1970s well into the 1990s.[399] But in Iain's case both police and coroner alike appeared all too eager to brush his death aside, only fueling and reinforcing the speculation that probable foul play was involved.

Ten years later another bizarre twist in yet another Dolphin Square death misruled by Knapman, this one involving 64-year old High Court Judge Rodney McKinnon. Dr. "know-it-all" rigidly maintained that Rodney was suffering from depression due to high blood pressure medicine he'd been prescribed.[400] At the inquest Knapman asserted that the judge just couldn't cope with life anymore and chose to end it jumping off his Drake building in Dolphin Square and falling 50 feet to his intended death. With no suicide note, Rodney's brother Warwick McKinnon, who also happens to be a judge, claimed his brother made plans with his girlfriend just days prior to his untimely demise, adding:

> *I don't believe it was suicide and neither does anyone in the family or any friends I have spoken to… He was a very tidy and literary man. He would have wanted to record the reason why if it was suicide… He would not have done this.*[401]

Yet the Svengali of death just knew it had to be suicide obviously without sufficient cause, which in the case of a suicide verdict, by law must be "beyond all reasonable doubt." Bottom line, with the judge well aware his Dolphin Square community was historically rife with VIP pedophiles, some of whom he'd convicted in his own court, the plausibility remains strong that the pedo-crime network eliminated him for being a thorn in its side and the suicide-on-the-brain doctor once again was simply following orders.[402] The crime cabal's trail of those who get in the way in Britain is no different from the US trail traveled by the Bush[403]-Clinton crime family[404] because it's one and the same. Like everything else, it's global.

As a cabal tool, Knapman rubberstamped a number of other huge inquests like UK's own 9/11 inside job - the 2005 London 7/7 bombings[405] and the 2007 inquest of the 1997 Princess Diana-Dodi Fayed assassination.[406] Again, demonic evil knows no earthly limit. Racking up so many unbelievably preposterous and highly suspect verdicts on his death track record involving so many suspicious, high profile, abrupt life endings, Dr. Paul Knapman was coming under increasing pressure and opposition from those who saw through his shady racket. Chris Pond, a Member of Parliament from 1997 to 2005 was the most vocal Knapman critic, raising serious and urgent red flag questions about the Westminster coroner's consistent misconduct over the years on the House of Commons floor that could no longer be sloughed off as mere incompetence.[407] And during the debate wouldn't you know it, accused pedophile MP turned *BBC* broadcaster Michael Portillo[408] rushed to Dr. Knapman's defense.[409] For being such an obedient crime cabal errand boy for over two decades, in 2008 Queen Elizabeth rewarded Dr. Knapman with the lofty title of the Queen's Deputy-Lieutenant for Greater London.[410] As previously noted, bestowed honors from the queen are the dead giveaway revealing who the real pedo-cabal players are. The crown throws a bone to her designated puppets serving to protect her global pedophilia network after demonstrating an over and above zest for contributing to the malaise.

Britain's longtime *BBC* favorite Irish broadcaster - Sir Terry Wogan, less than three months prior to his January 31, 2016 passing, claimed he would "continue working another ten years" before retiring. Then suddenly the 77-year old stricken with a remarkably fast spreading cancer learned he was dying a scant three weeks ahead of his death.[411] Also just three weeks prior to Wogan's death, another longtime *BBC* employee, Savile colleague DJ at Radio 1 Ed "Stewpot" Stewart suddenly died shortly after suffering a stroke. The *BBC* deaths just keep piling up one after the other.

In 2014 Terry Wogan apologized for disrespecting David Icke for an on the air interview where he publicly ridiculed David for his unbelievable truth telling about the evildoers atop the power pyramid, coming to realize Icke was absolutely correct in so many of his earlier proclamations virtually no one took seriously,[412] like years before the former prime minister's death, Icke asserted in 1998 that Edward Heath was a child murdering pedophile.[413] Once the Savile scandal broke in October 2012, the host of the Children in Need telethon stated that he hated Jimmy Savile, blaming him for “poisoning” the *BBC*.[414] In Wogan’s words:

> *He* [Savile] *always struck me as creepy. I’ve talked to people and not one of them has said: ‘I really liked him.’*[415]

Years before Savile’s death, like so many others, the Jesuit educated and trained[416] Terry Wogan also knew about the *BBC* serial pedophile, revealing at a celebrity luncheon that after Savile went to relieve himself in the bathroom, longtime journalist Jean Rook sitting nearby turned to Terry and asked:

> *When are they going to expose him?*[417]

“That’s your job,” Terry replied, passing the buck waiting for an investigative journalist outside the *BBC* to uncover the filth. But Wogan was wrong when so many insiders within the media entertainment industry knew Savile was abusing children but not one person at the *BBC* was bold or brave enough to step up and say anything except, of all people, Johnny Rotten. All the beloved queen honored *BBC* stars like Sir Terry Wogan and Dame Esther Rantzen knew full well what was going on, that the *BBC* was a pedophile haven harboring not just one child rapist but many. The real reason not one *BBC* employee bothered making waves, other than Jill Dando and look where it got her, *BBC* personnel were afraid of not just losing their jobs, but their lives as well. For years they saw fellow colleagues dropping dead like flies left and right, and realized the deadly risk and consequence of standing up for what was right protecting children just wasn’t worth it to them.

If you’re still not convinced, former *BBC* personality Muz Murray literally feared for his life:

> *Everyone’s a mason in the BBC. Masons are all over the place there. It was a frightening atmosphere and eventually I left, thinking someone was going to come after me and kill*

me. That’s why I went into the Himalayan mountains, and I learned all the Tibetan yoga still frightened someone was going to come after me and kill me.[418]

In addition to Jill Dando and the dozen *BBC* employees who met similarly bizarre, ill-fated deaths, a number of other *BBC* staff not mentioned in this chapter also died strange and untimely, questionable *BBC* deaths. They are featured in a website that links their deaths to a preponderance of Freemasons amongst senior *BBC* management, corroborating the firsthand observation of Muz Murray.[419] The website author encountered a young woman whose father as a Mason and *BBC* employee had told her decades earlier that Jimmy Savile was a pedophile who was tricking top people in the television industry into compromising situations with children. The same article goes on to quote a senior insider running the government sponsored corporation from the shadows:

We’re plotting to get Jimmy Saville to trick lots of TV stars and other high profile sorts into getting photographed with children, we’re gonna angle the shots so they look like they’re maybe fiddling around with the kids, we’ve sat down and thought of what the most unbelievable claim could conceivably be to say someone has done, we think the public would never believe we could fake child molestation, so that’s exactly what we’re doing, to cause the most total outrage and hatred of the public.[420]

This confirms that the ruling elite placed Savile in charge of a major sexual blackmail operation not unlike the Mossad blackmailer Jeffrey Epstein in the US. The biggest pedophile in British history was an MI5 operative carrying out his diabolical duty as a blackmailing pimp for English royalty, the government and the Freemasons and Luciferians at the top of the predatory food chain. That’s why he so arrogantly operated so brazenly in plain sight, knowing all the while he was fully protected and immune from all accountability.

This brings us to the final, most recent death covered in the *BBC* mysterious and suspicious demise file. As the second known *BBC* broadcaster since Jill Dando to prematurely leave this world exposing *BBC*'s culture of pedophilia and fear, longtime *BBC* journalist Liz MacKean suddenly suffered a fatal stroke at the age of only 52 in August 2017.[421] After working her way up the corporate news ladder as a successful network correspondent from 1993 to 2013, her resignation arose under a flurry of conflict over a documentary she made that was actually the first to expose the Jimmy Savile crimes originally slated for broadcast just weeks after Savile's death.

BBC director James Harding described her as "remarkably tenacious and resourceful," especially commending Liz for her "insightful and hard-hitting reporting of the [Northern Ireland] conflict," adding:

> *It was as an investigative reporter that she really shone, shining a light on issues from the dumping of toxic waste off the African coast to Jimmy Savile, the story for which she is probably best known*.[422]

Blowing the lid off of Savile's reign of terror in a *BBC* Newsnight segment that never aired shortly after Savile's demise, Liz MacKean's producer was initially excited with the project scheduled to broadcast weeks after the pedophile died. But overnight succumbing to pressure from the big boys upstairs, the project was abruptly scrapped, put on an indefinite hold and the opportunity to expose Savile was lost for another year.[423] *BBC* the pedophile enabler remained *BBC* the pedo-cover-upper, canning Liz' groundbreaking work little more than a month after Savile's death in favor of broadcasting two fake holiday tributes glorifying the *BBC* beast.

The *British Broadcasting Corporation* disgraced itself yet again cowardly shelving Liz MacKean's accurate and true indictment, fabricating the lame excuse that the 10-minute segment interviewing 10 Savile victims and witnesses was cut for "editorial reasons," citing that its claims "could not be substantiated," of course immediately recognized as a total boldface CYA lie.[424] Consequently, the world had to wait nearly another full year before the *ITV* exposé dropped the "other side of Savile" bombshell. As small consolation, Liz's nixed Savile exposure garnered the London Press Club's scoop of the year award. While filming her Newsnight piece exposing the *BBC* cover-up, Liz MacKean's life was threatened. But unlike all the other *BBC* staff, her ethical duty to tell the truth was far more important. Though Liz's integrity remained intact, walking away in protest and pure disgust in 2013 for the *BBC*'s gutless decision, she expressed remorse and guilt to the Savile victims over her inability to deliver their timely truth, though certainly not from any lack of effort on her part:

> *I thought that that was a failure… I felt we had a responsibility towards them. We got them to talk to us, but above all, we did believe them. And so then, for their stories not to be heard, I felt very bad about that. I felt, very much, that I'd let them down. I was very unhappy the story didn't run because I felt we'd spoken to people who collectively deserved to be heard and they weren't heard.*[425]

The *BBC* also fired the Newsnight investigative producer Meirion Jones who worked with Liz for daring to tell the truth about Savile.[426] From the day Meirion was a boy and his Aunt Margaret Jones was Duncroft School's headmistress when in the 1970s Savile allegedly abused 23 girls there,[427] he witnessed Sir Jimmy driving off with soon-to-be victims in his Rolls. The *BBC* has gone out of its way to destroy careers of honest investigative journalists who value the truth and the moral conviction to tell it. In Meirion's words:

> *There is a small group of powerful people at the BBC who think it would have been better if the truth about Savile had*

not come out. And they aim to punish the reporters who revealed it.[428]

Liz MacKean on how *BBC* treated her to the end:

When the Savile Scandal broke, the BBC tried to smear my reputation. They said they had banned the film because Meirion and I had produced shoddy journalism. I stayed to fight them, but I knew they would make me leave in the end. Managers would look through me as if I wasn't there. I went because I was never going to appear on screen again.[429]

Meirion said that *BBC* creative director Alan Yentob called Meirion and Liz "traitors" after he saw the Panorama piece where the two explained how the *BBC* in chronic cover-up mode cancelled airing their Savile exposé.[430]

After her two decade tenure at *BBC*, Liz went on to make films for *Channel 4*'s Dispatch program. The bad blood that went down between Liz and her despicable former employer, then her sudden passing a short time later at a relatively young age leaving two daughters behind, ultimately joining the notorious *BBC* cemetery row of questionable, sad and highly suspicious deaths after exposing the *BBC* pedo-cover-up, leaves many still wondering… was she yet the latest brave KIA casualty in the war against truth?

The phenomenon of a plethora of highly suspicious deaths befalling employees at one particular company is nothing new. From 1982 to 1989 twenty-five scientists that worked at the UK defense contractor GEC-Marconi on the controversial US "Star Wars" project and the "Sting Ray" torpedo project were suddenly mysterious killed in an obvious cover-up of murder.[431] And the obvious culprit was intelligences services just as they're undoubtedly involved in so many of the *BBC*-related deaths as well. One, the global intelligence community has both the means and motive to silence those endowed with valuable, highly-incriminating, top secret information and two, the CIA, Mossad and MI6 are never held accountable by either governments or law enforcement agencies.

An identical parallel pattern has been unfolding with dozens of doctors paying the price for speaking out against the dangers of Big Pharma and vaccines.[432] Then there’s what commonly happens to muckraking journalists and activists who courageously uncover explosive evidence that could bring down crime cabal powerbrokers. Among the half-dozen short list are Gary Webb,[433] artist Mark Lombardi,[434] J.H. Hatfield,[435] Danny Casolaro,[436] Michael Hastings[437] and Max Spiers,[438] though many more around the world have been violently silenced making truth telling journalism as a profession an endangered species. One look at the Bush-Clinton crime family says it all for their never-ending list of “suicided” insiders that knew too much.

With so many nefarious forces all working together to conceal the truth from ever being revealed, it’s no wonder the global pedophilia network has remained so fully intact by eliminating and silencing threats and constantly covering-up cabal criminality. Of course after Jill Dando died, the Metropolitan Police were reported to have interviewed both Dr. Farthing and Sir Cliff Richard on a number of occasions. But because they are likely MI5 assets working on behalf of the criminal British establishment, nothing they could say or do would ever place them at risk of being identified as suspects or accomplices since Metro never fails to comply with orders issued by British intelligence or Special Branch, the UK’s terrorism-counterterrorism unit. But at this point with all this massively overwhelming, cumulative evidence, it should be both flagrantly and abundantly clear that the most powerful criminals in the United Kingdom murdered Jill Dando with complete impunity and were determined at all cost to conceal that ugly truth from the public, no different from their deadly hit on Princess Diana, her unborn Muslim-to-be child and future Muslim husband little more than a year and a half earlier. For a very long time the planetary controllers have been child raping murderers, millions if not billions of times over. It's high time we citizens of the world finally face up to that very dark, most disturbing reality and finally begin holding the relative handful of monsters in this world fully accountable.

Because the government-funded *BBC* is part of the same interlocking pedophilia crime cabal as Westminster and British royalty, the giant media conglomerate has a long history of shielding its VIP pedophiles and suppressing their heinous crimes. Case in point, the *BBC* is notorious for its atrocious track record of systematically attacking and smearing child abuse survivors along with journalists and the small minority of MPs that have courageously attempted to expose the truth.[439]

Let's face it, the pedo-cabal stops at no limit to punish and destroy those deemed a serious enough threat, from fellow criminals who knew too much to morally strong souls determined to expose the truth. Knowing that the pedophilia scourge is the ruling elite's Achilles heel in the face of mounting overwhelming evidence unmasking the international pedo-crime cabal, elite pedophiles are growing more desperate, fearing their days may be numbered with critical mass amongst the global masses approaching. So as of late they've been pushing back, winning in court, discounting victim allegations and silencing the truth speakers. Their methods are many. The highest threats in recent times are victims of both overt but primarily covert assassinations through electronic weaponry deployed as psychotronic warfare inducing untraceable, fast-spreading cancers, sudden heart attacks, aneurisms and strokes,[440] perhaps exceeded only by the ever-so-popular standby – assassination by "suicide."[441] The elite is currently engaged in a genocidal war against humanity. But the truth will prevail. Spread it.

The next chapter exposes the “pedo-love affair” between Sir Jimmy and his five time-knight nominating pedo-saturated Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher, and more on the MI5 mole as the pimping sexual blackmailer this time to government VIPs.

Notes

---

[1] Anita Singh, “Radio 1 DJ Kevin Greening Died after Drugs and Bondage Session,” *The Telegraph*, June 3, 2008, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/celebritynews/2070000/Radio-1-DJ-Kevin-Greening-died-after-drugs-and-bondage-session.html.

[2] “Millionaire BBC TV Presenter Kristian Digby Suffocated to Death Accidentally ‘when Sex Game went Wrong,’” *Daily Mail*, December 29, 2010, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/tvshowbiz/article-1327843/BBC-TV-presenter-Kristian-Digby-died-accidentally-sex-game.html.

[3] Rebecca Camber and Lizzy Parry, “Jimmy Savile’s Former BBC Driver David Smith Found Dead before Sex Crimes Trial,” *Daily Mail*, October 28, 2013, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2478642/Jimmy-Saviles-BBC-driver-David-Smith-dead-sex-crimes-trial.html.

[4] The Obama’s ‘Dead Pool,’” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, December 12, 2013, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_obama163.htm.

[5] Rebecca Camber and Lizzy Parry, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2478642/Jimmy-Saviles-BBC-driver-David-Smith-dead-sex-crimes-trial.html.

[6] Rebecca Camber and Lizzy Parry, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2478642/Jimmy-Saviles-BBC-driver-David-Smith-dead-sex-crimes-trial.html.

[7] Rebecca Camber and Lizzy Parry, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2478642/Jimmy-Saviles-BBC-driver-David-Smith-dead-sex-crimes-trial.html.

[8] Rebecca Camber and Lizzy Parry, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2478642/Jimmy-Saviles-BBC-driver-David-Smith-dead-sex-crimes-trial.html.

[9] Rebecca Camber and Lizzy Parry, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2478642/Jimmy-Saviles-BBC-driver-DavidSmith-dead-sex-crimes-trial.html.

[10] Tom Pettifor, "'I was Abused by Paedophile at BBC Television Centre': Victim's Anger at Jimmy Savile Friend's Drugs Suicide – Video," *Mirror*, April 3, 2014, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/david-smith-suicide-victims-anger-3342513.

[11] "Arch Paedophile Jimmy Savile was Israel Supporter and Devout Zionist," *21st Century Wire*, October 29, 2012, https://21stcenturywire.com/2012/10/28/arch-paedophile-jimmy-savile-was-a-devout-zionist-and-an-israel-supporter/.

[12] Tom Pettifor, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/david-smith-suicide-victims-anger-3342513.

[13] Tom Pettifor, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/david-smith-suicide-victims-anger-3342513.

[14] Tom Pettifor, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/david-smith-suicide-victims-anger-3342513.

[15] "Care Home Abuse Victim tells of Sex Parties UK Government Pedo's," YouTube video, 11:49, posted on July 9, 2015, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=xTsHJEQosGA.

[16] Tom Pettifor, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/david-smith-suicide-victims-anger-3342513.

[17] Mike Sullivan and Tom Morgan, “MP was at Snuff Film Lad’s Murder,” *The Sun*, December 6, 2014, https://www.thesun.co.uk/archives/news/580588/mp-was-at-snuff-film-lads-murder//

[18] Charles Montaldo, “Profile of a Pedophile and Common Characteristics,” *ThoughtCo.com*, December 14, 2017, https://www.thoughtco.com/profile-of-pedophile-and-common-characteristics-973203.

[19] “All Finger in P.I.E.,” *labour25.com*, March 3, 2014, https://labour25.com/2014/03/03/all-fingers-in-pie/.

[20] “The Kray Twins, Boys, Top People, Sex in Prisons,” *whale.to*, June 1, 2009, http://www.whale.to/c/kray_twins2.html.

[21] Robert Chalmers, “Jonathan King: ‘The only Apology I have is to say that I was good at Seduction,’” *Independent*, April 22, 2012, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/people/profiles/jonathan-king-the-only-apology-i-have-is-to-say-that-i-was-good-at-seduction-7658249.html.

[22] Tom Evans, “David Bowie had Sex ‘with more young people than Jimmy Savile,’ Disgraced Pop Mogul Claims,” *Daily Star*, March 2, 2016, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/498207/David-Bowie-sex-more-young-people-than-Jimmy-Savile-according-to-Jonathan-King.

[23] Sam Marsden, “Mike Smith's Friends had no idea that DJ was Dying: Ex-Colleagues were kept in the Dark over Heart Condition and say he never Recovered from Death of Member of the Public on TV Show he Hosted with Noel Edmonds,” *Daily Mail*, August 4, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2715085/Mike-Smiths-friends-no-idea-DJ-dying-Ex-colleagues-kept-dark.html.

[24] Sam Marsden, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2715085/Mike-Smiths-friends-no-idea-DJ-dying-Ex-colleagues-kept-dark.html.

[25] “1988: BBC Presenters in Helicopter Crash,” *BBC*, September 10, 2005, http://news.bbc.co.uk/onthisday/hi/dates/stories/september/10/newsid_2504000/2504243.stm.

[26] Jon Roseman, “Why I believe Jill Dando was Killed by a Serbian Hitman,” *Daily Mail*, March 5, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2110266/Why-I-believe-Jill-Dando-killed-Serbian-hitman.html.

[27] Anna Dubuis, “Cause of Rik Mayall's Death Remains a Mystery as Post-Mortem Result Inconclusive,” *Evening Standard*, June 12, 2014, https://www.standard.co.uk/news/celebritynews/cause-of-rik-mayalls-death-remains-a-mystery-as-post-mortem-result-inconclusive-9532042.html.

[28] Adam Withnall, “Rik Mayall Dead: ‘We don't know what Killed him yet,’ says Wife,” *Independent*, June 10, 2014, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/people/rik-mayall-dead-comedian-and-actor-dies-aged-56-9515603.html.

[29] “Mysterious Deaths at BBC,” *antioligarch.wordpress.com*, January 5, 2016, https://antioligarch.wordpress.com/2016/01/05/mysterious-deaths-at-the-bbc/.

[30] “Peaches Geldof's last Interview: ‘Heroin is such a Bleak Drug,’” *The Guardian*, June 20, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/culture/2014/jun/20/peaches-geldof-last-interview-heroin-spectator.

[31] “Was Peaches Geldof Murdered by the BBC?” *sonarz.com*, March 1, 2016, http://sonarz.com/was-peaches-geldof-murdered-by-the-bbc/.

[32] “Bob Geldof is Evil,” *spikethenews.blogspot.com*, April 2014, http://spikethenews.blogspot.com/2014/04/bob-geldof-is-evil.html.

[33] Hannah Ellis-Petersen, “Peaches Geldof: Weekend Plans and Posted Photos indicated ‘Normal Self,’” *The Guardian*, May 1, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/culture/2014/may/01/inquest-peaches-geldof-plans-photos-heroin-overdose.

[34] Harriet, Arkell, “Why did Police say Peaches’ Death was ‘Unexplained’? Force say ‘Duty of Care’ to Geldof Family was behind Decision to Withhold Details about her Death, *Daily Mail*, July 25, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2705566/Why-did-police-say-Peaches-death-unexplained-Force-say-fear-upsetting-Geldof-family-decision-withhold-details-death.html.

[35] Harriet Arkell, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2705566/Why-did-police-say-Peaches-death-unexplained-Force-say-fear-upsetting-Geldof-family-decision-withhold-details-death.html.

[36] Lauren Izso, “Peaches Geldof, British-Jewish Socialite and Daughter of Bob Geldof Dead at 25,” *Jerusalem Post*, April 8, 2014, https://www.jpost.com/Arts-and-Culture/Entertainment/Peaches-Geldof-British-Jewish-socialite-and-daughter-of-Bob-Geldof-dead-at-25-347887.

[37] Richard Price, “Forget Scientology, Celebs are now Falling for an even more Sinister ‘Religion’: Introducing the Satanic Sex Cult that's Snaring Stars such as Peaches Geldof,” *Daily Mail*, April 21, 2013, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/femail/article-2312632/Introducing-Satanic-sex-cult-thats-snaring-stars-Peaches-Geldof.html#ixzz2RBhUZNrG.

[38] Leonie Cooper, “Marilyn Manson: The most Famous Satanist in the World talks Politics, Family and Collecting Human Skeletons,” NME, September 22, 2017, https://www.nme.com/features/marilyn-manson-interview-2017-2143403-2143403.

[39] Shannon Lee, “10 Music Stars Tied to Satanic Worship,” *The Richest*, July 4, 1014, https://www.therichest.com/expensive-lifestyle/lifestyle/10-music-stars-tied-to-satanic-worship/.

[40] Martin Robinson, “’He’d have Sex with anyone’: Ex-Girlfriend of Lostprophets Pervert Reveals his Sick Fantasies as it Emerges he ‘Seduced Fan aged 15’ before she Offered him her Baby to Abuse,” *Daily Mail*, November 28, 2013, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2514871/Ian-Watkins-seduced-Lostprophets-fan-15-offered-baby-abuse.html.

[41] “Peaches Geldof, Mind Control, Satanism, Israel,” *aangirfan.com*, April 21, 2014, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/04/peaches-geldof-mind-control-satanism.html.

[42] Matthew Weaver and Josh Halliday, “Peaches Geldof Apologizes for Ian Watkins Sex Abuse Tweet,” *The Guardian*, November 29, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2013/nov/29/peaches-geldof-apology-ian-watkins-tweet-lostprophets.

[43] Hugo Gye, “Radio 1 DJ Fearne Cotton Slammed for using Paedophile Ian Watkins’ Catchphrase ‘Mega lolz’ in a Jingle,” *Daily Mail*, January 29, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2547936/Radio-1-DJ-Fearne-Cotton-slammed-using-paedophile-Ian-Watkins-catchphrase-mega-lolz-jingle.html.

[44] Tania Branagan, “TV Star Killed by Heroin ‘Bing,’” *The Guardian*, November 9, 2000, https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2000/nov/09/drugsandalcohol.taniabranigan.

[45] Jerry Lawton, “Sick Satanic Website Claims that Peaches was Murdered as part of a Black Magic Plot,” *Daily Mail*, April 12, 2014, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/374041/Satanic-website-cult-claims-that-Peaches-Geldof-was-murdered-as-part-of-black-magic-plot.

[46] Deborah Wilkes, “Bob Geldof’s Cult of Mysterious Death,” *Paranoid Magazine*, May 23, 2014, http://www.paranoiamagazine.com/2014/05/bob-geldofs-cult-of-mysterious-death/.

[47] “Geldof gets second Chance at Nobel,” *LA Times/Reuters*, November 27, 1986, https://www.newspapers.com/clip/13996249/the_los_angeles_times/.

[48] George Monbiat, “Bono can't help Africans by Stealing their Voice,” *The Guardian*, June 17, 2013, https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2013/jun/17/bono-africans-stealing-voice-poor.

[49] Francis Carr Begbie, “The Tarnished Halo of ‘Saint Bob’ Geldof,” *Occidental Observer*, July 28, 2016, https://www.theoccidentalobserver.net/2016/07/28/the-tarnished-halo-of-saint-bob-geldof/.

[50] Ezili Dantò, “Hillary Clinton, Haiti Resources, US Thievery and the Female Butchers,” *ezilidanto.com*, March 9, 2015, http://www.ezilidanto.com/2015/03/clintonminingthieveryinhaiti/.

[51] “Sir Bob Geldof wants $100,000 for Antipoverty Speech,” *Daily Telegraph*, November 14, 2008, https://www.dailytelegraph.com.au/sir-bob-geldof-wants-100000-for-anti-povery-speech/news-story/3a30bc21002a9d9c068be06fa573f77a.

[52] Barbara McMahon, “Geldof Cancels Italian Tour after only 45 Fans turn up for Milan Gig,” *The Guardian*, July 24, 2006, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2006/jul/24/arts.italy.

[53] Nathalie Rothchild, “Bob Geldof: He’s so Overrated,” *Spiked*, November 11, 2010, http://www.spiked-online.com/newsite/article/9882.

[54] Deborah Wilkes, http://www.paranoiamagazine.com/2014/05/bob-geldofs-cult-of-mysterious-death/

[55] “Tony Blair and the Paedophile Connection,” *The Coleman Experience/whale.to*, April 28, 2014, http://www.whale.to/c/tony_blair6.html.

[56] “Labour’s TV Mogul Lord Alli with a new Fortune in his Sights,” *Evening Standard*, June 30, 2010, https://www.standard.co.uk/business/labour-s-tv-mogul-lord-alli-with-a-new-fortune-in-his-sights-6486724.html.

[57] “Peter Mandelson,” *whale.to*, http://whale.to/c/peter_mandelson.html.

[58] “Paedophile Politicians,” *sites.google.com*, https://sites.google.com/site/paedophilepoliticians/.

[59] Vanessa Allen, “Peter Mandelson stays Silent over his Contact with Prince Andrew's Disgraced Financier Friend,” *Daily Mail*, March 7, 2011,

https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1364001/Peter-Mandelson-silent-contact-Prince-Andrew-friend-Jeffrey-Epstein.html.

[60] T Stokes, “Tony Blair as ‘Miranda’ he who Pay the Piper,” *whale.to*, http://whale.to/c/tony_blair4.html.

[61] Joe Shute, “How far did Police go to Protect Jimmy Savile?” *The Telegraph*, October 18, 2013, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/10389041/How-far-did-police-go-to-protect-Jimmy-Savile.html.

[62] “How Jimmy Savile Revealed all in the Psychiatrist’s Chair,” *Channel 4 News*, November 2, 2012, https://www.channel4.com/news/how-jimmy-savile-revealed-all-in-the-psychiatrists-chair.

[63] “Bob Geldof is Evil,” http://spikethenews.blogspot.com/2014/04/bob-geldof-is-evil.html.

[64] Richard Shears, “Searching a Bin for Cocaine with Fingers covered in Cigarette Burns down to the Bone, Tawdry last hours of Rock Star Michael Hutchence: 17 years on, new Revelations from Police who Probed Death,” *Daily Mail*, February 16, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2560498/Hunting-bins-dregs-cocaine-cigarette-burns-bone-Michael-Hutchence-detectives-reveal-desperate-destructive-final-hours-rock-star-hanged-himself.html.

[65] Robert Milliken, “The Death of a Rock Star,” *Independent*, April 5, 1998, https://www.independent.co.uk/arts-entertainment/the-death-of-a-rock-star-1154565.html.

[66] David Randall, “Suicide, Sex Game, or Murder? The Death of David Carradine could be a case for the FBI,” *Independent*, June 7, 2009, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/people/news/suicide-sex-game-or-murder-the-death-of-david-carradine-could-be-a-case-for-the-fbi-1698622.html.

[67] “12 Clinton Whistleblowers Found ‘Hanging from Doorknobs,’” *NWO Report*, June 18, 2018, https://nworeport.me/2018/06/18/12-clinton-whistleblowers-found-hanging-from-doorknobs/.

[68] “Bob Geldof is Evil,” http://spikethenews.blogspot.com/2014/04/bob-geldof-is-evil.html.

[69] “Death by Hanging from a Doorknob - The Signature of Pedophilia-Related Assassinations? Eleven People so far - Who Knew Doorknobs could be so Deadly?” *Stillness in the Storm*, June 12, 2018, https://stillnessinthestorm.com/2018/06/death-by-hanging-from-a-doorknob-the-signature-of-pedophilia-related-assassinations-eleven-people-so-far-who-knew-doorknobs-could-be-so-deadly/.

[70] Derrick W. Hand, “Michael Hutchence Death explained: the Coroner's Account in his own words,” *Herald Sun*, January 29, 2014, https://www.heraldsun.com.au/news/law-order/michael-hutchence-death-explained-the-coroners-account-in-his-own-words/news-story/26dae2274fadfcbb10beb994f7cf7d26.

[71] David Graves and Geoffrey Lee Martin, “Geldof wins Custody of Paula Yates's Daughter,” *The Telegraph*, December 18, 2000, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/1378636/Geldof-wins-custody-of-Paula-Yatess-daughter.html.

[72] Matt Buchanan and Leesha McKenny, “No Tiger Lily at Gran’s Funeral,” *Sydney Morning Herald*, September 30, 2010, https://www.smh.com.au/national/no-tiger-lily-at-grans-funeral-20100929-15xj0.html.

[73] Alison Boshoff, “Orphan who’s Bob Geldof’s Greatest Success: Tiger Lily whose Rock Star Father Killed himself when she was a Baby and Mum Paula Yates Died of a Drug Overdose Celebrates turning 21,” *Daily Mail*, July 21, 2018, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4719598/Orphan-s-Bob-Geldof-s-greatest-success-Tiger-Lily.html.

[74] Deborah Wilkes, “Bob Geldof’s Cult of Mysterious Death…” *Paranoia Magazine*, May 23, 2014, http://www.paranoiamagazine.com/2014/05/bob-geldofs-cult-of-mysterious-death/.

[75] “Revealed: The Spot where Tragic TV Star Mark Speight's Body Hung Undiscovered for six days,” *Evening Standard*, April 14, 2008, https://www.standard.co.uk/news/revealed-the-spot-where-tragic-tv-star-mark-speights-body-hung-undiscovered-for-six-days-7302140.html.

[76] “BBC Presenter Died in Scalding Bath after taking five times Lethal level of Cocaine with Fiancé Mark Speight,” *Evening Standard*, April 2, 2008, https://www.standard.co.uk/news/bbc-presenter-died-in-scalding-bath-after-taking-five-times-lethal-level-of-cocaine-with-fianc-mark-6659733.html.

[77] Gordon Raynor, “BBC Children’s Host Died after Cocaine Binge,” *The Telegraph*, April 2, 2008, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/1583665/BBC-childrens-host-died-after-cocaine-binge.html.

[78] Rebecca Evans, “TV Star Mark Speight Hanged himself with Shoelaces,” *Mirror*, May 21, 2008, https://www.mirror.co.uk/3am/celebrity-news/tv-star-mark-speight-hanged-309032.

[79] Lizzie Smith, “Tearful Rolf Harris pays Tribute to Tragic TV Presenter Mark Speight at Memorial Service,” *Daily Mail*, August 7, 2008, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/tvshowbiz/article-1042372/Tearful-Rolf-Harris-pays-tribute-tragic-TV-presenter-Mark-Speight-memorial-service.html.

[80] “Childline Supporting Children for the past 30 Years,” *nspcc.org.uk*, https://www.nspcc.org.uk/services-and-resources/childline/.

[81] “Esther Rantzen A Danger to Children,” *scribd.com*, https://www.scribd.com/doc/256503576/ESTHER-RANTZEN-and-the-paedophiles.

[82] “Mysterious Nick Ross,” *Tap News Wire/ The Coleman Experience*, December 11, 2013, http://tapnewswire.com/2015/08/nick-ross-says-exposing-heath-is-wrong-whats-he-got-to-hide/.

[83] “Esther Rantzen Reveals Childhood Abuse Secret,” *The Telegraph*, August 30, 2011, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/celebritynews/8730222/Esther-Rantzen-reveals-childhood-abuse-secret.html.

[84] “Jorvik: The Vikings Return,” 1984, *Yorkshire Film Archives*, at 7:38, http://www.yorkshirefilmarchive.com/film/jorvik-vikings-return.

[85] “Ian Skipper, Obituary,” *Yorkshire Post*, July 31, 2009, https://www.yorkshirepost.co.uk/news/obituaries/ian-skipper-1-2296109.

[86] “Burnley Car Empire Boss Ian Skipper Dies,” *Burnley Express*, August 14, 2009, https://www.burnleyexpress.net/news/burnley-car-empire-boss-ian-skipper-dies-1-1692659.

[87] Vanessa Allen, “Peter Mandelson stays Silent over his Contact with Prince Andrew’s Disgraced Financier Friend,” *Daily Mail*, March 7, 2011, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1364001/Peter-Mandelson-silent-contact-Prince-Andrew-friend-Jeffrey-Epstein.html.

[88] “Peter Mandelson,” *whale.to*, http://www.whale.to/c/peter_mandelson.html.

[89] “Peter Mandelson,” http://www.whale.to/c/peter_mandelson.html.

[90] “About us what we do, who we are and how we're Fighting for every Childhood,” *NSPCC*.org, https://www.nspcc.org.uk/what-we-do/about-us/.

[91] Vanessa Allen, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1364001/Peter-Mandelson-silent-contact-Prince-Andrew-friend-Jeffrey-Epstein.html.

[92] “How the NSPCC Faked Child Abuse Stories to Generate Cash,” *Daily Mail*, September 11, 2011, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-481243/How-NSPCC-faked-child-abuse-stories-generate-cash.html.

[93] Melissa Kite, “Charities are the last Bastion of Corporate Greed,” *The Spectator*, August 1, 2015, https://www.spectator.co.uk/2015/08/im-done-with-this-guilt-trip-lets-hold-charities-to-account/.

[94] Jonathon Fagan, “Overpaid Charity CEOs – Top 20 of Highest Paid Employees,” *legalrecruitment.blogspot.com*, December 6, 2014, https://legalrecruitment.blogspot.com/2014/12/overpaid-charity-ceos-top-20-of-highest.html.

[95] Angella Johnson, “How Prince Andrew shared a Room at Epstein's Caribbean Hideaway with a Busty Blonde who Claimed she was a Brain Surgeon,” *Daily Mail*, March 13, 2011, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1365733/How-Prince-Andrew-shared-room-Epsteins-Caribbean-hideaway-busty-blonde-claimed-brain-surgeon.html.

[96] Matt Agorist, “Police Chief Confirms former UK Prime Minister Raped Dozens of Children and Government ‘Covered it up,’” *The Free Thought Project,* February 19, 2017, https://thefreethoughtproject.com/breaking-fmr-uk-prime-minister-heath-pedophilia/.

[97] “Oh Dear! British Intelligence Chair Rifkind Caught in Influence Peddling Sting!” *Crimes of Empire*, February 23, 2015, https://crimesofempire.com/2015/02/23/oh-dear-intelligence-chair-rifkind-caught-in-influence-peddling-sting-2/.

[98] Hannah Furness, “I’d probably Watch Child Porn, Admits former Crimewatch Presenter Nick Ross,” *The Telegraph*, June 2, 2013, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/culture/hay-festival/10094749/Id-probably-watch-child-porn-admits-former-Crimewatch-presenter-Nick-Ross.html.

[99] Lori Handrahan, “Investigating the Trade in Child Rape,” *Medium*, February 24, 2015, https://medium.com/@LoriHandrahan2/investigating-the-trade-in-child-rape-torture-aka-child-pornography-4faa12b110e3.

[100] “The Curious case of Nick Ross, VIP Child-Abuse, Filthy Comments, Operation Yewtree, Crimestoppers and the Death of Jill Dando,” *whale.to/The Coleman Experience*, June 3, 2013, http://www.whale.to/c/curious_case_of_nick_ross.html.

[101] Sally Baker, “‘Twas the Night before Christmas and the Culprits were Named…,” *drsallybaker.com*, http://www.drsallybaker.com/uncategorized/twas-the-night-before-christmas-and-the-culprits-were-named.

[102] “Margaret Hodge – Children’s Homes Abuse & Connections to PIE,” *The UK & Ireland Database*, https://theukdatabase.com/councillorspolitical-party-affiliated/westminster-scandal-114-secret-files-on-paedophile-cases-missing/more-than-10-politicians-on-list-held-by-police-investigating-westminster-paedophile-ring/the-civil-servant-in-the-home-offices-pie-funding-inquiry-and-his-academic-articles-on-boy-love/p-i-e/margaret-hodge-childrens-homes-abuse-connections-to-p-i-e/.

[103] “Dame Esther Rantzen DBE,” *Avalon.com* website, http://avalonuk.com/clients/dame-esther-rantzan-dbe.

[104] Steven Swinford, “Esther Rantzen to be made a Dame in New Year Honours List,” The Telegraph, December 27, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/honours-list/11314495/Esther-Rantzen-to-be-made-a-Dame-in-New-Year-Honours-list.html.

[105] Sebastian Shakespeare, “Dame Esther Rantzen is stepping down as a Trustee of the NSPCC after her Children 'Stage an Intervention and Asked her to do less,'” *Daily Mail*, August 8, 2018, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/tvshowbiz/article-6041045/Dame-Esther-Rantzen-steps-trustee-NSPCC.html.

[106] Patrick Hill and Alex Belfield, “Dame Esther Rantzen, 78, Refuses to Bow to her Kids’ Demands to slow down with Work,” *Mirror*, August 18, 2018, https://www.mirror.co.uk/tv/tv-news/dame-esther-rantzen-78-says-13099509.

[107] Greg Christison, “Esther’s Horror at Fairburn’s Child Sex Allegations,” *Express*, July 21, 2014, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/490176/Esther-s-horror-at-Fairbairn-child-sex-allegations.

[108] Amy Oliver and Simon Trump, “That's Strife! Picture that Reveals the very Complex Saga of Esther Rantzen, her son Joshua and his Baby... by his Married Lover,” *Daily Mail*, February 21, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2963382/Picture-reveals-complex-saga-Esther-Rantzen.html.

[109] Olga Craig, “That's Life: Esther Rantzen Broke my Mother’s Heart,” *The Telegraph*, February 18, 2001, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/1323094/Thats-life-Esther-Rantzen-broke-my-mothers-heart.html.

[110] Amy Oliver and Simon Trump, “That's Strife! Picture that Reveals the very Complex Saga of Esther Rantzen, her Son Joshua and his Baby... by his Married Lover,” *Daily Mail*, February 21, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2963382/Picture-reveals-complex-saga-Esther-Rantzen.html.

[111] Cassandra Wilcox, “Esther Rantzen’s Stepdaughter Speaks out,” *Daily Mail*, September 12, 2018, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/tvshowbiz/article-24511/Esther-Rantzens-stepdaughter-speaks-out.html.

[112] “Esther Rantzen A Danger to Children,” https://www.scribd.com/doc/256503576/ESTHER-RANTZEN-and-the-paedophiles.

[113] “Esther Rantzen: That’s Life UK Tour Announced,” Avalon Management website, http://avalonuk.com/esther-rantzen-thats-life-uk-tour-announced/.

[114] “Childline,” *whale.to*, http://www.whale.to/c/childline.html.

[115] Katy Brand, “Jimmy Savile Allegations: Esther Rantzen's Response Defies Belief,” *The Telegraph*, October 5, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/women/womens-life/9587450/Jimmy-Savile-allegations-Esther-Rantzens-response-defies-belief.html.

[116] “Evidence Dame Esther Rantzen Lied about @ShyKeenan,” YouTube video, 11:07, posted on November 21, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=crLogC1M36Y.

[117] Antonella Lazzeri, “Abuse Campaigner: ‘I told Esther Rantzen about Paedo Jimmy Savile 18 Years ago,” *The Sun*, October 12, 2016, https://www.thesun.co.uk/archives/news/984731/abuse-campaigner-i-told-esther-rantzen-about-paedo-jimmy-savile-18-years-ago.

[118] “Esther Rantzen Lied about Knowing Shy Keenan,” *Phoenix Post*, November 16, 2017, http://www.thephoenixpost.com/6444-2/.

[119] Tom Bryant, “Esther Rantzen: ‘No Memory’ of being Contacted by Campaigner over Jimmy Savile Abuse Claims,” *Mirror*, October 17, 2012, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jimmy-savile-abuse-claims-esther-1384838.

[120] Anna Edwards, Alex Ward and Larisa Brown, “’I’m Staying put’: Esther Rantzen Claims she will remain Child Abuse Charity Patron after Claims she Ignored Warnings over Jimmy Savile,” *Daily Mail*, October 13, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2217149/Im-staying-Esther-Rantzen-claims-remain-child-abuse-charity-patron-claims-ignored-warnings-Jimmy-Savile.html.

[121] Emily Allen, “Esther Rantzen Fears the Savile Sex Scandal could Destroy her ChildLine Legacy,” *Daily Mail*, October 16, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2218389/Esther-Rantzen-fears-Jimmy-Savile-sex-scandal-destroy-ChildLine-legacy.html.

[122] Esther Rantzen, “Jim Fooled us all into thinking he was a Saint. When I saw the Truth, I Wept,” *Daily Mail*, October 1, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2210987/Jimmy-Savile-fooled-thinking-saint-says-Esther-Rantzen.html.

[123] Katy Brand, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/women/womens-life/9587450/Jimmy-Savile-allegations-Esther-Rantzens-response-defies-belief.html.

[124] “Esther Rantzen Lied about Knowing Shy Keenan,” http://www.thephoenixpost.com/6444-2/.

[125] “Exposure Update - The Jimmy Savile Investigation,” *ITV*, 2013, YouTube video, 24:56, posted on March 7, 2013, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=AwaT-mfqJpo.

[126] “Esther Rantzen – Exposing Children directly to Drug and Sex Parties – Allegation,” Ben Fellows interview, YouTube video, 2012, 02:42, posted May 14, 2013, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=CMC_QLaoqMo&feature=youtu.be.

[127] “Esther Rantzen – Was she Ignorant to Child Abuse?” *UK & Ireland Database*, https://theukdatabase.com/councillorspolitical-party-affiliated/jimmy-saville-witch-hunt-or-paedophile/jimmy-saviles-mysterious-payments-to-children-revealed-in-secret-dossier/esther-rantzen-was-she-ignorant-to-child-abuse/.

[128] Ying Hui Tan, “Law Report: Excessive Libel Damages Cut: Rantzen v Mirror Group Newspapers and others. Court of Appeal (Lord Justice Neill, Lord Justice Staughton and Lord Justice Roch),” *Independent,* April 1, 1993, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/law-report-excessive-libel-damages-cut-rantzen-v-mirror-group-newspapers-and-others-court-of-appeal-1452545.html.

[129] “Man Convicted of Sex Assault on Girl, 5, in Swimming Pool: Guest at Holiday Home of Child Abuse Campaigner Claimed Ideas were put into his Victim’s Mind,” *Independent*, July 19, 1994,

https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/man-convicted-of-sex-assault-on-girl-5-in-swimming-pool-guest-at-holiday-home-of-child-abuse-1414750.html.

[130] Marc Horne, “Esther Rantzen: My Shock over my MP Lover's Links to Elm House Paedophile Ring,” *Daily Mail*, July 20, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2698634/Esther-Rantzen-My-shock-MP-lovers-links-Elm-House-paedophile-ring.html.

[131] “Wanless Linked to Portillo; Fake Investigation into Child Abuse?” *aanirfan.blogspot.com*, July 11, 2014, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/07/fake-investigation-into-child-abuse.html.

[132]“ Michael Portillo Embarks on a new Adventure in Brand new BBC Two Series,” *BBC*, June 20, 2017, https://www.bbc.co.uk/mediacentre/latestnews/2017/great-indian-railway-journeys.

[133] “Esther Rantzen: A Danger to Children,”*scribd.com*, https://www.scribd.com/doc/256503576/ESTHER-RANTZEN-and-the-paedophiles.

[134] Tom de Castella and Tom Heyden, “How did the Pro-Paedophile Group PIE exist openly for 10 years?” *BBC*, February 27, 2014, https://www.bbc.com/news/magazine-26352378.

[135] “Why the Bloody Hell hasn’t Esther Rantzen been Arrested yet?” *Coleman Experience*, January 27, 2016, https://circusbuoy.wordpress.com/2016/01/27/why-the-bloody-hell-hasnt-esther-rantzen-been-arrested-yet/.

[136] “Paris Jackson, Uri Geller and Mind Control,” *aangirgan.com*, July 20, 2013, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2013/07/paris-jackson-uri-geller-and-mind.html.

[137] Jamie Grierson, “Atmosphere of Fear still exists at BBC, Savile Abuse Report Concludes,” *The Guardian*, February 25, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2016/feb/25/jimmy-savile-abuse-bbc-culture-damned.

[138] “BBC Covered up Jimmy Savile’s Child Abuse because he was Friends with Prince Charles, Claims Veteran Broadcaster Bill Oddie,” *SWNS.com*, October 19, 2012, https://stories.swns.com/news/jimmy-savile-scandal-bbc-covered-abuse-friends-prince-charles-claims-bill-oddie-26272/.

[139] Tara Conlan, “Profile: Jill Dando,” *The Guardian*, November 15, 2007, https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2007/nov/15/jilldando.ukcrime.

[140] Don Hale, “Exclusive: Tragic Jill Dando Probed BBC Paedo Ring,” *Daily Star*, July 21, 2014, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/389922/Tragic-Jill-Dando-probed-BBC-PAEDO-ring.

[141] “BBC’s Sally Jones: ‘Pervert’ Savile Groped me in Lift – and Jill Dando Warned me of ‘Unwelcome Advances’ at Breakfast Time Office,” *Daily Mail*, October 27, 2012, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2224162/Savile-scandal-BBCs-Sally-Jones-says-presenter-groped-lift.html.

[142] Miriam O’Reilly, “A BBC Executive Pinned me to a Wall and made a Crude Pass. But even other Women told me to Forget it - or Lose my Career,” *Daily Mail*, October 18, 2012, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/femail/article-2219352/MIRIAM-OREILLY-A-BBC-executive-pinned-wall-crude-pass.html.

[143] Don Hale, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/389922/Tragic-Jill-Dando-probed-BBC-PAEDO-ring.

[144] Don Hale, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/389922/Tragic-Jill-Dando-probed-BBC-PAEDO-ring.

[145] Don Hale, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/389922/Tragic-Jill-Dando-probed-BBC-PAEDO-ring.

[146] Don Hale, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/389922/Tragic-Jill-Dando-probed-BBC-PAEDO-ring.

[147] Don Hale, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/389922/Tragic-Jill-Dando-probed-BBC-PAEDO-ring.

[148] Don Hale, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/389922/Tragic-Jill-Dando-probed-BBC-PAEDO-ring.

[149] Steve Hayes, "Op-Ed: Jimmy Savile – The Real Scandal," *Digital Journal*, October 5, 2012, http://www.digitaljournal.com/article/334236.

[150] Josh Halliday, "Former BBC Radio 1 Boss 'Aware of Jimmy Savile Allegations in 1970s,'" The Guardian, October 3, 2012, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2012/oct/03/bbc-jimmy-savile-abuse-claims.

[151] Josh Halliday, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2012/oct/03/bbc-jimmy-savile-abuse-claims.

[152] Robert Mendick and Laura Donnelly, "Jimmy Savile: Secret of BBC's first Sex Scandal," *The Telegraph*, October 20, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9623109/Jimmy-Savile-Secret-of-BBCs-first-sex-scandal.html.

[153] "Cliff Richard; Crusaders; Military Intelligence," *aangirfan.com*, June 16, 2016, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2016/06/cliff-richard-crusaders-military.html.

[154] Joan Smith, "We Thought we knew her so well," *Independent*, May 2, 1999, https://www.independent.co.uk/life-style/we-thought-we-knew-her-so-well-1091035.html.

[155] Geoffrey Levy, "Why the Murder of his ex-Fiancé Jill Dando still Haunts the Man who will Deliver Kate Middleton's Baby," *Daily Mail*, December 8, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2244910/Why-murder-ex-fianc-Jill-Dando-haunts-man-deliver-Kate-Middletons-baby.html.

[156] Brandon Turbeville, "The Prince and the Pedophile: Charles' Connections to Pedophilia Networks," *Activist Post*, November 16, 2012, https://www.activistpost.com/2012/11/the-prince-and-pedophile-charles.html.

[157] "Princess Diana was Surrounded by Perverts," *TioS News Organization*, http://www.tiosnews.org/437812238.

[158] "Cliff Richard – Victim," *aangirfan.com*, July 30, 2018, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2018/07/cliff-richard-victim.html.

[159] Jill Dando Murdered by Britain's VIP Paedophiles," *Coleman Experience/Tap News Wire*, August 7, 2015, http://tapnewswire.com/2015/08/jill-dando-murdered-by-britains-vip-paedophiles/.

[160] Jill Dando Murdered by Britain's VIP Paedophiles," http://tapnewswire.com/2015/08/jill-dando-murdered-by-britains-vip-paedophiles/.

[161] "Royal Baby Scam : Jill Dando's Murder Link and Fiancé: In charge of the Scam : All you need to know : Kate was and has not been Pregnant : Why did they kill the Nurse : What a Right Royal Scam," *thecolemanexperience.wordpress.com*, July 9, 2013, http://www.whale.to/c/royal_baby_scam.html,

http://thecolemanexperience.wordpress.com/2013/07/09/barry-george-jill-dando-jimmy-savile-bbc-paedophiles-cliff-richard-alan-farthing-nick-ross-and-britains-dirty-secrets/.

[162] Jill Dando Murdered by Britain's VIP Paedophiles," http://tapnewswire.com/2015/08/jill-dando-murdered-by-britains-vip-paedophiles/.

[163] Jill Dando Murdered by Britain's VIP Paedophiles," http://tapnewswire.com/2015/08/jill-dando-murdered-by-britains-vip-paedophiles/.

[164] James Forsyth, "Does Mandelson remember that Blair thought Cross-Dressing was a good idea?" *The Spectator*, April 12, 2009, https://blogs.spectator.co.uk/2009/08/does-mandelson-remember-that-blair-thought-crossdressing-was-a-good-idea/.

[165] John Wight, "If Tony Blair Can't Be Prosecuted for War Crimes then no one can," *Sputnik*, August 3, 2017, https://sputniknews.com/analysis/201708031056153281-tony-blair-war-crimes/.

[166] Jill Dando Murdered by Britain's VIP Paedophiles," http://tapnewswire.com/2015/08/jill-dando-murdered-by-britains-vip-paedophiles/.

[167] "What Princess Diana Knew," *The Event Chronicle*, December 17, 2015, http://www.theeventchronicle.com/editors-pick/what-princess-diana-knew/.

[168] Ben Endley, "Fresh Clue in Jill Dando Murder case arises," *Daily Star*, March 24, 2014, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/371140/Claim-of-Jill-Dando-investigating-murder-of-Chelsea-footie-boss-put-forward.

[169] "Harding Helicopter Death Blamed on Pilot Confusion," *Independent*, February 25, 1998, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/harding-helicopter-death-blamed-on-pilots-confusion-1146797.html.

[170] Don Hale, "Police: Hitman did Kill Crimewatch Presenter Jill Dando," *Express*, April 27, 2014, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/472643/Police-Hitman-did-kill-Crimewatch-presenter-Jill-Dando.

[171] The Mysterious Death of Mike Smith," *Tap News Wire/Coleman Experience*, November 29, 2014, http://tapnewswire.com/2015/01/the-mysterious-death-of-mike-smith/.

[172] Nicola Harley, "Police Failed to act on Jill Dando Threats, says Colleague," Thee Telegraph, March 28, 2015, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/11502207/Police-failed-to-act-on-Jill-Dando-threats-says-colleague.html.

[173] "Jill Dando," *revolvy.com*, https://www.revolvy.com/topic/Jill%20Dando&item_type=topic.

[174] Richard Wheatstone and Jo-Anne Rowney, "What happened to Jill Dando? Five Unanswered Theories in Unsolved Crimewatch Star's Murder Case," *Mirror*, July 17, 2018, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jill-dando-murder-five-unanswered-7764700.

[175] Dominic Midgley, “Will Jill Dando’s Killer be named at last?” *Express*, February 9, 2017, https://www.express.co.uk/life-style/life/765042/Jill-Dando-killer-murder-investigation-murderer.

[176] “Dando Trial: Friend ‘Found Jill Slumped outside her Home,’” *Daily Mail*, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-45333/Dando-trial-Friend-Jill-slumped-outside-home.html.

[177] Ian Evans, “Report: London no Safer for all its CCTV Cameras,” *Christian Science Monitor*, February 22, 2012, https://www.csmonitor.com/World/Europe/2012/0222/Report-London-no-safer-for-all-its-CCTV-cameras.

[178] “Jill Dando Murder,” *David Icke Official Forum*, August 1, 2014, https://forum.davidicke.com/showthread.php?t=198545.

[179] “Jill Dando Murder,” https://forum.davidicke.com/showthread.php?t=198545.

[180] “Jill Dando Murder,” https://forum.davidicke.com/showthread.php?t=198545.

[181] Kevin Scott King, “Anatomy of False Flag Events,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, December 2, 2015, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_falseflag33.htm.

[182] Gordon Rayner, “Jill Dando Murder: Only a matter of time until Barry George was Cleared,” *The Telegraph*, August 1, 2008, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/2484898/Jill-Dando-murder-Only-a-matter-of-time-until-Barry-George-was-cleared.html.

[183] “Profile: Clarence Mitchell,” BBC, September 24, 2007, http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/uk_news/7010286.stm.

[184] “Tony Blair and the Paedophile Connection,” *whale.to/Coleman Experience*, April 28, 2014, http://www.whale.to/c/tony_blair6.html.

[185] “Jill Dando Murdered by the State to keep Lid on Elite Paedo Ring,” *google-law.blogspot.com*, July 28, 2013, http://google-law.blogspot.com/2013/07/jill-dando-murdered-by-state-to-keep.html.

[186] Mark Sweney, “A Veteran of Major Stories,” *The Guardian*, September 18, 2007, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2007/sep/18/marketingandpr.

[187] “Royal Baby Scam: Jill Dando’s Murder Link and Fiancé: In charge of the Scam: All you need to know: Kate was and has not been Pregnant: Why did they Kill the Nurse: What a Right Royal Scam,” *whale.to*, July 23, 2013, http://whale.to/c/royal_baby_scam.html.

[188] Joshua Haigh, “This Morning's True Crime Series Discovers New Leads for Jill Dando’s Shocking Murder,” *Mirror*, February 8, 2017, https://www.mirror.co.uk/tv/tv-news/mornings-true-crime-series-discovers-9773017.

[189] Nick Owens, “Jill Dando Murder Witness comes forward to Claim Detectives Ignored his Evidence, *Mirror*, July 21, 2013, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jill-dando-murder-witness-comes-2071046.

[190] Christopher Leake, “Dando Family and Former Fiancé want her Murder Case Closed,” Daily Mail, August 2, 2008, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1041031/Dando-family-fiance-want-murder-case-closed.html.

[191] Gordon Rayner, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/2484898/Jill-Dando-murder-Only-a-matter-of-time-until-Barry-George-was-cleared.html.

[192] Andrew Alderson and Patrick Sawyer, “Jill Dando Murder: Cold Case Review as Feud Erupts over Verdict,” *The Telegraph*, August 3, 2008, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/2491773/Jill-Dando-murder-Feud-erupts-over-verdict.html.

[193] Gordon Rayner, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/2484898/Jill-Dando-murder-Only-a-matter-of-time-until-Barry-George-was-cleared.html.

[194] Martin Robinson, “How Police Failed to Trace 100 Suspects in the Jill Dando Murder - but Questioned Cliff Richard and Jeremy Paxman to find out about her life,” *Daily Mail*, March 30, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3017544/How-police-failed-trace-100-suspects-Jill-Dando-murder-questioned-Cliff-Richard-Jeremy-Paxman-life.html.

[195] Martin Robinson, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3017544/How-police-failed-trace-100-suspects-Jill-Dando-murder-questioned-Cliff-Richard-Jeremy-Paxman-life.html.

[196] “We did all we could to Catch Jill Dando's Killer... and we did it Twice,” *Evening Standard*, May 17, 2013, https://www.standard.co.uk/news/crime/we-did-all-we-could-to-catch-jill-dandos-killer-and-we-did-it-twice-8620506.html.

[197] “A Biography of Hamish Campbell, the man chosen to Head Operation Grange,” *WhatHappenedtoMadeleineMcCann.blogspot.com*, April 28, 2014, https://whathappenedtomadeleinemccann.blogspot.com/2014/04/a-biography-of-hamish-campbell-man_28.html.

[198] Ryan Christian, “The Podesta Brothers Revealed to be in Portugal the day of Madeleine McCann’s Disappearance,” *The Last Vagabond*, November 21, 2016, http://www.thelastamericanvagabond.com/top-news/podesta-brothers-revealed/.

[199] Joshua Haigh, https://www.mirror.co.uk/tv/tv-news/mornings-true-crime-series-discovers-9773017.

[200] Roxanne Hughes, “ITV This Morning: Ruth Langsford Stunned as Ex-Policeman Uncovers Jill Dando’s ‘Killer,’” *Express*, August 2, 2018, https://www.express.co.uk/showbiz/tv-radio/997945/ITV-This-Morning-who-killed-Jill-Dando-Barry-George-convicted-acquitted-latest-news-update.

[201] Kathryn Cain, "Hitman Sensationally Claims on This Morning that he knows who Murdered Jill Dando – but won’t name them for Fear of Reprisals,” *The Sun*, February 7, 2017, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/2804429/hitman-sensationally-claims-on-this-morning-that-he-knows-who-murdered-jill-dando-but-wont-name-them-for-fear-of-reprisals/.

[202] Patrick Sawer, “Jill Dando ‘Murdered by Serbian Hitman,’” *The Telegraph*, March 3, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/9120523/Jill-Dando-murdered-by-Serbian-hitman.html.

[203] Victoria Richards, “New Police Probe as Serb Claims he Killed Jill Dando,” *Express*, February 23, 2009, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/85959/New-police-probe-as-Serb-claims-he-killed-Jill-Dando.

[204] Mario Ledwith and Chris Parsons, “Serbian Hitman Shot Dead Jill Dando and my Husband: Widow of Journalist Claims BBC Presenter was Killed for Attacking Milosevic's Regime just like her Partner,” *Daily Mail*, March 3, 2012, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2109602/Jill-Dando-murdered-Serbian-hitman.html.

[205] “The Curious Case of Nick Ross, VIP Child-Abuse, Filthy Comments, Operation Yewtree, Crimestoppers and the Death of Jill Dando,” whale.to, June 3, 2013, http://whale.to/c/curious_case_of_nick_ross.html.

[206] “Jill Dando,” *popflock.com*, http://www.popflock.com/learn?s=Jill_Dando.

[207] Peter Hyatt, “Nick Ross Statement Analysis,” *Rich Planet TV*, December 21, 2017, https://www.richplanet.net/nickross.php.

[208] Nick Ross, “’How Jill Dando's Death Convinced me everything you know about Crime is Wrong’: NICK ROSS tells the Shocking Truth about the Murder of his Friend and the real cause of Crime,” *Daily Mail*, May 18, 2013, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2326656/How-Jill-Dandos-death-convinced-know-crime-wrong-NICK-ROSS-tells-shocking-truth-murder-friend-real-cause-crime.html.

[209] Nick Ross, “Dando Murder: I know Barry George Killed my Friend Jill,” Daily Mail, November 7, 2007, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-491452/Dando-murder-I-know-Barry-George-killed-friend-Jill.html.

[210] Nick Dorman, “Barry George: I spent 8 years in Jail now Police must find Jill Dando's Real Killer,” *Mirror*, April 1, 2015, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/barry-george-spent-8-years-5443488.

[211] Nick Ross, “Why are we Prioritizing Crimes from 50 years ago over Crimes from the last 50 minutes? In Wake of Heath Scandal, BBC Star Nick Ross’ Provocative View,” *Daily Mail*, August 9, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/debate/article-3190690/Why-prioritising-crimes-50-years-ago-crimes-50-minutes-wake-Heath-scandal-BBC-star-NICK-ROSS-provocative-view.html.

[212] Geoffrey Levy, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2244910/Why-murder-ex-fianc-Jill-Dando-haunts-man-deliver-Kate-Middletons-baby.html.

[213] Charlotte Bailey, “Jill Dando’s Fiancé to be the Queen’s Doctor,” *The Telegraph*, September 26, 2008, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/theroyalfamily/3084196/Jill-Dandos-fiance-to-be-the-Queens-doctor.html.

[214] “Nine years later, Jill's Dando's Fiancé Enjoys a Quiet Wedding,” *Daily Mail*, March 31, 2008, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1003719/Nine-years-later-Jills-fiance-enjoys-quiet-wedding.html.

[215] “Meet the Doctors who Delivered the Duchess of Cambridge's New Baby Boy, *The Telegraph*, April 23, 2018, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2018/04/23/alan-farthing-guy-thorpe-beeston-meet-doctors-will-deliver-kate/.

[216] “Kate’s Fake Pregnancy, Part 1,” *helpfreetheearth.com*, June 27, 2013, http://www.helpfreetheearth.com/news825_kate.html.

[217] “It Got them Killed: Jacintha Saldanha,” *Spike the News*, http://spikethenews.blogspot.com/2013/07/it-got-them-killed-jacintha-saldanha.html.

[218] “Consultant Directory,” *imperialprivatehealthcare.co.uk*, https://imperialprivatehealthcare.co.uk/consultants-directory/pg/7/.

[219] Cole Moreton, “Why did Professor Dick van Velzen think Butchering Babies was right?” *Independent,* December 5, 1999, https://www.independent.co.uk/life-style/health-and-families/health-news/why-did-professor-dick-van-velzen-think-butchering-babies-was-right-738078.html

[220] Alison Weir, “Israeli Organ Harvesting,” *Counter Punch*, August 28, 2009, https://www.counterpunch.org/2009/08/28/israeli-organ-harvesting/.

[221] Megan Palin, “The Reality of Human Organ Harvesting in China,” *news.com.au*, September 19, 2016, https://www.news.com.au/lifestyle/real-life/true-stories/the-reality-of-human-organ-harvesting-in-china/news-story/14d3aa5751c39d6639a1cc5b39f223b7.

[222] Noga Klein, “Israel Became Hub in International Organ Trade over past Decade,” *Haaretz*, September 20, 2018, https://www.haaretz.com/israel-news/.premium-israel-became-hub-in-international-organ-trade-over-past-decade-1.6492129.

[223] Pamela Tsai, “Transplant Community Responds to Chinese Regime’s Organ Harvesting,” *Epoch Times*, May 3, 2011, https://www.theepochtimes.com/transplant-community-responds-to-chinese-regimes-organ-harvesting_1498432.html.

[224] “Pedogate: A Special Report on the Washington, D.C. Pedophilia Scandal,” *The Event Chronicle*, December 28, 2016, http://www.theeventchronicle.com/cabal-exposed/pedogate-special-report-washington-d-c-pedophilia-scandal/.

[225] Jeremy Laurance, “Revealed: Sex Abuse Charges for top Child Doctor,” *Independent*, September 8, 2012, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/revealed-sex-abuse-charges-for-top-child-doctor-8118206.html.

[226] Ben Clerkin, “Former Newsreader Anna Ford Quit the BBC because of an ‘Atmosphere of Fear,’” *Daily Mail*, August 27, 2007, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-477982/Former-newsreader-Anna-Ford-quit-BBC-atmosphere-fear.html.

[227] Alan Farthing interviewed by Anna Ford, *ITV*, April 28, 1999, 01:12, *gettyimages.com*, https://www.gettyimages.com/detail/video/jill-dando-murder-police-compile-e-fit-bbc-tv-no-resale-news-footage/815448096.

[228] “Cliff Richard,” *whale.to*, http://whale.to/c/cliff_richards.html.

[229] Patty Dinham, “Ex-Flying Squad Boss calls for a new Probe into Jill Dando’s Murder amid Claims Met Police Detectives Ignored ‘Excellent Leads,’” *Daily Mail*, November 20, 2016, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3954940/Jill-

Dando-murder-Ex-Flying-Squad-boss-claims-Met-Police-ignored-excellent-leads.html.

[230] "The Mary Moss Elm Guest House VIP Paedophile Party List," *cigpapers.blog*, April 29, 2013, https://cigpapers.blog/2013/04/29/the-elm-guest-house-vip-paedophile-party-list/.

[231] Katie Hodge, "Accuser Outrage Sir Cliff Richard Accused of Attacks by 'one of Britain's Worst Sex Offenders,'" *The Sun*, June 16, 2016, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/1296089/serial-rapist-is-one-of-the-men-who-claims-to-have-been-abused-by-sir-cliff-richard/.

[232] Simon Edge, "How Jim really did Fix it," *Express*, May 8, 2008, https://www.express.co.uk/expressyourself/43798/How-Jim-really-did-fix-it.

[233] Rebecca Camber and Emily Davies, "'I'm Totally Innocent': Cliff Richard's Fury as Police Raid his £3m Home after Claims of Sex Assault on Boy at 1980s Christian Rally," *Daily Mail*, August 14, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2724827/Police-search-home-belonging-Cliff-Richard-historic-sex-abuse-investigation.html.

[234] "The Mary Moss Elm Guest House VIP Paedophile Party List," https://cigpapers.blog/2013/04/29/the-elm-guest-house-vip-paedophile-party-list/.

[235] Fiona O' Clerigh and Mark Watts, "Haroon Kasir Boasted of Friendship with Jimmy Savile, and 'was odd after Star's Death,'" *Exaro News*, February 16, 2013, https://www.exaronews.com/met-detectives-told-of-jimmy-savile-s-link-to-elm-guest-house.

[236] Francis Carr Begbie, "Why did Keith Vaz Protect Greville Janner?" *Occidental Observer*, September 4, 2016, https://www.theoccidentalobserver.net/2016/09/04/why-did-keith-vaz-protect-greville-janner/.

[237] David Hencke and Mark Conrad, "Richmond Files Reveal Failure to Pursue Claim of Child Sex Abuse," *Exaro News*, April 27, 2013, https://www.exaronews.com/richmond-files-reveal-failure-to-pursue-claim-of-child-sex-abuse.

[238] Mark Conrad, "Richmond Council 'was Alerted to Allegations of Child Sexual Abuse,'" *Exaro News*, February 23, 2013, https://www.exaronews.com/richmond-council-was-alerted-to-allegations-of-child-sex-abuse.

[239] "The Mary Moss Elm Guest House VIP Paedophile Party List," https://cigpapers.blog/2013/04/29/the-elm-guest-house-vip-paedophile-party-list/.

[240] Rickeo, "The Elm Guest House List," *Free & Fearless*, July 27, 2017, https://www.freeandfearless.org.uk/elm-guest-house-list/.

[241] Matt Chorley and Tom McTague, Scotland Yard Dismissed Tom Watson's Claim of a 'Powerful Paedophile Network' Linked to Downing Street three years ago but never made it Public," *Daily Mail*, October 14, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3272014/Tom-Watson-fresh-pressure-

sex-abuse-slurs-opponents-emerges-demanded-police-probe-COALITION-minister.html.

[242] "At least 40 UK Politicians Complicit in Alleged Westminster 'Pedophile Ring' – Report," *RT*, July 5, 2014, https://www.rt.com/uk/170672-uk-politicians-pedophile-ring/.

[243] Stephen Wright and Sam Greenhill, "Abuse Inquiry's Adviser Plotted to Smear Top Tory: Whistleblower made Baseless Claims MP was linked to Paedophiles, *Daily Mail*, October 15, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3275002/Abuse-inquiry-s-adviser-plotted-smear-Tory-Whistleblower-baseless-claims-MP-linked-paedophiles.html.

[244] "Child Sex Abuse Inquiry Advisor 'Plotted to Smear Top Tory,'" *The Telegraph*, October 16, 2015, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/child-protection/11936552/Child-sex-abuse-inquiry-advisor-plotted-to-smear-top-Tory.html.

[245] "Heroes for Exposing Child Sexual Abuse - Part 1 - Peter McKelvie," *Cathy Fox Blog on Child Abuse*, March 8, 2017, https://cathyfox.wordpress.com/2017/03/08/heroes-for-exposing-child-sexual-abuse-part-1-peter-mckelvie/.

[246] "Heroes for Exposing Child Sexual Abuse - Part 1 - Peter McKelvie," https://cathyfox.wordpress.com/2017/03/08/heroes-for-exposing-child-sexual-abuse-part-1-peter-mckelvie/.

[247] "Heroes for Exposing Child Sexual Abuse - Part 1 - Peter McKelvie," https://cathyfox.wordpress.com/2017/03/08/heroes-for-exposing-child-sexual-abuse-part-1-peter-mckelvie/.

[248] "PIE: Charles Napier – No. 116," *goodnessandharmony.wordpress.com*, January 12, 2018, https://goodnessandharmony.wordpress.com/2016/07/30/diplomatic-connections-and-pie-diplomat-robert-alston-brother-of-richard-alston-part-1/.

[249] "Heroes for Exposing Child Sexual Abuse - Part 1 - Peter McKelvie," https://cathyfox.wordpress.com/2017/03/08/heroes-for-exposing-child-sexual-abuse-part-1-peter-mckelvie/.

[250] "Elm Guest House Claims and Controversy," *revolvy.com*, https://www.revolvy.com/page/Elm-Guest-House-claims-and-controversy.

[251] Elm Guest House – Child Sexual Abuse – One Big Cover-up," *The UK & Ireland Database*, https://theukdatabase.com/elm-guest-house-child-sexual-abuse/.

[252] "The Mary Moss Elm Guest House VIP Paedophile Party List," https://cigpapers.blog/2013/04/29/the-elm-guest-house-vip-paedophile-party-list/.

[253] "Cliff Richard; Crusaders; Military Intelligence," https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2016/06/cliff-richard-crusaders-military.html.

[254] "Cliff Richard; Mind Control; Israel," *angirfana.blogspot.com*, April 2015, https://angirfana.blogspot.com/2015/04/cliff-richard-mind-control-israel.html.

[255] “The Manufactured Invention of the Beatles, Stones, Grateful Dead and the Birth of Rock n’ Roll by the Tavistock Institute; A Jesuit Corporation,” *tabublog.com*, December 26, 2015, https://tabublog.com/2015/12/26/the-manufactured-invention-of-the-beatles-stones-grateful-dead-and-the-birth-of-rock-n-roll-by-the-tavistock-institute-a-jesuit-corporation/.

[256] Donald Phau, “The Satanic Roots of Rock,” *100777.com*, https://100777.com/node/151.

[257] “Dealing in Death – The CIA and the Drug Trade,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, 2005, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_cia25.htm.

[258] David Livingstone, “Laurel Canyon: Sex, Drugs and Aliens,” *Conspiracy School*, July 19, 2013, http://www.conspiracyschool.com/blog/laurel-canyon-sex-drugs-and-aliens.

[259] Erin Whitney, “16 Shocking Allegations in Scientology Documentary ‘Going Clear,’” *Huffington Post*, March 29, 2015, https://www.huffingtonpost.com/2015/03/29/scientology-doc-going-clear_n_6939318.html.

[260] Annalee Newitz, “The Strangely True Connection between Scientology, the Jet Propulsion Lab, and Occult Sorcery,” *Gizmodo*, January 24, 2013, https://io9.gizmodo.com/5978746/the-strangely-true-connection-between-scientology-the-jet-propulsion-lab-and-pagan-sorcery.

[261] Frances Stonor Saunders, “Modern Art was a CIA ‘Weapon,’” *Independent*, October 22, 1995, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/world/modern-art-was-cia-weapon-1578808.html.

[262] Servando Gonzalez, “The Cold War Hoax, Part 1,” *News with Views*, August 15, 2014, http://www.newswithviews.com/Gonzalez/servando125.htm.

[263] “CIA Social Control Through Sex, Drugs and Rock ‘n Roll,” *21st Century Wire*, December 30, 2013, https://21stcenturywire.com/2013/12/30/cia-social-control-through-sex-drugs-and-rock-n-roll/.

[264] Dave Hodges, “JFK, RFK and MLK were all Killed by the same Forces,” *biblioecapleyades.net*, November 17, 2013, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_nwo176.htm.

[265] “Mysterious Elvis Presley,” *aangirfan.com*, November 7, 2013, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2013/11/mysterious-elvis-presley.html.

[266] “Tavistock and Cliff Richard: Mossad Control,” *aanirfan.com*, August 15, 2004, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/08/tavistock-and-cliff-richard-mossad.html.

[267] Dave McGowan, “Inside the LC: The Strange but Mostly True Story of Laurel Canyon and the Birth of the Hippie Generation,” *Illuminati News*, May 8, 2008, http://www.illuminati-news.com/articles2/00201.html.

[268] Greg Villepique, “’Do What Thou Wilt: A Life of Aleister Crowley,’” Salon, August 31, 2000, https://www.salon.com/2000/08/31/sutin/.

[269] “Police Report: The Beatles Visited Paedophile Brothel with Savile,” *humansarefree.com*, March 2017, http://humansarefree.com/2017/03/police-report-beatles-visited.html.

[270] Dominic Gover, “Which 1960s Pop Group was at Paedophile Brothel with Jimmy Savile?” *IB Times*, April 8, 2015, https://www.ibtimes.co.uk/which-1960s-pop-group-was-paedophile-brothel-jimmy-savile-1495356+&cd=1&hl=en&ct=clnk&gl=id.

[271] “Ronnie Kray’s Pedophile Ring,” *UK & Ireland Database*, https://theukdatabase.com/judges-and-lenient-sentences/whole-life-sentences-judges-rule-its-legal/the-krays-paedophile-ring/.

[272] Paul David Collins, “The Ghost of Roy Cohn,” *Conspiracy Archive*, August 24, 2014, http://www.conspiracyarchive.com/2014/08/24/the-ghost-of-roy-cohn/.

[273] “Six Case Studies that point to Massive Pedophile Rings at the Highest Levels of Power,” *The Last American Vagabond*, November 11, 2016, http://www.thelastamericanvagabond.com/outside-the-box/six-case-studies-massive-child-pedophilia-ring-highest-power-levels/.

[274] “Cliff Richard; Mind Control; Israel,” https://angirfana.blogspot.com/2015/04/cliff-richard-mind-control-israel.html.

[275] David Barrett, “Letters Shed new Light on Kray Twins Scandal,” The Telegraph, July 26, 2009, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/law-and-order/5907125/Letters-shed-new-light-on-Kray-twins-scandal.html.

[276] Anthony T. Stokes, “Death of a Showman: Jimmy Savile 1926-2011,” *whale.to*, October 31, 2011, http://whale.to/c/death_of_a_showman.html.

[277] “Kelly 19 – Bilderberg Hotel Pedophile Steering, Clinton’s Bin Laden Gyro, SERCO’s Mentored Zulu Towers,” Abel Danger, June 26, 2017, https://www.abeldanger.org/kelly-19-bilderberg-hotel-pedophile-steering-clintons-bin-laden-gyro-sercos-mentored-zulu-towers/.

[278] “Jimmy Savile, the Kray Twins, Cliff Richard…,” *aangirfan.com*, October 6, 2012, http://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2012/10/jimmy-savile-kray-twins-cliff-richards.html.

[279] “Jimmy Savile, the Kray Twins, Cliff Richard…,” *aangirfan.com*, October 6, 2012, http://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2012/10/jimmy-savile-kray-twins-cliff-richards.html.

[280] Colin Adwent, “50 years on we remember Suffolk’s Grisliest Crime - the Tattingstone Suitcase Murder,” East Anglian Daily Times, January 6, 2017, http://www.eadt.co.uk/news/50-years-on-we-remember-suffolk-s-grisliest-crime-the-tattingstone-suitcase-murder-1-4839099.

[281] Jake Arnott, “Jake Arnott: Joe Meek and Me,” *Evening Standard*, June 12, 2009, https://www.standard.co.uk/go/london/film/jake-arnott-joe-meek-and-me-6744227.html.

[282] Christian F. Simpson, Lost Youth Volume 2: London (London: Authorhouse UK, 2012, p. 429, https://books.google.co.uk/books?id=LdLucXuWu6wC&pg=PA429&lpg=PA429&dq=cliff+richard+kray+twins&source=bl&ots=GPqXVxYoOm&sig=bgdSxwJs2RUSSXq90YY1NxkmhI0&hl=en&sa=X&ei=I4pwUMyrBs3I0AWK-ICAAg#v=onepage&q=cliff%20richard%20kray%20twins&f=false.

[283] “Kray Twins Memorabilia Sold at Auction,” *The Telegraph*, October 20, 2010, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/8074918/Kray-twins-memorabilia-sold-at-auction.html.

[284] Martin Evan and Gordon Rayner, “Sir Clement Freud Exposed as a Paedophile as Police Urged to Probe Madeleine McCann Links,” *The Telegraph*, June 15, 2016, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2016/06/14/sir-clement-freud-exposed-as-a-paedophile-as-police-urged-to-pro/.

[285] “Lucian Freud’s Pregnant Teen Painting. Litvinoff, the Krays and anyone who was anyone!” *spidercatweb.blog*, February 19, 2016, https://spidercatweb.blog/2016/02/19/lucian-freud/.

[286] Chloe Thomas, “She’s never been Traditional! Peaches Geldof Marries Thomas Cohen Wearing three different Gowns throughout the day,” *Daily Mail*, September 11, 2012, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/tvshowbiz/article-2201317/Peaches-Geldof-marries-Thomas-Cohen-wearing-THREE-different-gowns-day.html.

[287] “Elm Guest House – Latest,” *UK & Ireland Database*, https://theukdatabase.com/elm-guest-house-child-sexual-abuse/elm-guest-house-latest/.

[288] Angela Lambert, “The Prime Minister, his Wife and her Lover Dorothy MacMillan had an Affair that lasted 30 Years,” *Independent*, February 23, 1994, https://www.independent.co.uk/life-style/the-prime-minister-his-wife-and-her-lover-dorothy-macmillan-had-an-affair-that-lasted-30-years-1395917.html.

[289] Cahal Milmo, “Ronnie Kray’s Association with Tory Peer and Fellow ‘Hunter of Young Men’ led to MI5 Investigation and Government Panic,” *Independent*, October 23, 2015, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/ronnie-krays-association-with-tory-peer-and-fellow-hunter-of-young-men-sparked-mi5-investigation-and-a6704401.html.

[290] Claire Ellicott, “Ronnie Kray: Files Reveal Fears that Exposé Revealing Pair ‘Hunted’ for Men in the East End could bring down the Government,” *Daily Mail*, October 23, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3285578/Tory-panic-kinky-peer-Ronnie-Kray-Files-reveal-fears-expose-revealing-pair-hunted-men-East-End-bring-Government.html.

[291] John Pearson, “The Lords of the Underworld,” *Independent*, June 15, 1997, https://www.independent.co.uk/arts-entertainment/the-lords-of-the-underworld-1256016.html.

[292] John Pearson, https://www.independent.co.uk/arts-entertainment/the-lords-of-the-underworld-1256016.html.

[293] “Jimmy Savile, Edward Heath and the Kray Twins,” *google-law.blogspot.com*, November 2, 2012, http://google-law.blogspot.com/2012/11/jummy-savile-edward-heath-and-kray-twins.html.

[294] Jonathon Owen, “Police Blocked from Charging Former Labour MP Tom Driberg with Sexually Abusing Boys, claims Simon Danczuk,” *Independent*, December 3, 2015, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/police-were-blocked-from-charging-labour-mp-tom-driberg-with-sexually-abusing-boys-claims-simon-a6759391.html.

[295] Francis Wheen, *Tom Driberg, His Life and Indiscretions* (London: Chatto & Windus, 1990), Pg.11, http://dutroux.blogspot.com/2006/01/tom-driberg-rent-boys-aleister-crowley.html.

[296] Jonathon Owen, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/police-were-blocked-from-charging-labour-mp-tom-driberg-with-sexually-abusing-boys-claims-simon-a6759391.html.

[297] "Conservative Government Threatened by Sex Scandals," *aangirfan.com*, October 23, 2016, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2015/10/conservative-government-threatened-by.html.

[298] John Fleming, "Corrupt Cops, Sado Masochist Whippings and how Gangster Ronnie Kray Explained his own Dangerous, Psychotic Feelings," *thejohnfleming.wordpress.com*, October 29, 2013, https://thejohnfleming.wordpress.com/2013/10/29/corrupt-cops-sado-masochist-whippings-how-gangster-ronnie-kray-described-his-own-dangerous-psychotic-feelings/.

[299] Charles Early, "March 4, 1969: Ronnie and Reggie Kray Found Guilty of Murder," *bt.com*, March 4, 2018, http://home.bt.com/news/on-this-day/march-4-1969-ronnie-and-reggie-kray-found-guilty-of-murder-11363965674052.

[300] Michael S. Rosenwald, "'I'll Ruin you': Judy Garland on being Groped and Harassed by Powerful Hollywood Men," *The Washington Post*, November 14, 2017, https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/retropolis/wp/2017/11/14/ill-ruin-you-judy-garland-on-being-groped-and-harassed-by-powerful-hollywood-men/?utm_term=.13d7224e3d30.

[301] Vanessa Allen, "How the Krays ran a Protection Business for Sinatra and Co behind Bars," *Daily Mail*, January 2, 2010, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1239926/How-Krays-ran-protection-business-Sinatra-Co-bars.html#ixzz1yDfvNeaq.

[302] "Reggie Kray's 'Adopted' Son: Letters show Close Bond between the Gangster and the Boy who Idolized him," *Daily Mail*, April 10, 2009, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1169010/Revealed-How-Reggie-Kray-adopted-pen-pal-boy-10-abandoned-father.html.

[303] Claire Ellicott, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3285578/Tory-panic-kinky-peer-Ronnie-Kray-Files-reveal-fears-expose-revealing-pair-hunted-men-East-End-bring-Government.html.

[304] "Tavistock and Cliff Richard; Mossad Control," *aangirfan.com*, August 15, 2014, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/08/tavistock-and-cliff-richard-mossad.html.

[305] "Cliff Richard; Mind Control," *aangirfan.com*, April 14, 2014, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/04/cliff-richard-mind-control.html.

[306] David Gardner, "The Music Industry Exposed," *bibliotecapleyades.net*, November 29, 2014, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/ciencia/ciencia_conscioussociopol68.htm.

[307] "Jimmy Savile, The Kray Twins, Cliff Richard…" http://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2012/10/jimmy-savile-kray-twins-cliff-richards.html.

[308] “Jimmy Savile, The Kray Twins, Cliff Richard…” http://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2012/10/jimmy-savile-kray-twins-cliff-richards.html.

[309] “Jimmy Savile, The Kray Twins, Cliff Richard…” http://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2012/10/jimmy-savile-kray-twins-cliff-richards.html.

[310] Alwyn W. Turner*, Crisis? What Crisis?* (London: Aurum Press, 2008), Chapter 8: Obscenity, http://www.alwynwturner.com/crisis/extracts08.html.

[311] Alwyn W. Turner, http://www.alwynwturner.com/crisis/extracts08.html.

[312] Alwyn W. Turner, http://www.alwynwturner.com/crisis/extracts08.html.

[313] Herb Keinon, “Shin Bet Nixed Cliff Richard Song Dedication to Sara Netanyahu,” *Jerusalem Post*, August 8, 2013, https://www.jpost.com/National-News/Shin-Bet-nixed-Cliff-Richard-song-dedication-to-Sara-Netanyahu-322506.

[314] Ben Rosenfield, “Sir Cliff Richard’s Tennis Trip to Nazareth,” *Jerusalem Post*, July 11, 2013, https://www.jpost.com/National-News/Sir-Cliff-Richards-tennis-trip-to-Nazareth-319465.

[315] “Cliff Richard Supports Jewish-Arab Coexistence at Tennis Fundraiser,” *Times of Israel*, October 10, 2017, http://jewishnews.timesofisrael.com/sir-cliff-richard-tennis-fundraiser-in-support-jewish-arab-coexistence/.

[316] Brennan Cusack, “Bulldozers in the West Bank: How Recent Israeli Settlement Expansion Jeopardizes the Peac Process,” *Forbes*, July 13, 2018, https://www.forbes.com/sites/brennancusack/2018/07/13/bulldozers-in-the-west-bank-how-recent-israeli-settlement-expansion-jeopardizes-the-peace-process/#7d72d2471a1e.

[317] Gordon Rayner, “Jimmy Savile Confessed to Reporter that he would be seen as ‘Crooked’ after his Death,” *The Telegraph*, October 18, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9618674/Jimmy-Savile-confessed-to-reporter-that-he-would-be-seen-as-crooked-after-his-death.html.

[318] Tara Brady, “Revealed: Bizarre Plan to give Jimmy Savile a second Knighthood so he can be Stripped of it Publicly,” *Daily Mail*, January 13, 2013, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2261788/Bizarre-plan-Jimmy-Savile-second-knighthood-stripped-publicly.html.

[319] Patrick Counihan, “Catholic Church cannot Rescind Papal Knighthood Awarded to Pedophile Jimmy Savile,” *Irish Central*, October 28, 2012, https://www.irishcentral.com/news/catholic-church-cannot-rescind-papal-knighthood-awarded-to-pedophile-jimmy-saville-176162551-237535711.

[320] “Jimmy Savile Scandal Exposes Pedophile Network at Heart of British Establishment,” *sott.net*, October 1, 2012, https://www.sott.net/article/252813-Jimmy-Savile-scandal-exposes-pedophile-network-at-heart-of-British-establishment.

[321] “Jimmy Savile Fixed it for Israel,” *aangirfan.com*, October 1, 2012, http://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2012/10/jimmy-savile-fixed-it-for-israel.html.

[322] Jessica Elgot, “Jimmy Savile came to my Batmitzvah,” *The Jewish Chronicle*, November 3, 2011, https://www.thejc.com/news/uk-news/jimmy-savile-came-to-my-batmitzvah-1.28748.

[323] Geoffrey Macnab, “Uri Geller Psychic Spy? The Spoon-Bender’s Secret life as a Mossad and CIA Agent Revealed,” *Independent*, June 14, 2013, https://www.independent.co.uk/arts-entertainment/films/features/uri-geller-psychic-spy-the-spoon-benders-secret-life-as-a-mossad-and-cia-agent-revealed-8659271.html.

[324] “Cliff Richard; Mind Control,” http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/04/cliff-richard-mind-control.html.

[325] Tim Walker, “Sir Cliff Richard: Why Barbados Beat Britain,” *The Telegraph*, September 23, 2010, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/celebritynews/8018513/Sir-Cliff-Richard-Why-Barbados-beats-Britain.html.

[326] Andrew Watt, “The Alleged "Cottaging" Conviction of Tony Blair - Submission to the Child Abuse Inquiry,” *ukchildabuseinquiry.blogspot.com*, June 10, 2015, https://ukchildabuseinquiry.blogspot.com/2015/06/the-alleged-cottaging-conviction-of.html.

[327] Mark Brown, “Revealed: Why Sir Cliff gave Blair a Summer Holiday,” *The Guardian*, August 24, 2006, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2006/aug/24/artsnews.labour.

[328] Alison Boshoff, “Homes around the World but never a lasting Love to Share them with - Sir Cliff Richard’s Love Life, or apparent lack thereof,” *Daily Mail*, August 14, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2725318/I-ll-bachelor-boy-s-way-I-ll-stay-His-bandmate-s-wife-Sue-Barker-rumours-sexuality-Sir-Cliff-Richard-s-love-life-apparent-lack-thereof.html.

[329] Caroline Davies, “Honorary Knighthood for Billy Graham,” *The Telegraph*, December 7, 2001, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/worldnews/northamerica/usa/1364628/Honorary-knighthood-for-Billy-Graham.html.

[330] “Billy Graham and Cliff Richard,” *aangirfan.com*, July 1, 2018, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/08/billy-graham-and-cliff-richard.html.

[331] Sam Greenhill, “Sir Cliff Richard was Eating Lunch at his Beloved Algarve Retreat when he Watched the TV in Horror as the Raid Unfolded at his Berkshire Apartment,” *Daily Mail*, July 19, 2018, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5968553/Sir-Cliff-Richard-having-lunch-watched-TV-horror-Algarve-raid-unfolded-flat.html.

[332] “The Pop Star and Preacher who've been Friends for 48 years: How Cliff Richard and American Evangelist Billy Graham were United by a Shared Faith,” *Daily Mail*, August 16, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2726358/The-pop-star-preacher-ve-friends-48-years-How-Cliff-Richard-Billy-Graham-united-shared-faith.html.

[333] Lucy Thornton, “Sir Cliff Richard Police Probe: Pop Star Facing more Allegations as Inquiry against him is ‘Significantly Expanded,’” *Mirror*, February

25, 2015, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/sir-cliff-richard-police-probe-5230563.

[334] Francis Carr Begbie, https://www.theoccidentalobserver.net/2016/09/04/why-did-keith-vaz-protect-greville-janner/.

[335] Francis Carr Begbie, https://www.theoccidentalobserver.net/2016/09/04/why-did-keith-vaz-protect-greville-janner/.

[336] Francis Carr Begbie, https://www.theoccidentalobserver.net/2016/09/04/why-did-keith-vaz-protect-greville-janner/.

[337] Francis Carr Begbie, https://www.theoccidentalobserver.net/2016/09/04/why-did-keith-vaz-protect-greville-janner/.

[338] “Cliff Richard starts Legal Action against BBC and South Yorkshire Police,” *BBC*, July 10, 2016, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-36757230.

[339] “South Yorks Police Paid Sir Cliff Richard £400,000 Damages over Raid,” *Belfast Telegraph*, April 17, 2018, https://www.belfasttelegraph.co.uk/news/uk/south-yorks-police-paid-sir-cliff-richard-400000-damages-over-raid-36815624.html.

[340] Martin Robinson, “BBC agrees to Pay Sir Cliff Richard £850,000 in Costs on top of his £210,000 in Damages - but Appeals Privacy Ruling over its Coverage of a Police Raid on his Home,” *Daily Mail*, July 26, 2018, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5993963/BBC-plans-appeal-Sir-Cliff-Richard-privacy-ruling-awarded-210-000.html.

[341] George E. Berkley, “Centralization, Democracy, and the Police,” *The Journal of Criminal Law, Criminology and Police Science*, 1970, Vol. 61 (2), https://scholarlycommons.law.northwestern.edu/cgi/.

[342] “Sir Cliff Richard Diamond Jubilee Tribute: ‘The Queen has been Dignified throughout her Reign,’” *The Telegraph*, June 1, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/the_queens_diamond_jubilee/9306091/Sir-Cliff-Richard-Diamond-Jubilee-tribute-The-Queen-has-been-dignified-throughout-her-reign.html.

[343] “Queen Elizabeth is a Huge Cliff Richard Fan,” Celebretainment, March 22, 2018, https://www.celebretainment.com/celebrities/queen-elizabeth-is-a-huge-cliff-richard-fan/article_a84d1996-135b-58b7-90e5-813515012ff6.html.

[344] Jane Mathews, “Sir Cliff Richard: ‘I Sang God Save the Queen when Historic Sex Abuse Investigation was Dropped,’” *The Telegraph*, November 5, 2016, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2016/11/05/sir-cliff-richard-i-broke-down-and-wept-when-historic-sex-abuse/.

[345] “Cliff Richard; Crusaders; Military Intelligence,” https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2016/06/cliff-richard-crusaders-military.html.

[346] Jim Waterson, “Cliff Richard Wins £210,000 in Damages over BBC Privacy Case,” *The Guardian*, July 18, 2018,

https://www.theguardian.com/music/2018/jul/18/cliff-richard-wins-damages-from-bbc-over-police-raid-footage.

[347] Martin Robinson, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5993963/BBC-plans-appeal-Sir-Cliff-Richard-privacy-ruling-awarded-210-000.html.

[348] "Cliff Richard – Victim," http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2018/07/cliff-richard-victim.html.

[349] Jim Waterson, https://www.theguardian.com/music/2018/jul/18/cliff-richard-wins-damages-from-bbc-over-police-raid-footage.

[350] Jim Waterson, https://www.theguardian.com/music/2018/jul/18/cliff-richard-wins-damages-from-bbc-over-police-raid-footage.

[351] "BBC News," *Encyclo*, http://www.niemanlab.org/encyclo/bbc-news/.

[352] "BBC," *wikipedia*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/BBC.

[353] George Bowden, "BBC will not Appeal Sir Cliff Richard Privacy Ruling," *Huffington Post*, August 15, 2018, https://www.huffingtonpost.co.uk/entry/bbc-will-not-appeal-sir-cliff-richard-privacy-appeal_uk_5b742466e4b02b415d743e52.

[354] Martin Robinson, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5993963/BBC-plans-appeal-Sir-Cliff-Richard-privacy-ruling-awarded-210-000.html.

[355] K. Heidenreich, "Agenda 21: The Plan to Depopulate 95% of the World by 2030," *Disclose TV*, March 7, 2017, https://www.disclose.tv/agenda-21-the-plan-to-depopulate-95-of-the-world-by-2030-313560.

[356] Naomi Wolf, "Fascist America, in 10 easy Steps," *The Guardian*, April 24, 2007, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2007/apr/24/usa.comment.

[357] Michel Chossudovsky, "Global Warfare. Preparing for World War III? Targeting Iran," *Global Research*, July 29, 2018, https://www.globalresearch.ca/preparing-for-world-war-iii-targeting-iran/20403.

[358] Mark Leonard, "The Illusion of Freedom in the Digital age," *The Strategist*, November 8, 2017, https://www.aspistrategist.org.au/the-illusion-of-freedom-in-the-digital-age/.

[359] Thomas Hughes, "Who will Protect Press Freedom now?" *The Guardian*, November 30, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2017/nov/30/press-freedom-censorship-fake-news-journalism.

[360] Alex Hern, "Google 'Working on Censored Search Engine' for China," *The Guardian*, August 2, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2018/aug/02/google-working-on-censored-search-engine-for-china.

[361] Matthew Moore, "Cliff Richard's Court Victory over BBC Gags the Media," *The Sunday Times*, July 19, 2018, https://www.thetimes.co.uk/article/suspects-can-gag-media-after-cliff-richard-wins-court-battle-over-bbc-s-police-raid-coverage-79vv99nqr.

[362] Anders, "'During Times of Universal Deceit, Telling the Truth Becomes a Revolutionary Act" (Orwell) in Germany, EU, USA. "1984" in 2017," *new.euro-md.dk,* December 13, 2016, https://new.euro-med.dk/20161213-during-times-

of-universal-deceit-telling-the-truth-becomes-a-revolutionary-act-orwell-in-germany-eu-usa-1984-in-2017.php.

[363] Jim Puzzanghera, “Oxfam Report Highlights Widening Income Gap between Rich, Poor,” *Los Angeles Times*, January 20, 2014, http://www.latimes.com/business/la-fi-income-inequality-20140121-story.html.

[364] Nate Brown, “Machine-Human Wars; US Army is Testing Mind Controlling, Brainwave Reading Technology, AI to Lead to New Arms Race,” *The Christian Journal*, February 13, 2017, https://christianjournal.net/turning-point/machine-human-army-mind-control-brainwave-ai/.

[365] Jean-Louis Gassée, “NSA Files show Privacy does not exist,” *The Guardian*, August 5, 2013, https://www.theguardian.com/technology/blog/2013/aug/05/nsa-privacy-surveillance-monday-note.

[366] Vikram Dodd and Matthew Taylor, “Operation Midland Police Fell for ‘False Claims’ of VIP Abuse, Report says, *The Guardian*, November 8, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2016/nov/08/operation-midland-riddled-with-met-police-errors-report-finds.

[367] Chris Baynes, “Westminster Paedophile Accuser ‘Nick’ Charged with Perverting Course of Justice over Sex Abuse Ring Claims,” Independent, July 3, 2018, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/westminster-paedophile-ring-accuser-nick-charged-perverting-course-justice-fraud-chid-sexual-abuse-a8428781.html.

[368] Joachim Hagopian, “Pedogate Update: Global Elite’s Pedophile Empire is Crumbling – But will it ever Crash?” *sott.net*, March 21, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/345836-PedoGate-Update-The-Global-Elites-Pedophile-Empire-is-Crumbling-But-Will-it-Ever-Crash.

[369] “Child Sex Abuse Inquiry Fined £200,000 after Email Blunder,” *The Guardian*, July 19, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/jul/19/child-sex-abuse-inquiry-fined-200000-after-email-blunder.

[370] Roy Greenslade, “Editor Explains why he didn't Publish Barbara Castle's Paedophile Dossier,” *The Guardian*, July 15, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/media/greenslade/2014/jul/15/daily-star-sunday-cyril-smith.

[371] Patrick Sawer and Tim Ross, “Whitehall Child Sex Inquiry: The 114 Files ‘Lost,’” *The Telegraph*, July 5, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/10949117/Whitehall-child-sex-inquiry-the-114-files-lost.html.

[372] Alan Travis and Matthew Weaver, “Report Exposing Met Police Failings on Child Sex Abuse ‘Shocking,’” *The Guardian*, November 25, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2016/nov/25/report-exposing-met-police-failings-on-child-sex-abuse-shocking.

[373] Ian Drury, “Britain’s top Prosecutor Alison Saunders Denies being Pushed out her Job as QC who Criticised Police for Believing all Rape Victims is Tipped to Replace her,” *Daily Mail*, April 2, 2018, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5571107/Britains-prosecutor-Alison-Saunders-stands-string-controversies.html.

[374] Lizzie Dearden, “DVDs of Child Sex Abuse Victims’ Interviews Lost by CPS,” *Independent*, May 17, 2018, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/cps-child-sex-victims-interview-videos-prosecutors-a8355531.html.

[375] Randeep Ramesh, “NSPCC says Reports of Sexual Abuse have Soared after Jimmy Savile Scandal,” *The Guardian*, August 31, 2013, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2013/aug/31/nspcc-reports-sexual-abuse-jimmy-savile.

[376] Joan Smith, “We've been Ignoring an Epidemic of Child Sex Abuse in Britain,” *The Telegraph*, May 20, 2016, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/women/life/weve-been-ignoring-an-epidemic-of-child-sex-abuse-in-britain/.

[377] Nick Sommerlad and Geraldine McKelvie, “Britain's ‘Worst ever’ Child Grooming Scandal Exposed: Hundreds of Young Girls Raped, Beaten, Sold for Sex and some even Killed,” *Mirror*, March 11, 2018, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/britains-worst-ever-child-grooming-12165527.

[378] Mandy Duncan, “Child Protection Investigations Silence Children and Offer Impunity to Abusers,” *The Conversation*, September 26, 2018, http://theconversation.com/child-protection-investigations-can-silence-children-and-offer-impunity-to-abusers-103549.

[379] “Pizzagate and the Western Pedophiles Lurking in Southeast Asia,” *Thai Law Forum*, December 9, 2016, http://www.thailawforum.com/pizzagate-and-the-western-pedophiles-lurking-in-southeast-asia/.

[380] “South Asian Nations Rank Poorly in US Trafficking Report,” *UCA News*, June 29, 2017, https://www.ucanews.com/news/south-asian-nations-rank-poorly-in-us-trafficking-report/79627.

[381] Kalee Brown, “8 Ways the Global Elite Manipulate our Perception of Reality,” *Collective Evolution*, March 7, 2017, https://www.collective-evolution.com/2017/03/07/8-ways-the-global-elite-manipulate-our-perception-of-reality/.

[382] Joachim Hagopian, “How the New World Order ‘Globalists’ Are Dividing Americans,” *Global Research*, October 28, 2015, https://www.globalresearch.ca/how-the-new-world-order-globalists-are-dividing-americans/5483941.

[383] Joachim Hagopian, “Authoritarian Control and Mass Murder in America the Hegelian Dialectic Way,” *Lew Rockwell*, June 16, 2016, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2016/06/joachim-hagopian/power-elite-run-us/.

[384] “Paul Knapman, Forensic and Medicolegal Consultant,” *linkin.com*, https://www.linkedin.com/in/paul-knapman-7b859a17/.

[385] Richard Alleyne, “Coroner Decried as ‘Butcher’ in Marchioness Row,” *The Telegraph*, December 9, 2000, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/1377633/Coroner-decried-as-butcher-in-Marchioness-row.html.

[386] Richard Alleyne, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/1377633/Coroner-decried-as-butcher-

in-Marchioness-row.html.

[387] David Guyatt, “Target Libya,” *plane-truth.com*, 1996, http://plane-truth.com/Aoude/geocities/target.html.

[388] David Guyatt, http://plane-truth.com/Aoude/geocities/target.html.

[389] “Yvonne Fletcher Murdered by our Spooks,” *aangirfan.com*, September 1, 2011, http://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2011/08/yvonne-fletcher-murdered-by-our-spooks.html.

[390] “De-Dollarization: The Story of Gaddafi’s Gold Backed Currency is not over,” *Sputnik News*, March 17, 2016, https://sputniknews.com/politics/201603171036485001-gaddafi-gold-story/.

[391] Steve Kangas, “A Timeline of CIA Atrocities,” *Global Research*, August 6, 1997, https://www.globalresearch.ca/a-timeline-of-cia-atrocities/5348804.

[392] Michael Snyder, “Guess how many Nations in the World do not have a Central Bank?” *Zero Hedge*, June 10, 2015, https://www.zerohedge.com/news/2015-06-10/guess-how-many-nations-world-do-not-have-central-bank.

[393] Michael Streeter, “Life and Death in Dolphin Square,” *Independent*, February 28, 1997, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/life-and-death-in-dolphin-square-1280968.html.

[394] Frank Furedi, “What PIE and the NSPCC have in Common,” *Spiked*, March 10, 2014, http://www.spiked-online.com/newsite/article/what-pie-and-the-nspcc-have-in-common/14763.

[395] “Peter Righton,” Child Sexual Abuse in the British Establishment, http://vipcsa.wikidot.com/peter-righton.

[396] Kier Mudie and Mark Watts, “Westminster Paedophile Ring: Top Tory MP ‘Murdered Girl at Vile Orgy’ Claims New Witness,” *Mirror*, January 10, 2015, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/westminster-paedophile-ring-top-tory-4957409.

[397] “Who are the Queen’s Lord Lieutenants?” *whale.to*, http://www.whale.to/c/who_are.html.

[398] “Who are the Queen’s Lord Lieutenants?” http://www.whale.to/c/who_are.html.

[399] Amanda Williams, “I was Sexually Abused at Establishment Paedophile Parties: Victim of 1970s Dolphin Square Ring tells of being Forced to Perform Sex acts as senior Tories Celebrated Thatcher Victory,” *Daily Mail*, May 5, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3068950/I-abused-Establishment-paedophile-parties-Victim-1970s-Dolphin-Square-ring-tells-forced-perform-sex-acts-senior-Tories-celebrated-Thatcher-victory.html .

[400] “Judge Killed in 50ft Fall from Flat ‘was Suicide’, Inquest hears,” *Evening Standard*, September 5, 2007, https://www.standard.co.uk/news/judge-killed-in-50ft-fall-from-flat-was-suicide-inquest-hears-6611270.html.

[401] “Judge Killed in 50ft Fall from Flat ‘was Suicide’, Inquest hears,” https://www.standard.co.uk/news/judge-killed-in-50ft-fall-from-flat-was-suicide-inquest-hears-6611270.html

[402] Anne Wade, “Rochdale and Beyond – The Legacy of Child Abuse,” *cathyfox.wordpress.com*, August 4, 2017, https://cathyfox.wordpress.com/2017/08/04/rochdale-and-beyond-the-legacy-of-child-abuse-by-anne-wade/.

[403] “Bush Death List,” *AttackOnAmerica.net*, September 29, 2003, https://www.attackonamerica.net/george-w-bush/bushdeathlist/.

[404] “The Clinton Body-Count,” *What Really Happened*, http://www.whatreallyhappened.com/RANCHO/POLITICS/BODIES.php#axzz5SS4FP4SQ.

[405] Joachim Hagopian, “Western State Sponsored Terrorism: False Flags Spreading Islamophobia, Race and Religious Wars and New World Disorder,” *Lew Rockwell*, December 25, 2015, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2015/12/joachim-hagopian/new-world-disorder-2/.

[406] “The Murder of Princess Diana,” YouTube documentary by Jay Myers, 2017, 36:02, posted on July 8, 2017, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=9fFkk2ulJjc.

[407] “Who are the Queen’s Lord Lieutenants?” http://www.whale.to/c/who_are.html.

[408] “BBC Broadcaster Michael Portillo; Alleged Child Sexual Abuse,” *scribd.com*, January 27, 2016, https://www.scribd.com/doc/296999308/BBC-broadcaster-Michael-Portillo-alleged-child-sexual-abuse.

[409] “Knapman,” *spikethenews.blospot.com*, June 6, 2014, http://spikethenews.blogspot.com/2014/06/knapman.html.

[410] “Who are the Queen’s Lord Lieutenants?” http://www.whale.to/c/who_are.html.

[411]

[412] Edward Richard, “Terry Wogan: ‘Looks like David Icke was right all along,’” *Independent*, August 7, 2014, https://www.dailysquib.co.uk/world/8679-terry-wogan-looks-like-david-icke-right-along.html.

[413] David Icke, “What David Icke has said since 1998 about Paedophile and Child Killing Prime Minister Ted Heath is backed-up here by Barrister Michael Shrimpton, an Intelligence and National Security Consultant, from his own Contacts and inside experience,” *davidicke.com*, January 17, 2013, https://www.davidicke.com/article/181937/78362-what-david-icke-has-said-since-1998-about-paedophile-and-child-killing-prime-minister-ted-heath-is-backed-up-here-by-barrister-michael-shrimpton-an-intelligence-and-national-security-consultant.

[414] Karen Rockett, “Sir Terry Wogan Speaks of his Hatred of Jimmy Savile says his Crimes were Open Secret at BBC,” *Mirror*, October 5, 2013, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/terry-wogan-hatred-jimmy-savile-2341936.

[415] Karen Rockett, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/terry-wogan-hatred-jimmy-savile-2341936.

[416] Jonathan Wright, “Don’t Blame the Jesuits for Dictators,” *Catholic Herald*, December 8, 2016, http://www.catholicherald.co.uk/magazine-post/dont-blame-

the-jesuits-for-dictators/.

[417] Karen Rockett, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/terry-wogan-hatred-jimmy-savile-2341936.

[418] “Part 6 Invitation to Join the Masons,” *phonedupnshutup.com*, http://phonedupnshutup.com/?page_id=86.

[419] “The Marconi Syndrome,” *phonedupnshutup.com*, http://phonedupnshutup.com/.

[420] “Part 6 Invitation to Join the Masons,” http://phonedupnshutup.com/?page_id=86.

[421] Simon Boyle, “Ex-BBC Reporter who Quit Corporation after Bosses Shelved her Investigation into Jimmy Savile Dies at 52.” Mirror, August 18, 2017, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jimmy-savile-bbc-documentary-panorama-11013587.

[422] Simon Boyle, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jimmy-savile-bbc-documentary-panorama-11013587.

[423] Simon Boyle, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jimmy-savile-bbc-documentary-panorama-11013587.

[424] Dan Sabbagh and Josh Halliday, “Jimmy Savile: Newsnight Staff were Furious after Abuse Report Dropped,” *The Guardian*, October 1, 2012, https://www.theguardian.com/tv-and-radio/2012/oct/01/jimmy-savile-abuse-allegations-newsnight.

[425] Simon Boyle, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/jimmy-savile-bbc-documentary-panorama-11013587/

[426] Nick Cohen, “The Sinister Treatment of Dissent at the BBC,” *The Guardian*, March 8, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2015/mar/08/bbc-whistleblowers-jimmy-savile.

[427] Chris Greenwood and Richard Spillett, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3060559/Jimmy-Savile-abused-23-youngsters-Duncroft-School-emotionally-disturbed-teenage-girls.html.

[428] Nick Cohen, https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2015/mar/08/bbc-whistleblowers-jimmy-savile.

[429] Nick Cohen, https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2015/mar/08/bbc-whistleblowers-jimmy-savile.

[430] Camilla Turner, “Alan Yentob ‘Branded BBC Journalists Traitors over Savile Exposé,’” *The Telegraph*, September 24, 2015, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/bbc/11887548/Alan-Yentob-branded-BBC-journalists-traitors-over-Savile-expose.html.

[431] “The Mysterious Deaths of Scientists,” *think-about it.com*, February 4, 2015, https://www.think-aboutit.com/mysterious-deaths-scientists/.

[432] Samantha Debbie, “Doctors Murdered after Discovering Cancer Enzymes in Vaccines, September 19, 2016,

https://www.naturalnews.com/055347_vaccines_dead_doctors_cancer_enzymes.html.

[433] Tim Brown, "Journalist Gary Webb who Exposed CIA Cocaine Trafficking Allegedly 'Shot Himself' in the Head," Twice - Would Have Been 63 Today," *Freedom Outpost*, August 31, 2018, https://freedomoutpost.com/journalist-gary-webb-who-exposed-cia-cocaine-trafficking-allegedly-shot-himself-in-the-head-twice-would-have-been-63-today/.

[434] "The Mysterious Death of an Artist whose Drawings were too Revealing," Patricia Gladstone interviewed by Jeff Schechtman, *Who, What, Why*, December 4, 2015, https://whowhatwhy.org/2015/12/04/the-mysterious-death-of-an-artist-whose-drawings-were-too-revealing/.

[435] David Cogswell, "The Death of Jim Hatfield," *davidcogswell.com*, May 15, 2003, http://www.davidcogswell.com/Essays/DeathHatfield.html.

[436] Dee McLachlan, "'The Octopus' and the 'Suicide' of Investigative Journalist Danny Casolaro," Gumshoe News, July 12, 2017, https://gumshoenews.com/2017/07/12/the-octopus-and-the-suicide-of-investigative-journalist-danny-casolaro/.

[437] "Was Michael Hastings Targeted by the CIA? WikiLeaks Reveals Agency's Covert Carjacking Ability," *MintPress News*, March 10, 2017, https://www.mintpressnews.com/michael-hastings-targeted-cia-wikileaks-reveals-agencys-covert-carjacking-ability/225738/.

[438] Sara Kamouni, "UFO Expert found Dead after 'Vomiting Black Liquid,'" *New York Post*, October 17, 2016, https://nypost.com/2016/10/17/ufo-expert-found-dead-vomiting-black-liquid/.

[439] Mark Watts, "BBC Seeks to Discredit Police Witnesses and Supporters despite Scandal over Jimmy Savile," *Exaro*, October 1, 2015, https://www.exaronews.com/revealed-panorama-s-plans-to-smear-survivors-of-child-abuse.

[440] Alan Yu, "Murder by Heart Attack," *fourwinds10.com*, http://www.fourwinds10.com/siterun_data/health/intentional_death/news.php?q=1213558589.

[441] "Assassination by Suicide," *whale.to*, http://www.whale.to/b/assassination_suicide.html.

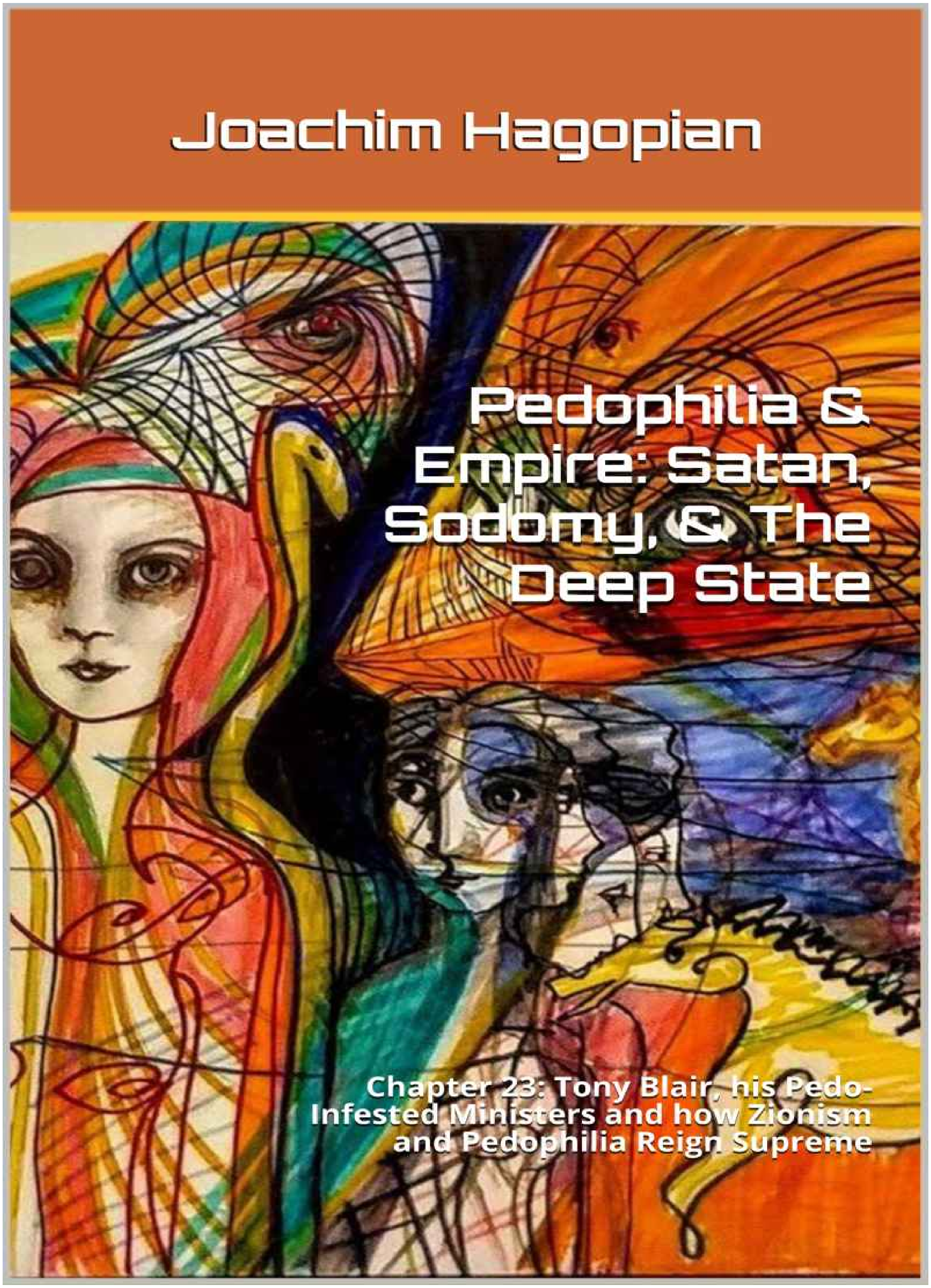

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 23: Tony Blair, his Pedo-Infested Ministers and how Zionism and Pedophilia Reign Supreme

Section 7: British Government - A Pedophile Haven Protected Forever by Criminal Cover-up

Chapter 23: Tony Blair, his Pedo-Infested Ministers and how Zionism and Pedophilia Reign Supreme

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission
http://www.noramaccoby.com/

This section will chronicle in full detail the systematic child abuse and nonstop cover-up of the British government protecting its own army of hardcore pedophiles who for over a half century have been free to act out their child raping pathology against UK’s most vulnerable population – children in group home care. The massive evidence is overwhelming yet to this very day not one politician in the UK Parliament or prime minister’s cabinet has ever been brought to justice. Britain is a disgrace to the entire world, serving as just the tip of the iceberg permitting hundreds, if not thousands over the years of prominent serial child sexual predators shielded in high places to permanently wound as well as murder millions of their own innocents without paying for their scourge of diabolical violent crimes. They have gotten away with it forever because pedophiles and their enablers who’ve long saturated government, high courts, police, civil servants, British intelligence, the media and royal family have all made certain this out of control epidemic is kept hidden from exposure and accountability.

Though Sir Jimmy may have been one central connecting hub within this despicable national operation, with or without him, the UK government is still guilty of perpetrating the sickest perversions against its own defenseless children living throughout the British Isles and beyond. The heinously pervasive practice sodomizing this nation’s little boys in particular, since violating young males appears to be the overwhelming sexual preference amongst so many of UK’s pedophile politicians, earns the not-at-all-great Britain the dubious distinction as the pedophilia epicenter of this entire world, with Belgium, Netherlands, North America and Australia not far behind.

This section will methodically begin by covering various major scandals around England with later chapters focusing on those in Wales, Northern Ireland and Scotland (along with connections to the wider international pedophilia network) involving sexual crimes committed by prominent Westminster and Downing Street politicians against targeted child victims from mostly group homes, special schools and the pedophile “home” away from home - railway station public toilets frequented by predatory PMs and MPs on the prowl for underage runaways and rent boys.

After interviewing scores of abuse victims over the years who identified powerful VIPs atop the British government as their perpetrators, longtime child activist-journalist Sonia Poulton has turned over her findings to the police. In an article written for *Express* in March 2014, she asks why not one of the accused pedophiles has ever been arrested or prosecuted.[1] She cites the sheer hypocrisy of the mini-scandal making headlines at the time involving prominent Labor politicians Harriet Harmon, husband Jack Dromey and Patricia Hewitt’s past NCCL-PIE association in comparison with the glaring avoidance of the real tragedy - that household names of those who remain unscathed after having committed the most heinous acts imaginable are still walking free:

I have heard stories of satanic ritual abuse, a significant factor in many paedophile rings, at the hands of household-name parliamentarians past and present.[2]

Sonia interviewed whistleblowing former British intelligence officer Andrea Davison who confirms what we've already come to know:

Paedophiles are a staple of parliamentary life and have been for some decades. She [Andrea Davison] *claimed that MPs have been filmed abusing children and this footage is used to blackmail parliamentarians into acquiescing on issues of global importance.*[3]

And those issues of "global importance" you can bet have everything to do with the Anglo-American-Zionist Axis-of-Evil's agenda to eugenically depopulate the planet through war and manmade disease,[4] make pedophilia legal (Chapter 2) and gain absolute tyrannical control through one world government as humanity's false savior promoting UN Agendas 21 and 2030 and the UN's star-studded "Global Goals."[5]

In an interview before his death in 2008, UK Conservative Party Whip Francis Pym (1970-73) demonstrated a rare display of matter-of-fact honesty, alluding to always helping out peers of either party by covering up their problems like "a scandal with small boys," because then MPs will "do what you want forever more."[6] With this reality a standardized norm and unwritten rule etched in stone, coercion politics through "owed favors" and sexual blackmail become the primary control mechanism by which puppet politicians dutifully dance to their masters' tunes.

Since this chapter focuses on the role that Tony Blair and his ministers have played in promulgating government VIP pedophilia and its cover-up, prior to addressing his heavily infiltrated pedophile and pedo-enabling cabinet, a cursory examination of Anthony Charles Lynton Blair's pedo-tendencies himself provide a broader contextual background and linkage leading to today's pedophilia pandemic. Former Prime Minister Tony Blair's past includes sexual deviance with a predilection for crossdressing, frequenting public toilets in lustful search of young boys, a pair of college mentors who were confirmed pedophiles, and his subsequent blackmail at the hands of the Mossad and Zionist Israel to join his equally compromised American counterpart George W. Bush Jr similarly possessing the same proclivities.[7] 9/11, the War on Terror and invasions of Afghanistan and Iraq were all machinations reflecting Zionism's far-reaching global reach and control through sexual blackmail manipulating the United States and Great Britain to fight Greater Israel Project wars, forcing them into Israel's bloody bidding.[8]

A highly significant, telling fact and certainly no accident, during Blair's 10-years as prime minister from 1997 to 2007, the number of missing children in the United Kingdom nearly doubled, rising from 570 in 1997 to 950 in 2007.[9] Knowing his perverted history of lies and deception and scandalous misconduct throughout both his life and decade in power, the disturbing reality that missing kids nearly doubled on his watch alone is in accordance with his evil misdeeds providing a boom for both Zionism and the globalized child raping network, two related entities that later in the chapter will be further elaborated.

While attending the Edinburgh boys' boarding school Fettes, the type taken up with homoerotic spanking rituals as typical subject matter in Lord Longford, Sir Jimmy and Sir Cliff's 1972 bestseller *Pornography* (covered in Chapter 20), "Miranda" the crossdressing collegiate was regularly visited by Irish loyalist Sir Knox Cunningham, a confirmed lover of boys.[10] Cunningham was part of a pedophile ring that ran in the same circles as royal family curator and treasonous pedo-Russian spy Sir Anthony Blunt and William McGrath, an MI5 operative-right wing loyalist-housemaster-convicted pedophile at Northern Ireland's Kincora boys' home in 1981 (fully addressed in Chapter 26).[11] The onetime MP and PM

Macmillan cabinet secretary, Knox Cunningham was also friends with other Cambridge spies, fellow pedophile traitor Guy Burgess and Lord Victor Rothschild (Thatcher's foreign adviser),[12] and additionally financed William McGrath's Protestant paramilitaries that also maintained close ties with Zionist gangsters' illegally supplying Israeli weapons… again confirming another of many Zionist-pedophilia-Blair connections.

Moreover, during Tony Blair's years at Fettes (1966-1971) prior to his Oxford education, "Miranda" had befriended his spiritual mentor the school chaplain, Rev. Ronald Selby Wright, a popular Church of Scotland minister with links to both the military and boys clubs.[13] Wright reputedly preyed on Fettes students and in his final summer at the Scottish boarding school, Blair ran a summer camp for Wright's kids. From age 13 to 18, possessing such close relationships with significantly older male role models who were known pedophiles strongly suggests he himself may have been victimized. With disgraced alt-right poster boy Milo Yiannopoulis, a fine line exists between victim and predator when it comes to his own pederast relationships.[14] If truth be known, Blair might admit he too enjoyed his relationships with older, powerful mentoring males he so much admired as they groomed him for bigger and better things.

Former British intelligence operative Anthony T. Stokes has written that in 1983 Tony Blair was caught soliciting sex from underage boys in a police surveilled London public restroom, "importuning in public toilets."[15] Though required to appear at the Bow Street Magistrate Court where he used his two middle names "Charles Lynton," thereby avoiding scandal as a brand new elected Member of Parliament. Court records, police notes and evidence of several prior verbal warnings were to later disappear.[16] With his past history of sexual deviance, Tony Blair became the perfect candidate to be groomed for higher office as an easily blackmail-able, thoroughly compromised puppet for Mossad-Zionist control to commit British soldiers and nation against the people's will to disaster dying on Middle Eastern battlefields using deadly WMD lies to sell more wars for Israel killing over a million Muslims in Iraq alone.

Between his Zionist top backers Lord Levy and Friends of Israel, and his perverted habits targeted for sexual blackmail by Mossad, Tony Blair was Israel's whore. His primary handler was "Lord Cashpoint" – Committee of 300 player Michael Levy, who financed Tony Blair's meteoric rise to the world stage along with his New Labor Party from 1994 to 2007.[17] In return, Lord Levy headed Blair's special envoy to the Middle East. Levy was in deep with the "Cash for Honors" scandal, brazenly selling wealthy Jewish businessmen appointments to the House of Lords.[18] His son David Levy is an Israeli citizen who's often held top level positons in the Israeli government. A month after becoming former PM, Tony and his wife Cherie attended David's plush wedding on the heels of the Blair-Levy cash for honors fiasco.[19] Scandal or no scandal, the Anglo-Zionist cabal remains one big happily-ever-after controlling family.

The Blairs didn't stay long at the wedding celebration as they were due to fly out first thing the next morning to the Caribbean to vacation at Sir Cliff's £3 million villa in Barbados again. Sir Kitty's crash pad had become Miranda's home away from home, his shelter from the storm during his decade long bruised and battering as such an unpopular was criminal. It was the fifth summer in a row that Tony chose to lick his wounds compliments of his nurturing good buddy.[20] Of course it was only eight years earlier that Blair was alleged to put the professional hit on Cliff's dear friend Jill Dando for knowing too much, just like Princess Diana little more than a year and a half earlier, both murders committed on Blair's watch of two of Britain's most beloved women for threatening to bring down the VIP pedo-cabal.

Another key Jewish Blair handler of the Zionist persuasion, or so called chief foreign policy/national security advisor from 2001 to 2003 coordinating the US-British Iraq invasion was Committee of 300 VIP,[21] Sir David Manning. Prior to that, he was UK ambassador to Israel and from 2003-07 was ambassador to US. At the time of 9/11, Manning was flying over New York City watching the twin towers come tumbling down, ostensibly in America to meet the day before with neocon 9/11 co-conspirator Richard Armitage.[22] The CIA appointed head of Pakistani Intelligence Services General Mahmoud also just happened to be meeting in Washington that same day is on record making payments to the lead 9/11 "terrorist" stooge Mohammad Atta,[23] the one whose untarnished passport just happened to be found near the fallen rubble a few days later.[24]

Within a year after Sir David was US ambassador he was paid £50,000 per year as part-time advisor to giant permanent war contractor Lockheed Martin.[25] Similar to Sir Jimmy, Sir David Manning also appears to be éminence grise for the royal family. In 2009 the queen appointed Manning advisor to Princes William and Harry for all their foreign travel expeditions. As recently as June 2018 the monarchy's employ of the Jewish Middle East controller continued as the future British king visited Israel and Israeli Occupied Palestinian Territories, a royal first.[26] To this day the Zionist grip continues ruling over both the UK and US.[27]

And now for a look at Tony Blair's prime minister record as a pedophile enabler, if not pedophile as well, although his embarrassing public toilet episode at the same time he entered Parliament is said to have taught him a lesson to be more discreet indulging in his favorite perversions. But like Thatcher, it didn't stop him from saturating his government with pedophiles. But prior to uncovering the identities of Blair's child abusing ministers and aides, an accounting of how they wound up on law enforcement radar in the first place sets the stage for this cast of criminal characters in the Blair pedo-lineup.

In 1999, the same year Blair more than likely had Jill Dando murdered, Britain's National Criminal Intelligence Service working under the codename Operation Ore put together an exhaustive list of child pornographers and pedophiles identified to be offending in Britain alone, totaling 7,250 suspects of which 1850 were charged with child sex crimes and 1451 were convicted.[28] Police interviewed nearly 500 suspects under caution and 900 remained under ongoing investigation in the United Kingdom's most thorough and comprehensive police probe into crimes against children.[29]

A January 19, 2003 *Sunday Herald* article quoted a recently retired Scotland Yard police officer accusing the Operation Ore probe of intentionally sabotaging the arrest and prosecution of high profile Labor politicians that included Blair cabinet ministers as well as MPs caught downloading child pornographic material.[30] No doubt by design, the police inaction allowed guilty parties the opportunity to delete and destroy evidence. The detective from the Operation Ore investigation blamed both law enforcement and the Blair government for not following through on their vow to make the crime of pedophilia a top priority, calling it "smoke and mirrors." Had Blair not willfully obstructed justice, covering up the scandal by issuing a D-notice blackout on all subsequent press coverage, the final line in the *Herald* article relays the bold claim destined never to come to pass:

Police say that the list of rich and famous Operation Ore suspects would fill newspaper front pages for an entire year.[31]

Only one entertainment luminary's name was not spared from press headlines, disgraced rock star Pete Townshend of the legendary band the Who, given a caution and placed on a sex registry for five years.[32] As in post-Jimmy Savile

Operation Yewtree, the powers-that-should-not-be will gladly sacrifice a token entertainer or two long before bringing pedophile MPs and ministers to proper justice.

Operation Ore was part of a larger police investigation stemming from Operation Avalanche in America involving the FBI, US Postal Inspection Service and Dallas police originally unearthing a landslide of files from a company called Landslide Productions in Fort Worth, Texas.[33] This outfit serviced thousands of international customers busily downloading its child pornography. Despite 35,000 perverts investigated as suspects in the US, only 100 were charged.[34] For the same reason so few in Britain were indicted, the derelict-filled Bush 2 administration (same as daddy Bush and Blair's) was also caught red-handed neck deep in pedophilia. Also guilty were child pornography and sex abuse rings found operating throughout the US armed forces, including the Pentagon, at military prisons like Abu Ghraib and Guantanamo, and amongst private military contractors like DynCorp[35] and Halliburton in places like Bosnia, Kosovo, Afghanistan, Ethiopia and Thailand (see Section 3, Chapters 8-11).[36] In effect, deep links to the entire global pedophilia network were accidentally uncovered and then quickly covered up.

By January 2003 the police inquiry known in Britain as Operation Ore was the largest child abuse online investigation in British history to date,[37] honing in on a number of high ranking pedophiles within the Blair government, including at least two senior ministers.[38] But because Blair was busily lying through his teeth following the marching orders of his Anglo-American-Zionist puppet masters, on the verge of launching the infamous US-UK "shock and awe" Iraq invasion, the pedo-protecting PM issued his D-notices under the pretense of national security interests in order to prohibit the press from covering the pedophilia scandal that would have overnight destroyed

Blair's career, his and Bush's war-making regimes and their bloody, costly, protracted catastrophe in Iraq. The large scale police investigation had uncovered links between child sex abusers in Blair's Labor Party cabinet and a massive pedophilia trafficking network moving children across the Euro-continent between the UK, Netherlands, Belgium, Austria[39] and Portugal involving dignitaries and VIPs in every nation.[40]

Of course Tony Blair was far from the first UK prime minister to be sexually blackmailed into fighting wars for Israel. Zionist sexual blackmail controlling top UK politicians has gone on for a century now. For instance, the political marriage of convenience between Tory Prime Minister Harold Macmillan (1957-1963), reportedly expelled for "homosexual perversions" at age 16 from the exclusive private Eton College in 1910, and his wife Dorothy, who maintained a 30-year extramarital affair with promiscuous pedophile gay-Lord Boothby, provided ample opportunity for sexual blackmail.[41] Enter Cambridge UK-KGB-Mossad superspy Lord Victor Rothschild,[42] later Thatcher's security advisor, who likely blackmailed Macmillan on behalf of Israel to initiate the 1956 attack on Egypt's Suez Canal.[43]

To avoid sexual scandal, blackmailed prime ministers eager to retain their power and impunity resort to great lengths to protect VIP pedophilia operations which through intelligence services over the course of time have expanded internationally, especially by the late 1970s. Such notable UK operatives as Sir Jimmy Savile (MI5), Sir Anthony Blunt (MI5-KGB), Peter Righton (National Children's Bureau; National Council of Social Work) and Colin Peters (British foreign office)[44] to name just a few, all hardcore pedo-pimps (covered in previous chapters) were busily supplying children for VIP sickos in both Britain and Europe. Yet another pimping culprit to emerge in the 1980s (whose crimes will be detailed in the next chapter) is Tory Party

Thatcher “advisor” and speechwriter Derek Laud, a son from a broken home of Jamaican immigrant parents.[45]

Keep in mind that the pedophile ring pimps that indulge the sick demented needs of powerful untouchable Britons are nearly always just as covered up and concealed as the identities of the famous VIP pedophiles involved, because they are the connected bread crumb ratlines running straight to the royal palaces, 10 Downing Street and Westminster. Yet despite such heavy-handed protection and impenetrable concealment furnished by intelligence services, law enforcement agencies, Crown Prosecution Services, the controlled media and all levels of government from national to local that invariably lose and destroy massive amounts of crucial criminal evidence,[46] together they still provide more than enough proof that the aforementioned named procurers funneling victims to powerful, largely unnamed, still unpunished VIP pedophiles demonstrate beyond all question or doubt that a highly sophisticated, highly insulated, interlocking international child raping network has in fact been in existence for a very long time. And what else is perfectly clear is that all this tangible, irrefutable evidence amounts to “only the tip of the iceberg.”[47] That said, even with a handful of known and publicly identified powerful pedophile suspects being shielded in the House of Commons and Lords, not one politician at the national level has ever been convicted or served time in prison, **not one**. And undoubtedly a partial list of over 100 convicted British pedophile politicians at local council, mayoral and party levels posted online as of April 2012 is but a proverbial “tip of the iceberg.”[48]

Though influential homosexual-pedophile-pimp Derek Laud’s been legally protected, another black Englishman who made history as Britain’s first black cabinet minister appears even more powerfully connected. Paul Boateng, son of a Ghanaian minister and Scottish mother, in the 1980s was an ambitious young attorney and NCCL executive member intimately allied with PIE,[49] embarking on a long career in politics as a Labor MP from Brent South (1987-2005).[50] Selected as Tony Blair's home minister from 1998 to 2001 overseeing UK police investigations, in 2001 until 2005 Boateng was treasury secretary and then the British High Commissioner to South Africa from 2005 to 2009. As of 2010 he's been elevated to the House of the Lords as Baron Boateng.

But this high profile British slickster of a politician has also been implicated in murderous pedophilia that Blair ensured stayed protected and covered up. However, far too many loose ends refusing to go away can be traced back to his scandalous-prone past and are long overdue to catch up to this highly shielded, still acclaimed VIP lord.[51] But before diving into his part in the Blair pedophilia cover-up, a little background info on his neck of the woods is critically important to comprehending the bigger picture.

In 1983 when MP Geoffrey Dickens first raised the issue of MPs and cabinet ministers engaging in sexual abuse of British children, submitting his dossier to Home Secretary Leon Brittan, social workers across the nation went on strike for better pay and improved work conditions. As a consequence, local children in the UK care system were uprooted and separated by hundreds of miles apart from their hometown family and friends. In 1983 it was reported that social services from the South London borough of Lambeth were sending 124 kids as far away as North Wales,[52] straight to notorious care homes like Bryn Estyn where one of UK's most deadly abuse scandals and cover-ups was occurring from the 1970s through the 1990s. The rampant child abuse in North Wales will be thoroughly covered in Chapter 26.

But while Lambeth children were being placed in harm's way in Wales, they were perhaps even more endangered as residents in any one of 25 care homes in their own home district. With Lambeth also the home headquarters of Britain’s notorious foreign intelligence services the MI6,[53] and the proven nexus between worldwide pedophilia operations and global intelligence services (see Chapters 9-11),[54] is it purely by coincidence that for so many decades Lambeth has been such a safe haven for pedophile beasts to prolifically prey upon the borough’s defenseless group home children?

That was then and this is now. As far as kids in the UK Care System being placed far from home, though it grew very bad in the 1980s, right now it’s at a record high. Despite the British government’s pledge to not send children in its care system hundreds of miles away from their homes, knowing they are at far more risk of abuse, the 2018 Education Department report reveals that the rate at which British children are being sent to placements lengthy distances from home has risen by 64% from 2,250 in 2012 to 3,680 in March 2017.[55]

Even more alarming is the number of children in the UK “care” system gone missing in the past two years alone, having skyrocketed to more than double from 4,380 in 2015 to 9,190 in 2017. What does it say when the latest numbers show that more than 10,000 kids in the system disappear for weeks or longer at a time[56] out of the total Care System population of over 90,000?[57] With record numbers entering the care system at 90 a day in 2017[58] and already over 11% missing from their placements, it means that children are being mistreated and abused both in and out of their care homes, compounded and exacerbated by the rising record numbers being sinisterly placed hundreds of miles from home. The dire consequences of an already broken system are breaking even farther apart at the seams.

In May 2018 MP Ann Coffey accurately stated:

Despite the [government's] *pledge, record numbers of children are being sent away to places where they are more vulnerable to exploitation. The farming out of children to areas where they have no friends or family circles or local social workers has created a perfect storm where it is increasingly difficult to protect children. These children* [far from home and especially gone missing] *are* ***being targeted and preyed upon by paedophiles and criminals who know they are vulnerable****.*[59] [**Emphasis** added]

Essentially what appears to be happening is that a brazenly criminal decision was made at the top of the British government to substantially increase the flow of throwaway children into a well-established nationwide pedo-pipeline operating on an industrial scale to feed the growing perverse demands of a pathological international elite that's behind the biggest ever global child raping and trafficking network. The agenda of the UK family court system's been to tear families apart, remove children from non-abusive parents and tragically destroy the nation's most basic, most vital social institution providing a bedrock of stability for eons of time, placing its most defenseless, vulnerable population into the predatory jaws of the UK Care System that's systemically destroying them in unprecedented numbers.

The bottom line - the Anglo-American-Zionist agenda rooted in Luciferianism is determined to obliterate families around the world while establishing one world government tyranny. The diabolical larger plan is to export this same wholesale destruction of family as humanity's foremost institutional life-force presently being deconstructed in the UK to every nation in the world. The endgame of this collectivist Marxist agenda is to globally replace family (along with religion, national sovereignty and private ownership) with the state.[60] The totalitarian gulag state of Stalin and Mao's oppressive Communist democide dictatorships is right around the corner if the planetary controllers are allowed to achieve their dystopian globalist objective.

Examining how this demonic grand plan strategy from hell unfolded at the local micro-level and spread rapidly nationally in Britain is illustrated by how Labor politician Margaret Hodge saturated her district's youth care homes with infiltrating pedophiles back in the 1980s. The Islington council leader in 1982 began her 10-year reign of terror against group home kids, promoting a highly publicized invitation to hire gays into her Islington council, its social services and group home facilities.[61] Using the LGBT agenda of fairness to all as her deceptive Trojan horse, she cunningly flooded group homes with child rapists proudly claiming they were gay to work with children in all dozen of her Islington group homes. No one would dare risk challenging the "Political Correctness," much less "violate" the rights of homosexuals, even if they're masquerading as parasitic kiddie killers. Following Islington's lead just a stone's throw away, in parallel process also waving the gay rights' banner, the Labor dominant Lambeth council coalition also flooded its social services and care homes with child predators claiming to be exercising their gay and lesbian rights.

In a very much related move, under the leadership of Margaret Hodge's husband Henry Hodge as chairman of the National Council for Civil Liberties (now known as Liberty), in 1975 he openly partnered with the Paedophile Information Exchange (PIE), fully embracing the rights of UK pedophiles.[62] Thus through both his and her interventions in the 1970s and 80s, virtually all the London districts became interconnecting, highly embedded safe havens for hardcore child rapists deceptively wearing the LGBT label. Higher-ups at councils and social services alike invited likeminded perverts to infiltrate, network and seal off virtual safe zones to establish a thriving secret network of predators serving their own sick lustful compulsions at the expense of Britain’s most defenseless population, while also providing easy access for UK’s establishment VIPs sworn to safeguard their pedo-club impunity for survival. Even the British government’s Home Office became infiltrated with likeminded child pedophiles.[63]

For Margaret Hodge to pretend she didn’t know her 1983 open advertisement for gays to work with her care home children as a thinly veiled invitation for co-opting pedos under the “gay rights” movement that her own hubby championed is preposterous. Of course both she and her Lambeth Labor counterpart Ted Knight knew they were saturating their 37 care homes with child sexual predators.[64] With the Islington beta test underway making it super easy for pedos to access care home children while guaranteed protection under gay rights, by September 1983 Islington’s next door neighbor Lambeth was pushing Hodge’s same Trojan horse policy. Thus it seems from the very ge-go, her assigned mission from the UK pedophilia establishment was to expand the child raping network nationwide. It certainly was no accident that as a brand new MP in 1994 Hodge nominated her Islington neighbor Tony Blair to be the next Labor Party leader[65] and he in turn made her Britain and his first minister of children - all sanctified by Lucifer’s design.

The Islington and Lambeth borders are separated by a scant two mile stretch of the City of London, the Illuminati Rothschild independent enclave that funds global child sex trafficking.[66] While Labor politician Margaret Hodge ruled over Islington with an iron fist, her friend in Lambeth Knight,[67] often referred to as the “Godfather,” ran his council like the Mafia. By intended design, both London districts were notoriously swimming with infiltrated pedo-sharks reportedly swapping children between boroughs and outward in all directions among the Isles. To maintain impunity, it wasn't long before the massive amount of incriminating files and records establishing direct links between Islington-Lambeth to all other pedophile rings operating throughout the nation were systematically destroyed.

In the words of award winning reporter Eileen Fairweather who originally broke the Hodge story:

Islington shredded every incriminating file, sacked whistleblowers and smeared victims as mentally ill.[68]

Abraham Jacob, a pedophile social worker employed at a Lambeth group home prior to employment at Islington social services, was busted in 1986 and imprisoned for his involvement in a Piccadilly Circus pedo-ring. He specialized in picking up runaway rent boys off the street and supplying them to Labor Party politicians and *BBC* executives.[69] He would also pimp his underage boys, showcasing them in a window of a gay bar to attract johns.[70] Abraham Jacob was very familiar to Labor council leaders Ted Knight, Margaret Hodge and Jack Straw. Of course Hodge and Straw went on to rarefied heights in the Blair government holding key ministerial posts. What's been proven by their actions throughout long political careers is that they all are ultra-pedophilia-friendly.

Recall from Chapter 19 that a few social workers originally from the Channel Island of Jersey who moved to Islington were both voracious pedophiles as well as child traffickers.[71] The Jersey-Islington connection exchanged child victims and pedo-pimps posing as both social service workers and traffickers servicing Westminster VIPs in both locations, and of course aided by Sir Jimmy Savile's pimping exploits. Throughout the 1970s and 1980s a nationalized pedophile ring network was developed and expanded under Margaret Thatcher's watch to every corner of the UK through the likes of Savile, Anthony Blunt, Peter Righton, Derek Laud and a host of other prominent pimping players networking and interfacing with intelligence services, law enforcement, the National Health Service, local social services, charity organizations, the family court system and dozens of district councils.

From the lower levels of group home employees and operators to the top Westminster and Downing Street powerbrokers, by the 1980s infiltrating pedophiles were thoroughly entrenched throughout Britain, maintaining a close-knit, highly organized secret “sex club” network providing sealed off protection for their collective survival. An August 1st, 1993 *Sunday Times* article observed:

For the past five months officers from the squad have secretly liaised with directors of social services in more than half a dozen London boroughs amid fears that organised gangs have targeted vulnerable children in their areas. Several of the most prominent offenders under surveillance are wealthy businessmen [and other establishment VIPs conspicuously omitted].[72]

More than a half dozen years later a February 2000 headline in the *Daily Mail* read “Even Worse,” reflecting that this same operational pedo-network had grown to industrial strength size, far worse than expected, and this is over a decade prior to the Jimmy Savile bombshell. The article reported that:

Detectives believe a nationwide network of paedophiles has claimed as many as 11,000 victims over 20 years.[73]

Keep in mind that police estimates tend to always be on the conservative low side. That said, British law enforcement discovered that hundreds of pedophiles were able to roam freely about the country and beyond to continental Europe,[74] often dispersed with sterling job recommendations and referrals from infiltrated fellow pedophiles embedded as gatekeepers in the UK power structure, from national to local, granting carte blanche license and protection to further harm defenseless underage victims. Even in the 1980s and 1990s the abuse had reached an unprecedented industrial scale.[75] Historically in the UK, prior to police investigations implicating and potentially exposing VIP perpetrators, British intelligence, Scotland Yard's Special Branch and police commissioners have always stepped in to swiftly shut down probes as soon as identities of government higher-ups are involved.

The above statement is backed up by serving and former Metro Police officers on an anonymous Scotland Yard online forum. A transcript was leaked to investigative journalists at *Exaro News*. One said:

> *This is about kids being raped by those in power that included politicians of all sorts. It goes to the very heart of our establishment. There is very clear evidence that the general nature of the allegations are true. There are enough officers on this site who have mentioned paedophile ops involving high profile politicians being stopped at the eleventh hour.*[76]

Two retired Special Branch officers came forth in 2014 to disclose to the half dozen detectives assigned to work Operation Fairbank launched in 2013 in response to MP Watson's assertion that historic child sexual abuse committed by Westminster VIPs still needs investigating. A source close to Fairbank alleged that the retirees claim:

> *There was a significant paedophile group in Parliament who were untouchable to the police.*[77]

This of course explains why no past or current member of Parliament or the prime minister's office has ever been arrested, much less convicted or imprisoned, confirming what's become at this point common knowledge - government VIPs live above the law. And true to form, Operation Fairbank was shut down as yet another abysmal, costly failure netting not one politician's arrest despite police surveillance videos reportedly catching MPs, ministers and celebs in action partying with and abusing trafficked children at the Elm Guest House.

Yet occasionally back in 2000, the alarming truth gets leaked out to the public by a then far less controlled press. The abuse that had been shielded for several decades in Lambeth grew so blatantly out of control that in 1995 all 25 care homes were closed.[78] In 1998 and 1999 Operations Trawler and Middleton were launched, initially to investigate John Carroll, then uncover pedophilia crimes in Lambeth from 1974 to 1994 and in 1999 expanded into a nationwide inquiry, recognizing the overwhelming presence of an extensive, flourishing network of deranged sickos preying on UK's throwaway kids, "even worse" than previously imagined.[79] Coincidence that Metro Police investigated the rampant Lambeth abuse from 1974 to 1994, the exact same years that the Blair minister's wife served on the corrupt Lambeth council?

Despite Operation Middleton lasting four years into 2003, unfortunately only a miniscule number among the legions of criminals were ever brought to justice, all three low level employees granted overly lenient short prison sentences. The central figure in this scandal - John Carroll - did only five years. Hundreds of hardened child sodomizers have been granted full impunity by the rotten to the core system, including the high profile Blair minister that the media has largely avoided naming,[80] but anyone who knows anything about the Lambeth scandal knows it's Lord Paul Boateng, in 1998 a home office minister in charge of UK police investigations.[81]

For a half century or more, the British pedophilia network has been firmly controlled by gatekeeping degenerates from social services, borough councils, law enforcement, high courts to top echelons of governmental power in Westminster and Downing Street. In all this time, absolutely nothing has changed… except over time passage, more and more truth has leaked out in little bits and pieces.

By 1999, even the compromised and controlled Scotland Yard was reporting that up to 50 suspected pedophiles were involved in Lambeth group home abuse during the preceding 20 years.[82] 16 of the identified perpetrators were already deceased prior to the outset of Scotland Yard’s Operation Middleton, strongly indicating murder was treacherously used as a silencing weapon against any would-be informers and whistleblowers.[83] 50 children who entered Lambeth care homes were never seen again by their families.[84]

Shirley Oaks Children’s Home, another notorious Lambeth group home complex bearing a tragic history of rampant abuse from its 1903 founding to its 1983 closure, was comprised of 52 Victorian cottage “care” homes on 80 acres,[85] reputedly the world’s largest single children’s care home.[86] The Shirley Oaks Survivors Association (SOSA) is made up of over 700 members, all purported child abuse victims at Lambeth care homes from the 1950s to the 1990s.[87] SOSA maintains that the pedophile ring operating in Lambeth in actuality was far greater in number than the 50 admitted by the police, more like well into the hundreds.

In March 2016 Raymond Stevenson, the SOSA founder and abuse survivor, testified at the IICSA that:

What took place at Shirley Oaks and other children's homes in Lambeth was physical and sexual abuse on an industrial scale which remained unchecked for decades. The damage done was irreversible. Lambeth council itself has had many inquiries in the past. For whatever reason, including council cover-ups and institutional cover-ups … we now see they were whitewashes.[88]

Only eight months after Stevenson’s testimony, it was all too evident that Theresa May’s so called “Independent” Inquiry is just another futile exercise staged and controlled by Home Office designed to whitewash the real truth and never bring justice for the victims against the perpetrators. As a panel member for the first two years, the Shirley Oaks Association quit in November 2016 when it became painfully clear that May’s inquiry was merely another hoax. SOSA had this to say about its official pullout:

> *Having watched the IICSA unpalatable circus stumble and lurch from crisis to crisis with multiple resignations and claims of racial and sexual abuse thrown into the mix, it no longer matters whether we think the inquiry is just another stitch-up because it's clearly a botch job that needs a drastic overhaul if it is ever to achieve its initial objectives.* [89]

Unfortunately with the IICSA, it was déjà vu. With the disturbing reality that Britain’s ruling elite will never come clean in its deplorable institutional crime history against children, as much effort it exerts to block the truth, courageous abuse survivors will ensure that the colossal concealment of atrocities is made public. Media coverage of the abuse epidemic has burst forth in waves, starting over three decades ago, then two decades ago, and then came the most recent 2012 avalanche exposing the Savile abuse that resulted in thousands more allegations against powerful elite pedophiles, echoed in MP Tom Watson’s October 2012 House of Commons confrontation with former Prime Minister Cameron.[90]

But even after a near half decade of the IICSA, not one MP or cabinet minister has ever gone to jail for raping, much less murdering children at will from orphanages and care homes over the last half century. With the national inquiry a cruel joke and the pedophilia cabal’s 2018 pushback via Sir Cliff Richard’s court victory (see Chapter 21), in so many words warning “don’t mess with the privacy rights of the rich and famous,” it effectively silences both the media and victims, vis-a-vis indicted accuser “Nick” due to stand trial in March 2019.[91] So don’t hold your breath waiting for the first VIP rapist to go down any time soon, not as long as he’s still alive anyway. Before the elite pedophiles can ever be brought to justice, so smugly secure are they inside their fortified pedo-epicenter of the earth mansions, the waking masses will need to revolt first. What’s more than clear is nothing short of that will change the shameful and pathetic status quo in Britain.

That said, one encouraging sign as a significant shining example of taking bold successful action toward achieving some modicum of justice is the story behind the Shirley Oaks Survivors Association (SOSA).[92] Though seeking justice against perps obviously can never give back victims’ stolen childhoods and many decades of pain and struggle since, the published SOSA report has singlehandedly compelled the Lambeth council to allocate £100m in compensation to its tens of thousands of past abuse victims (at least £10,000 each estimated for 3,000 expected claims).[93] Once victims united as empowered survivors led by Raymond Stevenson, they have been able to identify abusers where police have failed (no doubt intentionally), resulting in arrests and financial compensation for victims. SOSA serves as a model of inspiration and courage for child abuse victims and citizens for justice everywhere.

In 1967 the UK family court system decided that Raymond Stevenson’s father was unable to properly care for his son and sent him to Shirley Oaks Children’s Home near Croyden where Raymond lived for the next eleven years, drugged and physically abused the entire decade.[94] During his final year at Shirley Oaks in 1977, a 15-year old friend of his named Peter Davis was found hanging by a cord in a bathroom of one of the cottages. Though evidence indicated he'd been abused by at least two staff members that went on to abuse others,[95] the court ruled his death a "misadventure," a favorite scenario for murder cover-up by staged foul play.[96] Two years earlier Peter Davis had testified as a court witness in a rape trial. When in 2003, documents from the trial were suddenly sealed for the next 100 years,[97] music producer and abuse survivor Raymond Stevenson realized that "Peter's voice was the first of many to be silenced."[98] He vowed to expose the horrific truth once and for all and within a month coordinated a reunion of Shirley Oaks survivors and SOSA was spawned.

Raymond and his business partner Lucia Hinton interviewed over 400 former resident survivors and published their own report of documented evidence in December 2016.[99] This comes after much of the Shirley Oaks records of abuse crimes and documents confirming gross miscarriage of justice have been "lost" or destroyed by the Lambeth council.[100] The SOSA report has led to the naming of up to 60 suspected pedophiles, 10 more than the final number all the failed police investigations and Lambeth council inquiries had ever come up with.

It's also been reported that Jimmy Savile visited three cottages designated to house children with various disabilities, was friends with a Shirley Oaks superintendent back in the 1950s and 60s and DJ'd events at the Shirley Oaks Community Centre.[101] As both a knight of the queen and pope and also a prime pedo-pipeline architect laying ratlines for UK's trafficking network, Sir Jimmy not only was his nation's most prolific abuser and VIP procurer, he also enjoyed unequalled access to both Britain's children as well as inside elitist contacts with royalty, government, intel services, law enforcement, National Health Services, entertainment, media and religion. So of course it'd be more than a safe bet he victimized children living at the world's biggest care home complex in a district proven to be among the most notorious pedophile havens.

After escaping justice twice in court trials in the 1990s, in August 2016 the conviction of former Catholic priest Philip Temple jailed for a dozen years after admitting to abusing a dozen boys and one girl dating back to the 1970s was vindication.[102] With SOSA's assistance, police have since charged a couple more pedophiles. Prior to Raymond and his association's heroic efforts, only one Shirley Oaks child rapist, a swimming instructor named William Hook was ever convicted for the thousands of sex crimes against children at Shirley Oaks during the 80 years of appalling abuse.[103] In 2001 63-year old Hook was sentenced to 10 years' imprisonment after admitting to 26 charges of indecency and sexual assault on a half dozen boys, though he may have abused hundreds since the 1970s.[104]

In 1983 Shirley Oaks was finally forced to close its doors after eight straight decades of horror. But by the mid-1980s, living conditions for children placed in all 25 Lambeth group home facilities were growing intolerable. A flurry of sexual abuse allegations perpetrated by childcare workers toward handicapped children began surfacing in the media at several group homes where Lambeth social services placed youngsters. In late December 1985 into 1986 it was publicly reported that several children were being sexually abused. A 12-year old boy with an alleged intellectual capacity of a four-year old just released from a care home disclosed to his mother that a male staff working at the home had sexually assaulted him after she noticed severe anal bruises.[105] The police soon suspected that all six children at the group home had been abused.

Another incident involved a care home's senior social worker forcing a 15-year old handicapped girl to give him oral sex.[106] Four separate cases went public at different homes operated and supervised by Lambeth council, all surfacing within 13 months apart. Yet ultimately no action by either police or social services' investigations was subsequently taken against alleged abusers despite in some cases medical evidence supplied by police doctors.[107] Due to the limited cognitive functioning of alleged victims rendering their testimony "unbelievable," despite physical evidence, the lame Crown Prosecution Services claimed all cases were too weak to deliver convictions and were summarily dismissed.[108] Both Scotland Yard police and Lambeth council failed these abused children in the worst way, unconscionably sending them right back to their abusers allowed to continue working in the homes harming children.

Moreover, a tit-for-tat petty turf war emerged between the Lambeth council and the local police, both refusing to share and exchange critical information and evidence,[109] resulting in even grosser child endangerment that predators took full advantage of.[110] In 1987 even the whistleblowing child advocate MP Geoffrey Dickens called upon Attorney General Michael Havers, himself later an accused pedophile, to reopen the horrendously unjust Lambeth abuse cases.[111]

Lambeth's deadly CYA culture of intimidation and fear permeated a rigidly enforced policy of inaction characterizing the borough's systemic failure to protect and care for vulnerable children, much less bringing scores of perpetrators to justice. Just as in districts like Islington and countless other cities and towns across the British Isles, looking the other way was becoming a given policy and national norm. Pedophiles fully exploited the fact that back in the 1980s in their fervor to recruit "gays" to work with kids, places like Islington and Lambeth never required background checks, nor were childcare workers required to report suspected child abuse to police. Time and time again, councils in these "liberal" London boroughs ignored the fact that they had unleashed predatory pedophiles on abusive rampage against their children. Moreover, as is common in virtually all cover-ups, during the subsequent so called inquiries one after the other by either police or social services, it became increasingly clear that hundreds of incriminating files from offices were either lost or destroyed, not from incompetence but a calculated, sinister decision to obstruct justice to protect the guilty.[112]

Where you find pedophiles and pimps, you also find child pornographers. In October 1992 police found thousands of photos of naked boys and many pornographic videos at the private home of an arrested childcare worker employed at one of several care homes involving hundreds of abused victims.[113] As the offenders were rarely if ever consequenced, the magnitude of abuse soared to the extent that by 1995, Lambeth was eventually forced to close all 25 of its care homes.

Child sexual predators like Lambeth care home operator Michael John Carroll, a previous convicted pedophile for abusing a boy in Merceyside in 1966, were systemically permitted to continue committing serial sex crimes against children.[114] During the decade Carroll ran his Angell Road boy brothel from 1981 to 1991, even midway through his tenure in 1986 when his past conviction record became known to the Lambeth council, apparently due to his connections with VIPs like the Boatengs, his license to operate was continually renewed.[115]

For years in the 1980s Paul Boateng’s attorney wife Janet served as council chair on Lambeth’s social services committee directly responsible for group home care[116] as well as a Lambeth councillor for 20 years coinciding with the borough’s worst decades of pedophile ring abuse.[117] Even when the Lambeth council finally terminated Carroll’s employment in 1991, it wasn’t even over his flagrant sexual assaults, but in comparison, a relatively minor financial impropriety, using public funds to buy cigarettes and liquor.[118]

Once the Lambeth council finally terminated Carroll’s employment contract, after his criminal habit had forced exits from Merceyside and then eventually Lambeth, John Carroll and his wife began looking to relocate to set up shop in the next location, this time on the border of England and Wales. In January 1991 the serial pedophile bought an antique shop as well as plunked down £725,000 in cash on a hotel near Wrexham in North Wales, the center of another horrendous UK child abuse scandal.[119]

Since for years Carroll was part of the Lambeth brothel system pimping kids out for a price to VIPs, no doubt lots of dirty money exchanged hands in his rent boy operations along with Lambeth’s prospering child pornography business, affording his near three quarters of a million pound property in an area where boy brothels in North Wales were attracting even more top government VIPs. Carroll’s confirmed social networking links to prominent fellow child abusers have fueled speculation that he turned his Wales acquisition into yet another lucrative brothel business.

For a number of decades Michael John Carroll was allowed to continue abusing kids entrusted in his care - since Lambeth council failed to ever initiate corrective or disciplinary action against him to protect their children, chronicling an identical parallel process that unfolded during the exact same years in the borough next door at Hodge’s pedo-lodge as an interconnected twin sanctuary. Investigating police during Operation Middleton concluded that at least seven abusers of the dozen potential suspects at Angell Road were from outside the boy brothel. The huge unanswered question remains - was Lord Boateng one of them?

Back in the 1980s, attorney Boateng was spotted by several credible witnesses making evening visits at Carroll’s home a regular thing. Teresa Johnson, a former social worker employed at the Angell Road facility went public before a national audience on a *BBC* Newsnight broadcast maintaining that she spoke to Paul Boateng requesting him to sign the facility guestbook and observing him frequently visiting the home on about a half dozen occasions.[120] A youth worker also claiming that John Carroll boasted of his ties with the rising political Labor star, also maintains he witnessed Boateng attending a holiday camp that Carroll ran as well as often seeing Boateng in Carroll's company.[121]

And still another witness reported that Boateng contacted him on behalf of the pedophile after three neighboring social services turned down Carroll's request to foster a couple more kids, deemed potential victims by Croydon, Southwark and Wandsworth.[122] When seeking foster approval, Lambeth also withheld that Carroll was rejected by other councils, including the fact Carroll was named in a 1993 independent inquiry into child sexual abuse. For Lambeth to go to such extreme, deceitful measures on behalf of a known pedophile shows just how much power of corruption was behind John Carroll. And the prime source of that power according to a number of witnesses appears to be Lord Paul Boateng.

Former assistant director of social services on Lambeth council Dr. Nigel Goldie stated in 2014:

There was a cover-up to protect politicians' reputations following allegations of abuse at a children's home.[123]

Yet when asked in March 2016 about John Carroll at Prime Minister May's laughable farce of an "Independent" Inquiry on Child Sexual Abuse, the former Blair minister came prepared, adamantly denying he ever met or knew John Carroll. Again, keep in mind that Boateng in the 1980s was an executive member of NCCL, the human rights lobbying organization that embraced in partnership PIE, the outfit publicly pushing pedophilia as a natural birthright:

As a campaigning youth justice lawyer I acted for many young people in care and visited many youth facilities in the *course of my work. I didn't know Mr Carroll personally and have no recollection of meeting him professionally or visiting the Angell Road children's home or anywhere else where he was present. I'm unaware how the investigation into Mr Carroll was conducted. I therefore cannot comment on why the police did not seek my assistance.*[124]

Here the head honcho ruling over all of Britain's police investigations in 1998 is claiming 20 years later that he knew nothing of the Metro Police probe into pedophilia at a care home in his neighborhood that his wife was legally in charge of. So as Home Secretary at the time, he has the audacity to pretend he knows nothing? That's the same kind of absurd, preposterous claim that Margaret Hodge offers when she insists she had no clue her district was infested with child rapists. These highly implausible statements only demonstrate that by simply using denial as their feeble defense, MPs and ministers guilty as sin of criminal misconduct are always granted a free pass to live above the law. In Boateng's case, it's at least three people's word against his, all having far more to lose than gain by their claims. Shortly after Teresa Johnson's 2016 *BBC* interview, she was dead. In contrast, who in this case possesses both motive and means to lie? Politicians bent on saving their own ass and who lie because they get away with it. In England apparently a lord's word is taken as "the gospel" and is deemed truer than lowly common folk.

Prime Minister Theresa May's fake inquiry must have swallowed Boateng's fish story hook, line and sinker, trusting "the good lord's word" since the baron to this day remains in good standing as esteemed member of the House of Lords. So much for May's promise of an "independent" investigation of institutional wrongdoing she admitted while placing her Home Office fully in control to "get to the bottom" of the British government pedophilia cesspit. For us to actually think that criminals in charge of investigating their own crimes are ever going to come clean is an insult to our intelligence and complete sham. But it’s the British way, or more apt, the Luciferian way.

Rendering the savvy politician’s 2015 IICSA public performance even more suspect, the clincher to this smoldering crime drama arrived in November 1998 when Clive Driscoll, Scotland Yard’s lead detective heading up Metro’s Operation Trawler was investigating Carroll and closing in on questioning Boateng regarding his possible role in the Lambeth scandal. Meanwhile, amidst the post-Savile uproar in 2014, liar Tony Blair who conned Britain a decade earlier into the bloody mess in Iraq claimed he had “no recollection” of ever learning that one of his ministers was a child abuse suspect.[125] We know that’s another Pinocchio lie since Blair’s D-notice is the only reason his minister Peter Mandelson didn’t go to jail after Operation Ore caught him purchasing child pornography.[126]

111 pages of documents and memos released through Freedom of Information requests show that in 1998 prior to Detective Driscoll being relieved of his Operation Trawler duties, both Blair’s Home Office Minister Boateng and Health Minister Frank Dobson were both briefed on Scotland Yard’s ongoing investigation into Angell Road home abuse identifying a dirty dozen suspects that included Boateng.[127] This absolutely proves that between Blairite disciples Sir Peter and Lord Paul, the prime minister was well aware that at least two of his ministers were/are extremely probable pedophiles. Yet in a feebly indignant gesture attempting to demonstrate he has nothing to hide, in 2014 Blair self-righteously demanded yet another investigation into multiple claims suggesting his buddy Boateng was a child abuse suspect.[128] Once a liar, always a liar. Of course order

follower Dobson also maintained he has no recall of ever being briefed on the case either.

In a related theme, in March 2015 another brick in the crumbling cover-up wall of deception came loose when it was reported that Britain’s top cop - Metropolitan Police Chief Sir Bernard Hogan-Howe, was being questioned by his own detectives in his role in the Lambeth pedophilia scandal.[129] It’s standard operating procedure in the UK that even the nation’s “top cop” is an order follower when higher-ups in British Intelligence or national government are giving the orders. And as soon as Home Office Minister Paul Boateng’s name came up as a possible suspect amidst the widespread Lambeth abuse, the pedo-investigation leading to him was soon enough halted. At that time in 1998, Hogan-Howe was the Merceyside assistant chief constable leading the Carroll criminal investigation. Again in 1966 back in Merceyside, John Carroll was convicted of his first child abuse offense, only to become years later the pivotal central stooge in the Lambeth scandal/cover-up. The borough council employing Carroll was well aware of his status as a Level-1 convicted child sex offender running one of its care homes doubling as a VIP boy brothel.

Politicians and top cops simply lie their way out of trouble every time. In 2015 the *Mirror* reported the 111 documents were handed over to the Metro anticorruption unit.[130] But with Boateng’s IICSU appearance in March 2016 and nothing more ever heard since from either that inquiry or the police anticorruption inquiry, you can bet that no further action has been or will be taken despite irrefutable evidence strongly indicating that senior members of the Blair government are unpunished hardcore pedophiles.

With over 200 abused children in Lambeth care homes according to Operation Middleton,[131] in 1998 the highly skilled investigator Driscoll, who later cracked the notorious Stephen Lawrence murder,[132] was making headway uncovering the pedo-ring involving VIP politicians when he was abruptly removed and disciplined for committing "serious indiscretions,"[133] simply for "confidentially" naming the powerful players involved during an August meeting with Lambeth officials.[134] Three months later Driscoll's boss apologetically notified him that he was off the case and told the "orders come from on high,"[135] indicating 10 Downing Street as the probable source in order to protect Home Office Minister Boateng who was not only briefed but in charge of the very UK police operation making him a suspect…[136] déjà vu Leon Brittan receiving the Dickens dossier fifteen years earlier. See why cabinet ministers from the British Home Office are always pedophiles or minimally pedophile enablers? UK's nonstop cover-up would be impossible otherwise.

In 2014 it also came out in the *Mirror* that when Lambeth assistant social services director Dr. Nigel Goldie as the council boss in charge of child protection working in 1998 directly with Clive Driscoll mentioned Boateng's alleged evening visits at Carroll's Angell Road "brothel" back in the early 1980's, Det. Driscoll's Operation Trawler investigation was soon enough shut down.[137] When politicians so close to a nation's leader are implicated, without exception in every single case, any ongoing police inquiry becomes past tense as standard operating cover-up procedure. Whenever a major pedophilia scandal risks VIP exposure, the self-preservation mode always kicks in no matter the country or abuse location.

Detective Clive Driscoll ultimately wrote a 2015 autobiography entitled *In Pursuit of the Truth* based on his many years with the Scotland Yard, specifically devoting two lengthy chapters to the Lambeth child abuse case involving his unjustified termination as Operation Trawler Chief Detective Inspector (CDI).[138] In August 1998 Clive met with Lambeth officials to explain that his investigative team had already come up with a dozen suspects whose names were “confidentially” revealed, among them several VIP politicians that included headliner Boateng as well as a council member and a popular entertainer. All hell broke loose after that. The Lambeth council stonewalled the investigation. Clive Driscoll’s probe had stirred up a hornets’ nest, making instant enemies amongst guilty parties, subsequently resulting in anonymous phone call threats to Clive and his family’s safety.

Social worker Steve Forrest had raped a 6-year old boy at Carroll’s Angell Road home in 1987. Forrest died of AIDS five years later.[139] In a tumultuous November 1998 meeting Driscoll confronted the Lambeth senior officials, stating it was unconscionable that the then 11-year old victim was never informed that his rapist had died six years earlier from AIDS. But the Lambeth council refused to disclose the truth to the boy on the grounds that it was deemed “not in the boy’s best interest.” During the heated showdown, Driscoll was even threatened with removal as DCI from his own police probe.

Early on in the Lambeth investigation, social worker Libby Blake employed at Lambeth social services from 1992-2005, approached Det. Clive Driscoll, informing him that Lambeth council in 1986 had become aware of John Carroll’s previous 1966 conviction. Though the statement below was reportedly denied by the former Lambeth social worker, in his book Clive maintains that Libby also stated:

> *Carroll was only the tip of the iceberg, the children’s homes have been the playground for the rich and powerful for years.*[140]

Speaking of the rich, powerful and famous, for his 51st birthday in 2002, four years after Det. Driscoll was removed from investigating the Blair minister, the now 67-year old VIP Lord Boateng had his superstar pal Michael Jackson fly in special to sing happy birthday in the House of Commons, merrily joining his “birds of a feather friends” in a photo-op with not only the accused pedo-King of Pop but also Uri Geller, the infamous Zionist double agent spy, MK Ultra handler and multiple pedophile friend,[141] and the well-known pedophile fellow Labor Zionist Lord Greville Janner.[142] The photo alone raises a thousand words worth of suspicion that collusion was taking place between high profile figures within the international pedophilia community.

Libby Blake recommended that Detective Driscoll talk to former Lambeth council chairwoman Anna Tapsell. According to Driscoll, Libby said Anna is “the only one in Lambeth who’ll tell you the truth.”[143] At one time Anna headed the Lambeth social services committee (same post held earlier by Janet Boateng), and for two decades Tapsell vigorously campaigned to expose the horrendous abuse at considerable risk to herself. Anna was visited by several intimidating senior officers from Special Branch,[144] known for shutting down police probes, disappearing evidence and protecting the pedo-network at all cost, demanding she leave the Lambeth affair alone. Threatened and harassed on numerous occasions by other nameless intimidators, the undaunted Anna Tapsell persisted in telling the truth, stating to the press:

When I learned that Clive was being removed, not only from the case but also from Lambeth, I realised that the Met were caving in to political pressure that was far more powerful than Lambeth Council.[145]

Referring to John Carroll and other protected child abusers in the Lambeth pedo-ring, Anna added:

At the same time alleged perpetrators were moved or allowed to leave for financial misconduct or other misdemeanours, instead of for the abuse.[146]

As a courageous insider, Anna states the obvious conclusion:

I have no doubt Angell Road may have been used for organized child abuse which involved adults other than staff. This view is reinforced by the strong investment that officers and politicians have in blocking any effective investigation.[147]

Prior to being yanked off the case and reassigned, CDI Clive Driscoll uncovered lots of dirt:

I found someone who admitted they'd seen pornography changing hands on council property, which led to someone else saying there was a video doing the rounds featuring 'prominent' people engaged in sexual activities with minors.[148]

Because higher ups at Scotland Yard were clearly in cahoots with the corrupt Blair government as well as the corrupt Lambeth council criminals abusing children, despite admitting there were over 200 victims, in four years Operation Middleton netted a total of three measly convictions, one being John Carroll.[149] Though Metro Police claimed 19 suspects remained unidentified, indicating they likely operated outside the UK Care System,[150] scores if not hundreds of infiltrated child rapists that were/are part of the British pedophilia network got off scot free, free to move on to abuse more kids elsewhere, exactly like the legions of Catholic priests around the world.[151]

As if all this incriminating circumstantial evidence and oddly suspicious anomalies aren’t enough, there is also the plethora of suspicious deaths and murders of victims and potential whistleblowers. Onetime Lambeth council member turned MP John Mann has stated publicly that two murders of would-be whistleblowers were committed to keep the lid on the VIP pedophile ring operating in his borough.[152] In 1989 a social worker planning to expose the rampant abuse in care homes was allegedly killed in an arson fire.

Another unsolved murder mystery that took place in 1993 involves the sudden death of veteran Lambeth council insider, the district housing manager Bulic Forsythe who shared with a colleague that he was about to “spill the beans” on the Lambeth scandal.[153] As housing manager Bulic had discovered photos of children abused by members of Lambeth council[154] and learned that both women and children were being systematically raped on Lambeth city property, including the basement of his own housing office headquarters. He was determined to blow the whistle to stop such abusive shenanigans being committed right under his nose. But just three days later, he was found murdered, bludgeoned to death, with three men sited leaving the crime scene of his flat carrying files shortly before it was set on fire.[155] And predictably to this day, his murder remains unsolved… an all too common fate among truth tellers.

Moreover, in December 2014, MP John Mann submitted critical information contained in a dossier to police, naming 22 MPs, including a half dozen still serving at Westminster, implicated in pedo-parties at the notorious Dolphin Square flats.[156] Mann maintains the evidence shows that boys from Lambeth group homes were being trafficked to nearby Pimlico for abuse as part of a wider pedophile ring. But as always, there’s been no follow-up on this highly significant development, only indicating it too has been buried. But the main point remains, government VIP pedophiles are and were fed trafficked kids from care homes from virtually every surrounding borough in the greater London area, Lambeth and Islington being just two of the most guilty. The Westminster scandal that includes orgies at both Dolphin Square and Elm Guest House will be blown wide open in the next chapter.

Another inquiry report disclosed that underneath the Lambeth police station, part of Metro Police Service, existed a secret sex chamber involving both local council members as well as at least one known MP.[157] FYI as of 1987, Boateng was an MP. The creepy sex den was discovered with a red light, chains, manacle and bedding, linked to the widespread child sex abuse and the making of more kiddie porn, confirmed by a large volume of pornographic material discovered at the station. It became obvious that children from the group homes were taken to the Lambeth police station sex dungeon for abuse and pornography by group home staff, police, social services and council staff including both local and national politicians. The two Lambeth civilian staff members who bravely leaked the information to the Scotland Yard were suspended. In a corrupt criminal system where the bad guys are in charge, good deeds never go unpunished and evil deeds are always loyally protected with lies to the bitter end.

A police report emerging in March 2015 specified that senior Lambeth council members were recording “homemade” porno films on borough premises while committing acts of brutal sexual assault, bestiality and pedophilia.[158] Known politicians were reportedly wearing animal masks, robes and chanting while children and animals were also present. Lambeth criminals appeared to be engaging in satanic ritual abuse.

In another incident on Lambeth property, a female staff member maintains that she was drugged and then savagely raped by her council manager.[159] When she bravely filed a complaint and pursued a civil lawsuit against him, an intruder entered her home, dousing her with gasoline, but the match went out. The victim also had acid thrown in her face. A month later the she was still suffering from “serious injuries” sustained in the attacks. Reportedly the “Godfather” of the Lambeth council subverted justice and harassed witnesses in a flagrant attempt to stop the rape investigation.[160] Rape, murder, destroyed evidence and public denial are the four standard trademarks spelling massive criminal cover-up.

Moreover in January 2011, 38-year old Lambeth Police Constable Jordan Janssen was caught distributing online indecent images of young teenage boys, jailed for 12 months after resigning from Met Police in disgrace.[161] It begs the question whether he was connected to the Lambeth police officers involved in the production of child pornography in their underground police headquarters dungeon where the council operated its makeshift pornography studio.

Entering the crime scene in the early 1980s, a soon-to-be MP frequently shows up as Carroll’s evening guest at his Angell Road boy brothel. Britain’s top cop no doubt had to play his order-follower role in the cover-up. But as always when a guilty accomplice is caught red-handed, the standard response is deny, deny, and more deny. So of course in 2015 when his subordinates were asking him questions, a most obvious blatant conflict of interest in and of itself, Metro Chief Sir Bernard claimed he “does not recall details about the [1998] investigation” nor of any suspects. You see a consistent pattern of cover-up here? The guy was second in charge of the lead police agency investigating the notorious pedophile John Carroll with direct links to a VIP Blair minister, and he feebly claims he knows nothing about it. How convenient that another queen-knighted pedo-gatekeeper would suddenly come down with a timely case of amnesia. A source close to the 2015 investigation in so many words tactfully called Hogan-Howe a liar, explaining to the *Mirror* that it was "inconceivable" he would not have been aware:

> *The senior investigating officer at the time would have been expected to have reported to his senior officers the fact a serving government minister* [Boateng] *had come under suspicion.*[162]

One more note of relevant passing interest on Lord Paul Boateng conjures up the old adage - "like father, like son." Paul's son Benjamin Boateng is a convicted rapist and registered sex offender. After charges of raping a 17-year old girl in South Africa were dropped in 2006 while daddy was British High Commissioner,[163] the serial rapist struck again a few years later back in London, smiling for his mug shot, smugly confident his father's VIP status would once again get him off.[164] But this time he was found guilty in October 2011 and sentenced to two months shy of four years in prison.[165]

For those not high enough on the pedo-predator food chain, the mounting evidence against Boateng's alleged buddy that he claims he never knew just kept piling up to the point that in 1998, long past the point of protection by even the VIP establishment, John Carroll couldn't evade the law any longer. With alleged interest in tapping his wealth of inside pedo-knowledge of the North Wales scandal as a hotelier, Merceyside-Metro Police finally took the serial predator-VIP child procurer into custody after he admitted to 35 sexual assaults against a dozen boys, receiving a 10 year prison sentence for over two decades worth of mostly unpunished crimes. After serving only half his sentence, a mere five years, John Carroll was once again a free man in 2004 to get back to his "hotel" business in North Wales.

Should Carroll ever come forth to provide evidence against Lord Boateng and his VIP pedo-network, he realizes he would obviously go the same way of Bulic Forsythe and a bunch of others. John Carroll was again charged with yet more crimes committed back in the 1970s in Merseyside in North West England and once again was scheduled to face another trial in a Liverpool court in April 2018. But the elite's hidden hand, known to reward fellow pedophiles who keep their mouths shut, perhaps intervened as the three charges the 70-year old was facing were suddenly dropped mysteriously in January 2018.[166]

Another bizarrely suspicious Lambeth case involves 38-year old youth worker Jason Hoyte, convicted and sentenced to nine years in 2009 for sexually abusing a half dozen girls over a 20-year period, one as young as four.[167] The musician was also reportedly grooming children for *BBC* executives as well as joined a London Pentecostal Church to prey on vulnerable victims' trust. The married father actually sued Lambeth council for wrongful dismissal after he was arrested for sexual abuse. Perhaps his arrogance was based on not having to submit a criminal background check despite a 1989 charge of sexual assault. Or maybe it was Hoyte's *BBC* connections that led Appeals Court Judge Mark Bishop to out of the blue order a retrial in May 2013 that in turn five months later led to Hoyte's acquittal of all charges.[168] Another common pattern - lower level pedophiles serving higher level pedophiles often receive little or no punishment for their heinous crimes as reward for keeping what they know to themselves.

As strong evidence in recent years that sick pedophile rings are still operating in Lambeth and London vicinity still frequently preying on care home children comes the bizarre twisted case of 28-year old pedophile Gihan Muthukumarana.[169] For several months in 2015 this derelict attempted to recruit his hired female escort to join him sexually abusing, torturing and murdering 10 girls from local care homes in a business proposal offered as part of a snuff film deal the plotted ending the victims' bodies being disposed of in vats of acid, all for the perverted viewing pleasure of elite politicians. He promised his would-be accomplice "millions of pounds," boasting that VIPs are willing to pay £10 million for the film. Fortunately the alarmed woman took this information to the police and a sting operation was set up to get the creep on tape pitching the same business proposition to an undercover cop calling herself "Donna." The case was heard in a Southwark court in February 2018. But here's the clincher - this guy walks after he too was acquitted.[170]

So apparently the British court has seen fit to render this man free to carry out his hideous plan. Even if he's a complete crackpot, conspiring to commit mass murder renders him a free man? Oh yeah, I forgot, his alleged victims were only expendable, throwaway kids from UK care homes. If this sicko is for real, and evidence that snuff films shared amongst the most whacko of the rich and powerful does exist, depicting the most deplorable crimes imaginable, blood sacrificing children on camera do draw top dollar.[171] So why hasn't mainstream press bothered with this strange and highly disturbing story? And why is this dude not behind bars? The most likely answers are because he really does have links to actual VIPs who are protecting him in order to protect themselves and as a bigtime accomplice, MSM is also shielding the elite from unwanted damaging publicity.

Sadly this atrocious and despicable track record of total abuse against group home children as UK's expendable, throwaway population is far too commonplace in and around London, be it Lambeth, Islington, Richmond or Westminster. Or outside England in Jersey, Wales, Ireland and Scotland, the legally protected abuse is everywhere inside the United pedo-Kingdom and queen’s Commonwealth. And for that matter, inside England over the last couple decades it’s rampantly grown out of control in places like Rochdale, Rotherham, Telford or Bradford as well, where abused underage girls don’t have to be plucked from care homes to be forcibly conscripted into child-raping-murder rings belonging to brutal pedo-pimping gangs (taken up fully in Chapter 25).[172] Be it abuse by non-VIP or VIP rapists alike, it doesn’t much matter who, where, what, how or when, the sad story’s endgame is always the same. The cold hard fact is Britain’s tortuously long, vile history of pedophilia and accompanied state cover-up demonstrates that the world’s epicenter doesn’t give two shits about its own child population, whether trapped inside or outside its abominable pedo-matrix of a Luciferian child care system or not.

And what’s even more sobering, the UK is the ruling elite’s mere beta test for having maintained to this very day such an impenetrably sealed cover-up guaranteeing impunity as the beta test model being presently exported, eventually coming to a neighborhood near you… that is if the Luciferian planetary controllers are allowed to continue their crime spree against humanity unchecked and unstopped. Our only way out of this ungodly nightmare requires citizens of the world to finally rise up from their shackles in solidarity and begin holding these evil, sodomizing planet killers fully accountable. They’ve scorched and destroyed enough of our earth, us and our children to successfully reach the critical point of no return. Now on the brink of total self-destruction, it’s do or die time for the human race. Stand up and be counted as part of the million to one majority committed to doing what’s right and necessary to save and protect both our children and future.

Speaking of NWO sodomizing destroyers, let’s revisit another familiar character in this UK pedo-house of horror, the overly protected, pedophilic Rothschild surrogate in the Tony Blair and Gordon Brown Labor governments – the hamster “felching” Sir Peter Mandelson (see Chapter 21). Peter’s Jewish father worked as advertising manager at the *Jewish Chronicle* and his maternal grandfather had been a Labor cabinet minister.[173] As a young political neophyte, “Mandy” started out a Communist Party member but soon switched over to the CIA/MI6 inspired Socialist International youth fest that morphed into the Labor Party,[174] on his way to becoming another rising star first launched from - where else but of all places - the Lambeth council (1979-82), ascending to the title of architect of the New Labor Party while riding the coattails of the 1997 Tony Blair landslide.[175] Similar to Mandelson, Tony Blair too was inspired by Marxist revolutionary Leon Trotsky.[176] Like fellow Labor leftists Harman, Dromey, Hewitt and the Hodges, Lord Baron Mandelson (lord since 2008) also lobbied for lowering the age of sexual consent, prioritizing his first order of business to press brand new prime minister Blair to make fellow Jewish pedophile Greville Janner a lord peer in 1997, a half dozen years **after** Janner was publicly accused of child sexual abuse in a British high court of law.[177] Infiltrated pedophiles don’t care if voiceless, powerless kids from care homes accuse them of wrecking their lives, after all, once they reach Parliament, their “life insurance” automatically kicks in entitling them to living the remainder of it above the law.

Lest we not forget how they’re able to do this. Because child rapists are often strategically cherry-picked as gatekeeping foxes in the pedo-Kingdom henhouse, Sir Peter Mandelson served as vice chairman of the largest UK child charity, the National Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children (NSPCC)[178] as well as chairman of the British Youth Council (1978-80).[179] With 10 phone listings in Jeffrey Epstein’s pedophile who’s who of a black book,[180] openly gay-closeted pedo Peter the perennial Bilderberger guest, former EU Commissioner and queen-knighted New World Order Zionist was also Tony Blair’s chief fixer for very scandal. Mandelson has been accused of kidnapping children while in Brussels for pedo-consumption by his fellow EU derelicts.[181] And of course it was Blair’s D-notices that fixed it for Mandy to stay a free man despite ordering child pornography online in 2002 during Operation Ore.[182] With all his known perversions, Mandelson fits the ideal blackmail-able mold to run the country behind the scenes as a Rothschild implant,[183] and by 2009, he’d already held a record 35 cabinet committee posts.[184] As the unelected power behind the PM throne of both the Tony Blair and Gordon Brown governments from 1997 to 2010, an opposition Tory party leader astutely commented:

It is quite obvious that Peter Mandelson is the real unelected prime minister pulling the strings from No 10.[185]

Speaking of string-pulling power, Nathaniel Rothschild fondly reflected in a 2012 London courtroom on his 2005 male-bonding sauna experience in Siberia with then EU trade commissioner Peter Mandelson and Russian oligarch Oleg Deripaska as pure pleasure, adamantly denying any conflict of interest backroom business deal ever took place.[186] Cabal central bankster Rothschild insisted that he flew his buddy Mandy in on a Siberian one-day jet set turnaround as purely recreational and was in court in 2012 suing the *Daily Mail* for libelously implicating shady business, misusing Mandelson’s political position to smooth over a big aluminum deal with the very same Russian magnate the US denied granting visas to, branding Oleg a criminal with ties to organized crime.[187] Thankfully Nat’s bromance angle lost in court.[188]

As the earth’s aluminum king, despite being on Washington’s shit list, Nat and Mandy hastily dispatched fellow Lord Gregory Barker to DC to clear the way for Oleg to sell off some of his alum assets in exchange for lobbying/bribing cash to remove all his sanctions, freeing him up to make deals with US Empire like never before.[189] Since aluminum by volume is the most common geoengineering metal in the cabal's global aerosol lethal cocktail spraying,[190] and vast amounts are consumed in the sinister agenda to poison our planet with heavy toxic metals for waging warfare on multiple fronts - weather modification, electrical brainwave conductor for mass mind control and of course slow kill eugenics depopulation,[191] Oleg now stands to regain his status he lost to China in 2015 as the world's number one aluminum producer. Of course since Rothschild and Mandelson are used to living like gods far above any human laws [or sanctions], globalist "lackey" Mandy and his Rothschild master Nathaniel could care less, since they're megalomaniacally in it destroying our planet solely for the pure hell of it and of course for taking in a little globetrotting, sheer bromanctic pleasure.

Yet another one of Blair's perverts caught up in Operation Ore that the prime minister's D-notices didn't quite save in time was his less senior aide and confidante Phillip Lyon who was arrested for both downloading as well as creating pornographic images of children on his work computer at the House of Commons.[192] The up and coming 37-year old's career suddenly took a nosedive when Scotland Yard arrested the Blair advisor on "10 counts of making indecent images of children."[193] In August 2003 the father of two was found guilty downloading almost daily his growing collection of thousands of images of children, some of them toddlers forced to engage in sexual acts of perversion. When officers arrested him, the sicko confessed:

It is like a drug - you try one and you want to try something harder and it has a snowball effect.[194]

For possessing his drug of choice that ruins young children's lives, Phillip Lyon served only five months of a one year prison sentence. One more pedo-connection, Lyon began his career in politics as an Islington council member.[195] Why are so many of these Lambeth-Islington alums ending up hardcore pedophiles?

Not to be outdone a decade later from the same 10 Downing Street sleaze file comes another pedo-friendly prime minister named David Cameron who had a similar rude awakening learning his longtime close friend and senior aide, 62-year old Patrick Rock, up for peerage at the time, was intercepted and arrested for his child porn collection.[196] No surprise that the perverted bureaucrat from European aristocratic stock was once a Margaret Thatcher protégé. The sick irony is that Cameron's Rock was responsible for the conservative government's policy on cleaning up the internet to prevent child pornography and child abuse imagery. Guess he too caught that highly contagious, nasty Downing Street "snowball effect" going around. Another fitting reminder that pedophilia rules every political party and persuasion… and per the old last NWO guru still alive Henry Kissinger and his pithy observation that "power is the ultimate aphrodisiac,"[197] especially when derived from literally getting your rocks off on traumatized, adrenochrome-filled children.

So what's the pedo-enabling war criminal Tony Blair been up to in the dozen years since his prime minister days? First thing the ex-PM did was declare himself Roman Catholic after 30 years' pretense and political expediency as a closeted Catholic and official Anglican in name only.[198] In October 2012 right when the most Jewish Catholic's so-vile sins were shocking the nation, Blair's priest Friar Michael Seed was caught selling papal knighthoods to the highest bidders that paid up to £50,000.[199] The disgraced senior Catholic, often a 10 Downing Street guest, celebrated his 25th ordination ceremony putting on a posh champagne shindig with entertainment provided by men in drag wearing nun costumes prancing around a racy London club. The unpriestly Seed of decadence lives like a king in a Dolphin Square flat, rent-free compliments of one of his wealthy papal knight donors… more evidence illustrating the unholy marriage between politics and the Church as the dual driving pedo-forces behind today's globalized child raping crisis.

At the same time Tony Blair became Catholic, in a move straight out of Lucifer's playbook, immediately following his resignation, President George W. Bush made his partner-in-love-and-war crimes his Middle East "peace" envoy in 2007. Blair then proceeded to utilize all his accumulated war contacts fresh off the spilled blood of dead British soldiers to rack up a record breaking fortune of over £60 billion in blood money since leaving office,[200] fully exploiting his illicit conflict of interest between Tony Blair Associates consultancy firm and his "pro bono" gig in peace diplomacy, greedily signing up all the world's worst dictatorial human rights offenders his war crimes could buy, including Gulf State monarchies as exclusive clients.[201] His shameless cashing in his chips of criminal infamy for gobs of easy money puts even the pay-to-play Clintons in the minor leagues. But then once Charles Lynton aka Miranda the cottaging sleazebag whore, right into his multi-billionaire golden years, always the cottaging sleazebagging whore.

But as hard as it is to think it could get any more diabolical, Gordon Brown as Blair's Labor Party successor from 2007 to 2010 has even more overwhelming incriminating evidence that for decades he's been engaging in satanic ritual sexual abuse of children.[202] Twenty-one years prior to his becoming prime minister, at a private party in 1986 veteran journalist Mike James learned that Gordon Brown was a serial pedophile, per Norman Lamont, the future Chancellor of Exchequer under PM John Major. Mike James continued investigating the Zionist blackmail controlled Gordon Brown, writing during Brown's final year in office:

> *Gordon Brown, the current British prime minister, is a practicing pedophile whose activities are known not only to the British, American and Israeli intelligence services, but also by Rupert Murdoch and his senior editor at the Sunday Times.*[203]

To add insult to injury, in July 2017, Theresa May's farcical IICSA cover-up charade brought both former prime ministers Gordon Brown and Sir John Major in for questioning about what they know (wink, wink) of UK institutional child sex abuse[204]… like known pedophiles and their enablers would ever incriminate themselves by telling the truth for once.

And now onto the star of this chapter's horror show, Margaret Hodge. The Islington pedophilia scandal involves all dozen group homes supervised by the district council leader, longtime Blair cabinet minister and even longer MP Dame Margaret Hodge from Barking since 1994. Among the worst pedophilia rings in southern England is the one that thrived for many years in Hodge's Islington borough, a district just north of the City of London, where the Rothschild controlled central Bank of England is located.[205] At the heart of this scandal is yet another Anglo-Jewish princess - 74-year old Dame Margaret Hodge (nee Oppenheimer). She can be referred to as the Islington abuse ringleader by virtue of the fact that for two decades while serving on the Islington council, she was well aware of the widespread abuse of children in her borough's care homes, yet chose to ignore and go out of her way to cover up her crimes against children and their desperate cries for help. Similar to two aforementioned fellow Jewish female pedophile enablers - 78-year old Dame Esther Rantzen (Chapter 21) and 72-year old Tory minister-MP Edwina Currie (Chapter 22), this aging trio represents the old guard Zionist pedophilia foxes, all assigned critical gatekeeping duties guarding the elite's United-pedo-Kingdom.

But prior to covering Margaret Hodge's enormously significant role in the British pedo-epidemic, according to *13 Illuminati Bloodlines* author Fritz Springmeier, the family she was born into:

> *The Oppenheimers were early members of the Bavarian Illuminati* [with Rothschild money the same Illuminati order that Adam Weishaupt founded in 1776.]… *The Oppenheimers apparently are close to the Rothschilds.* ["Father of the Atomic bomb"] *J. Robert Oppenheimer of the Council on Foreign Relations was exposed as a communist.*[206] *Harry Oppenheimer* [1908-2000]*, an international banker, is chairman of the Jewish De Beers world-wide diamond monopoly, and chairman of the Anglo-American Corp.*[207]

Born a year after Margaret Oppenheimer in 1945, Harry's son Nicholas took over DeBeers in 1998 and is the third richest man in Africa, living off his family's rape and pillage of his African slave labor diamond industry for a reported net worth of $6.6 billion…[208] a drop in the blood bucket to Tony Blair's 60 billion.

Turning to Margaret's Oppenheimer's immediate family background, from her traceable Illuminati bloodline roots, Margaret's multimillionaire father Hans was originally from Stuttgart, Germany, just a two hour drive from his Bavarian bloodline stomping grounds. In the mid-1930s young Hans answered his uncle's call in Africa as an employ of the booming Oppenheimer family mining monopoly.[209] During the final year of World War II, Margaret was born in September 1944 in Cairo, Egypt. But with the State of Israel's 1948 grand opening bloodbath "cleansing" Arabs from Palestine in the first Arab-Israeli War, as Jews living in the Middle East, patriarch Hans with wife and five children in tow headed for safer ground in London.

A half dozen years later at 10-years old, Margaret lost her mother to stomach cancer. With paucity of maternal influence suffering such a major loss at a relative early age, circumstances in young Margaret's life brought out her fierce competitive drive and burning ambition to prove herself to both her highly successful father and the entire world, living up to her prominent Oppenheimer family name. The five Oppenheimer children were raised in opulence not only from the family's booming African mining interests but once in England, daddy Oppenheimer founded Stemcor, the world's largest privately owned steel-trading corporation and Britain's six largest company overall.[210] Her only brother Ralph took over the family business three years before Hans' death in 1985 until three years prior to his own passing in 2016 when Stemcor for the first time had a non-Oppenheimer chief executive though Margaret's family ensured they still retain controlling interest. Growing up in one of the world's wealthiest, most powerful families on earth, silver-spooned Margaret always attended the finest schools, ultimately graduating from the London School of Economics, the elitist university founded in 1895 by the Fabian Society.[211]

While still in her mid-20s not long out of college, Margaret Eve Oppenheimer married Andrew Watson in 1968 but divorced him a decade later after having a son and daughter by her first marriage. 1978 proved to be one busy year for Margaret, divorcing one husband and marrying another in a turnstile turnaround the same year Queen Elizabeth gifted the Jewish rising star not even 34 yet with her first royal honor, the most Excellent Order of the British Empire (MBE).[212] Her Labor seat on the Islington council and famous Jewish surname must have enhanced her worthiness as a royal chosen one freshly paired with her up and coming new husband Henry Hodge, a future royal knight and high court judge. Henry and Margaret had first met when she was Mrs. Watson back in 1973 as fellow Labor Party councillors on the Islington council. But her rapid ascendancy had her elected as council leader by 1982. Meanwhile, a mere year after joining Henry on the Islington council, in 1974 Henry Hodge took a new job as chairman of the infamous National Council for Civil Liberties (the civil rights lobby now known as Liberty) and within a year it was Henry who made the NCCL an affiliate partner with the notorious Paedophile Information Exchange (PIE) in 1975.[213] In 1977 the NCCL invited convicted pedophile PIE leader Tom O'Carroll as a platform speaker at its spring conference.[214]

So in 1978 when Hodge and Oppenheimer were formalizing their marital partnership, Henry already had forged a cozy working partnership with UK's publicly known pedophile organization lobbying to abolish all age of consent so British adults could legally enjoy having sex with children of all ages. Do you really think it was purely by accident that just four years later under Margaret Oppenheimer-Hodge's Islington council leadership that Britain's biggest VIP pedophile ring became fully and safely operational, flourishing over the next 10 years all the while guarded feverishly by the Illuminati bloodline hawk and pedo-gatekeeper-in-charge - Oppenheimer-Hodge?

And do you think it mere coincidence that in 1976, the same year Margaret's future hubby turned his NCCL chairmanship over to his fellow Labor Party, PIE-loving faithful Jack Dromey (NCCL chairman 1976-1983), an official NCCL report signed by the organization's general secretary Patricia Hewitt (1974-1983) stated:

Childhood sexual experiences, willingly engaged in, with an adult result in no identifiable damage.[215]

And more coincidence that pedo-enabler Prime Minister Tony Blair would later make his Islington next door neighbor Margaret Oppenheimer-Hodge his minister of children and Patricia Hewitt his health secretary and Jack Dromey's wife Harriet Harman former NCCL legal officer New Labor's deputy leader?

Oppenheimer husband Henry Hodge left NCCL just in time to escape public scrutiny for making PIE its sleazy bedfellow in 1975 and was only the third non-barrister elevated to high court judge, then knighted by the queen in 2004 before dying in 2009.[216] But a few years after Hodge's death, it was Harman, Dromey and Hewitt, all still active Labor Party leaders, who were left answering for their shameful PIE affiliated past when records revealed that they, along with Henry Hodge, publicly advocated for laxer child pornography laws, legalized incest and lowering the age of consent to ten.[217] As longtime fellow Labor Party MPs each sharing an ultra-cozy pedophilia past together, Harriet Harman once revealed that Dame Margaret Hodge is her best friend in Parliament.[218] The pedo-wheel just keeps spinning round and round with the same incestual cast of high profile pedo-lovers as the usual suspects.

It's also more than coincidental that until 1978, Margaret Hodge served alongside fellow counsellor Jack Straw for his last five of seven years on the same Islington council together.[219] As yet another Jewish Labor politician possessing a pedophilia enabling record, before Straw man was Blair's foreign "war crime" minister (2001-06), he was home secretary (1997-2001). While infiltrated pedophiles were still rampantly abusing kids in his old home district Islington and all around Britain, Straw was in charge of UK law enforcement and CPS, responsible for shutting down so many police investigations into VIP pedo-crimes and pedo-cases. Then it was Jack Straw as Justice Secretary in 2009 who prohibited children in UK care homes from speaking out when abused.[220] Straw also gagged parents from being able to talk to the press about family court injustices as UK's mainline pedo-pipeline feeder, eerily similar to America's disastrous child welfare system.[221] That's because a global Anglo-American-Zionist pedophile elite controls and enslaves both countries as well as Israel, Europe, Canada, Australia, New Zealand and virtually the entire globe. But the old Rothschild bloodline system is crumbling and losing its grip on humanity.

Why would Great Britain as a nation willfully tear apart its families, funneling so many of its children into its residential care system that renders them six times more likely to be assessed for abuse while living in government care homes than children in the general population?[222]… **unless** the nation already has a longtime historical policy allowing its most powerful elite wealthy class - including politicians and entertainers - to systematically rape its most vulnerable population - the throwaway kids from residential care homes on such an immense industrial scale.[223]

Tony Blair, Jack Straw, Margaret Hodge, Henry Hodge, Paul Boateng, Peter Mandelson, Greville Janner, Harriet Harman, Jack Dromey and Patricia Hewitt are but a handful sampling of 10 prominent pedophilia protectors who've been atop Britain's Labor Party. The British VIP pedophilia incest network extends literally into the personal lives of Margaret Oppenheimer and Jack Straw's spouses from their first marriages, both ending up as husband and wife on their next marital go-round. What are the odds of that? It's almost as if they all come from the same Jewish Illuminati bloodlines… perhaps that's because they actually do.[224]

Jack Straw's brother was found guilty of committing indecent assault on a 16-year old girl. Jack Straw's son William was caught dealing drugs but given only a caution due to his Home Secretary father.[225] What is it with all these pedo-loving Labor politicians' sons? Aside from Jack Straw's, Patricia Hewitt's was arrested and fined £350 for possession of cocaine[226] and Tony Blair's was arrested for being "drunk and incapable,"[227] of course none serving any jail time. A given perk that comes with the turf is the elite's family privilege to live like gods above manmade laws as protected members of an inner club in charge of the pedo-crime cabal network.

Of course from last chapter we learned the Conservative Party is just as bad. The Thatcher regime was crawling with Zionist pedophiles as well. VIP sodomizers from all political parties in virtually all Western nations hungrily devour and spit out the used and abused remains of victimized children everywhere on earth. That's why at this point we've reached such an acute crisis stage, because abuse has gone totally unchecked for so very long.

For more than a century Britain's ruling elite has systematically separated its male youth at a very early age from their families, for multiple generations customarily sending them to the same private upper-class boarding schools where both homosexuality and pedophilia have flourished in isolated infested entrenchment.[228] This age old practice in the UK as well as Europe and, to some extent North America, has long been a familial, cultural norm for boys to be victimized by teachers, headmasters or older students,[229] and in turn all too often become perpetrators themselves, resulting in a cultivation of inbred pedophilia as a historical, traditional way of life amongst the elite, a young man's twisted, not-so-secret rite of passage anymore in recent years with all the VIP pedo-scandals… another open secret exposed.

The uppermost stratosphere of royal and aristocratic family bloodlines have been vetting, grooming and controlling their men this way for centuries. In the US an example would be accepting an invitation to join the exclusive secret society Skull and Bones at Yale University where degrading sexual ritual is embedded in the traditional all male initiation ceremony as a transitional steppingstone of what’s likely to come.[230] They share a tradition of “elite deviance,” a sense of built-in superiority that grants them the protected privilege to live above the law. Through sexual blackmail, pedophilia has been increasingly utilized by the pathological, psychopathic control system to groom, mold and manipulate “powerful” puppet males into assuming lofty prominent positions as compromised and controlled national leaders who do the filthy bidding of their pedophilic masters.[231]

Secret occult knowledge and pedophilic ritual often play a central grooming role in conditioning “chosen” by birthright males into accepting and engaging in pedophilia through the social conditioning process in both elite families and elite educational institutions.[232] In the UK the most powerful have been permitted methodically to indulge and perversely nurture their most demented, inbred pathology, embracing a vampiric, tribal elitism as part of an inner club at the top of the predator food chain. Created by this diabolically decadent and depraved system, British homosexual VIP pedophiles regularly prey on the weakest and most defenseless humans, systemically kidnapped and trapped in the morally bankrupt, overloaded, thoroughly broken UK Care System,[233] thus allowing unchecked pedophilia at the earth’s epicenter to spread like a cancer to morph into the modern scourge of humanity currently plaguing our entire planet. This historical macro-analysis transcends the pitfalls of the micro-ephemeral approach to examining the phenomenon of rising pedophilia as a mere sociological outgrowth of the prevailing societal trends of the times.

In a July 2015 article, the *Daily Mail* explains how throughout the 1970s and 1980s, homosexuals masquerading as pedophiles were fiercely protected and how any staff in the London borough councils, the social services and group homes that attempted to protect abused children by exposing the pedophiles were punitively dealt with in very harsh terms:

> *Staff who raised concerns were accused of racism and homophobia, and often hounded out of their jobs. Some… received death threats. Almost 30 council employees accused of child abuse crimes were allowed to take early retirement (on generous pensions) instead of being subjected to formal investigations or referred to the police.*[234]

According to a *Daily Mail* article just a year prior in 2014, the rationale given to explain the widespread abuse in Islington was that child care home operators and line staff who were the alleged perpetrators were:

> *… convincing Labour-run Islington's political elite that anyone who attempted to blow the whistle on their crimes was motivated by homophobia.*[235]

But this is merely surface level, superficial explanation that overlooks the far deeper, darker reality that a vast pedophilia sexual blackmail network in Britain had long been operating for at least two decades prior to the 1970s, orchestrated primarily by British intelligence with full approval from countless government VIP pedophiles consisting of prime ministers, cabinet members and both the House of Lords and Commons extending down to countless local councils throughout the UK.[236] It was never a matter of low level care home operators "convincing" their council politician bosses like Oppenheimer and Straw that in the sexually liberated 70s and 80s, it was hip for homosexual pedophiles to "liberate" their youth residing in Britain's care homes, and if you dare object, you were labeled "a homophobe." Though it may have been true, it's a convenient lame excuse to try and pass off the pedo-scandal in the 1980s as a mere sign of the "crazy" times - when the liberal left allowed itself to “momentarily” be blind-sighted, co-opted and hoodwinked by a few wacky hardcore PIE perverts.

Both the Labor and Tory governments misused taxpayers’ money to help finance PIE between 1977 and 1980,[237] Prime Minister Edward Heath attended PIE meetings[238] and MI6 Chief Peter Hayman was a card carrying member[239] as well as the aforementioned Labor notables aligned and fully supporting pedo-rights. These facts relegate this notion of UK pedophilia as a passing fad or mere byproduct of the wild 70s and 80s sexual liberation movement as preposterous and false. Yet this heavily promoted, historical revisionist argument heavily promulgated by pedo-apologists is intended to eliminate culpability and obscure the true reality that a highly organized, insulated, massive pedophilia network was covertly expanding and becoming further entrenched throughout the UK and beyond. And it never left.

It was just four years earlier that yet another piece in the *Daily Mail* completely refutes its own above quote. The ruling elite had long been building UK’s national child abuse trafficking network, preying on care home kids since the straight-laced, “unhip” 1950s. The 2010 *Daily Mail* article expounds on the unsavory affairs of such child raping luminaries as Labor Party leader, Communist spy, MP traitor Lord Tom Driberg, his pal longtime Conservative Party minister, Bilderberger Lord Bob Boothby and their Jewish mafia, pimping killer pals the Kray twins,[240] joined in the early 1960s by none other than the undercover intel operative himself Sir Jimmy Savile. Clearly a highly organized pedophilia network in Britain was operating long before the so called sexually liberated 1970s and 1980s. Cold hard fact - the UK pedophilic elite has been indulging nonstop in systemically destroying expendable British children’s lives with total impunity for over six decades.

Back to this chapter's headliner, with her MBE secured way back in 1978, one of Britain's major pedo-players for the last four decades is Margaret Oppenheimer-Hodge, again honored by the queen in 2004 as Lady Hodge when her high court judge hubby Henry was knighted while she was Minister of Children under Blair's newly created cabinet position.[241] Her royal Dame Commander trophy came in 2015. The children's ministry post served as ideal cover for an Oppenheimer to oversee the entire British nation's covert pedophilia operations. Also worth noting is that in 1998 and 1999, busy MP Margaret served in her spare time as chair of the infamous Fabian Society that for over a century as an elitist front for communism has been subversively pushing for one world totalitarian government. Sweet lady heading a sweet society.

Thee Fabians have openly supported eugenics and forced sterilization in their scientifically planned utopian society run by the superior "elite," certainly not by "lowly" working stiffs from a Marxist labor class.[242] Until recently the Fabian logo was literally a wolf in sheep's clothing.[243] Joining her as fellow Fabian Society members are two of her prominent Islington VIP Labor Party neighbors - Tony Blair and Jack Straw, and, as of 2001, just four years into Blair's decade long premiership, the elite Fabian Society boasted 200 MPs in the House of Commons.[244] War criminal Tony Blair, both a Fabian and Malta Knight,[245] loyal to both Zionism and Rome, both major contributors to the pedo-epidemic, if anything suggests Blair's deeper commitment to globalization of the international pedophilia trade. Right after his 2007 resignation as prime minister, the Malta Knight officially declared himself a Roman Catholic.

The common threaded nexus of pedo-lineage runs throughout virtually all elitist secret societies as well as all major political parties. Blair and Hodge's very own Labor Party was in fact founded by Fabians in the early 20th century and the pedo-infil-traitors rose to power in the Zionist controlled British government,[246] reaching its zenith perhaps during Tony Blair's war crime pedo-regime when virtually his entire cabinet were card carrying Fabian members.[247]

Similar (if not one and the same) with the Illuminati, Fabians believe that religion and family should be usurped and replaced by the expanding power of the centralized state through that familiar operative word "collectivism," whereby individuals' worth is derived and defined solely and strictly by their collective contribution to the group that is the supreme state. While the collectivist goal remains much the same as Marxism, rather than gain power and control through a proletariat working class rising up to wage revolutionary, violent revolt against the elite class, Fabians as the bourgeoisie prefer subversively, sneakily seizing control through slithering infiltration, hence their iconic, deceitfully cunning "wolf in sheep's clothing" methodology pretty much says it all.[248]

Far beyond conjecture the British historical record demonstrates a pattern of prime ministers seeking to appoint fellow party politicians as proven experienced protectors of the ruling elite's international child sex abuse trafficking cabal. The key point is just as Thatcher's Tory government was stacked with flaming pedophiles and enablers galore throughout the 1980s, so was Blair's turn during his turn of the century decade. And with nothing changing under yet another pro-Zionist prime minister currently in office, already having declared herself a Jew,[249] Theresa May is carrying out her puppet duty holding a shameless sham of an Independent Inquiry for Child Sexual Abuse (IICSA), designed from the outset to protect status quo by keeping VIP pedophiles unnamed and out of both the headlines and prisons.[250] And so far, unfortunately her "floundering-on-purpose" IICSA debacle has succeeded…

never a living MP charged much less ever jailed for pedophilia.

Recall from last chapter that Theresa May is yet another self-professed Zionist with neighborly ties to Mossad agent Uri Geller. May has much to hide as prime minister in both protecting the pedophilia network at the world epicenter as well as her own family’s paternal links that minimally suggest a nefarious past by association with the mass murdering Doctor John Bodkin Adams, a homosexual very likely protected by his lover Lord Roland Gwynne, former Eastbourne mayor in Sussex and knighted by the queen during his lover’s infamous trial in 1957.[251] Additionally like Sir Cliff Richard, May’s father was born in India to a British soldier, a favorite common breeding ground for UK military intelligence.[252]

For six years in the 1950s chronologically bisected by Theresa’s birth in 1956, May’s father Hubert Brasier was the Anglican-Catholic chaplain of Eastbourne Hospital in Sussex where the general practitioner Dr. Adams worked, suspected of killing over 165 of his elderly patients, over 130 mostly widows leaving a sizeable inheritance for their killer shortly prior drug overdoses administered by Adams.[253] Though nurses had complained about Dr. Adams for months, similar to Jimmy Savile, the hospital management ignored their accusations. However, eventually the notorious doctor was prosecuted on a murder charge of just one of his patients. But in a blatant cover-up engineered by well-connected Sir Lord Gwynne who called upon his ex-attorney general friend to run interference, a year after Theresa’s birth Dr. Adams was acquitted of murder and only found guilty of three minor offenses that led briefly to his revoked medical license before resuming his medical practice as if murdering over 160 people meant nothing…[254] echoes of yet more sinister protection from the top of the food chain.

Though there appears no direct criminal evidence connecting May's father as an accomplice sharing the same workplace crime scene, yet another strange anomaly again by association is the fact that Rev. Brasier worked within the same small Chichester Diocese in Sussex that produced an inordinate number of pedophile priests caught running a longstanding Eastbourne pedo-ring.[255] It was so blatant that in March 2018 even May's IICSA fiasco was pressured to look into the chronic abuse.

By some stroke of luck, just in time May's father was promoted and reassigned elsewhere as 1st Vicar of Enstone in the Oxford Diocese, almost as if he (like Dr. Adams) was protected by the elite's invisible hand.[256] Then when Theresa had just turned 25, her father's good luck ran out as he was mysteriously killed in a car accident, a common pattern amongst future leaders groomed by their handlers, making loss of a parent while still young easier to control their puppet. As one who should know, FDR once admitted, presidents (and prime ministers) are chosen, never elected.[257] Only adding suspicion to indicate that the current PM clearly does not want information about her family history available to the public, as soon as she became prime minister in 2016, all references regarding her father were suddenly removed from the internet.[258] But fortunately plenty was already captured prior to her overt censorship.

For her Illuminati lineage, the true essence of one Dame Margaret Oppenheimer-Hodge emerges while she presided over the Islington council between 1982 and 1992, the direct overseer in charge of her district's social services for children. During her decade long leadership, all dozen Islington group homes she governed became overrun by infiltrating pedophiles on staff throughout her "care" homes, her council run schools, her social services offices, her own Islington council that as foxes guarding the pedo-henhouse were also at liberty to farm out their susceptible kids to VIPs for yet more systematic abuse.[259] Under her watch a major pedophile ring was booming between her Islington and the queen’s Commonwealth’s Channel Islands of Jersey and Guernsey branching out further across the Isles to Northern Ireland’s Kincora, North Wales Bryn Estyn as well as closer to home in and around London, like Haringey to the north and Lambeth to the south, but also nearby Richmond, Birmingham to Northern England’s Savile country Leeds and Scarborough. Additionally, the tentacles of the London based pedophilia network reach abroad to continental cities in Europe such as Amsterdam, Brussels, Copenhagen, Vienna and Portugal’s Casa Pia. All will be uncovered in detail in later chapters.

Another pedophilic link between the United Kingdom and Amsterdam was exposed over three and a half decades ago by the *Daily Star* back in August 1983. Norman K. Walker misappropriated government funds through his bogus children’s foundation owning two British care homes for handicapped children located in Suffolk and Norfolk.[260] Social services from those two counties did not place children at those homes but districts like Lambeth, Islington and other London boroughs did. With public social services funding, Walker financed a string of pedophilia rent boy bars and sex businesses in Amsterdam, among them a notorious waterhole called Why Not that included upstairs room accommodations for pedos. Seedy establishments like Walker’s in Holland were/are part of the international child trafficking network, with British rent boys recruited to cater to sex tourism pedophiles and child pornographers that produce and distribute murderous snuff films.[261]

Warwick Spinks, the most wanted British pedophile criminal and international fugitive that for decades infamously engaged in sexually and commercially exploiting underage boys in his sex slave business. In November 2012, Spinks who at one time managed the Why Not bar, was finally apprehended in Prague after 15 years on the run.[262] More on this sleaziest violent kingpin in the next chapter on the Elm Guest House-Westminster connection. One of the reasons speculated that this so called “pied piper of pedophiles” successfully evaded police for so long and was given such light sentences in the past was his likely connections to VIP pedophile clients. Chapter 24 fully covers Spinks’ London to continental Europe pedo-network that includes his Dutch snuff film production as well as moving victims from both Britain and Eastern Europe primarily to Amsterdam, but also to Prague, Brussels, Munich and Berlin.

In 1983 while Dame Margaret recruited pedophiles posing as gay men to do damage to children in her dozen care homes, horrific tragedies struck Islington group home children year in and year out under her leadership. In September 1983 a 13-year old boy was abducted and brought to France by his group home childcare worker where he allegedly sexually abused the victim for nearly two months before his rescue.[263] In 1985 a far more tragic fate befell 14-year old Jason Swift who was kidnapped, sexually passed around a notorious pedophile ring, repeatedly raped, tortured and savagely killed by the Sidney Cooke gang. These sickos murdered up to 17 boys while procuring and trafficking victims to the Elm Guest House for the likes of Sir Jimmy Savile, Home Secretary Sir Leon Brittan and MP Sir Cyril Smith among other “distinguished” VIP guests both domestic and foreign.[264] A year later in 1986 13-year old Tony McGrane was bludgeoned to death with multiple stab wounds by another teenager.[265] Both Jason and Tony were residents at one of the Islington care homes Margaret presided over - Conewood Street Assessment Centre.[266]

When Margaret Hodge was selected by Blair to be Britain’s first minister of children, a stampede of social workers, whistleblowers and victims stepped forward in loud protest to set the record straight. In her defense, Hodge claimed:

> *All that happened when we didn't really understand child abuse in the way that we understand it now. This was the early 90s...*[267]

Wrong! Years prior to her Islington debacle pedophilia scandals splashed across UK's headlines and TV news broadcasts – for starters the 1984 Dickens' accusations from the infamous "lost" dossier maintaining a Westminster VIP pedophile ring at the heart of the British government.[268] Dickens even went so far as to expose child abuse in Islington while Hodge was council leader.[269] Then there were numerous earlier scandals reported at care homes in places like Newcastle's Tyneside children's home in 1976,[270] Northern Ireland's Kincora in 1980[271] and Piccadilly Circus' Leeways children's home in 1985,[272] plus many high profile cases of pedophiles working with children as priests, teachers and scoutmasters were also being widely reported long before the 1990s. Hodge again pretended pedophiles preying on UK's most vulnerable population was a completely unknown, new phenomenon… total bullshit to cover her own ass. But in her feeble, lame self-defense, she uttered these words:

> *This was the early 90s… it was only beginning to emerge that paedophiles were working with children, in children's homes and elsewhere, and so I think my great regret there was believing without question the advice that I was given by the social services managers.*[273]

Typically, weak leaders never fail to pass the buck, always blaming subordinates for feeding them erroneous information and advice. Again, another lie as senior social workers alerted her two and a half years prior to the story finally breaking in the press in early October 1992,[274] the year she slipped out the council backdoor in a vain attempt to avoid the heat. The fact remains that by early 1990, social worker university lecturer Dr. Liz Davies and her social services manager David Cofie reported to Margaret Hodge an infiltrated pedophile ring was rampantly operating throughout all her Islington care homes but their warnings went unheeded by arrogant Hodge, condescendingly calling their warnings “hysterical” and “obsessional.”[275]

Overwhelmed by the ever-widening scope of abuse in their outlying community, upon learning it was systemic throughout the district involving child pornography and trafficking, when David Cofie urgently requested increased staff and funding to adequately meet the demand of investigating the major scandal brewing, Hodge severely chastised him, insisting a sound manager should be resourceful enough to work within a budget in the face of social services cutbacks.[276] David Cofie has in effect said she ruined his career. Bent on burying evidence, Hodge actively squelched proven widespread abuse that Liz and David had discovered and painstakingly presented to her.

Dazed and distraught 12 to 15-year old children kept showing up at Liz and David’s social services office in droves, having clearly been abused the night before, sometimes perpetrated by group home staff, sometimes by Islington council staff, and sometimes abused after being trafficked to wealthy private mansions around London.[277] Links that Islington kids were being transported to Elm Guest House and Dolphin Square parties were found. Britain’s director of education at the National Institute of Social Work, PIE founder, sadistic child rapist

and pedo-pipeline VIP pimp Peter Righton is known to have picked up children at group homes in Islington.[278]

Recall that big wheel procurer Righton himself was arrested in 1992 for attempting to smuggle in as well as possess child pornography but like Savile for years the pipeline pimp was permitted to freely operate as a key protected player within the Westminster VIP network.[279] Considered the foremost expert on group home care of Britain’s near

100,000 children in the UK Care System (same number of UK kids slipping into poverty in the last year alone[280] and same number of 14-year olds in UK harming themselves, including one in four girls[281] – talk about a broken system and nation), like Savile, Righton freely roamed the Isles with access to hundreds of residential care homes and special schools, brazenly boasting:

Every Islington care home manager knows I like boys from 12 *[282]*[on up].

Just like the Hollywood and Savile pedophilia scandals, founding PIE member Peter Righton was yet another "open secret" where his guilt was sworn to "open" secrecy amongst a select insider group in order to protect the larger national and global pedo-network. After his arrest for importing child pornography and his home raided in 1992, he was simply given a £900 fine and never served jail time, in spite of tons of evidence he was a serial predator and major pimping trafficking ringleader for the VIP establishment.[283] In addition to pornographic images of children found at his residence, a prolific amount of letters, documents and diary entries exposing Righton's exchange of child sex slaves with fellow criminal collaborators in other locations in Europe like the Mediterranean islands of Gozo and Malta, a known sex trafficking haven.[284]

In 1993 Department of Health Minister Virginia Bottomley received a report from Hereford and Worcester social services outing the alarming state of betrayal from UK's Care System sworn to protect children, singling out mastermind Righton as the nation's prime pedo-networker with full access to Britain's children's homes and schools.[285] But Bottomley ignored the report and though the police investigation continued into 1994 as more incriminating evidence was amassed, the probe was suddenly, prematurely shut down. In charge of all UK police investigations, Tory Home Secretary (1993-97) Michael

Howard likely ordered the probe closed in order to protect Britain's VIPs and involvement in the international child trafficking network.[286]

Right after his initial arrest, Peter Righton and his 40-year lover Richard Alston were granted safe refuge by Lord John Henniker to live comfortably at his sprawling country estate in Suffolk for the next four years.[287] But Lord Henniker's estate Thornham Magna was also being used by Islington and other London borough social services as a designated children's activities center for day trips and holidays.[288] It must have also been a pedo-paradise for Righton, Alston and fellow pedophile friend Charles Napier. The Suffolk chief constable even went so far as to warn Henniker he had two pedophiles with national connections residing at his estate surrounded by kids in UK care. Lord Henniker, a longtime diplomat and director general of the British Council from 1968 to 1972, maintained close ties with the queen's hubby Prince Philip who is the godfather to Lord Henniker's firstborn son, his heir and current 9th Lord Henniker.[289] The current lord's son, age 10-13 at the time Righton lived there, committed suicide at 21, leaving speculation that he was a victim.

Protected by the top of the predator food chain, Peter Righton appeared immune from accountability and granted unrestricted access to children right up until his death in 2007 at the age of 81. The full extent of his pivotal role as a major cog in the UK pedo-wheel has been carefully concealed to shield his pedo elite masters he faithfully served from further scrutiny and justice… another illustration of how pedophilia overlords close rank to protect their own criminal self-interest.

Despite being Righton's longtime partner-in-crime and brother to notable diplomat Robert Alston, especially without his deceased lover's impunity, former teacher and headmaster Richard Alston wasn't deemed high enough on the pedo-pecking order to be completely immune from prosecution. In 2015, the 70-year old PIE member was convicted of repeatedly sexually molesting an 11-year old boy in the 1970s, receiving 21 months in prison.[290] The Alston brothers and Peter Righton all attended Ardingly College,[291] which has its own Freemasonry lodge.[292]

Another serial pedophile who often joined Righton and Alston in incidents abusing boys is British Council teacher and PIE treasurer Charles Napier, half-brother to longtime Tory MP John Whittingdale.[293] Napier bragged about using diplomatic privileges to smuggle child pornography into the UK from a British Council school in Cairo. As Napier’s friend and British Council chief, Lord Henniker allowed Napier to work with children despite an earlier pedo-conviction that banned him from teaching in UK.[294] In December 2014 the 67-year old Napier was sentenced to 13 years for committing hundreds of sexual assaults on rent boys and schoolboys over a span of many decades. As a PIE officer within an organization publicly advocating sex with children of all ages, Napier knows much more than he has let on regarding the crimes of other PIE members who happened to be VIP establishment in politics, the church and law enforcement. As alluded to earlier, one of those VIPs was MI6 chief and diplomat Peter Hayman married to Charles Napier’s cousin. Released files prove that not only was Sir Peter Hayman a PIE member, he carried on lengthy correspondence with other sickos indicating that he shared a deranged obsession for sexual torture and murder of children.[295]

To keep a lid on the international implications, Zionist Home Office puppet Michael Howard and Health Minister Virginia Bottomley were no doubt ordered to pass the word down to cease and desist two simultaneous probes by West Mercia and Metro police looking into VIP pimp Righton, the nationally recognized “expert” on child residential care. And it was Tory leader Howard who awarded Virginia Bottomley her peerage in the House of Lords in 2005.[296]

At just 12-years old Virginia (née Garnett) met her then 16-year old future husband, was impregnated by 18 and married by 19 to Sir Peter Bottomley (knighted in 2010), a Thatcher minister-MP since 1974 to present.[297] Peter Bottomley was a member of the Conservative Monday Club linked to pedophile trips to Amsterdam as well as Elm Guest House.[298] Peter’s brother Henry was a member on Hodge’s pedo-enabling Islington council from 1986 to 1990.[299] Sir Peter’s so touchy about any pedophilic affiliation, he has threatened to sue any publication linking him to “untrue” child abuse.[300] But more on him and the notorious Monday Club in the next chapter.

As a related aside, Baroness Virginia Bottomley’s cousin Jeremy Hunt seemingly owes his political career to her nepotism, following her same career footsteps as South West Surrey MP then Cameron’s Tory health minister,[301] quoted worldwide reacting to the Savile bombshell, declaring Savile’s actions have “shaken our country to the core.”[302] Profusely apologizing to Savile victims, Hunt indignantly issued the following stern warning:

If there is evidence that people have criminally neglected claims at the time, behaved inappropriately… in a way that could make them subject to disciplinary procedures, that should happen and we will urge all NHS organisations to look carefully at anyone mentioned in these reports, and of course the police will look at the evidence against any individuals.[303]

We're still waiting Jeremy… Meanwhile, while his cousin was health secretary in 1993 learning of Peter Righton's near four decade long history of horrific child abuse, international trafficking and Virginia's subsequent part in halting an ongoing police investigation, Hunt's tough talk extended to the "Savile greenlight" health ministers' Edwina Currie and Kenneth Clarke was conspicuously absent applied to his own cousin's obstruction of justice shutting down a police inquiry and allowing a known serial abuser and VIP pimp to continue committing crimes.

Speaking of Sir Jimmy, as an intelligence operative and another national VIP pimp, his name comes up in virtually every United pedo-Kingdom scandal, implicated in the Islington debauchery as well. One abused girl said that a fleet of procuring "Jimmy Savile taxis" would show up regularly at her group home to whisk away children for waiting VIP predators.[304] Victims maintain that they were not only trafficked around London but other locations inside the UK as well, and even abroad, indicating yet more evidence of a well-organized international pedophilia network. Another child victim recalls being driven around by abuser Savile in a taxi.[305]

According to the *Express*, another noteworthy Islington resident "playing a vital role in Britain's biggest child sex ring" was convicted pedophile, another active PIE member, a clockmaker and antique shop owner Keith Harding who, like Cyril Smith, was a Savile featured fellow pedo-guest on a Jim'll Fix It's Christmas show.[306] Harding was known to run with such infamous VIP pedo-politicians as Sir Leon, Sir Cyril and Sir Jeremy Thorpe.

Two and a half years after personally informing Dame Margaret Hodge about the out-of-control abuse, turning to the press in October 1992, whistleblowing duo Liz Davies and David Cofie ultimately found a receptive reporters in Eileen Fairweather and Stewart Payne from the *Evening*

Standard whose article publicly exposed the pervasive child sex abuse raging throughout the Islington borough and beyond. Council leader Hodge's response this time turned even more aggressive, insulting and libelous, accusing the highly respected, award winning journalists of "a sensationalist piece of gutter journalism."[307] Hodge was later forced to apologize once she could no longer pretend that she didn't permit a humongous murderous pedophile ring to not only freely operate but flourish like never before throughout her ten year reign of child terror atop the Islington council.

In 2008 during the height of the police investigation on Jersey Island's Haut de la Garenne, veteran journalist Eileen Fairweather was dispatched to meet secretly with Detective Constable Peter Cook who told her he had uncovered major links between the pervasive abuse at Jersey and Islington.[308] Pedophile social workers from Jersey ended up working at the Islington social services offices and made unofficial trips trafficking children from both Islington group homes and Channel Island group homes where they were further abused by establishment VIPs. Keep in mind that Jimmy Savile as Britain's main VIP procurer also is linked extensively to both Islington and Jersey child abuse rings. Cook said his superior officers on Jersey prohibited him from reporting his findings directly to London police abuse specialists as part of the larger cover-up, pathetically forced to use Eileen as his go-between. The major VIP pedophile ring operating between Channel Islands Jersey and Guernsey and Islington-North London involving prominent politicians in both Jersey and London also included famous diplomat (likely Peter Hayman), prominent clerics (among them Prince Charles bud Anglican bishop Peter Ball), a social services chief (allegedly Richmond's Louis Minster) and senior police officers.

As an illustration of how the pedophilia-system rewards its own foxes guarding the henhouse, the Islington head of the police Child Protection Team at the height of the scandal in the 1990s - Sue Akers, refused to meet or talk to reporter Eileen Fairweather, despite Eileen begging her to look into a brothel after a 13-year old victim (and relative of Baby P discussed shortly) had reported he recruited dozens of other victims for three pimps.[309] His evidence was suppressed and Sue Akers went on to be promoted as the deputy assistant commander responsible for all of the child abuse investigations for Britain's largest police force Metro. You can easily see why VIPs never get arrested or go to trial and that police probes always lead nowhere.

While investigating abuse at the dozen Islington group homes and special schools in the early 1990s, honest lower level detectives had informed Eileen Fairweather that children's home operators and employees served as "networkers" working the pedophile supply line with child pornographers and hooking up VIPs. Years later while in Jersey conferring with Peter Cook, Eileen was startled by the number of eerie similarities between the two abuse operations, the "recreational outings" often at sea where victims were isolated and easily abused while trafficked considerable distances to awaiting VIP customers and child pornographers in other cities for further abuse.[310] Also identical is the pattern of dismissing and smearing whistleblowers and victims coming forth to report the crimes and then the repeated crime of "misplaced" missing records, all standard earmarks of major cover-up at the highest levels. The cumulative evidence clearly points to sophisticated abuse rings consisting of pedophile operatives running Britain's child trafficking network, from the likes of Jimmy Savile, his MI5, the Kray brothers, Sidney Cooke, Peter Righton and Colin Peters among numerous others as primary child procurers for VIP politicians like Heath, Thatcher, Brown, Blair and Hodge as either pedophiles themselves or pedophile-protecting overlords.

In addition to whistleblowing senior social workers and newspaper journalists sounding the Islington alarm that Margaret Hodge continued only to scoff at, yet another scandal tipoff occurred in 1991 when boarding school sports instructor Roy Caterer was arrested, convicted and sentenced to seven and a half years in prison for sexually abusing seven boys and two girls.[311] Though this case garnered brief local headlines treating it as an isolated anomaly, the coverage either concealed or completely overlooked its linkage to the much wider pedophilia operation that had been thriving in Islington since the 1970s when the likes of Margaret Oppenheimer, Henry Hodge and Jack Straw were leading council members.

A couple of high profile child murder cases in adjacent Haringey in 2000 and 2007 highlight a link to the Islington pedophile ring. Eight year old Victoria Climbié from Ivory Coast was sent by her parents hopeful for a better life for their daughter to live in North London with her aunt and her boyfriend who tortured and murdered the little girl in 2000, bringing much needed scrutiny and pressure on the negligent borough's social services to become more responsive in placing at risk children on the services register preventing severe abuse and death.[312] But rather than rectify glaring deficits that caused the young girl's murder, seven years later Haringey's reputation failed to improve as the same serious problems of incompetence and poor management still plagued its social services department, setting the stage for the next tragedy.

The same extreme dysfunction and endangerment caused the death of a blue eyed blonde haired toddler known only as Baby P at the sadistic hands of the mother's husband and his friend in 2007. The three relentlessly injured the child, ripping his fingernails out, breaking his ribs, soon his back, paralyzing him from the waist down.[313] Fifty injuries despite sixty social worker visits later, the mother persistently lied to incompetent, negligent social workers about his nonstop injuries blindly accepted without question or suspicion. A week prior to his death social services legal department ruled that there remained insufficient grounds to remove the child from his mother and four days before he died a welfare officer was the last outsider to see the 17 month old still alive. No one paid attention to the poor kid's rapidly deteriorating health. The one social worker who did desperately attempt to alert authorities of increasing dangers six months ahead of Baby P's death became targeted as the blame game victim of abuse by Haringey CYA social services.[314]

An older unnamed close relative to Baby P who apparently had no contact with the murdered toddler had been placed in a care home in Islington at the age of 12 in the early 1990s.[315] A child protection expert commented:

The family should have been subjected to forensic examination. Even cursory checks would have rung alarm bells. Social workers might then have removed the baby, as a paediatrician and police pleaded.[316]

The Baby P relative was sexually abused and recruited by local pimps in Islington through money, drugs and coercive threats to procure more boys from local care homes for the larger VIP ring operating in Hodge's domain.[317] The boy tried to get help, confiding in his social worker. Baby P's relative even furnished social services and police with a list of abuse victims and known perpetrators, reporting that he and other children were being trafficked from Islington care homes to Manor Park, Tottenham, Soho and Westminster where they were further abused by pedophiles, some of whom were members of the British VIP establishment.[318]

Neville Mighty, the social services unit superintendent in charge of the boy's placement was eager to intervene on the boy's behalf as the hazardous living conditions for children at the borough's group homes he directly supervised had pimps flagrantly shacking up overnight in care homes openly abusing preyed upon children.[319] As outrageous and unacceptable as it had become in Islington, Neville Mighty's boss called him "a prude" for repressing the sexuality of the group home residents, insisting the pimps were simply the children's "boyfriends." When Neville presented this insanely perverse, out of control situation to then Islington's social services director Lyn Cusack, the Hodge lackey whose husband was a local senior police superintendent, incredibly she threatened to write him up on disciplinary action for being "rude" to her.

In June 1992 social worker Neville Mighty was fired. At this point senior social worker Liz Davies encouraged and supported Neville to blow the whistle going public to expose the scandal. As is so typical, neither the Baby P relative, nor Neville, nor Liz, nor supervisor David Cofie were ever listened to by their higher-ups in social services, the borough council or the co-opted, thoroughly controlled local police as they refused to place the identified VIP child rapists under surveillance or even call them in for questioning. That's how evilly corrupt Islington under Margaret Oppenheimer-Hodge's leadership was. Liz Davies explained to journalist Eileen Fairweather:

We got too close. There were too many powerful people involved. Child sex, pornography and sadism are extremely lucrative industries.[320]

As Neville, Liz and David became increasingly aware and frustrated over the horrific crime network operating in their neighborhoods they were supposed to be protecting, Hodge's hostile suppression and overt criminal cover-up successfully shielded the perpetrators, as Hodge and Cusack summarily dismissed the courageous whistleblowers as “hysterical” troublemakers, ordering them to cease and desist their underfunded, understaffed internal investigation interviewing dozens of key abuse witnesses, victims and parents. Fortunately Nevile, Liz and David’s whistleblowing persisted at grave risk to themselves, all being bodily threatened with harm and death threats. Through their brave, persistent efforts, finally a 1995 independent fact-finding report was compiled and released by Oxfordshire social services director Ian White. It vindicated their heroic efforts, but confirmed the deplorable prevailing conditions of blatant widespread abuse that also included child pornography, trafficking and pimping victims to VIPs both domestically and internationally, allowed to egregiously thrive unimpeded for decades. The White report was based on the 112-page dossier supplied by the series of *Evening Standard* articles written over the 3-year preceding period, charging Margaret Hodge and her council with allowing at least 26 accused identified child sex abusers working at Islington care facilities to leave its employ without investigation, many even with positive job references.[321]

One such vile pedophile who was a former Islington employee granted a free pass was Nick Rabet, a deputy children’s homes superintendent until his 1989 resignation.[322] Having originally come from Jersey with a background in childcare, Rabet was a key figure linking child abuse in both Jersey and Islington. Under the auspices of providing recreational camping outings to the Channel Island resort, Rabet regularly escorted, or more aptly trafficked children from Islington group homes to Jersey. Like Peter Righton, he developed a reputation as a known pedophile shielded by the system run by Margaret Oppenheimer-Hodge. After leaving Islington, he befriended a wealthy elderly widow who left him her estate in the East Sussex countryside, where he opened his own private children’s activities center as a local retreat utilized by charities, schools, families and social services.

Though Rabet had been placed on a consultancy register barring him from working with children in government facilities, his loophole was working in a private sector setting. At his child activities center on his estate, Rabet was regularly still abusing boys from Islington group homes. The investigative work by journalists like Eileen Fairweather exposed Rabet’s pedo-ring targeting both children and elderly predators in both Islington and Jersey that “befriended” wealthy elderly individuals, manipulated them into changing their wills, and all soon met similar fates, suddenly dying of heart attacks. Rabet and his crew of serial pedophiles appeared protected by Islington council as well as local police in Sussex, Cambridgeshire, London and Jersey.[323] Through media accounts exposing Rabet’s pedo-operations, he fled Britain for the pedophile haven Thailand. After being charged with abusing 30 boys as young as six with estimates of molested 300 children in the sex tourism capital Pattaya, the 57-year old committed suicide with a drug overdose in 2006 to avoid punishment.[324] Another of his cronies found with hundreds of videos and photos of child pornography also OD’d though it’s just as likely they were silenced because they knew too much about VIPs that for years they supplied with child victims.

One severely abused boy in 1989 reported Rabet and others’ sex crimes taking place at both his group home and school to his social worker who was committed to stopping the abuse.[325] But as of Christmas Eve that year, that conscientious social worker was never seen again and neither were the victims’ files. Thus when Islington council was asked in a police probe about placing a child at the school, the council falsely claimed no children under its care were ever sent to the school. Missing files lead to cover-up.

Speaking of which, the Ian White report could only draw from Fairweather's articles interviewing the named whistleblowers, victims and parents because literally hundreds of files were criminally removed from all the Islington borough social services offices in order to protect the countless guilty parties, which included personnel from group homes, social services, Hodge's Islington council, establishment VIP politicians, high court judges, entertainers, businessmen, religious leaders and senior police officers.[326] Unable to enlist interest from the local police department because it took its marching orders from people like Hodge, Straw and Blair, Liz and David finally convinced the Scotland Yard to launch an investigation but sadly by that time, gross obstruction of justice had already been committed. And sadly as always, the Yard's police probe concluded "not enough evidence" justified charging even a single perpetrator.

No doubt to save both her own skin and career from prison along with all her prominent VIP friends, the-powers-that-shouldn't-be saw fit to destroy all the incriminating evidence, just as Sir Leon did a decade earlier. Law enforcement never seriously probed into the massive criminal operation because VIPs were too involved and few if any victims and witnesses were ever even interviewed. Demetrious Panton, an abuse victim who went on to become an outspoken child abuse advocate and barrister, maintains that during the 13 separate Islington child abuse investigations, not once was he ever contacted or interviewed by police.[327]

The pattern of destroyed evidence and criminal cover-up never stops at the earth's pedophilia epicenter. The missing dossier files that would have completely exposed Islington, Downing Street and Westminster sickos will likely never be found in order to ensure their continued full protection. Over the decades, cover-up tactics have always remained the same, not once failing to deliver the same atrocious, predictable outcome, proving that through the impenetrable wall of nonstop cover-up, procurers and predators alike close to the VIP criminals are also shielded and manage to live above the law as well. That way as long as their lips stay sealed, they stay alive and the pedo-party continues unabated to this very day.

Despite the police investigation going nowhere due to so much destroyed records containing hard evidence of Islington's connections to the larger pedophilia network, a full quarter century ago in 1993 the biggest Scotland Yard probe into organized child sexual abuse in British history was launched. According to an August 1993 *Sunday Times* article:

> *The investigation into networks of paedophiles who have been paying for sex with boys and girls, has uncovered several groups across London and other parts of southern England who link up to swap information and abuse children. For the past five months officers from the squad have secretly liaised with directors of social services in more than half a dozen London boroughs amid fears that organised gangs have targeted vulnerable children in their areas.*[328]

As in the Righton inquiry, speculation prevails that in 1993 then Home Secretary Michael Howard again intervened to shut down Metro Police's largest child abuse investigation to date that would have likely incriminated Hodge's operation as the nation's connecting hub to all other pedophile rings thriving throughout the nation.[329]

Unbelievably, during Oppenheimer-Hodge's decade long disastrous tenure as Islington council leader, allowing a pedophile ring to both infiltrate and flourish at all dozen of her district group homes, then defiantly denying, rebuking and ultimately having virtually all the insurmountable evidence“ disappear,” in 1992 Margaret Hodge fled the very crime scene she’d meticulously created and tried in vain to completely cover up, escaping temporarily for a few months to a cushy consultant job at Price-Waterhouse before selected in 1994 as Labor’s next MP for Barking where she’s been a permanent fixture ever since. Throughout this entire scandalously grotesque spectacle played out in plain sight within her Islington district, Hodge’s neighbor in Richmond Crescent a few doors down was none other than fellow pedo-enabler-crossdresser-D notice provocateur Tony “Miranda” Blair, and unfortunately for the UK and world as of 1997, the next Labor prime minister.[330]

In 2003 Tony Blair rewarded Oppenheimer-Hodge for building and successfully protecting the nation’s largest, most blatant, “out-of-control” pedophile ring, selecting her as Britain’s first Minister for Children, a new cabinet post within the Ministry of Education designed and created especially for her proven record. After all, she effectively shielded scores of VIP pedophiles routinely victimizing her expendable care home kids with complete impunity and then allowed them to escape, making her the ideal job candidate to go nationwide. Only at the pedophilia epicenter of the world would the nation’s top leader, knowing full well his fellow Fabian neighbor living so close made it her priority to protect child rapists over the well-being of children under her care, ostensibly design a brand new cabinet position to “protect” all of Britain’s children, confident that she’d do as magnificent a job protecting VIP pedophile rings operating throughout Britain at the tragic expense and grave suffering of UK’s most defenseless, innocent population. You simply can’t make up this kind of pure evil shit, nor can you get any more diabolically Luciferian.

Per Illuminati doctrine, as minister of children Hodge pushed for state authoritarianism usurping parental rights and increasing the secrecy of UK's infamous family court system to tear apart British families, separating children from their parents, swallowed up in a pipeline straight into the highly organized, insulated, well-oiled machine called the global pedophilia network. And what better candidate for the job than the unabashed Orwellian Big Brother Zionist aficionado who blatantly insisted:

> *For me it's not a question of whether we should intrude in family life, but how and when.*[331]

Oppenheimer-Hodge has always been known for her aggression while venomously lashing out, twice committing libel first against "gutter" journalist Eileen Fairweather for her shockingly truthful account of the pedophilia that the council leader did her vicious best to criminally cover-up. The second time she engaged in libelous revenge came after abuse survivor turned child advocate Demetrious Panton bravely went public with his own harrowing story of abuse after years earlier in 1985 sending a 6-page letter to Hodge detailing the torture he was forced to endure a few years earlier living at Islington group homes she supervised.[332] Making unwanted publicity in 2003 for the freshly installed minister of children, in a letter to *BBC* chairman Gavyn Davis, the vengeful drama queen called Panton an "extremely disturbed person."[333] But in response to her libelous attack, the successful barrister and healthy survivor despite years of institutional abuse smartly consulted fellow lawyers. Metro Police Detective Superintendent John Sweeney countered Hodge's malicious slurs with a glowing public testimonial:

> *I found Demetrious to be very articulate... He had a very measured response to what had happened. I have no doubt that if it had got to court we would have had a very strong case. I wouldn't say he was disturbed at all. He certainly wanted justice and he wanted to see Mr Bain* [his abuser] *in*

the dock in a British court. That's perfectly understandable.[334]

“Sour grapes” Hodge was forced to publicly apologize for her reprehensible smear in order to quash growing demands that she resign her abusive brand of “ministering” to all of UK’s children. Further, in a transparent act of self-serving political expediency, Hodge was compelled to submit to Demetrious’ demands that she publicly apologize, pay his legal bills and make a financial contribution to a charity of his choice. Both her atrocious past record and latest toxic antics produced an unprecedented flood of calls demanding her resignation from child rights activists, the opposition party and the public at large. In 2003 Tory shadow secretary for health and education Tim Yeo applied political pressure on Hodge to step down, providing a sound and reasonable explanation:

The biggest problem in cases of child abuse is to get the victims to have the confidence to come forward. If they feel that if they do come forward that they are going to be branded by the minister responsible as disturbed people, what does that do to the chances of us being able to uncover more cases of child abuse?[335]

In spite of her slightly bruised ego, the politically weakened, thoroughly compromised minister still managed to barely survive the Islington abuse scandal. A powerful Oppenheimer lives nine lives and to this day at age 74, Hodge still remains a member of the House of Commons.

After all her afflicted damage, both Hodge and Blair continued catching nonstop flack for appointing her overseer of British children’s welfare, barraged by relentless blowback and more than justified criticism for her ghastly pro-pedophilia career. Finally after less than two years as UK’s first Minister of State for Children, no doubt exhausted from constantly having to feebly defend his appalling choice, Blair quietly transferred her to Ministry for Work and

Pensions. But she put her foot in her mouth again, flippantly dismissing 6,000 displaced workers from a closed MG plant, telling them in so many words "go work at the grocery store chain Tesco, they're hiring" as reverberations of Marie Antoinette's "let them eat cake."[336] So her Oppenheimer nine lives in politics were once again given new life as the Culture and Tourism Minister, eventually winding up both minister and parliamentary chair for the powerful Public Accounts Office. In 2015 Hodge finally stepped down as a cabinet minister resuming her role as MP, the same year the queen promptly rewarded her with Dame-ship for her longtime service dedicated to doggedly promoting the global elite's pedophilia agenda. But her final ministry resignation was also prompted by more Hodge hubris and hypocrisy.

No accident that while in control over UK public accounting, for the first time in the nation's history, it was announced that the poorest 10% of British citizens end up paying higher taxes from earned income than the richest 10%.[337] While Hodge railed against mega-corporations like Google for not paying its fair share, her Oppenheimer family controlled interest in the world's largest steel corporation Stemcor inherited from daddy pays just a sinful .01% of its colossal £2.1billion a year earnings.[338] Her double standards know no limits as she blasts everyone else while she as the chosen one pays the least.[339]

For a native-born Oppenheimer, money means power and power to her means honor, regardless of how scandalously criminal her behavior to reach it. Like her fellow Jewish pedo-gatekeeping sisters Esther and Edwina, Oppenheimer-Hodge's life has been full of hypocritical inconsistencies and drama queen fakery. On the one hand, she railed against corporate and government waste, but on the other hand, as recently as June 2018 she sought a volunteer job at the University of London that by statute is an unpaid position.

[340] Yet this superrich prima donna refused to “volunteer” without demanding an additional £20,000 annum as part of yet another deal cut especially for her, as if the over two billion pounds her family company rakes in yearly as a spoon fed Oppenheimer or the near £80,000 as MP for the last quarter century is never enough. For this greedy Jewish bloodline prima dona, time is money and money is power and be damned with the rest of us lowly goyim plebeians.

In the post-Savile Operation Midland when police were going through the motions pretending to investigate the VIP pedophiles in government, Savile was linked to Islington abuse and as a result, the local council was once again pressured to conduct yeet another of its “objective” inquiries ad nauseam. And guess who was selected to lead this one in 2014? Margaret’s very own son-in-law Joe Caluori. Even after this blatant conflict of interest was exposed, the Islington council insisted on keeping their man at the helm married to an Oppenheimer daughter.[341] With or without all those missing files, it’s no wonder no arrests have ever been made. So the never-ending saga of UK cover-up shamefully continues to trudge on forever.

Incidentally, in addition to being the Islington council attorney empowered to look into his mother-in-law’s criminal cover-up, Joe Caluori is also very active in his community as Islington’s current children and young people leader.[342] Nothing like keeping it in the family. Joe also is reported to be working for a high-end consultancy firm called Britainthinks (globalized version Worldthinks) that advertises innovative solutions for success boasting such clients as McDonalds, the BBC, the Fabian Society and ebay, all great corporate sponsored covers for the NWO pedo-cabal. Again, nothing like keeping it in the family.[343] Sitting on its advisory board is Baron Lord Daniel Finkelstein, *Times of London* editor and Savile-Cyril Smith pedo-apologist.[344]

It was reported in 2017 that Sandy Marks, the Islington council member who chaired the social services committee during the years Margaret Hodge presided over the council, attended a conference back in 1980 with a pedophile group known as the Fallen Angels.[345] After initially denying it, when presented with a photo busting her lie, Marks who went on to becoming the Islington mayor no less, finally admitted the error of her ways, claiming she was too easily influenced by the pro-pedophile crowd and culture back in the day immersed in Labor Party left wing politics that embraced homosexuality and sexual liberation for all, including predators pouncing on babies.

That a former popular mayor held views that sex with children was okay and saw her custodial role as social services committee leader making sure washing machines at the homes were in proper working order over protecting the well-being of children proved such a “shocking” revelation that yet another investigation into Islington abuse was initiated. But the 8-month “independent” review by Sarah Morgan QC recently released its finding that “no organized abuse” took place in the 1970s-1990s.[346] The victims that provided their painful testimony to once again relive their traumas felt completely betrayed because they firsthand know it was highly organized and involved well known VIPs. Every so called “independent” inquiry in Britain, from the *BBC* Dame Smith report to Theresa May’s national IICSA, all are one big whitewash, repeatedly throwing salt on the wounds that can never heal for the victims whose promised justice by conspired diabolical design is continually denied.

Back to drama queen Oppenheimer-Hodge, to this day she continues spewing out her toxic venom to the point of irreversibly fracturing her own embattled Labor Party, nastily turning against her Labor leader Jeremy Corbyn. As current MP from Barking, Dame Hodge just can’t seem to keep her “good” name out of the scandalous headlines. A mere month after her fiasco trying to gouge a salary out of a nonpaid volunteer job, in July 2018 she verbally accosted Corbyn on the House of Commons floor, in an out of control rage screaming:

You're a fucking anti-Semite and racist![347]

Within hours, the foul-mouthed hothead felt compelled to double down, defending her cheap shot ambush of a false accusation with yet more melodrama grandstanding in a *Guardian* article:

My grandmother and my uncle were murdered by Hitler and many cousins and other relatives were slaughtered in the gas chambers.[348]

True to Zionist form, she used the old Jewish Holocaust card. But in her next statement, Dame Oppenheimer shows her true racist colors:

It [Palestinian/Israeli conflict] *appears to have become a legitimate price that the* [Corbyn's Labour] *leadership is willing to pay for pursuing the longstanding cause of Palestinians in the Middle East.*[349]

So the Dame's all for cracking down on free speech in favor of Political Correctness tyranny.[350] In this neoliberal age of pampered crybaby feelings, if you dare hurt someone's fragile ego expressing your own opinion, especially about a Jew or Israel or Zionism, Dame Margaret and those like her wish to send you to prison. Under the burgeoning umbrella of "anti-hate speech laws," spreading their flimsily veiled cover for absolute authoritarian tyranny, more governments are seeking to criminalize the truth, in this case objecting to Israel's rampantly aggressive genocidal policies against the Palestinians.[351] This double standard injustice was taken to task almost a decade and a half years ago in an incisively convincing essay written by Edgar J. Steele who foresaw the coming wave of Zionist led oppression and war on free speech:

Hate speech laws in action, ladies and gentlemen. They are coming to America next. Already, the imprisonments have begun, even in America, albeit by twisting and subverting other laws. Some people have died, too, but their deaths falsely are attributed to other causes. Truly, hate speech simply means anything that Jews hate to hear. That's why we have to have Jews to identify it for us.[352]

Zionism's current zeal to suppress free speech embodied by the likes of British Zionists like Oppenheimer-Hodge and Washington's Israeli First neocons and their ultra-friendly relationship to pedophilia are definitely not two mutually exclusive phenomena independent of each other. Just the opposite. Like Freemasonry and Illuminati, Zionism too is akin to the global pedophilia epidemic.[353] That's why it's so important to briefly delve further into Zionism and its shady dark history in order to understand its full implication in the current global pedophilia crisis.

On September 4, 2018 the site *aangirfan.com* published a very revealing article entitled "Friends of Israel," succinctly tying Zionism and the international pedophilia network together:

The Zionist modus operandi for shaping UK politics, foreign policy, and public opinion includes the use of Organized Child Sexual Abuse and Child Trafficking – as a tool for rewarding, entrapping, removing or blackmailing parliamentarians and other prominent public office holders and VIPs.[354]

Recall Sir Jimmy Savile's self-description as the "most Jewish Catholic,"[355] concedes his status as a devoutly committed Zionist making numerous pilgrimages to Israel advising prime ministers and Knesset on security matters (covered in Chapter 19). As the British nation's primary child procurer for VIPs throughout the 1970s and 1980s, Savile the Zionist also made frequent trips to Jersey where he and the island's Jewish leader Senator Wilfred Krichefsky regularly abused, tortured and murdered children at Haut de la Garenne,[356] that is when Zionist Jimmy wasn't supplying kids for treasonous Prime Minister Edward Heath on his Morning Star yacht murdering and throwing used up dead boys overboard.

Then there's Mossad-CIA double agent, the longtime Zionist UK resident Uri Geller who lived in the village of Sonning west of London for 35 years, all the while maintaining intimate ties with not only UK's "most Zionist Catholic," but also other Zionist aficionados sharing Savile's same pedo-predilection - Lord Greville Janner, Uri's distant cousin and McCann-linked MP Clement Freud and goyim-pedo MP Michael Portillo.[357] Coincidentally, Uri and current UK PM Theresa May are apparently best buds both residing in Sonning,[358] as mentioned earlier another staunch Jewish State supporter and cabal protector of the VIP pedo-epidemic.[359] So you can see regardless of party or persuasion, Dame Margaret Oppenheimer possesses many likeminded allies in her pro-Zionist camp. By the way, nearby neighbors in the exclusive community of May and Geller (who recently sold his Sonning estate for $15 million) include Crowley's OTO satanic cult disciple Zeppelin's Jimmy Page[360] and by association pro-Israel elitists[361] Lord George and Lady Amal Clooney.[362]

Just as Zionist lobby groups completely dominate American politics, they also control the British government with "friends of Israel" camps firmly embedded in all major parties, bribing them both with hefty campaign contributions but offer more trips to Israel than all politicians from the US and continental Europe combined.[363] Additionally, the British-Israeli Communication and Research

Center is a monopolizing influence at the *BBC* and *Sky News* as well as the *Financial Times*. Zionism's power over Britain (and the world) is Incredible considering Jews make up less than half of one percent of the UK population. The Zionist agenda that includes global economic and political hegemony also plays a major role in global pedophilia operations.

A loyally steadfast Parliament member in both Blair's New Labor think tank Progress[364] as well as current member and former chair of Friends of Israel comes the openly gay Zionist Jew Stephen Twigg, originally deputy leader and protégé under Margaret Hodge's Islington council in the 1990s where he was complicit in her pedophilia cover-up and "lost" evidence. As Hodge's surrogate deputy on the council in 1992, Twigg also met with abuse survivor Demetrius Panton but simply passed the buck, deflecting Demetrius's grievance by redirecting him to speak to Hodge herself, yet Twigg never even relayed to his mentor that a justifiably distressed abuse victim came a-calling.[365] Knowing how testy and upset Margaret can be, apparently Twigg didn't want to rile her ire, aware she was taking the heat for allowing the scandal to get so out of control.

Following in Dame Margaret's footsteps and true to form, Stephen Twigg became secretary-general of the Fabian Society. After all, he was raised by Communist parents.[366] Notice the recurring theme of Fabian-communist lineage amongst all the Zionist pedo-friendly Labor Party heavyweights? Twigg's biggest claim to fame was his 1997 upset victory against Conservative incumbent MP from Enfield, UK's standing defense secretary no less - fellow homosexual and reputed pedophile Michael Portillo.[367] This charismatic political figure has quite a colorfully checkered past.

With Prime Minister John Major's defense secretary a flaming yet married homosexual pedophile, Portillo was an easy target for sexual blackmail by both British as well as foreign intelligence. In 1996 private detectives of Egyptian born business magnate Mohamed Al-Fayad, father of Dodi Fayad allegedly murdered in Paris with Princess Diana by the royal family in 1997,[368] reportedly obtained photos of then defense minister Michael Portillo with a young boy allegedly in North Wales.[369] Al-Fayad had moved to Britain in the 1960s where he made a vast fortune as owner of Harrods, the Ritz Hotel Paris and Fulham Football Club. Even prior to his son's death, Al-Fayad had a personal interest in exposing certain British government scandals, and invested in *Scalawag*, a small satirical monthly magazine begun by a pair of half-brothers with a mission to uncover corruption and pedophilia in its run from 1991-98 before going bankrupt.[370]

The compromising photos of Portillo were passed on to *Scalawag Magazine* editor and cofounder Angus James who took them on a business trip to northern Cyprus in September 1996.[371] At the time, because *Scalawag* was going full bore exposing the Westminster VIP pedophile ring exploiting British care home children and even naming VIP names, it was increasingly targeted for litigation by the pedophile establishment and, in a David vs. Goliath battle, the publication was forced from the newsstands to an online site before going under in 1998. Angus James was starting up his second publication *Spiked* and took the controversial photos to Turkish controlled northern Cyprus to meet another *Scalawag* financial contributor - British fugitive Turkish Cypriot entrepreneur Asil Nadir.

Turns out the CIA and MI6 had used Nadir's Polly Peck International conglomerate as a cover for illegal British arms shipments to Iraq during the 1980s' Thatcher years.[372]

Nadir had fled Britain in 1993 seeking refuge in his Turkish Cyprus from UK prosecution for bogus fraud charges. James was reportedly there to close a deal with Nadir to finance *Spiked* with the photos likely providing a blackmail bargaining chip to negotiate a dismissal of charges against Nader back in England.[373] In September 2010, after 17 years in exile, the flamboyant Nadir made his grand re-entrance in a London courtroom under much fanfare, only to be deferred, fitted with ankle bracelet and midnight curfew under virtual house arrest while prosecution re-prepared its fraud case with the trial scheduled the following year.[374] During the trial, key evidence that would have proven Nadir’s innocence was withheld, a CIA dossier[375] prohibited under false pretense of “national security” was never included.[376] Nadir was framed by the US-UK-Israel cabal syndicate. So in August 2012 the tycoon was convicted of “stealing” nearly £29m from his own company and at age 71 sentenced to 10 years.[377]

After attending a party at Nadir’s home in 1996, while driving down a mountainous road 31-year old Angus James met a violent end in an auto accident with a truck.[378] The driver of the car, Angus’s colleague Simon Stander and the two women passengers all connected to the magazine survived. Simon suffered bruises and was hospitalized while arrangements were swiftly made to fly the two uninjured women back home to London. Nadir’s fixer was Peter Diamond who placed Simon in hiding in an attempt to keep his boss’s name out of the headlines. But a journalist friend of Angus writing for the *Independent* mentioned Angus’s meeting with the multi-millionaire before being killed on the road.[379] With Angus James’s death, whatever deal was reached that night was immediately scrapped. Diamond confiscated James’s files, the photos and his possessions. The featured exposé on Portillo scheduled in the following month’s issue was never published. There was also an apparent break-in at the *Scalawag* London office, removing additional software and computers containing the edition that would have featured the story outing the top Tory cabinet minister in compromising photos with his abuse victim.[380]

Within a year after Angus James' death, the UK defense minister Portillo lost his election to relative unknown, Zionist Hodge protégée Stephen Twigg. But just two years later in 1999, Portillo was back in Parliament representing Kensington and Chelsea for the next half dozen years. But just two months prior to the 1999 election, just when Tory MP Alan Clark keeled over to conveniently open up a safe seat, Michael Portillo announced in an interview his homosexual past,[381] chalking it up to a phase he went through back in his gay old college days.[382] But the LBGT community wasn't buying it, calling him a hypocrite for refusing to lower the age of consent for homosexuals and lesbians to 16 on par with the hetero crowd and still voting to kick gays out of the military.[383]

Of course the real hypocrisy here is all the titillating soap opera uproar questioning his "phase," providing the smokescreen cover-up to his blackmailed puppet status as a pedophilic criminal. Through the politic apparatchik, the darling of the Conservative party as a still semi-closeted chameleon reinvented himself as a popular *BBC* broadcaster where homosexuals are most welcomed and pedophiles are most protected (covered in Chapter 21). That's the much bigger issue, along with the illegal arms deal, pedophilia and multiple murders including perhaps Angus James in northern Cyprus.

More death, scandal and intrigue seem to follow this Michael Portillo around like smell to shit. From his college days at Cambridge as 18 year old "Polly," he engaged in promiscuous sex on alternate days with his gay lover while dating his future wife for the next 8 years. With his male lover ending up HIV positive, Portillo was also rumored to have indulged in homosexual trysts with fellow Tory MP Minister Peter Lilley and the first and only professional footballer (soccer) to come out publicly as gay - Justin Fashanu in 1990.[384] Another favorite Portillo activity was rendezvousing with pedo-pals at his favorite hotel in the world - La Gazelle d’Or in Morocco.[385] And among his fave travel companions is fellow homosexual-pedophile-Tory pimp-sadist Derek Laud, lounging at La Gezelle d’Or together doing little Moroccan boys whenever Derek didn’t bring along his rent boys from home.[386] Considered to be a political mover and shaker amongst the elite throughout the 1980s and 1990s, with no formal higher education degree nor holding any elected public office, Derek Laud’s claim to fame was writing speeches for Margaret Thatcher and suppling fresh little kids for elitist vultures. But more to come on this enigmatic boy supplier in the next chapter.

Turning to Justin Fashanu and his link to powerful politicians like Portillo, he was born to a Nigerian barrister and Guyanese nurse in Hackney in 1961. But when his parents’ marriage broke up, Justin and his year younger brother John were placed in Barnardos children’s home, the same pedo-scandal outfit that Tony Blair’s wife Cherie became president of in 2001,[387] no doubt reason enough a dozen years later the queen bestowed a CBE honor for her pedo-gatekeeping “charity” work.[388] By the age of six, Justin with his brother were fortunate enough to move into a foster care home raised by an elderly white couple in rural England. Growing up as the only black kids in town, both were skilled athletes and went on to the pros.

As the only openly gay professional in football, Justin Fashanu paid a heavy price for his bold honesty coming out at age 29, and was never quite prepared for the backlash. Unlike the world of politics where gay men make up a significant percentage of MPs in government, in the world of football Justin stood alone. John Fashanu ultimately rejected his brother for being gay, even paying him £75,000 not to disclose his gayness to the world in order to spare him and his family from embarrassment.[389] But in 1990 Justin took his brother's money and ran straight to *The Sun* for another £70,000 to declare his sexual preference to the world,[390] creating an enduring rift between brothers that would last till Justin's death eight years later. John took his troubled brother's death very hard with a suicide note saying Justin did not wish to bring any more shame and despair on his family and friends.

But at only 19 playing for Norwich, Justin Fashanu appeared to have the world at the palm of his foot, scoring the famous goal of the decade against Liverpool, catapulting him to becoming the first black million-pound player. But soon after when his Nottingham coach learned he was gay, he was banned from training with the team and soon let go from the club.[391] His confidence shattered, for many years Justin bounced around playing for a series of lesser leagues in England, Scotland, North America, never quite measuring up to all his early hype and promise. According to mainstream press, Justin acquired a reputation and habit as a compulsive liar, making up scandalous stories for some cheap thrill change.[392]

Fashanu found himself mixing socially amongst fellow gays who were government VIPs that happened to get off on raping kids. While frequenting gay clubs around London, he met longtime Conservative MP from Bournemouth East (1977-2005) David Atkinson, the typical church going family man with wife, a son and daughter, and a big secret, his affair with a notorious black football star.[393] But Justin soon learned that David Atkinson also indulged in another far more sinister secret - sex with rent boys. The Tory MP died in 2012 HIV positive suffering from bowel cancer. Two years later Atkinson's son Anthony came forward to also reveal that his father was a serial child sexual predator like Savile.[394] Anthony stated that there is evidence that his MP father was sexually blackmailed by a Westminster Palace staff member threatening to sell details of his dad's sexual life to a newspaper.

Fate would have it that two very different lives, one belonging to an infamous black gay footballer and another highly respected, this time straight white Conservative MP would intersect and each tragically end four years apart. *Scalawag* wrote about the bizarre death of Tory MP Stephen Milligan in February 1994. At the time the former journalist Milligan was Parliamentary Private Secretary to defense procurement minister Jonathan Aitken,[395] and his day-to-day work no doubt brought him in contact with British intelligence services making Milligan privy to illegal arms deals.

Scalawag suggested that Stephen was approached by MI5, pressing him to intervene as the go-between in an urgent matter regarding Justin Fashanu.[396] Apparently in early 1994 with Justin Fashanu's career on the downswing, in search of another quick cash windfall, the fading athletic star had already gone to the *Daily Express* ready to tell all he knew about the Westminster VIP pedophile ring based on his alleged intimate encounters with high profile MPs and senior cabinet ministers.[397] MI5 pressured the MP Milligan to convince the footballer to stay quiet. When Stephen approached Justin to inform him that his life was in danger should he persist in disclosing the sleaze atop the British government, Fashanu naively couldn't believe it. After failing to convince Justin to back off from trying to sell the scandalous story to the media, MI5 told Stephen that Justin Fashanu would be killed and made to appear a suicide.[398]

Already appalled by all the suspected pedophilia perpetrated by his colleagues in conjunction amidst a flood of breaking Tory sex scandals at the time coming from the political party that went out of its way espousing family values,[399] MP Milligan also grew increasingly disgustedly upset that a branch of his own government would go so far as to assassinate someone willing to take measures to clean up the filth in high places.[400] Under mounting pressure, the former *BBC* journalist panicked, making the fatal error of threatening MI5, that should anything happen to Justin, he would go to his former employer at *The Sunday Times* and blow the whistle.[401] Similar to the impromptu hit on Jill Dando ready to drop the cesspit bombshell just three years later, either Downing Street or senior intelligence very likely made the decision to eliminate Stephen Milligan, leaving him naked laying roped on top of his kitchen table with a bag over his head wearing women's nylon stockings and an orange fruit segment in his mouth to come off as yet another kinky "sexual misadventure," a favorite kill method security services notoriously utilize to avoid major investigations.[402] Recall in Chapter 21 during this same time period of the 1990s, several other *BBC* employees met similar fates engaging in this so called bizarre sex play gone awry.

But a leading pathologist concluded Stephen Milligan was a murder victim as he had never heard of both a bag over the head and ligature in the mouth as suicides always involve one or the other. Even initial police reports indicated the MP's death appeared suspicious, very likely involving foul play,[403] backed up by all who knew Stephen best, including past girlfriends unanimously certain he was murdered.[404] Stephen's former editor friend from the *Sunday Times*

Andrew Neil checked with his previous intimates and all concurred:

There was nothing about his private life that would make you think the way he died was possible.[405]

Justin Fashanu's security guard Bobby Munro has stated that Stephen made a rash of calls to Fashanu hours before his death, but Justin refused to take the calls. Also a few years later, the same police investigator - Brian Edwards – responsible for the unsolved, botched-on-purpose Jill Dando murder case in May 1999 was also the lead police investigator in Stephen Milligan's death.[406] It's no wonder the rushed inquest was unwilling to look at any other evidence not leading to the conclusion of a self-induced "sexual misadventure."

It was then that an MI5 agent allegedly paid a visit to Justin Fashanu, threatening that he would be next should he proceed with telling the world about top food chain pedophiles. Instead Justin reportedly decided to accept the hush money offered. The mainstream press reported Justin's agent contacted police detectives urging them to interview Fashanu about Milligan's death, but the police claimed his input was just more pathetic, made up lies.[407] His negative publicity prompted Justin's football club to terminate his contract and Fashanu took the next plane out to America where he played a couple more seasons, bouncing from one league down to the next, 22 teams in a 20 year career including a stopover in New Zealand.[408]

After a 17-year old boy in Maryland accused Justin of rape, he was questioned and then released, escaping back to England before being charged though he maintained the sex was consensual.[409] A short time later the first and only pro footballer bold enough to disclose his homosexuality to the world wound up hanging from a beam in a garage at age 37 in 1998.[410] Since British police and mainstream press both have a very long history of covering up the murderous VIP Westminster pedo-scandal, it comes as no surprise that Justin Fashanu would be portrayed as a pathological lying desprado compulsively seeking money and attention for his so called sordid tall tale stories. Another convenient tactic the state deploys to silence would-be truth tellers and victims is to discredit and smear their credibility and reputation. So the legitimate question lingers on two decades after his death, did Justin Fashanu become yet another murder victim for knowing too much?

A related angle to this sad ending episode is that MP Milligan as Parliamentary Private Secretary to a defense minister would provide him with access to sensitive information involving covert British illegal arms trafficking to Iraq.[411] The CIA and MI6 commonly use front companies like Asil Nader's and Gerald James' arms company called Astra in their booming illegal international gun running trade, right along with drugs, small children and human organs. Gerald James wrote a memoir about his experience that included exposing unusually suspicious deaths of eight individuals such as a former MI6 agent and a journalist who were both very likely murdered/suicided by the familiarly bizarre asphyxiation method for their independent pursuit to uncover the full truth about Britain's illegal arms sales.[412]

Back during the Iraq-Iran war in the 1980s, Reagan/Bush and Thatcher used US and British intelligence to secretly violate their own arms embargos and weapons bans exporting their war machine to warring enemy camps in the Middle East,[413] just as the Rothschilds and more recently the Harrimans and Bushes have been financing both sides to every elite orchestrated war for centuries.[414] Mark Thatcher, the prime minister's son, got 12 million pounds richer selling warplanes to the Saudis in British history's biggest arms deal,[415] so more innocent civilians in Yemen can be massacred with full US-UK complicity.[416] Similar to how Angus James may have died for potentially exposing pedo-Portillo and the British government's illicit arms shipment to Saddam Hussein, two years earlier Stephen Milligan may have been murdered by the Deep State for the exact same reason(s).

Returning to the fellow pro-pedo MP originally from Islington chosen to bring down UK's secretary of defense Portillo in 1997, Stephen Twigg entered Parliament at just 30-years old. But he'd already impressed the newly elected British Prime Minister Tony Blair, then moving from Islington to Downing Street. In 1996 the two fellow Fabians from Islington co-wrote and published through the Foreign Policy Centre their 35-page *A Global Alliance for Global Values*,[417] outlining their pathway to dystopia through elitist globalization. But eight years later Blair's unpopular war in Iraq had Labor party losing seats in 2005, Twigg's historically conservative Enfield district among the casualties. That same year while dancing the night away in a London gay nightclub, Twigg was attacked by an Islington child abuse survivor accusing him of direct involvement in Hodge's Islington-Jersey child abuse-pornography-murder scandal.[418]

While still licking his wounds from his last election smack-down and forcibly delivered smack-down reminder of his pedophilia culpability, Twigg was rescued by his close ties to Prime Ministers Blair and Brown. In 2010 their New Labor party pressured a 27-year Labor MP veteran to give up his Liverpool West Derby seat 200 miles away from Enfield for big Twigg's relaunch into Parliament.[419] And just a year later the rising star was awarded the post of Labor shadow minister of education. But just two years on after his lackluster performance failing to challenge Tory education minister Michael Gove,[420] in 2013 Labor party leader Ed Miliband fired Twigg.[421] Ed and brother David Miliband were raised as Marxist Jews, with Ed on record looking up to fellow Jew Jack Straw as a “father figure,”[422] yet another former Islington council deputy under Hodge. Ed Miliband worked in 1993 for PIE linked pro-pedo deputy Labor leader Harriet Harman. Note the same ties that bind - Labor-Marxist-Zionist-pedophilia recirculating ad infinitum.

In 2015 two old guard Zionist Jew former foreign secretaries Jack Straw and Malcolm Rifkind, Sir Malcolm still in charge of Mossad infiltrated British intelligence services,[423] were both thrown out of government after getting caught greedily boasting of their corrupt omnipotence before hidden Channel 4 cameras in the “cash-for-access” sting[424] (British variation of the Clintons’ “pay-to-play” racketeering), and as a result, the brass ring of House of Lords peerage eluded them.[425]

But rest assure there’s always the next generation of Zionist Jews controlling UK politics despite Jewish people comprising a miniscule .04% of the total UK pop. Jew or no Jew, what all Zionists share in common is the elephant in the room – Rothschild control over Britain (and much of the world).[426] The next wave of Zionist Rothschild plants in British government are represented by the likes of Stephen Twigg and the Miliband brothers with Polish-Russian connections,[427] their deceased Marxist father a possible KGB asset.[428]

In 2010 Ed Miliband beat his pissed off older brother David out for a half decade of failed Labor leadership, in 2015 upended by the present party leader - non-Jew Jeremy Corbyn. No doubt seething inside, initially Ed Miliband pretended graciously to accept Corbyn, but he seized on the divisive Brexit issue to show his fangs demanding Jeremy’s resignation.[429] The reality of Corbyn's populist appeal has Israel and their London Zionist minions frothing at the mouth to depose the non-Jew who actually recognizes the rights of Palestinians.[430] But remaining loyal to the Blair-Hodge-Straw-Rifkind-Mandelson "old" New Labor-pro-pedophilia-Zionist-Rothschild camp, MP Stephen Twigg is on record staunchly opposing Corbyn.[431] Though hostile to his leadership, it's Twigg's old mentor MP Oppenheimer-Hodge who's leading the mutinous party coup.

Last July Margaret Oppenheimer-Hodge was caught once again treasonously and vulgarly acting out on behalf of her favorite foreign power, attempting to incite a leadership revolt for a second time to rid Jeremy Corbyn for supporting the Palestinians' right to exist.[432] The current political squabble in the UK over Zionism warrants a deeper look within the broader historical context since Zionism and pedophilia go hand-in-hand together. That's why Luciferian planetary controllers thrive and literally get their rocks off waging permanent war and bloody carnage around the world because it provides fertile unlimited ground and opportunity for trafficking guns, drugs, laundered money, children and body parts, financing black ops projects that benefit only the monster squad in control.

The specific reason why Oppenheimer-Hodge threw her public tantrum on the world stage was over her Labor Party recently modifying its definition of anti-Semitism, which only deleted a couple of small examples from the previous definition, from the word-for-word extraction taken directly from the International Holocaust Remembrance Alliance (IHRA). The IHRA definition clearly conflates anti-Semitism with any and all criticism towards Israel. The aging Dame had a cow over Labor's recent changes under Corbyn that declawed the "anti-Semitic" label applied to disagreement with Israel’s racist apartheid genocidal policy toward Palestinians.

Margaret needs to grow up and recognize the party’s over - her Jewish State can’t continue throwing its “anti-Semitic” weight around to keep its growing number of critics silently at bay with its weaponized victim card anymore. For years the IHRA has dictated to the world what constitutes anti-Semitism based on anyone calling out Israel’s longtime policy towards Palestinians as “racist,” inhumane and unfair.

But just when you think the dog days are finally over, Zionist pushback arrives in the form of tantrums, harassment and censorship by the likes of Hodge and the Anti-Defamation League’s latest collusions with the Google Gestapo and Facebook Nazis.[433] Like it or not Oppenheimer and the rest of you Zionists, the world is beyond fed up with the whining prima donna Jewish State for all its duplicitous double standards, now caught desperately still trying to use its worn-out victim card forever. It’s not going to work any longer and if you don’t want to be called Nazis, then stop acting like them.

Another chicken bone of contention caught in Dame’s turkey gobbler throat, the IHRA labels us anti-Semitic if we accuse people like her to be an Israeli firster or Zionista. Oppenheimer, all your past bad behavior including your treasonous blind loyalty to that foreign power you represent neither qualifies you or “your people” as God’s chosen ones. You’re definitely not. In the Creator’s eyes, no one group of humans is more favored over another, regardless of race or religion. And IMHO, it’s another flawed human distortion and abomination of God’s true essence to believe otherwise. Nope Dame Margaret, even Lucifer can’t help you now.

The 2018 Pittsburgh synagogue shooting as a weaponized false flag leading up to the November mid-term election is just more rollout of this same nefarious acted out, multipurposed agenda, desperately attempting to mold and control public opinion by casting broad-stroke dispersions, lumping in those critical of Zionist Israel with the violent, anti-Semitic, racist, extremist nutjobs.[434] Truth be told, that synagogue attack would not be the first time Zionists sacrifice their own kind for their so called "worthy" causes, as in the WWII Holocaust itself,[435] or the blown up S.S. Patria murdering 252 Jewish refugees off the Haifa coast in 1940,[436] or the 1950-51 Baghdad bombings killing Iraqi Jews,[437] or Argentina's 1992 Israeli embassy bombing or the 1994 Buenos Aires Jewish community center attack.[438] And that's just the shortlist of Zionist Jews killing innocent, decent Jews. At the 1958 Patria memorial service mourning 252 innocent Jewish refugees' lives assassinated by Zionists that have never represented the vast majority of Jews, former Israeli Prime Minister Zionist Moshe Sharett came right out and said it, giving away the Zionist MO:

Sometimes it is necessary to sacrifice the few in order to save the many.[439]

252 murdered people can hardly be considered a "few." Nor is the inflated Holocaust sacred number of 6 million a few.[440] If you believe all the propaganda, you'd never realize estimates of 5 million non-Jews also died in the Nazi Holocaust, but as goyim, their lost lives don't matter, just like the Palestinians. For many decades Jews killing Jews has been at work by the terrorist organization known as the Mossad, the Israeli government's own intelligence service. The Mossad is crawling with veteran masters of false flag terrorism[441] (9/11 a prime example),[442] falsely blaming "Islam" in the form of al Qaeda/ISIS mercenary stooges as well as providing the pretext for the neocons' fake "war on terror" as yet more Mossad-CIA-MI6 inventions[443] stripping away our Constitution.

The most dangerous extremists out there today placing our free speech rights in such serious jeopardy are the fanatical brigade belonging to the Political Correctness armies largely occupying college campuses around the world.[444] These days they are the neo-Nazis imposing absolute absurdity without limits on free speech rights. The PC gestapo police are banning gender pronoun usage[445] and sarcasm on college campuses in Australia.[446] So called “anti-hate laws” that are spreading worldwide ostensibly designed to protect the rights and feelings of both Jews and Muslims alike are the Luciferian master stroke in censorship and the silencing of free speech and the brain capacity of critical thinking.[447][448]

We are living in a time when the control system’s draconian strategy applies the Hegelian Dialectics in an indefinite, repetitive cycle whereby Western governments identify a self-created **problem**, then engineer a destructive **reaction** immediately linked to that **problem**, virtually always in the form of violent false flags thus providing ample excuse and opportunity for the government’s proposed **solution** that never fails to facilitate tighter authoritarian control.[449] This endless do-loop cycle is the state’s ticket leading to rising oppression and despotism exploited to the point of demolishing our freedom guaranteed under the Constitution. So called Western democracies are fast turning into the Communist Soviet gulag era of the 1940s and 50s.

Oppenheimer’s House of Commons outburst last July and the October Jewish synagogue shooting are merely staged events designed to identify a **problem** that major political leaders labeled as “anti-Semitic racists” are leading to a **reaction** inspiring anti-Semitic racist reactionaries worldwide to violently act out, as in the synagogue shooting. **Solution** – create more “anti-hate laws” locking up truth with the realists who speak it. Another illustrative example would be pronouncing the 2016 internet Pizzagate hype as “fake news” to be a **problem** that “dangerously” inspired the Comet pizza shooter’s **reaction**,[450] necessitating the immediate rollout within two weeks of Obama's pre-written "fake news" censorship legislation as the state **solution**. Round and round the dialectic gyroscope goes, our Orwellian descent spiraling humanity into despotic oblivion, everyone whose eyes are wide open knows.

The immediate first choice Dialectic **solution** for Hodge would be materialization of her intended leadership coup to depose Corbyn, but fortunately that failed. Also her Plan B **solution** would be for the Labor Party to return to its original, more inclusive IHRA definition of anti-Semitism. That failed as well. A longer term **solution** for Hodge and her beloved Jewish State would be to enact more laws around the globe outlawing "anti-Semitic hate" that under the older Labor Party definition would facilitate the arrests of anyone criticizing Israel or calling it a Zionist racist nation. An extremist **reaction** to the **problem** of a so called "racist" party leader that inspires and incites violent racist extremists to shoot Jews then provides the excuse to pass anti-hate legislation to silence truth and opposition to state tyranny as the cabal's "final **solution**." Using this incredibly revealing lens to filter and process today's world events and unfolding developments, it becomes far easier to figure out the real truth of how the corrupt, morally crumbling international pedo-crime cabal operates day in and day out.

PC tyranny plays a pivotal key role offering a convenient cover for totalitarian censorship and oppression where speakers of the truth such as independent journalists and citizen activists exposing government crimes are slated for incarceration. With US Congress controlled by pro-Israel lobby groups like AIPAC and the ADL,[451] the US Senate is seeking to pass legislation to redefine anti-Semitism to include conflating Israel criticism with anti-Semitism. Under the catch-all category of a "hate crime," in May 2018 South Carolina became the first state to make it illegal to criticize Israeli occupation.[452] With a concentration of Zionist evangelicals voting in South Carolina, they're anxiously awaiting Armageddon and the Second Coming.

Using the "hate crime" lynchpin to tighten the noose, the cabal is killing off what's left of our First Amendment rights to free speech and free press.[453] Telling the truth and activism are fast becoming a crime. In a related development, as of June 2018 Trump's new Assistant Secretary of Education for Civil Rights Kenneth Marcus is pro-Zionist zealot that equates anti-Semitism with any criticism of the Jewish State and has targeted Boycott, Divest, Sanctions (BDS) activism against Israel as his enemy vowing to instill "fear" on college campuses with a plan to shut the movement down nationally. Like Dame Oppenheimer-Hodge, he too conflates support for Palestinians' rights as anti-Semitic. With the Jewish lobby Zionists so powerful yet desperate, expect more states to follow suit with South Carolina.

To counteract worldwide criticism against Israel's genocidal crimes and appalling human rights violations against Palestinians, Zionists are pushing back with the agenda to coerce nations around the world into passing laws criminalizing criticism of Israel as a hate crime by meeting the broader definition of anti-Semitism to include any Israeli form of criticism.[454] First they came for all those who stood up for the Palestinians…[455]

Through decades of social engineering emasculating men while promoting fanatical male bashing PC feminist extremists exercising increasing Marxist power in campus witch hunts, the ruling elite's man-eating attack dogs are actually attacking and undermining man-woman relations and ultimately marriage and family as the fundamental social institutions that for eons of time have provided societies a foundation for stability and cohesion.[456] Recall that centuries ago Illuminati "founder" Adam Weishaupt identified the destruction/abolition of family to be among the primary objectives toward achieving one world government tyranny.[457]

Meanwhile, on another nefariously related front, the ruling elite has an overt, insidious, constant agenda attempting to normalize pedophilia (see Chapter 2). The media propaganda machine utilizing the PC-protected LGBT agenda armed with militant social justice warriors ready on demand to robotically pounce on their next designated target, which in some twisted circles may apparently be the “pedo-basher.” NAMBLA, the North American counterpart to PIE, the North American Man/Boy Love Association in 2017 was tied to the AntiFa radical left’s riots at Berkeley in violent protest of right wing speakers based on uncovered documents.[458] Then at a Columbia University speaking engagement featuring rightwing provocateur Mike Cernovich, a banner clearly displaying AntiFa, NAMBLA and “no pedo bashing” made headlines that the left-leaning press immediately accused alt-right of staging a hoax.[459] Hoax or no hoax, it would come as no shock if misguided social justice warriors looking for their next “cause” would come after pedo-bashers like Cernovich or his writer for that matter. Elitist puppet masters have already hoodwinked America and have too many right where they want them - cluelessly divided and conquered.[460] Fortunately the not so hoodwinked in America now growing in numbers see through their lies and manipulations.

Predatory pedophile scum are lurking just beneath LGBT’s more palatable, socially acceptable cover so en vogue in today’s prurient saturated mass media, now calling themselves Minor Attracted Persons (MAPs), as if a name change makes it okay or normal to have sex with kids.[461] It’s déjà vu of PIE in the 1970s and 80s all over again, when the sickos co-opted the liberal left’s sexual liberation/gay movement, insisting that kids have sexuality too, needing liberation right into the waiting perverted grasp of hungry sexual predators. From today’s warped POV dictating blind adherence to moral and cultural relativism in an “anything goes,” hipster world[462] comes the progressive left’s latest battlefield front, defending against “pedo-bashing,” excusing predatory child rapists simply by renaming them MAPs as just another misunderstood, persecuted, oppressed minority. After all, one man’s sin is another man’s pleasure girl or boy-toy.

Chapter 2 mentioned that the progressive left’s rag *Salon* in 2015 actually ran a series of articles penned by an alleged celibate pedophile (that *Salon* abruptly removed from the internet in 2017) as a sympathetic inside glimpse into the distraught, complicated world of society’s most hated sexual pariah for simply being born with a biological predisposition for attraction to children, not by volitional choice (though the author admits he was molested at age 7).[463] *The New York Times* published a controversial piece in 2014 by a professor asserting pedophilia may be a mental disorder but not a crime,[464] while other accounts are promoting it as a mere sexual orientation or lifestyle preference.[465] For decades the Hollywood A list has made no bones about its unwavering loyal support for such acclaimed aging unprosecuted pedophile directors as Roman Polanski and Woody Allen; and Chapter 15 features how much the Hollywood cesspit is a pedophilia-infested and controlled haven for Luciferian predators.

From professional mental health to academia, and media to entertainment on multi-pronged fronts, be they subliminal or overt, the recurrent, in-our-face message and theme is that like LGBT, society should learn tolerance and acceptance towards pedophiles. Bottom line, only the sexual offenders at the top of the predator food chain possess both the most motive with the most means at their disposal more than any other single group to relentlessly push this over-the-top, highly manipulative, diabolical agenda. Once legal and normalized, all child rapists are home free.

We’re living in an upside down, Luciferian ruled, extremist, polarized world right now where deception is the pedo-elite’s most effectively deployed globalized weapon of mass destruction. The late author Michael Ellner sized it up succinctly:

Just look at us. Everything is backwards; everything is upside down. Doctors destroy health, lawyers destroy justice, universities destroy knowledge, governments destroy freedom, the major media destroy information and religions destroy spirituality.[466]

It’s been the sinister agenda of Illuminati bloodline families like the Rothschilds and Oppenheimers that have deceitfully turned and twisted this world upside down. Controversial but incisive Canadian Jew Henry Makow offers his take on the Rothschild reach into every human’s life on the planet:

The Rothschilds are Cabalist Jews who represent their own demented megalomania that jeopardizes the destiny of mankind. They are imposing their occult tyranny by virtue of their worldwide monopoly over the medium of exchange. They produce credit and currency from nothing in the form of a debt to themselves, something our government could do itself, interest-and-debt-free. Organized Jewry and Freemasonry are accomplices in this scam. Alas, our ‘money’ is just coupons, virtual chips in their digital casino. They can manipulate or void these chips any time they want. Their agenda is to protect their money monopoly by extending it into a monopoly over everything – power, knowledge, culture, religion - by re-engineering humanity to serve them. This is the real meaning of Communism.[467]

Only by spreading this dark secret truth can more of us see through the Rothschilds and their minions’ thinly veiled endgame of nonstop lies spewing out daily from their puppet governments and MSM propaganda ministries as well as from the wide spectrum of today's bloodline controlled, morally bankrupt, corrosive institutions. Too many poisoned, dumbed down sheep are too gullible and blinded to reject the spoon-fed bullshit. But urgent, concentrated dissemination of truth to inform, educate and empower the masses is our best hope, chance and weapon for mobilizing a worldwide grassroots level movement to fully expose and overthrow the not-so-hidden shackles by holding the ruling demons fully accountable for all their egregious crimes against our children, adults and all life forms on this earth. That's what the controllers are most afraid of, that we band together in recognition of the true enemy.

Returning to Jeremy Corbyn's stance on Israel and why militant fanatics like Hodge are going berserk. Jeremy's conspicuously laudable refusal to entertain, wine and dine a Zionist war criminal, Corbyn publicly snubbed blowhard Netanyahu on his November 2017 visit to Britain to celebrate the Balfour centennial fiasco.[468] 100 years ago the then UK foreign minister Arthur Balfour pleased his Rothschild overlord by making it official, Great Britain was paving the way for a future Jewish State.[469] In effect, the long reigning imperialistic British Empire gave the greenlight for 60,000 Jews then living in Palestine to assume rule over the 600,000 disenfranchised Arabs who had zero say in their grand theft homeland despite their 10 to 1 majority.

But then that's how oligarchies are. For some time now numerous Western governments pretending to be democracies are actually oligarchies,[470] never representing the majority's interests but only the small powerful elite minority.[471] Another reason VIP pedos get away with raping and murdering children. As owners of the world central banking cartel, the Rothschilds have exploited this reality for centuries.[472]

Since Jews are lighter-skinned than Arabs, once the Balfour declaration was out, the rest is history. Down through the ages, people with darker skin complexions have nearly always been the prime targets of the worst racist atrocities and inhumane persecution. The historic murderous Balfour proclamation set the stage for the true Semite Palestinians to be illegally run off their land, homes bulldozed and torched and people genocided to make room for wave after wave of non-Semite Khazars known as the Ashkenazi Jews emigrating from Eastern Europe and Western Russia whose ancestors never stepped foot on Middle Eastern soil.[473]

The Balfour Declaration unleashed a 70-year bloody violent reign of terror of nonstop divide and conquer rule over Arab and Muslim states throughout the region, always with totally complicit US and UK support. Hence, with the British crown globally dominant for several hundred years, the Anglo-American-Zio agenda has virtually controlled mankind's fate over the last several centuries. Crimes against humanity remain unpunished because this axis-of-evil has always been a master manipulator in deception, rewriting history, faking science, creating and twisting religion as yet another control mechanism, hiding the real truth from the masses for millenniums. The old world order in fact is the New World Order but with the naked, ugly truth exposed, the jig's about up.

Founder Theodor Herzl's Zionist Movement credited with securing the birth of Israel in 1948 (again through Rothschild support and power) as an independent sovereign nation, having actively co-opted with Hitler's National Socialist Party in 1933 right up to wartime with their mutually cooperative plan to utilize World War II death camp Jews as sacrificial pawns, essentially punished for failing to join the 60,000 that freely immigrated from Nazi Germany to Palestine.[474] The exodus additionally involved over 300,000 other fleeing Jews heavily relocating to the US but also South America and Europe as well.[475] The Zionists shared with Hitler that an Aryan Germany free of Jews and a Jewish State in Palestine full of immigrating Jews from around the world was both the answer and solution to the Jewish question.[476]

The tragedy of the death camp Jews was viewed by the handful of Zionists that bargained their fate with the Nazi devil himself as simply a necessary cost or collateral damage required to whip up the obligatory, undying postwar sympathy worldwide that would then provide the bargaining chip to secure the UN endorsed national Jewish State in Palestine.[477] After all, from the very get-go, Zionism's Modus Operandi has always been that the ends justify the means.[478] Zionists opportunely used the horror of the Holocaust to readily brand and silence critics with the "anti-Semitic" label should they disagree with the Jewish State's brutally aggressive policies towards Arabs in the Middle East. Orthodox and traditional Jews never wanted anything to do with Zionism,[479] recognizing that the suffering of Jews has benefited only the Zionists as a subversive political movement having zero to do with their Jewish religion and that clearly Zionists never had the Jews' interests at heart in their ruthless quest for global power, domination and control.[480]

Both the World Zionist Organization (WZO) and American Jewish Congress during World War II literally turned their backs on fellow Jews dying in the concentration camps.[481] With WZO's full approval, Zionist head of Jewish Rescue and Relief Committee Rudolph Kasztner negotiated with the Nazi architect of the Holocaust Adolf Eichmann in 1944, paying over $1.6 billion for 1,685 of his fellow Zionist friends and the Budapest Jewish elite a safe passage on a train to neutral Switzerland in exchange for helping to round up 460,000 non-Zionist, common Jews headed for Auschwitz and certain death.[482] The story was kept secret until word slipped out while Kasztner was living in Israel and reportedly a Mossad operative murdered him in 1957 in order to keep another dark page in Zionist history hidden.[483]

For well over a century the Zionist Movement established deep roots in both the British as well as the American Empires through robust infiltration politically, culturally and economically. Zionist control over centralized world banking[484] and the mass media propaganda machine[485] along with Zionist government operatives as permanent fixtures still occupying halls of power in Washington[486] and London[487] (like Dame Oppenheimer-Hodge) represent today's Anglo-American-Zionist Axis-of-Evil, still readily sending naïve, patriotic young Americans and British off to fight and die on foreign soil for Greater Israel Project wars, Big Oil and the ever-Bigger Military Industrial Complex, psychopathically killing over four million innocent Muslims in the process just since 1990.[488]

As a bona fide globalist, Margaret Hodge's position on migration is disingenuous at best:

Migration is a feature of globalization. You can't stop it; so every time a political party says it is going to be tough on immigration, it fails to deliver and loses trust.[489]

Hodge emphatically rationalizes the elite's manufactured migration crisis in Britain and Europe as a mere fact of life, pretending that flooding millions of Muslim migrants from Greater Israel Project wars of her Zionist making is not part of the Axis-of-Evil agenda to destroy the West.[490] It is, and her last statement is a boldface lie and she knows it. While hypocritically accepting open border migration as a "get used to it" NWO reality for the nation she supposedly serves, her own beloved Jewish State as the actual nation she loyally serves has always steadfastly maintained a rigid policy completely refusing to accept ethnic and religious diversity of any kind at and within its borders.

Let's look at the effects of her Anglo-American-Zionist Empire. Jewish usury moneylenders triggered Jesus' temple tantrum and paper credit introduced fractional reserve banking out of thin air,[491] traced back to cabbalist-rooted, anti-Jesus Knights of Templar during the Crusades (see Chapter 4). From that lineage the unholy trinity of Anglo-American-Zionism now holds humanity hostage, drowning in insurmountable debt slavery with an embedded pedophilia blackmail-bribery system controlling compromised puppets to do Empire's dirty bidding.

The crime cabal outrageously extorts $40 billion from American taxpayers alone as military aid supporting the Jewish State's "final solution" - its genocidal policy against Arabs.[492] Both the US and UK governments' carte blanche loyalty to Israel has as much to do with sexual blackmail extortion as embracing Zionism's apartheid ethnic purge of an already decimated Palestinian population.[493] US President Trump's moving the US embassy to Jerusalem was simply the Anglo-American-Zionist cabal setting the stage for its ticking time bomb to Armageddon.[494]

Zionists like Oppenheimer can't face the fact that if Jeremy Corbyn ends up prime minister in favor of a sovereign state of Palestine, Israel may no longer rule the roost as it has for seven straight decades now. That's also why Israeli firsters from North America, Europe and Tel Aviv have had Iran in their crosshairs for nearly just as long. The evil controllers would prefer Armageddon over restructured balance of power in the Middle East where a sovereign Palestine, Iran and Syria emerge vibrantly independent from the death clutches of the Anglo-America-Zionist Empire in freefall hegemonic decline, relegating both Israel and Saudi Arabia to minor regional players. That's the real reason behind all the childish hissy fits, acted out temper tantrums and escalating tensions recently.

Rational, peace-loving citizens around the globe have long seen through this most nightmarishly insane, satanic endgame. But as long as aging British foul-mouthpieces like Oppenheimer-Hodge keep spouting off their own duplicitous hate with their worn-out, weaponized “anti-Semite” PC control card, rehashing Nazi Jewish death camps ad nauseam, calculatedly intent on turning free speech and inconvenient truths into codified hate crimes bent on imprisoning anyone daring to criticize their totalitarian Zionist-Marxist fascist agenda, make no mistake, in actuality they are openly, desperately promoting their long-awaited Luciferian-Illuminati-Fabian inspired pedo-cabal of one world governance.

Today’s Labor Party leader Jeremy Corbyn may be much maligned when it comes to Israel,[495] but when it comes to protecting British care home children from chronic sexual abuse in his own Islington-North London district, sad to say, it’s the children who remain most maligned as his record isn’t much different from Hodge’s. As longtime Islington MP, Jeremy has also apparently failed miserably to help abused children. Way back in 1992 and 1993, the good folks Liz Davies, David Cofie, Eileen Fairweather and articulate victim-survivor Demetrious Panton (among others) all had individual meetings with the House of Commons rising star Corbyn, and all report that to their face, he appeared supportive and sympathetic to their cause, claiming he would inquire further to assist stopping the widespread cancer of child sex abuse rocking his and their community (especially after the Dame seized control over the Islington council in 1982). But all the anti-abuse whistleblowers and advocates who met with Jeremy, to a person were gravely disappointed, maintaining that he never once contacted them again, never mentioning the scandal publicly, nor thanking them for courageously putting their lives on the line presenting and exposing the irrefutable evidence to him and the public. Their unanimous verdict - **Corbyn was of no help at all**.[496]

Moreover, back in the mid-1980s and 90s, after Tory MP Geoffrey Dickens first accused Westminster-Downing Street VIPs of pedophilia, even drawing specific attention to an alleged child brothel operating at Islington’s Elthorne housing state, Corbyn registered a formal complaint with the House Speaker, angry that without informing Jeremy, Dickens had gone to his constituency, Corbyn territorially called the snooping Dickens “irresponsible” on February 17, 1986.[497] Think how many lives could have been saved from the horror of abuse had Corbyn actually taken urgent measures to help protect children by joining forces with the one brave whistleblowing MP who first brought the Westminster scandal to the public’s attention in 1984 with the infamous dossier that pedophile Sir Leon Brittan lost. But instead MP Jeremy Corbyn accused Dickens in the press of “getting cheap publicity at the expense of innocent children.”[498] Unfortunately, like so many of his colleagues, Corbyn denigrated Geoffrey Dickens, ridiculing him for his “wild antics,” and wrongly dismissing all his truthful accusations as unwarranted fuss, melodrama and “cheap publicity” stunts over nothing.

When asked to comment on the July 2015 *Daily Mail* story exposing Corbyn’s apparent failure to act on what he’d learned in the early 1990s from all the insiders he’d met face-to-face with, his office released the following statement:

Jeremy Corbyn has a long record of standing up for his constituents. He called for an ***independent inquiry into child abuse in Islington at the time, and has taken this strong line ever since****.[499]*[**Bold** for emphasis]

Really? Other than the single one line statement below in reply to Eileen Fairweather’s piece in the *Evening Standard* in 1992 that broke the horrendous abuse story:

> *These allegations are extremely serious and must be properly investigated.*[500]

No other words or actions by Corbyn can be found, nor is there any public record of Corbyn’s alleged “inquiry” “at the time.” Too bad he apparently never put any of his words or promises “at the time” when first confronted with the truth into any observable action on behalf of so many of his abused children suffering in his district’s group homes. Only when Corbyn was presented with indisputable evidence in person did he ever respond at all, and then merely paying lip service, never backing up his vowed support with any further actions or acknowledgement of any public crisis. Astute anti-abuse advocate Demetrious Panton poignantly points out:

> *I am aware that Mr Corbyn is an active campaigner for the protection of human rights of a range of people, including those who have never been his constituents. I am not aware that he ever deployed his obvious zeal and effort to ensure that the human rights of his constituents who were abused while in the care of the London borough of Islington, were protected.*[501]

It then seems a fair and accurate conclusion to draw that political expediency during Jeremy’s early career not to rock the boat won out over his acting on the moral and legal imperative to protect his own constituent children being horribly abused “at the time.”

In 2014 Jeremy Corbyn made the following statement in the House of Commons:

> *There have been complaints about Islington children's homes in the past and the council has investigated them.*[502]

Corbyn’s latter contention is totally false. Islington council has only pretended to investigate the widespread abuse while overtly and aggressively obstructing justice by losing and destroying evidence at every turn, and either ignored, rejected or suppressed claims by victims, social workers, witnesses and whistleblowers. Any so called internal investigations by the council are nothing but thinly veiled cover-ups. Virtually all the child abusers have been allowed to go free with almost none ever charged for their crimes and brought to justice. And the complicit Jeremy Corbyn knows this.

Another blemish filed under the crowded meme, “oops, I didn’t know,” is the fact that Jeremy Corbyn’s constituency agent was Derek Sawyer, the Hodge successor as Islington council leader presiding over the borough for a total of seven years. Derek Sawyer has been a permanent political heavyweight in the local government, first becoming a Labor party council member when Margaret Hodge assumed her position as council leader in 1982 and taking over for her a decade later in 1992 in the thick of the erupting scandal.[503] With his years leading the council in 1992-94 and again in 1997 to 2002,[504] his lengthy span on the Islington council dates from 1982 all the way to 2006. For a quarter century Derek Sawyer held top positions overseeing Islington police operations and probation services as well as the London magistrate courts.[505] He worked under and with not only Hodge but two other Blairites Jack Straw and Stephen Twigg.

The same year that Hodge resigned and Sawyer took over was also the same year that whistleblowers Liz Davies and David Cofie sat in Corbyn’s office sharing the horrific child abuse scandal with the MP who publicly did nothing to assist endangered and abused children. If there ever was a key witness to the nefarious goings-on in Islington for three decades it would be Derek Sawyer. Yet he too claims he never knew abuse was running rampant in all dozen care homes and defended both his own as well as Margaret Hodge’s record and reputation, insisting they did everything legally proper in protecting children on their watch.[506] That in and of itself is simply not true or the abuse would neither have been so pervasive or long lasting. That kind of double talk renders Sawyer even less credible. But the kicker is his super close association with one of Britain’s most notorious, three-time convicted child beating pedophiles.

Derek Sawyer maintained a 40-year friendship with Derek Slade going back to their college days as well as maintained an enduring business partnership involving four different organizations. Boasting he was the best man at Sawyer’s wedding, for many decades the brutally sadistic serial child abusing headmaster Derek Slade beat and sodomized boys as young as 8 at St. George’s School in Suffolk and numerous others to follow.[507] In 1986 when Slade was arrested for violently assaulting one of his students, Sawyer was the character witness who kept Slade out of jail. Slade’s abuse fit the same familiar pattern as Catholic priests allowed to move from church to church to continue abusing. Slade went on from Suffolk to damage more kids at a school in Sussex, where he was arrested and convicted yet again, somehow managing to avoid prison.

Four days prior to the 1995 Ian White report that Sawyer was forced to commission exposing the Islington abuse, Derek Sawyer and Derek Slade cofounded International British Education Projects (IBEP) together, raising money for building international schools in Swaziland and India.[508] Again, Sawyer was complicit, assisting his business partner to change his name (using a dead kid’s name Slade picked from a graveyard) and as chairman of IBEP, supported Slade in assuming a new identity as director of education of an IBEP school in Swaziland where Slade abused yet more boys in Africa. From 1978 right up to his 2010 conviction and 21-year prison sentence (based solely on abuse crimes committed in Britain from 1978 to 1983), Derek Slade physically and sexually assaulted hundreds of victims on three continents for over 30 years. A lawsuit representing abused boys in India was somehow quashed. Again, through his contacts with prominent established figures like best bud Derek Sawyer, Slade's reign of terror over children entrusted in his care committing over 50 convicted offenses of child sexual abuse, child pornography and child physical assault, all the while supported and seemingly protected by Sawyer and friends.

Roger Cook's half-hour *BBC* documentary entitled "An Abuse of Trust" succinctly chronicles Derek Slade's marathon crime spree,[509] reminiscent of such despicable creeps as Jimmy Savile and Cyril Smith. Though predictably, Jeremy Corbyn's onetime constituency agent Derek Sawyer claims he never knew his friend and partner was a habitual child sex fiend, Sawyer remains neck deep in complicity in both Margaret Hodge's gross mishandling and abuse cover-up as well as enabling a monster on the loose to ruin so many lives for so long. In March 2016, after serving the first half dozen of his 21 year sentence, Derek Slade died at age 66.[510] Sawyer's feeble excuse "I never knew" is a stretch for all but the brain dead.

Though no one can accuse either Derek Sawyer or Jeremy Corbyn of child abuse per se, both their poor judgment and enabling of sex crimes through inaction certainly can and should be called into question. The potential future prime minister of the United Kingdom has seemingly been given a free pass by the press on his culpability in Britain's child sexual abuse epidemic, at its worst in his own backyard. No one in government except MP John Mann has directly confronted Corbyn on his dereliction of duty to protect his child constituents.[511] And what appears most troubling is a statement made in the House of Commons by Corbyn to then Home Secretary May on November 3, 2014:

Finally in my own borough of Islington there have been complaints about Islington children's homes in the past and the council has investigated them.[512]

If he is claiming Islington council ever actually investigated its own abuse, he's dead wrong. The council sat on and withheld the 1995 White report conducted by an outsider for 20 years before releasing a heavily redacted version in 2014.[513] And the White report lambasted Islington council for its abject failure to protect its children. At no time has Islington council on its own effort ever produced anything but a whitewash in the countless go rounds it calls investigations. MP Mann wrote an open letter to his Labor leader colleague:

Your carefully worded excusing of Islington Council in the House of Commons equally demonstrates why it is inappropriate for you to attempt to lead the Labour Party at the critical time of the Goddard Enquiry [IICSA]*, as child abuse is the issue that will haunt this Parliament.*[514]

Though Mann was seemingly the only odd man out faulting Corbyn on his shoddy child abuse record, the Labor Party leader has managed to retain his position for over three years now despite formidable challenges and opposition, led by Hodge blasting him for his so called "anti-Semitism" because he insists on standing up for the rights of the Palestinians.

At this point as an anti-abuse child advocate, here's what I would say to Mr. Corbyn as a means of redemption for his failing children in the past.

As the UK Labor Party leader, it's never too late to make up for past mistakes by uniting with your fellow party peer Mr. Watson to finally do something real about your country's most shameful and disgraceful blight neglecting and damaging your own children, no longer allowing your powerful degenerate peers to forever live above the law without consequence. For that matter, I implore you to use your position and considerable power and influence to unite the world in leading humanity to finally begin protecting the earth’s children as our most precious resource from the godless evildoers who’ve been in control, as no more worthy a human rights cause exists than saving our most innocent, defenseless and vulnerable human population.

If you champion this most worthy cause, you will go far in restoring integrity to the world of politics and faith to millions of skeptical, wary citizens proving that there still does exist at least one public servant and leader who actually does care about the people he’s taken sworn oaths to represent and protect. Fighting for children to bring justice against the VIP criminals would generate such a sweeping, massive groundswell of populist appeal and support that it could easily carry you to becoming the next British prime minister. And perhaps with other major world leaders like Vladimir Putin and Donald Trump, who have both publicly recognized the global epidemic scourge of pedophilia for what it is, together you three could take the lead in making this your urgent priority, ultimately creating a far safer world for our children, humanity and our collective future.

Before closing this long winding road of a chapter, it’s important to point out that former Prime Minister Tony Blair worked for the MI5 prior to becoming Labor Party leader.[515] Have you wondered why virtually all the usual Labor suspects throughout this chapter at an early age started out as left leaning communists and then underwent a fundamental ideological paradigm shift as they ascended the political cesspit ladder carrying out marching orders of the totalitarian Luciferian elite? In Blair’s case, he was employed as an MI5 spy to infiltrate radical circles as an informer for British intelligence. David Shayler, ex-MI5 counterterrorism officer, has disclosed that during his entire political career Blair was a controlled puppet strings attached to both MI5 and Mossad as his political handlers. That explains his meteoric rise from obscure Labor MP to a decade later party leader and three more years to prime minister. He was the elite's choice as their infiltrating order following mole from the get-go, no different from the Bushes, Clintons and Obama. Again, in synch with FDR's slip of the pen admission that leaders are never actually elected by the people but are simply chosen oftentimes at a young age by the planetary controllers using intelligence services as their chosen ones' primary handlers and protectors.

Finally, the hidden hand of MI5 and MI6 left fingerprints all over Scotland's 1996 Dunblane Massacre murdering 19 schoolchildren and teacher in cold blood by a notorious pedophile Hamilton who ran a VIP pedo-ring involving Lord George Robertson. The sticky loose ends prompting the trigger-happy D-notice kid to immediately slap a press blackout for the next 100 years will be given its full due attention in Chapter 25 covering Scotland's pedophilia cover-ups. The intel services and Blair's subversive role in the Madeleine McCann disappearance and the international pedo-network will be detailed in Chapter 26.

The next Chapter 24 addresses the heart of the government pedophilia epidemic unveiling the crimes in Westminster and Richmond committed at the favorite VIP haunts - the Elm Guest House and Dolphin Square.

Notes

---

[1] Sonia Poulton, "Paedophile MPs are Mocking British Law," *Express*, March 2, 2014, https://www.express.co.uk/comment/expresscomment/462601/Paedophile-MPs-are-mocking-British-law.

[2] Sonia Poulton, https://www.express.co.uk/comment/expresscomment/462601/Paedophile-MPs-are-mocking-British-law.

[3] Sonia Poulton, https://www.express.co.uk/comment/expresscomment/462601/Paedophile-MPs-are-mocking-British-law.

[4] Colin Todhunter, “Poisoned Agriculture: Depopulation and Human Extinction,” *CounterPunch*, November 10, 2015, https://www.counterpunch.org/2015/11/10/poisoned-agriculture-depopulation-and-human-extinction/.

[5] Michael Snyder, “One World Government: How The Elite Dominate The World – Part 5: The Endgame Is Complete And Utter Global Domination,” *theeconomiccollapseblog.com*, 2015, http://theeconomiccollapseblog.com/archives/tag/one-world-government/

[6] “The Breaking UK VIP Paedophile Scandal. What We Know So Far (Mainstream Sources),” *Investment Watch*, July 27, 2014, http://www.investmentwatchblog.com/the-breaking-uk-vip-paedophile-scandal-what-we-know-so-far-mainstream-sources-i-just-wanted-to-put-it-all-in-one-place/.

[7] Kevin Barrett, “Bush and Blair: Blackmailed Pedophiles or just War Criminals?” *Veterans Today*, June 21, 2014, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2014/06/21/bushnblair/.

[8] Kevin Barrett, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2014/06/21/bushnblair/.

[9] “Top UK Paedophile Rings,” *aangirfan.com*, September 1, 2011, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2011/08/top-uk-pedophile-rings.html.

[10] Tony Blair and Child Abusers,” *aangirfan.com*, February 12, 2010, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2010/02/tony-blair-and-child-abusers.html.

[11] “Top UK Paedophile Rings,” https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2011/08/top-uk-pedophile-rings.html.

[12] Joseph De Burca, “Sex Abuse Musical Chairs,” *Village Magazine*, June 12, 2017, https://villagemagazine.ie/index.php/2017/06/sex-abuse-musical-chairs/.

[13] Marcello Mega, “Blair’s School Mentor was Sex Abuser,” *Sunday Times/Spotlight on Abuse*, May 25, 1997, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2014/08/18/blairs-school-mentor-was-sex-abuser-25-05-97/.

[14] Hannah Perry, “Alt-Right Poster boy Milo Yiannopoulos gets Married in Hawaii - but Crops out his new Husband's Face from all Social Media Pics,” *Daily Mail*, October 1, 2017, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4938912/Milo-gets-married-Hawaii.html.

[15] Anthony T. Stokes, “Tony Blair as ‘Miranda’ He who Pays the Piper,” *whale.to*, http://whale.to/c/tony_blair4.html.

[16] Anthony T. Stokes, http://whale.to/c/tony_blair4.html.

[17] Christopher Bollyn, "Zionists Subjugate Nations by Controlling their Political Parties," *therearenosunglasses.blogspot.com*, November 23, 2008, https://therearenosunglasses.wordpress.com/2008/11/23/zionists-subjugate-nations-by-controlling-their-political-parties/.

[18] Tobias Langdon, "A Very Jewish Scandal: The Newmark Affair as Paradigm of Jewish Corruption," *Occidental Observer,* March 15, 2018, https://www.theoccidentalobserver.net/2018/03/15/a-very-jewish-scandal-the-newmark-affair-as-paradigm-of-jewish-corruption/.

[19] Rebecca Camber and Sam Greenhill, "Levy Welcomes Blair, Wedding Guest of Honor," *Daily Mail*, July 30, 2007, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-471689/Levy-welcomes-Blair-wedding-guest-honour.html.

[20] Rebecca Camber and Sam Greenhill, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-471689/Levy-welcomes-Blair-wedding-guest-honour.html.

[21] "World Dictatorship-Committee of 300 Led by British-Swiss-Rothschilds Crime Syndicate," *Concise Politics*, October 29, 2017, https://concisepolitics.com/2017/10/29/world-dictatorship-the-committee-of-300-led-by-british-swiss-rothschilds-crime-syndicate/comment-page-1/.

[22] "Prince William's Jewish Mentor, who has Links to 9/11," *aangirfan.com*, January 18, 2010, http://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2010/01/prince-williams-jewish-mentor-who-has.html.

[23] "Britain and 9 11 : Sir David Manning was in Washington on 9 11," *aangirfan.com*, April 6, 2005, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2005/04/britain-and-9-11-sir-david-manning-was.html.

[24] Ann Karpf, "Uncle Sam's Lucky Finds," *The Guardian*, March 19, 2002, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2002/mar/19/september11.iraq.

[25] "Tony Blair's Iraq Advisor wins £50,000 US Defence Job," *Daily Mail*, November 17, 2008, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1086222/Tony-Blairs-Iraq-adviser-wins-50-000-U-S-defence-job.html.

[26] Raf Sanchez and Hannah Furness, "Prince William's Middle East Tour Causes Controversy as Palestinians claim it is 'Indirect Apology,'" *The Telegraph,* June 22, 2018, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2018/06/22/prince-williams-middle-east-tour-causes-controversy-palestinians/.

[27] Christopher Bollyn, "Exposing the Zionist Hidden Hand that Rules Britain and the United States," *whale.to*, December 20, 2007, http://www.whale.to/b/bollyn90.html.

[28] Wayne Madsen, "Tony Blair Declares News Black-out on Pedophilia Investigations," *OpEd News/WMR*, April 5, 2007, https://www.opednews.com/articles/opedne_wayne_ma_070405_tony_blair_declares_.htm.

[29] Mike James, "Are Paedophiles running Blair's War Machine?" *CounterPunch,* January 29, 2003, https://www.counterpunch.org/2003/01/29/are-pedophiles-running-blair-s-war-machine/.

[30] “Child Porn Arrests ‘too slow,’” *The Sunday Herald/cigpapers.files.wordpress.com*, January 19, 2003, https://cigpapers.files.wordpress.com/2013/04/9b757-sundayheraldchildpornarreststooslow.jpg.

[31] “Child Porn Arrests ‘too slow,’” https://cigpapers.files.wordpress.com/2013/04/9b757-sundayheraldchildpornarreststooslow.jpg

[32] Neil Sears, "'What I did was Insane': The Who's Pete Townshend breaks nine year Silence on Child Pornography Scandal," *Daily Mail*, September 28, 2012, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2209821/The-Whos-Pete-Townshend-breaks-year-silence-child-pornography-scandal.html.

[33] "Did PM Tony Blair Cover up Paedophile Scandal? List of Child Sex Offenders in British Government," *sott.net*, October 10, 2012, https://www.sott.net/article/253318-Did-PM-Tony-Blair-cover-up-paedophile-scandal-List-of-child-sex-offenders-in-British-government.

[34] Wayne Madsen, https://www.opednews.com/articles/opedne_wayne_ma_070405_tony_blair_declares_.htm.

[35] David Isenberg, "It's Déjà Vu for DynCorp all over again," *Huffington Post*, December 6, 2010, https://www.huffingtonpost.com/david-isenberg/its-dj-vu-for-dyncorp-all_b_792394.html.

[36] Wayne Madsen, https://www.opednews.com/articles/opedne_wayne_ma_070405_tony_blair_declares_.htm.

[37] "Child Porn Suspects Blame Fraud," *BBC*, May 10, 2007, http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/uk_news/6641321.stm.

[38] "Did PM Tony Blair Cover up Paedophile Scandal? List of Child Sex Offenders in British Government," https://www.sott.net/article/253318-Did-PM-Tony-Blair-cover-up-paedophile-scandal-List-of-child-sex-offenders-in-British-government.

[39] Ann St. Claire, "Rothschild's Friend Sir Anthony Blunt and their International Child Abuse Ring," *1776again.com*, January 10, 2018, http://www.1776again.com/2018/01/10/rothchilds-friend-sir-anthony-blunt-their-international-child-abuse-ring/.

[40] Wayne Madsen, https://www.opednews.com/articles/opedne_wayne_ma_070405_tony_blair_declares_.htm.

[41] Anthony T. Stokes, "Did Rothschild Blackmail UK to Aid Israel in 1956?" *henrymakow.com*, October 8, 2011, https://www.henrymakow.com/suez.html.

[42] "Rothschild and the Gay Cambridge Apostles," *aangirfan.com*, June 25, 2013, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2013/06/rothschild-and-gay-cambridge-apostles.html.

[43] Anthony T. Stokes, "Did Rothschild Blackmail UK to Aid Israel in 1956?" *henrymakow.com*, October 8, 2011, https://www.henrymakow.com/suez.html.

[44] Paul Cahalan and James Hanning, "Paedophile Ring Leader, Colin Peters, Linked to Barnes Scandal," *Independent*, March 3, 2013, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/paedophile-ring-leader-colin-peters-linked-to-barnes-scandal-8518078.html.

[45] "Mysterious Derek Laud," *aangirfan.com*, October 25, 2012, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2012/10/mysterious-derek-laud.html.

[46] "UK Government Document Confirms over 2,000 Child Sex Abuse Files Destroyed," *whale.to*, February 3, 2015,

http://whale.to/c/uk_government_document6.html.

[47] "Keywords: Pedophilia "tip of the iceberg," *duckduckgo.com*, https://duckduckgo.com/?q=pedophilia+is+only+tip+of+the+iceberg&t=h_&ia=web.

[48] "Partial List of Convicted British Paedo Politicians," *cuttingthroughthematrix.com*, https://cuttingthroughthematrix.com/articles/Partial_List_of_Convicted_British_Paedo_Politicians.html.

[49] Leo McKinstry, "The Left's Web of Shame: It's not just Harman, Dromey and Hewitt. As we Reveal, many other members of Britain's Ruling Liberal Elite held Senior Posts at the NCCL when it was closely Linked to Paedophiles," *Daily Mail*, March 1, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2570675/The-Lefts-web-shame-Its-not-just-Harman-Dromey-Hewitt-As-reveal-members-Britains-ruling-liberal-elite-held-senior-posts-NCCL-closely-linked-paedophiles.html.

[50] "Paul Boateng," *rovolvy.com*, https://www.revolvy.com/topic/Paul%20Boateng.

[51] "Paul Boateng," *100greatblackbritons.com*, http://100greatblackbritons.com/bios/paul_boateng.html.

[52] "Anguish of Care Kids," *News of the World/spotlightonabuse.com,* October 23, 1983, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2014/04/26/anguish-of-care-kids-23-10-83/.

[53] "Paul Boateng; Godfather: Sex Ring," *aangirfan.com*, March 3, 2016, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/05/child-abuse-ring-godfather.html.

[54] Fiona Barnett, "Connections between CIA Child Trafficking, Ritual Abuse and MK-Ultra Mind Control," *fionabarnett.org*, August 2, 2018, https://fionabarnett.org/2018/08/02/connections-between-cia-child-trafficking-ritual-abuse-mk-ultra-mind-control/.

[55] Eleanor Busby, "Hundreds more Children 'Farmed out' to Care Homes Miles from where they live despite Pledge to cut number," *Independent*, May 8, 2018, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/politics/children-in-care-residential-homes-missing-paedophiles-drugs-gangs-adoption-a8340006.html.

[56] Tim Stickings, "More than 10,000 Children in Care went Missing last year amid Fears of Exploitation by Child Grooming Gangs," *Daily Mail*, April 21, 2018, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5642017/More-10-000-children-care-went-missing-year.html.

[57] "Children in Care Numbers 'Rise to 90,000,'" *ITV News*, January 13, 2014, https://www.itv.com/news/update/2014-01-13/number-of-children-rises-for-seventh-year-to-90-000/.

[58] May Bulman, "Record Number of Children in Care as Social Services Reach 'Tipping Point,'" *Independent*, October 12, 2017, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/social-care-crisis-uk-children-figures-per-day-a7995101.html.

[59] Eleanor Busby, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/politics/children-in-care-residential-homes-missing-paedophiles-drugs-gangs-adoption-a8340006.html.

[60] “Cultural Marxism: The Hidden Agenda Destroying America,” *The Millennium Report*, July 29, 2018, http://themillenniumreport.com/2018/07/cultural-marxism-the-hidden-agenda-destroying-america/.

[61] Murun Buchstansangur, “How Margaret Hodge’s Policies Allowed Paedophiiles to Infiltrate Islington’s Children’s Homes,” *spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, April 30, 2013, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/04/30/how-margaret-hodges-policies-helped-paedophiles-infiltrate-islington-childrens-homes/.

[62] Leo McKinstry, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2570675/The-Lefts-web-shame-Its-not-just-Harman-Dromey-Hewitt-As-reveal-members-Britains-ruling-liberal-elite-held-senior-posts-NCCL-closely-linked-paedophiles.html.

[63] Murun Buchstansangur, “Strange Days: How Paedophile Pressure Groups were Allowed to Lobby and Infiltrate the Home Office,” *spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, November 10, 2014, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2014/11/10/strange-days-how-paedophile-pressure-groups-were-allowed-to-lobby-and-infiltrate-the-home-office/.

[64] Murun Buchstansangur, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/04/30/how-margaret-hodges-policies-helped-paedophiles-infiltrate-islington-childrens-homes/.

[65] Tim Walker, "Margaret Hodge has told Gordon Brown she wants to leave, say Friends," *The Telegraph*, September 27, 2008, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/newstopics/mandrake/3089499/Margaret-Hodge-has-told-Gordon-Brown-she-wants-to-leave-say-friends.html.

[66] Murun Buchstansangur, "Were Islington and Lambeth Paedophile Rings Connected?" *spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, March 23, 2013, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/03/23/were-islington-and-lambeth-paedophile-rings-connected/.

[67] "Lambeth Police Station Paedo Sex Ring Dungeon Scandal," *tapnewswire.com*, May 29, 2014, http://tapnewswire.com/2014/05/lambeth-police-station-paedo-sex-ring/.

[68] Eileen Fairweather, "Jimmy Savile Sex Abuse: 'Islington is still Covering up,'" *The Telegraph*, April6, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/10746412/Jimmy-Savile-sex-abuse-Islington-is-still-covering-up.html.

[69] "Lambeth Police Station Paedo Sex Ring Dungeon Scandal," http://tapnewswire.com/2014/05/lambeth-police-station-paedo-sex-ring/.

[70] Shan Lancaster, "Boys in Wimpy Bar 'Sold for Gay Sex,'" *The Sun/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, May 3, 1986, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2016/01/28/boys-in-wimpy-bar-sold-for-gay-sex/.

[71] Eileen Fairweather, "'I have known about Jersey Paedophiles for 15 years,' says Award-Winning Journalist," *Daily Mail*, March 2, 2008, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-523706/I-known-Jersey-paedophiles-15-years-says-award-winning-journalist.html.

[72] Richard Palmer, "Child Abuse Sex Ring Found," *Sunday Times/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, August 1, 1993, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/03/10/child-abuse-sex-ring-found-1-8-93/.

[73] Peter Rose and Stephen Wright, "Even Worse," *Daily Mail/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, February 18, 2000, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2014/02/mail180200a.jpg.

[74] Nick Davies, "The Epidemic in our Midst that went Unnoticed," *The Guardian/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, June 2, 1998, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/03/08/the-epidemic-in-our-midst-that-went-unnoticed-2-6-98/.

[75] Christian Wolmar, "Home Truths," *Independent/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, October 8, 2000, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/04/03/home-truths-8-10-00/.

[76] Alex Varley-Winter, "Police Privately Admit 'Cover-up' for Paedophile MPs and VIPs," *Exaro News*, December 13, 2014, https://www.exaronews.com/police-privately-admit-cover-up-for-paedophile-mps-and-vips/

[77] Mark Conrad, “MP Paedophiles were ‘Untouchables’ – Ex-Special Branch Officer,” *Exaro News*, November 22, 2014, https://www.exaronews.com/mp-paedophiles-were-untouchables-ex-special-branch-officer.

[78] Jason Bennetto, “Paedophile Network Abused 200 Children,” *Independent/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, February 19, 2000, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/02/26/paedophile-network-abused-200-children-19-2-00/.

[79] “Operation Trawler and Operation Middleton: Blair Ministers and the Lambeth Care Home,” *sceptiicpeg.wordpress.com*, September 15, 2017, https://scepticpeg.wordpress.com/2017/09/15/operations-trawler-middleton-blair-ministers-lambeth-care-home-scandal/.

[80] Tom Pettifor, “Minister in Tony Blair’s Government among a Group of Men Suspected of Abusing Children at a Home run by Paedophile,” *Mirror*, April 27, 2014, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/tony-blair-minister-former-pms-3468050.

[81] “Paul Boateng; Godfather: Sex Ring,” http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/05/child-abuse-ring-godfather.html.

[82] James Tapsfield, “Go now! MP Demands Alexis Jay Quits as Chair of Government's Embattled Child Sex Abuse Inquiry as Victims Withdraw Support,” *Daily Mail*, November 18, 2016, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3948776/Now-VICTIMS-abandon-government-s-embattled-child-sex-abuse-inquiry-amid-mounting-questions-future.html.

[83] Nick Hopkins and Jake Morris, “The Council that Employed an Abuser to look after Children,” *BBC*, March 1, 2016, https://www.bbc.com/news/magazine-35686482.

[84] “Lambeth Police Station Paedophile Sex Ring Dungeon Scandal,” *cigpapers.blog*, April 2, 2013, https://cigpapers.blog/2013/04/02/lambeth-police-station-paedophile-sex-ring-dungeon-scandal/.

[85] Sam Christie, “Where is Shirley Oaks Children’s Home, when did the Sexual Abuse take place there and how much Compensation will they Receive?” *The Sun*, December 16, 2016, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/2414692/shirley-oaks-childrens-home-sexual-abuse-how-much-compensation-will-victims-receive/.

[86] “Shirley Oaks Abuse Campaign Finds ‘32 Paedophiles,’” *BBC*, December 10, 2015, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-england-london-35058827.

[87] Arthur Martin, Emily Kent Smith and Tom Kelly, “Every Child in Care Home at the Centre of Sexual Abuse on an ‘Industrial Scale’ to get a Share of £40million Payout,” *Daily Mail*, December 15, 2016, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4037852/700-former-residents-children-s-home-centre-sexual-abuse-industrial-scale-set-multi-million-pound-payout-carrying-investigation-scandal.html.

[88] Tom Marshall, “Children ’Abused on an Industrial Scale’ at South London Care Homes,” *Evening Standard*, March 24, 2016,

https://www.standard.co.uk/news/politics/children-abused-on-industrial-scale-at-south-london-care-homes-a3211341.html.

[89] "Sex Abuse Inquiry Suffers Fresh Setback as Survivors Group Quits," *ITV News*, November 18, 2016, https://www.itv.com/news/2016-11-18/sex-abuse-inquiry-suffers-fresh-setback-as-survivors-group-quits/.

[90] Martin Hickman, "Was there a Paedophile Ring in No 10? MP Tom Watson Demands Probe," *Independent/21st Century Wire*, October 24, 2012, https://21stcenturywire.wordpress.com/2012/10/24/was-there-a-paedophile-ring-in-no-10-you-bet-mp-tom-watson-demands-probe/.

[91] Martin Evans, "VIP Paedophile Accuser 'Nick' to Stand Trial Accused of Perverting the Course of Justice, and Fraud," *The Telegraph*, November 19, 2018, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2018/11/19/trial-date-set-vip-paedophile-accuser-nick-perverting-course/.

[92] "Shirley Oaks Survivors," *shirleyoakssurvivorsassociation.co.uk*, https://www.shirleyoakssurvivorsassociation.co.uk/.

[93] Pippa Crerer, "Council Proposes Paying out £100m to Victims of Abuse at Shirley Oaks Children's Home," *Evening Standard*, December 8, 2017, https://www.standard.co.uk/news/london/council-proposes-paying-out-100m-to-victims-of-abuse-at-shirley-oaks-childrens-home-a3714106.html.

[94] Ros Wynne Jones, "Drugged and Abused for a Decade in 'Paedophiles' Paradise' – the Extraordinary Story how one man Fought back and Won for many Victims," *Mirror*, March 1, 2018, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/drugged-abused-decade-paedophiles-paradise-12111109.

[95] Sandra Laville, "Lambeth Council to Pay Tens of Millions to Child Abuse Survivors," *The Guardian*, December 15, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2016/dec/15/lambeth-council-pay-tens-of-millions-pounds-child-abuse-survivors-shirley-oaks.

[96] Nick Beake and Josephine McDermott, "Shirley Oaks Abuse: Calls for Case of Hanged Boy to be Reopened," *BBC*, October 27, 2015, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-england-london-34648935.

[97] Nick Beake and Josephine McDermott, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-england-london-34648935.

[98] Ros Wynne Jones, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/drugged-abused-decade-paedophiles-paradise-12111109.

[99] Arthur Martin, Emily Kent Smith and Tom Kelly, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4037852/700-former-residents-children-s-home-centre-sexual-abuse-industrial-scale-set-multi-million-pound-payout-carrying-investigation-scandal.html.

[100] Nick Hopkins and Jake Morris, https://www.bbc.com/news/magazine-35686482.

[101] Arthur Martin, Emily Kent Smith and Tom Kelly, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4037852/700-former-residents-children-s-home-centre-sexual-abuse-industrial-scale-set-multi-million-pound-payout-carrying-investigation-scandal.html.

[102] Harriet Sherwood, “Catholic Priest Jailed for 12 Years for Sexually Abusing 13 Children,” *The Guardian*, August 10, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2016/aug/10/catholic-priest-philip-temple-jailed-12-years-sexually-abusing-13-children.

[103] Ros Wynne Jones, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/drugged-abused-decade-paedophiles-paradise-12111109.

[104] Ian Cobain, “Paedophile Jailed for Ten Years may have Abused Hundreds,” The Times/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com, April 12, 2001, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2014/02/27/paedophile-jailed-for-ten-years-may-have-abused-hundreds-12-04-01/.

[105] David Mitchell, “Inquiries into Alleged Sex Assault on Child in Care,” *Community Care/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, July 31, 1986, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2014/04/29/lambeth-councils-monkton-street-nursing-home-timeline/.

[106] David Mitchell, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2014/04/29/lambeth-councils-monkton-street-nursing-home-timeline/.

[107] Peter Burden, avid Williams and Gill Swain, “Police Quiz on Child Sex at Council Home,” *Daily Mail/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.wordpress.com*, September 1, 1986, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2014/02/mail010986.jpg.

[108] Robert Galvin, “No Charges in Kids’ Home Sex Row,” *South London Press/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, November 25, 1986, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2014/04/slp251186.jpg.

[109] Robert Galvin, “Cops Rapped in Sex Abuse Row,” *South London Press/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, December 5, 1986, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2014/04/29/lambeth-councils-monkton-street-nursing-home-timeline/.

[110] Robert Galvin, “Council Curb on Help for Police,” *South London Press/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, December 19, 1986, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2014/04/20140428_101710.jpg.

[111] David Williams and Peter Buren, “Evil Men in Child Sex case ‘must not go free,’” *Daily Mail/spotlightonabuse.com*, December 3, 1986, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2014/02/mail031286.jpg.

[112] Nick Hopkins and Jake Morris, https://www.bbc.com/news/magazine-35686482.

[113] Niall Hickman, “Scandal of Vile Child Sex Ring,” *South London Press/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, October 20, 1992, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/02/26/scandal-of-vile-sex-ring-20-10-92/.

[114] Kim Sengupta, “Care Worker had Paedophile Record,” *Independent*, July 6, 1999, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/care-worker-had-paedophile-record-1104540.html.

[115] Kim Sengupta, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/care-worker-had-paedophile-record-1104540.html.

[116] Murul Buchstansangur, “Janet Boateng: Former Chair of Lambeth Social Services Committee,” *spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, October 20, 2013, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/10/20/janet-boateng-former-chair-of-lambeth-social-services-committee/.

[117] “Lambeth: Operations Trawler and Middleton: Blair Ministers and Lambeth Home Care Scandal,” *scepticpeg.wordpress.com*, September 15, 2017, https://scepticpeg.wordpress.com/2017/09/15/operations-trawler-middleton-blair-ministers-lambeth-care-home-scandal/.

[118] Nick Hopkins and Jake Morris, https://www.bbc.com/news/magazine-35686482.

[119] “A North Wales Timeline,” *secretofbrynesyn.wordpress.com*, https://secretofbrynestyn.wordpress.com/north-wales-abuse-timeline/comment-page-1/.

[120] Louise Sassoon, “Cop Axed from case after bid to Quiz Labour Peer Lord Boateng about Paedophilia,” *Mirror*, March 2, 2016, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/cop-axed-case-after-bid-7475713.

[121] “Lambeth: Operations Trawler and Middleton: Blair Ministers and Lambeth Home Care Scandal,” https://scepticpeg.wordpress.com/2017/09/15/operations-trawler-middleton-blair-ministers-lambeth-care-home-scandal/.

[122] Tom Pettifor, “Tony Blair’s Minister Accused of Helping Convicted Paedophile to Foster Young Boys,” *Mirror*, July 7, 2014, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/tony-blairs-minister-accused-helping-3822224.

[123] Ross Hawkins, “’Cover-up to Protect Politicians after Abuse Claims,’” *BBC*, July 25, 2014, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-28477179.

[124] Louise Sassoon, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/cop-axed-case-after-bid-7475713.

[125] Tom Pettifor, “Tony Blair Demands Investigation into Claims one of his Ministers Sexually Abused Children,” *Mirror*, May 1, 2014, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/tony-blair-demands-investigation-claims-3484990.

[126] “Cover-up of Blair Minister Child Abuse,” *aangirfan.com*, November 14, 2014, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/04/cover-up-of-blair-minister-child-abuse.html.

[127] Tom Pettifor, “Blair Government was Briefed about Paedophile Probe Involving Labour Minister before it was Halted,” *Mirror*, July 23, 2015, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/blair-government-briefed-police-paedophile-6123122.

[128] Tom Pettifor, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/blair-government-briefed-police-paedophile-6123122.

[129] Jason Silverstein, "Top Cop in Britain Questioned by his own Detectives for Role in Alleged Cover-up of Sex Abuse Claims against Tony Blair Minister," *New York Daily News*, March 18, 2015, http://www.nydailynews.com/news/world/top-uk-questioned-role-sex-abuse-coverup-article-1.2153329.

[130] Tom Pettifor, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/blair-government-briefed-police-paedophile-6123122.

[131] Jason Bennetto, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/02/26/paedophile-network-abused-200-children-19-2-00/.

[132] Rose Hill, "Stephen Lawrence Murder Detective Clive Driscoll Reveals Catalyst for 'Solving entire Case,'" *Mirror*, April 20, 2018, https://www.mirror.co.uk/tv/tv-news/stephen-lawrence-murder-detective-clive-12394548.

[133] Lauren Probert and Holly Christodoulou, "Lord Boateng in Paedo Link Quiz after Detective 'Axed from Abuse Probe over bid to speak to Labour Minister,'" *The Sun*, March 2, 2016, https://www.thesun.ie/news/266165/lord-boateng-in-paedo-link-quiz-after-detective-axed-from-abuse-probe-over-bid-to-speak-to-labour-minister/.

[134] Tom Pettifor, "Paedo MP Cover-up Claim: Top Cop Removed from Sex Abuse Probe after Naming Politicians as Suspects," *Mirror*, March 26, 2013, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/paedophile-mp-cover-up-claim-detective-1785273.

[135] Guy Adams, "Crack Scotland Yard Detective says Top Brass Sabotaged his Bid to Expose Blair Minister in Establishment Paedophile Ring," *Daily Mail*, July 24, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3173883/Crack-Scotland-Yard-detective-says-brass-sabotaged-bid-expose-Blair-minister-Establishment-paedophile-ring.html.

[136] Louise Sassoon, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/cop-axed-case-after-bid-7475713.

[137] Tom Pettifor, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/tony-blair-minister-former-pms-3468050.

[138] Clive Driscoll, *In Pursuit of the Truth* (London: Ebury Press, 2015), https://www.amazon.co.uk/Pursuit-Truth-Clive-Driscoll/dp/178503006X.

[139] Cathy Fox, "Lambeth Part 4 – Clive Driscoll the Truth about Child Sexual Abuse in Lambeth," *cathyfox.wordpress.blog*, September 10, 2015, https://cathyfox.wordpress.com/2015/09/10/lambeth-part-4-clive-driscoll-in-pursuit-of-the-truth/.

[140] Guy Adams, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3173883/Crack-Scotland-Yard-detective-says-brass-sabotaged-bid-expose-Blair-minister-Establishment-paedophile-ring.html.

[141] "What Links Michael Jackson, Jimmy Savile and Mr. X?" *aangirfan.com*, March 1, 2014, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2014/03/what-links-michael-jackson-jimmy-savile.html.

[142] Keily Oakes, “Jackson’s Visit Raises Eyebrows,” *BBC*, June 14, 2002, http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/entertainment/2044889.stm.

[143] Guy Adams, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3173883/Crack-Scotland-Yard-detective-says-brass-sabotaged-bid-expose-Blair-minister-Establishment-paedophile-ring.html.

[144] Guy Adams, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3173883/Crack-Scotland-Yard-detective-says-brass-sabotaged-bid-expose-Blair-minister-Establishment-paedophile-ring.html.

[145] Tom Pettifor, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/paedophile-mp-cover-up-claim-detective-1785273.

[146] Tom Pettifor, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/paedophile-mp-cover-up-claim-detective-1785273.

[147] Tom Pettifor, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/paedophile-mp-cover-up-claim-detective-1785273.

[148] Guy Adams, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3173883/Crack-Scotland-Yard-detective-says-brass-sabotaged-bid-expose-Blair-minister-Establishment-paedophile-ring.html.

[149] Tom Pettifor, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/paedophile-mp-cover-up-claim-detective-1785273.

[150] Tom Pettifor, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/paedophile-mp-cover-up-claim-detective-1785273.

[151] Brian Clites, “The Catholic Church’s Grim History of Ignoring Priestly Pedophilia – and Silencing would-be Whistleblowers,” October 9, 2018, https://www.phillyvoice.com/catholic-churchs-grim-history-ignoring-priestly-pedophilia-and-silencing-would-be-whistleblowers/.

[152] Rebecca Camber, “VIP Child Abuse Whistleblowers were ‘Murdered’: MP says Men were Poised to Lift Lid on Scandal,” *Daily News*, December 23, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2884471/VIP-child-abuse-whistleblowers-murdered-MP-says-men-poised-lift-lid-scandal.html.

[153] Tom Pettifor, “Was Bulic Forsythe Killed to Protect Paedophile Ring ‘Linked to Future Minister in Tony Blair’s Government?’” *Mirror*, May 21, 2014, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/bulic-forsythe-killed-protect-paedophile-3578788.

[154] Cathy Fox, https://cathyfox.wordpress.com/2015/09/10/lambeth-part-4-clive-driscoll-in-pursuit-of-the-truth/.

[155] Tom Pettifor, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/bulic-forsythe-killed-protect-paedophile-3578788.

[156] Rebecca Camber, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2884471/VIP-child-abuse-whistleblowers-murdered-MP-says-men-poised-lift-lid-scandal.html.

[157] Lee Brown, “Sex Den Found in Cop Shop,” *South London Press/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, November 1997, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/03/26/the-lambeth-police-station-sex-chamber/.

[158] Afua Hirsch, "Was Man Murdered for Exposing Paedophile Ring? *Sky News*, March 11, 2015, https://news.sky.com/story/was-man-murdered-for-exposing-paedophile-ring-10368317.

[159] Louise Garrett, Petrol Attack to Silence Rape Victim, *South London Press/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, June 2, 1995, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2013/03/slp2695.jpg.

[160] Louise Garrett, "'Godfather Tried to Block Rape Investigation," *South London Press/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, June 2, 1995, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/03/27/godfather-tried-to-block-rape-investigation-2-6-95/.

[161] "Shame-Faced Ex-Cop Jailed for Child Porn Pics," *Square Mile News*, January 31, 2011, http://squaremilenews.blogspot.com/2011/01/shame-faced-ex-cop-jailed-for-child.html.

[162] Jason Silverstein, http://www.nydailynews.com/news/world/top-uk-questioned-role-sex-abuse-coverup-article-1.2153329.

[163] Jonathan Clayton, "Boateng Rape Charge is Dropped," *The Times*, January 21, 2006, https://www.thetimes.co.uk/article/boateng-rape-charge-is-dropped-t8s8cm77sjb.

[164] Sarah Oliver, "Boateng thought he was Untouchable… the Son of Privilege who could get away with anything," *Daily Mail*, December 3, 2011, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2069594/Boateng-thought-untouchable--son-privilege-away-anything.html.

[165] Rebecca Camber and Jessica Satherley, "Seen for the first time: Lord Boateng's Sex Attacker Son Grins for his Mugshot after Assault Arrest," *Daily Mail*, October 26, 2011, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2053762/Lord-Boatengs-sex-attacker-son-Benjamin-grins-mugshot-assault-arrest.html.

[166] Lynda Roughley, "Former Wirral Children's Care Home Boss Michael John Carroll Cleared of Historic Sex Abuse Charges," *Wirral, Globe*, January 18, 2018, https://www.wirralglobe.co.uk/news/15863193.Former_Wirral_children_s_care_home_boss_cleared_of_historic_sex_abuse_charges/.

[167] "Lambeth Police Station Paedophile Sex Ring Dungeon Scandal," *cigpapers.blog*, April 2, 2013, https://cigpapers.blog/2013/04/02/lambeth-police-station-paedophile-sex-ring-dungeon-scandal/.

[168] Matt Watts, "Sacked Paedophile Sues Lambeth for Wrongful Dismissal," *Your Local Guardian*, December 10, 2009, https://www.yourlocalguardian.co.uk/news/local/topstories/4784636.Sacked_paedophile_sues_Lambeth_for_wrongful_dismissal/.

[169] Virginia Hale, "UK Court Hears of Plot to Rape, Dissolve in Acid Children for Pleasure of Unnamed 'Top Politicians,'" *Breitbart*, February 14, 2018, https://www.breitbart.com/europe/2018/02/14/plot-rape-dissolve-girls-acid-court/.

[170] “VIP Plot has been heard, says Court,” *researchingreform.net*, March 2, 2018, https://researchingreform.net/2018/03/02/vip-plot-case-has-been-heard-says-court/.

[171] Lasha Darkmoon, “Snuff Porn Pedophilia: Killing Children for Sexual Pleasure,” *fourwinds10.com*, May 20, 2017, http://fourwinds10.com/siterun_data/health/abuse/pedophilia/news.php?q=1495289578.

[172] “Pakistani Paedophile Rings in the UK – Why and How?” *theukdatabase.com*, https://theukdatabase.com/uk-child-abusers-named-and-shamed/muslim-paedo-rings-in-the-uk-why-how/.

[173] “Peter Mandelson,” *revolvy.com*, https://www.revolvy.com/topic/Peter%20Mandelson&item_type=topic.

[174] Mike James, “Blair’s Protection of Elite Paedophile Rings Spells the End for his Career,” *Illuminati News*, July 20, 2006, http://www.illuminati-news.com/072006b.htm.

[175] Jon Swaine, “Peter Mandelson: Timeline of his Career,” *The Telegraph*, October 3, 2008, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/labour/3129952/Peter-Mandelson-Timeline-of-his-career.html.

[176] Anushka Asthana, “Blair reveals he ‘Toyed with Marxism’ after reading Book on Trotsky,” *The Guardian*, August 10, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2017/aug/10/blair-reveals-he-toyed-with-marxism-after-reading-book-on-trotsky.

[177] Sam Marsden, “Mandy Lobbied Blair to give Janner a Peerage after Sex Abuse Claims: Grandee said to have asked then-Labour Leader about Ennobling him ahead of 1997 Election,” *Daily Mail*, May 17, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3085573/Mandy-lobbied-Blair-Janner-peerage-sex-abuse-claims-Grandee-said-asked-Labour-leader-ennobling-ahead-1997-election.html.

[178] “Peter Mandelson,” *whale.to*, http://whale.to/c/peter_mandelson.html.

[179] “Peter Benjamin Mandelson,” *Prabook*, https://prabook.com/web/peter.mandelson/881046.

[180] Vanessa Allen, “Peter Mandelson Stays Silent over his Contact with Prince Andrew's Disgraced Financier Friend,” *Daily Mail*, March 7, 2011, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1364001/Peter-Mandelson-silent-contact-Prince-Andrew-friend-Jeffrey-Epstein.html.

[181] “Peter Mandelson,” http://whale.to/c/peter_mandelson.html.

[182] Mike James, “Revealed: British Prime Minister Gordon Brown is a Paedophile,” *The Truth Seeker*, March 14, 2010, http://www.thetruthseeker.co.uk/?p=12346.

[183] Peter Walker, “Nat Rothschild Loses Libel Case against Daily Mail over Mandelson Trip,” *The Guardian*, February 10, 2012, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2012/feb/10/nat-rothschild-loses-libel-daily-mail.

[184] Murray Wardrop, “Lord Mandelson’s Empire: 35 Cabinet Committee Posts,” *The Telegraph*, July 22, 2009, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/5882622/Lord-Mandelsons-empire-35-Cabinet-committee-posts.html.

[185] Murray Wardrop, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/5882622/Lord-Mandelsons-empire-35-Cabinet-committee-posts.html.

[186] Martin Evans, “Nathaniel Rothschild says Sauna with Lord Mandelson was Purely Pleasure, not Business,” *The Telegraph*, January 25, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/9036927/Nathaniel-Rothschild-says-sauna-with-Lord-Mandelson-was-purely-pleasure-not-business.html.

[187] Misha Glenny, Robert Booth and Tom Parfitt, “US Refused Oligarch Visa over Alleged Criminal Associations,” *The Guardian*, October 31, 2008, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2008/oct/31/oleg-deripaska-us-visa-rusal.

[188] Peter Walker, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2012/feb/10/nat-rothschild-loses-libel-daily-mail.

[189] Andrew Higgins and Kenneth P. Vogel, “Two Capitals, One Russian Oligarch: How Oleg Deripaska is trying to Escape U.S. Sanctions,” *The New York Times*, November 4, 2018, https://www.nytimes.com/2018/11/04/world/europe/oleg-deripaska-russia-oligarch-sanctions.html.

[190] John P. Thomas, “Artificial Clouds and Geoengineering: Public Exposed to Toxic Chemicals,” *Health Impact News*, 2015, https://healthimpactnews.com/2015/artificial-clouds-and-geoengineering-pubic-exposed-to-toxic-chemicals/.

[191] Alfred Lambremont-Webre, “HAARP/Chemtrails WMD,” *Exopolitics*, August 13, 2014, https://theforeigninstallation.wordpress.com/articles/haarp-chemtrails-wmd/.

[192] “Did PM Tony Blair Cover up Paedophile Scandal? List of Child Sex Offenders in British Government,” https://www.sott.net/article/253318-Did-PM-Tony-Blair-cover-up-paedophile-scandal-List-of-child-sex-offenders-in-British-government.

[193] “UK Parliamentary Clerk Charged,” *BBC*, August 2, 2002, http://edition.cnn.com/2002/WORLD/europe/08/30/norway.pornography/index.html.

[194] “Commons Clerk Jailed over Child Porn,” *BBC*, August 19, 2003, http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/uk_news/england/essex/3164581.stm.

[195] “Paedophile Politicians,” *sites.google.com*, https://sites.google.com/site/paedophilepoliticians/.

[196] Matt Chorley, “No 10 Aide Arrested in Child Porn Probe had been subject of Staff Complaint about ‘Inappropriate Behaviour,’” *Daily Mail*, March 4, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2573017/Cameron-profoundly-shocked-No-10-aide-arrested-child-porn-did-three-weeks-public.html.

[197] “The World According to Kissinger,” *The Telegraph*, May 21, 2011, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/worldnews/us-politics/8528270/The-world-according-to-Henry-Kissinger.html.

[198] Stephen Bates, “After 30 years as a Closet Catholic, Blair finally puts Faith before Politics,” *The Guardian*, June 22, 2007, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2007/jun/22/uk.religion1.

[199] Ian Gallagher, “Tony Blair’s Priest Fixed Papal Knighthoods for Cash: Senior Catholic took up to £50k Donations for Honours,” *Daily Mail*, October 12, 2012, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1370323/Tony-Blairs-priest-fixed-papal-knighthoods-cash.html#ixzz4Qj7hgDKM.

[200] Luke Heighton, “Revealed: Tony Blair Worth a Staggering £60m,” *The Telegraph*, June 12, 2015, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/tony-blair/11670425/Revealed-Tony-Blair-worth-a-staggering-60m.html.

[201] Kate Ferguson, “Tony Blair was ‘Paid Millions’ by a Wealthy Arab State while Working as Middle East Peace Envoy, Emails Reveal,” *Daily Mail*, August 14, 2017, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4788780/Tony-Blair-UAE-payroll-Middle-East-envoy.html.

[202] Mike James, “Revealed: British Premier Gordon Brown is a Pedophile,” *rense.com*, February 28, 2010, https://rense.com/general89/brownpd.htm.

[203] Mike James, http://www.the"truthseeker.co.uk/?p=12346.

[204] Sean O’Neill, “Sir John Major and Gordon Brown will give Evidence to Child Sex Abuse Inquiry,” *The Times*, July 11, 2017, https://www.thetimes.co.uk/article/sir-john-major-and-gordon-brown-will-give-evidence-to-child-sexual-abuse-inquiry-lwsdcxgg5.

[205] David Nova, “The Control of Central Banks Worldwide by Rothschild,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, January 26, 2017, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica2/esp_sociopol_rothschild59.htm.

[206] John Earl Haynes and Harvey Klehr, “J. Robert Oppenheimer: A Spy? No. But a Communist once? Yes.” *The Washington Post/historrynewsnetwork.org*, February 12, 2012, https://historynewsnetwork.org/article/144583.

[207] Fritz Springmeier, “The Power of the Rothschilds,” *rense.com*, August 12, 2007, https://rense.com/general77/POWERS.HTM.

[208] Veli Mbele, “The Fall of Cecil Rhodes and the Rise of Black Power in Africa,” *Counter Punch*, April 3, 2015, https://www.counterpunch.org/2015/04/03/the-fall-of-cecil-rhodes-and-the-rise-of-black-power-in-africa/.

[209] “Margaret Hodge,” *revolvy.com*, https://www.revolvy.com/topic/Margaret%20Hodge.

[210] “The Story of Stemcor,” *Financial Times/steelguru.com*, July 28, 2013, https://steelguru.com/steel/the-story-of-stemcor-the-financial-times/320286.

[211] Tunde Folawiyo, “The History of the London School of Economics,” *tundefolawiyo.org*, April 21, 2014, http://www.tundefolawiyo.org/tunde-folawiyo-history-london-school-economics/.

[212] “Margaret Hodge,” https://www.revolvy.com/topic/Margaret%20Hodge.

[213] Leo McKinstry, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2570675/The-Lefts-web-shame-Its-not-just-Harman-Dromey-Hewitt-As-reveal-members-Britains-ruling-liberal-elite-held-senior-posts-NCCL-closely-linked-paedophiles.html.

[214] Andrew Gilligan, "The 'Right' to Sleep with Children was one 'Civil Liberty' that NCCL Supported," *The Telegraph*, February 21, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/comment/10653944/The-right-to-sleep-with-children-was-one-civil-liberty-that-NCCL-supported.html.

[215] James Murray and James Fielding, "'We can't Prove Sex with Children does them Harm' says Labour-linked NCCL," *The Telegraph*, March 2, 2014, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/462604/We-can-t-prove-sex-with-children-does-them-harm-says-Labour-linked-NCCL.

[216] "Sir Henry Hodge," *The Telegraph*, June 22, 2009, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/law-obituaries/5604735/Sir-Henry-Hodge.html.

[217] Andrew Gilligan, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/comment/10653944/The-right-to-sleep-with-children-was-one-civil-liberty-that-NCCL-supported.html.

[218] Eileen Fairweather, "Jimmy Savile Sex Abuse: 'Islington is still Covering up,'" *The Telegraph*, April 6, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/10746412/Jimmy-Savile-sex-abuse-Islington-is-still-covering-up.html.

[219] Colin Hughes, "Jack Straw: Jack of all Tirades," *The Guardian*, July 24, 1999, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/1999/jul/24/labour.jackstraw.

[220] "Justice Ministry to Bar Parents from telling their own Stories," *Independent*, February 15, 2009, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/media/press/justice-ministry-to-bar-parents-from-telling-their-own-stories-1622154.html.

[221] Brian Shilhavy, "Child Sex Trafficking through Child 'Protection' Services Exposed – Kidnapping Children for Sex," *Health Impact News*, 2015, https://healthimpactnews.com/2015/child-sex-trafficking-through-child-protection-services-exposed-kidnapping-children-for-sex/.

[222] GF Hobbs, CJ Hobbs and JM Wayne, (1999), "Abuse of Children in Foster and Residential Care," *Child Abuse & Neglect*, 23 (12), p.1239–52, https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/abs/pii/S0145213499000964.

[223] Beatrix Campbell, "The Scale of Historical Sexual Abuse in the UK is a Catastrophe. We need Catharsis," *The Guardian*, September 12, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2016/sep/12/child-sex-abuse-inquiry-uk-scale-catastrophe.

[224] "Straw's Brother on Sex Register," *BBC*, September 8, 2000, http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/uk_news/916179.stm.

[225] Chris Irvine, "Russell Brand Jokes about Jack Straw's Son's Drug use on Twitter," *The Telegraph*, April 7, 2009, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/technology/twitter/5117124/Russell-Brand-jokes-about-Jack-Straws-sons-drug-use-on-Twitter.html.

[226] "Patricia Hewitt's Son Fined for Cocaine," *The Guardian*, September 30, 2009, https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2009/sep/30/patricia-hewitt-son-birtles-cocaine.

[227] "Blair's Son 'Drunk and Incapable,'" *BBC*, July 6, 2000, http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/uk_news/821720.stm.

[228] Alex Renton, "Abuse in Britain's Boarding Schools: Why I Decided to Confront my Demons," *The Guardian*, May 4, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2014/may/04/abuse-britain-private-schools-personal-memoir.

[229] Natalie Corner, "Paedophile Teacher Insists 'Intimate Relationships' with young Pupils is Normal at British Boarding Schools - as Documentary Lifts the Lid on the Shocking Scale of Sexual Abuse," *Daily Mail*, February 19, 2018, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/femail/article-5408899/ITV-Exposure-programme-investigates-boarding-school-abuse.html.

[230] Kevin Barrett, "FBI Child Pimp Raid Ignores the Elite," *Veterans Today*, August 1, 2013, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2013/08/01/fbi-pedo/.

[231] Ben Madigan, "Vile Bodies – Mutual Secrets, Mutual Blackmail," *eurofree3.wordpress.com*, September 23, 2015, https://eurofree3.wordpress.com/2015/09/23/vile-bodies-mutual-secrets-mutual-blackmail/.

[232] Makia Freeman, "Black Magic: Satanists Rule the World, not Politicians, Bankers or Military Heads," *The Freedom Articles*, August 20, 2015, http://freedom-articles.toolsforfreedom.com/satanic-black-magic-rules-the-world/.

[233] May Bulman, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/social-care-crisis-uk-children-figures-per-day-a7995101.html.

[234] Guy Adams, "A Blind Eye to Child Abuse: Whistleblowers Warned Labour Leadership Favourite Jeremy Corbyn of Paedophiles Preying on Children on his Doorstep - but claim he did nothing," *Daily Mail*, July 31, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3181783/Did-Jeremy-Corbyn-try-protect-fellow-Left-wingers-implicated-paedophile-scandal.html.

[235] Guy Adams, "Apologists for Paedophilia: As the Mail Exposes more links between Senior Labour Figures and a Vile Paedophile Group, one Man who was Abused as a Child asks them: why won't you Admit you were Wrong?," *Daily Mail*, February 22, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2565352/Apologists-paedophilia-As-Mail-exposes-links-senior-Labour-figures-vile-paedophile-group-one-man-abused-child-asks-wont-admit-wrong.html.

[236] "The Mountain of Evidence for a Massive International Pedophile Ring Protected by Police and Intelligence Agencies," *The Millennium Report*, December 13, 2016, http://themillenniumreport.com/2016/12/the-mountain-of-evidence-for-a-massive-international-pedophile-ring-protected-by-police-and-intelligence-agencies/.

[237] Paul Bentley, "Home Office 'gave Paedophile Information Exchange £70,000': Group allegedly given Taxpayers' Money between 1977 and 1980," *Daily Mail*, March 2, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2571632/Home-Office-gave-Paedophile-Information-Exchange-70-000-Group-allegedly-given-taxpayers-money-1977-1980.html.

[238] Nick Gutteridge, “Ted Heath ‘Fixed it for Jimmy Savile to get OBE and Attended Paedophile Group Meetings,’” *Express*, August 9, 2015, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/597181/Ted-Heath-Jimmy-Savile-OBE-attend-Paedophile-Information-Exchange.

[239] Jennifer Smith, “Peter Hayman Named as VIP who Sexually Abused Boys at Dolphin Square apartment Complex near Parliament,” *Daily Mail*, November 9, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2827378/Diplomat-Peter-Hayman-named-VIP-sexually-abused-boys-Dolphin-Square-apartment-complex-near-Parliament.html.

[240] John Pearson, “Sex, Lies, Downing Street and the Cover-up that left the Krays Free to Kill,” *Daily Mail*, August 20, 2010, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1304827/Sex-lies-Downing-Street-cover-left-Krays-free-kill.html.

[241] Matthew Steeples, “The Rt. Hon. Margaret Hodge MBE MP (also known as Lady Hodge),” *The Steeple Times*, July 4, 2012, http://thesteepletimes.com/the-roll-call/observers-2/presenters-and-politicians/the-rt-hon-margaret-hodge-mbe-mp-also-known-as-lady-hodge/.

[242] Diane Paul, “Fabians, Progressives and Eugenics,” *blog.fair-use.org*, September 11, 2007, http://blog.fair-use.org/2007/09/11/fabians-progressives-and-eugenics/.

[243] “The Fabian Society – Creeping Communism,” *fourwinds10.com*, September 3, 2009, http://www.fourwinds10.com/siterun_data/religion_cults/news.php?q=1252088437.

[244] “The Fabian Society: A Brief History,” *The Guardian*, August 13, 2001, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2001/aug/13/thinktanks.uk.

[245] Evgeny Lebedev, “Caped Crusaders: What really goes on at the Knights of Malta’s Secretive Headquarters?” *Independent*, March 29, 2014, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/world/europe/caped-crusaders-what-really-goes-on-at-the-knights-of-maltas-secretive-headquarters-9217469.html.

[246] “Israel/Zionist Control of UK Government,” *whale.to*, http://whale.to/c/israel_control.html.

[247] “The Fabian Society: A Brief History,” https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2001/aug/13/thinktanks.uk.

[248] “The Fabian Society – Creeping Communism,” http://www.fourwinds10.com/siterun_data/religion_cults/news.php?q=1252088437.

[249] Gilad Atzmon, “At Last, a Jewish Prime Minister,” *gilad.co.uk*, July 11, 2016, https://www.gilad.co.uk/writings/2016/7/11/at-last-a-jewish-prime-minister.

[250] Amy Southall, “Child Abuse Inquiry Member: ‘I was Silenced in 2015 to Ensure Theresa May could become Prime Minister,’” *talkradio.co.uk*, August 11, 2017, https://talkradio.co.uk/news/child-abuse-inquiry-member-i-was-silenced-2015-ensure-theresa-may-could-become-prime-minister.

[251] “Roland Gwynne Explained,” *everything.explained.today*, http://everything.explained.today/Roland_Gwynne/.

[252] Mary W. Maxwell, “Theresa May’s Father and his Death in a Car Crash,” *Gumshoe News*, October 10, 2017, https://gumshoenews.com/2017/10/10/theresa-mays-father-death-car-crash/.

[253] “Theresa May, Gordon Rideout, Bodkin Adams – Famous Eastbourne People,” *aangirfan.com*, July 2, 2016, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2016/07/famous-eastbourne-people.html.

[254] “Roland Gwynne Explained,” http://everything.explained.today/Roland_Gwynne/.

[255] Andreas Whittam-Smith, “Chichester Child Abuse: How did one small Church of England Diocese Produce so many Paedophile Reverends?” *Independent*, March 25, 2018, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/long_reads/chichester-paedophile-child-abuse-reverends-church-of-england-diocese-sex-offenders-a8270601.html.

[256] Mary W. Maxwell, https://gumshoenews.com/2017/10/10/theresa-mays-father-death-car-crash/.

[257] Tyler S. Bloyer, “Presidents are Selected, not Elected,” *steemit.com*, 2017, https://steemit.com/freedom/@tsbloyer/presidents-are-selected-not-elected.

[258] Matt Taylor, "Theresa May: Leadership of Lunacy," *Guerilla Democracy News*, June 8, 2017, http://guerrillademocracy.blogspot.com/2017/06/theresa-may-public-inquiries-special.html.

[259] Emily Finch, "Claim Council Workers 'Helped Paedophiles,'" *Islington Tribune*, October 6, 2017, http://islingtontribune.com/article/claim-council-workers-helped-paedophiles.

[260] Tony Sapiano, "Mr Nasty," *Daily Star/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, August 1, 1983, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2014/09/star010883.jpg.

[261] Nick Davies, "When Sex Abuse can lead to Murder," *The Guardian*, November 27, 2000, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2000/nov/27/childprotection.uk.

[262] Amanda Williams, "The 'Pied Piper of Paedophiles' Caught after 15 years on the run: Britain's most Wanted Child Abuser who Kidnapped and Sold Young Boys is Arrested at Heathrow," *Daily Mail*, November 18, 2012, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2234679/Britains-wanted-paedophile-Warren-Spinks-kidnapped-sold-young-boys-abuse-finally-caught-15-years-run.html.

[263] Julie Isherwood, "Runaway Boy Found in France," *Islington Gazette/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, November 11, 1983, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/12/27/islington-council-care-worker-abducted-13-year-old-boy-and-took-him-to-france-incomplete/.

[264] Steph Cockroft, "Notorious Paedophile Gang 'could have Covered up 17 Child Murders and be Linked to VIP Guest House,'" *Daily Mail*, November 20, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2842201/Notorious-paedophile-gang-covered-17-child-murders-linked-VIP-guest-house.html.

[265] James Morris, "This Week 30 Years Ago: Man on Trial for Stabbing Tony McGrane to Death," *Islington Gazette*, May 22, 2017, https://www.islingtongazette.co.uk/news/heritage/this-week-30-years-ago-man-on-trial-for-stabbing-tony-mccrane-to-death-1-5029158.

[266] Conman Jeremy Corbyn?" *aangirfan.com*, June 10, 2015, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2015/06/conman-jeremy-corbyn.html.

[267] Aida Edemariam, Margaret Hodge: "'The Tax you owe is a Duty. It's an Obligation,'" *The Guardian*, April 27, 2013, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2013/apr/27/margaret-hodge-tax-duty-interview?INTCMP=SRCH.

[268] Tom Symonds and Daniel De Simone, "Police to Investigate Geoffrey Dickens Sex Abuse Dossier," *BBC*, October 21, 2015, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-34597750.

[269] Steven Swinford, "Jeremy Corbyn Accused of Inaction over Paedophile Scandal," *The Telegraph*, July 23, 2015, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/labour/11758612/Jeremy-Corbyn-accused-of-inaction-over-paedophile-scandal.html.

[270] Murun Buchstansangur, "Brian Roycroft and the Tynside Children's Home Scandal," *spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, December 6, 2013,

https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/12/06/brian-roycroft-and-the-tyneside-childrens-home-scandal/.

[271] Peter McKenna, "Kincora: How Scandal was first Reported in 1980," *Belfast Telegraph*, January 24, 1980, https://www.belfasttelegraph.co.uk/news/northern-ireland/kincora-how-scandal-was-first-reported-in-1980-30417250.html.

[272] Alex Marauchak, Scandal of Top Cop and Rent Boys," *News of the World/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, May 11, 1986, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2014/05/21/scandal-of-top-cop-and-rent-boys-11-05-86/.

[273] Aida Edemariam, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2013/apr/27/margaret-hodge-tax-duty-interview?INTCMP=SRCH.

[274] Eileen Fairweather and Stewart Payne, "The Scandal at the Heart of Child Care," *Evening Standard/ spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, October 6, 1992, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2013/02/isling212.jpg.

[275] Liz Davies, "Open Letter to Margaret Hodge MP," *lizdavies.net*, August 3, 2014, https://lizdavies.net/academia/publications/comment-2/.

[276] David Cohen, Yes Minister, you were told about Child Abuse in the Care Homes, yet you Refused to Listen," *Evening Standard/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, June 30, 2003, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/02/28/yes-minister-you-were-told-about-child-abuse-in-the-care-homes-yet-you-refused-to-listen-30-6-03/.

[277] David Cohen, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/02/28/yes-minister-you-were-told-about-child-abuse-in-the-care-homes-yet-you-refused-to-listen-30-6-03/.

[278] Guy Adams, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3181783/Did-Jeremy-Corbyn-try-protect-fellow-Left-wingers-implicated-paedophile-scandal.html.

[279] John Hall, "Officer involved in 1992 Child Porn Arrest said five Suitcases Stuffed with Letters suggested links to Establishment and Senior Clergy," *Daily Mail*, July 9, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2685620/Why-didnt-investigate-Officer-involved-1992-child-porn-arrest-Peter-Righton-said-five-suitcases-stuffed-letters-home-suggested-links-establishment-senior-clergy.html.

[280] May Bulman, "Number of Children in Poverty Surges by 100,000 in a Year, Figures show," Independent, March 22, 2018, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/child-poverty-increase-children-family-benefit-households-a8268191.html.

[281] Sarah Marsh and Amanda Boateng, "Quarter of 14-year-old Girls in UK have Self-Harmed, Report finds," *The Guardian*, August 29, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2018/aug/29/quarter-of-14-year-old-girls-in-uk-have-self-harmed-report-finds.

[282] Guy Adams, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3181783/Did-Jeremy-Corbyn-try-protect-fellow-Left-wingers-implicated-paedophile-scandal.html.

[283] Vanessa Allen, "Paedophile at Centre of Historical Abuse Inquiry 'Visited Children's Homes around Britain and took Boys out' before Advising Home Office on Child Care System," *Daily Mail*, August 18, 2014,

https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2727662/Paedophile-centre-historical-abuse-inquiry-visited-children-s-homes-Britain-took-boys-advising-Home-Office-child-care-system.html.

[284] Sarah Carabott, “Malta again Fails to take Action to Fight Human Trafficking - US State Department,” *Times of Malta*, July 6, 2018, https://www.timesofmalta.com/articles/view/20180706/local/malta-again-fails-to-take-necessary-action-to-fight-human-trafficking.683689.

[285] Peter Rose, “An Abuse of Trust,” *Daily Mail/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, February 24, 1994, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/category/peter-righton/page/2/.

[286] “Evidence of ‘Organised Abuse’ and ‘Trade’ of Young Boys in Gozo Resurfaces,” *Independent*, August 17, 2014, http://www.independent.com.mt/articles/2014-08-17/news/evidence-of-organised-abuse-and-trade-of-young-boys-in-gozo-resurfaces-6228639745/.

[287] “Policeman Cleared of Child Rape; Righton, Napier, Henniker, Islington,” *aangirfan.com*, February 14, 2013, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2013/02/policeman-cleared-of-child-rape-righton.html.

[288] Stewart Payne and Eileen Fairweather, “Country House Hideaway of Disgraced Care Chief,” *Evening Standard/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, May 6. 1993, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/02/27/country-house-hideaway-of-disgraced-care-chief-6-5-93/.

[289] Christopher Wilson, “A Suicide, a Bankrupt and an Adulterer: The Perils of being one of Prince Philip’s 50+ Godchildren as the Duke becomes a Godfather again at 97,” *Daily Mail*, August 1, 2018, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-6017091/The-perils-one-Prince-Philips-50-godchildren.html.

[290] Corey Charlton, Former School Teacher and Partner of Paedophile Information Exchange Founder is Sentenced to 21 Months in Prison for Molesting an 11-year-old Boy in the 70s,” *Daily Mail*, September 28, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3252352/Former-school-teacher-partner-Paedophile-Information-Exchange-founder-sentenced-21-months-prison-molesting-11-year-old-boy-70s.html.

[291] “Richard Alston,” *loucollins.uk*, http://loucollins.uk/tag/richard-alston/.

[292] “Ardingly College Lodge No 4410,” *ardinglycollegelodge.org.uk*, http://www.ardinglycollegelodge.org.uk/index.html.

[293] Paul Peachey, “Tory MP’s Half-Brother Charles Napier Sentenced to 13 years over ‘Prolific’ Child Sex Abuse,” *Independent*, December 23, 2014, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/tory-mps-half-brother-charles-napier-sentenced-to-13-years-over-prolific-child-sex-abuse-9942651.html.

[294] “Policeman Cleared of Child Rape; Righton, Napier, Henniker, Islington,” https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2013/02/policeman-cleared-of-child-rape-righton.html.

[295] “UK Government Document Confirms over 2,000 Child Sex Abuse Files Destroyed, *whale.to*, February 3, 2015,

http://whale.to/c/uk_government_document6.html.

[296] Joe Murphy, “Tony's Cronies to give Labour Lords Majority; Blair Risks Row as Army of Retiring MPs are made Peers,” *Evening Standard/questia.com*, 2005, https://www.questia.com/newspaper/1G1-132008920/tony-s-cronies-to-give-labour-lords-majority-blair.

[297] “The Peerage: Virginia Hilda Brunette Maxwell Garnett, Baroness Bottomley of Nettlestone,” *peerage.com*, http://www.thepeerage.com/p16101.htm.

[298] “Spooks Versus Cameron; Daily Mail Psyops,” *aangirfan.com*, September 22, 2015, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2015/09/spooks-versus-cameron-daily-mail-psy-ops.html.

[299] “Peter Bottomley,” *revolvy.com*, https://www.revolvy.com/page/Peter-Bottomley.

[300] Jason Groves, “I'll Sue if anyone Links me to Untrue Paedophile Claims, says Tory Grandee Sir Peter Bottomley,” *Daily Mail*, July 7, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2683533/I-ll-sue-links-untrue-paedophile-claims-says-Tory-grandee-Peter-Bottomley.html.

[301] John Ward, “Revealed at last: The Hunt-Bottomley Link,” *The Slog*, October 10, 2012, https://hat4uk.wordpress.com/2012/10/10/revealed-at-last-the-hunt-bottomley-link/.

[302] Rowena Mason, “NHS Staff and Ex-Ministers should Face Action over Savile, says Jeremy Hunt,” *The Guardian*, June 26, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2014/jun/26/nhs-staff-jimmy-savile-jeremy-hunt.

[303] Rowena Mason, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2014/jun/26/nhs-staff-jimmy-savile-jeremy-hunt.

[304] Robert Mendick and Eileen Fairweather, “Margaret Hodge ‘Sorry’ as Council she led told to Investigate Savile Abuse Allegations,” *The Telegraph*, April 6, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/10747257/Margaret-Hodge-sorry-as-council-she-led-told-to-investigate-Savile-abuse-allegations.html.

[305] Jon Dean, “Fresh Savile Link to Islington Child Abuse Scandal,” *Islington Gazette*, November 20, 2014, http://www.islingtongazette.co.uk/news/crime-court/fresh-savile-link-to-islington-child-abuse-scandal-1-3854676.

[306] James Fielding, “Exclusive: Clockmaker Keith Harding Played Vital Role in Britain’s Biggest Child Sex Ring,” *Express*, May 10, 2015, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/576187/Keith-Harding-MPs-Leon-Brittan-Cyril-Smith-Jeremy-Thorpe.

[307] Andrew Johnson, “Islington Child Abuse Scandal that Haunts Margaret Hodge, Politician Poised to Run for Mayor of London,” *Islington Tribune*, September 19, 2014, http://archive.islingtontribune.com/news/2014/sep/islington-child-abuse-scandal-haunts-margaret-hodge-politician-poised-run-mayor-london.

[308] Eileen Fairweather, “’I have known about Jersey Paedophiles for 15 years,’ says Award-Winning Journalist,” *Daily Mail*, March 2, 2008,

https://www.mailonsunday.co.uk/news/article-523706/I-known-Jersey-paedophiles-15-years-says-award-winning-journalist.html.

[309] Eileen Fairweather, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/10746412/Jimmy-Savile-sex-abuse-Islington-is-still-covering-up.html.

[310] Eileen Fairweather, https://www.mailonsunday.co.uk/news/article-523706/I-known-Jersey-paedophiles-15-years-says-award-winning-journalist.html.

[311] Paul Waugh, "Another Minister under Fire: Call for Hodge to Quit over Child Abuse Scandal," *Independent*, July 1, 2003, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/politics/another-minister-under-fire-call-for-hodge-to-quit-over-child-abuse-scandal-111149.html.

[312] David Batty, "Timeline for the Climbié Case," *The Guardian*, September 24, 2001, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2001/sep/24/childrensservices.

[313] "Teenager Reveals full Horror of Shocking Ordeal Suffered by Baby P at the Hands of his Tormentors," *Daily Mail*, November 16, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1086284/Teenager-reveals-horror-Baby-Ps-shocking-ordeal-hands-tormentors.html.

[314] Eileen Fairweather, "Baby P Council Falsely Accused me of Abusing a Child, Reveals Whistleblower who Feared she'd Lose her Daughter," *Daily Mail*, November 16, 2008, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1086196/Baby-P-council-falsely-accused-abusing-child-reveals-whistleblower-feared-shed-lose-daughter.html.

[315] Eileen Fairweather, "Revealed: How a Close Male Relative of Baby P is Linked to a Big Paedophile Network," *Daily Mail*, November 16, 2008, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1086200/Revealed-How-close-male-relative-Baby-P-linked-big-paedophile-network.html.

[316] Eileen Fairweather, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1086200/Revealed-How-close-male-relative-Baby-P-linked-big-paedophile-network.html.

[317] Eileen Fairweather, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1086200/Revealed-How-close-male-relative-Baby-P-linked-big-paedophile-network.html.

[318] Eileen Fairweather, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1086200/Revealed-How-close-male-relative-Baby-P-linked-big-paedophile-network.html.

[319] Eileen Fairweather, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1086200/Revealed-How-close-male-relative-Baby-P-linked-big-paedophile-network.html.

[320] Eileen Fairweather, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1086200/Revealed-How-close-male-relative-Baby-P-linked-big-paedophile-network.html.

[321] Eileen Fairweather, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/10746412/Jimmy-Savile-sex-abuse-Islington-is-still-covering-up.html.

[322] Stewart Payne and Eileen Fairweather, "Country life of a Child Abuser; 'Rabet Recruited many young Boys to work at his Activity Centre,'" *Evening Standard/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, August 7, 1995, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/02/27/country-life-of-a-child-abuser-rabet-recruited-many-young-boys-to-work-at-his-activity-centre-7-8-95/.

[323] Eileen Fairweather, "'I do not Doubt Men in Smart Cars Preyed on Boys – but Justice Requires Detective work not Hearsay,'" *The Telegraph*, November 9, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/9668284/I-do-not-doubt-men-in-smart-cars-preyed-on-boys-but-justice-requires-detective-work-not-hearsay-.html

[324] Eileen Fairweather, https://www.mailonsunday.co.uk/news/article-523706/I-known-Jersey-paedophiles-15-years-says-award-winning-journalist.html.

[325] Eileen Fairweather, https://www.mailonsunday.co.uk/news/article-523706/I-known-Jersey-paedophiles-15-years-says-award-winning-journalist.html.

[326] Eileen Fairweather, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/10746412/Jimmy-Savile-sex-abuse-Islington-is-still-covering-up.html.

[327] Robert Mendick and Eileen Fairweather, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/10747257/Margaret-Hodge-sorry-as-council-she-led-told-to-investigate-Savile-abuse-allegations.html.

[328] Richard Palmer, "Child Abuse Sex Ring Found," *Sunday Times/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, August 1, 1993, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/03/10/child-abuse-sex-ring-found-1-8-93/.

[329] Murun Buchstansangur, "Was Islington the Center of a Vast Paedophile Network?" *spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, March 19, 2013, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/03/19/was-islington-at-the-centre-of-a-vast-paedophile-network/.

[330] David Cohen, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/02/28/yes-minister-you-were-told-about-child-abuse-in-the-care-homes-yet-you-refused-to-listen-30-6-03/.

[331] John Carvel, "Nanny State knows best, Hodge tells Critics," *The Guardian*, November 27, 2004, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2004/nov/27/childrensservices.politics.

[332] Guy Adams, "Apologists for Paedophilia: As the Mail Exposes more Links between Senior Labour Figures and a Vile Paedophile Group, one man who was Abused as a Child Asks them: Why won't you Admit you were Wrong?" *Daily Mail*, February 23, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2565352/Apologists-paedophilia-As-Mail-exposes-links-senior-Labour-figures-vile-paedophile-group-one-man-abused-child-asks-wont-admit-wrong.html.

[333] Roy Watkins, "Paedophile Investigation into Islington Council," *roywatkins.uk*, July 8, 2014, https://www.roywatkins.uk/paedophile-investigation-into-islington-council.

[334] Claire Cozens, “Minister tries to Halt Today Investigation,” *The Guardian*, November 11, 2003, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2003/nov/11/childrensservices.politicsandthemedia.

[335] “Hodge Apologizes to Abuse Victim,” *BBC*, November 14, 2003, http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/uk_news/politics/3270149.stm.

[336] Julie Bindel, “Overrated: Margaret Hodge,” *Standpoint Magazine*, April 2014, http://standpointmag.co.uk/overrated-april-14-margaret-hodge-julie-bindel-child-abuse-scandal?page=0%2C0%2C0%2C0%2C0%2C0%2C0%2C0%2C0%2C0%2C1.

[337] Benjamin Kentish, “Poorest Pay Higher Taxes than Richest, New Figures Show,” *Independent*, April 26, 2017, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/lowest-earners-more-tax-richest-office-national-statistics-inequality-council-tax-vat-equality-trust-a7704331.html.

[338] Leon Watson, “Multi-Millionaire Labour MP’s Family Business ‘Paid just 0.25% Tax on its Profits,’” *Daily Mail*, November 10, 2012, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2230915/Margaret-Hodge-Multi-millionaire-Labour-MPs-family-business-paid-just-0-25-tax-profits.html.

[339] Aida Edemariam, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2013/apr/27/margaret-hodge-tax-duty-interview?INTCMP=SRCH.

[340] Camilla Turner, “Veteran Labour MP Dame Margaret Hodge seeks Salary for a Voluntary University Pot,” *The Telegraph*, June 15, 2018, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/education/2018/06/15/veteran-labour-mp-dame-margaret-hodge-seeks-salary-voluntary/.

[341] Robert Mendick and Eileen Fairweather, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/10747257/Margaret-Hodge-sorry-as-council-she-led-told-to-investigate-Savile-abuse-allegations.html.

[342] James Morris, “‘Encouraging Steps’ for Islington Youth Crime Scheme – which has worked with 76 Gang Members in past year,” *Islington Gazette*, June 27, 2018, http://www.islingtongazette.co.uk/news/crime-court/islington-integrated-gangs-team-reports-progress-1-5580555.

[343] Britainthinks website, *britainthinks.com*, http://www.islingtongazette.co.uk/news/crime-court/islington-integrated-gangs-team-reports-progress-1-5580555.

[344] “Danny Finkelstein OBE,” *britainthinks.com*, http://britainthinks.com/team/danny-finkelstein-obe.

[345] Hannah Somerville, “Islington Child Abuse Survivors’ Network Reacts Angrily to Claims of ‘no Organized Abuse’ in Sandy Marks Report,” *Islington Gazette*, November 13, 2018, http://www.islingtongazette.co.uk/isn-response-sandy-marks-review-1-5777226.

[346] Emily Finch, “Islington Survivors of Child Abuse: ‘Review is a Massive Step back,’” *Islington Tribune*, November 9, 2018,

http://islingtontribune.com/article/islington-survivors-of-child-abuse-review-is-a-massive-step-back.

[347] Zoe Drewett, "Labour MP Turns on Jeremy Corbyn Calling him a ‘f***ing anti-Semite and a Racist,’” *Metro*, July 18, 2018, https://metro.co.uk/2018/07/18/labour-mp-turns-jeremy-corbyn-calling-fing-anti-semite-racist-7729431/.

[348] Margaret Hodge, “I was right to confront Jeremy Corbyn over Labour’s Antisemitism,” *The Guardian*, July 18, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2018/jul/18/jeremy-corbyn-labour-antisemitism-margaret-odge.

[349] Margaret Hodge, https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2018/jul/18/jeremy-corbyn-labour-antisemitism-margaret-hodge.

[350] Cathy Young, “Political Correctness: When Liberalism Stops being Liberal,” *Medium*, June 22, 2017, https://medium.com/s/liberal-illiberalisms/political-correctness-acf33f1cdc2d.

[351] Glenn Greenwald, “Greatest Threat to Free Speech in the West: Criminalizing Activism against Israeli Occupation,” *The Intercept*, February 27, 2016, https://theintercept.com/2016/02/16/greatest-threat-to-free-speech-in-the-west-criminalizing-activism-against-israeli-occupation/.

[352] Edgar J. Steele, “Hate Speech: Anything Jews Hate to Hear,” *rense.com*, January 10, 2004, https://rense.com/general47/anything.htm.

[353] “President Adam’s Law Prohibiting Freemasonry aka; Zionism,” *politicalvelcraft.org*, December 8, 2011, https://politicalvelcraft.org/2011/12/08/president-adams-law-prohibiting-freemasonry-aka-zionism/.

[354] “Friends of Israel,” *aagirfan.com/hollygreigjustice.blogspot.com*, September 4, 2018, https://holliegreigjustice.wordpress.com/2018/09/05/friends-of-israel/.

[355] Gordon Rayner, “Jimmy Savile Confessed to Reporter that he would be seen as ‘Crooked’ after his Death, *The Telegraph*, October 18, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9618674/Jimmy-Savile-confessed-to-reporter-that-he-would-be-seen-as-crooked-after-his-death.html.

[356] “Jersey Care Inquiry: Wilfred Krichefsky Accused of Rape,” *BBC*, December 5, 2014, https://www.bbc.com/news/world-europe-jersey-30350191.

[357] “What Links Michael Jackson, Jimmy Savile and Mr. X?” *aangirfan.com*, March 1, 2014, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2014/03/what-links-michael-jackson-jimmy-savile.html.

[358] Graeme Culliford, “Psychic Uri Geller Bonded with Theresa May over Spoon-Bending and Predicted she’d be Prime Minister,” *The Sun*, January 21, 2017, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/2674161/psychic-uri-geller-bonded-with-theresa-may-over-spoon-bending-and-predicted-shed-be-prime-minister/.

[359] “Theresa May, Uri Geller, Bodkin Adams, Gladio…,” *aangirfan.com/tapnewswire.com*, July 13, 2016, http://tapnewswire.com/2016/07/theresa-may-uri-geller-bodkin-adams-gladio/.

[360] Richard Price, “Forget Scientology, Celebs are now falling for an even more Sinister ‘Religion’: Introducing the Satanic Sex Cult that's Snaring Stars such as Peaches Geldof,” *Daily Mail*, April 21, 2013, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/femail/article-2312632/Introducing-Satanic-sex-cult-thats-snaring-stars-Peaches-Geldof.html.

[361] “Guilty by Association: Do the Clooneys ‘Heart’ Israel?” *The New Arab*, April 8, 2016, https://www.alaraby.co.uk/english/blog/2016/4/8/guilty-by-association-do-the-clooneys-heart-israel.

[362] Laura House, “Sonning: A Picture-Perfect British Village Where Privacy is Protected,” *Mansion Global News*, October 15, 2016, https://www.mansionglobal.com/articles/sonning-a-picture-perfect-british-village-where-privacy-is-protected-43080.

[363] Syarif Hidayat, “Zionists Control and Rule America and United Kingdom,” *hshidayat.blogspot.com*, August 14, 2014, https://hshidayat.wordpress.com/2014/08/14/zionists-control-and-rule-america-and-united-kingdom/.

[364] Lee Harpin, “Corbyn-Sceptic Think Tank on Brink of Collapse,” *Jewish Chronicle*, June 26, 2017, https://www.thejc.com/news/uk-news/corbyn-sceptic-think-tank-on-brink-of-collapse-1.440559.

[365] “Timeline: Margaret Hodge Row,” *The Guardian*, November 19, 2003, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2003/nov/19/childrensservices.childrensministry.

[366] Andrew Roth, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2001/mar/25/profiles.parliament6.

[367] John Ward, “The Paedophile: MI5 ‘gave Geoffrey Dickens Michael Portillo’s Name’ for his Dossier,” *The Slog*, February 8, 2015, https://hat4uk.wordpress.com/2015/02/08/the-paedofile-mi5-gave-geoffrey-dickens-michael-portillos-name-for-his-dossier/.

[368] Alex Naumov, “Royal Family Murdered Diana with the Help of MI6?” *Pravda,* December 15, 2006, http://www.pravdareport.com/hotspots/crimes/15-12-2006/85952-diana-0/.

[369] “Asil Nadir and the Secret Photographs,” *asilnadirandthesecretphotographs.blogspot.com*, April 22, 2016, http://asilnadirandthesecretphotographs.blogspot.com/.

[370] “Asil Nadir and the Secret Photographs,” http://asilnadirandthesecretphotographs.blogspot.com/.

[371] “Asil Nadir and the Secret Photographs,” http://asilnadirandthesecretphotographs.blogspot.com//

[372] “Child Abuse, Arms Deals, Murder, Deep State, Cyprus, Iraq, Wales,” *aangirfan.com*, November 23, 2012, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2012/11/child-abuse-arms-deals-murders-deep.html.

[373] “Asil Nadir and the Secret Photographs,” http://asilnadirandthesecretphotographs.blogspot.com/.

[374] Paul Harris, Judge Orders Fugitive Tycoon Asil Nadir to be Tagged as he Faces Court 17 years after Fleeing Britain," *Daily Mail*, September 4, 2010, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-1308691/Asil-Nadir-appears-court-17-years-fled-Britain-escape-fraud-trial.html.

[375] "Secret CIA Report," *asilnadirstitchedupbymaggiethatcher.blogspot.com*, April 22, 2016, http://asilnadirstitchedupbymaggiethatcher.blogspot.com/.

[376] "The Story of Project Babylon, British Spooks, Illegal Arms Deals, Murder and a Judicial State Conspiracy," *True Publica*, February 17, 2018, https://truepublica.org.uk/contributor-news/story-project-babylon-british-spooks-illegal-arms-deals-murder-judicial-state-conspiracy/.

[377] Asil Nader Jailed for 10 Years for Polly Peck Thefts," *BBC*, August 23, 2012, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-19352531.

[378] Louise Jury, "Satirical Paper's Editor Killed," *Independent*, September 9, 1996, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/satirical-papers-editor-killed-1362529.html.

[379] Louise Jury, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/satirical-papers-editor-killed-1362529.html.

[380] "Child Abuse, Arms Deals, Murder, Deep State, Cyprus, Iraq, Wales," https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2012/11/child-abuse-arms-deals-murders-deep.html.

[381] Tom Utley, "Who cares about Portillo's Past? Er, lots of us, actually," *The Telegraph*, June 20, 2001, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/comment/4263183/Who-cares-about-Portillos-past-Er-lots-of-us-actually.html.

[382] John Arledge, "'Many Wed after Gay Flings. They usually Relapse,'" *The Guardian*, September 12, 1999, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/1999/sep/12/thatcher.uk3.

[383] David Aaronovitch, "Michael Portillo's Sexual Past is Colourful - but it's his own Affair," *Independent*, September 10, 1999, https://www.independent.co.uk/arts-entertainment/michael-portillos-sexual-past-is-colourful-but-its-his-own-affair-1117478.html.

[384] James McMahon, "The Life and Death of Football's first Openly Gay Player," *Vice*, October 10, 2017, https://www.vice.com/en_uk/article/zm39e9/the-life-and-death-of-footballs-first-openly-gay-player.

[385] "Interview: Michael Portillo," *Five Star Magazine*, http://fivestarmagazine.co.uk/five-star-interviews/interview-michael-portillos-choice-hotels/.

[386] "Wikipedia Page Alteration: Has Derek Laud been 'Unfriended' by Tory Elite?" *21st Century Wire*, December 2, 2012, https://21stcenturywire.wordpress.com/tag/tory/.

[387] Nicole Martin, "*Barnardo's* Role for Cherie," *The Telegraph*, September 18, 2001, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/1340848/Barnardos-role-for-Cherie.html.

[388] “Cherie Blair made a CBE for Charity Work in New Year Honours,” *BBC*, December 29, 2012, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-20863784.

[389] Oliver Todd, “John Fashanu paid Brother Justin £75,000 to Stop him coming out as Gay after Begging him not to ‘Embarrass me or my family,’” *Daily Mail*, October 31, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/sport/sportsnews/article-3297705/John-Fashanu-paid-brother-Justin-75-000-stop-coming-gay-begging-not-embarrass-family.html.

[390] James McMahon, https://www.vice.com/en_uk/article/zm39e9/the-life-and-death-of-footballs-first-openly-gay-player.

[391] James McMahon, https://www.vice.com/en_uk/article/zm39e9/the-life-and-death-of-footballs-first-openly-gay-player.

[392] “Profile: The Striker who didn't Score: Justin Fashanu, Dribbling round Westminster,” *Independent*, February 12, 1994, https://www.independent.co.uk/voices/profile-the-striker-who-didnt-score-justin-fashanu-dribbling-round-westminster-1393543.html.

[393] “Gay Conservative and Rent Boys,” *aangirfan.com*, July 19, 2014, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/07/gay-conservative-and-rent-boys.html.

[394] Robert Mendick, “My Dad was a Predator like Savile, Claims Tory MP’s Son, *Independent*, July 21, 2014, https://www.independent.ie/world-news/europe/my-dad-was-a-predator-like-savile-claims-tory-mps-son-30446373.html.

[395] Guy Adams, “Did MI5 Murder Orange-in-Mouth Tory MP? Stephen Milligan supposedly Died after a Bizarre Sex Game - but Chilling Investigation Raises an even more Sinister Possibility after the Former Journalist ‘Unearthed British Illegal Arms Sales,’” *Daily Mail*, October 5, 2018, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-6245607/Did-MI5-murder-Stephen-Milligan-Investigation-raises-sinister-possibility.html.

[396] “Fashanu, Cabinet Ministers, Whistleblowers,” *aangirfan.com*, November 4, 2013, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2013/11/fashanu-cabinet-ministers-whistleblowers.html.

[397] Tony Gosling, “Child Abuse Scandal Raises Disturbing Questions about UK Establishment,” *RT*, August 15, 2014, https://www.rt.com/op-ed/180616-british-home-secretary-child-abuse/.

[398] “Fashanu, Cabinet Ministers, Whistleblowers,” https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2013/11/fashanu-cabinet-ministers-whistleblowers.html.

[399] William Tuohy, “Britain: Sex Scandals Contradict Tory Moralizing: Prime Minister John Major can't seem to Plug all the Leaks in his ‘back to basics’ Policy,” *Los Angeles Times*, January 15, 1994, http://articles.latimes.com/1994-01-15/news/mn-12048_1_john-major.

[400] Tony Gosling, https://www.rt.com/op-ed/180616-british-home-secretary-child-abuse/.

[401] “Fashanu, Cabinet Ministers, Whistleblowers,” https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2013/11/fashanu-cabinet-ministers-whistleblowers.html.

[402] Kevin Garside, “Forbidden Games: the Justin Fashanu Documentary that Exposes Sport’s Gay Taboo,” *i News*, October 5, 2017, https://inews.co.uk/culture/film/justin-fashanu-documentary-lays-bare-sports-enduring-gay-taboo/.

[403] “The Late Stephen Milligan MP,” *scribd.com*, https://www.scribd.com/document/256327891/The-late-Stephen-Milligan-MP-9-FACTS.

[404] Guy Adams, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-6245607/Did-MI5-murder-Stephen-Milligan-Investigation-raises-sinister-possibility.html.

[405] “The Late Stephen Milligan MP,” https://www.scribd.com/document/256327891/The-late-Stephen-Milligan-MP-9-FACTS.

[406] “The Late Stephen Milligan MP,” https://www.scribd.com/document/256327891/The-late-Stephen-Milligan-MP-9-FACTS.

[407] “Profile: The Striker who didn't Score: Justin Fashanu, Dribbling round Westminster,” https://www.independent.co.uk/voices/profile-the-striker-who-didnt-score-justin-fashanu-dribbling-round-westminster-1393543.html.

[408] Claire Toureille, “20 years after his Death, why Justin Fashanu is still so Influential to LGBT History,” *Pink News*, May 2, 2018, https://www.pinknews.co.uk/2018/05/02/justin-fashanu-footballer-gay-death-20-years/.

[409] Kevin Garside, https://inews.co.uk/culture/film/justin-fashanu-documentary-lays-bare-sports-enduring-gay-taboo/.

[410] Kate Watson-Smyth, “Justin Fashanu Found Hanged in Lock-up Garage,” *Independent*, May 4, 1998, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/justin-fashanu-found-hanged-in-lock-up-garage-1161425.html.

[411] Guy Adams, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-6245607/Did-MI5-murder-Stephen-Milligan-Investigation-raises-sinister-possibility.html.

[412] Guy Adams, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-6245607/Did-MI5-murder-Stephen-Milligan-Investigation-raises-sinister-possibility.html.

[413] Peter Eyre, “The Illegal Arms Trade: Iraq-Iran War 1980-1988,” *vijayvaani.com*, October 3, 2012, http://www.vijayvaani.com/ArticleDisplay.aspx?aid=2488.

[414] Michael Collins Piper, “Bush, Rockefeller, Rothschiild and Hitler,” *American Free Press*, January 23, 2013, https://americanfreepress.net/bush-rockefeller-rothschild-hitler/.

[415] David Leigh, “Mark Thatcher’s Return to the Spotlight,” *The Guardian*, April 11, 2013, https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2013/apr/11/mark-thatcher.

[416] Marjorie Cohn, “Khashoggi’s Murder and Saudi War Crimes in Yemen were Facilitated by US,” *truthout.org*, October 19, 2018, https://truthout.org/articles/khashoggis-murder-and-saudi-war-crimes-in-yemen-were-facilitated-by-us/.

[417] Tony Blair and Stephen Twigg, *A Global* Alliance *for Global Values* (London: Foreign Policy Centre, 2006), https://www.amazon.com/Global-Alliance-Values/dp/1905833067.

[418] “Paedophile Politicians,” *sites.google.com*, https://sites.google.com/site/paedophilepoliticians/.

[419] Marc Waddington, “Labour’s Stephen Twigg Wins West Derby Seat,” *Liverpool Echo*, May 7, 2010, https://www.liverpoolecho.co.uk/news/liverpool-news/labours-stephen-twigg-wins-west-3422585.

[420] Francis Beckett, “Why Tristam Hunt is the man to Teach Gove a Lesson,” *New Statesman*, October 24, 2013, https://www.newstatesman.com/2013/10/why-tristram-hunt-man-teach-gove-lesson.

[421] Daniel Hewitt, “Liverpool MP Stephen Twigg Sacked from Shadow Government,” *ITV News*, October 7, 2013, https://www.itv.com/news/granada/update/2013-10-07/liverpool-mp-stephen-twigg-sacked-from-shadow-cabinet/.

[422] “Paedophile Politicians,” https://sites.google.com/site/paedophilepoliticians/home.

[423] “Israeli Secret Service (Mossad) and Tory Government – Friendly Relations Re-established – But what a Can of Worms,” *caltonjock.com*, May 22, 2015, https://caltonjock.com/2015/05/22/israeli-secret-service-mossad-and-tory-government-friendly-relations-re-established-but-what-a-can-of-worms/.

[424] Claire Newell, Edward Malnick, Luke Heighton and Lyndsey Telford, “Jack Straw and Sir Malcolm Rifkind in latest ‘Cash for Access’ Scandal,” *The Telegraph*, February 22, 2015, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/investigations/jack-straw-and-sir-malcolm-rifkind-in-latest/.

[425] Jason Groves, “Labour Grandee Jack Straw is Denied a Peerage over Lobbying Sting which saw him ‘Boast about Political Connections,’” *Daily Mail*, June 20, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3132180/Labour-grandee-Jack-Straw-denied-peerage-lobbying-sting-saw-boast-political-connections.html.

[426] David Icke, “David Icke on Rothschild Zionism,” *rense.com*, September 24, 2013, https://rense.com/general96/dicke.html.

[427] “The Milibands’ Soviet and US Connections,” *aangirfan.com*, December 3, 2012, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2012/12/the-milibands-soviet-and-us-connections.html.

[428] Tobias Langdon, https://www.theoccidentalobserver.net/2018/03/15/a-very-jewish-scandal-the-newmark-affair-as-paradigm-of-jewish-corruption/.

[429] Heather Stewart and Mark Tran, “Ed Miliband calls for Jeremy Corbyn to Resign as Labour Leader over Brexit,” *The Guardian*, June 29, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2016/jun/29/senior-labour-figures-warn-of-party-breakup-and-urge-corbyn-to-go.

[430] Gilad Atzmon, “Jeremy Corbyn and the Jews,” *gilad.co.uk*, August 17, 2015, https://www.gilad.co.uk/writings/2015/8/17/jeremy-corbyn-and-the-jews.

[431] Matt Dathan, “’We cannot go on like this!’ Labour MP openly calls on his Colleagues to Kick Jeremy Corbyn out of Power ‘for the sake of people being Bled Dry by the Tory Government,” *Daily Mail*, March 25, 2016, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3509393/Labour-MP-openly-calls-colleagues-kick-Jeremy-Corbyn-power-sake-people-bled-dry-Tory-government.html.

[432] Ian Greenhalgh, “Margaret Hodge leads Israeli Plot to Overthrow Corbyn,” *Veterans Today*, July 23, 2018, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2018/07/23/margaret-hodge-leads-israeli-plot-to-overthrow-corbyn/.

[433] Philip Giraldi, “Shutting down Free Speech in America: Government and Lobbyists Work Together to Destroy the First Amendment,” *American Herald Tribune*, September 24, 2018, https://ahtribune.com/us/2491-shutting-down-free-speech-in-america.html.

[434] Robert David Steele, “Synagogue False Flag - Bullshit - FEMA Legalized Lies UPDATE 17: Synagogue Business as Usual… No Bio-Hazards?” *phibetaiota.net*, October 27, 2018, https://phibetaiota.net/2018/10/robert-steele-active-shooter-at-synagogue-bullshit-programmed-drill-fema-show-me-the-bodies/.

[435] Henry Makow, “The Reason for Israel’s Moral Failure,” *rense.com*, April 7, 2007, https://rense.com/general76/maak.htm.

[436] Henry Makow, “Nazi Collaborators, Zionists don’t Represent Jews,” *henrymakow.com*, August 27, 2018, https://www.henrymakow.com/091202.html.

[437] Naeim Giladi, “The Jews of Iraq*,” bintbeil.com*, http://www.bintjbeil.com/E/occupation/ameu_iraqjews.html.

[438] Adrian Salbuchi and James Fetzer, “False Flag Attacks in Argentina: 1992 and 1994,” *Voltairenet,org*, October 13, 2009, http://www.voltairenet.org/article162474.html.

[439] Henry Makow, https://www.henrymakow.com/091202.html.

[440] J.S. Chiappalone, “Holocause – Fact or fiction,” *bibliotcapleyades.net*, 1997, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_holocaust13.htm.

[441] Michael Collins Piper, “Israel’s Use of False Flags in Global Terrorism,” *American Free Press*, September 14, 2013, https://americanfreepress.net/web-exclusive-israels-use-of-false-flags-in-global-terrorism/.

[442] Christopher Bollyn, “9/11 and the War on Terror: Israel's History of False Flag Operations against the U.S.A.,” *American Herald Tribune*, July 7, 2018, https://www.ahtribune.com/us/maga/2346-911-war-on-terror.html.

[443] Garikai Chengu, “How the US Helped Create Al Qaeda and ISIS,” *Counter Punch*, September 19, 2014, https://www.counterpunch.org/2014/09/19/how-the-us-helped-create-al-qaeda-and-isis/.

[444] Joachim Hagopian, “’Politically Correct’: The War on Free Speech, Free Press, Free Internet and the Truth. What is the Endgame?” *Global Research*,

October 2016, https://www.globalresearch.ca/politically-correct-the-war-on-free-speech-free-press-free-internet-and-the-truth-what-is-the-endgame/5552146.

[445] Caroline Marcus, "The Politically Correct Purge on our Language," *The Daily Telegraph*, August 6, 2018, https://www.dailytelegraph.com.au/rendezview/the-politically-correct-purge-on-our-language/news-story/2758bd1908ce9c4e42ff9ef2fb0451e5.

[446] Mahesh CK, "Australian Universities Ban Sarcasm from Campus," *recentlyheard.com*, November 18, 2018, https://recentlyheard.com/2018/11/18/australian-universities-ban-sarcasm-from-campus/.

[447] "European Hate Speech Laws," *The Legal Project*, http://www.legal-project.org/issues/european-hate-speech-laws.

[448] Johanna Markind, "Freedom of Speech Is under Assault in America: Book Review of The Silencing: How the Left Is Killing Free Speech, by Kirsten Power," *The Legal Project*, January 5, 2016, http://www.legal-project.org/blog/2016/01/freedom-of-speech-is-under-assault-in-america.

[449] Joachim Hagopian, "Authoritarian Control and Mass Murder in America the Hegelian Dialectic Way," *Lew Rockwell*, June 16, 2016, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2016/06/joachim-hagopian/power-elite-run-us/.

[450] Joachim Hagopian, "Was the Pizzagate almost-Shooting a Deep State False Flag? If not, it sure was Conveniently used to further Demonize alt Media and 'Fake News,'" *sott.net*, December 6, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/335872-Was-the-Pizzagate-almost-shooting-a-deep-state-false-flag-If-not-it-sure-was-conveniently-used-to-further-demonize-alt-media-and-fake-news.

[451] Wayne Madsen, "US Congress is 'Occupied Territory,'" *Wayne Madsen Report/The Ugly Truth*, January 3, 2016, https://theuglytruth.wordpress.com/2016/01/03/the-us-congress-is-occupied-territory/.

[452] Whitney Webb, "South Carolina's New Hate Speech Law Outlaws Criticism of the Israeli Occupation," *Mint Press News*, May 1, 2018, https://www.mintpressnews.com/south-carolinas-new-hate-speech-law/241331/.

[453] Glenn Greenwald, https://theintercept.com/2016/02/16/greatest-threat-to-free-speech-in-the-west-criminalizing-activism-against-israeli-occupation/.

[454] Alison Weir, "International Campaign is Criminalizing Criticism of Israel as 'Antisemitism,'" *israelpalestinenews.org*, May 17, 2017, https://israelpalestinenews.org/iak-investigation-international-campaign-is-criminalizing-criticism-of-israel-as-antisemitism/.

[455] Martin Niemöller, "First They Came for Me," *veni.com*, https://veni.com/articles/firsttheycameforme.html.

[456] Joachim Hagopian, "The Elite's Social Engineering Endgame: A Battle between the Sexes where Humanity Loses," *sott.net*, May 30, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/319288-The-elites-social-engineering-endgame-A-battle-between-the-sexes-where-humanity-loses.

[457] Joseph Trainor, "Adam Weishaupt- The New World Order and Utopian Globalism," *Illuminati-news.com*, http://www.illuminati-news.com/adam-

weishaupt.htm.

[458] Peter Hasson, “Documents Tie Berkeley Riot Organizers to Pro-Pedophilia Group NAMBLA,” *Daily Caller*, April 28, 2017, https://dailycaller.com/2017/04/28/documents-tie-berkeley-riot-organizers-to-pro-pedophilia-group-nambla/.

[459] Kelly Weill, “Alt-Right Frames Protesters as Pedophiles with Fake NAMBLA Sign,” *Daily Beast*, October 31, 2017, https://www.thedailybeast.com/alt-right-frames-protesters-as-pedophiles-with-fake-nambla-sign.

[460] Joachim Hagopian, “How to Overcome the Elite’s Divide and Rule Control over a Divided Nation and World,” *Lew Rockwell*, February 7, 2017, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2017/02/joachim-hagopian/overcome-elites-divide-rule/.

[461] Jessica Jenkins, “Pedophiles believe they should be part of the LGBT Community,” *The Daily Caller*, July 9, 2018, https://dailycaller.com/2018/07/09/pedophiles-lgbt-community/.

[462] Sean McDowell, “Are There Absolute Moral Truths?” *allaboutphilosophy.org*, https://www.allaboutphilosophy.org/moral-truth.htm.

[463] Todd Nickerson, “I’m a Pedophile, but not a Monster, *Salon*, September 21, 2015, http://archive.is/ttVNy.

[464] Margo Kaplan, “Pedophilia: A Disorder, not a Crime,” *The New York Times*, October 4, 2014, https://www.nytimes.com/2014/10/06/opinion/pedophilia-a-disorder-not-a-crime.html.

[465] Ian Johnston, “Paedophilia a ‘Sexual Orientation – like being Straight or Gay,” *Independent*, April 3, 2016, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/paedophilia-sexual-orientation-straight-gay-criminal-psychologist-child-sex-abuse-a6965956.html.

[466] Michael Ellner, “Michael Ellner,” *whale.to*, http://whale.to/b/ellner_h.html.

[467] Jonas E. Alexis and Henry Makow, “Communism, the Rothschilds, and the Central Banking Cartel,” *Veterans Today*, July 3, 2018, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2018/07/03/communism-the-rothschilds-and-the-central-banking-cartel/.

[468] Joachim Hagopian, “‘Jeremy Corbyn is taking a Courageous stand against Netanyahu and Apartheid Israel,’” *Muslim Press*, October 31, 2017, http://www.muslimpress.com/Section-interview-60/108525-jeremy-corbyn-is-taking-courageous-stand-against-netanyahu-and-apartheid-israel.

[469] Avi Shlaim, “The Balfour Declaration: A Study in British Duplicity,” *Middle East Eye*, November 1, 2017, https://www.middleeasteye.net/columns/balfour-declaration-study-british-duplicity-669552013.

[470] Natalie Jones and Alastair Gee, “America’s Super Rich: six things to know,” *The Guardian*, September 26, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/us-news/ng-interactive/2018/sep/26/america-oligarchy-dominated-billionaires-big-money-series.

[471] Michael Hudson, “Europe’s Transition from Social Democracy to Oligarchy,” *michael-hudson.com*, December 6, 2011, https://michael-

hudson.com/2011/12/europes-transition-from-social-democracy-to-oligarchy/.

[472] Liam Michael Roberts, “Rothschild Zionism: The Gods of Money and War,” *The Event Chronicle*, February 10, 2016, http://www.theeventchronicle.com/study/rothschild-zionism-the-gods-of-money-and-war/.

[473] Stuart Littlefield, “Who are the True Semites in the Topsy-Turvy World of Anti-Semitism?” *Veterans Today*, April 2, 2018, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2018/04/02/who-are-the-true-semites-in-the-topsy-turvy-world-of-anti-semitism/.

[474] Rehmat, “Zionist-Hitler Haavara (Transfer) Agreement 1933,” *rehmat1.com*, February 25, 2012, https://rehmat1.com/2012/02/25/zionist-hitler-haavara-transfer-agreement-1933/.

[475] Henry Makow, “How Zionists Deliberately Sacrificed Jews in the Holocaust and otherwise to Chase them to Rothschild´s Palestine. Is Israel their next Victim?” *new.euro-med.dk*, November 30, 2017, https://new.euro-med.dk/20171130-how-zionists-deliberately-sacrificed-jews-in-the-holocaust-and-otherwise-to-chase-them-to-rothschilds-palestine-is-israel-their-next-victim.php.

[476] Mark Weber, “Zionism and the Third Reich,” *The Journal of Historical Review*, July-August 1993, (Vol. 13, No. 4), pages 29-37.

[477] Henry Makow, https://rense.com/general76/maak.htm.

[478] Henry Makow, “Zionism: Compulsory Suicide are Americans next?” *Ether Zone*, 2002, https://etherzone.com/zionism-compulsory-suicide-are-americans-next/.

[479] Michael F. Blume, “Jews against Zionism,” *rightlydividingtheword.com*, 2008, https://www.rightlydividingtheword.com/articles/jewszionism.htm.

[480] Robert David Steele, “Eradicating Zionism with Truth – A Plan for Peace and Prosperity for All,” *American Herald Tribune*, May 6, 2018, https://ahtribune.com/world/north-africa-south-west-asia/palestine/2248-eradicating-zionism-with-truth.html.

[481] Reuben Samuels, “Zionism Betrayed Holocaust Victims, Jewish Refugees,” *Workers Vanguard*, May 31, 2013, https://www.icl-fi.org/english/wv/1025/zionism.html.

[482] Henry Makow, https://www.henrymakow.com/091202.html.

[483] Adam LeBor, “Eichmann’s List: a Pact with the Devil,” *Independent*, August 23, 2000, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/world/europe/eichmanns-list-a-pact-with-the-devil-711468.html.

[484] “The Federal Reserve - Zionist Jewish Private Bankers,” *rense.com*, March 28, 2009, https://rense.com/general85/feddrec.htm.

[485] Joel Stein, “Who runs Hollywood? C’mon,” *Los Angeles Times*, December 19, 2008, http://articles.latimes.com/2008/dec/19/opinion/oe-stein19.

[486] Dick Fojut, “Zionist Control of America Virtually Complete,” *rense.com*, July 23, 2006, https://rense.com/general72/oer.htm.

[487] Evan Jones, “Zionism in Britain: a Neglected Chronicle,” *CounterPunch*, August 28, 2015, https://www.counterpunch.org/2015/08/28/zionism-in-britain-a-neglected-chronicle/.

[488] Kit O’Connell, “4 Million Muslims Killed in Western Wars: Should we call it Genocide?” *Mint Press News*, August 18, 2015, https://www.mintpressnews.com/4-million-muslims-killed-in-western-wars-should-we-call-it-genocide/208711/.

[489] Robert Shrimsley, “Lunch with the FT: Margaret Hodge,” *Financial Times*, December 7, 2013, https://www.ft.com/content/697e1a22-5c0e-11e3-931e-00144feabdc0.

[490] “Unmasked: The Mastermind behind the Mass Invasion of Europe and His Plan in 8 Steps,” *new.euro-md.dk*, November 6, 2015, https://new.euro-med.dk/20151106-unmasked-the-mastermind-and-his-plan-behind-the-mass-invasion-of-europe-in-8-steps.php.

[491] “The Hidden History of Money and the Feudal Order Usury Secrets.” *Scribd.com*, June 25, 2008, https://www.scribd.com/document/209266113/The-Hidden-History-of-Money-and-Feudal-Order-Usury-Secrets.

[492] Ed Adamczyk, “$40 Billion Aid to Israel is ‘Largest ever’ to any Country, says Susan Rice,” *UPI*, June 14, 2016, https://www.upi.com/Top_News/US/2016/06/14/40-billion-aid-to-Israel-is-largest-ever-to-any-country-says-Susan-Rice/5461465914964/.

[493] Miko Peled, “De-Arabizing Jerusalem: Biblical ‘History’ Underwrites Israel’s Ethnic Cleansing,” *Mint Press News*, August 20, 2018, https://www.mintpressnews.com/israels-ethnic-cleansing/248030/.

[494] Allison Kaplan Sommer, “Analysis Armageddon? Bring It On: The Evangelical Force behind Trump’s Jerusalem Speech,” *Haaretz/The Muslim Times*, December 10, 2017, https://themuslimtimes.info/2017/12/10/analysis-armageddon-bring-it-on-the-evangelical-force-behind-trumps-jerusalem-speech/.

[495] Stuart Littlewood, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2018/04/02/who-are-the-true-semites-in-the-topsy-turvy-world-of-anti-semitism/.

[496] Guy Adams, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3181783/Did-Jeremy-Corbyn-try-protect-fellow-Left-wingers-implicated-paedophile-scandal.html.

[497] Guy Adams, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3181783/Did-Jeremy-Corbyn-try-protect-fellow-Left-wingers-implicated-paedophile-scandal.html.

[498] Guy Adams, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3181783/Did-Jeremy-Corbyn-try-protect-fellow-Left-wingers-implicated-paedophile-scandal.html.

[499] Guy Adams, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3181783/Did-Jeremy-Corbyn-try-protect-fellow-Left-wingers-implicated-paedophile-scandal.html.

[500] Guy Adams, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3181783/Did-Jeremy-Corbyn-try-protect-fellow-Left-wingers-implicated-paedophile-scandal.html.

[501] Guy Adams, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3181783/Did-Jeremy-Corbyn-try-protect-fellow-Left-wingers-implicated-paedophile-scandal.html.

[502] Steven Swinford, “Jeremy Corbyn Accused of Inaction over Paedophile Scandal,” *The Telegraph*, July 23, 2015,

https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/labour/11758612/Jeremy-Corbyn-accused-of-inaction-over-paedophile-scandal.html.

[503] Jeremy Corbyn and Mr Vazeline," *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, April 18, 2017, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2017/04/.

[504] "Key Individuals," *islingtonsurvivors.co.uk*, https://islingtonsurvivors.co.uk/key-individualsorganisations/.

[505] "Derek Sawyer – Leader of Islington Council 1992-1994," *islingtonsurvivors.co.uk,* https://islingtonsurvivors.co.uk/derek-sawyer-leader-of-islington-council/.

[506] Paul Harris and Martin Bright, "The Whistleblower's Story," *The Observer/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, July 6, 2003, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/02/23/the-whistleblowers-story-6-7-2003/.

[507] "'Corruption,'" *The UK & Ireland Database*, https://theukdatabase.com/uk-child-abusers-named-and-shamed/calls-for-change-in-law/corruption/.

[508] "'Corruption,'" https://theukdatabase.com/uk-child-abusers-named-and-shamed/calls-for-change-in-law/corruption/.

[509] Roger Cook, "An Abuse of Trust," *BBC*, 2013, YouTube video, 29:56, posted on Jun 11, 2013, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ylZrq4ClrZo.

[510] "Jailed Sex Abuse Headmaster Derek Slade Dies," *BBC*, March 3, 2016, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-england-suffolk-35715907.

[511] Guy Adams, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3181783/Did-Jeremy-Corbyn-try-protect-fellow-Left-wingers-implicated-paedophile-scandal.html.

[512] Matt Chorley, "'A new low for Labour Leadership Race': Jeremy Corbyn Hits back at Rival's Attempt to Accuse him of 'non-action' on Child Abuse," *Daily Mail*, July 23, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3172430/A-new-low-Labour-leadership-race-Jeremy-Corbyn-hits-rival-s-attempt-accuse-non-action-child-abuse.html.

[513] Michael Patrick O'Leary, "Ad Hominem, Mr Corbyn," *Ceylon Today/pcolman.wordpress.com*, August 4, 2015, https://pcolman.wordpress.com/2015/08/04/ad-hominem-mr-corbyn/.

[514] Steven Swinford, "Jeremy Corbyn Accused of Inaction over Paedophile Scandal," *The Telegraph*, July 23, 2015, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/labour/11758612/Jeremy-Corbyn-accused-of-inaction-over-paedophile-scandal.html.

[515] Tony Gosling, "Shayler: 'Blair was an MI5 Agent,'" *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, October 19, 2005, http://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2005/10/shayler-blair-was-mi5-agent.html.

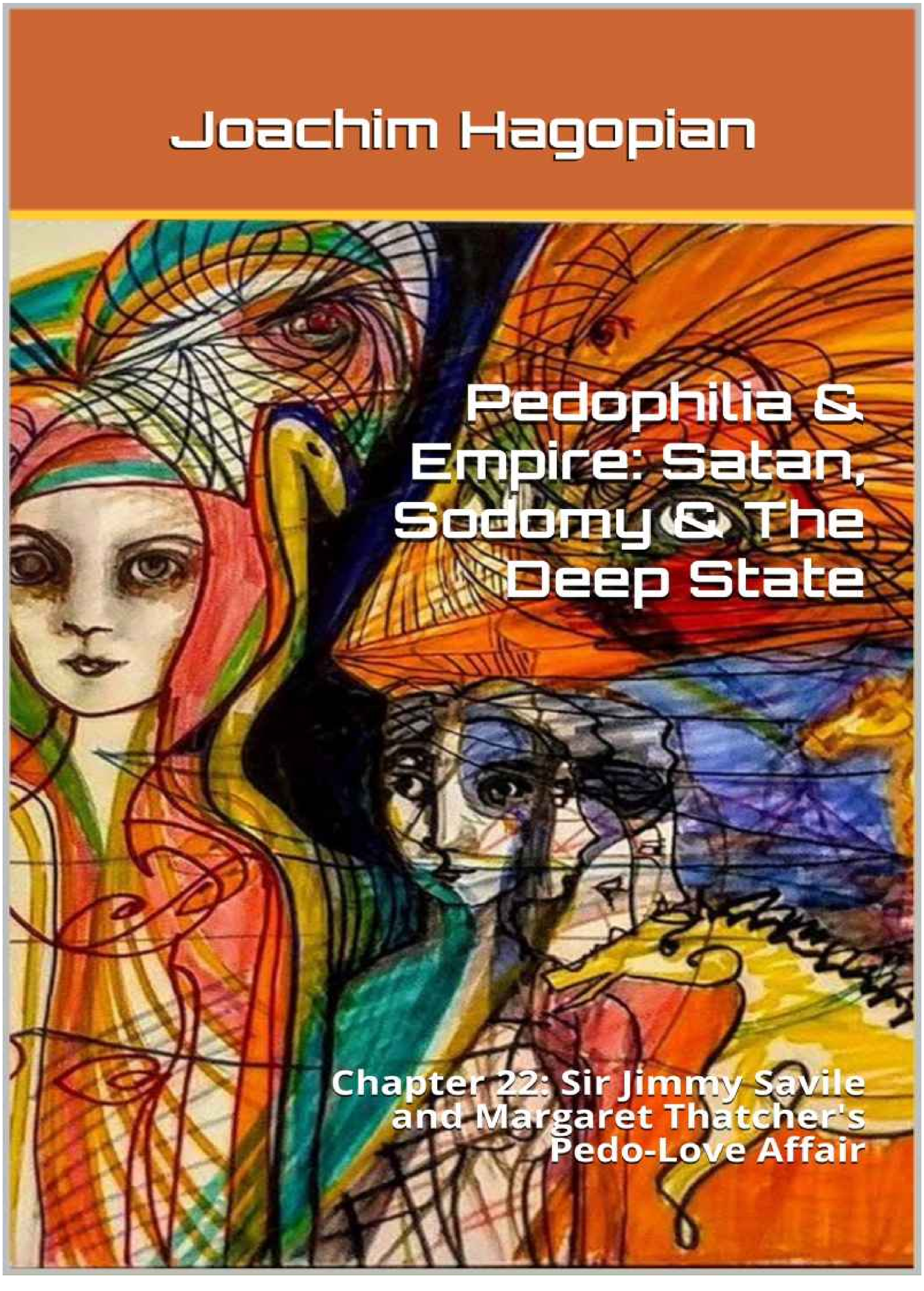

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy & The Deep State

Chapter 22: Sir Jimmy Savile and Margaret Thatcher's Pedo-Love Affair

Chapter 22: Sir Jimmy Savile and Margaret Thatcher’s Pedo-Love Affair

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission
http://www.noramaccoby.com/

Throughout his long public career Jimmy Savile curried favor with Britain’s most powerful elite, from prime ministers to the royal family. As a social climbing Mensa member,[1] he mastered the psychopathic game of ingratiation, invited to spend 11 consecutive New Year’s holidays in a row with Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher at the British PM residence Chequers,[2] just three miles from one of his favorite day or late night pedo-hunting grounds, the Stoke-Mandeville Hospital in Buckinghamshire where he raised near half (£20)[3] of his total £45 million for charity[4] in exchange for being able to freely sexually abuse over five dozen victims and screw dead corpses at Britain’s National Spinal Injury Center alone.[5]

One year the Chequers court jester showed up dressed head to toe in Christmas decorations with a large silver bell around his neck. Lady Thatcher turned to her rather uptight foreign secretary and proclaimed:

Jimmy can ring my bell any time.[6]

Word has it that Savile went through every room at the prime minister’s country estate that year writing on notepads his phone number with instruction that in case of emergency, the PM should ring his bell. Apparently such were the never a dull moment frivolities exchanged between these two intimates. Sir Jimmy fondly reminisced about his Christmases past with his Dame Maggie in an *Esquire* interview:

I knew the real woman and the real woman was something else. The times I spent up there [Chequers] *- Denis, me and her, shoes off in front of the fire.*[7]

Early on in her ménage-e’ tau, I mean 3-term premiership, a week after his last luncheon date with the Iron Lady in February 1981, a handwritten letter from Jimmy to Maggie says it all. His love note’s nauseating lip-lock was unabashedly dripping off the page:

I waited a week before writing to thank you for my lunch invitation because I had such a superb time I didn't want to be too effusive. My girl patients pretended to be madly jealous and wanted to know what you wore and what you ate. All the paralysed lads called me ‘Sir James’ all week. *They all love you. Me too!! Jimmy Savile OBE xxx O.B.E.*[8]

“Sir James” and Lady T would have to wait six more tries and almost a decade later before his knighthood was granted as Savile’s creepy, uncouth nature had her honor committee staff protectively turning down her first five requests, deferring until she was safely out of office. This rather revealing love note was released in late December 2012 after being sealed for 30 years.

Savile closed his gushing confession sharing that all his patients love her, punctuated with “me too” next to his signature and attached OBE credential, the queen bestowed honor finagled back in 1972 through fellow pedophile-murderer the then Prime Minister Edward Heath.[9] Jimmy Savile’s cloying strategy always seemed to work like a charm on Thatcher, but less so on her staff. Per his request, Thatcher donated a half million pounds ($800,000 USD) on behalf of British taxpayers to his Stoke-Mandeville Hospital’s new spinal unit. Her “generous” contribution to his cause, her determination to doggedly nominate him a half dozen times for knighthood and her re-inviting him back to Chequers on countless more occasions solidified their mutual love affair, no doubt motivated by politics than sex. But it shows much weight and power he had over her.

The bulk of the Savile-Thatcher correspondence was withheld, rejecting Freedom of Information Act requests, fueling speculation over what dirty deeds must have transpired between them to cause it to be branded off limits to the public three decades later.[10] But Jimmy and Maggie's crime cabal "fixed it" for the public not to know, having to wait until 2022 before another heavily redacted bundle gets released to the lowly plebeians.

Sir Jimmy's love for Dame Margaret (yep, queenie anointed her with an Order of Merit badge upon Lady Thatcher's resignation in December 1990[11]) never went unrequited. As leader of the opposition party from 1975-1979, Maggie made a guest appearance on his Jim'll Fix It show broadcast on New Year's Day 1977 with Savile promising on the air to fix her election two years prior[12] to her becoming Britain's first female prime minister (1979 to 1990) in exchange for him being her favorite holiday guest the next near dozen years.[13] Her loving tribute to him was expressed on a Savile episode of This Is Your Life:

So many Great Britons have had a touch of eccentricity about them and Jimmy is truly a Great Briton. Miner, wrestler, dance hall manager, disc jockey, hospital porter, fundraiser, performer of good works, Officer of the Most Excellent Order of the British Empire and Knight of the Realm, Jimmy, I and millions more salute you. God bless and thank you.[14]

Thatcher selectively omitted his three biggest pastime passions that for years remained an open secret – serial necrophiliac, serial child rapist and most likely serial killer.

And it wasn't just Thatcher who was enamored with Sir Jimmy, every prime minister since has faithfully paid homage to Britain's "national treasure," his nauseating title repeatedly bandied about both before and after his October 2011 death. From John Major[15] to Gordon Brown,[16] Tony Blair[17] [18]and David Cameron,[19] every prime minister after Thatcher also unswervingly kissed his ass. Perhaps that has everything to do with all of them being known pedophiles themselves or minimally known pedophile enablers.[20] It was at PM John Major's invitation that Sir Jimmy spent the afternoon entertaining the G7 wives in 1991 while husbands carved up the geopolitical chessboard for more rape and pillage plunder.[21]

Savile also spent time with Tony Blair at Chequers and made public appearances together.[22] While war criminal dad Tony joined the Bush-Cheney Zionist gang lying to illegally invade and kill thousands of innocent Iraqi civilians, and mom Cherie was busy as president of Barnardos,[23] a large children's anti-child abuse charity with a dubious reputation for child abuse[24] (whose CEO urges more babies be taken away from parents[25]) that operated Duncroft School,[26] Savile's "pedo-sweetshop" for underage girls,[27] their own 16-year old daughter Kathryn in the spring of 2004 tried snuffing herself.[28] Of course just like all his D-notices to suppress the outing of his pedo-filled government[29] or his college cottage days as crossdressing Miranda picking up little boys in public toilets,[30] a news blackout ensured that the people never learned their prime minister's teenage daughter was attempting suicide. What other skeletons does the Blair family hide in their closet besides being best friends with pedophiles (i.e., entertainers Sir "Kitty"[31] and Sir Jimmy aside from Blair's own inside political pedo-pal circles)?

During the 9/11 era the child pimping undercover agent Savile dined with Admiral Sir Michael Boyce, the UK Chief of Defense Staff.[32] Sir Jimmy's long association with the military began in 1966 when the most elite branch of service - the British Royal Marines - bestowed upon him their

Green Beret honor, granted only to royals Prince Philip and Prince Charles.[33] The degenerate DJ is said to have been buried clutching his coveted Green Beret cap.

So let’s do a recap, Sir Jimmy Savile was more than chummy with elitist leaders from the military, media, entertainment, royalty, secret intelligence, religion, government, secret societies and the mob, covering every major player operating the globalized pedophilia network. That’s rather telling.

Dame Margaret and Sir Jimmy’s “love affair” was most definitely a royal match made in Lucifer’s Hell. Hidden away in a page 23 opinion piece of the *Sunday Times*, journalist Janice Turner incisively summed up the essence of their true relationship, coalescing around his Stoke Mandeville Hospital:

> *But Stoke Mandeville is the most complex story. It is, of course, still about sexual abuse: the 60 reported victims, almost half of them children, the horror put in cool officialese that here his fondness for groping patients beneath bedclothes probably evaded detection ‘as paralysed individuals would not have felt anything below . . . their spinal lesion.’* ***But this is also about how politics and money gave him absolute power. Savile, the King. And it was Margaret Thatcher who crowned him****.*[34] (Emboldened for emphasis)

Thatcher’s Conservative Party in the early 1980s was looking for ways to drastically cut social services and healthcare expenditures from the national budget and using Jimmy Savile’s “maverick” celebrity status to streamline privatization for funding National Health Services (NHS) was her party’s preferred choice in a political marriage of self-serving convenience.[35] Given carte blanche keys to the Kingdom’s NHS institutions, Sir Jimmy was kept happy because he wielded ultimate power and freedom to do his predator thing while conjointly serving the queen's Commonwealth supplying sexual blackmail bait to British politicians and foreign dignitaries, while heartlessly and savagely destroying thousands of defenseless mentally and physically debilitated young lives in the process.

In return for Savile's services, PM Thatcher, her health minister Kenneth Clarke, assistant health minister Edwina Currie and their minions in September 1988 pressured Broadmoor civil servants at the nation's top security penal psychiatric institution to accept the *BBC* entertainer - like it or not - to head their hospital's taskforce after the Department of Health suspended Broadmoor trustees following a series of strikes leaving the Thatcher government firmly in control.[36]

As a Broadmoor volunteer since the 1970s holding the title honorary entertainment officer, gradually the DJ assumed a higher profile and by the late 80s was anointed head honcho by Thatcher and her surrogates. That in and of itself is beyond ludicrous, strongly suggesting that he was granted a political favor in exchange for helping her slash her health and social services budget as well as for pimping kids to Lady T's pedophiles infiltrating her government.

In 1987 a career civil servant that ran the mental health division of the Department of Health and Social Services, the soon to be two time arrested but never charged accused pedophile Brian McGinnis,[37] was instrumental in pushing for Savile's Broadmoor takeover.[38] McGinnis was later hired as a high powered disabilities specialist despite allegedly sexually abusing disabled children as seemingly another protected predatory sentinel guarding the elite's pedo-clubhouse.

Then years later when Savile was finally exposed, in chorus with so many complicit others, a defensive Edwina Currie said she always thought Sir Jimmy was "totally evil."[39] If that’s true, then why in the fuck did she go on public record in September 1988, fully complicit in Savile’s criminality, and select an individual she was convinced was “totally evil,” who neither held proper qualifications nor the moral character entrusted to seize control over the nation’s top security asylum housing Britain’s most violently insane criminals? What kind of moronic decision maker does that? But then immersed in a four year mutually adulterous affair with the then future PM John Major,[40] perhaps Edwina’s “moralist” outrage and judgment was already seriously compromised, contaminated and impaired. Or more likely her immediate supervisor, UK’s health secretary Kenneth Clarke was morally impaired, a few years later accused himself of sexually assaulting a teenage child actor (covered in Chapter 20). Or for that matter, even Maggie the pedo-lover herself insisted that a totally unfit, “totally evil” yet thoroughly vetted and widely known pedophile should lead the Broadmoor taskforce.

Incidentally, Edwina’s boss Kenneth Clarke under Thatcher was soon promoted by Edwina’s lover John Major to the powerful position as UK’s home secretary in 1992-93. And so like the Home Secretary Brittan a decade earlier, the not-so-great Britain had another gatekeeper fox guarding the pedo-henhouse, failing to act on knowledge that both MP Sir Cyril Smith and Lord Greville Janner were also sexually abusing children, choosing not to rock the boat, Clarke swiftly swept it under the rug.[41] And it was while working his next job as Chancellor in 1994 that Clarke sexually assaulted former child actor Ben Fellows when he was 19.[42] For making his accusation public as a journalist,[43] Ben was subsequently charged with perverting justice but cleared in court,[44] which in effect meant his accusation against Clarke could not be disproven, i.e., was true. But as always, when big wigs get caught committing crimes, they never get charged or serve time.

After reviewing her diary in October 2012, in the heat of the post-Savile uproar, Edwina Currie declared:

> *… When you look back, it does suggest he* [Savile] *was prepared to use blackmail to ensure people did what he wanted.*[45]

Aided by hindsight, Currie's carefully chosen words are aimed at passing the buck in order to minimize her own criminal culpability. Her statement above reveals that as UK's pedo-pimp commander-in-chief, King Savile's M.O. was throwing his weight around using blackmail threats right and left to subdue, neutralize and silence perceived threats in order to ruthlessly grab whatever and literally whomever he wanted. For example, to silence his Broadmoor critics, he accused his adversaries of collecting undeserved overtime paychecks and allowing family members not employed at Broadmoor to sublet their housing.[46]

Savile possessed the classic psychopath's instinctive knowhow for ferreting out others' weaknesses and liabilities. As Thatcher and the royal family's designated child procuring kingpin, Savile enjoyed a long successful history of aggressive intimidation and threat of blackmail. So arrogantly full of himself and his unbridled, unchecked power, by the late 1970s when Thatcher assumed Downing Street residency, Savile had become the public face of charity while the undercover saint was covertly running Britain's sexual blackmail operations. Pedo-loonies had not only officially taken over the asylum, but the nation's equally insanely pathological government as well. Throughout the Thatcher years sexual blackmail and Zionism reigned supreme.[47]

The bottom line, for decades as UK's pimping child procurer working "deep-cover" with British intelligence services and police, setting up child pipelines across the nation under the cover of charity with care home operators, social services and city councils, Sir Jimmy possessed the dirty lowdown on every top government VIP pervert in both Thatcher's top-heavy pedo-cabinet as well as all the compromised and controlled Parliament members from all three major political parties. He was the macro-to-micro go-between national pedo-operative that made things happen, or as he loved bragging:

The thing about me is I get things done and I work undercover.[48]

Savile's guaranteed protection was fully secured because, under potential threat of mutual blackmail, the VIP child raping club goes to great lengths to protect its own. Additionally, as the loose cannon with loose lips capable of sinking some very powerful ships, Sir Jimmy virtually always got what he wanted. After all, through his blackmail services, the Luciferian Illuminati bloodline families were able to freely implement their Zionist-Anglo-American Axis-of-Evil agenda, making huge strides pushing towards absolute one world government control, so that all their compromised and controlled puppet-stringed public servants simply do whatever they're told in order to keep their high-end jobs safely enjoying their criminal, above-the-law, opulent lifestyles. If for whatever reason they don't, they know they or their careers will die sudden deaths like so many hapless *BBC* employees covered in the last chapter.

It wasn't just Savile currying favor with Thatcher and her Establishment pedophiles. The predator pecking order food chain has them all beholding to the British bloodline royal family. The *Daily Record* won on appeal its Freedom of Information Act request to reverse blocking the government's overt attempt to redact all mention of Savile and the royal family on the same official documents.[49] Despite Britain's waning freedom of the press and public right to know, in 2013 while it still had a little left, it was learned that via a memo from a Thatcher aide to the PM dated March 1980 that Prince Charles had already agreed to sign on as the Patron of the Appeal backing Sir Jimmy's Stoke-Mandeville charity campaign, the same one Thatcher got behind. Savile's public and private liaisons with the royals go back to the late 1960s and early 70s when Prince Charles' childhood mentor and fellow pedophile Admiral of the Fleet Lord Mountbatten first introduced the *BBC* DJ to Prince Philip and Queen Elizabeth.[50] The Windsors' unholy alliance and shared intimacies with Sir Jimmy, their nationally treasured derelict whose buffoonery made even the stoic royals appear more human and less coldblooded and scaly, their mutual romance will be addressed in Chapter 24.

At London's private highbrow Athenaeum Club in 1985, three years prior to heading the Broadmoor taskforce, Jimmy Savile and health minister Currie's assistant (and McGinnis' successor in 1988) - Cliff Graham, met with Alan Franey, the then NHS administrator at Leeds General Infirmary (1975-1985),[51] where volunteer porter Savile remained at liberty for decades defiling underage girls, boys and dead corpses alike. At the posh Athenaeum where no doubt many shady VIP deals get hatched, Godfather Savile and sidekick Graham made Franey an offer he couldn't refuse, joining King Savile's Broadmoor and in short order leap-frogging him to "top dog" as Broadmoor's general manager. Just as Savile was totally unqualified to run Broadmoor, so was Franey who had no experience in security, the criminal justice nor mental health systems.[52]

With another cherry picked fox helping to guard Sir Jimmy's united pedo-kingdom, Savile was bringing Franey along at Broadmoor knowing he'd be beholding to him. Savile shrewdly figured wherever he went, it always helps to install an indebted subservient figurehead puppet implicitly vowing to protect and obey the hand that feeds him.

No sooner was Franey made a Broadmoor executive, in 1986 just two years before Thatcher's pedo-friendly ministers appointed Savile taskforce commander, a Broadmoor nurse was caught in a pedophile ring operating at the hospital and arrested for photographing pornographic images of children as young as 3 and 5 years of age on the high security premises…[53] yet one more criminal Savile link never investigated. A longtime Broadmoor nurse who aptly described Savile as the lunatic taking over the asylum, also maintains that all the line staff knew the madman in charge was a pedophile and observed how as a pedo-magnet, he had dozens of fellow pedophiles gravitating to him both from within and out of the insane asylum.[54] You'd best believe the king of all pedophiles had to be in deep with any pedo-nurse involved in a child porn business on the grounds where Sir Jimmy not only ruled the roost but also lived parttime.

So knowing a pedophile ring had recently been exposed at Broadmoor where insiders knew the most famous pedophile was a fixture, what does the pedo-infested Thatcher government do? It selects British history's biggest pedophile ever to become its next head honcho at its highest security criminal psych institution in the country. Makes sense only if with the most brazen impunity, the already existing VIP pedophilia network is intent on expanding its massive operations, signed off by royalty, the prime minister and British intel services.

In 1996 senior NHS executive Ray Rowden who was hired to oversee England's three top security hospitals claimed Franey bragged to him that back in the 1980s Franey drove Savile around Leeds to the DJ's old nightclub stomping grounds.[55] Franey and Savile allegedly had met back in Leeds while running marathons together. Rowden added that when he first came to inspect Broadmoor, he confronted

Franey over Savile's free, unlimited access anywhere inside the asylum, including the women's section where for prurient kicks, Savile brought along his fellow *BBC* pedophile pal Rolf Harris for a cheap thrill tour during their bedtime strip down inspection.[56] Of course Franey insisted he never went to a nightclub in his entire life and that said conversation with Rowden never happened. Of course it also goes without saying that Franey claimed he had no clue his good old buddy since the 80s who "fixed" him his job happened to be Britain's worst serial pedophile preying for decades off Alan Franey's patients at both major medical institutions he ran as senior administrator for over two decades.[57] Franey "ran" Broadmoor until resigning in 1997 amidst a police investigation over yet another possible child pornography ring allegedly operating inside the walls of Jimmy Savile's high security institution.[58]

Returning to the Athenaeum Club, how did lecherous crude dude Savile ever gain membership at such an exclusive upper crust Establishment organization? He was nominated by the venerable former Archbishop of Westminster, Cardinal Basil Hume, who also introduced Savile in 1982 to Pope John Paul II to set the stage for Sir Jimmy's 1990 papal knighthood.[59] Wouldn't you know it, UK's top pedo-enabling Church of England and Catholic leaders were also in tight with Savile and Prince Charles - particularly Bishop Peter Ball who also turned out to be a serial pedophile.[60] Again, more on the royals' pedo-love affair in Chapter 24. With the infamous *BBC* court jester's incredible knack for social networking leading straight to the most powerful people in the world, his intimate ties to the pope, the queen, future king and every single prime minister for over a half century based on their mutual shared pedophilic self-interest, more than guaranteed Savile's untouchable lifetime free bird status.

And due to the entertainer’s fundraising capabilities, Savile was granted unlimited authority and access at virtually any NHS institution, like Leeds General Infirmary and Stoke-Mandeville National Spinal Injury Center where he’d been a longtime volunteer at both facilities. After a roof cave-in, Stoke-Mandeville selected Jimmy as prime architect spearheading both the design and construction of the new spinal unit. Like Broadmoor, Stoke-Mandeville also provided a home away from home to the lecherous kiddie fondling midnight night rambler to fully accommodate his insatiable predator needs. After all, he’d been granted carte blanche keys to the entire British pedo-Kingdom.

According to one child victim’s claim, Sir Jimmy’s personal assistant for 32 years, Janet Cope actually walked in on Savile while he was abusing her.[61] But vehemently denying she ever knew of her boss’s predatory sex habits, Janet Cope was apparently also too afraid to say anything, knowing up close and personal her boss’s vindictive, petty and sheer cutthroat power:

Jimmy was untouchable… He controlled everything. He controlled me. Everybody was - I'm going to use the word frightened - of him.[62]

According to Janet, after 32 years of loyal service to the psychopathic rapist, he selfishly used her up too, rewarding her loyalty and valuable service by firing her on the spot with no discernable explanation. But then without a conscience, that’s what psychopaths do.

As the powerful devil incarnate was granted increasing access, power and control over Britain’s NHS institutions, the mutually self-serving Savile-Thatcher tradeoff helped facilitate Iron Lady’s diversion of millions of taxpayer pounds away from providing much needed social services to financing a jingoistic war against Argentina. Attempting to reclaim imperialistic British Empire status, violently holding onto stolen South American islands,[63] the prime minister seized the moment using a British submarine to sink an Argentine ship killing all 323 sailors aboard with the false excuse that it endangered British forces. Bottom line, her security advisor Lord Victor Rothschild possessed substantial investments in Falklands' vast mineral deposits that he didn't want shared with Argentina.[64] The subservient, order following "Iron Lady" simply complied with his greedily selfish, coldblooded demand offering her a golden opportunity to bolster her tough woman persona and vainly resurrect lost empire glory. It was followed a year later with US Empire's turn to show off its saber rattling might - Reagan's bogus Grenada "invasion" in October 1983 against a few Cuban foot soldiers running loose on the island[65] where a few American med students who couldn't get into stateside medical schools were studying.[66]

These rah-rah military campaigns were analogous to the two neighborhood bullies boldly venturing outside their home turf in direct competition to see who was the biggest and baddest global oppressor. The US Empire couldn't pass up the chance to test out its emerging unipolar hegemony proving it was supreme world policemen and serial nation killer, doing one better than old has-been British Empire in their parasitic neocolonial juvenile jerkoff contest, all the while dutifully working as partners-in-crime as the Anglo-American-Zionist triumvirate, predatorily carving up the entire globe for the carnivorous, pedovore-loving elite's ravenous consumption.

Embracing her friendship with despotic bloodthirsty Chilean dictator General Pinochet who provided intelligence to Britain against Argentina during her Falkland War, then years later once indicted in 1999 for war crimes, Thatcher protected him while on house arrest in London. Taking tea with him long after out of office, Thatcher was still the best of friends with Pinochet, ever supportive and grateful for the mass murderer’s assistance waging war against his old rival Argentina.[67] Overnight Iron Lady cashed in, winning another war for British Empire bravado while concurrently jumpstarting UK’s war machine industry at the expense of the British people, waging class warfare against them to drastically cut their vital health and social services,[68] in part rescued by the likes of Sir Jimmy’s public fundraising campaigns – in effect, a Luciferian win-win for the earth’s baby raping killers.

While stiff upper lip Thatcher was eagerly cutting off free milk and school lunch programs for poor needy British kids, earning the label “Thatcher the milk snatcher,”[69] the unholy Maggie-Jimmy partnership-in-crime was cemented by her regime that oozed blackmailed pedo-slime. The PM Dame and Sir Jimmy’s convenient love affair on steroids bolstered Britain’s sexual blackmail apparatchik, controlling government policymakers that Savile busily pumped kids to, ensuring that the international crime cabal debaucherously fed its own growing satanic pedophilic network.

After all, Margaret Thatcher’s government was overloaded with pedophiles who couldn’t keep their filthy hands off little boys, comprising upwards of nearly a third of her cabinet.[70] Lady T and Savile mutually benefited expanding Britain’s sexual blackmail pedo-operation already long in place. Working “deep cover” for MI5, Savile the child pimp developed care home victim supply lines to an increasing number of her ministers and MPs just as he did a decade earlier under the fellow conservative pedophilic Heath government. As part of their disgustingly perverse “I’ll scratch your back if you scratch mine” collusion, beginning in 1983 virtually every year Thatcher would feverishly and faithfully promote Savile for knighthood, the same year her fellow Tory MP Geoffrey Dickens provided a pedophile dossier to Thatcher’s Home Office Secretary Sir Leon Brittan listing pedos in her regime.[71] More on that caper later.

Per Thatcher’s senior advisor, Savile’s “strange and complex private life” posed a serious obstacle to knighthood. Her first five requests were repeatedly rejected by the honors committee chairman due to fear that the uncouth eccentric could bring dishonor to the British Commonwealth’s highest royal tradition.[72] In the AIDS crisis of the eighties, fear of his self-confessed “promiscuity” tainted Iron Lady’s perennial bid for granting him the coveted accolade. But Thatcher’s persistence along with Savile’s nonstop ass kissing eventually paid off as Queen Elizabeth crowned Pimp King Savile his knighthood in 1990, safely waiting a month after Lady Thatcher left office.

Margaret Thatcher’s 11 years at the British helm was a win-win for the Anglo-American Empire as the unholy Reagan/Bush-UK alliance and Apartheid South Africa (her calling Nelson Mandela a terrorist[73]) were all part of the same diabolical cabal. With the universal principle of “like attracts like” operating, fresh out of office Dame Maggie was also soon honored for her nefarious services rendered with both America and South Africa lavishing her with their highest achievement awards. In 1991 crime family overlord pedo Prez George HW Bush bestowed the Presidential Medal of Freedom honor on to Dame Maggie,[74] followed just two months later by South Africa’s racist President de Klerk’s Grand Cross of the Order of Hope.[75] The demonic pedo-love affair continued two months later when the queen stepped in to honor Lady T as Dame of the Order of St. John, an affiliate of the Knights of Malta,[76] joining her Malta Knight Sir Jimmy whose Order is pro merito Melitensi of the Sovereign Military Order of Malta.[77] Secret societies, knighthood and intelligence services are all guiltily synonymous with the global pedophilia network showing up repeatedly as the same critical players in virtually every pedo-scandal in the world.

Keep in mind that while Thatcher’s pedophile-saturated government was embroiled in the Westminster scandal, with British VIP vultures feasting on freshly supplied pedo-pipelines compliments of Savile, MI5 and their procuring killer gangs abusing UK’s expendable, most vulnerable population – children trapped in group “care” homes, at the exact same time America’s own Boys Town orphanage pipeline funneled in boys for Reagan-Bush’s White House midnight tours in the Franklin scandal (see Chapter 13), also flourishing as part of the same interconnected Luciferian cabal network. While constantly touting “family values,” child rapists Reagan and Bush and pedo-lover Lady T were busily overseeing massive globalized pedophilia trafficking operations. If you don’t believe she was part of it, a brief gander at her closest cabinet ministers and advisors speaks volumes.

Definitive evidence has emerged that the Iron Lady knew that her own Parliamentary Private Secretary Sir Peter Morrison, her own Home Secretary from 1983 to 1985 Sir Leon Brittan, her own Tory Party diplomat and former MI6 deputy director Sir Peter Hayman, leading Liberal Party MP Sir Cyril Smith as well as Northern Ireland Minister Sir William van Staubenzee were all knighted pedophiles of the royal pedo-order, not to mention her intel operative-goodwill ambassador Sir Jimmy.[78] Archive records show handwritten notes written by Mrs. Thatcher insisting that known PIE member Peter Hayman should not be publicly outed.[79] In addition to his little boy diddling, multiple accused pedophile then 28-year old Sir Leon Brittan allegedly raped a 19-year old girl while on a 1967 blind date, questioned under caution by police in July 2014 about a plethora of child rape allegations.[80] Sir Leon was also reportedly arrested by customs officials for attempting to smuggle child pornographic images in a suitcase but the elite’s “hidden hand” ensured that story was suppressed as well.[81] Recall that Mr. Brittan was also a VIP name on Mary Moss's infamous list at the rent boy brothel the Elm Guest House. Additionally from the *Daily Star* in October 2012:

> *Police sources in the minister's home region said there are other unsubstantiated allegations that he was once found trying to abuse the son of a friend.*[82]

Time and time again this pedo-cat was free to live out all nine of his lecherous lives. Though outed by multiple accusers in multiple settings, brought in for questioning under caution in July 2014[83] and in March 2015 his homes were raided six weeks after his death,[84] Lord Brittan was never once arrested, prosecuted nor ever punished for his alleged series of sordid crimes. Though unnamed in the above quote from the 2012 *Daily Star* article, subsequent substantial documented evidence clearly indicates that the Tory minister referred to in both the *Star* and a February 2013 *Mirror* piece[85] was Thatcher's Home Secretary Sir Leon Brittan.

Under police surveillance, in 1986 Brittan and a number of other VIPs were photographed attending Elm Guest House orgies and abusing rent boys dropped off by the notorious child raping and murdering Sidney Cooke gang.[86] But since Brittan's office was in charge of MI5 and both his office and MI5 centrally control all UK police investigations, the serial child predator had nothing to fear, given ultimate control over the Great (Pedophilia) Kingdom additionally as the lost dossiers gatekeeper as well. This Lithuanian Jew was granted unlimited power as the kingpin fox guarding his own filthy pedo-house of ill-repute.

Per a police detective that worked on the Elm Guest House case, others frequenting the VIP brothel shindigs included the other untouchable "deep cover" procurer himself Sir Jimmy Savile and the other prolific serial child rapist kingpin that Thatcher also knew about - MP Sir Cyril Smith.[87] Also recall from Chapter 20 that for years co-owner of the Elm Guest House Haroon Kasir had boasted that Sir Jimmy was his best friend.[88] At least 16 VIP politicians, an entertainer (aka "Kitty"), Sir Peter Morrison, a high court judge, a high ranking policemen, an MI5 officer and royal art collector, double agent spy and British traitor Sir Anthony Blunt were all identified as avid partakers in this child sex ring bonanza where all the partying pervs knew each other well, knowing also that the bulk of their victims were supplied by Savile's procuring gang of brutal murderers led by Sidney Cooke.[89]

Speaking of murder, files that the police had lied about, claiming they were destroyed, suddenly resurfaced in 2017 to indicate that the other Elm Guest House owner, Haroon's 47-year old wife Carole Kasir, may well have been murdered in 1990 to keep the dossiers she'd collected on VIP rapists hidden from the public.[90] The so called insulin overdose explanation from her original inquest failed to examine the needles found next to her in bed. Standard toxicology tests were never performed on her body, her longtime GP believes she did not commit suicide and the pathologist maintains that she "did not die from natural causes." North West Leicestershire MP Andrew Brigden and others are calling for a fresh new inquest into Carole's suspected murder cover-up.

Child abuse advocates are also demanding a new investigation into evidence that young Irish boys from Kincora Boys Home were trafficked in as victims at both the Elm Guest House and Dolphin Square orgies as well as to cities in Europe,[91] confirming a wider international pedophilia network that also corroborates claims that Savile pimped care home kids nationwide from England to Northern Ireland to Wales and beyond. Current PM Theresa May's farcical "independent national inquiry" refuses to even look at Northern Ireland's Kincora scandal, much less the UK pedo-network connections to global child trafficking.

[92] She and the elite she represents at the world's pedophilia epicenter have too much scum to hide, like the royal family's involvement at Kincora Boys Home scandal in both Prince Charles' boyhood mentor Lord Mountbatten[93] and Sir Anthony Blunt.[94]

This rabbit hole goes deeper as the Elm Guest House scandal also has yet more links to the international pedophilia network. Abuse victims claim that foreign VIP dignitaries were brought in from Belgium and other places in Europe, landing at Royal Air Force Northolt just outside London to violate the trafficked in British rent boys.[95] This clearly implicates the British Royal Air Force as an accomplice to VIP high crimes as part of the major pedophilia operation run by the power-broking European pedo- Establishment.

On top of all his, the highly frustrated law enforcement insider maintains that his investigative team was about to arrest all the VIP sickos involved in the Elm House scandal when the day prior to the scheduled roundup, "superiors" ordered their police operation disbanded immediately,[96] an overly familiar and consistent outcome whenever members of the pedophilic elite get caught red-handed. The detective said the original whistleblowing victim vanished right after reporting the abuse to the police, an equally common fate amongst those young people courageous enough to immediately reveal VIP crimes committed against them to the authorities.[97] Powerful child rapists never fail to go free while their victims either disappear, commit suicide or suffer the lifelong effects from child abuse, especially when neither given a voice nor a shred of justice. So many precious, innocent lives lost and ruined by so many evildoers hiding behind fame, wealth and power held up on a false god pedestal clearly is Lucifer's way.

So the Elm Guest House police probe discovered links to 10 Downing Street, Parliament and even Buckingham Palace.

For ten straight days in October 1982, even all the mainstream newspapers had a flurried field day - the *Daily Express, The Times, The Guardian* and *The Sun* - without naming names busily running story after story reporting the Savile-government connected VIP pedo-scandal.[98] But soon enough it all came to an abrupt, squelching halt. After fellow pedo Attorney General Sir Michael Havers threatened a libel suit against the press protecting his own criminal ilk, the story died a week and a half later after just scratching the surface, exposing the VIP child raping network involving the most powerful figures in the British government. But the pedo-genie can never be put back in his bottle no matter the ironclad efforts sought by sickos in charge to suppress the ugly truth of the horrific crimes committed by the powerful pedo-cabal establishment. The anguished police officer working the investigation stated:

> *It wasn't that we ran out of leads but it reached a point where a warning to stop came. It was a case of 'get rid of everything, never say a word to anyone.' It was made very clear to me that to continue asking questions would jeopardise my career.*[99]

After his police operation was shot down, the former detective checked the file containing all the diligent work collecting the incriminating photos and carefully documented evidence on Brittan and his VIP pals.[100] But the file was empty of both photos and all the high profile pedophiles' names were missing - proof that the establishment in cahoots with the lowly Metro Police were guilty of another major criminal cover-up.

Would-be jailbirds of a pedo-feather, never fail to flock together in the Savile-Thatcher VIP pedophilia network. Cases in point – Freemason PIE member clockmaker Keith Harding who appeared alongside Sir Jimmy on his Fix It

Christmas episode would also entertain VIP pedophile guests regularly showing up at his London shop,[101] among them Leon Brittan, Cyril Smith and fellow MP Liberal Party leader Jeremy Thorpe who became embroiled in a scandalous case of attempted murder of his former gay lover.[102] But little boy lover Thorpe threatened to tell all he knew to the world, promptly securing his not guilty verdict.[103]

It was former Liberal Party leader Jeremy Thorpe who kept showing up at the rent boy orgies sponsored by the gangster Kray twins back in the 60s that *BBC* DJs Savile, Freeman and Denning along with music maestros Jonathon King, Joe Meeks and Beatles manager Brian Epstein were regulars, that is until police chiefs caught wind of Thorpe and a few other prominent MPs' presence and shut it down as too high a risk.[104] That was prior to the more flagrantly open days of Thatcher's 1980s when British intelligence and police chiefs along with the usual VIP suspects from government in both UK and Europe were all joining in on the kiddie gangbanging rapes at places like Elm Guest House and infamous Dolphin Square. All these lecherous, treacherous VIP perverts belonged to the same pedo-club yet not one of them ever paid for their child abuse crimes that included occasional murder before dying of old age. And a few are still hiding out waiting to die after living their "good life." Only the low hanging predators like Denning is still in the slammer[105] while King's been in and out.[106] But the likes of Mr. Undercover and his MP Johns belonging to the VIP uppermost tier have always managed to successfully live like unholy gods above all the manmade laws they make for only us to abide by.

Yet another queen-knighted minister in Lady Thatcher's cabinet caught frequenting the Elm Guest House was Scottish Tory MP Sir Nicholas Fairburn who got away scot free after repeatedly molesting and raping his close friend's

4-year old daughter,[107] in addition to raping Elm House kids and carrying on an adulterous affair with Dame Esther Rantzen, the notorious pedo-loving queen as *BBC* ChildLine-NSPCC pedo-cabal gatekeeper.[108] It's no accident that the names from the same flock of pedo-foxes keep resurfacing again and again at the same crime scene network.

In 1986 (same year Rantzen started her ChildLine), Thatcher's bodyguard and former detective chief inspector Barry Streven told his prime minister straight out that many of her key cabinet members were full blown child abusers.[109] Yet knowing her closest advisors and confidantes were harming innocent kids never stopped Lady T or Queen Elizabeth from shielding and rewarding knighthood to all the worst offenders - Savile (after 5 failed tries), Sir Cyril Smith, Sir Leon Brittan, Sir Nicholas Fairburn, Sir Peter Morrison, Sir Peter Hayman, Sir Jeremy Thorpe and on and on we go. Every one of Thatcher's incoming cabinet ministers as well as the queen's knighthood recipients are all thoroughly vetted by UK's security services whose job is to keep close running tabs on the who's who of VIP child molesters occupying high places within the nation's long established blackmail system. So ignorance is no excuse. It's an indisputable fact that royalty and political leaders favor their child rapist friends over the well-being of their nation's own children and aiding and abetting child rapists has always been their unprosecuted crime (among a litany of others). So by law Dame Maggie and Queen Lizzie were/are also criminals.

Moreover, it's also intelligence agencies' equally important task to ensure compromised and controlled pedophiles are guarding their United pedo-house Kingdom at every level - from the VIP politicians, to their senior civil servants, from law enforcement and high courts to the media. All are overpaid, totally controlled and protected criminals as long as they continue stand vigil guarding their pedo-peer clubhouse.

Thatcher’s home secretary Brittan at age 43 was the youngest UK law enforcement chief since fellow pedophile Sir Winston Churchill assumed the helm before WWI.[110] Since numerous victims at sex parties held at Dolphin Square and Elm Guest House accused Sir Leon Brittan of being a child molester,[111] in 1983 Brittan made sure that the 40-page dossier listing himself and his fellow minister peers and MPs as child rapists given him by Tory Party MP Geoffrey Dickens was intentionally “lost.” Incredibly also in 1983 the Scotland Yard submitted to Brittan a separate second dossier exposing 15 prominent VIP PIE members and Sir Leon “misfiled” that one too.[112] Brittan proceeded to “lose track” of (i.e., destroy) all evidence that would’ve sunk both him and the British Establishment once and for all. Thus Sir Leon became the principal presiding over the infamous Westminster pedophilia cover-up more fully detailed in Chapter 23.

Goes without saying that British intelligence services already had the lowdown on all of these dossier listed perverts but as child pimping handlers and blackmailers, many pedophiles themselves, working “deep cover” with the likes of Sir Savile, for decades throughout the West the power business has always been about controlling top politicians through sexual blackmail,[113] and with adultery and homosexuality gone mainstream, it’s degenerated into misusing children as their cannon fodder kiddie bait on a massive scale. This cold hard fact speaks volumes as absolute proof that to reach the highest echelons of power in this world, be it in the UK, America, or the entire Western world and beyond, you must already be either a certifiable pedophile yourself or a thoroughly compromised, pedo-enabling, heartless, psychopathic, sniveling snake in the grass.

Savile’s Mossad controlled US counterpart is Trilateral Commission and Council on Foreign Relations member Jeffrey Epstein (see Chapter 14).[114] For purposes of maintaining their absolute impunity over the long haul, to be invited into this diabolical inner sanctum, pathetically it means you must already be one of them. Their earthly dominion controlling fallen angel Lucifer wouldn’t have it any other way.

Still unconvinced that Prime Minister Thatcher and Sir Jimmy’s love affair was a pedophilia front for the global cabal’s pedo-network? In July 2014 a onetime Tory Party insider and little boy procurer himself for Tory VIPs became a pedophile namedropper outing yet more ministers from Thatcher’s notorious cabinet.[115] In addition to the aforementioned handful, former Tory activist Anthony Gilberthorpe said that Thatcher’s Education Secretary Sir Keith Joseph, Minister of State Social Security Sir Rhodes Boyson, Attorney General Sir Michael Havers and another still serving as MP today were/are abusing rent boys that Gilberthorpe supplied at sex parties.[116] Joseph and Boyson are even listed as PIE members in the second dossier given to Brittan in 1983.[117] Yet with all this undeniable evidence, they either go to their graves unblemished or are still serving in government unblemished.

As illustration of the unbelievable hypocrisy exhibited by these elite pedophiles, the knighted Sir Rhodes Boyson was a raving homophobe claiming that being gay was “unnatural” and “biblically wrong.” Yet privately it never stopped him from attending drug sexed orgies homosexually ravaging little boys while mouthing to the press such classic, ignorant, bigoted lines as:

If we could wipe out homosexual practices, AIDS would die out.[118]

Eventually at 87 so did he in 2012, of course unpunished and unexposed for his lifelong sins “against nature.”

Anthony Gilberthorpe went on to state that as a friend he also personally informed Margaret Thatcher that many of her closest right hand men were using more than their right hands to savagely violate underage boys at Conservative Party orgies. But Anthony the whistleblower naively failed to realize that Iron Lady was already well aware she was surrounded by carefully placed, thoroughly vetted sexual predators having received multiple “tips” from multiple other inside sources.

Gilberthorpe elaborates further:

> *I outlined exactly what I had witnessed and informed her I intended to expose it. I made it very clear to Mrs. Thatcher most trusted ministers had been at these parties with boys who were between 15 and 16. I also told her of the amount of illegal drugs like cocaine that were consumed.*[119]

But Gilberthorpe fails to mention to the prime minister **when** he planned to expose all those pedophiles, as apparently he safely chose to withhold this damaging information from the public until years later **after** Thatcher and virtually every one of his identified VIP sickos had already died off.

As if all this isn’t incriminating enough, just a year later in July 2015 yet another “discovered” bone was thrown to the citizens for mass consumption to reveal that again in 1986 MI5 chief Sir Anthony Duff sent a letter “informing” the prime minister that prominent MP Cyril Smith was a pedophile.[120] The notion that the head of British intelligence responsible for coordinating UK pedophilia blackmail operations would disclose in a letter that a single member of the House of Commons from an opposing party just happened to be a flaming pedophile is an affront to our intelligence when we know that the Thatcher government was by design swarming with meticulously infiltrated child molesters and rapists galore.

This is the British establishment's cunningly deceptive methodical strategy to minimize the pedo-scandal in the post-Savile era, unwilling to admit even half-truths, instead choosing to trickle it down to one-one thousandth truths in piecemeal fashion. But the far more significant bottom line issue here is that the Duff letter serves as yet one more among numerous sources unequivocally confirming that Maggie the pedophile lover knew all along that creepy crawling degenerates of the worst order had saturated her government. Based on Duff's written assessment below, it's made perfectly and assuredly clear to all involved that from both head of UK intelligence to prime minister and all her pedo-filled cabinet members:

At the present stage… the risks of political embarrassment to the government is rather greater than the security danger.[121]

In other words, the ongoing, unchecked grave risk to their nation's children being permanently scarred and damaged was never even part of the equation. In his warped mind, saving the government from public embarrassment was a much greater priority than either their welfare or national security's (i.e., foreign Zionist or Soviet interests controlling Britain's government through blackmail was deemed less risk). This telling disclosure reveals the pure evil and wickedness that guide all of these major power players' every move and why a satanic spook like Jimmy Savile was so usefully important to them. For a very long, long time, since the Babylonian Baal worshipping, satanically ritualized practices of pedophilia and child sacrifice (see Chapter 3) along with sexual blackmail have always been how this world has operated atop the subhuman pedo-food chain.

In another overt, incriminatingly explosive episode demonstrating that Thatcher engaged in a massive, widespread cover-up to conceal her hardcore pedophile ministers within her cabinet, in 1982 Maggie was joined by her then Home Secretary Willie Whitelaw, a senior policeman and an MI5 officer to discreetly meet with one of her top ministers, a rising Tory Party star being groomed at the time for higher office, to warn him to be more careful in his personal taste for little boys.[122] But the press's watered down version includes this Thatcher quoted admonishment:

You have to clean up your sex act.[123]

Give us a break! Like making sure her pedo-crew would ever stop raping little boys was ever really even close to a priority during her entire 11-year reign. Instead the "warned" minister, knowing full well he could safely continue acting out his sickness living above the law, he ignored his boss and was again observed four years later in a Scotland Yard sting operation still soliciting sex from underage lads at the Victoria Railway Station.[124] Of course because Standard Operating Procedure for UK police has always protected and ignored pedophilia in its VIP ranks, police politely requested the serial child rapist to not hang out at railway station toilets anymore. This information came to light after an inside Scotland Yard source in 2014 disclosed the story to the *Sunday People*. Again, proof that by careful Luciferian design, Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher was surrounded by hardcore pedophiles, brazenly lurking in complete impunity inside her den of iniquity at the very heart of the British government. And you can bet that nothing has changed since, except that in 2018 the pedo-cabal remains not only alive and well but bigger, more powerful and more protected than ever.[125]

A brief glimpse into Thatcher's earlier life growing up raised by her strict Methodist lay preacher father Alf Roberts[126] proves very illuminating. Little Maggie adored her neighborhood grocer patriarch, who also possessed quite a notorious reputation within the community as a pervert groping any underage girl he could get his paws on.[127] While pitying her mother and older sister for their more maternal, traditional ways,[128] Margaret admired the strong work ethic of her frugal, “puritanical,” intellectual dad who instilled in her ambition, hard work and austerity alongside repressed inner conflict between self-righteous, holier than thou hypocrisy and arrogant pride overcompensating her closeted embrace of sexual deviance and wicked predation. As her father’s favorite, perhaps she herself was a pedophile incest victim. Similar to Dame Rantzen who alleged being molested as a child by a family member,[129] this dynamic goes far in explaining such strong attraction, affection and tolerance towards so many known child predators like Savile and all her gay pedophile gang atop her government. More gatekeeping female pedophile-loving dames standing guard for their pedo-cabal that’s in turn treated them so well.

As a former MP hailing from Finchley, the one district containing the largest Jewish constituency[130] in a nation with an overall population of less than half of 1% Jewish,[131] Prime Minister Thatcher filled upwards of 25% of her cabinet with Jews.[132] Several were accused pedophiles like Brittan and Joseph. Others like Sir Leon’s foreign minister cousin Sir Malcolm Rifkind, later parliamentary committee chair presiding over Mossad run British intelligence[133] [134] and adulterous Jewish princess (more Rantzen echoes?) Edwina Currie who appointed known predator Savile to head Broadmoor are more pedophile enabling apologists. Another Jewish minister David Young whose proud Lithuanian father bragged:

One son deputy chairman of the government, another [Simon] *chairman of the BBC -- that's not bad for immigrants.*[135]

Yet another Jewish minister Michael Howard went on to become the Conservative Party leader but not before working with the Rothschild City of London shepherding through Thatcher's hated poll tax,[136] leading to today's shameful inequality mess where the top 10% of British wage earners pay less of their income to taxes than the poorest 10%.[137] Thanks to her and Howard's poll tax, outside one other among the world's developed nations, UK has suffered the worst inequality gap between the rich and poor.[138]

Additionally, the most powerful Jew in the Thatcher government was Lord Victor Rothschild as her security advisor. Thatcher selected, or more likely Rothschild selected her as his puppet prime minister, and then the head of the bloodline family's banking dynasty controlling the Bank of England was entrenched throughout the 1980s as her closest security confidante.[139] But Rothschild was also a Communist and the fifth and actual leader of the treasonous KGB Cambridge 5 spy ring consisting of gay pedophile Anthony Blunt, longtime British intelligence operative and art curator for the royals who were fully aware of both Blunt's treason[140] and degenerate taste for little boys.[141] Other Cambridge spies were the 1951 Soviet defectors Guy Burgess who introduced Blunt to the gay pedo-lifestyle along with fellow defector Donald MacLean and Kim Philby,[142] who the Mossad helped flee to the Soviet Union in 1963.[143]

After Blunt recruited Rothschild to the KGB while at Cambridge University in 1936,[144] Rothschild wound up a very close friend to Prime Minister Churchill throughout WWII, providing updated intelligence to Stalin throughout. In 1940 it was Rothschild's turn to invite Blunt into MI5.[145] Over the course of the next half century, until his death in 1990, Victor Rothschild and his four fellow KGB traitors working in MI5, MI6 and the British Foreign Office (that controls MI6) gave away critical allied atomic and nuclear secrets to the Soviets. During the 1980s along with Home Office Secretary Brittan, double agent Lord Rothschild used his immense influence to oversee MI5 and MI6 operations[146] and is believed instrumental in leaking nuclear secrets to the Israelis as well.[147]

Additionally, Savile and one of his early protectors Blunt were both pedophiles with enormous kiddie appetites, both intimate with the Windsor family, both worked undercover for MI5, both were instrumental in setting up blackmail operations throughout the British Isles extending blackmail pedo-rings to top establishment VIPs, and both maintained strong loyal ties to both Israel and Jewish banking family patriarch-spy-Thatcher security advisor Victor Rothschild.[148] Sharing a mutual vested interest in the global pedo-blackmail-trafficking apparatchik, the links between Savile, Blunt, Rothschild and the royal British bloodline that feed both the parasitic pathology of pedophiles and the obvious control mechanism over compromised puppet politicians, these same sexually deviant Zionist traitors' names keep popping up all the time. It was definitely no accident the planetary controllers made certain their Dame Margaret Thatcher as Britain's first female prime minister stack the deck with controllable pedophiles fervently loyal to Zionism during Iron Lady's near dozen year premiership.

Still another from Thatcher's inner circle that stood accused of pedophilia crimes was her Chief of Defense from 1982-85 - Lord General Edwin Bramall, who served years earlier under royal pedophile Lord Mountbatten. Metro Police Detective Superintendent Kenny McDonald found Bramall's accuser Nick a highly credible source from 2014-2016, disclosing on record:

> *Nick has been spoken to by experienced officers from child abuse teams and experienced officers from murder investigations. They and I believe what Nick is saying is credible and true* .[149]

Still alive and kicking turning 95 in December 2018, as of 2016 the old accused pedophile soldier was no longer considered a suspect because suddenly the police did a 180 reversal and publicly concluded that Nick's (and undoubtedly others') allegations were somehow false.[150] The Establishment rules dictate that only dead monsters can be accused and believed, but dare call out any famous still alive pedophiles and the system makes mincemeat of them. Why were Nick's allegations deemed so credible by the top cop for two years running and then abruptly declared false and discarded? Several police officers are also under investigation that worked on the failed £2.5 million fiasco Operation Midland that netted zero pedophile arrests, based on compiled accuser Nick's allegedly bogus allegations,[151] sending the loud and clear message to both accusers and police to not even think about going after the VIP child rapists.

This unsettling development is more pedo-Establishment pushback, a psyops designed to place doubt and second thoughts on future victim accusers.[152] Lots of propaganda mileage to be gained here from making false allegations against one "innocent," distinguished, highly decorated famous old war hero, then declare the accuser dishonest and under arrest, vindicating the victimized VIP ala Sir Cliff. Like every other child sex abuse inquiry, investigation and police operation into historic UK child abuse, despite numerous victims implicating powerful VIPs as their abusers, always the outcomes remain the same – "not enough evidence."[153] Not one minister, MP, military general or intelligence chief has ever been prosecuted, much less found guilty. Yet all the compiled evidence over the years is overwhelming.

Meanwhile, thousands of alleged victims and witnesses have emerged in recent post-Savile years providing incontrovertible evidence for arrest and prosecution sharing identical or similar corroborating accounts against the same identified VIP perps. Once the Savile scandal broke, both abuse that occurred recently as well as historic abuse reporting have soared, in just one year rising to over 31,000 reported cases, up by more than a third from the year before.[154] Just based on media reports and police records alone, back in the 1980s thousands of British children in care homes were systematically trafficked around the UK and abroad, regularly abused by Britain and Europe's elite at many places, particularly Dolphin Square and Elm Guest House as well as dozens of other locations around the British Isles, Amsterdam and Brussels. Yet VIP convictions remain zero. The indisputable fact that the Establishment has historically shut down police investigations, wilfully destroyed or lost evidence, obstructed justice, chronically using the lie of never having enough evidence to prosecute every single powerful pedophile that's been accused (other than the minor *BBC* has-beens that can be counted on one hand), the fact that all the major politicians never go to jail proves beyond any question or doubt that the cover-up only continues.

It's sickening to know that so many victims have reported abuse to authorities yet UK's pedo-foxes infiltrated into government, police, Crown Protection Service, social services and the media have successfully closed ranks to tightly guard their pedo-henhouse, effectively blocking the truth from fully coming out, resulting in countless VIP perps never brought to justice. It's the same old despicably disgusting story - evildoers in high places abuse their power that allows them to forever get away with unimaginable, sordid perversions simply because it's their granted privilege as elitist members . As the truth spreads amongst us citizens of the world who outnumber members of the VIP pedophilia club a zillion to one, our message is we're coming after you and your days of impunity are numbered.

Just like Jimmy Savile, Ted Heath, Cyril Smith and all the rest, virtually every accused VIP pedophile is permitted to safely live out their lives to the end, rotting away in their graves, or better yet, roasting in eternal hell, after never spending a single day in prison for all their heinous crimes. By design, overly stringent UK libel laws protect VIP criminals[155] - made even more pedo-friendlier with Sir Cliff's July 2018 court victory[156] (covered in last chapter), striking a major blow against both freedom of press and freedom of speech. And now morphing into Cliff's law, interchangeably synonymous with LIVING ABOVE THE LAW, it's designed to further seal off protection for perpetrators at the top. It delays if not eliminates unwanted exposure of prominent pedo-monsters until they're all safely buried in the ground from natural causes despite a lifetime of committing the most debaucherously unnatural transgressions.

Back in the 1980s when even mainstream newspapers dared to cover pedophilia ring arrests, after four ringleaders were caught and convicted, the *Daily Telegraph* crime correspondent admitted in a February 1989 piece:

Despite the convictions, police believe there is still a flourishing pedophile network in Britain, with a sophistication said to resemble the Mafia.[157]

Of the four men convicted and sentenced, the one considered highest in rank was Colin Peters, an Oxford trained former senior advisor at the British Foreign Office,[158] which exercises control over MI6 operations.[159] For sodomizing young boys and pimping them to VIPs, he received only a 6-year sentence. Interrogated during the pedo-ring investigation was at least one senior member in the House of Lords, a West London vicar and a number of other government officials. Like always, VIPs at the higher levels avoid prosecution with the overly familiar excuse specified in the *Telegraph*:

But the police did not have sufficient evidence or manpower to pursue their suspicions.[160]

Code word: VIPs are high enough on the British Establishment food chain to be immune from arrest. The pipeline procurers that did go to jail were bottom dwellers feeding off runaways, junior soccer league players, a probable an MI6-Savile-Barry Bennell (see Chapter 18) link. Another source was one of the convicted pedo-ring operators owned a cleaning company business and would regularly advertise want ads in local newspapers for potential recruits. *The Telegraph* article went on to explain a familiar theme found throughout the global child abuse trafficking network on how boys as young as 9 get:

> *Passed around its* [pedophile] *members for sexual degradation and, when the attraction faded, abandoned to a life of prostitution, drugs, and petty crime… The boys were tempted off the unfamiliar London streets with promises of food, accommodation, money, and a sympathetic ear. Some were plied with drugs, including cocaine, and sexually assaulted while under their influence.*[161]

Police in Italy, UK and the US found links between Colin Peters' UK pedo-ring and the international network. A wealthy businessman in Italy, Allesandro Moncini, arrested in the US in 1988 for attempting to procure an underage girl for satanic ritual abuse served just three months in prison for smuggling child pornography.[162] Italian investigators working in America believe they uncovered "a most exclusive ring of international pedophiles." Recall that the Vatican secret societies and P1 Masons work hand-in-hand together with bankers and organized crime in Italy, Europe and far beyond.[163]

The satanic ritual abuse of trafficked children around the globe is perpetrated on victims of what experts maintain is a highly organized, sophisticated, interlocking network run by Illuminati, Freemasons, Malta Knights and Jesuits among other infiltrators operating at the highest levels of national governments, the intelligence community, law enforcement, organized crime, the military and mainstream media. A mind control-child abuse victim turned courageous survivor-activist, Australian Fiona Barnett who as a child was passed around globally and raped by presidents, prime ministers, Reverend Billy Graham and a number of the world’s most powerful men, has this to say in her International Tribunal of Natural Justice (ITNJ) testimony[164] recalling her firsthand experience and direct observation:

*Child trafficking is run as a_**single integrated world operation**. This operation is coordinated by the **CIA** in collaboration with British and Australian intelligence services. Retired NYPD Detective James Rothstein was appointed to the first US taskforce to investigate this child trafficking operation which, he found, went all the way up to the White House. Detective Rothstein found that the CIA were behind a blackmail operation in which child prostitutes were used to honeytrap and compromise politicians, military brass, top businessmen, and key government officials… **Luciferianism** is arranged according to a hierarchical structure which vaguely resembles a caste system. At the very top sit **13 family dynasties** including the **Rothschilds** and the **British Royal Family**. These are recognised by the cult as demi-gods. Below these sit approximately 300 Luciferian bloodlines who are generally high IQ, although this tends to have been watered down in some families due to intermarriage. Below this group sit the commoners who can never attain higher status because they lack the desired bloodline.[165]* (boldface for emphasis)

Other than her oversight not mentioning the Mossad-Zionist slant in the global pedo-operation, her insider insights accurately explain how the Luciferian pedo-cabal works.

Also it’s important to note that Thatcher’s Westminster scandal was flourishing at the same exact time that George Bush’s CIA Finders Cult (Chapter 12) and Nebraska to Washington Franklin scandals (Chapter 13) were also in high gear. The UK branch of this vast interconnected worldwide pedo-network was fronted by Prime Minister Thatcher, ravenously participated in by her derelict political cronies she fiercely protected and largely run by Savile and his British intelligence services coordinating procuring gangs like Colin Peter, Peter Righton and Sidney Cooke’s recruiting from the streets and group homes. But only this lowest rung of pedophile traffickers are ever subject to busts and actual jail time. The rest of the low-lifes in this heinous operation remain insulated and unreachable from their elitist, thus far impenetrable perch.

Even before she became PM, no doubt Thatcher had accepted as a precondition to her storied rise to historic glory that it was her cabal duty to “appoint” her heavily MI5 vetted cabinet intentionally flooded with flaming pedophiles. After all, her biggest holiday guest was Britain’s biggest pedophile ever. In the UK the precedent had already been set a full decade earlier with Savile as “deep cover” pimp supplying victims for another compromised Tory Party prime minister who happened to be a PIE linked brutal child rapist and coldblooded child murderer.[166] Edward Heath had been strategically planted by his Luciferian puppet masters to secretly strip Britain of its national sovereignty, coercing it into what would become the European Union monstrosity.[167] As saber rattling warmongers on steroids, both the Reagan/Bush and Thatcher role was to facilitate transference of Western oligarchic wealth out of UK/Europe/US as foreign investment largely into Asia, ushering in the next wave of neocolonialist theft in the longtime overexploited, conquered Third World, while introducing permanent austerity and hardship to the everyday British/US household trying to eke out daily survival in an increasingly hostile world on the brink of economic disaster.[168]

From across the pond back in the 1980s, Maggie's chosen counterpart cutout Ronnie Reagan, for all intents and purposes, was replaced a little more than a month into office by a "wayward" bullet[169] when his opportunistic CIA directing VP, crime family pedophile-drug overlord Daddy Bush moved in.[170] Once the Luciferian controllers had their perfect US-UK-Zionist puppets in place, using their old divide and conquer standby, they heightened tensions in the Middle East, engineered the bloody Iraq-Iran War, promoted jingoistic expansion wars abroad, and created an emerging enemy called "war on terror" using Islam as scapegoat. Finally, they set the stage for the military industrial complex to become the driving force behind imperialistic Anglo-American-Zionist Empire aggression that's been ravaging the planet ever since.[171]

Maggie, Ronnie and George simultaneously ushered in the death of the US[172] and UK middle classes[173] to deliver austerity and hardship overseeing a Fortune 500 exodus overseas for cheap Third World slave labor in order to gut the domestic manufacturing sectors. One in four manufacturing jobs disappeared within Thatcher's first term alone.[174] And to ensure the undoing of America and UK proceeded as planned, sexual pedo-blackmail reigned supreme, producing compromised robots who smile on cue for the camera while their puppet masters celebrate in orgiastic satanic ritualized gluttony their New World Order fast closing in on absolute control over the masses during the home stretch of their depopulation plan called human genocide.[175] Pretty despairing picture unless we stop the Luciferian sodomizers from raping and destroying our entire planet, now in the 11th hour and 59th minute.

Years after Bush senior and Iron Lady did their damage decimating US-UK affluence and sovereignty in favor of rich-poor inequality and globalization, the NWO architects then installed their two bisexual cottage boys "Miranda" Blair and George W[176] for their turn to drive the world closer to the edge. With Bush-Cheney's treasonously masterminded, neo-conned "new Pearl Harbor" vis-a-vis 9/11 false flag as more dirty bidding for Netanyahu's Greater Israel Project.[177] By elite design, the Anglo-American-Zionist axis-of-evil then launched its ambitious, willfully destructive 7 nation in 5 year takedown plan,[178] demolishing Iraq, Libya, Sudan, Somalia, Lebanon and Afghanistan into failed states. A decade and a half later still raging unfinished wars in Syria and Afghans' "empire graveyard" for heroin pushing[179] at the precipice gateway to the 7th and final vowed nation to vanquish Iran, a diabolically twisted suicide pact is now plunging humanity off the Armageddon cliff.[180]

Once the Anglo-American-Zionist pedo-axis manufactured its perpetual state of war in the Middle East and North Africa,[181] the NWO architects engineered[182] the earth's largest displaced population in history as of 2014 and a year later the worst refugee crisis since WWII.[183] Flooding millions of Muslims into Europe and North America under the euphemistic Trojan horse guise of "multiculturalism," just to jack up the cultural, racial, religious divide and conquer violence and upheaval, bankrupting the euro[184] and EU[185] with Italy now at the breaking point,[186] like dominos ultimately crashing the global economy just as elite controllers trigger the West versus East WWIII showdown,[187] the crime cabal is closing in on destroying the West and creating such dire, turbulent, desperate global conditions that offer the excuse to bring on the long awaited one world government as humanity's only "salvation" for survival. This is the child fuckers' nearly accomplished endgame as its sleight of hand answer to its Achilles pedo-heel.

The post-Savile revelations in recent years once again placed unwanted spotlight on the Achilles heel again, especially the notorious Thatcher government and the Westminster scandal cover-up, featured partially in a book co-written by Labor MP Simon Danczuk exposing one larger-than-life, villainous character, the over 400 pound (29 stone, 12 pounds or 190kg[188]) gluttonous pedophile Sir Cyril Smith.[189] Hailing from the same Rochdale district, Simon Danczuk was elected the same year the rotund Sir Cyril died in 2010. I July 2014 Danczuk asked the aging Leon Brittan what happened to those missing dossiers from the 1980s.[190] Unfortunately exercising a gross lapse of moral judgment in 2015, the married Danczuk was caught sexting a 17-year old girl a-la Weiner style,[191] completely self-sabotaging whatever legitimate voice he may have had to further expose the pedophilia network. The Labour Party suspended him and when he announced he would run as an independent in the 2017 general election, a woman accused him of rape. Chalk another victory up for the pedophilia cabal subduing yet another potential threat.

The October 2012 Savile exposure inspired Labor leader MP Tom Watson to take up the cause that MP Geoffrey Dickens initiated three decades earlier to once again call for an actual real police investigation looking into the pedo-infested British Parliament and prime minister office, forcing the then pedo-enabler Prime Minister David Cameron to begrudgingly initiate the latest “pseudo-probe” to placate public interest. With his dramatic October 24th, 2012 confrontation on the House of Commons floor, MP Watson demanded UK’s prime minister and police:

Investigate clear intelligence suggesting a powerful pedophile network linked to Parliament and Number 10.[192]

Dramatically caught off guard, Cameron halfheartedly pledged to look into the matter after pretending he didn’t grasp which 10 Downing occupant Watson was referring to, knowing full well it was Margaret Thatcher.[193] Of course it could've been Edward Heath, Gordon Brown or Tony Blair or even himself, as Cameron knew every UK prime minister over the past half century was/is a pedophile or pedophile protector. And as a cousin of PIE supporting Harriet Harman and 5th cousin to Queen Elizabeth herself,[194] a loyal pedo-enabler to the end, three years later it was David Cameron in October 2015 self-righteously striking back, imploring anti-pedophile crusader Tom Watson to "examine his conscience."

After Watson dared to mention Lord Leon Brittan's alleged pedophilia (without even bringing up his infamous "lost" pair of pedo-dossiers), instantly Watson became an easy target having the nerve to call for a new investigation nine months after accused pedophile Brittan's death.[195] The ensuing drama played out once again before the House with Cameron and his indignant fellow pro-Brittan pro-pedo-defenders demanding Watson's resignation, yelling "shame, shame" after Watson reiterated the need to revisit investigating government pedophilia on behalf of the thousands of victims never heard nor ever given any true justice. The UK pedo-Establishment never fails to jump on the political bandwagon to demonize every rare MP who's ever been bold enough to try and hold his powerful pedo-peer majority accountable. Watson's righteous proposal obviously hit way too close to home for VIP child rapists.

In 2014 Home Office then under current Prime Minister Theresa May admitted to 114 pedo-related files gone missing or destroyed.[196] Using the "never enough evidence" mantra, by design, the pedophilia epicenter of the world appears incapable of honestly holding establishment pedophiles accountable. Hence, Operation Midland ostensibly set up in late 2014 to investigate the alleged Westminster MP pedophilia scandal collapsed for “lack of evidence.”[197] Though both Operations Midlands and Fairbridge were ostensibly set up after Savile died to investigate government VIP abuse, both probes shamefully failed to arrest a single Elm Guest House or Dolphin Square VIP… some things never change.

Then Metro Police’s onetime key witness “Nick” whose accusations between 2012 and 2014 of widespread abuse and alleged witnessing three boys murdered deemed “credible and true,”[198] by top cop himself suddenly was charged with the crime of perverting justice with so called “made up” lies.[199] This latest legal development is meant to frighten off victims from ever coming forth. So the government pedophiles once again remain fully protected and unreachable. And with Theresa May’s floundering national “independent” Inquiry hoax into child sexual abuse that doesn’t even include Northern Ireland’s MI5-Savile[200]-Mountbatten-Heath-Blunt linked Kincora Boys Home scandal, nothing ever changes.[201] Because all these biggest names in British pedophilia were all such major VIPs directly linked to royalty striking at the heart of the over-the-top UK pedo-cover-up, Prime Minister May will never dare allow the Kincora scandal into her pathetic whitewash.

Incidentally, a former detective probing early Jimmy Savile crimes angrily maintained that fellow pedophile, royal historian, MI5 double spy and traitor Sir Anthony Blunt successfully blocked police investigations into the infamous *BBC* DJ,[202] just one more indicator that Savile was an employed MI5 operative. Of course for Soviet spy Blunt’s confession of treason, as a member of the “hidden elite,” in 1964 Blunt was granted full immunity from prosecution as both a pedophile and national traitor, and protection from public exposure for another fifteen years.[203] This allowed Blunt to freely travel to Northern Ireland often to sodomize yet more boys from Kincora and other group homes in the area, again completely without fear of exposure or arrest.

According to the late British intelligence insider Anthony T. Stokes, Victor Rothchild, Anthony Blunt and many other Establishment VIPs practiced satanic ritual abuse and murder at black magick orgies, specifying that Blunt asphyxiated child victims causing their bodies to contract to heighten the orgasm for the sodomizer.[204] Jimmy Savile was right at home in this element. This is the above the law club of monsters ruling our planet that ensure protection of their own.

A former MI6 agent assigned to surveillance of right wing loyalist extremist groups in Northern Ireland has reported that British intelligence was fully aware of both illegal arms trafficking as well as child trafficking sex abuse but looked the other way not wanting to blow its cover or "tread on the toes" of Ulster Constabulary.[205] The ex-spy claimed a sophisticated international pedophile ring trafficked boys from Kincora Home to London, Brighton, and abroad to Amsterdam and Vienna. The simple reason nothing was done to intervene to save the exposable children being sodomized is that it was a British intelligence operation to traffic children to gain sexual blackmail control over politicians both domestic and foreign.[206] For many, many decades now, multiple child sex slaves have been moved around the globe through the massive worldwide pedophilia network primarily coordinated through the international intelligence community, particularly the CIA, Mossad and MI5 and 6.

Just like the Vatican and Catholic Church, the royal crown, the UK government, the *BBC* and entire British Establishment's long been completely taken over by Luciferian demons. For the pedophilia crisis endemic inside the putrefying United Kingdom to ever effectively be ameliorated, much less eradicated, the entire government needs to be scrapped and totally replaced from ground zero on up. The US and virtually the entire Western world are in the same pathetically depraved dire straits. But since we know that will almost never happen, a good place to start would be to at least replace Britain’s antiquated, grossly unfair, abominable family court system.

As it’s existed, the UK’s secret closed court system has been in the diabolical business of systematically breaking up and destroying British families, removing children en masse from parents without justifiable or due cause, and unmercifully sending them to be further abused in institutionalized[JH1] “care”[207] that serves as the child raping pipeline for the international sex trafficking trade. By sinister design, this enormous systemic flaw in Britain has allowed the vitally fundamental social institution of family to be obliterated, literally killing both children and parents alike, customarily placing kids in peril within the very broken system set up to protect them, just as my own direct experience as a child therapist in America confirmed.[208] In keeping children safe, like the one in America, the British child welfare system has only proven to be a failed abomination that like its larger government needs drastic overhaul.

This same diabolical dysfunction and process currently gripping both the US and UK’s child welfare systems is largely the same worldwide. But then for a very long time the international cabal has also insidiously been at war with the basic family institution, particularly the diminishing nuclear family unit as an impediment to the cultural Marxism inherently behind today’s neoliberal movement embracing one world government totalitarianism.[209] In 1786 Illuminati funder Baron Rothschild and founder Adam Weishaupt concurred, the basic family unit along with religion and national sovereignty were identified as the primary enemies obstructing their path to centrally controlled tyranny and coveted prize of one world government.[210] Weishaupt also articulated the key value of strategically deploying sexual blackmail as the Illuminati's "ends always justify the means" Modus Operandi.[211]

In 2013 newly appointed President of the High Court Family Division Judge James Munby went public stating that the most drastic legal matter that British judges deal with today is the pervasive removal of UK children from their families.[212] Judge Munby has called for a more transparent and open family court system that doesn't place gag orders on parents from being able to talk to the press. Munby also wants to reform the system to make both the court decisions available to the public as well as the identity of judges, social workers, attorneys and expert witnesses. In the past too many parents with legitimate grievous complaints have been unjustly imprisoned for calling for public scrutiny in family court cases where gross miscarriage of justice is systemically perpetrated. But the wall of resistance to Sir Munby's proposed changes that support the status quo of institutionalized child abuse and the prevailing pedophilia epidemic still rigidly persists.[213] Paradoxically, family court has used strict confidentiality laws to ostensibly "protect" the anonymity of children as its primary justification for secrecy when in fact it's been tearing the institution of family apart for systematically placing children at far greater risk of harm.

Another despicable misdeed willfully imposed by Justice Secretary Jack Straw in April 2009 intended to strengthen the blight of British pedophilia impunity was his unilaterally changing British law to prohibit children in group home care to the basic human right of speaking out against abuse or maltreatment received while trapped in the closed off, insulated child welfare system.[214] Step by step in the face of increasing exposure of the ongoing Savile-Westminster scandal, the elite has closed ranks to busily construct systemic barriers designed to muzzle and frighten victims and seal off the no longer free press from unveiling the filthy truth.

Because of the proliferating exposure of Savile related abuse along with so many other high profile pedo-scandals like Pizzagate/Pedogate in recent years gaining traction in growing citizens’ awareness of the ruling elite’s global child sex trafficking epidemic,[215] as mentioned previously the pedo-cabal in the UK has aggressively pushed back with two enormous court victories culminating in the same month of July 2018. The prospect of placing alleged abuse victim “Nick” behind bars for so called false allegations of a murderous Westminster pedophile ring lends the pretext for officially proclaiming the entire British VIP scandal an exaggerated myth and total hoax.[216] Then days later Sir Cliffy destroys what little freedom of the press is left, rendering its future capacity to report on and investigate high profile pedo-suspects impotent.[217] No doubt these days UK’s pedo-elite are celebrating in their mansions as these recent relatively unknown monumental setbacks validating VIP pedophiles’ above-the-law immunity from justice only embolden the powerful British Establishment to commit yet more crimes against innocent children.

This sad reality must change and we the people as protectors of our children must make it happen. A good place to start is advocating for truth and reconciliation commissions, supporting organizations like the International Tribunal for Natural Justice (ITNJ), presently gathering testimony from victim-turned-survivors[218]

With the cabal’s designated blackmail “specialists” Jimmy Savile and Jeffrey Epstein working in cahoots with the global intelligence community, joined by popes, corrupt churches, royalty, organized crime and their infiltrating satanic secret society allies, each dutifully play out their respective roles facilitating sexual blackmail pedophilia operations to gain absolute control over puppet politicians worldwide.[219]

Figureheads like Maggie, Blair and Cameron along with their US counterparts the Bushes, Clintons and Obamas serve as chosen (not elected[220]) public face pedophile overlords while behind the scenes their Luciferian bloodline masters quietly pull their order-following strings.[221]

Sir Jimmy Savile is linked to both abusing and pimping kids at virtually every major group home scandal in Britain. From Jersey Island's Haut de la Garenne[222] to Elm Guest House,[223] he was there. From Islington[224] to North Wales Bryn Estyn[225] where 650 children from a total of 40 group homes were sexually assaulted,[226] from Northern Ireland's Kincora Boys Home[227] to Surrey's Duncroft School for Girls, Jimmy was there doing his thing.[228]

One big orgiastic demonic death cult dance uses the elite's flourishing child sex trade booming larger than ever today[229] to own and control the planet and their minions through sexual blackmail[230] carried out with an accompanying permanent war against humanity agenda[231] that includes spreading global destabilization, deploying military wars around the world, using both fast and soft kill eugenics,[232] increasing covert psychotronic warfare[233] and nonstop disinformation propaganda and mass mind control.[234]

All this while the planetary controllers' collapsing, unsustainable global economy now shuddering in death throe implosion,[235] has been orchestrated to tighten the neo-feudal grip of their debtor slavery system[236] along with unprecedented global habitat destruction[237] that's fast leading to earth's sixth mass life extinction and first by a demonically executed human genocide.[238] Meanwhile, depopulation doomsday globalist Bill Gates has recently been at it again, frothing at the mouth to raise alarm over the impending "30 million dead" pandemic from infectious disease,[239] doing his nefarious duty to prep humanity for forced vaccination[240] amidst false flag biological warfare terrorism,[241] like AIDS[242] and Ebola[243] launched out of a Fort Detrick Petri dish.

Just in case it somehow escaped your attention, it appears that to even be considered qualified for such regal honors as British royal knighthood, you must already be a card carrying member of the VIP pedophilia club first. That way, every compromised politician holding higher office is subject to sexual blackmail and control by elite fascist Anglo-American-Zionist interest.[244] To the pedophilic puppet masters and their sexually blackmailed, controlled politicians throughout the world, it's never been about sworn oaths of loyalty towards any one country or one's country of citizenship, not with Israeli first dual citizens comprising the embedded neocon core still running Washington, or when a handful of Luciferian families from a few nations (most notably yet not exclusively from the West)[245] are pulling the international cabal strings rapidly bringing mounting geopolitical conflict, polarization, destabilization, uninterrupted war, financial hardship, economic disparity[246] and psychological trauma worldwide.[247]

In the meantime, widespread battlefields of war and overcrowded migrant camps caused by all the manufactured global conflict provide the ideal cover and setting for trafficking illegal arms,[248] illegal drugs,[249] illegal child sex slaves,[250] illegal body parts[251] and illegally laundered trillions into the pedophilic elite's international crime coffers,[252] which in turn are used to finance the deep underground military bases,[253] secret deep space program and limitless, deep pocketed CIA-DARPA black budgets[254] and black ops[255] that include Frankensteinian research into genetic engineering across species interbreeding,[256] Artificial Intelligence,[257] transhumanism,[258] robotics,[259] mass mind control,[260] advanced technological warfare[261] amongst numerous other unknown, dangerously destructive, nightmarish developments. As Luciferian masters of secrecy and deceit, all participants involved are betrayers of their constitutions, their governments, their nations, the entire human race, our planet and our One Creator.[262]

In recent years the NWO movement towards the coveted one world government and Luciferian one world religion has accelerated its collision course in a race against time[263] while the ruling elite's hourglass to materialize such dire, deplorable and extreme conditions risks running out of time. The elites' desperate timetabled mission through increasing geopolitical instability, global turmoil, massive censorship (especially targeting the worldwide web), draconian oppression and tyranny[264] is intended to thwart critical mass from taking hold when enough informed, educated and empowered, pissed off citizens around the globe ultimately unite in solidarity[265] to demand the planetary controlling pedophiles finally be held fully accountable for all their crimes against both children and humanity. That day is soon approaching… if the enemy elite doesn't unleash their Armageddon and nuclear winter agenda first.[266]

Chapter 23 exposes the full gamut of the widespread UK government pedophilia scandal and its never-ending cover-up that's been allowed it to flourish for far too many decades. By self-serving design, the criminal concealment of pedophilic crimes has enabled Establishment VIPs to always live above the law due to designated pedophile foxes always guarding their pedo-henhouse through centrally controlled, fully sabotaged police investigations and totally bogus "independent" child sex abuse Inquiries never leading anywhere, co-opted by the pedophile-infiltrated, thoroughly corrupted government, high courts, security intelligence, social services and mainstream media. Sadly, the pedo-cabal at the earth's epicenter - not so Great Britain - remains a fully operational, thriving criminal enterprise to this very day.

---

[1] Paul Revoir, “BBC has to Apologise as Guest from Mensa Labels People with an IQ of 60 ‘Carrots’ on live Breakfast Show,” *Daily Mail*, December 21, 2012, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2251593/BBC-apologise-guest-Mensa-labels-people-IQ-60-carrots-live-Breakfast-show.html.

[2] Cole Moreton, “Jimmy Savile, the Big Fixer,” *The Telegraph*, October 30, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/culture/music/rockandpopmusic/8857759/Jimmy-Savile-the-big-fixer.html.

[3] Peter Jukes, “Jimmy Savile Sex Abuse Scandal Taints Entire Era in Britain,” *Daily Beast*, October 31, 2012, https://www.thedailybeast.com/jimmy-savile-sex-abuse-scandal-taints-entire-era-in-britain.

[4] Paul Jeeves, “Ow’s about that! Sir Jimmy Savile Raised £45m for Charity and left another £5m in his Will,” *Express*, December 16, 2011, https://www.express.co.uk/celebrity-news/290206/Ow-s-about-that-Sir-Jimmy-Savile-raised-45m-for-charity-and-left-another-5m-in-his-will.

[5] “Jimmy Savile: Report into Stoke Mandeville Hospital Abuse says Sex Abuse Victims included Spinal Injury Patients, Staff and Visitors,” *ABC*, February 27, 2015, https://www.abc.net.au/news/2015-02-27/bbc-star-savile-abused-60-people-at-british-hospital/6267512.

[6] Jane Fryer, “Prince Charles, Saucy French Maids, and the Aphrodisiac Powers of a nice Chicken Sarnie. A very Bizarre Audience with the Eccentric Jimmy Savile,” *Daily Mail*, November 13, 2010, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/femail/article-1329332/Jimmy-Savile-Prince-Charles-saucy-French-maids.html.

[7] Alison Boshoff, “Jim the Fixer: Is Jimmy Savile just a Fantasist … or is the Truth even Stranger than Fiction?” *Daily Mail,* May 9, 2008, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/femail/article-565179/Jim-fixer-Is-Jimmy-Savile-just-fantasist---truth-stranger-fiction.html.

[8] Cyril Dixon and Charlotte Meredith, “Jimmy Savile’s ‘Love’ for Margaret Thatcher Revealed in Disturbing new Letters,” *Express*, December 28, 2012, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/367434/Jimmy-Savile-s-love-for-Margaret-Thatcher-revealed-in-disturbing-new-letters.

[9] Nick Dorman and Don Hale, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/edward-heath-fixed-jimmy-savile-6220604.

[10] Cyril Dixon and Charlotte Meredith, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/367434/Jimmy-Savile-s-love-for-Margaret-Thatcher-revealed-in-disturbing-new-letters.

[11] Gilbert A. Lewthwaite,” Queen Honors Thatcher with Order of Merit,” *The Baltimore Sun*, December 8, 1990, http://articles.baltimoresun.com/1990-12-08/news/1990342031_1_margaret-thatcher-sir-denis-baronetcy.

[12] “Jimmy Savile and Margaret Thatcher,” Jim’ll Fix It episode, *BBC*, aired January 1, 1977, YouTube video, posted October 16, 2012, 01:56, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=TFEZkoJQ4DA.

[13] “Margaret Thatcher Speeches, Interviews and Other Statements,” Margaret Thatcher Foundation, *margaretthatcher.org*, https://www.margaretthatcher.org/document/103173.

[14] “Margaret Thatcher Quotes,” IMDb, https://m.imdb.com/name/nm0857137/quotes.

[15] “North Wales Paedophile Ring,” whale.to, http://whale.to/c/north_wales_paedophile_ring.html.

[16] Michael James, “Revealed: British Premier Gordon Brown Is a Pedophile,” *rense.com*, February 28, 2010, https://rense.com/general89/brownpd.htm.

[17] Michael James, “Tony Blair Caught Protecting Elite Paedophile Ring,” *whale.to*, March 5, 2003, http://whale.to/b/tony.html.

[18] Martin Robinson, “Award-Winning Author Claims MP in Tony Blair’s Government was part of Paedophile Ring which Infiltrated Council-run Children's Home,” *Daily Mail*, July 14, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2691276/Award-winning-author-claims-MP-Tony-Blair-s-government-paedophile-ring-infiltrated-council-run-children-s-home.html.

[19] Chris Spivey, “Cameron’s Closet,” *Guerrilla Democracy News*, February 5, 2013, http://guerrillademocracy.blogspot.com/2013/02/camerons-closet-by-christopher-spivey.html.

[20] Wayne Madsen, “The EU: A Powerhouse Pedophile Hierarchy,” *Infowars/Madsen Report*, June 30, 2016, https://www.infowars.com/the-eu-a-powerhouse-pedophile-hierarchy/.

[21] Alison Boshoff, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/femail/article-565179/Jim-fixer-Is-Jimmy-Savile-just-fantasist---truth-stranger-fiction.html.

[22] John Stevens, “Pervert DJ Jimmy Savile Harassed top Music Boss’ Wife at a Dinner Party at Tony Blair’s Chequers Country Retreat,” *Daily Mail*, November 4, 2013, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2487217/Jimmy-Savile-harassed-music-boss-wife-Chequers-dinner-party-hosted-Tony-Blair.html.

[23] Nicole Martin, “Barnardo’s Role for Cherie,” *The Telegraph*, September 18, 2001, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/1340848/Barnardos-role-for-Cherie.html.

[24] Peter Swindon, “Child Abuse ‘Cover-up’ claims after Barnardo’s Admits Systematically Destroying Files,” The Herald, June 4, 2017, https://www.heraldscotland.com/news/15326932.Child_abuse___39_cover_up__39__claims_after_Barnardo__39_s_admits_systematically_destroying_files_at_residential_care_homes/.

[25] Tracy McVeigh, “Take more Babies away from Bad Parents, says Barnardo's Chief,” *The Guardian*, September 6, 2009, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2009/sep/06/children-babies-parents-care-barnardos.

[26] Josh Halliday, “Jimmy Savile carried out 46 Sexual Assaults at Surrey Girls’ School, say Police,” *The Guardian*, April 29, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2015/apr/29/jimmy-savile-46-sexual-assaults-surrey-girls-school-police.

[27] Richard Alleyne and Jowena Mason, “Jimmy Savile Treated School like ‘Paedophile Sweetshop,’” *The Telegraph*, October 17, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9614091/Jimmy-Savile-treated-school-like-paedophile-sweetshop.html.

[28] Robert Henderson, “The Blair’s Daughter’s Attempted Suicide and the Public’s Right to Know,” *livinginamadhouse.wordprss.com*, October 2, 2010, https://livinginamadhouse.wordpress.com/2010/10/02/the-blair-daughters-attempted-suicide-and-the-publics-right-to-know/.

[29] Mike James, “Are Pedophiles Running Blair’s War Machine?” *Counter Punch*, January 29, 2003, https://www.counterpunch.org/2003/01/29/are-pedophiles-running-blair-s-war-machine/.

[30] “Tony Blair has Links to Jimmy Savile,” *neilscott1.wordpress.com*, November 9, 2013, https://neilscott1.wordpress.com/2013/11/09/tony-blair-has-links-to-paedophile-jimmy-saville/.

[31] Mark Duell and Sam Greenhill, “Tony Blair called Sir Cliff Richard to Support him and Elton John told him to ‘go for their Throat’ over the Televised Police Raid of his Home on the BBC,” *Daily Mail*, June 22, 2016, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3653939/I-ve-collateral-damage-22-months-Sir-Cliff-Richards-claims-illegal-collusion-televised-police-raid-home-BBC.html.

[32] Alison Boshoff, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/femail/article-565179/Jim-fixer-Is-Jimmy-Savile-just-fantasist---truth-stranger-fiction.html.

[33] Becca Gliddon, “Royal Marines ‘Erase’ the Memory of Jimmy Savile,” *Exmouth Journal*, October 19, 2012, http://www.exmouthjournal.co.uk/news/royal-marines-erase-the-memory-of-jimmy-savile-1-1662912.

[34] Janice Turner, "Savile, the King, and it was Margaret Thatcher who Crowned him,” *The Times*, February 28, 2015, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2015/03/03/money-and-politics-allowed-savile-to-molest-28-02-2015/.

[35] Janice Turner, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2015/03/03/money-and-politics-allowed-savile-to-molest-28-02-2015/.

[36] Robert Mendick and Laura Donnelly, “Jimmy Savile: Questions for Edwina Currie and the BBC,” *The Telegraph*, October 20, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9623089/Jimmy-Savile-Questions-for-Edwina-Currie-and-the-BBC.html.

[37] “Mr. Brian McGinnis,” *Zoom Info*, https://archive.is/99V9V.

[38] “The Broadmoor Hospital, Jimmy Savile, and other Cover-ups,” *Gumshoe News*, October 27, 2017, https://gumshoenews.com/2017/10/27/broadmoor-hospital-jimmy-savile-cover-ups/.

[39] Robert Mendick and Laura Donnelly, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9623089/Jimmy-Savile-Questions-for-Edwina-Currie-and-the-BBC.html.

[40] Richard Wheatstone, “When did Edwina Currie have an Affair with John Major and what’s she said about the MPs Sex Scandal,” *The Sun*, November 3, 2017, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/4833625/edwina-currie-john-major-affair-sex-scandal/.

[41] David Barrett, “Kenneth Clarke ‘Failed to act’ over Lord Janner and Cyril Smith Child Abuse Tip-offs,” *The Telegraph*, March 8, 2016, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/child-protection/12188024/Kenneth-Clarke-failed-to-act-over-Lord-Janner-and-Cyril-Smith-child-abuse-tip-offs.html.

[42] Steph Cockroft, “Ex-chancellor Ken Clarke says the ‘Nasty Allegation’ he Molested a Young Actor in the 1990s was ‘rather like the Martians Landing,’” *Daily Mail*, July 27, 2015, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3176037/Ex-chancellor-Ken-Clarke-says-nasty-allegation-molested-young-actor-1990s-like-Martians-landing.html.

[43] Ben Fellows, “Ben Fellows Writes Direct to Ken Clarke,” *The Tap Blog*, June 19, 2013, https://archive.is/w8lnS.

[44] Paul Cheston, “Former Child Actor who Accused ex-Chancellor Ken Clarke of Sexual Assault is Cleared of Perverting Course of Justice,” *Evening Standard*, July 30, 2015, https://www.standard.co.uk/news/crime/former-child-actor-who-accused-ex-chancellor-ken-clarke-of-sexual-assault-is-cleared-of-perverting-10427762.html.

[45] Robert Mendick and Laura Donnelly, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9623089/Jimmy-Savile-Questions-for-Edwina-Currie-and-the-BBC.html

[46] “Jimmy Savile Abuse Reports ‘Reach 500,’” *BBC*, June 2, 2014, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-27621777.

[47] “Friends of Israel,” *aangirfan.com*, September 5, 2018, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2018/09/friends-of-israel.html/.

[48] Jane Fryer, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/femail/article-1329332/Jimmy-Savile-Prince-Charles-saucy-French-maids.html.

[49] Jonathan Corke, Deborah Sherwood and Rick Lyons, “Charles’ Links to Savile,” *Daily Record*, May 12, 2013, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/314185/CHARLES-LINKS-TO-SAVILE.

[50] Brandon Turbeville, “The Prince and the Pedophile: Charles’ Connections to Pedophilia Networks,” *Activist Post*, November 16, 2012, https://www.activistpost.com/2012/11/the-prince-and-pedophile-charles.html.

[51] Claire Ellicott, “Jimmy Savile ‘was given key Position at Broadmoor and even personally Selected Hospital's Bosses,’” *Daily Mail*, October 28, 2013, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2478143/Jimmy-Savile-given-key-position-Broadmoor-personally-selected-hospitals-bosses.html.

[52] Tim Hicks, “Savile and the Broadmoor Abuse Allegations, “*North Yorkshire Enquirer*, November 27, 2012, http://nyenquirer.uk/savile-the-broadmoor-abuse-allegations/.

[53] Murun Buch, “There was Evidence of a Broadmoor Paedophile Ring in 1986,” *spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, December 6, 2013, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/12/06/there-was-evidence-of-a-broadmoor-paedophile-ring-in-1986/.

[54] “Broadmoor: Savile was ‘a Lunatic in Charge of the Asylum,’” *Channel 4 News*, October 31, 2012, https://www.channel4.com/news/broadmoor-savile-was-a-lunatic-in-charge-of-the-asylum.

[55] Robert Mendick and Laura Donnelly, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9623089/Jimmy-Savile-Questions-for-Edwina-Currie-and-the-BBC.html.

[56] Matthew Weaver, “Jimmy Savile gave Rolf Harris a Guided Tour of Broadmoor,” *The Guardian*, July 1, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2014/jul/01/jimmy-savile-rolf-harris-alleged-tour-broadmoor.

[57] “Exposure Update – The Jimmy Savile Investigation,” YouTube video, 2013, 54:56, posted March 7, 2013, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=AwaT-mfqJpo.

[58] Matthew Brace, “Broadmoor Chief Resigns,” *Independent*, June 4, 1997, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/broadmoor-chief-resigns-1254020.html.

[59] Tim Walker, “Sir Jimmy Savile causes anguish at the Athenaeum,” *The Telegraph*, October 10, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/picturegalleries/celebritynews/9596850/Sir-Jimmy-Savile-causes-anguish-at-the-Athenaeum.html.

[60] “The Secret Connection between Pedophile Jimmy Savile and the British Royal Family,” *humansarefree.com*, November 2017, http://humansarefree.com/2017/11/the-secret-connection-between-pedophile.html.

[61] Janice Turner, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2015/03/03/money-and-politics-allowed-savile-to-molest-28-02-2015/.

[62] “Savile ‘thought he was Untouchable,’” http://www.itv.com/news/calendar/2012-11-22/savile-thought-he-was-untouchable/

[63] John Goss, “Las Malvinas or the Falkland Islands? The Ugly Face of British Imperialism and Its Startling Cost,” *News Junkie Post*, January 5, 2013, http://newsjunkiepost.com/2013/01/05/las-malvinas-or-the-falkland-islands-the-ugly-face-of-british-imperialism-and-its-startling-cost/.

[64] Anthony T. Stokes, “Margaret Thatcher’s Part in the Sinking of the General Belgrano,” *whale.to*, December 24, 2011, http://whale.to/c/margaret_thatcher6.html.

[65] Eric Lormand, “Granada: How we continue to Believe the Hoaxes of our Military Establishment,” *personal.michu.edu*, http://www-personal.umich.edu/~lormand/poli/soa/grenada.htm.

[66] Anemona Hartocollis, “Second-Chance Med School,” *The New York Times*, July 31, 2014, https://www.nytimes.com/2014/08/03/education/edlife/second-chance-med-school.html.

[67] Palash Ghost, “Cold Warriors after the 1973 Coup: Why did Britain’s Margaret Thatcher Support Chilean Dictator Augusto Pinochet?” *IBT*, September 11, 2013, https://www.ibtimes.com/cold-warriors-after-1973-coup-why-did-britains-margaret-thatcher-support-chilean-dictator-augusto.

[68] “Thatcher, Pinochet and the Legacy of Class Warfare,” *The Conversation*, April 10, 2013, http://theconversation.com/thatcher-pinochet-and-the-legacy-of-class-warfare-13342.

[69] “From ‘Margaret Thatcher, Milk Snatcher’ to ‘Theresa May, No Lunch Today’: UK Conservatives Launch Manifesto,” *Telesur*, May 18, 2017, https://www.telesurtv.net/english/news/From-Margaret-Thatcher-Milk-Snatcher-to-Theresa-May-No-Lunch-Today-UK-Conservatives-Launch-Manifesto-20170518-0006.html.

[70] Matt Chorley, “Thatcher’s former Bodyguard Reveals most of her ‘Conservative’ Ministers were regularly going to Ped-Parties,” *sott.net/Daily Mail*, July 27, 2014, https://www.sott.net/article/282806-Thatchers-former-bodyguard-reveals-most-of-her-conservative-ministers-were-regularly-going-to-pedo-parties.

[71] “Tory MP Warned of Powerful Paedophile Ring 30 Years ago,” *Independent*, February 22, 2013, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/tory-mp-warned-of-powerful-paedophile-ring-30-years-ago-8507780.html.

[72] Vanessa Allen, “Revealed: Lady Thatcher's Five Attempts to Secure Knighthood for Jimmy Savile while her Aides Warned of his ‘Strange and Complex’ life,” *Daily Mail*, July 17, 2013, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2366576/Revealed-Lady-Thatchers-FIVE-attempts-secure-knighthood-Jimmy-Savile.html/

[73] Gavin Evans, “Margaret Thatcher’s Shameful Support for Apartheid,” *Mail & Guardian*, April 19, 2013, https://mg.co.za/article/2013-04-19-00-margaret-thatchers-shameful-support-for-apartheid.

[74] “Speech Receiving Presidential Medal of Freedom,” Margaret Thatcher Foundation, margaretthatcher.org, March 7, 1991, https://www.margaretthatcher.org/document/108263.

[75] “Speech on Receiving the Order of Good Hope from President De Klerk,” Margaret Thatcher Foundation, margaretthatcher.org. May 15, 1991, https://www.margaretthatcher.org/document/108267.

[76] “No. 52590,” *The London Gazette*, July 1, 1991. p. 10029, *"No. 52590"*

[77] “Will Sir Jimmy Remain a Knight of Malta?” *maltastar.com*, October 27, 2012, https://www.maltastar.com/dart/20121027-will-jimmy-savile-remain-knight-of-malta.

[78] Jonathon Corke, “Margaret Thatcher Knew of Paedophile’s Tory’s Sick Secret but still Secured him a Knighthood,” *Mirror*, May 9, 2015, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/margaret-thatcher-knew-paedophile-torys-5669409.

[79] Peter Walker, “Thatcher Stopped Peter Hayman being named as Paedophile-Link Civil Servant,” *The Guardian*, February 2, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2015/feb/02/thatcher-peter-hayman-named-paedophile-archives.

[80] Vincent Moss and Dominic Herbert, "Ex-Home Secretary Leon Brittan Questioned by Police over Rape Claims," *Mirror*, July 5, 2014, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/ex-home-secretary-leon-brittan-questioned-3818392.

[81] "Leon Brittan, Elm Guest House and Disappearing Children," *The Tap Blog*, November 3, 2014, http://tapnewswire.com/2014/11/leon-brittan-elm-guest-house-and-disappearing-children/.

[82] Jonathon Corke, Tony Bushby and Deborah Sherwood, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/279380/TORY-PAEDO-COVER-UP.

[83] Daniel Boffey, "Leon Brittan 'Questioned by Police over Historical Rape Claim," *The Guardian*, July 6, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2014/jul/06/leon-brittan-denies-rape-allegation.

[84] Keir Mudie and Mark Watts, "Leon Brittan Homes Raided in VIP Paedophile Child Abuse Probe six weeks after Tory Lord's Death," *Mirror*, March 8, 2015, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/leon-brittan-homes-raided-vip-5292495.

[85] Justin Penrose, "The Net Closes: Ex-Tory Chief Faces Child Sex Arrest over Claims Girl was Raped and Boys were Abused," Mirror, February 16, 2013, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/former-tory-faces-child-sex-1714162.

[86] Justin Penrose, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/former-tory-faces-child-sex-1714162.

[87] Justin Penrose, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/former-tory-faces-child-sex-1714162.

[88] Fiona O'Clerigh and Mark Watts, "Met Detectives told of Jimmy Savile's Link to Elm Guest House," *Exaro News*, February 16, 2013, https://www.exaronews.com/met-detectives-told-of-jimmy-savile-s-link-to-elm-guest-house.

[89] Keir Mudie and David Hencke, "Was Owner of a Paedophile Palace who kept list of Secret VIP Visitors Murdered?" *Mirror*, November 11, 2017, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/secret-files-prove-carole-kasir-11506791.

[90] Keir Mudie and David Hencke, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/secret-files-prove-carole-kasir-11506791.

[91] "Kincora Child Sex Abuse Victim Richard Kerr: I was Molested by Powerful People at Dolphin Square and Elm Guest House in London," *Belfast Telegraph*, April 7, 2015, https://www.belfasttelegraph.co.uk/news/northern-ireland/kincora-child-sex-abuse-victim-richard-kerr-i-was-molested-by-powerful-people-at-dolphin-square-and-elm-guest-house-in-london-31121971.html.

[92] Gary Fennely, "Newton: Kincora's Exclusion from UK Child Abuse Inquiry is Unforgiveable," *Tap News Wire*, July 29, 2015, http://tapnewswire.com/2015/07/newton-kincoras-exclusion-from-uk-child-abuse-inquiry-is-unforgivable/.

[93] Joe Oliver, "Mountbatten is Linked to Ulster Boy Sex Scandal," *The People/thefreelibrary.com*, December 8, 2002, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/MOUNTBATTEN+IS+LINKED+TO+ULSTER+BOY+SEX+SCANDAL.-a095081473.

[94] James Fielding, “MI6 Covered up Historic Child Sex Abuse Ring Discovered during Surveillance Operation,” *Express*, April 12, 2015, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/569866/Child-sex-abuse-ring-kept-secret-British-spies-MI6.

[95] Jonathon Corke, Tony Bushby and Deborah Sherwood, “Tory Paedo Cover-up,” *Daily Star*, October 28, 2012, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/279380/TORY-PAEDO-COVER-UP.

[96] Jonathon Corke, Tony Bushby and Deborah Sherwood, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/279380/TORY-PAEDO-COVER-UP.

[97] “100 Victims of VIP/Westminster Child Sexual Abuse,” *scribd.com*, https://www.scribd.com/doc/247778886/100-Victims-of-VIP-Westminster-Child-Sexual-Abuse.

[98] Murun Buch, “Elm Guest House: The History of a Cover-up,” *spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, February 13, 2013, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/02/13/elm-guest-house-the-start-of-the-cover-up/.

[99] Jonathon Corke, Tony Bushby and Deborah Sherwood, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/279380/TORY-PAEDO-COVER-UP.

[100] Justin Penrose, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/former-tory-faces-child-sex-1714162.

[101] James Fielding, “Clockmaker Keith Harding played vital role in Britain’s Biggest Child Sex Ring,” *Sunday Express/ spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, May 10, 2015, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2015/05/14/keith-harding-leon-brittan-cyril-smith-and-jeremy-thorpe/.

[102] Joe Dziemianowicz, “British Police Reopen Scandalous Gay Murder-for-Hire Case,” *New York Daily News*, June 2, 2018, http://www.nydailynews.com/news/ny-news-british-police-reopen-case-20180602-story.html.

[103] Anthony T. Stokes, “The Wheel of Fortune,” *whale.to*, September 6, 2011, http://www.whale.to/c/wheel.html.

[104] “Jimmy Savile, Edward Heath and the Kray Twins,” *google-law.blogspot.com*, November 2, 2012, http://google-law.blogspot.com/2012/11/jummy-savile-edward-heath-and-kray-twins.html.

[105] Richard Spillett, “BBC Radio One DJ Chris Denning is Jailed for 13 years for Sex Attacks on Children as Young as Eight as it is Revealed he took a 14-year-old to Meet Gary Glitter,” *Daily Mail*, October 7, 2016, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3826806/Paedophile-DJ-Chris-Denning-offered-child-BBC-presenter.html.

[106] Bob Woffinden, “Is this Proof that Jonathan King didn’t do it? New Evidence Suggests Pop Mogul could have an Alibi which puts him in America when Teenage Boy was Abused in UK,” *Daily Mail*, April 30, 2016, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3567549/Is-proof-Jonathan-King-DIDN-T-abuse-teenage-boys-New-evidence-suggests-pop-mogul-alibi-sent-jail.html.

[107] Guy Adams and Andrew Malone, “Revealed: The Full Horrifying Truth about Sir Nicholas Fairbairn - the other Paedophile at Margaret Thatcher's Side,” *Daily Mail*, August 22, 2014, http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2732234/Revealed-The-Full-horrifying-truth-Sir-Nicholas-Fairbairn-paedophile-Margaret-Thatcher-s-side.html.

[108] Marc Horne, “Esther Rantzen: My shock over my MP Lover's Links to Elm House Paedophile Ring, *Daily Mail*, July 20, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2698634/Esther-Rantzen-My-shock-MP-lovers-links-Elm-House-paedophile-ring.html.

[109] Matt Chorley, “Thatcher’s Bodyguard says he Warned her about Underage Sex Rumours about Close Aide amid Claims Senior Ministers were named in Dossier,” *Daily Mail*, July 27, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2707333/Thatcher-s-bodyguard-says-warned-underage-sex-rumours-close-aide-amid-claims-senior-ministers-named-dossier.html.

[110] Nico Hines, “How Thatcher’s Government Covered up a VIP Pedophile Ring,” *The Daily Beast*, March 6, 2015, https://www.thedailybeast.com/how-thatchers-government-covered-up-a-vip-pedophile-ring.

[111] Levi Winchester, “Leon Brittan ‘Attended Paedophile Parties in Notorious Brothel,’” *Express*, January 25, 2015, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/554152/Leon-Brittan-paedophile-party-claims.

[112] Steven Swinford, “Leon Brittan was given a second Paedophle Dossier,” *The Telegraph*, July 7, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/10952480/Leon-Brittan-was-given-second-paedophile-dossier.html.

[113] Philip Jenkins, “Sexual Blackmail’s Long History,” *The American Conservative*, January 16, 2017, https://www.theamericanconservative.com/articles/sexual-blackmails-long-history/.

[114] “About Jeffrey Epstein VI Foundation,” *jeffreyepstein.org*, https://www.jeffreyepstein.org/Jeffrey_Epstein.html.

[115] Vincent Moss and Matthew Drake, “Tory Child Abuse Whistleblower: ‘Margaret Thatcher Knew all about Underage Sex Ring among Ministers,” *Mirror*, July 13, 2014, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/tory-child-abuse-whistleblower-margaret-3849172.

[116] Rebecca Lake, “Thatcher’s Cabinet Minister Paedophile Cover-up,” *Wessex Scene*, July 17, 2014, https://www.wessexscene.co.uk/politics/2014/07/17/thatchers-cabinet-minister-paedophile-cover-up/.

[117] Matthew Drake, “Margaret Thatcher’s Cabinet Bigwigs named in Leon Brittan Paedo Files,” *Mirror*, July 26, 2014, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/margaret-thatchers-cabinet-bigwigs-named-3919442.

[118] Rebecca Lake, https://www.wessexscene.co.uk/politics/2014/07/17/thatchers-cabinet-minister-paedophile-cover-up/.

[119] Rebecca Lake, https://www.wessexscene.co.uk/politics/2014/07/17/thatchers-cabinet-minister-paedophile-cover-up/.

[120] Corinne Purtell, https://www.pri.org/stories/2015-07-23/uk-s-pedophilia-scandal-even-worse-anybody-thought.

[121] “MI5 Warned Thatcher about Westminster Pedophiles, no action taken,” *RT*, July 25, 2015, https://www.rt.com/uk/310549-spy-chief-abuse-allegations/.

[122] Nick Buckley and Kier Mudie, “Margaret Thatcher ‘Personally Covered-up’ Child Abuse Allegations against Senior Ministers,” *Mirror*, July 12, 2014, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/margaret-thatcher-personally-covered-up-3848836.

[123] Nick Buckley and Kier Mudie, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/margaret-thatcher-personally-covered-up-3848836.

[124] Nick Buckley and Kier Mudie, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/margaret-thatcher-personally-covered-up-3848836.

[125] Richard Enos, “Illuminati Pedophilia: What is the Role of the Awakening Community?” *Stillness in the Storm*, September 10, 2018, https://stillnessinthestorm.com/2018/09/illuminati-pedophilia-what-is-the-role-of-the-awakening-community/.

[126] Eliza Filby, “Margaret Thatcher: Her Unswerving Faith Shaped by her Father,” *The Telegraph*, April 14, 2013, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/margaret-thatcher/9992424/Margaret-Thatcher-her-unswerving-faith-shaped-by-her-father.html.

[127] Keith Nuthall, “Thatcher’s Dad: Mayor, Preacher, Groper,” *Independent*, June 22, 1997, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/thatchers-dad-mayor-preacher-groper-1257249.html.

[128] Robin Harris, “The Mother Maggie Pitied, and the Sister she left behind… and the Puritanical Father who wouldn’t pay for an inside Loo and Banned her from Playing Snakes and Ladders on Sunday,” *Daily Mail*, April 15, 2013, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2309623/Margaret-Thatchers-family-The-puritanical-father-wouldnt-pay-inside-loo.html.

[129] Giles Sheldrick, “Esther Rantzen: I Suffered Sex Abuse as a Child,” *Express*, August 31, 2011, https://www.express.co.uk/celebrity-news/268219/Esther-Rantzen-I-suffered-sex-abuse-as-a-child.

[130] Jonathon Boyd, “Where Jewish Votes Matter the most,” *Jewish Policy Research*, May 2015, jpr.org.uk/documents/JPR.Where_Jewish_votes_may_.

[131] “Vital Statistics: Jewish Population of the World,” *Jewish Virtual Library*, 2017, https://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/jewish-population-of-the-world.

[132] Maayan Meir, “Margaret Thatcher and the Jews,” *aish.com*, July 22, 2017, http://www.aish.com/jw/s/Margaret-Thatcher-and-the-Jews.html.

[133] Richard M. Bennett, “Assassination and the License to Kill,” *Asia Times*, June 13, 2003, http://www.atimes.com/atimes/Middle_East/EF13Ak03.html.

[134] “The British Establishment is Controlled by Israel’s Mossad,” *The Coleman Experience/gmmuk.com*, June 27, 2015, http://gmmuk.com/the-coleman-experience-the-british-establishment-is-controlled-by-israels-mossad/.

[135] “The Real Thatcher,” *aangirfan.com*, April 9, 2013, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2013/04/the-real-thatcher.html.

[136] Colin Brown, “Howard Distances himself from the Thatcher Years,” *Independent*, April 12, 2005, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/politics/howard-distances-himself-from-the-thatcher-years-485149.html.

[137] Benjamin Kentish, “Poorest Pay Higher Taxes than Richest, New Figures show,” *Independent*, April 26, 2017, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/lowest-earners-more-tax-richest-office-national-statistics-inequality-council-tax-vat-equality-trust-a7704331.html.

[138] Malcolm Dean, “Margaret Thatcher’s Policies Hit the Poor Hardest – and it's happening again,” *The Guardian*, April 9, 2013, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2013/apr/09/margaret-thatcher-policies-poor-society.

[139] Henry Makow, “Victor Rothschild was a Soviet Agent,” *henrymakow.com*, April 19, 2017, https://www.henrymakow.com/2017/04/Was-Victor-Rothschild-a-Soviet-Agent.html.

[140] Andrew Alderson, “King George VI Suspected Blunt was Russian Spy,” *The Telegraph*, March 2, 2003, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/1423476/King-George-VI-suspected-Blunt-was-Russian-spy.html.

[141] “Rothschild’s Friend Blunt; International Child Abuse Ring,” *aangirfan.com*, April 13, 2015, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2015/04/rothschilds-friend-blunt-international.html.

[142] Henry Makow, https://www.henrymakow.com/2017/04/Was-Victor-Rothschild-a-Soviet-Agent.html.

[143] Rothschild; Philby; Angleton,” *aangirfan.com*, March 24, 2013, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2013/03/rothschild-philby-angleton.html.

[144] Henry Makow, https://www.henrymakow.com/2017/04/Was-Victor-Rothschild-a-Soviet-Agent.html.

[145] “Cold War: Anthony Blunt,” *Alpha History*, https://alphahistory.com/coldwar/anthony-blunt/.

[146] “Leon Brittan, Elm Guest House and Disappearing Children,” http://tapnewswire.com/2014/11/leon-brittan-elm-guest-house-and-disappearing-children/.

[147] “Rothschilds,” *aangirfan.com*, October 20, 2017, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2017/10/rothschilds.html.

[148] “Jimmy Savile; Rothschild; Anthony Blunt; MI5,” *aangirfan.com*, October 3, 2012, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2012/10/jimmy-savile-rothschild-anthony-blunt.html.

[149] “Nick Versus Lord Bramall,” *aangirfan.com*, February 7, 2018, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2017/09/nick-versus-lord-bramall.html.

[150] “Nick Versus Lord Bramall,” https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2017/09/nick-versus-lord-bramall.html.

[151] May Bulman, “Police Officers Linked to VIP Paedophile Ring to be Investigated,” *Independent*, November 17, 2016, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/operation-midland-ipcc-metropolitan-police-vip-paedophile-ring-probe-lord-bramall-a7421521.html.

[152] Ian Greenhalgh, “Investigation of British Elite Child Sex Abuse Scandal continues to be Sidetracked,” *Veterans Today*, February 5, 2016, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2016/02/05/investigation-of-british-elite-child-abuse-scandal-continues-to-be-sidetracked/.

[153] “British Police end VIP Child Abuse Investigation with no Arrests,” *Sputnik*, March 23, 2016, https://sputniknews.com/europe/201603221036698999-British-Police-End-VIP-Child-Abuse-Investigation-With-No-Arrests/#ixzz43lNCEIMD.

[154] “Reports of Child Abuse Rising Sharply, NSPCC says,” *BBC*, June 17, 2015, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-33160361.

[155] Henry Williams, “How English Libel Laws Dent Free Speech across the Globe,” *Spiked*, July 30, 2015, https://www.spiked-online.com/2015/07/30/how-english-libel-laws-dent-free-speech-across-the-globe/.

[156] Richard Spillett, “A British Weinstein would have got away with it: Experts say Mogul may never have Faced Justice if Sir Cliff Privacy Ruling was in place,” *Daily Mail*, July 19, 2018, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5970043/MeToo-not-happened-Harvey-Weinstein-used-Cliffs-law.html.

[157] Mark Burdman, “Pedophiles Arrested in Britain more Powerful than the Mafia,” EIR, February 17, 1989, https://larouchepub.com/eiw/public/1989/eirv16n08-19890217/eirv16n08-19890217_042-pedophiles_arrested_in_britain_m.pdf.

[158] Mark Burdman, https://larouchepub.com/eiw/public/1989/eirv16n08-19890217/eirv16n08-19890217_042-pedophiles_arrested_in_britain_m.pdf.

[159] Joseph Fitsanakis, “MI6 Chiefs used Secret Slush Fund to Finance Operations, Document Shows,” *IntelNews.org*, November 22, 2017, https://intelnews.org/2017/11/22/01-2218/.

[160] Mark Burdman, https://larouchepub.com/eiw/public/1989/eirv16n08-19890217/eirv16n08-19890217_042-pedophiles_arrested_in_britain_m.pdf.

[161] Mark Burdman, https://larouchepub.com/eiw/public/1989/eirv16n08-19890217/eirv16n08-19890217_042-pedophiles_arrested_in_britain_m.pdf.

[162] Mark Burdman, https://larouchepub.com/eiw/public/1989/eirv16n08-19890217/eirv16n08-19890217_042-pedophiles_arrested_in_britain_m.pdf.

[163] Conrad Goeringer, “Murder, Banking, Strategy – The Vatican,” *voxfux.com*, http://www.voxfux.com/features/vaticanmurder.html.

[164] “Eye Opening ITNJ Testimony from Fiona Bartlett,” YouTube video, 2018, 1:24:42, posted on September 7, 2018, https://www.youtube.com/watch?

v=N9dTMyuEHTQ.

[165] Fiona Barnett, “Witness Statement by Satanic Ritual Abuse Survivor, Fiona Barnett – Calling out her Pedophile Abusers,” *prepareforchange.net*, September 3, 2018, https://prepareforchange.net/2018/09/03/witness-statement-by-satanic-ritual-abuse-survivor-fiona-barnett-calling-out-her-pedophile-abusers/.

[166] Laura Burnip, “Edward Heath ‘Linked to a Murderous Paedophile Ring that Killed 16 Kids,’” *The Sun*, February 20, 2017, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/2906130/edward-heath-satanic-paedophile-ring/.

[167] Alan Sked, “How a Secretive Elite Created the EU to Build a World Government,” *The Telegraph*, November 27, 2015, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/newstopics/eureferendum/12018877/The-truth-how-a-secretive-elite-created-the-EU-to-build-a-world-government.html.

[168] Martin Siieff, “The Death of US and UK Neo-Colonialism,” *Zero Hedge*, August 6, 2018, https://www.zerohedge.com/news/2018-08-06/death-us-and-uk-neo-colonialism.

[169] Tony Bonn, “Did Bush Assassinate Reagan?” *The American Chronicle*, February 7, 2012, http://theamericanchronicle.blogspot.com/2012/02/did-bush-assassinate-reagan.html.

[170] David Malmo-Levine, “George H.W. Bush: Biggest Drug Lord Ever,” *Cannabis Culture*, May 16, 2017, https://www.cannabisculture.com/content/2017/05/16/george-h-w-bush-biggest-drug-lord-ever//.

[171] Mika Freeman, “Has the US-Israel-UK war with Iran Officially started?” *Sleuth Journal*, January 25, 2018, http://www.thesleuthjournal.com/us-israeli-uk-war-iran-officially-started/.

[172] Wes Williams, “This Chart Shows how Reaganomics has Destroyed the Middle Class,” *The Daily Banter*, August 8, 2017, https://thedailybanter.com/2017/08/this-chart-shows-how-reaganomics-has-destroyed-the-middle-class/.

[173] Owen Jones, “Class War: Thatcher’s Attack on Trade Unions, Industry and Working-Class Identity,” *versobooks.com*, April 8, 2013, https://www.versobooks.com/blogs/1274-class-war-thatcher-s-attack-on-trade-unions-industry-and-working-class-identity.

[174] Aditya Chakrabortty, “Why doesn’t Britain make things anymore?” *The Guardian*, November 16, 2011, https://www.theguardian.com/business/2011/nov/16/why-britain-doesnt-make-things-manufacturing.

[175] Steve Jones, “NOW Plans to Depopulat the Earth,” *rense.com*, April 13, 2005, https://rense.com/general64/pordc.htm.

[176] Kevin Barrett, “Bush & Blair: Blackmailed Pedophiles or just War Criminals?” *Veterans Today*, June 21, 2014, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2014/06/21/bushnblair/.

[177] Christopher Bollyn, “9/11 and the War on Terror: Israel's History of False Flag Operations against the U.S.A.,” July 7, 2018,

https://www.ahtribune.com/us/maga/2346-911-war-on-terror.html.

[178] Wesley Clark and Amy Goodman interview, "Global Warfare: 'We're Going to take out 7 Countries in 5 Years: Iraq, Syria, Lebanon, Libya, Somalia, Sudan & Iran…'", *Global Research/Democracy Now*, March 2, 2007, https://www.globalresearch.ca/we-re-going-to-take-out-7-countries-in-5-years-iraq-syria-lebanon-libya-somalia-sudan-iran/5166.

[179] Eric Margolis, "Afghanistan, Graveyard of Empires," *Lew Rockwell*, August 18, 2018, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2018/08/eric-margolis/afghanistan-graveyard-of-empires/.

[180] Key Pieces on the Global Geopolitical Chessboard Are Being Stealthily Rearranged for the Hot Phase of World War III," *State of the Nation*, April 3, 2018, http://stateofthenation2012.com/?p=97577.

[181] "Stratfor Chief Reveals Zio-Anglo-American Plot for World Domination," *State of the Nation*, September 11, 2015, http://stateofthenation2012.com/?p=22223.

[182] Alex Newman, "Globalists who Created Refugee Crisis now Exploiting it," *The New American*, September 8, 2015, https://www.thenewamerican.com/world-news/europe/item/21536-globalists-who-created-refugee-crisis-now-exploiting-it.

[183] Griff Witte, "New U.N. Report says World Refugee Crisis is Worse than anyone expected," *Washington Post*, June 18, 2015, https://www.washingtonpost.com/world/europe/new-un-report-says-worlds-refugee-crisis-is-worse-than-anyone-expected/2015/06/17/a49c3fc0-14ff-11e5-8457-4b431bf7ed4c_story.html?noredirect=on&utm_term=.e0e7eea74cd9.

[184] Joseph Stiglitz, "The Euro could be nearing a Crisis – can it be saved?" *The Guardian*, June 13, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/business/2018/jun/13/euro-growth-eurozone-joseph-stiglitz.

[185] "Migration Crisis 'could be the Undoing of the EU,'" *Straits Times*, September 3, 2018, https://www.straitstimes.com/world/europe/migration-crisis-could-be-the-undoing-of-eu.

[186] Markos Kounalakis, "How Italy is Threatening the World Economy," *Washington Monthly*, October 21, 2018, https://washingtonmonthly.com/2018/10/21/how-italy-is-threatening-the-world-economy/.

[187] "Are we on the Brink of World War III?" *The Week*, September 4, 2018, http://www.theweek.co.uk/92967/are-we-heading-towards-world-war-3.

[188] Paul Vallely, "Rochdale makes its mark at last, to the Regret of Mr Brown," *Independent*, April 30, 2010, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/politics/rochdale-makes-its-mark-at-last-to-the-regret-of-mr-brown-1958907.html.

[189] Nicholas Blincoe, "Smile for the Camera: The Double Life of Cyril Smith by Simon Danczuk and Matthew Baker, Review," *The Telegraph*, May 1, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/culture/books/bookreviews/10796249/Smile-for-

the-Camera-The-Double-Life-of-Cyril-Smith-by-Simon-Danczuk-and-Matthew-Baker-review.html.

[190] Georgia Graham, “Simon Danczuk: I was Warned not to Challenge Leon Brittan over Paedophile Dossier,” *The Telegraph*, July 6, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/10949366/Simon-Danczuk-I-was-warned-not-to-challenge-Leon-Brittan-over-paedophile-dossier.html.

[191] Nick Parker and Mile Sullivan, “MP Simon Danczuk Accused of Raping Young Woman in Westminster – but Insists he’ll still stand in General Election despite Police Probe,” *The Sun*, May 9, 2017, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/3522181/mp-simon-danczuk-accused-of-raping-young-woman-in-westminster-but-insists-hell-still-stand-in-the-general-election-despite-police-probe/.

[192] Martin Hickman, “England: Land of Royals, Tea and Horrific Pedophilia Coverups,” *Time Magazine*, July 10, 2014, http://time.com/2974381/england-land-of-royals-tea-and-horrific-pedophilia-coverups/.

[193] Tim Wilkinson, “Paedo Files: A Look at the UK Establishment Child Abuse Network,” *Lobster Magazine*, https://www.lobster-Jonathon Boyd, “Where Jewish Votes Matter the most,”magazine.co.uk/free/lobster70

[194] Stuart Heritage, “Please don’t say I’m Related to David Cameron,” *The Guardian*, January 29, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/lifeandstyle/shortcuts/2014/jan/29/please-dont-say-im-related-to-david-cameron.

[195] “Tom Watson’s Defiant Response to Cameron’s Leon Brittan Statement is Perfect, YouTube video, posted on October 12, 2015, 9:32,

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=tZjaGFXcZ0E.

[196] “British Government expected to Launch Child Sex Abuse Investigation,” *Associated Press/The Journal ie*, July 7, 2014, http://www.thejournal.ie/child-abuse-westminster-1557633-Jul2014/.

[197] Sandra Laville and Rajev Syal, “Operation Midland: Inquiry into Alleged VIP Paedophile Ring Collapses,” *The Guardian*, March 21, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2016/mar/21/last-living-suspect-harvey-proctor-vip-paedophile-ring-inquiry-will-face-no-charges.

[198] Dan MacGuill, “UK Police: We believe Witness who says an MP Murdered a Boy during an ‘Abuse Party,’” *The Journal.ie*, December 18, 2014, http://www.thejournal.ie/uk-paedophile-ring-tory-mp-boys-murder-operation-midland-1843507-Dec2014/.

[199] Vikram Dodd, “Man who said he was Victim of VIP Child Sexual Abuse Ring Charged,” *The Guardian*, July 3, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/jul/03/man-who-said-he-was-victim-of-vip-child-sex-abuse-ring-charged.

[200] “International Network – Whistleblower Kerr,” *aangirfan.com*, December 4, 2017, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2017/12/international-network-whistleblower-kerr.html.

[201] Anne St. Claire, “Rothschild’s Friend Sir Anthony Blunt & their International Child Abuse Ring,” *1776 Again*, January 10, 2018, http://www.1776again.com/2018/01/10/rothchilds-friend-sir-anthony-blunt-their-international-child-abuse-ring/.

[202] Anne St. Claire, http://www.1776again.com/2018/01/10/rothchilds-friend-sir-anthony-blunt-their-international-child-abuse-ring/.

[203] John Burns, “Memoirs of British Spy offer no Apology,” *The New York Times*, July 23, 2009, https://www.nytimes.com/2009/07/24/world/europe/24blunt.html.

[204] Anthony T. Stokes, “One World Government Coming Soon,” *Illuminati Archives*, March 3, 2010, http://www.illuminatiarchives.org/t-stokes/one-world-government-coming-soon/.

[205] James Fielding, “MI6 Covered up Historic Child Sex Abuse Ring Discovered during Surveillance Operation,” *Independent*, April 12, 2015, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/569866/Child-sex-abuse-ring-kept-secret-British-spies-MI6.

[206] Lesley-Anne McKeown, “MI5 ‘used Sexual Abuse of Children at Kincora to Blackmail the Politician Paedophiles,’” *Independent*, May 31, 2016, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/kincora-boys-home-historic-abuse-inquiry-to-examine-abuse-claims-a7057116.html.

[207] Lara Prendergast, “The Sinister Power of Britain’s Family Courts,” *The Spectator*, September 9, 2017, https://www.spectator.co.uk/2017/09/the-sinister-power-of-britains-family-courts/.

[208] Joachim Hagopian, “The Failures of America’s Foster Care System,” *Global Research*, July 19, 2014, https://www.globalresearch.ca/the-failures-of-americas-foster-care-system/5392130.

[209] Anthony Mueller, “Is Cultural Marxism America’s New Mainline Ideology?” *Mises Wire*, October 10, 2018, https://mises.org/wire/cultural-marxism-americas-new-mainline-ideology.

[210] William H. McIlhaney, “A Primer on the Illuminati,” *New American*, June 12, 2009, https://www.thenewamerican.com/culture/history/item/4660-a-primer-on-the-illuminati.

[211] Sonny René Stermole, *America’s Subversion The Enemy Within,* Chapter 2, “The Plan is Hatched,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/america_subversion/america_subversion.htm#contents.

[212] Steve Doughty, “Top Judge’s War on Secret Courts: Family Hearings must be Exposed to ‘Glare of Publicity,’” *Daily Mail*, September 5, 2013, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2413373/Top-judges-war-secret-courts-Family-hearings-exposed-glare-publicity.html.

[213] Nicholas Watt, “Family Court must Open up to Avoid ‘Outrageous Injustices,’ warns Ukip,” *The Guardian*, October 26, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2015/oct/26/family-courts-must-open-up-avoid-outrageous-injustices-warns-ukip.

[214] “Justice Ministry to Bar Parents from telling their own Stories,” *Independent*, February 15, 2009, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/media/press/justice-ministry-to-bar-parents-from-telling-their-own-stories-1622154.html.

[215] Joachim Hagopian, “Pizzagate turned PedoGate Leads to Momentum Surge in Busting Global Child Sex Trafficking Rings,” *sott.net*, February 27, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/343780-Pizzagate-turned-PedoGate-Leads-to-Momentum-Surge-in-Busting-Global-Child-Sex-Trafficking-Rings.

[216] Chris Baynes, “Westminster Paedophile Accuser ‘Nick’ Charged with Perverting Course of Justice over Sex Abuse Ring Claims,” *Independent*, July 3, 2018, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/westminster-paedophile-ring-accuser-nick-charged-perverting-course-justice-fraud-chid-sexual-abuse-a8428781.html.

[217] Roy Greenslade, “The Cliff Richard Ruling is a Chilling Blow to Press Freedom,” *The Guardian*, July 18, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2018/jul/18/cliff-richard-bbc-press-freedom-privacy.

[218] “International Tribunal for Natural Justice*,” itnj.org*, https://www.itnj.org/.

[219] Roger Landry, “Ultimate Control: Politicians, Pedophilia & Blackmail,” *The Liberty Beacon*, October 8, 2018, http://www.thelibertybeacon.com/ultimate-control-politicians-pedophilia-blackmail/.

[220] Tyler S. Bloyer, “Presidents are Selected – not Elected,” *steemit.com*, 2017, https://steemit.com/freedom/@tsbloyer/presidents-are-selected-not-elected.

[221] Joachim Hagopian, “As Treasonous Bush-Clinton-Obama Pedo Cabal Dynasty gets Exposed, Desperate Elite Steps up War against Humanity,” *sott.net*, March 31, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/346940-As-Treasonous-Bush-Clinton-Obama-Pedo-Cabal-Dynasty-Gets-Exposed-Desperate-Elite-Steps-Up-War-against-Humanity.

[222] Josh Halliday, Katharine Viner and Lisa O’Carroll, “Jimmy Savile linked with Haut de la Garenne Children's Home Scandal,” *The Guardian*, October 9, 2012, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2012/oct/08/jimmy-savile-jersey-childrens-home.

[223] Fiona O’Cleirigh and Mark Watt, https://www.exaronews.com/met-detectives-told-of-jimmy-savile-s-link-to-elm-guest-house.

[224] Robert Mendick and Eileen Fairweather, “Margaret Hodge 'Sorry’ as Council she led told to Investigate Savile Abuse Allegations,” *The Telegraph*, April 26, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/10747257/Margaret-Hodge-sorry-as-council-she-led-told-to-investigate-Savile-abuse-allegations.html.

[225] “Jimmy Savile linked to North Wales Child Abuse Scandal,” *The Telegraph*, November 7, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/jimmy-savile/9660546/Jimmy-Savile-linked-to-North-Wales-child-abuse-scandal.html.

[226] Clare Hutchinson, “Investigation into Child Abuse in North Wales Care Homes finds new Evidence of ‘Systematic and Serious Sexual and Physical Abuse,’” *Wales Online*, April 29, 2013,

https://www.walesonline.co.uk/news/wales-news/north-wales-child-abuse-probe-3187364.

[227] "Kincora – CIA, Mossad, MI5, MI6 – The Bigger Picture," *aangirfan.com*, March 22, 2017, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2017/01/kincora-cia-mossad-mi5-mi6-bigger.html.

[228] Chris Greenwood and Richard Spillett, "Jimmy Savile Abused 23 Girls at Duncroft for Disturbed Teenage Girls," *Daily Mail*, April 29, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3060559/Jimmy-Savile-abused-23-youngsters-Duncroft-School-emotionally-disturbed-teenage-girls.html.

[229] Allison Chawla, "The Disturbing Reality of Human Trafficking and Children, in Today's World…," *Huffington Post*, February 25, 2017, https://www.huffingtonpost.com/entry/the-disturbing-reality-of-human-trafficking-and-children_us_58b1d696e4b0658fc20f95fa.

[230] Fiona Barnett, "Watergate was Pedogate," *The Millennium Report*, July 30, 2018, http://themillenniumreport.com/2018/07/deep-state-bombshell-watergate-was-really-about-pedogate/.

[231] Ajamu Baraka, "The Responsibility to Protect the World… from the United States," *Counterpunch*, January 12, 2018, https://www.counterpunch.org/2018/01/12/the-responsibility-to-protect-the-world-from-the-united-states/.

[232] Joachim Hagopian, "The Globalists' New World Order: Soft and Hard Kill Methods. An Unknown and Uncertain Future," *Global Research*, May 23, 2015, https://www.globalresearch.ca/the-globalists-new-world-order-soft-and-hard-kill-methods-an-unknown-and-uncertain-future/5451356.

[233] Deb Chakraborty, "What is Mind Control / Psychotronic Torture?" *geeldon.wordpress.com*, September 6, 2011, https://geeldon.wordpress.com/2011/09/06/what-is-mind-control-psychotronic-torture/.

[234] Dave Ratcliffe, "Mind Control, Psychological Operations, Propaganda and Disinformation," *Hidden History Center*, August 24, 2016, https://hiddenhistorycenter.org/mind-control-psychological-operations-propaganda-and-disinformation/.

[235] Thomas Peter, "Asian Stock Markets pick up where Plunging Wall Street left off," *Reuters/CBS News*, October 11, 2018, https://www.cbsnews.com/news/asian-stock-markets-pick-up-where-plummeting-wall-street-left-off-today-2018-10-11/.

[236] Ghasson Kadi, "The Fallacy of Western Economics; Slavery in Disguise," *The Saker*, September 7, 2018, https://thesaker.is/the-fallacy-of-western-economics-slavery-in-disguise/.

[237] James Allan, "Half the World's Ecosystems at Risk from Habitat Loss, and Australia is one of the Worst," *The Conversation*, December 14, 2016, https://theconversation.com/half-the-worlds-ecosystems-at-risk-from-habitat-loss-and-australia-is-one-of-the-worst-64663.

[238] Doyle Rice, "'Biological Annihilation:' Earth's 6th Mass Extinction is Underway," *USA Today*, July 10, 2017,

https://www.usatoday.com/story/tech/science/2017/07/10/earth-faces-sixth-mass-extinction/465655001/.

[239] Meghan Bartels, “Bill Gates: Pandemic Disease Threat could Kill 30 Million People in just 6 months,” *Newsweek*, April 28, 2018, https://www.newsweek.com/bill-gates-pandemic-disease-threat-could-kill-30-million-people-just-6-months-904988.

[240] Rima Laibow, “Forced Vaccination is a Crime against Humanity,” Dr. Rima Reports, http://drrimatruthreports.com/forced-vaccination-is-a-crime-against-humanity/.

[241] Zachary Crockett, “Geoengineering Is Biological Warfare,” *Geoengineering Watch*, May 21, 2015, https://www.geoengineeringwatch.org/geoengineering-is-biological-warfare/.

[242] Alan Cantwell, “More Evidence HIV was made at Ft. Detrick,” *rense.com*, June 2, 2007, https://rense.com/general76/ft.htm.

[243] Fabríz’zio Txavarría Velázquez, “The Ebola Virus was Handled Biologically by USA at Fort Detrick as a Weapon,” *Progresismo Humano*, August 17, 2014, https://progresismohumano.wordpress.com/2014/08/17/the-virus-ebola-was-handled-biologically-by-usa-at-fort-detrick-as-a-weapon/.

[244] Ghali Hasson, “Stand up to Anglo-Zionist Fascism,” *Counter Currents*, July 14, 2017, https://countercurrents.org/2017/07/14/stand-up-to-anglo-zionist-fascism/.

[245] Richard Enos, “Why we need to stand up to the Illuminati together right now,” *Collective Evolution*, August 24, 2018, https://www.collective-evolution.com/2018/08/24/why-we-need-to-stand-up-to-the-illuminati-together-right-now/.

[246] Helene D. Gayle, “Top 10 Trends of 2014: 2. Widening Income Disparities,” *World Economic Forum Report*, 2014, http://reports.weforum.org/outlook-14/top-ten-trends-category-page/2-widening-income-disparities/.

[247] Kevin Zeese and Margaret Flowers, “New U.S. Focus on Great Power Conflict and Nuclear Supremacy,” *Consortium News*, February 5, 2018, https://consortiumnews.com/2018/02/05/new-u-s-focus-on-great-power-conflict-and-nuclear-supremacy/.

[248] “Arms Trafficking,” *havocscope.com*, https://www.havocscope.com/tag/arms-trafficking/.

[249] Frank Dux,” American Made: CIA Drug and Sex Trafficking In the National Interest,” *artvoice.com*, October 27, 2017, https://artvoice.com/2017/10/27/american-made-cia-drug-sex-trafficking-national-interest/.

[250] Ewelina U. Ochab, “Human Trafficking is a Pandemic of the 21st Century,” *Forbes*, July 26, 2018, https://www.forbes.com/sites/ewelinaochab/2018/07/26/human-trafficking-is-a-pandemic-of-the-21st-century/#321e81356195.

[251] Joachim Hagopian, “Israel is the Organ Harvesting and Human Trafficking Global Ringleader, with Complicit Help from US and Turkey,” *sott.net*, May 14,

2016, https://www.sott.net/article/318286-Israel-is-the-organ-harvesting-and-human-trafficking-global-ringleader-with-complicit-help-from-US-and-Turkey.

[252] "Transnational Crimes are Crimes that occur across National Borders," *scribd.com*, https://www.scribd.com/document/239146128/Transnational-Crimes-Are-Crimes-That-Occur-Across-National-Borders.

[253] Preston James, "Developing, Mastering and Weaponizing New Technology to Control you," *Veterans Today*, August 6, 2018, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2018/08/06/developing-mastering-and-weaponizing-new-technology-to-control-you/.

[254] Arjun Walia, "'The Black Budget.' This is what the 'Secret Government' doesn't want you to know," *Collective Evolution*, June 29, 2016, https://www.collective-evolution.com/2016/06/29/the-black-budget-this-is-what-the-secret-government-doesnt-want-you-to-know/.

[255] James Casbolt, "MI6 are the Lords of the Global Drug Trade," *bibliotecapleyades.net*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/ciencia/ciencia_genetica07.htm https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_drugs01.htm.

[256] Fritz Springmeir, "Clones, Synthetics, Organic Robotoids and Doubles," *bibliotecapleyades.net*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/ciencia/ciencia_genetica07.htm.

[257] John Naughton, "Don't Worry about AI going bad – the Minds behind it are the Danger," *The Guardian*, February 25, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2018/feb/25/artificial-intelligence-going-bad-futuristic-nightmare-real-threat-more-current.

[258] Alexander Thomas, "Super-Intelligence and Eternal Life: Transhumanism's Faithful follow it Blindly into a Future for the Elite," *The Conversation*, July 31, 2017, http://theconversation.com/super-intelligence-and-eternal-life-transhumanisms-faithful-follow-it-blindly-into-a-future-for-the-elite-78538.

[259] Robert Hackett, "Leaked Video Reveals 'Nightmare Inducing' Google Robot," *Fortune*, February 2, 2017, http://fortune.com/2017/02/02/boston-dynamics-robot-video/.

[260] Steve Jacobson, "Mind Control Theories and Techniques used by Mass Media," *Vigilant Citizen*, April 28, 2010, https://vigilantcitizen.com/vigilantreport/mind-control-theories-and-techniques-used-by-mass-media/.

[261] Thomas Macaulay and Tamlin Magee, "The Future of Technology in Warfare: From Drone Swarms to VR Torture," *Tech World*, April 18, 2018, https://www.techworld.com/security/future-of-technology-in-warfare-3652885/.

[262] Peter B. Meyer, "The Truly Most Evil Enemy: The Deep State's Traitors," *finalwakeupcall.info*, August 8, 2018, http://finalwakeupcall.info/en/2018/08/08/the-truly-most-evil-enemy/.

[263] Michael Snyder, "Moving toward a One World Government, a One World Economy and a One World Religion," *Zero Hedge*, October 19, 2015, https://www.zerohedge.com/news/2015-10-19/moving-toward-one-world-government-one-world-economy-and-one-world-religion.

[264] Thomas Scripps, “European Union Announces Draconian Internet Censorship Measures,” *wsws.org*, September 20, 2018, https://www.wsws.org/en/articles/2018/09/20/cens-s20.html.

[265] Nozomi Hayase, “Why Americans Need to Defend Julian Assange’s Freedom,” *Common Dreams*, July 27, 2018, https://www.commondreams.org/views/2018/07/27/why-americans-need-defend-julian-assanges-freedom.

[266] Steven Starr, “Turning a Blind Eye towards Armageddon - U.S. Leaders Reject Nuclear Winter Studies,” *Federation of American Students*, January 9, 2017, https://fas.org/2017/01/turning-a-blind-eye-towards-armageddon-u-s-leaders-reject-nuclear-winter-studies/.

[JH1]

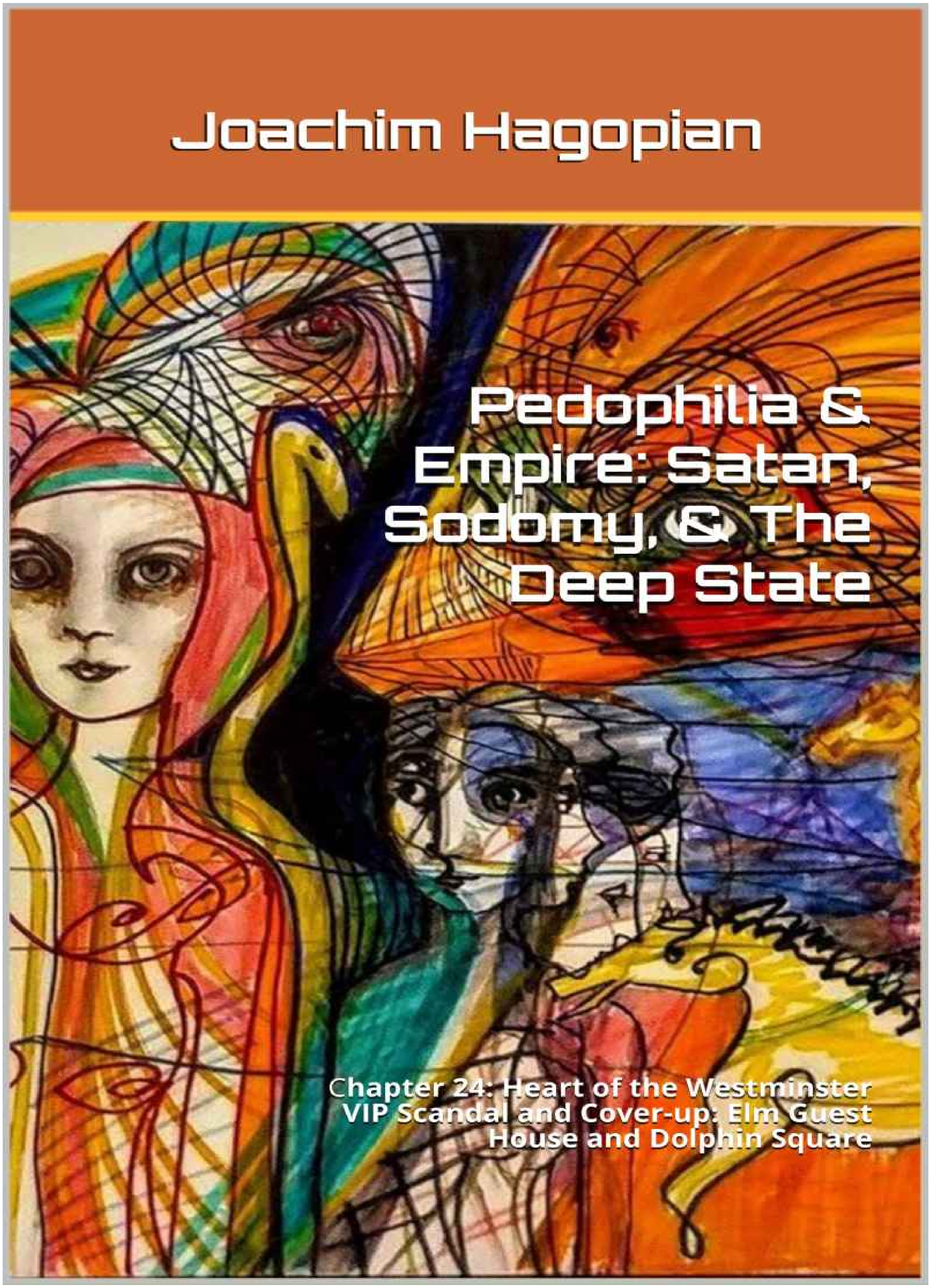

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 24: Heart of the Westminster VIP Scandal and Cover-up: Elm Guest House and Dolphin Square

Chapter 24: Heart of the Westminster VIP Scandal and Cover-up: Elm Guest House and Dolphin Square

Joachim Hagopian

***Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission* http://www.noramaccoby.com/**

Married couple Haroon Kasir (aka "Harry" originally from India) and Carole Kasir (recently learned not from Germany but England) opened up their Elm Guest House initially as a bed and breakfast for gays in Barnes, South West London in the mid-1970s, less than a decade after adult homosexuality was decriminalized in the UK. As part of the sexual liberation of the 1970s, the Elm Guest House that has since been converted into flats, began as a meeting place for gay men to hook up and comfortably enjoy sex with an adult consensual partner. But a group of evil men had other nefarious plans. Enter South African transplant out of Amsterdam Peter Glencross, commercial manager for the international Spartacus Club, who convinced Carole Kasir of the opportunity to make gobs of money catering to the sick whimsical perversions of homosexual pedophiles. Queen Elizabeth's 1977 silver jubilee was considered the turning point. The Elm Guest House used the queen's celebration to transition towards a boy brothel for demented child abusers, throwing the first of many King and Queen Balls where powerful VIPs, some dressed in drag, marked the occasion indulging in their deviant sexual appetites with delivered boy toys at what quickly morphed into a house of horror assembly line for trafficked in hapless care home residents.

Defiling children was the main course on the menu, mostly rent boy runaways and care home youth brought in for orgies and regularly plied with drugs and alcohol by UK establishment figures, rich and famous predators lustily seeking gratification through molestation, rape, torture, and perhaps even murder,[1] paralleling the eerily identical goings-on at VIP sex parties held at the notorious Dolphin Square complex in nearby Pimlico (covered later in the chapter). A short list of household political names identified as perpetrating heavy hitters at the Elm Guest House are Leon Brittan, Cyril Smith, Anthony Blunt, Nicholas Fairbairn, Peter Hayman, Peter Morrison and Jimmy Savile, every single one of them high-powered, queen honored knights celebrated as Very Important Persons within the British Empire.[2]

The earliest victim to come forth and divulge his shocking, sad story to the *Sunday People* in February 2013, just four months into learning about Jimmy Savile's depravities, was a family man in his late 40s. As a 14-year old boy, he, his 13-year old brother (in the press later identified as deceased Peter Hatton-Bornshin[3]) were frequently from trafficked 8 miles away to the Elm Guest House within a year after their 1978 placement in Grafton Close Children's Care Home in Richmond.[4] Told that they were in for "a treat," upon arrival at the Barnes guest home they were lured into drinking hard cider and competing in beer guzzling contests to first intoxicate and sedate the VIPs' targeted prey. Then they were ordered to dress into girls' fairy costumes for picture taking (no doubt for blackmail purposes) with disgusting older, well-dressed men with upper class accents, constantly pawing at them as paying house guest patrons, salivating as they verbally compared notes - "he's cute," and "oh isn't he nice."

The boys were then coerced into hideous hide and seek games before the perverted sickos moved in for the kill, committing the most vile acts sexually assaulting the youth. As he recounted his trauma years later, he broke down in tears. Their father had died in an industrial accident and then their mother committed suicide, placing them in the UK Care System. The horror they experienced while trapped in UK's "Care System" as Grafton Close residents caused his brother ten years out of the system to commit suicide over his abusive, tormented past. The courageous surviving orphan concluded:

> *The people responsible have blood on their hands. I shouldn't think my brother is the only one to have taken his life because of this. I'm speaking out now because I want justice done for me and for my brother. What went on was absolutely disgusting. When we told the staff at the care home what was happening at Elm they used to say 'They are friends, they are good people.' No one was listening to us. It's taken 30 years for anyone to listen.*[5]

A month prior to this article, in January 2013, a police raid had taken place at the home of child campaigner-social worker Mary Moss who a quarter century earlier had befriended Carole Kasir, gaining access to many of Carole's Elm House documents. From their confiscated items the police discovered that South African pedophile Peter Glencross was instrumental in turning Elm Guest House from a gay guest house to a boy brothel in the late 1970s.[6] Glencross operated out of Holland along with his boss, the Spartacus underground network founder - ex Catholic priest John Stamford, who had fled the UK to the Netherlands after a conviction for sending child pornographic material through the mail. Spartacus maintained a membership in Britain alone of 25,000 followers. From his office on the outskirts of Amsterdam, Stamford was the publisher of Spartacus International, a directory of worldwide resources marketed for adult predators bent on abusing boys and Glencross was assigned the task of establishing boy brothels like Elm Guest House all around the world. In effect, it was a perfect, albeit most sinister, unholy union between the likes of the CIA-MI5/MI6-Mossad blackmailers and Spartacus "boy loving," sickos, among them sexually compromised and controlled VIP perverts from around the globe.[7]

A Spartacus advertisement in the *Capital Gay* newspaper touting a 10% discount for Spartacus club members at the Elm Guest House is believed to be an encoded message informing homosexual pedophiles that children were readily available for sex.[8] Just eight months after the June 19, 1982 law enforcement house raid at Elm, the *Sunday People* explicitly exposed Stamford's pedo-holiday tours, boasting where the best havens in the world for sex with boys younger than 12 could easily be arranged, mentioning Sri Lanka and the Philippines in particular as pedophile paradises.[9] Of course the despicable sex tourism and sex slave trafficking industries promising illicit sex with children in Asia have spread like a cancer to the earth's four corners as a global blight. Currently sex trafficking falls just behind illegal arms on its way to overtaking drug sales as the largest, yet fastest growing, most profitable illegal trade on the planet.[10]

Eventually in 1995 at only 56 years of age, John Stamford wound up dead in a Belgium prison from a heart attack, another apparent victim of the common fate befalling criminals who know too much just days ahead of standing trial for sexual abuse.[11] Undoubtedly the criminal cabal knew Stamford's prosecution posed a serious liability to high-powered VIP pedophiles in Britain and Europe alike.

Up to 1983 the Kasirs entertained many British Establishment figures at their spacious Edwardian three-story guest home with regularly scheduled parties held day and night featuring trafficked in children predominantly from Grafton Close Home to satisfy the lustful, demented tastes of MPs, cabinet ministers, entertainers, judges, police commissioners, spy chiefs, high level civil servants, clergy, top businessmen, lawyers and doctors, no different from the elite pedophile rings that were simultaneously springing up in the US, Europe and Australia (through CIA and friends).

Though the Kasirs owned and operated the hotel-turned-boy brothel, from the get-go it was implicitly a joint British intelligence services’ operation not unlike the Mossad sponsored Jeffrey Epstein’s web of Caribbean-Palm Beach-Manhattan child honey-traps, as the modern mechanism used to sexually blackmail targeted politicians, judges, royalty, entertainers, and high-end VIPs for obvious international cabal control purposes. By the late 1970s, underage children had already become the preferred honey trap commodity, holding more bang for the buck than old fashioned heterosexual adultery or even homosexuality in the shady world of sexual blackmail and global espionage.

Sexual blackmail threatening to expose the perversions of royalty and powerful members of the elite for money had been around for well over a century,[12] but especially over this last half century, the elite bloodline puppet masters increasingly utilized blackmail to control leaders from around the world by deploying the global intelligence community led by the CIA as blackmailers as well as chief engineers and child pimping procurers. Hence, in Britain the dot connecting links of MI5/MI6 fingerprints are left at every single pedo-crime scene – from the Elm Guest House,[13] Northern Ireland’s Kincora Boys Home[14] to the North Wales Bryn Estyn scandal.[15] All are interconnected as irrefutable evidence confirming that care home children from Northern Ireland, Jersey in the Channel Islands and North Wales have been systematically trafficked into London to be victimized by VIPs at Elm Guest House as well as posh flats at Dolphin Square.[16]

Jet setting British VIPs are also known to travel abroad to abuse children in Northern Ireland, Jersey Island, North Wales and European cities like Amsterdam within the larger international pedophilia network,[17] that is whenever they’re not being showered with perks and money bribes by Zionists sponsoring free trips to Israel.[18] The mushrooming Israeli pedo-network will be covered in a later chapter. Additionally, evidence shows that MI5 has regularly brought in foreign diplomats and dignitaries from mainland Europe, America and elsewhere to both London’s Elm Guest House and North Wales, videotaping their sexcapades as evidential leverage for blackmailing foreign dignitaries as well.[19]

It’s an ugly sick world at the top of the power pyramid that systemically misuses innocents in this most appalling, diabolical way as the common currency of elitist blackmail bait. Luciferians running this planet have gotten away with it for far too long and their age-old addictions to both young flesh and blood literally feed their unquenchable thirst for absolute power and control. Soaring to unprecedented demonic heights today like never before, the pedophilia business is the devil’s playground and must be eradicated if the human species is to survive, much less evolve and thrive.

Early in 1982 the Scotland Yard was tipped off by a boy asserting that he was sexually abused by none other than Thatcher cabinet secretary Leon Brittan. The victim was terrified of repercussions for revealing the abuse done to him and other children victimized on an ongoing, near daily basis at Elm Guest House at 27 Rocks Lane on the Barnes Common. Shortly after he spilled the beans on his VIP sexual predators, the youth disappeared altogether, never to be seen nor heard from again, one victim among many missing and murder cases. Good, honest rank and file cops wanted to bring justice for this vanished boy and his many child peer victims being gravely, savagely harmed for life. But once the initial investigation confirmed that household names belonging to such powerful men running the country were identified as the prime suspects, what may have begun as a local police probe was quickly taken over by the British security services and Metro’s Special Branch as is always the standard custom in the United Kingdom.

To prove that it was British intelligence services that abruptly ended Metro's policing operation in order to eliminate incriminating evidence in the subsequent cover-up, just six days after MP Tom Watson's House of Commons speech in October 2012 linking a widespread VIP pedophile ring to Westminster and Downing Street, the *Daily Star* published a highly revealing article with the explosive headline "Tory Paedo Cover-up."[20] A former Met detective who had worked on the original case in early 1982 disclosed to the *Daily Star* that he and his team of investigators were told they must immediately halt their police inquiry. The still angry, frustrated, honest copper explained:

> *It was a case of 'get rid of everything, never say a word to anyone.' It was made very clear to me that to continue asking questions would jeopardise my career.*[21]

The 1982 police investigation determined that the then current Home Office Secretary Leon Brittan was among the top VIPs abusing boys at Elm Guest House as young as ten.[22] The police source said that MI5 had vetted Brittan prior to his becoming a Thatcher cabinet minister and that both security services and Thatcher were already well aware of his illicit sexual proclivities with underage boys, as has been proven repeatedly with her other royally knighted, demented minister monsters like Peter Morrison and Peter Hayman among a startling number of purposely selected creeps atop her government.[23]

It's simply by sinister elitist design that so many of the most powerful political puppets are mentally ill perverts who get rewarded for their despicable indulgences and systematically cherry picked to occupy the highest offices as easily controllable pawns doing the Zionist-Masonic-Illuminati bidding[24] - making war on the planet permanent,[25] enslaving the global population in insurmountable usury debt,[26] now topping over $244 trillion where near half the world lives on $5.50 a day,[27] while rapidly poisoning the earth[28] to kill off at least 90% of the human species.[29] The more suffering inflicted on humanity, the more these Luciferian beasts are rewarded with more power to harm.[30]

Because Scotland Yard discovered VIP heavyweights were perpetrating pedophilia crimes at the Elm Guest House, on short order Special Branch was called in to shut the policing operation down. As the lead agency within British intelligence reportedly setting up nationwide sexual blackmail operations, MI5 worked with the likes of Sir Jimmy, Peter Righton and Colin Peters and even murdering thugs like Sidney Cooke and his clan to serve as both dutiful procurers and avid partakers of children primarily from UK care homes and rent boy runaways off the mean streets of London. As ravenous child sodomizers feeding and exploiting the same child pipeline network, more than solid evidence links Sir Jimmy Savile, Peter Righton, Sidney Cooke and Colin Peters supplying children to the likes of such VIP politicians as Sir Leon, Sir Cyril Smith and dozens of other sirs pathologically serving themselves in government.[31] Recall from an earlier Savile chapter how for years Elm Guest House proprietor Harry Kasir boasted Jimmy Savile among his best friends, allegedly taking tea with him countless occasions.[32] MI5 had its web of go-to procurers and pimps that lined up VIPs at Elm and Dolphin Square with a steady diet of supplied victims. By the way, a Savile cohort and fellow derelict *BBC* DJ showing up on the Elm House guest list is none other than serial pedophile Chris Denning, still serving time after multiple child sex convictions.[33]

From the last chapter we learned that Peter Righton was considered the foremost policy expert on the UK Care Home System and like Sir Jimmy, enjoyed unlimited access to exploit and abuse hundreds if not thousands of victims in children’s homes and schools throughout the nation and beyond. His 1992 slap- on-the-hand fine of £900 for possessing child pornography followed by another “order from above” to prematurely close down his police investigation was no doubt due to Righton’s international trafficking reach to such notorious pedo-havens as Malta and Holland as well as Denmark and Sweden that to this day still await full exposure.[34] Among Righton’s closest pedophile buddies sharing boys between them is convicted, currently imprisoned Charles Napier, whose half-brother is the longstanding Tory MP John Whittingdale.[35] Child protection officer Peter McKelvie’s testimony and longtime quest to unveil Righton and Napier’s powerful links to the UK pedo-establishment is the very reason why MP Tom Watson in October 2012 proclaimed in Parliament:

> *The evidence file used to convict Peter Righton, if it still exists, contains clear intelligence of a widespread paedophile ring. One of its members* [PIE treasurer-Foreign Office teacher Charles Napier] *boasts of his links to a senior aide* [Foreign Office diplomat-PIE member Peter Hayman, convicted of child porn] *of a former prime minister* [Margaret Thatcher who blocked stripping Hayman of his knighthood[36]]*, who says he could smuggle indecent images of children from abroad* [Cairo, Egypt]*. The leads were not followed up, but if the files still exist, I want to ensure that the Metropolitan police secure the evidence, re-examine it and investigate clear intelligence suggesting a powerful paedophile network linked to Parliament and No 10.*[37]

We’re still waiting for the full truth to come out, no help from the long faltering Home Office fiasco – Theresa May’s anything but Independent Inquiry.

As the tireless former child protection team manager who supplied key information resulting in Peter Righton’s 1992 conviction as well as Tom Watson’s 2012 Commons speech, Peter McKelvie has uncovered historical evidence of child sexual abuse committed by anywhere from 10 to 20 MPs and

Lords still needing to be further investigated in Operation Fernbridge focusing on abuse at the Elm Guest House.[38] Along with MP Watson, 138 other Parliament members were convinced that an independent inquiry into VIP government abuse investigating crimes over the last three or four decades is necessary due to the cover-up by criminal obstructionists at Westminster and 10 Downing Street. Initially in the early days of Fernbridge, yet more overt evidence of cover-up appeared.

In 1982, the same year the Elm Guest House was raided, UK Customs Officer Maganlal Solanki employed at the Dover point of entry seized a package of child pornography consisting of three 8mm films, three video cassettes and an order form discovered in the possession of Russell Tricker.[39] One of Tricker's videotapes included footage of Leon Brittan sexually abusing a young boy.[40] That video was labeled "LB," matching the exact same initials as the only minister in the UK government in 1982.

But this is no first, recall that Sir Leon was captured on film before. From a March 2014 *Mirror* article:

They [Met Police] *are understood to have already spoken to the ex-minister about another video that places him at a sex party involving teenage boys three decades ago. Now they are expected to speak to the customs officer.[41]*

After a two hour hold in 1982, Customs released Russell Tricker free to enter England minus his child porn videos that were then allegedly handed over to MI5. Placing child abuse videos in the hands of the security services agency chiefly responsible for both creating and protecting the British pedophilia blackmail network is just what the MI5 boss Sir Leon would want. They don't call it security services for nothing. But the question becomes, whose security is served? Definitely not the abused children. Brittan's sick secret was safe with MI5, ensuring that such explosive evidence that could take down the entire Thatcher government would never see the light of day. It would later be learned that Russell Tricker was a PIE member whose job as a coach driver ferrying underage boys back and forth from Britain to Amsterdam[42] also worked alongside the likes of MI5 agent-fellow PIE member-pedo-procurer John Rowe and Spartacus advertising agent Peter Glencross to convert Elm Guest House from a gay B&B to shielded VIP pedophile sex orgy haven. And like his MI5 boss Leon Brittan, John Rowe was also a frequent visitor at the Elm boy brothel.

Onetime English teacher Russell Tricker was among an army of English expatriated predators living in the Dutch capital, forced to leave UK after getting caught buggering, then opportunistically profiteering from child sex trafficking as well as making and distributing child pornography. Besides the tape with "LB's" initials on it, another confiscated video tagged "GB10," according to a child abuse victim, is nothing short of a sweet shop catalogue serving up fresh British boys for sex slave orders within the international pedophilia network typically featured through organizations like Spartacus Magazine. After several minutes of train footage, yet another video entitled "Amsterdam Tramway Museum" suddenly switches to showcasing European boys on fully displayed abuse for salivating perverts to order, a slight variation of the window prostitutes in the city's red light district, except they're legal and child abuse isn't. The Amsterdam Tramway Museum was simply Tricker's front company for his trafficking ring, no different from the CIA always creating fronts for its nefarious and illegal undercover operations worldwide. Toff Travel and Toff Apartments were another angle of twisted Trickster's business web, masquerading behind his other child trafficking job as a coach driver ferrying young sex slaves across the channel.[43]

Claiming he was merely an innocent courier having no idea of the contents inside his seized brown paper package in 1982, the vile trickster's Tricker treats could trick no more, running into a temporary obstacle in 1992 when he was convicted of child sex abuse back in Holland. But like the notorious Warwick Spinks (discussed in more depth later in this chapter), perhaps because Tricker was also an early player in the London-Amsterdam pedo-nexus, he only did 5 months of a two and a half year sentence while his abused victim soon wound up murdered.[44]

Customs Officer Maganlal Solanki had another this time direct encounter with Leon Brittan himself at the Port of Dover also in the 1980s.[45] Spotting Sir Leon's chauffeur driving suspiciously, the diligent customs agent pulled the vehicle over and subsequently discovered yet more child pornography films in the cabinet secretary's personal possession. Solanki confiscated them but just like Tricker except with less waiting time, Sir Leon was allowed on his way. But Fernbridge detectives confirmed that they were in the process of being able to procure both Tricker's and Brittan's highly incriminating illegal videotapes. Apparently journalist-documentarian Tim Tate was able to learn from a Fernbridge insider that UK law enforcement held the videotape with conclusive evidence against Leon Brittan, yet purposely sat on it, keeping it from public exposure and the government's highest profile pedophile out of prison.

Also according to Tim Tate based on a recovered document from Richmond council archives, on the night of the Elm Guest House raid in June 1982, apparently the only young boy discovered inside the brothel was allegedly taken into police custody and interviewed that evening by a detective and a social worker. But Neil Kier was not a typical Richmond social worker but Officer-in-Charge (OiC) of Grafton Close Home.[46] No subsequent news accounts of the raid mention any boys from Grafton Close Children's Home ever being present at Elm Guest House on the night of June 19th, 1982. It would make no sense for standard protocol to be breached where a Richmond social worker fails to accompany the Special Branch raid on the Elm House unless the prearranged plan was to remove Harry and Carole Kasir's 10-year old son Eric from his home on 27 Rocks Lane and place him as the newest resident at Grafton Close Home that night.[47] It's more than likely Eric Kasir is yet another Elm Guest House abuse victim, and that VIP monsters like Leon Brittan sodomized him too.

Eric Kasir as the only young boy found inside Elm Guest House that night explains why Grafton Close Home's OiC Neil Kier was designated as the accompanying raid "social worker" since it had already been decided that Eric Kasir's new home would be Grafton Close Children's Home, ironically the very source of trafficked in victims abused by VIP guests at Elm. This premeditated arrangement also goes far in explaining why the Grafton Close fall guy of the Elm Guest House scandal would eventually be Kier's deputy head John Stingemore rather than mystery man Kier himself who's rarely mentioned for his part in supplying sacrificial lambs to the VIP child slaughterhouse.[48] Also the one count charge directly involving Elm Guest House abuse that Stingemore was facing at his upcoming 2014 trial no doubt would've implicated his partner-in-crime Neil Kier. Conveniently for Kier, just before trial Stingemore suddenly wound up dead. Neil Kier was off the hook, never in trouble with the law and never properly investigated by police because he was more than likely part of the MI5 blackmail operation. That same year 1982 Stingemore was hit with a sexual assault charge and terminated from Grafton Home but since the scandal was swiftly covered up, Stingemore was granted a 30 year reprieve to harm yet more boys in East Sussex.

It wasn't until MP Watson's speech on the post-Savile 2012 House of Commons floor that eventually launched Fernbridge to eventually bring down the lowest hanging rotten fruit at Elm - John Stingemore. With Fernbridge and Midland in dire need of suspects after millions of taxpayer pounds were invested ostensibly to uncover the Westminster scandal, similar to post-Savile Yewtree, Stingemore was thrown under bus as the pedo-cabal's sacrificial slime ball that in turn soon caught up to his fat unpriestly friend McSweeney who had also been shielded up to that point. Meanwhile, back in 1983 Neil Kier was quietly permitted to move on after two years as Grafton Home OiC and throughout the decades has clearly been protected from accountability, reportedly considered a witness and never a suspect by Fernbridge investigators. But a handwritten note from child campaigner Mary Moss based on conversations with Elm Guest House victims exposes Neil Kier in all his perversions:

Systematically buggered by Kier and other older boys. Too frightened to complain. Introduced to H by Keir. He used to ring & tell them were (sic) to go to pick them up and take to mens homes[49]

The three nameless MPs often referred to in the August 1982 press coverage of the Elm Guest House scandal as interrupted guests the night of the raid may well have included popular young Tory MP Jocelyn Cadbury elected to Parliament in a major upset in 1979.[50] With his father linked to Knights of Malta, the 36-year old heir to the Cadbury Brothers chocolate empire was questioned by police over the Elm House affair.[51] With an older brother and sister both dying mysterious, tragic young deaths, barely a month after the Elm Guest House raid in an apparent suicide, on July 31, 1982 Jocelyn Cadbury allegedly shot himself with a shotgun blast to the head at his parents' Birmingham estate.[52] Yet no one has been able to figure out his motive when golden boy had so much going for himself and according to friends never appeared depressed or suicidal before snuffing himself. If it was related to the raid, it's not like a VIP at Elm Guest House had anything to worry about as all have been fiercely protected. And if murdered, why and by whom? At the time, MP Cadbury was also Parliamentary Private Secretary (PPS) to then Minister of State for Industry Norman Lamont, among the most powerful men in the British government.

A well-known journalist was told that a decade prior to his death, a young victim is alleged to have reported Cadbury to her doctor, calling him a "sadistic pedophile."[53] Another reputable reporter claimed that Cadbury killed himself just two days after police had interviewed him about his involvement at the Elm Guest House. Might Cadbury have been among the three alleged MPs reportedly caught at the Elm Guest House the night of the raid, and if so, was Jocelyn the MP referred to when the only young child at the house "was rescued from horrific sexual assault" per a July 2014 *Telegraph* article?[54]

Aside from disclosing to journalist Mike James in 1986 that future Labor Prime Minister Gordon Brown is a satanic pedophile (see last chapter), Lord Norman Lamont possesses his own share of shady elitist ties to organizations as a faithful Rothschild employ, leading member of the Cambridge mafia, the Privy Council, the powerful Pilgrims Society, head of Le Cercle and Savile friend appearing on Jim'll Fix It,[55] in one way or another all linked to the unholy marriage between covert intelligence and high finance pillage and plunder, and its darker, hidden hand in illegal arms sales[56] and the global pedophilia network.[57] In the meantime, the man who thought the world of both his fallen PPC as well as Sir Leon, slammed Met Police for investigating historical child abuse.[58] Wonder what deep dark secrets he has to hide making him so nervous and upset over historic child abuse investigations?

The currently retired police officer who originally interviewed the one boy found in Elm Guest House in the 1982 raid was tracked down by Fernbridge police in 2014. The former officer described the victim as the most sexualized child he had ever observed. In 2014 this abuse survivor – now an entrepreneur in his early 40s residing in the United States – informed journalists from *The Telegraph* that he was sexually assaulted by at least one “senior MP.”[59]

This retired detective who interviewed the boy reported that the victim claimed he had been sodomized by at least nine men at Elm Guest House, but appeared surprised that the police were even involved since he’d apparently been repeatedly told that “Uncle Leon” “at the big house” (referring to Westminster/10 Downing Street) would take care of any problems that arose.[60] This again sounds more like the words coming from a young boy who’d been living at 27 Rocks Lane, not a trafficked in child from Grafton Close. No doubt with customers like a naked Sir Leon photographed with naked boys, and tea buddies like Sir Jimmy, the Kasirs must have had a false sense of inflated security and impunity while also begrudgingly paying an extortion police fee for added protection.

Immediately the interviewing officer realized “Uncle Leon” was Thatcher Minister Leon Brittan. Fernbridge police were perplexed that the council document failed to either mention “Uncle Leon” or include the boy’s signature. The retired officer explained that since the boy had been interviewed late at night, Neil Kier and the Special Branch officer agreed he could sign it in the morning after getting some sleep. But the next morning the child apparently “acted out” and allegedly refused to sign. This explanation may be a cop-out as the more likely reason the signature was never obtained may have more to do with the boy's last name.

When the interviewing officer from 1982 was then asked why the "Uncle Leon" reference was omitted from the original report, the former copper quickly grew agitated over the Official Secrecy Act leaving him vulnerable to prosecution, loss of pension and/or death. But with such crucial evidence left conspicuously hanging, Fernbridge sent a US Marshall previously on secondment to Metropolitan Police to interview the key witness in America. Though he initially did cooperate, by the time Scotland Yard was ready to dispatch detectives to speak more at length with him, he suddenly changed his mind.[61] This also makes more sense if it's Carole's son changing his mind knowing what they did to his mother. Also during Operation Fernbridge, police raided Harry Kasir's Richmond home in January 2013, the same month they raided Mary Moss's domicile in efforts to remove the last traces of VIP Elm House evidence. After that, Harry Kasir reportedly was planning to leave Britain to join his son Eric in Connecticut.[62]

Of course Harry Kasir is still denying that VIPs ever victimized kids (much less his own) at his Elm Guest House, insisting right to the bitter end that his three story eight room hotel only served gay consenting adults. Meanwhile, the key witness capable of blowing up the entire Elm Guest House cover-up, revealing the sordid filthy truth is none other than the proprietors' long lost son. But again, after the cabal murdered his mother, it's understandable that the entrepreneur would much prefer leaving his abusive past long behind rather than risk a family repeat a generation later. How can anyone blame him? Even without his explicit testimony, through bits and pieces enough of the truth has gradually emerged to form an increasingly clearer picture of what diabolical hell went down for kids trapped at 27 Rocks Lane between 1977 and 1983.

Eric Kasir's vacillation of telling what he knows segues into addressing the pertinent topic of victims changing their minds over talking to authorities about their past abuse. This has always been a major problem over the years as children far more than adults do not report their sex crimes, and only one in 10 adults report sexual assault. When the power differential between offender and victim is so extreme as in the Westminster scandal, especially when taking the dismal outcome into account of those who've tried to honestly report their abuse in the past, the small minority that might be inclined to report probably won't. And the reason is all too obvious. When the thousands of abuse victims throughout the decades whose firsthand allegations never resulted in any justice but only an enduring record of nonstop cover-up and subsequent pain, understandably it's rendered both UK law enforcement and legal system institutions not trustable.

Unfortunately this is the all too common result when hundreds of thousands of victims' past abuse disclosures have fallen on deaf ears and been summarily rejected, smeared and dismissed with no action taken against the perpetrators, producing a deep distrust and doubt that testimony given years later would be deemed any different, more credible or effective in facilitating their long-awaited justice. To have to relive past traumas in the face of providing yet more agonizing detailed evidence years later that's consistently failed to deliver a single conviction to any VIP pedophiles delivers the natural consequence of deterring already reluctant victims from ever coming forth again. To victims for all too obvious reason, UK law enforcement's disgustingly shameful track record covering-up pervasive elite sexual abuse justifiably relegates all legal authorities as thoroughly untrustworthy and criminally complicit. When the top-on-down system is historically so morally bankrupt, corrosively corrupt and grossly unjust, this is the resultant frustratingly painful pattern. Eventually victims give up trying to report abuse, especially when the one-sided power differential between perpetrator and victim has proven so unbreakably fixed and stacked against them.

Official channels like Theresa May’s Inquiry or the Metro police are not purveyors of truth at all because as systemically deployed truth suppressors their built-in purpose at all cost is simply to whitewash and maintain status quo of the tightly sealed cover-up. Otherwise, the plethora of collected photos and videos graphically proving Leon Brittan and other famous pedophiles would have been made public eons ago. By design Metro’s Fernbridge and Midland investigations hit a brick wall just as they were supposed to, complete with designated fraudsters to effectively smear all honest victims, not for lack of them offering real evidence to prosecute but simply because the system is so irreversibly rigged against truth and justice ever prevailing in a British court of law. Predictably by 2016 both VIP investigative operations were shut down in utter failure and waste, and still not a noteworthy creep or peep’s been heard or brought to justice from either a courtroom or the IICSA currently on artificial life support a full half decade after its proposal. The British Establishment will never come clean, too many gatekeeping pedo-foxes ensure that the massive cover-up will continue on forevermore. The Scotland Yard, Crown Prosecution Service and the IICSA alike are all rabbit hole deep in complicit criminal cover-up and they should all be indicted for gross obstruction and perversion of justice if the complete truth ever finally does emerge.

That can only happen when courageous victims as seasoned survivors resolutely unite in solidarity (like the Shirley Oaks Survivors Association as the prototype model) to empower and give voice to bravely speak out against their rapists, regardless of the unpunished criminals’ power, status or position. But because as separate individuals the victim’s voice has systematically been drowned out, negated and silenced by elites' consistent non-response, overuse of D-notices, libelous lawsuit threats, harassment and/or death, truth suppression is their reigning M.O. allowing aging perpetrators to successfully hide behind a colluded cover-up decade after decade after decade. An approaching critical mass soon to be reached among informed, educated and impassioned world citizens for justice, committed to supporting survivors' truth is the people's most powerful weapon of elite mass destruction. Clearly it's the elite that can't handle the truth, running like cockroaches for the nearest safe cover(up) of darkness. Like so called "Murun Buchstansangur's" valuable website,[63] it's up to us to keep the "spotlight on abuse" using the light of truth as both our guide and weapon.

For one solid week in June 1984, two full years after the Elm Guest House raid, mainstream newspapers across Britain and even America ran story after story of rumors circulating about an unnamed Thatcher minister caught having sex with boys during the so called "Cabinet Secretary scandal."[64] The press at the time reported that it could be the sex scandal of the century,[65] and, had the UK elite not resorted to its blatant cover-up, it definitely would have. Margaret Thatcher's then Home Secretary Leon Brittan was again the thinly veiled VIP culprit, although with so many of her gay pedophile minister pals craving little boys, it could have just as easily been "eeny meeny miny mo." (See Chapter 22)

The London newspapers reported that the government countered the "assassination by gossip" and "trial by media rumors" by sternly vowing it would not be tolerated. The prime minister herself threatened any publication that named the rumored pedophile minister would immediately be slapped with a costly libel suit. By month's end, Iron Lady's aggressively viperous response effectively shut down all further coverage, just like two years earlier when after little more than a week of newspaper frenzy, breaking headlines about the most infamous of all VIP boy brothels - the Elm Guest House - was suddenly silenced for the next several decades, likely with more D-notices.

During that final week of June 1984, one publication - *Private Eye Magazine*, went so far as to identify Leon Brittan as the alleged child abuser but made sure to call the allegation a smear leaked by a disgruntled rogue element within MI5 in retaliation for the home secretary warning he'd impose a major MI5 shakeup for "mishandling" the April 1984 Libyan embassy attack when London constable Yvonne Fletcher was gunned down.[66] Another lame explanation given for MI5 "spooks and loonies" to make up such a "lie" about Britain's first Jewish home secretary is the Zionistas' old familiar standby – anti-Semitism. But forensic evidence soon emerged to indicate the 1984 embassy gunfire volley was a CIA led false flag in cahoots with MI5 to whip up Thatcher tag team support for Reagan/Bush's vilification of Libya's Muammar Gaddafi,[67] the same criminal element echoed years later in 2011 with Hillary's hideous reaction upon learning that her assassination hit on Gaddafi was successful:

We came, we saw, he died, [hee, hee, hee].[68]

The treasonous Bush-Clinton-Obama cabal still lives on in today's deep state havoc.

The now defunct *Private Eye* rag did have strong links to MI5.[69] On top of a Jewish Home Secretary being the MI5 boss in 1984, by that time British security services were heavily controlled by Thatcher's security advisor - bloodline Jew Lord Victor Rothschild. In short, MI5 in 1984 was not anti-Jewish at all. At the height of the scandal, the *Private Eye* article went out of its way to emphasize that Brittan was innocently maligned, definitely not a pedophile but simply a target of a maliciously false, racist smear campaign, reportedly already confirmed by *News of the World*.

In a ploy to convince the head of the Press Association, Leon Brittan cunningly invited him into his office expressly to read the article as proof of the home secretary's "martyrdom."[70] So the "MI5 leak" was strategically and timely inserted with the intent to take the heat off its "venerable" yet unfairly maligned leader Sir Leon. At that very same time with Brittan losing/destroying two incriminating dossiers as the deserving object of unshakeable multiple abuse allegations over the ensuing decades, regardless of how hard the police, the complicit media and the corrupt UK politics machine try to cover-up his pedo-crimes, far, far too much evidence has long implicated Sir Leon as a slithering prolific serial pedophile.

British security agencies had set up the Elm Guest House as a boy brothel with a sauna and both hidden and unhidden cameras (for child porn purposes) installed in every room (a la Jeffrey Epstein style) to serve as a sexual blackmail operation to control not only British VIPs but elites flown in from Europe as well. Recurring media coverage reported in 1982, in 1984, and again every year since 2012 (once deceased Savile was publicly outed) that a litany of police probes and whistleblowers have confirmed surveillance evidence exists of video footage and numerous photographs of Brittan in action along with pedo-porker pig Sir Cyril Smith, royal traitor Sir Anthony Blunt, our old friend Sir "Kitty" and a host of other decked out, totally compromised VIPs either entering, frolicking inside or departing Elm Guest House. As is often the case when it comes to the voracious appetites of dead sexual predators, Fernbridge detectives played it safe confirming Cyril Smith visited Elm Guest House.[71] The fat man was reportedly even banned from Elm Guest House for a short spell after breaking a toilet seat and refusing to pay for it.[72] On another visit he got stuck in the sauna and had to be hoisted out.[73] Like Sir Leon, Sir Cyril was a guesthouse party regular.

Longtime social worker and child protection consultant Chris Fay testified that he had viewed compromising photographs of Brittan taken with young boys dating back to the early 1980s.[74] Reportedly abusing boys as young as 8, 9 and 10, a nude Lord Brittan in one photo is allegedly wearing only a scanty French maid apron with a naked youth sitting on his lap.[75] Recall another photo lost and found at a London train station a few years earlier depicting Sir Kitty dressed in women’s underwear surrounded by underage boys that in a flash was scooped up immediately by dispatched thugs from Special Branch, Britain’s longtime organized crime fixers. Reportedly that photo was used by Mossad to manipulate and control the aging superstar to pay homage to Zionist controlled Israel, which explains his frequent Tel Aviv trips.

But ultimately it was Iron Lady’s Home Office minister as the Lithuanian Jewish central pedo-gatekeeper from 1982-85 whose job was in charge of both British intelligence as well as all police operations, ensuring every investigation into pedophilia was called off and every dossier given him was lost or destroyed. While still alive during the post-Savile Operation Fernbridge, only once in a long pedo-career was Sir Brittan ever even questioned by detectives under caution over his alleged rape committed years earlier on a teenage girl,[76] yet even that critical piece of evidence was lost when someone accidentally-on-purpose “forgot” to push the record button.[77] Right up to Leon Brittan’s January 2015 death, Metro Police was purportedly still investigating fresh historic child abuse claims against him.[78] But like all his fellow derelict VIP monsters before and after him – Sir Jimmy, Sir Cyril, Sir Ted, and subsequently Sir Greville to name a handful, unpunished, aging child rapists exit this planet without facing their victims who are consistently denied their day in court.

So let’s do a quick recap of Lord Leon’s known and confirmed sex crime history against underage children. Over the years he’s undoubtedly had multiple accusers from the sex orgies at Elm Guest House and Dolphin Square alone, not to mention the one in South Yorkshire, he’s been frequently naked while photographed with naked boys, he’s played the child molesting villain abusing a boy in kiddie porn, was caught possessing child pornography videos by the same government agent who also separately observed Brittan on film abusing a child, was accused of date raping a teenage girl, was called in for police questioning but never recorded, was responsible for losing or destroying at least three different pedo-dossiers, and by as early as 1984, he was already being rumored and virtually outed as the most offending pedophile amongst Thatcher’s platoon of pedophile ministers. Yet his widow was awarded a million tax-paid pounds worth of police apologies in undeserved compensation while all his countless victims received no justice at all but for nearly all, only a lifetime of pain and hardship. For sake of his victims, we need to finally uncover the full truth and nothing but the truth so help us God.

Another important survivor’s story released through the *Sunday People* links two serial predators Peter Righton and Cyril Smith to sex orgies at both the Elm Guest House and Dolphin Square. While stuck in the UK Care System and groomed and abused by Righton and his VIP pedo-network from age 11 in 1977 until age 16, in April 2013, the man in his forties disclosed what he observed while on one of Righton’s trips to a local London park.[79] The boy witnessed Righton get out of the car and walk over to talk to a very obese man that the victim later identified on TV. While speaking to the famous MP, Righton would regularly look back over at the boy and Smith each time would nod and smile at him. As mentioned earlier, Peter Righton was one of Britain’s major child procurers delivering boys in the UK Care

System to VIP pedophile politicians and high level civil servants, corroborated by the abuse survivor recalling that networker Righton would often boast of his bigwig contacts so high up in government. In the informant’s words:

> *People have talked about a paedophile ring working in the UK. This was not just a ring – it’s more like the Olympic rings, interlocking on a large scale. It went everywhere. I believe it went to the heart of the Establishment. It needs to be investigated properly.*[80]

After sharing his story with the press, the man said he was planning to talk to detectives at Metro working Operations Fernbridge and Midland investigating child abuse committed by Westminster members. Unfortunately as in every other UK police operation, Fernbridge and Midland also made sure to fail at arresting and charging any MPs, conveniently because of so much “lost and destroyed,” “unsubstantiated” evidence.

A closer look at listed frequent Elm House guest Colin Peters is also very telling.[81] Despite his and a buddy’s arrest in their early 20s for committing child sexual abuse in Naples, Italy back in 1967, swiftly patched over by diplomatic immunity and their Foreign Office boss Robin Jasper,[82] the British government saw fit to strangely seal the record of their Naples arrest at the National Archives for the next 87 years until 2056.[83] In 2015 after the *Sunday Times* raised the question over why would two junior Foreign Office employees Colin Peters and colleague Alastair Laing’s pedo-crimes be locked away for nearly a century, the Home Affairs ministers “agreed” to look into it.[84] In view of the fact that Oxford educated barrister-career diplomat Peters was essentially set free to abuse boys again and again over the next couple decades, at both the Elm Guest House and then in 1989 caught running the largest known pedophile ring in British history,[85] the question begs answering why 22 years earlier Peters' buggery crime in Italy would be so guardedly shielded from the public.

It's been speculated that Peters and Laing were procuring young Italian boys for such British cultural luminaries as WH Auden who for years rented a villa on Ischia in the Bay of Naples, regularly entertaining guests like Benjamin Britten[86] and EM Forster[87] as well as employing the services of underage local Neapolitan rent boys.[88] The then UK Minister for the Arts, Baroness Jennie Lee, may have rushed to their aid to not only protect British Empire's most acclaimed national treasures of arts and letters but also the internationally expanding pedophilia network as well. The same year that adult homosexuality (21 and over) was no longer deemed a state crime in Britain, the government may well have been invested in protecting both its world famous gay pedophile icons living abroad as well as its Foreign Service pedo-pimps, unwilling to risk public disclosure until 2056. Again to the depraved establishment it's a no-brainer, protecting pedophile VIPs ranks a far higher priority than protecting a few street urchins from Italy or the UK.

Speaking of the arts and pedophiles, Colin Peter's fellow shielded partner-in-crime in Italy - Alastair Laing - went on to become art curator and author for the National Trust,[89] as well as co-author of a book with the queen's art curator-Soviet spy traitor-fellow pedo Sir Anthony Blunt and Blunt protégé architectural historian Christopher Tadgell,[90] who's married to prominent Somerset Tory MP Jacob Rees-Mogg's mother-in-law who's an ex-MP herself.[91] Mogg's 2007 wedding guests included a couple known Elm guests as well. Lord Peter Brooke whose online essay on man-boy love is on full display[92] as well as Peter and Virginia Bottomley. As Health Minister she played a key role in closing Righton's criminal investigation while all three Peters – Colin, Brooke and Bottomley made the infamous Elm House guest list… small world amongst the pedo-elite.[93] Yet another Elm

Guest visitor is deceased Tory MP Solicitor General of Scotland, mentioned in previous chapters as pedo-gatekeeper Esther Rantzen's adulterous lover boy Sir Nicholas Fairburn.[94]

Another little dark chapter to add in the unending book of British pedophilia cover-ups on Health Minister Virginia Bottomley's watch (1992-95) involves a claim that the Hereford and Worcester head of social services for 20 years David Tombs went to senior civil servants in her health ministry while apparently she was busily closing down the police investigation on Peter Righton after his 1992 arrest. David Tombs, an office colleague of whistleblowing child protection manager Peter McKelvie, had access to the local police investigation on Righton and his VIP cronies in UK government and abroad, clearly indicating that a Westminster pedophile network was flourishing.[95] With such a childcare expert and UK policy kingpin like Peter Righton under criminal investigation as a serial pedophile, on behalf of UK Health Minster Virginia Bottomley, UK Chief Inspector of Social Services Sir William Utting requested from David Tombs a report based on the Righton police probe findings with social services' recommendations on how to prevent future child abuse in the face of predators operating within the UK Care System.[96] It was Peter McKelvie who wrote the report in 1993 alerting the Health Department of the alarming trend that pedophiles like Righton and Westminster VIPs pose to thousands of at-risk youth, having infiltrated all levels within the UK Care System. It included specific recommendations necessary to tackle the national pedophile ring engulfing Britain, urging deployment of a joint police-social worker investigation team.[97] Though the report was sent, Health Minister Bottomley completely ignored it, shutting down the ongoing Righton police investigation.

David Tombs as head of social services urgently also tried bringing the Westminster pedophilia network to the health department's attention as a major "national concern." During a July 2014 *BBC* Radio 4 program, David Tombs stated:

> *It was coming across to me at the time that there were names there that were linked into the establishment, if you like.*[98]

His dire warning of grave "national concern" to a senior health official drew the following reply, in David Tombs' words:

> *I was told that I was probably wasting my time, that there were – and the words used were along these lines – that there were 'too many of them over there.' Now, I was talking about paedophilia. I was in the Department of Health and the 'over there' to me indicated, although the words weren't used, within Parliament or within Government and Whitehall.*[99]

So on the one hand while the Health Minister's ignoring McKelvie's report and shutting down the police probe because it's implicating pedophiles atop the government, one of Baroness Bottomley's senior civil servants openly admits there's too many pedophiles in government to even bother trying to deal with them. Keep in mind this rampant pedo-epidemic and cover-up comes during the post-Thatcher years of the 1990s. Again, it's not about a particular era, leader or party because British culture-bred pedovore vultures running the United PEDO Kingdom have been doing it seamlessly and with full impunity for nearly a century.

Chapter 8 covered the satanic ritual abuse at daycare facilities throughout the 1980s from the controversial McMartin case in Southern California to military daycares at West Point and the Temple of Set's Lt. Col. Michael Aquino's

Presidio scandal. Chapter 10 further exposed Col. Aquino as a master mind control, programming wizard and pedophile in the CIA-Tavistock-MK Ultra Monarch mind control programs exported worldwide. Evolving from the Babylonian-Cabbalistic-Egyptian rooted deities that are currently still practiced today in various forms as Satanism, the Illuminati Order, Freemasonry, Knights of Malta, Jesuits to Luciferianism, the ruling elite have for centuries engaged in occult rituals involving blood sacrifice and satanic ritual abuse (SRA) of children (also addressed in earlier chapters).

The inner club of powerful pedophiles and their enablers often are members of these malevolent secret societies. When in the 1980s satanic ritual abuse caught America’s attention by storm, the CIA pedophile scientists swiftly dipped into their bag of tricks, pushing back with dubbing the sociological phenom gripping the nation as “satanic panic,” followed by their next rabbit out of the hat called the False Memory Syndrome, “scientifically” backed up by the FM Foundation to plant the seed of doubt in every abuse victim’s testimony, chalking it up to kids and misguided adults’ overactive imaginations and paranoia, i.e., nothing to see here folks, no such thing as satanic ritual child sex abuse.

Just as the CIA labeled critical thinkers and doubters questioning the official government’s false narrative behind the JFK assassination as “conspiracy theorists” as the forevermore M.O. calling card to instantly instill doubt and disbelief toward those intelligent enough to be skeptical of authoritarian lies. Embedded into the mass media propaganda machine, these CIA false labels are simply fabricated machinations strategically unleashed to shape, manipulate and control mass public opinion and perceptions of consensus reality within mainstream popular culture. In effect, the cunning elite are masters at turning the gullible masses into easily brainwashed, mind-controlled, misinformed, enslaved, non-thinking, robotic automatons addictively placated, mesmerized and distracted by addictive, button-pushing magic, while insidiously programmed to reject, scorn and ridicule those still capable of engaging in critical thinking, original, independent thought, or those who readily see through the government bullshit behind regularly staged false flags of state-sponsored terrorism at times killing its own citizens (3,000 on 9/11). This deceptive, sleight of hand defense mechanism utilizing cognitive dissonance to instantly on cue evoke a blindness through disbelief effectively burying and smothering the truth unfortunately has been extremely successful. So when child abuse victims' allegations are made, they're easily discarded or rarely taken seriously, especially when it's the famous perpetrators participating in satanic ritual abuse. Too unbelievable say the naysayers and deceivers as the Luciferian way to utilize propaganda as a WMD to systematically negate, obscure and silence the truth, discrediting and marginalizing those who seek it over elite's nonstop lies and calculated mass manipulation.

This temporary diversion can now come full circle, returning to the lovely Bottomleys. As a former psychiatric social worker turned Health Minister, after closing down the Righton police inquiry and suppressing evidence proving links to the Westminster VIP pedo-scandal, in 1994 Virginia implored British social workers and childcare workers "to take heed" of a report her health department financed, written by her friend and scholar Jean La Fontaine, claiming that there's no such thing as satanic ritual abuse.[100] Upon the report's release, Bottomley arrogantly declared that the "myth of satanic abuse" has been thoroughly exposed.

While over the last 31 years the Baroness has been Governor of the Fabian founded London School of Economics where she earned her master's degree (recall also Margaret Oppenheimer's alma mater),[101] for decades her pal Jean La

Fontaine as LSE’s anthropology emeritus professor has faithfully provided the “scientific” cover to subvert public exposure and awareness that organized ritual abuse is both real and far more prevalent than commonly known. Jean La Fontaine’s latest application of her lifelong work helped a high court judge in 2015 declare the alleged satanic cult’s reported ritual child sex abuse in the Hampstead scandal a complete hoax.[102] This story and its cover-up will be fully dissected in Chapter 26.

The genius Stanley Kubrick wasn’t murdered for nothing four days after his near final editing cut on “Eyes Wide Shut,” boldly revealing the elite’s inner secrets of perversion, occult ritual and death. With his next scheduled pet project purported to be an exposé on the rulers’ obsessional agenda with pedophilia, the treacherous crime cabal had seen enough of Stanley Kubrick. The man knew too many secrets and had the audacity to want to share them with the world. He often would remind his wife:

Be suspicious of people who have, or crave, power. Never, ever go near power. Don't become friends with anyone who has real power. It's dangerous.[103]

It’s as if he knew his own tragic fate, an all too common outcome of those who “step out of line and the man come take you away” as Stephen Stills once wrote. Staged murder made to look like suicide or in Stanley’s case a heart attack is untraceably common, and yet another running theme of this book befalling dozens who knew too much. Be it through academia, mass media or hired assassins, the elite’s waging an all-out war on truth on countless fronts with a hi-tech arsenal of lethal weaponry we don’t even know about.[104]

The evildoers in control of this planet that regularly practice organized satanic ritual abuse and murder of children en masse of course would rather have us all believing it doesn’t exist at all. Deferring to a post on the bold, feisty Chris

Spivey website entitled “The Who’s Who of Satanic Abuse,” a list of alleged members belonging to or affiliated with a particular British satanic cult or coven that includes such luminaries as both the former health minister Virginia Bottomley and Professor La Fontaine in addition to Ted Heath, Dame Margaret Hodge, Lord Peter Mandelson and other likeminded ministers, lords and MPs.[105] It appears to have been compiled during the years leading up to 2010 by an organization called the Ritual Abuse Information Network & Support (RAINS), an advocacy support group for ritual abuse victims, in this case a mind control SRA victim diagnosed with dissociative disorder named Helen G.

Since former Tory Prime Minster Ted Heath from 1970 to 1974 was mentioned in previous chapters and the paragraph above, this blackmail controlled Luciferian pedophile-murderer-traitor who sold Britain’s national sovereignty to the international cabal behind the European Union was involved as noted earlier in PIE, Jersey Island pedophilia and murder with procurer Savile and abusing boys in Northern Ireland’s Kincora scandal. But according to *The Sun*, the Wiltshire police probe apparently interviewed women claimants who as young girls maintain that Edward Heath sexually attacked children as a member of a satanic pedophile cult run by their own parents.[106] They accused the cult of engaging in ritual child sacrifice in churches and woodlands in southern England as well as Africa, stabbing, maiming, torturing and slaughtering up to 16 children from babies to teenagers, then as cannibals resorting to blood drinking and consuming organs. This of course would support other allegations like the one mentioned above that Ted Heath was a satanic cult participant.

After a thorough albeit heavily challenged and controversial investigation named Operation Conifer begun in 2015, in February 2017 Wiltshire Chief Constable Mike Veale gave “120%” confidence behind the alleged 30 people who came forth with allegations of abuse against Heath being "genuine."[107] Veale said their accounts are "strikingly similar" and "totally convincing," corroborating their veracity. At one point, Heath had no less than five police forces investigating him - the Met, Wiltshire, Hampshire, Kent and Jersey.[108] But his political power ensured cover-up. Veale's inquiry included 42 allegations from seven alleged victims from 1956 to 1992 that police claim today would require questioning under caution.[109] Turns out Heath's name was also on that dossier Barbara Castle gave to Don Hale in 1984 that Special Branch thugs swiftly scooped up. Of course David Icke outed him as a murdering pedophile-Satanist in his 1998 book *The Biggest Secret,* but too few were listening then a full seven years ahead of Heath's death in 2005.[110]

Now for a last look at fellow Tory, thin-skinned hubby Sir Peter Bottomley. Thatcher's former transportation minister sure knows how to get around. In addition to Elm Guest House and Monday trips across the Channel, a most memorable trip to Brussels on May 29, 1985 placed Peter Bottomley at the Heysel Stadium disaster where 39 rowdy, hapless football fans were crushed and trampled to death.[111] Two years later the queen honored knight happened to be at the Kings Cross underground station fire that killed 31 on the evening of November 18, 1987.[112] Rent boys in an underground café at Kings Cross may have been targeted by what's now been concluded to be a very deadly arson fire.[113] And just like clockwork, two years later again Sir Peter witnessed the Kegworth air disaster on January 8, 1989 when 44 passengers died. Unclear whether the lucky man was one of 79 passengers who survived or just happened to observe the tragedy while at the East Midlands Airport that day. Bottomley did not appear to be among the 300 guests attending the 30-year commemoration ceremony at Leicestershire in January 2019.[114] Bottomley's first close encounter with death during his harrowing 80s decade of disasters came while representing the British Council of Churches attending the funeral of assassinated Archbishop Oscar Romero in El Salvador on March 30, 1980, when 14 mourners around him were mercilessly gunned down.[115]

Imagine in less than one decade the odds of one man surviving four extremely deadly close calls and, at 74-years old today, still be alive to tell his grandkids, not to mention Sir Peter not slowing down as senior Conservative Member of Parliament for the last 44 years.[116] But then it appears that all his traumas from the 1980s may have caught up to both him and his wife in the 1990s. Her bizarre, reactive, anti-children's crusade as heath minster and his volatile, erratic, highly irrational, acting out misbehavior speak volumes. For instance, in a March 1993 article for the *Independent*, journalist Beatrix Campbell responds to the health minister's call to get tough on disciplining children under her brand of health care:

> *Mrs Bottomley's attitude is a symptom of the public's retreat from its awareness of children's pain. Her vaunted vocation as a social worker ended when the new age began. Her message, indeed Britain's message, is simple: when children don't oblige by being innocent victims, when they are demanding and difficult, when they are awkward accusers, and when they don't care whom they hurt, including themselves, then adults are absolved. No longer ashamed, we blame the victim.*[117]

While his wife Virginia was busy betraying at-risk kids in 1993, hubby Peter was doing his own anti-child thing too. In 1993 when a staff member working at Melanie Klein children's home in Greenwich was being investigated for his sexual debauchery abusing and contributing to the delinquency of underage girls, MP Bottomley rushed to the abuser's defense, barging in to interrupt a council disciplinary hearing with his unprovoked, off-the-wall tirade.

[118] An even more disgraceful meltdown on full public display was exhibited when the ranting madman tried in vain to halt Thames television from filming an investigation on the case. Not only did Sir Peter insist the program not move forward, but screamed in rage at the Thames board for allowing it. It was as if he was the sexual abuser being accused. What does that man have to hide if he never abused a child?

To put it mildly, neither Mr. nor Mrs. Bottomley were acting the least bit kid-friendly in 1993. As Beatrix Campbell alluded, the 1990s were even more unsafe for British children than the preceding decade when MP whistleblower Geoffrey Dickens first tried to alert the government about pedophilia amongst his peers. Was Sir Peter Bottomley unraveling because his name was being bandied about as an Elm Guest House regular, the notorious house of horror gnawing at the heart of the Westminster VIP scandal? Or perhaps it was those Monday Club cruises to Amsterdam and Brussels. Or maybe he was suffering from PTSD survivors' guilt. In any event, Bottomley was bottoming out, allowing all the rumors to rattle his cage to the extreme, only leaving observers with the impression that either the loose cannon was having a nervous breakdown or he was a man with much too much to hide for his own good. Eventually he threatened libelous action against any and all who dared make reference to his association with child sexual abuse.

Scalawag Magazine pointed out that he'd been groomed from a very early age for bigger and better things, yet the height of his political career prematurely eclipsed as mere Junior Minister for Northern Ireland, while his baroness wife's pinnacle reached the much higher perch as Health Minister. [119] Perhaps his questionable past and psychological instability as the ticking time bomb undermined and arrested his ambitious climb to the top. Or just one too many personal traumas from the 1980s.

In 1986 - two years into Virginia Bottomley's 21-year Parliamentary stretch, Dame Esther Rantzen began her *BBC* ChildLine operation reportedly filtering out calls from child victims of VIP sex abuse. It's rather telling that in a February 1989 *Daily Mirror* article covering the biggest pedophile ring bust in British history, that the final paragraph be devoted to soliciting Esther Rantzen's reaction. The ChildLine pedo-gatekeeper was promoting the idea that Britain urgently needed "a Ministry of Children" a full decade and a half before pedo-enabling Tony Blair made Esther's wish come true, selecting his former neighbor and Esther's Jewish "pedo-sister" Dame Oppenheimer the nation's first minister of children.[120] It's as if the elite's diabolical plan had already been mapped out years in advance, which is exactly how the Luciferian planetary controllers operate.

Skip ahead just four years to 1993 and we have on full display the health minister in charge of the UK Care System and her longtime MP husband blatantly not operating in the best interest of children. If only Britain followed the immediate advice of gatekeeper Rantzen and had a caring, nurturing minister of children like Dame Oppenheimer Hodge whose maltreatment towards her own poor Islington kids at that time was finally being exposed in the press, how under Margaret's loving care, kids were being sexually mauled and attacked every single day on her watch. Margaret and Virginia's system of care was crawling with so many child sexual predators that their public records were clearly protecting. Leave it for another decade before the "compassionate" Prime Minister Tony Blair to finally implement Dame Esther's splendid idea to create the position especially for Dame Margaret to so fiercely protect rapists, I mean children. Again, regardless of decade, leader, party, male or female, those entrusted with the responsibility of taking care of children, by their own overt actions on public record took care of rapists first and children last.

By far the biggest theme of this book on modern pedophilia is that the same protected child sodomizing VIP criminals keep getting away with it their whole lives through, with few if ever caught and brought to justice. As a semi-notable on par with Peter Righton, it took Met's Operation Hedgerow (1987-89) to finally temporarily stop career Foreign Office diplomat-serial pedophile Colin Peters (with nearly two dozen others' arrests as well), resulting in their 1989 convictions and his eight year prison sentence.[121] Police determined this enormous pedophile ring procured mostly local runaways off the English streets and public toilets as well as from one of his crime partner's cleaning business and youth football club. But despite the QC Foreign Office barrister's London based sex ring having links to the much wider international pedophilia and child pornography network stretching to Italy (recall Naples 1967 sealed till 2056)), Asia and the US, Operation Hedgerow was too underfunded and understaffed to follow up on its critical global leads.[122] Reporting on the case in 2013, the *Independent* stated:

[Colin Peter's pedophile ring] *was used by highly placed civil servants and well-known public officials.*[123]

A prominent MP and a member of high society were also implicated in the Hedgerow bust. But because trespassing on the cabal's worldwide pedo-operations was taboo even back in 1989, the two lead detectives' chain of command requests to expand the operation and establish a specialized international pedophilia unit were summarily rejected, especially once high society VIPs like a House of Lords peer and a West London vicar emerged as suspects. One of two lead detectives behind Operation Hedgerow, the retired Detective Chief Superintendent Roger Gaspar went on record in 2014:

I was warned off… 'Don't open the box, you will never get the lid back on.' I was warned not to open the box to find what else is going on because it would just carry on and on. [124]

Hmm… kind of like the IICSA and UK's never-ending cover-up.

Despite making 23 arrests resulting in 14 convictions compiling evidence of abuse of at least 150 boys in the biggest pedophile police operation in UK history to-date, after two years Operation Hedgerow was shut down in 1989 with no further media coverage exposing this tip of the global pedo-iceberg. Again, another police probe got too close to pedophiles at the top of the predator food chain caught sprouting their international tentacles far and wide. And let's face it, Colin Peters along with the likes of Peter Righton and Jimmy Savile were among the elite's prime crime players busily working, in Jimmy's own words, "undercover" with MI5 and MI6, coordinating pedophile rings serving the British Establishment VIPs nationwide and far beyond, but most importantly, serving the control matrix through its globalized blackmail apparatus.

In its ever-expanding control over blackmail operations, even further back in the 1970s, MI5 made sure to infiltrate Britain's largest, most influential pedophile organization - the Paedophile Information Exchange (1974-1984).[125] A longtime civil servant turned whistleblower at the Home Affairs Office maintains that Metro's Special Branch funded PIE in the late 1970s and early 80s as a subversive means of implementing sexual blackmail control over PIE member politicians.[126] Recall former MI6 deputy head Sir Peter Hayman was an active PIE member with a particular penchant for sexually fantasizing about torture and murder of children.[127]

With Scotland Yard's Special Branch having infiltrated PIE, Met Police obtained possession of a PIE membership list in

1984.[128] Additionally, the same week in 1983 that MP Geoffrey Dickens submitted a 40 page dosser on infiltrated pedophiles high up in government, the Scotland Yard also sent Home Office Secretary Sir Leon a PIE dossier outing 15 known pedophiles.[129] The then pedo-enabling Director of Public Prosecutions Sir Thomas Hetherington also received a copy. Yet he too sat on it. But more on Sir Thomas the protector later. Of course pedophile Leon Brittan proceeded to do what he did best, lose and destroy all evidence, especially when it incriminated himself and/or his VIP pedo-pals. Unsurprisingly, Brittan also refused to take action to abolish the Paedophile Information Exchange that Dickens had railed against, passively allowing public exposure pressure to disband the group by 1984.[130]

Geoffrey Dickens used Parliamentary privilege to name diplomat and MI6 deputy director Sir Peter Hayman as a pedophile due to a package found on a bus belonging to the pervert containing child pornography.[131] Yet while lesser known P. I. E. members were prosecuted and jailed in 1978 on either the same or lesser charge of conspiring to corrupt public morals as a mere member, Hayman was protected and later knighted by the queen. In January 2015 a secret 37 page file was released by National Archives detailing Margaret Thatcher and her then Attorney General Michael Haver’s preoccupation over concealing Sir Peter Hayman’s sick habits from going public in anticipation of Dickens threat to expose him in Parliament.[132]

For four years between 1981 and 1985 the courageous MP Geoffrey Dickens spoke continually of a Westminster-Downing Street pedophile ring linked to child pornography and organized crime, recognizing the evil and “vast sums” made abusing children on camera.[133] Geoffrey spoke of “big, big names – people in positions of power, influence and responsibility” involved in child abuse. How correct he was.

For calling attention to such a disturbingly taboo topic, MP Dickens was a very brave and honorable man surrounded by pedophiles and wolves in his midst. On November 29, 1985 he spoke for the final time about the scourge engulfing all around him and his nation:

> *The noose around my neck grew tighter after I named a former high-flying British diplomat on the Floor of the House. Honourable Members will understand that where big money is involved and as important names came into my possession so the threats began. First, I received threatening telephone calls followed by two burglaries at my London home. Then, more seriously, my name appeared on a multi-killer's hit list.*[134]

Yet for the trouble of telling the ugly truth, Geoffrey Dickens paid a price. The vast majority of his peers scoffed and laughed at him… again, the usual treatment of a truth telling whistleblower bold enough to utter such shocking allegations. And in an evil system, the good guys always get punished with character or bodily assassination while the bad guys always remain protected and even rewarded. After his 1985 speech until his death at 64 in 1995, the 16-year MP never raised the topic of pedophilia again, perhaps because he feared assassination for him and his family. Dickens' widow also allegedly destroyed her husband's only dossier copy because she thought it was too "toxic," probably code word for lethal.[135]

After Met Police submitted its PIE dossier to its Home Office boss Sir Leon and it too was lost or destroyed, it fails to absolve Britain's largest police force from its moral and legal duty and responsibility to make life safe from its long list of 300 known criminals.[136] And a high number of PIE members from that 1984 list were serial sexual offenders who acted out their perverted desires for many more years. In fact, a slew from that list were later arrested, often times even decades later.[137] But back in 1983 up to the time of their arrests, the Met Police Services (MPS) grossly failed to protect hundreds of child victims from self-confessed, known pedophiles, a most serious and grave dereliction of duty that an apology can never excuse.[138] One member was arrested 27 years later. Imagine how many young lives could have been saved from the lifetime damage and suffering caused by the reoffending crimes of 300 degenerates.

The most pressing question becomes why didn't Metro Police Services (MPS) do anything to stop known pedophiles from hurting children? The answer no doubt lies in the same reason the Met had virtually every investigation of a pedophile ring shut down prematurely from "orders from above." Clearly the MPS follow(ed) orders to let child abusers remain free to repeatedly harm children, especially if the perps happen to be MPs, lords and cabinet ministers. So the question becomes was there ever an explicit order, as in all the police probes stopped from "on high," not to investigate or surveil these identified men known to be on the prowl for their next child victim? And if so, who? Also from the notorious Elm Guest House list alone[139] as well as media covered chief constables outed for their pedo-crimes,[140] [141] it's more than evident that police chiefs too often turn out to be pedophiles themselves (not to mention order-following enablers),[142] and in the same way Sir Leon refused to out himself, senior pedo-police officers no doubt criminally resort to the same self-preservation tactics.

Investigative journalist Tim Tate in recent years has pressed the IICSA to thoroughly examine the Met's pervasive, systemic failure to protect children, in this case, passively sitting on a list of known PIE pedophiles.[143] But despite the fourth presiding IICSA chair Alexis Jay's stated objective to probe PIE regarding its VIP connections, no official criticism or substantive uncovering of police failures have emerged from her "independent" inquiry during the past four years since it began.

Don’t hold your breath. Just like Westminster, the Home Office, the Scotland Yard, and the Home Office mismanaged IICSA fiasco, none are willing or able to take a hard honest look at themselves and do the self-policing required to flush out the cold hard self-incriminating facts, much less out themselves for perverting and obstructing justice.[144] Yet even the most casual observer can readily see that the emperor wearing no clothes has been committing criminal cover-up for decades. Like the zillion past inquiries before it, unwilling to examine the mountains of UK child abuse and more mountains of cover-up evidence, the IICSA has only proven itself to be yet one more enormous smokescreen for gross incompetence leading to more avoidance and more cover-up.

The IICSA as a poorly staged Home Office production of half-truths has chosen to focus almost exclusively on Church of England and Catholic Church horror, so far sidestepping the elephant in the room, the wider web of horror inflicted on children by a powerful network of so called famous government leaders, several of whom have been Home Office ministers. Though the cherry-picked victims providing abuse testimony at clerical run schools have a history of horrendous trauma that deserve a public forum as well, the bulk of the pedophilia at the heart of the British government’s been forever covered up and so far conveniently glossed over by this sorry excuse of an inquiry.

Merely scratching the surface with Rochdale’s Cambridge House hostel and Knowl View residential school abuse only touching on the relative safe zone of one obesely dead whale is hardly getting to the core truth. And then for the IICSA to pass off the blatant lie, concluding that no “deliberate cover-up” of Cyril Smith’s over 40-year crime spree occurred is an insult to any human’s intelligence with half a brain.[145] The Inquiry panel also bogusly claims that police never quite possessed enough evidence to prosecute the queen's knight when everyone in his giant shadow knew full well he was a pedo-monster with incredible amounts of incriminating evidence over the years to secure a number of convictions.

Moreover, the timing of the stretched out Brexit saga designed to overshadow the feeble, never-ending now four-year run of the Independent Inquiry into Child Sexual Abuse are both scheduled to culminate at the same time in March 2019.[146] These two co-timed events are no accident. With the March 29th official EU exit, Brexit's been set up to provide sleight of hand distraction drawing attention away from the inquiry's scheduled public hearings on the Westminster VIP cover-up.[147] If it is anything like the Rochdale/Smith whitewash, this inquiry will go down as another duly noted government scam, a forgettable footnote in history books. Rather than expose the VIP child fuckers at the top of the predatory food chain, which would be the natural targeted objective of any actual independent inquiry, so far it's just been another sugarcoated version of nauseating cover-up. Meanwhile, a vast pedophilia network remains alive and well, feasting off the flesh and blood of child victims in today's booming global sex trafficking slave trade. Unless radical truth bombs begin surfacing in March, the IICSA will be regarded as the devil's charade. Hence, the Brexit debacle's been scheduled to take center stage.

As the "Jimmy Savile" of the British government, Liberal Democrat Cyril Smith and the infamous DJ's criminal lives ran an uncanny parallel course, intertwining constantly as close friends with the same addiction cut from the same predatory cloth active during the same five decades. Britain's two most prolific, high profile predators met each other at a medieval banquet in 1977 when Cyril sang and Savile invited the politician onto his Clunk Clink show.[148] Together they shared the same sick sadistic passion for destroying upwards of thousands of young lives, getting away with their countless crimes linked to many of the same crime scenes - Elm Guest House, Northern Ireland’s Kincora,[149] the Moors outside Scarborough and Manchester.

Both were openly rumored to be serial pedophiles for many decades but never served one day in prison. Born less than two years apart (the younger Smith in 1928), their crime sprees spanned the same marathon stretch from the 1950s to their year apart deaths (Smith in 2010, Savile in 2011). And they were both knighted by the queen as major players in the same pedophilia network, fully shielded by the uppermost echelons of British Establishment power structure - the government, royalty, police, intelligence agencies and Crown Prosecution Service. And early on in their illustrious careers, both Savile and Smith gravitated to immersing themselves tirelessly into philanthropic youth charities as the convenient cover to seize unlimited opportunity to prey on a deep reservoir of defenseless kids in care.

As a Rochdale businessman, council member turned mayor in 1966, Cyril Smith helped establish Cambridge House hostel for troubled youth, Knowl View special school for the learning disabled, the youth charity Rochdale Childer and, at one point, was governor of 29 local schools.[150] Uncovered Knowl View documents indicate that up to a quarter of the children at the school may have suffered sexual and physical abuse by Cyril Smith and friends.[151] The staff is accused of dereliction of duty in its failure to protect its vulnerable young students with learning disabilities.

Like Savile, Smith’s orchestrated “altruistic arrangement” at multiple youth facilities gave him free day and night access with keys to buildings to waddle from classroom to classroom and children’s center to children’s center with no questions asked, typically playing the depraved role of either “medical examiner” or disciplinarian or both in his abuse ritual of young boys. He’d unlock the door to boys’ bedrooms at Cambridge House and order youngsters to take their clothes off. His stated deceitful purpose:

I've been told you're ill and I've come to examine you.[152]

Three to four times the size of his victims and overpowered by his authoritative, intimidating presence, one victim recollects:

I remember his eyes watching me like a beast sizing up its prey. In the folds of fat around his neck I could see rivulets of sweat. Shaking with fear, I did as I was told. He bent down and clasped me with huge hands like shovels. Suddenly he grasped my private parts and began to squeeze. I screamed. Violence flashed in his eyes. 'Now, now, lad. I'll have none of your petulance. This is for your own good. I'm checking to see if there's anything wrong with you,' he said, as he forced his way between my thighs again.[153]

Thirteen survivors of Smith's abuse have come forward at Cambridge and Knowl View alone, indicating a likelihood of perhaps hundreds more during his near half century reign of terror, with his first confirmed incident dating back to 1961 grooming a Christmas carol choirboy. Eight brave boys from Cambridge House made abuse allegations against Cyril Smith as far back as the 1960s.[154] Most of his victims were unaware of his political title, only that the "fat man" as they called him was "Mr. Rochdale," and everyone in town knew Cyril Smith to be an extremely powerful local Godfather-like figure. The lifetime bachelor made his mother the "First Lady of Rochdale."

No matter if you're awakened in the middle of the night and forced downstairs to a room where the waiting fat man demanded a blow job, or if you had an allergy to eating meat and the big man brought a plate full of ham sandwiches and ordered you to eat, nothing else mattered.[155] Smith stuffed the sandwich down his victim's throat and within seconds, when the young boy became sick, the sadistic, enraged punisher delivered a swift backhand paw swipe with such force that the boy’s head hit the wall, causing a gash requiring stitches at the local emergency hospital room and knocking out his front teeth. But just like Sir Jimmy, victims were either disbelieved or deemed too powerless to go up against the most famous big man of Rochdale.

As Smith ascended to national prominence within the Liberal Party becoming an MP from 1972 to 1992, just as Sir Jimmy’s crimes were hidden in plain sight, both utilized the mass media to cultivate their larger-than-life, iconic personas that helped conceal their diabolical natures and insatiable appetites for perversion and wickedness. While Savile’s abuse was known to both police and *BBC*, Smith’s too was well-known to police as well as Westminster. But with their link to the power establishment knowing the inside dirty lowdown on scores of other VIP pedophiles, their open secret was kept secure, tightly sealed in complicit cover-up, a lifetime guarantee until after their deaths.

However, just 7 years into his two decades in Parliament, in May 1979 a little local monthly paper called the *Rochdale Alternative Press* known as RAP ran the front-page headline “Strange Case of Smith the Man,” graphically detailing the MP’s systematic abuse of boys at Cambridge House.[156] The astounding newspaper article printed in one of the two editors’ cellars was the culmination of checking out barroom rumors firsthand with staff, former residents and nine victims (four with signed affidavits) along with local police accounts that confirmed the shocking reality of what was going on. The powerful Smith the Man threatened a libel suit that he never carried out for obvious reasons that the truth is not libelous. Though the story immediately created quite the local stir, with larger London newspapers descending on Rochdale and the RAP editors for interviews, like all similar complaints, evidence and persistent rumors over the years, other than one more *Private Eye* piece rehashing the RAP fact sheet, it too passed and Big Cyril of Rochdale prevailed, increasing his voting majority at his next election. Smith's working class, man-of-the-people charm as a regular on the TV talk show circuit and countless public appearances, along with help from fellow VIP peers, police, security services and the CPS, the fat man managed to thrive for the next three decades before succumbing to cancer in 2010. Upon both Smith and Savile's passing, the queen honored evil giants were revered as "national treasures," prior to the truth of their darker sides posthumously emerging in sensational shocking exposure.[157]

At fat man's 80th birthday party, Liberal Democrat party leader Nick Clegg touted such praise as:

[Smith was] *a beacon for our party in the Seventies and Eighties.*

And upon fat man's death two years later, Clegg gushed:

He was a friend to everybody in Rochdale. Cyril Smith was a larger-than-life character and one of the most recognisable and likeable politicians of his day.[158]

Clegg, I got news for you - your demagogue was not a friend to the hundreds of his victims in Rochdale or anywhere else.

MP Cyril Smith represents the embodiment of corrupt collusion and cover-up at the highest levels - the nefarious nexus between criminal politician and his protectors - the police, DPPs, intelligence services and fellow pedo club members. In both the Savile and Smith cases, decent rank and file cops were repeatedly thwarted trying to bring justice to victimized children, putting away the beast only to be reprimanded and ordered to stand down, muzzled and threatened with prosecution under the Official Secrets Act.[159] Smith was in detectives' crosshairs for prosecution at least three times,[160] while Savile was investigated in at least seven probes.[161]

When police discovered indecent photos of children in Smith's car, suddenly a mysterious call from London arrived with instructions not to charge him.[162] The serial molester was apprehended on numerous occasions at the St. James Park public toilets in London for gross indecency but orders from above were delivered like clockwork to always bail his lard ass out. In 1981 police set up surveillance of a flat in the Coronation Buildings in pedo-infested Lambeth, less than a mile from Parliament. Cyril Smith and a senior member of British intelligence were caught on tape attending a sex orgy.[163] Police picked him up and detained him a few hours before his release. The sergeant wanting to hold him was warned. After a police instructor leaked that there were 144 formal abuse complaints against Smith, she was abruptly silenced and reassigned. That's the screwed up system. Like the child victims, good cops wanting justice are always punished or threatened.

It's worth interjecting here that although Elm Guest House may be the most infamous of all locations where VIP child abusers gathered for orgies through several highly organized, convergent pedophile rings, it's definitely not the only place. Recall the plan to franchise the Elm brand to bring a boy brothel to every community. Though typically victims from Grafton Close Home and other children's residential facilities across Britain were sexually assaulted by staff and occasional outsiders in their own care homes, besides Elm Guest House, youth were frequently transported to other private homes as in Lambeth's Coronation Buildings or Dolphin Square flats or individual estates belonging to VIPs in the Greater London area and beyond. Plus it was also common for children from other areas in Britain and Northern Ireland to likewise travel to sex parties in any number of destinations around London and elsewhere. At times boys and girls from London were trafficked to other distant locales such as Northern Ireland, North Wales, and Jersey Island or abroad to Amsterdam and other cities. Elm House victims maintain they were brought to Amsterdam to be further abused there.[164]

As alluded to earlier, Britain’s pedophilia network was rapidly expanding throughout the 1980s both nationwide and internationally. Security services and a growing web of infiltrating homosexual pedophiles saturating social services, education and the burgeoning sex tourism trade, interfacing with likeminded senior civil servants, local and national politicians and top law enforcement personnel had built a vast pedophilia network that was both thriving and fairly well-insulated by the early 1980s. Hence, it’s almost by fluke that tip of the iceberg scandals like Elm House broke out at all as the ever-tightening grip of secrecy and deception grew during the unfolding national cover-up.

An MI5 memo surfaced at the October 2017 IICSA hearings showing that the Director of Public Prosecution (DPP), the queen knighted gatekeeper who decides what cases get prosecuted or not, Sir Thomas Hetherington in 1979 lied to the press insisting that no record of a police inquiry from 1970 existed exposing Cyril Smith as a child abuser.[165] Though for decades MI5 was fully aware that Smith was repeatedly accused by countless victims, but as the “defender of the realm” (not to mention primary architect of UK’s pedo-network), its primary responsibility was never to expose but only to protect pedophiles. Of course like any intelligence agency, to this very day British security services have always attempted to fulfil their duty to ensure that pedophilia blackmail operations remain hidden, intact and covered up. And as another integral player in this evil scheme, so have all the DPPs throughout modern British history also protected the freedom and reputations of scores of child rapists from the VIP Establishment.

Hetherington was simply doing his expected job lying to the media in order to cover up VIP sex crimes, just as his DPP predecessor Sir Norman Skelhorn in 1970 chose to minimize and cover-up Smith's depravities, claiming not enough credible evidence to secure a conviction. This tactical decision came after eight young men independently corroborated each other's accounts, reporting that long before Smith was even an MP, he'd been sexually molesting boys at Cambridge House in the 1960s. But Skelhorn claimed the victims were not to be trusted.[166] See how victims are routinely and historically treated, as if they're the criminals? From 1889 to this 1970 case right up to the present, child victims from the poor class are routinely double punished and invariably the criminal elite are shielded and allowed to escape justice to abuse again and again. Fact - the UK legal system has absolutely nothing to do with justice at all, delivering only injustice. In a letter to the Chief Constable, DPP Skelhorn in 1970 also lied:

[The claims] *were somewhat stale and without corroboration*. *Further, the characters of some of these young men would be likely to render their evidence suspect.* [167]

Always it's the victims on trial, never the VIP perps.

During that same year in 1979 when pedo-protecting Hetherington lied to the press about a previous police inquiry into Smith abuse, at a Liberal Party election meeting held at a volunteer's flat in Manchester, Sir Cyril made his grand appearance. After breaking a chair from his overweight and then sitting flustered next to a 14-year old boy, Smith's impulse control lapsed and he groped the lad's genitals who screamed so loudly in front of the shocked into silence crowd, it instantly created a scandalous public scene.[168] The couple at the flat hosting the event were appalled and bitterly complained to the party headquarters in London. The Liberal Party's official response was to offer them £200 in hush money to cover any “inconvenience” caused. As the party leader at the time, David Steel has claimed he never heard of this incident. But after reading the *Private Eye* article that same year in 1979 outing Smith, Steel maintains that he confronted Big Cyril and simply took his word at face value that he never abused children. Yet in 1988 Lord David Steel recommended the sexual predator for knighthood despite being told of Smith’s numerous abuse allegations.[169] Let’s face it, if you’re part of the pedophilia club, the system never fails to reward you with its royal blessings as virtually every suspected or known pedophile is a royally honored knight.

In 1985 Director of Public Prosecutions Hetherington made a special trip over to the West End Central police station in person to demand that Metro’s Operation Circus be shut down as police surveillance had captured in photos senior politicians, entertainers and a Scotland Yard commander abusing rent boys in Piccadilly Circus.[170] In September 2015 it was discovered that this treasure trove of VIP evidence of child abuse documentation previously placed in a Special Branch registry and stored in police archives has suddenly gone missing. While the red docket files apparently disappeared from archives, the so called X4 files of unsubstantiated information on pedophiles believed to have been “a goldmine” were shredded. Dozens of police probe shutdowns and episodes of disappearing evidence are the cornerstone to cover-up.

Though apologists commonly claim if the same incriminating evidence was presented to CPS today against any VIP, regardless of status, an arrest and prosecution would most certainly follow since there’s been a major sea change in cultural perspective regarding institutionalized child abuse. Is that why still not one MP or minister has ever been charged and gone to prison? This is just more bullshit rhetoric used frequently as an excuse to explain away the massive unending cover-up still ongoing today.

Attorney Alan Collins, who represents abuse victims, states:

> *It would appear there's still sometimes this underlying attitude that when it comes to child abuse allegations that the children, the victims, are not necessarily believed.*[171]

Just like the Elm Guest House and Jimmy Savile scandals, on multiple occasions in 1970, 1979, and again in both 1998 and 1999, compelling evidence to prosecute Smith was criminally ignored, blocked and repeatedly covered up in conspiracy by police, MI5, DPPs and CPS in spite of the open secret swirling around this diabolical MP's entire political career.[172]

Assigned Lancashire Special Branch officer Tony Robinson went public in 2012 reporting that he inadvertently stumbled upon a very thick dossier deliberately hidden away in a Special Branch safe in Lancashire during the 1970s containing a plethora of complaints compiled over the years by dozens of Smith victims.[173] Robinson asserts that he then received a call from an MI5 officer requesting that the dossier be sent to London ASAP. Tony Robinson also said that the Director of Public Prosecutions had previously reviewed the file. Proof the dossier had already passed through the DPP's hands was self-evident:

> *Written across the top of it were the words: 'No further action, not in the public interest. DPP,'* [adding]: *The police now say the file is lost. It seems like there was a complete cover up to me.*[174]

Ya think? Another "missing dossier" to join the slew of destroyed evidence is but one more confirmation that MI5 and Special Branch's criminal responsibility and priority #1 is to seize and disappear all "loose ends" in "defense of the realm" in order to keep evidence of VIP pedophilia covered up at all cost.

Recall from the last chapter in the early to mid-1990s the heroic efforts by Dr. Liz Davies, calling urgent attention to the out of control pedophilia inside Margaret Hodge's dozen Islington care homes, ultimately hauling her painstakingly collected hardcore evidence into a Metro Police superintendent's office. He apologetically informed Liz that powerful figures still control what gets exposed and what is systematically covered up and concealed, regretfully disclosing:

I won't be able to investigate here at Scotland Yard.[175]

Clearly the supe was alluding to higher-ups in Special Branch, the security services, the British government and their puppet masters in control of the massive child abuse cover-up. Former Special Branch Lancashire Detective Tony Robinson said after he'd gone public in 2012 divulging the call he received years ago from MI5 in London ordering the immediate transfer of that hefty Smith dossier to MI5 headquarters, the now 85-year old in failing health said in 2014 that he received another call from an old boss warning him he'd be prosecuted for violating the Official Secrets Act if he talks to the press again.[176] This is the cabal weapon ensuring the cover-up continues. That's why MP John Mann's sponsored 2015 bill calling for amnesty went down in defeat. Virtually the entire British government is still guiltily in on the nonstop cover-up.

In each and every scandal from Jersey, Islington and Lambeth to Elm Guest House, Savile and Smith, in order to protect the security services' engineered pedophilia network and sexual blackmail operations, missing and destroyed files in every single case is the name of the game under the pretext of "national security" to keep the tightest lid on United Kingdom's longtime cover-up. Though the decision not to prosecute Smith is said to have come "from the top," spanning several prime ministers in office at the time,[177] it bears in mind to recognize that "the top" is not the elite's selected puppet politicians “running” the country. Again, the most important decisions that make, break or save a particular government or entire British Establishment, virtually always originate with the bloodline puppet masters pulling the strings controlling the planet.

Another Lancashire Police officer doggedly in pursuit of Cyril Smith sex crimes also repeatedly ran into a brick wall. The now 86-year old 35-year police force veteran Jack Tasker was threatened by his higher-ups on a number of occasions.[178] Facing loss of job, career and livelihood along with a two year prison sentence and exorbitant fines, in 1981 Tasker and his team of undercover detectives were abruptly forced to cease operations and turn in months of hard evidence on Smith. After painstakingly collecting a massive amount of surveillance building a strong criminal case against MP Cyril Smith and a number of his peers as well as a senior intelligence head and high ranking police commanders all caught on videotape and in pictures abusing trafficked boys from care homes at sex parties at Elm Guest House, Dolphin Square and other locations, it turned out all for naught as the cover-up of the century was already well underway.

Just prior to this monumental setback, the vice squad actually had arrested Smith and held him for several hours at the police station before his release. But that wasn’t the first time Det. Tasker had the fat man in his grasp. Eight of Smith’s victims as far back as 1969 had reported abuse to Tasker’s investigative unit while Smith was still a Rochdale council member.[179] Tasker questioned Smith, stating he had the stuttering, sweating pig near breaking point. But Tubby’s mommy, soon-to-be “First Lady of Rochdale,” just happened to be a cleaning woman at the police station who overheard the rumors and word quickly got back to her big momma’s boy. The next thing Jack Tasker knew was:

We were ordered to stop. We were visited by a superintendent and a chief superintendent. They were from

> *the Lancashire Police HQ at Hutton.*[180]

Detective Jack explained his “superiors” forced him to unlock a drawer containing all the files on Smith.

> *They told me to take everything out that relates to this case and added ‘We mean everything, every scrap of paper and every note you’ve ever made’. They said we would be back in uniform if anything went wrong.*[181]

Now all these years later, still fearing loss of pension and still facing threat of prosecution, the only way for former police officer octogenarians like Tasker and Robinson to freely report their earlier investigative findings from a half century ago is through either granting them amnesty or repealing the Official Secrets Act.

In 2015 anti-child abuse campaigner turned former Rochdale MP Simon Danczuk (he too has been neutralized as alluded to in a previous chapter) stated:

> *He* [Smith] *was protected because he knew of other paedophiles in the networks in which he operated and had he been prosecuted, then I think those other people would have been named by Smith and that's why they ensured that he was never put before the courts.*[182]

With his Smith investigation shut down again in 1981, former detective Jack Tasker maintains that Cyril Smith was yet another major supplier (just like his buddy Savile) to the VIP network.[183] Moreover, Tasker asserts that a powerful spy web (MI5) obstructed all law enforcement efforts to arrest and convict the serial child predator, citing the same reason - fear that if the fat man was arrested, he wouldn’t hesitate to bring down with him scores of fellow VIP sickos in politics, entertainment, the high courts, police and security services.[184] Also similar to suspicions surrounding his satanic DJ pedo-pal Sir Jimmy, detective Tasker believes Smith could have been involved in murder at the Elm Guest House:

> *Smith's name even cropped up in talks with colleagues as a possible suspect for a murder at the Elm Guest House in London, where we knew Cyril was a regular visitor. I believe he was supplying kids for a lot of powerful people.*[185]

Just as Savile was entrusted by the pedo-saturated Thatcher government to keys to the pedo-kingdom's asylums, so was Smith. According to Jack Tasker:

> *Smith was a regular visitor to Buckley Hall Detention Centre, which was full of boys. He used to come and go as he pleased. People who worked there told me he had his own set of keys – not to the perimeter but to the interior. He used to come in, pick his keys up and wander around alone. He was allowed access to anywhere inside and could have anything he wanted.*[186]

So many striking parallels shared between this psychopathic Smith-Savile duo seem to run on indefinitely – all by sinister design of course. Protected by MI5, both were dominantly aggressive, larger-than-life figures creating a culture of sexual predation and exploitation around them that invited and enabled other pedophiles to operate safely within their social professional territory to get away with their flagrantly vile child sex crimes. A Rochdale HIV prevention specialist reported to the council that men as far away as Sheffield would come to Rochdale's Knowl View just to prey on young boys with learning disabilities. Smith's unprecedented clout and influence in Rochdale sheltered other pervs with the same deviant habits from run-ins with the law.[187] After all, they owned and relished touting their reputations as Godfathers. In effect, both Savile and Smith were co-opted as undercover pedo-operatives for UK security services to spread and expand the pedophilia network. And partially as a result, Rochdale became a pedo-haven for pedophile gangs flourishing in the city for decades (the out-of-control UK pedo-gangs covered exclusively in Chapter 27).

As untouchables, both Smith and Savile closely operated within UK's shared pedophile network together, playing "undercover" linkage roles throughout the care home and NHS system… another reason MI5 had both their backs and that each has been implicated in virtually every British scandal. Theresa May's Home Office controlled "dependent inquiry" lost whatever little credibility it had back in April 2018 when it concluded that no "deliberate cover-up" by Rochdale authorities was ever found and that police never quite had the goods on the beast.[188] Two boldface lies.

So let's do a quick recap on this over-bloated, dangerous asshole's history. For decades Smith had his way as the king of Rochdale abusers. He and a number of other VIP buddies like Sir Leon and Sir Jimmy reputedly raped boys procured by the murdering Sidney Cooke gang[189] at the Elm Guest House among several other locations.[190] Smith also hooked up with another notorious pedophile networker specializing in schools and care homes – Peter Righton.[191] Like his fellow high level cohorts Righton and Savile, Smith also took full advantage of possessing keys to countless youth facilities as an MI5 protected serial offender.

Cyril's diddling days likely started in the late 1950s when lads were observed frequently entering his business from the rear and placed him under surveillance according to CID Mike Smith.[192] At least three times Lancashire Police collected enough evidence to turn it over to CPS and put him away but as always, Britain's CPS aka Chief Pedophile Savior insisted never enough evidence.[193] Senior Liberals in his party knew he was a pedophile, yet said nothing.[194] Up till two years before Cyril's parliamentary career began, longtime Liberal Party leader Sir Jeremy Thorpe was Smith's friend and ally as a fellow raving child rapist.[195] Thorpe's successor David Steel also knew, yet it didn't stop him from promoting the child sodomizer for knighthood.[196] And with MI5 vetting, queenie - the royal pedophile rewarder - also had to know. Pedophilia has rule over and controlled Britain for a very long time.

Now you can see why in May 2013 the Greater Manchester Police (GPS) suddenly decided to abort an ongoing inquiry into Sir Cyril, declining to even take up the National Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children's (NSPCC) offer to assist in a joint fact-finding investigation into the prolific abusing Liberal chief party whip.[197] Though at the height of the Jimmy Savile revelations in late November 2012, GMP held a press conference announcing Smith was a prolific abuser who today would be prosecuted, requesting victims to contact police in Manchester's freshly opened police inquiry, seemingly all gung ho at the time to unravel the full truth.[198] Yet less than six months later, Manchester's enthusiasm to dig deeper was already spent or more like never genuine. With all that was publicly surfacing on Smith's crimes, the pedo-protecting GM Police were afraid what other bombshells might be unhinged. And unlike Yewtree, no sacrificial lambs of washed up celebs would be in the offing, only headliner MPs, lords and ministers at the heart of the pedophile saturated government would be exposed and the crime cabal simply could not permit that. So the GMP probe was suddenly a no-go, a most predictable outcome when it comes to UK police inspecting VIP pedo-scandals. If no stone was left unturned on all 29 stones of lard-ass Sir Cyril, the entire British pedophilic empire would have crumbled into ashes, VIP monsters would finally be rightfully rotting in their own prison hell on earth and the world would be a better, safer place for both children and adults alike.

Media efforts to explain this top criminal politician's longtime impunity typically also cite the politics of the day when a weak Conservative and then Labor Party strategically took turns courting Liberals to capture the coalition majority.[199] But again, it goes far deeper than fickle party politics. Britain’s encrusted pedophilia network consisting of establishment VIPs from every major party has always been immune from public exposure and accountability right from the start. There’s nothing new here. The evil fucks that are the elite powerbrokers on this earth have operated above all human-made laws as unreachable, untouchable, godlike creatures ruling over this planet for millenniums. The truth is that basic and simple.

Look no further than how the elite has managed to do it, utilizing mass media to maintain global idolatry toward the British (actually German Nazi) royal family and its personal history steeped in pedophilia, Freemasonry and Nazi-fascism. Their dark depraved truth has been carefully concealed by the international crime cabal’s media propaganda machine so that an adoring, misinformed public can continue fawning and marveling over their every move and latest baby bump tribalism. Quite a nice PR setup they got going to conceal their real history. As part of today’s celebrity worshipping culture, it provides titillating Soap Opera Theater designed to entice a duped masses into remaining blind over the controllers’ continual rape and pillage of both our babies and our earth. But more on the despicable royals’ story awaits in Chapter 30.

Speaking of masonic royalty, it’s worth mentioning that the queen’s hubby Prince Philip, 66 years a card carrying Freemason,[200] atop his expressed wish list is the demented desire to reincarnate as a killer virus to wipe out millions of people in the elite’s overpopulation hoax.[201] Looking into a crystal ball, the Duke of Edinburgh’s favorite number must be 666. The queen’s hubby and the queen’s cousin Prince Edward, current Duke of Kent, recently the former grand master of all UK Freemasonry,[202] personify the crown’s rule over the highest degrees of the masonic brotherhood worldwide, synonymous with New World Order Luciferianism.[203]

As such, the Freemasonry-Zionism nexus is heavily infiltrated and seamlessly embedded deep within the queen’s Commonwealth, particularly its justice system, police and security services all covertly tied to both proliferation of pedophile rings and their scandalously sealed cover-up.[204] At this point, we know all too well that the Luciferian matrix controllers have at their beck and call the global intelligence community as their private army of fanatical foot soldiers subversively, dutifully promoting worldwide pedophilia both covertly through child sex trafficking slavery and subliminally through mass media sleaze as mere lifestyle choice of the rich and famous in a “monkey see, monkey do” imprinting sequence.

Regarding the indelible MI5 presence on the London centerpiece scandal - the Elm Guest House, British intelligence services back in the late 1970s and early 1980s were reportedly hard at work partnering with the international Spartacus Club, catering to homosexual pedophiles on the prowl the world over, preying on boy victims within the larger global pedo-network.[205] Information on boy brothels worldwide, published in the Spartacus International publication was allegedly supplied by various intelligence blackmail operators - chiefly the CIA.[206]

One such promoter provides yet another key link between MI5 and the Elm Guest House boy brothel - John Rowe, the intelligence liaison who allegedly organized trips to Amsterdam for members of the ultra-right wing Conservative group known as the Monday Club, many of whom were reportedly also frequent Elm House guests.[207] MI5 operative John Rowe was largely responsible for trafficking British care home kids and rent boys to the world’s pedo-snuff center - the Netherlands.[208] As an infiltrating MI5 PIE member as well, this high-flying pedophiling secret agent man suggested the use of Spartacus Magazine to advertise Elm

Guest House. And when in London, Rowe's frequent houseguest from Amsterdam was none other than Spartacus commercial manager and pedo-party ringleader - South African Peter Glencross.[209]

These guys' perverse world vision planned to incorporate, expand and franchise the Elm Guest boy brothel model not just nationwide but far beyond.[210] Recall how Margaret Hodge and her pedovores infiltrating her and other boroughs and social services were proliferating into a far wider secret club network across the British Isles, a likely reason why Blair chose her as UK's first Children's Minister, to replicate her fine work in their old Islington stomping grounds throughout the world's pedo-epicenter Britain as the ruling elite's global beta test. These derelicts Rowe, Glencross, Stamford, Tricker among many others were the early "visionaries" laying the demonic groundwork for a pedophile ring coming to a neighborhood near you soon.

Along with pedo-pimp Terry Dwyer, John Rowe was instrumental in bringing the global pedophilia guide Peter Glencross and Carole Kasir together, resulting in Elm Guest House's shift away from serving the needs of just adult homosexuals to satiating the warped tastes of pedophile predators for its bread and butter with ample supply of gravy and a cherry on top.

It turns out that John Rowe has an older brother Michael Stuart **Ro**we whose gay partner **Ra**lph A. **W**illiams formed a company using parts of their names called RAWRO Investments Limited.[211] As the Elm Guest House "money men," RAWRO is on record paying for the installation of the sauna room at the Elm Guest House, its "state of the art" bondage toys and sophisticated videotaping system (for its early 80s time) as well as advertisements in the local gay paper *Capital Gay*. Michael Stuart Rowe often styled himself a wannabe Captain Michael Stuart Rowe or Captain Paul Rinehart, utilizing many fake names because at the time

Elm was busted, Michael was a 39-year old hustler out to make his fortune using the Elm Guest brand for marketing VIP pedo-parties sexually abusing trafficked in boys from local homes under Richmond council care.

After things went south at Elm, in later years Michael Stuart Rowe turned extremely litigious against business partners losing every lawsuit in the late 1980s and 90s, all ultimately thrown out of court. In one of his letters that found its way into court records, Michael Stuart Rowe claims at 8-years old he was sexually abused by his father and passed around papa's pedo-ring operating in the early 1950s, alluding to "scores to settle" by suing his father over his deceased mother's estate. Apparently his conscience can't be bothered to factor in all the suffering the many victims that his Elm House affiliation brought. Michael Stuart Rowe's name can be found online listed as both an officer for several now defunct corporations[212] as well as litigant in lawsuits.[213] Also Jonathon Patrick Rowe, alias John Rowe, born five years after Michael in 1948 and also listed as an officer in one of the same out-of-business companies that Michael ran, is ex-MI5 John Rowe currently comfortably retired in Australia. Both Rowe brothers appear to still be alive today. But likely not so well in view of their Elm Guest House misadventures' still unpaid karmic debt, apparently granted yet another free pass by the now defunct Operation Fairbridge. In the same way it isn't in the crime cabal's best interest to open up the Cyril Smith Pandora's box, neither is it the Elm Guest House. IICSA won't touch it that's for certain.

In between pimping duties via his own rent boy agency called Lord Fox, John Rowe's friend Terry Dwyer (aka Terry Allen) allegedly carried on a homosexual affair for two years with notorious Conservative Party MP Harvey Proctor.[214] But Dwyer proudly boasted that he also supplied his MP lover with up to six boys a week for his sensual pleasures.[215]

Lying to save his MP seat when more of his boy-toy victims kept emerging in the press, in 1987 the shamed Proctor came under increasing pressure to resign. A litany of S&M beating and spanking allegations from teenage and early 20s “schoolboys” eventually led to his downfall. Pretending to be their kinky headmaster, an overzealous Proctor would use a cane, slipper and his hand pummeling their bare ass bottoms for punishment, and then delight in taking snapshots of their welt-reddened asses for lusty nostalgic memory, which in court sealed his guilty verdict. Ultimately his multiple victims’ confessions caught up to Harvey, convicting him of four counts of gross indecency.[216] But with paying a modest fine of just £1,450,[217] the disgraced ex-MP avoided jail time.[218] So what else is new?

During the 1970s and 1980s when not immersed in scandal, Harvey Proctor was also a staunch member of the infamous Monday Club,[219] the same clique alleged to take young boys on holiday excursions to Amsterdam, compliments of MI5 buddy John Rowe and others like Russell Ticker. Unsurprisingly, MP Proctor was also reportedly an Elm Guest House regular. Chris Fay, former campaigner for the National Association of Young People in Care (NAYPIC), based on conversations with Carole Kasir between 1988 to 1990, stated that he observed Harvey Proctor’s name on her guest list.[220] Though that original list may have disappeared as a result of several police raids intended to eliminate every trace of VIP Elm House abuse, an online handwritten version posted by Fay’s colleague Mary Moss prior to her house raid fortunately remains.[221]

Additionally, similar to Proctor’s fellow Tory MP Portillo (covered in last chapter), the scandal-prone former politician Harvey was also apparently on record as a frequent holiday guest in Morocco’s North African neighbor Tunisia, arrested after a naked Arab boy was discovered hiding under his bed.[222]

In 1988 fresh out of Parliament and knowing what he knew about the illicit sex lives of the Westminster rich and famous, Proctor convinced over a dozen of his political cronies to contribute sizeable investments in his brand new business enterprise, the colorful kinkster's newly opened fancy shirt shop at a couple of posh locations only to have them go belly up a dozen years later with several buddies "losing their shirts" up to £100,000.[223] In the post-Savile Operations Midland and Fernbridge investigating Parliamentary pedophiles, more victims came forth to claim Proctor had abused them at sex parties in the 1980s. A source close to the 2014 police inquiry reported to the *Mirror* that:

> *Proctor's name has repeatedly been mentioned by at least two alleged victims. He is going to be of key interest.*[224]

In March 2015 Proctor's residence was raided and he was questioned under caution.[225] But no doubt emboldened by Lord McAlpine and Cliff Richard's legal successes at overturning and suppressing past pedophilic associations and winning millions for their stress in a pedo-cabal pushback, in May 2018 as a distraught, self-confessed depressive, the 71-year old Proctor filed a libel lawsuit for £1 million against the Scotland Yard and his main accuser "Nick" who was conveniently outed by the establishment as an alleged fraud and is currently facing a criminal trial that in one fell swoop strangely wipes away all other countless victims' legit allegations over the years. Apparently their accusations don't mean jack shit against all VIP pedophiles, fully insulated and protected by the corrupt, rigged UK legal system that effectively guarantees the national cover-up policy continues infinitum.[226]

Back in 1987 when MP Proctor was enflamed in scandal, his onetime lover-boy procurer Terry Dwyer also ran into his own legal difficulties as owner-operator of an illegal London gay club-massage parlor where both drugs and rent boy sex were served on a platter as the main attraction.[227] But shortly after Dwyer's bust and conviction, appeal court judges in 1988 freed him on the technicality that his first trial judge was alleged to allow inadmissible evidence, thus granting the pimping druggie-pedophile his freedom.[228] You think Dwyer's deep anal connections to Parliament, MI5 and their massive global pedo-ring just may have something to do with his overly-lenient brush with the law?

As long as we're still on the topic of disgraced former MP Harvey Proctor, as a bona fide Monday Clubber, that ultra-Conservative group begun in 1961 as a Le Cercle offshoot that remained a loyal supporter of Apartheid South Africa and is still big on repatriating immigrants back to their ancestral homes,[229] Proctor and another prominent MP and Monday Club member Sir Peter Bottomley landed on Elm House guest lists and as such, their indelible connection to the London-Amsterdam pedophile network lives on. Of course Harvey Proctor made claims he never even heard of the Elm Guest House[230] and former Tory minister and longtime Worthing MP Sir Bottomley in recent years threatened to sue over his name associated with any pedophile ring.[231] But like it or not, links between the nightmare on Elm and Monday Club's rent boy trips to the child porn capital across the Channel linger on… sorry Sir.

Though Derek Laud hasn't shown up on any Rocks Lane party guest list yet, this sometime Dolphin Square resident and longtime Tory Party fixture as fixer, advisor, lobbyist, Iron Lady speechwriter, friend of Lady Camilla Duchess of Cornwall, 2005 Big Brother contestant and sadistic pedophile-VIP child procuring monster[232] has been named the first black member of the Monday Club[233] as well as the first non-white Master of Foxhounds in New Forest, Dame Esther's pedo-hunting grounds… a regular modern Renaissance man with a pathologically dark pedo twist. Derek's name will resurface again as a headliner in Chapter

29, per a *Scallywag Magazine* article exposing the kiddie mover and shaker in the North Wales pedophilia scandal.[234] As of late, Derek's been laying low in South Africa, distancing himself from the Monday Club, his Conservative Party and criminally shameful past that's yet to catch up to him.

A couple of other Monday Clubbers[235] also on the nightmare at Elm's guest list include Peter Campbell and Richard Miles.[236] Peter Campbell died in 2011 at age 78. The Reading University professor, author and founding chairman of the Conservative Group for Homosexual Equality (CGHE) was glowingly written up as some kind of pioneering gay rights hero in an obit-*Telegraph* fluff piece,[237] conveniently overlooking his pedophilic tendencies and criminal misbehavior. Also unmentionable was the fact his personally edited CGHE newsletter "strongly recommended" visits to the infamous Barnes boy brothel.[238] Also omitted were the child porn videos graphically depicting boys being raped and tortured made and distributed at the very same Elm Guest House he patronized. *Exaro News* obtained a copy of Campbell's newsletter with a handwritten note scrawled by pedo-Prof Peter asking:

I have now inserted the entry about the hotel but can't find the text about the Dutch venture – could you please let me have another copy?[239]

"The Dutch venture" refers to the frequent Amsterdam trips child sex traffickers like MI5's John Rowe was coordinating for members of the Monday Club like Peter Campbell, Harvey Proctor and the rest of the gay preying, London to Amsterdam "boy-lovers."

In the June 1982 raid of the Elm Guest House, Carole Kasir had her and Harry's 10-year old son Eric and daughter by a previous marriage taken away and placed in Richmond social services care homes, not exactly the safest places for youth. Two years before she died in 1990, Carole's psychiatrist referred her to two child protection officers, NAYPIC's Mary Moss and Chris Fay, for assistance trying to advocate getting her son back, strategically withheld in the UK Care System as a control mechanism to keep Carole quiet for the last eight years. The elite was growing nervous over how far Carole might go to "spilling the beans." In meetings with Carole, she'd haul out a thick cardboard box filled with her personal papers, legal documents, letters, receipts, her diary, plus near two dozen known photographs and guest lists pertaining to her Elm House and its VIP clientele, calling it her "life insurance."

Though Carole stubbornly refused to hand over any of the material, posted internet copies of handwritten notes jotted down by Mary and Chris include a list of alleged guest house attendees compiled during a series of meetings over many months with Carole Kasir prior to her "accidental" death. Eventually gaining Carole's trust, Mary Moss was given copies of some highly revealing pertinent documents. Towards the end, Chris finally was able to convince Carole to at least share photocopies of her VIP party pics. All the while, Special Branch had Chris, Mary and Carole under very close surveillance. But the day Chris Fay arranged to pick up the photos, Carole Kasir was suddenly found dead.

Testifying at Carole Kasir's inquest, Chris Fay and Mary Moss, a private investigator and host of other witnesses including Carole's longtime doctor all emphasized blatant anomalies surrounding her death, questioning the cabal-puppet coroner Dr. John Burton's official narrative - death by suicide. No doubt based on the coroner's sterling performance at this sham of a death inquiry, Queen Elizabeth promoted him to coroner of the Queen's Household[240] so that 7 years later the murdering royals had a "safe pair of hands" to make certain the Princess Diana-Dodi Al-Fayed assassination could be written off as pure accident. Similarly, Jill Dando's fiancé

Dr. Farthing a few years after she was out of the way gets promoted to the queen's doctor. Once you prove yourself a trusted member of the cabal's "inner pedo-club," you're suddenly promoted to the royal household or bestowed knighthood… a constant pattern.

A number of witnesses insisted that Carole Kasir's two alleged suicide notes were fake, clearly not in her own handwriting. Only her drug dealing, addicted hustler boyfriend David Issett signed off on her note as authentic. But that's all that was needed for the state's official bogus conclusion - suicide by insulin overdose.

This convenient false verdict defies a number of flagrant inconsistencies. The only syringe mark on Kasir's entire body found on her ass cheek was determined to be three days old, defying all laws of science to stay alive and then fatally overdose three days later. It's the same impossible absurdity as a "suicide" with two bullet holes in the head. Also those who knew her best insist that Carole always injected herself in her arm, never her butt. Because the cabal's hired "faithful hand" was running into vehement opposition from the inquest peanut gallery, he adjourned the inquest for two weeks per Chris Fay allegedly pending the outcome of ordered lab tests.

But without mentioning lab results steady hands reconvened, barring all contentious witnesses, sneaking through his blatant order-following verdict. By the time the inquest conclusion was announced, the UK press had once again been muzzled with a D-notice silencing the truth that Carole was yet another assassination victim for simply knowing too much (like so many before and after her), deemed too risky a threat of bringing down the pedo-cabal.[241] Only Canadian and Japanese news broadcasters approached Chris Fay for an alternative POV to counter the state's official cover-up lie.

Shortly before Fernbridge was closed, the Met police told MP Tom Watson that all the Kasir inquest papers had been destroyed.[242] Yet a year after the Elm Guest House investigation ended, it was learned the police claim of destroyed inquest documents proved [once again] false. It seems lots of misinformation about Carole Kasir's been fed into the propaganda machine, like she was never born in Germany under the name Weichman as had always been reported, but born Carole Linda Jones in West Riding, Yorkshire, England.[243] "Destroyed" documents found in November 2017 indicate her own GP doctor for 14 years concluded she did not commit suicide. Nor did the toxicology report even bother checking for contents in her stomach or any of the syringes or vials placed at the crime scene.

This newfound evidence uncovered over a year ago had campaigners and even MP Andrew Brigden demanding a new inquest.[244] Despite it looking even more obvious that Kasir was murdered, these new revelations failed to either reopen Fernbridge or impact the ongoing "official" independent inquiry in any discernable way, reinforcing the common knowledge that both police and government investigations into themselves and their criminal role in cover-up has never been about pursuit of any real truth or justice. The IICSA won't even touch the Elm House scandal, nor Northern Ireland's Kincora, both for the all too obvious reason that the pedo-cabal would be exposed wide open and come tumbling down.

In view of this latest development, a source close to the original aborted police investigation of Elm Guest House back in the early 1980s had this to say:

I don't think there's any doubt this place [Elm Guest House] *is at the centre of things.*[245]

Immediately following Carole’s 1990 murder, over the next three months, Chris and Mary attempted to set the public record straight, feeling certain Kasir’s untimely fate was the result of foul play. As such, they along with other witnesses and even Elm House abuse victims were threatened and intimidated by Special Branch officers applying undue pressure to keep their mouths shut or else.[246] And based on Carole’s fate, it was perfectly clear what the “or else” meant. Fay recalls the horrific stress that the government henchmen - thugs that they are - put him and others through, no different from how the Mafia and Kosher Nostra operate:

> *At one point they had me up against a wall by my throat with a gun at my head telling me in no uncertain terms that I was to back away if I knew what was good for me. A colleague of mine* [Mary] *had the same treatment, as did a number of the volunteers. Victims who were actually abused at Elm House were also physically stopped from coming to speak to us at the NAYPIC office in North London. I witnessed Special Branch officers manhandling them and turning them away with a warning to keep their mouths shut. It was blatant, it was open, they were acting like gangsters. In the end we had to meet victims at a local community centre without the knowledge of the police to hear what they had to say. NAYPIC was given the identities of senior politicians who formed part of an alleged paedophile ring at the heart of government. I was told by the police implicitly, ‘We do not want you to come to us with big names.’*[247]

As an exclamation point for dramatic effect, three bullet holes were shot through Chris’s kitchen window.[248] In all, Chris Fay stated that he worked with and knew as many as 11 Grafton Close victims of VIP abuse at the Elm Guest House. The Scotland Yard reported that a dozen underage boys were on file after the raid accusing VIPs at the Elm Guest House of criminal abuse.[249] Chris Fay’s account witnessing the ruthless cover-up firsthand appears authentic. One can easily see why the criminal elite felt compelled to attack Chris Fay's credibility by attaining a 2011 fraud conviction to smear his name and reputation.[250] Fay also maintains that according to Carole Kasir, the Elm Guest House raid on June 19, 1982 was carried out by a unit of spooks attached to Special Branch called Special Patrol Group, not the regular Metro police that had the premises under surveillance for several months prior to the raid. Shortly before the goon squad's assault on Elm, the Met investigation was abruptly shut down. In Chris Fay's words:

The police say it was done by a local force, but I know it was done by Special Branch.[251]

In a highly informative interview filmed in September 2013, Chris Fay offers his take on the Elm Guest House scandal-cover-up with tenacious anti-child abuse advocate, onetime child abuse victim and Pie and Mash filmmaker Bill Maloney.[252] Chris maintains that Carole was given a one day advance notice of the planned raid by a Sinn Fein leader that went by the name of Gary Walker, who even offered fake passports if the Kasirs needed to urgently leave the country. In an April 2014 article the *Daily Mail* also mentions "figures from the National Front and Sinn Fein" were patrons at the Elm Guest House.[253] It's also been reported that Sinn Fein President and MP Gerry Adams whose father and younger brother Liam, Gerry's onetime Sinn Fein underling, were both confirmed pedophiles.[254] If a Sinn Fein leader partied at Elm, it very likely was Liam, convicted years later of raping his own daughter from age 4 to 11. His deteriorating marriage, his final years abusing his young daughter and separation from his ex-wife all coincided with the years he probably ended up at the Elm Guest House operation. MI5 at both Kincora and Elm Guest House took full advantage using underage boys as honey trap blackmail currency to control IRA leaders.[255] This fact will be confirmed in detail in Chapter 28 covering the Kincora scandal.

If it’s true, that key figure(s) from the Irish Republican Army in 1982 at the bloody height of the Northern Ireland-UK conflict were involved in the same sex orgies abusing boys at parties right alongside UK’s Home Office Minister Leon Brittan as part of an MI5 sexual blackmail operation in South West London, with 60 Special Branch officers invading the boy brothel under the Terror Act of 1976, it has to be a cover-up of the highest priority, a top secret humdinger, forever destined by the pedo-elite to remain permanently buried deep in illusory ashes of the dustbin graveyard of all cover-up graveyards. But the truth has a resilient way of resurrecting itself to bite the criminal deceivers and life destroyers right between their sinful loins, regardless of cabal efforts to squirm, dodge, suppress and escape both public exposure and its unpaid massive, soul-killing karmic debt.

In December 2013 a police insider working the case back in 1982 made this poignant observation:

The real unlawful activity was underage sex. The police should have been able to make the other charges stick, but the boys were only ever interviewed with a view to them being witnesses against Carole, not as kids who were abused themselves.[256]

In other words, law enforcement never had any intention of going after the VIP pedophiles, only using the child victims as witnesses to hang a minimal “dirty house” conviction on Carole and Harry Kasir while grabbing her kids to keep the Kasirs from outing the diabolical operation that would’ve brought down the entire British Establishment.

Interesting to note that the media never covered the raid until 50 days after the fact. But once the 50 days had passed since the Special Branch busted the Elm Guest

House, from August 7-17, 1982 virtually every national newspaper in the UK covered the Elm House scandal daily. Yet after the 17th, with the exception of only the local gay pro-pedo paper the *Capital Gay* running a story on the Kasir trial outcome in 1983 and limited coverage of Carole Kasir's "accidental" 1990 death, no press dared touch the Elm Guest House for the next 30 years until autumn 2012. For years the nation's most disturbing, biggest sex scandal in British history, cutting straight into and through the heart of the government, has been effectively silenced by a massive media blackout in order to propagate the nation's biggest, unending, top-down cover-up of all time. The media's been complicit in this criminal operation as well.

Though the Elm House scandal from 1982 to 2012 was kept virtually secret from the public, in 2014 it was learned that in November 2002 Tony Blair's Home Secretary David Blunkett received a letter from a whistleblowing trade union official specifying that Elm House was used as a boy brothel by VIP politicians in the early 1980s.[257] Of course in 2002 the Blair government was busy with its own pedophile scandals to cover-up - between Lords Janner, Boatteng and Mandelson. To Blunkett's credit, he did write back saying he was referring the matter to his own Home Office which three weeks later replied that it was turning the matter over to the Deputy Prime Minister John Prescott's office, which in turn urged the whistleblower to communicate his complaints to Richmond's Local Government Ombudsman, which in turn directed him to take the matter up with the police. And of course as always, the police did nothing.

So there you have it. See how impossible it is in the UK to get any real results reporting child abuse - past or present? As is typical of bureaucracy, child abuse and cover-ups, everyone gives you the runaround and in the end, no one takes responsibility and nothing ever gets done. What's more is that child abuse scandals and their political perps have always been open secrets. No doubt many of the 650 members of Parliament know exactly who the child sodomizers among them are, just like the US Congress. Remember the party whips' little black books? It's all used as a control mechanism. All of this only goes to show that most politicians just don't give a shit if poor kids in their own country (much less another) are being used and abused, tortured and killed. The facts speak for themselves.

To come full circle, the primary source of the Westminster VIP victims at the Elm Guest House came from Grafton Close Care Home that the Richmond authorities saw fit to close the same year the state decided to close out Carole Kasir's life. Both buildings at the center of this scandal - Grafton and Elm - were quickly converted to private flats as if - out of sight, out of mind - the horror story from the early 1980s never really happened. If walls could talk, living in either home would be hard not to listen… as disturbing as the messages would be.

The *Daily Express* first broke the Elm Guest House story on August 7, 1982 with the headline "Security Alert over New Vice Scandal." The article references a police investigation uncovering the involvement of:

> *At least three MPs, a member of staff at Buckingham Palace, and leading lawyers, doctors and City businessmen have been questioned during inquiries.*[258]

The *Express* stated that undercover police had identified 30 prominent men caught up in illegal vice activities and that security services were concerned with:

> *Fears that some of the men involved might have been subjected to blackmail.*[259]

Bingo! That's the whole name of the game and reason why MI5 set up the Elm House operation to begin with. *Capital Gay* magazine ran an article stating that the Scotland Yard was vehemently, predictably disputing the security "fears," denying that VIPs were involved at all.[260] While lawyers representing the Kasirs were threatening libel suits, Attorney General Sir Michael Havers receptively pledged that he would look into potential violations by the “sensational” press. Worried about lawsuits, all media coverage suddenly plunged to zero after the 17th of August. Obviously, the brothel owners, the police, security services and VIP pedophiles in government, churches, high courts and entertainment all collectively have a vested interest in covering up their criminality. From the very beginning decades ago to the present, nothing has changed.

The pedophilia establishment in Britain is the only candidate possessing both unlimited means and by far the most motivation for such an extensive, unprecedented cover-up. On the other hand, with all the flack and grief heaped upon the accusers, they have the least to show or gain from honestly and bravely coming forth to report their traumas to the authorities. Other than one victim-complainant secretly receiving an undisclosed compensation as an obvious hush money payoff from Richmond council, there’s been no record of any other Elm Guest House abuse victim who has ever gained financially.[261] So with the detective’s proverbial “means and motive” test, the only clear winner in the Elm Guest House debacle are the VIP pigs who’ve gotten away with raping and sodomizing scores of innocent young boys. No one else has anything to gain from their respective involvement at Elm or Grafton, least of all those who maintain that abuse occurred.

The August 1982 media also reported that the police inquiry had begun three months earlier in May although based on firsthand neighborhood accounts, police surveillance began long before a month prior to the June raid. The last line in the *Express* alludes to all the evidence and statements being compiled would soon be sent to their go-to DPP cover-upper Sir Thomas Hetherington, who as alluded earlier was another queen knighted gatekeeper protecting the pedo-queendom from 1976 to 1987, systematically covering up evidence of abuse while refusing to prosecute notorious VIP child rapists like Cyril Smith, Jimmy Savile and Leon Brittan.

The breaking *Express* article also compared the Elm Guest House debauchery to the 1889 boy brothel scandal located at 19 Cleveland Street in West London, where homosexual princes, earls and dukes from the aristocratic class were busted paying for sex with teenage messenger boys from the Royal Post Office.[262] But the criminals from the privileged class all escaped prosecution, never spending one day in jail while the sexually exploited underage rent boys were each given 4-9 months hard labor sentences.[263] Even the journalist who uncovered the truth exposing the elite's guilty sodomizers was sued, convicted of libel and sentenced to a year of hard prison labor. Clearly the Cleveland scandal set the precedent for what was to come, establishing the British historic tradition of protecting criminal sickos from the royal family and elitist class at the expense of punishing their underage victims and truth tellers a full century in advance of the Elm House Westminster scandal. In traditional Britain, some things never change.

Time for another "lost" dossier tale. In 1984 the pedo-establishment encountered another incriminating file that fell into the lap of respected *Bury Messenger* newspaper editor Don Hale.[264] As if being responsible for losing/destroying MP Geoffrey Dickens' as well as Scotland Yard's dossiers doesn't make Leon Brittan guilty enough of massive criminal cover-up, the pedophile Home Office Secretary successfully eliminated a third dossier containing compelling evidence that Labor peer and former cabinet secretary Barbara Castle handed over to Don Hale as well. When she brought Don the explosive documents, she explained that he was not her first choice as editor of the relatively small newspaper. But since it was her local paper and she trusted Don, in his recollected words:

She was saying, 'I've been everywhere else, I've been to the nationals, nobody would touch it with a barge pole, but what do you think?' As a journalist of course I was interested. Barbara never said he [Brittan] *was a pedophile, she was just very, very hostile about him. 'He's the last person you want this to go to,' she said, which inferred that he was somehow involved.*[265]

In his 2015 *Daily Beast* interview, the longtime, highly respected editor unveiled his sad yet unsurprising story of how Special Branch detectives forcibly removed yet more incriminating files from Hale's office that again outed a number of VIP pedophiles operating at the heart of the British government. Don Hale had perused through the dossier just long enough to realize that Sir Leon was more than aware of the Westminster pedophile ring:

[Brittan] *was mentioned in everything you picked up, his fingerprints were over everything, he was the instigator.*[266]

Don Hale's first angry visitor arrived the next morning, all 400+ pounds of the Parliament icon Cyril Smith barged into Hale's office less than 24 hours after Barbara Castle had dropped off her potentially damaging bombshell. News through the pedo-secret service grapevine travels faster than the speed of British history's fattest politician, but not by much. The editor described how Sir Cyril Smith charged at him screaming:

He was frothing at the mouth and really shouting and spitting in my face. He was straight at me like a raging lion; he was ready to knock me through the wall. He said to me quite clearly, 'I know who's given you this, it's Barbara Castle.' I wouldn't say who it was, but it was pretty obvious he knew. He's a hell of a sized guy, he's over six feet tall

> *and he’s huge; took up three seats. He’s not a guy you could deal with easily, he was a horror.*[267]

Though Don Hale valiantly defied the big man’s threats and demands, refusing to hand over the papers, the following morning three vehicles pulled up and a belligerent squad of 15 Special Branch officers burst into the newspaper offices with both a search warrant and D-notice. Two of them pushed Don up against the wall similar to Chris Fay’s Special Branch episode in order to retrieve what Cyril couldn’t the day before. The government thugs insisted that the files were stolen property belonging to Home Office and they promised to arrest Hale should he breathe a word. Again, in his own long-awaited words:

> *These bully boys come storming in, they said, ‘We’re not here to negotiate. Hand them over or we’ll arrest you now.’ I couldn’t argue, because as soon as you opened the files it had got ‘Not to be removed’, ‘Confidential’ and ‘For your eyes only’—all these sort of things on them. I wouldn’t have had a hope in hell legally. I would have ended up in prison and the story would have gone nowhere.*[268]

More than three decades later, after Metro Police Service found abuse survivors’ allegations of systematic torture and sexual assault fully credible, Don Hale finally could lift the lid on what he was privy to, confirming not only that top level politicians, high ranking police officers, spies, judges, members of the royal palace household and entertainers were child raping criminals but that a major cover-up of the first order has remained tightly in place ever since.

Don Hale maintains that the 1984 dossier that Barbara Castle gave him was comprised of detailed Home Office files that definitively prove that Brittan as head of the internal pedo-investigation took what one might say an extremely active, self-serving role throughout the process, the exact opposite of his later initial denial and then vague, nondescript public accounting of any dossier placed in his possession:

> *He really had his finger on the pulse, he wanted to know everything about it; all the documents were cc'd back to Leon Brittan or it was an instruction directly from Leon Brittan.*[269]

Don Hale asserts that the dosser exposed 16 MPs from both the House of Commons and Lords and about 30 high ranking notables from the Church of England, private schools and major corporations as all being active PIE members.[270] With the ridiculously strict UK libel laws, Hale knew he could not publicly out these pedophiles but planned to report that the Home Office was in the process of investigating these individuals which would have placed Brittan's office on notice that the public awaits his results.

MI5 and MI6 always relied on the Metro's now defunct Special Branch to carry out "undercover" dirty work in order to maintain their plausible deniability M.O. in keeping a safe public distance from revealing what really goes on at the seedy underbelly of power.[271] The June 19, 1982 "police" raid on MI5's Elm Guest House blackmail operation was no different. A media blackout went into immediate effect at the time of the raid lasting nearly two months, undoubtedly so authorities could destroy as much confiscated evidence as possible, lining up all their ducks in a row for the media to downplay both Elm's importance and police findings.

Contrary to the major media coverage that began on August 7, 1982 and spanned the next 10 days, the purpose of the raid conveniently fell under "national security" auspices via the Prevention of Terrorism Act of 1976, having zero to do with it being a vice raid or rescuing child victims or prevention of further harm to children. As such, the raid was intentionally timed to net a minimal number of criminals as no boys from Grafton Close Home were even present in the house despite it being a Saturday night when normally the sex parties would be in full swing. The Special Patrol Group, the unit within Special Branch, carried out the raid that automatically carried a gag order prohibiting press coverage. Bottom line, the raid was never meant to protect children but simply to protect liability of VIP pedo-criminals from any and all accountability. Too many incriminating photos and video evidence were still at-large and in full damage control mode, the controllers desperately moved in to cap any further risk of leaked exposure to the public, confiscating on site lots of compromising photographs, guest lists, whips, chains, ropes and stockpiles of child pornographic material in obscene photos as well as videos.

When Elm Guest House was ransacked by the 60-men strong raiding party with flashing lights in the night, it created such a public stir and spectacle for residents on and near the Barnes Common.[272] During its early 1980s heyday, neighbors of the Elm Guest House were painfully aware of the sex orgies and strange happenings associated with that notorious guest house. Novelist Jilly Cooper who was a frequent dog walker on the Barnes Common described the night of the house raid in one of her books:

We then had lots more lurid details about vicars and MPs caught 'in flagrante,' running out of the brothel into the night in their underpants.[273]

Obviously it was common knowledge Elm was a house of sodomizing ill repute. A teenage girl told her mother that while passing by the place one night, she observed through open curtained windows a bunch of naked men cavorting about inside.[274] The neighborhood was also aware of the unmarked police van with the cameras carrying out surveillance. Another neighbor pointed out that the police presence was all too obvious:

They were there all the time. Police hiding behind the trees to look at the property was a running joke with the neighbours.[275]

The Barnes brothel was drawing increasing unwanted attention leading to growing tensions within the community from worried neighbors who knew that children were being abused inside the three story dwelling at 27 Rocks Lane by the men in all the fancy cars constantly seen coming and going.[276] As an open secret that young boys were routinely brought in to be sexually abused by older well-dressed men, numerous complaints were lodged with local representatives at Richmond council but seemingly to no avail. After many weeks of neither lifting a finger to stop the rampant pedophilia crimes nor respond to the community's mounting concerns, local authorities were coming under increasing pressure to intervene, ultimately forcing Special Branch's hand to execute its raid.

Bottom line, MI5's sleaze racket of sexual blackmail operations had become such a public nuisance in Barnes as potentially explosive liability risking VIP exposure, if it got out publicly, it would've undoubtedly brought down the Thatcher government. MI5 and Special Branch were frantically pressed into action. The Elm Guest House was raided with the intent of securing as much incriminating evidence as possible, tying up loose ends that otherwise threatened to destroy the British Establishment.

At the time future prominent Labor MP Keith Vaz happened to be the Richmond council solicitor running for Parliament in that same Richmond and Barnes district. Years later when asked on Twitter if he'd heard anything about the Elm Guest House affair, he succinctly answered "no." Yet just days after the infamous raid and over a month prior to the national publicity onslaught, Keith Vaz was quoted in the local *Richmond & Barnes Times* reacting to the community's growing fears for the safety of its women and children:

> *The police have to show a real presence on the common. It may be that they are opposed to vigilante groups but it is not unnatural for people who feared for their safety to protect themselves to do so. It is a terrible indictment on the authorities that people may have to do so.*[277]

Doesn’t it seem a bit odd that the Richmond MP candidate would be so on top of the dangers and urgent need for greater police protection for his neighborhood constituents, to the extent that he was publicly promoting vigilantism, yet remains completely oblivious to the horrific crimes being committed against children just days after the “big bust” that was the then talk of the town, not to mention the coming national media hype weeks later?

This is the same man who less than a decade later in 1991 publicly defended his mentor and longtime pedophile Lord Greville Janner, claiming on the Commons floor that Janner was “the victim of a cowardly and wicked attack” while near two dozen of his victims had provided sufficient evidence for Leicestershire police to prosecute,[278] especially after Janner’s feeble “no comment” response to police questioning.[279] Clearly Vaz helped “convince” police and CPS to drop the case against his child abusing friend. And then in 2016, Vaz the hypocrite was caught red-handed embroiled in a rent boy sex scandal of his own,[280] exposed for desperately trying to bribe his two rent boys on a promise he’d “fly them around the world.”[281] Hypocrisy is Keith Vaz’s middle name. While ruling over committee legislation on Class A drugs and vice prostitution, from his near .5£m “sex shack” a mere half mile from his over 2£m family home, the married father of two was busily calling his rent boys to make sure their upcoming rendezvous included plenty of cocaine and poppers for his next adulterous, paid for sodomy services.[282]

On top of that bombshell, according to a commenter on the *aangirfan* website, after Vaz was elected as Leicester East MP in 1987, hired movers transporting his personal belongings to London found under his mattress a copy of Spartacus Magazine, Iron Boy and other homosexual pedophile child pornography.[283]

Meanwhile under a longstanding House of Commons ethical standards probe over his rent boy romp, Keith Vaz has used the exact same evasive and “cowardly” tactic as his pedophile mentor when Janner avoided prosecution for decades of serial child sex abuse claiming the last couple years of his life that he was too ill from dementia, all the while actively participating in the House of Lords right up to his decrepit end.[284] And just like his derelict Jewish buddy from Leicester West, the longest running Asian MP from

Leicester East has maintained he also is “too ill” to answer for his ethical standards violations while photographed with big smiles regularly attending party functions around the globe.[285]

As of February 2018 the corrupt politician nicknamed “Vaz-eline” may be facing yet a new police probe having to answer an Unexplained Wealth Order, amassing more than a £4m property empire that allegedly includes 8 homes in UK alone with more in India on a less than £75,000 annual MP salary.[286]

While chairman of the powerful Home Affairs select committee for a decade and a half, his committee’s website posted online the full names of four abuse victims testifying before the IICSA, breaking the law by grossly violating their confidentiality, resulting in their death threats from abusers.[287] As the 15-year gatekeeping leader of the parliamentary committee that holds sway over police investigations into child sex abuse, this ultra-friendly pedo-protector no doubt has the dirty lowdown on the entire British VIP pedo-establishment. For that reason alone, his nonstop scandals never seem to stick to this Vaz-eline greased Teflon man. To this very day the disgraced pervert has managed to retain his permanent Leicester seat in Parliament, currently serving on the “Justice” Committee while living his life of luxury as an “untouchable.”[288] Sound eerily familiar to the Cyril Smith saga?

Recall how UK’s pedophile Prime Minister Ted Heath’s chief whip - Tim Fortescue - admitted in a 1995 interview that party leaders in the British government regularly bail out fellow MPs with pedophilia problems by using their cover-up protection as blackmail leverage to manipulate and control pedo-politicians to vote their way forevermore. Scum at the top of all major Western governments use their inside knowledge of their peers’ pathological crimes as a form of insurance protection vis-a-vis former Congressman Anthony

Weiner’s laptop file he titled under his “life insurance.”[289] In other words, the child raping insiders are well aware of each other’s deviant criminality and as long as their dirty secrets stay safe with them, all remain mutually protected in their own demonic VIP sicko club way.

In the case of MP Keith Vaz, if all his corrupt, perverse scandals ultimately result in his peers demanding his resignation, because his reign of power as longtime Home Affairs chairman afforded him full access gathering the dirt on virtually all the VIP establishment’s illicit bad habits, parliamentary members with much to hide know that Vaz would not hesitate to throw them all under the bus exposing their illegal embarrassing secrets as well. So in effect, Keith Vaz is able to hold on to his permanent “safe” seat in Westminster because it would be suicidal for any of his fellow perverts to try and eject him… exactly the same identical dynamic that kept Sir Cyril Smith securely in power throughout his 82 years on earth.

In April 2014 more sleaze in UK’s other major party was revealed when a high ranking Conservative source admitted that all the dirt on MPs (primarily pedophilia), meticulously recorded by party whips in their infamous “black books” up till 2010 were destroyed for fear that the public would find out how criminally sick their leaders are through Freedom of Information requests.[290] So in this era of social media, to prevent leaks and bread crumb trails of incriminating evidence, in the current decade the sleaze is all handled strictly through verbal communication only.

In 2014 amidst the ongoing police investigations of Operations Fernbridge and Midland delving into the political elite’s historic child abuse, fresh new revelations have erupted. Tory MP Mark Menzies was busted for rent boy sex with an underage Brazilian and David Cameron’s government was under fire. Amongst MPs and lords, a rising wave of drunken sexual passes, sexual harassment and sexual assaults were being perpetrated against underage staffers, party aides and researchers. Plus sex orgies at tax paid expense uncovered at annual party conference hotels were the latest scandals rocking Westminster.[291] One young victim disclosed how pathologically entitled those in power are:

> *A lot of MPs think they have almost got a right to try it on with junior staff, male or female. They are almost affronted if the staff don't go along with it.*[292]

All this filth in recent years only demonstrates that child abuse never ceased after the 1970s and 80s but only continues to this day among the degenerate VIPs atop the British government.

This diabolical political system doesn't just protect high level criminals from all accountability, it also rewards them. A classic illustration is Sir Peter Morrison, the Tory MP from Chester (1974-1992) and Thatcher's Parliamentary Private Secretary (PPC). The homosexual pedophile was repeatedly caught sexually abusing boys but merely cautioned with police warnings. Morrison was implicated in the North Wales scandal as well as at both Dolphin Square and Elm Guest House. Despite Thatcher's bodyguard Barry Strevens warning her Morrison and so many of her top lieutenants were pedophiles, in 1990 she made Sir Peter her campaign manager anyway. The serial child predator was protected right up to his 1995 fatal heart attack and then even further protected three years later when in 1998 his public toilet cottaging with young boys was covered up.[293] That year an editor and a reporter from the *Mirror* were onto Morrison but tried in vain to acquire a copy of the child rapist's arrest record as law enforcement ensured it was blocked. It took until 2002, 7 years after his death, before Sir Peter was finally exposed publicly as yet another monster atop

London’s pedo-paradise government and not till 2012 as a North Wales pedo-ring abuser.[294]

Where you have the queen, the prime minister and law enforcement actively going out of their way to both shield and reward deranged VIPs recklessly living out their sick perversions above the law till death do them part, you have Great Britain, the pedophilia epicenter of the world.

Former Thatcher health minister and pedo-gatekeeper MP Edwina Currie made a July 24, 1990 entry in her diary, yet waited 22 years later before making it public, saving her juicy tidbit quote below to boost her book sales:

> *Peter Morrison has become the PM’s PPS. Now he’s what they call ‘a noted pederast’,’ with a liking for young boys; he admitted as much to Norman Tebbitt when he became deputy chairman of the party, but added, ‘However, I’m very discreet’ – and he must be!*[295]

It takes one to know one. Jewish pedo-princess Edwina who carried on a four year adulterous affair with PM John Major in the 1990s not only signed off on handing the Broadmoor keys over to lunatic predator Savile to take over the asylum, but as of January 2014 Currie herself stands accused of child sexual abuse by then 45-year old Andrew Ash. Ferried down from his care home in Northern England to London’s VIP sex parties, Andrew told the *Express* that a drunken female MP (later implicated to be Currie[296]) was laughing while goaded by peers into sexually assaulting him when he was 13 at one of their many pedo-orgies.[297] Currie’s matter-of-fact admission that Morrison’s habit of raping teenage boys was an open secret speaks volumes, but even more so does Andrew Ash’s bombshell. In all likelihood, Sir Peter Morrison was made Thatcher’s PPS **because** he was an easily controlled blackmail-able sexual deviant.[298] Promoting and knighting an incompetent alcoholic frequently observed sleeping at his desk guarantees loyalty to both his party and his crime cabal for protecting his flagrant illicit activities. And with Ash’s revelations, the same can be said for Madame Currie as well.

Abuse survivor Andrew Ash also maintains he was trafficked to Amsterdam on a number of occasions where he claims the infamous murderous gang leader Sidney Cooke forced him to film another boy being raped by a pedophile.[299] Like fellow child murderer-rapist-pimping procurer Warwick Spinks, Cooke is also believed to have made snuff films in Holland. Having lived through so much horrific trauma, Andrew grew increasingly frustrated after providing 70 hours divulging highly incriminating allegations to Metro’s Paedophile Unit. Knowing that the police were in possession of a video with Andrew in the same frame as a senior male MP that abused him, yet never seeing any action taken by law enforcement to hold the VIP criminals accountable, the brave survivor decided to go public with his story in January 2014, stating:

All I want is justice and for the truth to come out because these people have been protected for far too long.[300]

A high profile pedophile mentioned in the last chapter, the murderous snuff filmmaker-distributor Warwick Spinks has been allowed to escape justice too many times for him not to be considered also “protected” by the pedo-elite. After kidnapping a 14-year old boy in Sussex in the early 1990s, then drugging, abusing and pimping him in Amsterdam, he sold the victim to a Dutch brothel.[301] Spinks was also secretly caught on tape peddling a video featuring a 10-year old boy who was tortured and killed on camera. Finally in 1995 the monster was tried, convicted and began a 7-year sentence that on appeal was reduced to five, and while released in 1997 on license after only two years, he fled right back to Europe to resume his lucrative sex slave trade operation. Spinks’ criminal ties to Amsterdam and beyond involve not only the making of deadly pornographic films with underage boys but also child trafficking to Holland and numerous other cities in Germany, Poland and the Czech Republic.

Described as “one of Britain’s most dangerous pedophiles” and called the “Pied Piper of Pedophiles,” finally after 15 years as a fugitive in Europe, he was captured in Prague and extradited back to UK in November 2012. But incredibly, he was freed from prison again on a loophole after only four months. As of March 2013, Spinks was once again free to resume his predatory sick life back in Prague, thumbing his nose at a complicit, impotent British justice system. With his long gruesome criminal history committing the most egregious offenses imaginable, for him to have seemingly gotten away with it, t’s all too obvious that this widely alleged sadistic rapist-killer has to be protected by the pedo-elite.

Warwick Spinks is the most infamous of hundreds of English child sodomizers on the run over the last several decades, escaping to pedo-friendly Holland with its laxly enforced child sex trafficking laws.[302] Spinks and scores like him from Britain have been instrumental in Amsterdam’s booming international pedo-sex tourism-child porn snuff film industry.[303] With Dutch law enforcement claiming insufficient evidence to prosecute swarms of British pedo-expats like Spinks, and UK law enforcement maintaining both lack of resources to investigate and jurisdiction to intervene, the conveniently created safe haven city of Amsterdam not only attracts child traffickers, child rapists and child pornographers from all over the world, but also the VIP predator network from the UK, EU and Europe as a go-to safe zone stopover.[304]

The Sun reported in December 2014 that while Spinks was supplying young boys to a Parliament member traveling to Amsterdam, the same MP became involved in the murder of a boy filmed in a snuff movie at the Blue Boy vice club.[305]

Less than a week after the article was published, Spinks actually registered a formal complaint against the *Sun* contending it violated four accuracy and ethics clauses but the Independent Press Standards Association ruled in favor of Rupert Murdoch’s newspaper that no breaches occurred. [306]

A source for the police investigating Spinks in the 1990s stated:

> *Officers were told Spinks knew the MP and arranged a tour to Amsterdam. While there he went to the Blue Boy bar, where Spinks was running a brothel. The MP was said to have been present when a boy died during an orgy which was being filmed.*[307]

This more than explains why Spinks has repeatedly been brazenly let off the hook, because like fellow murderer-trafficker Cooke, Spinks also provided rent boy services to Westminster VIP pervs, with at least one MP allegedly an accomplice in one of his snuff films.

Respected veteran journalist Nick Davies wrote an eye-opening exposé for *The Guardian* on this very topic of British pedophiles setting up shop in Holland:

> *After speaking to paedophiles and their victims and to police and social workers in Britain, Holland and Germany, we have uncovered the inner workings of an international paedophile ring. Its roots spring from Amsterdam, where, in the late 1980s, a group of exiled British paedophiles set up a colony. Taking advantage of Dutch tolerance towards sexual behaviour, they exploited the freedom of the gay community in the city as cover to enact their fantasies and to make money from them.*[308]

Since Davies described conditions up to when he wrote his article in 2000, the same year the Dutch brothel industry was made legal, the situation in Amsterdam apparently has only grown significantly worse. As of 2018 most legal prostitution zones in the Netherlands have been closed and over a third of all window brothels are reportedly out of business including Amsterdam's famous red light district. A proposed law if passed by the Dutch Senate would make it a crime to pay for sex with pimped, trafficked, or otherwise coerced prostitutes. Since 2000, rather than reduce human trafficking as expected, legalizing the sex trade has only opened up a floodgate in the illegal, unlicensed sex industry,[309] especially pimping trafficked underage boys and girls, creating a vast black market for the London-Amsterdam pedo-connection, extending the global network in all four directions. As a result, an abolitionist movement toward the sex trade appears to currently be underway in the Netherlands.

For the longest time, no doubt because establishment sickos either participate and/or consume the horrendous torture-death scenes filmed on camera, the official word from UK law enforcement always denied that snuff films even existed, claiming police never encountered any in all of their so called investigations.[310] Finally, British police could no longer pretend to be deaf and dumb in their denial. In May 2014 *Express* ran an article announcing that Lancashire police raided a house in February 2013, seizing "the world's first known 'snuff' child pornography video."[311] The 22-year old low-life arrested on the scene received a mere 8-month prison sentence for possessing it along with a number of other deplorable child rape and torture videos confiscated. Upon arrest, beyond admitting he'd downloaded the film from a "file sharing program," he refused to disclose any further details. But obviously he is a bottom feeder in the much larger worldwide snuff film-child pornography network where billions of dollars are gained by the lowest of the lowest scum on earth. Police had acted on a tip from the

Russian government as most of the other videos in the home featured even younger victimized Russian girls.

This particular snuff film depicted a blonde American girl likely around 14 who was savagely raped, strangled and then sexually victimized again, then ultimately rolled up tightly in a clear plastic sheet and dragged away by the murderer who appears to be her stepfather or father.[312] All those viewing this highly disturbing 20-minute video footage concluded it is both authentic and the victim was actually filmed being killed. But here’s the clunker. British police appallingly sat on this murder evidence for a full year prior to even contacting US law enforcement. In other words, a whole year was allowed to elapse with zero effort made to track down either the identity of the murderer or the victim. As a solution to this problem, anti-child abuse campaigner MP Tom Watson called for an independent national child exploitation investigative agency that specializes in child pornography, similar to America’s Operation Predator that’s reportedly arrested 8,000 pedophiles since it was implemented in 2003.

From the Home Office which centrally controls all UK law enforcement operations, Britain has long been a pedophilia enabling haven. Award winning journalist Nick Davies has written a series of disturbingly incisive, detailed articles exposing child abuse in Britain and Europe. He wrote how UK police are allocated abundant funding and resources to combat drugs and property theft, yet law enforcement historically drags its feet investigating child sex abuse. In the macho ranks of police work, aggressively pursuing child rapists is insanely considered “soft women’s work” in the policing business.[313] After navigating past a plethora of systemic barriers yet credited with solving the 1994 London East End rape-murder case of 9-year old Daniel Handley, Detective Superintendent Ed Williams had this perplexing observation based on his firsthand experience:

Child protection is not macho. Those who are involved in it are looked at askance by Met police officers.[314]

The Bristol police force for a time back in the late 1990s remained the lone exception. A young sergeant named Rob Jones and one hardworking Crown Prosecution barrister named Brendan Moorehouse together practically singlehandedly led a small dedicated team facing constant cutbacks and shutdown on a shoestring budget to proactively make a David vs. Goliath difference in shattering a persistent pedophile ring that had flourished in the area for 20 years, resulting in over a dozen convictions. It was this police crew that bridged awareness of the much wider pedophilia web stretching to Europe from Britain and the deadly pedo-trafficking ring and child porn industry booming in Amsterdam to London and beyond.[315]

The monumental efforts of this barebones Bristol police pedophile unit and its local CPS one man operation became the nation's onetime model for putting child rapists behind bars with a near 100% conviction rate versus everywhere else in the country that's closer to zero, before it was ultimately shut down from lack of funding.[316] A case in point for the near zero conviction rate as the UK norm, recall the conscientious efforts of Hereford and Worcester social services director David Combs and his district's whistleblower Peter McKelvie whose evidence convinced MP Tom Watson's PM confrontation in 2012 on the House floor that launched Operations Fairbank, Fernbridge and Midland in search of VIP pedos (totaling one conviction), Hereford and Worcester's efforts to protect their children go over and above most all other social services in Britain.

Yet while both of those valiant child protectors were on duty in 1991 and 1992, a district outcome review revealed that out of a total of 148 abuse cases in Hereford and Worcester, 141 of the suspected child abusers were never charged.[317] Out of the 7 derelicts charged, only one was convicted and imprisoned out of the total of 148 child abuse cases at less than 1% (a pathetic .0068% rate), and again that's one of the better social service departments in the entire nation. With the system set up to favor pedophiles while failing children, a disturbing trend has emerged. While an increasing number of abusers have been reported, the number being successfully prosecuted has significantly been reduced.[318]

Yet when Bristol a few years later with its skeleton crew racked up a near 100% conviction rate, showing the rest of the country how to really protect children by proactively pursuing abusers by first tracking down victims, rather than embrace the model and expand it nationwide, the powers-that-shouldn't-be made certain its contract was not renewed. Recall that this same sad fate also shut down Operation Hedgerow in 1989 after it uncovered the largest pedophilia network in UK history while repeated requests to expand the operation were also rejected. See how the system operates? It goes out of its way every single time to protect the sickos at the expense of the innocents.

Rather than build off Bristol's unprecedented success, holding the mighty purse strings, the Home Office instead ensured its demise by never allocating a single pound worth of assistance since the crime of pedophilia conveniently doesn't qualify among its "best value performance indicators" of reported crimes.[319] Each nation meticulously keeps records on stolen motor vehicles, all property damage and every conceivable reported crime, but when it comes to missing kids, police haven't a clue. And even when reported, it historically falls on deaf ears.

Nearly a quarter century ago based on a Home Office inquiry, it was learned that policing child abuse in the UK drastically needed "a radical improvement in the investigation and prosecution of offenders," requiring an urgent focus on proactively targeting child rapists, increasing both its responsiveness to victims as well as increase the miniscule minority of children willing to report sex offenses.[320] 32 officers surveyed from ten Child Protection Units across the country unanimously delivered a blistering wake-up call that their units were sorely lacking resources, were undertrained, understaffed, unsupported and disrespected. Despite this scathing assessment way back in 1995, the Home Office has done very little to improve the lot of police officers shouldered with the responsibility of protecting kids, again do doubt by calculated design.

A November 2017 report found that despite being warned that Scotland Yard was placing children in increasing danger, the Constabulary Inspectorate determined that in 135 CSA cases examined, 93% of the Met’s responses were deemed substandard.[321] While more children in the UK Care System go missing, increasingly falling victim to pedophilic crime, severe police budget cuts and higher workload demand in the Child Protection Unit are only making matters more dire. Aside from weaker child protection and alarming rates of missing children, other areas of growing concern also include child sexual exploitation and detained children in police custody.

This comes after the 2016 report was so terrible that quarterly audit inspections were implemented on an emergency basis in order to every three months measure corrective progress and results. But the vast majority of recommendations had not even been initiated. Over 20 years after the stinging Home Office critique, the November 2016 report faulted the Met for still being stuck on its obsession to meet its target on car thefts and burglaries rather than make its priority stopping child rapists from abusing children.[322] In short, the Home Office has only set the Met up for continued failure with £400m slashed from its budget and maintaining a longstanding policy of low priority investment in protecting children at-risk. In other words, this only confirms the realty that a political lack of will still exists in changing the UK system that’s been long past broken for decades.

Despite the magnitude of this ever-glaring pedophilic epidemic, Home Office policy continues failing to fund police effort to fight against child abuse. And all those high priced, tax-paid, post-Savile police operations to investigate VIP pedophiles apparently were all for show, netting virtually zero results, providing the excuse to deny any more money spent on either historic much less current child abuse. Saving poor kids from viperous high level predators just isn’t a priority in Britain, never has and never will… unless the people finally rise up in righteous anger and demand that something be done about it… like the International Tribunal for Natural Justice (ITNJ) and reconciliation commissions for starters.

With the system clearly built to shield child abusers from prosecution, especially powerful ones, it was only through the heroic local enterprise by a few remarkable individuals working together in Bristol that this onetime exception to the general rule ever broke out of the control box. The bureaucratic inertia of a rigid standard national policy of total non-interest and lack of commitment in eradicating child abuse, beginning with the gatekeeping Home Office ministers like Brittan or May extended to order-following, pedo-enabling police chiefs and DPPs, has allowed the vast pedophilia network throughout the UK, particularly serving the VIP establishment, to essentially thrive unimpeded for over a century now. The very few city police departments that include pedophile units are grossly understaffed and underfunded, and limited to focusing primarily on child pornography which in this internet age has also proliferated like wildfire.[323] Sadly, disgracefully, Britain’s political will to protect children is still absent. Instead to this very day, its priority remains diabolically protecting the pedophilia network over its own children’s welfare and well-being.

Nick Davies offers two essential conditions that have always been nefariously met that permit VIP criminals to continue getting away with the wholesale rape and slaughter of the innocents:

> *Power is the fabric of a paedophile ring, essential first to subjugate the children, whose passivity is essential for the adults’ indulgence; and second, where possible, to neutralise the authorities who might otherwise frustrate its activities.*[324]

Silencing the voice of children as victims and maintaining centralized control over shutting down police probes are the two primary M.O.s that the pedo-establishment utilizes to maintain its forever cover-up, along with the Official Secrecy Act.

When the frustrated admission that the UK child protection system is completely broken is unanimously shared by social workers, police and customs specialists alike, and echoed by senior government and top law enforcement officials responsible for overseeing this unconscionable mess, you know something at the core level is irreparably wrong and amiss. Two decades ago Nick Davies heard repeatedly from those working within this abomination of a failed system that:

> *They say that the power is with the paedophiles, then finally you begin to see the real horror, that we have put our trust in a child protection system that doesn’t protect the children.*[325]

Nick spent years reporting from the trenches and has dozens of examples to prove the overwhelming truth that the British legal system chooses to protect child rapists and not children. He cites a transport police officer opening a bus station locker and stumbling upon a suitcase full of photos depicting naked children in forced sexual poses.[326] He handed the evidence over to police and social services only to have it collect dust for the next seven years before some detectives happening to investigate local care home abuse decided to match the photos with their findings that suddenly opened up numerous new leads. And that was a fluke as more often than not evidence is either lost, destroyed or sits around forever untouched.

Then there's the two far more egregious cases of two 2-year old girls oozing with pus from their vaginas diagnosed with gonorrhea at the same children's forensic center, but the monsters that did this to them both walked as the system could not hold them.[327] The fact that child sex abuse is the most under-reported crime of all and the Home Office only acknowledges and finances policing for reported crimes directly results in virtually 100% of all child sex abusers in Britain getting away with the sickest of crimes.[328] Factor in perps who run the nation and it's a done deal, VIPs routinely raping and ruining young lives with total impunity is simply a permanent job perk - none have ever been charged and throughout Britain's sorry-ass history none have ever gone to jail. Something's gone terribly wrong.

The abysmal conviction record of pedophiles is having a detrimental effect on social workers who are less responsive in meeting the needs of abuse victims such as delaying initial contact with the child's family or caregivers, providing timely medical examinations and interviewing the accused.[329] In part this can be attributed to the extreme unlikelihood that any alleged perpetrator will ever be prosecuted, much less convicted. Also a skewed court emphasis on rigid adherence to making sure the child complainant's case complies with the Memorandum of Good Practice which was only meant to be a guide has judges throwing cases out right and left, denying justice and letting abusers off the hook on technicalities while in contrast the defendant’s counsel is permitted to rake a child witness over the coals. A lack of sensitivity and understanding of the child’s capacity and psychological development by attorneys and judges again heavily tilts the legal system to the suspect’s advantage.

Yet another case in point among hundreds indicating the system favors child abusers over children. Prior to John Mann becoming a Labor MP for Bassetlaw and pointing out in 2015 Jeremy Corbyn’s “missing” record protecting abused children (covered in the last chapter), Mann was a solicitor and member of the controversial Lambeth council. While investigating insurance fraud in Dolphin Square, he kept hearing about sex orgies involving children and brought the disturbing matter to a couple Scotland Yard detectives back in 1988.[330] Like all the rest of the police inquiries, three months later the detectives said the case was closed on orders from “those at the top.” Meanwhile at the very same time, “those at the top” of UK’s law enforcement were keen on shutting down Operation Hedgerow after it had inadvertently tapped into the international pedo-network despite its success as Britain’s largest pedophilia bust in history. Note how every time the police encounter the larger child raping network, those in control will issue an immediate cease and desist order. Every single time this pattern’s repeated.

In December 2014 MP Mann was back once again trying to defy this impenetrable blue-lined wall of protection and cover-up, this time handing over to Scotland Yard a list he reportedly compiled based on feedback from the public-at large identifying 22 MPs involved in what Mann believed was at least five major pedophile rings catering to the perverted compulsions of dozens of Westminster and Downing Street members.[331] Of the near two dozen on the list, as of 2015 three were current members of the House of Commons and three were still active members in the House of Lords. The rest were either retired or dead, with 13 of them former ministers. For what it's worth, the list's political party breakdown is 14 Conservatives, 5 from Labor and 3 from other parties. Overoptimistic in late 2014 that arrests were pending, MP Mann asserted:

> *It would be inconceivable in some cases that they are not now interviewed by police about these allegations. Some of the evidence is incredibly strong.*[332]

But unfortunately the well-intentioned MP fighting an uphill battle was wrong. No Westminster arrests have been made during the half decade since police were allegedly re-investigating historic VIP child abuse. Though Met Police re-questioned Harvey Proctor (already convicted in 1987 of S&M but not CSA) and the late Leon Brittan (only once interviewed over the 1967 alleged rape of a teenage girl, sabotaging it by failing to record it), Scotland Yard still ended up forced to eat crow, apologizing to Brittan's widow, Proctor and the aging General Bramall, and coughing up a million pounds apiece for Bramall and Leon's widow. This humiliating 180 degree turnaround occurred not long after the *Mirror* in February 2013 claimed that Leon Brittan's arrest was eminent, that Met's Paedophile Unit Commander Peter Spindler had already met with his senior officers finalizing the former minister's pending arrest.[333] But at the last minute shit always happens when the deck's pre-rigged. Once Brittan and Janner were spared the inconvenience of facing charges prior to keeling over, it's likely that the Met never bothered to even interview the other 20 MPs on Mann's pedo-list. And as of 2016, police operations into all historic VIP abuse have since been closed. And with Cliff's 2018 legal victory, the public will never know if famous people are ever questioned or arrested.

So where does all this leave us? Aging child rapists in high places still alive today whose names have been identified by accusers over the years will all safely go to their graves unpunished for ruining hundreds if not thousands of defenseless children’s lives. Of course again this is simply the Luciferian way - do as much harm and damage to others on earth as you can and be guaranteed the reward of gaining more power to inflict even more suffering and pain on more victims, all the while assured of living out your days protected with immunity. That so far unbreakable travesty must soon be broken.

To ensure no public access to records of the June 1982 Elm Guest House raid ever becomes available through Freedom of Information requests, the Crown Prosecution Service (CPS) file holding all official actions and evidence legally taken after the raid were destroyed on April 11, 2007.[334] No wonder no VIP pedophiles have ever been held accountable for their crimes, the British government has maintained a longstanding policy of simply destroying or “disappearing” any and all evidence and documents that are the least bit incriminating. In fact Crown Prosecution Service SOP mandates that all records be destroyed after only three years. The criterial exception by which files don’t get destroyed after three years falls under “Long Term Interest.” The Elm Guest House file remained open for just over a quarter century most likely due to the following stipulations - “security/terrorism, secret/top secret and famous, eminent or notorious people.” Also noteworthy is the not surprising fact that Elm House records were destroyed just prior to Tony Blair leaving office, which per last chapter is characterized by so many D-notices, lost/destroyed criminal evidence and nonstop pedophilia cover-up.

After all, so much is at stake whenever senior members from the royal palaces, cabinet ministries, the Westminster government, and top brass from both police and national security services are all caught diddling kids in horrific rape and sodomy catering to the elite’s most degenerate, sick pathologies utilized to guarantee Luciferian control over puppet leaders, world politics and indeed human history.

Hence, there’s no way that the June 1982 raid at the Elm Guest House on Rocks Lane was a local vice squad operation but had to be a national security services recovery operation to confiscate and safeguard as much incriminating evidence as possible to protect VIP child sex offenders atop the British government. As long as their despicable habits are sealed off to escape public attention, the compromised, controlled and deranged puppets are kept in “power,” remaining completely under continual diabolical control to submit to Lucifer’s ungodly will.

Aside from the original 40-page Geoffrey Dickens dossier and Scotland Yard’s two-year PIE probe dossier both handed over in November 1983 and then subsequently “lost,” compliments of Home Office Minister Lord Brittan, eventually in 2014 the lost evidence morphed into an admitted 114 disappeared files pertaining to VIP politicians sexually abusing children.[335] But then come to find out, by its own admission from 1979 to 1999, the UK government has systematically lost or destroyed a phenomenal, staggering total of 2,074 pedo-related files.[336] This fact alone proves that Britain’s central government is in the business of protecting its VIP pedophiles. Another incriminating numerical fact is that despite the police in 2015 releasing the official number of 261 so called VIP pedophile suspects found during its 30 post-Savile policing pedo-operations (135 in media entertainment, 76 politicians, 43 in music industry and 7 in sports),[337] UK law enforcement has defiantly refused to both identify and follow up with the resulting status of these 261 VIP pedophile suspects.[338] That too is nothing short of a blatant, in-our-face cover-up as well. By refusing to disclose, are we to believe nothing ever happened to these suspects?

When Mark Sedwill, the permanent secretary at the Home Office, confessed about the 114 missing files, self-righteous bluster was heard from home affairs select committee chair pedo Keith Vaz, urgently needing to get to the bottom of who the guilty culprit must be.[339] And like always, that was the last we heard, no one has been named as the responsible party for losing 114 files, much less 2,074. But not surprisingly, the thousands of lost files never quite made it to mainstream news either. That's because it implicates the entire government in the cover-up. Yet no one in London has ever or will ever be charged with destruction of evidence, willful obstruction and perversion of justice, criminal corruption or cover-up, just as not one VIP pedophile has ever been brought to justice. Again, same old sad, pathetic story.

Various accounts covering the Elm Guest House raid characterize the policing operation as a page right out of an old keystone cop fiasco with undercover Special Branch officers just several days earlier conspicuously infiltrating the guest house as fellow pedo-patrons.[340] The lead officer reportedly feigned a fake arm sling injury with attached hidden microphone alleged to have accidentally gone off, signaling the greenlight for 60 officers strong to storm the house of ill repute apprehending the Kasirs, their 10-year old son, a 17-year old rent boy masseuse and nine pedo-clients caught on the premises, three of whom were reportedly MPs, and five of whom as later described in court were naked watching "a thoroughly obscene" child porn video.[341] On top of that, as a giveaway that this tactical event was staged, Richmond social services that had been serving as the child pipeline facilitator for Elm Guest House were previously tipped off days in advance of the raid, explaining why no Grafton Close residents were present.[342]

The only Grafton Close representative there that night was with the Special Branch raiding party – Neil Keir, the care home officer-in-charge who until that day by all reports had been a child victim procurer, and since he was in the direct employ of and in cahoots with Richmond social services director Louis Minster, himself a known guest house visitor, even the most casual observer would properly conclude that the raid was a staged event in a damage control recovery operation in order to obtain and destroy evidence that could potentially bring down the Thatcher government.

As a potent bargaining chip to keep the Kasirs in check from blowing the lid off MI5's covert blackmail operation, their son was taken into custody and placed at none other than the pedo-haven - the Grafton Close Children's Home.[343] No Elm House arrests resulted in prosecution, other than the Kasirs after a number of charges were dropped leaving them to each pay a £1,000 fine for the ever-so-minor offense of running a disorderly house, their brief trial culminating with a suspended sentence in April 1983.

What does all this tell us? It was a high level top down cover-up to both shield the Thatcher government from ruin as well as salvage and maintain status quo on UK's pedophilia blackmail operations. With a constant cover-up ever since, the pedophilia at the top of the British Establishment has remained virtually unscathed and ongoing to this day, just operating slightly more discreetly under the radar. But all the constantly recurring holes and anomalies as each new scandal surfaces serve as proof that a massive cover-up is irrefutable regardless of the elite's nonstop feeble attempt to deceitfully suppress the truth.

More evidence of a cover-up emerged when confidential police records from 1983 were leaked to the press in 2013 in the Savile aftermath.[344] As a Grafton Close Children's Home resident, a victim at Elm Guest House reported VIP pedo-crimes to the Scotland Yard in 1983 a year after the authorities raided the brothel. But no doubt on orders from on high again the Metro Police Services (MPS) stood down and failed to further investigate the boy's claims of sex abuse, obviously already known by MPS, Special Branch and MI5. In April 2013 leaked files show how the police interviewed a second boy in 1983 who had corroborated the allegations made by the first victim. After all the potentially damaging VIP pedophilia evidence had been confiscated in the June 1982 raid, by 1983 with the cover-up in full swing, Metro was not about to rock the boat and begin protecting abused and still at-risk children, following strict orders from Special Branch and MI5 to no longer investigate the rampant abuse any further. The Met was fully responsible for dereliction of duty in failing to protect child victims as well as overt obstruction of justice in a willful conspiratorial cover-up of all available evidence led by Britain's pedo-elite.

So police consistently ignored 16 Grafton Close residents' accounts of abuse in 1982 after the Elm Guest House[345] and again a year later when two more boys came forth to report abuse in 1983. Yet Richmond-on-the-Thames council in charge of social services and its care homes as well as law enforcement both chose to ignore the boys' serious allegations. Disgracefully, as always this latest uncovered evidence of two more victims reporting in 1983 only confirms the already cold hard fact that priority has always been to protect powerful rapists over defenseless abused children. Muzzled by Special Branch and MI5, Met police kept quiet and took no further action, letting more innocent boys become VIP predator victims.

The second Grafton Close resident, now in his late 40s, explained:

I had known that the police had forgotten about this, and were always on the fringe of what was happening. At the time, I knew that there was something wrong. But as a child, I was not sure what.[346]

In a 2014 effort to motivate retired police officers, social workers, witnesses and informants to contact investigators working on Operations Fernbridge and Midland delving into historic VIP abuse, author of the Cyril Smith exposé Rochdale MP Simon Danczuk and MP John Mann began calling for amnesty for former officers forced to sign gagging orders or fearing their pensions would be cut off.[347] Anti-child abuse MP John Mann actually sponsored an amendment to the Official Secrets Act in February 2015 granting immunity to former police, civil servants and witnesses that would prohibit prosecution for providing evidence on historic child sexual abuse.[348] But Tories and Social Democrats voted against it.

A month later shortly before becoming Prime Minister, Theresa May offered this rather feeble response:

> *If people are giving evidence of child abuse I would not expect them – I would hope them not to be prosecuted under the Official Secrets Act.*[349]

That hesitant and weak utterance was purposely designed to not convince anyone to come forth. The Mann amendment failed because the majority in the British government insist that no change in the Official Secret Acts law is necessary to protect whistleblowers from reporting what they know. But history has only shown that for many decades child sexual abuse whistleblowers have consistently been harassed, threatened, smeared and disbelieved. And the Official Secrets Act as existing law most certainly does have the teeth to throw truth tellers in jail just like the 1889 Cleveland scandal did.

A disappointed, exasperated John Mann told *BBC* Radio 4:

> *Police officer after police officer have told me that the Official Secrets Act and fear of breaching it are a bar to them.*[350]

This is just one typical example of the multiple barriers that purposely remain in place within Britain’s legal system intended to effectively inhibit full disclosure of the damning truth that would deliver long overdue justice to the powerful child rapists still lurking inside and out of the government. It appears that MPs voted against the amendment to once again protect the child eating monsters among them. It strongly suggests that throughout all the British institutions of power, be it the Parliament, the prime minister’s office, the high courts, CPS or top law enforcement, the system is irreparably rigged with pedophiles and pedophile protectors who may well comprise the majority in the halls of government.

Though Parliament balked at amnesty, within a week after Danczuk raised the issue in 2014, it immediately prompted 40 informants to come forth with yet more allegations of VIP abuse.[351] One was the retired detective that interviewed the 8-year old victim in 1982, recently stating that he was required to sign a gag order at the time prior to his investigation shutdown. But over three decades later his recollection of criminal events also remained consistent with the victim’s recalled disclosure, only reinforcing the already voluminous body of cumulative cover-up evidence conveniently buried with the “out of sight, out of mind” 2015 closures of Operations Fernbridge and Midland.

Those two policing operations directed at the heart of the British government, by design have failed miserably to hold VIP pedophiles accountable. Not unlike Yewtree, either zero VIP offenders ended up prosecuted or a minor token player winds up convicted to appease the public. Long ago a likely majority of British citizens have realistically concluded that the most powerful politicians who are flaming child sodomizers are unreachable in a thoroughly rigged system designed to ensure that they remain free to live out their unimpeded lives above the law till death do them part.

Operation Midland came up totally emptyhanded and Fernbridge sent one pervert priest to prison for a relative short stint of three years. That’s it. Otherwise, all the VIPs have gotten away and continue getting away with their thousands and thousands of ungodly predatory crimes. All the so called inquiries numbering over 30 different policing operations into pedophilia in Britain have pathetically next to nothing to show for themselves, at grave cost to both the taxpaying public and its complete lack of faith in its irreversibly corrupt government.

In February 2013 while probing Elm Guest House child abuse as part of Fernbridge, the Scotland Yard finally arrested the former deputy head of Grafton Close Home - John Stingemore - for sexually abusing boys under his care years earlier.[352] Along with his procuring boss Neil Keir who to this day remains a free man, it was Stingemore who was responsible for both trafficking his Grafton sex slaves eight miles away to the Elm Guest House as well as largely responsible for the suicide of one of his victims - 28-year old Peter Bornshin. Peter’s abuse at 13 and 14 from frequent Elm House trips drove him at 28 to take his own life with a drug overdose.[353] Meanwhile at 72, his pimping abuser Stingemore died just days ahead of his scheduled trial. Was the odd timing of Stingemore’s death the result of knowing too much, posing a serious enough liability for guilty VIPs he once partied with?

Or could it have also served as a direct warning to Stingemore’s religious friend arrested on the same day in February 2013 who was due to also go on trial with him. Decades earlier, Stingemore provided easy child access for his pedo-priest buddy, Catholic vicar Tony McSweeney to sexually assault boys from Grafton Close. It was Father McSweeney as Grafton’s part-time chaplain who played “good cop” to Stingemore’s “bad cop.”[354] McSweeney was also a chaplain of the Norwich City football club and in 1990 officiated the wedding of world heavyweight champ Frank Bruno, the Freemason pictured shaking hands with the Yorkshire Ripper while their mutual satanic friend Sir Jimmy smugly looked on.[355]

Though denying he ever committed sexual abuse, McSweeney did admit to making trips to Holland with Stingemore to purchase and distribute child pornography, the world's child snuff film capital.[356] In 1998 the priest was even caught possessing child porn videos and indecent photos of children but of course the police and church just looked the other way and allowed him to move on to do more damage elsewhere.[357] A couple of high profile British Catholic bishops quietly helped him transfer to East Anglia.[358]

As the only formal police operation specifically designated to investigate VIP abuse at Elm Guest House, Fernbridge resulted in the conviction of zero VIPs, just one lowly, previously protected, pervert priest while dozens of infamously known monsters were explicitly captured on police surveillance, MI5 blackmail videos as well as Carole Kasir's photographs along with her guest sign-in list, diary entries and Mary and Chris' handwritten notes. Despite plenty of victims' firsthand accounts, including 16 Grafton Close boys identified as "recruited" Elm House victims,[359] and so much other blatantly solid evidence, nothing outside this one fallen ex-priest not even connected directly to Elm House crimes. McSweeney is already a free man having served his 3-year sentence.[360] All the rest of the guilty famous pedophiles remain free, unimpeded to strike again and again with total impunity to this very day. Once again the Elm Guest House story plays out the pathetically shameful running theme - at the world's pedophilia epicenter, some things never change.

By its own factual history, the only accurate conclusion to be drawn is that the United Kingdom lacks both the moral and political will and integrity to protect its “expendable” children trapped in its abominable [Don’t] Care System. That said, the same can be said for North America, Australia, the rest of Europe and many other nations around the world as well. Where family court systems exploit economically disadvantaged populations, creating a growing subclass of throwaway children [and adults if they live that long], a booming child sex trade results in history’s fastest growing, most profitable illicit industry on earth, all because a relative handful of sub-humans atop this predatory food chain have enjoyed untouchable impunity for centuries.

According to Operation Fernbridge, in addition to the 1982 Elm Guest House cover-up of ongoing VIP abuse, yet another unexplained failure to investigate the scandal occurred in 2003 when police were again informed that in the late 1970s and early 80s, children from the local Richmond care homes were brought in to “work” at the guest house operating as a child brothel for ministers and MPs.[361] Terry Earland, director of Richmond children’s services from 1981 to 2003, originally reported child abuse in 1982 to both the police and his colleagues on Richmond council.

Because the Special Branch raid accomplished its nefarious objective to secure and withhold all further evidence, upon approaching retirement two decades later, Terry again met with police. Unhappy with law enforcement’s blatant stonewalling in 2003 into 2004, Earland registered a formal grievance with the Independent Police Complaints Commission (IPCC). Despite heaps of evidence, IPCC also failed to respond for the all too obvious reason - orders from on high again. Recall from last chapter that in 2004 the Blair government was flagrantly engaging in its own batch of pedophilia cover-ups, protecting his Home Office minister Paul Boateng in Lambeth and D-noticing Operation Ore to shield Lord Mandelson while facing intense growing pressure over his minister of children Oppenheimer-Hodge to resign for her appalling pedophilia record that began the same year Elm House was raided.

Terry Earland emphatically stated:

> *My modus operandi at that time* [1982] *was always that if there was an allegation of abuse, it was referred to the* [Scotland Yard] *child-protection unit.*[362]

Yet Terry's boss Louis Minster, head of Richmond's social services from 1975 to 1984, plus a conspicuous name on the infamous guest list, claimed in February 2013 that he never heard of any child abuse at either the Elm Guest House or Grafton Close Home:

> *There was never any… There were a couple of child abuse cases – violence in the families, and what have you. But the answer would be no. There were no inquiries at all.*[363]

The 81-year old Minster now living a comfy retired lifestyle on a hilltop residence in Malta, a notorious pedo-bastion dating back to the Peter Righton days whom he knew, prefaced his denial of knowing any abuse or raid or inquiry ever occurred on his watch by making sure to mention he currently suffers from memory problems, thus establishing "plausible deniability," adding:

> *I have never heard of them. I read it on Google the other evening.*[364]

Yet Terry Earland insists that he told Minster, the Richmond council and the Met police about the abuse. So one of them is clearly lying and my bet is on Minster as the boldface liar trying to cover his own guilty ass. It's on record that twice Minster pulled the file belonging to the second 14-year old boy that reported VIP abuse, a highly unusual fact in and of itself, particularly since the boy was no longer under the care of Richmond social services.[365] When 2012 political journalist of the year David Hencke called Minster in Malta in

2013 to clear up this most glaring discrepancy, Minster feebly pretended he wasn't Minster.[366]

Despite his confessed memory impairment, by October the following year 2014, suddenly the 83-year old's recall was as lucid as ever, answering question after question posed by a local reporter from Malta, explaining that in 1982 Terry Earland did in fact brief him prior to that June house raid:

> *The police had asked to carry out inspections and interviews in the presence of a social worker and I had instructed Earland to take care of it since it was his responsibility.*[367]

Notice his euphemistic wording, calling a police raid an "inspection." And who from Richmond social services gets sent to accompany Special Branch on the guest house raid? Not a Richmond social worker per protocol but the Grafton Close Home Officer-in-Charge Neil Keir, who with deputy head pedo-John Stingemore were the very pimps trafficking their group home boys to the nightmare on Elm.[368]

Minster claims he was never interviewed by police or ever under any investigation, and that:

> *Last March, I got a phone call from the Metropolitan Police who informed me that the Director of Public Prosecutions had decided not to use me as a witness*.[369]

Again, more euphemism as by all rights, Minster should have been a suspect a long time ago, not a witness. Seems the Richmond council and the Met would be equally motivated to sweep under the rug every last trace of the Elm Guest House scandal and their part in the cover-up since it's more than obvious both have much to criminally hide and avoid explaining.

The notorious list of Elm Guest House visitors posted on the internet by Mary Moss not only includes then Richmond social services director Louis Minster but also Richmond council's lauded education director as well. Apparently

Richmond Director of Education and former Wandsworth Chief Constable Donald Naismith has never been taken to task to explain how his name as a longtime London borough educator (1974-1994) wound up as an Elm houseguest.[370] A 1994 queen honored CBE recipient,[371] to this day the retiree is also apparently enjoying his golden years as a renowned author and expert in UK education.[372] When the borough's social services director and the education director are both pedophiles, they could easily arrange through school record photos of all the Richmond boys in care homes be featured in the Spartacus catalogue so that VIPs had the pick of the litter at Elm Guest House.[373]

Aside from incest, professions with daily access to children - teachers, coaches, Boy Scout leaders and social workers, childcare workers, babysitters - all too commonly turn out to be the child abusers. In addition to London borough social services and education directors, another Elm Guest House identified visitor is senor Westminster social worker Steve Everett. And yet another semi-notable from "the list" is George Tremlett, former Greater London Council leader, bookstore owner, journalist and David Bowie biographer (Bowie himself an accused pedophile[374]).[375]

Several more now deceased Westminster politicians wound up on the Elm Guest House list. Tory MP Charles Irving[376] was yet another Monday Club member and advisor to Peter Campbell's CGHE, was knighted in 1990 and his prominent family owned a hotel chain.[377] Another politician on "the list" is Labor MP Ron Brown who died in 2002.[378]

Yet another fairly big name on that infamous Elm Guest House list is Labor MP Stuart Bell from Middlesbrough, elected in 1983 until he died in October 2012.[379] In 1987 Stuart Bell played a reactionary, highly inflammatory role in the nation's largest single CSA case up to that time.[380] In his home Cleveland County MP Bell libelously accused pediatricians and child abuse specialists of falsely making up allegations when they allegedly determined that 123 kids likely suffered sexual abuse. It also turns out that one of the abuse victims' father accused Bell but an alleged innocent man was tried and convicted for the crime despite the father's strong suspicion that the actual perpetrator was VIP Stuart Bell,[381] whom the queen knighted in 2004.[382]

No surprise that a number of police officers were among the list of Elm Guest House regulars as a manifestation of pedo-foxes guarding the Elm child victim henhouse.[383] Among them Deputy Constable (DC) Chris Carter from Richmond Criminal Investigative Department (CID) and DC Ron Thornton also of Richmond CID, DC David Lines of Barnes CID, Police Constable (PC) Rodrick Smeaton, PC Alan Jones from Special Branch[384] and two Women Police Constables - retired 30-year Metro Sergeant Sheila McInnes and WPC Elizabeth Meredith. Another guest list name belongs to then Met Police Constable and likely current 62-year old former Met Police Inspector, pro-EU supporter Chris Wicks, who surfaced in a *Mirror* article confronting philandering ex-Tory Foreign Minister-Brexiteer Boris Johnson in a restaurant in Greece over last New Year's holiday.[385]

To further lend credence to allegations that a number of law enforcement pedophiles were regular Elm Guest House visitors, a child actor Dr. Who - Lee Towsey, the 16-year old masseuse employed for five months at the time of the June 1982 Special Branch raid, claims he had sex with three police officers at the brothel, likely with one or more of the above named guests. Speaking to *The Mail on Sunday* in April 2014 after reporting his experiences to Fernbridge detectives in 2012, Lee stated that Carole Kasir complained that she was forced to pay for "a police Christmas fund" as an extortion fee to Richmond police for "protection" during Elm's years of operation.[386] Towsey also corroborated that Carole kept a list of high profile customers in a black book as her "insurance policy." Carole also mentioned the prominent cabinet minister as a regular house guest later determined to be Leon Brittan. It was Lee who informed MP Simon Danczuk upon release of his book on Cyril Smith that there were “much bigger fish” far “higher up the food chain” at Elm,[387] referring to Sir Leon, though at sweet 16 Lee had a sexual encounter with “Big Cyril as well:

Carole told me not to let him in the sauna, as he had got stuck in there before and they had to take the door off to get him out. Smith wanted me to strip naked and massage him. I was also forced to watch as he masturbated.[388]

The first time the underage masseuse had sex at the brothel with a policeman was in February 1982:

One came round in the first month. He was early 20s, good-looking, not the usual sort who went to the house.[389]

The next occasion that Lee encountered the young police officer was when Elm was raided and the Kasirs and Lee were taken to the police station. Towsey also maintains that in April he had sex with another undercover officer that must have been from Special Branch as he was a member of the raiding party. But Lee said:

He came back about three weeks later and hired a room. He stayed two nights and on the second night his partner stayed too. I ended up having sex with them. Afterwards they asked how much and I told them that they were not clients and felt insulted they wanted to pay me.[390]

At the time of the June raid, Lee was charged with assisting in the management of the brothel but was later dropped. That summer Towsey acquired another job working in the kitchen of a bingo hall where his father would pick him up after his shift. One day three policeman arrived at the usual time in place of his father. Lee said:

One of them was at the station following the raid. They told me they could pick me up at any time and told me keep my *mouth shut. I never told anyone, not even my family.*[391]

Lee Towsey explained that despite a couple of calls from police since contacting him in 2012, he feels frustrated because no police action has been forthcoming after reporting his abuse as an underage victim at the hands of three lawbreaking pedophile cops, adding:

I am considering legal action against the Met. I shut the door on it once and I want to shut the door on it again and move on.[392]

In 2013 Operation Fernbridge detectives were in search of the alleged two dozen aforementioned photos of this infamous motley crew of pervert guests reportedly photographed with their victims by the likely murdered brothel owner Carole Kasir. Of course if these photos have not already been destroyed, both security services and Met police have had in possession their own sets of elusive incriminating photos. As alluded to earlier, towards the end of her life, Carole Kasir befriended Mary Moss and was alleged to have given her copies of damaging VIP documents and photos. After three decades since the Elm House closure, the more recent 2013 Fernbrdge raid on Mary Moss' home was never intended to bring belated justice to the unpunished VIPs as no suspect has ever been arrested, much less convicted. But again it was another overt attempt to collect and remove perhaps the last vestige of smoking gun evidence to make certain VIP pedophiles stay out of both jail and the headlines.

In 2012 the police scoping exercise - Operation Fairbank - was conducted to determine if a further criminal investigation - Operation Fernbridge - would be warranted. It was. The Fernbridge objective ostensibly was to determine why prior police investigations were prematurely shut down in 1982 and never got off the ground in 2004,[393] and the active role that Richmond council played in the abuse and cover-up.[394] The Liberal Richmond council leader from November 1983 to 2001, the knighted Sir David Williams, said there's no evidence of child abuse that he's aware of.[395] Yet Scotland Yard determined that the council paid out a rather hefty sum of hush money to an alleged Elm House child abuse victim. So Sir David wasn't being totally honest in his emphatic denial of abuse.

Lasting over two years in duration but closed by March 2015, unfortunately Operation Fernbridge amounted to no more than the same going-through-the motion posturing, under the false pretense of "leaving no stone unturned," as pedo-enabling PM David Cameron promised in order to placate a riled up public fresh off the Jimmy Saville revelations, demanding answers and justice that in Britain appear destined to never come to fruition.[396] The most obvious reason for Scotland Yard's long history of aborted inquires and impotent inaction is because as mere lackeys on the pecking order totem pole, they simply follow their stand down orders from the Home Office or MI5. Like all previous cover-ups from the 1980s through the 2000s, all the post-Savile police probes exploring the Westminster-Downing Street connection have also proven to be more of the same unending cover-up.

It doesn't take millions of taxpayer pounds and years to figure out that powerful pedophiles will never voluntarily expose themselves. And as long as the highest ranking police, spies, judges and politicians are either pedophiles or pedophile enablers, the ending of the story will always stay the same. But all over the world the truth is finally breaking through their previously impenetrable walls and the guilty predators will soon be exposed and some will be held accountable before they too die off from old age.

Child victims through the ages have virtually always been ignored, disbelieved, or, if they present damaging enough evidence against VIP sickos, they become targeted for murder, character assassination, anything to eliminate them as threats to the status quo crime cabal. Child campaigner Chris Fay who gathered incriminating evidence against Leon Brittan from Carole Kasir prior to her sudden death was subsequently prosecuted and convicted for investment fraud in 2011, effectively neutralizing him thereafter as a fully credible witness to the public.[397] Today's precarious situation where all the prior allegations once deemed "credible and true" from now alleged "fantasist" Nick (as if he is the only accuser in the world), claiming horrific torture and abuse at both Elm Guest House and Dolphin Square, witnessing three alleged child murders at the hands of VIPs, suddenly in 2016 were all declared false, automatically casting unfair doubt and dispersions on countless actual victims and their true claims.

In early 2018 the so called Nick, whose actual name Carl Beech was released by the judge[398] after the 50-year old was initially arrested on charges of possessing and making indecent images of children.[399] But currently Beech awaits his criminal trial scheduled for March 2019 on charges of perverting justice and fraud.[400] See the pattern here? Ex-MP Danczuk was alleged to have sexted a 17-year old girl and raped his first wife while asleep, in effect ruining his parliamentary career as a child abuse advocate.[401] Seems one by one the biggest threats to the status quo pedo-cover-up are all effectively neutralized one way or another. The more serious and damaging the accusations are to the pedo-elite, the more certain accusers' reputations will be attacked, smeared and destroyed.

With Operation Midland probing possible VIP murders, costing Briton taxpayers £3m and resulting in not even one single arrest, and Metro Police Services having to humiliatingly apologize to ex-MP pervert Proctor, General Bramall and Leon Brittan's widow, the latter two granted £100,000 each in compensation for the alleged false accusations against them, along with Sir Cliff Richard's July 2018 landmark court victory, the pedo-elite's pushback effectively seals the deal.[402] No famous pedophile still alive in Britain will be brought to justice at the earth's pedophilia epicenter. The aforementioned VIPs' guilt or innocence notwithstanding, powerful child rapists' 2018 pushback have won and the current IICSA ensures that abysmal, shameful outcome.

The more the pedo-elite can waste taxpayer money on fruitless boondoggle witch hunts against so called innocent accused VIP victims, the less believable real victims of child abuse automatically become and the less public support for costly, failed police investigations into historic child sex abuse. The criminal elite's ultimate aim is to render the thousands of victims who've been abused by prominent pedophiles throughout the years null and void, where they're neither heard nor do they matter, as if their abuse never really happened at all. Of course that would be a grotesque travesty of justice and we cannot allow any legal system to reach such an abominable state of filth as in Britain. In effect, the cabal agenda is to censor, silence and deny the massive, glaring, overwhelming evidence that irrefutably speaks for itself, regardless of whatever gargantuan effort is made to cover it all up. Finally, if abuse victims figure that the corrupt UK justice system is so corrupt and so rigged against the truth ever winning or counting in a British court of law, no one will ever press charges, much less undergo the enduring stress and pressure of a long drawn out court process or even be sufficiently resolute to report crimes in the first place, reasonably concluding neither the legal system nor the police can ever be trusted.

Even an establishment bigwig, former 5-year Director of Public Prosecutions Keir Starmer has admitted:

> *Many, if not most, still do not have sufficient confidence in our criminal justice system to come forward in the first place and report what has happened to them… The prevalence figures for domestic violence and abuse set out in a report by the Early Intervention Foundation last week remind us that this is far from a historical matter. For many victims the adversarial journey through our courtrooms is such an ordeal that most vow never to repeat it. The way some victims and witnesses in the sex-grooming trials were treated makes very uncomfortable reading for any politician, lawyer or judge… Even when a case is sensitively handled, the adversarial system does not always serve victims well.*[403]

… Or at all. One victim echoing the DPP's statement above who was abused by high powered pedophile criminals from age 9 to 16 had this to say:

> *The authority is not what stops people from speaking out, it's the fear that is instilled by these people. It appears the cover-ups did happen and it makes survivors very wary because you don't know who you can have confidence in to report.*[404]

There's good reason why the criminal justice system is not called the victims' justice system, because when the rich and powerful are the criminals, always they're protected and always the victims re-victimized. With all the power and resources in their favor, the VIP pedophile strategy is counting on the above scenario to only continue on indefinitely since it's worked so well for them for so long. The entire court system needs a complete drastic overhaul if anything's to ever change. Again, Keir Starmer has called for "a radical shift in attitude and approach" in the existing criminal justice system, advocating a specific and enforceable new victims' law, concluding:

We could start by retiring the description ‘criminal justice system’ and conceive instead of a criminal justice service fit for victims.[405]

But as gatekeepers too many pedophiles have long infiltrated Britain’s rotten-to-the-core legal system, ensuring that the outcome stays fixed and controlled so that VIP child rapists always remain free while too many abuse victims, suffering immeasurably, tragically die too young. For this sad, pathetic realty to ever change, we citizens of the world must unify as one formidable force for good to make it happen.

In the meantime, survivor groups like the Shirley Oaks Survivors Association (SOSA) stand out as a model of the way to go to mobilize power and support for vindicated recognition and at least recover long overdue financial compensation. It’s still not satisfactory justice until the criminals are fairly punished in a court of law but better than no justice at all. Abuse survivor organizations can also be instrumental in assisting police to gather evidence for prosecution as SOSA helped put a pedophile priest behind bars as noted in the last chapter.

As yet another example of the pedo-foxes guarding the henhouse, in this case UK’s justice system, let’s examine one high court judge who in 2013 was appointed as the queen’s personal legal advisor.[406] A few months after his royal upgrade, Appeal Court Judge Adrian Fulford was having to answer charges that in 1979 he was founder of the campaign group called Conspiracy Against Public Morals that openly supported and defended the rights of pedophiles. He attended strategy meetings with PIE chairman Tom O’ Carroll, later found guilty of possessing child pornography, and organized protests outside the courtrooms where PIE leaders were on trial for conspiracy to corrupt public morals. A pamphlet from the organization that Fulford founded claimed that if children were allowed to have sex with adults, it would free them from the oppression of the state and their parents.

The barrister's activism motivated him to make a speech at a 1980 PIE rally defending pedophile rights, acknowledged in PIE's newsletter Magpie thanking him by name for delivering the best speech of the day. While a volunteer at the same infamous civil rights group - NCCL (currently known as Liberty) - that embraced PIE as an affiliate partner that also came back to bite Labor leaders Patricia Hewitt, Harriet Harman and Jack Dromey in the ass in March 2014, also stung Lord Judge Fulford. Despite clear evidence he was actively supporting pedophiles having sex with kids, when confronted over his past reprehensible behavior, the razor sharp legal mind of Queen's Counsel suddenly went dull and limp, claiming he had no recollection of the pro-pedophile organization he founded nor any of his actions defending their "rights" that despite his denial remain a matter of clear public record. In his own deceitful words:

I have no memory of having been involved with its foundation or the detail of the work of this campaign.[407]

Rather than be honest and cop to it, he went on a self-righteous rant about how he would never be in favor of anyone or any group that sexually abuses children and insists he has never advocated lowering the age of sexual consent from 16. Regardless of his lame excuses and double talk scrambling to do damage control, the facts plainly speak for themselves.

That said, when a Supreme Court judge was assigned to investigate the nitty gritty of his PIE-friendly past, Fulford was exonerated and cleared of any misconduct… pretty predictable in the nation that consistently protects child rapists.[408] This pathetic episode is just one more piece of factual evidence blatantly showing how judicial members of an enabling royal elite are entrenched in positions of gatekeeping power to ensure that the pedophilia epidemic stays shielded as much as sinisterly possible from public exposure, thereby guaranteeing that the diabolical cover-up continues on indefinitely.

For the umpteenth time, shortly after Labor MP Tom Watson's confrontational outburst on the House of Commons floor directed at the flustered Prime Minister David Cameron in October 2012, reminding the world once again of the unfinished business of reckoning with the still covered-up Westminster pedophilia scandal, in January 2013 the Metro Police was once again compelled to relook into historic child sexual abuse under Operation Fairbank turned Fernbridge in what the *Daily Mail* was calling perhaps "the biggest Establishment cover-up" ever.[409] Then two years later in March 2015, the *Independent* Police Complaints Commission (IPCC), the same outfit that refused to investigate Elm Guest House in 2004, jumped on the insincere, "give-victims-a-voice" bandwagon to announce:

> [It] *is to investigate 14 referrals detailing allegations of corruption in the Metropolitan Police Service in relation to child sex offences dating from the 1970's to the 2000's.*[410]

These allegations involve the numerous aborted police investigations into pedophilia from orders on high, the withholding of evidence against VIPs, a conspiracy within the Met to protect high ranking politicians and sexual abuse committed by senior police personnel. But just when VIP probes were fizzling out with Fernbridge and Midland closed, this IPCC investigation begun in March 2015 also appears to have run its dead-end course as well. So much for investigations into the Westminster cover-up.

Three months after the IPCC announced its 2015 investigation into the widespread Westminster cover-up, MP John Mann warned:

> *Without a question there is cover-up at the highest level.*[411]

Mann insisted that the British Establishment is still blocking revelations about “systemic” child abuse going public. He believes “hundreds of thousands of people” are “just starting to come forward” with allegations - and they are just “the tip of the iceberg.”[412] In the near four years since John’s statements, it seems the Establishment may be winning this war to suppress the truth as investigation after investigation has failed to bring even one VIP to justice and with no police inquiry left now to probe historic child abuse, it doesn’t look good for the home team still fighting for the truth to come out.

Under the false cover of Fernbridge pledging to finally conduct a real investigation into VIP child abuse, on an early morning in January 2013, the Establishment launched a decisive assault in its continued cover-up when police raided the central London residence of child protection social worker Mary Moss, searching to eliminate the last incriminating evidence known to be still at large. Along with other important documents entrusted her by Carole Kasir before her death, the alleged Elm Guest House list was recovered. Fortunately for us Mary had smartly beat the boys in blue to the punch, uploading the list of boy brothel patrons online before they stole (and no doubt destroyed) more key documents from her home. To this day copies of Mary and Chris’s handwritten notes listing the brothel’s VIP guests can still be found online,[413] and infamous child rapists from the Establishment were outed anyway, a rare win for the truth and the public’s right to know.

But first the caveat… though child abuse at Elm Guest House is clearly irrefutable, alleged visitors who often signed in at the boy brothel under fake names are included on Mary Moss’s online list as the result of handwritten notes written by Mary and her fellow colleague Chris Fay. Also posted online are some of Mary’s additional notes from hours of meeting at length with Carole Kasir. However, the accuracy of her online documents cannot be verified as gospel truth since they're based on hearsay information supplied by Mary via Carole Kasir, whose word cannot always be relied upon.

With this qualifier in mind, the following paragraphs cover the alleged VIP sex orgy guests and other notables listed as visitors. Three are so called pop stars. "Kitty" aka superstar Sir Cliff Richard apparently joined by another aging early 1960s heartthrob-turned-actor Jess Conrad as well as a third singer named Ron Wells aka Gladys. Other listings include a bishop that may well be Prince Charles' Anglican Church pal former Bishop Peter Ball linked to pedophilia crimes in East Sussex, home of former Grafton Close Home's deputy head John Stingemore as a transporter of boys to the Elm Guest House.[414] Among senior MPs aside from Sir Cyril Smith are Monday Club members mentioned earlier, Harvey Proctor and still active MP Sir Peter Bottomley. An official from the royal household is also listed (actually both the queen's lead bodyguard Michael Trestrail as well as Buckingham Palace senior aide Richard Langley have been implicated),[415] also a senior MI5 officer (the usual suspect - MI5 royal traitor Anthony Blunt who signed in as Anthony Goldstein and also linked to Kincora scandal as well), an MI6 officer (likely Peter Hayman as former MI6 deputy director), and a prominent business mogul (possibly related to Guy Blackburn-Hamilton, alleged son of Westland Helicopters chairman).[416]

Another name worth noting is Barry Haddon, an alleged child pornographer that Mary Moss' notes claim he supplied child porn to Proctor, was a fellow child procurer and close associate of Terry Dwyer who also knew John Rowe and Peter Glencross.[417] Both Dwyer and Haddon were also boy toy suppliers and apparently protected by higher-ups on the food chain. Haddon's black book "diary" contains a number of senior police officers such as Detective Chief Inspector Chris Sage and a Brent police surgeon named Dr. David Foster.[418]

A cartoonish underworld figure named Patrick Puddles is also listed as an alleged frequent Elm guest with a particular taste for posing for photo sessions with young boys in the sauna room.[419] David Issett, the cabal stooge claiming to be Carole's boyfriend who signed off on her two "suicided" notes, insisted his former boss "Patsy" would never be caught up in pedophilia.[420] An ironic twist coming from an alleged pedophile himself. According to local papers, Issett was linked to a child pornography ring involving Grafton Close Home victims and convicted pedophile-pornographer David Hamilton-Grant, extradited from Cyprus, Turkey.[421] Now deceased, Patsy Puddles was a police protected local businessman, property owner[422] and major child porn distributor with a distribution circuit from London to Amsterdam, Rotterdam, Germany and Cyprus.[423]

Notice the Elm Guest House attracted those who abuse exploitable naked children not only for sex with high rollers willing to pay top dollar to rape and torture, but also a converging parasitic swarm commercially exploiting boys for indecent photos and videos for sordid profit. The Elm House Nightmare was a den of iniquity in the worst possible way and don't think for a minute Mr. and Mrs. Kasir didn't know it,[424] leaving their own young son to be allegedly victimized.

Finally, among the motley Elm guest crew arrived the post-WWII British Nazi leader Colin Jordan of the National Socialist Movement financed by his heiress wife Dior, not the National Front as reported on the Moss list,[425] and a Sinn Fein leader who signed in with the alias Gary Walker.[426] Just as Northern Ireland's Kincora scandal shows British intelligence working covert sexual blackmail with both sides in the Irish-UK conflict, with pedophile leaders from both sides raping boys side by side at London's Elm Guest House, it likewise demonstrates the larger sobering reality that all so called political conflicts and wars in this world are artificially manufactured, planned creations, executed by the same pedophilic elite that virtually owns and controls the entire planet. With centralized control their juggernaut, the ruling elite is presently engaged in a genocidal war against humanity, leading to the endgame scenario of fascist totalitarian tyranny that enslaves the surviving, heavily depopulated, powerless servant class. This is what humans who value freedom, currently targeted in the cabal's crosshairs, are facing in this 11th hour. Out of this Elm Guest House saga emerges many cautionary lessons.

Over the years countless allegations have also persisted of pervasive child sexual abuse at orgies held inside many of the 1250 private luxury flats within the enormous Dolphin Square complex in Pimlico, less than a mile from the Parliamentary buildings where as many as 100 MPs have made their home.[427] The 1930s dungeon-like chambers are steeped in dark mystery and scandal. Famous old generals and admirals, spies, politicians, writers and royalty frequently make Dolphin Square their home.[428] M5 and MI6 chiefs have targeted the largest residential block in all of Europe as one humongous sexual blackmail honey trap. After a number of victims and witnesses have come forth since 2012 to report that they were trafficked to flats at Dolphin Square and abused and tortured by MPs and other VIPs, including children allegedly murdered, drawing no response from Metro Police, the Independent Police Complaints Commission in 2015 specified that Dolphin Square would be one of the prime allegations to investigate the Met Police for apparently covering up widespread abuse.[429]

Recall that boys and girls from care homes throughout the British Isles were trafficked to Dolphin Square parties. Outspoken survivor Richard Kerr from Northern Ireland's Kincora Boys' Home has asserted that he was sexually assaulted by VIPs at both Elm Guest House and Dolphin

Square.[430] Boys from North Wales Bryn Estyn Home were trafficked to Dolphin sex orgies.[431] And of course, it goes without saying, if you happen to be a resident trapped in a London borough care home such as Richmond's Grafton Close or in Islington or Lambeth, from the 1970s through the 1990s and likely beyond, you were likely sexually assaulted in Dolphin Square.[432]

Scalawag had this to say about Derek Laud, the Tory go-to advisor-fixer-pimp in the 1980s and 1990s:

Derek Laud ran a Pimlico PR agency called Ludgate Communications… in cahoots with [scandal ridden ex-MP] *Ian Greer Associates. Ludgate Communications was at the very hub of our investigation into allegations… At his Pimlico flat, and selected addresses in Dolphin Square nearby, Laud threw parties.*[433]

Laud's Ludgate pedo-party planner reportedly supplied care home boys from every which direction, funneled straight into his perverted friends' grasps. Boys from North Wales were taken to Laud's fellow lobbyist buddy Ian Greer's Dolphin Square flat to be abused by Tory MPs.[434] It was in Ian Greer's office that former child actor-anti-child abuse activist Ben Fellows was allegedly molested by soon-to-be Home Office Minister Kenneth Clarke while a camera on a nearby table reportedly captured it concealed from a bag.[435] Ben also alleges that he too was sexually abused at Dolphin Square parties.

The dual purpose of inviting selected politicians and VIPs to parties is not only to provide the sick sadistic lustful pleasure for powerful, despicable, likeminded criminals but more importantly to gain blackmail control over mostly key Conservative Members of Parliament. Former MI5 operative David Shayler has said that MI5 has fitted many of the Dolphin residences with one way mirrors and hidden cameras for the usual purpose of sexual blackmail.[436] Since security services headquarters are in close proximity, and a heavy influx of a spy presence at the Pimlico complex on the Thames has been well documented historically,[437] just like Elm Guest House, Dolphin Square pedophilia is also a sexual blackmail operation.

A deeper look at how Shirley Porter, Jewish heiress daughter of Sir John Cohen, founder of Tesco supermarket chain, ran her Tory controlled Westminster council as a Kosher Nostra, illustrates the unholy marriage between London’s dirty trick politics and Dolphin Square’s flourishing cottage industry led by predatory pedophiles like Laud and Greer, supplying fresh young boy meat to dozens of degenerate Westminster VIPs. The queen honored Dame Shirley and her Tory council henchmen’s gentrified gerrymandering to push the homeless, unemployed and otherwise poor “riff raff” Labor Party voters out of Westminster to dominate a gay-Tory-pedo playground monopolizing control over both the Westminster borough and its Dolphin Square Tory pedophile ring.[438] In the late 1980s the district auditor busted her and her cronies’ illicit operation, rigging votes in the “homes for votes” corruption scandal, and charged her £42m for bilking council funds, of which only £7000 was recovered, seized from her belongings left behind in London.[439] Though disgraced publicly back in Britain, as a dual Israeli first citizen, it didn’t stop her from living the life of luxury in Israel with hubby Sir Leslie Porter, the Tel Aviv University Chancellor. In 2002 she shamelessly declared herself worth only £300,000, about one-thousandth her actual estimated worth, hidden in offshore accounts in Guernsey, British Virgin Islands and Swiss banks. Shirley surely made out like a bandit as the convicted fraudster eventually settled in 2004 with a £12m payment out of the total £42m she stole from Westminster council funds.[440]

Originally an Oxford educated Jewish Laborite, Dr. Julian Lewis switched gears to cut his Tory teeth as deputy head researcher at his Conservative Party's Central Office in Smith Square from early to mid-1990s before becoming the Zionist Tory MP for New Forest East in 1997, Esther R's old stomping [alleged child burial] grounds.[441] As of 2015 the current chair of the powerful Defense select Committee, steeped in high finance and covert arms sales, MP Lewis has reportedly frequented Dolphin Square flats linked to pedo-sex parties.[442] According to abuse victims who were former residents of North Wales care homes, in addition to being victimized in North Wales (covered in Chapter 26), they also claim they were trafficked to sex parties at Dolphin Square as well as Hampshire County just west of London as part of a national pedo-ring tied to prominent Tories. A *Scalawag Magazine* article reporting the young men's tragic fate contends:

> *There have been many allegations that Hampshire County Council, through the influence of Derek Laud and his friend Julian Lewis, is a central player in a national paedophile ring supplying young boys from care systems to VIPs… The alleged victims of VIP abuse who died in the fire in Palmeira Avenue Hove (Brighton) in 1991 had also linked Laud, Lewis, and Greer, to the circumstances of the abuse they said they had suffered in care.*[443]

Other known Tory MPs with more than a passing connection with Laud, Greer and Dolphin Square orgies are Sir Edward Leigh,[444] Sir Peter Lilley,[445] Sir Michael Portillo,[446] Michael Brown,[447] David Nicholson[448] and Robert Banks.[449] Because *Scalawag* magazine was exposing Tory pedophiles, it was Julian Lewis who finagled a court order on a bogus claim the magazine was delinquent in its lease payments, changing *Scalawag*'s office locks overnight and seizing the magazine's assets.[450] The alleged pedophile's dirty tricks campaign against his nemesis continued when he managed to covertly entrap *Scalawag* editor Simon Regan on tape vowing to reduce Lewis' New Forest votes in his 1997 MP election bid.[451] A four day trial ruled in Lewis' favor with a judgment against Regan breaching an obscure electoral law.

And so the pedo-Establishment neutralized another anti-child abuse threat, ensuring that *Scalawag* went out of business. Regan soon died after a brief illness in 2000 following his co-editor brother's freak fatal car accident in Cyprus in 1996. Gloating over his coup d'état, when a *Scalawag* article accurately incriminated the subsequently convicted pedophile police superintendent Gordon Anglesea who died in prison, Julian Lewis rushed to his aid supplying him with *Scalawag* distributors and printers as ammo for him also to sue the muckrakers as well… birds of a feather.[452]

Numerous firsthand accounts of abuse have been reported to the police, with understandably only a few willing to forego their right to confidentiality to talk to the press. One such compelling disclosure came from a middle aged man named Michael, interviewed by an ITV news reporter.[453] Michael verbalized how on Friday afternoons as a special outings considered "a treat" he and other residents from his care home were transported in a van south to London for the weekend to attend VIP sex parties. Friday night it might be at a flat in Dolphin Square and the next night a mansion in a ritzy borough estate in London or another flat at "the Dolphin." During the day on Saturday the boys would attend sightseeing tours but at plush parties late into the evening, they would be plied with plenty of alcohol and drugs while selected by well-dressed pedophiles for various degrading forms of sex abuse.

For one summer in the early 1980s while in his early teens nearly every weekend he would actually look forward to his getaways to London town as an adventure and reprieve from his dull weekday routine at his group home, accepting the sexual abuse as a mere tolerated price to pay for temporary admission into this unknown and exciting world of the high life, a momentary fleeting escape from his poor working class roots to a brief glimpse encounter observing how the wealthy and powerful live and party. Michael’s stoic, almost matter-of-fact, yet casually open attitude toward accepting sexual abuse as an unpleasant price to pay appears perhaps his defensive coping mechanism while presenting himself before the rolling news camera. Or perhaps years of therapy afforded him the opportunity to emotionally distance himself from his past schoolboy trauma when speaking about it years later.

The IPCC police commission’s decision in 2015 to probe further into the cover-up of abuse at Dolphin Square stemmed from how the Met Police has refused to properly investigate the reported rapes of multiple victims resulting from consistent stand down orders from above. One abuse survivor whose actual name is David, currently in his early fifties, came from a loving family that moved to the iconic countryside of Lincolnshire when he was just turning 15. His friendly neighbor Gordon Dawson was among the respected town leaders, a local ombudsman, active in the Anglican Church diocese, quickly becoming friends with David’s parents.[454] Gordon taught David how to hunt and shoot rabbits. Little did the naïve boy or his unsuspecting parents know he was being classically groomed by a serial child sexual predator.

Like so many victimized boys at 15, David reacted to the sexual abuse by withdrawing socially into a private, confused world of shame and dread. As a desperate attempt to get away, ultimately David told his parents how much he hated school and wished to return to his old one two hours away in Cambridgeshire. But then the family friend Dawson offered to pick him up on Fridays. Next came an invitation to London for the weekend and a night at the theater. Because his parents completely trusted this seemingly warm, generous man taking a “mentor’s” interest in their shy youngest of three sons, David felt trapped and frozen in fear to tell anyone.

So like fellow abuse survivor Michael, it was off to spending numerous weekends in the bustling capital London, staying at London's Dolphin Square in 1982. The wealthy landowner from Lincolnshire trafficked David at least 10 times into the big city to his Dolphin Square luxury flat where David claims he was carnally assaulted repeatedly by Dawson and other men. David explained that they would regularly attend dinners at London restaurants where they'd meet up with Dawson's friends, reportedly MPs, senior military officers, prominent businessmen, and members of the Church of England's General Synod. Sometimes other young boys were present at the restaurant as well.[455] After dining, they would reconvene at one of the Dolphin Square flats for after dinner drinks to gorge on their boy toy dessert.

As the church's governing body, the general synod periodically meets several times a year in Westminster. As of March 2018, the IICSA heard public testimony and complaints from witnesses and victims like David amongst a total of 3,300 child sex abuse allegations committed by Queen Elizabeth's Church of England.[456] Between all her sex offending knights and perverted clergy, CSA is simply their Luciferian way of life.

Even prior to David reporting his abuse to Lincolnshire Police, in December 2006 an officer gave the child rapist a heads up call that he would be arrested after receiving allegations from Dawson's other sexually abused victims.[457] What's worse is when David did report Dawson's crimes to police just two months later in February 2007, that same police officer again leaked to Dawson that he'd be rearrested, unbelievably adding that David was his latest accuser.[458] This grossly unethical if not illegal deference shown Dawson gave him ample opportunity to destroy incriminating evidence and clearly endangered David's life with potential violent retribution. Standard police protocol would confiscate an arrestee’s gun collection as precaution against either suicide or homicide. Within 90 minutes of that February phone call, Dawson allegedly shot himself in the head, preventing any real justice for David. Though the police quickly wrote it off as suicide, later falsely proclaiming it to the press, in fact the coroner recorded Dawson’s death as an open verdict.[459] With the local perpetrator deceased and out of the way, Lincolnshire Police instantly washed its hands of the case, refusing to investigate any further. Moreover, the criminal leads David reported of sexual abusers at Dolphin Square were completely omitted from the Lincolnshire Police records. Even the IPCC in 2007 refused to touch the case, no doubt due to implicating Dolphin Square VIPs. It turns out that Gordon Dawson had a long record for abusing boys as young as five dating back to 1964 right up to at least 1986… another despicable example of a protected VIP allowed to harm children for decades because of his influence and power, locally as well as in London.[460]

After Scotland Yard’s Operation Fairbank had publicly appealed for victims to come forth with evidence as part of its overarching inquiry into historic Westminster abuse, in 2015 David decided to once again report Dawson and his VIP friends’ sexual crimes to police a second time, providing two days’ worth of allegations backed up by documents supporting his Dolphin Square abuse claims along with his prior complaint to police 8 years earlier.[461] It was then that David found out that two of Dawson’s friends and co-owners of the Pimlico flat were never even interviewed by police. But David was reassured by the Met detectives interviewing him that his case had just cause to be reopened. Yet several days later, Met police notified David that Dolphin Square was suddenly off limits, specifying that:

> *There is nothing further for us to investigate here. The information that we discussed doesn't fall within the remit of [Operation] Fairbank or the Metropolitan Police.*[462]

Trying to get answers finally drew an email response from Detective Sergeant James Townly explaining:

> *It is not feasible for the police to investigate every potential or convicted paedophile for links to others. In an ideal world we would very much like to identify all offenders and identify their links to other paedophiles and networks [but] sadly that does not happen.*[463]

A final email from Townly specified that because David could not supply names of VIPs at the restaurants or the Dolphin Square flats, "this is not sufficient for a crime report." Despite knowing the names of Dawson's two partners sharing the same Dolphin flat, because they were not known to Met Police, they wanted no part. Again bottom line, neither Fairbank nor Midland really wanted any part in uncovering and bringing to justice any of the powerful VIP criminals that abused David or any other child. This dereliction of duty perverting the course of justice was completely unacceptable, prompting David to go public. Clearly the circled wagons had once again closed in rapid order to shield off any further exposure of VIP pedo-crimes committed at Dolphin Square… i.e., the same old, same old.

Keith Best, chief executive of the victims' group called Survivors UK, said that Lincolnshire made "grave errors" only to be compounded by Met's flagrant obstruction of justice to cover up, adding:

> *The current unsatisfactory situation not only leaves considerable suspicion but also a massive discouragement to others to come forward in similar cases.*[464]

With added pressure from the negative press, compliments of *Buzzfeed* that took up David's righteous cause, once the survivor filed his formal complaint with IPCC, it may have ultimately swayed the police watchdog to look into Met's "alleged" cover-up, i.e., its outright refusal to even touch Dolphin Square debauchery.

In May 2016 a new Lincolnshire police commissioner tried putting his best spin forward:

A number of lessons were learned in relation to best practice and fed back to the Public Protection Unit[465] [i.e., don't tell the arrestee he's going to be arrested beforehand, don't tell him who his latest accuser(s) are and confiscate all his guns prior to arrest, all SOP police practice everywhere except when VIPs are the criminals]*.*

The Lincolnshire police superintendent issued a belated apology to David with the usual rhetoric that if the same investigation occurred today, it would have been handled differently… famous last words oftentimes heard before. Yet regardless of today or yesterday, the outcome always remains the same – no justice for VIP perps at the expense of no justice for victims. Apologies and rhetoric don't mean shit – today's system still fully protects sodomizers and inflicts double the pain and trauma on child victims.

As a postscript in the final days of 2016, a full decade after the first botched investigation-cover-up was willfully, prematurely closed, Lincolnshire Police finally conceded that it would reopen David's case against Dawson.[466] Of course small consolation, it changes nothing and likely was only done to appease the persistent bad publicity coming from *Buzzfeed*, providing a temporary reprieve from David's lifelong troubles. And the IPCC promise in 2015 to thoroughly re-investigate the Met's mishandling and cover-up at Dolphin Square? Whatever happened with that? Another "out of sight, out of mind" gloss over conveniently forgotten four years later. Child fuckers inside their palaces are toasting "long live the royal Commonwealth's cover-up of the centuries."

In 1985 the Met Police responded to an emergency call claiming that a boy of about 11 years of age appeared to be taken against his will into one of the Dolphin Square flats by adult men.[467] Upon arrival at the riverside complex, police discovered in the living room of one of the first floor units a makeshift film studio with expensive camera and lighting equipment still on. The occupants apparently were in a mad rush to escape filming their last scene. But there was no further criminal evidence at that time to go on - until a few months later. A child pornographic video was seized in a police raid in Soho's West End depicting two well-dressed men filmed from the neck down sexually abusing a boy about 11 from the same recognized Pimlico apartment.[468] During the 15-minute footage, the two abusers disrobed revealing their middle aged paunches with one showing a scar below his navel.

Thirty years later detectives working Operation Midland hoped to take advantage of forensic advances that might provide additional clues to aid in identifying the boy who'd now be in his 40s as well as his abusers. Reports of children murdered at Dolphin Square sex orgies under Operation Midland motivated law enforcement's renewed interest in the Westminster-Dolphin Square pedo-scandal, particularly because of the all too obvious history of Establishment cover-up. But it too apparently went nowhere just like Midland with no leads or subsequent arrests. And just like the VIP child rapists at Elm Guest House, the Dolphin Square pedophiles also got away with their sick depravities.

With all the post-Savile outrage and the ensuing public pressure to investigate and prosecute VIP child abusers, it didn't take long for the pedo-Establishment to predictably begin its pushback campaign. Teamed with the government-owned *BBC*, and the Lord McAlpine retraction, by 2015 British media claims of a "witch hunt" were well underway. In October that year a *Daily Mail* headline read "I'm the latest victim of sex abuse witch-hunt, says ex-MP: VIP police quiz former backbencher" with the first sentence out the starting gate:

A former MP became the latest victim of Labour's child sex abuse 'witch-hunt' yesterday.[469]

The elite's old familiar "divide and conquer" tactic pitting Labor versus Tory Party politics is the first giveaway to the elite's media manipulation. Reality check #1 – just as the planetary controllers control both parties in UK and US, in fact all major political parties virtually everywhere especially in the Western world are saturated with compromised, controlled and well-protected pedophiles. The second is the pejorative term "witch hunt" used to describe in order to nullify the thousands of actual child abuse victims' claims that are true.

The oft quoted alleged fake victim-fantasist "Nick" whose reportedly fraudulent allegations, once believed by Met Police as highly "credible" and "true," singlehandedly spawned the £3m Operation Midland boondoggle netting zero arrests is about to go on trial in March 2019 for perverting the course of justice and fraud. Immediately the Establishment seizes the opportunity to promote the false notion of an overzealous "witch hunt" that encourages fantasists like Nick and Darren to jump on the CSA bandwagon for press attention or money at the expense of poor old war heroes like General Lord Bramall or the *Daily Mail's* "ex-MP" like poor old, long suffering Harvey Proctor, or the martyred Sir Lord Leon trashed after his passing when no longer able to properly defend himself against this vengeful, wicked and groundless scheme to demonize these "innocent" VIPs being unfairly vilified, crucified and skewered by an out-of-control public lynch mob mentality. This is elitist propaganda caught turning the pendulum table with VIP rapists once again granted "get out of jail cards" while it's back to the abuse victims who end up on trial as fantasist, untrustworthy criminals.[470]

As mentioned earlier, this is just more of the same old "satanic panic as mere myth," and the "false memory syndrome" designed to negate actual child abuse memories and experiences.[471] The rulers employ the CIA to conjure up these clever little catchy, play-on-word fabrications as their weapons to suppress the truth. Hence, aluminum tin foiled, hat wearing "conspiracy theorists" are constantly promoting "false flag" accusations, making up outrageous, "not-to-be-believed" lies against our much maligned, upstanding leaders and governments. Bush's post 9/11 speech illustrates the point: "Let us never tolerate outrageous conspiracy theories."[472]

Throw in poor little Kitty and his Elm Guest House super injunctions,[473] his 2018 court victory over the police and *BBC* and his £5 m payout (see Chapter 21) barring the free press and people's right to know when famous suspects are arrested, and you have the ruling elite's highly effective pushback agenda aiding and abetting the pedo-cabal's continual rape of our innocents to guarantee permanent impunity for all VIP rapists. The elite's rigged legal system and multibillion dollar propaganda blitz ensure that the truth stays hidden so that powerful child rapists can safely go to their graves unburdened by consequences.[474] As a countermeasure to cut through their 24/7 bullshit lies, the purpose of this A-Z fully documented sourcebook exposé on modern pedophilia is to shine the spotlight on all the pedo-cockroaches so they can no longer pull the wool over our eyes and, under the false cover of their artificially created Luciferian darkness, roam freely to continue at will destroying thousands upon thousands of young people's lives the world over. The truth is finally out there and there's no place left to hide for these sick fucks.

With so called fantasists like Nick and Darren notwithstanding, plenty of legitimate abuse victims like the aforementioned David have come forth to share their harrowing abuse experiences at Dolphin Square. But with zero convictions resulting from the now closed Operations Midland and Fernbridge (save one minor ex-priest) and the IPCC and IISCA fizzling down and out into oblivion, despite all of these high profile productions ostensibly designed to investigate Westminster VIP abuse, it's as if the hundreds of victims reporting horrific abuse at Elm and Dolphin sex orgies through the years never happened at all when overwhelming evidence confirms that in fact it did. That shows you how hard working overtime the pedo-cabal's been to magically make the Westminster scandal go away once and for all. But the genie of lies and deception cannot be put back in the bottle because too much truth is already out there.

Yet another survivor of sex crimes at the Dolphin Square complex also named David went public with his story in May 2015. During his three month stay in London in 1975, a 20-year old David reports that he was coerced and threatened to attend sex parties at various locations including "the Dolphin" where he was forced to perform paid for sex acts with prominent MPs, senior military officers, judges and businessmen.[475] He claims that little boys as young as 8 were being savagely abused. To help get him through the traumatic events, he immersed himself in alcohol and drugs. One of the sex parties had the pedophiles celebrating Margaret Thatcher's promotion to becoming Tory Party leader in February 1975 in anticipation of her reign as the prime minister pedo-queen throughout the 1980s. The 60 year old abuse survivor in 2015 reported his sexual assaults to the press, disclosing that he observed Peter Hayman at parties abusing young boys as well as Peter Righton. David recalled how at a soiree in Notting Hill, he witnessed two brothers, one 8 and the other 10, drugged and forced to sexually assault each other for the sick viewing pleasure of drunken and vile dirty old men. When he attempted to intervene, he maintains that he was beaten unconscious. David also said he was coerced into performing a sex act on two politicians. In his words:

> *I was totally humiliated. And from then it started. I was drawn into this web where I was taken to these parties, I would be meeting individuals for sex. Just totally trapped. Then began my descent into drinking, taking drugs. It was just a nightmare.*[476]

Another link to Dolphin Square pedophiles is Roddam Twiss, disgraced son of Frank Twiss, the famed Admiral of the British Fleet and the queen's envoy in the House of Lords' Black Rod.[477] As a 27-year old teacher in 1967, Roddam Twiss was convicted of stripping, beating and sexually assaulting five boys as young as 11 and sentenced to three years. This perv has pretty much been into S&M on the rent boy scene ever since. As of 2004 he's also a convicted fraudster of a conman, stealing £1.2million of his investors' money and doing more time for that lowlife caper.[478] His past associates include Lennie Smith who Twiss at one time rented to. Smith is a member of the infamous Sidney Cooke gang, convicted of rape, torture and murder of many boys, including Jason Swift.[479] In 2018 MP Andrew Brigden called for Roddam to be summoned to the IICSA for his role as a rent boy procurer for Westminster pedophiles.[480]

Two detectives investigating Cyril Smith years ago observed the MP taking an underage boy to Roddam's flat. When they approached their superiors for the go-ahead to surveil Twiss, they were called off since the Twiss senior was then the queen's envoy in the House of Lords. For a hardcore pedophile like Twiss who's been a frequent Dolphin Square visitor for many decades, to call it the "den of iniquity," you know disgustingly sick shit is the Square's main faire. Twiss would regularly visit his close friend millionaire playboy Mervyn Greenway who lived there. Twiss has said, “Mervyn knew everyone in high places,” and of course that’s most helpful to a pimping procurer for VIPs at the Dolphin among a number of other safe pedo-havens around town.[481]

Despite the so called fantasists, former Scotland Yard detectives that investigated child abuse allegations at Elm House and Dolphin Square knew Westminster VIPs were vultures hurting children with impunity:

There was a significant paedophile group in Parliament who were untouchable to the police.[482]

I would add they still are. But the truth is making them increasingly nervous. Even a pedo-cabal insider let the truth slip out. A candid elitist in a rare moment dared to admit the truth in July 2014 when former Thatcher minister Lord Norman Tebbit confessed that “there may well have been” a political cover-up of pedophilia in the 1980s, and as the leader of the Tory Party whose job was to cover it all up, he should know.[483] When so many stay silent or continue lying through their false teeth, it’s refreshing to know that at least one Establishment figure mustered the guts to at least momentarily cop to what’s most undeniable.

In the same 2014 *BBC* article, of all people, Dame Margaret Oppenheimer-Hodge is quoted saying there’s been “a veil of secrecy over the establishment” for far too long… talk about the pot calling the kettle black! This too is an old elitist tactic, using the propaganda machine to put out a morsel of truth intended to de-vilify and distance proven past criminality. As Minister of Children, Hodge allegedly pressed PM Blair to issue a D-notice suppressing the Nene report in 2004 that also determined a high profile pedophile ring was rampantly abusing boys in 16 London care homes.[484] Any new finding that was confirming what she’d begun in Islington and Lambeth in the 80s and early 90s had spread to more London boroughs by 2004 while Britain's Minister of Children, no questions asked had to be covered-up.

If child sexual abuse is so tightly concealed in a massive UK cover-up, then torture and murder are too. Sometimes all three heinous crimes are committed by VIP untouchables. Among the running main themes of this book is what happens to those individuals who know too much for the deadly system to tolerate. That's when strange, mysterious, unexplained deaths are most apt to occur, like improbable suicides with two bullet holes through the head or sudden disappearances or untraceable heart attacks or lethal accidents, OD injections and other untimely fates that so often coincide with upcoming court appearances.

Another abrupt ending of a life is the suspicious death of 65-year old Sir John Stradling Thomas, Tory MP of Monmouth from 1970 to his March 1991 death. The MP was found dead in his Dolphin Square flat, reportedly just hours prior to speaking about deadly child abuse and its cover-up involving Westminster peers and prominent senior officials in NHS and UK Care System.[485] In 1990 and 1991 Sir John embarked on a series of correspondences with former Health Minister Tony Newton, Attorney General Patrick Mayhew and Home Secretary Earl Ferrers, apparently making unwanted waves inquiring into dozens of covered up deaths of children in Suffolk care, many disabled.[486]

Sir John may have stumbled upon and opened a Pandora's Box that quickly closed in on him at his Dolphin Square flat on March 29, 1991… that Pandora's Box being lethal Tavistock methods using guinea pig drug experimentation on disabled children at an NHS contracted facility in Suffolk County called Beeches, among a large number of other children's facilities throughout Britain.[487] Both Islington and Hackney sent children with cerebral palsy to Beeches where 43 children mysteriously died between 1954 and 1972.[488] Only two of the 43 children had inquests. Evidence shows major cover-up collusion between a host of authorities in Suffolk alone, including the County Council, County National Health Service, Suffolk Police and Police Crime Commissioner… not to mention Suffolk's long related history of child sexual abuse.[489] MP Thomas may well have been digging his own grave at the infamously shady Dolphin Square complex, digging and probing into dirty business considered off limits to MPs with a conscience. Plus one would think the sudden death of a knighted, upstanding MP for 21 years would draw more press. There's absolutely nothing on his cause of death. Predictably, Operation Midland that rightfully should have taken this entire matter never did. And with a rabbit hole running this deep, nor will the IICSA whitewash.

A year after MP Thomas's death, in 1992 when the well-connected, overly protected child procurer Peter Righton was busted for possessing and distributing child pornography, Lord Henniker opened up his Suffolk estate Thornham Magna as the founding PIE member's next residence for several years.[490] Recall that Margaret Hodge as Islington council leader was sending vulnerable at-risk children from her pedo-infested care homes to Thornham Magna under the Islington-Suffolk Project, using the estate as an educational and recreational center. With the likes of Righton, his convicted pedo-lover Alston and their convicted pedo-friend Napier all granted free access to the boy toy sweet shop, it's highly suspected that more children were sexually assaulted there. At all cost UK upholds its longstanding pattern protecting VIP pedophiles while child advocates trying to safeguard targeted kids from harm or uncover past child abuse and murder are targeted themselves for abuse and murder. Lucifer has always had a home in Freemason country.

Another Tory MP who died a suspicious death also found lifeless in his Dolphin Square flat was MP Iain Mills (covered in Chapter 21). Though a supposed teetotaler and never seen publicly consuming alcoholic beverages, MP Mills was discovered two days after his January 1997 demise with empty gin bottles around him and a high content of alcohol allegedly in his bloodstream that old “faithful hands,” cabal coroner Dr. Paul Knapman automatically ruled alcohol poisoning.[491] Iain Mills had been a close friend and ally of MP Geoffrey Dickens who died just months earlier, and speculation that Mills also was growing increasingly intolerant and disgusted by the rampant Dolphin Square sex orgies at the expense of abused trafficked children may have led to his premature departure at only 57. And speaking of another Chapter 21 strange and suspicious death at the Dolphin pedo-haven, 64-year old Judge Rodney McKinnon allegedly fell to his death and Knapman insisted it was suicide despite the strong objection from Rodney’s brother who was also a judge.

Though so called Nick’s three witnessed murders of abused child victims at Dolphin Square are now allegedly untrue, plenty of murdered boys associated with the Elm Guest House and Dolphin Square scandals remain fact. Two of the highest profile, still unsolved disappearance-murder cases are 15-year old Martin Allen in 1979 followed less than two years later by 8-year old Vishal Mehrotra in 1981.

Kevin Allen was just 18 months older than his brother Martin. As teenage sons of head chauffeur of the Australian high commissioner, the Allen family lived in the caretaker’s 5-bedroom cottage located just behind the commissioner’s residence at Stoke Lodge on the famous Kensington street Hyde Park Gate where the DeBeers jewelry family were neighbors and Winston Churchill lived and died.[492] At the underground basement of the Canberra House down the street from the Australian Embassy, for pocket change Kevin and Martin would regularly wash the commissioner’s custom car fleet.

But then on Guy Fawkes Night, November 5th, 1979, Martin was last seen at the Kings Cross tube station heading home after visiting his oldest brother. A witness reported to the press at the time that he identified Martin being held by a six foot blonde man by the scruff of the neck on the subway train.[493] Moreover, coverage of the Elm Guest House raid in August 1982 stated that the investigation into the two missing boys in 1979 and 1981 was reopened and widened to link them with the dirty business a short distance away at the Elm Guest House among other houses of ill repute around London. But then the outcome of this "widening" investigation was never again reported because, like all the rest of the VIP police inquiries into pedophilia, it was ordered shut down not only to conceal child sex abuse but very likely murder as well.

In recent years it has come to light that whenever the father's crew of five chauffeurs were already booked, a temporary chauffeur rental service on the other side of the Thames would be hired for fill-in drivers, one of whom was pedophile-murderer Sidney Cooke.[494] Known to procure and traffic children to VIP bigwig parties at nearby Elm Guest House, the Dolphin Square complex and other select locations around London including even Amsterdam, the Cooke gang "Dirty Dozen" regularly grabbed boys from off the street as well as care homes to deliver abuse victims to sex orgies.

When a 17-year old Kevin Allen was asked by the lead detective what he believed happened to his younger brother, Kevin said he thought that Martin had been abducted by a higher or elite person. According to Kevin, the investigator pointed his finger at Kevin, threatening:

You shouldn't be saying things like that, you could get hurt. *[495]*

From an incisive January 2015 article in *The Australian*, drawing links to the VIP pedophile ring:

For more than 30 years, the activities of this incredibly well-connected pedophile network was apparently protected from scrutiny through the issuing of government D-notices, which prevent media publication of anything deemed to affect national security. It is believed this stymied police investigations. Hundreds of files relating to the disclosures and evidence about the VIP pedophile ring have since gone missing. Kevin says the files relating to Martin's disappearance have been destroyed twice.[496]

The article goes on to reference the abruptly disbanded 1986 police probe into the VIP pedo-ring just one day before the scheduled arrest of Leon Brittan, Cyril Smith and 14 other high profile figures photographed attending an orgy in North London, victimizing boys picked up at Kings Cross.[497] It's more than plausible that Martin Allen was also picked up at Kings Cross, kidnapped, dropped off and sexually abused by VIPs, only to be disposed of by the likes of the Sidney Cooke gang, ultimately covered up by police at the behest of the criminal Establishment.

On the celebrated day when Prince Charles married Lady Diana on July 29, 1981, an 8-year old boy named Vishal Mehrotra suddenly vanished after watching the wedding precession with his family.[498] While his family went shopping afterwards, used to walking to and from school every day on his own, the boy headed the short distance home alone, apparently reaching within 300 yards of his Putney residence before disappearing. Vishal was last seen less than a mile from Elm Guest House. Though several witnesses claimed they'd seen men with a young Asian boy, the leads grew cold. Then a few months later in February 1982 in a wooded area in West Sussex, a skull and rib cage were found and identified as Vishal's remains. Months later the father, a Wimbledon court magistrate, recorded a 15-minute phone conversation from a man believed to be in his 20s who shared that he believed that Vishal was apprehended by those associated with the Elm Guest House VIP pedophile ring. But when the father brought the new piece of evidence to the police, he soon was disappointed:

> *… Instead of investigating it, they just pooh-poohed it and I never heard anything about the tape again. The whole thing went cold. At that time I trusted the police. But when nothing happened, I became confused and concerned. Now it is clear to me that there has been a huge cover up. There is no doubt in my mind.*[499]

Despite insisting that 20,000 people were interviewed by police, as soon as Scotland Yard learned that judges and politicians were implicated, the interest in finding Vishal Mehrotra's killers apparently went no further. Again the now 92-year old Sidney Cooke, currently serving two life sentences linked to nine murdered boys, was named at least eight times in a heavily censored police report on the missing 8-year old boy's murder.[500] Cooke had worked at fairgrounds and records show that at the time of Vishal's abduction, two fairs were in the area. Released through a 2015 Freedom of Information request, large blocks of the police report were redacted, obviously because the Scotland Yard has much to hide in its cover-up protection of child raping VIPs. An informant in the review made the statement that "Cooke and his associates" claimed at least 12 victims, including an "Asian boy."

Police kept secret from Vishal's family that four or five suspects were questioned and released, and the senior officer admitted that suspects' alibis were not carefully checked.[501] The shoddy murder investigation also failed to follow up a shoe found in the bog next to Vishal's remains nor two people observed throwing a sack over the fence where the bones were found. In short, the police purposely sabotaged solving the case in order to shield the Westminster pedo-ring. And despite the IPCC watchdog in 2015 including Scotland Yard ignoring the Elm Guest House tipoff as one of 14 allegations it would pursue, again nothing ever came out of that either.

Sidney Cooke and his “Dirty Dozen” gang ultimately were convicted of torturing and murdering three boys – 7-year old Mark Tildesley lured from a fairground Cooke was working in 1984, a year later 14-year old Jason Swift from a Margaret Hodge Islington care home in 1985 and abducted 6-year old Barry Lewis in 1991. But the lead detective Roger Stoodley who provided evidence to secure the three convictions by 1992 under Operation Orchid feels near certain that 17 more abduction-murders were committed by this same evil gang throughout the 1980s into the early 90s.[502] Cooke and his gang supplied boys grabbed off the street, recruited rent boys from the public toilets and trafficked care home boys to VIP orgies at both Elm Guest House and Dolphin Square as well as Kensington, North London and other locations. Besides being a fairground worker, Cooke also worked as a chauffeur and has been linked to both the Martin Allen and Vishal Mehrotra abduction-murders that fit his gang’s M.O. profile. But because police inspections at Elm Guest House, Dolphin Square, Lambeth and North London, Manchester were all consistently closed as soon as Westminster MPs, Downing Street ministers, high court judges, senior police commanders and security services were implicated as suspects, all policing actions in Britain have been immediately suspended and records destroyed. The cover-up must go on.

With Operations Fairbank, Fairbridge and Midland opened during the post-Savile revelations, it was hoped by all VIP victims and both the Allen and Mehrotra families that justice can finally be done but because the pedophile Establishment is still in control protecting all prominent pedophiles still alive in its inner elite club, no VIPs have been arrested much less convicted. Then in 2015 when the IPCC was launched to investigate Scotland Yard’s blatant cover-ups at both Dolphin Square and the Vishal Mehrotra murder, hopes again were raised but it too was for mere public appeasement just like the IICSA. As said before, the British government, including law enforcement and its judicial system, are all saturated with slithering low life criminal scum and they will never be willing to reveal the full truth and take responsibility for their heinous crimes against children. And the same can be said for their just as guilty counterparts in North America, Europe, Australia and likely most of the rest of the world as it's a global scourge we are facing now. Worldwide truth and reconciliation commissions are necessary.

One of the Scotland Yard detective sergeants working on the original 1981 Mehrotra murder case, Jackie Malton, whose career inspired the Helen Mirren ITV series "Prime Suspect," as much as admitted a police cover-up took place.[503] Just days earlier in November 2014, Vishal's father had revealed that the police had refused to investigate the taped phone conversation of a young male prostitute stating his son was very likely taken in by a Westminster pedophile ring operating out of the Elm Guest House, leaving the father to conclude the tape was refused because it implicated "judges and politicians," forcing the police to engage in a huge cover-up. After retiring from the Met in 1997 as detective chief inspector, Jackie has now gone on record stating that the investigation she worked on for four months in 1981, attempting in vain to solve Vishal's abduction and murder case, may have been compromised by the "power of politicians," adding:

During my time in the police there was a feeling of misuse of power. There were a lot of powerful people saying, 'Don't you know who I am?' There was also a strong sense of the power of Parliament and of politicians. It was very much a case of 'Do as you are told.'"[504]

After four months on the case, Jackie was reassigned elsewhere. Weeks later Vishal's father submitted the taped conversation. She now concedes that the recording may have been ignored and the murder covered up because of powerful senior Westminster politicians. She went on to surmise:

There is clear evidence that something was happening at that [Elm] *guesthouse. If nothing has been done about it in retrospect, then Mr Mehrotra is right. Either the police disbelieved it, or they covered it up one way or another… Some inquiries would come to an end when someone senior said, 'That's enough.' I remember a case where there was an MP accused of cottaging and it all kind of disappeared… Politicians were very much in power, and the police officers' voices could often not be heard* [just like the voiceless child victims].[505]

Many players both big and small have been part of Britain's mammoth pedophilia network and its equally mammoth cover-up. A few rotten ones on the bottom go to jail, the rest live above the law.

On July 8, 2014 Dr. Jon Bird from the National Association for People Abused in Childhood (NAPAC) spoke to the press about his observations based on the high volume of alleged victims calling in to report historic child sex abuse crimes committed by powerful VIPs, independently reporting virtually the same 10 high profile abusers:

The names of people in very high places – politicians, senior police officers and even some judges – have been going around as abusers for a very long time. Since the Jimmy Savile revelations, there's been a sea change in the way police and the CPS respond to these sort of complaints and now, at last, it looks like these people are going to be investigated.[506]

Investigated? Don't get your hopes up Dr. Jon. For all the countless official probes, reviews and reports, again none of the major perps in government have ever been arrested, prosecuted, convicted or imprisoned for raping a child – NONE! What may have been your sincere optimism[JH1] about the long-awaited "sea change" a half decade ago now appears to be a mere transitory case of false hope. Sea change or no sea change, not one VIP pedophile has ever spent a full day in jail for his sordid crimes, despite Theresa May's sham of a long, drawn out, sputtering "independent inquiry" into government abuse. She, it and Brexit are but one big cruel joke unleashed on the good people of Britain who've once again been had and hoodwinked.

Though Dr. Bird specifies that the same 10 pedophile names that keep coming up include "senior police officers and even some judges," a current consensus of most identified VIP pedos, aside from Prince Charles' mentor and uncle Lord Mountbatten and his favorite trio Sir Jimmy Savile, Sir Anthony Blunt and Bishop Peter Ball, the following 10 politicians might make the Top 10 List of pervert politicians: Sir Cyril Smith, Sir Leon Brittan, Sir Greville Janner, Sir Peter Hayman, Sir Peter Morrison, Sir Ted Heath, Sir Nicholas Fairburn, Sir Peter Mandelson, Sir Paul Boatteng and ex-MP Harvey Proctor. Dishonorable mentions could easily go to Lord Boothby and MP Tom Driberg from the 1950s and 60s but it's unlikely that enough child victims would still be alive to name them in 2014 as their abusers. Spared is Sir Peter Bottomley – he may just blow a gasket. Notice of the Top 10 every single one of these alleged high profile child abusers but one have been granted knighthood by the queen, with the vast majority already escaped to their rotting graves unpunished.

Shifting from perpetrator to victim, the extensive pedophilia network that runs both inside and outside of Great Britain from local to national to international is both widespread and sadly well-travelled by trafficked care home children that the system makes a national policy of betraying instead of protecting for over a century now. Between civil servants in social services, NHS, education, UK security services to politicians in local and national government, care home kids were and still are a cheap commodity systemically shuffled from one geographical location to the next to be abused again and again and again. It too became UK national policy. The ratlines most often converge on London as Britain's pedo-wheel hub but they branch out in every direction to Jersey Island, Amsterdam, Brussels, Portugal, Wales, Northern Ireland, Scotland and well beyond. Children within national care systems are even exchanged as well. Recall Righton's trade with Malta. Or from last chapter victims from Islington routinely get sent for abuse in Jersey and vice versa. A massive criminal network of moving child victims back and forth for VIP abuse to virtually everywhere in the world captures just a glimpse into the world's largest illegal operation that's reached an unprecedented, industrial, pandemic scale today, in case you haven't noticed.

Just over a decade ago it was discovered that in addition to Islington's policy of swapping children with Jersey Island, social services from the city of Birmingham were also busted illegally dropping off kids in the pedophilia haven of Jersey and then losing track of them.[507] This only came to light during the police investigation into Jersey's deathtrap care home Haut de la Garenne after 100 bone fragments and 65 teeth of dead children were unearthed. Liberal Democrat MP from Birmingham John Hemming said:

> *The Government has refused to order councils to check properly because it does not want to open a can of worms, on the links between abusers in England and Jersey… The system nationally is not properly accountable. Children are taken into care never to be seen again… They are stalling*

because they are embarrassed by the size of the problem, and because it involves English authorities, too.[508]

In other words, social services all around Britain will not be checking into their records any time soon, nor will police, NHS or Home Office require it because it would only prove that it's simply been UK's longtime national policy to misuse its children from its underclass as scorned, disposable objects to be tortured and destroyed by its deranged elite for a very long time. This page as yet another dark chapter was only uncovered after MP Henning requested his district's social services check account records that showed Birmingham had made payments to Jersey from 1960 to 1990. Remember, the UK maintained a long history of banishing over 150,000 of its children to other Commonwealth countries (which Jersey is part of) for further abuse as a national policy. So this problem at the world's pedo-epicenter is systemic.

The fact remains that nearly a quarter century after veteran journalist-Channel 4 presenter Jon Snow's scathing critique in a 1996 *Guardian* article of "the UK Care System" has only gone from bad to worse in the level of abuse heaped on the disposable British youth population.[509] Snow's 1996 appraisal was painfully accurate describing how children too early in their young lives fall victim into a spiraling cycle of systemic failure, delivering human suffering at the most unsettling, most profound levels. Beginning with the dire family conditions of austerity and impoverishment that typically give way to the overreaching authoritarian UK family court system, secretly exploiting families and forcing hapless British kids into residential placement or foster care often far from home in a national care system that delivers the farthest thing from genuine care.

Through no fault of their own, children have virtually forever been helplessly trapped in a multi-tiered system set up to fail and harm them at every turn, starting with rampant sexual abuse at their care homes only to be farmed out and trafficked by organized pedophile rings, too often ending up raped and sodomized by their nation’s most powerful beasts atop the predatory food chain entrusted to deliver the very “care” system that is systematically destroying them, and has been operating this way for over a half century. Moreover, as a national policy to ship unwanted British children off to Australia, New Zealand, Canada, South Africa, and what’s now Zimbabwe for further abuse is unconscionable, yet leave it to the world’s pedo-epicenter to perpetrate this despicable crime against 150,000 youth for centuries up to 1974.[510] The UK Care System is arguably the most egregious, most heinous institutionalized mind fuck ever put on innocent kids imaginable.

As previously mentioned in Chapter 10, with the average “shelf life” of trafficked child sex slaves only two years, this lethal cycle of abuse invariably involves drug addiction, plied throughout by pimping perpetrators at every level for obvious control purposes. At any point along this death trap road, young people attempting to escape the system go missing, and the growing number exceeding 10,000 each year alone in Britain only find themselves preyed upon as runaway rent boys and girls aging out of the system at 18 if they even live that long.[511] With Jon Snow citing 23 years ago that 75% of kids leaving the system have no educational qualifications, it’s far worse now with dropout rates rising all the time. Both minors and young adults without formal education or legitimate means of self-support, prostitution becomes an all too common fate for survival, followed by early death by murder, disease or suicide, whichever comes first. And with estimates of 12 million sexually abused British citizens out of a total population of near 67 million, we’re talking one in five in the UK are the walking wounded.

With human slavery and pedophilia reaching an unprecedented, off the chart scale across this pandemic globe, unless we citizens of the world do something now to change this ungodly bottom line reality, the child raping Luciferians in control may destroy us all. Robotics, automaton, transhumanism and artificial intelligence are making over 90% of us “useless eating” humans obsolete, so just as the queen’s husband’s wet dream is to kill us off as a contagious virus, the rest of his planetary controlling ilk want nearly all of us dead. As repeatedly mentioned, their genocidal war against humanity being fought right now is down to either us or them. Marked in the murdering criminals’ crosshairs, we the peace-loving citizens of the world have the right to defend ourselves and our children by holding them accountable for all their countless atrocities and crimes against humanity.

Over recent years and decades, the tragically common fate of sexually abused children has befallen millions worldwide and with the sex slave industry currently at an all-time shameful high in recorded history, it’s high time we stewards of the earth finally begin protecting our most precious resources starting with our children from the monsters who for millenniums have ruled over and are fast destroying our only living habitat. Since today we know more about the pedophilia scourge than at any previous time in human history, the profiteers behind the child sex slave trade are the very same planetary controlling profiteers behind our fiat, debt-based economic slavery system, our perpetual state of war and our world’s sixth mass life extinction, the first one whose known caused is the deranged subhuman species in control. Before the real Homo sapiens perish at the hands of these bloodthirsty cannibals, it’s urgent we take decisive action to employ organizations like the International Tribunal for Natural Justice (ITNJ) to learn more and ascertain the extent of global child abuse,[512] leading to truth and reconciliation commissions to hold those most guilty criminals at the very top fully accountable. The bottom line - at this ever-late hour, again it's literally down to either us or them. For our own self-preservation as a human species, we must fight our known and identifiable enemy now! Tomorrow may be too late.

Chapter 25 delves into high profile pedophilia scandals that have gripped England's northern neighbor Scotland, first with the horrific 1996 Dunblane massacre of 16 schoolchildren and their teacher, the subsequent Tony Blair directed D-noticed, century sealed cover-up and then the controversial Holly Greig abuse case and its disgraceful ongoing cover-up.

---

[1] James Hanning and Paul Cahalan, "Special Report: Police Revisit the Grim Mystery of Elm Guest House," *Independent*, December 16, 2012, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/special-report-police-revisit-the-grim-mystery-of-elm-guest-house.

[2] Keir Mudie, "VIP Paedophile Files: The Sick Web of High=Powered and well-Connected Child Abusers," *Mirror*, March 21, 2015, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/vip-paedophile-files-sick-web-5379332.

[3] Richard Pendlebury and Stephen Wright, "Revealed: Face of Boy Abused in Elm House Scandal as Catholic priest and Head of Boys' Home are Arrested," *Daily Mail*, February 6, 2013, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2274703/Revealed-Face-boy-abused-Elm-House-scandal-Catholic-priest-head-boys-home-arrested.html.

[4] Keir Mudie and Nick Dorman, "Elm Guest House Scandal: First Victim of Paedo Guest House Breaks his Silence," *Mirror*, February 2, 2013, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/first-victim-of-elm-guest-house-1572073.

[5] Keir Mudie and Nick Dorman, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/first-victim-of-elm-guest-house-1572073.

[6] David Pallister and David Hencke, "Files Reveal who turned Elm Guest House into Paedo Brothel," *Exaro News*, February 2, 2013, https://www.exaronews.com/files-reveal-who-turned-elm-guest-house-into-paedo-brothel.

[7] "Spartacus Boys and the CIA," *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, April 10, 2016, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/07/spartacus-boys-and-cia.html

[8] Murun Buchstansangur, “The Spartacus Paedophile Network was Exposed by the Sunday People in February 1983,” *spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, May 23, 2013, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/05/23/the-spartacus-paedophile-network-was-exposed-by-the-sunday-people-in-february-1983/.

[9] Roger Insall, “Child Vice Holidays,” *Sunday People/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, February 6, 1983, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2013/05/people6283b.jpg.

[10] Ewelina U. Ochab, “The World’s Fastest Growing Crime,” *Forbes*, July 29, 2017, https://www.forbes.com/sites/ewelinaochab/2017/07/29/the-worlds-fastest-growing-crime/#170c7973aae1.

[11] David Hencke and David Pallister, “Elm Guest House Scandal: Coded Advert that gave Signal to Perverts,” *Mirror*, February 2, 2013, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/latest-news/adverts-for-elm-guest-house-included-1571994.

[12] “Royals Linked to Pedo Ring,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, December 1, 2014, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/11/royals-linked-to-pedo-ring.html.

[13] Charles Frith, “MI5 and IRA VIP Paedo Abuse/Blackmail at Elm Guest House,” *charlesfrith.blogspot.com*, October 19, 2013, http://charlesfrith.blogspot.com/2013/10/vip-paedo-abuse-at-elm-guest-house.html.

[14] Ian Drury, “MI5 ‘Hid’ Child Abuse at Boys’ Home: Former Army Intelligence Officer Claims Security Chiefs Told him to ‘Stop Digging’ when he Reported possible Paedophile Ring,” *Daily Mail*, April 7, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3029553/MI5-hid-child-abuse-boys-home-Former-Army-intelligence-officer-claims-security-chiefs-told-stop-digging-reported-possible-paedophile-ring.html.

[15] “North Wales Paedophile Ring, Top People, the Police and Security Services,” *aangirgan.blogspot.com*, July 5, 2005, http://pierrejoubert.blogspot.com/2005/07/north-wales-paedophile-ring-top-people.html.

[16] "International Network – Whistleblower Kerr," *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, December 4, 2017, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2017/12/international-network-whistleblower-kerr.html.

[17] Nico Hines, "How Thatcher's Government Covered-up a VIP Pedophile Ring," *The Daily Beast*, June 3, 2015, https://www.thedailybeast.com/how-thatchers-government-covered-up-a-vip-pedophile-ring.

[18] Daniel Kraemer, "MPs Sign up for £2m of Free Overseas Trips," *BBC*, October 18, 2018, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-politics-45883411.

[19] "North Wales Paedophile Ring, Top People, the Police and Security Services," http://pierrejoubert.blogspot.com/2005/07/north-wales-paedophile-ring-top-people.html.

[20] Jonathon Corke, Tony Bushby and Deborah Sherwood, "Tory Paedo Cover-up," *Daily Star*, October 28, 2012, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/279380/TORY-PAEDO-COVER-UP.

[21] Jonathon Corke, Tony Bushby and Deborah Sherwood, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/279380/TORY-PAEDO-COVER-UP.

[22] Jeff Edwards, "Cover-up Bid in Vice Scandal," *News of the World/spotlightonabusee.wordpress.com*, August 8, 1982, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2013/02/notwelm1.jpg.

[23] Jonathon Corke, Tony Bushby and Deborah Sherwood, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/279380/TORY-PAEDO-COVER-UP.

[24] "To Battle Against The Jesuits: The Banker's Illuminati was to Counter the Roman Catholic Christians!" *politicalvelcraft.org*, https://politicalvelcraft.org/2012/09/14/illuminati-origins-of-secret-government-the-mental-fatal-disease-of-militant-narcissists-stop-them-cold-protect-the-constitution/.

[25] Gunar Olsen, "Corporate Media Want nothing less than Permanent War," *truthdig.com*, February 1, 2019, https://www.truthdig.com/articles/corporate-media-want-nothing-less-than-permanent-war/.

[26] Paul Adams, "Usury: Weapon of Control and Enslavement – Part 1 of 2," *Activist Post*, November 4, 2013, https://www.activistpost.com/2013/11/usury-weapon-of-control-and-enslavement.html.

[27] Michael Snyder, "Global Debt Tops 244 Trillion Dollars as 'nearly half the World Lives on less than $5.50 A day,'" *Zero Hedge*, January 18, 2019, https://www.zerohedge.com/news/2019-01-18/global-debt-tops-244-trillion-dollars-nearly-half-world-lives-less-550-day.

[28] Makia Freeman, "Why are the Elite Poisoning the Planet?" *The Freedom Articles*, July 26, 2013, http://freedom-articles.toolsforfreedom.com/why-are-elite-poisoning-the-planet/.

[29] Mike Adams, "Globalist Plan to Exterminate 90% of Mankind Begins now: 'Useless Eaters' must be Eliminated, say Globalists," *Natural News*, November 18, 2018, https://www.naturalnews.com/2018-11-18-the-globalist-plan-to-exterminate-humanity-useless-eaters.html.

[30] “Masonic Initiation,” *freeworldfilmworks.com*, http://www.freeworldfilmworks.com/anwog-mason1.htm.

[31] Justin Penrose, “The Net Closes: Ex-Tory Chief Faces Child Sex Arrest over Claims Girl was Raped and Boys were Abused,” *Mirror*, February 16, 2013, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/former-tory-faces-child-sex-1714162.

[32] Fiona O'Clerigh and Mark Watts, "Met Detectives told of Jimmy Savile's Link to Elm Guest House," Exaro News, February 16, 2013, https://www.exaronews.com/met-detectives-told-of-jimmy-savile-s-link-to-elm-guest-house?doing_wp_cron=1547197273.8036150932312011718750.

[33] "The Mary Moss Elm Guest House VIP Paedophile Party List," *cigpapers.blog*, April 29, 2013, https://cigpapers.blog/2013/04/29/the-elm-guest-house-vip-paedophile-party-list/.

[34] "Wanted Pedo – Peter Righton's Network," *cathyfox.wordpress.com*, April 2, 2018, https://cathyfox.wordpress.com/2018/04/02/wantedpedo-peter-rightons-network/.

[35] Paul Peachey, "Tory MP's Half-Brother Charles Napier Sentenced to 13 years over 'Prolific' Child Sex Abuse," *Independent*, December 23, 2014, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/tory-mps-half-brother-charles-napier-sentenced-to-13-years-over-prolific-child-sex-abuse-9942651.html.

[36] Chris Hastings, "Thatcher allowed Paedophile to keep Knighthood: Late former Prime Minister Blocked Plans to Strip Sir Peter Hayman of Honour," *Daily Mail*, May 16, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3084781/Thatcher-allowed-paedophile-knighthood-Late-former-Prime-Minister-blocked-plans-strip-Sir-Peter-Hayman-honour.html.

[37] Lisa O' Carroll, "MP calls for Inquiry into possible Paedophile Ring Link to Parliament," *The Guardian*, October 24, 2012, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2012/oct/24/mp-inquiry-paedophile-link-parliament.

[38] Gordon Rayner and David Barrett, "'More than 10' Politicians on List Held by Police Investigating Westminster 'Paedophile Ring,'" *The Telegraph*, July 4, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/10947561/More-than-10-politicians-on-list-held-by-police-investigating-Westminster-paedophile-ring.html.

[39] Keir Mudie and Mark Conrad, "Ex-Tory Minister 'Pictured in Child Sex Abuse Video' Confiscated by Customs at Dover in 1982," *Mirror*, March 29, 2014, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/ex-tory-minister-pictured-child-sex-3300248.

[40] Tim Tate, "The Politician, the Paedophiles, the Police & Press, *timtate.co.uk*, August 4, 2015, http://timtate.co.uk/blog/the-politician-the-paedophiles-the-police-press/.

[41] Keir Mudie and Mark Conrad, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/ex-tory-minister-pictured-child-sex-3300248.

[42] Nick Davies, "Paedophilia is easy 2: How a Paedophle Murder fell apart," *The Guardian*, November 27, 2000, https://www.nickdavies.net/2000/11/27/paedophilia-is-easy-2-how-a-paedophile-murder-inquiry-fell-apart/.

[43] "Warwick Spinks & Co." *brynalynvictims.blogspot.com*, June 8, 2013, http://brynalynvictims.blogspot.com/2013/06/warwick-spinks-co.html.

[44] Keir Mudie and Mark Conrad, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/ex-tory-minister-pictured-child-sex-3300248.

[45] Tim Tate, http://timtate.co.uk/blog/the-politician-the-paedophiles-the-police-press/.

[46] “Neil Kier Given Elm Guest House Raid Job,” *Alternative News Network*, February 23, 2013, https://alternativenewsnetwork.wordpress.com/2013/02/23/neil-kier-given-elm-guest-house-raid-job/.

[47] “The Mary Moss Elm Guest House VIP Paedophile Party List,” https://cigpapers.blog/2013/04/29/the-elm-guest-house-vip-paedophile-party-list/.

[48] “The Child Abuse Network – Top Names – Part Two,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, January 29, 2015, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2015/01/the-child-abuse-network-top-names-part.html.

[49] “Neil Kier Given Elm Guest House Raid Job,” https://alternativenewsnetwork.wordpress.com/2013/02/23/neil-kier-given-elm-guest-house-raid-job/

[50] “Mysterious Cadbury Death,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, December 5, 2015, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2015/12/mysterious-cadbury-death.html.

[51] “Was Owner of Elm Guest House who kept List of Secret VIP Visitors Murdered? Newly Discovered Files…” *goodnessandharmony.wordpress.com*, November 11, 2017, https://goodnessandharmony.wordpress.com/2017/11/12/was-owner-of-a-paedophile-palace-who-kept-list-of-secret-vip-visitors-murdered-newly-discovered-files/.

[52] “Heir to Candy bar Fortune Dies of Apparent Suicide,” *UPI*, August 1, 1982, https://www.upi.com/Archives/1982/08/01/Heir-to-candy-bar-fortune-dies-of-apparent-suicide/1613397022400/.

[53] “Was Owner of Elm Guest House who kept List of Secret VIP Visitors Murdered? Newly Discovered Files…” https://goodnessandharmony.wordpress.com/2017/11/12/was-owner-of-a-paedophile-palace-who-kept-list-of-secret-vip-visitors-murdered-newly-discovered-files/.

[54] David Barrett, Tim Tate and Christopher Hope, “Westminster Paedophile Ring Allegations: Scotland Yard Detectives Trace ‘Victim,’” *The Telegraph*, July 6, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/10950138/Westminster-paedophile-ring-allegations-Scotland-Yard-detectives-trace-victim.html.

[55] Charles Savoie, “More Rothschild Linkage to the Pilgrims,” *silvermarketnewsonline.com*, October 2018, https://www.silvermarketnewsonline.com/articles/MoreRothschildLinkage_Savoie102618.pdf.

[56] Joel van der Reijden, “The Pilgrims Society: A Study of the Anglo-American Establishment; Rockefeller, Mellon, Luce, Rothschild, Cecil, Windsor, the Federal Reserve, WWII, the CIA, and so much more,” *isgp-studes.com*, July 17, 2008, https://isgp-studies.com/pilgrims-society-us-uk.

[57] “Le Cercle: Clerical Fascism and the Pedophocracy Part III,” *visupvew.blogspot.com*, April 30, 2016,

http://visupview.blogspot.com/2016/04/le-cercle-clerical-fascism-and_2.html.

[58] "Was Owner of Elm Guest House who kept List of Secret VIP Visitors Murdered? Newly Discovered Files…" https://goodnessandharmony.wordpress.com/2017/11/12/was-owner-of-a-paedophile-palace-who-kept-list-of-secret-vip-visitors-murdered-newly-discovered-files/.

[59] David Barrett, Tim Tate and Christopher Hope, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/10950138/Westminster-paedophile-ring-allegations-Scotland-Yard-detectives-trace-victim.html.

[60] Tim Tate, http://timtate.co.uk/blog/the-politician-the-paedophiles-the-police-press/.

[61] David Barrett, Tim Tate and Christopher Hope, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/10950138/Westminster-paedophile-ring-allegations-Scotland-Yard-detectives-trace-victim.html.

[62] David Hencke and Fiona O'Clerigh, "Elm Guest House: 'Boy Brothel Boss' Haroon Kasir to leave Britain for America," *Mirror*, February 16, 2013, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/elm-guest-house-boy-brothel-1713966.

[63] Murun Buchstansangur, "Spotlight," *spotlghtonabuse.wordpress.com*, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/.

[64] Murun Buchstansangur, “Leon Brittan and the 1984 ‘Cabinet Minister Scandal,’” *spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, April 19, 2014, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2014/04/19/the-1984-cabinet-minister-scandal/.

[65] Mike Ambrose, “Whitehall Fears Sex Scandal,” *Morning Starspotlightonabuse.wordprss.com*, June 23, 1984, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2014/04/mstar230684.jpg.

[66] “Cabinet Minister Scandal,” *Private Eye/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, June 26, 1984, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2013/02/brittaneye1.jpg.

[67] “Yvonne Fletcher Murdered by Our Spooks,” *aangirfan.com*, September 1, 2011, http://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2011/08/yvonne-fletcher-murdered-by-our-spooks.html.

[68] Paul Craig Roberts, “Hillary’s War Crime: The Murder of Muammar Gaddafi. ‘We Came, we Saw, he Died,’” *Global Research*, October 21, 2016, https://www.globalresearch.ca/hillarys-war-crime-the-murder-of-muammar-gaddafi-we-came-we-saw-he-died/5552094.

[69] “Leon Brittan and Private Eye,” *aangirfan.com*, November 1, 2014, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/11/leon-brittan-and-private-eye.html.

[70] Guy Adams, “Are the Vile Paedophile Allegations against Leon Brittan a Sinister MI5 Smear Plot?” *Daily Mail*, October 31, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2816508/Are-vile-paedophile-allegations-against-Leon-Brittan-sinister-MI5-smear-plot-Labour-MP-uses-Commons-privilege-link-Tory-abuse.html#ixzz3HnOB5xVz.

[71] “Sir Cyril Smith ‘Visited Alleged Sex Abuse Guest House,’” *BBC*, September 13, 2013, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-england-manchester-24074818.

[72] James Hanning and Paul Cahalan, “Cyril Smith named in Barnes Abuse Case,” *Independent*, January 27, 2013, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/cyril-smith-named-in-barnes-abuse-case.

[73] Steven Swinford, “’Influential’ Politician Visited Guest House at Centre of Child Sex Investigation,” *The Telegraph*, April 18, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/liberaldemocrats/10775360/Influential-politician-visited-guest-house-at-centre-of-child-sex-investigation.html.

[74] Levi Winchester, “Leon Brittan ‘Attended Paedophile Parties in Notorious Brothel,’” *Express*, January 25, 2015, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/554152/Leon-Brittan-paedophile-party-claims.

[75] “Nightmares at Elm Guest House,” https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ORU5x-ryedU; interview transcript, http://google-law.blogspot.com/2014/01/elm-guest-house-scandal-how-child-abuse_5191.html/

[76] Jamie Merrill, “Leon Brittan Exclusive: Tory Peer Questioned by Police over Rape Allegation,” *Independent*, July 6, 2014,

https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/exclusive-lord-brittan-questioned-by-police-over-rape-allegation-9587245.html.

[77] Martin Beckford, "Scotland Yard Failed to Record the only time it Quizzed Leon Brittan: Report Reveals String of Blunders by Met Police over Historic Sex Abuse Allegations," *Daily Mail*, February 7, 2016, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3435581/Scotland-Yard-failed-record-time-quizzed-Leon-Brittan-Report-reveals-string-blunders-Met-police-officers-interviewed-former-Home-Secretary-historic-sex-abuse-allegations.html.

[78] Mark Conrad, "Former Home Secretary was subject to Major Investigation by Police at time of his Death," *Exaro News*, January 24, 2015, https://www.exaronews.com/leon-brittan-was-under-met-probe-over-claims-of-child-sex-abuse?doing_wp_cron=1546500039.8120288848876953125000.

[79] Keir Mudie, "New Victim Links Notorious Paedophile to VIP Child Abuse Network, *Mirror*, April 6, 2013, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/new-victim-links-notorious-paedophile-1815932.

[80] Keir Mudie, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/new-victim-links-notorious-paedophile-1815932.

[81] "The Mary Moss Elm Guest House VIP Paedophile Party List," https://cigpapers.blog/2013/04/29/the-elm-guest-house-vip-paedophile-party-list/.

[82] "Crown Office Appointments – Foreign Office," *The London Gazette*, May 24, 1966, p. 6128, Robin Jasper pdf.

[83] "Arrest of Alastair Laing and Colin Peters, Members of HM Diplomatic Service, in Naples," *nationalarchives.gov.uk*, http://discovery.nationalarchives.gov.uk/details/r/C6100084.

[84] Tom Harper, "Sex Abuse File Shut until 2056," *The Sunday Times*, March 29, 2015, https://www.thetimes.co.uk/article/sex-abuse-file-shut-until-2056-685xl5shx0k.

[85] Mark Burdman, "Paedophiles Arrested in Britain: More Powerful than the Mafia," *EIR*, February 17, 1989, https://www.larouchepub.com/eiw/public/1989/eirv16n08-19890217/eirv16n08-19890217_042.

[86] Martin Kettle, "Why we must talk about Britten's Boys," *The Guardian*, November 21, 2012, https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2012/nov/21/britten-boys-obsession-cannot-ignore.

[87] Brook Allen, "Reconsidering E.M. Forster," *Truthdig*, December 23, 2009, https://www.truthdig.com/articles/reconsidering-e-m-forster/.

[88] Dame Alun Roberts, twitter.com, January 21, 2019, https://twitter.com/ciabaudo/status/1087274710684131328.

[89] "Curator's Interview," *ezin.codart.nl*, spring 2013, https://ezine.codart.nl/17/issue/45/artikel/an-interview-with-alastair-laing-retired-curator-of-pictures-and-sculpture-at-the-national-trust-interviewed-by-annette-de-vries/?id=117#!/page/1.

[90] Anthony Blunt, Alastair Laing and Christopher Tadgell, *Baroque and Rococo Architecture and Decoration* (New York: Harper & Row), 1978, https://www.amazon.com/Baroque-Rococo-Architecture-Decoration-Anthony/dp/006430115X.

[91] Sebastian Shakespeare, "Jacob gets Hitched, old-Tory Style," *Daily Mail*, January 14, 2007, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/columnists/article-428788/Jacob-gets-hitched-old-Tory-style.html.

[92] Peter Brooke, "What is a 'Paedophile?'" *peterbrooke.org*, http://www.peterbrooke.org.uk/p%26t/sexuality/paedophile.

[93] "The Mary Moss Elm Guest House VIP Paedophile Party List," https://cigpapers.blog/2013/04/29/the-elm-guest-house-vip-paedophile-party-list/.

[94] Greg Christison, "Esther's Horror at Fairbairn Child Sex Allegations," *Express*, July 21, 2014, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/490176/Esther-s-horror-at-Fairbairn-child-sex-allegations.

[95] Keith Perry, "Warnings of Westminster Paedophile Network 'Ignored' because 'there were too many,'" *The Telegraph*, July 12, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/10963499/Warnings-of-Westminster-paedophile-network-ignored-because-there-were-too-many.html.

[96] Murun Buchstansangur, "The Peter Righton Case: Recommendations that were Ignored by Department of Health," *spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, November 30, 2013, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/11/30/the-peter-righton-case-recommendations-that-were-ignored-by-department-of-health/.

[97] Peter McKelvie, "A Personal Viewpoint," *spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, 1993, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2013/11/personalreport.jpg

[98] Keith Perry, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/10963499/Warnings-of-Westminster-paedophile-network-ignored-because-there-were-too-many.html.

[99] Keith Perry, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/10963499/Warnings-of-Westminster-paedophile-network-ignored-because-there-were-too-many.html.

[100] Rose Waterhouse, "Satanic Abuse Dismissed as 'Myth' by Government Inquiry: Report Blames Evangelical Christians and 'Specialists' for the Scare which led to Investigations," *Independent*, June 3, 1994, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/satanic-abuse-dismissed-as-myth-by-government-report.

[101] "Virginia Bottomley," *howlingpixel.com*, https://howlingpixel.com/i-en/Virginia_Bottomley.

[102] Barbara Hewson, "The Hampstead Cult that wasn't: the Satanic Panic Revisited," *Spiked*, March 23, 2015, https://www.spiked-online.com/2015/03/23/the-hampstead-cult-that-wasnt-the-satanic-panic-revisited/.

[103] Jon Ronson, “After Kubrick” *The Guardian*, August 18, 2010, https://www.theguardian.com/film/2010/aug/18/stanley-kubrick-christiane.

[104] Christopher Spivey, “The Who’s Who of Satanic Child Abuse,” *chrisspivey.org*, January 30, 2014, https://chrisspivey.org/the-whos-who-of-satanic-child-abuse/.

[105] Tom Burghardt, “’Non-Lethal’ Weapons: Where Science and Technology Service Repression,” *Global Research*, July 10, 2008, https://www.globalresearch.ca/non-lethal-weapons-where-science-and-technology-service-repression/9554.

[106] Laura Burnip, “Heath Linked to a Murderous Paedophile Ring that Killed 16 Kids,” *The Sun*, February 20, 2017, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/2906130/edward-heath-satanic-paedophile-ring/.

[107] Simon Walters, “Sir Edward Heath was a Paedophile, says Police Chief: Astonishing Claim is made that the former PM is Guilty of Vile Crimes ‘Covered up by the Establishment,’” *Daily Mail*, February 18, 2017, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4238188/Sir-Edward-Heath-paedophile-says-police-chief.html.

[108] Simon Walters, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4238188/Sir-Edward-Heath-paedophile-says-police-chief.html.

[109] Nico Hines, “The Mysterious Case of the ‘Pedophile’ Prime Minister, Sir Edward Heath,” *Daily Beast*, October 5, 2017, https://www.thedailybeast.com/the-mysterious-case-of-the-pedophile-prime-minister-sir-edward-heath.

[110] David Icke, “Pedophile and Child Killing,” *biblotecapleyades.net*, January 17, 2013, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/biggestsecret/esp_icke108.htm.

[111] “Heysel Disaster 1985,” YouTube video, 5:50, posted on July 23, 2013, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=lRDzBi1lZj8.

[112] Paul Harper, “When was the Kings Cross Fire in 1987, how many Victims were Involved in the Disaster and what’s Changed at the Station?” *The Sun*, November 16, 2017, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/4912950/kings-cross-fire-london-anniversary-november-18-1987/.

[113] Kings Cross Fire, Dolphin Square, Boy-Brothels, Suspicious Deaths, Murderous Arson and the VIP Child-Abuse Connection,” *The Coleman Experience/holliegreigjustice.wordpress.com*, April 22, 2014, https://holliegreigjustice.wordpress.com/2016/01/06/kings-cross-fire-dolphin-square-boy-brothels-suspicious-deaths-murderous-arson-and-the-vip-child-abuse-connection/.

[114] Lara Keay, “’I still Shake when I fly’: Survivor of Kegworth Air Disaster who ‘didn't know whether he was alive or Dead’ recalls moment 47 were Killed in British Midland Plane Crash on M1 30 years ago,” *Daily Mail*, January 8, 2019, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-6569269/Kegworth-Leicestershire-30th-anniversary-plane-crash-M1-embankment-47-people-died.html.

[115] “San Francisco Archbishop’s Account of Oscar Romero’s Funeral,” *National Catholic Reporter*, March 24, 2015, https://www.ncronline.org/news/world/san-

francisco-archbishops-account-oscar-romeros-funeral.

[116] "Peter Bottomley: Biography," *fampeople.com*, http://www.fampeople.com/cat-peter-bottomley.

[117] Beatrix Campbell, "When in Doubt, Blame the Children," *Independent/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, March 24, 1993, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/03/13/when-in-doubt-blame-the-children-24-3-93//.

[118] Simon Regan, "Shame and Scandal in the Family," *Scalawag/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, 1993, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/03/08/bottomley-bottoms-out-1993/.

[119] Simon Regan, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/03/08/bottomley-bottoms-out-1993/

[120] Ted Oliver, "Mr Evil's Child Sex Gang are Locked up, *Daily Mirror/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, February 4, 1989, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2014/02/mirror040289.jpg.

[121] "Operation Hedgerow, Part 2," *scepticpeg.wordpress.com*, January 4, 2018, https://scepticpeg.wordpress.com/2018/01/04/operation-hedgerow-pt-2-dont-open-the-box-you-will-never-get-the-lid-back-on/.

[122] Operation Hedgerow, Part 2," https://scepticpeg.wordpress.com/2018/01/04/operation-hedgerow-pt-2-dont-open-the-box-you-will-never-get-the-lid-back-on/.

[123] Martin Hickman, "Police Failings put dozens of Children at Risk from Notorious Paedophile Gang," Independent, November 4, 2013, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/police-failings-put-dozens-of-children-at-risk-from-notorious-paedophile-ring-8518522.html.

[124] James Fielding, "Exclusive: 'I was Warned off' says Detective involved in Historic Paedophile Probe," *Express*, December 21, 2014, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/548083/Roger-Gaspar-Westminister-paedophile-ring-investigation-detective-warned-off.

[125] Tim Tate and Ted Jeory, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/485529/Special-Branch-funded-Paedophile-Information-Exchange-says-Home-Office-whistleblower.

[126] Tim Tate and Ted Jeory, "Exclusive: Secret service Infiltrated Paedophile Group to 'Blackmail Establishment,'" *Express*, June 29, 2014, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/485529/Special-Branch-funded-Paedophile-Information-Exchange-says-Home-Office-whistleblower.

[127] Tom McTague, "Top British Diplomat was Focus of Secret Government File sent to Margaret Thatcher about 'Unnatural' Sexual Behaviour," *Daily Mail*, January 30, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2933319/Top-British-diplomat-focus-secret-Government-file-sent-Margaret-Thatcher-unnatural-sexual-behaviour.html.

[128] Tim Tate, “PIE and the Independent Child Abuse Inquiry,” *timtate.co.uk*, February 3, 2017, http://timtate.co.uk/category/blog/.

[129] Stephen Swinford, “Leon Brittan was given Second Paedophile Dossier,” *The Telegraph*, July 7, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/10952480/Leon-Brittan-was-given-second-paedophile-dossier.html.

[130] Chris Greenwood, “Brittan Refused call to Ban Paedophile Support Group PIE: Tory said he wanted to see if existing Laws would be adequate to deal with the group,” *Daily Mail*, June 4, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3111741/Brittan-refused-call-ban-paedophile-support-group-PIE-Tory-said-wanted-existing-laws-adequate-deal-group.html.

[131] Peter Walker, “Secret 1981 File Naming Senior Diplomat as Paedophile is Released to Public,” *The Guardian*, January 30, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2015/jan/30/sir-peter-hayman-paedophile-file-national-archives-inquiry-child-abuse.

[132] Peter Walker, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2015/jan/30/sir-peter-hayman-paedophile-file-national-archives-inquiry-child-abuse.

[133] “Tory MP Warned of Powerful Paedophile Ring 30 years ago,” *Independent*, February 22, 2013, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/tory-mp-warned-of-powerful-paedophile-ring-30-years-ago-8507780.html.

[134] “Tory MP Warned of Powerful Paedophile Ring 30 years ago,” https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/tory-mp-warned-of-powerful-paedophile-ring-30-years-ago-8507780.html.

[135] Richard Pendlebury and Stephen Wright, “Leon Brittan’s Faulty Memory and a Ticking Timebomb that could shake Westminster: Tory Peer faces Questions over 1980s Files Complied by MP Geoffrey Dickens on Westminster Paedophile Ring,” *Daily Mail*, July 2, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2678576/Leon-Brittans-faulty-memory-ticking-timebomb-shake-Westminster-Tory-peer-faces-questions-1980s-files-complied-MP-Geoffrey-Dickens-Westminster-paedophile-ring.html.

[136] James Hanning, Tim Tate and David Connett, “Paedophile Register of Controversial Group Ignored by Police,” *Independent*, March 19, 2016, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/paedophile-register-of-controversial-group-ignored-by-police.

[137] Tim Tate, http://timtate.co.uk/category/blog/.

[138] Matthew Weaver, “Met Police Apologises for Failing to Protect Children at Risk of Abuse,” *The Guardian*, November 25, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2016/nov/25/met-police-martin-hewitt-apologises-for-failing-to-protect-children-at-risk-of-abuse.

[139] Rickeo, “The Elm Guest House List,” *freeandfearless.org.uk*, July 27, 2017, https://www.freeandfearless.org.uk/elm-guest-house-list.

[140] “Soham Force Police Chief Charged with Child Abuse,” *Daily Mail*, November 14, 2005, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-368602/Soham-force-police-chief-charged-child-abuse.html.

[141] Steven Morris, “Ex-Police Chief Gordon Anglesea Jailed for Child Sexual Abuse,” *The Guardian*, November 24, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2016/nov/04/ex-police-chief-gordon-anglesea-jailed-child-sexual-abuse-north-wales.

[142] “Chef Constable Accused in Child-Abuse Scandal. No Acton in 9 Months,” *The Skwawkbox*, August 16, 2017, https://skwawkbox.org/2017/08/16/chief-constable-accused-in-child-abuse-scandal-no-action-in-9-months/.

[143] Tim Tate, http://timtate.co.uk/category/blog/.

[144] Tim Tate, “Knaves or Fools? The Home Office and the IICSA,” *timtate.co.uk*, October 18, 2016, http://timtate.co.uk/category/blog/page/2/.

[145] Kim Pilling, “Rochdale Abuse: Authorities showed ‘total lack of Urgency’ in Tackling Historic Sex Abuse of Boys,” *Independent*, April 12, 2018, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/rochdale-sex-abuse-cyril.

[146] Daniel Uria, “May Delays Vote on final Brexit deal due to Brussels Negotiations,” *UPI*, February 24, 2019, https://www.upi.com/Top_News/World-News/2019/02/24/May-delays-vote-on-final-Brexit-deal-due-to-Brussels-negotiations/7121551025051/.

[147] Owen Bowcott, “Child Abuse Inquiry to cover ‘Concealment of Evidence against MPs,’” *The Guardian*, January 31, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/jan/31/uk-child-sex-abuse-inquiry-concealing-evidence-mps.

[148] Steve Robson, “Paedophile MP Cyril Smith ‘Admitted Spanking Boys to Police in the 1960s’ and was Friends with Jimmy Savile,” *Daily Mail*, November 29, 2012, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2240269/Paedophile-MP-Cyril-Smith-admitted-spanking-boys-police-1960s-friends-Jimmy-Savile.html.

[149] “International Network – Whistleblower Kerr,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, December 4, 2017, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2017/12/international-network-whistleblower-kerr.html.

[150] Simon Danczuk, “’I’ve come to Examine you’: From Bogus Medical Examinations to Punishment Beatings, how Paedophile Cyril Smith used his Powerful Public Image to Abuse Boys, *Daily Mail*, April 11, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2602869/How-paedophile-Cyril-Smith-used-powerful-public-image-abuse-boys.html.

[151] David Hencke, “Cyril Smith: New Evidence of Cover up of the Liberal Democrat’s Leading Child Sex Abuser,” *daviidhencke.com*, September 12, 2013, https://davidhencke.com/2013/09/12/cyril-smith-new-evidence-of-cover-up-of-the-liberal-democrats-leading-child-sex-abuser/.

[152] Simon Danczuk, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2602869/How-paedophile-Cyril-Smith-used-powerful-public-image-abuse-boys.html.

[153] Simon Danczuk, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2602869/How-paedophile-Cyril-Smith-used-powerful-public-image-abuse-boys.html.

[154] Steve White, “He did Sexually Abuse Boys: Authorities Admit Cyril Smith was Paedophile,” *Mirror*, November 27, 2011, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/cyril-smith-was-paedophile-police-admit-1459987.

[155] Simon Danczuk, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2602869/How-paedophile-Cyril-Smith-used-powerful-public-image-abuse-boys.html.

[156] Andrew Malone, “Chilling Claims that Cyril Smith Child Abuse Scandal was Concealed to Avoid Crisis at Westminster,” *Daly Mail*, November 23, 2012, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2237627/Cyril-Smith-child-abuse-Chilling-claims-Smith-child-abuse-scandal-concealed-avoid-crisis-Westminster.html.

[157] Simon Danczuk, “Knighted by Steel and Eulogised by Clegg: Cyril Smith and the Indelible Shame of the Liberal Party,” *Daily Mail*, April 11, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2602930/Knighted-Steel-eulogised-Clegg-Cyril-Smith-indelible-shame-Liberal-Party.html.

[158] “Former Liberal Democrat MP Cyril Smith Dies,” *BBC*, September 3, 2010, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-politics-11180264.

[159] Nick Hopkins and Jake Morris, “Cyril Smith Child Abuse Inquiry ‘Scrapped after his Arrest,’” *BBC*, March 17, 2015, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-31908431.

[160] “Sir Cyril Smith ‘Sexually Abused’ Young Boys and Avoided Prosecution three times, Police say,” *Huffington Post*, November 27, 2012, https://www.huffingtonpost.co.uk/2012/11/27/sir-cyril-smith-abuse_n_2198713.html.

[161] Ryan Sabey and Amanda Ravell Walton, “Evil MP Cyril Smith and Jimmy Savile were Close Friends for Four Decades,” *The Sun*, November 29, 2012, https://www.thesun.co.uk/archives/news/296250/evil-mp-cyril-smith-and-jimmy-savile-were-close-friends-for-four-decades/.

[162] Simon Danczuk, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2602869/How-paedophile-Cyril-Smith-used-powerful-public-image-abuse-boys.html.

[163] “Cyril Smith, This is Your Life: A Timeline,” *needleblog.wordpress.com*, January 7, 2015, https://theneedleblog.wordpress.com/2015/01/07/cyril-smith-this-is-your-life-a-timeline/comment-page-1/.

[164] James Hanning and Paul Cahalan, “Abuse Victims were ‘Trafficked Abroad,’” *Independent*, February 3, 2013, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/abuse-victims-trafficked-abroad-8478607.html.

[165] Robert Mendick, “MI5 knew of Cover-up over Cyril Smith Child Abuse, Inquiry hears,” *The Telegraph*, October 9, 2017, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2017/10/09/mi5-knew-cover-up-cyril-smith-child-abuse-inquiry-hears/.

[166] Martin Evans, “Sir Cyril Smith's Family ‘Deeply Saddened’ as Police Admit he Escaped Abuse Charges,” *The Telegraph*, November 28, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/9707609/Sir-Cyril-Smiths-family-deeply-saddened-as-police-admit-he-escaped-abuse-charges.html.

[167] Martin Evans, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/9707609/Sir-Cyril-Smiths-family-deeply-saddened-as-police-admit-he-escaped-abuse-charges.html.

[168] Simon Danczuk, “How Liberals offered Hush Money to Hide Cyril Smith’s Abuse,” *Daily Mail*, April 3, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3025076/EXPOSED-Liberals-offered-hush-money-hide-Cyril-Smith-s-abuse-MP-SIMON-DANCZUK-reveals-devastating-new-evidence-raises-deeply-troubling-questions-David-Steel-Nick-Clegg.html.

[169] Sophie Jane Evans, “Lib Dem Leader put Paedophile MP Cyril Smith forward for Knighthood ‘even after he was told of Abuse Allegations,’” *Daly Mail*, February 23, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2566158/Lord-David-Steel-paedophile-MP-Cyril-Smith-forward-knighthood-told-abuse-allegations.html.

[170] “Historic VIP Child Sex Abuse Cop Files go Missing,” *oye.news*, September 20, 2015, https://www.oye.news/news/freedoms/whistleblowing/historic-vip-child-sex-abuse-cop-files-go-missing/.

[171] Martin Evans, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/9707609/Sir-Cyril-Smiths-family-deeply-saddened-as-police-admit-he-escaped-abuse-charges.html.

[172] Martin Evans, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/9707609/Sir-Cyril-Smiths-family-deeply-saddened-as-police-admit-he-escaped-abuse-charges.html.

[173] Steven Swinford, “Sir Cyril Smith Sex Abuse Dossier Seized by MI5,” *The Telegraph*, November 14, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/9678697/Sir-Cyril-Smith-sex-abuse-dossier-seized-by-MI5.html.

[174] Steven Swinford, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/9678697/Sir-Cyril-Smith-sex-abuse-dossier-seized-by-MI5.html.

[175] Nico Hines, https://www.thedailybeast.com/how-thatchers-government-covered-up-a-vip-pedophile-ring?ref=scroll.

[176] Don Hale, “Exclusive: MPs Face Sex Abuse Arrests!” *Daily Star*, November 30, 2014, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/412932/Two-MPs-face-child-sex-abuse-arrest.

[177] Andrew Malone, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2237627/Cyril-Smith-child-abuse-Chilling-claims-Smith-child-abuse-scandal-concealed-avoid-crisis-Westminster.html.

[178] Don Hale, “Exclusive: Cyril Smith was Linked to Paedo Brothel Murder Probe says Ex-Cop,” *Daily Star*, December 7, 2014, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/414072/Cyril-Smith-was-linked-to-paedo-brothel-murder-probe-says-ex-cop.

[179] Don Hale, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/414072/Cyril-Smith-was-linked-to-paedo-brothel-murder-probe-says-ex-cop.

[180] Don Hale, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/414072/Cyril-Smith-was-linked-to-paedo-brothel-murder-probe-says-ex-cop.

[181] Don Hale, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/414072/Cyril-Smith-was-linked-to-paedo-brothel-murder-probe-says-ex-cop.

[182] Nick Hopkins and Jake Morris, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-31908431.

[183] Don Hale, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/414072/Cyril-Smith-was-linked-to-paedo-brothel-murder-probe-says-ex-cop.

[184] Jaya Narain and Martin Robinson, “Cyril Smith was Spared Court because he would have Exposed other high-profile Child Abusers says former Police Detective,” *Daily Mail*, March 16, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2997971/Cyril-Smith-held-paedophile-sex-party-police-told-cover-face-prosecution-Official-Secrets-Act.html.

[185] Don Hale, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/414072/Cyril-Smith-was-linked-to-paedo-brothel-murder-probe-says-ex-cop.

[186] Don Hale, https://www.dailystar.co.uk/news/latest-news/414072/Cyril-Smith-was-linked-to-paedo-brothel-murder-probe-says-ex-cop.

[187] Simon Danczuk, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2602869/How-paedophile-Cyril-Smith-used-powerful-public-image-abuse-boys.html.

[188] Cambridge House, Knowl View and Rochdale Investigation Report, *IICSA*, April 2018, Report into the Cambridge House, Knowl View and Rochdale.

[189] Justin Penrose, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/former-tory-faces-child-sex-1714162.

[190] Stephen Wright and Richard Pendlebury, “Timebomb at Elm Guest House: Pop stars, a Bishop and a top Politician Appear on a List Seized by Police Investigating Child Abuse at the London Hotel in the 1980s,” *Daily Mail*, February 1, 2013, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2272253/Timebomb-Elm-Guest-House-Pop-stars-bishop-politician-appear-list-seized-police-investigating-child-abuse-London-hotel-1980s.html#axzz2Jjhe2wpl.

[191] Keir Mudie, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/new-victim-links-notorious-paedophile-1815932.

[192] “Cyril Smith, This is Your Life: A Timeline,” https://theneedleblog.wordpress.com/2015/01/07/cyril-smith-this-is-your-life-a-timeline/comment-page-1/.

[193] Vikram Dodd and Rajeev Syal, “Cyril Smith Abuse Claims: ‘Decision not to Prosecute would not be made today,’” *The Guardian*, November 27, 2012, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2012/nov/27/cyril-smith-claims-decision-prosecute.

[194] Rajeev Syal, “Senior Liberals ‘were aware of Cyril Smith Child Abuse Allegations,’” *The Guardian*, February 26, 2013, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2013/feb/26/liberals-cyril-smith-abuse-allegations.

[195] Tony Rennell, “The Sickest Establishment Cover-up of all: How the Great and the Good let Jeremy Thorpe get away with Sex Abuse... and gave a Green Light to Monsters like Cyril Smith and Jimmy Savile,” *Daily Mail*, July 29, 2016, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3715496/The-sickest-Establishment-cover-great-good-let-Jeremy-Thorpe-away-sex-abuse-gave-green-light-monsters-like-Cyril-Smith-Jimmy-Savile.html.

[196] Sophie Jane Evans, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2566158/Lord-David-Steel-paedophile-MP-Cyril-Smith-forward-knighthood-told-abuse-allegations.html.

[197] Nick Fielding, “Police Abandon Probe into Cyril Smith’s Sexual Abuse of Boys,” *Exaro News*, May 13, 2013, https://www.exaronews.com/police-abandon-probe-into-cyril-smith-s-sexual-abuse-of-boys.

[198] Steve White, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/cyril-smith-was-paedophile-police-admit-1459987.

[199] Andrew Malone, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2237627/Cyril-Smith-child-abuse-Chilling-claims-Smith-child-abuse-scandal-concealed-avoid-crisis-Westminster.html.

[200] “Prince Philip, Duke of Edinburgh, Reaches 60 years as a Member of the Craft,” *Freemasonry Today*, September 5, 2013, https://www.freemasonrytoday.com/ugle-sgc/ugle/prince-philip-duke-of-edinburgh-60-years-freemason.

[201] “Prince Philip, in his own Words: We need to ‘Cull’ the Surplus Population,” *bibliotecapleyades.net*, August 25, 1997, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_depopu12.htm.

[202] Ian Cobain, “Freemasonry Explained: A Guide to the Secretive Society,” *The Guardian*, February 4, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2018/feb/04/freemasonry-explained-guide.

[203] Anthony Forwood, “Freemasons (Luciferians): They are Bound by Oaths to Protect each other — No Matter what,” *humansarefree.com*, December 2016, http://humansarefree.com/2016/12/freemasons-luciferians-they-are-bound.html.

[204] Tom Harper, “Revealed: How Gangs used the Freemasons to Corrupt Police,” *Independent*, January 13, 2014, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/revealed-how-gangs-used-the-freemasons-to-corrupt-police-9054670.html.

[205] “Spartacus Boys and the CIA,” http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/07/spartacus-boys-and-cia.html.

[206] “The CIA Runs the Pedophile Rings,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, November 17, 2014, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/11/the-cia-runs-pedophile-rings.html.

[207] “’Child Sex’ Used to Control the World,” *aanirfan.blogspot.com*, July 1, 2014, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/06/child-sex-used-to-control-world.html.

[208] Nick Davies, “When Sex Abuse can lead to Murder,” *The Guardian*, November 27, 2000, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2000/nov/27/childprotection.uk.

[209] “The Power of Paedophile connections in Europe and the United Kingdom,” *google-law.blogspot.com*, July 9, 2013, http://google-law.blogspot.com/2013/07/the-power-of-paedophiles-connections-in.html.

[210] “Boylinks – USA, UK, Europe, the World,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, July 11, 2013, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2013/07/boylinks-usa-uk-europe-

world.html.

[211] “The Elm Guest House Money Men,” *7493021a.wordpress.com*, Jun 4, 2013, https://7493021a.wordpress.com/2013/06/04/the-elm-guest-house-money-men/.

[212] “Michael Stuart Rowe,” *companydirectorcheck.com*, https://www.companydirectorcheck.com/michael-stuart-rowe-2.

[213] “Spook 666 – The Devil’s Agent,” *forum.davidicke.com*, October 5, 2013, https://forum.davidicke.com/showpost.php?p=1061494908&postcount=65471.

[214] Christian Gysin, Peter Kane, Anton Antononowicz and Georgina Walsh, “Seamy Secrets of the Lord Fox,” *Sunday Mirror/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, May 21, 1987, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2014/10/mirror210587a.jpg.

[215] Terry Lovell, “Spanking MP: The Shocking Truth,” *The People/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, September 28, 1986, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2014/10/people280986a.jpg

[216] “Proctor’s Mates have a Whip-Round,” *The People/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, July 12, 1987, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2014/10/people1207871.jpg.

[217] Ian McKerron and Kim Willsher, “Proctor Fined £1,450 in Spanking Scandal,” *Daily Mail/spotlghtonabuse.wordpress.com*, May 21, 1987, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2014/10/exp210587.jpg.

[218] James Hanning, “Former Tory MP Harvey Proctor: I was about to Kill myself, but an Act of Kindness Saved my life,” *Independent*, May 6, 2015, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/people/former-tory-mp-harvey-proctor

[219] James Hanning, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/people/former-tory-mp-harvey-proctor

[220] Rajeev Syal, “Zac Goldsmith Urged to Withdraw Paedophile Ring Allegations,” *The Guardian*, October 14, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2015/oct/14/zac-goldsmith-urged-to-withdraw-paedophile-ring-allegations.

[221] Rickeo, https://www.freeandfearless.org.uk/elm-guest-house-list.

[222] Terry Lovell and Phil Hall, “Arrested,” *The People/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, March 15, 1987, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2014/10/people150387a.jpg.

[223] Padraic Flanagan, “Tories Lose their Shirts on Harvey,” *Sunday Express/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, July 30, 2000, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2014/10/sexp300700.jpg.

[224] Murun Buchstansangur, “Harvey Proctor, Cottonrose Ltd., and the Conservative Party,” *spotlghtonabuse.wordpress.com*, October 16, 2014, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2014/10/16/harvey-proctor-cottonrose-ltd-and-the-conservative-party/.

[225] Mike Sullivan, “Cops Raid Home of Ex-MP Harvey Proctor,” *The Sun*, March 5, 2015, https://www.thesun.co.uk/archives/news/130700/cops-raid-home-of-ex-

mp-harvey-proctor/.

[226] Martin Evans, “Former Tory MP Harvey Proctor Sues Accuser and Scotland Yard for £1m,” *The Guardian*, May 4, 2018, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2018/05/04/harvey-proctor-sues-accuser-nick-scotland-yard/.

[227] “Den of Sex Man is Jailed,” *The Hull Daily Mail/theneedleblog.wordpress.com*, February 25, 1988, https://theneedleblog.files.wordpress.com/2015/04/a.png.

[228] Judith Halliday, “City Club Boss Wins his Liberty,” *The Hull Daily Mail/theneedleblog.wordpress.com*, May 28, 1988, https://theneedleblog.files.wordpress.com/2015/04/liberty.png.

[229] “Meet the Conservative Monday Club – Racist Roots and Extremism,” *True Publica*, November 22, 2017, https://truepublica.org.uk/contributor-news/meet-the-conservative-monday-club-racist/.

[230] “The Mary Moss Elm Guest House VIP Paedophile Party List,” https://cigpapers.blog/2013/04/29/the-elm-guest-house-vip-paedophile-party-list/.

[231] Jason Groves, “I’ll Sue if anyone Links me to Untrue Paedophile Claims, says Tory Grandee Sir Peter Bottomley,” *Daily Mail*, July 7, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2683533/I-ll-sue-links-untrue-paedophile-claims-says-Tory-grandee-Peter-Bottomley.html.

[232] Christopher Spivey, “Derek! Who the F*** is Derek?” *chrisspivey.org*, January 19, 2013, https://chrisspivey.org/derek-who-the-f-is-derek/.

[233] “Big Brother’s Tory is ‘Friend of Camilla,’” *Daily Mail*, June 3, 2005, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/tvshowbiz/article-350541/Big-Brothers-Tory-friend-Camilla.html.

[234] Angus James, “Lord McAlpine and the Paedophile Ring,” *Scallywag Magazine*, 1994, http://1.bp.blogspot.com/-WLFs7ZufuUE/UKNmz4M7_II/AAAAAAAAAAo/9eOv8swEAVk/s1600/mcalpine_3.jpg.

[235] “Monday Club,” *scepticpeg.wordpress.com*, February 21, 2016, https://scepticpeg.wordpress.com/2016/02/21/monday-club/.

[236] “The Mary Moss Elm Guest House VIP Paedophile Party List,” https://cigpapers.blog/2013/04/29/the-elm-guest-house-vip-paedophile-party-list/.

[237] “Professor Peter Campbell,” *The Telegraph*, June 15, 2005, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/1492042/Professor-Peter-Campbell.html.

[238] Kier Mudie and David Hencke, “Paedo Brothel Advertised in Tory Leaflet: Party's Gay Link to Guest House,” *Mirror*, January 26, 2013, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/paedo-brothel-elm-guest-house-1558001.

[239] Kier Mudie and David Hencke, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/paedo-brothel-elm-guest-house-1558001.

[240] "How much does he earn? No 21: Dr. John Burton, Coroner for West London," *Independent*, March 13, 1994, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/how-much-does-he-earn-no-21-dr-john-burton-coroner-for-west-london-1428814.html.

[241] "Nightmares at Elm Guest House," Chris Fay interviewed by Bill Maloney, posted October 14, 2013, 1:05:16, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ORU5x-ryedU.

[242] David Hencke, "Exclusive: How newly found "Destroyed" Papers Revive the Mystery of the Notorious Gay and Paedophile Elm Guest House," *davidhencke.com*, November 12, 2017, https://davidhencke.com/2017/11/12/exclusive-how-newly-found-destroyed-papers-revive-the-mystery-of-the-notorious-gay-and-paedophile-elm-guest-house/.

[243] David Hencke, https://davidhencke.com/2017/11/12/exclusive-how-newly-found-destroyed-papers-revive-the-mystery-of-the-notorious-gay-and-paedophile-elm-guest-house/.

[244] Keir Mudie and David Hencke, "Was Owner of Paedophile Palace who kept Secret List of VIP Visitors Murdered?" *Mirror*, November 11, 2017, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/secret-files-prove-carole-kasir-11506791.

[245] Keir Mudie and David Hencke, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/secret-files-prove-carole-kasir-11506791.

[246] James Fielding, "'Police Gunman told me to Ignore Paedophiles,' says ex-Child Protection Officer, *Express*, October 20, 2013, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/437954/Police-gunman-told-me-to-ignore-paedophiles-says-ex-child-protection-officer.

[247] James Fielding, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/437954/Police-gunman-told-me-to-ignore-paedophiles-says-ex-child-protection-officer.

[248] James Hanning and Paul Cahalan, "Elm Guest House Investigation: Former Senior Cabinet Minister Faces Rape Investigation," *Independent/cigpapers.blog*, July 21, 2013, https://cigpapers.blog/2013/04/29/the-elm-guest-house-vip-paedophile-party-list/.

[249] James Hanning and Paul Cahalan, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/special-report-police-revisit-the-grim-mystery-of-elm-guest-house.

[250] Robert Mendick, "'VIP Child Abuse Ring' Accuser Served time in Prison for Fraud," *The Telegraph*, September 26, 2015, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/11893906/VIP-child-abuse-ring-accuser-served-time-in-prison-for-fraud.html.

[251] Stephen Wright and Richard Pendlebury, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2272253/Timebomb-Elm-Guest-House-Pop-stars-bishop-politician-appear-list-seized-police-investigating-child-abuse-London-hotel-1980s.html#axzz2Jjhe2wpl.

[252] "Nightmares at Elm Guest House," https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ORU5x-ryedU.

[253] Richard Pendlebury and Stephen Wright, “Was this Woman Murdered to Cover up Cyril Smith’s Sex Ring? After a week of Devastating Revelations, this may be the most Devastating Question yet,” Daily Mail, April 18, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2608177/Was-woman-murdered-cover-Cyril-Smiths-sex-ring.html.

[254] “False Memory Syndrome,” *Broadsheet*, October 31, 2014, http://www.broadsheet.ie/2014/10/31/falls-memory-syndrome/.

[255] “Gerry Adams, IRA, MI6, Sex,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, January 1, 2018, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2017/12/gerry-adams-ira-mi6-sex.html.

[256] James Hanning and Paul Cahalan, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/special-report-police-revisit-the-grim-mystery-of-elm-guest-house.

[257] James Fielding, “Labour was told in 2002 about Child Sex Scandal,” *Express*, November 23, 2014, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/538887/David-Blunkett-warned-Elm-Guest-House-VIP-paedophiles.

[258] Don Coolican, “Security Alert over new vice Scandal,” *Daly Express/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, August 7, 1982, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2013/02/dexp_1982_08_07_001security_1detail3.jpg.

[259] Don Coolican, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2013/02/dexp_1982_08_07_001security_1detail3.jpg.

[260] “Attorney General to Probe London Brothel Reports,” *Capital Gay/spotlightonabuswordpress.com*, August 1982, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2013/04/capitalgay1982.jpg.

[261] David Hencke, “Did Richmond Council Pay ‘Hush Money’ to Cover up the Elm Guest House Child Abuse Scandal?” *davidhencke.com*, February 4, 2013, https://davidhencke.com/2013/02/04/did-richmond-council-pay-hush-money-to-cover-up-the-elm-guest-house-child-abuse-scandal/.

[262] Colin Simpson, Lewis Chester and David Leitch, *The Cleveland Street Affair* (London: Little, Brown) 1976, *bookfinder.com*, https://www.bookfinder.com/book/The_Cleveland_Street_Affair/0316792446/.

[263] “The Cleveland Street Scandal,” *clevelandstreetscandal.com*, http://clevelandstreetscandal.com/.

[264] Nico Hines, “How Thatcher’s Government Covered up a VIP Pedophile Ring,” *Daily Beast*, June 3, 2015, https://www.thedailybeast.com/how-thatchers-government-covered-up-a-vip-pedophile-ring?source=DDMorning&via=newsletter.

[265] Nico Hines, https://www.thedailybeast.com/how-thatchers-government-covered-up-a-vip-pedophile-ring?source=DDMorning&via=newsletter.

[266] Tomas Hirst, “Leon Brittan and the Westminster Child Abuse Scandal: ‘His Fingerprints were over everything,’” *Business Insider*, March 6, 2015, https://www.businessinsider.com/westminster-child-abuse-scandal-and-leon-brittan-2015-3?op=1.

[267] Nico Hines, https://www.thedailybeast.com/how-thatchers-government-covered-up-a-vip-pedophile-ring?source=DDMorning&via=newsletter.

[268] Nico Hines, https://www.thedailybeast.com/how-thatchers-government-covered-up-a-vip-pedophile-ring?source=DDMorning&via=newsletter.

[269] Nico Hines, https://www.thedailybeast.com/how-thatchers-government-covered-up-a-vip-pedophile-ring?source=DDMorning&via=newsletter.

[270] Nico Hines, https://www.thedailybeast.com/how-thatchers-government-covered-up-a-vip-pedophile-ring?source=DDMorning&via=newsletter.

[271] David Rose, “Spies and their Lies,” *New Statesman*, September 27, 2007, https://www.newstatesman.com/politics/2007/09/mi6-mi5-intelligence-briefings.

[272] Murun Buchstanslagur, “Keith Vaz and the Mystery of Barnes Common,” *spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, February 15, 2015, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/02/15/keith-vaz-and-the-mystery-of-barnes-common/.

[273] David Pallister, “Locals spoke of ‘the Activities’ at Guest House n Police Probe,” *Exaro News*, December 15, 2015, https://www.exaronews.com/locals-spoke-of-the-activities-at-guest-house-in-police-probe.

[274] Stephen Wright, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2272253/Timebomb-Elm-Guest-House-Pop-stars-bishop-politician-appear-list-seized-police-investigating-child-abuse-London-hotel-1980s.html#axzz2Jjhe2wpl.

[275] James Hanning and Paul Cahalan, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/special-report-police-revisit-the-grim-mystery-of-elm-guest-house.

[276] David Hencke, David Pallister and Fiona O’Cleirigh, https://www.exaronews.com/police-twice-failed-to-probe-paedophile-ring-at-guest-house.

[277] “Round the Clock Common Patrol,” *Richmond & Barnes Times*, July 1982, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2013/02/vaz5_1detail1.jpg.

[278] Jay Rayner, “Keith Vaz helped Kill a 90s Probe into the Greville Janner Claims: Why is he Silent now?” *The Observer/The Guardian*, April 25, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2015/apr/25/keith-vaz-helped-kill-90s-probe-greville-janner-claims-why-is-vaz-silent-now.

[279] Sean O’Neil, “Police Missed Chances to Question Janner,” *The Times*, April 27, 2015, https://www.thetimes.co.uk/article/police-missed-chances-to-question-janner-9n8wtm3qmp2.

[280] Abe Hawken, “Keith Vaz Quits after being Caught up in Rent-Boy Scandal… but Suggests he was Drugged during the Encounter with Eastern European Prostitutes,” *Daily Mail*, September 4, 2016, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3773171/Furious-Keith-Vaz-blasts-deeply-disturbing-newspaper-sting-says-lawyers-probing-story-paying-two-rent-boys-sex.html.

[281] Nick Dorman and Dan Warburton, “Keith Vaz Branded a ‘Liar’ by Male Escorts as they Reveal Shamed MP Offered to Fly them around the World,” *Mirror*, September 10, 2016, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/keith-vaz-branded-liar-male-8810677.

[282] Nick Dorman, “Married MP Keith Vaz tells Prostitutes in his Flat: ‘Bring Poppers… we need to get this Party started,” *Mirror*, September 4, 2016, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/married-mp-keith-vaz-tells-8763805.

[283] “Mysterious Keith Vaz,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, September 11, 2016, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2016/08/keith-vaz-male-prostitutes-and-child.html.

[284] Martin Robinson, “Why is Labour Peer Lord Janner not being Prosecuted because he has Dementia? At least 19 Defendants Suffering with the Disease have been Convicted for Sex Crimes… and ten were in the past year,” *Daily*

Mail, April 20, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3046992/Why-Labour-Peer-Lord-Janner-not-prosecuted-dementia-19-defendants-suffering-disease-convicted-sex-crimes-TEN-past-year.html.

[285] Claire Duffin and Daniel Martin, “Labour Veteran Keith Vaz says he's too Ill to be Investigated over Party with Male Escorts…but is fit enough to Travel the World and Cut Ribbons,” *Daly Mail*, February 9, 2018, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5373877/Keith-Vaz-ill-male-escort-investigation.html.

[286] Tim Skulthorpe, “Labour Grandee Keith Vaz Faces new Probe into his Property ‘Empire’ after Tory MP writes to the Police,” *Daily Mail*, February 18, 2018, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5405877/Labour-grandee-Keith-Vaz-faces-possible-probe.html.

[287] “British Sex Abuse Victims get Death Threats,” *Press TV*, January 30, 2015, https://www.presstv.com/Detail/2015/01/30/395360/UK-sex-abuse-victims-get-death-threats.

[288] Richard Wheeler, “MPs back Keith Vaz Appointment to Justice Select Committee,” *Independent*, November 1, 2016, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/politics/mps-parliamentary-vote-keith-vaz

[289] Joachim Hagopian, “Breaking Sex Scandal from Weiner's Laptop may be the Smoking Gun that will bring down the Clintons for good,” *sott.net*, November 4, 2016, https://www.sott.net/article/333069-Breaking-sex-scandal-from-Weiners-laptop-may-be-the-smoking-gun-that-will-bring-down-the-Clintons-for-good.

[290] Ben Glaze, “Tories ‘Black Book of Sleaze’ and how they Destroyed all Evidence of MPs’ Wrongdoing,” *Mirror*, April 13, 2014, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/tories-black-book-sleaze-how-3407347.

[291] James Lyons, “David Cameron Prepares himself for Damaging Allegations of Tory Sexual Harassment and Sleaze,” *Mirror*, April 11, 2014, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/david-cameron-prepares-himself-damaging-3402667.

[292] James Lyons, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/david-cameron-prepares-himself-damaging-3402667.

[293] James Lyons, “Norman Tebbit admits he heard Rumours top Tory was Paedophile a decade before Truth Revealed,” *Mirror*, July 8, 2014, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/norman-tebbit-admits-heard-rumours-3826206.

[294] James Lyons, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/norman-tebbit-admits-heard-rumours-3826206.

[295] James Lyons, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/norman-tebbit-admits-heard-rumours-3826206.

[296] “Friends of Israel,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, September 5, 2018, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2018/09/friends-of-israel.html.

[297] James Fielding, “Female MP Abused Boy in Care,” *Express*, January 12, 2014, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/453381/Female-MP-abused-boy-in-

care.

[298] Murun Buchstansangur, “The Dirt Book: How Sexual Abuse of Children is used for Political Gain, *spotlghtonabuse.wordpress.com*, May 11, 2013, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/05/11/the-dirt-book-how-the-sexual-abuse-of-children-is-used-for-political-gain/.

[299] James Fielding, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/453381/Female-MP-abused-boy-in-care.

[300] James Fielding, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/453381/Female-MP-abused-boy-in-care.

[301] Brian Flynn, “’Most Violent Paedo’ Freed on Loophole… and back Ogling Teens,” *The Sun*, August 3, 2013, https://www.thesun.co.uk/archives/news/922437/most-violent-paedo-freed-by-loophole-and-back-ogling-teens/.

[302] Janene Pieters, “Netherlands Criticized for Lenient Child Sex Trafficking Policy,” *NL Times*, November 23, 2015, https://nltimes.nl/2015/11/23/netherlands-criticized-lenient-child-sex-trafficking-policy.

[303] “Revisited: UK-Amsterdam Paedophile Snuff Movie Connection,” *21st Century Wire*, July 12, 2014, https://21stcenturywire.com/2014/07/12/revisited-uk-amsterdam-paedophile-snuff-movie-connection/.

[304] “Warwick Spinks and Violent Sex Rings,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, November 17, 2012, http://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2012/11/warwick-spinks-and-violent-pedophile.html.

[305] Mike Sullivan and Tom Morgan, “MP ‘was at Snuff Film Lad’s Murder,’” *The Sun*, December 6, 2014, https://www.thesun.co.uk/archives/news/580588/mp-was-at-snuff-film-lads-murder/.

[306] “02292-14 Spinks v The Sun,” *ipso.co.uk*, April 28, 2015, https://www.ipso.co.uk/rulings-and-resolution-statements/ruling/?id=02292-14.

[307] Mike Sullivan and Tom Morgan, https://www.thesun.co.uk/archives/news/580588/mp-was-at-snuff-film-lads-murder/

[308] Nick Davies, “When Sex Abuse can lead to Murder,” *The Guardian*, November 26, 2000, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2000/nov/27/childprotection.uk.

[309] Julie Bindel, “The Red Light District of Amsterdam could soon be a Distant Memory – here's why,” *Independent*, February 13, https://www.independent.co.uk/voices/amsterdam-red-light-district-failing-prostitution-sex-work-decriminalisation-doesnt-work-holland-a8206511.html.

[310] Tim Tate and Ted Jeory, “Police did nothing to track down Victim of Child Porn Snuff Film,” *Express*, May 11, 2014, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/475207/Police-did-nothing-to-track-down-victim-of-child-porn-snuff-film.

[311] Tim Tate and Ted Jeory, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/475207/Police-did-nothing-to-track-down-victim-of-child-porn-snuff-film.

[312] Tim Tate and Ted Jeory, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/475207/Police-did-nothing-to-track-down-victim-of-child-porn-snuff-film.

[313] Nick Davies, “Paedophilia is easy 1: How Police finally Caught up with a Network of Child Abusers,” *The Guardian*, November 25, 2000, https://www.nickdavies.net/2000/11/25/paedophilia-is-easy-how-police-finally-caught-up-with-a-network-of-child-abusers/.

[314] Nick Davies, “Most Secret Crime: System Failure,” *The Guardian*, June 5, 1998, https://www.nickdavies.net/1998/06/05/system-failure/.

[315] Nick Davies, “Paedophilia is easy 2: How a Paedophile Murder Inquiry Fell apart,” *The Guardian*, November 27, 2000, https://www.nickdavies.net/2000/11/27/paedophilia-is-easy-2-how-a-paedophile-murder-inquiry-fell-apart/.

[316] Nick Davies, https://www.nickdavies.net/2000/11/25/paedophilia-is-easy-how-police-finally-caught-up-with-a-network-of-child-abusers/.

[317] Nick Davies, https://www.nickdavies.net/1998/06/05/system-failure/.

[318] Nick Davies, https://www.nickdavies.net/1998/06/05/system-failure/.

[319] Nick Davies, https://www.nickdavies.net/2000/11/25/paedophilia-is-easy-how-police-finally-caught-up-with-a-network-of-child-abusers/.

[320] Nick Davies, https://www.nickdavies.net/1998/06/05/system-failure/.

[321] Vikram Dodd, “Met Police still Failing on Child Protection Policies, Report finds,” *The Guardian*, November 23, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2017/nov/24/met-police-still-failing-child-protection-policies-report-finds.

[322] Henry Botkin, “’Serious errors’ by Met Police put Children at Risk - Damning Report,” *The Telegraph*, November 25, 2016, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2016/11/25/serious-errors-met-police-put-children-risk-damning-report/.

[323] Nick Davies, https://www.nickdavies.net/1998/06/05/system-failure/.

[324] Nick Davies, “Behind the Screen of Anonymity: Tales of Powerful Men Abusing Children,” *The Guardian*, October 1, 1997, https://www.nickdavies.net/1997/10/01/behind-the-screen-of-anonymity-tales-of-powerful-men-abusing-children/?catid=131.

[325] Nick Davies, https://www.nickdavies.net/1998/06/05/system-failure/.

[326] Nick Davies, https://www.nickdavies.net/1998/06/05/system-failure/.

[327] Nick Davies, https://www.nickdavies.net/1998/06/05/system-failure/.

[328] Nick Davies, https://www.nickdavies.net/1998/06/05/system-failure/.

[329] Nick Davies, https://www.nickdavies.net/1998/06/05/system-failure/.

[330] Rebecca Camber, “MP ‘told Police about VIP Paedophile Ring’s Parties 26 years ago’: Labour’s John Mann claims he handed Evidence of Abuse over to Scotland Yard but Investigation was Shelved,” *Daily Mail*, November 16, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2837175/MP-told-police-VIP-paedophile-ring-s-parties-26-years-Labour-s-John-Mann-claims-handed-evidence-abuse-Scotland-Yard-investigation-shelved.html.

[331] David Barrett, "Five Westminster Paedophile Rings Probed by Scotland Yard," *The Telegraph*, December 21, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/11306575/Five-Westminster-paedophile-rings-probed-by-Scotland-Yard.html.

[332] David Barrett, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/11306575/Five-Westminster-paedophile-rings-probed-by-Scotland-Yard.html.

[333] Justin Penrose, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/former-tory-faces-child-sex-1714162.

[334] "CPS File on Elm Guest House Suspects was Destroyed in 2007," *spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, August 7, 2014, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2014/08/07/cps-file-on-elm-guest-house-suspects-was-destroyed-in-2007/.

[335] Patrick Sawer and Tim Ross, "Whitehall Child Sex Inquiry: The 114 Files 'Lost,'" *The Telegraph*, July 5, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/10949117/Whitehall-child-sex-inquiry-the-114-files-lost.html.

[336] "Appendix C: Table of Files Recorded on RMSys 1979 to 1999," gov.uk, Appendix C: Table of Files Recorded on RMSys.

[337] Loulla-Mae Eleftheriou-Smith, "VIP Child Sex Abuse Probe: Police Investigate more than 1,400 People including Politicians and Celebrities, *Independent*, May 20, 2015, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/crime/vip-child-sex-abuse-probe-police.

[338] "'261 VIPs' Child Sex Abuse: Cover-up Equals Conspiracy to Pervert Course of Justice," *undercoverinfo.wordpress.com*, May 29, 2015, https://undercoverinfo.wordpress.com/2015/05/29/261-vips-child-sex-abuse-cover-up-equals-conspiracy-to-pervert-course-of-justice-2/.

[339] Patrick Sawer and Tim Ross, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/10949117/Whitehall-child-sex-inquiry-the-114-files-lost.html

[340] Richard Pendlebury and Stephen Wright, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2608177/Was-woman-murdered-cover-Cyril-Smiths-sex-ring.html.

[341] Mark Conrad and David Pallister, "Revealed: Carole Kasir and her Squalid life at Elm Guest House, *Exaro News*, April 1, 2015, https://www.exaronews.com/revealed-carole-kasir-and-her-squalid-life-at-elm-guest-house.

[342] Mark Conrad, "Richmond Council 'was Alerted to Allegations of Child Sex Abuse,'" *Exaro News*, February 23, 2013, https://www.exaronews.com/richmond-council-was-alerted-to-allegations-of-child-sex-abuse.

[343] "The Child Abuse Network – Top Names – Part One," https://angirfana.blogspot.com/2015/04/the-child-abuse-network-top-names-part_5.html.

[344] David Hencke and Mark Conrad, “Richmond Files Reveal Failure to Pursue Claim of Child Sex Abuse,” *Exaro News*, April 27, 2013, https://www.exaronews.com/richmond-files-reveal-failure-to-pursue-claim-of-child-sex-abuse.

[345] David Pallister, “Revealed: Diaries and Receipts for Guest House in Police Probe,” *Exaro News*, December 19, 2012, https://www.exaronews.com/revealed-diaries-and-receipts-for-guest-house-in-police-probe.

[346] David Hencke and Mark Conrad, https://www.exaronews.com/richmond-files-reveal-failure-to-pursue-claim-of-child-sex-abuse.

[347] David Barrett, Tim Tate and Christopher Hope, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/10950138/Westminster-paedophile-ring-allegations-Scotland-Yard-detectives-trace-victim.html.

[348] Patrick Wintour and Matthew Weaver, “No Change in Law Needed to Protect Child Abuse Whistleblowers, says Tory,” *The Guardian*, March 17, 2015, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2015/mar/17/police-told-drop-child-abuse-case-against-cyril-smith-whistleblower.

[349] Jaya Narain and Martin Robinson, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2997971/Cyril-Smith-held-paedophile-sex-party-police-told-cover-face-prosecution-Official-Secrets-Act.html.

[350] Patrick Wintour and Matthew Weaver, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2015/mar/17/police-told-drop-child-abuse-case-against-cyril-smith-whistleblower.

[351] David Barrett, Tim Tate and Christopher Hope, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/10950138/Westminster-paedophile-ring-allegations-Scotland-Yard-detectives-trace-victim.html.

[352] Stephen Wright and Richard Pendlebury, “Revealed: Face of Boy Abused in Elm House Scandal as Catholic Priest and Head of Boys’ Home are Arrested,” *Daily Mail*, February 6, 2013, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2274703/Revealed-Face-boy-abused-Elm-House-scandal-Catholic-priest-head-boys-home-arrested.html.

[353] Tim Wood, “Priest Cleared of three more Counts, but Convicted of making three Indecent Images,” Exaro News, February 27, 2015, https://www.exaronews.com/tony-mcsweeney-found-guilty-of-abusing-boy-at-grafton-close.

[354] Jenny Stanton, “Catholic Priest Accused of Abusing Boys ‘was Caught with Child Porn and Sex Toys but was just Moved on by the Church and Escaped Police Charges,” Daily Mail, February 18, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2959046/Catholic-priest-accused-abusing-boys-caught-child-porn-sex-toys-just-moved-church-escaped-police-charges.html.

[355] Ray Bullock, “The Devil in Control of Washington, Donald J. Drumpf, Roseanne Barr, Kathy Griffin and Joan Rivers,” *mindcontrolblackassassins.com*, June 12, 2017, https://mindcontrolblackassassins.com/2017/06/12/the-devil-in-control-of-washingtion-donald-j-drumpf-roseanne-barr-kathy-griffin-joan-rivers/.

[356] Tim Wood, https://www.exaronews.com/tony-mcsweeney-found-guilty-of-abusing-boy-at-grafton-close.

[357] Jenny Stanton, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2959046/Catholic-priest-accused-abusing-boys-caught-child-porn-sex-toys-just-moved-church-escaped-police-charges.html.

[358] Richard Pendlebury, “A Paedophile Priest, two Bishops and a Sickening Conspiracy of Silence: He married Frank Bruno and said Mass for Delia Smith. But behind the Glitz was one of the Catholic Church's Dirtiest Secrets,” *Daily Mail*, March 4, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2980276/A-paedophile-priest-two-bishops-sickening-conspiracy-silence-married-Frank-Bruno-said-Mass-Delia-Smith-glitz-one-Catholic-Church-s-dirtiest-secrets.html.

[359] David Pallister, https://www.exaronews.com/revealed-diaries-and-receipts-for-guest-house-in-police-probe.

[360] “Anthony McSweeney Case: Abuse Priest Failings Found,” *BBC*, April 23, 2017, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-england-london-39667769.

[361] David Hencke, David Pallister and Fiona O’Cleirigh, “Police ‘twice Failed to Probe Paedophile Riing at Guest House,” *Exaro News*, December 14, 2012, https://www.exaronews.com/police-twice-failed-to-probe-paedophile-ring-at-guest-house.

[362] Mark Conrad, https://www.exaronews.com/richmond-council-was-alerted-to-allegations-of-child-sex-abuse.

[363] Mark Conrad and Alison Winward, “Richmond’s Ex-Head of Social Services ‘Unaware’ of ‘Paedo Ring,’” *Exaro News*, February 9, 2013, https://www.exaronews.com/richmonds-ex-head-of-social-services-unaware-of-paedo-ring.

[364] Mark Conrad and Alison Winward, https://www.exaronews.com/richmonds-ex-head-of-social-services-unaware-of-paedo-ring.

[365] David Hencke, “Elm Guest House Abuse Scandal: ‘Paedo Police Ignored 16-year-old Victim,’” *Mirror*, April 27, 2013, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/elm-guest-house-abuse-scandal-1857494.

[366] David Hencke, “The Mad World of Louis Minster- the Man who Denies he is there,” *davidhencke.com*, May 2, 2013, https://davidhencke.com/2013/05/02/the-mad-world-of-louis-minster-the-man-who-denies-he-is-there/.

[367] Jurgen Balzan, “Expat Denies Involvement in Richmond Paedophile Ring Cover-up,” *Malta Today*, October 28, 2014, https://www.maltatoday.com.mt/news/world/45482/expat_denies_involvement_in_richmond_paedophile_ring_coverup.

[368] “Nightmares at Elm Guest House,” https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ORU5x-ryedU.

[369] Jurgen Balzan, https://www.maltatoday.com.mt/news/world/45482/expat_denies_involvement_in_richmond_paedophile_ring_coverup.

[370] “The Child Abuse Network - Top Names - Part Two,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, January 29, 2015,

https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2015/01/the-child-abuse-network-top-names-part.html.

[371] "1994 Birthday Honours," *wikipedia.org*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/1994_Birthday_Honours.

[372] Jim Greenhalf, "Lessons under the Iron Lady," *Telegraph & Argus*, April 8, 2013, https://www.thetelegraphandargus.co.uk/news/10339544.lessons-under-the-iron-lady/.

[373] "The Mary Moss Elm Guest House VlP Paedophile Party List," *cigpapers.blog*, April 29, 2013, https://cigpapers.blog/2013/04/29/the-elm-guest-house-vip-paedophile-party-list/.

[374] Caroline Howe, "David Bowie's Sex Addiction Drove him to Sleep with 13-year-old Groupies, Engage in Wild Orgies and declare he was Bi-Sexual with a 'Permanent Erection' - but he turned down an offer to 'F*** a warm Dead Body,'" *Daily Mail*, August 17, 2017, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4800164/David-Bowie-slept-13-year-olds-engaged-orgies.html.

[375] "French Shocked about Geoffrey Dickens, the Elite Paedophiles and the Missing Dossier," *google-law.blogspot.com*, March 7, 2013, http://google-law.blogspot.com/2013/03/french-shocked-about-geoffrey-dickens.html.

[376] Patrick Cosgrave, "Obituaries Sir Charles Irving," *Independent*, April 3, 1995, http://www.gproxx.com/https://www.independent.co.uk/news/people/obituaries-sir-charles-irving-1614075.html.

[377] Stephen Leece, "Filthy Britain Part 2: Rape, Lies and Videotape: The Elm Guest House Story," *Shout Out UK*, October 21, 2013, https://www.shoutoutuk.org/2013/10/21/filthy-britain-part-2-rape-lies-and-videotape-the-elm-guest-house-story/.

[378] Dominic Gover, "Who Were the Paedophiles at the Heart of the British Political Establishment?" *International Business Times*, July 10, 2014, https://www.ibtimes.co.uk/who-are-abusers-child-sex-list-drawn-by-chris-fay-1456191.

[379] "The Power of Paedophile connections in Europe and the United Kingdom," http://google-law.blogspot.com/2013/07/the-power-of-paedophiles-connections-in.html.

[380] Tim Tate, "Cleveland: Unspeakable Truths," *spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, May 30, 2013, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/05/30/cleveland-unspeakable-truths/.

[381] "Boylinks – USA, UK, Europe, the World," https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2013/07/boylinks-usa-uk-europe-world.html.

[382] Julia Langdon, "Sir Stuart Bell Obituary," *The Guardian*, October 14, 2012, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/2012/oct/14/stuart-bell.

[383] "The Mary Moss Elm Guest House VIP Paedophile Party List," https://cigpapers.blog/2013/04/29/the-elm-guest-house-vip-paedophile-party-list/.

[384] "French Shocked about Geoffrey Dickens, the Elite Paedophiles and the Missing Dossier," http://google-law.blogspot.com/2013/03/french-shocked-about-geoffrey-dickens.html.

[385] Ben Glaze and Andy Lines, "Boris Johnson and Girlfriend spent New Year in Greek Villa where he took his Family," *Mirror*, January 10, 2019, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/politics/boris-johnson-flies-lover-greek-13840246.

[386] Paul Cahalan and Ian Gallagher, "I had Underage Sex with Police Officers at Guest House used by 'VIP Paedophile Ring': Astonishing Allegations by Masseur who worked as a 16-year-old at Notorious Party Venue 'used by Politicians, Judges and Pop Stars,'" *Daily Mail*, April 10, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2608695/I-underage-sex-police-officers-guest-house-used-VIP-paedophile-ring-Astonishing-allegations-masseur-worked-16-year-old-notorious-party-venue-used-politicians-judges-pop-stars.html.

[387] Steven Swinford, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/politics/liberaldemocrats/10775360/Influential-politician-visited-guest-house-at-centre-of-child-sex-investigation.html.

[388] Paul Cahalan and Ian Gallagher, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2608695/I-underage-sex-police-officers-guest-house-used-VIP-paedophile-ring-Astonishing-allegations-masseur-worked-16-year-old-notorious-party-venue-used-politicians-judges-pop-stars.html.

[389] Paul Cahalan and Ian Gallagher, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2608695/I-underage-sex-police-officers-guest-house-used-VIP-paedophile-ring-Astonishing-allegations-masseur-worked-16-year-old-notorious-party-venue-used-politicians-judges-pop-stars.html.

[390] Paul Cahalan and Ian Gallagher, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2608695/I-underage-sex-police-officers-guest-house-used-VIP-paedophile-ring-Astonishing-allegations-masseur-worked-16-year-old-notorious-party-venue-used-politicians-judges-pop-stars.html.

[391] Paul Cahalan and Ian Gallagher, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2608695/I-underage-sex-police-officers-guest-house-used-VIP-paedophile-ring-Astonishing-allegations-masseur-worked-16-year-old-notorious-party-venue-used-politicians-judges-pop-stars.html.

[392] Paul Cahalan and Ian Gallagher, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2608695/I-underage-sex-police-officers-guest-house-used-VIP-paedophile-ring-Astonishing-allegations-masseur-worked-16-year-old-notorious-party-venue-used-politicians-judges-pop-stars.html.

[393] David Hencke, David Pallister and Fiona O'Cleirigh, https://www.exaronews.com/police-twice-failed-to-probe-paedophile-ring-at-guest-house.

[394] David Pallister and David Hencke, "Police Investigate Richmond Council over VIP Paedophile Ring," *Exaro News*, January 26, 2013, https://www.exaronews.com/police-probes-richmond-council-over-vip-paedophile-ring.

[395] David Hencke, https://davidhencke.com/2013/02/04/did-richmond-council-pay-hush-money-to-cover-up-the-elm-guest-house-child-abuse-scandal/.

[396] Dawn Papple, “Prime Minister David Cameron ‘no Stone left Unturned’ in UK Child Sex Abuse Cover-up Investigation,” *Inquisitr*, July 8. 2014, https://www.inquisitr.com/1340384/prime-minister-david-cameron-no-stone-left-unturned-in-uk-child-sex-abuse-cover-up-investigation/.

[397] Sam Tonkin, “Social Worker who Accused Leon Brittan and other VIPs as being Members of an Alleged Paedophile Ring was Convicted of Fraud in 2011,” *Daily Mail*, September 27, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3250951/Social-worker-accused-Leon-Brittan-VIPs-members-alleged-paedophile-ring-convicted-fraud-2011.html.

[398] “Carl Beech, 50 Named as ‘Westminster Paedophile Ring’ Accuser,” *Exaro News*, December 18, 2018, https://www.exaronews.com/carl-beech-50-named-as-westminster-paedophile-ring-accuser.

[399] Tom Wells, Chris Pollard and Alex West, “’Nick’ Nicked Fantasist known only as ‘Nick’ who Sparked £3million VIP Paedo Probe held over Child Sex Offenses,” *The Sun*, February 7, 2018, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/5515882/fantasist-nick-held-over-child-sex-crimes/.

[400] Martin Evans, “VIP Paedophile Accuser ‘Nick’ to stand Trial Accused of Perverting the course of Justice and Fraud,” *The Telegraph*, November 18, 2018, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2018/11/19/trial-date-set-vip-paedophile-accuser-nick-perverting-course/.

[401] Dan Bloom, “Shamed MP Simon Danczuk Denies Ex-Wife's Claims he is a ‘Predator’ who had Sex when she was Asleep,” *Mirror*, January 4, 2016, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/shamed-mp-simon-danczuk-denies-7111040.

[402] Scott D’Arcy, Met ‘to pay Lord Bramall and Lady Brittan £100,000 after Raiding Homes in Doomed Child Abuse Investigation,’” *Independent*, September 2, 2017, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/police-vip-sex-abuse-westminster-paedophile-ring-operation.

[403] Owen Bowcott, “Former Director of Public Prosecutions calls for Victims’ Law,” *The Guardian*, February 3, 2014, https://www.theguardian.com/law/2014/feb/03/former-director-public-prosecutions-victims-law-keir-starmer.

[404] Nico Hines, https://www.thedailybeast.com/how-thatchers-government-covered-up-a-vip-pedophile-ring?ref=scroll.

[405] Owen Bowcott, https://www.theguardian.com/law/2014/feb/03/former-director-public-prosecutions-victims-law-keir-starmer.

[406] Martin Beckford, “High Court Judge and the Child Sex Ring: Adviser to Queen was Founder of Paedophile Support Group to Keep Offenders out of Jail,” *Daily Mail*, March 8, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2576451/High-court-judge-child-sex-ring-Adviser-Queen-founder-paedophile-support-group-offenders-jail.html.

[407] Martin Beckford, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2576451/High-court-judge-child-sex-ring-Adviser-Queen-founder-paedophile-support-group-offenders-jail.html.

[408] “Lord Justice Fulford Cleared: Top judge with links to Paedophile Group Cleared of Allegations of Misconduct,” *Daly Mail*, July 5, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2681968/Lord-Justice-Fulford-cleared-Top-judge-links-paedophile-group-cleared-allegations-misconduct.html.

[409] Stephen Wright and Richard Pendlebury, “A Timebomb at Elm Guest House: Pop Stars, a Bishop and a Top Politician appear on a List Seized by Police Investigating Child Abuse at the London Hotel in the 1980s,” *Daily Mail*, February 2, 2013, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2272253/Timebomb-Elm-Guest-House-Pop-stars-bishop-politician-appear-list-seized-police-investigating-child-abuse-London-hotel-1980s.html.

[410] Mark Conrad, “Scotland Yard’s ‘Charge Sheet’ for Cover-up on ‘VIP Paedophiles,’” *Exaro News*, March 21, 2015, https://www.exaronews.com/scotland-yard-s-charge-sheet-for-cover-up-on-vip-paedophiles.

[411] Ben Glaze, “Child Sex Abuse is still being Covered up at ‘the highest level’ Warns Campaigning MP,” *Mirror*, June 23, 2015, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/child-sex-abuse-still-being-5934709.

[412] Ben Glaze, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/child-sex-abuse-still-being-5934709.

[413] “The Mary Moss Elm Guest House VIP Paedophile Party List,” https://cigpapers.blog/2013/04/29/the-elm-guest-house-vip-paedophile-party-list/.

[414] “Bishop Ball, Savile, Elm Guest House, Sevenoaks, MI5…” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, April 1, 2014, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2014/03/bishop-ball-savile-elm-guest-house.html.

[415] “Buckingham Palace at the Centre of a Vast Paedophile Network,” *scribd.com*, https://www.scribd.com/doc/246043736/Buckingham-Palace-at-the-centre-of-a-vast-paedophile-network.

[416] “Elm Guest House: Mary Moss Leaked Documents,” *scrbd.com*, https://www.scribd.com/doc/253517687/ELM-GUEST-HOUSE-Mary-Moss-Leaked-Documents-authenticity-unverified.

[417] “Harvey Proctor and Cliff Richard Child Sex Abuse Raids: The ‘Evidence’ that Links them,” *undercoverinfo.wordpress.com*, March 8, 2015, https://undercoverinfo.wordpress.com/2015/03/08/harvey-proctor-and-cliff-richard-child-sex-abuse-raids-the-evidence-that-links-them/.

[418] “Elm Guest House: Mary Moss Leaked Documents,” https://www.scribd.com/doc/253517687/ELM-GUEST-HOUSE-Mary-Moss-Leaked-Documents-authenticity-unverified.

[419] “The Pedophile Elite London had Branches in the Netherlands,” *no2abuse.com*, March 5, 2013, http://www.no2abuse.com/index.php/articles/comments/the-pedophile-elite-london-had-branches-in-the-netherlands-english-version.

[420] Richard Pendlebury and Stephen Wright, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2608177/Was-woman-murdered-cover-

Cyril-Smiths-sex-ring.html.

[421] "Elm Guest House: Carole Kasir Inquest - 1990," *slepticpeg.wordpress.com*, October 18, 2017, https://scepticpeg.wordpress.com/2017/10/18/elm-guest-house-carole-kasir-inquest/.

[422] "Is Britain Safe; Boy Brothel Cover-up," *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, April 19, 2014, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/04/is-britain-safe-boy-brothel-cover-up.html.

[423] "Elm Guest House; David Hamilton-Grant; Denham Gilbart-Smith," *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, February 13, 2013, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2013/02/elm-guest-house-david-hamilton-grant.html.

[424] "Nightmares at Elm Guest House," https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ORU5x-ryedU.

[425] Dominic Gover, "Westminster Paedophile Scandal: Current MPs named 'again and again' in Calls to Sex Abuse Helpline," *International Business Times*, July 8, 2014, https://www.ibtimes.co.uk/westminister-paedophile-scandal-current-mps-named-again-again-calls-sex-abuse-helpline-1455805.

[426] Stephen Wright and Richard Pendlebury, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2272253/Timebomb-Elm-Guest-House-Pop-stars-bishop-politician-appear-list-seized-police-investigating-child-abuse-London-hotel-1980s.html.

[427] Patrick Strudwick, "Child Abuse Survivor calls for Inquiry into Police Handling of his Dolphin Square Allegations," *Buzzfeed*, May 7, 2016, https://www.buzzfeed.com/patrickstrudwick/child-abuse-survivor-calls-for-inquiry-into-police-handling.

[428] Henry Porter and Anabel Davidson, "Another Dark Chapter for London's most Scandalous Address," *Vanity Fair*, December 22, 2014, https://www.vanityfair.com/style/scandal/2014/12/scandal-dolphin-square-london.

[429] "Dolphin Square Named in List of Allegations Probed by IPCC," *ITV News*, March 16, 2015, https://www.itv.com/news/update/2015-03-16/dolphin-square-named-in-list-of-allegations-probed-by-ipcc/.

[430] "Kincora Child Sex Abuse Victim Richard Kerr: I was Molested by Powerful People at Dolphin Square and Elm Guest House in London," *Belfast Telegraph*, April 7, 2015, https://www.belfasttelegraph.co.uk/news/northern-ireland/kincora-child-sex-abuse-victim-richard-kerr-i-was-molested-by-powerful-people-at-dolphin-square-and-elm-guest-house-in-london-31121971.html.

[431] James Gillespie and Josh Boswell, "Care Home Paedophile 'Supplied Boys for Whitehall Parties," *The Times*, November 30, 2014, https://www.thetimes.co.uk/article/care-home-paedophile-supplied-boys-for-whitehall-parties-pkqnhjbrv8b.

[432] "Friends of Israel," *aangrfan.blogspot.com*, September 5, 2018, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/search?q=shirley+porter.

[433] “Child Rapes at Flats Linked to MI5 – Dolphin Square in Pimlico,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, July 13, 2014, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/07/child-rapes-at-flats-linked-to-mi5.html.

[434] “Child Rapes at Flats Linked to MI5 – Dolphin Square in Pimlico,” https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/07/child-rapes-at-flats-linked-to-mi5.html.

[435] “Child Rapes at Flats Linked to MI5 – Dolphin Square in Pimlico,” https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/07/child-rapes-at-flats-linked-to-mi5.html.

[436] Christopher Spivey, “Harvey Proctor and the Dolphin Square Apartment Complex,” *chrisspivey.org*, December 17, 2018, www.chrisspivey.org/harvey-proctor-the-dolphin-square-apartment-complex/.

[437] “Wimpole Muse, Chapter 2 – Dolphin Square” *wimpolemuse.blogspot.com*, September 21, 2016, https://wimpolemuse.blogspot.com/2016/09/chapter-2-dolphin-square.html.

[438] “Friends of Israel,” https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/search?q=shirley+porter.

[439] Andy McSmith and Justin Huggler, “Sleaze Scandal Strips Dame Shirley Porter of her Title,” *Independent*, July 6, 2003, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/this-britain/sleaze-scandal-strips-dame-shirley-porter-of-her-title-94961.html.

[440] Matt Weaver, “Dame Shirley Pays out £12m in Housing Scandal, *The Guardian*, July 5, 2004, https://www.theguardian.com/society/2004/jul/05/politics.localgovernment.

[441] “Rita Ora and the VIP Child-Abuse Connection,” *thecolemanexperience.wordpress.com/holliegregjustice.wordpress.com*, February 2, 2016, https://holliegreigjustice.wordpress.com/2016/02/02/rita-ora-and-the-vip-child-abuse-connection-2/.

[442] “Letter to the Noor Inayat Khan Memorial Trust,” *scribd.com*, February 9, 2016, https://www.scribd.com/doc/298614980/Letter-to-the-Noor-Inayat-Khan-Memorial-Trust.

[443] “Nick versus Lord Bramall,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, January 1, 2019, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2017/09/nick-versus-lord-bramall.html.

[444] “Letter to the Catholic Union,” *scrbd.com*, February 10, 2016, https://www.scribd.com/doc/298890681/Letter-to-the-Catholic-Union.

[445] “Letter to Herts Aid,” *scribd.com*, February 3, 2016, https://www.scribd.com/doc/297855986/Letter-to-Herts-Aid.

[446] “BBC Broadcaster Michael Portillo; Alleged Child Sexual Abuse,” *scribd,com*, January 27, 2016, https://www.scribd.com/doc/296999308/BBC-broadcaster-Michael-Portillo-alleged-child-sexual-abuse.

[447] “Conservative Sex,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, October 10, 2015, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2015/10/conservative-sex.html.

[448] “David Nicholson MP,” *scribd.com*, https://www.scribd.com/document/257837794/David-Nicholson-MP.

[449] “Julian Lewis, Harvey Proctor, Keith Vaz, Edward Leigh…,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, June 19, 2015,

https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2015/06/julian-lewis-harvey-proctor-keith-vaz.html.

[450] “Child Rapes at Flats Linked to MI5 – Dolphin Square in Pimlico,” https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/07/child-rapes-at-flats-linked-to-mi5.html

[451] Ian McQuaid, “England’s Dreaming #14: Scalawag – UK’s Great, Forgotten Satirical Rag,” *theransomnote.com*, https://www.theransomnote.com/musings/englands-dreaming/englands-dreaming-14-scallywag-uks-great-forgotten-satirical-mag/.

[452] David Hooper, “Libelled Politicians,” *julianlewis.net*, extract from *Reputations under Fire: Winners and Losers in the Libel Business* (London: Little, Brown and Company), 2000, p.369-71, http://www.julianlewis.net/selected-news-coverage/3519:libelled-politicians-36.

[453] “Dolphin Square Child Abuse: ‘Michael’ Abuse Victim Speaks,” YouTube video, 14:35, *butlincat.com*, November 9, 2012, https://butlincat.com/2018/10/21/dolphin-sq-child-abuse-michael-abuse-victim-speaks-mcalpine-denies-allegations-the-savile-apology/.

[454] Patrick Strudwick, “This is what happens when you Report Historical Sexual Abuse to the Police,” *Buzzfeed*, May 7, 2016, https://www.buzzfeed.com/patrickstrudwick/this-is-what-happens-when-you-report-historical-sexual-abuse?utm_term=.pjGRmvWez#.rrLVeQ4wr.

[455] Patrick Strudwick, https://www.buzzfeed.com/patrickstrudwick/this-is-what-happens-when-you-report-historical-sexual-abuse?utm_term=.pjGRmvWez#.rrLVeQ4wr.

[456] “Queen-led Church of England Faces 3,300 Sexual Abuse Allegations,” *Press TV*, February 11, 2018, https://www.presstv.com/Detail/2018/02/11/551962/UK-Church-of-England-sexual-abuse-child-abuse-Bishop-Peter-Hancock.

[457] Patrick Strudwick, https://www.buzzfeed.com/patrickstrudwick/child-abuse-survivor-calls-for-inquiry-into-police-handling.

[458] Patrick Strudwick, https://www.buzzfeed.com/patrickstrudwick/this-is-what-happens-when-you-report-historical-sexual-abuse?utm_term=.pjGRmvWez#.rrLVeQ4wr.

[459] Patrick Strudwick, “Police Commissioner says ‘Lessons must be learnt’ from Historical Sex Abuse Exposé,” *Buzzfeed*, May 26, 2016, https://www.buzzfeed.com/patrickstrudwick/police-commissioner-says-lessons-must-be-learned-from-sexual.

[460] Patrick Strudwick, https://www.buzzfeed.com/patrickstrudwick/this-is-what-happens-when-you-report-historical-sexual-abuse?utm_term=.pjGRmvWez#.rrLVeQ4wr.

[461] Patrick Strudwick, https://www.buzzfeed.com/patrickstrudwick/child-abuse-survivor-calls-for-inquiry-into-police-handling.

[462] Patrick Strudwick, https://www.buzzfeed.com/patrickstrudwick/this-is-what-happens-when-you-report-historical-sexual-abuse?utm_term=.pjGRmvWez#.rrLVeQ4wr.

[463] Patrick Strudwick, https://www.buzzfeed.com/patrickstrudwick/this-is-what-happens-when-you-report-historical-sexual-abuse?utm_term=.pjGRmvWez#.rrLVeQ4wr.

[464] Patrick Strudwick, https://www.buzzfeed.com/patrickstrudwick/child-abuse-survivor-calls-for-inquiry-into-police-handling.

[465] Patrick Strudwick, “Historical Child Sex Abuse Case Reopened after Buzzfeed News Investigation,” *Buzzfeed*, December 31, 2016, https://www.buzzfeed.com/patrickstrudwick/police-reopen-child-sexual-abuse-case-following-buzzfeed-new.

[466] Patrick Strudwick, https://www.buzzfeed.com/patrickstrudwick/police-reopen-child-sexual-abuse-case-following-buzzfeed-new.

[467] James Fielding, “Boy’s Rape Filmed in Dolphin Square,” Express, August 23, 2015, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/600117/Boy-rape-filmed-notorious-Dolphin-Square.

[468] James Fielding, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/600117/Boy-rape-filmed-notorious-Dolphin-Square.

[469] Darnel Martin, Andy Dolan and Emily Kent Smith, “I'm the latest Victim of Sex Abuse Witch-Hunt, says ex-MP: VIP Police Quiz former Backbencher,” *Daily Mail*, October 12, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3269976/I-m-latest-victim-sex-abuse-witch-hunt-says-ex-MP-VIP-police-quiz-former-backbencher.html.

[470] “’Witch Hunt’ – The Abusers ‘get out of Jail Free’ Card,” *oye.news*, October 13, 2015, https://www.oye.news/news/tyranny/corruption/witch-hunt-the-abusers-get-out-of-jail-free-card/.

[471] Catherine Bennett, “After the Lessons of the 1990s Satanic Abuse Panic, why was ‘Nick’ believed?” *The Guardian*, February 10, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2018/feb/11/satanic-abuse-panic-nick-dolphin-square-westminster-paedophile-ring.

[472] “Bush Addresses the UN – tells the World no 911 Discussions,” YouTube video, 0:15, posted June 4, 2006, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=6K5M0xtxQVQ.

[473] Janet Street-Porter, “People like Cliff Richard Deserve Anonymity if they haven’t been Charged with a Crime – but MPs under Investigation for Misconduct certainly do not,” Independent, July 20, 2018, https://www.independent.co.uk/voices/cliff-richard-investigation-crime-uk-mps.

[474] “Historic Child Abuse Victims become the Guilty as the Establishment Turn the Tables,” *oye.news*, October 5, 2015, https://www.oye.news/news/tyranny/corruption/vip-historic-child-abuse-victims-become-the-guilty-as-establishment-turn-the-tables/.

[475] Amanda Williams, “I was Sexually Abused at Paedophile Parties: Victim of 1970s tells of being Forced to Perform Sex Acts as Senior Tories Celebrated Thatcher Victory,” *Daily Mail*, May 5, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3068950/I-abused-Establishment-paedophile-parties-Victim-1970s-Dolphin-Square-ring-tells-forced-perform-sex-acts-senior-Tories-celebrated-Thatcher-victory.html .

[476] Amanda Williams, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3068950/I-abused-Establishment-paedophile-parties-Victim-1970s-Dolphin-Square-ring-tells-forced-perform-sex-acts-senior-Tories-celebrated-Thatcher-victory.html .

[477] Glen Owen and Paul Cahalan, "Summon the Son of ex-Black Rod to Child Sex Abuse Probe, MP Demands after Mail on Sunday Revealed his Links to VIPs and Rent Boys, *Daily Mail*, May 19, 2018, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5749103/Summon-son-ex-Black-Rod-child-sex-abuse-probe-MP-demands.html.

[478] Patrick Sawer, "Â£1.2m Fraud of Black Rod's Son," *Evening Standard*, July 29, 2004, https://www.standard.co.uk/news/12m-fraud-of-black-rods-son-6967435.html.

[479] "Twiss, Dolphin Square, Jason Swift, the Navy," *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, May 14, 2018, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2018/05/twiss-dolphin-square-jason-swift-navy.html.

[480] Glen Owen and Paul Cahalan, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5749103/Summon-son-ex-Black-Rod-child-sex-abuse-probe-MP-demands.html.

[481] "Twiss, Dolphin Square, Jason Swift, the Navy, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2018/05/twiss-dolphin-square-jason-swift-navy.html.

[482] Fiona Keating, "MPs in Westminster Paedophile Ring Were 'Untouchables' Claims Former Special Branch Officer," *IB Times*, November 23, 2014, https://www.ibtimes.co.uk/mps-westminster-paedophile-ring-were-untouchables-claims-former-special-branch-officer-1476155.

[483] "Child Abuse 'may well have been' Covered up – Norman Tebbit," *BBC*, July 6, 2014, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-politics-28182373.

[484] "Sex in Schools," *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, February 3, 2015, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2015/02/sex-in-schools.html.

[485] Sally Baker, "Criminals are getting away with it," *drsallybaker.com*, May 22, 2018, http://www.drsallybaker.com/tag/sir-john-stradling-thomas/.

[486] Richard Card, "Suffolk County Council - Social Services Directors," *whatdotheyknow.com*, September 18, 2017, https://www.whatdotheyknow.com/request/suffolk_county_council_social_se.

[487] Aston Hall, Kendall House, Mind Controlled Kids, Gravesend," *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, April 15, 2017, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2017/04/aston-hall-kendall-house-mind.html.

[488] Richard Card, "Islington Council Raise Inquiry into 43 Child Care Deaths at one Care Home," *change.org*, https://www.change.org/p/cllr-richard-watts-islington-council-islington-council-raise-inquiry-into-43-child-care-deaths-at-one-care-home.

[489] Elite Sex; Suffolk – Updated," *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, May 22, 2015, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2015/05/elite-sex-suffolk.html.

[490] Stewart Payne and Eileen Fairweather, "Country House Hideaway of Disgraced Care Chief," *Evening Standard/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, May

6, 1993, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/02/27/country-house-hideaway-of-disgraced-care-chief-6-5-93/.

[491] “Who are the Queen’s Lord Lieutenants?” *whale.to*, http://whale.to/c/who_are.html.

[492] Jaquelin Magnay, “A Missing Boy and the Australian High Commission in London,” *The Australian/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, January 31, 2015, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2015/02/01/a-missing-boy-and-the-australian-high-commission-in-london-31-01-15/.

[493] Murun Buchstansangur, “Was the Scotland Yard Investigation into Missing Boys Closed down?” *spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, February 9, 2013, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2013/02/09/was-the-scotland-yard-investigation-into-missing-boys-stopped/.

[494] Jaquelin Magnay, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2015/02/01/a-missing-boy-and-the-australian-high-commission-in-london-31-01-15/.

[495] Jaquelin Magnay, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2015/02/01/a-missing-boy-and-the-australian-high-commission-in-london-31-01-15/.

[496] Jaquelin Magnay, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2015/02/01/a-missing-boy-and-the-australian-high-commission-in-london-31-01-15/.

[497] Jaquelin Magnay, https://spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com/2015/02/01/a-missing-boy-and-the-australian-high-commission-in-london-31-01-15/.

[498] Bill Gardner, “Father Claims Scotland Yard Covered up Son’s Murder by Westminster Paedophiles,” *The Telegraph,* November 18, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/11239535/Father-claims-Scotland-Yard-covered-up-sons-murder-by-Westminster-paedophiles.html .

[499] Bill Gardner, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/11239535/Father-claims-Scotland-Yard-covered-up-sons-murder-by-Westminster-paedophiles.html .

[500] Jonathan Corke, “Paedophile Sidney Cooke’s Potential Links to Murder of Boy, 8, Ignored by Police, *Mirror*, May 30, 2015, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/paedophile-sidney-cookes-potential-links-5793887.

[501] Nicola Fifield and Jonathan Corke, “VIP Paedophile Murders: Police didn't tell Family about Quizzing Suspects in Killing of Boy aged eight,” *Mirror*, April 4, 2015, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/vip-paedophile-murders-police-didnt-5460371.

[502] Steph Cockroft, “Notorious Paedophile Gang ‘could have Covered up 17 Child Murders and be Linked to VIP Guest House,’” *Daily Mail*, November 20, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2842201/Notorious-paedophile-gang-covered-17-child-murders-linked-VIP-guest-house.html.

[503] Bill Gardner, “Metropolitan Police Detective’s Fears of Westminster Paedophile ‘Cover-up,’” *The Telegraph*, November 19, 2014, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/11242273/Metropolitan-Police-detectives-fears-of-Westminster-paedophile-cover-up.html.

[504] Bill Gardner, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/11242273/Metropolitan-Police-detectives-fears-of-Westminster-paedophile-cover-up.html.

[505] Bill Gardner, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/crime/11242273/Metropolitan-Police-detectives-fears-of-Westminster-paedophile-cover-up.html.

[506] Dominic Gover, https://www.ibtimes.co.uk/westminister-paedophile-scandal-current-mps-named-again-again-calls-sex-abuse-helpline-1455805.

[507] Eileen Fairweather, "Birmingham Council Illegally Sent Children into Care in Jersey, MP Report Reveals," *Daily Mail*, August 4, 2008, https://www.mailonsunday.co.uk/news/article-1041035/Birmingham-council-illegally-sent-children-care-Jersey-MP-report-reveals.html.

[508] Eileen Fairweather, https://www.mailonsunday.co.uk/news/article-1041035/Birmingham-council-illegally-sent-children-care-Jersey-MP-report-reveals.html.

[509] Jon Snow, "True Scandal of the Child Abusers," *The Guardian/spotlightonabuse.wordpress.com*, June 6, 1996, https://spotlightonabuse.files.wordpress.com/2013/03/snow.jpg.

[510] Tom Symonds, "The Child Abuse Scandal of the British Children sent abroad," *BBC*, February 26, 2017, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-39078652.

[511] Tim Stickings, "More than 10,000 Children in Care went Missing last year amid Fears of Exploitation by Child Grooming Gangs," *Daily Mail*, April 21, 2018, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-5642017/More-10-000-children-care-went-missing-year.html.

[512] "International Tribunal for Natural Justice," https://www.itnj.org/.

[JH1]

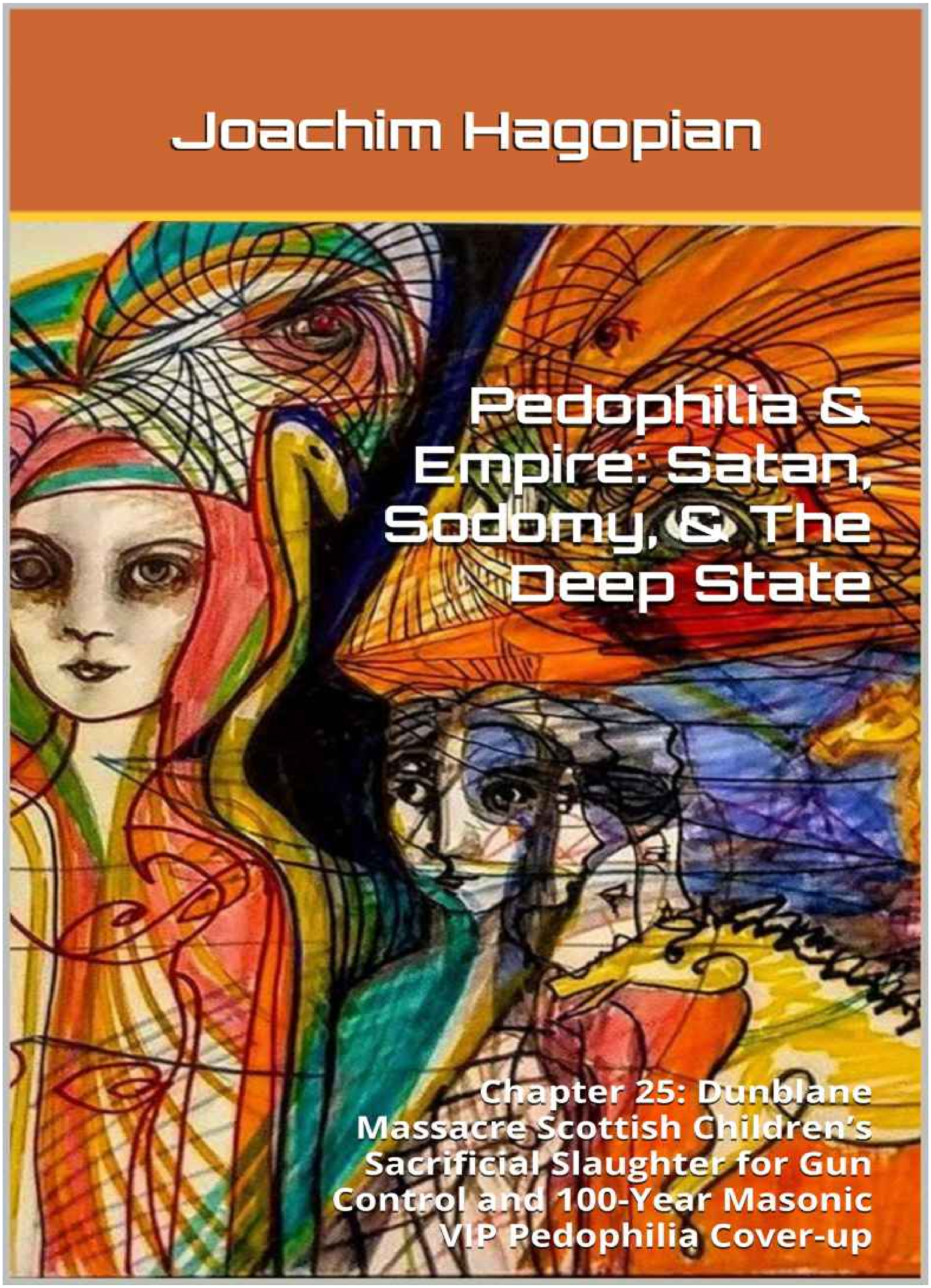

Joachim Hagopian

Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy, & The Deep State

Chapter 25: Dunblane Massacre Scottish Children's Sacrificial Slaughter for Gun Control and 100-Year Masonic VIP Pedophilia Cover-up

Chapter 25 Dunblane Massacre: Scottish Children’s Sacrificial Slaughter for Gun Control and 100-Year Masonic VIP Pedophilia Cover-up

Joachim Hagopian

Cover Credit: Nora Maccoby with permission
http://www.noramaccoby.com/

The Dunblane Massacre of 16 schoolchildren and their teacher on March 13, 1996 offered the international crime cabal not only the excuse to justify its agenda to eliminate law abiding citizens’ right to bear arms to protect their families from those bent on taking their rights away, but it also afforded the opportunity to close ranks to conceal from public exposure its vast pedophilia network stretching throughout a long embedded home of Freemasonry - Scotland. By eliminating a “suicided” Thomas Hamilton as a gun toting, lone nut monster, minimizing his history as a boy procurer and boy toy porn peddler in yet another major VIP pedophile ring, posing a serious liability and major threat to the British Establishment, another catastrophic scandal and near disastrous close call was averted. After all, with child sex abuse scandals still a recurring hot topic in recent years from all of UK’s semi-exposed pedo-operation cover-ups - Elm Guest House, Dolphin Square, Islington, Lambeth, Northern Ireland and North Wales, Britain’s elite and Tory government in particular couldn’t survive yet another major VIP pedophilia scandal. So to ensure its cover-up, the judge presiding over the Dunblane Massacre inquiry - Freemason Lord Cullen[1] - made sure that over 100 incriminating documents amounting to 26 feet of shelf space stacked 8 feet high had to be unlawfully sealed away for the next 100 years.[2]

This fact alone illustrates the desperate and extreme measures the UK criminal government was and is willing to impose in order to conceal this ever-dark reality from public knowledge. More than any other child sex abuse scandal, this one exposes masonic pedophiles at the core of British power politics, high courts and law enforcement, caught red-handed colluding in a child porn-pedo-sex ring-cover-up. Without the secretly placed century long ban, the British Establishment would have been crushed and destroyed. This chapter will methodically unveil the diabolical curtain to reveal the not-so-hidden ugly truth spilling out at every turn. But first an introduction to the deranged antagonist-patsy behind the Dunblane tragedy.

By the time Thomas Hamilton was born in Glasgow, Scotland on May 10, 1952, his wayward bus driver father Thomas Watt was already separated from his hotel chambermaid wife Agnes Hamilton Watt, having left her for another woman.[3] As a result, Thomas never knew his real father and, to make ends meet and avoid facing unwed motherhood, mother Agnes moved back into her adoptive parents' home. James and Catherine Hamilton were actually Agnes's uncle and aunt. But in 1931 when James' sister Rachel gave birth to Agnes out of wedlock, James and Catherine adopted and raised Agnes as their own daughter. In 1955 once Agnes and Thomas Watt were officially divorced, James and Catherine Hamilton also adopted Thomas at age 3 and raised him as their own while Thomas's biological mother Agnes was relegated to the family role as Thomas's 21-year older sister.[4] Confusing? They kept this their little skeletal secret in their family closet until Thomas was 22. Anything to avoid the family shame of an out of wedlock birth in the early 1950s.

From infancy to age 40 Thomas always lived with his pretend father or grandfather James, a Freemason welder who biologically was actually his great uncle, and his great aunt Catherine until her death when he was 35. With his mother Agnes also born out of wedlock to avoid the stigmatization of humiliation and shame, James and

Catherine raised their actual niece as her adopted parents. So for two straight generations, James and wife Catherine adopted and raised both Agnes and her son Thomas as their own children… not that they were such ideal loving parents. Catherine is said to have been an extremely controlling “mother from hell.”[5] At age 11 in 1963 Thomas moved with his family from East Glasgow to 11 Upper Bridge Street, Stirling. Agnes moved out on her own in 1985 while Catherine died in August 1987, the same year that Thomas and James moved to public housing at 7 Kent Road in Stirling where Thomas lived until his death in March 1996.

As an adolescent, Thomas Hamilton was known to have had only one fleeting relationship with a girl until she apparently desired romance, at which point he immediately dropped her like a hot potato, never showing sexual interest in females.[6] As a matter of fact, over time he grew intensely resentful toward women, mainly for their fierce maternal instinct as a contentious, unwanted obstacle and enemy that stood in the way of his access to young boys aged 7 to 11, the true objects of his lustful pedophilic passion.[7]

While residing at 7 Kent Road after 1987, Thomas was increasingly abusive toward the elder Hamilton, perhaps for not coming clean about their family arrangement till he was an adult. According to neighbors Thomas shoved James around, taunting him and allegedly pissed in his drinks.[8] Finally the 84-year old man apparently couldn’t take it any longer and walked out for good in 1992, never speaking to Thomas Hamilton again. Four years later right after the massacre, the elder Hamilton had only these few words to say about Britain’s worst mass killer that he raised till age 40:

[Thomas Hamilton] *wanted everything his own way and I got fed up and left him to it.*[9]

Depending on the source, Thomas Hamilton’s academic performance as a child during his public school years is said to range from lackluster average[10] to good.[11] The consensus more unanimously reports Thomas Hamilton as a shy, socially awkward kid throughout his public education years, leaving school at 15 after attending Falkirk Technical College. After his “father” James bought an air rifle for him while Hamilton was an adolescent, young Thomas joined a rifle club and a youth club called the Boys Brigade.[12] Leaving school in 1968, Hamilton’s innate skills earned him a draughtsman apprenticeship at the county architect office but his interest shortly waned.

In 1972 at 20 years old the young Hamilton opened up his own do-it-yourself shop called Woodcraft in Stirling where he sold retail hardware, kitchen and home products in a somewhat lucrative, homespun business that lasted 13 years.[13] But eventually his preoccupying interest in guns and boys prevailed in his avid pursuit to become a Boy Scoutmaster.

By his late teens, young Thomas Hamilton was keen on the Boy Scouts, volunteering many hours in hopes of becoming a coveted Scoutmaster. The first warning sign of trouble ahead surfaced as far back as 1973 when Hamilton was only 21. Diligent leaders in the Boy Scouts Association began taking steps to wisely ban Thomas Hamilton from becoming a scout leader, a year later blacklisting him.[14] Several boy scouts reported that as their assistant scout leader he made the peculiar request that they strip off their shirts to pose for pictures,[15] a bizarre, pedo-suggestive routine that would become a “Mr. Creepy” custom trademark as he quickly became known amongst Central Scotland boys.[16] And after the March 1996 massacre it would emerge that former scouts claimed he sexually assaulted them.

But during his approximate yearlong stint in the Boy Scouts, it took Hamilton no time at all to show his true colors in flagrant disregard for youth safety. Even the milquetoast MOR *Biography* website reveals:

> *Before long, there were complaints from the boys that Hamilton was teaching them to use rifles and handguns, as well as forcing them to engage in perverted activities, and then paying them to keep quiet.*[17]

While leading a group of young scouts from Stirling on a trip to Loch Loman for a badge, Hamilton's plan to take boys out on open water without the proper safety equipment was promptly nixed by event organizers, his lapse of judgment drawing concerns.[18] But it did not stop him from a temporary promotion to deputy scout leader when a new troop started up in nearby Bannockburn. But then on the first of two 1974 scout outings to Aviemore in the Scottish Highlands, after Hamilton told the parents of eight boys attending that they'd be sleeping overnight in a youth hostel, probably by perverse design, he "neglected" to book space, instead packing them in like sardines to sleep with him inside his van.[19] As his excuse, Hamilton lied, claiming that the hostel was overbooked but officials confirmed it wasn't. On the second Aviemore trip, his half dozen hungry, cold, wet troops were told to dig snow holes with several scouts on the verge of frostbite. Hamilton's brazen recklessness, dishonesty and stubborn defiance quickly did him in as the Scouting Association had astutely seen enough of his dangerously bad habits to wash its hands of the boy menace, forcing his resignation by 1974. Scouting county commissioner Brian Fairgrieve's parting shot towards the banned wannabe scout leader:

> [The Scouting Association is] *suspicious of his moral intentions towards boys.*[20]

Years later the retired surgeon and former Boy Scout county commissioner told police:

I formed the impression that he had a persecution complex, that he had delusions of grandeur, and I thought his actions were almost paranoiac.[21]

Thomas Hamilton's contention that he was unfairly maligned by the Scout Movement demanded a committee review but the Boy Scouts refused and eventually the loser begrudgingly submitted his resignation. But his early failure as a scout leader left him licking his narcissistic injury wound-turned-lifelong grievance that festered in him as poison his entire adult life. Among his major character flaws was an unwillingness, refusal and blind incapacity to face reality, failing to recognize his own serious deficiencies, shortcomings and wrongdoing, always playing out his internalized victim role while externalizing blame onto others as his groundless personal tormenters and vicious evil enemies.

Though buoyed by his acquired masonic membership and recently issued gun license from the year before, with renewed vigor and confidence in 1978, Hamilton persistently tried once again in vain to break into the Boy Scouts, seeking an end-around opening at a troop in the rural scenic Trossachs highlands. But Hamilton discovered that the Scouting Association wasn't kidding when it insisted on upholding its lifetime ban against the derelict.[22]

Hamilton's lingering paranoid obsession against the Boy Scouts resurfaced in August 1986, a full dozen years after his forced resignation. Still trying to be a Scout leader, Thomas Hamilton demanded a meeting with Dr. Brian Fairgrieve who noted that this time Hamilton had:

… The appearance of being on psychiatric drugs.[23]

Like virtually every mass murdering gunman in modern times,[24] Thomas Hamilton was likely also taking mind-altering prescription medications while under the watchful eye of security service spooks a decade later leading up to

Britain's deadliest mass shooting on March 13th, 1996.[25] It's been reported he was on Prozac, an SRI antidepressant associated with mind control.[26] With Hamilton's growing paranoia expressed in letters to Britain's top leaders including the queen,[27] in all likelihood the UK government knew exactly what Hamilton was planning on March 13th. Bear in mind that during this exact same time period the misguided Port Arthur patsy, Martin Bryant, was also being set up by Tavistock drug pushing mind control practitioners in order to simultaneously pull off Australia's worst gun violence in history.[28] In short order within months of the two tragedies, both nations had passed the strictest gun laws in the world.[29] But more on that particular Dunblane stream later.

The same year in 1974 that the Boy Scouts Association blacklisted Hamilton from lifetime membership, as a double whammy, he was also finally told the truth about his family. To compound his deep-rooted psychopathology, while being booted out of the Scouts at 22, he also learned his older sister was really his biological mother and his parents actually were his adoptive grandparents, or more accurately, his great aunt and uncle.[30] As a convenient explanation for why Thomas Hamilton was so odd and so creepy, fueling the distorted conclusion he was a lifelong misfit and loner, the media regularly cites his resultant “confusion” in family roles as leading to his severe psychological problems as a bona fide madman killer. With this “abnormal” family arrangement commonly cited as a major contributing factor to his mental instability, no doubt it might fuck up anybody's head for a spell, causing some deep-seated identity confusion and lack of trust issues. But upon learning this as a young adult for the first time, if during his childhood he was nurtured, cared for and loved unconditionally while growing up, clinically the residual psychological damage would likely be minimal or nonexistent.

But Thomas grew up in a shame-based family environment where its public avoidance at all cost was the Hamilton clan’s #1 M.O in life. Hence, Thomas’s entire adulthood was spent trying to avoid shame and humiliation. He doggedly pursued the highly prized, respectable role as mentor of young boys, offering him opportunity of personal fulfillment through service to and aspired honor from his local Scottish community. Hamilton attributed juvenile delinquency to a societal upbringing lacking discipline. He saw his noble role in providing sports club activities as keeping kids off the streets and instilling much needed discipline in the face of younger generations addicted to junk food and television. But no matter how hard he tried to be the esteemed coach and positive youth role model, his aspirations were thwarted by what he considered malicious forces beyond his control intent on spreading ill will and false gossip about him to ruin both his reputation and life. Lurking behind Hamilton’s do-gooder rationale to instill Spartan-like discipline in young boys as a characterological strength, his overbearing dominance, excessive need for pathological control and unbridled sexual perversions creepily crept into every aspect of his unhealthy, obsessive involvement and perverse attachment to little boys aged 7 to 11.

As Thomas Hamilton’s other lifetime fixation, his passion for guns and bullets was overcompensation for his effeminate personality and voice, engendering the strong masculine identity he desperately latched onto that might overpower Hamilton’s reverberating internalized unconscious fears as a deviant outcast too weak and too geeky to make his manly mark on the world. During his island adventures on Loch Loman as the all-powerful tyrant, Hamilton would often re-enact the dynamics as depicted in the William Golding novel *Lord of the Flies*, the film version being his all-time favorite flick.[31] In fears buried deep within his own psyche, Thomas Hamilton was the personification of the Piggy character as a fellow four-eyed, pudgy, doughboy object of such sadistic scorn and cruel rejection by fictional peers echoed externally by an adult majority of his own community peers.

Hamilton's overzealous embrace of guns and athletic prowess through hardcore physical fitness and masculine sport was in his mind the answer to his own unconscious shortcomings and failings as an adult male, hence the overly stern, stoic camping-sports club coach, ultra-harsh disciplinarian and overbearing taskmaster. In his cruel sadism inflicting fear, terror and pain on his Loch Lomond victims, it was get-even time for all his own both real and perceived suffering, past and present. Hamilton derived his ultimate sense of power and control combined with perverted, lustful gratification when directing half naked skinny little boys in undersized swimsuits to pant, sweat, shiver and suffer too.

From Hamilton's frame of reference, his community's parents, police and governing councils were all ganging up behind his back, unfairly conspiring to destroy him through "false," unproven rumors and innuendo, for years busily targeting and branding him a sex pervert. As the martyred adult version of Piggy fighting for his very survival on his own home turf of Dunblane and Stirling, from Hamilton's warped, twisted perspective, his plight was painfully reinforced on a daily basis by his "callous, judgmental" community. Rendering his noble quest to be a strong masculine role model for their sons an impossible, thankless task turned nightmare and ever distant illusion, this fact alone infuriated and degraded him to the depths of his being, eventually justifying his brutal attack on innocents where it would hurt his targeted enemies the most.

From an early age Thomas Hamilton was driven to make his grandiose mark on his community, perhaps initially, ideally as a strong “positive” male mentor for young boys, and as that challenge eluded him at every turn regardless of his focused, formidable efforts to fulfill and vindicate himself, the widespread rejection and humiliation he believed he was suffering and wrongly burdened with, from his deranged POV it more than justified him making his unforgettable mark of retaliation against his sleepy idyllic Scottish village of 7,300 residents as the ultimate avenger of every perceived injustice ever cruelly heaped upon him. Taking out a classroom of his community’s most defenseless, youngest children would be his “great” moment of revenge, his sleepy town’s ever-rude wake-up call turned nightmare for attaining his ultimate payback with a historic exclamation point for the record books. His inherited family legacy - avoiding public shame and humiliation at all cost - internally drove his pathological wounds and impulses in a desperate, insane attempt to regain his sense of stolen self-worth, identity and power as a force to be reckoned with, in his own tormented, depraved mindset, absolving his extreme act of unthinkable violence.

As psychoanalytic psychologist Peter Aylward framed it:

> *In Thomas Hamilton’s family history we have repeating experiences across the generations of an attempt to avoid the shame of children born out of wedlock. This perversion that took place within the family was in order to save face in the community. We know that shame and humiliation is one of the major contributing factors to violence where violence attempts to eradicate any feelings of shame.*[32]

Hamilton has been described as having “a schizoid personality” as one of the DSM listings under personality mental disorders,[33] characterized by individuals who choose to remain within an emotional shell to keep their distance from others, manifested through strong isolative tendencies and an incapacity towards intimacy, and most often living out their underachieving, quiet, solitary lives as society’s reclusive oddballs.[34] Expediently tagging the monster with this psychiatric label might superficially help to explain how he ended up the mass murderer of young children, particularly when the need to peg him with the crazed lone gunman stereotype is so absolutely essential for the official narrative to be publicly believed and accepted. But artificially massaging reality to fit the lone nut gunman myth is a commonly deceptive ploy to manipulate and shape public opinion away from the real truth.

In December 1996, nine months after the massacre and shortly after Lord Cullen’s fake inquiry and report, a senior police source informed Labor MP Frank Cook for Stockton North that Thomas Hamilton at the age of 25 joined Freemason Lodge number 1413 of the Masonic Order in Glasgow in 1977.[35] No sooner was Hamilton the gun lover a Freemason, that same year he possessed his coveted first firearms license, a legal privilege he enjoyed the rest of his life with continual renewal help from masonic friends in high places, due only to his unbroken two decade fraternal bond with his secret brotherhood.[36]

But it turns out that even on Hamilton’s very first 1977 firearms certificate application, he lied. The pathological liar falsely claimed that he was a member of the local Callander Rifle and Pistol Club,[37] the same club that in late February 1996 - just days ahead of the massacre – had rejected his membership application.[38] He repeatedly violated the law when both selling and exchanging his weapons without following legal protocol. At any given time, he also possessed far more weapons than his 6-gun license authorized. One of his assistants at a club stated that he once proudly showed him six handguns, four rifles and a Kalashnikov assault rifle.[39] The man bragged constantly about his growing arsenal. It was believed that Hamilton also kept semi-automatic handguns outlawed after Britain’s first mass shooting in Hungerford in 1987 killing 14.[40] Police repeatedly failed to adequately follow up with reference checks or updated criminal intelligence files on him that would suddenly disappear, then reappear once the licensing application was processed and renewed. On countless occasions had law enforcement simply enforced existing laws and protocols, Hamilton would never have been able to attain either his licenses or his guns.

Though Thomas Hamilton was clearly an odd duck, and indeed a very creepy predatory pedophile, the media leap claiming he was a lifelong loner and social misfit as always portrayed by the mainstream press is a simplistic copout made to fit the standard mold of the lone nut gunman scenario.[41] The fact remains, since 1957 his “grandfather” James was a Freemason in Stirling until his death in 2000,[42] with Thomas joining in 1977,[43] the same year he acquired his first gun certificate after James had bought him an air rifle while still a teenager.[44] The bottom line, Hamilton maintained a fraternal, long term friendship and alliance with some very powerful, likeminded masonic brothers on the Central Scotland Police force headquartered in his hometown Stirling, along with local MP politicians of national prominence, senior figures in Scotland’s judiciary including the Crown Office, as well as within Scotland’s news broadcasting media, all sharing the same vested, self-serving interest to protect both him and themselves as pedophilic Freemasons.[45]

The more Hamilton is cast as the extreme misfit and abnormally deviant loner so apart from his social community - however much a gross distortion of reality, the more distance removed from any credible account that depicts Hamilton as the supplier if not leader of a major VIP pedophile ring. Yet as a masonic procurer of boy victims and child pornography in the pre-internet era for powerful sickos belonging to the “Friends of QVS,” VIP patrons of UK’s defense ministry’s Queen Victoria School, that’s exactly what he was for a number of years.[46] And according to the observant eyes of his neighbors Grace and Jim Ogilvie, flashy cars with well-dressed men were coming and going all the time to his rundown little flat, this is not the skewed one-dimensional portrayal of some isolated, schizoid hermit that the media and government inquiries would prefer us to believe.[47] A predatory psychopathic pedophile Freemason who covertly supplied victims to powerful VIP fellow masons? Most definitely. But more on his Queen Victoria School connections coming up.

Was Hamilton also a formidable legal force to be reckoned with through his obsessive-compulsive, exhaustive letter writing campaigns, venting all the perceived injustices ever inflicted upon him by his “cruel” community? With his latest and final postal entre addressed directly to Queen Elizabeth sent less than a week before his death,[48] the answer is most certainly in the affirmative, especially with the added boost of possessing likeminded friends in high places.

Hamilton spent years bribing and grooming local boys attending his clubs with money, gifts, lent bicycles, canoe trips, allowing truants to hang out at his D-I-Y shop during school hours.[49] A distinct change in attitude and behavior was often detected by parents in their sons after attending his clubs reflecting Hamilton’s parental subversion.

His club’s use of the word “rovers” in his first known club - the Dunblane Rovers Group, intentionally misled his community into believing his organization was affiliated with the Scouts Movement that at one time also used that same name. Moreover, since his sporting clubs regularly met at public schools, many parents assumed that his events were school sponsored. In addition to personally dropping off leaflets in residential neighborhood postal boxes for generating business, Hamilton would also unload bundles of his advertising leaflets left in schools to be distributed under the discretion of head teachers. This too would further lead to common misperception. And his bigger moneymaker, the summer camping clubs, were largely comprised of boys that attended clubs at the public schools. As a result, one parent stated:

> *All the parents thought the club was organised by the local school, where its meetings took place. We only found out later that the school had nothing to do with it.*[50]

Gradually though, his Mr. Creepy aura and persona rubbed too many children, parents and teachers the wrong way based on his ill-intentioned vibes that fueled the community's suspicions. By 1983 more than a dozen years before the school massacre, too many parents' complaints from their 9-and 10-year olds attending Hamilton's sports clubs at Dunblane High School led the Central Regional Council to suspend Hamilton's contract.[51] Allegations emerged of inappropriate contact with boys. In response, Hamilton accused Boy Scout officials and local parents of maliciously spreading "rumors," causing him to lose not only his D-I-Y business but also his "bread and butter" boys clubs as well. In actuality, he lost his home retail shop due to larger corporate competitors moving into the area to offer cheaper products in addition to his increasing preoccupation organizing club activities with young boys.[52]

The pedophile subsequently hired a solicitor to formally challenge the council decision and in 1984 the ombudsman of Central Scotland ruled in his favor, in effect the following year forcing the local high schools to remain his primary logistical platform for his boys sporting and camping clubs. Despite the sexual abuse allegations and plethora of parental misgivings, the ombudsman Eric Gillett felt that the parents' grievances and arguments were neither criminal nor alarming enough to warrant preventing Hamilton's legal access to Central Scotland schools and other council public buildings and venues for his clubs.[53] The ombudsman cited "unsubstantiated rumors" as insufficient legal grounds to deny him his means of livelihood. This victory carried the weight and momentum to largely tilt other district councils in Scotland to forego the legal hassle and cost of opposing his operations from spreading. It appeared his “charmed” life managing to avoid any and all accountability for his many years of shady behavior was inexplicable, unless of course consideration that the VIP pedo-Establishment was loyally protecting him.

So slighted by a constant flow of perceived enemies based on lifelong persecutory delusions, while still in his mid-20s and undaunted after his rejection by the Boy Scouts, the resourceful Thomas Hamilton created an alternative outlet to indulge his unhealthy fascination and perverted obsession for sleazily craving the company of young lads to boss around and abuse, soon enough organizing and running his own sports clubs and summer camps while maintaining his other unhealthy fixation on lethal weapons. By the late 1970s Hamilton began operating the Dunblane Rovers Group utilizing the Dunblane High School gymnasium and grounds. His sports clubs focused on rigorous physical exercise routines that catered to such popular sports as gymnastics and football (America’s soccer). Though banned for life from the Scouting Movement, Hamilton deceptively chose the name affiliated with the Boy Scouts. Initially his sports clubs and camping trips were quite popular in the early to mid-1980s, drawing up to 70 and 80 young boys respectively.[54]

Belonging to both masonic lodge #1413 and various gun clubs over the years (before most eventually also snubbed him), Hamilton would also regularly take his young boys to firing ranges for target practice shooting, knowing that for grooming purposes, young males’ interest in guns would only attract more boys to him and his organized activities.[55]

At all his sporting clubs and camps, Hamilton continued the dubiously suspect practice he’d begun in the Boy Scouts, forcing his young participants to strip down in front of his gawking, lecherous eyes to remove all their clothes in order to wear the Hamilton issued trademark, his skimpy, too tight black swim trunks, not even allowing the boys privacy to change in locker rooms. Right after the shooting, a boy that had attended one of his clubs at Dunblane High School revealed what Hamilton would regularly say:

You should take off your T shirts and have bare tops. Let's see who has the best build, and you can be captain of the football team.[56]

Prior to a father pulling his preteen son out of a Hamilton club, the boy alleged that the pervert told him:

You can come around and see my gun.[57]

As soon as parents found out about these highly suspicious, sexually provocative rituals that were overt signs that something wasn't right, immediately alarm bells would customarily go off. Additionally, without seeking parents' permission or knowledge, Hamilton's obsession to take photos and videos of boys (with a camcorder as of 1989), often filming long lingering shots concentrating either on their bare chests or groin sections was yet another tipoff that a homosexual child predator was on the loose in Central Scotland. Back in the pre-internet age, he allegedly supplemented his income selling these boy toy porn videos and photos to fellow pedophiles.[58]

Eventually by the early 1990s every one of Hamilton's local film developer shops in Stirling refused to accept his business,[59] specifically developing his weekly supply of film rolls due to their kinky, pedophilic nature, some of which undoubtedly constituted child pornography sold to other pedophiles… in all likelihood the prime reason for his nonstop flow of visitors in fancy clothes and cars briefly showing up at his rundown flat right up to his D-Day and within an hour of his death, plain clothes security services emptying his place of all incriminating evidence including his prized collection of child pornography.[60] It’s been reported that over 4,000 photos dating back 15 years were removed from his flat by police. After revealing that “Hamilton was at the center of a massive pedophile ring,” the *Sunday Mirror* stated just four days following the Dunblane attack:

> *Hamilton supplied photographs to dozens of fellow perverts, many of them professional men who parked expensive cars outside his flat.*[61]

So it wasn’t just nosy neighbors who knew all about his wealthy clients showing up at his doorstep all the time. With some of his best customers among the thin blue line, the Central Scotland police were well aware of:

> *Names and details of men, most of them thought to be clients who paid him up to 100 pounds for pictures, are to be checked. Police also believe it was Hamilton's paedophile trade which allowed him to indulge in his expensive hobbies.*[62]

Immediately following the mass murder, MSM and police readily admitted Hamilton was a child pornographer. Often before the mainstream press falls in line under strict orders to spew out only state controlled false narrative propaganda, actual truth can surface before absolute cabal censorship control takes over. Only in the first couple days after tragedy is it openly reported that Hamilton was at the center of a much larger pedophile ring that included well-dressed established figures. None of this information was allowed after the first week right through Cullen’s heavily controlled public inquiry.

Back to the pedophile’s addictive passion for topless boys, whenever asked or confronted by an inquisitive, concerned parent about his constant picture taking, Hamilton the bullshitter would insist that focusing the lens on a boy’s particular muscle group through photos and film analysis assisted him as a “skilled” (unqualified) coach to better develop their athletic skills in the sport.[63] Professionally, Hamilton only possessed a gymnastics assistant certificate, qualifying him to only be able work with girls under the license of a more certified professional and, because of his predatory boy obsession, he never did. And rarely if ever, did he ever actually work under any credentialed supervisor as required by his lowest level certificate. So technically, virtually his entire so called boys club career, he was deceptively breaking the law. Moreover, Hamilton routinely exceeded the child to adult supervision ratio, violating yet another statute regulation. But whenever anyone ever inquired or tried challenging him over these serious breaches, again he always seemed to slither out of them protected by his masonic big boys holding special interest in the wares he was selling.

Hamilton even tried selling his unqualified, amateurish, unlawful services using his borderline child porn videos as a self-promo advertisement, but the unnatural, perverted effects from watching more than a minute or two nearly always backfired, turning parents away.[64] It was more than obvious that this geeky, bespectacled, pudgy, lying-his-ass-off, clinically insane freak was a complete sexual perv and deceitful fraud, capped off with a paranoid personality. For the Establishment to protect and defend him for 25 years is no different from how it protected fellow dangerous deviant Jimmy Savile’s predatory crimes, also unhidden in plain sight. Consider it a job perk that comes with the territory as child procurers operating within the same VIP pedophilia network.

Under increasing pressure to appear more legitimate and safe, by 1989 Hamilton was intentionally misrepresenting his boys club services by using the misleading name “Boys’ Club Sports Group Committee” under the false pretense that his virtual one-man amateurish operation was a professional group.[65] The ever-deceitful Hamilton submitted fictitious minutes to his alleged committee meetings to con councils into granting him contracts to use public buildings for his clubs, even listing his clueless mother Agnes as a bogus committee member. No doubt signatures on his petitions and letters allegedly supporting his clubs after councils had cancelled his lets were also fake. As his number of club members gradually declined over the years, early on Hamilton would attribute it to lack of patience and commitment in undisciplined, immature boys. But in later years Hamilton increasingly blamed negative gossip and lies spread about him through parents, teachers, police and Boy Scout officials. Despite communities across Central Scotland realizing he was bad news, at the time of the Dunblane shooting, he still was running authorized clubs in Dunblane, Falkirk, Bannockburn and Bishopbriggs.[66]

Whenever parents would express concern that no other supervising adults were present at his clubs, his typical response would be to falsely claim he was authorized to run his groups alone with up to 30 boys.[67] Yet another violation was Hamilton never carried mandatory insurance for his club business. Hustler Hamilton in an aggressive sales ploy typically applied undue pressure on any boy and his parents after attending just one session in order to recruit customers for his summer camps where he earned more money and more opportunity to abuse his prey.

After the ombudsman had given him the greenlight to resume his sports and camping clubs in 1985, Hamilton's MP from his hometown Stirling Michael Forsyth made sure to send a congratulatory note for being able to continue doing what he loved best – hanging out with half-naked, submissive, browbeaten white boys. He even urged the pervert to use the ombudsman's favorable decision as a selling point, writing:

> *Dear Mr Hamilton, thank you for sending me the commissioner's report. May I congratulate you on your success. I hope you will take steps to ensure this is given proper publicity.*[68]

The day after the Dunblane massacre, it was Forsyth who wrote Prime Minister John Major expressing how urgently important it was for "the right judge" to be selected for the public inquiry,[69] which of course as the Scotland Secretary of State, Forsyth chose the alleged accomplice-to-the-crime Freemason Judge William Cullen,[70] who in turn chose fellow Freemason saturated criminal accomplice - the Central Scotland Police to investigate.[71] So it amounted to the criminals investigating the criminals, i.e., a win-win for pedophile protecting criminals only, utilizing the same old worn-out formula for pulling off yet another sealed tight pedo-cover-up.

After protecting and enabling the criminal for over 20 years,[72] placing the CSP in charge of the Dunblane massacre investigation is like a bank heist getaway driver put in charge of investigating the same bank robbery he just participated in. And the Dunblane investigator - Detective Chief Superintendent John Ogg who helped salvage Hamilton's luxury cabin cruiser that caught fire years earlier made the vow to leave "no stone unturned" in the mass murder investigation, the same chap that allegedly cast a vote to hide all files for 100 years.[73] It's so out there, you can't make this shit up.

In response to the uproar over allegations that the Cullen Inquiry and CSP investigation were a cover-up, Ogg stated:

> *I can reassure you that the investigation into the Dunblane incident was absolutely thorough, and we covered every angle.*[74]

On top of all the corrupt collusion that went into the making of the cover-up, a year after the massacre, it was revealed from several sources that Thomas Hamilton even served as a Central Scotland Police informer.[75] Scottish MP Tam Dalyell from Lithlingow who made the allegation first came into contact with Hamilton after a mother complained that the pedophile had made sexual advances toward her son. But when the MP contacted police, they said there was nothing they could do (i.e., he was above the law). No wonder CSP never arrested the creep. Throw in Cullen's century long ban and all the VIP pedophiles blissfully live out their lives unencumbered, going to their graves never paying for their heinous crimes.

Thus for a so called nerdy "schizoid misfit loner, Freemason Thomas Hamilton "mysteriously" wielded a whole lot of unaccounted for clout and power granting him a lifetime "get out of jail" card and a lifetime supply of preapproved gun licenses despite decades of accumulating evidence of unsavory illicit activity. Clearly he was aided and abetted, armed and made all the more dangerous for a full quarter century both prior to as well as after his death (with another three quarters of a century still to go per protector Cullen) by a not-so-secret, impenetrable layer of impunity shielded by upstanding, rock solid pillars of the Scottish masonic community and British nation, all sharing the same perverted tastes for sexually preyed upon underage boys.[76] But this part of his seedy criminal life was virtually excised meticulously out of the Cullen cutout of a sham inquiry as well as the litany of distorted, half-truth mainstream accounts of his life, in particular, Hamilton's central role as a Savile-like "pimp" for Scotland's child abusing VIP Freemasons.[77] This segment of "the Thomas-Crown Affair" has been forcibly, surgically yet all-too conspicuously removed from public exposure for the rest of our lives and beyond.

During the Cullen inquiry there were just two brief gloss-over mentions of incidents related to inappropriate sexual misconduct on Hamilton’s part. One involved a 12-year old boy who showed up to a club for the first time around 1979-80 after hearing about shooting guns at the firing range. At the Cullen Inquiry the witness said that Hamilton sat down next to him and began rubbing his inner thigh asking him why he wanted to become a Dunblane Rover, the name of his group.[78] The boy recoiled and went home and told his father how Hamilton gave him the creeps. Yet when this same boy came back to the club the following week, knowing the 12-year old had complained about him, Hamilton refused to let him into the group under the pretense that the boy was too immature, code word for “can’t keep secrets.”

The other incident read at the inquiry was an anonymous account written by a man still in his mid-20s.[79] As a 12-year old boy in the early 1980s, he attended four sessions of Hamilton’s Rovers Club at Bannockburn High School. Two of those four weeks were spent shooting at a Dunblane firing range. When summer came, with about 7 or 8 other boys, the 12-year old signed up for a week and a half outing aboard Hamilton’s luxury cabin cruiser on Loch Lomond. One particular day and night stood out from the rest when Hamilton took turns placing a rope around each boy and flinging them overboard into the water. The 12-year old was too frightened, faking illness to get out of it. That night he was summoned to Hamilton’s private cabin wearing only his underwear while Hamilton was only dressed in shorts. Eerily similar to MP Cyril Smith meting out punishment for “bad boys” as his concocted lame excuse to sexually abuse his victims, while threateningly holding a pointer, Hamilton ordered the 12-year old to behave or else. In the victim’s words:

He began to touch me between the legs and private parts. I was very scared and started to cry. He told me to stop crying or I would be hit by the pointer.[80]

By this time Hamilton had slipped out of his shorts exhibiting a hard-on while commanding the boy to lie down on his bed. With the lad laying facedown, Hamilton then began stroking his back asking if he liked it while the abuser stroked his own penis.[81] When the freaked out, poor kid began crying again, an enraged Hamilton pounded the pointer into the pillow inches from the terrorized boy's head, then told him to stand up and face the wall while breathing heavily, Hamilton again began stroking the boy's backside. The traumatized 12-year old was frozen in fear for the duration of the encounter. Though by phone he pleaded with his mother the next day to come home early, he knew he couldn't, nor could he tell his mother what happened.

Though this incident seems extremely credible and no doubt did occur, the inquiry solicitor representing the Crown Office Ian Bonomy explained that it could not be trusted because the alleged victim was recently convicted of a "dishonesty crime" and that other information conveyed was not verifiable nor was the witness located or willing or able to appear at the inquiry in person.[82] A running theme in all the pedo-scandals always puts child victims on trial as an expedient target to dismiss allegations. Judge Cullen had heard enough to completely write off the alleged sexual abuse as unreliable, again going out of his way to discard the fact that Thomas Hamilton was a predatory serial pedophile. For obvious reason, Cullen steered the inquiry away from any further exploring of Hamilton's sexual crimes, ensuring that the Dunblane killer's VIP pedophile ring was completely suppressed, safely hidden away till 2096.

Cullen's over-the-top strategy in his inquiry was to blame law enforcement for letting the monster slip through the cracks while concealing his own judicial Crown Office from obstruction of justice.[83] The public was supposed to buy the Speculative Society Freemason Judge Cullen's official story that the disgraced fall guy in the Dunblane Massacre is

Central Scotland Police, Deputy Chief Constable Douglas McMurdo, whose chronic gross lack of judgement for decades at a time permitted Hamilton to misuse the flawed policing system, signing off on the killer's firearms certificates in both 1989 and again for a final time in 1995 just months ahead of the Dunblane Massacre. McMurdo's last signature according to the Cullen line is supposed to have sealed the tragic fate of 16 murdered schoolchildren and their teacher. At McMurdo's lengthy 2-day cross-examination conducted by the solicitor representing deceased children's families, Colin Campbell QC, the normally composed and businesslike lawman-turned-targeted public scapegoat reportedly broke down in tears hearing Campbell's accusation:

But for the culpable failure by Central Scotland Police [i.e., DCC McMurdo]*, it is probable that the events of 13 March at Dunblane primary school would not have occurred.*[84]

McMurdo became the cabal's sacrificial fall guy so that over 100 documents and VIP pedo-criminals could remain hidden for the next 100 years. We're supposed to actually buy this absurd line of crap that beyond the killer himself, only DCC McMurdo and his CSP caused the massacre through their own gross negligence and incompetence. One senior officer's stupidity in the Freemason infested Central Scotland Police is how Thomas Hamilton was allowed to commit the biggest mass murder in British history… uh-huh. And for his taking on the scapegoat role in the Dunblane bloodbath aftermath in defense of the realm, as always Queen Elizabeth never fails to reward all her key pedo-cabal players for their sacrifice and dedication to the bigger pedo-cause. Just 19 days after the 1996 massacre, Her Majesty promoted McMurdo as assistant to Her Majesty's Chief Inspectorate of Constabulary for all of Scotland.[85] Obviously McMurdo dutifully fell on the sword for the Queen's

Commonwealth Cabal, so the rest of the evil ones could escape justice free and clear.

But here’s the real truth. McMurdo and Hamilton were close friends, very likely masonic close friends. After all, on the final day of Cullen’s inquiry, McMurdo’s chauffeur testified that in the evening he often would drive his boss to Hamilton’s dirty little flat.[86] The fact that they were close friends explains why McMurdo never failed to rubber stamp his gun license renewals despite so much evidence against it.

Head of CSP’s child protection unit - Detective Sergeant Paul Hughes - conducted an inspection of Thomas Hamilton’s alleged illicit activities at his summer camps on Loch Lomond in the summer of 1991, writing a scathing indictment on the camp leader’s “unsavory character and unstable personality.”[87] Det. Hughes even had the foresight to realize the procurator fiscal, the office in Scotland that weighs police evidence to decide whether to charge and prosecute a suspect, would not prosecute Hamilton based on his police report. So on November 11, 1991 Hughes sent a memo to the Detective Superintendent, CID Headquarters unequivocally stating Hamilton’s firearms license should be revoked.[88] Despite the memo winding up on Deputy Chief Constable McMurdo’s desk, on November 14, 1991 McMurdo stamped “no action,” and went ahead signing off on his next gun license. For his catastrophic “mistakes,” once this damaging news surfaced during the Cullen inquiry in the summer of ’96, followed by the release of the Cullen report in October, McMurdo was toast, compelled to resign from both his lofty law enforcement posts despite the symbolically empty royal props from the queen.[89]

If it’s not really true that all it took to allow VIP pedophiles to go Scot free is sacrifice one senior cop’s career, then release the over 100 secret files to disprove it. Otherwise, it can only be taken that the above statement has to be true. The

British Establishment needs the ban in place so that the guilty sodomizers atop the pedo-food chain can peacefully go to their graves untouched by their God-defying sins.

During the Cullen Inquiry DCC McMurdo admitted:

I knew him better than anyone... but I didn't think he was dangerous.[90]

Scotland’s assistant HM Chief Inspector of Constabulary lied under oath:

Everything I knew about him [Hamilton] *was related to boys’ camps. There was no evidence he would be dangerous with a firearm.*[91]

Tell that to all the young boys and families over the years that witnessed firsthand and reported to police Hamilton recklessly brandishing his vast collection of loaded firearms or one of the boys’ mothers Doreen Hagger, who he angrily threatened with his rifle on a 1988 camping trip to Inchmoan Island on Loch Loman, followed by:

Wouldn’t it be strange if your tent caught fire tonight?[92]

On another occasion after she’d reported him to the police, he drove to her home to angrily confront her. In Doreen’s words:

He was in his van one day and stopped me outside my house. He said he heard I had been talking to the police. I told him that as far as I was concerned he was a pervert and should not be in charge of boys. At that he produced this gun from under his seat and pointed it at me, saying it was loaded.[93]

Yet McMurdo had the audacity to pretend there was no evidence that Hamilton was a dangerous gun lunatic, threatening repeatedly to use his lethal weapons on anyone bold enough to confront and oppose him. When Doreen reported the incident to the police, she was told that Hamilton was simply moving his gun to a new location and had gun permits, unwilling to lift a finger in her defense, much less take action against his emboldened criminal offense. It was obvious that Hamilton's cockiness stemmed from knowing his police friends in high places would be backing him up.

Doreen and Hamilton had clashed months earlier. Right after the massacre according to a March 1996 *Irish Times* article, Doreen Hagger heard from her 10-year old son attending one of his Loch Lomond camps in 1988 that:

Boys were forced to run around naked, rub suntan oil on to Hamilton, and were stripped and thrown into the freezing loch[94]*.*

… these same complaints heard from others as well reflect more echoes of the *Lord of the Flies* theme.

Incidents alleging that the pervert was rubbing suntan lotion on boys' inner thighs, and demanding that they in turn rub the lotion all over his naked body accompanied by an unavoidable erection and heavy breathing clearly was sexual abuse involving indecent acts committed against minors. Journalist Jonathon Russell wrote in *The Mirror* a March 1996 article that:

[Boys were] *forced to rub suntan oil all over his naked body as he writhed and groaned in ecstasy.*[95]

Hamilton reportedly slept in the same tent with his favorite boys as well. Yet when Doreen Hagger compiled all this evidence and presented it to the police, it was dismissed as mere hearsay, never taken seriously as a crime.

The disturbing information her son had shared with his mother was what prompted Doreen and her friend Janet Reilly to rush to Hamilton's campsite, ostensibly as adult volunteers in order to see for themselves what was going on.

[96] But Hamilton rarely included other adults at any of his activities, regularly violating statute codes of the child to adult supervision ratio. From the very start, Hamilton viewed Doreen and Janet as intruding troublemakers raining on his pedo-parade rather than much needed adult helpers.

Immediately they clashed when Doreen saw how he underfed the boys while cracking a slave driver's whip to impose hard labor on his young captives. While boys had powdered porridge for breakfast, the tyrant had bacon and eggs. While he drank juice, they were forced to drink water out of the loch. While he stood ordering them around as King Tut, since 8AM they were gathering a week's supply of large logs for firewood, while required as always to wear skimpy swim trunks regardless of the cold weather. She had to insist the boys be given water breaks and at 11:30AM cease their assigned chores.[97] After he'd gone to sleep that night, Doreen went through his supplies and the next morning fed his young campers his eggs and bacon. She also forced Hamilton to make an off island shopping trip to begrudgingly spend £80 on real food including fresh fruit and vegetables. By day two he hated the female intruders' presence and it was at this point that he threatened to burn down her tent. She practically had to beg one of the older boys to help her, her 7-year old daughter Vicky, son Andrew and Janet escape once everyone had gone to bed. Yet Doreen had a long sleepless night feeling guilty that she'd abandoned the abused boys still left in camp with the petty, wicked, dangerous man.

By predatory design, Hamilton preferred to be alone with boys, especially at the remote campsites, since he could easily get away with physical and sexual abuse without interference from "prying" adult eyes. Only allegedly invited likeminded VIP pedo guests rendezvousing at his isolated campsites were welcome. From the late great journalist and author Dave Magowan's 2001 *The Pedophocracy:*

One police report sealed under the [100-year] *order ‘concerns Thomas Hamilton’s activities at a summer camp in 1991, five years before the shootings,’ and allegedly links Hamilton to ‘figures in the Scottish establishment, including two senior politicians and a lawyer,’ according to The Guardian.*[98]

Immediately following the Dunblane shooting, five teenage boys emerged to tell their horrific stories of cruel abuse at the maniac’s hands while stranded alone for days on Loch Lomond on what they call “Devil’s Island” in the late 1980s or early 90s. On their camping expedition for kicks, Hamilton forced one of the primary school youngsters to swallow a .22 rifle bullet, then bellied over in uncontrollable laughter.[99] Once they arrived on the island, the brother of the bullet swallower stated:

When Hamilton got us alone on that island he told us that our parents had given him permission to beat us.[100]

The sadist took immense pleasure terrorizing the 8- and 9-year old boys, confiscating all their clothes upon arrival and requiring them to wear only his issued black swimsuits without shoes through bracken and nettles, scratching, bruising and cutting up their feet and legs. That would be his sick lame excuse to then inflict more pain rubbing “white spirit” on them. When boys would cry, he would give them “special treatment” in his punishment tent. He used a hairbrush on their backsides for those cringing in tears. Meanwhile, the rest of the unhappy campers were forced to stand at attention outside the punishment tent listening to the screams of their peers being beaten. A mother of a 10-year old restated the familiar scene that he would force boys in the punishment tent to rub suntan oil on his private parts. In her words:

He'd pick a couple of boys to do it every night. The kids spoke of him moaning, and wriggling about making funny *noises* .[101]

Another favorite form of punishment mentioned earlier was being thrown into the frigid lake water to stand at attention until they turn blue. Around the campfire at night he wouldn’t tell ghost stories but stories of murder with chopped off heads. This is an old predator tactic to scare young children into a state of such fear and anxiety before sleep that they become less resistive to physical “comforting” from the adult pervert’s lustful touch. Right after the Dunblane mass killing, allegations surfaced that Hamilton used sticks with thorns to beat naked boys on his camping trips.[102]

Hamilton conned parents, even two fathers who were police officers, into believing his camps were loaded with good, clean, innocent summer fun, fun for only the sicko who regularly got his jollies off at abused, molested children’s expense. One of the cops said “he led them like slaves,” similar to a boot camp or prison. But when both police officers registered formal complaints about Hamilton’s pedophilic crimes to their bosses, again no charges or prosecution resulted.[103] Only more confirmation that he was protected by a masonic pedophile brotherhood.

The brother of the boy made to swallow the bullet also disclosed:

He took me inside a tent alone and made me strip. It was creepy. He stared at me for a while before giving me some skimpy black shorts to wear. Everyone got the same treatment. [Another lad chimed in] *He was a weirdo. Some of the things he made the kids do was terrible.*[104]

The final statement above means the media and public still doesn’t know the half of it. The untold shame of trauma typically precludes male adolescents from full disclosure. What is most clear, Hamilton derived demented pleasure turning their world into a pure nightmarish hell for his terrorized victims.

Another mother was sickened to learn that her 7-year old son was the object of Hamilton’s nocturnal attentions:

> *Hamilton was so desperate to get my Steven at the camp that he offered to let one of my sons go for free. At nights during the trip, Steven would always lay down to sleep beside his friend. But Hamilton would physically lift him and put him beside where he was sleeping. If Steven woke up during the night he would go back to his pal. But Hamilton would follow him and carry him back to lie beside his sleeping bag.*[105]

Again the madman’s pattern of twofold abuse was similar to Sir Cyril Smith, except much more protracted. They would both use punishment to “discipline” and “toughen up” victims with their physical abuse, and then when alone under the guise of comforting boys, they’d sexually abuse them. With heavy breathing arousal, Hamilton would attempt to cuddle or rub suntan oil all over their bodies. On a daily basis, he violated legal boundaries, both physically and sexually assaulting his helpless captives.

One of the boys on a brief visit into town managed to slip away to make a quick phone call home to a father who rushed to his rescue. The pedophile was furious as the boys were all evacuated after the father contacted the police. But when the evidence was reported to a senior police detective, after saying he would consult with the procurator fiscal, he never got back to him… surprise, surprise.[106] Another father whose two boys attended one of his Loch Lomond camps alleged that Hamilton would order boys to strip and then beat them “across the buttocks.”[107] He too brought the criminal matter to police in Dumbarton but again he was never charged. Between the police, the Crown Office and Procurator Fiscals as pedophile enablers, if not full blown pedophiles themselves, they’re all alleged to be part of a masonic pedo-ring, flimsily hidden in plain sight by Lord Cullen for 100-years. Once the Boy Scouts organization smartly banned him for life in 1974, over the next 22 years on 25 separate occasions the serial child abuser came to the attention of police, prosecutors and councils that could never do what the Scout Association did…[108] for an all too obvious reason – an evil masonic pedophile brotherhood rules over Britain and for that matter, the entire world.

Sandra Uttley teamed with the most vociferous Hamilton adversary, parent Doreen Hagger to campaign for a new inquiry. Sandra cites certain actions, confrontations and observations between Hamilton and Doreen during that volatile 1988 camping episode on Inchmoan Island, drawing the conclusion that those who knew Hamilton “know for certain he didn’t kill himself.” Doreen steadfastly maintains:

He [Hamilton] *was far too much of a coward.*[109]

Doreen, her daughter Vicky and her friend Janet Reilly saw for themselves how Hamilton as the lone operator cowardly and sadistically bullied and maltreated the young boys in his charge. After observing how the tyrant starved the boys and made them do backbreaking work, for a little, get-even fun, Doreen rallied the troops to gather up spiders and creepy crawlies to place in Hamilton’s sleeping bag that night. He did not disappoint as he freaked out like a scared little girl. Then when the island suddenly attracted a huge flock of geese, Hamilton came running to Doreen seeking protection. Those who knew him realized he was a coward through and through.

Doreen Hagger’s valiant quest to derail pedophile Thomas Hamilton from harming more boys met only with shameful apathy and passive resistance from law enforcement, forcing her and friend Janet to take law into their own hands. On May 16, 1989 she and her friend gave the slimeball a dose of his own medicine. They concocted the nastiest brew they could come up with, featuring such unpleasant ingredients as liquid manure, fish manure, vinegar, wallpaper paste and flour laced with a large amount of suntan oil, since the pervert got so turned on when he made boys rub it all over his disgusting naked body.[110] Shortly after Hamilton had finished running another one of his sports clubs at the Linlithgow Academy gym, waiting outside as he headed to his van, he was ambushed by the two ladies-in-waiting who each showered him with a bucketful of his oily gook favorite, essentially assaulting him with the expressed intent to be arrested, complete with a press reporter and photographer for maximum publicity. The school janitor called police but much to Doreen and Janet’s surprise and disappointment, the crafty Hamilton refused to press charges, no doubt anticipating that more dirt about him would be sure to emerge in court. As they poured the foul substance over him, Doreen yelled:

I’m sorry I couldn’t get a wee boy to rub it in!

Since the police refused to do its job investigating the pedophile ringleader, Doreen was determined to force a case into court that might prompt a true investigation of the sex criminal. At this exact same time a housemaster named Glenn Harrison from the Defense Ministry’s Queen Victoria School (QVS) also located in Dunblane was also pushing for the exact same outcome, an actual investigation into the pedophile ring directly linked to Thomas Hamilton.[111] More to come on the QVS-Hamilton pedo-connection. Because law enforcement, the Crown Office and high-powered politicians were always shielding him, either no real police probe would occur or were never given the greenlight for criminal charges to be brought against him.

After learning that Hamilton had gone to the home of one of the boys from the Linlithgow club with two firearms and a rifle and allowed the entire family to pose for pictures with his weapons, Doreen also presented this unlawful development to the police, but again to no avail.[112] After DCC McMurdo received the report, he yet again lied under oath at the Cullen Inquiry insisting he never knew the gun fanatic could be dangerous.

For all her efforts reporting Hamilton to the authorities, the Lothian Regional council finally suspended Hamilton’s let in May 1989. Based on the mounting evidence, Lothian Regional council canceled Hamilton’s access to conduct business at the district’s public buildings.[113] Even though Hamilton complained to the ombudsman again, this one ruled against him, an early sign that the Freemason was finally starting to lose his power grip, at least at one local level.

In response to more parents’ complaints that Hamilton was physically assaulting boys at his Loch Lomond campsite during that same summer of 1988, two constables from Strathclyde police were dispatched to investigate.[114] Their observations concluded that Hamilton’s supervision left much to be desired, including a very messy campsite with dirty dishes strewn about, lack of both supervision and available nutritious food, and inconsistent allegations from boys regarding Hamilton’s violence towards them. Of course Hamilton defended his actions as necessary disciplinary punishment in order restore order dealing with two misbehaving troublemakers. Yet any adult’s physical aggression towards youth constitutes criminal assault. Despite a sense that Hamilton was a very shady character, their police report stopped short of making any formal charges. Yet Hamilton characteristically overreacted, taking their appearance as a personal affront and attack on his moral character, and ultimately lodged a formal complaint against the investigating male police constable. Due to Hamilton’s unfounded retaliation, the legal squabbling was long and dragged out, with ultimately the police backing the restrained actions of the constable, which only reinforced Hamilton’s paranoid contention that police were out to get him. Though the targeted constable contemplated filing a more than justified defamation suit against Hamilton for his relentless harassment, the constable decided against it. One has to wonder if the policeman backed down because he knew Hamilton had powerful masonic connections behind him that could spell further trouble for the constable.

Nearly a decade later having heard about an incident with three young boys who ran away in the middle of the night in their pajamas from Hamilton’s camping club at Dunblane High School, together with accumulated negative reports over the years, a senior leader at the Fife Regional Council opted to close Hamilton’s contract in 1992, based more on his overall gut feeling than on any single factor.[115] As it should, protecting youth in his district weighed foremost on his judgment. Though Hamilton complained to the ombudsman, again this time his contract was withdrawn for good because pedo-boy apparently refused to meet with the council members in person. Finally, it appeared that at least some of the local Scottish authorities were gaining the upper hand, slowly halting Hamilton’s criminal operation from continuing to flourish and expand across Central Scotland.

Unfortunately having lost its first attempt to cancel the pedophile’s contract due to the ombudsman overruling it in 1984, at the 1996 Cullen inquiry members of the Central Regional council like Robert Ball subsequently defended their decision to retain Hamilton’s services once the council lost its case a decade earlier, suggesting the probability that he still had sway over key positions in Central Scotland politics.[116] Other members claimed that had they been informed of both Lothian and Fife’s successful ban, they would have followed suit. But this hindsight gesture’s likely just face-saving CYA bluster in the face of the recent local tragedy.

As time went by, Hamilton's powerful protectors had begun cutting their losses, cashing in their pedo-chips to distance themselves from Hamilton as a potential liability. In the final couple years of the child pimp's life, he found that the pedophile Establishment's interventions on his behalf that had always loyally shielded him from all past consequence, showed signs of weakening and drying up, just like his clubs.

This places more credence on CSP and security services in the final months conspiring with him on his Dunblane act of revenge, while leading him to falsely believe he'd still remain protected with a new life awaiting him, thus boosting his spirits and giving him an unprecedented rosy outlook on life observed daily by his neighbors towards the very end in March 1996. He appeared to have plans for his future and was not showing any signs of either depression or suicidality during the final days leading up to the shooting.[117]

Though a coward underneath his uptight and domineering personality, Hamilton had an overbearing, intimidating way of throwing his weight around, lashing out against perceived threats with both verbal and written attacks. As demonstrated against Doreen Hagger, he also used threats of lethal violence in efforts to overpower and subdue his targeted adversaries, especially women and children he perceived to be weaker, again not unlike the crude, thuggish edge of Savile's arrogant swagger. Also similar to other infamous predatory pedophiles, Hamilton frequently groomed underage victims by buying their silence with money[118] or promises of Loch Lomond boat rides or trips to the shooting range as opposed to handing out free tickets to popular *BBC* TV shows with backstage passes.

In January 1995 that cocky air of intimidation was on full display when 30-year old Police Constable Anne Anderson was dispatched to Hamilton's home to inquire about his latest (and final) firearms licensing application.[119] While she was scribbling down notes in response to his answering a checklist of questions, for lack of writing space in his small cramped flat, she was forced to kneel on her knees. Meanwhile, with gun in his hand, Hamilton lorded over her, gloating while hovering above, emitting an aggressive body language while defiantly showing her his proud collection of fine guns he treated like his own babies. While given a lift home from the Stirling Gun and Rifle Club just eleven days before the shooting, he was observed affectionately stroking his guns, referring to them literally as his "babies."[120] One sick dude that clearly unnerved Constable Anne during her strange, uncomfortable encounter with the alleged future killer, later confessing to the press:

It was the way he looked at me. It's very difficult to put it into words.[121]

Still shaken, back at the police station PC Anderson stated that a senior detective inspector emphatically reminded her that there was nothing she could do to stop Hamilton from obtaining his latest gun license, as if already a done deal, automatically preapproved from the top of the power food chain, allegedly including a certain MP's sterling character reference.[122] By the way, fellow Freemason Lord George Robertson is both a son and brother of Scottish policemen,[123] holding a fraternal brotherhood bond for life. Borrowing the title of a famous Beatles composed Joe Cocker song, seemingly untouchable Thomas Watt Hamilton got by "with a little help from [his] friends."

It wouldn't be a UK pedophilia scandal cover-up without missing flies. Turns out that at Hamilton's final licensing, criminal intelligence flies on Hamilton were removed from the computer system that would have cancelled his gun renewal in January 1995.[124] This reinforces the adamant remark by PC Anne Anderson's higher-up stating Hamilton's license approval was already a done deal. The Hughes report explicitly stating the pervert should not own guns among other red flags were all "mysteriously" missing that would've been cause for denial. Reports were wiped clean. One file labeled “HOMO-INDCH” meaning homosexual, indecency with children was “lost” preventing firearms officers from consideration. Central Chief Inspector in firearms Colin Mather noticed shortcomings on Hamilton’s application, but because commander of operations in Stirling (soon chief superintendent) Jim Moffat had already signed off, it was rubberstamped. Clearly, the powerful masonic hidden hand ensured gun-crazy Thomas got his guns for his March madness. Additionally, immediately following the Dunblane killings, the entire catalogue of Thomas Hamilton’s police files went missing.[125] CYA time for CSP.

In addition to support from well-placed, likeminded masonic friends, for years Thomas Hamilton’s primary assault weapon against both real and perceived enemies was his infamously countless letter campaigns, aggressively arguing his legal points ad nauseam as a mistreated, violated innocent victim, despite being every bit the predatory aggressor. Instinctively knowing his best defense was a relentless offense, Hamilton often would wear down his opponents through an endless, willful war of attrition.

And of course for years the hidden-in-plain-sight masonic pedo-Establishment regularly shielded him from prosecution or loss of gun permit… that is until his bitter end when at approximately 9:34AM on that fateful icy Wednesday morning of March 13th, 1996 at the Dunblane Primary School gymnasium, it appears the Establishment had finally had enough of bailing his lame ass out, suddenly turning on him to ultimately silence Hamilton for good with two bullets through the brain fired from the missing Smith and Wesson .357 Magnum revolver never found at the crime scene and never used to injure or kill any of his 32 gunshot victims.[126]

The bottom line, since at least 1981 with the total of 16 different boys clubs he ran, parents were reporting Hamilton for his dangerous behaviors, regularly displayed before their children in countless incidents, resulting in at least a half dozen police investigations, four of which recommended arrest. But with the procurator fiscal always having the final word,[127] the Crown Office in Freemason pedo-country Scotland was and is the chief gatekeeper guarding the VIP predator henhouse. Needless to say, there exists overwhelming evidence indicating the maniac Thomas Hamilton should never have owned a firearm nor been allowed near kids, and you'd best believe if it was you or me in his shoes, we would've been arrested and locked up years ago.

The only reason why this sick fuck was protected for decades at a time was the exact same reason Sir Jimmy Savile was protected, because both were child procurers to the same VIP sodomizers, and as such, the Crown Service did its cabal duty best to look the other way "in defense of the realm," consistently claiming "not enough evidence," the never-ending mantra heard like a broken record in every single UK pedophilia scandal-cover-up - bar none. In Sandra Uttley's *Dunblane Unburied*, she writes that Norman Bassett even accused Thomas Hamilton of supplying young boys to Tory sickos at London's Conservative Party Central Office.[128] And despite four different police forces investigating the child molester[129] at least a half dozen times, four times recommending prosecution,[130] the lifelong pervert was never even arrested while police continued issuing his gun license seven straight times.[131] Yet with or without his guns, DCC Douglas McMurdo put on his deceitful act on the witness stand pretending he had no idea Hamilton could be dangerous, exposed only to his apparent "lack" of danger around kids at dozens of his campsites (according to Hamilton's boast, 55 camping expeditions by 1988 alone). So why that should not have gotten in the way of his owning lethal weapons, only McMurdo and his defense-of-the-realm cabal really know.

Flagrant evidence that the pedo-Establishment circled its wagons right after the massacre to continue protecting itself and, by extension, the deceased Hamilton, came in the form of Scottish Office Minister Lord James Douglas-Hamilton's pronouncement in November 1996:

> *There was in fact little evidence of any acts of indecency on the part of Thomas Hamilton. So far as can be established no incident amounting to sexual interference with male children as reported to the police while Hamilton was alive.* [132]

You think with the same namesake Lord Hamilton is protecting his own kinship relation? Or is it the fact that Lord Hamilton is also a fellow Freemason (#1722 in the controversial Speculative Society, same as Brother Cullen's)?[133] Or is he just another pedophile protecting another fellow pedophile with the same last name? Inquiring minds want to know before 2096, especially about that buried notorious letter from Brother Thomas written to Brother James.[134] Lord Hamilton goes on to defend his Brother William:

> *The actions of the police in reporting cases to the Procurator Fiscal were examined by Lord Cullen, who concluded that there was no evidence of any criminal act on Hamilton's part before the tragedy. In the light of Lord Cullen's findings, the Secretary of State sees no need for further investigation into the actions of the police in making reports to [the] Procurator Fiscal, and the Lord Advocate considers that further investigations of the actions of the Procurators Fiscal is unnecessary.*[135]

On the one hand, Cullen says no evidence shows Thomas Hamilton was a child abuser. Yet when he had to explain himself over his 100-year secrecy on all documents, he cites that names of vulnerable sexually abused children must be protected… which is it?[136] You can't have it both ways fool.

Now on to Lord Hamilton's incredibly hideous statements, not only is he declaring the pedophile Hamilton innocent, but the very criminals [and likely pedophiles] from both the law enforcement and legal professions that overtly went out of their way to protect the pedophile, are also declared innocent. What's clear is how quickly they rush to wash their hands clean of the sordid Hamilton affair, pretending there was nothing more to the story than captured in the whitewashed Cullen report. Yet if that were true, why withhold all the evidence from the public for a full century if there's nothing to hide? It's very plain and clear that all the masonic pedo-enablers - if not child sodomizers - are protecting each other's criminality as always. After all, the fifth of the Five Points of Freemasonry Fellowship explicitly states:

Defend a brother's character in his absence as in his presence.[137]

Speaking of defending fellow brothers in defense of the realm, Dr. Ian Oliver was former DCC McMurdo's boss as Chief Constable of Central Scotland Police for a near dozen years (1979-1990) and then Grampian (1990-98). He too admitted to personally knowing Thomas Hamilton.[138] Immediately following the Dunblane shooting, Dr. Oliver spearheaded the creation of a firearms consultative committee to work with Parliament on rolling out the strictest gun control legislation in the world. In 1996 and 97 former CSP and current Grampian police chief and his police force were already under fire over its mishandling of yet another murdered child's investigation, the case of a 9-year old boy abducted and strangled by yet another pedophile-killer fresh off the Dunblane massacre.

But then the event that toppled his law enforcement reign arrived when the married 58-year old Oliver was photographed in a compromising position kissing the 26-year old wife of a millionaire businessman, exposed in the

Scottish Sun before the disgraced police chief was forced a year later into early retirement…[139] like Lord Robertson pressured out of NATO at 58. But versatile Dr. Oliver began a new career at the UN as an NWO expert, coveted public speaker and author on terrorism and the wrath of drugs.[140] Pedo-enabling Prime Minister David Cameron hired the shamed copper's son Craig Oliver, a journalist at Savile's pedo-infested *BBC* as the PM's final director of communications in 2011, year of Sir Jimmy's death.

So let's recap: the top two Central Scotland Police commanders whose police force under their watch reputedly steeped in Freemasonry repeatedly bailed out fellow mason Hamilton who both honchos admittedly knew as a personal friend, but despite overwhelming evidence for two decades refused or failed to arrest him or revoke his gun license; also the big cheese failed to rescue another pedo-murder child victim while instrumental in UK's sweeping gun control legislation right after the massacre and soon became embroiled in a messy adulterous scandal. Then once his lustful leanings washed up his police career, Dr. Oliver reinvented himself, resurfacing as a United Nations expert and author on such related topics as drugs and terrorism, both directly connected to the state sponsored terror invariably committed by spooks and stooges heavily medicated by Big Pharma while always accompanied by invisible handlers from intelligence agencies. Way too many coincidences to be purely random events. Are these guys major cabal players or what?

The entire public spectacle of Freemason William Cullen's orchestrated inquiry scam was simply part of the cabal's much larger game plan strategy, endlessly milking to death the Hegelian Dialectic of "problem, reaction, solution" as the most effective Deep State tactic to create a globalized fascist authoritarian police state. Incessantly staging state sponsored false flag mass shootings and terrorism like the

Dunblane massacre and Port Arthur bloodbath is the ruling elite's Modus Operandi.[141] The Deep State cabal first defines the **problem** as lack of public safety in an extremely dangerous, unpredictable world filled with hateful violent extremists and so called terrorists. So the natural **reaction** of course to this unsecured, ultra-perilous world-view is a constant steady stream of covert episodes of staged terror masked in acts of government sponsored democide delivered through mass gun violence, either falsely blaming Islamic terrorists (as cabal created proxy allies in its fake "war on terror") or more often the use of lone nut gunman extremists as CIA, Mossad and MI5 Big Pharma mind controlled patsies that always justify rolling out the preplanned Deep State **solution**, introducing yet more draconian laws usurping what's left of our individual rights, liberties and freedom, with ultimate aim in America to repeal the constitutional 2nd Amendment right for citizens to bear arms. Historically, a disarmed civilian population is democide or genocide on a grand scale waiting to happen. Again, this valuable history lesson is explicitly explored later in the chapter along with the cabal's latest violent episode in New Zealand.

As an independent journalist I've written extensively on this critical all-encompassing subject of the Hegelian Dialectic and my analysis utilizing this broader contextual lens to dissect the 2016 Orlando nightclub shooting featured as Chapter 6 in the Kevin Barrett edited book *Orlando False Flag the Clash of Histories*.[142] During the last quarter century, the international crime cabal has repeatedly deployed state sponsored school shootings (as well as mass killings in churches/mosques/synagogues, cinematic/concert theater venues, nightclubs, military installations and various other workplaces), but the favorite for obvious shock effect purposes exploits the spilled blood of sacrificed children (or at Sandy Hook lack of blood[143]), ultimately with the aim of criminalizing private ownership of guns worldwide. The 1996 Dunblane Massacre and Port Arthur as cabal first installments were executed as early entries ushering in the current age of New World Disorder. By dual-design, Dunblane also served to conveniently hide for the next 100 years yet another British VIP pedophilia scandal and cover-up at the planet's pedo-epicenter.

Until one realizes that from the very get-go, Freemason Judge Cullen's public inquiry objective was to whitewash as much of the government's dirty truth out as possible, it may seem initially striking that no new evidence about Thomas Hamilton's pathetic, sordid life emerged from his month and a half long inquiry, lasting from the end of May to near mid-July 1996 and interviewing a total of 171 cherry-picked witnesses.[144] That meant that 1,069 witnesses who gave written statements were never heard at the inquiry.[145] By carefully selective design, Cullen ensured the deeper, darker depravity of Hamilton's criminal connections to Britain's larger pedophilia network were completely exorcised out of the judge's sanitized, self-serving version of events. But as much as Cullen manipulated the proceedings, he realized his willfully deceptive efforts to cover-up the bigger picture still failed miserably, forcing his unprecedented decision "in defense of the realm" to place a century long blackout on all evidence. Yet despite Hamilton racking up a flood of warning signs, particularly during the final decade and a half of his life, the cabal continued shielding him from any real consequence that would've protected the most vulnerable within the community from their tragic end.

It's been reported that Hamilton was just another brainwashed patsy and that the actual child murderers at Dunblane were government employed MI5 operatives.[146] Especially taking into account the dozens of state sponsored false flag incidents perpetrated ever since 1996, complete with intelligence agents serving as standard handlers of psychotropic drugged, mind controlled, killing patsies, the British pedophile Establishment was no doubt in direct colluding cahoots with Thomas Hamilton in his showdown at the Dunblane not-OK school corral and savagely utilized the bloodbath to take the Manchurian madman out at the last second, calling it suicide and no one was deemed worse for wear for not knowing the actual truth, particularly the pedophile criminals in power.

The fact is all of us are worse off for not knowing what unforgivable sins and untold atrocities our own governments are routinely capable of committing, including the use of defenseless little children as their sacrificial lambs to conceal their worldwide pedophilia epidemic while disarming citizens of their right to protect and defend themselves from global police state tyranny leading to human genocide, or as they affectionately call it, depopulation. Think Prince Philip’s death wish as a reincarnated Killer Virus[147] or his son Prince “Transylvania-is-in-my-blood” Charles’ fixation on his favorite bloodline relative Vlad the Impaler[148] and you can begin to understand the ruling elite’s obsessive, bloodthirsty bloodline agenda to cull the human herd as illegit global underworld overlords.

Increasing complaints from parents in the 1990s forced the Central Scotland Police to have to repeatedly investigate Hamilton. By 1993 the police compiled enough evidence to arrest him on ten different charges but his “friends” in the gatekeeping legal profession, in this case Stirling’s procurator-fiscal James Cardle, decided as always “not enough evidence.” This incredible pattern just kept repeating itself almost on a yearly basis - with police probes in 1988, 1991, 1992 and 1993.[149] Less than two years before the Dunblane murders, Edinburgh Police caught the pedophile in the classic pervert pose with his pants pulled down “in a compromising position” in the presence of a likely underage victim, yet once again as always, no charges were ever brought.[150] Hamilton was clearly another protected pedo-cat permitted to freely live out his nine lives.

Convinced he was being unduly harassed by so many Central Scotland Police investigations fueled by paranoid rumors from Scouting officials and distraught parents, Hamilton incessantly wrote to his alleged primary CSP protectors, Deputy Chief Constable McMurdo especially, but Chief Constable Ian Oliver as well in hopes the top CSP brass would get their subordinates to back off, while also regularly sending cc'd copies to his local/national heavyweights MPs Forsyth and Robertson.[151] Towards the end, Hamilton was even venting his growing complaints and grievances in letters to Queen Elizabeth. As a man with powerful connections, copies of his angry letters are a matter of public record sent to Scotland newspapers not long before his death,[152] stopping just short of making explicit threats to blow the lid off the VIP pedophilia operation he was both centrally part of and privy to. Compliments of fellow Freemason Judge Cullen, perhaps Hamilton's correspondence containing overt sexual blackmail threats remain safely tucked away until 2096.

In 2003 British citizens were first learning that back in 1996 William Cullen had sneakily usurped the public's right to know by placing a century long D-notice on 106 large files of documents taking up 26 feet of shelf space in a room eight feet high. Though it was all privately made available to Cullen's so called "public" inquiry, which he only bothered to read a miniscule portion, it strictly remains off limits to the rest of us until 2096, exponentially increasing perception of a blatant cover-up. Thus, with mounting pressure on the UK Establishment to reveal the true reason for such extreme secrecy for concealment overkill, the all too lame, flimsy excuse offered by Judge Cullen pretending to protect abused Dunblane children's privacy rights just would not fly. So in October 2005, the cabal threw a few scraps of “evidence” to the common folk in hopes that it might placate the restless, agitated, pissed off masses.

Recently released files on January 1, 2019 under the 15-year rule indicate Scottish government ministers were in panic mode back in February 2003 to stem the rising tide of public perception driven by “conspiracy theories” that Cullen’s post-Dunblane massacre inquiry was a total scam.[153] Once the public caught wind of Cullen secretly and arbitrarily attaching the illegal 100-year non-disclosure rule, the government scrambled to appease the people’s growing demand for the truth without disclosing the actual lowdown behind the Dunblane tragedy. Hence, the plan was hatched to have Scotland’s senior law officer, the “good” Lord Advocate Colin Boyd see fit to feed the truth-starved British population a few already self-evident, inconsequential tidbits to take mounting heat off the criminal Establishment. But the plan failed in the face of such an extreme measure. The skeptical public knows far more than the elite would ever want or care to admit.

One of the revealed documents, a letter from Strathclyde Police to CSP Chief Constable William Wilson sent a week after the school massacre, disclosed that a local council authorized Hamilton to run a boys football club at its high school during the preceding summer of 1995. It went on to explain that a parent of one of the boys attending the summer club had shared with her that Hamilton had showed him a pistol and bullets, instructing him to keep it secret and on March 1st, 1996, a full dozen days prior to the tragedy, the parent passed this information on to the high school.[154] When the head teacher contacted the Strathclyde council’s education department, the teacher was told to contact a senior social worker. That social worker received the allegations in a letter a week ahead of the mass shooting, referring it to a colleague out on sick leave until

March 11th, 48 hours in advance of D-Day, “but did not appear to digest the contents in full.”

The senior social worker also contacted a principal child care officer in Hamilton’s hometown of Stirling, who responded that they were aware of Hamilton, having “received similar complaints in their area,” but added “nothing has been substantiated.” Also on March 11th the head teacher contacted the senior social worker to express dissatisfaction with the slowness of such an urgent matter not being addressed yet. So it wasn’t until hours after news of the tragedy broke that any detailed investigation into Hamilton’s latest gun improprieties began.[155] Hours after the children died, social workers finally met with the boy and a second attendee at Hamilton’s 1995 club, both alluding to the wacko showing them his gun and “approximately 10 bullets” from the back of his van in the high school parking lot. The letter also mentioned one of the boys reported that on an earlier occasion Hamilton had shown him a hunting magazine displaying hunters shooting deer along with more guns and ammo.

None of this is earth shaking news, given Hamilton’s known gun fixation since his first issued firearm certificate in 1977, the same year he became a Freemason. By “gifting” the public this added piece of information, willing to “break” Lord Cullen’s overly strict 100-year ban, was supposed to demonstrate that the government was responsive to meeting the needs of the people’s right to know… what a joke.

By releasing only cherry-picked, highly detailed accounts to the public, Lord Colin Boyd showed how the inefficient bureaucratic social services missed out on its opportunity to stop the killer in time, as if dishing a little blame on to that particular public service department might diffuse some of the citizens’ wrath directed against the “incompetent” police and contemptible government for their utter failings.

The Cullen Inquiry clearly went out of its way to target law enforcement as the public scapegoat rather than Cullen's own, far more culpable, masonic pedo-filled judiciary. Judge Cullen would not touch the legal profession's criminality in the Procurator Fiscal and Crown Office consistently refusing to press charges on countless occasions.[156]

Carefully selecting only material providing a minutiae of detail serving to spread the blame was intended to dissipate the growing public anger and frustration convinced that the government had lied and cheated the people out of knowing what really happened at Dunblane. The 100-year ban on information was an assault on British citizens' intelligence. But sleight-of-hand focus on gun control immediately after the tragedy perfectly and manipulatively suited the cabal's purpose far more than releasing documents that might inform and educate citizens into realizing their government would sooner oft a bunch of kids rather than reveal its leaders are child fucking murderers.[157]

Still another document written two years after Detective Paul Hughes' 1991 damaging yet ignored report explicitly recommending that Hamilton neither be permitted to work with kids nor allowed to own a gun license, an unnamed police officer from the same CSP child protection unit in 1993 wrote to a senior colleague:

Mr Hamilton has undoubtedly sailed very close to the wind for many years as regards the inappropriateness of his methods of alleged tuition of very young, immature and unsuspecting boys of primary school age. However... in view of the evidence available to date Hamilton may have committed offences of lewd, indecent and libidinous practices and behaviour...[158]

Ya think? Time and time again incidents would occur alerting police all over Scotland into knowing that Thomas Hamilton was sexually abusing underage boys. But allegedly due to masonic higher-ups, nothing ever came of it. Other released records in the 2005 token to loosen the 100-year ban demonstrate that by 1996, Thomas Hamilton was 8,000 pounds in debt, living off his credit cards and chronically unemployed with his clubs drying up from lack of parents willing to entrust their boys under his dangerous supervision and criminal care.[159]

But back in Hamilton's more affluent days in the 1980s, steadily supplying child porn and boys to VIP pedophiles for financial profit, some of his clubs were attracting as many as 70-80 attendees per event.[160] Aside from his illegally shielded illicit yet financially lucrative activities, he was buying and selling lots of his favorite expensive items, trading in the latest state-of-the art photographic and video equipment as well as buying more than selling a large volume of guns to proudly augment his growing collection. At one point he boasted that he spent 10,000 pounds on camera equipment while collecting unemployment checks from 1983 to 1993.[161]

Then lest we not forget Hamilton's consecutive acquisition of three boats beginning with a speedboat called Lady Sheila, then a 26-foot cruiser and finally a 40-foot luxury cabin cruiser called Tropical Winter, bought for only 5000 pounds, compliments of Central Scotland Police.[162] It's believed that the derelict was given the boats by his masonic friends in exchange for furnishing boy victims for VIPs at remote Loch Lomond campsites.

While Hamilton's longtime pedo-operation flourished for years in Scotland, the 2005 release of his financial records was clearly designed to convince UK citizens that his increasing loss of income and mounting debts drove the madman to his breaking point, where in a state of demented rage, he snapped and shot 32 people before allegedly turning a revolver on himself that was not used to kill anyone else… again more disinformation to obscure the truth. So the pedo-Establishment continues withholding the truth of its criminal operation in the 100 still sealed documents until 2096, cherry-picking only a few selected files for public release intended to further obscure the dirty truth while at the same time pretending to be responsive to the people's pressing right to know. To save themselves, the deceitful cabal's hypocrisy and hubris knows no bounds.

Between police and child protection services, tons of scary red alarms were begging to be noticed and finally acted on to protect kids… like this warning sign also made public in 2005 from the Children's Reporter to Fife Regional Council and Fife Constabulary written in June 1992 :

If the kind of circumstances as described are allowed to continue without some kind of intervention, I consider that other children may be placed at risk [like at Dunblane Primary School]*. In like situations arising unchecked, I fear that a tragedy to a child or children is almost waiting to happen* .[163]

The dire warning above emerged after police in Dunblane had found two forlorn 9-year old boys and a 10-year old helplessly sitting on the curb in the middle of the night dressed only in their pajamas after frantically running away from another one of Hamilton's concentration camps, this time held on the Dunblane High School grounds, complaining of being:

Fed up with the routine of cold showers, terrible food and the general atmosphere .[164]

… And probably molestation as well.

Several months prior to Lord Advocate Colin Boyd publicly releasing the above documents, building more pressure for disclosure was the *Mail on Sunday*'s informative article featuring former Stirling paramedic and *Dunblane Unburied* author-activist Sandra Uttley asserting that:

> *Police were involved in a paedophile ring that covered up abuse allegations against the man responsible for the Dunblane school massacre.*[165]

For that reason alone, Judge Cullen appointed the same accomplice, the Central Scotland Police, to head the Dunblane Massacre investigation. It’s a lot easier to pull off a foolproof cover-up when you have murder and pedophilia accomplices in charge of both the law enforcement investigation as well as the public inquiry, as both CSP and Cullen allegedly were. Moreover, Sandra Uttley also maintains that:

> *There are glaring anomalies in the inquiry - inconsistencies in witness testimony, incorrect information given on oath and the absence of vital witnesses.*[166]

All the years that boys aged 7-11 complained to their parents who in turn complained to the authorities about Hamilton’s mistreatment of their children in his clubs and camps, regularly withholding food and having them go chronically hungry, singling out and isolating certain boys for cruel and unusual punishment, forcing boys into hard labor or rigorous exercise regimens beyond their age capacity, requiring them always to be half-naked regardless of weather conditions, wearing ill-fitted scanty shorts, and without parents’ permission or knowledge, constantly taking intrusive photos and videos with special emphasis on their bodies from the waist down. Hamilton’s countless incidents of sadistically shaming, terrorizing and denigrating young boys, as in the style of a military prison boot camp, and getting off on his dictatorial, authoritarian control over them, his constantly playing favorites, his habitual negligence and incapacity to properly supervise to meet basic needs, gross delinquency in keeping them safe, and far too often unlawfully without any other supervising adults, his psychopathic lack of empathy, these grave and persistent warning signs were ignored for two decades by the pedo-gatekeepers as not convincing enough evidence to prosecute.

For over two decades these overt signs of multiple forms of abuse were a given constant everywhere the pedophile went. But most of all ignored were the more than occasional episodes where Thomas Hamilton clearly trespassed criminal boundaries, both physically and sexually assaulting his child victims. Yet just as serial predators Jimmy Savile and Cyril Smith were protected by law enforcement and the Crown Office despite numerous police investigations, Hamilton too was shielded from consequence in at least a half dozen police probes. But the ultimate common denominator between all three of these dangerous predatory derelicts is the bottom line, they were all protected because they were procuring victims for the same UK pedophile Establishment.

Placating the public with a few scraps of innocuous information was simply more public misdirection to appease, distort and obscure the real truth contained in at least one hundred documents still concealed for a century that would definitely prove the British government's blatant criminality. After the parade of never-ending VIP pedophilia scandals and all the thinly veiled cover-ups previously at Elm Guest House, Dolphin Square, Islington, Lambeth, Northern Ireland's Kincora Boys' Home, Northern Wales' Bryn Estyn Children's Home and Jersey Island's Haut de la Garenne (among dozens of lesser known others), and then the Dunblane bloodbath with its conspicuous 100-year rule, releasing but a few minor documents but continuing to withhold a hundred more till the end of this century can hardly change the bigger reality and accurate public perception that powerful criminals atop the UK government are still getting away with murder and child sodomy to this very day. The in-our-face lone gunman wacko as the standard boldface lie and release of several trivial papers cannot wash away or hide the mountains of evidence that

Britain’s grotesque truth is that an alarming percentage of its very leaders are a bunch of murdering kiddie fuckers.

Lord Boyd’s documents going public in October 2005 was a mere empty gesture to diffuse the populace’s growing anger toward the alleged murder accomplice Freemason judge that imposed the 100-year rule on the real truth to save himself and fellow masonic VIP legal and political friends… like Lord Robertson who had just resigned the year before as NATO Secretary General to quickly disappear from public life altogether.[167] But more on Lord George in just a bit.

Lord Boyd no doubt figured throwing the public a few insignificant bones essentially depicting nothing much new might assuage the legions of doubters who years earlier have already concluded the century long blackout on the truth was intended to protect the VIP masonic pedophile ring with whom Hamilton supplied victims and child pornography, and that for decades he’d been granted both a free pass and renewed gun license for that very reason alone. And to this very day that cold hard reality, combined with denial of all the other blatant UK pedophilia scandals, continues to inflate the king-sized elephant that’s ready to explode in the world’s pedo-epicenter room.

Incidentally as an aside, Wimbledon tennis champion Andy Murray was an 8-year old student at Dunblane Primary School when the shooting occurred.[168] He knew Hamilton, attended one of his sports clubs and recalled him sitting next to his mother in their car. Andy and his 10-year old brother Jamie were reportedly heading for the gym when tragedy was still taking place but hid under a desk in the headmaster’s study. Like so many Dunblane residents, Andy rarely has spoken publicly about the trauma that for years he blocked out of his mind and even when interviewed in recently after writing his autobiography, he was overcome with emotional grief. Knowing he could easily have been murdered and knowing friends who lost younger siblings has powerfully affected him his entire life. Most of the townspeople cannot mention the killers' name, much less think and talk about their tragic past, as understandably, they've chosen to move on for the sake of survival rather than dwell on the cover-up and lies. But for the sake of justice for all who have suffered and perished, the truth must be exposed.

Rather than dig into the dark ugly reality, the Cullen agenda focused on harnessing, mobilizing and exploiting Dunblane parents' overwhelming grief, encouraging them to spearhead an unstoppable national drive called the Snowdrop campaign, garnering within six weeks a whopping 750,000 signatures on a petition demanding the world's strictest gun control.[169] In November 1996 on the eve of the vote, injured gym teacher Eileen Harrild and Dunblane families who'd lost children were brought into the House of Commons to plead Parliament to ban all private ownership of guns. The teacher's emotionally convincing words:

Look in the eyes of the parents whose children will never come home and tell them their sorrow doesn't merit a total ban on guns.[170]

Piggybacked by Australia's record mass shooting at Port Arthur just four days after the UK petition was ceremoniously delivered to Parliament, people all over the world were caught up in shock and grief, demanding a ban on all firearms in both Britain and Australia,[171] ultimately aimed at weapons confiscation across Commonwealth nations and beyond. By 1996's holiday season, a singer-songwriter who'd gotten permission from Bob Dylan to rewrite his "Knocking on Heaven's Door" with gun control lyrics instantly soared to #1 in the UK, complete with the deceased Dunblane children's siblings as backup choral singers, co-timed perfectly for the passing of the world's strictest gun law passed in early January 1997. Handguns in both Britain and Australia were banned. The Blair's Labor

Party government came into office in the spring to add the .22 caliber handgun to the list, making it a complete ban of all handguns as well as semiautomatic weapons. Even Olympic shooters from the UK must train abroad in places like Switzerland in order to practice using the tool of their sport.[172]

From the start, gun confiscation rollout in the UK and Australia smacked of elite preplanning with co-timed precipitating trigger events of history-making mass casualties in Dunblane and Port Arthur immediately followed by a near million petition signatures. The cabal took full advantage of the global shock and awe from the grief-stricken damage done to nations by guns in the wrong hands – or more accurately guns they ensured remained in the hands of their government controlled patsies. It’s never been that guns themselves are the problem, it’s the demonic crime cabal regularly coordinating and killing innocent people through state sponsored tragedies that we citizens of the world must finally recognize and begin holding the powerful treasonous murderers accountable.

The two government engineered 1996 mass shootings in UK and Australia resulted in massive handgun and semiautomatic firearm bans, and gun confiscation through pressured voluntary turn-ins at enormous government costs. Lawful gun owners who chose to keep their banned weapons for self-defense suddenly became criminals with the passage of the strictest gun laws on earth. Moreover, passage of firearm bans have only caused gun crime in both countries to soar ever since. Within two years of Dunblane, UK handgun crime spiked 40%,[173] robberies skyrocketed 81% and violent assaults 53%,[174] turning Britain into the undisputed violent crime capital of Europe.[175] And in the years since from 1998 to 2003, handgun crime in Britain has only gone from bad to worse, jumping to an incredible 105% increase.[176]

With bans on legal gun ownership never working, it's the illegal gun flow that international law enforcement needs to interdict and confiscate, including governments' illegal arms sales. Statistics in Australia are just as abysmally alarming. From a November 2015 article in Australia's *The New Daily*:

> *Australians may be more at risk from gun crime than ever before with the country's underground market for firearms ballooning in the past decade.*[177]

Bottom line by sinister design, when nations take guns away from their lawful owners, both the petty criminals and cabal criminals end up the sole beneficiaries - from the booming black market that emerges to increased gun violence perpetrated against a disarmed citizenry, national populations suffer the consequence of living in the cabal-made ever dangerous world. This empirically proven fact deceitfully exploited by the global criminal elite is behind the continual flood of state sponsored mass shootings, with the latest cabal installment in New Zealand covered more extensively later in this chapter. The truth is Thomas Hamilton was no more than a controlled patsy used for the purpose of draconian gun control once he was used up as supplier of children and child pornography to the VIP pedo-elite.[178]

It's no accident that gun bans and weapon confiscations result in only killing more innocent people that endangers us all. The international crime cabal is well aware of this sobering fact, that's why it continues its war against humanity with nonstop government sponsored terrorism. Absolute tyranny and control through one world governance over a depopulated global masses that are the most violated and spied on in human history is the ruling elite's nearly achieved objective. A simple choice stands before us all, either we the people of this world wake up now to stop the coming genocidal slaughter, or billons of us will perish as the earth's sixth mass life extinction and first caused by humans approaches the point of no return.[179]

A huge rabbit hole never probed at all in the Hamilton murder mystery-Dunblane Massacre story is Thomas Hamilton's connection to another Dunblane school – Queen Victoria School, a full scholarship education for sons of career enlisted soldiers since 1908.[180] As birds of a feather working the same henhouse together, Hamilton was very close friends with Queen Victoria School's senior housemaster and fellow Freemason Ben Philip.[181] Similar to how Jimmy Savile was granted free access to vulnerable children, the former whistleblowing QVS housemaster Glenn Harrison went public claiming that he actually caught derelict Hamilton roaming through his boys' dormitory at night in search of his next prey.[182]

Hamilton also enjoyed unlimited access to both the QVS indoor and outdoor firing ranges, as the federally regulated military school became his pedo-playground to indulge in his favorite obsessions for both boys and shooting firearms. He was once caught watching naked young cadets in the school's shower facility,[183] and on another occasion "interfering" with a child at the indoor range. Hamilton was such a Big Man on QVS Campus that he was able to freely come and go even with his weapons at will day or night, and have the BMOC clout to secure a job for a friend to teach at the school. He knew everyone at the school and would often visit teachers and staff at their homes 24/7. This is not the lone wolf misfit portrayed by read-from-the-same-script mainstream media.

Other frequent visitors who were Friends of QVS and also commissioners at the military school included Lord Cullen and Lord Robertson, two very powerful Freemasons allegedly linked to both Hamilton's pedo-ring scandal and its subsequent cover-up.[184] Housemaster Glenn Harrison also stated that Hamilton maintained a very close relationship with a top cop who protected him,[185] ultra-friendly CSP Deputy Chief Constable Douglas McMurdo. That a man known to three police forces – Central Scotland Police, Lothian & Borders police and Strathclyde police - for his “unsavory character” that on multiple occasions posed a clear threat to the safety of both women and children would be permitted free access, even bringing guns and bullets to the federal boarding school, is beyond belief. Definitely no accident, it only makes sense if Hamilton’s masonic connections with prominent VIPs in government, high courts, law enforcement and the military granted him the same Jimmy Savile-like impunity due to Hamilton supplying boy victims and child porn for the elite.

Also there were three independent witnesses at Cullen’s public inquiry that provided in-person testimony directly connecting Thomas Hamilton to the Queen Victoria School.[186] Yet all the solicitors at the inquiry and Judge Cullen alike chose to consciously sidestep and completely ignore Hamilton’s QVS links, never bothering to follow up with any probing questions, much less contact former housemaster Glenn Harrison with all his firsthand accounts reporting Hamilton and his Friends of QVS VIP child sex ring. Witness testimony included the fact that Hamilton organized both sports clubs at QVS and camping trips to Loch Lomond with young cadets as well.[187]

Campaigners for Dunblane justice maintain that the Cullen whitewash avoided links to some of the biggest names in the Scottish judiciary, among them Lord Cullen himself. Yet these conspicuously overt omissions reinforced by accomplice Cullen’s century long blanket sealing all records constitutes blatant cover-up criminality. Cullen scapegoated the police when in fact the real culprit were attorneys and judges that pretended Hamilton was not a pedophile pimp supplying victims to VIPs like judges, politicians and top cops. Hamilton’s child sex ring predatorily fed off little boys at Queen Victoria School.

Because Thomas Hamilton remains at the heart of the Dunblane pedophilia scandal, concealment of evidence of both his VIP child sex abuse ring and the alleged government’s murder of Hamilton at Dunblane Primary School to guarantee his silence was absolutely essential to avoid the collapse of the British Establishment Empire. And the added king-size bonus of simultaneously disarming lawful gun owners across the United Kingdom as well as Australia is a historical coup d'état of gargantuan proportions for the international crime cabal. Justice for all those murdered innocent children and their teacher as well as all the sexually abused victims demands full exposure and full legal consequences for all the so far unpunished, untouched criminals.

Posing as “Friends of Queen Victoria School,” VIPs were regularly showing up in limos to take boys away for the weekend as “a treat” (familiar code word for pedo-abuse).[188] Per ex-housemaster Glenn Harrison, among the celebrity politicians frequently visiting Queen Victoria School was none other than Dunblane resident Lord George Robertson.[189] With QVS Friends like Thomas Hamilton and George Robertson, who needs enemies? In addition to the usual suspects - powerful politicians, judges and senior police, not surprisingly Glenn Harrison said “Friends of QVS” also included a “who’s who of the Scottish TV news” from the late 1980s and early 1990s.[190] Glenn Harrison summed up who he believed was behind the QVS pedophile ring linked to Thomas Hamilton, and with royalty and these top power players at the helm, its cover-up as well:

I am convinced it was a Masonic conspiracy, Ministry of Defense, Her Majesty’s Schools Inspectorate and Her Majesty’s Commissioners, military top brass and others. The

> *matter was a cover-up to protect people in high office* in *Government.*[191]

And to grasp how engrained the masonic code of loyalty in each secret society member's head is, author of the 1989 bestseller *Inside the Brotherhood* Martin Short wrote:

> *The Freemasons of Britain are strongly protective of their own fellow Masons. They rarely punish brethren who break the criminal law of the land.*[192]

The above statement goes far in explaining why Thomas Hamilton never spent even a single day in jail.

Meanwhile between 1989 and 1992, Glenn Harrison observed the ravages of this masonic pedophile ring in the young faces of boys returning from their weekend jaunts, highly agitated, displaying visible signs of stress and trauma from sexual abuse. Glenn stated that victims would return to school "distressed but flush with cash."[193] The ex-housemaster stated that one boy had been so savagely attacked and sodomized at one overnight orgy that he later attempted suicide.[194]

In 1991 the concerned housemaster signaled the alarm, writing to boys' parents warning that their children were at grave risk of harm.[195] When he reported his observations to Central Scotland Police, he was told that QVS as a federal school was not within its jurisdiction per the Official Secrets Act. At great risk to himself, Glenn even helped a father secretly rescue his abused son. In the caregiving role as the housemaster chiefly responsible for his children's safety and well-being, Glenn was not even given the boys' contact addresses on weekends. Despite pedophilic vultures being anything but friends to the young QVS students, VIPs always got their way. Impotent to protect his increasingly disturbed charges, Glenn confessed:

> *I became disturbed, too, by screams in the dorm at night, empty beds, rituals in dark places and used, warm, filled condoms hurriedly abandoned. There was fear throughout every age group and the teachers knew about it.*[196]

Corroborating Glenn's horrific allegations of rampant, even ritual sex abuse, in 2017 a man in his 50s publicly emerged to speak of his repeated sexual assaults while a QVS young cadet back in the 1970s at the hands of his housemaster.[197] And that was more than a decade prior to the horror going on in the late 1980s and early 90s when Glenn Harrison worked at Queen Victoria School. Sex abuse at the school went on for many decades, a tradition at boys' boarding schools, especially where keeping secrets was the cultural and historic norm and unfortunately part of what's required of being a strong, "survival of the fittest" male. That's why rampant physical and sexual abuse by the older boys perpetrated on younger boys only compounded the pervasive infestation.

As a graduate of the US Military Academy, I witnessed the inhumane brainwashing process masquerading as military discipline and how keeping secrets was part of the military brotherhood-in- arms culture.[198] Three years after I left West

Point, women became cadets and as a journalist I have written extensively on the epidemic of sexual assault in both US armed forces[199] as well as at the prestigious service academies, and the shameful culture of rape therein still practiced.[200] Shades of the Long Grey Line exist at Queen Victoria School.

A number of former QVS students have also come forward in recent years with allegations. In 2015 they were referred to the Scotland government child abuse inquiry. Less than two years later the chair Susan O'Brien, QC and her two senior panel members all resigned after alleged government interference.[201] Again, criticism that abuse survivors have been placed on the backburner prevails.[202] With Judge Anne Smith the second chair, it appears to be floundering on a parallel course with the IICSA, making zero impact failing to bring any VIP criminals to justice.[203] Incidentally, an attorney for Scotland's Child Abuse Inquiry is none other than Lord Cullen's daughter, Felicity Cullen… like father, like daughter from one whitewash to another.[204] Additionally, as recently as March 2005, Queen Victoria School continues to be plagued by nonstop child abuse scandals with four teachers suspended for sexually assaulting underage students.[205]

From 1989 to 1992 Housemaster Glenn Harrison felt compelled to document everything he was witnessing. Drawing no response from legal authorities, Harrison also contacted local social services, the National Society for Protection against Cruelty to Children (NSPCC), and the Scotland Office.[206] Inspectors found evidence of bullying but regarding sexual abuse, they believed Glenn was exaggerating, reinforcing the common perception that NSPCC, like Dame Esther's ChildLine, better serve VIP pedophiles than sexually abused children. In his letters to parents, Glenn Harrison urged them to contact – of all places – Esther the gatekeeper's ChildLine. It seems that every major institution set up to protect UK children was/is in actuality protecting the enemy of children. Glenn was feeling so helplessly disgusted by the “suffering of young boys” and both his and their “unheard voices,” in protest at a formal QVS dinner, he and his wife refused to sit next to the special royal guest patron Prince Andrew, a few years later himself outed for his pedo-trysts with an underage teenage sex slave supplied by Mossad sponsored Jeffrey Epstein’s pedo-operation (see Chapter14).[207]

Ultimately the Central Scotland Police responded to the housemaster’s persistent complaints by breaking into his home without warrant and stealing all his papers and evidential documentation, removing the incriminating proof he’d singlehandedly been gathering against the rampant VIP abuse,[208] similar to the raid on child abuse campaigner Mary Moss’ residence covered in the Elm Guest House last chapter. Glenn commented:

Why would there be such a panic to get me out of the school when I was to leave officially three days later after working six months’ notice? Why break down the door of my home when there was a spare key in the porter’s lodge hardly 100 metres away? The confidential files were very important because they contained a whole 20 months’ record of letters and complaints to the school management, social services and child protection agencies and more than all else daily records of complaints of boys, incidents, dates and times which led me to have deep suspicions that boys were being abused emotionally, physically and sexually, not just while I was there but decades before.[209]

Again, police were determined to protect the famous rapists in their overly familiar role of child abuse cover-uppers. While illegally invading his home, detectives then escorted Glenn off the school premises to the police station, with Edinburgh detectives interrogating him for an hour as if he were the criminal. Where have we seen this all-too-familiar scene before?

Since Harrison was making a big stink over the nasty stench of child abuse in conjunction with his growing police harassment, it led to his QVS resignation. For the safety of his family, Glenn was forced to relocate to the Shetland Islands in northern Scotland where he taught school for many years as one of the first chartered Scottish teachers.[210] Since MP Michael Forsyth had only been part of the problem as minimally a pedo-ring enabler, Glenn immediately contacted his new Shetland MP who agreed to take the matter up in the House of Commons. The Hansard records show that in 1993 his inquiry drew a written response from the then QVS headmaster Julian Hankinson, stating:

> [Police] *concluded there was no cause for further action on their part.*[211]

And because the police and UK Establishment refused to investigate the pervasive pedophilic crimes, three years later the bloody attack at Dunblane Primary School saw its gym class peppered with 100 flying bullets shooting every class member and teacher but one. An understandably shaken and upset Glenn Harrison wrote to the *Shetland Times*:

> *I believe that, had my allegations in 1991 been properly investigated, there is a strong possibility that Hamilton would have been discovered.*[212]

With decades of protection from fellow Freemason pedophiles high up in law enforcement, the courts, politics and security services working on Hamilton’s behalf, sadly it wouldn’t have made any difference. Glenn Harrison did everything in his unfortunate limited power to stop the abuse and subsequent tragedy and should be lauded a hero for his noble efforts and sacrifice.

After the Dunblane massacre, justice campaigner Tom Minogue also took up the gauntlet on Glenn's behalf, inquiring with Scottish parliamentary members, commissioners, law enforcement, judges and Scotland social services in efforts to solicit interest in an actual thorough investigation for the first time into the unchecked pedophilia crimes associated with Hamilton, QVS and the Scottish Establishment.[213] But again, not one official or public servant entrusted with protecting children and investigating crimes had the courage and integrity to take up the cause. Some of Tom Minogue's inquiries drew hostile, aggressive responses, but most were simply ignored. NATO head George Robertson even went so far as to contact Central Scotland's Chief Constable in an overt attempt to get Tom Minogue investigated. With high up there Lord George perhaps having the most to hide, his angry retaliation comes as no surprise. No one wants to touch an actual inquiry into cabal child sexual abuse crimes because they'd risk losing their careers or perhaps even worse. Murdered Princess Diana and Jill Dando come to mind.

Then in February 2016 it was announced that Scotland Police had launched a probe into historic child sex abuse allegations across Scotland, involving not just Queen Victoria School as a belated follow-up to Glenn Harrison's claims, but also 44 other institutions including a total of 110 suspects, 37 of them "persons of prominence."[214] And as so often happens, just like the Scottish government CSA inquiry, nothing ever came out of ether investigation, which only goes to show that Freemasonry and pedophilia still rule over Britain. Again, the United Kingdom is terminally infested with rotting moral disease and as such, is too far gone to ever honestly deal with unveiling its out-of-control sodomy problem.

More than just royal namesake, the Queen Victoria School is also linked to royalty through its chief patron of the board of directors - the now 66 year Freemason Duke of Edinburgh and honorary Speculative Society member… lots of powerful foxes guarding this QVS henhouse.[215] Another QVS board of director member and Freemason via the Spec Society and, as the second most senior judge in Scotland, the Lord Clerk Donald MacArthur Ross was Lord Cullen's boss during his infamous Dunblane inquiry. Through Thomas Hamilton's intimate association with the Friends of QVS, boasting other heavies like his buddies Scotland Secretary of State Michael Forsyth, Lord Robertson and Lord Cullen also all on its board of directors, Tommie boy's surprisingly wide circle of masonic friends (for a purported "loner") included numerous QVS Friends with Benefits (FWB). Despite his unshakeable Mr. Creepy reputation and image eventually decimating his boys club business in Central Scotland, regardless of the mounting incriminating evidence, his almighty Friends with Benefits were always there to secretly bail his sorry ass out. These masonic friends ensured that he never spent one day in prison for all his pedophilic crimes nor went for even one moment without the comfort of his cold hard steel - his prized possessions, his six guns permitted by legal certification [and of course his masonic FWBs].

Longtime Dunblane resident and MP for Hamilton (1978-1997), both the Scottish district and the man, George Robertson was steeped in controversy for his shady part in Hamilton's VIP pedophile ring. But that never stopped politicians from reaching the highest levels of office, as we learned from previous scandals and chapters, being easily blackmailed in fact makes them ideal puppets for promotion since they can always be counted on to do what they're told. So in 1997 when the John Major Tory government gave way to the victorious Tony Blair's New Labor government, the Mossad-CIA-MI5 had the pedo-goods on both the outgoing fully compromised pedophile Tory defense minister Michael Portillo (as covered previously) as well as the incoming, equally compromised (after the Dunblane Massacre) Laborite George Robertson. At the same time the NWO cabal fixture became UK Defense Minister in May 1997, he was also invited to a lifetime membership within the Queen’s Privy Council.[216]

In the late 1990s, the Anglo-American-Zionist Empire was waging ethnic cleansing NATO wars balkanizing Yugoslavia into a half dozen imperialistic puppet states,[217] while opening up Empire’s opium, illegal arms, human organ and child trafficking trade routes[218] at the same time sowing seeds of major expansionist Anglo-American-Zionist wars in the Middle East.[219] Thus, cherry-picking perverted, controllable, order following puppets to occupy key offices like UK defense minister is of highest priority to the international crime cabal, ambitiously bent on perpetual state of global war and destabilization.[220] And since our man Lord George has plenty of skeletons in his pedo-closet, blood deep in his own Dunblane backyard, what better tool to put in charge of Britain’s national security?

Having procured young boys for Scotland’s elite, Thomas Hamilton shared mutual masonic ties with George Robertson as well as Dunblane’s elite boarding school for military offspring run by the Defense Ministry.[221] In the massacre aftermath, Defense Minister Robertson would be certain to keep an extra tight lid concealing the truth, armed with the century long gag order suppressing both Scotland’s biggest sex scandal and UK’s biggest mass shooting.

A year after Hamilton’s death, as of May 1997 longtime Dunblane resident and fellow Freemason George Robertson was planted as the new prime minister’s Defense Secretary until 1999, when he was then elevated to the even more rarefied air of a supreme puppet - NATO Secretary General.[222] With his Freemason pedo-track record in the UK, Lord Robertson was the ideal candidate to head NATO from 1999 up to 2004 (headquartered in the Dutroux’s pedo-stomping grounds of Brussels[223]). CIA, MI5[224] and NATO are prime partners in international heroin trafficking.[225] And where drug trafficking flourishes, so does child sex trafficking… a perfect globalist fit.[226]

With the bogus “war on terror” raging in both Iraq and Afghanistan, working closely with the likes of war criminals Blair, Cheney and Bush Jr,[227] overnight the opium harvests proliferated once US, UK and NATO forces were entrenched in the world’s largest opium producer, soon enough safeguarding record harvests out of the Afghan “empire graveyard” supplying heroin to Europe, North America and the world.[228] In stark contrast, prior to the Zionist neocons’ war of terror, under the Taliban rule, Afghan opium fields were outlawed and virtually destroyed.[229]

By Lord Robertson’s final two years with NATO, the FBI had released the names of British VIP pedophiles downloading child porn in Operation Ore to the *Sunday Times*. Lord Mandelson and Lord Robertson were on that list but Blair desperately slapped on D-notices, prohibiting it from going public in the press.[230]

Author Greg Hallett was making reference to Lord Robertson as the cabal’s choice to lead NATO:

Heroin traffic is now controlled by NATO… the Secretary General is now chosen for his controllability and compromise - hence their roles in Parliamentary Paedophile Rings, cross-dressing, cocaine addiction, heroin trafficking to the Western World, and ongoing wars wherever there is either heroin, or oil.[231]

In February 2003 on the message board of Scotland’s largest independent newspaper *The Herald*, anonymous entries implicated Lord George Robertson interceding on Thomas Hamilton’s behalf to ensure the mentally unstable fellow mason’s gun license was renewed after its apparent initial rejection.[232] The brotherhood secrets appeared to be unraveling, exposing both Lord Robertson and Lord Cullen's masonic links protecting Hamilton as Scotland's VIP pedo-ring procurer and child pornographer. At the pinnacle of Robertson's highflying career in 2003-04, a heavy cloud of suspicion and rumors hung over Lord Robertson during the second half of his four year two month run as NATO boss, prompting his resignation and vanishing from public life by early 2004.

But the still sitting NATO honcho sued the *Sunday Herald* for libel even if the allegations may have been true because the cabal [in]justice system will always protect its VIPs. Lord Robertson was an alleged murder accomplice for reputedly using his political influence to write a character reference to pull strings to allow the alleged mass murderer Thomas Hamilton to acquire his firearms license. Under libel threat, Robertson finagled *The Herald* to cough up a £25,000 gift wrapped apology.[233] Out for blood, thin-skinned Robertson sued again for another £25,000 because he didn't like *The Herald's* coverage of his court victory, absurdly claiming it blamed him for the Dunblane massacre, but this time the court ruled in the newspaper's favor.[234] Robertson's solicitor argued that *The Herald* made the Lord out to be:

An irrational bullying individual who raised spurious proceedings.

It wasn't anything *The Herald* said that made Robertson appear "an irrational bullying individual," it was his spurious, vindictive second lawsuit that confirmed George Robertson to be an "irrational bullying individual." Be careful what you object to George.

Through the CIA/FBI intelligence, the US reportedly pressured the tenth NATO secretary general into early retirement at age 58.[235] As a sexual blackmail liability vulnerable to hostile anti-Western foreign powers, the Baron

Robertson of Port Ellen found himself put out to greener pastures. But a month before his NATO resignation as a consolation prize for having to step down, in November 2003 President George W. Bush bestowed the US Presidential Medal of Freedom. And as a thoroughly compromised and controlled inner club cabal player, the queen lavished the highest honors on Lord George, in 2004 the Knight Grand Cross of the Order of St Michael and St George followed a year later by the Knights of the Thistle, equivalent to the Order of the Garter. Interesting that the queen would award this top honor to the two biggest Dunblane scandal suppressors - Freemasons Lord Robertson and Lord Cullen.

The two pedophilia scandals that had come home to roost, the Dunblane Massacre with Robertson's masonic association with child murderer-pedophile Hamilton in spite of the 100-year sealed off record, along with his link to Operation Ore's child porn scandal despite Blair's D-notice blackout, both tarnished if not destroyed Robertson's reputation and continued life in the public limelight.[236] Though in 2003 Robertson told the press he was pressured by several governments to stay on for a fifth year as NATO leader, observers reportedly were "surprised" over his departure at the end of December 2003.[237] In 2002 as NATO boss, the still rising NWO star was a Bilderberger attendee in addition to being joint president of Chatham House - the Royal Institute for International Affairs for a decade (2001-2011), UK's counterpart to the US Council on Foreign Relations.[238] As a UK member of the super-elite Pilgrim Society,[239] a featured Cohen Group senior counselor[240] and an A-list globalist, the 73-year old Baron Robertson has been given keys to the kingdom to rape, pillage and plunder our planet and everything on it till kingdom come.[241]

His post-NATO, behind-the-scenes New World Order work also continues as a member of the powerful Queen’s Privy Council, helping to covertly set up the unelected European Council on Foreign Relations in 2007, of which he’s also a member, laying the groundwork for Brexit to mark the death of Britain’s democracy and birth of UK’s total fascist state run by the 650 queen appointed privy council.[242]

A solid pattern has been well-established, promoting compromised, Zionist pledged secret masons as popular NWO choices for such key puppet cabal roles as president and prime minister, along with all their critical cabinet positions like foreign and defense secretaries and Home Office ministers. Virtually all these posts in the last half century have been filled by pedophiles or pedo-enablers. Hence, both child sex slavery trafficking and the global pedophilia network have now reached a historic, pandemic scale.[243]

At the same time that Robertson was linked to Hamilton in 2003, the public was just finding out about Cullen’s 100-year lockdown concealing all the Dunblane evidence and their perverted business with underage boys while masonic lords and princes sat atop the Queen Victoria School board of directors.[244] By virtue of his position as Scotland Secretary of State, MP from Hamilton’s hometown of Stirling Michael Forsyth was also a QVS board of director member, as well as Forsyth’s appointee to run the sham of a “public” inquiry Lord Cullen himself.[245] Again, stacking the deck to rig any chance of justice is the name of the cabal’s diabolical game. But the despicable evidence was still slowly emerging.

Greg Hallett, author of the book *The Sex Collectors*, has accused Lord Cullen of being an accomplice to the Dunblane murders:

> *Lord Cullen - who had physically walked Thomas Hamilton to the massacre, and therefore an accomplice to the mass murder, and most likely his Manchurian Candidate controller - was then made the judge who conducted the inquiry into the Dunblane Massacre.*[246]

Investigative journalist Mike James added:

> *The Judge who conducted the inquiry into the atrocity, during which two teachers claimed to have seen another mysterious man "guiding" Hamilton onto the premises, was Lord Cullen. Cullen, also a member of the Freemasonic Speculative Society and an associate of Labour "Scottish Mafia" figures such as Lord Robertson, Tony Blair,* [Home Secretary] *John Reid and Gordon Brown, was accused by leading journalists and emergency personnel of having achieved a cover-up.*[247]

So two notable writers investigating the Dunblane scandal implicate Judge William Cullen himself at the unfolding crime scene as a murder accomplice. Then no sooner is the murder accomplice quickly appointed chief investigator of the worst mass shooting in Britain's history that he himself allegedly played a critical criminal role in, Freemason-judge-accomplice Cullen then appoints the masonic filled police agency so steeped in protecting and covering up Hamilton and his VIP pedo-ring to conduct the Dunblane Massacre investigation.[248] By Scotland Secretary of State Forsyth selecting "the right judge" selecting the "right" police, the British Establishment was guaranteed total escape from justice for all its murdering VIP pedophiles with the unheard of, illegal, secret 100-year gag order sealing all Dunblane records.[249]

Aside from the masonic criminality of Lord Cullen and Lord Robertson, Greg Hallett goes on to list other household names of top politicians implicated in the Dunblane VIP pedophile ring-mass murder-cover-up:

> *Attorney-General Lord Peter Henry Goldsmith; Secretary of State for Scotland/MP Michael Forsyth; Secretary of State for Health Alan Milburn; Robert Bell (Chairman of the constituency party at Edinburgh Pentlands/friend and associate of British Foreign Secretary Malcolm Rifkind; Peter Mandelson; Tony Blair; Gordon Brown.*[250]

The one name above that's least known is Robert Bell, the chairman of the Conservative Party for Edinburgh Pentlands constituency, for years the same seat belonging to his close pal then Tory Foreign Secretary Malcolm Rifkind, Jewish Zionist cousin of notorious pedophile Jewish Zionist Leon Brittan. His name has come up repeatedly as a pedo-friendly enabler.[251] From his sporting shop in Stirling, Bell had been selling weapons to Hamilton since 1977, and incredibly just weeks prior to the mass shooting, Bell sold more guns and ammo to his longtime customer, likely the very same handguns and bullets used to shoot 34 people, half of whom died.[252] Yet just 10 days after 16 young children and their teacher were mercilessly gunned down by his customer with bullets and gun he likely sold, the front-page article in the March 23, 1996 *Edinburgh Evening News* makes this stunning announcement:

> *Mr Bell… is reported to have said he would sell the guns again despite the murder of 16 children and their teacher.*[253]

Talk about coldblooded, but then VIP pedophiles, pedo-enablers and crime cabal protectors that allegedly conspire to abuse and murder 5- and 6-year old children have to be unrepentant, heartless psychopaths whose untold evil far exceeds both words and imagination.

According to the police investigation, Hamilton used two 9mm Browning pistols and two .357 Magnum revolvers but killed and injured others only with his Browning pistol loaded with 25 magazines of full metal jacketed 20 hollow point bullets that upon impact expand to tear human flesh and bones apart.[254] They’re so nasty that even the Hague Convention prohibits use of this type bullet in wars.[255] But apparently it’s okay in government sponsored mass shootings killing a bunch of little kids. Mike James succinctly sums it up this way:

> *Robertson, at the behest of Tony Blair and Gordon Brown, had a vested interest in ‘wasting’ children who were beginning to talk.*[256]

So there it is. Through mass murder, silence the abused kids who might talk, then through covert murder, silence the child porn-pedo-pimping stooge who might talk, then exploit grief-stricken parents for sleight of hand misdirection outlawing private gun ownership worldwide through more deceptively staged inside jobs slaughtering innocent people, the latest recurring episode in New Zealand in March 2019, until citizens around the globe are too disarmed, defenseless and deceived to resist the human genocidal onslaught as victims of the ruling elite’s depopulation agenda. Throw in an unprecedented century-long gag order to keep the people clueless while passing more draconian NWO laws towards one world government tyranny, and the satanic sub-human controllers are on their way. But their game plan isn’t working. Too much diabolical truth keeps oozing out in their sloppily executed false flags and cover-ups to remain silent. Our so called leaders are nothing but hired gun assassins and child sodomizing whores, too compromised and blackmailed to disobey their Illuminati-Zionist-Freemason puppet masters’ commands.

Also keep in mind that little more than a year after Dunblane, Princess Diana who learned the sinister truth about the royals was murdered and three years later, it was Prime Minister Blair who reportedly placed the phone call hit on the *BBC* darling Jill Dando in April 1999 (See Chapter 21). The sexually blackmailed, crossdressing war criminal freak Miranda Blair is allegedly a high ranking Freemason himself in London’s No. 1591 Studholme Masonic Lodge.[257] Seems that to a man every criminal conspirator behind the Dunblane pedo-ring-school massacre-cover-up is more than likely a Freemason. Blair’s PM successor Gordon Brown is another Freemason pedophile.[258] Secret societies, ancient occult satanic ritual and pedophilia are all integrated into one and the same practice. As a practitioner of paganism, Tony Blair’s wife Cherie is right in step with hubby’s dark side dip into Freemasonry, keeping jars of their hair and toe clippings handy for both occult ritual as well as guru consultation.[259] And the Bushes and Clintons and Obamas are no different.[260]

In 2003 and 2004 journalist Mike James wrote extensively about Operation Ore, exposing prominent ministers atop Prime Minister Blair’s government caught using credit cards to download graphic child porn images off the web, specifically naming the UK’s longest Labor Attorney General (2001-2007) Lord Peter Goldsmith and two Blair ministers Lord Peter Mandelson (see Chapter 23) and Scotland’s own Lord George Robertson.[261] Recall that the undaunted muckraker Mike also accused Blair’s successor Prime Minister Gordon Brown along with his senior and junior ministers of being practicing pedophiles as well. In addition to the above list, other Labor pervs allegedly busted in Operation Ore but rescued by Blair’s D-notice are Lord Gerald Kaufman (deceased in 2017), Blair’s Health Minister Alan Milburn, Blair’s Deputy Prime Minister Lord John Prescott and usual pedo-suspect Lord Greville Janner (dead before indicted in 2016).[262] Millburn suddenly resigned under pressure from his senior post when Scotland Yard investigated the perverted child porn downloaders.[263]

Also according to Mike James, the FBI identified Scottish former UK Prime Minister Gordon Brown as a participant in the Dunblane child abuse sex ring as well.[264] Because the FBI leaked its list of prominent UK politicos engaged in pedophilia to the *Sunday Times*, not just intelligence services in the UK, US and Israel know Gordon Brown is a "practicing pedophile," but oligarch Rupert Murdock and his *Times* editor have also been aware. Brown's been repeatedly accused of raping both boys and girls by Mike James as well as David Icke,[265] yet as "wild" as their allegations might seem against a former UK PM, recall that Icke accurately called out previous Prime Minister Edward Heath seven years before he died.[266] Heath has subsequently been widely accused and accepted as a sadistic serial child predator and probable murderer, his child abuse further confirmed by a recent extensive police investigation, albeit too many years post-mortem (See last chapter). So Gordon Brown wouldn't be the UK's first pedophile prime minister and sadly, probably not the last.

Recall that back in 1986 former Tory minister Normand Lamont first informed Mike James about Brown.[267] Moreover, Gordon Brown never bothered suing Lamont, James or Icke. Additionally, Brown allegedly participated in a savage gang rape with two other perverts, paying a prostitute to ravage her 9-year old daughter in Aberdeen, Scotland back in the 1970s.[268] So no doubt vile Gord's gorged himself on defenseless young Scottish kiddies even before his trips to Dunblane as another "Fiend of Queen Victoria School."

The elite's grand strategy to circumvent the Dunblane filth was using police as the primary scapegoat in order to cover up masonic judges in charge of Crown Service blocking multiple law enforcement probes into Scottish pedophile rings, and banning all guns in Britain as a means of totally preventing exposure of the wider Freemason controlled VIP pedophile network operating throughout Scotland and the UK, led by such Scottish heavy hitting masons as Judge William Cullen, Defense Minister George Robertson, Scotland Secretary of State Michael Forsyth[269] and future Prime Minister Gordon Brown. [270]

From the “takes one to know one” file comes Lord Burton’s eye-opening account of what really happened in the Dunblane cover-up. The former grandmaster of Scotland’s Grand Masonic Lodge between 1993 and 1999 knew all the prominent Freemason conspirators that engaged in the brazen pedophilia-murder-cover-up, boldly and courageously exposing them in a shocking December 2003 *News of the World* article.[271] Back in 1994 aware of the child sexual abuse at Queen Victoria School, Lord Burton filed a report for the Ministry of Defense that runs the boarding school where Hamilton was so frequently a guest. And just like whistleblowing QVS housemaster Glenn Harrison, no mention of the Hamilton abuse connection made it into the Cullen Report. Per the Hansard records, on May 12, 1998 Lord Burton proclaimed in the House of Lords:

> *Nothing of this was in the Cullen Report. Cullen is a Mason with a duty to protect brother Masons. There is evidence to show corruption and maladministration by the police.*[272]

In 1924 Lord Burton was born Michael Evan Victor Baillie into a wealthy Scottish landowner family whose paternal grandmother was the 2nd Baroness Burton Lady Nellie Bass of the Bass brewery fortune.[273] When his baroness grandmother died in 1962, he became Lord Burton taking his Conservative seat in the House of Lords until 1999 when Blair’s Labor government pushed him out. At the time of the 1996 Dunblane Massacre, head honcho Burton was sitting atop Scotland’s Order of Freemasonry. But removed in 1999 from both his House of Lords spot as well as his masonic perch as grand master, no doubt for trying to reveal the Dunblane lowdown, four years later when the secrecy of Lord Cullen’s 100-year order was forcibly pried open by citizen activist William Burns and his petition for a new inquiry,[274] closing in on 80-years old, the aging former grand poohbah finally decided to publicly set the record straight.

Lord Burton called the Cullen Inquiry “a whitewash,” suppressing critical information in order to protect “high profile legal figures,” specifically Freemason members of the Speculative Society with links to Queen Victoria School. Nearly a decade before his death, Lord Burton told *News of the World* investigative journalist Marcello Mega:

> *Dunblane Inquiry was a cover-up and [House of Lords] peers bullied me to keep quiet… I tried repeatedly to raise concerns about the inquiry during my time in the Lords, and as bullied and threatened by powerful peers loyal to the Conservative Government of the day, who warned me of dire consequences if I continued to embarrass them… There’s no escaping the fact there’s something sinister about the whole affair.*[275]

Scottish Lord Fraser of Carmylle, another masonic Edinburgh Speculative Society member, was the main antagonist who led the harassment and threats against Lord Burton for raising unanswered, unwanted questions in the House of Lords regarding the Cullen cover-up.[276] In effect, Lord Burton was violating the masonic brotherhood’s cardinal rule by outing his fellow masons, not to mention opening the Pandora’s Box of the masonic Dunblane VIP pedophile ring. In 1982 Thatcher had appointed Tory MP Peter Fraser as Scotland Solicitor General, then promoting him in 1989 to Lord Advocate, Scotland’s top law officer.[277]

While in charge of the Crown Office and Procurator Fiscal Service (COPFS), Fraser’s Spec Society brother mason, Solicitor General Lord Cameron of Lochbroom[278] and Fraser as Lord Advocate (1989-1992) consistently blocked police efforts to investigate Thomas Hamilton’s pedophilic activity and the masonic VIP pedo-ring.[279] Had he been charged and convicted then, Hamilton would have had his clubs and camps shut down, his gun license revoked and 28 children and four adults would likely have never been wounded or killed in 1996. No doubt Lord Fraser and Lord Cameron were among the “high profile legal figures” Lord Burton referred to who went out of their way to protect the masonic pedo-ring and harass him for attempting to expose them.

Seems all the pedo-protector masonic judges also played their cabal hand in the infamous 1988 Lockerbie debacle as well. Lord Fraser mishandled the Lockerbie investigation that resulted in the wrongful conviction of an innocent man. At the tribunal another of Fraser’s masonic brothers, Lord Cullen denied the appeal of the falsely accused Libyan. See the pattern of how this masonic brotherhood works subversively together to protect the crime cabal “in defense of the realm,” promoting and covering up the pedophilia network while unjustly punishing and murdering the innocent?

When the former housemaster Glenn Harrison at Queen Victoria School went public divulging the horrors perpetrated by the VIP masonic pedo-ring, as a fellow whistleblower, Lord Burton felt compelled to reach out to him, ultimately unveiling his own bombshell exposing the masonic pedophile connection leading to the Cullen cover-up.[280] The Dunblane murder cover-up is the same as the Dunblane pedophilia cover-up, with the central figure Freemason Thomas Watt Hamilton spreading to masonic government VIPs. Glenn has stated:

I was one of the people who was making a fuss about Hamilton long before he killed those children, but no one wanted to listen…[281] *My allegations were never investigated. They never interviewed me. I did not exist.*[282]

In response to Glenn’s shock and disappointment that he was never called in as a Cullen inquiry witness, Lord Burton explained the reason Cullen avoided him, because the housemaster’s testimony would have embarrassed top legal names that would have been dragged into the scandalous mess. Lord Burton was referring to the large group of homosexual pedophiles representing the legal establishment in Scotland, including top judges, high powered solicitors and sheriffs.

One of these notorious groups even has a name - the Magic Circle - known for reducing sentences for gay sex with underage rent boys.[283] During the 1990s it surfaced in a number of cases where teenage victims were sexually blackmailing high-powered individuals within the Magic Circle. The Blair appointed former Judge Advocate (1997-2000) Lord Hardie, Scotland’s top law officer to lead the prosecution of the first Lockerbie air disaster trial before resigning just weeks prior to become a high court judge. His successor was Lord Colin Boyd.

Just two months after the Dunblane shooting in May 1996, a 16-year old lad from a care home allegedly abused by Lord Andrew Hardie used his forged checks to purchase a car, but rather than have the boy arrested, the Magic Circle member simply claimed he never knew the boy.[284] Speculation that he was blackmailed may be connected to the bizarre development over 20 years later when in January 2017 the police reopened the case. Another Spec Society Freemason linked to the Magic Circle is Deputy Chairman of the Royal Bank of Scotland - Sir Angus Grossart. Considered Scotland’s richest, most powerful man, *Bloomberg* named Sir Angus “Scotland’s Mr. Fix It.”[285] The Magic Circle reportedly consists of protected pedo-players linked to Hamilton’s VIP child sex ring that made certain the masonic child procurer from Stirling also managed to live out his 43 years above the law.

Numerous prominent pedophiles in Scotland hail from the Edinburgh’s Speculative Society, founded in 1764 as a Freemason offshoot.[286] Though its cover benignly masquerades as a males only debating and public speaking club meeting rent free at old vaults under Edinburgh University during the winter, historically its invited members are selected at the undergraduate level similar to Yale's Skull and Bones Society, and just like the Bonesmen, invariably infiltrate top positions in the Scottish government, judiciary and high society. Their fraternal membership places them at distinct, unfair advantage over non-members and, as Lord Burton alluded, their nefariously secret collusions wreak havoc with the justice system as with Hamilton's granted immunity.

That was also why the pesky William Burns queried Judge Cullen prior to his inquiry that began on the 29th of May to July 10th, requesting not only to identify himself as a Freemason if he was, which through his secretary Cullen denied, but also ask all incoming inquiry witnesses if they were Freemasons as well, which never did happen, since it was obvious that the Dunblane pedo-ring was masonic-ally bonded and therefore had to be covered up.[287] So paranoid his masonic pedo-network would be exposed, Cullen even placed William Burns' correspondence under the 100-year closure rule. As a campaigner for justice, William Burns' website *dunblane.site* laudably ensures that the public has as much access to documentation on the Dunblane cover-up as possible,[288] including scores of newspaper articles, letters, petitions and varied court documents, emphasizing his valid reasoning:

It is in the public interest that Lord Cullen be asked if he is a Freemason, given the widely held view by the public that Thomas Hamilton's Masonic affiliation was probably the reason that the Ombudsman overturned an earlier decision by Central Regional Council in 1983 to prevent Hamilton from running youth clubs, and that his Masonic affiliation probably facilitated his application for a gun license.[289]

Ultimately in 2003 William Burns petitioned the Scottish Parliament to overrule Cullen's 100-year ban and open a new inquiry,[290] which resulted in a Public Petitions Committee (PPC) consisting of Scottish Parliament members that also amounted to nothing.[291] With the exception of just one member of the Scottish Parliament, Carolyn Leckie bravely calling for a new inquiry,[292] the rest of the PPC proved to be cowards as both the Scottish and UK Establishment chose to remain on the wrong side of history, refusing for a full century to ever allow the Dunblane truth to be unburied.

Speculative Society member Lord Cullen boldface lied when answering “no” to whether a Freemason or not to his secretary who relayed his denial back to Mr. Burns. Also in response to Burns’ direct no-nonsense question, Judge Cullen apparently had the nerve to be taken aback as if to say how dare a public citizen want to know if a masonic conspiracy might be operating to withhold the truth from the people. On a publicly released handwritten note from the Cullen camp, the following words were jotted down:

… Not a Freemason, never has been.[293]

Caught in the big lie, Cullen’s blatant denial seriously undermines both his credibility and the veracity of his inquiry findings, not to mention as a murder accomplice cited by Mike James and Greg Hallett. Judge Cullen’s total lack of impartial objectivity renders his statute-less, unprecedented 100-year ban an illegal gross miscarriage of justice. Self-servingly sealing all incriminating evidence available to his so called “public” inquiry until 2096 makes a mockery of any justice for the Dunblane victims, their families and the British public. Lord Cullen is a perfect example of why the anything-but-Great Britain is the world’s pedophilia epicenter.

Another prominent Freemason lied as the Grand Lodge of Scotland leader anonymously writing to CSP in June 1996 claimed he didn’t believe Hamilton was a masonic member, since it:

would have come to light immediately after the Dunblane incident.[294]

Yeah, right… like so much truth came “to light immediately after the Dunblane incident.” Meanwhile, it’s been confirmed that the same year Hamilton was issued his first gun license in 1977, he also became a Freemason.[295]

Just when Britain was learning that Cullen had robbed its citizens of the truth for a century, as a reward for protecting the pedo-Establishment, he was welcomed into the House of Lords with open arms in June 2003, probably saving more than a few lord pervs from serious prison time. But a half dozen years earlier and just months after his bogus, reprehensible Dunblane Inquiry, Cullen was promoted to Scotland’s Supreme Court as a Lord Justice-in-waiting. And for his loyalty and dedication at shielding the evil pedophile untouchables who live above the law, Queen Elizabeth always handsomely rewards her sicko brigade with Her Majesty’s highest honors. Within months of his criminal Dunblane cover-up, Cullen was invited to join HM’s Most Honourable Privy Council and in 2008 was duly knighted by the queen into the Order of the Thistle.[296] Like UK security services and UK police, he too apparently has made an undying commitment to serve the interests of the murderous UK crime cabal in obedient defense of the realm (including his own self-defense), covering up the disturbing truth with his carefully orchestrated Dunblane Massacre whitewash[297] and unheard of 100 year suppression order.

Other notable dishonorable mentions for the cabal include heading up the tribunal that denied the appeal of the government framed Libyan suspect in the 1988 Lockerbie Pan Am bombing.[298] Cullen also mishandled the worst oil rig disaster in history with the 1988 Piper Alpha tragedy killing all 167 men[299] as well as the 1999 Paddington Rail Disaster killing 31 and injuring 400 passengers, a direct outcome of privatization’s profit and greed over public safety.[300]

As a faithful servant for the despicable Empire right to the end, just as the Queen’s Commonwealth has its go-to inquest doctors (recall Chapter 21’s Westminster coroner Dr. Paul Knapman) whose “faithful hands” dutifully cover up alleged state sponsored assassinations made to look like suicide and heart attacks, go-to judges also exist to ensure major cover-up inquires conceal damaging evidence of elite crimes. From 2003 until February 2019, the heralded 83-year old Judge William Douglas Cullen, Baron Cullen of Whitekirk, sat as an active House of Lords backbench member.[301] He’ll no doubt also be going to his grave never properly held accountable for his plethora of grave misdeeds.

In both law enforcement and the criminal justice system, impartiality is constantly compromised by the Masonic secret society that has thoroughly infiltrated both the legal and political system of Britain as well as around the world. An estimate of upwards of 20% of UK police are Freemasons.[302] Metro Police in London have their own masonic lodge.[303] Efforts in Britain to require masonic members in police, courts and government to publicly identify themselves have been thwarted in the secret society pedophilia haven. In 2009 the European Court of Human Rights ruled that it violates members’ privacy rights to force them to declare membership.[304] How about citizens’ rights systemically violated by infiltrating treasonous kleptocratic criminals selected as puppets to run our world? Where are our privacy, civil and human rights to be left alone without tyrannical fascist police state powers monitoring, controlling, and otherwise ruining our lives?

There was also a media blackout within just a few days after the Dunblane bloodbath. Even mainstream press was asking probing questions in its initial efforts to find out how this horrific event could happen in such a pristine little medieval Scottish town. But appointed inquiry Judge Cullen and the Crown Office quickly stopped the media from any further coverage until after the public inquiry began in late May 1996. Similar to previous pedo-scandals like Elm Guest House, sudden gaps of silence befell all British news outlets. The public reason given was supposed risk that further coverage might prejudice the evidence of witnesses being selected to provide testimony at the upcoming inquiry.[305] The real reason is too much of the truth could have leaked out early on, and since Cullen's sole job was to carefully cap what gets released to the public, no news is good news to those bent on subverting justice and the people's right to know. In an article in *The Scotsman* printed three weeks after the massacre, the late reporter Ian Bell poignantly stated:

> *This week Scotland's most senior law officer threatened editors with proceedings for contempt if they continued to investigate the circumstances of the Dunblane massacre. As though to sharpen the point, the Crown Office said the remarks of Lord Mackay of Drumadoon, the Lord Advocate, were themselves 'not for publication or broadcast.' The curb on reporting is not to be reported.*[306]

Usurping both the citizens' right to know the truth and the right of the free press to do its job, actually to engage in the lost art of journalistic investigation of an enormous news story was strictly prohibited from the start with Dunblane. The government simply had too much criminality to hide to risk exposure of the sinister truth about VIP pedophiles atop the government or the unmasking of a state-sponsored murder cover-up of the VIP child procuring alleged Dunblane murderer. Similar to a decade earlier when Lady Thatcher threatened the press for attempting to uncover suspected pedophiles that rampantly infiltrated her government, in early April 1996 the then Lord Advocate Lord MacKay was also threatening the press if it dare expose the truth about Dunblane, including the media even being banned from talking about the ban. That’s how absurdly agitated and frenzied the UK government was that its murderous pedophilia role at Dunblane could possibly be uncovered.

The international cabal in 2019 is reaching a similar state of extreme panic that the diabolical truth about its worldwide pedophilia scourge is being exposed like never before. Hence, censorship of the truth via the internet and gun confiscation are two top priority agendas for the Deep State cabal. They know the jig’s up as pedo Bush senior alluded in 1992:

If the American people ever find out what we have done, they would chase us down the street and lynch us.[307]

Among the 106 documents locked away till 2096 is a letter about Hamilton’s masonic involvement addressed to the killer’s MP, the then Scotland Secretary of State Michael Forsyth, written by UK’s soon-to-be defense minister/NATO boss Lord George Robertson, fellow Freemason and longtime Dunblane resident.[308] Until March 2003, for seven years since the massacre, the 100-year ban on the truth was only thought to contain one police report on Hamilton instead of 106 documents submitted to the Cullen Inquiry in 1996. The one Central Scotland Police report thought to be sealed was the result of the 1991 Hughes’ investigation into Hamilton’s sexual and physical abuse of boys attending his summer camps and sports clubs, and the bogus excuse given for the 100-year rule was to protect the confidentiality of the children involved.[309] Very few of the over 100 documents prohibited from the public have anything to do with the children involved, proving that the official explanation behind the 100-year rule is also a complete fabrication.

Deputy Justice Minister Michael Matheson from Scotland’s largest political party the Scottish National Party recognized the obvious cover-up and said:

> *The 100-year rule needs to be re-examined with respect to all documents.*[310]

Matheson wrote Lord Advocate Colin Boyd asking if children's names from the 1991 Hughes report could be redacted and released involving Detective Sergeant Paul Hughes investigation of Hamilton's abusive behavior toward boys at his summer camps that year. Matheson also pressed Boyd to possibly revoke the 100-year rule but never received a reply.

Colin Boyd was selected a House of Lords peer in 2006, no doubt a reward for dutifully towing the cabal line as prosecutor willfully misleading the Megrahi court to falsely convict the innocent Lockerbie suspect[311] and then as Lord Advocate in 2003 sabotaging the removal of the 100-year Dunblane sham. Lord Boyd had Dr. Peter Anderson from the records office (now called the National Archive) feebly state on record that the 1991 Hughes police report and 105 other locked away documents couldn't be released without compromising the privacy rights of children even with names blanked out.[312] Total bullshit but then that's what British lords are for.

Evidence strongly indicates the Hughes report implicates that mason Hamilton was protected by powerful VIP masons in government, high courts and senior law enforcement, leaving the general public, not just conspiracy theorists, concluding that Freemason Judge Cullen was protecting his fellow masonic VIPs evoking the 100-year rule. The outrageous ban of course smacks of cover-up. The *Glasgow Herald* weighed in:

> *Hence, the veiled suggestions*[JH1] *one of these high-ranking individuals was also a child sexual abuser, and the implication that freemasonry encouraged an evil network to flourish, protected by the establishment. Hamilton's*

masonic links, the conspiracy theorists point out, have been long rumoured but never investigated.[313]

Banned from public view for a century are a Hamilton letter and his advertising flier originally sent to Dunblane parents, copies of which were both sent by Lord Robertson to MP Forsyth.[314] The flier even included Forsyth's name intended to be viewed as the MP's public endorsement of Hamilton's boys' club services. When the Secretary of State found out, he politely contacted Hamilton to request that he remove his name from the flier. The reason Hamilton opportunistically assumed he could get away with using his influential MP's name was no doubt established once Forsyth wrote a letter years earlier to Hamilton congratulating him on clearance to resume offering boys clubs,[315] after the first of six criminal complaints levied against him was dismissed. In each and every case, police and prosecutors never brought charges,[316] despite more than 20 formal complaints.[317] Throughout the inquiry, police witnesses would appear only to repeat the same worn out line, "no action," or "no evidence," a serial soap opera where law enforcement plays the fall guy for its so called incompetence shielding pedophile legal and political heavyweights.

Masonic child abusers were protecting themselves by playing dumb at the inquiry for protecting Hamilton for over two decades. Hamilton's masonic brotherhood included powerful figures not only in government but Central Scotland Police (CSP) command as well. After looking the other way despite mounting allegations from children and parents within the community, law enforcement's designated role during Cullen's "show trial" was the designated whipping boy. Somebody had to be blamed and since shit flows downhill, lower on the power pecking order than the Crown Office, police ineptitude and dereliction of duty were the inquiry's convenient running theme.

The reason Judge Cullen also hid away William Burns' written query to him for a century was because Burns caught Cullen stacking the deck in his inquiry with fellow masonic pedo-protectors. On his website William Burns includes a letter to Lord Cullen dated August 16, 1996, specifically asking if a number of inquiry witnesses are Freemasons that are on record supporting Hamilton's odious activities right to the end, lending their stamp of approval granting the madman his gun licenses and renewing his contracts to use public building space to operate his clubs.[318] For example, as mentioned earlier, Central Regional Council member Robert Ball defended his actions at the Cullen Inquiry, despite knowing about Hamilton's shady past, as late as 1995 Ball renewed the killer's contract to utilize the district's public buildings for his sports clubs even up through the summer of 1996. So a very legitimate question to ask is - is Robert Ball a Freemason?

Or going back to 1984, was the now deceased ombudsman Eric Gillett a Freemason? He overturned Central Regional Council's suspension of Thomas Hamilton's let using Central Scotland public schools for his clubs believing Hamilton didn't get a fair shake based on "innuendo and gossip."[319] Or Central Scotland Police Officer Norman Lynch, who worked in the computer system for firearms licensing, and attempted at the inquiry to justify why Hamilton needed excessive number of guns and ammo. Or whether retired CSP police superintendent Ian McKenzie is a Freemason for also signing off on Hamilton's gun licenses in 1989 and 1992. After all, he was in charge of checking records on firearms, which if he'd done his job properly, he would have caught a number of false entries and unlawful transgressions on virtually all his gun applications.[320] At the Cullen inquiry McKenzie actually testified that Detectve Hughes' 1991 report recommending Hamilton's license be revoked would be insufficient grounds to take away his guns.[321]

At the June 1996 inquiry former Dumbarton Procurator Fiscal James Cardle explained his actions ruling that police did not have enough evidence against Hamilton’s criminal activities on Inchmoan Island in 1988 to prosecute.[322] Knowing Freemasons are rampant in the Procurator Fiscal Services, William Burns justifiably asks Cullen if James Cardle is also a mason, especially since Judge Cullen in his inquiry overtly refused to engage Cardle on his highly questionable decision that protected the Freemason murderer. Another potential Freemason has to be Stirling Procurator Fiscal Depute William Gallacher. He turned down a police request to grant a search warrant on Hamilton’s home in 1993, despite receiving a police report on a mother’s complaint that Hamilton had taken a number of photos of her son in “questionable” positions and a police report that included specific criminal offenses such as lewd and libidinous conduct and contravention of the Children and Young Persons Act.[323] In 1994 two years ahead of the Dunblane School shooting, in response to a tip that Hamilton was selling child pornography photos from his home, there was a police raid. Yet again, he was protected as no criminal charges were ever brought against him.

Good honest police knew something had gone afoul in the Thomas Hamilton case. Right after the bloodbath, a frustrated, angry police officer succinctly summed up the abysmal outcome this way:

> *He* [Hamilton] *was a pedophile*. *If he had had a criminal record, he would not have been able to carry a gun. The court system didn't take our evidence on board.*[324]

Then there’s the solicitor Colin Campbell QC who at the Cullen Inquiry misrepresented the families of Dunblane child victims, taking direct daily orders from the law firm Levy and McRae. According to Legal 500, this legal firm represents

STV and other major Scottish media networks.[325] So when Campbell cross-examined Hamilton’s STV cameraman buddy Clive Wood, steeped deep in the scandal, Campbell went especially easy on him, carefully avoiding digging into STV and other broadcasters’ involvement in Hamilton’s pedo-ring. Recall QVS housemaster Harrison had said “Friends of QVS” abusers were brimming with Scotland news media personalities. Similarly, both the Advocate for the Crown and Advocate Depute for the Crown, avoided Hamilton’s connections with Clive Wood and STV, despite several witnesses claiming Wood was a regular visitor at Hamilton’s home and that Hamilton was even often seen driving Wood’s blue STV marked vehicle. Also when neighbor Mrs. Grace Jones Ogilvie mentioned a frequent visitor driving a blue police car, no one dared to inquire any further. The last thing the Crown wanted was to acknowledge or bring attention to the notorious pedophile’s ultra-close ties to Central Scotland Police.[326]

To understand the full importance of flushing out Hamilton’s malevolent connections to prominent fellow Freemasons that shielded his “charmed life” from ever having to do time in prison for criminal misconduct, it’s imperative to grasp how much power Freemasonry historically wields in Scotland through the centuries. The Scottish Rite of Freemasonry dates back to Edinburgh’s Lodge founded in 1578 nearly four and a half centuries ago, some say as an infiltrated offshoot of the outlawed Knights of Templar.[327] The masonic order boasts over 350,000 members in UK alone, though in recent years the numbers have been dropping. Its image of foppish old men in silly ceremonial robes hardly appeals to younger generations nor its damaged reputation for spreading sinister subversion and malevolence.[328] For several centuries infiltrated Freemasons in Britain at the highest degrees - 32 and higher, have dominated UK’s top law enforcement[329] (again, at least 1 in 5 UK cops are masons[330]), high courts, Houses of both Commons and Lords,[331] banking and largest corporations.[332] Respected journalist-author Nick Davies wrote a *Guardian* article a year after Dunblane exposing Freemasonry amongst UK police.[333] Again, it bears mention that the lower degreed masons often may be decent individuals who support worthy charitable causes, unaware of the secret occultists atop their organization that operate as full-fledged Illuminati Luciferians running the world.

And just as most Freemasons obviously are not pedophiles, most police officers in Scotland and the UK aren't Freemason nor pedophiles. But as always, similar to the politicians and judges, the masons and the pedophiles, so often one in the same breed have long infiltrated top law enforcement positions virtually throughout the entire British Isles and beyond. Even when honest cops tried to protect Central Scotland's children and families with investigative findings that recommended charges against Hamilton as a danger to both children and society, if it wasn't the Central Scotland Police command embedded with masonic pedophiles protecting one of their own, it was the Crown Office and Procurator Fiscal Services as legal gatekeepers claiming "not enough evidence."

Detective Constable Paul Hughes in charge of the CSP child protection unit in Bannockburn led the 1991 investigation into Hamilton's alleged sexual improprieties and violent assaults at his summer camps on Loch Loman.[334] Similar to the last constable from 1988 that investigated his Loch Lomond criminal activities, Hamilton retaliated by filing a formal complaint on the future Chief Inspector Paul Hughes who was completely exonerated.[335] Hamilton again approached the ombudsman who said he had no jurisdiction over police proceedings. DC Hughes' police inquiry strongly recommended prosecution of Hamilton on ten separate charges, but due to the Procurator Fiscal Depute William

Gallacher, they never happened.[336] Gallacher concluded, “no pro; no crime libeled; not in the public interest.” Oh yeah? Tell that to the dead kids’ families little more than three years later.

Both Stirling Procurator Fiscals K. Valentine and Gallacher were convinced all ten of the Hughes’ charges did not cross the line into criminality. Yet at the Cullen inquiry advocate for Dunblane families Laura Dunlop QC argued that the majority (2-7) of the Hughes listed charges were in fact sufficiently valid.[337] Recall that it would be this same gatekeeper Gallacher two years later who would refuse to grant the search warrant on the child pornographer’s home. No wonder William Burns seriously questioned if he and the others are Freemasons.

Only one statement from Hughes’ report was ever published during the inquiry three months after the massacre in June while the rest of his controversial report was blocked for a century:

> *I am firmly of the opinion that Hamilton is an unsavoury character and an unstable personality. I would contend that Hamilton will be a risk to children whenever he has access to them and he appears to me to be an unsuitable person to possess a firearms certificate. It is my opinion that he is a devious and deceitful individual who is not to be trusted.*[338]

One can’t be any clearer than that. Det. Hughes called Hamilton out three years before tragedy struck, rendering the derelict a danger to children whose gun license should be revoked immediately. But for decades alleged masonic infiltrating gatekeepers occupying the top echelons of power politics, law enforcement and the justice system continued to shield the criminal because they reputedly shared the same fraternal demonic sickness to harm young children. But parents’ complaints kept pouring in year after year, mostly about his scantily clad swim trunks and obsessive photos and videos that many found offensive and perverted. It took until May 1995, less than a year before tragedy struck, that Central Regional council finally required the sicko to forewarn parents about his swim trunks and photos/video obsession.[339]

Though some district councils banned him, most allowed him to continue his clubs right to the end, despite continued complaints and police inspections. The madman’s tireless letter campaigns to certain district council members (i.e., diehard supporter like Robert Ball) and his favorite Establishment big guns were finally beginning to wear thin as well. The procurator fiscals ordered police to stop sending their reports on the Hamilton photos/videos though some police inspectors believed that parents’ reactions to them were enough to be considered a breach of peace, including the advocate Laura Dunlop at the public inquiry.[340]

With his ceaselessly contentious letter writing to his onetime close allies - high profile pedophiles at Central Scotland Police, his MP Michael Forsyth, soon-to-be defense minister George Robertson, and even Queen Elizabeth, Thomas Hamilton was fast becoming a major threat to the Establishment.[341] The loose cannon had to be silenced or top powerful pedophiles were at risk of his talking and spilling the beans. Hamilton’s increasingly erratic, unstable nature combined with his long troubled past were easily seized upon by the elite to paint the picture of a sick loner turned ticking time bomb facing loss of livelihood – his sports and camping clubs, but more pathologically significant, his loss of access to boys as his addicted lust along with his bread and butter - peddling child porn while procuring boy toys for British Establishment consumption. During his final years his loss of support from certain police, the judiciary and politicians distancing themselves after protecting him for decades targeted Hamilton as an enormously dangerous burden that had to be neutralized. In the weeks preceding March 13th, Hamilton was more than likely being monitored and handled by personnel from Central Scotland Police and British security services that set him up into falsely believing they still had his back.[342]

Out of all the numerous UK child abuse scandal-cover-ups, by far Dunblane stands out as the most egregiously grotesque travesty of justice of them all. Reason? Because not only has the government once again covered up its pedophilic crimes, but it's also guilty as an accomplice in the mass murder of 16 defenseless children and the actual murderer of its designated mass murdering patsy. Weigh the falsity of the overt Cullen cover-up with all the compelling circumstantial evidence in conjunction with a long confirmed history of both pedophilia murder and false flag mass shootings for gun control and an objective observer would readily conclude that Thomas Hamilton was a murdered patsy. The pedophilia cabal obviously possesses both the most means and most motive to commit such high crimes, deploying a government agent (or agents) to shoot Thomas Hamilton dead with a .357 Smith and Wesson revolver and then cleanly walk off with the revolver leaving the crime scene behind, conveniently calling it suicide.

Hamilton had been buds with some very powerful Freemason police officers and politicians that had been protecting, enabling and joining him in his pedophilic crimes for more than two decades. As part of UK's larger masonic brotherhood network regularly engaging in child sexual abuse, the Central Scotland child pornographer and boy procurer operated not unlike Jimmy Savile but on a smaller regional scale. His peculiarities and odd ball persona caused growing concern in his local community that young boys were unsafe and abused, all too often overlooked, dismissed and actively covered up by fellow Freemason sickos. Freemason Judge Cullen was handpicked by Secretary of State Michael Forsyth and Prime Minister John Major to make certain that the official inquiry would never explore Hamilton’s fraternal masonic relationships with VIP fellow criminals in the police, courts, government and the media. The errand boy delivered.

Below is a presentation of various anomalies that will explain the far more feasible and plausible explanation of events at the Dunblane Primary School tragedy as murder of children, their teacher and patsy unfolded on March 13th, 1996.

On the cold wintry morning of Wednesday the 13th of March 1996, after witnessing Hamilton get out of a grey saloon car, wave goodbye to an unknown, uninvestigated driver, neighbor Cathleen Kerr then observed Hamilton walk over to his rented white van and begin scraping ice off between the hour of 8AM and 8:40AM.[343] Per Detective Constable Graham Capes’ testimony at the Cullen Inquiry, he falsely reported that CCTV cameras showed Hamilton leaving Stirling for Dunblane at 9:12AM, despite Capes’ written report showing CCTV cameras detected Hamilton driving through two intersections at 8:44AM and 8:46AM from Stirling.[344] Yet the CCTV cameras clearly showed Hamilton was not driving towards Dunblane but in fact was heading in the opposite direction toward Bannockburn. Yet no one at the inquiry bothered confronting DC Capes on either discrepancy, his quoting both the wrong recorded time of 9:12AM, almost a half hour after the actual time, and the fact that he was driving away from Dunblane not towards it as stated under oath.

It appears that Officer Capes gave a false time to better fit Hamilton’s 9:30AM school arrival, thus conveniently avoiding the actual CCTV detected times that would leave an unaccounted half hour to explain. This would indicate that Hamilton very likely made yet a second pit stop before arriving at the Dunblane school since the average drive time from his home to the school takes only 15 minutes.

Obviously any persons Hamilton spoke to during the hour before the mass shooting would be extremely significant and strongly suggest with high probability that there were known accomplices that were conspicuously left out of both the CSP investigation and Cullen Inquiry.

All the Cullen Report states is that Hamilton scraped ice off the van and left his home “at about 8:15AM,”[345] making no mention of that lost, unaccounted hour of time since 15 minutes was all it took to drive the 7 miles to the school. Despite the missing time being so critical to determine if others were involved, Cullen’s whitewash just simply avoids these “messy” little anomalies altogether.

The Cullen agenda was to portray Hamilton as the lone nut gunman who committed Britain’s worst mass shooting entirely on his own, so that the post-shooting aftermath could seamlessly shift focus from solid evidence of government culpability to near exclusive emphasis on stricter gun control laws. Following cabal orders, Cullen’s inquiry provided the necessary sleight-of-hand misdirection to effectively divert public attention away from uncovering the masonic pedophilia operation to the cabal agenda for ushering in sweeping new gun control legislation in both Britain and Australia.[346]

After making a couple of unaccounted for, never investigated stops most likely involving accomplices, Hamilton arrived at the school just prior to 9:30AM. He parked his rented white van in a rear car park area, walked over to electrical power lines and with pliers cut the wires that fortunately failed to take out the phone lines at the school but only electrical power at a few nearby residential homes.[347] Hamilton may have thought the school assembly would be full of the younger half of the student body, but it was empty and perhaps out of frustration, he fired off a round or two at the stage before moving onto the gymnasium where he’d been told by a boy at his club several days earlier that the five and six year olds might be starting their PE class at 9:30AM.[348]

After bursting into the gym, Hamilton allegedly began blasting away, pumping a volley of bullets first at the adults, assistant teacher Mary Blake, the PE teacher Eileen Herrild and the P1 first grade teacher Gwen Mayor. All three were hit with multiple shots, killing Gwen immediately with one bullet piercing her left eye while badly injuring the two other adults. All three teachers heroically attempted to shield the children. Hamilton then began shooting every child in the gym but one who escaped death by playing dead. Within three minutes, 16 children and their teacher lay dead or dying from multiple gunshot wounds while a dozen less injured children and two teachers somehow managed to find temporary shelter in an adjacent storage alcove, tenuously out of sight from the shooter's rapid fire rampage still raging in the gym.

In the shock and trauma amidst the rapid spray of bullets, no survivors were able to get a good view of the shooter. The injured were either shot dead, or if able, sought safety in the adjoining storage alcove where no visual contact with the murderer was possible. Though the whimpering, crying children were in pain and shock, the injured teachers put their fingers to their mouth to visually communicate the need to remain as quiet as possible.[349] Those that lay injured unable to escape the gym were shot several times at close range with up to seven bullets viciously pumped into them to ensure death. The dozen wounded children and two of the three injured school staff (one was grazed by a shot in the library) were only able to helplessly listen to the gunfire blasts going off just yards away.

PE teacher Eileen Herrild commented that at one point, she attempted to get one or two boys to not peek out at the violence in the gym still unfolding, fearing that the shooter might notice them and move in for the kill to finish them off.

[350] This also lends credence and high plausibility to one of the injured 6-year old boys Matthew Birnie watching the gym shootings from the alcove verbalize from his hospital bed:

I know the bad man is dead because the policeman shot him.[351]

http://dunblane.site/hamilton2.htm

https://www.scotsman.com/news-2-15012/teachers-relive-horror-of-terrible-day-1-1098906

https://truthmegasite.com/dunblane-primary-school-shootings-near-stirling-scotland-a-false-flag-used-to-further-gun-control-in-the-uk/

According to an October 2005 *Scotsman* article, likely the final time that student teacher David Scott cooperated in an interview, Scott explained that he had sent an 11-year old on an errand from his art class to retrieve a pair of scissors in another classroom.[352] As the student was in transit walking outside near the gym, he heard commotion, banging sounds and screams coming from the gymnasium and looked through the glass door window to notice the gunman shooting inside, at which point the gunman turned to him and opened fire. The boy ran away to alert his 23-year old student teacher. Hamilton opened the gym fire exit door and fired nine shots into the closest classroom hut number 7. The teacher in that classroom had just in time instructed her children to lay on the floor to avoid the barrage of incoming bullets. The gunman then went back into the gym.

Apparently from his classroom window located a distance from the gym, David Scott is alleged to have been able to observe an “agitated” gunman twice step out of the gym through the fire exit door.

Student teacher Scott told *The Scotsman* that once back inside the gym, Hamilton again fired at more targets in “very quick succession,” adding:

> *He then turned a gun on himself. I cannot say if he put the gun into his mouth or just close to his face. I then heard a shot, the man's head slumped backwards with a jolt, his knees folded and he fell backwards on to the floor.*[353]

Mimicking Scott’s story, the Cullen Report described the sequence of events this way:

> *Thomas Hamilton then re-entered the gym where he shot again. He then released the pistol and drew a revolver. He placed the muzzle of the revolver in his mouth, pointing upwards and pulled the trigger. His death followed quickly.*[354]

The above statement by Cullen referring to Thomas Hamilton’s alleged suicide was never substantiated by any witnesses at the Cullen Inquiry “show trial.” Cullen simply based his entire conclusion that Hamilton killed himself on David Scott’s word alone, which was viewed from a classroom window at a distance from the gym. The Dunblane Primary School gymnasium did not have four glass walls by which an observer some distance away would be able to see what goes on inside the gym, especially to witness a gun to the mouth. After hearing noises much closer to the gym than his student teacher, Scott’s errand boy had to walk up to a glass door to peer inside before realizing something bad was going on. Though Sandra Uttley alludes that David Scott’s written witness statement made the same basic claim that he saw Hamilton place a handgun up near his mouth and pull the trigger, if his vantage point was not inside the gym but watching at a distance from a classroom window, then Cullen’s only “evidence” convincing him that Hamilton committed suicide is extremely weak and faulty at best.

Cullen admitted he never even read over 80% of the more than 1,000 written witness statements compiled literally at his disposal.[355] Thus, his inquiry conclusions are the result of his selectively finding any so called evidence that could be used to support his bogus claim of a lone nut Hamilton suicide. His task during his entire sideshow scam was to create the false narrative by finding “the right witnesses” just as he was deemed “the right judge,” in order to support the cabal’s original premise that a crazy evil gunman acting alone snuffed himself at Dunblane… end of story. Meanwhile, the only way to accomplish his assigned task was to bring in only carefully cherry-picked witnesses that in some cases distorted and perjured themselves under oath while intentionally keeping out any witnesses that held far more truthful and significant information as evidence that might end up exposing UK’s powerful criminal masonic Establishment.[356] Both David Scott and school janitor John Currie were very likely used as stooges, enlisted to support the cabal’s collusion in the sacrificial murder of children to protect powerful pedophiles and streamline through the world’s strictest gun control laws.

In the meantime, too many of us still believe that Hamilton never shot himself but was murdered by a government assassin to passively let the full century go by.[357] Here’s evidence backing up the murder claim.

After Hamilton was reported to have reentered the gym a second time, at this point several accounts from the wounded victims in the storage alcove claimed to have briefly heard voices, sounding to them as though Hamilton was surrendering to authorities. After several seconds of this muffled conversation exchange, a distinctly loud scream was heard and then the final gunshots.[358] Even from the nearby, just fired upon classroom hut number 7, eleven-year old Laura Bryce also reported hearing the scream, guessing it must have been the moment Thomas Hamilton shot himself.[359] Of course these all-important multiple auditory witness accounts were conspicuously left out of the Cullen Report and instead only Cullen’s quoted, filled in co-fabrication [with David Scott] was inserted, never backed up or uttered by a single witness among the 171 that he selected to provide testimony at his whitewash. William Cullen was already on record as a proven liar saying he was not a Freemason when it's clearly been documented that he is member #1703 of the Edinburgh Speculative Society masonic lodge.[360] And William Cullen apparently lied again, claiming that Thomas Hamilton stuck the muzzle of a Smith and Wesson revolver in his mouth to commit suicide in yet another episode of dead men don't tell tales. Even David Scott said he did not see if Hamilton stuck the gun in his mouth. Seems once again Judge Cullen's been caught stretching the truth to fit his agenda.

In the police report taken from the parents of the only child in the class of 29 who was neither injured nor killed, but survived by wisely pretending to be dead, it was reported that two bullet holes two inches apart and six inches from ground level were left on the one wall where Hamilton was primarily shooting from and where his body was found (before it was moved).[361] The three other walls in the gym were punctured with close to a hundred bullet holes. The two isolated holes in the one wall near the alleged killer's body were punctured by bullets that in all likelihood killed Hamilton. But why two bullet holes so close to the ground if Hamilton used his revolver to shoot himself once in the head? First of all, not too many people lay down to commit suicide, perhaps sit down but that would be far higher than a half foot from the floor. Secondly, according to information that emerged after the Dunblane inquiry, two bullets from a .357 Magnum revolver went through Hamilton's head to kill him.[362] This fact alone confirms that Hamilton did not die by suicide. Impossible - no human pulls the trigger twice with the barrel of a revolver pointed squarely in or near the mouth and then be alive to fire a second round. This very popular "suicided" assassination trick of two bullet holes through the brain (a la Iran Contra reporter Gary Webb[363]) is often deployed by murderous thugs in security services and mafia alike to explain another so called suicide that simply defies all laws of science and will not work. Thomas Hamilton became another casualty of the cabal for knowing far too much about VIP pedophilia crime. The pedo-Establishment’s line of crap not only defies all science, logic and reason, it’s an insult to every human being’s intelligence. Shame on the pedo-capital of the universe for feebly trying to lie its way out of this government assassination masquerading as a staged murder-suicide.

It was learned during the Cullen Inquiry that one bullet exited Hamilton’s head just above his left ear, which in and of itself would have definitely killed him.[364] But his murderer obviously had to be 100% certain he would die, so he shot the second round squarely through the top of the meathead’s head. Hamilton was either shot initially in the stomach and hip some reports claim,[365] thus causing him to fall to the ground, or he was forcibly taken to the ground and held down, with only his head able to slightly move with the .357 revolver either plunged in his mouth or inches away to finish him off. Additionally, the voices heard just before the final shots and surprise in Hamilton’s voice overheard by witnesses in the alcove indicate that Hamilton spoke briefly to at least one other person prior to his death. It’s a far more plausible and realistic explanation of how he died than by any bogus official account like suicide.

Both David Scott and the crime scene examiner’s accounts insist that Hamilton committed suicide while standing up, not laying down.[366] Then why would those two bullet holes be so close to the floor near where his body was found with brain shot out behind him located even closer to the wall, unless Hamilton was lying down while shot. Committing suicide from a supine position is extremely unrealistic and unheard of. And even stranger to explain is the scream heard just before those final gunshots. It’s far more likely that Hamilton was shocked to see the tables suddenly turning on him with a gun aimed directly at him and/or wrestled to the ground to have a gun shoved in his face or mouth, realizing a man (or men) he likely knew that either accompanied him into the gym or arrived at the tail end of his shooting spree was about to neutralize him. Of course those two holes in the wall were from the bullets that mostly likely killed Hamilton. It goes without saying that the Cullen Report never mentioned the two bullet holes either.

Nor did the fact that if according to two scene-of-crime officers Malcolm Chisholm and Donald Scobie, Hamilton turned toward the wall with his back facing the gym when he supposedly shot himself, how does that explain the two bullet holes six inches from the ground with Hamilton’s body found lying on his back with his head and pieces of his brain closest to that wall?[367] Off duty police officer Grant McCutcheon dropping his two kids off at school that morning became the very first policeman at the crime scene arriving a half hour ahead of any other police.[368] And Grant distinctly witnessed Hamilton lying with his head towards the wall,[369] not as the later officers claim, which strongly suggests that Hamilton’s body must have been moved. And why would Chisholm and Scobie’s contradictory testimony also be securely tucked away from the public for the next century when it appears to support Cullen’s false narrative?

Though all the dead children were identified by around midday but one, frantic parents had to wait up to five agonizing hours before given the horrible news,[370] yet “leave no stone unturned” Detective Chief Superintendent Ogg lied at the inquiry claiming all the parents knew an hour to an hour and a half earlier than the actual time of 3:30PM.[371] He answered the question of whether parents were still waiting at 3:30AM with “I don’t think so.”[372] The most probable, logical reason for the grueling delay is that for hours the crime scene was being tampered with and bodies moved, specifically patsy Thomas Hamilton's, which explains the difference between the direction the killer's head was facing amongst witnesses. The obvious objective in the long delay was for police and Crown Service to make sure they got their stories straight regarding how Hamilton officially "committed suicide."

And why the discrepant accounts of the number of weapons Hamilton used to shoot his victims? With Officer Grant McCutcheon among the first at the crime scene, still able to smell the smoke in the air while a still alive Hamilton was in death throes gurgling and twitching, why would such a valuable police witness possessing experience familiar with crime scenes and readily discerning the most significant observable details recorded in his written statement not be called in to testify as a crucial inquiry witness? Any real inquiry in search of the actual truth would have automatically made him the ideal star witness. But Lord Cullen's production was never about attempting to find out the actual truth, which meant the one key witness whose testimony that would be most required to determine what really happened would not be needed at Cullen's stage show farce.

The obvious reason is that McCutcheon's eyewitness account directly contradicted Cullen's bogus official narrative that constitutes cover-up. The off duty officer's trained eyes observed that Hamilton wore only one holster and possessed only two pistols and that **no revolvers were present at the crime scene at all**,[373] opposing the official account claimed by Judge Cullen and his cherry-picked CSP crime scene officers reporting to the inquiry that Hamilton had used two Browning pistols and two Smith and Wesson revolvers while wearing four holsters dressed in black corduroy trousers with earmuffs to commit mass murder.[374] Yet every child and teacher was shot with a

Browning pistol, not a revolver. Only Hamilton died from a revolver that apparently had legs and magically disappeared… no doubt hitching a ride on the legs of Hamilton's actual killer when he disappeared. Grant McCutcheon also observed Hamilton wearing a black boiler suit without earmuffs.

An injured schoolboy also allegedly made the critical statement that he saw "the bad man" (Hamilton) being shot.[375] But of course it was quickly and easily discarded as the ramblings of a young, unreliable, traumatized child. So what if it supports the McCutcheon observations and answers a whole slew of anomalies to suddenly make far greater sense of reality than the forced official fabrication that withheld so much key evidence. Anything to save the evil masonic murdering pedophiles in power. Right Judge Cullen?

Also the two witnesses alleged to already be at the crime scene when McCutcheon arrived in the gym - janitor John Currie and David Scott, obviously also extremely important witnesses, but neither was called to testify at the Cullen Inquiry as only their written police statements were used. There is inconsistency in who arrived at the crime scene first. Sandra Uttley maintains that the student teacher at the scene was David Scott. But campaigner William Burns on his website *dunblane.site* and *Newsweek* both cite a student teacher named Allison Curry among the first on the scene. She was a student trainee from another school and was at Dunblane Primary School that morning as a mother attending a meeting with the head assistant over her 5-year old son's disruptive ADHD behavior.[376] She heard the gunshots as she was leaving the school and in a panicked state, ran to the gym apparently arriving within moments after Hamilton was shot and dying.[377] The former trainee teacher and mother, Allison Curry, was frantically willing to rush into harm's way because she knew her son Ryan Liddell was in that gym class and found Ryan shot in the arm and chest but somehow he managed to survive. Unfortunately 15 years later at age 20, he was found guilty of attempting to rape a 76-year old woman while under the influence of drugs in 2011,[378] a year later receiving a life sentence.[379]

Allison's witness statement is locked away under the 100-year ban as she also was not asked to testify in person. It was Sandra Uttley's enterprising diligence that tracked down Officer Grant McCutcheon and through a FOIA request acquired a full copy of his witness statement.[380] But the fact that Allison Curry, Grant McCutcheon, John Currie and David Scott as the first alleged witnesses at the gym immediately after the shooting were never requested as inquiry witnesses indicates Cullen had no interest in determining the real truth but called in only those that fit his false narrative of the lone nut gunman. The only early crime scene witness that did testify was head teacher Ron Taylor, who maintains he called the 999 emergency line at 9:38AM while Police Superintendent John Ogg insists Taylor called CSP Stirling police station.[381] Judge Cullen nor any of his solicitors even bothered to request records or sort that one out, allowing the contradictory evidence to slide.

Despite the four witnesses holding crucial evidence, apparently soon after the massacre Currie and Scott grew tired of being hounded and questioned. Currie always laid low and Scott has followed suit. The logical reason is their claims are both absolutely essential for holding the official lone gunman line, that Hamilton took his own life while possessing two additional revolvers and four holsters that Constable McCutcheon insists were absent. Since they were required to pull off the enormous deception with so much riding on it, no wonder they're nowhere to be found. At one point Scott told *News of the World*:

I have not spoken about this before and have no intention of doing so.[382]

Beyond his earlier quotes in *The Scotsman*, the Scott has resolutely refused to talk or cooperate with the press or any Dunblane investigators. Remarkable how virtually every witness whose testimony was used as crucial evidence supporting the false narrative seems to always runs away from those asking unanswered questions the inquiry failed to address, acting like they've all got something to hide.

Moreover, the Cullen Report never mentions either David Scott or Allison Curry by name, only referring to the "student teacher." Yet nowhere in evidence presented at Cullen's inquiry was the questionable statement that David Scott or a student teacher actually observed Hamilton shoot himself.[383] Only part of the student teacher's written statement was read by the "no stone unturned" Central Scotland Police Superintendent John Ogg. But the most crucially important point that an eyewitness saw Hamilton pull the trigger to kill himself was never even presented as evidence at the public inquiry. Yet suicide readily became the official word in both the Cullen Report and press coverage as Hamilton's cause of death, though an online postmortem report on Hamilton left it wide open.[384] Without David Scott's alleged testimony claiming to witness the suicide, the official story that Hamilton shot himself is suddenly rendered totally groundless and suspect.

Much is owed to a group of enterprising private citizens exercising their public right to know despite the government's suppression of truth. First up is William W. Scott (no relation to David), as soon as he learned that Lord Burton's 1999 request that the Hughes Report be placed in the House of Lords Library drew the reply that it was subject to the 100-year closure order, William Scott began tirelessly querying ministers and lords to get to the bottom of this travesty of justice.[385] For years he persistently attempted to gain access to buried documents through Freedom of Information Act requests. And after years of hammering away at the government, ultimately it was William Scott who forced authorities to finally admit that the 100-year rule did not have a legal leg to stand on, i.e., was invoked without any statute precedence or legal justification.

Along with William Scott, other tenacious advocates for Dunblane justice include William Burns for forcing the undeniable issue of the Freemasonry connection and making the strong case for a second inquiry before the SMP committee,[386] Tom Minogue and former QVS housemaster Glenn Harrison for connecting the school's patrons to Hamilton's VIP pedo-ring and advocating for a real investigation,[387] Sandra Uttley for writing the book on *Dunblane Unburied* truth, presenting a myriad of discrepancies,[388] and numerous others campaigning for a second inquiry to finally unveil the dark reality of what really happened, which is still yet to be done.

In William Scott's correspondence with Lord Advocate Colin Boyd asking why off duty police officer Grant McCutcheon wasn't included as an inquiry witness, William was told that McCutcheon wasn't needed since "a student teacher saw Hamilton shoot himself." William Scott valid response:

Nowhere in the evidence given to the Inquiry did the student teacher state that he saw Hamilton shoot himself.[389]

David Scott appears to be among the many weak links in the official Cullen narrative. Without his or the other student teacher's alleged word that Hamilton was seen sticking a revolver in his mouth to blow himself away, which fails to explain how Hamilton could blow himself away twice with two bullets through the brain, suicide is relegated to a mere flaky, far-fetched, wannabe theory if not outright lie. When weighed against the far more probable, plausible, overwhelming evidence of Officer McCutcheon insisting that no revolver was present at the gym combined with the boy's claim from the alcove that Hamilton was shot by another gunman, and the other alcove witnesses overhearing brief words exchanged and then a scream before the final shots in the gym rang out, there was no suicide. All of these written accounts when taken together can only mean one thing - that someone other than Hamilton pulled the trigger of that Smith and Wesson .357 Magnum revolver to murder Thomas Hamilton and in possession of that weapon then briskly departed out the fire exit door within seconds or a minute prior to Grant McCutcheon's arrival.

If it was known that someone else killed Hamilton, he would be regarded as a public hero for stopping the carnage after only three minutes and thus saving many more lives.[390] But the only reason the hero scenario won't work or ever be "officially" promoted is that the Hamilton killer as an undercover government operative would not want his identity known since he'd be implicated as an accomplice to the crime, even if Hamilton the patsy killed all the children and teacher that morning.[391] The government could not go public with the hero story, unable to justify his presence so soon at the crime scene without being in on the attack. Thus, the cabal's culpability could only safely be spared from public exposure by Hamilton "cleanly" committing suicide.

Nonetheless, it appears far more evident that one or more members of security services and/or CSP participated in the assassination of Thomas Hamilton, having colluded with him on the school murders, i.e., the Dunblane Massacre was executed as an act of state sponsored terrorism for the dual purpose of conveniently eliminating a dangerous liability to the pedo-cabal while instantly triggering the already planned mass gun control rollout co-timed in Australia with the state sponsored Port Arthur tragedy.

All anomalies are easily reconciled by the far more plausible reality that an additional inside gunman and/or accomplices used the revolver on Hamilton to shoot him twice in the head, if not also in the stomach and chest, again speculation based on initial eyewitness reports.[392] That would much better explain why Hamilton was in a supine position when he was killed. It accounts for the two bullet holes left in the one wall near ground level in addition to Hamilton's brief overheard dialogue with at least one other person as well as his shriek of surprise just before being shot.

Also during the shooting when Hamilton reportedly walked out the gymnasium fire exit door twice and shot off rounds inside the closest adjacent mobile classroom, the students and teacher hit the deck and remained there for several minutes, until well after the last gunshots were heard. Thus, it made it easy for the gunman (or gunmen) to stealthily leave the area without ever being noticed, allowing Hamilton's murderer(s) to escape undetected.

Then there's the unanswered question regarding Thomas Hamilton's body mysteriously moved from the school gymnasium. William Scott spoke briefly to a member of the first ambulance crew to arrive at the crime scene at 9:57AM regarding the probability that the body and crime scene were tampered with as it appears Hamilton's body was soon removed from the gym.[393] Officers from the Dunblane police claim they arrived at about 9:50AM, which according to the ambulance crew and off duty officer McCutcheon, that is not true.[394] Uniformed police showed up some time after 10AM. Meanwhile, the general manager from the ambulance company home office in Dundee quickly intervened to prohibit any further contact with William Scott. So the truth advocate then attempted to make contact with a Dr. J. Beattie, then Consultant Pediatrician at Stirling Royal Infirmary who was dispatched to the gym to treat the wounded and dying and said at a press conference on March 13th that he saw only one adult body at the school, meaning teacher Gwen Mayor. So where was Hamilton's body? At the inquiry he again never said he saw the killer's body. William

Scott's questioning him later by letter drew a hostile response from the doctor, not wanting any part in shedding much needed light on the mystery. Again, if asshole snuffed himself, all this body snatching would be totally unnecessary. Body snatchers only have one thing in mind, to keep something hidden from others.

While Doreen Hagger saw up close and personal how cowardly cruel and dangerous Thomas Hamilton was, intuitively feeling certain that Hamilton the coward that she knew would never commit suicide, Doreen's friend Sandra Uttley as a paramedic often encountered life and death situations that included individuals who attempted or committed suicide. With Hamilton in mind, Sandra wrote:

> *It is a myth that those who take their own life are cowards. Cowards take the life of others, whilst wishing to preserve their own.*[395]

And so it seems far more likely that the state chose to rid itself of a loose cannon deemed of highest threat to potentially bring down the entire British Establishment Empire, easily masked by using the false narrative that the pedophile took his own life. We've run into this exact same scenario many times over. Countless mysterious, suspicious, so called suicides and natural deaths are used to cover up unnatural murders of those who know too much as yet another running theme throughout the saga of modern pedophilia scandals.

The Cullen cover-up is only possible if student teacher's sole word is taken at face value, despite it not logically holding up amidst the pressure of so many contradicting anomalies. This explains why Scott or Allison were never required to show up as key witnesses at the Cullen inquiry for cross examination or even a name be mentioned on the Cullen report. Instead only selected parts of a written statement from a "student teacher" was safely read at the inquiry by

Superintendent Ogg. Because both Cullen's official inquiry and report are so outrageously bogus, to ensure the Dunblane truth never sees the light of day, the only way the masonic judge could avoid jail himself was imposing the 100-year ban. And the only way that all the masonic VIP pedophiles not end up joining him behind bars was saved by the Cullen bell.

Additionally, per the Cullen inquiry, Hamilton perceived that parents within the larger community had increasingly rejected him and his clubs working with boys, thus motivating him to concoct the ambitiously monstrous plan to seek revenge, killing as many of the rejecting parents' children as possible at Dunblane Primary School.[396] Again, according to the Lord Cullen report, Hamilton went to the school carrying well over 700 rounds of ammo, enough to murder all 640 students and teachers in school that day in his revengeful rage against the Dunblane community. So why would Hamilton then stop after only three short minutes into his shooting spree, firing off just 105 of his 743 bullets? He still had more bullets left than children left alive in the school with plenty of time prior to the first police responders to walk the few steps to the nearest classroom he'd already shot at, full of more defenselessly trapped victims to finish off. It makes no sense at all if in fact as Cullen concluded, he intended to kill as many of the students as possible.

It's also been asked why Hamilton chose the Dunblane Primary School as the sole object of his sick revenge. Why this particular primary school and not some other local school? Through the years the average age of boys attending his clubs was 8-11, several years older than those he chose to slaughter. All but one who died were only 5-years old… unless in his demented mind, he knew that would have the most hurtful impact on his local town's parents. Hamilton was reportedly led to believe by the 9-year old at his club that half the student body would be in the assembly hall at 9:30AM where he first entered the school and shot off a round or two before moving onto the gym where the youngest in the school were about to begin their PE class.[397] Fortunately on that Wednesday morning, the assembly involving the younger half of the primary school students had already taken place an hour earlier at 8:30 or there likely would have been far more casualties.

Aside from the parents in his community that had rejected him, Hamilton held three other longstanding bitter grudges against his perceived enemies as well - the Boy Scouts organization was the first to reject him when he was barely an adult at 21. Plus, more than one local shooting club had turned down his application or terminated his membership. He brazenly violated gun club rules, often emptying an entire magazine on a single target at close range within seconds as he lacked both interest and ability for competition and gun etiquette.[398] In the half year leading up to the shooting, Hamilton stepped up both his purchase of guns and ammo as well as his rapid fire delivery target practicing. Meanwhile during the 1990s, Hamilton increasingly viewed Central Scotland Police as his chief persecutors. Yet in his paranoia and plot for ultimate revenge, those three enemies - the Boy Scouts, local snubbing gun clubs and CSP – were all spared from his most violent wrath.

Still another logical question… If revenge against parents and community was his main motive, why the primary school and not another one. A gender fact, perhaps incidental but perhaps not, out of the murdered 16 students, 11 were girls and only 5 were boys. The homosexual pedophile killer may have had a negative bias against the fairer sex as the class had near equal number of boys and girls. Author Sandra Uttley brings up the point that over twice as many girls died because of the inordinate number of head wounds suffered whereas boys were far less prone to being shot in the head.[399] This is consistent with his conflict and resentment towards females, likely related to his family dynamics and role confusion.

Queen Victoria School would not be Hamilton' first choice of his targeted violence since the parents of boys at that school are stationed in the military and do not reside in the Dunblane community. Incidentally, girls were allowed at Queen Victoria School in 1996 shortly after the Dunblane shooting. Another reason the madman would choose against shooting up QVS as still an all-boys school. But also infinitely more significant, among the Friends of QVS were VIP child abusers and exposure of Hamilton's VIP pedo-connections would be at far greater risk, especially considering that former housemaster Glenn Harrison had caused such a “ruckus” in his persistent, commendable efforts to stop the ongoing abuse.

Another noteworthy fact supporting the likelihood Hamilton was assassinated is that leading up to the 13th of March, there were absolutely no signs that Thomas Hamilton had any intention of killing himself. Unlike the handpicked witnesses representing Hamilton's social contacts and friends at the Cullen inquiry that reported they had not seen him in months as he was reportedly isolative and rather boring company,[400] many of his neighbors claimed just the opposite. Helen Peters who lived across the street from him on Kent Road maintained that in recent days just prior to the bloodbath, Hamilton was surprisingly talkative and uncharacteristically friendly:

He was so talkative for a guy who rarely exchanges more than a few words and never mixes.[401]

Perhaps Hamilton's only neighbor that came closest to being his friend was Cathleen Kerr,[402] who also noticed that Thomas Hamilton in the final few days was more “chatty and cheerful” than usual as well. The day after the massacre it was Cathleen who told the press that she and other neighbors were also aware of children "coming to his home but didn't suspect anything was wrong," adding, "Now I feel sick."[403]

The neighbor living in the flat above Hamilton happened to be Comrie Deuchars, the Scouts commissioner who'd rejected Hamilton's membership 22 years earlier. As the last known person to speak with the mass murderer on the morning of March 13th,[404] Comrie's observations also failed to support the notion that the so called recluse had retreated from social contact in recent months, which every witness and social contact selected to testify in person at Cullen's inquiry falsely claimed. Comrie reported that Hamilton had left Comrie's newspaper in his letter box as a friendly, neighborly gesture, and, considering the grudge that Thomas Hamilton allegedly held against the Boy Scouts and Deuchars in particular, combined with the remarkable fact that in little more than an hour Hamilton would be the biggest mass murderer in Brutish history, he showed no signs of duress to indicate he was planning to commit either murder or suicide. In the hours and days leading up to his last day alive, Comrie said the killer did not act the least bit depressed.

Hamilton's contacts with others the night before the massacre also showed no indication of suicide based on his twice a week routine of visiting his mother for dinner and taking in a bath on March 12th,[405] followed at home with a near hour-long phone conversation with a friend of 15 years. Both his mother and friend insisted he was his normal self, not someone on the verge of snuffing a bunch of kids as well as himself within the next few hours.[406] Additionally, the 43-year old had bought several new shirts at a store just days before. He also insisted on paying for his van rental in full prior to turning it in. Why would his spending pattern do that if he planned to kill himself in a couple days? None of these actions would be typical behavior of someone planning suicide.

On a near consistent weekly basis for up to two years, Hamilton kept asking a 9-year old boy attending his clubs about the physical layout of the Dunblane School and the assembly times, confirming his violent plot for revenge had been on his mind long before the dirty deed. The boy stated:

I told him their [P1's] *assembly was on a Wednesday and the younger ones went straight into the gym afterwards at about 9.30*.[407]

Hmm, he went straight into the gym at 9:30, sounds like slaughtering the youngest kids at the school was premeditated, not by accident.

On the Monday night just 36 hours before the massacre, Hamilton was conducting business as usual, not acting the least bit different, suicidal or depressed, still running another of his sports club classes at Bishopbriggs, a town on the outskirts of Glasgow, just outside the Central Regional Council district that had largely rejected him closer to home.[408] He was busily showing off his gun catalogue as a special treat to boys that excelled in his class that night. He'd been running his Monday evening club at the local Bishopbriggs high school gym since October 1995 and nothing about either his daily routine or his behavior suggested that he was planning to commit suicide a mere day and a half later. He was planning revenge though.

Hamilton's next door neighbors the Ogilvie's observed fancy cars, some with chauffeurs of VIPs coming and going to Hamilton's small public housing flat right up to less than 24-hours before the massacre.[409] Yet this critical piece of information was never part of the inquiry. By obvious design, Cullen ensured that any testimony showing or even suggesting that others may have been involved in the murderous plot was carefully avoided like the plague.

Prior to the internet days, as a suspected steady supplier of child pornography and boy victims for his highfalutin friends, the photo-bug porn man never seemed to run out of customers lusting after his pics depicting his favorite fixation – skimpily dressed young lads in various state of undress. Like perverted trophies, his apartment walls were brazenly decorated with these kind of highly suggestive pedo-themed photographs.[410] Receiving likeminded VIP houseguests less than 24 hours prior to his killing spree hardly reflects a man ready to shoot his own brains out - twice.

Less than a week ahead of the massacre, Hamilton is alleged to have spoken to a retired Central Scotland Police gun instructor John Wilson in a supposed chance meeting at a local store in Stirling where the 34-year police veteran later gave testimony at the inquiry recalling that Hamilton first asked for instruction on shooting “from 10 yards.”[411] Then the conversation turned to emphasizing the importance of every UK police department having:

An armed response vehicle… so that they could ***get to a firearms incident quickly****.*[412]

At the time that Thomas Hamilton made the alleged statement above, he’d already worked out his plan for the Dunblane Primary School massacre, likely counting on selected “friend(s)” from law enforcement and/or perhaps security services providing prearranged backup assistance to “get to [**his**] firearms incident quickly.” Along these same lines, *Dunblane Unburied* author Sandra Uttley suggests the possibility that a collaboration with CSP or MI5 may have led Hamilton to believe that a waiting getaway vehicle would be provided allowing him to start life anew elsewhere since he’d obviously had worn out his welcome in Stirling-Dunblane years earlier.[413]

The fact that just prior to the shooting a number of his neighbors insist that Hamilton was more social and upbeat than ever before while the prospect that authorities may have agreed to assist him to relocate and start a new life elsewhere makes perfect sense as a source for his surge in optimism. At this point he was their controlled patsy as they moved in for the kill.

Fellow mason-CSP officers that had long been covering up both his and their crimes were likely colluding with Hamilton in the school shooting as a setup to murder him. Having grown increasingly wary of Hamilton as a very serious, increasingly unstable liability to the entire British Establishment, in its ever-vigilant duty to protect the realm, MI5 and Central Scotland Police were reputedly carrying out orders to ensure that Hamilton was “suicided” at the end of “their” killing rampage that the ruling elite would opportunistically seize to exploit in order to easily disarm UK citizenry of their right to bear firearms. And like synchronized clockwork just weeks later the planetary controllers ensured Australia would follow suit, another step closer to fulfilling the cabal agenda to disarm populations in all nations worldwide.

In a diabolically planned, staged atrocity of unimaginable horror, again fatally harming children for the most egregious dual purpose, a mountain of circumstantial evidence indicates that the criminal cabal bloodily sacrificed a gymnasium full of defenseless little kids using its despicable stooge to do its evil bidding in order to deliver gun control off the blood of slaughtered innocents and squelch yet another VIP pedophilia scandal. And ever since, this same ghastly, tragic pattern’s been endlessly played out, beginning just 46 days after Dunblane in Tasmania, and recently yet again in New Zealand, and in between dozens more times in America as the last major holdout for private gun ownership. This is the only plausible conclusion that adequately addresses and answers the countless anomalies and contradictions of the official Dunblane propaganda called the Cullen Report, constantly reinforced this last quarter century now by scores of proven similar state sponsored tragedies on a global scale.

So the easy to hate Thomas Hamilton unwittingly became the Deep State's first targeted, convenient patsy in the international crime cabal's mission to confiscate legal gun ownership globally, starting in 1996 at the heart of the Queen's Commonwealth - Britain and Australia. But having so many unsolved, unresolved, flagrantly avoided and unanswered burning questions and improbable anomalies in the UK government's official false narrative, Judge Cullen knew he had to apply the statute-less 100-rule to protect all guilty parties including himself, despite it being such an obvious, unprecedented, illicit cover-up of such lowdown, diabolical truth that only invited a flood of disbelief, scorn and contempt from the public.

But that's how the British pedo-Establishment has always operated, confident that once the initial heat created by each breaking pedo-scandal plays itself out, with standard cover-up in due time, they always blow over. The British people have grown so anesthetized and desensitized by this fixed recurring pattern of a horror show, so used to the blatant, in-your-face lies and cover-ups, years ago they've come to expect and complacently accept this same shameful dreadful condition, either subliminally or consciously, fully aware that their nation's political system is so corrosively rotten to its morally irreparable core, that it's been long past the point of no return.

It was certainly no random accident that just six weeks later the even deadlier tragedy at Port Arthur, Tasmania killed over twice as many both adults and children at 35. What do you think the odds are that Dunblane would become the most lethal mass shooting (and only school massacre) in

Britain’s long history while Port Arthur would be Australia’s deadliest counterpart taking place just a few weeks apart? And then like clockwork just months afterwards, two of the top Commonwealth nations in the world successfully banned private ownership of firearms in the most stringent gun control on the planet.

The international crime cabal works synchronously as it turns out that the Port Arthur patsy Martin Bryant was a Tavistock mind-controlled 28-year old possessing an IQ of only 66, said to be suffering from trauma-induced dissociative disorder.[414] Bryant’s psychiatrists were on record as Tavistock trained. Of course security services and Tavistock mind control are synonymous as is security services and both false flag mass shootings and the global pedophilia network. In the same vein, Thomas Hamilton was also deeply psychologically impaired, drugged, brainwashed and controlled by authorities as well.

Leave it to security services to take the heat off their mind-controlled assassins in two Commonwealth nations while in the UK also covering up a notorious masonic VIP pedophile ring. In one fell swoop, national attention was diverted away from government culpability in the business of mind controlled assassins, brainwashing violent patsies groomed specially to become their nations’ designated deadliest mass killers. And the dividend bonus in Scotland was successfully hiding yet another VIP child sex abuse scandal amongst so many already, sinisterly misusing the tragedy for sleight of hand misdirection to press the “urgent need” for gun control, manipulating a pair of Commonwealth populations into voluntarily surrendering their gun rights.[415] Not that even the strictest gun control laws ever stop criminals from procuring lethal weapons illegally nor stop more state sponsored shooting sprees, though once the ruling elite successfully disarmed the UK and Australia in

1997, little need was left for orchestrating bigger shooting sprees in either country…

Unlike stubborn, “gun-happy” America where sixteen years later, the Sandy Hook false flag hoax at Newtown, Connecticut was launched, allegedly claiming 20 children’s lives to become the cabal’s American equivalent to Dunblane.[416] Despite America’s school shootings sadly becoming commonplace, starting with Colorado’s 1999 Columbine High shootout, all have failed to deliver gun control. So like clockwork ever since, the litany of America’s nonstop state sponsored mass shootings are still ongoing, each adding incremental pressure on top of the rest to ultimately repeal the US Constitution’s 2nd Amendment – the right for private citizens to bear arms. The bottom line – the planetary controllers will not let up until Americans and indeed the entire planet are subdued and defenseless against state sponsored democide. The tragic irony is the more draconian and authoritarian the state becomes usurping and destroying what’s left of our human rights and civil liberties, the more the state attempts to brainwash and convince that it’s absolutely necessary in order to keep us “safe” – the biggest lie of all. These state sponsored false flag atrocities are the governments’ main M.O. on achieving a global police state one world government.

US Judiciary Committee Chairman - GOP Senator Lindsey Graham - held a gun confiscation hearing on March 26, 2019.[417] It’s only a matter of time before all the unfolding world events and developments, including state sponsored false flag terrorism[418] as the international crime cabal’s global arsenal and agenda to - in the name of “security” instill fear and insecurity that makes people easily controlled while stripping away their vanishing freedom. Currently it’s the cabal’s highest priority to eliminate our right to defend ourselves. For years, the elite’s beta test spearheaded by the UN as its prototype model has been relentlessly pushing towards a universal small arms treaty ban that even the US can live with.[419] Meanwhile, Sen. Graham is confident his latest push will attain rare bipartisan support, including Donald J. Drumpf's.

And right on synchronous cue prepping the March 26th Congressional hearing on US gun confiscation, the Ides of March strike again with the latest mass gun violence – 50 shot dead in two New Zealand mosques.[420] With this Commonwealth nation's gun laws considered even more relaxed than the US, New Zealand's now deadliest attack on record will be used to try and kill two birds with one stone, paving the way for gun confiscation in both New Zealand and America as well.[421] Despite New Zealand's gun ownership during the past decade rising by 62% to 1.5 million guns in 2017 amongst a population of just under five million, the homicide rate has remained extremely low.[422] In fact in one hour the alleged March 15th death toll exceeded the total number of New Zealand murders committed during the entire year 2017. And of course, surprise, surprise, the nation's Puppet Prime Minister Jacinda Ardern immediately promised much tougher new gun laws.[423]

So without this latest cabal perpetrated false flag, there'd be absolutely no reason for stricter gun control in New Zealand since as a proven relatively peaceful nation, the murder rate's actually been steadily dropping despite the increase in gun ownership by obviously law abiding citizens. This latest state sponsored crime illustrates the dire straits that the human race is facing now at the hands of the murderous pedophilic elite. It's up to us citizens of the world to learn the truth and not allow the propaganda machine to dumb us down into ignorance, complacency, impotence or fear.

Once you see past the propaganda machine, you realize the entire world's been hijacked and conned by a minuscule minority of psychopathic Luciferian lunatics allowed to deceptively operate freely within their centralized control system, to systematically terrorize the global population into giving up its rights, freedom and private gun ownership as the unconvincing tradeoff for increased security and safety that never quite comes. There’s no security or safety in the planetary controllers’ depopulation agenda of mass democide through bioterrorism,[424] the 5G rollout[425] geoengineering[426] and global war.[427]

Be it at the annual Bilderberg meetings or occasional informal group mind get-togethers attended by the most public faces of the ruling elite - the likes of George Soros, Warren Buffet, Bill Gates, Oprah Winfrey, Ted Turner and Michael Bloomberg plot mass genocide, of course couched in deceptive humanistic terms like overpopulation[428] and UN Agenda 21/2030 sustainability, with more lies foisted on the global public to justify the status quo of so called progress through more earthly rape and plunder.[429]

Next up is the other big pedophilia scandal in Scotland, the Holly Greig cover-up that will just not go away. This shameful debacle is dissected and unveiled in Chapter 26.

---

[1] “Speculative Society of Edinburgh,” *dunblane.site*, http://dunblane.site/specroll.htm.

[2] Sandy Uttley, “Robertson Sues over Dunblane Killer Allegations,” *StolenKids-Dunblane.blogspot.com*, July 12, 2003, http://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2003/07/.

[3] David Thompson and Kevin Mansi, “I Wish my Son had never been Born,” *Daily Record/thefreelibrary.com*, March 15, 1996, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/I+wish+my+son+had+never+been+born.-a061278712.

[4] Nick Cohen, “The Life and Death of Thomas Watt Hamlton,” *Independent*, March 17, 1996, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/the-life-and-death-of-thomas-watt-hamilton-1672323.html.

[5] Becky Pemberton, https://www.thescottishsun.co.uk/fabulous/1642132/thomas-hamilton-dunblane-documentary-mother-agnes/

[6] “The Dunblane Massacre: Thomas Hamilton,” *chesterwriter.blogspot.com*, April 17, 2014, https://chesterwriter.blogspot.com/2014/04/the-dunblane-massacre-thomas-hamilton.html.

[7] Lucy Adams and Tom Gordon, “How Paranoia Drove Killer Obsessed with Young Boys,” *The Herald/dunblane.site*, October 4, 2005, http://dunblane.site/hamilton1.htm.

[8] Nick Cohen, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/the-life-and-death-of-thomas-watt-hamilton-1672323.html.

[9] Nick Cohen, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/the-life-and-death-of-thomas-watt-hamilton-1672323.html.

[10] “The Dunblane Massacre: Thomas Hamilton,” https://chesterwriter.blogspot.com/2014/04/the-dunblane-massacre-thomas-hamilton.html.

[11] "Thomas Watt Hamilton," *biography.com*, https://www.biography.com/people/thomas-watt-hamilton-232311.

[12] "Thomas Watt Hamilton," https://www.biography.com/people/thomas-watt-hamilton-232311.

[13] Sandra Uttley, *Dunblane Unburied* (UK: BookPublishingWorld, 2006), https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/11/2006-dunblane-unburied-by-sandra-uttley.html.

[14] Nick Cohen, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/the-life-and-death-of-thomas-watt-hamilton-1672323.html.

[15] "Why oh Why?" *Chicago Tribune*, March 19, 1996, http://www.chicagotribune.com/news/ct-xpm-1996-03-19-9603190568-story.html.

[16] Nick Cohen, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/the-life-and-death-of-thomas-watt-hamilton-1672323.html.

[17] "Thomas Watt Hamilton," https://www.biography.com/people/thomas-watt-hamilton-232311.

[18] William Burns, "Events in the Life of Thomas Hamilton," http://dunblane.site/th_synopsis.htm.

[19] Nick Cohen, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/the-life-and-death-of-thomas-watt-hamilton-1672323.html.

[20] Peter McKay, "Just another Showbiz Weirdo who knew his Rights," *Daly Mail*, October 14, 2012, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/debate/article-2217698/Jimmy-Savile-Just-showbiz-weirdo-knew-rights-says-Peter-McKay.html.

[21] "Who does the 100-Year Ban Protect?" *The Scotsman*, February 13, 2003, https://www.scotsman.com/news-2-15012/who-does-the-100-year-ban-protect-1-545863.

[22] William Burns, “Events in the Life of Thomas Hamilton,” http://dunblane.site/th_synopsis.htm.

[23] David Icke, “The Man from Manchuria… via Blacksburg Mountain,” *David Icke Newsletter*, April 22, 2007, http://www.despatch.cth.com.au/Misc/martinbryant/VTcampusMassacre.htm.

[24] Ben Swann, “Mass Shootings and Psychiatric Drugs,” *Truth in Media*, March 13, 2018, http://truthinmedia.com/reality-check-mass-shootings-psychiatric-drugs/.

[25] “Dunblane Shootings – Pedophile Ring,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, March 5, 2013, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2013/03/dunblane-shootings-pedophile-ring.html.

[26] “QVS, Dunblane, VIPaedo, Cover-up (updated),” *spidercatweb.blog*, December 20, 2015, https://spidercatweb.blog/dunblane-qvs.

[27] William Burns, “Events in the Life of Thomas Hamilton,” http://dunblane.site/th_synopsis.htm.

[28] Mary W. Maxwell, “Was Martin Bryant Mind Controlled? Our Lives Are Run by Tavistock,” *gumshoenews.com*, February 9, 2016, https://gumshoenews.com/2016/02/09/was-martin-bryant-mind-controlled-our-lives-are-run-by-tavistock/.

[29] Margaret Hartmann, “How Australia and Britain Tackled Gun Violence,” *New York Magazine*, October 5, 2015, http://nymag.com/intelligencer/2015/10/how-australia-and-britain-tackled-gun-violence.html?gtm=bottom.

[30] Claire Carter, “Dunblane Massacre Gunman ‘Spoke to his Guns like they were his Children’ in Perverse Obsession before Committing Horrific Slaughter,” *Mirror*, March 13, 2018, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/dunblane-massacre-gunman-spoke-guns-11240082.

[31] Stephen Wilkie, “Pervert made Boys his Slaves,” *Daily Record/thefreelibrary.com*, March 15, 1996, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/PERVERT+MADE+BOYS+HIS+SLAVES%3B+He+took+their+clothes+away+and+dressed...-a061278690.

[32] Becky Pemberton, “Chilling Documentary about Dunblane Masochist Thomas Hamilton’s Dark Family Secret that Led to Keller’s Obsession with Young Boys,” *The Scottish Sun*, October 2, 2017, https://www.thescottishsun.co.uk/fabulous/1642132/thomas-hamilton-dunblane-documentary-mother-agnes/.

[33] Becky Pemberton, https://www.thescottishsun.co.uk/fabulous/1642132/thomas-hamilton-dunblane-documentary-mother-agnes/.

[34] “Schizoid Personality Disorder,” *webmd.com*, https://www.webmd.com/mental-health/mental-health-schizoid-personality-disorder#1.

[35] “Hamilton’s ‘Mason Link,’” *Independent*, December 9, 1996, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/hamiltons-mason-link-1313718.html.

[36] Michael Howie, “Question on Masonic Links Left Dunblane Inquiry Chief Stunned,” *The Scotsman*, October 5, 2005, https://www.scotsman.com/news/question-on-masonic-links-left-dunblane-inquiry-chief-stunned-1-1099013.

[37] “Dunblane: A Cover-up, beyond a Questionable Doubt,” *thehighroad.org*, February 26, 2007, https://www.thehighroad.org/index.php?threads/dunblane-a-cover-up-beyond-a-questionable-doubt.258323/.

[38] “Killer Made Video of Boys in Trunks,” *Daily Record/thefreelibrary.com*, March 14, 1996, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/Killer+made+video+of+boys+in+trunks.-a061266619.

[39] “Killer Made Video of Boys in Trunks,” https://www.thefreelibrary.com/Killer+made+video+of+boys+in+trunks.-a061266619.

[40] “1987: Gunman kills 14 in Hungerford Rampage,” *BBC*, August 19, 2006, http://news.bbc.co.uk/onthisday/hi/dates/stories/august/19/newsid_2534000/2534669.stm.

[41] William D. Montalbano, “Murderous Loner leaves Shaken Scots Asking why,” *Los Angeles Times*, March 15, 1996, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1996-03-15-mn-47381-story.html.

[42] “Mason to Reveal Secret List of Names,” *The Scotsman*, November 23, 2003, https://www.scotsman.com/news-2-15012/masons-to-reveal-secret-list-of-names-1-1296272.

[43] “Cook’s Questions,” *dunblanesite.com*, http://dunblane.site/thlodgeart.htm.

[44] Dunblane: A Cover-up, beyond a Questionable Doubt," https://www.thehighroad.org/index.php?threads/dunblane-a-cover-up-beyond-a-questionable-doubt.258323/.

[45] Tom Minogue, "Savile isn't the only obnoxious Paedophile being Covered up by the System. Thomas Hamilton," *dunblaneexposed.info*, October 25, 2013, http://www.dunblaneexposed.info/2013/10/savile-isnt-the-only-obnoxious-paedophile-being-covered-up-by-the-system-thomas-hamilton/.

[46] Ben Borland, "Claims of VIP Paedophile Ring at Scots Boarding School Aired at Abuse Inquiry," *Express*, April 30, 2017, https://www.express.co.uk/news/uk/798285/Dunblane-killer-Thomas-Hamilton-paedophile-ring-QVS.

[47] Sandra Uttley, "Who Killed Thomas Hamilton?" *dunblanemurders.blogspot.com*, April 25, 2005, https://dunblanemurders.blogspot.com/2005/04/who-killed-thomas-hamilton.html.

[48] "Text of Letter from Killer Thomas Hamilton to Queen Elizabeth II," *Associated Press*, March 14, 1996, https://www.apnews.com/9ec098fcdc08ddb0b081af2001e79a5f.

[49] William Burns, "Events in the Life of Thomas Hamilton," *dunblane.site*, http://dunblane.site/th_synopsis.htm.

[50] Stephen Wilkie, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/PERVERT+MADE+BOYS+HIS+SLAVES%3B+He+took+their+clothes+away+and+dressed...-a061278690.

[51] Michael Howie, "Question on Masonic Links Left Dunblane Inquiry Chief Stunned," *The Scotsman*, October 5, 2005, https://www.scotsman.com/news/question-on-masonic-links-left-dunblane-inquiry-chief-stunned-1-1099013.

[52] William Burns, "Events in the Life of Thomas Hamilton," *dunblane.site*, http://dunblane.site/th_synopsis.htm.

[53] Nick Cohen, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/the-life-and-death-of-thomas-watt-hamilton-1672323.html.

[54] "Killer Made Video of Boys in Trunks," https://www.thefreelibrary.com/Killer+made+video+of+boys+in+trunks.-a061266619.

[55] "The Dunblane Massacre," *truecrimecases.blogspot.com*, August 4, 2012, https://truecrimecases.blogspot.com/2012/08/the-dunblane-massacre.html.

[56] "Wrath and Revenge of a man Nursing Rejection," https://www.irishtimes.com/culture/wrath-and-revenge-of-a-man-nursing-rejection-1.34955.

[57] "Wrath and Revenge of a man Nursing Rejection," https://www.irishtimes.com/culture/wrath-and-revenge-of-a-man-nursing-rejection-1.34955.

[58] "Dunblane Shootings – Pedophile Ring," https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2013/03/dunblane-shootings-pedophile-

ring.html.

[59] Nick Cohen, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/the-life-and-death-of-thomas-watt-hamilton-1672323.html.

[60] Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/11/2006-dunblane-unburied-by-sandra-uttley.html.

[61] Terry Oapos, “Police Probe Links to Child Sex Ring,” *Sunday Mirror/thefreelibrary.com*, March 17, 1996, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/Police+probe+links+to+child+sex+ring.-a061180004.

[62] Terry Oapos, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/Police+probe+links+to+child+sex+ring.-a061180004.

[63] William Burns, “Events in the Life of Thomas Hamilton,” *dunblane.site*, http://dunblane.site/th_synopsis.htm.

[64] William Burns, “Events in the Life of Thomas Hamilton,” *dunblane.site*, http://dunblane.site/th_synopsis.htm.

[65] Allison McLaughlin, “Killer used his Mum to get at Kids,” *Daily Record/thefreelibrary.com*, June 21, 1996, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/Killer+used+his+mum+to+get+at+kids.-a061259979.

[66] Allison McLaughlin, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/Killer+used+his+mum+to+get+at+kids.-a061259979.

[67] William Burns, http://dunblane.site/th_synopsis.htm.

[68] Steve Boggan and John McKie, “Hamilton’s Evil Network,” *Independent*, March 16, 1996, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/hamiltons-evil-network-1342192.html.

[69] Tom Gordon, “The Dunblane Files,” *Sunday Herald/dunblane.site*, January 8, 2012, http://dunblane.site/tomgordon.htm.

[70] Greg Hallett, *The Sex Collectors – How the World is Run on Shame – Vol. 3, Heroin Ticket* (Prince of New Spain, 2010), http://www.whale.to/c/sex_collectors3.html.

[71] Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/11/2006-dunblane-unburied-by-sandra-uttley.html.

[72] Fidelma Cook, “I Blame Police Sex Ring for Conspiracy of Silence over the Dunblane Massacre,” *Mail on Sunday/dunblane.site*, June 5, 2005, http://dunblane.site/uttley1.htm.

[73] William W. Scott letter to all MPs and SMPs, “Dunblane: A Cover-up beyond a Questionable Doubt,” October 24, 2006, https://www.thehighroad.org/index.php?threads/dunblane-a-cover-up-beyond-a-questionable-doubt.258323/

[74] David Leslie, “Dunblane: The Unanswered Questions,” *News of the World/dunblaneexposed.info*, June 22, 2003,

http://www.dunblaneexposed.info/2003/06/dunblanethe-unanswered-questions/.

[75] Brenden Murphy, “Hamilton was Cop Informer says MP,” *Daily Record/thefreelibrary.com*, March 14, 1997, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/Hamilton%2Bwas%2Bcop%2Binformer%2Bsays%2BMP.-a061016849.

[76] Mike James, “Revealed: British Premier Gordon Brown is a Pedophile,” rense.com, February 28, 2010, https://rense.com/general89/brownpd.htm.

[77] Tom Minogue, http://www.dunblaneexposed.info/2013/10/savile-isnt-the-only-obnoxious-paedophile-being-covered-up-by-the-system-thomas-hamilton/.

[78] William Burns, http://dunblane.site/th_synopsis.htm.

[79] “Cullen Inquiry Transcript,” *dunblane.site*, June 26, 1996, http://dunblane.site/tmcd5.htm#told.

[80] Allison McLaughlin, “I was a Child Sex Victim of Monster Hamilton; Boy’s Ordeal on Boat,” *Daily Record/thefreelibrary.com*, June 27, 1996, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/I+was+child+sex+victim+of+monster+Hamilton%3B+Boy's+ordeal+on+boat+trip.-a061274605.

[81] “Cullen Inquiry Transcript,” *dunblane.site*, June 26, 1996, http://dunblane.site/tmcd5.htm#told.

[82] William Burns, http://dunblane.site/th_synopsis.htm.

[83] Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/11/2006-dunblane-unburied-by-sandra-uttley.html.

[84] “Who does the 100-Year Ban Protect?” *The Scotsman*, February 13, 2003, https://www.scotsman.com/news/who-does-the-100-year-ban-protect-1-545863.

[85] Michael Forsyth, “Dunblane (Cullen Report),” Hansard House of Commons, October 16, 1996, https://api.parliament.uk/historic-hansard/commons/1996/oct/16/dunblane-cullen-report.

[86] Mary W. Maxwell, “They Shoot Children, Don’t they? A Retrospective on Dunblane 18 Years on,” *Gumshoe News*, December 21, 2014, https://gumshoenews.com/2014/12/21/they-shoot-children-dont-they-a-retrospective-on-dunblane-18-years-on/.

[87] “Who does the 100-Year Ban Protect?” https://www.scotsman.com/news/who-does-the-100-year-ban-protect-1-545863.

[88] William Burns, http://dunblane.site/th_synopsis.htm.

[89] “Who is really being Protected?” *Glasgow Herald/tomminogue.com*, February 11, 2003, https://www.tomminogue.com/tom/wp-content/uploads/2017/06/Who-is-really-being-protected/.

[90] Allison McLaughlin, “I Knew him better than anyone… but I didn’t Think he as Dangerous,” *Daily Record/thefreelibrary.com*, June 14, 1996, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/I+knew+him+better+than+anyone+…+but+I+didn't+think+he+was+dangerous.-a061275050.

[91] Graeme Smith, “Policeman’s Tears Cause Halt to Questioning,” *Scotland on Sunday/dunblane.site*, June 16, 1996, http://dunblane.site/pcstears.htm#it.

[92] “Teenager Fled from Dunblane Inquiry,” *Irish Times*, June 17, 1996, https://www.irishtimes.com/news/teenager-fled-from-dunblane-inquiry-1.59129.

[93] “Wrath and Revenge of a man Nursing Rejection,” *Irish Times*, March 16, 1996, https://www.irishtimes.com/culture/wrath-and-revenge-of-a-man-nursing-rejection-1.34955.

[94] “Wrath and Revenge of a man Nursing Rejection,” https://www.irishtimes.com/culture/wrath-and-revenge-of-a-man-nursing-rejection-1.34955.

[95] “Dunblane, Paedophilia, and the 100-Year Rule,” *holliegreigjustice.wordpress.com*, June 12, 2014, https://holliegreigjustice.wordpress.com/2017/06/06/dunblane-paedophilia-and-the-100-year-rule/.

[96] Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/11/2006-dunblane-unburied-by-sandra-uttley.html.

[97] Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/11/2006-dunblane-unburied-by-sandra-uttley.html.

[98] Dave McGowan, “The Pedophocracy, Part 1: From Brussels…,” *whale.to*, 2001, http://www.whale.to/b/pedophocracy.html#The_Pedophocracy,_Part_I:__From_Brussels_…__.

[99] Alan Rimmer, “On Devil’s sland with Monster of Dunblane; Terrified Children Reveal Sickening Truth behind that Summer Camp on Loch Lomond,” *Sunday Mirror/thefreelibrary.com*, March 17, 1996, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/ON+DEVIL%27S+ISLAND+WITH+MONSTER+OF+DUNBLANE%3b+TERRIFIED+CHILDREN+REVEAL…-a061180003.

[100] Alan Rimmer, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/ON+DEVIL%27S+ISLAND+WITH+MONSTER+OF+DUNBLANE%3b+TERRIFIED+CHILDREN+REVEAL…-a061180003.

[101] Stephen Wilkie, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/PERVERT+MADE+BOYS+HIS+SLAVES%3B+He+took+their+clothes+away+and+dressed…-a061278690.

[102] “Killer Made Video of Boys in Trunks,” https://www.thefreelibrary.com/Killer+made+video+of+boys+in+trunks.-a061266619.

[103] Stephen Wilkie, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/PERVERT+MADE+BOYS+HIS+SLAVES%3B+He+took+their+clothes+away+and+dressed...-a061278690.

[104] Alan Rimmer, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/ON+DEVIL%27S+ISLAND+WITH+MONSTER+OF+DUNBLANE%3b+TERRIFIED+CHILDREN+REVEAL...-a061180003.

[105] Stephen Wilkie, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/PERVERT+MADE+BOYS+HIS+SLAVES%3B+He+took+their+clothes+away+and+dressed...-a061278690.

[106] Alan Rimmer, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/ON+DEVIL%27S+ISLAND+WITH+MONSTER+OF+DUNBLANE%3b+TERRIFIED+CHILDREN+REVEAL...-a061180003.

[107] “Killer Made Video of Boys in Trunks,” https://www.thefreelibrary.com/Killer+made+video+of+boys+in+trunks.-a061266619.

[108] Allison McLaughlin, “25 Blunders that left Hamilton Free to Massacre Kids; Why did no one Step Evil Killer?” *Daily Record/thefreelibrary.com*, July 11, 1996, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/25+blunders+that+left+Hamilton+free+to+massacre+kids%3B+Why+did+no-one...-a061292353.

[109] Sandra Uttley, https://dunblanemurders.blogspot.com/2005/04/who-killed-thomas-hamilton.html.

[110] Doreen Hagger Assaults Thomas Hamilton,” *Lothian Courier/dunblane.site*, May 19, 1989, http://dunblane.site/hagger.htm

[111] Ben Borland, Top School in Abuse Claims,” *Express*, July 5, 2015, https://www.express.co.uk/scotland/588918/Top-Scotland-school-abuse-claims.

[112] “Dunblane: A Cover-up, beyond a Questionable Doubt,” https://www.thehighroad.org/index.php?threads/dunblane-a-cover-up-beyond-a-questionable-doubt.258323/.

[113] Stephen Smith, “Why I Stood by Hamilton,” *Edinburgh Evening News/dunblane.site*, June 19, 1996, http://dunblane.site/robertball.htm.

[114] William Burns, http://dunblane.site/th_synopsis.htm.

[115] “Wrath and Revenge of a man Nursing Rejection,” https://www.irishtimes.com/culture/wrath-and-revenge-of-a-man-nursing-rejection-1.34955.

[116] Stephen Smith, http://dunblane.site/robertball.htm.

[117] Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/11/2006-dunblane-unburied-by-sandra-uttley.html.

[118] “Monster Paid for Silence,” *Daily Record/thefreelibrary.com*, September 16, 1996, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/Monster+paid+for+silence.-a061171425.

[119] “Killer ‘Gloated’ of Guns to PC,” *Independent*, June 13, 1996, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/killer-gloated-of-guns-to-pc-1336756.html.

[120] James Montgomery, “Hamilton, the ‘Strange Man from Stirling,’” *tes.com*, June 7, 1996, https://www.tes.com/news/hamilton-strange-man-stirling.

[121] "Killer 'Gloated' of Guns to PC," https://www.independent.co.uk/news/killer-gloated-of-guns-to-pc-1336756.html.

[122] Mike James, https://rense.com/general89/brownpd.htm.

[123] "Who does the 100-Year Ban Protect?" https://www.scotsman.com/news/who-does-the-100-year-ban-protect-1-545863.

[124] Shirley English, "Police 'Lost' Files on Dunblane Killer," *tes.com*, June 14, 1996, https://www.tes.com/news/police-lost-key-files-dunblane-killer.

[125] "'Evidence,' 'Supportive Arguments' and 'Matters of Persuasion' to Assist William Burns' Petition (PE948), calling for the Public Petitions Committee to Urge the Scottish Executive to set up a new Dunblane Inquiry, with no Restrictive Remit," *dunblane.site*, http://dunblane.site/PE948.htm.

[126] Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/11/2006-dunblane-unburied-by-sandra-uttley.html.

[127] Shirley English, "Inquiry Closes to Families' Plea," *tes.com*, July 12, 1996, https://www.tes.com/news/inquiry-closes-families-plea.

[128] Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/.

[129] Nick Cohen, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/the-life-and-death-of-thomas-watt-hamilton-1672323.html.

[130] "Limits on Questions to Fiscals," *The Scotsman/dunblane.site*, http://dunblane.site/fiscalsart.htm.

[131] Shirley English, "Police 'Lost' Key Files on Dunblane Killer," tes.com, June 14, 1996, https://www.tes.com/news/police-lost-key-files-dunblane-killer.

[132] Hamish MacDonell, "'Little Evidence of Indecency by Hamilton,'" *The Scotsman*, November 12, 1996, http://dunblane.site/jdhart.htm.

[133] "Speculative Society of Edinburgh," http://dunblane.site/specroll.htm.

[134] Neil Mackay, "Thomas Hamilton Corresponded with Tory and Labour Ministers," *Sunday Herald/dunblane.site*, March 2, 2003, http://dunblane.site/robertsonart.htm.

[135] Hamish MacDonell, http://dunblane.site/jdhart.htm.

[136] "The Scottish Parliament Public *Petitions* Committee," *dunblane.site*, October 29, 2003, http://dunblane.site/oralhear.htm.

[137] Hamish MacDonell, http://dunblane.site/jdhart.htm.

[138] "Police Chief calls for Independent Advisory Body," *dunblane.site*, http://dunblane.site/doliver.htm#dr.

[139] Paul Thornton, "PM's new Aide is Shamed Cop's Son," *The Sun*, February 3, 2011, https://www.thesun.co.uk/archives/news/348212/pms-new-aide-is-shamed-cop-son/.

[140] "Dr Ian Oliver," *sigbi.org*, October 21-23, 2010, https://sigbi.org/manchester2010/keynote-speakers/dr-ian-oliver/.

[141] Joachim Hagopian, "Western State Sponsored Terrorism: False Flags Spreading Islamophobia, Race and Religious Wars and New World Disorder," *lewrockwell.com*, December 25, 2016, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2015/12/joachim-hagopian/new-world-disorder-2/.

[142] Joachim Hagopian, “Orlando’s Geopolitical Context: The Empire’s Post 9/11 Hegelian-Style Warfare against both the World and American Citizens,” in *Orlando False Flag the Clash of Histories* (Lone Rock, Wisconsin: Sifting & Winnowing Books, 2016), p. 99-125.

[143] James Fetzer, “James Fetzer: In Solidarity with Alex Jones – Sandy Hook was a FEMA Drill to Promote Gun Control – ‘Everyone must Check in,’” *State of the Nation*, August 18, 2018, http://stateofthenation2012.com/?p=102426.

[144] Shirley English, https://www.tes.com/news/inquiry-closes-families-plea.

[145] Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/11/2006-dunblane-unburied-by-sandra-uttley.html.

[146] Andrew S. MacGregor, “The Murder of Thomas Hamilton,” *dunblaneexposed.info*, February 7, 2010, http://www.dunblaneexposed.info/2010/02/the-murder-of-thomas-hamilton/.

[147] John Hind, “Did I say that?” *The Guardian*, June 20, 2009, https://www.theguardian.com/lifeandstyle/2009/jun/21/quotes-by-prince-philip.

[148] Victoria Ward and Andrew Hough, “Prince Charles, Her to Dracula’s Bloodline,” *The Telegraph*, November 5, 2012, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/prince-charles/9656769/Prince-Charles-heir-to-Draculas-blood-line.html.

[149] Tony Shell, “The Dunblane Massacre – Crown Office Obstruction and Disinformation,” *UK Column*, April 18, 2012, https://www.ukcolumn.org/article/dunblane-massacre-%E2%80%93-crown-office-obstruction-and-disinformation.

[150] Nick Cohen, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/the-life-and-death-of-thomas-watt-hamilton-1672323.html.

[151] William Burns, “Lord Cullen’s Resignation Demanded, *dunblane.site*, February 27, 2003, http://dunblane.site/culletter1.htm.

[152] “Motive for a Massacre Letters from a Man with a 20-year Obsession,” *The Herald*, March 15, 1996, https://www.heraldscotland.com/news/12117531.motive-for-a-massacre-letters-from-a-man-with-a-20-year-obsession/.

[153] David Clegg, “Panic over Dunblane Massacre Conspiracy Theories as Secret Files Released,” *Daily Record*, January 1, 2019, https://www.dailyrecord.co.uk/news/scottish-news/panic-over-dunblane-massacre-conspiracy-13798201.

[154] David Clegg, https://www.dailyrecord.co.uk/news/scottish-news/panic-over-dunblane-massacre-conspiracy-13798201.

[155] “Revealed: The Fatal Failures behind Dunblane Children’s Massacre,” *The Scotsman*, October 4, 2005, https://www.scotsman.com/news/revealed-the-fatal-failures-behind-dunblane-children-s-massacre-1-1098980/

[156] “Limits on Questions to Fiscals,” http://dunblane.site/fiscalsart.htm.

[157] Lee Floyd, "Dunblane Primary School Shootings near Stirling, Scotland: A False Flag used to further Gun Control in the UK,” truthmegasite.com,

https://truthmegasite.com/dunblane-primary-school-shootings-near-stirling-scotland-a-false-flag-used-to-further-gun-control-in-the-uk/.

[158] "Revealed: The Fatal Failures behind Dunblane Children's Massacre," https://www.scotsman.com/news/revealed-the-fatal-failures-behind-dunblane-children-s-massacre-1-1098980/.

[159] "Revealed: The Fatal Failures behind Dunblane Children's Massacre," https://www.scotsman.com/news/revealed-the-fatal-failures-behind-dunblane-children-s-massacre-1-1098980/.

[160] Becky Pemberton, https://www.thescottishsun.co.uk/fabulous/1642132/thomas-hamilton-dunblane-documentary-mother-agnes/.

[161] "Revealed: The Fatal Failures behind Dunblane Children's Massacre," https://www.scotsman.com/news/revealed-the-fatal-failures-behind-dunblane-children-s-massacre-1-1098980/.

[162] "Boats and Child Abuse," *tapnewswire.com*, August 15, 2015, http://tapnewswire.com/2015/08/boats-and-child-abuse/.

[163] "Revealed: The Fatal Failures behind Dunblane Children's Massacre," https://www.scotsman.com/news/revealed-the-fatal-failures-behind-dunblane-children-s-massacre-1-1098980/.

[164] "Revealed: The Fatal Failures behind Dunblane Children's Massacre," https://www.scotsman.com/news/revealed-the-fatal-failures-behind-dunblane-children-s-massacre-1-1098980/.

[165] Fidelma Cook, http://dunblane.site/uttley1.htm.

[166] Fidelma Cook, http://dunblane.site/uttley1.htm.

[167] Mike James, https://rense.com/general89/brownpd.htm.

[168] Keith McLeod, "My Family Knew Dunblane Killer Thomas Hamilton, Reveals Tennis Star Andy Murray," *Daily Record*, June 5, 2008, https://www.dailyrecord.co.uk/news/scottish-news/my-family-knew-dunblane-killer-thomas-979512.

[169] Peter Squires, "Dunblane Massacre 20 Years on: How Britain Rewrote its Gun Laws – and the Challenge it Faces now," *The Conversation*, March 11, 2016, http://theconversation.com/dunblane-massacre-20-years-on-how-britain-rewrote-its-gun-laws-and-the-challenge-it-faces-now-55896.

[170] Anna Smith, "Look in the Eyes of the Parents whose Children will never come Home… and tell them their Sorrow doesn't Merit a Total Ban on Guns," *Daily Record/thefreelibrary.com*, November 19, 1996, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/Look+in+the+eyes+of+the+parents+whose+children+will+never+come+home...-a061175262.

[171] Shirley English, "Inquiry Closes to Families' Plea," *tes.com*, July 12, 1996, https://www.tes.com/news/inquiry-closes-families-plea.

[172] Andrew Fraser, "Shooters Seek Handgun Law Change," *BBC*, August 19, 2005, http://news.bbc.co.uk/sport2/hi/other_sports/olympics_2012/4162498.stm.

[173] “Handgun Crime ‘up’ despite Ban,” *BBC*, July 16, 2001, http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/uk_news/1440764.stm.

[174] P. Gardner Goldsmith, “No, Aussie and UK ‘Gun Bans’ Didn't Lower Violent Crime or Homicides,” *Media Research Center TV*, February 20, 2018, https://www.mrctv.org/blog/dont-be-fooled-claims-aussie-and-uk-gun-bans-lowered-violent-crime-or-gun-homicides.

[175] Richard Edwards, “UK is Violent Crime Capital of Europe,” *The Telegraph*, July 2, 2009, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/law-and-order/5712573/UK-is-violent-crime-capital-of-Europe.html.

[176] Peter Squires, http://theconversation.com/dunblane-massacre-20-years-on-how-britain-rewrote-its-gun-laws-and-the-challenge-it-faces-now-55896.

[177] George Lekakis, “Spike in Handgun Crimes Reveals Nation’s Secret Problem,” *The New Daily*, November 10, 2015, https://thenewdaily.com.au/news/national/2015/11/10/australias-secret-gun-problem-exposed/.

[178] “Did PM Tony Blair Cover up Paedophile Scandal? List of Child Sex Offenders in British Government,” *sott.net*, October 10, 2012, https://www.sott.net/article/253318-Did-PM-Tony-Blair-cover-up-paedophile-scandal-List-of-child-sex-offenders-in-British-government.

[179] Ian Johnston, "Humans are Ushering in the Sixth Mass Extinction of Life on Earth, Scientists Warn," *Independent*, May 31, 2017, https://www.independent.co.uk/environment/mass-extinction-humans-causing-earth-deaths-end-times-warning-a7765856.html.

[180] "Queen Victoria School," https://www.qvs.school/.

[181] Tom Minogue, http://www.dunblaneexposed.info/2013/10/savile-isnt-the-only-obnoxious-paedophile-being-covered-up-by-the-system-thomas-hamilton/.

[182] Ben Borland, https://www.express.co.uk/scotland/588918/Top-Scotland-school-abuse-claims.

[183] Tom Minogue, "Irregularities at Queen Victoria School Dunblane," *stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com*, February 11, 2011, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2011/02/irregularities-at-queen-victoria-school.html.

[184] Tom Minogue, "Lord Gill," *dunblane.site*, April 24, 2005, http://dunblane.site/tmcd2.htm.

[185] Marcello Mega, "Who are they trying to Protect?" *News of the World/dunblane.site*, December 28, 2003, http://dunblane.site/burtonart.htm.

[186] Tom Minogue, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2011/02/irregularities-at-queen-victoria-school.html.

[187] Marcello Mega, "Abuse Probe School has Links to Dunblane Killer," *News of the World/dunblane.site*, November 9, 2003, http://dunblane.site/ghart.htm.

[188] Ben Borland, https://www.express.co.uk/scotland/588918/Top-Scotland-school-abuse-claims.

[189] Tom Minogue, "Letters to George Robertson," April 5, 2003, dunblane.site,

[190] Ben Borland, https://www.express.co.uk/scotland/588918/Top-Scotland-school-abuse-claims.

[191] Glenn Harrison, "Queen Victoria School," *dunblane.site*, 2003, http://dunblane.site/gh_qvs_story.htm.

[192] Fred Bridgland quoting Martin Short, "Secret Brotherhood which Protects its own," *The Scotsman/dunblane.site*, March 22, 1996, http://dunblane.site/thart.htm.

[193] Ben Borland, https://www.express.co.uk/scotland/588918/Top-Scotland-school-abuse-claims.

[194] Marcello Mega, http://dunblane.site/ghart.htm.

[195] Ben Borland, https://www.express.co.uk/scotland/588918/Top-Scotland-school-abuse-claims.

[196] Ben Borland, https://www.express.co.uk/scotland/588918/Top-Scotland-school-abuse-claims.

[197] Mark Macaskill, Fresh Sex Abuse Claims Hits Scots Military School," *The Times*, April 2, 2017, https://www.thetimes.co.uk/edition/scotland/fresh-sex-abuse-claims-hit-scots-military-school-b8bz3wvfv.

[198] Joachim Hagopian, *Don't Let the Bastards Getcha Down* (unpublished manuscript, 2013), http://www.redredsea.net/westpointhagopian/index.html.

[199] Joachim Hagopian, “Sexual Assault against Women in the U.S. Armed Forces,” *Global Research*, March 23, 2014, https://www.globalresearch.ca/sexual-assault-against-women-in-the-us-armed-forces/5374784.

[200] Joachim Hagopian, “Sexual Assault in the U.S. Military,” *Global Research*, February 14, 2015, https://www.globalresearch.ca/sexual-assault-in-the-u-s-military/5431157.

[201] “Scotland’s Crisis-Hit Child Abuse inquiry ‘Fundamentally Tainted’ by Resignations say Survivor Groups,” July 2, 2016, https://www.heraldscotland.com/news/14647765.scotlands-crisis-hit-child-abuse-inquiry-fundamentally-tainted-by-resignations-say-survivor-groups/.

[202] “Scottish Child Abuse inquiry: Senior Panel Member Resigns,” *BBC*, February 21, 2017, https://www.bbc.com/news/uk-scotland-39040995.

[203] Sandy Smith, “UK Privy Council Members Collude to Cover up State Child Abuse in Scotland,” *tapnewswire.com*, January 18, 2017, http://tapnewswire.com/2017/06/uk-privy-council-members-collude-to-cover-up-state-child-abuse-in-scotland/.

[204] Tom Minogue, “William, George, Billy & Scotch Myths re the Cullen Report on Dunblane,” *tomminogue.com*, October 16, 2017, https://www.tomminogue.com/tom/?p=3465.

[205] Alan Carson, “Teachers Face Cop Probe on Sex and Bullying,” *The Scottish Sun/dunblane.site*, March 3, 2005, http://dunblane.site/qvscopprobeart.htm.

[206] Ben Borland, https://www.express.co.uk/scotland/588918/Top-Scotland-school-abuse-claims.

[207] Martha Ross, “Prince Andrew: Father of the Bride still Remembered for Friendship with Billionaire Pedophile Jeffrey Epstein,” *Mercury News*, October 10, 2018, https://www.mercurynews.com/2018/10/10/prince-andrew-father-of-the-bride-still-remembered-for-friendship-with-billionaire-pedophile-jeffrey-epstein/.

[208] Ben Borland, https://www.express.co.uk/scotland/588918/Top-Scotland-school-abuse-claims.

[209] Ben Borland, “Police to Probe Claims of Abuse at Military School,” *Sunday Express/dunblane.site*, February 21, 2016, http://dunblane.site/ghqvs2016.htm.

[210] “Shetland Teacher Made History,” *Shetland News/dunblane.site,* November 9, 2004, http://dunblane.site/shetlandnews.htm.

[211] Ben Borland, https://www.express.co.uk/scotland/588918/Top-Scotland-school-abuse-claims.

[212] Ben Borland, https://www.express.co.uk/scotland/588918/Top-Scotland-school-abuse-claims.

[213] Tom Minogue, “William, George, Billy & Scotch Myths re the Cullen Report on Dunblane,” *tomminogue.com*, October 16, 2017, https://www.tomminogue.com/tom/?p=3465.

[214] Ben Borland, http://dunblane.site/ghqvs2016.htm.

[215] Sandra Uttley, “Cullen Inquiry Whitewash,” *stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com*, October 29, 2003, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2003/.

[216] “Cohen Group – Who We Are: George Robertson,” *cohengroup.net*, http://www.cohengroup.net/our-people/george-robertson.

[217] Saker, “Kosovo will be Liberated,” *thesaker.is*, December 8, 2017, https://thesaker.is/kosovo-will-be-liberated/.

[218] Tom Burghardt, “Kosovo: Europe’s Mafia State. Hub of the EU-NATO Drug Trail,” *Global Research*, December 22, 2010, https://www.globalresearch.ca/kosovo-europe-s-mafia-state-hub-of-the-eu-nato-drug-trail/22486.

[219] Ghali Hassan, “Sowing the Seeds of Violence and Instability,” *Axis of Logic*, June 7, 2011, http://axisoflogic.com/artman/publish/Article_63164.shtml.

[220] Preston James, “The Globalist Plan to take-down the Whole World,” *Veterans Today*, November 17, 2015, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2015/11/17/the-globalist-plan-to-take-down-the-whole-world/.

[221] Ben Borland, https://www.express.co.uk/scotland/588918/Top-Scotland-school-abuse-claims.

[222] Michael White, Richard Norton-Taylor and Ian Black, “Robertson to run NATO,” *The Guardian*, July 31, 1999, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/1999/jul/31/uk.politicalnews1,

[223] Joel van der Reijden, “Beyond the Dutroux Affair: The Reality of Protected Child Abuse and Snuff Networks,” *isgp-studies.com*, July 25, 2007, https://isgp-studies.com/belgian-x-dossiers-of-the-dutroux-affair.

[224] James Casbolt, “MI-6 are the Lords of the Global Drug Trade,” Third World Traveler, May 19, 2006, http://www.thirdworldtraveler.com/Drug_War/MI-6_LordsGlobalDrugTrade.html.

[225] Slobodan Lekic, “Russia Criticizes US, NATO over Afghan Drugs,” *boston.com*, March 12, 2010, http://archive.boston.com/news/world/europe/articles/2010/03/12/russia_criticizes_us_nato_over_afghan_drugs/.

[226] “Human and Drug Trafficking,” *talkingdrugs.org*, July 7, 2011, https://www.talkingdrugs.org/human-trafficking-fuelled-by.

[227] “Bush and Blair Found Guilty of War Crimes,” *washingtonsblog.com*, November 23, 2011, https://washingtonsblog.com/2011/11/bush-and-blair-found-guilty-of-war-crimes.html.

[228] Michel Chossudovsky, “The Spoils of War: Afghanistan’s Multibillion Dollar Heroin Trade,” *Global Research*, June 14, 2005, https://www.globalresearch.ca/the-spoils-of-war-afghanistan-s-multibillion-dollar-heroin-trade/91.

[229] Barbara Crossette, “Talibans’ Ban on Poppy a Success, U.S. Aides say,” *New York Times*, May 20, 2001,

https://www.nytimes.com/2001/05/20/world/taliban-s-ban-on-poppy-a-success-us-aides-say.html.

[230] Mike James, https://rense.com/general89/brownpd.htm.

[231] Greg Hallett, *whale.to*, http://www.whale.to/c/sex_collectors3.html.

[232] Andre Denholm, Robertson Considers Action over Web Allegation," *The Scotsman/propagandamatrix.com*, March 10, 2003, http://www.propagandamatrix.com/robertson_considers_action_over_web_allegation.htm.

[233] Ben Dowell, "Lord Robertson Sues Sunday Herald," *The Guardian*, May 31, 2006, https://www.theguardian.com/media/2006/may/31/pressandpublishing2.

[234] "Robertson vs. Newsquest (Sunday Herald)," Opinion of Lord Reed, *casemine.com*, June 18, 2006, https://www.casemine.com/judgement/uk/5a8ff84960d03e7f57ebddf9.

[235] Mike James, https://rense.com/general89/brownpd.htm.

[236] Thomas Walter Chittum, "The Conspirators' History of Western Civilization," *apfn.org*, 2003, http://www.apfn.org/apfn/conspirators.htm.

[237] "NATO's Robertson to Step down in December," *VOA*, January 22, 2003, https://www.voanews.com/a/a-13-a-2003-01-22-10-nato-s/392680.html.

[238] "Cohen Group – Who We Are: George Robertson," http://www.cohengroup.net/our-people/george-robertson.

[239] Joel van der Reijden, "Pilgrims Society Incomplete List," *bibliotecapleyades.net*, https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_pilgrimsociety02g.htm.

[240] "Cohen Group – Who We Are: George Robertson," http://www.cohengroup.net/our-people/george-robertson.

[241] "They Want the Keys to the Kingdom," *fourwinds10.com*, March 31, 2019, http://fourwinds10.com/siterun_data/government/politics_-_political_party/news.php?q=1554128386.

[242] Mel Kelly, "Brexit Fascist Coup d'état by UK Privy Council," *melkelly60.wixsite.com*, July 21, 2018, https://melkelly60.wixsite.com/whatthepapersdontsay/single-post/2018/07/21/Brexit-fascist-coup-detat-by-UK-Privy-Council.

[243] Ewelina U. Ochab, "Hunab Trafficking is a Pandemic of the 21st Century," *Forbes*, July 26, 2018, https://www.forbes.com/sites/ewelinaochab/2018/07/26/human-trafficking-is-a-pandemic-of-the-21st-century/#2ce399166195.

[244] Glenn Harrison, "Queen Victoria School," *dunblane.site*, http://dunblane.site/gh_qvs_story.htm.

[245] "Sexual Abuse of Cadets," *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, July 8, 2015, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2015/07/sexual-abuse-of-cadets.html.

[246] Greg Hallett, http://www.whale.to/c/sex_collectors3.html.

[247] Mike James, https://rense.com/general89/brownpd.htm.

[248] Fidelma Cook, http://dunblane.site/uttley1.htm.

[249] William Burns, "1st Letter to Lord Advocate*," dunblane.site*, March 23, 2003, http://dunblane.site/2letts2cb.htm.

[250] Greg Hallett, http://www.whale.to/c/sex_collectors3.html.

[251] Wayne Madsen, "The EU: A Powerhouse and Protection Mechanism for a Pedophile Hierarchy," Intrepid Report, July 5, 2016, http://www.intrepidreport.com/archives/18415.

[252] Gina Davidson, "Dunblane Kller got Guns from Top Tory," *Edinburgh Evening News/dunblane.site*, March 23, 1996, http://dunblane.site/rifbellart.htm.

[253] Gina Davidson, http://dunblane.site/rifbellart.htm.

[254] Mike James, https://rense.com/general89/brownpd.htm.

[255] Jesus Diaz, "Watch how the RIP Bullet makes your Vital Organs Explode in Slow Motion," *gizmodo.com*, February 3, 2014, https://gizmodo.com/the-rip-bullet-that-will-take-out-all-your-vital-organs-1515333535.

[256] Mike James, https://rense.com/general89/brownpd.htm.

[257] "Freemasonry – Tony Blair – Illuminati part 1," video, 0:10, *tapnewswire.com*, posted on July 9, 2017, http://tapnewswire.com/2017/10/freemasonry-tony-blair-illuminati-part-1/.

[258] "Masons, Israel, Gordon Brown…" *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, May 1, 2005, https://aangirfan.blogspot.com/2005/05/masons-israel-gordon-brown.html.

[259] Cahal Milmo, "Witchcraft and Nail Clippings: the Weird World of Cherie Blair?" *independent*, September 20, 2005, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/politics/witchcraft-and-nail-clippings.

[260] Joachim Hagopian, "As Treasonous Bush-Clinton-Obama Pedo Cabal Dynasty gets Exposed, Desperate Elite Steps up War against Humanity," *sott.net*, March 31, 2017, https://www.sott.net/article/346940-As-Treasonous-Bush-Clinton-Obama-Pedo-Cabal-Dynasty-Gets-Exposed-Desperate-Elite-Steps-Up-War-against-Humanity.

[261] Mike James, "Revealed: British Premier Gordon Brown is a Pedophile," *rense.com*, February 28, 2010, https://rense.com/general89/brownpd.htm.

[262] "Alleged: Tony Blair was Nabbed while Cruising for Action in a Public Bog, but only gave his name as Lynton Blair when Charged," *operationorethegambleconnection.blogspot.com*, April 17, 2011, http://operationorethegambleconnection.blogspot.com/2011/04/httpgriffinwatch-nwn.html.

[263] Mike James, https://rense.com/general89/brownpd.htm.

[264] Mike James, https://rense.com/general89/brownpd.htm.

[265] "Investigative Journalist Mike James and David Icke call Gordon Brown out as a Paedophile," YouTube video, 0:0:33, posted on March 2, 2010, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=bQQ8GCyOff8.

[266] David Icke, "The British Establishment… Paedophiles Everywhere," *davidicke.com*, January 20, 2013,

https://www.davidicke.com/article/133491/79139-the-british-establishment-paedophiles-everywhere.

[267] Mike James, https://rense.com/general89/brownpd.htm.

[268] “Gordon Brown,” *whale.to*, http://www.whale.to/b/brown_h.html.

[269] Mike James, https://rense.com/general89/brownpd.htm.

[270] “Gordon Brown’s Grand Masonic Handshake,” YouTube video, 01:10, posted on September 28, 2009, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=u-qX9ERql50.

[271] Marcello Mega, http://dunblane.site/burtonart.htm.

[272] Mary W. Maxwell, https://gumshoenews.com/2014/12/21/they-shoot-children-dont-they-a-retrospective-on-dunblane-18-years-on/.

[273] “Lord Burton,” *The Telegraph*, June 7, 2013, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/obituaries/10106909/Lord-Burton.html.

[274] “Cullen inquiry (100-year Closure Order) Petition PE652,” The Scottish Parliament Public Petitions Committee, October 29, 2003, http://dunblane.site/oralhear.htm#there.

[275] Marcello Mega, http://dunblane.site/burtonart.htm.

[276] Marcello Mega, http://dunblane.site/burtonart.htm.

[277] “Lockerbie Investigator Lord Fraser of Carmyllie Dies suddenly at 68,” *stv.tv*, June 23, 2013, https://stv.tv/news/tayside/230456-lord-fraser-of-carmyllie-former-lord-advocate-dies-suddenly-at-68/.

[278] “Speculative Society of Edinburgh,” *dunblane.site*, http://dunblane.site/specroll.htm.

[279] Tony Shell, https://www.ukcolumn.org/article/dunblane-massacre-%E2%80%93-crown-office-obstruction-and-disinformation.

[280] Marcello Mega, http://dunblane.site/burtonart.htm.

[281] Marcello Mega, http://dunblane.site/burtonart.htm.

[282] Marcello Mega, http://dunblane.site/ghart.htm#toffs.

[283] “The Magic Circle ‘Pedophile Ring,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, August 14, 2014, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2014/08/the-magic-circle-pedophile-ring.html.

[284] Douglas Walker, “Cops again Quiz Fraudster who Forged Lord Advocate Andre Hardie’s Signature to buy a car 20 Years ago,” *The Scottish Sun*, January 8, 2017, https://www.thescottishsun.co.uk/news/401185/cops-quiz-fraudster-who-forged-former-lord-advocate-andrew-hardies-signature-to-buy-a-car-20-years-ago/.

[285] “The Power of Scotland,” *The Scotsman*, April 14, 2002, https://www.scotsman.com/lifestyle/the-power-of-scotland-1-1372265.

[286] Tom Minogue, “The Speculative Society of Edinburgh,” *tomminogue.com*, https://www.tomminogue.com/tom/?page_id=636.

[287] William Burns, “Dunblane,” dunblane.site, http://dunblane.site/booklet.htm.

[288] “Dunblane Whitewash,” *dunblane.site*, http://dunblane.site/.

[289] Michael Howie, https://www.scotsman.com/news/question-on-masonic-links-left-dunblane-inquiry-chief-stunned-1-1099013.

[290] “Cullen inquiry (100-year Closure Order) Petition PE652,” http://dunblane.site/oralhear.htm#there.

[291] William Burns, “Public Petitions Committee, Powder Puff Cowards, or Paedophile Protection Cartel?” *dunblane.site*, http://dunblane.site/cowards.htm.

[292] Carolyn Leckie, “Business Bulletin No. 150/2004, The Scottish Parliament,” *dunblane.site*, October 25, 2004, http://dunblane.site/cleckiemotion.htm.

[293] Michael Howie, https://www.scotsman.com/news/question-on-masonic-links-left-dunblane-inquiry-chief-stunned-1-1099013.

[294] Michael Howie, https://www.scotsman.com/news/question-on-masonic-links-left-dunblane-inquiry-chief-stunned-1-1099013.

[295] “Hamilton’s ‘Mason Link,’” *Independent*, December 9, 1996, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/hamiltons-mason-link-1313718.html.

[296] “Public Honour for Retired Judge,” *BBC*, July 2, 2008, http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/uk_news/scotland/edinburgh_and_east/7484953.stm.

[297] William Cullen, “The Public Enquiry into the Shootings at Dunblane Primary School on March 13, 1996,” http://www.archive.official-documents.co.uk/document/scottish/dunblane/duncntnt.htm.

[298] Marcello Mega, “Lockerbie: The Fatal Cover Up,” *Mail on Sunday/scottishlaw.blogspot.com*, August 16 2009, https://scottishlaw.blogspot.com/2009/08/lockerbie-case-which-became-cover-up.html.

[299] Michael Shrimpton, “Hitting back at Jerry,” *Veterans Today*, September 20, 2017, https://www.veteranstoday.com/2017/09/20/hitting-back-at-jerry-2/.

[300] Paul Mitchell, “Britain: Damning Report on 1999 Paddington Rail Crash,” *wsws.org*, June 25, 2001, https://www.wsws.org/en/articles/2001/06/pad-j25.html.

[301] “Lord Cullen of Whitekirk,” *parliament.uk*, https://www.parliament.uk/biographies/lords/lord-cullen-of-whitekirk/3631.

[302] “Masonic Link may Explain Hamilton’s ‘Charmed Life,’” *The Scotsman/dunblane.site*, March 22, 1996, http://dunblane.site/thart.htm.

[303] Duncan Campbell, “Why the Secret Handshake between Police and Freemasons Should Worry us,” *The Guardian*, January 2, 2018, https://www.theguardian.com/commentisfree/2018/jan/02/secret-handshake-police-freemasons.

[304] Tom de Castella, “Would you want to be a Freemason?” *BBC*, March 9, 2012, https://www.bbc.com/news/magazine-17272611.

[305] Ian Bell, “Legal Big Stick Threatens Freedom of the Press,” *The Scotsman/dunblane.site*, April 5, 1996, http://dunblane.site/ianbell1.htm.

[306] Ian Bell, http://dunblane.site/ianbell1.htm.

[307] Robert Morrow, "Jeb Bush, Oliver North and the Murder of CIA Drug Smuggler Barry Seal in 1986," *Daily Kos*, April 4, 2013, https://www.dailykos.com/stories/2013/04/03/1199001/-Jeb-Bush-Oliver-North-and-the-Murder-of-CIA-Drug-Smuggler-Barry-Seal-in-1986.

[308] Neil Mackay, "Dunblane Secret Documents Contain Letters by Tory and Labour Ministers," *The Sunday Herald/whale.to*, March 2, 2003, http://www.whale.to/b/dun3.html.

[309] Neil Mackay, http://www.whale.to/b/dun3.html.

[310] Neil Mackay, http://www.whale.to/b/dun3.html.

[311] G.A. Ponsonby, "Former Lord Advocate Colin Boyd seriously Misled the Megrahi Court Claims Book Author," Newsnet.scot, March 25, 2012, https://newsnet.scot/archive/former-lord-advocate-colin-boyd-seriously-misled-the-megrahi-court-claims-book-author/.

[312] "Who is really being Protected?" https://www.tomminogue.com/tom/wp-content/uploads/2017/06/Who-is-really-being-protected/.

[313] "Who is really being Protected?" https://www.tomminogue.com/tom/wp-content/uploads/2017/06/Who-is-really-being-protected/.

[314] Neil Mackay, http://www.whale.to/b/dun3.html.

[315] Iain Wilson, "Two MPs had very Different first Impressions of Killer Thomas Hamilton," *The Scotland Herald*, June 19, 1996, https://www.heraldscotland.com/news/12038563.Two_MPs_had_very_different_first_impressions_of_killer_Thomas_Hamilton__reports_Iain_Wilson_A_gym_scene__from_Hitler_Youth_apos_/.

[316] James Cusick, "Inquiry told Hamilton 'Slipped through Net,'" *Independent*, July 10, 1996, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/inquiry-told-hamilton-slipped-through-net-1328054.html.

[317] Fidelma Cook, http://dunblane.site/uttley1.htm.

[318] William Burns, "Dunblane Letters," *dunblane.site*, August 16, 1996, http://dunblane.site/booklet.htm#education.

[319] Nick Cohen, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/the-life-and-death-of-thomas-watt-hamilton-1672323.html.

[320] "Dunblane: A Cover-up, beyond a Questionable Doubt," https://www.thehighroad.org/index.php?threads/dunblane-a-cover-up-beyond-a-questionable-doubt.258323/.

[321] John Smith, "Officials tell of Hamilton's Gun Renewals," *The Scotsman/dunblane.site*, June 12, 1996, http://dunblane.site/mckenzie.htm.

[322] James Rougvie, "Law Officer tells of Reports on Complaints," *The Scotsman*, June 26, 1996, http://dunblane.site/cardleart.htm.

[323] William Burns, http://dunblane.site/booklet.htm#education.

[324] "Death in Dunblane," *Newsweek*, March 24, 1996, https://www.newsweek.com/death-dunblane-175846.

[325] Tony Shell, https://www.ukcolumn.org/article/dunblane-massacre-%E2%80%93-crown-office-obstruction-and-disinformation.

[326] Tony Shell, https://www.ukcolumn.org/article/dunblane-massacre-%E2%80%93-crown-office-obstruction-and-disinformation.

[327] Amanda Ruggeri, “The Lost History of the Freemasons,” *BBC*, December 13, 2016, http://www.bbc.com/travel/story/20161209-secret-history-of-the-freemasons-in-scotland.

[328] Jason Bennetto, “The ‘Satanic’ Brotherhood with Clergymen in its Ranks,” *Independent*, November 15, 2002, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/the-satanic-brotherhood.

[329] Martin Robinson, “Police Face Questions over the influence of the Freemasons after it emerged Match Commander and his Boss were both Members,” *Daily Mail*, April 26, 2016, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3559607/Police-face-questions-influence-Freemasons-emerged-match-commander-boss-members.html.

[330] “Masonic Link may Explain Hamilton’s ‘Charmed Life,’” http://dunblane.site/thart.htm.

[331] David Noakes, “How Freemasonry Controls our Government and Courts,” *eutruth.org.uk*, https://www.eutruth.org.uk/freemasoncontrol.html.

[332] Richard Smith, “How Secret Group Freemasons has kept Grip on Britain for 200 Years,” *Mirror*, November 23, 2015, https://www.mirror.co.uk/news/uk-news/how-secret-group-freemasons-kept-6886802.

[333] Nick Davies, “Freemasons in the Police,” *The Guardian/nickdavies.net*, January 29, 1997, https://www.nickdavies.net/1997/01/29/freemasons-in-the-police/.

[334] Paul Hughes, “CS: Legal-Dunblane Disclosure; Firearms Certificate – Thomas Watt Hamilton,” *dunblane.site*, September 1991, http://dunblane.site/dspaulhughesreport.htm.

[335] William Burns, “DS Paul Hughes’ Encounters with Thomas Hamilton,” *dunblane.site*, http://dunblane.site/dspaulhughesreport.htm.

[336] William Burns, http://dunblane.site/th_synopsis.htm.

[337] William Burns, http://dunblane.site/th_synopsis.htm.

[338] “Who does the 100-year Ban Protect?” *The Scotsman*, February 13, 2003, https://www.scotsman.com/news/who-does-the-100-year-ban-protect-1-545863.

[339] William Burns, http://dunblane.site/th_synopsis.htm.

[340] William Burns, http://dunblane.site/th_synopsis.htm.

[341] “The British Military – Sex and Massacres,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, April 8, 2019, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2019/04/the-british-military-sex-and-massacres.html.

[342] “Port Arthur, Dunblane, Gun Control, Misdirection,” aangirfan.blogspot.com, February 5, 2016, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2016/02/port-arthur-dunblane-gun-control.html.

[343] Sandra Uttley, “Perjury or an Innocent Mistake?” *dunblanemurders.blogspot.com*, January 24, 2005, http://dunblanemurders.blogspot.com/2005/04/perjury-or-innocent-mistake.html.

[344] Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/11/2006-dunblane-unburied-by-sandra-uttley.html.

[345] William Cullen, The Public Inquiry into the Shootings at Dunblane Primary School on 13 March 1996, 16 October 1996.

[346] "Port Arthur, Dunblane, Gun Control, Misdirection," aangirfan.blogspot.com, February 5, 2016, https://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2016/02/port-arthur-dunblane-gun-control.html.

[347] Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/11/2006-dunblane-unburied-by-sandra-uttley.html.

[348] Ted Oliver, "Gym Killer Planned his Bloodbath for 2 Years; Dunblane Day Three… The Pupil's Story," *Mirror/thefreelibrary.com*, June 1, 1996, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/GYM+KILLER+PLANNED+HIS+BLOODBATH+FOR+2+YEARS%3b+DUNBLANE+DAY+THREE...-a061315098.

[349] "Teachers Relive Horror of the Terrible Day," *The Scotsman*, October 4, 2005, https://www.scotsman.com/news-2-15012/teachers-relive-horror-of-terrible-day-1-1098906.

[350] "Dunblane Remembered," YouTube video, posted September 28, 2012, 45:53, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Mzps7bOLSL8.

[351] Jimmy Holland, Scottish Hard Bastards (Fulham, England: John Blake Publishing), 2007, chapter excerpt, http://dunblane.site/hamilton2.htm.

[352] Teachers Relive Horror of the Terrible Day," https://www.scotsman.com/news-2-15012/teachers-relive-horror-of-terrible-day-1-1098906.

[353] Teachers Relive Horror of the Terrible Day," https://www.scotsman.com/news-2-15012/teachers-relive-horror-of-terrible-day-1-1098906.

[354] William Cullen, The Public Inquiry into the Shootings at Dunblane Primary School on 13 March 1996.

[355] Sandra Uttley, https://dunblanemurders.blogspot.com/.

[356] Sandra Uttley, "Central Scotland Police Allegation of Perjury," *dunblane.site*, August 20, 2005, http://dunblane.site/su_let2_csp.htm.

[357] Mary W. Maxwell, https://gumshoenews.com/2014/12/21/they-shoot-children-dont-they-a-retrospective-on-dunblane-18-years-on/.

[358] Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/11/2006-dunblane-unburied-by-sandra-uttley.html.

[359] Jimmy Holland, http://dunblane.site/hamilton2.htm.

[360] Speculative Society of Edinburgh, http://dunblane.site/specroll.htm.

[361] Sandra Uttley, https://dunblanemurders.blogspot.com/2005/04/who-killed-thomas-hamilton.html.

[362] Lee Floyd, https://truthmegasite.com/dunblane-primary-school-shootings-near-stirling-scotland-a-false-flag-used-to-further-gun-control-in-the-uk/.

[363] Charlene Fassa, "Webb 'Suicide' Looking more like Murder," *rense.com*, December 19, 2004, https://rense.com/general60/move.htm.

[364] Andrew S. MacGregor, “The Murder of Thomas Hamilton,” *dunblaneexposed.info*, February 7, 2010, http://www.dunblaneexposed.info/2010/02/the-murder-of-thomas-hamilton/.

[365] Jimmy Holland, http://dunblane.site/hamilton2.htm.

[366] “QVS, Dunblane, VIPaedo, Cover-up (updated),” https://spidercatweb.blog/dunblane-qvs.

[367] Sandra Uttley, https://dunblanemurders.blogspot.com/2005/04/who-killed-thomas-hamilton.html.

[368] Lee Floyd, https://truthmegasite.com/dunblane-primary-school-shootings-near-stirling-scotland-a-false-flag-used-to-further-gun-control-in-the-uk/.

[369] “Statement of Witness Grant McCutcheon,” *dunblane.site*, March 17, 1996, http://dunblane.site/csp.htm#grant.

[370] Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/11/2006-dunblane-unburied-by-sandra-uttley.html.

[371] Marcello Mega, “Dunblane Deception,” *Daily Mail/dunblane.site*, March 10, 2004, http://dunblane.site/north.htm.

[372] James Cusack, “Parents’ six-hour Ordeal Waiting for News,” *Independent*, May 31, 1996, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/parents-six-hour-ordeal-waiting-for-news-1349917.html.

[373] “Statement of Witness Grant McCutcheon,” http://dunblane.site/csp.htm#grant.

[374] William W. Scott letter to all MPs and SMPs, https://www.thehighroad.org/index.php?threads/dunblane-a-cover-up-beyond-a-questionable-doubt.258323/.

[375] Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/11/2006-dunblane-unburied-by-sandra-uttley.html.

[376] “Dunblane Inquiry Sham,” *dunblane.site*, http://dunblane.site/utthagart.htm.

[377] “Death in Dunblane,” https://www.newsweek.com/death-dunblane-175846.

[378] “Dunblane Survivor Attempted to Rape OAP, The Scotsman, June 2, 2011, https://www.scotsman.com/news-2-15012/dunblane-survivor-attempted-to-rape-oap-1-1667956.

[379] “Dunblane Survivor given Life Sentence for OAP Sex Attack: Victim, 76, was Assaulted in her own Home,” *Daily Mail*, March 21, 2012, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2118387/Dunblane-survivor-given-life-sentence-OAP-sex-attack-Victim-76-assaulted-home.html#ixzz1ppyRumge.

[380] Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/11/2006-dunblane-unburied-by-sandra-uttley.html.

[381] Sandra Uttley, https://dunblanemurders.blogspot.com/,

[382] David Leslie, “Dunblane: The Unanswered Questions,” *News of the World/dunblaneexposed.info*, June 22, 2003,

http://www.dunblaneexposed.info/2003/06/dunblanethe-unanswered-questions/.

[383] William W. Scott letter to all MPs and SMPs, https://www.thehighroad.org/index.php?threads/dunblane-a-cover-up-beyond-a-questionable-doubt.258323/.

[384] "Talk: Thomas Hamilton (Dunblane Massacre)," *wikipedidia.org*, https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Talk:Thomas_Hamilton_(Dunblane_massacre).

[385] William W. Scott letter to all MPs and SMPs, https://www.thehighroad.org/index.php?threads/dunblane-a-cover-up-beyond-a-questionable-doubt.258323/.

[386] William Burns, "Dunblane," dunblane.site, http://dunblane.site/booklet.htm.

[387] Tom Minogue, "William, George, Billy & Scotch Myths re the Cullen Report on Dunblane," *tomminogue.com*, October 16, 2017, https://www.tomminogue.com/tom/?p=3465.

[388] Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/11/2006-dunblane-unburied-by-sandra-uttley.html.

[389] "Dunblane: A Cover-up beyond a Questionable Doubt," https://www.thehighroad.org/index.php?threads/dunblane-a-cover-up-beyond-a-questionable-doubt.258323/.

[390] Sandra Uttley, "Sandra Uttley Statement," *dunblaneexposed.info*, October 16, 2006, http://www.dunblaneexposed.info/2006/10/sandra-uttley-statement/.

[391] Lee Floyd, https://truthmegasite.com/dunblane-primary-school-shootings-near-stirling-scotland-a-false-flag-used-to-further-gun-control-in-the-uk/.

[392] "QVS, Dunblane, VIPaedo, Cover-up (updated)," https://spidercatweb.blog/dunblane-qvs.

[393] William W. Scott letter to all MPs and SMPs, https://www.thehighroad.org/index.php?threads/dunblane-a-cover-up-beyond-a-questionable-doubt.258323/.

[394] Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/.

[395] Sandra Uttley, https://dunblanemurders.blogspot.com/2005/04/who-killed-thomas-hamilton.html.

[396] William Cullen, The Public Inquiry into the Shootings at Dunblane Primary School on 13 March 1996.

[397] James Cusack, "Hamilton Questioned Boy to Plan Killings," Independent, June 1, 1996, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/hamilton-questioned-boy-to-plan-killings-1334826.html.

[398] James Cusack, "Dunblane Killer as Obsessed with Guns," *Independent*, June 4, 1996, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/dunblane-killer-was-obsessed-with-guns-133534.

[399] Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/11/2006-dunblane-unburied-by-sandra-uttley.html.

[400] Sandra Uttley, https://dunblanemurders.blogspot.com/.

[401] “Wrath and Revenge of a man Nursing Rejection,” https://www.irishtimes.com/culture/wrath-and-revenge-of-a-man-nursing-rejection-1.34955.

[402] Nick Cohen, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/the-life-and-death-of-thomas-watt-hamilton-1672323.html.

[403] “Killer Made Video of Boys in Trunks,” https://www.thefreelibrary.com/Killer+made+video+of+boys+in+trunks.-a061266619.

[404] Steve Boggan, “Last Conversation was with the man who Triggered Killer’s Fall,” *Independent*, March 15, 1996, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/last-conversation-was-with-man-who-triggered-killers-fall.

[405] Darren Boyle, “Dunblane Killer Thomas Hamilton who Shot Dead 16 Primary Schoolchildren and their Teacher Dreamed up his Horrific Plot in the Bath,” *Daily Mail*, September 3, 2017, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-4848590/Dunblane-killer-Thomas-Hamilton-shot-dead-16-children.html.

[406] Sandra Uttley, Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/11/2006-dunblane-unburied-by-sandra-uttley.html.

[407] Ted Oliver, “Gym Killer Planned his Bloodbath for 2 Years; Dunblane Day Three… The Pupil’s Story,” *Mirror/thefreelibrary.com*, June 1, 1996, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/GYM+KILLER+PLANNED+HIS+BLOODBATH+FOR+2+YEARS%3b+DUNBLANE+DAY+THREE...-a061315098.

[408] Steve Boggan and John McKie, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/hamiltons-evil-network-1342192.html.

[409] Sandra Uttley, https://dunblanemurders.blogspot.com/.

[410] Nick Cohen, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/uk/home-news/the-life-and-death-of-thomas-watt-hamilton-1672323.html.

[411] James Cusack, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/hamilton-questioned-boy-to-plan-killings-1334826.html.

[412] Sandra Uttley, https://stolenkids-dunblane.blogspot.com/2005/11/2006-dunblane-unburied-by-sandra-uttley.html.

[413] Sandra Uttley, “Who Killed Thomas Hamilton?” *dunblanemurders.blogspot.com*, April 25, 2005, https://dunblanemurders.blogspot.com/2005/04/who-killed-thomas-hamilton.html.

[414] “Mass Murder in Australia: Tavistock’s Martin Bryant,” *Citizens Electoral Council*, http://www.cecaust.com.au/main.asp?sub=info/mobes/atl&id=ncarticles/Martin_Bryant_Sp_Rep.html.

[415] “Port Arthur, Dunblane, Gun Control – Misdirection,” *aangirfan.blogspot.com*, February 5, 2016, http://aanirfan.blogspot.com/2016/02/port-arthur-dunblane-gun-control.html.

[416] James Fetzer, “James Fetzer: In Solidarity with Alex Jones – Sandy Hook was a FEMA Drill to Promote Gun Control – ‘Everyone must Check in,’” *State of the Nation*, August 18, 2018, http://stateofthenation2012.com/?p=102426.

[417] Awr Hawkins, “Lindsey Graham: Democrats, GOP can ‘come together’ for Gun Confiscation Law,” *Breitbart News*, March 9, 2019, https://www.breitbart.com/politics/2019/03/09/lindsey-graham-democrats-gop-can-come-together-for-gun-confiscation-law/.

[418] Joachim Hagopian, “Western State Sponsored Terrorism: False Flags Spreading Islamophobia, Race and Religious Wars and New World Disorder,” *lewrockwell.com*, December 25, 2015, https://www.lewrockwell.com/2015/12/joachim-hagopian/new-world-disorder-2/.

[419] Joe Wolverton, “U.S. Promises ‘Full Implementation’ of UN Gun-Control Agreement,” *The New American*, July 2, 2018, https://www.thenewamerican.com/usnews/constitution/item/29424-us-promises-full-implementation-of-un-gun-control-agreement.

[420] Tracy Withers, “Christchurch Mosque Shooter who Killed 50 likely Acted Alone,” *Bloomberg News*, March 17, 2019, https://www.bloomberg.com/news/articles/2019-03-17/christchurch-mosque-shooter-who-killed-50-may-have-acted-alone.

[421] Will Ziebell, “New Zealand Pledges Reforms as Relaxed Gun Laws are Scrutinized,” *Reuters*, March 16, 2019, https://www.reuters.com/article/us-newzealand-shootout-guns-idUSKCN1QX05S.

[422] K Oanh Ha, “New Zealand Gun Sales are Increasing, Yet Homicides Remain Rare,” *Bloomberg News*, March 15, 2019, https://www.bloomberg.com/news/articles/2019-03-15/new-zealand-gun-sales-are-increasing-yet-homicides-remain-rare.

[423] Charlotte Greenfield and Tom Westbrook, “PM Ardern Vows Tough New Gun Laws after New Zealand Shootings,” *Reuters*, MARCH 18, 2019, HTTPS://WWW.REUTERS.COM/ARTICLE/US-NEWZEALAND-SHOOTOUT/NEW-GUN-LAWS-WILL-MAKE-NEW-ZEALAND-SAFER-AFTER-MOSQUE-MASSACRE-SAYS-PM-ARDERN-IDUSKCN1QY0WF?FEEDTYPE=RSS&FEEDNAME=TOPNEWS.

[424] Ben Farmer, “Bioterrorism could Kill more People than Nuclear War, Bill Gates to Warn World Leaders,” *The Telegraph*, February 17, 2017, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2017/02/17/biological-terrorism-could-kill-people-nuclear-attacks-bill/.

[425] “5G Apocalypse – The Extinction Event,” Sacha Stone, YouTube video, 1:17:56, posted on March 23, 2019, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ol3tAxnNccY.

[426] Paul Adams, “The Purpose of Geoengineering and Chemtrails is Death,” *Activist Post*, June 10, 2013, https://www.activistpost.com/2013/06/the-purpose-of-geoengineering-and.html.

[427] “Agenda 21 Converted into 2030,” *finalwakeupcall.info*, October 21, 2015, http://finalwakeupcall.info/en/2015/10/21/agenda-21-converted-into-2030/.

[428] “Secret Billionaire Club Seeks Population Control,” *World Net Daily*, May 24, 2009, https://www.wnd.com/2009/05/99105/.

[429] Selwyn Duke, “Debunking the Overpopulation Myth,” *The New American*, January 8, 2016,

https://www.thenewamerican.com/tech/environment/item/22292-debunking-the-overpopulation-myth.

[JH1]